“Fang Yuan, quietly hand over the Spring Autumn Cicada and I’ll give you a quick death!”

“Old bastard Fang, stop attempting to resist anymore, today all of the major factions of justice have combined together just to destroy your devil lair. This place is already covered in inescapable nets, this time you will definitely be decapitated!”

“Fang Yuan you damn demon, just because you wanted to cultivate the Spring Autumn Cicada, you’ve gone and killed thousands of people. You’ve committed too many unforgivable, heinous sins!“

“Demon, 300 years ago you insulted me, took away my body’s purity, killed my entire family and executed my nine generations. From that moment onwards, I hated you with a burning passion! Today, I want you to die!”

......

Fang Yuan was in deep green robes that had been torn to shreds. His hair was disheveled and his entire body was covered in blood. He looked around.

The bloody robes waved lightly in the mountain breeze like a war flag.

Fresh blood flowed from the numerous wounds on the body. Just by standing there for a short while, Fang Yuan had already accumulated a large pool of blood beneath his feet.

Enemies surrounded him all around; there was already no way out.

It was a forgone conclusion that he would die here.

Fang Yuan understood his situation clearly, but even in the face of death his expression did not change, it was calm.

His gaze was quiet, his eyes like deep pools of water in a well, so deep that there seemed to be no end.

The major factions of justice that had surrounded him were not just the experienced elders, but also young and talented heroes. Around the heavily surrounded Fang Yuan, some were roaring, some were sneering; there were eyes that were gleaming with light, some holding onto their wounds while looking on fearfully.

They did not move; everyone was wary of Fang Yuan’s final attack.

For 6 hours this tense moment went on until the evening came, the sun casting its rays upon the side of the mountain. In that moment, it was as if the place was on fire.

Fang Yuan, who had been silent as a sculpture the entire time, slowly turned his body.

The group of warriors was suddenly alerted and they all took a big step backwards.

By now the gray mountain rock beneath Fang Yuan’s feet had long been stained a deep red. Due to losing too much blood, his face had become deathly pale; in the afterglow of the sunset, it suddenly had a brilliant luster upon it.

Looking at the setting sun, Fang Yuan lightly laughed. “The sun sets above the blue mountain, the autumn moon with the wind of spring. The morning is fine like hair and night is like snow, whether you succeed or fail when you look back there's nothing left."

As he said this, memories of his previous life on Earth emerged before his eyes.

He was originally a Chinese scholar on Earth who chanced upon this world. He endured a hard life for 300 years and went through another 200 years; about over 500 years of his life flew by in the blink of an eye.

So many memories that were buried deep inside the heart begun to relive themselves, sprouting into life before his eyes.

"I failed in the end." Fang Yuan sighed in his heart emotionally, yet there were no regrets.

This end result was something he had foreseen. When he made his decision in the beginning, he had prepared himself for this.

To be a demon is to be merciless and cruel, a murderer and destroyer. There is no place in heaven or earth for such a thing – turning into an enemy to the world, still having to face the consequences.

"If the Spring Autumn Cicada that I have just cultivated is effective, I shall still be a demon in my next life!" With this thought, Fang Yuan couldn't help but let out a big laugh.

"Wicked demon, what are you laughing about?"

"Be careful everyone, the demon is going to attack before his final moments!"

"Hurry up and surrender the Spring Autumn Cicada!!"

The group of warlords surged forward; at this moment, with a loud bang, Fang Yuan was engulfed in a blinding surge of energy.

......

The spring rain quietly rained down on Qing Mao Mountain.

It was already late in the night, a slight breeze blowing with the light rain.

Yet Qing Mao Mountain was not covered in darkness; from the side down to the foot of the mountain, dozens of tiny lights shone like a bright band.

These lights shone from tall buildings, even though it could not be said to match up to ten thousand lights, yet it was still a few thousand in number.

Situated on the mountain was Gu Yue(1) Village, giving the vast lonely mountain a rich touch of human civilization.

In the middle of the Gu Yue Village was a magnificent pavilion. A grand ceremony was being held at this moment, and the lights were even brighter than ever, radiating with glory.

"Ancestors, please bless us! We pray that this ceremony will bring many young men of outstanding talent and intelligence, bringing their families new blood and hopes!" The head of the Gu Yue clan had a middle-aged appearance, his sideburns were graying and he was clothed in ceremonial white robes, kneeling on the brownish yellow floor. His body was straight with his hands held together, eyes tightly shut as he prayed sincerely.

He was facing a tall black case; there were three layers on the case, all housing memorial tablets of ancestors. On both sides of the tablets was copper incense, the smoke rising.

Behind him were over 10 people kneeling in a similar fashion as him. They wore loose white ceremonial garments, and were all the clan’s elders, important members, and those who had much authority.

After finishing prayers, the Gu Yue clan head bent his waist with his two hands pressing against the floor and kowtowed. As the forehead knocked against the brownish yellow floor, light thuds could be heard.

Behind him, the elders and important clan members solemnly and quietly followed suit.

With this, the hall was filled with light thuds as the heads knocked against the floor.

When the ceremony was over, the crowd of people slowly got up from the ground and silently walked out of the sacred temple.

In the hallway, sighs of reliefs were heard from the crowd of elders and the atmosphere loosened up. The noise of discussion slowly rose.

“Time flies too quickly, in the blink of an eye, a year has gone by.”

“The previous ceremony feels like it just happened yesterday, I can still recall it vividly.”

“Tomorrow is the opening of the annual grand ceremony, I wonder what new clan blood will show up this year?”

“Ah, I hope that some highly talented youths will appear. The Gu Yue clan hasn’t seen a genius emerge for three years now.”

“Agreed. The Bai Village, Xiong Village these few years all had some talented geniuses appear. Especially that Bai Ning Bing from the Bai clan, his natural talent is quite terrifying.”

It was unclear who had brought up the name Bai Ning Bing, but the faces of the elders started to show worry.

The boy’s qualifications were splendid; in just a short period of two years worth of training, he had already reached the level of a level three Gu Master.

In the younger generation, he could be said as the most outstanding one. It was to the point that even the older generation could feel pressured from the promising youth.

In time, he would inevitably become the pillar of the Bai clan. At the very least he would also be an independently strong warrior. No one ever doubted this fact.

“But for this year’s youths that will be participating in the ceremony, not all hope is lost.”

“You’re right, Fang Zhi’s side has appeared a young genius. Able to start talking after three months, able to walk after four. At five years of age he was able to recite poetry, seems exceptionally intelligent, especially talented. What a pity that his parents died early, now he is being raised by his uncle and aunt.”

“Yes, this one has wisdom at a young age, also harboring big ambitions. In the recent years I have heard his creations ‘Jiang Jing Jiu’, ‘Yong Mei’ and ‘Jiang Cheng Zi’, what a genius!”

The Gu Yue clan head was the last to walk out of the ancestral temple. After slowly closing the door, he heard the discussions that were going on in the corridor among the clan elders.

He knew at once that the elders were discussing about the youth known as Gu Yue Fang Yuan at that moment.

As the head of the clan, it is natural to pay attention to the outstanding and prominent young ones. And it so happens that Gu Yue Fang Yuan was the most eye-catching one amongst the juniors.

Experience has shown that those who have photographic memory at a young age, or those who possess strength that could rival an adult, or had other great inborn talents, all had outstanding cultivation qualifications.

“If this child shows A grade potential, with great care he could even compete against Bai Ning Bing. Even if it is B grade, in future he could also become a banner of the Gu Yue Clan. But with this sort of early intelligence, the percentage of B grade is not that big, but highly possible to be an A grade.” With this thought, the Gu Yue clan head curled up his lips slowly into a smile.

At once, with a cough he faced the clan elders and said, “Everyone, the hour is late, for tomorrow’s opening ceremony you should all rest well tonight and take care of your energy levels.”

At his words, the elders looked startled. They looked at each other with a hint of caution in their eyes.

The clan head’s words meant well, but everyone knew what he was aiming to convey.

Every year to compete for these young geniuses, the elders would fight among themselves to the point of reddened ears and bleeding heads.

They should stay well rested and replenish themselves until tomorrow comes where the competition begins.

Especially with that Gu Yue Fang Yuan, whose A grade potential was extremely huge. Not counting the fact that both his parents were deceased, and also that he was one of the two only descendants of Fang Zhi’s bloodline left. If one was able to get their hands on and bring him into their own family line, with great care and training, one could secure himself a hundred years of prosperity!

“However, I’m going to go ahead and say what needs to be said first. When you compete, do it fair and square; no tricks and conspiracies are allowed, or damage to the clan’s unity. Please keep this in mind, all of you!” The clan head strictly instructed.

“We wouldn’t dare, we wouldn’t dare.”

“We’ll keep it in mind.”

“Then this is good night, please take care.”

The clan elders slowly dispersed with deep thoughts.

Not long after that, the long corridor became quiet. The wind from the spring rain breezed through the window, and the clan head lightly walked towards the window.

Immediately, he breathed in the fresh moist air of the mountain, how refreshing it felt.

This was the third floor of the garret; the clan head looked out of the window. He could see half of the entire Gu Yue Village.

Even if it was late in the night, most of the homes in the village still had lights on, which was unusual.

Tomorrow is the opening ceremony, and it affects everyone’s best interests. A kind of excited yet tense atmosphere had enveloped the hearts of the people of the clan, and thus naturally many people could not sleep well.

“This is the hopes for the clan’s future.” With the many lights dancing in his eyes, the clan head sighed.

At the very same moment, a pair of clear eyes quietly looked at the same lights sparkling in the night, full of complex feelings inside.

“Gu Yue Village, this is 500 years ago?! Looks like the Spring Autumn Cicada really worked...” Fang Yuan quietly gazed, standing by the window, letting the rain from the wind hit his body.

The use of the Spring Autumn Cicada is to reverse time. In the Ten Big Mystical Gu rankings, the Spring Autumn Cicada managed to be ranked seven, naturally it was no mere creature.

In short, it is the ability to be reborn.

“With the use of the Spring Autumn Cicada I have been reborn, going back to the time of 500 years ago!” Fang Yuan stretched out his hand, his sight fixated on his own young and soft, pale palms, then slowly clenched them, embracing the truth of this reality with all his might.

The sound of the drizzling rain hitting softly against the window sill filling his ears, he slowly closed his eyes, opening them after a long while. He sighed, “500 years of experience, it really feels like a dream.”

But he knew it clearly: This was definitely not a dream.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

It is said in legend that a river of time exists in this world. It supports the world’s time flow and circulation. And by using the Spring Autumn Cicada’s power, one can travel back upstream and return to the past.

There is much conflicting opinion on this mythical tale. Many do not believe in it, and some are skeptical to the truth.

Few people actually dare to believe it.

Because every time one uses the Spring Autumn Cicada one must pay with his life, letting his entire body and cultivation be the driving force to use its power.

Such a price is just too expensive, and the thing that people just cannot accept is the fact that after paying with your life, you don’t even know what the outcome is.

So even if someone has the Spring Autumn Cicada, they would not dare use it so indiscriminately. What if the rumors were fake, and it was just a scam?

If Fang Yuan were not cornered into such a state, he would also not use it so hurriedly. But now, Fang Yuan is thoroughly convinced. Because the reality of the truth has been laid before his eyes and there was no denying it. He has really been reborn!

“It’s just a pity... From the start I had wasted an absurd amount of effort, killing hundreds of thousands of people, making even the heavens furious and inciting people’s vengeance, went through suffering and multiple hardships to finally attain and refine this good Gu...” Fang Yuan thought with a sigh. Even though he had been reborn, the Spring Autumn Cicada did not come with him.

Humans are the greatest among thousands of creatures, Gu are the essence of heaven and earth.

Gu comes in thousands of shapes and sizes of strange and mysterious variety – there are too many to count. Some Gu after being used once or even twice or thrice will completely dissipate. And some Gu can be reused again and again as long as it is not used over its limits.

That said, it is probable that the Spring Autumn Cicada is one of those types that can only be used once before disappearing for good.

“But even if its gone, I can still refine another. I have done it in my previous life, why can’t I do it in this life?” After the thoughts of pity were put aside, Fang Yuan’s heart burst forth ambitious and determined feelings.

To be able to be reborn, this fact made the loss of the Spring Autumn Cicada entirely acceptable.

Not to mention he had something precious with him, so its not like he lost everything.

This precious treasure was his 500 years worth of memories and experience.

In his memories are a multitude of all kinds of treasures and precious items that no one has opened yet in this time. All the big events and incidents he can easily grasp by the veins of history. There are a countless number of figures: some are predecessors of hidden levels; some are geniuses, some people not even born yet. Also in these 500 years of life are memories of painstaking cultivation and rich combat experience.

With all these memories and experiences, he had undeniably grasped the overall situation and upcoming opportunities. With good planning and execution, he could empower the situation with great fierceness and elegance. It was not a problem now that he could take a step ahead of others, breaking the higher boundaries!

“So how do I go about this hmmm...” Fang Yuan was incredibly sensible. He collected himself together and faced the night rain outside the window, pondering. With this thought, things started to feel complicated. After thinking for a moment, his brows wrinkled deeper.

500 years of time was a rather long period. Don’t mention those long muddled memories that cannot be recalled, even remembering the hidden locations of treasures or special encounters of people were a lot, but the main issue was that the locations were separated among a long distance and had to be accessed or visited at certain periods of time.

“The most important thing is cultivation. The me right now has not even opened my Primeval Sea, hasn’t stepped on the path to be a Gu Master. I’m just a mortal! I have to hurry and cultivate, catching up to history and seize the opportunities with the best advantage.”

Not to forget, many of these hidden locations of treasures were useless without proper foundation. Instead it would just be walking into a wolf’s den, looking for death.

The problem in front of Fang Yuan right now was cultivation.

He had to increase the level of his foundation as fast as possible. If he were slow like his previous life, he would just be too late.

“To cultivate as fast as possible, I would have to borrow the resources from the clan. With the state I am right now, I have no power or ability to travel back and forth across the dangerous mountains. Even an ordinary mountain boar can take my life. If I can reach the cultivation of a Third level Gu Master, I’d have the means to protect myself and leave the mountain.”

Through the eyes of a 500 year old person who has cultivated in the Demonic Way, Qing Mao Mountain was just way too small, Gu Yue Village even feels like a cage.

But while the cage restricted freedom, the sturdy bars of the cage also brought about a certain kind of safety.

“Hmm, in this short period of time I’ll just stay in this cage. As long as I can reach Third level Gu Master, I can leave this poor mountain. Luckily tomorrow is the Awakening Ceremony, I’ll be able to start training as a Gu Master soon after.”

When he thought about the Awakening Ceremony, old memories that had long been buried away in his heart resurfaced themselves.

“Talent huh...” He sneered, his gaze focused out the window.

At this moment, the door to his room was lightly pushed open and a young teenager walked in.

“Big brother, why are you standing in the rain by the window side ?”

The youth was thin, slightly shorter than Fang Yuan. His face resembled Fang Yuan’s features greatly. As Fang Yuan turned his head to look at this young man, a complicated look flickered across his face.

“It’s you huh, my twin little brother.” He raised his eyebrows, his expression returning to that of cold indifference. Fang Zheng lowered his head and looked at his own toes; this is his signature stance.

“I saw that big brother’s window was not shut closed, so I thought I’d come in here and close it. Tomorrow is the Awakening Ceremony, it’s so late and you haven’t gone to bed yet big brother. If Uncle and Aunty knew, they would probably be worried.”

Fang Zheng was not surprised at Fang Yuan’s coldness. Ever since he was a small child, his older brother had always been like that. Sometimes he would wonder, maybe a genius is just like this, being rather different from ordinary people. Even though he had the same look as his older brother, he felt that he was ordinary like an ant.

They were born from the same womb at the same time, and yet why are the heavens so unfair? His older brother had been endowed with gleaming talent, while he himself was as ordinary as a stone.

Everyone around him would say, “This is Fang Yuan’s little brother-” when they mentioned him. His aunt and uncle would constantly tell him to learn from his older brother. Even when he looked into the mirror sometimes, he would feel disgusted as he saw his own face!

These thoughts had been ongoing for many years, accumulating day and night deeply into his heart. Like a giant stone pressing against his heart, these few years Fang Zheng’s head lowered more and more, and he also grew quieter.

“Worried...” At the thought of his aunt and uncle, Fang Yuan laughed silently. He could still remember clearly how the parents of this world had both lost their lives in one of the clan missions. When he was only 3 years old, he and his little brother became orphans.

In the name of upbringing, his aunt and uncle grabbed hold of the inheritance left behind by his parents while inflicting harsh treatment against his younger brother and himself.

He originally planned to just be a normal person, even planning to conceal his abilities and bide his time. However his life was difficult, making Fang Yuan have no choice but to choose to expose some of his talents.

The so-called talent is merely but a mature and intellect soul that carried a few of Earth’s popular ancient poems.

With this he managed to startle people and capture attention. Because of pressure from the outside world, the young Fang Yuan made a decision to keep a cold indifferent expression to protect himself, reducing the possibility of revealing any secrets. Over time the coldness would become a habit that he was accustomed to expressing.

Thus his aunt and uncle were no longer harsh on him and his younger brother. As the years passed and they got older, the future became more optimistic and better treatment increased. This was not lover, but a type of investment.

It’s hilarious how his little brother never saw this truth,; not only was he deceived by their aunt and uncle, he also started burying resentments inside. Although he looked like a good-natured and honest boy now, in Fang Yuan’s memories when his brother was found out to be an A grade talent the clan spent much effort in raising him with all they had. After that all the buried resentment and jealous and hate inside was released, and many a time Fang Zheng would target, suppress and make life difficult for his own older brother.

As for his own grade, it was only C grade talent.

Fate loved to play a joke.

A pair of twins – The older one only had C grade talent, but had been known as a genius for a dozen years. The younger one who was always overlooked was the one with A grade talent instead.

The results of the Awakening Ceremony had left the clan shocked. The treatment of the two brothers had suddenly reversed after that.

The younger brother was like a dragon rising up to the heavens; the older brother was like a phoenix that fell down to the earth.

After that came the many hardships and troubles from his own younger brother, the cold eyes of his aunt and uncle, the contempt of the clans people.

Did he hate it?

Fang Yuan in his previous life hated it. He hated his own lack of talent, he hated how heartless the clan was, hated how fate was so unfair. But now, with his 500 years of life experiences, using this to rethink this course his heart was actually calm, not a shred of hatred.

What was there to be gain from resentment?

Thinking about if from another point of view, he could understand his younger brother, aunt and uncle, even those enemies from 500 years later who attacked him.

The strong eat the weak, survival of the fittest; these have always been the rules of this world. Everyone has self-ambitions, always struggling to grasp the opportunities. Among all the war and killing what is there not to be understood?

500 years of life experience have long allowed him to understand all of this, with the heart that wants to gain immortality.

If someone tries to prevent this pursuit of his, no matter who it is he will kill and live through it. The aspirations in his heart were too big, stepping onto this road was to be making the world your enemy, and it was destined to be alone, destined to kill.

This was the conclusion of 500 years of life.

“Revenge is not my intention, the Demonic path does not compromise.” With that he couldn’t help but laugh and gave his younger brother a faint glance. “You can leave.”

Fang Zheng’s heart shook as he felt like his brother’s eyes were sharp like an ice blade, seemingly penetrating the deepest parts of his heart.

Under such a gaze, he felt like he was naked in the snow, unable to hold any secrets.

“Then I’ll see you tomorrow, big brother.” Not daring to say anymore, Fang Zheng slowly closed the door and left.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bang, Bang, Bang.

The patrolling night watchman banged his wooden clappers in a rhythm.

The sounds spread into the high pillar houses; Fang Yuan opened his dry eyelids while his heart silently thought, “Its already the hour before dawn.”

He had been lying in bed thinking for a long time last night. He thought up a lot of plans. He probably only slept for a little over two hours. This body has not started cultivating, his energy is not so vigorous and thus his body and mind were still shrouded in exhaustion.

However with 500 years of experience Fang Yuan had long build up deep steel-like determination. This sort of sleep-deprived exhaustion is nothing to him.

Immediately he shoved away the thin silk blanket and got up neatly. He opened the window and found that the spring rain had stopped.

The mix of fragrance of the earth, trees and wild flowers greeted him. Fang Yuan felt his head clear, the sleepiness washing away cleanly. Right now the sun had yet risen, the sky still a deep dark blue, not dark yet not bright.

Looking around, the tall houses made of green bamboo and wood contrasting with the mountain, was a sea of pale green colour.

The tall houses had at least two floors; it was the mountain folk’s unique structure of a house. Due to the mountain’s uneven terrain, the first floor is massive wooden stakes; the second floor is where the people reside. Fang Yuan and his brother Fang Zhen stayed at the second floor.

“Young master Fang Yuan, you’re awake. I will go upstairs and wait for you to wash up.” At this moment, a maiden’s voice floated up from downstairs.

Looking down, Fang Yuan saw his own personal servant – Shen Cui.

Her looks were only slightly above average, but she dressed up well. Shen Cui wore a green robe with long sleeves and trousers, had embroidered shoes on her feet and her black hair had a pearl hairpin. Her body from head to toe radiated youthful vitality.

She looked happily at Fang Yuan while carrying a basin of water, and walked upstairs. The water was at the right warm temperature and was used to wash the face. After rinsing his mouth, he used a willow twig with snow salt to clean his teeth.

Shen Cui waited gently, her face wearing a smile and her eyes lively as spring. After he was done she helped Fang Yuan dress, her plump breasts rubbing against his elbow or his back a few times during the process.

Fang Yuan’s face showed no expression; his heart was calm as water.

This servant girl was nothing but his aunt and uncle’s watcheye and was a vain heartless girl. In his previous life she enraptured him, but after the Awakening Ceremony when his status plummeted she quickly turned away her head and gave him countless disdainful looks.

When Fang Zheng came over he was in time to see Shen Cui smoothing the creases on the clothing of Fang Yuan’s chest. His eyes had a flicker of jealousy.

These years living together with his older brother, under the care of Fang Yuan he also had a servant waiting on him. However his servant was not a youthful girl like Shen Cui but a fat and wide old woman.

“I wonder which day can Shen Cui wait on me like this, wonder what it feels like?” Fang Zheng thought inside his heart, yet he did not dare to.

His aunt and uncle’s biased love to Fang Yuan was no secret to everyone. Originally he did not even have a servant to wait on him. It was Fang Yuan who decided to take the initiative and ask for one for Fang Zheng.

Although there was the status difference of master and servant, but usually Fang Zheng did not dare underestimate Shen Cui. That was because her mother was the Mother Shen(1) who stood beside his aunt and uncle. Mother Shen was the caretaker of the entire household – having full trust of his aunt and uncle, her authority was not small.

“Alright, no need to tidy up.” Fang Yuan impatiently brushed away Shen Cui’s soft small hands. His clothing had long been tidy; she was just trying to seduce him.

To Shen Cui and the brightness of her future, Fang Yuan's possibility of having an A grade talent was huge. If she could be his concubine she would be able to elevate from servant status into master – it was quite a big step.

In his previous life Fang Yuan was deceived by her and had feelings for Shen Cui. After his rebirth he was clear as a blazing fire, his heart as cold as ice.

"You can leave." Fang Yuan did not even look at Shen Cui as he tidied up his own sleeve cuffs. Shen Cui pouted slightly, feeling that today Fang Yuan's puzzling behavior was rather odd and upsetting. She wanted to reply in a spoiled way but being scared by his cold and confusing nature, her mouth opened and closed a few times before she ended up saying 'yes' and retreating obediently.

"Are you ready?" Fang Yuan asked Fang Zheng.

His younger brother stood at the doorway, his head bowed down to look at his toes. He muttered a light 'yes'. Fang Zheng had actually been awake since the fourth watch, too nervous to fall back asleep. He quietly got out of bed and got ready a long time ago, his eyes having black circles.

Fang Yuan nodded. In his previous life he was not clear about his younger brother's thoughts, but in this life how could he not understand? But right now it was meaningless to him, and he lightly said, "Then let's go."

So the two brothers left the house. On the way they bumped into many youths of similar age, all in groups of twos and threes, quite clearly heading to the same destination.

"Look guys, those are the Fang brothers." Their ears could pick up the small cautious talk. "The one walking in front is Fang Yuan, he's the Fang Yuan who created the poems," some of them emphasized.

"So that's him. His face is expressionless as if he had no regard for others, just like the rumors say." Someone said in a sour tone filled with jealousy and envy.

"Hmph, if you were like him then you can also act like that!" Someone coldly replied against the person, hiding a sort of dissatisfaction.

Fang Zheng listened expressionlessly. He had long been accustomed to this kind of discussion. His head low, he followed quietly behind his older brother.

By now the light of dawn had peeked over the horizon, casting Fang Yuan's shadow over his face. The sun rose gradually, but Fang Yuan suddenly felt like he was walking into darkness.

This darkness was coming from his older brother. Maybe in this life, he would never be able to escape from the imprisoning huge shadow of his brother.

He felt a burst of pressure on his chest making his breathing difficult. This damned feeling was even making him think of the word 'suffocate'!

"Hmph, this talk is a good example of the saying: 'those who of outstanding talent easily bring about jealous from others'," Fang Yuan thought with a sneer as he listened to the gossip around.

No wonder when it was announced that he had C grade talent, he would be surrounded by enemies and suffer harsh, disdainful coldness for a long time.

Behind him, Fang Zheng's breathing got dreary and tried to stop listening.

What Fang Yuan did not manage to realize in his previous life, he could perceive with the finest detail in this life. This was the ability of keen insight that he had gained from 500 years worth of life experiences.

He suddenly thought of his aunt and uncle and how scheming they were. Giving him Shen Cui to monitor him and passing his younger brother an old wet nurse, not including other things in life that were different among them. All these actions had intentions – They wanted to cause unhappiness in his younger brother’s heart and instigate a rift among the brothers.

People are not worried about whether they receive less; people worry about whether whatever they received is undistributed well.

In his previous life his experiences were too little, while his younger brother was too foolish and too naïve, thus his aunt and uncle successfully instigated a riff among them.

After being reborn with the Awakening Ceremony before him, it seemed like the situation was difficult to change. But with Fang Yuan’s evil way of means and wisdom, it’s not like the situation cannot be changed.

His younger brother can be suppressed entirely, that young Shen Cui he could turn into a concubine early on. Not forgetting his aunt and uncle and the clan elders – he had at least several hundred ways of beating them.

“But, I don’t feel like doing that...” Fang Yuan sighed carefreely.

So what if it was his own younger brother? Without the blood relation his younger brother was just an outsider, he could easily give him up anytime.

So what if Shen Cui grew any prettier? Without love and loyalty she was just a heap of flesh of a body. Keep her as a concubine? She’s not worthy.

So what if it was his aunt and uncle, or the clan elders? They’re just passers-by in life, why waste effort and energy to beat these people?

Hehe.

As long as you don’t get in my way, then you can go aside and scram, I don’t need to care about you.

(1) Mother Shen is like a title or way to call a woman of her position.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sun rises in the sky, the sun ray brilliant. The mountain fog is not very thick; the sharp rays easily pass through.

Over a hundred 15 year-old youths gathered in front of the clan pavilion. The clan pavilion was in the middle of the village, reaching 5 storeys and having sharp tilted roofs; it was heavily guarded. Before the pavilion was the square, and in the pavilion was the shrine of the Gu Yue ancestor memorial tablets. Every generation of clan head had lived in the pavilion. With every major ceremony or big incident, the clan elders would gather and discuss meetings here as well. This was the entire village’s authority central.

“Good, all of you are punctual. Today is the Awakening Ceremony; it is your life’s great turning point. I won’t say much, just come with me.” The one responsible at the moment was the elder of the academy. His beard and hair were white and he was in high spirits as he led the young teenagers into the pavilion. However they did not go up, but were led downstairs after going through the entrance of a great hall. Following down a constructed stone ladder, they went into an underground cave.

The group of youths made surprised and amazed noises. The underground cave was beautiful, stalactites sparkling with the colors of the rainbow. This light shone on the youth’s faces, the neon hues gorgeous.

Fang Yuan was mixed into the crowd, quietly observing everything that was happening. In his heart, he thought: Hundreds of years ago, the Gu Yue clan came to Qing Mao Mountain and settled down after migrating from the central lands to the South Border. It was when they found a spirit spring in this underground cave. This spirit spring produces a large number of primeval stones – It could be said that this was the foundation of the Gu Yue village.

They walked several hundred steps. It got darker and the sounds of water were faintly heard. After turning around a corner, a 3 zhang – wide(1) underground river greeted them. By now the colorful lights of the stalactites had disappeared completely, yet in the darkness the river emitted faint blue light. It was like a star river of the night sky.

The river flowed from the dark depths of the cave. Inside the crystal clear waters, one could see fish, aquatic plants and even the sand beneath the river. Opposite the river was a sea of flowers.

This was the Gu Yue Clan’s closely cultivated moon orchids. The beautiful blue and pink colored petals were like shaped like a crescent moon; the flower stems were like jade, the center of the flower shining like the sort of warm brilliance that radiates from pearls under the light. At first glance, in the dark background the flower sea looks like a huge piece of land covered in bluish green carpet dotted with countless pearls.

The moon orchid is food for a lot of Gu. This flower sea could be said as the clan’s biggest cultivation medium, Fang Yuan thought knowingly to himself.

“Wow, so pretty!”

“It really is beautiful!”

The new sight opened the young teenagers’ eyes. Each one of them had a light radiating from their gaze with excited and anxious feelings.

“Alright, listen as I call your names. Those who are called must walk through this river to the opposite bank. Walk as far as you can, of course the further you go the better it is. Are you all clear?” The elder said.

“All clear,” the youths replied. Actually before they came here, they had all heard their family members or seniors talk about it. It is known that the further you can walk, the better your talent is. Your future will also become brighter.

“Gu Yue Chen Bo.” The elder held the name list and called out the first person.

The river was wide but not deep – it covered up to a youth’s kneecaps. Chen Bo’s face was full of seriousness as he stepped into the flower sea ashore. As he did so, he could feel an invisible pressure as if there was a wall in front of him that he could not see, blocking him from walking forward. During this moment, the flowers at his feet suddenly gave off a weak white light. The light gathered around Chen Bo and entered his body. For a moment Chen Bo felt the pressure drop; the invisible wall blocking him suddenly felt softer. With this, Chen Bo gritted his teeth and mustered his strength, walking forward. He tried to force his way in stiffly, yet after three steps the wall in front of him hardened again back to the state before. Thus he could not walk any further.

As he watched this the elder sighed. While recording what happened, he said, “Gu Yue Chen Bo, 3 steps, no talent to become a Gu Master. Next, Gu Yue Zao Xie!”

Chen Bo was deathly pale as he walked pass the river back to the youths, clenching his teeth. Without the endowed talent he could live as a normal human, holding the lowest position in the clan.

His stature was shaky; it was a huge blow to him, as if reality had killed all his hopes. Many people threw him pitiful gazes, while even more had fixated stares at the second person crossing the river.

It was a pity that this youth could only walk four steps forward – he did not have talent either.

Not everyone has the natural talent to be a Gu Master. Generally speaking, it is not bad if five out of ten people have talent. In the Gu Clan, this ratio is higher, reaching six people. This is because the Gu Yue clan’s ancestor – The first generation clan leader was a famous, legendary and powerful man. Due to cultivation reasons his bloodline carried powerful genes, thus the average quality of talent in the Gu Yue clan was generally higher as they carried his blood in their veins.

With two consecutive failures, the other elders observing the scene in the dark started making ugly expressions. Even the clan head was frowning slightly. The next moment, the academy elder called out the third name: Gu Yue Mo Bei.

“Here!” A horse-faced youth dressed in linen robes lightly called as he came forth. He was tall in build, looking much sturdier than his peers. There was a brave aura about him. He crossed the river in a few steps and reached the opposite bank. 10 steps, 20 steps, 30 steps; one after another small lights entered his body. He walked until he reached 36 steps before he could finally go no further.

The youths at the riverbank watched with wide opened eyes, shocked. The academy elder happily exclaimed, “Good, Gu Yue Mo Bei, B grade talent! Come here, let me see your Primeval sea.”

Gu Yue Mo Bei walked back to the academy elder’s side. The latter stretched out his hand and put it on the juvenile’s shoulder, closing his eyes as he checked with focus. Then he retracted his hand and nodded, recording down on the paper: Gu Yue Mo Bei, primeval sea measuring six by six, can be vigorously trained.

This special talent can be measured by four grades – A grade to D grade. A D grade talent youth who is raised for 3 years would be able to become a rank one senior Gu Master, become the foundation of the family. A C grade talent youth after two years of cultivation will usually be able to become a rank two senior Gu Master, becoming the clan’s backbone. A B grade talent must be cared for. Often becoming a future clan elder, with 6-7 years of training they will become rank three Gu Masters.

And when it comes to A grade, even if it was just one, would bring great luck to the entire clan. Great care must be given; with this talent in about 10 years they can become a rank four Gu Master. At that moment they would be able to compete for the position of the head of the clan!

In other words, as long as this Gu Yue Mo Bei grows up, eventually he will become one of the elders of the Gu Yue clan. That is why the academy elder laughed happily; the elders watching in the darkness also sighed in relief, then they all turned to look at one of the elders amongst them with jealousy.

This elder was also horse-faced, known as Gu Yue Mo Bei’s grandfather, Gu Yue Mo Chen. His face was already smiling. He provokingly looked at his old nemesis and said, “What do you think? My grandson isn’t bad huh, Gu Yue Chi Lian.”

Gu Yue Chi Lian had a head full of red hair. He made an annoyed ‘hmph’, not replying to other. It was apparent that his face expression was really dark.

One hour later, half of the youths had already walked through the flower sea. There were quite a number of C and D grade talents among them, while half of those youths had no talent at all.

“Sigh, the bloodline is getting thinner. These few years the clan hasn’t had any rank four masters to strengthen the bloodline. The fourth generation clan head was the only rank five master, but in the end he perished together with the Flower Wine monk and did not leave behind any descendants. The Gu Yue clan’s later generation talents are getting weaker and weaker,” the clan head said with a deep sigh.

At this moment, the academy elder shouted, “Gu Yue Chi Chen!”

On hearing this name all the elders looked at Gu Yue Chi Lian; this was Gu Yue Chi Lian’s grandson.

Gu Yue Chi Lian had a small and short build with a face full of pockmarks. He was clenching his fist, his entire face sweating. It was evident that he was incredibly nervous.

As he walked onto the opposite bank, the little lights entered his body; after walking straight for 36 steps he stopped.

“Another B grade!” The academy elder yelled.

The youths started a commotion, sending Gu Yue Chi Chen envious stares.

“Hahaha, 36 steps, 36 steps!” Gu Yue Chi Lian shouted, proudly staring at Gu Yue Mo Bei. This time it was Gu Yue Mo Chen’s turn to have a sour face.

“Gu Yue Chi Chen, huh...” In the midst of the crowd, Fang Yuan stroked his chin thoughtfully. In his memories, the clan heavily punished Gu Yue Chi Chen because he cheated during the Awakening Ceremony. In reality Chi Chen only had a C grade talent, but because his grandfather Gu Yue Chi Lian helped him fake the results, that’s why he appeared to have B grade talent.

To be honest if he wanted to cheat, Fang Yuan had a countless number of ways to do so, some ways even more perfect than Gu Yue Chi Chen’s method. If a B grade or A grade talent appeared, they would receive the clan’s huge care.

But firstly, Fang Yuan had only just been reborn. It was hard to prepare the cheating method by this condition. Secondly, even if he managed to cheat, he would not be able to fake his cultivation speed. He would be exposed by then. However Gu Yue Chi Chen was different; his grandfather was Gu Yue Chi Lian – One of the two elders with the most authority within the clan. With this Chi Lian would be able to cover up for his grandson.

“Gu Yue Chi Lian was always hostile towards Gu Yue Mo Chen, these two elders are the clan’s two biggest influential authorities. To suppress his opponent he would need his own grandson to have an outstanding talent. It is also because he was helping from behind, Gu Yue Chi Chen was able to conceal the truth for a time. In my memories, if it were not for that incident, the truth would never have been exposed.”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with light, his mind thinking up ways to use this knowledge to his advantage.

If he exposed the matter on the spot, he would receive a bit of reward from the clan, but then he would offend the highly powerful Gu Yue Chi Lian. This was not advisable.

Within such a short time he also could not blackmail them. Due to having low status, it would just backfire on him.

As he pondered, he suddenly heard the academy elder call out his own name: “Gu Yue Fang Yuan!”

(1) 3 Zhang(丈) – This is an old measurement unit in ancient China. 1 Zhang is 3.3 meters.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In that moment his surroundings went quiet. Countless numbers of eyes were on him.

It’s getting more and more exciting, Fang Yuan thought to himself with a laugh. Under the gazes of the masses, he walked across the river and reached the opposite bank.

He could feel a layer of pressure on him. This pressure came from the spirit spring deep in the flower sea. The spirit spring produced primeval qi – because the qi was too rich in here, it caused the pressure.

But very quickly from the flowers below Fang Yuan’s feet, little lights made their way up. These dots of light enveloped his entire body before finally entering him.

These are the Hope Gu, mused Fang Yuan. The person in charge did not tell them, but he knew it very clearly. Every spot of light is a Gu, known as the Hope Gu.

One of the oldest legends talk about the Hope Gu. In the legend, when the world was just formed it was a land of savage wilderness. Among the wild beasts that walked the earth, the first man appeared. He was known as Ren Zu (1), eating raw meat and drinking blood, living a difficult life.

In particular was a group of wild beasts called Predicament. These wild beasts loved the taste of Ren Zu and longed to eat him.

Ren Zu did not have a body as strong as mountain rock, nor did he have the sharp teeth and claws of a wild beast. How could he fight with the Predicaments? His source of food was unstable and he had to hide all day. He was at the bottom of nature’s food chain, and could barely survive.

At this moment, there were 3 Gu that came up to him and said, “As long as you use your life to provide us, we will help you through this difficulty.” Ren Zu had nowhere to go, so he could only agree to these 3 Gu.

He first gave his youth away to the biggest Gu among the three. That Gu then granted him strength.

With strength, Ren Zu’s life began to change. He started to have a stable source of food and was able to protect himself. He fought bravely and ruthlessly, defeating many Predicaments. But soon he suffered and finally realized that strength was not everything. It needed to heal and be cultivated, not spent freely at his will. Not to mention when facing the entire group of Predicaments, his strength alone was too small.

Ren Zu reflected over this lesson bitterly and decided to give his prime middle years to the most beautiful Guamong the three. And thus, the second Gu gave him wisdom.

With wisdom, Ren Zu was able to learn how to think and reflect. He began to accumulate experience and found out that many times when he used wisdom, it was more effective than using strength. By relying on wisdom and strength was he able to conquer all the goals that he formerly could not, and killed many Predicaments. He ate the meat of Predicaments and drank the blood of Predicaments, surviving with tenacity.

But good things do not last and Ren Zu was old, and would only grow older and older. This is because he gave away his youth and middle years to keep the strength and wisdom Gu. When a man is old, his muscles deteriorate and his brain slows down.

“Human, what else can you give us? You don’t have anything else left to provide to us,” the strength and wisdom Gu said as they realized this. They left him.

Without wisdom and strength, Ren Zu was once surrounded by Predicaments. He was old and could not run, his teeth had fallen out and could not even chew wild fruits and plants.

As he fell weakly onto the ground surrounded by Predicaments, his heart was filled with desperation. It was at this time the third Gu said to him, “Human, take me up. I will help you escape Predicament.”

Ren Zu tearfully replied, “Gu, I don’t have anything else left. See, the strength and wisdom Gu have abandoned me. I only have my old age left! While it is not as worth my youth and middle age, but if I give you my old age, my life would immediately end. Even though I am surrounded by Predicaments right now, but I will not die immediately. I wish to live a little longer, even if just a second more. So you should leave, I have nothing else to provide to you.”

But the Gu said, “Among the three I have the smallest needs. Human, if you just give me your heart, it will be enough.”

“Then I will give you my heart,” Ren Zu said. “But Gu, what can you give me in return? In this situation, even if the strength and wisdom Gu returned to my side, it would change nothing.”

When compared to the strength Gu, this Gu looked frail and was just a tiny ball of light. When compared to the wisdom Gu, this one was only able to give out a dim white light, not beautiful in any way.

But when Ren Zu gave it his heart, this Gu suddenly gave out endless light. In this light, the Predicaments screamed in horror: “This is the Hope Gu, withdraw! We Predicaments are most afraid of hope!”

The Predicaments retreated suddenly. Ren Zu was speechless, and from that day onwards whenever he faced predicament, he would give his heart to hope.

At this moment, the Hope Gu converged into a stream of light and had already entered Fang Yuan’s body. Due to the outside pressure they quickly gathered into his abdomen and collected into a group spontaneously, 3 inches under his navel.

Fang Yuan suddenly felt the pressure lessen. He began to walk forward. With every step he took, one after another the Hope Gu would fly out from the sea of flowers and enter his body, joining the ball of light. The ball of light grew brighter and brighter, but the person in charge opposite the riverbank frowned.

“This number of Hope Gu is lesser than expected.” Many elders watching Fang Yuan in the dark thought this as they saw the sight. The clan head frowned as well. This was definitely not the sign of an A grade talent!

Fang Yuan withstood the pressure, continuing to walk forward. “Below 10 steps it means that there is no cultivation talent. 10-20 steps means D grade talent. 20-30 steps would be C grade talent, 30-40 steps is a B grade talent. And 40-50 steps would mean A grade talent. Up till now, I have walked 23 steps.”

24, 25, 26... 27.

Fang Yuan counted in his heart; when he walked the 27th step he could hear a bang and in between his two kidneys the ball of light reached its limit and suddenly exploded.

This burst of energy only happened inside his body; outsiders cannot see it. Only Fang Yuan alone could feel at that moment, an earthshaking reaction. Instantly the fine hairs on his body stood up, his pores shut tight, his mind stretched to a tense limit.

Soon after, his mind went blank, his entire body becoming soft as if he fell into some clouds. His heart relaxed, his fine hairs flattening and his pores re-opened again.

In a short while his entire body was perspiring.

This entire process felt long, but it actually happened in a short time. The feeling went away as fast as it came.

Fang Yuan was blanked out for a short moment before he returned to his senses. He secretly focused his attention into his body and found that below his navel and in between his two kidneys, an aperture had formed out of thin air.

The Awakening Ceremony was a success!

This was the hope to immortality!

(1) Ren Zu (人祖) – Ren is human, Zu is ancestor. He is the first human, like the Adam from Adam & Eve.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The aperture was mysterious and unusual. Although it was located inside Fang Yuan’s body, it was at the same time, not sharing the same space with his internal organs. You could say that it was endlessly huge, yet at the same time infinitely small.

Some call it the Purple Prefecture; some call it the Chinese Pool. However many know it as the Primeval Sea Aperture. The entire body is spherical and the surface of it is covered in flowing white light, like a thin layer of light coating. It was the layer of light from the Hope Gu that previously exploded.

This thin membrane of light supported the aperture so it would not collapse, and inside the aperture was naturally, the Primeval Sea. The seawaters were smooth like a mirror, showing a greenish blue color, yet the water was dense and brought about a copper luster. Only Rank one Gu Masters can form this green coppery primeval essence, known as the green copper sea.

The height of the sea surface was not up to half of the aperture – it was only up to 44%. This was also the limitation of a C grade talent. Every drop of seawater was pure primeval essence, representing the condensation of Fang Yuan's essence, vitality and soul. It was also the accumulation of his life potential over the past 15 years.

This primeval essence is used by Gu Masters to raise Gu. This also means that from now onwards, Fang Yuan has formally entered the route of a Rank one Gu Master. Since the aperture had opened, no more Hope Gu entered Fang Yuan's body.

Fang Yuan gathered himself and felt that the pressure before him was as thick as a wall; he could no longer walk another step forward. "Just like my previous life," he smiled indifferently at this result.

"You can't go any further?" The academy elder shouted across the river, holding onto a small thread of hope. Fang Yuan turned around and walked back, answering with his actions.

At this moment even the young teenagers started reacting. The crowd suddenly buzzed with chatter.

"What? Fang Yuan walked 27 steps?"

"So he was just a C grade talent?!"

"Unbelievable, only a C grade for such a genius like him?"

A great disturbance erupted from the crowd.

"Big brother..." Among them, Gu Yue Fang Zheng looked up, watching with shock as Fang Yuan returned across the river. He could not dare to believe it, his own brother was only a C grade?

He had always thought that his older brother would be an A grade talent. No, not just him, even his aunt and uncle and so many people among the clan thought the same too.

But now, the result was unexpectedly the opposite!

"Damn, he was only a C grade!" The Gu Yue clan head clenched both his fists, drawing a deep breath, disappointment in his voice.

The elders watching from the darkness had mixed reactions. Some were frowning, some lowering their head in discussion, some looking up with a sigh.

"Could the results be wrong?"

"How can that be? This method is accurate beyond reasoning, not to add that we were watching the entire time, even cheating is hard."

"But all his actions and intelligence previously, how do you explain those?"

"Youths with higher quality of primeval sea would indeed display characteristics that surpass the ordinary man. Such as intelligence, perception, memory, strength, agility and so on. On the other hand, these characteristics do not mean that the primeval talent is definitely high. Everything will still be determined by the results.”

“Sigh, the bigger your hopes the bigger the disappointment. The Gu Yue clan’s generation now is no longer like the first generation.”

_

His socks were soaked with the icy cold waters from the river, the coldness piercing into his bones.

Fang Yuan walked with the same emotionless face, his distance getting closer and closer towards the crowd. He could clearly see the academy elder’s heavy expression, and was aware of the stares thrown at him from over a hundred youths.

These glares were mixed with amazement, shock, sneering, and some taking pleasure at this unfortunate event, some indifferent.

It was the same situation, making Fang Yuan unwillingly remember his previous life.

During that time he felt as if the sky had fallen. When he crossed the cold river he lost his footing and fell, soaking his entire body in the water, feeling so lost. No one came forward to help him up.

Those disappointed, cold expressions and gazes were like sharp knives, piercing into his very own heart. His mind was in chaos, his chest searing with pain. It was as if he had fallen from the clouds, down to the ground. The higher you stand, the harder you fall.

But in this life, as the same scene replayed itself, Fang Yuan’s heart was calm. He thought of the legend: When Predicaments come, give your heart to Hope.

And today that hope is inside of him. Even though it was not big, but it was better than those people who had totally no primeval talent.

If others feel disappointed, then let them be disappointed. What else can they do?

What does other people’s disappointments have to do with me? The most important thing is to carry hope inside my heart!

500 years of living had led him to understand that the interesting things that happen in a person’s life, happens during the process when one chases after his own dreams. There is no need to ask others around you to not be disappointed or make them like it.

Walk on your own path, let others be disappointed and unhappy however they please!

“Sigh...” The academy elder let out a deep breath and shouted, “Next, Gu Yue Fang Zheng!”

But no answer came.

“Gu Yue Fang Zheng!” The elder yelled again, the sound of his voice reverberating inside the cave.

“Ah? I’m here, I’m here!” Fang Zheng snapped out of his shock and ran out hurriedly. Unfortunately he tripped over his own foot and fell, hitting his head with a groan and tumbled into the river.

Instantly the entire cave was filled with huge laughter.

“The Fang brothers, nothing special.” The Gu Yue clan head scoffed, feeling a sort of annoyed boredom towards Fang Zheng.

“This is such a huge embarrassment!” Fang Zheng struggled and splashed in the water. The bottom of the river was just too slippery; he couldn’t get up properly. Trying his best only made him look more stupid and clumsy. His heart increasingly flustered as the sounds of laughter filled his ears.

But right at this moment, he suddenly felt a strong pull lifting him up. His head finally left the water surface and his body found balance again.

He wiped his face in a panic and focused his sight. It was actually his older brother Fang Yuan who had grasped his collar and pulled him up.

“Big brother...” He opened his mouth to say. But instead he started choking on water, ending up triggering a violent cough.

“Haha, the difficult older and younger brother of the Fang family!” Someone laughed at the riverbank. The laugher grew louder, yet the academy elder did not come out and stop it. He was deeply frowning, disappointment filling his heart.

Fang Zheng was completely at a loss on what to do, and then he heard his brother say to him, “Go on. The road to the future will be interesting.”

Fang Zheng could not help but open his mouth in surprise. Fang Yuan’s back was facing the crowd so they could not see properly, but Fang Zheng could clearly feel the calmness radiating from Fang Yuan. As his older brother spoke the corners of his mouth were slightly raised, revealing a deep and thoughtful smile.

It was obviously only a C grade talent, yet how can big brother be so calm? Fang Zhen could not help but wonder, his heart full of doubt. Yet Fang Yuan did not say any more. He patted Fang Zheng on the back, and turned and walked away.

Fang Zheng wore a stupefied expression as he walked towards the flower sea. “I never thought big brother would actually be so calm. If it was me, I’d...”

He lowered his head, walking forward absent-mindedly. Yet he did not know that he was playing out a miraculous scene. When he finally snapped out of his reverie, he was already deep in the sea of flowers, standing in a distance that no one else had reached before him.

43 steps!

“Oh my god, A grade talent!” The academy elder screamed, seeming to have lost his mind.

“A grade, really an A grade!?”

“It’s been 3 years, an A grade talented genius has finally appeared in the Gu Yue clan!”

The clan elders that were watching in the darkness were also screaming out at the same time, losing their composures.

“Well, the Fang bloodline originated from us Chi bloodline. So we Chi family will adopt in this Gue Yue Fang Zheng,” Gue Yue Chi Lian immediately announced.

“How is that possible? You old bag Chi Lian, your morals and abilities are out of order, but you’re definitely good at misleading young boys. It’s better to pass this kid to I, Gu Yue Mo Chen to raise!” Gu Yue Mo Chen roared back instantly.

“Stop arguing. No one is more qualified to raise this child than the current clan leader. Whoever has any objections is to go against me, Gu Yue Bo!” The Gu Yue clan head had gone crazy and swept his fiery red gaze over the disappointed and discouraged looks.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Soon a week passed.

“Humans are above all creatures, Gu are the essence of heaven and earth. In this world there are thousands of species, countless number of Gu. They live everywhere around us – In the soil, in the bushes, even on the bodies of wild beasts.”

“As humans continue to propagate and grow, the scholars of the past gradually uncovered the mysteries of the Gu. Those who have opened the aperture, using their own primeval essence to feed, refine and manipulate these Gu – people who have achieved these various purposes are what we call Gu Masters.”

“And all of you have successfully opened your aperture in the Awakening Ceremony 7 days ago. With the coagulation of the primeval sea, right now you are all Rank one Gu Masters.”

In the village academy, the academy elder talked with confidence and composure. In front of him were 57 students, seated and listening attentively.

The mystery and strength of a Gu Master had been deeply rooted in the hearts of the youths a long time ago. Thus everything that the elder taught and said, the students were very interested in.

At this moment a young teen raised his hand. With the elder’s permission he stood up and asked, “Elder sir, I’ve known this since I was small. There are Rank one Gu Masters, Rank two and so on, can you explain in more detail to us?”

The Gu Yue teacher nodded and waved his hand to ask the young man to sit down. “Gu Masters have 9 ranks, from bottom to the top – Rank one, Rank two, Rank three all the way up to Rank nine. Every rank is considered a big realm, and it is divided into 4 small realms – initial stage, middle stage, upper stage and peak stage. You have all just become Gu Masters, so all of you are Rank one initial stage.”

“If you all work hard in your cultivation, your cultivation base will naturally advance to rank two, even rank three. Of course, the higher your talent the bigger your chance of promoting.”

“For D grade talent, the primeval sea takes up about 2-3 layers of the aperture, the highest promotion reachable is Rank one to Rank two. For C grade talent, the primeval sea is 4-5 layers of the aperture. Usually the progress stops at Rank two, but with luck a small percentage of people can advance to Rank 3 initial stage. B grade talents have a primeval sea that takes up 6-7 layers of the aperture, they are able to cultivate to Rank 3, even as far as Rank 4. As for A grade talent, the primeval sea is plenty; it takes up 8-9 layers of the aperture. This kind of talent in a person is naturally the most gifted and the most suitable for a Gu Master’s cultivation, being able to reach Rank 5.”

“As for Gu Masters who are Rank 6 and above, they are all legends. I am not clear about the specifics either. In the Gu Yue clan, there has never been the appearance of a Rank 6 Gu Master, but Rank 4 and Rank 5 Gu Masters we have had before.”

The teenagers’ ears all pricked up, their eyes shining brightly as they listened.

Many of them couldn’t help but look at Gu Yue Fang Zheng who was sitting rigidly at the first row. He was an A grade talent after all. Their eyes were filled with feelings of envy and jealousy. At the same time there were some who stared at the corner at the last row of the classroom.

Leaning against the window at the corner was Gu Yue Fang Yuan, who was bent over the desk sleeping soundly.

“Look, he’s still sleeping,” someone whispered.

“He’s been sleeping continuously for a week, yet he’s still not awake?” Someone cut in.

“There’s more. I heard that he was up all night, wandering about at the edge of the village.”

“There’s been people who’ve seen it more than once, apparently he holds a wine-jar at night, dead drunk outside. Luckily these few years the village surroundings have been cleared clean, so it’s safer.” The fellow schoolmates whisper here and there, letting all kinds of small gossip spreading around quickly.

“Ah well, the blow was just too big. Someone hailed as a genius for so many years unexpectedly ending up to be a C-grade talent in the end, hehe.”

“If only it was just the case. Of all the people his own little brother was pronounced an A grade, right now being the center of attention, enjoying the best treatment. The younger brother soars up to the sky, while the older brother falls to the ground, tut tut...”

As the discussion amongst the students got louder and louder, the academy elder’s brow deepened into a frown. In the whole classroom all the teenagers were sitting respectfully, showing liveliness. This made Fang Yuan who was sleeping on his table stand out so much that it hurt the eyes.

“It’s already been a week, yet he’s still so dispirited. Hmph, initially I must have been mistaken by him, how could someone like this be a genius!” The elder thought disgruntledly. He had spoken many times to Fang Yuan regarding this matter, but to no effect – Fang Yuan still did whatever he liked. He would sleep through every class, making the elder in charge of teaching have a very frustrated headache.

“Forget it, he’s just a C grade. If he can’t even withstand this sort of blow, fostering him with that kind of temperament will just end up wasting the clan’s resources, nothing good will come out of it.” The elder’s heart was filled with disappointment towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was just a C grade, compared to his younger brother Fang Zheng who was an A grade talent, now this was someone worth the clan spending an amount of effort on raising!

While the academy elder thought about all this, he was also replying to the latest question. “In the clan history, there has been many strong masters. For Rank five masters there were two. One of them is the first generation clan head, our ancestor. He was the one who established Gu Yue Village. Another one was the fourth clan head. He had remarkable talent, and managed to cultivate all the way to the realm of a Rank five Gu Master. If it wasn’t for that despicable shameless demon Flower Wine Monk’s sneak attack, he might have been able to achieve Rank six, but who knows...”

As he said this he heaved a deep sigh. Below the platform, the youths starting shouting in a rage.

“It’s all because of that Flower Wine Monk, he was too sinister and cunning!”

“What a pity that our fourth clan leader was softhearted and benevolent, and died at a young age.”

“If only I was born a few hundred years earlier! If I saw that demon I would have torn off his ugly face.”

The fourth clan head and the Flower Wine Monk’s story is something that the entire Gu Yue clan knows.

The Flower Wine Monk was also a Rank five Gu Master, famous among the Demon faction in his time for his many years as a big flower thief. A few hundred years ago he travelled to Qing Mao Mountain. He attempted to commit crimes in Gu Yue Village, but was found out by the fourth generation clan leader in the end. After a earthshakingly huge battle, the Flower Wine monk was beaten to the point he had to beg for mercy on his knees. The fourth clan head was merciful and kind, intending to spare his life. Yet the Flower Wink Monk suddenly launched a sneak attack, successfully inflicting heavy wounds on the fourth clan head. The clan head flew into a rage, killing the Flower Wine Monk on the spot. However his heavy injuries were not curable and thus, he died.

Therefore in the hearts of the Gu Yue clansmen, the fourth generation clan head was a great hero who sacrificed his life for the village.

“Flower Wine Monk huh...” Awoken by the classroom’s noisy chatter, Fang Yuan opened his sleepy eyes.

He stretched his body and thought with resentment in his heart, this Flower Wine Monk, where did he die? Why is it that I still can’t find his legacy after searching around the entire village?

In his memories, there was a Gu Master from the clan who was brokenhearted and started drinking a lot. About two months later from now, the man was heavily drunk as he lay down outside the village. His heavy wine aroma unknowingly attracted a Liquor worm.

The Gu Master was ecstatic, fully intent on catching it. The Liquor worm hurriedly fled, and as the Gu Master was in hot pursuit after it, he followed the Liquor worm’s trail and discovered an underground hole entrance and went in.

The Liquor worm was a very precious and expensive type of Gu. The half drunk Gu Master decided to risk it and enter the hole, finding himself in a secret underground cave. After that he discovered the bones of the Flower Wine Monk and the inheritance he left behind.

When the Gu Master returned to the village, he reported his discoveries and immediately caused a big stir among the entire clan. Later on that Gu Master benefitted much from it, his cultivation base suddenly becoming outstanding. His lover who had once abandoned him before was attracted to him again, and he became the talk of the clan for a while.

“Sadly I only heard bits and pieces about this piece of news, so I don’t know where the accurate location is. It wasn’t like I knew I would be reborn again to this day. Flower Wine Monk, where in the world did you die off to?”

These few days he had been buying a lot of wine, wandering around the village as soon as night arrived. He wanted to use the aroma of liquor to attract the Liquor worm. Unfortunately he never saw the Liquor worm appear, making him feel very disappointed.

“If I could find that Liquor worm and refine it into my vital Gu, that would be so much better than the clan’s Moonlight Gu. In the blink of an eye its already April, there’s not much time left.” Fang Yuan heaved a sigh and gazed out of the window.

Under the blue sky and white clouds, verdant mountains stretched into the distance. In the vicinity was a bamboo grove. This was Qing Mao Mountain’s unique spear bamboo, each bamboo stick as straight as a line, the ends of the bamboo exceptionally sharp like the tip of a spear.

Not too far away, the woods were already turning green. The tender shoots sprouted in a sea of yellow green color. Every now and then, beautiful and colorful sparrows would perch on the branches. The wind of spring blew, wrapping up the freshness of the mountains and rivers, and dispersing it into the world.

Without knowing it, the class was almost over. The academy elder finally informed, “This week I have taught you all how to contemplate and check your own aperture’s primeval sea, and how to meditate and shift around the primeval essence inside your body. Now is the time for you all to refine your vital Gu. After this class ends, you will all go to the academy’s Gu room and pick a Guworm. After choosing your Gu, please go home and focus on refining it. When you have finally refined your Gu, then you can come back to the academy and continue attending class. At the same time, this is your first assessment. Whoever can finish this assessment first will be rewarded a generous sum of 20 primeval stones.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Beside the academy was a Gu room. The Gu room was not big; it was only 60 meters² in size.

In a Gu Master’s road to cultivation, a Gu is the key to strength.

At the end of class, the excited teenagers rushed towards the Gu room.

“Form a line, enter one by one,” some voices suddenly yelled; it was natural that there were guards outside the Gu room. The youths went in one at a time and came out. Finally it was Fang Yuan’s turn to enter the Gu room.

This room was a mysterious room. The four walls all had holes; in each one of these embedded square holes were another square hole. Each of the holes differed in size, some big and some small. The bigger ones were no bigger than a an earthenware cooking pot, the smaller holes no smaller than a fist.

In the many square holes were all kinds of containers – there were grey stone basins, verdant jade dishes, exquisite grass cages, earthen stoves etc. These containers kept in all kinds of variety of Gu.

Some Gu were silent, while some Gu made a lot of noises, creating chirping, clucking, rustling sounds and so on. All these noises combined together to create a sort of life symphony.

“Gu are also divided into 9 big levels, following the same concept of the 9 rank realms of Gu Masters. All the Guin this room are Rank one Gu.” Fang Yuan glanced around, immediately aware of this.

Generally speaking, Rank one Gu Masters can only use Rank one Gu. If they used higher level Gu, these masters would need to pay an extremely heavy price. In addition, Gu need to be fed. The high cost of feeding higher level Gu was often not something lower ranked Gu Masters could afford. Thus to Gu Masters who were newcomers, they would always pick a Rank one Gu worm as their first refined Gu unless under a special situation.

There is great significance to the first Gu that a Gu Master refines – It will become their vital Gu, interconnecting their lives together. If it dies, the Gu master will suffer a huge blow.

“Alas, my original wish was to get my hands on the Flower Wine Monk’s Liquor worm and refine it as my vital Gu. But right now there are still no leads on my search for the Flower Wine Monk’s skeleton. I don’t even know when will I be able to find it, or when someone else does. Just to be safe I’ll pick a Moonlight Gu first.” Fang Yuan sighed inwardly as he walked straight along the wall on his left.

One of the top layers of the holes in this wall had a row of silver plates. In every plate was a Gu.

These Gu were crystalline and shaped like a crescent; it was like a piece of blue quartz. Against the backdrop of the silver dish, the Gu gave off a quiet and beautiful feeling.

Known as the Moonlight Gu, this variety of Gu was the local Gu of the Gu Yue clan and many of the clansmen would choose the Moonlight Gu as their vital Gu. The Moonlight Gu was not a Gu of nature; it was a breed that was cultivated with a secret method by the Gu Yue clan. The Moonlight Gu could not be found anywhere else; it could be said that this Gu was a symbol of the Gu Yue clan.

Since it was all Rank one Moonlight Gu, there was very little difference among one another. Fang Yuan casually chose one and took it. The Moonlight Gu was very light, comparable to the weight of a piece of paper. The insect occupied a small area of his palm; it was roughly the size of a common jade pendant. As Fang Yuan put it on his hand, he could see through it and gaze at the lines on his palm.

With one last look and finding nothing wrong with it, Fang Yuan put the Moonlight Gu into his pocket and walked out of the Gu room. Outside the Gu room, the queue was still quite long. As soon as the next person in line saw Fang Yuan leave, he went into the room hurriedly with excitement.

If it were others, when they got their Gu the first thing they would do, would be to take it home and quickly refine it. But Fang Yuan was not in a hurry to do so, for his mind was still thinking about the Liquor worm.

The Liquor Worm was more precious compared to the Moonlight Gu, although the Moonlight Gu was a specialty of the Gu Yue village, it did not help a Gu Master as much as a Liquor Worm.

After he left the Gu room, Fang Yuan headed straight for the tavern.

“Shopkeeper, two jars of aged wine!” Fang Yuan fished around his pockets and drew out the remaining primeval stone pieces, putting them onto the counter.

These few days he would come here and buy wine, then go around the village border and scout, intending to attract the Liquor worm so it would appear. The shopkeeper was a short and fat middle-aged man, his face oily. After these few days he had already remembered Fang Yuan.

“Sir, you’ve come.” While he greeted Fang Yuan, he stretched out a thick and short chubby hand and skillfully swiped away the primeval stone pieces. As he put them onto his palm he shifted his hand up and down and felt that the weight was correct. With this the shopkeeper’s smile deepened.

Primeval stones were the currency used in this world, used to measure the value of all commodities. At the same time it was also a condensed matter of the world’s essence, usable on oneself, and is important in helping a GuMaster in his cultivation.

As it has monetary attributes as well as usable properties, it was similar to the gold on Earth. Earth has a gold currency standard system, and in this world it was replaced with primeval stones. Compared to gold, the purchasing power of primeval stones is even more astonishing. However with Fang Yuan’s continued spending like this, no matter how many primeval stones he had it would not be enough.

“Two jars of wine everyday, and it has been 7 full days already. The initial savings I had are already almost all spent,” Fang Yuan frowned slightly as he walked out of the tavern with two jars of wine.

Once someone becomes a Gu Master, he would be able to extract primeval essence straight from a primeval stone to replenish the primeval sea in his aperture. Thus to Gu Masters, primeval stones were not just a form of currency, but also a supplement in their cultivation. With sufficient primeval stones, the rate of cultivation will increase greatly; this can make up for the disadvantages of those with lower talent grade.

“I won’t have primeval stones to buy wine anymore tomorrow, yet the Liquor worm just doesn’t want to appear. Do I really have to take the Moonlight Gu and refine it as my vital Gu?” Fang Yuan felt rather unsatisfied.

As he walked with the two jars of wine in his hand, he started to wonder. “Academy elder said, the first person who manages to refine his vital Gu will get a reward of 20 primeval stones. Right now I guess a lot of them are at home trying their best to refine their Gu and compete for the first position. A pity, refining the vital Gu is more of a test of one’s talent. Those with better primeval talent will have better advantage. With my C grade talent, without any special means I have totally no chance of winning.”

It was at this moment, the voice of Gu Yue Fang Zheng called out to him from behind. “Big brother, you really did go to the tavern and buy alcohol! Follow me, aunt and uncle want to see you.”

Fang Yuan stopped in his tracks and turned around. He found his younger brother was no longer like before, always lowering his head as he spoke. Right now the two brothers gazed at each other face to face.

A gust of wind blew, lifting up the older brother’s messy short hair, the lower hem of the younger brother’s robes swishing around.

Just a short period of one month has gone by, yet humans change.

A week after the Awakening Ceremony, a huge change came upon the older brother and the younger brother. The older brother Fang Yuan fell from the clouds, the title of genius mercilessly destroyed. And the younger brother began to bloom with radiance, slowly rising up like a new star.

To the younger brother Fang Zheng, this sort of change was earthshaking to his world. He finally tasted the feelings that his older brother used to have – the feelings of people pinning their hopes on him, the feelings when people use envious and jealous looks to gaze at him. He felt like he was suddenly dragged out from a dark corner and placed into a heaven filled with light. Everyday when he woke up, he felt like he was having a very sweet dream. The difference of how he was being treated from before and now was like day and night, making him somewhat unable to believe his reality even until now, but at the same time also strongly unaccustomed to it.

It was hard to adapt.

In a short while from being unknown to someone who was closely watched, people pointing at him all the time. Sometimes when Fang Zheng walked on the road, he would hear people around him talking about himself, voices praising him. His face would heat up and he would feel completely at a loss of what to do, his eyes trying to avoid gazes, he even almost forgot how to walk properly!

The first ten days or so, Gu Yue Fang Zheng became thinner yet his energy became more vigorous. From the inner depths of his heart, something called ‘self-confidence’ began to manifest.

“This is what big brother had always been feeling before, how beautiful and painful at the same time!”

He could not stop thinking about his older brother Gu Yue Fang Yuan; facing such attention and discussion, how did his older brother deal with it?

He subconsciously started to imitate Fang Yuan, pretending to look expressionless all the time, but quickly found that he was not fit for this kind of style. Sometimes during class, a girl’s shout could easily send him red-faced. On the roads, all the flirting from older women even caused him to flee in a hurry many times.

He was like a toddler learning how to walk, stumbling and falling as he tried to get used to his new life. During this entire process, he was unable to avoid hearing about his older brother – falling into depression, becoming a drunkard, not going home at night, sleeping soundly in class.

He felt very shocked at this. His own older brother, once a strong entity and hailed as a being of great genius, suddenly becoming like this?!

But slowly he started to sort of understand. His big brother was also a normal man after all. Encountering this kind of setback and huge blow would send anyone into depression. Along with this understanding, Fang Zheng secretly felt an indescribable happiness inside. This feeling was something he was terribly unwilling to admit, but yet it definitely existed.

His older brother who was hailed as a genius and always covering him in shadow, acting so depressed and dispirited right now. From a reverse angle, it was a testimony to his own growth, wasn’t it?

He was the outstanding one, this was the real truth!

Hence when he saw Fang Yuan holding the wine jars, his hair messy and clothes untidy, Gu Yue Fang Zheng felt relieved, his breathing also becoming a lot easier. But yet he said, “Big brother, you have to stop drinking, you cannot go on like this! You have no idea how worried the people who care about you are, you need to wake up!”

Fang Yuan was emotionless; he did not say anything. The two brothers gazed at each other.

Younger brother Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s eyes were shining, giving off a sharp and keen feel. And the older brother Gu Yue Fang Yuan’s two orbs were a deep black, faintly resembling a deep ancient pool. These eyes could not help but make Fang Zheng feel a strange oppression. Not long after he subconsciously turned away his gaze and looked somewhere else.

But when he realized it, he felt a sudden rise of anger. It was an anger that was directed at himself.

What’s wrong with you? Can’t even muster the courage to look directly at your big brother?

I’ve changed, I’ve completely changed!

With these thoughts his eyes shifted back their sharpness and he shot his gaze at his brother again. But Fang Yuan was already not looking at him. Holding a jar of wine in each hand, he walked past Fang Zheng and said in a dull voice, “What else are you gawking at? Let’s go.”

Fang Zheng’s breathing became disoriented, the strength that had accumulated inside his heart no longer able to be released. This made him experience a depression that was hard to describe.

Seeing that his older brother had walked far ahead, he could only quicken his pace to catch up. But this time his head was no longer lowered, but rose to meet the sun. His gaze was fixed on his own feet that was stepping on his older brother Fang Yuan’s shadow.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sunset was a red hue setting over the east.

The sky was still bright, but everything seemed to be covered by a shade of gray. Overlooking the window, the mountains in the distance were gradually drawing towards a heavy black color.

The light in the living room was dim. Aunt and Uncle sat high in their chairs, their faces enveloped in shadow, their expressions hard to discern.

As he saw Fang Yuan carrying the two jars of wine, his Uncle Gu Yue Dong Tu’s eyebrows twisted into a knot. He opened his mouth and spoke, “In the blink of an eye, you are both 15 years old now. Since you both have the talents of a Gu Master, especially Fang Zheng, your aunt and I are proud of the both of you. I will give you both 6 pieces of primeval stones, take it. Refining your Gu consumes a lot of primeval essence, so you’ll need these primeval stones.”

As he said this, some servants came over and passed Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng each a small bag.

Fang Yuan took his bag silently.

Fang Zheng immediately opened his bag and looked inside to see 6 pieces of oval shaped, greyish white primeval stones. His face lit up with gratitude at once and he stood up from his seat, facing his aunt and uncle. “Thank you Aunt and Uncle, your nephew does need primeval stones to replenish my primeval essence! You have both raised me until today, this gratitude is engraved into my heart, I shall not forget it forever!”

Uncle smiled and nodded. Aunt hurriedly waved her hands and said warmly, “Sit down, sit down! Although you both are not our children directly, we have always raised you as our own. You both are able to gain a future, and we are proud of that. Alas we do not have children of our own, and sometimes we thought that if you both could really become our children it would be the best.”

Her words brought deep meaning. Fang Zheng did not understand it, but Fang Yuan frowned a little.

Uncle cut in and said, “I have discussed this with your aunt. We thought of adopting you both and become a genuine, real family. Fang Zheng, I wonder if you are willing?”

Fang Zheng was stunned for a second, but the look on his face quickly emerged a joyful smile and he said, “To be honest, every since both my parents died I have longed very much for a family of my own. To be able to become a family with Aunt and Uncle, this is too good to be true!”

Aunt’s expression loosened and she laughed, “Then you are our good son, shouldn’t you stop calling us Aunt and Uncle?”

“Father, mother.” Fang Zheng in a state of realization changed his statement.

Aunt and Uncle laughed heartily. “What a good son, not a waste of us husband and wife to raise you since you were five years old. And we have raised you for ten whole years,” Aunt wiped her tears.

Uncle looked at the silent Fang Yuan and said gently, “Fang Yuan, how about you?”

Fang Yuan shook his head without saying a word.

“Big brother.” Gu Yue Fang Zheng was about to advise him, but Uncle, whose tone was unchanged, stopped him. “If that’s the case, Fang Yuan my nephew, we won’t force you. Since you are already 15 years old, you need to start being independent, this way you will also easily carry on your Fang bloodline. Uncle here has prepared 200 primeval stones for you as financial support.”

“200 primeval stones!” Fang Zheng’s eyes opened wide; he had never seen so many primeval stones in his life. He couldn’t help but reveal a jealous expression.

But Fang Yuan still shook his head.

Fang Zheng was puzzled, while Uncle’s expression changed slightly. Aunt’s face had also turned cloudy.

“Aunt and Uncle. If there is nothing else, then your nephew will take his leave,” Fang Yuan did not give them any chance to speak again. After he finished his sentence he took his wine jars and left the hall immediately.

Fang Zheng rose from his seat and said, “Father, Mother. Big brother is not thinking straight, how about you let me advise him?”

Uncle waved his hand and deliberately sighed, “Alas this matter cannot be forced. Since you have the heart, as your father I am already very content. Servants, take care of young master Fang Zheng treat him well. “

“Then your son will take his leave,” Fang Zheng retreated, and the living room fell into silence.

The sun set below the mountain, and the living room became darker. In a while from the darkness Uncle’s cold voice emerged. “Looks like this brat Fang Yuan has seen through our plot.”

Among the regulations of the Gu Yue clan it was clearly stipulated that the eldest son at 16 years of age would have the qualifications to inherit the family property. Fang Yuan’s parents had passed away, leaving behind a fortune. It was being ‘taken care’ of by Aunt and Uncle. This inheritance was not something a measly sum of 200 essence stones could compare to. If Fang Yuan had also agreed to be adopted by Aunt and Uncle, then he would lose the right to inherit this fortune. If Fang Yuan at this year’s age of 15 decided to be independent, he would also not conform to the clan’s regulations.

“Luckily we managed to win over Fang Zheng, and Fang Yuan only has C grade talent,” Uncle heaved a sigh, feeling joyful.

“Then husband, if Fang Yuan decides to go independent at 16 years of age, what do we do?” Aunt’s tone was hysterical as she thought about the inheritance.

“Hmph, since he is acting undisciplined, then he can’t blame us. As long as we catch him committing a huge mistake before he leaves us and expel him from our family, it will be counted as snatching away his right to inherit the legacy,” Uncle explained coldly.

“But the brat is very clever, how would he make a mistake?” Aunt asked, puzzled.

Uncle rolled his eyes immediately and whispered angrily, “You are really stupid! If he won’t make a mistake, can’t we frame him instead? Just let Shen Cui seduce Fang Yuan and scream assault, we catch him on the spot, fabricate a story about him acting wild while he was drunk. Surely we can expel Fang Yuan?”

“Husband you really have a way, what an ingenious plan!” Aunt was overjoyed at that moment.

The thick colors of the night covered the sky, and the stars that blanketed the sky were mostly covered away by floating dark clouds. Each of the households in the village gradually lit up with lights.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was ushered into a room.

“Young master Fang Zheng, the old master personally had me tidy up this room specially for you,” Mother Shen said with a hospitable tone. She bowed her waist, her face having a flattering smile.

Fang Zheng looked around with a glance, his eyes shining. This room was at least bigger by two times compared to his previous room. The middle of the room was a spacious bed; beside the window was a rosewood desk with a delicate set of ink and paper. The walls were decorated with exquisite ornaments, and beneath his feet was not an ordinary floor, but covered in a layer of soft handmade carpet.

From his childhood until now, Fang Zheng had never stayed in such a room. He immediately nodded his head continuously and said, “This is very good, it really isn’t bad, thank you Mother Shen.”

Mother Shen was Aunt and Uncle’s most highly valued person; she was in charge of all the slaves in the house and was a housekeeper who lived up to her reputation. The girl Shen Cui who served Fang Yuan was her daughter.

Mother Shen laughed, “I am not deserving of young master’s gratitude, it is my duty, my duty! Young master, do not hesitate to eat well and sleep well. Whatever you want, just shake the bell beside your bed, somebody will attend to you immediately. Old master has already instructed us, so in these few days please do put all your attention on cultivating, young master. Just leave all the other chores to us.”

Fang Zheng felt a gush of gratitude in his heart. He did not say anything, but deep down inside he decided, this time I must get number one and not let Aunt and Uncle down!

The dark clouds in the sky were getting heavier, and the night was getting darker. In the night sky most of the stars were covered away by the clouds, leaving a few shining with faint light, blinking away in the sky.

“Aunt and Uncle must be plotting on how to expel me from the house right now. In my previous life they secretly instigated the servants to provoke me, and then framed me. Then they expelled me from the family; I wonder if there will be any changes in this life.” Fang Yuan sneered in his heart as he walked along the streets.

He had long seen clearly the true colors of his Aunt and Uncle. But he could also understand it.

Men would throw away their lives in pursuit for wealth. No matter whether on Earth or in this world, there would always be many people who would be willing to trample over kinship, friendly and love for their own self-interests and benefits.

In fact kinship did not exist. In the beginning when Aunt and Uncle took in Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng, their only purpose was to seek the heritage. It was just so that the two brothers were repeatedly unexpected.

“All things are difficult before they are easy. To me this is more so of the case. Firstly I do not have outstanding talent; secondly I do not have the care of a teacher. It is equivalent to raising a family from nothing, but with my parent’s legacy it can be said to be a huge advantage for me. In my previous life Aunt and Uncle stole away the heritage, and because of that I had to waste two full years to be able to cultivate to Rank One peak stage. In this life I cannot afford to make the same mistake.”

Fang Yuan pondered in his mind as he walked.

Instead of staying home, he held the two jars of wine and walked towards the outskirts of the village.

The night deepened and the dark clouds obscured the star light, the mountain breeze blew, growing stronger gradually.

The mountain rain was coming. But he still had to search; to get ahold of his parent’s inheritance, he would need to wait until he was sixteen. And the Flower Wine Monk’s treasure was the only thing that he could get his hands on in the short run.

There were not many people on the streets. The houses along the road showed a dim light. Some small rubbish and leaves were blown away by the wind, drifting about.

Fang Yuan’s thin clothing could not stop the mountain wind, and he could not help but feel a cold chill. He simply opened the wine jar, drinking a small mouthful of wine. Although it was turbid wine, but after swallowing it he felt a warm feeling rising up.

This was the first time that he actually drank wine in these few days.

The further he walked out of the village, the lesser the houses beside the road, and the dimmer the lights became. In front of him it was even darker. The wind blew heavily against the mountain forest, the branches swaying in the night, making a whistling noise that sounded like a herd of beasts roaring.

Fang Yuan’s pace did not slow down. He walked out of the huge entrance of the village and out into the darkness, going further as he walked. And behind him were the bright and brilliant lights of tens of thousands of houses. In these lights there was a warm corner.

The younger brother Fang Zheng was seated at his desk, reviewing the notes that he had taken down during class. The lights in the house were shining brightly, the and solid wall blocked away the cold winds. Beside his hand was a cup of warm ginseng tea, the steam rising up from the cup.

“Young master Fang Zheng, the hot bathing water has been prepared for you.”

Outside the door, Shen Cui’s voice softly floated through.

Fang Zheng’s heart jolted. “Then bring it in please.”

Shen Cui walked into the room with her waist bowed, her expression pleased.

“Your servant greets young master.” Her eyes sent amorous glances at Fang Zheng. Fang Yuan was only a C grade talent, but Fang Zheng was an A grade talent! To be able to get ahold of him, is truly the biggest fortune!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Pitter patter...

Big, heavy raindrops fell to the earth, battering the roof of the verdant bamboo house, making brittle sounds.

The surface of the pond in front of the building was full of ripples as the rain fell, the fish in the water swimming lively around, the aquatic plants swaying about at the bottom of the pond. The sky was overcast; a thick rain curtain obscured the field of vision as far as the eye could see.

In the somewhat dim room the window was open, and Fang Yuan quietly watched the heavy rainfall, sighing.

“It has already been 3 days and 3 nights.”

On the night 3 days ago he had walked out of the village with two jars of wine, searching around the surroundings. But when it was late into the night it started pouring rain. Put aside him being drenched to the bones, the main point was that in the situation he could not go about searching anymore.

The rainwater would quickly wash away the wine fragrance. At the same time if he forced himself to search under such conditions, it might arouse suspicions. Although previously he pretended to become a depressed drunken person to cover up his real motives, but he knew never to underestimate the intelligence of others around him. Only a fool would think others were stupid.

Thus under this helplessness, Fang Yuan could only stop his search.

Not too mention that the moment it started raining, the rain had went on continuously. Sometimes it became heavier and sometimes lighter, but it never stopped.

“I guess in this way, I won’t be able to find the Liquor worm for a short period of time. To be safe I can only choose to start refining the Moonlight Gu. While I refine it, if I can find the Liquor worm during the process it would be the best, but if I can’t then this would have to do. But this matter is very common; a storm may arise from a clear sky, something unexpected may happen anytime. In this world who can do everything without obstacles in his way, having a perfect journey?”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts were very calm; his 500 years of experience had long washed away the impulsiveness that he rarely had in the first place.

He closed the door and window and sat cross-legged on his bed. He closed his eyes slowly and after breathing a few times, he calmed his state of mind.

In the next moment the vision of his primeval aperture appeared in his mind. The aperture may be positioned inside his body but it was mysteriously unusual, limitlessly big and yet infinitely small. The outer layer of the aperture was a layer of light. The white light gave a thin impression, but it still supported the aperture well.

In the aperture was a sea of primeval essence. The seawater was a green copper color, the surface of the sea clear and calm as a mirror. The water level was about half the height of the aperture. The entire volume of the sea occupied 44% of the aperture.

This was the green copper primeval sea of a Rank one Gu Master, and every drop of seawater was primeval essence. It was Fang Yuan’s life elementary force and the condensation of his essence, vitality and soul.

Every drop of primeval essence was precious, because it was the root of a Gu Master, and was the source of power. Gu Masters need to rely on primeval essence to refine and use Gu.

As he retreated his mind from the primeval sea, Fang Yuan opened his eyes retrieved the Moonlight Gu. The Moonlight Gu quietly sat in the middle of his palm, resembling a curved blue moon, small and crystalline.

With a simple thought, the primeval sea in his aperture tumbled and a jet of primeval essence broke from the sea surface and transferred out of the body, finally rushing into the Moonlight Gu. The Moonlight Gu suddenly radiated fiercely in blue light, slightly trembling in Fang Yuan’s palm, resisting the influx of primeval essence.

Gu are the essence of heaven and earth, carrying the secrets of the world, the bearers of the law of nature. They are living creatures that live freely under the sky, each born with a will of its own. Right now with Fang Yuan trying to refine it, it would mean wiping out its will. Feeling the danger looming, the Moonlight Gu naturally resisted.

The process of refining is a very difficult one.

The Moonlight Gu was like a curved crescent moon. As the green copper primeval essence poured into the crescent, the two pointed ends of the crescent turned green. Slowly this green copper essence began to spread to the middle of the crescent moon.

In less than three minutes, Fang Yuan’s face had become pale. A huge volume of primeval essence continuously poured into the Moonlight Gu, making him feel a weakness that rapidly attacked his heart.

1%, 2%, 3%... 8%, 9%, 10%.

Ten minutes later, Fang Yuan’s primeval sea had used away 10% of primeval essence. Yet on the blue crystalline Moonlight Gu’s surface, the points of green copper essence on the two tips of the crescent only expanded a tiny little area towards the center.

The resistance of the Moonlight Gu was immensely strong. Fortunately Fang Yuan had anticipated this earlier and did not feel surprised. He persisted and poured in more essence into the Moonlight Gu.

1%, 2%, 3%...

After another twenty minutes, the primeval sea in Fang Yuan’s body was only left with 14%. The green copper essence on the Moonlight Gu had expanded slightly, the two tips of green essence adding up together covering the surface of the Moonlight Gu by about 1/12. The rest of the Moonlight Gu’s surface was still the original color of light blue.

“Refining a Gu is so hard,” Fang Yuan sighed as he looked at it. He broke the influx of primeval essence, stopping the refining process.

Up until now, he had been refining for half an hour, the primeval sea in his aperture consumed over more than half, with only 14% of primeval essence left. And the Moonlight Gu was only refined by 1/12 of it.

To make matters worse the Moonlight Gu was still emitting its faint blue halo. Even though Fang Yuan had stopped refining, the Moonlight Gu did not stop resisting; it was still driving out Fang Yuan’s green coppery primeval essence.

Fang Yuan could clearly feel that the primeval essence that he poured into the Moonlight Gu was being pushed out, bit by bit by the Moonlight Gu out of its body. On its surface, the green copper essence at the two tips of the moon crescent was slowly shrinking.

Based on this speed of reduction, in about six hours later the Moonlight Gu would be able to completely expel all of Fang Yuan’s primeval essence. At that time when he needed to refine this Gu it would make no difference from starting over again.

“Every time when refining Gu, it is just like a fight between two armies, a battle of positional warfare, or war of attrition. Even though I refined 1/12 of the Gu, I wasted three quarters of my primeval essence. When refining Gu, a Gu Master has to replenish his primeval sea while continuously engaging the refinement process, consolidating his victory. The refinement of a Guis a test of one’s skill in shifting his primeval essence and the patience of an enduring battle.”

Fang Yuan took out a piece of primeval stone from his moneybag as he pondered.

A Gu Master had two ways to replenish the consumed primeval essence. The first way was natural recovery. After a period of time the primeval sea would naturally replenish the primeval essence. In the case of a C grade talent like Fang Yuan, it would take about one hour to replenish 4% of primeval essence. In six hours it could recover 24% points of the total quantity primeval essence.

The second way was to absorb the natural essence directly from a primeval stone.

The primeval stone is a treasure from nature itself. As condensed natural primeval essence, while absorbing it the water level of the primeval sea was rising with a continuous speed that could be seen with the naked eye.

After about half an hour the primeval sea had been replenished back to its original volume of 44%. At this level the rising water level of the sea stopped abruptly. Even though there was still space inside the aperture, Fang Yuan could not store any more primeval essence. This was the limit of his C grade talent.

Thus from here one can see the significance of the grade of one’s cultivation talent. The higher the talent, the more primeval essence the aperture can hold, and the faster the natural recovery of the primeval essence will be.

In Fang Yuan’s case to refine a Gu and solidify his results, he would have to absorb primeval stones because his primeval essence natural recovery rate cannot defeat the rate of the Moonlight Gu expelling it out.

However in the case of the A grade talent Fang Zheng, he could replenish 8% of primeval essence every hour. In six hours he would recover 48% of primeval essence, and in the same time frame the Moonlight Gu could only expel away 3% points of primeval essence. Fang Zheng did not require the external help of a primeval stone. He could go on refining with a few rests in the process and successfully refine the Moonlight Gu in a few days.

That was why Fang Yuan knew from the beginning that in this test, to refine the Moonlight Gu he never had the chance to obtain the first position. It had nothing to do with a person’s actual strength, as the first factor was the grade of talent.

The second factor would be primeval stones. If there was an abundance of primeval stones, without hesitation to consume, a B grade talent could also surpass an A grade talent and obtain the first position.

“In my hands are six pieces of primeval stones. I cannot compare to Gu Yue Mo Bei or Gu Yue Chi Chen, these kinds of people who have their elder family members supporting them from behind. My talent is on C grade, and cannot be compared to Fang Zheng who has an A grade talent. I never had a chance of winning in this test. Why not divert my energy and go look for the Liquor worm? If I can make the Liquor Worm into my vital Gu it would be so much better than the Moonlight Gu. Hmm? The sound of rain outside the window has gotten lighter, there seems to be a sign of ceasing. The rain has been ongoing for three days and three nights, it should be time it stopped.”

Fang Yuan kept the Moonlight Gu and got down from his bed. As he was about to open the window, there was a knock on the door.

Outside the door came his servant Shen Cui’s voice, “Young master Fang Yuan, its me. It has been raining straight for three days, so I brought you some food and wine. Young master can eat and drink and ease some depressed feelings.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan frowned slightly. Based on intuition and 500 years’ worth of life experience, he could smell a conspiracy.

His eyes flashed and he relaxed his brows. “I’m a little hungry right now, you came at the right time. Come in,” He said.

Outside the door, while carrying the food box Shen Cui smiled coldly as she heard his reply. But when she pushed open the door, her face was left with a gentle and meek expression.

“Young master Fang Yuan, the food and wine smells really good. I can smell it as I hold the box.” Her voice was sweet and had a hint of longing and flattery. She put the food box on a small table and took out the dishes, arranging them nicely. The food was indeed very fragrant and tasty. After that she took out two wine cups and poured the wine.

“Come, young master. Sit down. Your servant mustered her courage today and wants to accompany young master for a drink.” She smiled like a flower, walking to Fang Yuan’s side. Boldly she took him by the hand and pulled him over to sit at the chair by the table.

Then she sat on his thigh and leaned her gentle body against Fang Yuan’s chest, acting like a timid and lovable woman, whispering in his ear. “Young master Fang Yuan, your servant has always liked you. It doesn’t matter what grade you are, I will always wish to be beside you, rely on you, and comfort you. Tonight your servant would like to give her body to you.”

She really dressed up today.

She put on blusher, her lips like cherry powder. When she whispered in his ear, a delicate and youthful breath teased at Fang Yuan’s earlobe. Because she was sitting on his lap, Fang Yuan could feel her well-shaped figure easily. Her elastic thighs, her slender little waist and her soft chest.

“Young master, let me feed you wine myself.” Shen Cui picked up the wine cup, raising her head and taking a sip. Then her eyes fixated on Fang Yuan, her small cherry lips a little opened, slowly leaning over to his mouth.

Fang Yuan’s expression was indifferent, as if what was on his lap was not a young maiden, but a block of sculpture.

When she saw Fang Yuan’s expression, Shen Cui felt a little uneasy at first. But when her lips were just an inch away from his, she was assured, sneering in her heart. You’re still pretending, she mused.

Just at this moment Fang Yuan scoffed, his tone disdainful. “So it’s just a power play (1).”

Shen Cui’s face became stiff and she swallowed the wine in her mouth, trying to pull false flattery. “Young master Fang Yuan, what are you saying...”

Fang Yuan’s eyes were emitting cold light. He stared into Shen Cui’s eyes, placing his right hand on her snowy white neck at the same time, slowly pressing it with force. Shen Cui’s pupils shrank and her voice was full of panic. “Young master, you’re hurting me.”

Fang Yuan did not answer, but his hold on her neck grew stronger.

“Young master Fang Yuan, your servant is a little scared!” Shen Cui already had difficulty breathing; she was looking flustered. A soft pair of hands subconsciously grasped at Fang Yuan’s hand, trying to pry his hand away. But Fang Yuan’s hand was strong like iron, unable to be pulled away.

“Looks like Uncle and Aunt let you come over to seduce me and frame me? This must mean that there are already people arranged downstairs, huh.” Fang Yuan laughed coldly, adding, “But who do you think you are, coming to use tactics on me, with the two piles of garbage of rotten flesh on your chest?”

As he said this, his left hand climbed up her chest and ruthlessly grabbed her soft breasts, making it incredibly deformed all of a sudden.

Intense pain flared from her chest; Shen Cui's eyes were round and wide-opened.

The pain was so great that her eyes were full of tears. She wanted to scream, but Fang Yuan gripped her throat so strongly that in the end she could only sob for a few times. Then she started resisting strongly, for she really was going to suffocate!

But at this moment, Fang Yuan slowly relaxed his grip.

Shen Cui immediately opened her mouth and gulped in air greedily. Her breathing was too eager – resulting in a series of violent coughs. Fang Yuan laughed lightly, stretching out his palm. He gently stroked her cheek, his tone carefree as he spoke, "Shen Cui, do you think I can kill you, or not?"

If Fang Yuan roared at her with an evil and loud voice, Shen Cui might actually fiercely retaliate. But when Fang Yuan smiled and spoke in a shallow manner, his soft voice asking if he could kill her or not, Shen Cui felt a deep fear from the bottom of her heart.

She was scared!

She looked at Fang Yuan with terror on her face, seeing this young man smiling all over his face as he gazed at her.

At this instance, Shen Cui vowed to herself that she would never forget his eyes for the rest of her life. This pair of eyes were not mixed with the slightest emotion, dark and profound, resembling a deep ancient pool that was hiding a horrifying beast.

Under the gaze of these eyes, Shen Cui felt like she was naked in the midst of ice and snow!

The person before me, definitely dares to kill me, is able to kill me...

Oh heavens! Why did I come and provoke this kind of devil?!

Shen Cui's heart was full of remorse. At this moment she longed to turn and flee. But right now she was still on his lap; she did not dare to run away, not even able to pluck the courage to do any action.

The muscles on her entire body were tense, her gentle stature trembling. Her face was as pale as white paper and she could not utter a single word.

"Since you as a personal servant girl, have been serving me for so many years, I won't kill you this time. Since you want to escape from slavery, go and find my little brother, he's stupid and naïve." Fang Yuan retracted his smile and patted her cheek, his tone plain like water.

With a sigh, he finally said —-

"You can leave."

Shen Cui was as dumb as a piece of wood as she walked out obediently. She was afraid out of her wits, and did not know how she managed to leave the side of the devil called Fang Yuan.

The men hidden in the shadows looked confused when they saw Shen Cui come out looking so shaken.

“They actually arranged such a beautiful trap, its even more innovative than my previous life. Hehe, Aunt and Uncle, this kindness of yours I will remember deeply!”

Not long after Shen Cui left, Fang Yuan stood up and left as well. No matter what, he could not stay at this residence anymore. A wise man sees and mitigates foreseen risks, what more to say for a devil? When there is insufficient strength, only a fool would put himself in danger.

“Innkeeper, do you have any rooms available?” Fang Yuan came to the only inn in the village and asked for the price.

“Yes, yes. There is room on the second floor and third floor. Not only is it cheap, the rooms are also tidy and clean. The first floor is the cafeteria; guests of the inn can come here and eat. There is also service for asking the inn workers to bring up food to your room.” The innkeeper was full of hospitality as he entertained Fang Yuan.

This inn was the only one in the village, but the business was not very good. In fact it was somewhat deserted. Only when the annual merchant caravan came by to trade on Qing Mao Mountain, the inn would be full of people.

Fang Yuan was a little hungry, so he passed 2 full round pieces of primeval stones to the innkeeper. “Give me a good room for me to stay in, and prepare 2 jars of wine, 3-4 different dishes, return me any excess balance.”

“Done.” The innkeeper took the 2 pieces of primeval stone and asked, “Would you like to eat in your room, or dine in the hall?”

Fang Yuan looked at the sky. The rain had stopped and it was nearing evening. He could simply eat in the lobby and set out straight for the outskirts of the village when he was done, continuing his search for the treasure of the Flower Wine Monk. Thus he replied, “I’ll eat in the hall.”

The inn had a dining hall; there were a dozen square tables, four long benches surrounded each table. In between the tables were huge and thick pillars that were supporting the inn. The floor was covered with big tiles of marble, but it was wet; it was hard to conceal the moisture of the mountain.

There were 3 tables seated with people. Seated by the window, an old man was drinking wine, gazing outside at the sunset, being all alone. In the middle of the cafeteria was a table seated with 5-6 hunters. They were discussing about their hunting experiences in loud voices, and at their feet were a pile of different kinds of mountain prey, like pheasants and hares.

In another corner was a table with 2 young people, seemingly discussing in secret. Their figures were hidden in the darkness, it was hard to see them, and harder to know their gender.

Fang Yuan decided to sit by the table nearest to the door. Soon after, the dishes were served on the table.

“With my C grade talent, to refine the Moonlight Gu I would need to borrow primeval stones. If my luck is good and this Moonlight Gu does not have a strong will, I would only need 5 pieces. But if it is stubborn that I’d be in trouble, probably need around at least 8 pieces.”

Gu are living creatures, so it is natural for them to have the will to survive.

Some have a strong will and would always resist the refinement process; some Gu have weak will, all throughout refining they helplessly surrender; once there was no resisting, the refining process would become relaxing.

“Right now I only have 6 primeval stones on me, but I gave 2 to the innkeeper so I’m left with 4 pieces. There’s not enough.”

In this world primeval stones are the local currency, and the buying power is very strong. A normal family of three would spend at most 1 piece of essence stone in a month. But when it came to a Gu Master, the consumption of primeval stones was greater. Take Fang Yuan for example; just by refining Gu alone he would need an average of 7 primeval stones or so. And this is just on a Moonlight Gu, if he really did find the Liquor worm, just to refine it with Fang Yuan’s grade talent, he would need at least a dozen more!

“In other words, right now my situation is – Even if I find the Liquor worm, I don’t necessarily have the primeval stones to refine it. However I still need to search around, because there is a huge possibility that the Flower Wine Monk’s treasure has a huge abundance of primeval stones.”

This was not a difficult deduction. The Flower Wine Monk was a Rank five Gu Master after all. For such a famous strong warrior of the Demonic Faction, how could he not have primeval stones, which are the must-have item in a Gu Master’s cultivation?

(1) Power play – tactics exhibiting or intended to increase a person’s power or influence.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

“Right now everything comes down to the Flower Wine Monk’s treasure. If I can find it, all my problems will be solved. If I don’t find it, all these issues will greatly slow down my speed of cultivation. If that happens I’ll lose out to people at my age in cultivating. I don’t understand! I’ve spent more than a week trying to attract the Liquor worm to appear, why do I still not see it?”

Fang Yuan frowned and racked his brains. It was like putting food into his mouth, but still not knowing how it tasted (1).

Suddenly there was a loud noise, interrupting his thoughts. Fang Yuan looked at the direction of the sound, realizing that the 6 hunters seated around the table at the middle of the hall were heavily drunk. The atmosphere around them was fiery and their faces were all red.

“Brother Zhang, come, drink another cup!”

“Old brother Feng, we brothers admire your abilities! You took down a black skinned wild boar alone, what a man! This cup of wine you must drink, or else you’ll be disrespecting us!”

“Thank you brothers for your sincerity, but I really can’t drink anymore.”

“Brother Feng can’t drink anymore, perhaps you dislike this wine because it’s not good enough? Waiter, come over! Give me some good wine!”

The noise was becoming louder; it was obvious that the group had drunk a lot. The waiter hurriedly went over and said, “Well good sirs, we do have good wine, but it is quite expensive.”

“What, you’re afraid we won’t pay up?!” When the hunters heard the waiter, quite a few of them stood up and stared at the waiter. They were either big and tall or thick and burly in stature, capable and vigorous in a threatening manner, each having the courage that mountain men possessed.

The waiter quickly said, “I would not dare to look down on you brave men, it’s just that these wine is really expensive, one jar costs 2 pieces of primeval stones!”

The hunters were stunned. 2 primeval stones was definitely not cheap – It was the sum of 2 months of the normal average household monthly expenses. Even though hunters earn more from hunting when compared to ordinary mortals, like how some times a black skinned wild pig could be worth half a primeval stone. However hunting was risky and a mistake could turn the hunter into prey.

To the hunters, using 2 primeval stones just to drink a jar of wine was just not worth it.

“Is there really such an expensive wine?”

“Boy, you aren’t trying to lie to us right?”

The hunters were shouting about, but their voices felt a little timid, unable to back out of the situation with grace. The waiter kept telling them he wouldn’t dare.

The hunter called brother Feng saw that the scene was not right, and he hurriedly said, “My brothers, let’s not spend anymore. I can’t drink anymore, let us drink this wine another day.”

“What, you can’t say that brother!”

“This is...”

The rest of the hunters were still shouting, but their voices started to fade away. One by one they sat back in their seats. The waiter was also a shrewd person. When he saw this, he knew that he was not able to sell the wine any more. However this situation hardly surprised him. As he was about to retreat, a young man’s voice came from the table at the dark corner. “Hehe, hilarious. Each one of them blindly shouting for nothing. If you can’t afford to buy wine, you should just obediently keep your mouths shut and go to the side!”

When the hunters heard this, one of them immediately retorted in anger, “Who said we can’t afford it? Waiter, bring over that jar of wine, I’ll give you the stones, two pieces of it!”

“Oh, give me a moment sir, I’ll get it!” The waiter did not expect such a turn of events. He hurriedly replied and turned to grab a wine jar and brought it over. This wine jar was as big as the common jar of wine, but the moment it was uncorked, in that very instant a refreshing and mellow fragrance filled the entire cafeteria. Even the old man sitting alone at the window could not help but turn his head over when he smelled the wine aroma, and he gazed at the jar of wine.

It was definitely good wine.

“Dear guests, its not bragging. This is the green bamboo wine; the entire village only has one inn, which is us. Smell the fragrance!” The waiter inhaled deeply as he said this, his facial expression full of satisfaction and enjoyment.

Fang Yuan was moved. This inn waiter was really not boasting.

In the Gu Yue Village there were 3 taverns. The wine sold there were the common rice wine, muddy wine and other similar common wine. In order for Fang Yuan to attract the Liquor worm, he continuously bought wine for 7 days; it was naturally that he was aware of the prices.

Several of the hunters looked at the wine jar before them. They were consumed by alcohol addiction. Each of them twitched their noses and swallowed. As for the hunter who bought the wine in a moment of anger, his expression was even more interesting; a layer of remorse and anger appeared on his face.

After all this jar of wine was the value of two primeval stones!

“I was too rash and bought the wine by impulse. This waiter is not too typical. He immediately brought the wine, now the cork is unsealed. Even if I want to return the goods it is too late.”

The more the hunter pondered, the more distressed he felt. He wanted to return it back, yet he was unable to do so in fear of being humiliated. At last he could only bang on the table and said with a strong smile, “Damn, this wine is good! Brothers please, drink all you want. Today this wine is on me!”

At this moment the young man at the table in the corner hissed, “How is this small jar of wine enough for six? If you have the guts then go buy a few more jars.”

The hunter was furious when he heard this and stood up in a rage, his eyes fixed on the young man who spoke. “Brat, you sure have a lot of words. Come, stand up and fight me!”

“Oh? Then I will stand up.” The young man got up from his seat as he heard the hunter’s remark, grinning as he walked out from the shadows. His body figure was tall and thin, his skin pale. He was dressed in navy battle robes, and looked clean and neat. His head wore a blue headband; his upper body had a jacket that showed his thin and weak shoulders. The lower body had long pants, the feet were covered in bamboo sandals and the calves were tied.

The most important thing about him was the green belt on his waist. The middle of the belt was a shiny piece of copper; on the copper plate was a black “One” word.

“It’s a Rank One Gu Master?!” The hunter clearly understood what this manner of clothing represented. He drew in a deep breath, the anger on his face dissipating, replaced by alarm.

He had never imagined that he actually provoked a Gu Master!

“Didn’t you want to fight me? Come on then, hit me.” The young Gu Master walked slowly towards the man, a playful smile on his face. But the hunter who had challenged him earlier had become frozen like a sculpture, unable to move from his spot.

“Maybe you guys can all come at me together, that works too.” The young Gu Master slowly walked to the hunter’s table, casually speaking.

The expressions on their faces had changed. Some of the hunters who had drunken red faces had gone pale suddenly. Each of their foreheads was drenched in cold sweat, and they felt restless, too afraid to even breathe heavily.

The young Gu Master stretched out a hand, picking up the green bamboo wine jar. He put it under his nose and sniffed, smiling. He said, “It sure smells good...”

“If my lord likes it, then please feel free to take and drink it. It is an apology from me for offending my lord,” the hunter who provoked him earlier hurriedly replied and cupped his hands together before his chest, pushing a smile to his face.

Unexpectedly the young man’s facial expression changed fiercely; with a loud crack the jar fell into pieces on the ground. The Gu Master looked cold as ice, his gaze sharp like a sword. He hissed angrily, “You think you have the right to apologize to me? You bunch of hunters must be really rich, even richer than me, since you guys spent 2 primeval stones to drink wine?! Do you have any idea, how upset I am over primeval stones right now! You actually dare to show off your wealth in front of me at this time! You mortals can even compare to me?!”

“We wouldn’t dare, we wouldn’t dare!”

“To offend my lord, it is a heinous crime!”

“We mortals did not mean to offend you, these are our primeval stones, please accept lord Gu Master.”

The hunters quickly got on their feet and took out the primeval stones they had. But how could these mortals have money, all they pulled out was just bits and fragments of primeval stones, the biggest fragment piece was no bigger than a quarter of a primeval stone.

The Gu Master did not accept these primeval stones, but he did not stop sneering. He used his hawk-like gaze and swept past the entire cafeteria. The hunters that he scanned over lowered their heads. The old man who sat at the window watching the scene also quickly turned his head to avoid the Gu Master’s gaze.

Only Fang Yuan watched quietly, void of hesitation.

The clothing that this young Gu Master was wearing was the uniform that only formal Gu Masters could wear, so Fang Yuan was not qualified to wear it. Fang Yuan would only receive it from the clan after he graduated from the academy.

The word ‘One’ on the copper piece on the belt of the young Gu Master was to indicate his position as a Rank one Gu Master. However he was already around 20 years or so, and the aura of primeval essence that his body emitted seemed to indicate that he was Rank one upper stage.

Starting cultivation at 15 years of age and only reaching Rank one upper stage at around 20 years of age, this showed that the young Gu Master was only of D grade talent, which was a grade worse than Fang Yuan. There was a high possibility that this man was only a logistics Gu Master, not even counted as a battle Gu Master.

However even if that was the case, when facing these six brawny hunters it was more than sufficient.

This was the gap of power between a Gu Master and a mortal human.

“With power, one can be at the top. This is the nature of this world. No, actually any world is also the same, the big fish eats the small fish and the small fish eats the shrimp. It’s just that this world shows it even more openly,” Fang Yuan mused secretly.

“Alright Jiang Ya, you already taught them a lesson. Let’s not further embarrass these mortals. If it gets out, even if you are not embarrassed, I would be,” the other young person sitting in the corner voiced out.

When everyone heard the voice speak, they realized that this young person was a woman.

The young Gu Master called Jiang Ya stopped sneering as his female companion chided him. He did not even bother looking at the fragments of primeval stones that the hunters had taken out; these stones were not even the sum of two primeval stones, he was definitely not interested in it.

He flicked his sleeve and walked back to his original table. As he strode back he said maliciously, “If you think you have the guts to continue drinking, then go and drink green bamboo wine. I want to see, who still dares to drink this wine?”

The hunters all lowered their heads, acting like six obedient sons after being scolded.

The strong aroma of wine filled the entire cafeteria. The hunter who bought the wine felt his heart aching as he smelled the fragrance. After all he had spent 2 primeval stones on this wine, yet he never got to drink even one mouthful!

Fang Yuan put down his chopsticks; he had eaten enough. As he sniffed in the wine aroma his eyes flashed for a moment, then he took out 2 primeval stones and put them on the table. “Waiter, give me a jar of green bamboo wine,” he said indifferently.

The whole scene froze.

The young Gu Master called Jiang Ya instantly stopped in his footsteps. The corners of his mouth twitched and he exhaled. He had just finished his warning, yet right after he was done Fang Yuan wanted the wine. This was like specially stepping over him and slapping him in the face.

He turned around and narrowed his eyes, shooting a cold glare at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan calmly stared back, his face indifferent and void of fear.

Jiang Ya’s eyes flashed and the coldness in his gaze slowly disappeared; he felt the aura of primeval essence on Fang Yuan’s body. After realizing Fang Yuan’s identity, he lit up with a smile and said warmly, “Ah, it’s a junior brother.”

Everyone else came to the realization and the looks they shot at Fang Yuan changed.

No wonder this young teenager was not one bit afraid of a Gu Master, it was because he was also one. Even though he was still attending the academy, his position was already different.

“Lord Gu Master, your wine!” The waiter scurried over, smiling all over his face. Fang Yuan nodded at the young Gu Master and took and jar of wine and walked out of the inn.

(1) It means that he is putting in effort, yet he cannot see the results.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Around 300 years ago, an incredible genius appeared in the Gu Yue Clan. He was very talented and had already cultivated to the point of a Rank five Gu Master at a young age, and even had the possibility of going further. He was famous throughout Qing Mao Mountain, had a bright future and was the pinnacle of hope and responsibility in the clan’s eyes.

In the history of the Gu Yue clan, everyone spoke of him the most – the fourth clan head.

Unfortunately he sacrificed himself to protect his people and fought the equally powerful Rank five Gu Master, the demonic Flower Wine Monk. Even though he defeated the Flower Wine Monk after a fierce battle, he let the devil get on his knees and beg for mercy.

In the end he was careless and got caught by the Flower Wine Monk’s sneak attack. The fourth head angrily executed the Flower Wine Monk, but due to his own heavy injuries he died an untimely death.

This tragic incident had long since circulated until today, becoming a popular story among the Gu Yue clan. However Fang Yuan knew that this story was not to be believed, because it had a very large loophole.

In his previous life, a month later from now, a drunken Gu Master who had been rejected by his lover lay down outside the village, so drunk he was like a fish. In the end because of the overflowing smell of wine, it ended up attracting a Liquor worm.

The Gu Master chased after the Liquor worm and found the remains of the Flower Wine Monk in a secret underground cave, also finding the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance. This Gu Master quickly hurried back to the clan and told them of the matter, causing a huge stir.

As the storm gradually subsided he also gained benefit from it – He obtained the Liquor worm, his cultivation increased, the girl friend who once abandoned him went back to his side and he became the talk of the village for a while.

When stories are passed down generation by generation, it is normal to change along the way. But in Fang Yuan’s memories, the story of the Gu Master discovering the treasure seemed quite authentic, yet he had a feeling that the story was hiding other truths.

“I was not aware of it at first, but in these few days while I searched and analyzed on the side, I feel that something feels out of place.” The night grew dark, and as Fang Yuan walked in the bamboo forest that grew around the village, he reviewed through the clues he had so far in his head.

“If I put myself in his shoes and think about it, when I discover the Flower Wine Monk’s treasure why would I not take it all for myself, but go and notify the clan instead? Don’t even mention sense of clan honor, everyone has greed in their hearts. What is it that would make that Gu Master betray the greediness in his heart, even going as far as to be willing to abandon all interest and profit, and report this finding to the clan’s top brass?”

The truth is always hidden inside the fog of history. Fang Yuan racked his brains but he could not get the result. After all the clues he had were too few. The only two clues he had could easily be true or false, so it could not be fully relied upon.

Fang Yuan could not help but think of himself. “No matter what, after buying this jar of green bamboo wine I only have 2 primeval stones left on me. If I can’t find the treasure then I’ll be in grave trouble. Today shall be considered the final gamble, it’s all or nothing!”

However he didn’t have enough primeval stones to refine a Gu worm in the first place. So why not invest it in this wine and increase the chances of success?

If it were in the case of other people, most of them would probably play it safe and save up the primeval stones. But in the case of Fang Yuan, the efficiency of doing so was too low. He would rather take the risk and gamble.

You see, the people of the Demonic Faction love to take risks.

Right now, the night grew thicker, the spring moon shaped like a bow. Clouds obscured the moonlight, as if coating the crescent moon with a thin sheet of gossamer.

Because it just finished raining continuously for three days and three nights, the turbid energy between the mountains had been washed away clean, leaving behind the purest of freshness. This fresh air was pure like a piece of white paper, and was more effective in spreading the wine aroma around. That was the first reason why Fang Yuan was full of confidence tonight.

The previous seven days of searching was not without gain. At least it proved that the Flower Wine Monk did not die in those places. This was the second reason for Fang Yuan’s confidence.

In the bamboo forest the grass was luxuriant, the white flowers endless and the green spear bamboo straight like a pencil, the forest resembling a clump of jade rods.

Fang Yuan opened the jar seal, releasing a thick wine aroma instantly. Green bamboo wine could be said as the Gu Yue Village’s number one wine. This was the third reason for Fang Yuan’s confidence tonight.

“With these three big reasons gathering together, if I want to succeed it has to be tonight!” Fang Yuan cheered in his heart as he slowly tilted the wine jar, pouring a small stream of wine, dripping it onto a stone. If those bunch of hunters saw this sight, they would have probably become insanely distressed. This wine is worth 2 whole primeval stones after all...

But Fang Yuan was indifferent.

The fragrant aroma quickly spread out into the night. The breeze was gentle, the faint aroma floating about and contaminating the bamboo forest. Fang Yuan stood at his spot, smelling the aroma. He waited for a while, yet he did not see any movement.

All he heard was a nightingale crying in the near distance, its sound like a string of bells. His gaze was silent. He did not feel surprised, and he moved away, walking to a spot a few hundred meters away.

In this place he did the same, pouring out a few drips of wine and waiting at the spot.

He did the same thing over and over again, moving away to a few other different locations, dripping wine a few times. After all that the green bamboo wine in the jar was only left with a bit.

“This is the last time,” Fang Yuan sighed. He tipped the wine jar over, the bottom facing the sky. All the remaining wine left in the jar flowed out. The wine sprinkled over the grass, letting the green grass sway about. The wild flowers were stained with wine, slightly lowering their heads.

Fang Yuan stood with the last shred of hope in his bosom, and gazed around.

Right now the night was already very deep. A thick cloud had obscured the moonlight. The dark shadows were like a curtain, covering the bamboo grove. It was deadly silent all around, each strand of green spear bamboo standing alone, leaving a trail of lines that were straight up and down in Fang Yuan’s pupils.

He quietly stood at the spot, listening to his own clear breathing. Then he felt the small hope that he carried in his chest, slowly dissipating away, becoming nothing.

“It failed after all.” His heart muttered, “Today I had three great advantages gathered together, yet I still failed, not even seeing the shadow of the Liquor worm. This means that in future the rate of success will be lower. Right now I only have two primeval stones left, and I still need to refine the Moonlight Gu. I can’t risk it anymore.”

The end result of taking a risk was often unsatisfactory. But when the result was ideal, the profit would be impressive. Fang Yuan liked taking risks, but he was not a gambling addict, and he was not someone who was bent on gambling back what he lost. He had his own limit, he was clear about his own capabilities.

Right now, the five hundred years of life experience was telling him, it was time to stop.

Sometimes life was like this. Often it was that there was that one goal that seemed so perfect, filled with temptation. It seemed so near yet with so many twists and turns, the goal was constantly unfulfilled. It made people restless, thinking about it night and day.

“This is the helplessness of life, but it’s also the charm of living,” Fang Yuan laughed bitterly, turning to walk away.

It was at this moment.

A gust of wind blew, like a gentle arm, lightly brushing away the clouds in the night sky. The clouds floated away to reveal the hidden moon. The crescent shaped moon hanging in the sky was like a white jade lamp, pouring moonlight that was clear as water down onto the earth. The moonlight spilled over the bamboo forest, spilled onto the mountain rock, bathing onto the rivers and streams in the mountain, shedding onto Fang Yuan’s body.

Fang Yuan was dressed in plain clothing; under the gentle touch of the moonlight, his young face became fairer. The darkness seemed to fade away in a flash, and taking its place was a field of snowy frost flowers. As if it was infected by the moonlight, the nightingale began to sing once more, but this time it was not just one, but many. Scattered among the bamboo grove, they all tweeted in response.

At the same time, a type of insect that inhabited huge mountains, the Dragonpill crickets that were active under moonlight started singing a rustling song of life. They were critters that only came out in the night. Their bodies emitted faint red light; at this moment they jumped out in droves, each of their bodies flashing with the brilliance of a red agate.

At first glance, Fang Yuan thought that these Dragonpill crickets were like jets of crimson water bouncing about, landing on the green grass and wild flowers, prancing under the moonlight in the bamboo grove.

The bamboo forest was like a conscious pond, under the moonlight the green jade colors of the spear bamboo flashed in the brilliance of light and smooth jade. The enchanting sight of the dense trees and bright flowers in spring, Mother Nature was showing Fang Yuan her immense beauty at this moment.

Fang Yuan unconsciously stopped in his footsteps, feeling as if he was in a heavenly land. He was already about to depart, but at this moment he subconsciously looked around.

The clump of wild flowers and grass that he had poured the last dredges of wine over trembled gently in the wind, remaining empty. Fang Yuan laughed at himself and took back his line of sight.

However.

Unexpectedly in the process of turning away, he saw a dot of white snow.

This bead of snow was glued to a spear bamboo pole not far away. Under the moonlight it was like a suspended round pearl.

Fang Yuan’s two pupils expanded fiercely, his body trembling slightly. His heart dropped and started pumping faster each second.

It was the Liquor worm!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The Liquor worm was shaped like a silkworm, its entire body giving out pearl white light. It was a little chubby and had a cute appearance.

The Liquor worm fed on wine and could fly. When it flew around, it would curl up into a ball, and its speed was very fast. Even though it was only a Rank one Gu, but it was worth even more than a few Rank two Gu.

To make it into one’s vital Gu was way more beneficial than the Moonlight Gu.

Right now the Liquor worm was glued to a bamboo pole merely 50-60 steps away from Fang Yuan. He held his breath, not closing in rashly, but slowly walking backwards.

He knew his distance was very near, but to really catch a Liquor worm directly it was an incredibly difficult task for a Gu Master who just opened the primeval aperture like him. You could say, there was totally no hope of success.

Fang Yuan’s was unable to see the Liquor worm clearly, but in the darkness he could feel the Liquor worm directing its vigilance at him. He slowly backed away gently, trying his best not to disturb the Liquor worm.

He knew that if the Liquor worm was to fly away, he could never catch up with his own speed. He needed to wait until the Liquor worm drank until it was drunk, and then with its flying speed slowed down he would have a chance to catch it.

Seeing Fang Yuan retreated further away, the Liquor worm crawling on the bamboo pole stirred. The strong aroma of wine before it was so tempting, so attracting, making the worm lost in a reverie. If it had saliva, it would have long been drooling a pool of saliva around it.

But the Liquor worm was incredibly wary and vigilant. Only after Fang Yuan retreated 200 steps back did it shrink a little and bounced into the air. When it fluttered high in the air, its body curled up into a ball, looking like a small and white rice dumpling. The little dumpling swept across the air in a round arc, floating down onto the grass that was sprinkled with green bamboo wine earlier.

With delicious food right before its eyes, the Liquor worm dropped its guard. It impatiently climbed onto a flower bud filled with some wine and popped its little head in, only leaving a chubby tail on the outside.

The Liquor worm was ravenous, and the green bamboo wine was so delicious. It opened its mouth wide and inhaled, very quickly lost in the deliciousness of its food, totally forgetting about Fang Yuan.

At this moment, Fang Yuan started to approach cautiously. He could see the tail of the Liquor worm outside the flower bud. This tail was just like a silkworm’s tail, chubby and rounded. The light it emitted made people think of a pearl.

At first the Liquor worm’s tail was hanging outside, unmoving. Then after a while this tail started to curl upwards, showing that it was drinking really happily. At the end when Fang Yuan was only ten steps away, its tail started wagging and swinging with a cheerful rhythm.

It was totally drunk!

Seeing this made Fang Yuan nearly laugh out. He did not continue walking forward, but patiently waited. If he rushed over right now he would definitely have a huge chance on catching the Liquor worm, but Fang Yuan’s intention was to have this Liquor worm guide him to the Flower Wine Monk’s remains.

In a moment the Liquor worm withdrew from the flower bud. Its body was fatter and its head swayed about, resembling a drunken man. Unexpectedly it did not realize Fang Yuan’s presence. It climbed up onto another bright yellow flower and perched on the stamen, feeding heartily on the wine droplets there.

This time after it had finished drinking, it finally felt full. Its body slowly shrank into a round ball and slowly flew up. When it was 1.5 meters above the ground, it leisurely flew in the direction of the deeper part of the bamboo forest.

Fang Yuan quickly followed after its trail.

The Liquor worm was already heavily drunk, making it fly slower by half of its usual speed. Even though this was the case, Fang Yuan still had to run with all his might to follow after its shadow.

The night was washing past his vision as the young teenager ran in the bamboo forest, chasing after a small bead of snow not far ahead.

The moonlight was gentle, the breeze slow and steady. In the bamboo forest that was like a clear pond, the stalks of green spear bamboo flashed past before his eyes, quickly falling behind him. The ground was a green carpet of grass, riddled with blossoming wild flowers. There were small stones with moss growing, and the yellow shoots of bamboo.

Fang Yuan’s faint shadow was also speeding ahead on the ground, passing through the shadows that each stalk of bamboo cast on the earth like a black line. He tightly kept his sight on the bead of snow, gulping in huge amounts of fresh mountain air, ordering his legs to catch up in the midst of faint wine aroma in the air.

Because of his speed, the moonlight looked like water to his eyes. Light and shadow moved frequently, like he was galloping in water filled with seaweed.

The Liquor worm flew out of the bamboo forest, and so did Fang Yuan. A sea of white flowers with a yellow spot in the middle borrowed the wind from his feet, scattering their petals. A group of Dragonpill crickets resembling a flowing poem just so happened to move to the front; as Fang Yuan dashed through there was a swoosh and a red cloud bloomed before him, dispersing about a sea of red star fireflies that emerged from the cloud.

A quiet mountain stream paved with pebbles, the gurgling water surface reflecting the spring moon in the night sky; with a few splashes Fang Yuan waded across, creating thousands of silver coloured ripples.

It was a pity that this stream, after so many ages, had its beautiful and precious stones trampled upon and broken.

Fang Yuan was in hot pursuit, firmly following behind the Liquor worm. Going upward the mountain stream, he could already hear the sound of a waterfall. After he turned around a sparse forest, he saw the Liquor worm fly into a crevice in the middle of a boulder.

Fang Yuan’s eyes lit up and he stopped in his tracks.

“So it’s here.” He panted heavily, his heart beating against his chest like mad. With this one stop he could feel his entire body covered in sweat, hot air surging throughout his body accompanying his accelerating blood flow.

Looking around, he found that this place was a shallow benchland (1).

Pebbles of various sizes covered the ground, the river surface barely covering over the small stones. There were also blocks of gray boulders scattered freely in the area.

Behind Qing Mao Mountain was a huge waterfall. The flow of the waterfall varied with the weather; it plummeted down to the earth, pounding out a deep pool. Beside the deep pool was the Bai Clan Village, a clan with powerful influence that was comparable to the Gu Yue village.

The waterfall branched out to many smaller branches, and it was apparent that Fang Yuan was facing one of the many branches of a branch. On normal occasions this benchland was dry, but due to the recent heavy rainfall that went on for three days and three nights, a shallow stream formed here.

The source of the flowing stream was from the huge boulder that the Liquor worm had entered into earlier.

The boulder leaned against a vertical mountain wall. Small waterfalls that branched away from the main waterfall were like silver pythons that flowed down the mountain wall, hitting onto the boulder. After a considerably long time the middle of this huge boulder had eroded away and formed a crevice.

At this time as the waterfall washed down, the water current gently roared. It was like a white curtain, completely obstructing the gap in the boulder.

After observing his surroundings, Fang Yuan’s breathing was no longer anxious. His eyes flashed with a hint of resolve; he walked to the boulder and took in a deep breath, and then he rushed in headfirst.

The boulder gap was rather large, and two adult humans could walk side by side in it with no problems. What more to say with Fang Yuan, who was merely a 15-year-old teenage boy?

Once he rushed in, the rapid currents pressured down on Fang Yuan’s body. At the same time the cold water quickly drenched him from head to toe. Fang Yuan battled against the water pressure, moving in quick steps forward. As he walked a few dozen steps, the water pressure started to lessen.

But the space in the fissure also began to shrink, and Fang Yuan could only walk sideways. His ears were filled with the roaring of the water, the top of his head was a sheet of white, and deeper into the boulder was a black darkness.

What was hiding in the darkness?

It could be a poisonous serpent, but it could also be a poisonous gecko. Perhaps it was a trap set by the Flower Wine Monk, or perhaps it was empty.

Fang Yuan could only continue forward by walking sideways, slowly edging into the darkness. The water no longer washed over his head; the stone walls were covered in moss, grazing against his skin, feeling slippery. Soon he was swallowed by the darkness, and the stone crevice became narrower, squeezing around him. Gradually even his skull could not rotate freely. Still Fang Yuan gritted his teeth and continued forward.

After walking another twenty more steps, he realized that there was a red shade of light in the darkness. At first, he thought it was an illusion. But when he blinked and focused, he began to confirm that this was indeed light!

This realization made him renew his spirit.

He continued walking for another fifty to sixty steps, the red light growing brighter. In his eyes the light slowly expanded into a long, vertical and fine seam.

He stretched out his left arm, suddenly feeling that the wall in front had bent away. Instantly he rejoiced, knowing that there was an enclosed space inside the huge boulder. With another few steps he finally rushed into this light seam.

His eyes were greeted with the sight of an approximately 80meters^2 wide enclosure.

“I have been walking for so long. With this distance I’d have long passed the boulder, so I should be in the heart of the mountain cliff right now.” As he sized up this hidden space, he moved his hands and legs about, stretching his limbs.

The entire room was filled with dim red light, but he could not tell where the light was coming from. The stone walls were damp and covered in moss, but the air here was very dry. On the walls there was also a few withering vines. The vines intertwined with each other, weaving across half of the wall surface. There were even a few withering flowers growing on the vines.

Fang Yuan looked at the remnants of these flowers and leaves, feeling somewhat familiar.

“These are Wine Sack Flower Gu, and Rice Pouch Grass Gu.” Suddenly a thought had crossed his mind and he was able to recognize these withering stems and vines.

Gu came in many shapes and forms. Some were like mineral rocks such as the blue crystal form of the Moonlight Gu. Some came in the forms of worms, such as the silkworm-like Liquor worm. There were also flowery grassy types, just like the Wine Sack Flower Gu and the Rice Pouch Grass Gu before Fang Yuan.

These two types of Gu were Rank one natural Gu. Just with pouring in primeval essence would they be able to grow. After growing up the middle of the flower would secrete flower nectar wine, and the grass pouch would grow out fragrant rice.

Fang Yuan moved his line of sight along the vines, and sure enough he discovered a heap of withered roots gathered into a ball-shaped clump at a corner. The Liquor worm was resting on the clump of dead roots, sleeping soundly. It was already within easy reach.

Fang Yuan walked over and took the Liquor worm into his arms. Then he got onto his knees and pulled the dead vines apart, discovering a pile of skeleton bones bundled inside.

“I’ve finally found you, Flower Wine Monk.” There was a smile on his lips as he saw this.

Just as he was about to reach his hand out and strip away the remaining vines, suddenly-

“Try touching it?” A voice full of murderous intent suddenly sounded behind Fang Yuan.

(1) Benchland : https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bench_(geology)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In this secret cave, someone’s voice loomed behind all of a sudden.

Even when it came to Fang Yuan he could feel the hairs on the back of his neck standing, his scalp numb.

He had been followed!

Could it be that him repeatedly going out these few days had aroused the suspicion and attention of people?

Or was it someone sent by his uncle?

In his mind he even thought of the Rank one Gu Master that he encountered in the inn, the young man called Jiang Ya.

In that short moment his mind flashed countless ideas and guesses, in addition to thinking of a solution.

Fang Yuan could feel that in the short sentence, it was full of deep murderous intent. This made him secretly groan – He was only a Rank one initial stage right now, and he did not even have a vital Gu. To a Gu Master this was the equivalent of having zero fighting ability, how was he supposed to fight?

“Too weak, too weak!” He roared in his head.

“You have already been poisoned by my Single Gate Poison Gu. Without my other Gu that acts as the counterpart to it, after seven days you will turn into pus and blood and die,” the voice said behind him.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, his expression cold. He said in a low tone, “You want the Liquor worm? I can give it to you.”

He slowly stood up, his actions careful. But at this moment, another voice appeared. This voice was full of fear, and said in a tremble, “ I’ll give it, I can give you anything, please just spare my life, O Flower Wine Monk!”

“Wait a minute, this is...” Fang Yuan frowned and suddenly turned around in realization. He was met with the sight of light and shadow changing and fluctuating on the wall in front of him, a picture emerging.

A lean and threatening Gu Master was standing at the top of a mountain; there was another Gu Master prostrating before him. Around the two Gu Masters was a collapsed pit, fragments and chunks of stone littering the area, showing the obvious scene of a fierce battle that just ended.

Not far away from them was a group of old onlookers, their faces filled with anger and fear.

In the middle of the scene, the victorious Gu Master lifted his head upwards and laughed loudly. “Ha ha ha, Gu Yue’s hero, cultivating to Rank five at such a young age. I thought you were quite something at first, but I didn’t expect you to be so unbearable. Hmph!”

The laughing Gu Master had long and thin eyes. He was dressed in long pink robes, his huge and wide sleeves swaying with the wind. The area where his robes intersected around his neck was loose and wide open, revealing his strong and pale chest muscles. The most eye-catching part of him was his bald head, shining without a single strand of hair.

“The Flower Wine Monk!” Fang Yuan immediately recognized the identity of this Gu Master.

“To compare myself to Sir Flower Wine, I’m just a fart! I must have been unwell in the head, to actually not recognize such a great person and offended Sir Flower Wine. Sir Flower Wine, please remember my clan’s generous hospitality earlier and spare my life!” The Gu Master prostrating on the ground was shaking, cold sweat all over, tears and mucus mixing as he begged for mercy.

Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes and carefully distinguished the two, realizing that the other Gu Master was wearing the Gu Yue clan head uniform. Looking at the appearance, it was clear that this person was the fourth generation clan leader!

As for those aged onlookers, they were probably the clan elders of that generation.

“Hehe, generous hospitality? You sure have the guts to say it! I was actually sincere in coming to trade with you, using primeval stones to buy your clan’s moon orchids with a fair price. It was you who was harboring evil intentions, pretending to greet and take me in, telling me to take a seat at your banquet, intending to lace my liquor with a poisonous Gu. You all have been looking down on me way too much, I have made a living under the sky with the name of Flower Wine, how could I possibly be poisoned this way?”

The Flower Wine Monk pointed at the kneeling fourth generation clan leader, sneering, “If you cooperated fairly none of this would have happened. In the end you just wanted to use my head to raise your reputation and fame, you only have yourself to blame for dying!”

“Sir, please spare my worthless life!” The fourth generation clan head shouted in dismay, his knees scraping against the ground, he quickly crawled over to the Flower Wine Monk’s feet and hugged against his thigh.

“Sir, my clan has a spirit spring which produces primeval stones, we also planted huge numbers of moon orchids in an underground cave. I am willing to take in your Enslavement Gu and become your servant, my life and death are at a whim, I am willing to devote a lifelong servitude to you sir!”

Fang Yuan watched speechlessly, while the few elders in the picture looked even more uncertain.

The Flower Wine Monk narrowed his eyes, his anger had already calmed down. His eyes flashed and he said, “Hmph, the Enslavement Gu is precious beyond reasoning, it is a Rank five Gu, do you really think I would have one? However you have been infected by my Single Gate Poison Gu, only I can cure the poison so I’m not afraid of you disobeying. Since that is the case, your clan has to give me 3,000 stalks of moon orchids every week, also 3,000 primeval stones. I will come around every now and then to pick up the goods and temporarily cure your poison, sparing your useless life.”

“Thank you so much for your mercy, sir! Thank you so much for your mercy, sir!” The fourth generation clan head cried repeatedly, kowtowing non-stop. His head bled continuously as it bumped against the mountain rock.

“Hmph, stop kowtowing, I despise groveling people like you the most! What so called Gu Yue genius, strong Rank five fighter, how unworthy of your name. You better serve me properly. This is also regarding your life... Urgh!” The Flower Wine Monk suddenly cried out, his face making a horrified expression.

He kicked away the fourth generation clan head with his leg, his body swaying. He frantically backtracked a few big steps, yelling at the fourth generation clan head, “How do you still have Gu?”

The fourth generation clan head was kicked at the pit of his stomach and he spat out a mouthful of blood. He got up with a painstaking effort, his face revealing a scheming smile. “Heh heh heh, anybody has the right to punish people of the Demonic Faction! This Gu is called Moonshadow, it is the best at hiding. Even though it is only Rank four, but it has the ability to restrict the usage of the primeval sea and primeval essence. Demon, you and I have been fighting fiercely, you don’t have many Gu on you anymore, how could you possibly restrain the Moonshadow Gu? Just obediently surrender and become my servant, as long as you serve me until I am happy, you will still have a chance to live!”

The Flower Wine Monk flew into a rage and roared, “To hell with you!!”

His voice had barely faltered away when his body surged forward like a bolt of electricity, a punch landing onto the fourth generation clan head’s heart.

The fourth generation clan leader did not expect the Flower Wine Monk to be so radical; even if his primeval sea was threatened, the Flower Wine Monk was unwilling to compromise. A huge force came and he flew into the air, his body falling onto the ground like a broken sack.

Thump.

He spouted out a huge mouthful of fresh blood, the red liquid mingled with countless bits of internal organs.

“Have you gone mad, we could have totally settled this over a discussion...” He stared daggers at the Flower Wine Monk, his lips moving with great effort. His sentence went unfinished, for his legs gave way and his head crooked to the side. He died.

“Clan head!”

“Men of the Demonic path are all insane.”

“Kill him, kill this demon. Avenge the clan leader!”

“He has been inflicted by the Moonshadow Gu, he can’t just simply use his primeval essence anymore, over a time even his primeval essence will be threatened.”

The elders who were watching at the sidelines all roared in fury and swarmed the area.

“Ha ha ha, all those who are looking for death, come!” The Flower Wine Monk cried into the air. Facing the elders charging at him, he rushed at them headfirst.

A fierce battle ensued and the Flower Wine Monk quickly had the upper hand. Very soon all the elders had collapsed onto the ground, some of them injured and the rest dead. Just as the Flower Wine Monk was about to finish off the surviving elders, his facial expression suddenly changed and he covered a hand over his abdomen. “Damn!”

“I’ll come back in future to deal with you lot,” said the Flower Wine Monk. He stared daggers at a few of the elders and his body moved like electricity as he fled into the mountain woods, disappearing without a trace in the blink of an eye.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

“Try touching it?”

“You have already been poisoned by my Single Gate Poison Gu. Without my other Gu that acts as the counterpart to it, after seven days you will turn into pus and blood and die.”

“To compare myself to Sir Flower Wine, I’m just a fart! I must have been unwell in the head, to actually not recognize such a great person and offended Sir Flower Wine. Sir Flower Wine, please remember my clan’s generous hospitality earlier and spare my life!”

The scene replayed itself over for the second time on the wall. Fang Yuan remained silent; when the motion picture started to repeat itself for the third time he finally sighed faintly and said, “I see.”

This method of leaving a moving picture with sound on the wall was probably the Flower Wine Monk’s doing with the help of a Photo-audio Gu. This Gu was able to record down imagery and project it out later.

The Photo-audio Gu fed on light and sound to survive. For some unknown reason this secret cave emitted red light, while at the same time the stone crevice was connected to the outside world, so it would not completely isolate the sounds outside. Right now Fang Yuan could still hear the roaring of the smaller waterfalls. Thus the Photo-audio Gu was able to live on in this secret cave.

A moment ago when Fang Yuan ripped away the withered vines, he had probably alarmed the Photo-audio Guhiding in the stone wall. As long as one is not stupid, with mere guesswork one could tell that this moving image was authentic.

Back then, the fourth generation clan head tried to plot against the Flower Wine Monk but he failed. After he lost in the battle he tried a sneak attack; even though it repelled away the latter, he eventually died because of it. This part of history was considered disgraceful, and the remaining surviving clan elders decided to tamper with the truth.

They reversed the roles of the fourth generation clan head and the Flower Wine Monk.

The Flower Wine Monk became the one who was defeated in battle and tried a sneak attack, and later died on the spot. On the other hand, the fourth generation leader was turned into the justified and perfect hero.

But this story itself had a big loophole – The Flower Wine Monk had clearly died on the spot, so his corpse should be in the hands of the Gu Yue clan, but why was another pile of remains found?

In his previous life, the Gu Master who found it had probably been terrified after seeing the moving image. Those surviving elders had long been dead, but to prevent the truth of the Flower Wine Monk from returning, this truth was probably kept secret by the top brass of the clan.

That Gu Master realized that if he single handedly took the treasure it would be a huge risk. If people investigated and found that he was involved with the Flower Wine Monk in future, the top brass would naturally execute him. Thus after making his choice, he did not dare to hide away this treasure, but instead make a decision to notify the top brass.

By doing so it would prove his loyalty to the clan. His subsequent circumstances would also show that he made a wise choice.

However even if he did that, it didn’t mean that Fang Yuan would do the same.

“I went through a pretty rough time searching for this treasure, so I should take everything for myself. Why should I share it with others? So what if I’ve been found out? Without braving the risks, where would you get profit? That Gu master is really cowardly,” Fang Yuan smiled coldly, no longer caring about the moving image that kept repeating on the stone wall. He turned around and stretched his hand, using his strength to pull apart the dead vines and roots.

The Flower Wine Monk’s remains were also affected. It was originally intact, but right now it was being broken into several pieces. Fang Yuan could hardly care; he kicked away a piece of leg bone that was in the way and squatted again, searching through the remains.

Firstly he found a bag of primeval stones. When he opened them he only found fifteen pieces.

“Old miser,” Fang Yuan spat. The Flower Wine Monk’s outer appearance looked flashy, but unexpectedly he only had so little money put aside.

However he quickly thought of the reason – The Flower Wine Monk went through a fierce battle, add on to the fact that he got tainted by the Moonshadow Gu, so he would definitely have used primeval stones to heal his injuries. To be able to leave behind fifteen pieces was actually not bad already.

After that he found a few dead Gu remains. Most of them were flower and grass variety, and had all completely withered away. Gu are also living creatures, so they also need food to survive, and most of them are picky. Though the grass Gu and flower Gu need less food, but in this secret cave there was not even a single ray of sunshine.

And after that...

After that, there was nothing.

The Flower Wine Monk was on the same level as the fourth generation clan leader. After fighting a fierce battle, he fought with around ten elders right after. His own Gu were mostly consumed, and up to this stage as he wanted to heal his injuries, he grew the Wine Sack Flower Gu and the Rice Pouch Grass Gu here. Yet in the end because of the Moonshadow Gu he was dragged to death.

After three hundred year, the Gu in his possession also died away. The only ones left were the Photo-audio Guon the wall and the Liquor worm.

This Liquor worm was probably reliant on the Wine Sack Flower Gu and barely lived through until today. But as the Wine Sack Flower Gu withered away one by one, it also lost its food supply.

This prompted the Liquor worm to go outside and look for wild Wine Sack Flowers. Then in this night, it was attracted by the aroma of the green bamboo wine and came before Fang Yuan.

“The Photo-audio Gu can only record once, since it’s a one-time use Gu. Looks like the Liquor worm is my greatest gain here, no wonder that Gu Master decided to report to the clan. Looks like it was because the profit was too small, and not worth such a huge risk.” A sort of understanding rose into Fang Yuan’s heart.

In his memories, that Gu Master was already Rank three, while the Liquor worm was just a Rank one Gu. To Fang Yuan it was more precious, but to that Gu Master it was pretty much nothing.

However it was clear that due to his report, the clan gave him a big reward.

“Should I also tell the clan?” Fang Yuan thought for a moment, then he pushed away this idea.

The Flower Wine Monk’s treasure seemed to be just the Liquor worm and the primeval stones, but that was not the case. The most valuable thing was actually the wall that hid the Photo-audio Gu. In other words, it was the moving image that did not stop repeating on the wall.

This image could entirely be sold to other villages. Trust in the fact that the top brass of the two other villages on Qing Mao Mountain must be very interested in this sort of evidence that could strike hard onto the conviction of a clan.

What?

You said something about a sense of loyalty and honour to the clan?

I’m so sorry, Fang Yuan does not have one bit of that.

Moreover this moving image isn’t even some kind of strong force that can destroy the entire clan; it won’t do much substantial damage. The indifferent nature of the clan will also not look at Fang Yuan with importance. He needed to rely on his own hard work and find cultivation resources, in the early stage of cultivation he needed to borrow the powers around him more.

“Count on the clan? Heh heh.” Fang Yuan sneered in his heart, “How can I be so naïve like my past life.”

Do not depend on anyone; you must rely on yourself on everything in this world.

After making sure that he had ransacked every corner of the cave, Fang Yuan began his way back following the original road home.

Holding against the water pressure and squeezing past the boulder, he returned outside the mountain. Looking back at this huge boulder, Fang Yuan suddenly thought of his past life. It was said that the remains were found in an underground secret cave. But how was this place underground? It was clearly in the inside of the mountain wall.

No wonder he couldn’t find it for seven days straight even though he wasted so much effort. Looks like in his past life after the clan found out about this place, the first thing they did was to destroy the wall with the image, and then go about spreading a truth riddled with lies to mislead the clanspeople.

To be able to find this place tonight was partly due to luck, partly due to hard work, and the biggest reason would be the green bamboo wine.

This green bamboo wine was really rich, it could be said to be the best in Qing Mao Mountain. Perhaps in his past life, after that Gu Master lost his lover, the wine that he had been drinking was this wine.

But all of this was no longer important. The Flower Wine Monk’s treasure had been unearthed and ransacked by Fang Yuan; although in the end it was rather disappointing, it was also reasonable. The most important was that Fang Yuan’s original goal (Liquor worm) was in his hands, and the item he needed the most (primeval stones) was also gotten.

“Next up, I will need to set my heart on holing myself in the inn refining this Gu. As long as I have a vital Gu I can return to the academy and be qualified to stay in the academy dormitories. I’ll also be able to borrow the clan resources to cultivate. I can only stay in this inn for one or two times; if I stay too long the cost is too much.” Fang Yuan pondered, his footsteps never ceasing as he hurried back to the village.

He was originally left with two primeval stones, but now he gained fifteen pieces, so the total is seventeen pieces. But to a Gu Master, this small amount of primeval stones mean nothing.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

“With my C grade talent, the amount of my primeval sea in the aperture is only 44%. The speed of Gu using up primeval essence is way faster than my own recovery rate. If I want to refine a Gu I would need to borrow external help, which means I need to waste primeval stones.”

“The weaker the Gu’s will, the smaller the resistance, the easier it becomes for me to refine it. However any living creature will always have the will to live. To refine the Moonlight Gu I would at least require five primeval stones, at the most I’d need eight pieces.”

“Right now to refine the Liquor worm, I would need at least eleven pieces, at the most I would need sixteen pieces.” Although the Liquor worm was also a Rank one Gu like the Moonlight Gu, but it was definitely rarer. Thus the difficulty of the refinement process also increased.

In other words, even though right now Fang Yuan had seventeen primeval stones, but just to refine the Liquor worm he would at most be left with six pieces, or at least one primeval stone.

In the night, the bright crescent gave off clear and pure moonlight. The moonlight was like the lady saint’s gentle hand, lightly stroking over the Gu Yue Village. Along the way the bamboo houses were like jade, standing in great numbers. The night breeze blew slowly.

Under this moonlight, Fang Yuan found his way back to the inn. The inn door had already closed. Fang Yuan banged on the door.

“I hear you! I hear you! Who is it, knocking on the door at this late time...” The inn worker grumbled as he opened the door, his eyes puffy from sleep.

But when he saw Fang Yuan standing at the door, all the displeasure and sleepiness from his expression changed, and he bent his waist and said with a flattering smile," "Ah, it's his young lordship. This little one is very lucky to be able to open the door for his lordship."

Fang Yuan nodded his head, his expression cold with indifference, and walked into the inn.

His expression made the worker laugh in a more humble manner, and he took the initiative to ask, "My lord, are you hungry? Would you like me to notify the kitchens and make some small dishes for you as supper?"

"No need," Fang Yuan shook his head and only ordered, " Go and prepare some hot water for me, I would like to wash myself."

"Yes!" The worker immediately nodded, "My lord, go on to your room first. I guarantee you, the hot water will be sent over immediately."

Fang Yuan let out a noise of approval and went up the stairs, heading towards the second floor. The worker watched Fang Yuan's back, his two eyes glittering in the light, revealing an expression of jealousy.

"This is a Gu Master, oh if only I had the talent to cultivate, how good that would be!" He shook his fists, sighing deeply. These words floated into Fang Yuan's ears and he smiled bitterly in his heart.

A Gu Master had the power to transcend mortals, becoming a man above men, but in this process the price that was to be paid was also very high.

The first difficult problem was financial resources. A Gu Master needed primeval stones to cultivate, battles also required primeval stones, refining Gu also needed primeval stones, trading was also not an exception.

Without primeval stones, how could cultivation be possible?

This point was a difficult position that, being an ordinary mortal who watched from the sidelines, the inn worker would not understand.

Just like earlier in the evening, the young Gu Master Jiang Ya vented his anger and displeasure on the hunters when he dropped their wine jars. His meaning was – He himself could not bear to spend primeval stones to drink this green bamboo wine, yet these hunters who were just ordinary men actually had such money to spare!

To take a glimpse at the whole picture, just that meaning alone could tell a lot about the cultivation situation of a Gu Master. The strength of a Gu Master was great, they achieved more than a common mortal, but the price was also great. Many a time using every single piece of primeval stone needed great consideration, especially when it came to lower ranked Gu Masters. Do not be fooled by the glorious surface; in reality the life of a Gu Master is constantly strained by money.

"Not to mention, as the realm of a Gu Master increases, the resources they require also increase. Without proper backing it is very difficult for a Gu Master's road to cultivation." Fang Yuan thought of his previous life and had deep understanding of this reality.

He returned to his room. Just after he lit the lamp, the inn worker came up with a basin of hot water. Of course, there were cloth towels and other toiletries.

Fang Yuan let the worker leave and closed the room door. He put down the door latch, washed himself and got up to his bed.

Although his body was feeling a little tired, his heart still flared with a surge of excitement. “I finally got my hands on the Liquor worm. The Liquor worm is rarer than the Moonlight Gu, because in a sense it is a Gu that increase a Gu Master’s latent talent!”

Fang Yuan sat cross-legged on the bed and took out the Liquor worm. The Liquor worm was still sleeping soundly. Its body size was slightly bigger than the Moonlight Gu, soft and white like a silkworm.

Under the light its body was shrouded in a layer of faint wavering light, just like a pearl’s mellow luster. Two little eyes resembling two black sesame seeds were mounted on its chubby white head, making it appear charmingly naïve.

Placed in his hand, it was not heavy. Its weight was about half a chicken egg. When smelling it carefully, its body exuded a whiff of wine aroma. This fragrance was not the aroma of green bamboo wine but the Liquor worm’s own fragrance. The smell was faint and misty, as if it was not there. Fang Yuan’s nose twitched as he inhaled the fragrance of the Liquor worm.

The wine fragrance moved straight downwards into the aperture, entering into the green copper primeval sea. The primeval sea surged and rippled for a moment, quickly absorbing in the wine. A gleam of pure and refined primeval essence was produced.

The other primeval essence had an emerald green color, shining with a metallic copper luster. However this primeval essence was a pale green, and it was more condensed than the original primeval essence. This was the primeval essence that a Rank one middle stage Gu Master could produce.

Aware of this gleam of pale green primeval essence in his green copper sea, Fang Yuan revealed a satisfied smile. “Right now my cultivation base is just that of a Rank one initial stage. But with the Liquor worm’s condensing, after the primeval essence is refined I will be able to have Rank one middle realm primeval essence. The beauty of this benefit is something that cannot be said in one or two sentences.”

But very soon, he took back his smile. “However right now I have yet to fully master the Liquor worm. It is only when I refine the Liquor worm and turn it into my vital Gu, then I will be able to freely use it and later on with maximum efficiency, refine my primeval essence.”

Thinking up to this point, he no longer hesitated and began to draw out a jet of green copper primeval essence from his primeval sea. The primeval essence tightly wrapped around the Liquor worm, bringing it into the air before Fang Yuan, and started to invade its body.

The Liquor worm felt its life at danger and woke up immediately. It began to struggle violently, using its own power to drive out Fang Yuan’s primeval essence.

“This Liquor worm has a really strong resistance.” Fang Yuan’s complexion turned grave as he felt the consumption rate of his primeval essence go beyond more than double of what the Moonlight Gu had consumed.

“No matter what, I have to refine the Liquor worm.” His two eyes flashed with a firm light as he continued pouring primeval essence into the Liquor worm.

In the room, the candles on the table quietly burned, shining a bright light in the middle of the room while the far corners of the walls were dark. The candlelight radiated on Fang Yuan’s face but he had already closed his eyes, gathering all his focus onto the Liquor worm.

A continuous jet of green-copper coloured primeval essence that resembled a jet of mist emitted out from Fang Yuan’s whole body, then it gathered together and firmly wrapped around the Liquor worm. The Liquor worm hovered in the air, its distance less than a feet away from Fang Yuan’s face. It struggled with all its might in the midst of the green copper primeval essence.

Time slipped away quietly.

As the candles burned they became smaller and the light grew dimmer. The crescent outside the window had slowly gone down, and then a new day arrived.

The morning light squeezed through the narrow crack in the window and shone into the room. It was like the window had a light edge.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes and looked at the Liquor worm in front of him. The Liquor worm’s white body had a shade of green colour. This was the result of Fang Yuan’s effort after half a night. However it was clear that this volume of green colour was not even 1% of the Liquor worm’s body.

Fang Yuan’s face looked grave. This Liquor worm’s will was way too tenacious and its resistance was incredibly strong; simply put this was beyond a Rank one Gu’s boundary.

“This Gu was most probably the Flower Wine Monk’s vital Gu. The Flower Wine Monk was a Rank five master, so this Liquor worm was originally Rank five, but because it went through all those years without enough food, pretty much full in one moment and starving in the next, so its grade also fell. Right now it is left at the level of Rank one, yet its will is still as tough as a rock!”

Fang Yuan had guessed the truth.

This Liquor worm was originally the Flower Wine Monk’s vital Gu. Its original will had been wiped clean and refined to the end; it had accompanied the Flower Wine Monk throughout all his battles, passing through the underground world.

After the Flower Wine Monk died, his strong will continued existing in the Liquor worm. Right now with Fang Yuan trying to refine the Liquor worm, it actually meant fighting against the Flower Wine Monk’s will.

This was way more difficult than trying to refine a natural Gu.

A human’s will is generally stronger than a natural Gu. When facing death humans were able to produce strength that even they themselves could not imagine. Not to mention that the Flower Wine Monk was a master of the Demonic faction. He came and went by himself, going up and down the underground world. His will was more tenacious than the masters of his level from the Righteous faction.

“To refine this Liquor worm in a month is impossible, unless there is a strong master who can use a Rank two or Rank three Gu’s breath to pressure this Liquor worm and suppress the will inside the worm’s body to the lowest limit. Under this kind of help then will I be able to do twice as much with half the effort.” As he pondered, Fang Yuan could not help but sigh.

His parents had died while his aunt and uncle were plotting against him. He himself did not have any backing, so where could he possibly find external aid?

If he had A grade talent there might still be a chance, but he was only a C grade talent. Everyone in the clan were not optimistic about him, so who would be willing to expend such energy to come and help him?

More crucially, he could not expose the existence of the Liquor worm.

There was no Liquor worm in the Gu Yue Village, and Fang Yuan was not able to explain about the origins of this Liquor worm. If it was exposed, there was a huge possibility that the top brass would find out and link it to the case of the Flower Wine Monk. It was too easy to think of a relationship between the two.

“Based on this fact, seventeen primeval stones will not be enough. I’d need at least thirty primeval stones! How troublesome, but no matter how hard it is I will still want to refine this Liquor worm.” Fang Yuan’s own will was like metal, and he was already determined to refine the Liquor worm.

The importance of the vital Gu was huge. It would greatly influence the future of a Gu Master’s cultivation direction. Although the Liquor worm was not the world’s best choice for a vital Gu, it was still much better than the Moonlight Gu. It was also the best option in Fang Yuan’s present situation.

Growl...

At this moment Fang Yuan’s stomach came up with a cry of protest.

After a whole night without sleep and putting full effort into refining the Liquor worm, Fang Yuan was naturally hungry.

“I guess I’ll go and fill my stomach first and think of a way to accumulate primeval stones.” Fang Yuan rubbed his belly and went downstairs. He went to the cafeteria and picked a seat at the corner, ordering a few kinds of breakfast dishes.

Just as he was beginning to eat, his younger brother Gu Yue Fang Zheng appeared.

“Big brother, why are you staying at the inn, why didn’t you go back home and sleep last night?” His brother was very straightforward, his tone carrying the implication that it was demanding for an explanation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Faced with his brother’s question, Fang Yuan did not speak; he continued eating his breakfast. He knew his younger brother’s character – Fang Zheng was not someone who could keep in his composure.

Sure enough Fang Zheng saw that his older brother did not even bat an eye at him, as if Fang Yuan pretended he was air. In the next moment he called out in a tone full of unhappiness, “Big brother, what did you do to Shen Cui? Ever since she came out from your room yesterday, she cried all over the place. When I comforted her, she cried even more.”

Fang Yuan looked up at his younger brother, his face expressionless. Fang Zheng frowned, staring firmly at his older brother, waiting for his reply.

The atmosphere was growing tense.

But Fang Yuan just looked at him for a second before he lowered his head and continued eating.

The younger brother Fang Zheng was immediately flustered. Fang Yuan’s attitude was clearly an undisguised contempt towards him. Under shame and frustration he banged his hand on the table, roaring loudly, “Gu Yue Fang Yuan, how can you act like this! Shen Cui as a servant girl has served you for so many years; I have seen her gentleness and care towards you. Yes, I know you feel lost, and I can understand your dejected feelings. Yeah you’re just a C grade talent, but it doesn’t mean you can vent your anger on others just because of your own misfortune. This isn’t fair to her!”

He had barely finished when Fang Yuan stood up, raising his hand in a flash.

Slap!

With a loud snap he gave Fang Zheng a solid smack.

Fang Zheng covered his right cheek, stumbling two steps backwards, his face full of shock.

“Useless bastard, what kind of tone are you using to talk to your own older brother?! That Shen Cui is just a servant girl! Just because of a lowly girl like her you would forget that I am your older brother?” Fang Yuan reprimanded in a low voice.

Fang Zheng finally reacted, his stinging pain on his face surging through his nervous system in waves. He stared wide-eyed, his breathing rough as he said in disbelief, “Big brother, you hit me? From the time I was still young until I grew up, you have never hit me before! Yes, I was found out to be an A grade talent, you were just C grade. But you also cannot blame me for it, this is all the arrangement of heaven...”

Slap!

Fang Zheng had not finished speaking, yet Fang Yuan used the back of his hand and smacked him again.

Fang Zheng covered both his cheeks with his two hands. He was stunned.

“Naïve fool, do you still remember! From young till now, how did I take care of you? When our parents died, our life was hard. During New Year, aunt and uncle only gave us both one new robe, did I wear it? Who did I give it to wear? When you were small you loved to eat sweet porridge, I would tell the kitchens to make another bowl for you everyday. When you were bullied by others, who brought you back? Not to mention a ton of other things, I don’t feel like it is worth talking about. Well, right now because of a maid, you would talk to me like this, coming to question me?”

Fang Zheng’s face was red. His lips trembled, ashamed and annoyed, as well as surprised and angry. Yet he was unable to say a single word of rebuttal.

Because everything Fang Yuan said was the truth!

“Whatever.” Fang Yuan sneered, “Since you even gave up your own biological parents and admitted someone else, what am I worth to you, as merely your big brother?”

“Big brother, how can you say that. You also know that I have always longed for the warmth of a family since I was young, I...” Fang Zheng immediately explained.

Fang Yuan waved his hand, stopping his brother from continuing. “From today onwards, you are not my little brother, and I am no longer your older brother.”

“Big brother!” Fang Zheng was surprised, opening his mouth to say more.

At this moment Fang Yuan spoke, “Don’t you like Shen Cui? Don’t worry; I didn’t do anything to her. She’s still a virgin, untouched and pure. Pass me six primeval stones and I’ll pass her to you, from today onwards she can be your personal maid.”

“Big brother, why are you...” To have his inner thoughts revealed out loud so suddenly, Fang Zheng felt a surge of panic, feeling rather unprepared.

But at the same time his heart was assured. The one thing he was worried about the most did not come true.

Not long ago in the night, Shen Cui personally served and washed him.

Even though nothing important happened, Fang Zheng could not ever forget the gentleness of that night. Every time when he thought of Shen Cui, he would remember her skillful hands and her soft red lips, and his heart would throb.

The sincere feelings of youthfulness had long planted itself in the young man’s chest, starting to grow.

Thus when he learned about Shen Cui’s unusual state last evening, a bout of anger immediately burst from his heart. He instantly gave up refining his Moonlight Gu and turned the village inside out trying to find Fang Yuan, wanting to make a statement.

Seeing Fang Zheng not replying, Fang Yuan frowned and said, “Love is very normal, be more honest. There’s no use hiding away. Of course, if you don’t want to exchange, then that’s fine.”

Fang Zheng was anxious on the spot. “I’ll exchange! Why would I not exchange. But the primeval stones on me are not enough for six anymore.”

As he said this, he took out his money pouch, his face red all over.

Fang Yuan took the pouch and found six pieces in it, but one of the stones among them was smaller than a normal primeval stone by half size. He immediately knew that Fang Zheng had absorbed the primeval essence from this stone to speed up the process of refining his Moonlight Gu. After all the more natural essence gets absorbed from the primeval stone, the smaller the stone becomes, and its weight will also become lighter.

Even though it was just five pieces and a half, Fang Yuan knew: These were all the primeval stones that Fang Zheng had in his possession right now. Fang Zheng had no savings on his own, and these six primeval stones were what Aunt and Uncle had given to him not long ago.

“I’ll keep these, you can go now.” Fang Yuan’s expression was cold as he tucked the bag away.

“Big brother...” Fang Zheng wanted to say more.

Fang Yuan raised his eyebrows slightly, speaking in a slow and leisure manner, “Before I change my mind, you better disappear from my eyes.”

Fang Zheng felt his heart tighten. He gritted his teeth, and finally turned and left. When he stepped through the doorway of the inn, he subconsciously covered his chest with his hand, feeling a wave of uneasiness. There was a feeling that was telling him that he had just lost something very important.

But very quickly he felt hot as he thought of Shen Cui, and that dreamy night. “I can finally have you rightfully as mine, Cui Cui (1).” He did not look back, and walked out of Fang Yuan’s sight.

Fang Yuan stood expressionless; he stood for a long time, then he finally slowly sat down.

The bright sunlight passed through the window, shining onto his indifferent face, making those who saw this feel somewhat cold inside. The business in the cafeteria was rather poor, and the streets grew busier with people. The noise and excitement from the bustling crowd travelled over, making the place feel quieter. The dishes grew cold. A worker came up attentively, asking if Fang Yuan would like to reheat his breakfast.

Fang Yuan did not hear it. His gaze kept shifting like a cloud, as if he was reminiscing some old memories. The worker waited for a while. But as he saw Fang Yuan in a trance, never saying a single word, he could only rub his nose and walk away bitterly.

After a long time, Fang Yuan’s eyes became focused again. The past memories in his heart were like smoke; they had already dispersed away.

He returned to reality once more. The sunlight that flowed in shone over half the table. The hot air that wafted out of the dishes had already disappeared, and the bustling noise of the crowd on the streets travelled into his ears.

He reached into his robes and patted the five-and-a-half primeval stones at his bosom, his mouth curling into a bitter and mocking smile. But the smile was quickly cast away.

“Waiter, go and reheat these dishes for me.” Fang Yuan took a look at his dishes and faintly opened his mouth, shouting away. At this moment his eyes looked so chilly.

“What! Your older brother really said that?” In the hall, Uncle frowned, his voice cold. Aunt sat aside, looking speechlessly at the fresh red handprint on Fang Zheng’s cheeks.

“Yes, when I met big brother, he was at the inn eating breakfast. The entire thing went like this,” Fang Zheng replied politely.

Uncle’s frown deepened, all condensed into 3 black lines(2).

After a few breaths he sighed and said in a solemn tone, “Fang Zheng my child, you must remember this. The maidservant Shen Cui is not Fang Yuan’s personal property; we assigned her to him. How can he use her as a trading item? If you wished for it, you should have told us earlier on. We would just assign her to you.”

“Ah?” Fang Zheng was stunned as he listened to this.

Uncle waved his hand. “You can take your leave. You gave all your primeval stones to Fang Yuan, so I’ll just give you another six. Remember, use them properly on refining your Gu and seize number one. We will be very proud of you when you do.”

“Father, your child is ashamed...” Fang Zheng was suddenly moved to tears. Uncle sighed and replied, “Just go, hurry back to your room and refine your Gu. You don’t have much time left.”

When Fang Zheng took his leave, Uncle’s face revealed a ferocious and angry expression.

Bang!

He hit the table with his palm using great force, hissing, “Hmph, this damn bastard. He actually took our workers to do an exchange, he’s really cunning!”

Aunt advised, “Husband, calm your anger. It’s just six primeval stones.”

“What do you understand, woman! This Fang Yuan is only a C grade talent, if he wants to refine the MoonlightGu he would need primeval stones. With his weak experience of a first timer, six primeval stones won’t be enough to refine it. But now that he has twelve pieces, it will be more than sufficient.” Uncle was so furious he gritted his teeth.

He added, “A Gu Master’s cultivation will very swift as long as there are enough resources and no obstacles. In two or three years, the clan will be able to produce a Rank two Gu Master. The lower Fang Yuan’s cultivation rank, the smaller his hopes of trying to seize the family inheritance one year later. Right now he is still young, just starting to cultivate. We shall hinder him and let his starting process fall behind those at his age. The academy resources are always awarded to excellent students. With his latent talent, once he falls back he won’t be able to get any resources. Without the help of resources his cultivation will fall even further. With this vicious cycle, I would like to see if he has the ability to inherit the family inheritance a year later!”

Aunt did not understand. “Even if we do not stop him, he would at most be at Rank one Middle stage a year later. Husband, your cultivation is at Rank two, why are you still afraid of him?”

Uncle was so angry he stomped and said, “Woman, you really are a case of ‘long hair but short insight’! With just my identity as the senior, should I really beat down the younger generation? If he wants to get back the inheritance, it is reasonable and cannot be stopped directly; I can only fight back using the clan rules. It is stated in the clan rules: To be head of the house at sixteen years old, the person must have at least Rank one middle stage cultivation. Otherwise it means that Fang Yuan will have no right to waste the clan resources. After I have said this, do you understand now?”

Aunt was enlightened.

Uncle narrowed his eyes, a glint in his gaze. He shook his head a little, sighing as he said, “Fang Yuan is just too smart, too cunning. He could even see through a power play. What kind of intellect is this? Scheming and calculating at such a young age, how terrorizing! Initially I was going to continue plotting against him, yet he moved out straight away. I wanted to further rely on Shen Cui to monitor and trouble him, but in the end he went away and even earned six primeval stones.”

“Alas, if he could be as stupid as Fang Zheng, that would’ve been great. Oh right, from today onwards you must treat Fang Zheng better. He is an A grade talent after all. Not to mention I can see that he has feelings of dissatisfaction and unhappiness towards Fang Yuan. These emotions are a good thing; they must be guided properly. I have a sort of feeling that he will become the best tool to deal with Fang Yuan in future!”

In the blink of an eye, two days had passed.

In the room at the inn, there were no lights. The moonlight poured in, casting a color of frost. On the bed Fang Yuan sat cross-legged, his eyes closed. He moved his green copper primeval essence, concentrating his mind on refining the Liquor worm. On its body, a small cut had already been dyed the green color of green copper, but the Liquor worm’s will was still as tenacious as ever. It constantly struggled in the midst of the ethereal primeval essence.

Fang Yuan’s refining process was not going smoothly. It was very difficult.

“I spent two days and two nights, only resting two hours each day, and I spent twelve pieces of primeval stone but only managed to refine around 1/15 of progress. Calculating according to the time, I guess someone will succeed in refining their Gu in these few days.”

Fang Yuan could see the situation clearly. However his talent was a poor grade anyway, add on the Liquor worm that he was trying to refine having an incredibly tenacious will to live; it was even stronger than a normal Moonlight Gu. The resulting situation of falling behind was normal.

“A moment of falling behind is nothing, as long as I have the Liquor worm...” Fang Yuan’s heart was clear like a mirror, not a single trace of anxiety and discouragement in him. Suddenly, the Liquor worm curled up into a ball.

“Oh no, the Liquor worm is counterattacking!” Fang Yuan instantly opened his eyes, a hint of astonishment in his gaze. Before him, the Liquor worm had curled into a round little dumpling, fiercely giving out a blinding white light.

It was risking everything in this one last stand!

At once Fang Yuan felt a strong will coming out from the Liquor worm’s body, flowing directly through the primeval essence and descending into the primeval sea in his aperture.

The situation where a Gu counterattacked was incredibly rare. Only Gu with extremely strong will would give their all, it was either success or death. In the face of such a scenario, the usual teenager would be panicking right now.

Though he was surprised, Fang Yuan did not panic; in fact he was somewhat delighted. “Staking everything in one last attempt, this is also a good thing. As long as I can handle this counterattack, the Liquor worm’s will shall greatly weaken. However I need to put full focus into fighting back against this will, I cannot receive even the slightest outside interference. Or else that would be bad, sigh... But I hope no one will come and disturb me during this period.”

His thoughts finalized, he was ready to gather the primeval essence in his aperture, ready to accept the Liquor worm’s will. He would be entangled with it and fight it 300 rounds.

But at this moment, a miraculous event happened!

In the middle of his aperture, just above the sea high in the air, a Gu appeared.

Boom!

A mighty strong breath erupted from this Gu.

This breath was like the Milky Way pouring out, and floodwater rushing down from the mountains. Yet, it was also like a dreadful beast whose dignity was offended that opened its scarlet red eyes and looked around to see who would dare to violate its territory!

“This is the Spring Autumn Cicada?!” Seeing this Gu, Fang Yuan was completely shocked!!

(1) Cui Cui is just an affectionate way to call Shen Cui.

(2) The novel says [都凝成了一个川字], which means condensed into a 川 word (Chinese words are used to describe things sometimes)

Author’s Note: (He thanks a bunch of people)

I will keep on going forward, 3 years, 6 years, 9 years... in this period of time, some of you may leave temporarily and some will always stay. In the busy process of human life, we constantly mark our constant existence, and we all prove to each other that we have lived before.

I had imagined this sort of scenario: When we are old, you all will look at ‘Gu Zhen Ren’ this ID, and will laugh in your hearts: “Oh, its him, when I was young I have read his book before. I even gave him a recommendation vote.” Maybe I will open my previous layout and see all these familiar IDs, those that have rewarded, voted and commented before. I will reminisce the times when I was writing alone, these names were the company of my long and difficult journey, giving me warm little lights.

Right here in the book is a small little twist. Fang Yuan will begin to truly show his unique style. Those who were able to read up till here are predestined. I guarantee you right here, this book will become more and more exciting.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

During the process of refining, the Gu counterattacked!

At this time, the Liquor worm that had inherited the Flower Wine Monk’s extremely strong will invaded his aperture, brazenly counterattacking at Fang Yuan.

This strong willpower descended from above, surging down towards the bottom of the aperture where the green copper primeval sea was. The waves in the sea tumbled, setting off bursts of high tide. Under Fang Yuan’s will, large amounts of primeval essence rose upwards to the sky and gathered together, forming a towering monster wave, brazenly accepting the incoming Liquor worm’s will.

Just as both sides were about to collide viciously in the middle of the aperture, a faint image of a Gu worm emerged in a blank area between the two energies.

This was a cicada. The cicada’s body was not large; if the Moonlight Gu was described as a blue crystal shaped like a curved moon, then this cicada would be a delicate craftwork that was made from palm wood and tree leaves by a master craftsman.

The Gu sported a brownish yellow head and abdomen. Its surface had the texture of a tree’s growth rings, as if it had witnessed countless years. On its back were two very wide and translucent wings, like two tree leaves overlapping. The wings had similar structure; this structure was like a typical net-vein leaf. The center had a coarse stem, and from this stem sprouted out a network vein of leaf lines on both sides.

The Spring Autumn Cicada!

It had been startled. It was just like a giant beast, usually hiding in its cave in a deep sleep. But suddenly it was awakened, furthermore learning that its territory had been violated.

Who dares to come into my turf and act wildly!

As if its dignity was offended, the Spring Autumn Cicada was angry and let out a whiff of aura; the aura was weak yet powerful. It was like the surging Milky Way, rolling forth with vast and mighty waves; it would sweep across mountains for ten thousands of miles, or submerge a broad desert!

To be compared to this aura, the Liquor worm’s will was like the case of an ant meeting an elephant!

The aura swept around and expanded, just like a raised invisible tsunami. The invading will of the Liquor worm did not even have the ability to withstand it; it was immediately swallowed whole by this aura.

Fang Yuan felt depressed. The green copper primeval essence that he had thrust forward with his might collided with this aura like it was a wave crashing onto a great mountain. In a moment the condensed primeval essence disintegrated and dispersed into rain, scattering down to the primeval sea.

The waves on the primeval sea rose one after another; it was like a rainstorm had just swept across, increasing its turbulence.

But after a few seconds, the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura spread down, pressing onto the primeval sea.

Boom!

Fang Yuan felt like he heard a buzz. In an instant, the rolling waves on the sea calmed down. The Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura firmly repressed the entire primeval sea, just like an invisible mountain pressing down. The surface of the sea was calm like a mirror, not a single wave rolling about. It was like an originally crumpled piece of paper; a boundless giant hand covering over it suddenly, flattening it.

This was easily an incomparable power!

Fang Yuan felt a pressure weighing like an enormous invisible mountain pressing down on his heart. He compared it to Sun Wukong being pressed down by the Five Elements Mountain; Fang Yuan could not even mobilize a single pint of primeval essence.

However although he was shocked, he was not afraid. In fact his heart felt great joy.

“I didn’t think the Spring Autumn Cicada would actually follow me and be reborn together! So it’s actually not a one-time use Gu worm, but one that can be used again repeatedly.”

The Spring Autumn Cicada was a Rank six grade, and it was the first Rank six Gu in Fang Yuan’s previous life, as well as his last. Just to make it, Fang Yuan had used all means and resources, wasting an incredible amount of strength, using thirty years of fermenting to finally succeed.

But not long after he succeeded, when the Spring Autumn Cicada was still fresh from the oven, warriors of the Righteous faction felt Fang Yuan’s threat and gathered together to attack and kill him.

After being reborn, Fang Yuan did not find the Spring Autumn Cicada, so he thought it had died. But in reality it had fallen into a deep sleep, resting inside Fang Yuan’s body.

To travel back five hundred years in an instant was a huge blow to its vitality. It was too weak, so weak that even Fang Yuan as its master could not feel it. Right now even though the Spring Autumn Cicada had appeared, its situation was still bad.

After being reborn it had always been resting in a deep sleep. To appear right now was because it had felt the danger that the aperture was facing; it could be said that the Liquor worm’s will had awakened it.

It was weak, very weak, extremely weak.

In Fang Yuan’s memories, the original Spring Autumn Cicada was full of vitality. Its body was like a precious floorboard, giving out a warm and glossy varnish. Its two wings were verdant green, like two soft tree leaves that had just freshly sprouted.

But right now, there was a strong and deathly chill emanating from the body of the cicada. There was no shine or gloss from its body, making it feel rough and dim like dead wood. Its wings were not the colour of soft and green leaves; they were fully yellow, just like the withering leaves of autumn. The tips of its wings were slightly rolled up, a little incomplete, just like the corner of fallen leaves.

Seeing this, Fang Yuan felt both distressed and lucky. He was distressed because the Spring Autumn Cicada suffered such a heavy blow; it was barely a step away from death, just a foot away from the edge of a cliff.

The fortunate thing was, thank heavens the Spring Autumn Cicada was weak to this point, or else he would be in great trouble!

One must know, between a Gu Master and a Gu, both must complement each other, the best would be both having the same rank.

A Rank one Gu Master should use a Rank one Gu – this was the most appropriate. If the Gu’s grade was lower than the Gu Master, when the Gu Master uses it, it would be the equivalent of a strong man carrying a small stick, the strength output would be small. If the Gu’s grade was higher than the Gu Master, when the Gu Master uses it, it would be the example of a small child carrying a heavy axe, unable to wield it properly.

The Spring Autumn Cicada was a Rank six Gu, and Fang Yuan was just a Rank one initial stage Gu Master. To use an image as example, the Spring Autumn Cicada would be a mountain, and Fang Yuan would be a squirrel. If the squirrel wanted to use the mountain to beat its enemy, the squirrel would just be squashed flat by the mountain at the first second.

If the Spring Autumn Cicada was at its peak state, Fang Yuan’s weak Rank one aperture could not even tolerate it; the majestic aura of the cicada would just make the aperture burst to death.

Fortunately it was at its weakest state, so Fang Yuan’s aperture could accommodate it right now.

“I gave up the Moonlight Gu, going through all the lengths to find the Liquor worm just to refine it into my vitalGu. But in reality I already had a vital Gu from the start, the Spring Autumn Cicada is my vital Gu!” Fang Yuan’s heart was filled with emotion as he felt the close connection between him and the Spring Autumn Cicada.

The vital Gu is the first Gu that a Gu Master refines. It is terribly important, and would affect the future development of a Gu Master by a large extent.

If a vital Gu is well picked, the Gu Master’s development will become smoother. When the vital Gu is of a poor grade, to a Gu Master it would just drag down his cultivation and let peers surpass him. The more important thing is that it would affect the matter of life and death in a battle.

Fang Yuan was clear on this point, so he was not satisfied after choosing the Gu Yue village’s signature Moonlight Gu. He just had to go all the way to find the Liquor worm.

In his memory to a Rank one Gu Master, the Liquor worm was already considered a high quality pick. The Moonlight Gu was just a choice that was slightly above average.

But life is fascinating, because no one will ever know what is waiting for him or her at the next moment.

Fang Yuan had refined the Spring Autumn Cicada in his previous life. After his rebirth the Spring Autumn Cicada fell into a deep sleep, but the connection between them still existed. In fact Fang Yuan found that, as if going through the refinement of the River of Time, his connection with the Spring Autumn Cicada had grown even closer and mysterious than his previous life. It was just because the Spring Autumn Cicada was too weak, so Fang Yuan was not aware of it.

Therefore in the real sense, the Spring Autumn Cicada is the first Gu that he had refined. The only thing was that the Spring Autumn Cicada was not refined in his current life, but the result of hard work in his previous life of 500 years.

The Spring Autumn Cicada was Fang Yuan’s vital Gu.

A Rank one Gu Master, having a Rank six vital Gu!

If this sort of thing was said out loud, it is expected that no one would believe such a thing! This has already broken the limits of human cognition!

But yet, that is exactly what happened. The truth is beyond doubt.

“The Liquor worm as a vital Gu is already one of the best choices, but when you compare it to the Spring Autumn Cicada, it is just like scum on the ground! My vital Gu in this life is actually the Spring Autumn Cicada, ha ha ha....”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The immense joy he felt did not overcome his mind; he quickly calmed down and started to consider the consequences that the Spring Autumn Cicada would bring to him:

“The Spring Autumn Cicada’s ability is rebirth. But right now it is at its weakest state, at the instant I use it, it’ll die. However it is still a Rank six Gu, so I can totally use its aura. This won’t do any damage to its body.”

“Hee hee hee.” After he finished pondering, he closed his thoughts and opened his eyes. The Liquor worm was hovering before him, shivering in the midst of the smoke-like green copper primeval essence that had surrounded it.

Earlier because it wanted a chance to survive, desperation drove the Liquor worm risk everything on a single throw. Yet in the end its will was easily defeated by the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura. Due to this it suffered a heavy blow, its current strength not even 1% of the original will it had.

“Spring Autumn Cicada.” With a simple thought, Fang Yuan released a small trace of the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura. This aura pressured onto the Liquor worm’s body; the Liquor worm immediately stood still, motionless like a dead creature. Its scattered will felt the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura; like a mouse that had run into a cat, it was frightened. It shrank into a ball and was too afraid to move even a slight bit.

Fang Yuan laughed and took the opportunity to mobilize his primeval essence. In the beginning when he tried using his green copper primeval essence to refine it, the Liquor worm's will resisted fiercely, so it could only expand arduously bit by bit. But right now Fang Yuan's green copper primeval essence drove straight in, flowing vigorously without resistance. There was no obstruction at all.

The green copper colour on the surface of the Liquor worm rapidly expanded. In a few winks, the once pearl-white Liquor worm was fully dyed green.

The general situation had passed; the last remains of the Liquor worm's will was finally washed away easily by Fang Yuan's will, dissolving into nothingness.

With that, the Liquor worm was fully refined!

Compared to the beginning where Fang Yuan had to endure hardship akin to trampling mountains and crossing ravines, the refining process right now was as easy as swallowing saliva.

A kind of mysterious and cordial feeling connected the Liquor worm and Fang Yuan together. The refined Liquor worm was like a part of Fang Yuan – If Fang Yuan told it to huddle up, it would curl; if he told it to curl into a ball it would curl into a round little dumpling. The feeling was like moving his own finger.

Fang Yuan took back his primeval essence, and the Liquor worm returned to its fat and white state. Then with a leap, it went through thin air and plunged into the middle of Fang Yuan's aperture. When it was inside, the Liquor worm flew a distance away around the hovering Spring Autumn Cicada and entered the green copper primeval sea. On the sea surface the Liquor worm stretched its body arbitrarily; occasionally it would twist around its chubby waist, appearing comfortable as if it were bathing in a hot shower.

"With the Spring Autumn Cicada, my plans will have to change." Fang Yuan gathered his mind away from the aperture and took out the Moonlight Gu. He repeated what he did earlier: Letting out a hint of the Spring Autumn Cicada's aura, pressing it down on the Moonlight Gu.

As it felt the Spring Autumn Cicada's aura, the Moonlight Gu's will immediately surrendered, its fear so great its will could only turtle up in the furthest corner of its own body.

Fang Yuan's primeval essence poured in. In the blink of an eye, the Moonlight Gu was dyed a jade green colour. Finally with just a simple thought, the Moonlight Gu's will was easily strangled.

After he was done he took back his primeval essence and the Moonlight Gu returned to its original, semi-transparent, blue crystal form. He put away the Moonlight Gu; it did not enter his aperture, but instead directly dropped onto his forehead, forming a pale blue crescent mark in the middle of his brow.

The entire refining process of the Moonlight Gu from beginning to end did not take more than five minutes. Comparing the start of his difficult refining process to the situation right now, the speed was rapid and created a sharp contrast.

Not only was it very fast, the consumption of primeval essence was also very little.

For the past few days, Fang Yuan had consumed six pieces of primeval stones just to refine the Liquor worm. But tonight, while Fang Yuan could see the bottom of the primeval sea in his aperture, he did not use a single stone.

“Ha ha, with the Spring Autumn Cicada at hand, it is as easy as having a god’s help! After today all I just need to do is use its aura to pressure down, any Rank one Gu will be easily refined. Even though I only have C grade talent, I don’t need to borrow the help of primeval stones. The difference of before and now is like heaven and earth.”

Fang Yuan’s mood was joyous. Right now his situation was like pushing away the mist and cloud to see the blue skies.

Although the Spring Autumn Cicada was at its weakest point, it was still a Rank six Gu. A fallen tiger still leaves behind threat; a festered ship still has three pounds of nails (1). Just relying on its aura, Fang Yuan’s cultivation from today onwards would receive a huge driving force.

At this moment, the moon outside the window was bright and the stars were few. The moonlight flowed through the window, shining on Fang Yuan’s face.

“Initially I thought I wouldn’t be able to get number one, but the road twisted and turned unexpectedly. Time waits for no one! I must go to the academy now and receive the top prize!” Fang Yuan’s eyes glistened.

With a thought the Spring Autumn Cicada faded away from view and disappeared once more, returning to its deep slumber. Then he called out the Liquor worm and hid it away at a corner of his bed. This was to prevent the academy’s unnecessary examination.

Fifteen minutes later, in the clan academy.

The academy elder had long gone to bed, but in his dreams he could vaguely hear the sound of somebody knocking on the door. He was awoken by the noise and he opened his eyes, rather displeased. “Who is it outside there in the middle of the night?”

Instantly a voice replied in a respectful tone, “Reporting to sir elder! It is a student from this year’s batch; he has already finished refining the Moonlight Gu. You have instructed your subordinates earlier to report to you the very instant the first name appears, no matter what time it is.”

“Well... Its true that happened.” The academy elder frowned, and then he got off his bed. As he put on his robes he asked, “Which student is it that got number one this year? Is it Gu Yue Fang Zheng?”

The subordinate outside the door replied, “It seems so. The moment I heard the news I hurried over here to tell you about it, sir. It seems to be someone from the Fang family branch.”

“Hehe, counting the time, it is probably him.” The academy elder laughed lightly, confidently saying, “Who else could it be besides the A grade talent genius? All those B grade talent students would still be worse even with the help of primeval stones. Or else why would the grade of cultivation talent be so important?”

As he said this he pushed the door open and came out. Outside the door, his subordinate respectfully bowed, moving two steps backwards. “Sir is right,” he echoed.

In the hall, ten candles or so burned together, brightening up the hall. The man who had received Fang Yuan had already cleared up all doubts by now. Under the bright light of the candle fire, his face showed a stunned expression. “Wait, what did you just say? You are called Gu Yue Fang Yuan, not Gu Yue Fang Zheng?”

Fang Yuan nodded. At this moment the elder walked in from the entrance. Fang

Yuan and the man stood up and turned around to greet.

When the academy elder saw Fang Yuan, his face was full of smiles. He strode over and stood in front of Fang Yuan, patting his shoulder in a friendly manner. “You did well, Gu Yue Fang Zheng, you did not disappoint me. You are indeed an A grade talent – genius! All those B grade, C grade peers of yours will never compare to you no matter how hard they try. Ha ha ha.”

Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng were twin brothers; their outer appearance was similar to a fault. Even the academy elder was mistaken.

Fang Yuan was neither haughty nor humble. He took a little step back, letting his shoulder free from the academy elder’s hand. He stared at the academy elder, his hands folded behind his back. Then he said with a faint smile, “Sir elder, you have been mistaken. I am Gu Yue Fang Yuan, Gu Yue Fang Zheng is my younger brother.”

“Huh?” The academy elder opened his mouth slightly, his expression startled. He glared at Fang Yuan doubtfully, his brow turning into a frown. After a few breaths, he finally spoke. “You are Gu Yue Fang Yuan?”

“Correct sir,” Fang Yuan replied.

“You have refined the Moonlight Gu?” The academy elder was extremely surprised. His two eyes glared firmly at Fang Yuan’s crescent mark on his forehead. His eyes were shining; he was asking the obvious.

“Indeed, that is the case,” Fang Yuan said.

“Then, you are first of your batch?” The academy elder was asking stupid questions, but he was not entirely at fault. After all, this situation was entirely out of everyone’s expectations.

One must know that he had been in charge of the academy for decades and is extremely experienced. He had seen C grade talent students contending for number one before this, but it was never this early. Not to mention that in this batch there were peers with A and B grade talent.

“If there is no one earlier than me...” Fang Yuan pretended to be in deep thought, then he rubbed his nose and continued, “Then it seems like it.”

The academy elder: “........”

(1) It means that while spoiled/damaged, it can still be put to use.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sky was not yet bright, and the sun had yet to rise. The east sky just began to turn bright, the dark colours in the sky slowly fading away, the smell of the night still remaining in the air.

The streets were empty, then came the sounds of quick footsteps. The early dawn mountain air was moist, yet Gu Yue Fang Zheng did not feel the slightest cold rush; his heart was full of surging enthusiasm. His face blushed red, and now he was walking swiftly toward the academy.

“I have been cultivating hard these few days, spending two primeval stones. I did not sleep at all last night, and I’ve finally successfully refined the

Moonlight Gu. I am an A grade talent and I was so hardworking. No one can be faster than me, no one! Father and mother, I told you I won't let you feel disappointed."

When he thought of the moment where he told his aunt and uncle about the good news earlier, they expressed happiness and relief, making Fang Zheng feel a surge of joy and pride.

"Just wait, all you clanspeople who looked down on me, and big brother. From today onwards, I shall make you all look up to me, Gu Yue Fang Zheng!"

The more he thought the more Fang Zheng felt excited. He could not help but clench his fists, and his pace quickened a little more.

He came to the academy entrance.

The academy's two guards looked at him strangely. They asked him, "Umm, Gu Yue Fang Yuan, why are you back?"

"What, big brother was here just now?" When Fang Zheng heard them, his face showed a hint of surprise and puzzlement.

"Ah, whatever!" He would never have guessed that Fang Yuan would snatch away number one. He shook his head and cupped his hands together, his tone carrying a trace of arrogance, "Two elder brothers, I am not Gu Yue Fang Yuan, but I'm Gu Yue Fang Zheng. I have already successfully refined my vital Gu, and I am here to come and take the top prize."

"You are Gu Yue Fang Zheng? You brothers are just too alike, no wonder the academy elder was mistaken," the guard on the left side shouted, his eyes widening. The guard on the right shook his head and said, "You came one step too late. Just last night in the late hour, your older brother Gu Yue Fang Yuan came and met with sir elder and took the top prize."

"My older brother!" Fang Zheng suddenly opened his eyes wide, crying out, "Wait, you said he'd gotten number one?"

How can this be! Isn't his big brother a C grade talent?

Getting number one, this has to be a joke right?!

"It's true. How could we possibly joke around with this matter?" Seeing Fang Zheng in disbelief, the guard seemed somewhat unhappy.

"This matter has been confirmed by the academy elder. In due course the name list will be released and announced. What's wrong, your older brother did not tell you about it?" The other guard added.

Fang Zheng just stood silly at the door.

The truth was so much different from his imagination; right now he just could not understand what had just happened. In Fang Zheng's heart, there were several illusions of his adversaries. Among them, the ones that brought the most threat were two – Gue Yue Mo Bei, and Gu Yue Chi Lian.

These two were of B rank talent. Behind them were the clan's two largest family branches, and each of them had a grandfather that carried huge authority as elders, as well as sufficient financial power.

If any of these two people won first place over him, Fang Zheng's heart and mind was still prepared. Even though he would feel a sense of loss, it was still acceptable.

But right now, the one who took away number one was not Gu Yue Mo Bei or Gu Yue Chi Lian; it was not even any of the opponents in his heart.

But it was Gu Yue Fang Yuan, his older brother!

That person with a C grade talent!

That person who fell downhill and turned dejected after the Awakening Ceremony!

That person who slept soundly in class all day!

That person who was always heavily drunk and never turned home at night!

That person who bullied Shen Cui, slapped him twice, and took all his primeval stones away!

That person who always held him down, just like a shadow entrenched in his heart!

“How can it be like this? It can’t be possible!” In a short while, Fang Zheng roared in his heart, “I was so hardworking, but he just drank everyday until he became drunk, and yet in the end he was the one who got number one, is this even fair? Why? Why?!”

The sun rose from the east, the birds chirped around, and the overflowing air of spring took over Qing Mao Mountain.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng bathed in the warm sunlight. He slowly lowered his head, gritting his teeth, looking at his own lonely shadow. The excitement in his heart had turned into a balloon that leaked air, long dissipating. Instead what took its place was the emotions of confusion, resentment, unwillingness, puzzlement, fear and other complicated feelings.

As time went by, the sun climbed higher.

The academy bulletin wall had posted a new name list, and on the list were just two names – firstly Fang Yuan, and then Fang Zheng. Following the appearance of this list, the news gradually spread out.

After hearing the news, all those young students who had been bent on refining their Gu at home after receiving one were in an uproar.

“How can it be like this!”

“If it was Fang Zheng who got number one I would still have believed it, but it’s Fang Yuan, isn’t he a C grade talent?”

“Could there have been a mistake, the A grade talent Fang Zheng actually lost to the C grade talent Fang Yuan, is this Tales from the Thousand and One Nights(1)?”

The Mo branch family home.

The greenery in the courtyard was overflowing, the fragrance of tea dancing about.

One of the clan elders of the Gu Yue clan, Gu Yue Mo Bei was sitting in front of his desk, looking at the spring scenery outside his window. He leisurely drank his tea and said, “Mo Bei hasn’t continued refining his Gu?”

The housekeeper standing at a side hurriedly replied, “After he heard about news concerning Fang Yuan in the afternoon, young master Mo Bei seemed to be deeply affected and has no mood to continue refining the Moonlight Gu. It is a pity, young master Mo Bei was just so close to succeeding. Actually, if Fang Zheng got number one it could still be ignored, but it just has to be that C grade talent Fang Yuan. So young master Mo Bei lost his interest, it can’t be helped.”

“Hmph! Do not excuse him.” Gu Yue Mo Chen snorted coldly, his face stern and his tone hard, “A Gu Master’s cultivation process is full of hardship each step, what is a small setback like this? That Fang Yuan is just a C grade, so to be able to get number one it is presumably because of luck. The Moonlight Gu that he chose must have had a weak will, so that is how he could snatch the top. If Mo Bei can’t see through this and let such a small setback get to him, then how is he supposed to be in charge of our Mo family branch in future, how can he compete with the Chi family branch? No one is allowed to advise him, let him think about it by himself!”

“Yes, master.” The housekeeper did not dare refute.

Almost at the same time, in the home of the Chi family branch.

“Sigh, Gu Yue Fang Yuan...” The clan elder Gu Yue Chi Lian gave a long sigh, his brows held down in a frown as he thought, waving his hand around. “Someone, call young master Chi Chen over please.”

In a moment, Gu Yue Chi Chen walked into the room with a lost expression, kneeling down with respect, “Your grandson greets his grandpa.”

“Seems like you already know about the news,” Gu Yue Chi Lian stared at his only direct grandson, his tone gentle. He slowly said, “I called you over to prevent you from getting influenced by this matter. You see, when refining the vital Gu, firstly one looks at the talent, secondly at the Gu worm.”

“Fang Yuan’s talent is just C grade, yet he was able to gain number one this time. This means that the Gu he chose -compared to all the Moonlight Gu your peers have – has a will that is much weaker. This is entirely due to luck. So my grandson, do not be discouraged, this is nothing really. He is just a C grade talent, though he is the same as you, but his supply of resources is not as well as yours. His road to advancement will also be harder than yours, believe your grandpa, you will soon surpass him.”

“Hence you should put away this trivial matter. Fang Yuan will not be your opponent, and is not worthy to be your adversary. Your real enemies are the A grade talent Fang Zheng and the Mo family’s Mo Bei. Do you understand?”

“Yes, thank you for your advice, grandpa. I understand. I will go now and continue refining my Gu!” Gu Yue Chi Chen had lost the sad expression on his face, replacing it with a high-spirited will to fight.

“Mmm.” Elder Gu Yue Chi Lian nodded his head, satisfied. A kindly smile emerged from his face and he said, “Good grandson. While your talent is only C grade, but you can be rest assured that grandpa will fully support you. Later on, I will come out and use the aura of a Rank three Gu worm to suppress your Moonlight Gu’s will and help you refine this Gu!”

(1)天方夜谭 – It speaks of Tales from the Thousand and One Nights here.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/One_Thousand_and_One_Nights

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sky was blue and clear, looking pure as if it had been washed clean. The sun was shining golden.

Puffs of white clouds floated away, and a group of colourful peacock parrots chirped as they flew beneath the blue sky, forming an arrow formation under the clouds as they soared.

This variant of colourful parrots would only appear in large groups during springtime. Their bodies were littered with feathers the colour of the rainbow, their bodies the size of an eagle. The birds had parrot beaks, while their tails were that of a peacock’s flowing long tail.

It had been ten days since the day Fang Yuan managed to acquire number one in the test to refine the vital Gu. The spring breeze blew over the whole mountain’s green grass, while the wild flowers bloomed eagerly, and the bees and butterflies danced around together. Life was surging all around; it was the wonderful beauty of spring.

The breath of spring was so strong that the tall bamboo walls surrounding the training grounds could not hold it back.

This training field occupied 3 Mu(1). The ground was flat, paved with a layer of thick and wide grey graphite. Its four sides were planted with green spear bamboo; these green poles were placed closely together side by side, straight and tall, forming a circle of green high walls.

While below the wall corners were stone as well, clumps of green grass emerged from many areas. In between the bamboo were also some wild roses, poking in from the outside, a few even climbing the wall.

Fifty-seven young teens at the age of fifteen were standing in the midst of the training field right now, formed in a semi-circle around the academy elder who was in the center, putting their focus on him.

This was a lesson to teach the students on how to use the Moonlight Gu.

“The Moonlight Gu is our Gu Yue clan’s symbolic Gu, just like the Xiong(2) House’s Bear Strength Gu, and the Bai(3) House’s Stream Gu. The majority of you on the field have chosen the Moonlight Gu as your vital Gu, so you must all watch properly. Soon I will demonstrate personally how to use the Moonlight Gu to attack. Students whose vital Gu is not the Moonlight Gu must also concentrate on me, as this classical long-distance attacking method can also be used on other Gu; the spectrum of methods one can use is very wide.”

As he spoke, the academy elder stretched out his right hand, his five fingers opening wide. He lowered his palm so that the young teens could see the center of it.

“Firstly, you use your mind to mobilize the Moonlight Gu, moving it to the center of your palm.” Following his voice, the crescent mark that represented the Moonlight Gu moved down the elder’s arm and into his palm.

“Then, you mobilize the primeval essence in your aperture, pouring it into the Moonlight Gu.” A thread of white silver coloured primeval essence gushed out from the elder’s body, so fine it was almost impossible to see. It entered the Moonlight Gu in his palm.

The academy elder was of a Rank three realm, and only Rank three Gu Masters could produce white silver coloured primeval essence. Rank one Gu Master’s primeval essence was commonly known as green copper primeval essence, while Rank two Gu Masters had theirs called red iron primeval essence. When they reached Rank three, it becomes white silver primeval essence.

Once it absorbed the thread of white silver primeval essence, the crescent-shaped mark in the elder’s hand instantly glowed brighter and brighter. Although it was daytime, it still issued a brilliant pale-blue light.

“That’s awesome!”

“How beautiful.” The youngsters could not help but let out praises of surprise and amazement when they saw it.

The pale blue light was clear like water. It flickered faintly in the elder’s palm. At first glance it would seem as if the academy elder’s hand was scooping a handful of moonlight. The academy elder smiled a little. “Now watch carefully, the last step is just like how I will do it, launching it out.”

As he said this, his widely opened five fingers slowly closed together, then he lifted his arm up and slowly moved it forward, his arm straight. Finally he waved his palm lightly in a cutting motion.

The entire movement was steady and powerful.

Swoosh.

The young students could hear a light brushing sound beside their ear.

Following the academy elder’s movement, the condensed water-like pale blue light in his palm was thrown out like that.

The light transformed into a small moonblade in the air, the faint blue moonblade only the size of a wide-open hand, the shape just like the crescent moon in the night sky. It drew a straight line in the air before it hit a grass puppet ten meters away.

A tearing sound was heard, and the grass puppet’s neck that was about thirty centimeters thick was cut clean by the moonblade. The puppet’s body swayed about, the huge head suddenly falling onto the floor.

After cutting the grass puppet into half, the moonblade immediately appeared dimmer. However it continued flying about another six meters in the air before the crescent began to gradually fade away, finally dissipating in the air.

Looking at the grass puppet’s neck again, one could see that the cut area was extremely flat, as if it was cut away by the sharpest sickle.

The youngsters were all shocked as they saw this, their eyes wide-open. A few of them even touched their own necks involuntarily, astonished by the attacking power of the moonblade.

After a short silence, the sounds of exclamation began. The teenagers had shining eyes as they stared at the grass puppet, some of them staring at the elder’s palm. A few of them were looking at their peers, talking and whispering excitedly.

Only Fang Yuan stood hidden in the crowd with a cold expression, his stature calm.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan had cultivated to Rank six, and he had created the Blood Wing Demon Sect in the Middle Kingdom. He taught tens of thousands of people, and was reputed as a giant figurehead of the Demonic faction, his fame illustrious.

The academy elder was just a Rank three Gu Master. This small trick was just child’s play to him; it would not cause any ripple of emotion in Fang Yuan’s heart.

“All those of you who have refined the Moonlight Gu, step out. Each one of you shall take a grass puppet and follow the way I just did it, throwing out the moonblade, practice attacking.”

Once the academy elder was finished, around thirty students stepped out.

In this batch the entire clan had a hundred young teens joining the Awakening Ceremony. Those who had cultivating talent were around fifty-seven. Among these students, those who had chosen the Moonlight Gunumbered around thirty-five. After going through these few days of hard work, they had all refined the Moonlight Gu. Those that were left were all D grade talents. It was not because they did not desire to refine the Moonlight Gu, but it was due to the inability of their talent, so they could only withdraw after learning of the difficulty.

To the youngsters of the Gu Yue clan, the Moonlight Gu was not a simple Gu worm, but the symbol of the clan’s glory.

Very quickly thirty-five of them stood in a row. Each of them faced forward, standing ten meters away from a grass puppet on the opposite.

Fang Yuan stood in the middle of the row, but he did not garner any attention. The practice began.

The students all stretched out their right hands, letting the Moonlight Gu move to the heart of their palm. One by one the blue crescent mark started to give out water blue light as green copper primeval essence was poured in.

But when they drew a vertical cut with their palm, only seven or eight crescents flew out. Among these crescents, some of them only appeared for a short moment before dissipating away. Some flew out for two to three meters before disintegrating into blue light with a bang. Some flew further, but the direction was severely off-course, flying straight up to the sky.

The young teens all frowned. When they saw the elder’s demonstration earlier it seemed quite easy. But when they started practicing themselves, they realised the skill required in this action. To throw out a moonblade and to have it hit on the grass puppet, it really was not that simple.

The elder had a faint smile as he watched. He saw this scene every year, and was not surprised. The remaining twenty-two students could only stand outside the field, watching jealously.

After practicing for five minutes, the youngsters were gradually able to produce moonblades. For a time in the training ground, pale-blue coloured moonblades flew about everywhere.

A few moonblades would fade halfway, a few unluckily crashing into another. Some flew out of the training field, twisting around. Those that were able to hit on the grass puppets were just a small few. Of course these were all due to sheer luck.

The academy elder started to tutor and guide each one personally.

He focused greatly on Fang Zheng, Mo Bei and Chi Cheng and those others with good latent talent. He patiently corrected their postures, teaching them his experience. Towards those C grade talent students like Fang Yuan, he only mentioned two sentences.

Fang Yuan kept condensing the blue light in his hand. He waved his palm a few times cutting the air, but he did not release the light, pretending and acting. With the field a mess at the moment and no one focusing on himself, he moved his thoughts and released his hold on the Moonlight Gu, his palm tilting a little, making a cutting action.

In order not to raise attention, he did not focus on his own grass puppet opposite him, but aimed at the one on his left.

With a whoosh, a moonblade flew out quickly, passing through the center of chaos, drawing a straight line in the air and cutting accurately into the neck area of a grass puppet.

The grass puppet wavered for a moment, the neck area cut deeply by the moonblade. But very quickly, the green grassy area that was cut began to regrow, tangling together and healing away the wound.

Of course, this grass puppet was not a normal scarecrow. It was a Rank one Scarecrow Gu, having the nature-type ability of self-recovery.

Unless the puppet was cut into half at once, it would just recover back to normal in a short while.

“Wow, look at that crescent!”

“How cool, who threw it?”

Moonblades that were able to hit grass puppets right now were rare. Fang Yuan just casually hit one, yet it caused the most significant result so far. Thus in an instant the students outside the field gave out cries of surprise. Even the academy elder’s attention was caught, and he asked, “That moonblade just now was not bad. Was it yours?”

He looked at a C grade talent student with an enquiring eye, since that grass puppet was just opposite him.

This male student blinked his eyes, feeling somewhat bewildered as he faced everyone’s sudden gazes at him. To be honest the field was just in a chaos earlier with moonblades flying about, so even he did not know if it was he himself who threw it.

However looking at it, it probably is me? Thought the young boy. Then he nodded his head subconsciously.

The youngsters around him immediately looked at him with admiration.

“Who is he, what is his name?” Some of the girl students asked around.

“Even he can throw out a moonblade, I must not lose!” Gu Yue Mo Bei’s eyes flashed with a hint of determination.

“So it’s not big brother who threw it,” Gu Yue Fang Zheng inexplicably sighed with relief. After Uncle and Aunt consoled him, he was able to recover from the previous blow.

“Big brother, you won first place last time because your luck was good, picking a weak-willed Moonlight Gu. A GuMaster’s cultivation cannot always rely on luck, I will win you.” Fang Zheng was cheering for himself in his heart.

“You did well. Continue trying hard, seize the feeling you had earlier.” The academy elder patted the student’s shoulder, smiling as he encouraged him.

The young boy quickly showed excitement and he nodded continuously, his eyes appearing with a different luster.

The elder took the opportunity and announced, “Listen up everyone, this will be your homework. Practice well after class, in three days I will check the results. Whoever performs the best will receive ten pieces of primeval stones as the prize. Understand?”

“Yes!” The young students all shouted loudly. They could not help but be more excited when they heard about the primeval stone reward.

However only three minutes later, the moonblades that flew about in the air started to thin gradually.

“Damn, every single moonblade takes up 10% of primeval essence.”

“The consumption of the moonblade is just too much, I am just a C grade talent, my aperture can only hold 38% of green copper primeval essence. I can only throw out three moonblades.”

Those that stopped all sighed.

The academy elder was calm as he witnessed everything, but his heart sighed, “This is the benefit of those with high cultivating talent. To use the moonblade, it is simply just three words – Practice makes perfect. Those with higher grade talent are able to hold more primeval essence in their apertures, and the rate of recovery is faster, so they have more chances to practice. Those with poorer talent can also use primeval stones to make up for it, strengthening the number of practices. But those with low grade talent and have no primeval stones, though they have the mind to practice they will still be powerless. Sigh, the Gu Master’s cultivation process is just so cruel. I had just better take care of those high grade talent students.”

(1) 亩 – Mu, an ancient Chinese measurement. 1 Mu is 666 ⅔ meters^2

(2) 熊家 – Xiong House, Xiong is the word for Bear

(3) 白家 – Bai House, Bai is the word for ‘white’ as in white colour

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sun had already set.

The sunset glow was still burning in the sky. The mountains far away in the distance were covered in a thick layer of grey ash, gradually turning to black.

In the academy, a day’s class was over. The students walked out from the academy in groups of twos and threes.

“I’m really happy today, I learnt quite a few things. Especially how I got to learn how to use the Moonlight Gu.”

“The way the moonblade flies in the air looks so cool. It’s too bad that my talent isn’t enough, so in the future I can only be a logistics Gu Master, I won’t be able to go onto the battlefield.” The young teenagers happily chatted away.

A few of them called their friends over.

“Let’s go and eat, we can drink some rice wine while we’re at it, what do you think?”

“Sure, that’s not a bad suggestion.”

“You guys go on first, I need to go to the store beside the academy’s Gu room and buy a grass puppet. It will be easy to practice at home with it.”

Fang Yuan went to the Gu room alone.

The academy’s Gu room kept quite a few Rank one Gu worms. There were many types and variations, and Fang Yuan’s Moonlight Gu was taken freely from inside.

Once in a while the students would have a free chance to pick a Gu worm. If one wanted to get extra Gu, they would need to pay up.

In this short time Fang Yuan had no wish to refine any other Gu. He walked to the building beside the Gu room – it was a small store.

In the store there were seven students, each of them negotiating over the counter with the store owner for buying grass puppets.

“It’s you, junior.” The Rank one Gu Master responsible for the store was in his twenties. When he saw Fang Yuan, he automatically greeted him while bargaining with his customers.

Fang Yuan was taken by surprise, finding out that this Gu Master was Jiang Ya. It was the young Gu Master that had taught the hunters a lesson in the inn.

“Ah, it’s you senior.” Fang Yuan nodded his head, his face expressionless.

Jiang Ya took out a grass puppet from the counter behind him, passing it to the student who purchased it. At the same time he threw Fang Yuan a friendly smile and asked, “Did junior brother come here to buy a grass puppet as well? If you want me to leave one for you, you just need three pieces of primeval stones. These things sell like hotcakes, right now there’s only seven left, if you wait any longer there won’t be any stock left.”

Jiang Ya’s attitude towards mortals was arrogant, but towards people like Fang Yuan, he was very kind and sincere.

Fang Yuan shook his head, laughing secretly as he thought, this Jiang Ya really did know how to do business. The grass puppets were made with the Scarecrow Gu. Even after including the primeval essence that was put in, the final cost should not be more than one and a half primeval stones.

“Senior, this isn’t fair. It should be first come first serve, why leave any for him?”

“Yeah, we all came early. If you want to do business you should know the rules.”

“Three pieces will be three pieces, here’s the primeval stones, give me a grass puppet.”

The youngsters in the store were all worried when they heard that the store only had seven puppets left. They stopped trying to negotiate, and took out their stones to buy it.

Very quickly, seven satisfied teenagers walked out.

“Does my junior want to buy a grass puppet?” Jiang Ya laughed as he asked, “It seems like they were sold out, but actually there’s still the eighth puppet stowed away below the chest. If junior doesn’t buy it now, you will miss the opportunity.”

Fang Yuan had no interest towards the grass puppet. He shook his head and pulled out a piece of primeval stone, putting it on the counter. “I want to buy ten moon orchid petals.”

Jiang Ya was stunned. He looked Fang Yuan deep in the eye, taking away the primeval stone and pulling open the counter drawer. Then he took out a paper bag, saying, “Ten pieces of moon orchid flower petals, not one less. Please make sure.”

Fang Yuan checked the goods on the spot and found no mistake with it. Finally he left the small shop.

Gu have to be fed.

A Gu Master refines Gu, uses Gu, and at the same time needs to raise Gu.

Refining a Gu is difficult; there is the risk of counterattack. Using a Gu is not easy; one needs a lot of practice. The knowledge of raising a Gu is even more extensive and profound, because there are all kinds of Gu worms and their food are exceedingly strange. Some need to swallow soil, some need starlight, some require tears and some feed on the clouds and air from the nine skies.

Just by taking Fang Yuan’s current three Gu for example, the Moonlight Gu requires moon orchid petals, two meals a day. In the morning and night one meal, every meal two pieces of flower petals. Meanwhile for the Liquor worm, it needs to drink wine. A jar of green bamboo wine could support it for four days. As for the Spring Autumn Cicada, it is even more peculiar as it drinks straight from the River of Time, maintaining its vitality.

The River of Time supports the flow of this world. It is not far away in the sky but very near at hand, flowing by every person’s side. Every move made by every living creature requires the push of time.

Time is like flowing water, hurriedly gliding forward. The River of Time is invisible and colourless, while in reality all living creatures are actually surviving and living in the waters of the River of Time.

After buying the bag of moon orchid petals, Fang Yuan went to the inn to buy green bamboo wine. The Liquor worm could also drink some turbid wine or rice wine to live. However with this kind of second-rate wine the amount it needed to drink would increase, and it would need many jars everyday. After calculating, Fang Yuan decided it would be better to buy green bamboo wine straight away. Not only would it be more worth than buying second-grade wine, it would also not arouse suspicion.

“Young sir, you’ve come.” The workers in the inn had already known Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan passed him three pieces of primeval stones directly, saying with a familiar ease, “Give me a jar of green bamboo wine and make me a few good dishes. You don’t need to give me the change, just put it here first. At the end of the month when it amounts up to one stone, you can subtract from my bill with it.”

Even though Fang Yuan no longer stayed at the inn right now ever since he moved to the academy dormitories, he would always have a meal here when he bought wine.

“Alright. Young sir please take a seat, the dishes will be sent over immediately.” The worker echoed, leading Fang Yuan to his seat. He took the cloth on top of his shoulder and gently wiped the table before leaving. Indeed as the worker said, the dishes were very quickly served.

Fang Yuan ate and calculated at the same time in his mind, “A piece of primeval stone can buy me ten pieces of flower petals. The Moonlight Gu consumed four pieces everyday. A jar of green bamboo wine costs two pieces of stones, and it can support the Liquor worm for four days. In other words just to raise and feed the two of these Gu, I would need to spend nearly one stone everyday.”

It does not seem like much, but in reality this was very costly. The monthly living expenses for a mortal family of three only used up one piece of primeval stone. From the starting of refining the Gu until today, sixteen days had already passed. Just to raise the Gu alone Fang Yuan had already spent fourteen and a half primeval stones.

“I have acquired the Flower Wine treasure, taken away Fang Zheng’s bag of primeval stones and also got the first place reward. My primeval stone assets once reached up to forty-four pieces and a half. However in the early days of refining the Gu I wasted six pieces and a half, then I used fourteen pieces and a half on feeding these Gu. My living expenses cost half a piece, and today I am probably left with twenty pieces.”

Fang Yuan took out his money pouch. He opened it and looked inside. The bag contained pieces of primeval stones inside. Each of these stones were greyish white in colour, their shapes ellipsoid and the volumes equal, the size similar to a duck egg.

After counting he found that he really only had twenty pieces left. In other words if this continued on then Fang Yuan would only be able to go on for half a month with the remaining stones he had left. He was not like his peers – they had relatives and friends to help them out, especially with the case of students like Gu Yue Mo Bei and Gu Yue Chi Cheng who were loaded with primeval stones.

Fang Yuan could only think of a way himself.

“Uncle and Aunt have already cut off my living expenses, but every weekend the clan academy would give out three pieces of primeval stones as subsidy to every student. Looks like I would need to show off in the moonblade assessment in three days and take that ten primeval stone prize.” Fang Yuan chewed the food in his mouth while he pondered.

His current age was just at the age where the body was growing. Without realizing it all the rice and dishes had entered his stomach.

Taking up the sealed green bamboo wine jar, Fang Yuan lifted his feet and started walking, leaving the inn.

“Young sir, young sir.” The inn worker chased after him from behind and said, “Just to tell young sir something, but in less than a month the trading company will arrive to the village. By convention they would always buy the green bamboo wine in our shop. Young sir loves our green bamboo wine and always buys a few jars every week, so the innkeeper ordered me to tell young sir about this matter. The green bamboo wine in our store has limited supply, so after we sell it to the trading company I’m afraid we would be left with very little.”

“Is that the case?” When Fang Yuan heard the news, he frowned slightly. To know someone and tell apart the conversation, Fang Yuan had five hundred years of experience. The shop worker and the young Gu Master Jiang Ya spoke with similar meaning, however Fang Yuan could naturally tell the difference with Jiang Ya’s tricky words and the shop worker’s truthful words.

This matter was a little troublesome. Fang Yuan needed to feed the Liquor worm and he needed a huge amount of green bamboo wine in the long run. If this inn ran out of stock then he would have to use huge amounts of second-rate wine to feed the Liquor worm.

It was not possible for him to drink several jars a day. After a while people would be suspicious. After thinking about it, Fang Yuan took out ten pieces of primeval stones and said, “Then I’ll buy another five jars. I will need you to carry them for me and follow me to put them in the academy dormitory.”

“Alright, young sir.” The worker immediately accepted the primeval stones.

The moon orchid flower petals could only last for five days without any special storage means, so Fang Yuan would only buy a bag every time. However the green bamboo wine could be kept for a very long time, thus there was no problem with this.

A few workers followed Fang Yuan into the academy dorms and placed the wine jars under his bed, and then they bid their leave. As he saw the money pouch that had suddenly flattened down in his hands, Fang Yuan heaved a sigh.

Refining a Gu is hard, but raising a Gu is also not easy.

This is also considering the fact that he had his five hundred years of previous life experience, so he did not need to practice using his Gu, meaning that the consumption rate of primeval essence would be lessened and thus saving him a huge sum of expenses.

For those at his age around him, they would need to practice using the Moonlight Gu and would need to waste primeval essence. To increase proficiency, one would need to practice many times. When too much primeval essence is consumed, primeval stones would have to be used as a supplement since the recovery rate is too slow. To buy a grass puppet it costs three primeval stones as well. All this is money.

“Fortunately my Spring Autumn Cicada feeds on time and not anything else. Otherwise I would have long gone bankrupt, I would never be able to support it.” Fang Yuan suddenly felt very lucky.

The more high-end the Gu is, the greater the food consumption needed or the more precious and rare the food required would be, thus the more difficult it would be to keep. A normal level Rank two Gu worm would cost up to around one to two pieces of primeval stones a day.

It is good enough if the food is purchasable. There were some Gu that required food that was relatively difficult to find, some of it did not even circulate in the market.

Just like the Spring Autumn Cicada’s food being time itself, this was actually more precious. After all there was a saying, an inch of gold cannot buy an inch of time.

No matter how much money you have, can you buy time?

You can’t!

In theory a Gu Master can refine an unlimited amount of Gu. As long as you can refine it, whether ten, a hundred or a thousand worms is possible. You can refine as many Gu as you wish to.

But in reality a Gu Master normally only had 4-5 Gu.

Why?

The biggest reason is because it is hard to afford.

The higher the grade of the worm, the more expensive it would cost to feed and raise. It often gave a Gu Master too many difficulties to cope with, making them have unceasing headaches over it.

Another reason was – unable to use.

To use the Moonlight Gu to throw out a single moonblade attack, one would need to use up 10% of primeval essence. A C grade talent Gu Master could run out of primeval essence in their apertures after launching three to four attacks.

To raise so many Gu, wouldn’t it be a waste if one couldn’t use them anyway?

Thus in the Gu Master’s cultivation there was a saying going around: Raising a Gu is like raising a mistress.

To keep a mistress you would need to buy food, clothes, a house etc. It is very expensive and the more you have the more costly it is; a normal man cannot afford it.

Even if you keep so many, a man’s energy is limited; he cannot use them all. Would you raise them just to look at them?

When the rank of the Gu Master increases, so does the food standard of the Gu worm. Thus please refrain from seeing how a Gu Master has no limit to the number of refining Gu; in general a Gu Master only keeps around 4-5 Gu of his level.

If the number of Gu was raised higher, the Gu Master would go bankrupt!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Three days later.

“Lowering your body to dodge, that is the usual technique of restraining against a flying fist. When your enemy comes and attacks you, quickly squat down and at the same time do a counterattack, striking his crotch and abdomen. Do not be afraid of a swinging fist. Usually those who come up and start swinging their fists at the first moment are people who have no brains and are impulsive and rash.”

On the martial arts field, the academy’s martial arts(1) instructor spoke while he performed actions to demonstrate. A wooden puppet’s right first swept over, and the martial arts instructor quickly squatted down, dodging the incoming attack. Then he threw a punch at the puppet’s abdomen, knocking it down with a few punches.

The students were looking at the demonstration in a circle, but most of them were lacking in spirit, showing very little interest.

The academy taught a variety of courses and this lesson was the one that taught foundation of martial arts. Using fists and legs to exert oneself was too inferior to the handsome and cool attack style of the moonblade, making almost all the students absent-minded.

“The next class will be the Moonlight Gu’s usage assessment. How have you been practicing so far lately?”

“I’m still doing good. I can do three moonblades, but only a few of them actually hit. Usually I get two blades on the grass puppet.”

“Mmm, that’s the same like me. I specially bought a grass puppet just to practice for this in these few days.”

.....

The young teens whispered to one another, their minds long gone from the lesson. They were all worried about the assessment in the next class. Just for this assessment, they had practiced hard for a long time after class, and now they were flexing their hands and feet, looking forward to the assessment.

The sounds of the students’ discussion had reached the instructor’s ear, and the martial arts coach jerked his gaze back at them, shouting, “No talking allowed in class, all of you keep your mouths shut and watch closely!”

He was a Rank two Gu master, his body rather muscular. His upper body was naked and robust, the bronzed skin littered with countless scars on it. With a loud shout he showed a threatening manner, pressing down on all the students in the field.

Silence fell in the martial arts field.

“The foundation of martial arts is the most important among important things. Especially in the early stages of a Gu Master’s cultivation, it is more important than anything else. All of you better focus your attention on me!”

After he finished scolding, the martial arts instructor called out another wooden puppet. This light yellow wooden puppet was two meters tall, its huge wooden feet making sharp sounds as it stepped on the bluestone floor tiles. The wooden puppet stretched open its arms and rushed clumsily towards the coach.

The instructor dodge its attack, then fiercely hugged its waist and used his strength to push it forward down, causing the huge and tall wooden puppet to fall to the ground. Then the instructor rode on the puppet’s waist and swung his fist quickly at the puppet’s head.

The wooden puppet resisted for a moment, then its head was smashed broken by the instructor’s raining blows. It was paralyzed on the ground, lying motionless.

The martial arts instructor stood up, his breathing calm and long as always. He explained to the students, “When facing a huge and tall enemy in close combat, do not be afraid. Ruining the opponent’s center of gravity is a type of sensible tactic to pin down your enemy. Just like how I did it earlier, you must hug the opponent’s waist, control his hips and then push forward with your strength. After that you take the opportunity and get on his body and fiercely punch at your enemy. Those with no defensive capabilities will instantly collapse.”

The students nodded repeatedly, but most of their eyes showed disapproval. The coach saw all of this and laughed bitterly in his heart.

Every batch was like this. The attitudes of these youngsters were naturally easily attracted by gorgeous things. Without personal understanding and experience, it was hard for them to understand the importance of having a martial arts foundation. In truth especially for a Gu Master in his early stage, while the basic martial arts did not look promising, it was actually more important than the blade attack.

“....Remember, in close combat, your sight must not always stare at the enemy’s eye. It should focus on the enemy’s shoulder. No matter punching or kicking, the enemy’s shoulder will always move first....”

“...In close combat your speed is very important, the speed I am talking about in this context is not the speed of your fists, but the speed of the movement of your legs....”

“....Distance is the best defense...”

“...Keep your legs elastic, then you will be able to easily burst out your strength...”

“When striking with your fists, maintain a triangle support. Otherwise you will lose your footing. The enemy has not fallen, yet instead you fell first...”

The instructor patiently explained while he demonstrated. These were all his valuable experiences that he got from sacrificing blood and tears, experience accumulated from long battles.

Unfortunately the students were unaware of this. They gradually started to whisper again, the focus of the discussion still on the next lesson’s moonblade assessment.

“This martial arts instructor is very pragmatic, but his teaching style is wrong.” Fang Yuan watched quietly among the crowd, nodding and shaking his head at times. The instructor had no discipline in his teaching; he taught completely by interest, and just taught whatever he thought of. Therefore the things he taught came out in a mess and there was a lot of complicated info. In the beginning many students listened seriously, but gradually they lost interest and diverted their attention to other aspects.

Only Fang Yuan listened meticulously all the way; while others were learning, he was revising. His combat experience was richer than the instructor, but listening to others narrating was also a way of verification in cultivation.

A Gu Master’s method of fighting is usually divided between melee and ranged. The moonblade attack is a type of ranged attack, but when strictly speaking, it is considered medium range due to its effective distance only being ten meters.

When it came to close combat Gu Masters, the martial arts instructor was the best example. Melee battle GuMasters would usually choose Gu that amplified their own body strengths and cultivate. These Gu would give them superhuman strength, agility, responsiveness, endurance etc.

Just like this martial arts instructor, his whole body was covered in bronze skin. This was of course not his own skin colour, but it was a type of copper skin Gu’s effect. The copper skin Gu would increase the Gu Master’s skin toughness and defence by a lot, letting the Gu Master be able to endure more damage.

“A single moonblade would consume 10% of primeval essence. How many times can a Gu Master throw a moonblade during battle? The number is few, especially for beginners who have difficulty forming effective blows. It can only be used as a type of trump card, the terrorizing factor is greater than its lethality. To a Rank one Gu Master, the truly useful skill would be martial arts kung fu. This is because the martial art offence is more durable and reliable. It’s a pity that this fact is something that they will not understand unless they face it with their own experience.”

Fang Yuan lightly glanced around at his peers, a faint sneer somehow forming on his lips.

The basic martial arts class was finally over. After a short rest, the student’s eyes were filled with anticipation; the academy elder was late. He waved his big hand, pointing at the row of grass puppets in front of the bamboo wall. He went straight to the subject and said, “Alright, today is the day to check the results. I want five people in a group coming up in proper sequence, using the moonblade to attack three times.”

Swoosh.

The first group of students went up, and the moonblade danced in the air. After three rounds, only nine moonblades hit on the grass puppets.

The academy elder shook his head a little, feeling slightly displeased. This hit rate was too low, the key being that among these five only two managed to successfully throw out two moonblades.

“You all better practice properly after this, especially you, and you.” The elder reprimanded in a short sentence, then he waved his big hand and said, “Next group.”

The two that were reprimanded dropped their heads and left the field in dismay. One of them was a girl, her eyes a little red and her heart grieving. She was only a C grade talent, yet she could not bear to use primeval stones to quickly recover her primeval essence. Thus in these three days she practiced very little, resulting in her unskilled throwing of the moonblade.

A Gu Master needed money to refine Gu, raise Gu; even practicing to use Gu needed cash. But where was she able to get so much money? Even though her two parents were supporting her from behind, but every family had their own problems. To be short of funds was often the dilemma that a Gu Master faced.

“Anyway I don’t have the slightest chance of getting number one. I might as well give up and save on primeval stones, that is better for me.” As she thought of this, her heart became calm once more.

There were actually quite a number of people who thought the same way as this young girl. Because of the lack of practice, many of the students performed poorly. The academy elder’s brow deepened more and more.

Fang Yuan watched, secretly shaking his head. “These people are really pitiful and sad. Just for a small amount of primeval stones, they gave up their own chance to make progress. Primeval stones are meant to be used; if you want to become a miser and accumulate primeval stones, then what did you become a Gu Master for?”

In other words, those who are shortsighted would often haggle over every penny and chase after less important things. As for those with lofty aspirations, they usually showed a tolerant and generous attitude, and had the strength to give up and let go of things.

“It’s finally my turn.” At this moment, Gu Yue Mo Bei’s horse face lit up in a confident smile all over, and he walked up to the field. His stature was stout and gave out a fierce and strong aura. After standing still he raised his hand and threw three moonblades – all three of them hit. Among the blades, two of them hit on the puppet’s chest, while the other blade hit the puppet’s left arm, shaving away a few green grass.

This result naturally caused the young teens to burst with admiration.

“Well done.” The elder’s brow slightly smoothed out.

The next group came up, Gu Yue Chi Cheng standing among them. He had a small and short body, his face full of pockmarks, his expression bringing a slight nervousness.

He sent out three moonblades continuously and all three hit on the puppet’s chest, cutting out three intertwined scars. The scars went from deep to shallow and restored back to its original appearance after a few breaths, due to the puppet’s self-healing ability.

However this outcome was already tied to Gu Yue Mo Bei’s result, and also received the elder’s praise. Chi Cheng held his head high as he walked out of the field, looking at Mo Bei defiantly in the eye on the way.

“Hmph!” Below the field, Gu Yue Mo Bei gave a cold snort, but he did not return Chi Cheng’s glare. Instead, he continued looking at Gu Yue Fang Zheng who had not gone up yet.

His heart clearly knew that the real threats were only Gu Yue Chi Cheng and Gu Yue Fang Zheng. The previous was the same like him – a B grade talent while also having the constant supply of primeval stones. The latter was an A grade talent; while Fang Zheng did not have as many primeval stones as them, but just by relying on his own natural recovery speed thanks to his grade talent, he would also be able to practice a lot in a short amount of time.

Right now Gu Yue Chi Cheng’s results have appeared, showing a tie to Mo Bei, and only Gu Yue Fang Zheng was left.

In the last few groups, Gu Yue Fang Zheng finally came up to the stage.

(1) 拳脚 – Chinese boxing but I translate it as martial arts, because firstly I’m not sure Chinese is the proper word here. This land isn’t really China and their language isn’t really Chinese, also writing Chinese boxing feels out of place here.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

“Is he Fang Yuan or Fang Zheng?” Some of the students were muttering; there were still people who could not differentiate between Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng, the two twin brothers.

“It’s Fang Zheng. Fang Yuan is always wearing a cold expression, he would never appear tense,” someone answered.

“Oh, then there will be a spectacle. Fang Zheng is the only A grade talent from our village in three years, after all.” The crowd casted their eyes over to the field.

Fang Zheng could feel the pressure among the gazes shot at him, and this made him feel even more nervous. Standing on the stage, his fingers were trembling slightly.

He threw out his first moonblade, originally intending to aim at the grass puppet’s chest. But because he was tense, he missed – in the end the moonblade imprinted onto the grass puppet’s neck area.

The young teens instantly let out a sound of slight surprise.

They thought that Fang Zheng deliberately did it. Instead of aiming for the easiest spot which was the chest of the puppet, he went for the neck instead – this was a showcase of huge self-confidence towards his own attacking skill.

They could not help but look forward to Fang Zheng’s next move. Gu Yue Mo Bei and Gu Yue Chi Cheng however had their complexions cast down.

Only those among the field who could see Fang Zheng’s error were the academy elder and Fang Yuan.

“How dangerous!” Looking at the moonblade, Fang Zheng exclaimed in his heart while secretly feeling lucky. He took in a few deep breaths, trying his best to calm down. Then he threw out two blades. This time he did not make any mistakes, and the two blades hit accurately on the grass puppet’s chest.

This result made the academy elder nod his head, and Mo Bei and Chi Cheng calmed down as well. Fang Zheng’s result was different from theirs, so it would all come down to how the academy elder decided to grade them.

The other students let out sounds of sighing. Fang Zheng’s later performance was not interesting, making them feel slightly disappointed.

The next few groups were not interesting either. No one was able to perform better than Mo Bei, Chi Cheng and Fang Zheng. The youngsters started to whisper around.

“At this rate, the top scorer in today’s assessment should be among the three of them.”

“All three of them managed to hit the grass puppet, I wonder who the academy elder will deem better.”

“Hold on, it’s the last group. Fang Yuan’s going up.”

“Oh, that C grade talent ‘cold genius’? Heh heh.”

Right when it was the last group, Fang Yuan finally went up stage.

“It’s that Fang Yuan....” Gu Yue Mo Bei lifted his head and looked at Fang Yuan for a moment, then he lowered his eyes uncaringly.

“Last time you got really lucky, choosing a weak-willed Moonlight Gu by accident and getting number one. Let’s see how you perform this time!” Gu Yue Chi Cheng hugged his arms, waiting to see Fang Yuan make a fool of himself.

“Big brother... This time will not be like the last. I have practiced so hard for so long, I can definitely surpass you.” Among the crowd, Gu Yue Fang Zheng pursed his lips, subconsciously clenching his fists tightly.

Previously in the assessment to refine the vital Gu, he as someone with an A grade talent actually got second position. Naturally he was not happy with this. Especially after he understood that Fang Yuan was able to win and get number one because of sheer luck, this made him even more unsatisfied. To Gu Yue Fang Zheng, being victorious over his own older brother Fang Yuan had a special and great significance.

Many gazes were gathered on Fang Yuan, and the academy elder’s sight was fixed on him as well. Fang Yuan made no emotion; his expression was cold and detached.

He stood still, primeval essence pouring into the Moonlight Gu in the heart of his palm. With a cut in the air, he struck out the first moonblade.

This moonblade flew very high. It not only went over the grass puppet’s head, but flew over the bamboo wall as well. It went on for almost fifteen meters before the light turned dim and vanished into thin air.

“Pfffft...” Someone couldn’t help but laugh out.

“This is way too outrageous, isn’t it.” Someone sneered.

“He’s indeed a genius. No wonder he managed to get number one in refining the Gu.” Another spoke sarcastically.

In the earlier years when Fang Yuan created poetry and showed early wisdom, it had already caused discontented emotions among these people. Later on when he relied on ‘luck’ and got number one in refining his vital Gu, this made them feel a layer of jealousy among their dissatisfaction.

Many of them were waiting to see a ‘good show’. They waited to see the ‘genius’ Fang Yuan reveal an embarrassing action, and this moonblade of his did not let them down.

Waves of laughter swept across the crowd.

The academy elder shook his head slightly, secretly laughing at himself. Why did he have to be so concerned with Fang Yuan for no reason? He was just a C grade and merely a boy who got number one in refining Gu because of sheer luck.

In his heart he had already made up his mind. Although Mo Bei, Chi Cheng and Fang Zheng’s results were the same, he would still pick Fang Zheng as number one.

The war between Gu Yue Mo Bei and Gu Yue Chi Cheng was the epitome of the political struggle between the two most powerful elders in the clan. The academy elder had always remained in the center and had no intention to enter the middle of the political vortex.

The academy elder was more inclined towards the clan head Gu Yue Bo, and Fang Zheng was a set with the clan leader. Add in the fact that he had A grade talent, choosing him as number one would mean showing biased care for him, and it was something the clan’s upper authorities could accept.

A warm spring breeze blew over, the smell of flowers drifting into the training grounds. The sunlight shone down on Fang Yuan’s body, sending a lonely black shadow onto the ground.

His expression was still cold as he quietly gazed at the grass puppet ten meters away. The moonblade in his palm was giving out a faint blue light.

Of course, he had deliberately thrown the first moonblade off course. Right now he only had two chances left to act. Taking into account the academy elder’s position, to acquire number one he would have to create an outcome that exceeded everyone’s expectations in the next two attacks.

“With only two chances left to attack, it’s impossible. Big brother, I have finally won over you.” Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s eyes did not flicker as he stared at Fang Yuan. From young till old, the life shadow that his older brother had brought onto him finally faded away slowly at this moment.

Fang Zheng could feel victory so nearby. His two fists were subconsciously clenched tight, his entire body so full of excitement that he trembled slightly.

“Big brother, my victory this time is just a beginning. Next, I will keep on winning over you again and again until I banish away all the shadows in my heart. I will prove to the clan, the excellence of an A grade talent genius!”

Fang Zheng told himself in his heart.

But just at this moment, Fang Yuan acted. His right palm was like a knife, splitting the void.

With a sharp tearing sound, the watery blue light shrouded in his palm was thrown out. It flew in the air, turning into a curved blue moonblade, shooting towards the grass puppet.

In just the next second Fang Yuan’s right palm lit up again in a coat of blue light. He turned his palm and shot out the third moonblade. These two attacks connected smoothly like flowing water; it was a seamless combination.

The two moonblades flew out in quick succession, the distance between the two blades less than half a meter apart in the air. Under the stunned gazes of the crowd, the two moonblades accurately hit onto the grass puppet’s neck.

“This...” Fang Zheng’s pupils shrank, a bad feeling emerging from his heart. In the next moment, the students slowly opened their mouths wide as they wore astonished expressions.

They saw that the grass puppet’s head slowly tilted to one side, then it fell off the neck and dropped onto the ground. With a bounce, it rolled two to three meters away.

Fang Yuan had beheaded the puppet!

This outcome had gone beyond the expectations of everyone on field.

“Is this luck or skill?” The academy elder frowned. This doubt hovered in the hearts of the rest of the students. For a time, the entire training ground lapsed into silence.

“How could this be...” Fang Zheng murmured. He stared at Fang Yuan blankly, the surged emotions in his heart dropping instantly, falling deep into the lowest point.

Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes, acting as if he was oblivious to the gazes that fell onto him from the crowd.

Cluck, cluck...

Under the blue skies and white clouds, a group of peacock parrots suddenly flapped their wings and flew in mid-air. They dragged their magnificent, long and slender peacock tails, clucking in the air as they flew about playfully.

Fang Yuan stood in the center of the training field, looking up. Under the bright sunlight, the multi-coloured feathers of the birds dazzled even greater and gorgeous. His expression was indifferent, as if the person who just cut off the grass puppet’s head was not him.

“Ah, the light of spring is really enchanting..” He sighed in his heart.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

As it neared nightfall, the sun on the edge of the horizon looked like blood. The afterglow rays poured into the school where around fifty students sat upright. On the stage above, the academy elder was reading out names one by one, distributing allowance to them.

This was the academy’s weekly subsidy where every seven days allowance would be distributed. One could say it was financial aid for these young teens. After all with their capabilities, to feed and raise their own Gu was a lot of financial pressure.

“Gu Yue Fang Yuan.” The elder read aloud.

Fang Yuan got up from the seat by the window at the last row. He walked up the stage, receiving two moneybags. In one bag was three primeval stones – the clan’s allowance. The other bag held the reward of ten primeval stones.

“Work hard,” the elder said. He gave Fang Yuan a deep look. Fang Yuan had continuously achieved number one, and this had let those elders who were originally disappointed in him start paying slight attention.

Fang Yuan nodded his head and took the purse into his arms, returning to his seat.

“Damn it, he actually got number one again...” Gu Yue Mo Bei fixed his gaze onto Fang Yuan firmly, his heart rather furious.

“Those two moonblades consecutively hit the neck of the puppet. Is this because of sheer luck or real skill?” Gu Yue Chi Cheng narrowed his eyes. Since the end of the assessment until now, this question had been hovering in his mind.

It was not just him – many students unconsciously drifted their sights towards Fang Yuan. This question haunted them. Although they had lost, their hearts were unsatisfied and they wanted to question what actually had happened.

When the day was about to end, the academy elder announced a matter. “You all have been in the academy for an amount of time now, and you are familiar with how to use your vital Gu as well. In the next few days I will teach you all how to warm and nourish your aperture, advancing a Gu Master’s cultivation realm. The higher the realm of a Gu Master, the more concise your primeval essence becomes. A Rank one Gu Master has green copper primeval essence; a Rank two Gu Master has red iron primeval essence and a Rank three Gu Master possesses white silver primeval essence. A portion of red iron primeval essence is comparable to ten portions of green copper primeval essence. Similarly a portion of white silver primeval essence equals ten portions of red iron primeval essence!”

“You must all remember, the Gu are just tools that we use. Cultivation is the foundation of us Gu Masters. The higher your rank, the stronger the Gu you are able to use. In the next three months, whoever can take the lead and promote to Rank one middle stage will receive a reward of thirty primeval stones. At the same time he will be able to choose the second Gu first. After three months, we will elect a class monitor and two vice-class monitors based on the results. The class monitor will enjoy a subsidy of ten primeval stones while the vice-class monitor will have an allowance of five pieces! Alright, that’s all for today. You can all leave.”

The elder’s words made the academy burst with noise.

“Time to elect the class monitor and vice-class monitor!” Someone clenched his fist in excitement.

“The class monitor receives ten primeval stones every seven days, and the vice-class monitor gets five pieces? If I am able to be the first to reach Rank one middle stage, I will definitely be able to become the class monitor.” Another had lights in his eyes.

“The primeval stones are not the important focus. What matters here is the position of class monitor and vice-class monitor – it represents glory and places one’s identity over others. When normal students sees the class monitor they must all bow and greet him.” Gu Yue Mo Bei and Chi Cheng did not lack primeval stones, but they deemed the glory of the position very important.

“To become the class monitor, without mistake it is the first person who promotes to Rank one middle stage first! That means when big brother see me in future, he would have to bow and automatically greet me. Hold up, where is big brother?” Gu Yue Fang Zheng subconsciously looked back, but Fang Yuan’s seat was empty.

The students walked out of the academy.

“Where’s Gu Yue Fang Yuan?” Gu Yue Mo Bei wanted to look for Fang Yuan and ask him face to face. However Fang Yuan was one step ahead and had long left.

“Hmph, he sure ran away fast. Is he afraid? Looks like he got lucky again in today’s test.” Gu Yue Chi Cheng sneered.

“Whatever, it’s just ten primeval stones. I don’t need to care about this small matter, right now what’s important is to advance to middle stage and get that class monitor position.” Gu Yue Mo Bei narrowed his eyes, looking at his side where Gu Yue Chi Cheng and Gu Yue Fang Zheng were.

These two figures were his real enemy, while Fang Yuan was just a small C grade talent; he was not on par.

“In the first two times, Fang Yuan got lucky and got number one. However this time it is a cultivation test, and the focus is on the talent of cultivation. When the talent is higher by a grade, the advantage becomes much greater,” Gu Yue Chi Cheng thought, depressed in his heart. His real grade talent was only a C grade; it was only because of cheating that let him gain the illusion of having B grade.

“Just a mere class monitor and two vice-class monitor positions got them itching their fists. How hot-blooded and naïve they are at this age,” Fang Yuan sneered as he leaned against the gateway of the academy.

The so-called glory was just a valuable tool the upper levels used to motivate those below them. In the end, it was just a layer of illusionary glory, it was useless!

His five hundred years of experience had long allowed Fang Yuan to understand some of the secrets of life.

“Whether it comes to a clan, sect or demonic group, whether it is this world or earth, all organizations are like this. The high and low positions are established, making the law of promotion clear, letting those in the organization climb up non-stop from the bottom. Because chasing after profit is the nature of humans, and positions of authority often make people have superiority, creating the illusion that oneself is living a more valuable life than others.”

“Power is like the carrot dangling in front of a donkey. The desires of humans are stimulated by it, and each of them secure their personal gains with someone with authority for it. After climbing up one level, there will be a higher level. While they are busy currying favour for personal gain, their hard work is squeezed out from them and their value is exploited by the upper position.”

“In every organization, as long as there is a chain of command, it is to give serve to those at the upper ranks. The so-called class monitor and vice-class monitor position is like the smallest carrot, luring everyone else into the structure of the clan. And to stop those below from realizing the truth, those at the higher positions integrate shared values, clear-cutting the idea of glory, meritorious deeds etc. The establishment of high and low positions are made along with unequal benefits. Sometimes the use of religion is done to dominate people’s hearts.”

“This is the real truth, yet it is a pity that too many people in the world do not understand; they foolishly work hard for others. And for every organization in the world, the most fundamental of its essence is just one thing, and that is – The redistribution of resources, where the higher the position the more resources they can enjoy.”

In his previous life Fang Yuan had founded the Bloodwing Demon Sect in the Middle Kingdom, where he taught up to tens of thousands of people. He erected the positions of demon soldiers, demon generals, demon sages etc. Each position gave their corresponding benefits, letting countless people flock over like ducks, letting Fang Yuan order them around. This kind of experience allowed Fang Yuan to understand clearly the way of thinking in this principle.

“Thus any organization is just a representation, while the real basis is just one word – resources. Without food resources, one will die of starvation. Without water resources, one will die of thirst. Without cultivation resources, one will become weak and sooner or later, be bullied to death.”

“And for a Gu Master, primeval stones are the most important resource!” Fang Yuan’s two orbs were deep like an ancient pond, and as his mind reached this point the corners of his lips curled up slightly, creating the outline of a sneer.

He had long left the academy, and right now he stood at the gate entrance of the school. He saw the first batch of students coming out, gradually walking closer towards him.

“It’s Fang Yuan.”

“What’s he doing at the middle of the gate entrance?”

“Hmph, every time I see his dead dysfunctional state, I feel so pissed off.”

“Don’t worry about him, he’s probably waiting for someone.”

The young teens paid no attention to him. Just as they were about to walk over, Fang Yuan strode across and blocked them. “I’m plundering. Everyone must surrender a piece of primeval stone before they can leave.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The young teens were instantly shocked and angry.

“What, I didn’t hear wrongly, did I?”

“Fang Yuan, your head must have overheated and gone confused. You would actually stand at the gates of the academy and blackmail us?!”

“Have you gone mad? Who gave you the guts to put your ideas on us?”

“Scram, you’re just a petty C grade, how dare you block my way. If you don’t scram, I will send you flying with my...Urghh!”

Fang Yuan suddenly lashed out.

His right palm furiously cut forward. His movement was quick and precise, his slice of his palm hitting the left side of someone’s neck.

This unlucky teenager was totally not expecting Fang Yuan to suddenly attack him. While he was still cursing at Fang Yuan, he suddenly suffered a heavy blow. His two eyes instantly rolled up and he fainted on the spot.

“Fuck! You actually dared to strike?!” The crowd jumped, and the young teens subconsciously retreated backwards.

“Gu Yue Bei Ju fainted, what do we do?” Some of them were terrified and scared, shouting around in horror.

“What else can be done?! There’s so many of us, and Fang Yuan is alone. We should all rush at him together and beat him up.” Some people were shouting, their rage erupting.

“That’s right, he sure doesn’t know his place! How he dares to provoke us by himself. He’s definitely digging his own grave with his over-ambitiousness! Everyone get on him together!!”

Yet before they could do anything, Fang Yuan had already struck. He strode a few steps forward, rushing into the group of teenagers.

He slashed his palm and the edge of his hand cut onto a youth’s neck. The young man rolled his eyes upward and fell.

“Ahh —!” Another teen yelled loudly, swinging his fist at Fang Yuan, sweeping through the air. Fang Yuan lowered his body and dodged, then he lifted his leg and kicked the boy’s crotch area.

AHH OWWwwww—!

The youngster’s loud roar was originally sonorous and indignant, but after he took the blow his voice instantly rose higher and became sharp and shrill, filled with a kind of misery and pain.

Thump.

He covered his crotch with his two hands, his knees giving way as he dropped to the ground. He rolled around on the floor screaming loudly, the pain so great his entire body was covered in cold sweat.

Fang Yuan swung his two fists around like a tiger that had entered a flock of sheep!

He had five hundred years of battle experience, and these youngsters were just a bunch of soft green kids; they had only just started cultivating not long ago, how could they possibly be his opponents?

In the blink of an eye, Fang Yuan put down the entire group of young students. If they had not fainted, then they would be lying on the ground, the pain making them drained and their bodies hurting all over.

“What’s going on here?!” Gu Yue Mo Bei arrived and exclaimed. He saw that Fang Yuan stood at the entrance of the academy gates, and there were five to six students on the floor around him.

“This Fang Yuan, h-he wants to extort our primeval stones!” One of them lying on the floor shouted angrily while clutching his belly.

“Wow, still full of energy huh.” Fang Yuan’s expression was flat as he kicked fiercely at the abdomen of the boy who just yelled.

Oww!

The youngster immediately cried out in pain, his body curling up like a shrimp. Fear emerged from his face, his tears streaming down as he dared not to speak again.

As they saw this scene, the students that came over all felt Fang Yuan’s fierce savageness and cruelty, their hearts throbbing.

“Alright, all of you be good and hand out a piece of primeval stone. Then I’ll let you go, or else, these people on the ground here will be your fate.” Fang Yuan made a big step forward, his tone callous.

“In your mother’s face! You petty little C grade would even dare to win me, a B grade?” Gu Yue Mo Bei flew into a rage, swinging his fists as he rushed toward Fang Yuan before they knew it.

With a slight turn of his ankle, Fang Yuan swerved gently sideways and let Mo Bei’s fist fly past. Then he stretched out his left hand, lifting the index and middle finger toward the center of Mo Bei’s clavicle, accurately jabbing at the area below the throat.

Mo Bei immediately blacked out, falling onto the ground with a thump, fainting on the spot.

Hiss...

As they saw what just happened, the young students that planned to rush forward quickly stopped, each of them releasing a mouthful of cold air.

In the eyes of these youngsters, Fang Yuan’s attacks were suddenly too profound to be understood. They did not pay attention to basic martial arts, but in reality it was vaguely mentioned during class. The human body had many vulnerable parts, and several parts that Fang Yuan had struck were one of those vulnerable places. When these parts were struck, it would easily make a person faint on the spot, and a heavy blow would induce a life-threatening crisis.

However Fang Yuan had proper restraint when he attacked.

Those that he had tackled down were either knocked out or suffering in immense pain, losing the ability for combat in a short amount of time. There was no one who was really seriously injured.

This was the terror of five hundred years’ worth of combat experience!

“Are you going to give me your stones or not?” Fang Yuan did a step forward, forcing the other youths. They looked at each other for a moment, then half of them gritted their teeth while the other half roared angrily, all of them swarming towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan dodged about while striking at the same time. His cultivation base was lowly, but his realm was still there; his heart was cool as ice, his movements quick and precise.

Thump, thump...

After a few breaths, bodies fell down onto the ground again.

“It’s too vicious! Too terrible!”

“They’re not going to die, are they?”

There were still a few young girls left behind; they did not rush forward. Their eyes were open wide, and after seeing what had happened so far their bodies trembled more and more.

Fang Yuan swept his gaze to them, and their faces turned pale as they quickly waved their hands and retreated. “No, don’t come over. We’ll surrender, we’ll surrender the stones!”

After Fang Yuan received a few pieces of primeval stones, he let them go. They stumbled out of the academy gateway, while in succession several students came over.

To leave the academy, this gateway was the only route. With Fang Yuan blocking this path, he would be able to block out all the students.

“Damn, what’s going on?!” The new wave of students stared in amazement.

“Isn’t that Gu Yue Mo Bei?” Gu Yue Chi Cheng stared at the unconscious Mo Bei on the floor, his eyes wide and his mouth agape.

When Fang Yuan opened his mouth and spoke, the youngsters were instantly angered and they attacked him, then they fell.

“Sir elder, we’re just going to keep watching all of this and not stop them? What if someone loses their life, how are we going to salvage the matter?” The guards were worried.

Some of the guards were indignant, saying, “This Fang Yuan has too much guts. He would actually dare to extort his classmates at the academy school gates under our eyelids. This is acting with utter disregard of the law and discipline! As long as sir gives the command, we subordinates will take away this kid.”

The violent matter of Fang Yuan blocking the gateway and openly extorting his classmates had long attracted attention since the beginning. But mortal guards had no right to punish the students, so they could only go first to the academy elder and report.

When the academy elder heard the news, he did not immediately command for them to stop it. Instead he went up the pavilion and observed from afar.

“Looks like this child has fighting talent.” The longer the academy elder watched the more interested he felt.

Fang Yuan’s use of the moonblade today had already caused some uncertainty in the elder. Right now he watched as Fang Yuan with his strength alone, making an enemy out of the entire batch of students, bearing a sort of unstoppable fighting style of graceful demeanor. With this the doubts in his heart were cleared.

In this world, there were those who were particularly keen and sharp towards battles; these were hidden gifts. They were good at fighting, and they loved battles. In the battles they were often inspired, and always created surprising and even unbelievable accomplishments.

“Ah, he’s a natural battle Gu Master. Pity, his talent is only C grade; in the end he just lacks one step of a grade.” The academy elder heaved a sigh.

“Sir, are you not going to stop this farce? Letting him go on with this nonsense, I’m afraid the consequences wouldn’t be too good.” The guards beside him had worried expressions on their faces.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

“Why stop it?” The academy elder lifted his eyebrows and laughed. He lifted a finger and pointed it at Fang Yuan who was far away and said, “This young man has taken control of the entire situation, and his attacks are fully restrained. Look at the way he cuts at the neck, he only acts on the left or right side, but never cutting at the nape. This is because he knows that striking the neck sides can make a person faint on the spot. Meanwhile attacking the area at the back of the head and neck could cause death, so he automatically abandoned that way of attacking.”

“Look at all those youths on the ground, which one of them is actually heavily injured? None! Even if they were badly hurt, so what? Are you saying that our academy’s treatment Gu Masters won’t be able to cure this sort of traumatic wound?”

“But sir elder, that child is just too arrogant. He blocked the entrance; this is obviously not acknowledging our existence as guards! Being ignored isn’t the main problem though, the important matter is how the clan will think of our academy. To actually allow a small petty C grade student make a fuss in the academy and not stop it. If word goes out, we’re afraid this might affect your reputation, sir elder.” The guard squinted as he said this.

“Hmph, in reality is that because you all were disregarded by the boy, so your own dignity feels challenged?” The academy elder was not too happy. He sneered and shot a gaze as sharp as a sword edge at the guards. They all lowered their heads, all of them disagreeing.

“What’s wrong with fighting? As long as lives are not lost, it will stir up the competitive side of the students and temper their will to fight. To stop this kind of fight is to stifle the student’s fighting passion! Was there no fighting in the past batches? Every batch had their own battles, and it happened very often. The only difference was that it usually happened in the latter half of the year when the students had already mastered some means of fighting. With strength they itched to fight, and at the same time it is an aggressive age. Why didn’t you stop those people back then?” The academy elder questioned in a cold voice.

“Maybe it was because the fights in the previous years were all single battles, there were rarely huge scale fighting like this one. But this Fang Yuan is really good at creating a disturbance!” The chief of the guards replied.

“No, no, no.” The academy elder shook his head, “That was because you all did not dare to stop it. Because after half a year, a Gu Master will have the ability to fight beyond a mortal’s strength, and with your petty mortal bodies, how are you supposed to stop it? Right now you all want to stop Fang Yuan, perhaps it is because he just started cultivating, so he doesn’t have enough power. It’s also because you feel that he ignored your existence and offended your dignity. But you must all remember, these students all bear the surname of Gu Yue! They are my Gu Yue clan’s clan members, your masters! Even if they are still of young age, no matter how weak, they are still your masters!”

The elder’s tone had turned sharply.

“Your surnames are not Gu Yue, what is your worth? Because of your loyalty, you were all given the position of guards, rewarding you with some sweet benefits. But in reality, you are still slaves. Just slaves! A slave dare give preposterous opinions of their masters, caring about the matters of their masters?” The elder’s face was dark like water.

“This was not your subordinates idea, not my meaning!”

“I wouldn’t dare! I wouldn’t dare!”

The guards were ashen-faced as they kneeled down to the ground, spouting nonstop. The academy elder gave a cold snort and pointed at the chief guard who had just called Fang Yuan a person good at creating disturbances. “You gave an outrageous comment on your master. You are relieved of your position.”

After a while, the elder said to the others, “After half a month, there will be a re-examination to determine the new chief.”

The other guards immediately had eyes that shone, their hearts pumping with enthusiasm.

“The position of chief of the guard! Every month I’ll be able to receive half a primeval stone more!”

“To be able to become the chief is to become a man above men. Aside from the masters, I dare to see who else would show displeasure at me?”

“If I became the chief, how cool that would be...”

“Alright, what are you all pestling here for? Get downstairs and wait for the battle to end, then sweep the field!” The elder roared.

“Yes, yes, yes.”

“Your subordinate takes his leave!”

The guards left in reverence and awe as they went down. One of the guards on the stairs lost his footing and fell down. Immediately there was a series of sounds implicating a chain of people falling and knocking down.

However under the academy elder’s power and influence, the guards reddened their faces and endured in suffering, not letting out a single noise.

“Hmph! Those minions are just like dogs. Every once in a while they’d get this itch to misbehave; you’d have to smack them so that they know fear and respect. Then just throw some small victories and bones to them, letting them fight amongst themselves like dogs, letting them compete amongst themselves to serve my clan with their life. To hold a stick in one hand and a carrot in another – This is the unique way of the upper echelons.” As the academy elder heard the quiet movements below, he sneered in his heart and turned his head, looking through the window and at the school gates.

A fresh group of ten or so students were on the ground at the entrance. Fang Yuan stood proudly, and there were three young girls back-to-back, huddling at a side opposite him.

“You, you-you better not come over!”

“If you come over, we’ll shoot you with the moonblade!!”

In their hands were a layer of blue radiance. It seemed like they were compelled to the point they would actually mobilize their primeval essence and use the Moonlight Gu.

Fang Yuan’s body was still that of a normal fifteen-year-old boy, and if they attacked him with the moonblade it would not do him any good. Yet he was not afraid – instead he sneered at them and walked step by step towards the girls. “You girls have pretty big guts huh, have you forgotten the rules of the school? Inside the academy fighting using Gu is forbidden, or else the penalty will be expulsion. If you girls want to be expelled, then just do it.”

“This...”The young girls hesitated.

“Indeed there is such a rule.” The blue light in their hands faded away.

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed as he caught this opening and dashed forward, his palms waving in the air, cutting down two of them without a shadow of doubt.

Being the last one, her morale dropped and her knees turned weak. She collapsed to the ground crying heavily, begging fang Yuan, “Don’t you come over Fang Yuan, please let me go.”

Fang Yuan stared down at the young girl with a condescending look, his cold voice sounding in her ears. “A piece of primeval stone.”

The girl’s body fluttered and she quickly opened her money pouch, realization taking hold of her. She took out three to four pieces of primeval stones and held them in her palm, stretching out her hand to Fang Yuan, “Don’t hit me, I’ll give them all to you, I’ll give all my stones to you!”

Fang Yuan was expressionless as he slowly reached out with his right hand. He lifted his forefinger and thumb, gently pinching at a piece of primeval stone from the girl’s hand.

The young maiden could not stop trembling. Fang Yuan’s hand had a youth’s pale and slender form, but in her eyes his hand was horrifying like a ferocious claw of terror.

“I’ve said it earlier, I will only take one piece of primeval stone.” Fang Yuan paused for a moment, then he said plainly, “You may leave.”

The girl stared at Fang Yuan for a good while, then she finally got up. But her limbs were still weak and she could not properly stand. Her heart was already full of fear towards Fang Yuan, and she was afraid to the point that she could not muster a single breath of energy.

When the academy elder saw this, he could not help but shake his head. One of his reasons to remain an observer was to borrow the chance to see each of the student’s respective fighting talents.

This girl who collapsed on the ground was only a C grade talent, but with this kind of mentality she could only become a logistics Gu Master. She would be able to be productive in the clan, but there was no expectation for her to be on the battlefield.

“As for this Fang Yuan...” The academy elder rubbed his chin, his eyes squinting with a flash of light. He felt that Fang Yuan was very interesting. Not only did Fang Yuan possess fighting talent, he even had a sense of propriety. To just extort for a piece of primeval stone was not beyond the bounds in the elder’s heart. But if fang Yuan wanted to blackmail for two pieces, that would be too much and he would need to intervene.

The academy’s allowance was originally three pieces. To have a piece taken away would still be considered harmless. But if he extorted away two stones, then what is the point of giving out subsidy? He might as well just give everything to Fang Yuan.

Very quickly the last group of students arrived. There were only five people, and among them was Fang Yuan’s twin younger brother.

“Big brother, how could you be like this?! You are too bold, to actually beat up your classmates at the gates and take away their primeval stones!” Gu Yue Fang Zheng was wide-eyed as he looked at the scene. He could not believe what he was seeing before him, “I advice you to quickly go to the academy elder and take the initiative to admit your mistake, or else with you making such a huge matter, it’s not a joke, you might actually get expelled!”

Fang Yuan laughed and said, “You’re right.”

Fang Zheng heaved a relieved sigh. Seeing that his older brother hadn’t gone insane and could still be persuaded, that was good.

But very quickly he heard Fang Yuan say again, “Every one of you, a piece of primeval stone.”

“What?” Fang Zheng opened his mouth wide with surprise, “Even I need to pay up?”

“My dearest little brother, of course you can choose not to.” Fang Yuan’s tone was very gentle. “But you will end up just like them,” he said and pointed at those fallen on the ground. Some of them had fainted, and some of them were moaning in pain.

“Even his own younger brother isn’t spared!”

“This Fang Yuan is crazy, he’s too vicious...”

“We cannot defeat him, a wise man does not fight when the odds are against him. We better hand it over and overcome the trouble.”

“That’s right, we’ll just pass up the primeval stone first. It’s just one piece anyway, when we go back and report to the teachers, he’ll be getting it!”

With the lesson drawn from their classmate’s mistakes, the remaining youngsters obediently accepted Fang Yuan’s blackmail with gazes of defiance.

“Hold up.” Just as they were about to leave, Fang Yuan shouted at them to halt.

“Fang Yuan, are you actually going to go back on your word?” The youths started to become nervous.

Fang Yuan faced the teenagers on the ground, gently sighing. “Do you guys really think that I would squat down and search through their bodies one by one?”

The youths stared blankly, then they were hit by realization one by one. Each of them turned red in the face and stood at the spot hesitatingly.

Fang Yuan stared at them, narrowing his eyes. There was a flash of cold light in his gaze; immediately the five youngsters felt their heart beating fast, their scalps going numb at the same time.

“Alright, Fang Yuan. We understand your meaning.”

“We’ll just help you this once.”

Under Fang Yuan’s despotic aura, they could only lower their heads and search through each of the young teen’s money pouches on the ground, taking out a piece of primeval stone from each bag. Then they brought it together and passed it to Fang Yuan.

The entire class had a total of fifty-seven people. By extorting a piece of primeval stone from every single one of them, Fang Yuan held fifty-six pieces.

He originally had twenty pieces, but he spent ten to buy a few jars of green bamboo wine. Adding the number of primeval stones from his own allowance and reward, the total number of primeval stones he had in his possession amounted up to seventy-nine pieces.

“This sort of capital free business that consists of extortion and plundering is really the most profitable business.” Fang Yuan pocketed his money pouch that had suddenly expanded greatly into his bosom and strutted away, leaving behind a floor full of teenagers, lying like corpses on the ground.

And a few teenagers, Fang Zheng among them, blankly stared after Fang Yuan’s gradually disappearing shadow.

“Get out there fast.”

“All of you, faster! Arrange the little masters properly.”

“The treatment Gu Master, where is he, ask him to come over fast!”

The guards were yelling as they all rushed forward, falling over each other in their eagerness to present themselves. They willingly gave their all for the small position of being the chief guard.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Put all the wine jars under the bed." Fang Yuan pointed and directed four workers from the inn. In each man’s hands were jars of green bamboo wine. Right after Fang Yuan successfully extorted his peers, he went to the inn and bought twenty jars in one go.

Each jar cost two pieces of primeval stones, and Fang Yuan pumped in forty primeval stones for the sake of the Liquor worm.

The money pouch that had bulged out not long ago deflated by half in an instant, leaving thirty-nine pieces of primeval stones behind. However it was worth the money – these wine would be able to support the Liquor worm for a long time.

"Alright," the workers immediately replied. They would not dare to show any hint of disrespect to a Gu Master. Add on to the fact that Fang Yuan had bought so much wine, he could be said as the inn’s big customer. With just a casual word before the innkeeper, the workers were able to easily put down their current activities and workload.

After the inn servants left, Fang Yuan closed the dormitory door and sat cross-legged on his bed.

It was already nighttime. The stars and moon in the sky were bright, and the night breeze flowed with a hint of scented fragrance.

There was no light in the room. Fang Yuan calmed his state of mind, letting his focus slip into the primeval sea.

The waves of the primeval sea rose and fell, the seawater giving out green copper coloured light. Every drop of seawater was the green copper primeval essence that a Rank one Gu Master specially had. The primeval sea took up 44% of the entire aperture; this was Fang Yuan’s C grade talent’s limitation.

The four walls of the aperture were a thin layer of white light, supporting and encasing the aperture. In the sky above the primeval sea there was nothing. The Spring Autumn Cicada had already hidden itself away under Fang Yuan’s command, restoring itself under a deep sleep.

Floating on the primeval sea was a cute and chubby white Liquor worm. It frisked about with its heart’s content on the seawater, sometimes diving into the sea, other times shaking its head and tail, splashing and splattering water droplets around.

Fang Yuan sent a thought through his mind, and the Liquor worm immediately responded. It stopped playing and curled up into the shape of a rice dumpling, leisurely floating into the air. It rose up to the middle of the aperture and out of the green copper sea.

"Go." Fang Yuan mobilized a tenth of his primeval essence, transforming it into a narrow flow, thrusting it all into the Liquor worm. The Liquor worm had already been refined by him, so this time it did not resist. It took in the entire jet of primeval essence and absorbed everything into its body.

Immediately the sea surface dropped by a small cut. The curled up Liquor worm turned the primeval essence into a driving force and began to radiate out white light. Inside the soft light, an enshrouding mist of wine fumes were gradually produced, finally converging into a pale white wine mist.

The wine mist was marvelous. It did not drift apart, instead enveloping around the Liquor worm.

"Rise." Fang Yuan gave a thought, transferring another 10% of his primeval essence. The green copper seawater dived into the wine mist; as the wine mist melted into the seawater, it gradually lessened, and eventually there was no trace of it left. As for that 10% of green copper primeval essence, it also lost its general volume and was left with 5%.

However this 5% of primeval essence was even more condensed than before. The original primeval essence was a jade green, giving out a copper luster. Right now although this new primeval essence had the same copper luster, the green was a darker shade – it was pale green.

Pale green coloured primeval essence was the primeval essence that only a Rank one middle stage Gu Master would have. The Liquor worm’s use was to condense the primeval essence and increase it by a small realm rank!

A Gu Master had 9 great realms, from the bottom – Rank one, Rank two, all the way to Rank nine. Every great realm was split into four smaller realms, which were initial stage, middle stage, upper stage and peak stage.

Fang Yuan was only a Rank one initial stage Gu Master right now, but with the Liquor worm’s help he had 5% of a Rank one middle stage Gu Master’s primeval essence!

"If I want to condense out 5% of middle stage primeval essence I would need to use 20% of initial stage primeval essence. I want to convert all the 44% of my primeval sea into middle stage primeval essence, so I’d need to use around 180% of initial stage primeval essence. To reach this target as soon as possible, I’d need to borrow the help of primeval stones."

As he thought of this, Fang Yuan opened his eyes and took out a complete primeval stone the size of a duck egg from his bag. The primeval stone was a sort of ellipsoidal shaped, translucent grey stone. As the natural essence inside it is consumed, its size would continue shrinking.

His right hand slowly closed, the primeval stone tightly clenched in his palm. He absorbed the natural primeval essence inside the stone, continuously replenishing his own aperture. The level of the sea surface that had fallen in his aperture slowly began to rise.

The primeval stone was meant to be used. Fang Yuan was not stingy by one bit, and he would not save it up.

"I do not have someone to back me up, and I do not have support from friends and family, thus I can only rely on extortion and plundering. Today was just the first time, but after this, every seven days when the academy gives out the school allowance, I will continue blocking the academy gates."

How could robbing and blackmailing once satisfy Fang Yuan’s appetite? In a Gu Master’s cultivation, the primeval stone was the most scarce thing. As for the consequences of his plundering actions, Fang Yuan was not the least worried.

This world was not the same as Earth.

On Earth, schools would always prohibit fights to mainly stabilize harmony. But in this world, fighting was the main theme.

No matter a Gu Master or common mortal, they would fight for survival. Sometimes it would be a fight with a scary wild beast. Sometimes it would be a battle against the raging weather, and other times if could be a fight against other Gu Masters over resources.

As a result, moderate fighting was instead encouraged and advocated by people.

From young to old, from simple brawls to battles determining life and death, this was the portrayal of most of the human lives here.

This surface of this world was boundless. Just the Southern Border alone that Fang Yuan stayed in now, it was bigger than seven to eight times the entire surface of Earth itself. The living environment here was hostile and cruel, so humans would often construct mountain villages in the form of clans, holing up together.

Every now and then there would be waves of beasts, or perhaps extremely bad weather assaulting a village. The Gu Master would become the core force of a village’s protection, and every year the situation of attrition would become more serious.

Surviving requires men with strong fighting will. A clan needs battle Gu Masters, there is never too much. Moreover, Fang Yuan’s attacks were within the proper limit.

He never attacked the lower jaw, as this would easily cause the skull to fracture and cause the loss of a human life. He also never struck the back of the head. When fighting he did not use his fists or elbow, or even jabbing with his fingers, but he used his palm. The number of kicks he used could also be numbered.

The students that fell were not heavily injured; at most they were lightly wounded.

Fang Yuan was not bloodthirsty, he just treated killing as a type of means.

Every time he acted, he would have a clear goal. Whatever the type of method, whichever would let him reach his goal the fastest, he would use it. In other words, he was unscrupulous in doing things.

...

The clouds floated over, covering the moonlight. A shadow enveloped over the Gu Yue village.

The watchman banged on his clappers, prompting people to know that it was already deep in the night – Be careful of fires, be on guard of beast assaults, as well as the possibility of foreign Gu Masters sneaking into the village.

There were still a lot of lights in the village.

In the Chi family branch home, Gu Yue Chi Lian stayed in his study, the lights radiantly bright. This high authority old man spoke with a gentle tone, expressing sympathy as he asked his own grandson Gu Yue Chi Cheng, "I heard you were beaten up by that Fang Yuan today?"

Gu Yue Chi Cheng had a black right eye, and he angrily said, "Yes, grandpa. That Fang Yuan was just a petty C grade, yet he dared to act so arrogant. He blocked us all at the entrance, not caring about the friendly sentiments of his classmates, and he robbed us of our primeval stones. What’s more, the academy just opened one eye and closed one eye over the incident. It was only when Fang Yuan strode away that the guards hurried over. Grandpa, this time you have to help me expel this angry resentment of mine!"

Instead Gu Yue Chi Lian shook his head. "This is between you and your juniors. You were blackmailed to lose a piece of primeval stone, and you did not suffer heavy injuries – Grandpa cannot act without any justifiable excuse. Even if you were heavily wounded, I will not stand up for you, do you understand why?"

Gu Yue Chi Cheng was stunned. He struggled to think, and after a long while he hesitatingly said, "Grandpa, I think I understand your meaning. You are hoping that I will rely on my own strength to find my way, right?"

"You only understood one aspect." Gu Yue Chi Lian nodded his head and added, "You must remember, you are not just an individual representative, but you are the image on behalf of our Chi family branch. For many years we have confronted the Mo family branch, and your every move will represent the hope of the future of the Chi family branch. Grandpa may help you in the shadows, but you must stand up and erect a self-reliant and strong image. Otherwise the elders who are supporting our family will not see the hope for our future, and they will abandon the Chi family."

As he said this, Gu Yue Chi Lian heaved a sigh. "This is also why grandpa helped you to cheat and let you impersonate a B grade talent. Our Chi family needs a strong successor to hold on to those who are supporting us."

Gu Yue Chi Cheng was then enlightened. "Grandpa, I understand now."

Gu Yue Chi Lian shook his head. "Just understanding won’t do any good. You must work hard. Fang Yuan is just small trouble; next up you must study hard and train diligently on your basic martial arts and get your dignity back. At the same time do not forget to work hard on cultivating, promoting to middle stage as soon as possible. The best you can do is to win the position of class monitor, this will be great honor and a kind of help to our Chi family."

"Alright, grandpa!" Gu Yue Chi Cheng replied loudly.

"Heh heh heh, this spirit is how the heir to our Chi branch should be like. Grandson, you must work hard, I will do my best to help you."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Almost at the same moment, in another place.

“Honorary father and mother, that was pretty much how things went.” Fang Zheng stood straight, his tone respectful and cautious.

In the hall, Fang Yuan’s uncle Gu Yue Dong Tu as well as his aunt sat in their wide-back huge chairs frowning. Aunt gnawed her teeth. While feeling injustice for Fang Zheng and at the same time gloating over the matter, she said, “Fang Yuan that bastard son, him extorting others is one thing, but to think he would not even spare his own younger brother. How heartless and unfeeling! However this time with such a huge crime, I expect he will be expelled from the academy soon after this.”

“That’s enough, you should talk less.” Uncle heaved in a deep sigh and told Fang Zheng, “You only lost a piece of primeval stone, don’t worry. Go to the treasury and pick up a stone, there is no business for you here now. You must go and work hard in cultivating. With your A grade talent, becoming the first Middle stage Gu Master is a huge possibility. Do not waste the talent that heaven blessed you with, for your mother and I look forward to seeing you become number one.”

“Yes, father and mother. Your son takes his leave.” Fang Zheng left with a heart full of trepidation.

He secretly thought, “Big brother robbed all the students when he blocked the academy gates today. He created such a terrible aftermath, I’m afraid he might really be expelled. If that happens, should I plead on his case for him?”

Two voices appeared in his head.

A voice said, “No need to plead for him, he even robbed your primeval stone away although you were his own young brother. Even if he was expelled, that was his own fault. If Heaven commits a sin, it can be forgiven, but if one commits a sin himself, he deserves to die!”

Another voice said, “But he is your very own older brother, he shares a similar face, his blood thicker than water. Alright, even if you do not acknowledge him, you still must plead his case. If you do not do so, how will the outsiders look at you? I’m afraid they might think of you as a heartless and ungrateful person.”

Seeing Fang Zheng leave the hall, Aunt could not help but exclaim happily, “Husband, we cut off Fang Yuan’s living expenses. This little bastard finally couldn’t stand it and went off committing a huge error! To actually dare to block the academy gates and fight in public, not to mention extortion, this is the equivalent of provoking the academy elder. I daresay the time for him getting expelled is very near.”

However Uncle shook his head. “You think too simply of things. Fang Yuan will not be expelled, in fact there may not be any punishment.”

“Why?” Aunt was puzzled.

Uncle snorted. “Brawls and fights are encouraged as long as there are no heavy consequences. Did any students die in this fight? No.”

Aunt refused to comply. “Husband, how would you know there weren’t any casualties? There are always accidents happening from fighting.”

Uncle closed his eyes, leaning against the back of his chair. “Woman, you are really naïve. Do you really think the academy elder is just for show? When did the guards start acting? They came out at the last moment, this means that the entire scene was under control. If someone was heavily injured, they would have rushed over a long time ago, not at the last moments.”

“You are not a Gu Master, so you won’t understand. The academy does not forbid brawls among the students, but in fact they maintain an encouraging attitude towards it. The more brawls there are, the more helpful it would be for battles. Some students can even create strong bonds through fighting. The elders will not pursue this. It is already a routine. If anyone wants to take action on behalf of their offspring, it would break the rules.”

Aunt was dumbfounded as she heard this, and she replied in an unsatisfied manner, “Then nothing’s going to happen to Fang Yuan who robbed away such a huge amount of primeval stones? He’s just going to be let go like that? With such a big number of primeval stones, it will bring a lot of help to his cultivation.”

Uncle opened his eyes, his face cloudy. “What else can we do? Are you expecting me to go over by myself and snatch away all his primeval stones? However this matter is not something that we cannot exploit. For Fang Yuan to rob and extort even his own brother Fang Zheng, this is the key to his fall. Fang Zheng is an A grade talent, he will definitely be stronger than Fang Yuan one day. We will use this matter to divide and sow discord in Fang Zheng. We’ll lead Fang Zheng away from Fang Yuan for our own use!”

And with that, three days passed.

The disturbance that Fang Yuan caused from his robbery and extortion did not spread nor grow bigger, but instead it gradually died down.

No elders broke the rules and came to find trouble for Fang Yuan, and the academy elder naturally closed one eye and opened one eye, acting like nothing happened. Although in this period of time, there were two to three youngsters who refused to accept the truth of having their primeval stones taken, and they challenged Fang Yuan. But after Fang Yuan knocked them down easily, everyone became aware that if they did not train hard in martial arts, they would never beat Fang Yuan.

Among these teenagers, a burst of mass fervor towards training hard in martial arts erupted.

The martial arts instructor was overjoyed, he had never seen a batch of students so enthusiastic and dedicated towards martial arts. Before this when he was teaching, the students were all lacking in interest, yawning all day. But right now they would constantly seek advice with eyes brimming with radiating vigour.

The academy elder specially came over to inquire about his situation.

The martial arts instructor had an excited tone as he reported, “The students have been showing unexpected enthusiasm, and this change is too great. Only one student among them called Fang Yuan remains as lazy as ever.”

The academy elder laughed and patted his shoulders. He said, “This student that you speak of is the cause of the other student’s transformation.”

The martial arts instructor was puzzled. But of course the changes were more than this.

After the incident, Fang Yuan had undoubtedly become the public enemy of the entire student batch. Everyone was hostile towards him and he was isolated. No longer did anyone speak to him, and no one greeted him.

The youths exerted full force, training their basic techniques privately. With their parents’ and elders’ encouragement and inspirations, they had decided that they must reclaim their honor by their own hands.

Under the calm surface, the undercurrent was surging.

Another four days passed.

The academy elder passed out the primeval stone allowance once more, and the time for Fang Yuan to act came again.

“Fang Yuan, once wasn’t enough for you, you still want to rob away our primeval stones again?!” The students were shocked and angry as Fang Yuan blocked them at the gates once more.

Fang Yuan stood in the middle of the entrance, his hands behind his back, his expression cold and tone flat. “A piece of primeval stone per person and you’ll be spared of physical pain.”

“Fang Yuan, your bullying is excessive. I want to challenge you!” Gu Yue Mo Bei roared angrily, coming out first.

“Oh?” Fang Yuan raised his eyebrows slightly.

Mo Bei raised his fists and rushed forward. After a few rounds, he fainted onto the ground.

“Mo Bei, you’re too useless! Watch me!” Gu Yue Chi Cheng yelled loudly and dashed towards Fang Yuan. After a transition of attack and defence, he joined after Mo Bei’s footsteps.

Fang Yuan’s battle experience was ten thousand times more than theirs; although he only started cultivating, every force inflicted was used properly. Meanwhile, this bunch of students had only started their journey. If they came at him together, they might still be able to bring him a little trouble. But with them coming up to challenge him one by one, it was more relaxing than the first time of extortion.

After fifteen minutes, Fang Yuan leisurely walked away with a bulging money bag, leaving behind a floor full of youths. Some of them were lying motionless, and some were holding their bellies or clutching their crotch as they moaned and howled.

“Brothers, time to come up and sweep the field fast!” The guards shouted and all rushed over.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

“I’ve trained hard in basic martial arts for seven consecutive days, but to think I only managed to endure 2 strikes from Fang Yuan and lost consciousness afterwards. Shame, unforgivable shame!” Gu Yue Mo Bei exclaimed, full of anguish and regret.

In the family garden, he faced the wooden puppet, unleashing punches and kicks that were resulting in resounding echoes.

Suddenly, he heard a laughing voice. “Little brother, do you have deep hatred for the puppet? Why the great resentment?”

Upon hearing this familiar voice, Gu Yue Mo Bei relaxed and stopped his attacks. He turned his head. “Sister, you’re back!”

“Uh-huh, the family council sent me out for an investigation mission which lasted more than ten days...” Gu Yue Mo Yan laughingly replied. She was Mo Bei’s blood-related sister, a Rank two middle stage Gu Master.

But soon, her face turned grim, her eyes sharply gazing at Mo Bei. “Brother, what’s the matter with those bruises on your face? Who bullied you?”

“Ah, it’s nothing. I accidentally tripped and fell.” A hint of panic flashed across Mo Bei’s face as he came up with an excuse. He did not wish for his sister to know of such an embarrassing event. The truth of the Mo family’s future heir and the family head, Gu Yue Mo Chen’s beloved grandson, consecutively knocked out twice in combat. But the fortunate thing was that he wasn’t the only unlucky one. The others had suffered as well.

“Oh, you have to be more careful in that case. As for your combat training, this won’t do. You do not have a Guthat enhances your defense right now, so use thick towels to cover yourself. This will protect your limbs from getting hurt.” Gu Yue Mo Yan instructed before leaving.

“Hello, young Miss!”

“Good morning, young Miss!”

“Young Miss is back! Your servant greets you, Miss!”

Gu Yue Mo Yan hastily walked with a cold demeanor, and the servants she met on the way bowed and paid respects to her without fail.

She walked to the study room. Without any warning, Mo Yan pushed the door and entered through. Inside the room, Gu Yue Mo Chen was practicing his calligraphy art with his back facing her.

“You’re back?” Gu Yue Mo Chen asked directly without turning his body. “After investigating for half a month, what is the situation with the wolves’ den?”

“How did you know it’s me, grandfather?” Mo Yan gasped, slightly taken aback.

“Hmph, in the entire family, you’re the only person that dares to enter my room without even knocking the door once. Who else can it be besides you, my beloved granddaughter,” Gu Yue Mo Chen reprimanded, although his face showed traces of concern and warmth, and he looked at Mo Yan with a smile.

Mo Yan pouted. “When it comes to doting, you actually adore little brother more. However since he’s the future family head, you are more strict on him so others cannot sense your concern for him.”

After a while, she asked: “Grandfather, little brother was beaten up! I asked him and he lied about the situation, so I had no choice but to ask you.”

Gu Yue Mo Chen’s face turned serious. “You have not answered my question.” He put down his brush and sat down.

Mo Yan reluctantly reported, “The wolves’ den is almost full, so according to the current rate of breeding speed, although there won’t be an outbreak this year, there will definitely be a wolf tide next year at our mountain village.”

Gu Yue Mo Chen enquired again, “Generally there’s an outbreak every 3 years, so this is no surprise. However, within that hoard, how many Thunder Crown Wolves are there?”

“Around three.”

Gu Yue Mo Chen nodded, feeling assured. The Thunder Crown Wolves were the head of the pack, and were the most troublesome to deal with during an outbreak.

Three wasn’t a large number since Qing Mao Mountain had three clan villages. Each village could handle one wolf, and the pressure of the outbreak would be greatly reduced.

“Grandfather, you have not told me about my little brother’s matter yet!” Mo Yan pursued again.

“I suppose there’s no matter telling you, but he was beaten up. The first time was seven days ago, and the second time happened today. It happened in front of the school gates, and he was beaten until he sprawled on the ground and fainted on both occasions.” Gu Yue Mo Chen laughingly replied.

“Who has the guts to knock out my little brother?” Mo Yan stared, wide-eyed.

“He’s a classmate of Mo Bei called Fang Yuan. He fights really well...” Gu Yue Mo Chen sniggered.

Gu Yue Mo Yan’s eyes grew larger, and she was perplexed as she replied, “Grandfather, what are you saying? He is your own blood-related grandson!”

Gu Yue Mo Chen stared deeply at his granddaughter and spoke meaningfully, “Mo Yan my dear, you are a girl so you may not understand. Defeat and humiliation only serve as fuel for improvement. Without failure one can never develop and grow into a true, mature man.”

“Mo Bei was defeated, and that is his own failure. Once he wakes up, he will ask fighting techniques from the teachers. This is a sort of improvement, and this improvement comes from Fang Yuan, who beat him into realization. As his sister, if you really care and want to protect your brother, you should not interfere with his growth. Fang Yuan is just a boy with C grade talent while Mo Bei has B grade talent. With us supporting him, he will step over Fang Yuan and drive him into the ground eventually.”

“Leave this opponent to Mo Bei. In a woman’s life, she needs a family and a lover. But for a man, a family is not a necessity, yet what he cannot lack is a rival. Do not find trouble with Fang Yuan, do you hear me? This is a matter between the youths. If you get involved, this will be perceived as bullying. Breaking the rules like that will cause our Mo family to be looked down upon.”

Mo Yan gasped wordlessly, but under Gu Yue Mo Chen’s gaze, she finally lowered her head. “Yes grandfather, your granddaughter understands.”

She staggered out of the study room, but even Gu Yue Mo Chen did not notice – her eyes shined ominously.

“Grandfather, this is your way of loving your grandson. And I, Mo Yan, have my own methods.” Mo Yan’s heart already had different plans.

......

In the inn’s dining room, several tables were occupied and people were having dinner, thus the environment was rather lively. One or two waiters served dishes rapidly, traversing between tables.

Fang Yuan sat at the table near the windows. He ordered a few dishes and ate while gazing out of the window.

Looking out, the sunset looked like fire, slowly burning away.

Half of the sun had already set; it longingly gazed at the lands, its afterglow being the sun’s reluctance.

Far up the mountains, it was already veiled by the seeping nightfall. The streets nearby were gathered full of people who were going home. Some of them were barefooted, some muddy farmers, some of them herb pickers, some hunters holding mountain pheasants, wild boars and other animals, and some were Gu masters. They wore a blue uniform, looking clean and spirited, a headband and a waist belt completing their appearance.

The belt had a specific function, for Rank one Gu Masters it was a blue belt. There was a bronze plate at the front, and the number “1” could be seen. For Rank two Gu Masters, their belt was red, and the steel plate in the middle showed the number “2”.

Sitting at the side of the window, Fang Yuan observed that there were six to seven Rank one Gu Masters, and they were mostly young men. There was also a Rank two Gu Master, a middle aged man.

As for Rank three Gu Masters, they were the family elders. And fourth rank would be the clan head, the lord of a village.

Rank five Gu Masters were hardly seen, and in the entire history of the Gu Yue clan, there were only the first generation clan head and the fourth generation clan head who had reached this level.

“Actually, finding out a clan’s strength is very simple. Just find a spot in the village, settle down and observe the people for a few hours, see how many Rank one and Rank two Gu Masters there are and you’ll be able to see the clan’s strength and wealth.” Fang Yuan came to a conclusion with his accumulated knowledge of 500 years.

Using the Gu Yue village as an example, there were around twenty people walking on the streets, and six were Gu Masters. In these six, there was a 50% chance of having one Rank two Gu Master.

With this strength and capital, the Gu Yue Clan managed to monopolize one of the best resource locations in Qing Mao Mountain. But the mountain was just a small corner in the entire area of the Southern Border. The Gu Yue clan could only be considered as a middle-low tier clan.

“I have only started my cultivation, and with Rank one initial stage, I do not even have the qualification to roam the Southern Border. I need at least Rank three cultivation to be able to further roam the world,” Fang Yuan sighed as he consumed his dinner.

Qing Mao Mountain was too small; it could not contain his ambitions, and he was determined to leave.

“Haha, Gu Yue Fang Yuan, I have finally found you!” At this moment, a middle-aged man laughed deviously as he approached.

“Hmm?” Fang Yuan turned slightly to see a man with a yellowish skin tone and hanging brows, but he had a huge body size and developed muscles. He strode several steps to Fang Yuan with his arms folded and proudly stared at the youth who was still consuming his dinner, with a hint of hostility.

“Fang Yuan, you’ve gotten yourself into huge trouble, do you know that? Heh heh heh, you have dared to hit our young master of the Mo family, and now our young Miss is here to settle the score with you.” The middle-aged man snickered continuously. He constantly stared and sized up Fang Yuan, faintly emitting a threatening aura.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

If a normal person was stared at by this middle-aged man, they would have probably developed fear in their hearts already.

However, Fang Yuan lost interest after looking at him for a second and continued focusing on his meal, treating this man as if he were invisible.

“Who’s that guy? He wears the clothing of a family servant, and he is not a Gu Master. Why would he dare to question young master Fang Yuan?” An employee wondered as he hid at the corner of the inn, sensing that the situation may turn ugly.

“Hmph, he’s like a fox assuming a tiger’s ferocity! By using the Mo family as his backing, this servant man dares to clamor at a Gu Master. If it were any other mortal man, they wouldn’t have the guts to do this,” someone beside the employee replied in disdain.

“Even so, as a mere mortal he has the guts to cause a ruckus towards a Gu Master. Tsk tsk, this kind of experience must feel really great.”

“Tch, you shouldn’t think that a Gu Master is always high and mighty. Young Master Fang Yuan is merely a Rank one initial stage Gu Master, and he has just managed to refine his vital Gu. If they were to fight now, he may not be the opponent of this muscular and strong mortal.”

“Sigh, let’s just hope that when they fight later, they will spare our inn and the furniture.”

The employees chattered back and forth, but none dared to take a step forward, only staring from a distance.

“Eh, you still have the mood to continue eating?” Seeing as how he did not manage to intimidate or scare Fang Yuan, the muscular middle-aged man had a hint of doubt in his eyes. “Do you think I’m lying to you? There are already people reporting to young Miss and she will be here shortly. Do not attempt to run away young lad, because you won’t be able to get away. My job here is to make sure you stay put. There will be much suffering for you later.”

Fang Yuan paid no heed to the man and continued eating his meal.

The middle-aged servant frowned as he did not see a hint of panic or shock from Fang Yuan. This made him feel ignored and his pride was severely offended.

He had been a servant in the Mo family for over a decade, and he had acquired the trust of his master. Over a long period, he would naturally come to learn about the details of Gu Masters.

Rank one Gu Masters mostly relied on their physical combat skills. In battle, a Gu worm's worth was attributed more to its deterrence factor than as a fighting force.

He knew especially that for a young Gu Master like Fang Yuan who had just started cultivating, his physical strength was far inferior when compared to a grown man. If it came down to close combat, he who had trained for many years would gain the upper advantage.

At the same time, Fang Yuan had supposedly only refined the Moonlight Gu, so at the max, he would only be able to shoot out several moonblades.

The middle-aged man was used as a sparring partner from a long time ago, so he knew deeply that if a Rank one initial stage Gu Master were to use his primeval essence to unleash the moonblade, the most it could do was cut several palm-sized wounds and cause limited damage if it managed to hit the human body.

Additionally, the man had the backing of the Mo family, so when he confronted Fang Yuan he had no fear, and was wholeheartedly trying to show off his worth to his masters so that he could be rewarded and deemed more useful to the family.

“Young lad, you sure are courageous huh?” The middle-aged man's tone was turning unfriendly as he folded up his sleeves, revealing his well-toned and muscular forearms. His two arms were large and full of scars. The forearms had thick protruding veins and were even thicker than Fang Yuan's legs.

The inn employees watched in fear and several customers were already getting up, paying the bills and leaving this land of conflict.

“Fang Yuan has been found?” Suddenly, the door emitted a proud, loud female voice.

Mo Yan strode forward in big steps and entered the inn. Behind her were numerous family servants.

Her body figure was decent, slightly tall and had the proper curves. But a long face like a horse's, an inherited gene from the Mo bloodline, caused her looks to be greatly affected, and thus she was only a middle-upper tier beauty.

However, she wore a dark blue uniform, and a red belt, affixed with a square steel plate, tied around her waistline. The steel plate was engraved with a “2”.

Additionally, she had just returned from after a clan mission, so there was still lingering traces of the hardship that she had just gone through.

These added up to create a field of pressure and threat that was emitted to her surroundings. Thus, once she stepped into the inn, the entire place went silent under her aura.

“Your servant greets you, young Miss!” The middle-aged man changed his attitude completely upon seeing Mo Yan. He tried to smile charmingly and he bent his body as he walked a few steps and knelt on the floor, greeting Mo Yan.

Upon seeing this change in behavior, the workers in the inn could only stare in shock with their mouths wide-open.

The tall and muscular figure, as opposed to his humble groveling attitude, was a great mismatch, and was seemingly amusing. But the employees of the inn did not laugh as his behaviour only greatly showed off Mo Yan’s imposing pressure and status.

Some of the inn workers could not help but worry for Fang Yuan as he was their major customer. If something were to happen to him and made him unable to patronize the inn any further, it would be a huge loss.

More of them were secretly praying for Fang Yuan to surrender. If a fight really broke out and destroyed the inn’s property, that would be worse.

Mo Yan did not even take a look at the groveling Gao Wan; her eyes were fixed on Fang Yuan. She took a few steps forward and demanded in a fierce tone, “So you are Fang Yuan? You seem to be having a good meal. Hehehe, have you ever had a knuckle sandwich? I’ll give you a taste of it, it might be even more delicious.”

Even though she said that, Mo Yan did not make a move.

Fang Yuan’s actions were too calm. It was strange. Did he have any secret backers that were protecting him?

“But it shouldn’t be so, I’ve checked before coming. This Fang Yuan only has an uncle and aunt that dislike him, while both his parents are deceased, and he even got chased out of the house by his uncle and aunt. In addition, he only has C ranked talent, so how could such a weak young man have any sort of background?” Mo Yan thought in her mind.

Regardless of this, the situation was still too peculiar. She had to test and probe further. Fang Yuan laughed and squinted at Mo Yan, saying, “Who told you I was Gu Yue Fang Yuan?”

Mo Yan was momentarily stunned, then she took a look at Gao Wan.

He had just stood up, but upon seeing this he immediately knelt back down with sweat pouring out of his forehead. He stammered and could not give a coherent reply, “Master, your servant, your servant....”

They had a drawing of Fang Yuan, but they did not know that Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng were twins that looked almost identical.

“No wonder this young man looked like he had no fear. He is actually Fang Zheng and not Fang Yuan.” Mo Yan’s servants guessed in their minds.

“Fang Yuan cannot be compared to Fang Zheng. The former is merely a C ranked loner with no background. The latter however has A ranked talent and was pulled into the clan head’s faction at the Awakening Ceremony, and as long as he grows smoothly, he has a bright future ahead!” Mo Yan did not get proper a reply from Gao Wan, causing her to be even more hesitant.

At this point, the only ones who knew Fang Yuan’s identity were the inn employees. However, they could not afford to offend either parties so they only kept their mouths shut.

Fang Yuan was satiated from his meal. He stood up and glanced lightly at Mo Yan, “You want to find Fang Yuan? Come with me, I’ll bring you to the school hostel to look for him.”

“If the person in front of me is Fang Zheng, I would not want to offend him. However, even if he is really Fang Yuan, I will follow him closely on this trip so I have no fear of him impersonating Fang Zheng.” In an instant, Mo Yan made up her mind.

“Alright, I will go together with you to the school hostel. After you!” Mo Yan turned her body to make space for Fang Yuan, stretching out her arm and indicating for Fang Yuan to take the lead.

Fang Yuan laughed nonchalantly and strode forth. Mo Yan followed closely behind with her servants trailing at the back.

“So close!”

“They’re finally gone!”

“Even if they start fighting, it is none of our inn’s business anymore.”

The employees that were left behind all sighed in relief as they patted their chests.

A group of people approached the school hostel.

“Halt!”

“Stop right there, the school hostel only allows our clan’s Gu Masters to enter and leave.” The two guards at the door stopped Fang Yuan, Mo Yan and her gang.

“Insolent! Do you not recognize who I am? How dare you stop me!” Mo Yan stared at the two and screamed.

“We dare not,” the two guards hurriedly gestured.

“Young Miss Mo Yan, this guard holds you in high regards. However the clan rules are absolute, so how about this. You can bring one servant in. This is the most we can do for you.” An elderly guard politely responded.

Mo Yan clicked her tongue. Her heart was full of dissatisfaction, yet in the presence of the clan rules, she did not dare to break them.

The Mo family was prosperous, and thus they had many enemies. Do not forget that aside from the Mo family branch, there was also the Chi family to contend with. Apart from the Chi family, the clan head’s faction also wanted to get a hold on the Mo family.

“All of you stay behind. Gao Wan will follow me.” Thinking about it, Mo Yan gave her orders.

Gao Wan immediately held his chest up high with a look of joy on his face: “Thank you, young Miss for the opportunity!”

“Let’s go, junior.” Mo Yan smiled at Fang Yuan with a questioning look.

Fang Yuan remained unfazed as he led them in. He reached the dormitory door, opened the lock and pushed the door open.

He then took a step into the room and stopped.

Within the room, there was nothing extra. It was all simple furniture, and there was no one else.

Mo Yan stood at the doorstep, took a look inside and her face turned grim. “Junior, you better explain yourself well, there is no one in the room!”

Fang Yuan smiled faintly: “Aren’t I someone?”

Mo Yan stared at Fang Yuan, a glint flashing in her eyes as she suddenly seemed to have understood. “I am looking for Gu – Yue – Fang – Yuan!”

Fang Yuan snickered, “You know, I never said that I wasn’t Gu Yue Fang Yuan.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

“Hmm?” Mo Yan frowned, then her rage burst forth almost instantly as she suddenly understood that she had been fooled by Fang Yuan.

“You are tremendously brave to even consider lying to me!” While speaking, she stretched out her right hand to grab hold of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan stood firmly on the spot. He raised his head and laughed, “Mo Yan, you better think this through!”

Mo Yan stopped her actions. While she still stood right outside the door, her outstretched hand paused in midair and her face showed a sign of hesitation and resentment.

Within the family, there were relevant rules. Students in the dormitories were protected, and any other person would not be allowed to intrude upon the hostel to capture the students. Mo Yan only wished to teach Fang Yuan a lesson and let him bear a taste of suffering. She definitely did not want to risk getting punished for breaking the rules.

“If it’s only me who broke the rules, that would still be fine. However, if this would affect the family and even grandfather’s honour...” Thinking of this, Mo Yan reluctantly withdrew her arm. She looked at Fang Yuan who was inside the house with her bloodshot eyes. If her death-stare could be converted into fire, it would burn Fang Yuan to ashes in a second.

“I never lied to you. I said I would bring you to Fang Yuan, and now you have already found him here. It seems you have something to say to me.” Fang Yuan smiled faintly with his arms behind his back, ignoring the pressure of a Rank two Gu Master, fearlessly making eye contact with Mo Yan’s furious gaze.

He was just a step apart from Mo Yan. One stood within the house, and one stayed outside. But this same distance had also become as far as the east was from the west.

“Hehehe, oh Fang Yuan, you sure have studied the clan rules well and thoroughly.” Mo Yan, suppressing her anger, said with a sinister smile. She added, “Unfortunately for you, even while relying on the rules, all it will do for you is to stall for time. There is no way you are staying in the dormitories forever. I’ll see how long you can stand hiding in there.”

Fang Yuan laughed refreshingly and looked at Mo Yan with disdain. “Then all the more I want to see how long you can disturb me. Ah, it is already late. I have a bed to sleep in, but what about you? If I do not show up for class tomorrow and the elders come to investigate, what do you think I will say?”

“You!” Mo Yan flew into a rage, her fingers pointing at Fang Yuan, barely restraining herself, “Do you really think I wouldn’t dare come in and take you down?”

Squeak.

Fang Yuan opened the doors of the hostel wide open, his lips breaking into a grin, his eyes dark like the abyss and his tone full of confidence as if the situation was within his grasp. He challenged Mo Yan, ”Then show me.”

“Hehehe...” Mo Yan calmed down instead upon seeing this. Her eyes squinted as she looked at Fang Yuan and she said, “Do you think I’d fall for your goading?”

Fang Yuan shrugged. He had already seen through Mo Yan’s personality.

If he had closed the door, or even half shut it, Mo Yan had at least a 50% probability of breaking into the house. But when he purposely opened it fully, it had instead made her more wary and calm as a result. Thus there was barely any chance of her forcing her way in anymore.

Five hundred years of experience had already made him fully aware of the human nature and their weaknesses.

He grandly turned around, exposing his back fully to Mo Yan. If Mo Yan struck now, she would definitely be able to capture him in one swift action. However, Mo Yan stayed still outside the door as if there was an invisible mountain blocking her way.

Even after Fang Yuan sat in his bed, Mo Yan only stared at him in anger, gritting her teeth. But regardless of this, she did not make a move.

“This is the pathetic side of humans.” Fang Yuan sat up and stared at Mo Yan who was outside looking like a fool, thinking to himself, ”At times, the things preventing people from taking action is not physical difficulty, but instead it is the restrictions they have placed on themselves subconsciously.”

When comparing cultivation levels, Fang Yuan was definitely not her match at this point in time. But even with her Rank two cultivation level, she could only stare at Fang Yuan and had no courage to make a move. Her distance from him was only a few steps away, and the door was wide open with no hindrance. The only thing that was truly restricting her was none other than herself.

“Humanity sought for knowledge relentlessly to understand the world and to comprehend the rules, and ultimately to use them. If one is constantly bound by the rules, thus being restricted by the very knowledge they sought, that is the ultimate tragedy.” Fang Yuan took a final look at Mo Yan before closing his eyes and letting his consciousness sink into the primeval sea.

“This Fang Yuan dares to cultivate right in front of me! He is simply doing so as he pleases!” Looking at this sight, Mo Yan felt a sense of frustration erupting from her chest, making her almost wanting to vomit blood.

She badly wanted to go ahead and give him a few punches!

But she knew she couldn’t.

Mo Yan suddenly felt a hint of regret. Standing outside the door, she felt the awkwardness of not being able to back down.

She was indignant to give up now, but she would be devastatingly humiliated. She mobilised her servants with the intention to come and teach Fang Yuan a lesson, yet in the end she was the one who ended up becoming the laughing stock.

Especially when there was a servant looking at her now.

“Damn it! Fang Yuan is way too uncooperative! He’s too sly!” Mo Yan furiously thought and started to provoke him with all sorts of insults, hoping to force him out of the room.

“Fang Yuan you brat, come out if you’re a man!”

“Fang Yuan, as a man you must own up to your own doings. Now you’re being a coward hiding in that room, do you not feel ashamed of yourself?”

“Stop pretending to ignore me, get out if you know what’s good for you!”

“You cowardly, spineless trash!”

Fang Yuan shut his ears and did not give a single response.

After scolding for a while, instead of venting all her anger, she felt even more irritated. She was starting to feel like a clown or a shrew; blocking the door was just way too embarrassing.

“AHHHHH, this is getting to the death of me!” Mo Yan was about to go crazy, and she finally gave up on provoking Fang Yuan.

“Fang Yuan, you can hide now, but you can’t hide from me forever!” She furiously stomped the ground and left indignantly. Before leaving she gave a final order, “Gao Wan, stand there and watch him! I do not believe he will not leave the house.”

“Yes, Master!” The muscular servant, Gao Wan rapidly replied and sent Mo Yan off. Within his heart he was feeling bitter – the mountain was chilly and breezy at night. He would have to stand guard the entire time, catching a cold easily like this. It was not an easy task.

Swish swoosh......

Within the primeval sea, ebb and flow of the tides raged on.

The green copper primeval essence gathered like water, forcing a tidal wave rolling about. Under Fang Yuan’s mental guidance, the waves endlessly crashed towards the surrounding aperture walls.

A Rank one initial stage Gu Master’s aperture walls resembled a white barrier. At this time, with the green copper primeval essence crashing towards them, it produced shadows of light, creating an indescribable feeling.

Time passed gradually and the level of the green copper primeval sea slowly declined.

From the original 44%, it dropped to 12%.

“If a Gu Master wants to raise their cultivation level, they would have to expend their primeval essence to nurture the aperture. Initial stage Gu Masters have light barriers as their aperture walls, while middle stage GuMasters have water barriers as their aperture walls and for upper stage, they have stone barriers. For me to cultivate from initial stage to middle stage, I will have to nurture the light barrier into water barrier aperture walls.”

From his five hundred years of memories, Fang Yuan had complete familiarity with the current stages of cultivation, and the methods were as clear as day to him.

He slowly opened his eyes, only to see that it was already late into the night.

The crescent moon hung high in the night sky, the moonlight shining pure as water.

The door was wide open and the moonlight shone in, letting Fang Yuan think of a famous poem from Earth – On a quiet night I saw the moonlight before my couch, and wondered if it were not the frost on the ground(1).

The night winds blew with a hint of chilliness.

Fang Yuan did not have any warmth-type Gu, and with just the body of a fifteen year old, he could not help but shiver slightly.

The night in the mountain was very cold.

“Scoundrel, you finally opened your eyes. How long are you planning to be cultivating there?! Get out, you’ll be punished regardless. You beat up our young master Mo Bei, so it was only a matter of time before young Miss teaches you a lesson.” Seeing that Fang Yuan had woken up, Gao Wan who was standing at the door got his spirits up.

Fang Yuan squinted; it seemed that the Rank two female Gu Master had left?

“Scoundrel, did you hear me? Hurry and come out here! You have a room to stay in and a bed to sleep, but I had to stand here all night. If you don’t come out any time soon, don’t you believe I might just barge in?!” Seeing no reaction from Fang Yuan, Gao Wan threatened.

Fang Yuan remained unfazed.

“Scumbag, come out and surrender yourself. You’ve offended the Mo family, you will not have any good days from now on. Hurry and apologise to young Miss and maybe she might just forgive you.” Gao Wan continued to chide.

Fang Yuan did not listen to a single word. He took out a primeval stone from his storage bag and held it in his hands, finally closing his eyes again.

Seeing that he was going to continue cultivating, Gao Wan was anxious and broke into a fit. “You mere C ranked talent, the most you can achieve in life is a Rank two Gu Master! What is there to cultivate? You are no match for the entire Mo family by yourself! Kid, are you deaf? Did you listen to a single word I said?!”

(1) A famous poem from Li Bai, a Chinese poet.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan paid no heed to the man and started to multitask. He simultaneously absorbed the natural essence from the primeval stone and observed his aperture.

The primeval sea level which had originally fell drastically within the aperture, with help from the constant stream of natural essence, began to slowly rise up again. This form of recovery speed was inevitably slow, but Fang Yuan was in no hurry.

Cultivation was meant to be accumulative; it could not be rushed.

The urgent matter at hand was in fact the middle-aged servant outside the house.

After half an hour, Fang Yuan’s green copper primeval sea reached 44%, the maximum capacity it could hold. But this was not the end.

At this point the primeval sea showed a jade-green colour, this was only a Rank one initial stage green copper primeval essence. The primeval essence that Fang Yuan had previously used to nurture the aperture wall was no longer initial stage primeval essence. It had been turned into middle stage primeval essence, refined by the Liquor worm.

“Liquor worm.” With a thought from Fang Yuan, the Liquor worm within the primeval sea instantly flew out and hovered in mid-air, its body curling into a ball form, resembling a white rice ball.

Swoosh.

10% of his initial stage primeval essence was deployed and sent into the Liquor Worm’s body, and soon the essence was fully absorbed by it. Soon after, a surge of liquor mist emerged from the Liquor worm’s body and congregated into a lump.

Once more, Fang Yuan deployed 10% of his primeval essence and invested it into this liquor mist. Once the mist had been fully expended, the original 10% of initial stage primeval essence shrunk by half physically, and at the same time the colour changed from jade-green to pale-green.

This is middle-stage primeval essence.

“In order to advance in their cultivation, ordinary students all use initial stage primeval essence. However, I’ll be using middle stage primeval essence, and the efficiency is at least twice of theirs. Similarly, when using middle stage primeval essence to activate the Moonlight Gu and throw a moonblade, it will be far stronger than activating it using initial stage primeval essence.”

Only when all the primeval essence in the primeval sea had been converted to middle stage primeval essence did Fang Yuan open his eyes.

Time passes in the blink of an eye when cultivating, and at this point it was already midnight. The sky was no longer a pure black, but it had turned a deep dark-blue colour. The moon was no longer visible, and only a few lingering stars remained.

The door was open almost throughout the entire night, and a corner of the wooden door was already wet, showing a dark colour as the water tainted it.

The school hostel had this disadvantage, it was not as comfortable as an ordinary wooden lodge that was built above the ground (1), but it was directly built on the ground and thus it had high humidity.

Coming back to reality, Fang Yuan felt a chill down his spine. After sitting cross-legged for such a long time, both his legs felt numb. He opened his clenched right fist and scattered a handful of white stone powder.

This was the primeval stone after its essence had been fully absorbed, and what remained was only the leftover powder.

“After a night of cultivation, I had expended three primeval stones.” Fang Yuan calculated in his mind.

He had C ranked talent, but in order to pursue faster cultivation speed, he used primeval stones to replenish his primeval essence. What was more crucial was the Liquor worm, as it had been used to refine his middle stage primeval essence.

This had greatly increased the expenditure of his primeval stones.

“Although I plundered another sum of primeval stones yesterday, a night of cultivation cost me three stones. In this case, although it might seem that I have a lot of resources, it is unable to sustain me for a long time with my current cultivation speed, but this is the price I have to pay for pursuing cultivation speed and efficiency.”

Fang Yuan looked outside the room again, only to see Gao Wan, the muscular servant, squatting at a corner with his body curled up, seemingly fallen asleep.

“Looks like that Rank two female Gu Master had left long ago, leaving this Gao Wan here to keep a watch on me. Hehe.” Fang Yuan revealed a cold smile as he got off the bed and began to exercise his limbs.

Once his body had warmed up, he left the hostel.

“Lad, you finally decided to come out. So how about it? Obediently surrender and leave with me to kowtow and apologise to our young Miss.” Gao Wan’s ears caught Fang Yuan’s footsteps and he stood up immediately.

His muscular body was almost twice the size of Fang Yuan. The muscles in his body tightened and his brows knitted together, a pair of cruel eyes shining with evil light, resembling a starving hyena.

Fang Yuan expressionlessly walked towards him.

“Lad, you should have came out earlier. By coming out now, do you know how much The Great Me had to suffer by watching over you?” He snickered while approaching Fang Yuan, evidently planning something sinister.

At this moment, Fang Yuan lightly cried out, and with a ferocious leap he aimed both fists towards Gao Wan.

“Bastard, you’re courting death!!” Gao Wan’s face distorted with rising anger within him, raised his brick-sized fist and he punched towards Fang Yuan.

The fist was extremely powerful, slicing through air and the swooshing sound of the wind could be heard.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone clear as crystal. Seeing that the fist was approaching close, he side-stepped and turned towards Gao Wan’s rear. Stretching out a finger, he struck towards Gao Wan’s waist.

Gao Wan blocked with his retracted arm – Fang Yuan did not get a clear hit, and ended up hitting onto Gao Wan’s left forearm.

Fang Yuan’s finger felt like it had hit a steel plate, painful and numb.

“This Gao Wan has already approached the limits of a mortal’s physical prowess. Right now I can only use the Moonlight Gu to fight, and without any other Gu worms to assist me, I am not his match at basic close combat!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shone and he decided quickly to give up on attacking. Instead, he retracted a few steps and pulled some distance away from Gao Wan.

In the Gu Yue village, only the Gu Yue clansmen had the rights to cultivate as a Gu Master. The outsiders, regardless of whether they had cultivation talent or not, had no rights to attend the Awakening Ceremony.

But these mortals could train in physical combat.

Just like the Gao Wan here, although he was not a Gu Master, he had trained vigorously in his punches and kicks and his basic skill was steadfast. Additionally he was a middle-aged man, and this meant being at the physical prime in a mortal’s lifetime.

Fang Yuan, other than having the Moonlight Gu to fight, had only the body of a 15 year old teenager. Be it strength, agility or endurance, he was not Gao Wan’s match.

Martial artists like Gao Wan were sufficient enough to kill a Rank one initial stage Gu Master. Even towards a Rank one middle stage Gu Master, they still posed a certain threat.

“This lad is too sneaky!” Seeing that Fang Yuan had drawn some distance between them, Gao Wan felt anxiety within his heart.

The waist was a vital point of the body, and if it was damaged by someone through brute force, the harm was not negligible. If the force was exerted beyond a point, it could also be deadly.

Gao Wan had waited outside the hostel for the entire night, and thus his body was enshrouded by the moist atmosphere, causing his reaction speed to be slightly slower. Hence the strike earlier had almost succeeded. Fortunately, although he was a bootlicker, he had trained hard in his physical ability. So at the crucial moment his body’s reflex instinctively reacted and allowed him to narrowly block Fang Yuan’s attack.

“I can’t be careless anymore! This lad behaves like a wolf, striking harsh and deviously, getting his way whenever I am even but a little careless. No wonder young master was knocked out by him twice.” Gao Wan wiped the sweat off his forehead and swept away all hints of contempt. He started to take his opponent seriously.

“If I can capture this lad, it’d be a great accomplishment. Young Miss is sure to reward me! A Rank one initial stage’s moonblade is at max only like a small dagger, so as long as it does not hit my vital points it’ll merely be a light external injury.”

Thinking of this, Gao Wan’s heart started to beat faster. Stretching out his shovel-like hands, he grabbed at Fang Yuan.

Boom boom boom!

Fang Yuan showed no fear and approached Gao Wan to engage in close combat. Exchanging punches and kicks, taking turns attacking and defending, loud impact sounds echoed through the area.

When plundering the students, he had only used his palm with his objective being to control the crowd. But now when engaging with Gao Wan, Fang Yuan had gone all out.

At times he used his fingers to jab at the eyes, sometimes strangling the throat, hitting the jaw with the base of his palm, chopping at the back of his opponent’s head, using the knee to strike the pelvic area, or using his hands to grab at the waist.

Gao Wan’s sweat poured out like a river.

Fang Yuan’s moves were all aiming at the vital points, each strike devious and deadly as if he wanted to end Gao Wan’s life right there!

Gao Wan was a mere mortal, and unlike the Gu Masters, although he trained well in his physical combat, his vital points remained vital. Mortals were unable to train their eyelids to become steel-like. This was the limits of the mortal martial arts.

In addition, Gao Wan did not dare to unleash any deadly moves on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was a Gu Yue clansman, so killing him would incur public rage and he would be immediately executed. In fact, the Mo family will be the first to carry out his punishment. Thus his only thought was to capture Fang Yuan alive, and it would be good if he could make Fang Yuan suffer in the process of capture.

One side has apprehension while the other side had killing intent. The situation thus became Fang Yuan suppressing Gao Wan in the fight!

(1) 吊脚竹楼 – ordinary wooden lodge that was built above the ground.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan had the upper hand for now, but it could not sustain him for much longer.

Exchanging blows back and forth, he was already panting in exhaustion. In contrast, Gao Wan's breathing was still smooth and in-sync, reflecting the huge difference in stamina between the two. At the same time, as Gao Wan exercised his limbs, his body gradually heated up while his punching speed became faster and faster. The effect of the cold that caused him to be slow and numb had worn off, displaying the true skills honed by his training for decades.

“Lad, you are unable to beat me! There are clan rules stating that within the school hostel, you are forbidden from using the Moonlight Gu. You are dead meat, doomed to be my captive!” Gao Wan laughed maniacally; his fighting experience was rich, so he attempted to use words to cause Fang Yuan's fighting spirit to waver.

“In the end, I'm only just a teenager and my body that hasn't fully developed cannot be compared to this servant.” Fang Yuan's state of mind was calm as ice. Having sharpened his will for five hundred years, there was no way his fighting spirit would waver.

“Moonlight Gu!” He called out in his mind, activating his primeval essence and at the same time leaping backwards to pull away from Gao Wan.

Gao Wan wanted to chase after him, but he suddenly saw a watery-blue light emitting from Fang Yuan's palm. His face darkened and he shouted, “Lad, you are using the Gu worm to fight in the school hostel, this is against the clan rules!”

“So what if I break the rules?” Fang Yuan sneered. He learnt the clan rules and memorised it to heart, but it was not for the sake of obeying it. Immediately, his palm slashed an arc towards Gao Wan. With a ‘ching’ sound, the blue moonblade flew towards Gao Wan's face.

Gao Wan gritted his teeth as he raised both arms to cover his face, forming a protective shield. At the same time, he rushed towards Fang Yuan without pause, planning to endure the attack while ending the battle as quickly as he could.

The moonblade struck his arm. With a popping sound, his flesh and blood poured out under the moonlight, a wave of extreme pain hitting Gao Wan's nerves. The unguarded man nearly fainted from the pain.

“How can this be?!” His rush towards Fang Yuan stopped, and he frightfully found out that both his limbs had been cut open with a deep wound. Fresh blood oozed out from the wound and from the side, while bloody muscles could be observed hanging around his flesh. Even the broken white bones of the forearm could be seen.

Gao Wan was shocked beyond words. “This is impossible! A Rank one initial stage moonblade, the most it could do is to lightly injure my flesh. How could it cut through my bones? Only a Rank one middle stage can do this!!”

He had no idea. While Fang Yuan was a Rank one initial stage Gu Master, due to the Liquor worm’s refining, he possessed Rank one middle stage primeval essence.

The Moonlight Gu, activated using middle stage primeval essence, emitted a moonblade far superior to the initial stage that he originally predicted.

“This is bad, this boy is weird!!” Gao Wan who was caught off-guard had already suffered a grave injury. His fighting spirit was gone and he decisively decided to retreat.

“Are you able to escape?” Fang Yuan smiled coldly as he started to give chase, the moonblades in his hands shooting out consecutively.

“Save me!!!” Gao Wan shouted out in horror as he fled, his voice travelling far out beyond the school hostel.

“What is going on? Someone is asking for help!” The voice alerted the school hostel guards who were nearby.

“It’s the Mo Family’s young Miss, Mo Yan’s servant.” The guards who arrived stopped in their tracks upon seeing the chasing scene.

“This is only a servant, there is no need for us to risk protecting him!”

“Letting him stay here was already a favour towards the Mo Family.”

“We still have to be careful, just in case he hurts Fang Yuan in desperation.”

The anxious guards all gathered around, but no one lent a hand to Gao Wan; they only observed from the sidelines.

This servant Gao Wan, even if he died, it had nothing to do with them. However if Fang Yuan died or got hurt, it would be their responsibility.

Seeing such a sight, Gao Wan despaired, he tragically screamed, ”We are all outsiders! You cannot leave me to die!”

His blood loss was getting more severe, and his speed decreased.

Fang Yuan caught up to him, his voice cold as ice, announcing Gao Wan’s death sentence, ”Go ahead and scream! It doesn’t matter how loud you do so.”

While saying that, the blade in his arm rotated, and he fired two moonblades towards Gao Wan.

Swoosh, swoosh!

The moon blades flew towards Gao Wan’s neck. The servant lost all hope, seemingly one step away into the abyss.

The next moment, he felt that his world was spinning; he actually saw his own feet, chest, back... and that severed neck.

Afterwards, total darkness awaited him.

Gao Wan had died.

Beheaded by two moonblades, his head flew away from the impact, his body pushed back 10 meters before falling. The neck area spewed out a fountain of fresh blood, dyeing the surrounding grass a blood red.

“Murder!!!”

“Fang Yuan killed someone!”

The guards could not help but scream out. They had witnessed the entire process, and they felt a sense of extreme trepidation and terror rushing all over their body.

Fang Yuan was just a weak 15 year old teenager, but he expressionlessly murdered a strong adult. This was the power of a Gu Master!

The victory had been set. Fang Yuan slowed in his footsteps and gradually moved towards the corpse.

His face was calm, as if he had done nothing out of the ordinary. This expression further sent a shiver down the guards’ spines.

Gao Wan’s head lay on the ground, both his eyes wide open, turning in his grave.

Fang Yuan stared coldly. He raised his leg and sent the head flying.

The guards’ eyelids twitched.

Fang Yuan approached the corpse and found that it was still vibrating. The blood spread through the ground, forming a small bloody puddle. He looked at Gao Wan’s injuries with a grim expression. These injuries were deep enough to expose the secret to the fact that he had middle stage primeval essence.

Once this was exposed, it’ll be quickly deduced that he had a Liquor worm, and with that the family would naturally think of the Flower Wine Monk.

Thus, Fang Yuan had to keep this secret hidden.

“But there are too many onlookers.” Fang Yuan’s gaze swept through the nearby guards; there was more than ten of them. He had less than 10% primeval essence left, so there was no way to kill them all.

After pondering for a while, Fang Yuan bent down and raised Gao Wan’s ankle, dragging the corpse away.

“Young master Fang Yuan, you can leave this to us.” The guards controlled their fear and approached Fang Yuan, politely speaking.

The respect and politeness held a tint of obvious fear.

Fang Yuan silently looked at the guards, and they all held their breaths, looking down.

“Give me the sabre,” he stretched out his hand and lightly said.

With authority in his speech, he emitted undeniable pressure.

The guard closest to him uncontrollably handed him the sabre on his waist.

Fang Yuan took the sabre over and continued walking, leaving behind a dozen stunned guards staring after his back.

The sun rose from the east, and the first ray of light shone over the mountain peak, lighting up the school hostel.

15 year old Fang Yuan, with the scrawny body of a teenager, a pale look upon his skin.

Under the sunrise, he casually walked.

In his left hand was a shiny sabre.

In his right hand, a headless corpse.

His path left behind a trail of bright red blood traces dragged out on the road.

The guards were flabbergasted, their bodies stiff due to the frightening scene.

Even as the sunlight shone on them, they could not feel a sense of warmth and light.

Gulp.

Someone among them swallowed their saliva loudly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Did you guys hear? Fang Yuan killed someone!" A student whispered to his classmate beside him.

"I heard it too, he really killed somebody." The classmate clenched his chest with a pale face.

"There were many guards who saw him do it. Fang Yuan was chasing after that man. That guy tried to beg for mercy but Fang Yuan paid him no heed and decapitated him immediately!"

"That’s not all. After killing him, Fang Yuan didn’t even spare his headless corpse. He dragged it back to the hostel and chopped it into a meat paste."

"Are you for real?"

"I’m serious beyond belief. I came early this morning and I could still see the bloodstains left between the cracks of the green rock."

"Oh man, why would I lie to you? Earlier, the Academy Elder called Fang Yuan over for this matter."

The youths in the Academy did not pay attention to class as they held their little conversations.

To this group of 15 year olds, the concept of killing was too foreign and too scary.

They had been under the protection of the clan since a young age and had at most experienced organized sparring or simply killing chickens and dogs.

As for killing a person, it was still beyond them.

"Who did Fang Yuan kill?"

"I heard it was a family servant of the Mo branch family."

"Yup, I’m the clearest about this matter. Yesterday, I personally saw the Mo Family’s Mo Yan bring a bunch of family servants to find trouble with Fang Yuan."

"The Mo family, that’s not good. Mo Bei is in trouble now."

A number of the youths turned to look at Gu Yue Mo Bei.

Mo Bei sat on his seat with a pale face - he had only heard about the news of Fang Yuan killing someone this morning. Additionally, it was the Gao Wan that Mo Bei was familiar with. As one of the more energetic family servants, Gao Wan was good at boot licking and had also put effort into his fighting skills. He was an able lackey.

A long while ago, Gao Wan had even sparred with Mo Bei for a bit. To think that he was simply killed by Fang Yuan!

It was precisely because of this that Mo Bei felt astonished. He was full of disbelief and felt twice the shock compared to the others. However, compared to his shock, he felt a greater sense of worry and fear.

Facing a murderer like Fang Yuan, it would be a lie if Mo Bei said that he was not afraid. Actually, it was not just him - the other youngsters were afraid too. When Fang Yuan had robbed them twice previously, all of them had gotten physical with him.

"I actually fought with such a ruthless murderer? To think that I’m actually still alive." Many of them patted their chest, feeling a lingering fear.

Fang Yuan killing someone was still somewhat acceptable but the crux was that he even dissected the corpse and chopped the body into meat paste.

That was way too cruel!

The truth of such a horrifying crime had a strong impact on all of the youths’ pure and innocent minds.

Within the room, there was only the Academy Elder and Fang Yuan.

The Academy Elder sat while Fang Yuan stood. Neither of them spoke a word, causing the atmosphere to be extremely tense.

The Academy Elder silently looked at Fang Yuan and a hint of complication flashed in his eyes.

In the morning, the guards had reported to him about Fang Yuan’s murder incident. This news had made him feel both shocked and suspicious.

He was a Rank three Gu Master and was in charge of the Academy. He obviously knew the fighting strength of a Rank one initial stage Gu Master.

Fang Yuan being able to kill Gao Wan was like the weak defeating the strong.

In truth, some guards had already reported to him that Mo Yan had trapped Fang Yuan within the Academy by barging in the previous night.

Back then, he had not paid attention to the matter and had not stopped them.

He was the Academy Elder - his objective was to nurture future Gu Masters, not to protect them. As long as there were no deaths among the students, he encouraged hidden conflicts.

Mo Yan coming to find trouble with Fang Yuan was something that he was happy to see. For one, he knew that regardless of whether the fight was won or lost, it would be beneficial to Fang Yuan’s growth. Secondly, he wanted to suppress Fang Yuan’s influence.

Fang Yuan had consecutively blocked the Academy’s gates and robbed the other students. His influence was too great; it had to be suppressed.

However, he hadn’t expected that Mo Yan would return fruitlessly and that the family servant that she had left behind would be unable to beat Fang Yuan. Gao Wan even got killed by him!

In this world, strength was above all else. Killing someone was not something peculiar. Especially to a Gu Master, it was something very common.

But it was not so simple when it was a 15 year old’s first kill.

The Academy Elder vividly remembered his first killing scene. Back then, he was already a Rank two Gu Master. At the age of 19, he had killed a Gu Master from the Bai clan’s village in a conflict.

After killing the person, he vomited profusely and panicked in his heart. For a few days, he had no mood to eat and had no appetite. He could not even find peace in his sleep. The moment he shut his eyes, he would see the dead person staring angrily at him.

But looking at Fang Yuan now, his face was calm as ice. Where was the fluster? Not to mention that he had no uneasy feelings. It was almost like he had slept perfectly well last night, as if the person who killed a man was not him at all!

Especially when the Academy Elder heard more about the matter. After Fang Yuan had killed the servant, he did not spare the corpse and had even dragged it back to the dormitory to chop it into meat paste in his rage. Such vicious methods, even hearing about it was a kind of terror!

Thus, at this point, the Academy Elder looked at Fang Yuan with complicated emotions.

On one hand, he was amazed at Fang Yuan’s indifference towards life, his attitude was as steady and as cold as ice. On the other hand, he was appreciative of the fact that Fang Yuan was a born battle-freak. After familiarizing himself with the Moonlight Gu for a few days, he had managed to kill someone with it. An ordinary teenager—even those A grade talents—may not be able to achieve this. This was a talent for battle! If he was well-nurtured and fought for the clan, it would be all of their enemies’ nightmare.

Lastly, he felt worry and distressed.

Worry because after this incident, Fang Yuan’s reputation was sure to rise and it would be impossible to suppress him. Fang Yuan was way too daring; not only did he disobey the clan rules by using his Gu in the Academy, he even killed someone with it. There was a need to suppress his influence. Otherwise, how would the Elder be able to manage this Academy anymore?

Distress was because he did not know how to perfectly resolve this issue. After all, it involved the Mo family’s side.

"Fang Yuan, do you know why I called you here to meet me?" The Academy Elder used a solemn and deep voice to break the silence in the room.

"I know." Fang Yuan nodded and replied, "I used the Moonlight Gu in the Academy, breaking the clan rules. According to the rules, as it is my first offense, I should compensate thirty pieces of primeval stones as punishment."

He evaded the crucial point and did not mention Gao Wan’s death.

The Academy Elder was stunned for a second, he had not expected that Fang Yuan would answer like this.

His expression darkened as he coldly snapped, "Don’t try to blur things in front of me! I’ll ask you, what was the matter with Gao Wan’s death?"

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes and said, "Hmph, this Gao Wan went against his superiors, his intentions were vicious. Last night, not only did he block my room door, he even tried to kill me. In self-defense, I was forced to use the Moonlight Gu. Fortunately, I managed to kill this traitor. I suspect that there is a high possibility of him being a spy of the other mountain villages, I implore the elders to investigate this thoroughly!"

Upon hearing this, the Academy Elder frowned and became at a lost for words.

Now that Gao Wan was dead, Fang Yuan could say whatever he wanted. After all, Gao Wan was just an outsider, not a member of the clan. Even if he was dead, it would not matter to the Academy Elder. However, he was worried about the Mo family’s reaction. Gao Wan was their servant and he had died within the academy. The Academy Elder was in charge of the academy and had to give the Mo family an explanation.

Thinking for a bit, the Academy Elder stared at Fang Yuan and questioned, "Then let me ask you. Gao Wan’s corpse, how did you deal with it?"

Fang Yuan’s lips curled, revealing a cruel smile. "I diced Gao Wan’s corpse and put it inside a wooden box. When morning came, I put it at the Mo family’s back door."

"What?!" The Academy Elder was stunned beyond words as he almost jumped from his seat.

Not only did Fang Yuan kill their family servant, he had even chopped up the corpse and placed it at the Mo family’s back door. This was blatant provocation!

To the Academy Elder who was trying to resolve this peacefully, it was a true nightmare.

Fang Yuan was just a small Rank one Gu Master, how would the large Mo family react?

Thinking of this, the Academy Elder felt a headache as the matter had already developed out of his control. This Fang Yuan was a true troublemaker.

"Sigh, since it has already happened, there’s no point in saying anymore. Leave first, the punishment will come within these few days, you should get mentally prepared." The Academy Elder was terribly upset. He waved his hand and signaled for Fang Yuan to leave; he needed to think through this calmly to come up with a solution.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Meanwhile, at the Mo family.

"What were my instructions to you? See what you did!" In the study room, Gu Yue Mo Chen slammed the table, exploding with a rage.

Mo Yan stood opposite this old man, her head lowered. Her eyes were full of shock and rage. She had also just gotten the news that Gao Wan had been killed by Fang Yuan!

That 15 year old teenager, to think he had such methods and determination. Gao Wan was the proud servant of her Mo family and Fang Yuan’s act of killing him was a blatant showing of disrespect towards them!

"Grandpa, you don’t have to be so angry. This Gao Wan was only a servant, his death is of no concern. He isn’t a Gu Yue clan member anyways. But that Fang Yuan, he is too daring, you have to ‘look at the owner before you beat the dog’. Not only did he beat our dog but he even beat it to death!" Mo Yan said indignantly.

Gu Yue Mo Chen furiously scowled, "You still have the cheeks to say that! Have your wings grown so tough now that you don’t even put my words to heart, hmm? What I told you before, you have forgotten all about it!"

"Your granddaughter dares not!" Mo Yan jumped in shock. She knew now that her grandfather was really angry and quickly kneeled down.

Gu Yue Mo Chen pointed his finger out the window and scolded, "Hmph, so what if that servant died. But now you are still showing hostility towards Fang Yuan, this is really a matter of you being short sighted and unclear of the implications! Do you know the significance of your actions? The fight among juniors is their own business. As elders, we should not interfere. These are the rules! Now that you went to find trouble with Fang Yuan, it means you are breaking the rules. I can’t tell how many people are out there now, looking at this disgrace of our Mo family!"

"Grandpa, please calm down, anger will harm your body. It’s Mo Yan fault, I burdened the Mo family. Whatever Grandpa tells Mo Yan to do, Mo Yan will do it! But your granddaughter really cannot take this lying down, that Fang Yuan is too despicable, too shameless. First, he lied to me and entered the academy. Next, he hid in the dormitory and no matter how much I scolded him, he would not come out. Once I left, he went ahead and killed Gao Wan. He is extremely sinister and despicable!" Mo Yan reported.

"Oh, is that so?" Gu Yue Mo Chen frowned. This was the first time he had heard this information and a bright light shone across his eyes.

He took in a deep breath, suppressing his rage and he stroked his beard while saying, "I’ve heard stories about this Fang Yuan. In his early years, he was able to make poems and songs, showing early intelligence. But to think that he only had C grade talent. It was difficult for him to have a good future and thus I gave up on recruiting him. But now it seems that it’s slightly interesting."

Pausing for a second, Gu Yue Mo Chen knocked on the table and ordered, "Someone, bring that box over here."

The servant outside the door quickly obeyed. Soon, he brought in a box. The box was neither too big nor too small but it was slightly heavy. The servant used both hands to carry it and stood beside the study table.

"Grandpa, what is this?" Mo Yan stared at the wooden box and asked doubtfully.

"Why don’t you open it and take a look?" Gu Yue Mo Chen squinted his eyes and said in a complicated tone.

Mo Yan stood up, flipped over the wooden lid and looked inside.

Immediately, her facial expression changed and her pupils shrunk to a needle-like size. She could not help but take a step back and let loose an unsuppressed scream. The wooden lid in her hand also fell to the ground.

Without the wooden lid, the thing kept within the wooden box was shown to everyone present.

It was actually a pile of flesh and blood!

The bloody flesh was obviously sliced off piece by piece and placed into the box. Bright scarlet blood had accumulated inside. There was some pale skin and flesh, while some were long strands of intestines, mixed in with a few pieces of bones, either leg bones or the ribs. In the pool of blood at a corner, there were also two fingers and half a toe floating in it.

Blech...

Mo Yan beautiful face changed color as she took another step backwards, her stomach turning as she almost vomited on the spot.

She was Rank two Gu Master and had gone out to gain experience before. Despite that, this was the first time that she had seen such a disgusting and twisted scene even though she had killed people before.

The flesh and blood in this box were obviously the corpse of a person after being minced into pieces and stuffed in.

The scent of blood burst into the air and rapidly permeated the air immediately, filling the entire study room.

Both of the family servant’s hands shook as he carried the box, his complexion pale. Although he had seen the box earlier and vomited before, he could still feel waves of palpitation and disgust as he held it now.

Among the three people in the study room, only the family elder Gu Yue Mo Chen was unfazed. He lightly looked at the contents of the box for a moment and said to Mo Yan slowly: "This box was what Fang Yuan had placed at our family’s back door this morning."

"What, it’s really him?!" Mo Yan was extremely shocked as images of Fang Yuan showed up in her mind.

The first time she saw Fang Yuan, it was at the inn.

At that time, Fang Yuan sat near the window, quietly eating his meal. His facial features were bland and both of his eyes were dark and gloomy. His body was thin and his skin had the special paleness of a teenager.

He looked like such a normal and quiet youth. To think that he had done such a twisted and insane act!

After her initial shock came a furious rage. Mo Yan yelled, "This Fang Yuan is too outrageous, who gave him the guts to do so! To dare to do such a thing, this is a provocation towards our Mo family! I will go ahead now and bring him here to question him for his crimes!" After she said this, she headed towards the exit.

"You scoundrel, stop right there!" Gu Yue Mo Chen was angrier than she was as he grabbed an ink slab on his study desk and threw it over.

The hard and heavy ink slab hit Mo Yan’s shoulder and with a ‘bang’ it fell to the ground.

"Grandpa!" Mo Yan held her shoulder as she called out in alarm.

Gu Yue Mo Chen stood up, his finger pointing at his granddaughter as he spoke with an extremely agitated tone, "It seems like all these years of training were in vain. You have disappointed me greatly! Against a small Rank one initial stage Gu Master, not to mention you involving so many people, but even getting led by the nose by the other party. Now that you’ve let your rage get the better of you, at this point, do you still not understand the meaning behind Fang Yuan’s actions?"

"What meaning?" Mo Yan was puzzled.

Gu Yue Mo Chen snorted, "If Fang Yuan wanted to provoke us, he would have blown up this matter, so why did he place this box at the secluded back door instead of placing it at the front door where there are many people walking around?"

"Maybe he wants to reconcile with us? No, if he wanted to reconcile, wouldn’t it be better to apologise face to face? Why must he send us this box of minced corpse, this is definitely a provocation!" Mo Yan said.

Gu Yue Mo Chen shook his head, then nodded. "He wants to reconcile, but at the same time, he is also provoking us. Placing the wooden box at the back door is his intention to reconcile. Placing the corpse inside the box, that is a provocation."

"You see," The old man pointed at the box, and spoke, "This wooden box is not big, and it cannot hold a complete corpse. Therefore there can only be a portion of the corpse inside. He is trying to tell us that he does not wish to blow up this matter and wants to settle this amicably. But if our Mo Family wants to pursue this matter, he will place the remainder of the corpse at our main entrance, thoroughly blowing up the issue. By that time, it would be a losing situation for both sides. The entire clan knows that our Mo family broke the rules first, and to our Mo Family’s future head, this would be seen as him being so weak since he actually required his elder’s doting and protection."

Upon hearing these words, Mo Yan was momentarily dumbfounded. She had never expected that Fang Yuan’s actions would have such profound meaning.

"His method is really wise," Gu Yue Mo Chen said with admiration, "With just one action, he exercised both toughness and softness, capable of advancing and retreating safely. This is just a simple wooden box but it not only expresses Fang Yuan’s intention to compromise but also his ability to pose a threat to our Mo family. And it so happens that he does hold onto the weakness of our Mo family. If the Mo family’s reputation is tarnished, what follows after will be the Chi family’s attack as well as the assault from the clan leader’s side."

Mo Yan found it unbelievable. "Grandpa, aren’t you thinking too highly of him? Are you sure that he’s capable of this? He is only 15 years old."

"Too highly?" Mo Chen looked at his granddaughter unhappily. "Looks like you’ve had too smooth a life in these past few years. Fostering your arrogant attitude, you are unable to clearly see the reality. This Fang Yuan was unfazed towards danger and deceived you to enter the school. Next, he used his wisdom in the face of danger and hid within the dormitory to avoid trouble. No matter what insult you threw at him he did not respond, this is his ability to calmly endure. After you left, he killed Gao Wan immediately, this is his bravery and courage. Now he sent this box, clearly showing his wisdom and planning ability. Can you still say that I thought of him too highly?"

Mo Yan listened with wide eyes as she had not expected her grandfather to praise Fang Yuan so highly. Immediately she said indignantly, "Grandpa, he only has a C grade talent."

Gu Yue Mo Chen sighed deeply, "Yes, he is only a C grade. Having such wisdom and yet only C grade talent, it really is a pity. As long as his talent was higher, even if it was just a B grade, he would certainly become an influential member of our Gu Yue clan. What a pity, he is only a C grade."

The old man’s sigh was full of emotion. His sigh held both regret and at the same time rejoice.

Mo Yan was silent and in her mind, Fang Yuan’s image appeared once again. Under her psychological influence, Fang Yuan’s frail expression was shrouded by a layer of mysterious and vicious shadow.

"This problem was created by you single-handedly. How are you going to settle it?" Gu Yue Mo Chen broke the silence as he started to test Mo Yan.

Mo Yan pondered for a while before she replied in a cold and aloof tone, "Gao Wan was just a servant, so there are no implications even if he dies. Fang Yuan is just a C grade, so he is also a small matter. What’s important is maintaining my Mo family’s reputation. To appease this matter, we might as well kill Gao Wan’s entire family to show the entire clan our attitude to protect the rules and regulations."

"Mmm, you’re able to think of the big picture. Setting aside your personal emotions to defend the interests of family, this is very good. However, your method is still flawed." Gu Yue Mo Chen analyzed her response.

"Please enlighten me, Grandpa," Mo Yan implored.

Gu Yue Mo Chen said solemnly, "This matter was instigated by you, so I shall punish you with seven days of confinement. From now on, do not find trouble with Fang Yuan again. Gao Wan defied his superiors - a servant who dares to offend his master deserves death, so he should have been executed for his crimes! Because he is a servant of the Mo family, we are responsible for our inability to educate our subordinate and thus we shall compensate that Fang Yuan with thirty primeval stones. As for Gao Wan’s family members, give them fifty primeval stones as compensation and expel them from the clan."

After a short pause, he continued, "For the next seven days, rest well at home, do not go out. At the same time, think about the profound meaning of why Grandpa chose to handle the matter this way."

"Yes, Grandpa."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

From the layers of dark clouds in the sky, the spring rain fell.

The raindrops were thin like hair. As they fell, they enveloped Qing Mao Mountain in a layer of fine mist.

The dining hall on the first floor of the inn was rather empty. There were only four tables of guests.

Fang Yuan sat at a seat by the window. A gust of wind blew, bringing with it a poetic atmosphere and the scent of flowers.

"The light rain from the sky is sleek and crisp, the color of grass is seen from afar but disappears when close." Fang Yuan looked outside through a window and quoted a poem lightly before he turned his sights back to the inn.

Before him was a table filled with good wine and dishes. The color, smell and taste were all top notch. Especially the green bamboo wine which oozed with the fragrance of alcohol along with a hint of freshness. The dark green colored liquor sat quietly in the bamboo cup. From his angle, it shone with an amber-like luster.

A grandfather and his grandson were sitting at the table nearest to him. Being mortal humans, they wore modest clothes.

The grandfather sipped his rice wine while looking enviously at Fang Yuan. He was evidently attracted to the green bamboo wine but could not afford it.

The grandson ate his braised beans, a crunching sound emitting from his mouth as he chewed. At the same time, he pestered his grandfather, shaking his arm. "Grandpa, grandpa, tell me about the story of Ren Zu. If you don’t tell me, I’ll report to grandma that you secretly came out to drink!"

"Sigh, I can’t even drink in peace." The grandfather sighed but his face showed a doting expression towards the child. With his twig-like arm, he patted the boy’s head, "Then let me tell you the story of Ren Zu who gave his heart to the Hope Gu, escaping his predicament of being captured..."

Ren Zu’s story was the most popular and widespread tale in this world, as well as the most ancient legend.

The old man’s story was something like this.

The story mentioned that Ren Zu was able to escape his predicament because of hope. But eventually he grew old and without Strength and Wisdom, he could no longer continue to hunt. Even his teeth fell off, making him unable to chew many wild fruits and vegetables.

Ren Zu felt death slowly approaching.

At this time, the Hope Gu said to him, "Human, you must not die. If you die, your heart will be lost and I will lose my only place of residence."

Ren Zu was helpless. "Who wishes to die? But if the heavens and earth want me dead, I have no choice."

The Hope Gu said, "There’s always hope in everything. As long as you can catch a Longevity Gu, you will be able to increase your lifespan."

Ren Zu had heard of the existence of the Longevity Gu long ago but he waved his hand helplessly. "When the Longevity Gu stays still, nobody can detect it and when it flies, it is faster than light. How can I possibly catch it? It’s too hard!"

The Hope Gu then told Ren Zu a secret, "Human, don’t give up hope no matter what. Let me tell you, on the northwest corner of this continent, there is a huge mountain. On the mountain, there is a cave and in that cave, there is a pair of round and square Gu worms. As long as you can subdue them, there is no Gu in this world that you cannot catch, including the Longevity Gu!"

Ren Zu had no choice, this was his last remaining hope.

He braved all difficulties and finally found the mountain. He then risked his life and ventured through countless dangers to ascend the mountain. On the mountain top, near the cave entrance, he used his last remaining strength to slowly make his way in.

The inside of the cave was completely dark and one would not be able to even see their own fingers. Ren Zu walked in the darkness. Sometimes, he would bump into things not knowing what they were. This caused himself to get injured and wounded all over. At times, he felt that this dark cave was huge beyond words as if this was a world of its own. He felt as if he was the only person in the area.

He spent a lot of time but he could not walk out of the darkness. Not to mention subduing the two Gu worms.

Just when he was at a loss about what to do, two voices spoke to him from the darkness.

One voice said, "Human, you’re here to catch us? Go back, for even if you had the Strength Gu, it would be impossible."

The other said, "Human, go back, we will not take your life. Even if you had the Wisdom Gu to help you, you may not be able to find us.

Ren Zu laid exhausted on the ground, panting. "The Strength and Wisdom Gu had left me long ago and I do not have much lifespan left so I’m at my wits end. But as long as there’s hope in my heart, I will not give up!"

Hearing Ren Zu’s words, the two voices went silent.

After a while, one of the Gu said, "I understand, human, you have already given your heart to the Hope Gu. You will not give up no matter what."

The other continued, "In that case, we shall give you a chance. As long as you can say our name, we will allow you to use us."

Ren Zu was stunned. To find their names among all the words in the world, it was akin to finding a needle in a haystack.

Furthermore, he did not even know how many words were in their names.

Ren Zu quickly asked the Hope Gu, but it did not know either.

Ren Zu had no alternatives and had no choice but to randomly guess their names. He said many many names and wasted a lot of time but the darkness did not respond to him so evidently he was wrong.

Eventually, Ren Zu’s breath got weaker as he turned from an old man into a dying man. It was like the scene of the evening’s setting sun. The sun that would slowly descending had already been lowered halfway across the horizon, becoming a sunset.

The food he had brought was gradually reduced, his brain becoming slower and he barely had any energy to speak anymore.

The voice in the darkness urged, "Human, you are almost dead, so we will let you go. Using your remaining time, you can climb out of the cave and take a final look at the world. But you have offended us, and as punishment, the Hope Gu shall stay here as our companion."

Ren Zu clenched his heart and rejected, "Even if I die, I will not give up hope!"

The Hope Gu was very touched and answered Ren Zu’s call enthusiastically, emitting a bright light. At Ren Zu’s chest area, a light began to shine. But this light was too weak, it could not illuminate the darkness. In fact, it could not even cover Ren Zu’s entire body, but only engulfed his chest area.

Yet Ren Zu could feel a renewed surge of energy gushing into his body from the Hope Gu.

He continued to speak, shouting out names. But he was already muddled. A lot of names had already been said but he could not remember that and repeated them, wasting a lot of effort in the process.

As time continued to flow, Ren Zu’s lifespan was almost over.

Finally, when he was on his final day, he said out the word ‘Regulation’.

A sigh came from the darkness as a voice spoke, "Human, I admire your perseverance. You have said my name, so from today onwards, I will obey your commands. But only with my brother can I aid you in capturing all the Gu in the world. Otherwise, with my ability alone, it is impossible. Thus, you should give up. You’re almost dead, you might as well use this chance to take a final look at the world."

Ren Zu was determined and shook his head, he made use of all his time to continue saying out names as he tried to guess the other Gu worm’s name.

Seconds and minutes went by and soon he only had one hour left.

But at this time, he unknowingly said the word ‘Rule’.

Immediately, the darkness dissipated.

The two Gus appeared before him. As the Hope Gu had said, one was cubic, called ‘Regulations’. The other was spherical, called ‘Rules’. Together, they made up ‘Rules and Regulations’.

The two Gu said together, "No matter who it is, as long as they know our names, we will listen to them. Human, since you know our names already, we will be at your service. But you must remember, it is important to not let others know of our names. The more people that know our names, the more people we have to obey them. Now that you are the first to subdue us, tell us your request."

Ren Zu was overjoyed. "Then I order you both, go and catch me a Longevity Gu."

The Rules and Regulations Gu worked together and captured an eighty-year Longevity Gu.

Ren Zu was already a hundred years old but after consuming this Gu, the wrinkles on his face vanished and his frail limbs became muscular again. A vibrant aura of youth oozed from him.

With a belly flop, he jumped up onto his feet.

He ecstatically looked at his body, knowing that he had regained the body of a twenty year old!

"That’s all for today, let’s go home, grandson." The old man, having completed the story, finished his wine as well.

"Grandpa, continue telling me, what happens to Ren Zu after?" The grandson was unyielding as he shook his grandfather’s arm.

"Let’s go, I’ll tell you when there’s another chance." The old man wore his straw hat and jacket, then gave his grandson another set that was a smaller size.

The two walked out of the inn, stepping into the rain and slowly vanishing from sight.

"Rules and Regulations..." Fang Yuan’s gaze was dark as he twirled his wine cup, looking at the liquor in his cup. His heart was touched.

Ren Zu’s legend was widespread throughout this world and there were almost no people who did not know of him. Fang Yuan had naturally heard of him too.

But no matter if it was a legend or a story, it was dependant on the knowledge of the reader. The grandfather and grandson earlier merely treated it as a story, but Fang Yuan could understand the deeper meaning.

Just like that Ren Zu.

When he did not know the rules and regulations, he explored in the dark. Sometimes he bumped into things, knocking into others, causing himself to get injured and look like a mess. And at times within a wider area, he got lost and confused, moving without a sense of direction or purpose.

This darkness was not purely black or the absence of light. Strength, wisdom and hope could not oppose it.

Only when Ren Zu knew of the rules and regulations and said their names did the darkness dissipate and invite light into Ren Zu’s life.

The darkness was the darkness of the rules and regulations and the light was also the light of the rules and regulations.

Fang Yuan switched his gaze from his cup and looked outside through the window.

He saw that outside the window, the sky was still dark, the greenery abundant and the pelting rain flying by like mist. Close by, the bamboo tall-houses were lined up in a row, extending far out. On the road, several people walked, their feet stained with the mud from the rain. Some of them wore grayish green straw coats, while others carried yellow oiled cloth umbrellas.

Fang Yuan concluded, "This world’s heaven and earth is like a huge chess board. All lifeforms are chess pieces, acting in accordance with their rules and regulations. The four seasons have their own rules and regulations, rotating between spring, summer, autumn, and winter. The flow of water has its own rules and regulations, flowing from high ground to low ground. Hot air has its own rules and regulations, floating upwards. Humans naturally also have their own rules and regulations."

"Everybody has their own standpoints, desires, and principles. For example, in the Gu Yu village, the servants lives are cheap while their master’s lives are noble. This is a part of rules and regulations. Because of this, Shen Cui who wants to get close to the rich and affluent is doing her best to try and escape her servant status. Gao Wan tried all means and methods to please his master, using their authorities for himself."

"As for Uncle and Aunt, they gave in to greed, wanting to hoard my parent’s inheritance. The Academy Elder wants to nurture Gu masters to maintain his position in the Academy."

"Everyone has their own rules and regulations, every profession has its own rules and regulations, and every society and group also have their own rules and regulations. Only by understanding the rules and regulations can we see the situation clearly from the side. Gone with the darkness and embrace the light, moving around the rules with much to spare."

Fang Yuan thought about his own situation, his heart already clear. "To the Mo family’s head Gu Yue Mo Chen, it is to protect his family branch’s prosperity and benefits. Mo Yan found trouble with me and that would be considered spoiling the rules, so for the sake of his family honor, he will not do anything to me. In fact, he might even compensate me."

"Actually the Mo family has great influence, so if they risk their reputation and are bent on punishing me, there is nothing I can do to resist them. However, Gu Yue Mo Chen is afraid. He is not afraid of himself breaking the rules, but he is afraid that others will follow in his footsteps. In a junior’s scuffle, if the elders interfere, it would aggravate the situation. If it involved the higher ups, it’d pose a threat to the entire mountain village. Gu Yue Mo Chen’s fear lied here. What if in future conflicts, others laid their hands on his grandson Gu Yue Mo Bei? In his entire family line there’s only one male, so what would happen if he died? This kind of fear, maybe he doesn’t realize it himself. He is only subconsciously protecting the rules."

Fang Yuan’s eyes were clear as he had the perfect grasp and understanding of the matter from start till the end.

Gao Wan’s surname was not Gu Yue. Instead, he was an outsider, a servant.

The master executing a servant was nothing to be alarmed about. In this world, it was normal.

In the case of Fang Yuan killing Gao Wan, Gao Wan’s death was not crucial. The crucial part was his master, the Mo family behind him.

"However Gu Yue Mo Chen should be able to understand my intention of compromise and threat from the time I sent a box of a minced corpse to them. This is also what I want him to think. If I’m not wrong, the Mo family will not pursue Gao Wan’s death. Of course, if I had better talent and was at least a B grade, the Mo family would feel threatened. Even with the loss of their reputation, they would want to suppress a future threat such as myself," Fang Yuan snickered in his heart.

Strength can be relied on but weakness can also be used as an advantage.

Although Fang Yuan was in the game of chess as a pawn, he was clear of the rules and regulations, thus he already had the mentality of a player.

An ordinary character would at most be like Gu Yue Mo Chen or the Academy Elder, also knowing their own rules and regulations but unsure of their non-expertise. Being like Fang Yuan, who had a clear view of the big picture and was clear of rules and regulations was extremely difficult!

To understand rules and regulations, one has to be like Ren Zu, stumbling around in the dark and wandering about aimlessly.

At this point, strength, wisdom, and hope would be useless. One must spend a lot of time going through it themselves and gaining the experience.

For Ren Zu to be able to say out the names of the Rules and Regulations Gu, this was after spending time. Under the threat of death, he had tried countless of times.

Fang Yuan was an expert in rules and regulations due to his five hundred years of experience in from past life.

After his rebirth, he believed that he could create a brilliant future. Not because of the Spring and Autumn Cicada, not because he knew many secret troves and treasures, not because he knew what the future held.

But because of the five hundred years of experience that he had gained as a person.

Just like how Ren Zu controlled the Rules and Regulations Gu and was able to easily capture all the Gu in the world!

And Fang Yuan was so familiar with rules and regulations, thus he was able to look down upon the world and see through its truths and lies. Being meticulous and precise, or getting right to the heart of the matter. I proudly laugh as I stand on top of the world, coldly looking at the people in the world who behaved like pawns, obeying their respective rules and regulations, living their lives in a straightforward manner.

The rules and regulations of the darkness is darkness, and the rules and regulations of the light is light.

But the reborn demon had stepped foot under the path of light.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The month of May was a transition between spring and summer.

The fragrance of flowers filled the air, the huge mountains evergreen and the sunlight began to gradually release its ardent side.

Under the clear azure skies, the white clouds drifted like cotton.

On Qing Mao Mountain, the bamboo forest was straight like spears as always, pointing towards the blue sky. Weeds grew wildly everywhere, and unknown varieties of wild flowers dotted the grass thicket. As the light breeze blew, the wild grass moved to and fro, the heavy fragrance of flower pollen and the smell of green grass assailing visitors.

Halfway up the mountain was a huge number of terraced fields. Layer by layer, step by step, the soft green wheat sprouts were planted down. From afar, it looked like a verdant green sea.

On the terraced fields were numerous farmers busily working away. There were some farmers cleaning the canal for the channeling of water to irrigate the fields, while some farmers were rolling up their trousers, standing in the fields and planting sprouts.

These people were naturally all mortal outsiders as the Gu Yue clansmen would never have do these lowly jobs.

Ring, ring...

The sound of camel bells could be faintly heard in the spring breeze.

The farmers straightened their bodies as they headed down the mountain, only to see a caravan moving like a colorful worm from the mountain side, slowly showing its head.

"It’s the merchant caravan!"

"Yes, it’s already May, it is about time for the caravan to come."

The adults caught on the situation at once, and the children stopped playing with the water and clay in their hands. Together, they energetically approached the caravan.

The Southern Borders had a hundred thousand mountains - Qing Mao Mountain was just one of them. On every mountain, there were villages after villages, which were maintained by everyone through their blood relationships and kinships.

In between the mountains, the forests were deep and ominous, the cliffs steep and full of the dangerous falling rocks. Additionally, in the complex surroundings of the forest dwelled a large number of ferocious beasts and peculiar Gu worms.

Mortals could not pass through at all. It was difficult to get past these obstacles alone, one had to at least be a Rank three Gu Master.

Because of the poor economy, trading was difficult. Thus, the most important form of trading was through the caravan merchants. Only by organizing a merchant group in such a large scale could Gu Masters come together with the power to help each other, conquering the difficulties in the traveling routes and traversing from one mountain to another.

The merchant caravan’s arrival was like a bowl of boiling water that poured into the peaceful and serene Qing Mao Mountain.

"All these past years they would come in April, but this year they only arrived in May. At least they’re here now." The owner of the inn let out a deep breath upon hearing the news. The inn’s business was poor in the other months, so only when the caravan came could he earn enough profit to last the year.

At the same time, there was some green bamboo wine within his storage that he could sell to the caravan merchants.

Besides the inn, the business at the tavern would also boom as a result.

The caravan merchants entered the Gu Yue mountain village one by one, lead by a Treasure Brass Toad. This toad was two and a half meters tall, its entire body orange-yellow in color. The back of the toad was thick and full of warts and knots. It was like the lumps of bronze nails on ancient city gates.

On the Treasure Brass Toad’s back, thick ropes were tied around plenty of goods. At a glance, it seemed like the toad was carrying a giant backpack.

A middle-aged man with a circular face full of pockmarks sat cross-legged atop the toad. He was fat and had a large belly. Both of his eyes formed into slits when smiling. He cupped his fists as he greeted the surrounding Gu Yue villagers.

This man’s name was Fu of the Jia clan. His cultivation was at Rank four and he was the leader of the merchant caravan this time.

The treasure toad hopped slightly as it moved forward but Jia Fu who was sitting on its head was stable and steady. When the toad hopped, his height would level with the windows on the second floor of a building. Even when he was back on the ground, he was at a height greater than the first level of the bamboo buildings.

The originally spacious streets were suddenly rather packed and narrow. The Treasure Brass Toad was like a beast that intruded into the midst of a great number of bamboo houses.

After the treasure toad was a huge fat worm. It had two eyes that were similar to multi-colored glass windows, the colors bright and gorgeous. The worm was fifteen meters long, its body shape resembling a silkworm. However, the surface of the worm was covered in a thick layer of black porcelain-like leather armor. On the armor was another abundant pile of goods and merchandise, a hemp rope tied around it. In between the gaps and intervals of the goods, Gu Masters sat one by one, some old and some young.

There were also mortals who were robust and sturdy martial warriors, slowly moving forward on the ground following after a fat black beetle.

After the fat beetle, there were ostriches with brightly colored feathers, hairy mountain spiders, winged snakes with two pairs of feathered wings and so on. However, these were in small numbers, most of the creatures were toads.

These toads were all similar to the Treasure Brass Toad, but they were smaller in size and had the build of cows and horses. The toads were carrying merchandise and people, their bellies bulging as they hopped forward.

The merchant caravan wound deep into the village.

Children on the road would look on curiously with wide eyes, calling out in joy or exclaiming in surprise.

The windows on the second stories opened one after another, the mountain villagers observing the merchants from a short distance. Some had eyes that flashed with fear and some others waved their hands to express a warm welcome.

“Old brother Jia, you came a little late this year, you must have had a hard journey.” Approaching with the identity of a clan head, Gu Yue Bo came out himself to greet the leader of this year’s merchant caravan.

As Jia Fu had the status of a Rank four Gu Master, if a Rank three elder were to be in charge of receiving him, it would be undoubtedly be seen as a kind of negligence and scorn.

Jia Fu cupped his fists and sighed, “This year’s road was rather unfavorable. On the way we bumped into a group of Secluded Blood Bats and we lost quite a few good men. Then on Jue Bi Mountain we ran into a mountain fog, and we didn’t dare to continue traveling at all. So we were delayed for quite a lot of time, and caused Brother Gu Yue to wait for quite awhile.”

As they spoke, their tones were very polite.

The Gu Yue village needed the merchant caravans every year to come and trade, and the merchant caravan also needed business to make money.

“Heh heh heh, it’s good enough that you are able to come. Please, the clan has prepared food and wine, let me host a welcoming dinner for you, old brother,” Gu Yue Bo stretched out his hand and said invitingly.

“Clan head is polite, too polite.” Jia Fu was flattered.

The merchant caravan arrived at the boundaries of the Qing Mao Mountain in the early morning, and by afternoon they were stationed in the Gu Yue Village. When it was dusk, the surroundings of the village had formed into a widespread area of temporary shops and stores. All kinds of red, blue, yellow and green lofty tents were built and every inch between the tents was squeezed with numerous little street stalls.

The night was descending, yet it was still brightly lit in the area.

An endless stream of pedestrians spilled into the area from the village. There were mortals as well as Gu Masters. The little children hopped around in high spirits, and the adults showed an expression of joy akin to celebrating a festival.

Fang Yuan moved along with the crowd, walking alone.

The crowd was bustling with activity, groups of people either surrounding the stalls or endlessly pouring in and out of the entrance of the tents.

The surroundings were filled with the shouts of merchants hawking their wares.

“Come, come, take a look. Top notch Blue Sea Cloud tea brick, drinking this tea makes one as cheerful as a fairy! Even if it’s not a person drinking, it can be used for feeding and raising tea Gu, it is a cheaply priced item for its value. One piece only costs five primeval stones!”

“Brute Force Longhorn Beetle Gu, a Gu Master who uses this Gu will be able to burst out with the strength of a cow. You can walk away, but don’t regret it!”

“Intimate Grass, high quality Intimate Grass. Everyone look at this quality, it’s as fresh as if a newly picked one. One catty for two pieces of primeval stones, very cheap price...”

As Fang Yuan heard this, his footsteps paused slightly, then he followed the sound and walked over.

He saw an ostrich pulling a handcart with two wheels. On the handcart was a heap of pastel green herbs. Every blade of grass was a meter in length, slender and long. Their average width was around that of a fingernail. On some of the pointed tips of the grass grew red heart-shaped flower buds.

The Intimate Grass was one of a Gu worm’s supplementary food type, its worth was stemmed from the fact that it could be used to pair up with a few other foods to feed a Gu worm.

For example, Fang Yuan needed to give two pieces of flower petals every meal to the Moonlight Gu when feeding it. If he mixed in a blade of Intimate Grass, the Moonlight Gu would be full just from eating one petal.

The Intimate Grass only costs two pieces of primeval stones per catty, while the moon orchid petal cost a primeval stone for every ten pieces. With a simple calculation, one would know that mixing the Intimate Grass in to feed the Gu would be more cost-effective.

“Half a month ago, because I used the Moonlight Gu in the academy to kill Gao Wan, I was fined thirty primeval stones. However the Mo family paid me thirty primeval stones later as compensation, so I didn’t really take any losses. In recent days I have robbed twice, my total number of stones amounts to 118. However, recently I continuously spent essence to refine middle stage primeval essence and nurture the four walls of my aperture, and I would use up three pieces of stones every day. Adding on the costs of feeding Gu, my own daily expenses and successively buying green bamboo wine, I have ninety-eight pieces at hand right now.”

Ever since Fang Yuan killed a person, the cruel and callous image had deeply rooted itself into the hearts of the students and for a time no one dared to challenge him. This led to his plundering becoming much easier, as every time only a very small number would dare to resist.

Fang Yuan calculated in his heart, then he moved his line of sight and continued walking deeper into the heart of the setup of temporary stores.

The Intimate Grass stall was surrounded by a group of people. They were all either Gu Masters or students, holding primeval stones in their hands as they shouted and rushed to buy it.

It was not that Fang Yuan lacked the money to buy Intimate Grass, but he had no time.

“If memory serves, that Mudskin Toad should be in that store. In my previous life there was a Gu Master who got it from gambling on the first night, hence he earned big time. I must hurry, I cannot lose a great deal through trying to save a little.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The further one walked, the more flourishing and prosperous it was. Small street vendors lessened while large tents increased in number.

There were all sorts of large tents to be seen - red, blue, green, yellow, in different shapes and sizes, several being a cylindrical shape. Some erected two door pillars at the entrance of their tents, while others hung large red lanterns instead. Inside, some tents had vibrants lights, whereas others were dim and dark.

Fang Yuan observed his surroundings as he walked, finally stopping near a grey-coloured tent.

"It’s here," he evaluated while looking at the tent; it had two pillars at the entrance, and there were carvings on the pillars, two lines of antithetical couplet(1).

The left side wrote, “Small display of courage, obtain good fortune during the four seasons.”

The right side wrote, “ Large display of skills, obtain good prosperity in all four directions.”

In the middle there was still another line: “Luck changes with time.”

That’s right, this is a gambling den.

This gambling den took around one mu(2) of land; it was considered a large-sized tent.

Fang Yuan walked inside. Inside of the tent, there was three rows of counters on a side. On the counter were pieces of amber or fossils. Some were as big as a palm, others were as big as a face. There were also others which were even bigger; those were as tall as a person. It obviously could not fit on the counter, thus it was directly placed on the ground.

Different from the other tent shops, it was silent in here.

Several Gu masters stood before the counters, some meticulously observing rocks on the display counter while others took the fossils and rubbed it in their hand to get a feel of it. There were some that were discussing quietly with their companions, and some were discussing the price with their shop clerks.

But no matter what they discussed, they spoke softly, doing their best not to disturb others.

This was a rock gambling den.

In the Gu world, there were all types of Gu, coming with different shapes and sizes and all sorts of effects. Gu worms have their respective food to consume. Without food, they can only last a short amount of time before dying.

But nature, towards lifeforms, was both uncaring and benevolent.

If they lacked food, the Gu worms still have a chance of survival. That was to hibernate, undergoing self-sealing.

For example, if the Moonlight Gu did not have Moon Orchid petals to consume, it may undergo self-sealing. It will try to maximise the conservation of its strength, like winter hibernation, falling into a deep slumber. At this time, not only would the blue glow on its body dissipate, it would also turn from a transparent crystal state into a grey rock, covered in a layer of rock shell. Eventually, the rock crust will get thicker and turn into a boulder.

Or for example the Liquor Worm, if it underwent self-sealing, it would form a white cocoon around it, curling its body and falling into a deep sleep within the cocoon.

Of course this situation of sealing and hibernating may not happen to every Gu worm. It has a small chance of occurrence, and in most cases, the Gu worm will not fall into hibernation but instead starve to death. Only a small number of Gu worms may, under specific situations, undergo self-sealing.

A few Gu Masters who accidentally obtain these sealed Gu worms’ rocks or cocoons would awaken the Gu worms that were slumbering within. Thus they would have a stroke of fortune. Some of the Gu masters became successful due to this, it being a turning point in their lives. These situations happen frequently in the Gu Master world, often being fake or real rumors, giving people hopes and dreams.

The source of the idea behind this rock gambling den originated from these rumours. Of course, these rocks all looked alike on the outside. Only after opening them can one determine if there really is a Gu worm hidden inside.

"In a small-sized rock gambling den like this, nine out of ten rocks are solid core, having no Gu worms inside. Even if there are Gu worms inside the rock, they may not be living worms, most of them are dead Gu. But once someone hits the jackpot of a live Gu, under most situations, one would be able to earn a huge fortune. If the Gu worm is a rare species, they either become a successful person in life or get murdered and robbed of their fortune."

Fang Yuan was clear about this in his heart, being very familiar with the situation beyond these doors.

In his past life, he had participated in a merchant caravan before, being a clerk in the rock gambling den. Some time later, he even operated his own rock gambling den, even larger than this one; it was a medium-sized rock gambling den. He managed to con some gamblers, and also misjudged at times, allowing other gamblers to win a precious Gu worm.

Fang Yuan stood at the door for a while, taking a glance around him before slowly walking to the counter on the left side.

Behind the counter, there was a shop assistant every few metres, both males and females. On their waist hung a green coloured belt, showing that they were not ordinary people but Rank one Gu masters. Most were initial stages, while a selected few were middle stages.

Seeing Fang Yuan before a counter, a female Gu Master who was nearest by walked towards him and smiled, softly saying, "Young master, what Gu worm do you need? Every rock on this counter is sold at ten primeval stones each. If this is your first try, just for the sake of it, why don’t you go to the right counter, the rocks there are sold at only five primeval stones. If you are seeking thrills, you can go to the high-end counter at the middle, the rocks sold there are at twenty primeval stones each.”

This was an experienced female Gu Master, having worked at the rock gambling den for quite some time already.

She looked at Fang Yuan who entered, and determined that he was a student from his appearance, age and height etc.

Those that came to gamble were all Gu Masters. Students were only considered second-rate Gu Masters, just starting their cultivation. Because they’re often tight on finance due to feeding their Gu worms, where would they find the money to come and gamble rocks?

Students like this, normally they just came to take a look and to get an eye-opening experience, satisfying their curiosity. Most were only window shoppers, though if some had well to do families, they might attempt to buy one to try. But most only bought the cheapest fossil.

Thus, the female Gu Master had no expectations towards how many rocks Fang Yuan could buy.

"Let me look around first." Fang Yuan nodded at her expressionlessly, then started to look seriously into the pile.

In his memory, it should be at this counter in this particular rock gambling den.

But it had been 500 years, it’s been too long. Many things were vague to him already, especially when 500 years of memory was a huge capacity, so to be honest Fang Yuan could not remember distinctly.

He could only vaguely recall, that during this year on the first night the caravan arrived, a lucky bird spent ten primeval stones to buy a fossil with purple gold lustre.

After he opened it on the spot, he obtained a Mudskin Toad. Afterwards this toad Gu was bought by another person, thus causing him to earn a small fortune of primeval stones.

Fang Yuan frowned after observing for a while.

On this counter, fossils with a purple gold glow numbered up to twenty. In which rock was there a hidden Mudskin Toad?

Every rock here was sold at ten primeval stones each. Right now Fang Yuan had ninety-eight primeval stones with him, and he could buy up to a maximum of nine pieces.

But realistically, he could not count like this.

In any sort of risk and gamble, one had to consider the consequences.

Fang Yuan was no longer a greenhorn, like those gamblers who thought they were blessed by heaven. Those who thought they were blessed by fate were usually those who fell under the mischief of fate itself.

"I am alone, with no relatives or friends that can help me. I have to save some primeval stones to survive, as well as to buy food for my Gu worms." He counted and under the most basic reservation, he could buy at most seven pieces of fossils.

"This rock, the purple gold is dotted like the stars, but it’s flat as a pancake, there’s definitely no mudskin toad inside."

"This piece has striking purple gold colour, but it is only fist sized. if there really is a mudskin toad inside, the rock should be at least 30% larger."

"This purple gold fossil, well it’s big, but the surface is extremely smooth, while the mudskin toad’s skin is supposed to be rough and uneven, this is evidently not the one......"

Fang Yuan continued to observe and evaluate, using the method of cancellation.

When Gu worms hibernate after self sealing, they would form into a natural fossil, being undetectable from most of the world’s detection methods. The remaining detecting methods were too rough, and once used, it would instantly kill the Gu worm within that is barely alive.

Thus, when Gu Masters choose rocks, they could only rely on their guessing, experience and luck, sometimes relying on a little bit of instinct.

Otherwise, this would not be called gambling.

Of course, in this wide wide world, there are countless wonders, and one cannot exclude the fact that a detection method which is extremely gentle exists, allowing a Gu Master to know if the rock contains a Gu worm.

Fang Yuan had heard of such rumors in his past life, but after experimenting, found that it was all lies.

Fang Yuan assumed privately, “If such a method really exists, it has to be a hidden legacy, controlled in the hands of a small number of mysterious people, having no impact on the gambling business.”

It was still tame around the Qing Mao mountain region, but the more one moves east, the more prosperous gambling dens become. At the Bai Tou(3) mountain region, every family village had its own gambling den. In some large-sized forts, there were even large-sized gambling dens built. The three villages that were famous for their rock gambling were Pan Shi (4) Village, Gu Mu (5) Village and Cang Jing (6) Village, where there were even mega-sized gambling dens.

These three mega-sized gambling dens each had a thousand years of history. Currently, their business was still blooming, with an endless number of gamblers. There had never been a situation of clean sweep by anyone.

Currently, the tent that Fang Yuan was in can only be barely qualified as a small-sized gambling den.

If it was any other 15 year old who came, they would definitely be confused by all the different fossils, and even if they chose it, it would be by random guessing.

But Fang Yuan was different.

Firstly, he already knew a portion of the answer from the start, thus his search range shrunk to less than thirty pieces.

Of course, to find that one rock out of these twenty odd pieces was extremely difficult as well. But using his 500 years of experience as backing, with such a rich pool of information he picked out six pieces of purple gold fossils that best fit the criteria after observing for a while.

He had an 80% chance of confidence that the mudskin toad was hibernating within one of these six fossils!

(1) Antithetical couplet: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Antithetical_couplet

(2) Mu (亩): 1 Mu is 666 ⅔ meters²

(3) Bai Tou directly means White Head,(4)Pan Shi is Monolith, (5)Gu Mu means Ancient Grave and (6)Cang Jing is Pale Whale.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"I want to purchase some rocks." Having picked his targets, Fang Yuan said to the female Gu Master.

“Newbie!” The female Gu Master immediately thought.

Even the shittiest gamblers would pay very close observation when they wanted to buy the rocks. First they would look carefully, then place the stones in their palms and rub to feel the surface and its weight. Even after such actions, if they find that the feeling is off, they would give up. No one would say ‘purchase’ at the start.

And for such a type like Fang Yuan, who said ‘purchase’ upfront, he is undeniably a newbie who is having his first rock gambling experience.

Although the female Gu Master thought this, she did not show any difference in her expression, but continued to smile like a flower, saying softly to Fang Yuan, "Then which piece are you choosing?"

Fang Yuan pointed and said, "This piece."

She immediately retrieved it.

Fang Yuan pointed again and said, "This piece."

She felt perplexed, not expecting this youngster to buy two pieces.

“It seems like this youngster is the type to gamble heavily,” she evaluated mentally.

But next, Fang Yuan pointed yet again, "And this piece, that piece, I’m buying them all."

The female Gu Master was stunned, feeling extremely surprised, she could not help but assess Fang Yuan again.

“It seems like this ordinary looking youngster has a really good family background. Otherwise, how would any ordinary Gu Master have the spare cash to spend like this?” Thinking of it, the female Gu Master’s smile became more gentle and friendly. To think that the youngster in front of her was a real customer.

This was an unexpected joy!

However, Fang Yuan surprised her once again as he pointed to the furthest purple gold rock, "Oh yeah, and those two pieces as well."

The female Gu Master could not help but feel shocked internally, “Which young master is this from the Gu Yue Village? It looks like he’s the main family branch’s inheritor. If I can hook up with him, I may not need to stay here and slog as a shop clerk anymore.”

With this thought, the female Gu Master’s smile became even more gentle and she even looked towards Fang Yuan seductively.

Six rocks were placed in front of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan took out sixty primeval stones and passed it to the female Gu Master.

His act of payment attracted the attention of all the other Gu Masters in the tent.

"Oh? Someone is going to rock gamble."

"We’ve been watching for over an hour, but we haven’t acted yet. Now that someone is giving it a try, we might as well watch."

"It’s a student, he actually took out sixty primeval rocks at once, his family must be affluent. He looks like a greenhorn, hmph, gambling rocks isn’t so easy. He’s gonna get hurt real bad."

The Gu Masters stood on the spot, discussing softly, all directing their gaze towards Fang Yuan.

"Young master, do you want to open the rocks on the spot? Our gambling den provides free service to open the rocks." The female Gu Master gently advised, sending seductive glances with her eyes.

Fang Yuan used the corner of his eye to take a look at the crowd, his lips curling into a mysterious smile. He waved his hand, rejecting the female Gu Master. "Purple gold is my lucky color, and this is my first time betting, it is very meaningful. I’ll open the rocks myself!"

The female Gu Master’s eyes shone brighter, thinking, this heroic demeanour, as expected of a rich young master.

Never in her dreams would she be able to imagine that Fang Yuan could be said to be kinless in Gu Yue village, a drifter with no backing, having to rely on himself for everything.

"Tsk, so what if you have money."

"I wonder which rich kid this is, coming here to waste his parent’s hard earned money!"

"Ignorant young lad, how can one choose the rocks based on lucky color, sigh, this act is simply akin to throw primeval stones into the water, and waiting to see the ripples for fun."

The Gu Masters in the tent lost their excitement at once. After thinking that Fang Yuan was a prodigal son, their already low expectations vanished into thin air.

Some Gu Masters even retracted their gaze and turn around to continue inspecting the fossils on the counter.

The changes to his surroundings did not affect Fang Yuan’s state of mind at all. He expressionlessly activated the primeval essence within his primeval sea, pouring it into the Moonlight Gu.

The next moment, the crescent mark on his right palm emitted a faint water-like blue light.

Fang Yuan used this right hand to grab a purple gold rock, holding it in his palm. Next he closed his fingers and slowly rubbed against the surface of the fossil.

The blue light continued to shine, the waves of light rippling like water as the purple gold rock shrunk in size, large amounts of powder from rock shavings falling out from the gaps of Fang Yuan’s fingers, landing on the carpet of the tent.

"Young master has good handiwork!" The female Gu Master took the chance and immediately praised.

"This youngster, he isn’t a good-for-nothing. What great skills." Seeing this sight, the Gu Masters’ eyes shone across with a complicated glint. They had started to see Fang Yuan in a new light.

Fang Yuan used the blue light to rub against the surface of the rock; this was a form of meticulous usage of the Moonlight Gu. Normally, one would have to use the Moonlight Gu for two to three years to be able to reach this level.

With Fang Yuan’s age and student identity, being able to do this is really remarkable.

"See, he’s using our Gu Yue clan’s specialty, the Moonlight Gu." Some of the Gu Masters found this and instantly felt proud, gaining affection for Fang Yuan.

"But opening the rocks with this method, it’s still too rough." Some of the older and more experienced Gu Masters shook their heads.

The purple gold rock got smaller and smaller, from being slightly larger than a palm into the size of a fist, being gripped tightly by Fang Yuan’s fingers.

The blue light intensified as the fossil became pearl-sized. Until finally, what was left was a pile of rock powder, falling on the carpet to form a small hill.

This was a solid rock, there was no Gu worm inside.

"As expected, he’s unreliable." The Gu Masters shook their heads.

"Young master, there’s still five pieces left," the female Gu Master encouraged.

Fang Yuan’s expression was calm, being completely unaffected. He grabbed the second piece of purple gold rock and continued to grind. But the result of this piece was still a solid rock; there was no Gu worm inside.

The third piece was still the same.

The Gu Masters grew impatient. "Stop looking. By relying on color to pick the rocks, there’s no point in this gamble."

"If he can get a good Gu from this, I’ll eat the pile of rock powder on the floor!" Someone laughed insultingly.

"Don’t lose heart young master, isn’t there 3 pieces left, you’re only halfway through," the female Gu Master continued to edge Fang Yuan on.

Fang Yuan grabbed the fourth piece, and when he got it to palm size, he suddenly stopped all action.

"Oh? There’s something!"

"The rock composition changed, it’s not purple gold sediments, but a kind of ink-black colour."

"Don’t tell me he really got super lucky from blinding guessing?"

The surrounding Gu Masters exclaimed lightly.

"Young master, you have to be careful from here onwards. Don’t make sudden movements, hibernating Gu worms are very fragile. If you use too much strength, you’ll kill the Gu worm inside." The female Gu Master did not expect such a situation to occur. After getting stunned for a moment, she immediately advised carefully.

Fang Yuan’s movements slowed, his fingers slowly rubbing as small powder slowly fell. Continuously repeating the action with many intervals, he was no longer as fluid as earlier.

The black coloured rock powder slowly fell off, and as the rock got smaller, Fang Yuan’s movements became slower and gentler.

On the carpet, the rock powder continued to gather as Fang Yuan’s black colored rock was finally scrapped clean.

"Sigh, what a pity, it’s a rock in a rock."

"What a waste of my emotions, I really thought there was a Gu worm inside."

"You are all too easy to fool, is rock betting so easy? Nine out of ten are all empty, how else is the shop going to make money?"

"Young master, your luck is already not bad. Getting a rock in rock the first time, normal people cannot do it." The female Gu Master tried another way to console Fang Yuan, similarly it was to pave way for the result that awaited him.

Getting nothing out of gambling rocks was very common, a nine out of ten occurrence. In her opinion, Fang Yuan was choosing at random, the chance of getting a Gu fossil was close to zero.

Fang Yuan smiled but did not reply, and he continued to take out the fifth rock.

He carefully grinded, and in ten breath’s time, the surface of purple gold coloured rock were all rubbed away, revealing a rough-surfaced yellow mud ball.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Eh?"

"Don’t tell me it’s another rock in the rock."

"By the looks of it, probably. But it’s a little strange, this mudball is enclosed by a purple gold rock surface. The mudball surface should be compressed smoothly, so why is the surface still uneven?" The surrounding Gu Masters were perplexed.

Looking at the mudball in his hands, Fang Yuan’s expression did not change, but in his heart he was slightly moved.

He continued to grind. Under the blue watery light, the powdery sand fell off. Among the powder, there were some soil crumbs mixed in it, falling onto the pile of rock powder beside his leg.

“Don’t tell me there’s really something?!” Upon seeing this, some of the Gu Masters stared with their eyes wide-opened.

“It’s hard to say,” someone spoke with an uncertain tone.

“I feel like there is, there’s really something.” Another spoke softly.

The yellow mudball gradually decreased in size due to the friction, and when it was palm-sized, someone barged into the tent. “Young lad, hold up. I, Jia Jin Sheng, will be buying it!”

Fang Yuan’s movement came to a halt, at once , the Gu Masters in the tent all focused their attention on this person.

He looked young on the outside, his appearance around twenty to twenty-five years old. He wore a golden-coloured robe with a lace belt on his waist, and on the belt there was a square shaped jade piece. There was a word across the piece of jade, showing the letter “One”.

Evidently, this was a Rank one Gu Master.

To still be a Rank one Gu Master at twenty years old, it seems that his talent isn’t good.

But the status of this person was rather unique. Seeing him, the Gu Masters in the tent all bowed and greeted him, saying together, “Your subordinate greets you, second young master.”

“Second young master?”

“He called himself Jia Jin Sheng earlier, is he the half-brother of the Merchant Caravan Leader, Jia Fu......”

“This means to say, this rock gambling den is opened by him. But now that he appeared to interfere, it seems that he’s breaking the gambling den’s rules,” the Gu Masters softly conversed.

"That’s right, I am this shop’s shopkeeper. Little brother(1), coming out to gamble at such a young age, aren’t you afraid of your family’s scolding? I will offer forty primeval stones now to buy that mudball in your hand. What do you think? Forty primeval stones is a lot already and there may not be a Gu inside, but today I am in a good mood. Thus seeing that this is your first time gambling, I don’t want you to lose everything, so I’ll give you a portion of your capital back." Jia Jin Sheng quickly walked in front of Fang Yuan and said.

“Forty primeval stones?” Fang Yuan raised his eyebrows slightly and took a look at Jia Jin Sheng with the corner of his eye, coldly laughing, “It seems you want to forcefully buy the mudball fossil in my possession? Forceful purchase is spoiling the gambling den’s rules. Furthermore you’re now on Qing Mao Mountain, you want to bully a Gu Yue clansman like me in front of everyone? “

“Oh?” On hearing Fang Yuan’s last sentence, all the other Gu Masters could not take it and animosity grew uncontrollably in them as they looked towards Fang Yuan’s direction. Their expression towards Jia Jin Sheng also became unfriendly.

Jia Jin Sheng had thought a fifteen year old like Fang Yuan would be easy to deal with, easily persuaded with a few words. But to think this Fang Yuan had such capabilities, and with a single sentence, he caused Jia Jin Sheng to be in such a predicament.

Seeing the Gu Masters getting ready to interfere, Jia Jin Sheng’s expression changed immediately as he changed his tone, quickly waving his hands, “Little brother, you’re mistaken! I am the shopkeeper of this gambling den, how could I ruin my own reputation by breaking my own rules? How would I be able to conduct business in the future? Hehehe. I just found your mudball a little interesting, thus I wanted to buy it. If you do not wish to sell it, that’s fine. But if there’s nothing inside later, don’t blame me for not reminding you.”

Fang Yuan paid no more attention to him. He turned around and continued to focus on grinding the mudball in his hands.

His movements were very slow and very meticulous. Often, there was only a hint of dry soil powder falling off after a moment or so. Following his movement, a hibernating Gu worm

gradually appeared in front of everyone’s eyes.

“My god, there really is a Gu worm!”

“He really opened a Gu!”

“What the hell, this sort of method of gambling can also work?”

“This young man’s luck is off the charts, he actually managed to forcefully luck out on getting a Gu.”

Immediately, the Gu Masters’ exasperation filled the tent.

The female Gu Master subconsciously covered her mouth, being unable to believe the scene before her.

As shop clerk, along the way she had been to many mountain villages, seen all sorts of people and all kinds of customers, but she had never seen such a comedic scene.

“There is really a Gu!” Cold light flashed across Jia Jin Sheng’s eyes as he hated and regretted in his heart. The thing he hated most, was to be taken advantage of.

This gambling den that he opened, he had placed many surveillance methods. Once a customer was about to open a Gu, he’d receive the news and would normally forcefully buy it.

But now Fang Yuan was inside his gambling den, getting a Gu under his very eyes. Jia Jin Sheng could feel his heart bleeding.

What he obtained, was a toad Gu.

Its entire body was yellow from head to foot. The belly was light yellow, and its back was brownish yellow, covered with many pimply boils, full of nodules and warts which were a distinctive characteristic of the toad species. At one glance, it looked slightly horrifying.

It was not big, being only palm-sized. Holding it in the palm was akin to holding two to three eggs.

Fang Yuan’s expression was calm under all sorts of admiration, envy and exasperation, carefully deploying his primeval essence and injecting it into the toad’s body.

At this moment, the Gu was being refined by Fang Yuan.

Gu worms obtained from within fossils are normally extremely weak. Not only do they have little to no strength left, their consciousness is also lazy, leaving them defenseless and unable to resist. Thus, they can be easily refined by the Gu masters.

Upon being awakened by Fang Yuan, the toad Gu opened its eyes slowly, and its belly slightly vibrated, softly calling out.

Croak.

Its voice was soft but it made everyone’s expression very interesting.

The difference in value between a Gu that was alive against one that was dead was huge.

“It’s a live Gu, he really opened a live Gu!!” Someone rubbed his eyes, unable to believe this.

“This is the Mudskin Toad, damn it, it really is the Mudskin Toad!” Someone recognised the toad Gu’s identity and screamed agitatedly.

“This young man really has got luck, why don’t I have such luck on my side!” Someone sighed, filled with complicated emotions such as envy, jealousy and hatred.

“Young master, congratulations! This, this, this is to date, my first time seeing such a precious Gu worm!” The female Gu Master was shocked beyond words, her eyes glistening with life.

“It’s actually the Mudskin Toad! This is a rare Rank two Gu worm, its value worth five hundred primeval stones. Damn it, damn. Someone actually managed to open such a Gu worm in my shop. I’ve lost big time, big time!” Jia Jin Sheng’s face was pale as he stared daggers at the toad, his heart having a strong urge to just snatch the Gu away.

But he knew he couldn’t, for if he really did that, it would be asking for trouble.

This was not his family’s village, but the Gu Yue clan’s territory.

“Maybe I should’ve paid a bit more primeval stones, maybe he might have given it to me. That’s right, he’s just a student. If I offered a hundred primeval stones, there’s no way he’d not be moved. Why didn’t I do that?” Jia Jin Sheng was full of regret.

“No, maybe this young lad does not know his stuff. Even though he opened a Mudskin Toad, I should be able to suppress the price and buy it!” Jia Jin Sheng’s heart had renewed hope.

But at the next moment, this hint of hope was mercilessly smashed by Fang Yuan’s words.

Fang Yuan plainly looked at the Mudskin Toad in his hands, ignoring the surrounding people’s praises and shock.

He used an extremely calm tone and said to Jia Jin Sheng, “Mudskin Toad, Rank two Gu worm, requires five hundred grams of yellow soil every meal, the more fertile the soil the better. Its species is few in number and it is the necessary main Gu in refining the Treasure Brass Toad. The market price is five hundred primeval stones. Jia Jin Sheng, do you want to buy this?”

“You, actually know so clearly......” Jia Jin Sheng mumbled. After such a shock, he could not say a word.

Fang Yuan laughed lightly and continued, “If you’re unwilling, that’s fine. I’ll sell it to someone else, I’m sure someone will be interested.”

“Hold it, wait, I’ll buy it, I’ll buy it. But can’t this price be cheaper?” Jia Jin Sheng’s smile turned bitter.

Fang Yuan turned around and walked away.

Jia Jin Sheng hurriedly chased after him. “Don’t! Don’t go! I’ll buy, I’ll buy it!”

Fang Yuan had no plans to nurture this Mudskin Toad.

It was a Rank two Gu, but Fang Yuan was still a Rank one initial stage. Although it ate yellow soil, Qing Mao Mountain was full of green soil, hence finding food for it would be troublesome.

Moreover, if he does not sell this Gu worm, Fang Yuan would have to feed three Gu worms himself. Putting aside the increased primeval stone expenditure, even the current amount of primeval stones in his possession would not be enough to feed them.

Thus, Fang Yuan’s plan was to immediately sell away the Mudskin Toad, get the five hundred primeval stones and earn a fortune.

To a Rank one initial stage like Fang Yuan, five hundred primeval stones was considered a large amount already.

The transaction was quickly completed and Fang Yuan transferred the Mudskin Toad to Jia Jin Sheng in front of the crowd, at the same time accepting five heavy money bags. Each bag had a hundred primeval stones.

Fang Yuan originally had ninety-eight primeval stones, and after spending sixty on gambling rocks, he had thirty-eight left. Now, his fortune multiplied many times, and he owned five hundred and thirty-eight primeval stones.

Upon seeing this, many Gu masters turned green with envy.

Fang Yuan put the five bags in his bosom before taking the last piece of purple gold fossil and walked out of the tent.

“Young master, you’re not opening that fossil?” The female Gu Master blinked rapidly and stared at Fang Yuan’s back, loudly reminding him.

Fang Yuan paid no heed and left the gambling den without turning back.

He left behind a gang of stunned Gu Masters, staring at each other silently.

Jin Jia Sheng calling Fang Yuan little brother is a way of greeting; they are not related in any way.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The green copper primeval sea had tides rising and falling, ebbing and flowing.

Above the sea level, the Liquor worm curled into a ball, emitting the wine vapour that gradually developed into white mist.

A surge of primeval essence with a “swoosh”, rushed up against the tide and into the wine mist. When the tide receded, there was already half left, and the colour was even darker. From initial stage jade green(1), it had converted into middle stage pale green.

Middle stage primeval essence fell into the sea, but it did not mix with the initial stage primeval essence. As if it was denser, it sank to the bottom.

Thus, the situation became that the upper layer of the primeval sea was filled with initial stage primeval essence, while the lower half was middle stage primeval essence.

As time flowed, the wine mist circulated within the aperture. Under the refinement of the Liquor worm, eventually, the initial stage primeval essence continued to decrease, while the middle stage primeval essence gradually increased.

It could be seen with the naked eye where the lower layer middle stage primeval essence gradually rose, while the upper layer initial stage primeval essence continued to decrease, but also rose in sea level.

As Fang Yuan refined his primeval essence, he extracted the natural essence from the primeval stones at the same time, quickly replenishing the dwindling primeval essence in his aperture.

Finally, the 45% primeval sea in his aperture was fully refined into middle stage primeval essence.

“Much thanks to the middle stage primeval essence, or else I would not have been able to open the rocks five times in the gambling den.” Sitting in a lotus position on his bed, Fang Yuan gradually opened his eyes.

It was currently late at night.

After he walked out of the gambling den, he did not tour around any of the other shops, but instead headed back to the academy.

Although it was at the fringe of the Gu Yue Mountain Village, as a Rank one initial stage Gu master, owning five hundred and thirty eight primeval stones is still too much.

This is not only because the primeval stones were heavy and a hassle to bring around. It also attracts other people’s coveting; in another sense, it would endanger his life.

If there was a Rank one upper stage, or even a Rank two who coveted his assets, with Fang Yuan’s current ability he would not be able to contend.

“Wealth comes and goes, but humans die because of wealth, it’s pathetic. What’s laughable is that many people in this world cannot comprehend that. The boat of benefits carries many people, but has also sunk many others.” Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a cold smirk as he looked at the grey white primeval stones in his hands.

A complete primeval stone was around the size of a duck egg. But the stone in his hand, as it had been extracted of half of its essence, was an entire circle smaller.

Fang Yuan did not regret it.

Everything has its gains and losses. Fang Yuan was only a C grade talent, yet he was using the Liquor Gu to refine his primeval essence, and his primeval stones expenditure was multiple times of the people of his age. Yet it was because of this that he was able to overcome the lack of his talent. If the real cultivation pace could be counted, he would be able to rank first three.

Fang Yuan put the primeval stones back into his money bag and took out that final purple gold fossil.

He bought a total of six fossils at the gambling den and opened five on the spot, bringing the last one back with him.

His eyes shone as he activated the Moonlight Gu, grinding with five fingers, slowly dissecting the rock.

The purple gold fossil gradually shrunk under the blue ripples, and finally was grinded to nothingness, leaving behind a pile of powder on the ground.

Fang Yuan was not surprised, because in rock gambling, you lose nine out of ten times.

Even with his five hundred years of experience, he could only manage eight losses out of ten times. And in the remaining two times, it depended on whether it was a live Gu or a dead Gu.

Dead Gu had basically no value. As for live Gu, they might not be a rare type of Gu worm, and even if it was a tremendously precious Gu, one might attract a life-threatening crisis because of it.

Fang Yuan’s current cultivation level was still very low, it was at the bottom tier of the Gu Masters. The Mudskin Toad that he obtained earlier, if it weren’t for the fact that this was the Gu Yue Mountain Village, it might have been forcefully snatched away by that Jia Jin Sheng.

Gambling was never the way for developing family wealth, and in fact it was a bigger cause of bankruptcy and debt. This was not the development path that Fang Yuan wanted to take.

Although the final purple gold fossil did not have a Gu worm, Fang Yuan was not disappointed. In fact he looked at the pile of rock powder and gradually broke into a smile.

Indeed, his ultimate motive in entering the gambling den was all for this pile of rock powder. That Mudskin Toad was only something he had gotten out of convenience.

He privately opened the fossil, and other than him, nobody knew the truth of this result.

From that day forth, he could claim that the Liquor worm was awakened and subdued from the purple gold fossil.

This idea was fabulous.

Firstly, nobody could confirm what Gu worm really exists in the fossils. Who would dare say that the Liquor worm could not hibernate within the purple gold fossil? That’s completely possible!

Secondly, he had several eyewitnesses. He opened the Mudskin Toad, which would’ve left a strong impression on the Gu Masters in the gambling den.

Thirdly, even if someone relentlessly questioned him, he could push everything onto his luck. Luck was something unfathomable. Even if someone suspected that this was the Flower Wine Monk’s Liquor worm, against an excuse like ‘luck’ they’d have no idea how to argue against Fang Yuan.

Within the dark room, Fang Yuan’s expression was ominous.

One-sided covering up was akin to covering fire with paper. There would be a day where he would be exposed.

To get rid of a hidden threat like the Liquor worm, he’d have to strike first. This is Fang Yuan’s style.

Moreover, he had thought about it carefully, and in the cultivation process that was to follow, he would need to expose the Liquor worm.

“For a Rank one Gu like the Liquor worm, it is extremely precious to Rank one Gu Masters. But for Rank two Gu Masters, it is no longer compatible for them. Thus even if this was exposed, all I would get is some attention, but it would not affect the overall situation, thus becoming nothing to be concerned over. It is not like the Spring and Autumn Cicada. If the Spring and Autumn Cicada is exposed, I might die a horrible death at the very next moment.”

Five hundred years of experience in handling problems had already made Fang Yuan extremely familiar with human mentality, with their every thought clear as day to him.

“The Flower Wine Traveler’s legacy and the Mudskin Toad, among my memories these are the only two treasures here, and now that they have been obtained by me, what I can do next is only gradual and steadfast cultivation.”

Fang Yuan sighed a deep breath and relaxed his body, feeling a strong sense of fatigue engulfing him.

A Gu Master’s primeval sea cultivation could not replace sleep.

Fang Yuan pulled his blanket and lay down on his bed, his eyes still half open.

Although there were five hundred primeval stones hidden under the bed, as well as many pots of Green Bamboo Wine, he still felt a sense of urgency and danger.

These five hundred over primeval stones were already a form of limit. From flourish to decline, Fang Yuan was clear that henceforth his primeval stone expenditure would only get bigger.

But his income was mostly from extorting his classmates.

He had been increasingly feeling the growth and improvement of his classmates. Especially in the recent few extortions, Gu Yue Mo Chen, Chi Chen, and his brother Gu Yue Fang Zheng, had greatly improved in their kicks and punches. Previously he only needed one or two strikes to take them down, but now he needed five or six.

“Another three to four plunders, and their punches and kicks would’ve been polished fully. If they challenge me one by one, with my current stamina, I cannot endure that kind of round robin battle. Five hundred primeval stones might seem a lot, but with my current expenditure of four stones a day, it is actually not that much.”

“Qing Mao Mountain already has no treasures left, but nearby on the Bai Gu(2) Mountain, there is a secretly built strength inheritance of a Rank four Gu Master of the righteous path.

“Sigh, it still boils down to the Flower Wine Monk’s treasure being too little, only giving me a Liquor worm. Hmm... there is still that film image wall, maybe I can sell it to a certain merchant in the caravan...”

Fang Yuan thought as his eyelids grew heavier until he finally fell asleep.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

On the second day in the afternoon during lunch break, Fang Yuan went to the shopping district outside the mountain village again.

As many of them had to work in the day, there was not many villagers at the tentage area.

Fang Yuan walked to the area where the vendor was selling Intimate Grass last night, according to his memory. He reached only to see an empty cart, still on the spot. An ostrich was dragging the cart along.

It stood on the spot proudly, its body size as large as an ostrich while having the appearance of a chicken, the back of the creature bulged into a curved angle. A pair of wide wings were collected on the side of its body, the feathers splendidly bright in seven colours. The chicken head was raised tall, its huge red cockscomb like an agate crown, flashing with the luster of a gem under the sunlight.

“It seems I was still too late, the Intimate Grass was sold out. What a pity, if I were able to buy a few catty of Intimate Grass, I’d be able to save quite a bit of primeval stones.” Fang Yuan’s footsteps came to a halt as he walked away and continued to venture deeper into the area.

“Come, have a taste of the delicious wine from all the different villages. There are more than a hundred types of wine here, like the Lantern Grass Wine, the Nine Tune Wine with a strong aftertaste, the light and elegant Ancient Dragon Well, the sweet and sour Flower Rock Tune, the mouth-watering Hundred Spring Old Cellar, the rich and heavy fragrant Intoxication of Three Autumns......” In front of a blue round bucket before the tent, a shop assistant was hawking with gusto.

A light flashed through Fang Yuan’s gaze as he immediately grew interested. With a turn, he entered the wine shop.

The decor in the wine shop was very unique.

At the most inner part of the tent, there was a long counter. A Gu Master was stationed there, with tens of crystal ladybugs around the size of wicker-baskets behind him, sticking onto the tent’s cloth walls.

On the floor there was no carpet, but rather the uncovered mountain rocks and soil. Among the soil, vibrant coloured mushrooms grew.

These mushrooms had all sorts of colours, looking round and slightly cute. Some were as large as tables, while others were short like benches. They were often distributed where a large table mushroom was surrounded by a few shorter bench mushrooms.

“This is the Innocent Mushroom, purposely grown by a Gu Master. It has the ability to absorb dust and particles in the air to purify it, and it’s a type of grass Gu.” Fang Yuan could recognise the mushroom’s origins immediately upon seeing them.

He chose one of the short mushrooms and sat down. The mushroom’s surface immediately sank down a little, making Fang Yuan feel like he was sitting on a sofa like those on Earth.

“Young master, this is the wine catalogue, would you like to take a look?” A shop assistant walked over.

Fang Yuan glanced at the wine catalogue and realised that the wine here was more expensive than the green bamboo wine.

“I’ll have a cup of monkey wine.” Fang Yuan put down the catalogue.

“A cup of monkey wine!” The shop assistant turned around and shouted.

At the counter, the Rank one Gu Master heard and immediately bent down to take out a bamboo wine cup.

Next he took the wine cup and turned around, facing the tentage. On the blue tent walls were the tens of crystal ladybugs, head facing downwards and tail facing upwards, quietly latched onto the walls as if they were merely decorations for the tent.

These crystal ladybugs were also a type of Gu. Its stomach was empty, as they were often used by Gu Masters to carry precious liquids.

Their bodies were transparent, as if they were made of crystals. From the outside, one could see that within the ladybug’s stomach, different kinds of liquor could be found.

The Gu Master quickly found the crystal ladybug that contained the monkey wine among them.

He placed the bamboo wine cup at the mouthpiece of the ladybug, and gently stroked the exoskeleton of the ladybug with his other hand.

A small amount of primeval essence entered the crystal ladybug’s body, and afterwards it opened its mouth and a gush of liquor flowed into the bamboo wine cup.

The liquor splattered around in the cup until it was full.

The Gu Master placed the bamboo wine cup which was filled with monkey wine on the counter. The shop assistant who had already been waiting for a while quickly held up the cup meticulously and walked a few steps to deliver it to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan only took a tiny sip, the monkey wine was indeed a fruit liquor, being sweet and refreshing and delicate on the palate.

He stopped drinking, but instead with a thought, Fang Yuan summoned the Liquor worm.

The white and fat liquor worm turned into a flash of white light and curved an arc in the air. With a ‘plop’, it landed in the wine cup.

The wine splattered everywhere, sprinkling onto the mushroom table.

The Liquor worm joyfully beat about in the wine cup, and the monkey wine could be seen decreasing with the naked eye. In a few breaths time, the cup had dried out, with not a single drop left.

“It’s the Liquor worm!” The Gu Master at the counter shouted, his eyes sparkling. He was a Rank one Gu Master with Grade D talent, only able to follow the merchant caravan and work in this wine shop. His objective was to sightsee while finding his chances.

The Liquor worm can refine primeval essence and raise it by an entire realm. To a Rank one Gu Master, it can be said to be an extremely precious Gu worm. Isn’t this the chance he’s been painstakingly searching for?

“This young master, do you have any plans to sell this Liquor worm?” He excitedly approached, a look of sincerity in his eyes.

Fang Yuan shook his head, rejecting him with a determined attitude, getting up to leave after that.

His motive this time was to reveal the Liquor worm in his possession; he had never thought of selling it.

“Young master, young master, please hold on. I am really sincere about this, maybe we can sit down and have a discussion.” The Gu master reluctantly followed Fang Yuan to the tentage entrance but Fang Yuan did not show any response to him.

In the end he could only stand on the spot, his expression extremely regretful as he watched Fang Yuan’s rear view turn around a corner and disappear into the midst of the horizon.

......

Unconsciously, the sun gradually set as the crescent moon took its place.

In the night, the moonlight shone brightly but was overpowered by the numerous street lights in the merchant shops.

The merchant shop tonight was swarming with business. Fang Yuan was squeezed left and right as he entered, hearing all sorts of conversations inadvertently.

“The stores normally open for three days and three nights. Tonight is already the second night, by the morning of the day after, the merchant caravan would have left on their journey already. Thus, we have to hurry if we want to buy anything.”

“I saw a Golden Bell Gu yesterday, sigh, too bad it was too expensive. After haggling with the shopkeeper for a long time, it did not get any cheaper. I’ll go and take a look tonight.”

“Did you guys hear? Last night, a young man opened a Mudskin Toad and earned a profit of five hundred primeval stones!”

......

Fang Yuan listened attentively, feeling disappointment in his heart as he did not hear anything about the Liquor worm.

“The Liquor worm is only a Rank one Gu worm but it is extremely meaningful to a rank 1 Gu Master, yet it’s useless to a Rank two or Rank three Gu Master as they are unable to refine their primeval essence any further with it. Thus it is normal that no one paid attention to this. However taking the initiative to expose the matter of the Liquor worm cannot be rushed for a period of time. If I overdo it, it might end up letting the cat out of the bag.” As Fang Yuan walked, he pondered silently in his heart.

At this point, there was a hustle in front of him.

Next, Fang Yuan heard someone shout, “Quickly come and see, there’s a dishonest merchant here selling fake Gu to our clansmen!”

Anger stirred among the crowd.

“Oh? There’s something like that happening.”

“Go and see quickly, which shop dares to cheat our clansmen!”

Fang Yuan followed the crowd and moved towards the commotion as well.

What met his eyes were a group of people surrounding the mouth of a large red tent, the massive crowd swarming it. Some were curiously watching while others stared coldly, but most of the people were enshrouded with a sense of anger.

Outside the tent stood two people.

One of them was a young Rank two Gu Master, whose attire showed that he was obviously from the Gu Yue clan.

The other person had a familiar face - it was the owner of the gambling den, Jia Jin Sheng.

The young Gu Master held a black Gu worm in his hands, raising it up and shouting to the crowd, “My clansmen, this person in front of me sold me a fake Gu yesterday. Lying to me that it was a Black Boar Gu, and sold it to me for two hundred and fifty primeval stones. To think that when I got home to refine it, I realized that it was not a Black Boar Gu but simply an ordinary stinky fat worm!”

Jia Jin Sheng laughed coldly, “Don’t accuse me falsely. Since when did I tell you it was a Black Boar Gu? What proof do you have?”

The young Gu Master on seeing Jia Jin Sheng’s denial, fell into a rage and grabbed Jia Jin Sheng’s wrist, “You cunning merchant, you dare to deny it! You actually dare to lie to me of the Gu Yue clan on Qing Mao Mountain itself, are you trying to look for death?!”

“Let go of me!” Jia Jin Sheng was also furious as he flicked his wrist, slapping away the young Gu Master’s hand, “If you want to find trouble and extort money, you should find a better target. I am not afraid of you! My brother is Jia Fu, a Rank four Gu Master, what can you do to me?”

“You!” The young Gu Master stared with his eyes wide, but did not dare to take action. The name of a Rank four Gu Master was enough to intimidate him.

“Bah!” Jia Jin Sheng spat on the ground, raising his head and looked at the young Gu Master, laughing in disdain, “It was you who wanted to take advantage of the cheap Gu. Didn’t you use your brain to think, why a Black Boar Gu which can raise a Gu master’s strength, being such a rare Gu worm, was sold even more cheaply than a Liquor worm? It is normally sold at six hundred primeval stones. Did you think that you could buy one for just two hundred and fifty primeval stones? Dream on!”

“Bastard......” The young Gu Master gritted his teeth, his face flushing red as he trembled out of anger, his chest burning with the rage of humiliation.

There were chatters among the people as they got restless, discussing furiously. But no one dared to step up, for the Rank four Gu Master status of Jia Fu was like a giant hill in front of them, stabilizing the crowd.

“This lad is too vicious, what a cunning merchant!”

“No wonder he dared to be so arrogant on Qing Mao Mountain, he is actually Jia Fu’s little brother.”

“I heard that they are just half-brothers, but even with that Rank one cultivation, he is able to use this relationship to act unrestrained in the caravan.”

“What happened here exactly?” At this moment, a loud voice spoke out.

“Jia Fu is here!”

“The leader is here to settle the dispute, everyone give way.”

The discussion came to a halt as everyone separated and formed a narrow path between them.

A middle-aged Gu Master having a muscular short body coupled with a giant belly, walked in. He wore a long-sleeved yellow robe, being the leader of the merchant caravan, Jia Fu.

“Sir Jia Fu, my regards.” The young Gu Master was furious but did not dare to say anything. He forced himself to endure the anger and paid respects to Jia Fu.

Jia Jin Sheng was frozen on the spot, not expecting his brother to arrive, his face suddenly pale as anger flashed across his eyes.

This peculiar expression was captured by Fang Yuan who was observing from afar as he pondered about the situation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

“Hello, young Gu Master, what is the problem here?” Jia Fu walked to the middle of the crowd and asked amicably.

The young Gu Master was flattered and he cupped his fists again. Looking at the surrounding clansmen, he bucked up his courage and explained the entire situation.

“So that’s what happened!” Jia Fu nodded while listening. Next, he asked Jia Jin Sheng, “Little brother, is this true?”

Jia Jin Sheng turned his head away and snorted coldly, not looking at his brother.

Jia Fu pondered solemnly.

The surrounding people were silent, not daring to interrupt his thoughts. All awaited in anticipation of his verdict.

This matter was in fact, due to Jia Jin Sheng’s scam, but the young Gu Master was also at fault for being greedy and not being vigilant himself, otherwise he would not have gotten cheated.

If Jia Fu wanted to defend his brother, with his Rank four cultivation, even the Gu Yue clan leader could not do anything.

Jia Fu thought for a while before finally speaking. “I’ve understood the situation, my brother is at fault for this matter, causing this young man to suffer a loss and buy fake products, I am really sorry!” Saying so, he cupped his fists towards the young Gu Master.

“Sir Jia Fu!” The young Gu Master was largely surprised, and quickly said modestly, “You are a Rank four Gu Master, I am merely a Rank two, this is too much for me, too much!”

Jia Fu waved his hand: “Hehe, this has nothing to do with cultivation levels, I act impartially regardless of ability. A wrong is a wrong, I apologise to you on behalf of the merchant caravan. As for compensation, how about this, you lost two hundred and fifty primeval stones, so I will compensate double that amount to you on behalf of the Jia family.”

He executed his promise immediately, as a follower took out five money bags and handed it to the young Gu Master in public.

Every money bag was filled to the brim, each containing a hundred primeval stones.

The young Gu Master took over the money bag, so overwhelmed that he could not say anything.

“However, I have a word of advice to you.” Jia Fu continued and reminded, “A Black Boar Gu is very rare, for it is able to raise a Gu Master’s strength permanently. Although it is only Rank one, it is very hard to find on the market. Every time one appears in the market, it would be bought immediately. The pricing is around six hundred primeval stones. Trying to get one with two hundred and fifty primeval stones is impractical.”

“Junior has learnt his lesson!” The young Gu Master bowed deeply to Jia Fu in gratitude.

Cheers erupted from the crowd.

“Sir Jia Fu is brilliant!”

“Magnificent, as expected of Sir Jia Fu!”

“As a Rank four Gu Master, he did not make use of his status to bully the weaker party, Sir Jia Fu really is the role model of the righteous path.”

“No, no.” Jia Fu smiled, cupping his fists towards the crowd, modestly saying, “Our Jia family business bases our principles on trust and honesty. Everyone, my brother is young and foolish, liking to play pranks on others. He is actually very kind, I hope everyone can be more bearing of him, don’t take it to heart.”

The crowd’s cheers became even louder.

“Hmph!” Jia Jin Sheng’s expression was ugly as he stomped on the ground and walked into the tent. Next he walked out from the back of the tent.

Fang Yuan looked at this silently, thinking in his heart, “It seems that the image wall at the Flower Wine Monk’s place can be sold.”

The Flower Wine Monk had used a Photo-audio Gu to record the ugly acts of the 4th generation Gu Yue clan leader. Before he died, with indignance in his heart, used the Photo-audio Gu and slapped it on the wall, creating an image wall. The image wall’s images continued to loop, showing the truth to the people.

With the intention of maximizing his profits, Fang Yuan had wanted to sell this image wall long ago. He believed that the other two clan families on Qing Mao Mountain, the Bai family and Xiong family would be very interested in this image wall.

But to sell this personally would be very inappropriate. His cultivation was too weak and if he brought this image wall to the other villages, he could easily be silenced.

Even if the transaction was successful and he managed to return safely, there was no secret that would stay a secret forever, and once it was revealed to the Gu Yue’s higher-ups, he would be kicked out of the clan family at best.

In accordance to Fang Yuan’s plans, he still needed to make use of the Gu Yue clan. Thus, the safest way was to sell it to a certain merchant in the caravan. All of them were outsiders, and were not involved in the disputes among the villages, thus it was the best choice for him.

In just one day, this caravan would leave the Gu Yue mountain village and lead towards either the Xiong family or the Bai family.

Fang Yuan could reduce his risks to the minimum by selling to them; it was the safest method.

......

“One more cup!”

“Wine, where’s the wine?”

“Quickly get me the wine, are you afraid that I’m unable to pay?”

Jia Jin Sheng slammed the mushroom table as he howled.

“Young master Jia, here’s your wine!” The clerk quickly brought him his wine.

Jia Jin Sheng grabbed the bamboo cup and tilted his head and gulped the liquor.

“Good wine!” He laughed loudly, sounding coarse and bleak.

With a bang, he placed the cup on the table and howled again. “Get me another glass, I want as many as you can supply!”

The clerks did not dare to offend him and could only do as he said.

Luckily, this wine house was already full of people. Not only were the mushroom tables packed with people, even the surrounding streets were packed with people. Jia Jin Sheng’s drunkard temperament was not very peculiar in this bustling street.

Jia Jin Sheng drank cup by cup, wanting to drown his sorrows. With his back facing the crowd, no one observed that as he drank, two clear lines of tears flowed down his cheeks.

Who would know of his pain, his sorrow?

A hateful person has to have his pitiful side, conversely. Everybody had their own stories.

Amongst his brothers, he was the youngest, being the most handsome and resembling his father the most, thus being the most doted by his father. But heaven made fun of him by giving him only D grade talent.

As he grew up, he lived under the pressure of his brothers. He was indignant and wanted to resist, but with that talent, there was nothing he could do.

His father felt death approaching and wanted to split his assets. Two people were to lead a merchant caravan. They pledged to break up the family property in accordance to the results.

Jia Jin Sheng wanted to rely on his own method to acquire the family assets and the recognition of his clan. But to think that he became his brother’s stepping stone once again.

When Jia Fu appeared, he knew he fell into a trap. This was a scheme right from the beginning. But what could he do? Once he entered this caravan, he was doomed to be Jia Fu’s fodder. Rank four and Rank one was such a huge gap that he was powerless to fight again.

“Jia Fu!” He forced this name out of his mouth, his eyes burning with the flames of hatred, he was unable to take it lying down!

“Do you wish to deal with your brother? I can help you.” At this time, he heard a voice.

Jia Jin Sheng was stunned but when he turned around, he saw that for quite a while, there was someone sitting beside him.

He shook his head and blinked a few times, finally seeing who it was.

Who else if not for Fang Yuan?

“It’s you!” He stared at Fang Yuan, slightly angry, “I remember you! Lucky lad, getting a Mudskin Toad from my gambling den! You’re here to mock me?”

Fang Yuan looked at Jia Jin Sheng, his eyes cold as water. “I have a huge business, so if you wish to acquire better results and get more assets, why not listen to me?”

Jia Jin Sheng was suspicious. His back straightened and he sat up, “How do you know about the matter of the assets?”

This secret was not easily known to outsiders, but Fang Yuan was easily able to guess it.

“The Jia family’s business is not top secret, how can it evade people who wish to know?” Fang Yuan laughed coldly and thought of a memory from his previous life.

The Jia family head was a legendary figure who started from scratch. He made his fortune through the merchant caravans and revived the Jia family’s village. He gradually got old, and when he could feel that his time was up, he got his children to form a caravan in twos and according to their results, split the assets. The better they did, the more family assets they get.

But his eldest son Jia Fu and second son Jia Gui were extremely talented. After competing for six to seven years, they still could not come to a conclusion, and even after the family head died, there was no clear victor.

After the Jia family head died, there was an enormous amount of assets. While competing for the assets, the two brothers’ conflict escalated and both called in external help, causing a large scale Gu competition. Finally, the both of them died. The Jia family that had prospered quickly also failed quickly, causing people to talk about it in amazement.

Jia Jin Sheng squinted his eyes, for Fang Yuan’s explanation was irrefutable. He thought, from the time his father declared the asset distribution, it had already been two years. There are no impenetrable walls in the world, so even if someone found out about it, it’s nothing strange.

His real worry was whether this was another trap by Jia Fu. But no matter what, there was no harm listening.

Fang Yuan did not speak immediately. He surveyed the surroundings. This was the same wine cellar he came into in the afternoon. The shopkeeper operated independently, and at night, the shop was bustling with business.

Discussing here was a far safer place than a quiet environment, as it could avoid the eavesdropping of certain Gu worms.

He hooked his fingers at Jia Jin Sheng. “Lend me your ear.”

Jia Jin Sheng unhappily snorted, but still slanted his head forward.

After hearing Fang Yuan’s description, he frowned and looked at Fang Yuan coldly. “This business involves the three families on Qing Mao Mountain, and we merchants detest getting involved in other people’s disputes. Hmph, you were sent here by Jia Fu to harm me right?”

Fang Yuan had long expected for him to be suspicious. He did not bother to explain, but got up and left. “Hehe, in that case, I’ll go talk to your brother.”

Jia Jin Sheng squinted his eyes, staring at Fang Yuan. Only until Fang Yuan had left the wine shop did he lose his patience. He chased out of the tent and caught up to Fang Yuan, “Don’t go, we can have a talk.”

Fang Yuan placed both hands behind his back, staring at him from the side, coldly saying, “I know you are suspicious of me, but now that your brother has you firmly caught, you’re almost close to finished. If you choose to believe in me, there’s still hope, if not you’re doomed. Are you daring enough to take this bet?”

Jia Jin Sheng’s expression changed as he corrected and said, “Jia Fu is but only a little older, I have never acknowledged him as my brother! But you’re right, I’m taking this bet.”

Fang Yuan said solemnly, “Two thousand primeval stones, no haggling.”

Jia Jin Sheng laughed bitterly, “Too expensive, this trade involves high risk.”

“The greater the risk, the greater the rewards.” Fang Yuan shook his head, his attitude firm, “If you sell it to those two families, you will only earn much more.”

Jia Jin Sheng nodded, showing a hint of seriousness, “This I believe, for these years the Bai family has been growing fast, and an A grade talent called Bai Ning Bing has appeared recently, he has a great future ahead. Qing Mao Mountain’s situation is gradually changing. Your Gu Yue family’s dominance is wavering, and if I sell this to the Bai family, I can at least earn twice as much!”

Hearing Jia Jin Sheng’s understanding of the Qing Mao Mountain’s situation, Fang Yuan could not help but evaluate him again, thinking: ‘This Jia Jin Sheng, he is still a merchant family member after all, not those useless second generations.”

Jia Jin Sheng sighed, “Regardless of whether this is a trap, I’m jumping in. I promise you, two thousand primeval stones it is! However, I want to see the merchandise first.”

“Of course, come with me.” Fang Yuan laughed as he led the way. Jia Jin Sheng was already trapped in the urn, and the situation was fully in Fang Yuan’s grasp.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Following his memories, Fang Yuan brought Jia Jin Sheng to the cavern in the mountain.

The two entered the crack in the stone, and the path became more narrow as their vision was dyed in darkness. Jia Jin Sheng grew more vigilant as he was in an unfamiliar environment.

Finally, he could not hold it in any further, “I have a question, Jia Fu always treats people with honesty and is amicable with a good reputation. On the other hand, I lied and cheated, forcing transactions through coercion. Why did you choose to deal with me and not him?”

Fang Yuan’s voice travelled through the stone crack. “Because his cultivation is too high, so if he sees the image wall, he can choose to deal with me, or abandon the deal and just give the image wall to the Gu Yue clan head. I do not like giving the decision-making to others, furthermore I do not believe in integrity. The so-called prestigious reputation is just because the profits are small and are unable to incur his greed.”

More importantly, it was because Jia Jin Sheng’s position was special, for his cultivation was weak and he was easy to manipulate. Fang Yuan was naturally not going to mention this, of course.

“Hehe.” Jia Jin Sheng laughed dryly, his suspicions mostly gone immediately. “That last sentence really resonated within me.”

The two finally got into the secret cave.

Jia Jin Sheng saw the image wall at once, and could not help but laugh loudly, “Haha, I guessed right, you didn’t lie to me!”

Fang Yuan stood behind him, laughing lightly, not saying anything.

Jia Jin Sheng looked at the wall, seeing the changing images and the animosity between the Flower Wine Monk and the 4th generation clan leader.

He looked at it once and retracted his gaze, looking at Fang Yuan, mocking, “Your 4th generation ancestor doesn’t look that strong huh.”

Fang Yuan replied, “This is nothing. The Gu Yue clan needed a hero, thus the 4th generation became a hero. Not long after, the Bai family needs a despicable scum, so the 4th generation will become a degenerate. Hero, scum, all these are just people’s opinions.”

“Well said!” Jia Jin Sheng laughed as he surveyed the cave.

His sight was set on the corpse of the Flower Wine Monk, and he stopped for a while before saying, “What a pity, a Rank five powerhouse. You’ve gotten much benefits from him huh?”

A Rank five Gu Master’s inheritance was significant. Jia Jin Sheng’s heart beat faster upon thinking of this, and he could not help but ask.

Fang Yuan shook his head. “It’s been so long, most of the Gu are dead, I only got a Liquor worm.”

Jia Jin Sheng did not believe him. “Don’t lie to me brother, as long as this deal goes through, we are accomplices, I won’t reveal any information. Tell me honestly, what did you gain from this?”

Fang Yuan laughed coldly and did not bother replying him.

Jia Jin Sheng’s response was anticipated, and this was also why Fang Yuan chose him over Jia Fu.

Jia Jin Sheng continued to say: “At the very least, I know the Flower Wine Monk has a Thousand Li Earthwolf spider(1). That is a Rank five steed-type Gu, with a large body and is proficient in burrowing underground. The Flower Wine Monk was a demonic cultivator, and his ability to get about freely was mostly due to this Thousand Li Earthwolf spider, allowing him to escape from the righteous cultivators.”

“Oh, there’s something like that?” Fang Yuan frowned. Regarding the Flower Wine Monk, he did not have much information.

Jia Jin Sheng smugly said, “I came to your village last year and heard this legend, and I found it interesting so I went home and researched about it. The Thousand Li Earthwolf spider and Flower Wine Monk were inseparable, and in my opinion, this cave should have been dug out by the spider. Otherwise, with the Qing Mao Mountain’s rich and heavy soil, how can a cave like this form? Brother, you don’t have to conceal it anymore. The Flower Wine Monk died here so there’s definitely his Thousand Li Earthwolf spider here!”

Fang Yuan frowned even more deeply, feeling a sense of discomfort, his gaze grim, “Yes, there are no other exits here. The Thousand Li Earthwolf spider is massive, he would not have been able to squeeze out from the crack we just walked through. However, there is a possibility that the Thousand Li Earthwolf was plotted against and killed by the 4th generation. Seeing that image wall, even when the Flower Wine Monk was fighting he did not summon the Thousand Li Earthwolf spider.”

“That makes the situation even more peculiar. This cave is not formed naturally, thus it has to be created by the Flower Wine Monk. Without the Thousand Li Earthwolf spider, could there be any other methods?” Jia Jin Sheng looked at Fang Yuan suspiciously.

Fang Yuan’s frown swelled into a knot as he felt more and more uncertain. From Jia Jin Sheng’s information, he found out something: it appears as if there was a crucial point that he had missed out.

He could not help but fall into deep thoughts.

Jia Jin Sheng was thinking too, the image wall was no longer enough for him. Once he confirmed that the situation was real, he wanted to dig out the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance from Fang Yuan.

But at this time, something unexpected to the two of them happened!

The image wall which was playing endlessly, suddenly changed its image.

A gravely injured, pale bald Gu Master replaced the original video and appeared on the wall.

He weakly sprawled on the ground, his back facing the wall. His chest and limbs were deeply cut, but the strange thing was that his wounds did not bleed, as if his entire body’s blood had been drained out.

“I am the Flower Wine Monk.” The bald Gu Master laughed, his expression distorted with madness, “Future person, no matter who you are, to endure this video and let it play for nearly one hundred days, it proves that you have no good will towards the Gu Yue family. Very well, you shall be my successor! My entire inheritance is yours, but I have a condition. You must exterminate the Gu Yue clan for me. Murder the entire clan and leave no one alive!”

Jia Jin Sheng was stunned on the spot, his face frozen with shock.

“A Rank five powerhouse, the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance!”

He was stunned, and for a moment his brains were churning and thinking.

“My god! A Rank five powerhouse, what does that mean? Rank three is a family elder, Rank four is a village lord, and a Rank five is a mountain lord, able to rule over a mountain and do as he pleases! To think that in this tiny place, there is a Rank five Gu Master’s power inheritance.”

“Wait, Flower Wine Monk is a demonic cultivator, so if I inherit his powers, is it inappropriate? No, strength has nothing to do with good or evil. The Flower Wine Monk wants his successor to destroy the Gu Yue clan, but do I really have to? He’s already dead, I just have to take his inheritance and ignore those issues.”

“This is a godsend opportunity. Even with my D grade talent, if I inherit the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance, I might be able to improve my talent. Those rare talent-raising Gu worms, they might be part of the inheritance. If I inherit this fortune and become a Rank four or five Gu Master, I’d be able to contest with Jia Fu!”

“Wait! I almost forgot, there’s an outsider, what should I do?”

“Should I split the inheritance with him? No, kill him! Only by killing him can

I protect this secret. Yes, I should calm him down first, and lie that we’re going to split the treasure. Getting rid of his guard, then assaulting him and killing him here. This place is so hidden, it’s great. Even if I kill him, nobody would know.”

Although he thought of all these, it was merely a moment in real life.

Having a plan, he squinted and revealed a fake smile.

He slowly turned around and faced Fang Yuan but just as he was about to speak, he saw two blue moonblades flying towards him.

His pupils dilated into the size of a pin; the distance was too small, he could not respond in time!

“You......” His voice came to a halt.

The moonblade aimed accurately for his neck, and in an instant, his skull flew into the air, fresh blood pouring out like a fountain.

After two seconds, his corpse plopped on the ground.

The scalding blood poured on the mountain walls, dyeing the withering vines red.

“Don’t think so much when killing people.” Fang Yuan looked at the corpse plainly and then shifted his gaze towards the image wall.

“To think there was such a twist here. How interesting,” He muttered as his eyes emitted an eerie glow.

千里地狼蛛 - Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider, the Li here is chinese mile. A thousand li is 500 kilometers.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The rain crashed down heavily.

Grey clouds covered the sky, and the continuous mountains far away blended into a mass of black ink.

The rain curtain interwove the heavens and earth together.

Crack!

The sky flashed bright abruptly, and a bolt of lightning cut across the sky like a silver snake, then in an instant it was gone.

Summer was approaching, and the end of spring’s heavy rain seemed to bring about a trace of the warmth of summer.

On Qing Mao Mountain, huge expanses of jade green spear bamboo stood tall and straight, resisting the winds and rain, the bodies of the bamboo straight like a spear as ever, the tips of the bamboo pointing towards the blue sky dome.

In the Gu Yue village, row upon row of innumerable tall-pillared houses endured against the great rain’s washing. Outside the village, the caravan had already set out on their journey once again.

“The rain is heavy, take note of the pavement.”

“Don’t fall behind, Gu Masters better pull your Gu properly, especially the fat beetle, don’t block the mountain road anymore!”

“You bunch of mortal martial fighters, better open your eyes wide and pay careful attention. Lose a single thing and you’ll be paying for that!”

There was an endless stream of shouts rising and falling in succession from the merchant caravans.

After stopping over at the Gu Yue village for three days, it was time for this merchant caravan to leave the place and follow the mountain path through Qing Mao Mountain and head for their next destination.

The heavy rain cleansed the heaven and earth, and the roads surrounding the village were paved with cobblestone, this was still alright. However after around five hundred meters the roads would turn into a muddy and narrow mountain path.

The head of the proud ostrich chicken was drooping, its colourful rainbow feathers soaking wet under the rain, sticking into clumps, becoming the example of a drenched and bedraggled chicken.

The fat beetle worm moved its fat huge body, walking extremely slow forward. The rainwater beat upon its black armor, forming streams of water flow, sliding down both sides of its body onto the earth.

The shaggy mountain spider was also drenched, and its green-black coloured fur were adhered together.

On the contrary, the toad Gu were happily calling out, carrying out the load and Gu Masters, hopping forward on the mountain. And the winged snake had already put away its wings, the thick snake’s body cheerfully travelling on the muddy water.

To protect the goods and prevent them from getting drenched wet by the rainwater, the Gu Masters were showing their magical abilities at the moment.

On a few enormous fat beetles stood Gu Masters in the middle. Their two hands were raised high, each of them having a One-stretch Golden Light Worm floating in midair one inch away from their palms.

The green copper primeval essence was like stream evaporating as it concentrated into the One-stretch Golden Light Worm’s bodies. The entire Gu flashed like a golden bean, acting as the heart, supporting a tremendous faint gold coloured bubble dome.

The hemisphere-shaped bubble dome had a rather huge scope. It was able to completely cover one fat beetle worm and still have some leftover space.

As the rain smashed upon the bubble dome, it would bounce away, just like hitting on an umbrella. However this sort of One-stretch Golden Light Worm continuously consumed primeval essence, and in the long run the Rank one Gu Masters would not be able to take it anymore.

As expected, after a while, a Gu Master shouted: “No more, my primeval essence is almost exhausted, who can take over?”

“I can!” Almost simultaneously, a Gu Master rushed forward and replaced his position.

A few Gu Masters pulling the carriages or riding the mountain spiders activated the Green Silk Gu in their bodies.

Under its influence, their hair started to grow furiously.

A normal person’s hair had at least one hundred thousand strands. A hundred thousand strands of hair, each being five to six metres, intertwining and covering the Gu Master’s body along with the steed, formed an impenetrable hair raincoat.

The Green Silk Gu was a Rank one Gu worm, often used for defense. It uses 30% of green copper primeval essence to activate, and was not a continuous expenditure type like the One-stretch Golden Light Worm.

This Green Silk Gu can be combined with the Rank one Black Boar Gu to become the Rank two Black Mane Gu.

The Black Mane Gu when activated would not only involve hair on the head, but also hair on all the pores. Within a few seconds, the Gu Master’s body would gain a black mane protective armor.

The Black Mane Gu’s advancement path was the Rank three famous Gu, Steel Mane Gu.

Other than the One-stretch Golden Light Worm and Green Silk Gu, many of the caravan Gu Masters also chose the Water Spider Gu. It can be seen that there was a thin layer of blue raincoat on their bodies.

On the raincoat’s surface, the water circulated randomly. As the raindrops hit onto the raincoat, it would immediately become part of the raincoat.

Since the Gu Masters were continuously soaking under the rain, the raincoat on their bodies would grow thicker. Every now and then the Gu Masters would have to urge the Water Spider Gu and discharge away the excess water. At this moment the thick raincoats would be reduced to the original thin layer.

As for those mortal warriors, they were constantly on the move, watching over the goods on the muddy road. Most of them wore raincoats made of straw, but in their rush and confusion the straw raincoats had limited effect from avoiding the rain, so they were already drenched wet by the rainwater.

“This accursed weather!” The warriors cursed in their hearts.

In the rainy weather, the mountain trail becomes even harder to walk on.

Under this weather, martial artists might be strong physically but they are still mortals. Once their bodies are drenched by rain and coupled with intensive labour, they would easily catch a cold. Getting a serious illness was the lightest consequence, perhaps they might catch repercussions, and if they catch a certain tough disease, it might cause them to get gravely ill and abandoned on the trip itself.

If they encounter slippery roads on the mountain trails, or encounter wild beasts and Gu worms’ attacks, they might lose their lives.

The caravan may be big, and have many Gu Masters. But every time they went on a journey, there would always be a great decrease in numbers. Mortal martial artists die the most, while Gu Masters also have injuries and casualties.

If the caravan was unlucky enough to encounter large-scale migrating beasts, they might even get wiped out completely.

Other than natural disasters, there were also human-caused problems. Among the villages, there might be those who do not welcome the caravan. Some villages like to rob the outsiders.

“We’re leaving, see you next year!” Some of the Gu Masters sat on the Gu worms and turned their bodies to bid farewell.

At the entrance of the village, many people gathered as they sent the caravan off with their gazes.

“You must come again next year!” Reluctant to see them depart, the children shouted loudly.

The adults had more complicated expressions.

“The road ahead is unforeseen. In these hard times, for those who are able to come to the village next year, how many would still be familiar faces?”

“Be it at the merchant caravan or in the village, it is not easy to earn a living.”

As the caravan left further and further, as the crowd dispersed.

The cheerful and lighthearted market atmosphere had also subsequently disappeared. The original spot that had erected tents and shops was left now with a huge mess. The grass turf had been walked upon continuously by the crowd, grassroots and mud soil trampled out. The rainwater hit on its surface, immediately forming mud and numerous little pot-holes that collected muddy water. In addition to that, there was a lot of garbage left over.

Fang Yuan stood on a secluded hillside, watching the merchant caravan from far away alone. The merchant caravan was like a fat and colourful flower python, snaking through the narrow mountain road under the grey heavy rain, slowly entering the dense mountain forest.

“Ah, the heavens are sending their blessings...” Fang Yuan sighed lightly.

He held a butter yellow paper umbrella, quietly standing in the rain.

Fang Yuan wore the most plain flax cloth garment, his body slim, his skin bringing about the pale whiteness of a fifteen year old teenager, a settled clump of clean and short black hair atop his head. The ends of his hair trembled slightly in the wind under his umbrella.

While others curse the weather, he was lamenting the timely appearance of the rain.

He killed Jia Jin Sheng last night and cleaned up the scene, but because it happened so unexpectedly, there was bound to be areas of neglect. Especially with the bloody smell, because the cave is not ventilated, the smell could not disperse easily.

With this rain, it cleaned up the air and environment, greatly reducing the chances of getting exposed by smell tracking methods. The crack was bound to have a small cascade of water flowing down, and once the fresh water vapour diluted the air, he would not be exposed for the short time being.

Of course, once time passes, the chance of getting exposed increases.

In this world there were all sorts of Gu worms, and investigative methods were abundant, even Fang Yuan only knew a portion of them.

The rain produced pitter patter sounds as it hit on the yellow umbrella. Then following the shape of the umbrella, streams of water flowed down onto the limestones beneath Fang Yuan’s feet, hitting and creating splashes.

Seeing the caravan curve into a corner, completely disappearing into the forests, Fang Yuan did not show a sign of relief, but instead looked grim.

“Although Jia Jin Sheng’s cultivation was weak and had little talent, he had a special status. The caravan’s people are all busy with business, thus no one found out that he’s missing. But once some time passes, it’d definitely be found out. By then, Jia Fu would return to investigate, and the real challenge would be then.”

“The Jia family head intentionally arranged Jia Jin Sheng and Jia Fu to be on the same caravan, he had deep intentions. In terms of cultivation, they are worlds apart. In terms of cunningness, they’re also incomparable. Such an arrangement is to inflict a blow to Jia Jin Sheng and let him be clear of reality, and live life peacefully. At the same time he is testing Jia Fu’s nature, for if he is too overbearing on Jia Jin Sheng, how can he hand the position of clan head to him?”

“Jia Jin Sheng never truly understood his father’s intentions. Although he had some intelligence, he only managed to scratch the surface of a merchant’s wits, what a pity. A pity of such a good pawn piece.”

Fang Yuan felt regrettable in his heart. With five hundred years of experience, he could easily see past the surface and understand the true nature of the situation.

When he saw the dispute between the two that night, he could tell the complicated relationship between Jia Jin Sheng and Jia Fu, and thus he had a vague plan formed in his heart from then on.

In his plan, Jia Jin Sheng was a very suitable pawn. His cultivation was weak but he held a high position in the caravan, and although he had some wits, he had little experience, thus Fang Yuan could easily manipulate him.

Once controlled, this pawn would be extremely useful.

For one, he could build a strong network of smuggling through his relationship, preparing up for usurping treasures from future killings.

Secondly, Fang Yuan could hide in the background and use the image wall to stir up conflict among the Qing Mao mountain’s three families, causing a civil war and enabling him to be able to reap the rewards.

Thirdly, Fang Yuan could rely on him to make his way into the Jia family interior. The future Jia family dispute caused a large scale Gu fighting competition, it will be a huge affair with lots of benefits to gain. Fang Yuan could make use of this to acquire the greatest reward for himself.

“My cultivation is still too low, restraining me greatly in doing things. If there was a pawn for me to use, I can do some things that I cannot attempt myself, it is not only convenient but also lowers the risk of doing so. If I get exposed, I can simply discard the pawn and stay safe myself.”

“The surrounding people know the situation well and are loyal to the family, thus they aren’t good to manipulate. Only an outsider like Jia Jin Sheng can be used more efficiently to execute my plans. Unfortunately, I did not expect the Flower Wine Monk to leave behind his power inheritance.”

The Flower Wine Monk is a Rank five Gu Master, his inheritance is definitely more valuable than this pawn.

Of course, it’d be good if he could get the best of both worlds, but in face of such treasure, Jia Jin Sheng could not longer be controlled, thus he had to be discarded.

“Nothing will go smoothly forever in this world.” Fang Yuan sighed and shook his head.

The Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance appeared and disrupted Fang Yuan’s original plans. In addition, after the changes to the image wall, the videos and images were all gone, only showing a line written in blood, telling Fang Yuan to destroy the image wall and reveal a cavern entrance. Following the trail, he would be able to get the inheritance.

The blood writing only appeared for a few breaths before vanishing, and the image wall also turned back into the most ordinary mountain wall.

Fang Yuan spent the entire night cleaning up the murder scene, and had no time to break the wall.

“Killing Jia Jin Sheng in a hurry, this would leave many problems for me in the future, and I am but only temporarily safe. Although I succeeded in getting rid of the evidence, there is bound to be trouble coming for me in the future. In this case, I would have to change my way of exposing the Liquor worm. I cannot go to the secret cave behind the wall crack either. I have to stay in the mountain village for some time to anticipate investigation in the near future.”

Fang Yuan turned around and held his umbrella, walking in the rain towards the village.

“But this is fine too. I can spend a large amount of primeval stones during this period to refine to middle stage primeval essence. Using it, I can nurture my aperture and break through into the middle stage. Once I reached the middle stage, my power will double, allowing me to get the inheritance more easily and with greater confidence.”

A demonic cultivator’s inheritance was not as mild and gentle as a righteous cultivator’s, for there was often dangerous tests and tasks, and if one cannot get through, they’d have to pay the price with their life.

“The world is hard to predict, but it is precisely this that makes it interesting.” Fang Yuan smiled coldly.

The green mountain beneath the heavy rain extended continuously and unending, its green mixed with grey, appearing stifling and heavy.

A gust of wind blew, and the raindrops inclined a little, hitting onto Fang Yuan’s shoulder and attacking him with a burst of chilliness.

He thought about Jia Jin Sheng again.

Sighing in his heart, he thought, “Jia Jin Sheng, actually I... did not want to kill you.”

What a waste of a good pawn.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

It rained for four days before stopping.

The sun rose high into the sky, tearing away the rain curtain, seemingly like it was unveiling summer itself.

The breath of summer had faintly started to come around.

The weather became increasingly sunny and cloudless, sweeping away the sentimental breath of spring, and the temperatures slowly rose.

In the night of spring, the lively Dragonpill crickets had retreated, cowering away into the deep ground to lay eggs. The green spear bamboo specially found on Qing Mao Mountain had started to grow wildly, and nearly everyday it would show an obvious increase in height.

The grass and the trees began to change from emerald green into a dark green colour. The neverending green mountains started to look even more verdant and lush.

The weather was clear for thousands of miles, blue like a crystal.

Bang, bang, bang.

At the training grounds in the academy, sounds of punches and kicks could be heard.

After exchanging over ten blows, Gu Yue Mo Bei was kicked in the abdomen by Fang Yuan, taking five to six steps backwards, leaving the designated circle drawn in the arena.

The martial arts instructor stood before the stage and evaluated the situation. Seeing this, he immediately declared, "Gu Yue Mo Bei has exited the stage, Gu Yue Fang Yuan wins for the 33rd consecutive time!"

"Hmph, I lost to you again." Gu Yue Mo Bei gritted his teeth, his eyes staring right at Fang Yuan, "But don’t be arrogant. One day, I will defeat you. I can already feel it, that day is nearing!"

Fang Yuan looked at him expressionlessly, and then his eyelids drooped downwards. "That kick earlier caused you to have internal bleeding. I’d advise you to treat that injury first."

"This small injury is nothing!" Gu Yue Mo Bei was retorting halfway, when suddenly his expression changed and his throat gulped, vomiting a mouthful of blood.

His face was pale, this was the first time he suffered this level of injury! His eyes could not help but show signs of fear.

The martial arts instructor hurried over and pacified him. "Don’t worry about this level of injury, you just need to rest for a few days. Just stop practising your punches and do not do vigorous exercises during this period."

The moment he finished saying so, two healing Gu Masters who were waiting outside rushed over and meticulously helped Gu Yue Mo Bei out.

Gu Yue Mo Bei did not dare to say anything else, but he looked at Fang Yuan deeply in his eyes, filled with anger, hatred, regret and indignance.

"Mo Bei has good martial techniques, but he couldn’t beat Fang Yuan."

"Fang Yuan is too good, basically no one can beat him!"

"Mo Bei actually vomited blood, how scary. I don’t want to fight a guy like this."

"Sigh, but the instructor said today is practice combat, up on the arena! Each of us needs to go up and fight once."

The students stood outside the arena, some looking towards Fang Yuan in fear, some sighing non-stop, some were pale while others felt trepidation.

Among them, some were injured. A few held their bruised faces, some held their limbs, gasping for breath. Others laid on the ground, rubbing their thigh.

"Next!" Seeing that there were no challengers coming up, the instructor yelled.

However, no one answered. Usually those who were courageous to challenge Fang Yuan were only Gu Yue Mo Bei, Gu Yue Chi Chen and Gu Yue Fang Zheng. But these three were already beaten.

Silence swept across the students as others even retracted their steps slightly. The instructor frowned on seeing their fearful expression.

He could not help but think of the academy elder’s words: "These days, Fang Yuan has gotten too dominant, we have to suppress him. The other students cannot even raise their heads under his pressure, and if this goes on, the courage in their hearts will be simmered. Our academy nurtures courageous tigers and wolves to fight enemies, not fearful sheeps and lambs."

"What’s wrong with all of you? No matter how strong he is, Fang Yuan is only fifteen years old, he’s one of your peers! He has the same age as you, eats the same food as you and drinks the same water. He does not have three heads or six arms, he’s not a monster! Pluck up your courage and show me the pride of the Gu Yue clan within you!" The instructor yelled, trying his best to motivate the students.

"But he is too strong, we cannot beat him."

"The classmates who fought him are in such a pitiful state. Mo Bei got beaten until he vomited blood."

"Fang Yuan is getting more ruthless with his strikes, instructor, we do not dare to fight him."

The students spoke softly, weakly retorting.

The instructor was stomping with anger. These ignorant youngsters!

He was clear as a bystander. Fang Yuan had gone through thirty-three consecutive fights without any rest in the middle. Although he was constantly adjusting his breathing, his stamina had already depleted.

Fang Yuan’s attacks getting merciless proves this fact even further: He could no longer take it easy like before, he is losing control of his strength and the situation.

If someone tries harder, his fatigue will be revealed. With just a few more people, he could be defeated on the stage!

Once Fang Yuan is beaten, his dominating presence will be reduced sharply, the students courage ignited and the motive to suppress Fang Yuan achieved.

But now, the students were deterred by Fang Yuan’s tough front.

At times, what defeats a person is not a strong enemy but one’s own heart.

The instructor was anxious in his thoughts, and continued to motivate them.

But he was not good with his words. In the beginning he said these same words to ignite the hot-bloodedness in the youngsters and stirred up some challengers. But now that he had said this so many times, the youngsters are all numb already.

Fang Yuan folded his arms and stared at this coldly. Although he was standing in the center of the stage, he was acting like a complete bystander.

The instructor encouraged for ages but the students were still looking at each others, not one had moved.

The martial instructor could not help but be angry and helpless. He turned to Fang Yuan, unhappily chiding, "Fang Yuan, you’re also at fault. Your blows are getting more vicious among classmates, you should be more gentle and friendly, how can you deal such vicious blows? Be careful from now on and attack carefully. If you cause another classmate to vomit blood, I will declare your loss and evict you from the stage!"

"Instructor, you are wrong."

Fang Yuan snorted, his gaze not showing any weakness, looking right at the instructor, "Practising and fighting, we naturally have to give it our all, otherwise how can it achieve the aim of training? Don’t tell me that when we are in battle, we also have to request our enemies to be more gentle and friendly?"

The instructor flew into a rage, "Hmph, your attacks are vicious, you are harming your classmates and you dare to use twisted logic!"

"Instructor, you’re wrong again."

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, "You arranged this practice match and raised the winning prize to twenty primeval stones. Without your encouragement, would these people have gotten hurt?"

"Bastard!" The martial arts instructor was not good with words, and he pointed at Fang Yuan and scowled, "Do you still want the prize or not? If you argue any further, even if you get first place, I will declare you a loser! You are so uncooperative and antisocial, and you dare to argue with your teachers, you have no rights to claim the twenty primeval stones as reward!"

Fang Yuan laughed heartily. "It is but a competition that merely gives twenty primeval stones, do you think I give a damn?"

Saying so, he turned around and left. Under the class’ distraught gaze, he walked out of the center of arena.

Although he did not manage to sell the image wall, Fang Yuan still had several hundreds of primeval stones in his possession. Furthermore, his aim this time was not primeval stones.

"You!" Seeing Fang Yuan really walking down the stage, the instructor was stunned without words, showing an expression of shock and confusion.

A fifteen year old teenager, shouldn’t he be competitive and full of vigor?

Fang Yuan having such fighting talents, shouldn’t his character be even more so? How could he just back out of the competition like this?

Furthermore, Fang Yuan has no background, he should be tight on primeval stones. Why was the twenty primeval stones unable to attract him?

At this point, the martial arts instructor stood on the spot, unsure of what to do.

Fang Yuan did not step into the trap, but left the stage immediately.

The instructor suddenly realized: There was nothing he could do to Fang Yuan. With his status, he could not find problems with Fang Yuan directly, and force him onto the stage right?

The surrounding students retreated, maintaining a distance away from Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan stood on the grounds, with no one around him. With him as the center, the radius of five steps around him became a vacuum.

What a pity.

If they were beside Fang Yuan, they would hear Fang Yuan’s panting sound.

"My stamina is depleted," Fang Yuan sighed. Although he showed an energetic outward appearance, under his clothes, his body was slightly shivering.

After all, he was only fifteen years old and had no relevant Gu worm as support. After thirty-three matches, he was close to his limits.

Although he had his rich fighting experience from his past life, during this time, the other youngsters’ combat abilities had improved significantly. From them, Fang Yuan could already feel a strengthening sense of pressure.

This kind of pressure reflected in Fang Yuan’s attacks. His attacks got tougher as he gradually lost control of his strength. Compared to the past, when they were still too weak and he could defeat them easily, the youngsters would only end up in minor injuries. But now, his control over the arena was getting weaker, thus he had to strike harder to maintain his image.

"Experience is, after all, not omnipotent. Any thoughts or technique require a body with sufficient foundation before the value can be apparent." Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes. In actuality he had long seen through the martial instructor’s thoughts.

Fang Yuan was not surprised, as if he had expected this from the start, the academy elder’s pressure on him.

After he killed Gao Wan, the people who dared to challenge him diminished. When he extorted them, even more people oppressed by Fang Yuan’s dominance did not dare resist, and they obediently handed over their primeval stones.

After a long period, Fang Yuan’s unbeatable image would be formed. This would leave some psychological trauma in the youngsters and make them unconfident in their martial arts techniques. This was what the academy elder did not want to see. He needed Fang Yuan to motivate and force the students to improve, not to completely extinguish their passion for battle.

He wanted to see Fang Yuan’s defeat.

Once Fang Yuan was defeated, the image of invincibility that he had erected would be instantly destroyed.

At the same time, it would awaken the students’ fighting spirit. After some setbacks, it would mould their wills to be indomitable.

But to Fang Yuan, he needed this form of pressure so that he could extort primeval stones with greater ease.

If he was defeated, the youngsters would realize his weakness and attack together at once. Although Fang Yuan had ample of primeval stones in his hands, extortion was his main source of income. Without this source, he would be digging into his reserves.

Thus, Fang Yuan’s appearance in the arena and thirty-three consecutive victories was merely to maintain his deterrence towards the students, and not for the twenty primeval stones reward.

If he avoided combat from the start, it would show his weakness, and if it raged on, he would expose his weakness.

"What are you all waiting for, why is nobody getting up on the stage, go on! The first prize is twenty primeval stones, you all don’t want it anymore?" The instructor yelled after snapping out of his thoughts.

The rest of the students began to get motivated.

Fang Yuan had already left the stage, and to them, it was a huge rock off their minds.

"I’ll go!"

"I’ll come!"

Two youngsters squeezed their way up the stage and began to spar.

"Sigh, if I had known this, I would have waited and not rushed up the stage. Then I would not have been throw off the stage by Fang Yuan."

"What a pity, to think Fang Yuan left."

"He’s really daring, see even the instructor is at a lost for what to do with him."

Hearing their whispers, the instructor felt his reputation crumbling. He was extremely agitated in his heart and wanted to punish Fang Yuan thoroughly. However, Fang Yuan had done nothing wrong, and leaving the stage on his own accord was allowed.

The instructor was both helpless and moody. Finally he looked at Fang Yuan and stared angrily at the latter.

Fang Yuan’s lips slightly curled up into an angle as he thought, "Such boorish methods, this instructor is a little cute."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

A pair of solemn eyes were staring at the faraway training grounds.

The academy elder stood at the window of the third storey, looking at everything that had transpired at the arena.

He frowned deeply.

The instant Fang Yuan left the stage, he felt a sense of peculiarity in his heart, not expecting Fang Yuan to do this.

"This lad, he is rather hard to catch. He is proficient in the academy’s rules, and normally will not commit any wrongdoings. Although he sleeps in class, once he is asked a question he can answer properly, leaving others with no flaws to pick on. Trying to get ahold of a weakness of his to suppress his dominance is going to be difficult."

The academy elder could not help but develop a faint sense of loathing towards Fang Yuan.

As a teacher, he naturally liked obedient and smart students, and hated those naughty students who did not obey the rules.

But being the academy elder for so many years, his experience was extremely rich, he had seen many different types of students. Among them he had seen extremely obedient ones who followed orders without question. There were also those who caused problems day and night, constantly breaking the rules.

His heart had already become still as water, impartial to all. At the same time, he carved the phrase "as a teacher, one must treat all students fairly" onto the right corner of his desk, treating it as his motto.

He had never felt such disgust for a student.

Feeling that sense of detest in his heart, the academy elder was also slightly shocked.

In previous years, even towards the most naughty students, he was able to handle it with a big heart, tolerating their actions. But when it came to Fang Yuan, why did he lose this sense of impartialness?

He thought about it again and again, and finally realized the reason.

This lad called Fang Yuan, he had a form of arrogance in his blood!

It seemed from the fundamentals that Fang Yuan did not respect his teachers for their status. Towards the martial arts instructor earlier, he not only disobeyed him, but even rebuked him in public.

Actually, such cases of retorting against teachers were commonly seen in previous years. However, those kids always had an agitated state of mind. They were either rebellious, furious or stubborn, etc.

The academy elder was clear that the more agitated the youngsters were, the more it implied that they were fearful in their hearts.

But Fang Yuan was not.

He had no fear in his heart at all, as if he had seen through the tricks of the academy.

His expression was aloof, and even after he left the stage, his expression showed no signs of changing, as if he had done something insignificant.

Yes, he treated the matter of disobeying his teachers as a trivial matter that was insignificant!

In simple terms -------

He was not afraid.

It was just this point that caused the academy elder to already feel unhappy, developing a sense of disgust for him.

The academy elder could endure a student more rebellious than Fang Yuan, or a teenager ten times naughtier than him. That was because these students knew fear and were moving based on their agitated emotions.

As long as they were fearful, as long as they were impulsive, they would be easily manipulated and will not go out of control.

But Fang Yuan was not.

He was calm and uncaring, not treating his teachers with reverence.

He was not respectful!

Someone who has no reverence for the clan, even if they are nurtured, how can they be useful for the clan?

"Once they appear, this sort of person, they have to be suppressed, they must be suppressed! Otherwise, his existence will create a sense of irresistibility in the students. In the long run, it will affect the others, causing them to lose their reverence for their teachers, and as the academy, how else are we going to manage the students?"

The academy elder squinted his eyes, making up the decision in his mind.

But then, his face showed a troubled expression very quickly.

How was he going to suppress Fang Yuan?

Fang Yuan had done nothing wrong, there was no weakness that he could exploit.

Fang Yuan’s cunning demeanour gave him a sense of helplessness. He had never met a student like this, one who was so familiar with the academy’s rules and regulations.

As the academy elder, he was always impartial to all students. He could not be like a slum gangster and purposely find trouble with a youngster like Fang Yuan.

He had placed his hopes on the martial arts instructor, but now he was deeply disappointed.

"It seems that to suppress Fang Yuan’s domination, we can only wait until all the other students advance to Rank one middle stage."

A Gu Master’s advancement is mostly influenced by their talents.

With his rich experience as the academy elder, he had calculated before in his heart: the ones who had the greatest chance to advance first are Gu Yue Fang Zheng, Chi Chen and Mo Bei.

They were an A rank and two B grades respectively, and with their elders’ help behind them, they had no lack of primeval stones. No matter which one of the three, they were mostly likely to be the first to advance to Rank one middle stage cultivation.

"Gu Yue Fang Zheng, Chi Chen and Mo Bei, these three are our hopeful seeds this season." The academy elder looked at the arena and sighed.

With his experienced gaze, he could tell: in the arena, although the students seem to be standing casually, they had subtly already split into three factions.

In one circle was Gu Yue Chi Chen and a bunch of similarly-aged clansmen, all crowding around him.

The second circle’s core was Gu Yue Fang Zheng, and the clan leader’s faction’s younger generation were subtly supporting this A grade talent genius.

The third circle was led by Gu Yue Mo Bei. He had already been treated of his internal injury and stood on the arena with a pale face. The classmates beside him were asking him about his condition.

"This is the meaning of letting them compete with each other." Seeing the three factions, the academy elder was overjoyed and laughed.

Allowing the students free reign to compete, this was not just to nurture their battle senses, but also to prematurely choose the leader-type characters.

In past seasons, they had to wait until the end of the year to have the capacity to develop their own circles. But in this year, because of Fang Yuan’s appearance, his extortion had brought forth the divergence much faster.

Against Fang Yuan, the only ones who dared to compete against him were Fang Zheng, Mo Bei and Chi Chen.

After a long time under imperceptible influence, the other youngsters would automatically regard these three as the leaders.

As long as there were no mishaps, these three social circles would be the layout of the future family’s higher-ups.

"But these factions are still not stable. Within them, there are still students moving around. Once the three take the lead and advance to the middle stage first, I will give them the positions of class chairman and vice chairman. With that differentiation, they would gain authority, and this will strengthen their social circles," the academy elder thought.

Of course, there was someone not within either factions.

Just one person, and that was Fang Yuan.

Getting close to stronger people is human nature. In fact, although Fang Yuan extorted the students and acted against the students, there were a number of youngsters who wanted to attach themselves to him.

However, they were rejected by Fang Yuan. To him, only those who were useful were pawns, and these youngsters had too little value.

This was also another reason the academy elder hated Fang Yuan. He was too antisocial, not willing to integrate into the team. To such people like him, the clan’s control over them was not as much as the other youngsters.

The academy elder’s gaze once again shot towards Fang Yuan in the arena.

Fang Yuan stood alone at one corner with his hands behind his back, his eyelids slightly closed, allowing the students to fight for their prize. Even with the heated competition, his expression did not change the slightest.

His surrounding was vacant, no youngster was willing to stand with him.

Very evidently, he also did not wish for these people to be near him.

Fang Yuan stood there alone, enshrouded in loneliness.

He floated outside the factions.

"But I don’t have to be too worried. This Fang Yuan is still young and can be changed slowly." The academy elder’s gaze shone and he thought deeply.

"Next up will be the establishment of the class chairman and vice chairman. A year later, we will split into groups, creating team leaders and assistant leaders. Every academic year also has all sorts of honor and rewards, like the Small Redflower Award, Blue Neckcloth Prize and Five Outstanding Student Prize. He wants to cultivate so he needs resources, thus he has to compete for these positions and prizes. As time passes, with interaction among the students, he is bound to have kinship, friendship and love as his restraints. I don’t have to worry about him going beyond the clan’s control."

These years, the academy elder had gradually understood something.

When a new clan member is born, they would be brainwashed by the clan.

First, they would be taught the clan’s utmost value system. Next they would go into moral education and learn about the beauty and importance of kinship, friendship, love.

After that, they would be taught honor, and in the process of growing up, many resources such as prizes would be used to attract them. Using the family’s assigned roles, they would choose and recruit the most loyal clansmen into their factions.

Do not look down on the small roles like chairman or vice chairman, for once they become one of these roles, they would be part of the clan’s administration.

Under such a system with constant influence, on one hand it brings about the benefits of having authority and the sweetness of power, while on the other hand, it brings the problem of detaching from the system. A carrot in hand and a stick in the other, who can break away from this system?

Even the wildest of people or the most lonesome ones would gradually become a part of the family. One without loyalty would also be nurtured into one with loyalty. Without kinship, friendship or love, they would still be developed.

This is the power of the system.

This is the power of rules.

This is the clan’s way of survival!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Nightfall arrived. The moon was like a silver plate, appearing among the clouds. The thinly spread stars decorated the surroundings.

Gu Yue Mo Bei stood in the courtyard, raising his head up, his eyes glistening under the reflection of the moon.

"Little brother, I heard you got injured today." Behind him, his sister Gu Yue Mo Yan’s voice resounded.

"Sister, you are worried that after being beaten till I vomited blood today, I would have long lasting trauma?" Mo bei turned around and curled his lips.

Seeing her brother laughing, Mo Yan’s heart felt at ease. Although she had truly worried, she said instead, "No way, big sis here understands you best. Good brother, you have an indomitable will, the future head of our Mo family. How can you be frightened off by such a small injury?"

"Hehehe, I knew sister doted on me the most," Mo Bei scratched the back of his head as he laughed sheepishly.

"You know what, sister?" Under the glow of the moonlight, this fifteen year old teenager’s eyes radiated brightly. "Although I failed this time, I heard Fang Yuan panting during the match. Back then he easily beaten me in two or three strikes with an calm and composed manner. But his gasping already revealed his weakness. He is definitely not as strong as everyone else thinks. One day, I will defeat him fair and square."

"Good, as expected of a good man from my Mo bloodline!" Mo Yan laughed, patting her brother’s head, showing concern on her face, "However, you suffered internal injuries, so please don’t practise your martial arts these few days."

"Don’t touch my head sister, I am already old enough." Mo Bei shrugged his head, using an unhappy tone, "I understand what you are saying, I have a plan. These few days, I’m going to nurture my aperture walls. To completely breakthrough from initial stage to middle stage and obtain the position of class chairman, and suppress Fang Yuan’s dominance. I’ll let him know that, what truly matters to a Gu Master’s cultivation is still talent!"

"I’m glad you can think this way. I was only a vice chairman last time. If you manage to become chairman, it will fulfill my regrets too."

"Don’t worry sister. The position of chairman, I certainly must obtain it!"

At the same time, in the Chi family.

Inside the secret room, there was only one torch, attached to an opening in the limestone walls.

The flame burned on, illuminating this small room.

One of the two elders in power, Gu Yue Chi Lian, was sitting facing his grandson, Gu Yue Chi Cheng. The two sat on a praying mat with their shadows projected on the ground, wavering with the flickering of the flame.

Gu Yue Chi Lian stretched out his hand, using his palm to touch Chi Cheng’s abdomen area.

Gu Yue Chi Chen’s face was full of anxiety, his mind entering his aperture, suppressing the ripples in his primeval sea with all his concentration.

In this world, there are no two identical tree leaves. Similarly to Gu Masters, there is no identical primeval essence as well.

Once primeval essence from an external source enters the aperture, it will result in the natural resistance of the original primeval essence in the aperture.

If Gu Yue Chi Cheng does not suppress it, and instead allows the his primeval essence to resist, it will result in a clash between the essences. Such intensive reaction can cause great damage to the aperture.

The aperture’s primeval sea is the foundation and roots of a Gu Master’s cultivation, and is of utmost importance.

Once the aperture is damaged, at the very least one’s cultivation may lower, but if it is severe, their latent talent may be lowered as well. Once the aperture is completely shattered, the Gu Master would die immediately.

After a while, Gu Yue Chi Lian gradually stopped transmitting his primeval essence, slowly taking back his hand.

Gu Yue Chi Cheng took a deep breath of relief, his tense body relaxing. "Thank you Grandfather, for nurturing my aperture and transfusing primeval essence to me every three days. It has been hard on you!"

Gu Yue Chi Lian’s forehead was full of sweat, and he sighed and said, "This is inevitable. Your talent is only C grade, so if we rely on your ability alone to rise to middle stage, it’ll take a long time. The time will usually be twice of a B grade, and four times of an A grade. In such a situation, your talent will be exposed. Thus, even if this method is dangerous, we have to use it."

"Grandson understands grandfather’s intentions."

"As long as you understand." The old man sighed, "This method also has another sequela. After your aperture has been nurtured by my silver primeval essence, although the silver primeval essence has a greater effect, it is still an external source of primeval essence to you. Henceforth, even if your aperture walls change from a light wall to a water wall, it would still be mixed with my energy. The more external energy there is, the more impure your aperture will be, and this will stifle your talent, limiting your development in the future."

Gu Yue Chi Cheng bit his lips, "Grandfather, for the future of the Chi family, I am willing to sacrifice my future prospects!"

Gu Yue Chi Lian was pleased, stroking his beard. "It is good that you have such thoughts. But the heavens always leave a glimmer of hope for you, for you are not hopeless yet. If we can find the Cleansing Water Gu, it will be able to cleanse your aperture walls and flush out all the external energies in your aperture sea, removing this sequela."

"In addition, I have also used my relationships to search for a Liquor worm for you. This worm is able to help a Rank one Gu Master refine their primeval essence and raise it by one small realm. In this way the primeval essence that is refined will be your body’s own primeval essence and not an external one. Using this way to nurture your aperture leaves no repercussions and risks, it is a much better nurturing effect!"

Gu Yue Chi Lian was overjoyed. "Thank you grandfather!"

"However, the Liquor worm is hard to find. Among the Rank one Gu worms, the Liquor worm, boar Gu, and Bookworm etc, are all extremely rare Gu. Once they appear in the market they would be snatched up immediately. Of course, there are also some Gu in this world that are rumored to change a Gu Master’s talent. But at this age, grandfather has never seen one, only hearing occasional rumors about them." The old man explained.

The night winds blew in gently from the windows and into the room.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng sat on his bed with his eyes shut, holding a primeval stone in both hands.

The green copper primeval sea was raging without any winds, the waves crashing towards the white aperture walls.

He has A grade rank talent, and his primeval essence occupied 80% of the aperture. His natural rate of recovery was twice of Fang Yuan!

With such godblessed advantage, he is already close to Rank one middle stage.

Phew.

A while later, Gu Yue Fang Zheng puffed out a breath of air and opened his eyes.

The moon was bright and stars sparse outside the window, the bluish green bamboo houses arranged in a line.

A scene of peace and harmony.

"Time always flies when cultivating. In the blink of an eye, it is already late into the night," Fang Zheng muttered softly. He slowly opened his hands, and two piles of rock powder fell onto the floor in front of his bed.

After a primeval stone’s essence had been fully retrieved, it would turn into a pile of powder.

Looking at the powder pile, Fang Zheng frowned.

He took out his money bag; it was already close to empty.

Opening it, he saw three primeval stones left inside.

Fang Zheng would retrieve three pieces every seven days from the academy as resources, but since Fang Yuan would snatch a piece from him, he only had two left every week.

Uncle and Aunt would also give him living expenses, but it was also three stones every seven days.

Just with these primeval stones, how is it enough?

Fang Zheng was determined to surpass his brother Fang Yuan, thus he took the initiative to approach his uncle and aunt multiple times to beg for some primeval stones.

After many times, his aunt would look for him to have a heart-to-heart chat, telling him about how poor the family was, and how they had cash flow difficulties, having no spare money left. Since then, Fang Zheng did not have the desire to continue asking.

"Father and mother are already doing all they can to support my cultivation. I cannot make things difficult for them and ask for more primeval stones. I only have three left. I can only be more thrifty. If I use one piece a day, I’ll have enough for three days."

"I have a feeling that in three or four days, I will definitely advance to middle stage! The only thing is, what is big brother’s progress now?" Thinking so, Fang Zheng subconsciously looked towards to academy living quarters.

"I have A grade talent, while big brother only has C grade talent. His speed is definitely slower than me. Big brother is not my match this time! Big brother, I will let you know the true power of an A grade talent!"

Thinking of this, Fang Zheng clenched his fists.

......

Academy dormitory.

Fang Yuan’s door was shut tight.

In the darkness, he was not asleep, but sitting on his bed.

A Gu Master’s cultivation cannot replace sleep. Normally at this time, Fang Yuan would already have fallen asleep.

But in cultivating earlier today, he already felt that he was just one step away from middle stage.

"I might as well not sleep tonight, I’ll rush straight for middle stage!" His eyes shone with determination.

Soon after, he shut his eyes and his mind went into the aperture.

44% of green copper primeval sea. Just a moment ago, they were all refined into pale green coloured middle stage primeval essence by the liquor worm.

"Rise." With a thought, the peaceful green copper primeval sea began to stir.

The commotion got larger and larger, until waves were formed.

Splash, splash, splash...

The tides raced against each other, rushing towards the surrounding aperture walls.

Like crashing on a reef, most of the primeval essence would break into emerald ripples and fuse back into the sea.

A small amount of primeval essence was expended, turning into a small hint of invisible energy, penetrating into the white coloured light aperture wall.

"Rise again," Fang Yuan thought as the emerald ripples became larger in scale. The waves earlier were like rabbits and dogs, but now they were like troops of horses, marching towards the aperture walls.

A horse-like dragon, the waves like the heavens!

The primeval essence was expended quickly, and the water level fell sharply.

Splash, splash, splash...

The waves struck relentlessly, finally resulting in a change. The white coloured wall shook suddenly, the originally mild white colour radiating an eye-piercing brilliance.

Seeing this scene, Fang Yuan was overjoyed as he knew that the crucial part had arrived, and he quickly activated all of his primeval essence to rush at the walls.

The white light grew brighter, the light rays distorted and tangling together, giving people a feeling of thickness. After more than ten breaths, white strips of light bands appeared on the light wall, and the strips collided with each other like water flowing nonstop. In the process of collision, they continued to combine and merge, forming a white flowing light.

Finally, the flowing light gathered into one piece and completely covered the light wall.

The white light dimmed, and the original white light wall of the aperture was gone, replaced by a layer of spherical shaped white water wall. The light wall’s surface was smooth with no impurities. The water wall however, was thicker than the light wall, the ripples of light flowing and flickering on it.

The primeval sea regained its peace, the aperture still having 20% primeval essence left.

"I advanced to middle stage!" Fang Yuan laughed heartily, opening his eyes.

The bright sunlight creeped in through the openings in the curtains.

Unknowingly, the night had passed, and it was already morning.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 51: Let’s see how you are going to explain this

"Fang Yuan didn’t come to class today. Look guys, his seat is empty."

"He’s so bold! Today’s lesson is taught by the academy elder, yet he dared to not show up."

"This is bad, the elder’s expression is ugly, it seems that Fang Yuan is in trouble. Hehehe."

In the academy, the youngsters discussed softly. A few glanced towards Fang Yuan’s empty seat, as well as the academy elder’s darkening expression. Ever since he started the extortion, Fang Yuan stood against everyone in the class. Seeing him in trouble, all the students were excited for what was to come.

The academy elder’s expression was stiff as he explained the crux of nurturing the aperture while secretly staring at Fang Yuan’s seat.

He laughed coldly in his heart, "Fang Yuan, oh Fang Yuan. I was still worried about not being able to catch your weak point yesterday, and here you give it to me today. You are after all a fifteen year old teenager, I have overestimated you."

His ugly expression was mostly fake. His motive was to use this opportunity to find trouble with Fang Yuan and punish him, eliminating his increasing dominance in class. Undeniably, as time passed, Fang Yuan’s dominating presence was getting stronger, causing the other students to be barely catching their breaths.

A one-sided dominance was not what the academy elder wanted to see. He wanted to see the entire class shining.

"Men!" The academy elder raised a finger and knocked lightly on the table.

"Elder, your subjects are here." The two guards standing outside at the door entered.

The academy elder snorted in public, "This Fang Yuan is getting out of hand, being so lazy and skipping classes right under my nose. Go to the hostel and bring him here for me."

"Yes, elder." The guards went on their way. Seeing the guards disappear outside the door, the academy burst into discussion noises.

Numerous students joined in the conversation.

"Fang Yuan is in deep shit now," someone said with his eyes shining brightly.

"Hehe, we have a show to watch later." Another laughed in pleasure towards Fang Yuan’s misery.

"Big brother, you are too arrogant. This is challenging the elder’s authority. No matter what punishment it is, you had it coming." Gu Yue Fang Zheng looked at the empty seat, sighing internally.

Bam, bam, bam!

The academy elder with a strict expression, slammed the desk thrice, "Silence, no talking in class!"

His aura at this moment was like a volcano about to erupt, causing fear in others.

Immediately, the academy fell into pin-drop silence. The students fearfully shut up, quickly getting into position. Except, although their expression was so, their thoughts were already deep into this matter.

The class continued, the youngsters not concentrating at all.

A few students by the window looked out constantly.

As time passed, after a while, footsteps could be heard at the door. Instantly the students’ ears twitched, tens of eyes showing bright expressions.

"Arriving..." The academy elder heard the footsteps too and narrowed his eyes as a result.

He had already thought of how to deal with Fang Yuan. He’ll punish him to stand outside for three hours.

Although the punishment was not heavy, it was enough for him to be humiliated.

Throughout lessons, students entering and leaving would see Fang Yuan standing there.

This way, it would ruin Fang Yuan’s image of invincibility. When the students realize that Fang Yuan was nothing special, the impact he has on them would be greatly reduced. This would result in them gaining courage and stir their competitive spirit.

The great part was, since Fang Yuan’s punishment came from the academy, this would improve the academy’s reputation.

Only with reverence will they obey.

Thus, while the method is simple, it has deep intentions underneath.

The footsteps got closer, and finally someone stood outside the door.

Knock, knock, knock.

Knocking sounds could be heard.

"Hehe, I will open it!" The student near the door volunteered and enthusiastically went to open the door.

The academy quietened down, numerous eyes staring at the door.

Crack.

The door was easily opened by the student, exposing a gap.

Sunlight infiltrated from the gap. The student opening the door suddenly froze, shuddering suddenly.

"AHH!!!" He was stunned for a second before suddenly screaming, subconsciously taking a large step backwards. His body knocked onto the desk and he instantly lost his balance, falling with the table onto the ground.

The boy’s face was pale, his expression horrified, limbs trembling and unable to exert strength. Lying on the floor, he frantically tried to get up, but fell back down again and again.

"What’s wrong?!" In a moment everyone was astonished, all of them frowning deeply.

Numerous gazes curiously looked towards the door.

The door was slowly pushed opened by the person outside.

The academy elder stopped his lecture out of reflex.

What everyone saw first, was a hand on the door.

A teenager’s left hand.

A left hand with dripping blood.

A bloody hand!

Seeing this bloody hand, many of the female students covered their mouths and screamed in terror.

The door slowly opened fully.

The brightness of the sunlight pricked everyone’s eyes, causing them to squint. With the bright sunlight as his background, a dark shadow attached to a thin teenager appeared before everyone.

He didn’t know why, but the academy elder felt a strong feeling of unease in his heart.

"It’s Fang Yuan!" Someone screamed out loudly.

Everyone who had gotten used to the sunlight could clearly see who the person was.

What met their eyes was Fang Yuan, bathed in blood, standing outside the door as if he had gone through an intense battle.

His left hand slowly retracted, his right hand grabbing onto some hair, dragging along a person. The person’s left arm was entirely detached from the base. He was lying there motionless, evidently unconscious. Blood on his left shoulder gushed out.

"It’s one of the guards who went to look for Fang Yuan!" Someone recognised the person’s identity.

"What exactly happened?" Someone was going berserk.

"He murdered again, this time he killed the guards!" Someone pointed at Fang Yuan, screaming in horror, getting louder and louder, as if it would purge the terror and fear in his heart.

At once, the academy was rowdy.

Many students forgot the rules at this time, and stood up from their seats. They looked towards Fang Yuan with fear, shock, and nervous expressions.

In their imaginations, Fang Yuan would be dragged here by the guards left and right.

But the truth was —— Fang Yuan bathed in blood, his expression cool like a devil approaching. The two guards, one missing while the other lying motionless, blood oozing from his body quickly forming a puddle.

A thick scent of blood permeated the academy.

The academy elder was stunned, he did not anticipate such a scene!

After his shock, came intense rage.

The two guards were merely external martial artists. So what if they died? The academy elder did not really care.

But the crucial point was their identity. They were the academy’s guards, representing the academy’s prestige. Representing the academy elder’s face.

This Fang Yuan was simply too bold. Not only did he kill Gao Wan, now he even went and murdered the academy’s guards!

No, this isn’t just being bold. He was practically provoking, challenging the clan academy’s prestige.

The academy elder flew into a rage, pointing at Fang Yuan, screaming, "Fang Yuan! What is this? You have to give me an explanation, a good reason to spare you. If not, with the crime of murdering the guards, you will be thrown in jail, awaiting the clan verdict!"

The students all shuddered.

Even the windows trembled, the entire academy reverbing with the academy elder’s screams.

Only Fang Yuan was calm-looking, his eyes dyed a deep miasma, behaving like usual, unable to see any change in his emotions.

After looking around, Fang Yuan let go of his right arm, and with a plop, the guard’s head fell into the puddle of blood, splashing onto Fang Yuan’s pants.

He cupped his fists towards the academy elder, his calm voice echoing throughout the silent academy, "Academy Elder, I truly have something to report."

"Speak." The academy elder spoke with both arms behind his back, arching his head as he looked at Fang Yuan, his expression ice cold.

Laughing coldly in his heart, he thought, "Fang Yuan, you’re making more and more mistakes, increasing the severity. I’ll see how you’re going to explain yourself!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Inside the academy, everyone’s attention was on Fang Yuan.

Their expressions showed shock, fear, mockery and callousness.

Fang Yuan paid no attention to these people. He looked at the academy elder with a stern expression, with his finger pointing towards the fainted guard.

"Reporting to elder, these two guards had impure motives, devious intentions! They broke into my room when I was at the crucial moment of breaking through into the middle stage. As everyone knows, a Gu Master cultivating cannot be interrupted. Especially so when one is trying to break through into higher realms. A moment of distraction would not only cause the breakthrough to fail, but their aperture would also get damaged. Thankfully my luck was good, because at the moment where they barged in, I had already stepped into the middle stage."

"However!" Before the masses had reacted, Fang Yuan continued, "These two did not admit their mistakes earlier. To my surprise, they boasted shamelessly about wanting to get rough with me, even scolding our clan’s ancestors, lying that the act of disturbing my cultivation was the esteemed elder’s decision. Your student did not believe so, and resisted furiously. These two had strong martial arts, and I had to fight for life before finally defeating these two people."

"But seeing as they were the academy guards, your student did not kill them immediately. I merely cut off one of his arms, and the leg of the other person. Although there was quite some blood loss, they are still alive. That is my report for this matter, please uphold justice for me, esteemed elder!" Having said so, he cupped his fists towards the academy elder.

His tone was urgent, saying a ton of information, and leaving no room for others to interrupt.

After he had finished, the surrounding people slowly started to react.

"What did Fang Yuan say earlier, I did not catch it."

"I think he said he advanced to the middle stage!"

"How is that possible, he is just a C grade trash, to think that he actually advanced to the middle stage first."

"He definitely lied, he is afraid of the academy’s punishment, thus he lied!"

The students discussed loudly.

When compared to Fang Yuan’s advancement to the middle stage, the two guards’ lives no longer mattered.

They were not Gu Yue clan members, who cares if they’re dead or alive?

"You said you advanced to Rank one middle stage?" The academy elder’s voice was ice cold, his expression unforgiving. "Fang Yuan, this is not a laughing matter. If you admit your wrongdoing now, I can still take into account that this is your first mistake and deal with you leniently. If you want to continue lying and attempting to cover up your mistakes, then I can tell you now, lies are easily seen through."

Fang Yuan did not explain himself further, he laughed lightly and said to the academy elder, "Please inspect, elder."

Even without his words, the academy elder had already moved forward.

He placed his hand on Fang Yuan’s abdomen, placing a trace of his spirit into it. Immediately he saw the inside of Fang Yuan’s aperture.

Within the aperture, there was no Gu.

The Spring Autumn Cicada had already hidden itself. A Rank six Gu is way superior than a Rank three academy elder, so if it wanted to hide, it would not be found easily.

As for the Liquor worm, Fang Yuan had placed it into the dormitory’s wine reserves, and did not bring it along.

The academy elder with his eyes shut, could see a green copper primeval sea, calm as still water.

Drops of primeval essence inside were all emerald green colours of middle stage primeval essence.

Seeing the aperture walls, the white coloured aperture walls were glowing with reflected light as if they were all made of water. Gushes of water flow rapidly moved along the wall.

Water wall!

"He really advanced to the middle stage, how is this possible?!" The academy elder shouted in his heart, a sign of shock under his calm expression. But he tried to hide it to the best of his ability, his face still expressionless.

A moment later, after he had digested this fact, he drew back his hand, speaking in a solemn voice, "It is indeed middle stage."

The students had been holding their breaths, awaiting the results.

The academy elder’s verdict caused a huge commotion in the academy.

The students were full of bewilderment and shock, each of their faces showing immense disbelief.

Fang Yuan was only a C grade, but yet he was the first to breakthrough into the middle stage, this was against common sense!

For a Gu Master’s cultivation and breaking through realms, the most important aspect should be talent. How is this possible, a C grade was the first to advance? How would this make those A grade, B grades feel!

"This!" Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s face was pale. He was still confident last night, but now that reality sat in front of him, he was unable to accept such a fact and fell to the ground.

Gu Yue Mo Bei clenched his fists, and Gu Yue Chi Chen hatefully gritted his teeth.

The academy elder could not be easily fooled, so how did Fang Yuan manage to do it?

At once, all the youngsters stared at Fang Yuan, having one question in their hearts —— with that C grade talent, how did he advance?

The academy elder’s heart was similarly full of doubt.

Under such great empuzzlement, he ignored the idea of suppressing Fang Yuan and asked directly, "Fang Yuan, I hope you can explain this, how did you manage to advance to middle stage."

Fang Yuan laughed silently, "Heaven rewards the hard-working, and as a result of student’s persistent training, I managed to advance smoothly."

"Lies!"

"Tsk, if heaven rewarded the hard-working, I’d be first long ago!"

"Diligently studying and training? Some time ago, I still saw him strolling around the shop district."

The students were evidently not satisfied with such an answer.

"Is that so?" The academy elder replied neutrally, his gaze staring at Fang Yuan, emitting pressure.

Fang Yuan’s expression was candid, making eye contact with the elder without fear.

His body was bathed in blood, his linen shirt messy, as if he had gone through an intense battle.

A pair of black abyss-like eyes, showing a kind of peacefulness, indifference, and even hiding a hint of amusement.

Seeing such a gaze, the academy elder’s heart wavered.

"This Fang Yuan, he is not afraid, not fearful, not threatened, and not shocked, how can he be interrogated by me right here? With his C grade talent, being the first to advance to middle stage, there has to be a secret. But since he does not want to say it, as the academy elder, I cannot forcefully interrogate him. It seems I can only investigate this privately."

Thinking of this, the academy elder retracted his gaze and his cold expression became milder.

Fang Yuan however did not let the matter go, "Your student is frightened, esteemed elder. How are you going to deal with these two guards? They have lost a lot of blood, if they are not treated soon, they might die."

"Frightened? You?" The academy elder retorted in his mind. His brows frowned deeply.

At this point, as the person in charge of the academy, he had to step forward and settle this.

"But how should I resolve this?" The academy elder could not help but feel troubled.

He silently began to think.

Fang Yuan took all of the academy elder’s change in expressions into consideration. He laughed internally; the academy elder must be really troubled now.

These two guards, they were merely outsiders, their lives cheap as grass. In normal times, no one would care if they died.

But now the situation was different, they were sent out by the academy elder. If they really died, the academy elder would lose his reputation!

Thus, the guards could not die, the academy elder is going to save them.

The part that truly troubles the academy elder is Fang Yuan’s verdict.

In his original plan, Fang Yuan first played truant, and then killed the guards. This could be said to be defying his teachers, being arrogant and self-centered. According to the clan rules, he’d be thrown into the clan jail, reflecting upon his mistakes inside.

But when adding in the matter of Fang Yuan’s advancement to middle stage, these wrongdoings became very different.

Fang Yuan played truant and killed the guards because he was cultivating. This was reasonable.

The crucial part was, he was successful in advancing to the middle stage, and became the first in this class. This allowed him to be on the side of reason.

Just what did Fang Yuan rely on to advance to middle stage, this secret would be discussed later.

Winners win all, losers lose all, the world only cares about result. No one would reprimand such an outstanding junior.

The academy elder could not execute any punishments on him.

What is the academy for? It is to nurture outstanding Gu Masters, and inject fresh blood into the clan.

Now that we have such an aspiring young man, you as the academy elder still wants to find trouble with him? That would be neglecting your role!

Just like a student who got good results, as a teacher he should be encouraging and praising him, instead of punishing and criticizing. A teacher who punishes and scolds a student for his good results is not one that would ever be recognised.

Perhaps the other elders would secretly cause problems for Fang Yuan because they fear Fang Yuan’s future prospects, or because of grudges and past grievances. But him alone, the esteemed academy elder, cannot do such a thing!

Because he is in charge of the academy, he has to be impartial, at least on the surface.

These are the rules!

"Do I just let him go like this? It was not easy finding a weakness of his." The academy elder was indignant. He knew in his heart that all the youngsters in the academy were merely spectators of this matter.

They can only look at the matter as entertainment, but are unable to see the crucial point in this, they are unable to experience the excitement in this battle!

The truth is, this is the one time where he as the academy elder, was battling against Fang Yuan the student.

First he grabbed hold of the rules, and was bent on punishing Fang Yuan, removing his strong image in front of the other students.

Next, Fang Yuan retaliated! His actions may seem rash, but it hit the matter on the point, and with the excuse of advancing to the middle stage, he got back his argument.

As for those two unlucky guards, they were merely sacrificial pawns who were implicated by the two’s battle of wits.

"This Fang Yuan, he is too cunning! If he had really killed the two guards, I can still retaliate against him with this reason. Although his talent is lackluster, with such a meticulous and experienced method, it is hard to believe that he is just a fifteen year old. The worst part is, I cannot retaliate. No wonder back in those days, the clan had rumors about his early awakened intelligence!" The academy elder suddenly realised, he had lost.

His loss was due to his status, he was the elder in charge of the academy.

This was both his strength and weakness.

One’s strength is also one’s weakness.

Fang Yuan had understood this logic long ago!

The academy elder was both helpless and frustrated.

He had asked Fang Yuan to explain, and in actuality Fang Yuan’s explanation was full of loopholes and easily exposable.

These guards were chosen by the academy elder himself, they would not be so rash and retarded to scold the Gu Yue ancestors.

Fang Yuan’s words were on purpose, it was blatant accusation, framing and laying a trap in front of the other party!

The academy elder was clear of this, but he knew that he could not pursue the matter.

This was a trap.

Once he looked into it, the truth would be revealed, and how would he handle this matter?

If he did not punish Fang Yuan, the two guards would be pitifully framed, and as the academy elder, if he does not handle things impartially, how can anyone trust him?

If he punished Fang Yuan, that would be suppressing and displaying jealousy of the talented! To suppress a junior of the clan for two servants who were not part of the clan, this matter would trigger the unhappiness of the clansmen.

Thus, the best way to resolve this was to pretend to not see anything, and treat these two guards as discarded pieces. Admitting that they had performed a huge mistake, as well as praising Fang Yuan.

This way, the clansmen would be satisfied, and the deceived guards, without additional information, would think of this as being impartial.

If he handled the matter like this, it would give the academy elder the largest benefit.

Logic told the academy elder that this is the way to handle it. But emotionally, he could not take it lying down.

This Fang Yuan was too devious!

The academy elder not only failed to suppress Fang Yuan, but he himself became the stepping stone for Fang Yuan, getting humiliated in public!

Fang Yuan did not show the slightest respect for him and dared to oppose him like this in public, causing this esteemed academy elder to suffer such humiliation and frustration.

The point was, in future if these two guards felt indignant and wanted to reveal the truth, as the academy elder, if he wanted to maintain his image and position, he would have to be the first to step up and suppress them.

But this was all caused by Fang Yuan!

What sort of feeling is this?

For example, it would be like Fang Yuan pooping on the academy elder’s face, but the elder himself still has to praise him and at the same time, clean his butt for him. If anyone wanted to point out that there was poop on his face, he has to be the first to shut that person up.

This feeling of grievance, it was almost unbearable for the academy elder.

There was a growing urge in his heart to give Fang Yuan a few tight slaps!

But finally, the academy elder stretched out his arm and patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder.

"Good lad." The academy elder’s face was dim like stillwater, forcing the words out of his mouth.

"It is all thanks to the academy’s nurturing," Fang Yuan replied plainly.

The corner of the academy elder’s eye twitched.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Everything was going according to Fang Yuan’s calculations.

Thereafter, the academy elder ordered the healing Gu Master to save the two guards.

The guards were saved, but they had suffered heavy injuries and were almost crippled, ending up getting fired from the academy by the elder.

Fang Yuan did not receive any punishments, on the contrary he received compliments thoroughly.

This result caused much fear in the other youngsters.

But this issue was far from over. As time flowed, the commotion spread to the rest of the clan.

Fang Yuan being the first to advance to the middle stage with his C grade talent became the after-meal gossip of the entire clan.

After meals and tea breaks, everyone was discussing this matter.

Subsequent to the initial peculiarity, everyone started to guess the secret behind Fang Yuan’s quick advancement.

"Actually, with a C grade talent, surpassing A grade and B grade to advance first into middle stage is not something that strange."

"True, there are many methods in this world that can achieve such a thing."

"Take the Relic Gu for example. Once this Gu is used, the aperture walls would be enhanced and it will assist the cultivation to rise by a small realm, being the easiest method of breaking through."

...

At once, the crowd’s discussion evolved into all sorts of possible answers and methods.

As for theories about Liquor worms and external sources of primeval essence, these ideas were also naturally brought up by by many people.

If Fang Yuan revealed the existence of the Liquor worm at the start, there would not have been such a commotion. But because he hid it, this resulted in the curiosity of many people being raised.

Although it appeared peaceful, Gu Yue village had an undercurrent brewing.

Numerous eyes were watching the academy elder, all waiting for his explanation.

As the academy elder, if he did not know how a student that he had taught himself had advanced, that would be negligence of his role.

Thus, the academy elder had to give an explanation.

Days passed by.

The second youngster to breakthrough the initial stage and advance to middle stage appeared.

It was Gu Yue Mo Bei.

Soon after, with just a three hour difference, Gu Yue Fang Zheng advanced too.

He was after all, dragged down by the lack of primeval stones. Of course, there was also the reason of him being traumatised by Fang Yuan.

The third was Gu Yue Chi Chen.

Even if he had Gu Yue Chi Lian’s infused primeval essence, the method’s effectiveness was not very high and could only be performed once every three days, adding to the fact that it was very risky. But with his C grade talent, getting third position was already a success.

On the fifth day, the academy elder once again handed out subsidies.

"Gu Yue Fang Yuan." He stood at the front, calling out Fang Yuan’s name first.

Fang Yuan stood up and walked towards him with a plain expression.

The youngsters’ attention was on him as he moved, revealing all sorts of envy, jealousy, inspection, and hatred, not one was the same.

"Today, the elder is not only handing out resources, he is also appointing the chairman and vice chairman positions!"

"As expected, the first to be called up was Fang Yuan."

"He is the first to advance, the title of chairman belongs to him."

"It is hard to imagine that this would be the result. Before this, I thought it would be Fang Zheng who would come first."

"He was the first to advance to middle stage, it is so peculiar, there has to be a huge secret, but he refuses to tell us!"

"Hehe, if it was me I wouldn’t tell anyone either. Keep quiet and prosper."

As the students conversed, Fang Yuan arrived in front of the academy elder.

"Gu Yue Fang Yuan, you are the first Gu Master to reach Rank one middle stage in this class, so this is your reward." Saying so, he handed him a white and blue money bag.

Fang Yuan received the money bag and opened it in public, peeking inside.

"Be rest assured, there’s a total of thirty primeval stones inside, the academy would not shortchange you." The academy elder smiled.

Frankly speaking, he would never have expected that the first youngster to advance to middle stage would be Fang Yuan.

However, Fang Yuan did not listen to the academy elder. He rarely trusted others, and only believed in himself. He checked carefully and found that it was indeed thirty primeval stones, not one less. He then placed the money bag into his bosom pocket.

The academy elder upon seeing this action, thought that his finances were tight, and could not help but smile even more brightly.

"I guessed so, he is after all a C grade talent. Rushing to the middle stage, his primeval stone expenditure had to be huge. He has no funding from anyone as well, thus he has to be tight on primeval stones. As long as he has a need for primeval stones, we’ll not be afraid of him leaving the control of the clan. Once he enters the clan’s system, he would not be able to keep that secret, so even if we can’t investigate it, one day, he will tell us." Towards this, the academy elder was full of confidence.

The truth is, after that day, he had sent people to investigate Fang Yuan in secret. Almost everyday there would be progress in the search.

But evidently, those people had not found out that Fang Yuan has a few hundred primeval stones in his possession, and was actually rather rich.

The academy elder continued and said, "Fang Yuan, you are the first to step into Rank one middle stage, and according to the academy rules, you not only will receive thirty primeval stones as reward, but you will also gain priority in choosing your second Gu soon after. Right now, I shall appoint you as class chairman!"

"Fang Yuan was appointed as chairman after all!" Upon hearing this, a few students sighed.

"Damn it." Gu Yue Mo Bei gritted his teeth, feeling indignant.

"Hmph!" Gu Yue Chi Chen crossed his limbs, staring at the scene coldly.

The one that was affected the most was Fang Yuan’s brother, Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

His face was pale, and his expression looked uncertain, a dark cloud looming over his head. "Ordinary students, upon seeing the chairman and vice chairmen, have to bow and pay respects. With my results, I will definitely be a vice chairman. But from now on when I see big brother, I’ll have to pay my respects to him."

"Hold on."

But at this moment, Fang Yuan spoke.

He smiled faintly to the academy elder and said slowly, "Esteemed elder, your student here is not gifted and does not have high wisdom, hence being unable to properly take on the role of chairman. This role, should be given to talented people."

"What? You mean you do not want to be chairman? As the chairman, you’ll get ten primeval stones every time. Are you sure you want to reject it?" The academy elder frowned deeply as he spoke. For the last tens of years of teaching, he had not seen anyone reject this position!

Actually he had already given much thought about this matter, and letting Fang Yuan be class chairman had its merits.

Once he was the chairman, he would be inside the clan system. Fang Yuan will have to carry out his duties at the same time while enjoying his treatment.

No matter what the chairman’s role was, the least he had to do was to stop extorting his classmates.

This was definitely not something a class chairman can do.

This is like before, even though the academy elder was humiliated by Fang Yuan, he still had to praise him for his excellent cultivation results.

As someone bound by the system, he would not be able to do as he pleases when handling matters, and many times he’d be left with no choice.

Of course, this was not because the academy elder was displeased with Fang Yuan extorting so many primeval stones every time.

He was thinking for the entire board of students. Once Fang Yuan becomes chairman and stops extorting, this would allow the other teenagers to have a breather under Fang Yuan’s pressure.

Next, with some push of a hand, it would result in a multiway competition among the families. As long as he can nurture the clan’s hopeful seeds - Fang Zheng, Mo Bei and Chi Chen, what is the cost of sacrificing a small role of a chairman?

And yet, although he had a good plan, the truth was very different from what he expected.

Fang Yuan rejected it!

He actually rejected it!!

Although this position is small, it is the first representation of honor among these hot-blooded youngsters.

Besides honor, as the chairman, they get ten primeval stones as resources each time!

This temptation, no youngster has ever resisted it before.

But Fang Yuan actually rejected.

Fang Yuan looked at the stunned elder, and asked him back, "Did the academy rules state that the first has to be chairman? The position of chairman, is it irrefusable?"

The academy elder replied with a cold expression, "Of course there are no such heartless rules."

Fang Yuan laughed, "Thank you elder for your understanding."

Saying so, he cupped his fists and walked back to his seat.

The students who saw this scene with their own eyes all flew into a commotion.

At once, the academy was lively!

"Fang Yuan actually rejected it? Are you kidding me?!"

"Is he sick in the head?"

"Not sure why he’s acting crazy, but hehe, he’s gonna regret this later."

...

"Fang Yuan gave up on being chairman, this means I am the chairman?!" Happiness came too quickly, and the second place Mo Bei could not react in time.

Chi Chen showed a look of disbelief, he was unable to comprehend that someone actually gave up the spot of chairman, he has to be beyond stupid!

"Big brother..." Fang Zheng stared with huge eyes as he looked at Fang Yuan disappointedly.

According to his results, Fang Zheng was assured to be vice chairman.

But when Fang Yuan gave up the position, Fang Zheng felt that this position no longer had any meaning.

The academy elder’s face was dark this time, really really dark.

The last time when Fang Yuan skipped class, although he looked angry, it was just an act for the others to see.

But this time, he was in a bad mood, worse than before.

Fang Yuan gave up the position of chairman. This means he is rejecting the clan system. The elder had governed the academy for tens of years, but this was the first time he saw such a student, rejecting this huge temptation!

He wanted to invite Fang Yuan into the trap, but since he wouldn’t enter, the academy elder was helpless.

...

The giving out of subsidies ended.

Mo Bei claimed the position of chairman with his result of being second. Fang

Zheng and Chi Chen each became vice chairman.

The class chairman was given ten primeval stones. The vice chairmen got five.

A few students who were not from well-to-do families were so envious that they almost drooled when seeing the three students’ primeval stones.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The wheel of red fire, the sun slowly sank down on the west side of the mountain range.

Its light was not eye-piercing, but it was a sort of bright and gentle ray.

The west sky was dyed a shade of blushful red, the sunset glow continuously spreading out. It was just like an imperial concubine who had just been rewarded, happily crowding around the emperor, wanting to sleep together with him. (1)

Qing Mao Mountain was engulfed entirely in a sea of rose red colour. Each of the tall-pillared buildings and houses were also draped over with a layer of golden yarn.

The surrounding forest planted around the academy seemed like it was wiped with a faint stratum of oil. The wind blew slowly, and as the students walked out of the classroom with their bosoms carrying the primeval stones that were just passed out, they were in a relaxed and calm state of mind.

"I really don’t know what Fang Yuan is thinking, to actually give up on the role of class chairman!"

"Heh heh heh, his brain is fried. I bet he thinks of killing people all day, let’s not concern ourselves with this kind of crazy guy."

"Come to think of it, that day when he burst into the academy I was really freaked out. It was just so terrifying, I had a nightmare on the day itself after I went home."

The students were in groups of twos and threes as they walked.

"Good day class chairman."

"Mmm."

"Greetings class chairman."

"Mhmm."

Gu Yue Mo Bei swaggered around as he walked, and wherever he went the students would bow and greet him without exception.

His face was unable to stifle the expressions of excitement and infatuation.

This was the fascination of authority itself.

Even if it was just a tiny bit of difference in status, it could also make a person even more confident in his own self worth.

Right now as the dying sun looked as red as blood, Mo Bei watched it while his heart sang, "How is it that I have never realised before, this sunset’s rosiness sure is adorable..."

"Hmph, going head over heels just because of becoming a chairman, as if it’s so amazing." Gu Yue Chi Cheng purposely walked behind, since he just didn’t want to greet Gu Yue Mo Bei at all.

"I really have no idea what Fang Yuan is thinking about, to think he actually let go of the position of chairman. However it’s also a good thing, or else me as the third, how could I have been able to obtain the role of vice chairman?" Gu Yue Chi Cheng was confused in his heart, but he also felt happiness and relief.

"Good day vice chairman." At this moment a normal student walked past him and immediately bowed to greet him.

"Heh heh, good day to you too." Gu Yue Chi Cheng instantly nodded, his face full of smiles.

Once the student was gone, Chi Cheng naturally thought, "The taste of vice chairman is rather pleasant. I’m sure the feeling of being the class chairman is even better. If only I was not the vice chairman, but the chairman himself, how good that would be!"

The Chi Cheng who had just been rejoicing earlier was now already filled with insatiable greed, starting to amass expectations for the role of class chairman.

Under the system of the clan, each rank that was higher than the last was just like a carrot getting bigger than the previous one, deeply enticing him.

"Although I am only a C grade talent, but I believe that everything will get better and better." Gu Yue Chi Cheng was full of hope for his future.

However right now, the other vice chairman Gu Yue Fang Zheng was feeling very much terrible in his heart, his face expression also quite unsightly.

"Big brother, you!" He looked wide-eyed with disbelief at the academy’s gate entrance, where a lone figure stood.

"Old rules as usual, every person one piece of primeval stone." Fang Yuan stood while hugging his arms, his tone dull.

Fang Zheng’s mouth opened and closed a few times, then after some moments of effort he finally said, "Big brother, but I am the vice chairman now!"

"That’s true." Fang Yuan was expressionless as he nodded, giving Fang Zheng an indifferent look, "The vice chairman receives an allowance of five pieces each time. So you should give up three pieces instead."

Fang Zheng was flabbergasted, and for a moment he was unable to say a word.

A group of teenagers were crowding around Gu Yue Mo Bei as they walked over.

When they saw Fang Yuan blocking the school gate entrance, Gu Yue Mo Bei flew into a rage, his finger pointing towards Fang Yuan. "Fang Yuan! You sure have the guts to actually still dare hold us back?! Right now I am the chairman, and as a normal student when you see me, you should first bow and greet me!"

What answered him next was Fang Yuan’s fist.

Gu Yue Mo Bei was caught unexpected. After being hit by the fist, he could not refrain from retreating a few big steps backwards, his face full of disbelief. "You hit me, you actually dared to hit me? I am but the chairman!"

What answered him again was still Fang Yuan’s fists.

Bang, bang, bang.

After a few rounds of exchanging offensive and defensive blows, Gu Yue Mo Bei was knocked down to the floor by Fang Yuan, and he fell unconscious.

The surrounding youths were all wide-eyed as they watched, all of them unsure of how to react for a moment.

This was totally different from their imaginations!

The guards at the gate entrance had also been watching everything that happened under their eyelids. They could not help but whisper among themselves.

"Fang Yuan just knocked down the new class chairman, what do we do?"

"Salad dressing!" (2)

"What do you mean?"

"It means just watch them, then call some other guys and tidy up the place."

"But..."

"Hey hey, you want to provoke a person like Fang Yuan? I hope you remember what happened to Wang Da and Wu Er!"

The questioning guard immediately quivered and stopped saying anymore.

The two guards at the huge gate entrance stood perfectly straight and upright. To let an incident happen right beside them, it was as if they were deaf and blind, unable to hear or see anything.

After Fang Yuan sorted out Gu Yue Mo Bei, he also dealt with Fang Zheng and Chi Cheng.

It was then that the other teenagers realised that nothing had changed. Fang Yuan was still the same old Fang Yuan, and the extortion would still continue as always.

"Each of you hand over one piece of primeval stone, vice chairmen three pieces, class chairman eight pieces." Fang Yuan announced the new rules.

The youths could only sigh and obediently fish out their primeval stones.

When they walked out of the school gates, suddenly someone slapped his head and exclaimed loudly, "I’ve thought of it, no wonder Fang Yuan did not want the position of class chairman. He wanted to continue extorting us!"

"That’s right. Everytime he does it he would get about fifty-nine piece of primeval stones, and right now it’s gone up to about sixty-eight pieces. If he was the class chairman, he’d only get ten pieces." Quite a few of them were enlightened.

"He’s too treacherous, too cunning, too savage!" Some of them were slapping their thighs, full of hatred and resentment.

"Sigh, this way it means that there’s nothing extraordinary about the position of class and vice chairman. They’ll also be extorted and be left with two pieces, just like the rest of us."

It was unknown who just spoke, but when the youngsters heard it, they all could not help but turn silent.

Bang!

The academy elder slapped the table fiercely, feeling extremely furious.

"This Fang Yuan is just too absurd, what is he trying to do? To go as far as to continue extorting, taking eight pieces from the class chairman and three pieces from the vice chairman. With this, what is the difference of being a class and vice chairman in comparison with the other normal students?!" The academy elder tried his best to suppress his voice, but his tone was filled with fury.

When Fang Yuan rejected the position of class chairman, it meant rejecting his own integration into the clan’s system. In strict terms, this was a sort of betrayal towards the clan itself. This was enough to make the academy elder very angry.

Immediately after that Fang Yuan had gone to extort his fellow classmates. His handreach was getting further, and this had already gone beyond the academy elder’s bottom line. After the extortion this time, the influence of class chairman and vice chairman would be completely weakened.

Over time, the normal students would lose their respect and interest for these two positions.

While Fang Yuan’s actions this time seemed small, the meaning behind it was rather heavy.

It was pretty much using oneself’s own strength to challenge the clan’s system!

This was something the academy elder totally did not wish to see. He was raising the clan’s fresh new hopes, not the clan’s traitors. Yet despite knowing Fang Yuan had gone and challenge his baseline, he knew that he was unable to do anything to handle the matter.

If he really did, the first one who would not let him go would be the clan head. The second and third person to have opinions against him would be Gu Yue Chi Lian and Gu Yue Mo Chen.

The clan head put in all his hopes onto Gu Yue Fang Zheng, for Fang Zheng was the only A grade talent in three years. The clan leader needed a tenacious and independant genius, not a fragile and delicate flower who was cared for.

At the same time for Chi Lian and Mo Chen, they also had placed their hopes onto their own respective grandsons, hoping that their grandchildren would grow in the midst of setbacks and frustrations.

If the academy elder acted and replaced the students in punishing Fang yuan, once word got out then there would be the sayings of "Mo and Chi family’s future successors could not beat Fang Yuan and could only let the elders help them out."

How unpleasant that would be.

This would inevitably be a huge blow towards the fame and honor of the Mo and Chi family.

Of course the academy elder was not afraid of a small little Fang Yuan, but he was instead worried that his intervention would attract pressure from the three sides - the clan head, Mo and Chi bloodline. They pretty much made up of almost the entire Gu Yue high authorities. As a lowly elder, how could he possibly endure?

"The root of this matter still goes back to Fang Yuan’s secret. What in the world did he rely on to break through to the middle stage?" The academy elder restrained the fire in his heart and shot his gaze at the three investigation reports on his table.

The first report showed extensive info about Fang Yuan’s family background.

Fang Yuan was born into a good family; there was nothing strange about his identity and his life experience was perfectly clean and spotless. Both his parents had passed away and he was taken in by his uncle and aunt. However they did not get along, and ever since he attended the academy Fang Yuan had always stayed in the academy hostel.

The second report was about Fang Yuan’s life records.

He had showed early intelligence during junior age, and was seen optimistically by the clansmen, predicted to be a possible A grade talent. Yet after the Awakening Ceremony, he was tested to be a C grade, greatly disappointing the clan.

The third report was on Fang Yuan’s recent trail.

His everyday life patterns were very simple, and he had a rigid schedule. During the day he would always be attending lessons in the academy, and in the night he would always sleep in the dormitories. He was extremely hardworking in his cultivation, and would always enter a Gu Master’s cultivation every night, nurturing his aperture. There were times he would go out to the village’s only inn to have better meals and buy wine to drink.

He had a special affection towards wine, and loved to drink the green bamboo wine. Under his hostel bed, he kept tens of pots of green bamboo wine.

The academy elder looked carefully again at the three reports, his heart forming a deeper impression of Fang Yuan again.

"Both his parents died early, and he was unable to get along with his uncle and aunt... No wonder this brat Fang Yuan does not have a sense of belonging towards the clan. He was personally crowned as a genius among all by the clansmen, yet they also personally plucked him out of the sky and threw him down to the earth... No wonder he is so wild and unruly, and so peculiarly cold and detached. His life is so simple and he is assiduous towards cultivation. This is him holding back his breath, unwilling to concede, he wants to prove his ability to the clan! Thus that is why when I suppressed him, he retaliated so fiercely..."

Once the academy elder carefully thought until this point, he could not help but heave a sigh.

The more he learnt about Fang Yuan, the more he understood Fang Yuan.

Of course, understanding does not mean forgiving. Fang Yuan went against him, offending his dignity, rejecting to be class chairman, and even extorting his classmates. These were things he could not tolerate.

Shaking the information in his hands, the academy elder frowned again. "Although these reports are detailed, they have nothing to do with Fang Yuan’s advancement secret. It has already been a few days, these people are atrocious!"

Boom, boom, boom.

At this time, knocking sounds were heard on the door.

"Come inside," the academy elder said.

The door opened.

It was the clan head, Gu Yue Bo’s personal guard. "The clan leader has orders, esteemed elder, please hurry to the main family pavilion, there is a matter to discuss."

"Oh, what’s the matter?" The academy elder stood up from his seat, he had felt the severity of the issue from the guard’s tone and expression.

"The Rank four Gu Master Sir Jia Fu has come back, his brother Jia Jin Sheng has gone missing!" The guard answered.

"Hiss..." The academy elder instantly drew a mouthful of cold air.

---

(1) This analogy is unique to the author. I translated as closely as possible, yeah... Something about how basically two colors in the sky blend together like an emperor ‘sleeping’ with his concubine.

(2) Salad dressing is a chinese wordplay that is very hard to contextualise. (怎么办 Zen Me Ban and 凉拌 Liang Ban, are homophones with the character ‘Ban’ so it is a phrase commonly used when people don’t know how to reply to the "How?" question.)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The moon, round like a wheel, was faintly discernable among the floating clouds.

The academy elder hurriedly walked on the road, his face barely visible under the flickering moonlight.

It was hard to survive in this world, and Gu Masters going missing was a common thing. With his extensive life experience, the academy elder knew that under normal circumstances, these sort of sudden disappearances often spelled death.

Anyone can die, but Jia Jin Sheng cannot! Especially not dying in the Gu Yue Village.

His identity was special, his father being the Jia family head, his brother being the Rank four Gu Master Jia Fu.

A Rank four Gu Master has yellow gold primeval essence, and they have absurd fighting power. Within the Gu Yue clan, only the clan leader is Rank four and can match up to him, while the other clan elders were all Rank three.

The Jia family head was at an even higher cultivation level. He was a Rank five, and under his lead the Jia family rose to prosperity, becoming a large sized clan and possessing the resources of an entire mountain, with a large number of clansmen. Compared to them, Gu Yue clan was just a middle sized one.

If the two clans fought, Gu Yue village would definitely have the disadvantage.

The most crucial part was, if this matter was spread, the Gu Yue clan’s reputation would be tarnished. Many merchants are vigilant in choosing their routes. Without the interaction with merchants, the Gu Yue clan’s surplus local resources would not have an avenue to sell, and the external resources they required would not be purchasable. As time passes, they would definitely weaken.

"This matter is severe, if we do not handle it well, it would be a disaster!" The academy elder worriedly rushed towards the clan head’s pavilion.

Once he stepped into the conference hall in the clan head’s pavilion, the academy elder felt the solemn and serious atmosphere.

The main seat was occupied by the current clan leader Gu Yue Bo. The fat and short Jia Fu brought along five to six followers with him and stood at the center of the hall, adopting an accusative stance.

Under the bright light of the lamp, the solemn faces of the elders who were standing at side of their chairs were evident.

Jia Fu was a Rank four Gu Master, and since he was not sitting, these Rank three clan elders naturally did not dare to sit.

This was the deterrent force of a Rank four Gu Master.

It was also a form of respect for power.

"Greetings...." The clan elders were about to pay their respects, but they were stopped by the clan leader Gu Yue Bo’s hands.

Gu Yue Bo who had grizzled white hair was using his finger to rub his temple, a look of distress on his face, "I’m not going to say more about the matter, the clan academy is always under your supervision. Let me ask you, where is Gu Yue Fang Yuan?"

The academy elder was shocked. Internally he thought, how does this have to do with that brat Fang Yuan?

He answered politely, "At this timing, he should be cultivating in the academy hostel."

The clan leader sighed, "Brother Jia is very suspicious now, he thinks that his brother Jia Jin Sheng’s disappearance has something to do with Fang Yuan. I order you to go and bring him here immediately."

The academy elder shuddered in his heart. "Yes!"

He understood the severity of this issue, and hurriedly paid his respects before he turned around and left.

"Brother Jia, that Fang Yuan will be brought here immediately, have a seat." Gu Yue Bo pointed at a seat near him and said to Jia Fu.

Jia Fu laughed bitterly, cupping his fists at Gu Yue Bo. "I apologise to Brother Gu Yue! I was really anxious then, it has already been days since I’ve seen my brother, I fear for the worst. I really cannot afford to wait."

There are some things that, only after losing them can they be understood.

Jia Fu only realised it in these few days, the reason why his father paired him up with the burden Jia Jin Sheng for the caravan.

It was to test his nature. Seeing if he could, while suppressing his brother, remember their kinship, and at the same time take care of this little brother.

If Jia Jin Sheng was dead now, how would his father view him?

When he realized this point, he immediately held investigations in the caravan, and quickly set his target on the Gu Yue village.

He rushed back without a single break.

Now that he was standing, reluctant to sit, it was to create the impression that he was determined to get the culprit. This was both emitting pressure on the Gu Yue clan as well as giving his father a form of assurance when he return to the Jia family.

"Reporting to clan leader sir, Fang Yuan has been brought here." Quickly, the academy elder brought Fang Yuan to the hall.

"Gu Yue Fang Yuan pays his respects to clan elder, Sir Jia Fu, and the various clan elders," Fang Yuan said with an expressionless face.

"It’s him?" Jia Fu coldly observed Fang Yuan, at the same time, asked a female Gu Master.

This female Gu Master was the one who Fang Yuan bought the purple gold rock from at the gambling den.

"Yes, it’s him! There is no mistake," The female Gu Master stared at Fang Yuan, saying confidently.

Jia Fu nodded. Immediately his gaze was like two steel blades, slashing at Fang Yuan. But he did not interrogate openly, for this was the Gu Yue village, thus he had to give the Gu Yue clan leader some respect.

Thus he looked towards the Gu Yue clan leader.

The Gu Yue clan leader had a serious expression. He knew that Jia Fu purposely conversed with the female Gu Master loudly; it was not only to confirm Fang Yuan’s identity, but also to assert his motive.

He was implying to the Gu Yue clan head that he had the evidence in his hands, "I have sufficient confidence, so you better not overly defend your own clansman."

This caused some displeasure in the Gu Yue clan leader’s heart, thinking, "You Jia Fu lost your brother, it was your mistake to begin with. Now you come here to our Gu Yue village with an accusative stance, do you think my Gu Yue clan can be easily bullied? My Gu Yue clan is impartial and works around based on logic, but don’t be mistaken that this is a weakness!’

Thinking of this, he did not interrogate Fang Yuan immediately, but fiercely said to the female Gu Master, "Did you see clearly? I’m not afraid to tell you this, but Fang Yuan has a twin brother who looks extremely identical to him, are you really sure it’s him?"

The female Gu Master was just a Rank one, and under Gu Yue Bo’s pressure, she instantly showed a hesitant and nervous expression.

Jia Fu frowned and took a step forward, blocking her from Gu Yue Bo’s sight. Cupping his fists, he said, "Brother Gu Yue, I’ve always respected the Gu Yue clan. Especially the Gu Yue clan’s first and fourth clan leader, these two were Rank five powerhouses. One built the clan from scratch, where he went through tough times and created the Gu Yue family’s hundred year foundation. Another was a benevolent hero, for to protect his clan he sacrificed himself, and is worth respecting. Brother Gu Yue, as the clan leader, I believe you will act impartial, please interrogate this Fang Yuan."

Hearing that his tone had softened, Gu Yue Bo nodded, but his heart had already decided.

If this Fang Yuan was the culprit, then he would hand him over. After all he was just a C grade, there is no loss in losing him. As long as it is able to settle this dispute.

If Fang Zheng was the one who did it, Fang Yuan also has to take the blame. Fang Zheng is an A grade genius, the only one in three years. The clan higher-ups still expect to nurture him greatly to go against that Bai Ning Bing from the Bai clan village.

"Fang Yuan, don’t be nervous." Gu Yue clan leader smiled benevolently, using a gentle tone towards Fang Yuan, "Let me ask you, do you know any information about that Jia Jin Sheng?"

"Who is Jia Jin Sheng?" Fang Yuan looked up and said calmly.

"He’s lying!" The female Gu Master from the gambling den shrieked right as Fang Yuan finished his question.

The people in the discussion hall, upon hearing this shrieking, frowned and all looked towards her.

The female Gu Master pointed at Fang Yuan, showing an agitated expression, "It’s him, it’s him! At our gambling den, he bought six purple gold rocks, and the fifth was a mudskin toad. Young master Jia saw it and tried to use five hundred primeval stones to purchase it. This left a huge impression on me, even if a year or two passes I will not forget. Not only me, but the other Gu Masters at the gambling den saw it too."

"Is that so..." The Gu Yue clan leader’s smiled disappeared, showing a stiff expression and dragging his question towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan only nodded now, showing a hint of nervousness, and pretended to suddenly realize, "Oh it’s him. Alright, if he’s Jia Jin Sheng, then I do know him. But after the gambling den incident, I did not see him ever again."

"He’s lying again!" This time, it was not the female Gu Master, but a male Gu Master who called out in public.

Fang Yuan looked towards him, and as if he had recognised him, showed an expression of shock, but quickly tried to hide it.

His expression changes were reflected in everyone’s eyes.

Everyone started to ponder.

"Esteemed sirs, I am an employee at the wine shop." The male Gu Master first cupped his fists to everyone, and then vigorously pointed at Fang Yuan, "That night, I saw clearly at the wine shop, he was sitting with young master Jia Jin Sheng, and the two secretly conversed for a long time!"

Once he said so, the hall erupted into a clammer of soft discussions.

The academy elder used a cold gaze and looked at Fang Yuan.

The Gu Yue clan master moved backwards slightly, slowly leaning on the large chair.

"How can that be!" Fang Yuan showed an obviously frantic expression, hurriedly saying, "The wine shop had so many people, how can you recognise me just like that? You might be mistaken yourself!"

"Haha, I am definitely not wrong." The male Gu Master smiled, his gaze staring at Fang Yuan, at this moment he felt extremely confident.

"Not to mention it was young master Jia Jin Sheng who coming to our wine shop, we have to take care of him carefully. Even if it was not him, I would still have had recognised you, as you had given me a strong impression!"

Saying so, he raised his eyebrows, saying smugly, "Do you still remember? That day you came to our shop, wanting a cup of monkey wine. But you only drank a mouthful. After that you released the Liquor worm and fed the remaining monkey wine to it. I saw the Liquor worm and was very agitated, wanting to purchase it from you but you refused to sell it and walked away immediately!"

"Good, exactly what I wanted to hear." Fang Yuan laughed coldly in his heart, but showed an expression of shock on his face, subconsciously taking a step backwards.

"Liquor worm!" The eyes of the academy elder behind Fang Yuan shone.

But quickly he frowned again, and could not help but ask, "Fang Yuan, where did you get that Liquor worm?"

Fang Yuan clenched his fists, gritting his teeth, but refusing to answer.

The surrounding clan elders flew into a rage, starting to scowl.

"Fang Yuan, do you know the trouble you’ve caused!"

"Talk, exactly what happened?"

"Tell us of what you know, own up. This Liquor worm, is it Jia Jin Sheng’s?"

"How can it be his? The Liquor worm is obviously obtained by myself! I opened it!" Fang Yuan raised his head suddenly, his expression worked up, as if he could not stand such a slander, and shouted loudly with an indignant emotion.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"You opened it?" Gu Yue Bo frowned deeply.

"That’s right, at this point, I shall not hide it any further!" Fang Yuan acted as if he was risking everything, speaking urgently, "I bought six pieces of purple gold rock at the gambling den, but because I did not have enough primeval essence, I only opened five on the spot. The last one, I brought back to the hostel and after opening it, I found a Liquor worm inside. I was overjoyed as I had searched up information on it before, and knew that the Liquor worm is a rare Gu worm that could supplement my lack of talent, thus I refined it on the spot."

"Wait, you said that you bought six gambling rocks and opened a mudskin toad as well as another Liquor worm?" The clan elders upon hearing this, could not help but ask in an unbelievable tone.

"So what?" Fang Yuan answered as a matter of fact, then pointed at the female Gu Master, shouting, "She can be my witness!"

Everyone on the scene were momentarily stunned before turning to look at the female Gu Master.

The female Gu Master felt the pressure from all the gaze and did not dare to lie, so she honestly said, "It is indeed true, Fang Yuan bought six rocks and opened the mudskin toad on the fifth. He brought the sixth piece away, but I do not know what he opened inside."

"Buying six purple gold rocks and getting two Gu worms consecutively, isn’t this luck way too good?" The clan elders mumbled.

"What’s so hard to understand? It’s luck, who knows, heh, back in the days when I gambled rocks I also..."

"Wait, Gu worms are hard to refine, why did it sound like Fang Yuan easily refined it?" Some of the family elders asked suspiciously.

"You’re muddled. Don’t you know that when a Gu is extracted from a fossil, they’re extremely weak, tittering on the brink of death? Even refining then from a lower Rank is possible. What’s so peculiar about him refining the Liquor worm?" Someone immediately answered.

Fang Yuan continued, "I refined the Liquor worm and went to the stores on the second day, I indeed went to a wine shop in the afternoon and bought a cup of monkey wine. At night, I went again and witnessed a scamming scene, Jia Jin Sheng was selling a smelly fart fat worm as a Black Boar Gu to someone in my clan. Next, Sir Jia Fu appeared and resolved the dispute."

"I went to the wine shop again, but I did not expect to see Jia Jin Sheng drinking wine in a poor mood. I had just obtained the Liquor worm and was extremely happy, so I asked him how many primeval stones I could sell it for. Who knew that Jia Jin Sheng upon hearing my Liquor worm, wanted to forcefully buy it. I obviously rejected him, I had no intentions to sell it, only wanting to know its value. Even if I wanted to sell it, that would have to be after I am Rank two, thus I left on the spot."

Fang Yuan’s words had brought out the matter of Jia Jin Sheng and Jia Fu’s conflict, causing the clan elders to see Jia Fu in a different light.

Under these pressuring gazes, Jia Fu coughed and asked Fang Yuan with shining eyes, "Then did my brother chase after you?"

Fang Yuan nodded, half lying, "He not only chased me, but also added an extra fifty primeval stones. But I did not want to sell it, so he was furious, claiming that the Gu Yue clan was no big deal, asking me to watch out. After saying that, he walked away. I never saw him again."

Jia Fu nodded internally. With his understanding of Jia Jin Sheng, he definitely would have chased after Fang Yuan and gave threats as that was his style.

If Fang Yuan said he did not chase after him, that would be a lie.

But since Fang Yuan said so, this led Jia Fu to a predicament. His investigations led up only to this clue. Did Jia Jin Sheng really not search for Fang Yuan after that? Maybe he found Fang Yuan again afterwards, and as the two could not agree on the matter, he was killed by Fang Yuan ------ This is entirely possible.

‘Speak, was Jia Jin Sheng killed by you!" Thinking of this, Jia Fu interrogated fiercely, attempting to pressurize Fang Yuan with his aura.

Fang Yuan denied once again, claiming that he did not see Jia Jin Sheng anymore.

Jia Fu had no other evidence, and while one side questioned intensely, the other denied. At this point, it had become a stalemate.

As Gu Yue Bo listened to their conversation, he turned displeased. That Jia Jin Sheng actually dared to threaten the Gu Yue clan on Qing Mao mountain, this was not giving the Gu Yue clan any respect! Now this Jia Fu dared to interrogate a Gu Yue clan member so intensely in front of all the Gu Yue clan higher-ups. Nevermind if he had evidence, but now that he has no evidence or proof, if this matter spread out, what would happen to the Gu Yue clan’s honour?

"Brother Jia, it’s not that I want to speak out of turn." The clan leader interrupted his interrogation and continued, " Jia Jin Sheng has gone missing for so many days, hope is bleak. The culprit who caused this crime definitely left behind some traces. Did brother find anything yet?"

Jia Fu stared fiercely at Fang Yuan before raising his head and sighed, "I understand brother’s words! If there were any traces, I would not have come here to find the culprit. That criminal is obviously experienced with vile methods and meticulous handling. To speak the truth, all the clues are at a dead end, and on the day we left, there was a huge rain that could have washed away all the possible blood traces."

Gu Yue Bo smiled faintly. "Brother Jia, I heard that your Jia family has a tracing Gu worm called the Underworld Path Butterfly. It can emit soul fragrance and be implanted on Gu worms. The scent is colourless and odourless, and never fades. Your Jia family member’s Gu worms all have this scent. As long as you use the Underworld Path Butterfly, following the fragrance, you’ll be able to find the Gu worms and thus your brother."

Jia Fu solemnly said, "I used the Underworld Path Butterfly long ago, but there was no effect. I’m sure you’ve heard that once the Gu worm dies, the fragrance dissipates. Evidently the murderer killed all of the Gu worms in my brother’s possession.

Gu Yue Bo’s words turned, "That’s strange. The murderer harmed your brother, but he did not go for the Gu worms, or for extortion to get primeval stones. The murderer killed this tiny Rank one Gu Master, what was the motive?"

Indeed, what was the motive?

Regardless of whether Jia Jin Sheng was dead, there had to be a motive, right?

If not for Gu worms nor primeval stones, then was it for love?

But if it was a crime of passion, it had to be a long term process, and Jia Fu would not have come to the Gu Yue clan. The caravan members and clansmen would fall under greater suspicion as they have a long relationship with him.

At once, the hall fell into silence.

Fang Yuan followed everyone’s gazes, and suddenly said to Jia Fu, "Maybe Jia Jin Sheng was killed by you. I heard before that your family is splitting assets, now that one brother is dead, wouldn’t you get more inheritance?"

"Shut up!"

"Baseless accusation, do not slander Sir Jia Fu."

Immediately the family elders erupted.

Fang Yuan kept quiet immediately, his gaze shining obscurely, but his objective had been reached.

His earlier words were like a pebble that was thrown into the elders’ sea of thoughts, causing waves of ripples.

The clan elders followed this train of thought, and started to think, "Jia Fu cannot kill Jia Jin Sheng, this causes more harm to him than reward. Wait, even if he won’t do it, that does not mean others won’t..."

"The Jia family’s internal dispute!" A certain elder had a flash of inspiration and lightly muttered.

His volume was not high, but in the silent hall it could be heard clearly.

At once, the elders’ gaze shone.

"Finally, they have thought of this." Fang Yuan’s mouth twitched, his eyelids drooping, hiding away his cold gaze.

The Jia family’s clan leader wants to split the assets and impart the role of clan leader, and because of this his children underwent intense competition, especially Jia Fu and Jia Gui, both being Rank four Gu Masters and having their own supporters.

In these few years, the Jia family situation is somewhat known by many of the mountain villages.

Jia Jin Sheng’s misfortune was too strange. Currently there was no evidence showing that Fang Yuan was the killer. It was obvious that the motivation for murder was not enough just based on the theory of killing just because of a Liquor worm. At the same time, the murderer’s actions and methods would not be so meticulous and secretive.

But if Jia Gui was the one acting in the shadows, then it could be explained.

Everyone present was a higher-up, and as someone in a position of power, there had to be something capable about them. At least for political schemes, they had great intuition and perception.

The Jia family dispute, this gave everyone’s imaginations a pair of wings.

The Jia family clan leader had arranged Jia Jin Sheng to join the caravan. One reason was to test Jia Fu’s nature, to see if he was a good brother, and only suppressed but not bully his brother.

Now that Jia Jin Sheng was in trouble, Jia Fu would be implicated, and who is the true winner?

Obviously Jia Fu’s greatest competitor --- Jia Gui!

The criminal’s actions were so fluid, causing all clues to come to a dead end, this showed how experienced the criminal was. How could this be done by a fifteen year old like Fang Yuan?

All the answers were revealed at once!

The discussion hall was still silent, but the elders exchanged gazes full of meaning.

"To make someone believe in something wholeheartedly, it is not through convincing, but directing." Fang Yuan’s keen observation allowed him to see these glances, and he laughed coldly in his heart, but his face still showed an expression of indignance and stubbornness.

Jia Fu’s face was so dark and gloomy it could drip water.

The matter of the Jia family internal dispute caused him to think of Jia Gui.

At that moment, his soul shook!

Who else had a greater motivation than Jia Gui?

No one!

"I understand now, I understand everything." The academy elder stood behind Fang Yuan, looking at him. His eyes shone, "Fang Yuan is both lucky and unfortunate, meeting Jia Jin Sheng at the last moment. With his age of just starting to attend school, how can he get rid of all the evidence? If he had such scheming abilities, how can he show this expression of indomitability. He denied it earlier just to hide the existence of the Liquor worm."

At this point, everyone had dispelled their suspicious towards Fang Yuan!

"Getting rid of the suspicions on me is just the first step, what happens next is crucial." Fang Yuan was in grasp of the situation, and at this point, everything was going according to plan. He sighed internally and looked at Jia Fu.

Jia Fu looked at him too, the unfriendliness in his eyes growing obviously more intense.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Jia Fu was conflicted.

He had dispelled his suspicions of Fang Yuan and was certain that Jia Gui was the mastermind.

"But yet, so what if I know the truth?" Jia Fu felt anger and sadness surging, "I have no evidence at hand, so if I accused Jia Gui in front of father without any proof, father might even think I am trying to frame him!"

Jia Fu was smart, and he looked at Fang Yuan, a light flashing in his eyes.

Jia Jin Sheng had journeyed with him together, and now that he was missing, it was Jia Fu’s fault for not taking care of him! Since he could not accuse Jia Gui, he had to give his father some answer.

And this answer was in front of him!

"That’s right, if Fang Yuan is the scapegoat, it would at least help me get through this crisis. Once I get over it, I can get back at Jia Gui with twice the payback." Jia Fu thought deviously.

He raised his pitch, interrogating Fang Yuan, "Fang Yuan, how do you prove that you did not harm Jia Jin Sheng?"

The clan elders were stunned. This is obviously your internal dispute, why are you still grabbing onto my clansman?

Only the Gu Yue clan leader looked grim, his expression turning sharp as he stared at Jia Fu.

"Fang Yuan, what proof do you have to show that you were not present at the time and did not harm Jia Jin Sheng? If you can’t prove it, you are the murderer!" Jia Fu pointed at Fang Yuan, his gaze furious as he threatened with his aura.

"He’s trying to push our clan’s Fang Yuan into being the scapegoat. How atrocious!" At this point, the clan elders had reacted and their expressions all turned unkind.

They had been fighting and scheming against each other for a long time, so if they thought about it, they would know easily about Jia Fu’s standpoint and intentions.

"Witness? Of course I do! I prepared it long ago." Fang Yuan smiled internally, but showed an expression of shock, as if he wanted to speak but couldn’t.

"No need for others, just tell me if you do or not!" Jia Fu raised his voice again, forcing Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan showed an indignant expression, but finally gritted his teeth and said helplessly, "No."

"Haha. Then you are —"" Jia Fu was about to declare his verdict but at that point.

"Halt!" The academy elder took a step forward and stood in front of Fang Yuan with a solemn expression, "Of course he has a witness, that would be me!"

"You?" Jia Fu asked in shock.

"That’s right, me." The academy elder, facing Rank four Jia Fu, was slightly overpowered. But seeing Gu Yue Bo’s encouraging gaze, he gathered his courage and raised his head, "These days when Fang Yuan unexpectedly became the first to break through the middle stage, I sent my men to investigate him. His everyday activities and actions are recorded down, there was no time for him to harm Jia Jin Sheng."

"Yes, this is it..." Fang Yuan hid behind the academy elder’s back, where no one could see his curled lips, revealing a smile.

Jia Fu’s expression was dim, he did not expect the academy elder to stand out and protect Fang Yuan.

The crucial point was, the Gu Yue clan leader did not object. This had a great meaning, for it meant the Gu Yue clan was going to protect Fang Yuan.

"I get it! I wanted to get Fang Yuan to become the scapegoat, but that was from my perspective, and I did not consider their perspective. Indeed, once Fang Yuan is criminalized, the Gu Yue clan has to bear the evil name of harming a Jia family member. From then on they will have to face the Jia family’s retribution as well as losing their own reputation. Furthermore, future caravans would not dare to come here and trade anymore, the loss is too great!"

Thinking of this, Jia Fu was anguished and wanted to slap his own head.

The Gu Yue higher-ups did have such considerations.

Fang Yuan was a C grade, so if he really harmed Jia Jin Sheng, handing him over was nothing. But the point was, now that his suspicion had been cleared, if he was handed over, wouldn’t the Gu Yue clan suffer a great injustice and lose out greatly?

Knowing that this conflict could not be resolved, Jia Fu gritted his teeth, determined to get his way. He said, "If so, why don’t you let me use the Footprint Gu. Once this Gu is used, it will show us his last 30,000 footprints on the floor."

The academy elder scoffed in displeasure.

Jia Fu’s words meant he did not trust them. But he has no reason to stop him, thus he let Jia Fu through.

"Come and test!" Fang Yuan laughed coldly at Jia Fu, walking towards him with his head lowered.

He was confident, having predicted this. Thus, these few days he kept his activities within the village and did not go to the secret cave.

Under the Gu Yue higher-ups supervision, Jia Fu did not play any tricks.

The Footprint Gu was very peculiar, it was shaped like a person’s foot. Its material was like a translucent yogurt, giving others a feeling of smoothness, and the surface had a yellow-green luster.

Its size was small, being only palm size.

Jia Fu held it in his hands, sending primeval essence into the Footprint Gu.

The Footprint Gu became brighter, and then suddenly with a "bam" sound, exploded into a cloud of yellow green powder.

The powdery cloud enveloped Fang Yuan and spun around him before flying out of the discussion hall.

Where the powder cloud passed through, the floor would show a series of footprints.

These footprints glowed in a yellow green light around the same size as Fang Yuan’s foot. They were Fang Yuan’s footprints when he entered the discussion hall.

The footprints extended from the family head pavilion into the academy hostel and then to the academy and circulated. Other than that, it reached the mountain village’s inn.

The powder cloud became smaller as it flew, and finally at the 30,000th step, it vanished.

The results were clear, everyone had checked and knew that Fang Yuan was innocent, there were no suspicious points.

Jia Fu sighed, taking out a small jade box.

He opened the jade box, where there was only a jade piece inside.

The jade piece was a translucent emerald colour, and there was a Gu sealed inside.

This was a phasmids(1), its body long and slim, with the colour of jade, its entire body looking like a bamboo tube.

The phasmids was normally longer than a palm, but this one wasn’t, being only the size of a fingernail. On its surface, it emitted a white glow.

"Green jade as its body, white light enveloping its form, this is the Bamboo Gentleman!" At once, some of the elders recognised this Gu worm and exclaimed.

Even Gu Yue Bo was moved. He could not refrain from advising, "Brother Jia, this Bamboo Gentleman is a Rank four Gu, it is not easily refined. Why waste it here?"

Jia Fu shook his head, looking at Fang Yuan: "This Bamboo Gentleman was obtained through gambling rocks when I was young. The rock was only opened halfway before it could no longer be extracted. As everyone knows, this Gu worm is fed honesty as food, being able to detect lies from birth. Only an honest gentleman who has never lied can refine and feed this Gu."

"Fang Yuan, you just have to open this rock and keep the Bamboo Gentleman in your aperture. Whatever I ask you, you will answer. Next, we will take out this Gu and let everyone see if it changed colour. If the Gu changes colour, you’re lying!"

"No problem." Fang Yuan did not hesitate. He immediately opened the jade piece and did as Jia Fu instructed.

The Bamboo Gentleman appeared in his aperture and emitted a faint green glow, covering the primeval sea.

Fang Yuan felt that if he said a single lie, the Bamboo Gentleman could detect it and turn its body from green into another color.

But he only accepted it because he had his trump card.

"Spring Autumn Cicada!" With a thought, the Spring Autumn Cicada awakened and let out a trace of its aura.

This aura was overpowering, and it immediately suppressed the Bamboo Gentleman.

The Bamboo Gentleman emitted a green glow and immediately shrunk its body. Its entire body was curled up, trembling in fear. How could it have the excessive spirit to detect lies?

Jia Fu begin interrogating, with his first question hitting home, "Fang Yuan, did you harm my brother Jia Jin Sheng?"

"No!" Fang Yuan affirmed.

Jia Fu asked, "Do you have any other information about him?"

Fang Yuan shook his head, "No idea."

Jia Fu asked again, "Did you say anything dishonest to us earlier?"

Fang Yuan shook his head again, "No."

"Alright, you can take out the Bamboo Gentleman now." After finishing with three questions, Jia Fu instructed Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan took out the Bamboo Gentleman, and everyone saw that it was still an emerald green colour with no changes.

The clan elders heaved a sigh of relief.

Jia Fu’s expression became milder as he kept the Bamboo Gentleman, cupping his fists towards Gu Yue Bo, "Much offense this time, brother Gu Yue."

"No matter, the truth is what we wanted to see as well." Gu Yue Bo waved his hand, then sighed, "But what a pity for this Bamboo Gentleman."

The Bamboo Gentleman had the ability to detect lies and was a Rank four Gu, thus it was very valuable. But feeding and refining it was not easy. It had to be refined by an honest gentleman. If any other Gu Master had said a single lie, the refinement would fail and the Bamboo Gentleman would die on the spot.

Its food was honesty. It would reside in the aperture of an honest gentleman and consuming the gentleman’s honesty as food to survive.

Now that the Bamboo Gentleman had been opened, it was extremely weak, but it had no food to restore its strength. After being treated so harshly by Fang Yuan, its death was set in stone.

Jia Fu shook his head, looking at the Bamboo Gentleman in his head, not feeling any pity.

He said solemnly, "I have already done my best to investigate, but I received no results. This time, when I get back to the family, I will employ the divine investigator Tie Xue Leng(2), it would definitely get this matter cleared up! Goodbye."

Saying so, he cupped his fists towards Gu Yue Bo and left, crisp and quick, with a certain elegance to it.

Seeing Jia Fu and the rest leaving, Gu Yue Bo heaved a sigh of relief and said, "You can all leave now."

He waved at the clan elders, but suddenly thought of something and said, "Academy elder please stay back."

Without losing a single drop of sweat, Fang Yuan walked out of the family head’s pavilion safe and sound.

(1) Phasmids: Stick-bugs. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Phasmatodea

(2) 铁血冷 - Tie Xue Leng, Tie means Metal and is the name of the Tie clan. Xue Leng means cold blood. This name will be important.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Clan leader, what is the matter?" The academy elder respectfully stood at a corner.

"It’s nothing much, take a seat, I have a story to share with you." Gu Yue Bo squinted his eyes and said slowly.

"Your subordinate shall listen with full attention!" Academy elder chose to sit at the seat closest to the clan leader.

Clan leader Gu Yue Bo began his story on Ren Zu.

Some say ——

Ever since Ren Zu was able to get their names and subdued the Rules and Regulation Gu, his first order was for them to capture a longevity Gu.

Rules and Regulation Gu, one round and other other square, worked together and could capture all the Gu in the world, a longevity Gu was nothing difficult.

Ren Zu used the longevity Gu and got back his youth, becoming 20 years old again.

But now the rules Gu said, "Human, although you subdued us, every time you command us, it will add a rule and regulation."

Regulation Gu continued, "We can catch the longevity Gu for you, this is the first order. Our new rule and regulation is, we will not repeatedly catch the same Gu for you."

That means, if Ren Zu wanted to catch a longevity Gu again, the two Rules and Regulation Gu would not help.

Ren Zu nodded, having no choice but to accept.

He gave his second command, "Then, other than the longevity Gu, please capture all the other ten thousand Gu in the world for me."

Rules and regulation Gu got this command and Rules Gu turned into a giant circle, encompassing the universe. Regulation Gu turned into a giant square, covering the large world.

One square and one round formed a giant net together, enveloping the entire world.

When they shrunk again and returned to Ren Zu, all the Gu in the world other than longevity Gu were captured.

Ren Zu was overjoyed, with this all the Gu belonged to him, from now on he was the ruler of the world!

But once he opened the net, with a swoosh, a large number of worms flew outside and the Gu that Rules and Regulation Gu worked hard to catch, all escaped fervently.

When Ren Zu closed the net, only five Gu were left.

"Why is this?" Ren Zu was astonished.

Rules and Regulation answered him, "Human, the world has over ten thousand Gu with all sorts of abilities. You have no strength or knowledge, how can you subdue them? We can only capture Gu for you, to subdue them, you have to rely on yourself to get them to work for you."

Next they added, "This is your second order, so we’ll add a second rule and regulation --- From now on, we can only catch one Gu for you at a time."

Ren Zu could only nod, and carefully opened the net, only showing a small gap.

The remaining five Gu contained the Strength and Wisdom Gu. Seeing this, Ren Zu was overjoyed.

He said to Strength Gu, "Strength Gu, you left me back then, do you have any regrets? If you succumb to me now, I will return you your freedom."

Strength Gu said, "Human, you are wrong. I didn’t leave not because I couldn’t, but because I wanted to stay. You want to subdue me but that’s impossible. I only succumb to those stronger than me, but you are out of the question. However we can deal again, give me your youth and I will temporarily obey you."

Ren Zu was reluctant upon hearing this, he had just gotten back his youth, was he about to lose it again?

But he desired strength, he knew that with strength, he would get stronger and life would get easier.

Moreover, with strength, he could subdue more Gu.

Thus, Ren Zu accepted, and formed a second deal with it.

Ren Zu became middle-aged at once, and the strength Gu flew out of the web and landed on Ren Zu’s shoulder.

Ren Zu had strength, and was full of confidence.

He said to Wisdom Gu: "Wisdom Gu, you left me back then, do you have any regrets? If you succumb to me now, I will return you your freedom."

Wisdom Gu said, "Human, you are wrong. I did not leave not because I couldn’t, but because I wanted to stay. You want to subdue me but that’s impossible. I only succumb to those smarter than me, yet you are not smarter than me. But we can deal again, give me your middle age and I will temporarily obey you."

Ren Zu upon hearing this, refused to do the same deal again.

He treasured his life more, and he also knew that once he sold his middle age, he would be left with old age. Before long, the Strength and Wisdom Gu would leave him again, just like last time.

Ren Zu refused to deal, but did not want to let go of the Wisdom Gu.

Wisdom Gu was anxious, reluctantly giving in, "Alright, Human, you win. I lost to you this time. As long as you tell me what method you used to capture me, I will admit defeat and not take anything from you, being at your disposal."

Upon hearing this, Ren Zu was overjoyed and before the Rules and Regulation Gu could stop him, he said, "I used the Rules and Regulation Gu to capture you."

Wisdom Gu laughed upon hearing, "I remembered it, so these Gu are called Rules and Regulation. Haha, now that I know your names, you can no longer capture me."

Saying so, it turned into a flash of light and flew away, vanishing into thin air.

Rules and Regulation Gu begin to complain, "Human, we told u long ago that our name should be known by you alone, and not others. Otherwise, we would be used by others. Look what happened, now that Wisdom Gu knows our names, it spells trouble."

Only then did Ren Zu realise that he was tricked by Wisdom Gu. He was anguished, for he knew he lost the only chance he had of capturing the Wisdom Gu using Rules and Regulation.

Saying so, Gu Yue Bo’s story came to an end. He looked at the academy elder with a meaningful gaze.

Academy elder jumped from his seat. He had heard of Ren Zu’s story long ago, but from Gu Yue Bo’s mouth, it had a greater meaning.

His gaze shone and his heart understood. He bowed slightly at Gu Yue Bo, respectfully saying, "Clan leader, you are using this story as an analogy? Fang Yuan as the Wisdom Gu and the clan as Ren Zu. Although Ren Zu used the Rules and Regulation Gu to capture Wisdom Gu and managed to trap it, the Wisdom Gu eventually escaped."

Saying so, the academy elder paused and thought about it for a while, before looking at Gu Yue Bo. "Sir clan leader, you want me to let go of Fang Yuan and stop pressuring him? But he’s getting more and more overboard..."

Gu Yue Bo stopped the academy elder’s words, holding out his hand, indicating for him to sit and speak.

The academy elder sat and heard Gu Yue Bo sigh, "You, your comprehension is still superb, being an intelligent person, easily getting my point. Unfortunately your grasp of the situation is still too small, you can only see that tiny plot of land in front of you. Let me tell you, the academy is a small matter, and the clan is really the important one."

"I know what you are worried about, afraid that the other students are heavily suppressed by Fang Yuan, eventually losing the fire in their heart. Hehehe." Gu Yue Bo shook his head, pointing at academy elder, "You’re overthinking it."

"What do you think the clan is doing? Just relying on your academy to nurture new people? Of course not, behind every student, there’s their parents, elders, and friends. Only with these people’s support, encouragement, expectations, our Gu Yue clan’s new generation can have the confidence and motivation in their hearts."

"Fang Yuan has indeed repeatedly exceeded my expectations, he has a hint of outstanding excellence. I have been observing Fang Zheng secretly and I have long known about Fang Yuan’s extortions, just let him continue. Use him to train Fang Zheng, Mo Bei and Chi Cheng, these rough jades. There are many advantages in this matter, at the very least this round of students have the best fighting skills among all the previous seasons."

Academy elder was worried, "But clan leader, excessive hurdles isn’t a good thing either, it will crush the jade. Especially that Fang Yuan has the Liquor worm now, this worm provides great help to a Rank one Gu Master. I’m worried that at the Rank one stage, under Fang Yuan’s suppression, no one can overturn the situation."

"Then let them be unable to turn over the situation!" Gu Yue Bo snorted, showing the grace and callousness of a person in power, "This tiny setback, what does it matter? Is it scarier than death? With their family elder’s support, if they still lacked motivation, then they are not even jade to begin with and have no value to nurture. The clan has tons of new students into the academy each year, so if this season doesn’t succeed, there’s always the next. As for Gu Yue Fang Zheng, starting tomorrow night, I will teach him in secret."

"With the clan leader’s personal teaching, that is really Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s fortune." Academy elder licked his boots at the appropriate timing(1).

Gu Yue Bo’s expression softened as he looked at academy elder, instructing, "Do you know the reason why after so many decades, you are still the academy elder? Have greater tolerance, I know Fang Yuan infringed your dignity and made you humiliated, but do you really have to be so calculative with a junior from a younger generation?"

"I know that Fang Yuan has some earlier wisdom, but he is still a youngster and tends to be rash. If not, he would not have hurt the guards in public and caused you to be in a predicament. He was furious internally back then and that is understandable. From being hailed as genius to a commoner, it is normal to be angry at the clan."

"He is actually very childish, you can tell from him trying to hide the Liquor worm. How can the Liquor worm be hid? He is not mature yet and is still innocent, don’t think of him as a scary being. Comparing him to the Wisdom Gu, I am thinking too highly of him. At most, he has some small intelligence, but lacks true wisdom and knowledge. If he hid the fact that he rose to middle stage silently, or accepted the class chairman position without any displeasure, that would truly be deep scheming."

"Clan leader, your meaning is?" Academy elder raised his eyebrows.

"What I’m trying to say is, Fang Yuan is discontented with the clan, thus let him go vent his anger. An ant spitting at an elephant, will the elephant care? Emotions are meant to be let out and not bottled inside, so once he’s done venting, he will naturally fuse into the clan. Our Gu Yue clan has been around for nearly a thousand years ever since the first generation founded it. There has been countless of people who were discontented with the clan, but eventually did any of them manage to overturn the clan?"

"A clan is not just about rules and regulations, there’s also blood relation and kinship. Ren Zu wanted to use the rules and regulations to capture wisdom. Yet not only did he lose, but he also informed wisdom of the rules and regulations. There is profound meaning in this story - the rules are dead, but people are alive, and relationships are deep. If you only know how to use rules and regulations to catch people, it will only increase resentment and cause Fang Yuan to be more dissociated with the clan. Fang Yuan is only a C grade, if he’s lucky, after tens of years he’d still be a low-ranking clan elder. But he is still Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s twin brother, do you understand now?"

"Understood!" Hearing Gu Yue Bo’s final sentence, the academy elder realized at once.

"Mmm, if a family only has rules and regulations, then the family is a pile of dead objects. But if you add in blood relationship, it’ll be alive." Gu Yue Bo nodded, "and one more sentence, I want you to remember."

"Please admonish me, sir clan elder."

Gu Yue Bo, with a distant gaze, looked out of the window towards the moon, "The sea can hold the water from thousands of rivers, it’s big because of its capacity. A person is great when he can be tolerant and forgiving to many other people. Remember this, and leave."

"Yes clan leader sir, your subordinate takes his leave," said the academy elder as he left the hall.

(1) Boot-licking basically.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Tonight’s moon was especially round.

The moonlight shone splendid and like muslin, draping over the Qing Mao Mountain.

The Treasure Brass Toad would travel a hundred meters with every hop. Due to its leaping method to move forward, the precipitous and narrow mountain path was unable to serve as a limitation or hindrance to it.

Jia Fu and his crew sat on the back of the Treasure Brass Toad. After exiting the Gu Yue Village, they once again headed towards the merchant caravan’s direction.

The wind blew past their ears, and their view followed the Treasure Brass Toad as it moved up and down.

The moonlight shone on everyone’s faces and they all looked solemn, while Jia Fu’s face was cold as ice.

After a while, a close subordinate could not stand this atmosphere and asked Jia Fu, "Master, what are we going to do now? Jia Jin Sheng’s death, once master returns, how will you answer to old master? Should we find a scapegoat first..."

Jia Fu shook his head, but avoided the question, "Do you know the story of Ren Zu?"

The subordinate was stunned, not expecting this answer. At once he did not know how to reply.

Jia Fu continued, "Ren Zu had the Rules and Regulation Gu, and could capture all the ten thousand Gu in the world, obtaining strength but losing wisdom. At that point his net still contained three Gu. He opened and saw that they were the Attitude Gu, Belief Gu and Suspicion Gu respectively. Ren Zu was unwilling to let them go, thus the three Gu could only bet with him. Once Ren Zu opens the net, they would run out in three different directions, and whoever is captured by Ren Zu would be subdued. Guess, who did Ren Zu capture in the end?"

The trusted aide thought, and answered, "It’s the Attitude Gu!"

"Do you know why?" Jia Fu asked. The loyal subordinate shook his head.

Jia Fu laughed, "Because attitude means everything. No matter if father ‘believes’ or ‘suspects’, I have already displayed my ‘attitude’. Jia Jin Sheng went missing, and I immediately conducted investigations in the caravan. Once I had a clue, I rushed towards the Gu Yue clan without stop. At the village, I risked the danger of being attacked by them and interrogated them on the spot. I did not even sit down, and to prove Fang Yuan’s words, I went as far as to use the Rank four Bamboo Gentleman."

"Once I get back, I will even spend a ton of money to employ the divine investigator, inviting Tie Leng Xue to investigate this matter. Regardless of whether Jia Jin Sheng is dead or alive, as his brother I have already done all that I should, my attitude shows everything! I have thought it through earlier, we do not need a scapegoat. We shall go back in this honest state, because I was not at fault for this matter! Finding a scapegoat, that might just be a trap by Jia Gui. If I can find a scapegoat, he can also find someone to overturn the case."

His subordinate was shocked and said, "Master, you really suspect that young master Jia Gui was behind this?"

"Hmph, who else but him can do something so perfectly?" Saying so, Jia Fu’s face distorted, anger bursting from his eyes, "Before this, I was thinking about our blood relationship and did not do such a thing to him. But since he is so devious, I will have to pay him back an eye for an eye, don’t blame me for being unscrupulous!"

He did not know that far away in a distant place, there were a pair of eyes sending him off.

Fang Yuan stood on the hillside as he silently watched.

The view tonight was truly spectacular.

The golden yellow, round moon was high up in the night sky, shining so brightly that the entire earth was lit bright.

The nearby green mountains were verdant and lush, all kinds of flora growing about. The Man Mountain’s pine and cypress trees, as well as the Qing Mao Mountain’s distinctive green spear bamboo grew in continuous clumps, cluster after cluster. A wide expanse of dark green colour poured down in torrents from the mountaintop and flowed down to the foot of the mountain.

Faraway mountains ranged endlessly, forming a muddled heavy black shadow under the moonlight.

The tortuous and entwined mountain road resembled goat intestines as it meandered into the distance, occasionally sheltered away by the forest, stretching out all the way.

Jia Fu and his group sat atop the Treasure Brass Toad, following the mountain road as they moved forward. As they continued on the leaping toad, their figures were finally covered away by the trees.

Although the mountain terrain could not affect the Treasure Brass Toad’s speed, Jia Fu did not dare to recklessly cut through Qing Mao mountain, for if he barges into a monster horde, even with his Rank four cultivation he would still not come out unscathed. Hence following the mountain trail and moving forward is the best path.

Not long ago, Fang Yuan was standing on the hill holding an umbrella, sending the caravan off. But now he was here again, watching Jia Fu leave.

"The trouble from killing Jia Jin Sheng is finally settled." He eyes were dark and remote while his heart was calm, a bout of peacefulness.

Even since he killed Jia Jin Sheng that night, he had been considering how to tie the loose ends.

He was clear that without base or support, if the truth was revealed, the Gu Yue clan would definitely sacrifice him. But if he just hid it blindly, the truth was bound to get exposed one day.

A smart way to lie, is to have truth and lies, some truth in his lies, and some lies in his truth.

He had to direct the trouble elsewhere!

This incident was like a chess game with two sides against each other. One side is Jia Fu’s caravan, while the other is the Gu Yue clan. In this incident, be it Gu Yue Bo, the academy elder or Jia fu, they were all pawns, heck even Fang Yuan himself was just a pawn.

To protect the pawn that represents himself, he had to use the two opposing sides and find a chance in between.

Few days ago, Fang Yuan had already started plotting.

He first made use of those two guards to come up with a good show with the academy elder at the academy. Next he hid the existence of the Liquor worm and stirred the curiosity of the clansman, gaining great attention, attracting the higher-ups. Simultaneously, he allowed the academy elder to hold private investigations.

Next, he extorted his classmates and expressed his rashness, wildness and displeasure towards the clan, "showing weakness" to the Gu Yue higher-ups.

Then he counted the days and waited for Jia Fu.

During the interrogation he displayed his immaturity and fear, which allowed him to lead the other’s thoughts by the nose. Letting them find out the "truth".

Lastly he made use of the Gu Yue clan and Jia Fu’s opposing interests, and turned the academy elder who was suspicious of him and held investigations, into his eye witness.

The Bamboo Gentleman was a small unexpected accident, but it was still a Rank four Gu and under the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura, the Bamboo Gentleman ironically became Fang Yuan’s greatest evidence.

Finally, Fang Yuan not only explained perfectly where he got the Liquor worm, but also pushed the blame to the innocent Jia Gui, while he himself got out of this incident without losing a hair.

"Academy elder was asked to stay behind, it seems that Gu Yue Bo is going to interfere in the academy’s matters and get rid of the plan to pressurize me. With his nature, he does have this tolerance. But his real motive isn’t me, it should probably be Fang Zheng. One of my motives for blowing up the matter was to stir a commotion and make the higher-ups notice. If Gu Yue Bo doesn’t show up, there will still be Gu Yue Mo Chen and Chi Lian who would come out to defend their reputation."

"As for Jia Fu, he should be certain that Jia Gui is the culprit now. With the flames of revenge burning in his chest, hehe, I am looking forward to it. With my interference, their sibling conflict would be elevated. I wonder if that Gu Master competition would be brought forward?"

"Oh yes, there is still that divine investigator Tie Leng Xue. Tie Leng Xue... hmph." Fang Yuan repeated this name, and after half a beat, lightly smiled, "Among the righteous path, this is indeed a character. Unfortunately he is riddled with official business and has a tight schedule. For this matter, it is not easy to get him to come. Jia Fu wants to show his attitude thus he has to invite him, but the time is hard to gauge, at the very least it should be arranged in two to three year’s time."

In two to three years, he would have Rank two or three cultivation. By then, life would be in a completely different sight.

The night wind blew over with the fresh cool air of the mountains, penetrating with a kind of fragrance.

Fang Yuan breathed in, feeling more refreshed.

He looked into the distance, his field of view wide. The unrestrained mountains were picturesque, looking tranquil and auspicious under the moon.

"The bright moon illuminates among pines, the clear spring flows upon stone."

Fang Yuan lightly recited, he could not help but think of a verse from a fable from Earth.

There were a group of monkeys that pursued the moon. They saw the moon in the well, and they wanted to fish it up. The monkey from behind grabbed hold of the tail of the monkey before it, and the monkey before it grabbed ahold of the monkey in front of him. Thus this went on repeatedly until the first monkey was able to touch the water surface of the well.

Once it stretched out its hand, the water rippled and the moon disappeared.

People in this world were like this. They would see the reflection of the moon, and think that it is the real thing.

Not knowing it was just the moon in the well, the moon in their eyes, or simply the moon in their hearts.

"In this life I hope to become the real moon, rising above the mountains and heavens, toying with the clouds and seas, following the ancient times and walk in the darkness above the various heavens." Fang Yuan’s eyes were crystal clear, and the beautiful green mountains were reflected on his pupils.

On the hill, the thin body of a teenager stood silently.

A golden moon wheel shaped like a disk suspended high in the night sky.

It has existed since ancient times, travelling through the night sky, casting the small shadow of the teenager faintly onto the limestones.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The night sky of early summer is beautiful.

There was not a single cloud floating in the sky, and the stars flickered like crystals, shining with emotionally moving radiance.

Sandalwood crickets appeared on stage to take over the place of the dragonpill crickets, and they sang their emotional songs in the grassy bushes, creeks and tree branches.

The Gu Yue Village was radiantly lit, as if it was reflecting the bright starry sky.

One by one the dark green bamboo houses stood in the night wind, and beneath the star dome it had a tranquil and peaceful ambience.

Fang Yuan was not in the village now, but he had snuck into the secret cave among the rock cracks.

He half-kneeled on the ground, his hand caressing the image wall, his palm emitting a lump of blue-coloured moonlight.

On the image wall, the original scene was already gone, and it was now no different from the other surrounding stone walls. If Fang Yuan did not remember this position, who else would know that hidden under this image wall was Flower Wine Monk’s strength inheritance?

On a night over a month ago, the image wall transformed and the Flower Wine

Monk’s secret hideout appeared. The image wall first showed a video of Flower Wine Monk bathed in blood, but proclaimed he was leaving his inheritance. Next was a line of bloody words, hinting for the discoverer to break the image wall and the cave opening would appear. Then the words vanished, and the image wall’s Photo-audio Gu’s strength was depleted, and the image wall went back to being an ordinary wall.

Although he knew about the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance, Fang Yuan did not have the time to explore it.

As it was an unexpected occurrence, he had to kill Jia Jin Sheng on the spot and was busy that night getting rid of the evidence. Towards the impending interrogation, he had to plot carefully and had restricted his activities inside the village.

Until when Jia Fu left and after the academy elder stopped his investigations, about ten days later, the attention had waded and Fang Yuan could finally sneak back into the cave.

In the aperture, the green copper sea was reducing as Fang Yuan deployed his primeval essence into the Moonlight Gu on his right palm.

The Moonlight Gu emitted a gentle moonlight and flickered continuously. Under its effect, the rock wall was shaved off slowly, and large amounts of rock powder fell on the ground.

This was Fang Yuan’s extensive control of the Moonlight Gu, the same method he used to open the gambling rocks.

Compared to opening rocks, this method was more coarse, but in breaking this thick rock wall, this method seemed a little too gentle.

This was the sixth day that Fang Yuan was using the Moonlight Gu to shave the rock wall.

On the floor was a thick pile of dark red coloured rock powder.

Logically speaking, Qing Mao Mountain’s soil was all green-coloured. But here, the soil were strangely bright red and emitted a dark glow.

But fortunately so, because of this source of light, Fang Yuan did not need to prepare a torch.

In order to avoid being suspected, Fang Yuan did not use any tools. Steel hammers and pickaxe were undoubtedly better for breaking the rock wall, but if he did, the sound of the wall breaking would reverb all over the area.

Regardless of whether the outside world would hear a faint or loud noise, Fang Yuan wanted to eliminate all such possible suspicious points.

Fine details often decided in one’s victory or defeat.

To Fang Yuan, being cautious is not just his good point, it was more like a habit to him.

In his past life he had been careless and carefree, but he quickly paid a hefty price. There is a saying that goes, ‘people get more cowardly when they age’. Yet actually this is not cowardness, but patient cautiousness. 500 years of experience ingrained the word caution into his soul.

"Puff..." Taking in a deep breath, Fang Yuan slowly stopped the transmission of his primeval essence.

He plopped onto the ground, extremely exhausted.

He had dug around three inches of thickness out of the entire slab of image wall that was the height of half a man.

Fang Yuan wiped the sweat off his forehead while exercising his shoulders and stretching his legs. Due to long hours of squatting, a sense of numbness was felt from his legs.

‘Knock, knock, knock’.

Fang Yuan bent his fingers and knocked on the rock wall.

Hearing the sound, he was slightly happy in his heart, as he could tell the wall was getting thinner.

Closing his eyes to meditate, he checked the situation inside his aperture once again.

The green copper primeval essence had less than 20% left.

"Continue working hard!" Fang Yuan grit his teeth and stretched out his right hand again on the rock wall.

The water-blue coloured moonlight sustained a glow for around fifteen minutes, then Fang Yuan suddenly halted his actions. He took out his right arm and found out that the rock wall had a small hole in it already.

He immediately stood up and kicked.

With a thunderous noise, the hole expanded and became as big as a bamboo basket.

Fang Yuan cautiously took a few steps backwards. He felt a sense of staleness emitting from the hole and permeating into this secret cave.

The secret cave’s ventilation was not good. Fang Yuan thought about it for a moment and decided to leave the rock crack, returning to the outside world.

Only after a while did he return.

The stale feeling in the cave was slightly better than earlier, and Fang Yuan continued to expand the size of the hole, sometimes using the Moonlight Gu, and at other times using his hands to dig, or his legs to kick. After a while, he finally expanded the hole into a size that he could fit into.

Looking from the hole, there was a diagonal path downwards.

The path was initially narrow, but the deeper it was, the wider it got. A person must lower their head when entering at first, but towards the latter half of the path, they are able to take large strides with straightened backs.

The cave’s walls were a weird red soil colour, emitting a faint red glow. This caused the passage’s interior to be visible.

But the path was very long and extended beyond what the eye could see. Due to the angle, Fang Yuan could not see what was at the end of the path.

He stood at the cave entrance and did not immediately step in, instead squinting and standing on the spot.

A strength inheritance was not like a legacy inheritance.

Legacy was when a Gu Master died and left behind his belongings. Those who find this legacy can find the items on the corpse.

A strength inheritance is when a Gu Master who is on the verge of death and reluctant to let his legacy go extinct, or to benefit the future generations, or wants to leave behind his last trace of existence in the world, purposely set hurdles to test the people who arrive.

Taking the Flower Wine Monk for example, he set up this inheritance with a clear objective - it is to nurture an avenger, to take revenge on the Gu Yue clan!

If the person who comes along is able to pass these trials he(she) would obtain all sorts of benefits. The person who gets through the final test would obtain the entire strength inheritance.

According to the two factions, strength inheritance is split into the righteous inheritance and the demonic inheritance.

Righteous inheritances often had exquisite design, to test the nature and character of the person. Those who fail midway, would not be in any mortal danger.

Demonic inheritance was more complex.

Those demonic cultivators were often insane and persistent, cold-blooded, or a mass murderer, unable to be assessed by normal standards.

Some demonic inheritances had trials that tested the mind. With lots of mind-boggling decisions to make, a lot of people would fall into deep and painful thoughts without getting a single result.

Some demonic inheritances were extremely simple, being a secret room with Gu worms and primeval stones inside.

Some demonic inheritances were extremely cruel, and failure midway often spelled death.

Some were more extreme - a few demonic cultivator’s inheritances were a huge lie, being a giant trap itself. They followed the rules of ‘bringing someone down with them’, and even right before dying, they would set up this trial and trick others.

"Which type does Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance belong to?" Fang Yuan thought deeply.

With his previous life’s memories, he was clear of any future famous demonic inheritances. But this one in particular, no one discovered it in his lifetime, and Fang Yuan was left unaware of the details.

"By right, the chances of a trap isn’t high. Otherwise the Flower Wine Monk would not design this image wall. But is there a hidden mechanism?"

Fang Yuan picked up a rock and threw it into the cave.

The rock rolled in the path and quickly rolled out of Fang Yuan’s sight; he could hear a series of colliding sounds echoing in the cave.

Fang Yuan fell into deep thought. The rock testing results showed that it was safe.

But he did not enter the path yet, and instead took out some rock powder and spread it around the entrance of the secret cave. At the same time, he spread a layer on the rock crack entrance.

Next, he squeezed out of the narrow rock crack and left the place.

Around a few hundred meters from the river in a hidden bush, he found the green bamboo wine that he had brought along this time. Opening the seal, he drank a huge mouthful and purposely spilled some of the liquor, getting it on his clothes and making him smell of alcohol.

Carrying the wine, he went back to the village, and upon reaching the school hostel, it was exactly midnight.

If he did not return at night often, people would get suspicious. This was better, going out early at night and returning late at night.

When finding the Liquor worm, Fang Yuan already did this, and with that background, such behaviour was not peculiar.

The stars fade and the sun appears, a night of silence.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The bright morning sun shone on Qing Mao Mountain.

In the academy, the elder spoke about important details. "Tomorrow, we are choosing the second Gu worm for refinement. Everyone here has experience in successfully refining Gu worms, and this time you can solidify your experiences. For the selection of the second Gu worm, consider it carefully. With the experience of cultivating these few days and understanding of your own body, consider it as a whole. Normally, it is best if you pair the second Gu well with your vital Gu."

A Gu Master’s first Gu was known as the vital Gu, and once it was chosen it would be the footing stone of their development. After that, the second and third Gu worm would be nurtured upon this footing stone and decide the Gu Master’s cultivating direction.

After hearing the academy elder’s words, the youngsters began to ponder, and only Fang Yuan was sleeping soundly on the table.

He had worked hard for half the night yesterday, and after returning to the hostel, he still continued in his Gu Master cultivation, nurturing his aperture. When the sun had risen, only then did he sleep.

The academy elder looked at Fang Yuan and frowned, but did not say anything.

Ever since the clan leader spoke to him, he had adopted a ‘let Fang Yuan do as he wishes, I am not going to give a care’ attitude.

"Which Gu worm should I choose?" As the students thought about it, they subconsciously looked towards Fang Yuan.

"Speaking of which, Fang Yuan already has his second Gu worm."

"Yeah, that is but a Liquor worm; to actually get a Liquor worm out of gambling rocks, his luck is off the charts!"

"If I had the Liquor worm, I would advance to middle stage first too huh?"

The students' thoughts varied, having admirers and jealous people among them.

Ever since that day after the interrogation, Fang Yuan's Liquor worm was successfully exposed. The origins of the liquor worm did not raise suspicion. The clansmen were both enlightened and also exasperated at Fang Yuan's luck.

"Why don't I have such luck, sigh!" Gu Yue Chi Cheng who was also a C grade talent sighed deeply in his heart.

Quite a while ago, his grandfather had asked around and tried to procure a Liquor worm for him. To think that even as a family branch's inheritor, he was not able to have one; to think Fang Yuan managed to get the Liquor worm before him.

Compared to Chi Cheng's envy and depression, vice chairman Fang Zheng was full of spirit.

"Brother, I will definitely surpass you." He looked at Fang Yuan and said in his heart before looking away.

These days his eyes were shining with light, and he felt a sort of excitement towards life. His face was flushing red and his forehead was glowing, even his steps were quicker and lighter.

The academy elder saw all of it, and immediately understood that the Gu Yue clan leader had started secretly teaching Fang Zheng.

These underhand methods were obviously not for the public to know.

The academy elder turned a blind eye to this.

Soon it was night once more.

Fang Yuan entered the secret cave again.

Ring ring ring......

In his hand, a wild rabbit was struggling, and there was a bell was on its neck.

This was a wild rabbit that Fang Yuan caught on the mountain, the bell was naturally attached by him.

After a day, the stuffy smell in the secret cave has dissipated, and the air was fresh.

The cave's passage entrance was open; it was silent inside. Fang Yuan half-kneeled on the floor as he inspected the floor. Yesterday he had sprayed rock powder all over the area, and this thin layer of powder was inconspicuous.

"The passage entrance's rock powder is intact, thus it seems that during my absence, nothing strange has crawled out of it. The rock crack entrance does have a footprint, but that's mine, so evidently no one else had come here." Fang Yuan felt at ease after his inspection.

He stood up, using his hands to pull the dead vines from the wall. Next he sat on the ground and his leg was used to hold the wild rabbit in place, leaving his two hands free to weave the vines.

This was work that normal Gu Masters wouldn't know, but Fang Yuan had too much life experience. In his past life, many a time was he so poor that he couldn't afford to feed his Gu worms, leaving them to starve to death one by one.

For a time, he had primeval essence but no Gu worms; he became just like a mortal person, even living was difficult. Having no choice, he learned to weave the grass ropes into straw sandals, hats etc. and sold them in exchange for primeval stone fragments to feed himself.

While twisting the grass ropes in his hands, Fang Yuan’s memories resurfaced.

The anguish and suffering from back then had transformed into his soundless laughter now. The rabbit underneath his foot continued to struggle, the bell ringing nonstop.

A pair of two strings touch for long, ten thousands of twists and thousands of returns make their inseparable love numerous. (1)

Delicately and slowly, with the passing of years, letting them converge. Complications, entanglements and turns present.

Weaving the grass ropes, isn’t it just like experiencing life?

In the secret cave, the red light shone onto Fang Yuan’s face, showing his youthfulness and experience intertwining together on his face.

Time seemed to have stopped too, silently appreciating the young man weaving his ropes.

Ring ring ring...

An hour later, the wild rabbit rapidly entered the passageway, the bell on its neck ringing continuously. In a few breaths it left Fang Yuan’s field of vision.

Fang Yuan held onto the improvised grass rope that he wove temporarily, and on one end the rope was attached to the rabbit’s hind leg, dragging into the tunnel with it.

After a while, the rope stopped all movement.

But this did not mean the rabbit had reached the end of the tunnel. It could have been killed by a trap or just decided to take a rest midway.

Fang Yuan began to pull at the rope, retrieving it. The rope gradually tightened as he tugged.

On the other end, a force of strength suddenly tugged back as the rope started to move towards the cave again.

Evidently the rabbit on the other side had felt the tugging force and in its fluster, started to move deeper into the cave.

After many attempts, the rabbit finally reached the end of the path, and no matter how Fang Yuan tugged at the rope, it only tightened and relaxed.

Maybe the rabbit had reached the end of the tunnel, or maybe it had fallen into a trap and got stuck.

It was simple to test and find out the answer.

Fang Yuan started to retrieve the rope. His strength surpassed the rabbit by a mile, and eventually he dragged the rabbit out by force.

The rabbit struggled at the other end, but the rope was made from materials acquired from the Wine Sack Flower Gu and Rice Pouch Grass Gu. Although it had been dead for years, it remained sturdy unlike normal grass.

The wild rabbit was once again in Fang Yuan’s hands jumping about. Fang Yuan inspected the wild rabbit and saw that it had no injuries, then he finally breathed out in relief.

"For now, it seems that this segment of the passageway is safe."

With this result, the rabbit thus lost its value and Fang Yuan killed it instantly, throwing the corpse on the ground.

He could not let the rabbit go, for animals also had memories. If it came back again, and like the Liquor worm, attracted outsiders, that would be very bad.

He breathed in deeply. After several tries and probes, he finally stepped into the passageway carefully.

Even with the wild rabbit exploring, there were many traps and mechanisms that specially targeted only humans. A small animal like the wild rabbit would be unable to trigger it. Thus, Fang Yuan still had to be careful.

The tunnel was straight, diagonally slanting towards the bottom. The deeper it was, the wider and taller the passage became.

Fang Yuan had to lower his head when entering at first, but after more than fifty steps, he was able to take large strides with a straightened back, and after a hundred steps, he could walk while lifting his upper arms and brandishing them left and right.

The tunnel was not that long, it was only around 300 meters. But Fang Yuan spent around two hours venturing before he finally reached the end of the path.

On the way, he was vigilant and explored step by step. At the end of the path, he was already sweating profusely.

"It is so troublesome without a detection Gu worm." Fang Yuan wiped the sweat off his forehead and after confirming his safety, calmed down and inspected the area.

This time at one glance, he was stunned.

At the end of the tunnel, there was a huge rock. The rock’s surface was smooth and protruded towards Fang Yuan’s direction, resembling Jia Fu’s belly.

This rock alone halted Fang Yuan’s progression.

Other than this huge rock, there was nothing around Fang Yuan.

"Is it because of an accident that the tunnel path was blocked, causing this?" Fang Yuan squinted as he thought about the possibilities.

Before the Flower Wine Monk died, he was eager to set up the inheritance. He used the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider and created a tunnel path. The path led deep within the mountains and to guide the inheritor in.

After hundreds of years, the passage was unable to withstand the corrosion of time and at one point, one of the areas collapsed due to lack of maintenance.

All sorts of accidents often happen in life.

"If this is the case, won’t I be stuck at this point?" He went forward and touched the rock. This rock was halting his progression, its size was like a door, one could only imagine its overall thickness.

Fang Yuan could use the Moonlight Gu to carve away at the rock wall, but if he wanted to grind off this huge rock, it would take at least a year or two.

"It seems like I’m forced to use tools, I’ll need to use spades and pickaxes to break the rock. Except if I do this, I might reveal some traces. The construction sounds might also travel out." Thinking of this, Fang Yuan frowned deeply. He was weighing the pros and cons.

If the risk was too huge, he would rather give up this strength inheritance.

After all, if others found out this secret, all the plotting and acting that Fang Yuan had done would go to waste, and his life would even be in danger!

(1) Seems to be a line from a poem.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sun rises, signifying the arrival of another day.

The students lined up properly, faces flushed with excitement as they stood before the academy Gu storage room.

Today was the day where they would pick their second Gu!

As the first to advance to middle stage, Fang Yuan had the priority in choosing, thus he stood at the front of the queue.

Behind him was Gu Yue Mo Chen, Gu Yue Fang Zheng and Gu Yue Chi Cheng.

Creak.

The Gu storage room’s door was opened by the guards, and Fang Yuan was the first to set foot into it.

The Gu room was not big, but was a sight to behold. The surrounding walls had square holes in them, some were big but others were small, holding all sorts of containers in them.

There was rock pots, jade pots, cages made of weaved grass, and some porcelain ware.

All sorts of Gu worms, being all Rank one, were stored in these containers. The academy probably spent more than 1000 primeval stones every day just to feed these Gu worms.

Fang Yuan glanced through and found that in many containers, they were already empty, having no Gu worms inside.

The Gu worms in the storage room were replenished once a year. Previously when they were choosing their vital Gu, most of the youngsters chose the Moonlight Gu, thus the storage room had no moonlight Gu left at the moment.

The storage room had no windows, there was only a small skylight at the rooftop.

The sunlight shone in from the skylight and formed a rectangular golden image on the ground.

The first time when he entered the Gu room, Fang Yuan already had an objective and chose the Moonlight Gu immediately. But now, he had several possible targets in his mind.

Yet these targets also depended on whether there was stock in the storage room.

Fang Yuan moved along the left wall and strolled inside slowly while examining the catalogue.

Five steps later, he paused.

A square box frame near his shoulder had a bronze bowl inside, and within it was a Gu worm.

This Gu worm was like a bedbug, flat and wide with a small head, having an oval body. It was yellow-orange throughout, and emitted a faint bronze-like glow.

This was the Bronze Skin Gu, the choice for most close-combat Gu Masters. The academy’s martial arts instructor raised such a Gu, and once activated, causes the body to glow yellow, greatly raising defense.

Fang Yuan’s knowledge was deep and broad, so of course he did not have any urge for this Gu. He continued forward and saw a Stone Skin Gu.

The Stone Skin Gu and Bronze Skin Gu were similar in appearance, but the Stone Skin Gu’s body was grey instead, like an art piece made of rock.

After six Stone Skin Gu, there was the Iron Skin Gu.

Iron Skin Gu and Bronze Skin Gu were outwardly similar but with only a tiny difference. It was silently staying in a iron bowl, unmoving. It emitted a black iron-like glow around its body.

As humans have clans, so do Gu.

The three Gu that Fang Yuan saw simultaneously were all from the same series. They were similar in appearance and had similar effects.

"Iron Skin, Bronze Skin, Rock Skin, Jade Skin Gu..... if there is a Jade Skin Gu, I might as well choose it." Fang Yuan mumbled as his heart felt a tiny flicker of expectation rising, and he continued walking.

However he was destined to be disappointed, for after the Iron Skin Gu, he saw the Beast Skin Gu.

The Jade Skin Gu and Beast Skin Gu belonged to the same series as the Bronze Skin Gu etc. But they had great difference in value - the Beast Skin Gu was the most common, even cheaper than the Rock Skin Gu, but it had more evolutionary lines and could fuse with more varieties of Gu.

The Jade Skin Gu was the most rare Gu in this series. Its market value was only second to the Liquor worm, and at times the price would fluctuate and rival with the Liquor worm itself.

Fang Yuan took a look, but he did not find a Jade Skin Gu. He was not disappointed, but laughed in relief, "Gu Yue village is just a middle-sized clan, the academy Gu storage room is only of middle tier quality. To have a Jade Skin Gu, that is rather impossible."

The left side of the wall had already been inspected, so Fang Yuan swapped to another wall and continued strolling.

On this wall, there was mostly the Longhorn Beetle Gu.

Similar to the Skin Gu series, Longhorn Beetle Gu was a large clan among the Rank one Gu worms.

Their outer appearances were similar - they had long and circular cylinder figures, the back area having many outlines. A large part of the body was a black colour, giving out a metallic luster. It had a pair of feelers that were long and exceeded the body size; its chin was strong and it gave out screeching noises, like the sound of timber being sawed. With this, a few Gu Masters from some places would call them as the ‘sawing tree bunch’.

What first entered Fang Yuan’s vision was a Brute Force Longhorn Beetle Gu.

Its entire body was a red metallic colour, and it had a pair of antennae that was coarser than the usual Longhorn Beetle ones. On the top surface of the antenna there was a bamboo joint-like growth with every small interval.

This Brute Force Longhorn Beetle Gu was highly sought after in the market; earlier the caravan that came to the Gu Yue village had people who sold large numbers of this Gu.

The Brute Force Longhorn Beetle Gu gave Gu Masters temporary super strength. It had the reputation of the strength of one bull, and could sustain for five breaths.

But it had two weaknesses.

One was that every activation consumed too much primeval essence. Rank one middle stage required 10% primeval essence, but if converted to initial stage, it would consume 20%.

Another was sequela. If the Gu Master had a weak constitution, using this Gu a lot would cause their muscles to get injured, even experiencing muscle tearing. Only Gu Masters with a strong body would choose to use this Gu. A small-sized person like Fang Yuan was unsuitable for it.

Fang Yuan knew this too, and walked past the Brute Force Longhorn Beetle Gu, continuing to look around.

"Oh? This is not bad." He halted his steps.

It was a Yellow Camel Longhorn Beetle Gu.

The beetle’s figure was a tiny bit thinner and longer than the Brute Force Longhorn Beetle Gu, the entire body coated in dark yellow colour. Its pair of long feelers did not have bamboo joints, and the roots were yellow in colour, slowly fading into black at the tip.

The Brute Force Longhorn Beetle Gu could grant a Gu Master temporary strength, and this type of strength was immediate, only lasting for five breaths. But the Yellow Camel Longhorn Beetle Gu could grant the Gu Master durability and allow their stamina expenditure to be greatly reduced, however it could only sustain for fifteen minutes. At the same time it had no repercussions.

Among the Rank one Gu worms, the Yellow Camel Longhorn Beetle had high market value, comparable to the Moonlight Gu and only losing to the Jade Skin Gu and Liquor worm.

Fang Yuan inspected the surroundings and found that there was only one Yellow

Camel Longhorn Beetle.

"The Gu is not bad, but it is not compatible with me." Fang Yuan shook his head, giving up this Gu.

Very quickly he walked and reached the corner of the wall, having finished looking at the second wall, but he was not satisfied.

The Gu in the storage room were only of this quality, and if he wanted to get lucky or get a surprise Gu, the chances were slim.

Fang Yuan turned to the third wall and continued inspecting.

On this wall, the Boar Gu were dominant.

Boar Gu was a series among the Gu worm.

There’s the Flower Boar Gu, Pink Boar Gu, Black Boar Gu and White Boar Gu.

Pink Boar Gu had the least value, almost no Gu Masters chose them. It only had one ability, and that is to gain weight. After a Gu Master injects their primeval essence, the Pink Boar Gu would change their constitution and cause them to get fat. No matter how skinny they were, they would be able to become a big fat person.

There was only two to three Pink Boar Gu in the storage room, obviously of no nurturing value.

The Flower Boar Gu was the most abundant, having a dozen at least lining into a row. These Gu worms had flower patterns on the surface, either white and black, black and pink, or white and pink. There were even some that had all three colours.

The Flower Boar Gu’s use was similar to the Brute Force Longhorn Beetle Gu, temporarily adding strength to the Gu master.

The Brute Force Longhorn Beetle Gu gave one bull’s strength, and the Flower Boar Gu gave one boar’s strength. The Flower Boar Gu spent the same amount of primeval essence as the Brute Force Longhorn Beetle Gu but could sustain for ten breaths, twice of the Brute Force Longhorn Beetle Gu.

This was because the Gu Master gained lesser strength, thus lesser side effects.

"The Flower Boar Gu is the most common Gu worm, and it is sold most abundantly in the market. It’s price is half of the Brute Force Longhorn Beetle Gu, truly value for money. But among the Boar Gu clan, only those two last Gu has greater value, being even more expensive than the Jade Skin Gu and Liquor worm!" Fang Yuan’s eyes showed a light of deep thoughts.

A Black Boar Gu or a White Boar Gu could sell for 600 primeval stones in the market. Once it appeared, it was often sold immediately.

The Black and White Boar Gu’s ability was to change the Gu Master’s body constitution and raise their strength permanently.

Although the Brute Force Longhorn Beetle could grant a bull’s strength, it could only last five breaths, uses too much energy to sustain and had strong after-effects.

The Black and White Boar’s strength increment, although little at a time, would be accumulative over time and once obtained, the strength would belong to the Gu Master wholly. Even if the Gu dies, this strength will still remain on the Gu

Master’s body.

This is the reason why the Black and White Boar Gu’s value is higher than the Liquor

Worm.

The public recognises that the Liquor worm’s value should be slightly inferior to the Black or White Boar Gu.

The Liquor worm can only refine primeval essence, and after an intense battle, a Gu Master’s primeval essence is easily depleted. For the remainder of the battle, they can only rely on their martial arts and their physical strength. This is when the White and Black Gu show their worth; they are more reliable than the Liquor worm.

"If I can refine a Black Boar Gu or White Boar Gu, that would be good." Fang Yuan was just imagining the scenario, but with this type of Gu storage room which only has one Yellow Camel Longhorn Beetle, how can there be White or Black Boar Gu which are so rare?

He walked another round and saw all the Gu worms the room had to offer. As expected, there was nothing that truly captivated him.

At last, he retrieved a Little Light Gu at a corner of the wall.

There were five Little Light Gu in the storage room.

This Gu was oddly shaped, looking like a pentagram, and only half as large as a fingernail.

The Little Light Gu was mainly paired with the Moonlight Gu, a common assistance-type Gu worm for the Moonlight Gu. To Fang Yuan had chosen this Gu, it was merely an average option, but at least it suited his development path.

"Fang Yuan is out."

"Geez, finally out after so long."

"I wonder what Gu he chose?"

"He already has the Liquor worm, this is his third Gu, maybe he won’t be able to raise them properly. Hehe."

Fang Yuan leisurely walked out of the storage room. The students were outside for such a long time and had started to become restless.

"It’s my turn! I wonder what Gu has Fang Yuan chosen?" Once Gu Yue Mo Chen saw Fang Yuan stepping out he hurriedly took big steps and entered the storage room.

He checked and found that the sole Yellow Camel Longhorn Beetle was still there. Mo Chen could not refrain from becoming overjoyed, immediately taking it away.

Afterwards, Fang Zheng went in.

"I have the Moonlight Gu for offense, but I lack a defensive-type Gu worm." Gu Yue Fang Zheng after long consideration, decided to choose a Bronze Skin Gu.

Gu Yue Chi Cheng was the fourth to enter.

"I need an evasion ability, so in future battles I will be able to hit others, but others cannot hit me. I’ll be virtually unbeatable." He looked left and right, and finally chose a Dragonpill cricket Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sun lowers and the moon rises, the signal of the arrival of nightfall.

This was one of the concealed courtyards in the Gu Yue Village.

A locust tree that stood with complicated branches and luxuriant leaves, its robust and spacious treetop that was like a jasper imperial canopy, enveloped the entire courtyard.

The moonlight was gentle like water, travelling through the leaves and branches of the locust tree, spilling into the courtyard.

A gust of wind blew over, sending the tree leaves rustling, the shadows of the tree swaying slightly.

It was under this tree that two people stood.

Gu Yue Bo used a gentle gaze and looked at Fang Zheng. "Fang Zheng, today you chose your second Gu, I wonder what it is?"

"Reporting to clan leader sir, today I chose a Bronze Skin Gu." Gu Yue Fang Zheng stood rigid, saying with a look of admiration.

Gu Yue Bo nodded, and after pondering he replied, "Not bad, it is a good choice."

Gu Yue Fang Zheng stood before Gu Yue Bo, his body tensed and tightened. Hearing Gu Yue Bo’s praise, he did not know how to reply for a while, so in the end he only laughed, "Clan leader, I chose randomly."

"You think I’m not serious in praising you? No." Gu Yue Bo stared at Fang Zheng, a smile on his face, "Do you know? From choosing a Gu, it shows a person’s disposition."

"You chose the Bronze Skin Gu for defense. Paired with the Moonlight Gu, it is both offense and defense. This shows your pure nature. In this world, offense and defense are like frontal and ambush, yin and yang, soft and hard, this is the king’s path."

"Gu Yue Mo Bei chose the Yellow Camel Longhorn Beetle, this Gu grants stamina and allows him to sustain battle. This shows his stubborn and strong attitude."

"As for Gu Yue Chi Cheng, he chose the Dragonpill cricket Gu, allowing him to increase his dodging ability. This shows he does not like frontal attacks, being a witty person, good at tactics, but also showed the weakness in his character."

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was stunned after listening, for he did not expect that such a simple matter could reveal that much information and logic.

Consequently, his attitude towards Gu Yue Bo became even more respectful.

"Clan leader, what did my brother choose?" Fang Zheng thought of Fang Yuan and immediately asked.

Gu Yue Bo laughed, "He chose the Little Light Gu, this Gu is used to assist the Moonlight Gu and can make the moonblade attack stronger. This shows his extreme, active and invasive personality."

"Indeed, big brother seems to be like that." Fang Zheng muttered.

Gu Yue Bo took Fang Zheng’s expression into consideration and etched it into his mind.

Those who were rulers had their unique ability. Although Gu Yue Bo and Fang Zheng did not interact for long, Gu Yue Bo’s experienced gaze had already seen through Fang Zheng.

Him telling Fang Zheng about Mo Bei and Chi Cheng’s decisions had deeper meaning.

It was to help Fang Zheng analyze these two people, for he anticipated him defeating the two of them and establishing the role of clan leader with his A grade talent.

But Gu Yue Bo would not say it out loud, and would not instigate Fang Zheng’s actions.

As the clan leader, his every word and action had political implications. If he directly controlled Fang Zheng and dealt with Chi Cheng and Mo Bei, if words spread it might be misunderstood as the clan leader’s political assault. If that’s the case, the implication would be huge and it might even cause a clan dispute, harming the entire village.

There was another point - Gu Yue Bo was waiting for Fang Zheng to understand his intentions. He spent time and effort to nurture Fang Zheng, but it was not to nurture a Rank four or five fighter. A fighter without political knowledge was like a double edged sword. He needed the future leader for the clan!

"I analyzed Mo Bei and Chi Cheng’s personality for Fang Zheng, but he did not notice my intention, instead asking about Fang Yuan’s situation. It seems that he has great trauma regarding Fang Yuan, but he is also at his rebellious stage. He wants to beat Fang Yuan, that’s understandable. Sigh, if only Fang Zheng had Fang Yuan’s intelligence, I’ve seen many youngsters these years, but when it comes to political wits, Fang Yuan tops them all. It is a pity he only has C grade talent."]

Gu Yue Bo sighed internally but his smile got even more gentle.

He took out a Gu worm from his pocket.

"This is ----- Jade Skin Gu?" Fang Zheng on seeing this Gu worm, said lightly with his eyes wide open.

Gu Yue Bo said, "Compared to the Bronze Skin Gu, this Jade Skin Gu is much better, not only using less primeval essence but also gives greater defense. Fang Zheng, do you want it?"

"Clan leader!" Fang Zheng was shocked and he looked at Gu Yue Bo, stuttering, "I... of course I want it."

"I can give it to you." Gu Yue Bo laughed even more amicably, "But as the clan leader, I have to be impartial and cannot give it to you for no reason, thus I have a condition."

Fang Zheng nodded repeatedly, staring widely, "What condition?"

Gu Yue Bo’s smile vanished, showing a stern expression, "I want you to be the first to breakthrough Rank one into Rank two, be the first place in terms of cultivation! And this Jade Skin Gu is your advancement reward."

"Ah, advance to Rank two?" Gu Yue Fang Zheng hesitated for a moment. He had just become Rank one middle stage; after middle stage was upper stage, and after that there was still peak stage.

But now Gu Yue Bo wanted to him to be the first person to advance to Rank two.

"What’s wrong, are you afraid? Then I can only give this Gu to others." Gu Yue Bo pretended to keep the Jade Skin Gu.

Fang Zheng was incited by this sentence, immediately his brain heated up as he shouted, "No, I promise you! I will defeat everyone and be the first Rank two cultivator!"

"That’s the way." Gu Yue Bo showed his gentle smile again, placing the Jade Skin Gu on Fang Zheng’s hand.

He thought in his heart, "Fang Zheng, I know you feel inferior, but this inferiority complex is too harmful to your growth. The best way to dispel your inferiority is success. You have A grade talent, so advancing to Rank two first is your greatest advantage, and also the easiest success you can achieve. You must succeed, for if you fail even this, I would be too disappointed."

At the same time, Fang Yuan stepped into the secret cave behind the rock crack again, getting into the end of the tunnel.

This time, he did not bring any steel spade, pickaxe or hammer, but carefully observed the surroundings. He was discouraged by this setback the previous night, and on the way back to the village he felt something amiss.

Only today in the dormitory where he used the Spring Autumn Cicada to refine the Little Light Gu did he suddenly understand the weird part of this situation.

"This huge rock blocking my path is too round and smooth, this is definitely man made. That is to say, the Flower Wine Monk purposely set this to block to path, but why did he set this hurdle at such a place?" Fang Yuan pondered.

He looked at the surroundings again.

The ground of the path was smooth and the top was curved; the walls on both sides were red soil, emitting a red light.

"Eh?" When he looked at the ground again, he found a point of suspicion.

The ground near the giant rock was slightly darker in colour. This colour difference was not very obvious and not easily found under such a dimly lit environment.

Fang Yuan knelt down, touching the ground, feeling a sense of wetness.

No wonder the colour was darker, it was wet.

But this path was so dry, where was the water coming from?

Fang Yuan grinded the soil with his fingers, finding out that the soil on this patch of earth had issues. It was very soft and loose, not lumpy like the dry red soil.

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone. Experience and intuition told him that this area had the ‘key’ that the Flower Wine Monk had hidden.

And this ‘key’ was the clue that would allow him to continue moving forward.

Fang Yuan began to dig the soil. It was loose so he did not spend much effort.

After digging for around an inch deeper, there was a peculiar fragrance rushing into Fang Yuan’s nostrils.

"This fragrance is thick and luxurious yet not common, it seems delicate and elegant, could it be..." Fang Yuan’s heart moved as he thought of a possibility, his hands moving even faster.

While digging, the area under the soil suddenly emitted a faint dark gold light.

"It really is what I’m thinking of!" Fang Yuan’s eyes shone, his hand movement becoming more delicate, carefully digging the surrounding soil away, expanding this hole.

After a while, a dark gold-coloured flower bud that was buried under the ground appeared in front of him.

It was two inches deep in the ground, around the size of a stone mill, the bud’s surface delicate and with the dark gold colour, it appeared to be mysterious and elegant.

"It really is the Earth Treasury Flower Gu!" Seeing this, Fang Yuan breathed out deeply.

He was not eager in peeling away the flower petals, but took a rest on the ground instead, wiping the soil off his hands. Then he slowly stretched his hand and pried open the dark gold-coloured petals.

The Earth Treasury Flower Gu was like the combination of a lotus and kale. Its petals were tightly knitted together with numerous thick pieces, slippery when felt. As Fang Yuan opened the petals one by one, it was like revealing thick layers of silk.

Once it left the main body, the huge dark gold-coloured petals would disperse quickly. It was like snowflakes that melted into the air.

After uncovering around fifty to sixty pieces of petals, the bud had shrunk in half, revealing the flower core.

The core’s petals were smaller and thinner, its texture becoming more smooth and fine. It was no longer like silk, but more like thin pieces of paper. .

Fang Yuan’s movements became gentler and slower, only opening a piece of petal in a few breaths.

The petals became increasingly transparent, and after a while, when Fang Yuan had opened the pieces of thin paper-like petals, he stopped his movements.

The Earth Treasury Flower Gu at this moment only had a last layer of petals left.

These petals overlapped each other, forming a fist-sized ball.

The petals were translucent, thin as paper. Inside these petals contained a golden liquid and in the middle of this liquid, a Gu worm was sleeping inside.

Fang Yuan looked intently, but he could only see a blurry shadow of the Gu worm, and he could not tell which Gu it was.

He was close to it, and his breath was blown on the flower core. The spherical flower core began to shake, the golden liquid also moving gently inside the petals.

Gu worms would die without food, and only a few Gu worms could seal themselves. To protect and conserve Gu worms, Gu Masters have had thought of many methods.

The Earth Treasury Flower Gu was one of them.

It was a one-time use type Gu, and once implanted on the ground, it could not be moved.

Its food was simple, which was earth energy. As long as it was planted on the ground, it would be able to survive with sufficient earth energy.

It only had one use, and that is to contain a Gu within the flower heart and immerse the Gu in the golden liquid.

This golden nectar could to an extent, imitate the sealing state and let Gu worms fall into hibernation.

"The Flower Wine Monk planted this Earth Treasury Flower Gu, so the Gu within has to be for the inheritor." Fang Yuan stretched out a finger and peeled the remaining petals carefully, revealing an opening.

The golden liquid flowed out along his finger, feeling like soybean oil.

The flower core began to soften with the loss of the golden liquid. Fang Yuan moved his finger and the petals were split, allowing him to retrieve the slumbering Gu worm.

It was a cute ladybug. Only the size of the thumb’s fingernail.

Its body was a milky white colour, and if overlooked from the back, it was like a circle.

Its head only occupied a small area, while the rest of the body was its large fat stomach and bright shiny exoskeleton.

Its six tiny limbs were also cream coloured, hidden under its stomach.

"White Boar Gu!" Fang Yuan showed an expression of joy on his face.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The temperature these few days had gotten higher.

The sun shone intensely in the afternoon, hanging right over everyone’s head.

The caravan left and the inn’s business fell again.

Fang Yuan stepped into the cafeteria, immediately attracting the attention of the shop assistants.

A familiar face rushed over and gave him a flattering smile. "Oh, young master, you’re here! Please take a seat!"

"Give me a jar of wine and cut me 600g of beef, and serve a few side dishes." Fang Yuan strode through the cafeteria and approached the window seat that he always sat at.

The shop assistant showed a difficult expression, "Young master, my apologies but during the last time the caravan came, the innkeeper sold all of the green bamboo wine. We do not have this wine here anymore."

Fang Yuan nodded, not feeling surprised, "Then give me a jar of rice wine and tell the innkeeper, brew more green bamboo wine this year, I am pre-ordering a hundred jars. As for how much the advance payment will be, you can count first and report to me."

Now that the Liquor worm was exposed and did not gather any suspicion, Fang Yuan did not have to be restrained in buying wine anymore.

"Alright, I will definitely convey your words! Please be at ease young master." The shop assistant patted his chest, sounding confident.

Soon, the dishes were served.

Fang Yuan drank and ate while staring out of the window.

In such hot weather, especially during meal times, there were few people on the streets.

The sunlight shone on the ground and the green coloured bamboo tall-houses.

A few barefooted mortal farmers carrying cement, steel spades or shoulder poles walked in front. They had just finished their farm work, and were heading home.

Two children held the bamboo frame of their windmill toy and ran about. The one behind chased while crying and shouting; it seems that the boy in front had stolen his windmill toy.

At this moment, two young Gu Masters wearing green belts walked hurriedly on the street.

"Get lost, don’t block the way!" A Gu Master pushed the farmer in front of him.

The farmers frantically gave way.

"Hmph." The two young Gu Masters walked through arrogantly.

Fang Yuan looked with a distracted gaze in his eyes, as part of his mind was already focused on his aperture.

Within the aperture, the water wall continued to flow as his green copper primeval sea rose with raging waves.

The Liquor worm was playing around in his primeval sea, at times comfortably rolling around, and at times curling into a ball.

The Spring Autumn Cicada was in deep slumber, hiding its appearance.

The round body of the White Boar Gu spread its wings and drew circles in the sky.

The White and Black Boar Gu were equally well-known, both being precious and rare Rank one Gu worms. Their market value was even greater than the Liquor worm.

Although they had the same usage and similar appearance, their future advancement routes were greatly different.

The Black Boar Gu and the Green Silk Gu would combine into the Rank two Black Mane Gu, and then into the Rank 3 Steel Mane Gu.

But the White Boar Gu was most compatible with the Jade Skin Gu, where it would turn into Rank two White Jade Gu, and later into the Rank three Heavenly Mugwort Gu(1).

The Steel Mane Gu could let the Gu Master’s hair become tough as steel, raising both offense and defense. The Heavenly Mugwort Gu allowed the Gu Master’s body to become tough as white jade while at the same time reducing the damage from attacks such as the moonblade.

Fang Yuan was slightly happy over this.

Getting the White Boar Gu was just one aspect of it, but what made him truly happy was the Flower Wine Monk’s strength inheritance.

"The White Boar Gu can increase strength. The Flower Wine Monk set a giant rock to block the way, so it seems I need to refine this Gu and with enough strength, push the giant rock away and continue forward. This must be the first test."

"With the Flower Wine Monk’s meticulous setup, I can infer that there has to be future inheritance trials, a second or third hurdle. Most importantly, I can confirm that he set this strength inheritance not as a trap, but with true sincerity."

"With this inheritance, I can reach Rank three faster and leave this Qing Mao Mountain, and venture outside, gaining greater opportunities!"

What does a Gu Master need most in cultivating?

The answer is but one word — Resources.

Fang Yuan needs to cultivate, thus he needs resources. But the clan’s resources are limited, so if he wants more, he needs to fight for it.

Not only fighting for resources, he also has to be victorious.

To him, the more he fights and the more victories he obtained, the more he would reveal more of his trump cards and make others more wary.

Wariness when accumulated to an extent, would turn into suppression and hurdles blocking his path.

Fang Yuan killed a family servant, but why did the Mo family stay indifferent? Robbing the classmates, why did their family not pursue it? Fang Yuan resisted the clan and refused to be part of the system, but why did the clan leader choose to be lenient?

It is all because he is weak, because he is C grade.

They feel strong and do not feel like bullying the weak. Under the family’s system, being petty with the weak Fang Yuan not only causes them to face humiliation, it also makes others feel that the person is cold and unfeeling, ruining one’s social relationships.

Weakness was a safety umbrella that Fang Yuan had for now.

But with his continued competition for resources, Fang Yuan would appear stronger. This would make everyone start being wary of him, and begin to try recruiting him. No matter which side he chooses, he would face suppression and troubles from the other factions.

Suppression and restrictions would drag down his growing speed.

Fang Yuan was aware of his predicament, he was in a delicate position. He seemed to have offended everyone, but he had not violated any law in reality.

Yet with time, his cultivation level will rise, and conflicts will arise and worsen.

Fang Yuan knowns that this conflict would escalate, but the later it escalated, the greater benefit he would gain.

Thus, the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance was perfectly timed!

With this strength inheritance, he would have hidden resources. Using this, he could be free of the system’s control and walk his own path, cultivating at his own speed and secretly accumulate strength.

Once he was adopted into the system, he would need to side with a faction. Even if he did not want to compete, he would definitely be dragged into the political strife.

Inside the system, one is a pawn. You first have to be a proper pawn for others to use you willingly. After they trust and use you, you have the chance to climb upwards, and even during that process, you have to be careful not to become a discarded pawn.

Fang Yuan was clear of this procedure, he knew it too well. Even with his vast knowledge, there was nothing he could do to this situation. These were the rules!

The more crucial part was his C grade talent. To the clan, there was no desire in investing in him. Often he would be treated as a discarded pawn.

The most optimum progress route was to work alone. This way, he could avoid most competition. Towards the higher-ups in the village, the image he had created earlier would be sustained.

"This world’s matters, it is always easily done secretly, but difficult to do openly. Using the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance, I can cultivate and gather strength secretly without gaining attention and suppression. But the extortion has to continue, for if it stopped abruptly, it would invite suspicion, and I also need primeval stones." Fang Yuan considered his future plans.

He really needed primeval stones.

Other teenagers of his age had only started refining and feeding a second Gu worm. He however, had also refined the Little Light Gu and recently acquired the White Boar Gu, thus having a total of four Gu worms.

Previously, he needed around one primeval stone a day just to feed the Moonlight Gu and Liquor worm. Now after calculating, he needed more than two pieces everyday just as expenditure!

If including his cultivating needs and living expenditures, he would need to use around five primeval stones a day!

Five primeval stones was enough to feed a family of three mortals for five months.

On hand at the moment, he had several hundred primeval stones, but it was not enough to sustain such an expenditure in the long run.

More importantly, the further he got, the greater his expenditure would be. Especially after advancing to Rank two, every time he tried combining Gu worms, it would be cost a huge sum.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan felt troubled.

The matter of primeval stones was a problem, and by relying on just extortion and the resources on hand, he could only delay this problem from erupting.

Moreover, he had another problem, and that was the White Boar Gu’s feeding.

The White Boar Gu’s food was pork.

Boar, obviously referred to pigs. The Boar Gu series’ food, was all pork.

Black and White Boar Gu had huge appetites. Every five days they would need to eat around one fully grown pig’s amount of meat.

Pork in this world was not cheap, and mortals could only afford to slaughter one during the New Year celebration, and enjoy themselves. Without the large scale cultivation technique of Earth, the price of pork and beef was not something mortals could eat often. At the same time the topography of the Qing Mao Mountain was precipitous, the area of residence narrow, how much space could be allocated just for rearing livestock?

You eat what you can procure at where you live, the villagers were able to eat pork occasionally because of the hunters hunting wild boars in the mountains.

"It seems that I have to go hunting myself from now on, for pork." Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with a glint.

Relying on the village to purchase pork, first was the expenditure of primeval stones, second was that it would attract attention. Even if you loved eating pork, how could a person eat so much in such a short period?

If he hunted himself, it would not only resolve this problem, but also alleviate his current financial stress.

"Shop assistant, bill!" Thinking of this, Fang Yuan hesitated no more, and after footing the bill, he left the inn.

These few days the academy was on break so that the students could refine their second Gu worm. Fang Yuan decided that he could use this time well. He would leave the village and scout the mountains, and then kill some wild boars and get himself some pork.

(1) Mugwort - A kind of plant. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Artemisia_princeps

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The mountain forest was boundless, and Fang Yuan walked through patiently.

The sunlight permeated through the huge and tall woods, shining and creating a ground of mottled and fragmentary tree shadows.

The green grass beside his feet was like a mattress, and the wild flowers bloomed with bright colours.

His ears picked up the sound of birds chirping, or the trickling of flowing water.

The further he got from the village, walking towards the outer surroundings, the more risky it was. Thus Fang Yuan was even more careful.

The wilderness was very dangerous, Gu Masters had to have at least Rank three cultivation to be able to venture the wilds alone and explore. But this did not mean they were safe, as many Rank three Gu Masters died in the wild, sometimes even Rank fours. Wild beasts, poisonous worms, human threats, and at times the weather, these were all causes of death.

However, Fang Yuan wanted to kill the wild boars which were often found around the village’s peripheral. Otherwise, the village hunters would not be able to catch wild boars.

"The environment around the village, every now and then, Gu Masters from the clan would come out and clear the area. This environment to a Rank one middle stage like me, is still safe. But I still have to be careful, wild beasts and Gu worms like to move around."

With his experience from his previous life, Fang Yuan scouted carefully.

Time gradually passed, but Fang Yuan gained nothing.

"Damn, Qing Mao Mountain is still too big for the current me. I have no scouting-type Gu and I am not familiar with this environment, plus Qing Mao Mountain is periodically cleared up, so to find a wild boar, it is too difficult. Let’s go to the foot of the mountain!"

Fang Yuan’s scouting was unfruitful, thus he changed his mind and went to the mountain foot.

Qing Mao Mountain has three mountain villages. Gu Yue village, Xiong family village, and Bai family village. The Xiong family village was on the fore mountain, the Gu Yue mountain village was at the mountain waist, and Bai family village was at the back mountain waterfall.

Other than the three villages, there was also tens of tiny villages at the mountain foot, all being inhabited by mortals.

The three mountain villages split these small villages among themselves, being the ones controlling them behind the scenes. Once they lacked family servants, they would pick from these small villages.

But they would not choose Gu Masters.

Nurturing a Gu Master, they would only choose a clansman. Even if they knew that among these mortals were people with talent, although rare, they would still not use them.

This world was heavily sided towards bloodline, and holding power among relatives was the political stability that the clan needed.

In order to expand in size, many mountain villages had adopted outsiders into their system. Eventually their power flowed out and caused internal conflicts, thus causing the entire clan to breakdown or weaken.

No matter the world, political power was still based off military force, this is the truth.

And troops are the brute force department, representing strength. By controlling strength, one gains status and authority.

Of course, the clan’s rules are not ever constant, they also adopt new blood. Every year, there would be outsiders marrying into the clan, leaving their servant status, and the children they give birth to would be a Gu Yue, a new generation clansman.

This is like connecting a tiny stream into a spring. Do not underestimate this stream, as without it, a spring would be still, and eventually rot. With it, there would be life, and the spring would grow even stronger.

Fang Yuan’s previous servant Shen Cui was betting on this idea of marrying into a Gu Yue and leaving her servant status.

Fang Yuan left the mountain, and after thirty minutes, could see thick smoke rising from under the mountain.

After a while, he could see a wide hill in his vision, and a village around that area beside a small river.

The small villages around the vicinity were under the rule of the Gu Yue village. Although they were closeby, the small villages were not as safe, thus requiring regular clean up. For mortals to live in such conditions and manage to survive, to Fang Yuan, he naturally could accept such a fact.

"Oh?" On the mountain path nearing the village, Fang Yuan sensitively found traces on the ground. His past experience told him that this was a wild boar’s traces.

"Chase!" Fang Yuan raised his spirits as he followed the clues, getting deeper into the mountains.

Green moss spread over the stones, ancient juniper trees and tall pagoda trees completing the great forest.

Under the strong light of the sun, the mountain woods of summer was even more profound and serene. The lush underbrush suddenly moved a little.

A few deer eating the sumptuous grass looked up, vigilantly staring at the bushes, their ears twitching.

The bushes that were half a man’s height split apart, and a young man crawled out from within. His skin was pale and his black hair was short. He was wearing a modest linen shirt, it was Fang Yuan.

Swoosh.

A few wild deer were frightened, and their four thin limbs quickly moved, sprinting away. In a moment, they vanished from Fang Yuan’s vision.

"These are female deer, their fur can be shaved to make warm clothing, and deer meat is also some Gu worm’s food. If it’s a male deer, the antlers are most precious, and some are even necessary ingredients for a Gu worm’s advancement.

The wild was dangerous all over, and at the same time it had great treasures.

Fang Yuan looked at the direction that they were escaping in, and retracted his gaze. His target was wild boars, not these deer.

He continued moving.

There was the sound of buzzing.

Nearing these noises, Fang Yuan stopped in his tracks.

"Beehive." He looked forward and saw a beehive hanging on a tree.

The bee’s nest was massive, the size was that of a wicker-basket. It appeared as a sort of greyish dark yellow colour. Outside the bee nest was a few dozen bee soldiers flying around; occasionally a few worker bees would enter and exit.

"Beehive has honey, and honey is the Bear Strength Gu’s food. Thus, the Xiong family has great demand for honey. This beehive is only a small-sized one, and the chances of producing a Gu isn’t high. If I had the Bronze Skin Gu, I could risk getting stabbed and collect the honey. What a pity." Fang Yuan thought.

In this world, not all insects are Gu.

Gu are the spirit of the world, the body of the laws, how can it be so cheap? Among a swarm of insects, normally only the insect king is a Gu.

But that depends on their size and development, so if the swarm is too small, there is no Gu either.

Taking the beehive ahead as an example, because it is too small, there is a low chance of having a Gu.

Fang Yuan routed around this beehive and continued forward.

The traces of the wild boar was getting more evident, and Fang Yuan knew he was getting close to it, thus he became more careful, as wild boars were very dangerous.

Wild boars are not reared pig. When a mature wild boar fights with a tiger, the tiger may not win.

In this mystical world, wild beasts are not simple too.

"Oh? This situation!" When Fang Yuan finally found the wild boar, he saw that it had fallen into a huge pit. A sharpened green bamboo was situated at the bottom of the pit, where it had pierced the wild boar and was causing it to bleed.

Seeing the accumulated blood in the pit, he could tell that the boar had already been in the trap for at least fifteen minutes.

But this wild boar continued to struggle, whimpering and howling, still full of life.

"This trap is obviously set by hunters. To think I’m reaping the rewards." Fang Yuan smiled but his expression was grim.

These traps threatened him too.

If he had fallen into it, after half a quarter of an hour, he would die.

Although the village surroundings were cleared regularly, the hunters often came to hunt and set many traps. Some could be discerned, while others were designed to be hidden, and if Fang Yuan could not discover them, he might fall into the trap.

"Any area in this mountain could have a trap buried by the hunters. But among hunters, with every trap set they would inform each other on the location. It seems I have to find an old hunter’s residence and find out about the trap locations from him. Along with the surrounding wild beasts’ activity area and with these intel, I would not have to search like trying to find a needle in a haystack." Fang Yuan thought internally.

This was the problem of not having a scouting-type of Gu worm.

But to find a good scouting-type Gu, it was not easy.

In a short time, he could barely make do with a hunter’s intel.

With such a thought, Fang Yuan’s wrist flicked and a moonblade flew out, easily hitting the wild boar.

Whoosh!

With a light ring, the entire moonblade cut through the boar’s neck and caused a long and slender wound. Then with a plop sound, a blood fountain spewed out from it.

The spewing blood caused the wound to become bigger, and thus the blood fountain also enlarged.

The boar screeched, thrashing about with the last of its energy, until its movements became smaller and smaller......

Fang Yuan silently looked at the scene, his face calm.

The wild boar’s life faded as its eyes were staring wide and perfectly round, the muscles on its body twitching and the warm blood filling the trap hole, a thick smell of blood permeating the surrounding.

"Survival or death, this is the theme of nature." He sighed in his heart.

At this point, human voices were heard.

"Second brother Wang, within our village, no one is better than you at hunting. Especially killing wild boars, your family’s Old Wang is the hunting king in the entire region, who would not know of his great name?"

"That’s right, second brother Wang inherited the old hunter’s abilities. To hunt a wild boar, it is naturally as good as caught!"

"Second brother Wang, why didn’t little sister Wang come with you today?"

After all the bootlicking, a grave and stern voice said, "Hmph! Hunting a wild boar, how can it show my true abilities? Today I want to kill three boars, you’ll see! Er Gou Dan, stop lusting after my sister, or I’ll thrash you!!!"

Er Gou Dan retorted, "Men and women marry when they’re of age, what’s wrong with liking little sister Wang? Moreover, I’m not the only one, which guy in your village doesn’t also fancy her too? Second brother Wang, in my opinion you are also nineteen already, you should marry a wife and have kids already."

The voice spoke again, "Hmph, I’m a true blue man, how can I lust after such a small temptation? One day, I will leave this Qing Mao Mountain and explore the world and learn about everything under the sky, that will truly be fitting of my manly status!"

Saying so, the four young hunters walked out of the forest.

The leader hunter had a tall build, carrying a bow and arrow, his muscles bulging and his eyes full of spirit, showing a powerful aura.

When he saw Fang Yuan, he frowned and screamed, "Hmm? Which village are you from kid, how dare you try to take advantage of me Wang Er, quickly get lost!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Get lost?" Hearing Wang Er’s words, Fang Yuan immediately broke into a cold smirk and he brandished his palm in front of him.

Swoosh.

With a light sound, a blue coloured moonblade shot forward.

At the same time, he put strength into his leg and rushed towards the four hunters.

"Gu Master?!" The hunters were stunned and shouted upon seeing the moonblade.

The moonblade had already fired over, and they rushed to evade.

Plonk.

A person did not evade fast enough, and his right forearm was hit by the moonblade. Immediately his bones and flesh split, the entire wrist and his forearm cut through and fell on the ground.

"AHHHH!"

He laid on the ground, screaming in fear and pain. His left arm was like an eagle claw gripping his right arm. His right limb spewed bright red blood non stop, quickly dyeing the floor red.

"Spare me!"

"We did not offend you intentionally!"

The other two mortals on seeing their companion’s state, went pale without a trace of blood in their face. They hurriedly got on all fours and kneeled down, kowtowing to Fang Yuan nonstop.

"Hmph, a bunch of fags, what are you afraid of? It’s just a Gu disciple!" Only Wang Er was still standing. Fang Yuan attacked without warning, and this had made him frightened and angry. His arms went behind his back, and with a swift action, he grabbed hold of the bow and arrow in his arms.

"Stop, come further and I’ll shoot you!" Wang Er retreated as he readied the arrow while screaming.

"Oh?" Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes. This Wang Er was rather intractable. Normally when mortals saw Gu Masters, they would be cowering in fear. Yet this man was able to remain calm, he must be rather bold.

Pew.

Another moonblade shot out towards Wang Er.

"Unappreciative bastard." Wang Er snorted and killing intent rose from his heart.

He took a side step and evaded the moonblade while shooting an arrow. The arrow was fast, and with a swoosh, it reached Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan ducked, his head lowering slightly and evading the arrow as he continued rushing forward, quickly reaching Wang Er.

Wang Er bravely threw away the bow in his hand and clenched his bowl sized fist, rushing towards Fang Yuan.

He had a large build, his back strong like a wolf’s and his waist like a bee’s, and he was at least fifty centimetres taller than Fang Yuan. The sunlight shone from behind him, and as Fang Yuan rushed towards him, he could see a dark shadow hanging over his face, his eyes emitting killing intent like a wolf!

"No!!"

"Stop quickly!"

The two hunters seeing that the two were going to collide into each other, frightfully shouted.

"Die!" Wang Er’s eyes were fierce as the muscles on his face twitched, showing his sinister and insane expression, like a bloodthirsty evil wolf.

Both his fists flew towards Fang Yuan.

Boom.

His fist was fast and heavy, even cutting the wind!

Fang Yuan could see the fist getting bigger in his eyes, but his expression was unchanging as he took a side step.

Swoosh.

At the crucial moment, he avoided the fist and forcefully rotated his body, knocking Wang Er’s left hand away.

Wang Er laughed sinisterly as he waved his fist horizontally, his fist striking first, about to reach Fang Yuan’s back.

But at this moment, a bright flash of sunlight entered his iris.

His back was originally facing the sun, and now that he had turned around, the eye-piercing sunlight temporarily made his eyes hurt, and his vision went blank.

Fang Yuan smirked as he backflipped in the air, dodging Wang Er’s fist, at the same time waving his right arm.

Pew!

The third moonblade flew along the sunlight trajectory.

Wang Er’s senses tingled as he felt unprecedented danger. He turned his head around and the next moment, the eerie blue moonblade flew past.

"Be careful brother Wang Er!"

"Did he avoid it?"

The two kneeling on the ground forgot to beg for forgiveness at this moment, staring widely.

The piercing sunlight shone on their face.

At this moment, time seemed to slow down.

The surrounding sound vanished, and the world was silent.

The afternoon’s blazing sun paved a white background, and on this backdrop, Wang Er’s body became a black shadow. His body was in the air at an arc, his muscular body stretching in a crescent shape like an open bow, full of masculine appeal.

His head lowered as he tried to avoid the moonblade.

The moonblade flew like a snail in the air, its eerie blue light almost invisible under the sun’s rays.

The white background, the black shadow, and the blue moonblade — these three formed a brilliant stage for a moment full of life and death.

The moonblade flew over.

The shadow that represented Wang Er landed smoothly as it flowed with the trajectory.

He was safe and sound.

"Phew!" Seeing this, a young hunter breathed out a sigh of relief.

"He avoided it!" Another hunter was cheering internally.

But at this time!

A small piece of the shadow’s head flew out along with red fluids, separating from the shadow and spewing everywhere.

The blue moonblade gradually dissipated in the air.

That black shadow was like a broken bow, as the energy accumulated within it disappeared at once. It turned into a beautiful but sad fallen leaf, silently landing on the ground.

The two hunter’s irises shrunk into pin size.

Their mouths were agape, stretching to their bodily limits.

Splat.

The bright red fluid landed on their faces.

The two touched their faces —

Blood!

They jolted awake!

In their perception, time had returned to normal, and noise returned.

There were birds chirping, water flowing and their companion screaming while grabbing his broken arms.

"Second brother Wang...?" A hunter called, his voice full of horror. All this time, Wang Er was their leader.

"He’s dead!" Another hunter cried out, his face grim to the limit.

"Brother Wang Er is our strongest hunter. A while ago he was still talking with us, but to think the next moment he’s dead!"

"He should not have angered that Gu Master, we mortals are no match for Gu Masters!"

The two hunters were frightened and shocked, at once they were like statues kneeling on the ground.

Fang Yuan got up from the ground.

Earlier, to avoid Wang Er’s fist, he rotated his body in the air and lost his balance. After shooting the moonblade, he fell to the ground. But this fall was worth it, as Wang Er’s fist would’ve caused him to vomit blood on the spot. After all, Fang Yuan had no defensive Gu, and his body was only a fifteen year old.

Now, he stood up, other than his shoulders hurting, he had practically no injuries.

"This Wang Er is very strong, much stronger than that Mo family servant Gao Wan! If any other student encountered him, they would lose without doubt. Even a Rank one upper stage Gu Master would lose to him out of carelessness." Fang Yuan stared at the corpse of Wang Er deeply.

Gu Masters were still threatened by genius mortal martial artists when they are at Rank one stage.

This Wang Er was truly skilled.

His archery skill was fast and stable, just relying on this it could match moonblade. In fact, the moonblade might even be inferior, as the arrow has a larger range. His fighting skill has reached the peak of mortals – a strong body with tough bones, and he was also ruthless. With Fang Yuan’s small body, it could not go head to head with him.

Thus, any other student would lose undoubtedly. Unfortunately for Wang Er, he met Fang Yuan.

Once he appeared, Fang Yuan noticed his bow and deduced that he could not fight long range with him.

The moonblade only had a range of ten meters. The bow had far greater range than the moonblade.

Thus, Fang Yuan ditched long combat. He quickly got closer and closed the gap between them, showing a physical fighting stance.

Wang Er had no choice but to discard his bow and fight physically with Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan did not really think of going close combat with Wang Er. He used the angle of the sun’s rays and caused a weakness in Wang Er, before shooting out his third moonblade.

He was already middle stage now, and with the Liquor worm’s refinement, the moonblade had the attack power of an upper stage Gu Master. At such a close range, with Wang Er’s weakened vision, his defeat was guaranteed.

"But this Wang Er is indeed skillful. I wanted to decapitate him, but at the crucial moment, he relied on his senses and reflexes and evaded half of my attack, causing my moonblade to cut off only half of his head."

"Life and death is nature’s law. All living beings are equal, and everyone has their right to survive and be killed. There might be royalty and lower beings, but in face of death, a person’s death is no different from a pig’s, what’s the difference? They’re both dead."

Fang Yuan took a final look at Wang Er’s corpse and sighed in his heart.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The tree roots penetrate into the mountain soil, letting their green hands reach up towards the sky. Thick and solid tree trunks faced each other, looking similar through the distances. The exuberant branches and leaves intertwined in mid-air.

Under the surroundings of these trees was a wooden house.

The wooden house was made entirely from the solid thick barks, leaking out a type of genuine firm smell. The wooden house was not a newly built one, but it had gathered many years. Thus the house surface had green moss growing all over, and some of the tree trunks had begun to sprout out tender little branches.

Around the wooden house was a tall and great fence constructed from green spear bamboo. The back and front area was all vegetable fields, and in the middle of the fields was a man-made well.

At this time, a young and beautiful lady was drawing water from the well.

While she wore simple and plain clothing, this was still hard to mask her complexion. She was sixteen years of age, and she had a big pair of black eyes, the black and whites of her eyes clearly defined, and pure like crystals.

The sunlight penetrated through the overlapping and luxuriant tree leaves, shining onto her face, letting her skin reflect light like it was white snow, also showing a sort of transparent red flush and gentleness on her.

Her black hair hung down unruly and half-covered her cute earlobes.

The pink lips were pursed at the moment, and she was clenching her set of white perfect teeth, her face showing an expression of full concentration.

She used all her strength to pull the bucket full of water out of the well. With another breath, she moved the bucket to the ground outside the well.

"Huff!" The young girl wiped her forehead and breathed out, using her pale hand to fan her own face.

Hearing the bucket hitting the ground, the wooden house’s door opened, and an old man came out.

The old man’s hair was a mix of black and white, his face having layers of wrinkles. Although his eyes looked tired, they showed a hint of brilliance sometimes. Like an elderly tiger, although old, the tiger’s authority was still evident.

"Lass, this bucket is too heavy, I said let me carry it. Why are you secretly watering the plants behind my back again?" The elderly looked at the young girl and showed an expression of doting affection.

"Father!" The young girl sweetly called, "You were hunting until late at night yesterday, I wanted you to sleep in later today. It’s just a water bucket, look, I can carry it out, right?"

"You, always loving to act tough!" The old man’s voice was full of helplessness, but his eyes were once again doting on her.

He took a large step and got to the well, stretching out his hand and easily grabbing the bucket, "Come, lass, let’s water the plants together."

The air was full of the smell of wild grass and flowers, and the summer’s wind blew warmly and passed by the trees, turning into a gust of refreshing wind.

The wooden house on the mountain had a vegetable field, and the girl used the pail, lowering her back to water the plants. The father was in charge of getting the water, rotating between two water buckets. The atmosphere of a loving family was evident in this tiny space.

"Sigh, I am too old, just a few buckets and I am already exhausted." After a while, the old man stood by the well, wiping the sweat off his forehead and sighing deeply.

The young girl turned her head back, smiling like flowers, saying, "Father, you finally realized it. You’re already so old, yet you want to act tough all the time. How many times have I told you, let second brother do the hunting, you should be resting at home enjoying your life at this age."

"Hehehe," the old man laughed, nodding, "Relying on your second brother’s abilities, he can roam this mountain easily. With his archery skills, it even surpasses me in my youth. But I still cannot feel at ease, his heart is too wild, and with just martial art skills he wants to soar. Sigh, young men love to imagine freely, they all have this problem."

"Father....." The young girl dragged her words.

The old man laughed even more heartily now, his tone carrying a mischievous hint, "Oh yeah, there’s still you. You’re not young anymore, it’s time to get married. I have found a good partner for you, and with your good looks, there’s no problems with finding a good family."

The girl’s face grew red like a tomato. Immediately she felt too embarrassed until she was lost for words.

The old man looked at the sky, imagining the great future as he sighed, "Once your second brother suffers some setbacks and curbs his nature, I will retire and never go into the mountains. Next I will find you a good family and watch you marry and have children, preferably a chubby boy. Heh heh, your father wants to take care of his grandson, that’s all I want. A person’s life is not easy, and as a hunter, how many can have a good ending? Sigh, all my partners and comrades from back then are already gone, I am all that’s left."

"Father, you are wrong." The young girl consoled, "What do you mean there’s only you left? You still have us."

"Hehe, hmm?" The old man was laughing and was about to reply, but he suddenly heard a sound and turned his head.

The little entrance of the bamboo fence was broken from the outside by someone.

"You are old man Wang?" Fang Yuan’s cold expression with his eerie eyes, stepped forward with a lump of moonlight in his right arm.

The old man was shocked as he looked at the moonlight on Fang Yuan’s hand, rapidly kneeling, "This old man pays his respects to Lord Gu Master!"

"Old man Wang, your son dared to offend me, I have executed him. Bring his corpse forward!" Fang Yuan stood proudly, staring at the kneeling old man as he brought out the main topic.

His words had just finished, and two young hunters carried Wang Er’s corpse in.

Seeing this corpse, old man Wang’s body shook!

"Second brother –!" The young girl screamed pitifully, rushing forward and grabbing Wang Er’s corpse, her face flushed with tears.

"Wang family’s daughter..." The two young hunters, seeing the girl they liked crying in front of them, felt terrible. They wanted to console her, but no words came out.

"Old man Wang, I heard you’re a hunter, the best among the few villages. At such an old age, you can still hunt and get a good result every time, this is great."

Fang Yuan paused here for a moment, and continued expressionlessly, "Draw me a map of all the traps of the nearby mountain area now, as well as the results of your observation of wild beast territories from your hunting experience all these years. Draw it for me and I will spare your son’s sin of offending me, if not... hmph."

These villages were under Gu Yue village’s control. The villagers were all farmer slaves of the Gu Yue clan.

With Wang Er’s offense for offending his master, according to the clan rules, their entire family would be implicated!

Old man Wang’s body shook again, almost falling to the ground. An impact like this was too sudden and great to him.

"Murderer, you are the murderer that harmed my brother! You treat human lives like livestock, and you dare to confront us? I will exact revenge for my brother!!" The young girl screamed, her voice full of hatred and anger towards Fang Yuan, and she rushed towards Fang Yuan.

But she was only halfway there when she got stopped by someone.

It was not the two young hunters, but her father.

"Disgraceful wretch!" Old man Wang screamed as he gave the young girl a tight slap, sending her to the ground.

"Your second brother is dead, do you want to die too? Do you want this old father of yours to be old and alone forever?!" The old man cried profusely saying this, his body trembling furiously.

"Father!" The young girl was awakened by this, and her tears poured out. Her voice was full of sadness, unjust, pity, hatred, and helplessness.

The old man turned his body, facing Fang Yuan as he kneeled down and placed his forehead on the ground, prostrating deeply at Fang Yuan’s feet. His voice shook as he said, "Lord Gu Master, my son offended you and deserved to die! I shall draw the map for you now, please spare us with your magnanimity."

Fang Yuan’s expression turned milder, he looked at the old man arrogantly, saying, "Be at ease, as long as you draw honestly, I will spare you. But don’t think of lying to me, for if I find any suspicious points, your lives will be forfeited!"

"I understand, this old man understands." Old man Wang kowtowed non-stop, "Please Lord Gu Master, allow me to retrieve my brush and paper."

"No need." Fang Yuan waved his hand, looking at the two hunters he had forced along, ordering, "Enter the room and find paper and brush, and bring them out."

"Yes, Lord Gu Master." The two youngsters did not dare to rebel under Fang Yuan’s authority.

"Lord, the paper and brush are on the square table in the kitchen." Old man Wang said.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone but he remained silent.

The two hunters barged into the house and quickly brought out the paper and brush.

In the southern territory, the paper were specially made of bamboo, where the quality was bad and the paper was tough with green overlays. Paper like this was suited to the moist weather of the southern territorial weather.

If it was rice paper, it might be destroyed after a week due to moisture.

The old man carried the brush and kneeled on the ground, drawing out black lines, curves or dots.

He used over ten bamboo papers, before handing them all to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan looked through them and split these bamboo papers into two, handing them to the two hunters, "Take a look if there’s any inappropriate areas. Every mistake, I’ll give you one primeval stone!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The two hunters took the bamboo papers, their hands trembling, eyes shining.

"This is hunter Wang’s life experience and effort. Us hunters, although we keep in contact, it is all about trap placement, we will not tell others about the wild beast distribution. This bamboo paper, it is all the information that hunter Wang had gathered since his ancestors."

"So this valley has a herd of wild deer, haha, after I hunt these wild deer, I won’t have to worry about expenses for the next three months! Ah, this stream has a cave of mountain bears? How close, I almost hunted at this region last time, note it, I must note it all down!"

These were precious information, it could be said to be a hunter’s rice bowl!

Normally not within a generation but all the way from their forefathers, these experiences and information were obtained at the expense of their blood and lives.

But old man Wang’s family had always hunted for a living. When it got to old man Wang, he had reached the peak of his family line, the acclaimed number one hunter.

Information in the hands of such a person, is the most useful and truthful.

The two young hunters checked for nearly fifteen minutes, glossing through the map multiple times. Only after Fang Yuan rushed them did they finally hand over the bamboo paper reluctantly.

During this period, old man Wang was kneeling on the ground, his forehead touching the ground as he expressed his respect. The young girl was lying on the ground, as if she had gone lifeless.

"There is no problem, lord."

"The trap areas in these bamboo papers are all accurate."

The two answered.

"Lord Gu Master, this concerns me and my daughter’s life, I would definitely not lie to you!" The old man on the ground shouted as he continued to kowtow.

"Mmm, not bad." Fang Yuan waved the stack of bamboo paper, yet suddenly his words changed, "But, I don’t believe it."

Old man Wang jolted, raising his head, but only saw an eerie blue moonblade enlarging within the reflection of his iris.

Pew.

A skull flew into the air, fresh blood spewing all over.

"Argh!!!"

"Lord, this—!"

The two young hunters were taken by surprise. Shock and disbelief showed on their faces.

"Father—!" The young girl cried out profusely as she leapt towards old man Wang’s headless corpse, but midway, a moonblade flew towards her face.

Splat.

She fell onto the ground, lifeless.

Her beautiful face, from her forehead to her chin, slowly showed a thin red line.

The line became thicker as fresh red blood oozed out, flowing down along half of her nose and half of her lips. They flowed onto the black soil, dyeing half of her face bright red.

The other half of her face though, was still as beautiful, the skin fair and rosy. Under the bright blue sky, it seemed even more lustrous, like a work of art.

"At least she looks decent." Fang Yuan looked at the dead girl blandly, nodding satisfactorily.

Using Rank one middle stage primeval essence, the moonblade could slice Gu. Now that he was using upper stage primeval essence, it could break bones and even cut steel!

"Wang family’s daughter!" A young hunter fell onto the ground in despair after seeing her demise with his own eyes.

"Lord Gu Master, spare us!" The other hunter feeling Fang Yuan’s faze, nearly died of shock as he plopped on the ground.

"Get up, go inside and search!’ Fang Yuan ordered, "I know that a hunter’s family always keeps a beast skin map. On top of it is the terrain, trap locations and the beast territories. Find it for me, and I’ll let you keep your lives."

"Yes, yes, yes, we will search immediately. Give us some time, Lord Gu Master!" The two frantically got up and ran into the wooden house.

Sounds of wardrobes overturning and falling could be heard from the wooden house.

But a moment later, even though the hunters ransacked the house, there was no beast skin map to be found.

"Lord, please give me some time, we will find it right now!" The two hunters were terrified as they got more desperate and searched boorishly, smashing many furniture in the process.

"Fuck, where is it?"

"Appear, please appear!"

They muttered as their bodies shivered, their eyes getting bloodshot.

"Useless trash." Fang Yuan slowly walked into the house.

"Lord! Lord! Forgive us, please...wahh..." The two young hunters shivered like they were electrified and fell to the ground, begging for their lives.

Fang Yuan ignored the two and observed the house.

There were four rooms in the house, a living room and a kitchen. All the furniture were in a mess, like they were ransacked.

Fang Yuan slowly stepped in, his steps producing echoes in the wooden house.

"It has indeed been searched, that shouldn’t be right. Almost every hunter has a beast skin map inherited throughout the generations, getting refined along the way, recording all the beasts territory and pitfalls. This is the livelihood of a hunter, how can they not have it?"

Fang Yuan stood pondering, "Moreover, I tested that old man Wang earlier, purposely getting the two hunters to search for paper and brush. The old man immediately called out the location of the paper and brush, probably worried that they might find the beast skin map, thus it has to be in this house!"

Fang Yuan observed the house again, and suddenly his inspiration struck as he looked at the firepit.

This firepit was connected to the chimney, used in winter to gain warmth. There was even some residue charcoal in the firepit.

Fang Yuan walked to the firepit, slowly squatting down and taking a shovel beside the firepit, digging out the charcoal.

Most of the charcoal still has their wooden shape, they were brittle and easily broken into two.

"Oh?" Fang Yuan inspected, suddenly finding a charcoal block that had a very tough material and was very heavy, not light like the other charcoal blocks.

He used the shovel to dig out this charcoal block, smashing it on the ground. The charcoal smashed into bits, revealing a bamboo tube.

The two hunters gasped at this scene.

Fang Yuan took the bamboo tube and opened it on one side, shaking it, causing a map to fall out.

The map was heavier than the stack of bamboo paper, made with a piece of white beast skin. The beast skin was huge, over a meters long and half a meter in breadth. There was black, green, red, yellow and blue lines on it, forming a complicated map.

Fang Yuan was slightly taken aback looking at it.

The map's range was very big, extending far beyond the village's vicinity. As a mortal, it was not easy to map out areas so far away.

His gaze focused on five spots, those with wild boar herds.

Two were small sized, two were medium sized, and there was a large sized boar herd. In the middle of the large sized herd, there was a giant red cross.

Seeing this cross, Fang Yuan snickered. On his bamboo paper, there was no such marking!

The two young hunters had also seen the bamboo paper, and found no problems. This was their own inexperience, only certain of some areas. This red cross was far beyond the village, and from this, old man Wang's cunningness could be seen.

This was why Fang Yuan killed them.

To hunt for wild boars, he needed such a beast skin map. But he was not convinced by a map drawn by others. Only getting a "real" map like this, could it be dependable.

Fang Yuan had heard of all sorts of remarks in his past life. Just a word "scram", was not enough reason for him to kill Wang Er.

When hearing the four hunters' conversation beside the boar trap, Fang Yuan had already planned his murder.

Killing Wang Er reduced his opposition, and gave him reason to obtain the map. Why wouldn't he kill him?

Fang Yuan would not kill for the sake of killing, killing is only a method. Using this method, if it can solve the problem, then why not?

The old man definitely had to die, even if he can endure the murder of his son, Fang Yuan would not be at ease. Otherwise, it would be a case of "When cutting down weeds, you must get at the roots. Otherwise, the weeds will return with the spring breeze."

What, you said killing the innocent?

Hehe, no matter which world, as long as one lives in this world, they would be intertwined in karma, how can anyone be innocent? Humans slaughter pigs, aren’t the pigs innocent?

Big fish eats small fish, and small fish eats shrimps, in nature there is only the food chain, there is no innocence.

In this world, anybody can live, anybody can die, but nobody is innocent!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The beast skin map was very thick, it was unlike paper that could be folded and carried around easily. Fang Yuan could only roll the beast skin up and put it back into the bamboo tube, where he then tied up both ends of the bamboo tube with hemp rope, and carried it on his back.

The two hunters stared firmly at the bamboo case, their eyes unavoidably showing signs of greed. They were not idiots after all – they knew the value of the map.

This beast skin map is something that Gu Masters would not even bother looking at, but to mortals, especially hunters like them, it was the most valuable treasure.

The Wang family had began to pass down this map since the time of their ancestors. Old man Wang was able to become a famous hunter, his name known throughout the vicinity and beyond; the map had much contribution to this. It was truly an authentic family heirloom.

"I’m going to ask you – in Old man Wang’s household, is there anyone else?" Fang Yuan’s gaze was dark, his tone cold as he asked.

The two young men kneeling on the ground shuddered immediately when they heard this question from Fang Yuan. They thought about what had just conspired earlier, and the greedy expressions from their faces disappeared in an instant, replaced with fear and terror.

"There is no one else, the entire family is dead, lord Gu Master!"

"Hunter Wang originally had a wife, but that was decades ago, and she was killed by wild wolves that intruded the village. Before his wife died she gave birth to two sons and a daughter. But the oldest son Wang Da died on the mountain while hunting three years ago. There is no one else in the Wang family."

This was the immediate reply from the two young hunters.

"Is that so..." Fang Yuan narrowed his two eyes and he looked at the two men kneeling before him, knowing that they were telling the truth. When one’s life and death was in the hands of others, the probability of lying was very small.

But he asked anyway, "Did you lie to me?"

"We would not dare to lie even the slightest, lord!"

"I-I thought of something! Old man Wang actually also has a daughter-in-law, Wang Da’s old wife. But after Wang Da disappeared, his wife died due to a broken heart. That year, the village even specially sent down a chastity memorial arch! But rumour has it that Wang Da’s wife wanted to remarry, and she was actually hounded to death by Old man Wang. When you killed Old man Wang, lord, you are helping us citizens, rooting out the evil and bringing people peace!"

The other hunter quickly added, "That’s right, that’s right. Actually lord, we have long found this old Wang unfavourable. Hmph, he’s nothing special, just that he can hunt better than us. We’re all just mortals, yet he thinks he’s more special than us and purposely moved out of the village to live here. As the younger generation, we sometimes will ask him to teach us and impart his experiences, but he would just outright chase us away and never allow us to show up again near the wooden house!"

Fang Yuan listened quietly while nodding. Although these two started belittling Old man Wang in an attempt to keep their lives, he did not sense any resentment from these two men’s mouths.

Fang Yuan guessed inwardly that these two men asking to consult for hunting matters should be fake, he surmised that they were just over to covet for the Wang family’s daughter and her good looks. Yet in the end they were found out by Old man Wang and disciplined a few times harshly.

"Weeding out the wicked and let the law-abiding citizens live in peace. Enough of such bootlicking, this time I killed them because my motive was just for this beast skin map. Well, both of you have showed a satisfying behaviour, you can both go now." Fang Yuan’s tone softened, but at the same time the right hand behind his back shone with gloomy moonlight.

The two young men kneeling on the ground felt surprise and joy once they heard this.

"Thank you so much for your mercy, lord!"

"Lord, your generosity and indulgence, we shall remember in heart forever!"

They kowtowed on the ground, their mucus and tears overflowing, sounds of dull knocking could be heard. After several knocks they immediately got up and turned to leave.

Although Fang Yuan was younger than them in age, but after witnessing firsthand what Fang Yuan was like in doing things, they were beyond fearful and terrified, wishing never to meet Fang Yuan again.

"Hold it." Just at this moment, a voice suddenly travelled over.

The moment it finished there was a swoosh and a Gu Master jumped down from a treetop.

"You both cannot leave, tell me what happened here. All of it." This Gu Master that just jumped down was wearing a deep blue uniform, and there was a scarlet belt with a metal plate in the middle. There was a huge ‘Two’ word carved onto the metal plate.

This Rank two Gu Master had a slim build, his two eyes slender. He wore arm protectors on his wrists, and his calves had sturdy leg bindings, his entire being radiating with a highly capable aura.

"This commoner greets lord Jiang He!" The two young men had just got up with the intention to leave, but once they saw this Gu Master they instantly knelt down again, prostrating themselves in admiration while greeting.

This Gu Master was someone they knew – it was the Gu Master stationed at the village.

Every year to reinforce their control in their surroundings, the Gu Yue Village would dispatch Gu Master down into the little villages and hamlets, stationing Gu Masters there. This would also prevent the other powers from infiltrating and at the same time strengthen their defences on their borders.

This Gu Master named Jiang He did not bother with the two hunters kneeling on the ground, instead looking straight at Fang Yuan, asking in a cold tone, "I am the Gu Master Jiang He of the Gu Yue clan who has been stationed here, you are?"

Fang Yuan laughed lightly and stretched his right palm out, where the Moonlight Gu was giving out a ball of moonlight in the middle of his palm.

When the Gu Master Jiang He saw the moonlight in Fang Yuan’s hand, his gaze softened considerably – the Moonlight Gu was the sign of the Gu Yue clan, this was something that could not be forged.

"This matter is simple actually. Old man Wang’s second son offended me, so I killed the entire family off in anger. Those two can be my witness." Fang Yuan straightforwardly admitted with a bold and confident manner, pointing at the two hunters kneeling down at the same time.

Fang yuan was not lying, and these two hunters nodded in haste; there was no hesitation.

Jiang He stared blankly for a moment before he started laughing loudly, "You killed well! Just a bunch of measly peasant servants, to actually dare to offend their masters, they deserved to be killed!!"

But he quickly added with a change in tone, full of emotion and deep meaning, "However young junior, what you’ve done has also brought problems to me. Although Old man Wang resides far away from the masses and stayed here alone with his family, they are still villagers that I am in charge of. I was sent out from the clan and stationed here in this village, this means I’m supposed to protect the villagers and be on the alert as defence. Now that you’ve killed these few people, the number of villagers will have lessened. During the examination at the end of the year the clan’s assessment towards me will drop."

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone, and he instantly knew that this Jiang He was using this as a pretext to extort money from him.

He laughed and said out, "This isn’t so difficult. Senior you just have to report the truth back. Just say that this entire family was killed by me, and it has nothing to do with senior whatsoever."

When Jiang He heard this his eyelids twitched, anger rising in his heart towards Fang Yuan who did not know how to appreciate favors. His manner of speaking became extremely solemn, "Then I will have to conduct business impartially here. Junior, if you are not afraid of the clan’s investigation then report your name, I will record it in detail as how things really are on paper."

His words brought a strong implication of threat; if it was any other youngster they would have been frightened by this statement already.

But Fang Yuan could see Jiang He’s weakness from it, and he instantly said, "Then senior shall report as how it should be. Ah right, my surname is Gu Yue, and my name is Fang Yuan."

"So you’re actually Fang Yuan!" Jiang He’s face evidently showed astonishment for a while, "I have been hearing about you all the time from my little brother recently. You thoroughly beat up all your classmates, extorting in front of everyone, getting sixty pieces of primeval stones each time. Every time my little brother speaks of it he’s always jealous of how you can earn money so easily. Not to mention that time when you gambled out a Liquor worm and a Mudskin Toad consecutively. This sort of luck sure makes people jealous. Oh right, my little brother is Jiang Ya, you both should have met each other long ago."

"So it’s him." Fang Yuan nodded and admitted, "Yes, every time when I buy Moon orchid petals, I would buy them in Jiang Ya’s shop."

"Hahaha, since this it the case then we both are acquaintances. Oh well let’s forget about it, this matter I’ll handle it!" When he said this, Jiang He clapped his chest with his hands, putting out the appearance of one with the spirit of loyalty and self-sacrifice.

He was merely using this favourable circumstance, there was no way he could have really reported the matter.

After reporting of such a thing the clan’s assessment towards him would still drop either way. You might as well just do a good turn to Fang Yuan, as for Old man Wang’s family’s death, he could just report that they were invaded and attacked by a wild beast.

It’s Old man Wang’s fault for his unconventional ways of insisting to move out of the village, building a wooden house far away from the population!

Jiang He was not afraid of the matter being disclosed, there was just a few mortal peasants around. Their lives were cheap ass grass, who cares if they died? Even if the clan found out about the cover-up they would hardly care about such a small matter.

"But junior, you have yet to graduate from the academy and do not have the Gu Master uniform like I am wearing now. If that Wang Er saw this outfit he’d know about your status as Gu Master and wouldn’t offend you. Junior you are a smart person, don’t you think so, hehe," said Jiang He again.

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed. Jiang He’s words had implicit meaning, and was actually warning himself — do not run out of the academy and wander around for no reason, and you better not come to the area under my jurisdiction here after today to cause trouble and kill people again.

"In that case thank you very much for your advice, senior." Fang Yuan cupped his fists in greeting, bidding farewell to Jiang He, immediately taking his leave from here.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the black of the night, the moon is shaped like a silver plate, hanging high in the sky spewing its watery moonlight down.

The dense woods lightly unfold their dense green leaves and branches in the summer wind. The waterfalls crash down as they flow, but the sounds are unable to cover the noises of the sandalwood crickets chirping about.

Fang Yuan stepped onto the green grass, quietly approaching a mountain boar.

This mountain boar had its head buried, puffing and snorting as it digged the emerald earth with its snout, rummaging among the soil and grass to look for worms.

The wild boar was an omnivorous animal. It not only ate worms, but also stole bird eggs and was adept at hunting wild rabbits, mice, even venomous creatures such as snakes and scorpions.

Fang Yuan crept slowly from behind the boar.

Under the bright moonlight, the greyish black fur coat of the wild pig could be seen clearly. Its body was strong and firm, the four limbs short and rough. On its back was a long and stiff mane, while atop its ears were sparse fur that was erect like needles. With all four limbs on the ground, each foot had four toes but only the two middle ones were digging against the soil. Its fail was thin and short, sometimes flinging about, chasing away the mosquitoes flying around.

Suddenly it stopped digging for its meal, rearing its head up. At the same time the boar’s sharp little upright ears quickly trembled a few times. Although Fang Yuan had managed to stop his tracks in time, this mountain boar still found him. It immediately turned around and groaned out with warning sounds.

Fang Yuan was not surprised by this. A wild animal was not like a domestic one, they were all very alert. Especially the wild boar, they had acute smell and could find bird nests that were often hidden very well.

Even if this mountain boar did not hear any noises, when Fang Yuan neared around a hundred meters away from it, it would be able to smell the his body odour and will still be able to sense Fang Yuan’s presence.

Although Fang Yuan had five Gu worms on him at the moment – the Spring Autumn Cicada, Liquor worm, Moonlight Gu, Little Light Gu and the white boar Gu, these Gu were all not able to match each other, and were incompatible.

If Fang Yuan had a Smell Lock Gu that could cover up his body odour, and another Quiet Steps Gu that concealed the noise of one’s footsteps, he could completely and silently reach up to a distance of ten steps away from the mountain pig.

However if he had these two Gu then Fang Yuan would have been keeping seven Gu worms, this would cause his primeval essence usage to be too great and he would have difficulty supporting them.

Gu Masters in general can only feed four to five Gu worms of the same rank. Thus Gu Masters usually do not move alone, but instead form small groups of five, or at the very least with three.

Among the groups, there would be someone specially in charge of detection, one responsible for advancement, one bearing the offence role, another responsible for medical treatment and someone in charge of resisting and holding back hostiles.

Fang Yuan continued without stop, getting closer to the wild boar.

The wild boar screeched lowly, the white fur on its neck standing, the symbol of its agitation.

Finally when Fang Yuan was near enough, closer than the wild boar’s acceptable range, the wild boar’s hoofs dug the ground three times before spreading its muscular four limbs, lowered its head and dashed towards Fang Yuan.

Its upper jaw was withdrawn, its lower jaw turning upwards, forming two white tusks. Under the moonlight, the tusks shone with light as it stabbed towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had no defensive type of Gu worm, and if he was pierced by the tusk, his stomach would be penetrated, his intestines would be punctured and he would be heavily injured if not dead.

"Moonlight Gu." Fang Yuan’s face was calm as he thought in his mind, causing the Moonlight Gu in his palm to absorb his primeval essence and emit an eerie moonlight glow, interweaving with the moonlight from the night sky.

The wild boar charged towards Fang Yuan as his right palm swiped across the air.

With a swoosh, the moonblade flew out and hit the wild boar in the face, causing blood to splatter all over.

The wild boar cried out loudly, turning its anger into fuel as its charge became even faster, and in the blink of an eye, it reached a few steps before Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan nimbly jumped to the side, rolling and breaking his fall.

The wild boar charged right past Fang Yuan, and with a boom, crashed into a tree behind him.

The tiny tree was only as thick as a human arm, after getting knocked by the wild boar, it received devastating damage as the tree trunk tore open and split into two.

Fang Yuan stood up, quickly getting close to the wild boar while a moonblade shot out from his right hand at the same time.

The eerily blue moonblade drew a straight line across the air as it landed on the wild boar.

The wild boar’s black fur had several thin cuts on it. The injury was very deep and bright red blood oozed out from it.

The moonblade Fang Yuan activated used up upper stage primeval essence, thus it was able to break even a human’s toughest bones in one shot. But on the boar, it could only cause such superficial injury, and not damage the bones.

A small wild boar like this was so strong, this showed how cruel the living environment was in this world!

The wild boar growled, and charged towards Fang Yuan again.

In the process of sprinting, its blood-dripping wound continued to tear open, and its warm blood poured out like water.

Fang Yuan used the same trick, taking a tumble sideways and dodged its charge.

The wild boar, although strong and very ferocious, had one weakness – it could not change directions easily. Its speed was fast, but that meant it could not alter directions easily, so this way, every one of its charges is in a straight line. As long as a Gu Master is attentive enough, it is not hard to dodge.

Boom, boom, boom.

Every time the wild boar charged, Fang Yuan would shoot a few moonblades, causing its old wounds to be overlapped with new wounds, and the angrier it got, the more blood flowed.

After a few times, its movements slowed and its growling also revealed a hint of weakness.

"Little light Gu."

This time, Fang Yuan not only activated the Moonlight Gu, but also deployed his primeval essence and injected it into the Little light Gu.

The Moonlight Gu after being refined had always stayed in Fang Yuan’s right palm, turning into a blue crescent moon tattoo. After the Little light Gu was refined, it also resided in his right palm, turning into the shape of a five-sided star.

At this point, his dark green primeval essence entered the two Gu, the moonlight emitting an eerie blue moonlight while the Little light Gu emitted a milky white glow.

The milky white light fused into the moonlight, and the originally small lump of moonlight instantly became twice as big.

"Go."

Fang Yuan’s right hand sweeped, and an enhanced giant moonblade flew out.

Using only the Moonlight Gu, the size was only palm-sized. But with the addition and help of the Little light Gu, the moonblade’s size doubled, and its attack range also doubled as well.

Swoosh!

The moonblade hit the wild boar on the neck, creeping into its black grey fur. It emerged from the other end and flew for about three to four meters before dissipating in the air.

Glup glup...

The wild boar stood on the spot, frozen for a moment, then blood oozed out from its injuries like a fountain.

It abruptly collapsed, half of its head cut off, washed away by the pouring blood, and only a small piece of flesh kept it together with its body.

A thick smell of blood gushed out into his nose.

Fang Yuan did not dare to hesitate, pointing a finger at the wild boar, and the White Boar Gu which was residing in his aperture instantly turned into a milky white light and entered the wild boar’s body.

Fang Yuan stood on the spot, nervously staying alert of the surroundings. Although the beast skin map said that the area was relatively safe, there were always accidents in nature, what if beasts were attracted by the smell of the blood?

After a while, the White Boar Gu flew back safe and sound.

The entire boar had shrunk in half, only leaving behind its black grey fur and the intestines under its skin. As for the meat, most of it was eaten by the White Boar Gu.

But the strange thing was, although the White Boar Gu ate pork nearly a thousand times its size, it did not change physically.

There was not even a drip of blood on it, as it maintained that milky white worm appearance.

"After this meal, I’ll come five days later to hunt boars." Fang Yuan kept the White Boar Gu, but did not leave immediately. Instead, he took out his knife and extracted the two tusks of the boar.

The wild boar’s body had a few things of value.

The first was pork, the second was fur, and the third was its teeth.

But now the wild boar meat was mostly eaten by the White Boar Gu; its skin was full of holes due to the moonblades, being meaningless even if retrieved.

Only this pair of tusks had some value. It could be used as food for certain Gu worms which ate teeth as food, or used as a catalyst for some Gu worm’s advancement.

Fang Yuan hid the teeth in the rock crack’s secret cave before returning to the hostel.

He did not sleep immediately, but sat on his bed and started to cultivate.

Within the aperture, the primeval sea acted like waves, rising and falling.

Fang Yuan was now a middle stage Gu Master, so after using the Liquor worm refinement, he had upper stage primeval essence.

Thus, while the people his age had middle stage pale green primeval essence, Fang Yuan’s primeval essence was dark green.

Now that he killed a boar, there was only 23% of his primeval essence in his aperture.

A Rank one Gu Master was not that strong in battle. Or rather, nature’s environment was too harsh. Even if the moonblade could break bones, to kill a normal wild boar, Fang Yuan had to use 20% of his upper stage primeval essence.

"White Boar Gu."

His eyes were shut tight, his spirit immersed into his aperture.

In the aperture, a gush of dark green primeval essence rushed up against the flow, injecting into the White Boar Gu.

The White Boar Gu immediately emitted a bright white light, and the light enveloped Fang Yuan’s body. If one looked from the outside, they would see that Fang Yuan’s body was emitting a pure white light from the inside.

Fang Yuan’s every muscle and every inch of skin, was soaked in this white light.

A feeling of numbness and itchiness was felt by him. As the white light modified his muscles, it allowed strength to be slowly infused into his body, thus gaining roots and never to be lost again.

However, after a moment, the numb feeling became pain. This pain was like getting electrocuted, from numbness to sharp pain like getting cut by razor blades.

Fang Yuan hurriedly stopped the White Boar Gu.

Anything prolonged was not good.

The White Boar Gu could not be overused, it could be applied about fifteen minutes a day. Exceed it, and extreme pain would be felt, increasingly painful.

If he continued using it despite that, a person might even die from the pain!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Time flies, and with the blink of an eye, it was already the middle of June.

The summer night, with the golden arc of the moon hanging high in the sky, shining its radiance on the green mountain lands.

The winds blew and the leaves danced with the moonlight. The song of the cicadas and bullfrogs were simultaneous with each other. At times the sound of a wolf howling could be heard from afar, echoing throughout the green mountain.

On a river bank, a creek was scrubbing over a piece of smooth cliff rock. Beside this bank, a battle was ongoing.

A mountain boar covered in fine and deep wounds all over kicked its legs and rushed forward once more towards Fang Yuan. The blood was pouring from its wounds, marking a road of fresh red liquid.

Fang Yuan wrestled with it, showing no signs of panic.

The wild boar was on the verge of death, but it was precisely these moments that wild beasts are the most dangerous. Using the last remaining potential of their lives, their insanity and tenacity, could cause one to get gravely injured at any careless moment.

Fang Yuan was peaceful, his black iris glowing eerily under the moonlight, showing the light of absolute calmness.

He had the experience of 500 years, a part of him was engrossed in combat, while another disengaged from the battle, and remained alert towards the surroundings.

Many times when he was hunting wild boars, other animals came to wreck havoc. At times, a wild boar, another time wild wolves, and even once a wandering tiger.

As time passed, the wild boar’s attacks gradually slowed down.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone brightly as he took a few strides forward, getting close to the wild boar. Raising strength in his shoulder and arms, he carried and raised the wild boar in one breath.

Huff!

Fang Yuan growled as his face was puffed red, his arms stretching out and raising the wild boar high above his head.

The wild boar feebly struggled.

Fang Yuan’s body was unstable, he used all his strength to throw the wild boar.

With a boom, the wild boar was thrown onto a large rock by the river bank. It cried pitifully as sounds of its bones breaking could be heard.

It fell down from the large rock, blood oozing out from its ears, nose and mouth.

It struggled a few times before drawing its final breath.

The surroundings regained its peace.

The river water flowed endlessly, carrying the boar’s blood along the river to some far away place.

"My strength right now can compete with a boar! Tonight I’ll go try that giant rock at the passageway." Fang Yuan stood on the spot, breathing in heavily with a hint of excitement flashing across his eyes.

These days he had used the White Boar Gu non-stop to increase the strength of his body. He could feel strongly now that his strength was getting bigger.

Back then when he fought wild boars, he could only use a kiting technique with the moonblade, but now he could even carry the wild boar, so the increment of his strength had shown great progress.

Of course, the White Boar Gu would not endless give him strength. The limit was a boar’s strength, and once he reached the limit, it would no longer grant him any additional strength.

"I can carry a wild boar now, but that does not mean I can go head to head with a boar, like how a strong man can carry another strong man, but it does not mean they have equal strength. My strength can continue to grow."

Feeding all the pork to the White Boar Gu, Fang Yuan used his hunting knife to retrieve the boar’s teeth, and finally diced up the already heavily torn boar skin, before going into the secret cave in the rock crack.

As for the boar’s corpse, it did not need him to do anything. During the summer night, wild beasts roamed freely, and not long after, there should be wild beasts picking up the scent of the blood and rush here to clean the scene for Fang Yuan.

Or rather, even if someone found out, it was inconsequential. The wild boar’s injuries were all ‘edited’ by Fang Yuan, looking nothing like moonblade cuts.

Back to the secret cave enveloped in red light, Fang Yuan threw the two wild boar teeth at a corner.

The wild boar’s teeth collided, causing a crisp sound.

At this corner, there was already a pile of wild boar teeth. They were the results of Fang Yuan’s hunting.

Fang Yuan squirmed into the passageway, once again getting to the end of the tunnel.

Walking on the tunnel, his footsteps could be heard echoing in the cave, his vision dyed red due to the light.

Everything was unchanged; the giant rock was still there, quietly blocking his path. As for the hole created after digging out the earth treasury flower, it had already been filled up by Fang Yuan.

Haa!

Fang Yuan walked in front of the giant rock, raised both hands and pushed.

Although his face grew red with exertion, and he used all his strength, the giant rock did not move an inch.

"With my current strength, I can only carry a wild boar. But this giant rock, it is at least the weight of five to six boars. No wonder I cannot move it. The Flower Wine Monk’s strength inheritance is not that easily obtained!" Fang Yuan’s gaze shone as he estimated in his heart.

He did not give up, but instead came out of the tunnel and returned to the secret room upstairs.

Taking a bamboo tube from the corner of the wall, Fang Yuan sat on the ground and opened the lid, taking out the beast skin map and sheets of bamboo paper.

He opened the beast skin map and started to memorise it, using his fingers to draw on the traces on the map to aid in his memorization.

Ever since he had obtained the map, he had been doing this everyday.

Fang Yuan did not have a storage type Gu, he could not bring the beast skin map with him everywhere. Carrying a bamboo tube on him while battling is inconvenient too. Thus, Fang Yuan put in some effort and was prepared to stuff the entire beast skin map’s content into his head.

Some things, even if troublesome, had to be done. In a person’s life, those who did not actively resolve problems due to fearing trouble, would always face a dangerous predicament at the end. Fang Yuan understood this logic from his previous life.

"When one is young, their memory sure is good. I have already memorised more than half of this map. If I was old, I would probably forget the content while memorising this. Hehehe... of course if I had a Bookworm, I would feed this map to it, and from then on, as long as I do not lose the Bookworm, I will be able to recall this map clearly forever."

Fang Yuan had the Liquor worm, White Boar Gu, and was now beginning to have insatiable greed, starting to crave the Bookworm.

The value of the Bookworm was quite close to the Liquor worm and White Boar Gu, all being rare species among the Rank one Gu worms. The market price was expensive and they were often sold out in moments.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan did not obtain the Liquor worm or White Boar Gu, but he accidentally obtained a Bookworm. This Bookworm eventually advanced ranks with him, and accompanied him for a whole sixty years.

"Forget it, Bookworms are rare and low in numbers, I won’t be able to get one anytime soon. To speak the truth, my current stage is way better than my previous life at this point. Last time at this period, I was still a Rank one initial stage, while the others like Fang Zheng, Chi Cheng, Mo Bei were already upper stage, far beyond me." Fang Yuan was not someone who worried over nothing, quickly getting over it.

He was rather satisfied with his current progress.

He was a middle stage, and the others were also middle stage. With his C grade talent, he could maintain the same speed as these A and B grades, it was not easy. Much effort was given to the Liquor worm, as well as Fang Yuan’s rich cultivating experience.

The other aspect, was also due to Fang Yuan.

His act of extortion had caused the classmates to bulk up on training their physical fighting skills under the help of their elders. Unknowingly, it caused them to be distracted, reducing the time they spent on nurturing their apertures. This resulted in everyone’s cultivation level being even lower than Fang Yuan’s past life.

But even so, they were not so far from upper stage now.

Gu Masters’ early stage of cultivation was rather easy, seeing effect in a short period of time. Especially Gu Yue Fang Zheng, Mo Chen and Chi Cheng, their cultivation level had already creeped and even seemed to surpass Fang Yuan.

With constant cultivation, these three with their talent, or the support behind them, had already begun to show their advantage. The lead that Fang Yuan had due to the Liquor worm was starting to disappear.

Of course, there was also the reason of him hunting recently and using the White Boar Gu to raise his strength, or spending much of his time and effort in doing so.

"At this rate, before long, someone will advance to upper stage. The first person that achieves upper stage will get a reward of thirty primeval stones. But this reward, I do not intend to contest for it." Fang Yuan had decided long ago.

If he abandoned the White Boar Gu now and rushed for upper stage, he might have some hopes of winning. But that was not Fang Yuan’s goal. Thirty primeval stones might be good but he did not lack primeval stones at the moment.

The bigger reason was that he needed to remain concealed and keep a low profile to reduce other people’s attention towards him, so that he can inherit the Flower Wine Monk’s strength inheritance successfully.

This is his real motive.

"The academy has all sorts of rewards, but it is just carrots to pique the student’s interest, and most importantly, it is a part of the family’s system. Fighting for these little rewards, is not what a wise person would do."

Fang Yuan collect his spirits and gazed at the beast skin map again.

The beast skin map had two pages; one recorded the day while the other recorded the night. Many lines of different colours intertwined on it.

These lines, some were straight, some were curved, but they all had their own specific meaning. Only old man Wang would be clear of their meaning, but it is a pity he died. But even if he was alive, by forcing him to speak, he might not say the truth.

These days, Fang Yuan relied on his knowledge and experience, and according to the bamboo paper’s comparison, he had already deciphered it all.

"The red cross represents danger, a forbidden zone. The area with the red cross seems to be surrounded by wild boars, it is probably a wild boar king there. With my current strength, I’m as good as dead if I encounter one. Hmph!"

Thinking of old man Wang, Fang Yuan could not help but snort again.

This area marked with a cross was not marked on the bamboo paper. If Fang Yuan really believed the bamboo paper, he would probably die by the fangs of the wild boar king one day. This old man Wang was indeed experienced. To avenge his son, he did not have to act himself, but borrowed the wild boar king’s strength. This way, even if Fang Yuan dies, he would be able to avoid responsibility.

"But these three spots marked with a red circle, what do they mean?" Fang Yuan was perturbed.

This was the beast skin map’s final suspicious point.

Three red circles, showing three very isolated areas. They were also very far apart, and had little surrounding beasts, considered safer areas in the wild.

"The red cross represents forbidden area, but what does the red circle represent?" Fang Yuan fell into deep thoughts, "Normally, red is the most alert colour. Old man Wang marked these three areas, meaning they are important. It is a pity these areas are far, if not I would inspect them myself and find the reason."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The hot summer sun blazes on, the mountain winds blowing the warm winds around, Qing Mao Mountain steaming under the hot air.

In the blink of an eye, it was already near the end of June.

"Gu Yue Fang Zheng!" In the academy, the family elder called out.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng got up from his seat and came before the Academy Elder.

Under the admiring gaze of his classmates, Fang Zheng received a heavy bag of primeval stones.

"Fang Zheng, you are the first to advance to upper stage, this is your reward. Good job, continue working hard." Academy elder smiled pleasantly, patting Fang Zheng’s shoulders.

Fang Zheng acknowledged with a grunt, his face full of excitement.

He took the money bag over with emotion and returned to his seat.

"I finally did it. The first to advance to upper stage, do you see that big brother, I finally beat you for once!"

His eyes shone with bright light as he swept his gaze over at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was sprawled on the table, sound asleep. Last night he had killed another wild boar, and after returning to the hostel, he used the White Boar Gu to improve his body and also used the natural essence within the primeval stones to refine his primeval essence using the Liquor worm. Finally, he used his upper stage primeval essence to nurture his aperture, all the way until morning.

He hurriedly ate breakfast before rushing to class, falling asleep as soon as he settled in. He was too exhausted, and Gu Master cultivation could not replace sleep.

"Hmph, even if you don’t admit it, this is the truth. Big brother, I have finally surpassed you! This is the first, and there will be a second time, a third time!"

Fang Zheng clenched his fists. This success was extremely meaningful to him. He had already broken through the dark clouds in his heart, creating and opening to allow light to penetrate in.

Even though this light was thin, it gave Fang Zheng hope and encouragement!

"Hmph, I actually lost to that Fang Zheng." Gu Yue Mo Bei sat on his seat, arms crossed, feeling indignant.

"This is the advantage of an A grade, damn it..." Gu Yue Chi Cheng said with a dark expression. As he cultivated, he felt strongly the advantages of a good talent. Even with his grandfather Gu Yue Chi Lian’s support, plus his extremely hard work, he was still left behind by Fang Zheng.

"If only I had a Liquor worm, plus grandfather’s help, I might not lose to Fang Zheng! Those accursed Fang family brothers! Little brother is A grade, suppressing us, but the brother being a C grade has a Liquor worm. Why did all the good things in this world go to these brothers?" Gu Yue Chi Cheng felt really indignant.

"This time Fang Zheng broke through to upper stage first."

"Of course, he is A grade talent".

"Yeah, even Mo Bei, Chi Cheng, and Fang Yuan lost to Fang Zheng. Fang Zheng has gained all the attention this time."

"Fang Yuan having the Liquor worm is not putting in effort. Wasting his time everyday, even sleeping in class, he might as well give his Liquor worm to me."

The surrounding students discussed, feeling indignant in their hearts, helplessness and envy.

The academy elder called them one by one, and students went up continuously to collect their primeval stones allowance, and returned to their seats.

"Everyone quieten down." After the allowance was given out, the academy elder used his hand to hit the table. All of a sudden, the academy became silent.

"Now, you’ve all mastered your second Gu worm and even so much as broke through into the upper stage. In the past half a year, you have all worked hard, and now you have some basics, it is time for you to train in the wilds. True battles, are not scarecrows or puppets, wooden puppets that stand there and await your attacks.

"The following mid year examination, will be held three days later, all students have to attend! The examination content is to hunt wild boars. By collecting wild boar teeth as results to record, those who collect the most wild boar teeth will get better scores. At the end of the examination, each wild boar teeth can be exchanged for ten primeval stones. Furthermore, you are allowed to hunt in groups."

The academy elder’s words caused a commotion among the students.

"The mid-year exam is finally here!"

"Every year’s students study at the academy for a year, and there is always a mid-year exam and an end of year exam. Looking at the time, it really is time for the mid-year exam."

"Every year’s examination content is different, to think that this year, our examination is to hunt and acquire wild boar teeth."

"What should we do? My talent is only D grade, my vital Gu isn’t an attack-type like the Moonlight Gu, how can I hunt wild boars?"

"Didn’t you hear, the family elder said, we are allowed to hunt in groups. For those with talent that can’t make it, or those with Gu worms that aren’t suitable, we can help each other and cooperate! When we get boar teeth, we just need to share with one another, and that would work."

"Each wild boar teeth can be exchanged for ten primeval stones, this is the academy encouraging us to hunt more wild boars, and the prize is set for that. For true market value, one primeval stone can buy twenty wild boar teeth."

The students had varying expressions, some were happy while other fretted, some were eager to go, while others called on companions, even Fang Yuan was slightly moved.

"It changed! I remember that last year’s examination was to collect wildlife honey. To think that it changed to wild boar teeth. Is this the butterfly effect?"

A butterfly flapping its wings can cause a giant storm on the coast of another ocean. A small change in the initial conditions lead to drastic changes in the results.

Ever since his rebirth, Fang Yuan had made many changes, the conditions of his current self was vastly different from his previous life. Back then he had already been left behind by Fang Zheng and the others, but now he was adamantly at the top of the student board.

In his past life he did not kill Jia Jin Sheng, in fact they did not even meet. But this life, he did not only kill Jia Jin Sheng, he even excavated the deeper treasures of the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance.

These changes are like a butterfly flapping its wings, indirectly causing changes to the environment. The mid-year examination change is only the first of such symptoms.

"If I continue changing things, will it cause history to become completely unrecognisable as well? In that case, the advantage from my rebirth would be significantly reduced."

Fang Yuan looked calm, but was sighing internally.

The feeling of inability and pressing urgency roamed his heart, but he quickly adjusted his mood.

"No matter what, since it has already happened, I can’t stop it. What I need to do now is to actively change myself. Even if the events are completely different at the end, I would not slow down my growth just because of such concerns!"

"In my past life I knew nothing about the future, does that mean that in my current life I lack courage? Hehe, even if the world is full of thorns, I will cut through all the thorns in my way and pave out a blood-filled path myself!"

"Every teeth for ten primeval stones, this price is very high. Should I sell all those wild boar fangs I have stocked up at the cave? But if I do, I might attract suspicion? No, according to the Gu Yue clan’s political situation, if I sell these wild boar teeth publicly, I might get screwed over."

Fang Yuan shook his head, the risks were too big. If he really sold these teeth, what could he get in return?

A little over one hundred primeval stones?

"Wait, primeval stones aren’t important. Maybe I can use this change to construct my image again." Thinking of this, Fang Yuan’s eyes shone brightly.

He needed to get rich secretly now, being as low profile as possible. If the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance was exposed, he might even lose his life.

But his current position was awkward.

He stood against all his classmates, being outside the system, and among the higher-ups, he was an untamable, unhappy and indignant, intelligent and cold, C grade talent teenager.

This image was not good, it literally portrayed him as unloyal. But a clan requires loyalty, in fact, any organisation requires loyalty.

No matter which world, loyalty is the value that is most sought after in clans. Loyalty to the clan, loyalty to the country, loyalty to his leader, loyalty to his loved one, loyalty to his friends etc.

As Fang Yuan’s cultivation level got higher, the higher-ups would only get more concerned, and if needed, the family may even use hard handed methods on him. At that point, Fang Yuan would be really thrown into passivity.

Fang Yuan did not like passiveness, he liked to have the control of all matters tightly in his grip.

Because of a series of events before, Fang Yuan could only operate on the go, relying on outside strength, and this image he constructed was only to protect himself in times of need.

But now that he could protect himself, Fang Yuan needed to be stronger!

Thus, he needed to change this image, letting the higher-ups think that he had given up and joined the clan system. But this conversation cannot be too abrupt, or it would be suspicious.

More importantly, joining this system is only a facade, Fang Yuan would not really join them truly, and be manipulated and restricted. He had too many secrets.

He needed large amounts of freedom, and in actuality he was still a loner in operation.

But now the mid-year exam was a chance.

"It seems I have to do some plotting, I’ll start from the extortion then." Fang Yuan’s gaze became certain as everything fell into his scheme.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"You said that during Fang Yuan’s extortion this time, although he defeated Fang Zheng, Chi Cheng and Mo Bei, he left go of them and did not take their primeval stones?" Hearing the guard’s report, the academy elder revealed a slightly shocked expression.

"I dare not lie to lord, it is indeed like this." The guard kneeling on the ground immediately responded.

"Mm." The academy elder did not express his opinion, and waved his hand, "I have understood this matter, you may go."

"Your subordinate takes his leave."

Once the guard had left, the academy elder immediately fell into deep thoughts.

He was originally concerned with this matter as he was afraid Fang Yuan would snatch away the thirty primeval stones that Fang Zheng had gotten as a reward. If that was the case, the academy’s reward system would have no meaning, they might as well give everything to Fang Yuan.

If Fang Yuan really did that, the academy would not allow it, and the academy elder was already prepared to punish Fang Yuan.

But he did not expect that not only did Fang Yuan have no intention to take the thirty primeval stones from Fang Zheng, he even let go of Mo Bei and Chi Cheng as well.

"Fang Yuan has hundreds of primeval stones on hand, he might not be too concerned with the thirty primeval stones, that is understandable. But giving up on extorting Mo Bei, Chi Cheng and Fang Zheng, what is the reason?"

The academy elder contemplated, his eyebrows gradually easing. He had understood something.

Mo Bei, Chi Cheng and Fang Zheng, they could be said to represent the three factions of the clan. Letting go of them, the meaning was that he was appealing to the three different factions. This was understandable, as Fang Yuan’s attitude change meant that he was finally willing to lower his head to the clan.

"Understandable. As he cultivated, Fang Yuan may have the Liquor worm, but the situation has gotten clearer to him. The inability of a C grade talent, after a few outbursts, and letting go of the majority of his negative feelings, he is probably rather downhearted and depressed now."

"It seems the clan leader’s words make sense, Fang Yuan is after all a fifteen year old, how can he go against the clan’s system? Now that he has started to accept reality, once he finds the position that he belongs to, he would fuse into the clan naturally."

Thinking of this, the academy elder breathed out a sigh of relief, his feelings becoming more cheerful.

Three days passed in a flash. Soon, the mid-year exam was here.

"Faster, faster, I’ve lured the wild boar out!" A youngster ran as he shouted out frantically.

On both his legs, there was a light green ring of swirling wind. With these two rings, it led to him having above average speed at such a young age.

However, the wild boar chasing after him became faster and faster, and the distance between them was shortening.

The scorching sun penetrated the forest and reflected on the wild boar, causing both its teeth to shine brightly.

"The wild boar is coming, hold the rope tightly!" The four ambushing youngsters quickly hid in the bushes and pulled the ropes tightly, instantly forming a tripping rope.

The speeding youngster leapt lightly, jumping over the road and continued running.

But the boar behind him tripped over the rope and fell harshly on the ground, crashing five to six meters before stopping.

"Oww!" The four youngsters were pulled along by the rope, and fell to the ground along with the wild boar.

"Strike!" The youngster running ahead turned around and shouted.

The few people lying on the ground frantically stood up, and surrounded the wild boar.

Kacha!

A small budding tree, under the impact of the wild boar, snapped in half and the tree crown fell to the ground.

"What a close shave!" Gu Yue Chi Cheng wiped the sweat off his forehead, feeling lingering fear. "Luckily I managed to use the Dragonpill cricket Gu and leapt three meters to the left, otherwise this tree would’ve been my outcome."

Pew pew pew!

Moonblade danced in the air as it hit the wild boar’s body, causing long and shallow cuts.

Gu Yue Mo Bei’s face was excited, his eyes glowing, his spirits immersed in this battle.

Half an hour later, the wild boar collapsed due to excessive loss of blood.

Gu Yue Mo Bei breathed roughly and also sat on the ground, his entire body full of mud and grass, at the same time full of sweat.

"Fighting against a living being like the wild boar is indeed different from the wooden puppet, grass puppet during practise battles. I spent thirty minutes just to kill a wild boar, I wonder how are the others doing?"

On a hidden small hill, there was a temporarily built tent. The tent blocked the punishing sun rays and casted an area of cool dark shadowy shade.

Under the cover, there was a few chairs and tables, with the academy elder sitting at the main seat. Beside him, there were other clan elders. A few Gu Masters were standing behind them.

In the surrounding forests around the tent, there were also some hidden Gu Masters.

At this time, the forest ahead had an abnormal disturbance.

Whoosh!

A Gu Master emerged from the forest like a shadow and quickly ran out, kneeling outside the tentage.

"How is the situation?" Academy elder asked.

"Reporting to Lord Elder, at this point, there are no casualties among the students." The Gu Master quickly answered.

"Good, good."

"An afternoon had already gone by since the mid-year exam started. To have no injuries, this is different from the past years."

"It looks like this is all the academy elder’s effort."

The other clan elders nodded satisfactorily, praising in turns.

The academy elder shook his head slightly, he knew the reason. This was due to Fang Yuan’s emergence, extorting his classmates, causing them to practise hard on basic martial arts, thus having such a performance.

He looked towards the kneeling Gu Master, and continued asking, "Then at this point, whose results are the best?"

The Gu Master answered immediately, "Reporting to Lord, at this point, Gu Yue Fang Yuan, Fang Zheng, Mo Bei, Chi Cheng, are leading. Chi Cheng killed three boars, Fang Zheng and Mo Bei killed five, and Fang Yuan has the most, at eight."

"Oh? To think Fang Yuan is leading!"

"In all the years, it is a very rare sight that A and B grade talents are being suppressed by a C grade."

"He has the Liquor worm right? That means he has upper stage green copper primeval essence, so to have such a result, it is understandable."

"I believe that from now on, Fang Zheng, Mo Bei and Chi Cheng would surpass him. Although he has the Liquor worm, his primeval essence recovery rate cannot compare to A, B grade talents."

The other clan elders discussed.

"You may go." Academy elder waved his hand towards the kneeling Gu Master. "Instruct the others, focus on their protecting job. Especially Fang Zheng, Chi Cheng and Mo Bei, pay more attention and ensure their safety!"

"Yes, lord." The Gu Master retreated.

These outdoor combats to most students, it was really their first time. Thus, there was danger and the clan naturally has plans. Dozens of Rank two Gu Masters were concealed in the forests, controlling the safety of this entire examination. At the same time, some Rank three clan elders were staying here to anticipate sudden accidents.

The blazing sun slowly descended from the highest point in the sky, gradually nearing the north-east mountains.

The sunset glow ignited the clouds; it was the sun’s last flow of passion.

As the last sunlight shone into the forest, another wild boar fell on the ground.

"Twenty third." Fang Yuan calculated in his heart, and then squatted down, skillfully carving out a wild boar teeth.

There was a bag on his back, inside was a large number of wild boar teeth.

At the same time, he had another bag, carrying the teeth of those boars he killed last time. These teeth were originally stored in the rock crack secret cave, and were retrieved by Fang Yuan the previous night, stored into a bag and buried in a secret location.

"I am familiar with the terrain and wild boar distribution, at the same time I have upper stage primeval essence to use the Moonlight Gu together with the Little light Gu. The others’ efficiency definitely cannot compare to me. Just with this bag on me, I can get number one easily. I wonder what expressions they would show when I take out the other bag later? Hehe."

Fang Yuan looked at the sky; it was time to retrieve the other bag.

Thinking of this, in his head, a map showed up.

These days, he had memorized the beast skin map. Fang Yuan was clear of his current position. If he turned left and walked along the stream for fifteen minutes, he would reach the location where he buried the bag.

But when he was about to move, he hesitated.

"With my current location, I am only five to six hundred meters away from the nearest red circle marking. Such a rare chance, should I go take a look?"

Once he had the thought, it was unstoppable.

Since he had already won anyway, Fang Yuan had a lot of time left.

"That beast skin map had three red circle markings, these three locations were very important to old man Wang. It is also the only meaning that I could not decipher on the map. I’ll go see!"

Fang Yuan naturally knew that there were Gu Masters controlling the scene, but this was also why he needed evidence.

Immediately, he acted like he was going to continue killing wild boars, and moved deeper into the forest.

Seven minutes later, he arrived at the red marking location.

A treehouse was hidden among the bushes on a huge tree, and if one did not observe closely they would not be able to find it.

"This is old man Wang’s temporary residence while hunting?" Fang Yuan frowned, his heart getting confused.

He climbed into the treehouse.

When he saw the sight in the tree house, his expression changed!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The space in the tree house isn’t large, but there were many items inside, so at one glance it seemed extremely messy.

The floor in the center had a thick dark yellow-coloured carpet.

Inside the house, there was an iron stove beside the wall, and on it there was a bronze kettle. Inside the stove there was black coloured soot, and beside it there was a small pile of unburnt dried firewood.

Despite it being summer, the nights in this mountain were still icy cold. The iron stove could maintain the entire treehouse’s warmth when lit, despite its small size.

The treehouse has two sets of windows, two to three ropes wrapped as the frame of the windows, connecting the two together in the middle of the room.

On the rope hanged several torn pieces of clothing, the torn patches pieced together. It was obviously an adult’s clothing and was still slightly damp, not completely dry from the sun yet.

The light of the setting sun penetrated the windows and shone inside the treehouse.

The treehouse was rather dark internally. At a corner there were axes and hunting knives with beast skin wrapped on the handle. On the blade there was even dark red blood traces.

On the other side of the wall, there was a piece of bamboo paper with a dagger stabbed in the middle.

There was a young man’s face on the bamboo paper — it was Fang Yuan’s appearance!

This all meant that during this short period, someone had come to the hidden treehouse and lived here. The person’s intention was obvious, his target was Fang Yuan.

The paper was stabbed by a dagger and showed his evil intent to the extremes!

Such a scenario, even Fang Yuan was taken aback.

"What does this person want, and why is he against me? No, maybe it isn’t me but Fang Zheng." Fang Yuan’s thoughts flew all over his mind.

Fang Zheng was an A grade talent, the only one in the last three years of the Gu Yue clan, and is their only hope. If he could be truly nurtured, he would be the next figure in the clan.

But nurturing was a process.

During this process, there were calamities and human-made disasters.

Ignoring calamities, the most important was human disasters. As everyone knew, Qing Mao mountain did not only have the Gu Yue clan, but also the Bai clan and Xiong clan. These two forces would not be happy to see the dominating Gu Yue clan successfully nurturing an A grade talent.

Thus, sending assassins to get rid of him was a common thing.

In this world, there are little geniuses, and even less of those who could successfully grow up.

A grade talent Gu Masters, it was not that they did not exist. Three years ago, one appeared in the Gu Yue clan. In even earlier generations, they also appeared on occasions.

But on Qing Mao Mountain, out of the three clans in these years, there was only one successful A grade talent nurtured – the Bai clan’s Bai Ning Bing of Rank three cultivation.

Such a scenario was enough to say many things.

"This person, is he from the Bai clan or the Xiong clan? They want to get rid of Gu Yue Fang Zheng so soon?" Fang Yuan frowned, staring at the portrait.

"But why did old man Wang’s beast skin map indicate this treehouse? Was he a spy from the other forces? No, this person is obviously after me!"

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with brilliance.

At this moment, he thought of many scenes.

The first time, it was beside the trap, and the four hunter’s conversation –

A hunter said, "Second brother Wang, you’re almost nineteen, it is time you got married and have children."

Wang Er said, "Hmph, as a true man, how can I be lusting after such small beauty! One day, I will walk out of this Qing Mao mountain and roam the world, learn everything in the world and live up to the expectations of my male body!"

The second time was after he himself acted, Wang Er’s peculiar calmness. He pulled his bow and pointed at Fang Yuan. The others were already begging for forgiveness.

The third was when Fang Yuan was asking questions.

"I ask you, in old man Wang’s family, who else is there?"

A hunter answered, "Hunter Wang originally had a wife, but that was decades ago, and she was killed by wild wolves that intruded the village. Before his wife died she gave birth to two sons and a daughter. But the oldest son Wang Da died on the mountain while hunting three years ago. There is no one else in the Wang family."

"I, I remember! Old man Wang actually also has a daughter-in-law, Wang Da’s old wife. But after Wang Da disappeared, his wife died due to a broken heart. That year, the village even specially sent down a chastity memorial arch! But rumour has it that Wang Da’s wife wanted to remarry, and she was actually hounded to death by Old man Wang. When you killed Old man Wang, lord, you are helping us citizens, rooting out the evil and bringing people peace!"

The other hunter quickly added, "That’s right, that’s right. Actually lord, we have long found this old Wang unfavourable. Hmph, he’s nothing special, just that he can hunt better than us. We’re all just mortals, yet he thinks he’s more special than us and purposely moved out of the village to live here. As the younger generation, we sometimes will ask him to teach us and impart his experiences, but he would just outright chase us away and never allow us to show up again near the wooden house!"

Old man Wang’s family, moving out of the village, away from people......

Eldest son Wang Da, died on the mountains three years ago while hunting......

Wang Da’s wife wanted to remarry, and was forced to commit suicide by old man Wang, and obtained a chastity memorial arch....

Old man Wang chased away all the young hunters who were trying to ask for guidance...

Old man Wang tried his best to hide the beast skin map, and on the bamboo paper, there were no such circles......

Wang Er was at such a young age, but was calm towards Gu Masters. At the same time he did not marry, and had the aspiration to surpass mortal realm in his heart......

Most importantly, the circles on the beast skin map indicated a hidden realm, there was obvious human activity in the area. At the same time this person held strong hatred towards Fang Yuan......

All the clues pieced together, if separated they were not easy to link, but once linked it was peculiar!

The more Fang Yuan thought about it, the more he felt that the mist shrouding this mystery has thinned.

The setting sun’s afterglow passed through the window and reflected upon his face, the strong light alike to the colour of blood.

The surroundings had fallen into a deadly silence, was there someone secretly peeping at him all this time?

Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s eyes lit up, his vision crossing through time and space; he had seen the truth!

"Wang Da, did not die."

At this moment, the glow in his eyes radiated the surroundings(1).

"Not only did he not die, he even became a demonic Gu Master by chance!"

It was not that mortals had no cultivating talent, but that the clan restricted the cultivation methods from leaking out, and controlled it tightly in their hands.

But there was no absolute in this world.

Mortals could become Gu Masters as well, from accidents in the wild and encountering the Hope Gu, opening their aperture. Or inheriting a certain strength inheritance, or getting the personal guidance from a certain clan’s member.

But these Gu Masters were not accepted into the clan completely, and could only be their henchmen. Thus, they would not be satisfied and became loner Gu Masters. Their cultivation is extremely difficult. As time passed, as they competed for resources, they would have to kill snatch and murder, turning towards the demonic path.

"Because of some lucky chance, the highest possibility is that he obtained a large fortune from a certain Gu Master’s corpse and became a Gu Master three years ago. To hide from others, he sent out the fake information that he died, but no one had ever seen his corpse. Old man Wang’s family found out about this and moved out of the village, risking the chance that wild beasts might invade and lived alone, just to hide this truth."

"But there were some problems that occurred, Wang Da’s wife did not agree and might have wanted to report to the Gu Yue clan. Wang family had no choice but to kill her, and released some seemingly real and fake information to hide the truth. Something about her remarrying, or forcing her to commit suicide to hide the truth under all these rumors."

"Once in awhile, Wang Da would return home to stay. Thus, old man Wang had to chase those youngsters who were seeking guidance away. Wang Er after interacting with his brother had dispelled his fear of Gu Masters, and naturally developed the goal of wanting to be a Gu Master and explore the greatness of the outside world!"

"Because of the fear that Wang Da might be exposed, even at such an old age Wang Er did not get married. Wang Da could not stay in the house, thus old man Wang drew three red circles on the beast skin map, these three locations should be hidden residential areas like this. Having three hiding spots, Wang Da rotated his stay around the houses, and lived in the fringe of the three clans' authority."

The meaning of the three red circles was finally revealed!

Red indicated alertness, but most importantly to old man Wang, this was his eldest son's residence. Thus, when Fang Yuan wanted the old man to draw the map, he did not indicate it on the bamboo paper, it was to protect his son. Similarly, he drew fewer red crosses, to avenge the death of his son.

"Maybe at a certain time each year, Wang Da will return home to stay for a while. When he returned, he found that his entire family was dead. After asking around, he found out it was me, thus he used the dagger to pin my portrait on the wall, so that he would exact revenge on me!"

With his previous life's experience, Fang Yuan was almost certain this was the truth.

If it was some other power that wanted to assassinate Fang Zheng, they could be much more subtle. They did not have to develop a spy like old man Wang. After all, old man Wang lived at the mountain foot, not inside the Gu Yue village.

"To think that over a beast skin map, I provoked a murderer of the demonic faction. This world really works in wondrous ways," Fang Yuan could not help but snicker.

He first killed Wang Er, the old man Wang and Wang's daughter, and it was all for the beast skin map. Old man Wang was the number one hunter in the village, so his beast skin map had the greatest value.

At that time he was thinking: It's merely three mortal lives, what's the big deal, I'll just killing them conveniently.

In this world, anyone had the right to live, and anyone could die just as easily.

To think that out of nowhere, a demonic way Gu Master emerged!

With regards to this, Fang Yuan did not have a tint of regret, but instead felt at ease.

If he had been too merciful at the time, in his goal to obtain the Wang family beast skin map, Wang Er, old man Wang and sister Wang would've been a huge disturbance. To protect Wang Da's secret, they would not give him the real product.

Wang Er's battle strength could exterminate an ordinary Rank one upper stage Gu Master. Old man Wang was even more experienced with age, and in terms of killing strength, he was even more of a threat than Wang Er.

Even if he had gotten the real product, old man Wang would've informed Wang Da, and Wang Da would've gotten Fang Yuan's information immediately. No matter how he dealt with it, he would be in the shadows while Fang Yuan was out in the open. Wang Da would be having the advantage of being in control of the situation.

"Good thing I killed them at the start! Regardless of what, I have to control the situation in my own palm. This way, even if I do not get the real item, there is no loss to me, and I can even snatch other hunters’. Killing old man Wang and that girl caused Wang Da to spend a lot of time just to get my intel. Needless to say, those two young hunters must’ve already been silenced." Fang Yuan confirmed in his heart.

There was only a few people who knew the situation, and Wang Da would not attack Jiang He. Once Jiang He is dead, the clan would send people to investigate. But if those two hunters disappeared on the mountain, it was easy to manipulate. Jiang He would not reveal an incident like this as it would affect the clan’s evaluation of him, and would even cover up the situation.

(1) ‘glow in his eyes radiated the surroundings’ is a metaphor.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Today I return with mass chapter release, as usual. Please wait for the rest to come in the next few minutes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The thoughts of Fang Yuan flew all over the place in the tree house.

With the knowledge acquired from his previous life, Fang Yuan could sense Wang Da’s existence, but how was his strength?

Fang Yuan had never seen this Wang Da, but with the information at hand, there was much he could analyze from this.

"Courage is built upon the basis of strength, he had collected my information and still wants to exact revenge on me. With such a confidence, his cultivation has to be above Rank one!"

"These three years he had been moving around the three red circled areas, living on the fringe of the three clan villages. Almost everyday he faced the risk of getting discovered and purged. This shows he does not have the strength to roam outside, and roaming outside requires Rank three cultivation.

"This means that, at first evaluation, he is a Rank two."

Fang Yuan’s eyes glinted with cold light, "Counting the time, he disappeared for three years and cultivated to Rank two now, so he should be a B or C grade talent, and his aperture should have about 40-70% primeval essence."

"These three years, he could survive and at the same time, live at home despite Jiang He’s observation, so he has to have a stealth-type of Gu worm at work.

Information was the most important thing to a Gu Master’s showdown.

Although Fang Yuan had no investigative-type Gu worm, with his experience and knowledge, he could forcefully reverse engineer Wang Da’s cultivation level and Gu worms to a highly plausible degree.

Very quickly, his mental image of a Rank two demonic faction Gu Master appeared, carrying the hatred of his family’s murder and lurking somewhere to kill his revenge target.

"I can kill others, others can naturally come to kill me. This is nothing." Fang Yuan laughed lightly.

In this world, anyone had the right to live, and anyone had the chance to die.

Those who kill, are bound to get killed.

Since he committed murder, he should be mentally prepared to get killed.

If he was killed like that, then he would die like that, it was nothing much, and definitely no regrets. This was the path he chose.

This point, Fang Yuan had great resolve already.This is the resolution of the demonic way!

"Wang Er wants to kill me, then in this mid-year exam, it is definitely the best chance. Normally, students would reside in the village, and with his Rank two cultivation, he cannot creep into the village, that is courting death."

"Maybe he evaluated that I might come out to hunt. But Qing Mao Mountain is so huge, he alone has to hide his traces and also have to search for me, it is too difficult. Now that there’s this chance, he is most likely to strike."

"He is a Rank two Gu Master, and one that has struggled for three years, living a life of danger and unknown, a demonic faction Gu Master nurtured like this. With my current battle strength, I am definitely not his match. But this does not mean that I have no chance of survival."

Escape!

Fang Yuan instantly decided.

Nothing is too shameless if it is to survive, so if he can’t fight it, run.

For a Gu Master to make a sudden breakthrough is almost never happening. Fighting against a higher realm is possible, but that is built on the base that the Gu Master has special Gu worms.

Fang Yuan had a number of Gu worms in his possession, but the Spring Autumn Cicada was hibernating and unusable, while the Liquor worm, White Boar Gu, Little light Gu and Moonlight Gu were not trump cards to fight a higher realm.

Obviously knowing the enemy was unbeatable, yet resolving to fight to the death, that is a stupid "hot-blooded" behaviour. Even if he wins, that would not win him the favor of fate.

Fang Yuan is cautious his entire life even with trump cards, and if the chances of victory is slim, he would choose to avoid combat.

He liked to be in control of the situation, using unscrupulous methods to raise his chances to the limit. He loved fighting assured battles.

Only when he has no choice would he engage in a risky fight.

Thus, his favourite activity was to bully the weak and snatch resources to get stronger. Strong enough until he surpasses his enemies and then stomp on them afterwards, bullying the weak.

There is nothing shameless about this, those who find challenges just to prove their bravery and risk their lives to fight to the death with strong enemies, that is the real stupidity.

But unfortunately, this "quality" has been praised and recommended, because any organization needed the individual to sacrifice themselves to protect the interests of the ones in power.

One just needs to think slightly to know that survival is the prerequisite to all activities.

In order to survive and fulfill the ambitions on their heart, this is a person’s greatest courage.

Dying for aspiration, those are fools. Surviving shamelessly for their ambitions, those are true brave warriors!

On earth, Han Xin(1) endured the shame of crawling through someone’s legs, Cao Cao(2) was chased till he shaved his beard and torn his robe, Yue Wang(3) in order to live, had to eat shit to express his loyalty......

That’s why, fuck off with honor and reputation, and face!

Regardless of organization, they would applaud such a value system. The more that needed to be sacrificed, the more they would be promoted, like a military.

"Which direction should I go, the one that has the lowest chance of encountering Wang Da?" A map appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind.

"Wang Da already knows I have the beast skin map, now he should be hiding in the forest, searching for me by looking for the wild boar distribution on the map. I cannot go to these places, thus I can only move in reverse to find a chance to survive." Thinking of this, a slightly insane route surfaced in Fang Yuan’s mind.Under the sunset in the mountain forest, tree shadows overlapped and wild grass grew abundantly.

A pair of bloodshot eyes hid deep in the shadows. His eyes burnt with hatred and anger, as if it couldn’t be doused even with a tsunami.

"Fang Yuan, I’ve finally found you..." Wang Da gritted his teeth, growling the words out from his mouth.

Under his gaze, not far away, a youngster with a thin body and pale face was traversing the forest.

With his enemy nearby, Wang Da did not act immediately, but turned his gaze to several other positions.

From each of these positions, an invigilator Gu Master was hidden.

To prevent cheating and for immediate treatment of injuries, the area nearby had around a few dozen Rank two Gu Masters hiding. There was even Rank three clan elders holding the fort on the mountains high up.

Wang Da carefully moved around the forest and collected a lot of intel.

"I want to kill Fang Yuan, so I need to get rid of these three Gu Masters first. Otherwise, once I show myself, I will be disturbed. Maybe with surprise, I can kill Fang Yuan, but I will also get killed by the Gu Masters that chase after me from there."

"I have Rank two middle stage cultivation, and there’s 50% primeval essence in my body. I have to act first and kill these three Gu Masters, it is difficult. I have to strike consecutively in a very short period. Otherwise, once they find their companions dead, they would become alert and my traces will be exposed......"

"Shadow Follower Gu." Wang Da closed his eyes and called in his heart.

Immediately, his body became enshrouded in a lump of darkness and could move among the tree shadows.

All was silent.

In a thick bush nearby, the Gu Yue clan’s Rank two Gu Master sprawled inside, yawning out of boredom.

"So boring, accompanying these junior students, I feel like a nanny." This Gu Master complained softly, not feeling the shadow that was slowly creeping around him.

A pair of bony hands stretched out from the shadows.

This pair of hands was pale to the limit, the joints were huge and the ten nails were sharp and long, the nails dyed a shade of dark purple and emitted a slightly fishy smell.

"What smell is this?" The Gu Yue clan Gu Master sniffed, frowning subconsciously.

He just wanted to investigate, but it was too late.

Wang Da pounced like a snake, striking at lightning speed!

One hand covered the Gu Master’s mouth and nose, while the other stabbed from the shadows towards his back. His dark purple nails were sharp as blades, his fingers easily entering the Gu Master’s body and reaching his heart.

The fingernails were poisonous, and at that moment it invaded the heart. Through the blood, it spread all over the Gu Master’s body.

The Gu Master’s body stiffened and lost all signs of life.

Although they were both Rank two Gu Masters, one had assaulted abruptly with preparation, so before the battle even begun, it had ended.

"I used 10% of my primeval essence, 40% left." Wang Da checked his aperture, and fused into the shadows once again.

A moment later, the second Gu Master hiding behind a rock also met his assault. His eyes shrunk to pin size as he collapsed on the ground.

The poison invaded his body, and soon he turned purple, and from his nose two streams of purple blood flowed out.

"30% left." Wang Da chanted silently, turning into shadows again.

"Who is it!" The third Gu Master was hiding on a tree branch atop a huge tree. At the crucial moment he sensed something wrong, and at the time where Wang Da struck, he turned around and grabbed the two poisonous hands.

"Damn it!" Wang Da laughed sinisterly, his ten nails growing crazily, at once becoming five centimeters long, stabbing the Gu Master’s forearm and piercing his skin.

His forearm bled and the blood quickly turned dark purple.

"This is the Love Life Separation?!" The third Gu Master seeing this was shocked beyond doubt; the purple poison had already infected his face.

He knew he had no poison resistance Gu worm and was surely dead, thus he showed resolve on his face, shouting, "Then let’s die together!"

He opened his mouth and stretched out his tongue.

There was a crescent moon tattoo on his tongue — it was the Moonlight Gu.

A moonblade shot out and slashed Wang Da’s right shoulder, piercing through and coming out from his back.

The blood splattered.

Wang Da grunted, his body swaying a little, but the Gu Master had already passed away, with a trace of life left.

"Correct, this is Love Life Separation." Wang Da stood on the tree branch, slowly standing up, showing a bitter smile.

Love Life Separation, the number one poison among the Rank two Gu worms! To refine it, one needs the Rank one life breath grass, widow spider, red needle scorpion and the heart of a lover.

To refine this Gu worm, Wang Da killed his own wife who loved him deeply, and dug out her heart!

"It is all for survival, I could only choose strength... this is the resolution of my demonic path!" Wang Da’s eyes were red as he stared tightly at the nearby youngster.

"I gave up on love, and only had kinship left, but you took them from me! Fang Yuan..." He growled lowly, "I want you to regret deeply all that you did!"

(1) 韩信 (Han Xin): Famous general of first emperor Han emperor Liu Bang.

(2) 曹操 (Cao Cao): Famous statesman and general at the end of Han, noted poet and calligrapher, later warlord, founder and first king of Cao Wei, father of Emperor Cao Pi, as well as the main villain of the novel the Romance of Three Kingdoms.

(3) 越王勾践 (Yue Wang/King Gou Jian of Yue): sometimes considered one of the Five Hegemons.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Kill!" Wang Da growled, ferociously leaping into the air from the tree branch.

As he was about to get near to his mortal enemy, three moonblades shot out from nowhere suddenly and intercepted him midway.

"Why is there a fourth Gu Master?" Wang Da’s heart sank, twisting his body forcefully in midair, narrowing avoiding two moonblades. The remaining one, which he could no longer evade, hit his left leg.

Bang!

Wang Da crashed onto the ground, lowering his head to look at his left leg. There was a wound, deep and long, blood already dripping all over.

"Damn......" Wang Da gritted his teeth, his heart thinking, "Shadow Follower Gu!"

Immediately, he turned into a lump of dark shadow as his speed rose drastically, moving backwards without a sound.

At this moment.

A Gu worm flew out from nowhere, at the same time an old and weary voice sounded out —

"Flash Blink Gu, explode."

The Gu worm exploded on command, turning into a blinding white light.

The white light was unavoidable, abruptly appearing and turning the entire dark forest bright.

"Ah!" Wang Da shrieked. His body which had turned into shadows could not hide anywhere under the bright light, and went back to his human form.

Although the Flash Blink Gu was only Rank one and also a consumable type, it was the complete counter of Wang Da’s Shadow Follower Gu. Once the darkness was dispelled by the light, the Rank two Shadow Follower Gu needed to rest three hours before it could be used again.

In nature, all beings are equal, one counters another. Although the Shadow Follower Gu had very strong lurking abilities, it also had a great weakness.

After he was countered, Wang Da’s heart sank to the bottom of the valley.

This fourth Gu Master was more experienced, not only did he know which Gu to use, he also hid himself well, a true foe. More importantly, Wang Da could no longer use the Shadow Follower Gu, thus having no way to retreat.

"I am Gu Yue Sou, lad, if you surrender now, my clan might still spare your life!" A white haired, silver beard Rank two Gu Master appeared in front of Wang Da’s vision.

"Spare me, hmph, I’ll kill you first!" Wang Da knew that if it was dragged, there would be more Gu Masters appearing to deal with him, he had to kill this fourth Gu Master as soon as possible.

"My primeval essence only has 20% left, be it revenge or preserving my life, I have to kill this meddlesome old fellow first!" Wang Da picked up his spirits and jumped towards Gu Yue Sou.

Gu Yue Sou snorted. His entire body, be it hair or pore hair, grew insanely and intertwined, in the blink of an eye forming a snow white battle armor with a spiky design.

Seeing this change, Wang Da’s expression changed. The experienced Gu Master was like a porcupine, causing Wang Da to not know how to strike.

His Rank two strong poison Gu Love Life Separation, although the poison was extremely strong and deadly, it did not have strong attacking abilities, only usable as a sneak attack.

Wang Da only had Love Life Separation and Shadow Follower Gu. If he had a defensive Gu worm, he would not have gotten hit by the moonblade.

"Hmph, if I cannot deal with you, I’ll kill Fang Yuan first!" Wang Da was not stupid. The three years of living had made him cunning and ruthless.

He moved quickly, getting around Gu Yue Sou and attacking the culprit of his family’s murder.

"Dream on!" Gu Yue Sou activated his primeval essence, and his body of spikes immediately shot out two sharp pins, spiralling and flying five to six metres towards Wang Da.

Wang Da’s body shifted, narrowly avoiding the two snow white spikes.

On his hands, his ten nails were half a palm long, purple and dark, the fog state poison circulating them.

"Die!" Wang Da was already mad from battle, laughing maniacally as he rushed towards his target.

In his eyes, Fang Yuan’s face was full of shock and panic.

Killing intent had overtaken Wang Da’s brain, he could almost hear himself piercing Fang Yuan’s skin, and his indignant last breath.

"You wish!"

Seeing that he was about to succeed, another person appeared, blocking Wang Da’s way.

The fifth Gu Master rushed over from nearby!

"It’s actually the Love Life Separation?" This middle-aged man was unmoved by Wang Da’s crazy and ferocious demeanour.

Rock Skin Gu!

The middle-aged man activated his primeval essence, red steel primeval essence gushing out like smoke, his naked arms immediately turned from yellow to grey-white colour. At the same time both his arms expanded like balloons, forming a large and thick rock arm.

As both parties got closer, Wang Da’s expression became more twisted and insane. The middle-aged Gu Master had a solemn expression as he stretched out both arms to grab Wang Da.

"Trying to get me with this speed?" Wang Da showed a mocking expression.

The middle-aged man’s limbs were covered by a thick rock skin, even Wang Da’s nails could not penetrate. But the arms were really too heavy and slow. Fang Da felt that he could easily evade them.

"Really? Jade Wind Wheel!" The middle-aged Gu Master shouted, and suddenly a pair of jade-coloured cyclones circulated around his rock arm like armbands.

The rock arm’s speed immediately rose!

"How can that be... urgh!" Wang Da’s face was shocked as he was swept by the rock arm and flew away.

The middle-aged Gu Master was experienced in battle. If he had used the bee Gu Jade Wind Wheel from the start, Wang Da might not have fallen so easily.

Wang Da was sent flying by the rock arm, falling on the ground in a mess. The chest that was hit felt pain.

Puke.

He barely got up, but could not help but vomit blood.

"5% primeval essence left, I’m gonna die." He checked his aperture, laughing bitterly. Seeing Fang Yuan near him, he showed insane resolve on his face, "Even if I die, you will join me!"

Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!

He ignored his injuries and rushed out.

"Block him!" The middle-aged Gu Master was a pure close-ranged fighter with no long range Gu, at once he could do nothing.

The old Gu Master had already arrived, his body’s white hair turning into finger-sized spirals as they flew like nimble snakes, extending five to six metres and reached from behind, piercing Wang Da’s body.

But Wang Da did not care, rushing out regardless.

"Die!!!" He screamed loudly, his ten fingernails already fifty centimetres long.

The middle-aged Gu Master chased after, and upon seeing this scene, his expression changed as he could no longer stop it.

Seeing that Wang Da was about to get his way, a bright blue jade light burst from the other side.

"Jade Skin Gu!" Under the pressure of life and death, Fang Zheng screamed out loudly.

Immediately, his skin was covered by a sturdy layer of jade skin.

Wang Da’s fingers were like knife blades, stabbing at him. Although the Love Life Separation did not have strong attacking ability, the Jade Skin Gu was only a Rank one Gu worm and could not block his nails.

Howl!

The elderly Gu Master seeing Fang Zheng about to die, shouted frantically and his eyes expanded. Even more snow white needles shot out and pierced Wang Da’s body.

After that, the needles worked like snakes, first piercing his back to his chest, the circulating around his neck, his arms and his legs.

Boiling blood poured from Wang Da’s body, immediately dying the white hair red.

His entire body was covered by white hair, just like the wild boar who had fallen into a trap of green bamboo spikes, stopping his charge and being unable to move.

An intense feeling of dizziness hit him. Wang Da laughed pathetically, he knew that death was impending.

How unsatisfying!

His vision was dyed blur, and on his death moment, the most vivid memory in his life surfaced again.

"Wan Er...." He subconsciously called out his wife’s name, as the knife on his hand pierced her body.

"Why?" His wife looked at Wang Da, her beautiful face showing confusion and shock, tightly staring at Wang Da’s eyes.

Wang Da’s eyes were red, as his body shivered, forcing out a word from his mouth, "Sorry."

His wife smiled slightly, her smile full of love. There was not a single drop of hate.

"I understand," She said.

She wanted to stretch out her right hand, touching Wang Da’s face for the last time before she died.

But in the middle, her hand dropped.

Killing his wife for her heart, and refining Love Life Separation. From then on he had strength and went on the demonic path!

Do you have regrets?

From that day on, he constantly asked himself this.

I regret it!

He regretted so much that he would rather die, thus he swore that he had to protect the remaining family members of his!

But.

But......

"If I could start from the beginning again, Wan Er, I would still do the same...." Emotional tears poured from Wang Da’s red eyes.

Fang Zheng stared at him, his body glowing with jade light.

From start to end, he was in deep confusion and suspicion.

An unfamiliar Gu Master rushed madly towards himself, and wanted to tear him to bits. But Fang Zheng did not know him.

Under the thick death aura, Fang Zheng could not move an inch. His mind was blank as he only subconsciously activated the Jade Skin Gu.

Wang Da’s nails pierced the jade skin and stabbed one centimetre in, but did not move anymore.

He died.

He was full of tears when he died.

"Its... over?" Fang Zheng breathed roughly, his eyes losing focus and seemed rather hollow.

Then, a strong sense of dizziness overcame him.

Plop.

He also fell on the ground.

Love Life Separation, the strongest Rank two poison. Although it did not pierce through all the jade skin, the poison already invaded his body.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

A wild boar almost as huge as an elephant was lying in the mudpit.

It closed its eyes shut, half kneeling and half lying, a pair of tusks clean from soil, shining like sharp blades.

The twilight reflected on its dark black fur, its huge stomach was white and with each breath, moved up and down creating a snorting sound.

Wild boar king!

Fang Yuan was several hundred meters away from it, but still carefully walked along with the direction of the wind.

"Even though I can kill wild boars now, against this wild boar king, I can only run away. Even an average Rank two Gu Master cannot kill it. If he is not clear of the Gu worms on its body, he might even fall prey to it.

King of the beasts normally have Gu worms inhabiting their bodies.

On the wild boar king’s body, there would normally be Boar Gu, such as Pink Boar Gu or Flower Boar Gu. Other than the boar species, there might also be Beast Skin Gu or Spike Fur worm.

In this world, there are all sorts of Gu worms. Normally, Gu worms reside in the bodies of strong wild beasts, and live alongside the wild beasts.

When the wild beast gets attacked, the Gu worms will sense the danger and assist the wild beast in resisting the strong foe.

This wild boar king’s body was huge, and its strength greatly exceeded the average wild boar. Fang Yuan was no match against it alone, not to mention there was at least one or more mysterious Gu worms in its body.

However, Fang Yuan’s adventure this time, was not to kill the wild boar king. It was to avoid Wang Da’s pursue.

Wang Da knew that Fang Yuan had the beast skin map, and Fang Yuan used that knowledge to his advantage. Going nowhere but instead heading towards the wild boar king’s danger marking area.

The wild boar king although dangerous, was still a beast after all, and had no human intelligence. Old man Wang as a mortal, could venture to this place and retreat safely, so why couldn’t Fang Yuan do the same?

Going on a reverse path, although seemingly dangerous, hid a way to survive instead.

As he moved even further, the wild boar king was slowly left behind by Fang Yuan. On the map, it would seem like Fang Yuan took a big circle and went around the red cross, forming a concave curve. Finally, he reached the hill where several clan elders were staying and having the mid-year assessment there on the spot.

An hour later, a youngster full of grass bits, his shirt torn in several areas and his feet full of mud, carried a bag and ran up the hill.

This pathetic looking youngster, was Fang Yuan.

"I’m finally safely back here. At this place, there are clan elders to protect me and my safety is assured. But I cannot afford to be careless." Fang Yuan sighed in relief, and slowly ascended the hill.

The hill had a simple tentage and tens of students were nearby as the academy’s guards were collating the wild boar tusks in their bags. The few clan elders that were stationed here were missing, and only one was left.

"Why is the atmosphere so weird?" Fang Yuan frowned slightly, acutely feeling something important had occurred.

When he got near the tentage, he heard the students’ discussions.

"Did you hear, there was an assassination earlier, and several Rank two Gu Masters died."

"Are you serious?"

"It’s true, I came here early, and I saw Gu Yue Fang Zheng carried away by several clan elders, hurrying away."

"Gu Yue Fang Zheng is too unlucky, to encounter something like this during the exam."

"Hehe, you don’t know huh. The target was Fang Zheng, because he is A grade talent!"

"I wonder if he’ll die?"

"Even if he doesn’t die, he’s gonna be affected. Maybe his talent might drop after that injury."

Fang Yuan’s footsteps halted. He was clear in his heart, conjuring the truth of the matter.

"Wang Da wanted to deal with me and avenge his kin. But after I found the treehouse, I changed my route and went towards the wild boar king. Wang Da did not expect this and found Fang Zheng by accident instead. His source of information came from those hunters and he did not know that I have a twin brother. He mistook Fang Zheng as me and wanted to kill me, but was stopped by the surrounding Gu Masters who were protecting the area. Right now the question is – Did Wang Da die?"

Fang Yuan frowned tightly. Wang Da successfully escaping, Wang Da captured, Wang Da killed – these three possibilities would greatly affect his future plans and actions.

Thinking for a while, Fang Yuan decided to follow his original plan.

The academy elder’s expression was ugly, Fang Zheng was actually assassinated. Without any clues or evidence, he would not be able to guess that Fang Zheng had become Fang Yuan’s scapegoat, but thought of the Bai clan and Xiong clan!

Fang Zheng was the only A grade talent that the Gu Yue clan had for the last three years, the Bai clan and Xiong clan would naturally not let him grow. Sending an assassin Gu Master to kill him and prevent him from getting stronger, this was normal.

Even the Gu Yue clan would do something like this. Secretly sending Gu Masters and targeting the other two clan’s genius students.

"The assassin was killed on the spot, but I wonder how is Fang Zheng’s injuries?" Academy elder thought, and at this moment, his attendant brought him a piece of paper.

Academy elder received the paper, reading without paying proper attention, "In this year’s examination, the results are as follows... Gu Yue Chi Cheng sixteen tusks, Gu Yue Mo Bei fourteen tusks..."

The surrounding students’ attention were obtained. The results were clear.

D grade students, even if they worked together, they could only obtain three to four tusks. B and C grades, at most eight to nine. Those with more than ten tusks were the good performers.

The best was Gu Yue Chi Cheng with sixteen tusks. Next was Mo Bei, and as for Fang Zheng he had ten.

Gu Yue Chi Cheng showed a smug expression. He was lucky this time and encountered two wild boars fighting each other, thus he got the easy reward. Gu Yue Mo Bei was indignant, allowing Chi Cheng to surpass him.

The academy elder announced, "As such, I announce the number one student for this examination is..."

"Halt!" Fang Yuan stepped out at this moment.

"Fang Yuan, you are late. The examination ended an hour ago, according to the rules, the wild boar tusks that you obtain will be deducted by four as punishment." Chi Cheng immediately shouted.

Fang Yuan ignored him and opened the bag on his back, grabbing the bottom of the bag and pouring out the contents.

Crash.

Dozens of wild boar tusks gathered into a pile by his feet.

"This!" Chi Cheng stared with his mouth agape.

Mo Bei and the others stared their eyeballs out at the pile.

"How can there be so many? This is too much!" The academy elder looked at Fang Yuan in disbelief, "Fang Yuan, did you hunt all these?"

Fang Yuan cupped his fists, "I only hunted a dozen tusks myself, but I found a bag that could’ve been hidden by hunters. Inside it were many wild boar tusks. I thought about it, the exam was that we had to obtain as many tusks as possible within a day, and did not specify that we have to kill it ourselves, thus I brought it here."

Once he finished, the crowd burst into discussions.

"How can this be?"

"Way too lucky!"

"This is too fake, could the questions have leaked thus he cheated?"

The academy elder stared at Fang Yuan, looking for a while, then declared, "This exam, Fang Yuan is the first."

...

The family head room’s atmosphere was heavy.

Gu Yue Bo sat at the leading seat, and the other dozen elders sat in two rows beside him, their faces full of rage.

"Gu Yue Yao Ji, you are the number one healer in our clan, I’m asking you how is Fang Zheng now?" Gu Yue Bo asked a clan elder.

Gu Yue Yao Ji was an old woman with a hunched back, her face full of treebark-like wrinkles.

She coughed twice, slowly saying, "Reporting to clan head, the situation has stabilized. Fang Zheng’s life is in no danger, but he is still sleeping. His talent did not drop because of this."

"Good if the talent didn’t drop." Gu Yue Bo breathed a sigh of relief, the asked the punishment hall’s elder, "Has the assassin’s situation been assessed?"

The punishment hall elder was not as senior as Gu Yue Yao Ji, and immediately stood up, lowering his head, "Yes, thirty-five years old, male, identity unknown, possibly a demonic faction Gu Master. He has two Gu worms, Shadow Follower Gu and Love Life Separation."

Gu Yue Bo nodded, "Seems like an assassin, Love Life Separation... the Rank two number one poison, no wonder he could kill three of my Gu Masters."

"Clan head, we have to investigate further! It’s either the Bai clan or the Xiong clan!" Gu Yue Chi Lian shouted, his eyes almost bursting into flames.

"Shadow Follower Gu, Love Life Separation... this is not like the Bai or Xiong clan’s pawn pieces. He might be an outside demonic faction Gu Master, wanting to get affiliated with the clans, thus being instructed to assassinate Fang Zheng to prove his loyalty. Regardless, this matter definitely has to do with the two clans," Gu Yue Mo Chen coldly said.

These two clan elders in power, although they did not get along, once an external enemy appears, they would discard their hatred and knit tightly together.

Gu Yue Bo nodded, thinking the same himself.

Wang Da had disappeared for three years, with no traces to be found. The villagers all thought of him to be dead, thus his identity became a mystery. The Gu Yue higher-ups did not know this, they would not be concerned with a servant’s death. They placed all their attentions on the Xiong and Bai clans.

At this moment, the academy elder walked in.

"Clan leader..." He looked worried and was about to speak when Gu Yue Bo answered, "Academy elder, Fang Zheng is fine, his talent is still A grade."

The academy elder’s face became relaxed.

"Oh yes, are the other students safe? And for this examination, how are their results, which place is Fang Zheng?" Gu Yue Bo asked conveniently.

The academy elder answered truthfully, and when he said that Fang Yuan had accidentally picked up a bag of wild boar tusks and got first place, Gu Yue Bo’s eyes shone.

The hall too went silent. The clan elders, as if they sensed it, subtly observed the atmosphere, and the originally nervous environment became slightly more peculiar.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the discussion room, Gu Yue Bo expressionlessly sat in the leader’s seat with deep meaningful eyes.

The remaining dozen or so clan elders all sat upright, looking down, only using the corner of their eye to sweep the surroundings and discern some clues from their expressions.

The atmosphere became delicate.

"Fang Yuan getting first place, the deeper meaning behind this is definitely not simple. He actually said he found a bag of hidden wild boar tusks, this is too unbelievable."

"This bag might’ve been prepared by someone, it is not possible for Fang Yuan to do it himself. That means someone is helping Fang Yuan in the dark."

"This year’s mid-year exam is unlike the previous ones. We had to deploy tens of Rank two Gu Masters to invigilate the exam. Thus the contents of this examination, not only does the academy elder know, but many of the elders in the clan as well."

"If anyone wanted to prepare this bag in advance, it can only be the clan elders present here now, or even the clan leader!"

The clan elders were all shrewd foxes. After being in the political field for years, they immediately thought of many things.

Fang Zheng was an A grade talent, if he really reached Rank four, what did that mean?

That would mean he is the next clan leader!

Fang Yuan is Fang Zheng’s brother. Even if he is only C grade, with that blood relationship, he is worth investing in!

To the clan leader Gu Yue Bo, if he helped Fang Yuan secretly, that would be bringing him into his faction, and to Fang Zheng, it was a good belt to tie him to the leader faction together.

To the clan elders, Fang Zheng who is the only A grade talent in years, has already been absorbed into the clan leader’s faction. If he was really nurtured, the clan leader’s faction would be even stronger. However, if the clan elders made Fang Yuan into their own, using this layer of blood relation, it would be a good chess piece when dealing in Fang Zheng in the future.

Thus, the ten over people in this hall, they all had the motive to help Fang Yuan.

But who?

Gu Yue Chi Lian thought deeply, "I did not recruit Fang Yuan, so who would help him secretly? Is it Mo Chen that old man, hmm, possible. Although Fang Yuan killed his family servant, but that’s just a servant, even if they all died it wouldn’t hurt him. The clan leader is more possible though, he took in Fang Zheng, so if he recruited Fang Yuan as well, that would increase his control over Fang Zheng! But... in previous years, the norm is to recruit them during the year end exam. Taking his action now during the mid-year, it is breaking the rules."

"Not exactly breaking the rules, but it really is throwing a curveball. Just exactly who thinks highly of Fang Yuan, even more than me?" Gu Yue Mo Chen was also thinking.

The truth is, after Fang Yuan killed Gao Wan and sent the minced corpse, he changed his impression of Fang Yuan and had the thoughts of recruiting him.

But such actions only happened during the year end, after the students graduated from the academy.

Fang Yuan being recruited in advance, it struck Mo Chen by surprise.

Gu Yue Bo’s gaze was focused on Gu Yue Mo Chen and Gu Yue Chi Lian, the two elders in power.

This clan leader had greater insight.

Fang Yuan blatantly said a lie and got the first place. This action had the meaning of being fearless, thus sending a signal to everyone to show them that — I’m protecting Fang Yuan! He is now my member, and you all better not touch him.

Then who is this person?

The political field in the Gu Yue clan was split into three. Other than the clan leader faction, it was Gu Yue Chi Lian’s Chi family, and Gu Yue Mo Chen’s Mo family.

Gu Yue Bo knew that he himself did not take any actions to recruit Fang Yuan. Thus, the greatest suspect was Chi Lian and Mo Chen.

"These two old fellows, their acting is improving. Seeing their expressions, I really cannot tell. Don’t tell me it really isn’t them, but some other small faction?"

Gu Yue Bo observed carefully as he investigated. He did not know that all the elders were like him, observing, suspecting and deducing.

The academy elder was also guessing, but he had always been in a neutral position, outside of politics, thus his thoughts were simpler, "So Fang Yuan has been recruited by a clan elder. No wonder he let go of Fang Zheng, Mo Bei and Chi Cheng while extorting, that means the one who recruited him was either the clan leader, Chi Lian or Mo Chen. This is good news! It shows that he has accepted reality and has starting integrating into the clan. No matter what, he is now a member of the clan, so once he fully integrates, he will contribute his entire life to the clan!"

After a short silence, Gu Yue Bo could not see any more clues, thus he spoke, "An eye for an eye, since the other party has started targeting Fang Zheng, our Gu Yue clan is not to be trifled with, we will show them! Dark Hall Elder, formulate a plan for this matter and report to me afterwards."

"Yes, sir clan leader." Dark hall elder immediately nodded.

"As for Gu Yue Fang Zheng, I’m afraid his heart might be damaged from such an encounter. He is an A grade talent, and to our clan, the status is monumental. From now on, I will teach him personally." Gu Yue Bo said.

No clan elders objected.

Many people knew that the clan leader had already given much benefits to Gu Yue Fang Zheng in the dark. Now that he mentioned this, even though it violated the fairness rule, with sufficient reasoning, the clan elders could not stop him.

"As for Gu Yue Fang Yuan..." Gu Yue Bo dragged his words.

At once, all the clan elders paid their fullest attention. Was the clan leader hinting that he was the one helping Fang Yuan secretly?

Gu Yue Bo looked at everyone’s expression as his gaze swept through, but he was destined to be disappointed.

Thus, he could only continue, "With his C grade talent, he managed to get first place. It is not easy. Thus, in my personal name, I reward him thirty primeval stones. Academy elder, pass my word and tell him to continue working hard."

"Yes, clan leader." The academy elder bowed as he received his orders.

"Thirty primeval stones, such an ordinary reward, what does this mean?" The clan elders frowned.

"No matter who absorbed Fang Yuan, this thirty primeval stones is my expression of goodwill. After all, there is still the Bai and Xiong clan other than Gu Yue." Gu Yue Bo sighed in his heart.

Fang Zheng was assassinated by external foes. Fang Yuan’s cheating was internal conflict.

Against external foes, one had to use hard handed methods to retaliate, but for internal conflict, Gu Yue Bo chose to use the soft approach, in order to avoid too much internal conflict and result in the entire clan’s strength being weakened.

"Alright, this matter will be settled like this. Everyone may leave and do all your work well, the clan’s prosperity has everything to do with your performances." Gu Yue Bo waved his hand.

"Yes clan leader, we will take our leave."

The clan elders left one by one, and after a few breath’s time, only Gu Yue Bo was left in the room.

He sighed deeply, using his fingers to rub his two temples.

As the clan leader, even if he was the person with the most authority in the Gu Yue clan, it did not mean that he had it easy. He needed to coordinate the interests of the different factions, and could not do as he wished. The clan’s forces were dispersed and intertwined through many generations of inheritance, and they all had long history, restricting one another.

Against outside forces, he had to deal with the arrogant and rude Xiong clan village and the gradually rising Bai clan village.

Internally, he had to resolve the complicated political conflict in the clan. Although he was middle-aged, he already had white hair all over.

"These years of being the clan leader, although I had sufficient resources, my cultivation has barely advanced. My heart is tired from all these tiresome clan affairs. Sometimes, I really want to be a lone cultivator, free and easy with no burden. That would allow me to move faster and I might travel even further in my cultivation path."

Gu Yue Bo sighed in his heart.

As long as one is in the clan system, they had responsibilities on them. Once they had responsibilities it would not be easy to wholeheartedly cultivate.

But on the reverse, if one is not in the system, the clan’s resources would not be available to them, and without resources, their cultivation would come to a halt.

This formed a contradiction, a weird loop.

Because of this loop, many people’s futures were ruined, burying an insurmountable number of talents and geniuses.

Wang Da is dead.

Three days later, Fang Yuan got the news.

At the same time, he also heard from Jiang He that the two young hunters vanished when hunting in the mountains. As for the hunter whose right hand was broken by Fang Yuan, he "committed suicide" in his home out of depression.

Jiang He looked at Fang Yuan meaningfully when he said the news. He had seen Wang Da’s corpse, thus recognising him.

But he did not dare to say Wang Da’s true identity.

He was the stationed Gu Master, and held responsibility. As long as one is in the system, regardless of position, they had responsibility.

Wang Da became a demonic faction cultivator for three years, and Jiang He as the village Gu Master did not investigate. If they really pursued responsibility, this would become the biggest flaw in his records, and his future in the clan would be ruined.

The three hunter’s peculiar deaths were covered up by him.

"Fang Yuan, since we’re acquaintances, from now on you get a 50% discount when you purchase things from my cousin brother Jiang Ya’s shop!" During one time, Jiang He said this to Fang Yuan.

Everyone else was dead, only Fang Yuan and him knew of this matter. But if the matter was revealed, it did not have a huge impact on Fang Yuan.

He only killed three village servants, and even if he killed thirty, the clan would not pursue it, at most he would pay "tens of primeval stones" as a punishment.

Jiang He’s bribery, Fang Yuan took it with ease. To him, this matter was full of surprise and danger, but the result was good.

After this matter, Fang Yuan who had no foundation within the clan, received half an ally and also a non-existent faction supporting him.

This mysterious backer became Fang Yuan’s second safety net. When he started showing his strength gradually, this safety net would have a crucial impact, at least able to allow him to cultivate until Rank two without much opposition.

At this point, he could feel clearly the academy elder’s changing attitude towards him, into a more amicable one.

Over ten days passed in a flash.

After Gu Yue Fang Zheng and Mo Bei advanced, Fang Yuan and Chi Cheng almost simultaneously advanced to Rank one upper stage successfully.

Although extortion continued, he no longer took Fang Zheng, Mo Bei and Chi Cheng’s primeval stones, and he started becoming more low key, while his strength grew rapidly at a speed multiple times of his previous life.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Time was like a white steed that flitted past a crack, and summer left with the arrival of autumn.

In the walled-in path, Fang Yuan stood once more before the giant boulder blocking the way.

Due to the weather growing colder, he wore plain and simple garment with long sleeves. But his body figure was no longer the thin sort like how it was a few months ago.

His chest, two arms and legs, and abdomen all showed obvious muscle.

These muscles were not as protruding as a stone, but it showed as a type of streamline, matching up with Fang Yuan’s slowly growing body. Matched as well with his white skin, this gave others a type of youthful, full of vitality feeling.

"Starting from three days ago, the White Boar Gu stopped supplying me any increase in strength. That means, I already have one boar’s strength, thus reaching the Flower Wine Monk’s requirement. Today, I shall try pushing this round rock again!"

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone as he took a step forward with his right leg, his left leg at the back, forming a bow step.

His arms touched the surface of the round rock as he took a deep breath in and pushed with all his strength.

The large boulder moved under the pressure of both his arms, moving slowly, gradually gaining momentum and rolling forward.

The road before the boulder blocking the path was an inclined slope. Being turned into a round rock by the Flower Wine Monk, it was most suitable for rolling. This must have been his intention, to allow the inheritor to push the boulder upwards and move it away.

"Ten steps, twenty steps, thirty steps..." Fang Yuan slowly progressed, counting in his heart, "Last week, I pushed it to forty-five steps and that was the limit of my stamina, forcing me to quit. This time, I wonder how far I can push it?"

Forty steps, forty-five steps......

A while later, Fang Yuan broke his original record, but that was enough for him to feel unbearably tired.

Forty-six steps, forty-seven steps......

Fang Yuan could feel strongly, at this point his stamina was almost all gone.

Forty-eight, forty-nine steps....

He mustered all his strength and moved another two steps. Finally, he was at his limit, sweating profusely. Using his shoulder and leg to anchor the rock in place, he took a few deep breaths.

"Should I give up?" Fang Yuan could not help but have such thoughts. This inclined slope, when returning he has to expend quite a bit of stamina as well. After all, the rock has to roll down and he had to slowly release it in the process.

If he let go and ran, the rock would roll faster and faster. Fang Yuan did not want to get turned into a pile of flesh after being unable to avoid it.

But thinking for a while, Fang Yuan felt indignant. Let’s push it a few more steps.

Fiftieth step.

He suddenly felt that the pressure from the huge rock had lightened. It had actually rolled into a straight platform.

Fang Yuan pushed for a few more steps. After routing past the huge rock he found himself in a secret room.

This secret room was like the rock crack’s secret cave. He temporarily named it the second secret room.

There was nothing in the room. The four walls were a strange red soil, glowing red. On the other end of the secret room, there was a simple grey-coloured rock door. It should be the hurried product of the Flower Wine Monk.

Fang Yuan rested for a while but did not immediately open the rock door, as he had a new discovery.

He found that the ground before the rock door was slightly damp.

"Don’t tell me..." Fang Yuan had a thought. He bent down, stretching out both arms and loosening the soil.

The second Earth Treasury flower!

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, carefully peeling the flower petals and retrieving the Gu worm slumbering in the golden nectar.

Once he deployed his primeval essence, it was instantly refined.

This was a Jade Skin Gu. Its appearance was like the bedbug, flat and wide with a small head and its green body was oval in space, emitting a faint jade coloured glow.

"I obtained the White Boar Gu, and was still thinking where could I get a Jade Skin Gu so I could refine it into the White Jade Gu. To think that the Flower Wine Monk already prepared it for me," Fang Yuan contemplated, thinking about the significance of this Jade Skin Gu.

This is Fang Yuan’s sixth Gu worm.

Although he had five already, none were defensive. Now that he had the Jade Skin Gu, he could cover up his weakness in defense.

At times, defense means offense.

This was not hard to understand. Taking for example Fang Yuan’s body. Using the White Boar Gu, his strength grew to one boar’s strength. Theoretically, with this strength, he could smash a rock in one punch, but Fang Yuan never did such a thing.

Because he knew his defense was not sufficient, so with one punch, the rock would break, but his fists would also turn bloody from the damage.

Now that he had the Jade Skin Gu, he could supplement the advantage he had in strength.Obviously, there were advantages and disadvantages.

The Jade Skin Gu had a high value, being one of the best defensive Rank one Gu. It was not easy to feed, consuming two pieces of jade rock every ten days.

Jade rock’s market price was expensive, and the source was often the problem.

Fang Zheng also has a Jade Skin Gu, but he has the clan leader’s backing, providing him with jade rocks. If Fang Yuan wanted jade rocks, he would have to buy them, and that could easily expose him.

"Originally in feeding the White Boar Gu, I had to regularly kill wild boars, and that is already troublesome. With the addition of this Jade Skin Gu, do I have to go dig in mines?" Fang Yuan laughed bitterly, seeing a new problem in front of him.

Keeping the Jade Skin Gu, temporarily nurturing it in his aperture, Fang Yuan gradually opened the rock door.

The rock door was heavy, and if Fang Yuan did not have the White Boar Gu’s boost in strength, he would not be able to move it. But now, with Fang Yuan pushing it, the door slowly opened.

The scene that was revealed to Fang Yuan caused his field of vision to expand all of a sudden.

It was no longer a narrow tunnel or a secret room, but a large spacious plot of underground stone forest.

Fang Yuan estimated at initial approximation, the stone forest’s size was over thirty Mu(1)! On earth, a standard football field was only eleven Mu.

"I should be inside Qing Mao mountain now, this underground space should be naturally formed." Fang Yuan looked up at the stone walls.

The stone walls in this space were over sixteen meters tall, and the ceiling was also made of stone.

From the top, there were large dark red pillars erected. Each emitted a faint red glow, and so did the walls, just like the tunnel and secret room. The light although dim, allowed Fang Yuan to see some things at least.

Fang Yuan looked far, and each stone pillar was like an upside down tree, except without branches, and only leaving the stem.

The stone pillar’s surface was not smooth, and was full of dark eerie holes. Numerous pillars drooped down, forming an inverted stone forest within the mountain.

Nature had its way with things.

Fang Yuan with his immense knowledge, was not shocked, but stared at the dark holes in the pillars, frowning more intensely.

He had suddenly understood the Flower Wine Monk’s intention in placing the Jade Skin Gu.

"If I am not wrong..." Fang Yuan turned his right hand, and out came a moonblade.

The eerie blue moonblade flew through the sky in an arc, precisely hitting a dark hole in the stone pillar.

A shrill and angry sound came from the dark hole.

With a ‘swoosh’, a grey monkey flew out from the cave and leapt towards Fang Yuan.

Pow pow pow.

Fang Yuan shot three moonblades.

The monkey was in midair and could not adjust its position, but its tail was extremely agile, sweeping several times and causing its body to flip in midair. After avoiding two moonblades, it was finally hit by the third, plopping on the floor dead.

It was dead, without a drop of blood.

Only its grey body turned to stone, and in a second, its flesh and blood body became a stone monkey statue.

The statue’s posture and facial expression was just like the monkey right before it died, imitated to perfection. After two breath’s time, the stone monkey’s surface cracked, and cracks developed all over its body. Finally with a boom, its entire figure blew up into tiny rock fragments.

"It really is an underground colony of jade eye stone monkeys." Fang Yuan knelt down, sweeping the fragments aside and taking out two jade green yellow pearls. These two pearls were the jade eye stone monkey’s eyes.

This strange animal would turn into grey rock fragments once dead, and only its eyes would turn into two jade green spherical pearls. Each were very heavy, reaching at least fifty grams.

This meant that as long as he killed jade eye stone monkeys, the Jade Skin Gu’s food problem would be resolved.

"I not only have to feed the Jade Skin Gu, I also have to continue the inheritance. Flower Wine Monk’s next clue should be hidden in this stone forest.

Fang Yuan frowned. Things had become complicated.

He tried taking a few steps forward, his eyes peeled to the stone pillar.

On his seventh step, on the pillar closest to him, numerous jade-coloured glowing eyes could be seen peeking out of the stone holes.

At once, a drop of sweat fell from Fang Yuan’s forehead.

He quickly took a step back, and the numerous eyeballs in the dark holes faded.

Evidently, each pair of eyeballs meant a jade eye stone monkey. The jade eye stone monkey was terribly agile, and to kill one Fang Yuan had to use four moonblades.

On a stone pillar, there were at least a hundred jade eye stone monkeys, and in the entire forest, who knew how many were there in total.

With Fang Yuan’s current strength, he would die from being attacked by four monkeys. If he included the Jade Skin Gu’s defense, Fang Yuan could deal with twelve monkeys at once at most.

Thankfully, these monkeys usually slept in their dark holes and ate rocks when they were hungry or thirsty. The stone pillar was their home and food. Unless he got within ten meters of them or provoked them purposely, they would not come out.

Using earth’s words, they were a bunch of neet/hikikomori monkeys.

(1) Mu (亩) - 1 Mu is 666 ⅔ meters^2

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The autumn wind rustled through the air, while the red leaves drifted aimlessly.

The wild grass was dried yellow, and brilliant red or orange yellow wild fruit hung from the tree branches.

"Hurrumph!" A black coloured wild boar rushed madly with its four hooves on the ground, its mane pricking up.

There was a thick layer of fallen leaves that accumulated on the surface of the mountain.

As the wild boar rushed forward, a gust of wind was wedged between it, and the fallen leaves were sent dancing behind its body.

Fang Yuan silently stood there, showing a cold calculating expression as the wild boar got closer.

Kill!

He took a huge stride forward, and then both his legs stood firm, not dodging at all, facing the wild boar head on.

The wild boar’s two snow white tusks tore through the air with overwhelming killing intent.

Fang Yuan turned his body to avoid the tusks, his shoulder knocking onto the wild boar’s skull.

When they were about to collide, Fang Yuan’s shoulder shone with a faint green coloured light.

Jade Skin Gu!

Boom.

With a loud crash, the two collided.

Fang Yuan took three steps back, while the wild boar took one step back.

To be fair, when comparing both side’s strength, Fang Yuan was stronger. But Fang Yuan ran with both legs while the wild boar used four to sustain its force, and at the same time the center of gravity of the wild boar was lower and more stable than Fang Yuan.

However, after being harshly hit on the head by Fang Yuan, although the wild boar was still standing, its fat body was already wavering.

With a roar, Fang Yuan rushed up again, his left hand grabbing the wild boar’s tusk, his right hand raising high in the air, the light green colour jade glow forming a thin layer of protection covering his fist.

Bam.

His fist crashed strongly downwards and the wild boar screamed in pain, struggling intensely.

Fang Yuan’s muscles on his left arm tensed, and the green veins popped like centipedes encircling his arm as he restrained the wild boar with all his strength.

At the same time, his right fist continued to raise and slam down on the boar.

Bam bam bam.

Every time his fist hit the wild boar’s head, the green coloured glow on his fist would shine once.

The wild boar was smashed into oblivion by the fist, and its struggle became weaker.

"Last strike!" Fang Yuan’s eyes glowed like lightning. He loosened his upper body, his right arm stretching straight and raised to the highest point, before smashing down at full force.

The green coloured jade light stuck to Fang Yuan’s right arm and following his movement, drew a green arc in the air.

Bam.

Fang Yuan knelt on the ground on one knee, his elbow harshly whacking the wild boar’s skull. Even before the wild boar could cry out, its noise came to a stop.

An entire pig head turned deformed, the broken white skull pierced through the black skin, exposing outside. Fresh blood and brain matter slowly flowed out, and in the layers of leaf litter, it infected an area of bright redness.

The autumn wind blew.

Leaves flew about as the scent of the pig blood emanated.

"Life, is splendid just like the flowers of summer. Death, is as delicate as the leaves of autumn," Fang Yuan muttered, appreciating this frame of scenery.

The survivor lives brilliantly while the dead is lonely and pitiful.

Dead or alive, filled with intense difference, it reflected nature’s cruelness and the excitement of life.

"No matter the world, the victor always gets all the fame, while the loser suffers defeat in the unrelentless world. Victory and loss, to me means life and death. Because I walk on the demonic path, once I lose, it means death awaits."

Fang Yuan got close to the corpse and sat on the ground, taking out the White Boar Gu, letting it consume the meat while his consciousness entered the aperture in his body.

Within the aperture, the black green-coloured primeval sea’s tides turned and crashed, ebbed and flowed.

When the primeval sea is full, it occupied 44% of the space. After an intense battle, Fang Yuan used the Jade Skin Gu multiple times to raise his defense, and some primeval essence was expended, thus there was only 36% primeval essence left.

Counting the amount, he only used 8%, not even 10% of his total. But because this was the Rank one peak stage black green primeval essence, the expenditure was considered large.

Rank one initial stage is jade green primeval essence.

Rank one middle stage is pale green primeval essence.

Rank one upper stage is dark green primeval essence.

Rank one peak stage is black green primeval essence.

The essence was in concentration (the relative amount of a particular substance contained within a solution or mixture or in a particular volume of space.).

The Moonlight Gu’s activation required 10% of jade green primeval essence, and in terms of pale green primeval essence, it was 5%. For dark green primeval essence, it further halved, and the same went for black green primeval essence.

That is to say, 10% of black green primeval essence, was equivalent to 20% dark green, 40% pale green and 80% jade green primeval essence.

Using the Jade Skin Gu cost 8% black green primeval essence, if converted to initial stage jade green primeval essence, it would be 64%!

If Fang Yuan was still at initial stage, his aperture would only have 44% primeval essence, and halfway through using the Gu, his primeval essence would be completely expended.

"The higher the Gu Master’s cultivation, the stronger their battle strength, and this shows in the primeval essence. The higher the stage, the darker the colour of the primeval essence, and the more durable it is. My black green primeval essence was on the basis of upper stage primeval essence, refined by the Liquor worm. It is unlike Fang Zheng, who is already Rank one peak stage cultivation already." Thinking of this, Fang Yuan’s gaze shone.

Time flies, it is already late autumn.

Two months had passed since Wang Da’s attempted assassination.

Fang Zheng was poisoned and was in comatose for seven days and seven nights. Once he woke up he was like a changed man, very hardworking and also cultivated extremely dutifully.Some people say, difficulties in life was wealth just like gold.

Regardless of whether this saying is correct, Fang Zheng did emerge from this difficulty changed and obtained much experience. He was like a raw jade, and after some polishing, he finally showed the beautiful jade quality inside.

He was the first to advance to upper stage, and not long ago, he was the first to advance to peak stage, leaving his classmates in the dust. The advantages of an A grade talent has finally started showing.

"I am not far from peak stage either, at most half a month. In fact, I have been nurturing my aperture nonstop every day, but a C grade talent really cannot compete with A and B grades, and I also have another reason..." Fang Yuan laughed bitterly without sound as he thought of it.

Once in a few days, he would have to kill jade eye stone monkeys to feed the Jade Skin Gu. At the same time, he had to search inside the stone forest to find the next clue of the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance.

The stone forest was complicated with pillars of huge rocks drooping from the ceiling. If Fang Yuan was not careful and got too close to any pillar, he would trigger the attack of all the stone monkeys.

A few times, he was chased by tens of stone monkeys and had to escape. The most dangerous time, when retreating he stepped into another pillar’s territory, and ended up having up to a hundred monkeys chasing after him.

Luckily, these monkeys were sedentary, and every time they chased after him, they would not chase too far. After a distance, they would go back to their homes and continue being sedentary.

Even so, Fang Yuan walked on the brink of death several times. During crucial times, the Jade Skin Gu’s defense came into good use.

Such investigation and exploration caused Fang Yuan to devote much time and effort, and thus became the key reason why his cultivation was advancing so slowly.

"Even so, this is way better than my previous life. The stone forest exploration is not without results either. At least I already know that the walls around the forest have no problems. That means that the next clue of the strength inheritance, should be somewhere in the forest."

Fang Yuan continued thinking, but suddenly a shadow stepped over the dried branches and got close.

This is a wandering old wolf.

It had a brown fur coat, limping and had one eye was damaged. Only the danger and alertness of its left eye remained.

It stared at Fang Yuan tightly, its nose twitching. Wolves and dogs were the same, using their keen sense of smell, it must have been attracted by the pig blood.

Wolves were often in packs, but there were also lone wolves like this. There were competition in wolf packs as well, and to maintain the atmosphere in the pack, they would sometimes get rid of those crippled old wolves.

Fang Yuan quickly stood up and silently looked at this old wolf.

Back then when he killed a wild boar, there would be little primeval essence left in his body and that caused his fighting strength to greatly reduce. Thus when he encountered other wild beasts, he would choose to avoid them.

But these few months, his battle strength had increased tremendously, and with the Jade Skin Gu, against a crippled wolf, it was more than enough.

The unrestrained mountain trees were everywhere with their red leaves.

The setting sun illuminated the dark hour.

A person and a wolf distanced fifty steps away, silently observed each other.

In the wolf’s eye, green light shone as it showed a cruel and cunning expression. Fang Yuan’s eyes however, were dark and eerie, his black iris emanating chilling intent.

The White Boar Gu came out. It was full and returned to Fang Yuan’s aperture satisfied.

The old wolf looked at the wild boar, it had only bones and skin left, the meat was all eaten by the White Boar Gu.

The wolf’s eyes shone with green light and contracted. It first took a few steps back, then jumped into the bushes.

This wolf was still alive till today, it definitely had some intelligence. It keenly felt Fang Yuan’s danger, and decided to retreat.

Its entry and exit were both fast and abrupt.

Without the wild boar’s crashing sound, and without the tiger’s growling.

Against Fang Yuan, without a sound, the battle had started and ended.

"The main theme of life and death, such excitement born from great nature." Fang Yuan stood on the spot, and did not give chase. This wolf did not have anything worth Fang Yuan’s attack.

Aiiee!

But the next moment, the old wolf’s crying was heard.

The wolf’s howling suddenly erupted and ended suddenly. Even so, there was a thick surge of death aura overflowing.

Crack crack.

In the bush, there were sounds of twigs being stepped on.

The sound was fearless and got closer, causing Fang Yuan’s iris to shrink.

"Able to get rid of that sneaky old wolf in a second..." His gaze became more and more chilly.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Three more chapters. Chapter 83 will be the last chapter released for today.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The footsteps got closer, and soon the dark green trees at the side of the slope were forcefully separated. A tall man stepped forward, appearing in Fang Yuan’s vision.

He had black short hair, each strand standing straight up. The upper half of his body was naked. He had a large and thick body, the entirety of his body muscles bright red colour.

He was almost two meters tall, and during the cold autumn, he gave off the feeling of a mobile cauldron, his every breath able to raise the surrounding temperature.

On his waist, several wild beast corpses were hanged. There were foxes, wild rabbits and chickens, not to forget the old wolf who had just left.

Seeing Fang Yuan, he was slightly shocked, but quickly took large steps and walked past Fang Yuan.

"Gu Yue Chi Shan." Seeing the large man’s back leaving, Fang Yuan thought of his name.

He was a representative of the Chi faction, having Rank two upper stage cultivation. His experiences were similar to Fang Yuan even.

This person was also very talented, having very great strength from young. At ten he accidentally beat a family servant to death, and at twelve he could hold a heavy stone grinder and played it like a frisbee.

Back then, the family all thought well of him, thinking he was an A grade. But during the awakening ceremony, they tested that his talent was only B grade.

He had an originally wild and untamable nature, looking down on everyone. But he quickly changed after this experience, becoming more mature. Even with B grade talent, he was the top student in his level.

After a year of studying, he graduated from the academy and fought his way to the top. Years later, he had already become an elite among the clan’s Rank two Gu Masters.

Happiness cannot teach a person life’s true meaning, while only pain and suffering can.

"In the clan, a youngster attends the awakening ceremony at fifteen and enters the academy. At sixteen, they graduate from the academy and form a five person group and complete the clan’s missions, at the same time inheriting the family fortune. From sixteen, they will fight and compete while continually raising their cultivation. As the missions get more dangerous, their status will also increase. Some die and some live. Some get injured, and their cultivation level drops, living a plain life thereafter. Some become a Rank three Gu Master after all the hardship and advance to clan elder, being one of the higher-ups."

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone, thinking of many things.

The more a Gu Master cultivates, the harder it gets, and advancing becomes way more difficult. Coupled with dangerous and tough living environment, those that can advance to Rank three are few to none.

"Speaking of which, it is almost winter. That means I’ve spent almost a year at the academy. Each year there are two examinations. The first is the mid-year exam, with different contents each year. The second is the year end exam, and the contents never change, being arena fights. After the arena fight, I would no longer be able to stay at the hostel, and I would need to move out."

Move out, but stay where?

Fang Yuan could not live with his aunt and uncle, which was what they wanted.

In this world, sixteen meant adulthood, the age to start reproduction. Coupled with Fang Yuan’s numerous secrets, he needed to live independently.

"In my previous life, after leaving the academy I was only Rank one middle stage. This time, the situation is much better, I would be Rank one peak stage by then. But with a C grade talent, coming this far is really an achievement. Although it had its costs, expending much of my primeval stones."

Fang Yuan’s eyebrows raised, he did not have many primeval stones left.

Restricted by his talent, the primeval stones he expended for cultivation was much more than Fang Zheng, Chi Cheng or Mo Bei.

He raised six Gu worms by himself!

Furthermore, the Liquor worm’s refinement, nurturing the aperture, using the White Boar Gu to increase strength — they all needed primeval essence. After the primeval essence was used up, with a C grade recovery speed, it could not satisfy his needs, so he could only use primeval stones and retrieve the natural essence within to replenish.

Luckily he had the Spring Autumn Cicada, and also retrieved two Gu from Earth Treasury Flowers, thus refining Gu worms did not expend much of his primeval stones. This made him feel slightly better.

But after this when he leaves the academy, he needs to rent a house and get some income.

After peak stage, it was to push for Rank two. This process would spend a lot of primeval stones.

After Rank two, he still had to combine Gu worms, and each combination attempt was a hefty cost.

With all these factors, he was even clearer that his financial situation could no longer support him. Furthermore, he still had to continue feeding his Gu worms and continue cultivating.

If it wasn’t for the mid year exam where he used the wild boar tusks to exchange for quite some primeval stones and alleviated the pressure, he would not have survived till now.

"Primeval stones, primeval stones... the Flower Wine Monk did not give any primeval stones in his inheritance, what a shame. Extorting my classmates is still my most important source of income. But after graduating, the academy’s allowance would stop, and I cannot continue extorting. But if I get first for the year end exam, I can get a hundred and fifty primeval stones as reward," Fang Yuan contemplated in his heart.

If he could get first place, the hundred and fifty primeval stones would alleviate his financial difficulty for a while.

...

Time flies, autumn leaves and winter comes.

On the arena in the academy, three stages had already been built.

Beside the stage, near the bamboo walls of the arena, there were tents and long tables and chairs.

The academy elder, clan leader and a few other clan elders were sitting below the tentage cover.

There was a little snow in the sky.

Fifty-seven students stood straight on the arena. Each of their noses were bright red from the weather, and every breath they took had steam coming out of their noses.

The academy elder spoke loudly, "In a flash a year has ended. During this year you were trained in the academy and have started to grasp the qualities of a Gu Master. Tomorrow, you will have the year end examination to test the fruits of your hard work! Not only will the clan leader and clan elders come personally to watch, your family elders and seniors will also come to observe to pick excellent performing students to join their small teams."

"Your performances tomorrow, will to a large extent affect your future. Getting first place, not only is it a hundred and fifty primeval stones, but you also get an advantage in picking Gu worms! Now, start the final cultivation check in your academic life!"

Saying so, the academy elder nodded to a Gu Master beside him.

The female Gu Master received the instructions and called out the name from the list, "Gu Yue Jin Zhu!"

A young girl walked towards the Gu Master with a nervous expression.

The Gu Master stretched out her hand, touching the young girl’s abdomen. She closed her eyes to feel, then opened her eyes and declared, "Gu Yue Jin Zhu, Rank one middle stage. Next, Gu Yue Peng."

One after another, youngsters went up to check. Then they walked back down and returned to the group.

Their expressions varied, some were happy while others were upset.

The worst result was naturally Rank one initial stage, all being the D grade talents.

A large number of the students were Rank one middle stage, and little of them were B grade, mostly C grades.

"Gu Yue Chi Cheng." The middle-aged female Gu Master called.

From the group, the shortest Gu Yue Chi Cheng puffed his chest and walked out.

After checking, the female Gu Master opened her eyes, "Gu Yue Chi Cheng, Rank one peak stage!"

Up till now, this was the first Rank one peak stage Gu Master.

The clan elders present turned their heads.

Some elders recognised, saying lightly, "This is Chi Lian’s grandson, having B grade talent, no wonder."

Outside the tent, the youngsters also commented.

"Chi Cheng is Rank one peak stage, I wonder if Mo Bei is too? They are rivals after all."

"Being able to advance to peak stage, they are all A and B grades. Sigh, we C and D grades encounter bitterness that cannot be envied."

"Hmph!" Gu Yue Mo Bei snorted, seeing Chi Cheng’s proud expression, he was annoyed.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng clenched his fists, his lips tightly shut, as if he was stifling in his emotions.

"Gu Yue Mo Bei." Soon, the examiner called.

The horse-faced Mo Bei quickly walked out.

"Gu Yue Mo Bei, Rank one peak stage." With this declaration, he walked back and stared defiantly at Gu Yue Chi Cheng when returning.

The examination continued, and the snow in the sky became smaller, until it vanished.

The cold chilly air was rather refreshing.

"Gu Yue Fang Yuan." The middle-aged female Gu Master called.

Fang Yuan walked up expressionlessly.

Soon after, she opened her eyes, looking at Fang Yuan in shock, before declaring, "Gu Yue Fang Yuan, Rank one peak stage!"

"Rank one peak stage, did I hear wrongly? Fang Yuan cultivated to this level?" The youngsters were shocked.

"Sigh, he’s just lucky, having the Liquor worm to nurture his aperture. Even against the A and B grades, with his C grade he isn’t at a disadvantage." Some youngsters said with envy.

Especially those C grade talents, they sourly said to console themselves, "This isn’t much. The Liquor worm cannot refine Rank two primeval essence, Fang Yuan would no longer have such an advantage anymore."

"Even if he is peak stage, he is still a C grade, this is of no concern to us." Mo Bei and Chi Cheng stared at Fang Yuan, but quickly turned their attention to Fang Zheng, who was still waiting for his turn.

In their hearts, only the A grade talent Fang Zheng was a competitor.

"Brother, you’ve caught me by surprise. But from now on, watch carefully..." Fang Zheng looked at Fang Yuan walking down, his eyes shone and revealed an anticipating expression.

"Gu Yue Fang Zheng." The female Gu Master finally said.

"The A grade talent?" The clan elders focused their attention to Fang Zheng.

Fang Zheng walked out from the crowd, he could feel the pressure that these gazes were bringing him, causing him to become slightly nervous.

But when he saw the clan leader Gu Yue Bo’s smile, the nervousness in his heart melted.

He walked in front of the female Gu Master.

She shut her eyes, and then abruptly opened her eyes, saying in shock, "Gu Yue Fang Zheng, cultivation level – Rank two initial stage!"

Boom.

The youngsters erupted into a wave of discussions.

"What, he reached Rank two?!"

"As expected of the A grade talent genius."

"Incredible, he left Mo Bei, Chi Cheng, and Fang Yuan in the dust."

"This Fang Zheng!" At once, Mo Bei and Chi Cheng stared at Fang Zheng in shock.

"Hehehe, actually higher than in my previous life..." Fang Yuan’s eyelids drooped down as he laughed. He was not surprised, and after observing Fang Zheng’s expression earlier, he could guess the result.

"A grade talent after all."

"The hope of our clan."

"This is the credit of clan leader’s nurturing..."

The clan elders praised.

At once, Fang Zheng became the center of attention.

Half a year ago, Gu Yue Bo gave him a Jade Skin Gu and asked him to be the first person to advance to Rank two. He did it!

"Clan leader, I did not disappoint you, I did it! From now on, I will achieve even more, getting the approval of the clan elders and the people around me. Brother, I’ve left you behind, you are no longer the shadow in my heart. I, Gu Yue Fang Zheng, am no longer the one from back then!"

Fang Zheng yelled in his heart, his eyes shining with a kind of brilliance.

This brilliance, is called confidence!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sun was bright after the snow passed.

Gu Masters streamed into the academy in the morning.

"The annual year end exam has begun again. Hehehe, I wonder if the scene I saw from more than a decade ago when I graduated will be seen again." A middle-aged Gu Master with long green hair cascading down his back stood outside the academy, reminiscing.

"Leader, get in, you love reminiscing." The young female Gu Master beside him had blood red lips, her hands placed in the pockets of her pants. There was a blade of grass in her mouth, and she rolled her eyes.

"Hehehe, Yao Hong, don’t rush. We have to get in anyway. Since the clan leader had arranged it already, our new members have been decided long ago." The green haired Gu Master laughed.

"The A grade talent Fang Zheng?" The female Gu Master Gu Yue Yao Hong tutted in her mouth, saying unhappily, "The clan leader’s idea is to get us to babysit him!"

"But this babysitting mission is not easy to accomplish." The green haired male Gu Master sighed, "Nevermind, let’s go in."

As time passed, more and more Gu Masters entered the academy doors, and stood in the arena.

These were male and female Gu Masters. There were young faces, middle-aged, and old people as well.

Gu Masters after graduating would come out and form small teams to complete the clan missions. The Gu Masters that came to the arena were all the representatives of their groups, to assess the performances of the students and absorb them into their own teams.

To the small groups, this was injecting fresh blood and expanding their group.

To the newly joined members, under the guidance and teaching of the older members, they can swiftly adapt to the new environment and more effectively complete the clan missions and result in lesser deaths.

The sun gradually rose, as the students entered the fray.

"So many people today." The youngsters proclaimed.

"Quickly see, that is Lord Qing Shu. He is our Gu Yue clan’s number one person among the Rank two, and he is known for his mild and amiable temper." A person pointed at the green haired male Gu Master and shouted.

"Chi Shan senior is here too."

"That is the Mo family’s little miss Mo Yan!"

Qing Shu, Chi Shan, and Mo Yan were the rising stars of the Gu Masters, known by all students.

"Sigh, their teams are too hard to get in. I am only D grade, and my vital Gu is a Gentle Silk Spider, I am meant to be a support staff." A youngster sighed, then asked his friend, "You?"

"Oh, I got it settled with relationships. Through the godson of my uncle’s cousin’s sister."

...

As the students observed the Gu Masters, Qing Shu, Chi Shan and Mo Yan also observed the students.

"Oh? There are two Gu Yue Fang Zhengs." Yao Hong saw Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng, shouting out subconsciously.

The green hair male Gu Master Gu Yue Qing Shu helplessly sighed, "Did you see the information I gave you yesterday? Fang Zheng has a twin brother, they look very similar in appearance, but his brother is only C grade talent."

"Oh so that’s the case. I seem to have heard that the one who made poems when he was young was Fang Yuan? Are we getting him into the team?" Yao Hong patted her forehead with her palm, saying whatever she thought of.

Qing Mao shook his head, "The clan leader specifically mentioned, do not recruit him. He seems to be wanting to observe something. The brothers don’t have a good relationship anyway. Even if we want to recruit him, Fang Yuan probably wouldn’t join."

Yao Hong did not think much of it, muttering, "Among the groups, we are the publically acclaimed number one, joining us means a bright future. Any student would be interested. How could he be unwilling?"

Qing Shu laughed lightly, "That’s because you don’t know him, look at the information I sent you first."

At this time, the clan leader Gu Yue Bo, and the authoritative clan elders Gu Yue Chi Lian and Gu Yue Mo Chen entered, getting into the seats under the tentage.

"Not only the clan leader, but also Lord Chi Lian and Lord Mo Bei are attending this year."

Seeing this, not only the students but also the Gu Masters were excited, this did not happen in previous years.

"Nothing strange, Chi Lian and Mo Chen’s grandsons are all in this year’s class."

"Fang Zheng is the clan leader’s successor, the hope of the future to go against Bai Ning Bing. The clan leader naturally has to observe carefully."

Discussions were aplenty among the people.

"Perform well brother." Mo Yan looked at Mo Bei among the people, silently praying in her heart. Her group had the most people, it was of the largest scale. Thus there were a bunch of Gu Masters around her, showing her imposing aura.

As her most intense rival, Gu Yue Chi Shan from the Chi faction was standing alone, his huge figure easily acting like a giant red tower in a sea of people, standing out extensively.

After checking out Chi Cheng, he retracted his vision.

With a speech from the clan leader, the year end exam began.

The three stages held fights at the same time.

At once, shouting noises, sounds of moonblades flying, and the sounds of punches and kicks as well as the discussions of the Gu Masters below the stages fused into a loud banter.

"This year’s physical fighting skills is high." Soon, Yao Hong saw the difference.

"Hehehe, all thanks to Fang Yuan." Gu Yue Qing Shu laughed.

"What do you mean?" Yao Hong did not understand.

Qing Shu explained to her.

Yao Hong exclaimed in shock after listening, "Fang Yuan this lad, he’s really daring, almost to the point of fearless. Hehehe, bullying even his own brother. This is interesting."

She looked towards Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng from the crowd, thinking internally — Which is the elder brother and which is the younger one.

"Next, Gu Yue Jin Zhu against Gu Yue Mo Bei." On the arena, the hosting Gu Master shouted.

Gu Yue Mo Bei leapt upwards, and Jin Zhu walked up the stage with a serious expression.

The two paid respects to each other and said no more, fighting at once. Moonblades danced in the air.

The two continued to shoot and at the same time, moving and evading nonstop.

Although a girl, Jin Zhu had good basic skills and was able to fight equally with Mo Bei for a while. But as time passed, her stamina could not keep up, and she started to be suppressed.

Finally, with her body full of sweat and having no energy left, she surrendered.

Mo Bei on the other hand was not even fazed.

"Increasing endurance Gu huh, probably the Yellow Camel Longhorn Beetle Gu...." Below the stage, Fang Yuan observed, quickly seeing through Mo Bei.

Fang Yuan had six Gu worms, but that was an exception. Among the people of his age, they all had one or two Gu worms.

Not only because of the financial stress of feeding Gu worms, but also because the Gu worm’s usage needed constant practice to accumulate experience.

Greed for more would backfire. The students only started interacting with Gu worms, and just began on their cultivation journey. Two Gu worms were enough for them to practice.

Only an exception like Fang Yuan with his rich experience from his previous life, could easily grasp every Gu worm that comes into possession and use them to the very best he can.

The exam continued.

"Damn, jumping like a rabbit!" On another stage, a youngster angrily shouted, "Gu Yue Chi Cheng, you’re not a man, do you dare to fight with me physically?!"

"Tsk, only a fool would fight close range with you." On the stage, Gu Yue Chi Cheng laughed in disdain. He used the Scarlet Pill Cricket Gu and jumped around, his body being very agile.

His opponent only had a Flower Boar Gu. Even if he could temporarily raise his strength by one boar, it was useless. Chi Cheng would not go hand to hand with him.

Finally, he got hit by a moonblade from Chi Cheng and lost too much blood, retiring from the fight.

The healing Gu Masters below the stage quickly rushed up and treated his injuries.

As time passed, more and more students were mercilessly eliminated, and many youngsters also started to show their abilities.

Chi Cheng, Mo Bei, Fang Yuan, Fang Zheng......

Until noon.

The D grade talents were all eliminated. They had limited talent and all chose support-type Gu worms for production line or transport, which suited their lives. Thus, they had little help in battles.

"Little junior sister, your vital Gu is a Life Breath Grass right, my group needs a healer Gu Master."

"Senior, I wish to join your group, my vital Gu is a Moonlight Gu."

"Sorry, we are not lacking any attack-type Gu Master."

...

The small groups quickly recruited newbies, and the students also chose the groups they wanted.

The fights on the stage did not have much visual appeal, and after a few rounds, there were not many highlights, it was even boring. This was because most people chose the Moonlight Gu, and to most people, the fight would start with shooting moonblades. Whoever expended their primeval essence first would lose.

If both parties had no more primeval essence, they would fight with punches and kicks. At the end, one will fall.

Be it students, Gu Masters, or clan elders, they got bored watching and some were about to fall asleep.

Until evening, there were only less than ten students left on the stage.

"Finally ending." Some Gu Masters lifted their spirits, shrugging off the sleepiness.

At this moment, the Gu Master shouted, "Next round, Gu Yue Fang Zheng vs Gu Yue Mo Bei!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Zheng and Mo Chen both walked up the stage.

"Fang Zheng, don’t think that I will lose just because you have Rank two cultivation! Today I will challenge and beat a higher realm." Mo Bei gritted his teeth, his expression solemn, cheering for himself in his heart. Against the Rank two Fang Zheng, he indeed felt a strong sense of pressure.

"Come." Fang Zheng roared, rushing out ferociously.

Mo Bei’s heart jumped, this Fang Zheng wasn’t acting according to plan. Normally, they would first shoot moonblades before using hand to hand combat. But this time, he actually rushed up immediately, and wants to fight physically?

"Isn’t he afraid of getting injured by my moonblade when exchanging punches and kicks?" Mo Bei was perturbed.

He was naturally not worried for Fang Zheng’s safety, but knew that if they engaged in close combat, with such a short distance if Fang Zheng shot a moonblade, it was unavoidable.

Mo Bei quickly took a step back, attempting to pull some distance. At the same time, he shot out a moonblade with a flick of his wrist.

Fang Zheng was unfazed, taking a tumble and avoiding the moonblade, continuing his pursuit. At the same time, a lump of lunar energy collected in his palm.

Mo Bei looked at the moonlight in his hands that hasn’t been fired and felt tense in his heart, quickly taking steps back.

Although he worked hard in close combat and also trained his moonblade, he was still inferior to Fang Zheng who was nurtured personally by the clan leader.

Mo Bei was not suited to this style of combat, and quickly fell into disadvantage.

"Eh? That side is interesting." The battle on this arena attracted much attention.

"They’re actually fighting so closely, this Fang Zheng has guts." Yao Hong could now discern who is Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng. Fang Yuan had a cold expression and emitted an aura of maturity, while Fang Zheng was steel-willed, radiating a sunny aura.

"It must be the clan leader’s teaching. Normally when students fight, they would be ten meters apart. Further than this distance and the moonblade would dissipate. If they fought closer than this distance, the students would not react in time." Gu Yue Qing Shu’s gaze shone, "Fang Zheng’s battle distance now has shrunk to six meters, but his ability to avoid the moonblade is proficient. It seems that not only is the clan leader helping Fang Zheng, but Fang Zheng also put in some hard work and went through much hardship."

"Little brother!" Mo Yan seeing Mo Bei forced into a corner by Fang Zheng, showed worry and panic on her face. She really wanted to go in and help out, giving Fang Zheng a good beating.

Chi Shan however was expressionless, only watching and not speaking. After Fang Zheng got close to Mo Bei and shortened the distance to six meters, he no longer got closer, but used the Moonlight Gu and entered a firing contest.

Mo Bei tried hard to improvise. His actions were in a mess, and many times he was almost hit by the moonblades, constantly in danger.

Fang Zheng on the other hand, already had his winning formula.

Even if he could not evade in time, he still had the Jade Skin Gu, and as long as he uses the jade green glow in time, he would be able to block the moonblade.

Seeing how Mo Bei was defenselessly beaten by himself, Fang Zheng’s thoughts flew back to a time in the past.

Under the moonlight, the clan leader taught him the evasion movements step by step, unreservedly imparting him all the experience he had.

"Clan leader, I will not let you down." Fang Zheng’s eyes shimmered with hope, he was getting braver as he fought!

"Fang Zheng, you have the talent and the endurance, studiously training. The result is all because of your blood and sweat. This is the fruits of your hard work, continue like this, Fang Zheng. Using this aura, go and show your brilliance!" Under the tentage, the clan leader excitedly cheered on inwardly, even though he looked like he was quietly watching the fight, his lips curled into a smile.

Although Mo Bei struggled furiously, resisting adamantly, but after fifteen minutes, his entire body was full of injuries, the blood oozing out and dyeing his shirt red.

The organizing Gu Master, upon seeing such a scene, announced, "The victory goes to Gu Yue Fang Zheng."

"I haven’t lost yet!" Mo Bei shouted loudly, his entire bloodbathed body wavering in the air. But after struggling to no end, he was forced to receive treatment by the healing Gu Masters.

"A battle of such an intensity is already beyond the graduating standard."

"An A grade talent, is after all a genius."

"I heard he received personal guidance from the clan leader, can he not be amazing?"

Seeing such a result, the Gu Masters below the stage praised endlessly.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng panted as he walked down the stage. Three Gu Masters came to him and healed him, while also providing free primeval stones to allow him to quickly recover his primeval essence.

After resting for a while, he recovered to his peak condition and ascended the stage again.

This time, he was against Gu Yue Chi Cheng.

Chi Cheng looked at Fang Zheng, laughing dryly, "Very good! Fang Zheng, you defeated Mo Bei that rascal, if I defeat you now, it would be killing two birds with one stone."

He seemed very confident.

Fang Zheng’s lips remained tight, as he said nothing but rushed towards him.

"Dragonpill cricket Gu!" Chi Cheng’s thought flashed, and immediately an orange red-coloured glow came from both his legs. He leapt lightly and instantly retreated ten meters away.

The distance that Fang Zheng had just shortened was immediately lengthened.

"Hehehe." Chi Cheng got smug and laughed, "Fang Zheng, you have no speed increasing Gu, and with your two legs, you cannot catch me. Although this stage isn’t big, it is enough for me to manoeuvre. Your tactic might have worked on Mo Bei, but against me it is ineffective."

"Is that so?" Fang Zheng stopped his movements and stood on the spot, staring intently at Chi Cheng.

He smiled, his eyes showing iron will, shouting loudly, "Continue dodging like that, but everytime you use the Dragonpill cricket Gu, you have to use a certain amount of primeval essence. You have merely Rank one peak stage green copper primeval essence, but I am already at Rank two red steel primeval essence, three times your endurance. Your talent is inferior to me as well. At the end, you would run out of primeval essence and the loser will be you!"

"You!" Chi Cheng was shocked, he only saw his advantage but did not notice his weakness. Right now, he could not help but agree with Fang Zheng, and his fighting spirit dampened.

"What, Fang Zheng is Rank two?!" The surrounding Gu Masters gasped. The examination results were only obtained the day before, thus they were only spread among certain people, so most of the crowd did not know about it yet.

"An A Grade talent no doubt, amazing, this Fang Zheng might really be the rising star of our clan."

"Bai clan has that Bai Ning Bing, he is really too powerful. If Fang Zheng can grow up, he might be able to resist Bai Ning Bing."

"This lad is interesting. Getting to Rank two in the academy and with such solid basic skills, this is such an uncommon scene. No wonder the clan leader poured so much effort into him," Yao Hong muttered.

Qing Shu replied, "The clan leader’s guidance is only part of it, don’t look down on this lad. Ever since he survived the assassination incident, he has become very hardworking, cultivating to the best of his limits, he is a good seedling, with both talent and hardwork. If he can grow up..., sigh, I feel like my burden is increasing."

"Hehehe." Clan leader Gu Yue Bo laughed lightly.

Chi Cheng’s weak nature was analyzed by him to Fang Zheng. Now that he saw Fang Zheng using it to his advantage, Gu Yue Bo was very pleased.

"It seems that Fang Zheng is this year’s number one." Beside the clan leader, Gu Yue Mo Chen said.

Gu Yue Chi Lian snorted, staring at the scene intently. He obviously wished for his grandson to win and defeat Fang Zheng, that way he would win honour for the Chi faction.

But things do not go as he wished, and on the stage after getting demoralized, Chi Cheng could no longer display his 100% ability against Fang Zheng, and made continuous mistakes.

Eventually, Chi Cheng was caught with a fatal flaw, and was swept down the stage.

"Gu Yue Fang Zheng wins!" Gu Master announced.

Gu Yue Chi Lian’s face was black.

At once, Fang Zheng was famous, getting all the attention from the clan people.

"Fang Zheng beat Mo Bei and Chi Cheng simultaneously with wits and courage, it seems he is the first place this year," Some people praised.

"Makes sense, I think well of him as well. Too bad he cannot join our group." As the groups choose students, students are also choosing groups. A seeded student like Fang Zheng was already long booked.

"Fang Zheng is the clan leader’s faction, while Mo Bei, Chi Cheng are the Mo faction, Chi faction’s future leaders. This way, it seems that the Gu Yue Clan would be heavily dominated by the clan leader faction, suppressing the two clan elders." Some people could see even further.

On the other two stages, the battles continued.

Fang Zheng walked down the stage long ago, hearing the people’s praises, his heart roaring as he felt himself being reborn.

Different, it was very different from before.

His heart was filled with the excitement of recognition, the anticipation of being appreciated, and the joy of being commended.

A gust of winter wind blew, and although he felt the chilly wind, Fang Zheng could only feel the sense of warmth like the summer day.

"Last match, Gu Yue Fang Zheng vs Gu Yue Fang Yuan!" A while later, an announcer shouted.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

...and here is the last chapter of today’s mass release. Now since I’m here, I have a few things to say to clear up some confusion and misunderstandings.

[First] Spirit stones/ads. I have no control over it, its purely Qidian’s system. As far as I know, the readers paying spirit stones to skip ads doesn’t benefit me in any way.

[Second] Releases. I am unable to do daily releases since I am working in a job with a very unstable timetable. There are weeks where I am just working day and night and it is plain impossible to do anything during those times, hence I still owe about 10-15 chapters from a few months ago. It should be pulled back during Christmas period. I much prefer mass releasing over weekends, like you know, manga chapter weekly releases. If I’m doing weekly and I am late by a day or two, don’t panic, I will sub those in with the mass release. If I fall into any ’super busy schedule’ days and cannot translate I will notify with the next mass release. If you truly want to contact me, you can do so at Novelupdates.

[Third] I just want to remind some of the readers here that I am the original translator of this novel, where back then I used to do a chapter every two to three days during non ’super unstable schedule’ weeks. Seven chapters a week is just plain hard if I have to also keep up with as much quality, it’s like some people seem to think all I do is sit at home and watch TV and translate a chapter a week whenever I like. Honestly I liked it better when I was in my site with appreciative readers who talked about and discussed the novel. Sure the first Qidian TLer released 10 chapters a week, heck I could even do twenty with that MTL quality, I might as well go read at a certain MTL site. Not quite a rant, but just a reminder. I am here because many people asked me to come back, and like the original author of this novel, we don’t deal with crap.

[Fourth] The name of this novel!! I am still unable to get it changed, actually I also want to know – Do you guys prefer Reverend Insanity or Daoist Gu? The first name is, in my opinion, more aligned to the ’spirit’ of the entire novel and Fang Yuan. Daoist Gu is a more direct translation, but it sounds a tad bit lame. I’m going to set up in the comments, if you prefer one or the other, give the post a thumbs up. I’ll see which title gets more likes, and see what I can do.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The final battle, Gu Yue Fang Zheng vs Gu Yue Fang Yuan!

"Oh, interesting."

"To think that at the end, it is a showdown between brothers."

"Fang Zheng..." Seeing this, the clan leader’s smile faded slightly, "The greatest obstacle in your heart is your brother Fang Yuan. Go ahead and defeat him, you have red steel primeval essence while also having the Jade Skin Gu. With both offense and defense, you have the greatest advantage. Break apart this obstacle in your way, and you shall be reborn!"

The final match finally started.

The two brothers stood on the same arena, staring at each other.

The last remaining sunrays were like blood...

The light of the sunset was like a luxurious carpet for the arena.

Two very similar faces.

The little brother’s fighting spirit burned on, while the older brother’s gaze was deep as the abyss.

"Brother..." Fang Zheng’s fists were clenched as he stared intently at Fang Yuan, speaking with a firm voice," Admit defeat! I am already Rank two, and I have over 80% red steel primeval essence. Your green bronze primeval essence is only 44%, you have no chance."

Fang Yuan lightly looked at his brother, "You are surely clear about my primeval essence. But it’s better if you don’t spout nonsense. If primeval essence can decide the victory, what’s the point of fighting?"

Fang Zheng was stunned, but soon he raised his spirits, and his vigor could be seen burning in his eyes.

In truth, in the deepest part of his heart, he also did not want Fang Yuan to admit defeat. But Fang Yuan was his older brother after all, thus in view of their relationship he had to say it.

If not, that would be too cruel.

"Since big brother is so determined, then I have no choice but to attack!" Before he finished his sentence, Fang Zheng rushed towards Fang Yuan.

"This again!" Below the stage, Mo Bei looking at this scene, gritted his teeth.

He made up his mind to harshly train himself after going back and return this humiliation tenfold to Fang Zheng!

"Fang Yuan is finished, he does not have my Dragonpill cricket Gu." Chi Cheng folded his arms and smirked, enjoying Fang Yuan’s troubles.

Fang Zheng sprinted and instantly shortened the distance. In his hand there was a ball of moonlight.

Fang Yuan’s expression was like steel; there was not a single change as he looked at the charging Fang Zheng. He did not take a single step away but blue coloured moonlight also gathered in his right palm.

Suddenly!

Fang Yuan took a firm step after stomping the ground, and moved towards Fang Zheng instead of backing away.

"This!" Fang Zheng did not expect Fang Yuan’s movement, he panicked internally and quickly fired a moonblade.

Fang Yuan rushed quickly, and twisted his body, avoiding the moonblade by a hair’s breadth.

His expression was cold, without any shouting or aggression. But in his silence, there was an aura of absolute iciness emitting from him.

Fang Zheng subconsciously took a few steps back. His limit was six meters, but now Fang Yuan was five meters away from him. This time he had to be the one trying to increase their distance.

Dundundun.

Fang Zheng retreated while flicking his right wrist several times, sending moonblades flying to try and push Fang Yuan back.

Fang Yuan took fluid steps that were one after another, his body extremely agile. He moved intensely, and every time he managed to avoid the moonblade with no margin for error.

"This Fang Yuan is even more daring!" Yao Hong shouted.

"Such a battle, they’ve disregarded death already," Qing Shu also exclaimed.

"Another battle maniac!" Mo Yan gritted her teeth, giving a glance at Chi Shan who was not far away.

Chi Shan was expressionless, but his eyes glimmered occasionally.

The noise from the audience stopped, they were all captivated by the battle on the stage.

The moonblades and Fang Yuan brushed past each other. From time to time there was a blue light that would reflect upon Fang Yuan’s face. His cold expression remained as it was without any change, and each time he narrowly evaded death, showing his extreme battle talent!

The clan leader and clan elders all showed a serious expression.

Chi Cheng and Mo Bei stared with their mouths wide open, looking at Fang Yuan dodging every single moonblade in an impossible manner.

How did he do it? Numerous students had a giant question mark on their heads.

Hmph, Fang Yuan who had 500 years of battle experience, how can he be compared to Fang Zheng who was only taught for a year by a Rank four Gu Master?

In Fang Yuan’s eyes, Fang Zheng was as thin as a clear stream. No matter how the stream flowed, or turned its way among the mountain rocks, he could see through it clearly to the bottom of the river.

The moonblade’s every attack was not instant, it needed a process. Fang Zheng had to flick his wrist, and that was the greatest foretelling.

In Fang Yuan’s eyes, Fang Zheng’s shoulder movement, the movement of his wrist, every step he took provided a large amount of information. Fang Zheng’s every attack, evasion and dodging was easily seen through by Fang Yuan, even as to what was going on in Fang Zheng’s head, Fang Yuan could guess to a degree.

Fang Zheng’s mind right now was flabbergasted!

Fang Yuan was the obstacle in his heart for more than ten years, the shadow quickly expanding into darkness, dragging him into the abyss.

The nervous emotion made him forget to use the Jade Skin Gu. Fang Yuan’s strong approach caused him to panic and he was unable to regain his tempo, thus not allowing him time to think.

This was the difference in experience, this was the difference between inside knowledge!

In Fang Yuan’s perspective, his inside information was even more important than the Spring Autumn Cicada, it was his greatest reliance.

He was able to not rely on the clan leader, clan leader, family, friends, or Gu worms.

He had always and only relied on himself!

In this world, only oneself is the most reliable!!

Those teammates and battle partners, they were just the masks of weaklings, the excuse to anticipate help from others.

He finally reached near Fang Zheng!

Bam.

Fang Yuan’s punch was pulled from a hidden angle, smashing right into Fang Zheng’s stomach.

Fang Zheng’s body curled as the force of the fist almost caused him to vomit. He quickly protected his head with his arms and took a large step back. At the crucial moment, it showed his steady basic skills.

"Where is he?" Fang Zheng’s eyes stared wide, looking around from the gap between his arms, trying to find Fang Yuan’s location.

"Behind!" With this thought, Fang Zheng felt a strong force at his waist.

He lost his center of gravity and fell on the ground.

But Fang Zheng had gone through tough training. With this movement he flipped around on the ground and at the same time, shot out a moonblade from his palm towards his back.

This movement was the battle experience imparted by the clan leader.

If it was a normal person, they might follow closely behind Fang Zheng. If they could not react in time, they would be hit by the moonblade. Even if the moonblade did not hit, they would be forced back.

But who was Fang Yuan? Even Gu Yue Bo could not compete with him in terms of experience.

Fang Yuan moved steadily, not giving chase. Instead, he moved in a circle and got near to Fang Zheng. The moonblade only managed to hit air.

Fang Zheng thought he was able to pull some distance and quickly stood up. He was about to reorganise himself but he suddenly heard a swoosh sound.

"This is the gust of a punch!" At that split second, Fang Zheng had such a thought.

Immediately after, he was harshly hit in the ear by Fang Yuan’s fist.

Bam.

He immediately felt his vision darken, and a strong sense of dizziness caused him to lose balance, completely collapsing on the ground.

He sprawled on the ground for over two breath’s time, and finally he recovered slightly. His vision became clearer, seeing Fang Yuan’s two feet right beside him.

He suddenly understood how ugly his situation was. He was sprawled on the ground like a dog while Fang Yuan stared at him from that high position.

"Damn it!" Fang Zheng was furious and tried to get up.

Under everyone’s eyes, Fang Yuan lifted his right leg and stepped down firmly.

Bam.

Fang Zheng’s head was harshly stepped on, like a rock hitting the stage, making a loud sound.

"Fuck!" Fang Zheng raged and tried to get up again.

Fang Yuan stared coldly, trampling down once again.

Bam.

Fang Zheng’s head hit the stage again. His scalp knocked open and blood bled nonstop.

"Damn! Damn it!!" Fang Zheng’s teeth were about to be crushed from his clenching, and the rage in his chest burned through his entire body. He raised his head again, trying to get up.

Bam.

Fang Yuan’s third step came down. This time he continued to step on his head, not letting go. Under the immense force, Fang Zheng’s face was harshly squeezed on the stage floor.

Fang Zheng’s face was almost deformed, and he breathed raggedly, struggling to no avail. He felt that on his head, there was a huge rock that would not move no matter how he struggled.

"Right, how could I forget, I have the Moonlight Gu!" Under the despair, Fang Zheng’s inspiration struck, and he thought of the Moonlight Gu.

His right palm gathered moonlight again.

But how could Fang Yuan not notice?

With a light sound, he shot out a moonblade onto Fang Zheng’s right palm.

Argh!

Fang Zheng cried out, the immense pain sending his body into a spasm like he was struck by lightning.

His palm was almost pierced through by Fang Yuan, showing his white bones. The Moonlight Gu on his palm was already struck a great blow, it was on the brink of death!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Hi guys! Boss dropped a bomb on me on Friday, had to work all through weekends this time. I’m taking tonight to get out as many as possible in the next 30 minutes, mostly finished translating but require lots of editing. I’ll continue the rest tomorrow. Today and tomorrow - 9 chapters total.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"These two brothers really aren’t on good terms," Yao Hong mumbled.

"This Fang Yuan is too cruel, treating his brother like this," many people frowned unhappily.

"Fang Yuan is too savage, extorting our primeval stones for an entire year! Now he’s treating his brother like this," the students gritted their teeth. Fang Yuan’s coldness forced out their hatred towards a common enemy.

"Fang Zheng, stand up, stand up! Defeat Fang Yuan." Some unknown student shouted.

"Defeat Fang Yuan, defeat Fang Yuan!" Instantly, many youngsters shouted.

"This Fang Yuan, is indeed a hated person." Mo Yan snorted, enjoy his predicament.

"Fang Zheng, hang in there, stand up! Defeat this monster Fang Yuan!"

"Fang Zheng, stand up. We’re with you."

"Fang Zheng, you can do it, you can do it!"

The crowd cheered on fiercely, and sounds of encouragement entered Fang Zheng’s ears.

Huff! Huff! Huff! Huff!

Fang Zheng gasped heavily. As the sounds entered his heart it gave him an unimaginable strength!

The scenes of the past played in his head.

On the streets, the clansmen’s comments.

"That’s Fang Yuan, the future genius, he is not to be underestimated!"

"Who’s that behind him?"

"Oh, probably his brother, who knows what his name is."

Uncle and aunt laughed, "Fang Yuan, now the entire village is discussing the new poem you wrote! This is very good, uncle and aunt are proud of you."

Fang Yuan waved his hand, saying calmly, "I only made those on a whim."

Uncle and aunt nodded, saying to Fang Zheng, "Learn well from your brother, if you are half as talented as your brother, we would not have to worry."

Under the moonlight, deep in the courtyard.

Clan leader Gu Yue Bo looked at Fang Zheng, saying gently, "Fang Zheng, have confidence. You must find your purpose, believe in yourself."

"But, sir clan leader..."

Gu Yue Bo patted his shoulders, encouraging, "The shadow in your heart, others cannot dispel it for you. You can only rely on yourself. I await that day."

The night before the year end exam.

Shen Cui looked at Fang Zheng with love in her gaze under the lamp lights, "Young master, I believe that you can get number one. I have always believed it! Work hard!"

The morning before departure.

Uncle and aunt stood at the doorstep, "Fang Zheng, after the year end exam, you would be leaving the academy. Seeing your growth, we are very happy! Go, go and show everyone the strength of an A grade!"

And......

Under the setting sun, in a dark corner, a female classmate cried profusely, "The allowance is only three primeval stones, but Fang Yuan snatched a piece away, leaving me with two. I am almost unable to feed my Moonlight Gu at this rate."

Fang Zheng’s heart softened, "This is my primeval stone, I’ll lend it to you."

The female classmate took the primeval stone, saying with tears, "Fang Zheng, you are too nice, please defeat your brother and end his tyranny in the academy!"

Fang Zheng was silent.

A bunch of classmates appeared in front of him.

"Fang Zheng, you are an A grade talent, you can do it."

"Fang Yuan is too much, constantly bullying us, you are our only hope."

"Fang Zheng, from today onwards, we’re with you, we will always support you!"

"Everyone..." Fang Zheng observed the surroundings, seeing the concerned pairs of eyes, and felt extremely touched.

Everyone...

Everyone has expectations of me.

My classmates, uncle, aunt, Shen Cui, and sir clan leader!

Everyone is waiting for me, looking at me, supporting me......

How can I lose? How can I fall here? How can I!

Boom, boom, boom, boom.

His heart pounded in his chest, and Fang Zheng’s eyes shone with brilliance.

I cannot fall here!

I will dispel the shadow and stand up!!

Fang Zheng’s fists were tightly clenched, no longer feeling any pain at this point. He felt a lion in his chest, awakening from its sleep and opening its huge mouth to roar!

Hot-blood boiled in his body.

Stand up, stand up!

Break the shadows, break the darkness!

"ARGHHHHHHHHH!" Fang Zheng opened his mouth wide to shout, his body starting to emit a green jade light.

"What’s that?" The crowd silenced.

"Jade Skin Gu!" Someone shouted.

Bam!

The students roared towards the heavens.

"Fang Zheng, you can do it!"

"Fang Zheng, we have your back!"

Finally only one last cheer remained —"Stand up! Stand up!"

"Everyone..... I can hear your voices." Fang Zheng clenched his fist, his teeth almost crushed. Fang Yuan’s pressure was no longer so imposing, he could finally get up, slowly and steadily.

The shouting intensified.

"He’s burning with anger!!"

"He’s going to do a comeback."

Gu Masters hearing such cheers and excitement from the crowd, were all starting to feel moved.

"That’s right, Fang Zheng, that’s right! Stand up, stand up, abandon the past, dispel the shadow and stand up, you will become a new person!" Clan leader’s eyes shone with bright light as he cheered Fang Zheng on in his heart.

"Jade Skin Gu..." Fang Yuan’s eyelids drooped. He pulled back his leg and saw Fang Zheng stand up slowly, the Jade Skin Gu’s radiance turning his face green.

Fang Zheng had always been hiding this trump card up till now and did not reveal it to anyone, thus nobody knew about it.

"Fang Zheng got up!" The crowds’ cheers exploded.

"He stood up!" Clan leader was moved, uncontrollably standing up from his seat. At this moment, he saw the rise of an A grade talent! He saw the future of the Gu Yue clan!

"I stood up, brother, I will defeat you!" Fang Zheng’s eyes burned with determination, his entire body enveloped in bright green light like he was wear a jade armor!

"Oh wow, this defense, even the moonblade can’t pierce it. It seems Fang Zheng wins." Yao Hong raised her brows, blowing a whistle.

"Indeed, even with the Little Light Gu’s reinforcement, hitting on this barrier, it would only cause Fang Zheng’s primeval essence to be consumed faster. But comparing primeval essence expenditure, Fang Yuan is no match for Fang Zheng. After this match, Fang Zheng is going to rise!" Qing Shu laughed lightly.

"Fang Zheng had a Jade Skin Gu, but only used it now. It seems Fang Yuan’s earlier attacks confused him. But now, victory is already waving towards him." Mo Yan folded her arms, her gaze slightly uncertain.

Time seem to have paused.

On the stage, the brothers faced each other.

The two’s distance was so close yet so far.

Fang Zheng’s firm determination, Fang Yuan’s eternal indifference.

"Little brother..." He looked at Fang Zheng peacefully, his lips curling into a smirk, "Thinking of defeating me, you’re still far from it."

He raised his right hand, his right arm flexing, pulling into a bow shape.

"Big brother, you’ve lost!" Fang Zheng felt amused in his heart seeing Fang Yuan’s raised fist.

As long as he had primeval essence, even with the Little Light Gu’s reinforcement, the moonblade could not break the jade colour barrier, not to mention his fist? Unless he used the Flower Boar Gu or the Brute Force Longhorn Beetle Gu to raise his strength. But even so, he would need a defensive type Gu......

Fang Yuan did not say anything, but he used his fist to give the most straightforward answer.

The next moment, the right fist flew in the air and hit Fang Zheng harshly on the cheeks.

Bam!

After a loud crash, blood spilled as the jade light smashed to bits like broken mirror fragments dancing in the sky before vanishing.

"What?!" Fang Zheng was hit by such a shock once again, and after a stunned moment, his neck was almost broken as he hurriedly retreated.

Fang Yuan followed up closely, using a bow step and raising his left fist, pulling back and striking again upwards!

Bam!!

Fang Zheng’s other half of his face was hit by the impact, his head rising high up with blood and broken jade light flying in the air.

Bam, bam, bam!

He took three steps backwards, his ears buzzing as a dizziness ten times greater than before assaulted him.

"How can this... be!" His vision darkened, and he collapsed on the arena — Plop.

Fang Zheng fell on the ground, the light dissipating on his body as he fainted in the next moment.

The shouts and cheers came to an abrupt end.

The happy, excited expressions of the students were still glued on their faces, unable to change due to such a shock.

The entire arena was silent.

Fang Yuan’s fists were bloody, to the point his bloody finger bones could be seen. Drops of blood fell and dripped on the stage.

Swoosh...

A cold winter wind blew, freezing away all the hot-bloodedness.

Fang Yuan’s hair wavered in the air as he stood still on the stage. It was almost as if the heavily injured person with both his fists almost crippled was not him!

He looked coldly at the surroundings with a calm expression.

Everyone was silent.

In the tentage, the clan leader was still standing, staring dumbfoundedly.

"Sorry, I’ve let you all disappointed," Fang Yuan said lightly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

On the stage, Fang Zheng fainted on the ground with no more movements from him.

Fang Yuan however, continued with his cold expression, standing in the middle of the stage.

After a momentary silence, the crowds erupted.

"How can this be?" Some people hugged their heads, revealing an expression of disbelief.

"Two punches breaking the Jade Skin Gu’s defense, this-this-this..." Some people were tongue-tied.

"Too savage, even the jade light got smashed by him, does he not feel pain?" Some female Gu Masters took in a chilly breath.

"Without any defensive Gu worm and using his bare hands to break the jade light, this is true blue self-harm!" Even male Gu Masters’ eyes twitched upon seeing Fang Yuan’s hands, and were shocked by his ruthlessness.

Being ruthless to others, that is easy, but being ruthless to yourself, that is hard.

Fang Yuan using his bare hands to break the Jade Skin Gu’s defense, it was not only savage to his younger brother, but even harsher on himself!

"I’ll go take a look." The academy elder could no longer stand it, and after saying so, he jumped onto the stage.

He first squatted down and observed the fainted Fang Zheng, sighing in relief as he found that Fang Zheng was not in a critical condition. His head just had a huge impact, causing him to fall unconscious.

"Unbelievable, with the Jade Skin Gu’s defense, he still suffered such heavy injuries from someone using their bare hands." The academy elder was shocked internally, raising his head and looking at Fang Yuan, his eyes shining with a fierce light.

"Fang Yuan, I’ll heal you." The academy elder stood up, taking a few huge strides towards Fang Yuan and grabbing his forearm.

Fang Yuan’s arms were in terrible condition. Not only was the blood and skin vaguely mashed, even his bones were revealed. Because of the huge impact there were also cracks on the bones.

"How intense this pain is, yet he didn’t even frown a bit." Even if it was the academy elder, his heart shuddered seeing such injuries.

His tone was complicated, saying to Fang Yuan, "Endure it, the healing is very itchy and also very painful."

Saying so, his five fingers spread open and emitted a wave of blue moonlight. The moonlight got brighter and caused the academy elder’s right hand to be translucent from the shine.

At a glance, the academy elder’s entire right hand was like a piece of blue jade, the blood vessels and bones were all turned into jade.

The academy elder lightly raised his right hand and covered Fang Yuan’s injured fist.

It was just like a piece of cold jade touching on an injury that was mashed with blood and flesh. Fang Yuan felt a heart-piercing pain, but he gritted his teeth and did not make a sound.

The academy elder’s hand emitted gentle moonlight and the moonlight nourished Fang Yuan’s injured spot.

On the bones, the cracks started to mend, and the flesh and skin started to grow rapidly and heal.

Fang Yuan felt an intense itching, causing him to breathe heavily.

The academy elder’s expression was calm. While healing Fang Yuan, he diverted a part of his concentration towards Fang Yuan’s arm, and also inspected his aperture.

In the aperture, the black green-coloured copper primeval essence was raging like waves in the sea.

A white and fat liquor worm was swimming and playing in the primeval sea.

The four walls of the aperture were all made of white-coloured crystal walls. This showed Fang Yuan’s Rank one peak stage cultivation clearly.

The academy elder did not look away, but continued to scan Fang Yuan’s body.

Finally, he found that on Fang Yuan’s palm, there was the Moonlight Gu and Little Light Gu.

"No other Gu worms, did Fang Yuan really use his own strength to break the defense of the Jade Skin Gu? Such strength is far beyond a mortal adult. He is only fifteen years old, how can he have such strength?" The academy elder’s eyes shone with suspicion.

"Clan elder, thank you for your treatment." Fang Yuan took back his arm from the academy elder and shook it around.

Although there was still some pain, the injury had already healed. If this was back on Earth, such an injury would have taken a year or two to heal and would even leave some serious side effects.

This was the magical aspect of this world. Now that Fang Yuan’s arms were healed, although he still felt like they were weak when he grabbed the air or waved them around, seven or eight days later, the strengthless side-effect would disappear.

But Fang Yuan was not grateful to the academy elder. His injury could also be healed by other healing Gu Masters, and he was well aware: the academy elder’s motive was to inspect his aperture.

Fang Yuan had expected this from the start, so he left the White Boar Gu and Jade Skin Gu in the second secret cave. As for the Spring Autumn Cicada, with its Rank six status, if it wanted to hide, even the Rank four Gu Yue Bo would not find it if he inspected personally.

The academy elder did not find anything, and that caused him to frown. Although he was still suspicious in his heart, but in front of so many people, he did not have the proper opportunity to ask.

"Fang Yuan, you performed well, continue working hard." Finally, the academy elder patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder and declared loudly, "This year’s final exam, the first place goes to Fang Yuan!"

Ever since the academy elder’s ascension to the stage, the audience watched quietly. After hearing his announcement, they started discussing fervently.

"To think that at the end, Fang Yuan had the last laugh!"

"He’s merely a C grade, but he beat the Rank two Fang Zheng who has a Jade Skin Gu, did he cheat?"

"Probably not, from the academy elder’s personal treatment and probing. If he did not find any problems, Fang Yuan probably did not cheat."

"Fang Yuan’s fists were greatly injured, that’s normal. But as a fifteen year old, having such strength that surpasses an adult by far, isn’t it suspicious?"

"What is there to be suspicious about? There are always people who are born with strange talents. Either super strength, or super smart, actually Fang Yuan’s strength isn’t that scary, think about that guy." The speaking Gu Master indicated at the standing Chi Shan.

People were immediately enlightened, "Oh yes. When Chi Shan was still a kid, his strength was already greater than an adult, is Fang Yuan also such a monster?"

"That has to be it. When Fang Yuan was young, he could make poems. Those poems were famous around the village back then. We thought he was an A grade, but he turned out to be C grade, but it seems heaven has other plans and compensated him with strength."

"He is still a C grade anyway, if he was B grade he would be another Chi Shan. Hmph, nothing to be envious about, a Gu Master’s cultivation relies on their talent. If I can get a Black Boar Gu in the future, I would have even greater strength than him. That is nothing much, he can only be arrogant for a while." Some people shrugged, speaking unconcernedly.

Fang Yuan walked down the stage, his eyes picking up the people’s discussions as he smirked coldly inside his heart.

The Liquor worm’s origin was already perfectly explained by Fang Yuan, but once the Jade Skin Gu was exposed, Fang Yuan would not be able to explain it. Thus, he had to keep this secret and could not use it in public.

As for these people’s thoughts and explanations, it was the direction Fang Yuan wanted them to go. Or rather, even if the higher-ups were suspicious, they would only be suspicious of his mysterious backer.

"Half a year ago, I risked the danger and used the wild boar tusks to create a second layer of protection at the camp. It is finally coming into play." Fang Yuan eyes were dark like the abyss.

The Gu Yue clan leader did not sit down. He kept on standing and frowning deeply.

This matter had developed out of his control.

Fang Yuan getting first place, he did not really care much. It was just a year end exam’s first place, it was nothing significant.

He was worried about Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

Undeniably, today’s impact was too great on Fang Zheng.

If Fang Zheng was beaten completely from the start and lost the fight, so be it. But it just had to be at the point where he used his full strength and got a huge confidence boost, that he was sent sprawling by Fang Yuan’s two fists.

Such a psychological trauma might negatively impact his growth.

"Under my guidance and arrangement, Fang Zheng was the first to advance to upper stage, peak stage and Rank two initial stage, continuously gaining success and confidence. But this confidence is probably gone by now. Sigh, my hard work has all gone up like smoke." Gu Yue Bo sighed deeply, naturally gaining a little sense of disgust and loathing towards Fang Yuan.

If Fang Yuan had lost to Fang Zheng, everything would have been perfect.

But he actually won, that is too... infuriating.

Not only the clan leader, but the other clan elders’ were also full of solemn and complex gazes.

"Fang Yuan’s strength is actually so huge, is he really a monster like Chi Shan?"

"Actually, he was strange from young, making poems when he was younger than ten, so his strength getting larger as he grew up is nothing strange."

"But there is another possibility, and that is human action. Fang Yuan has a mysterious backer, maybe the backer assisted him."

"But the person behind him, who could it be?"

The clan elders’ hearts were overturning, but their expressions said otherwise.

Clan leader Gu Yue Bo went silent before revealing a smile, saying, "Fang Yuan, getting first place with a C grade talent, this is an unprecedented grand feat! Becoming first place, you have a hundred primeval stones as reward and also Gu worm choosing priority. Now, I shall reward you further, you can choose any small group you want and join it. Regardless of the group, whichever one you want, just say it and you can join!"

Upon saying so, all the Rank two Gu Masters and students stared at Fang Yuan in envy.

Small groups had their differences too, and joining a good group meant a bright future. Gu Yue Bo’s reward was very generous.

"Although I made this decision on the spot, I believe the clan elders here would agree with me," Gu Yue Bo smiled even more intensely, looking at the clan elders beside him.

With Gu Yue Chi Lian and Gu Yue Mo Chen as the head of the clan elders, all of their faces were grim and some even frowned, but no one stopped him.

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped.

Trouble had come.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Will continue tomorrow, good night (u_u)/

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan could see the intentions behind such an action, this was a small probing (test) from the clan leader.

His gaze swept through the arena, the entire clan’s best performing three groups were here. The clan leader’s faction’s Qing Shu group, Chi faction’s Chi Shan group, and Mo faction’s Mo Yan group.

If it was a regular student, joining any of the three groups meant getting a huge backer, representing a bright future.

But to Fang Yuan, it was the reverse.

In the clan’s higher-up’s perception, he was already part of a mysterious faction. Joining any of the three spelt trouble.

For example, if he joined the Chi Shan faction, the Chi family obviously know they did not recruit him, so their first thought would be — Fang Yuan is a pawn of another family, but now that he’s joining our group, what intentions does he have?

Next they would think — The mysterious faction that recruited Fang Yuan earlier had already broken the rules, and now that Fang Yuan is present here, the clan leader would think that we were the ones who recruited him, so isn’t this ‘carrying the fault’ for them? That will not do, we have to arrest Fang Yuan, keep a close eye on him and investigate him! We shall find concrete evidence and reveal the mysterious backer of his.

But the truth was, Fang Yuan has no backer!

"Once I join any of the three groups, it means I am offending one out of the three biggest factions in this clan. That will definitely not do! Sigh, I originally wanted to keep a low profile and join Jiang He’s group, but Jiang He’s group is backed by the punishment hall elder. Under everyone’s watchful eye, if I join abruptly, that is inappropriate as well." Fang Yuan inevitably hesitated.

Gu Yue Bo’s smile became even more intense, continuing, "Fang Yuan, if you don’t choose, I’ll select for you."

The clan elders beside him watched quietly with an unmoving expression, each of them standing like statues.

"Hmph, forcing me?" Fang Yuan’s gaze shone, immediately guessing Gu Yue Bo’s next words — either throwing him to Chi Shan’s group or Mo Yan’s group.

Gu Yue Bo knew in his heart that he did not recruit Fang Yuan. To him, this act can not only remove suspicion on him but also weaken his foe, as well as reveal the mysterious faction; it was killing three birds with one stone. It was a play that could divert the problem away — although seemingly simple, it was a strategic move showing Gu Yue Bo’s experienced political ability.

"No, I must not let him dictate it. It seems I can only choose a crappy group." Fang Yuan was about to open his mouth and speak.

Suddenly at this moment, someone spoke, "Why don’t you join our team. Our group is lacking an attacker."

Who said that?

At once, everyone turned around towards the source of the voice.

The person speaking was neither tall or short, with dark yellow skin that made him look sickly. A pair of triangular eyes shone with brilliance.

"It’s the sickly snake Gu Yue Jiao San(1)." Someone pointed out his identity.

"Gu Yue Jiao San? It’s just a trash team with no background!" The clan leader and clan elders all showed a disappointed expression.

"Jiao San..." Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with an undetectable dark shine.

He and this Gu Yue Jiao San person had never met or spoken before, and he had no memories of such a person.

Why did Jiao San open his mouth and invite him into his team? Was it purely because he had gotten first place in the examination?

How can that be!

Only someone as childish as Fang Zheng would have such a naive thought.

But......

Since Jiao San opened his mouth and invited Fang Yuan personally, such a situation was a good breakthrough point.

"The clan’s higher-ups must be very disappointed now. Hehe." Fang Yuan smiled thinking of this, his eyes looking downwards, hiding the brilliance in his expression.

"Then I’ll join your group," Fang Yuan agreed on the spot, blocking Gu Yue Bo’s upcoming words.

"Is this Fang Yuan retarded?"

"Ignoring those top performing groups and joining the sickly snake’s group!"

"He must be bonkers, Jiao San’s personality, hehehe..."

The students and Gu Masters started to discuss, looking at Fang Yuan like he was a fool.

The clan leaders and elders’ expression turned dim.

Today’s probing was thwarted by this Gu Yue Jiao San! No... Maybe this Jiao San is also a pawn in this game, but no matter what, they must investigate on this Gu Yue Jiao San!

Three days later.

It had already been snowing for a day, and now that it was gradually getting smaller, pieces of snowflakes flew in the air gliding with the wind.

On Qing Mao mountain, there was a layer of white colour over it. Many branches were naked with no leaves, except the evergreen pine trees and Qing Mao bamboo, which had retained their original colours standing proudly in the snow.

A group of five people ran in the snow.

The leading person was neither short nor tall, bearing a sickly yellow skin — it was Gu Yue Jiao San.

As he ran, he turned towards the quiet Fang Yuan, smiling gently with kindness, "Fang Yuan, don’t be nervous. Although this is your first clan mission, the contents are simple. Just follow us and learn along the way."

"Yes," Fang Yuan lightly replied, staring forward with a solemn expression.

It was already winter.

Running on the snow, the chilly winter winds were even more intense. Every breath was like eating snow dust, chilling his entire chest.

Fang Yuan’s face was originally very white, and now that the snow shone on it, it appeared even paler. In the process of running, the snow kept falling on his short black hair, his shoulders and forehead.

What was different than before was that Fang Yuan had changed his clothes.

This was a dark blue coloured battle attire.

The attire had long sleeves and long pants, with bamboo sheets tied on his legs as wrappings, and bamboo shoes adorned his feet. On his head there was a bright blue headband, and the headband fluttered in the air as Fang Yuan ran.

On his waist, there was a loose belt.

The belt was navy blue with a bronze plate on it, carved with the number "1"; it was very much eye-striking.

This was a Gu Master’s attire, showing Fang Yuan’s status as a Rank one Gu Master.

The youngsters had to stay a year in the academy and graduate before they were allowed to wear this.

This attire had much meaning. Once worn it meant that one has transcended the realm of mortals, leaving the lowly life and stepping into the upper society, being the middle class of the entire human race. Even if Rank one Gu Masters were the bottom of this tier, from now on any mortal had to give way to Fang Yuan and pay respects to him.

Gu Yue Jiao San’s gaze continued to shine. This battle attire when worn by Fang Yuan, coupled with his cold expression, showed the atmosphere of a cool and collected person.

While running, he continued asking Fang Yuan, "We are out on a mission, and normally we would have to rush when travelling, so running is a common thing. Are you used to it?"

"I can cope." Fang Yuan’s words were precious like gold, using the corner of his eye to look at Gu Yue Jiao San.

Jiao San’s warm and kind expression caused him to think about the legend of Ren Zu.

Words have it that Ren Zu used the Rules and Regulation Gu and obtained strength but lost wisdom, leaving behind three Gu worms. One was Suspicion, one was Trust, and another was Attitude.

Ren Zu grabbed the Attitude Gu.

Attitude Gu followed the betting rules, submitting to Ren Zu, telling him, "Human, you caught me, I can only curse my bad luck. From now on, I will be at your command. Wear me and you will be able to use my ability."

Attitude Gu’s appearance was like a mask. Ren Zu put it on his face, but in the end he could not wear it. Even if he used a rope to tie it, it would still fall off.

"What’s going on?" Ren Zu was troubled.

Attitude Gu laughed, "I know, human, you have no heart. Attitude is the mask of the heart, so without a heart, how can you wear me?"

Ren Zu realised at once, he had already given his heart to hope.

He was heartless.

Someone who is heartless cannot wear the attitude mask. In other words, to someone with a heart/an intention, their attitude is a mask.

"This kind and warm attitude is only Gu Yue Jiao San’s mask, what is his real intention?" Fang Yuan pondered.

While the person "sickly snake" Jiao San observed Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan was also secretly observing him.

(1)Gu Yue Jiao Shan - His name Jiao Shan means three angles. Probably referring to his triangular eyes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

On the snow, five small groups were running.

Gu Yue Jiao San looked at the sky, saying, "The sky’s getting dark, our mission this time is to collect ‘permafrost decayed soil’. Although it is easy, it consumes too much time. We have to speed up, everyone follow me, try not to get left behind. Fang Yuan, if you are unable to keep up, just inform us. Don’t worry, you are a newcomer, we will take care of you."

Gu Yue Jiao San smiled very amicably.

Fang Yuan nodded silently.

The other three members exchanged glances. The sky was actually still bright, Jiao San had no need to say this. In reality, he wanted to give Fang Yuan an initial display of authority.

The three knew this deep down, but did not expose him.

In actuality, these kind of authoritative displays were common. When a new member joins, the older members would usually exert their authority to get rid of the younger member’s arrogance so that it would be easier to command and control them.

"Let’s go." Jiao San said lightly, taking huge steps and being the first to rush out.

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone, heading out with the same speed as the other three, following closely behind.

The bamboo shoes stepped on the snow, leaving behind traces of footprints.

The mountain road was full of obstacles, being difficult to manoeuvre. Especially with a layer of thick snow, it was even easier to fall down. At the same time, due to the snow cover, who knew if underneath it was sharp rocks or pitfalls?

If one stepped into a hunter’s trap, they would be even more unlucky.

Living in this world was tough. Travelling seemed easy but in fact it had much to do with experience. Many newcomers suffered due to this.

Only through a long period of training, having gone through much hardship, a Gu Master that has accumulated much experience would be able to avoid these obstacles.

The chilly winter winds blew directly towards their faces as Fang Yuan strode through the snow.

At times he took small leaps, at times he ran long distances. Sometimes he sidestepped, sometimes he climbed, following closely behind Jiao San.

The entire Qing Mao was covered by a layer of snow coat, and many of the trees had naked branches, without a single leaf.

At times, squirrels or wild deer were frightened by these people and ran away quickly.

Thirty minutes later, Jiao San stopped in his tracks as he had reached his destination.

He turned over his head, looking at Fang Yuan, smiling, and praising, "Good job! You truly are this year’s champion, following behind me and not losing your pace once."

Fang Yuan smiled silently. This kind of authoritative display, he was clear of it. In fact, sprinting in the snow had become a "traditional event". Many small groups used this to suppress the newcomer’s arrogance.

The two stood on the spot and waited, until the remaining three members arrived.

Puff, huff, puff......

They took deep breaths, their foreheads full of sweat, their faces red as they placed their hands on their waits, the last members plopping on the ground.

Jiao San harshly stared at them, barking, "Stand straight! Haven’t you embarrassed us enough? Look at Fang Yuan, then look at yourselves. Hmph, after this mission, go back and reflect on yourselves."

The three immediately stood up straight, but lowered their heads. They were chided by Jiao San until they did not dare to raise their heads or rebuke him.

Only their gaze towards Fang Yuan changed.

"How strange, how can this Fang Yuan be so experienced? I did not see him fall even once!"

"Sigh, we only have normal strength, how can we compete with this monster?"

"Hmph, not only did we not get a show to watch, we even became the sacrificial lambs. This guy..."

"Enough, buck up." Jiao San pointed forward, "This small-sized valley is our destination. Inside, there are large amounts of permafrost decayed soil for us to collect. Let’s split up here and harvest the frozen earth. An hour later, we will gather here. Kong Jing, distribute the tools."

Jiao San had just spoken, and the male member called Gu Yue Kong Jing stood up.

He opened his palm wide and a yellow light shot out from the aperture in his abdomen, landing on his palm.

The yellow light dispersed, showing its true form. A frog with a golden back.

This golden frog was plump with a giant snow white belly, causing its entire body to look like a ball when inflated. The frog’s mouth and eyes were all at the top of its head due to this belly, being squeezed into a spot.

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone, recognising this Gu worm.

This was the Rank two Gu worm — Large Belly Frog.

Soon after, Kong Jing’s hands emitted traces of red steel primeval essence, and were absorbed by the frog.

Ribbit.

The Large Belly Frog screeched, opening its mouth to vomit out a steel spade.

The steel spade flew in the sky, turning large quickly. In the blink of an eye, it landed on the ground, becoming a large steel spade half the size of a person.

Ribbit, ribbit, ribbit......

It called for several times, throwing up a tool each time.

Eventually, the snowfield in front of everyone had five steel spades, and five wooden boxes. The wooden boxes all had two ropes for carrying.

Gu master feeding Gu worms was a large burden. Thus, Gu worms were limited in numbers. During the initial stages, it was hard to single-handedly deal with different environments, and with different intensity of troubles, Gu Masters thus often worked in groups.

In a small group, there was someone doing reconnaissance, someone for offence, someone in charge of defence, someone healing, and someone as logistics support.

The Gu Master who stood up, Kong Jing, was a logistics support Gu Master. He controlled this Large Belly Frog, which was a support Gu worm, where its belly had another space that could be used as storage space.

Of course, every Gu had its strengths and weaknesses.

The Large Belly Frog’s weakness was that not only was the storage space limited, every time it vomited an item, it had to croak once, and this was irritating. Especially when a Gu Master is hiding in the battlefield, if handled poorly, it would reveal one’s location.

Another thing was, the Large Belly Frog could not store Gu worms, and it was not immune to poison, unable to store poisonous objects.

After distributing the tools, each of the group members had a steel spade and a box in their hands.

"Let’s set off," Jiao San waved his hand, leading the party into the valley.

Fang Yuan held the steel spade and carried the wooden box, choosing another direction.

"He is after all a newbie, rushing in like that. Hehe."

"Is the permafrost decayed soil so easy to harvest? If he cannot differentiate it, he might get normal frozen earth, wasting his efforts."

"The truth is, it is really difficult to differentiate. The permafrost decayed soil’s colour is around the same as normal frozen earth, especially under the cover of all the accumulated snow, so newbies can only dig relying on their luck."

The three members seeing Fang Yuan’s backview laughed internally.

An hour later, they saw that Fang Yuan returned with an entire box of permafrost decayed soil, and were all stunned.

Including Jiao San, all their wooden boxes were only half-filled with permafrost decayed soil.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s wooden box, they were almost ashamed to show their results.

"It is all permafrost decayed soil!" A member observed carefully and was even more shocked.

"Fang Yuan, how did you gather so much frozen earth?" A female member could not hold in her curiosity and asked.

Fang Yuan’s brows raised, and the snowlight shone on his iris, showing a clear and transparent gaze.

He laughed lightly, "The academy elder said before, the permafrost decayed soil is a fertilizer created when the snow freezes the swamp. It has a tint of purple in the blackness, and is actually very smelly, but because it is frozen by the snow, it cannot be smelled. It is the Smelly Fart Fatworm’s food. At the same time it is also very fertile, often mixed in the soil to grow crops, fruits and vegetables. The clan sending out this mission, is probably because they want to use it in the underground cave and fertilize the moon orchid flowers."

His words caused the four to be frozen on the spot.

"These theories are obviously learnt in the academy. But theory and reality are very difficult to be linked. Has Fang Yuan collected permafrost decayed soil before?" The three members looked at each other in shock.

Gu Yue Jiao San’s gaze shone, saying, "Good job Fang Yuan."

As he praised, his usual warm and kind smile became a little forced.

Jiao San turned around, saying to the rest, "This way, our mission is completed. Everyone pass your spades and boxes to Kong Jing, and let’s return."

When they got back to the village, it was already afternoon.

The five walked out of the internal affairs hall, Jiao San distributing the six primeval stones they earned. He got two pieces, while the rest of the members got one.

The primeval stones were so easily earned, so the members all broke into a smile.

Fang Yuan kept his primeval stone stealthily.

Only in his heart did he think, "When a newcomer joins a small group, the clan would usually give a large reward for the mission as a form of supporting the newcomer. Collecting the permafrost decayed soil mission, the reward was at most two primeval stones, but because of me there were three times more. According to logic, I should have gotten more stones. If the snow sprinting was an authoritative display, then having us purposely collect the frozen soil alone was a sign of picking on me, and the distribution of primeval stones is suppression already."

One or two primeval was not a concern for Fang Yuan. He was only wondering strangely – he and Gu Yue Jiao San never had any interactions, so why was he suppressing him?

"Unless..." An inspiration struck Fang Yuan.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

I’m going to do up to Chapter 91 today! It’s pretty late now but I got most of it done, I only have issues with chapter 92’s translations so I’ll do that tomorrow, with 93 :D

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The five stood on the walkway.

Gu Yue Jiao San laughed kindly and said to Fang Yuan, "Little brother Fang Yuan, your performance really impressed all of us. It seems we did a correct thing inviting you to join us. You have just graduated from the academy, and might be unclear of some things. Let me introduce you to them."

"Firstly, the clan missions, each Gu Master must complete at least one a month. The more you complete and the more perfect it is, the higher your evaluation."

"Secondly, the missions are distributed by the internal affairs hall or the external affair hall, each Gu Master can only accept one. Once accepted, they must complete it."

"Thirdly, under special conditions, a Gu Master may choose to abandon a mission, but that will cause their evaluation to fall greatly. At the same time, Rank one Gu Masters have no rights to give up, and only Rank two Gu Masters do. But they can only abandon one mission a year."

"Fourth, the clan’s evaluation is very important. It concerns your future in the clan, and the higher your evaluation, the greater your future and the brighter it is."

Fang Yuan listened, nodding. These things were already memorized by him. Gu Yue Jiao San was right and did not misdirect him, but many key contents were not spoken.

"Alright, the permafrost decayed soil’s mission has just been completed. Next, I accepted a wild deer hunting mission. The danger is low, so it is suitable for you to practice." Jiao San said to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly in his heart, but said, "Thank you for your concern, group leader."

Gu Yue Kong Jing immediately followed up, "Little brother Fang Yuan, you should really properly thank the group leader. Although simple missions are easily completed, they have a small reward. The group leader’s actions are to take care of you."

The other two female Gu Masters also spoke, "Yeah, yeah, little brother Fang Yuan, action speaks louder than words. Why don’t you thank the group leader by treating him to lunch."

"Little brother Fang Yuan, you just left the academy, society is complicated. Human relationship is very important. If you don’t know anything, just ask us during lunch."

Gu Yue Jiao San laughed, purposely waving his hand, "Don’t put him in a spot, he just left the academy, he must be tight on primeval stones."

"How can that be! Besides, just being the first place in the year end exam gave him a hundred primeval stones as reward right?" A female Gu Master purposely said, and then showed an expression of envy, "I’m really envious of you, a hundred primeval stones is a huge sum even to us."

"Group leader, you’ve mistaken our little brother Fang Yuan. How can he be so stingy. Am I right, little brother Fang Yuan?" Gu Yue Kong Jing laughed heartily, as if he was very happy.

Another female Gu Master got nearer to Fang Yuan, as if they had a close relationship, saying, " Little brother Fang Yuan, a word of advice. You can choose not to suck up to us, but the group leader, you have to. You know, our group’s evaluation has a portion written by the group leader. If he says you’re outstanding, you’re outstanding. If he says you performed badly, it means you really performed badly."

"That’s right, that’s right. Evaluation is very important to us Gu Masters, we need at least an outstanding evaluation to be noticed by the higher-ups. In the future where we have sufficient achievements, we would be able to work for several years less!" Kong Jing immediately followed up.

Throughout the entire process, Gu Yue Jiao San was smiling and watching.

Finally he waved his hand with a kind expression and laughingly said, "Ah, don’t speak nonsense. I am always impartial when writing my evaluation, and will not be easily bribed by you. But don’t worry Fang Yuan, you are a newcomer, so now that you’re in our group, I will take good care of your evaluation."

If it were a normal teenager, they would’ve been led by the nose by these few people, feeling touched secretly. They are bullying a newcomer’s ignorance and naivety.

But Fang Yuan’s iris was calm as the sea.

Group leader being involved in the member’s evaluation, that was the truth. This is the clan’s system, giving the authority to the group leader, so that they can manage each small group.

But it is not as severe as these people said.

For the clan evaluation, the group leader’s evaluation is only a very small portion, and it is still mostly attributed to the clan’s internal affairs hall.

Or rather, even if the group leader had a great influence on it, so what?

Fang Yuan didn’t give a damn about the evaluation.

He had already decided – quickly raise his cultivation, reach Rank three, and then leave this place. He had never thought of staying in this clan for over a hundred years to slog his life away.

To these ignorant and lowly peasants, the evaluation was the most important thing. But to Fang Yuan, it was lower than dog shit!

Thus, their somewhat threatening tone was of no use to Fang Yuan.

"I understand what you all have said. I still have something on, so I’ll take my leave," Fang Yuan after being quiet for a while, said.

Eh?

At once, the four Gu Masters showed a shocked expression.

"What is the meaning of this? Did you not hear what we said earlier?" A female Gu Master stared with her eyes wide, screaming in her heart.

"Is your comprehension ability really okay?" Gu Yue Kong Jing at this moment, really wanted to grab Fang Yuan by the collar and ask him.

Jiao San’s mouth twitched.

Fang Yuan’s indifference caused their self-directed performance to look like a joke. It made the scheme that they set up become a laughingstock.

Seeing Fang Yuan turning around and walking away, the fury in his heart blazed on.

"Come on Fang Yuan, don’t leave so quickly, don’t listen to their nonsense." Jiao San controlled his temper and conjured a smile, quickly chasing up and blocking Fang Yuan, "You’re going to rent a house right? Let us go with you. I have some personal relations, I am more familiar with the rental situation."

"I am indeed going to rent a house, I can’t stay at the hostel anymore, do you have any ideas?" Fang Yuan raised his eyebrows, asking calmly.

"I know a few houses that are considerably cheap, and with good location." Jiao San smiled, leading the way.

...

"My house, fifteen primeval stones a month, no second price."

"Pfft, renting my house with eight primeval stones? In your dreams."

"You must pay a deposit, 25% deposit. Other vendors are doing this too."

"My house has good Feng Shui, and its quiet at night. More importantly, it is facing the clan leader’s pavilion, you know how good the location is. It is really cheap, only twenty-five primeval stones a month."

All the way until night time, Fang Yuan did not find a house to stay.

"Little brother Fang Yuan, you’re too stingy. The village is only so big, the prices are all like this."

"In my opinion, you should get the house near the clan leader’s pavilion, the second floor is very spacious and the scenery is nice. Little brother Fang Yuan, don’t be so thrifty, it is only twenty-five primeval stones. The reward that you got is enough for you to stay four months."

The two female Gu Masters continued to urge him on with ill intent.

Fang Yuan shook his head, "I do not have many primeval stones, I cannot be wasteful."

"Then rent an underground apartment, it’s cheaper." Gu Yue Kong Jing’s eyes shone with cold brilliance, suggesting.

Fang Yuan snorted in his heart, this Kong Jing has such a vile heart!

The village is already high in precipitation, and now that it is winter, the underground apartments would have poor airflow, and tenants would easily catch a cold. Even if there aren’t diseases, it would cause problems in the long term.

Seeing that Fang Yuan kept his silence, Jiao San said, "Actually the big hall’s first floor is good too. Co-staying with other people causes the rent to reduce as well.

Fang Yuan shook his head, "I want to stay alone, I do not like to stay with others."

Gu Yue Kong Jing snorted, saying unhappily, "You don’t want this, you don’t want that. I’m not trying to scold you, little brother Fang Yuan, but you’re too picky and expect too much. With such high standards, it is not realistic."

Fang Yuan listened, laughing coldly in his heart while thinking, "Even if they fulfil the criteria, I would not accept any house you recommend."

His act of pacifying them was just for the sake of being careful, finding out if there are any traps.

Just as Fang Yuan was about to leave, Mother Shen appeared.

"Young master Fang Yuan, I finally found you. The academy can no longer be stayed at, and the old master and his wife have already prepared a banquet, specifically asking me to invite you home. Staying at home is so much better, there is no need for you to go about renting houses outside," She urged.

Finally here......

Fang Yuan laughed coldly in his heart, this Mother Shen really found a good time. Finding him here at once, someone must have notified her!

Just as he had expected, the masterminds were his uncle and aunt!

And Jiao San was the chain that his uncle and aunt created to bind him.

Fang Yuan’s silence looked like hesitation.

"Fang Yuan, why don’t you stay at your uncle and aunt’s house, why make life difficult? Renting a house will spend a lot of primeval stones." Gu Yue Jiao San spoke in a ‘concerned’ manner at an appropriate juncture as he looked at Fang

Yuan, his eyes shining ominously.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the hall, the lights shone brightly.

On the round dining table, the wine was already cold, and the dishes were cool.

The brilliant red candle flickered and danced, projecting the shadows of Aunt and Uncle onto the wall.

The two figures’ shadow combined into one, and swayed gloomily with the candlelight.

In front of them, Mother Shen was kneeling.

Uncle broke the silence, "To think this Fang Yuan is dead bent on going against me. Sigh, I wanted to calm him down with nice words and keep him in the house first before finding a reason to chase him out of the house. To think that he did not fall for it! He has made up his mind, rejecting my invitation without a single way to negotiate! Not even taking a step into my house!"

Aunt gritted her teeth, her expression slightly flustered, "This scoundrel is already sixteen years old, so if he wants the family fortune now we cannot deny it to him. Years ago we obtained that family fortune and it was clearly recorded in the inner affairs hall. Now that we cannot deny it, what shall we do now?!"

"Leave first." Uncle waved at Mother Shen to withdraw, laughing coldly, "Don’t be anxious. Throughout the year, I have already been planning for this. First, to get back the assets, he needs to have Rank one middle stage cultivation. He already achieved this and is even at peak stage, and gotten number one in the exam, that is very impressive. Hehe..."

"But, to successfully obtain his family fortune, it is not so easy! Rank one middle stage cultivation is only a pre-condition. To split the assets, Fang Yuan has to apply for it, and the internal affairs hall has to approve it and send him a mission to test if he has the qualifications. This is to prevent the clan from splitting family assets nonsensically, causing internal strifes and weakening the clan."

Aunt was enlightened, "This means that, he has to complete the mission before he can get his parents’ inheritance."

"That’s right." Uncle laughed sinisterly, "But the internal affairs hall’s missions are sent to groups. The family asset mission will be the same. If Fang Yuan wants to complete it, he would have to rely on the group, he cannot do it alone. The family does this to make sure that the small groups stay united and increase their cohesiveness."

Aunt laughed loudly, "Husband, you’re too smart. Getting Jiao San to recruit Fang Yuan — this way, if Fang Yuan wants to accomplish the mission, he would need their strength. But Jiao San is on our side, so Fang Yuan can never accomplish this mission."

Uncle’s eyes shone smugly, "Hmph, even if he cannot get him into the group, I have other ways to deal with him. Not to mention completing the mission, even if he wants to apply for the splitting of the fortune and receive the mission, it might not be possible!"

...

Nightfall arrived and the snow stopped.

Fang Yuan walked on the streets. The bamboo houses along the way were all covered by a layer of white snow.

The snow that he stepped on emitted a light sound. The cold air entered his respiratory system, causing Fang Yuan’s brain to be extremely awake.

After rejecting Mother Shen, Fang Yuan disregarded Jiao San and the group’s advice and said goodbye to everyone, leaving by himself.

"So that’s it." He walked and thought, "Uncle and Aunt are trying to trap and delay me, causing me to lose the chance to take back my inheritance."

"After the new year, I would be sixteen years old and be qualified to split the assets. My parents are dead, and my brother has new parents. If I am successful, the entire inheritance is mine. But to take back the inheritance, there are two crucial steps, each being extremely important."

"The first is to apply for the mission at the internal affairs hall without any other missions at hand. The second is to complete the mission to earn the rights to inherit the asset."

"Jiao San is in cahoots with Uncle and Aunt. Leaving aside the second step, he’s already trying to trap me at the first step."

The clan rules state that Gu Masters can only be on one mission at a time. This is to prevent Gu Masters from hogging and causing negative competition in the clan.

Jiao San received missions consecutively. After finishing the permafrost decayed soil mission, he immediately accepted a new mission for catching wild deer.

The clan’s missions were all given to groups, that is to say, according to clan rules, Fang Yuan has to finish the deer capturing mission before applying for his asset splitting mission.

"But at that point, I believe Jiao San would just accept another new mission. As the leader, when accepting missions, he will always be a step ahead of me, causing me to be unable to accept my mission, thus always stopping me." Thinking of this, Fang Yuan’s eyes shone ominously.

These plots and schemes were irritating, like an invisible rope blocking Fang Yuan’s progress.

But Fang Yuan did not regret entering this group.

At the arena, he was backed into a corner. Jiao San’s invitation became a way for him to be free from the predicament.

If he did not enter the team, his uncle and aunt would have other ways to deal with him, this cannot be prevented and will be hard to defend against. But now that he is in the group, he can clearly see their schemes and easily counterattack.

"Solving this problem, I have my ways. The easiest way is to just eliminate Jiao San, or assassinate uncle and aunt, then no one would compete with me over the family assets. But this way is too risky, they are all Rank two Gu Masters and my cultivation is still too low. Even if I kill them I cannot get out of the troublesome aftermath. Unless there is a good chance for me to take advantage of... but these chances are usually by luck."

Fang Yuan could kill the servant Gao Wan and could kill old man Wang, but that was because they were mortals and servants, with life cheap as grass. Killing them was akin to killing a dog or pulling off weed, it was insignificant.

But assassinating Gu Masters is very troublesome.

Gu Masters were all Gu Yue clansmen, no matter which one dies, the punishment hall would investigate. Fang Yuan evaluated his own strength and knew there was too much risk in killing them now; he might even get killed. Even if he kills them, the punishment hall’s investigation is even more troublesome. His future actions would be spied on and they might even find out the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance.

"Attracting a much larger problem when eliminating a small problem, that is not what a wise person does. Oh? I’m here," Fang Yuan spoke lightly, stopping at a worn out bamboo building.

This bamboo building was torn and worn out, like an old man about to die, panting for his last breath in the cold harsh winter.

Seeing this bamboo building, Fang Yuan’s face showed a trace of reminiscence.

This was the room he rented in his previous life.

In his previous life, after being thrown out by his uncle and aunt, he had less than fifteen primeval stones left and had to sleep in the streets for a few days before finding this place.

This place was too worn out and had much lower rent than other places. In addition, while other places counted the rent by months, this place calculated it by days.

"I do not know about other places, whether or not they have uncle and aunt’s traps. But my previous life’s memories tell me that at least this place is safe." Fang Yuan rang on the door.

After half an hour, he established the renting terms and was brought to the second floor by the owner.

The floors were old, emitting dangerous and concerning sounds when stepped on.

The room had only one bed, and a blanket. The blanket had many patches but was still riddled with some holes, and the yellow cotton wadding leaked out from inside.

The head of the bed had an oil lamp. The landlord left after lighting the lamp.

Fang Yuan did not sleep, but sat on the bed and started cultivating.

As his primeval sea raged on in the aperture, every drop of primeval essence was black green.

The aperture’s four walls were a white crystal colour, in a translucent state.

Rank one peak stage.

Suddenly, the green bronze primeval sea started to have currents, like wild beasts raging and suiciding towards the four aperture walls.

Bam bam bam...

The huge waves crashed onto the aperture walls, causing the little ripples to break into small droplets before dissipating.

After a while, the 44% primeval essence sea was quickly expended, with large amounts of primeval essence used up.

On the sturdy aperture walls, there was lines of cracks.

But just cracks were not enough.

Fang Yuan wanted to break through Rank one peak stage and reach Rank two, thus he needed to break this aperture wall completely, evolving through its destruction!

Black green primeval essence continued to attack the crystal wall, and the cracks increased, forming a giant piece. At some places, the cracks were even deeper, forming very evident lines.

As he used up the primeval essence, he did not continue to use primeval essence to attack, and the crystal walls started to heal, causing the cracks to vanish.

Fang Yuan was not surprised, collecting his spirits and opening his eyes.

The oil lamp had gone out already. There was not much oil anyway.

The room was dark, with only the window providing a little bit of light through the crack.

The room had no firepit and was not warm. Fang Yuan had sat on the bed for a long time without moving, and felt that the chilliness had intensified.

His dark iris fused with the darkness.

"To breakthrough Jiao San’s lock, there is an easier and safer method. That is to advance to Rank two! Rank one Gu masters have no right to give up on missions, but Rank 2 Gu masters can do it once a year. If I advance to Rank two, I can give up on my mission and apply for the asset splitting."

"But to breakthrough to Rank two, it is not an easy task." Thinking of this, Fang Yuan sighed. Coming down from his bed, he strolled around in the tiny room.

From initial stage to middle stage, middle stage to upper stage, these are all small realms. From Rank one peak stage to Rank two initial stage, that is breaking through a large realm. Between these two cases there was an extremely different difficulty.

Simply put, to break the crystal wall, it needed explosive strength, forming a strong impact in a short time to smash the wall.

But Fang Yuan only had C grade talent, and the primeval sea is only at 44%. If he used his entire force to attack the wall, his primeval essence would be used up immediately.

Just like earlier, after his primeval essence was exhausted, he would no longer have the strength to continue. And the wall had recovery ability, so before long, it would heal up. Whatever Fang Yuan did earlier would have been wasted.

"Breaking the wall and reaching Rank two without special situations, one needs 55% black green primeval essence. But my talent is limited, having only 44%, thus people say that talent is the key in a Gu Master’s cultivation!"

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan slowed in his steps.

Unknowingly, he had moved to the window, thus he opened the windows casually.

Every gust of wind shook the bamboo lattice window, and when opened the snow-covered mountain greets one’s eye. (1)

Under the moonlight, the snow was like white jade, spreading out and letting the world resemble a crystal palace before one’s eyes, untainted by dust.

The snowlight shone onto Fang Yuan’s youthful features. His expression was peaceful and calm, his brow smooth, his pair of orbs looking like the ancient spring underneath the moon.

As the cold winds blew onto his face, the young man laughed, "It is merely a small bit of wind frost(2)."

(1) This is a line from a poem.

(2) Just a little wind frost: non-literal sense refers to hardship/obstacles. A pun to the obstacles that he is facing.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

It was a night without sleep, and once day came, Fang Yuan stepped out of the room and started to purchase stuff wantonly.

The room was poorly furnished and the blankets were torn. If he lived there for long, the chill would enter his body and cause him to get sick.

Fang Yuan’s primeval stones were already half-used up, but he still had to purchase the necessary equipment. He could not scrimp on these things.

Firstly was a blanket, he had to get a large blanket stuffed with cotton, or at least two. He also needed bed sheets and a mattress.

He needed another oil lamp so that it could illuminate the room, and he needed at least two pots of lamp oil.

Thinking about it, although the room was small, it could still hold a table and a chair, thus he bought those as well.

Most importantly, it was a stove.

In the winter, if he did not have a stove to warm himself when sleeping in the room, he would still get shocked awake by the cold.

Other than these, he also bought some dry rations and some water to last around seven days’ worth.

The winter sun slowly rose, giving out languid rays of light.

Gu Yue Jiao San and the other Gu Masters stood at the North door of the village, waiting anxiously.

"Something’s not right. Last night we agreed to meet at this time and place. But it has already been fifteen minutes, and this Fang Yuan still hasn’t shown up?"

A female Gu Master asked.

"Calm down and just wait. It is inevitable that a newcomer is late," Jiao Sao laughed. He had been fretting over not having any reasons to fault Fang Yuan with, but to think he faltered on the second day.

"Never mind that we are waiting. Even the group leader has to wait for him, this lad thinks too much of himself!" Gu Yue Kong Jing complained, his tone indignant.

Half an hour later, Fang Yuan was still nowhere to be found.

Jiao San’s face was darker than night.

"This scumbag, did he remember the wrong location? We said clearly that we are meeting at the northern door," Kong Jing said suspiciously.

"I’ll wait here, you guys go look around the different doors," Jiao San instructed, and the three obliged.

Fifteen minutes later, they returned with no fruit.

"Did this Fang Yuan see through our ploy and left the group directly?" A female Gu Master asked.

"You think too highly of him. Even if he is the first place in the year end exam, he is still a young newbie. His age is apparent." Kong Jing said.

Jiao San’s face was grim, "It is secondary to whether he has seen through us. The crucial thing is to find him now. I am afraid that he has left us behind and is trying to breakthrough to Rank two on his own. Once he reaches Rank two, he can abandon this mission and apply for the splitting of assets from the internal affairs hall. Find him, go and find him! The village is only so big and there are only that many rental houses, we must find him and not give him the time to breakthrough to Rank two!"

"Yes!"

......

In the room, Fang Yuan sat on the bed.

In front of him were a few money bags, and inside them was all primeval stones.

"Not enough primeval stones," Fang Yuan sighed, his expression grim.

Primeval stones are the driving force behind a Gu Master’s advancement, and if they are lacking, the Gu Masters would need to rely on their own recovery speed for primeval essence, which would greatly reduce their cultivation speed. At the same time, without sufficient food, the Gu worms would die of hunger.

Fang Yuan’s primeval stones, during his time at the academy, it had reached the peak of being slightly above a thousand. But it could not stand up to the expenditure over time.

A same stage Gu Master up till now, only has three Gu worms.

But Fang Yuan, after getting number one in the year end exam, entered the Gu hall and chose another Little Light Gu for free.

He must choose, for if he gave up, it would invite suspicion.

Like this, he had seven Gu worms on hand!

Undeniably, this was a huge financial burden.

"If this continues, I can only hold out for two months. I must get back my family assets, that is the greatest financial support. But to get them back, the first step is to advance to Rank two." Fang Yuan’s gaze was dark.

To Fang Yuan, advancing to Rank two was not easy.

For a Gu Master’s cultivation, first was resources, second was talent. Without talent, the path of cultivation would be difficult and their accomplishments in the future would be lower.

Talent is split according to D, C, B and A grade.

But this is only a rough distribution.

In fact, every grade has another specific differentiation.

Taking a C grade for example — the primeval essence storage in the aperture would be around 40-59%.

Fang Yuan’s primeval essence was 44%, so in the C grade range, he was only middle-lower class.

Rushing to Rank two, he needed at least 55% black green primeval essence. To an A and B grade Gu Master, this was not difficult, and to the 55-59% C grade Gu Masters, they could pass as well.

Thus, for C grade Gu Masters, once they reach a certain accumulation, most of them would advance to Rank two. Only very few can attain Rank three.

Thus, the talent could determine most people’s achievements in their lives. Fang Yuan being given the cold shoulder, he could not blame the people for being biased.

"Although my C grade talent is only 44%, if I want to break the wall and reach a new height, attaining Rank two, it is still not impossible. The easiest way is to find a talent raising Gu worm. Secondary, I can get a support-type Gu like the Liquor worm, and that can help to break the barrier as well. Lastly, I can attain the help of a higher-ranking Gu Master, but using external primeval essence has a huge backlash, unless I can get the Cleansing Gu in future to eliminate the external presence."

Fang Yuan thought about it while using both hands to take out a primeval stone, using his fingers to rub the smooth surface of the stone.

"But the above methods are not recommended for me. I do not have any friendly Gu Master to help, and even if I do I will not let my aperture be at their mercy. Gu worms like the Liquor worm are too rare, even getting the Liquor worm was my extreme luck. As for talent raising Gu worm, I got it in my previous life and attained Rank six cultivation, and I also know where to find them, but I cannot go to those places now with my current cultivation. Even if I get them, I cannot keep them, or even use them."

"But other than these methods, there is a final most stupid method. Using primeval stones to force it!" Thinking so, Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed as he gripped the primeval stone tightly.

Gu Master cultivation, first was resources, second was talent.

Without sufficient talent, one can compensate using resources to a degree.

"My primeval essence is only 44%, I do not have enough to break the aperture walls. But if I absorb primeval essence while attacking the walls, I can hold on much longer, and in about four to five days, I would be able to smash the walls!"

Making up his mind, Fang Yuan opened his eyes, his heart sinking into his aperture.

Green copper primeval sea raged on as the waves crashed into the aperture walls.

But this time, to prevent his primeval essence from drying up and becoming insufficient to maintain the cracks and causing the aperture to recover, Fang Yuan purposely slowed the attacking speed.

This way, the green bronze primeval essence expenditure would be greatly reduced, but the crack formation would also slow down. Despite so, Fang Yuan continued to absorb the natural essence of the primeval stones.

Primeval essence recovery has to be slightly above the crack recovery speed. This way, even if it is slow, showing less than 1% progress, there would be hope as time passes.

The only thing about this method would be that other than eating and shitting, Fang Yuan had to cultivate non-stop. The more time he wasted, the more primeval stones would go down the drain and the more his hard work would squander.

He could stop for a maximum of fifteen minutes, and after that if there isn’t any primeval essence to continue attacking, the aperture would fully recover.

Thus, once the attack began, he had to persevere until he succeeded, and cannot be disturbed. Once he stopped for too long, he would have to restart the process.

Fang Yuan did not have so many primeval stones on hand to do it multiple times.

Time flies when cultivating, and in the blink of an eye, the sun set.

Under the setting sun, Jiao San with a cold expression said, "After finding for a day, you still haven’t found him?"

"No, group leader." Kong Jing wiped the sweat off his forehead and said, "That lad, he did not go to any of the houses we recommended, we have no idea where he is hiding."

"Hmph! Continue searching tomorrow, we have to find him. Remember to search the inn as well, I do not believe that we cannot find him. The village is only so big, no matter where he is hiding, there has to be a trace!" Jiao San walked away in fury.

Until the afternoon of the second day, their search finally bore fruit.

A female Gu Master walked to Jiao San excitedly, reporting, "Found him, found him! Fang Yuan is at a worn-out bamboo building, and has rented the second floor. According to the owner’s description, it should be him."

"Hmph, as I expected, he really hid himself and is trying to breakthrough to Rank two." Jiao San laughed sinisterly, "Let’s go and make ourselves guests in his room and show him some concern. He is a newcomer after all."

"Hehehe......" The others also started smirking.

The four immediately came to Fang Yuan’s residence.

There was a paper on the door.

Jiao San took it down and read it. It was Fang Yuan’s handwriting, saying that he needed to go into closed door cultivation for a few days and will not leave, as he would be attempting to breakthrough to Rank two. If others saw it, they should not disturb him. If Jiao San saw it, it was a ‘request of absence’ application.

Jiao San snorted, throwing the paper away.

How can I let you advance to Rank two so successfully?

He laughed coldly, knocking on the door.

Knock knock knock.

"Little brother Fang Yuan, are you here?" He purposely said loudly, "We are here to see you, how could you not tell us about your closed door cultivation, seriously."

There was no reply.

Knock knock knock.

Jiao San knocked loudly.

"Little brother Fang Yuan, it’s not that I want to nag at you. But you are making decisions on your own. Now that you are our group member, you should listen to instructions and obey orders, moving together. We have already accepted the wild deer hunting mission, this is specifically for you to train, so why don’t you stop first and complete the mission with us, then cultivate," Jiao San’s eyes squinted as he said in a gentle tone, although his expression was dark.

There was still no reply.

JIao San suddenly raised his voice, "Little brother Fang Yuan, why are you not replying, did something happen to you? It is not so easy breaking through to Rank two, you can ask us for experience. Fang Yuan! Did you hear me, oh no, could it be that you fainted?"

Jiao San talked to himself, smirking coldly but his voice was full of concern and anxiety.

The other three members observed the show.

Kong Jing interrupted at an appropriate timing, "Leader, you might be right, Fang Yuan hasn’t responded after so long, let’s go in and save him!"

"Fang Yuan! Fang Yuan, quickly open the door. We’re really worried if you keep silent. If you don’t open the door, we will break in. You are our newest member, we cannot let you be in danger!" Jiao San shouted loudly.

Still, there was no reply.

Jiao San’s mouth curled, indicating to Kong Jing.

Kong Jing acknowledged and raised his foot.

With a loud BAM sound, the entire door was sent flying, crashing onto the bed!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Alright, it’s 4.30AM now. I’ll continue tomorrow, I want to get ch93 done tomorrow as well since tomorrow’s the supposed day for ch93.

Also, thank you for all your overwhelming support and responses throughout these chapters and all, it really makes me happy to read them and feel more motivated ^_^)/ Many thanks for the overwhelming responses for the novel title too! Since Reverend Insanity is by far the most popular choice, I have talked with my QI manager person in hopes to get it changed, and it seems that it will be approved! Yay! (hopefully it actually does go through... but if it does, it will take a bitsy bit of time, because from what I gather they need to ask the designer to change the book cover title and stuff...)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Hang in there Fang Yuan, we’re coming to help you!" Jiao San shouted with a concerned expression, taking huge steps into the room.

But the next moment, he was dumbfounded.

The room was empty, Fang Yuan was not inside.

The four became silent.

"How can this be, where is he?" Jiao Sao broke the silence, saying frustratingly.

He ‘performed’ outside the room for such a long time, but it turned out to be a one man performance as Fang Yuan was never inside.

The three looked at each other, not expecting such a result.

"This is weird, if Fang Yuan isn’t here, why would he paste that paper on the door?" Kong Jing said carefully.

"Get the landlord here now!" Jiao Sao raised his foot and sent the door flying.

"You looking for me? Hmph, I was just about to find you. Coming to my house and raising a huge ruckus, even breaking down my door. Young man, you sure are capable." The landlord was an old man, but his tone was very firm.

Being able to own additional houses in the Gu Yue village and renting it out, he was obviously a Gu Master.

A Gu Master’s strength and status supersedes a mortal. Mortals do not dare to operate such a business. In fact, they do not own property.

The entire village’s property is owned by the Gu Yue clan. The mortals who live here are the farmers and servants of the clan.

"Senior, we are here to find a young man, he is our group member." Facing the landlord, Jiao San controlled his temper.

An old Gu Master like the landlord, even if he is old and no longer striving for his career, he still has strong relationships and connections. Even if he is retired his ability is still not to be underestimated.

Those without human relationships and trump cards, how would they dare to do business?

This is not a peaceful era, it is full of violence and plunder.

The landlord shook his head, his tone rigid, "I do not care about my tenant’s whereabouts, but I do know that you broke my door. You need to compensate me."

"Hehe, this is our fault, it is only right that we compensate you," Jiao Sao laughed dryly. Although he was furious inside, he still forced himself to compensate some primeval stones and even gave some extra.

The landlord’s expression turned slightly better, "If the young man who rented this room is who you are finding, then I must tell you that he has not turned in for a day. After paying a month’s rent, he bought a huge amount of things yesterday and asked me which place sold coal cheaply. I told him that there was no need to buy coal, as there is a valley outside the village towards the north. A mine is situated there where he can excavate the coal. After thanking me, he left and never returned."

"So that’s it." Jiao San looked at the decorations in the room.

Indeed, the mattress and bedding was new. The table and chairs were old goods bought by Fang Yuan that were seemingly firm.

The stove was empty, it indeed did not have coal.

Jiao San breathed out slowly, being at ease.

"It seems Fang Yuan was delayed by excavating coal. Nevermind, let’s come again tomorrow." He walked out of the room first.

But on the third day, Fang Yuan still did not show up.

Jiao San and the others stood outside the room, hesitant.

"Digging for coal, it does not need so much time. Fang Yuan wants to do closed door cultivation so maybe he dug more. But it’s been so long, could something have had happened to him while he was excavating?" Kong Jing conjured.

Jiao San nodded unnoticably, pointing towards the bed and stove, "This lad is very stingy. He paid a month’s rent all of a sudden and even bought so many things, and especially pasting that paper on the wall, he probably wanted to cultivate here. Too bad he was unlucky. These days the wolf hordes have gotten bigger, and the wild beasts around the village have gotten more active. He might have encountered some wild beasts."

"Leader is wise!" The two female Gu Masters said at the same time, flattering him.

Jiao San laughed while raising his head, "Hahaha, I was still fretting over how to deal with him. Though we have that deer catching mission, let’s not rush out to do it. If we meet him in the wilds, we are forced to save him, right?"

"Hehehe." The other three members started laughing.

Day four.

In the aperture, waves of black green primeval essence hit against the crystal walls relentlessly.

The translucent white crystal wall was already full of cracks, crisscrossing each other.

This is Fang Yuan’s result after working hard non-stop for three days and three nights. At most, when he really could not take it anymore, he would quickly take a meal and settle his bowels.

These days, Fang Yuan had purposely slowed the wave crashing process, and at the same time he drew more primeval essence from his primeval stones. Thus, after such a long time, the green copper primeval sea had only dropped from the 44% limit to around 20%.

As time passed, when there was only about 13% primeval essence left, the wall could no longer hold up, and had reached its limit.

Crack crack...

The originally sturdy crystal wall broke into pieces, and the fragments fell into the primeval sea, causing ripples and waves. After that, it turned into white dots and vanished into thin air.

What replaced the crystal wall, was a brand new white light wall.

This was the Rank two light wall. Although there was not much difference and it still emitted white light, it was much more glimmering that the Rank one light wall.

At the same time, traces of red primeval essence were produced in the sea and it mixed around with the black green primeval sea in the aperture.

This was the Rank two initial stage red steel primeval essence!

"Finally I did it, I broke through to Rank two!" Fang Yuan opened his eyes abruptly, the room immediately brightening up.

But a second later, a strong wave of nausea hit him.

"I went through four days and three nights of non-stop cultivating, it is too intense and my body is going to collapse soon." Fang Yuan laughed bitterly, slowly lying down. "My cultivation was not disturbed at all, it seems that my set up at the rental house had worked. It was worth spending this sum, next I shall rest well for the night and return to the village tomorrow."

Thinking of this, intense sleepiness assaulted him.

Fang Yuan forced his eyes to stay open and used his intense will to cover himself with the blanket.

After closing his eyes, in a few seconds, he fell soundly asleep.

The cultivation earlier had used up most of his spirit.

He slept until the afternoon of the second day.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes, feeling his spirit recovering to around half, but he was still feeling weakness in his body.

He opened the door, walking out of the room for the first time in five days.

This attracted a person.

This person had slim long eyes with a thin body — it was Jiang Ya’s brother Jiang He.

Seeing Fang Yuan, he exhaled in relief, saying, "You’re finally out! Hmph, I would have broken into the room if you still did not come out after the next few days. After all if you die here, I’d be held responsible."

Fang Yuan laughed but did not say anything.

The winter sunlight broke through the window, shining onto his face, amplifying the trace of pale white weakness on his features.

Five days ago, he purposely asked the landlord and gave Jiao San the clues of his coal story. After that he left the Gu Yue village and went to the hamlet at the mountain foot.

Because of old man Wang previously, Jiang He was half an alliance mate of his. Using this relationship, Fang Yuan stayed a few days in the village and advanced to Rank two without any interruption.

Of course, the rock crack secret cave was much more elusive than Jiang He’s place, but it was not completely safe. Fang Yuan had to consider the possibility of Jiao San and the others relentlessly finding him, and might find the rock crack secret cave.

Although chances were slim, if the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance was found out, Fang Yuan’s life would be in danger.

Fang Yuan was a very cautious person, and he naturally would not take such risks.

At the same time, it was safer at Jiang He’s place. Even if they had a shared secret, Jiang He would not kill him to silence him.

The risks and troubles of killing a Gu Master was too great. Without sufficient benefits, Jiang He had no motivation to do it. In fact, to preserve the secret, Jiang He would even have to worry about Fang Yuan’s safety.

After all, if the clan’s punishment hall investigates Fang Yuan’s death, they might find out about old man Wang’s secret.

Seeing Fang Yuan safe, Jiang He was really relieved.

But quickly, he felt the aura of Fang Yuan and his expression changed, "To think that you really succeeded, reaching Rank two in one go!"

He was shocked in his heart. Five days ago when Fang Yuan approached him and stated his intentions, he was actually feeling disdainful in his heart.

Absorbing the primeval essence from the primeval stones and breaking through to Rank two, this kind of multitasking method was very draining on the spirit. Normally speaking, Gu Masters needed a very strong will, patience and years of cultivating experience.

Only with the experience, a Gu Master could treat the extraction of primeval essence from the stones as an instinct. At the same time, manipulating the primeval sea skillfully and causing the impact to be controlled at a degree, and it had to be perfectly calculated, just enough to match the recovery rate of the primeval essence so that the process could be sustained.

In Jiang He’s opinion, Fang Yuan had no chance of success. But to think, he did it in one go.

Fang Yuan laughed indifferently, "I was lucky. I plan to return to the village today, but before that, it would be nice if I can have a meal."

"Hehehe, little brother Fang Yuan, since you’re here, of course I’m taking care of your meals." Jiang He patted his chest, his attitude even more friendly than before.

Although he did not think well of Fang Yuan’s future, but now that he has advanced to Rank two, it meant that he had gone through a difficult hurdle and has the qualifications to be on par with him now.

After a scrumptious meal, Jiang He brought Fang Yuan to the entrance of the small village personally.

"Little brother Fang Yuan, be careful this time. Recently the wolf nest area has gotten slightly fiercer, causing the wild beasts to become more active. Eh, it is snowing." Jiang He paused, then continued, "My opinion is, don’t go now. How about you stay here for another night?"

After Fang Yuan reached Rank two, he became really friendly.

But Fang Yuan was insistent on leaving, thus saying goodbye to Jiang He.

The snowflakes fell calmly, just like pure white fur that was floating down slowly.

The light of the setting sun turned the snow into a golden yellow.

Flake by flake, the snow drifted onto Fang Yuan’s head and shoulders.

In the far distance, the Gu Yue village stood upright over the mountain waist, watching over quietly.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Here comes the promised two chapters of today~ Chapter 92 and 93!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Run faster, don’t fall behind!"

"The clansmen in front are fighting a bloody battle, they are waiting for our backup."

"Follow closely, or you will easily lose your direction in the midst of battle at night. Newcomers better pay special attention!"

On the way back to the village, there would be a five-man group from time to time running hurriedly past Fang Yuan’s side.

"Did something happen?" He had not walked for more than five hundred meters when Fang Yuan saw the thirteenth group.

He could not help but contemplate, but to be quite honest, with five hundred years’ worth of memories it was just too superfluous and messy. Mentioning this, although Fang Yuan was reborn, he had never given up any of his old memories.

Yet, much of his memories were enshrouded in a layer of thick fog, and if he tried to retrieve them by force, he would only get lost in the fog, getting more losses than benefits.

Only a few deep and powerful memories that were like sparkling and translucent pearls ran through his previous life’s five hundred years like a connected thread.

It was evident that what was happening right now, was in fact not in any of these pearls.

The life of his in the Gu Yue Village was just the beginning of the preceding period, it was just way too long ago. Besides...

"There’s a possibility that this never happened in my previous life, but because of my change, a butterfly effect happened and caused changes to the surroundings."

Just like that, he walked while pondering. Subconsciously, Fang Yuan reached the Northern gate of the village.

By chance, there was another group about to set off.

"Eh?" On seeing Fang Yuan, only one person from this group stopped in his tracks. "Fang Yuan, why are you still here?"

"What’s wrong?" Fang Yuan raised his eyes and looked at this person. It was no other than his fellow schoolmate, Gu Yue Chi Cheng.

Chi Cheng immediately frowned and said, "Oh geez, you still don’t know yet? There’s been a small scale beast tide that formed near the village. If we let it be, it will slowly become a big scale beast tide. When that happens the villages at the foot of the mountain will be crushed. Without those lowly mortals and slaves, we’d also be in a difficult position sometimes."

"Oh, so it’s like this?" Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed.

Being reminded like this, he was able to remember that such a thing did happen in his memories.

In this world, it was hard for humanity to survive. Every few years a beast tide would happen. Humans need resources and living space. This is no different from wild beasts and insects, they also needed such things!

To explain the beast tide as a war between wild beasts and humanity, perhaps this will be easier to understand.

Taking Qing Mao Mountain for example, every three years there would be a large scale wolf tide that attacks each of the big mountain villages.

"According to my calculations, the real outburst of the wolf tide will happen next year. However, this small scale beast tide, is a subsidiary of that. The wolf group will continue growing stronger and bigger, and this will cause the other beast groups around the area to lose their living space. As this effect accumulates, when it reaches the maximum limit, it will cause the migration of beast groups. Migrating beast groups will naturally influence other beast groups."

"Under such an intertwined influence, there is a chance that the influence would be expanded and cause all sorts of beast groups to relocate, causing the beast tide to be formed from this matter. If this problem is not controlled in time, the tide would only get bigger. Although it is still unable to endanger the existence of the Gu Yue village, if we leave it alone, the village’s power would be greatly reduced."

"Wait! If this is the case... Heh heh heh heh." There was a sudden flash in his eyes, but Fang Yuan promptly cast his gaze down, hiding away the change in his eyes.

Seeing that Fang Yuan had not said anything, Chi Cheng continued to speak. "At the present time, the internal affairs hall and external affairs hall have both already given out the order to mobilize, they proclaimed this as an urgent mission. Fang Yuan, don’t you think of goofing off. Your group has already left in the morning, you must also go. But..."

As he spoke up to this point, Chi Cheng purposely dragged out his intonation, "Danger lurks everywhere during a beast wave. All kinds of wild beasts roam about, and most of all a battle in the night is way more dangerous than the day. You’re just a small little Rank one Gu Master, unlike a Rank two like me, you should be careful. Heh heh heh!"

As he said this, he purposely held his head high and puffed his chest out, stroking his own belt, his expression joyfully satisfied and proud.

His belt was no longer the green coloured Rank one belt, but a Rank two Gu Master’s red coloured belt. At the same time on top of the metal plate on the belt, there was a ‘2’ word.

It was thanks to his grandfather Gu Yue Chi Lian’s help that he ascended to Rank two not long ago.

"I just heard about this news, but since this is the case." Fang Yuan suddenly smiled and said, "Then I’ll follow you guys and set out together. Once on the front lines I’ll leave the team and return to mine."

"What? Urgh, who wants to bring you!" Chi Cheng folded his arms, his mouth twitching disdainfully.

Fang Yuan’s tone was distant. "The clan rule states: Gu Masters that are left behind must merge into the closest group to their location, they have an obligation to continue fighting. Chi Cheng, you don’t even know this point?"

"You!" Chi Cheng glared, just about to flare up.

"Indeed, this is the case," Chi Shan who had been watching quietly finally spoke.

His body stature was close to two meters tall, and his figure was powerful and strong. His upper body was bare, the muscles hard and tough like metal. His entire body was covered in fiery red skin that seemed to faintly emit hot air.

Undoubtedly, he was the leader of this group.

Seeing him speak, even Chi Cheng who was the Chi faction’s inheritor, kept his mouth shut.

Chi Shan expressionlessly looked at Fang Yuan, continuing, "Let us depart, you keep up."

His voice was low and deep, his words short and simple. There was an aura of him that caused people to hardly question him.

Fang Yuan shrugged nonchalantly, taking it as agreeing.

Chi Cheng laughed coldly, his gaze harboring malicious intentions as he looked at Fang Yuan, speaking in an emphasized, peculiar tone, "Then you had better keep up!"

Fang Yuan did not reply to him.

"Hmph, why do we have to drag him around. Just a Rank one Gu Master." Chi Cheng mumbled to himself angrily, but since he was hindered by Chi Shan’s authority, he did not dare act impudent.

At once, a group of six people set out from the entrance, following the mountain road and running down the slope.

Gu Yue Chi Shan took the lead. He may be big-sized, but his speed was also not slow. Besides him and Chi Cheng, there were also two men and one female, their facial expressions indifferent.

As they ran, Chi Shan’s group started to display the graceful bearing of being one of the three strongest groups.

Each of them had rhythmic breathing, their footsteps fast and easy. Only Chi Cheng seemed to be in a difficult situation, but he would use his Scarlet Pill Cricket Gu from time to time, catching up reluctantly. Yet it could also be seen that he had received good teaching, for although he often staggered along the way, at least he never fell down.

When they reached the mountain foot, with one hand gesture from Chi Shan, the group swiftly stopped in their tracks.

Huff huff...

Chi Cheng had fallen behind by three hundred meters, and he was the last to catch up. His face was pale and he panted heavily, his gaze inconceivable as he looked at Fang Yuan.

During the journey Fang Yuan had always been following tightly behind, and up till now his breathing was only slightly heavy. He did not look the least bit like a newcomer who just graduated.

"Chi Cheng, remember, regulate your physical strength," Chi Shan looked back and advised Chi Cheng. Then he swept his gaze past Fang Yuan, his eyes showing a hint of praise.

The looks that the other few group members gave towards Fang Yuan had also softened a little.

"We will be nearing the beast tide down there. Chi Cheng and Fang Yuan, come towards the middle of the team." Chi Shan looked at the pitch-black mountain forest before him as he spoke.

This sentence let Fang Yuan reevaluate Chi Shan.

This huge boulder of a man sure had tolerance. The middle of a group is often the safest spot. Although Fang Yuan was not a person of the Mo bloodline, Chi Shan still maintained the manner of protecting a newcomer. To compare him to the sickly snake Jiao San, the latter would immediately pale in comparison.

The sky had already become completely dark, and the black clouds were in layers, causing the accumulated snow to also become dark and gloomy.

Chi Shan’s group had already changed their group formation. Their speed dropped greatly as they ran slowly through the complicated terrain of the mountain forest.

Fang Yuan and Chi Cheng were in the middle part of the group, where on the left side was the huge Chi Shan, while the right side was an old man. Behind them was a young woman with a head of watery blue-coloured long hair.

And in front of them was a male Gu Master called Chi She.

He was the reconnaissance Gu Master of this group, and he gave out hissing noises. From time to time he would stick his tongue out into the air.

Right now his tongue had a small divide in between, becoming the bright red forked tongue of a snake. As they entered deeper into the mountain forest, their surroundings started to show wild beasts violently running about wildly.

Suddenly Chi She opened his mouth and spoke, "Before us, three medium-sized animals have appeared. Suspected to be wild deer."

"Drive it away." Chi Shan’s expression was unchanging as he immediately gave the order.

The six-manned group did not change their direction; they continued pursuing forward. Three wild deer appeared before them, quickly changing their direction and dispersing.

Not long after, Chi She’s expression changed. "A group of medium-sized creatures. Suspected to be turtleback apes."

"Shift," Chi Shan said.

The small group immediately broke to the left side, bypassing this group of troublesome apes.

This was the benefit of having a reconnaissance Gu Master, he was able to anticipate and inform earlier, letting them make accurate decisions from it.

"Chi She is probably using the Snake Tongue Gu. This Rank two Gu worm can sense heat temperatures. But it has three very obvious flaws — firstly, the perception radius is small, secondly it is easily interfered with. Thirdly it cannot detect cold-blooded creatures. Yet no matter what, it is better than not having any detection. I have reached Rank two now, and in future to survive in the wild, I will also need a detection-type of Gu," Fang Yuan thought.

Suddenly Chi She urgently spoke, "A middle-sized creature, suspected to be a white tiger. It’s found us and is quickly approaching!"

"Engage." Chi Shang’s tone was calm and collected.

Roar!

A fierce tiger jumped out from the thicket in front of them, and the group met it head-on. Without Chi She’s warning in advance, perhaps they would be caught unprepared.

But right now, the group had long anticipated.

Firstly, the old Gu Master on the right suddenly drummed up his cheeks and then spit out a white coloured, viscous substance.

The substance abruptly expanded in mid-air, becoming a huge spider net. It used its strong viscosity and trapped the white tiger full in the face.

The white tiger struggled fiercely in the net, and Chi Shan immediately stepped forward and brandished his fist, pounding onto the tiger’s head.

His fist had a golden luster flashing through, and with a bang, the tiger’s head was smashed into pieces. The white tiger died in one breath.

The group did not stop to stay behind, but instead walked over the tiger’s body and continued forward. Chi She took Chi Shan’s place again and ran in front, taking the lead.

Through the entire process it was like moving clouds and flowing water. All the group members displayed mutual understanding.

"That entire process did not take more than three seconds. If it was me right now who was taking on that tiger alone, I would need at least five minutes to contend with." Fang Yuan’s gaze was flashing.

These Gu Masters were also Rank two like him, but the main disparity was still Gu worms.

They all used Rank two Gu worms, and this enabled them to bring out the best in each other. However, all the Gu in Fang Yuan’s hands were still Rank one.

Gu Master, Gu Master, the word Gu is before the word Master, signifying that Gu worms have a huge impact on a Gu Master’s fighting power. (1) "Although I have advanced to Rank two, I still need to have Rank two Gu to be able to display the fighting power of a Rank two Gu Master. However right now I do not have many primeval stones on me, I have used up a huge portion from breaking into Rank two. Refining two Gu worms together will also use up a considerable amount of primeval stones."

As Fang Yuan thought of this, Chi She who was in front of him suddenly said, "I found the sickly snake’s group."

(1) The Chinese like to repeat things sometimes when emphasizing something. Gu Master, Gu Master... Gu and Master! Gu is before Master, Gu is so important.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

[Random tip of the day: Chi She is pronounced as Chee Sher.] See you guys during weekends or something for the remaining chapters of the week then~ ⊂(・ ・̫)⊃

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Found the sickly snake group in front, they are currently contesting with a large-sized wild beast." Only half a second later, Chi She said again, this time more specific.

"What’s the situation?" Chi Shan frowned.

"There’s no mistake," Chi She’s snake tongue continued to stretch and shrink, "Jiao San’s red lava python is the only one in the entire village, and now they are fighting against... wild boar king!"

Everyone’s expression changed.

"Wild boar king... If I want to combine Gu worms, I require the wild boar’s tusks. Undoubtedly, the wild boar king’s tusks are the most suitable." Fang Yuan’s heart stirred, and in actuality he had the intention to kill the wild boar king from the start.

"That wild boar king?" Watery blue hair female Gu Master raised her brows.

"Other than that one, there is no other in the vicinity. But relying on just the strength of the sickly snake group to reap the wild boar king, their appetite is too big." The old Gu Master sneered in disdain.

If Old man Wang could grasp the terrain of the mountain himself, these Rank two Gu Masters who were always roaming around on Qing Mao mountain would obviously be more familiar with it. Not eliminating the wild boar king before this, they had their reasons.

Chi Shan pondered, then said, "Go support them."

"Hehe, I’m afraid they might not reciprocate." The old Gu Master laughed coldly.

"Even if we do not go and support them, we still have to send someone over, right!" Chi Cheng looked at Fang Yuan, saying in an unhappy tone.

The team’s direction steered towards the left.

Although Chi Shan and the rest always looked down and did not like Gu Yue Jiao San, but as clansmen, towards outside foes, even if they had amnesty normally, they would group up and work together.

This is the cohesiveness of a clan in this world.

And especially relying on this cohesiveness could a hundred year old clan sustain itself without dying out, even becoming a thousand year old clan.

Everyone moved through the jungle in the darkness, heading towards a low-lying land.

Sickly snake group’s four Gu Masters were surrounding the wild boar king, engaging in fierce combat.

In the center, the elephant-like wild boar king was fighting with a thin and long red-coloured python.

This red giant python had dark red rock pieces all over its body, the temperature very high. It was like a thick chain coiling around the wild boar king.

The wild boar king cried out angrily, constantly rolling on the ground, its snow white tusks piercing the darkness and drawing cold light in the air.

Its body was full of big and small injuries, its tail already broken. While flipping around, it revealed its fresh red injuries, stuck to the red lava python’s body and scalded by the high temperature.

The Chi Shan group did not get closer, but observed from a distance.

Taking a few looks, the old Gu Master was enlightened, "I say, how did the sickly snake have this courage. Looks like the wild boar king was actually injured already, tsk, he sure picked up the cheap goods, this scoundrel got lucky.

"Do you guys think that this wild boar king’s body would have the Black Boar

Gu?" Chi Cheng excitedly said with glowing eyes.

Fang Yuan’s expression was unchanged as he watched silently.

At this time, Jiao San and his gang also realised the situation of being watched, and immediately the support Gu Master Gu Yue Kong Jing who was the furthest away from the wild boar king left the battlefield and ran over.

"Oh, it is Lord Chi Shan. There’s no problems here now, we can handle it. There are many wild beast groups in front, they need your support." Kong Jing said to the people.

"Hmph, what do you mean you can handle it? You’re clearly lying through your teeth, I can see that this python isn’t going to hang in there much longer." The old Gu Master’s experienced gaze revealed the situation at once.

"You’re just afraid of us wanting to split the rewards after helping," the watery blue long-haired female Gu Master immediately pointed out Jiao San and his gang’s intention.

"This wild boar king is yours," Chi Shan said, looking at the old Gu Master.

The old Gu Master snorted, but he still bent down, vomiting out a piece of white sticky spider web.

The spider web expanded in the air and spread out, enveloping the wild boar king.

The wild boar king struggled intensely in the web, breaking threads after threads, but it could not get free quickly.

During this period, sickly snake Jiao San quickly got the red lava python to retreat. After that, together with the healing female Gu Master in the group, they underwent emergency battle healing on the python.

In the fierce battle earlier, the red lava python’s rock body already had some cracks. Through the healing, the cracks mended, shrinking until they disappeared.

"Fang Yuan, you should go back. You still want to depend on our group?" Chi Cheng said in annoyance.

Fang Yuan took a step out and walked out from behind Chi Shan.

Gu Yue Kong Jing was blocked by Chi Shan’s huge body earlier and did not see him. At the moment when he saw Fang Yuan, his expression turned weird.

Jiao San turned his head around and upon seeing Fang Yuan, was overjoyed at once, "Fang Yuan, you’re finally here! Quick, the spider web is not going to hold, you have huge strength, go and restrain the wild boar king and buy us time. We need time to heal the red lava python."

Without a defensive Gu and only with Rank one cultivation, getting close to the wild boar king was nothing but risky.

Chi Shan took a look at Fang Yuan and said, "Go."

Saying so, he took a huge step and left the place.

He kept his word; although the wild boar king had much value, he turned around and left without hesitation.

Seeing Chi Shan’s group leaving, Jiao San and the gang breathed a sigh of relief. From start to finish, they did not say a word of thanks.

Jiao San continue shouting, "Fang Yuan, hurry, the wild boar king’s strength is huge, the spider web is not going to hold out. If you perform well this time, I will not pursue the matter of you leaving the team on your own."

"Okay." Fang Yuan agreed, quickly getting to the wild boar king and grabbing its two huge tusks.

He used all his strength and pulled, causing the wild boar king to be suppressed, its struggling suddenly diminished.

"Good job!" Jiao San praised, but his eyes shone with cold light.

This Fang Yuan came at a good time, the small beast horde was the perfect chance!

Jiao San had never thought of killing Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan was his member, and if he died, the clan’s evaluation of him would drop. This did not suit his interests.

He only promised his uncle Gu Yue Dong Tu to slow Fang Yuan’s growth. If he could drag it beyond sixteen years old, he would obtain a fortune promised by Gu Yue Dong Tu.

The truth is, even with his scheming and intolerant nature, he did not think of killing Fang Yuan before. This is not just because after a Gu Master dies, the punishment hall would hold a thorough investigation, thus being risky, but also because of the clan’s belief — Blood is thicker than water, family comes first. This notion is ingrained into the people’s hearts. Unless there is a feud of killing one’s parents or stealing one’s wife, there is no such phenomenon of disputes.

Like how the Gu Yue clan leader once taught the academy elder, not only does the system and rules hold the clan together, there is also the thick family relationships.

Any organisation would need to have a system and values as their basic core.

"Using this opportunity, I’ll let Fang Yuan get injured and return to the village to nurse his injuries. Let’s see if he can cultivate to Rank two like that! Of course, I cannot strike personally, if I get discovered that would be bad. Since there are so many beasts in the horde anyway, I’ll borrow from their strength."

Gu Yue Jiao San laughed coldly in his heart, but he asked, "Fang Yuan, how long can you hold out?"

"A while more, don’t worry group leader." Fang Yuan replied with much strength.

"Very good, Hua Xing, go and plant the corrosion blood grass Gu," Jiao San instructed while healing the red lava python.

"Yes!" A female Gu Master walked up.

She came to the side of the wild boar king and stretched out both hands, giving a thumbs up on both hands. The nails on her thumbs had a purple vine insignia coiling around.

Light red coloured red steel primeval essence gushed out and surrounded her white thumb, and entered the insignia.

The vines were brought alive immediately, extending a delicate tentacle from her nails.

The tentacles moved like snakes, extending to the wild boar king’s mouth, and then along its teeth, going deep into its stomach.

"Hehehe...." Fang Yuan covered his mouth in the darkness as it curled into a devious angle.

Others would think about kinship and not have killing intent on their clansmen, this was going against the traditional moral values of the clan. But he did not put these values into his heart.

The strength he placed on the wild boar king’s tusks suddenly vanished.

The wild boar king furiously growled and summoned all its strength. Its tusks swung in the air as Fang Yuan who was holding onto both tusks was brought along with the force and was thrown away.

The wild boar king once again turned its head, and the tusks swept through. The female Gu Master was beside it and could not react quickly enough to such a change. She was hit by the tusks and screamed in agony.

Then her slim body, after getting hit by the tusks, broke into two with a snap.

The female Gu Master flew away like a broken bag; she was swept high into the sky, and then plopped down again.

She landed on the ground, her eyes wide open. She was dead on the spot.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Time to push out the last three chapters of last week!

These three chapters are great.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The female Gu Master’s body was like a ragdoll. From the waist and across it was broken, and her upper body laid on the ground, displayed at an odd angle against her lower body, the arms parallel to the ground while her legs were pointing towards the sky.

From afar, Fang Yuan also started to descend.

First, he hit the tree canopy and broke many branches before landing on the snowy ground.

He turned his body nimbly and stood up on the snowy ground. Because he had utilized the Jade Skin Gu earlier, other than some pain in his back, he was unscathed.

On the battlefield, after a momentary silence, Jiao San’s angry howl could be heard, "Fang Yuan, didn’t you say you could hold on!"

Fang Yuan laughed coldly in the dark, but suddenly his body twisted and he almost fell down. He used his hand to hold onto the tree trunk as support and was able to maintain his body balance.

He pretended to limp as if he could not walk, but his gaze swept across the surroundings to see if there was any other Gu Masters.

Against the beast horde, the Gu Masters were fighting with all they had, and could not be free enough or even have the mood to observe Fang Yuan. Even though he had been observing in secret and found no Gu Masters nearby, Fang Yuan still discreetly chose to hide himself.

From the other side, intense battle noises could be heard again.

Evidently, the wild boar king had escaped its entrapment and was fighting once again with the red lava python.

Fang Yuan shifted step by step towards them with a face of anxiety, almost falling onto the ground a few times. Dirt, soil, grass and snow were all over his body, making him appear battered and exhausted.

He finally got back to the fringe of the battlefield.

On the battlefield, three people and a pig were fighting.

The red lava python coiled around the body of the wild boar king and its two hind legs.

The wild boar king’s two front legs could only thrash around randomly, causing it to roll on the ground, sometimes struggling. With the movement of its two front legs, it knocked and crashed into things randomly.

There were even more injuries on its body now, the boiling pig blood had dyed the floor red.

Seeing Fang Yuan, the outermost positioned Gu Yue Kong Jing said, "Fang Yuan, you scum, you caused Hua Xin to die!"

"I... I didn’t mean it. But I really couldn’t hold it." Fang Yuan shouted.

"Fuck, then why did you promise so confidently if you couldn’t. No means no, giving false promises like this will kill us all!" Gu Yue Kong Jing furiously screamed. If he was not in combat at the moment, he would go up and give Fang Yuan two tight slaps.

"S-Sorry, I won’t do it again." Fang Yuan quickly yelled back.

"Fang Yuan, we’ll talk about this later!" Sickly snake Jiao San roared, feeling his pressure intensify. The almost dead wild boar king had flown into madness, and the red lava python had injuries and cracks all over its body.

"Kong Jing, don’t bother with Fang Yuan. Quickly take out the knife scale web!" When Jiao San saw that the red lava python was almost at its breaking point, he shouted in panic with cold sweat all over.

"Yes!" Kong Jing quickly retrieved the big belly frog and used his primeval essence, vomiting a piece of steel web.

On this steel web, there were sharp spikes and apparent blades.

"Fang Yuan, grab the other end and rush up with me, we’ll entangle the wild boar king." Kong Jing said.

"But my leg is injured, I cannot walk!" Fang Yuan said with an anxious expression, crippling his way there.

"Useless thing!" Kong Jing with no other choice, had to do it himself, his hands dragging the knife scales web and throwing it at the wild boar king.

The wild boar king was covered by the knife scale web, causing it to cry out as fresh blood splattered.

It had predicted that its death was impending, and struggled even more fiercely. As its struggle intensified, the knife scale web's entanglement got tighter, and its injuries worsened.

As for the red lava python, because of its rock body, it did not take much damage from this knife scale web.

"What a waste of this fur!" Jiao San said in pity.

"Finally settled." Kong Jing breathed out in relief.

At this time, Fang Yuan shouted, "Let me help you guys!"

Swoosh swoosh swoosh.

Numerous moonblades flew out and hit the knife scale web, causing the steel threads to be torn apart. With the wild boar king's intense struggle, the hole got even bigger and the knife scale web was torn into pieces, allowing the wild boar king to escape.

At once!

Kong Jing stared with bulging eyes, lost for words.

"What... what the fuck..." Another female Gu Master could no longer care about her feminine image and swore loudly.

"I... it seems I messed up. I wanted to help!" Fang Yuan said, sounding very sincere and innocent.

Jiao San dodged the wild boar king's charge, rolling on the floor. Before he even got up, he shouted, "Fang Yuan—! You dumb piece of shit, see what you did! You're simply garbage for a teammate!!!"

"Leader, you must trust me, I didn't mean it," Fang Yuan defended himself.

"Shut the fuck up, from now on, do nothing, wait at the corner!" Jiao San shouted, rolling again and dodging the wild boar king's trample.

Fang Yuan snickered, but still obediently took tens of steps back.

"All of you get back!" Jiao San shouted, finally showing his true trump card as two strands of poisonous yellow air came out from his nostrils.

The poisonous air continued to come out from his nose, growing more and more until they gathered into a lump of yellow poisonous cloud.

The wild boar king and Jiao San's shadow could be seen outside the poisonous cloud.

Kong Jing, Fang Yuan and the others observed outside the yellow cloud.

Fang Yuan said to the remaining female Gu Master, "Heal my leg, it’s injured!"

The female Gu Master flew into a rage, "My good sister is dead, and your leg is only stumped! Why don’t you go and die?!"

Fang Yuan said in grievance, "I didn’t want this to happen either."

But his eyes shone with a trace of sharpness.

Should I act, and eliminate these people?

It is a chance to act now. In their subconscious minds, they would not expect me to have killing intention.

If the sickly snake group is exterminated, there would be fewer restrictions on me.

But...

If any Gu Master saw this process, I would fall into the abyss. The crime of killing a clansman is the most unforgivable in this world. Not only will I be executed, I would also have to face all sorts of torture for seven days and seven nights.

Death is not scary, but for such a small group, it is not worth the risk.

A pity the wild boar king is dying. After this battle the sickly snake group would be greatly weakened and their battle strength would be at the lowest, they would definitely leave the battlefield. What a pity, this was a godsend opportunity......

Fang Yuan felt regret and pity in his heart.

But he had done it to the greatest limit, and if he exceeded this, the feeling of "sabotage’ would thicken. The others were not stupid, they would notice and if other Gu Masters saw this, the risk would intensify.

Five minutes later, the wild boar king plopped onto the ground.

The yellow cloud dissipated, and Jiao San breathed loudly with a pale face. He had used his final trump card, and now he had little to no primeval essence left.

"All of you come here and dissect the corpse quickly, we will retreat after taking the spoils of the battle!" Jiao San shouted.

Fang Yuan surrounded the wild boar king and quickly began to dissect the corpse.

The wild boar king’s blood was still hot, and the smell of blood was thick. Throughout the surrounding forest that was enshrouded in darkness, there were continuous howls from wild beasts and intense battle noises.

But there were no wild beasts in this tiny battlefield.

This was the authority of the beast king.

There were rules among the wild beasts.

The thick aura of the wild boar king caused other wild beasts to shrink in fear, and if the beast horde came here, they would find their way around this region. Of course, if it was another stronger beast horde or another beast king, they would not care about the wild boar king’s aura.

At this time, pairs of blue eyes glowed in the surrounding darkness.

From other places, blood-curdling screeches and alarmed cries of Gu Masters could be heard.

"It’s the wolves, the wolf pack!"

"The lightning wolf pack actually appeared!"

"Damn it, why is there a wolf pack here, it is still not the time for the outburst of the wolf tide right?!"

"Retreat, forget the wild boar king, we have to retreat quickly!" Jiao San shouted, and the faces of the surrounding people also turned white.

One lightning wolf was not scary. But a pack of lightning wolves, even the wild boar king would have to run.

Most importantly, the lightning wolves’ durability and endurance were high. They also had great speed, being most proficient at chasing.

At such a critical moment, Jiao San could no longer care about the others, abandoning the three and running for his life.

"Group leader, wait for me," Kong Jing shouted in panic, catching up to him.

"I do not have a Gu worm that enhances my speed, I can’t escape. Jiao San and the others have no primeval essence left, so even if they have a speed-type Gu, they can’t escape the chase of the lightning wolves!" Under the danger of death, Fang Yuan evaluated calmly.

He quickly hit the neck of the female Gu Master near him who was in a daze, causing her to faint.

Next, by dragging her, he burrowed into the wild boar king’s stomach that was cut open.

The wild boar king’s stomach was already cut open with a huge wound.

Fang Yuan squeezed his way into the bloody wild boar’s body, at the same time using the female Gu Master’s body to block away the entrance and cover up his body.

The wolf pack quickly descended, mostly chasing after Jiao San and Kong Jing, while a portion of them surrounded the wild boar king and feasted.

While Fang Yuan was inside the wild boar’s body, he could hear the wolves’ chewing and swallowing, as well as their biting, causing vibrations in the corpse.

"To think that the first beast horde had lightning wolves, this is a surprise, the clan would definitely send reinforcements. The wild boar king’s body is huge, so if the lightning wolves want to eat it completely, they would still need some time. As long as I can hold out, I would be spared from them."

Fang Yuan pondered deeply.

Without accident, Jiao San and Kong Jing should be dead meat. They had little primeval essence and were not speed oriented, so with such a small distance, they would definitely get slaughtered by the wolves.

When people panic, they would make dumb decisions. Under the pressure of death, there are little who can remain as calm as Fang Yuan and make the most appropriate decisions.

Even if the wild boar king’s flesh was all eaten, exposing Fang Yuan who was hiding, the amount of lightning wolves that Fang Yuan would have to deal with is definitely lesser than the others. According to his experience, at most five would appear, which would be his limit. He had much greater chance of surviving.

The lightning wolves continued to chew and bite, the sound indicating that they were getting closer. The wild boar king’s flesh had mostly gone into the lightning wolves’ stomach.

If a normal person was in such a predicament, they would feel as if the seconds that were passing by were like an eternity. But instead Fang Yuan closed his eyes and took out his primeval stones, fighting against time to recover his primeval essence.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The primeval essence that Fang Yuan recovered while in the boar’s stomach went unused ultimately.

The beast horde this time was under the supervision of the Gu Yue higher-ups, and the lightning wolf gang was just a small accident. Quickly, the Gu Yue higher-ups gave their response.

Three clan elders led their respective teams and swiftly grasped the situation.

Merely ten minutes later, Fang Yuan could hear fighting sounds from outside the boar’s stomach, as well as the cries of the lightning wolves.

He quickly kicked the female Gu Master out, and crawled out with blood stains all over him.

Fang Yuan was naturally not afraid of the lightning wolves, but he was afraid of getting caught in the battle. If a Gu Master accidentally attacked the corpse, wouldn’t he be too unlucky, by then who can he hold responsibility for?

With a big living person suddenly crawling out from the boar’s stomach, this caused the few Gu Masters fighting the lightning wolves to be taken aback.

Fang Yuan’s entire body was a bloody mess, and his leg was still entangled in the wild boar king’s intestines. His entire body emitted a nose-piercing bloody smell, and the few Gu Masters frowned in response.

But Fang Yuan paid no heed to that, he breathed deeply in enjoyance, extending his limbs and observing the battlefield.

As he had predicted, there were five lightning wolves.

But these lightning wolves were either old or injured. They were the bottom of the pack’s hierarchy. As the wolf pack got stronger and bigger, in order to protect the young and healthy lightning wolves, the wolf king would expel all these old and sickly wolves in order to allocate resources efficiently.

These lightning wolves gathered together and rushed towards the surrounding beast groups, and under each other’s influence, eventually formed this small beast horde.

The five lightning wolves quickly had casualties under the Gu Masters’ attacks.

They were too full from eating, and their stomachs expanded, affecting their battle strength. At the same time, new arriving Gu Masters had sufficient primeval essence in their aperture and had their peak battle strength, unlike Jiao San and the rest.

Primeval essence was especially important to Gu Masters. A weakened phoenix is inferior to a chicken, with less primeval essence, a Gu Master’s battle strength would fall rapidly. And without primeval essence, they were even inferior to mortals.

Why do you think for example, the Liquor worm, Black and White Boar Gu, these Gu were so precious?

It had to do with this fact.

Firstly, with the Liquor worm, it can refine primeval essence and allow Gu Masters to store much more primeval essence. (Remember that higher tier essence is essentially double of the previous tier 88% Mid tier = 44% Upper tier)

And the Black and White Boar Gu worms gave Gu Masters strength. Without requiring primeval essence, they can unleash their worth. And for the Black and White Boar Gu, once one person has used them, they can be given to another person to use, showing great collective value in a group.

The battle continued for a while and stopped.

The five lightning wolves continued to fall, and the new reinforcement group did not venture further. Their primeval essence had been used up nearly, and their battle strength had been greatly reduced. To be safe, they stopped on the spot. As they recovered, they awaited further reinforcements.

A group of five, with the reconnaissance Gu Master keeping alert while the other three used primeval stones to recover their primeval essence, the healing Gu Master bent down and observed the female Gu Master’s corpse.

"She’s dead..." Healing Gu Master sighed deeply. Seeing his sad expression, it seemed like he knew the female Gu Master.

Fang Yuan watched coldly.

This female Gu Master which he had knocked unconscious was blocking in front of him. Now she had lost her right chest, and a leg. Her arm was also greatly injured by the wolves, eaten until the bones could be seen.

But these injuries and the massive loss of blood was not the true cause of her death.

What caused her demise, was cardiac arrest.

The lightning wolves’ bites carried electric currents with them. The currents flowed into the female Gu Master’s body while she was unconscious, and caused her to have a heart attack.

The originally beautiful and sexy body was now lying on the ground, still and unmoving. Her previous glamour was nowhere to be found, being just an ugly dead corpse now.

"She’s dead, and it is all your fault! As a man, why did you hide behind a woman? You’re a disgrace to men!" The healing Gu Master looked up, staring at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan shrugged emotionlessly, his expression calm, "The truth is, she competed with me over the spot, but eventually I won, so I’m very glad about the results."

"Scumbag!!" The healing Gu Master rushed up.

Bam.

Fang Yuan raised his feet and sent him flying.

Healing Gu Masters were normally weak at combat, and because of the clan rules, he did not dare to use his Gu worms. Just competing with physical strength, how can he be Fang Yuan’s match?

"This detestable guy!" Healing Gu Master crawled up with a dusty face and wanted to rush up again, but was stopped by the reconnaissance Gu Master.

"If you think I committed a crime and caused her to die, you can report it to the punishment hall, I’ll take it," Fang Yuan said lightly as he stared at the healing Gu Master, and left.

"Damn! Damn it!" The healing Gu Master’s eyes were blowing fire as he stared at Fang Yuan’s backview, urging to rush up but was restrained by his teammates.

"Calm the hell down!"

"Even if you report it to the punishment hall, the clan won’t punish him!"

"We know you liked her, but although the clan cannot punish him, we can spread this matter out..."

Under the urging of his teammates, the healing Gu Master calmed down and lowered his head, crying.

"A boat encountered trouble, a man grabbed onto a wooden plank and was temporarily saved. At this time, another man swam up and wanted to grab the plank as well, but this plank can only hold the weight of one man, so the first man pushed the second man away so that he could be safe, causing the other person to drown in the sea. The rescued man was later tried in court but declared not guilty. This is the wooden plank incident on earth."

"Meaning, to save oneself under forced circumstances, endangering another person’s life is no crime. On Earth, it is the Necessity Law. In this world, there are similar clan rules. This means, even if the healing Gu Master reports it to the punishment hall, I will not be punished. But...."

Fang Yuan continued to walk as he pondered. He moved in a steady pace without any rush.

Along the path that had been cleared, Fang Yuan would discover corpses, the majority of these being wild beasts of all kinds of varieties, and in the mix were some Gu Master corpses.

At the same time, there were small rescue groups rushing to the front lines. When they met Fang Yuan on the way, they would look at this bloody young man with curious and confused gazes.

Fang Yuan paid no attention to them. His eyes were a dark abyss, continuing his train of thought.

"But......" If the fact that I knocked the female Gu Master unconscious was found out, I would be tried for ‘harming a clansman’. Yet at that time, nobody should have seen it, Jiao San and Kong Jing were all looking at a different direction and rushing for their lives. Eh?"

Fang Yuan’s footsteps came to a halt.

He saw the corpses of Kong Jing and Jiao San.

The former’s body had already been eaten until it was unrecognisable, while the latter’s corpse was still well preserved.

The red lava python was already a pile of lava rocks, completely dead. And beside the sickly snake, there were a few lightning wolves’ corpses. Evidently Jiao San’s final struggle caused a huge battle.

"Good, that means that other than me, everyone else is dead." Fang Yuan evaluated internally, feeling joy.

"This means I would have fewer restrictions around me.... Eh?" Fang Yuan stopped, he saw Jiao San’s finger twitch softly.

"Not dead, what a stubborn life..." Fang Yuan snickered, killing intent rising again.

At this point, there was tens of healing Gu Masters coming from the front.

"Quick, save the injured!"

"They are our clansmen, we have to save what we can!"

"If they are confirmed dead, retrieved their Gu worms."

Fang Yuan’s gaze concentrated.

What to do?

They were so close, he would have to take a huge risk to kill Jiao San. Whether using strangulation or a moonblade, there will be traces.

In front of these Gu Masters, he had no time to clear the traces.

So... let him live?

Even if Jiao San is treated now, he might not survive.

NO!

"If I can exterminate Jiao San, there would be a lot lesser opposition in my way. Such an opportunity, if lost, I would have a hard time finding another one."

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan had an inspiration.

He gradually half-kneeled beside Jiao San, removing his upper shirt and covering Jiao San’s face and upper body.

He was inside the boar’s stomach for a long time, so the pig’s blood had soaked his shirt, causing it to be heavy and wet.

He put the upperwear on Jiao San’s nose and mouth, preventing him from breathing.

Fang Yuan half-kneeled, silently watching, his expression solemn and pained.

At this point, a Gu Master came over, "Little lad, I am the medicine hall’s Gu Master, let me take a look..."

"Scram!" Fang Yuan growled angrily, pushing him away.

The Gu Master fell on the ground, but he was not angry, instead consoling him, "Little brother, my condolences! I know how you feel right now and I know how it feels to see the clansmen that you live with die in front of you. But you are covered in blood now, you must be heavily injured. For the sake of these sacrificed clansmen, you have to live properly. Come, let me heal you."

Fang Yuan did not open his mouth. He remained silent, the lower half of his face covered in a dark shadow. He allowed this Gu Master to check his body.

The result was rather surprising. Although Fang Yuan was bathed in blood, appearing terrifying to everyone, he actually had no injuries at all!

But the Gu Master quickly collected his spirits, concentrating on Jiao San.

"I’m very sorry, the clan needs to take back the Gu worms." The Gu Master sincerely looked at Fang Yuan, then he lifted the bloody shirt slowly off Jiao San.

Jiao San’s eyes were half open without any life in them.

The Gu Master professionally used his finger to prop open Jiao San’s eyelids, looking at his iris and then touching his neck. But he felt no pulse.

Dead.

Completely dead.

The Gu Master did not suspect anything. He sighed and placed his hand on Jiao San’s stomach.

His stomach still had some warmth and the aperture was slowly disappearing; there were no Gu worms inside.

The Gu Master looked at Fang Yuan, whether intentionally or unintentionally, "Every Gu Master’s Gu worm is stated in writing, and after a Gu Master dies, his Gu worms will be treated as an inheritance for his inheritor. Taking it for oneself is against the clan rules."

Fang Yuan was fearless, staring right at the Gu Master, "Of course I know that. You suspect that I took the group leader’s Gu worms?"

Taking these Gu worms involved risks and trouble. If his secrets were dragged out, they would bring more loss than gain. Fang Yuan knew this, even if with the Spring Autumn Cicada he could instantly refine any Gu, it was difficult to do in the clan. It was not worth inviting such troubles for these minute gains.

Apart from than this, there was another point — with his financial status now, even if he got them, he might not be able to feed them.

To Fang Yuan’s question, the Gu Master laughed quickly, "I did not mean that! People cannot come back to life after dying, so please restrain your grief, little brother. For the sake of the deceased, you have to live even better!"

Fang Yuan gradually stood up.

He used an extremely sad and pained expression, staring at sickly snake’s corpse with rapt attention.

The night wind howled in his ears.

"You are right." After a while, Fang Yuan broke the silence, his gaze determined, saying with an intentional meaning, "For the sake of those who died, I have to live even better than before."

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

...And that’s it for last week’s batch, yay~ See you guys soon for the next chapter(s)~ I wonder if this week I’ll be as free as last week? Stay tuned on Fang Yuan and his evil adventures!! (You know that line ’People cannot come back to life after dying?’ It indirectly was ’People die when they are killed’)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Internal affairs hall, interrogation room.

The light of the winter sun shone on the ground through the only window.

Fine dust particles slowly floated on the light pillar.

The light pillar enshrouded a chair.

Fang Yuan was sitting on that chair, bathing in the sunshine.

In the darkness ahead of him was a long table where three elders were seated.

The interrogation had already continued for an hour.

"Fang Yuan, are you sure there are no mistakes in your narration?" An elder asked.

"Yes." Fang Yuan’s eyes were down, looking at his toes. The sunshine shone on his fair face, making him look like a white sculpture.

He had already expected this situation.

After all, all his group members had died except him.

In fact, every Gu Master would go through a certain degree of interrogation which conveniently helped the clan to gather battle statistics. But, Fang Yuan was continuously interrogated for an hour; clearly, someone was making it difficult for him from behind the scenes.

This was completely understandable.

As long as one was human and had social relations, there would be series of people involved.

"Then narrate your account on the battle situation at that time again." The elder continued to ask.

"Okay. I used several days to breakthrough to Rank two. Upon returning to the village gate, I met Chi Shan group... and reunited with Jiao San group after finding them. At that time, they were having a fierce fight with the wild boar king..." Fang Yuan calmly narrated.

He took the initiative to reveal his breakthrough to Rank two. With no concealing Gu worm, he wouldn’t be able to conceal his Rank two aura.

Now the sickly snake and the team were dead, so he naturally fabricated the events. But, he could only conceal some main details and narrate the majority of the events as they were.

This was already the fifth time Fang Yuan narrated the events. The three elders frowned as they listened.

They couldn’t find any holes, but they knew - if it was fabricated, then there would be unnecessary details. After one kept on talking about it several times, there would naturally be holes. But after five times, although there were some differences in how Fang Yuan narrated the events, the contents were the same.

"It should be true." The three elders communicated with each other using eye signals.

But one elder was not satisfied.

Her daughter was the sickly snake group’s healing Gu Master whom she loved dearly but ended up dying a cruel death in the wolves’ mouths. Thus she was very angry and her gaze carried coldness as she looked at Fang Yuan.

"Fang Yuan, you cut the knife scales net with your moonblades, why did you do it?" This middle-aged female elder spoke sternly.

"Because I wanted to have some contributions, but it ended up being a bad move." Fang Yuan replied.

"Then let me ask you, did you intentionally use your teammate - the female Gu Master - as a shield when you hid in the boar’s stomach?" The elder asked again.

"I don’t know. I was very scared at that time and hurriedly tried to hide inside the boar king, but she also entered inside and fought me for the inside position. She couldn’t defeat me and was bitten to death by the lightning wolves. I am ashamed." Fang Yuan answered.

The middle-aged female elder grinded her teeth. Fang Yuan’s answer was cunning, he only stated the fact but didn’t mention his subjective intentions at all. This made the elders who wanted to suppress him, not find any handle on him; their hearts were filled with anger but they couldn’t do anything.

Under such situation, they couldn’t judge Fang Yuan guilty.

It had already been three days since the small beast tide.

The statistics of the casualties made all the higher ups have ugly expressions.

There were losses in the past small beast tides too but they were definitely not as grave as this. The cause was the lightning wolves pack. Before, these lightning wolves packs would only appear after at least three waves of small beast tide.

The environment was dangerous in this world; survival, difficult.

From a human standpoint, to survive, apart from fighting with other humans for resources, they still had to struggle against fierce beasts and nasty weathers.

And these struggles were often very difficult.

The small beast tide was still only a prelude. The real terror would be the large wolf tide, a year after. Tens of thousands of lightning wolves would charge towards the village with the terrifyingly powerful lightning wolf king.

The female elder continued to ask several questions but she had to finally give up under Fang Yuan’s invulnerable answers.

"Then Fang Yuan, what do you plan to do from now on?" Another elder asked with deep intention.

"I plan to apply for the family assets, inheriting and continuing my family’s heritage." Fang Yuan spoke openly, there was no need to conceal it.

Sickly snake group was destroyed and now only Fang Yuan was left. Because of this, he didn’t have to use Rank two Gu Master’s right to give up a mission and could accept the family assets mission.

The elder nodded his head then shook his head, "You didn’t understand my meaning. Apart from you, your group is no more. I can give you a suggestion: Join another group. Internal affairs hall’s missions difficulty is designed for groups, it is very difficult for a lone person to complete them. Whether it is your family inheritance mission or the compulsory monthly missions, they are both like this."

Fang Yuan was silent.

This elder continued, "Of course, there is another option. You are already a Rank two Gu Master. You have the qualifications to become a group captain. You just need to pass the examination mission and you can build your own group. Which do you want to choose?"

Fang Yuan blinked his eyes: "I don’t know yet, I need some time to consider."

"Then you can leave. Think it over as soon as possible. After a few days pass, it will be difficult for you to join a group," the elder said concernedly.

Fang Yuan sneered inwardly, he wouldn’t choose any of these two paths.

He had a lot of secrets. Only by himself could he be safe and do things properly. Otherwise, wouldn’t he be annoyed to death if there were others with him all the time?

Leaving this interrogation room, Fang Yuan didn’t immediately leave the internal affairs hall but instead applied for the family inheritance mission. However, he was informed that he could only take it after three days due to the busy events recently.

Coming out of the internal affairs hall, he gazed at the sky.

It was just an ordinary winter afternoon.

The winter was bleak along with biting wind. The sky seemed to be pervaded with deep grief.

"Today is group memorial assembly. Gu Yue Jin Zhu is dead, did you know, Fang Yuan?" Mo Bei, along with a group of youths, were walking through the path.

Other than Mo Bei, there were Fang Zheng, Chi Cheng and others.

Mo Bei and Chi Cheng normally hated each other very much, but today, they seemed to forget this grievance and walked together.

"Big brother, Jin Zhu studied with us for a year. Come with us." Fang Zheng said.

Gu Yue Jin Zhu...

A girl’s image immediately appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind.

Previously, she had been evenly matched with Mo Bei on the arena but lost because of her lacking stamina. She was a hardworking girl.

But, death didn’t discriminate between beauty and ugly.

Most people would feel pity, but Fang Yuan was indifferent as usual.

"Ah, she is dead? But dying of old or sickness, they are both normal events. After seeing it many times you’ll be indifferent to it. You guys go, I am busy." Fang Yuan brushed past the group.

"This guy!" At once, many among the group were angered.

"He is really cold-blooded and heartless..."

"He simply doesn’t have a feeling of friendship!"

"Hehe, there is a rumor going around recently. You should have all heard it, right? The reason Fang Yuan survived was because he hid inside a boar’s stomach and used his female Gu Master teammate as a shield."

"He is really a disgrace with no worth. He doesn’t even have the manners of a man." Chi Cheng folded his arms and laughed coldly.

"Big brother..." Fang Zheng lowered his head and grinded his teeth.

Hearing these discussions, as Fang Yuan’s little brother, he felt shame.

Fang Yuan left and as he walked farther, the mockeries behind him gradually couldn’t be heard anymore.

His heart was calm.

"Why would insults matter to me?"

Insults were insults, what could they do?

A superficial person would be angry due to curses and would be happy due to praises.

These were just bystanders’ way of looking at you. Those who lived according to other’s point of view were really pitiful.

In fact, some people had deliberately spread the rumors to degrade Fang Yuan’s name.

Sacrificing a female teammate to protect oneself wouldn’t be subjected to punishment, but would be criticized by moral consensus.

But, this was the exact situation Fang Yuan wanted.

Once one enters the system, one would be a pawn with no freedom and must follow the system’s rules. To Fang Yuan, it was a huge obstacle, he needed resources and even more needed to be solitary.

So, he wanted to be a loner.

What if you were rejected by the crowd? Haha, only weak-hearted people would be afraid of being rejected.

If this happened on Earth, no matter who, they would end up dead. After all, two fists can’t beat four hands, social connections were the way to survival.

But in this world, if the cultivation was strong, one person could beat ten, hundreds and thousands of enemies. So what if you were rejected, just kill the ones who block your path. If you don’t have resources, snatch them.

Every world had different rules and regulations, the society structure was also bound to be different, causing the difference in human behaviours.

And in a world of martial arts, group thoughts were rather weak.

So in this world —

Devils run amuck.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Here comes the batch of 7 chapters from last week, I finally have some time to finish last edits and post them!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"What? That lad, he’s a Rank two Gu Master now, and even applied for the asset-splitting mission from the internal affairs hall!" Uncle Gu Yue Dong Tu’s furious and shocked voice reverbed throughout the main hall.

"That is indeed so. Although I accepted your primeval stones, I cannot do much to stop him, I only managed to tell him to collect the mission in three days. I can only stall that long for you, that is my limit." The middle-aged Gu Master beside him said.

Gu Yue Dong Tu snorted in his heart, he could sense the hidden meaning in the internal affairs hall’s Gu Master’s words.

‘Stall for three days, it is the limit’, such words were merely an excuse to extort even more money.

"But, top priority now is still to do all I can to retain the assets. This rascal is really too troubling!" Gu Yue Dong Tu’s sweat poured from his forehead as Fang Yuan’s growth was so rapid it gave him the feeling of a heart attack.

"I came here especially to tell you this, so I’ll take my leave now." The middle-aged man stood up to depart.

"Don’t be in such a rush, brother. There are some things I still need for you to assist me a little with." Gu Yue Dong Tu hurriedly stood up, retrieving a money bag and stuffing it into the middle-aged Gu Master’s hand.

The male Gu Master took the entire bag of primeval stones and stuffed it into his chest pocket, his tone quickly changing, laughing loudly. "Brother Dong Tu, you are too polite. We have such a great relationship, we’ve known each other for over ten years. Don’t worry, I will prepare the toughest mission for Fang Yuan, but he might employ other Gu Masters to help him. You have to watch out for this."

"Hehehe, you can be rest assured. Although I have retired, I still have my relationships, I’ve sent people to observe him. If that lad employs outsiders, that is against the clan rules, and I am still waiting to get a hold of his weakness. Hehe..."

"Then I am at ease, goodbye."

"Let me send you out."

"It is okay, please stay."

Gu Yue Dong Tu stared at the leaving Gu Master, his smile slowly collapsing.

"This Fang Yuan, he is only C grade, how can he advance to Rank two so soon?! Dammit, what were Jiao San and the others doing! Can’t even guard against a newbie."

"Sigh, now Jiao San and the team were all killed by the beast horde, what incompetent fools. Fang Yuan also advanced to Rank two, this way he can definitely receive the family asset mission. My previous methods to block him will no longer work. But he is now working alone, and aiming to complete the asset inheritance mission alone is really difficult."

"No! This lad’s luck is absurd, first I got Jiao San and the rest to suppress him, and immediately the beast horde came. If he relies on this luck again and completes the mission, what then? I have to prepare for the worst!"

An old sly fox, Gu Yue Dong Tu being able to enter and leave the fighting life peacefully and live up until now, it represented success already.

Compared to the newly independent Fang Yuan, his interpersonal relationships were much stronger.

"Collecting honey wine?" When Fang Yuan received the asset mission, his eyes shone with cold glimmer.

This mission was very troublesome, it was to collect five Liang(1) of golden bee’s honey wine. Golden bees were all fist-sized with gold and black stripes, and they had a sharp stinger packed with a strong attack.

That was not all. Among normal small hives, there was only honey. Only those large or medium hives had the precious honey wine made from a large accumulation of honey.

"This mission, even for a five-man group, is very difficult. Because the number of people no longer matter, the Gu Master collecting honey wine has to have a defensive-type Gu to withstand the stings. It seems that uncle’s relationship has struck and is bullying my lack of a defensive Gu worm. Unfortunately for him... " Fang Yuan laughed coldly in his heart.

At this point, it showed the inherent benefits of the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance.

Easy to do things secretly, difficult to do things openly.

The more one worked openly, the more their trump cards get revealed, and they become easier to trap. Conversely, working secretly helps to hide trump cards and lets others be unable to assess your situation, thus not being able to nip the problem in the bud.

"But, if I want to collect honey wine, the Jade Skin Gu isn’t enough. Jade Skin Gu is only a Rank one Gu, but if it can advance to the Rank two White Jade Gu, I would be able to do it easily."

WIthout the need to attempt to take risks, his rich life experience allowed him to take less pointless steps.

Speaking of which, Fang Yuan is already a Rank two initial stage Gu Master, but the Gu worms on him, other than the Spring Autumn Cicada, were all Rank one Gu worms.

This situation is like a grown man who is able to wield a halberd only holding a small dagger. The dagger is unable to display the full extent of the man’s strength, and only with a halberd is it the most suitable.

Fang Yuan had seven Gu worms in his possession.

The vital Gu Spring Autumn Cicada, Moonlight Gu, Liquor worm, White Boar Gu, Jade Skin Gu and two Little Light Gu.

In this mix, the Moonlight Gu can fuse with the two Little Light Gu to form the Moonglow Gu. The White Boar Gu and Jade Skin Gu can fuse into White Jade Gu.

Moonglow Gu represents a surge in attack power, while White Jade Gu is an increase in defense.

If Fang Yuan had enough primeval stones, he would choose to refine them both. But not long ago, in order to push his cultivation to Rank two, he expended most of his primeval stones. Now, with the primeval stones on hand, it was only enough for one use.

"Undoubtedly, choosing to refine the White Jade Gu is a better choice. With the White Jade Gu, I can retrieve the honey wine. And with the White Jade Gu, I can advance better in the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance. But if this fusion fails, the results will be dire. My finances are on the brink of collapse, so without the White Jade Gu, I cannot get my parent’s assets. Stuck at this point, it will greatly slow my growth."

Fang Yuan felt a subtle pressure.

He knew that he was at a crossroad, and if this fusion succeeds, the future is bright. If he fails, then he would fall into the abyss. To get back to the current point, he would need even more effort in management and spend a longer time.

......

"Gu Masters use their primeval sea as the base, and Gu worms as the method. Gu is a Gu Master’s necessity, without Gu they are not Gu Masters. Other than their own cultivation, Gu Masters also have to refine, nurture and use Gu."

In the room, clan leader Gu Yue Bo meticulously explained to Fang Zheng.

"Refine, nurture, and use. These three aspects, whichever one is also a huge knowledge trove. Even if you spend an entire lifetime, you cannot completely finish it. On the aspect of refining Gu, you already know how to refine a Gu and make it yours. But this is only a single refinement. There is also the more important aspect of fusion.

"Through fusion, you can fuse multiple Gu worms into one with a higher rank. This is the evolution of life. Fang Zheng, you are already a Rank two Gu Master, but your Gu worms are all Rank one. It is time you refine a Rank two Gu worm."

Fang Zheng asked, "Clan leader, how do I do fusion?"

Gu Yue Bo said, "To fuse, you have to know the recipe. Some Gu worms cannot be fused together. Through many eons of trial and error, and endless failures, our ancestors have come up with several recipes. Our Gu Yue clan has the most in-depth research with the Moonlight Gu, and we now have two Rank five recipes on hand."

"What is a Rank five recipe?"

"In accordance to this recipe, through multiple fusions, one can finally refine up to a Rank five Gu worm. Fang Zheng, you have one Jade Skin Gu and a Moonlight Gu on hand, it satisfies the condition for one of the Rank five recipes. If you follow this recipe, you will get the Rank five Gu eventually – Moonlight Treasure King Gu!"

"Moonlight Treasure King Gu?" Fang Zheng's face was full of desire.

"Hehehe, telling you about a Rank five Gu now is still too early. Come, take out your Jade Skin and Moonlight Gu, I'll teach you how to fuse these two Gu into the Rank two Moon Raiment!"

Saying so, Gu Yue Bo's expression turned solemn, "The most important thing about fusing Gu is parallel thinking, fusing your consciousness. The Moonlight Gu and Jade Skin Gu in your hands now have no wild consciousness anymore, overwritten by your own consciousness. What you have to do now is to fuse these two thoughts together."

"Fuse together?" Fang Zheng blinked, confused.

Gu Yue Bo smiled, "No worries, practise more, you will be able to grab hold of this feeling. Let's begin."

"Mm." Fang Zheng nodded, and under Gu Yue Bo's guidance, his light red-coloured red steel primeval essence rose like smoke, enveloping the Jade Skin Gu and the Moonlight Gu in midair.

Fang Zheng shut his eyes, feeling and manipulating the two Gu worm's consciousness.

Gu Yue Bo was outside watching, and saw the Jade Skin Gu and Moonlight Gu circling each other like two planets.

As the consciousness fused, the distance between the two Gu worms shortened.

After three hours of continuous tries, their consciousness was finally controlled by Fang Zheng, and fused together perfectly.

At once, the Jade Skin Gu and Moonlight Gu both erupted in a bright white light.

The two lights linked together, forming a lump as big as a face.

"Maintain this condition, and throw primeval stones into the light." Gu Yue Bo advised.

Fang Zheng took out a primeval stone and threw it into the light.

Strangely, after throwing the primeval stones in, the stones turned into a surge of pure natural essence, completely fusing with the lump of light. Only rock powder remained, scattering on the bed.

"Continue throwing until the Rank two Gu is complete." Gu Yue Bo said.

Fang Zheng was about to throw a second piece, but at this point, the light disappeared, and the two Gu flew in two opposite directions like they were pushed away ruthlessly by each other.

The fusion failed.

"Damn, I forgot to maintain the fusion of the consciousness earlier." Fang Zheng immediately realized his mistake.

"No worries, failing at the start is normal." Gu Yue Bo consoled, but reminded, "But be careful, you cannot fail too many times, if not both the Moonlight and Jade Skin Gu will perish."

Fang Zheng recalled back the Jade Skin Gu and Moonlight Gu, and found cracks on the Moonlight Gu’s surface, while the Jade Skin Gu looked like it was weakened.

His heart sank, feeling the difficulty of refining Gu.

(1) Liang - one Liang is 31.25grams.

(2) So to make it clear just in case: 炼蛊 - refine Gu, 合炼蛊 - fusion/fusing Gu. Fusion is part of the process of refining a Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Crash...

Great waves tumbled in the primeval sea, rising up and down.

The sea was light-red in color. This was not the green copper sea of a Rank one, but a red steel sea.

The aperture was covered with a layer of light coating; this was the appearance of Rank two initial stage.

The whole red steel primeval essence sea occupied 44% of the aperture. Above the sea, the Spring Autumn Cicada appeared.

After going through a year of recuperation, it had already somewhat recovered.

Previously, there was no shine from its body, it looked rough and dim like withered wood. Now, it had some gloss to it.

Its two wings had been like the yellowed and withered leaves of autumn and the tips had been damaged. Now, there was some green to it and there were black leaf lines on its tips, making a complete arc without any previous defect.

"Spring Autumn Cicada, spring and autumn... I see now, it needs to experience the changes of spring and autumn to recover. Since rebirth, a year has passed by, which means a turn of spring and autumn, and so it has recovered."

Fang Yuan looked at the Spring Autumn Cicada and this thought rose within him, increasing his understanding of the Spring Autumn Cicada by another stage.

A Gu Master needs to refine, nurture and use Gu. Among them ‘use’ was further classified and contained myriads of variations. Fang Yuan had been in contact with the Spring Autumn Cicada all the time; his comprehension of the Spring Autumn Cicada was slowly accumulating and deepening.

"But the Spring Autumn Cicada is still weak, it has only moved a few steps away from nearing death. I can only use its aura to suppress Gu worms and increase the efficiency of single refining. As for fusing, it won’t be of any help."

There were mystical Gu worms that raised the success rate of fusion. Everything had their own specialties; the Spring Autumn Cicada possessed the ability of rebirth.

Other than the Spring Autumn Cicada, there was the fat Liquor worm which was curled up in a round ball, floating and playing around in the sea.

The ladybug-like White Boar Gu and the Jade Skin Gu which had green jade color were revolving around each other.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes and slowly unfolded his right palm. In it were the imprints of a crescent moon and two five-sided stars.

They were precisely the residence of the Moonlight Gu and the two Little Light Gu.

Fang Yuan sat cross-legged on the bed, his line of sight falling on the bed sheet.

There were three money bags on the bed sheet; two were bulging and one was mostly thinned out. Apart from this, there was also a snow-white tusk from the wild boar king. It looked like an elephant’s tusk, lying close to Fang Yuan’s leg on the bed sheet.

Sickly snake group had used all their strength to kill the wild boar king, but they met with the lightning wolf pack’s attacks and the majority of the skin and flesh of the wild boar king had been eaten away by the lightning wolves. The two snow white tusks were thus the most valuable spoils of war.

According to the clan’s rules and regulations, Fang Yuan - being one of the members in killing the wild boar king - received one of the wild boar king’s tusks.

Fang Yuan looked at these items, his expression was heavy. "I don’t have much primeval stones left and it is only enough for one fusion. After this fusion, no matter success or failure, my financial condition will drop. But if I don’t fuse it now, my primeval stones will only last for twelve or so days and I will even lose the chance to fuse."

Fang Yuan was raising seven Gu worms so he had a large financial burden. And because of his C grade aptitude, he had to repeatedly use the Liquor worm to quickly improve his cultivation. Thus, his primeval stone consumption was more than an ordinary Gu Master’s.

Recently, he no longer used primeval stones to recover the primeval essence in his aperture. The red steel sea in his body now was all recovered by its natural self-recovery rate.

Fang Yuan was already beginning to cut the primeval stones consumption; he couldn’t misuse them after calculating his expenditures.

The current situation was like he was about to fall off a cliff. He could only grab on to the wild grass at the side of the cliff to stabilize his body without falling.

But as time passed, these lifelines would be continuously used up. If he didn’t take any risks, it wouldn’t take long for him to fall off the cliff.

What he had to do now was to use these lifelines and climb up the cliff with all his strength.

If he succeeded, he could seize the opportunity to obtain the family inheritance and ascend to another level and it would be a whole new scene in front of him.

If he lost, he would drop down and in trying to climb up to this stage again, he would need to spend large amount of time and energy.

"No matter what happens, let’s begin." Fang Yuan took in a deep breath and focused his gaze.

White Boar Gu, Jade Skin Gu!

The two Gu worms followed his will, drilling out of his aperture and floating in front of Fang Yuan.

"Fuse!" Fang Yuan shouted inwardly. White Boar Gu and Jade Skin Gu suddenly emitted dazzling lights and directly bumped into each other.

This was a silent bump, but it created a ball of light.

The white light was more dazzling than before.

This showed that Fang Yuan’s two consciousness were fusing.

Fang Yuan used his consciousness to maintain the white ball of light white taking out primeval stones from the bag and throwing them into the ball of light.

The primeval stones were engulfed by the ball of light and only rock powders remained, scattering on the bed. Each time the ball of light swallowed a primeval stone, its edges would expand a little.

The ball of light absorbed the natural primeval essence and became bigger and bigger.

Gradually, it changed from the size of a washbowl to a grindstone size.

"Almost there." Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes; he decisively threw the wild boar king’s snow-white tusk into the ball of light.

If anyone were to witness this scene, they would be astonished. The secret recipe of fusing White Boar Gu and Jade Skin Gu to form White Jade Gu was well known and circulated for over thousand years, but no one had ever heard of adding in a wild boar king’s snowy tusk.

However, not being used in the past doesn’t mean that it won’t be in the future.

One hundred and fifty years from now, a Gu Master would improvise this recipe; he discovered that adding a wild boar’s tusk would greatly increase the fusion success rate.

Fang Yuan had five hundred years of experience, he naturally knew of this trick.

The snowy tusk was thrown into the ball of light and a fantastic transformation happened immediately.

The previously dazzling light turned softer. The light that was blindly shooting off everywhere now had a movement pattern to it, naturally changing between light and dark.

Under Fang Yuan’s gaze, the ball of light slowly shrunk and finally dissipated into the air.

Instead of the Jade Skin Gu and White Boar Gu, there was now a completely new Gu worm calmly hovering in front of Fang Yuan.

It was like an oval pebble, its whole body was completely white; this white was not pale like Xuan paper and was not milky white like milk, but was a kind of moist white like that of the luster of jade.

This was — Rank two White Jade Gu!

Only now did Fang Yuan let out a mouthful of turbid air, his heart relieved.

You might think that this process looks simple. It is not.

First, the consciousness merging needed multitasking.

Drawing a circle with one hand and a square with another is called dual tasking. A lot of people cannot even do this, let alone the highly difficult multi-tasking.

One can only achieve multi-tasking after years of hard cultivation, suffering through countless defeats and setbacks, and even then one would still need some talent.

Fang Yuan could do this so proficiently because of his five hundred years of deep experience; not a hint of his experience was fake or forged.

Second, was understanding and knowledge of Gu worms.

The deeper the Gu Master’s understanding of Gu worms, the higher the success rate of fusing.

This point, in about three hundred years from now, would be a widely recognized knowledge.

Thus, the longer you use Gu worms, the greater the probability of success in Gu fusion.

Third, was the correct and original recipe.

For example, this time, adding the snowy tusk was like the finishing touch, increasing the success rate by 20%. Its efficiency was extraordinary.

Some recipes were widely spread in this world, but there were many recipes which people would collect and weren’t circulated.

Such as in the Gu Yue village, the recipe of refining Moonlight Gu was held by a small number of elders and successive generations of clan leaders.

Especially those rank five and above recipes. They would be hidden and treasured like their lives. Many Gu Masters would not spread these recipes until death.

But even with these three points, there was no absolute guarantee of success.

Even a person like Fang Yuan who had five hundred years of memories, plentiful experiences, deep understanding of Gu worms, could multitask and knew a lot of recipes, had a possibility of failure when fusing Gu worms.

One can only say that his failure rate is lower.

Fusing Gu worms was an evolution of life, a type of creation. It condensed time to the extreme, making the long evolution process bear fruit in an instant.

On earth, only gods could do this.

This was no doubt a miracle of life. Gu Masters making divine intervention with a mortal body, how could it succeed every time?

If it succeeded every time, that would not be human, but god.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

In other words, refining (fusing) Gu relies on RNG.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the blink of an eye, ten more days passed.

Deep in the mountain, in the underground rock forest.

Squeakkkkk!

Tens of jade eye stone monkeys jumped in the air with blurred silhouettes.

They continued to leap and attacked Fang Yuan aggressively.

If it was like before, Fang Yuan would retreat without a doubt. But now, he stood on the spot with a cold expression, still like a rock.

The stone monkeys slammed, scratched, and bit Fang Yuan’s body, but a crisp ‘ding ding’ sound could be heard, as if they were not attacking a person, but a sturdy jade pillar.

A bright white jade light covered the area as it attached itself to Fang Yuan’s body. This light, although it was thinner than the Jade Skin Gu’s jade green glow, it had more than twice of the defensive power.

Jade Skin Gu’s defense can only handle up to sixteen monkeys’ simultaneous attack, but now Fang Yuan could face off against more than thirty monkeys alone.

"On the arena, I could break Fang Zheng’s Jade Skin Gu’s defense with my bare fists, but if Fang Zheng used this White Jade Gu, even if I broke my wrist bone, I would not be able to penetrate his defenses."

Fang Yuan pondered while diverting a part of his thoughts towards his aperture sea.

In the red steel primeval sea, the White Jade Gu sank to the bottom of the sea, constantly absorbing primeval essence. Its surface also emitted a faint white jade glow, like a lightbulb.

Every time the stone monkeys attack Fang Yuan, the White Jade Gu’s surface which resembled an oval pebble would flash faintly.

At the same time, Fang Yuan could feel a trace of his primeval essence being expended.

"White Jade Gu’s defense is the same type as the Jade Skin Gu, they both require a continuous source of primeval essence. At the same time, the greater the intensity of the attack, the more primeval essence is expended." Fang Yuan concluded in his heart.

At the same time, he counterattacked.

Punches and kicks kicked up a sandstorm. His strikes were simple, yet brutal and effective with an imposing aura.

Although the White Boar Gu was gone, the strength it gave to Fang Yuan still remained in his body.

Endless monkeys were hit by Fang Yuan. Some were kicked away, knocking on the stone pillar; some were killed in midair, turning into stone and breaking into fragments when they landed on the ground.

At the same time, with a flick of his wrist, Fang Yuan sent moonblades flying around, like the scythe of the reaper, harvesting the lives of the stone monkeys.

With the supply of red steel primeval essence, the Rank one Moonlight Gu could cause the greatest attack damage to the monkeys with every hit.

Squeak squeak...

The stone monkeys screamed in fright, retreating.

Fang Yuan had exterminated the stone monkeys in a short moment of counterattack, with only five or six remaining.

Fang Yuan killed another, and the remaining stone monkeys broke down, frantically running around and escaping deep into the stone forest.

Fang Yuan did not chase these escapees, but continued forwards deeper into the stone forest.

These days, he had been working hard to find the next clue for the inheritance. With continuous exploring, he had stepped foot on most of the areas around the stone forest, but did not find anything.

He had a hunch, vaguely guessing the Flower Wine Monk’s idea. He felt that the next step of the inheritance was likely linked to the most central area of the stone forest.

The deeper he got into the forest, the larger the stone pillars were, and the more stone monkeys lived inside them.

Fang Yuan walked as he observed – at the center of the stone forest, there was a large stone pillar. Its circumference was wider than tens of men surrounding it and attempting to hug it.

This stone pillar was his objective.

But, the deeper he got, the larger the monkey gangs, and the higher the difficulty.

Fang Yuan took a crucial step out and entered the alert zone of a group of monkeys.

Squeak squeak squeak!

The black caves in the stone pillar had emerging furious jade eye stone monkeys, and up to a hundred jumped in Fang Yuan’s direction.

Fang Yuan ran for his life.

Against so many monkeys, even with the White Jade Gu, he could not massacre them.

The stone monkeys chased Fang Yuan for a while, then some started to abandon the chase and turned around, going back to their caves. Eventually, only thirty or so monkeys trailed after Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan seeing the time was right, turned around and fought.

After a round of fighting, the last few monkeys ran and escaped, not even daring to return to their original caves.

After a few rounds, Fang Yuan killed over a hundred stone monkeys. On the road there were traces of broken stones from the corpses of the stone monkeys.

"Insufficient primeval essence." Fang Yuan inspected his primeval sea and sighed, forced to stop in his tracks.

If it was before, he would use his primeval stones to recover swiftly, but now, after fusing the White Jade Gu, he had a severe lack of primeval stones, or rather his entire finance was on the brink of collapsing.

Fang Yuan picked up the jade rock eyeballs and stuffed them into his bag.

"It should be at the bottom of the center of that rock pillar. But to reach there, I have to open a path." This feeling was getting more intense, Fang Yuan gave it one last look before opening the stone door and returning to the second secret room.

At the corner of the hidden room, there were some items.

A small bag with hundreds of eyeball jades. Fang Yuan opened the bag and poured his loot in from today.

The jade pearls collided with one another, emitting a crisp sound.

There was another bag, and wild boar tusks were inside. But now Fang Yuan no longer needed to slaughter wild boars.

He used the White Boar Gu and the Jade Skin Gu to refine the White Jade Gu. The White Boar Gu had disappeared, and reduced his necessity for pork to 0.

The new White Jade Gu was more like the Jade Skin Gu, it consumed jade rocks.

Jade Skin Gu needed two liang of jade rocks every ten days. While the White Jade Gu needed eight liang of jade rocks every twenty days.

Normally speaking, the higher the rank, the longer interval there is for each meal. Rank two Gu usually feed every half a month, while Rank three Gu feed every month, or longer.

Of course, higher ranking Gu also consume more food. On average, the White Jade Gu consumed more in cost than the Jade Skin Gu and the White Boar Gu combined.

But to Fang Yuan, he had this rock forest and did not lack jade rocks. At the same time he did not need pork, so he did not need to kill wild boars, thus this saved him a lot of trouble and a lot of time.

Tying the little bag up, Fang Yuan picked up a bullskin water sack.

Inside the water sack, there was golden honey wine inside. A few days ago, Fang Yuan had relied on the Jade Skin Gu and endured the bees’ attacks, and gathered enough honey wine.

"I only have two and a half primeval stones left, it is time to go to the internal affairs hall and turn in the mission."

Fang Yuan kept the water sack well and returned to the tunnel, squeezing out of the rock crack and returning to the outside world.

It was sunset now.

The golden sunset of winter was in fact not cold, the weather bright and fair. The setting sun emerged with comfortable rays of a red-orange colour, the exquisite sunlight passing through the crown of pine trees and shining onto the mountain floor.

Walking alone, he headed towards the village.

Yet Fang Yuan did not go directly, but took a few reroutes to prevent the rock crack from being found out.

Winter wind blew on his face, this was the smell of freedom.

Back in the academy, he could only sneak out at night. Now that he was Rank two, he could move about freely in the day without any suspicion.

More importantly, the death of sickly snake and the others allowed Fang Yuan to move alone with fewer restraints.

The only thing is, Fang Yuan was now alone without any supporting group members. The following clan mission which occurs monthly, he had to complete one at least, and that would be difficult.

Now, after the small beast horde, all the groups had regrouped. Fang Yuan had missed the chance.

Because of his reputation, Fang Yuan was also ostracized by the Gu Masters. Joining other small groups was not going to be easy.

"So what if I’m left out, the more I float around at the brink, the less attention is on me, and the more advantageous it is for me. As for the clan mission, it is mandatory so I have to take it. But...."

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with cold light, he had plans already.

The clan mandates that every Gu Master had to accept a mission every month, but did not force them to complete it.

Being unable to complete the mission will result in falling evaluation. This was something no Gu Master wanted to see, thus they did their all to complete the missions.

But to Fang Yuan, this evaluation was crap!

Walking into the village, there was an endless stream of people walking along the limestone paths of the streets.

At this time, it is normally the peak period.

Many Gu Masters complete their missions with injuries and whatnot, returning to the village. After working for a day, farmers drag their muddy feet and tired bodies, quietly moving along.

In this world, living was not easy, it was full of pain and suffering.

The setting sun slowly dropped below the mountain top, giving out the last ray of warm light. This light would be diminished by the unevenly criss-crossed branches of the withering trees, becoming the fragments of time scattered upon the green jade walls of bamboo houses.

"Oh no, my toy," a girl cried out, chasing her spinning top among the crowd.

The spinning top rolled to Fang Yuan’s feet, and the girl also hit Fang Yuan’s leg, falling on the ground.

"Sorry, sorry! For offending lord Gu Master, please pardon us!" The little girl’s father hurried over. When he saw Fang Yuan’s clothing, his expression was white as paper, bringing the little girl and kneeling down, kowtowing to Fang Yuan.

The girl cried out of shock, pearls of tears trailing down her white and rosy face.

The walking mortals upon seeing this scene, turned away and avoided them like the plague.

Some Gu Masters stared coldly, before turning away and leaving.

"Stop crying, you troublemaker!" The father was frightened, angry and afraid, moving his hand to give her a slap, but Fang Yuan grabbed his hand, not allowing any movement.

"Just a small matter, no worries." Fang Yuan laughed lightly, touching the little girl’s head, softly consoling, "Don’t be afraid, it is okay."

The girl stopped crying, using her teary eyes to look at Fang Yuan, thinking this big brother was really gentle.

"Thank you lord, thank you lord for your kindness!" The girl’s father was overjoyed, kowtowing to Fang Yuan without a break.

Fang Yuan continued forward.

His rented house was not far away.

And on the ground floor of that bamboo house, his uncle Gu Yue Dong Tu stood, staring at Fang Yuan who was still a distance away, evidently waiting for him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

With his abilities, Gu Yue Dong Tu could easily find Fang Yuan’s residence.

He was wearing the Gu Master’s uniform which he rarely wore; he had leg wrappings around his legs and was wearing a red belt around his waist. Everything was neat and clean, and gave off a faint feeling of majesty.

He looked at Fang Yuan who was slowly coming over and his line of sight fell on the latter’s belt; deep emotions emerged in his heart.

"Only C grade aptitude but he has already broken to Rank two at sixteen, it is truly surprising. I really don’t know how he succeeded. However...this quick speed should be mostly attributed to the Liquor worm. Pity that Liquor worm has no use at Rank two."

Following that, he saw the faint smile hanging on Fang Yuan’s mouth.

This smile made Gu Yue Dong Tu’s heart chill.

Anger rushed through his mind, "This kid acts so calm, does he think he has me trapped within his palm?!"

Fang Yuan slowly walked over and stopped in front of Gu Yue Dong Tu, he knew the latter was definitely here for him.

Sure enough, Gu Yue Dong Tu opened his mouth, "Fang Yuan, I think we can have a talk."

"What do you want to talk about?" Fang Yuan slightly frowned.

Gu Yue Dong Tu laughed but then talked of another thing, "Do you know, I was the same as you, I became a Gu Master when I was fifteen."

"It was right at the time of wolf tide, there was a large number of casualties and we - students - also had no choice but to fight. I had B grade aptitude; I reached Rank two initial stage at sixteen, upper stage at seventeen and peak stage at eighteen. When I was nineteen, I was already beginning my charge to Rank three. At that time, I believed I could be a Rank three Gu Master at twenty."

"Hahaha, I was too frivolous, I thought I was above everyone else and thought I could accomplish anything. I even thought I was omnipotent, I simply didn’t know the immensity of heaven and earth. It was when I was twenty. I went out to do a mission and was beaten by a Xiong village’s Gu Master. I was on the brink of death but fortunately, medicine hall’s elder personally moved and saved me. But after that event, my aptitude dropped down to C grade, I couldn’t recover from this shock for a whole of eight years."

"At my twenty-ninth birthday, I started to have another look at myself and this world. I discovered that a single person’s strength was limited. So what if I had broken through to Rank three? Living in this society, the most important thing is not individual strength, but the connections with others."

"I began my life anew when I was thirty. I stepped down from the frontlines when I was forty-five. A hundred Gu Masters jointly petitioned to elect me as an elder dozens of times. Even though I only had the cultivation of Rank two peak stage, I couldn’t take that final step but there was also no need. I had already achieved success. Clan members call me as the ‘hidden elder’. Most of my peers have already passed away but my life sailed smoothly. I still have influence on many Gu Masters."

After giving a lengthy report, Gu Yue Dong Tu returned to the main topic. He looked at Fang Yuan, his mouth curved up, "Fang Yuan, you are too young and inexperienced, just like I was back then. Believing you can accomplish anything and finish everything by yourself. Hehe."

Gu Yue Dong Tu shook his head and continued, "But when you gain more experience, you will understand that human is a social animal and not a lone beast. Sometimes we need to lower our heads and take a step back. Being an extremist and arrogant person will only bring isolation and destruction. I believe you have already felt it; no group will take you and everyone is leaving you out. Even if you receive the family inheritance mission, what would that do? As a person who has been left out by everyone, you definitely won't have the chance to finish the task. Give up."

Fang Yuan indifferently looked at the middle-aged man; his expression, calm.

"I wonder what expression he will show if he knew I have five hundred years of experience?"

Fang Yuan's eyes couldn't help but reveal a trace a of smile when he thought this.

Actually, his uncle's way of thoughts had been his life's concept for a long period of time in his previous life.

Thus, he had created the Bloodwing Demon Sect, relying on the system and human emotions to create an enormous influence. Ten thousands would come forth with his one call, seizing resources and fighting enemies.

However, when he broke through to Rank six, he saw a completely new scene.

Gu Masters up to Rank five were mortals but Rank six were immortals. When he stood at that height and looked at the world, he suddenly comprehended — an enormous influence was indeed a powerful help but at the same time was an enormous burden.

No matter which world, there was only one thing which one could truly rely on; that was oneself.

Only that such people were usually weak. People couldn't endure loneliness and liked chasing after family love, friendship and romance to fill in their spirit. They indulged in being in a group and were afraid of being alone.

When they received setbacks, they would hide in the group, complain to relatives and share with friends. They didn't dare to confront their fears and defeats by themselves. When there was pain, they would be busy sharing it; when there was something good, they would be anxious to boast of it.

Gu Yue Dong Tu succeeded? No doubt he succeeded.

He couldn't walk his original path, so he went in another path and left for a new scene.

But at the same time, he was also a failure.

He had lowered his head because of one setback; he was no more than a coward, but he was content with his running away.

Gu Yue Dong Tu didn't know Fang Yuan had already labelled him as a coward. He saw Fang Yuan made no reply, so he thought the latter was absorbed in his speech.

He continued, "Fang Yuan, I won't beat around the bush, you are not Fang Zheng. If you give up your idea of inheriting the family assets, you will receive my friendship and you can use all my connections. I will also give you a thousand primeval stones. I know you are hard pressed for money these days and you are even late in paying the rent by two days, right?"

Fang Yuan indifferently smiled and spoke, "Uncle, you don’t wear these clothes often, right?"

Gu Yue Dong Tu was taken aback, he hadn’t expected Fang Yuan would suddenly talk about this.

Fang Yuan was indeed correct, he had already been retired for a long time now, this uniform was usually stored deep in a box. He had worn this uniform especially to meet Fang Yuan today; it was to increase his persuasion and deterrence power.

Fang Yuan sighed, he sized up Gu Yue Dong Tu’s clothes and continued, " A Gu Master’s uniform isn’t so clean and neat. It would be covered with sweat, mud and blood; it would be in shreds and patches; that is the smell of a Gu Master."

"You are old. Uncle. Your great ambitions and aspirations have already disappeared from your youth. These years, you have lived an easy life and it has corrupted your heart. You are vying for the family assets, not for cultivation but to maintain your rich life. With such a mentality, how could you obstruct me?"

Gu Yue Dong Tu’s face instantly turned ashen, anger surging through his mind.

There was always a group of ‘old’ people in this world. They touted their social experience everywhere. They considered others’ dreams as illusions; considered others’ passions as frivolous; considered others’ persistence as arrogance. They would seek their own existence and superiority by lecturing the later generations.

No doubt, Gu Yue Dong Tu was such a person.

He wanted to educate Fang Yuan but he had never thought that Fang Yuan not only didn’t listen to him or yield to him, but would instead lecture him!

"Fang Yuan!" Gu Yue Dong Tu shouted, "I wanted to guide and persuade you with good intentions as your elder but you don’t know what’s good from bad. Hmph, since you want to go against me, then so be it. I am not afraid to tell you that I already know the contents of your family inheritance mission. Young people don’t know the immensity of heaven and earth. Haha, I really want to see how you will complete this mission!"

Fang Yuan had a ridiculing smile on his face, there was no need to conceal now. Anyway, they could no longer reconcile, so there was no harm in enjoying Gu Yue Dong Tu’s upcoming wonderful expression.

Thereupon, he took out the bullskin water bag and opened it; a fragrance that was specific to honey wine floated out.

"What do you think is in here?" He asked.

Gu Yue Dong Tu turned pale with fright, his mood immediately sank to an all-time low.

"How can this be? Where did you get this honey wine?!" He roared, a stunned expression appeared on his face.

Fang Yuan ignored him, closed the cap, put the water bag back and walked towards the internal affairs hall.

Gu Yue Dong Tu’s forehead was covered with cold sweat, many thoughts surging in his mind.

"Where did he get the honey wine? I already made sure that as long as he looks for other groups, I would get the news the very first moment. Could he have done this alone? No, that’s not possible, he doesn’t have a defense Gu worm. Someone definitely helped him. No! The point now is not finding the reason. This kid already has the honey wine, he is going to hand over the mission!"

Gu Yue Dong Tu was already panicking as he thought this and no longer had the calm appearance from moments ago.

He quickly chased after Fang Yuan, "Fang Yuan, wait, everything can be discussed."

Fang Yuan didn’t speak and continued to walk, Gu Yue Dong Tu could only follow beside him.

"If one thousand primeval stones won’t do, then how about two thousand, no, two thousand five hundred." Gu Yue Dong Tu kept on increasing the offer.

Fang Yuan turned a deaf ear to Gu Yue Dong Tu, instead increasingly having some expectations towards the family assets. On seeing how Gu Yue Dong Tu was so anxious and was continuously raising the offer, the real family assets should definitely be very good.

Gu Yue Dong Tu was perspiring, he saw Fang Yuan was not moved, his face revealed a fierce look and he threatened, "Fang Yuan, think this through clearly! What end will you have if you offend me, hmph, don’t blame uncle for being cold-hearted if you miss an arm or leg in the future."

Fang Yuan laughed.

This Gu Yue Dong Tu was really a lamentable person. He was bound by rules and regulations; the water bag was clearly within his reach, but he didn’t dare to snatch it. If he didn’t even have this much guts, how could he succeed in fighting for the benefits?

Riches and danger went together. No matter which world, if you want to obtain something, you need to pay its price.

"Fang Yuan, you think everything will be well after you get the family assets! You are too young, you don’t have a clue about society and its dangers!" Gu Yue Dong Tu snarled by Fang Yuan’s ear.

Fang Yuan shook his head and ignored him, walking into the internal affairs hall in front of his glaring eyes.

Actually, he didn’t hate or even loathe this uncle of his.

He had seen a lot of such people and understood this type of people.

If Fang Yuan had enough primeval stones to support his cultivation, he wouldn’t even fight for the family assets. But what good will giving such insignificant benefits to uncle do?

For what reason was he reborn?

It was not for this momentary period, but to step to the highest peak. This type of passerby, as long as they didn’t interfere with this and only raged from the side, Fang Yuan would disdain to even step on them.

But unfortunately, this Gu Yue Dong Tu obstructed Fang Yuan’s path.

Since it was so, then he will stamp on this obstacle and move forward.

"Fang Yuan! Fang Yuan..." Uncle Gu Yue Dong Tu watched on as Fang Yuan stepped into the internal affairs hall; his whole body shook and veins bulged up on his forehead.

The light of the setting sun shone on his hair which was already turning white.

He was indeed old.

When he sustained that injury at the age of twenty, he had already aged.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Chapter 101... Well when I started out, having never translated before, I took so long (a few days) just translating the first chapter. I never would have thought I would reach 100 today, it was hard to imagine back then. Thank you everyone for your support!!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan arrived at the internal affairs hall and turned in the golden honey wine.

The middle-aged male Gu Master in charge was very surprised. While holding his pen, he asked, "You completed the asset mission already?"

"What do you think?" Fang Yuan retorted.

The middle-aged male Gu Master frowned, this was the mission he chose specifically to make life difficult for Fang Yuan. To think he completed it so quickly!

He looked at Fang Yuan, his eyes threatening, saying solemnly, "Young man, answer whatever I ask you. If you do not reply honestly, it will affect your evaluation. Let me ask you, did you complete this mission alone? Say the truth, we will investigate thoroughly."

"Of course I finished it myself." Fang Yuan replied.

"Good, I will note that down." The middle-aged Gu Master recorded while laughing internally, you’re just a newbie, how could you complete it alone? Such a falseful report, the clan would definitely investigate. You will have trouble then.

But unexpectedly Fang Yuan continued, "But this situation is slightly peculiar. That day I only went to scout out the area, but to think the bear was digging the beehive. Using that chance, I retrieved this honey wine."

"What?" The middle-aged man’s pen stopped, raising his head to look at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan shrugged, smiling, "What, did you think I could accomplish this mission alone? To say the truth, this is all thanks to you, finding this mission for me."

The middle-aged Gu Master was stunned on the spot, a complex and unexplainable feeling in his heart as he laughed dryly and continued to record in the book.

Fang Yuan stared at this man calmly, knowing full well that his extremely difficult asset mission was all ‘thanks’ to this man. Unfortunately, he had already completed the mission; even if the clan investigates, Fang Yuan had the appropriate set up already. He could stall Fang Yuan no longer.

Even if this matter was handled by him.

This is the grief of being in the system. Your status is the chain that restricts your actions.

"Alright, your mission is complete, you can inherit the family asset already. Except, your asset is all controlled by your uncle and aunt. The internal affairs hall will retrieve it for you, come back in three days." After recording, the middle-aged man said.

Fang Yuan nodded, he knew this rule, but he stared at the middle-aged man’s record paper, saying, "According to the clan rules, the internal affairs mission record needs to be confirmed by the accomplisher on the spot. Please let me see this record."

The middle-aged man’s expression changed, he did not expect Fang Yuan to be so familiar with the process. He snorted lightly while handling the report to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan looked at the record without any problems. A few hundred words with the final evaluation — Good.

He could immediately see the relationship between Gu Yue Dong Tu and this Gu Master.

This evaluation was definitely fair, showing that the middle-aged Gu Master did not give up on his work ethics just because of Gu Yue Dong Tu; the reason he helped Dong Tu was only because of their friendship and the transaction between them.

It was the ‘taking money to settle problems for others’ type of transaction.

Giving the report back to the middle-aged Gu Master, Fang Yuan left the internal affairs hall.

Outside, Gu Yue Dong Tu was already gone.

Fang Yuan could not help but laugh coldly. Gu Yue Dong Tu’s influence was not big enough to affect the internal affairs hall. Even if Gu Yue Bo the clan leader wanted to do this, he would have to go against the immense pressure from the clan elder circle and pay a huge price in his political career.

There was a phrase on earth, called ‘those who live in the society has to follow its rules.’

There were rules in the society, and that is a form of system. Those who follow the rules, being anyone’s pawn piece, restrict each other, and it is not up to them to control.

Unless an individual’s strength has reached the point where it can oppose the entire organisation, otherwise, joining an organisation and wanting to retain freedom was a pointless dream!

Borrowing the power of the clan system, Fang Yuan had already affirmed the truth of getting back his assets.

Regardless of Gu Yue Dong Tu or the clan leader, they will not pay the political price for interfering with such a small matter.

In the guest hall.

"Brother Dong Tu, there is nothing I can do anymore." The middle-aged Gu Master sighed, standing in front of Gu Yue Dong Tu.

Gu Yue Dong Tu’s face was grim as he remained silent on his seat.

"Are there really no more methods?" Beside him, Aunt fearfully asked in an anxious and indignant tone.

The middle-aged man shook his head, "The results are set in stone and have entered the internal affairs hall’s procedure. Unless the two clan elders in power or the clan leader interferes. Brother Dong Tu, this internal affairs hall’s inventory list states clearly the inheritance items and amount, please return them all and don’t make my life difficult." Saying so, he took out the inventory list.

The inventory had a ton of records, from expensive items like estates to cheap tables or chairs, other than that there were also the Gu worms that Fang Yuan’s parents had left behind.

After a Gu Master dies of battle, their Gu worms would be retrieved as an inheritance for their successor. This was a political move by the clan.

Aunt took a look at the list, before losing her composure, "Damn it, you cannot do this! This is all ours, OURS! Hubby, say something, think of something. Without these assets, what do we have left? Even our servants will be gone by half, we cannot afford it! "

Slap!

Gu Yue Dong Tu stood up and sent his palm flying towards Aunt, sending her to the ground from her seat.

"Noisy bitch!" Uncle flew into a rage, scolding in an agitated tone, "Frog in the well, the clan rules are there, you think you can choose not to return them? Dumb, ignorant!" Aunt used her hand to cover her cheeks, beaten into stupidity, lying on the ground in shock, staring at her husband blankly.

"Hmph!" Gu Yue Dong Tu grabbed the inventory list, gritting his teeth, scanning through.

His eyes were filled with blood traces as he breathed heavily, saying with hatred, "Return! All these things... I will return... NOT A THING LESS!!! But..."

His veins popped from his forehead, the muscles on his face twitching, his expression full of ruthlessness, "But Fang Yuan, I cannot stop the internal affairs hall, yet I can deal with you. Don’t think everything is well and alive now that you have these assets, hmph!"

Three days later, Fang Yuan walked out from the internal affairs hall with a stack of house and land deeds and sold human contracts in his hands.

"To think this inheritance is so abundant." He was slightly stunned.

Even though Fang Yuan had some estimations, after receiving this asset list, it was way out of his expectations.

Over ten mu of farmland, eight family servants and three bamboo buildings, and a wine tavern!

"No wonder uncle was so insistent, thinking of all ways to stop me." Fang Yuan could understand Gu Yue Dong Tu’s actions.

With such a large family asset, even in this world, one could live like a king.

Ten mu of farmland, eight family servants, put this aside first. Those three bamboo buildings were property assets – even if they were only rented out, every month, the rental amount was enough to support Fang Yuan’s current cultivation.

Other than that there is also a wine tavern. Note that there is only four wine-selling areas in the entire village.

Such an asset, if on earth, would be equivalent to having several mansions and a hotel, it is an aristocrat life with multiple servants.

What’s worth mentioning is, this world’s living conditions was way more ruthless and difficult, thus the village being the safest location, priced the property assets even more expensively than on earth.

"It is said that my Fang family, three generations ago, had a clan elder who held power and left much inheritance for his future generations. With these family assets, the seven Gu worms aside, even if that number doubled I can still afford them! But the crucial point isn’t this. It is this grass Gu!"

At this point, there was a grass Gu lying quietly in Fang Yuan’s palm.

It was dainty and delicate, the emerald green roots resembling a ginseng’s beard. There were some semi-transparent stolon that was like jadeite. Nine pieces of round-shaped leaves that were jade green covered and reflected each other, forming the shape of a round plate.

This was the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, the healing-type Rank two Gu worm.

If it came to normal healing, it had no difference from the Life breath grass.

The true value of the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass lay in its leaves - Every one of the leaves torn from it was a vitality leaf.

Vitality leaf is also a type of grass Gu. At rank one, it is an expendable type, disappearing after one use.

It had another flaw, and that was when a piece of vitality leaf is used to heal injuries, within the next hour, other vitality leaves had no more healing effect on the person.

But, all in all, it was easy to refine, and instantaneous healing together with the easy feeding of it made it the most popular healing technique among Rank two Gu Masters.

Healing Gu Master, every group needed one. But in times where multiple Gu Masters were injured, what can a single Gu Master do? If the healing Gu Master was the one who died, or got lost, what happens to the rest?

Thus, Gu Masters always prepared some healing methods for themselves, and the vitality leaf was the best method. Every Gu Master that roamed outside needed to prepare at least one or two.

"After I refine the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, every piece of leaf torn out would be a vitality leaf. Using the primeval essence to inject into the grass, I can make it grow new leaves. Thus, this Nine Leaf Vitality Grass can be said to be a moving goldmine. The most important asset of all... without exception. Having this Nine Leaf Vitality Grass is an avenue of business. In this dangerous world, which Gu Master does not get injured on their missions? They have a perpetual need for the vitality leaf."

"No wonder Gu Yue Dong Tu was known as the ‘hidden elder’ even after he retired many years ago; he still held great influence outside. So the reason was this Nine Leaf Vitality Grass."

Gu Masters needed the vitality leaf, and Gu Yue Dong Tu sold the leaf. With such a relationship, it is no question that his influence remained.

Fang Yuan was enlightened.

"Only in this world are clan relationships raised to such a level, restraining Uncle and Aunt. If this was earth, with such a conflict of interest, Fang Zheng and I would already have had been killed by them. This is not good, it seems I have some trouble ahead, Uncle and Aunt will not let go so easily."

"But I have already grown up with Rank two cultivation. If they want to deal with me and also consider the clan regulations, they would be highly restricted. Hmph, regardless of what they do, just show me what you’ve got. Dealing with it as it comes, I will handle them all."

Fang Yuan walked on the street, his eyes glimmering in brilliance.

A gust of winter wind blew on his face.

It was still far from spring, but Fang Yuan knew that ‘spring’ (start of his new life) had already come.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The wine tavern wasn’t big, but it was in a good location; it was at the eastern side of the village near the eastern gate.

The flow of people was the largest at the eastern and northern gates. Thus, the wine tavern’s business was pretty good whether it was day or night.

"Young lord, please take a seat." An old man lowered his head to Fang Yuan.

Few waiters wiped the benches and tables with a fawning and flattering smile towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan shook his head. He didn’t sit, but walked around the tavern, sizing everything. He thought inwardly, "This is my wine tavern."

This wine tavern only had one floor, but it had an underground wine cellar.

Huge and square black tiles covered the floor. There were eight square tables; two tables were set against the wall and other six tables were surrounded by four benches.

A dark brown, long sales counter could be seen immediately upon entering the wine tavern. There were papers, brush, ink stones and also an abacus on the counter. Behind the counter was the liquor cabinet where all sizes of wine jars were displayed. Some of these were large wine jars of black pottery, and some were small and bright porcelain wine bottles.

Fang Yuan was walking around as he wished; the old man and waiters didn’t dare to sit, they could only follow close behind.

They were restless, the news of the landlord changing was too abrupt. The previous landlord Gu Yue Dong Tu was cunning as a ghost, he was strict and acrimonious; they were under a lot of pressure. This boy in front of them was actually able to take the wine tavern from Gu Yue Dong Tu’s hands. Such a method of snatching was shocking. So these people’s gazes towards Fang Yuan carried unease and fear.

Fang Yuan suddenly stopped, "It is good. But this store is a bit small."

The old man immediately walked forward and bowed to answer, "Young lord, we put sheds outside every summer and lay tables and benches. But it is winter now and the wind is biting cold, no one would sit outside even if we put up sheds. So we took them down."

Fang Yuan slightly turned. He glanced at this old man, "You are the shopkeeper?"

The old bent his waist even lower and said even more respectfully, "I dare not, I dare not. Young lord, this wine tavern is yours, whoever you choose as a shopkeeper is the shopkeeper."

Fang Yuan nodded then glanced at the waiters; they all seemed to be competent.

If it was on earth, he would be anxious that this shopkeeper and the waiters would team up and scheme against him, the owner. But in this world, Gu Masters were high and mighty, killing mortals would only require a thought. Even if Uncle and Aunt egged them, these mortals wouldn’t dare to go against Fang Yuan.

"Alright, bring the accounting books and bring me a pot of tea." Fang Yuan sat down.

"Yes, young lord." The shopkeeper and waiters moved hurriedly.

There were as much as sixteen account books, and every book used bamboo papers which had a light green hue. The bamboo papers were more brittle than Xuan paper and were suitable for the damp atmosphere of the Southern Border.

Fang Yuan casually picked up a few books and skimmed over them, asking some questions occasionally.

The shopkeeper gave prompt replies; soon, his forehead was covered with sweat.

Fang Yuan had created the Bloodwing Demon Sect and taught countless people in his previous life. He was rich in experience and his eyes were shrewd. Others might be confused and dazzled when they see the account books; but in his eyes, all the doubtful points were as clear as crystal.

This wine tavern was the second biggest asset after the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass; Fang Yuan naturally wanted to firmly grasp it.

There were only some small problems in the account books which could be attributed to mistakes and negligence. These mortals didn’t dare to be presumptuous.

However, when Fang Yuan turned to the last page, he saw that this month’s income had already been taken by Gu Yue Dong Tu.

"Young lord, the previous landlord personally took it. We didn’t dare to resist." The shopkeeper replied while wiping his sweat. His aged body was already trembling and his face had become very pale.

Fang Yuan was silent, he put down the account books on the table and glanced at the shopkeeper.

The shopkeeper immediately felt a huge pressure as if a mountain was pressing down on him. He was scared witless, kneeling on the ground.

Seeing the shopkeeper kneeling down, the waiters also astutely knelt down one by one.

Fang Yuan calmly sat and turned his gaze towards them.

The waiters immediately felt like they were in a world of ice, they couldn’t resist Fang Yuan’s aura. They were all silent.

To these mortals, the wine tavern’s work was both stable and safe, the ideal job. They didn’t want to lose this job.

Fang Yuan stopped upon seeing that his authority had been established, going too far could end up being detrimental. He slowly spoke, "I won’t bother about the past matters. I saw that your wages are somewhat low; waiter’s wages will be raised by twenty percent and the shopkeeper’s by forty percent from now on. Work properly and you will get more benefits."

Fang Yuan stood up and walked to the entrance.

The group of people kneeling on the ground were stunned for a good while before coming back to their senses. All of their eyes brimmed with tears that flowed down their faces.

"Thank you young lord for your great kindness!"

"Young lord is compassionate, we will definitely work with all our strength!"

"Young lord, you are our benefactor, please take care."

Tearful sounds came from behind, there were also crisp sounds of forehead smashing on the black tiles from continuous kowtowing.

Use might alongside mercy, this was the only way the top controlled its subordinates no matter in which world. Might was the foundation and under this might, any small kindness would be magnified by countless times.

A benefit without might would only give a title of a good samaritan. But as time passed, people would no longer feel grateful for such kindness and it would instead result in greed and disaster.

"But these ways to control people are all unorthodox methods. It would be highly esteemed on Earth, but in this world, raising one’s own strength is the one true way. No, even on Earth, strength is first."

Fang Yuan thought of the Scarlet Red Imperial Ancestor. (1)

In those days, the Scarlet Red Imperial Ancestor had gone through and experienced a trial and he had come to a conclusion: Political power comes from guns!

This was the naked truth – strength was the foundation of any political power. So-called authority is only an accessory to strength.

Actually, not only authority, wealth and beauties were also derivatives of strength.

Fang Yuan headed towards the three bamboo houses after leaving the wine tavern.

These three bamboo houses were rented out by uncle and aunt; they were practically full.

This world paid attention to more birth. To the ever-growing huge population, the space in the village seemed narrow.

The clan had the system of the eldest son inheriting the property. Other sons and daughters would have to rely on their effort. Even if a lot of people relied on clan politics to get a meager split of the family assets and work hard outside, they might not even be able to save enough to buy a bamboo house in their whole life.

On one hand, raising Gu consumed a lot and on the other, the village had limited space, so the house prices were very expensive.

They could naturally build house outsides the village but that was not safe. Wild beasts and snakes would always roam around and could intrude into the houses. Above all, every time a beast tide occurred, all the houses outside the village would be destroyed.

Extending the village was the only way to solve this.

But extending meant the area to defend would increase and the village wouldn't be able to defend against beast tide's attacks. Moreover, if the area was big then it would be difficult to guard against and search for infiltrating Gu Masters of other villages.

Gu Yue village had extended several times in history but had been devastated by beast tides. After learning from this lesson, the current village size was already the largest.

Fang Yuan skimmed through it and after understanding some situations, he already got the picture.

These three bamboo houses were operated very well by Uncle and Aunt. The rent was also customized to get more profits, so he might as well just let it run like that. He calculated that the earnings from these three bamboo houses were not as much as the wine tavern but the difference was not much.

The overall situation was much better than Fang Yuan's original expectations.

Just the day before yesterday, he was left with nothing and had become so poor that his primeval stones count didn't even reach five. But now, all of a sudden, he rose to the list of richest people in the clan.

The female tenants in these rented houses were all Rank two female Gu Masters in difficulty. After knowing Fang Yuan's identity, their gaze towards him turned amorous.

If they could be near to Fang Yuan and get married to him, then they would no longer have to rush about facing danger; their lives would be smooth and steady.

Such a life was what they were pursuing and using all their strength to fight for.

That is to say that if Fang Yuan wanted, he could retire and live a rich life now like his uncle used to.

With a tap of a finger, many female Gu Masters would flock to him.

"But that is not what I want." Fang Yuan stood at the second floor of the bamboo house, letting female Gu Masters’ provocative gazes fall upon his body. He frowned as he held the railings and gazed afar.

Far away, stretched of green mountains went on continuously, looking like a sleeping giant with the gray-blue sky as its quilt.

The endless rivers and boundless earth, when can I move unhindered on them?

Amidst the winds of change, dragons and snakes rise from the lands(2), when can I look down upon all living things?

"Since rebirth, I have been drifting with the waves like a rootless duckweed. I spared no effort to get the family assets; with this base, I can be said to have become independent and gained my footing. Next would be to unearth the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance and put all my effort in cultivating to Rank three, then I can leave this village and go out to the wide world!" Fire burned in Fang Yuan’s deep black eyes.

Qing Mao mountain was one of the countless mountains in the Southern Border. And the Southern Border was only a corner of this world.

Too small, too small! How could such a place sustain his lofty ambitions?

Compared to his ambitions, these family assets - which others were cracking their brains to obtain, which was a thing of yearning - was as tiny as dust.

"Big brother, come down, I need to talk to you." At some point in time, Gu Yue Fang Zheng had reached the bamboo house. He looked up at Fang Yuan and yelled.

"Hmm?" Fang Yuan’s train of thoughts were broken, he looked down at Fang Zhen with an indifferent look.

The brothers’ eyes met; it was silent...

Younger brother Fang Zheng was downstairs and was shrouded by the shadow of another house. He was facing up; his eyebrows were raised and his two eyes were flickering with light.

Big brother Fang Yuan was upstairs; sunlight shone on him, his slightly drooping eyes had pupils as dark as night.

Similar faces reflected in each other’s eyes.

As to his little brother’s appearance, Fang Yuan wasn’t surprised. Fang Zheng was a weapon of Uncle and Aunt to fight for family assets.

And yet, so what?

Fang Yuan looked down at Fang Zheng, sighing inwardly, "A grade aptitude, but is nothing more than a pawn...truly insignificant."

(1) It’s referring to Chairman Mao. Writing his name directly in chinese texts are taboo, it seems.

(2) 龙蛇起陆 - It’s along the meaning of ‘an earthquake is about to happen, and all kinds of living creatures feel fretful and uneasy, they start to move about

lively. It’s a visualisation description.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

The last chapter of the batch. I hope you guys enjoyed it ;3 ...if I have time later on tonight, I might do and post today’s chapter too. Hoho~

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Eventually, Fang Yuan did not go downstairs, and his brother did not go up.

The two persisted, and the distance between the floors indicated that the distance between the brothers were enlarging.

The talk was not smooth.

"Brother, you are just too much! To think that you are such a person!" Downstairs, Fang Zheng stood, his brows creasing tightly as he screamed.

Fang Yuan was not angry, but laughed lightly, "Oh, what kind of person am I?"

"Brother!" Fang Zheng sighed deeply, "After our parents died, Uncle and Aunt adopted us. They have the gratitude of raising us. To think that you are so heartless, returning favor with revenge. Big brother, is your heart made of stone?"

Saying so, Fang Zheng’s tone was slightly trembling.

"So strange, this inheritance is rightfully mine, what is there to be said about revenge and favour." Fang Yuan retorted unenthusiastically.

Fang Zheng gritted his teeth, acknowledging, "Yes! I know, this inheritance is from our parents. But you cannot take them all, you have to at least leave some for Aunt and Uncle to let them enjoy their life in retirement, right? Doing so, you really are making our hearts bitterly disappointed, you let me look down on you!"

Pausing, he continued, "Did you ever return home to see the living conditions that they are in now? Half the servants at home were already retrenched, they cannot afford it. Brother, how can you be so cruel!"

Fang Zheng’s eyes were red, clutching his fist, he screamed at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, he knew that Uncle and Aunt had controlled the assets all these years and must have amassed a huge fortune. Even if this was not so, just with the profits at the end of the month from the wine tavern, they would be able to afford all those servants. They are only pretending to be poor so Fang Zheng would come and find trouble.

Fang Yuan used his gaze to size up Fang Zheng and said directly, "My adorable little brother, if I insist on not returning the assets, what can you do? Although you are sixteen, you have already acknowledged them as parents, don’t forget that. You have lost the rights to the inheritance."

"I know!" Fang Zheng’s gaze had a divine light, "That’s why I am here to challenge you to a written war challenge (1). On the arena, let’s have a match to decide victory, if I win, return a portion of the family asset to mother and father."

This world’s Gu battles were like the Earth’s martial arts competitions.

Between clansmen, if they had unresolvable conflict, they could use this method to settle the problem. There were many types of Gu battles – 1 versus 1, 2 versus 2, battle of arts, battle of strength, and life and death battle.

Of course, Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng would not be so serious as to fight to the death if they had a Gu battle.

Seeing the brother’s determined expression, Fang Yuan suddenly laughed, "It seems that before this, Uncle and Aunt specifically told you huh. But, as someone who lost to me before, you have such confidence of winning me?"

Fang Zheng squinted, unwillingly thinking of what happened not long ago – the humiliation on the arena.

Ever since, every time he thought about it, rage would rise from his heart. This rage was directed towards Fang Yuan as well as himself.

He hated himself for being useless, being frantic at the critical moment. As a matter of fact, he had underperformed in that battle. His tempo was taken away by Fang Yuan, and he only thought of using the Jade Skin Gu at the last moment. In the end, he lost abruptly and very indignantly.

Fang Zheng’s anger towards himself fuelled even more intense indignance.

Thus, unavoidably, he had such a thought –"If I could redo it, I can definitely perform better and defeat my older brother!"

Thus, when Uncle and Aunt complained to him, Fang Zheng not only wanted to take back the inheritance for the two of them, but also wanted to fight Fang Yuan again to prove himself.

"Things are different now, brother." Fang Zheng looked at Fang Yuan, his eyes burning with determination, fires blazing around him, "Last time, I performed badly and lost to you. This time, I have successfully refined the Rank two Gu worm Moon Raiment. You cannot break my defense anymore!"

Saying so, he emitted a vague light blue fog around his body.

The fog enveloped him, and in the mist, it eventually formed into a long floating ribbon.

The ribbon looped around his waist and coiled around his two limbs. (2) The middle section of the ribbon drifted above his head, causing Fang Zheng to give out a sort of graceful and mysterious magical breath.

"Indeed, it is the Moon Raiment, how foolish, revealing your trump card like that." Fang Yuan stood on the stairs, seeing this scene, his gaze twinkled.

Moon Raiment was a Rank two Gu worm with defensive properties. Although the defense was slightly lower than the White Jade Gu, it could assist others in defending and had greater contribution towards small group fights.

With this Gu in his hands, Fang Yuan really could not break Fang Zheng’s defense with his bare fists. Sending the fist over was like hitting cotton, absolutely losing its kinetic force.

Even if he used the Moonlight Gu, he could not breakthrough unless it was the

Moonglow Gu. Thus if Fang Zheng wanted to fight and invited Fang Yuan to a Gu battle, according to the clan rules he has to accept. Without revealing the White Jade Gu, Fang Yuan might really lose.

A grade is A grade, and with the clan leader’s nurture, Fang Zheng is growing rapidly. It could be said that, during the academy phase, Fang Yuan suppressed Fang Zheng. But now he had to admit, Fang Zheng was starting to show the brilliance of a genius and was showing imposing threat to Fang Yuan.

"But, you think I did not expect this?" Fang Yuan stared down at his brother, his lips curling.

He said to Fang Zheng, "My persistent little brother, of course you can challenge me. But have you gotten the approval of your teammates? If during the battle, your group has to go on a mission, how would you choose?"

Fang Zheng paused; indeed, he did not think of this.

He had to admit, his brother was right. The group had to work together, and if teammates wanted to go on individual operations, they would need to report first.

"Thus, you might as well go back, find that leader Gu Yue Qing Shu of yours, and explain the situation. I’ll wait for you guys at the northern gate’s wine tavern," Fang Yuan said.

Fang Zheng hesitated slightly, then gritted his teeth, "I’ll go now, brother! But let me tell you, delay tactics don’t work."

He came to Gu Yue Qing Shu’s residence, and the family servant led him in.

Gu Yue Qing Shu was practising using his Gu.

His body was moving around in the garden’s arena stage, extremely agile and fit.

"Green vine Gu," he lightly said, and from his right palm, a green vine shot out. It was around fifteen meters. Qing Shu grabbed the vine and used it as a whip, splitting, coiling and sweeping around.

Pow pow pow!

The shadow of the whip swept across the floor, sending the concrete on the broken ground flying.

"Pine needle Gu." He suddenly kept the vine whip, and flipped his long green hair.

Immediately, from among the hair pine needles shot out like rain.

The pine needles hit the wooden puppet not far away, piercing its entire body and creating close and numerous pinholes.

"Moonwhirl Gu." Next, he placed out his left palm, and a green-coloured crescent insignia glowed in a bright green light.

With a flick of his wrist, the green moonblade was sent flying.

Different from the trajectory of a normal moonblade, this green moonblade was more curved. While flying in the air, it travelled in an arc, making it harder for enemies to predict.

"As expected of the number one Gu Master among the Rank two, Senior Qing Shu!

With such an attack, I can’t even last for ten breaths. He’s really too strong." Fang Zheng stared with his mouth wide open, forgetting his original intention in the first place.

"Oh? Fang Zheng, why are you here. The previous mission just ended, you have to rest more, got to keep that balance between work and rest!" Gu Yue Qing Shu upon noticing Fang Zheng, kept away his fighting aura and smiled gently.

"Senior Qing Shu." Fang Zheng bowed to him respectfully.

This respect was sincerely from his heart. Ever since he joined the group, Fang Zheng had been attentively taken care of by Qing Shu, and in Fang Zheng’s eyes, Qing Shu was like an elder brother.

"Oh Fang Zheng, it seems you have business with me?" Qing Shu wiped the sweat off his forehead while going towards Fang Zheng with a smile.

"It’s like this..." Fang Zheng said his intentions, as well as the entire story.

Hearing so, Qing Shu’s eyebrows slightly rose. The truth is that he had heard a lot about Fang Yuan, and when compared to Fang Zheng, he was more interested in Fang Yuan.

"Might as well meet him for once."

Thinking so, Gu Yue Qing Shu nodded, "I have something to discuss with your brother as well. In that case, let’s go together."

Fang Zheng was overjoyed, "Thank you senior!"

"Hehehe, no need to thank me, we’re in the same group." Qing Shu patted Fang Zheng’s shoulders.

Fang Zheng could feel warmth in his heart, his eyes unwillingly turning red.

The two got to the tavern. A shop assistant had been expecting them all along, and brought them inside.

On a square table by the window, there were several side dishes and two wine cups, and a pot of wine.

Fang Yuan sat on one side, and when he saw Gu Yue Qing Shu, he smiled and extended his hand, "Please sit."

Gu Yue Qing Shu nodded to Fang Yuan. He took his seat, then said to Fang Zheng, "Fang Zheng, go take a stroll around, I’ll talk with your brother."

He was a smart person. Upon seeing only two wine cups, he knew that Fang Yuan wanted to have a chat alone.

The truth is, he had such intentions as well.

Fang Zheng acknowledged and left the shop indignantly.

"I know you, Fang Yuan." Qing Shu smiled, opening the wine pot skillfully, pouring a cup for Fang Yuan and one for himself.

"You are a very interesting, smart person." Saying so, he raised his cup towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan laughed and raised his cup as well to return the toast.

The two drank it in one shot together.

Qing Shu poured another for Fang Yuan again, as well as for himself.

As he poured, he said, "There’s no point beating about the bush when talking to a smart person. I’ll be open, I want to buy your Liquor worm, how much would you sell it?"

He did not ask Fang Yuan if he was selling it, but asked directly – How much, showing his immense confidence.

He was the number one Rank two Gu Master. At a young age, he reached Rank two peak stage, overpowering the Rank two upper stage Chi Shan and Mo Yan.

Once he appeared, he took the initiative and poured the wine and toasted Fang Yuan.

His confidence together with his gentle smile formed a unique aura. It was not overbearing and forceful which could make people disgusted, but it made others feel his persistence.

His long green hair, and the winter sunlight shining through the window and unto his fair, gently streaked face. This let Fang Yuan subconsciously think of the bright and beautiful radiance of spring.

"A truly talented person. What a shame," Fang Yuan thought.

He was not bothered by Qing Shu’s act of taking over the initiative. In fact Fang Yuan was slightly appreciative of him, and he sighed lightly.

(1). Written war challenge - SHAOLIN SHOWDOWN!! Gu battle showdown basically.

(2). If you really have no idea what it looks like, perhaps this link might help (tell me if it ever gets broken?) https://vignette4.wikia.nocookie.net/valkyriecrusade/images/0/0e/Celestial_Raiment_H.png/revision/latest?cb=20170718080803

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

I had some free time today, so here’s Monday’s chapter specially for you guys. At least you guys know what Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng said.. and not much of a cliffhanger ending so you guys don’t have to suffer :D

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Gu Yue Qing Shu was also an orphan like Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng.

His parents had died in a wolf tide when he was young.

He was personally raised by clan leader Gu Yue Bo.

After he was tested to have B grade aptitude, he received Gu Yue Bo’s personal guidance. His aptitude was outstanding and could be said to be at the top among the B grades, it could even be called ‘false A grade’. Gu Yue Bo had been raising him as a clan leader candidate.

Gu Yue Qing Shu had a warm temperament and was amicable. He was highly praised and received well by the clan members. He was also very loyal to the clan; Fang Zheng’s arrival cut off his hopes of inheriting the clan leader position, but he was instead happy and wholeheartedly took care of Fang Zheng.

On Earth, Yue Fei(1), Wei Zheng(2) and Bao Zheng(3) were people with such character.

Unfortunately, in the wolf tide a year later, the Northern gate would fall; to block this gap and protect the clan members, he stepped forward. In the end, he forcefully used a Rank three Gu with his Rank two cultivation, becoming an impenetrable fortress and successfully defending the village.

However, his aperture was destroyed because of this and he finally turned into a treeman and died.

Thus, Gu Yue Qing Shu had left a profound impression on Fang Yuan.

When he saw Fang Yuan sighing, Gu Yue Qing Shu naturally didn’t think that Fang Yuan was looking back on his death and thought Fang Yuan was vexed due to the Liquor worm.

He smiled, "Fang Yuan, you should already be clear on the limits of Liquor worm. The Liquor worm is only a Rank one Gu worm and can only refine Rank one green copper essence. But you are already a Rank two Gu Master; the Liquor worm has no use towards red steel primeval essence. Although you have a wine tavern now and can easily raise the Liquor worm, why would you vainly raise something that has no use to you?"

He switched the thread of discussion, "The Liquor worm has no use to you but it is useful to other Rank one Gu Masters. Especially in the awakening ceremony next spring, there will be a new batch of students and the Liquor worm will be of great help to them. So, you might as well just sell the Liquor worm to the clan and contribute to clan’s strength."

Fang Yuan didn’t reply.

Qing Shu pondered, guessing Fang Yuan’s intention, "I understand now. You are reluctant to part with the Liquor worm, you even want to fuse it. If I am not wrong, you should be thinking of going the route of the Rank two White Chrysalis, then the Rank three Mist Perspiring butterfly fusion route, right?"

"This is the most widespread and also the most practical recipe. The Mist Perspiring butterfly is a great Gu worm. But the White Chrysalis has no ability. This fusion route wouldn’t have much value to you. You have C grade aptitude and now have Rank two cultivation; White Chrysalis doesn’t have any ability and will only squander food, it will be of no help to you."

"What is the possibility of you reaching Rank three? Even if you succeeded in advancing to Rank three, you will probably be middle-aged by then. Will you raise the useless White Chrysalis for tens of years? It will be better to use the expenses of raising White Chrysalis on nurturing Gu worms. That is more practical and will be more helpful to you, am I wrong?"

"Liquor worm’s true value lies in refining primeval essence and raising a small realm. If you go through this fusion, you will only be treating the Liquor worm as a material, won’t that be a pity?"

All Gu worms had only one ability.

For instance, the Spring Autumn Cicada was a Rank six Gu, but it only had the ability of rebirth.

The new Gu worm that comes from fusion usually took an ability from one Gu worm and enhanced it. White Jade Gu, for instance, took the defensive ability of Jade Skin Gu and enhanced it, while losing the White Boar Gu’s ability to gain increased strength.

That is to say, if someone obtained White Jade Gu, it would only help in defense and couldn’t increase the Gu Master’s strength.

Qing Shu was correct, the Liquor worm’s value was in refining primeval essence and raising its stage by a small realm.

To Gu Masters, this was another form of increasing their primeval essence reserves while also being an enormous help in nourishing their aperture and increasing their cultivation speed.

If one went through ‘White Chrysalis, Mist Perspiring Butterfly’ fusion route, the resulting Gu worms won’t have the ability to refine primeval essence which would truly be a pity.

In fact, Flower Wine Monk took this route and refined the Mist Perspiring Butterfly from the Liquor worm, using it to enchant women and commit evil acts. After his death, the Mist Perspiring Butterfly continued to degenerate due to not having sufficient food and finally reverted back to Liquor worm.

Qing Shu’s eyes flashed upon seeing the silent Fang Yuan and continued, "Actually, our clan has a recipe; this recipe raises Liquor worm to Rank two Moon Harbinger Gu then the Rank three Seven Fragrances Liquor worm. Seven Fragrances Liquor worm has the ability to refine primeval essence."

"Fang Yuan, if you don’t want to sell the Liquor worm, then we could change it to a business transaction. You will sell the Liquor worm to the clan and if the clan can refine it to the Seven Fragrances Liquor worm, you will have the right to use it for five years. If it fails, the clan will compensate for it. What do you think?"

Doing this meant the clan will bear all the risks for the fusion. With such a superior condition, others might eagerly agree to it.

But Fang Yuan only sneered coldly in his heart.

He knew himself.

With his 44% C grade aptitude, advancing to Rank three was almost impossible. In his previous life, Fang Yuan had stalled at Rank two for over a hundred years before finally and coincidentally obtaining a talent-raising Gu worm and becoming a Rank three Gu Master.

Five years of using rights sounded wonderful but to Fang Yuan, it was like trying to catch the moon’s reflection in water.

Gu Yue Qing Shu had said so because he saw Fang Yuan’s ambitions to charge to Rank three, so he intentionally threw this sweet bait to lure Fang Yuan.

But he had miscalculated from the start!

In Fang Yuan’s memories, there was the best recipe for the Liquor worm fusion.

First was advancing the Liquor worm to Rank two Four Flavors Liquor worm then to the Rank three Seven Fragrances Liquor worm. Whether it was Four Flavors Liquor worm or Seven Fragrances Liquor worm, both had the ability to refine primeval essence.

However, it was not easy to refine the Four Flavors Liquor worm.

First of all, its fusion required two Liquor worms; Fang Yuan only had one currently. Next, the fusion required four types of wine, and these four wines should be of four different flavors: sour, sweet, bitter and spicy.

Let’s not talk about the difficulty in purchasing a Liquor worm with there being hardly any supply of it in the market.

Let’s look at these four wines first.

Spicy wines were the most common, ordinary white spirit wine were all of this type. For sour wines, you could get bayberry wine and grape wines; rice wines could fit the sweet wine criteria. But as for the bitter wines, it needed some thinking to be done.

From what Fang Yuan knew, there was a type of green bitter wine which was brewed by using Ai grass. Unfortunately the Ai village was immeasurably far away, how would he obtain it?

Fang Yuan had detained the Liquor worm not because he wanted to wait and sell it for a high price. Rather, Fang Yuan had all along wanted to go through this fusion route; using any other fusion routes could be counted as ruining the Liquor worm.

How could Gu Yue Qing Shu know what Fang Yuan had in mind.

Seeing Fang Yuan not making any moves to agree at all, he threw his trump card, "Fang Yuan, if you sell the Liquor worm, I can mediate between you and Fang Zheng. At least, he won’t use the family assets to challenge you to a Gu battle. You also know the clan rules; the challenge must be accepted. Even if the Gu battle request is not approved by the higher-ups, it must first be accepted. Even if you are sure of your defeat and don’t want to go to the arena, directly throwing in the towel, you still need to accept the challenge."

This world promoted martial spirit; clans didn’t need cowards. If there was a challenge, Gu Masters must accept them. Accepting the challenge proves that you are not a coward. Even if you admit your defeat in front of the public, that too would be a conduct of courage.

Under the oppression of the ruthless environment, this had automatically turned and formed into a system of values.

The clan’s higher-ups would arbitrate according to the results of the Gu battles and resolve any problems and disputes.

The premise of a Gu battle was to have a reason. The challenger should be in the right and the challenge should be reasonable, or the two parties could both make an agreement similar to betting, only then would the Gu battle be approved.

"Fang Zheng’s Gu battle request is reasonable and fair; it will be approved. If this happens, no matter the result - whether loss or win - will be judged by the elders. Who do you think the elders will side with between you and Fang Zheng?"

Qing Shu’s smile became bigger, he looked at Fang Yuan with a burning gaze and continued to add pressure, "Fang Yuan, if you win, you will simply have to part with a tiny bit less of the family assets. But if you sell the Liquor worm to the clan, you will be contributing to the clan. The clan will remember you. I can also guarantee that Fang Zheng would never challenge you on the basis of family assets."

The implication was that Fang Zheng could still challenge Fang Yuan with different reasons.

This was one of the things Gu Yue Qing Shu and Gu Yue Bo would be happy to see. They hoped Fang Zheng would defeat Fang Yuan and break the shadow in his heart to build up his self-confidence.

Fang Yuan suddenly smiled, he had been listening to Gu Yue Qing Shu’s chatters from the beginning. And now, he finally spoke.

"You think I will lose if we fight?" Fang Yuan asked Qing Shu.

Qing Shu also smiled, "Fights are full of variations, no one can foretell what might happen. However, I need to remind you, Fang Zheng has already refined the Rank two Moonveil Gu; you won’t have much of an advantage."

"Hahaha." Fang Yuan shook his head, and the smile on his face became bigger, "I will lose, I’d definitely lose."

Qing Shu stared blankly.

Fang Yuan stared into his eyes and continued, "Not only will I lose, I will even lose very miserably. I will hand over all my parents’ inheritance, and from then on I will sleep on the street and wander about begging in the village."

"You...." Gu Yue Qing Shu was smart, he understood Fang Yuan’s true intentions. His expression became grave; no longer was it confident and graceful.

Fang Yuan’s words were a bare threat.

Fang Zheng was being raised as the next clan leader; if it was made known that he had recognized others as his parents, used his cultivation and aptitude to bully his big brother, snatching the inheritance, then there would be a devastating damage to his reputation.

Even on Earth, a person who did this would be shamed and disdained by people. Let alone in this world where the values of family love was raised to a whole new level.

It wouldn’t be anything if Fang Zheng wanted to become a devil. But he was going to become a clan leader, a leader of the righteous path, and that meant he needed to uphold virtue and cherish it.

For a moment, Gu Yue Qing Shu looked dazedly at Fang Yuan. He discovered that despite hearing a lot about Fang Yuan, he had still underestimated the latter.

The dominance that he built up from his many sentences since the moment they met, had now crumbled with a bang.

Fang Yuan hit the nail on the head, directly indicating the main part to Gu Yue Qing Shu.

If it was another person, Fang Yuan would have spoken differently. But Gu Yue Qing Shu was someone who had extreme loyalty to the clan and in Fang Yuan’s previous life, he would rather sacrifice himself to protect the clan. Thus, he had no choice but to worry because of Fang Yuan’s threat.

However, he quickly calmed down, his eyes staring at Fang Yuan as he spoke between clenched teeth, "But you won’t do this. Because the inheritance has been your goal all along, how will you cultivate if you give up the inheritance?"

Fang Yuan wasn’t afraid. He met Qing Shu’s gaze, his lips curled up in a smile, "That’s why I believe you will give up the notion of buying the Liquor worm and also persuade Fang Zheng to not challenge me, am I wrong?"

Others might not be able to persuade Fang Zheng, but Gu Yue Qing Shu had this capability.

Fang Yuan had no doubt on this.

The situation was in a deadlock.

After a moment, Gu Yue Qing Shu lowered his eyes.

He stared at the wine cup in his hand for a while and suddenly laughed.

"Interesting, we will do just that." His tone carried a hint of melancholy.

(1). Yue Fei (岳飞) - [1103 AD - 1142 AD] Song Dynasty patriot and general.

(2). Wei Zheng (魏征) - [580 AD - 643 AD] Tang politician and historian, notorious as a critic, editor of History of the Sui Dynasty.

(3). Bao Zheng (包拯) - [999 AD - 1062 AD] Northern song official renowned for his honesty.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

In the end I ended up having a really busy week ~_~) I also had to work super late on Saturday! The week’s chapters have been translated already, but I still need to edit them, and it’s 4.30AM now, I only managed to finish editing 3 chapters (CH105-107). So I’ll post those for now and finish up the rest and post CH111 as well tomorrow c: (Chapter 108 is so long, longer than a normal chapter by 50% Q_Q)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

A day later.

On the futon, Fang Yuan sat cross-legged.

A large face-sized white light was an arms’ distance from his face, silently floating.

Fang Yuan took out piece after piece of primeval stones from his money bag and threw them into the light ball.

The white light contracted, but became more eye-piercing.

When it shrunk to a fist-size the white light was glaring, and Fang Yuan could only squint his eyes to observe it.

"Probably the last piece..." Fang Yuan played around with the primeval stone in his hand, knowing that the critical moment was here.

He tossed the primeval stone into the light ball.

He could vaguely see the primeval stone floating around in the light ball, like snow dropping into boiling water, constantly melting away.

A large amount of rock powder fell on the ground.

The primeval stone vanished, and the light ball exploded!

With a bam, the three Gu worms flew in three directions. One fell on the bed, while the other two flew to the walls, and then dropped to the ground.

Refining the Moonglow Gu had failed!

Fang Yuan’s heart sank. He quickly moved his finger, calling back his Gu worms.

The Moonlight Gu and Little Light Gu wavered their way to Fang Yuan as they floated around, slowly landing in his palm, but the other Little Light Gu had no response.

It laid on the ground, its milky-white five star-shaped body gradually dissipating into the air.

After a few breath’s time, it had completely vanished with no lingering traces.

This was the price of a failed fusion – according to the different fusing recipes, the Gu worm might get injured as a result, or when unlucky, might even die.

Even with his rich experience, adding on to the fact that Fang Yuan could multitask and had the right recipe, there was still a chance of failure.

Fang Yuan was not upset, he had seen such an event many many times. He had already performed to his best, and if the result still failed, it could only be attributed to luck.

"Luckily, it was not the Moonlight Gu that died, but the Little Light Gu. I can just buy another one from the shop, it is easy to replenish. If the Moonlight Gu died, it would not be easy trying to get another one." He had lots of cash now, even if one Little Light Gu died, he could just purchase another one.

Next, he inspected the Moonlight Gu and the remaining Little Light Gu. On the surface of both Gu, it was slightly dimmer than usual. This was the result of an injured Gu due to fusion failure.

"Once a Gu worm gets injured, the chances of a successful fusion would drop drastically. I have to wait for them to recover before I continue trying." Fang Yuan knew that haste does not bring success, and quickly kept the two Gu.

He estimated the time, around at least three days later would he be able to perform another try.

Cultivation did not end there.

Fang Yuan opened his right palm.

His left hand was pale, and on his palm, there was a green insignia with a grass pattern, like a dark green tattoo.

Fang Yuan’s thought moved, and the primeval essence in his aperture began to move, like light red fog flowing towards the insignia on his left arm.

The green insignia was instantly brought alive. From Fang Yuan’s palm, the tip of the grass emerged, followed by the round leaves of nine dark green leaves, lastly followed by the jade green transparent stem. As for the roots, they were not exposed.

On his palm, the original dark green tattoo was gone, only leaving behind traces of dark green lines. It represented the intertwining of the grass with Fang Yuan’s palm.

It was the Rank two grass Gu — Nine Leaf Vitality Grass.

Right now, Fang Yuan’s palm was like a piece of land, and a Nine Leaf Vitality Grass was growing on top of it, like the exquisite art made of jade stone carvings.

Fang Yuan stretched out his right hand’s finger and plucked the leaves.

With every piece of round leaf that he plucked, Fang Yuan could feel a slight pain himself, like the feeling of pulling his hair.

After the nine pieces were plucked and placed at the bedside by Fang Yuan, there was only the bare stem of the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass left on his palm.

Fang Yuan continued to deploy his primeval essence. The light red-coloured Rank two primeval essence continued to rise from his palm like a cloud of mist, and covered the jade green stem.

The stem continued to absorb the primeval essence, and eventually a bud started to grow from deep within the stem.

This budding was pinkish green, small, delicate and very fragile, breaking upon contact.

Fang Yuan continued to use his primeval essence, and the bud grew bigger, its colour deepening. Eventually it grew into a piece of dark green colour, a completely mature leaf.

"I used up 20% of my primeval essence." Fang Yuan inspected his aperture and concluded.

He only had 44% primeval essence in his sea, that meant that he could only create two vitality leaves at one go.

After creating another piece, Fang Yuan grabbed a piece of primeval stone and rapidly recovered the primeval essence in his aperture.

When the primeval essence rose to 40%, he nurtured the vitality leaf again.

Rinsing and repeating like this after half a day, he had finally made the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass grow back to nine full leaves.

He did not pluck the leaves this time, but with a thought, kept the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass back into his left palm, turning it back into a green insignia.

He took the leaves that he plucked and placed them into a small bag, bringing it with him.

A piece of vitality leaf was a Rank one Gu worm, each worth around fifty primeval stones in the market. This meant that with just these nine leaves, it could allow Fang Yuan to earn four hundred and fifty primeval stones.

Of course, he incurred costs in creating them, but excluding costs, he still profited around four hundred primeval stones.

Among all of the family assets, the most valuable one was no doubt this Nine Leaf Vitality Grass. Owning it was tantamount to owning a gold mine! And this

Nine Leaf Vitality Grass had an advantage too — it was easy to feed. It only needed water and sunlight to survive, thus there was virtually no cost in raising it.

To Fang Yuan, he could give up all the other family assets, but for this Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, he needed to grasp it firmly in his hands!

Of course, this type of Nine Leaf Vitality Grass Gu was not owned by Fang Yuan alone. In the village, others held this grass Gu as well.

In fact, there were five Nine Leaf Vitality Grass Gu that was collective property owned by the clan. Everyday there were specialized Gu Masters whose missions were to create large numbers of vitality leaves.

To Fang Yuan, this is a good thing.

If he alone had the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, the clan would definitely strike and buy this grass Gu by force. Just like how Gu Yue Qing Shu represented the clan and came to buy his Liquor worm.

Precious Gu like Liquor worm, Black and White Boar Gu and the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, the clan higher-ups all wanted to control it and make it useful for the whole clan.

Three days later.

A light ball under Fang Yuan’s supervision suddenly exploded, and a new Gu worm floated in midair slowly.

It was sparkling and translucent, bent like a crescent, resembling a piece of water blue crystal. In a nutshell, it was like the Moonlight Gu that was enlarged in size by twofold.

Yet it was not the Moonlight Gu, but the higher-ranking Rank two moonglow Gu.

This time, Fang Yuan’s fusion succeeded.

The Moonglow Gu is made by fusing a Moonlight Gu and two Little Light Gu. A Little Light Gu can raise the power of the moonblade by 100%, but two Little Light Gu still raised its power by 100%, this boost was not additive.

But the refined Rank two Moonglow Gu, its attack power reached three times of the Moonlight Gu!

Actually, there are many different recipes to refine the Moonlight Gu, and it has many advancement paths.

Fang Yuan took this path to raise the moonblade’s attack power to the limit. The attacking range remained unchanged, it still had a scope of ten meters.

There was a route — using the Moonlight Gu and the Stone Scar Gu to perform fusion, the result would be the Moon Scar Gu. Its attack power remained unchanged, but the range doubled, reaching twenty meters.

There was another common route, which was using the Moonlight Gu with the Whirlwind Gu to fuse, creating the Moonwhirl Gu. Using it, the moonblade turns from blue to green, and at the same time its attack trajectory becomes curved. Gu Yue Qing Shu took this path.

As for Gu Yue Fang Zheng, he used the Moonlight Gu and Jade Skin Gu to create the Moon Raiment. This was a rare route and had an upper limit of Rank five, becoming the Moonlight Treasure King Gu.

However, having a Rank five recipe did not mean it was definitely possible to create a Rank five Gu worm.

Many Rank five Gu Masters did not have a single Rank five Gu in their possession.

What causes this awkward situation is not a lack of ingredients, but the success rate.

Gu fusion was not a 100% success rate. The higher the ranking of the Gu worm you are trying to refine, the lower the success rate. In his previous life, Fang Yuan’s Spring Autumn Cicada had a success rate of less than 1%, and it failed countless times. Sometimes, he was lucky and less Gu worms died; other times, all the Gu worms died together.

To refine the Rank six Spring Autumn Cicada, it needed all Rank five Gu worms. Once these Gu worms die, all of Fang Yuan’s hard work and accumulation would go up into smoke, becoming an illusion.

Fang Yuan failed countless times and started over many times, fusing once again and collecting Gu worms and special ingredients all over again. Eventually, he caused too much of a commotion and incurred a public outrage, causing the will of the people to become disorganised, and many deaths forming seas of blood and floating corpses.

He was lucky though, as he finally succeeded and obtained the Spring Autumn Cicada.

But once he obtained this Rank six Gu, all the righteous cultivators who were eyeing his Gu all along came to attack, and before he even got a chance to familiarise himself with the Gu, he suicided.

Thousands of millions of years, it was because of this disgusting failure rate that caused many high-ranking Gu Masters to waste their efforts, and go back to square one.

The only way was to slightly curb this failure rate.

And that is –

Vital Gu.

No matter the fusion result, failure or success, the vital Gu never dies. At most it gets injured.

Why?

Many people guessed that it was because the vital Gu is the Gu Master’s first Gu worm and is linked to the Gu Master’s life, forming a mystical relationship and connection.

As long as the Gu Master is alive, if the vital Gu’s fusion fails, at most it would be almost dead.

Of course, the other Gu worms used in the fusion had a possibility of death.

Even so, a portion of the Gu Master’s fruits and labour can be preserved and accumulated.

The vital Gu is the Gu Master’s greatest fortune and fallback. Whatever the vital Gu is, it can to a large extent affect the Gu Master’s development path. Conversely, Gu Masters also find new recipes aggressively to raise the level of their vital Gu.

Some Rank two and Rank three garbage recipes, to Gu Masters, it worsened their future prospects.

When Fang Yuan found that the Spring Autumn Cicada had become his vital Gu, why was he so happy?

This was why.

The Spring Autumn Cicada was an extremely rare Gu worm, allowing others to rebirth, it was a heaven-defying ability. No matter how it is refined, it will not die. If this was Fang Yuan’s previous life where the Spring Autumn Cicada was not his vital Gu, if he continued refining, it could potentially die.

Spring Autumn Cicada was Rank six, something many Gu Masters would never be able to reach in their lifetime. An extremely large number of Gu Masters did not even have a Rank six recipe, and are still desperately searching!

Spring Autumn Cicada, although unable to be used to its full potential by the current Fang Yuan, was still his greatest treasure. The Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance compared to this, was a difference between heaven and earth.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The cold snow came to an end, and spring wind took its place.

Without realising it, winter had already passed, and the days of spring arrived.

The frozen mountain creek began to flow again. The ice cones under the eaves of bamboo buildings and trees were sparkling and translucent, dripping water in the sunlight.

In the morning, the wine tavern was quite empty, there were not many drinkers.

Fang Yuan sat inside at the seat near the window. According to his request, the surrounding was covered by wooden plank screens, creating a small room for him.

A gust of wind blew in from the window, and the fresh and fragrant smell of the earth was wedged between the air, letting people who smelled it feel carefree and pleased.

Jiang Ya sat opposite Fang Yuan, his face full of smiles.

"These are the primeval stones this time, please confirm it." He took out four money bags, placing them on the table and pushing it towards Fang Yuan.

What was inside the money bag was naturally primeval stones.

Fang Yuan did not open them one by one, but checked their weight by holding them in his hand.

He had over a hundred years of experience making deals and transactions, so he could easily tell the number of primeval stones in his hands. One less and he could immediately tell.

This was nothing special, to be honest.

On Earth, there was an oil seller who placed a coin on the bottleneck and dripped oil inside, where the oil dripped in a line and entered the bottle through the tiny hole without any spillage. There was another divine shooter who could shoot tree leaves at 100% accuracy from a hundred meters away. There was also a butcher who worked for many years, using his hands to check the weight, he could tell their exact weight and when scaled, was exactly as he said.

How to train such a skill?

Nothing else but ‘practise makes perfect’!

Accumulation of experience, when enough, can stir up a miracle.

After his rebirth, this kind of experience was naturally brought over as well. Fang Yuan used his hand to check, and on finding no problems, he then took out a small cloth bag and gave it to Jiang Ya.

Jiang Ya received it with both hands and opened the bag, checking the quantity carefully.

Although Fang Yuan had nine vitality leaves in his possession, he did not plan to sell it himself. If it was Gu Yue Dong Tu, he would rather do this to sustain his social relationships and increase his influence.

But Fang Yuan was reluctant to do this. It wasted too much time and effort. Thus, he sold them all to Jiang Ya who was a shop owner, so Jiang Ya could sell the Rank one healing grass Gu to the clansmen.

Jiang Ya is Jiang He’s brother, and when Fang Yuan was searching for the Liquor worm, they met before. His brother was even Fang Yuan’s half-alliance mate, thus, having him take over the transaction and sell to the clan, was a reliable method.

"One, two, three... nine. Indeed, it is nine vitality leaves." Jiang Ya counted three times before closing the bag and carefully keeping the bag close to his body.

Next, he raised his cup, toasting to Fang Yuan. "Lord Fang Yuan, happy doing business with you, let me toast you!"

His gaze towards Fang Yuan carried deep admiration, even turning into a hint of jealousy.

A year ago, when it was also spring. The first time he met Fang Yuan, the latter was still a student at the academy, not even having the rights to wear the Gu Master’s battle attire.

But now, Fang Yuan was not only wearing battle attire, his belt was also red colour, and a square steel piece in the center of the belt — a Rank two Gu Master!

However, he himself was still a Rank one, carrying a green coloured belt.

Nevermind that, what made him jealous was, after getting the inheritance, Fang Yuan turned from a pauper into a tycoon.

He owned the wine tavern, bamboo buildings as well as the nine leaf vitality grass. It was all fortune that Jiang Ya would never be able to earn throughout his lifetime!

But, Jiang Ya did not dare to show his deep emotion of jealousy.

Fang Yuan sold the vitality leaves to him and allowed him to earn the difference in price. Fang Yuan is already his money tree, and Jiang Ya no longer dared to offend this junior.

"Sigh, comparing among people is odious....." Jiang Ya held the cup. His face was full of smiles, but in his heart, he was sighing deeply.

Fang Yuan raised his cup and drank it in one shot.

Jiang Ya’s expression although secretive, with Fang Yuan’s old fox wits, how could he not tell?

Fang Yuan did not put it to heart, for if Jiang Ya was not jealous, it showed that he had much greater heart, and that would make Fang Yuan think more highly of him.

But, he stared at Fang Yuan’s small fortune and got jealous, this showed how little his world was, insignificant. Drinking with him was solely because he still had some value to exploit.

Jiang Ya put down the cup, excitedly saying, "The clan’s vitality leaves are sold at fifty-five primeval stones a piece. I followed your instructions and only sold our grass Gu at fifty primeval stones, and the demand is overwhelming! Lord, why don’t you make more leaves daily, that way we can earn much more!"

Fang Yuan listened and slowly shook his head, rejecting outright, "No, creating nine leaves is already my limit, it is already wasting much of my cultivating time."

This was the difference between Fang Yuan and a mere frog like Jiang Ya.

In Fang Yuan’s perspective, primeval stones were just a cultivating resource, a tool. It is all for his cultivating needs. However, Jiang Ya treated primeval stones as his life goal, thus he cultivates in order to earn more primeval stones.

But even if Fang Yuan only made nine leaves a day, he could earn four hundred primeval stones daily, and with the accumulation, the fortune in his hands also grew to an amazing level.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s rejection, Jiang Ya did not dare to push his luck, only moving his lips in pity, then continuing to pour wine for Fang Yuan enthusiastically, and then for himself.

"Indeed." He exclaimed, "Lord has such great fortune, you do not have to waste time and effort daily. In my opinion, why does lord have to stay in that poor old rented flat? Why don’t you empty out a bamboo building and stay there yourself. Then marrying a beautiful wife, and having seven or eight family servants to take care of you. That is truly the dream life. Hehe."

Fang Yuan laughed lightly, not saying anything.

How could a farmer understand the ambitions of the conqueror!

He turned around, looking outside the window.

House after house, the bamboo roofs had remnant snow, bathing under the bright and beautiful light of spring. Faraway was a willow tree, the branches of yellow-green soft leaves rolling down, gently swishing in the soft spring breeze.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was slightly blank as he thought about his current predicament.

After solving the problem of Fang Zheng, the family asset could be said to be in the bag.

The White Jade Gu and Moonglow Gu were successfully refined, he now covered attack and defense. What came next was the Liquor worm.

But the Liquor worm was troublesome. To refine the Four Flavour Liquor worm, he needed a second Liquor worm, as well as sweet, sour, bitter and spicy – four types of wine. These things, he had no idea where to get.

"I definitely have to refine the Liquor worm. Without it, my progress will be slower by at least half. But to refine the Four Flavour Liquor worm, I will need to wait for the caravan and borrow that chance to showcase my White Jade Gu. That way, I can show off my true fighting strength and stop hiding my abilities."

Fang Yuan had the Moonglow Gu and the White Jade Gu. Together with his five hundred years of combat experience, he was stronger than most Rank two Gu Masters.

Slightly famous group leaders like sickly snake Jiao San, if fighting one on one with Fang Yuan, might not be his match.

But against Chi Shan, Mo Yan and Qing Shu, Fang Yuan was still weaker.

One was insufficient cultivation level, Fang Yuan was only a Rank two initial stage, but they were upper or even peak stage. Next was the lack of strong Gu worms. Fang Yuan only had two battle Gu worms, but they all had at least three and even hidden trump cards.

Among the same age group, Fang Zheng, Mo Bei and Chi Cheng were already showing their dominance, no doubt.

Especially Fang Zheng, now that he had obtained the Rank two Moon Raiment, he already has the ability to fight with Fang Yuan. As time passes, his cultivation level will get higher and eventually he will leave Fang Yuan in the dust.

Unless Fang Yuan can fuse the Four Flavour Liquor worm and maintain the same cultivating speed as Fang Zheng.

As for the higher ranks, those Rank three or Rank four Gu Masters.

To Fang Yuan, battle results aside, even keeping his life is a difficult thing, not to mention challenging a higher rank.

Transcending rank was very difficult, one was that Fang Yuan did not have trump cards, and two he does not have talent. Even with his rich fighting experience, a woman cannot cook without rice, without a strong Gu worm, his experience cannot display their worth.

"If I can successfully fuse the Four Flavour Liquor worm, my cultivating speed will be satisfactory. But I also have to replenish my Gu worms. Defense I have White Jade Gu, offense I have Moonglow Gu, healing I have nine leaf vitality grass, but I need a movement-type and recon-type Gu, these two although are support types, they can cover up my weakness and at least triplefold my fighting strength!" Fang Yuan pondered.

He did not need to learn step by step, with his rich life experience, he already knew the direction to take.

Beside him, Jiang Ya’s voice came, "I heard, recently someone is finding trouble with you, lord? Purposely finding trouble at your bamboo building and wine tavern?"

Fang Yuan frowned, his train of thoughts were broken.

But Jiang Ya was right.

Fang Yuan had investigated, this was his uncle Gu Yue Dong Tu’s act.

After Gu Yue Qing Shu warned his uncle, he did not dare to use Fang Zheng to instigate trouble anymore. But after waiting for a while, the indignance and anger in his heart rose, and using his relationships, he got a few Gu Masters to find trouble at Fang Yuan’s places.

People who do business hate these kinds of problems.

Thus, recently, he had been finding time to look after the locations.

"Owner, someone is finding trouble again." At this time, a clerk carried a scared expression and walked towards Fang Yuan.

"Oh?" Fang Yuan’s brows raised, not expecting to encounter this immediately.

Not waiting for Fang Yuan to react, Jiang Ya stood up abruptly, eagerly saying, "Wait a moment lord, let me go see."

He walked out of the partition and came back almost immediately.

"It is Gu Yue Man Shi!" Jiang Ya’s expression was pale, suppressing his voice. His gaze revealed shock and worry.

Gu Yue Man Shi?

Fang Yuan did things carefully and knew the importance of information. During this period, he had gotten the information of all the Rank two Gu Masters in the clan, and memorised most of them.

Gu Yue Man Shi is a slightly famous Gu Master, specializing in defense and having a great strength, being the Man Shi group’s leader. In terms of fame, he was higher than Jiao San by a little.

Bam!

Smashing sound came from outside.

Thereafter, a coarse and arrogant voice resounded, "Blah, what sort of wine is this? Tastes like horseshit, you dare sell this to me?"

"Hmph!" Fang Yuan’s gaze shone with cold light as he stood up.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Will continue the rest tomorrow! >_<)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Jiang Ya saw that Fang Yuan intended to go out, and hurriedly stopped him –"Lord

Fang Yuan, a wise man does not fight when the odds are against him. This Man Shi is very strong, one of the few people who managed to escape for their lives from Bai Ning Bing, he cannot be underestimated."

"Using his loss as a glorious fame, what fear is there for these kinds of people?" Fang Yuan laughed lightly, stretching his hand to put it on Jiang Ya’s shoulder, "Just sit here and drink away."

"Lord..." Jiang Ya was about to urge again, but he met with Fang Yuan’s icy gaze.

The chilliness in Fang Yuan’s eyes caused his heart to stop.

He was tongue-tied, helplessly sitting on the chair again while Fang Yuan took a few strides and left the partitioned room, walking towards the main hall.

He saw that at the center on a square table, a Rank two Gu Master had one foot stepping on a stool while another stepping on the table.

His body was slightly short, but his arms and waist were thick. With a thick black beard, extending downwards from his cheeks to meet at his chin, his body emitted a strong aura of ferociousness.

The ground near him had broken wine pot fragments, and most of the liquor had seeped into the ground along the concrete cracks on the floor.

Only two or three puddles of wine accumulated on the surface, or in the broken pots.

The shopkeeper old man bowed his head low as he apologised in trepidation, "Lord please be appeased, if this wine is not to your satisfaction, the shop will give you another brew free of charge!"

"Hmph, I don’t want wine! Your wine tastes like shit, why are you opening a shop. Compensation, I must be compensated! My good mood was ruined by you guys, you have to compensate me at least five hundred primeval stones!" Man Shi demanded a ridiculous amount.

"This is the third time already, it seems this wine tavern has offended some people."

"Sigh, let’s not drink here anymore."

"Quick, go, when Gu Masters fight, we mortals suffer."

The surrounding people frantically left their seats, only a few Gu Masters remained and continued their chat.

"I heard this tavern is opened by Fang Yuan, who is it that is finding fault with him?"

"Oh! The one whose parents died and inherited their fortune, the lad who got rich overnight?"

"No wonder people are doing this, even if it is me, I’d be jealous. Just think, we fight for our lives out there for these fortunes to live a stable life. But he Fang Yuan is merely a newbie, what rights does he have to obtain these things!"

"That’s right, even if his ancestors are taking care of their future generations, times have changed. The clan’s resources are limited. Everyone can only get a small piece of the pie. How can he, a C grade talent, enjoy such fortune at this age? Preposterous!"

"Is Man Shi trying to anger him into a duel? If they had a Gu fight, he might be able to get a piece of the pie."

Someone shook his head, "Heh, you think those clan elders are fools?"

Someone nodded, "Could be true. The clan policies are there, haven’t you guys understood from all these years? To a degree, they allow us to compete, the strong should get more resources, isn’t that right? If the weak cannot protect their assets, they would have to give it up. It is all for the clan’s prosperity!"

"Mm, makes sense. Let’s see first. There’s something going on here. I heard that Man Shi has a retired elder behind him," someone suppressed his voice and said.

"Who dares to leave, all of you stand there, no one is to leave!" On the table, Man Shi suddenly shouted.

Those mortal drinkers were already at the doorstep, but did not dare to disobey, they all stood at the spot in horror. Some of the pedestrians found that there was drama going on and they went to the doorstep, stopping to watch the show.

"Purely here to find trouble!" Fang Yuan upon seeing this scene, his face was emotionless, but his eyes glinted with cold light.

Man Shi saw him.

"Oh? You are that Fang Yuan right. Junior, your wine tavern is cheating my money with your horrible wine. However, since you are a newbie, I’ll give you a chance to repent and apologise in public. If not others will say that I, Man Shi is bullying a junior with my status. Hahaha!"

Man Shi laughed loudly, "As long as you apologise and bow to me, this matter will be over. I walk my talk, I will do as I promised!"

He patted his chest in thunderous volume, showing an air of magnanimity, but his intention could not lie to the surrounding Gu Masters.

"What a bastard move."

"That’s right, If Fang Yuan apologised, he would no longer be able to raise his head, and anyone would come over and step on him and bully his weakness. But if he does not apologise, that is disrespecting a senior, and with such an attitude, the entire community will keep him away."

"Yeah, he’s stuck with two difficult decisions... oh my, what the fuck!!!"

The Gu Masters whispered, but suddenly someone’s mouth went wide open, able to swallow a duck’s egg.

The remaining Gu Masters were in a similar state.

Some stared until their eyeballs almost fell out.

Some choked and spilled out the wine in their mouths.

Some stared in utter disbelief, like statues.

They were here to watch a show, an enjoyable show.

In the end, Fang Yuan not only satisfied their wish, but also gave them a great "surprise". The young man instantly flicked his wrist and shot a moonblade out.

Pew!

The moonblade of the Moonglow Gu!

The eerie blue crescent fang flew in the air, as large as a face. Trailing along a square desk, it was quickly cut like tofu into two halves.

"Eh?!" Man Shi’s laughter stood, his pupils dilated as the moonblade became increasingly larger in his eyes.

In the blink of an eye, the eerie blue moonblade was already near his face, showing every single strand of his moustache with its glow.

Facing strong feelings of death, at the very last moment, Man Shi screamed out in panic, "Monolith Gu!"

Immediately, his entire body had a deep grey light. His skin turned and became rock skin.

But before it had fully grown, the moonblade had already hit his chest.

With a light sound, the rock skin tore open and Man Shi’s chest became a large diagonal injury. Blood spilled and poured out of his large wound.

"Ah—!" Intense pain rushed through his nerves as Man Shi shouted out in horror, his voice full of disbelief and shock.

He had never expected Fang Yuan to attack immediately without a single word.

He dared to attack!

In the village, directly using a Gu worm and attacking a clansman?!

Not to say Man Shi, even the onlookers showed utter disbelief, and were lost for words.

"What situation is this, is this lad crazy?!"

"Not saying a word and immediately going for a fatal attack! Isn’t he afraid of killing Man Shi and being arrested by the punishment hall, paying for his crimes?"

"Young men are way too rash."

"Did you guys see that moonblade? It is definitely not the Moonlight Gu but the Moonglow Gu, to think Fang Yuan succeeded in his fusion already."

"Fang Yuan, what are you doing?!" Man Shi stood on the square table, tearing his throat and screaming in a thunderous volume with a face full of ruthlessness.

His entire body’s muscles bulged, growing into rock skin at a deeper intensity. The injury was also covered by the rock skin, but large amount of blood still poured out, although less of a fountain.

Fang Yuan’s face was calm as he continued his walk. He did not talk, or rather, he did not have the intention to talk.

He made another move to reply to Man Shi.

Another moonblade!

Pew.

The moonblade flew across the short distance and shot out.

"You!" Man Shi had no time to talk, but raised his arms and protected his brain and chest.

His limbs were covered with a thick deep grey coloured rock, as if arms made from a statue, sturdy and thick.

The moonblade hit his arms, cutting a deep wound, numerous small rock fragments flying out.

The moonblade’s strength caused Man Shi’s body to fly backwards.

His entire body was made of rocks, causing his weight to rise drastically. Finally, the table under him could not bear the weight, and with a crack, it collapsed completely.

Man Shi lost his footing and fell on the ground, his defenses revealing a weakness.

Fang Yuan walked slowly, his eyes shining in cold light as he captured the weakness, and fired another moonblade at it.

The moonblade tore through the air and emitted a swooshing sound of the wind.

Man Shi hurriedly raised his hands, but he underestimated Fang Yuan’s intense battle experience. Although the moonblade was moving straight, it tunneled for an angle not parallel to the ground.

Man Shi’s arm could block half of the moonblade, but the other half hit his chest.

Injury on top of injury, Man Shi’s chest had even greater blood loss now.

"Is, is he going to kill him?" The Gu Masters who were originally sitting on the seat could not stand it any longer, and they all got up.

The mortals did not dare to make any noise. They watched in fear and anticipation.

Gu Masters killing each other, it triggered something that had been repressed in their hearts all along.

Man Shi breathed heavily, wanting to climb up. But due to his injuries, the intense pain caused his hard work to be wasted as he crashed on the ground once again with a thump.

Fang Yuan walked over slowly.

Man Shi lost a lot of blood, and his face was pale. He stared at Fang Yuan in horror. Fang Yuan was walking slowly with a cold expression, getting closer, bringing him greater pressure by the second.

"Fang Yuan, you cannot kill me! Killing me, you will be arrested by the punishment hall!" Man Shi pushed against the floor, trying to move backwards.

He was still bleeding, and along with his body, carved a bright red line on the concrete.

The gallery was silent.

Everyone was stunned by Fang Yuan’s cold aura and held their breaths as they wanted. Nobody felt that Man Shi was a worthless piece of shit. Without any composure, they would not have fared any better if they were in his shoes.

Fang Yuan walked to Man Shi, raised a leg and harshly stepped on his chest injury.

The pain caused Man Shi to draw in a cold breath.

Fang Yuan continued to stomp, and Man Shi began to feel immense pain; like a wild boar charging around was trampling him repeatedly.

He could not endure it any longer, screaming loudly. Even with the thick rock skin’s protection, his chest was still enduring great pressure from Fang Yuan, and the injury area was still overflowing with blood.

More importantly, Fang Yuan’s right hand was covered in an eerie blue moonlight, held in place but not fired yet.

This was the symptom before a moonblade attack. Man Shi thought this worriedly as he did not dare to move a muscle.

"You, you cannot kill me!" He stared with his eyes wide open, growling in difficulty.

"I won’t kill you." Fang Yuan said the first sentence since he arrived.

His tone was flat, and in the dead silent wine tavern, it reverbed into everyone’s ears.

"But I can cripple you, breaking one of your arms, or a leg. According to the clan rules, I have to compensate you a number of primeval stones and be imprisoned for some time. But what about you? Your remaining life would be spent in bed, your injury would reduce your battle capability greatly, and you shall no longer be able to execute missions. Do you think this result is acceptable for you?" Fang Yuan stared down at the sprawling Man Shi, slowly reasoning.

The emotionless voice travelled into Man Shi’s ears, causing his heart to stop and his body to shudder.

He opened his mouth, breathing heavily, his brain becoming more chaotic. Fang Yuan’s leg exerted strength that made him feel like he was being crushed by a rock, making him feel harder to breathe.

"Damn it, damn it! If I was on guard, if I was not caught off guard and were injured at the start, how could he... Urgh!"

Man Shi’s voice came to an abrupt stop as his gaze met with Fang Yuan’s eyes.

He lay on the ground, staring upwards.

Fang Yuan’s half-narrowed eyes, dark and eerily looking down on him.

Just what sort of pair of eyes was that?

If it was full of killing intent, Man Shi would not be afraid. However, this pair of eyes was filled with indifference.

This indifference was like arrogance towards reality, the disdain towards people of the world, the trampling of life and the abandonment of rules!

"This pair of eyes, this pair of eyes..." Man Shi’s eyes shrunk into pin-size as the deepest memory in his heart played.

The nightmare of his life!

Two years ago, at night in the bamboo forest.

A young man in white clothing, similarly trampling him under his feet.

"Damn it, god damn it! If I had refined the Monolith Gu, how could you break my defense?" Death was impending. He screamed with his life, full of indignance.

"Oh, in that case, I shall not kill you." The white-clothed young man’s lips curled, revealing a smile full of interest, "Go back to the village and cultivate harder. Refine the Monolith Gu and let’s have a match again. Hehehe, I hope that in the future, you can bring a tint of excitement to my life." Saying so, the young man lifted his feet, sparing him.

Man Shi breathed roughly, lying on the ground, not expecting this turn of events.

He stared at this white-clothed young man in shock.

The young man looked at him like an ant, saying indifferently, "Why aren’t you scramming?"

Man Shi’s body shook as he hurriedly got up and made his escape.

This white-clothed young man was none other than Bai village’s number one genius, Bai Ning Bing. Back then, he was only Rank two, but could already kill Rank three clan elders!

Man Shi escaping from him and preserving his life caused his fame to shoot up.

Through the two years, Bai Ning Bing’s facial expression had become a blur in his memories, and he could only remember those eyes.

Eyes that looked at the common life, the world with indifference. The high and mighty iris, hiding an unbelievable pride that mortals cannot comprehend.

To think......

To think!

To think that in his own village, he could see these eyes!

At this moment, Man Shi’s heart was filled with terror, the indignance and anger in his heart dissipating without a drop of fighting spirit left.

Fang Yuan closely observed Man Shi’s facial expression.

The young man was slightly shocked, not expecting Man Shi to be so cowardly.

But, nevermind... just a cowardly mouse.

Fang Yuan’s objective was achieved, and he let go of his leg, "You can scram now."

Man Shi felt like he had heard a divine mantra as he rolled and climbed out of the tavern with a pale face.

The audience were stunned.

Fang Yuan stood on the spot, his gaze sweeping the area.

The surrounding Gu Masters, Rank one and some Rank two, avoided his gaze subconsciously.

The shopkeeper and clerks were all terrified and excitedly worshipped him. Who did not want a strong backer?

Behind him, Jiang Ya was staring dumbfounded.

He heard a commotion and ran out, but saw Fang Yuan chasing away Man Shi.

That is Gu Yue Man Shi......

His heart was shocked to the limit, and his gaze towards Fang Yuan changed.

Jealousy had vanished.

At this point, Jiang Ya understood why Fang Yuan had such an achievement.

"Because he was never the same kind of person as myself!"

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Back, here’s the rest plus Monday’s chapter 111. These few chapters are quite long... But I know you’ll enjoy them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Gu Yue Man Shi was defeated by the newbie Fang Yuan!

The news spread quickly and caused small waves of gossip among Rank two Gu Masters.

Everyone was familiar with the two main characters of this event.

Man Shi was a slightly famous Rank two Gu Master who had managed to escape with his life under Bai Ningbing’s hands; he was not to be sniffed at.

And Fang Yuan was the year’s champion, many had witnessed him defeating Fang Zheng at the yearly assessment. He also obtained his family inheritance and became rich overnight, causing many to become green with envy.

The gap between the two was clear, but against all expectations, the weaker Fang Yuan had defeated the stronger Man Shi. Such a discrepancy really caught the people by surprise.

As more and more people continued to discuss the event, Fang Yuan’s fame also rose.

Rank two Gu Masters began to take this young junior seriously.

"He directly attacked without saying a word. Young people are too impulsive."

"He has wealth and has also refined Moonglow Gu, he has some ability."

"He is a lunatic, he is too hard-handed. Reportedly, Gu Yue Man Shi had to lie in bed for at least three days to recover from his injuries!"

People commented on Fang Yuan.

He had made a sudden attack on Man Shi, initiating a head start; inflicting serious injuries on the very first attack and establishing great dominance. It felt like he did not win honestly.

However, victory was victory and loss was loss.

The result was everything.

Maybe on Earth, most would emphasize the process instead of the results, but in this world where survival was arduous, surroundings full of deadly dangers, victory often meant survival and defeat meant death, losing everything.

Winners gained everything, losers lost everything; almost everyone approved this notion.

Fang Yuan had won; it was the fact, no matter how he did it.

A newbie had sprung up by stepping on Man Shi, entering into everyone’s eyes.

Man Shi had become a stepping stone, his reputation was destroyed. Once he recovered, he would resign from the group leader position.

This was the outcome of a failure.

Close relatives would sympathize with the losers, but they respected and acknowledged the winners even more. Winners represented strength and strength meant better security to the people.

After this event, Gu Yue Dong Tu sensibly stopped his dirty tricks.

Gu Yue Man Shi stepping down had finally made the astute uncle aware of the reality. Fang Yuan’s growth made him feel helpless, resentment and indignation.

He knew he now had no chance of seizing the inheritance. Continuing was meaningless.

He had used his connections and employed other people to find trouble for Fang Yuan; this consumed his primeval stones. Yet Fang Yuan had profits coming from all sides.

In case the stalemate continued, even if he had a large amount of primeval stones, the final loser would definitely be he, himself.

Because he lost the bamboo houses, wine tavern and Nine Leaves Vitality Grass, he was now without any source of income; the used primeval stones would be difficult to replenish. By contrast, Fang Yuan lacked primeval stones but it was increasing day by day.

The main point was that Gu Yue Dong Tu dispiritedly realized that the stalemate would not have any benefits.

Thus, when he heard Man Shi running away in defeat, he immediately stopped these meaningless actions.

In fact, when Fang Zheng had not been able to create trouble for Fang Yuan, it already signified Gu Yue Dong Tu’s defeat.

With this, Fang Yuan’s wine tavern’s business returned to normal, which was a joyous thing.

There was another joyous matter — the caravan would be coming early.

March.

In the bright and beautiful spring sunshine, the light song of the days of spring treaded a lively and cheerful beat as it arrived.

With the warmth of spring, flowers bloomed and grasses grew wildly.

Qing Mao Mountain was a scene of green as far as the eye could see. Wild flowers blossomed on the sunny side of the hills, forming a colorful and gorgeous sea of flowers. The gurgling and burbling river surged up like a flame and entangled with the sunshine.

Newborn dragonpill crickets came out of their eggs and formed a batch of new swarms, enlivening the nighttime.

At daytime, a large flock of colorful peacock parrots hovered in the air, chirping and twittering.

The warm spring spread its favor and kindness, letting all living things grow in brilliance.

In such a scenery, a caravan was slowly making its way to Qing Mao Mountain.

Fat black beetles were slowly moving forward, their backs filled with people and goods.

Proud ostriches with brightly colored feathers were pulling handcarts. Hairy mountain spiders disregarded the terrains, winged snakes twisted and snaked forward, occasionally opening its wings and flying forward.

A Treasure Brass Toad was leading the caravan. It was two and half meters tall, its entire body orange-yellow in color. On its back was the Rank four Gu Master, Jia Fu.

After the caravan stationed in the village, Fang Yuan sighed inwardly, "It changed again. In my previous memories, this caravan should have arrived in summer. According to the previous precedents too, the caravan should have only come in summer. Now, however, it has come in spring, two-three months earlier. And its scale is also much bigger."

Fang Yuan’s rebirth changed his current situation and similarly also influenced his surroundings, creating changes in the future.

The root cause should be due to him killing Jia Jin Sheng.

Fang Yuan had deceived everyone, so Jia Fu mistakenly believed Jia Jin Sheng’s death was a conspiracy by his rival, Jia Gui.

After Jia Fu returned to the clan, he had taken radical steps which made the competition between them more intense.

To strive for exceptional achievements, the Jia brothers rushed out even before the year’s snow had completely melted, leading the caravans to peddle their goods everywhere.

The clan leader Gu Yue Bo received Jia Fu.

The two Rank four Gu Masters were the leaders of the both sides.

"Brother Gu Yue, I trust you have been well?" Jia Fu was full of smiles and warmth, but his face had a long scar now.

"Hahaha, brother Jia Fu, you are quite early this year." Gu Yue Bo looked at the scar on Jia Fu’s face. His heart jolted but he didn’t ask about it.

"The early bird gets the worm. This time, I have brought many precious goods and I believe the noble Gu Yue clan will have lots of needs." Jia Fu had made a big effort this time to fight for better achievements.

"Yes, this is good news." Gu Yue Bo’s eyes flashed. Continuing on, "It just so happens that the day after tomorrow is our clan’s Awakening Ceremony, and I would like to invite brother Jia to attend it."

"Haha, it is my honor to be able to witness the prosperity of Gu Yue clan," Jia Fu immediately cupped his hands and sincerely replied.

Inviting others to watch the clan’s awakening ceremony was treating them as honoured guests. Jia Fu could feel Gu Yue clan’s sincerity from this invitation.

"In fact, there is also another matter." Jia Fu hesitated.

"You have come from afar, so if you have any requests, please say it. Our clan will definitely do our best to fulfil it." Gu Yue Bo said.

Jia Fu sighed, "Ah, it is regarding Jia Jin Sheng’s matter. I have especially brought over a few investigation experts from the clan, and I hope that in the course of our investigation, you can allow us some convenience."

Gu Yue Bo immediately revealed a look of understanding.

Apparently, Jia Jin Sheng’s death had caused Jia Fu to fall into an awkward and passive situation in the competition for family assets. It was said that after returning to the clan, Jia Fu had squabbled with Jia Gui in public and the situation had erupted into an intense fight. The scar on his face could very well be a trace from that fight.

It was no wonder he had come running over at the start of spring; he had a lot of pressure on his shoulders.

Fang Yuan was strolling around tents and street stalls.

The scale of this year’s caravan was much bigger than any of the previous years. Not only were there more tents, there was also a Gu house.

Gu house was something only large-scale caravans had. A large-scale caravan usually had two to three Gu houses. Jia Fu’s caravan was at most a middle-scale, but it had a Gu house.

This Gu house was a large tree.

It was eighteen meters tall and it really seemed to reach to the sky. Its roots and branches were twisted like the tangling of dragons and snakes.

The diameter of the trunk at the base was ten meters; it decreased as it went up but the decrease wasn’t that visible. The brown trunk was not actually a single entity, and had three layers of space inside.

There were also windows on the trunk. Sunlight and fresh air passed through the window and entered the three layers of space inside.

The branches and leaves seemed to be scarce on the trunk. Only at the treetop was it verdant and lush. The spring wind blew, and the tree leaves shook and created soft rustling sounds.

This was the most common type of Gu house.

The Rank three plant Gu named ‘three star cave’.

It could instantly grow once primeval essence was poured into it. There were three rooms arranged in these three layers of space. The defensive power of these rooms were incomparable to that of the tents.

In the continuous stretch of tents, an enormous tree was standing aloft in the middle like a tower; it was like a crane among a flock of chicken.

At the base of the enormous tree, there were two wide doors used as entrance.

Fang Yuan followed the stream of people and walked into the enormous tree.

The tree had three layers of space which were transformed into the layout of stores. There were rows of counters inside and on them were displayed all kinds of Gu worms.

These counters were made of wood and were a part of the enormous tree. On top of growing green leaves and branches, the three star cave tree Gu could grow different designs according to the Gu Master’s will.

Apart from these counters, there were stools and benches for the customers to rest upon.

A Rank three support Gu Master was constantly operating and monitoring the situation from somewhere in this enormous tree.

In case someone snatched the Gu worms in the counters, the monitoring Gu Master could operate the enormous tree to immediately close the doors and create a momentary prison cell. Countless branches would be madly grown and perform group attacks. At the same time, the security Gu Masters in the tree would also make their moves.

The treehouse was much more secure than the tents and so the goods sold inside were more precious.

Fang Yuan had just entered the first layer when he saw a lone counter in the middle and on it was a Liquor worm.

Many Gu Masters were surrounding this Liquor worm, assessing it. Some clicked their tongues in admiration.

Fang Yuan swept his eyes over the place, where the other counters also displayed many precious Gu worms.

There were Jade Skin Gu, Whirlwind Gu, Scar Stone Gu and so on.

All these Gu worms were compatible with the Moonlight gu and could fuse into higher Rank Gu worms.

Jia Fu wasn’t completely clear on these fusion recipes, but with his many years of business experience, he knew which Gu worms the Gu Yue clan might need more.

"Naturally, Jia Fu’s caravan isn’t just targeting the Gu Yue village, he is really making an all-out effort this time. It seems he was thoroughly provoked when he returned to the clan." Fang Yuan’s heart moved when he saw this.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Liquor worm..." Fang Yuan lightly muttered, walking to the side of the center reception desk.

He only needed this Liquor worm, along with the sweet, spicy, sour, bitter – four types of wine, to refine the Four Flavours Liquor worm. Of course, such a fusion also entailed a chance of failure.

But if Fang Yuan did not have a second Liquor worm, he does not even have a chance to try.

This is life after all, hard work does not mean results, nor success. But if one does not work hard, they are destined to fail.

The Demonic path was the same, the demonic cultivators are good at clearing obstacles in their way, bravely advancing in their paths. To most people in the world, they were seen as extremists and adventurous.

"I was still worried earlier as to where to find a second Liquor worm. To think that fate sent this Liquor worm right to my doorstep. The chance is in front of me, how can I give up? I must get this Liquor worm!" Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with determination.

"If my cultivation reaches Rank four or five, with a strong fighting capability, I would snatch it away without a thought, killing gods and slaying buddhas in my way! If I was Rank three or four, with my ample experience, I can steal it without anyone finding out. Sadly I am just a Rank two now, in fact I’m just initial stage..."

Fang Yuan sighed in his heart, "I can only purchase it fair and square like this."

He looked at the price on the counter.

"Liquor worm – Five hundred primeval stones."

The Liquor worm’s normal price is five hundred and eighty primeval stones. The price here was actually eighty pieces cheaper than the market.

But if Fang Yuan really thinks he can spend five hundred primeval stones to buy this Liquor worm, then his five hundred years of living would have been in vain.

The low price was just to attract customers and trigger people’s mentality and greed into buying it.

This treehouse was obviously Jia Fu’s asset.

"Grandma, this Liquor worm is only five hundred primeval stones!" A young girl walked in, screaming in shock.

The young girl’s eyes were glowing, shaking her grandmother’s hand, "Grandma, tomorrow is the awakening ceremony. Didn’t you promise to give me a present? Why don’t you give this Liquor worm to me."

The young girl’s grandma had a white waist belt, and the belt had a square silver piece with the number "3" on it.

Once a Gu Master reaches Rank three cultivation, they automatically ascend to clan elder position.

Only that among clan elders, there were differences. There were elders in power who held great political power. While others were not, they would only be controlling the departments with little profits.

But this Rank three elder was not those weak clan elders.

"Gu Yue Yao Ji..." Fang Yuan recognised her immediately, this was the medicine hall’s clan elder. The medicine hall is the clan’s support faction, it can be said to be the most lucrative department. Gu Yue Yao Ji had very great influence due to her seniority, even towards the clan leader, she could do away with paying respects and reply while sitting. She was the number one healing Gu Master in the clan and had saved many lives of the clan elders, thus having very strong network in the clan.

"Alright, alright. If my obedient granddaughter wants it, grandma will buy for you." The old woman’s face was full of wrinkles. She was a hunchback and had a walking cane in one hand, helplessly sighing and saying with a benevolent face.

"Grandma is the best, I knew grandma dotes on me the most," The young girl happily grabbed Gu Yue Yao Ji, joyfully planting her lips on her grandma’s cheek.

"Then grandma, let’s call the shop assistant and buy this Liquor worm immediately!"

Gu Yue Yao Ji shook her head, "My lovely granddaughter, the Gu worm here isn’t bought like that. Let granny teach you, you see that stack of paper and pen over at the counter?"

The young girl nodded, "I see it."

Gu Yue Yao Ji said, "Go get a piece of paper and use the pen to write down the price of the Liquor worm. After that, stuff it into the hole. If among all the bidders, your price is the highest, this Liquor worm will belong to you."

"So that’s it, very interesting." The young girl took a bamboo paper and held the pen, but hesitated when writing down.

Her lovely eyebrows frowned as she thought hard for a moment, then finally pouting her lips, she said, "Grandma, what price would be appropriate? If I set it too low, other people will get the Liquor worm, but if I set it too high, I would be making a loss."

Gu Yue Yao Ji laughed, teasing her, "How can it be so easy to buy the Liquor worm? Let’s see your luck..."

"Grandma!" The young girl said coquettishly, hogging Gu yue Yao Ji’s limp and shaking arm.

"Alright, alright, stop swinging, my body is going to collapse." The old woman sighed, "Grandma will fill it for you."

The young girl quickly jumped, saying, "I knew grandma is the best!"

Gu Yue Yao Ji wrote a price before putting her own name as the young girl watched in anticipation.

After she had finished, she folded the paper and signalled to the girl, "Go, put the paper in."

The young girl obediently took the paper and found the hole in the counter and stuffed the paper in.

She returned beside Gu Yue Yao Ji, feeling uncertain, "Grandma, will this do?"

The old woman nodded, "That’s about it. But life is hard to predict, someone might put a higher price. But that price would be too high. If they really bidded so much, the person who bought this Liquor worm is a fool. Don’t worry, the Liquor worm is in the bag."

"Oh." The young girl nodded with a cute expression.

"Let’s go. Come accompany grandma upstairs and look around."

"Okay, grandma."

Seeing them leave, Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with severity.

This Gu Yue Yao Ji, to him, was a tough competitor, not to be underestimated.

But this situation, Fang Yuan had prepared and anticipated it.

The Liquor worm was precious. Although it was only usable for Rank one Gu Masters, the Liquor worm could refine primeval essence and that was very useful. Refining primeval essence and raising it by one small stage — this meant that the primeval essence storage increased and this had a great driving force towards Gu Master cultivation.

The only flaw is that the Liquor worm did not have a good prospect in the future.

According to the popular recipes, Liquor worm was only used as a fusion ingredient, and the new Gu worm created does not have the primeval essence refining ability.

This was too much of a waste. In fact, it was not worth it.

Thus, most clans have the Liquor worm and did not use it to undergo fusion, but is used by the academy to allow the students to take turns using it.

If Fang Yuan exposed his advancement recipe, the Liquor worm’s market value would rise drastically.

"Sigh, it is not easy to get this Liquor worm. This grandma and granddaughter is just one competitor. I wonder how many others are there who have placed the paper into this hole?"

Liquor worm was a good thing, and people naturally want good things.

Just that among these competitors, some were sincere about buying it, while others were just trying their luck. Some are affluent, like Gu Yue Yao Ji, while some were poor, like Fang Yuan.

"Luckily, I got back the family assets, and these few days I’ve sold some Rank one vitality leaves, plus the wine tavern and bamboo buildings are all rented out. Thus I could accumulate some savings. If not, I would not even be able to compete."

But he had too little time to save up. On one hand he had a lot of Gu worms to feed, and in terms of fortune he could not compete with an old woman like Gu Yue Yao Ji.

"Sigh, let’s go. Lord Yao Ji just tossed in a paper."

"I saw it too, it seems I’m not fated to have this Liquor worm."

The Gu Masters surrounding this counter all left dejected.

Only Fang Yuan still stood there.

His eyes were like the abyss river, shining with cold light.

The Gu Masters who left were all scared off by Gu Yue Yao Ji’s aura and backed out of their own accord. But how could Fang Yuan be scared away?

"Some chances are just in front of you, only that people choose to give it up. I still have a chance!" Fang Yuan’s brain worked intensely as he fell into deep thought.

To compete fortune, Fang Yuan was not her match.

Even then......

That did not mean that Gu Yue Yao Ji’s bidding amount was definitely higher than Fang Yuan!

Even though the Liquor worm was precious, it was still a Rank one Gu worm. The price of any commodity would fluctuate, but it would definitely not rise or fall beyond a certain limit. Thus, all price deviations have a range.

The crucial point now is, what price did Gu Yue Yao Ji give!?

She did not lack money, and for the granddaughter she doted, how much was she willing to pay?

As long as Fang Yuan’s price, if even a single point, is higher, he wins.

This is a different kind of battle! The strong might not necessarily win, the weak might not necessarily lose. Guessing and gambling made the fight much more exciting.

"If it were others, they might not be able to guess it. Gu Yue Yao Ji, you purposely said some things earlier to scare away competitors? But in front of me, you are still too tender!" Fang Yuan’s lips curled into an angle as he smiled confidently.

In this world, transactions were very interesting.

If it was on Earth, the seller would definitely adopt an auction style when selling rare Gu worms like the Liquor worm.

But in this world, auction did not work well.

An important reason was that kinship is the greatest value here, it is the clan’s cohesiveness.

If an auction was held, the clan’s members would have a subconscious animosity towards outsiders like Jia Fu.

Once the auction items are priced too highly, they would step out of the competition and even try to appease the seller, making some leeways to exchange and compensate.

This world’s people had one viewpoint – Losing to the family is okay, but for an outsider to earn from it, that is an insult to the entire clan!

Unless, a few clans joined in an auction together. In that case, there is competition, and it would be full of rivalry.

But these auctions were hard to conduct.

Because transport is inconvenient.

Transport is the basis of trade, and if the transport system is not developed, the business and trade would dwindle. Because in trade, it was the movement of commodities that matter.

Each village occupied a mountain and stayed far from each other. The roads that connected them are hard to travel, constantly having wild beasts, cliffs, coupled with dangerous terrain and weather, and even dangerous wild Gu worms — it was truly full of difficulties.

Such an inconvenient transport system made it difficult for different clans to come together for an auction.

Even at Qing Mao Mountain with its three clans, Jia Fu did not dare to organise an auction.

Firstly, where would it be held? It isn’t safe in the wilds, and if it is held in the Gu Yue Village, the other two clans would not feel safe.

He was only Rank four, and the head of the other three villages were also Rank four. He could not suppress the situation. Compared to Earth, trade here was not developed and had its own rules.

Using his knowledge of business and enterprise from Earth, Fang Yuan managed to earn and also lose money. After some painful experiences, he finally learnt from experience.

Combining the complete business knowledge from Earth, along with his personal experience, without bragging, Fang Yuan had the top tier knowledge in the business industry in this entire world.

Just an old woman who had lived in the Qing Mao Mountain’s village her whole life, she dares to obstruct me in getting the Liquor worm?

Old woman, you’re far too tender!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Grandma, what Gu is this?" The young girl curiously pointed at the central counter in the third floor.

There were three floors in this treehouse; the first floor sold Rank one Gu worms, the second floor sold Rank two Gu worms and the third floor sold Rank three Gu worms.

The higher you went, the lesser the Gu worms and the more expensive the price.

Naturally, the Gu worms that were put for sale in the treehouse were all rare and precious.

Gu Yue Yao Ji followed her granddaughter’s gaze and saw a round bucket-shaped, tall and thin tree stump. The stump had five branches like five fingers of a human and were intertwined in the middle.

A sphere-shaped Gu worm that was thumb-sized was wrapped around by the fine branches and covered by green leaves, emitting a white silvery glow.

"This is a white silver Relic Gu, it can only be used once and can instantly raise a Rank three Gu Master’s cultivation by a small realm," Gu Yue Yao Ji slowly explained.

Relic Gu was a series Gu worm.

Rank one had green copper Relic Gu which was specially targeted towards Rank one Gu Masters. Rank two had red steel Relic Gu which was effective only on Rank two Gu Masters, and Rank three was this Silver Relic Gu.

Rank four had yellow golden Relic Gu.

"The price is thirty thousand primeval stones, it’s so expensive!" The young girl was so shocked, she stuck out her tongue.

Gu Yue Yao Ji nodded, "Its final price should reach at least fifty thousand primeval stones. Alright, we have strolled long enough here, let’s go to the first floor reception desk, the results to the Liquor worm’s bidding should have come out."

In the treehouse, a Rank one Gu worm would only be displayed for half a day once there was a bid on it. For Gu worms that people had little interest in, it would be kept on display till someone made a bid.

Rank two Gu worms would be displayed for a day and Rank three ones for two days.

At first glance, this practice looked odd but when put in practice, this was the most suitable way of doing business.

At the reception desk.

"What, the Liquor worm has been bought by someone else?" Gu Yue Yao Ji immediately frowned upon seeing the results. She had put a high price and was confident in obtaining the Liquor worm, but to think she had actually miscalculated.

"Hmph! Who is it to be so bad as to snatch my dear Liquor worm?" The young girl angrily asked.

"Yao Le," Gu Yue Yao Ji reminded her granddaughter.

The young girl pouted and obediently shut her mouth.

The sales clerk behind the counter was a Rank two female Gu Master. She slightly bowed and answered the young girl, "I am sorry, we can’t divulge our customers’ information. Each business has special rules, please forgive me."

It was this confidentiality that dispelled many customers’ apprehensions and allowed them to freely take part in the bid.

Sometimes, people would have some things they clearly wanted, but they would yield to others because of feelings and courtesy. After all, they would frequently see each other in the clan.

But such a method of doing transactions secretly allowed one to go around the problem of sentiments.

Why would such a good thing need to go to you? Because you are my senior, relative or friend?

Never underestimate the dark side in everyone.

Such secret transactions allowed this dark side to come out.

Gu Yue Yao Ji ruminated for a while and said, "I know the rules. You don’t need to worry little girl, I won’t ask the name of that person who bought the Liquor worm, I only want to know what the final price was."

The female Gu Master bowed again, "I am really sorry, the price is also confidential. But please don’t worry, the final price was definitely the highest among all the bids. Jia family’s business has always centered around honesty."

"Hmph, little girl, do you know who I am?" Gu Yue Yao Ji’s face sank and coldly snorted.

"What is going on?" At this moment, a Rank three middle-aged Gu Master hurried over.

This treehouse was constantly being monitored; they would naturally know if anything occurred.

"Lord supervisor." The female Gu Master immediately greeted this middle-aged man.

The man waved his hand at the girl, "You can leave now, I will handle it here."

He turned towards Gu Yue Yao Ji and smiled, "So it was lord Yao Ji. She should be your granddaughter, right? She looks smart and sweet."

Gu Yue Yao Ji’s expression softened upon seeing that this man was also a Rank three Gu Master, but she still asked to know the final price.

The male supervisor felt that the situation was rather tricky.

He was an elder at the caravan and also a trusted aide of Jia Fu. After doing business for many years, he had a deep understanding of the Gu Yue village’s situation and knew the influence this old woman had.

To them, even if they offended Gu Yue Chi Lian or Gu Yue Mo Chen, they wouldn’t want to offend Gu Yue Yao Ji. The latter’s influence was second only to clan leader Gu Yue Bo.

The male supervisor pondered and said, "How about this, since lord Yao Ji wants to purchase the Liquor worm, I could call the shots and secretly transfer one over. To be honest, the warehouse has three Liquor worms and Lord Jia Fu personally decides where to sell them. You should know how precious the Liquor worm is. As for the price, let’s decide your bidding price as it."

However, Gu Yue Yao Ji slightly shook her head and knocked the cane on her hand on the ground.

She said, "I am not looking for a bargain. The price...will be the same as the selling price of the previous Liquor worm."

"This....." The supervisor hesitated, he naturally saw Gu Yue Yao Ji’s aim.

Gu Yue Yao Ji pretended to be annoyed and continued to pressure the male supervisor, "What? Is the price so high that you are afraid I won’t be able to afford it?"

"Of course, I didn’t mean that. Sigh, alright, we will do like you say." The supervisor sighed and said a price.

Upon hearing the price, the young girl first heaved a sigh of relief, but soon after that she felt somewhat indignant, "What, it was only twenty primeval stones more than ours?"

Gu Yue Yao Ji narrowed her eyes, but didn’t speak.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan had already exited the treehouse and arrived at the wine tavern.

The second Liquor worm was already in his possession, and now the only things he needed were the four types of wines — sour, sweet, bitter and spicy wines.

"I already have the sweet wine; there is still quite a lot of the golden honey wine remaining from the family inheritance mission. Spicy and sour wines should not be a problem. My only concern is the bitter wine." Fang Yuan was a bit worried when he thought of this.

If he had bitter wine, he could begin refining the Four Flavours Liquor worm tonight.

Many things in life were like this, whatever you fear, it will come true.

Fang Yuan’s worry became reality. He spent several hours rushing through countless tents; he found spicy and sour wines, but he didn’t find bitter wine.

"Not everything in this world follows our wishes." Fang Yuan was very helpless. He could only set aside the fusion plan for the Liquor worm.

Without the Four Flavours Liquor worm, his cultivating speed would be ordinary.

In the afternoon, he went to the treehouse again.

There were new Gu worms in many counters on the first floor.

The central counter - where the Liquor worm had been displayed - was now occupied by a Cleansing Water Gu.

The Cleansing Water Gu resembled the leech on Earth, except it was much cuter than the leech; its whole body had a light-blue luster like that of the glimmering water.

"Cleansing Water Gu can remove the mixed aura in the aperture. To Chi Cheng, it is a Gu worm that he must have." Fang Yuan thought of Chi Cheng when he saw this Cleansing Water Gu.

He knew Chi Cheng only had a C grade aptitude and had forcefully raised his cultivation with the help of his grandfather Gu Yue Chi Lian’s primeval essence, thus Chi Lian’s aura was mixed inside Chi Cheng’s aperture. If Chi Cheng didn’t clean it off, then his future prospects would be jeopardized.

"Chi Lian will definitely buy this Gu worm for Chi Cheng. Hmm, let me think.....his quote should be between six hundred thirty to six hundred forty."

This price was much more than the Liquor worm’s market value. The main reason was that Chi Cheng especially required this Gu worm.

"If I quote six hundred fifty, it should get me this Cleansing Water Gu. Just by adding ten primeval stones, this Cleansing Water Gu is bound to fall in my hands! As for the Liquor worm I bought this morning, my quote should have been about twenty primeval stones higher than Gu Yue Yao Ji’s." Fang Yuan coldly smiled inwardly.

He had this self-confidence.

His five hundred years of experience and the advanced business knowledge from Earth had combined to form this self-confidence. It was beyond ordinary.

With his previous life’s experience, when he just put ten more primeval stones, he had an eighty percent guarantee of getting the goods. When he bought the Liquor worm, the reason why he had put ten more primeval stones was because of his cautious nature.

Fang Yuan didn’t make a quote, he didn’t need the Cleansing Water Gu. And if he obtained it, then it would be investigated by Chi Lian. Of course, the main reason Fang Yuan did not bid was because he needed to hold onto the remaining money to see if there were any good Gu worms in the coming days.

"I lack two types of Gu worms; a scouting-type and a movement-type. The wolf tide will come in the coming year, and the caravan won’t come again. Although there is the Flower Wine Monk’s hidden inheritance, that was hastily left behind by Flower Wine Monk after he was injured. Who is to say if it is complete or not and what Gu worm would be next?"

In his memories, the wolf tide next year will be very dangerous. Fang Yuan didn’t want to be powerless just because he lacked Gu worms, being injured or even perishing in the wolf tide.

It would be a disaster for the current him if he were to be surrounded by wolf packs.

Before that happens, he needed to make sufficient preparations; both his cultivation and Gu worms shouldn’t be lacking.

After this, he repeatedly went to the treehouse for three days.

On the third day, in the first floor of the treehouse, he discovered something to be happy about – a Black Boar Gu!

Black and White Boar Gu were Gu worms that could increase the fundamental strength of Gu Masters. Fang Yuan had already used the White Boar Gu and received a power equal to that of a boar. If he used another White Boar Gu again, he wouldn’t receive any increase in strength. But the Black Boar Gu was different, its ability could overlay with the White Boar Gu’s.

Hence, at noon, there was one more Gu worm in his possession.

After that, there was nothing.

Some scouting and movement-type Gu worms appeared on the counters but they couldn’t satisfy Fang Yuan.

These Gu worms were displayed on ordinary counters and the price wasn’t good, so there weren’t many who would purchase them. Fang Yuan heard the caravan would be staying for eight days, so he patiently waited without becoming anxious.

It was the seventh day.

In the second floor of the treehouse, Fang Yuan discovered a red steel Relic Gu.

It could instantly raise a Rank two Gu Master’s primeval essence by a small realm!

Its price was marked at three thousand primeval stones, attracting many Rank two

Gu Masters to bid over it, dropping papers in the counters; it was a very lively scene.

"If I obtain this red steel Relic Gu, I could push my cultivation to middle stage instantly. With the middle stage scarlet primeval essence, I would be able to use the Moonglow Gu and White Jade Gu many more times."

Cultivation was the foundation of a Gu Master, an increase in cultivation meant an increase in fighting power. In terms of its effects, it was far better than getting the scouting and movement Gu worms.

Moreover, these two types of Gu worms in the treehouse were all ordinary to Fang Yuan, with none catching his eyes.

"I have purchased the Liquor worm and Black Boar Gu, I also bought some wine. This red steel Relic Gu’s final price will definitely cross five thousand primeval stones and could even reach eight thousand. After all, everyone knows about the wolf tide, so raising one’s cultivation by a small realm will be a lot of help. My primeval stones won’t be enough if I want to get this Relic Gu!"

Fang Yuan instantly realized that an obstacle had appeared in front of him.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

DUN DUN DUN!! Cliffhanger? See you guys soon~!!

I plan to release another 2 chapters by tomorrow if nothing changes in my work schedule, tomorrow seems a bit more free for me.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Even though he inherited his parents’ assets, to Fang Yuan, the time he had to accumulate wealth was still too little.

Activating the vitality leaf, he could not do it daily as it consumed a lot of time. Every time he grew out nine vitality leaves, half a day would be expended.

Fang Yuan considered for a moment. The sale time of this red steel Relic Gu is only one day. In such a short time, to come up with these large amount of primeval stones, the only way was to mortgage his wine tavern or the bamboo buildings.

This was nothing to feel pity over.

A year later, it would be the wolf tide. Under the wolves’ attack, Gu Yue Village would desperately hold on several times, and during the most severe attack, even the front gate was broken through. The clan leader and the clan elders restrained the lightning crown head wolf, and Gu Yue Qing Shu sacrificed his own life to block the gate and stabilized the situation.

The wolf tide caused Qing Mao mountain’s three clans to suffer a great reduction in clan members. Although not as much as 90% was gone, but at least half the population was wiped out.

By then, there would be more property than people, what talk would there be about renting out the bamboo building? The wine tavern was facing the eastern gates, who would dare to drink there? Even if they wanted to drink, the tavern would’ve gotten used by the clan and turned into a defensive tower.

Right now, the clan and many people were underestimating the severity of the wolf tide. At this point, if he could get rid of the tavern and bamboo buildings, he would be able to sell it at the best price.

"Money and fortune are just material goods, only one’s cultivation is the root. But, selling it to the clan is too cheap. If I sell it to an individual, the price would be higher. But who would have the financial ability right now to buy my bamboo building and tavern? Such a huge transaction, it is not something that can be settled at one go. Both sides have to observe and haggle for the best prices, that would take too much time. I only have one day. Wait, maybe someone can..."

Fang Yuan’s inspiration struck as he thought of someone.

This person was none other than his uncle Gu Yue Dong Tu.

Uncle and Aunt were both cunning and miserly. These decades of operating the tavern, bamboo buildings and selling the vitality leaves, they must have a huge stash of primeval stones.

Moreover, these assets were originally operated by them. All and all, it can save a lot of observation time.

The most important part was, they desperately needed this family asset to continue operating. No matter how much assets they had, without any income, this was like a river without a source; their primeval stones would get lesser and lesser, anyone would also be anxious over it.

It could be said, Uncle and Aunt were the best transaction targets.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan hesitated no longer, leaving the treehouse and walking towards Gu Yue Dong Tu’s estate.

The one who opened the door was Shen Cui, his former servant.

"Ah, it- it’s you!" Seeing Fang Yuan, she was very shocked.

Soon, she realized her slip of the tongue, and her face turned white from horror. Fang Yuan was now a Rank two Gu Master, but she was a mere mortal, the difference between them was like heaven and earth.

More importantly, Fang Yuan was the ruthless person who dared to kill the Mo family servant, later mincing the corpse and sending it to the Mo family.

"This servant pays her respects to young master Fang Yuan, welcome home, young master." Shen Cui shivered from her fear and her knees went soft, kneeling on the ground.

"Home?" Fang Yuan took a step into the courtyard. Seeing the familiar settings, his face showed a hint of mockery; there was no sense of belonging or attachment.

A year later, he had returned here once again.

Compared to his mental impression, this place was much more vacant. Just as Fang Zheng had said, some family servants were already sold away or retrenched.

Fang Yuan’s sudden appearance had alarmed Uncle and Aunt.

As the housekeeper, Mother Shen arrived at the first moment, kneeling and bowing to invite Fang Yuan into the living room, and served him tea by hand.

Fang Yuan sat on the chair, observing the living room.

Many of the furniture was missing, and the decor was much more simple and plain.

But this did not mean that Uncle and Aunt had no savings.

"Gu Yue Dong Tu is still very cunning, this is an act of self-preservation. He had already stepped into the background, and his battle strength had drastically slipped. Most importantly, he had lost the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, meaning that he had lost the trump card in maintaining his personal relationships, no longer able to exert influence outside."

A man’s wealth is his own ruin by causing another’s greed.

After Fang Yuan inherited the assets, many clansmen were jealous and eyed his fortune.

As for Uncle and Aunt, they faced the same problem. The huge amount of savings they had was both a blessing and a problem.

Not showing off one’s wealth, to them, this was the correct method of living.

At this time, footsteps could be heard.

The footsteps got closer, and soon, Aunt appeared at the doorstep.

"Fang Yuan, you actually still dared to come back here!" Seeing Fang Yuan, the rage in her heart appeared out of nowhere, screaming shrilly, "You traitorous scoundrel, how did we raise you. And to think you treat us like this, do you have a conscience, has your conscience been eaten by a dog!"

"You still have the cheeks to come here, and have the cheeks to drink tea here? Are you here to see our sorry states, now that you’ve seen it, are you happy?!"

Her finger pointed at Fang Yuan, her other hand at her waist as she screamed like a shrew.

If not for Fang Yuan wearing a glaring Rank two Gu Master battle attire, reminding her, she would have pounced on him and strangled him.

Fang Yuan paid no heed nor showed any expressions to Aunt’s finger or her angry accusations.

A year of not meeting, Aunt’s yellow face, although full of rage and hatred, could not hide her haggardness.

Her clothes had already changed to a simple hemp garment, and the accessories on her head had reduced. WIthout any make up, her mouth looked sharp and her face small, like a monkey.

Fang Yuan getting back the assets had caused a great influence and impact on her daily life.

To her furious bantering, Fang Yuan paid no heed to them, he held up his cup and drank some tea before saying slowly, "My trip here today is to sell the tavern and bamboo buildings, does Uncle and Aunt have any interest?"

"Pah, you traitorous wolf, what good can you have, wanting to sell the tavern and bamboo..." Aunt’s tone stalled as she finally reacted, her face showing disbelief, "What, you want to sell the tavern and bamboo buildings?"

Fang Yuan put down his teacup, leaning back on the chair, closing his eyes to rest, "Better to get Uncle here to discuss with me."

Aunt gritted her teeth, not believing it, her eyes like erupting flames as she stared angrily at Fang Yuan, saying, "I know, you’re trying to toy with me, that’s why you said that! Once I agree, I will get harshly mocked and ridiculed. You think I’m a fool, and would be played by you?"

This was purely a way of thinking from a person of low social status.

Fang Yuan sighed in his heart, before saying one sentence to change his aunt’s attitude—

"Say any more bullshit and I’m leaving. I believe others would be interested in these assets. By then, I would have sold it to other people, so don’t you both regret it."

Aunt paused for a moment, "Do you really want to sell these assets?"

"I am only waiting for five minutes." Fang Yuan opened a slit of his eyes to talk, before shutting them again.

He heard Aunt stomping her foot before a series of quick and softer footsteps.

Not long after, uncle Gu Yue Dong Tu appeared in front of Fang Yuan, but Aunt did not accompany him.

Fang Yuan looked at him.

Uncle was already aging extensively, his originally well-maintained face had shrunk, and there was much more white hair on his head now.

He had been worrying these few days.

Losing the family assets, he lost his financial sources all of a sudden. Without the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, he also lost his outside influence.

His "hidden elder" title, was already falsifying.

Although he had a huge amount of fortune in his hands, without his influence, these primeval stones had gotten troublesome.

The clan’s politics was to encourage the clansmen to compete for resources, especially the rules on Gu fighting, it was inhumane and non-friendly. But this could exterminate parasites and the appearance of a good-for-nothing second generation, allowing the clan’s people to maintain a sense of alertness. This also allowed the clan’s fighting force to maintain at a strong position.

In this world, only strong fighting force could ensure survival. Tornadoes, floods and beasts do not speak sense with you.

These years, Gu Yue Dong Tu had lived a life of peace, and his fighting ability had diminished. In order to reduce his burden, the Gu worms that he used to fight with, he had sold them away already.

If someone sent him a challenge now, he would definitely lose more than win.

Towards his uncle, Fang Yuan spoke openly about his purpose in coming.

"Fang Yuan, I shall not beat about the bush. I don’t understand something, why do you need to sell the wine tavern and bamboo buildings? If you keep them, you will have a steady source of income." Uncle could not believe it, but his tone was much more acceptable than aunt’s.

"Because I want to buy a red steel Relic Gu." Fang Yuan said honestly, there was no need to hide such things.

"So that’s it." Uncle’s gaze shone, "Then, you are selling the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass too?"

"That is impossible." Fang Yuan shook his head without any hesitation, "I am only selling the wine tavern, the bamboo buildings, the land and the eight servants."

Nine Leaf Vitality Grass was the most valuable thing in the asset, Fang Yuan needed its healing ability as well as selling them to earn primeval stones. It could sustain his cultivation and also feed the Gu worms.

Furthermore, next year the wolf tide was coming, and the vitality leaves’ price would soar. With this Nine Leaf Vitality Grass in hand, Fang Yuan would have no problems with primeval stones for his Rank two cultivation journey.

But if uncle obtains the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, his "hidden elder" influence would instantly recover. Fang Yuan did not want to see this happen.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s determined attitude, Gu Yue Dong Tu’s heart was very disappointed. At the same time, he felt helpless.

The two had a secret talk for two hours, then they signed an extremely secure transfer agreement.

Gu Yue Dong Tu regained the tavern, bamboo buildings, family servants and land, while Fang Yuan led three family servants who were holding a box full of primeval stones each, towards the treehouse.

They each got what they wanted.

Hearing the news, Aunt rushed over. Seeing Gu Yue Dong Tu’s contracts and deeds in his hands, she stared with round eyes and showed overwhelming joy, "Hubby, that lad got stupid from cultivating, he actually sold away such a profitable business! So stupid, wanting the eggs and not keeping the hen that lays eggs."

"Will you die if you stop talking, shut up." Gu Yue Dong Tu sounded very irritated.

"Husband..." Aunt pouted, "I’m just happy about it."

"Do not get complacent! With this tavern and the bamboo buildings, we have to be even more cautious now and keep a low profile. A huge tree attracts the wind. Although Fang Zheng is our adopted son, we cannot misuse this relationship. After all, Fang Zheng has not fully developed himself yet, who knows what the future entails?" Gu Yue Dong Tu sighed deeply.

"Got it, husband!" Aunt listened while staring at the stack of deeds, laughing uncontrollably.

Gu Yue Dong Tu’s face was solemn throughout.

The transaction went well, and he now had income. The primeval stones he spent would be replenished with two or three years of operation. But he was not happy at all.

His mind was full of Fang Yuan’s silhouette.

For a Relic Gu, Fang Yuan unhesitantly sold the assets, this was akin to giving up the comfortable life ahead.

Gu Yue Dong Tu placed himself in Fang Yuan’s shoes and thought, would I be able to do this?

I can’t.

Even if he did not like Fang Yuan, filled with hatred and disgust, at this moment he could not help but exclaim in his heart, "Able to give up and abandon his future comforts just like that, what great resolve he has!"

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Boom, two chapters today!!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"The competition is really fierce, who knows who the final winner will be."

"I have been standing here for just fifteen minutes and have already seen over ten Gu Masters putting quotes in the counter."

"Ah, this is a game for the rich. People like us don’t even qualify to compete."

In the second floor of the treehouse, Gu Masters were surrounding the central counter; discussing and sighing.

As night approached, the competition for the red steel Relic Gu had reached its peak. Many Rank two Gu Masters who were observing in the dark started putting their quotes in this final hour.

Some Gu Masters even made several bids.

"The final winner for this struggle should be either Mo Yan or Chi Shan," someone guessed.

"That’s possible. Mo Yan and Chi Shan are both at Rank two upper stage. With this Relic Gu, they can advance to peak stage and be at the same level as Qing Shu."

"In recent years, Gu Yue Qing Shu has been hanging over their heads. I don’t believe these two don’t have any thoughts about it."

"We can’t say for sure. It is not only us Rank two Gu Masters, there are even some Rank three elders who have made bids. Just this morning, someone saw Lord Yao Ji casting her bid."

"Right, I also heard that. Lord Yao Ji’s granddaughter Gu Yue Yao Le is taking part in the coming Awakening Ceremony; Lord Yao Ji should be preparing ahead and paving the way for her granddaughter."

"Ah, how good would it be if I had such a doting senior!"

Fang Yuan was among the crowd, his gaze tranquil as he listened to the discussions.

No one had mentioned his name. In the people’s eyes, Fang Yuan was only a lucky kid who had just inherited the family assets. In their minds, Fang Yuan was still not at the level of people like Chi Shan, Mo Yan and Qing Shu.

"Great. The less attention on me, the more smoothly can I get this red steel Relic Gu. But with these repeated purchases, I should have attracted his attention."

Fang Yuan was ninety-nine percent sure of getting this Relic Gu; he began to think of another problem.

If the following events develop according to his expectations, then there would be a perfect ending to his several days of effort.

It was time.

The leaves and branches on the counter suddenly grew and wrapped firmly around the Relic Gu. The green leaves blocked the people’s sight and when these leaves again unfolded, the red steel Relic Gu was not there anymore and was replaced by a Revert Gu.

The Revert Gu looked like a flat, oval, palm-sized stone. Its surface was slightly bulging and smooth, forming an eye pattern. The base of the stone was flat and felt rough to the touch.

The stone was black whereas the eye’s pattern was covered with white lines.

About every two seconds, the eye would blink once and the white lines that portrayed the eyeball would swivel, giving the feeling that this stone was rolling its eyes.

Revert Gu had a special function.

It decomposed Rank two Gu worm to Rank one.

For example, if the Revert Gu was used on Fang Yuan’s White Jade Gu, the White Jade Gu would again change back to White Boar Gu and Jade Skin Gu.

This process was called reverse-refining.

Fang Yuan glanced at it and immediately lost his interest. He didn’t need the Revert Gu.

The surrounding Gu Masters began arguing. Revert Gu couldn’t become everyone’s focal point like the red steel Relic Gu.

Everyone was very curious on who the red steel Relic Gu went to.

Some people looked for the floor’s caravan Gu Master and some people waited at the main desk.

The crowd slowly thinned out, but Fang Yuan didn’t move away.

"Young master Fang Yuan, please come to the third floor. Our lord Jia Fu would like to have a chat with you." A voice suddenly entered Fang Yuan’s ears.

Fang Yuan wasn’t surprised; there were many types of secret sound-transmission Gu worms in this world.

He followed the directions given by the voice and walked to a wall in the third floor.

Branches and leaves stacked together and covered the wooden wall.

Swoosh.....

The branches and leaves automatically parted to the sides and revealed a concealed door.

Fang Yuan pushed open the door and saw an exquisite whirling staircase that moved up.

He walked along the stairs and came to a small study room.

In the study room, Jia Fu was handling some accounts, his hand writing away speedily.

He raised his head when he heard Fang Yuan’s footsteps, revealing the scar on his face. He gave a gentle smile, "We meet again, little brother Fang Yuan."

"Respects to Lord Jia Fu." Fang Yuan clasped his hands and saluted.

"Come, sit here." Jia Fu pointed at a nearest desk.

After Fang Yuan sat, his left hand pushed a bamboo paper on the desk towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan took a glance and immediately recognized that this bamboo paper held all his quotes that he had made in the recent days. Under every quote was his signature.

He was inwardly happy, it had gone according to his expectations. But on the surface, he wore a doubtful expression as he asked, "I am not sure what Lord Jia Fu wants to show me?"

Jia Fu’s smile slightly decreased, his eyes flashing as he looked at Fang Yuan, "These are your quotes you made along with the quote you gave for the red steel Relic Gu. I will be honest, I am amazed at your business talent. Do you know, every one of your bids was very close to the final sale price."

"Although you only succeeded in buying a Black Boar Gu, a Liquor worm and the red steel Relic Gu, your quotes for other Gu worms only lacked by ten or so primeval stones. Brother, do you have any interest in working for me?" Jia Fu tried to recruit Fang Yuan.

"Here it comes!" Fang Yuan laughed inwardly. He had repeatedly made bids these days and had intentionally lost on most of them; his bids differing from the final price by only ten or so primeval stones. He had only successfully won Black Boar Gu, Liquor worm and red steel Relic Gu.

And just like he wished, Jia Fu was interested in the business talent he showed and took the initiative to recruit him.

However, in fact if Fang Yuan wished so, he had almost full guarantee of being able to purchase all the Gu worms.

"This...." Fang Yuan hesitated, then shook his head, "I am greatly honored to receive Lord Jia Fu’s kindness, but I don’t want to leave the clan."

"Oh, so it’s like that." Jia Fu’s gaze flashed, "Brother might have some misunderstandings towards me. A year ago, I indeed doubted you, but after using the Bamboo Gentleman, the suspicions on you have already been removed. Jia Jin Sheng was my brother, I hope you understand what my mood was like then. There is another piece of good news, I have already invited divine investigator Tie Xue Leng. There isn’t any case which he cannot solve. I believe he will definitely be able to investigate the truth and give justice to you."

"Divine investigator Tie Xue Leng....this is a problem." Fang Yuan thought over this name. This was not good news to him.

In this world, there were many magical places and also many amazing methods that could be used to investigate.

When Fang Yuan killed Jia Jin Sheng, he had only been at Rank one. Even if he knew a lot of methods, he couldn’t use them.

In his memories, Tie Xue Leng had a profound cultivation and wouldn’t even tolerate a bit of sand in his eyes. He followed the thought of punishing evil and rewarding the right throughout his whole life. He had an extremely rich sense of justice and his thoughts were meticulous. He was very good at finding subtle traces from any clues.

"Divine investigator has a high reputation, I have also heard of him. But when will this lord divine investigator arrive at Qing Mao Mountain?" Fang Yuan put on an anticipating look and directly asked.

"That....." Jia Fu awkwardly smiled, "Divine investigator is very busy. From his reply, it might only be the year after the next."

Fang Yuan immediately felt relieved, he had a lot of time to prepare.

"Brother, I think highly of you. I hope you can carefully consider my proposal." Jia Fu made attractive offers.

Fang Yuan tactfully refused; now was not the best time to leave Qing Mao Mountain.

If he went to a strange environment without enough strength, he was bound to be bullied and pushed aside. The caravan was also full of unwritten rules on bullying and pushing aside.

"That is really a pity for your talent. How about this, I will give you this token. If there comes a day where you want my help, this token will be the proof that I will always welcome you." Jia Fu had failed in recruiting Fang Yuan, but he didn’t feel surprised. He had a deep understanding towards this type of clan’s cohesiveness.

If he was to know now that Fang Yuan was Jia Jin Sheng’s murderer, who knows what his expression would be.

Fang Yuan apologised in shame as he received the token handed by Jia Fu along with the red steel Relic Gu.

He kept the two items close to him and backtracked his way out.

A young female Gu Master was caressing the leaves on the wall, when suddenly she cried out in shock. The branches and leaves suddenly parted and revealed a door.

The door was pushed open from inside and Fang Yuan walked out expressionlessly.

"You, you, you!" The young girl widened her eyes and blankly looked at Fang Yuan brushing past her.

Among the surrounding Gu Masters who saw this scene; some were familiar with this, some gave a knowing smile and some threw amazed looks.

Fang Yuan paid no heed to these gazes and walked down to the second floor. Some Gu Masters were still waiting there, excitedly discussing who the red steel Relic Gu went to.

Some people brazenly made guesses whereas some people gave some little news- "Mo Yan had a mysterious smile when she walked out of the treehouse," - "Chi Shan’s face was ashen," - and so on.

And to top it all, some people pledged that so and so had bought the Relic Gu, even making an oath.

Fang Yuan went past this bored group of people. No one knew that at this moment, the red steel Relic Gu was so close to them.

When Fang Yuan walked out of the treehouse, he bumped into Chi Shan.

His face indeed looked unsightly, and at his side, Chi Cheng was asking about the whereabouts of the red steel Relic Gu.

After seeing Fang Yuan, Chi Cheng snorted and turned his head, intentionally not looking at him. Chi Shan silently nodded his head towards Fang Yuan as a greeting.

Fang Yuan also nodded his head as a reply, his face carrying a wisp of smile.

The last of the sunshine shone on this young boy’s face; he was indeed happy.

With the red steel Relic Gu, his cultivation would instantly advance by a level.

And there was also the token.

A year ago, Fang Yuan wanted to build a friendship with Jia Jin Sheng and rely on him to take part in the future large-scale Gu fighting competition, reaping benefits in that period of upheaval.

Unfortunately, life was unpredictable, the final outcome made Fang Yuan not know whether to laugh or cry — unexpectedly, he ended up killing Jia Jin Sheng with his own hands.

No matter. Without Jia Jin Sheng, relying on Jia Fu also worked. This token was equivalent to the admission ticket to the future large-scale Gu fighting competition.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

This is Wednesday’s chapter~ Enjoy! Giff all your powa stones ༼ つ ◕_◕ ༽つ

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Three days after the caravan left the village.

In the rock forest inside the mountain, filled with dark red light.

Huge stone pillars extended down from the ceiling, resembling long and gigantic tree trunks, forming into a majestic grey coloured stone forest.

Fang Yuan was retreating from battle in the rock forest.

Chirpchirpchirp......

A bunch of stone monkeys stared with their green circular monkey eyes, chasing after Fang Yuan relentlessly.

"Moonglow Gu!" Fang Yuan called in his mind, his right arm chopping towards the direction of the monkey gang.

Pew.

An eerie blue moonblade as large as a face formed into a crescent and pierced through the air, cutting into the monkey gang.

A jade eye stone monkey was jumping in the air. With no foothold to escape on, it was hit directly by the moonblade.

Before it could scream, in the next moment, its entire body was split into two from head to toe.

It had lost all its remaining life force and was enveloped in a deep aura of death.

In a split second, its lively eyes became a pair of jade pearls. As its body descended, it turned into a rock statue.

Bam.

With a crisp sound, the statue fell onto the ground, smashing into pieces.

The moonblade only dimmed a little, and after killing this stone monkey, its force remained as it rushed for the monkeys behind.

Kachakkk...

After a few cries, five or six stone monkeys were killed on the spot.

Chirpchirpchirp!

Their companions’ death fueled the monkey gang’s rage as they screamed furiously, their influence doubling, imposingly leaping at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was unfazed by the danger, his heart remaining as calm as ice. He fought and retreated appropriately. As the stone monkeys neared, he attacked with the moonblade.

The Moonlight Gu in the past, even with the boost from Little Light Gu, each moonblade could only kill one or two monkeys. But now, with one attack the Moonglow Gu could kill five or six stone monkeys.

But there were positive and negative impacts. The Moonglow Gu, to the current Fang Yuan, had a huge cost.

Each moonblade used 10% of his red steel primeval essence. Fang Yuan only had 44% primeval sea in his aperture.

This meant that he could only use four moonblades in one go.

"If I can successfully fuse the Four Flavors Liquor worm and refine my primeval essence, I would be able to shoot eight moonblades. What a pity. Even though I have the second Liquor worm and three out of the four flavours of wine, I am lacking the final one, I’m stuck at the final step," Fang Yuan sighed deeply.

Three moonblades later, his aperture only had 14% light red primeval essence left.

To play safe, he no longer used the moonblade, but activated the White Jade Gu.

The stone monkeys encircled him, the closest monkey jumping to Fang Yuan’s leg and going into a frenzy. From down to up, it used its monkey head to hit Fang Yuan’s chin.

Fang Yuan snorted, he wanted to use his fist to crush this overconfident monkey.

But suddenly he had a thought and stopped his hand, using his chin to receive the blow instead.

A moment before the point of impact, his chin shone with white jade cold light.

A loud bam sound resounded.

The force of the attack caused Fang Yuan’s head to tilt back. But that monkey laid on the ground, hugging its head and rolling around the ground screaming in agony.

Without the White Jade Gu, Fang Yuan’s chin would’ve been smashed. But now, Fang Yuan only felt slightly dizziness with no injuries.

But, even with the White Jade Gu’s defense, he still had to withstand the impact of the attack.

Fang Yuan took a few steps back before recovering and seeing the scenery clearly before his eyes again.

He had intentionally withstood the monkey’s headbutt earlier, it was to have this body get used to such attacks and get used to the slight dizziness.

This way, in the future when he falls into a life-and-death crisis, encountering such an attack, he would be able to recover much more quickly and fight for a survival chance.

Fang Yuan was always ruthless with his methods. This ruthlessness was not only towards enemies, but also himself!

He came here to kill stone monkeys almost every three days.

His motive was not just the Flower Wine Monk’s strength inheritance, but also another motive – to utilize the stone monkeys to train his own fighting ability.

A Gu Master’s physical stats, physical combat proficiency, aperture primeval essence, battle experience and every Gu worm, they were all elements that affected the overall battle strength.

Only by gathering all these elements tightly together can one exert the greatest fighting strength.

The stone monkey group was like a hammer, and Fang Yuan was the ingot that had just came out of the cauldron. With every hit of the hammer, he would become more sturdy, more refined, and more compact.

Fifteen minutes later, this battle ended.

On the ground, there were rock fragments all over the ground, and within those were dozens of jade pearls.

"I killed fourty-one jade eyes stone monkeys this time," Fang Yuan counted in his heart, and every time he would collate the battle results. From each battle, he’d reflect upon himself and improve upon what he did not do properly. At the same time, he would feel his own improvement speed.

"In the earlier battle, the Moonglow Gu was the most contributing factor, with three moonblades killing at least seventeen or eighteen stone monkeys. That is about half of the entire battle results, the remaining monkeys were all killed by my close combat.

Moonlight Gu’s effect on the stone monkeys was not very obvious. But after advancing to Moonglow Gu, it jumped to being Fang Yuan’s most powerful attacking method.

Not only was its attack power strong, but more crucially, its efficiency was very high.

Fang Yuan utilized three moonblades only in the span of a few breath’s time, but when he used his fists and kicks to smash the stone monkeys, that took over ten minutes.

These stone monkeys were very agile and had swift movements.

When the stone monkeys were on the ground, there was no point thinking of hitting them physically. With a jump, they could easily leap away and avoid Fang Yuan’s attack.

The only weakness was that when they jumped in mid-air, they couldn’t change their moving direction. Fang Yuan being able to kill them, was due to this weakness.

But this was owing to his rich fighting experience. If it was any other Rank two Gu master, even Chi Shan, Mo Yan or Qing Shu, they would not be able to catch the weakness every time like Fang Yuan.

His previous life’s memories could allow Fang Yuan to sensitively catch the opportunities in battle and seize them. He could meticulously use every ounce of his strength. Even though he was Rank two, he could already utilize his fighting strength to the limit of his abilities.

He was definitely not like Fang Zheng, having the Jade Skin Gu, but on the arena after being overwhelmed by Fang Yuan’s aura, could not even display his supposed strength.

Of course, Fang Yuan’s cultivation was still very low, and against the monkey group, he could not overwhelm them by brute force.

Every time, he had to fight while retreating.

Luckily, the monkeys did not have high intelligence. They could not adjust their attack patterns, and even after seeing Fang Yuan crushing them in mid-air many times, they still leapt towards Fang Yuan while attacking.

At the same time, every time they chased Fang Yuan, if it was too far from their homes, their longingness to their homes would overwhelm their anger. Many monkeys gave up on the chase due to this.

Gu are the essence of heaven and earth, humans are the spirit of all living things.

Fang Yuan is relying on the intelligence of humans to understand the stone monkeys’ habits and using the correct fighting methods to get deeper into the rock forest, at this point he was already near the central area of the rock forest.

After many attempts, Fang Yuan finally exterminated the monkey group on this rock pillar.

Right now, in front of him, was the final pillar.

It was the largest and thickest rock pillar in this rock forest.

The pillar extended downwards from the ceiling, almost touching the ground. It emitted a majestic aura amidst the silence.

Fang Yuan counted the number of rock caves on the pillar, getting an estimation of at least five hundred stone monkeys. This was the largest monkey group he had encountered up till now.

But no matter how many jade eye stone monkeys there were, to Fang Yuan, it was just a small bit of trouble, at most he’d have to exert more effort and waste a few more trips.

What caused his gaze to become serious, was the rock cave at the most upper level.

The entrance of this cave was larger than any of the surrounding caves, at least twice as large if not more.

And below it, the caves were tightly cluttered together, forming and resembling a position where they were worshipping and revering.

"It seems that there is a monkey king in this rock cave." Fang Yuan frowned.

This was where the problem lay.

As long as a beast group is large, there would be a beast king created. There was a wild boar king in the wild boar group. Obviously there would also be a monkey king in the monkey group.

The threat of a beast king was multiple times higher than a normal wild beast.

The reason was that their bodies had one or two Gu worms inside. These Gu had a mutual partnership with the beast kings, and once the beast king is attacked, they would come out and assist.

"This jade eye stone monkey king should not be very strong, at least weaker than the wild boar king. Otherwise, the surrounding monkey groups would’ve been under his control already." Fang Yuan using his experiences, gauged the monkey king’s strength.

Normally, the bigger the beast group, the stronger the beast king; weaker beast kings did not have the ability to rule over a large number of its kind.

According to the beast group’s size and classifying of the beast kings, from low to high, they could be classified as hundred beast king, thousand beast king, and myriad beast king.

The wild boar king that sickly snake’s group hunted was a thousand beast king, it ruled over a thousand wild boars.

The stone monkey king before Fang Yuan was a hundred beast king, it only had several hundred stone monkeys under its rule.

The culprit behind the wolf tide, the lightning crown wolf was a myriad beast king, every single lightning crown wolf ruled over at least ten thousand lightning wolves.

The difference in ability between the three beast kings, were huge.

Thousand beast kings needed three teams to cooperate together to be able to barely kill it. The sickly snake group was able to deal with the wild boar king, mostly due to it being injured beforehand.

A myriad beast king required the clan elders and clan leader to work together to be able to go against it head on.

As for hundred beast king, a regular five man group would be able to handle it.

But for Fang Yuan who wanted to deal with this monkey king, he could not borrow outside strength, and could only rely on his own power.

"Rank two initial stage primeval essence is ineffective here, it seems it is time to use the red steel Relic Gu." Fang Yuan eyed the rock cave deeply, then left the second secret room and closed the rock door.

If what stands in his way is a thousand beast king like the wild boar king, Fang Yuan would retreat without thinking.

But if it is only a hundred beast king, if Fang Yuan had Rank two middle stage cultivation, he could give it a shot.

Of course, the results could go either way. Even with middle stage cultivation, he still had roughly 75% chance of failure, his chances of success not even hitting 30%.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The translucent light membrane, faint red primeval sea and the surging waves.

On the sea surface, two fat white Liquor worms were absorbing the water. In the air above the sea, a black ladybug-like Black Boar Gu was shaking its wings and hovering around the red steel Relic Gu.

The pebble like White Jade Gu had sunk to the depths of the sea and was motionless.

Spring Autumn Cicada had concealed itself; it was in a deep slumber to recuperate.

"It is time." Fang Yuan willed; the sea waves paused, and a portion of primeval essence surged up and poured towards the red steel Relic Gu.

The red steel Relic Gu immediately shook and flew up, giving off bursts of red rays of light.

It was like the slowly rising sun, its rays of light shining upon the aperture wall.

The rays of light were as hot as fire and as dazzling as a sword.

The Black Boar Gu was soon unable to bear it and fell down to the primeval sea.

The two Liquor worms also sunk down to the depths of the primeval sea.

White Jade Gu was flashing inside the sea.

For Fang Yuan to advance to rank two middle stage with normal methods, he could only use the method of grinding; using his light red primeval essence to cleanse the light membrane aperture wall.

But now, red steel Relic Gu gave off majestic red light which replaced the light red primeval essence and poured directly into the aperture wall, giving astonishing results.

Fang Yuan could see the whole light membrane thickening at an astonishing pace.

The light on the light membrane condensed into streams of light, gradually changing to a water membrane. The white shimmering rays flowed continuously; becoming clear one moment and dark in the next.

Right now, Fang Yuan had advanced to middle stage!

However, the Relic Gu was still bursting with red rays of light.

The rays of light filled the whole aperture; it replaced the primeval essence and continuously injected its essence and foundation into Fang Yuan’s aperture.

The water membrane accepted it all and the shimmering rays of light on it was like water as it flowed freely.

This continued on for about fifteen minutes.

Red steel Relic Gu had thoroughly exhausted all its energy; its body turned transparent and disappeared in the red light.

The penetrating red rays of light also suddenly dissipated with its disappearance.

The aperture recovered its tranquility once again.

However the water membrane had become much thicker. Using the red steel Relic Gu had saved Fang Yuan from wasting a lot of time and effort.

A thread of scarlet red primeval essence appeared in the primeval sea.

This was the rank two middle stage primeval essence. It was more condensed than the light red initial stage primeval essence. It sank to the depths of the primeval sea and lingered around the White Jade Gu.

A red steel Relic Gu could directly strengthen the foundation of the aperture. To a Gu Master, this meant advancing by a small realm.

This type of Gu worm was naturally better if used early.

To a Gu Master, higher cultivation meant stronger fighting force, better survival rate, more mission completions and also more primeval stones earnings. It had a great influence on every aspect.

After reaching the middle stage, Fang Yuan took several primeval stones and started recovering his primeval essence. He stopped only after the 44% percent primeval sea in his aperture had completely filled with middle stage scarlet primeval essence.

Half an hour later, he once again stepped into the stone forest, heading towards the central area.

He stepped into the warning zones of the monkey groups; immediately, furious jade eye stone monkeys came out of the stone pillars.

They screeched and pounced upon Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s expression didn’t change, most of his attention was on that cave at the highest layer of the stone pillar.

When encountering a common jade eye stone monkey, there was no need to be nervous as long as you weren’t surrounded by them. The main problem was the stone monkey king.

What Gu worms resided on it? Fang Yuan didn’t know.

Fang Yuan slowly retreated while cautiously observing, but the stone monkey king didn’t appear.

Fang Yuan was baffled, "Is there no monkey king in this monkey group? If there was a monkey king, then it would no doubt be the first to come out if someone infringed on its territory. Hold it, maybe it has already come out!"

Just as he thought of this, the sleeping Spring Autumn Cicada in his aperture suddenly floated into appearance. Its body was trembling as it gave a weak startled cry that resonated only within Fang Yuan’s mind.

The vital Gu’s warning!

This appeared only when the vital Gu felt there was an intense threat against the Gu Master’s life.

In that split second, Fang Yuan’s hairs stood up. Without thinking twice, he directly used the White Jade Gu.

A layer of bright white jade light covered his whole body.

In the next instant, the stone monkey king - who was three times bigger than a normal stone monkey - suddenly appeared on the left side of Fang Yuan and fiercely struck out with its sharp claws at Fang Yuan’s left shoulder.

Bang.

The stone monkey king’s attack was blocked by the White Jade Gu’s defense; its attack failed.

In the instant Fang Yuan received this attack, the White Jade Gu in his aperture suddenly lit up and consumed five percent of the scarlet primeval essence.

If it was when Fang Yuan was at the initial stage, ten percent of light red primeval essence would have been used up.

From this, one could see how sinister and vicious the stone monkey king’s sneak attack was.

Despite Fang Yuan having a calm character, he couldn’t help breaking out in cold sweat at this moment. If it were not for him sharpening himself these days and polishing his condition to a peak combat state, he might have really been hit by the stone monkey king’s attack.

Had his reaction been just a bit late, his left shoulder would have become crippled and unusable. Fang Yuan would then end up miserable just like Gu Yue Man Shi not long ago.

"There is actually a wild concealing-type Gu worm residing in this stone monkey king!" Fang Yuan hurriedly retreated, he had no way to detect a concealing Gu worm and ended up in disadvantage all of a sudden.

The stone monkey king seemed to be more cunning than normal stone monkeys. After its attack missed, it again hid itself away.

This undoubtedly was a huge mental pressure on Fang Yuan.

He used the White Jade Gu to form a defense around his whole body. Such a method used primeval essence every moment and it was impossible for him to maintain this defense.

Even when he had fought with the stone monkey troops before, he would only use the White Jade Gu at the crucial moment.

If he continued to maintain this state, then his primeval essence would completely dissipate not long after.

Over five hundred stone monkeys encircled Fang Yuan aggressively.

Fang Yuan used his greatest speed to retreat and pull some distance.

Some stone monkey’s momentum became weaker, whereas some stomped on the ground and began to head back to their homes.

"Chirp!" Right at this moment, the jade eye stone monkey king appeared and commanded in a loud voice.

"Chirp chirp!!" The stone monkey groups immediately responded; their confusion and hesitation disappeared and again started their chase after Fang Yuan.

Over five hundred jade eye stone monkeys were persistently chasing after him, but Fang Yuan didn’t panic; his lips revealing a cold smile on the contrary.

This accident was already in his expectations.

He had chosen the easiest route towards the central area of the stone forest, opening up a passage. In the surroundings of the passage were large numbers of stone monkey groups.

Fang Yuan was very familiar with this passage.

However, with the low intelligence of these stone monkeys, how could they know? Under the supervision of the stone monkey king, they stormed through the stone forest, infringing on other monkey groups’ warning zones and resulting in counterattacks from the other monkey groups.

The stone forest was in a great chaos!

Countless jade eye stone monkeys stood at their place, starting a massacre to defend their homes.

In ten or more years, the stone monkey king might even advance to become a thousand beast king and completely unify this stone forest. But now, it was only a hundred beast king and didn’t have the ability to control so many stone monkeys.

The different groups of stone monkeys fell into a chaotic battle with each other.

For a moment, all Fang Yuan could hear was the screeching and screaming sounds of the stone monkeys.

Those five hundred stone monkeys that were chasing him were quickly entangled with the other stone monkey groups. But the stone monkey king still persisted on chasing after Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was attacking and retreating. In this period of time, he suffered many sneak attacks from the stone monkey king and every attack would consume great amounts of his primeval essence. Luckily, he had advanced to middle stage before this. Otherwise, with the initial stage primeval essence, he wouldn’t have been to handle this consumption.

Fang Yuan landed in absolute disadvantage; he had not found any weakness in the stone monkey king.

The only chance to attack lay in the moment the stone monkey king was about to attack. But even if Fang Yuan was able to react, he had no time to even make an attacking movement.

The stone monkey king possessed a concealment-type gu worm and firmly held the initiative. It could attack Fang Yuan whenever it wanted to attack. Even if Fang Yuan injured it, it could use the concealment-type gu worm to safely escape; it was in an invincible position.

"Without a stealth-removal Gu worm, the probability to win this battle is extremely low! If I had a wide area attacking method, maybe I could give it a try. But Moonglow Gu...I will only be able to hit this stone monkey king if I am lucky, but the probability is too low."

Fang Yuan clearly understood the battle situation and immediately retreated.

However, the stone monkey king seemed to be determined to kill him.

Fang Yuan retreated to about a hundred meters from the rock door when he suddenly stopped.

"I only have a bit over 10% of my primeval essence remaining. It won’t be enough to cover this hundred meters of distance. And even if I am able to enter the second secret room and close the rock door, this stone monkey king might just break the door!"

Fang Yuan had thought that the stone monkey king would give up after chasing him for such a long period of time. Yet who could have thought that it still persisted on chasing him.

He was already out of the stone forest now and around him was a patch of empty ground.

Countless stone monkeys were fighting chaotically in the stone forest, causing an uproar. Their noisy sounds kept on echoing within this empty space.

Fang Yuan didn’t budge; his battle intuition told him that the stone monkey king was hiding somewhere, waiting for him to show a gap before making a fatal attack.

Fang Yuan knew he had already fallen into an impasse.

Normal Rank two Gu Masters would have already fallen apart from this fear, unable to endure this formless pressure.

But Fang Yuan was still calm.

This situation was also within his expectations, though its probability was very low. According to logic, the stone monkey king should also possess the stone monkey’s habits and be reluctant to leave its home. But for some reason, this stone monkey king was hell bent on chasing and killing Fang Yuan.

"If you choose to take a risk, you need to be willing to risk your life!" Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with a cold light; he then took off his upper garment.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"11% primeval essence, this means two moonblades or sustain the monkey king’s sneak attack twice. Relying solely on the Moonglow Gu or White Jade Gu will not do. My only chance is the instant where the monkey king attacks me, I have to grasp the opportunity and shoot the moonblade, instantly killing it!" Fang Yuan’s thoughts sparked like flint, thinking of the most optimum strategy.

Stone monkeys did not have outstanding defense, and since the monkey king chose a sneak attack approach, it revealed that defense was its weakness.

One moonblade could slaughter five or six jade eye stone monkeys. Even if it couldn’t kill the monkey king, it can still heavily injure it.

But do not think that this is easy; getting to this point is difficult, even if a group of Gu Masters came, without a stealth removal type Gu they would still lose their lives.

"This monkey is cunning, choosing not to attack, is it waiting for my primeval essence to be used up? Nevermind, I shall trust the Spring Autumn Cicada once and bet on this chance!" Fang Yuan instantly decided, his eyes shining with a cold and ruthless light.

He stood on the spot, both hands hanging beside him, holding the collar of his shirt. At the same time, he closed his eyes, only leaving a slit of visibility. What is more shocking is that he removed the defense of the White Jade Gu.

The expenditure of the primeval essence in his aperture, finally stopped. At the same time, he was no longer under the protection of the white jade light.

The rock forest continued to reverb with the cries and anguish of the monkeys, but Fang Yuan could feel that these noises were getting closer and closer to himself.

A type of calmness enveloped his heart and mind.

He was silently waiting for the stone monkey king’s attack.

When it attacks, that is when the match is decided!

Waiting...

Waiting...

Suddenly, the Spring Autumn Cicada vibrated in the aperture.

Pew!

The very next moment, Fang Yuan heard an explosion and the stone monkey king appeared on his left!!

"White Jade Gu!" Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with brilliance as the white jade light covered his entire body.

Bam.

The stone monkey king hit Fang Yuan’s body with a strong force, almost causing him to topple, his primeval essence dropping by 5%, only left with the other half!

Seeing that his attack did not finish Fang Yuan off, the stone monkey king tried to escape!

Fang Yuan had no time to counterattack, but it was enough for him to flick his upper shirt.

Suddenly, he felt that there was someone on his upper shirt, tugging towards the outside direction.

The shirt was not made of steel, and to prevent it from tearing, Fang Yuan let go of both hands, seeing the floating shirt fly around the place at a shocking speed.

"Now!" Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with cold light as the battle’s outcome would be decided with this moonblade, his heart cold and calm as ice.

The monkey king was afterall a wild beast, and after having its face covered by a shirt, it flew into a panic.

It emitted a shrill scream, calling its stone monkeys to help. At the same time the shirt continued to move around, changing directions and going all over the place.

An eerie blue moonblade flew out and hit the stone monkey king.

The monkey king cried in pain as its camouflage was exposed.

Its appearance was the same as a normal stone monkey, but its body size was three times bigger, and at the same time its eyes shone with a bloody red light.

A long and deep wound stretched from its chest to its left leg, blood continuing to pour from it.

Although not dead, it had already suffered a heavy injury, and the aura of death permeated its entire body. It covered its wound in shock, going invisible again.

Fang Yuan’s upper shirt was cut open by his moonblade, falling onto the ground. But the blood traces exposed the monkey king, and it hurriedly retreated, no longer having the idea of killing Fang Yuan. With such a grave injury, if it did not deal with it, it would lose its life.

At this time, Fang Yuan also retreated to the rock door. After activating the moonblade, his aperture only had a little bit of primeval essence left, and his battle strength dropped drastically.

Although it looked like a draw, Fang Yuan had won.

The monkey king’s injury could not be recovered shortly. The more blood it lost, the weaker it felt.

But Fang Yuan could use the primeval stones to recover his primeval essence and recover his battle strength.

Even without a stealth removal type Gu, nor a wide area attack method, with his rich fighting experience and the will of steel in the face of danger, Fang Yuan could beat the strong in a weaker state.

"Monkey, fox, bei(1), these wild beasts have extraordinary intelligence compared to ordinary wild beasts, and are more cunning. Because of this, they lack the wild courage and often retreat while injured. If it were a wild boar or bull, they would go into a frenzy while injured. This monkey king seems to only have one Gu worm. Although the Gu worm could grant stealth, it cannot hide blood traces, and if my guess is correct, it should be the Rank one stealth rock Gu."

Fang Yuan pondered in his heart, and relying on his memories, the monkey king had no more secrets in front of him.

"The results has been decided." Fang Yuan returned to the rock room, closing the door and replenishing his primeval essence.

A moment later, his primeval essence went back to its peak state, and Fang Yuan opened the rock door, being in the rock forest once again.

The rock forest was still a mess, but better than before.

"After this chaos, the entire rock forest’s forces will be reset. The stone monkeys will relocate and regroup, and the roaming and isolated stone monkeys form into new monkey gangs. The path that I painstakingly created would thus vanish."

Fang Yuan’s heart sank, he needed to kill the stone monkey king before this path is completely gone.

If not, opening this path would expend much of his time again, and by the time he got to the center again, the monkey king would’ve completely healed.

He shall chase after and annihilate lingering enemies with bravery, rather than be easily contented with fame and compliments like Xiang Yu(2).

Fang Yuan trailed along the opened path, invading the rock forest. The stone monkeys who appeared in his way were all exterminated.

Fifteen minutes later, he appeared at the central pillar once again.

The stone monkey king laid on the ground; it had turned into a statue and was already dead.

A jade eye stone monkey was stepping on its corpse, screaming about.

Replacing the title of king, with the death of the former king, a new king takes its place. Regardless of the beast group or human society, this was the cruel elimination system.

"Saved some effort of mine." Fang Yuan slowly got closer.

At this moment, a Gu worm slowly floated from the corpse of the stone monkey king, flying towards the new king.

Moonglow Gu!

Fang Yuan shot out a moonblade just in time, chasing away the new stone monkey king, then walking up and grabbing the Gu worm.

This Gu looked ordinary like a grey rock, with an uneven surface that was not even squarish nor spherical. If this Gu was thrown on the road, no one would notice it based on appearance.

But in reality, it was the essence of a rock, a natural Gu nurtured by Mother Nature.

It seemed like an inanimate object, a rock. But in fact, it was the real deal, a living being with its own consciousness and thought.

As Fang Yuan predicted, it was the Stealth Rock Gu.

Grabbed by Fang Yuan, it desperately struggled, trying to be free of his demonic grasp.

Spring Autumn Cicada.

Fang Yuan called in his mind, and the Spring Autumn Cicada appeared in his aperture, leaking a trace of its aura.

The Stealth Rock Gu instantly went dead, not daring to struggle, like a mouse meeting a cat.

Fang Yuan’s red primeval essence activated and instantly refined it.

Another Gu in the bag!

The Stealth Rock Gu was kept in the aperture and sunk to the bottom of the primeval sea, side by side with the White Jade Gu.

The stone monkey watched helplessly at the side, and on seeing Fang Yuan keep the Stealth Rock Gu into his body, it frantically jumped about, screaming incoherently.

It had just gotten the new position, so not many monkeys obeyed it.

With another moonblade, Fang Yuan took a few more monkey lives. Those that gathered around their new king instantly dispersed.

The new stone monkey king gnawed its teeth at Fang Yuan.

"Scram." Fang Yuan stared at it, saying a word, with his expression cold as ice.

The monkey king shuddered, feeling the intense killing intent from Fang Yuan. It stared at Fang Yuan blankly before gulping and turning around to escape, showing its superior intelligence compared to wild beasts.

Fang Yuan chased these stone monkeys away and ignored them, getting to the bottom of the rock pillar as soon as he could.

As he got close, he found a cave below the rock pillar.

The cave was not big, and some rock stairs extended downwards into the darkness.

Fang Yuan had no investigative Gu worm, so he could not tell what was down there.

With the situation unclear, Fang Yuan did not enter the cavern and walk down the stairs. He had barged his way in earlier, and his body condition was not at its prime. Furthermore, the chaos in the rock forest was disappearing and was stabilizing.

He had spent much effort and time to open the path, but many stone monkeys were starting to reside in the pillars along the way.

"Haste brings no success. Now that I have found the inheritance clue, I have achieved my goal. It is time to return." Fang Yuan controlled the urge to investigate, and returned via the same route.

On the way, the pressure intensified but eventually, he endured the pressure as he was chased by hundreds of monkeys, tragically rushing out of the rock forest.

TIme passed quickly, and summer replaced spring.

Unknowingly it was the scorching summer again already.

Fang Yuan spent every second of his time cultivating diligently. Using the red steel Relic Gu, he instantly caught up to Fang Zheng’s cultivating speed.

He did not have a special Gu that could hide his middle stage aura. After killing the monkey king and obtaining the Stealth Rock Gu, a day later, his cultivation level was exposed.

The clansmen only knew then that he was the one who obtained the red steel Relic Gu; it was actually Fang Yuan!

At the same time, he intentionally revealed the Black Boar Gu.

Fang Yuan sold such a huge amount of assets to get the Black Boar Gu and red steel Relic Gu. Many people could not understand his thoughts, calling him a ‘fool’, ‘dumbass’, ‘maniac’ and ‘short-sighted’, as they became his new nicknames.

With a rise in attention, Fang Yuan had to reduce the number of times he ventured into the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance.

He continued to nurture his aperture as he steadily moved towards Rank two upper stage, while collecting the ingredients to fuse the Liquor worm as well as the Stealth Rock Gu. At the same time, he used the vitality leaf to earn primeval stones, sustaining his cultivation.

July, the start of autumn.

At the foot of the mountain near the village, a wild Rank five Gu suddenly appeared, causing a huge tremor at Gu Yue Village!

(1) Bei - A legendary wolf in chinese mythology

(2) Xiang Yu - Qing Dynasty conqueror

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

A solemn and serious atmosphere filled the conference hall.

A group of elders silently sat on their seats; their faces were either indifferent, gloomy or serious.

Clan head Gu Yue Bo was sitting on the main seat, his gaze also filled with unconcealed worry, "Three days ago, a River Swallowing Toad appeared near the village by the foot of the mountain. This toad flowed along with the Huang Long River(1) and accidentally reached here. Right now, it is blocking up a river channel and sleeping there. If we ignore it, the village will constantly be in danger. So I would like to ask the elders if you have any good ideas to drive this toad away?"

The elders looked at each other; for a moment, no one spoke.

River Swallowing Toad was a Rank five Gu; it had an enormous might and could spit out a river. If this was not handled properly and it was provoked, over half of the Qing Mao mountain could be submerged with water and the whole village would be destroyed.

After a long silence, Gu Yue Chi Lian spoke, "The situation is grave, and we need to resolve this as quickly as possible. If this news gets leaked, we can’t say for sure if those with evil intentions might not secretly go and intentionally provoke this River Swallowing Toad to entrap our Gu Yue clan."

"Elder Chi Lian is right." Gu Yue Mo Chen nodded in agreement. Although he and Gu Yue Chi Lian were political enemies, but at such a critical time for the village, he let go of his past prejudices.

He continued speaking after a moment, "There is another more serious problem. If the River Swallowing Toad floods the Qing Mao mountain, the wolf lairs will be submerged and for their survival, the wolf hordes will move up the mountain. At that time, the wolf tide will break out before its time. And we will have to fight with countless wild beasts to fight for the space at the top."

The elders’ complexion turned pale when they heard this.

Gu Yue Bo spoke with heavy tone, "Everyone, don’t forget the foundation of our village. The first generation ancestor set up the village in this place because of the underground spirit spring. If Qing Mao mountain gets flooded, this spirit spring might also be destroyed."

"What should we do?"

"Sigh....even if we withstand the beast tides and survive at the mountaintop. After the flood subsides, the spirit spring will have disappeared, many beasts will have died, our surroundings will turn to a wasteland and we will be lacking cultivation resources."

"If we are to die, then why not ask help from Xiong and Bai villages? We are three boats tied with one rope, I don’t believe they won’t help!"

The elders whispered to one another with panic hidden inside. Some had already started thinking of asking for reinforcements.

"It is too premature to ask for help now," Gu Yue Bo shook his head and denied this idea immediately. "It is not the most challenging period now. When the first generation ancestor had just established the village, a Rank five Blood River Python attacked the village, but the first generation clan head killed it. Compared to the Blood River Python, the River Swallowing Toad is just so much more adorable."

"It has a warm temperament and is harmless to ordinary people. Only if it senses the aura of other Gu will it be alert. If it receives serious injuries, it will be angered and spit out a river. By chance, I heard the previous clan head talk of a rumor about the River Swallowing Toad...."

Gu Yue Bo’s composed and calm voice resounded within the conference hall.

The group of elders listened attentively; their nervous and panicked expressions eased up.

"He is really worthy of being the clan head. He calmed their hearts with just his words." Gu Yue Yao Ji sensed the change in the atmosphere. She gave a profound look at Gu Yue Bo and praised him inwardly.

"If we follow what clan head said just now, chasing away the River Swallowing Toad wouldn’t be a difficult thing," An elder spoke.

"We can’t say that." Gu Yue Bo shook his head, "These are only rumors, I haven’t personally seen it or even put it to use. The important thing is that we can’t be careless. I suggest we first send a group of Gu Masters to test it."

All the elders agreed.

Gu Yue Chi Lian spoke, "Then how about I send a member of my Chi family. If he can’t do it, then no one among our clan might be able to do it."

Everyone knew who Chi Lian was speaking of, and they approved of it one after another.

Clan head Gu Yue Bo smiled, "Since it is so, then we shall just assign it to the Chi Shan group."

It was early autumn, the weather was gradually turning cool.

On a table by the window of the tavern, Fang Yuan was sitting alone, calmly tasting some wine.

The tavern shopkeeper was standing beside him, bowing his head.

"Shopkeeper, is there progress on the matter regarding bitter shell wine that I asked you to look into a few days ago?" Fang Yuan asked.

Fang Yuan was lacking a bitter wine for the liquor worm fusion.

However, bitter wines were difficult to find and because of the matter regarding the red steel Relic Gu, people had been focusing on him. Wherever he went, people would point him out. Thus, it was not easy to make inquiries of bitter wines.

The disturbance had settled down only recently, and maybe because extreme sorrow turns into joy, Fang Yuan had accidentally found a clue regarding the bitter wine.

The old shopkeeper promptly replied, "Young master, the bitter shell wine you wanted me to look into, someone had drunk it in Bai village. The raw material of this wine is a type of conch found in deep ponds.This type of conch is completely black, with circles of white lines on its shell resembling a tree’s growth rings. We call it a bitter shell. Normal conches can form pearls. The bitter shell swallows the sands and stones in the water, dissolving them and forming bitter water instead. Someone pried open its shell and obtained this bitter water, using it to brew wine, making the bitter shell wine. Its taste is very unique; bitter and fragrant."

Fang Yuan slightly raised his brows upon hearing this, "Does that mean Bai village has this bitter shell wine?"

The shopkeeper hurriedly bent down, "I don’t dare to guarantee it, I have only heard people talking about it occasionally. However, the truth is Bai village is famous for its white grain liquid. This wine along with our clan’s green bamboo wine and Xiong village’s bear gall wine are called the three wines of Qing Mao. Bitter Shell wine.... I think even if the Bai village possesses it, there wouldn’t be much."

"Even if there is little, I have to find it," Fang Yuan said in his mind.

But this matter was troublesome; Bai village had been gradually showing signs of coming to emergence these years, starting to shake the Gu Yue village’s position as the overlord.

If Fang Yuan wanted to enter the Bai village without permission, the patrolling Bai village’s Gu Masters might kill him before he even sees the village gate.

Even if it was so, Fang Yuan still wanted to attempt it. After all, getting this bitter shell wine was more reasonable that the green Ai wine that was immeasurably far away.

As he broke away from his contemplations, Fang Yuan found that the old shopkeeper was still standing beside him. He waved his hand, "Alright, you can leave, there is nothing for you here."

The old man didn’t leave, his face revealed hesitation, not speaking out what he was about to say.

He finally summoned his courage, "Young master, could you please take back this tavern again? All the waiters and I want to work for you. You don’t know that when the old landlord came back, he deducted most of our wages. With such little primeval stones each month, it is really difficult for us to support our families."

Fang Yuan shook his head, his face without any expression, "I have already sold this tavern to him. I can’t take it back according to the contract. Moreover, I don’t want to engage in this tavern business. You can leave now."

"But, young landlord....." The old man still didn’t move.

Fang Yuan frowned in annoyance, "Remember, I am no longer your landlord!"

He had previously increased their salaries, only to arouse their passion for their work. It was all for himself. However, these people mistook it for his tolerance and wanted to push their luck.

Right now, by selling the vitality leaves, he could only fulfill his own needs. On top of that, he was feeling vexed due to the bitter wine. So why would he take back the tavern for these people?

"But young landlord, we really can’t keep on living like this! Please show mercy and have pity on us." The shopkeeper knelt on the ground and implored.

The sound immediately attracted the surrounding guests.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly. He picked up a wine jar from the table and smashed it on the shopkeeper’s head.

Kachak.

The jar shattered; the wine splashed all around and blood flowed from the old man’s head.

"Did you think I won’t dare to kill you? You tactless fool, get lost." Cold light flashed out from Fang Yuan’s eyes.

The old shopkeeper’s whole body trembled from this killing intent; he was startled and hurriedly left.

No matter which world, there will always be a group of weak people who will brazenly and indiscreetly ask charity from the strong. As if helping them was the manner of the strong and not helping them was wrong.

The weak should have the manners of the weak; they should either resign to their fate and act like slaves or try hard while keeping a low profile.

The strong helped the weak only as a charity when they were in a good mood.

The weak refuse to work hard, shamelessly begging from the strong, and even demanding definite results, acting like a leech; they deserve getting rejected.

People who were content with being weak, who don’t put their own effort and only think of begging from the strong, simply aren’t deserving of sympathy.

"Shopkeeper..."

"Quick, bandage the wounds."

The waiters hurriedly surrounded the old man whose face was covered with blood.

The old shopkeeper was only a mortal, it wouldn’t be a problem even if he was killed on the spot.

Such an ending took away the interest of the surrounding guests; they turned back and continued with their discussions.

"Do you know? Something big happened recently!"

"Are you talking about that River Swallowing Toad? Right now, who wouldn’t know of this?"

"This is a Rank five Gu, if it isn’t dealt properly, the village might fall into crisis!"

"It is said that this River Swallowing Toad’s food is water. When it is hungry, it opens up its large mouth and directly sucks a river in!"

"If it is angered, it can release the water into the Qing Mao mountain, its power is extremely horrifying. We might die!"

"Then what should we do?"

"Sigh, we just have to see how the clan’s higher-ups will deal with it. After all, we can’t escape, where can we escape to?"

Bewilderment and confusion pervaded the air in the tavern.

"River Swallowing Toad...." Fang Yuan inwardly smiled when he heard this.

Fear was infectious, it increased the more it is spread.

Actually, the River Swallowing Toad was very gentle and was not dreadful. Its natural disposition was to sleep and people would often see it flowing with the river. The toad would lie down on the water surface with their white bellies facing up, and sleep soundly.

When it wakes up, it would swallow the river water up to its fill and return back to sleep. They had no interest towards fighting and killing; if they meet an enemy, their first reaction would be to flee. Only if they fall into an impasse and couldn’t escape will they make fierce counterattacks.

They were very powerful and could release torrential river from their mouths, engulfing the lands instantly and turning them to marsh.

"This River Swallowing Toad probably fell asleep, then drifted along the Huang Long river and accidentally entered a tributary, reaching the foot of the Qing Mao mountain." Fang Yuan guessed the truth.

(1) Huang Long River - The name means Yellow Dragon River.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

...And with this chapter goes the last four chapters of the week’s batch! Onward to more in the new week, with more Fang Yuan adventures! ٩(•̀□ · ́๑)و✧

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

It is said that every single River Swallowing Toad’s stomach carries a river.

Fang Yuan did not use the River Swallowing Toad in his previous life, but he has a strong impression of this Gu, because of one person.

A normal person, a family servant.

Around two hundred years later in his previous life, a very special Gu Master will appear— Jiang Fan.

His existence shocked numerous Gu Masters, and his story would be spread around by the mortals.

Once he appeared, he became a legend.

His entire success was attributed to a River Swallowing Toad.

Jiang Fan was a mere family servant, single-handedly taking care of a fishery for his master. One day, a River Swallowing Toad arrived at the coast with its belly side up, lying in the water, asleep the entire time.

Jiang Fan was initially scared and shocked, but slowly, he felt that this toad was dead, why was it not moving at all?

The "toad corpse" blocked the upflow of the river water, and this caused many problems for Jiang Fan who was taking care of the fishery.

Jiang Fan tried many different methods and ways to move this "toad corpse" away. But he was just a mere mortal, how could he move something as heavy as the River Swallowing Toad?

His master was stingy and cruel, and if he could not meet the monthly quota, his head will be decapitated. Jiang Fan did not dare to report it, as someone not too long ago did not manage to fulfill his quota and reported it with a proper reason, but ended up getting killed on the spot.

Seeing that the due date was getting closer, and the corpse still remained there blocking the water, it greatly affected his revenue. Gradually, Jiang Fan became more frightened, and his temper became more abusive and frustrated.

Although he knew that he could not move this corpse away, he would still go to it everyday, to punch and kick the "toad corpse", crying and making a din. Letting go of all the fear and anger he had in the face of death.

But one day, the River Swallowing Toad woke up, and with its half-opened eyes, stared at Jiang Fan.

Jiang Fan’s legs went soft from the shock.

The River Swallowing Toad was half asleep and half awake, but it still laid there like it was a "corpse". After some time, Jiang Fan regained his composure.

He was not afraid, he was going to die anyway, what is there to be afraid of?

He climbed to the top of the River Swallowing Toad’s belly, and lied down face up. Staring at the sky, "Toad, oh toad. You are the same as me, with only one last breath left in you, you’re about to die too huh?"

He did not know about the characteristics of the River Swallowing Toad. Looking at its half dead state, he thought that it was going to die. After saying so, Jiang Fan’s face flooded with tears.

The River Swallowing Toad squinted its eyes, listening to Jiang Fan’s words while staring at the sky.

For the next few days, he continued to lie on the River Swallowing Toad’s white and soft belly, crying while talking, complaining about the pain and the repressed feelings of a mortal.

Finally, the deadline was here. The person-in-charge came down from the village to the fishery to collect the fish.

Where could Jiang Fan find fish to meet the quota? Left with no choice, he could only give an excuse that he needed to do some packing, and ran to the River Swallowing Toad to bid farewell.

He patted the River Swallowing Toad’s belly, "Old toad, to think that I’m going to die first. It must be affinity that led to me knowing you. I hope that in your remaining days, you will have a better life."

At this moment, the River Swallowing Toad started move.

Jiang Fan was taken aback. Seeing that the River Swallowing Toad’s actions were becoming larger, he quickly jumped off.

Plop!

The River Swallowing Toad turned around, with its belly side down and back facing upwards. It had fully woken up.

Jiang Fan’s body was drenched, and on having seen this scene he became angry and stomped his foot, "Old toad, oh old toad, so you can still move? Ahhhh, you have caused my death, if you had moved a few days ago, I would not have to die!"

The River Swallowing Toad ignored his words, it had just woken up and felt hungry.

Half of its body was submerged into the water as it opened its mouth, starting to suck in the river water in order to sate its hunger.

Seeing this, Jiang Fan was dumbfounded. He shockingly saw that the water level was receding, dropping at an observable pace, rapidly falling.

Large amounts of river water were swallowed into the toad’s belly, but its belly did not even expand a bit, it was almost like a bottomless hole.

A moment later, the River Swallowing Toad stopped its meal. The river water had already dropped to an extreme level, and the bedrock was exposed. If a person stood in the river, the water would only reach their knees.

Jiang Fan stood at the coast, at a lost for words.

The River Swallowing Toad glanced at him and suddenly burped. Its stomach expanded and contracted, its mouth opening wide as it and it vomited out a large amount of seafood.

Fish, prawn, turtle, crab, snails, eels, everything!

The River Swallowing Toad only ate water as its food, but did not consume these seafood, hence it vomited all of them out.

At this point, it seems like it was raining seafood.

In the blink of an eye, the seafood gathered into a mountain, and Jiang Fan upon seeing this, was overwhelming exhilarated. He screamed loudly, "I’m saved, I’m saved! These seafood is enough for me to hand up for three months. Old toad, oh old toad, it is all thanks to you!"

He packaged those seafood, and quickly handed them to the person-in-charge.

The person-in-charge was both shocked and suspicious, how could there be so much? He quickly reported it, and the Gu Masters in the village also found out that the water level had changed drastically.

After investigating, they found out about the River Swallowing Toad’s existence.

It was a Rank five Gu!

The village fell into a panic and they formed into large groups, trying to expel the River Swallowing Toad.

Jiang Fan did not want the River Swallowing Toad to be harmed; these days he had treated the River Swallowing Toad as his only friend.

He kneeled in front of the Gu Masters and pleaded hysterically. But why would Gu Masters care about a mere mortal? They kicked him aside and were about to murder him.

But at this moment, the River Swallowing Toad arrived.

Nobody knew if it had treated Jiang Fan as its friend, or felt that being with Jiang Fan was interesting and could cure boredom.

The point is, it struck.

It carried Jiang Fan and vomited out a stream of river water that engulfed the whole village and drowned half the hill.

This battle startled the entire southern continent!

Thereafter, Jiang Fan’s name spread throughout the one hundred thousand mountains. With the River Swallowing Toad staying by his side, it meant that he owned a Rank five Gu worm!

After all, even a Rank five Gu Master, might not have a Rank five Gu worm.

Rank five Gu Masters were rare, even in the Gu Yue clan’s history, there were only two people — the first generation clan leader and the fourth generation clan leader.

But he Jiang Fan did not have an awakened aperture, yet as a mere mortal he had a River Swallowing Toad.

His existence stunned the entire Gu Master world.

After that, Jiang Fan built a hamlet at the village’s location. He was endearing to people and sympathized with mortals, aspiring to reach equality among all people. It was a village without oppression.

He became a flag, and the mortals in the surrounding villages came to him and wanted to depend on him.

But eventually, he was still assassinated.

With just a River Swallowing Toad, it could not make him truly powerful. He was not a Gu Master after all, and after his death, the River Swallowing Toad left.

Gu Masters razed his hamlet to the grounds, and slaughtered the mortals who dared to oppose them.

With his mortal self, Jiang Fan challenged the entire system of society, and that brought forth the rage of the Gu Masters.

"I wonder if Jiang Fan will still appear this time after my influence." After his recollection, Fang Yuan laughed.

But Chi Shan could not laugh.

His face was grim as he returned.

The villagers at the mountain foot were waiting for the Gu Masters to deal with this problem.

But the great Gu Yue Chi Shan arrived and still could not solve the issue. This caused the villagers to panic, and the panic spread and reached a high point.

They dragged their families, brought big and small bags, and rushed up to the village. They naturally did not dare to step inside, thus more and more villagers kneeled outside the village’s doors, begging the Gu Masters to have mercy and let them in.

In the hall.

"What? These lowly commoners dare to surround the main gate. Atrocious, they are getting more and more daring, kill, kill them all!" The punishment hall clan elder screamed.

Medicine hall’s Gu Yue Yao Ji’s face was also grim, "Although these lowly commoners deserve death, killing a few is enough to threaten the rest and chase the group away, but it would be like a joke for the other villages to observe."

Gu Yue Chi Lian said, "The important thing now is not this. If even Chi Shan cannot wake this River Swallowing Toad, who else in our clan can? It seems we have to get reinforcements, the Xiong clan specializes in strength." He sighed and continued, "for the safety of the clan, we should get them to do it. Even if we have to pay a price, it is worth it."

These words got the consent of the other clan elders, and even clan leader Gu Yue Bo was moved.

"Clan leader and the other clan elders, this junior has something to report." Gu Yue Chi Shan had been standing in the hall, listening to the clan elders, but suddenly he bowed and said spoke.

Gu Yue Bo nodded, he had an appreciative attitude towards Gu Yue Chi Shan, "Chi Shan, if you have any ideas, you might as well say it."

Chi Shan asked instead, "Elders, to push this River Swallowing Toad awake, does it really need one person’s strength?"

Gu Yue Bo said, "According to the previous clan leader’s words, the River Swallowing Toad has a mild temper and loves to sleep. Even if it is awakened by someone pushing it, it would not rage. Thus, we asked you who has the greatest strength in the village to wake it. But it ended in failure."

Chi Shan said, "Then can clan leader grant me a Brute Force Longhorn Beetle Gu? With one bull’s strength and my inborn strength, I would be able to push this River Swallowing Toad awake."

"You definitely cannot use a Gu worm’s strength." Just as Chi Shan finished speaking, a clan elder denied his request, "A Gu worm’s aura will invite the vigilance of the River Swallowing Toad. If this causes it to feel threatened and rampage about, who would face the consequences?"

"That’s right." Gu Yue Bo nodded, "By using a Gu worm, even if we wake up the toad, we cannot get its approval. It has to be a single person, using his own strength to wake it and get its approval."

Gu is the spirit of heaven and earth, but it behaved more like wild beasts. Wild beasts have their territories, and roaming wild beasts when encountering the king of a territory, would have a battle. The victorious takes the territory and the loser roams.

The formation of a beast tide is also based on this wild beast instinct. Strong beast groups will invade and conquer neighbouring land. Weaker groups would be exiled and this forms the beast tide.

To chase the River Swallowing Toad away, they have to abide to its habits.

River Swallowing Toad has a mild temperament, not enjoying conflict, and as long as the territory’s "beast king" can be recognised, it would leave.

Thus, using Gu worms is a no-no, the Gu worm’s aura will be sensed and cause the River Swallowing Toad to take unpredictable actions. Using everyone’s strength was not possible too. Once there are many people, even if it is moved, the toad would not leave.

That is because everyone acting together was not fair, and would not be recognised by it.

Thus, the clan leader got Chi Shan to go ahead, as he had the greatest strength in the village.

"So that’s it, I understand." Chi Shan finally understood the situation, he cupped his fists, "In that case, I will recommend someone to the clan elders, he has greater strength than me."

"Oh, who?"

"There’s such a person, why did we not know?"

"Chi Shan, don’t keep us waiting, quickly say it!"

"This person, is Gu Yue Fang Yuan." Chi Shan said a name.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Hello guys, the weekly batch is a bit late this time. I got swamped with work because I am flying back to my hometown on Wednesday for a cousin’s wedding and I would be gone for ten days, so I had to rush everything to be done and even worked on both Saturday and Sunday :c

Also my night got booked by my birthday party today, but I managed to complete four chapters so far.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Gu Yue Fang Yuan?" The elders couldn’t help but look at each other upon hearing this name.

They clearly recognized this name. In fact, from the beginning, Gu Yue Fang Yuan’s name would occasionally reach their ears.

Especially after the Awakening Ceremony, when his Gu Master cultivation started, this lad had been getting restless; he frequently caused some disturbances that attracted attention.

"Ah, I remember him. Isn’t this kid the one who sold his family assets and bought a red steel Relic Gu?" An elder came to realization.

Gu Yue Chi Lian and Gu Yue Mo Chen’s faces turned ugly.

If Chi Shan or Mo Yan had used the red steel Relic Gu, they could ascend to rank two peak stage and be equal to Gu Yue Qing Shu.

This would reflect towards the higher-ups — whether it was the Mo faction or Chi faction who got the relic gu, it would be a political victory. But to think that this prodigal kid had ruined it all!

"Returning to the main topic, this kid is truly strong. At the arena previously, he used his bare fists to shatter Jade Skin Gu’s defence and pummeled Fang Zheng down, achieving the championship," an elder recalled.

This time, it was the clan head Gu Yue Bo’s turn to be embarrassed.

He had especially nurtured Gu Yue Fang Zheng, thus Fang Zheng’s defeat - in some sense - was his, the clan head faction’s, defeat.

As long as one entered the system, anyone would be labelled with factions. There were neutral political factions, but absolutely not a person without any faction.

"But in terms of power, his strength shouldn’t be comparable to yours, right?" Chi Lian doubtfully asked Chi Shan.

Chi San respectfully answered, "Elders, perhaps you might not know, Fang Yuan not only bought red steel Relic Gu, he also purchased a Black Boar Gu. These few months, he has been buying pork to nurture the Black Boar Gu and increase his strength. Once, I even saw him moving a huge rock in the mountain to measure his strength. I am not sure how much strength he has, but from what I have seen, his strength absolutely doesn’t lose to mine."

"So it was like that. To think this kid, Fang Yuan has grown to this stage." Gu Yue Bo nodded his head. "Then let’s assign Fang Yuan’s group to give it a try."

Hearing this, the internal affairs hall elder awkwardly stood up from his seat, "Lord clan head, this Fang Yuan is a loner and hasn’t joined a group."

"What is that supposed to mean?" Gu Yue Bo frowned.

"The thing is - after the first beast tide, his group was completely annihilated and the only survivor was him, alone," the internal affairs hall elder replied.

"Even if it is so, why was he not considered during the group reorganizing?" An elder curiously asked.

"Sigh!" The internal affairs hall elder gave a heavy sigh, "I also urged him about this, but he didn’t have any intention to join any groups. Honestly speaking, I don’t approve of this kid. He is very good at goofing around, it might be that he has lost the will to fight after inheriting that inheritance."

"Goofing around? How can that be, he hasn’t joined any groups so how could he complete the monthly clan missions?" An elder doubted.

The internal affairs hall elder’s face sank, "Every month, he receives the compulsory mission but the results are all failure. I haven’t seen records worse than his; almost all the missions are recorded as failures. I have already tried talking with him several times, but he still wants to continue in his way, without any repenting. However, he hasn’t violated the clan rules, so I can only give light punishments to this unruly and crafty kid!"

The elders looked at each other; they had never seen such a younger generation who didn’t want to advance forward.

Mission failures represented a narrower career progression within the clan.

"This kid has become muddled....."

"Hmph, he is too unruly!"

"He is destroying his own future!"

"If I had such an indolent child, I would directly slap him to death!"

"Enough." Gu Yue Bo raised his hand, putting a stop to the elders’ private chats; one couldn’t tell if he was happy or angry.

Gu Yue Bo’s gaze moved around and finally stopped on the internal affairs hall elder, "Send a compulsory command, let Gu Yue Fang Yuan try his strength on River Swallowing Toad. This kid is stubborn, rebellious and unruly, he needs to be polished. If he fails, we can use this pretext to give some punishments."

"It will be as lord clan head says." The internal affairs hall elder promptly agreed.

There was a racket in the tavern.

"Do you guys know, the clan sent the Chi Shan group to the foot of the mountain but they ended up returning in defeat."

"The villagers living at the foot of the mountain are all kneeling in front of the clan’s entrance, blocking the gate."

"Hmph, these lowly commoners don’t even have a bit of knowledge. River Swallowing Toad is a Rank five Gu, do they really think they will be safe in the village?"

Although this was said, the air was dense with panic. These Gu Masters were all forcefully calming themselves.

Fang Yuan listened for a short moment before no longer paying attention; this was no longer fresh news. He stood up and was about to leave when a person entered the tavern.

This person was tall with a thickly built body. The upper half of his body was naked and his muscles were the color of bright red, seemingly wanting to erupt.

It was Gu Yue Chi Shan.

The chatters within the tavern immediately stopped. Countless gazes landed on Chi Shan.

Chi Shan ignored these gazes; he glanced around and found Fang Yuan.

"You were here." Under the numerous gazes, he walked in front of Fang Yuan, "Let’s go, the clan has already given a compulsory order. Let’s head to the foot of the mountain, I will tell you the details on the way."

Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed, he couldn’t refuse a compulsory order. Moreover, there was not much danger when facing the River Swallowing Toad, thus he agreed.

Only after Fang Yuan and Chi Shan left the tavern did the racket start again in the tavern.

"Shopkeeper, the heavens have eyes. Look at this, such a quick karmic retribution! That is a Rank five Gu, even other lord Gu Masters are helpless facing it, whereas he is so young, isn’t this just losing his life in vain?!"

"We thought young master Fang Yuan was different from other Gu Masters and would empathize with us mortals’ pain and sufferings. Hmph, to think he would also be of the same mould. Screw him, we wouldn’t have any regrets even if he dies."

"Shopkeeper, you didn’t suffer this wound in vain, getting a Gu Master’s life for it is absolutely a profit."

The old shopkeeper’s head was bound with circles of white bandages. Right now, he continued to groan, leaning weakly against the corner.

Several waiters were by his side, consoling him.

The old man’s eyes flashed with resentment, but his mood slightly eased up upon hearing these words.

However, after a while of listening, he hypocritically berated them in a low voice, "Shut your mouths, is this something we can talk of? Aren’t you afraid of losing your lives if the other Gu Masters hear it?!"

The waiters giggled, "Shopkeeper, you are too worried. It is so noisy in the tavern, who could have heard our whisperings?"

They had just said this, when a Gu Master sitting nearest to them spoke, "I heard it."

The shopkeeper and the waiters’ complexion changed greatly; they were extremely terrified.

"Lord..." The old shopkeeper ignored the dizzy feeling in his head and hurriedly walked towards the Gu Master to ask for forgiveness.

This Gu Master raised his hand and stopped him.

"You all spoke very well, I liked what you said. Fang Yuan, this bastard, even if he dies, it shouldn’t be regretted! Speak more, I will give you great rewards if I like what you say!" The Gu Master took out a primeval stone and slammed it on the table with a bang.

If Fang Yuan was here, he would recognize this person. This person was that healing Gu Master of the previous small beast tide. Fang Yuan had used the girl this Gu Master sought after as a shield to cover his body. Thus, this Gu Master had a deep hatred towards Fang Yuan and it was irreconcilable.

The waiters looked at each other. One of them with more guts started staring at the primeval stone on the table with wide-eyes.

The Gu Master’s three companions frowned, but didn’t stop him. They could only listen to the waiters scolding Fang Yuan as if they were in a competition.

It was early autumn and the scenery was good.

In the forests, some leaves were of dark shade and some were of light. Green leaves had started changing to yellow and yellow leaves faintly showed red.

In the paddy field, fields of yellow-orange rice crops waved along with the autumn wind.

In some lush vegetable fields, the vegetable leaves were fat, tender and pleasing.

Fang Yuan sped all the way from the middle of the mountain, following the Chi Shan group down to the foot of the mountain where he saw the Rank five River Swallowing Toad.

It was huge and resembled a small hill. It lay belly side up in the riverbed and blocked the river channel. The upstream of the river was already filled with so much water that it was almost spilling to the riverside. And there was almost no flow of the river downstream; only a shallow moist riverbed could be seen.

The River Swallowing Toad’s belly was exquisite snow-white and was covered with a layer of luster. Its back was clear sky blue color and also had a glossy shine to it, with no warts like the ones found in common frogs and toads.

It was sound asleep at this moment. But there were no sounds of snoring; it was sleeping very quietly.

Sensing its aura, the two Liquor worms in Fang Yuan’s aperture curled up into a ball. The Black Boar Gu’s lively appearance seemed to have been wiped out as it flew down. The Moonglow Gu that resided in his right palm hid its glow.

Only the Spring Autumn Cicada was still sleeping peacefully.

Fang Yuan withdrew the Moonglow Gu into his aperture. As long as he didn’t take the initiative to use these Gu, their aura wouldn’t leak out. Putting them in the aperture was very safe and reliable.

"Fang Yuan, it’s your turn next," Chi Shan spoke from the side.

He had already explained most of the details on the way.

Fang Yuan also approved of this method. Of course, the simplest way was to use Spring Autumn Cicada; once a Rank six Gu worm’s aura leaked out, this River Swallowing Toad would be frightened and immediately flee.

This was also because the River Swallowing Toad didn’t like fighting. If it was a vicious Gu like the Blood River Python, Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura would instead cause it to go berserk and retaliate madly.

Fang Yuan stood at the riverside, trying out to push at first. The River Swallowing Toad’s skin was slippery, making one feel that his strength has been nullified.

In addition, it was extremely heavy, one simply couldn’t even budge it.

"Can you do it?" Chi Cheng sneered from the side.

Fang Yuan ignored him and said to Chi Shan, "Although I have the increased strength from Black Boar Gu, my strength is probably only a little more than yours. As for pushing this River Swallowing Toad, it is not hopeless, but I need your help."

"What help?" Chi Shan immediately asked.

Fang Yuan slowly explained it. Chi Shan was doubtful, "If we do this, wouldn’t it be teaming up? Even if the River Swallowing Toad wakes up, will it still acknowledge you and then willingly leave?"

Fang Yuan smiled, "You don’t have to worry about it. As long as you guys keep a distance and not let it detect you, it will be possible. After all, it is a Gu, don’t think it as too intelligent."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

At the height of autumn, the air was refreshing, and the breeze moderately flowed under the beautiful sun.

The blue dome of heaven was clean and clear like a crystal.

The wind blew gently, brushing Fang Yuan’s appearance into motion.

Looking from afar, the nearby villages had little people. Nearby, the hill-like River Swallowing Toad was slumbering, blocking the river bed. Fang Yuan who was standing at the river edge looked like a tiny monkey beside a large elephant in comparison to this Rank five Gu.

Fang Yuan’s heart was calm as water, without a trace of nervousness, thinking internally, "I used the White Boar Gu and the Black Boar Gu to enhance my body and raise my strength, having the strength of two boars. Together with my own strength, I have around the strength of five or six adults. But to push this River Swallowing Toad, I need to have around two bull’s strength. With just my current strength, it will not do. But, if I borrow the power of the tides...

it’s here."

Swish swish swish......

Fang Yuan turned his body around and saw that waves were crashing and approaching, causing a huge movement in the peaceful river water.

The tides got bigger and continually crashed against the River Swallowing Toad, causing the waves to fly high into the sky.

Fang Yuan only stood for a while before he got drenched.

He did not mind it, and began to push the River Swallowing Toad with vigor.

The River Swallowing Toad was still dead asleep. It was originally a Gu worm that lived in the rivers and sea, and to it, the force of the waves was normal and could not awaken it.

With the force of endless waves, Fang Yuan tried for some time and finally managed to push the River Swallowing Toad away from its original location.

The riverbed was wider as the river got downstream. Along with the flow of water, it made Fang Yuan’s pushing easier.

After about three hundred meters, the River Swallowing Toad opened its sleepy eyes.

A pair of deep green eyes, in its sleepy state, gradually contracted and stared at Fang Yuan who was beside it.

Fang Yuan was fearless as he matched its gaze.

From its dark eerie eyes, Fang Yuan could see his own reflection.

"Jiangaaaang!" River Swallowing Toad raised its head, suddenly opening its mouth and emitting a strange croak.

The cry spread out and reverbed throughout Qing Mao mountain.

At once, Fang Yuan could feel his ears going deaf from the ringing noise.

River Swallowing Toad lowered its head, its mouth sucking at the river water that was approaching.

Swish swish swish!

The river water flowed at ten times the original speed as it was all sucked into its stomach, and the water level could be seen decreasing at an observable pace.

Fang Yuan stood beside the River Swallowing Toad, clearly seeing a large amount of seafood also being sent into the River Swallowing Toad’s stomach along with the river water.

Sensing the river water’s change, the Chi Shan group also hurried over, and as the three observed the River Swallowing Toad who was ingesting water, they were stunned.

"What a spectacular sight!" Chi Cheng observed, unable to hide his shock.

"You succeeded?" Chi Shan looked at Fang Yuan.

"Seems so," Fang Yuan nodded lightly.

The water level decreased until the water stopped flowing, and the River Swallowing Toad raised its head once again, its stomach expanding and contracting, vomiting out numerous fish, prawns, turtles etc.

At once, a large amount of seafood fell onto the ground, emitting a crisp sound.

A fish splashed on the ground, a turtle fell on its back confused, the crabs walked away horizontally, and then they were smashed by the falling seafood.

Fang Yuan did not mind it and only looked casually, but suddenly he smelt some wine fragrance.

"Strange, why is there a wine smell?" Chi Cheng sniffed, a face of surprise.

"It should be the Hundred year bitter shell," the female Gu Master in the group said and pointed at a disc-sized broken black shell.

This shell was black as ink with white round markings on it, like the rings in a tree trunk.

"That’s right, bitter shell can turn the sand and rocks into bitter water juice. Hundred year bitter shell’s bitter water, after the accumulation through time, can turn into wine. Bai clan’s current clan leader loves to drink this bitter shell wine," Chi Shan added on.

He needn’t go into detail; Fang Yuan had already long taken up this seashell, starting to collect his bitter shell wine.

Not too long ago, he was still worried about how to get this bitter shell wine, but to think it appeared in front of him like this.

Truly the phrase ‘spending lots of effort looking for something fruitlessly, but it appears in front of you when least expected’!

The River Swallowing Toad had pretty much swallowed all the water in this river. Deep in the river bed, there had been some Hundred year bitter shells buried in the soil, and because of the River Swallowing Toad, the shells were exposed.

Fang Yuan quickly collected six little Hundred year bitter shells. Two of the shells were broken, but the other four were intact.

"I’ve finally collected the bitter wine, this way, I can start refining the Four Flavor Liquor worm!" This moment, Fang Yuan was overjoyed, but had no one to share the joy with.

"Jiangang!"

After the River Swallowing Toad vomited the seafood, it croaked again, and then looked at Fang Yuan once before moving its large body to swim downstream along the river.

"He really succeeded!" Chi Shan muttered, his heart feeling relief. He observed the River Swallowing Toad leaving until its shadow was completely gone, away from his vision.

"What, he scared it away so easily. If I knew this earlier on, we could’ve done it ourselves, but now we let Fang Yuan become a hero so easily!" Chi Cheng pouted, his tone full of jealousy and indignance.

"Fang Yuan, no matter what, this time you have done a good deed, you are the Gu Yue Clan’s hero!" Chi Shan stared at Fang Yuan with a complicated expression.

"Oh," Fang Yuan replied absent-mindedly, giving a half-hearted feeling. At the same time, his gaze shone as he continued to rummage and search for Hundred year bitter shells among the seafood.

What hero, it was merely a title.

Between praise and slander, they were all views and expressions of others onto oneself.

What opinions others had of him, Fang Yuan did not give a damn.

You can think all you want, I live my own life.

Hero? Zero? Hehe, I rather have a bitter shell.

News of chasing away the River Swallowing Toad reached the village at once.

Gu Yue Bo said "Good" three times continuously, and the solemnness in the hall was swept away at once.

Only the internal affairs elder’s face was complicated, he did not think well of Fang Yuan. Not too long ago, he even criticized Fang Yuan, but now that the village was in danger, Fang Yuan was the one who resolved the issue. With these two issues coming together, wasn’t it a slap in his face?

"Gu Yue Fang Yuan has the credit of chasing away the River Swallowing Toad, we’ll make an exception to promote him to team leader and reward him five hundred primeval stones."Gu Yue Bo thought, before giving the order filled with a special meaning.

In the wine tavern.

"What, Fang Yuan actually succeeded?!"

"Strange, he’s just a newbie, how can he chase away a Rank five Gu worm?"

"Even Chi Shan failed miserably, but he did it..."

The news spread, and everyone was filled with shock.

"Fang Yuan became the savior of our clan? This..." The male Gu Master who had animosity with Fang Yuan was lost for action after hearing this news.

His group leader suddenly shouted, pointing at the clerks in the tavern, "You mere mortals, you dare to slander our clan’s hero, you deserve execution!"

Even before finishing his words, he shot a moonblade.

The elderly shopkeeper did not expect that such a life-threatening situation would occur, and after being hit by this moonblade on his neck, he was beheaded.

"Lord, spare us!" The clerks upon seeing this were first stunned but quickly kneeled on the ground, begging for mercy loudly.

"Group leader, what are you doing?" The Male Gu Master stood up.

"What am I doing huh?" His group leader moved his brows, sighing solemnly, "Times have changed, Ah Hai. Fang Yuan has turned into a hero suddenly, the higher-ups will pay attention to him. If words of our slander towards him spread, what do you think will happen? There are lots of detection-type Gu Masters around, and if someone wants to harm us and said several bad things to the clan elders, our future would be ruined!"

The male Gu Master broke out in cold sweat from fear.

It was indeed like this, clan relationships ruled above all. Fang Yuan had gone and dealt with a Rank five Gu worm, risking his life to defend his clan. At the same time he was slandered and insulted by them. What mindset was this? This was ungratefulness, coldness, emotionless and utter disregard for relationships!

Like history on Earth, Yue Fei fought in the battlefields, defending his country, but Qin Hui framed him as a spy in court.

Although these Gu Masters did not go as severe as framing, but if this matter was spread out, would the higher-ups feel safe with these people around?

If it was Mo Yan or Chi Cheng, people with tough backgrounds, that would still be alright. But these few were people without backing.

Trying to climb up the system’s ladder, it was push and shove, stepping on each other. If others used this incident and attacked them, to their future, it had a destructive influence!

"It is still not too late to salvage the situation, we just have to express our attitudes, and outsiders won’t say much. These mortals have cheap lives, so be it if they die. But they can be sacrifices for us, and this is their honor. You guys should immediately strike, each one of you must kill one each. After killing you should praise Fang Yuan and express our stand!" the group leader shouted.

"Dammit!" The male Gu Master cursed; between hatred and his future, he unhesitantly chose the latter.

With a moonblade, a clerk died on the spot.

"Lord, please spare us." At once, all the other clerks were paralyzed on the ground, scared until they peed their pants.

The male Gu Master did not care about them, and under everyone’s watchful gaze, he pointed at these pitiful clerks righteously, shouting, "You lot deserve death. Gu Yue Fang Yuan is a hero, and with his own strength, he defended the clan, what gave you the courage to slander him!"

The male Gu Master said this while frowning.

This was his true emotion. Fang Yuan was someone he deeply hated, but he had to praise him in public; he felt a strong sense of disgust and irk for himself.

"Lord, didn’t you ask us.... Urgh!" A clerk felt feelings of injustice deeply, shouting out loudly.

But he could not finish his sentence before he stopped.

A moonblade went flying, splitting him in half.

"A bunch of lowly slaves, not only slandering Fang Yuan, but also wanting to implicate us!" A female Gu Master struck, her expression cold as she shouted fiercely.

Other Gu Masters seeing this, felt like they were watching a soap opera.

Some smirked, some were indifferent and some continued chatting, but nobody stopped them.

So what if a few mortals died?

Just compensating a few family servants would do.

Everyone was part of the clan, they were family. No one would interfere or pursue the matter for these outsiders, causing conflict for themselves.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Gu Yue Clan...." Xiong Li stood at the mountainside and gazed at the distant Gu Yue village; a complicated expression on his face.

Cool autumn wind was breezing gently.

The color of autumn dyed the mountain.

Tree leaves were a mix of yellow and red, with wild fruits growing all over the place. Only the Qing Mao bamboo remained green and erect.

"Not long ago, Gu Yue Clan was like these Qing Mao bamboo, evergreen all the year, the overlord of Qing Mao mountain. Now, they are actually falling behind," Xiong Li’s lips curved with a cold mocking smile.

But quickly, he thought of the Bai village and the curve of his lips smoothed out; his mood turned serious.

Bai village’s uprising had already broken the old balance of Qing Mao mountain. The traditional hedgemon, the Gu Yue clan had weakened; Xiong village’s operations were not running properly; all these were pushing the situation in the Qing Mao mountain towards an upheaval.

Xiong Li knew this upheaval hadn’t erupted yet because of the pressure from the wolf tide. The three villages needed to collaborate if they wanted to overcome this wolf tide, thus they tacitly maintained peace and threw away grievances for the time being.

"Once the wolf tide is gone, Qing Mao mountain’s old structure will be shattered. Bai Ning Bing has already reached Rank three in only a couple of years. It’s really terrifying....." Xiong Li recalled the figure of a white-clothed youth, and he felt stifled as if he was pressed down by a huge rock.

He, Xiong Li, was the top amongst the Xiong village’s Rank two Gu Masters. He had fought all sorts of battles and won most of them, establishing his name. He held the Grand Bear Gu and could erupt with a bear’s strength. He was also known as the strongest person in Qing Mao mountain.

He had already made his debut and had personally seen the rocket-like emergence of Bai Ning Bing, so he was clearer than others regarding the terror of this youth.

"Group leader, that is Gu Yue village! It’s still far away, why are we stopping here?" From the side, Xiong Lin raised his two hands and clasped them behind his head as he curiously asked.

In this five-person group, Xiong Lin was the youngest and was a newbie who just made his debut. He was the same age as Fang Yuan and was this year’s top genius of Xiong village.

His stature was short and he had shaved his head which seemed to shine under the sunlight.

Xiong Li looked at this new talent of the clan, his heavy mood eased up a little. He answered in a deep voice, "We are here on a diplomatic mission and not on a scouting mission. This area is already the warning area of the Gu Yue clan, and we will probably be treated as enemies if we boldly enter."

"Oh, so it was like that." Xiong Lin realized.

"We have two objectives this time. One is to hand the clan head’s personal letter to Gu Yue’s clan head. Another is to investigate the matter regarding the River Swallowing Toad. Gu Yue village is not our area, so make sure to keep your temper in check when we get there. However, you absolutely can’t degrade the prestige of our Xiong village, understood?" Xiong Li’s gaze swept all around and shouted.

The rest of the Gu Master’s expressions all turned serious and silently nodded.

"Group leader, someone’s here," the scouting Gu Master in the group suddenly spoke.

"We have revealed our movements for so long, they should be here by now. But who would it be......hmm? So it was Chi Shan." Soon after, Xiong Li also discovered Chi Shan group; his eyes flashed.

"Wow! That person is so tall, is he Chi Shan? He is even taller than the group leader. Such muscles, piece by piece...group leader, isn’t he the guy born with super strength who has been trying to seize the title of the strongest person of the Qing Mao mountain?" Xiong Lin immediately looked straight at Chi Shan.

"Hmph, it had to be him....." Xiong Jiang spoke gloomily and twisted her lips in disdain.

"Xiong Li!"

"Chi Shan."

The two groups were fifty steps apart from each other. The two group leaders came face to face, their gazes clashed in the air and seemed to form sparks.

"Looks like you are Xiong village’s special envoy this time," Chi Shan snorted coldly; he had fought many times with Xiong Li.

"That’s right. Has the special envoy from the Bai village arrived?" Xiong Li’s expression steeled up.

"Why ask so much? Follow me," Chi Shan cautiously turned and invited.

Meanwhile.

In the second secret room, four wine jars were in front of Fang Yuan.

Sour, sweet, bitter and spicy, four flavors of wine. Sweet belonged to golden honey wine; spicy was white grains liquid; sour came from redberry wine; bitter was from bitter shell wine.

Fang Yuan sat cross-legged on the ground. He then willed the two Liquor worms to fly out of his aperture.

The fusion process of Four Flavours Liquor worm was slightly different from normal fusion.

The two Liquor worms followed Fang Yuan’s will and entered the redberry wine jar.

They started the fusion within the redberry wine. A white ball of light formed in the wine jar, its majestic light pierced out of the wine jar and shone on the wall.

Fang Yuan threw primeval stones in the wine jar; one piece, ten pieces, fifty pieces.....

When it reached the hundredth piece, the light ball shrunk to a fist’s size and floated in the wine jar.

The redberry wine was completely used up. Fang Yuan picked the second wine jar - golden honey wine - and poured it into the jar.

The white ball of light was immersed in the honey wine, suddenly swelling up to its original size.

Fang Yuan’s head was soaked with sweat; he was constantly maintaining the fusion of the two Liquor worms’ consciousness, and such multitasking was extremely taxing on the mind.

He continued to throw primeval stones towards the wine jar.

Every piece of primeval stones caused the ball of light to shrink by a bit, until it condensed to a fist’s size again, reaching its limit.

Fang Yuan followed the pattern and successively poured the bitter shell wine, then the white grains liquid.

When the four types of wine were completely used up, the light in the wine jar suddenly flourished before disappearing completely.

"Success." Fang Yuan knew he had succeeded without even looking in the wine jar.

He willed and a Gu shakingly flew out of the wine jar.

It was the Four Flavours Liquor worm.

Comparing it with the Liquor worm, there wasn’t much change in its external form, except that it was slightly bigger.

It also resembled a silkworm and had a tiny pair of shiny black eyes.

The difference was that the Liquor worm’s body was completely white, but this Four Flavours Liquor worm’s body continuously flickered with four colors; red representing spicy, blue representing bitter, green representing sour and yellow representing sweet. Fang Yuan couldn’t help but associate it with the neon lights on Earth.

"Huff..." Fang Yuan let out a big sigh of relief. His luck was good this time and didn’t encounter failure, succeeding the first time.

If it failed, the Liquor worms could suffer serious damage and one of them could even die, or the bitter shell wine might be used up. Either of these outcomes would be troublesome.

Fortunately, this situation didn’t occur.

A Gu Master needs to use, nurture and refine Gu; none of them were easy. And in the aspect of fusing Gu worms, many Gu Masters would go through a lot to look for recipes and collect materials.

There were various recipes and they might not necessarily be suitable. As for collecting materials, Gu Masters might even spend over ten years of efforts on it. Even if they find the recipe and collect all the materials, if the fusion failed, the materials would be used up, and all their previous efforts and preparations would go down the drain.

"Gu Master’s cultivation is difficult....." Fang Yuan sighed.

Fusing Gu worms were easy at the beginning stage of the cultivation. But the success rate for Rank four and Rank five fusion would often not reach even one in ten times.

Rank six fusion success rate was even as low as one percent. Every failure when fusing high rank Gu worms meant a loss of a great sum of resources.

However, once succeeded, the benefits would be extremely high.

Taking Fang Yuan’s newly refined Four Flavours Liquor worm into account, it could refine Rank two primeval essence and increase it by a small realm.

Fang Yuan used a red steel Relic Gu to advance to middle stage. Now, with the Four Flavours Liquor worm, he would have upper stage primeval essence.

His fighting strength was now doubled. At the same time, the Four Flavours Liquor worm would nourish his aperture which meant faster cultivation speed.

However, with advantages comes disadvantages.

Using the Four Flavours Liquor worm to refine his primeval essence would definitely lead to an increased consumption of primeval stones. Just by relying on the income from selling vitality leaves was already not enough to maintain his cultivation expenditure.

"Next, I need to fuse the Stealth Rock Gu into Stealth Scales Gu. This will add on to another expenditure."

Fusion, whether success or failure, used up primeval stones every time. Fang Yuan had used up over four hundred primeval stones earlier for refining the Four Flavours Liquor worm.

The clan had awarded him with five hundred primeval stones for chasing away the River Swallowing Toad. Five hundred primeval stones was enough for other Gu Masters to spend for a long while, but Fang Yuan had almost used it completely.

Fortunately, from the reselling of the assets, after using up most of it to purchase the red steel Relic Gu, some of it still remained. There was no need to worry for a short period of time.

But it was necessary to refine the Scales Stealth Gu.

Fang Yuan had obtained the Stealth Rock Gu after he killed the stone monkey king. However, it had no practical use.

It could only conceal the body. That meant, once Fang Yuan used it, his body would be concealed and be invisible to people.

But the clothes on his body - his wrist guards, leg wrappings and bamboo shoes would still be visible to the naked eyes.

The stone monkey king had no worries about this; it was a wild beast and didn’t need clothes.

But Fang Yuan would be in an awkward situation. To use the Stealth Rock Gu to the best of its ability and be invisible, he would need to take of all the clothes on his body. Otherwise, even if he concealed his body, others would see a set of ‘walking’ Rank two Gu Master’s uniform.

Stealth Rock Gu was a Rank one Gu worm. Once it advanced to Rank two Stealth Scales Gu, this problem would be resolved.

Stealth Scales Gu could conceal even the clothes. If the stone monkey king had Stealth Scales Gu, then even if Fang Yuan’s shirt covered its body, the shirt would also become invisible.

Supposing that the stone monkey king had Stealth Scales Gu, then the matter of whether Fang Yuan could defeat it was rather suspenseful.

Refining a Stealth Scales Gu naturally required other materials other than the Stealth Rock Gu. These materials were quite common and Fang Yuan had already requested Jiang Ya’s help to gather them.

"If I could refine Stealth Scales Gu, it will become very convenient for me to enter the secret cave. Moreover, during the wolf tide, I could easily attack and retreat with this method," Fang Yuan pondered.

It was getting late, he retrieved the Four Flavours Liquor worm into his aperture and exited the cave, walking towards the village.

He had instantly attracted a lot of attention after successfully chasing away the River Swallowing Toad. It was not easy moving about these days, so he was slightly worried that if he stayed for long in the secret cave, people would harbor suspicions.

At the village gate, a bout of strength contest had concluded.

Xiong Li’s group was proudly standing whereas Chi Shan’s group along with the Gu Masters guarding the gate had heavy faces.

Xiong Li wasn’t as tall as Chi Shan but his gaze seemed to be overlooking everything at this moment. He slowly spoke, "Chi Shan, you are indeed blessed with super strength. But I have Brown Bear Innate Strength Gu and I possess the strength of a bear. You saw from the battle just now that you are still not my match."

"Hmph, wanting to get the title of the strongest in Qing Mao mountain, dream on," Xiong Jiang sneered from the side.

Chi Shen’s face was ashen, he knew the other party had intentionally challenged him and their conduct was filled with political intentions. His loss now was no longer just his personal affair; rather, it was tarnishing Gu Yue clan’s name.

"What are you being proud over defeating me? You don’t know that I am no longer the strongest person in the clan. If you have skills, then speak after defeating Fang Yuan," Chi Shan had no choice but to mention Fang Yuan.

"Oh, Fang Yuan? I heard an A grade genius emerged in Gu Yue clan and his name was Fang Zheng. But who is this Fang Yuan?" Xiong Li asked, doubtfully.

Chi Shan sneered, "Fang Yuan is Fang Zheng’s older brother, he is also blessed with innate super strength and similarly possesses a strength-increasing Gu worm. Previously, he alone pushed the Rank five River Swallowing Toad over a hundred meters, finally driving it away. If you don’t believe me, you can ask anyone in the village."

Xiong Li group’s expressions couldn’t help but change.

Rank five River Swallowing Toad!

Fang Yuan!

This name was instantly engraved in their minds.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Okay, the next three chapters from last week, I hope I have time to do them tomorrow night! (Screw packing man) I’ll be gone and I won’t have wifi at the place I’m staying, but I want to find Starbucks or a nice place with free wifi so I can continue working on this novel. I really hope I can do that or else I’ll have to rush everything together only after I come back =A=)

I’ll see how it goes. Also~ Some of you guys mentioned Discord, so I was thinking if you peeps would be interested in a Gu Discord for readers and fans to discuss the novel+raws/spoilers+roleplay or whatever+hangout... but most importantly, where I can update you guys on news/progress/release/delays and stuff.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Whizzzz!

Three face-sized moonblades slashed through the air, carrying an eerie blue light.

Screeeech!

Instantly, sixteen to seventeen jade eye stone monkeys were killed on the spot.

The stone monkey groups chasing after Fang Yu were instantly cut down by a small half.

Fang Yuan stood on the spot and didn’t retreat. Instead, he lifted his right hand and slashed the air three times.

Three moonblades ran through the stone monkey group, beheading any stone monkey in its way.

The corpses of the stone monkeys fell on the ground, shattering into countless pieces. Their eyes turned into jade pearls and rolled on the blood-filled ground.

Fang Yuan inspected his aperture; he still had greater half of dark red primeval essence remaining.

The Moonglow Gu required ten percent of light red primeval essence to use a moonblade. Fang Yuan could only use four moonblades repeatedly at Rank two initial stage. The number increased to eight when he reached the middle stage. And at the upper stage, the number doubled once more, reaching sixteen.

Fang Yuan wasn’t really at Rank two upper stage, but with the Four Flavours Liquor worm’s refining of upper stage primeval essence, he could be considered to be at false upper stage; his fighting strength was rising sharply.

Before, he would have needed to fight while retreating when chased by these seventy or eighty stone monkeys. Now, he just attacked with the moonblades, rapidly killing most of them. The remaining stone monkeys had escaped.

"I cleared up three stone pillars within just two days. This speed is many times faster than before! If this goes on, I will be able to re-open a path to the central area in about half a month," Fang Yuan pondered.

"From the Flower Wine Monk’s style, the underground cave in the central pillar should be the next barrier. It is very likely that there will be another Earth Treasure Flower Gu at the barrier. I reckon the Flower Wine Monk’s strength inheritance is almost over. After all, he was seriously injured and his state was far from good, thus he hurriedly set up this inheritance. At most, there will probably be two more obstacles remaining."

Fang Yuan recalled the scene on the image wall; the blood-soaked Flower Wine Monk on his last breath. With his previous life’s deep experience, he reached this conclusion.

Flower Wine Monk had too little time to set up this legacy, there was no way for him to do more. However, this was a special case.

Gu Masters normally used years to set up their legacies. There were some large scaled legacies that would only open once every ten or more years. Some legacies were even divided and scattered across different areas and could even be at the different ends of the world.

The latter generations would need ten or more years or even decades of time to go through all the tests of such legacies.

Some legacies might not even be explored completely throughout a Gu Master’s life; the Gu Master would often leave this incomplete task for their descendants.

"Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance can be classified as a micro-scale legacy; its shortcoming being the small amount of inheritance items. But this also has its advantage — the first barrier is arranged according to the local conditions and is thus simple. I have successively obtained White Boar Gu, Jade Skin Gu and Liquor worm from this inheritance. Stealth Stone Gu can be barely considered as the inheritance. Next, there are probably only two more earth treasure flowers remaining. I hope that the Gu worms in them will be related to scouting or movement-type!"

Time passed quickly, autumn went and winter arrived.

Early winter, the first snowfall had come.

The sky was grey, snowflakes floated and fell on Qing Mao mountain.

Fang Yuan was moving alone through the snow. He had just come out from the secret cave in the stone crack and was hurrying towards the village.

"Over two months have passed, but my progress in clearing the stone pillars has not been good." Fang Yuan’s countenance carried a dark scowl.

It was not because he hadn’t put in effort, but rather the prelude to the wolf tide had already shown its signs.

Food was scarce during the winter; the growing wolf packs started to increase their hunting scale to gather enough foods to eat their fill.

The wild beast groups in the surroundings were purged due to this. Small beast tides frequently started to occur due to the disorder; similarly, there were also the crippled wolf packs.

These crippled wolves were expelled from the nest. These wolves gathered together and formed a group; they had started making frequent movements near the village.

It hadn’t reached the wild stage of attacks on the village yet, but the hunter families no longer went up the mountain to hunt. Similarly, there were occasionally some villagers who lost their lives to the wolves.

Gu Yue village mobilized many Gu Masters to carry out a clean-up operation. Due to this, there were many people moving about, along with lot of scouting Gu Masters among them. Thus, Fang Yuan sensibly decreased the amount of times he went to the secret cave inside the stone crack.

No doubt, this caused the speed of his progress in the stone forest to fall steeply.

The cold wind was getting stronger; snow was also falling heavily.

Houuuuu...

A deep beastly howl suddenly spread through the wind and snow.

Fang Yuan swiftly stopped and looked around, alert.

A small scale wolf pack with about twenty or more lightning wolves quickly appeared in range of his sight.

"Here we go again....." Fang Yuan muttered, this was already the eighth beast group he had encountered this month.

However, this time was somewhat different.

"The wolf packs are starting to make their moves so near to the village. Next, the clan’s Gu Masters will make their moves more often. The stone crack’s secret cave is not far away; looks like I can’t go there for some time." Fang Yuan’s heart sank upon this thought.

The journey was difficult, there would always be some obstacles preventing people from progressing.

The wolf pack closed in on Fang Yuan.

Houuu! Houuu! Houuu!

They howled before charging at Fang Yuan, coming at him one after another.

"Moonglow Gu," Fang Yuan willed; a moonblade flew out from his hand.

The eerie blue moonblade slashed through the wind and snow, going through the sickly wolves. It instantly beheaded three wolves, but when it reached the fourth wolf, the wolf suddenly rolled and cleverly dodged the moonblade.

Although most of these crippled wolves were handicapped, blind or missing their tails, they had plenty of battle experience and were very cunning.

A normal Rank two middle stage Gu Master would be in intense danger if they ran into such a group of crippled wolves and especially if they were surrounded by these wolves.

But Fang Yuan was calm.

His plentiful battle experience and the refined upper stage dark red primeval essence were the source of his confidence.

Kill, kill, kill!

He nimbly moved under the joint attacks from the crippled wolves, calmly dodging and decisively attacking.

The wolves continued to die by his hands.

After a short while, the number of the lightning wolves in the pack had sharply decreased by half.

Houuu—!

A wolf gave a mournful howl; the wolf pack immediately stopped their offensive attacks and began retreating.

This was the cunningness of these wolves.

When they discovered that Fang Yuan was a tough bone, they decisively retreated, giving up their plan to hunt Fang Yuan.

These old, sickly and injured wolves weren’t in a perfect state but being able to live till now showed their survival wisdom.

Fang Yuan stood on the spot, calmly looking at these crippled wolves disappearing into the wind and snow. If he could hide his strength, then he didn’t feel it necessary to reveal it.

After confirming that the wolf pack had completely escaped, he promptly collected the items on the wolf corpses.

Wolf skin, teeth and so on were all valuable.

Although their market price was on the low end, it could be made up by the quantity.

In these two months, Fang Yuan had made some earnings from the spoils of war from eradicating these crippled wolves.

The blood flowing from the wolf corpses were still warm. There were some crippled wolves who still had some breath left, their eyes showing a trace of vigor.

"In this world, not only humans but all living things are struggling to survive. This world is using life and death to unfold a brilliant stage!" Fang Yuan sighed before ruthlessly killing off these dying wolves.

A crippled wolf’s fighting strength was higher than two jade eye stone monkeys. Under the coordination with the pack, their fighting strength would double.

"I can still deal with these small-scale crippled wolf packs. But it would be troublesome to handle large scale crippled wolf packs or a small scale healthy wolf pack."

Fang Yuan could feel a faint pressure.

"The wolf tide will break out soon and the whole clan will be mobilized. I won’t be able to act aloof. If I want to hunt the lightning wolves by myself, I must have a scouting or movement-type gu. Otherwise, I will fall to the wolf tide."

Fang Yuan clearly recognized his shortcomings due to his ample experience.

His fighting strength had increased sharply after getting the Four Flavours Liquor worm. With the Moonglow Gu and Jade Skin Gu, he had both offense and defense. With his previous life’s deep accumulation, he could totally be ranked along with Qing Shu, Chi Shan and Mo Yan.

One could say, he was barely, but already able to stand in the top ranks among the Rank two Gu Masters of the clan.

Why it was barely, was because he was not truly at the upper stage, and at the same time his aptitude was also only C grade and was thus very limited.

Being able to accomplish this much with his fighting strength was already the best result, but fighting strength was only one aspect in surviving the wolf tide.

"I must have a scouting method. If I have a scouting Gu worm, I will be able to sense the movements of the wolf pack and quickly retreat or move through another route. Or use movement-type Gu worms to quickly run and escape from the wolf pack’s besiegement," Fang Yuan pondered.

His survival rate would greatly increase if he had just one of these two Gu worms. If he had both, then he would be able to move about easily.

"I hope Flower Wine Monk’s legacy contains such Gu worms. It’s not a problem even if it doesn’t. From my memories, the three clans would jointly establish contributions list during the wolf tides and put their stored Gu worms out for exchange. There were many precious Gu in the list. At that time, I can use my contributions and exchange them for Bai or Xiong village’s Gu worms."

Fang Yuan planned in his mind and stood up.

He had swiftly arranged the spoils of war in a short period and packed them in a bag which he then carried on his back.

The snow continued to fall and soon froze the wolf blood, covering their corpses.

"Look, Fang Yuan is back."

"He is carrying a bag, did he go out to hunt the crippled wolves again?"

"It was him that saved our village?"

"Hey, it was only by a stroke of luck. We both know how it went, if I had such great strength, I could also do that. It’s no big deal."

As Fang Yuan walked through the village, the people made way for him; there were praises, curiosity and also envy.

"Fang Yuan!" Chi Shan suddenly appeared from a corner and shouted.

Note: The ‘blizzards’ in the chapter title "There are many blizzards in life" is a metaphor for ‘obstacles’.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Alright, I’m gonna pump out the last three chapters from last week’s batch~

Also, I just made the Discord group for our Gu novel.. so here’s the Discord link for those interested!

https://discord.gg/nWU3qMK

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"What’s the matter?" Fang Yuan looked at Chi Shan.

Even if it was winter, he continued to be topless, his red skin emitting a warmth that made people feel like they were near a heater.

The white snow that landed on his body instantly melted.

This is because his aperture had a Double Orifice Stove Gu.

The Stove Gu was a Rank two Gu worm. It could store internal heat that could be used for attacking. Subduing the cold was just a side effect.

Chi Shan’s expression was complicated, he stared at Fang Yuan and said gravely, "Do you know that these days, Xiong Li from the Xiong clan has been finding you for a contest of strength?"

"I know," Fang Yuan nodded.

Chi Shan sighed, "Xiong Li finding you for a contest of strength is not a mere competition, but it involves the interest allocation of the three clans’ alliance. Under the wolf tide, non-alliance means destruction. But after forming an alliance, the biggest problem is how to distribute the interests and profits. These days, the three clans have been at a stalemate due to that."

Fang Yuan looked at Chi Shan, instantly understanding why he had looked for himself.

Negotiation was the hardest thing to do. For their own interests, the three clans would not give way automatically, and they would have to fight for their best interests. The negotiation table was long filled with gunpowder and smoke, battling wits.

In this world’s system of values, first was strength, second was kinship.

Qing Mao Mountain’s three clans were individual clans, having great conflict towards each other since a long time ago, each bearing old and deep grudges. Of course kinship cannot be used to alleviate their tensions. So to break the tension, they had to rely on strength.

On earth, there are military exercises to display one’s strength. In this world, it worked similarly in that there are Gu contests to display the strength of one faction and achieve greater benefits for themselves.

Xiong Li finding Fang Yuan for a contest to compete strength, was due to this.

As expected, Chi Shan said next, "I have competed with Xiong Li, he has the Brown Bear Innate Strength Gu and already possesses the strength of one bear. He also has the Grand Bear Gu, and can increase his strength by another bear. Together he has two bear’s strength. I am far beyond his match, as much as I want to deny it. But as Qing Mao Mountain’s number one strongest person, the title belongs to him no doubt."

He paused for a while, then continue, "Let’s talk business. Your strength is around mine, so you are not his match either. But you cannot lose, as you were the one who woke up the River Swallowing Toad, the hero that saved Qing Mao Mountain. Once you lose, our Gu Yue Clan’s interests will be compromised. So for the clan’s interests, discard your personal honor and avoid battle!"

Fang Yuan stared silently at Chi Shan.

Chi Shan looked down, "I know that this matter towards you is very difficult. After all, avoiding the competition has a disastrous damage towards one’s own reputation. But it is for the interests of the clan; if you lose, the clan would have to give up much more. The clan has nurtured us, we naturally have to contribute to the clan right? The clan needs you. Sacrificing your own reputation for the clan is only natural! But this matter started due to me, so in my personal name, I will compensate you for it, as part of my goodwill."

Saying so, Chi Shan handed Fang Yuan a large money bag.

Fang Yuan weighed it, and chuckled, "So my reputation is only worth two hundred primeval stones?"

Chi Shan could hear the sarcasm in his words, his gaze sharpened as he said solemnly, "Fang Yuan, please do not have any indignant feelings! Earlier, I tried to console you with kind words, but the truth is I’m here with a mission. Avoiding the competition is the clan higher-up’s orders. Regardless of what you think, this is an order. I hope you understand your position."

Saying so, he turned around and left, leaving deep footprints in the snow.

Fang Yuan looked at Chi Shan’s back as his eyes revealed a sign of understanding.

"In order to get the greatest benefits, the clan has already used the event of me chasing away the River Swallowing Toad as a chip in the negotiation. After all, the River Swallowing Toad was a danger to the entire Qing Mao Mountain. In order to get rid of this chip, the Xiong clan sent Xiong Li to challenge me."

"To the clan, I am but a chess piece. Xiong Li is the same, and Chi Shan is also a chess piece. What is sad is that these people are willingly being pawn pieces, even basking in its glory and finding it natural; this is truly a successful brainwash by the clan."

"But I originally did not want to compete with Xiong Li anyway, the so-called reputation is merely praises from others. This chain that binds people has captured many heroes and geniuses in the past. But to me, what loss is there? Hehe, I have to thank Chi Shan for sending me two hundred primeval stones."

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan smirked.

Why did he attract Xiong Li’s challenge? Merely because he had the glory of saving the village. Why did Chi Shan challenge Xiong Li? It was merely for the reputation of Qing Mao Mountain’s number one strongman.

The so-called reputation is merely a superficial carrot. It has tempted many people and trampled many others, manipulating countless people.

Sad, how sad!

Snow continued to descend slowly.

The entire Gu Yue village was silently erected in the snow. The people beside him rushed through the streets.

"What’s laughable is that these people have had their bodies trapped by this fictitious glory!" Fang Yuan’s eyes drooped down as his eerie dark iris was half-covered by hair.

The light reflecting from the snow shone on his face. The young man’s face was pale and had a sort of coldness.

Suddenly laughing, Fang Yuan recited a poem, "White snow blankets the land as I travel alone through heaven and earth. Alone without any attachments, my solitary shadow travels freely."

He took a large step and continued travelling.

While others rushed, Fang Yuan walked alone.

Whether it was clansmen, snow or the village, they were merely a blurry background.

A moment later, he reached his rental apartment.

The bamboo buildings and the wine tavern, he had already sold them all away. He continued to stay in the rented flat, and although it was very simple, Fang Yuan did not ask for more, he just needed a shelter over his head.

Sitting on the bed, Fang Yuan began to cultivate.

Gu Masters in cultivating to breakthrough a large realm, needed ability and talent. But to break through a small realm, it was merely the accumulation of time. With enough time, the aperture would be continuously nurtured, and it can continue to elevate.

According to agreement, when it reached evening, Jiang Ya came to Fang Yuan’s residence.

"Lord Fang Yuan, these are the primeval stones this time, please inspect it." He walked into the room, handing over five money bags respectfully, filled with primeval stones.

There was more than four hundred primeval stones inside, and as the wolf tide approached, Gu Masters had an increased reliance on the vitality leaves. This caused Fang Yuan’s sale price to continuously go up.

Fang Yuan handed Jiang Ya nine vitality leaves, asking, "The thing I asked you to purchase, have you done it?"

Jiang Ya showed a look of disappointment, shaking his head, "Lord Fang Yuan, this is bad timing. The wolf tide is coming, and the clan has increased its control on resources. Other things aside, that Fish Scale Gu is only slightly less valuable than the Jade Skin Gu. I have already tried my best, but it is difficult to have results immediately."

Fang Yuan frowned.

Fish Scale Gu was used with Stealth Rock Gu to create the Stealth Scale Gu. Without the Fish Scale Gu, he couldn’t refine the Stealth Scale Gu.

"Even with resource control, it does not mean we cannot find a Fish Scale Gu. The root of the problem is Jiang Ya’s ability being too small. It seems that fusing the Stealth Scale Gu would have to drag on." Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

But he was not discouraged.

Nine out of ten things in this world will not go according to plan.

This is life, and the phrase "smooth-sailing" is only a beautiful greeting.

"Bai clan produces the Fish Scale Gu, and our clan also has them, although less in number. It seems this matter has to wait after the formal alliance."

Fang Yuan was not in a rush, he knew that once the three clans form an alliance, they would create the battle merit board. This would encourage Gu Masters to proactively hunt wolves. By then, he would be able to use his merit points to exchange for the three clan’s resources.

Of course, Gu Yue Clan’s Moonlight Gu, Xiong clan’s Bear Strength Gu and Bai clan’s Stream Gu were the clan’s signature, and would not be exchangeable.

But the Fish Scale Gu was definitely inside.

Danger is accompanied by opportunity.

To Gu Masters, the wolf tide was a strict examination, but also an opportunity to rise up.

Under the attack of the wolf tide, numerous famous Gu Masters died while many Gu Masters gained fame due to it. The older factions in the clan would weaken due to this, but new factions would rise up into the political stage.

At night, unexpected guests arrived.

Gu Yue Qing Shu and Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

Qing Shu got to the main point, mentioning his previous objective, wanting to buy the Liquor worm from Fang Yuan.

At the same time, he also wanted to buy the Black Boar Gu, and even the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass.

Nine Leaf Vitality Grass was a no brainer; Liquor worm had long become the Four Flavor Liquor worm, even if Fang Yuan wanted to, he couldn’t even produce it now, thus he rejected them.

But the Black Boar Gu...

"I have already gained the strength of a boar, so the Black Boar Gu has little value to me anymore. Black Boar Gu’s best advancement path is the Steel Mane Gu. Although it is a Gu with both offense and defense, to me who already has the White Jade Gu, it has little use. I might as well exchange it into a Fish Scale Gu."

Fang Yuan thought of this, and mentioned it.

"Fish Scale Gu?" Qing Shu frowned, then nodded, "I know, you lack a defensive Gu worm. The Fish Scale Gu can be fused into the Rank two Scale Armor Gu. It can provide good defense."

Using the Fish Scale Gu and Stealth Rock Gu to create the Stealth Scale Gu, the recipe would only be discovered two hundred years later, so it was natural that Qing Shu had no clue.

Fang Yuan did not expose himself, "The Black Boar Gu is more valuable than the Fish Scale Gu, so if we exchange it, you have to compensate me the difference in price."

"Naturally." Qing Shu nodded then asked, "Nevermind about the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, are you really not selling the Liquor worm? It is useless to you already, raising it for nothing is just a waste of your primeval stones."

Fang Yuan shook his head, "Don’t mention the Liquor worm, it is not for sale."

Qing Shu rubbed his nose, laughing bitterly, "Fang Yuan, this matter is more complicated than you think. Do you know Gu Yue Yao Le? She is the granddaughter of medicine hall elder Gu Yue Yao Ji, a new student this year, and has B grade aptitude. Gu Yue Yao Ji loves her granddaughter and once tried to buy a Liquor worm in the treehouse, but did not succeed."

"You’ve used the Liquor worm before, I’m sure you know the benefits it has. I won’t say anymore, but Lord Yao Ji really wants this Gu worm for her granddaughter. An elderly’s affection for her grandchildren is completely understandable. Thus, she has come to you, she is serious about buying it and has offered a high price. She even promises that if you got injured in the wolf tide, you’d get special attention from the medicine hall. I hope you consider it thoroughly."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"So that’s it," Fang Yuan rubbed his chin, then shook his head, "This Liquor worm is not for sale. Since Yao Ji is insistent, why isn’t she finding that Gu Master who bought the Liquor worm?"

Hearing this, Qing Shu looked like a dark cloud was looming over him as he sighed deeply, "Sigh, we do not know which clansman has it. After buying this Liquor worm, there has been absolutely no news. We cannot find anything, and we cannot simply inspect apertures right? That is a taboo, the biggest taboo among Gu Masters. For a small matter like the Liquor worm, causing public rage is not good. But it is understandable that this clansman is keeping a low profile on his treasure, this is also human nature."

Qing Shu did not know that the real person who bought the Liquor worm was sitting in front of him.

But Qing Shu never suspected Fang Yuan, since in his perspective, Fang Yuan had the Liquor worm already, he wouldn’t need to buy a second one. What’s the use of it?

If he knew about the Four Flavor Liquor worm’s recipe, he would definitely suspect Fang Yuan. But now, this recipe was solely Fang Yuan’s secret to keep.

The only one who knew that Fang Yuan was the buyer, is Jia Fu. But to Jia Fu, Fang Yuan could be helping another person to buy it. Whether it be a relative or a lover, something like this is natural. Yao Ji is the same right, buying the Liquor worm for her granddaughter?

"No matter what, I am not giving way for this Liquor worm matter." Fang Yuan’s attitude was firm without any loosening, as he smirked in his heart.

This was the system.

The system made one strong, but it was also a restraint.

Gu Yue Yao Ji was a Rank three Gu Master. She was much stronger than Fang Yuan, but due to the system she could not snatch it from him. Due to the rules of the system and minding her own reputation, she cannot forcefully purchase it either.

Fang Zheng who was at one side suddenly urged, "Brother, the Liquor worm is useless to you, why cling on to it. Granny Yao Ji is very kind. I’ve met sister Yao Le many times too, she is a good person, I am sure she will take good care of the Liquor worm. And the Liquor worm is very helpful to her. Kindness begets kindness, brother, you saved the village and I am happy for you. This brings honor to our family as well. But why are you being so stubborn now, isn’t this too petty?"

Fang Yuan’s expression stiffened as he said coldly, " My good little brother, are you lecturing me? The Liquor worm is my business. Even if it rots in my hands, you have no rights to dictate what I do."

He was not really angry, but attitude is the mask of the heart, and by expressing his attitude, it would allow Qing Shu to see his determination to reject.

"It seems Fang Yuan is bent on rejecting. Bringing Fang Zheng here on purpose was a bad move. These brothers have a poor relationship and are always at odds, I’ve shot myself in the foot," Gu Yue Qing Shu’s gaze shone.

"Fang Zheng, go out and shop around." Fang Zheng wanted to say more, but he was stopped by Qing Shu.

Fang Zheng gritted his teeth, but still obeyed Qing Shu’s command.

"Either way, I cannot understand you in this matter, big brother." He opened the door, leaving his last sentence.

"What I do, does not require your understanding, Fang Zheng." Fang Yuan was expressionless.

Fang Zheng’s movement of opening the door stopped for a moment, but he quickly walked out of the room without turning around, closing the room door with a bam.

This movement caused the room’s atmosphere to become even more awkward.

"If there is nothing else, brother Qing Shu can take your leave." Fang Yuan instantly evicted his guest.

"Hehehe," Qing Shu laughed dryly, trying to alleviate the tension, but Fang Yuan’s face was cold as ice, showing no signs of change.

But his temper was mild, and he did not get frustrated.

Touching his nose, Qing Shu laughed awkwardly, "There is another matter, regarding the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass."

"The Nine Leaf Vitality Grass is not for sale." Fang Yuan rolled his eyes.

"I know, I know," Qing Shu nodded, "It is regarding the vitality leaf, this is the personal business of my group. I hope you can supply the produced vitality grass to us. Of course, we will pay you an appropriate compensation."

Seeing business approaching, Fang Yuan naturally did not reject, "Then, sixty-five primeval stones per leaf."

Qing Shu on hearing the price, was tongue-tied.

According to market rates, the clan’s original sale price is fifty-five primeval stones. Although the vitality leaf is an expenditure type Rank one Gu, gone after one use, this was something to save lives, and nobody would mind more of it.

Especially with the wolf tide nearing, the clan is also raising prices, and each leaf is sold at sixty primeval stones. Actually, not just the vitality leaf, but also resources are also getting pricier. This is the volatility of the situation, and Gu Masters have to live with it.

But what Qing Shu did not expect was, Fang Yuan’s price was even higher than the clan’s.

"Finding it expensive? You don’t have to buy it. But as far as I know, after the wolf tide, the clan will tightly control resources, and the vitality leaf would have excess demand. By then, the prices will soar again, there might not even be stock, what do you think?" Fang Yuan’s tone was calm as he safely evaluated his pricing.

Qing Shu was stumped, his tone turning helpless, "You sure are clear of it. But your price raising is slightly overbearing. Aren’t you afraid of offending people? If you reduce the prices, you can use the opportunity to build relationships. But if you raise prices like this, the clansmen will keep a grudge on you for earning profits this way."

Fang Yuan raised his head and laughed, "The wolf tide is nearing, I am but a small fry, I can die anyday. How can I bother with these trivialities?"

"You have long gone past the stage of a small fry, and human relationships are not trivial either." Qing Shu stared at Fang Yuan deeply, then lightly shook his head, "But everyone has their own thoughts and choices, I will not force you. However do be more careful, Lord Yao Ji will not let go so easily... Goodbye."

Qing Shu no longer mentioned the matter of purchasing vitality leaves, Fang Yuan’s prices had scared him.

He was a smart person, and when a smart person buys things, they do not act on impulse, but only after intelligent consideration. A smart person would have an evaluation in their heart, and once the prices exceed their worth, they would calmly pull out.

Fang Yuan seemed to have only increased the price by five primeval stones, but Qing Shu was not just buying one vitality leaf, and the wolf tide would be going on for at least a year, he would be expending a lot of vitality leaves. If this accumulated, it would be a heavy cost.

"Thanks for your advice, take care, I shall not send you off," Fang Yuan said, watching Qing Shu leave. His heart was clear as he knew that Qing Shu would definitely be back.

That is because he had underestimated the wolf tide’s severity too much.

Under such a wolf tide, death might instantly befall anyone, and the vitality leaf had no lack of customers. In his memory, the price rocketed to over a hundred primeval stones!

Of course, this price was also during the period when the wolf tide was at its strongest. Right now, what Fang Yuan wanted to do was to accommodate to the time period, gradually raising prices.

As time flowed, the winter wind grew more cold and harsh.

This year’s winter winds were evidently colder than previous years for Qing Mao Mountain’s three villages.

Taking the Gu Yue village for example.

More and more crippled wolves appeared near the village surroundings.

The clan sent out large amounts of missions, and almost all of them were about exterminating the crippled wolves.

During December, when the crippled wolves’ amount reached its peak, this caused the situation to worsen quickly, reaching an atrocious level. In fact, there was even a situation where a hamlet at the mountain foot was slaughtered by a large group of wolves.

Good thing was, the dozen Gu Masters in the village retreated in time. The clan higher-ups breathed a sigh of relief secretly, as the death of a Gu Master would cause them to feel pity for over half a day, but for mortals, they were all slaves anyway, so be it if they die.

In this world, there are no human rights.

A Gu Master’s life is more valuable than a hundred mortals, this is the viewpoint of everybody.

However death and injury would definitely not be little, thus, the village had sounds of crying and sniffing from morning to night.

The village emanated a sense of grief and suppression throughout.

The crippled wolves were only the prelude; the true wolf tide was even more horrifying.

More and more people started to realize that the wolf tide this year, is exceptional.

Under such pressure, the negotiation that had been under a stalemate obtained quick progress, and the three-clan-alliance was formed.

A month later, at the end of winter.

Alliance Slope, Three Clan Alliance Meeting.

Little snowflakes that were like soft white fur slowly drifted down.

Hundreds and thousands of Gu Masters gathered here, forming a grand scale.

The alliance slope was originally an ordinary mountain slope, but throughout history, the Gu Yue clan’s second generation clan head managed to create the first three clan alliances at the slope. Thus forth, all future alliances were held there.

After many years of refinement, the current alliance slope had already expanded tens of times, becoming a giant town square.

The town square was along the mountain wall, and there was a huge rock erected there.

On the huge rock, there were rock carvings of buildings, and in the buildings there was rock furniture properly assembled. The three clan higher-ups were sitting inside, closely discussing.

Below the giant rock building, the three clan’s Gu Masters had their respective standings, forming three large groups.

Gu Masters wore similar battle clothing, and along with a belt, their respective cultivation levels were apparent. Fang Yuan was within them.

He secretly observed the situation.

The Gu Masters below the stage were all Rank two Gu Masters. Most Rank one Gu Masters were allocated to support, and only Rank two Gu Masters were the true mobile troops. As for Rank three Gu Masters, they were clan elders, and for a mid-size clan like the Gu Yue clan, even after each generation’s effort they only had a little more than twenty clan elders.

Fang Yuan was observing, and the other Gu Masters were also watching. Countless gazes intersected with hatred, curiosity, and alertness.

Gu Yue clan’s Gu Masters were on the skinny side. Xiong clan’s Gu Masters were strong and robust, and from appearance their strength could be shown. Bai clan’s Gu Masters, maybe due to living by the waterfall behind the mountain, had whitish skin and had a Yin aura(1) around them.

"That long hair guy is Gu Yue Qing Shu, Rank two peak stage, and is the Gu Yue clan’s number one Rank two Gu Master," some pointed out.

"Mo Yan! Hmph, this wrench caused me to lose an arm. After the wolf tide, I must get revenge!!" Someone snorted in their heart.

"Woah, that girl riding on the giant bear, she should be the Xiong clan’s Xiong Jiao Man. Don’t be deceived by her appearance, she goes battle-crazy when fighting."

"Do you see that white fat girl? She’s Bai clan’s Bai Zhong Shui, a Rank two upper stage fighter, who has the Water Boar Gu. She is very promiscuous and very lustful towards men. You newbies be careful, don’t get fucked by her."

The three clan’s animosity and grudges had long been deep-seated.

Alliance slope’s discussion noises became louder as it turned into an uproar. Many Gu Master seniors were pointing around, introducing the strong people from the other two clans to their juniors, reminding them to be careful of them.

(1) Yin aura, this is a bit hard to explain? Yin is associated with females, dark energy, water energy...

Reminder:

Xiong clan - Bear clan.

Bai clan - White clan.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

And there you have it, all of last week’s chapters. Poor Fang Zheng~

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"The traditional overlord Gu Yue clan, the newly rising Bai clan, and the never-underestimated Xiong clan..." Fang Yuan’s gaze flew across the people as he stood in the crowd, observing the entire situation.

Gu Yue clan has Qing Shu, Chi Shan, Mo Yan; Xiong and Bai clan also had their outstanding Rank two elite Gu Masters.

Together with the different clan’s heads and elders in the rock building, the alliance slope can be said to be filled with elites.

"I wonder which one is Bai Ning Bing? The man who symbolizes the Bai clan’s rise!"

"Bai Ning Bing is already Rank three, he is definitely not among the Rank two Gu Masters."

"It seems he isn’t in the rock building either."

Gradually, the discussions gathered on Bai Ning Bing.

Although Bai Ning Bing did not appear, his brilliance had already suppressed all the Gu Masters below the rock building.

"I remember that three years ago on the alliance slope, it was Bai Ning Bing who was the first to step out and start the Gu battle. In just three years, he became a Rank three clan elder, thinking about it makes me shudder."

"He rose to heaven in one step. When he was Rank two, he could defeat a clan elder in the Xiong clan, this guy has a bright future ahead."

"The point is that right now he has already grown up, and at this rate, he can become a Rank four expert and even rank five. As for Rank six..."

"Rank five is mortal, while Rank six is immortal. Rank five is already amazing. Rank six? Hmph, you are all overestimating him...."

"That might not be, who can predict the future?"

Under such discussions, the three clan heads in the rock building stood up, staring down at the thousands of Gu Masters.

Gu Yue clan head was in the center, Bai clan head and Xiong clan head at his left and right respectively.

The alliance slope gradually quietened down.

Gu Yue Bo held the railings, sweeping a glance at the crowd, before saying, "The three-clan-alliance will pull together in times of trouble. For the Gu battle tournament, in the spirit of competition, competitors shall stop before fatality occurs. Start."

The alliance slope was dead silent. The crowd looked at each other.

The three-clan-alliance, would always hold a Gu battle tournament. Not only was it to show off the clan’s individual strength, it was also to promote conversation and temporarily alleviate their grudges, to achieve the aims of working together.

But who will stand out first?

If the first Gu Master to stand up failed in public, it would be shameful on their own reputation, and it even shames the clan elders up in the rock building.

Last time, Bai Ning Bing stood up. But this time......

The crowd continued to hesitate. Suddenly at the Xiong clan’s side, a group of Gu Masters stood first, it was Xiong Li’s group.

Immediately, the group of five invited numerous people’s attention and gaze.

The Xiong Li group walked past the Gu Yue clan’s area, and under everyone’s watchful eye, he stood at the Bai clan’s territory.

"It’s Xiong Li."

"Qing Mao Mountain’s strongest man?"

"That’s right. It seems that not too long ago, the Gu Yue clan’s Chi Shan lost to him in public. His title is unmovable, not even Bai Ning Bing can take it away."

"Damn it, the Gu Yue clan isn’t going over, are they trying to bully our Bai clan?"

At the Bai clan territory, there was a mild disturbance. Many people knew Xiong Li’s strength, and felt a sense of pressure.

But Xiong Li looked around, and did not move from his spot; instead, Xiong Jiang who was beside him stood out.

Xiong Jiang had a thin body, and at the Xiong clan’s area with lots of burly men, he was very striking.

He took a few steps forward, facing the Bai clan’s Gu Masters, cupping his fist, "Xiong clan Xiong Jiang, challenges brother Bai Bing Yi."

Once he spoke, astonished noises could be heard below the rock building.

Bai Bing Yi’s status was around the same as Chi Shan and Xiong Li etc. Among the Bai clan’s young Gu Masters, he is only inferior to Bai Ning Bing. For Xiong Jiang to challenge him, he was evidently trying to overcome the stronger foe.

But could he?

Bai Bing Yi stood up with a grim face. His body was small and his face was pale; he was like a patient who had just recovered from a serious illness, giving off a feeling of being weak and sickly. But no one dared to underestimate him.

"You, Xiong Jiang dare to challenge me, you have some courage. How do you want to compete? Say it, I’ll accept it," He said to Xiong Jiang.

Xiong Jiang laughed darkly, "I specialize in defense, and you specialize in attack. How about this, I defend and you attack. I’ll give you three attacking opportunities, and we’ll compare the results.

This was not a life and death match, it was only sparring.

But Xiong Jiang had such confidence, he was obviously prepared, and this caused many people to mutter among themselves.

Bai Bing Yi raised his brows, "Xiong Jiang, no matter what Gu worm, you are still a Rank two Gu Master, your cultivation is like that. Do you really think you can block my Water Drill Gu? If I injure you, don’t complain."

Xiong Jiang snickered, "We wouldn’t know unless we try right? Come."

Saying so, he activated the Gu in his body and his body changed colour, becoming dry and green like a dead block of wood.

At the same time his teeth turned sharp and long, and four fangs were exposed out of his lips.

His iris also turned green.

This was the Rank two Gu, Roaming Zombie Gu.

Once activated, it could turn one into a zombie.

Compared to living people, zombies are better at resisting punches and kicks and have greater regeneration, but is afraid of fire, lightning and light, although it has greater resistance towards water, wind and poison.

At the same time, zombies when fighting under the sunlight are not as strong as in the night, and thus are weakened by the time of the day.

"Even so, I am not afraid," Bai Bing Yi laughed coldly, raising his right arm.

Under everyone’s watchful gaze, he gathered his five fingers at one point and contracted his fist.

First, a droplet of water formed on his five fingers, then in the blink of an eye, the droplet expanded, turning into a fast flowing current, and from his fingertips, the water coiled around his palm in a spiral manner.

In two breath’s time, Bai Bing Yi’s fist was already covered by a light-blue coloured spiral drill that rotated non-stop.

Rank two Water drill Gu!

Able to drill through rocks and steel with very strong attack power, barely any Gu worm could defend against it.

"Receive my blow," Bai Bing Yi coughed, throwing out his fist.

Xiong Jiang raised both arms, forming an arm shield.

The water drill hit his arm, and a large amount of water splattered. The two were at a deadlock for a few breaths when suddenly the water drill’s rotation intensified, and Xiong Jiang flew five to six steps back.

Xiong Jiang laid on the ground, but quickly did a belly-flip, standing again.

One could see that the muscles on both his arms were torn by the water drill, showing his pale white bones.

Bai clan’s Gu Masters upon seeing this scene uncontrollably cheered, but a small number frowned.

"Hehehe..." Xiong Jiang laughed slyly, not minding his injury as a zombie; his pain sensors had been reduced to zero.

Bai Bing Yi stood on the spot, but suddenly his pale face changed, and he vomited a mouthful of blood.

Bai clan Gu Master’s cheers ended.

"What happened?!" someone exclaimed.

"It’s the Shadow Bond Gu!" Bai Bing Yi stared deeply at the ground, where Xiong Jiang’s shadow was distorted at a creepy angle, pasted on top of the snow. It connected both Xiong Jiang and Bai Bing Yi together.

"It seems I win, brother Bai. With this Shadow Bond Gu, no matter how much injury I suffer, you will take 10% of it. I specialize in defense, but you are a pure attacker, and you have poor health, so even 10% of the damage is deadly to you," Xiong Jiang said plainly.

Bai Bing Yi wiped the blood traces off his lips, staring deeply at Xiong Jiang for a while before saying, "Good. Very good. You planned well with such great tactics. I lost."

He admitted defeat on the spot.

"Too unscrupulous."

"Absolutely cunning and shameless!"

"To think he had a Shadow Bond Gu, senior Bai Bing Yi was completely outplayed."

Bai clan’s Gu Masters exploded into a series of discussions.

Xiong Jiang cupped his fist, "I’m flattered. If we really fought, the final winner would still be brother Bai. The Shadow Bond Gu’s range is limited, it can only bully close-ranged Gu Masters, I hope brother Bai can take good care of me in this upcoming wolf tide!"

"Of course." Bai Bing Yi’s expression softened a little, and nodded.

Bai clan’s Gu Masters also started to quieten down.

Standing on the rock building, the three clan’s higher-ups who had been observing, nodded discreetly at this scene.

The Gu fighting competition was only for sparring and not ruthless assault. Xiong Jiang exposing a trump card also increased each other’s trust and understanding.

Whether it was Xiong Jiang or Bai Bing Yi’s attitude, they were good.

Resolving it like this, the Bai clan’s Gu Masters, even if they did not admit it, felt admiration towards Xiong Jiang.

After all, the strong were respected.

"Xiong Li’s group had a good start," Gu Yue Bo lightly praised.

"Hehehe." Xiong clan head beside him laughed lightly, Xiong Jiang had given him face.

Bai clan head at the other end had a tough expression.

But Xiong Li’s group did not quit while they were ahead, the five left the Bai clan’s area, and came to the Gu Yue clan.

"After challenging the Bai clan, they are challenging the Gu Yue clan now?"

"Oh no, Xiong Li himself is stepping up now!"

Gu Yue clansmen were slightly nervous, many of their gazes were gathered on Chi Shan, Mo Yan and Qing Shu.

But who knew Xiong Li shouted loudly, "Who is Fang Yuan, please stand up. I heard you could chase away the River Swallowing Toad alone, why don’t we have a contest of strength!"

Instantly, the crowd exploded.

Xiong Li stood up, yet he did not challenge Qing Shu, Chi Shan or Mo Yan, but instead pointed out a newbie junior.

"Fang Yuan, who is Fang Yuan?" Some of the other village’s Gu Masters had never heard this name before.

"Chasing away the River Swallowing Toad alone, oh my god, that’s a Rank five Gu, is he so absurd?" Some shot glances of shock and curiosity.

Gu Yue clan’s Gu Masters took the initiative and opened up a path, and Fang Yuan who was among them was exposed.

Without anything hindering their vision, Xiong Li and Fang Yuan stared at each other.

Xiong Li’s lips curled to an angle, saying with a very manly elegance, "I hope Fang Yuan would generously teach me."

"This Fang Yuan, who in the world is he, he doesn’t have three heads or six limbs anyway."

"Chasing away the River Swallowing Toad is also by coincidence and luck, it is nothing hard. Heh, being targeted by this muscled man Xiong Li, he is in big trouble now."

"Fang Yuan, you can’t avoid it anymore. Sigh, in that case, just hope for the best and go ahead and battle!" Chi Shan sighed in his heart.

"Oh, is that so..." Fang Yuan shrugged with a plain expression, "Then I admit defeat."

The moment he said so, the crowd all went dumbfounded.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Hi boys and girls~ Internet is so bad here and I’ve been super busy so far throughout my hometown trip >:(Attack of the mosquitoes!! I saw a lot of Gu here and there too!! Buuuuut I managed to do a few at night so I’m going to post 3 chapters tonight~! Thanks for your support so far everyone and Discord is going strong xD yay!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Admit defeat.....

Fang Yuan’s words were still lingering in the crowd’s ears.

Instantly, almost all the Rank two Gu Masters below the rock building looked at Fang Yuan with surprise.

Fang Yuan ignored them; he held his arms and stood on the spot with an indifferent expression.

"Admit defeat? He directly admitted defeat, did I hear that wrongly?"

"He is Fang Yuan? He doesn’t even have the guts to come out, haha."

"We recognize Xiong Li’s power, he is indeed strong. But even if you want to admit defeat, at least do that after the formalities. By directly admitting defeat, he is not only showing that he is a coward, he is even tarnishing the clan."

The whispers were like ripples in a calm lake.

The Gu Masters’ gazes turned from surprise to despise, scorn and gloating.

Many Gu Yue clan Gu Masters felt unease; the gazes from the Xiong and Bai clan’s Gu Masters were like invisible needles, piercing their self-esteem.

Fang Yuan was a member of the Gu Yue clan, with him directly admitting defeat, this made them feel absolutely humiliated.

"How could you admit defeat? Fang Yuan, you are a man of Gu Yue village, stand up and fight bravely with Xiong Li!"

"Even if you lost, it wouldn’t be anything serious."

"If you don’t even have the guts to go out, then that would really be throwing away our dignity!"

Some Gu Yue clan Gu Masters shouted and urged Fang Yuan to take the challenge.

Fang Yuan was indifferent; to him, these words were like dogs barking.

The so-called name, face and honor was only a pie painted on a paper; shackles used by the higher-ups to bind the organization members.

These Gu Masters were also dogs on a leash.

Xiong Li gazed at Fang Yuan and suddenly laughed, "I am truly disappointed. Is this how a Gu Yue village’s bravery looks like?"

Gu Yue clan Gu Masters looked unsightly when they heard this.

Hoots of laughter came from Xiong village’s side, and even Bai village’s Gu Masters looked at Gu Yue clan with mockery.

The people around Fang Yuan started moving away. Everyone made some distance from him; their faces were filled with embarrassment.

Soon, there was no one within five steps from Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan stood alone. My way or the highway(1), his expression was calm as opposed to the surroundings.

Others fancied a courageous reputation, but Fang Yuan scoffed at it. This made others loathe him.

Because Fang Yuan loathed fame, he was rejecting the society’s values. Denying this system of values was rejecting the people who lived their lives following these values.

Others naturally wouldn’t deny their own values, otherwise they would feel that they were living in a wrong way. Thus, they had subconsciously started to reject and boycott Fang Yuan.

A weak-hearted person would be defeated by such rejection and they would change themselves to suit the public.

However, Fang Yuan needed such rejection. He had too many secrets on him and so he needed to be solitary. At the same time, these people weren’t worth being friends with. In his memories, Qing Mao Mountain’s three villages barely survived the wolf tide, but the accident two years later would totally destroy them and turn the entire Qing Mao Mountain into a desolate area.

What Fang Yuan needed was to use this time to improve himself as much as possible, then leave the clan and avoid the fatal disaster.

Gu Yue Qing Shu - the number one Rank two Gu Master in the Gu Yue Clan - couldn’t help but stand up seeing this situation.

"Xiong Li, how about sparring with me?"

"Hehe, what will we compete on?" Xiong Li was smiling, but his expression was serious.

Gu Yue Qing Shu didn’t look at Xiong Li; he slightly raised his palm and silently moved his primeval essence, his eye watchfully looked at the green vine that was slowly growing out from his palm.

He calmly said, "Let’s compete on your strength. If you can break away from my green vine’s binding, I will admit defeat. Is that okay?"

"Hehe, good suggestion, let’s do it that way." Xiong Li grinned, his eyes revealing a bright light.

He inwardly thought, I already have the strength of a bear and combining it with the strength-increase from Grand Bear Gu, I possess the strength of two bears. Although green vine is tough, I have absolute guarantee of breaking it away with the strength of two bears. Xiong Jiang won against Bai Bing Yi and if I defeat Qing Shu, it would give us great reputation!

Qing Shu gently smiled. Without speaking, he extended his two hands; two green vines grew out from his palms. Like two nimble green pythons, the two vines climbed up Xiong Li and twisted around his body.

Xiong Li’s hands were at his waist; the green vines coiled around both his arms and instantly made a dozen circles around them, tightly binding his hands with his back.

The Gu Masters on the scene couldn’t take their eyes off this contest.

"Please." Qing Shu said to Xiong Li.

Xiong Li opened his eyes. He tightly clenched his fists and started putting strength.

Every muscle on his body seemed to stand out like lumps on a huge rock.

Strength of a bear!

Boom.

The green vines started to snap under his enormous strength.

"Hahaha, brother Qing Shu, it seems the winner of this contest belongs to me!" Xiong Li was using his strength to break free, but he still had enough energy to make a conversation.

"Senior Qing Shu...." Fang Zheng was nervous and his hands were sweating

The other Gu Yue clan’s Gu Masters were also the same. Gu Yue Qing Shu was the number one among them and if he lost the contest, the Gu Yue Clan would have thoroughly lost their face this time!

"Not necessarily." Gu Yue Qing Shu smiled, his eyes showing confidence.

When he finished speaking, the green vines on his hands started changing. The originally green-like jade color suddenly changed to a dark green color. At the same time, the vines also became thicker and green wide leaves started growing on it.

Xiong Li’s face changed, he sensed the green vine’s coiling strength had increased by more than ten times.

What made him more apprehensive was that those green vines which he had broken away from started growing and reconnected with the broken areas.

Grand Bear Gu!

He sensed the situation going bad and immediately used the Grand Bear Gu in his aperture.

Immediately, his hair started stiffening up like steel needles. The muscles on his whole body enlarged and he seemed to have become much taller and bulkier.

Strength of two bears!

The green vines gave creaking noises but it was still able to resist this terrifying strength, firmly confining Xiong Li.

Xiong Li’s face became very red, and he brought out all his strength to break the green vines. But finally, he was only able to snap one green vine and couldn’t continue anymore.

"I lost." He released the supporting strength of Grand Bear Gu and said while gasping.

"You let me win." Qing Shu cupped his hands and retrieved the green vines.

"Senior Qing Shu, you are the best." Gu Yue Clan’s Gu Masters were jubilant.

"Senior Qing Shu really deserves his name. Big brother can’t compare to him at all." Fang Zheng stood beside Qing Shu and looked at the latter with reverence.

Xiong Li’s gaze was complicated as he looked at Gu Yue Qing Shu. He had progressed and obtained Brown Bear Innate Strength Gu, but Qing Shu had also progressed. Although he didn’t know what the latter used, but this was his true rival. As for that Fang Yuan, he was only a newbie and was nothing to worry about.

"It really is the Wood Charm Gu," Fang Yuan thought as he observed Qing Shu from afar.

Xiong Li hadn’t discovered anything when facing Gu Yue Qing Shu. Two emerald-green leaves had grown on Gu Yue Qing Shu’s hair.

This was the sign of using the Wood Charm Gu.

The so-called Wood Charm was a tree spirit.

Using the Wood Charm Gu could let one battle as a tree spirit.

The tree spirit was an unusual creature. It could directly absorb the natural essence in the air and use it.

Gu Masters couldn’t do this, they could only use the primeval essence in their aperture.

When one used the Wood Charm gu, they could become an embodiment of a Wood Charm tree spirit and would be able to directly absorb the natural essence in the air and replenish their primeval essence. It was the same as absorbing the primeval essence from primeval stones.

When normal Gu Masters battle, they are unable to divide their mind and absorb primeval essence from primeval stones while fighting.

But as an embodiment of the tree spirit, the absorption of natural essence is an instinct and does not need one to divide their minds. This meant that the Gu Masters who used Wood Charm Gu were experts in war of attrition. Although one couldn’t say that they could use the natural essence endlessly, they could fight for as much as three times longer because of the continuous replenishment.

And once one became an embodiment of the tree spirit, Gu worms like Green Vine Gu and Pine Needle Gu would also have their strength amplified.

Fang Yuan instantly connected the dots, "Wood Charm Gu’s fusion advancement can be said to be one of the most extravagant advancement routes. It is a Rank three Gu and needs to fuse with a hundred-years Lifespan Gu to advance to a Rank four hundred-years Wood Charm gu. The hundred-years Wood Charm Gu needs to fuse with a thousand years Lifespan Gu to advance into a Rank five thousand-years Wood Charm gu. Everyone knows this fusion route, but Gu Masters rarely use this recipe. The reason is due to the preciousness of the Lifespan Gu. When the Gu Masters finds Lifespan Gu, they will usually use it directly to increase their own lifespan."

In this world, a human could live for at most a hundred years if they didn’t encounter any accidents or illnesses. A hundred years was the lifespan limit of the humans.

But a Lifespan Gu can increase lifespan.

A hundred years Lifespan Gu can increase the lifespan of a person by a hundred years and a thousand years Lifespan Gu could increase it by a thousand.

Lifespan Gu were extremely rare and everyone sought after them.

Fang Yuan had lived for five hundred years in his previous life because he used five hundred-year Lifespan Gu in his previous life, thus adding five hundred years to his lifespan — his one hundred years lifespan had turned to six hundred years. But in the end halfway through, he was attacked by the righteous factions and had no choice but to self-detonate and die.

Lifespan Gu represented ‘long life’ and could let people live for long, but it didn’t mean ‘undying’.

"The Wood Charm Gu is powerful but has its weakness; Gu Masters can’t use it for a long period. If they use it for too long, the Wood Charm Gu’s strength will affect their body and will transform their body to that of wood, finally changing the body into a wooden corpse. In my previous life, Gu Yue Qing Shu had died in this way."

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed.

Ordinarily, powerful Gu worms had huge side effects and needed to be used with other Gu worms. Otherwise, there would be harmful influences on the Gu Masters’ body.

Xiong Jiang’s Roaming Zombie Gu was best used with the Bloodline gu. If not, the blood in his body would decrease when used for too long and he would change into a true zombie.

The Xiong Li group returned to their camp. They first won against Bai Bing Yi, then met defeat against Qing Shu. Even so, the group still received a lot of applause and praises.

"Mo Yan, I challenge you."

"Come, Xiong Jiao Man, I will fight you!"

After the Xiong Li group, the whole scene suddenly became noisy. Many Gu Masters continuously came out and challenged the powerful opponents in their minds, demonstrating their bravery.

The Alliance slope turned chaotic, and all kinds of brilliant and varied Gu battles were occurring.

The true Gu battle had started.

(1) Not entirely sure how to fit this into the passage, it is an idiom, but it just means he does whatever he wants/to persist in whatever he is doing no matter what others say.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

The next chapter, Chapter 127 is so long, it has (Long chapter) in the chapter name. My god.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Only until evening did the Gu tournament come to an end.

On the alliance slope, the Gu Masters from all three clans were no longer as divided as earlier. Gu Masters plastered the slope and only three densely packed groups could be vaguely seen remaining.

Gu battle sparring was both a form of venting and also compromise.

In this world where the greatest value is strength, only with strength comes respect, and that forms the basis for cooperation.

After Xiong Li challenged Fang Yuan, no one else came to look for him.

Fang Yuan was only a newbie and did not have much interactions with the other two clan’s Gu Masters, not to mention any animosity. As for his own clansmen, they would not challenge someone from their own clan in this situation.

Especially after Fang Yuan admitting defeat, it caused other Gu Masters to lose interest in him. Towards this ‘lazy’, ‘cowardly’ opponent, what value is there in winning?

Not wanting to be trampled on, there are two ways. One is to become strong, strong until no one dares to step on you. Another is to turn into dog shit, something no one would want to step on.

Fang Yuan did not care about dog shit, or the reputation of the strong. He always acted unscrupulous, and only cared about the results. Without anyone challenging him, it made his life easier.

The surrounding people’s contempt and disdain , he treated it like air. If he could not endure even these gazes, what right did he have to pursue the demonic way?

The alliance gathering ended successfully, and Gu Yue clan, Bai clan, and Xiong clan all reached an agreement.

First, declaring the rules. The three clans will temporarily put aside their grudges and resist the wolf tide together. In times of danger, they will assist each other. At the same time, internal killing is prohibited, and an investigating battle group will be set up. Once they find any murders, the murderer will first be chased out of the clan, then the three clans will bring judgement together, making them pay with their lives. If the murderer escapes outside, their families’ lives will be forfeited.

Even if the Gu Master dies, Gu worms retrieved from their corpses have to be given to the clan, and if it is used secretly, they will be charged with murder. After the Gu worm is submitted, they can exchange it for merit points.

Secondly, setting up the battle merit board. With a small group as a unit, every moment will be showing the battle achievements of the groups from all three clans and their rankings. A lightning wolf’s eyeball is exchanged for ten merit points. Merit points can be used to exchange for Gu worms, primeval stones, and other resources.

The appearance of the battle merit board naturally inspired the hot bloodedness of the Gu Masters.

The result of the Gu battle sparring could not explain the true strength of both parties in actual combat. For example in the case of Xiong Jiang and Bai Bing Yi, other than the Water Drill Gu, Bai Bing Yi naturally had other attacking methods, but Xiong Jiang’s Shadow Bond Gu only had an effective range of ten meters.

Furthermore, the results of any battle are swayed by many external factors.

Gu battle sparring lacked a convincing element, which the battle merit board can provide as a fairer method of competition.

The Gu Masters from the three clans wasted no time in hunting lightning wolves, fighting for a better ranking on the battle merit board.

This was not just for one’s own glory, but also for the reputation of the clan.

Especially the top three positions in the merit board, it showed intense competition. Almost every day, the top three would have some sort of change.

Very quickly, a month passed.

Winter left and spring came, causing all living beings to grow once more.

After a battle.

Fang Yuan stepped on the remaining snow, regulating his breathing as well as observing the battlefield around him.

On the battlefield, there were over ten lightning wolves, all dead. Wolf blood and minced corpse could be seen everywhere, and the air emanated a smell of thick blood.

Howl......

At this point, wolf cries could be heard from a distance not too far away.

Fang Yuan’s expression changed slightly. With his experience, he knew that a pack of wolves were heading this way rapidly.

If it was any other Gu Master, after an intense battle, without enough primeval essence in their aperture, they might have thoughts of retreating. But Fang Yuan did not care about this; he squatted down and began to gather the eyeballs from the wolf corpses.

His movements were fluid and highly efficient, but even so, after he was done extracting, he was already half-surrounded by the wolf pack.

This was a mid-sized wolf pack with around one hundred crippled wolves, their greenish wolf eyes showing a ruthless expression as they stared at Fang Yuan firmly.

Fang Yuan kept the wolf eyes well before standing up with a smile. Next, his body flickered like water ripples, and he vanished on the spot.

The wolf pack that had come to assault him were instantly riled up, and some of the crippled wolves stood in their tracks, showing a hesitant feeling.

After all they were wild beasts. Seeing such a magical scene, it was hard to comprehend.

"But, this is also because the lightning wolf king uses its wolf eyes to observe, and not its nose. Lightning wolves are fantastical creatures of this world; their vision is sharp like an eagle, but their sense of smell is no better from humans. My Stealth Scales Gu counters these lightning wolves perfectly, but it cannot hide from a dog’s nose." Fang Yuan was clear in his heart.

Stealth Scales Gu was successfully refined by him before the Gu battle tournament. It was like a fossilised carp, grey throughout, lying in Fang Yuan’s primeval sea, letting the liquid essence flow around its very realistic fish scales.

The Fish Scale Gu that Fang Yuan lacked was naturally obtained by trading the Black Boar Gu with Qing Shu.

With this Stealth Scales Gu, Fang Yuan could retreat from under the lightning wolves’ nose.

In these few days, this situation had already occurred many times.

Normally, wolves or hounds had very sensitive noses. But lightning wolves were different – they were very fast, but without clear vision, they would knock into a tree or the mountain rocks.

But nature is fair, as when it bestowed the lightning wolves with its sharp vision, it also took away their sense of smell.

However, the lightning crown wolf was different.

Even with the Stealth Scales Gu, Fang Yuan could travel freely among the normal wolf tide, but in front of a myriad beast king like the lightning crown wolf, he had nowhere to hide.

That is because the lightning crown wolf’s eyes had the Lightning Eye Gu residing in it – this Gu allowed the ability to see through all sorts of cloaking.

Other than the Lightning Eye Gu, there are actually also many other Gu worms that can detect the stealthed Fang Yuan.

For example, the Snake Communication Gu, it can detect heat. The Beast Language Gu can allow a Gu Master and wild beasts to converse and obtain information. The clairaudience Gu can allow a Gu Master’s hearing to be extremely sensitive.

Thus, even with the Stealth Scales Gu, it did not mean Fang Yuan was completely safe, but it was at most a good life-saving trump card.

When he returned to the village, it was still afternoon.

The day in spring was bright and beautiful, and there were many people passing in and out of the village door. What was different from previous years was that people on the road were mostly Gu Masters, while there were very little mortals.

Under the influence of the wolf tide, the wilderness was not safe. Hunters did not dare to hunt in the mountains, and farms were almost abandoned.

On the streets, Gu Masters were high in morale, each returning with blood traces all over, or enthusiastically leaving.

They were either talking about the battle merit board’s ranking, or discussing their experiences in killing the lightning wolves. Some were talking about the well-performing Gu Masters from the other villages.

Fang Yuan was among the crowd that walked into the village, and he went to the village square in front of the family head pavillion.

The square already had a stage; the merit points were exchanged here.

A large amount of Gu Masters gathered here, and Rank one Gu Masters were doing administrative work. Some Rank two Gu Masters squeezed around, using the bloodstained wolf eyes to exchange for merit points.

There was also a portion of them that were using their merit points to exchange for primeval stones, Gu worms or food ingredients, etc.

In the middle of the village square, a large banner was erected, and on it there was the written language of this world; it was constantly changing.

This is the battle merit board, and on it there are over a dozen Swimword Gu.

Rank one Swimword Gu, after being manipulated by Rank one support Gu Masters, can freely convert the contents of the writings on the banner.

"Hmph, why is the #1 still the Bai clan’s Bai Bing Yi’s group?" Some stared at the battle merit board, frowning.

"Let me see, Bai Bing Yi is #1, our clan’s Qing Shu group is #2, and Xiong Li group is #3, my group is the 137th." A Gu Master counted.

This time, someone suddenly said, "It changed, it changed! Qing Shu group is now #1. They pushed Bai clan’s Bai Bing Yi to #2!"

On the battle merit board, the symbol showing the second ranking Qing Shu group suddenly moved, crawling its way upwards and pulling the Bai Bing Yi group down with its "hands", ascending the position of number one itself, even using its "leg" to trample around.

Such a human reaction, it was naturally due to the Gu Master manipulating the Swimword Gu.

Seeing this interesting change, the Gu Masters in the village square laughed heartily, pointing a thumbs up towards Qing Shu’s group, praising nonstop. The Rank one Gu Master controlling the Swimword Gu had a red face as he showed an expression of excitement.

"Lord Qing Shu, you are indeed our number one Rank two Gu Master!"

"Good job, Lord Qing Shu."

Gu Yue Qing Shu walked among the crowd, smiling faintly. Gu Yue Fang Zheng who was behind him clenched both fists, following closely with an excited expression on his face.

The praises from all over the square filled the young man’s strong materialistic desire. This made Fang Zheng feel like he was walking on a bright path, unknowingly increasing his recognition towards the clan.

"Big brother..." He saw Fang Yuan standing among the crowd, observing with his arms folded.

"Big brother, you are still alone, all by yourself. No wonder you have been at the bottom of the ranking every since the start. Only by removing your prejudice and fusing into the masses can you feel the warmth and happiness of the clan," Fang Zheng sighed, feeling that Fang Yuan was somewhat pitiful and pathetic.

People who were like Fang Yuan, always fighting alone without any companions, could not feel any kinship from the clan or friendship forged from fighting together with your teammates.

Facing everything alone is not only dangerous, but mundane.

A person living without friendship, love or kinship, what is the meaning of being alive?

Fang Yuan stood among the crowd, staring at the tall merit board. Without doubt, the last position on the ranking was written in large letters —"Fang Yuan Group".

Other Gu Masters upon seeing this, felt extremely shameful, but Fang Yuan’s gaze was calm, not minding it one bit.

After being promoted to group leader, he had never recruited any members. He was a loner group leader, the most special group in the entire Qing Mao mountain’s three clans.

With only him alone, of course his daily hunting results could not compare to other groups. Of course, with Fang Yuan’s current abilities, if he tried hard he would definitely not be last place.

But this was pointless to Fang Yuan.

He did not need much merit points, living resources or Gu worm’s food, he had stock for everything. He had planned to exchange for a Fish Scales Gu earlier, but now he no longer needed to.

Right now he was hunting lightning wolves daily just to put on a show to fulfil the quota, and secondly accumulate some merit points to exchange for moon orchid petals.

After all, his Moonglow Gu needed this food.

Half a month soon passed, and the spring atmosphere intensified.

Trees started to grow leaves, and wildflowers on the roadside bloomed.

Under the warm spring winds, Gu Masters sang in battle, and the battle situation was getting better and better.

Fang Yuan walked on the pavement, seeing everyone’s happy faces, their exchanges of praise like courageous acts and the likes.

Of course, there were also some Gu Masters who were in deep worry, showing an unhappy expression. These Gu Masters were mostly the elderly, as with their rich life experiences, they knew that the real wolf tide was coming in summer and autumn.

Fang Yuan realized in his heart.

"What caused this current situation is due to the three-clan alliance, thus people have reduced their caution of each other, and this enabled Gu Masters to be more invested in resisting the wolf tide. Secondly, the lightning wolves exterminated were only the crippled wolves. Thirdly, with the coming of spring, many wolves are busy mating. When summer comes, the truly energetic and healthy wolves would attack from all directions, causing great damage and deaths to the three clans."

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with cold light.

In this year’s wolf tide, the intensity was like never before, it reached a danger level that was unforeseen. Even the clan higher-ups greatly underestimated the severity of this wolf tide.

In his memory, most of the Gu Masters died, and the trump cards of the three clans were nearly fully expended.

Fang Yuan had never thought of warning the higher-ups. One is that even if he did, they might not listen to his suggestion, and even emphasize on where he got the information, which he is unable to explain. Secondly, there was no point in telling them, it is a fundamental difference in strength. Thirdly, and the most crucial reason, warning the clan did not fit his biggest interest!

I would rather let the world down, than be let down by the world!!!

What kinship, friendship, love - these are but an ornament in life, how can they compare to a man’s great ambition?

On Earth, Xiang Yu wanted to cook Liu Bang’s father, and the Han dynasty ancestor Liu Bang even laughed and said, "Go ahead, don’t forget to give me a piece of meat."

Tang Dynasty Li Shi Ming killing his brothers, Cao Cao’s army having no rations and cooking people to turn them into dried meat as food. Liu Bei borrowing Jing Zhou but never returning.

The higher-ups praised the values and morals, but those are just tools to maintain their rule.

If one is restrained by these, how can they achieve anything?

Those who step into upper society, who does not have bloodstained hands, stepping on corpses along the way? A capitalist’s initial startup fund, the process is always bloody. Any politician’s hands are dirty, and the so-called philanthropists are merely using money to gain recognition in society.

It is just that the successful are apt in hiding their past acts, and those who believe the stories of the successors are truly fools.

"These fools are everywhere, restrained by emotions and morals, they deserve to be stupidly manipulated by rules. What’s sadder is that when they see others not being restrained, they would jump out and criticise, trying to impart these morals to the people, not allowing others to have more freedom than them. In this process, they would even enjoy this ridiculous moral superiority and bliss."

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan looked at the Gu Masters walking past him.

These people, they had a body full of abilities, and some even had higher cultivation than him, but for what?

They are just pawns, merely restrained dogs.

What truly stalls a person’s success is not talent, but mindset.

Any organisation, once a person is born, would impart their morals and rules, constantly brainwashing. Those that want to surpass humanity’s achievements have to break this restraint on their mindset. Sadly, most people are trapped by this their entire lives, using this to move forward with motivation and even use their chained collar as a symbol of pride.

Thinking so, Fang Yuan laughed coldly.

Walking out of the village door, he retracted his thoughts.

There was something important today, he was preparing to enter the rock crack’s secret cave again!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

And that’s all that I was able to do so far... I’ll update again when I can! Hmm... thanks for the birthday wishes and support everyone :>

It was this novel’s birthday on the 15th too, one day before mine! All hail Fang Yuan \o/

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

A faint red glow pervaded the stone forest, the petrified growths sprouting out from the ceiling towards the ground like upside-down trees. It was a sight to see.

"It has been over a month since I last came here." Fang Yuan thought helplessly.

After the three clans united, they had commenced a crusade to continuously eliminate the surrounding wolf packs. Because the of the constant traffic for the war effort, Gu Masters made up an almost ever-present flow moving nearby the stone crack cave. In such a situation, even if Fang Yuan possessed Stealth Scales Gu, there was a danger of exposing himself.

Despite the risk, Fang Yuan was very careful in the way he did things. Five hundred years worth of life experience had nurtured enough patience in him; he kept reign over his desires and made sure not to make movements around the stone cave during this period.

When spring came, the crippled wolves had been successfully rooted out and there were few Gu Masters left roaming around. Only then was he willing and Fang Yuan circled around the village before using the Stealth Scales Gu to come back.

A month had passed by, allowing some stone monkey groups to repopulate and they had moved to the stone pillars he had cleared before.

Fortunately, the number were quite few.

Fang Yuan spent some time killing the monkey groups and advancing towards the central area of the stone forest.

Under the shadow of the huge stone pillar, an obvious artificial cave entrance appeared before his eyes.

Some crude rock stairs extended downwards from the cave mouth into the darkness.

Fang Yuan used the White Jade Gu to cover his whole body with a layer of faint jade light and carefully descended down the stairs.

His left hand held a fire torch, whereas bright moonlight shone on his right palm – The Moonglow Gu was already activated.

It was completely dark underground and even the fire torch could only illuminate five steps ahead.

An illumination-type Gu would be a lot helpful in such situations. Unfortunately Fang Yuan was not so affluent.

Step by step, he walked on for a long while before reaching the end of the stairs.

A crude artificial stone door was in front of him.

"Golden Centipede’s cave is precarious, Earth Communication is the way to avoid the disaster." Fang Yuan lifted his fire torch which illuminated some characters carved on the stone door.

Earth communication......

Golden Centipede.....

Fang Yuan’s eyes gleamed, comprehending the meaning.

"If this is what I think it is..." He crouched down and touched the ground; the soil was wet.

"There’s something." He was happy. He began to dig the soil and indeed, he found an Earth Treasury Flower.

He carefully uncovered the petals and took out a Gu worm from the heart of the flower.

This was a special Gu.

It resembled a human ear, but much smaller. It was yellowish-brown, and looked shrivelled and dull.

He felt it in his palm; it was shrivelled like marinated radish and carried some warmth. Dozens of roots like the ginseng roots grew out from its sides.

This was a Rank two grass Gu – Earth Communication Ear Grass.

Looking at the Earth Communication Ear Grass, Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed.

This Earth Communication Ear Grass’s usage was to scout. It had appeared in a great time and was perfect for Fang Yuan.

Earth Communication Ear Grass had a great advantage; it could scout up to three hundred paces. This range was among the best of Rank two investigative Gu worms.

It was easy to feed too. Its food was the ginseng roots.

There were many forested mountains in the Southern Border. There were far more ginsengs here than in Earth. Hunter families would occasionally pick some when they went to hunt in the mountains.

Especially when ginseng is easy to store; as long as it is completely dried and sealed up properly, it could be kept for a long time under room temperature.

Moon orchid petals wilted in a few days, but ginseng could be stored for a long time.

"Gu worms need to be nurtured, used and refined. These three aspects are broad and has many mysteries within them. Earth Communication Ear Grass is easy to nurture, but using it is rather troublesome," Fang Yuan pondered. He held the Earth Communication Ear Grass and poured primeval essence, instantly refining it.

Earth Communication Ear Grass was very outstanding and could compare with many Rank three investigative Gu worms. However, heaven was fair, and using the Earth Communication Ear Grass didn’t end with just refining, it still needed a certain price.

Just like the Zombie Gu and Wood Charm Gu which needed to be used with other Gu worms,, there was a consequence. If used for a long time, the Gu Master’s body would slowly corrode and turn into a true zombie or tree man.

"Many Gu worms can’t be used by merely refining them, they still need some special prerequisites. This Earth Communication Flesh Ear Gu is also the same. By using it to ascertain the situation, I can truly move about freely in the wolf tide and even achieve some of my goals during this wolf tide....."

Fang Yuan pondered for a while and decided to use this Earth Communication Flesh Ear Gu.

As the gains would be greater than losses, even if he had to pay the price, it was nothing for the sake of his future.

"No matter which world, how could one gain anything without paying a price?" Fang Yuan coldly smiled and put the Earth Communication Ear Grass in his aperture.

He gazed at the stone door deeply then turned around and left.

If he didn’t guess wrong, there would be a great danger in the other side of the stone door. Only by using the Earth Communication Ear Grass, could he be able to avoid it.

Fang Yuan exited the secret cave and leisurely circled the village; after making several rounds, hunting several lone wolves and taking their eyeballs, he returned.

He was still the last in the battle merit board. As he walked through the street, the Gu Masters who recognized him laughed at him or threw a contemptuous look.

Fang Yuan didn’t care and still went his own way.

After several days, he used small battle merits to exchange for ginseng roots, properly feeding the Earth Communication Ear Grass and recovering its vitality.

Most of the clan’s attention was on the wolf tide, no one paid attention to Fang Yuan. If it was before, Uncle and Aunt might have brought him some troubles, but they had made no more movements ever since Fang Yuan sold the family assets to them.

Difficult to do openly, easy to do secretly.

Soon, Fang Yuan smoothly completed some preparations in the dark.

Tonight, the moon was bright and stars were few.

The moon hung high above like a jade plate and the gentle darkness of the night was like a yarn, covering Qing Mao mountain.

From time to time, wolf howls could be faintly heard from afar.

Fang Yuan securely closed the door and windows. He stood inside his rented room, his whole body naked. There was a table in front of him and a basin filled with warm water was laid on it. Beside the washbasin was a white towel and a sharp dagger on top.

Even the floor he was standing on was covered with a layer of thick cloth.

Strands of moonlight passed through the cracks in the windows and shone upon the table.

Fang Yuan’s expression was indifferent as he grabbed the dagger. The dagger was sharp and had a cold shine to it. It could even be used as a mirror.

Under the faint light, the young man’s indifferent face was reflected on the dagger.

Right now, Fang Yuan couldn’t help but think of a martial arts skill book from Earth called the .

The first sentence in the first page of was ‘Castrate yourself to train this skill."

One needed to give up or pay something if they wanted to receive quick strength!

So what if you needed to castrate yourself?

If you don’t have such ruthless decisiveness and aren’t willing to let go, how could you accomplish your ambitions and become a lord ruling over everything?

Wanting to receive without paying anything was only fairytales to deceive children.

Back to Fang Yuan’s current state, to use this Earth Communication Ear Grass, the price he needed to pay couldn’t amount to anything.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan coldly smiled.

He used his fingers to lightly caress the cold blade and softly hummed—

Moon like the frost-filled night, the dagger shines with a cold light.

If not for the harshness of the winter, how could we look forward to spring!

He quickly moved his hand.

The hand rose and the dagger fell; blood burst out.

A piece of flesh fell on the table—

Fang Yuan had cut apart his whole right ear and blood was spurting out of it.

He first felt a little cool before an intense burst of pain suddenly attacked him.

He gritted his teeth and sucked in breath through his teeth. He resisted the pain and called out Earth Communication Ear Grass from his aperture.

He had nurtured this Earth Communication Ear Grass back to its full vitality. It was now completely different from how it looked back when he just got it.

Back when he had taken it out of the Earth Treasury Flower, it was shrivelled and dull. Now, it was plump and warm; fat and big and had grown up to an adult palm size.

It was highly elastic and resembled the Buddha’s drooping ear of Earth.

Fang Yuan pressed the Earth Communication Flesh Ear Gu on his wound at the right side of his head and immediately poured red steel primeval essence towards it.

The Earth Communication Flesh Ear Gu’s roots immediately came to life and rapidly began to grow, taking root in Fang Yuan’s wound.

Another burst of pain came!

Fang Yuan felt like dozens of earthworms were drilling towards his brain from his wound.

This feeling was painful and also nauseating.

Generally speaking, Gu Masters would use some Gu worms to numb their nerves in this stage. But Fang Yuan wasn’t in that situation and could only rely on his iron willpower to forcefully endure it.

In the end, his body was that of a youth’s, and Fang Yuan who endured this pain couldn’t help but feel his body starting to sway.

More and more roots extended, entered his wound. Slowly, the Earth Communication Ear Grass glued together with the bloody wound, becoming Fang Yuan’s new right ear.

Finally, there was no more blood flowing out of the wound, there wasn’t even a scar.

However, Fang Yuan’s face was pale; the pain had only slightly decreased, it was still tormenting him.

Veins bulged out from his head and his heart thumped rapidly.

At this stage, Fang Yuan was already finished for the most part, but some time was still necessary for his body to adapt to the Earth Communication Ear Grass.

He picked up a mirror and looked at it under the faint moonlight.

He saw his pale face and frowning brows in the mirror. His right ear was bigger than his left by over two times and looked like a deformity.

Fang Yuan didn’t mind it; after looking at the mirror for a moment and seeing no problems, he felt satisfied.

He put the mirror down and picked up the towel. He dipped the towel in the warm water in the basin and wiped the bloodstains on his body.

He had no clothes on, so it was very easy to clean the bloodstains. Some blood had flowed down his foot but were absorbed by the cotton cloth spread on the floor.

Fang Yuan cleaned the bloodstains, then picked up his right ear from the table.

He coldly snorted, then used the Moonglow Gu, slicing his own right ear into meat paste and completely destroying it.

Fang Yuan held the basin filled with the watery blood and put it under the bed before throwing a piece of coal in it.

Only after doing all this did Fang Yuan lay down on the bed.

The pain had weakened for the most part but was still tormenting him.

Fang Yuan felt the pain in his head along with his heartbeat.

He did not know how much time had passed, but he finally fell into a deep sleep.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

You thought this novel was dead, but it was me, Sky!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

When Fang Yuan woke up, it was already noon of the second day.

His headache was gone, and the intense pain had vanished completely.

He touched his ear subconsciously, the sense of touch no different from before. It was as if the cutting of his ear never happened last night.

He climbed down from his bed, finding a mirror to look at himself.

In the mirror, a young man’s face was shown; he was not handsome, but his dark abyss-like iris, made him stand out from mortals, showing a special unique coolness and charisma.

The young man’s ears were the same as any others.

Last night, when he planted the Earth Communication Ear Grass, Fang Yuan’s right ear was plump and big, his ear drooping till it nearly reached his chin. But now it was completely normal from appearance, there was nothing different.

This is because his body and the Earth Communication Ear Grass had gotten used to each other.

Fang Yuan’s thought moved, and from his aperture a little red steel primeval essence flowed along his body, moving up towards his right ear.

At once, his hearing improved multiple times, and numerous footsteps could be heard.

Although he was on the second floor, he had a feeling of stepping on earth.

Fang Yuan paid attention and listened as his primeval essence continued to be used, and his hearing improved as well. In the mirror, roots started to grow out of his ear.

These roots were like the roots of a thousand year ginseng, extending from his ear towards the outside, constantly growing longer and moving towards the ground.

At the same time, his right ear had the notion of becoming fatter.

Fang Yuan stopped using the Earth Communication Ear Grass, and a second later, the roots growing out of his ears retracted, and his right ear became normal again.

Of course, his hearing also went back to its initial state.

"This way, I have a recon-type Gu." Fang Yuan wore his upper shirt, taking out a water basin from under his bed.

Last night, the bloody water had turned into blackish dirty water due to the charcoal tossed in. The bloody towel submerged within was the same as well. There was still some white in the red colour initially, but now it was all covered by the black soot. It was easy to make people assume that it was a cloth for wiping grease in the kitchen.

This basin when brought out, even if it was poured in front of someone, nobody would notice.

Summer was coming, and many clansmen were trying to clean the stove that they used in winter. Often they would end up with a basin of dirty water just like this.

While the iron was still hot, Fang Yuan entered the rock crack secret cave again.

This time, he did not enter empty-handed, but caught a deerling outside and tied its four limbs together. He used a steel contraption to bind its mouth, and then used the Stealth Scales Gu to hide his presence and brought it to the rock door.

He did not open the door in a hurry, but activated the Earth Communication Ear Grass.

The roots extended from his ear, and his hearing ability amplified.

Dongdongdong......

Firstly, he heard a light sound, the sound of slow heartbeat.

As the roots grew longer, the heartbeat became louder, and the sources of sound also increased.

Fang Yuan did not need to think to realize that these heartbeats were coming from the jade eye stone monkeys in the rock forest.

His shut his eye and he could imagine in his head, the owners of these sounds hiding in their caves, curling into a ball and sleeping.

But this was not what he wanted to find out.

He continued listening, his right ear already becoming slightly fat, the ginseng limbs growing out of his ear almost half a metre long, the roots having sentience. They extended to the rock door, and stabbed in rather shallowly.

At this moment, Fang Yuan felt that his hearing had a gigantic boost.

With him as center, he could hear the numerous noises of a three hundred step radius!

This was the Earth Communication Ear Grass’ true usage; what he did in the village was merely a test.

If the Earth Communication Ear Grass’ roots did not touch the ground, for a Rank two recon Gu, it was at a very average level. But once the roots are in the ground, its range would drastically improve.

This was understandable.

On earth, the theory was that sound travels at a speed related to its intermediary. Sound in the earth or in water, the speed of transmission was far greater than through air.

In ancient China, some soldiers in war when sleeping, would use a wooden quiver as their pillow. Once any cavalry attacks, the soldiers would hear the noise from the earth and be awakened in time. If they waited for sound to travel by air, they would not have time to react.

The roots grew into the rock door, and Fang Yuan could instantly hear the commotion behind it.

It was a very scrambled and confusing noise, but very frequent. Compared to this noise, the stone monkeys’ heartbeat was like the sound of drums.

If a newbie was using this Earth Communication Ear Grass for the first time, upon hearing this they would be thinking of all the possible guesses. But to Fang Yuan, this noise was expected, and he only listened for a while before frowning.

He pushed open the rock door.

The rock door was heavy, but with his strength of two boars now, it was easy.

The rock door opened, and a dark long tunnel appeared in front of him, stretching on at a straight line, towards the unknown.

Fang Yuan untied the deer he had caught, and tossed it into the tunnel.

The deerling was very smart. Sensing the dangers of the dark path ahead, it did not dare to move forward. Its huge eyes stared at Fang Yuan, showing fear and a begging intention.

Fang Yuan snorted and threw a moonblade.

This moonblade was controlled to be small, slicing vertically and inflicting a light wound on the deerling’s body.

The blood gushed out from its wound, and under the pain, the deerling’s fear towards Fang Yuan won and it rushed into the dark tunnel.

Darkness soon engulfed it.

Fang Yuan activated the Earth Communication Ear Grass again, this time the roots grew into the walls.

His hearing amplified, and first he heard the deerling’s footsteps, its heartbeat, and some other noise.

Golden Centipede’s cave is precarious, Earth Communication is the way to avoid the disaster......

Fang Yuan knew in his heart that these noises were the movement sound of a centipede.

In his ear, he could hear the deerling’s cries.

Evidently, it had gone into the cave and met the centipede.

Fang Yuan could see the image in his mind, the flustered deerling attacked by a centipede swarm, completely engulfing it. The deerling turns around in fright, and as it kicks its young hooves it felt the sense of death approaching and gave cries for help.

Uncountable number of centipedes climbed onto its body, and the deer laid on the ground, rolling and struggling.

Only after a while later, its heartbeat stopped.

The centipede army started to consume the deerling meat on its body.

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone as he heard a special sound.

This sound was like a buzzing, like the turning on of a chainsaw; it was full of arrogance, dominance, and wildness.

If a newbie heard this, they would be confused. But with Fang Yuan’s experience, he could guess the identity of this sound at once.

Rank three wild Gu worm — Chainsaw Golden Centipede!

This was the worm king in the centipedes, the true killer in the centipede cave.

Fang Yuan could completely imagine: A metre over in length, the breadth of two fists, coiling and slithering around the cave.

On the two sides of its body, there is a row of sharp saw-like teeth. As it moved, the chainsaws also moved around rapidly, just like an electric chainsaw.

The Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s arrival caused the centipede army to quieten.

It came ferociously, and wherever it went, the centipedes gave way, showing the half-body remains of the deerling.

It climbed to the deerling’s body, opening its mouth and consuming the deer blood and deer meat, and when it got to the bones, it coiled its body up and used the chainsaws to lightly grind against the bones, turning it into powder easily.

"Even the White Jade Gu’s defense cannot endure this Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s attack. It seems that the Flower Wine Monk’s intention is to make me use this Earth Communication Ear Grass and avoid the centipede. But I have the Spring Autumn Cicada, so to subdue this Chainsaw Golden Centipede, it is not impossible!" Fang Yuan had a thought in his head.

He was overjoyed at this prey.

The Chainsaw Golden Centipede was an outstanding Gu worm. If it was his to use, it would be another strong method of attack.

Only that, in order to subdue this Chainsaw Golden Centipede, even a Rank four Gu Master would have to expend a lot of effort.

Catching and killing are two things, the former is way harder than the latter.

Wild Gu worms were all crafty, and if the Chainsaw Golden Centipede saw something amiss, it would burrow into the ground and escape. If a Gu Master did not have a burrowing method, how can he give chase?

But Fang Yuan had the Spring Autumn Cicada, thus as long as he caught this Chainsaw Golden Centipede and released a hint of the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura, he would make the Gu worm cower and not dare to move.

Spring Autumn Cicada was a Rank six, its aura was extremely powerful against Rank one to Rank four Gu worms. But against Rank five, it had less effect, and towards other Rank six, there was no deterrence force in it.

This phenomenon is very interesting, but actually human society is just the same.

Towards someone outstanding, people would envy, worship and admire. But to someone who is only slightly better performing, they would dare to offend, and was mostly competition and jealousy.

"I am only at Rank two middle stage now, hence to subdue this Rank three Chainsaw Golden Centipede, it is possible but still too early." Fang Yuan assessed.

Rank two Gu Masters should use Rank two Gu worms which is the most appropriate, and most useful. Of course, Rank two Gu Masters can also own Rank three or even Rank four Gu worms.

But this was not common.

Firstly, the higher rank the Gu worm, the more expensive it is to feed it. Secondly, they become harder to use and require more cost when activating. Like a baby trying to wield a large hammer, if it forcefully tried to, it might pull a muscle due to the hammer’s weight and smash its own leg.

"The deerling has already alerted the entire colony, it would take ten days to half a month for these centipedes to calm down. After my testing, the thought in my heart has been affirmed, but I have no chance to strike yet. Why don’t I slow down and give it some time, this matter cannot be rushed."

Fang Yuan left his thoughts here and closed the rock door again. He then left using the Stealth Scales Gu.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Alright, let’s take this note to say, this mass release encompasses all those chapters I owed from last week and the week before the last, so 7+4=11, what a good deal eh? You get to binge read 11 chapters right after I got back from my trip! From 128 to 139 today! Wow!! Woah!!!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Dark clouds covered the sky, casting shadows over the entire Qing Mao mountain, seemingly signifying the coming of a storm.

On a remote mountain side, a dozen robust lightning wolves drew back the corners of their mouth and made low roars. They had surrounded Fang Yuan.

These wolves had a healthy body and were not like the crippled wolves.

Any other Rank two Gu Master would be desperate if they were caught in such besiegement, alone. However, the situation was quite opposite right now.

Fang Yuan was standing on the spot, his expression calm. Instead, these lightning wolves that were surrounding him were slightly nervous and afraid.

The battle had already continued for a while and the ground was soaked with blood. Several lightning wolves had collapsed on the ground, and the silence showed Fang Yuan’s battle accomplishments.

Kill!

Fang Yuan shouted inwardly, he took the initiative to attack even though he was the one surrounded. His foot pushed the ground as he pounced towards a lightning wolf on his left side.

This lightning wolf immediately shrunk back a small step in fear, but then its vicious personality was stimulated; it made a powerful jump and attacked Fang Yuan.

It opened its mouth in the air, revealing the many sharp wolf teeth that filled its mouth.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly; he didn’t evade but just swung his right arm.

Whoosh.

An eerie-blue moonblade flew horizontally through the air and struck the lightning wolf’s open mouth.

There was only a ripping noise, this unfortunate lightning wolf was instantly cut apart into two - from its mouth to tail - by this moonblade.

Boiling blood spurted out and poured like a rain of blood.

Fang Yuan’s whole body flashed with white jade light as he charged through the blood rain and rampaged within the wolf pack.

The lightning wolves reacted, they attacked him from all sides. They opened their mouths and tore at him but were blocked by the White Jade Gu’s defense, causing their own teeth to be broken.

Their claws were also of no use.

Fang Yuan punched and kicked, and the lightning wolves were sent flying under his enormous strength of two boars. Some lightning wolves had their skulls directly smashed and died on the spot. Fang Yuan grasped the upper hand in this battle.

But good things don’t last forever, for his primeval essence was being used quickly.

Fang Yuan’s aptitude was only C grade and his cultivation was at Rank two middle stage currently. The primeval essence in his aperture was not even fifty percent.

He looked at his declining primeval essence, but there were still several lightning wolves remaining. He had no choice but to use — Stealth Scales Gu!

His body gradually disappeared like the ripples in the water. In a blink of an eye, there was no more trace of him.

The lightning wolves were at their wits’ end, and they gave off furious howls and started searing the area but didn’t find anything.

Fang Yuan had not gone far. He gazed at the lightning wolves’ movements while absorbing primeval stones to recover his primeval essence and also maintaining the concealment of the Stealth Scales Gu at the same time.

Lightning wolves had extraordinary eyesight but their sense of smell were not sharp. The Stealth Scales Gu just so happened to be their bane.

When Fang Yuan’s primeval essence recovered to thirty percent, the lightning wolf pack finally retreated unwillingly.

Fang Yuan didn’t have a movement Gu worm, so if the lightning wolves really retreated, he would definitely not be able to catch up to them with his speed. Thus, he removed the concealment of the Stealth Scales Gu and became visible.

Hooooowl!

The lightning wolves saw Fang Yuan and as if he had killed their fathers, they rushed at him.

Fang Yuan sneered. He waited till the lightning wolves were in front of him, then he suddenly struck with his right hand.

His right fist was covered with a layer of faint white jade light which was extremely hard. The punch ferociously struck a lightning wolf’s lower back.

Crack. A crisp sound was heard immediately and this unlucky lightning wolf was sent flying by Fang Yuan, its lower back fractured.

It fell on the ground and crazily struggled while letting out miserable howls, but it could no longer get up.

Fang Yuan had recovered sufficient primeval essence and with his formidable fighting strength, he killed four more lightning wolves in a few moments.

The remaining several lightning wolves lost their fighting spirit and looked at Fang Yuan with fear. They whimpered and then tucked their tails and escaped.

Fang Yuan didn’t chase after them.

He couldn’t compare to these lightning wolves in speed; chasing was pointless.

The ground was filled with wolf corpses and they were all Fang Yuan’s spoils of war. But Fang Yuan was cautious, he didn’t hurry to take out the lightning wolves’ eyeballs.

Earth Communication Ear Grass!

He got down on his hands, his right ear close to the earth. Roots grew out from the ear and pierced the soil.

His hearing strength amplified instantly; he could scout anything within a three hundred step radius.

Many sounds entered his ear, but there were no sounds of wolf packs or the sounds of other Gu Masters moving about.

"It is safe for the moment." Fang Yuan let out a breath of relief. He took out a dagger and began to dig out the eyeballs of the lightning wolves.

He only handed over a small part of these eyeballs and hid the rest.

If he handed all of them, it would no doubt attract suspicions and even result to secret investigations. Fang Yuan wanted to prevent such inconveniences as much as possible.

Fang Yuan immediately left after digging out all the eyeballs of these lightning wolves.

When he had killed two more wolf packs like this, the sky was already covered with thick dark clouds. Strong wind blew, blowing through the pine forests, creating a green wave in the mountain along with the rustling of the leaves.

Hoooowllll...

Faint howls of large numbers of lightning wolves echoed within the wind.

Fang Yuan’s expression slightly paled; according to his previous life’s memories, today was the day the wolf tide truly broke out.

He used the Earth Communication Ear Grass again but didn’t hear the rapid advancement of the lightning wolves.

He wasn’t surprised, but instead became calm.

This meant that there was at least over a three hundred step gap away between him and the lightning wolves. This distance along with his own speed and the knowledge of the topography, sufficed to let him reach the village safely.

"These lightning wolves are cunning, choosing to attack in such weather. The noise from the strong wind and the sounds from the pine forest will mask their movements to a great degree," Fang Yuan sighed inwardly, then ran towards the village with his greatest speed.

After running for hundreds of meters, he bumped into a five person Gu Master group.

"Hey, you are Gu Yue Fang Yuan!" A young Gu Master in the group raised his eyebrows when he saw Fang Yuan and greeted him in an odd way.

This Gu Master was Gu Yue Peng, Fang Yuan’s classmate. During the academy period, he had suffered from Fang Yuan’s bullying and extortion.

Fang Yuan indifferently glanced at him before brushing past him without pausing, not giving him a chance to speak again.

"Bastard!" Gu Yue Peng was stunned, then a stifled feeling rose up in his heart and his speed slowed down.

He didn’t get the chance to ridicule Fang Yuan.

"Little Peng. Don’t slow down. We need to hunt at least fifty lightning wolves today to preserve our rank in the battle merit board!" The group leader spoke.

Gu Yue Peng immediately restrained his furious expression and quickly followed the group members.

"My group is ranked seventy-five in the battle merit board. That Fang Yuan is ranked at beyond two hundred. This difference is like that of heaven and earth! I am also quite fortunate to have such a caring senior as the group leader. From the start of the wolf tide till now, I have exchanged part of the battle merits to get a Gu worm. My future is bright, how could Fang Yuan compare to me?"

Gu Yue Peng calmed down a lot when he thought of this, even feeling blessed at that.

"In this world, what can one accomplish by fighting alone? Many hands make light work, unity is the greater power. It is still the clansmen that are reliable! Borrowing the clan’s strength, we newbies can safely grow up. That Fang Yuan is an idiot, he really thinks he is a hero. He resolved the problem of the Rank Five River Swallowing Toad only by luck and he is putting on airs. Although he has become a group leader, he hasn’t recruited any group members, serves him right to be ranked last! Haha. Anyway, with his eccentric personality, how will he recruit any group members?"

Gu Yue Peng’s movement became more relaxed.

Strangely, all along the way, they hadn’t run into any wolf packs.

Gu Yue Peng raised his head to look at the sky, it was afternoon but the sky was already dusky as if it was evening.

The wind blew, and the dark clouds densely covered the sky and moved rapidly, brewing thunder and rainstorm.

However, Gu Yue Peng was not afraid, a mocking smile appearing on his mouth as he thought, "Hahaha, so Fang Yuan was hurriedly rushing back because he was worried of this rainstorm? What a coward, what is there to be afraid of a rainstorm?"

Right at this time, the group leader’s face suddenly paled, he opened his mouth and sucked in a deep breath.

"Sir group leader, what happened?" Other four members naturally noticed this.

In this Gu Master group, the group leader was in charge of scouting. Although he was also a Rank two Gu Master, his scouting Gu worm didn’t have as great a radius as Fang Yuan’s Earth Communication Ear Grass.

His face was deathly white right now and he had no wish to give detailed explanation.

"Run, quick!" He shouted with terror and amidst other group members’ astonished gazes, he turned around and ran.

"Follow the group leader!!" Other group members were not foolish, they quickly reacted and broke into a run.

Hoooowllll——!

Wolf howls came from behind them continuously. From these noises, they knew there was more than a thousand lightning wolves!

Everyone in the group was pale, they breathed heavily and used all their strength to run.

"Wait for me!" Gu Yue Peng sprinted with all he had but was still the last; he lost his composure and started screaming for help.

He felt the breathing sounds of the lightning wolves behind his back.

But what made him despair was the group leader who normally showed great consideration to him, didn’t even turn his head back. The teammates who used to pat their chests and speak of brotherhood and sentiments ignored his shouts.

Houuu!

Gu Yue Peng suddenly heard a wolf howl right next to him.

In the next moment, he felt an enormous force pressed on his back and knocking him down.

He tumbled on the ground; the fall had made him dizzy.

He subconsciously turned around to try to resist.

Boom!

A lightning snake flashed through the air.

In the darkness, a bold lightning wolf’s figure immediately became visible.

Its body was twice the size of a normal lightning wolf, the hair in its body erect. It opened its mouth and revealed its silver white sharp fangs.

Gu Yue Peng’s pupils shrank to a needle size, a thought echoing within his mind —"Hundred beast king!"

The wolf pack’s scale in the wolf nest was enormous; not only were there three myriad beast king level thunder crown wolves, there were also hundred beast king level bold lightning wolves and thousand beast king level frenzy lightning wolves.

In the very next second, the bold lightning wolf opened its mouth and with a crack sound, Gu Yue Peng’s whole head was gnawed off.

Fresh blood and brain matter splashed. The bold lightning wolf lowered its head and began to swallow the blood from Gu Yue Peng’s neck and gnawed at his fatty meat.

Countless lightning wolves came from behind it and rushed ahead.

Rumbling sounds continued incessantly.

Pitter-patter, heavy rain also started pouring.

The true wolf tide had begun!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Such a dark chapter.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The rain poured heavily from above, and snake-like lightning danced in the sky randomly. This sustained for the entire night.

Fang Yuan lay on his bed, hearing the shouting of Gu Masters outside his house and the sound of their footsteps in the rain.

He squinted his eyes, visions of his past life flashing in his head again.

In his previous life when the wolf tide attacked, he was still a Rank one Gu Master, and being part of the support group, he hid within the village and managed to escape the disastrous fate.

But this time, he was already a Rank two middle stage, and he had the Four Flavor Liquor worm, currently moving towards upper stage. Thus, he had to be like other Gu Masters, resisting the wolf tide in such a dark night.

"The rain is pouring outside, and they still have to fight the large amount of lightning wolves in this poor vision, this is truly torture," Fang Yuan snorted in his heart.

He did not sleep in the rented apartment, but instead he was at the inn.

If Fang Yuan was at the rented house, he would definitely be forced to participate.

"The clan higher-ups have definitely underestimated this wolf tide’s severity, the correct method would be to hide in the village and defend to the end. Unfortunately, they are blinded by past experiences..." Fang Yuan flipped around in his bed while thinking about this.

Outside the window, the rain splattered all over the place, it was definitely a storm.

Sounds of thunder constantly entered his ears.

On the streets, Gu Masters hurriedly moved about, the sounds of their footsteps and furious bellows never having a pause.

At once, the cries of the wolves reached the village.

This was destined to be a sleepless night.

Whether it was the Gu Masters who were risking their lives fighting, or the mortals hiding in the village shivering, or even Fang Yuan. After sleeping until the midnight hour, they naturally awoke.

He did not get up, but opened his eyes in the darkness while lying on his bed.

The sounds outside the window entered his ears. People’s life and death battles, he could imagine, along with the thunderstorm outside the village. Gu Masters and wolf packs formed an extraordinarily lively stage. No matter which character, they were displaying the essence of life.

Life was like a show, this was a good show. But Fang Yuan had no intentions of joining the act.

On the contrary, he felt a sense of unexplainable loneliness.

A loneliness with boundary.

This was not because he was a transmigrator, reincarnator, or the fact that he carried an unspeakable secret.

But because, everyone was born lonely!

Humans are like isolated islands, floating in the sea of fate.

Human encounters are like the collision of these loneliness islands, and once they touch, there would be an effect.

Sometimes, the islands would stick together, in the name of ‘interest’, ‘kinship’, ‘friendship’, ‘love’ and ‘hate’.

But eventually, they would separate, walking towards the path of destruction.

This is the truth behind life.

Unfortunately people are always afraid of being alone, they craved the liveliness of human crowd, and they refused to do nothing with their time.

Because once they face loneliness, it meant facing pain and hardship.

But once they can face this pain, people would obtain talent and courage. Thus, there is a saying – High achievers are definitely lonely.

"This is the feeling of being lonely. Every time I savour this, it strengthens my resolve to pursue the demonic way!" Fang Yuan’s gaze shone, thinking of the story of Ren Zu.

Legend says, Ren Zu had obtained the Attitude Gu. Attitude Gu was like a mask, and without a heart Ren Zu couldn’t wear it.

Because before this, Ren Zu had given his heart to the Hope Gu, and from then on he never feared difficulty.

But if Ren Zu wanted to use the Attitude Gu, he needed to have a heart.

Ren Zu was troubled, thus he asked Attitude Gu; he said, "Oh Gu, sometimes attitude says its all. Now that I have encountered a problem, you know it, thus I’m here to seek advice."

Attitude Gu said, "This is not hard. Ren Zu, you lack a heart, thus you just have to find a new one."

Ren Zu was confused, asking again, "Then how can I find a new heart?"

Attitude Gu sighed, "Heart, is nowhere and everywhere. Finding a heart, it is both easy and difficult. With your situation, you can obtain a heart now."

Ren Zu was overjoyed, "Quick, tell me, how?"

Attitude Gu warned him, "This heart, is called loneliness. Human, are you sure you want it? Once you obtain it, you will face endless pain, loneliness and even fear!"

Ren Zu did not listen to his warning, he continued asking.

Attitude Gu could not defy Ren Zu’s orders, thus he said, "You only have to stare at the sky on a starry night, and say nothing. Once you reach daylight, you will obtain the heart of loneliness."

That night, it was a star-filled sky.

According to Attitude Gu’s instructions, Ren Zu sat alone at the mountain peak, staring at the night sky.

Before this, his life was very difficult, constantly struggling for survival, he had no time to admire this beautiful yet mysterious sky.

But now, as he stared at the starry sky, his thoughts began floating. Constantly thinking about himself, such a meagre and weak being like himself, living a life of constant fear and insecurity.

"Sigh, although I have Hope Gu, Strength Gu, Rules and Regulation Gu, and Attitude Gu, to survive in this land, it is still difficult as ever. Even if I die tomorrow, it is not shocking. If I die, will the world remember me? Will anyone rejoice over my existence, and grieve over my death?"

Thinking of this, Ren Zu shook his head.

In this world, he was the only human, how can there be others?

Even with Gu accompanying him, he still felt a strong sense of –

Loneliness.

Heart of loneliness!

At this moment, when Ren Zu felt lonely, his body suddenly had a brand new heart.

The sun rose from the horizon, and shone on his face. But Ren Zu felt no happiness, and instead felt an endless pain, despair, confusion and even fear.

He could not endure this loneliness and fear, for all he felt was the advent of darkness and apocalypse!

Thus, he painfully cried, stretching out his fingers and digging out his eyes.

His left eye fell onto the ground and transformed into a young man. He had golden hair and a strong body. Once he appeared, he kneeled at Ren Zu’s feet, saying: "Oh Ren Zu, my father, I am your eldest son, Verdant Great Sun."

At the same time, his right eye turned into a young girl, and she held Ren Zu’s hand, saying, "Oh Ren Zu, my father, I am your second daughter, Desolate Ancient Moon."

Ren Zu laughed loudly, tears flowing out of his empty sockets. He said ‘good’ three times and continued, "I have children now, I can finally endure the pain of the heart of loneliness. From now one, there will be people celebrating my existence, and grieving for my death, even if I die now, you will remember me."

"Only that..." Finally, he sighed, "I lost both my eyes, and can no longer see the light. From now on, you two shall observe this world for me."

It rained the entire night, only at dawn did the rain stop.

Fang Yuan left the inn. Along the streets the passersbies carried heavy and sad expressions.

This night, the clan suffered great losses.

The truth was, for the three clans on Qing Mao mountain, none of them escaped this fate; all had suffered heavy losses.

Fang Yuan could tell from seeing the merit board.

After a night, the battle merit board lost twenty-five small groups, all sacrificed in the wolf tide. Even if there was one or two survivors, they were either injured or crippled.

The group Gu Yue Peng was in, was among this.

The dozen over days after this, the situation worsened by the day.

First, the hundred beast king bold lightning wolf had appeared, and then soon after, reports came in that there was the thousand beast king frenzy lightning wolf!

Information like this, caused the Rank two Gu Masters battling to be frightened.

If they met the frenzy lightning wolf, they would need at least three groups to cooperate to deal with it. This is not including the normal wolf groups together with the frenzy lightning wolf.

The three clans had to send out their Rank three elders to deal with the situation.

In this situation, the Gu Masters’ daily lives became very dangerous and long.

Even with the Stealth Scales Gu, Fang Yuan had to be careful and meticulous. After all, he might encounter a beast king class lightning wolf with a Lightning Eye Gu.

The good news was that he had previously paid a price to be able to use the Earth Communication Ear Grass.

This investigative Gu’s range was very large, allowing him to avoid the large-sized wolf packs.

Eventually, the weather got warmer as July was at its end. Even though the situation was not optimistic, under the cooperation of the three clans, the situation was under control.

Somewhere near the mountainside.

Three Gu Masters who had already experienced an intense battle were facing against a bold lightning wolf that had just arrived.

The aura of death was impending.

"Damn it, insufficient primeval essence, if I had 60%, no just 30%, we would not have to be chased like this!" Group leader Xiong Zhan stared at the slowly approaching bold lightning wolf, like a cat chasing a mouse, he vomited a mouthful of bloody water.

"The mountain cliff is ahead, there is no path left, what do we do?" A group member asked with a pale expression.

"What can we do? We can only put our hopes on the reinforcements. I heard lord Bai Ning Bing from my clan has come out of his closed door cultivation and is rushing into battle."

The two original groups, from both the Xiong clan and Bai clan, faced the wolf tide together and cooperated, but now only three people were left.

"Rather than relying on the Bai Ning Bing who is nowhere to be found, I’d rather fight for a chance to survive!" Xiong Zhan gritted his teeth, "The reason why a beast king is so dangerous, is because of the Gu on its body. I have a Plunder Gu, it can forcefully steal a Gu worm from my enemy. But it needs to be sustained when activated and I cannot move. During this period, you have to protect me."

"Okay!" The other two looked at each other and stood in front of Xiong Zhan, helping him block the bold lightning wolf.

Even though they knew that there was little hope, no one was willing to resign themselves to death.

"If the plunder is successful, we have a chance to live! Heaven bless us!" Xiong Zhan’s face was determined as he raised his right arm.

Life and death depends on this!

The three humans and one wolf did not know that, high up on the cliff, a white haired young man wearing a white shirt was staring at this scene.

"Life is so boring..." He sat on the ground, one hand propping himself up, while the other was pouring liquid from his wine bottle.

What he poured out was not wine, but sweet mountain springwater.

He did not drink wine, but only liked water.

As this young man drank, he stared at the show before him.

"Fight, and die. Such a mundane life is too boring. Only with an intense battle like this, can your lives have a hint of excitement and colour. This way, your lives has some meaning."

He laughed lightly in his heart, not showing any inclination to help.

Even if he had the ability, even if his Bai clan member was there.

So what?

To him, loneliness is the deepest darkness, and the light of kinship is just a facade.

He Bai Ning Bing would not do something as boring as saving someone!

太日阳莽 - Verdant Great Sun

古月阴荒 - Desolate Ancient Moon

Important Note: These names are really hard to translate, actually because they are names they should be in pinyin, Tai Ri Yang Mang and Gu Yue Yin Huang.

However the names are relevant to another plot-wise matter... so they had to be translated to English, which was really difficult. For Gu Yue Yin Huang, the Gu Yue here is exactly the same as the Gu Yue clan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

On the cliff, Bai Ning Bing watched with interest.

As he sat at the cliff, a life and death battle was on full display.

The bold lightning wolf took its move, slowly approaching.

Two Gu Masters blocked its path with a grim expression.

Behind them, Xiong Zhan was half-kneeling on the ground, his left hand grabbing his right wrist, his right hand in the shape of a claw, aiming at the bold lightning wolf.

"Plunder Gu!" Suddenly, he shouted loudly, all the primeval essence in his body gushing towards the Plunder Gu.

An invisible grabbing force exploded from within.

Xiong Zhan’s right hand grabbed the air, and a sense of illusion made him feel that he had grabbed onto a Gu worm.

But this Gu worm continued to struggle, contesting with him.

This force was very large; his center of gravity had already been very low, but he still felt a very strong force dragging him forward.

"Plunder Gu’s success rate is very low, but I have to succeed this time, otherwise we’re doomed!" He gritted his teeth, veins popping up on his forehead as his expression turned ferocious, contesting with all his ability.

Xiong Zhan had no other way.

Failure means death!

Under the pressure of death, he infused the Plunder Gu with all the primeval essence he could muster. With the infusion of the primeval essence, the Plunder Gu residing in his right palm also increased its sucking force. The bold lightning wolf felt something amiss, and started howling, attacking in a frenzy.

The two Gu Masters could hardly block it.

Just when Xiong Zhan felt that his plunder was going to succeed, his expression changed.

"Damn it, not enough primeval essence!" He suddenly vomited a mouthful of blood, his state of health being at the worst. Once a plunder fails, he would face some backlash. This was a flaw of the Plunder Gu.

Howl!

Without the Plunder Gu’s restriction, the bold lightning wolf opened its mouth, and started to howl.

The Gu worm that lived within it used its ability, and made its teeth shine with lightning.

Eerie blue lightning discharged and finally shot out from its mouth.

The lightning shot through the middle of both Gu Masters, aiming for the half kneeling Xiong Zhan.

Xiong Zhan did not even have time to cry before he got hit by the lightning, turning into a piece of charred black cooked meat, instantly dead.

"Run!" The remaining two Gu Masters no longer had any fighting spirit as they ran in two directions.

The bold lightning wolf chased up to one of them, pouncing on him and biting the throat.

The final Bai clan Gu Master was blocked by the bold lightning wolf, and could only retreat towards the cliff.

"Ahhhhh. I’m going to die!" With his back against the cliff, he roared in despair, venting out the fear in his heart.

But suddenly his voice came to a stop — He saw Bai Ning Bing on top of the cliff.

"Lord Bai Ning Bing! Lord Bai Ning Bing, is that really you?" He was stunned but then started shouting, overjoyed.

"Oops, you found me," Bai Ning Bing laughed, and raised his right hand.

His right index finger pointed downwards and an icicle instantly formed, shooting downwards.

The icicle hit the Gu Master crying for help, penetrating his skull, all the way to his chin.

"Ah!" His face was still fixed with intense joy after finding hope, but then fell to the ground with a plop.

The bold lightning wolf was shocked by the event.

It stared at Bai Ning Bing, its mouth opening. Within, lightning coiled around its teeth.

"Ignorant beast." Bai Ning Bing stared plainly, jumping down lightly from the five metre cliff.

In the air, he clapped his palms together, and icy mist instantly formed.

Next his palms splitted, and an ice blade appeared.

This ice blade was around 1.7m, like the katana on Earth, with a transparent icy body. The handle was grabbed by Bai Ning Bing.

Bold lightning wolf shot out electric light from bottom to up, and Bai Ning Bing laughed while two lines of white water vapour poured out of his nose.

The water vapour swirled around, wrapping around his body into a layer of water barrier.

The water ball continued to rotate on its own, and the bold lightning wolf’s lightning dissipated upon hitting this barrier.

The water ball burst open, and the white clothed young man appeared from within.

"Die." The young man’s iris turned from black to pure blue, like two pieces of blue crystal, devoid of feelings and emotion.

The light of the blade shone.

Bai Ning Bing landed lightly, and from his half-transparent white ice blade, a drop of blood fell.

Meanwhile, the bold lightning wolf stayed still like a statue.

A breath later, fresh blood poured from its neck as the large wolf head fell on the ground, rolling several times. As for the body, it collapsed on the ground.

The Lightning Current Gu that resided in its body shot out like lightning towards Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing flicked his wrist, and a light shot out from his blade.

The Lightning Current Gu, under his sword, exploded into a ball of eerie blue lightning current with a bang, perishing instantly.

Bai Ning Bing slowly walked towards Xiong Zhan’s corpse.

"The other Gu worms, they are all ordinary. But this Plunder Gu is slightly interesting." From Xiong Zhan’s corpse, he extracted the Plunder Gu and held it near his chest.

Even though the three clans have an agreement — after a Gu Master dies, if anyone after that obtains a Gu worm that has lost its Gu Master, they need to hand it over.

But Bai Ning Bing did not care about this rule.

Even if they found out, so what?

He was the symbol of the Bai clan’s rise, and the clan would definitely protect him.

This, he was very sure of.

"Only... this wolf tide is really boring." He used his hand to caress his ice blade, feeling the intense freezing sensation.

"Come to think about it, it is more fun competing with someone." He yawned, suddenly smiling, "I wonder how Qing Shu, Xiong Li and the others are doing, how much have they grown? After cultivating behind closed doors for so long, maybe they can give me a surprise, maybe."

Days later.

At the square where it was overflowing with people, Fang Yuan stared at a giant flag.

On the flag, words were formed by the Swimword Gu. The content was about the resources co-supplied by the three clans.

These resources were very broadly categorized, from food used to feed Gu worms, rice and condiments for humans, oil and other living necessities, to Gu worms themselves and primeval stones.

But behind these resources, there was a number attached to them, corresponding to the amount of merit points needed to exchange for them.

A wolf’s eye was ten merit points, and five merit points was for a bag of 500g of rice. Using twenty-five merit points could let a Gu Master exchange for one primeval stone.

Undoubtedly, the arrival of the wolf tide brought about an opportunity never seen before during peaceful times.

The battle merit board and this resource board urged on many Gu Masters, making them willingly bath in warm blood, hunting lightning wolves day and night.

Especially recently, as the wolf tide intensified, the three clans brought out the savings they had and spurred on the Gu Masters’ battle spirit, also raising their battle capability to help the village survive this ordeal.

Thus, the resource board had many things that were not commonly seen.

Like now, Fang Yuan’s attention was on this Gu.

"Three Step Fragrant Grass Gu," he muttered, staring at the description on the large flag.

Three Step Fragrant Grass Gu was a Gu worm Fang Yuan needed, as it could assist with movement, raising Fang Yuan’s running speed.

Honestly speaking, these days, the resource board had many new Gu worms. But only this Three Step Fragrant Grass Gu was what Fang Yuan wanted.

Except that this grass Gu was not easy to get. It was not only the only one of its kind on the resource board, but the merit points required to exchange for it is also very high.

"If I use my true ability, I can definitely gather enough merit points to exchange for this Three Step Fragrant Grass Gu. But if I do that, it would invite the suspicion of the clan, and that is not desirable."

Fang Yuan thought silently.

"There is another way, and that is to produce a large amount of vitality leaves and sell these Rank one Gu to the clan, exchanging it for merit points. But this method is slow, by the time I get enough points, someone might have exchanged it already."

Fang Yuan shook his head internally, this method had a flaw that would lead to failure.

Then what should he do?

He stared at the resource board and the merit board, falling into deep thought.

Towards the merit points, he had a clearer and deeper understanding of it compared to all the surrounding people.

Merit points are basically a kind of emergency currency.

During peacetime, primeval stones are the common medium of exchange. They were hard currency and had high commercial value in themselves, thus would never devalue.

But with the wolf tide, the need for primeval stones surged, and it could no longer be used as a currency. Thus, an emergency currency was needed to take over.

Thus, merit points were born.

"With an alternate currency like the merit point, it can prevent the economy from collapsing temporarily. Like on Earth, when there’s a war, the government would print large amounts of paper money. Of course, that causes inflation and rising price levels. The merit points are the same; the more it drags on, the more it devalues. But during the time of the village’s life and death situation, without merit points and using only primeval stones is not sustainable. Thus, they can only pick the lesser poison. Hence after the wolf tide, the economy always has signs of depression."

"Sigh, this rough form of an economy is nothing worth mentioning. If I am a Rank three, I can easily play around. But unfortunately, I do not have enough strength, so I’m unable to handle the risks. If I push on, it is equivalent to playing with fire."

Fang Yuan sighed internally.

The point was that his cultivation was not high, and his strength was not sufficient.

Without strength, only having wisdom, it is useless.

Thus, in Ren Zu’s story, Ren Zu chose to deal with the Strength Gu, obtaining strength and giving up on wisdom.

That is because, strength is the foundation.

Fang Yuan was still thinking deeply when he heard the discussions of the people around him.

"Do you guys know? Bai Ning Bing struck again!"

"What, what, which unlucky Gu Master is it this time?"

"It’s Xiong clan’s Xiong Li, that dejected-looking one."

"Sigh, what is this Bai Ning Bing doing? Last time, injuring Chi Shan, and now attacking Xiong Li. With the wolf tide coming, he is still fooling around!"

"He’s always does what he wants, he is already a Rank three Gu Master and is still finding problem with Rank two Gu Masters. For fairness, he even used a Gu worm to suppress his own cultivation to Rank two, he is really bored and hard to understand!"

"Bai Ning Bing huh... hmph, a person halfway into the coffin. But that reminded me of something." Fang Yuan upon hearing this felt something in his heart stir.

He knew how to get a large amount of merit points quickly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Sprinting rapidly!

The trees before Fang Yuan looked like they were crashing into him, and he quickly avoided them nimbly, pushing off with his legs.

His right ear had roots swaying around, and behind him was a bold lightning wolf angered by him on purpose and several hundred healthy ordinary lightning wolves.

The lightning wolves’ speed was faster than him. Especially the bold lightning wolf, its streamlined body jolted around in the complicated terrain, having an extremely fast speed.

Seeing Fang Yuan who was about to be caught up, suddenly, his body had ripples of light around him, and he vanished.

The bold lightning wolf had to halt its steps and observe the surroundings with bewilderment.

Fang Yuan sprinted to a faraway place, before reappearing again.

Bold lightning wolf’s eyesight was sharp, immediately finding him. It growled angrily and chased after Fang Yuan again.

As for those ordinary lightning wolves, they followed closely behind.

Fang Yuan laughed internally and continued sprinting.

Rinse and repeat, he had finally reached his destination. This time, he activated his stealth completely.

The wolf pack who came chasing sniffed around the area where Fang Yuan disappeared, and soon after, the bold lightning wolf found its new target.

Not far away, on the mountain valley, there were five Gu Masters fighting with a pack of wolves.

Howl!

The bold lightning wolf had limited IQ, immediately forgetting Fang Yuan. It turned its head and growled, and the lightning wolves behind it entered the valley’s battlefield like tidal waves.

"How can this be?" The Gu Master in battle saw this scene and despaired.

"Didn’t they say that each pack of wolves have their own mobility range?"

"We took so much effort to kill a bold lightning wolf, and here comes a second one! We’re screwed."

"Quickly send the distress signal to the clan!"

This new pack of wolves joined in and the Gu Master's pressure intensified, their tone showing a panicky and flustered emotion.

The investigative Gu Master shot out a Gu worm from his hand.

This Gu worm was like a golden round ball, but had a pair of colourful feathered wings. It flew into midair and exploded, turning into a rainbow flame, observable from a 50km range.

This was the signal Gu, a Rank one expendable Gu worm, often used to send signals.

"The signal has been sent, everyone hang in there, wait for reinforcements!" The group leader shouted at an appropriate timing, slightly raising the morale and stabilizing their fighting spirits.

"It's useless." Fang Yuan appeared at a high point on the cliff, staring downwards, his heart smirking.

This Gu Master group's situation was already well investigated by him. The nearest group in the vicinity was also deep in the wolf pack's encirclement.

That pack of wolves was also lured over by Fang Yuan, to restrict them.

"Killing lightning wolves, each eyeball is ten merit points. But on the battlefield, reclaiming Gu worms and bringing them to the clan higher-ups is worth at least a thousand points! This kind of thing, after doing it two or three times, I will be able to exchange the Three Step Fragrant Grass Gu," Fang Yuan thought in his heart.

Under his scheme, the Gu Master group's fate was sealed.

"Next, I will wait for them to be exterminated. Then I shall lure the lightning wolf pack away and come back here to collect the Gu worms." Fang Yuan walked to a nearby tree and sat down leisurely.

No one was willing to die, so these Gu Masters put up a strong resistance.

Fang Yuan did not risk it to lure a thousand beast king frenzy lightning wolf, but instead chose the bold lightning wolf, so this gave them the opportunity to struggle for a longer time.

Especially when among them, there was a defeated opponent of Fang Yuan's.

Gu Yue Man Shi.

He had the Monolith Gu and had strong defense, thus he alone could block many lightning wolves' attack.

But, this was also why Fang Yuan chose their group.

The more precious the Gu worm, after returning them, the more merit points are awarded. After bringing back the Monolith Gu, Fang Yuan can get around 3900 merit points, and that can let his position on the battle merit board rise by at least twenty positions.

Of course, Chi Shan, Mo Yan and Qing Shu's Gu worms, were more precious than the Monolith Gu.

But Chi Shan's group had Gu Yue Chi She, who possessed the Snake Communication

Gu, able to rely on heat to detect living beings. Fang Yuan’s stealth had no use against him.

As for Mo Yan, she had an even stronger investigative Gu Master than Chi She, with even more methods. She had single-handedly completed wolf den investigation missions given by the clan many times.

Qing Shu group does not have a strong investigative Gu Master, but because of Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s existence, the clan has definitely sent a clan elder to follow and protect him, thus if Fang Yuan lures them, it is courting death.

For the Gu Masters in the other two clans, Fang Yuan was not familiar with them.

Setting up others was not easy to do. After choosing left and right, he finally decided on a few groups, and after following them for a long while, he managed to find an appropriate chance.

Bai Ning Bing was sleeping when sounds of battles entered his ear.

His opened his eyes slightly, the slit of his eye shining with cold light.

"Another boring scene." He was sleeping on the edge of the cliff, and just turning around allowed him to have a clear view of the valley. He was about to go back to sleep, but suddenly saw a figure.

"Oh?" His eyes shone with shock as he saw Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was leaning against the tree, eating a wild fruit he picked, staring coldly at the battlefield with no intention to help.

Bai Ning Bing instantly grew interested, he had never met someone like this. From young, the people around him were all loyal to the clan, and indulged in kinship.

But from Fang Yuan, he felt a sense of familiarity, loneliness and aloofness.

"Who is he?" Bai Ning Bing’s heart developed confusion and interest.

The wild fruit was picked on the spot, but with his experience, Fang Yuan could tell it was harmless.

The fruit was juicy, sour and sweet. As he ate, his right ear twitched; he heard something, and it was nearby!

Bai Ning Bing was sleeping on a higher terrain of the cliff earlier, but without making any movements, the Earth Communication Ear Grass could not sense him. However, now that he moved, he was instantly discovered.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with lightning as he turned his body to see a white haired and white clothed young man, stabbing his ice blade into the cliff and sliding down along it, landing not too far away.

Bai Ning Bing!

Fang Yuan’s eyes squinted, recognising him instantly.

Qing Mao Mountain’s number one genius, the symbol of Bai clan’s rise. Killing a Rank three clan elder at Rank two, and at this young age he already reached Rank three, a crucial person capable of changing the entire power distribution of Qing Mao mountain!

If it was other Gu Masters facing Bai Ning Bing alone, their expression would be rapidly changing, either nervous or wary.

But Fang Yuan’s gaze only stayed on him for a second before looking back at the valley. His expression was calm, almost uncaring. This is because Fang Yuan knew all about Bai Ning Bing’s trump cards and secrets. Very clearly.

"Oh..." Bai Ning Bing walked over, staring at Fang Yuan blankly. His mouth opened, dragging his word.

He curiously stared at Fang Yuan like he was looking at an object he had never seen before.

He got closer and closer. The more he looked at Fang Yuan, the more his eyes shone, and the greater interest he had in his heart.

"On this person, why do I sense a familiar smell? It feels like I’ve seen him before. Like long ago, we are already friends, this feeling!" Bai Ning Bing’s heart was turbulent.

Friend — This word, he was always sceptical, despising, and even felt disdain towards it.

He never thought he would have a friend. Those commoners around him, they only had the right to admire him, they had no right to become his friend.

Bai Ning Bing always thought, he would never have a friend in his life.

But now — he suddenly had this feeling!

This was a mystical feeling, but he was very sure of it. When he looked at Fang Yuan, it felt like he was looking at himself!

Bai Ning Bing got slightly too close, and Fang Yuan turned around, staring at him plainly with his deep dark iris.

Without a reason, Bai Ning Bing understood the meaning of his gaze.

It was a warning.

He halted his steps, slightly stunned, very impolitely staring at Fang Yuan while saying, "Eh, you really are interesting."

If the Bai clan Gu Masters who were familiar with him heard this, they would go crazy.

That is because, since his birth, Bai Ning Bing had never praised someone like this.

Fang Yuan ignored him, biting his wild fruit and staring at the valley’s intense fight.

Bai Ning Bing circled around Fang Yuan, observing him closely. As if he was looking at the strangest food on earth. He looked from every angle, even squatting down on the ground and looking up at him from the floor.

His silky white hair which was impeccably clean like a crystal, instantly laid on the muddy ground, but he did not care.

His white robe dragged across the ground and he paid no heed either.

This moment, he was like a pure child, seeing his playmate, curiously staring at Fang Yuan with a longing expression, many times wanting to speak but couldn’t.

Bai Ning Bing felt that he had many things to say to Fang Yuan, but when he was about to speak, he felt no need anymore, because he felt that Fang Yuan understood.

After being silent for a while, he asked, "The valley’s battle is not interesting at all, what’s there to look at."

Halfway through, his eyebrows raised, showing an expression of realization, "I see. You lured this wolf pack, you want to kill these Gu Masters, but why did you not do it yourself. Oh, afraid of leaving evidence. You are too vigilant, from your aura, you already have Rank two cultivation. If I were you, I’ll just go ahead and do it myself!"

Suddenly, he chuckled like he had seen the most fun toy in this world as a kid. His eyebrows darted around, "You are really interesting, even the things you do are interesting. Hehehe, I am starting to like you!"

Fang Yuan retracted his gaze, turning around and looking at Bai Ning Bing.

He knew this person.

That is because this person is also a natural demon.

What is a demon?

Abandoning the worldly customs, treating the people of this world with indifference. Engulfed by loneliness, and despising relationships!

This person was like Fang Yuan’s shadow, except that Fang Yuan was deeper down the path, and Bai Ning Bing was more pure.

In simple words, they were kindred spirits!

In his previous life’s memory, after the three clans barely survived the wolf tide, this man murdered the three clans and caused the lustrous green Qing Mao Mountain to turn into a hellish ice mountain!

"Bai Ning Bing, Bai Ning Bing..." Fang Yuan sighed in his heart, saying slowly, "You’re very lonely, huh."

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes widened, squatting on the floor, nodding continuously, empathising and sighing, "Yes, these days, life has been super boring. Some time ago, I killed a Xiong clan Gu Master and that was somewhat fun. Getting this Gu, look."

Fang Yuan looked at the Plunder Gu in his hand, starting to laugh, "So, you want to kill me?"

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes turned from black to blue crystal colour as he jumped up and straightened his body.

"Hahaha!" He raised his head and laughed thrice, staring at Fang Yuan with an excited expression, "You do know! That’s right, I want to kill you, come kill me too. Life and death battles are the most fun, meeting someone as interesting as you, I swear I’ve never done anything so interesting!"

He got more and more excited as he suddenly opened both arms, arching his head and sighing, "Ahhhh! I can feel that my life had never been so colourful! Thank you, thank you, although I don’t know your name, thank you for letting me kill you!!! Hehehe..."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Do not worry, you are only a Rank two, I will not lower myself and take advantage of you. I shall restrict my cultivation to the same rank for your sake; so come, let’s have a fair fight!" Bai Ning Bing roared with savage laughter.

Facing the crazy Bai Ning Bing, Fang Yuan easily maintained a languid expression. He met the heated glare in an equal manner, responding coolly.

"Wanna kill me, then come."

Nothing left to say, Fang Yuan took the first step, his body drifting away like a falling petal.

Bai Ning Bing’s laugh came to an abrupt stop at this, his voice easily tainted with anguish.

"Don’t you run from me!"

He instantly ran after, engaging Fang Yuan in a relentless chase.

Fang Yuan ridiculed the disheveled master soundlessly, sprinting towards the mountain valley.

Disturbed by the two barging into the valley’s inner battlefield, the wolf pack reacted with fury, wasting no time in attacking Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

The Gu Masters who had already been forced into the valley and lost one man noticed the spectacle, the remaining four revealing a relieved expression when they saw saw the wolves become distracted.

"Hang in there guys, reinforcements are here!" One even shouted loudly, blatantly trying to encourage the wolves against the newcomers.

"Why is there only two?" Another asked, clueless while they saw the muffled figures of Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

But as they got closer, Gu Yue Man Shi’s face turned weird with realization.

"It’s him!"

It was impossible for him to not remember Fang Yuan, along with a sharp feeling of fear mixed with shame; it was this man that had defeated and publicly humiliated him. Those cold, merciless eyes, dug out the deepest nightmare in his heart. He would never forget that terrifying event and the fiendish man who accompanied the memory.

He had once sworn to himself that he would buck up and reclaim his pride.

But now, faced with Fang Yuan who was here to ‘save’ him, Gu Yue Man Shi felt very complicated internally.

"Wait, the second person is..."

They all were able to recognise Bai Ning Bing, and showed collective signs of shock at his appearance.

"Bai Ning Bing . . . Bai Ning Bing!" Gu Yue Man Shi’s eyes widened, he did not expect in the least to suddenly see Bai Ning Bing appear under such a situation.

"Scumbag, stop right there!" Behind him, Bai Ning Bing was continuing to shout vehemently.

Fang Yuan paid no attention, however, and transversed among the wolf pack.

His body was glowing with a white jade light, protecting him from the rabid lightning wolves’ bites and scratches. But because each assault made contact, his aperture’s primeval essence dropped quickly in turn.

Not far away, Bai Ning Bing’s nose had flared and was blowing out water vapour, forming into a round shield of condensed moisture, enveloping his body.

As each of the numerous lightning wolves hit this seemingly water shield, though, all of their kinetic force build up by their charge was simply dispersed by the water flow, and they were quickly sent flying away after with the resounding ripples of water.

Logically speaking, Bai Ning Bing’s performance now wasn’t that impressive though. He was already a Rank three, even though according to him, he had already seemed to have suppressed his cultivation personally, using only Rank two strength to deal with Fang Yuan.

Even with Rank two strength, Bai Ning Bing’s speed was slightly faster than Fang Yuan’s, and he had more primeval essence, but with the interference of the wolf pack, his distance with Fang Yuan started to increase.

The crucial deciding factor was the difference in physical strength between the two.

Fang Yuan had the strength of two boars, while Bai Ning Bing’s strength was of a slightly lower quality. Fang Yuan could also endure the wolf pack’s attacks and continue moving forward. Bai Ning Bing’s water shield, although it is able to mitigate some of attacks, could not open a path forward for him, unlike Fang Yuan.

"Howl!"

One especially bold lightning wolf began to pay attention and was drawn to Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

It howled, commanding the ordinary lightning wolves around it to give way, opening a path for it instantly.

The lightning wolf wasted no time and spread its limbs, charging towards Fang Yuan.

Seeing this scene, the four trapped Gu Masters all showed expressions of worry.

As for Bai Ning Bing, still behind Fang Yuan, upon seeing this new development, laughed loudly.

But the next moment, Fang Yuan’s body disappeared right before Bai Ning Bing’s eyes, vanishing from his vision like a fleeting ripple of water.

His laughter cut off abruptly at the sight, the other Gu Masters in the valley being left similarly speechless.

The bold lightning wolf howled angrily after having lost track of Fang Yuan, but did not reduce its speed while charging towards Bai Ning Bing to take it’s fury out on him instead.

This prompted a smile from Bai Ning Bing, his lips curving once more in amusement.

"Hehehe, this is really interesting- you really are interesting! Hahaha, then I shall start my meal with this appetizer!"

As he finished speaking, his eyes transitioned, changing from black to a shade of blue the same color as that of the sky.

Taking a stance, he propped one leg up like a flamingo, holding out the ice blade, and started to rotate. Quickly picking up speed, the ice blade carved out many waves of sword traces, maneuvering and slashing the air to form a scene similar to a tornado.

The bright sword waves congealed into a blizzard storm and quickly engulfed the wolf pack.

Numerous lightning wolves were torn to shreds by the act, becoming pieces of minced meat flung about by the storm. But not much blood ended up splattering against the surroundings, as it had almost all been completely flash frozen by the icy blizzard storm already.

The bold lightning wolf howled, showing its ferocity against the storm. The Gu worm in its body started to work as well, causing golden sparks of electricity to flicker throughout its rugged coat.

The hair on its body stood on ends, golden electricity flowed like chains, coiling around its body and limbs. Altogether it formed what looked to be a modest chainmail.

Its four paws sprinted and it streaked like a golden shooting star, rushing into the ice blade storm.

"Bam!"

A thunderous explosion sounded through the valley as the ice blade storm came to a stop, a broken piece of the ice blade flying in the air and with a swoosh, stabbed into a mountain rock above.

The white mist dispersed around the area.

The bold lightning wolf laid on the revealed ground, its heart pierced through by an ice blade. Such a fatal attack ended its life almost instantly.

Bai Ning Bing laughed as he retracted the ice blade in his hands, gloating in his victory.

The ice blade itself was broken from the middle down, the blade that managed to survive full of cracks, seemingly in a sorry state in his grip. But Bai Ning Bing did not care as he stretched out his left hand and wiped the blade.

The icy mist from before emanated from his left hand at the touch, spreading across the blade starting from the handle before covering it completely.

Everywhere it reached, the ice blade was regenerated, the edge being sharpened once again. Soon a new tip was fully grown in place of the broken end.

The death of the bold lightning wolf had dispersed the wolf pack, but Fang Yuan was nowhere to be seen.

"We will definitely remember Lord Bai Ning Bong’s act of saving us!" The few Gu Masters that survived went up and gratefully paid their respects to Bai Ning

Bing.

Only Gu Yue Man Shi stayed on the spot, his expression being uncertain.

Back then, he lost to Bai Ning Bing, and was very indignant, but was let off by the latter. Now, though he had already successfully refined the Monolith Gu, upon seeing Bai Ning Bing again, he did not have any confidence to challenge him anymore.

Bai Ning Bing snorted. Suddenly his arm moved, and the ice blade drew a few shining traces in the air.

"This..."

"Ah!"

The three Gu Masters were caught off guard, not expecting their savior just moments ago to attack. They carried a look of disbelief as they laid on the ground, forever.

"Bai Ning Bing, what are you doing?!" Gu Yue Man Shi screamed, shocked and angry at the sudden manslaughter.

"Murdering of course. Is something wrong in your head, isn’t this obvious?" Bai Ning Bing shrugged and laughed coldly.

"Accursed bastard!" Gu Yu Man Shi tightly clenched his fists out of rage while he gritted his teeth and scolded the other master. "Our three clans have formed an alliance, yet you attack our Gu Yue clansman; this is a violation of our alliance treaty! If you have any problems, come at me, I’m here. Nevermind, it is time we settle our grudge from back then!"

Saying so, Gu Yue Man Shi shouted and took a few steps, charging towards Bai Ning Bing.

He activated the Monolith Gu with all his strength, and all the muscles on his body bulked up while a thick rock skin formed. His entire appearance had turned into a rock man.

"Courting death." Bai Ning Bing laughed coldly, raising his blade.

The sharp ice blade came down relentlessly, first hacking Gu Yue Man Shi’s head, moving down past his brows before carving through his nose, lips and throat. The blade quickly came to a rest after it bisected the Gu Master down past his chest in an instant.

Rock fragments flew out as the ice blade hit the abdomen, and the blade snapped. But the icy mist had already frozen all the remaining life force left in Man Shi’s body.

"Plop."

He fell to the ground with a splatter, as dead as can be.

The rock skin on his body slowly vanished, revealing his true form.

"Looks familiar..." Bai Ning Bing shook the wrist that was hurt by the vibration of the rock; he had pretty much forgotten the incident where he spared Man Shi.

He shook his head, turning around and facing the wide valley to shout.

"Come out. The Gu Masters you want dead, I’ve done it for you. Come come come, let’s have a life and death match!"

Just as Bai Ning Bing’s words had finished, Fang Yuan appeared not far away.

The white hair young man’s gaze became excited, as he raised his ice blade, slashing towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan laughed soundlessly at the act, turning around and leaving.

Bai Ning Bing shouted in anger that he was still fleeing, once again chasing Fang Yuan relentlessly.

On the way, Fang Yuan lured Bai Ning Bing to the battlefield that was the closest, where the Xiong Li group was fighting against another group of wolves led by a bold lightning wolf.

This pack was obviously lured by Fang Yuan as well.

"Everyone put in more effort, the wolf pack is at its limit! The south-east direction sent a distress signal, it’s been a while, they need our help!" Xiong Li urged on his group, but halfway through, he could no longer speak when he saw Fang Yuan, and the Bai Ning Bing persistantly behind him.

Ever since Fang Yuan surrendered, Xiong Li no longer cared about him. Thus, his gaze quickly shifted from Fang Yuan to Bai Ning Bing.

"Bai Ning Bing!" Xiong Li’s eyes spewed fire upon seeing the white clothed, white haired young man, his heart uncontrollably growing with rage.

Not long ago, Bai Ning Bing had appeared in front of him and attacked without a word, the event still fresh in his mind.

And had been purposely suppressing his cultivation to Rank two.

Xiong Li was caught off guard, and lost the battle. His personal honor, and the clan’s glory, was all trampled by Bai Ning Bing ruthlessly! This to him, was a big disgrace, how could he not be furious?

"Wait, Bai Ning Bing seems to be chasing Fang Yuan." Xiong Lin suddenly noticed.

His body was short in stature, his round bald head glowing with light. Xiong Lin is the same age as Fang Yuan, but having B grade talent instead, he is the number one talent among Xiong clan’s new Gu Masters of age.

He was a Rank two cultivator as well now, and after getting some experience, had grown up.

Xiong Li suppressed the urge to attack.

Fang Yuan was from the Gu Yue clan, not from his Xiong clan. Even though there was the three clan alliance, they are still not close. Since it is an outsider fighting, it is best if one does not get involved.

The Xiong Li group was about to watch on the sidelines, but how could Fang Yuan not expect that? One sentence from him changed their perspective in an instant.

Fang Yuan quickly got close to the Xiong Li group, shouting in a frightened voice.

"I saw the Plunder Gu on him, protect me! Bai Ning Bing is trying to eliminate all witnesses!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"What?!" Xiong Lin was stunned.

"Plunder Gu? There is only one person that has this Gu worm in Qing Mao mountain and that is my cousin Xiong Zhan!!" Xiong Jiang’s face turned gloomy.

Xiong Li closed his eyes, fierce light flickering in them. Others might be afraid of Bai Ning Bing and even he was afraid, but this fear didn’t represent his weakness and cowardice. In his heart, long was there already thoughts of sacrificing himself for the clan; he had the resolution to fight to the death with Bai Ning Bing!

"Bai Ning Bing, is the Plunder Gu in your possession?" He stepped forward and faced Bai Ning Bing, letting Fang Yuan brush past him.

Bai Ning Bing laughed coldly, "So what if it is?"

Xiong Jiang’s face was as gloomy as water and asked, "Tell me how did my cousin die? Why is his Gu worm in your hands?"

Xiong Lin also asked, "Bai Ning Bing, I respect you as my senior but you secretly seized our Xiong clan’s Gu worm and didn’t hand it over. This is an open violation of the alliance treaty!"

After he spoke, he raised a Signal Gu in his hand.

With a bang, bright fireworks burst in the sky.

The colorful light from the fireworks shone upon Bai Ning Bing’s face. He laughed, "I have never cared about the dogshit alliance treaty. I only saw someone using the Plunder Gu and thought it was interesting, so I collected it."

Xiong Jiang was unable to hold back his anger when he heard this. He gave a furious shout and charged towards Bai Ning Bing, "Bai Ning Bing, you looked while my cousin fought to death and didn’t help. You bastard!"

The five person group was an integral whole. For personal or private reasons, the Xiong Li group were irreconcilable with Bai Ning Bing.

The fight was hard to avoid; the scene immediately turning chaotic.

On one side was Bai Ning Bing facing the Xiong Li group’s attack; on the other side, they were surrounded by wolf pack and still had to face their attacks.

Fang Yuan left the battlefield and calmly spectated from far away.

The wolf pack moved together like a large millstone, and the six Gu Masters fought with their lives; the slightest carelessness could land them into the wolves’ mouths.

Xiong Jiang used Roaming Zombie Gu, his two irises turning gloomy green; Xiong Li’s two eyes were red whereas Bai Ning Bing’s pair of pupils were azure like crystals. The fight between these three was the most intense in the battlefield.

Under the Roaming Zombie Gu’s ability, Xiong Jiang turned into a zombie; his defense was amplified against water and ice, withstanding Bai Ning Bing’s attacks. Xiong Li used Grand Bear Gu; with the strength of two bears, his bowl-sized fists were without rival and even Bai Ning Bing’s water barrier was destroyed under their attacks.

It wasn’t easy for the remaining three group members to meddle in this fight, they could only do their utmost to fight against the lightning wolves. That bold lightning wolf lured in by Fang Yuan could have been easily dealt with, but it had turned into a huge threat now.

"Bai Ning Bing, you will pay for what you have done!" Xiong Jiang shouted and charged at Bai Ning Bing.

"Hmph, just with you?" Bai Ning Bing coldly smiled. He nimbly jumped back, pulling apart some distance and flung out his left hand, throwing out five finger-sized icicles.

The icicles struck Xiong Jiang’s body but Xiong Jiang didn’t feel any pain whatsoever. When he turned into a zombie, even if his hands and legs were broken, he wouldn’t feel any pain.

The cold aura in the icicles could freeze and slow down ordinary people’s movements, but it only felt cool and refreshing to Xiong Jiang. Zombie physique belonged to yin physiques; it had low resistance to fire, lightning and sunlight, but was very powerful against this type of cold aura.

"Bai Ning Bing, you are still playing in this situation? Unleash your true strength!" Xiong Li furiously shouted.

Bai Ning Bing had been suppressing his cultivation base to Rank two from the very beginning and was also mostly using Rank two Gu.

Xiong Li felt like he was being held in contempt, he felt humiliated which caused his anger to burn even more.

"Hahaha, how can you minor characters have the qualifications to make me use my full strength?" Bai Ning Bing coldly laughed; his attacks were becoming more powerful but he was still suppressing his strength and didn’t use a Rank three Gu worm.

Fang Yuan who was spectating from afar with his hands crossed, clearly understood the reason.

"It is not that he doesn’t want to unleash his true strength, but he cannot use it. Bai Ning Bing, heh, he has Northern Dark Ice Soul physique....."

In the oldest legends of this world, all humans are descendants of Ren Zu.

But as the saying goes, the dragon has nine unique sons. There are no two absolutely same people, and even twins have differences.

In this world, the difference that is of the biggest concern is aptitude.

Those that have the aptitude to cultivate could become Gu Masters, going beyond ordinary. Those with no cultivation aptitude were just mortals, the lowest level in the society, who could be trampled upon and played with.

Cultivation aptitudes were divided into four grades; A grade, B grade, C grade and D grade. Everyone knew this.

But actually, there were still more outstanding aptitudes above A grade.

This was a secret. Clans would never carelessly spread this, and only after reaching a certain status in society, could one know this secret.

Xiong Li and the rest naturally didn’t know, even elders and clan leaders might not know. But Fang Yuan, who had reached Rank six in his previous life, shedding his mortal body and becoming a Gu immortal, naturally was aware of this.

There were ten types of aptitudes above A grade and they were collectively called Ten Extreme physiques.

"Before Ren Zu died, he gave birth to ten children. The eldest son Verdant Great Sun, second daughter Desolate Ancient Moon..... Among the ten, there was one named Northern Dark Ice Soul. Ren Zu’s legends whether real or false, alluded to many secrets in Gu Master’s cultivation. Ren Zu’s ten kids individually represented ten types of ultimate aptitudes." Fang Yuan recalled.

"Any one of the ten extreme physiques is superior to A grade aptitude. The most excellent A grade aptitude can only store ninety nine percent primeval essence in their aperture. But any one of the ten extreme physiques holds full hundred percent primeval essence in their aperture!"

"However, everything exists in balance; the ten extreme physiques which holds hundred percent primeval essence is too perfect and heavens won’t easily allow their existence. For instance, in Ren Zu’s story, his ten kids didn’t have a long life. In reality, it is difficult for the Gu Masters who hold ten extreme physiques to grow and mature, almost all dying an untimely death. Of course, if they can really grow to become a Rank six, they will be able to sweep through same stage opponents and even perform miracles such as fighting a higher rank!"

"Bai Ning Bing who possesses Northern Dark Ice Soul is the same. With hundred percent primeval essence, his aperture is too stressed out and has the risk of collapsing any moment. To decrease this risk, Bai Ning Bing must cultivate and use primeval essence to nurture his aperture walls and increase its strength to be able to support the hundred percent primeval essence. Thus, his cultivation speed is outstanding and shocking."

"However, high cultivation means higher quality primeval essence which subsequently increases the pressure on the aperture, instead increasing the risk. Bai Ning Bing is like a victim in a lone boat in the sea; he doesn’t have fresh water and can only drink the sea water to relieve his thirst, but the seawater is salty and will absorb the original moisture content of the body instead, making him even more thirsty."

"The higher his cultivation is, the nearer he is to destruction. Yet he cannot choose not to cultivate, since being from Bai village and the one upon whom the clan’s expectations lies, he will also face assassination from Xiong and Gu Yue village. This forces him to continue to grow stronger. Being the possessor of the Northern Dark Ice Soul, he clearly understands his situation. Knowing he doesn’t have much time left and his death being certain, he has thus formed this temperament."

Fang Yuan sighed when he thought of this.

This was clearly an irony.

Excessively excellent aptitude didn’t lead a Gu Master to have a meteoric rise, but would be the main culprit behind their deaths.

Too much is as bad as too little; people need to drink water and eat food, but if they eat and drink excessively, they could die.

From another angle, no matter which world, there is no true perfection. There is no perfect love, no perfect work.

Excessively perfect will just lead to destruction.

In Fang Yuan's previous life, three years after the wolf tide, Bai Ning Bing's cultivation inevitably reached Rank four realm. His aperture couldn't support the burden from the primeval essence and ultimately, it exploded.

Ten extreme physiques wasn't tolerated by the heavens and earth, and the self-detonation of such a heaven-defying thing was like the most perfect song, its power outstanding; directly annihilating everyone in the three villages and turning the whole Qing Mao Mountain into an absolute death ice domain.

Fortunately by that time, because of Fang Zheng who had been making things difficult for Fang Yuan who only had an average cultivation, Fang Yuan could only join a caravan to go away, thus luckily avoiding this disaster.

To delay his death, Bai Ning Bing used Gu worms to dilute his Rank three silver primeval essence into Rank two red steel primeval essence, of his own accord. He also rarely used Rank three Gu worms at the same time.

This was simply because Rank three Gu worms consumed great amounts of red steel primeval essence every time, resulting in the strength waning if it continued. Instead, it was better to continue using Rank two Gu worms which would be of much more help to Bai Ning Bing in battles.

This was the real reason Bai Ning Bing suppressed his cultivation.

If not, having strength but choosing to bind one's own hands and feet, landing in a dangerous state, was something only a brainless retard would do.

Bai Ning Bing was smart and intelligent, he had received great training and education, so how could he do such a foolish thing?

Except, such a temperament at his young age was indeed unusual. But as someone who was about to die, why would he have misgivings in his behavior?

Such disregard and fearlessness prevented him from being assimilated into the system, and nurtured a heart of the demonic path in him.

Otherwise, with his living environment - countless expectations, great trainings, holding honor, fighting enemies, bright future - he would have already been assimilated into the organization system and nurtured a leader's temperament.

Bai Ning Bing was actually a pitiful child, and Fang Yuan had no wish to deal with him before. But since he wanted to kill Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan also didn't mind making use of him first before removing this misfortune early.

The battle was still continuing.

In this while, the situation had already changed.

Bold lightning wolf was killed by Bai Ning Bing and the wolf pack had ran away in defeat. Xiong Li group's healing Gu Master fell under Bai Ning Bing's blade but he had paid a heavy price for this; his right arm was viciously punched by Xiong Li and it seemed to have fractured as it was hanging limply throughout the battle.

However, all of these couldn't hinder him from occupying the upper hand.

Xiong Li was a top elite amongst Rank two Gu Masters, his strength equal to Qing Shu and Chi Shan. Xiong Jiang was a newly rising defense expert. Xiong Lin was the genius newbie and now had Rank two battle power. There was also another Gu Master, but even after combining their strength, these four were still suppressed by Bai Ning Bing.

One should know Bai Ning Bing had already fought a battle before which had consumed a lot of his red steel primeval essence. He also killed bold lightning wolf and the healing Gu Master, resulting in his right arm losing its ability to move; he could only abandon using his ice blade with his habitual right hand and switch to his left. By doing this, he had to temporarily abandon using his icicles; his offensive power almost reducing by half.

He was still occupying the upper hand in such situation and his dominance was even becoming more solid.

"It is after all the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique. Although he used Gu worm to dilute his primeval essence and sealed the true advantage of the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique, the primeval essence recovery speed is still maintained. His advantage will continue to increase the longer the battle lasts." Fang Yuan looked at the situation and inwardly sighed.

"My current battle strength is not enough to defeat him," Fang Yuan calmly admitted this point.

Fang Yuan only had C grade aptitude with 44% primeval essence. Even the combined strength of B grade aptitudes’ Xiong Li, Xiong Lin and Xiong Jiang were being suppressed by Bai Ning Bing. It was obvious that if Fang Yuan faced Bai Ning Bing by himself, his situation would only become more difficult than Xiong Li and the rest.

"However, not being able to defeat you doesn’t mean I can’t kill you." Fang Yuan coldly smiled.

This was the accumulated wisdom from five hundred years of experience.

Although they had similar reflections, compared to this centuries old devil, Bai Ning Bing was only a little devil forced into it by his cruel fate.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Cold air blew all over the place, accompanying ice blades in flight. Steel fists howled in the wind, and fangs growled their fury.

Xiong Li and the other’s fight against Bai Ning Bing had reached its climax.

Not that much time had passed since the battle began, to be honest. But as the pressure from Bai Ning Bing intensified, Xiong Li and the others started to feel that time dragged on longer with the difficulty he posed.

Xiong Jiang’s face was dim as water, Xiong Lin’s forehead dripping with cold sweat, while Xiong Li maintained a serious gaze.

At this point, even Xiong Li had to suppress his anger and admit Bai Ning Bing’s formidable strength. Even though Bai Ning Bing suppressed his Rank three cultivation, and only fought with Rank two Gu worms, he displayed strength that was able to suppress their entire group.

But even then, the truth was that Bai Ning Bing had not even given it his all. This was not intentional to prove a point, rather, it was a precautionary measure against Fang Yuan.

To Xiong Li and the others, their motive was simple, it was to arrest or kill

Bai Ning Bing.

But to Bai Ning Bing, the situation was more complicated.

He needed to fight back the Xiong Li group on one end, while simultaneously being on guard to prevent Fang Yuan’s sneak attack on the other end.

He had seen Fang Yuan using the Stealth Scales Gu with his own eyes, thus in battle he needed to make sure to divert some of his attention to prevent Fang Yuan’s attack.

But till now, Fang Yuan had not made a move.

"Did he leave? Impossible! Although it is our first meeting, he is not the type to retreat! He will definitely act. He is just biding his time." Bai Ning Bing waved his ice blade and suppressed Xiong Li, while his thoughts raced in his mind.

Not only did he have to use his brawn to fight the Xiong Li group, he also had to compete with Fang Yuan using his wit.

Fang Yuan refusing to attack was increasingly putting pressure on himself. A sheathed sword is the most dangerous, because one would not be able to predict where the sword is going to stab.

Although Fang Yuan had not struck, and was secretly watching the battle, he had been able to divert Bai Ning Bing’s attention all this time. If not for this diversion, the Xiong Li group would have lost long ago, otherwise they would not be able to hold on for so long.

"This Bai Ning Bing is very meticulous. First he killed the bold lightning wolf decisively, reducing a pawn that I could use. Next he risked getting injured to killing the healing Gu Master in Xiong Li group. All these actions are the most sensible decisions to make in his situation. Although he is engaging in serious combat with Xiong Li group, he is still holding back to prevent my attack, in fact..."

Under the shadow of a nearby tree, Fang Yuan crossed his arm as he watched, his eyes shining with uncertainty.

It was not that he did not want to strike, but he just could not find an opportunity to.

He was not anxious though.

The longer this dragged on, the more battle strength would be drained from Bai Ning Bing. The Ten Extreme bodies had a supreme primeval essence recovery rate, much more than A grade, but it still was spent up over time.

The longer Fang Yuan waited, the more primeval essence used up in Bai Ning Bing’s aperture, and the more the scales of victory would shift towards Fang Yuan.

If Bai Ning Bing’s aperture had no primeval essence left, so what if he is the Northern Dark Ice Soul Body? One moonblade and he’s beheaded!

Fang Yuan knew this, and Bai Ning Bing was aware of this fact as well.

Although he currently had the upper hand, his heart was getting heavier.

"I cannot continue like this!" Bai Ning Bing’s blue eyes shone as he took a large step back, pulling some distance from the Xiong Li group.

Next he gulped, his throat expanding like something had risen from his stomach into his mouth.

His jaw was raised high as he opened his mouth in difficulty.

An icy blue colored small bird popped out of his mouth, its head raising above his white teeth. It looked around and soon found a locked onto a specific gaze.

Jumping out of Bai Ning Bing’s mouth, the small, icy bird flapped its wings strongly, flying towards Xiong Li.

The the small blue bird was cute like a pigeon, but Xiong Li and the others’ faces lost their colour upon seeing it.

"Rank three Blue Bird Ice Coffin Gu?"

"Get away from it, quickly!"

The Xiong Li group frantically tried to dodge around, but this blue ice bird was not like the moonblade; once sent out, it was locked on to the target.

"Boom!"

It smashed into the support Gu Master in Xiong Li group, before promptly exploding.

Frosty air blew all over the place, and the piercing blue light from the explosion lit up the entire battlefield.

The next second, the blue light dispersed, and a partially transparent block of ice was revealed, a cold watery blue in color.

The Gu Master was visibly sealed within the ice block, his face still retaining the fear and anxiety before death, but he had lost all signs of life.

Even though Bai Ning Bing was already a Rank three Gu Master, once a Rank three Gu worm was used, his suppressed Rank two primeval essence in his aperture would be rapidly used up. At the same time, it cannot display the true power of a Rank three Gu worm. Moreover, once used, during the following period, the enemy can make use of this opportunity to attack.

But Xiong Li’s group of three were frozen in shock instead, startled by this Blue Bird Ice Coffin Gu.

Bai Ning Bing did not follow up the attack, and instead turned around and left, attempting to leave the battlefield.

This was a wise decision, for if he continued, the situation would become more disadvantageous for him.

"Damn it..."

"Bai Ning Bing, don’t run if you have guts!"

"Big brother Xiong Xin was killed by him, kill him, take revenge for brother Xiong Xin!!!"

Xiong Li group cursed loudly, but could not catch up.

Originally, the four of them were barely enough to form an encirclement, but now that they had one less person, their blockade was easily broken by Bai Ning

Bing.

Seeing that Bai Ning Bing was about to leave the battlefield, at this time, a moonblade flew out from among the bushes, and a person leapt out and quickly following after.

"Bam!"

Bai Ning Bing’s ice blade waved, and dispelled the moonblade. But his abdomen was hit by someone, throwing him back by three large steps.

During this period, Xiong Li and the others were sobered from their stupor, getting close and surrounded Bai Ning Bing again.

Bai Ning Bing ignored the three, staring at the newcomer instead, chuckling.

"So you finally appeared . . ."

"It’s Fang Yuan!" Xiong Lin’s eyes shone, seeing a glimmer of hope.

"Fang Yuan, good job!" Xiong Jiang was overjoyed, shouting.

Xiong Li stayed silent; although he seemed rash, his thoughts were more meticulous than anyone else. Fang Yuan did not strike earlier, but suddenly appeared . . . was he watching the battle all along? The thought of this possibility brought him unease.

Fang Yuan smiled mildly, showing a victorious appearance, but his heart sank. Bai Ning Bing’s act of retreating was to force him to appear. Fang Yuan was clear of his intentions, and saw through it, but so what if he did? He had to show up.

Xiong Li’s expression was also taken into account, and he had expected it.

"Rest assured, everyone." He opened his mouth. "I’ve informed the clan, just hang in there for a little longer, reinforcements are coming!"

Xiong Li was relieved at once.

Xiong Lin, Xiong Jiang’s battle spirits were ignited, and Bai Ning Bing suddenly laughed loudly, "Haha, so he’s called Fang Yuan, such an interesting guy... I only want to kill you even more now!!!"

"I’m afraid you’re not capable enough to achieve that." Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with cold light, taking a step forward.

"Bai Ning Bing, the heavens want you dead, you’re finished!" Xiong Jiang gritted his teeth, running into Bai Ning Bing.

"Bai Ning Bing, you are too arrogant, you will pay the price today!" Xiong Lin growled, moving towards Bai Ning Bing’s back.

"Fang Yuan, stay back a little, back us up and prevent Bai Ning Bing from escaping." Xiong Li said.

If Fang Yuan interfered, it would destroy the chemistry the three of them shared.

Battle continued.

Fang Yuan’s expression was tranquil while he continued to constantly attack, treating Xiong Li’s words as if they were air.

The Xiong Li group frowned; outsider interference would cause the battle formation to be chaotic, and their cooperation would start to fail. But Fang Yuan’s every attack was ruthless and decisive, having a strong grasp of opportunity, instead being of great help to them.

At first, Xiong Li growled threateningly at him, but soon, he shut the fuck up. His frowning face slowly eased, and his brows started to raise instead, revealing his surprise towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not strike much, but each attack he made had great implications on the battle. Once his master level methods were displayed, he instantly grasped the battle in his hands.

Xiong Li’s group of five originally were at a disadvantage when fighting Bai Ning Bing, and ended up getting two of their members killed. But once Fang Yuan joined in, along with the three’s combined combat prowess, they managed to suppress Bai Ning Bing into a corner.

"Bai Ning Bing, just go and die!"

Xiong Li growled loudly, jumping up and landing heavily. His ten fingers intertwined to form a punch, slamming toward Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing wanted to dodge, but Fang Yuan appeared at that moment, and at the same time shot out a moonblade, blocking the direction where he wanted to leap.

Bai Ning Bing had no choice but to endure Xiong Li’s attack.

"Water Shield Gu!"

From his nostrils, two lines of water vapour coiled around his body, forming a spherical barrier of condensed moisture.

With a loud impact and a compressed pop, Xiong Li’s heavy punch landed on the barrier, breaking through it instantly.

But this act also caused the punch to lose all its built up velocity and allowed Bai Ning Bing to escape death.

Even so, Xiong Li took a glance at Fang Yuan, showing signs of admiration. If not for his superb cooperation, this hit would’ve been avoided by Bai Ning Bing. It would not have forced Bai Ning Bing to take the hit head on, expending his primeval essence.

"Water Shield Gu again..."

Fang Yuan did not mind Xiong Li’s gaze, but focused on Bai Ning Bing, frowning.

It was this Water Shield Gu that alleviated Bai Ning Bing’s predicament. The defensive power of the water shield was superior to even the White Jade Gu.

But it had a weakness — he needed to form a ball shape and rely on the moving water to draw the force away, dispersing the damage in order to display its full defensive capabilities.

If Bai Ning Bing was up against a wall, he cannot form a ball shape and his defense power would be greatly reduced.

There are many forests on Qing Mao Mountain, but even then Bai Ning Bing had been very careful, making sure not to get into a tight spot.

"As long as I beat this Water Shield Gu, I can put Bai Ning Bing in a tight spot. But how?" Fang Yuan was thinking, but suddenly Bai Ning Bing’s mouth opened, and a new blue bird flew out.

Xiong Li and the others were fearful of this attack, but Fang Yuan was not flustered in the least.

He snorted coldly, shooting a moonblade.

With a bam, the moonblade hit the ice bird, causing it to explode.

Bai Ning Bing growled in a low voice, he was too close by, and after the ice bird exploded, he was hit by it too.

The impact caused him to fly up and then fall on the the ground. At the same time, half of his left limb was frozen, losing its ability to fight.

"Divine opportunity!" Seeing this, Xiong Li’s eyes shone with brilliance, shouting "Go die!" and his arms gathered to form another punch towards Bai Ning Bing.

This hit was too heavy, and as Bai Ning Bing was on the ground, the Water Shield Gu’s defensive capabilities were less than half of the usual; if this hit his head, there was no doubt that he, Bai Ning Bing, would instantly die.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Seeing that Xiong Li’s fist was about to hit Bai Ning Bing, Xiong Lin and Xiong Jiang both showed a joyful expression.

Only Fang Yuan stood far away, his eyes shining with solemnness.

With his understanding of Bai Ning Bing, how could he commit such a beginner’s mistake?

As expected, at this moment!

Bai Ning Bing suddenly struck; his right hand and forearm’s flesh all turned into a transparent blue frosty ice, from outside his finger bones could be seen.

His fingers gathered straight, forming a palm blade and striking like lightning, puncturing Xiong Li’s heart!

"Urgh!" Xiong Li’s descending body came to a halt.

He stared with wide-opened eyes, lowering his head and staring at his chest in disbelief.

"How can this be?"

"Lord Xiong Li!"

With the sudden twist of events, Xiong Jiang and Xiong Lin could not believe it.

"You think my right arm was really broken by your punch? Naive! I already used the Rank three ice muscle Gu, and trained a body of ice muscles, this is the ultimate defense! The reason I pretended earlier was to give a certain someone a surprise." Bai Ning Bing slowly got up, showing disdain in his eyes, and at the end of his speech, he looked towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s expression was calm, staring at him too.

Plop.

"Bai... Ning Bing...." Xiong Li opened his mouth, saying his last words with difficulty. Bai Ning Bing’s ice hand spread out some cold air and froze his heart, cutting off his life force!

"Scheming scumbag, I will fight it out with you!" Xiong Lin saw Xiong Li’s death firsthand, and under the extreme pain and anger, he ignored his own danger and charged towards Bai Ning Bing.

"Xiong Lin, calm down!’ Xiong Jiang acted in time, restraining Xiong Lin.

"Group leader is dead, we are no longer his match, quickly leave, I’ll block him!" Xiong Jiang controlled his sadness and said.

"Brother Xiong Jiang..." Xiong Lin was dumbfounded, his eyes turning red.

Xiong Jiang shrugged his hand backwards and took a step forwards, blocking Bai Ning Bing.

Shadow Bond Gu!

The shadow below his feet suddenly came alive, distorting creepily, connecting itself to Bai Ning Bing’s shadow.

"I have the Shadow Bond Gu! Once I get hurt, Bai Ning Bing takes the same damage. He won’t kill me so easily. Xiong Lin, you are still young and have better talent than me or group leader, go away quickly!" Xiong Jiang’s gaze was locked onto Bai Ning Bing as he shouted.

"Brother Xiong Jiang!" Xiong Lin’s eyes were teary, he knew the weakness of the Shadow Bond Gu.

In the previous battle, Xiong Jiang had used the Gu worm too, but once Bai Ning Bing pulled sufficient distance, the shadow would split. Xiong Jiang saying this was just to console him.

Especially now, Xiong Jiang did not have enough primeval essence; he had already used up too much, and even the Roaming Zombie Gu had stopped working.

Xiong Lin’s feet seems to have taken roots, as he refused to move a step. He turned around, staring at Fang Yuan, "Fang Yuan, why are the reinforcements not here yet?!"

Fang Yuan did not speak, only staring firmly at Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing moved his right arm, and after a while, his right arm regained its fleshy state. He used a mocking tone, "Reinforcements? Hehehe, they would’ve come long ago if it was the case, but this is all a lie. Tsk tsk tsk, you are even more naive than the other one. You really think such a cheap method like Shadow Bond Gu can restrain me?"

He stared at the shadow in disdain, not giving a fuck.

"Fang Yuan, is this true?" Xiong Lin clenched his fist, eyes speaking fire as he asked furiously.

Fang Yuan did not care about him, but stared at Bai Ning Bing, his mouth curling into a smile, "That move earlier, it expended your primeval essence right? By now, how much primeval essence do you still have in your aperture?"

Xiong Li used a defensive Gu worm but it was weaker than Fang Yuan’s White Jade Gu. The result was that his defense was penetrated, but such an attack is clearly not owned by a Rank two Gu Master.

According to the earlier situation, Fang Yuan guessed that Bai Ning Bing used the Rank three Frost Demon Gu.

This Gu’s ability was strong, renowned among the Rank three Gu, but overuse harmed the user. Joint problems were just a light symptom, but if serious, one’s muscles could be frozen and damaged, thus it needed to be used with other Gu worms.

Bai Ning Bing had said earlier that his muscles had become ice muscles, and could take the cold of the frost. Thus, when used together with the Frost Demon Gu, they complemented each other.

This was still Bai Ning Bing using Rank two primeval essence to forcefully activate a Rank three Gu worm, so it had to have high consumption, but he needed to use such a method to break the stalemate.

Bai Ning Bing’s expression changed; the move earlier had caused a great consumption of his primeval essence, and Fang Yuan saw through it.

Thus, after killing Xiong Li, he did not strike again, but used the talking time to recover.

He laughed heartily, nodding, and confessed, "Not bad, my primeval essence is running dry, I left my right limb unused to lure you to attack. But you didn’t fall for it. Hehehe, the real battle is just starting, isn’t it?"

Fang Yuan squinted.

If Bai Ning Bing denied it, he would attack without doubt. But Bai Ning Bing confessed, showing a look of fearlessness...

Either that Bai Ning Bing knew he was going to die, showing no fear towards death, or he probably had other strong trump cards and had great confidence in surviving.

Ordinary Gu Masters only had three to five Gu worms, even Qing Shu and Chi Shan, were as such.

But there are exceptions.

For example Fang Yuan, with the Moonglow Gu, White Jade Gu, Stealth Scales Gu, Four Flavour Liquor worm, Spring Autumn Cicada, Earth Communication Ear Grass and Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, he had seven Gu worms in his possession.

Bai Ning Bing was the Bai clan’s hope and had the Northern Dark Ice Soul body, an absolute genius. From the start of his cultivating journey, he had received the full support of his clan, his wealth definitely greater than Fang Yuan.

Up till now, he had displayed over six Gu worms. Fang Yuan was sure that he had others.

And these Gu worms allowed him to be calm despite being in this position of having little primeval essence.

Actually, the most troublesome kind of opponent is like him.

Not only having talent, but not fearing death, and having large amount of Gu worms in hand.

With these three, it greatly affected a Gu Master’s battle in terms of victory or loss. Especially Gu worms, with a strong or special one, it can allow a Gu Master to overturn the situation.

Bai Ning Bing’s Frost Demon Gu was a Rank three Gu worm, so even with Fang Yuan’s White Jade Gu defending, he could be penetrated. This is also why Fang Yuan had not engaged Bai Ning Bing personally.

Fang Yuan had used Gu Yue Man Shi, Xiong Li and others to fish out Bai Ning Bing’s secrets. After all, only knowing one’s enemy can one be assured of victory.

In comparing talent, Fang Yuan was only a C grade. Compared to Bai Ning Bing, it was a world of difference. Bai Ning Bing started cultivating earlier and had the clan’s assistance, and he had more outstanding Gu worms in his possession than Fang Yuan.

In terms of temperament, his fearlessness towards death made him almost invulnerable.

The difference between the two was that Bai Ning Bing was strong, and Fang Yuan was weak. This is the truth, he had to accept it and understand it.

But battles are interesting because the strong might not necessarily win, and the weak might not always fall.

Fang Yuan wanting to win against the odds, it was not impossible, but he had to use all of the methods he had, and make use of all the strength he could gather.

"Gu Yue Man Shi was just the beginning, and Xiong Li group is not the end." Thinking so, Fang Yuan struck.

With a moonblade, a head flew away, and blood spewed!

This moment, Bai Ning Bing’s iris shrunk to pin-size, his face changing colour.

Fang Yuan’s moonblade did not attack him, but was aimed at Xiong Jiang’s head.

Xiong Jiang did not expect Fang Yuan’s betrayal; Bai Ning Bing’s pressure was too great, and all his attention was gathered on the latter.

He did not have much primeval essence left, so to conserve them, he did not maintain the Roaming Zombie Gu, thus getting one-shotted.

Bam!

Bai Ning Bing’s face was pale as he vomited a mouthful of blood, and at the same time, his ears, nose and eyes had blood traces.

Ever since the battle started, this was the most severe injury he had sustained.

Shadow Bond Gu!

With the shared damage effect, when the Shadow Bond Gu Master sustains an injury, the chain-linked Gu Master takes 10% of the damage. Now that Xiong Jiang is dead, his injuries were connected through the shadow and transmitted to Bai Ning Bing.

This injury with a direct effect, even if Bai Ning Bing had the Water Shield Gu, it cannot block against it.

"Fang Yuan, what have you done?!" A second later, Xiong Lin came back from shock and shouted in a furious voice, heartbroken.

Fang Yuan ignored him, his body glowing with white jade light as he charged towards Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing getting such an injury, his body was wavering, and his head was dizzy, his battle strength dropped drastically. Seeing Fang Yuan attacking, he retreated immediately.

"Bai Ning Bing, didn’t you want a life and death battle?" Fang Yuan chased relentlessly.

Bai Ning Bing gritted his teeth, escaping silently. His footsteps were messy, but he forced himself to focus, ignoring Fang Yuan’s taunting.

Although he knew he was a dying man and did not fear death, he was not stupid, and with such a dangerous situation, his heart grew calmer.

Xiong Lin stood on the spot, not choosing to help Fang Yuan chase Bai Ning Bing.

His heart was filled with pain and anger. He hated Bai Ning Bing, and also detested Fang Yuan.

Bai and Fang moved closely, traversing the valley.

As time passed, Bai Ning Bing’s injuries slowly recovered, and his nose and eyes stopped bleeding. Slowly his footsteps became more composed.

He did not simply run away, but during this time, used his Gu worm to heal his body’s injuries.

Fang Yuan’s pursued and his heart was secretly shocked.

"Previously Bai Ning Bing’s primeval essence was almost fully expended, but during this time, the amount he recovered was enough to heal his own injuries. Northern Dark Ice Soul body, Ten Extreme talents, what sort of primeval essence recovery speed is this!"

The more he knew, the more determined he was to kill Bai Ning Bing.

Moonglow Gu!

Fang Yuan sent a moonblade around the size of a face flying; it flew across the sky, emitting a buzzing sound.

Bai Ning Bing heard this sound and tried to dodge, but his arm still got sliced away.

An injury appeared and blood poured out, but the injury was quickly covered by a layer of frost, stopping the blood.

Bai Ning Bing had obtained the ice muscles, and once this is achieved, it was like the Black and White Boar Gu’s strength increase — it required no primeval essence to sustain.

But Bai Ning Bing’s heart continued to sink. Before his old injuries healed, new injuries would come; evidently, Fang Yuan wanted to slowly grind him to death!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Hehehe, there has never been anyone who forced me into such a state! Fang Yuan, you... are interesting. Once I recover adequately, I’ll definitely kill you!!" Bai Ning Bing screamed in his heart as he ran.

The killing intent from Fang Yuan had him feel suffocated.

This to him, was an unprecedented experience.

The thick aura of death made his body shudder, and it developed a twisted sense of excitement.

Behind him, Fang Yuan was chasing and getting closer.

"Take this!" He suddenly flicked his wrist, and threw a black coloured Gu worm.

Fang Yuan’s steps came to a halt as if an enemy had appeared, but once he got closer, he found out that this was the Plunder Gu from Xiong Zhan.

Splat.

With a light sound, Fang Yuan caught this Gu worm in his hands.

The Plunder Gu was a black beetle, and at a normal size, its head had a pair of metal antenna, and its back had white spots.

Once the Spring Autumn Cicada revealed its aura, Fang Yuan easily refined this Plunder Gu and kept it in its aperture with some use of its primeval essence.

He continued chasing.

For Bai Ning Bing to even use such a method, it showed the severity of his injuries and the desperate situation he was in. But with this action, the distance between Fang Yuan and him had been pulled apart again.

"Unfortunately, I lack a movement Gu worm. If I had such a Gu worm, I would have caught up to Bai Ning Bing already." Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

"This Fang Yuan, he actually refined the Plunder Gu instantly?" Bai Ning Bing was shocked in his heart.

He obtained this Plunder Gu and had been refining it for the last few days. Although there were improvements, the process was tough and he did not succeed. This is also because Xiong Zhan’s death had an indirect relationship with him. The will of this Plunder Gu originated from Xiong Zhan, thus, it had greater hatred towards Bai Ning Bing and raised the difficulty in refining it.

But Fang Yuan instantly refined this Plunder Gu, and Bai Ning Bing who only used his side vision to see this could feel his heart turn shocked and dismayed.

There are a few Gu worms that can achieve this.

But Bai Ning Bing had never owned one, to think that Fang Yuan would instead?

Unknowingly, he had become more wary of Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan’s image in his heart had intensified in a dangerous and mysterious way.

However, as time passed, Fang Yuan’s heart was the one that sank.

The longer it dragged, the more primeval essence would be recovered by Bai Ning Bing, and the lesser injuries he has. Fang Yuan's advantage over him would become milder and milder.

"I'm afraid I won't be able to kill him this time!" Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

According to this development, it won't be long before Bai Ning Bing's injury and primeval essence recover sufficiently.

Although Fang Yuan had been using the Moonglow Gu to intensify the injuries on him, the Northern Dark Ice Soul body's talent is too outstanding, it can be said to be a gift from heaven. The primeval essence recovery rate was even faster than Fang Yuan using primeval stones.

"Unless... the people in front encountered a wolf pack, and are trapped. Or there will be a Gu Master group appearing, and can temporarily block Bai Ning Bing. But if it is a Bai clan group, I'm in danger."

Fang Yuan's thoughts flowed like a whirlpool as he started to have intentions to retreat.

Their chase was a long road, but in the middle they did not encounter a single pack of wolves or a Gu Master group. This meant to say that Bai Ning Bing who is selecting the escape route also has a recon Gu worm and can avoid danger.

Qing Mao Mountain is so huge, he can escape in all directions, Fang Yuan has no way to force Bai Ning Bing to run in one direction.

"Against the wolf tide, the most important thing is to be united and not be isolated by the wolf tide. Once you are isolated, you are in danger," Qing Shu told Fang Zheng as they were rushing on the road.

"If the opponent is the bold lightning wolf pack, we can defend using terrain, and defeat them head on. But if it is the frenzy lightning wolf pack, the first thing to do is retreat, then use the Signal Gu, and wait for the surrounding Gu Masters to regroup. We need at least three groups to cooperate to have a good chance of defeating the frenzy lightning wolf. Of course, opponents in the wolf tide are not just lightning wolves, but also Gu Masters."

Saying so, Gu Yue Qing Shu paused.

The other four knew who he was talking about.

Evidently, it was Bai Ning Bing.

These days, Bai Ning Bing had been challenging people all over, suppressing his cultivation and only using the Rank two red steel primeval essence, and found trouble with Xiong Li, Chi Shan and the rest.

From what he declared, Gu Yue Qing Shu is his next target.

"If we encounter Bai Ning Bing..." Gu Yue Qing Shu continued, "The best would be to avoid battling."

This sentence entered Fang Zheng's ears and caused his heart to feel disturbed.

In his heart, Gu Yue Qing Shu, although mild on the outside, had a tough personality and stuck close to his principles. From Gu Yue Qing Shu, he could feel a strong sense of kinship. Towards Gu Yue Qing Shu, he respected and loved him, and naturally was not willing to see Bai Ning Bing being superior to Qing Shu.

"Everyone is discussing Bai Ning Bing, what kind of person is he?" Fang Zheng frowned and asked.

The three other people in the group became solemn.

Gu Yue Qing Shu smiled kindly towards Fang Zheng, "He is Qing Mao Mountain’s number one genius! Fang Zheng, listen well. You are still young, and have A grade talent, you might be able to surpass him in the future. So before you fully grow up, avoid direct conflicts with him. Remember the story I told you before? Lowering your head and raising it — sometimes, people have to lower their heads."

Fang Zheng looked towards Qing Shu, and when they made eye contact, he could not help but nod and respond, "I understand, Brother Qing Shu. Please be rest assured."

"Good..." Qing Shu was still speaking, when suddenly the recon Gu Master interrupted, "Not too far away ahead, there is a Gu Master rapidly moving."

Everyone’s expressions changed.

The healing Gu Master Gu Yue Yao Hong’s expression was solemn, "Must be a small group that got scattered by the wolf pack, let’s go save them."

Fang Zheng said instead, "Could it be Bai Ning Bing, doesn’t he travel alone usually?"

"It could be him, or not. But if it really is a Gu Master that got lost, no matter which village, they are our alliance mate. We have to go save them," Gu Yue Qing Shu said, turning direction and charging towards the Gu Master.

The four around him followed closely.

But quickly, the recon Gu Master spoke, "It is not a Gu Master, behind the first Gu Master, there is another one."

"It’s actually two Gu Masters huh. It seems that the situation is just like Sister Yao Hong had said. It should be a group that got separated by the wolf packs," Gu Yue Fang Zheng sighed a breath of relief.

Gu Yue Qing Shu’s expression was unchanging, but the other three’s expression became more relaxed.

At this point, if one was observing from a higher point of view, they would see Qing Shu’s group, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing, getting closer along the mountain road.

"Oh?" Bai Ning Bing’s expression changed. He had a recon Gu, and he felt that a group of five Gu Masters were approaching.

He quickly changed his direction.

Although he had a recon-type Gu worm, it could not detect the identities of the people ahead. Every Gu worm had one ability, thus it had pros and cons.

Taking Fang Yuan’s Earth Communication Ear Grass for example, it can hear noise and is most sensitive to footsteps, but it cannot discern information like male or female. And if a Gu Master uses the Silent Step Gu, they can conceal their footsteps and he would not be able to detect them.

Not knowing who it was, to play it safe, Bai Ning Bing chose to avoid them.

But this time, the situation was different. Qing Shu’s group was full of elites, and their recon Gu Master was a professional as well.

"There’s someone!" Soon after, Fang Yuan detected the existence of Qing Shu group.

He was sprinting, and his right ear had roots growing out, but did not go into the ground, thus his detection range was not even half of its peak.

Bai Ning Bing changed his running direction again.

But Qing Shu group followed closely, changing their direction to match.

This way, be it Bai Ning Bing or Fang Yuan, their expressions turned serious.

The two were extremely clever, they knew at once: This unknown group is the biggest uncertainty, it would definitely affect the result of the battle.

"If it is a Bai clan group, I will immediately use the Stealth Scales Gu and retreat. But if it is the other two clans, hehe." Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with coldness.

He knew that this decision carried certain risks.

If it was a Bai clan group and the Gu Masters among them had a detection method, he would be chased into a dead end.

But if he lost this prime opportunity, he would probably never have another shot at killing Bai Ning Bing.

Furthermore, whichever clan the Gu Masters are from, Fang Yuan had a 66% chance, while Bai Ning Bing only had one third, so Fang Yuan had reason to gamble.

As they sprinted, the two parties continued to get closer.

"We can almost see them, right behind that turning point," the recon Gu Master pointed at a curve along the mountain path.

They could not help but slow their footsteps, awaiting the meeting further ahead.

A white figure turned around the corner, and appeared in front of them.

"Bai Ning Bing!" Fang Zheng shouted in dismay, he had obviously seen Bai Ning Bing’s portrait before.

The other four, even Qing Shu’s expression sank.

"Bai Ning Bing is in such a sorry state, he must’ve encountered a frenzy lightning wolf pack."

"Hmph, he deserves this, travelling alone in the wolf tide, what airs is he trying to put on?"

Everyone at once, did not go up and meet with him.

Bai Ning Bing’s movements and expression, showed signs of escaping, this caused Qing Shu group to feel happy internally.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan shouted from over the corner, "Bai Ning Bing, why are you running? I must kill you today!"

Saying this, he was trying to test water.

Using the Earth Communication Ear Grass, he knew that around the corner, there was an unknown group of five.

If it is a Bai clan group, this proclamation would invite their intense rebuttal.

Around the corner, Qing Shu and the others heard this and their eyeballs rolled wide.

"What’s going on?"

"There’s actually someone chasing and trying to kill Bai Ning Bing?"

"Did I get it wrong, something like this is happening?"

"Getting Bai Ning Bing into such a pathetic state, who in the world is behind him?"

Gu Yue Yao Hong could not help but look at each other, a look of shock all over their faces.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was shocked and suspicious, "This voice, why is it so familiar?"

Before he could remember the owner of the voice, Fang Yuan turned around the corner.

"What?" Gu Yue Qing Shu’s serious expression turned into dumbfoundedness.

The other four stared with their eyes wide opened; after seeing Fang Yuan appear, their eyeballs almost dropped.

"This, this, this!" Gu Yue Yao Ji opened her mouth wide, big enough to swallow a duck egg.

"Big brother!" Fang Zheng was tongue tied.

"It’s him?" Even Gu Yue Qing Shu with outstanding composure, was shocked beyond words.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Who was Bai Ning Bing?

The number one genius of Qing Mao mountain—someone who could single-handedly change the structure of the three clans, whose cultivation speed left everyone dumbfounded, dimming the luster of even A grade geniuses. No one doubted his future accomplishments; even his enemies had no choice but to accept the fact his talent was unparalleled.

However, now someone was actually making this genius flee in such a wretched state.

No one among the Qing Shu group expected this.

What was even more astonishing was that the person chasing after Bai Ning Bing was actually from their clan: Fang Yuan.

Regarding their impressions of Fang Yuan, they were mainly based around the arena battles and chasing away River Swallowing Toad. And since the moment Fang Yuan had admitted defeat to Xiong Li, his true strength was widely underestimated.

"When did Fang Yuan become so powerful?"

The Qing Shu group found this difficult to accept.

Fang Yuan turned around the corner.

"Gu Yue Qing Shu!" His mind jolted when he saw the Gu Yue Qing Shu group.

"I won the gamble. Bai Ning Bing, today will be the day you die," Fang Yuan thought. He shouted, "Little brother, you were here! Great! Quickly stop Bai Ning Bing! He is a heinous murderer who killed the Xiong Li group and even our clan’s Gu Yue Man Shi group!"

"What?"

"But our clans have signed a treaty!"

"No, nothing is too excessive for Bai Ning Bing."

"So it was like that! No wonder Fang Yuan was able to chase Bai Ning Bing....."

The Qing Shu group was shocked and came to a realization. It seemed that after Bai Ning Bing had fought several intense battles, his fighting power had fallen to its lowest state—allowing Fang Yuan to luckily seize the upper hand.

"Am I really going to die here? No, I have just enough primeval essence to self-detonate the Frost Demon Gu. I still have hope!" Bai Ning Bing thought in his mind. In front of him was the Qing Shu group and behind him was Fang Yuan. The situation was extremely unfavorable.

Actually, there was a rift in Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng’s relationship; Fang Zheng naturally wouldn’t heed Fang Yuan’s words.

However, Bai Ning Bing didn’t know of this. As an outsider, he only saw the similarity in appearance between Fang Zheng and Fang Yuan, and firmly made a choice.

He lifted his right arm, pouring all the hard-earned primeval essence that he had recovered into the Frost Demon Gu in his right palm.

The muscles in his right arm transformed into a light blue ice. One could clearly see the white bones of his arm within the ice.

Bang!

With an explosive sound, Bai Ning Bing’s whole right arm suddenly self-detonated.

Steam and mist arose, and an intense chill started to crazily pervade the surroundings.

Snap, crack.

Pure, white frost spread onto the narrow mountain path in the blisteringly hot summer, covering the soil and the trees. The temperature abruptly dropped.

"He sacrificed his entire right arm!" Fang Zheng was aghast by Bai Ning Bing’s ruthless move.

"Quick, retreat." Gu Yue Qing Shu grabbed Fang Zheng and hurriedly ran away.

Great amounts of frost rushed towards them like the wolf tide.

It would be very troublesome if they actually got frozen.

Fang Yuan retreated to a distance of hundred steps along with the Qing Shu group as the onslaught of frost gradually dwindled.

Originally, the mountain path had been full of lush trees, filled with the fragrance of wild plants. Now, it had become a world of ice. The trees were all frozen and there was a thick layer of snow on the ground.

Fang Yuan stepped onto the snow and approached the middle of the mountain path.

Bai Ning Bing’s whole body was frozen in ice like an insect in amber, his expression still showing the malevolent decisiveness and ruthlessness of his personality.

"He.... suicided?" Fang Zheng muttered. The Qing Shu group had quickly followed after Fang Yuan.

"No!" Qing Shu’s expression was very heavy. "Bai Ning Bing has already formed ice muscles, this layer of ice crystals won’t freeze him to death and will instead act as his armor, giving him time to recover."

Fang Yuan stared closely at Bai Ning Bing and threw a moonblade.

Screech.

The moonblade produced a crisp sound when it struck the ice crystals.

On the three meters high and two meters wide ice crystal, there was only a shallow scar. But in just a moment, the cold aura within the ice crystal filled the injury and the scar disappeared.

"Fang Yuan, is what you said earlier true?" Qing Shu turned his gaze towards Fang Yuan.

"Of course. Only Xiong Lin remains of the Xiong Li group and he can testify for me. We can’t stay here for too long; the details will have to wait. We must quickly leave this place." Fang Yuan nodded and answered.

He had made up his mind to leave.

He knew he was unable to destroy this ice crystal. Even if they were to combine their strengths to destroy it, it would waste a lot of time and primeval essence.

If Bai Ning Bing broke out of the ice, their fighting strength would have dropped and his fighting strength would have recovered, making it a bad situation if a battle started.

"Leave? Why should we leave?" Fang Zheng couldn’t refrain from asking in a loud voice. "Bai Ning Bing has already destroyed his right arm and with the battles he went through, he is tired both mentally and physically. We can break open this ice crystal and activate the Signal Gu for the clan’s reinforcements to eliminate him! This is an extremely rare opportunity."

Everyone’s hearts were moved by these words.

"Since Fang Yuan could chase Bai Ning Bing and try to kill him, why can’t we do the same?" Several Gu Masters looked at each other and they couldn’t help but have such thoughts.

"If we kill Bai Ning Bing, we will become great heroes of the Gu Yue clan!"

"But if we kill him, won’t the Bai village start a war in their anger? And now, there is the wolf tide...."

"No, it is exactly because there is a wolf tide that even if we kill Bai Ning Bing, Bai village will just have to swallow their bitterness."

"Right, a dead genius isn’t a genius!"

The group members discussed, their minds set on the fame and glory.

"Truly stupid, how can you imagine the power of the Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique?" Fang Yuan squinted his eyes while sneering inwardly. He was not going to accompany these people if they wanted to look for death.

Gu Yue Qing Shu also hesitated.

He, no doubt, had much deeper understanding of Bai Ning Bing than the rest of the group.

He didn’t know of the secret of the ten extreme physiques, but he didn’t have much yearning towards the fame from killing Bai Ning Bing, either.

He was indifferent towards fame and profits; he had once been nurtured by Gu Yue Bo as the next clan head, but he willingly gave up this position to Fang Zheng.

His true concerns lay within the interests of the clan, and his heart was intricately linked with the clan’s well-being.

"Bai village’s emergence is completely due to Bai Ning Bing. If we kill Bai Ning Bing, our Gu Yue Clan will remain the number one clan of Qing Mao mountain! Although Bai Ning Bing is a Rank three Gu Master, I have the Wood Charm Gu and the ability to fight with him. Moreover, he just lost his right arm and he will certainly need some time to get used to the absence of a limb. This can be the greatest disadvantage in a life and death battle!" Qing Shu thought.

Gu Yue Qing Shu’s gaze turned resolute.

Fang Yuan was observing Qing Shu’s expression the entire time; he realized what the latter had chosen to do when he saw Qing Shu’s expression.

"If Gu Yue Qing Shu uses the Wood Charm Gu without any regards to the consequences, he will be much stronger than the average Rank three Gu Master and even have the power to surpass levels and fight. However, the one he is facing is Bai Ning Bing who possesses the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique. The battle definitely won’t be easy. Since Bai Ning Bing can dilute his primeval essence and suppress his cultivation, he can naturally restore his Rank three cultivation. Right now, he has enough time inside the ice crystal to remove this restriction. Once he breaks out, he will very likely be as a Rank three Gu Master."

Bai Ning Bing was extremely talented and Fang Yuan had needed external help to fight against him even when Bai Ning Bing’s cultivation was suppressed to Rank two.

Once Bai Ning Bing enters Rank three, his fighting strength would rise by several times. Fang Yuan was the main cause of the loss of his right arm. When the battle begins, Bai Ning Bing’s ruthless temperament will definitely target Fang Yuan.

Moreover, Fang Yuan had some concerns and didn’t want to reveal his true strength in front of Gu Yue Qing Shu.

Thus, Fang Yuan immediately expressed his intention to leave and left the battlefield, ignoring the urges of others to stay.

"He really left? Such a coward."

"Hmph, him leaving is good. If he were to meddle, it might instead destroy our tacit teamwork."

"Hahaha, it really frightened me when I saw him chasing after Bai Ning Bing. Now, it seems Fang Yuan is indeed Fang Yuan: a coward who admitted defeat in the Gu battle competition!"

"Quit it, everyone has their own ambitions. At least, he gave us intel on Bai Ning Bing before he left. Moreover, he will inform the clan who will send reinforcements." As Qing Shu gazed at the departing figure of Fang Yuan, his brows slightly furrowed.

"Group leader, you are too kind. There is no need to justify for cowards like Fang Yuan."

"Right, although Fang Yuan is Fang Zheng’s older brother, the way I see it, one is earth and the other is heaven."

" I, I have already stopped talking with Fang Yuan," Fang Zheng’s face grew red, he felt ashamed at Fang Yuan’s running away before battle.

"Fang Zheng, you leave too," Gu Yue Qing Shu suddenly spoke.

"What?!" Fang Zheng’s eyes were wide open.

"As the clan’s only A grade talent, we can’t lose you. Bai Ning Bing may have lost an arm, but the following battle will definitely be very dangerous. For the clan, we can die, but you, Fang Zheng, must not die."

The other four members were all moved.

"Well said!" A bright laughter echoed and an old Gu Master appeared.

"Lord elder." Fang Zheng promptly paid his respects. He recognized this man as a very senior clan elder.

The elder drew near, looking at Gu Yue Qing Shu with praise, "Gu Yue Bo raised a great adopted son. With such feelings of fighting to the death for the clan, why would we have to worry about our Gu Yue Clan not expanding?"

Fang Zheng was still growing up and after the Wang Er’s assassination attempt, the clan had sent an elder to always follow Fang Zheng and protect him.

"Fang Zheng, you don’t need to take part in the fight. But don’t leave; you can just observe from a distance. Isn’t it just a Bai Ning Bing? I’ve always heard about how outstanding he is and how he has the strength of an elder. Hmph, now it seems he is only just a kid. How much battle experience can he have? Mutilating himself, he is really amateurish!" The elder snorted in disdain.

Gu Yue Qing Shu still wanted to persist in his own viewpoint, but it wouldn’t be good to refute the elder’s decision.

As a junior, he needed to respect the old and take care of the young. How could he so easily refute and question his elder?

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

And that concludes today’s batch of all the owed chapters of December! I just got back from my trip, it was very fun and enjoyable. Also I hope you guys had a good Christmas, I didn’t get any gifts but I hope you guys did :3 || Sorry for the long wait and thank you for your patience, everyone! Please look forward to this week’s 7 chaps happily with a new year smile :D

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The time Bai Ning Bing took to break out of the ice was shorter than anyone had imagined.

With a loud crack, the ice crystal began to fracture, the cracks intensifying until it completely broke from within.

The clan elder, Gu Yue Qing Shu, Gu Yue Yao Hong and the others, totaling up to five altogether, had surrounded him. Gu Yue Fang Zheng was standing far away on the mountain slope, staring at the battle from a higher ground while staying vigilant. Once a Bai clan Gu Master group appears, he has to send out a warning immediately.

"Bai Ning Bing, you dare to kill the Gu Masters in our clan, breaking the three clan alliance openly. Paying a life for a life is natural law! What else do you have to say?" the clan elder said with a haughty snort.

Bai Ning Bing did not pay him any mind, staying quiet and staring at his right arm instead.

His left arm floundered in vain, grasping nothing as it was reaching for something that wasn’t even there in the first place.

He started to frown, his face dim like water as lightning started to nurture between his eyes.

"Actually forcing me to lose off my right arm, this guy is called Fang Yuan, right..." Listening to Xiong Li and Qing Shu’s words, he had already learned Fang Yuan’s name.

Muttering, Bai Ning Bing’s pair of crystal blue eyes was filled with extremely callous killing intent.

His body emanated the oppressive aura of a Rank three Gu Master. As Fang Yuan had predicted earlier, with the capabilities to seal his own cultivation, Bai Ning Bing was also able to release the restrictions on it. It was just that in the battle earlier, he did not have sufficient time to unlock it.

Now, the white silver primeval essence of Rank three filled his aperture fully. The dense primeval essence placed great pressure on his surrounding aperture walls; Bai Ning Bing knew that he was moving towards the path of destruction.

A Gu Master’s aperture produced primeval essence, and the primeval essence in turn, nurtures the aperture.

The truth being, as long as the primeval essence exists within the aperture, it acts as a form of nurturing towards the aperture. It is just that this effect is not very evident, far less effective than the Gu Master using the primeval essence to do so.

This was similar to how a still sea water would still have a corrosive effect towards surrounding rocks, but this effect is less evident than the waves hitting on the rocks.

But to the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique, after attaining Rank three, even if they do not expend primeval essence, as long as the primeval essence is stored in the aperture, the nurturing effect would be the same as if a Gu Master was actively using the primeval essence to nurture their aperture.

This is the secret behind the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique’s ability to raise a Gu Master’s cultivation at rocket speed.

Moreover, this nurturing effect would become stronger as the primeval essence is refined. At Rank four, as long as primeval essence exists within the aperture, they would nourish the aperture and the effect would be several times better than a regular Gu Master using primeval essence to nurture their aperture.

With ordinary Gu Masters, the higher their cultivation, the slower the speed of cultivation. However, the ten extreme physiques were the opposite – the higher the cultivation, the stronger their aptitude and the faster their cultivation, until they explode into oblivion.

As an analogy, it is similar to a person in free fall, dependent on the posture and qualities of that person, they would continue to accelerate as they descended, albeit dying a horrible death once they reach the ground.

The ten extreme physiques’ cultivation technique is falling from the highest point with the most suited conditions to fall faster than anyone else. As their cultivation gets faster and faster, it only gives them the temporary glory that they attain before they face the threat of death approaching. Like a meteor landing on Earth, moving toward its own destruction; the point where it shines the brightest comes only at the very moment where it burns up completely in the atmosphere.

Earlier, the reason Bai Ning Bing had diluted his white silver primeval essence into red steel primeval essence was for because of this.

Right now, his aperture was completely filled with white silver primeval essence again, and he could feel that every second, his cultivation was steadily rising and improving.

"Actually forcing me to use the white silver primeval essence, and even making me go as far as to sacrifice the Frost Demon Gu! Where is Fang Yuan?" Bai Ning Bing’s killing intent intensified as he asked. His blue iris swept across the surroundings, but could not find a trace of Fang Yuan.

The Frost Demon Gu that he sacrificed was a Rank three Gu worm, one that he only managed to refine after three failures and consuming a large amount of resources. Now that it was gone, it is truly a waste.

Although Bai Ning Bing is Rank three, it only happened recently, and even with the clan’s support, he could not hog all the resources to himself. Thus, he only had two Rank three Gu worms. Now that the Frost Demon Gu is gone, he only had the Blue Bird Ice Coffin Gu left.

The more he thought about it, the more he felt angered! Since the start of his youth, he had never suffered such a loss!

If Fang Yuan was here, he’d have attacked in a frenzy with no one able to stop him.

Bai Ning Bing’s disregard caused the Gu Yue clan elder to feel greatly humiliated.

"Arrogant young lad, eat my moonblade slash!" He shouted, and jumped.

"Hmph!" Bai Ning Bing’s left arm swept, and the frost air that gushed out formed into a long ice blade.

The original ice blade he created was only over a meter long, but now it was two meters in length, with an even deadlier edge and greater frost energy.

Ching!

The Clan elder raised both hands shining with moonlight to collide with the ice blade, emitting a metallic noise.

The Clan elder’s face was full of shock however as he took a step back, and both his palms clapped together and slashed out.

Golden moon slash!

A curved moonblade, over a meter long with a golden body, emitted a dominating aura as it flew out.

The golden moonlight reflected on Bai Ning Bing’s pale face. He laughed as he raised the ice blade in his left hand, attacking head on.

Clank!

Moonblade and ice blade colliding, the golden moon disappeared, and the ice blade broke into small fragments of ice.

"This is a battle between Rank three Gu Masters? Really strong, not only the ice blade, but also that golden moonblade, I cannot block either!" Far away, Fang Zheng watched in fascination, with his lacking knowledge.

"How can this be? A Rank two Ice Blade Gu, managing to block my Rank three Moonhand blade, as well as the golden moon!" Clan elder stared with bulging eyes, disbelief in his tone.

The Northern Dark Ice Soul physique had a strengthening effect towards Ice Gu, a variation of water-type Gu. In addition, this boost grew stronger as the Gu Master’s cultivation rose.

Bai Ning Bing, at Rank three in cultivation, can make a Rank two Gu worm display Rank three power. When he is Rank four, if he used a Rank four Gu worm, it would have an effect that can even surpass Rank five.

Firstly, he suppressed his cultivation, thus only the effect of recovering primeval essence remained. Now that his limiter was off and he was back to Rank three, the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique’s true ability was starting to show up.

"Hmph, old man, you don’t know a lot of things." Bai Ning Bing’s feet paused, holding his ice blade horizontally, as he started to rotate.

Huhuhu......

The intense sound of the wind enveloped him as he became faster and faster.

Howl!

The wind seemed to have transformed into a beast howl, a five meter sword storm forming after a matter of minutes.

The tornado-like winds were white in color, whipping out and causing the people nearby to have numbed senses.

"Quickly dodge!" Even a clan elder, upon seeing this, did not dare to challenge it — he quickly avoided.

But the other Rank two Gu Masters could not manage to dodge in time.

The ice blade storm came at once, with a speed three times or even greater than before.

Ah——!

As soon as the two male Gu Masters were caught up in the storm, their cries came to a stop. In a matter of seconds, they were already minced to a paste by the ice blades and lost their lives on the spot.

"Save me!" Gu Yue Yao Hong screamed in fear, seeing that she was about to be swept into the tornado and perish.

Green Vine Gu!

Gu Yue Qing Shu shot out green vines, which quickly coiled around Gu Yue Yao Hong's waist like snakes.

Just as he was about to drag her back, the ice blade storm had already reached her, devouring her in one shot.

Swish swish swish.

The ice blades instantly went to work, cutting this female Gu Master into five or six pieces. The icy air had already frozen her blood before she could bleed.

Soon after, these pieces were further cut into smaller pieces, forming palm-sized frozen corpse fragments.

"Yao Hong!" Seeing this scene, Qing Shu grieved with sorrowful eyes.

"Sister Yao Hong..." On the slope, Fang Zheng could not take such an intense scene, kneeling on the ground with a soulless gaze, tears overflowing from his eyes.

"Damn it, Steel Shirt Gu!" The clan elder took a deep breath as his body glowed with black light, looking as he was covered in a steel armor.

He used both arms to cover his face as his legs sprinted, charging towards the icy blue ice blade storm.

Chink chink chink.

He charged inside bravely.

In a few breaths time, the ice blades hacked on his body numerous times, emitting a crisp sound.

A moment later, the storm ended.

Bai Ning Bing and the clan elder faced each other.

"Old thing, you are asking for death." Bai Ning Bing’s blue iris were purer, complementing his white hair and white clothes while standing still in the cold winds.

His left hand’s ice blade had already broken into two. But this did not stop it from penetrating the elder’s heart.

"Huh..." Clan elder lowered his head, staring at his left chest, his mouth emitting a sound of helplessness and shock.

Bai Ning Bing let go of his right hand, abandoning this ice blade. He walked past the clan elder, steadily approaching.

Behind him, the clan elder’s face was covered with a light blue frost, and soon he collapsed onto the ground to never get up again.

Far away, Fang Zheng saw this scene and his irises shrunk to the size of pins, intense fear spreading throughout his body.

This was out of his wildest dreams.

A grand Rank three clan elder actually died like this. This Bai Ning Bing is so strong?!

"Where is Fang Yuan? Tell me, and I can let you die peacefully." Bai Ning Bing walked towards Gu Yue Qing Shu.

"Bai Ning Bing..." Gu Yue Qing Shu sighed deeply, staring at Bai Ning Bing without fear, "You and I have fought over ten times, you are getting stronger, and right now I have to admit that you have surpassed me. But your strength cannot cause me to betray my clansman. Come, fight me!"

"Just you? Hehe." Bai Ning Bing snorted in disdain, turning around to look at Fang Zheng, raising a brow. "That is Fang Yuan’s brother?"

Gu Yue Qing Shu’s expression changed, taking a big step out and blocking Bai Ning Bing. "Don’t think of finding trouble with him!"

Bai Ning Bing’s face sank. "You are quite an interesting opponent, keeping you alive can add some colour to my life. But my mood is very bad now, don’t take my patience for granted. Tell me nicely, which direction Fang Yuan went."

Gu Yue Qing Shu replied him in the most direct way with action.

He closed his eyes, and opened them again.

Wood Charm Gu!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Sup guys :3

Today will be a 3 chapter release, because it’s a 3-part series! So don’t say I’m not nice, because I’m releasing them together in a day! You get to enjoy the full 3 parts, so yay! (Wow it rhymes)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Under the power of the Rank three Gu worm, Qing Shu’s eyes turned into a jade green colour.

At this moment, his aura changed. From a vibrant human, it turned into a deep serene forest feeling.

"Oh?" Bai Ning Bing showed slight shock unknowingly. He pouted in dissatisfaction, "It seems that after a long time, you’ve gained some interesting new skills."

Icicle Gu.

He willed the Gu, and five sharp icicles appeared out of nowhere.

"Go." Bai Ning Bing’s ice hand pointed, and the icicle shot out.

Pow pow pow.

From Qing Shu’s palms, two vines grew out. The vines danced in the air like two snakes, dancing agilely, easily deflecting the icicles.

The icicle changed directions, only scraping Qing Shu’s shoulder, and stabbed deeply into the ground, the hard mountain rock, and the forest that stood like a statue.

Qing Shu easily broke through the attack, causing Bai Ning Bing’s attack to be futile.

Bai Ning Bing laughed coldly, "Your whipping skills got better, but I want to see, how many icicles can you block?"

Saying so, Bai Ning Bing’s eyes shone with a mild blue light.

Ten icicles appeared immediately, floating in front of him before shooting towards Qing Shu.

After that, ten more were created......

Like this, over several times, it turned into an icicle rain.

Swoosh......

The icicle tore through the air, emitting a sound that shocked people’s hearts.

Qing Shu dodged while manipulating his green vine with both hands, dancing like a shadow.

His whipping technique after countless practices, had gotten to a level where he could command them like his fingers, fully in sync.

But there was too many icicles; Qing Shu was bound to miss some, and his shoulder was hit by an icicle.

The icicle penetrated his right shoulder, and the tip appeared from behind him.

Pin Needle Gu.

Qing Shu controlled the pain, sweeping his long hair. From the tips of his hair, numerous jade coloured pin needles shot out.

The pin needles engulfed Bai Ning Bing, but he managed to activate the Water Shield Gu in time — it had gotten stronger too, and was much thicker than before, being no weaker than a Rank three Gu worm’s defense.

The pin needles entered the water shield and slowed to a halt, before being purged by the water currents.

But this also forced Bai Ning Bing to stop his icicle attack.

Seeing this opportunity, Qing Shu ignored the pain and pulled out the icicle from his shoulder by force.

There was no blood dripping out, one was due to the icicle’s cold air, and the other was because his body was gradually turning into wood.

Bai Ning Bing kept the Water Shield Gu, his gaze attracted to Gu Yue Qing Shu’s injury.

From the opening on his torn shirt, he could see Qing Shu’s injury, revealing the rings of the tree trunk, and his flesh could be seen recovering at an observable speed, and on the newly grown muscles, the tree’s ring lines were formed.

At the same time, both his ears started to become longer, and his hair turned jade green, with green leaves growing within. Both his hands, from the fleshy colour of a normal person, turned darker and more reserved. His skin became harder, and turned into the brown tree bark.

This was the first time he had used the Wood Charm Gu without considering the consequences!

The Wood Charm Gu was causing him to turn into a tree spirit, and at the same time, Gu Yue Qing Shu could feel the rich natural essence in the air.

These essence could not be felt by ordinary Gu Masters. Only special lifeforms like tree spirits could feel, absorb and use them.

Gu Yue Qing Shu felt that he was soaking in his mother’s liquid, thick essence enveloping him, giving him a strong sense of fulfillment.

On his body, the Moonwhirl Gu did not change, but the Green Vine Gu, Pin Needle Gu and the vitality grass all showed signs of growth. With Qing Shu’s identity as a tree spirit, when he uses these wood attribute Gu worms, their power is amplified!

Gu Yue Qing Shu breathed deeply, he had never felt so strong before! The rich natural essence gave him an almost infinite source of primeval essence to use. This was the power of the Wood Charm Gu.

But in his heart, a deep sense of fear also rose.

He knew that if he was greedy over this strong and comfortable feeling, and used the Wood Charm Gu without restraint, he would eventually turn into a dead treeman.

Any thing had its price.

Gu Yue Qing Shu soon suppressed this fear. He stared at Bai Ning Bing and said two words –"Let’s fight."

Thus, the intense battle started.

Green vine vs Ice blade, Icicle vs Pin needles!

One was the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique, with insane primeval essence recovery rate, and the other was the wood charm tree spirit, using all the natural essence as his own.

This battle, had far surpassed the realm of ordinary Rank three Gu Masters.

Fang Zheng stood on the slope, watching dumbstruck. He had never seen such an all-out intense fight!

Normally speaking, Gu Masters have limited primeval essence, and they always have to keep 10% of it as reserves. Carefully using them, like thin ice.

But now, be it Qing Shu or Bai Ning Bing, both were using it without constraints as if they had an unlimited supply of primeval essence.

The entire path was wrecked by their battle. Huge trees fell and were destroyed, mountain rocks smashed to bits.

After a long time......

Blue bird ice coffin Gu!

Bai Ning Bing grabbed an opportunity and opened his mouth, and from within, an ice blue bird flew out.

The flying bird chirped, its body like a pigeon, but under the boost of the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique, it gradually turned into the size of an eagle while flying, and after circling for a while, flew towards Gu Yue Qing Shu.

Gu Yue Qing Shu could not dodge in time, so he faced it head on.

Bam.

A sound explosion later, Gu Yue Qing Shu was frozen in an ice crystal as large as a room.

"It’s over..." Bai Ning Bing sighed as he had not fully enjoyed himself.

He saw the immobile Gu Yue Qing Shu within the ice crystal, and muttered, "Thanks for providing me such an interesting experience, this battle is the most exciting one I’ve had thus far. Qing Shu, your death has meaning, I will remember it clearly."

"Lord Qing Shu!" On the slope, Fang Zheng shouted loudly.

"Why are you shouting, you mere ant, the next one will be you." Bai Ning Bing snorted, walking towards Fang Zheng.

At this point, the sound of the ice crystal breaking entered his ears.

"How can this be?" He turned around and saw that within the ice crystal, Qing Shu had undergone a massive transformation.

His body became bigger, and his Rank two Gu Master outfit was almost ripped.

His hair turned into green vines, and palm-sized leaves grew on it endlessly, turning into a thick greenery.

His fingers had turned into sturdy wood, his limbs turning into thick tree branches, only having a rough form for his arms and legs.

With a sound, the ice crystal broke completely.

Gu Yue Qing Shu stood up; he had already changed in appearance completely, the original delicate and handsome human face turned into a sharp-nosed, huge eye tree spirit face.

He was three meters tall with a strong body, wearing tree barks as his armor, and on them were large amounts of leaves and vines.

Bai Ning Bing stared at his transformation in shock; compared to this Qing Shu, he was like a child beside an adult.

"This appearance, did you refine the Wood Charm Gu? This Gu is way harder to refine than my Frost Demon Gu!" Bai Ning Bing found the answer.

"Tree spirit wood charm can use the essence in the air, no wonder Gu Yue Qing Shu had such ample primeval essence." He realized at once, but got more confused.

He asked the question in his heart, "Qing Shu, using the Wood Charm Gu like this, aren’t you afraid of turning into a dead treeman? So what if you win me? You’re destined to die!"

"Bai Ning Bing..." Gu Yue Qing Shu’s voice became low, "I understand you like I understand myself. You and I are both orphans, adopted by the clan leader. Yet we walk on such different paths. A tree dying in a forest is nothing, for as long as the forest exists, numerous trees will continue to grow and rise up. Let’s have our final battle, my nemesis!"

Saying so, hundreds of green vines assaulted Bai Ning Bing like giant pythons.

"For the clan? What a fool!" Bai Ning Bing retreated in a rush.

But the green vines’ speed was faster than before by several times, quickly chasing up to Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing controlled his body and dodged nimbly. Green vines thick as an arm swept near his body, hitting the soil or the mountain rocks, causing the soil to fly and the rock fragments to scatter.

Water Shield Gu!

Bai Ning Bing could not dodge in time, and created his shield.

Qing Shu had seen through the weakness of this Gu worm. He did not attack forcefully, but manipulated the vines to wrap around the shield.

Next, he pulled back his strength, and the water shield came into contact. The surface water current moved quickly as it hit the green vines, causing water to splash everywhere.

The water shield could not endure the strength of the green vines’ restriction, and shrunk in size, on the verge of collapsing.

"Not good! If the water shield breaks and I get entangled in the green vines, I will get killed by Gu Yue Qing Shu!" Bai Ning Bing in the water shield was sure of his situation.

In the next moment, the water shield exploded.

Bam!

An ice blade storm exploded from within, becoming larger and larger.

Bai Ning Bing purposely withdrew the Water Shield Gu’s defense — since defending couldn’t work, he had to fight offense with offense!

At once, the temperature fell and cold air emanated.

The white ice blade storm flew towards Qing Shu. The vines could not stop this tornado, and were cut into numerous segments by the ice blades.

"Nice timing." Gu Yue Qing Shu had no fear, his large body bravely entering the ice blade storm.

With a bam, he knocked onto the white colour tornado.

He opened both hands, wrapping around it.

Crack crack......

The sharp ice blades cut through his body, and numerous leaves and tree bark were sent flying.

The delayed sense of pain assaulted him as Qing Shu growled in pain, but did not let go, using all his strength to grip the tornado.

The ice blade storm was actually shrinking under his strength.

"Damn it! This maniac that doesn’t care for his life..." Bai Ning Bing scolded internally. In this situation there was no other way, he could only create more ice blades and rotate faster, competing with Gu Yue Qing Shu.

The ice blades slashed on Qing Shu’s body and gradually became blunt, but under the Ice Blade Gu’s power, they sharpened once again.

The battle was at a stalemate, out of their control, and no one could hold back and stop.

Either Gu Yue Qing Shu kills Bai Ning Bing, or Bai Ning Bing kills Qing Shu. Pitting offense with offense, the battle was filled with bravery and intensity.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Place bets, place bets, who will win, Qing Shu or Bai Ning Bing? Leaf boy VS Icicle boy, results will be out soon!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Zheng stood far away, not even daring to take a deep breath as he watched.

The battle had reached the climax, the winner and loser will be decided in this showdown.

"Lord Qing Shu, hang in there!" Fang Zheng was so nervous his body was shaking, he knew that going over would only cause trouble, thus he could only cheer for Gu Yue Qing Shu loudly.

As if he heard Fang Zheng’s voice, the ice blade storm got smaller, forcefully suppressed by Qing Shu.

"Damn it, I can actually get into a situation where my primeval essence is insufficient..." Bai Ning Bing gritted his teeth, rotating slower as his primeval essence recovery could not keep up with his expenditure, getting into a helpless situation.

The Northern Dark Ice Soul physique’s primeval essence recovery is very fast, but the recovery speed at Rank three is still slightly inferior to the tree spirit’s ability to extract natural essence. If Bai Ning Bing could cultivate to Rank four, his recovery speed would greatly surpass the Wood Charm Gu.

Except, in life and death battles, there is no "if".

Whether its win or lose, the results have to be accepted.

Eventually the ice blade storm stopped, but Gu Yue Qing Shu also paid a heavy price.

His arms were large like a horse carriage, and at the moment on his left arm he had two fingers left and three on his right. Both his palms were sliced off by half due to the ice blades.

But when his palms gradually gathered together towards the middle, new tree branches grew again rapidly from his palm, interweaving together.

The two palms formed a wooden cage, trapping Bai Ning Bing within.

"Damn it!" Bai Ning Bing gritted his teeth. His primeval essence was running dry, he could only be at Qing Shu’s mercy.

"We won!!" Far away, Fang Zheng jumped at this sight.

"Am I going to die...?" Bai Ning Bing shouted in his heart, his eyes widening as he saw the two palms approaching. When both palms clasp together, he would be smashed into a bloody meat pie.

But the palm’s speed became slower, and slowly stood in mid-air.

Bai Ning Bing was stunned momentarily, before realizing that Gu Yue Qing Shu’s body had developed problems, instantly being overjoyed.

"Damn, I was so close..." At this moment, Gu Yue Qing Shu’s heart was filled with helplessness. His hands had lost all senses, completely turning into wood.

At the same time, he gradually lost the connection to his intestines and lungs. The Wood Charm Gu’s ability had corroded his entire body, bringing him to the brink of death.

"No, it cannot end like this! I can still use the Green Vine Gu!" Gu Yue Qing Shu forced himself to focus and activated the Green Vine Gu.

Numerous thick vines appeared and attacked Bai Ning Bing through the openings of the cage.

Bai Ning Bing dodged quickly but he had undergone several battles, and his stamina was greatly depleted. Furthermore, there was little space in the cage, and he could not move much, thus eventually a vine entangled onto his right leg and tripped him.

"It’s over." Qing Shu sighed in relief, as he quickly moved tens of green vines to follow up.

At his moment of life and death, Bai Ning Bing’s aperture finally recovered enough primeval essence for his usage requirement.

He used all the primeval essence without further thoughts, sending it all into the Ice Blade Gu, and formed a new ice blade.

The ice blade was sharp and cut off the green vine on his right leg. Bai Ning Bing rolled in a sorry state, managing to avoid tens of vines.

The green vines hit the ground and penetrated the thick earth. The soil flew around, and the green vines attacked once again.

Bai Ning Bing breathed heavily as he used the ice blade to defend desperately.

The green vines attacked from all directions, as if he was walking on thin ice. A single mistake by Bai Ning Bing would cause him to be instantly killed by the vines.

But he was after all a top tier genius. With the stimulation of death, he squeezed out all the potential in him, and his evasive actions became quick and clear.

Although he was tripped sometimes by the green vines, he managed to avoid the danger and eventually kept his life.

The green vines were cut by the ice blades, and their amount became less and less.

It was not that Qing Shu did not want to activate the Green Vine Gu and produce more vines, but it was because the surrounding natural essence had been almost fully absorbed by him.

Although outside, there was still essence in the air gathering, the diluted essence in the air was no longer able to fulfill the Green Vine Gu’s needs.

There was an even worse piece of news — the Wood Charm Gu’s strength had completely corroded Gu Yue Qing Shu’s body, and was starting to take over his consciousness.

Gu Yue Qing Shu’s consciousness started to become dazed, and he had intermediate blank outs.

The aura of death was blowing on his face.

"Is it going to end? No..." He was indignant, forcing his mind to focus and put in the last ditch effort in killing Bai Ning Bing.

He could no longer see anything, for the Wood Charm Gu had taken over his eyes, and he could not hear any longer either, his ears merely an accessory now.

He only had a meagre sense of touch.

Relying on Bai Ning Bing’s retaliation, he judged the distance and position, and attacked.

His efforts were rewarded, as Bai Ning Bing was finally captured. A vine wrapped around his neck and raised him up, gradually tightening.

Bai Ning Bing could feel difficulty in breathing, it was no use even if he opened his mouth. Along with Qing Shu, they was progressing towards death.

Fang Yuan breathed roughly, an intense battle had ended.

On the floor laid five corpses with opened eyes, they were all Bai clan Gu Masters.

Relying on the Stealth Scales Gu to sneak attack, with the advantage of the Moonglow Gu and the strength of two boars along with his 500 years of experience, he displayed shocking abilities.

Although he told Qing Shu he was going to return to the village, it was just an excuse.

After leaving for a distance, he used the Stealth Scales Gu to hide himself, moving around the battlefield and going to the area where Man Shi and Xiong Li died.

He collected the Gu worms in Man Shi and his groupmates’ corpses, and when he got the Xiong Li’s corpse, he found that the corpse was missing, not to mention their Gu worms.

"It seems that Xiong Lin collected their corpses. What a waste, I wanted to get Xiong Li’s Brown Bear Innate Strength Gu." Fang Yuan sighed.

Leaving Xiong Lin alive was not what he wanted.

But back then, after he had killed Xiong Jiang, Xiong Lin was already vigilant, thus killing the latter would expend much effort.

At that time, Bai Ning Bing was close by. If Fang Yuan and Xiong Lin fought, Bai Ning Bing would be overjoyed.

"But the Brown Bear Innate Strength Gu might not be on Xiong Li’s body. He already has the strength of a bear, he might have given the Gu back to his clan already."

Fang Yuan focused his gaze and escaped the mountain path battlefield.

Qing Shu and the others fighting against Bai Ning Bing would cause a huge commotion, and it will be detected by the surrounding wolf packs and Gu Masters.

Although Fang Yuan was not optimistic about Qing Shu’s group, he had seen firsthand the power of the Wood Charm Gu in his previous life. Against Bai Ning Bing, there would at least be an intense struggle.

He was unwilling to give up such a chance, thus he chose to wait at the surroundings.

At times, Gu Masters were attracted by the sounds of the intense battle, so Fang Yuan lured some wolf packs over and restrained them.

Those that he cannot stop, Fang Yuan would strike with his own hands.

"The mountain path battlefield’s noise has come to a halt, it seems they are deciding the victor already." His right ear had roots growing out, digging into the mountain walls, allowing Fang Yuan to hear some things from the battlefield.

Honestly speaking, Qing Shu’s performance was better than expected. After Bai Ning Bing lost his right arm, the effect on his battle strength was much greater than Fang Yuan had expected.

But soon, Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

He heard large amounts of footsteps from two directions, heading towards the battlefield.

One direction was from Gu Yue village, while the other direction was from the Bai clan village.

Each group had at least twenty people. It was not something a bold lightning wolf pack could block, and Fang Yuan could not lure two groups of wolf over anyway.

"It seems the news about this battle has been found out by someone, so these are the reinforcements sent by the two clans, I have to enter the mountain path immediately."

Fang Yuan’s distance was shorter, thus being the first to enter the mountain path.

The battlefield’s scenario was not out of his expectations.

From the cage’s opening, he could see Bai Ning Bing hanging by the vines on his last breath, but was still barely alive.

"The ice muscles’ defense are stubbornly sustaining Bai Ning Bing’s life. Hmph, unfortunately, you have encountered me." Fang Yuan’s killing intent surged as he took a few steps forwards, sprinting towards Bai Ning Bing.

Swish swish swish.

Suddenly, a flurry of pin needles surrounded Fang Yuan like rain droplets.

It was Gu Yue Qing Shu’s Pin Needle Gu, attacking Fang Yuan.

"What is going on?" Fang Yuan retreated immediately, avoiding the pin needle rain.

He focused the gaze at the large tree, realizing at once, "It seems that Gu Yue Qing Shu’s consciousness had been blurred to the point where he can no longer differentiate between friend or foe. He’s merely relying on his will and attempting to kill Bai Ning Bing. Anyone that intrudes the battlefield would be regarded as an interferer by him."

At this moment, Bai clan Gu Masters appeared from the mountain path.

Seeing such an intense battlefield, their faces showed a shocked expression.

"The lad over there, don’t make any unnecessary movements!" A Rank three Gu Master shouted towards Fang Yuan, his tone full of warning and threat.

"This Bai Ning Bing is such a cockroach." Fang Yuan seeing this scene, laughed coldly in his heart, knowing that he could not have the last strike.

Firstly, Qing Shu’s consciousness was blurred, a green vine was insufficient to kill Bai Ning Bing who had the ice muscles.

For Fang Yuan to get close to Bai Ning Bing, he had to break through Qing Shu’s trap, but this way, it would divert much of his attention and might even help Bai Ning Bing in escaping his predicament.

Even if they broke through by force, Bai clan’s Rank three Gu Masters and Rank two elites were not for show, they would definitely stop him.

Furthermore, fighting against Bai Ning Bing had danger as well.

Bai Ning Bing’s aperture had recovered primeval essence sufficiently to at least use the Blue bird ice coffin Gu.

Even if Fang Yuan managed to kill Bai Ning Bing, these Bai clan elites would not let go of him, they would definitely kill Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan sighed in his heart, "The distance is too long, there are at least twenty steps to get to him, and my Moonglow Gu’s attack range is only ten steps, furthermore... to kill this Bai Ning Bing who is destined to die anyway, I would need to put my life at such risk, greatly interfering with my rebirth plans, it is not worth it."

Thinking so, Fang Yuan took a few steps back.

This was evidently a weak and cowardly movement, causing the Bai clan Gu Masters to breath a sigh of relief.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

And so ends the battle. I hope you enjoyed it... Ah, there goes my favourite Gu Yue guy besides Fang Yuan xD Poor Qing Shu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Soon after, Fang Zheng rushed over as well.

"Lord Qing Shu!" He had an exhilarated expression, stupidly running towards Gu Yue Qing Shu, but soon was forced to retreat by the pin needles.

"Group leader, it’s me Fang Zheng!!" He shouted in shock, sensing something amiss for the first time.

But how could Gu Yue Qing Shu answer him.

"Big brother, what’s wrong with Lord Qing Shu?" Fang Zheng, under confusion and shock, could only turn to Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan ignored him, squatting down and grabbing with his right hand, making a claw shape towards Bai Ning Bing.

Plunder Gu!

He secretly activated this Gu, quickly sensing that he had grabbed something.

He quickly pulled back, and a Gu worm flew out of Bai Ning Bing’s body.

It was a red steel Relic Gu!

This was given to Bai Ning Bing by the Bai clan leader, but Bai Ning Bing never used it as he quickly reached Rank three cultivation.

Now, it became Fang Yuan’s loot.

Seeing the red steel Relic Gu coming out of Bai Ning Bing’s body and flying away, landing in Fang Yuan’s palm, the Bai clan Gu Masters were anxious until their eyes turned red, starting to scream.

"Scumbag, if you don’t want to die, stop right now!"

"Stealing our Bai clan Gu worm right in front of us!!"

"It’s a red steel Relic Gu worm..."

Fang Yuan laughed coldly. Once the red steel Relic Gu was obtained, he used the Spring Autumn Cicada to instantly refine it but did not keep it in his aperture, putting it in his clothes instead, giving the impression that he had not refined them yet.

He grabbed once again; this time a grey coloured beetle flew out.

"Stone Aperture Gu..." Fang Yuan recognised this Gu immediately. As his eyes shone, he refined it once again and kept it in his arms.

"Damn it, yet another Gu worm!"

"Stop him, stop him, he dares to do so openly, he does not hold any regard for our Bai clan."

"Save Bai Ning Bing, kill these guys!"

The Bai clan Gu Masters growled, running furiously from the mountain path.

Bai Ning Bing had the full support of his clan, so every Gu worm in his possession was outstanding. Now that they were snatched away by Fang Yuan in public, they all could feel their hearts bleeding.

This felt worse than killing them.

Seeing these people approaching with their imposing aura, Fang Zheng took a step back in fright, but Fang Yuan was unfazed.

In the current scene, he and Fang Zheng were at the east side of the mountain path while the Bai clan Gu Masters were at the west, and in the middle of the two sides were Gu Yue Qing Shu and Bai Ning Bing.

Whoosh whoosh!

Pin needles rained like cats and dogs.

"Damn it..." Bai clan Gu Masters started scolding, as they were blocked by Gu Yue Qing Shu.

"Gu Yue Qing Shu is going to die anytime, the remaining time only allows me to use the Plunder Gu once, what would it be this time?" Fang Yuan calmed down, using the Plunder Gu again.

Every time the Plunder Gu was used, it expended a large amount of primeval essence. It depended on how strong the target Gu worm was. The harder the process, the more primeval essence is expended. If the plunder fails, the Gu Master would even face a backlash.

Thus, the Plunder Gu was a rather unreliable Gu, with little usage.

But at this moment, Bai Ning Bing was almost dead, his consciousness was hazy and he was almost at his limits. Plundering his Gu worm was not hard at all.

Among the Gu worms in Bai Ning Bing’s possession, the most valuable is the Frost Demon Gu. This Gu was on par with the Wood Charm Gu, allowing a person to transform into the frost demon. But if used for extended periods, it would cause the Gu Master’s life force to dwindle, turning into an ice statue.

Bai Ning Bing knew this weakness, thus he had never been like Gu Yue Qing Shu, using the Gu to such an extent.

Other than the Frost Demon Gu, the second most valuable is the Blue bird ice coffin Gu, a Rank three Gu. Right now, it resides in Bai Ning Bing’s throat.

If he can plunder the Blue bird ice coffin Gu, it is the best scenario. But the Plunder Gu is only a Rank two Gu, even if the Gu Master wills it, it does not have to ability to do so.

Eventually, Fang Yuan caught Bai Ning Bing’s Water Shield Gu.

This was not bad at all. The Water Shield Gu together with the White Jade Gu could provide Fang Yuan greater defensive power.

The tree spirit that Gu Yue Qing Shu turned into was eventually felled by the Bai clan Gu Masters.

They split open the wooden cage and saved the Bai Ning Bing who had fainted after losing his right arm.

Just as they were about to slaughter Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng, the Gu Yue clan reinforcements arrived.

The two were at a stalemate for a while, before both retreated in mutual understanding.

Qing Shu’s death and Bai Ning Bing’s injury, with the threat of the wolf tide, such a loss is already horrifying. If a large-scale fighting broke out, for each clan their pressure for survival would intensify greatly.

Regardless of which world, people always compete for their own benefits.

And the greatest benefit in the world, is undoubtedly "survival".

Eventually, Gu Yue Qing Shu’s corpse and Gu worms, were brought back by the Gu Yue clan’s Gu Masters.

The two sides held caution as they retreated from the battlefield.

The sky was raining, and the entire area was gloomy.

A group of people stood at a slope behind the village, this was the graveyard.

Every now and then, there would be a few more gravestones erected here.

In this world, it was tough for people to survive, and whether it is due to external threat or internal cause, there would always be a few sacrifices.

The clan elder’s voice was low as it entered everyone’s ears, making them feel even more down.

"We have the same surname, we come from the same clan, the same blood flows in our bodies."

"We are so close together in distance, yet we are forever separated by life and death."

"This pain aches in my heart."

"Wait for me."

"Someday in the future, I will lay beside you as well."

"Let us turn into ash and soil, as we support our future generations..."

On a newly erected gravestone, a group of people hung their heads low. Some were crying softly, and some were staring at the name on the tombstone as they were filled with sadness.

The cruelty of death was like a white bony arm, slashing a bloody injury on everyone’s heart.

Except that some were already numb from the pain, while others were still too inexperienced.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was among these people, his drooping eyes staring at the tombstone with "Gu Yue Qing Shu", these four words.

Dead?

In his eyes, there was endless uncertainty.

Yesterday’s battle, the entire process and situation was still imprinted deep in his heart.

His experience was limited, he did not understand Gu Yue Qing Shu’s moving and tragic bravery as well as his sacrifice.

But now that the truth was in front of him, he could not accept it suddenly.

"Dead? That kind Lord Qing Shu that always smiles, advises, shows concern and takes care of me.... Is actually dead?"

"Why did this happen?"

"Why is it that in this world, good people die easily, while bad people live long?"

"Is this a dream, am I having a dream right now?"

Fang Zheng clenched his fists, and the realistic feeling of touch caused him to feel ever more upset.

The discussions of the surrounding Gu Masters entered his ears.

"Sigh, I can’t believe that this time, even Lord Qing Shu sacrificed himself."

"Humans will eventually die, but it is too much of a pity, I heard that Bai Ning Bing still had a breath of vitality left, he was eventually saved."

"May he rest well underground, and bless us with the hopes of surviving this wolf tide..."

The crowds slowly dispersed, until Fang Zheng was the last one left.

The young man’s lonely shadow, facing the graveyard full of tombstones alone.

"Lord Qing Shu!" He suddenly kneeled on the ground, his tears falling on the ground.

He was lost, he was regretful, he was in pain!

Drip. Drip drop, drip drop...

Bean-sized raindrops fell from the dark clouds, hitting on the ground, causing the leaves and tree branches to bend.

The smell of the earth rushed into Fang Zheng’s nostrils, and he wept in painful grief. The sound of his crying and the raindrops mixed together; his ten fingers grabbed the soil, trying to retrieve Qing Shu’s life, but eventually he only had two handfuls of soil.

It started raining, and Bai Ning Bing lay upon a soft bed, staring at this rain blankly.

His right arm which was broken was already taken care off, wrapped with a white bandage. His eyes also returned to black, but his cultivation was Rank three, he had no longer suppressed it to Rank two.

When he woke up from his slumber, he suddenly lost all spirits, feeling extremely empty.

He laid on his bed peacefully, his eyes opened for over ten hours. He let the Rank three white silver primeval essence nurture his aperture; he couldn’t bother to care about it.

This rain triggered the deepest memories in his heart.

It was under such a summer rain that he was officially adopted by the Bai clan leader. The clan leader’s benevolent and hopeful gaze fell on him, as the surrounding clan elders gave their words of congratulations, gushing in like tidal waves.

The young him stood on the icy ground barefooted, and he stared at the rain outside the window, but all he felt was being lost and lonely.

"What is the meaning of living?" This question troubled him for twenty over years, and could continue to trouble him, until the problem of his self-explosion surfaced again.

"Is it for kinship, for the clan..." Bai Ning Bing unavoidably thought of Gu Yue Qing Shu.

From young to adulthood, he had seen such a sacrifice many times – sometimes it is a Bai clansman, sometimes they were from Gu Yue clan or Xiong clan.

He could not understand these fanatics, he was born as a cold and emotionless person.

Gu Yue Qing Shu could not give him answers, thus Bai Ning Bing thought of Fang Yuan.

The first time he saw Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan was sitting by a tree, eating a wild fruit he picked, emotionlessly starting at the battle below.

He was excited until his body shuddered, shivering with excitement. The reason was that he saw himself from Fang Yuan’s similar eerie abyss-like iris.

But now that he thought about it, Fang Yuan’s gaze had something more than him.

That thing, is the answer to his questions.

The rain got heavier and thunder rumbled while lightning flashed in the sky.

"What is the meaning behind living?" In the dark room, Gu Yue Fang Zheng asked the same question.

Gu Yue clan leader, Gu Yue Bo sighed. He stared pitifully at the young man who had lost his soul, and then looked outside the window, at the rain.

Fang Zheng’s doubt was understandable; an unavoidable death always urges people to think behind the true value of existence.

"You know something? More than ten years ago, there was another young man with a similar situation as you, and asked me the same question." Long after, Gu Yue Bo started to speak.

"That person, is your clan leader’s... my adopted son — Gu Yue Qing Shu."

Fang Zheng was momentarily stunned, raising his head. A pair of swollen red eyes, showing an intense urge for answers.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

New Year’s Eve, I’ll post more later. But first I’m going to play some Dota2 alone at home while people countdown New Year Day hah.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"I said to him, a person has a thousand and one reasons to live. Why are you alive, I cannot answer that, only you have the answer. Go find it yourself," Gu Yue Bo said.

"Then clan leader, what is your answer for yourself?" Fang Zheng blinked in confusion, asking.

Gu Yue Bo laughed. In his eyes, Fang Zheng and Qing Shu’s images were overlapping, Gu Yue Qing Shu had asked the same question in the past.

Clan leader thought for a moment, recalling the past, then repeating the same answer he gave back then, "An organisation is bound to have sacrifices. From the moment a person is born, death is imminent. Between life and death, humans are fragile, but one thing can warm the heart, and shine upon our souls. That is love — this is my answer."

Sacrifice is common.

Gu Yue Qing Shu is he, Gu Yue Bo’s adopted son, and after raising him for so many years, his current sacrifice brought great pain to this foster father.

But as clan leader, he had seen far too many sacrifices.

When one has the resolution of life and death, pain and grief becomes more acceptable.

Fang Zheng lowered his head, keeping silent; it seems he was thinking.

Clan leader laughed, taking a letter from the drawer in his desk. He handed it to Fang Zheng.

"This is Gu Yue Qing Shu’s letter. It records the answers to questions he’s been thinking about for years, I am handing it to you now, you can take a look. This is his answer."

Undoubtedly, Fang Zheng’s current heart had intense attraction to this letter.

He opened it on the spot, and after seeing the first line, his tears could not help but flow out.

It was Gu Yue Qing Shu’s familiar handwriting, in his words there was his unique amicable aura.

The starting paragraph recorded his perplexity and pain.

Next was the situations that had given him some ideas through continuously thinking about them these past years.

Fang Zheng looked at the letter, and felt like he had experienced Gu Yue Qing Shu’s entire life. He followed Gu Yue Qing Shu’s footsteps, until he finished the entire letter.

At the end, this was recorded.

"The clan is like a forest, and we members are like the trees in the forest. The old trees extend their branches and shelter the young from rain and wind. When the young trees grow into large and tall trees, the old trees will turn into the nutrients in the soil, fertilizing the land and nurturing new trees. People will always die, and heaven and earth will not remember us. But new trees are the proof that the old trees have existed. Under this continuous testament, the clan forest becomes larger and spreads further, walking towards the path of prosperity and flourishment."

"People are bound to die. As Gu Masters, we cannot hide from impending death. Even Rank seven and eight Gu Masters can merely live a little longer. Towards death, I feel fear as well. But I understand deeply, eventually, one day I Gu Yue Qing Shu will die too. I might die of old age, illness, or the battlefield. But at that moment, I can leave peacefully with no regrets."

At the end of the letter.

"Lord foster father, the question I asked you before, I think I have found the answer."

After seeing the letter, Fang Zheng wept soundlessly.

In his mind, it was filled with memories of Qing Shu. When he committed a mistake, Qing Shu did not blame but instead comforted him. When facing trouble, the gaze of encouragement was given, and when in a loss, the hands of Qing Shu would warmly touch Fang Zheng’s head.

Gu Yue Bo kept the letter and said, "In future, when you think of the answer, you can also write a letter and tell me. Go, return and have a rest. The danger of the wolf tide is not over, we need you to contribute your strength as well."

"No." Fang Zheng slowly raised his head, clenching his fists.

"What?" Gu Yue Bo asked.

"I’ve found my answer." Fang Zheng’s tone was filled with indescribable determination as he continued, "I want strength! To protect my family, and protect them from any harm. I want to protect the clan, and strengthen the clan! I want the wolf tide to no longer be able to torture us, I want to see the happiness of joy of my companions! This pain, I do not want it to repeat. I want to use my pair of hands, my body, my soul, to protect those around me!"

Gu Yue Bo showed an expression of surprise, and at this moment, he felt that he saw Gu Yue Qing Shu.

"Qing Shu, you did not die in vain..." Seeing Fang Zheng’s shining eyes, clan leader sighed emotionally in his heart.

An old tree has fallen, and just as it gradually decays away in the soil, a new sprout is already starting to grow rapidly.

...

Ren Zu was unable to endure the heart of loneliness, thus he dug out both eyes, turning them into a son and daughter. This alleviated his sense of loneliness.

But good things do not last, for his children started to crave the scenery of the outside world, forgetting all about their father Ren Zu and always going out to play until they forgot the time, and even forgot to take care of Ren Zu.

Ren Zu could not see anything, it was total darkness.

But at time, he could see a little bit of light.

To this, he felt perturbed, and asked the Attitude Gu.

Attitude Gu told this to him, "Oh, this is the eternal light given out by the Faith Gu."

"Faith?" Bai Ning Bing seeing this, laughed and threw the book that recorded the ancient legends out.

The door was opened at this moment, and the person entering was almost hit in the face by the book.

"Ning Bing, what are you doing?" The one entering was the Bai clan leader.

He frowned, consoling, "I know your mood is bad, but losing your right arm is nothing. In this world, there are many Gu worms that can heal such an injury."

"In the past, I got the clan elders to stay by your side and protect you, but you always rejected it, and even attacked the clan elders. You’ve finally suffered a loss this time huh?"

"But this is a good thing. Since young you’ve had too smooth of a path, but as long as it is not death, such a loss is no big deal. Your injuries are already healed, but the wolf tide is getting more ferocious, the clan needs your strength!"

"A bunch of wolf cubs, what can they amount to?" Bai Ning Bing shut his eyes, lying on the bed and answering nonchalantly.

Clan leader’s face showed a serious expression, "The situation is not looking good, or rather, it is pessimistic. According to our reconnaissance, there are already three frenzy lightning wolf packs moving near the village. Your failure brought a great influence to our clansmen. I hope that tonight, you can come out and show yourself. As long as you are standing, it can greatly motivate our clansmen. Do you understand?"

"I get it, I get it. It’s a small matter." Bai Ning Bing responded, showing impatience.

If it was any other person acting like this to the clan leader, they would have gotten heavily punished, but Bai Ning Bing was different.

Bai clan leader sighed helplessly, closing the door and leaving.

When the room had only Bai Ning Bing left, he opened his eyes, showing a gaze full of loneliness and perplexity.

He did not tell the others about the problem with his body, and the premonition of death that he was feeling.

From the clan’s ancient records, he found out the name of the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique. In that limited information, the ten extreme physiques were also known as the absolute death talents, for when the aperture walls reach their limits, the self-destructive power would be extremely great.

It is true that the Bai clan leader had raised Bai Ning Bing for many years, being so lenient to him. However, if the matter of the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique was exposed, Bai Ning Bing had no doubt that the first person to kill him would be this Bai clan leader.

"What’s the point of a person being alive?"

In the past, when he considered this question, Bai Ning Bing would feel lost, feeling emotions like boredom, frustration and anger... all these negative emotions.

But now, his heart felt a sense of peacefulness.

People would grow up, not to mention a genius like him.

In the past, he knew that he was going to die, thus in his despair he longed to live, and he felt a sense of fear towards death deep in his heart.

But now, after he had almost died, he had gotten over it.

Allowing the Rank three white silver primeval essence to nurture his aperture, he was no longer worried.

After all, he was no longer afraid of death.

Even though he was still lost about the meaning of living, he knew where the answer was.

This answer, was already in Fang Yuan’s heart.

This feeling was indescribable; it was like an instinct, but he was clear of it.

Moreover, the Stone Aperture Gu was in Fang Yuan’s hands.

"Fang Yuan... we will meet again," he lightly muttered, his eyes shining with a brilliant light, like the glimmer of a diamond.

"Stone Aperture Gu..." In the rented house, Fang Yuan held the Gu worm in his hands, falling into deep thought.

Stone Aperture Gu was like a dice, cubic and had a grey white body, extremely sturdy.

This Gu was an expenditure type Gu, gone after one use. Its use was to turn a Gu Master’s aperture wall into a sturdy rock wall.

This act completely squeezes the aperture’s potential and growth dry, allowing the Gu Master to reach peak stage cultivation.

For example, Fang Yuan was now a Rank two middle stage, so after using the Gu, he can instantly become Rank two peak stage.

But the price is, Fang Yuan would no longer have the possibility to advance to Rank three. At the same time, he would lose the ability to regenerate primeval essence, thus he would only be able to use primeval stones to replenish them.

The Stone Aperture Gu was for some Gu Masters who were at their wits end. For some Gu Master’s aperture that suffered an unrecoverable injury, developing cracks and can’t be healed, they would have to use this Gu.

Or in special situations, the Gu Master has no hopes of advancing and need to raise their cultivation quickly to live. Thus they will use this Gu.

"The cost of refining this Stone Aperture Gu is very high. Seeing that Bai Ning Bing refined this Gu worm, he probably wants to convert his aperture into a stone aperture to prevent the imminent death. Unfortunately this method can only delay his death, but cannot stop his destruction. If the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique is so easily broken, how can it be called a ten extreme physique?"

This Stone Aperture Gu was useless to Fang Yuan, but the red steel Relic Gu he got from Bai Ning Bing’s body as well as the Water Shield Gu were very useful.

As for the Gu worms Fang Yuan extracted from Gu Yue Man Shi and the other’s bodies, they were not outstanding, and once he returned to the clan he had them exchanged for large amounts of merit points.

Because of the wolf tide, the issue of Qing Shu and Bai Ning Bing’s battle was suppressed by all three clans, controlling their urges. The three clans needed each other’s power to survive this ordeal first.

Xiong Lin’s report, exposed the fact that Fang Yuan possessed the White Jade Gu. But he used the reason of buying it from the caravan to get through for the time being.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Yesss I won two games. Here we are with another chapter! Hoho, 17 minutes here to 2018 so, I wish everyone a Happy New Year! Go forth with happiness and good luck <3 (goes back to playing)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

As a person involved, Fang Yuan had to go through the clan’s investigation.

It was not an in-depth investigation; the ever growing severity of the wolf tide had attracted almost all the attention of the clan’s higher-ups. Fang Yuan’s

Earth Communication Ear Grass and Stealth Scales Gu were still concealed but even if they were exposed, Fang Yuan could just attribute it to the caravan.

In any case, communications had already been severed due to the wolf tide; the caravan won’t be coming. Under such circumstances, the clan couldn’t obtain the confirmation from the caravan and could only delay the investigation.

When the results of any investigation truly came out, Fang Yuan would have already become a Rank three and left Qing Mao mountain.

Of course, if the Four Flavors Liquor worm and Spring Autumn Cicada were exposed, it would be a completely different matter.

Either of them could cause a huge commotion in the village if exposed.

Four Flavors Liquor worm represented a whole new fusion recipe and had extremely significant meaning. Fang Yuan wouldn’t be able to explain it even if he pushed it onto the caravan, and would be thoroughly investigated by the clan.

And Spring Autumn Cicada? If it was discovered, the wolf tide would be greatly sidelined. This is a Rank six Gu after all! Even the clan head Gu Yue Bo would immediately dispense with the civilities; the nonsense of kinship and the clan head position could all be given up. There was no doubt that it would be forcibly seized.

July was month of a scorching hot summer, and the hot air was filled with the iron smell of blood.

The wolf tide was growing more serious and fights were becoming more intense.

Many had begun to realize that the wolf tide this time was of a rarely seen enormous scale among all of past history.

Bold lightning wolf packs had fallen to a supporting role now; thousand beast king frenzy lightning wolf packs had started to roam nearby the village.

Mankind’s living space had shrunk down to an extreme level.

Even Gu Yue clan headquarters were as such; there was no need to mention the village at the foot of the mountain.

Nine out of ten houses were empty and a portion of fortunate villagers were living in the clan by utilizing all kinds of connections. But the majority of the villagers could only leave their homes and make an arduous journey to evade the wolf tide.

Their destination was another mountain village. But the fierce beasts, wild Gu and the lightning wolves that filled the whole mountain reduced their hopes to an almost negligible amount.

This was a hopeless journey.

Gu Yue clan could only give up on these mortals, they would all die before they even reached halfway to their destination. Either because of the fierce beasts or due to attacks from insects.

No matter if it was mortals or Gu Masters, they were all struggling between life and death. Even the elders who usually had a high position, had no choice but to don their armors and go to the battlefield.

The Gu Masters that had retired were enlisted again. When the wolf tide ends, those that manage to live on would definitely not surpass even one tenth.

The cruelty of nature was displayed in all its glory at this moment. It was the survival of the fittest and in no way could it be avoided by speaking words of warmth.

Fang Yuan sat cross-legged on the bed; his eyes were closed as he looked at his aperture.

In his aperture, 44% of red steel sea waves were surging up and down. These primeval essence were all dark red. It was the Rank two peak stage dark red primeval essence.

Rank two primeval essence were collectively called red steel primeval essence. But it had four different small realms: initial stage, middle stage, upper stage and peak stage. There were also slight differences in the red steel primeval essence.

Rank two initial stage primeval essence was light red; middle stage primeval essence was scarlet; upper stage was crimson and peak stage was dark red.

Many days ago, Fang Yuan had advanced to upper stage. His crimson primeval essence went through Four Flavors Liquor worm’s refinement and along with the replenishment from primeval stones, it had completely changed to the current dark red primeval essence.

Right now, the aperture wall was no longer a watery membrane with the flowing light, but it was instead a thick stone membrane formed by layers upon layers of piled up white light.

White Jade Gu and Stealth Scales gu were in the depths of the red steel sea.

Four Flavors Liquor worm was playing around in the sea but when the Spring Autumn Cicada slowly showed up, it immediately sunk towards the depths of the sea.

Under the aura of the Spring Autumn Cicada, the surface of the whole primeval sea became as calm and smooth as a mirror without the slightest wave.

Spring Autumn Cicada’s condition was getting better.

Its two wings were completely recovered, appearing like a pair of tender leaves. Only its main body was still withered.

Fang Yuan would check on Spring Autumn Cicada every so often; he could clearly sense the recovery speed of Spring Autumn Cicada increasing rapidly.

The Spring Autumn Cicada was like a dying patient before, one who couldn’t even open their mouths to eat and could only take in liquid food to preserve their life force.

Now, this patient could get off the bed and eat much more food to nourish itself; the recovery speed would naturally become faster.

Besides the Spring Autumn Cicada, there were two new members in Fang Yuan’s aperture.

They were both taken from Bai Ning Bing; one was Water Shield Gu which looked like a jellyfish as it floated in the sea. Another was red steel Relic Gu.

Fang Yuan’s advancement to upper stage was because of the purified primeval essence by the Four Flavors Liquor worm and continuous nourishment of the aperture wall, causing a qualitative change. Fang Yuan hadn’t used the red steel Relic Gu.

Just based on cultivation level, Fang Yuan would already be the third highest person among Rank two Gu Masters of Gu Yue clan. Xiong Li and Qing Shu were dead; Fang Yuan was in the top five even among the whole Qing Mao Mountain.

As for Chi Shan and Mo Yan, they originally were at Rank two upper stage but had advanced to peak stage not long ago. This could be said to have aroused the morale of the clansmen who were down after Qing Shu’s sacrifice.

Fang Yuan was progressing and others naturally were also progressing.

Chi Shan and Mo Yan had been in upper stage for quite a bit of time and had continuously been pressured by the peak stage Qing Shu.

The intense stimulation of death brought by the wolf tide caused Gu Masters to have a deep thirst for power, squeezing out their potential and leading to cultivation advancement.

"But if we count fighting strength, I am the number one among the Rank two Gu Masters of the whole Qing Mao mountain. Now, after I use this red steel Relic Gu, my cultivation will rise to peak stage and when combined with my deep experience, I can even battle Rank three Gu Masters to a certain degree," Fang Yuan calculated.

His low profile and patience had brought him plentiful gains now.

He could advance to this stage with just C grade aptitude, the whole clan would be shocked if they knew this. Even the A grade aptitude Fang Zheng was only at Rank two middle stage.

Naturally, even if he advanced to peak stage, Fang Yuan couldn’t win against Rank three Gu Masters.

Bai Ning Bing was able to surpass levels and kill a Rank three Gu Master because of his Northern Dark Ice Soul physique. Gu Yue Qing Shu also could do that because he had the Wood Charm Gu, a powerful and special Rank three Gu worm.

In actuality, Fang Yuan had a much stronger trump card than them – Spring Autumn Cicada.

However, this Rank six Gu was very special, and Fang Yuan forced himself to not use it. Spring Autumn Cicada hadn’t fully recovered and if it was forcefully used, whether it could rebirth would be a huge question mark.

The red steel Relic Gu was only effective to Rank two Gu Masters; there was no value in keeping it.

Fang Yuan was just about to use this Gu when there came a knock on the door.

Dong, dong, dong.

"Lord Fang Yuan, it is me, Gu Yue Jiang Ya," a voice shouted after the knocking.

Fang Yuan frowned, this Jiang Ya was getting more overbearing recently; he would repeatedly look for him to ask for vitality leaves.

The number of deaths and crippled people were increasing, causing the price of the vitality leaves to become increasingly higher and even becoming a situation of high demand but no supply.

"How many times have I told you that I don’t have more vitality leaves. Get lost." Fang Yuan coldly snorted. How could he give up his cultivation time for trifle primeval stones earnings.

Outside the door, Jiang Ya had a flattering smile on, "Lord Fang Yuan, please appease your anger. You are aware of the current situation, what choices do I have? Many Gu Masters know I sell vitality leaves and they all look for me. It is not easy for the little me to pass my days. How about this, I will pay ten percent more. Lord Fang Yuan, please be kind and give me a dozen vitality leaves."

After speaking, he started begging and his sound carried some sobbing.

Fang Yuan was indifferent, "That is your affair, what does it have to do with me? Hmph, your guts are getting bigger these days, you forgot the agreement between us and actually brought someone else."

"Ah....." Jiang Ya gave a bitter smile outside the door. He looked at the old Gu Master beside him. He had no other way, this Gu Master was very powerful and had stubbornly followed him here.

"Little friend Fang Yuan." This old Gu Master spoke, "I am Gu Yue Ye, I believe you have heard of me. I came to purchase some vitality leaves and hope you, little friend, can show me some respect and give a little time to produce some."

"Give you respect. Heh, what reputation do you have?" Fang Yuan sneered. This Gu Yue Ye was somewhat famous, he was a retired Gu Master but had been brought back by the clan due to the wolf tide.

At his peak period, he had reached Rank three. However, because of injuries, his cultivation dropped down to Rank two peak stage and now due to his old age, his cultivation had further dropped down to Rank two upper stage.

Although his cultivation was the same as Fang Yuan, his fighting strength could not be compared to the latter.

Gu Yue Ye’s expression was ashen, he had long heard of this eccentric loner Fang Yuan; a lad with a vicious and stubborn temper, arrogant and rude, considering everyone beneath him. He had prepared his heart before he came here, but to think that he had still underestimated Fang Yuan.

He wanted to use his reputation, but this usually successful method had no effect on Fang Yuan.

He felt his face burning and his heart filled with anger. He had lost all his honor right now!

"This disrespectful son of a bitch!" He cursed inwardly, but didn’t leave.

He needed the vitality leaves!

He was an experienced man and deeply knew the importance of the vitality leaves. In times, a vitality leaf could mean the difference between life and death.

As one gets old, their courage starts to shrink.

Back when he was young, he was hot-blooded and easily excited. He wanted to protect the clanspeople, he wanted to change the world, he wanted to become a great hero! In those times, he had the resolution to view death as a return home!

However, right now he was old and was much more cool-headed. He had seen through many aspects of life in these years and could be said to have reflected on himself.

Especially after several of his children died, his heart had grown more cold.

Any organization needs sacrifices.

Resources are limited. Although they are produced all the time, they are also consumed. As such, this add and decrease limits the total amount.

Humans need food, clothes and lodging to survive; these are resources. Gu Masters need Gu worms, primeval stones and food to cultivate; these are also resources.

Becoming strong requires even more resources. But if you don’t sacrifice, then where can I get more resources?

I rather compromise others than sacrifice my benefits!

Protecting, honor, family love, dreams, hot blood; they are all honorable reasons for sacrificing.

There are no organizations that do not encourage self-sacrifice. However, the higher-ups would never say that, they would instead talk of ‘protecting, honor, family love, dreams, hot blood, happiness’ and so on, and give all kinds of material benefits.

However, the material benefits are just nonsense once one dies. What could a dead ‘great hero’ enjoy?

Look at Gu Yue Qing Shu.

He ‘blissfully’ died and was buried in the soil; his name carved in the gravestone as his spirit continues to influence future ‘heroes’.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

6.40AM now. I was up playing Dota2 all night! Won a bunch but lost last two to evil throwers >:(Well to feel make me feel better here’s another chapter. I hope everyone had a good New Year’s Eve and hopefully a lovely New Year Day! Also here goes to the first chapter of the week and 2018, I wish this novel gets more readers and discord becomes more lively, I love to talk about this novel and everything owo) Okay see you guys soon!!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Jiang Ya looked at the Gu Yue Ye whose face was grim, the former secretly feeling happy in his heart.

This old man had forcefully made Jiang Ya bring him to this place. Jiang Ya only had Rank one cultivation and was a junior, thus he had to lower his head to Gu Yue Ye and bring him here.

But now that he had been humiliated, Jiang Ya’s heart was envious of Fang Yuan’s unrestrained personality.

Gu Yue Ye wanted to give Fang Yuan a few tight slaps, to lecture this arrogant junior. But for the vitality leaves, he had to control himself, "Junior Fang Yuan, you can’t say that. You are still young, you don’t know the importance of human relationships, there will come a time when you need to beg others. Just think, in future when you come to ask me for a favour and I treat you like this, how would you feel?"

"Bullcrap human relationships!" Fang Yuan laughed in disdain in his heart.

The so-called unity was just because they were individually weak.

Human relationships, it was important on earth. After all, there was no difference in personal strength among people. But in this world where people cultivated, things were inherently different.

Human relationships were just a byproduct of strength — if one is strong, their human relationships would thrive.

But for those who pursue relationships, they definitely have something to ask others of.

As for not needing relationships — if one is overly powerful, they can snatch anything they want, give it away or die, why would they need people's relationships?

These were demonic path thoughts, and Fang Yuan would naturally not advertise them publicly.

But since he was disturbed like this, Fang Yuan might as well do this business.

Thus, he said, "It's not that I can't sell it either. One vitality leaf for sixty-eight primeval stones. How many do you want?"

"Huh!" Gu Yue Ye outside the door was shocked by this price, quickly saying, "Junior Fang Yuan, this price is too expensive!"

Fang Yuan snorted, "Then don't buy it. Among the resources provided by the clan, there are also vitality leaves, you can exchange it with merit points."

Gu Yue Ye laughed bitterly, "How would I not know that, but these vitality leaves are all sold to those with relationships, the medicine hall clan elder Gu Yue Yao Ji has complete control over it, how can I interfere? Junior Fang Yuan, sell me a favour, I will definitely repay you. From what I see, sixty primeval stones is a just price."

"I do not anticipate people's repayment, you have wasted enough of my time. Seventy primeval stones, if you don't want to buy it, leave." Fang Yuan responded.

Gu Yue Ye was furiously stomping, "Junior Fang Yuan, how can you do business like this?"

Fang Yuan snickered, "Times are different, it is seventy-two primeval stones now, every sentence you say wastes some of my time, and when I feel unhappy I will raise the price, I hope you can make the right decisions."

Hearing this, Gu Yue Ye's face became furious; he wanted to say something, but every time he opened his mouth, no words came out.

His hagged face was green and red, and Jiang Ya who was beside him saw this and cheered internally.

Finally, he gritted his teeth, saying, "Okay, I'll buy it, I need five vitality leaves."

"You can hand the primeval stones to Jiang Ya. As for the vitality leaves, collect them from him three days later." Fang Yuan said.

This was overbearing, trading goods and money was the most basic fairness.

But Gu Yue Ye still paid the money, handing multiple bags to Jiang Ya on the spot.

His movements were slightly trembling, for this was his meagre savings, the savings from him scrimping throughout the years, and now they were all taken by a shrewd merchant!

Finally, he walked out of this bamboo building with an endless feeling of indignance.

"Lord Fang Yuan, what you did was really cool revenge! But I'm afraid you have completely offended Gu Yue Ye. This old man, when he was young he always took revenge on people, he would not let go of this easily." Outside, Jiang Ya said carefully.

"Let him be, an old man relying on his seniority, he is bound to get eliminated by the clan." Fang Yuan opened the door, and Jiang Ya handed him the bags.

The clan wants to resist the wolf tide, so that requires large amounts of resources. With less resources, they cannot maintain the large organisation structure, thus they would need to get rid of members.

These old men being alive were wasting precious scarce resources, they were destined to go.

The wolf packs eliminated the old and sickly, expelling the crippled wolves. In human society, they would not be so obvious, always masking their evil with a shield of light, thus they called these old Gu Masters to fight.

So what if Gu Yue Ye understood the intention?

Being in the system, a person in society, they had no choice.

The clan uses the reason of protecting their family and clan to call them to fight and sacrifice, how can they refuse?

On Earth there is a sentence, if the Emperor wants the subjects to die, they cannot do otherwise. But still countless people fight for the positions of being the emperor's subjects. This was the allure and cruelty of the system.

"Every round of the wolf tide in the past, those old Gu Masters who come out to fight, how many can survive? Let's not say five vitality leaves, even if we give this Gu Yue Ye fifty pieces, he might not make it out alive." Fang Yuan stood at the door, laughing coldly.

When Jiang Ya heard this tone, his heart was freezing.

He could feel an aura from Fang Yuan, full of coldness and frost, like the northern winds blowing until he cannot raise his head.

Fang Yuan looked at Jiang Ya, his eyes dark and black, continuing, "From now on, other than the arranged timings, you cannot look for me! If you break my rules, be prepared to face the consequences. Letting you sell the vitality leaves for me, is on account of your brother. But respect is given by others, and thrown away by ownself. Think over your own actions."

Jiang Ya heard Fang Yuan's lecture, not daring to speak. Thinking of Gu Yue Ye's sad state, sweat poured from his forehead.

"Also, from now on, raise the price of the vitality leaves to seventy primeval stones." Fang Yuan said again.

"Seventy?!" Jiang Ya was shocked as he gulped, his eyes shining, as if he can see an endless supply of primeval stones.

But he was also rather afraid, asking meekly, "Lord Fang Yuan, raising prices like this, will it cause others to think that we are growing a fortune through the misfortune? Would we have the suspicion of taking advantage of the clan’s state? If we do this, we might incur public outrage."

"Public outrage? Hmph, what can they do, do what I order, don’t talk crap. If someone finds trouble, tell them the vitality leaves are sold by me." Fang Yuan snorted.

"Yes, yes, yes." Jiang Ya nodded furiously, Fang Yuan’s words were what he wanted to hear, he was going to do this as well.

He was just a Rank one small fry, he cannot offend too many people. Throwing all these problems to Fang Yuan, he had already started doing so.

A small fry also has his own survival methods, and towards Jiang Ya’s intention, Fang Yuan was clear at heart.

But cultivation difference and era difference, results in Fang Yuan living a different lifestyle.

After using that red steel Relic Gu, he would be Rank two peak stage, near to Rank three. That means he has finally grown past the initial step, and having this strength means his life and future would be different.

In the past he needed to lay low, but now he needed to be oppressive.

Only when he is oppressive can he obtain the biggest benefit.

As for this Jiang Ya, he still has some value to make use of. Even with his petty acts, as long as it does not infringe on Fang Yuan’s benefits, he can tolerate it.

Even revealing some unimportant trump cards is not a big deal.

During peacetime, those higher-ups have nothing to do, thus they might find problems. But now that there is the wolf tide, who has the energy to care about such minute details?

After the wolf tide, it is not guaranteed that the Gu Yue village still exists.

Half a month later.

Lightning wolves attack like tidal waves, causing the Gu Masters to retreat in a hurry.

"Xiong Yuan Zhen, you must hang in there! Gu Yue village is not too far away." Xiong Jiao Man stared at the clansmen on the ground, her eyes turning red as she shouted.

"Leader big sis, I can’t take it anymore. I have something in my heart I want to tell you..." Xiong Yuan Zhen was at his dying breath, his injuries were severe and his face was full of death.

"Okay, speak!" Xiong Jiao Man sobbed. She knew in her heart that although this Xiong Yuan Zhen was normally quiet, but he was secretly in love with her. At this moment, she knew what he wanted to say.

But when Xiong Yuan Zhen opened his mouth, he did not manage to confess and say "I love you."

He had died, died of blood loss, injuries too severe to cure.

His body was full of injuries, all from the bites of the lightning wolves. The most fatal blow was at his chest, from his right shoulder all the way to his belly button – this was caused by a bold lightning wolf.

"Big sis, the situation is bad, another bold lightning wolf group came!" The recon Gu Master shouted, his voice filled with panic.

Xiong Jiao Man's cries ended, placing Xiong Yuan Zhen's body down. She was the group leader, her group members need her!

The dead has passed, and those alive has to continue facing the cruelty of this world.

"These goddamn wolves, is there an end to them!" Xiong Jian Man cursed fiecely. Her body figure was hot and she had a nice pretty face, so when she said these swear words there was a unique flavor about her.

Hearing her words, the others calmed down internally.

As Xiong Jian Man cursed, she observed.

The investigation result made her slightly distressed. She could kill a group of bold lightning wolves, fight her way out of two groups, but against four bold lightning wolf groups, the wisest decision is to retreat to the valley behind her and use the Signal Gu, hoping for reinforcements.

"Retreat to the valley," Xiong Jiao Man shouted as she activated both her giant bears to protect them.

These two giant bears were well-raised by her. One brown and one black, with smooth and shiny fur, but they were both full of injuries all over their bodies.

When Xiong Jiao Man and the others successfully retreated to the valley, these two bears were left with one; the black one had been engulfed by the lightning wolves' pack after killing tens of lightning wolves, having run out of energy.

A Gu worm shot out from the bear corpse, returning back to Xiong Jiao Man's hand in an instant.

This was the Bear Enslavement Gu.

It can be planted into bears to allow the Gu Master to manipulate giant bears.

Of course, it can only be an ordinary bear, for the Bear Enslavement Gu is a Rank two – it cannot enslave a bear king.

If it can enslave a bear king, they would be strong. Because a bear king, even if it is the weakest, has at least a hundred bear subordinates.

If a Gu Master can enslave a bear king, it means they have a beast group to manipulate as well.

"Now we wait for reinforcements, hopefully they can get here soon!" Xiong Jiao Man panted as she sighed.

They had retreated to the valley, thus the area they had to defend against greatly decreased, causing the pressure from the wolf packs to also decrease. But it also meant they had no way out, and the blood and continual battle would attract more wolf packs.

The crisis was not resolved.

"Eh." At this point, from the cliff above their heads, a voice was heard.

Everyone raised their heads to look, and saw that there was a young man.

"It’s him..."

"Gu Yue Fang Yuan!"

The seven Xiong clan Gu Masters were first invigorated, but then showed a complicated expression.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

I don’t want to go back to workkkk TAT)/

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ever since Bai Ning Bing and Qing Shu’s intense battle, Fang Yuan who had chased after Bai Ning Bing the entire way had become well-known, and his popularity rose.

These days, Fang Yuan had shown his strong side in the wolf tide, heading alone to hunt lightning wolves and showing shocking results.

He was the new generation’s rising star. If not for his strange personality and bad reputation, his status would be on par with Chi Shan and Mo Yan.

But to the Xiong village members, Fang Yuan was also Xiong Jiang’s murderer.

Thus, when Xiong Jiao Man and the others saw Fang Yuan, they showed a complicated expression.

Fang Yuan stared at them from above, waving his tree vine, saying slowly, "You can continue to wait for reinforcements, or escape using the vine in my hand and climb up the mountain."

Who knew when the reinforcements would come?

Matters on the battlefield were ever changing.

Xiong Jiao Man and the others obviously chose the tree vine in front of them, but Fang Yuan actually asked them for remuneration.

This caused the Xiong clan Gu Masters to be furious.

"Fang Yuan, we are alliance mates. How can you do this!" Someone shouted furiously.

"Asking for the Bear Enslavement Gu, how shameless can you be!" Someone sneered.

Fang Yuan calmly retorted, "One Bear Enslavement Gu and seven hundred primeval stones, in exchange for all seven of your lives, this is a cheap price. You can reject me, and I will go back to the clan to report your circumstances. Hehe, but when will the reinforcements come, will they encounter a wolf pack on the way here, that I cannot guarantee."

Everyone became quiet.

Their expressions were ugly.

"Alright, I promise you. Fang Yuan, you really live up to your reputation." Finally, Xiong Jiao Man chose to give way for the sake of everyone. Her words were full of spite towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan shrugged nonchalantly, the result was as expected.

He threw down the tree vine, and laughed coldly in his heart.

These four bold lightning wolf packs were lured here by him, he wanted to wait for them to die before retrieving their Gu worms and get a huge amount of merit points. But their Signal Gu had attracted the attention of the surrounding groups of Gu Masters, and they were all rushing over to help.

To not waste his effort, Fang Yuan could only act as a reinforcement Gu Master for once.

Xiong Jiao Man and the others used the tree vines and successfully escaped from the wolf pack. Not long after, three Gu Master groups arrived, and one of them was the Chi Shan group.

This caused the seven Gu Masters to become even more upset.

Xiong Jiao Man was extremely regretful. Not long ago, she had withdrawn her consciousness from the Bear Enslavement Gu and cooperated with Fang Yuan in refining the Gu worm, thus even if she wanted to go back on her words now, it was impossible.

"Fang Yuan, I will remember you." Xiong Jiao Man stared at Fang Yuan fiercely in the eye.

"Remember or not, that’s your business." Fang Yuan laughed plainly, turning around and leaving.

"Miss Xiong, we meet again." At the other end, Chi Shan group arrived, speaking with a courteous tone.

Ever since the Bai Ning Bing incident, Gu Yue clan lost a Qing Shu, and Xiong clan’s Xiong Li died, thus the two clans got closer. Politically, Bai clan became resisted by the other two clans together, even though the alliance was still in place.

"Little sister pays respects to elder brother Chi Shan." Xiong Jiao Man lifted her frowning brows, cupping her fists towards Chi Shan, continuing, "This time, we are asking the Gu Yue clan for some reinforcements, Xiong clan has been surrounded by wolf packs for six days and six nights already."

These days, the wolf tide was getting more severe. The lightning wolf packs have already started to surround the villages with the intention of attacking.

Xiong clan had the lowest position among the three clans - situated at the mountain foot, they would be the first to get attacked by the wolf packs. In fact, this is the third time they had gotten surrounded, and they needed reinforcements. With the coordination of offence from the outside and inside together, they would then be able to scatter and defeat these lightning wolf packs.

"The matter about reinforcements is not issue, didn’t we cooperate well the last two times? But this matter, I have to report to the clan leader first. Come with me," Chi Shan said.

Xiong Jiao Man and the others followed Chi Shan group, coming to Gu Yue village.

Gu Yue village already had layers of defences. The outer walls were strongly reinforced with dozens of towers. Below the village walls were trenches dug and filled with sharp bamboo poles.

The village walls had been planted with the Steel Vine Gu and Poison Flower Gu; at one glance, the walls were covered in sharp vines and the beautiful poisonous flowers were all budding, over hundreds or even thousands of them.

Entering the main door, one could see that the surrounding buildings, whether it was a residence or tavern, had been all transformed into temporary forts.

Xiong Jiao Man and the other six, after leaving the Xiong clan, their journey was filled with difficulty. Traversing through wolf packs, they all had different injuries. Thus, they were led into a bamboo building to receive treatment.

There was over ten healing Gu Masters in the bamboo building, mostly Rank one Gu Masters, but also a few Rank two Gu Masters. But what caused Xiong Jiao Man and the others to be shocked was, the person in charge was not a Rank two healing Gu Master, but a young girl.

"Put this unconscious one on the vine chair."

"The one here has a fracture on his leg, Gu Yue Xing, come here and give him treatment."

"Superficial injury, Ah Feng, come here and stop the bleeding, Ah Xing come here and apply the disinfectant, Xiao Hua go place a fracture board on that leg fracture, then come here to bandage the injury.

The young girl had black hair, a peach-like small mouth, both eyes shining like crystals and her face was slightly chubby, with a alluring voice. But when she handled the patients, she was very experienced, causing others to look in amazement.

Xiong Jiao Man suddenly thought of one person, asking, "This little sister, are you Gu Yue Yao Le?"

"Xiong clan’s sister Jiao Man, hello. To think you know of my name." After assigning the Gu Masters to their stations, Gu Yue Yao Le walked over and introduced herself.

"Sister Yao Le, you are a famous character. Inheriting Lord Yao Ji’s benevolent heart, and also extremely talented in medical skills, even with your Rank one cultivation, you are known as the top ten rising stars in Qing Mao mountain. Even at the Xiong clan, there are numerous people admiring you, sister." Seeing her strong background, Xiong Jiao Man politely praised as she was on a trip to ask the Gu Yue clan for help.

"I’m flattered, sister Jiao Man." Gu Yue Yao Le is still young, and her face turned red as she looked down in embarrassment after being praised.

At this time, a Xiong clan Gu Master complained, "Although you’re both the top ten rising stars, that Gu Yue Fang Yuan seriously cannot compare to you, little sister."

"Don’t mention Fang Yuan, my blood boils thinking of him!"

"Times without heroes, lad gains fame! Sigh..."

"This person’s morals are lacking, to think he is also a top ten rising star, and even the number one position. Thinking about it makes me want to vomit."

This sentence immediately attracted the attention of the people nearby, including the Gu Yue clan’s Gu Masters.

"Gu Yue Fang Yuan? What did he do this time?" Someone curiously asked.

"Hmph, he took one of my Bear Enslavement Gu, and even seven hundred primeval stones, as a reward for saving us. I’ve never seen anyone so shameless, and corrupted by greed!" Xiong Jiao Man snorted, venting her unhappiness.

"This is nothing, there are worse things."

"His heart is blacker than coal, selling a vitality leaf for eighty primeval stones, he is taking advantage of the situation, this person is greedy and extremely shameless!"

"He is too arrogant and proud. My friend wanted to join his group, however not only was he rejected, but he even got insulted in public. What’s his deal, he’s merely a C grade talent."

"He is a living prodigal son, wasting the inheritance both his parents left him to buy a red steel Relic Gu from the caravan. Next he snatched another red steel Relic Gu from Bai Ning Bing. If I had these two Gu worms, I can also have his cultivation!"

"Lord Gu Yue Qing Shu is the best after all, humble and kind, too bad he died early."

"But his brother Fang Zheng has a sense of justice, helping those in need and is kind hearted, also having Lord Qing Shu’s humble attitude, he is completely the opposite of his brother."

Xiong Jiao Man did not expect her ranting to cause so much reaction from the Gu Yue clansmen.

She was shocked. To think this Fang Yuan was such a failure as a human, being hated by so many people.

She felt strange, asking, "Since he is so hated, why did no one teach him a lesson?"

The bamboo building instantly became silent.

The Gu Yue clansmen all looked at each other, not saying a word.

In truth, many people could not stand Fang Yuan’s mannerisms, as well as his act of maximising profit under such circumstances. Many people found problems with him, but the result everytime was that the person finding fault got into an even bigger mess themselves.

After many times, no one came to find fault with him anymore.

And Fang Yuan also became publicly known as the head of the top ten rising stars that emerged from the wolf tide.

All these statuses, originate from strength.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength was the strongest, so he was the head. Regardless of how bad his reputation is, or how poor his human relationship is.

"That Fang Yuan again..." Gu Yue Yao Ji lightly frowned, muttering.

She had never seen Fang Yuan, but had already heard much about him. Towards Fang Yuan, she had a poor impression of him.

"This Fang Yuan, although my senior, the things he does are unforgivable, and he is so extreme. He dared to extort sister Jiao Man this time and got the Bear Enslavement Gu, not giving a hoot about our two clan’s agreements. No, I must tell grandma and let her teach this Fang Yuan a lesson, otherwise our Gu Yue clan will be humiliated."

Thinking of this, the young girl suddenly felt that there was a need for a clan higher-up to come out and teach this Fang Yuan a lesson.

She naturally did not have this ability, but she felt that her grandma, medicine hall’s Gu Yue Yao Ji could.

In her eyes, her grandma was omnipotent.

"You want me to deal with Gu Yue Fang Yuan?" Yao Ji looked at her granddaughter, her expression blank, and soon after that she started getting nervous.

"My dear granddaughter, did he bully you?" She hurriedly asked.

"He did not bully me, but he bullied others. This time it is the Xiong clan sister Jiao Man, he extorted her, getting a Bear Enslavement Gu and seven hundred primeval stones. This is too much, if this goes on, the clan’s reputation would be completely ruined by him," Gu Yue Yao Le said.

"Mmm, grandma knows this matter. Darling granddaughter, leave first, grandma will not disappoint you." Yao Ji said after deep considerations.

"Thank you grandma! Grandma you do not know but this person is too wicked, raising the price of his goods and bullying the weak, he is a true villain."

After the young girl left, Yao Ji fell into deep thoughts.

She had wanted to deal with Fang Yuan for a long time, however it was naturally not a naive reason like Yao Le’s, but because Fang Yuan possessed enough profits for her to strike.

First was the Liquor worm.

Although previously, Yao Ji had bought one from the caravan. But that was given to her granddaughter Yao Le. She herself still needed one Liquor worm as an ingredient to refine a Rank three Gu worm she wanted to fuse.

Next was the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass.

The clan’s Nine Leaf Vitality Grass were mostly in Yao Ji’s control, and by relying on selling the vitality leaves, she could consolidate her authority and status in the clan.

"This Fang Yuan is too arrogant! First I wanted to buy his Liquor worm, but he refused, what guts. This time he raised the price of the vitality leaves and earned a fortune. Does he really think I, the medicine clan elder, is thin air? Hmph!"

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

First chapter of this week’s batch. Enjoy!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Two giant banners fluttered in the wind with a ringing noise.

One was the battle merit board; Fang Yuan was now among the top ten in the list. Another banner listed all kinds of goods which could be exchanged with battle merits.

However, most of the Gu Masters in the crowded plaza had their attention on a newly announced decree.

The content of the announcement was: The wolf tide is becoming more fierce and the casualties among the clan’s Gu Masters are increasing day by day. To reinforce the treatment methods, the medical hall orders all the Gu Masters who possess Nine Leaf Vitality Grass to temporarily hand them over to the clan. The medical hall will organize staffs to unify all the productions.

There were a list of names in the notification. They were the names of the Gu Masters that possessed Nine Leaf Vitality Grass in the clan.

Naturally, Fang Yuan was also listed.

Right now, he was standing in a distant corner looking at this notification; his expression couldn’t help but turn ugly.

At first sight, he had realized this to be Gu Yue Yao Ji’s move against him.

"Hmph, this Gu Yue Yao Ji has been indignant since she failed to purchase the Liquor worm from me. I already accumulated enough battle merits to exchange for that Three Steps Fragrant Grass gu, but she prevented this from happening in the dark. Now, she is actually coveting my Nine Leaf Vitality Grass....."

Gu Yue Yao Ji’s actions were understandable.

People of the same trade were natural enemies.

By controlling the sale of the vitality leaves, Gu Yue Yao Ji could consolidate her authority, deepen her influence and maintain her connections. However, Fang Yuan sold them in increased price, so this imperceptibly was infringing on her benefits and shaking her influence.

"I have a lot of Gu worms on me now; White Jade Gu, Moonglow Gu, Plunder Gu, Water Shield Gu, Earth Communication Ear Grass and more. Nine Leaf Vitality Grass is my most important economy source; if I lose this Gu, it will be like receiving a checkmate. Gu Yue Yao Ji made a really fierce move," Fang Yuan frowned.

The discussions of the surrounding Gu Masters entered his ears.

"Medicine hall made a truly great decision! There are very few vitality leaves and they simply can’t meet our needs. Every time a batch appears in the goods board, they will immediately be purchased by others."

"Elder Yao Ji is truly gentle and kind. Look at the name list, it includes several Gu Masters from both Chi and Mo factions. She has no doubt offended many powerful elders with this action."

"Elder Yao Ji is thinking for the clan, she is worthy of respect!"

"Ai, only Lord Yao Ji has such courage. If it was any other elders, who would dare to take such action?"

"Eh! Look, the notification contents have changed. Chi and Mo faction’s Gu Masters have handed over their Nine Leaf Vitality Grass."

The crowd was boiling.

Nine Leaf Vitality Grass being consolidated and unified production meant the availability of much more vitality leaves. This was a great news to the crowd.

Fang Yuan watched the notice with rapt attention and sure enough saw: Beside the name list of these Gu Masters, there were new words ‘handed over’. His own name had thus become conspicuous.

His heart felt increasing pressure.

Gu Yue Yao Ji was an old veteran with deep schemes; with this move, she was borrowing the momentum to pressure Fang Yuan. If Fang Yuan resisted or disobeyed, that would be attracting even bigger troubles, giving people a hold over him; it was absolutely not a sensible act.

This was the power of the system.

If the clan wanted you to sacrifice, it won’t directly say so. Instead it will drape a shiny cape of righteousness, and give you no choice but to submit.

An example was the recruitment of those retired old Gu Masters and making them sacrifice their lives, how could they resist?

The current movement of collecting the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass was asking Fang Yuan and other Gu Masters to sacrifice their benefits to satisfy everyone, and was basically to Yao Ji’s benefits. Anyone that dared to disobey was going against the clan and alienating themselves! They were traitors and rebels!

"To resolve this, small schemes like delaying tactics won’t work and will instead put oneself into an even more passive state. Yao Ji’s move carries righteousness and the public opinion; any small schemes will be destroyed. Only by using an even bigger momentum, fairly fighting back and defeating her momentum openly will resolve this."

Fang Yuan already had a solution.

This plan was simple but grand; advance to Rank three!

Rank three and Rank two Gu Masters had completely different status. In the clan, any Gu Master that advanced to Rank three would immediately become an elder and join the decision makers circle. Even the clan head couldn’t lightly infringe upon their benefits.

Don’t think that the Gu Masters of the Mo and Chi factions obediently handed over the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, seemingly sacrificing their own benefits.

Behind the scenes, Gu Yue Yao Ji should have already completed secret transactions with Gu Yue Chi Lian, Gu Yue Mo Chen and other elders.

This was political transaction.

However, the majority couldn’t see this truth and were hoodwinked by Yao Ji.

If Fang Yuan was a Rank three Gu Master, even if he had to hand over the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, he would definitely obtain enough compensations in other aspects.

Why was Gu Yue Yao Ji so anxious to deal with Fang Yuan?

On one hand, it was because of benefits; Fang Yuan’s actions infringed on her benefits and similarly she wanted some Gu worms that was on Fang Yuan’s body.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan was already at Rank two peak stage; if she didn’t make any move now and waited for him to become a Rank three elder, there would be no more opportunities.

"Advancing to Rank three is a must. The clan can sacrifice Rank two Gu Masters, but Rank three Gu Masters are its pillars and each loss would incur a huge damage. Moreover, I have accumulated too many troubles. Qing Shu died but the clan didn’t do a careful investigation. I have the Water Shield Gu, Plunder Gu and other Gu worms, but the clan has turned a blind eye to it. My cultivation is advancing so fast, the higher-ups clearly know about it, but are enduring it and haven’t examined the secrets on me."

Fang Yuan was very clear on his current situation.

On the surface, he looked to be strong and well off, but he was actually surrounded by danger.

The clan didn’t move against him because their attention was completely on the wolf tide. If they can’t resist the wolf tide, the clan would be destroyed. In front of such pressure, Fang Yuan’s situation was only a minor detail to them.

However, once the wolf tide is gone, the clan’s higher-ups would regain their energy; how could they not look for him to settle the account?

Before in the academy, the clan elders didn’t move against Fang Yuan because he was too weak. He was taking small steps and didn’t infringe upon their benefits, thus not attracting their attention.

But, it was different now.

Fang Yuan’s cultivation was already at Rank two peak stage, if he took one step further, he would become an elder.

Simply this cultivation had already touched the elders’ nerves. His every movement was observed and noted by the elders.

Any newly advanced elders could influence the whole political situation of the Gu Yue clan. This resulted in continuous suppression of Fang Yuan. What’s more, Fang Yuan hadn’t joined the system and entered any factions, thus these made the suppressions become even more intense.

Neutral faction was also a faction.

No one could tolerate the current Fang Yuan, someone who was roaming beyond the clan system.

"If I advance to Rank three, the suppression will definitely be much more lower than now, though they will still be there. Rank three is a point of qualitative change, a threshold. Stepping through it will bring one to a whole new world. Similarly, with Rank three cultivation, I can freely move about. At worst, I will simply leave the clan." Fang Yuan was clear on this.

However, advancing to Rank three was not an easy thing. Especially considering Fang Yuan’s C grade aptitude, it was almost an impossible barrier.

In his previous life, he had stalled at Rank two peak stage for over a hundred years. Until afterwards, he paid a painful price to obtain a Gu and promoted his aptitude. Only then could he step through this difficulty.

In a Gu Master’s cultivation, it was easy to advance through small realms, they only needed enough time and patience. However, every large realm had a barrier, and the higher you go, the harder it is to cross. Especially the difficulty in advancing from Rank five to Rank six was beyond imagination, harder than ascending heaven!

Fang Yuan already had a lot of difficulties in advancing from Rank one to Rank two. Now, to advance from Rank two to Rank three, there was no possibility of success by following the traditional route.

Fortunately, in Fang Yuan’s five hundred years of life experience and vast memories, there were two to three methods. Saying it nicely, they were alternative paths but saying it coarsely, they were demonic practices.

This option was very suitable for Fang Yuan’s current situation.

With this option, advancing to Rank three required one to refine a peculiar and bloody Gu – Man-beast Life Burial Gu. An ancient devil path sect leader had made painstaking efforts and invented this recipe to strengthen his subordinates’ cultivation.

The Man-beast Life Burial Gu was specialized for Rank two Gu Masters to breakthrough to Rank three realm.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan explored unknown places and coincidentally found this recipe. It had made a deep impression on him and he had firmly kept it in mind.

The crucial point was that the materials required for the fusion were not rare.

If it were normal times, Fang Yuan might need two-three years to collect them, given his circumstances. However the wolf tide gave him a great opportunity.

He had already collected sufficient primeval stones and Gu worms. The only remaining thing was to wait for an opportune moment.

"Everyone, quickly look at the notice the medicine hall has just issued."

"They want to collect Nine Leaf Vitality Grass and unify the production of vitality leaves?"

"This is a great news."

In the bamboo building, a group of Gu Masters gathered near the notice pasted on the wall. They were all filled with delight when they read it.

"Hahaha, I reckon Fang Yuan is close to tears."

"Hmph, serves him right for selling the vitality leaves at such a high price, exploiting our hard earned money!"

"I really want to see what expression Fang Yuan has now....it would definitely be very ugly."

Many people were taking joy in the others’ misfortune.

"Hehehe, this really lets us vent our resentment. We really need to thank Miss Yao Le for this, if she didn’t persuade Lord Yao Ji, how could there be such a day?"

"Right, we are really grateful to Miss Yao Le."

"Miss Yao Le is not only beautiful, she is also kind-hearted, upholding justice and fairness for us. She has the demeanor of Lord Yao Ji."

As she heard the continuous praises, Gu Yue Yao Le shyly lowered her head, she felt happy.

"Little sister Yao Le." Right at this time, Xiong Jiao Man walked in through the door, "I came to say my goodbyes. I saw the medicine hall’s notice, I am really thankful to you for letting me vent out my indignance. People like Fang Yuan are black sheeps and need to be controlled."

"Big sister, you are leaving?" Gu Yue Yao Le threw a concerned look.

Xiong Jiao Man put one hand on her hip and pointed the thumb of her other hand to a group of Gu Masters standing outside the door, saying, "I have already asked for reinforcements, I must hurry back. Let’s meet again next time."

Yao Le’s heart was filled with grief.

Xiong Jiao Man had ten Gu Masters when she had left her clan, but there were only seven left when she reached here. Now, these Gu Masters were going to step into the cruel battlefield again, how many of them could safely return?

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Since my work is still not at its peak yet, I will try to do daily releases as much as possible :P As usual, thank you for reading, please rate and give power stones so we can have a higher rank and let more people read this awesome novel! Hehehe, things are going to get very interesting very soon.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Yao Le sent Xiong Jiao Man and the others to the door with her gaze as they got further apart.

But this separation was extremely short lived; merely fifteen minutes later, Xiong Jiao Man and the others returned to the bamboo building.

"We are unlucky, there’s a wolf tide," Xiong Jiao Man laughed bitterly, explaining.

When the Gu Masters in the bamboo building heard this, their expressions tensed.

Xiong Jiao Man’s group had great numbers, yet they were forced to retreat to the village - it showed the intensity of this wolf tide.

"Everyone get ready, the lightning wolf pack is about to assault the village," Xiong Jiao Man said.

Once she finished her words, sirens resounded in the entire village.

The village went quiet for a moment, then in the next instant noise erupted.

"This alarm... there is a large-sized wolf pack attacking the village!"

"Quick, quick, gather all our group members here, there’s a huge battle incoming."

"Damn it, I just got back, I wanted to get a good sleep..."

Gu Masters cursed as some showed a cold expression. At once, in the bamboo building and on the streets, Gu Masters could be seen moving quickly, gathering towards the four doors of the village as well as the outer walls.

On the interior side of the village outer walls, there was a large wooden ladder at every interval for Gu Masters to climb up.

And the many defensive towers were made higher than the outer walls, like brave courageous defenders of the village.

Fang Yuan was among the crowd, arriving at the base of the outer wall. A Gu Master was treading on the wooden ladder, and as he was about to head up, Fang Yuan pulled him down and ascended himself.

"Which bastard..." That Gu Master was about to scold out, but saw that it was Fang Yuan and immediately shut up.

Fang Yuan climbed up the wooden ladder, then he expedited the White Jade Gu and peeked at the front lines.

Just outside the village, there were roaming lightning wolves everywhere, thousands of them!

Taking a glance, there was an endless number of glimmering green wolf eyes, causing one to break out in cold sweat.

These wolves were all starving, and some were so hungry even their bodies were shrinking.

The lightning wolves’ amount was too much, it became a moving disaster. The surrounding wild beasts were either chased away or eaten, and for the wolf packs, they were getting less and less food.

To them, a village full of people was a fatal attraction.

Wolves were full of wildness, and a hungry wolf is even scarier, more dangerous, and crazier.

A lightning wolf that is full would not attack the village.

Other than these normal lightning wolves, there was also the bold lightning wolf.

Although mixed in with the wolf packs, the bold lightning wolf was still easily recognised.

Their bodies were as large as a calf.

There was at least thirty!

Many people upon seeing this, drew in a deep breath.

This was the second time Gu Yue village had been attacked by wolves this year, but this size was almost twice or even more than that of the last time.

These bold lightning wolves were all at the peak of their health, strong like bulls. Ordinary lightning wolves might not get food, but these hundred beast kings definitely had ample nutrition.

Resources were naturally given to the higher-ups first.

The benefits of the lower rank members would be stripped, sacrificed and given to the higher ranks.

Be it human society or wild beast groups, it worked the same way.

"These bold lightning wolves are not the real threat." Fang Yuan’s gaze moved, continuously finding and quickly saw three large wolf shadows at the back of the wolf pack, hiding under the shadow of the trees.

Thousand beast king, frenzy lightning wolf!

Each frenzy lightning wolf was as large as an elephant.

When Fang Yuan saw this, his pupils shrunk slightly, but went back to normal immediately. He continued observing, only finding even more bold lightning wolves coming in from all directions.

Fang Yuan did not see the lightning crown wolf.

Fang Yuan breathed out a sigh of relief secretly, for without the lightning crown wolf, the village was relatively safe.

In his memory, the lightning crown wolf appeared at the end of August. It caused great damage to the Gu Yue clan, and if not for the clan leader and elders joining forces to block them relentlessly, along with Gu Yue Qing Shu sacrificing his life to raise his strength, Gu Yue village would’ve gotten wiped out already.

Ever since his rebirth, Fang Yuan changed many things. Gu Yue Qing Shu had already been sacrificed prematurely, so Fang Yuan dared not be careless. There was even a possibility of the lightning crown wolf appearing now. Thus, he rushed to the site to observe the scenario.

Howl!

Three frenzy lightning wolves raised their heads as they howled long and loud.

In their cries, numerous lightning wolves received their orders, and started to attack the village.

On the village’s end, the Gu Masters had already prepared themselves, getting into formation.

Rank one Gu Masters were all at the wall’s corners, both hands supporting the cold walls.

Rank two Gu Masters, some climbed the wooden ladders while others gathered at the top of the towers.

Right behind them, the temporary forts that were remodelled from buildings were filled with Gu Masters, some were support teams, some were healing Gu Masters from the medicine hall, and recon Gu Masters were moving between them providing the battle information to the back end staff.

Some clan elders were at the back end, some ascended the tower buildings, and others watched at the sidelines, reserving their strength and being a pillar of mental support to the clansmen.

"They’re here." Fang Yuan stood on the wooden ladder, his eyes glimmering.

LIghtning wolves moved from the entire mountain, forming into a tidal wave and assaulted the village.

Rumble rumble...

They first fell into the pre-dug pitfalls outside the walls, their bodies penetrated by numerous bamboo spears, like dumplings inside a pot.

Some died on the spot, while others had some life remaining, crying out pitifully.

The wind blew, and the smell of blood entered everyone’s noses, while wolf cries entered their ears.

The wolf packs attacked in a frenzy. Not only did they not stop, they were in fact stimulated by the blood and attacked even more furiously.

Lightning wolves fell into the trap one by one, using their lives to pave the way for the others. Stepping on their companions’ corpses, and crashing up onto the village walls.

At once, thudding sounds were heard.

A lightning wolf was powerlessly against the wall, but with the endless hordes, the impact caused the outer wall to shake.

Rank one Gu Masters below the outside wall held in their tremendous fear, and risked their lives injecting primeval essence into the Steel Vine Gu and Poison Flower Gu.

The village walls’ numerous thorns stabbed into the lightning wolves’ body. The Poison Flower Gu gave these steel vines a poisonous touch as the poison invaded the lightning wolves’ body.

Lightning wolves scratched and attacked the village walls, opening their mouths and biting, but as their injuries intensified and the poison accumulated, their movements gradually turned sluggish.

Pewpewpew.

Rank two Gu Masters stepping on the wooden ladders, along with those at the tower buildings, shot out moonblades.

The moonblade shot into the wolf packs, and instantly blood splashed everywhere, and wolf limbs went flying.

The bold lightning wolves began to enter the battle, immediately bringing injuries and deaths to the Gu Masters.

Fang Yuan’s corner.

A thin long blue lightning current moved about and hit onto the village walls, instantly penetrating and creating a hole. It electrocuted an unfortunate Rank one Gu Master inside as well.

That bold lightning wolf that killed a Gu Master quickly received heavy attention.

Numerous moonblades flew towards it, but it dodged left and right, relying on the surrounding lightning wolves to provide cover, thus suffering only minor injuries.

Howl!

It opened its mouth, and between its sharp teeth, sparks flew, quickly forming an electric current that flew through the air towards Fang Yuan.

Water Shield Gu.

Fang Yuan snorted, and from his nose, two lines of light blue water vapour flowed out.

The water vapour expanded, forming a water ball shield, protecting him.

The lightning current hit the water shield and caused it to shake, almost breaking.

Moonglow Gu!

Fang Yuan kept the water shield, and from his wrist, three moonblades shot out.

The moonblades’ angle was tricky. The bold lightning wolf dodged the first, but its right front leg was hit by the second, causing its movement to slow down, and the third hit its head, causing a severe injury that crushed its left eye.

It cried out in pain, but other Gu Masters saw the opportunity and quickly, a flurry of moonblades enveloped it.

Pewpewpew!

This bold lightning wolf was instantly pelted, its body bathed in blood, and injuries were so deep its bones could be seen. Its body shook a little before collapsing completely. The surrounding wolf packs went into a panic, like ripples in a pond.

But at this point, there were three frenzy lightning wolves behind holding the fort, and the wolf packs only went into chaos for a while before raising their claws and attacking the village walls again.

Fang Yuan shot a few more moonblades out before getting down the wooden ladder. With just this, his deep red primeval essence had already gone below half, needing replenishment.

Seeing him coming down, a Rank two Gu Master quickly replaced his position and ascended the wooden ladder.

Normally, Gu Masters that had long range attacks would ascend the wooden ladder, or gather at the tower building’s roof. Their emphasis was on the bold lightning wolf, as its threat was greater than any ordinary lightning wolf.

Some bold lightning wolf had a Gu worm that assisted with jumping in their bodies, allowing them to leap into the village.

Fang Yuan walked down the ladder, and continued towards the back.

Surrounding him, there was people walking around, similar to him, those that had expended their primeval essence and were recovering. Another group of Gu Masters replaced their positions and entered the battlefield, providing their strength towards defending the clan.

This was a battlefield.

Strength below Rank two peak stage was meagre. Only Rank three Gu Masters were the important pillars, able to control the situation.

Fang Yuan came to a bamboo building. This was a modified building and was heavily reinforced. He squeezed his way in, where many Gu Masters were sitting inside, holding primeval stones and recovering their primeval essence.

Some healing Gu Masters moved among the crowd; some squatted on the ground, some bandaged injured Gu Masters, and the first aid kits were placed at the side.

Fang Yuan found a spot to sit down, and a healing Gu Master immediately came over.

He shook his head towards her, and she understood, approaching another Gu Master instead.

...

Such a rotational strategy, all the way till ten o’clock at night, Fang Yuan had already entered battle five times. But the lightning wolf packs did not seem to reduce, in fact, they could see even more wolf packs, hurriedly arriving upon hearing the frenzy lightning wolf’s call.

"It seems this wolf tide will sustain through the night," said a clan elder who stared outside the village, his face full of worry.

At night, Gu Masters’ vision was poorer, but on the other hand, the lightning wolves had superior vision and were unaffected by the darkness.

"This is only the second wolf tide this year, and it is already so intense. The situation is not optimistic." Another clan elder sighed.

Gu Yue Yao Ji’s face was sullen.

She was the medicine hall clan elder, leading the healing Gu Masters. First-hand injury reports would be sent to her.

On that thin piece of bamboo paper, it recorded the injuries and deaths of the day. Yao Ji held it in her hands, feeling solemn.

The death toll was far greater than previous years.

But she understood, this was not due to the decline of quality of Gu Masters, but because the wolf numbers were too great, and too ferocious.

"Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, how’s the acquisition?" Seeing the blood red sun setting, Yao Ji sighed, asking faintly.

Her subordinate quickly reported - three people had not given up theirs yet, and Fang Yuan was among them.

Yao Ji listened and snorted, then asked, "Where is Yao Le?"

"Miss Yao Le is near the east door, leading the healing team. I’ve advised her many times, but she refuses to stay at the back, insisting on going to the frontlines to battle." Saying so, he kneeled down in horror.

Yao Ji thought for a while before nodding, waving her hand to send off the subordinate.

Near to her granddaughter, there was a clan elder. Xiong Jiao Man and the gang were also there, fighting at the village walls. It could be said that the frontlines was the safest place.

Although Yao Ji doted on her granddaughter, she supported her courage as well.

The ones in power have their considerations.

These experiences will become Gu Yue Yao Le’s political advantage when she inherits the medicine hall!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Things are getting really, really exciting, aren’t they?

Though... things really heat up as it nears the end of Book one.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The golden full moon hung in the sky, the drifting clouds casting a gloomy shade.

There were desperate battles going on outside the village and the bright moonlight was great news to the Gu Masters in the dark night.

Wolf corpses piled up in the traps and were already reaching the midpoint of the wall. This gave a good platform to move on for the charging lightning wolves.

Some ordinary lightning wolves jumped, clawed and even directly leaped across the wall.

However, these lightning wolves usually fell or staggered due to the height disparity and were immediately disposed off by the standby Gu Masters.

At this time, Fang Yuan was standing on top of a tower, along with many other Gu Masters; they were endlessly throwing out moonblades and other attacks at the wolf packs.

In the whole battlefield, these towers were the most important source of damage. The combination of the Gu Masters and the towers had eliminated a large number of bold lightning wolves.

"Kill, kill, kill. Annihilate these wolves!"

"Nana, I will take revenge for you!!"

"Persevere, just a bit more. The clan’s safety lies in our hands."

The surroundings were a cacophony of noises; some people were madly screaming, some were shouting revenge, some were shouting in pain, and some were shouting slogans.

Fang Yuan indifferently stood there, his hand tossing out moonblades occasionally while continuing to observe the battlefield.

Although there was a bright moon, the visibility couldn’t be compared to daytime after all. The three frenzy lightning wolves were at the rear, unmoving; their figures indistinct.

As long as they were unharmed, the lightning wolves were just cannon fodders and even bold lightning wolves were only high level sacrifices.

Suddenly!

A frenzy lightning wolf unhurriedly took a step forward, it opened its large mouth and threw a thunderball.

Rank three thunderclap Gu.

This thunderball was not big, it was only the size of a millstone. However, a large amount of eerie blue electricity was condensed in it and its speed was strangely fast.

Almost immediately, the thunder ball fiercely collided with the tower Fang Yuan was on.

The progress of the fierce battle had been in a deadlock, many Gu Masters were mindlessly fighting and they were not able to react to the thunderball.

Water Shield Gu, White Jade Gu!

Fang Yuan was only able to put up his defense before white light covered his sight.

BOOM!

The huge sound from the explosion nearly ruptured his eardrums.

A formless force erupted out from the explosion and sent him flying.

The devastating thunder destroyed the water shield within two breaths of time. The surplus electric current struck Fang Yuan and even with the White Jade Gu’s defense, he still felt bursts of numbness.

Bang.

He fell to the ground from a height of three to four meters. White Jade Gu was not the Raiment Gu; it couldn’t lessen the force on impact. Fang Yuan’s back hurt all over.

He quickly got up from the ground, his eyes repeatedly blinking as teardrops fell from it.

After three breaths of time, he slowly recovered his sight.

The tower that had been built with thick stones was half-destroyed. There were many burnt black corpses scattered around on the ground. The thunderball attack had opened a huge hole on the outer wall, and an unending stream of wolf packs charged into the village like a tide.

The frenzy lightning wolves finally entered the battlefield!

Thousand beast king level strength was extraordinary.

The many Gu Masters that were around Fang Yuan in the tower just a moment ago were completely dead, some left without intact corpses. Only Fang Yuan alone had survived.

The jellyfish-like Water Shield Gu appeared very dull inside his aperture.

If the water shield was continuously destroyed many times, the Water Shield Gu would also be damaged and could even perish.

White Jade Gu was also in a similar state.

Gu worms were strong and yet fragile.

Take this Thunderclap Gu for example; its thunderball was very powerful and fast, also difficult to resist. But it also had a weakness — it couldn’t be used repeatedly and needed some time before the second thunderball could be shot out.

BOOM!

But Fang Yuan had just stood up when another thunderball flew over.

"To think this wolf king has two Thunderclap Gu on it!" Fang Yuan’s complexion turned pale and he hurriedly dodged.

He tried not using the Water Shield Gu and only relied on the defense from the White Jade Gu.

"Beast, stop your insolence!" At this critical timing, a figure appeared in mid-air, golden light bursting out from the figure as he resisted this thunderball.

The elders had made their moves!

However, one elder was still not enough. Soon, the elder was joined with two other elders.

A frenzy lightning wolf needed at least three groups with great teamwork to join hands, or at least three Rank three Gu Masters to face it.

The frenzy lightning wolf took heavy steps forward, emerging from the indistinguishable wolf packs, as the surrounding wolves gave way.

It gradually started from a slow run, and then got faster and faster, charging at the village wall with its head lowered.

Seeing this scene, all the Rank one and Rank two Gu Masters fled in terror.

Only those three elders still remained on their spots.

Everyone tacitly vacated this part of the battlefield and left it to them.

The intense battle between the three elders and this frenzy lightning wolf unfolded.

Not long after, the other two frenzy lightning wolves also charged towards the village; opening another two battlefields.

Nine elders and three frenzy lightning wolves formed into three great battlefields. Thunder and lightning burst out everywhere, destroying the bamboo buildings. Most of the Gu Masters or the lightning wolves who were caught in these three great battles didn’t have a good end.

Lighting wolf packs were still charging towards the village, but Fang Yuan didn’t fight anymore and moved to a corner of the battlefield, observing the three great battle stages from a distance.

No doubt, the attacks from these wolf packs had reached the climax.

"Three frenzy lightning wolves; one has two Thunderclap Gu and has high offensive power; another has Thunder Wings Gu and can fly for a short moment, giving it very high flexibility in the battle; another holds the Thunder Roar Gu and can kill its enemies with the soundwaves." Fang Yuan slowly got the details on these three frenzy lightning wolves after observing for a moment.

A thousand beast king usually has three-four Rank two and a Rank three wild Gu worm residing on it.

The Gu Masters could give proper response as long as they were clear on these Gu worms. Once the frenzy lightning wolves suffered targeted attacks, with their low wisdom, they wouldn’t change their monotonous attack styles, and the battle outcome was certain.

Sure enough, soon the several elders retreated and other elders replaced them.

With the mutual coordination between them and superior tactics, they were soon able to occupy the upper hand. After a short moment of intense battle, they controlled the battle situation.

Victory was only a matter of time.

"The outcome is set." Just when Yao Ji puffed out a sigh, a roar sounded out from the eastern gate.

A lightning wolf was growing bigger, from the size of a normal lightning wolf - as if air was blown inside it - it swelled up to a size of an elephant.

"There is actually another frenzy lightning wolf!" Many elders were alarmed at this scene.

Their attention had all been on the three battle stages. As their entire battle formation was heavily emphasized on these three areas, the forces at the eastern gate was somewhat thin and weak.

"Not good, Yao Le is still there!" Yao Ji suddenly turned pale, and she immediately shot out towards the eastern gate.

"Eh, to think there was still such an unforeseen event. This frenzy lightning wolf should have a Rank three Aura Restraint Gu; it used this disguise to mix in with the lightning wolf packs and deceive the Gu Masters at the eastern gate."

Fang Yuan observed carefully; the situation at the eastern gate was far from good.

A frenzy lightning wolf suddenly appeared and directly smashed the eastern gate, creating a huge hole.

Countless lightning wolves flocked behind the bold lightning wolves, howling savagely as they charged into the village.

Gu Yue Yao Le was numb with fear as she saw the lightning wolf packs charging in like a tide.

Fortunately, she had veterans like Xiong Jiao Man beside her. At this critical timing, Xiong Jiao Man took it upon herself to control the scene and ordered, "Quick, close the doors and the windows. We need to defend this place till the reinforcements arrive, and only then will we have a fighting chance!"

She had just finished speaking when - BANG - the roof of the bamboo building collapsed under the attack of the frenzy lightning wolf.

Gu Yue Yao Le screamed. The abrupt twist in events had caused her to lose her composure.

She was after all too young and only had Rank one cultivation. She had stubbornly stayed here because she felt safe and had never thought she would fall into such a dangerous state.

"Brute beast, stop at once!" Gu Yue Yao Ji shouted while frantically running.

She helplessly looked as the frenzy lightning wolf rammed into the bamboo building. Her beloved granddaughter was in a dangerous situation but even though she had the power, she couldn’t help her because it was beyond her reach.

At this dangerous moment, it was again Xiong Jiao Man who stepped forward.

She willed in her mind and her remaining brown bear charged towards the frenzy lightning wolf with a roar.

The frenzy lightning wolf swatted with its right paw, sending this four-hundred-kilogram-over brown bear flying.

It opened its mouth and bit the brown bear’s head to pieces. How could an ordinary wild beast resist a thousand beast king level’s strength?

Xiong Jiao Man took this time when the frenzy lightning wolf was tangled up with the brown bear to rush out with Gu Yue Yao Le in tow, managing to pull apart a small distance.

The frenzy lightning wolf roared. It naturally wasn’t willing to see its prey run away like this. It leapt and crossed a dozen meters at once, landing in front of Xiong Jiao Man.

Suddenly seeing this frenzy lightning wolf appear in front of her, Gu Yue Yao Le’s legs went soft.

Xiong Jiao Man dragged her but didn’t dare to rush forward recklessly; she could only change her direction and run towards the outside of the village.

The frenzy lightning wolf was just about to pounce on them when Gu Yue Yao Ji arrived and threw a light purple moonblade at the wolf’s back; the moonblade quietly changed into a ball of miasma and bore into the frenzy lightning wolf’s nose.

The frenzy lightning wolf immediately coughed twice; it was poisoned!

This was the Rank three Moon Poison Gu.

The frenzy lightning wolf was furious, and it raised its head and roared; its fierce roar formed into an invisible force and smashed into the surroundings.

Thunder Roar Gu used the vibration of the soundwaves to kill, but this was not Thunder Roar Gu - it was the Soundwave Gu which formed invisible pushing force.

Xiong Jiao Man and Gu Yue Yao Le were sent flying into different directions by this pushing force. Xiong Jiao Man struck a bamboo building; no more movements could be seen from her, whereas Gu Yue Yao Le was sent flying past the broken eastern gate and out of the village.

The fall stunned her and as she tried getting up, she saw a lightning wolf opening its bloody mouth and trying to bite her.

Aah—!

She gave a shrill scream and at this critical juncture, a moonblade flew over and killed this lightning wolf.

She hurriedly stood up and saw the benefactor who saved her; he was a young male Gu Master. The lower half of his body had been buried under the collapsed wall.

The male Gu Master vaguely smiled at her with his blood-drenched face; the next moment, his throat was ripped open by the swarming lightning wolves.

Tears flew down Gu Yue Yao Le’s face, and she cried as she ran.

This part of the battlefield was extremely chaotic.

Because of Gu Yue Yao Le’s identity and background, there were Gu Masters who helped her out from time to time. But they were powerless to even protect themselves, much less help her out of this predicament. Gu Yue Yao Ji was also tangled up with the frenzy lightning wolf and couldn’t attend to her.

Gu Yue Yao Le was perplexed and fully at a loss within; there were only the images of claws and teeth of the lightning wolves in front of her. In her frantic state, she suddenly heard a voice speak, "Move a step back!"

She subconsciously followed the voice and was able to luckily avoid a lightning wolf’s bite.

"Roll to the right." That voice came again.

Yao Le’s consciousness was still blank, but her body had already made the move. There was a snapping sound of a wolf’s mouth; she had escaped the bite by a hair’s breadth.

The voice arrived unceasingly and the young girl meticulously followed them. There were mistakes made sometimes, but at those times a moonblade would fly over from seemingly nowhere and get her out of the trouble.

Only when there were no more lightning wolves around her, did Yao Le discover that she was already safe.

It was only when she had unconsciously drifted far away from the village and was in a remote forest.

A human figure appeared in front of her.

Her eyes immediately opened wide, "Gu Yue Fang Yuan, you were the one who helped me?"

"No, I am only helping myself." Fang Yuan grinned, revealing an evil intent.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Cliffhanger, bam. Anyway guys! I just updated my Patreon page at https://www.patreon.com/zelsky (it should also be on this novel’s main page etc) so - If you love what I’ve been doing so far, and would like to support me, you can help out through Patreon ^^) Which I would be eternally grateful and happy, and also have enough money to buy tea for my endless lonely nights of translating awayyy :P Haha!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"What?" Gu Yue Yao Le was shocked when she heard this.

Fang Yuan had already struck at lightning speed, his hand chopping her neck! She fainted immediately.

The young girl fell down helplessly, and Fang Yuan’s hand quickly moved, holding her by the waist. Next, he activated the Stealth Scale Gu, and their bodies vanished on the spot.

When Gu Yue Yao Le woke up in a sleepy state, she found herself in a dark mountain cave.

She shrugged her head, trying to stand up subconsciously.

But she soon found out that her arms were tied behind her back, the rope looped around her neck; she was tied tightly on a large rock.

All the Gu worms on her body had been plundered away by Fang Yuan, refined and turned into his.

She was merely a fifteen year old young girl — with that frail body, how could she break free from that thick ropes wrapped a few times around the rock, even tied with knots?

Being trapped in this remote and unfamiliar place, the young girl started to feel frightened.

She thought about the moment before she had fainted; even the most naive person would also know that Fang Yuan was going to do something bad to her.

"But how would Fang Yuan deal with me? What is he planning to do? Is it because I complained about him to grandma, thus he is taking revenge?" The young girl was tied helplessly, but her thoughts quickly flipped like pages of a book.

The more she thought, the more frightened she got, and she started sobbing uncontrollably.

"Grandma, where are you? Quickly come and save me..." As she cried, she felt an intense fear and loneliness.

Fang Yuan was nowhere to be seen, and the cave was filled with her cries.

"Is Fang Yuan planning to trap me here? For seven, eight days, and make me suffer in hunger, so I will never speak ill of him again?" After crying for a while, Gu Yue Yao Le thought of a possibility.

Too evil!

Fang Yuan, I will never forgive you!!

She gritted her teeth as her impression of Fang Yuan, which was bad from the start, fell into negatives.

Since her birth, Gu Yue Yao Le had not hated a person so much.

At this moment, footsteps were heard.

Soon, Fang Yuan’s silhouette was seen emerging from the shadows.

"Fang Yuan, what do you want, let go of me now! Otherwise my grandma will deal with you." Seeing Fang Yuan, Gu Yue Yao Le struggled intensely, her slim legs stomping on the ground like a small deer that fell into a trap.

"You sure are lively," Fang Yuan coldly snorted.

Gu Yue Yao Le was about to open her mouth and continue crying in a rage, but she soon saw a large bear moving behind Fang Yuan.

"B-bear..." Her widened eyes showed shock as she stuttered.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, stretching out his hand and caressing the bear’s black fur, his voice filled with coldness that flowed in the cave like ominous winds, "Because of the wolf tide, it was not easy to find such a wild bear, it took me lots of time and effort to find it."

Gu Yue Yao Le reacted instantly. Her quick-witted thoughts soon remembered that Fang Yuan had once taken a Bear Enslavement Gu from Xiong Jiao Man.

"So that’s it..." She laughed coldly and was about to speak, but Fang Yuan suddenly squatted in front of her.

"What are you doing?!" The young girl tried to move away, but Fang Yuan easily used his right hand and grabbed her cheeks firmly.

"Such a cute appearance, lovable indeed," Fang Yuan plainly commented.

Swoosh!

His right hand moved quickly, grabbing Yao Le’s shirt, and pulled.

The shirt was instantly torn, showing her pink undergarment.

"Ah—!!!" The young girl was stunned momentarily before shrieking loudly, frantically struggling. Even though her tender muscles bled due to friction from the ropes, she couldn’t care less.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, continuing to pull and tear her clothing apart.

Rrrrrip.

Soon, the young girl’s ragged garment was only left with a few torn strips of cloth, showing off large areas of her milky, delicate flesh.

"No, no!" She was extremely frightened, crying out loudly. As she thought of all the various possible ways Fang Yuan was going to deal with her, her whole body shook and trembled.

However, Fang Yuan did not continue on as she expected, but instead he stood up and moved backwards.

The young girl’s loud cries turned into sobbing.

But at this moment, the black bear moved its paws, and got closer.

The young girl was frightened as her iris shrunk into pin-size, for at this moment, she felt an intense sensation of death.

Whoosh!

The bear paw struck, and the sound of it breaking air could be heard.

With a crisp sound, the young girl’s skull was hit, and the intense force broke her thin neck.

Her head was twisted at a creepy angle, broken and hanging on one end.

One moment ago, she was still an alluring beauty, and the next moment she was a corpse. Her warm body tied to the huge rock, was like a broken toy doll.

At this moment, even without Fang Yuan’s control of the Bear Enslavement Gu, with its craving for food, the black bear had already lowered its head, enjoying this sumptuous meal.

It first started to gnaw at the young girl’s throat, and fresh blood immediately bubbled out, splashing onto its black fur.

Next was the young girl’s white and tender breasts, like flower buds that were unopened.

The black bear bit on her right breast in one whole mouthful, tearing away the skin and flesh, exposing her deathly pale ribs.

At this moment, the black bear used its paw to break these bones. The young girl’s internal organs were crushed, and immediately blood poured out endlessly.

Without the skeleton’s interference, the black bear placed its mouth further into the girl’s body. It nipped at the girl’s heart that was still beating, then proceeded to swallow it in one mouthful.

The heart passed through its throat and into the stomach, and this bear that had to hide around and couldn’t eat due to the wolf tide, howled out in satisfaction.

After another cry, it lowered its head again and started to consume her internal organs wantonly.

Chomp chomp chomp.

The black bear’s mouth opened and chewed, large amounts of blood gushing out from its mouth, issuing a watery sound.

After a good while, the black bear finally moved its head out.

The young girl’s chest was already empty, the immense injury extending to her stomach. But towards the shining, white intestines, the bear did not seem to have much interest.

It started to focus on the young girl’s white slim legs.

The girl’s jade-like fingers were all bitten away by the black bear at once, and with a few rounds of chewing, the fingers were swallowed with a crisp sound.

The girl’s thighs were also a delicacy.

The tender skin and flesh of her thighs emitted a virgin fragrance. When the bear had finished, all that was left was the white leg bones.

Among the swaying movements, the girl’s skull finally dropped onto the ground.

To be honest, she did have a cute appearance. Those black lustrous eyes with a round nose slightly pointing up, and her skin blushing like peach blossoms, with a small mouth and two rows of white clean teeth.

But now, her face had lost the colour of blood, her skin turning deathly pale. Her fine black hair was left hanging, covering half of her face, with those pair of eyes staring wide-open, filled with fear and anger.

A death full of grievance!

NOTE: The following is religious text that may make no sense to most, but read it with a pinch of salt.

Fang Yuan folded his arms as he observed Gu Yue Yao Le’s expression, thinking of a Buddhist saying on earth: ‘Without a sense of self, without a sense of person; to be detached of all living things, detached of the sense of time. Void is the red skull and white bones, skin and flesh!’

I am namely myself, without individuality. Breaking the sense of self, realizing that one is common and ordinary. ‘Without a sense of self’ means ‘everyone is equal, there is no difference.’

Man is humanity no longer treating humans as a superior race and demeaning other living beings. ‘Without a sense of person’ means that ‘the world is equal, there is no difference.’

‘Living things’ refers to all life, no longer recognising life as superior and thinking that non-living beings like rocks and water have cognition. This is ‘ detached of all living things’ , which means ‘all in the world is equal, there is no difference.’

Any object or creature has their respective lifespan, and ‘ detached of the sense of time’ namely means ‘regardless of whether it exists or not, they are all equal without difference.’

No matter how beautiful the guy or girl, they eventually turn into a skeleton. Bones, skin and flesh are one, but people favoured skin and flesh while fearing bones – this is being fixated on appearance, not recognising that all is equal.

This Buddhist term is calling for humans to break through all forms, seeing the truth.

Beauty is superficial, and people, me, the world, and time, is all superficial. If one goes past the superficial aspect, they would see Buddha.

Recognising and going beyond, treating all as equal, all is equal.

Thus, Buddha sacrificed his body to feed tigers, cutting off his flesh to feed eagles. This was the benevolence in his heart, seeing all in this world as his own, loving everything, and his great love for everything.

No matter if it’s me, others, animals or plants, or even the lifeless rocks and water, even those that do not exist, we have to love them.

If a mortal standing there watches the bear eat a person, some hot-blooded teenager would jump out and scream, "You beast, don’t you dare eat a person!" or "Beauty, do not fear, uncle is here to save you!" etc.

This was the mortal’s love and hatred, loving young girls and hating large bears. Not going beyond and still fixating on the superficial, not able to see her red human skeleton.

If Buddha stood there and watched the bear eat a person, he would sigh, chanting, "If I do not enter hell, who would enter?" He would save the young girl and feed himself to the black bear.

This was Buddha’s love and hatred, loving the young girl and loving the bear, treating all as equal.

But right now, Fang Yuan was the one standing here.

Seeing the young girl’s tragic and violent death, his heart was unmoved.

This was not because of his numbness to death, but he had gone beyond the superficial, having no obsessions. Without a sense of self, without a sense of person; to be detached of all living things, detached of the sense of time...

Seeing all living things as equal, the world is equal.

Thus, the girl’s death is no different from a fox or a tree’s death.

But to a mere mortal, the girl’s death would trigger their anger, hatred, and pity. If it was the girl eating the bear, they would not feel anything. If an old lady was eaten, the pity in their hearts would be greatly reduced. If it was a villain, a murderer getting eaten, they would clap their hands in joy, praising.

In actuality, all beings are equal, and heaven and earth is just.

Nature is fair, disregarding love or hate; it is emotionless, and never gives differential treatment.

Rule of the strong, victor takes all!

The disappearance of a lifeform, towards the entire natural realm and the infinite cosmos, to the long river of history – what does it amount to?

Death means death, who can choose not to die? What talk about a girl, bear, ant, fox, tree, old lady, murderer, they are all lowly! Humble! Mongrels!

Only by recognising this and going beyond the superficial, arriving at the truth, does one gain divinity.

This divinity, taking a step towards the light, it becomes Buddha. If it takes a step towards the darkness, it becomes a demon.

Demonic nature!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

This was extremely, amazingly hard... Probably one of the hardest chapters to do. But I tried my best at reflecting the scripture’s meaning and all, so I hope you guys made some sense of it and enjoyed the chapter. This chapter took 100% of my effort, really! Even the bear eating girl part, did you guys enjoy it? xD | Anyway, for those asking, Book one has 199 chapters :D

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

An hour later, Gu Yue Yao Le was almost completely eaten by the black bear.

The black bear was unwilling to eat the intestines and the girl’s brains, but Fang Yuan did not want that to happen.

According to the Man-beast Life Burial Gu’s recipe, a wild beast must consume the entire person up to the tiniest scrap for the greatest effect. This can ensure success to the greatest rate.

To refine this Man-beast Life Burial Gu, about ten ingredients are needed.

And the most important two, are man and beast.

The human has to be a virgin girl, and has a Gu Master’s aptitude. Furthermore, she has to be at least C grade talent, but of course A and B grade would be better, and can greatly enhance the chances of success.

This beast refers to the Beast Enslavement Gu. The Bear Enslavement Gu, Wolf Enslavement Gu, Tiger Enslavement Gu etc, even Deer Enslavement Gu or Bull Enslavement Gu can work. However only bears, wolves and tigers - these carnivores have it easier eating meat. Otherwise, if forcing a herbivore like a deer or bull to consume this human, the Enslavement Gu’s manipulation would be required to force them to do so.

After the beast consumes the human, the refinement has to begin immediately. Otherwise, when the beast digests the person’s bones and meat, the refinement would no longer be possible.

Seeing that the black bear refused to eat Yao Le’s intestines and brain, Fang Yuan snorted in displeasure and willed in his mind, activating the Bear Enslavement Gu that was planted in the black bear’s body.

The black bear growled, and under Fang Yuan’s oppression, was forced to swallow the intestines and brain. At the same time, it broke the girl’s bones to bits and swallowed them piece by piece.

The bone shards were sharp and pointy, but under Fang Yuan’s control, it swallowed them and many of the shards stabbed into its mouth and throat, the pain causing the huge bear to tear up.

But Fang Yuan only strengthened his control, and the bear’s body was no longer under its own control.

Seeing the black bear stuffing the spine into its throat, Fang Yuan knew the time was ripe.

He flicked his finger, and a Single Aperture Charcoal Gu flew out.

The Gu worm flew into the black bear’s mouth and burrowed its way in.

The black bear suddenly cried out painfully, as the Charcoal Gu’s power was burning its internal organs.

The black bear’s body was shuddering intensely; it cried painfully and wanted to roll around on the ground, but the Enslavement Gu had a steady grip on its movements.

After burning for fifteen minutes, Fang Yuan’s finger moved again and three Kerosene Gu flew out.

The Kerosene Gu was a Rank one expenditure-type Gu, and upon entering the black bear’s body, it exploded into large amounts of kerosene and intensified the fire burning inside the black bear’s body.

The black bear cried until its throat was dry, but Fang Yuan timed it well and threw several more Gu worms out into its body.

These Gu worms were all exchanged using merit points.

The black bear laid on the ground, completely motionless.

A moment later, from its eyes, ears, nostrils and mouth as well as its butt, small sparks of flames were seen. Then, the fire got bigger and quickly enveloped its entire body, turning it into a giant fire pillar.

The entire dim cave was lit up by this fire.

But this fire was not the usual orange, but instead an eerie blood colour.

Fang Yuan patiently waited for a moment, until the fire was about to extinguish, then he threw out the final Gu.

This was a Rank two poison Gu.

Throwing it into the fire, an intense reaction occurred.

A white lump of light emerged from the fire, initially only fist size.

Fang Yuan quickly took out primeval stones from his money bag and threw them into this light lump.

The white lump digested the primeval stones and became bigger.

After throwing up to a thousand primeval stones, the light was around the size of a room door, and then suddenly shrunk.

Huff!

The fire on the bear’s corpse extinguished at once, and the cave returned to darkness, while a Gu worm wobbled its way to Fang Yuan.

Man-beast Life Burial Gu.

Rank three, expenditure-type Gu.

It looked like a black spider with furry long legs, but it had the head of a bear, and on its back there was a blood coloured tattoo, drawing the outline of a young girl’s beautiful face.

This was Gu Yue Yao Le’s face.

It resembled a smile yet wasn’t, it looked like a crying face and yet was not, but she seemed to be staring at Fang Yuan with a gaze filled with utter hatred!

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, not minding it at all.

Death is the end of all, even in life she was merely so, what more can she do to Fang Yuan after death?

He opened his mouth with no hesitation and swallowed this Man-beast Life Burial Gu.

The Man-beast Life Burial Gu moved along his throat into his esophagus, turning into a black and red mix of water flow.

The water flowed from above, like an inverted heavenly river, pouring into his aperture.

Entering the aperture, this gush of black red water entered the red steel primeval sea immediately.

At once, the entire primeval essence was turned into an eerie black-red colour, filled with the smell of blood.

Fang Yuan’s thoughts moved as he activated this black-red primeval essence, rushing it towards the aperture walls.

10%, 20%, 30%, when 38% of the primeval essence was expended, the aperture had a loud boom as the white crystal walls broke into pieces.

What replaced it was an entirely new round ball-shaped light membrane aperture wall.

At this moment, Fang Yuan advanced to Rank three!

But Fang Yuan did not loosen up, and instead forced the remaining black red primeval essence out of his body.

This primeval essence was not usable, and if injected into Gu worms, they would die. If left remaining inside the aperture, the longer it stayed, the more it would pollute the light membrane aperture walls, and cause one’s aptitude to decrease.

After expelling all of the black-red primeval essence out of his body, he grabbed a primeval stone and started to recover his primeval essence.

First, a white silver fog appeared, then it condensed into water droplets, finally forming his white silver coloured primeval sea.

For a Gu Master, Rank one is green copper primeval essence, Rank two is red steel, and Rank three is white silver.

But this white silver primeval sea was not pure, as there was a trace of black-red mixed in – this is the side effect of using the Man-beast Life Burial Gu.

Fang Yuan was not surprised. He calmed his mind and expelled this white silver primeval essence out of his body, before forming new primeval essence.

The second time round, the black-red coloured substance was reduced by half.

But Fang Yuan was not satisfied, and expelled his white silver primeval essence again, forming new primeval essence for the third time.

After several tries, the black-red substance was reduced to a barely observable amount, and even if Fang Yuan attempted more tries, this substance would remain.

This was an unavoidable consequence of using the Man-beast Life Burial Gu.

The Man-beast Life Burial Gu’s effect was extraordinary, able to turn a Rank two peak stage Gu Master with no hopes of advancing his entire life, into a Rank three. This was literally changing fate, thus there had to be some imperfection.

Getting rid of this black-red substance, there was a method. The most common would be to use the Cleansing Water Gu.

Cleansing Water Gu can completely wash away impurities in the aperture; it appeared once in the tree house, but was bought by the Chi faction.

In this short term, Fang Yuan could do nothing about the black-red substance.

...

"You bunch of useless idiots, what are you all doing! Not able to find such a large, lively person?!" In the medicine hall, Gu Yue Yao Ji flew into a furious rage, and her screaming caused even the window lattices and curtains to tremble.

In her heart, she was worried, frightened, anxious and enraged.

It had been three days and three nights, the four frenzy lightning wolves were exterminated and Gu Yue village was relatively safe at the moment. But her granddaughter Gu Yue Yao Le was nowhere to be seen.

Even after she mobilized all her relationships and combed the battlefield, there even being large-scale search parties around the village, there was still no trace of her.

The ones who saw Gu Yue Yao Le for the last time were the battling Gu Masters. What they saw was — Gu Yue Yao Le falling into the encirclement of the wolves, and had to run away frantically, in a worsening predicament.

These showed that Gu Yue Yao Le was not in an optimistic situation, most likely consumed by the wolf packs.

But Gu Yue Yao Ji was indignant.

She could not accept such a cruel truth.

If it was any other girl, so what if they die. But this was her own blood-related granddaughter, someone she had nurtured since young to be the inheritor of her medicine faction!

She was so well-behaved and intelligent, loved by everyone. So lively and cute, bringing others joy.

These days, Gu Yue Yao Ji could not sleep at all, for in her mind, it was all images of her granddaughter.

Gu Yue Yao Ji had originally maintained her looks well, but in these three days, she seem to have aged over ten years. It was like her heart was dug away, and she felt an endless pain of emptiness.

In her screaming, tens of Gu Masters lowered their heads, enduring the cruel insults of the old woman.

"Reporting to medicine hall clan elder, this subordinate has something to report." At this time, a Rank two Gu Master walked in.

"What! Is it news about Yao Le?" Gu Yue Yao Ji’s eyes shone, asking quickly.

"Someone advanced to Rank three, the clan leader is holding an elder meeting at the clan leader pavilion, to confirm the situation." The Gu Master quickly reported.

Gu Yue Yao Ji’s eyes dimmed, waving her hands, "Not information about Yao Le, and still disturbing me? Wait... wait, what did you say... Someone advanced to Rank three and became a new clan elder?"

Halfway through, she reacted and lightly frowned.

This was too sudden, with zero premonition.

The appearance of a new clan elder would influence the entire Gu Yue clan’s political situation. This was a huge hit on the medicine faction who has lost its inheritor.

In the medicine hall, the standing Gu Masters started to discuss among themselves, guessing the identity of the new clan elder.

Gu Yue Yao Ji frowned, asking immediately, "Who advanced to Rank three?"

"Reporting to Lord Yao ji, it is Gu Yue Fang Yuan," the Gu Master answered.

"What? It’s him!" At once, Gu Yue Yao Ji’s iris shrunk; this was the worst of news to her.

In the hall, the Gu Masters also started to discuss violently.

"They couldn’t have made a mistake could they, to think it’s Fang Yuan?"

"Isn’t he a C grade talent? How can he become a Rank three Gu Master so quickly?"

"Once he’s Rank three, he will be a clan elder, a higher-up in the clan. When we see him next time, we have to bow and greet him!"

"How can this be.... This is literally soaring through success!"

"Earlier, didn’t they say he’s dead? He went missing for three days and three nights, and his corpse could not be found on the battlefield. We thought he was eaten by lightning wolves already..."

They were stunned, jealous and confused.

"Missing for three days and three nights, without a corpse on the battlefield, isn’t this the same as Yao Le’s situation?"

Gu Yue Yao Ji’s ears twitched, and her woman instinct caused her to have intense suspicion towards Fang Yuan for no reason!

She suddenly changed her mind; she is going to the clan leader’s pavilion.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

And there you have it. Poor bear!!

Now since I’m at it, after reading the comments in Chapter 152 I would like to remind you guys what I have warned in the first chapter – This is a novel about an evil MC. The author’s wish was to write about a FINAL BOSS villain as a main character, because he was tired of seeing dumb villains and ’intelligent, billion-year-old reborn evil MC’ that ’fell in love with every beautiful girl at first sight’... So I will state a new warning here: The novel doesn’t have any sex or rape scenes (until Book 5 but it is not what you think) so you don’t have to worry about that part. However if you couldn’t handle 151’s chapter of the bear eating the girl, I would suggest that this novel may not be for you, because it isn’t the worst thing Fang Yuan has and will do. That said, I hope most of you were able to handle 151 and are still enjoying the ride!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"He has truly advanced to Rank three!"

"This Rank three aura is genuine, and there is the white silver primeval essence; there is no mistake."

The atmosphere in the clan hall was solemn.

The clan head Gu Yue Bo was sitting on the highest seat, with many elders seated in rows by his left and right.

Whispers could be heard here and there, and dozen of people’s attentions were more or less gathered on a young man who was standing upright in the center of the hall with his head held high.

The young man was Fang Yuan.

"To think this Fang Yuan advanced to Rank three."

"If I hadn’t personally seen it, I would never have believed it....."

"Doesn’t he only have C grade aptitude? How could he advance so suddenly?"

"Actually, it can’t be said to be sudden. Did you forget that he obtained two red steel Relic Gu?"

"Right, it was two whole Relic Gu, they can completely raise his cultivation steeply. Just thinking back when I cultivated, sigh....."

The group of elders were both amazed and puzzled; this matter had caught them completely unprepared.

"This Fang Yuan was able to advance to Rank three! He is merely of C grade aptitude, but could actually have such accomplishments in this short time. This is really a surprise." Gu Yue Mo Chen who was seated on the frontmost seat in the left row exclaimed inwardly.He thought of two-three years ago, when Fang Yuan was still in the academy, and killed a servant of his family.He had already forgotten the name of this servant. But the minced corpse Fang Yuan sent over had left a profound impression on him.

From that day, he saw Fang Yuan in new light, but didn’t expect much from him due to his aptitude.

Now, this young man actually had such accomplishments!

According to the clan system, all Gu Masters who advanced to Rank three were new elders.

A new elder was bound to have a huge impact on the old political structure.

"If I had recruited him before, I would be able to use this impact and gain political dominance. Sigh, it really is a pity....." Thinking of this, Gu Yue Mo Chen couldn’t help but glance in front of him.

His old rival Gu Yue Chi Lian was seated on the frontmost seat in the right row. Right now he had a gloomy expression and obscure light flashed in his eyes.

"This Fang Yuan definitely has secrets on him. Although he had the help from the two red steel Relic Gu, he couldn’t have had advanced to Rank three so fast, this is something even Qing Shu couldn’t accomplish," Gu Yue Bo was also pondering.

He unavoidably thought of his adopted son Qing Shu, and sighed.

Were Gu Yue Qing Shu alive, he might also have Rank three cultivation by now. Unfortunately, reality is cruel.

"Medicine hall elder Lord Gu Yue Yao Ji has arrived—!" At this moment, the doorguard suddenly announced loudly.

Following his announcement, an old woman walked in through the door. Her face was pale and filled with wrinkles, but under her weary eyelids were extremely sharp eyes that locked onto Fang Yuan in an instant.

Gu Yue Yao Ji spoke as she walked forward quickly, "Fang Yuan, you advanced to Rank three? I don’t believe it! I will personally verify it, let me inspect your aperture!"

The aperture was a Gu Master’s most important secret and was also their personal affair. How could they let others inspect it so easily?

Fang Yuan slightly turned his body and looked at Yao Ji who was walking over. He replied with a sneer, "Gu Yue Yao Ji, on what basis are you demanding to inspect my aperture?"

Back then, when he had just begun cultivating, his aperture would be inspected at fixed intervals by the academy elder. But it was different now, he was already a Rank three Gu Master, someone who was on equal footing with other elders like the academy elder and the medicine hall elder.

Moreover, it was very simple to verify one’s cultivation.

White silver primeval essence couldn’t be faked easily, and similarly, his Rank three aura was a fact.

"Outrageous! You, a junior dares to call me by name?" Yao Ji’s eyes widened, "Why can’t I inspect you? With my identity as the medicine hall elder and also as your elder, I have the right to do so!"

"Hmph, old hag, calling you by name is giving you respect. I still have yet to settle the scores between us. You harbored a grudge towards me when I didn’t sell you my Liquor worm, and actually wanted to plunder my Nine Leaf Vitality Grass? Hmph, I also wanted to exchange my merits for that Three Step Fragrant Grass Gu, but you prevented it in the dark. Now, I am also a Rank three Gu Master, so you had better stop putting on airs!"

Fang Yuan’s eyes were narrowed and his words sharp as a blade. He was very clear-cut with his words, completely showing off his hostility towards Yao Ji.

If he said this with a cultivation of Rank one or Rank two, he would definitely be suppressed and even attacked. However, the situation was completely different now; he was a Rank three and his position was already equal to the elders.

Towards Fang Yuan insulting Gu Yue Yao Ji, the other elders’ strategy was to wait and see.

Being at a high position, their considerations were profound. Even if they weren’t born shrewd, the years of political struggle had trained the shrewdness in them.

They didn’t have much understanding of Fang Yuan, so they could take this opportunity to observe him.

"Brat, you have the cheeks to slander me!" Gu Yue Yao Ji was furious due to the humiliation. What Fang Yuan said was true, but why would she admit it in front of everyone?

The elders present were all silently observing the situation unfold. Most of the elders present here knew of the matter regarding the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass and even had transactions with Gu Yue Yao Ji.

However in politics, there are only eternal benefits; never eternal enemies or eternal friends.

Upon hearing Gu Yue Yao Ji retort herself, Fang Yuan coldly laughed and didn’t reply.

Gu Yue Yao Ji’s sound echoed and lingered within the hall.

This old woman was slightly trembling, this silence made her feel like she was alone!

Something had changed.

The situation was no longer the same.

Were Fang Yuan to be a Rank one or Rank two, these elders would immediately jump out to stand on Gu Yue Yao Ji’s side and unitedly punish Fang Yuan. The authority of higher-ups absolutely didn’t allow the lower levels to challenge it!

However, Fang Yuan was Rank three now, and even if the clan head hadn’t officially announced it, his position as an elder was already set in stone. Thus, his contradiction with Gu Yue Yao Ji was now the internal conflict between higher-ups.

Fang Yuan was a newly advanced elder, his foundation were not yet deep and didn’t have any background, but this was also his strength as he had nothing to lose in the first place, thus having no fear.

By contrast, Gu Yue Yao Ji was old and though she was in control of medicine hall, had a high position and broad connections, this was also her weakness.

She was old and she couldn’t afford to lose. Her medicine faction’s inheritor Yao Le was missing and the enormous assets she controlled were coveted by many.

It would not be bad if it were peaceful times, but now was the time of the wolf tide and even elders had the possibility of dying.

Things were turbulent, newcomers climbed up in position and old timers stepped down.

This was a time of change, there weren’t any elders that could guarantee their own safety. Even the clan head could fall down.

In the history of Gu Yue clan, the number of clan heads that died in a wolf tide weren’t few.

As for the elders, they couldn’t even guarantee their own safety, so unless there were enormous benefits involved, they wouldn’t meddle in other people’s fights.

Gu Yue Yao Ji felt like the situation had turned thorny.

The hall was silent.

Due to the matter regarding her granddaughter, she hadn’t slept for three days and three nights. Right now as she stood there, she felt an invisible pressure shrouding her body and mind and it caused cold sweat to form on her forehead.

She felt like a crippled old wolf, standing alone in the wolf pack.

The surrounding wolves were standing in the shadows, observing her through their deep, dark green eyes.

Fang Yuan who was in front of her was like a stoic wolf who had revealed its brilliance in the battle. He was so young, energetic and also ambitious.

It really was the saying – Old waves push the new waves forward, and a new generation replaces the old!

At this moment, Gu Yue Yao Ji felt that she had really aged. Very much so!

Her eyelids jumped even more severely as her imposing aura gradually lowered.

However, Gu Yue Yao Le’s figure appeared in her mind; she forcefully opened her blurred eyes, her aura increasing suddenly.

She opened her mouth, "Fang Yuan, why did you disappear for these three days? If you hadn’t shown up, your name would have been listed in the casualties announcement in the medicine hall, in the list of the Gu Masters who died in battle. You disappeared for three days and three nights, and when you come back, you are already a Rank three Gu Master. What happened during these days? Heh heh, I believe everyone here is interested in your explanation."

After realizing she could no longer easily create troubles for Fang Yuan, her tone became more mild, no longer as forceful as before. However, her words were still very strong, with treacherous intentions hidden within.

After all, she had the highest seniority as a high-ranking politician!

The elders’ eyes brightened when they heard this, revealing clear interest. No one was a fool among those present here, Fang Yuan’s sudden advancement to Rank three was indeed strange.

His C grade aptitude was after all known by everyone.

Gu Yue Yao Ji’s words brought those elders to stand by her side again.

However, since Fang Yuan dared to return so grandly, he naturally had made preparations.

Under everyone’s gazes, he raised his head and laughed, "Old woman, what you want to know, am I obliged to tell you? However... hearing the pitiful news of your granddaughter’s death, I will benevolently tell you. During the past few days, I have been in closed door cultivation in Elder Chi Lian’s manor, trying to breakthrough to Rank three. This point can be verified by Elder Gu Yue Chi Lian!"

"What?" Gu Yue Yao Ji revealed a startled look.

Other elders were also shocked, all kinds of complicated expressions appearing on their faces.

Immediately, everyone’s gazes were cast towards the gloomy-faced Gu Yue Chi Lian.

The Chi faction head, who held one of the two most powerful influences in the Gu

Yue Clan, now appeared so gloomy that water could drip out from him.

However in front of everyone’s gazes, he knew he needed to give an explanation, thus he reluctantly replied, "It is indeed so. I can testify that Fang Yuan has been in a closed door cultivation in a secret room in my manor during these past few days."

The instance these words came out, the whole crowd went in an uproar.

The elders possessed deep restraint, they wouldn’t lose their bearings and make a scene. However, there were many whispers and mutterings.

"To think Gu Yue Chi Lian actually had relations with Fang Yuan!"

"Fang Yuan’s advancement is related to Chi Lian?"

"There is a great probability! Didn’t people speculate that Fang Yuan had someone supporting him from behind the scenes? To think it was the Chi faction."

"Maybe the reason for Fang Yuan’s fast cultivation speed is because of Chi faction pouring resources to him. Fang Yuan is Fang Zheng’s older brother, Elder Chi Lian’s actions have a very profound meaning."

Some elders discussed whereas some elders’ mind were flipping over.

"It turns out this Fang Yuan wasn’t a junior with no one to guide his steps, he has the help from Chi faction. We need to be cautious towards him in the future."

"Fortunately, we didn’t interfere and jump into the fight between Fang Yuan and Yao Ji."

"Yao Ji is in a dangerous predicament, she wanted to deal with an elder who didn’t have any backing, but she could never have had expected that his background was so solid. It’s actually the Chi faction!"

Gu Yue Yao Ji’s face was very pale. When she had heard Gu Yue Chi Lian confirming it, she took a step back in shock, her whole body trembling faintly.

Opposing a lone elder compared to an elder backed by the Chi faction, these were two utterly different concepts!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

I would like to thank all my Patreon supporters so far! Thanks :D I can buy one extra cup of coffee and tea now every month e_e)/ | Thank you Yotae, hertic and Ledreaf <3 | To my readers: Remember if you like my work so far and wanna support me, feel free to help me out in Patreon ^-^ Long live Fang Yuan :3

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Gu Yue Mo Chen’s heart was very heavy.

He had planned to recruit Fang Yuan, but stopped himself due to Fang Yuan’s aptitude.

But now his old rival Gu Yue Chi Lian actually got affiliated with Fang Yuan already. All the evidence points to Chi Lian providing support for Fang Yuan since over a year ago.

Now, his investment had received such a great reward, and the Chi faction has a new clan elder. How can his heart not be heavy?

Except, other than solemness, Mo Chen was also confused.

He was Gu Yue Chi Lian’s old rival, having competed since they were young. He had such a good understanding of his rival that he even knew what colour of underwear his rival liked to wear.

Logically speaking, Gu Yue Chi Lian would’ve started gloating by now, throwing mocking and smug glances towards Mo Chen. But right now, his face was grim like he had suffered an injustice.

This was too strange!

Just what had transpired between him and Fang Yuan? What sort of agreement did they reach?

Gu Yue Mo Chen could not get an answer.

"This Fang Yuan, his guts are greater than the heavens, to think he would actually threaten me!" Gu Yue Chi Lian’s heart was filled with anger and perplexity.

Last night, Fang Yuan had secretly approached him and used the matter of ‘Gu Yue Chi Cheng’s fake aptitude’ to threaten him.

Heavens!

How did this important secret that only he, Gu Yue Chi Lian and his grandson Chi Cheng knew about, come to the knowledge of this outsider Fang Yuan?!

Gu Yue Chi Cheng was only a C grade talent, but for the sake of the Chi faction’s benefits, Chi Lian had to take a risk and show a facade of Chi Cheng being B grade.

If this matter was exposed, its impact towards the Chi faction would be unforeseen. The Chi faction family head’s integrity would be questioned for his cheating personally, and this would ruin his reputation completely. More importantly, the Chi faction inheritor is only a C grade, this means that the Chi faction would have no political outlook anymore. Who would be dumb enough to rely on this type of faction?

Fang Yuan knowing this secret, was equivalent to grasping the fatal weakness of the Chi faction.

When Fang Yuan threatened him, Gu Yue Chi Lian almost couldn’t control himself from attacking and eliminating this threat on the spot!

But he forcefully stopped himself, as he did not know who else got ahold of this secret, and whether Fang Yuan told anyone or left behind any paper evidence at some secret location.

"Pacify him first, understand the situation, then eliminate him! I cannot leave this threat hanging!" That was his thought at the time.

But soon after that, Fang Yuan displayed his Rank three cultivation.

Chi Lian, while shell-shocked, could only change his plan to cooperation.

Rank three is a clan elder, and if he murdered a clan elder, this matter would just be as serious as cheating.

Furthermore, fighting against a Rank three Gu Master would take some time, and the commotion it creates is even harder to deal with.

Falling out with Fang Yuan would not have any benefits for the Chi faction – in fact the risk was even greater.

"Although Fang Yuan has a hold on me, a shared secret is also a form of collaboration." Finally, Chi Lian could only convince himself to comfort his heart. Fang Yuan’s threat was so sudden, so he could not tell how many safety nets Fang Yuan had in place, thus he could only go along with it.

But now, Fang Yuan fearlessly implicated him, letting him attract the attention in Fang Yuan’s place, it was really throwing him under the bus!

However, even if Gu Yue Chi Lian knew this, what could he do?

This time, Fang Yuan slowly spoke again, "Gu Yue Yao Ji, I know your heart is in a mess now. Yes, that B grade talent granddaughter of yours is dead, and without a proper corpse, your medicine faction is now without an inheritor. But a C grade talent like myself advanced to Rank three instead, so you feel anxious and indignant, thus your fury is directed at me. I understand that."

"What did you say?!" Gu Yue Yao Ji stared widely, uncontrollable anger rising, "You little wretch, I’m telling you Yao Le is not dead."

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, shrugging nonchalantly, "Her matter of life or death, what does it have to do with me? Yao Ji, you don’t have to emphasize that."

"But!" He suddenly twisted, "Gu Yue Yao Ji, in order to find your granddaughter, you assembled search parties and wasted much human and material resources. That concerns me, the clan elders here, and even the clan leader. Gu Yue Yao Ji, letting you lead the medicine hall, that is because of our trust. But what have you done? You dispatched the medicine hall’s healing Gu Masters out to search for your granddaughter, leaving those injured and crippled Gu Masters in distress. You are too selfish! Yao Le’s sacrifice, it is indeed the clan’s loss. But you further worsened our loss, you are not fit to be our medicine hall clan elder at all!!"

Fang Yuan’s words hit the nail on the head, tearing at Yao Ji’s weakness, her pain.

But what he said, was very true.

Upon hearing Fang Yuan’s words, many clan elders started frowning secretly.

Whose faction did not have injuries? Gu Yue Yao Ji’s actions were indeed overboard, dispatching Gu Masters on her own and not attending to the urgent business at hand, but instead searching for her granddaughter.

"You... you!" Gu Yue Yao Ji was so angry her body was trembling, her finger pointing to Fang Yuan, unable to say another word. Her eyes were like blowing fire, having a strong urge to strangle this bastard Fang Yuan on the spot.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was cold and indifferent, staring at her with no fear.

He was returning the favour to her. Gu Yue Yao Ji’s earlier words were all righteous and caused the many clan elders to get curious about Fang Yuan’s secret to advancing, causing a huge commotion. Fang Yuan’s words were the same, and with reason backing him, standing at the highest point of the clan rules, it caused the clan elders to subconsciously defend him.

To the clan elders, protecting the clan’s rules were akin to protecting their own interests.

Gu Yue Yao Ji’s actions these days did infringe on their interests!

"This Fang Yuan... bastard! Fucking bastard!" Gu Yue Yao Ji shuddered, not knowing that Gu Yue Chi Lian was also angered to the point of fuming.

Fang Yuan was offending Gu Yue Yao Ji to the limit, and her hatred towards him will also spill to the Chi faction since Fang Yuan was now ‘a part of them’.

But the truth was, Chi faction is innocent!

Was he, Gu Yue Chi Lian a fool? Why would he offend Gu Yue Yao Ji who is the most senior and has the greatest social network.

Gu Yue Chi Lian subconsciously shrunk his body, praying in his heart: May the other clan elders not direct the attention to himself. Fang Yuan doing this, is his own idea, it has nothing to do with the Chi faction!

But Fang Yuan’s next sentence, broke this illusion of his to smithereens.

He turned around and reported to the clan leader Gu Yue Bo, "Clan leader, I highly doubt Gu Yue Yao Ji’s ability to continue leading the medicine hall. I suggest, we temporarily revoke her title of medicine hall clan elder and hold a thorough assessment of her. Each one of the clan’s healing Gu Masters are precious to us. We cannot let her waste them like this. Otherwise, the ones that suffer the most are the brave Gu Masters that fight using their lives for our precious clan!"

Pausing momentarily, he continued, "This suggestion of mine, elder Chi Lian is also very supportive of."

"What?!" Gu Yue Yao Ji’s iris shrunk as her face changed colours.

"What?!" The clan elders were all taken aback. To hear of Gu Yue Chi Lian’s forthright attitude like this, does it mean that he was unhappy with Yao Ji from long ago and has been lusting after the huge benefits in her possessions, wanting to get a piece of the pie?

"WHAT?!" As the person in question, Gu Yue Chi Lian nearly jumped from his seat.

How could he not be angry?

He was going to go crazy from Fang Yuan’s antics!

This Fang Yuan had not only offended Gu Yue Yao Ji, he even dragged him into the boat.

His original political intent towards the medicine faction was closeness and cooperation. But now, his efforts were all thwarted by a single sentence from Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan was framing and harming him. In front of the person himself, framing, harming, and spreading false rumors!

But he, Gu Yue Chi Lian, the grand Chi faction family head, was held hostage by Fang Yuan, and had no way to fight back!!

"Oh, Elder Chi Lian, you support this?" Gu Yue Bo’s gaze shone as he asked.

Gu Yue Chi Lian gritted his teeth, slowly getting up.

He stiffened his neck, resisting the urge to look at Fang Yuan; he was afraid he could not control his rage.

At this point, he can do nothing to Fang Yuan, and can only carry on the show.

"Revoking Yao Ji’s title, this is Fang Yuan’s sole idea. With the threat of the wolf tide, suddenly changing people is not appropriate. However, I do agree that elder Yao Ji has deviated from the role of the healing Gu Masters due to her personal feelings. If these efforts were placed into the right areas, it would reduce our clan’s loss to a great extent."

Saying so, his heart was bleeding.

He would definitely not follow through with what Fang Yuan said, as he had his own interests in mind. These words, he had already exerted the greatest effort to find a balance between Fang Yuan and Yao Ji.

But even so, after he finished speaking, he heard a thump.

He turned his head around and saw that Gu Yue Yao Ji had vomited blood out of her intense anger, and fell on her back.

It’s over!

"I’ve completely offended Yao Ji!" At this moment, Gu Yue Chi Lian felt like he had fallen into a chasm, his heart icy cold.

"Lord Yao Ji!"

"Someone, quickly diagnose her."

"She just lost consciousness, it’s not an emergency. Lord Yao Ji had not rested at all for these three days and three nights, her body and mind is exhausted and needs to rest."

The hall was in a mess, but slowly quietened down.

Gu Yue Yao Ji was carried away by a stretcher.

She was already old, and had worried for so many days. With a weakened heart, now that she was triggered by both Fang Yuan and Chi Lian, adding on to her misery, it was no wonder that she fainted.

"Lord Yao Ji had led the medicine hall for so many years, she had worked hard for so long, she is truly tired. Letting her rest is also for her own good. Now that she is unconscious, the medicine hall cannot be without a leader. I advice that we let Fang Yuan take over," Gu Yue Chi Lian suddenly said.

This old man stood before his seat. Seeing Gu Yue Yao Ji being carried out, his eyes shone coldly.

Since he had already offended her, then why not go the entire way and continue the mistake! To prevent the medicine faction’s revenge, he might as well suppress them entirely. This is someone in power, the resolve and wisdom of an expert in politics.

The hall fell into temporary silence.

Yao Le’s death, Yao Ji’s downfall, it showed that the medicine faction was on an imminent decline. The cruelty of politics is even more heartless than the wolf tide.

Fang Yuan was silent as well.

Letting him be the medicine hall clan elder, heh heh, Gu Yue Chi Lian was only saying it casually.

Letting a newly advanced young clan elder to hold such an important role. Maybe if the clan elders and clan leader were all retarded.

Gu Yue Chi Lian saying this intentionally, had deep meaning.

As expected, in the next moment, Gu Yue Bo declared, "The medicine hall’s role shall temporarily be held by elder Chi Zhong. Fang Yuan’s cultivation has indeed reached Rank three, thus according to the clan rules, he shall also assume the role of clan elder. Send out the news, and let the entire village rejoice."

Saying so, Gu Yue Bo stood up and left.

"Congratulations, congratulations..." After the clan leader left, the clan elders all walked towards Fang Yuan, cupping their fists with faces full of smiles.

Fang Yuan cupped his fists as well, replying with a warm smile.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Congratulations, congratulations."

"Elder Fang Yuan is young and promising. You are definitely a role model for the young generation!"

"Haha, we truly anticipate Elder Fang Yuan’s brilliance as we work together from now on."

The group of elders surrounded Fang Yuan and spoke customary words.

The academy elder stood at the edge of the crowd, his expression complicated as he looked at Fang Yuan.

He had never expected Fang Yuan to become an elder. In his class, he had been most optimistic of Fang Zheng, and then Chi Cheng and Mo Bei.

But to think that the one who was the first to achieve success, was actually Fang Yuan!

"How could these little achievements of mine compare to the elders? I still need to thank the clan’s teachings for today’s achievements. Academy elder, I have always engraved your words in my heart," Fang Yuan had a warm smile on, and he spoke modestly and prudently.

The academy elder hadn’t expected this punk to take the initiative to greet him.

He was blank for a moment before a gratified expression appeared in his face, "Looks like you have matured a lot in these years, Elder Fang Yuan. Keep up the good work, I am proud of your achievements. The clan needs new blood like you."

Fang Yuan sincerely thanked the academy elder again and also replied to the other elders.

With his five hundred years of experience, putting on such an act was very easy.

He had a sense of propriety, his words were gentle and his attitude was humble, making all those who heard him feel like they were basking in spring breeze.

Gu Yue Chi Lian was indifferent at this scene, but the more he observed, the more frightened he became. This Fang Yuan knew how to deal with the situation adequately, and every sentence and word were as if spoken by a veteran. Was he really just in his teens? Could he be a born politician?

The academy elder was astonished too. He thought of the academy times; Fang Yuan was so rebellious, even exploiting his own classmates. He had countless headaches due to this, but the current Fang Yuan seemed to have completely changed.

On the contrary, Gu Yue Mo Chen wasn’t baffled by Fang Yuan’s behaviour. After all, he already had a taste of Fang Yuan’s schemes.

Right now, as he looked at Fang Yuan’s cultured and gentle behaviour, becoming a focal point of the crowd, he kept on sighing that Gu Yue Chi Lian had made a great move.

The exchanges continued on for some time. But, regardless of what thoughts the elders had, the ones present there couldn’t help but look at Fang Yuan in a new light. They continuously sighed that rumors were really unreliable!

In the end, Fang Yuan tactfully rejected some of the elders’ invitations and left the clan head pavillion with a smile together with Gu Yue Chi Lian.

"Hmph, are you satisfied now? After pulling down Gu Yue Yao Ji, you even dragged my Chi faction into hot water!" When they reached the study room, Chi Lian couldn’t pretend anymore, and the smile on his face was replaced by fury.

Fang Yuan was sitting in front of him and leisurely smiled, "You need to thank me for this. Gu Yue Yao Ji is down, this is a great benefit to your Chi faction."

Gu Yue Chi Lian’s gaze flashed, "Hmph, young man, your thoughts are too simple. Chi Zhong is my Chi faction’s member but his wife is of Yao faction. The clan head appointed him as the temporary medicine hall elder precisely because he wants to balance out the internal strife between my Chi and Yao faction. You, how did you find out about Chi Cheng’s matter?"

At the end, Gu Yue Chi Lian suddenly asked this.

He closely watched Fang Yuan with a gaze like that of an eagle’s.

Fang Yuan unconcernedly shrugged his shoulders and said, "Old man, I don’t have much primeval stones on me left, give me three thousand primeval stones."

Bang.

Gu Yue Chi Lian fiercely slammed the table; he lowered his voice and roared, "Fang Yuan! Don’t even think that you can extort my Chi faction just by knowing that secret. I am old and don’t have long to live, so at worst I will just give up my life! Hmph, I can accept cooperating, but I will absolutely not receive any threats!"

"I won’t allow what happened today to happen again! If you recklessly make enemies and pull my Chi faction into your mess, you will regret it! You really think that secret can destroy my whole Chi faction? Heh, don’t be so naive."

Fang Yuan didn’t reply, his gaze was ghostly as he let Gu Yue Chi Lian continue to berate him.

When Gu Yue Chi Lian had slammed the table, his aura was astonishing like that of a tiger, but as he continued to speak, his aura started getting weaker and weaker and in the end, he appeared to be in deficiency of energy, showing a lack of confidence.

Only when he no longer spoke did Fang Yuan leisurely smile and say, "Old man, don’t get so angry. I am indeed short of money recently, and I am not asking these three thousand primeval stones for free, I am just borrowing them. I can even sign the receipt for loan."

Gu Yue Chi Lian snorted, he spoke slowly, "You won’t lack primeval stones, you have just become an elder and don’t know the preferential treatment the clan gives to the elders. As long as you are an elder, you will receive a hundred primeval stones every week. This is the amount you receive in ordinary times, but as this is the time of the wolf tide, you will receive three hundred primeval stones as allowance."

"Not only that, you can also freely take a Rank three Gu worm. Similarly, the clan’s Rank one to Rank three recipes will be opened to you. You can choose any recipe that you like and refine your Rank three Gu worm. There are also other privileges, for example: Ordinary Gu Masters can only marry one wife, but an elder can have one wife and two concubines."

"So that’s it." Fang Yuan knew this of course, but he pretended it was the first time he heard it.

"But even if it is so, I still want to borrow three thousand primeval stones. You also know that I just advanced to Rank three. Refining a Rank three Gu worm consumes a great amount of primeval stones," Fang Yuan ‘sincerely’ said.

Gu Yue Chi Lian reflected on this.

He pondered, "With Fang Yuan’s identity as an elder, he wouldn’t go so far as to not pay his debt. Does he not want his reputation? If in case, he dies in the wolf tide, then wouldn’t my three thousand primeval stones go in waste? Wait, won’t it be better if he dies? We can continue to hide the matter regarding Chi Cheng’s aptitude. But how did he learn this secret? Is there still anyone else who knows of it? I had better lend the money to him first and lower his guard, then I can probe his secret."

As he thought up to this point, Gu Yue Chi Lian didn’t insist anymore and immediately took out a brush and paper.

Fang Yuan wrote the receipt for loan and signed with his fingerprint.

Gu Yue Chi Lian called his butler and gave some orders. Soon, several money bags full of primeval stones were brought over.

Fang Yuan weighed each money bag and didn’t find any problems.

He truly needed these primeval stones.

He had almost spent all his savings in refining the Man-beast Life Burial Gu. These three thousand primeval stones could be considered a timely assistance.

He had just advanced to Rank three. He needed to refine a Rank three Gu worm.

Only then could he truly possess the battle and survival ability of a Rank three Gu Master.

He already had a rough plan regarding this. Three thousand primeval stones might not be enough. However, it wasn’t urgent, and the Chi faction would be his great money farm.

The primeval stones he borrowed this time was only the start. If it happened once, it will happen twice; first time is difficult, but subsequently gets easier.

As for paying the debt, hehe....

Fang Yuan wasn’t in a hurry to leave after getting these primeval stones, but instead smiled, "I still want to borrow something."

"Don’t go overboard." Gu Yue Chi Lian was grim, but in the end, he still said, "Speak, what is it?"

"Cleansing Water Gu," Fang Yuan’s’ eyes narrowed as he said candidly.

There was a Cleansing Water Gu on sale previously in the caravan, and if you consider who was most likely to purchase this Gu, it would be Gu Yue Chi Lian.

He used his own primeval essence to nurture his grandson’s aperture and advance his cultivation. This led to there being mixed auras in the aperture, which needed to be purified by the Cleansing Water Gu.

"That is impossible!" Gu Yue Chi Lian firmly refused.

He indeed bought that Cleansing Water Gu, but he prepared this Gu for his grandson Gu Yue Chi Cheng. If he wanted to buy it again, he could only rely on fate.

"Don’t refuse me so fast." Fang Yuan laughed, "I believe you - Lord Gu Yue Chi Lian, the head of Chi faction - know which is more important, a Cleansing Water Gu or Chi faction’s reputation."

Gu Yue Chi Lian’s face darkened completely, the aura around him turning cold as he fiercely looked at Fang Yuan, gnashing his teeth, "Fang Yuan, know what you are trying to do. You are blackmailing me, blackmailing the head of the grand Chi faction!"

"No, no, this is not a blackmail, it is a discussion. I am only borrowing the Cleansing Water Gu and will return you a new one in the future. I can sign the receipt of loan for this too," Fang Yuan chuckled. However, his tone was firm and it showed his determined will.

"Don’t even imagine it!" Chi Lian’s attitude was also firm.

......

After an hour, Fang Yuan walked out of the Chi family manor with three thousand primeval stones and a Cleansing Water Gu.

And Gu Yue Chi Lian was sitting in the study room, looking at the two receipts - written by Fang Yuan - on the table. The indignance in his heart was like a surging river, overflowing endlessly.

Fang Yuan had a hold on Chi faction which put Chi Lian in an extremely passive situation, thus his victory was reasonable.

Three days later.

Fang Yuan sat cross-legged on the bed, white light shining upon his face.

A white ball of light was floating in mid-air — the fusion process had reached its end stage.

Fang Yuan used his consciousness to maintain the ball of light while throwing primeval stones into it.

The ball of light suddenly faded away and a whole new Gu worm flew into Fang Yuan’s palm.

Its appearance was like a big ladybug. Its semi-circular milky white carapace was decorated with dark spots.

It was quite big, about the size of an adult’s fist.

Rank three Sky Canopy Gu!

"I’ve finally succeeded." Fang Yuan satisfiedly nodded his head, this was his second time trying this fusion.

The Sky Canopy Gu was refined from the fusion of Rank two White Jade Gu and an aqua defense Gu.

In the first try, Fang Yuan used the Water Shield Gu and White Jade Gu. But the fusion ended up a failure, resulting in the death of the Water Shield Gu.

The aqua defense Gu he used this time had been exchanged with his battle merits.

However, this Sky Canopy Gu wasn’t Fang Yuan’s first Rank three Gu worm. His first Rank three Gu worm was directly obtained from the clan.

After advancing to Rank three and becoming an elder, the clan would bestow them with a Rank three Gu worm.

Fang Yuan used this chance to pick a Thunderwings Gu.

This Gu was gotten as spoils of war after the elders had killed a frenzy lightning wolf. Its ability was to materialize a pair of thunder wings and give Gu Masters the ability to fly for a short duration.

With the Thunderwings Gu to assist with movements, Fang Yuan’s final combat shortcoming was fixed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Lord Fang Yuan, this way towards the secret room, please enter." In the dark eerie tunnel, a Rank two old Gu Master walked in front, leading the way for Fang Yuan.

The secret room that held all the Gu worm combination recipes of the clan, was not far ahead.

Fang Yuan advanced to Rank three, thus his status had a 180 degree change. All the fusion recipes kept in the clan - as long as they were not Rank four or five recipes, he had the authority to look through.

If it was a Rank one or two Gu Master, to look through the recipes, they would need to pay primeval stones or exchange using merit points.

This secret room was in the basement of the village, at a very hidden location. Even if the village was eradicated, this secret room would still remain.

Back then, the Gu Yue clan’s creator, the first generation clan leader, found a primeval essence spring inside this underground cave, thus deciding to build his village here.

Through the generations of development and growth by the clan leaders, Gu Yue clan’s underground cave had become the Gu Yue clan secret base.

Normally, ordinary Gu Masters did not have the rights to appear at this location. Only clan elders, the clan leader, and the Dark Hall’s Gu Masters in charge of protecting the place had such authority.

Many Gu Masters had only been there once in their lives.

That is during the awakening ceremony, where the youngsters would come to the primeval spring sea, hoping to awaken their aperture.

Other than this, unless there is a special reason, entry to this underground cave is prohibited for all people. Even the Gu Master guarding the place is picked after careful consideration.

After all, the primeval spring in this underground cave is the entire foundation of the Gu Yue village. From the spring center, large amounts of primeval stones are produced, and that sustains the Gu Master cultivation of the entire clan.

In the tunnel, two sets of footsteps could be heard.

Far away, the sound of river water flowing sounded – that is the underground river in the cave.

A moment later, the Gu Master leading the way brought Fang Yuan to a rock door.

He patted his belly, and a Gu worm flew out of his aperture. As sparks flied, it knocked onto the rock door.

The rock door’s surface rippled, like a rock thrown into the water. Soon after, the rock wall blinked and gradually faded away, showing the secret room behind.

The secret room’s size was rather small, being only 666 ⅔ m². Every few steps, there would be a rock table half the height of a person. Tens of rock tables had a white jade plate on them, and on the plate there was a Gu worm silently resting.

These Gu worms had all sorts of colours, being around the size of a fist; they had very similar appearances, like silkworms. On its head, there were two compound eyes like bees or dragonflies, it was colourful and looked like shiny glass. However the surface was not soft, but covered in a layer of insect shell, and the shell even had golden lustre.

"Lord Fang Yuan, this is your first time to the secret room, so let me explain. These are Rank two Digital Shade Gu, all have recipes recorded in them. In the green Digital Shade Gu worms, almost all the Rank one recipes can be found in them. As for the red-black coloured Gu, there are Rank two recipes. White contains the Rank three recipes, and orange has the Rank four recipes. As for Rank five, it is contained in the most central purple Digital Shade Gu worms."

Beside him, the old Gu Master introduced appropriately.

Digital Shade Gu was a recording type of Gu worm. Just one step further in advancement, and it would be the Rank three Photo-audio Gu.

After the Photo-audio Gu is refined, it not only can store a recording, but can also record the voices as well. In the rock crack secret cave, the Flower Wine Monk used a Photo-audio Gu to inform Fang Yuan of the inheritance details.

But to record down recipes, voices are not necessary, thus the Digital Shade Gu is enough.

Fusion recipes, these were very precious. Using normal bamboo paper to record them, if they were stolen, not only can they refine the Gu Yue clan’s specialty Gu worms, it is also a huge leak of the clan’s information.

Knowing the enemy leads to easier battles, and experienced Gu Masters can learn about the strengths and weaknesses of a Gu worm from the refinement recipe.

Once it is leaked, towards a clan the loss would be severe. In future when they battle, the Gu Masters from that clan may also be disadvantaged in Gu worms.

Thus, recipes were strictly controlled, and as classified by ranks, stored appropriately.

Digital Shade Gu was easier to refine and had a low cost, thus it was a common method to contain recipes.

"Lord Fang Yuan, these Digital Shade Gu all belong to the Secret Hall clan elder. But it would not impede you from using primeval essence and browsing through. Just that with your current identity, you cannot browse the Rank four and five recipes. There’s also two more things — the secret room is the clan’s red zone, your every action here is observed fully in secret. Everyday, you can only stay here for fifteen minutes. Once the time is up, you must leave," the Gu Master continued speaking.

"Mm, I understand." Fang Yuan nodded.

"Lord Fang Yuan, this subordinate has no authority to enter, thus I will wait at the door. Once the time is up, I will bring you out," the old man bowed.

Fang Yuan walked into the secret room. Once he entered, the rock door turned from virtual to solid, trapping him in the room alone.

Walking in the secret room, it was peaceful. The echoes of his footsteps could be heard bouncing off the walls as the surrounding walls had Water Light Gu in them.

Their bodies emitted a light, wavering like water, interchanging between light and shadow, with layers after layers shining indefinitely.

Fang Yuan took a red-black coloured Gu worm and injected his white silver primeval essence inside. Immediately two beams of light shot out from the Digital Shade Gu’s compound eyes.

He raised the Gu up, and pointed the eyes at the white jade plate on the table.

Two beams of light hit the white jade plate, and after some fluctuations, words started to appear.

This was the recipe on how to refine the Moonscar Gu.

First it listed the Moonscar Gu’s strengths, which was the increase in attack distance, twice of the Moonlight Gu. The weakness was the subpar attack.

Next was the refinement recipe — Moonscar Gu is refined from fusing the Moonlight Gu and Scar Rock Gu.

Next is the important points for refining this Gu, the crux was — if during the refinement, some jade rock is added in, or done during a night when there is abundant moonlight and exposed to it, there would be a higher chance of success.

Lastly, it is the experiences of the Gu Masters who had attempted to fuse this Gu. This had the greatest content, almost up to ten thousand words.

Fang Yuan took a look and memorised some things to heart.

It was after all countless people’s experiments and tries, and the experienced gathered from numerous attempts. Some information, even Fang Yuan did not know.

After all, Moonlight Gu is a unique Gu to the Gu Yue clan. In his previous life, he had never become a clan elder or came here to browse the recipes.

Time was limited, so Fang Yuan quickly took a look and placed the Digital Shade Gu back to its spot, then picked up a white coloured Gu to observe.

In the white Digital Shade Gu, there was the Rank three fusion recipes.

Most of the recipes did not suit Fang Yuan, as they needed Gu worms like Moonwhirl or Moonscar Gu as the base.

Fang Yuan did not look through closely; to save time, he skimmed through.

He first used the Moonlight Gu to fuse with the Little Light Gu to form Moonglow Gu. On that basis, there was only three refinement recipes worth using.

First was the Rank three Golden moon, with the same ten steps of shooting distance, but the attack power is increased once again. Once shot out, the golden coloured crescent moon would nearly be half a man tall, and had a strong imposing aura.

Second was the Frost Moon Gu. The moonblade becomes eerie white and icy, having an element of ice to it. Whoever it hurts will be invaded by the coldness, moving slowly.

The third is the Illusory Moon Gu. This Gu was more unique — it is not used to attack, but once activated, it can allow the Gu Master to create a shadow clone to attract attacks and confuse the enemy.

Especially when this Illusory moon Gu, once refined, can be used as the basis for the Rank four Moonshadow Gu.

"Moonshadow Gu can be implanted into a Gu Master’s aperture and suppress them from using primeval essence." In the information on the Illusory Moon Gu, there was only some vaguely explained information about the Moonshadow Gu, as reference.

"Moonshadow Gu... isn’t that the Gu worm used by the fourth generation clan leader to sneak an attack on the Flower Wine Monk?" Fang Yuan seeing this, frowned deeply.

In this world, there are countless Gu worms, and even with his five hundred years of experience, he only knew less than 0.001% of all the Gu worms in this world.

He originally had a rough idea of the Moonshadow Gu, but now that he knew the Gu worm’s effect, suspicion rose in his heart.

Moonshadow Gu had a unique use. It was able to suppress 30% of the primeval essence in a Rank four Gu Master’s aperture, 15% of a Rank five, and 60% of a Rank three Gu Master. That means, with a C grade talent like Fang Yuan, only having 40~50%, if they were hit by this Moonshadow Gu, they would be unable to deploy a single ounce of primeval essence, losing all their battle strength and were as good as crippled.

Of course, if it were Fang Yuan, if the Moonshadow Gu was used on him, it would be ‘throwing a meatbun at the dog’ - what’s gone can never come back.

That is because once the Moonshadow Gu enters his aperture, the Spring Autumn Cicada will demonstrate its dominance, and under its aura, the Moonshadow Gu would be instantly refined by him, and become his.

What puzzled Fang Yuan, was not the Moonshadow Gu’s effect, but the Flower Wine Monk.

"I remember that on the shadow wall, the Flower Wine Monk was bathed in blood, full of injuries. Firstly, his battle with the fourth generation clan leader and elders only gave him mild injuries. I thought those severe injuries were caused by this Moonshadow Gu, but to think that this Moonshadow Gu is only used to suppress primeval essence, crippling the Gu Master. Then where did the Flower Wine Monk get his severe injuries from?"

Fang Yuan’s thoughts were meticulous, thus becoming more suspicious. Back then, when the Flower Wine Monk lost to the clan elders and escaped, what actually happened?

Moonshadow Gu was not the cause of his death. So then, what was?

At once, the originally clear Flower Wine Monk inheritance, became a complete mystery to Fang Yuan again.

"Lord Fang Yuan, it has been fifteen minutes, I believe you have had some gains. No matter what, please come again tomorrow." At this point, the door turned into an astral state again, as the old Gu Master stood outside and said respectfully.

"Okay." Fang Yuan’s gaze shone as he put down the Digital Shadow Gu, leaving the secret room.

Regardless of whether it is the Golden moon, Frost moon, or Illusory moon, these refinement recipes were not what he wanted. That is because they all consumed large amounts of moon orchid flower petals.

Moon orchid flower petals were hard to store, only able to live for a few days. In Fang Yuan’s plans, he wanted to leave the Gu Yue clan and roam the world. If he refined these Gu, without any food they would die in half a year. He might as well not refine them.

However, there were still Rank three recipes that he did not manage to see.

"I’ll come again tomorrow, I guess." Such a thought flashed across his mind.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Illusory Moon Gu is practically Kagebunshi no Jutsu!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Second day, secret room.

On the shiny white jade plate, there was a recipe —

Blood Moon Gu.

Using Rank two Moonglow Gu and Blood Essence Gu to combine and form the Rank three Gu worm.

Once activated, the moonblade glows blood red, with the size of a face. If one gets injured by it, there would be a continuous bleeding effect.

"That’s it." Fang Yuan’s gaze swept through the information and memorised this recipe at heart. Then he closed his eyes and recited again, and opened his eyes to check. After several times, he checked that he had completely memorised this recipe in his heart, with no margin of error.

Compared to the Golden Moon, Frost Moon and Illusionary Moon Gu - the three classics, this Blood Moon Gu was much more unorthodox.

The former three’s refinement recipes had almost a hundred thousand words of refinement experience. But this Blood Moon Gu barely had a few thousand.

It can be seen that through history, Gu Masters who chose this Blood Moon Gu were rare.

The Blood Moon Gu’s attacking capability was average. It only had a ten meter range, and even the bleeding effect after attacking isn’t optimal.

Gu Masters from Rank one to five had limited primeval essence, and could not sustain for a long battle to decide the victor. A bleeding effect, in the real battlefield, was only a small problem. Against a Gu Master experienced in healing, they could even have the ability to counter this.

Furthermore, the Blood Moon Gu had the biggest flaw.

Every few days of the month, it would ooze fresh blood out. The blood would flow uncontrollably and during this period, its attack power would be reduced to a third of the original.

But it had the greatest advantage that Fang Yuan liked.

It was easy to feed.

Much easier than the Golden Moon, Frost Moon and Illusionary Moon.

The food it needed was no longer moon orchid flower petals, but fresh blood.

Although the blood required was a lot, it was not limited to one type. In the Western Desert it might be a problem, but the Southern Border had all sorts of wild beasts in its forested and mountainous areas.

Killing them would allow easy extraction of blood. To the Blood Moon Gu, its food was all over the Southern Border, everywhere.

"Next, all I have to do is refine this Blood Moon Gu." Fang Yuan decided in his heart.

The refinement steps, as well as things to take note of, were all memorised by him. In his hand, there was already the Moonglow Gu, but the Blood Essence Gu was slightly harder to get a hold of.

The Blood Essence Gu was precious, being able to replenish the blood of a Gu Master. Those Gu Masters with it were always energetic and even if they got injured and lost a lot of blood, they could replenish it easily. Thus, their survivability in battle was much higher than others.

Xiong Jiang once desired a Blood Essence Gu badly.

If the Blood Essence Gu was paired up with the Roaming Zombie Gu, it would greatly reduce the side effects. It would allow him to be a zombie for a longer period without any worries for backlashes.

He was already a well to do Rank two Gu Master, and had a rather high position, but until he died, he did not get his wish fulfilled.

In the secret room, Fang Yuan looked at the Digital Shade Gu on the rock tables again.

There was still ample time today. Out of the fifteen minutes, he only used five minutes, so there was still ten minutes left.

The yellow Digital Shade Gu recorded the Rank four recipes. The purple Digital Shade Gu recorded Rank five recipes.

The owner of these Digital Shade Gu had always been the generations of each Secret Hall clan elder. But the one responsible for feeding them, is the clan.

Gu worms can be borrowed, as long as the will on the Gu worms concedes to it.

The will in the Digital Shade Gu is one with the Secret Hall clan elder. Fang Yuan as a newly advanced clan elder, is recognised by the Secret Hall clan elder thus he can freely use a portion of the Digital Shade Gu.

But the Secret Hall clan elder does not think Fang Yuan has the authority to browse the Rank four and five recipes, thus the yellow and purple Digital Shade Gu, even if he used primeval essence, there would not be any reaction.

The truth is, even if it’s a wild natural Gu worm, it is possible to gain their recognition as well.

Those beast kings are like this, thus able to borrow the Gu worm’s ability. Among humans, such situations occur as well, like the story of the Rank five River Swallowing Toad and Jiang Fan.

Of course, Fang Yuan could rely on the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura to refine these Gu worms and obtain the recipes, that was definitely possible.

But the consequences of doing that, is something Fang Yuan cannot handle yet. The benefits involved is not sufficient for him to act either.

"Actually the most precious recipe is not these Rank four or five recipes, but how to reverse engineer a Moonlight Gu. This Gu originated from the first generation clan leader, and on that basis, after hundreds of years, developed into such a scale and structure," Fang Yuan thought.

Gu fusion is to turn low ranking Gu worms into higher ranking ones, while reverse fusion is to turn the high ranking Gu worms, back to their lower forms.

Between rising and falling, because of different processes, what is obtained can be entirely different Gu worms.

The Moonlight Gu is not a natural Gu worm, but something gotten from reverse fusion by the first generation clan leader.

The Gu worms in this world were mostly new species created by many Gu Masters on the basis of natural Gu worms. Thus, even with Fang Yuan’s five hundred years of experience, he still had limited knowledge of the entire Gu worm ecology.

And for the clan, they would definitely have one or a few unique Gu worms. These Gu worms were not the rare natural species, but a new species created through reverse fusion.

On this basis, Gu Masters can develop a strength unique to their clan.

Gu Yue clan’s Moonlight Gu, Xiong clan’s Bear Strength Gu, Bai clan’s Stream Gu, these were all the same.

If they used a common and well-known Gu worm, they would be easy to deal with, and easily targeted.

A clan’s foundation lies in the primeval spring, as it can produce primeval stones. Next is a unique Gu worm that can prevent one’s strength from being completely deciphered. Lastly it is bloodline, bloodline and kinship are an important chain that ties a clan together.

Thus, don’t look down on the Rank one Moonlight Gu - the worth of its reverse fusion recipe is far greater than Rank four or five recipes.

The recipe to reverse fuse the Moonlight Gu is normally kept by the clan leader. Other than the clan leader, the most loyal clan elder of that generation would also know the recipe’s secret. At the same time, the Moonlight Gu recipe’s Digital Shade Gu is also hidden appropriately.

Fang Yuan could obviously not obtain the recipe from this secret room.

"This recipe’s value is very high, thus if I can obtain it before I leave, that would naturally be the best. But I do not have to force it." Fang Yuan was very plain about this matter.

For starters, he was not planning to create an organisation or force. The Moonlight Gu’s recipe to him, was not a necessity.

"However, the Blood Moon Gu and the other Rank three recipes are what I need."

Although Fang Yuan was Rank three now and had white silver primeval essence, not all his Gu worms were Rank three, thus he could not display the true fighting power of a Rank three Gu Master.

"I have the Thunderwings Gu and Sky Canopy Gu, so if I manage to refine the Blood Moon Gu, I will have three Rank three Gu worms. But that is nowhere near enough."

Ordinary Gu Masters can rely on the clan. With the cooperation of their clansmen, as well as ample resources, they only needed three to four Gu worms.

But Fang Yuan wanted to roam the Southern Border and leave his homeland, thus he needed at least six Gu worms to deal with all situations.

With his experience, the six Gu worms had to be attack, defense, healing, storage, recon and movement - six attributes to provide him ample support.

For attack, the Blood Moon Gu barely qualifies. For defense he has the Sky Canopy Gu. Movement wise, even though the Thunderwings Gu uses a lot of primeval essence, it can allow temporary flight and is very powerful.

For healing, the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass is slightly weak. It is afterall a Rank two Gu, and even the advancement option is not satisfactory to Fang Yuan.

The Rank two Nine Leaf Vitality Grass did not have outstanding healing abilities. Its only advantage was creating the Rank one vitality leaves and from selling that, Fang Yuan can get a continuous supply of primeval stones, akin to a money tree.

But thereafter, Fang Yuan is going to travel to places where there are no inhabitants, so even if he creates the vitality leaves, no Gu Masters would buy them using primeval stones.

For recon, Earth Communication Ear Grass had a huge range, so even as a Rank two, it was still usable.

For storage, Fang Yuan had no such Gu. This was however, the Gu of the utmost importance. This is because after he starts travelling alone, the supplies are the most important, it can single-handedly become the basis of the other five categories.

Storing food to feed the Gu worms, his own food, and storing primeval stones.

Without primeval stones, Gu Master lose the power to cultivate.

On this matter, Fang Yuan had no progress. Before he obtains a satisfactory storage-type Gu worm, he will not leave the village.

"Gu worms for storage, the first condition is a wide utility, able to store food and primeval stones. Next, they have to be easy to feed, and lastly, it is best if they have the ability to prolong the expiry date of the items stored. But even in the resource board of the three clans, there is no Gu worm that I like. It seems I can only make use of the Chi faction and squeeze out the last of their savings."

Once fifteen minutes was up, Fang Yuan walked out of the tunnel as he continued to ponder.

"Lord Fang Yuan, hello." A middle-aged Gu Master stood outside, specifically waiting for Fang Yuan.

"You are?"

The person smiled, "I am Gu Yue Chi Zhong, the current acting medicine hall clan elder."

"So that’s him," Fang Yuan realized, starting a close inspection of this person.

Gu Yue Chi Zhong had a proper appearance with a squarish face, and he showed an aura of stability. Similar to Fang Yuan, he was also a clan elder, but his cultivation was Rank three middle stage.

After Fang Yuan caused Gu Yue Yao Ji to faint, Gu Yue Chi Zhong had been ordered to temporarily lead the medicine hall, and his wife was an important member of the medicine faction, thus this was Gu Yue Bo’s political approach to balance the two faction’s rivalry.

But no matter what, Gu Yue Chi Zhong still managed to ascend to this role.

"This is three hundred primeval stones, the payout to the clan elders for this week. I know that you are here, thus I brought this over as well. I hope you do not mind me taking matters into my own hands," Gu Yue Chi Zhong said, handing a money bag to Fang Yuan.

"This man..." Fang Yuan squinted, taking the bag.

The clan elders’ payout needed to be collected by the clan elder themselves. But Gu Yue Chi Zhong could collect it for him, so in some ways, this was hinting to Fang Yuan his status in the clan as well as his social network.

But this hint was also well-timed, as it showed a sign of goodwill, and was not aggressive.

"To speak the truth, I took the initiative to find Lord Fang Yuan this time, because I have a matter to ask of you."

Soon after, he went straight to the topic and mentioned his intention.

"Oh, you want me to turn in the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass?" Fang Yuan showed a deep profound expression.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Blood Moon Gu... oh come on, don’t tell me you didn’t think of menstruation period when you read about its weakness??!!! This thing is literally a parody of that! Plus that weak bleeding debuff... Everyone always looks down on bleeding debuffs in game.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Gu Yue Yao Ji had longed after Fang Yuan’s Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, and thus, she exploited her authority to set a policy for the transfer of Nine Leaf Vitality Grass.

However, Fang Yuan advanced to Rank three and became an elder, responding with a powerful counterattack which caused Gu Yue Yao Ji to faint on the spot and let Gu Yue Chi Zhong take the stage.

A new officer in power has to display his authority, Gu Yue Chi Zhong took the initiative to find Fang Yuan and persuade him to hand over the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass.

"Handing over the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, it’s not that it cannot be done," Fang Yuan said after muttering to himself for a bit.

There was a saying: what was true then isn’t true now.

And now, the situation was different from before....

Previously, Gu Yue Yao Ji wanted Fang Yuan to hand over the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass; that was an order, you had to hand it over whether you wanted to or not.

However, Fang Yuan was already an elder now and his status was equal to Gu Yue Yao Ji and others, and only lower than clan leader Gu Yue Bo. Thus, Gu Yue Chi

Zhong asking Fang Yuan to hand over the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass was not an order, but instead it was a type of transaction with equal benefits.

Nine Leaf Vitality Grass was indeed very precious; with its ability to produce vitality leaves, it was by itself a micro-scale source of revenue and was in high demand. Fang Yuan was now raising many Gu worms and a large part of their food expenses was supported solely by it.

However, this world didn’t have anything that couldn’t be sold. It was only a matter of the profits being too small to move the heart.

Nine Leaf Vitality Grass was precious but if an appropriate price was provided, why couldn’t it be sold?

Gu worms were only tools; methods to achieve one’s desires and ambitions. So what if it was the Spring Autumn Cicada? As long as the circumstances were suitable, why couldn’t one give it up to exchange for an even larger benefit?

If one wants to obtain benefits, they need to learn to give up first.

Naturally, Fang Yuan had the awareness of this and looked at Gu Yue Chi Zhong.

Gu Yue Chi Zhong understood and smiled, "If sire is willing to hand over the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, I will willingly compensate you with this command token."

Saying so, he took out a token.

This token’s design was simple; it was triangular-shaped with smooth corners. There were words written on the front, pilling up in a pyramid shape —‘Prize Token’; similarly on the back said —‘Reward Contributions’.

Prize Token, Reward Contributions.

"Sire is a newly promoted elder, and may not be clear on some matters. This Prize Token is issued to the Gu Masters who have made great contributions to the clan. Even among elders, few possess it. With this token, you can go down to the clan’s underground Gu cave and choose any Gu worm you like. The underground cave holds many rare, precious Gu worms. Among the top ten Gu worms in the exchange board, four of them have been selected from the underground Gu cave," Gu Yue Chi Zhong explained.

Fang Yuan was instantly moved.

He wasn’t surprised about this, for Gu Yue Clan had stood high for centuries and it was impossible for there not to be any trump cards and accumulations.

In fact, any long-established clan would also have secret places to store Gu like the Gu underground cave.

But to obtain such Gu worms, one needed to have made great contributions and also should be loyal to the clan.

Fang Yuan only recently became an elder, so he was very far away from having such qualifications.

"I want to leave the clan so I need a storage Gu. This token is a good choice, but...." Fang Yuan had some worries.

If he had to give up the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, so be it; it was a great help to Fang Yuan, but he wouldn’t have any use for it in the future.

Its healing ability was not outstanding and one couldn’t continuously use the vitality leaves to heal.

Fang Yuan’s worry was that there might not necessarily be his ideal Gu worm in the Gu underground cave.

Gu Yue Chi Zhong had been observing Fang Yuan’s expression and he misunderstood the latter’s hesitation, saying, "The underground cave holds not only Rank three Gu worms but also Rank four. Elder Fang Yuan, you won’t be at a disadvantage. But, if somehow you regret it, we could re-exchange them. That can be done after some time, secretly."

Fang Yuan raised his eyes, unable to refrain from looking at Chi Zhong again.

"This is an outstanding guy," he sighed inwardly.

A new officer in power has to display his authority, Chi Zhong clearly understood why he was promoted; he had to strike a balance with not only the clan leader but also Chi and medicine faction. And at the same time, he needed to display his ability.

Fang Yuan transferring the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass over, held a special significance to him and he was willing to pay a high price for it.

"The world is vast, countless outstanding talents are everywhere! Under the wolf tide, the old timers are being sacrificed and newcomers are advancing. From a certain point, this can also be said to be a reform which allows the clan to preserve its vitality and stand high without falling," Fang Yuan thought inwardly.

Too many old timers will only create a rotting organization. Thus the process of elimination is the only way for an organization to continue working.

Gu Yue Chi Zhong was a representative of this.

The world was all about the survival of the fittest. A human body continues to live through the process of metabolism. A Gu Master shouldn’t stick with the same Gu worms, only with change could they progress.

At this thought, Fang Yuan accepted the token from Gu Yue Chi Zhong and then handed over the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass. As he had transferred it himself, Chi Zhong could quickly refine the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass.

Only after keeping this grass Gu into his aperture did he let out a big sigh of relief.

He had his own ambitions and being able to act as the temporary medicine hall elder was an extremely important opportunity to him. If he could grasp this, he might even assume the official post instead of temporary.

However, he would have to make compromises with the three sides if he wanted to achieve this. After all, politics was an art of compromising.

Yao Ji couldn’t do anything to Fang Yuan while she was reigning. But after taking the seat, he was able to get Fang Yuan to hand over his Nine Leaf Vitality Grass. This not only showed goodwill to the medicine faction, being able to handle the political matters left behind by Yao Ji and subtly display his own ability.

Thus, he didn’t hesitate to give up the prize token which he had got with great difficulty.

"Lord Chi Zhong, it’s really delightful to chat with you. I wonder if you still have some time now?" Fang Yuan asked as he stored the token.

Gu Yue Chi Zhong’s eyes flashed; he was puzzled.

After a while.

In a hall.

"We pay respects to the two elders!" Fang Yuan’s uncle and aunt bowed and greeted. They were very respectful and even a little afraid.

After the news of Fang Yuan becoming an elder was announced, he became a model example for young Gu Masters, whereas it brought astonishment and panic to the uncle and aunt pair.

He was clearly a C grade talent, how could he advance to Rank three and become an elder so fast?

Even Gu Yue Fang Zheng who was an A grade talent was only at Rank two upper stage currently.

After the astonishment was fear.

They couldn’t help but be afraid.

When they thought of how they had bullied and been so hard on Fang Yuan, their hearts trembled with fear.

What goes around comes back around!

It was not the same once he had an elder’s identity.

They were afraid of Fang Yuan taking revenge on them after achieving success.

But still, in the end Fang Yuan came to their door, and also brought another elder with him.

"They came with bad intentions, bad intentions!" Gu Yue Dong Tu sighed in his heart.

Fang Yuan chuckled, "Uncle, Aunt, no need to be so courteous. Although I have become an elder, I am still your nephew. Come, let’s all take a seat."

Saying so, he sat down on the main seat.

Gu Yue Chi Zhong sat beside him.

These two positions were usually where Uncle and Aunt sat; the seats of the family heads.

Uncle and Aunt, however, weren’t the least bit discontent with the seatings. They were even full of hesitation and fearful when sitting in the lower seats.

This was the power of the clan elders.

Uncle and Aunt glanced at each other, they were on tenterhooks as they sat stiffly; only sitting near the edge of the chairs.

The servants came in with some tea.

Gu Yue Chi Zhong maintained his silence and didn’t drink. Fang Yuan, however, took a sip calmly and asked, "How has Uncle and Aunt been these days?"

Fang Yuan was smiling as he asked, but in Uncle and Aunt’s eyes it felt even more terrifying than him flying into a rage.

It was especially so for Aunt; when she thought of how she had insulted Fang Yuan, she started trembling with fear.

"Sigh, life had been in upheaval due to the wolf tide. The tavern was forced to close down and the rent of the bamboo houses has been decreasing. In fact, we are so poor that we’re reaching the point of starvation," Uncle said, and then tears fell down from his eyes unexpectedly.

He used to maintain his health very well before, but now his face was no longer ruddy, while the hair near his temples had gone white and the wrinkles on his face had increased. His predicament was even more obvious due to the forceful enlistment.

However, Fang Yuan knew his uncle had managed the tavern for many years, so he definitely had some savings. The miserable appearance he was putting on now was because he was afraid of Fang Yuan’s revenge, and wanted to use his pathetic look to gain Fang Yuan’s sympathy.

"Uncle is usually so astute, but how could he be so stupid when the matter involves himself? If I had come to take revenge, why would I bring Gu Yue Chi Zhong with me?"

Fang Yuan sneered in his mind. He greatly disliked and had no respect towards his uncle and aunt, but this didn’t mean they had no use.

"Uncle, Aunt, you have taken good care of me for so long, all my current accomplishments are due to your nurturing. I have just received the elder payout from the clan; these three hundred primeval stones, please take them." Saying so, Fang Yuan handed the money bag to uncle.

"What? This...." Gu Yue Dong Tu’s expression was really wonderful at this moment.

His astonishment contained unease, the unease was close to fear, and under the fear was incredulousness.

Aunt who was at the side was also dumbstruck as she blankly looked at the money bag in Fang Yuan’s hand.

What in the world was going on?

There was none of the revenge they had imagined, but instead, they were being gifted three hundred primeval stones?

Fang Yuan’s words were ear-piercing, no matter how they looked at it. The words ‘taken good care’ and ‘nurturing’ were full of sarcasm which made them feel the whole situation was even more bizarre.

"What is he scheming?"

"What the heck does he want to do? How does he want to torment us!?"

Uncle and Aunt glanced at each other. Both were hesitating and didn’t dare to receive the money bag.

"It is Elder Fang Yuan’s filial piety, do accept it," Gu Yue Chi Zhong expressionlessly spoke from his seat.

"Yes, yes, yes." Uncle repeatedly nodded his head and hurriedly accepted the money bag. Even if he was called the hidden elder, that was nothing in front of the medicine hall elder.

He used both hands to hold the bag full of three hundred primeval stones. He normally loved money, but right now, he felt like the money bag was scalding hot and wanted to immediately throw it!

"Since uncle has received it, I will take my leave," Fang Yuan said and started leaving.

Uncle and Aunt immediately tried to see them off, but were stopped by Fang Yuan.

"Don’t look anymore," At the corner, Mother Shen let out a breath of relief and said to her daughter Shen Cui.

Shen Cui’s expression was gloomy, and she looked at Fang Yuan and Chi Zhong’s figures from behind until they were completely gone.

"Mother, did I make a wrong choice?" She said.

An elder could take in a wife and two concubines; if she had been faithful from the start, who is to say that she couldn’t be Fang Yuan’s concubine at this moment.

"I really hadn’t expected this. This Fang Yuan advanced to today’s stage with only a C grade aptitude!" Mother Shen helplessly shook her head, "Daughter, cheer up. Fang Zheng has an A grade aptitude, his accomplishments won’t be any less!"

"Yes," Shen Cui responded, and some luster emerged within her dark pupils.

In this world, the status of a common mortal was so petty and low!

How many things did she have that could move the great Gu Masters’ hearts?

She had already given her body to Fang Zheng, that was the gamble of her life and she couldn’t turn back anymore.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Hmm...I saw some comments on the title. This was a title I used long ago before Qidian took the novel and renamed it. At the time there was already a dispute over Reverend Insanity and Daoist Gu, two names of the novel. I have explained a lot of times over the course of TL-ing this novel for the reasoning of title names and to see which one was preferred, I also made a ’poll’ back in chapter 83. The result was clear. Now, Reverend doesn’t mean a clergy or priest in Xianxia novels, and Gu is virtually impossible to translate to English but insanity is one of its many meanings. I don’t really care too much to be honest, about the title. The story is what matters to me. Either way, I’m rather tired of this never-ending dispute that I have seen for too many times, so I ask that you stick with it and just focus on the story. If you don’t wanna deal with it, then I’ll just rename the novel Worm King or Menstrual Moon Man instead :)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Howl—!

Four frenzy lightning wolves raised their heads and howled loudly.

Pit pat pit pat.

The rain poured from above as the curtains of water interweaved, and dark clouds roamed the sky. It caused the weather to turn dark, obstructing the vision of many.

"Quick, the northern gate has a breach, quickly go there, Sheng Nan group!"

"Healing Gu Master? We have a heavily injured person here!!"

"Kill, kill, kill! Kill all these bastard wolves!"

The wolves’ cries were countered by the Gu Masters’ shouting.

Almost everyone was bathed in blood as they battled ferociously.

Surrounding the village, battles ensued, spreading like wildfire.

The people’s cheers, the wolves’ cries, the sound of the rain, mixed in with the sound of the wind.

Uncountable number of lightning wolves rushed towards the village walls. The pitfall trap before the walls had already been flattened by a thick layer of wolf corpses, and as they were led by the numerous bold lightning wolves, the lightning wolves had a strong charging force together.

Rank one and Rank two Gu Masters fought bravely on the frontlines. Large amounts of moonblades flew towards the wolf packs, slaughtering numerous lightning wolves.

But the wolf packs still sent out lightning currents and lightning balls towards the village, bringing injuries and fatalities to the clan.

"Elder Fang Yuan, this is the medicine hall’s newest injury report, please take a look!" A Gu Master in charge of transmitting information quickly arrived, and after seeing Fang Yuan, greeted him and handed over the report with both hands.

Fang Yuan was now a Rank three Gu Master, thus as a clan elder, his mission by the clan was to lead the Gu Masters in suppressing the western area.

Fang Yuan removed his attention from the battlefield and took the report, saying to the Gu Master, "You may leave."

The Gu Master paid his respects before taking his leave.

His speed was fast, and by using Gu worm to accelerate his body, he quickly left to the next area.

Any Gu Master in charge of information dissemination had at least one movement assist-type Gu worm, while some even had two.

Fang Yuan opened the report, taking a glance.

The injury toll on the report gave a feeling of considerable shock.

Until now, the wolf tide had attacked the village over ten times. The injury and death of the clan’s Gu Masters was very severe. This led the clan elders to be so frantic, and the Gu Master that took over the medicine hall, Gu Yue Chi Zhong, felt even greater pressure. As a middle-aged man, he even had several white hair growing out some days ago!

But Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories and was mentally prepared, thus he was not surprised.

"This wolf tide is one of the most severe ones in the Gu Yue clan’s history. Such injuries and death is unavoidable."

He thought this in his heart, and as moonlight gathered in his palm, he reduced this report to ashes.

This report, only clan elders had the authority to view it. If it was released to the masses, it would cause social instability.

Despite this, the Gu Yue clan was already in a panicky state, as the feelings of instability got stronger by the day.

At this point, the moonlight in Fang Yuan’s palm was no longer the eerie blue colour, but of blood colour.

This is the Rank three Blood Moon Gu.

To refine this Gu, Fang Yuan had failed once, and only on his second attempt did he succeed.

As for the refinement ingredients, he naturally extorted Gu Yue Chi Lian for it.

Fang Yuan closed his eyes, his mind entering into his aperture.

In the aperture, the aperture walls were shining and dimming at regular intervals without a single drop of impurity; it was a pure white state.

His primeval essence was fully white in colour, but also emitted a lustre of a silver metallic glow — this is the Rank three Gu Master’s white silver primeval essence.

Water gathers into a sea - in his aperture it was a white silver primeval sea.

On the surface, there was originally a black red residue, but now it was no longer there.

The Cleansing Water Gu he forced out of Gu Yue Chi Lian had long been used. The Man-beast Life Burial Gu’s side effect was completely eliminated.

But this was not without a price.

Fang Yuan’s aptitude lowered a little from 44% C grade — due to the Man-beast Life Burial Gu, it dropped by 2%, to a maximum capacity of 42%.

But this price, Fang Yuan was prepared for it.

In fact, it was all thanks to Gu Yue Chi Lian. If not for the Cleansing Water Gu and letting that black red residue corrupt the primeval essence any longer, Fang Yuan’s aptitude would decrease even further.

A white-shell, black spotted ladybug danced in the air above the sea. This was the Sky Canopy Gu.

The Stealth Scales Gu with a stonefish appearance was deep inside the primeval sea.

Four Flavors Liquor worm was playing with the waves above the sea surface.

As for the newly refined Blood Moon Gu, its appearance was similar to the

Moonlight Gu, residing in Fang Yuan’s right palm, turning into a red crescent insignia.

As for the Rank three Thunderwings Gu, it resided in Fang Yuan’s back as two lightning bolt tattoos.

To be worth mentioning is the Spring Autumn Cicada.

Its condition was getting better, and was recovering quicker. This situation caused Fang Yuan to rejoice and at the same time worry.

Spring Autumn Cicada is Rank six, but he is still Rank three, and at this time his aperture is unable to hold a fully recovered Spring Autumn Cicada.

The Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura was getting stronger. Like using a paper tube to contain rocks, the aperture would not be able to handle the load.

"If I’m left with no choice, I can only raise it outside of my body," Fang Yuan sighed.

That had great implications.

Rank six Gu worms are implicated with Dao, containing the law fragments of heaven and earth. If left outside for extended periods, it would create a resonance with the natural laws, unless the Gu worm is slumbering. Otherwise the commotion would be huge, as it would cause all sorts of natural phenomena, attracting the attention and greed of other experts.

But this was a solution out of necessity.

Howl!

At this point, a loud shrill wolf howl suddenly entered everyone’s ears.

Fang Yuan gathered his spirits.

"Lord clan elder, the frenzy lightning wolf has entered the battle! Gu Yue Jiang Jian and two others elders are at the eastern gate blocking them, they hope you can go and assist," a Gu Master frantically reported.

Crack!

The sound of lightning cracked as two wings sprouted from Fang Yuan’s back.

These two wings were formed by blue lightning, the form abstract and simple. But with a flap, it brought Fang Yuan high into the sky, and with a fast speed, he sped towards the eastern gate.

Flying in a straight line in the air, Fang Yuan got to the battlefield in a few breath’s time.

The frenzy lightning wolf was trying to break through the eastern gate, and a few clan elders were near the door aggressively engaging in battle.

The frenzy lightning wolf jumped abruptly out of the battlefield and with a swing of its tail, swept at a female Rank one Gu Master at the corner.

This Gu Master’s face went pale. She could only hear the sound of the winds blowing as the wolf tail swept at her, and in her heart she screamed - "I’m doomed!"

With her ability, she could neither dodge nor take the hit.

But at this crucial moment, a shadow descended from the sky, hugging her.

The young girl felt the world spinning before her. When she finally recovered, all she saw was that she was flying in mid-air, while the wolf tail swept right below her; a two storey bamboo building took the hit and was shaking violently.

Her expression got dimmer. If she was hit right on by this tail, she would’ve turned into meat pulp.

Soon after, she realized that she was saved.

Who saved her?

She stared at this person, and was stunned.

It’s him?

Gu Yue Fang Yuan!

At once, the young girl’s heart was filled with complexity; it was impossible to describe with words.

She and Fang Yuan were classmates. Fang Yuan had formerly extorted her primeval stones, thus she hated him greatly.

But she had to be amazed at his achievements, especially after news of him advancing to clan elder spread, causing her to be in shock and admiration.

Compared to Fang Yuan, she was also a C grade talent, but was now only a Rank one.

Now, she was saved by Fang Yuan once.

He was a true lifesaver!

She was filled with gratitude towards Fang Yuan, and under her shock and admiration, her lingering hatred was also gone with this.

"The battlefield here is dangerous, retreat far away." Fang Yuan’s wings flapped, landing on the ground and placing her down gently.

He had some impression towards this young girl. They were possibly classmates, but he could not remember her name.

Saying so, he turned around and left, no longer flying. Instead he sprinted, entering the battlefield.

The Thunderwings Gu’s speed was fast, but its primeval expenditure was faster. Fang Yuan being only C grade talent, among the Rank three Gu Masters in terms of purely primeval essence storage, he is the lowest tier possible, thus he needed to conserve his primeval essence more than others.

Blood Moon Gu!

He threw a moonblade out.

The moonblade was blood red in color, and upon hitting the frenzy lightning wolf’s body, it caused an injury that bled continuously.

The young girl’s sight remained on Fang Yuan, staring at his shadow blankly. Slowly, her eyes started to shine in a mysterious manner.

Seventeen to eighteen years of age, this is the prime of youth.

"This Fang Yuan, what do you think of him?" Far away, Gu Yue Bo looked at this scene and asked a close aid.

The aid replied, "I heard that elder Fang Yuan had already answered the call of the medicine hall and handed in the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass in his possession. After getting the first payout, he gave it all to his uncle and aunt as a filial gesture. These days, he had struck personally and participated in killing lightning wolves. His aggressive and ruthless attacks have gained him much battle merits. Not only that, after saving many clansmen this time, his reputation is improving. The clan already has rumors—him turning over a new leaf, the Fang faction’s new clan elder etc."

"This subordinate thinks that, although he is only a C grade talent, with his impressive battle capabilities, he had gotten great opportunities. First with his parents inheritance, the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass became a continuous source of income. Using two red steel Relic Gu, he managed to cultivate to Rank three, but also had an element of luck."

Saying so, this close aid showed an expression of slight jealousy.

He was also a C grade talent, but was only Rank two. Getting to this stage, he spent half his life doing so. But that Fang Yuan was merely seventeen years old, yet he was already a clan elder.

Competing with others, is really infuriating.

Hearing his aid’s words, Gu Yue Bo nodded unnoticeably.

His close aid’s words represented the view of majority of the people in the clan, but was slightly shallow.

Gu Yue Bo had been the clan leader for many years, thus he had greater foresight.

Fang Yuan handing in the Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, he had obviously struck a deal with Gu Yue Chi Zhong. Handing his payout to his aunt and uncle was not out of goodwill, but a political show.

The person who spread news on this matter, was Gu Yue Chi Zhong.

As for saving people...whether it’s true and sincere, there remains doubt.

But no matter what, Fang Yuan no longer isolated himself, and his actions were indeed worthy of praise.

Him advancing to clan elder and his actions thereafter, this was an initiative to get close to the clan and contribute to the clan. The clan’s prosperity requires these contributions and relationships.

Thinking so, Gu Yue Bo instructed, "Those people in the Hidden hall, these few days they also did not find anything from their investigations. Forget it, withdraw the investigations on Fang Yuan for now."

"Yes, this subordinate shall inform them now." Saying so, he took his leave.

Gu Yue Bo stood on the ground, squinting.

He thought in his heart, "No matter what’s the reason, his cultivation still rose too quickly. This Fang Yuan, he has a great secret on him! However in this period, with the severity of the wolf tide, every bit of strength is needed, and wasting it on Fang Yuan is too wasteful. Investigation is still necessary, but this can only wait after the wolf tide."

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

(Insert shameless self advertisement here) Support me on Patreon... https://www.patreon.com/zelsky (o.o) Thank you! Also thanks to all those who supported me so faaaaarrrr... (disappears)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

With a bam, the frenzy lightning wolf fell on the ground like a giant elephant.

It opened its mouth wide, but its eyes lost focus as life slowly exited its body.

On its body, there were injuries all over. As wolf blood poured out endlessly, the environment was dyed red.

The rain continued to pour as it diluted the wolf blood, and caused the blood to spread further into the ground.

The ground was muddy, and some elders were standing beside the frenzy lightning wolf corpse, taking deep breaths as their bodies were drenched by the rain. They were also covered in wolf blood and mud, looking like beggars.

"Finally killed it!"

"This frenzy lightning wolf actually had a defensive Gu worm in its body, and was so difficult to take down..."

"Luckily we had elder Fang Yuan’s Blood Moon Gu accumulating injuries on it, or else it would have been even more difficult trying to kill it."

When the elders said this, they looked towards Fang Yuan.

Initially when they heard that Fang Yuan had refined the Blood Moon Gu, they felt disapproving towards it. But it seems now that, it was very effective in dealing with frenzy lightning wolves.

"I am flattered, fellow esteemed elders, if not for your assistance and protection, I would not have been able to attack so relentlessly." Fang Yuan wiped the rain water off his face as he said politely.

"No, no, it is our duty."

"We are old people already. We didn’t feel it before, but after fighting together with elder Fang Yuan, we feel that we have truly aged."

"Indeed, indeed."

The several elders laughed together.

In this earlier battle, Fang Yuan had a strong grasp of when to attack and retreat. With his ruthless and savage attacks, many times his methods were even more effective than normal elders, causing the clan elders to see him in a different light.

Especially with his polite and humble attitude and no sense of arrogance, he is definitely not what the rumors said - that aloof and unruly person - thus the elders had a good impression of him.

"I still have many aspects that need to be learnt from all of you," Fang Yuan said respectfully, but his eyes shone with a dark light.

The Blood Moon Gu had pros and cons.

After using it for so many times, he had some insights about it.

The Blood Moon Gu specialized in prolonged battles, causing unhealable injuries. As time passed, the enemy's injuries would get more and more severe.

But this is established on the fact that there is no healing-type Gu worm.

Nature is balanced, there is no strongest Gu worm. Each Gu was bound to have strengths and weaknesses.

"Blood Moon Gu's greatest drawback is the few days of the month where it oozes blood and faces a rapid drop in battle strength. It is my main attacking method, so this makes it too unstable. But, after I get the Chainsaw Golden Centipede in the Flower Wine inheritance ground, I can cover this weakness."

These few days were a high alert period where the wolf tide continued to attack the village, so as a clan elder, Fang Yuan attracted even more attention than before and had no chance to go to that rock crack's secret cave.

"Quick, save our clansmen!"

"Sweep the battlefield, don't miss a single Gu worm!"

Seeing the frenzy lightning wolf fall, a group of healing Gu Masters immediately came forth.

"Esteemed elders, you all have exerted yourselves, please accept special treatment from our medicine hall." The leading Gu Master bowed towards Fang Yuan and the elders.

"Oh... medicine faction's Li Chen." The few clan elders recognised this person, nodding and changing their expression.

They were courteous to Fang Yuan, putting on a face full of smiles. But towards this person, they kept their emotions and displayed the authority of a higher-up.

This is the difference in status!

This Gu Yue Li Chen, is only a Rank two Gu Master.

"I have no injuries, I do not require treatment. Elders, let's talk again when we are free." Fang Yuan nodded to the elders.

"Elder Fang Yuan is so outstanding, he's not even injured from such a battle, what a true young hero!"

"Sigh, compared to elder Fang Yuan, we are really old."

"Hehe, take care of yourself elder Fang Yuan."

The few elders started to laugh as they said.

"Elder Fang Yuan, please pardon my rudeness, but do allow our medicine hall healing Gu Master to do a check up for you," Gu Yue Li Chen insisted.

He was a member of the medicine faction, and after Fang Yuan angered Gu Yue Yao Ji to the point of fainting, causing her downfall, he naturally had hatred towards Fang Yuan. But with his position and job, as the leader he cannot ignore Fang Yuan.

"Thanks for your goodwill, but it’s fine. I’ll see everyone again!" Fang Yuan patted Gu Yue Li Chen’s shoulder, leaving with a smile.

The elders smiled or nodded to reply him.

Only after he left did their expression change rapidly, turning solemn.

This Fang Yuan, although only C grade, had grown to this point, it is truly hard to come by! Fighting together with him, they could feel his heartlessness and ruthlessness, but when thinking about it, they felt threatened. When they were seventeen, did they have such achievements?

Especially when they saw him smile as he patted the medicine faction member’s shoulder, such talent in politics and scheming, it is truly stunning!

......

"Lord Fang Yuan, do you recognise me?" Along the road, a person showed a respectful expression as he greeted Fang Yuan.

"You are..." Fang Yuan squinted, recognising this person as his classmate. Only that he could not remember the name, but when he extorted primeval stones from him, this person always handed them up nicely. It shows his brilliance under that meek personality.

"Lord Fang Yuan, I am Gu Yue Ding Zong. To have the fortune to be your classmate, that is my honor. Actually, after news that you had advanced to a clan elder spread, many of our classmates admired and were envious of you lord, wanting to find an opportunity to discuss cultivation experiences with you. Are you free tonight, lord?" Gu Yue Ding Zong rubbed his hands, his eyes smiling into a line.

"Oh, is that so..." Fang Yuan’s eyebrows raised, nodding, "Okay, but let me change my clothes first, this drenched attire is making me uncomfortable."

"I have already prepared warm water and new clothes, and several beautiful attendants are waiting for serve you Lord!" Gu Yue Ding Zong smiled, his expression very eager.

Fang Yuan shook his head to reject, "No, before that, I have to go to the underground tunnel."

"Ah I see." Gu Yue Ding Zong expression changed. The underground tunnel was only accessible to the clan elders, and to people like them, it was a forbidden ground in the clan.

Next, his smile become even more subservient, and his back was arched even further, as his tone carried a servant feeling, "Lord, go ahead with your business, this lowly one’s time is not valuable, waiting for you is also an honor of mine."

Fang Yuan nodded, not speaking anymore and continued to walk away.

Gu Yue Ding Zong took a step back quickly, opening a path as he bent his back and sent Fang Yuan off with his gaze.

Entering the underground cavern again.

This secret room that contained precious Gu worms was very large, almost as big as the village square.

But the Gu worms contained inside were not many; there was only a few dozen.

Cave Declaration Grass, Air Return Cicada, Dried Bone Dragonfly, Phoenix Wing Butterfly... there were Gu worms varying from Rank two to four.

It was only that there was very little Rank two Gu, and among them was a Love Separation Gu — this is the number 1 poison Gu among the Rank twos, and injuries caused by it cannot be healed even by a Rank three healing Gu.

This Love Separation, is the one Wang Er owned back then. After obtaining it, the clan kept it here.

The most was Rank three Gu, while Rank four Gu was relatively little.

Fang Yuan did not have high hopes. Although the clan had some fortune, it is still a middle-sized clan and has competition with two other villages, as well as the pressure of the wolf tide.

But to think that, he actually found a desirable Gu.

Tusita flower.

This was a Rank three grass Gu shaped like a red lantern, and had round green leaves. The leaves were thick and fat, a total of three pointing at three directions in symmetry.

This tusita flower is the same as the tusita grass. Not only was it able to store food, but it could also store primeval stones and is one of the most ideal Gu in Fang Yuan’s mind.

"To think that this Gu Yue village had the tusita flower. With it, I can cover the weakness of storage," Fang Yuan rejoiced, choosing it immediately.

"Actually, in the village there definitely is a Rank five Gu. Gu Yue clan had two Rank five experts in history, they were bound to leave behind some Gu worms. Except they cannot be placed here, these Rank five Gu are the trump cards of the village, fed by the village with all their resources. Though to say ‘feed’, it is actually more like offerings."

Fang Yuan left the tunnel. The rain had stopped but the weather was still gloomy. The air was also not fresh, as there was the smell of blood.

Fang Yuan changed to a clean shirt and slowly moved towards the gathering point.

"Elder Fang Yuan, you are here, it is our greatest honor to have you with us!" Gu Yue Ding Zong stood at the door, staring with wide eyes. From afar he could see Fang Yuan walking across the street, and he quickly smiled and received him.

He brought Fang Yuan into the bamboo building. There was already a feast prepared as many people were sitting there.

On seeing Fang Yuan, they quickly got up.

Soon after, all sorts of praises and flattering rushed like water towards Fang

Yuan.

"Greetings to lord Fang Yuan."

"After so long, elder Fang Yuan’s glamor is greater than ever, this lowly one truly admires you!"

"To be lord Fang Yuan’s classmate, it is my luck from three lifetimes! Even thinking about it now, it feels like the experience of a dream..."

Fang Yuan’s gaze swept across the table, seeing all his classmates; they were familiar faces, all of them people who he had extorted.

"My pleasure." He lightly smiled, sitting at the highest position.

"Serve the dishes, serve the best wine!" Gu Yue Ding Zong shouted, and the servants quickly got to work.

All sorts of dishes were served, their flavors top notch; this Gu Yue Ding Zong’s family sure had some assets. To be able to serve such dishes during the wolf tide, it showed that he really paid a big price, showing his sincerity.

"Elder Fang Yuan, this lowly one toasts you!"

"Elder Fang Yuan, take your time to drink, I’ll down this first!"

Fang Yuan was really very casual. With a cup of wine, he only took a small sip every time, but the people had no complaints towards this.

After toasting almost everyone and having drunk a decent amount, he suddenly held his cup and stood up, laughing, "The young are foolish, I was immature in the past and did some horrible things, I hope everyone can forgive me, and do not mind the past."

Once he stood up, no one else dared to continue sitting, and all of them quickly got up.

Everyone knew that the matter Fang Yuan was referring to was the primeval stone extortion.

They quickly shouted, "Not at all, not at all!"

"Elder Fang Yuan truly has character, a true hero!"

"To have my primeval stones eyed by elder Fang Yuan, that is our greatest honor!"

"That’s right, that’s right, elder Fang Yuan’s glamor and heroism has always been engraved in my heart..."

Fang Yuan drank this cup of wine in one mouthful, as everyone cheered and clapped.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Wow, talk about 180 degree attitude change lol.

Also 兜率花 - Tusita Flower, but interestingly the word 兜 can mean pocket or bag. 率 is more broad, but can be rate or frequency. For a storage Gu, this is considered a pun eh? You can google Tusita if you’re curious. It’s connected to Buddhism.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan put down his cup, sitting down.

Only then did everyone dare to sit down. Among them, not all the classmates were present. For example, Mo Bei, Chi Cheng, and the others with strong backgrounds, were not among the ones present.

"It’s about time, I have to go. This was a well-organised meetup." Fang Yuan showed his inclination to leave.

Gu Yue Ding Zong upon hearing the praise, was overjoyed and quickly stood up, taking out a money bag from his pocket.

The bag was filled with primeval stones.

He smiled and bowed, "Upon hearing lord’s wisdom today, I’ve felt a strong sense of enlightenment, reaping a great reward. This is a small gift, but I hope lord can accept my token of gratitude."

He talked a bunch of crap, and from the start of the banquet, he had been flattering Fang Yuan non-stop, so how could he have gotten any enlightenment?

But everyone else acted as if this indeed really happened, shouting loudly and urging Fang Yuan to accept his gratitude.

Fang Yuan did not reject, smiling lightly and naturally taking over this money bag.

Next, was the second, and the third, simultaneously coming up to offer their gifts, all primeval stones!

"Alright, alright." Fang Yuan smiled as he accepted them all.

Tens of bags filled with primeval stones, how could Fang Yuan carry them all? Gu Yue Ding Zong on seeing this, quickly summoned a few family servants to carry his load for him.

In this short amount of time, Fang Yuan gained almost ten thousand primeval stones!

Lastly, Fang Yuan slowly stood up, raising his cup once again, "Our encounter is by fate; this classmate relationship, both you and I remember it at heart. This is truly worth drinking over."

"Yes!"

"Well said, Lord Fang Yuan."

"Such perfect phrasing, taking the words right out of our hearts, this is talent no doubt!"

Everyone stood up, praising as they raised their cups.

They either had no background, or their background was not strong enough. Fang Yuan advanced to clan elder, and they were afraid of his revenge, but at the same time they also wanted to enter Fang Yuan’s social network.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, raising his hand and toasting with his wine cup.

At this point, the dark clouds dissipated, showing the lustrous moonlight enveloping the garden outside. The cool air was mixed with the smell of blood, and reality was extremely cruel.

But in this hall, it was exquisite with beautiful lights and decorations, overflowing with wine and fortune, and everyone smiled superficially as if they were in heaven on earth.

"This is the allure of the system." Fang Yuan’s eyes glinted; as he stared at the wine in his cup, his mind thought about it.

Back then, when he extorted his classmates, it was only several primeval stones, but he incurred public outcry.

However right now, he didn’t even have to say a word. Yet these people were all willing, fighting to be the first to give him primeval stones, each bag having over a hundred primeval stones!

This differential treatment - on the surface it looked like the result of Fang Yuan’s elder status.

In reality, the truth was because he had previously been outside the system. Right now however, he had entered the organisation’s higher management.

Under the system, the members are all exploited willingly. Even without any hints from Fang Yuan, they would come forth and bribe him. Some would use their network to get into his faction, while women used their charms to get closer.

It works this way in this world, and the same goes on Earth as well.

"This world’s people are hilarious. Being robbed and extorted only for a meagre loss and they resist violently, screaming injustice. But bribing the higher-ups, sending gifts, bodies and virginities, they do it willingly. And they are even afraid that it’s not enough! Being able to get so many primeval stones today, this is all borrowing the power of the system."

Fang Yuan laughed coldly in his heart, thinking of Gu Yue Qing Shu, Mo Yan and Chi Shan.

Talented people like Gu Yue Qing Shu having B grade talent, they had much greater cultivating talent than Fang Yuan!

But all of them cultivated slowly, staying at Rank two realm for a long time.

Did they not work hard enough?

Hehe.

Let’s laugh a little.

This is the deprivation and pressure from the system.

Such deprivation and pressure, it is invisible. Ordinary people cannot even feel it!

Taking Fang Yuan’s situation for example. The primeval stones these people gifted, if used on themselves, would definitely be a driving force towards their own cultivation.

Thus, bribery is a form of deprivation!

Numerous lower rankers fight to bribe the higher-ups. This was a form of gathering resources and fortifying the authority of the higher ups.

Other than monetary fortune, there is also the deprivation of time.

Elites like Gu Yue Qing Shu did not need to bribe others, but their time was used up. Telling you to do this and that on a daily basis, running errands, doing missions, but acting rightfully so - this is for the higher-ups’ attention and favor!

If this time was used to cultivate, Gu Yue Qing Shu would’ve broken through Rank two peak stage and reached Rank three. Then using the Wood Charm Gu, he might’ve even been able to kill Bai Ning Bing!

The amazing part was that, the clan elders did not want this junior Gu Yue Qing Shu to advance to Rank three so quickly.

For such a useful pawn piece, if he really became Rank three and was on the same status as them, how can they make use of him?

Who is willing to have their authority shaved?

Thus, they consciously dragged and suppressed him, even using the reason of —— I think well of this lad, but he needs to train. Only by refining can he become a true jade......

Hehe.

"This is the truth of the system. If one cannot see beyond this, regardless of how heroic they are or how talented one is, they are merely tigers and dragons chained up, only being slaves. People like Gu Yue Qing Shu and Chi Zhong, no matter how intelligent or talented they are, so what?"

Although he had so many thoughts, his thoughts flashed in an instant, and only a second passed in real life.

"Everyone, please drink up!" Fang Yuan moved the cup to his lips, downing the drink in one mouthful.

Everyone quickly toasted him, not daring to leave behind a single drop.

"Goodbye." Fang Yuan cupped his fists, taking his leave. The family servants held the primeval stones as they followed behind him.

Everyone quickly sent him off.

"Please continue drinking, you don’t have to send me off," Fang Yuan said, but everyone did not do so. Instead, they left their seats and continued their flattery.

Fang Yuan continued, "I like peace and quiet."

Seeing his expression, everyone finally got his intentions and remained in the hall.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s figure leaving, some people sighed, while others remained silent, and someone exclaimed, "Elder Fang Yuan truly is a legend, such elegance..."

They were all frogs in the well, only able to see the moon from below, thinking about Fang Yuan’s unrestrained position but not being able to see beyond the system’s restrictions.

Actually, as long as one joins the system, they would be weakened, and their benefits would be sacrificed.

Even the clan leader has to sacrifice. He needed to manage the clan, and with this he contributed much of time and effort.

It is just that the members at the bottom of the chain are deprived more severely. The higher one’s status is, the more benefits one will enjoy.

Initially, when Fang Yuan extorted primeval stones, he worked against the system, acting alone and not even sparing his own brother. That was to avoid this deprivation. Thus, he had ample time and energy to advance to Rank three and become a clan elder, causing numerous people to scream in wonder.

But now that he had undergone a huge transformation, becoming a clan elder, his temperament became mild and respectful with authority and status, enjoying the benefits of a clan elder, causing many to be filled with envy.

This separation and joining, entering and leaving, is filled with deep wisdom and knowledge.

But how many people can see clearly across this fact?

Fang Yuan was not exploited, but he still enjoyed the benefits. In the eyes of mortals, this is unrestrain and elegance.

...

"Alright, put the things on the table and you can go," Fang Yuan said.

The family servants did not dare to have an opinion, quietly placing down the items and bowing to Fang Yuan before taking their leave.

This is no longer the rented apartment Fang Yuan stayed in before.

After advancing to elder, the clan allocated him a brand new bamboo building.

There was a study room and a secret room for closed door cultivation in the bamboo building, but there were no family servants; Fang Yuan needed to find them himself.

"Tusita flower, come out."

Fang Yuan willed in his heart and with the injection of his white silver primeval essence, the tusita flower residing on his tongue as a tattoo came alive immediately.

He opened his mouth and spit out, only to see red light appearing as the tusita flower rotated gradually like a lantern in mid-air, floating and appearing in front of him.

Fang Yuan activated the tusita flower. Instantly, red light flashed and caused the entire area to be lit in a red hue.

When the red light shone upon the pieces of primeval stones, there was a formless attraction and all the stones flew out of their bags and entered the tusita flower.

A moment later, the red light dissipated and Fang Yuan opened his mouth. The tusita flower entered his mouth once more, landing on his tongue and turning into a red flower lantern tattoo.

"This tusita flower is a Rank three Gu, able to store primeval stones and other things. Among the Rank three storage Gu, this is one of the better ones, being able to store a max of thirty thousand primeval stones. But considering that I have to store other things as well, the most would probably be around fifteen thousand primeval stones."

Although it was his first time using this Gu worm, with his previous life’s experience, he could quickly estimate the limit of the Gu.

Primeval stones are the most basic resource for a Gu Master’s cultivation, undeniably.

Without primeval stones, Gu Masters would lack a driving force severely.

And primeval stones also help in quickly restoring primeval essence, so in battle it has a lot of help.

Especially for Gu Masters who travel alone, primeval stones are the most basic assurance for travelling. Normally, they would need at least ten thousand primeval stones to ensure that a Gu Master has the basic needs covered for a period of time. And every once in a while, they require replenishment.

A saving of fifteen thousand primeval stones, to Fang Yuan, was still too little, but also at an acceptable range.

"First I borrowed three thousand primeval stones from Chi Lian, and with today’s earnings, I do not have to fret over primeval stones for a while. In the six classifications, I have the Blood Moon Gu and Sky Canopy Gu for attack and defense, Thunderwings for movement, tusita flower for storage, and Earth Communication Ear Grass for recon. I only lack a healing Gu," Fang Yuan calculated.

He previously had a Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, but Fang Yuan handed it up already, thus being able to get the tusita flower.

But for this Rank two Nine Leaf Vitality Grass, even in Fang Yuan’s possession, the healing ability was not satisfactory.

"Rank three healing Gu worms, there are a few desirable ones. Endless Vitality Gu can sustain healing and expends little primeval essence. On this note, it is the best for Gu Masters like me with low aptitude. There’s also the Undying Grass, a Gu that can save me as long as I have a single breath left, this is the best life-preservation type of Gu. The most optimum is the Self-reliance Gu, relying on the Gu Master’s own strength. The larger the Gu Master’s strength, the more it can stimulate the metabolism of the Gu Master and thus recover injuries faster."

But for these three Gu worms, how can Fang Yuan obtain them?

In the Gu Yue clan, he even checked the underground cavern, but found no such Gu.

On the resource board, they would also not display such a precious Gu.

The only hope lies in the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance.

But the chances were slim, Fang Yuan barely held any hope. He could feel that the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance was coming to an end. How could there be the exact Gu that Fang Yuan needs right at the end?

If that was the case, it would be too perfect, too idealistic.

But Fang Yuan knew how cruel this world was. Placing your faith in such a thing, that’s naivety!

"But even so, I have to finish exploring this inheritance ground. At least for that Chainsaw Golden Centipede, I have to subdue it," Fang Yuan thought in his heart.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Although he had planned to investigate the Flower Wine inheritance ground, Fang Yuan couldn’t find the time to do so. With his elder status, many were watching him, and with the busy schedule of the wolf tide, many battles had to be fought and he did not have an opportunity to leave.

By the time he returned to the rock crack’s secret cave, it was over ten days later.

The end of summer, night time.

The rain just stopped, bringing the atmosphere of autumn itself.

In the sky, a golden moon was hanging, round like a plate, high up in the sky.

Hearing vague wolf cries mixed with the remaining crickets, Fang Yuan stood on a slope, turning back and observing.

Gu Yue village was bright with numerous lamps lighted. The torn walls had been fixed over and over, losing the peace and tranquility it once had. It was almost like a huge beast that had undergone numerous battles, lying on the ground gasping for breath.

"After my rebirth, even the wolf tide’s progress has changed much. In my memory, the thunder crown wolf arrived three days ago, but now it is nowhere to be seen."

Fang Yuan took a look, before moving his sight. Tonight he had managed to squeeze out some time, and had to make good use of it.

A moment later, he entered the rock crack’s secret cave again.

The cave entrance was purposely covered with grey ash. There had never been any footsteps on it, showing that this place was yet undiscovered.

This small kind of detection method could not be called professional, but Fang Yuan’s experience placed them to good use.

Of course, he did not only have one method of precaution, and after several layers of checking, he finally confirmed that this secret cave was still safe for the time being.

He breathed a sigh of relief. After all, since his rebirth, many things had been altered. Especially during the wolf tide, Gu Masters moved around more frequently, so someone might have discovered this place.

He entered the tunnel and went into the second secret room. Pushing open the rock door, he entered the rock forest.

In the rock forest, the path that he once excavated was filled with jade eye stone monkeys again.

But the Fang Yuan now, is already a Rank three Gu Master. Although the Blood Moon Gu did not have the highest attacking power among the Rank three Gu worms, it was definitely far superior than the Moonglow Gu.

Fang Yuan spent six hours, exterminating almost ten groups of monkeys, reopening a path for himself.

He came to the most central area and stepped down the rough rock stairs, entering the third secret room. A rock door blocked his path, and on the rock door there was a carving —"Golden Centipede’s cave is precarious, Earth Communication is the way to avoid the disaster." Last time, he had been stuck at this step.

But this time, he opened the rock door with no hesitation, striding into the darkness.

He held a torch that illuminated the surrounding ten steps.

This centipede cave was wide, having a height of three metres, and breadth of two metres. There were also many narrow paths that extended all over the place.

Wherever Fang Yuan walked, the fire would proceed to light up the place and dispel the darkness. Initially the cave only had the sound of his footsteps, but soon all sorts of noises came from all over the place.

The sound gathered into one collective body, continuously sounding. At the edge of the lighted area, he soon saw a large number of centipedes.

They were ferocious. It was only due to the bright fire that they did not attack Fang Yuan. But Fang Yuan knew that as time passed, the centipedes would increase in number, and with the back pushing the ones in front, this stalemate would soon be broken.

But he did not mind it.

If he was still Rank two with only the White Jade Gu’s defense, he would definitely not cause such a commotion, attracting the movement of the centipede group. But now that he was Rank three, the Sky Canopy Gu’s defense was enough for him to withstand the bites of the insects, and his only concern was the insect king of the place — Chainsaw Golden Centipede.

It had appeared!

Fang Yuan purposely used a trace of his white silver primeval essence from his aperture, releasing it into the air, exposing his Rank three Gu Master aura.

This aura caused the Chainsaw Golden Centipede to feel a strong threat. To it, Fang Yuan had stepped into his territory, and this "wild beast" needed to be eliminated immediately.

Fang Yuan stood on guard against it.

This Chainsaw Golden Centipede was around a metre long, its body as wide as two fists. It first landed at the fringe of the lighted area, coiling its body around it, like python ambushing its prey.

But in the next moment, it moved slowly with numerous legs sustaining its weight as it gradually got closer towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s Rank three aura only made it alert, and not afraid. If he was Rank four, it would not pressure Fang Yuan like this. If he was Rank five and only revealed a bit of that aura, it would run for its life.

Fang Yuan raised the torch high. As the fire burned, it illuminated the surroundings and the shadow’s movements.

Under the glow of the fire, the Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s exoskeleton emitted an eerie light. At the side of its body, there were silver coloured sawteeth. As it got closer, the sawteeth moved as well, looking like a slowed chainsaw, emitting a buzzing sound.

The other centipedes gathered towards Fang Yuan from the walls and the ground.

Some centipedes climbed to the ceiling, then dropped down, landing on Fang Yuan’s shoulder and back.

Fang Yuan did not mind it; he activated the Sky Canopy Gu, and a thick white crystal light appeared on his body, the form of an armor subtly showing as it covered him fully.

The centipedes’ poisonous limbs could not do anything against this white crystal armor.

The twisting and turning centipedes climbed on his face or behind his ears; it was a little disgusting, but Fang Yuan’s endurance level was way beyond this, thus ignoring them completely. In his previous life, he had eaten almost anything in the wilderness, and even non-poisonous centipedes were eaten raw. In fact the taste was not that bad, almost a bit strange initially, but he got used to it after eating them for a while.

He only placed his attention on the Chainsaw Golden Centipede.

The Chainsaw Golden Centipede moved gradually, reducing the distance between Fang Yuan and itself.

When there was a distance of three to four steps between them, Fang Yuan stopped the white silver primeval essence from leaking and this caused his aura to instantly weaken.

The Chainsaw Golden Centipede acutely felt that, thus instantly increasing its speed, moving like a golden line.

Pew!

In the blink of an eye, it had shortened the distance, and coiled around Fang Yuan’s stomach.

This speed was really fast. It first appeared motionless, then on the very moment it moved, it dashed through like a golden light.

When Fang Yuan managed to react, this Chainsaw Golden Centipede had already coiled around his waist like a snake, opening its mouth and attacking towards Fang Yuan’s face.

Fang Yuan quickly stretched out both arms, grabbing the head of this golden centipede.

The Chainsaw Golden Centipede struggled, and Fang Yuan who had the strength of two boars, felt that his strength was insufficient.

Especially when the Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s two bladed edges started to move rapidly.

Clank clank clank!

A strong pulling and slashing force grinded at the white light of the Sky Canopy Gu.

At once, Fang Yuan’s white silver primeval essence was rapidly used up as the white light grinded with the chainsaws, causing sparks to fly.

Fang Yuan’s primeval essence was only initial stage light silver primeval essence, and with only 42% in storage, it could not support such an expenditure.

However, Fang Yuan was unfazed; even though he could not get free from the Chainsaw Golden Centipede, he had a trump card!

Spring Autumn Cicada!

He willed in his heart and the Spring Autumn Cicada’s shadow appeared from his aperture.

The Spring Autumn Cicada was gradually recovering; its two wings were tender and new like fresh leaves, and at the same time its body had a royal wooden lustre. But overall, it still gave off a withered feeling of death.

It had recovered around 20%, thus its aura was much stronger.

Once this aura was leaked, the Chainsaw Golden Centipede that was struggling intensely immediately surrendered!

It was only a Rank three wild Gu worm. Against the aura of the Rank six Spring Autumn Cicada, it did not dare to move at all.

Fang Yuan felt it most evidently. Previously he was still gripping the Chainsaw Golden Centipede like a poisonous python, using all ways to prevent it from biting; the next moment, it had become a soft and harmless rope.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, using his white silver primeval essence onto the Chainsaw Golden Centipede that had basically given up. Fang Yuan’s will worked without obstacles, completely eliminating the wild consciousness it had.

In a few breath’s time, the Chainsaw Golden Centipede was already refined by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan let go of both hands. The Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s numerous segments moved with rhythm, moving across the white protective armor and around Fang Yuan’s waist, finally twisting and coiling around his arm.

The surrounding centipede groups went away like a receding tide.

The wild Chainsaw Golden Centipede, because of its natural consciousness, was able to dominate the insect group. But now that Fang Yuan’s will replaced it, the Chainsaw Golden Centipede lost its ability to communicate and control the group.

Fang Yuan did not eliminate these centipedes, instead letting them leave. Maybe in another dozen plus years, a new Chainsaw Golden Centipede might be born. But this no longer had anything to do with Fang Yuan.

He let the Chainsaw Golden Centipede hang on his shoulder as he investigated deeper into the cave.

This centipede tunnel had a lot of paths, and after moving for a while, the main path split into three branches.

Fang Yuan first used the Earth Communication Ear Grass, and after a while, he eliminated the center path. Choosing the path on the right, he moved for half an hour and found a dead end. He could only backtrack and go through the left path.

By keeping the Chainsaw Golden Centipede, he could deter the centipede groups and cause them to move away from wherever he goes with the golden centipede’s aura.

This greatly aided his search.

Not long after he entered the left path, the centipede group that moved away revealed a cave, and he found some clues there.

"These are signs of human construction!" Fang Yuan’s heart was moved.

Very evidently, this path was dug out by the Flower Wine Monk initially using the Thousand Li Earthwolf spider.

Fang Yuan moved along this path at a slow pace, patiently investigating.

There were a lot of centipedes in this path, and this was another piece of good news for Fang Yuan.

This is because areas with insect groups living there allowed him to eliminate the possibility of placed traps.

This tunnel was longer than he expected, Fang Yuan spent over twelve hours and walked over three Li worth of distance!

The slope gradually moved down as Fang Yuan approached a deep underground area.

Every once in a while, he stopped and used the Earth Communication Ear Grass to eliminate any possible threats.

Swoosh swish!

"What sound is this?" Fang Yuan eventually heard a weird noise.

Immediately, he noticed what it was.

"This is water... don’t tell me?" His thought moved quickly as he had an idea.

At the end of the tunnel, he saw a crystal wall.

And behind the crystal wall, was water.

In the water, there was an ash-gray coloured river that flowed in a spiral, like a mini tornado, endlessly swirling in a self-sufficient system.

"As I thought, this is a natural essence spring!" Seeing this, Fang Yuan’s attention was piqued.

Soon after, he saw that behind this watery crystal wall, there was something else in the spring.

A flower bud with the colours of blue and white following one another, was leisurely floating in the spring water.

"This... is actually the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus!" Fang Yuan was shocked!

Note: > This tunnel was longer than he expected, Fang Yuan spent over twelve hours and walked over three Li worth of distance! Li is 500 meters, I don’t know why he took twelve hours just to walk 1.5km lol? It’s not even an exaggeration.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

There’s a joke in the chinese forums. They always say it whenever the author makes a blunder on stuff like how old an era is. They will say, don’t you know? Gu Zhen Ren’s mathematics skill was taught by his P.E. (sports) teacher! Moral of this is, author has terrible maths or something.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

As Fang Yuan looked at the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, many doubts in his heart was cleared. He could roughly speculate what had happened.

Going back in time, a millennium ago.

A solitary Rank five Gu Master came upon Qing Mao mountain and incidentally found this underground natural spirit spring.

He was exulted and settled down here. He began merging the mortal villagers living around the foot of the mountain together, forming the prototype of Gu Yue village.

He took in over a hundred wives and concubines, wantonly spreading his bloodline.

He was the ancestor of Gu Yue clan, the founder of Gu Yue village.

Time passed by, and he passed away ending the first generation, then it was the second, third until it reached the fourth generation.

The fourth generation clan leader possessed an A grade aptitude and cultivated to Rank five, creating another golden age for the clan.

One day, a demonic path Gu Master came to the village.

He was bald and muscular, dressed in pink clothes and moved alone; his favorite hobby was to defile innocent women. It was the famous devil of the demonic path: Flower Wine Monk.

Who knew what fortuitous encounter this Flower Wine Monk had, to be able to know the recipe to refine Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus. After many preparations, he only lacked a natural spirit spring to refine this flower Gu.

After looking all around, he finally chose Gu Yue village’s spirit spring.

At first, he used the pretence of buying moon orchid to slowly approach the Gu Yue clan’s higher-ups and get the details on Gu Yue clan.

Afterwards, in the battle with the fourth generation clan leader, he was able to achieve complete victory with his formidable strength. He had not only killed the fourth generation head, but also downed a large majority of the elders. However, his body was infected by the Moonshadow Gu.

Moonshadow Gu’s ability was to restrict primeval essence and wasn’t enough to be fatal. However, Flower Wine Monk couldn’t wantonly slaughter if he wanted to refine the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, as that would attract a lot of attention and hinder the progress. Thus, he chose to do things from the dark.

He used the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider to dig out a tunnel, secretly advancing to this area. Due to the thorough preparations he had made before and with the sufficient materials, he was able to refine Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus in the spirit spring.

The Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus has an extraordinary background. Its fusion recipe had been created many millenniums ago by a Gu Master of the righteous faction: Immortal Venerable Genesis Lotus.

Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus was only a Rank three flower Gu, but it had its advancement route and could become the Rank six Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, which was ranked sixth among the list of Top Ten Great Immortal Gu rankings. Its worth was about the same as the Spring Autumn Cicada!

The Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus had a reputation as a portable spirit spring, because it could produce primeval stones.

However, its fusion process had an extremely high price.

To refine the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, there must be a natural spirit spring. This spring should be full of primeval energy, and cannot be a spirit spring that has been used for many years, with its reserves drying out.

After the fusion succeeds, this spirit spring will be thoroughly useless and will lose its ability to produce primeval stones, becoming just an ordinary spring.

A natural spirit spring is extremely valuable. One only needs to look at how this spirit spring has sustained countless Gu Masters of the Gu Yue clan for close to a millennium to realize this point.

Refining a Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus would completely destroy this spirit spring. But that was just the beginning. If it was to be advanced to Rank four, it would need seven spirit springs, nine at Rank five, and eleven for Rank six!

Apart from this, many extremely precious Gu worms would be needed as auxiliary ingredients.

"If I take this Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, it would be like carrying a mini-scale spirit spring with me. The Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus is only a Rank three Gu, so its daily primeval stones production can’t compare to a normal spirit spring, but the amount will be enough to sustain my cultivation expenditure!"

This was just one of its benefits.

The primeval stones produced by Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus were a lot more than the earnings from the Nine Leaves Vitality Grass.

Primeval stones can not only help in advancing cultivation - they are also an exchangeable form of currency.

With the treasure lotus, Fang Yuan could decrease the amount of primeval stones he carried. The tusita flower could then be used to store various stuffs which could greatly decrease the burden on him.

"However....I heard that the fusion process of the treasure lotus is quite mysterious; it appears from nothing during which it transits between the astral and physical form. Ordinary people can’t see it, and it can only be seen clearly through the crystal. This Gu is quite delicate and needs to be nourished within the spirit spring for nine days and nine nights until it grows out nine intact leaves, before it can be plucked and put into the primeval sea in the aperture. If one picks it up before the time is ripe, all their efforts would be completely wasted."

Fang Yuan didn’t know the detailed recipe of Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus and only knew some insider rumors. He had no idea on how to advance it in the future.

Even so, this Rank three Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus would be of an enormous assistance to him.

He looked beyond the crystal wall and carefully observed; to his surprise, the flower only had eight and a damaged half leaf. There was only half a leaf left for the nine complete leaves.

Fang Yuan wasn’t baffled by this.

Centuries had passed, the spirit spring’s reserves had been consumed for four generations of time.

This Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus condensed the majority of the spirit spring’s essence, constantly consuming the primeval stones produced by the spirit spring, and causing the spirit spring’s reserves to further decrease. As a result, the treasure lotus slowly began to reverse the absorption, instead replenishing the damage to the spirit spring. By doing this, it was damaging itself; this was the reason for the damaged leaf.

"Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus must have nine complete leaves before it can be plucked. It only has eight leaves and a half now. I need to throw in primeval stones to the spring if I am to pluck it!"

Primeval stones were the crystallization of the spirit spring, they could provide the nourishment to the treasure lotus and let it grow again.

However, don’t underestimate this half damaged leaf. It was sure to require large amounts of primeval stones for it to grow back!

"If I am not wrong, this crystal wall should be produced by a Moat Gu...." Fang Yuan tried to touch the wall, and found that this wall was real but also virtual, just like light and shadow; his hands went through the wall without any obstruction.

But he quickly took back his hand and didn’t dare to go deep into the spirit spring.

Spirit springs should never be polluted.

He poured his primeval essence into the tusita flower and took out a primeval stone.

He threw the primeval stone through the crystal wall. As if the wall didn’t exist, the primeval stone went through it and dropped into the spirit spring, striking onto the phantom figure of the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus.

Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus transited between blue and white and started shaking like water ripples. It digested the primeval stone in almost an instant.

After waiting for the flower to turn calm, Fang Yuan observe it attentively, but found no change in that damaged leaf.

His expression was calm. He started throwing in dozens of primeval stones but there was still no change to the damaged leaf.

Fang Yuan continued to throw in primeval stones while silently counting the number. When over five hundred primeval stones were thrown, the damaged leaf finally grew by a little.

After the sight of this scene, Fang Yuan couldn’t help but feel slightly gloomy.

From this calculation, he had to throw in at least over fifty thousand primeval stones in at one time.

If he did it in batches and the time gap was long, Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus would consume itself to replenish the spirit spring as the clan continuously extracted primeval stones.

"Over fifty thousand primeval stones...I only have just over ten thousand with me and lack forty thousand more."

With his status as an elder, raising these forty thousand primeval stones wasn’t really a problem.

The true problem, however, lay elsewhere. Once he took out this Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, the spirit spring would be completely useless and this was bound to attract the whole clan’s furious and frantic investigation.

Fang Yuan had plentiful experience, but he had limited methods. If the clan investigated without any considerations, they were sure to find some clues. In fact, the clan’s higher-ups were already suspicious of him, but their suspicions were temporarily suppressed by the wolf tide.

If the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance was exposed, Fang Yuan would definitely be the primary suspect.

Even if Fang Yuan secretly escaped, he would suffer the whole clan’s reckless chase.

"I can’t give up over the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus. Even if I don’t have its fusion recipe, who knows what the future holds? The problem is that once I take this Gu, it is akin to stabbing a hornet’s nest and bringing calamity upon myself."

Fang Yuan secretly considered every situation and decided he had to wait for the best opportunity to appear, to take this Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus.

"This Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus should be the last inheritance of Flower Wine Monk. But there are many suspicious points to this; Flower Wine Monk would have come to this place to refine the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, so what kind of accident did he encounter to be so seriously injured that he had to hurriedly set up this inheritance before dying?"

Fang Yuan already knew the reason for the Flower Wine Monk to set up the inheritance.

It was to take revenge against the Gu Yue clan.

If Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus was to be taken out of the spirit spring - whether it was a success or failure - this natural spirit spring was bound to be useless.

Without the natural spirit spring, Gu Yue clan would have no foundation to stay here. It was only a matter of time before the clan broke apart.

"Forget it, I won’t make any headway in my doubts without any new evidence. I should return to the village now." In the end, Fang Yuan shook his head and began to return back the way he came.

When he had just exited the rock crack, a loud and clear wolf howl continuously resounded.

"This sound!" Fang Yuan turned grim and quickly moved.

When he reached the riverbank outside of the rock crack, he could smell a thick odor of blood.

Sounds of cries, yells, wolf howls and explosions could be heard even though there was still some distance to the village.

Fang Yuan concealed his figure and climbed a hill.

It was early in the morning and the first rays of sunlight had just broken out of the sky.

Countless wolf packs were rushing towards the Gu Yue village like a flood.

Fang Yuan’s gaze swept past them, then his body trembled.

In the rearmost part of the wolf packs, he saw a lightning wolf that was as large as a small hill.

Myriad beast king: Thunder Crown Wolf!

It was tall and slim, had strong limbs and its whole body was covered with eerie blue scales. Tufts of golden wolf fur could be seen on its claws and tail.

The fur on its head were all stiff and upraised, forming a towering crown.

It was crouching on the ground and was still like a sculpture. The frenzy lightning wolves and bold lightning wolves around it constantly howled, serving to show its elegance and nobility.

Just by sitting there, it had already brought a great mental pressure to the Gu Yue clan.

"The myriad beast king has finally arrived, it is the decisive moment for the survival of the Gu Yue village!" Fang Yuan gazed towards the village; innumerable Gu Masters were in fierce battles, using all of their strength to block the frantic charge of the wolf tide.

Suddenly, around ten figures flew out of the village and rushed against the wolf tide, charging towards the Thunder Crown Wolf.

They were all elders and in front of them was the clan leader Gu Yue Bo!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

The calm of the storm is over, here comes the first of waves!

Maybe some of you should stop reading for a month, because it won’t be good for your health. The cliffhangers will kill you until Book one ends at Chapter 199!!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

If one wants to fight against the thunder crown wolf, one must strike first. Its strength is just too great, and if it was let into the village, it would definitely cause great losses and damage.

This group’s capabilities were huge. With the Rank four clan leader Gu Yue Bo as the leader, and his elders as his support, they were a strong attacking force.

The wolf tide was surging violently, yet they went against it with careful and compact cooperation. As if the group was a warship, splitting the waves apart, advancing bravely forward.

Wherever they went, they were practically sweeping everything away in their path!

The closer they got to the thunder crown wolf, the more the pressure coming from the wolf tide increased.

Gu Yue Bo was calm and composed. Suddenly he stretched out his right palm, and slashed in front of him.

Swoosh!

A golden coloured moonblade, as big as a grown adult, formed in a split second and flew out towards the front.

Swoooosh swoosh swooooosh!

After flying out for a few meters, this moon disk suddenly went through a change, and from one blade it turned into three.

Three moonblades flew alongside each other, bringing about the sound of the wind whistling as it plowed open three bloody paths like knives cutting meat apart.

Many wolves fell without exception. Broken limbs flew into the air, and blood-curdling cries sounded non-stop.

A frenzy lightning wolf roared and started rushing over fiercely towards the Gu Masters from the right side."Let me!" A clan elder suddenly went from a thin and dry appearance, turning into a huge fat man in one breath.

With a bang, he used his round belly and sent the frenzy lightning wolf flying away.

The frenzy lightning wolf had come in a torrential rush, and the greater the strength of collision the stronger the bounce back was. It was thrown across high into the air, cutting an arc and then finally falling down hundreds of meters away.

The other elders were displaying all sorts of abilities.

There were some with long hair like needles, continuously shooting out and sweeping away lightning wolves.

Some of them had their bodies covered in light armor, forcefully bearing through the wolves’ tearing and biting.

The thunder crown wolf went from a half-sitting state, and slowly got onto its feet. It firmly stared at the Gu Masters rushing towards itself, and the wolf’s dark eyes flashed with warning.

It opened its mouth and let out a low roar, revealing its sharp and jagged wolf fangs.

Each of the frenzy lightning wolves and bold lightning wolves that heard its roar immediately got up and rushed towards the Gu Masters.

The Gu Masters were instantly slowed in their charge, receiving great obstruction.

"Clan leader!"

"I’ll leave it to all of you, clan elders!"

"You have to win..."

Numerous eyes flashed and gathered on them. Unknown number of rallying cries and shouts sounded from the the depths of the clansmen’s hearts.

This was the most crucial battle.

If they lose the battle, the entire clan would face the danger of being wiped out. If victory was assured, then they would have held against the hardest moment of the wolf tide.

This was the battle that would decide the life and death of the Gu Yue clan!

None of the elders backed off. They pushed forward, while drenched in blood. Even though they did not lose any numbers, none of them were spared from injury.

They eliminated all the obstacles around them, until they faced the thunder crown wolf, then charged towards it.

Therapy Light Gu.

Suddenly a middle-aged female clan elder stretched out both her hands, and a pure white, warm light bubbled forth. The light first flowed onto the clan leader’s body, and then reflected onto each of the other clan elders.

This was a Rank three healing Gu with area-of-effect properties, and it could instantly cause the wounds on Gu Masters to stop bleeding. Light wounds would be recovered completely, while heavy wounds would be healed by half.

"Continue fighting!" Gu Yue Bo roared loudly.

Five clan elders swiped their arms as they heard the signal, and sent a moonblade flying towards the sky.

Suddenly a clan elder roared as all the muscles on his body erupted and expanded three times, becoming a white fur giant ape.

It jumped in front of the group, its hands joined together.

Gu Yue Bo stepped onto its two hands, and with a low roar, the ape kicked from the ground and stretched out its waist, using all the strength in its body to toss Gu Yue Bo into the sky.

Moon-invite Gu.

Gu Yue Bo spread out his left hand; it was giving out a hazy, whirlpool-like purple moonlight.

The moonblades that the clan elders had shot towards the sky were all absorbed and annexed by this purple moonlight.

"SLASH!"

Gu Yue Bo’s eyes shone as he shouted in a thunderous volume, splitting the air with his palms from up to down.

Pew!

Winds and thunder resounded as a purple moonblade, larger than a horse carriage, flew towards the thunder crown wolf.

This moonblade looked slow but was actually fast, and in a split second, it struck its target.

The thunder crown wolf howled and at the last moment, a thunder light armor appeared on its body.

Bam!

In the next moment, an intense explosion occurred as the sky was engulfed in eerie blue lightning pitting against the purple alluring moonlight.

Numerous people squinted as the shockwaves spread from the impact, sending the ordinary lightning wolves in the vicinity flying.

When the intense light dissipated, the Gu Masters were already engaging in battle with the thunder crown wolf.

The clan elders were all extremely experienced and well coordinated with each other.

An aged old master with floating white hair shot out needles from it endlessly like rain.

On another side, a female Gu Master blew out flames from her nostrils like lingering snakes, and she spouted a wave of orange flame and assaulted two sides at the same time.

There were another three Gu Masters - one turned into a white ape, while another turned his muscles into steel from head to toe as they both tried to curb the thunder crown wolf. The other Gu Master tossed out unending numbers of Puppet Gu, pouring his primeval essence and turning them into vine armoured grass soldiers or wooden servants with red spears, using them as fodder to attract the incoming assault.

Healing Gu Masters stood at the outer circle, using Therapy Light Gu from time to time. Beside them were defensive Gu Masters, giving them care and protection.

The thunder crown wolf had been beaten badly. Its right front limb had a huge wound, the blood flowing non-stop. This was the outcome from the attack of the purple moonblade a moment ago.

It roared continuously as it had fallen into the Gu Master’s well planned trap. Even if it had the spirits to fight back, there was not much it could do.

The Gu Masters weaved and jumped around it like fleas on a cat or dog. They continued to move around and pulled space as they worked with completely chemistry.

But the good situation did not last, for the thunder crown wolf slowly began to adapt, while the wound on its body did not stop healing.

It was clear that it had a healing Gu on its body. This was very bad news.

The healing Gu’s existence would mean that this is a war of attrition.

Wild Gu could just use the natural essence straight from the air, while Gu Masters could only use primeval essence from their own apertures.

After the battle reached fifteen minutes later, the thunder crown wolf suddenly howled towards the sky, and a torrent of lightning flashes enveloped its whole body, while its speed sharply increased onefold.

The elder who had turned into a white ape could not dodge in time. Unable to react to this change, he was bitten by the thunder crown wolf and his skull was torn into two by the wolf’s tugging.

The thunder crown wolf had torn a line in the battlefront, and with continuous swipes of its tail, purplish blue electric currents rushed forth; the Gu Masters could only back away non-stop.

In this dangerous moment, the clan leader Gu Yue Bo stood out.

He was a Rank four expert with powerful attacks and superior defense, like the center pillar of the group, using all his strength to salvage the situation.

Mountain rocks broke and shadows dissipated as group battles enlarged. The aftermath ravaged the battlefield, and not a single lightning wolf dared to enter battle.

The situation of the battlefield only became more desperate. The thunder crown wolf’s injuries became heavier and worse, the bleeding unable to stop, and bones could be seen in the deeper wounds. At the same time, the Gu Masters also suffered heavy losses — so far they had already lost six clan elders. If not for the village’s clan elders’ immediate and urgent dispatch, coming in to aid the fight, the battle might have long collapsed.

"Everyone, stand strong, holding is the key to victory!" Gu Yue Bo killed until his eyes were red, and his voice was hoarse as he gave his all to arouse morale.

But at this moment, the thunder crown wolf suddenly went berserk, and its body was enshrouded in a layer of bright red light.

Rank four Berserk Gu!

The thunder crown wolf’s strength, speed, agility and other attributes suddenly rose to twice the original base.

Boom!

There was a loud noise as it swiped its right claw, turning a clan elder into complete meat mush.

With a flick of its tail, the sound of wind erupted and an electrical net flew out, trapping a field of grass and wooden puppets, then burning it all into charcoal.

"I can’t keep up, my puppets are already used up!" The elder cried out, frightened.

With the situation rapidly changing for the worse, the terror of the myriad beast king was fully unleashed, leaving everyone in despair.

Gu Yue Bo’s eyebrows were locked tight, and it seemed like he was about to break his teeth from gritting, when he suddenly yelled, "Trap it, use the Iron Chain Snake!"

As the clan elders heard this, they were awed in their hearts.

Early during the start of the wolf tide, they had already displayed countless of battle tactics; this was a method that must only be used when there was no other choice!

"Wind Snare Gu!" An elder cried out, and from his nostrils came a green breeze, wrapping around the thunder crown wolf’s claws.

"Swamp Gu!" Another elder roared and crouched down, bringing his two hands down and slamming on the ground. Instantly, the earth below the thunder crown wolf turned into mud.

With these simultaneous attacks, the thunder crown wolf’s movements were slowed at that moment.

Taking advantage of this opportunity, the other elders all stretched out their hands, and from their sleeves and pants, waves of black shadows shot out.

The black shadow was about the size of a fist, and each length was around two meters long. On close inspection, one would see that each black shadow was a snake Gu.

This snake was shaped like an iron chain, its whole body a gloomy black. Coils of metal rings were strung and connected together, and only the snake head looked normal.

As it flew out, the snakes wriggled on the ground, quickly climbing onto the thunder crown wolf’s body.

Their heads and tails then connected and mutually fit together, forming a metal net in the blink of an eye, taking root from the ground and trapping the thunder crown wolf on the spot.

But this situation was only temporary, for as the thunder crown wolf struggled continuously, one by one, the iron chains would break off. In just five to six minutes, these metallic snakes would completely disintegrate away, no longer trapping the thunder crown wolf.

"Chi Guang, Suo Ping, stay here and stop the wolf pack from attacking the metal chains. The rest of you, fall back to the village with me!" Gu Yue Bo shouted. He actually had chosen to retreat.

However the other clan elders did not show any surprised expressions; they had already known the clan leader’s intention.

They hurried back to the village, and immediately a clan elder came up towards them and said, "Lord clan leader, everything has been prepared!"

Gu Yue Bo nodded, commanding the group to go to the clan pavillion.

In the plaza before the clan pavillion, there was already up to a hundred Gu Masters seated on the ground.

These Gu Masters were mainly those who were seriously hurt and could not enter battle in a short period of time. Each of their faces carried a calm expression of facing death without fear. Meanwhile for those who still had the ability to battle, they were fighting away on the front lines.

With the battle reaching this moment, the clan had already given its all. In this dire situation, even the mortals had been mobilized. Using each and every single human life to be turned as a meat wall, obstructing the wolf tide for the time being, this gave the Gu Masters some time to recuperate and regroup.

Gu Yue Bo and the clan elders went into the ancestral halls of the clan pavillion.

Under the memorial tablets of their ancestors, they all sank to their knees on the floor."To the great ancestor above me, we descendants are greatly ashamed! The wolf tide is turbulent, and the village has fallen into the situation of life and death. We beseech our great ancestor to come and give us a hand!" When Gu Yue Bo finished speaking in a low voice, the ancestral hall fell into deep silence.

Drip drop.

A few of the clan elder’s blood seeped out from their hastily bandaged wounds, dripping onto the floor.

Gu Yue Bo and the rest of the clan elders held their breaths, not even daring to pant or breathe loudly.

Back in the day, when the first generation clan leader felt his death approaching, he set out to leave the village. Before his departure, he left a testament behind. It spoke that if the clan would ever fall into the danger of perishing, they could pray before his memorial tablet. At that moment, Gu worms would descend from the sky and help the village through the difficult situation.

Throughout history, the Gu Yue clan had suffered through major crisis a few times, and they had dealt with the calamity this way.

This was the Gu Yue clan’s last trump card!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Sending prayers to your ancestors, like everyone does when in times of trouble. Except... will it work this time?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the ancestral hall, it was deadly silent. The clan elder and clan leader lowered their heads like a big rock was weighing on their heart.

After a Gu Master dies, the Gu worms they leave behind will still have the person’s will remaining. They cannot be considered wild Gu worms, and have had lost their ability to use the natural essence in the air.

These Gu worms can be considered a extension of life of that particular Gu Master.

Everyone’s heart was uneasy.

The first generation clan head had passed on for at least a thousand years, so were the methods that he had left behind still effective? No one knew.

After all, since the last crisis, it had already been two hundred years.

"Why did they retreat?" On the slope, Fang Yuan saw this scene and grew suspicious.

In his previous life, his cultivation was too low, thus he could not learn about the clan’s secrets.

But soon his body shook, discovering that a group of flying worms had descended from the sky.

"This is..." Fang Yuan eyes squinted as cold light shone.

There were up to a hundred Gu worms flying around in a cluster, forming a red cloud, descending and landing on the village square.

Buzz buzz buzz...

The noises emitted by the insect group entered the ancestral hall, and the clan elders raised their heads, showing a frantically overjoyed expression.

"Thank you great ancestor, for the protection!" Gu Yue Bo’s heart felt at ease as he paid his respects before getting up.

"Go, go and see," the clan leader sighed. On his face, there was happiness, solemness and grief, a complicated expression.

Leaving the ancestral hall and standing on the building’s stairway, everyone could see that on the village square, there was a red tornado rampaging.

These Gu worms were only around the size of a fingertip. They were shaped like locusts, with a scary face and was red all over.

They entered the bodies of the Gu Masters sitting on the square, extracting their blood and primeval essence. In a few breath’s time, one insect multiplied into more worms.

Thus, the Gu increased greatly in numbers as time went by. There were constantly new Gu worms being produced, flying into the Gu Master’s skin and flying out, and then digging in again.

In the village square, miserable cries and cold groans sounded, but not one Gu Master fled.

Before they came, they were already informed by the clan elders. For the clan, they willingly tributed their bodies to feed the Gu, using their own sacrifices to bring about the survival of the clan.

"These are all good lads of our clan!" Gu Yue Bo seeing this muttered in a low voice, as the hand holding onto the railing shivered slightly.

The other elders showed a painful expression, but did not say anything.

This situation was exactly as recorded in the clan memorials. The first generation ancestor had left behind these Gu worms, and they required Gu Master’s lives to feed. Only then are they satisfied and will help the clan to defend against external enemies.

After these flying Gu were full and satisfied, they flew up again with an even greater presence; in the blink of an eye, they had grown in number over tens of times!

What was left on the square were piles of white bones as the Gu flew out like a tornado, rampaging through the wolf packs outside the village.

"The Blood Guillotine indeed..." Fang Yuan who was standing on the slope saw everything and thought in his heart.

This Blood Guillotine is a Rank five Gu. Its usability and feeding are fused into one; it was a very strange Gu.

They specialized in consuming a Gu Master’s life-bound origin blood, and after feasting, they would start to multiply, from one to two, two to four...

If they were hungry and couldn’t find food, they would start to eat each other, reducing the size of their group to sustain the expenditure they needed in moving around.

At its peak the Blood Guillotine could engulf the skies and lands, destroying villages in their path, and were more fearsome than many Rank six Gu worms. When it was weak at only one or two in number, they would barely have any power and is worse than a Rank three Gu.

Especially when this Blood Guillotine Gu advances into the highly acclaimed Rank six demonic Gu, Blood Deity. Among the Top Ten Great Demonic Gu in the world, it ranks 7th.

In his previous life, when Fang Yuan created the Blood Wing demonic sect, he first wanted to refine the Blood Deity instead of the Spring Autumn Cicada. However, because of circumstances and many other reasons, he could only reduce his expectations and refine the Spring Autumn Cicada.

This group of Blood Guillotines numbered up to tens of thousands. Like a tornado sweeping the battlefield, everywhere they went, wolf packs howled and wailed.

They flew left and right, entering the lightning wolves’ bodies and in a few breaths’ time, the lightning wolves’ blood would be completely absorbed.

But this beast blood could not allow the Blood Guillotine to multiply. Only a Gu Master’s origin blood that contains primeval essence could achieve this effect.

One after another, lightning wolves were reduced to dry corpses, lying on the ground and losing their lives.

Only the bold lightning wolves and frenzy lightning wolves’ lightning currents could resist this Blood Guillotine.

However, they could only electrocute a small number of flying insects, before an overwhelming number of Blood Guillotines would rush up and suck them into dry corpses.

Howl!

The steel web broke completely as the thunder crown wolf regained its freedom, howling in anger.

The Blood Guillotine detected it and it gathered quickly, forming a large red cloud and engulfing the thunder crown wolf completely.

The thunder crown wolf’s tail swung around as blue lightning currents shot out and turned hundreds and thousands of Blood Guillotines to crisps.

The popping sound was just like firecrackers going off.

A gust of wind blew, bringing along the horrible burnt smell of the roasted Blood Guillotines.

The Blood Guillotine was indeed a Rank five Gu, but without a user, it could only attack head on. The thunder crown wolf had several Rank four Gu residing in it, and some had a wide area attack method, countering this Blood Guillotine.

The flying insects moved like a red cloud as the thunder crown wolf’s hill-like body howled and struggled, creating a havoc.

At this moment, the thunder crown wolf’s large body became its weakness as the fingertip-sized Blood Guillotine took advantage of it.

The battle was intense. As large numbers of Blood Guillotines fell on the ground, the thunder crown wolf’s armor was broken through, and some Blood Guillotines drilled their way in and started to suck blood wantonly.

Without any other choice, the thunder crown wolf could only spray lightning plasma on its own body, electrocuting these Blood Guillotines.

But this way, its surface muscles were all fried, emitting a fragrant cooked meat smell.

The wolf tide’s attack on the village had already stopped.

Under the thunder crown wolf’s command, numerous lightning wolves attacked the insect group instead.

The Gu Masters could be said to have escaped death, and many held their breaths as they watched this intense and tragic battle nervously.

The insect group was like a death plague. Numerous lightning wolves would rush in and drop dead soon after.

However, the lightning wolves’ sacrifice also caused the insect group to face high expenditure.

The Blood Guillotine dropped in numbers. The original dense cloud had turned into a thin fog, and soon it was reduced to a small tornado still flying in the air.

The thunder crown wolf struggled and escaped, its mouth howling as it ran with all its speed.

The blood in its body was almost half gone. Now its body felt soft and tired, while its running speed was not even 10% of the usual speed, and the lightning currents flowing on its body also became extremely scattered.

As the leader of the wolf packs, the escape of the thunder crown wolf caused the other lightning wolves’ fighting spirit to diminish, and they also escaped all over the place.

"We finally did it..." The Gu Masters seeing this, became blank as some just collapsed on the ground, unwilling to get up.

"I’m actually still alive!" Many Gu Masters’ expression was complicated; some were filled with happiness while also in grief.

Through the wolf tide, many clansmen were sacrificed!

Buzz buzz buzz...

The scattered Blood Guillotine group flew high into the sky, flying one huge round around the Gu Yue village before vanishing into the clouds.

Seeing this, Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with a complex thought.

The defeat of the thunder crown wolf meant the village was now safe. In fact, most of the wolf packs were dead or injured, so they no longer had such a huge number.

This wolf tide, could be said to have been over.

However, wolf packs bear grudges, and as long as this myriad beast king is not dead, during the next wolf tide it would attack once again. After many years of recuperating, it would become even shrewder and stronger.

In the current situation, it was at its weakest. Killing it now and getting the Gu worms on its body, can help replenish some of the clan’s losses.

"Yao Zhong, Ge Yan, you two stay behind and take care of the situation. Other clan elders, follow me and assault the thunder crown wolf!" Gu Yue Bo hurriedly ordered, before leading the remaining seven elders capable of fighting out of the village and towards the direction that the thunder crown wolf escaped in.

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone, weighing in his heart, "Although the clan’s power is greatly reduced, the current situation is not in a mess. Moreover, this Blood Guillotine has a suspicious origin, I better follow the clan leader and check out the situation."

Saying so, he went into stealth mode and went down the slope.

The Stealth Scales Gu and the Thunderwings Gu cannot be used concurrently. Thunderwings Gu was a Rank three Gu, and once activated it forms a pair of lightning wings that cannot be hidden by the Rank two Stealth Scales Gu.

Against the Rank three clan elders, the Stealth Scales Gu’s hiding ability was not effective.

Fang Yuan could only follow their tracks and keep a distance between them, not daring to get close.

When the thunder crown wolf attacked, he was still in the rock crack secret cave and did not participate in the battle. If he appeared now, it would attract the rage of the clan head and clan elder, and if they questioned him, he would have not been able to explain himself.

The injuries of the thunder crown wolf were very severe, so it could not move fast. After half an hour, Fang Yuan could hear that there was the sound of fighting and scolding ahead of him.

He went there in stealth, getting onto a mountain rock, observing the Gu Masters’ fight.

The thunder crown wolf lay on the ground with many new injuries on its body. Blood was flowing non-stop as it was gasping for breath. Its dim eyes showed that it was very near death.

"Old geezer Bai, you and your guys sure have the face, coming here to take advantage of the situation!"

"Hehehe, Gu Yue Bo, that’s not the right thing to say. This thunder crown wolf was obviously stopped by us, get a clue and fuck off!"

Gu Yue Bo and the Bai clan leader were at a standstill, wary against each other.

The wolf den had three thunder crown wolves, all myriad beast kings, each having their packs of tens of thousand lightning wolves. But they did not glue together, and neither could they suppress one another.

The wolf packs’ movements relied on working together. The three thunder crown wolves had intelligence, each targeting the three large "beast groups" to hunt.

In their eyes, humans were also wild beasts, and even prey.

In their understanding, the wolf tide was a massive hunting session.

On Qing Mao mountain, the Xiong, Gu Yue and Bai clan were able to live for hundreds of years. Naturally, they all had their trump cards.

Xiong clan was the weakest, still resisting the wolf tide with difficulty even now. The Bai clan had risen these years, and their cumulative strength had exceeded the Gu Yue clan. After killing a thunder crown wolf and pushing back the wolf tide, the Bai clan leader brought his clan elders to Gu Yue village, trying to find some opportunities.

To think that there really was such a chance! Thus they blocked the thunder crown wolf in this valley.

The thunder crown wolf’s body had many Gu worms, and some were even Rank four. The thunder crown wolf’s blood, bone, eye and fur were all precious refinement material. The Gu Yue clan naturally would not let go of them, and under intense anger, they attacked.

"Hehehe, Fang Yuan you really came. I’ve waited for so long!"

On the mountain wall, a cold laughter was heard.

Fang Yuan raised his head, only to see a white clothed young man descending from the sky as an iceblade slashed towards his face with resolution.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

His hair snowy white and his orbs blue, a one-arm figure in white.

Who else could it be but Bai Ning Bing?

Before the ice blade touched his body, Fang Yuan could feel a cold eerie feeling assaulting him from behind like a comet striking the earth, full of cold killing intent.

Fang Yuan’s irises were black in contrast, unmoving in danger, leaping backwards and injecting primeval essence into the Sky Canopy Gu, creating a white armor to protect himself.

Bam! The iceblade struck the ground heavily, and at that instance a bunch of white icicles grew from the ground, erupting upwards.

Swoosh!!

The sharp icicles stabbed upwards at the direction Fang Yuan was retreating towards, creating an icy path.

Fang Yuan easily somersaulted and avoided them.

The mountain path was narrow, so he slid down towards the valley along the edges.

"Hehehe, Fang Yuan oh Fang Yuan, why is it that everytime I see you, I feel that intense urge to kill you? Mmm, tell me!" Bai Ning Bing excitedly shivered as he laughed maniacally.

His laughter attracted the gaze of the other Gu Masters in the valley.

Seeing Bai Ning Bing and Fang Yuan, their expressions were different.

"Lord Bai Ning Bing, let me assist you!" A Bai clan Gu Master who originally stood at the side shouted and struck towards Fang Yuan.

"Clan leader, it is our clan’s Fang Yuan!" Gu Yue clan’s Gu Masters shouted.

"I know." Clan leader Gu Yue Bo’s expression was uncertain, and he dodged the Bai clan leader’s attack as he decided, shouting, "Get the materials into our possession first!"

Fang Yuan had mysteriously vanished before the wolf tide arrived, causing the Gu Yue higher-ups to feel highly doubtful of him. In addition, the intense pressure from the Bai clan Gu Masters resulted in no one going to reinforce Fang Yuan.

Bai Ning Bing saw help arrive and flew into a rage, shouting at the person, "Scram, this is my battle, don’t interfere!"

"Lord Bai Ning Bing, you lost an arm and have reduced battle potential. You are the hope of our Bai clan, you cannot be lost. Let me sweep this obstacle for you!"

The Bai clan Gu Master shouted as he leapt, charging towards Fang Yuan.

He activated his Gu worm, both hands glowing with a orange yellow light.

Bam!

He lightly patted the ground, and the light entered the earth. Instantly, a lump grew from the earth.

The mud lump advanced towards Fang Yuan as it got bigger.

Suddenly the mud lump exploded, revealing a yellow mud arm.

This arm was humongous, as tall as an adult as it grabbed towards Fang Yuan. Its power and presence caused others to feel suffocated.

Fang Yuan snorted in disdain.

Seeing this arm grab at him and about to succeed, a dark golden light suddenly shot out from his aperture, turning into a shiny ribbon of light, wrapping around Fang Yuan’s body.

The big arm reached his body but was twisted by this dark golden light, breaking and collapsing.

"Oh? What Gu worm is this?" Bai Ning Bing showed shock on his face.

The dark golden light dispersed, revealing the true form of the Gu.

It was over a metre long, as wide as two fists. Its dark golden exoskeleton displayed dominance as its sharp razor blades at the side of its body shone with cold light.

Chainsaw Golden Centipede!

"Come," Fang Yuan shouted, extending his right arm, his fist clenched.

The Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s numerous segments climbed up his body nimbly, its body twisting and turning like a snake, coiling around his right arm.

Its mouth opened and swallowed Fang Yuan’s right fist in one mouth, all the way until half his forearm was swallowed.

Fang Yuan’s arm swung, and the metre-long golden centipede moved its tail. In the air, it drew an arc, emitting a crisp sound.

At this moment, the golden centipede shrunk its body to the max, its near-two metre length shrinking to one meter and a half. At the same time its feet shrunk into the exoskeleton, leaving behind only two rows of razor blades.

At one glance, Fang Yuan looked like he was holding a dark golden-silver bladed, giant hiltless sword!

The reinforcement Gu Master was shocked, he had never thought that the Chainsaw Golden Centipede could be used like this.

The Gu Master’s raising Gu, refining Gu, using Gu — all three required deep research. Fang Yuan’s method was innovative and unheard of, using his imagination to the limit.

But actually, this method was not invented by Fang Yuan.

Three hundred years later, a new demonic faction talent, the ‘Chainsaw Mad Demon’ would use the Rank four Chainsaw Killer Centipede, one of the advancement paths of the Rank three Chainsaw Golden Centipede.

But in this life, Fang Yuan using it at this point is really unprecedented.

"I shall let you guys have a taste," Fang Yuan smirked, using the primeval essence in his aperture and injecting them into the Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s body.

Buzz buzz buzz!

The Chainsaw Golden Centipedes’ two rows of razor blades started to move violently, emitting a wild sound, causing others’ heart to shiver upon hearing.

Thunderwings Gu!

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with determination as a pair of eerie blue thunderwings formed on his back with a crisp sound.

Whoosh!

The thunderwings flapped, causing Fang Yuan to shoot out like lightning.

Fast! Fast! FAST!

The speed was so fast that the Bai clan Gu Master’s iris shrunk as he felt a chill.

The smell of death was so close, and he shrieked as he used his strongest Gu; a thick yellow light appeared on his body.

The yellow light was like armor, except that before it fully materialized, Fang Yuan had already gotten close.

His black hair danced in the wind, his eyes like lightning, looking like a demonic god that emerged from nightmares, killing his way into the mortal realm!

His movements were violent, and he completely exerted his muscles. As they tightened up, he used the strength of two boars to their limit.

The golden centipede-like sword, waved like a golden shadow in the air. The razors rotated violently, slashing towards the Bai clan Gu Master’s waist.

Crack!

The yellow light armor broke under the slaughter of the chainsaw - it was never fully formed in the first place. At this moment, it scattered instantly.

The razors entered the meat as if it was cutting butter, and as Fang Yuan flicked his wrist, the chopped up meat flew all over the place along with the blood. The Gu Master’s spine smashed and his intestines were grinded to a pulp.

The Bai clan Gu Master’s upper half of the body flew into the air, while his lower half remained on the spot.

Plop.

He stared with wide-opened eyes, staring in fright at his lower half, dying in extreme fear and shock.

This commotion caused the fighting among the two clans to stop temporarily. They all looked towards Fang Yuan, sending shocked, angered gazes.

This Bai clan Gu Master was also a Rank three elder, and was slightly famous.

But under Fang Yuan’s aggressive, dominant attack, he was instantly killed.

Fang Yuan’s body was still blood bathed, with the Bai clan Gu Master’s flesh still sticking to his clothes. The Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s two edges were still rotating violently, and with such ferocity, it caused everyone to look away.

"What a great Gu worm!" Bai Ning Bing shouted, his eyes showing insanity and excitement.

"Fang Yuan, you did not let me down indeed! Come battle!" He shouted, his passion blazing like flames, striking towards Fang Yuan.

"Noisy fucker." Fang Yuan’s expression was cold as ice, turning around to counterattack.

Bam!

The Chainsaw Golden Centipede and the iceblade collided. With a cracking sound, the razors cut into the iceblade and caused it to shatter into pieces.

In the next moment, the Chainsaw Golden Centipede broke through the iceblade and swept across Bai Ning Bing’s face.

Bai Ning Bing’s expression changed as he resolutely let go of the iceblade and retreated backwards, almost two metres of distance away.

The Chainsaw Golden Centipede when shrunk was only 1.5m. Adding on Fang Yuan’s right arm, there was still a little distance before it could reach Bai Ning Bing. But Fang Yuan willed, and the Chainsaw Golden Centipede suddenly extended itself.

"This?!" Bai Ning Bing was dumbstruck and did not anticipate this turn of events.

He was hit on the chest by the centipede’s tail. Even with his ice muscles protecting his body, there was still a large cut on his body.

At that instance, he felt a strong force assault him, and he was unavoidably sent flying, landing on a huge rock behind him.

Blood splattered on the rock’s surface, but his ice muscles soon stopped the bleeding.

Bai Ning Bing coughed intensely and was about to get up, but suddenly he heard a thunderous sound.

The sound was right beside his ear, and an unprecedented sense of danger entered his heart.

Bai Ning Bing’s iris shrunk as he did not even raise his head, but frantically rolled away.

BAM!

In the next moment, the Chainsaw Golden Centipede descended from the sky. With its imposing aura, it struck the ground that he was at a moment ago.

The razors rotated violently, and the huge rock broke into pieces.

"If this hit landed on my body... I’m afraid..." Bai Ning Bing’s heart chilled, and a sense of anger stemming from his indignant nature rose.

Ever since his battle with Gu Yue Qing Shu, he had stopped suppressing his cultivation, and let it rise naturally.

Although he lost a limb, he had his complete cultivation, but was still suppressed by this Rank three initial stage Fang Yuan!

Indignant! Humiliation! Rage!

"KILL!" He growled, his wrist turning and injecting primeval essence into the iceblade Gu, forming a brand new iceblade.

Seeing Bai Ning Bing come closer, Fang Yuan laughed coldly and attacked with all he had.

He had obtained the Black and White Boar Gu, thus his strength was greater than Bai Ning Bing. At this point when waving the Chainsaw Golden Centipede, it was as light as a tree branch.

Cut, slash, hack, twist, turn, the Chainsaw Golden Centipede rotated violently, moving as agile as a bee in Fang Yuan’s hand. At times it appeared heavy like an elephant, sometimes ferocious as a tiger, and sometimes flexible like a snake.

The most crucial point was, the golden centipede followed Fang Yuan’s will, extending and shrinking at times, sometimes longer and sometimes shorter, sometimes straight sometimes curly. That made it hard for Bai Ning Bing to adapt, and he could barely defend himself.

He cried and screamed as he retreated gradually, his body filled with injuries. His white battle robe had turned into a beggar’s attire.

Fang Yuan moved like a black wind, his expression cool as he displayed an extremely profound sword technique, saber art, axe and rod skills. He fused all these skills into one, turning the Chainsaw Golden Centipede into a lethal weapon!

A Gu depends on who the user is.

"Good on you, Fang Yuan!" Bai Ning Bing shouted after numerous iceblades broke; he finally realized that he could not go head on against Fang Yuan.

His body was bathed in blood and the ice muscles’ defense was almost broken, but this led out his immense battle passion.

If close range won’t do, then long range it is.

Blue bird ice coffin Gu!

Bai Ning Bing pulled some distance and spit out several times.

Several flying birds flapped their wings and flew towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not fluster. With an unchanging expression, his left arm moved and the blood colored moonblade stopped these ice birds in their tracks, causing them to explode in mid-air.

People were normally proficient in using moonblades on only one arm, but Fang Yuan had such a rich battle experience, and even his left arm could completely shoot out moonblades without any deviation.

Bai Ning Bing seeing that did not work, used the Icicle Gu.

Icicles flew and mixed in with the blue birds to form a barrage attack.

Fang Yuan’s long range attack was solely moonblade, thus he only chose to block the most dangerous ice birds. Against the icicles, he dodged some while tanking the others with his Sky Canopy Gu.

Bai Ning Bing finally had a bit of an upper hand and wanted to increase his advantage, but Fang Yuan suddenly laughed coldly and shrugged his right hand, causing the Chainsaw Golden Centipede to detach and burrow its way into the ground.

This hidden threat was too much.

Bai Ning Bing was dumbfounded at this, scolding loudly as he quickly took steps back!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Sorry for being a bit late guys, I was sick last night. Still sick now but better, kinda.. Oh hey, they changed the synopsis! Finally :3 Also expect the next chapter tonight at the same time!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"You forced my hand!" Bai Ning Bing gritted his teeth, forming an iceblade.

At the same time, he activated his Swirl Gu and Fierce Wind Gu.

The white iceblade storm appeared once again!

At first it was just a small gust, but very quickly, the size expanded and the icy winds roared as the blizzard spread. The floor was slowly covered in hard ice, preventing the Chainsaw Golden Centipede from emerging and attacking.

This iceblade storm is a unique move of Bai Ning Bing’s. Evidently it showed the battle talent of the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique.

This was formed by the Iceblade Gu, Swirl Gu and Fierce Wind Gu. When used together, it created something that could attack and defend. Without two or more defense Gu working together, one cannot resist it.

The fierce winds roared and the ice blades froze all in its path. The white storm assaulted like a huge beast awakening, opening its mouth and devouring Fang Yuan.

These three Gu together form a ferocious offensive technique that can freeze all life. Even with the Sky Canopy Gu’s defense, Fang Yuan would probably be unable to block it.

The storm approached, but Fang Yuan showed a look of disdain.

The thunderwings behind him instantly flapped, pulling a large distance away from this iceblade storm.

Times were different now. If this was the past, his movement speed would be lower than this storm, but now the storm could no longer catch up to him.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with brilliance as he turned his direction in mid-air, and flew towards the valley.

The iceblade storm chased him relentlessly.

"Don’t come here!"

"Fuck off!!"

Whether it was the Bai clan Gu Masters, or Gu Yue clan, both were scolding and shouting.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, continuing his charge.

The iceblade storm had an imposing aura as it continued to chase Fang Yuan while Bai Ning Bing’s laughter was heard from within.

"Don’t think of getting any further!" A Bai clan Gu Master blocked Fang Yuan’s path.

Fang Yuan’s hand hooked, and from the ground a thick and long golden line jumped out and landed on his right arm, like a large sword.

Buzz buzz buzz!!

The rampaging sound from the razors caused the Bai clan Gu Master’s eyelids to shiver.

Fang Yuan held the Chainsaw Golden Centipede in his right hand as blood light shone in his left - he was using the Blood Moon Gu but not shooting it. His body was covered in a white coloured armor, and thunderwings sparked behind his back. His black hair flew in the wind, and behind him there was a mountain-sized white storm.

His presence was overwhelming with his eyes emitting sharp killing intent, as if he was charging through the desert, a general with seven victories under his belt. Stomping all his enemies into minced meat, and chopping any opponents into broken bones.

"AHHH!" The Bai clan Gu Master felt an impossible pressure as veins popped on his forehead, and he suddenly shouted loudly, edging himself on.

But as he shouted, seeing Fang Yuan was rushing towards himself without pause, he suddenly shut up and ran away.

He was scared!

The fear in his heart eroded his fighting spirit.

Fang Yuan did not care about him, instead rushing over towards the thunder crown wolf who was on the verge of dying.

Winds blew as his charging was fearsome, and everywhere he went, Gu Masters avoided.

The thunder crown wolf forced itself to focus, turning its head towards Fang Yuan. Lightning gathered on its teeth; the myriad beast king’s pride refused to let itself die so easily. Even through death will it retaliate!

Fang Yuan was seemingly about to collide onto the thunder crown wolf like a meteor hitting earth, but at the last second he suddenly jerked his leg and rushed up into the sky, flying out of the valley at a steep angle.

He had just flown out of the valley when an intense explosion occurred behind him.

The thunder crown wolf’s cries fused with the sound of the ice blade storm.

A move like the iceblade storm could be said to be Bai Ning Bing’s masterpiece, but it had weaknesses too - it could not be easily displayed or stopped.

Of course, this storm knocking into the thunder crown wolf was also due to Bai Ning Bing’s personality.

The thunder crown wolf was heavily suppressed by the white storm.

It was already going to die, but now it could resist no further. Its armor was cut into pieces and blood and flesh flew all over the place, revealing its white skeleton, which was quickly minced into bone matter.

"Damn it!" Seeing this, the Gu Yue clan’s side all swore.

The Bai clan Gu Masters also showed a pained expression.

With Bai Ning Bing doing this, after the thunder crown wolf dies there would no longer be any valuable loot left on its body.

But Bai Ning Bing did not mind it. Instead he rotated even faster, enjoying the feeling of devastating a myriad beast king.

Gu worms turned into rays of light one after another, flying out of the thunder crown wolf’s body.

These wild Gu worms had all resided in the thunder crown wolf’s body, using each other to work together and survive. Now that the thunder crown wolf was dying, they were like crewmen on a ship, abandoning the sinking ship and escaping for their lives.

"Catch them!"

"Quick, stop these Gu!"

The two clans shouted at once.

The situation went into chaos again as clan elders attacked each other in attempt to hinder the other. The two clan leaders could not split themselves, thus finally, only two or three clan elders with movement-type Gu managed to fly out of the valley.

The wild Gu worms ran everywhere and Fang Yuan focused and observed, trying to discern them.

"What a pity my recon Gu is Earth Communication Ear Grass, it cannot increase my vision. There is definitely a healing-type Gu on this thunder crown wolf, but whether I can catch it or not, it’s up to fate!"

This was betting purely on luck, but Fang Yuan had no choice.

Recon-type Gu worm, there were all sorts of them, but right now he only had the Earth Communication Ear Grass.

His thunderwings spread and he rushed towards the closest Gu worm.

This Gu’s body was covered in a blue light, trying to fly far away.

Fang Yuan rushed up, opening his hand and grabbing it.

Whoosh!

Its body emitted an intense electric current and assaulted Fang Yuan.

Thunderwings are formed by lightning, it has speed but is not flexible. Fang Yuan groaned as he used the Sky Canopy Gu to endure this attack.

He could forcefully grab this Gu, but he wisely chose to give up.

The ability of this Gu was already exposed; it was able to use electric currents to attack enemies, so this was obviously an attack-type Gu, but Fang Yuan wanted a healing Gu instead.

Fang Yuan gave up on it and approached another Gu worm.

When he got close, he saw this Gu’s appearance, a body that seemed to be made of light blue glass, flying in the air with a semicircle shell that had turtle shell markings.

Thunder Shield Gu!

This was a defensive Gu, able to form a semicircle lightning shield.

Fang Yuan gave up once again, looking around and finding his third target.

But at this time, a white shadow came from the valley, holding an iceblade and shouting Fang Yuan’s name.

Fang Yuan sighed, knowing that lady luck was not on his side. He could only take the best alternative, reaching and grabbing towards the Thunder Shield Gu right next to him.

Thunder Shield Gu created a lightning shield, its eerie blue lightning sparking as it tried to resist Fang Yuan’s hand.

Fang Yuan sneered, releasing the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura. Suddenly the Thunder Shield Gu became tame like it died, dispersing its shield and falling towards the forest.

Fang Yuan waved and grabbed it in his hand, releasing his primeval essence and instantly refining it.

Stealth Scales Gu!

Ripples formed all over his body as he vanished on the spot.

"Fang Yuan!" Bai Ning Bing shouted, as his eyes shone with lightning.

This is the Rank three Lightning Eye Gu, using the power of lightning to break through stealth.

But it did not have see-through vision. Fang Yuan noticed this, and although he was stealthed, he could also use the forest to conceal himself. Bai Ning Bing’s gaze swept through the environment and angrily growled as he had no findings.

Fang Yuan found a hidden spot, instantly sitting down and activating the tusita flower, making it spit out primeval stones.

Although he was Rank three, his aperture only had 42% primeval essence storage, and though he had the upper hand during the previous battle, it could not be sustained. Right now, his aperture only had a thin layer of primeval essence left, being around 3%.

Gu Masters needed primeval essence to activate Gu worms.

Without primeval essence, Gu Masters’ battle strength would drop drastically. In fact in extreme situations, they were even worse than mortals.

The primeval stones continued to shrink, the natural essence injecting into Fang Yuan’s body. The primeval sea in his aperture started to rise gradually.

Back then, when he was Rank one or two and using the primeval stone to replenish his primeval essence, it was very noticeable. But now that he was Rank three, as the Gu Master’s primeval essence quality is greatly improved, more primeval stones are required and a longer time is needed to replenish it.

Sounds of Gu Masters battling continued to be heard. After eight or nine minutes, Fang Yuan replenished the primeval essence in his aperture back to the limit.

He came out of his hiding spot, discovering that five clan elders had died.

Among them, three were from Gu Yue clan, two from Bai clan.

Each clan elder was the clan’s asset. To think that so many were sacrificed this time.

Gu Yue Bo and the Bai clan leader’s battle was very intense. They were feeling heartache from their respective losses, thus getting more aggressive in their attacks.

Other than this, there were three fighting groups surrounding the wild Gu worms.

Ordinary Gu Masters do not have the Spring Autumn Cicada’s help to capture wild Gu worms, thus it was troublesome.

To catch the Gu worm, they cannot deal heavy blows. Instead, they need to gauge the strength they use.

Eight to nine Gu worms had flown out of the thunder crown wolf. It was not certain how many Gu worms they had captured, but three still remained right now.

The clan elders surrounded these three Gu worms, striking as they blocked the worms while facing obstruction from the other party. This caused the scene to be at a stalemate, neither sides able to gain anything.

"Water Cage Gu, trap it!" A Bai clan Gu Master shouted, spitting out a water ball.

The ball increased in size until it was over two metres, covering the Gu worm completely and trapping it inside.

Bam!

In the next moment, a golden moonblade flew towards the water ball cage and burst it open by force.

The Gu worm flew away, escaping with its life.

Seeing this Gu worm fly away, the Bai clan Gu Master cursed. To think that a Gu worm at his mercy got away just like that!

The Gu Yue clan Gu Masters were even more furious. These Gu worms were originally their battle rewards, but now that the Bai clan interfered, they could not gain anything.

"Bai clan scoundrels, shameless dogs, go to hell!"

"Gu Yue clan, you guys are finished. Our Bai clan will definitely rise up and stomp you all to the grounds!"

Both sides were furious, full of hatred and madness. They had battled till their eyes turned red, and only fighting remained in their minds.

Fang Yuan saw the Gu worm fly away, thus he had no choice but to look at the other two groups. There was still a Gu worm at each of their encirclement. There might be a healing Gu worm, but it was unlikely.

Fang Yuan knew that this world did not have things like ‘a wish coming true’, but even so he wanted to try.

Just when he was about to rush up and attack, he heard a wolf’s howl like a military horn, spreading out in rhythm, rising and falling in succession.

Soon after, tons of lightning wolves rushed down like tide water.

There was no lack to the sound of bold lightning wolves and frenzy lightning wolves, but the one that made everyone’s expression change was the mountain-like giant wolf.

Thunder crown wolf!

"There’s a fourth thunder crown wolf?!" The clan elders shouted as they could not keep their calm anymore.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

I miscounted, so here’s another one. Now that I’ve caught up, the next one will come on time... (I usually publish on GMT+8 12.05AM) Anyway, mega cliffhangers everywhere!!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Wolf packs were on the move, rushing in like the tide.

The situation turned for the worst, and the two clan leaders and their elders’ expressions changed.

Although both clans managed to resist the wolf tide, it was through a dangerous battle and were pyrrhic victories. Now that there is a new strong wolf tide, they had no way left to resist it.

At once, both clans subconsciously stopped battling.

"The reports said there were three thunder crown wolves right?" A clan elder screamed in panic.

"No, this thunder crown wolf has lots of injuries, and the size of the wolf pack isn’t very large either," Gu Yue Bo forced himself to remain calm and analysed.

"Don’t tell me, this is the thunder crown wolf that attacked the Xiong village?" A clan elder slapped his forehead as he shouted.

This was very possible, and most likely the truth.

The clan elders were feeling solemn as one said, "The fact that they appeared here, doesn’t that mean the Xiong clan already..."

"That goddamn Xiong village, how can they be so useless? Not even able to resist a wave of wolf tide!" someone scolded.

But some were optimistic, "You see, this thunder crown wolf’s forelegs are injured, the muscles have all shrivelled!"

They followed the voice and observed, regaining some lost morale.

It was true.

This thunder crown wolf’s hind legs were developed, but its forelegs were smaller, with shrunken muscles. This caused it to only use the back legs when running, jumping forward like a kangaroo.

"Wait, this doesn’t seem like a thunder crown wolf..." Bai clan leader suddenly thought of something, shivering.

"Lightning lycan!" Fang Yuan had an answer already.

Five tigers one lamassu, three hounds one molossus, ten wolves one lycan.

The lycan was also a type of wolf, but it was far smarter than a wolf by many times, and was usually the strategist of a wolf pack. The lightning lycan before them seemed like a thunder crown wolf in appearance, thus a recon Gu Master’s confusion is very common. But it was a true blue myriad beast king, and had intelligence no less than men!

This lightning lycan, although inferior to an ordinary thunder crown wolf in terms of physical strength, had human intelligence and was far more dangerous than a thunder crown wolf. With a huge army of lightning wolves to command, it was no wonder that the Xiong clan was exterminated by them.

"Go!" Fang Yuan spread his wings and flew into the sky.

These elders here had undergone long battles, and their battle strength was greatly eroded. They could not deal with the wolf packs, and more crucially, their misgivings towards each other made it hard for the two sides to work together.

Fang Yuan turned around and left; the myriad beast king was no joke. Even though there was still two wild Gu worms flying around, he couldn’t care less.

He had to leave immediately, for any later and he might not have the chance!

Knowing one’s limits and being able to let go and give up, this is the number one criteria to roam the world.

"Retreat, the wolf tide is huge, we cannot do anything to it."

"Get back to the village and plan our defenses!"

Even though the clan elders have not realized the lightning lycan’s identity, they all had retreating thoughts.

But at this time, the lightning lycan growled, opening its huge mouth.

Its wolf fangs were sharp as a dagger, and in between, a black lump appeared out of nowhere, forming into a black ball in an instant.

Pew!

The black ball shot out, drawing a curved black trajectory in the air and smashing on the ground.

"It missed?"

"This thunder crown wolf is finished, its aiming sucks!"

The clan elders shouted about, but Fang Yuan flew even faster.

Bam!

The black ball of mist exploded and under that intense impact, the black mist spread all over the place.

The speed was faster than the eye could see. In a short moment, it covered over a hundred li (one li = 500m) of radius."This is the Rank four Wolf Smoke Gu!" Fang Yuan’s heart sank; he had made the most logical response at the first moment. But the black wolf smoke spread too fast, completely enveloping him.

At once, he felt like he was standing in the middle of the night sky, seeing nothing but darkness. Everywhere was thick smoke, making breathing difficult, and was extremely uncomfortable.

But thankfully he had the Thunderwings Gu, so as long as he flew up, he could get out of the wolf smoke’s range.

Crack!

In the next moment, a lightning bolt struck, splitting the thick black smoke apart like a thunder snake or a raging dragon, travelling over a hundred li and assaulting Fang Yuan head on.

The lightning lycan attacked.

The lightning was so fast a person could barely react to it.

But at this crucial moment, Fang Yuan’s battle instinct surpassed the speed of his thoughts, reacting in advance.

Thunder Shield Gu!

Sky Canopy Gu!

A round lightning shield appeared in front of Fang Yuan, and on his body a white armor appeared as well.

The raging lightning shone at an eye-piercing brightness like a heavenly dragon roaring, ramming onto the lightning shield.

The shield lasted less than a second before it broke under the intense force of the lightning.

The lightning landed on Fang Yuan. At that moment, even though he already shut his eyes, he still felt the light piercing through his pupils.

A intense force assaulted him, causing him to fall.

He was about to faint as the electric currents moved, paralyzing his muscles, almost causing him to forget to breathe!

Plop, he landed on the ground.

He finally only managed to regain consciousness after intense pain surged through him like waves.

He endured the intense pain and numbness, and tried to get up.

The Thunder Shield Gu was already dead, while the Thunderwings Gu was hit and barely held onto life; it was impossible to use anymore. The Sky Canopy Gu was injured heavily too, looking rather dispirited. After all, it was hit by such a strong electric current.

The lightning lycan’s attack emitted a Rank four Gu worm’s full power.

The more a Gu worm advances, the bigger the difference between realms.

For the attack of a Rank four Gu worm, at least two Rank three Gu would be needed to defend against it. However, the Lightning Shield Gu died because the previous battle had already caused it to sustain much injuries.

"To think that this lightning lycan thought so highly of me..." Fang Yuan laughed bitterly, observing the surroundings.

His surroundings were dark, full of thick smoke; Fang Yuan was unable to tell directions.

"Be careful, that thunder crown wolf became smaller, it is now as small as a normal lightning wolf and is hiding among the pack," A clan elder shouted at this time from the smoke.

Fang Yuan heard it and his iris shrunk.

This lightning lycan was too crafty, and very sinister. It probably wanted to eliminate all these Gu Masters, and when it attacked Fang Yuan, it showed that it did not want to let a single one of them off.

The surroundings quickly shone with countless wolf eyes.

The sounds of their growls and the sound of the wind from wolf packs running about were all heard by Fang Yuan.

Under such a dark environment, the Gu Masters’ vision is greatly obstructed. But the wolf packs were unaffected, because they had given up on smell and gained excellent vision.

"I have to get out of here quickly. Who knows if I will encounter that lightning lycan? Even if I do not meet it now, just being surrounded by the wolf packs when I only have 40% primeval essence, it is insufficient to sustain my expenditure!"

Fang Yuan quickly considered in his heart, then he activated the Earth Communication Ear Grass.

Over ten roots grew out from his ear and extended outside.

Many voices were heard. There were wolf cries, battle noises, clan elders’ frantic growling and lightning wolves’ sad cries when dying.

Too confusing!

The Earth Communication Ear Grass’ range was huge, but it could not discern small details.

Fang Yuan frowned, only listening to a direction with less noises.

But quickly he encountered a pack of over one hundred wolves.

Lightning wolves ran from the black smoke, each ferocious as ever.

Fang Yuan summoned the Chainsaw Golden Centipede and activated the Sky Canopy Gu.

The razors rotated violently and the centipede was like a large sword, cutting through the black smoke and landing on the wolf’s bodies, causing a rain of blood and bones.

Fang Yuan attacked like a boat trying to row uphill, eliminating his obstacles.

Numerous lightning wolves died under the Chainsaw Golden Centipede. But then the second, third... they continued to assault him.

"This lightning lycan is too sinister and diabolic, actually making the lightning wolves surround us from the back." Fang Yuan had been moving in one direction, and after rushing for a while, he realized the truth at once after he kept encountering lightning wolves.

He battled as he retreated. After a while, he was bathed in blood.

The pressure was too large, the surroundings were covered in darkness; he was unable to see anything. Wolf packs rushed in from all directions, and it was difficult for him to deal with it alone.

"Gu Yue Bo, what do you say?" At this time, the Bai clan leader said from within the dark smoke.

"Alright, let’s work together and get out of this first!" Gu Yue Bo shouted, quickly replying.

This was the forced circumstance of the situation — only through cooperation can they have a chance of survival.

Otherwise, by fighting alone, they would soon expend all their primeval essence on the lightning wolves and be turned into food. That would surely be a bad ending.

Howl!

"Fuck!"

In the next moment, with a wolf’s cry, an intense explosion was heard and the two clan leaders shouted, no longer able to organise the clan elders.

Evidently, the lightning lycan came out and did a sneak attack.

It had a man’s intelligence after all. Once it attacked, it was able to interfere with the two clan leader’s plan, and ruined the flow of the clan elders’ resistance.

Without the two clan leaders to suppress the scene, how can the clan elders work sincerely together?

This was a huge question.

"I’m unable to go on. My primeval essence expenditure is too high, I need to borrow strength from others!" After killing for a while, Fang Yuan felt exhaustion.

He had the strength of two boars, but now he felt extremely sore all over.

His primeval essence was no longer enough. He had injuries all over him, but he was forced to stop using the Sky Canopy Gu.

The Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s body was dim, its razors already in bad shape. In a short period of time, it had killed up to a thousand wolves, and within that number, there were bold lightning wolves as well.

A few of them were harder than steel, because they had a defensive Gu.

The Chainsaw Golden Centipede was not invulnerable, and without razors, its attack strength would be greatly reduced, quickly becoming useless.

Fang Yuan did not prolong any battles; he quickly moved as he fought.

He relied on the Earth Communication Ear Grass to analyze the situation. Once he heard a frenzy lightning wolf’s footsteps, he would change directions and try to avoid them.

The frenzy lightning wolf was a thousand beast king, he could not fight it alone. Once he was pulled into battle, he would fall into encirclement, and that would be a dead end.

"I’m not satisfied!" From the thick smoke, a clan elder cried as his voice came to an end.

From the black smoke, the wolf packs attacked, and many clan elders died by the wolf’s mouths, growling in helplessness and indignance.

"I can’t hold on much longer either!" Fang Yuan felt the aura of death, but he was still calm; the more dangerous it is, the calmer his mind.

His heart did not waver at all. In his previous life, he had been in worse situations.

The situation right now was still not that bad. With the two clan leaders fighting the lightning lycan, Fang Yuan still had a chance.

"Oh? Fighting sounds ahead." Fang Yuan heard the noise and changed his direction. He was at his limits, so no matter if it was the Gu Yue clan or the Bai clan Gu Masters, they were useful to him either way.

"Kill! Kill! Kill!" Far away, he heard this Gu Master screaming, battling relentlessly.

Fang Yuan sprinted over, and suddenly came to a stop.

Bai Ning Bing!

Notes: 狡电狈 - Lightning Lycan, well to be honest it directly translates to ‘Cunning electric 狈’ . Since there’s no english word for 狈, Lycan is used. 狈 is actually a legendary wolf in China that may or may not exist; it’s said to have two very short paws in front so it rides on a normal wolf’s back instead. (Or something like that...)

彪 - Legendary/mythical tiger that does not have an equivalent English word. So I just subbed it with lamassu.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Sorry for the delay again, I finally made it!! Hahaha... I’m going to die.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bai Ning Bing’s body was laden with injuries. He was breathing raggedly and looked like a mess.

When Fang Yuan got there, both were stunned.

Fate was indeed, a mysterious thing. Just not long ago, they were still mortal enemies, wanting to kill each other. But in this moment, they had to work together for the chance to survive.

Working together with Bai Ning Bing?

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone like the abyss, evaluating, "Although Bai Ning Bing is batshit crazy, along with the fact that he also recognised his own fate, that does not mean he gave up on living."

A will to live was a person’s natural instinct, the most basic requirement of all.

The truth is, because of Bai Ning Bing’s intense will to live and because he was facing an unavoidable path of destruction, he developed such a personality.

In this world, there are no eternal enemies. Working together with Bai Ning Bing was the best solution. But how can he ask it in a way that can convince him?

"Hehehe, Fang Yuan, to think it’s actually you!" Bai Ning Bing spoke first, laughing loudly, his tone becoming aggressive, "Then die together with me. With you dying alongside me, it shall be an interesting end to my life."

"Interesting?" Fang Yuan had a thought. Smiling lightly, he approached Bai Ning Bing.

The surrounding lightning wolves attacked, but Fang Yuan shrugged his hand, the chainsaw centipede swinging and killing three lightning wolves on the spot, sending them flying.

Up till now, the Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s two rows of razors were already greatly damaged. Its cutting strength was greatly diminished. It could only be used as a blunt object.

"Under the pressure of these wolves, let’s have an intense life and death battle, isn’t that more fun?" Fang Yuan got closer to Bai Ning Bing, his mouth curling into a cruel smile.

Bai Ning Bing’s eyelids trembled, he did not expect Fang Yuan to be a greater maniac than him.

But this was in tandem with his wish. If Fang Yuan’s attitude had gone softer, and in order to survive Fang Yuan wanted to work together and escape, he would instead look down on Fang Yuan, even feeling humiliated and wanting to kill Fang Yuan himself.

In this world, some people are like this. If you be kind to them, they will feel that you are easy to bully, and look down on you. By having a strong attitude towards them, you can gain respect instead.

"You really want to die? Then I’ll grant your wish!" Bai Ning Bing squinted his eyes, emitting a dangerous aura.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, his steps slow as he spoke in a old and experienced tone, "Humans only live for a hundred years, it is as unreal as a dream that ends in an instant. What is the point of a person living in this world? No more than just being on a journey, and witnessing interesting things. Although I do not want to die, I do not fear death. I am already on my right path, I have no regrets even if I die."

This was Fang Yuan’s true feelings.

Since the start of time itself, who could live forever?

Even if it was a Rank nine Gu Master. Or even Ren Zu himself who could only live longer, but not forever. They eventually face destruction.

So be it if one dies, what’s the big deal? Even if in the next moment, Fang Yuan dies in this wolf tide, he would have no regrets.

Because he had already worked hard for his goals. He had given it his all, and lived all according to his will!

Being able to look beyond life and death. Only then can one live unrestrained, only then can life have true freedom.

Bai Ning Bing heard this, and his entire body shuddered.

He kept saying he was not afraid to die, but he was still never free and at ease. Because he could not see beyond death, and was unable to let go of this life.

When a person fears, he becomes a slave.

Bai Ning Bing himself was just a slave to life and death.

However, this was not his fault, since he was still way too young. Many things needed to be experienced by themselves; only then can one gain enlightenment.

But now, Fang Yuan’s words gave him a new path, to go beyond the truth that he is struggling with.

"Witnessing interesting things... already on your path... no regrets even if you die?" Bai Ning Bing muttered, then suddenly asked, "Path, what’s a path?"

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, getting closer, "Everyone has their own paths, I don’t have to tell you mine, and how would I know yours?"

In this world, many people do not have a path through their entire lifetime, while some walked on their path constantly struggling, trying to find the sanctuary within the darkness.

Bai Ning Bing’s blue eyes suddenly shone with a blinding light.

"Path... that’s right, I must find my path!"

In this moment, the excitement in his heart was impossible to be understood by others.

He was like a man, bitterly searching for a girl but to no avail, yet one day he finds the correct method. Or like a treasure hunter, blocked at the last puzzle for a long time, but one day he finds the method to solve the puzzle. Or like a difficult question, thinking for years without an answer, but suddenly finding the method to solve it.

Bai Ning Bing had no path and couldn’t find the meaning of his life, thus he felt lost.

Fang Yuan cannot solve his feeling of being lost, but from the sidelines he can give him hope. Giving him a consolation to face death — as long as you are on your path, even if you die there are no regrets. Thus, death is no longer so scary.

"I feel that I am about to find my own path!" Bai Ning Bing clenched his fists, his expression becoming extremely excited.

He looked towards Fang Yuan, saying meaningfully, "I finally understand our difference. You are on your own path, but I am still trying to find mine."

"Hehehe!" He suddenly laughed, his expression turning crazy, "Fang Yuan, if you want to fight, I’m all for it. But not now! Let’s work together. I have the

Lightning Eye Gu, but my vision is obstructed, only able to see thirty steps ahead. Once we escape from here, let’s have a battle another day. Being able to work together with my mortal enemy, don’t you find that more interesting, more fun?"

"Oh, how can I believe you?"

"I’m not asking for you to believe me. You can choose to trust me, or not. You can entrust your back to me, or you can strike at any time, and sneak an attack on me. Hehe, it all depends on your mood!" Bai Ning Bing shrugged as he smiled, showing an inborn nonchalance.

The thick smoke was all over, and their surroundings were lit with wolf cries.

Fang Yuan’s eyes narrowed as he considered Bai Ning Bing’s suggestion.

Convincing a person is very difficult, yet very simple. The important thing is accurately understanding their thoughts.

"Alright." Fang Yuan stretched out his hand and caressed the Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s armor, raising his head, "But be on guard for my sneak attack anytime!"

"Hehehe." Bai Ning Bing’s mouth curled, smiling very deviously. A wave of air blew as the black smoke dispersed, and the broken arm’s sleeve swayed in the wind.

In the thick smoke, to decide the direction, it was difficult. The more narrow their vision, the more easy it is to get lost.

Bai Ning Bing had the Lightning Eye Gu and could see up to fifty steps ahead. But now, it was restricted by the thick smoke, so he could see less than thirty steps ahead. However, this was already much better than Fang Yuan’s normal vision.

While Bai Ning Bing had the Lightning Eye Gu, he could not see the entire topography, and had no clear understanding of the situation.

He could only see what was ahead of him, and at times he even ran into a wolf pack and got surrounded by them.

Fang Yuan on the other hand, had the Earth Communication Ear Grass.

The smoke reduced vision, but could not block sound from being transmitted.

The surroundings were noisy, and the Earth Communication Ear Grass could hear up to two hundred steps away, but Fang Yuan could only move according to the noise. His vision was too narrow, only able to see a tree or a rock right in front of him. Without anything to compare to, he could not discern his direction.

Cooperation!

Bai Ning Bing’s Lightning Eye Gu, together with Fang Yuan’s Earth Communication Ear Grass.

The two Gu together, complementing each other, caused the situation to be easier.

"This is the southern side. Going this direction, we’ll get to the Gu Yue village." Bai Ning Bing’s eyes glowed with lightning as he said.

"No, there’s too many wolf packs there, we have to take a roundabout route."

Fang Yuan’s right ears had roots flying around.

"Hehe... then we’ll go around the southeast direction, how about that?" Bai Ning Bing licked his lips.

Fang Yuan squatted down, extending the roots into the soil and listening attentively.

During that period, the lightning wolves that rushed up were all killed by Bai Ning Bing.

Fang Yuan listened for a while, before standing up, "There’s an opening in the southeast direction, but we have to hurry, the opening is going to be filled!"

"Let’s charge then." Bai Ning Bing said, but did not move immediately.

He still had some guard against Fang Yuan. He did not dare to attack ahead and reveal his back to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly; he was also full of qualms towards Bai Ning Bing.

Eventually, the two killed their way through shoulder to shoulder, with a distance of five steps between them.

The lightning wolves howled, attempting to kill them.

But relying on the Lightning Eye Gu and Earth Communication Ear Grass, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing could avoid strong enemies and continue to roam, finding an opportunity to break through.

The advantage of having information was unveiled here.

Bai Ning Bing and Fang Yuan, if alone, they would be trapped by numerous wolves. But now that they worked together, they could control the initiative and started to have an easy time.

After charging for a while, the path ahead of them was suddenly clear, and the bright sunlight caused both of them to squint.

"We’re out!" Bai Ning Bing laughed loudly.

Fang Yuan looked back, only to see a thick black veil behind him, as if a black pot had covered the entire mountain.

The intense smoke continue to emit sounds of explosions and screams. Evidently the two clan leaders were still fighting the lightning lycan.

"To think that working with you is actually quite pleasant." Bai Ning Bing turned his body, smiling lightly.

"I feel the same way too," Fang Yuan also smiled lightly.

But in the very next moment, both of their eyes shone sharply.

Iceblade Gu!

Chainsaw Golden Centipede!

The long iceblade cut through the air with a cold light.

The thick golden centipede attacked head on and carried the howling of the wind.

Bam.

Both sides collided. The iceblade cut a wound on the golden centipede’s body, but broke right after.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing both took a step back, both of their eyes emitting intense killing intent.

Their temporary cooperation could not change their enemy status.

Fang Yuan’s black hair danced in the wind, while Bai Ning Bing’s white shirt swayed; both had too much in common. Precisely why they became natural enemies.

Black iris against blue orbs, almost creating sparks in the air.

Both of their killing intent slowly dispersed.

"Hmph, this is but a dying man. Even without me interfering, heaven will take his life. What’s most important now isn’t Bai Ning Bing but the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus! Once the lightning lycan attacks Gu Yue village, its most likely game over. I have to strike before that, while I have the chance..." Fang Yuan analyzed, his eyes narrowing.

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes became even brighter, muttering, "Path... no regrets... that’s right, even Ren Zu has to die. Humans live and die. So as long as I can live an interesting life, what harm is there even if I die?"

Thinking so, his eyes glowed with an intense brilliance.

"Hahaha. I’ve finally found my path, and that is to witness this world’s brilliance! Fang Yuan, we will battle another day. I hope that by then, your death can bring some light into my life!"

Saying so, he leapt backwards continuously. After pulling apart some distance, he turned around, leaving.

Although he was in a mess, his body full of injuries and his face covered in soot, with only one arm left, but his back was straight like a sword; he was no longer lost.

He had found his path.

In other words, he had truly become himself!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Still alive and holding on! Also a non-cliffhanging chapter, so gather your spirits for this short break. Next chapter, we shall ride on again! And thank you so much for all the Patreon supporters so far! :D

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan watched Bai Ning Bing’s figure walk until he was far away.

"Witness this world’s brilliance...." His two black pupils flashed with an imposing light. The Bai Ning Bing who was no longer bewildered was more dangerous than before.

Life and death no longer bothered him, and the closer he was to death, the more he would display the incomparable grace of the Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique.

"However, wanting to fight me later, heh." Fang Yuan suddenly chuckled, "You are bound to be disappointed..."

The instant he came out of that thick smoke, Fang Yuan had decided to leave Qing Mao Mountain.

It would be interesting to fight with Bai Ning Bing, but it was of no benefits to him.

Bai Ning Bing had set the definition of brilliance on Fang Yuan, and that was because he was young and his view of the world was limited to Qing Mao Mountain.

Fang Yuan, however, was different.

In his grand plan since his rebirth, Qing Mao Mountain was only a starting point.

As long as the heart possessed great ambitions, one was bound to be broad minded, not being constrained by small details with others.

"It’s time to leave, the lightning lycan is more cunning and more difficult to handle than the thunder crown wolf. Just with Bai clan or Gu Yue clan’s current strength, it will be difficult to withstand its attacks. Unless a Rank five expert appears and turns the tide, or maybe if the two clans ally."

Bai Clan and Gu Yue Clan had deep grudges against each other; they would ally if the situation came to that point, but the alliance wouldn’t be sincere.

Fang Yuan wasn’t optimistic about this prospect.

"Qing Mao Mountain’s state will be determined by this battle. If the two clan leaders are both killed by the lightning lycan, Qing Mao Mountain will become the lightning wolves’ territory. If one clan leader survives, then with the alliance, the other clan will only become cannon fodder. If the lightning lycan is killed, the two clans will definitely have to rehabilitate due to the severe casualties. The clan will tidy up its internal affairs and I will be investigated."

Fang Yuan could clearly see the changes that could occur through this.

This is the world of Gu, and in here an individual’s strength can rule over the group. Thus, the higher the cultivation of a Gu Master, the more power he has to turn the tide.

No matter the Bai Clan or Gu Yue Clan or the lightning wolf packs, as long as another Rank four expert appears among any of them, the outcome would be a foregone conclusion.

However, no matter the situation, they were all disadvantageous to Fang Yuan.

"It is time to leave. Although I still lack the ideal healing Gu, how can one have everything he wishes for? After returning to the village, I will take the Heavenly Essence Lotus and then take out a healing Gu from the clan storage before leaving immediately!"

Fang Yuan gave one last look behind him; the sound of intense explosions were still coming from the black smoke.

He turned around and left, rushing towards the Gu Yue village.

With his status as an elder, he could forcefully open the clan storage and take out primeval stones as well as Gu worms.

There was unrest all around, people were frightened; it was the best time to take advantage of the situation.

If this chance was let go, no matter what the battle outcome is, the general situation would be set, making it difficult to take advantage.

Thunderwings Gu couldn’t be used for the moment, so Fang Yuan could only run quickly through the forest.

The wolf tide had ravaged everything in its path, making the once dangerous pathways peaceful and safe.

Soon, Fang Yuan was able to see the Gu Yue village in the horizon.

"Hmm? Who are you!" Fang Yuan swiftly stopped; two strangers had appeared in front of him.

These two were both wearing Gu Master’s clothings. One was an elderly man. He was tall and his back was ramrod straight, giving a sense of being as steady as a mountain and as profound as a deep pool. The most eye-catching part was the copper mask that he was wearing on his face.

The mask was of a plain design and gave an antique feeling. There were three openings on it, revealing the wearer’s eyes and mouth.

His eyes showed the vicissitudes of life and revealed a grand and righteous aura. His lips were pursed up, the contour in between as sharp as a blade, hinting at this man’s firm willpower.

The mask didn’t cover his ears, exposing his greying temple hairs and revealing that this man should be of an older age.

The one next to the man was a youth with eyebrows that were as upright as a sword, and eyes that were bright and shining, periodically sending out sharp glances that looked like an eagle or a tiger’s.

Looking at this appearance, the youth’s age should be similar to Fang Yuan. However, this person’s belt had a silver plate on it, carved with the character ‘three’.

So young and already a Rank three Gu Master, this showed amazing talent in cultivation!

This was a young genius!

However, Fang Yuan’s gaze only paused a moment on this youth, before turning towards the senior.

This youth had a slight dark complexion with similarly pursing lips, the entire body releasing a sharp and professional aura, definitely not someone to be underestimated.

But the slightly bulging chest area along with the structure of the limbs and throat allowed Fang Yuan to instantly see through her identity as a girl.

Fang Yuan would never look down on women, but compared to this heroic girl, the identity of the middle-aged man beside her would shock anyone.

"Tie Xue Leng....." Fang Yuan’s mind jolted, he inwardly recalled the identity of this middle-aged man.

The man was wearing a copper mask, and the square amethyst plate on his belt was carved with the character –‘five’.

He was the Rank five Gu Master, enforcer of the law, a great detective, the number one investigator of the Southern Border: Divine Investigator Tie Xue Leng!

He was impartial and merciless in upholding justice. Many demonic path cultivators had been arrested by him and many vile characters beheaded. He was the model example of the righteous path, and had made a very high reputation for himself by solving countless cases as he travelled throughout the Southern Border.

"Little brother, please wait." Tie Xue Leng cupped his hands to Fang Yuan.

He had already made a name for himself for a long time and was also a Rank five Gu Master, but his attitude was polite and amiable.

"Seeing little brother’s state of injuries and hurried appearance, did your esteemed clan leader and elders encounter trouble?" He asked.

Fang Yuan automatically changed his expression to that of anxiety and astonishment, while mixed within them were doubts and fear. "Who are you guys? How do you know this? Right, we were chasing after a thunder crown wolf but we ran into trouble by encountering a lightning lycan. I am hurrying back to request reinforcements."

"I am Tie Xue Leng, I am an ally, not your enemy. I just came from Gu Yue village. Little brother, you don’t need to return for reinforcements, the beast tide concerns all humans and we need to join hands to face it. This Tie shall contribute all he can." Tie Xue Leng immediately took this task upon himself.

......

"Damn it, to think that I, Gu Yue Bo, will die here today!"

"Hmph, even if we die, we can’t let this lightning lycan get off so easily."

Gu Yue clan leader and Bai clan leader were full of injuries and had almost exhausted their primeval essence. Right now, they could sense the grim aura of death.

The thick smoke had already dispersed. All the elders had died, and only these two clan leaders were left.

The lightning lycan also didn’t fare well. Its body had some deep wounds from which one could see its bones. It barred its teeth and retreated to the back of the lightning wolf packs, its eyes flashing with a sly look as it retreated from fighting in the frontlines.

"Come, you coward!" The Bai clan leader furiously roared.

However, the lightning lycan kept on retreating backwards and then let out a howl, commanding the ordinary lightning wolves to charge towards these two Rank four Gu Masters.

"Cunning bastard..." Gu Yue Bo and Bai clan leader looked at each other, and sighed.

They had prepared to make a strong counterattack before dying, but the lightning lycan had a wisdom that didn’t lose out to humans and wasn’t fooled.

"My life is over...."

"Damn this, we are going to die in these ordinary lightning wolves’ mouths!"

Just when these two clan leaders were becoming extremely distraught, a voice suddenly arrived from a distance, "Two leaders, hang in there for a moment!"

The voice echoed through the mountain forests. The two clan leaders’ bodies jolted and they immediately turned to look, noticing a tall figure rushing towards them.

The figure repeatedly flashed, freely moving through the wolf packs. After a few moments, the figure stood beside the two clan leaders.

"You are?" The two clan leaders asked at the same time.

"My name is Tie Xue Leng."

Gasp...

The Bai clan leader drew in a long breath in shock. He was surprised, joyous and also puzzled; why was Tie Xue Leng here?

Gu Yue Bo, on the other hand, was aware of the reason as he joyfully said, "So it is Divine Investigator Tie!"

Just as he said this, the wolf packs charged in.

"A bunch of foul creatures!" Tie Xue Leng’s tongue seemed to burst with thunder, and with a low shout he willed a Gu in his aperture.

BOOM!

A formless aura suddenly erupted, radiating and engulfing everything.

This aura was like a mountain, indomitable and unshakeable. It was like the heaven itself as it overlooked the world and saw through everything.

Righteous Gu!

Only a Gu Master who had a righteous heart could use it.

The righteous aura could weaken vile creatures; within its range, the lower the willpower of his enemies, the more the weakening effect.

Tie Xue Leng had once used this Gu to make a Rank four Gu Master lose his fighting strength and surrender completely. This was the supreme art of subduing enemy without fighting.

Howl howl...

The lightning wolves’ momentum stopped. Their limbs were trembling under the pressure of this aura, and they didn’t dare to move forward.

Houuu!

The lightning lycan gave out a battle cry from the back, trying to command these lightning wolf packs.

"Such nerve!" Tie Xue Leng glared and suddenly stretched out his right hand, making a grabbing motion towards the lightning lycan.

Rumble....

Ripples spread in the sky, and an enormous black iron hand tore the sky apart and grabbed towards the lightning lycan.

Rank five Ironfist Grappling Gu!

The lightning lycan was cunning, but it lacked bravery. In addition to that, its body was riddled with wounds so it didn’t dare to resist this move head-on, and instead quickly dodged.

However, this black iron hand had firmly locked onto the lightning lycan, and it kept on chasing.

The lightning lycan wasn’t able to escape from it. Its vicious personality was stimulated; it gave a loud roar and fiercely collided against the black iron hand.

The enormous hand shattered but the lightning lycan received serious injuries. Almost all its bones were on the verge of shattering.

It let out miserable whimpers but didn’t dare to fight Tie Xue Leng again. Finally, it resentfully looked at Tie Xue Leng and the two clan leaders, before it tucked its tails and ran away.

"It is about to escape!"

"Quick, stop it!!"

The two clan leaders shouted, but Tie Xue Leng stood on the spot and didn’t move.

"Divine Investigator, please finish it," Gu Yue Bo cupped his hands and implored.

Tie Xue Leng slightly shook his head.

At this time, Fang Yuan and the young girl finally arrived. They had seen how the lightning lycan had been forced away by the iron hand.

"Dad! Why did you do that? You are injured!" The young girl quickly approached Tie Xue Leng and stamped her feet in anger; her reproaching tone was full of concern.

"Ruo Nan, this lightning lycan is very cunning. Chasing it away by force is the best way to deal with it." Tie Xue Leng spoke, when suddenly his body slightly trembled.

Puff! He spurted out blood from his mouth.

There was a strange, gloomy greenish color in his blood, and as the blood fell on the ground, it immediately corroded a patch of green grass, letting out an unpleasant smoke.

Clearly, he had suffered serious injuries.

"Dad, are you okay?!" The young girl, Tie Ruo Nan quickly lifted her hands and tried healing Tie Xue Leng.

"No need to make a fuss about it, you know of my injuries, I will feel a lot better after letting out some blood," Tie Xue Leng laughed and waved his hands, refusing the treatment.

Seeing this scene, the two clan leaders who had been feeling resentment just before, immediately felt embarrassed.

"Divine Investigator is selfless, you helped us even though you are suffering from serious injuries. We will deeply remember this favor."

"I have heard of Tie Xue Leng’s great name, and today I can see that it is fully justified and worthy of admiration! We thank Divine Investigator for saving us!"

The two clan leaders cupped their hands one after another and expressed their thanks.

"Lord Divine Investigator, please honor my Bai village with your presence. This gratitude of saving my life, I will do my best to repay!" The Bai clan leader said.

How could Gu Yue Bo just watch as the Bai village tried to bring Tie Xue Leng away.

He knew why Tie Xue Leng was here, and gave a proud smile, "I know that Lord Divine Investigator is here due to Jia Fu’s request and has come to investigate that murder case. Our Gu Yue clan will do our best to cooperate!"

Bai clan leader’s expression changed when he heard this.

Tie Xue Leng said, "It is so. However, the one in charge of this investigation won’t be me, but my daughter Tie Ruo Nan."

"Eh?" Immediately, everyone present turned to look at the young girl.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Want spoilers? Want to relieve yourself of boredom or whatever? Join Gu Discord at https://discord.gg/nWU3qMK today! | Thank you for the well wishes. As long as I’m not too sick, I’ll churn chapters out for you all, don’t worry T w T

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"What, father, you want me to solve the case?" The girl pointed to herself, her face in utter shock.

"Why, are you unwilling?" Tie Xue Leng smiled gently.

"No, no, of course I’m willing!" Tie Ruo Nan finally reacted, jumping in joy.

Tie Xue Leng nodded, sighing in a complex tone, "You aspire to walk the same path as me. These few years where you were by my side, you have been greatly influenced by me and learnt much. An eagle can only learn to fly by itself, only then can it truly grow up. Your father is old already, my injuries cannot be cured. I cannot continue being with you as you live your life, and as the newer generations replace the old, what happens next is up to you."

"Father... don’t give up yet, isn’t there still hope for treatment?" The young girl’s voice trembled as she choked back tears.

"You and I both know that the chances are infinitely slim. People have to learn to face facts, Ruo Nan," Tie Xue Leng laughed, then turned towards Gu Yue Bo, "Don’t worry Gu Yue clan leader, this daughter of mine has learnt at least 80% of my abilities. With my guidance along the way, she will not let your clan suffer any injustice."

"Of course, of course." Gu Yue Bo quickly cupped his fist, "Young heroines are on par with males; such an elegant disposition and the child of a hero, there is no reason for me to worry. Please come to the village and let us feast upon your arrival."

......

The dishes filled the entire table, with the fragrance overwhelming the surroundings. Clear wine was poured out from the wine jar in a straight line into Tie Xue Leng’s cup.

The wolf tide was just over, and Gu Yue village was in its toughest period. Large amounts of resources had been expended, causing a food shortage and lack of commodities. Many mortals would starve to death.

But even so, to welcome Tie Xue Leng, Gu Yue clan still assembled this banquet.

As the clan leader, Gu Yue Bo sat at the clan head’s seat, while Tie Xue Leng and Tie Ruo Nan were beside him.

Other than that, Gu Yue Chi Zhong, Gu Yue Ge Yan, Gu Yue Mo Chen, Gu Yue Yao Ji, as well as Fang Yuan and the others, all being elders, were present.

Before the wolf tide, Gu Yue clan had over a dozen clan elders. But now, only one table remained, and there were less than ten elders.

Moreover, the clan elders present were all injured to varying degrees.

Especially in the case of Gu Yue Mo Chen — two weeks ago when he resisted the wolf tide, he was heavily injured and had been hiding in his private room to recuperate. He was resting in bed, but when he heard about the arrival of Tie Xue Leng, he forced his body up and attended this banquet.

But this also let him escape the crisis, while his old rival Gu Yue Chi Lian had followed the clan leader in assaulting the thunder crown wolf and was killed by the lightning lycan.

"If not for Brother Tie’s help today, I might’ve become the lightning lycan’s lunch already. For saving my life, I toast Brother Tie this cup!" Gu Yue Bo stood up, holding the cup with both hands and bending his back, sincerely offering his gratitude.

"I was only doing what I could." Tie Xue Leng raised his cup, drinking the wine in one go.

He had a vigilant and strict lifestyle, refusing to gamble or find prostitutes, standing by his morals and never went greedy on drinking. He had thus, never been drunk.

After drinking this cup, Gu Yue Bo looked at the people in the banquet, his eyes turning red, sighing and sitting down.

Tie Xue Leng had seen such situations many times, and he consoled, "Gu Yue clan leader, my condolences. As long as your clansmen still exist, the village will definitely thrive again one day. That lightning lycan was heavily injured as well, and the lightning wolves have greatly been damaged, they will not attack for the next few years. This wolf tide has been safely endured."

The wolf tide’s harshest period is indeed over. For the next few months, although lightning wolves will still appear, their quantity will continue to decrease, and no large groups will be formed. The wolf packs no longer have the ability to directly charge at the village.

The lightning lycan will return to the wolf den and recuperate there, while slowly organising the remaining wolves. Many wolves will be recalled, and many lightning wolves would die, causing the wolf pack’s need for food to decrease drastically.

The wolf packs would become self-sufficient, and in the next few years, they would gradually get stronger, during which new hundred beast kings - bold lightning wolves, thousand beast kings - frenzy lightning wolves, and myriad beast kings - thunder crown wolves would appear.

At its peak, it begins to weaken, and at its weakest, it begins to prosper.

Regardless of humans or wolves, they follow such a law.

But although Tie Xue Leng’s words were right, humans are not grass or trees, they have feelings. The Gu Yue clan leader understood this fact much better than Tie Xue Leng, but the misery and pain in his heart was unavoidable.

The sacrifice was too big......

Just the higher-up clan elders were already gone by at least half. As for the Rank two and Rank one Gu Masters, they had an even larger amount of casualties. The entire Gu Yue village’s strength had fallen to rock bottom, and could no longer endure any more disasters.

"Why is it that you guys do not counter attack, and go wreck their den?" On one side, Tie Ruo Nan could not understand and asked in confusion.

"That is because inside the wolf den, there are over dozens of groups of thunder gas worms, amounting to over a million of them in total. There are also large numbers of wild Gu mixed in. It is hard to cause any damage to them, unless all three clans work together," Gu Yue Yao Ji explained.

Saying so, she suddenly snorted, staring at Fang Yuan, "But this possibility is too small. Even within our clan, there are clan elders shrinking in fear, and during the wolf tide’s attack, god knows where they were hiding!"

Saying so, all the other clan elders turned their vision towards Fang Yuan.

Previously, Fang Yuan was inside the rock crack secret cave exploring the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance, causing him to miss the huge battle in resisting the wolf tide. In everyone’s eyes, this was being crafty and evasive, as well as being timid and fearing death.

Thus, the clan elders’ expression towards Fang Yuan were all full of unhappiness, disdain, and some hidden anger.

Even Gu Yue Bo’s expression was looking ugly.

As the clan leader, he was most revolted by people like Fang Yuan, doing things according to their own will, mysterious and having their own little schemes. He could not feel safe with such a person around.

The atmosphere at the banquet immediately transformed.

The Tie father and daughter also felt this change, following everyone’s gaze and looking towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s young appearance had attracted the attention of Tie Ruo Nan who was the same age as him.

Fang Yuan drank his wine calmly. Even though everyone’s gaze was on him, he acted as if he felt nothing.

His expression was calm, as he already had anticipated such a situation of people finding problems with him.

"Things are getting troublesome," he sighed in his heart. Although worried, he was not frightened.

Tie Xue Leng’s appearance had heavily destroyed his plans to leave. If he took the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus and destroyed the foundation of the Gu Yue village, this would cause the Tie father and daughter to arrest him.

The name of divine investigator is not just a myth. With his abilities and strength, as long as Tie Xue Leng commences his chase, there is no possibility of failing.

Even if he does not take the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, his mysterious disappearance would cause the clan to investigate. As it involves Jia Jin Sheng’s death, even the Tie father and daughter would get involved.

If he left without notice, in their eyes it would be a thief trying to escape, running from his crimes.

With no choice, Fang Yuan could only choose to stay and observe the situation.

Although everyone reprimanded him, the situation now was still not at its worst. If he left right now, that would be a panicky move, and it would cause the entire situation to worsen.

"Is the wine nice?" Gu Yue Yao Ji laughed sinisterly, staring at Fang Yuan, "Aren’t you going to explain?"

Fang Yuan slowly put down his cup, raising his head and looking at Gu Yue Yao Ji’s broken arm.

The old are the most cunning, this is extremely true.

To preserve her life, Gu Yue Yao Ji broke her own arm, and under the name of being injured, she avoided the clan mission of entering the battlefield.

This happened in Fang Yuan’s previous life as well, but to think she did the same thing once again.

Her act of sacrificing one limb to save her life, was indeed effective. It prevented her from getting killed by the thunder crown wolf and not participating in the chase, thus keeping herself alive. However, right now she was finding problems with Fang Yuan — one aspect was due to old grudges, but mostly was because she wanted to bring the attention to Fang Yuan and reduce people’s attention on herself.

"What do you want me to explain? Explain how you broke your own limb just to preserve your miserable life?" Fang Yuan sneered.

"WHAT?!" Gu Yue Yao Ji was shocked and enraged, standing up from her seat.

She stared with both eyes wide open, pointing at Fang Yuan’s nose, shrilling, "You little rascal! How dare you accuse me like this, this is blatant defamation, slander!! How can you be so shameless? How can our Gu Yue clan have such a joke like you?"

"Gu Yue Yao Ji!" Gu Yue Bo’s expression changed, shouting, "Sit down at once, we have an important guest here, how can you scream and shout freely like this?"

Gu Yue Yao Ji wanted to continue scolding, but on seeing Gu Yue Bo’s dim expression, she could only swallow the words she was about to spit out.

She stared angrily at Fang Yuan, sitting down reluctantly.

Gu Yue Bo settled Yao Ji’s problem, then turned to look at Fang Yuan, "Elder Fang Yuan, I need an explanation. During the attack of the wolf tide, where were you?"

"Fang Yuan... he’s Fang Yuan?" Tie Xue Leng’s eyes shone with surprise. In Jia Jin Sheng’s mysterious disappearance, Fang Yuan had played an important role. Before coming here, Tie Xue Leng had already gotten much intel from Jia Fu. But to think that this young elder was Fang Yuan himself. At once, Tie Xue Leng’s heart became interested.

He had solved numerous cases and could see the peculiarity from all the traces of evidence, to guess the actual fact. From everyone’s expression, he could tell the truth behind Fang Yuan’s sudden evasion from battle.

But the truth that everyone knew was only scratching the surface, what is the utter reality?

Regardless of what the truth is, Fang Yuan’s answer would reveal a fragment of his inner thought. That would be very helpful in solving the case later.

Sensing Tie Xue Leng’s attention on him, Fang Yuan’s heart tightened, but his expression remained the same.

He looked at everyone plainly, and a mocking smile appeared on his face, "There’s not much to explain. Since clan elder asked, I’ll just say it out. I was extremely frightened back then. The stressed accumulated during this extensive period, as well as my fear of death that had reached its limits. I could not endure it, I was cowardly and weak, I hid in a corner and no longer dared to enter the frontlines."

Once he said so, everyone was dumbfounded.

They had expected Fang Yuan to use all sorts of excuses and reasons, and were prepared to expose his lies and criticize Fang Yuan. But to think he admitted it directly!

"Any kind of lie, as long as it is not true, will have loopholes. Furthermore, Tie Xue Leng is here..." Fang Yuan’s expression was calm, looking down and staring at the wine in his cup.

Tie Xue Leng’s expression turned weird. He subconsciously frowned, and a sense of loathing and antipathy rose in his heart.

"This young man, he has an inbred demonic nature!"

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Don’t worry guys, for those who can’t wait for him to leave the village, it’s not that far off.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

At the banquet, it was utter silence.

Everyone was stunned, staring at Fang Yuan blankly.

They had not expected him to reply like this, directly admitting it so honestly.

"He’s too young after all, actually saying such words."

"Hmph, once he said that, it means his entire political career is ruined."

"From now on, this Fang Yuan is no threat anymore..."

The clan elders furiously assessed.

At this point into the wolf tide, the outcome had already been decided. In the next few months, there will only be small wolf packs moving about. As the lightning lycan continues to call them back, as well the the Gu Masters killing them, the lightning wolves would basically vanish completely by the end of the year.

But conflicts never end.

At places with people, there are interests. And where there are interests involved, there are conflicts.

During the wolf tide, it is the struggle between man and wolf. But now that the toughest part of the wolf tide is over, the clan’s internal struggles surface above the water, turning into internal strifes.

The wolf tide assaulting the village caused many Gu Masters to die. Some factions were destroyed, and the interests they once held, naturally has to be distributed.

Among the Gu Yue clan higher-ups, there were originally many clan elders to divide the interest cake of the entire village. But now that only Fang Yuan and the other elders amounting to less than ten remained, that cake was still whole and intact.

To split this large cake among themselves, they would have to compete against one another. Political battles, although not as flashy or bloody as the wolf tide, was full of schemes, plotting and setting traps; it was difficult and harsh.

At first, Fang Yuan as the only newly advanced elder, had a strong momentum and attracted great attention. But now that he admitted his mistake, it completely ruined his political career; it was tantamount to giving up the chance to compete for this interest cake with the other clan elders.

At once, Fang Yuan’s threat level towards the other clan elders became much lower.

Their gaze towards Fang Yuan showed that the pressure they felt towards him had reduced.

At this time, clan leader Gu Yue Bo sighed, "Since Fang Yuan himself admitted to it, as clan leader, I have to punish you for the act of running away from battle. According to the clan ancestor’s rules, runaways will be stripped of their clan elder status, but the final result shall be decided by me and the other clan elders. We’ll decide on your punishment after a discussion. But regardless of the result, I hope you can accept it."

The others showed a weird expression.

Fang Yuan nodded, not speaking, as if he had submitted to fate.

Gu Yue Yao Ji broke her own arm to save her life, this was decisive and ruthless. Fang Yuan was the same, except he lost even more, giving up his clan elder status.

His greatest problem now, is the sudden appearance of the Tie family father and daughter. If he got involved in the political turmoil now, facing suppression from other elders, his situation would get even more dangerous.

"Letting go, willingness to let go, among taking and letting go, that is life. The identity of clan elder was to cultivate better, that is its only purpose to me. To pursue eternal life I walked on the demonic path, I am willing to discard my own life. What else can I not discard? Clan elder status, hmph..."

Fang Yuan did not feel a shred of regret or annoyance.

This was the wisest decision.

Moreover, although there’s a punishment, it would definitely be minimized.

After all, there were little clan elders left, and as a Rank three Gu Master, his strength was greatly valued. The clan leader has to punish him on one end, but also needs to borrow his strength to stabilize the entire village’s circumstance, thus he also needed to give in to Fang Yuan.

As for the other clan elders, Fang Yuan had stepped out of this political contest and no longer held any threat. They would not offend Fang Yuan anymore. After all, if they force Fang Yuan to retaliate, isn’t it finding trouble for themselves?

"Although there is the clan system, but what is a system? Hehe, a system is just a tool to maintain the interests of those in power. On one hand it governs and divides the interest of the lower levels, but it is also the rules that contain the higher-ups as they compete against each other." Fang Yuan laughed coldly. These matters, he was clear as day, the truth was transparent to him.

"The most crucial point now, is the Tie family father and daughter. Fuck, they came much earlier than I had anticipated, even before the wolf tide is completely gone. Hmph! But such a behavior perfectly fits Tie Xue Leng’s hatred towards evil, and his selflessness in fighting crime."

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan felt a strong pressure.

Even though Tie Xue Leng is injured now, his battle strength was not something Fang Yuan could compete against. A starving dying camel is larger than a horse, it is this logic.

"I need to leave the village, but I also need to avoid the pursuit of the Tie father and daughter pair, how can I get out of this predicament?"

Fang Yuan was vexed.

This Tie family father and daughter was not as easy to confuse as Jia Fu. Moreover, Fang Yuan’s cultivation was too low. Even if he had a thousand and one plans, what could he do without actual strength?

Rank three and five, it was a world of difference.

"Everyone, I have something to say." At this point, the silent Gu Yue Mo Chen suddenly said.His expression was pale as he had dragged his injured body to the banquet, and he did not drink wine, only sipping tea.

But what he said next, shocked people to death, "There’s something I have to be honest about. Elder Fang Yuan did not manage to enter the battlefield, and that was due to me."

"What?"

At once, the other clan elders were shocked.

"Oh, what do you mean?" Gu Yue Bo asked.

Fang Yuan sent a glance over, hiding his shock.

Why would this Gu Yue Mo Chen stand up for himself?

During this wolf tide, the Mo faction inheritor Gu Yue Mo Bei had already died unfortunately.

Even though the Mo faction had to the greatest of their ability, protected Mo Bei. On the battlefield, surprises were aplenty. Moreover, during the wolf tide, everyone was in danger, sometimes they can’t even take care of themselves, what more towards others?

Gu Yue Mo Chen sighed, "To speak the truth, my granddaughter Gu Yue Mo Yan had fallen deep in love with elder Fang Yuan. Before this, she had come to beg me, kneeling on the ground and crying, not willing to see Fang Yuan die on the battlefield. I only have one granddaughter, thus out of selfishness, I kept Fang Yuan in my estate and knocked him out. It was only until we chased the lightning crown wolf that I let him out. Thus, everything was due to me, it is my fault. It has nothing to do with Fang Yuan."

"What?"

"Oh, is that really it?"

The clan elders were suspicious.

Gu Yue Mo Chen’s words were quite a stretch; it was rather unbelievable.

"Love and relationship among youngsters is common," Gu Yue Bo nodded, staring at Fang Yuan with deep meaning, wanting to find out some clues from his expression.

But Fang Yuan looked down with a calm expression. There was nothing to see.

Clan leader was disappointed.

The other clan elders exchanged glances, not understanding why Gu Yue Mo Chen was so defensive of Fang Yuan.

Him saying this in order to aid Fang Yuan, it meant that he had sacrificed his own reputation and ruined his own political prospect!!

Gu Yue Mo Chen continued, "In order to protect my reputation, elder fang Yuan willingly let himself suffer the injustice. But I have already erred once, how can I make a mistake once more? This is the truth. As for the punishment, I implore lord clan leader to consider. I admit my mistake and as with the rules, if my clan elder status is to be stripped, I have no objections."

Clan leader quickly waved his hand, saying, "Elder Mo Chen has worked hard all these years. What you did was understandable, humans are not grass or wood, how can we not have feelings? Now that our clan is greatly weakened, we need loyal and strong elders like you. But this is still your own selfishness, thus the punishment still needs to be decided. We have an important guest today, let’s not talk about this now. Come, brother Tie, I and the clan elders shall offer you a toast!"

Saying so, Gu Yue Bo stood up.

The other clan elders stood up as well, raising their cups.

"Everyone is too kind. I still have to trouble you all later, I hope I can seek your understanding." Tie Xue Leng did not put on airs, standing up and drinking his wine.

...

In the courtyard of the Mo faction, flora and fauna were abundant. The artificial mountain had a spring flowing with crystal clear water.

In the night sky, the moon hung high in the sky like a plate.

The banquet had long ended.

Fang Yuan sat in the cooling pavilion as he listened to the sound of the flowing water, and he placed down his tea cup with a plain expression.

Sitting opposite him was Gu Yue Mo Chen. After the banquet was over, he had invited Fang Yuan over for a discussion.

"Come, have another cup of tea, this bamboo leaf clear water tea is good in eliminating hangovers." Gu Yue Mo Chen laughed, pouring personally into Fang Yuan’s cup.

Fang Yuan’s expression was calm, and on seeing the cup being filled again, he said, "Indeed a good cure for hangovers."

Saying so, he looked outside the pavilion, only to see that the pale white moon had radiated the grounds with its moonlight. Under the moon, the pavilion was quiet and graceful, but in the wind there were lurking shadows, showing how the Mo faction courtyard was turning from a prosperous state, to a declining one.

During the banquet, Fang Yuan had already understood Gu Yue Mo Chen’s intention. Seeing this scene, he was even more sure of himself.

The Mo faction had no inheritor left!

Once Gu Yue Mo Bei died, the entire Mo faction would lose its inheritor.

Although Mo Bei still had his sister Mo Yan, the clan rules was that, since ancient times, it favored males over females, and the assets can only be inherited by a male and not female.

Even if Gu Yue Mo Yan gets to Rank three next time and advances to clan elder, her assets do not represent the Mo faction, but only her own. If she married anyone, this asset will be transferred to under her husband’s name.

If they lost their inheritor, a clan’s political influence would have no prospects, and no one would join them.

The Mo faction had already fallen into difficult circumstances, on the verge of breaking down.

But heaven always left a way, and the Mo faction was not truly at its wits end; there was still a sliver of hope.

This hope lies in Gu Yue Mo Yan’s hands.

Although she is a female, she can marry someone.

If the son-in-law marries into the Mo faction, he would have an acceptable status, and can inherit the Mo faction!

Seeing that Fang Yuan had no inclination to mention it, Gu Yue Mo Chen scolded this crafty lad internally, but had to speak, "I wonder what elder Fang Yuan thinks of my Mo faction?"

He had an unspeakable grief.

Ever since his injury, his cultivation had fallen to Rank two, without any chance of ever regaining Rank three.

He could only rely on his Gu worm to conceal his true aura. But paper cannot cover fire; he would be exposed one day.

His only inheritor had died, while he himself was Rank two and would lose his clan elder identity. Gu Yue Mo Chen needed someone who could hold the fort to sustain their faction.

Back then, he had both authority and status, thus the Mo faction controlled a large amount of the interest cake. But now that the clan’s factions were reorganising themselves, he did not want any more interests. As long as he can defend what he already has, that would be the biggest victory.

He pondered left and right, and the most suitable person was Fang Yuan without doubt!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Sunset clouds are blown away as cool wind fills the air, and the jade disc spins silently in the milky way.

Bai Ning Bing looked out from the window and gazed at the night sky.

A bright and sparkling moon was shining in the sky. Occasionally, wolf howls could be heard in the distance, adding some bleakness to the peaceful moonlight.

In the study room, the Bai clan leader was sitting at a side with a dazed expression.

Just a moment ago, Bai Ning Bing told him about the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique.

"Northern Dark Ice Soul....ten absolute aptitudes...." The Bai clan leader mumbled constantly.

"I have already sensed that my end is nearing, my aperture is gradually unable to endure the burden. These past few years, I’ve truly caused you much problems!" Bai Ning Bing softly sighed.

His expression was calm. No longer was there the abnormal reckless and crazed state as before. What replaced them was tranquility and peace.

This tranquility and peace came from his heart.

He had found his path and was no longer perplexed by life and death.

People mature over time, and the stimulation from life and death could further speed up this process.

Moonlight fell down like flowing water, illuminating Bai Ning Bing’s fair skin. Under the flowing radiance, his two blue eyes shone with depth.

He was like a beautiful young man from a painting, with white hair and white clothes like the immortals in the clouds, causing people to look intently.

"How could this happen? You were clearly A grade with 99% primeval essence when your aptitude was tested. It absolutely wasn’t the Northern Dark Ice Soul." The Bai clan leader was still refusing to accept it.

"It was indeed so. But one day when I was cultivating, my aptitude suddenly advanced. I checked the ancient scrolls and records in the clan and found some information on this; every 99% A grade aptitude has the possibility of advancing to ten absolute aptitudes while cultivating," Bai Ning Bing said.

"All ten defy the heavens, and the heavens can’t tolerate them. Even Ren Zu’s ten children didn’t have a good end. Sigh, is there really no way to salvage it?" Bai clan leader felt pity and regret when he looked at the beautiful boy in front of him.

He was the clan’s pride and their hope to rise up in power. However, his life was already nearing its end. Despite glowing brightly, he was like a firework which could only shine splendidly for one single moment.

"There are no ways to evade my impending doom, but there are some ways to delay it. However, all these methods need many years to prepare, which I don’t have."

Bai Ning Bing said all this and gave a light laugh, as if the one being discussed about was not him, but some irrelevant outsider.

"Don’t worry. Who doesn’t die? True immortality doesn’t exist! As long as we live our life interestingly, it is enough." He was instead consoling the clan leader.

"I cannot accept this! I absolutely cannot! Damn it, my Bai clan has been suppressed by the Gu Yue clan for centuries, we finally found hope but it ends up like this! No, there is still hope!"

Bai clan leader’s voice got louder and louder till suddenly, his expression turned firm as if he had decided on something.

"Follow me, I will bring you to a place...." He stood up and said.

After a while.

The bright moonlight shone upon a deep pool.

"This is the spirit spring?" Bai Ning Bing asked. He had been led by the Bai clan leader as they went through a long secret pathway, and finally arrived here.

"Indeed. This is our clan’s restricted area, the location of the spirit spring. You also know this – every clan’s foundation is established upon a natural spirit spring, where the primeval stones produced by it will be used to provide for their cultivation. Our Bai clan can only be considered a small-medium scale clan, and only by annexing Gu Yue and Xiong clan as well as possessing at least three springs can we become a large scale clan," Bai clan leader sighed.

"Then clan leader, what did you bring me here for?"

Bai clan leader’s face revealed a complex expression, and as he turned around to look at Bai Ning Bing, his expression contained some hesitation, "I had originally never thought of bringing you here. However, the affairs of the world are hard to anticipate. To think, you would end up possessing Northern Dark Ice Soul! Your only chance at living lies within this spring."

"What is in this spring?" Bai Ning Bing asked.

"A great Immortal!" Bai clan leader said with a deep voice.

"Great Immortal?" Bai Ning Bing was flabbergasted.

"Great Immortal is its title. It is a snake Gu left by our Bai clan’s first generation ancestor. It likes cleanliness, and its food is the water of spirit spring. It has always been secretly living in the spirit spring," Bai clan leader introduced.

"Before the first generation ancestor passed away, he set up a secret inheritance and left behind this snake Gu as a clue. If you can get the approval of the Great Immortal, it will open the secret inheritance for you. But if you can’t receive its approval...." The Bai clan leader stopped his sentence in the middle.

"What happens then?" Bai Ning Bing asked.

Bai clan leader’s expression turned grave and he said, "It will kill you!"

At the same time, Gu Yue village.

Inside the room, Tie Ruo Nan kept her recon Gu and nodded with satisfaction, "The environment here is pretty good, it’s rather clean."

The ‘clean’ she referred to wasn’t talking about the cleanliness of the room, but was pointing at the lack of surveillance.

It was impossible to say that there absolutely wasn’t any surveillance.

After all, Tie Xue Leng was rank five, so he possessed too great of a threat. Hence, there was a necessity for some precautions.

However, Gu Yue clan’s defensive and surveillance measures were just at the right amount and the level was quite low too, not creating any feelings of provocation and aversion. It could even be taken as excessively earnest and passionate reception, which was why Tie Ruo Nan gave the assessment of ‘rather clean’.

Tie Xue Leng slightly nodded, "Ruo Nan, you have followed me for so long and have learned many things. However, some things can only be learned by taking actions and not just by spectating from the sides. Hence, I handed this case to you."

"Father, I will definitely work hard and give my best!"

"Good. Then, let me ask you, what should your next step be?" Tie Xue Leng was deliberately testing her.

Tie Ruo Nan smiled. She turned around and gazed at the moon through the window, "The moon is beautiful tonight. Dad, can I have the pleasure to take you around this Gu Yue village?"

Upon hearing this, Tie Xue Leng revealed a gratifying smile.

When starting out on a case, it was not urgent to understand the details of the case. The first step to solve a case was to survey the surroundings.

The father and daughter pair slowly walked through the streets. After resisting the most terrifying attacks of the wolf tide, Gu Yue clan was now in a wretched state.

There were collapsed bamboo buildings and bloodstains all around. Junks were piled up all over the place and feeble moaning sounds of crippled people could be heard from time to time.

The Tie father and daughter pair walked around the village without saying any words.

"Fang Yuan, you bastard, fuck off!" Suddenly, a loud roar came from within a courtyard.

The Tie father and daughter stopped walking.

After a long while, the courtyard gate opened and Fang Yuan walked out while rubbing his nose with a vague smile on his face.

"Hello, little brother Fang Yuan." Tie Xue Leng took the initiative to send his greetings.

"Junior pays his respects to lord divine investigator." Fang Yuan constrained his smile and cupped his hands.

"Little brother, we are new here and don’t know the place well. Is it possible for little brother to tell us a thing or two?" Tie Xue Leng suddenly asked.

Tie Ruo Nan glanced at her father, but she didn’t make any comments.

Fang Yuan’s gaze hardened, he was just about to go meet them but this opportunity was delivered right up to him.

"Both of you have travelled a great distance and suffered hardships to come and solve the case, the whole village ought to help you. Please follow me." Fang Yuan spoke directly without showing the slightest evil intention, and walked in front.

...

The spirit spring was raging like the boiling water.

All of a sudden, the springwater rose up like a tidal wave.

After it reached a certain height, the spirit spring scattered and splashed in all directions. A slender white snake, its whole body covered with snow white scales, tread on the waves and revealed its elegant appearance.

Its eyes were like jade, cold and indifferent. On the two sides of its head were a pair of long whiskers, floating like celestial ribbons.

Rank five white form immortal snake Gu!

"I pay respects to Great Immortal!" Bai clan leader emotionally kneeled on the ground, and at the same time anxiously urged, "Bai Ning Bing, why are you not kneeling down?"

"I will never kneel before a Gu!" Bai Ning Bing coldly snorted, his body standing upright and tall.

Although the white form immortal snake Gu released an ethereal cold grandeur with heavy killing intent concealed within, Bai Ning Bing was not the least bit afraid. His two blue pupils directly stared at its snake eyes.

Time seemed to have stopped at this moment.

The spirit spring and the Bai clan leader had become insignificant background objects.

Under the bright moonlight, the picturesque youngster with blue pupils and the silver whiskered white snake gazed at each other.

After a good while, the white snake suddenly gave a long cry and turned into a white rainbow, slamming into Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing’s body jolted. The white light entered his aperture and turned into a white snake.

The white snake occupied the central area of his primeval essence, and with its tyrannical attitude, all the surrounding Gu were immediately forced to the side.

"This situation..." Bai clan leader stood up with a puzzled expression, "It doesn’t match what the clan’s secret records say."

According to the clan’s secret records, once a Gu Master obtained approval, the white form immortal snake Gu would fly with the inheritor and open the inheritance in the sky.

However, the current situation was somewhat weird.

The white form immortal snake Gu took the initiative to enter Bai Ning Bing’s aperture and didn’t kill him, which should mean that it had approved of him. But why didn’t it carry Bai Ning Bing and fly to the sky?

Could it be that the secret records were wrong?

Bai clan leader couldn’t make sense of it.

......

Time quietly flew by.

"That more or less sums up everything about Gu Yue village. There is the underground cave, but that is a restricted area of the clan and outsiders aren’t allowed entry." Fang Yuan said.

He looked at the bright moon in the sky and continued, "It is getting late, please go and rest, you need to have the energy to investigate tomorrow, right?"

"Hahaha, Elder Fang Yuan is correct. We are really thankful for Elder Fang Yuan’s directions, please go and take a rest," Tie Xue Leng said.

"In that case, I will take my leave." Fang Yuan cupped his hands before directly leaving.

Tie Xue Leng looked at Fang Yuan’s figure with interest, and only after Fang Yuan turned into a corner, did he take back his gaze.

"Ruo Nan, what do you think of this Fang Yuan?" He suddenly asked.

"I don’t like him, my intuition tells me he is covered in shadows." The young girl frowned.

Tie Xue Leng nodded his head, "I know you have the Intuition Gu which strengthens your intuition, but we need definite evidence to solve a case. Just relying on intuition alone won’t be convincing. Don’t always depend on your intuition, I do not want you to use the intuition Gu to solve this case."

"Yes, father."

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Hey guys, my sicknessy got worse :o I am sad! Medical bills were so expensive but medicine had no effect. I’m tired. I owe you guys one chapter from yesterday, sorry D: Gonna rest more, I think my bed is my house now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Tie Xue Leng said again, "Now, analyze this person Fang Yuan."

"Father, you suspect it is Fang Yuan?" Tie Ruo Nan was stunned, but continued, "He is a very logical and intelligent person, and when he introduced the village to us, every word he said was appropriate and well organised. Gasp!..."

Tie Ruo Nan suddenly drew in a mouthful of cold air.

She frowned, "I didn’t notice this earlier, but after you just reminded me, I realised it! This Fang Yuan is too good at speaking. Everything he said is objectively the truth, abandoning his personal feelings. Standing at a bystander’s perspective, and describing calmly. Not allowing others to find flaws in his words, thus not able to get additional clues. His words were very.... very.... very clean."

The young girl hesitated, before using the word ‘clean’.

Tie Xue Leng nodded, but then shook his head, "He did not abandon his feelings. Everyone has feelings, and even a cold blooded murderer has feelings. He only concealed his personal feelings very well, and was in full control of his emotions. This lad has a demonic nature."

"Demonic nature?""That’s right, think about it. He spoke the truth during the banquet, saying he was frightened and did not dare to enter the battlefield. Tell me, if it was a normal person, would they do that?" Tie Xue Leng asked.

Tie Ruo Nan shook her head, "No, Gu Masters put the clan’s honor and their own reputation higher than their own lives. But, that might not be certain, for in history there have also been many people who sacrificed their own reputation, right?"

"That’s right, but who were those people?" Tie Xue Leng’s gaze was deep.

Tie Ruo Nan considered, before her expression changed, "They were all outstanding individuals!"

"That’s correct. Throughout history, those who sacrificed their own reputations only had two aims. One was that they had a greater aim in mind, and compared to their aim, reputation is worth nothing. The other is to preserve themselves, defaming themselves to prevent suspicion."

Tie Ruo Nan’s eyes shone, "Father, you are saying?"

"You are thinking too much. I just feel that this young man is very interesting, but too bad he is only a C grade..." Tie Xue Leng said.

The moonlight was like water on this night.

Fang Yuan walked on the empty street, his footsteps slightly heavy but filled with determination.

After interacting with Tie Xue Leng earlier, he was indeed what the rumors said. This Tie Xue Leng had a gaze that could see through the world, and his intelligence and wits were deep like a chasm. He swept through the Southern Border for tens of years, establishing his famed name; he really was an outstanding talent.

Wanting to remove his suspicions in front of such a person was extremely difficult. As long as they had enough time, they would definitely discover the truth!

"Now is a race against time. But, Mo faction’s recruitment, I can make good use of it."

Not long ago in the Mo faction pavilion, Fang Yuan had given absurd demands. In return for marrying Mo Yan, he wanted a hundred thousand primeval stones, ten rare Gu worms and each at least Rank three.

This made Gu Yue Mo Chen furious.

He was marrying away his precious granddaughter, but Fang Yuan still had more demands?!

Such a shameless way to ask for gifts, and so greedy, it was really the last straw!

Thus, the discussion faltered, and he chased Fang Yuan out.

Fang Yuan left immediately without any inclination to stay.

He knew Mo Chen’s intention, thus he would definitely compromise. His absurd demands were just a way of bargaining, paying the lowest price when buying, and asking for the highest price when selling.

"But this matter has equal benefits and demerits. Although with more primeval stones I can feed the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, my original plan to get out of the political spiral would be ruined. In tonight’s banquet, Gu Yue Mo Chen sacrificed himself to salvage my political career. From then on, he might face all sorts of elder’s suppression."

Gu Yue village’s political situation now was: Clan leader was healthy, while for the two important elders, Gu Yue Chi Lian was dead but the Chi faction was not finished yet, as inheritor Chi Cheng was still alive. At the same time there was still Gu Yue Chi Zhong, an elder from the same faction. But Mo faction lost its inheritor and Mo Chen was heavily injured, falling to Rank two, unable to even keep his clan elder status.

The two formerly large factions had already gone downhill. The medicine faction in contrast were mostly healing Gu Masters. As supports they had little sacrifice while still keeping most of their strength, and were on the verge of rising up.

Medicine faction was originally the clan leader’s faction, but now it had the ability to be independent. Regardless of whether Gu Yue Yao Ji chooses to be independant or rely on the clan elder, in order to strengthen themselves, they would need to snatch and merge. And the weakened Chi and Mo faction were the best targets.

If they did not strike now, later on when the two factions stabilize internally it would be much more difficult.

"Being in the human world, many things are not up to me, why not just let down my hair and sail away to the seas? Sailing with the winds and breaking waves as I travel thirty thousand Li, that is the true demonic path I take!" Fang Yuan raised his head, looking at the moon as he sighed.

He wanted to get away from the political spiral, but Gu Yue Mo Chen dragged him back by force. He faced pressure from all the factions, and Tie Xue Leng was already starting to solve the case. On the other hand, Bai Ning Bing had already regained his new arm.

Like a boat travelling in the darkness with danger lurking everywhere, how was he to open up a path for himself?

......

The next day.

"What? You said that the person who murdered Jia Jin Sheng had already been found and was killed already?" Tie Ruo Nan felt extremely perturbed.

This morning, she had woken up early and officially started to solve the case.

But to think that the first information she got, was that the killer had already been sentenced.

"That’s right, the killer is a demonic Gu Master. He once assassinated our clan’s rising star and tried to kill the genius, thus he was killed on the spot." A clan elder provided the information.

"Is that really so? Did he admit personally that he was Jia Jing Sheng’s killer?" Tie Ruo Nan frowned deeply. Beside her, Tie Xue Leng wore a copper mask as he stood like a statue.

"He didn’t. But, if it’s not him, who else could it be?" The clan elder shrugged.

Tie Ruo Nan thought internally, "This is all an assumption, there is no real proof. But whether it is the truth or not, this demonic Gu Master has to be investigated clearly. Most likely, this is a lead that will bring us to the truth!"

Thinking of this, Tie Ruo Nan raised her head abruptly, "Where is he buried? I want to inspect the corpse!"

In a simple and torn coffin, there was a corpse within.

The rotting smell assaulted noses, and clan servants and Gu Masters were so disgusted that they ran far away to hide.

Tie family father and daughter acted as if they were unaffected, and Tie Ruo Nan’s eyes glowed brightly, excitedly stretching her hand and inspecting.

A person’s corpse has lots of traces. At times, one or two small injuries would be the evidence needed to point out the murderer!

On this corpse, there were many injuries, but the person’s appearance was still clear, and he was still wearing his original clothes.

Tie Ruo Nan checked for ages, and only then did she get up with a lingering interest.

"Anything?" Tie Xue Leng asked lightly, testing her secretly.

"Gu Yue clan thinks this person is Jia Jin Sheng’s killer, thus they kept the corpse well. There’s a huge problem in this corpse," Tie Ruo Nan answered.

"He’s a middle-aged man, right arm thicker than the left; both his hands have a thick callus. Seeing how his callus is distributed, they are uneven. There are many injuries on his body, numerous fatal wounds, showing the intense battle he had before death. But on his body there are also a lot of hidden injuries, especially his left foot having three less toes, this is left behind from many years ago."

Saying so, she continued deducing, "He was most likely a hunter. There are many evidences - his disproportional left and right side and the callus on his hands shows that he’s an experienced bowman. There are many injures made by wild beasts on his body, like claw marks and bites, showing he often fought against beasts. His clothes are not the traditional Gu Master clothes, and his shoes are even more interesting, weaved from bamboo hemp grass. This kind of grass only grows near Qing Mao bamboo, and Qing Mao mountain only produces Qing Mao bamboo; other than that, in the surrounding mountains, there is no bamboo hemp grass.

"So what are you getting at?" Tie Xue Leng pursued.

"Before this person became a demonic Gu Master, he was a hunter. From his clothes, he was most likely a resident hunter on Qing Mao mountain," Tie Ruo Nan’s eyes shone brightly.

"Why do you think he is a resident here? If it is the grass shoes, he could’ve killed the villagers here and worn them," Tie Xue Leng rebuked.

"That’s not it. The most special part of his clothes is the shoes, because if they were taken by force, most would not fit his size perfectly. But look at this, two disproportionate legs and yet the shoes fit nicely, this is made just for him. He has three less toes on his leg feet, thus the left grass shoe is shorter. His stump is very cleanly cut and sharp. I assume it is most likely due to stepping on a trap by mistake," Tie Ruo Nan said.

Tie Xue Leng did not deny it nor confirm it, and did not even give any criticism.

Like what he said earlier, he left it to Tie Ruo Nan to solve the case.

Tie Ruo Nan continued saying, "With this conjecture, we can go to the surrounding hamlets and investigate. We might find more clues... wait!"

Just when she was about to speak, the young girl’s expression stiffened.

She suddenly remembered, this Qing Mao mountain had just undergone a wolf tide calamity. Even the villages were heavily damaged, not to mention those hamlets?

She knew that using this method to find out the person’s identity and information bore little hope.

"But even if the chances are slim, as long as there is a possibility for success, I must try!" It was the young girl’s first individual case, and she was full of drive.

But half a day passed, and she returned empty-handed. This wolf tide was the largest and most horrifying one yet. So many hamlets had zero survivors, and this brought great trouble to her investigations.

"This lead is gone. What are you going to do next?" Tie Xue Leng asked at an appropriate time.

The young girl gritted her teeth, and in her tone there was stubbornness and tenacity, "No, it is not over yet. Father you said it yourself, the true lead is often hidden more deeply, and as long as we continue to excavate, it will appear."

"This demonic Gu Master’s death is strange. Firstly, why did he assault Fang Zheng? What did Fang Zheng do to offend him, causing him to assassinate him with his life, under the situation which was basically an assured death? Moreover, he is a local, but after his death, why did no one recognise him?"

Hearing her words, Tie Xue Leng was a little surprised.

"Child, you have truly grown up," the divine investigator sighed, and in his tone there was contentment and gratification.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Late by ten minutes, nooo~ Sorry guys. And thanks for the well wishes, I love you all <3 I’m better today.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"You’re asking me why that Gu Master came to kill me? How would I know!" Facing Tie Ruo Nan’s questioning, Fang Zheng blinked innocently.

"If you have done something, I hope you won’t conceal the truth. Because your words, even though they might seem insignificant, can have great help towards solving the case," the young girl said sincerely.

Fang Zheng shook his head. "I’m very perplexed too. During that period, I was cultivating non-stop, so how could I attract any assassinations? But afterwards, the people around me realized that this demonic Gu Master could have been hired by the other two clans, to kill a rising star like myself. You also know the rivalry between us and the Bai clan and Xiong clan. Especially the Xiong clan, they are the greatest suspects as they had once recruited demonic Gu Masters into their clan."

"Xiong clan huh..." Tie Ruo Nan became a little discouraged after hearing this, since the Xiong clan had already been eliminated by the wolf tide. It seems that this lead is lost as well.

Suddenly, murmurs came from outside the room.

"Quick, look there, isn’t that people from the Xiong clan?"

"I thought the Xiong clan was exterminated, how can there be any envoys coming here?!"

Xiong clan envoy’s appearance caused a vivid discussion among the village, as people talked with one another.

Soon, news came from the clan leader pavilion.

"Xiong clan still has a large number of survivors."

"They retreated on their own, using a Gu that their ancestor left behind, concealing many people at the same time, cheating death!"

"These scumbags, retreating and avoiding battle, causing the wolf tide to come to us."

"Hmph, these Xiong clan people may look rough and large, but their hearts are devious on the inside. Wanting to borrow the power of the wolf tide to weaken us, they are too despicable!"

Gu Yue clansmen were furious.

The appearance of the Xiong clan envoy had caused the Qing Mao mountain’s political distribution to undergo a complete shift.

What was thought to be a two-sided competition between Bai clan and Gu Yue clan in the end remained a three-way competition.

But one would understand once they thought about it. The Xiong clan had survived for hundreds of years without falling, they had their own foundations too. Which clan did not have an ancestor, and a trump card?

After the Xiong clan envoy left, Gu Yue Bo immediately called for a clan elder meeting.

"These Xiong clan bastards, they really are nothing good. To think they retreated immediately!"

"Can’t look down on anyone indeed. Xiong clan had always ranked behind our clan and Bai clan, and was the weakest among the forces on Qing Mao mountain. But to think they had such a scheme, we have to be more careful from now on."

"They wanted to borrow the strength of the wolf tide to eliminate us. They nearly got us this time, if not for that lightning lycan, we might not have lost so many elders. These people deserve to die!"

"If it wasn’t for the Tie divine investigator appearing, two clan leaders might’ve died. We cannot let them off simply."

"Asking for compensation is a must. It was us and Bai clan working together to settle the problem of the lightning lycan. But to ask for compensation, we need to first discuss and formulate a sum."

The clan elders spoke one after another, discussing until they had a conclusion.

Gu Yue clan would dispatch an envoy towards the Xiong clan. They have to observe Xiong clan’s remaining strength.

If Xiong clan was strong, they would join forces with the Bai clan. If the Xiong clan was weak, they might send people to eliminate them and steal the spirit spring.

"So then, who would be suitable enough to be dispatched to Xiong clan?" Gu Yue Bo looked around, asking, "Which clan elder would shoulder this responsibility!"

The hall immediately became silent.

The clan elders look around at each other. No one was willing to go.

The internal conflict was at its peak now, and it was the most crucial moment for the factions to divide the interest cake. If they went to the Xiong clan, their faction would be without a leader and others would make use of the opportunity. When they return, all would’ve been decided, so by then who would they complain to?

"This old one feels that, to go to the Xiong clan, someone of seniority and experience must go, it has to be someone who can hold his own. Among all of us here, only elder Mo Chen can take on this role!" Gu Yue Yao Ji suddenly said.

Gu Yue Mo Chen snorted, rebuking, "Speaking of qualification, lord Yao Ji has much more experience than me. Especially in terms of fame, I cannot compete at all, I admit complete defeat. Going to the Xiong clan, it seems we will have to trouble lord Yao Ji after all."

"Elder Mo Chen is extremely right, I recommend lord Yao Ji." A clan elder stood up.

"I feel that lord Mo Chen is a more suitable candidate." Another elder immediately rebuked.

The scene was chaotic.

Gu Yue Bo stood at the leader’s seat, staring coldly without making a sound.

The medicine faction already had intentions of detaching into its own force, no longer under his control. Thus he did not want to help either, and merely observed the scene.

This was the first contest between the medicine faction and the Mo faction.

The two had their respective political allies, but the current situation was that both leaders made much compromises as well as exchange of benefits. But on a whole, the medicine faction was stronger.

Gu Yue Yao Ji’s reputation as well as the Chi faction’s inclination, caused this situation.

Gu Yue Bo stared coldly, noting in his heart the factions that each individual belonged to.

As the clan leader, he did not want to see his authority being reduced, and these elders were his competitors. But now he had decided to merely observe, and not strike yet.

"Mo faction controls too much power and resources, and now that they have lost their inheritor, the medicine faction jumped out hurriedly and tried to attack them. Thus, the most crucial aspect of this contest is all on one person."

Gu Yue Bo thought silently, turning his gaze towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had been sitting in his seat, not saying a word.

"It seems this Fang Yuan isn’t very close with the Mo faction, and has not gotten a mutual agreement on interest distribution. Otherwise, he’d have helped out already. Is this my chance?" Gu Yue Bo thought.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan suddenly stood up from his seat.

This action, attracted everyone’s attention.

What he said next was a shocker. "Going as an envoy, this is an important matter involving the survival of our clan. I am willing to step up, bearing the responsibility of an envoy, and investigate the Xiong clan’s current state for our clan!"

"What?"

"Fang Yuan is asking to go?"

"What is the meaning of this? Is he really stupid or acting stupid? Isn’t he afraid that when he comes back, all the interests would’ve been distributed away already!"

The clan elders all showed expressions of shock.

Fang Yuan had his own plans. If he went to the Xiong clan, he might be able to find a chance and instigate a conflict among the three clans. Even if he can’t, this is a chance to leave.

"Wait! Anyone here can be the envoy but Fang Yuan alone!" The door suddenly opened and Tie Ruo Nan walked in, barging her way in.

Fang Yuan turned his body to look, and his irises shrunk a little. He saw the Tie family father and daughter walk in, as well as two other people behind them. One looked just like Fang Yuan — it is indeed his brother Gu Yue Fang Zheng, while the other was Gu Yue Jiang He.

"What does Tie divine investigator have to enlighten us on today?" Gu Yue Bo stood up to greet him, his tone slightly unhappy. This was a Gu Yue internal discussion, how could they just barge in like that?

"Gu Yue clan leader, as well as the other elders. My daughter has already investigated the identity of the demonic Gu Master that once assaulted Gu Yue Fang Zheng," Tie Xue Leng spoke.

"Oh? Is that so..."

"That demonic Gu Master, wasn’t he instigated by the Xiong clan?"

"Is there a hidden story behind this?"

"Indeed, this demonic Gu Master’s true identity is a hunter from a hamlet at the base of the mountain. Only by chance did he manage to become a demonic Gu Master, his name is Wang Er. The reason why he assaulted Gu Yue Fang Zheng, is because of his brother Fang Yuan!" Saying so, Tie Ruo Nan stared intently at Fang Yuan.

"Brother, to think you are such a person!" Fang Zheng standing at one side clenched his fist, showing rage in his eyes.

"What do you mean by this, young lady?" Gu Yue Mo Chen said in a solemn voice.

"Don’t tell me, Fang Yuan is the one that hired this demonic Gu Master to assassinate his own brother Fang Zheng?" Gu Yue Yao Ji showed an excited expression.

Even Gu Yue Bo was taken aback, as he adjusted his posture on his seat.

"You’re all mistaken." Tie Ruo Nan shook her head. "The truth is, Fang Yuan killed innocent people, murdering old man Wang’s entire family, causing Wang Er to take revenge. But Wang Er did not know that Fang Yuan had a twin brother, thus he mistook Fang Zheng for Fang Yuan, and assaulted him for revenge."

"Young lady, everything needs proof," a clan elder spoke.

"Of course I have evidence. Gu Yue Jiang He, tell us everything that you know." Tie Ruo Nan was prepared for this, not panicking.

Gu Yue Jiang He sighed. He looked at the Tie family father and daughter in fear, slowly walking forward and kneeling on the ground, crying, "It is this subordinate’s dereliction of duty, I seek clan leader’s punishment!"

Gu Yue Bo’s face was grim as water, "Say everything clearly first, do not hide anything from us!"

Back then, when Fang Yuan killed old man Wang’s family, it was under Gu Yue Jiang He’s area of jurisdiction, and only when he got to the spot did he discover it. Because of the clan evaluation, he suppressed this matter and did not report it. Never would he have thought that today, the matter would be exposed, dug up by Tie Ruo Nan.

"The truth is like this..." Jiang He stammered as he spoke, not adding any details into his descriptions, very simple and truthful.

At this time and place, he did not dare to lie. Fang Yuan was also a clan elder, so he did not dare to exaggerate facts.

"I never would’ve thought that the truth would be like this!"

"Fang Yuan killed Wang Er’s father, and Wang Er came to take revenge, but found Fang Zheng instead. So that’s it...."

"Fang Zheng was innocently involved, and blocked the crisis for Fang Yuan."

The clan elders whispered among themselves.

Fang Zheng’s clenched fist was even tighter as rage grew in his heart. He could not help but growl at Fang Yuan, "Brother, how can you take people’s lives away so easily. That old man and girl, they were innocent mortals. How could you cut them down?!"

Facing his brother’s accusations, Fang Yuan was indiffierent, as if he did not hear it.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was not the main point.

Fang Yuan looked at the Tie family father and daughter. Being able to discover the truth in such a short time, they were indeed divine investigators.

Regardless of what Gu worms they used, whatever method to make Jiang He submit and reveal his own secret, they had their ways.

This ability made Fang Yuan even more certain that the matter of him killing Jia Jin Sheng, would definitely be found out by the Tie father and daughter duo. It was only a matter of time. After all this is the Gu world, where Gu can be used to commit crime, and also used to solve crime.

Pressure was intensifying...

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

This is the chapter I owe from the day before (?) so please enjoy... and support me on Patreon owo)! Medical bills here are so expensive T_T

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Elder Fang Yuan, is it true that you massacred the whole family of old Wang?" Gu Yue Bo asked with a heavy voice from the main seat.

All the gazes were on Fang Yuan; the young elder coldly smiled, "It is indeed true."

Gu Yue Fang Zheng closed his eyes in grief.

He may have killed many lightning wolves, but he had never taken any human lives. And now that he heard Fang Yuan admitting it himself, he suddenly felt that his own big brother had become so unfamiliar and estranged.

In this estrangement, he also felt fear towards his brother’s cruel methods and anger at the loss of innocent lives.

"Fang Yuan, do you not feel any guilt at slaughtering innocents? If you have any difficulties, you can say them out," Tie Ruo Nan spoke as she frowned. She was someone with extremely righteous character, and hated people like Fang Yuan the most.

"So what if I killed them, I don’t find it necessary to tell you my story. However, at that time, I didn’t know that the missing Wang Er was a demonic Gu Master. It could be said that Fang Zheng was unexpectedly implicated," Fang Yuan spoke honestly.

"Big brother, aren’t you going to say something to me?" Fang Zheng opened his eyes; the corners of his eyes had become red.

"What do you want me to say? Comfort you or to apologize? .....Hmph, little brother, you are too soft," Fang Yuan sneered.

"Damn it, big brother...don’t think you are extraordinary just by becoming an elder. I will tell you that I already have the qualifications to breakthrough to Rank three...." Fang Zheng gritted his teeth, veins popping up in his clenched fists.

"Enough!" Gu Yue Bo couldn’t continue looking at this anymore and shouted, "Fang Zheng, go back, what decorum are you showing by making a fuss here?"

His words had other meaning and expressed dissatisfaction. Tie Ruo Nan couldn’t sense it, but Divine Investigator Tie Xue Leng reacted immediately; he stepped forward and cupped his hands. "Gu Yue clan leader and all elders, it is indeed improper for my daughter to charge in and rush into the lords’ discussion hall. This one apologizes for offending everyone!"

The elders promptly stood up and kept on saying Tie Xue Leng was too kind.

Gu Yue Bo’s expression also relaxed.

Tie Xue Leng continued, "Since little brother Fang Yuan is involved in Jia Jin Sheng’s case and is also a suspect, I hope he remains at the village and will not leave to the other village."

Gu Yue Bo massaged his temples and sighed, "Our Gu Yue clan really hopes we can provide a suitable explanation to lord Jia Fu. Since Divine Investigator is also requesting, I will have to request Elder Fang Yuan to not leave before you are free of suspicions. I hope you can understand."

Gu Yue Bo looked at Fang Yuan, his expression sincere. But his gaze, however, held deep meanings.

Fang Yuan might have killed the whole of old Wang’s family, but they were only mortals. How could it be a crime for a Gu Master to kill these mortals? Especially if this Gu Master was an elder of the clan. Thus, there was no punishment.

"Yes." Fang Yuan glanced at Gu Yue Bo and replied expressionlessly.

...

"Damn it, it’s like this again!" Tie Ruo Nan punched a tree, causing the leaves to scatter.

She was very indignant as she said with clenched teeth, "It is clearly a murder, but they are turning a blind eye to it and not giving a damn. Father, are the mortals not humans? Why do Gu Masters feel that they have the rights to kill the mortals?"

Tie Xue Leng was silent like a sculpture.

The weather was somewhat gloomy, and the wind blew and tree leaves rustled.

Tie Ruo Nan suddenly lowered her head, her expression was down. "I am sorry, father."

She apologized, "I didn’t listen to your advice, and used the Intuition Gu."

"Sigh....." Divine Investigator let out a long sigh and looked at his daughter with a profound gaze, "Child, you have such hatred for evil and is full of righteousness, just like me when I was young. I am happy but also worried."

"Why are you worried?"

"Your ideals are much bigger than mine was at that time. When I was young, my ambition was to capture all the criminals and cram up the Demon Suppression Tower. But as for you, you want to make everyone equal, treating both Gu Masters and the mortals equally, causing law and order to be established in the whole world. Such ambitions and ideals are too big and also very heavy," Tie Xue Leng’s words were filled with experience.

"But father, this so-called law, fairness and justice. If we don’t treat everyone equally, what meaning do they have? If the young don’t have ambitious dreams, then how could they be considered young? I believe it’s all a matter of our own efforts. As long as I give my best, it might not necessarily be impossible to achieve!" Tie Ruo Nan spoke excitedly, her two eyes filled with hopes for the future.

Tie Xue Leng was silent for a good while, "There will be a day when you will understand. But, this is good too, young people should walk their paths by themselves. Setbacks will make you mature. Father won’t interfere anymore. I only hope you can live the life you want!"

He then took out a letter and gave it to Tie Ruo Nan.

"This is....?!" Tie Ruo Nan tore open the letter and was immediately overjoyed.

This letter was from Jia Fu and it recorded every information regarding Jia Jin Sheng’s case, including how Fang Yuan obtained the Liquor worm by rock gambling, how the bamboo gentleman was used to interrogate Fang Yuan, and even Fang Yuan’s bidding prices at the second caravan visit where he showed business talent and received Jia Fu’s recruitment offer.

Tie Ruo Nan reread the contents of ‘Fang Yuan’s bidding prices’ multiple times; her gaze turned brighter and brighter.

"This Fang Yuan is not only fierce in his methods, but also has cruel nature and is even able to scheme deeply. My intuition tells me he is very suspicious. If he is really the killer, then he should be somewhat afraid. But the bamboo gentleman showed no changes to his lies, how did he do it?" Tie Ruo Nan muttered to herself.

"What are you preparing to do next?" Tie Xue Leng asked.

"It has been a long time since Jia Jin Sheng’s death. Everything is fishy and filled with mysteries. Till now, his corpse has not been found and even the place of his death hasn’t been deduced. This case is too clean, giving me no clues, except that Fang Yuan is the biggest suspect. Although the clues from Wang Er has been broken, there are no evidences to prove he is the killer. However, because there are no other clues, I can only rely on my intuition to investigate this Fang Yuan!" Tie Ruo Nan enthusiastically replied.

"You feel that Fang Yuan is suspicious?" Tie Xue Leng asked.

"Extremely suspicious!" Tie Ruo Nan immediately said, "This Fang Yuan is clearly only a C grade aptitude, but why is his cultivation speed faster than Fang Zheng’s? One could say he had the help from the Liquor worm and the Relic Gu, but this speed is still very fast. Gu Yue clan might not have sensed anything wrong, but this is a case of ‘those closely involved can’t see as clearly as those outside’. This is the first suspicious point."

"Besides this, there is another suspicious point; his luck. He rock gambled for the first time in his life and bought six purple gold stones, but was able to get two live Gu; a mudskin toad and a Liquor worm. Isn’t this luck way too much?"

Tie Xue Leng nodded, "Yes, continue."

"This Fang Yuan looks ordinary, but if we look into him, we will find that the mysteries surrounding him are like the thick fog covering the mountain. Many things that were inadvertently revealed makes one ponder. For instance, his rock dissecting technique; he actually used the Moonlight Gu to dissect rocks and did it without damaging the core. Such delicate control is really unimaginable for a student....wait!"

Tie Ruo Nan paused. She had discovered something as her eyes let out bright and sharp light!

Her gaze landed on a line of words in the letter, and the more she looked at, the more her gaze brightened.

"I found it. This Fang Yuan has a huge problem!" After a long while, she suddenly raised her head and excitedly spoke.

...

The fragrance of the tea in the cup rose with the steam and spread in the study room.

Fang Yuan held the tea cup, then blew the floating tea leaves and drank the hot tea. After that, he leisurely let out some turbid air.

Upon seeing the leisurely attitude of Fang Yuan, Gu Yue Mo Chen did his best to endure and felt the veins in his forehead bulging.

Previously, Fang Yuan had asked for a huge price and he had angrily chased the latter out of his house.

But today, he had no choice but to re-invite Fang Yuan.

All this was simply because circumstances are more powerful than men. Yao faction had been pressuring him from everywhere and the matter regarding his drop to Rank two was going to be revealed sooner or later. Mo faction was in imminent danger; it urgently needed an elder to serve as son-in-law and stabilize the situation.

"This bastard is too vile, making such sky-high demands. Does he really think my Mo faction is bathing in gold?" Gu Yue Mo Chen cursed inwardly, while outwardly putting on a warm smile and speaking in a negotiating voice, "Elder Fang Yuan, your price is too much, it greatly exceeds what my Mo faction can support. Can you decrease it?"

Fang Yuan glanced at Gu Yue Mo Chen. This old man who knew when to give and take was worthy of respect.

In fact, his current situation was also becoming messed up.

The Tie father and daughter were forcing him into a corner. Once it was found out that he killed Jia Jin Sheng, Gu Yue Clan would definitely hand him over to appease the Jia family’s anger and simultaneously be able to continue trading with the Jia family caravan every year.

It was almost the crucial moment now, so Fang Yuan softened his tone, "Then we will decrease it by thirty percent. But there is a condition, you need to show me your sincerity by paying forty thousand primeval stones in advance. Also you must hand over a Pig Iron Gu and an Afterlife Grass Gu."

Gu Yue Mo Chen couldn’t help but massage his brows when he heard this. He replied in a sunken voice, "Pig Iron Gu will be handed to you, but my Mo faction’s warehouse doesn’t have any Afterlife Grass Gu. We can’t also give the forty thousand primeval stones at once, they will be given to you in installments."

Fang Yuan knew this old fox wasn’t speaking the truth, but he was very clear that being too overbearing could instead produce the opposite result.

"That’s okay. I will wait for you to send them first, then we can talk about marriage. Before that, I can’t guarantee my allegiance." Fang Yuan left these words before walking away.

The study room was silent once more.

A long while later, Gu Yue Mo Chen suddenly said, "You can come out."

A hidden door was pushed open and a young girl walked out. There were tear stains on her face and her eyes were red from the crying.

"Grandpa." She paid her respects; she was Gu Yue Mo Yan.

Gu Yue Mo Chen sighed, "You are also clear on the family’s situation. Mo Yan, our family needs your sacrifice, can you understand?"

"Yes." The young girl sobbed and lowered her head.

No matter which world, there is no such thing as a free lunch. Even Fang Yuan contributed a lot of strength to the clan as a clan elder. The only difference is that the amount one pays or obtains, differs from person to person.

Even those kids with golden spoons also cannot freely enjoy the privileges. By receiving the family’s nurturing, they needed to have the resolve to sacrifice.

And this resolve was already present in Gu Yue Mo Yan.

She didn’t have the least bit of feelings for Fang Yuan, even feeling hatred and disgust towards the latter. But she knew, she had to marry him for the sake of her family, becoming his wife!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

I love bubbles! Bloop :3

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Living Steel Gu is a Rank two Gu, looking like a charcoal briquette, fist-sized and black all over. On the surface, there were numerous holes.

Fang Yuan injected his primeval essence and this Living Steel Gu started floating, rotating on its own, black smoke pouring out from the holes on it.

Chainsaw Golden Centipede coiled around Fang Yuan’s leg, its dark-gold colored armor full of injuries, the two rows of razors on its sides tattered and damaged.

But when the steel smoke came over and covered these wounds, they gradually healed.

The black smokey steel essence continued to be used, as the two rows of razors on the Chainsaw Golden Centipede could be seen growing at an observable rate.

Healing Gu varied in a few types. There were some that healed Gu Masters, some that specialised in certain injuries, and those that healed Gu worms.

To the Chainsaw Golden Centipede, the Living Steel Gu is its healing Gu worm.

An hour later, the Living Steel Gu became smaller and smaller. It went from a fist-sized charcoal to a pearl size, eventually vanishing.

It was an expenditure-type Gu.

But its sacrifice brought about the recovery of the Chainsaw Golden Centipede.

At this point, the Chainsaw Golden Centipede was good as new. Its two rows of razors were shiny as new, glowing with a sharp and cold flash. On its dark gold exoskeleton, the injuries were mostly healed, and only five to six light scars remained.

But this was nothing to worry about. In about a few weeks, these scars would vanish through the natural recovery of the centipede.

However, if not for the Living Steel Gu and just relying solely on the Chainsaw Golden Centipede, it would take at least half a year for the razors to fully grow back.

The Chainsaw Golden Centipede was more strong than it was flexible. Although it used little primeval essence and had great attacking power, its weakness was a lack in the healing aspect.

All living beings are equal, in this world there is no all-rounded Gu, there has to be weakness and advantages. Even Rank six or seven Gu and above followed this natural law.

"This way, the Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s battle strength is completely recovered..." Fang Yuan stretched out his hand, touching the cold exoskeleton of the Chainsaw Golden Centipede, his face slightly pale.

On his pale face, cold sweat was forming.

"Damn it, it had to come at this time..." Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, his left hand subconsciously pressing his stomach.

His mind entered his aperture, only to see that the white silver primeval sea was still, the entire aperture filled with an oppressed feeling.

All the other Gu had been suppressed to one side. Only above the sea, within the aperture, the Spring Autumn Cicada was glowing with a yellow and green lustre.

At this time, the Spring Autumn Cicada not only had both wings recovered, but its main body also recovered much of its energy.

Just like an object falling from the sky, the closer it gets to the ground the faster it falls, and the Spring Autumn Cicada’s recovery rate was the same. After the initial difficult period, as time passed, its recovery speed accelerated.

Thus, the problem came.

The Spring Autumn Cicada was Rank six, while Fang Yuan was only a Rank three Gu Master. His aperture was gradually unable to hold the Spring Autumn Cicada.

Back then, when the Spring Autumn Cicada was weak, the burden on the aperture was not as huge. But now that the Spring Autumn Cicada gradually recovered, regaining its Rank six ability, it caused this tiny temple of Fang Yuan’s to be unable to hold this high god.

"If this goes on, I might even die from the Spring Autumn Cicada before the Tie family father and daughter find out the truth! Truly, when your roof has a hole it just has to rain non-stop for days....."

The best solution was to raise his own cultivation level. When he gets to Rank six, the aperture will have the capacity to store the Spring Autumn Cicada again.

But this method takes too long. In his previous five hundred years of life, he also used more than four hundred years to attain Rank six.

He was now a C grade talent with Rank three cultivation. To cultivate to Rank six, he had a severe lack of time.

Other than that, there was another way to solve the problem.

It was to take the Spring Autumn Cicada out of his aperture and raise it outside his body.

But that act had great disadvantages.

Firstly, the Spring Autumn Cicada was not a battle-type Gu, so it could not protect itself. Keeping it in the aperture was safer. Secondly, when a Rank six Gu appears, it would interfere with natural laws and cause a mirage at the location it is at.

Fang Yuan was now at the village where there were many people, and the Tie family father and daughter was on to him as well. Once this Spring Autumn Cicada leaves his body, everyone would find out.

Therefore, he could only feel troubled."The Spring Autumn Cicada’s recovery is getting faster. At this rate, I don’t have much time. Once I get the forty thousand primeval stones from Gu Yue Mo Chen, I’ll take the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus and leave this place. As for the Tie family father and daughter, I can resolve it at a later time."

Fang Yuan sighed.

Tie family father and daughter’s matter was something that he could only put off and delay. But now, the Spring Autumn Cicada was not giving him time to stall.

He was at his wits end. As time urged him, wasting every minute and second is reducing his lifespan.

A Gu Master being killed by their own Gu worm was not uncommon. Many Gu Masters who forcefully activate their Gu get a backlash from their Gu worm’s power and lose their life. Such incidents were everywhere. Gu Yue Qing Shu was the prime example, buried not far away.

...

"Six purple gold stones, each fist-sized. With Fang Yuan’s cultivation, he actually opened five on the spot. How could he have so much primeval essence at that time?" Tie Ruo Nan stared at the information on the letter, laughing smugly.

Tie Xue Leng nodded, "You finally found this suspicious point. Indeed, only when you are meticulous can you discover what normal people cannot see. But what can you derive from this suspicious point?"

Tie Ruo Nan closed her eyes, activating the Intuition Gu secretly.

In the darkness, she felt an enlightenment in her mind, and she opened her eyes abruptly. "Instinct tells me, Fang Yuan must have had the Liquor worm from long ago!"

"But instincts are sometimes wrong, they cannot represent truth," Tie Xue Leng reminded.

"Isn’t it easy to get evidence? Hehe, as long as he has the Liquor worm, he has to feed it. If he feeds it, there has to be evidence." Tie Ruo Nan’s mouth curled into an arc, "Let’s go! We’ll find Gu Yue Fang Zheng, Fang Yuan’s brother once again. As the little brother, he has to be the most familiar with Fang Yuan."

......

"You’re asking about big brother’s actions back then?" Fang Zheng showed a complicated expression.

He sighed, recalling, "Back then, big brother was a very outstanding individual. Since young he constantly displayed his talent, making many poems, causing the entire village to put their attention on him. Back then, I admired him and held him in awe. In my heart, he was like a tall mountain that I couldn’t climb. Maybe because he was at such a high point, when he tumbled down, the despair was greater. Afterwards during the awakening ceremony, he was tested to have only C grade talent, thus he became discouraged for a long time, sleeping in class and not returning to the hostel at night, buying wine and getting drunk all the time. From that moment on, I realized, big brother was also human..."

"Wait you said, buy wine?" Tie Ruo Nan heard this crucial phrase and caught on to it, squinting.

"Yes, for a period of time, he was dead drunk. Sigh, maybe reality was too harsh. He only had C grade talent, but his brother turned out to be A grade, and he could not accept the truth. Actually, if I was in his shoes, I would understand his feelings and emotions as well," Fang Zheng said.

"Wait let me ask you, from that moment on, Fang Yuan would buy wine to drink every few days?" Tie Ruo Nan asked again.

"Yes, from that moment on, brother fell in love with alcohol, spending a lot of money for wine. For a time, he was in love with the bamboo wine, which is our clan’s speciality, a very expensive wine. He snatched primeval stones from his classmates in order to buy wine to drink. This is an overbearing act, thus not a single student liked him. Why, is there a problem?" Finally, Fang Zheng asked in confusion.

"There’s a huge problem. I suspect that your brother’s Liquor worm wasn’t obtained from the gambling rocks, but he had it long ago. Your brother’s drunkard act was merely a performance. His real motive was to conceal the fact that he had the Liquor worm, and was feeding it," Tie Ruo Nan replied solemnly.

"WHAT?!" Fang Zheng hearing so, jumped from his seat in shock.

This was shocking information!

"What you just said made me even more suspicious. Where did your brother buy wine normally? I need to investigate." Tie Ruo Nan stood up as well. she was racing against time, moving quickly to solve the case.

"In our entire village, there is only one place selling Bamboo wine, it is that sole inn."

"Then I’ll take my leave." Tie Ruo Nan turned around and left.

"Wait, I... I’ll go with your guys!" Fang Zheng hesitated, chasing after them.

An hour later.

Tie Ruo Nan walked on the stone pavement, concluding, "Earlier the innkeeper already told me everything, and the situation is clear as day. Fang Yuan buying so much wine, his true motive is to feed the Liquor worm. After that, he purposely went to gamble rocks, and that is to expose the Liquor worm logically in front of everyone. All this, is according to his plans."

On one side, Fang Zheng appeared a little distraught, his face looking a little lifeless.

He did not expect that the truth was really like this!

Long ago, he had once looked down on Fang Yuan, thinking he was a loser, giving up on himself. From that moment on, he felt that the tall mountain was no longer so hard to scale.

But the truth was, everything was Fang Yuan’s disguise, his performance, his scheme!

The surrounding people were played by him like fools, believing his lies.

Even he Gu Yue Fang Zheng was no exception!

Looking at it now, his disdain and despise towards his big brother back then, was like a giant mockery of a joke.

"Big brother... in your heart, what place do I hold? In those eyes of yours that pretended to be drunk, was I a huge joke? Big brother! You are such a scheming fox, in your heart, was I childish enough for you to sneer at?!" Fang Zheng screamed in his heart.

He was humiliated, he was furious.

He felt that he was played by Fang Yuan. From the start, he was a clown putting on a childish and laughable act.

He felt the disdain Fang Yuan felt towards him.

"Big brother, how can you treat me like this?!"

"If not for lady Tie, I would still be in the dark. How long do you intend to lie to me, and to the clan? You killed the innocent, taking lives as you wish. Deception and lies, indifferent and inhumane, is that the real you?"

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Had lots of work piled up after being sick for so long, so I couldn’t update yesterday. Sorry! But today is a double update! Yay :D

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Long ago, in Fang Zheng’s heart, Fang Yuan was like a tall mountain, so tall he could never scale.

Long ago, Fang Zheng thought that the shadow of this tall mountain would enshroud him his entire life.

But life gave him an unexpected twist.

Fang Yuan being dispirited, let Fang Zheng see his weakness. The tall mountain that he resembled, instantly collapsed.

And yet—

This was actually all big brother’s performance, an act?

The collapsed mountain in his heart became enshrouded in a layer of mystery.

"Big brother, exactly what kind of person are you?"

Fang Zheng realized at this moment that he knew nothing about this blood related brother of his.

Fang Yuan’s heart was full of scheming, he had too deep of a shrewdness. With his acting skills and the indifference towards taking human lives, Fang Zheng felt infinitely distant towards him.

Along with this distant feeling, there was also a feeling of fear that Fang Zheng did not want to recognise.

This goddamn feeling was back, creeping into his heart.

He tried his best to shrug off this feeling of fear, causing him to subconsciously follow after Tie Ruo Nan’s footsteps.

"Lady Tie, thanks for letting me find out the truth and seeing my brother’s true side. Helping you is akin to helping myself, so just ask away, I will tell you everything I know," Fang Zheng said earnestly.

Tie Ruo Nan nodded, but then shook her head quickly, "What I need to know, I already understand now. The problem now is, where did Fang Yuan get that Liquor worm from?"

"You are right, this matter is suspicious. During big brother’s situation back then, he had not inherited our parent’s assets, and at the same time was only a C grade, beginning his cultivation. Where did he get the Liquor worm from?" Fang Zheng frowned.

"In this situation, there’s only two causes. One is outside help, and the other is an inheritance legacy. But who would invest in a C grade talent? If it is an inheritance, which is it?" Thinking of this, Tie Ruo Nan stopped in her footsteps.

Inheritance legacy... inheritance legacy...

In her mind, this phrase kept appearing.

She fell into deep thought.

"If it was an inheritance legacy, everything would fall into place. Firstly, the Liquor worm’s origin can be explained. Secondly, the reason for killing Jia Jin Sheng is also established!" Tie Ruo Nan thought excitedly.

What perplexed her the entire time, was the killer’s motive.

There has to be a reason to kill.

Fang Yuan showed the Liquor worm, and Jia Jin Sheng wanted to buy it. But the value of the Liquor worm is too low to establish a motive to kill.

But what if, Jia Jin Sheng who refused to give up, adamantly wants to buy the Liquor worm from Fang Yuan, thus following him all the way and discovering an inheritance legacy ground......

What would Fang Yuan do?

"Hehehehehe." Tie Ruo Nan laughed.

Fang Zheng showed a perplexed gaze.

Tie Ruo Nan looked back, "I want to inspect the Gu Yue clan’s history records!"

Fang Zheng shook his head, waving his hand, "The history is kept in the clan’s forbidden grounds, how can an outsider inspect it?"

"Then can you get in?"

Fang Zheng shook his head, "Only clan elders."

"Is that so... then what can we do now?" Tie Ruo Nan frowned.

"Lady Tie, maybe I can help." From the shadows, a crippled old woman walked out.

It was none other than Gu Yue Yao Ji.

She was still the medicine faction family head, but when she stepped down from the medicine hall elder’s position and was replaced by Gu Yue Chi Zhong, also losing an arm, her former authority had almost fully vanished.

But the pursuit of authority was already ingrained in her soul. She understood deeply that collaborating with Gu Yue Chi Zhong was only a temporary solution. The only way was to devour the Mo faction. Only then would she have the ability to take back her medicine hall elder’s position.

To absorb the Mo faction, all she had to do was to eliminate their hope.

And this hope was naturally Fang Yuan.

"Divine investigator Tie, to speak the truth, I’ve been observing both of you for some time. Come with me, I’ll bring you into the clan’s forbidden area. Hehehe, normally that place would be heavily guarded. But coincidentally, right now I am in charge of protecting the forbidden grounds," Gu Yue Yao Ji laughed sinisterly.

She obviously hoped to harm Fang Yuan indirectly, but if he was innocent, she could definitely slander him using her wicked methods.

In the underground tunnel inside a hidden room, Tie Ruo Nan looked at the Gu Yue clan’s historical records.

From the first generation onwards, after Gu Yue clan was built until its golden age, and then its decline, the records contained the information for the last few hundred years. All events, big and small, were recorded in detail.

"This first generation clan leader has a mysterious origin, creating the Gu Yue village singlehandedly. He’s most likely a demonic cultivator!" Tie Ruo Nan flipped the first few pages, saying something shocking.

"That’s nothing much. Many demonic cultivators, after getting sick of roaming, would choose to spread their bloodline, and establish a clan. A few hundred years later, they would be wiped off their demonic origins, and the descendants would become righteous cultivators. Such situations are actually very common, it is nothing strange." Beside her, Tie Xue Leng said.

"Then all his previous wrongdoings, will it all be spared like that?" Tie Ruo Nan had an indignant expression. "These demonic cultivators caused all those crimes, but when the time is ripe and they feel tired, they would settle down and enjoy their old age. Isn’t this too good for them?"

Tie Xue Leng sighed deeply, "Ruo Nan. When I was young, I felt like you too, thinking that this world is in black and white. But after you see more of the world, you will find out that this world is actually grey. Many times can black turn to white, and white can turn to black. Some white can also be more devious than black, and even bear greater sins."

"And demonic cultivators also have their own grievances. Righteous Gu Masters control the cultivating resources, while demonic Gu Masters are all alone, only able to rely on their extreme methods. Those like the first generation clan leader who are able to change their ways, that is the best solution. At least he will no longer cause harm to others. Turning from black to white, he can contribute his strength towards the righteous path."

Tie Xue Leng explained and consoled, but the young girl Tie Ruo Nan did not seem to be convinced.

She shook her head, saying adamantly, "Father, it is not right for you to sympathize with demonic Gu Masters. White is white, black is black. They should be punished for making a mistake. Breaking the law, they should face judgement. If not, where would justice lie, where would fairness lie, where would the law stand?"

"This is not sympathy. Anywhere where there’s people, there are interests involved. Places that involves interests will have crime. As long as people exist, crime would never end. My child, you will find out eventually, a person’s strength is too insignificant." Tie Xue Leng’s voice was experienced and wise, but also sorrowful, "Nevermind. To the current you, it is still too early to say such things, you should concentrate on solving the case."

"Yes, father," Tie Ruo Nan pouted, not agreeing with Tie Xue Leng’s pessimistic outlook.

When people are young, they tend to think they can change the world. But after they grow up, they will eventually find out that a person being able to retain their sense of self, and not being changed by the world is already a great success.

As the girl continued to flip, her hand suddenly stopped.

"Fourth generation clan leader... Flower Wine Monk? Li... Liquor worm?" Her eyes shone!

...

Electric currents flowed as the sharp teeth edges cut like blades, shining with a cold light.

A frenzy lightning wolf pounced towards Bai Ning Bing, its wolf claw drawing a shadow in the air.

Bai Ning Bing did not have any movements. As the frenzy lightning wolf’s claw became larger in his eyes, he did not have any inclination to dodge.

Suddenly, a white rainbow shot out from his aperture.

The light rainbow burst, and white light shot down like rain. In the light rain, the elegant white snake appeared, its long whiskers bringing about a fairy-like atmosphere.

Towards this Rank five snake Gu, the arrogant frenzy lightning wolf immediately withered, wanting to retreat.

But the white form immortal snake opened its mouth and shot out a cloud smoke.

The white smoke looked slow, but quickly enveloped the lightning wolf.

The frenzy lightning wolf’s vision was obscured by the smoke, and it quickly moved back. But no matter how it moved, the white smoke followed it like a shadow, always engulfing its surroundings and not giving it any chance to escape.

White form immortal snake’s ability was this lump of smoke. After being enshrouded, one cannot tell their directions, as their vision is dyed in a white smoke.

Wild beasts like lightning wolves relied on their strong vision and had weak hearing. The frenzy lightning wolf was the same, thus its most useful sensory organ being blinded caused it to howl in panic. In its struggle, it broke many trees and mountain rocks as it became more agitated.

HOWL!

It suddenly opened its mouth and shot out a blue thunderbolt.

The thunderbolt shot towards Bai Ning Bing, but he had no plans to dodge.

Crack!

The thunderbolt hit Bai Ning Bing on the chest, penetrating it.

Bai Ning Bing lowered his head and saw the huge hole that the thunderbolt had made, allowing him to see through to the back.

But quickly, the huge hole began to freeze. Layers of white ice covered the injury and the ice slowly melted, turning into flesh.

"This is the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique’s true strength. I am ice, and ice is me. Fatal injuries to ordinary Gu Masters can be recovered in just a few seconds for me," Bai Ning Bing thought, as he slowly raised his right arm.

His right arm was ordinary broken, but relying on the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique, it had already recovered fully.

"The white form immortal snake Gu also sensed the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique, thus it entered my aperture. The Northern Dark Ice Soul physique can attract water-type Gu worms to join me! Such great strength, yet so brittle!"

Bai Ning Bing sighed at the heavens.

These days, he did not suppress his cultivation. The Northern Dark Ice Soul physique was getting stronger, but he felt that death was approaching him even faster.

"Great immortal hasn’t done anything?" At this time, Bai clan leader came over, asking in concern.

Bai Ning Bing shook his head, "This snake Gu does not recognise me, it is merely attracted by my Northern Dark Ice Soul physique and moved from the clan’s spirit spring into my aperture. Only when I am in mortal danger and in a death situation would it come out and protect me."

But the white form immortal snake was not refined by Bai Ning Bing, thus this protection also had its limits.

Like earlier, the frenzy lightning wolf’s thunderbolt was too fast, and the white form immortal snake could not react in time, thus Bai Ning Bing was hit head on.

After all, the white form immortal snake was not a defensive Gu.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, Jiang Fan and the River Swallowing Toad was the same. Although Jiang Fan had its assistance, he was still assassinated by a Gu Master.

Bai clan leader sighed. He felt intense regret and pity towards this, yet there was nothing he could do. He had already done what he could.

"Right, the three clan’s negotiation results is out. Xiong clan preserved more than half of their strength, we cannot underestimate them. Eventually the three clans came to a decision that there shall be a three-clan tournament. And the compensation will be decided by the results of the competition. Only Gu Masters aged thirty and below can enter the tournament."

"I understand." Bai Ning Bing nodded, "I can already sense it, my life is coming to an end. Having a competition at the end, I am really happy. Thank you, lord clan elder."

"No no, this is also for the sake of the clan." Bai clan leader’s expression was embarrassed. It was his suggestion in the first place, and the biggest reason for it was to squeeze out the last remaining value that Bai Ning Bing possessed.

But Bai Ning Bing’s gratitude, came from the bottom of his heart.

The white form immortal snake was unmoved, meaning that he was not fated to receive the first generation ancestor’s inheritance. But life and death are bound to occur, what fear could he have?

Bai Ning Bing had already found his path, he no longer feared. There was only one lingering battle that he could not let go of.

"Fang Yuan, the three-clan tournament, will you attend it? Don’t disappoint me, because right now, I am really really strong..."

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Sleepy.... 4am. Good night everyone. Enjoy~

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"The Flower Wine Monk begged for mercy on his knees. The fourth clan head was merciful and kind, intending to spare his life. Yet the Flower Wink Monk suddenly launched a sneak attack, and the clan head flew into a rage, killing the Flower Wine Monk on the spot. However, due to the heavy injuries from the sneak attack, he passed away not long after. Alas, demonic path members were indeed treacherous and unworthy of kindness...."

However, as Tie Ruo Nan read through this content, her eyes gradually dimmed down.

"What a pity, this Flower Wine Monk died on the spot and couldn’t leave behind an inheritance. If he could leave an inheritance, that would be perfect to explain everything," The young girl sighed inwardly.

Yet she didn’t give up and continued to flip through the Gu Yue clan records, until the time was up and Gu Yue Yao Ji rushed them out.

Fang Zheng welcomed the Tie father and daughter outside of the clan pavillion, "Were there any discoveries?"

Tie Xue Leng was silent whereas Tie Ruo Nan gave a bitter smile and shook her head.

Fang Zheng continued, "I just thought of something which might be of help. Big brother and Chi faction worked quite closely, and the Chi faction’s elder Gu Yue Chi Lian had once defended him in front of everyone. Lady Tie, do you think this Liquor worm could have been secretly handed over by elder Chi Lian to my big brother?"

"Chi faction?" Tie Ruo Nan frowned.

"Yes. Chi and Mo faction were the most influential factions of our Gu Yue clan before the wolf tide," Fang Zheng explained.

How was Fang Yuan involved with Chi faction? Tie Ruo Nan reflected on this.

She started feeling a headache; this was her first case and she had been full of confidence at first but when she actually started doing it, she felt that it was filled with difficulties.

When she had seen her father solving the cases, it was as if success was guaranteed; all the mysteries were solved with methodical and orderly arrangement. However, she realized how truly difficult it was to solve a case when it was her turn.

There seemed to be no trails sometimes whereas all kinds of weird clues seemed to emerge, causing Tie Ruo Nan to be at wit’s end.

It was like she was covered in a dense fog and she didn’t know how close or far she was from the truth.

Would this clue regarding Chi faction be of any use?

Tie Ruo Nan couldn’t help but feel at a loss, and she subconsciously looked at her father.

"Father should have already discovered some clues, right?" At this moment, the admiration in the young girl towards her father deepened further.

"If it was my father, this case should have already been solved. I am still far away from father’s level. But even if I fail, as long as father is here, the truth will come out and the killer will be punished." Tie Ruo Nan felt ashamed but also a sense of pride.

With Tie Xue Leng here, she had no worries that the criminal could get away.

But the young girl quickly shook her head, getting angry. The anger was towards herself.

"Ruo Nan, you are worthless. Didn’t you think of surpassing father? How can you surpass him if you have the mentality of always relying on him!?"

"Ruo Nan, cheer up, you can do it!" The young girl pursed her lips, inwardly encouraging herself.

Her spirit boiled up again.

She decided to overthrow her previous conjectures and start over.

"If Fang Yuan didn’t obtain the Liquor worm from an inheritance and got it from other people, then this Chi faction would be the biggest suspect. However, why would Chi faction take notice of a C grade aptitude ordinary student and secretly give him the Liquor worm?"

"What does Fang Yuan have that Chi faction felt it worthy to invest in him? Because he is Fang Zheng’s brother? No, that is almost negligible. Wait a second, it might not be Chi faction taking the initiative to invest in him. There is another possibility, and that is because Fang Yuan blackmailed them!"

"If it is truly so, what did Fang Yuan have on them to make them hold their nose and obediently compromise with a student that had yet to be a Gu Master?"

Tie Ruo Nan racked her brains and an answer seemed to gradually emerge in her mind.

But this answer was blurry like the light behind a paper window. Tie Ruo Nan could feel its existence but she couldn’t grasp and understand it.

"Father." The young girl suddenly raised her head and looked at Tie Xue Leng, "I would like to borrow the Cactus Pointer."

Tie Xue Leng replied in a relaxed voice, "The suggestion given by Cactus pointer is based upon the information the user has. It only speculates on behalf of you and might not be accurate. Are you sure you want to use it?"

The young girl nodded.

Cactus pointer was a seed.

Tie Ruo Nan buried it in the ground then used her palm to press on the soil, transferring her white silver primeval essence to it.

After several breaths, she withdrew her hand. Soon, they could see the soil loosening up, and a young sprout grew out of it.

The newborn sprout was a translucent green, and looked very fragile. It quickly grew, becoming bigger and bigger, and its color changed from fragile greenish yellow to verdant green, then finally to dark green.

Its appearance was similar to a cactus. It had thick flesh, the surface covered with sharp black thorns and was lush green all over.

Within moments, a flower bud appeared on its top part.

The white flower bud gradually grew, becoming charming and delicate. The main body of the cactus, however, was shrinking as if its moisture was being squeezed out.

Tie Ruo Nan stretched her fingers and gently plucked this flower bud. The moment the flower bud was taken out, the cactus started turning grey and completely died after a few seconds.

The cactus pointer was a Rank three consumable Gu.

Tie Ruo Nan carefully opened the flower bud.

The flower bud, however, was not wrapped up with layers of petals, instead appearing similar to a ball of paper.

When Tie Ruo Nan completely opened it, it formed into a neat and square white paper.

There were only one word written on the white paper —‘Aptitude’.

This word would mean nothing to others and might even sound ridiculous. But to Tie Ruo Nan, it was a very important tip.

The cactus pointer was used just like this; it gave insights to the Gu Masters who had racked their brains but couldn’t advance forward. It pierced the paper window and let the Gu Masters see the light.

"Right, it is aptitude!" Tie Ruo Nan shouted.

She immediately took out the letter which recorded all the intels collected by Jia Fu.

There was something written in this intel which described the details on when and at what price Gu Yue Chi Lian had bought the Cleansing Water Gu.

"It’s this! I only briefed through this earlier and neglected it, not considering the underlying meaning. But the cactus pointer speculated on my behalf and gave me the answer. This Cleansing Water Gu only has one use and that is to cleanse the foreign primeval essence auras from the aperture."

"Why did Gu Yue Chi Lian need it? Hehe, this situation is too common and happens a lot in many clans. He should have bought this for Chi faction’s inheritor. Chi faction’s inheritor should have a bad aptitude, so Gu Yue Chi Lian poured his primeval essence to raise the former’s cultivation. The Cleansing Water Gu is necessary to remove any after-effects from this action. By some chance, Fang Yuan found this secret and used it to blackmail Chi faction, thus forcing them to compromise and give him the Liquor worm."

Tie Ruo Nan kept on mumbling out her conjecture.

"Lady Tie, you are amazing. You could deduce so many things with just this word! But Gu Yue Chi Cheng clearly has B grade aptitude," Fang Zheng said.

"B grade aptitude? Hehe, does that mean it can’t be fake? It is very simple to prove this. We only need to examine Chi Cheng’s aperture and the truth will be out." Tie Ruo Nan’s gaze was burning as her mouth slightly curved upwards.

"That’s inappropriate." Tie Xue Leng, however, shook his head disapprovingly.

If this truth was found out, it would be a great blow to Chi faction, leading to turmoil among the Gu Yue village’s higher-ups and causing political conflicts.

Tie Xue Leng said, "We came here to solve a case and not to wreck havoc. In the end, we are outsiders and unless it is absolutely necessary, we can’t meddle in other clan’s politics."

Tie Ruo Nan nodded, "Father is right. Besides this, there are also other ways to prove it. I remember that clans use a Photo-audio Gu to record every important sacrificial ritual. This is a traditional practice and I believe Gu Yue clan isn’t an exception. I want to refer to the Awakening Ceremony’s image!"

...

"Divine investigator Tie, you have constantly been on the move for so many days and have gone through a lot of trouble to solve the case, please come have tea. As for the image you want to look into, it is stored in the secret room inside the underground cave which is among the clan’s restricted areas. It would be inconvenient to let you two enter, but I have already sent someone to get it. It will be here in a short while," Gu Yue Bo spoke with a smile.

"I have troubled the clan leader," Tie Xue Leng politely said.

Tie Ruo Nan and Gu Yue Fang Zheng were standing on the side.

"Divine investigator Tie, if I may be so bold to ask a favor...." Gu Yue Bo suddenly said.

Tie Xue Leng. "Oh? Please speak, clan leader."

"This is our Qing Mao Mountain’s internal affair. My clan, Bai clan and Xiong clan have always been in a deadlock but that changed due to the wolf tide. Xiong village evaded the wolf tide with malicious intentions and tried to take advantage of the wolf tide to weaken the other two clans. The negotiation earlier for compensation with them ended up in nothing. Hence, our three clans decided to hold a three-clans tournament. Only Gu Masters at age thirty or below can participate in it, and it will decide the future strength of each clan."

Upon saying this, Gu Yue Bo sighed, "Actually I have already felt that something was strange with Fang Yuan long ago, but couldn’t look into it properly because of the wolf tide. If he really is the killer, my clan absolutely won’t shield him. But I hope Divine Investigator Tie can delay this for a few days, since the three-clans competition is hosted on the day after tomorrow."

Fang Yuan killed old Wang’s whole family, but they were just mortals and it was not worth investigating. What if he killed them? It wasn’t a big deal.

However, if he really killed Jia Jin Sheng, then that would change everything.

If Gu Yue clan still protected Fang Yuan, that would mean becoming enemies with Jia family and losing the chance to trade with Jia family caravan again; it would even result in Jia family’s retaliation.

Organizations protected their inner members, but if benefits were endangered, the organization could easily give up one or two members for the greater good.

The organization’s earliest form came from ancient times. Human clans assembled together for their survival, borrowing each other’s strength to gather more food and dividing up their work to hunt more successfully.

Any organization’s essence was obtaining maximum benefits.

If one or two members obstructed the organization’s path to benefits, then sacrificing them was a natural thing.

Thus, even if there were very few elders in Gu Yue clan right now, if there came a time when they had to abandon Fang Yuan, the clan leader would have no hesitation.

However, the day after tomorrow was the three-clans competition. The results of this competition would decide their future for the next few years as well as the benefit allocation of Qing Mao mountain. As a Rank three Gu Master, Fang Yuan was a vital fighting force for the Gu Yue clan.

Just like Bai clan’s clan leader, Gu Yue Bo also wanted to squeeze out Fang Yuan’s maximum worth.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

A little late release today, I was afflicted with Busy Gu. Poor Fang Yuan. His cheat, the Spring Autumn Cicada is turning into a danger for him... and his enemies are pressing him from all sides! How will he get out of this?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"It’s about time, I can’t wait any longer."

As the night fell, Fang Yuan opened his eyes in a dark room.

He already took off his Gu Master uniform and was now wearing a black gown which covered his legs. Matched with his long black hair, he would appear like a specter as he moved in the dark.

He was already used to having long hair in his previous life. Some Gu worms needed long hair to show their abilities, like the Black Hair Gu, Steel Hair Gu and so on.

Having long hair was quite convenient as well. You could just cut it short if there came a time where you had to alter your appearance. But for short hair, to grow it in a short period, one needed to rely on specific Gu worms.

Not long ago, he had made an agreement with Gu Yue Mo Chen. Right now, he had already received the Pig Iron Gu and all forty thousand primeval stones. The only thing remaining was that healing grass Gu.

"I can only forget about the healing Gu now. How can everything go as one wishes, reality is full of helpless choices...."

Fang Yuan sighed, then stood up and lightly opened the door before using the Stealth Scales Gu and disappearing into the night.

He was forced by the circumstances to make this move.

Tie father and daughter were drawing in closer, and his plan to be an envoy to Xiong village had been stopped too.

Xiong village was able to preserve most of their strength; Bai clan and Gu Yue clan didn’t dare to be overly forceful, thus the compensation talk ended in failure. The three sides then decided on holding a three-clan competition.

Mo faction might have intentionally recruited Fang Yuan, but this move caused

Fang Yuan to be in the middle of the political struggle and draw every elder’s hostility.

Also adding in Bai Ning Bing who was growing stronger as he approached his death, the whole situation was becoming more unfavorable to Fang Yuan, forcing him into an impasse.

Even if Fang Yuan was an old fox, he still needed strength to support his schemes. Facing such a situation, despite him already using up all his efforts and strength, making much faster progress than he did in his previous life, his Rank three initial stage cultivation was still not enough to overturn the situation.

"The situation is dire, I can only take a risk and bet on this method!" Fang Yuan thought hard, placing his hopes on the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus.

As long as he plucked the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, the spirit spring in the underground cave would be wasted. The clan was sure to madly investigate, but what else besides the investigation?

The spirit spring would already be disabled, and even if they got the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus and destroyed it or put it back into the spirit spring again, the spirit spring would not recover.

What could the clan do to survive then?

There was only one thing: that was to seize a new spirit spring!

However, there were only three spirit springs in Qing Mao mountain and each were occupied by one of the three clans. If one was destroyed by Fang Yuan, then Gu Yue clan had only one choice - to make a choice between the two.

This choice was war, a war with either Bai village or Xiong village.

Only by seizing one of the spirit springs could Gu Yue clan have the foundation to continue its existence.There was no need to talk of Gu Masters being able to support their cultivation without the support of spirit spring.

This move was too dangerous, though. But Fang Yuan had no other choice as the Spring Autumn Cicada was recovering so fast that his aperture was already starting to feel a burden. He didn’t have much time, so he could only fight back for a sliver of chance at survival and seek life in death.

...

The hall was bright with all the lights.

A Gu Master had already delivered the Photo-audio Gu, but this Gu was currently in Gu Yue Bo’s hand."Divine Investigator Tie, what did you think about my request?" Gu Yue Bo asked smilingly.

Tie Ruo Nan lightly snorted.

Tie Xue Leng ruminated for a while before agreeing, "Alright, if Fang Yuan really turns out to be the killer, I will leave enough time for him to participate in the three-clans competition."

"Father...." Tie Ruo Nan’s eyes flashed with a strange light; this was not her father’s style.

"Hehe, Divine Investigator’s words are worth a lot and he never breaks his promises. This humble one fully trusts you and also thanks you for understanding." Gu Yue Bo’s smile became more gentle, however he coldly hummed inside.

Gu Yue Yao Ji had secretly brought the Tie father and daughter into the underground cave and let them look through the clan’s official historical records. How could he as a clan leader not know of this?

But he had to restrain his anger because of the approaching tournament and also the complicated political struggles in the clan.

Tie Xue Leng might be a powerful Rank five expert, but he had no way to appease the dissatisfaction in Gu Yue Bo’s heart.

"Fortunately, the genuine contents are all recorded in the clan’s secret records and only the successive clan leaders can hold them. That official history is for the outsiders to look." Gu Yue Bo was secretly feeling smug.

Gu Yue clan’s historical records were divided into official records and secret records.

Official records were hidden in the secret room in the underground cave and its contents were to brainwash the later generations and was a fake, in fact.

But the secret records recorded all the genuine details without any fake details. There were even records of some secrets that could never be divulged.

For instance, the ritual for summoning the Blood Guillotine Gu which could never be recorded in the official records, but was recorded in detail in the secret records.

"Gu Yue clan leader, my father has agreed to your request, now show us the image." Tie Ruo Nan’s tone showed her bad mood.

"Even if Divine Investigator Tie hadn’t agreed, I would have fully cooperated with your investigation," Gu Yue Bo gently clarified, then he lightly pinched his fingers, smashing the Photo-audio Gu.

Although the Gu broke into pieces, it instead formed into a ball of seven-colored smoke which contained all sorts of noise.

Gu Yue Bo lightly blew on it; this smoke floated into a wall, but didn’t pass through.

Like an ink drop falling into water, a colorful imprint began to appear on the spotless wall.

The imprint grew larger until it formed into an image of the former Awakening Ceremony.

Within this image, Fang Zheng quickly found himself and also many other familiar faces.

All these faces held looks of excitement as they looked all around the cave, their faces full of the immaturity of young. They were like young chicks who had just learned to flap their wings and fly out of the nest.

"That is Fang Yuan....." Similarly, Tie Ruo Nan soon found Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was walking within the group, and although he was looking all around like the rest, his gaze was tranquil and detached. In the group of similar ages, he was like a crane within a group of chicken. If one didn’t specifically pay attention to him, normal people wouldn’t find any differences between him and the rest.

However, the group in the hall right now were all concentrating on him, exposing this peculiarity.

"Eh? This Fang Yuan is really strange." Right now, even Gu Yue Bo couldn’t help but reveal a slightly surprised expression.

The scene on the wall changed to when the group of youths reached the sea of flowers.

The Awakening Ceremony began, and each of the youngsters stepped in the underground river and walked towards the sea of flowers on the opposite bank.

The light of the Hope Gu rose and fell.

There were also the elders’ voices which could be clearly heard.

The scenes appeared with such clarity that it felt like one was really there.

First, it was Gu Yue Mo Bei who was found to have B grade aptitude, causing an uproar, then Gu Yue Chi Cheng was also tested to have B grade aptitude.

"It really is strange, this Gu Yue Chi Cheng looks too nervous. His body movements are stiff and his skin color is also not normal, it is just that the light in the underground is dim. But if one carefully looks into it, they will find that something has been applied on his body and that is what is attracting the Hope Gu. Hehe, this is clearly a cheat." Tie Ruo Nan was confident as she observed this.

But in the next moment, she immediately frowned.

It was Fang Yuan’s turn. He stepped into the river and started moving towards the opposite bank.

The light from the Hope Gu wasn’t vigorous. The higher the hope, the greater the disappointment, and the sighs from the youths and the elders could be heard by everyone in the group.

Everything seemed normal, but Tie Ruo Nan’s frowns got even deeper. Because Fang Yuan’s expression was calm all along the way.

At that time, his back was facing the elders and the youths; they couldn’t see his expression. However, as Tie Ruo Nan observed as a spectator, she saw that Fang Yuan’s expression didn’t change at all, indifferent and cold.

It was as if, as if.....he already knew this would happen!

"This is impossible! If it was me in his place, a fifteen year old with everyone’s expectations on me, but was tested to only have C grade aptitude, how could I not feel the least bit of frustration, disappointment and discouragement? How can this be, how can this be!?" Tie Ruo Nan’s frowns were almost forming a knot.

Huge doubts and suspicions covered her mind, even stifling her breaths.

Her heart was beating loudly at this moment as all her thoughts flashed through her mind.

What is going on?

How could this be?

"Wait a moment, aptitude.... Could it be?!" Tie Ruo Nan suddenly raised her head. Her intuition had activated and an extremely bold and crazy conjecture formed in her mind.

Light and shadow reflected upon Fang Zheng’s face.

The Awakening Ceremony had been the most important turning point in his life.

Before the Awakening Ceremony, he was living a low and insignificant life; a nobody. After the Awakening Ceremony, however, his life was completely changed. He was basked in the lights and his confidence also burst out.

In his memories, the Awakening Ceremony was a picture of blurriness; he had passed through it without even realizing it.

Right now, as he observed this as a spectator, complicated emotions rose up in his heart which he couldn’t explain with words.

Fang Zheng looked at himself when it was his turn. He remembered how inferior and weak he had felt at that time.

Soon, he saw how he had tumbled down into the river and struggled to get up, and was pulled up by his big brother Fang Yuan, how he had cut out a sorry figure.

A smile appeared on his face — this was the former him, the one who was ridiculed by many!

Then he saw himself walking absent-mindedly towards the opposite bank, and saw his body being enveloped by the lights of the Hope Gu along with the shocks and admiration of many.

That time was a moment of glory, a moment of miracle!

An A grade aptitude, his life would no longer be the same from that moment!

"Fang Zheng, I have a question." Tie Ruo Nan suddenly spoke, breaking Fang Zheng’s recollection.

"What is it? Please ask. I will definitely answer everything I know," Fang Zheng turned around with a smile.

"It’s about your big brother. When your big brother pulled you up, I saw his mouth moving, but there was too much noise in the surroundings. What did he say to you, could you tell me the exact words he told?" Tie Ruo Nan asked with a bright gaze.

"His words....." Fang Zheng tried to recall, "He seemed to have said...road?"

"Right. It was road." Fang Zheng’s eyes brightened, "I remember it. He said to me, ‘The road to the future will be interesting’. Huh? Strange, I didn’t think anything of it at that time, but now that I recall it, I think big brother’s words contained profound meaning... as if, as if he already knew I had A grade aptitude!"

"No, he didn’t mean the A grade aptitude, but something else." Tie Ruo Nan’s body trembled, her expression complicated as she let out a breath of turbid air.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Tie Ruo Nan - Japanese detective novel righteous MC

Fang Zheng - Beta JP novel MC

Fang Yuan - Your favourite villain character

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Lady Tie, what do you mean?" Fang Zheng did not understand.

Tie Ruo Nan stretched out her finger, pointing at the wall, "Look at him, Gu Yue Fang Yuan! Don’t you think he looks way too calm? When finding out that he has C grade talent, while his blood related brother has A grade talent, normal people would definitely have some reaction to it. But him? Not a trace of emotion! The surrounding praises and mockery cannot move his heart. Don’t you find this strange? Throughout the process, he is too calm."

Tie Ruo Nan’s words, attracted everyone’s gaze.

As this scene replayed, all the gazes on the wall landed on Fang Yuan’s silhouette.

Fang Yuan stood among the crowd, standing alone, upright. A dark shadow engulfed half his body.

And this scenario, was a huge contrast to the other side.

His own brother, Gu Yue Fang Zheng, was moving step by step, his body bathed in the Hope Gu’s pure white light.

At this moment, the elder and younger brother had a swap of identities. The former fell from grace, falling to the lowest point in his life, engulfed by shadows. The latter being blessed by fate, shining in brilliance, climbing his way to the top.

"A fifteen year old youngster, going through such a catastrophic change in his life. But yet, on his body there is no trace of disappointment, perplexity or jealousy. Only calmness, he stood among the crowd, silently watching like he was an outsider, like he was watching a show," Tie Ruo Nan’s voice came appropriately.

Yes.

Fang Yuan watched silently.

As the shadows engulfed half his body, his face was expressionless, except the pale colour of a youngster’s skin.

Gu Yue Bo stared at the wall, solemn.

Fang Zheng felt a strong chill emerging from deep within his body.

Brother, what in the world are you......

"Even if he had a prediction towards the Awakening Ceremony’s results, his heart would definitely feel a change in emotions, and he definitely won’t be as calm as this. I used the Cactus Pointer earlier, and always thought that the word ‘aptitude’ was referring to Gu Yue Chi Cheng. But now that I think about it, it might not refer to Chi Cheng, but most likely Fang Yuan!" Tie Ruo Nan said.

"Lady Tie, what do you mean? I don’t understand it at all?" Fang Zheng was more confused.

Tie Ruo Nan raised a finger. "Only one type of situation would cause Fang Yuan to be so calm. That is, he has a trump card that no one knows. Only one situation would cause him to not be jealous, and that is because he has something greater. If two people walked together and one person finds a primeval stone, only if the other finds ten or a hundred would they not be jealous, and have a calm emotion. Fang Yuan is like that."

"You are saying, Fang Yuan cheated and concealed his true aptitude? He is not a C grade talent?" Gu Yue Bo understood Tie Ruo Nan’s words, "But if he is A or B grade, why would he not display it outright?"

"Fang Yuan had great wisdom since young!" Tie Ruo Nan’s lips curled, her expression confident as she radiated utter confidence. "These few days, I’ve read some of his poems. With such visions and aspirations, even father was full of praise for him. Such a genius, he naturally has his own schemes."

Gu Yue Bo shook his head, "Just with this alone, it still doesn’t confirm anything. Concealing aptitude and revealing his aptitude gives two completely different treatment. Even if Fang Yuan didn’t know this, after a year in the academy, he should be clear of it."

"Of course he knew, that’s why he did not dare to reveal it." Tie Ruo Nan did not beat about the bush, saying confidently.

"What do you mean?" Gu Yue Bo was also lost now.

"Gu Yue clan leader." Tie Ruo Nan turned around, looking at Gu Yue Bo solemnly. "Do you know about Ren Zu’s ten children?"

Gu Yue Bo was first stunned, before he immediately reacted, understanding Tie Ruo Nan’s true meaning.

HE WAS SHOCKED!

His iris expanded, his mouth agape, not having any of his clan leader disposition.

This was the first time Fang Zheng saw Gu Yue Bo in such a state.

Ren Zu’s ten children, eldest son Verdant Great Sun, second daughter Desolate Ancient Moon... the ten children’s aptitude defied heaven, thus heaven was wary and did not give them a long lifespan. In the Gu world, the ten children also represented the top ten most extreme aptitudes!

That is – the ten extreme physiques!

"Ren Zu’s ten children died one by one, and Ren Zu was about to die of old age. But at the end, Ren Zu gathered the corpse of his ten children and sacrificed himself, all going into the stomach of the Derivation Gu. Derivation Gu’s stomach burst, exploding and countless life spreading across the land, creating the first batch of mortals. These mortals did not have Ren Zu or the ten children’s talent, but they could cultivate after awakening their aperture. Humanity thus grew and developed, forming today’s size. Of course, that is all a mythological story."

"But according to the story, every one of us has Ren Zu and his ten children’s bloodline in us!" Tie Ruo Nan continued, "The only thing is that most people have diluted bloodlines, or due to intermarriage, restricted each other and caused it to remain dormant. But some people when born have stronger bloodlines, and as they aged or cultivated, they would start going towards the extreme, with one bloodline dominating the rest. When it appears, that is the ten extreme physiques!"

"What is this ten extreme physique?" Fang Zheng asked.

"Don’t tell me, Fang Yuan has one of the ten extreme aptitudes?!" Gu Yue Bo was stunned.

"Very likely so! Only the ten extreme physique would cause Fang Yuan to be so calm, and does not have much need for cultivation resources. And only the ten extreme physique that dominates the A grade talent can cause Fang Yuan to not have a hint of jealousy or envy, and only the ten extreme physique can cause Fang Yuan to not reveal his aptitude, as he fears being killed earlier, thus choosing to conceal the truth!" Tie Ruo Nan spoke quickly.

Even Tie Xue Leng would not think of rebirth. Not to mention the young girl. Under all sorts of coincidences, she managed to conjecture a conclusion that was completely the opposite of the truth.

Hearing so, everyone was dumbfounded.

Tie Ruo Nan’s analysis had proof and evidence, causing others to believe it. If not for this reason, what other explanation is there?

"Yes, yes! The ten extreme physiques, ten extreme physiques... It has to be the Ancient Moon Desolate Yin physique!"

Gu Yue Bo’s heart was in turmoil, so excited that his body shuddered.

Others might not know this, but he had the clan’s secret history and knew many ancient secrets.

Hundreds of years ago, the first generation ancestor established the village at this spot and named it Gu Yue village. The truth is, the first Gen was not named Gu Yue at all!

Why did he pick the name ‘Gu Yue’? It was a mystery.

But before Gen 1 died, he once sighed, "The bloodlines shall be passed down, there will be a great plan of centuries, Ancient Moon Desolate Yin, the world shall shudder!"

He left behind those parting words, and in his will, it predicted that the Gu Yue clan would one day in the future produce a Gu Master with one of the ten extreme aptitudes, the Ancient Moon Desolate Yin body! He would cause the world to tremble and bring the Gu Yue clan towards a new golden age! He also mentioned to his descendants that if one day such a physique appeared, they had to be brought into the blood pond graveyard.

As the clan leader, Gu Yue Bo knew the weakness of the ten extreme physiques, but he had studied this will deeply, and found that the first generation ancestor seemed to know a method to curb this weakness. And this method was kept in his coffin in the graveyard, in an eternal slumber with him.

If the Ancient Moon Desolate Yin physique really appeared, bring him to the coffin......

"To think that Gu Yue Fang Yuan is that prophesied genius – the Ancient Moon Desolate Yin physique!" Gu Yue Bo screamed in his heart.

"This cannot be. Under everyone’s watchful eye, how can big brother cheat under everyone’s gaze?" Fang Zheng was completely taken aback, shaking his head, unable to accept this theory.

Tie Ruo Nan looked at him in pity. "If even Chi Cheng could cheat, why couldn’t Fang Yuan? The ten extreme physiques have endless potential, unlimited possibilities. Maybe Fang Yuan awakened early, and maybe he deceived the bamboo gentleman, due to the ten extreme physique. Or maybe Jia Jin Sheng was killed by Fang Yuan, because he found out this secret of Fang Yuan’s."

"Tie family young lady, speak with caution." Gu Yue Bo’s expression was unhappy, speaking in a low tone, "Words cannot be spoken mindlessly. Whether Jia Jin Sheng is killed by Fang Yuan, that is not confirmed yet. Fang Yuan is my clan’s member, and even if he did commit the act, how we are going to answer to the Jia family is also our matter. You are only here to investigate the case."

Gu Yue clan leader’s attitude had changed 180 degrees.

Before, he had thought Fang Yuan was a C grade talent with no possibility of investment. But now, Fang Yuan was the Ancient Moon Desolate Yin physique?!

Once it involved the first gen’s prophecy and will, his value completely changed.

He had to be protected, and even if the Jia family was offended, there will be no regret!

"Oh crap. This Gu Yue clan leader just turned on his words. How shameless is he, changing his attitude so quickly! I should not have revealed the truth of the ten extreme physiques so soon. The ten extreme aptitudes rule over the A grade talent, so it seems the Gu Yue clan leader wants to protect Fang Yuan now. This will bring great obstruction to solving the case. What do I do now, father?"

Tie Ruo Nan’s heart sank, and gritting her teeth, she subconsciously looked for her father’s figure.

"Eh, where’s father?" The young girl was stunned.

Divine investigator Tie was still around earlier, but in the blink of an eye he was gone.

This discovery caused Gu Yue Bo to tense up.

Where could Tie Xue Leng have gone at this time? Gu Yue clan leader naturally related it to Fang Yuan.

"Fang Zheng, I am going to look for your big brother. Go inform the other clan elders, and quickly assemble to look for me!" Leaving behind his instructions, Gu Yue Bo activated his Gu worm and flew out from the window.

Tie Ruo Nan snorted, running out of the room towards Fang Yuan’s residence.

In the entire hall, only Fang Zheng was left.

"How... how can this be?!"

Fang Zheng’s current state was not optimistic. His face was pale, his body on the verge of falling over, his spine devoid of all strength.

He felt that his world was covered in darkness.

He felt his world collapsing!

How could it become like this?

"Brother’s aptitude is the ten extreme physique? My A grade talent is nothing compared to him, a complete failure compared to him!"

As he thought and thought, Fang Zheng’s tears fell down.

At this moment, all of his spirit was dampened.

All this time, his greatest achievement was beating Fang Yuan in aptitude. All his confidence was built upon this. But right now, he was told this cruel fact – his aptitude was nothing compared to his brother!

His proudest and most confident area had been suppressed by Fang Yuan.

The confidence he had built up after so long, collapsed in an instant.

"BIG BROTHER!" He raised his head, allowing his tears to flow like a river.

He screamed in his heart, "From start to end, you’ve been watching a show all along! Seeing me jump up and down, looking at my clown-like performance?"

The corners of his eye looked at the wall again.

The images turned and moved, and people moved all over the place with countless voices praising Fang Zheng’s performance. However, Fang Yuan alone stood among the people, his face calm as he watched.

Peacefully watching just like that......

Fang Zheng suddenly felt that in this image, he who was covered in this light of hope, was so childish, so eye-piercing. In his heart, Fang Yuan’s calm dark irises showed a divine expression.

His image was gradually enlarged, getting taller and taller until he was unable to climb over, as high as a mountain reaching into the clouds.

Those calm eyes looked at him from that mountain high up in the sky, staring at Fang Zheng’s pathetic appearance who was at the foot of the mountain.

Those eyes were like they were saying – Fang Zheng, my laughable little brother, you won’t do, you won’t do, won’t do...

Like the echoes in a valley, reverbing in Fang Zheng’s heart.

He felt a strong depression.

Unimaginable depression, suppressing him until he could not breathe properly.

He thought he had gotten rid of this feeling, but to think that that today this feeling assaulted his heart again.

In fact, it was more intense than before by a hundred times!

"AHHHHHH! I’m going to die, I’m going to die!" Fang Zheng’s face twitched, veins popping on his forehead. He was drowning in his delusions, gripping his own throat tightly.

With a plop, he fell onto the ground kneeling.

Because he lacked oxygen, his face went red and his tongue stretched out, his eyes gradually popping out.

"No! I don’t want to die, I really don’t want to die!!" His other hand grabbed the tile on the ground, but as he used too much strength, even his nails broke and blood bled. The intense pain increased Fang Zheng’s desire to live!

His body had no injuries, but in his heart, he had received a fatal injury.

He could not get up, for the pride sustaining him had already shattered.

He felt that he did not have the face to see anyone; he was unable to face up to reality, to his older brother. He had become a huge joke, an ironic clown.

He was heart was like dying ash, but this ash still had small embers burning.

"So what if he is the ten extreme aptitude? Brother, you did something wrong. You killed someone, you should not have done so! Right, that’s right! You have to pay for your sins of murdering, big brother, Jia Jin Sheng was killed by you right? You walked on the wrong path, you did something wrong, so what if your aptitude is better than me?!"

Ring......

Something seemed to have sounded off near his ear.

A lump of fire started to burn in Fang Zheng’s heart.

The dying ember resurrected!

The hand gripping his throat, gradually let go.

Fang Zheng’s body was covered in sweat as he kneeled on the ground, one hand sustaining himself as the hand was full of injuries from grabbing the tile.

Droplets of sweat flowed down his face and nose, and onto the file.

His distorted horrifying face had gradually calmed down.

A gust of wind blew along the door and windows, into this hall.

The cold wind of the night sky stimulated his body as he shuddered.

"HEHEHEHEHEHEHE..." Fang Zheng half laid on the ground as he laughed, his voice shrill and eerie.

The light of the fire danced around his face along with the wind. As it shone on the young man’s face, it was not of warmth and brightness, but it resembled the devil’s dance.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Reminder that this book ends at 199 chapters.

Reminder that Gu Yue means Ancient Moon. So the ’Ancient Moon’ in Desolate Ancient Moon has the same characters as Gu Yue.

Also lastly, reminder that cliffhangers will be ongoing until this book ends. The ride from next chapter onwards will keep rising like a crescendo...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"There’s no one here!" Turning the house upside down, Gu Yue Bo did not find Fang Yuan anywhere. A huge rock weighed on his heart. With Fang Yuan and Tie Xue Leng’s sudden disappearance, it easily caused him to relate them together.

"Speak, where is Fang Yuan?" Gu Yue Bo’s face was grim like water, as he screamed at Tie Ruo Nan who just arrived.

"How would I know where Fang Yuan is?" Tie Ruo Nan’s attitude was tough. Even against a Rank four expert, she did not relent.

"Hmph, why did Tie Xue Leng go missing? Tie family’s young lady, can you give me an explanation?" Gu Yue Bo said as he got closer to Tie Ruo Nan.

The young girl’s expression was slightly stunned. The truth was, this matter had been very peculiar from the start.

The original plan was that her father and her would come here next year. Back then, Tie Xue Leng was solving another case when a white crane suddenly descended from the sky.

The white crane carried a letter, and passed it to Tie Xue Leng.

After seeing this letter, Tie Xue Leng changed his plans and put down the case at hand, heading immediately towards Qing Mao mountain.

If not for the letter, the Tie family father and daughter would not have gotten here so early.

As his daughter, Tie Ruo Nan knew her father well. Normally, only exceptional cases would cause Tie Xue Leng to make such a decision.

But, what caused her to not understand was that this Qing Mao mountain case was only about Jia Jin Sheng’s death.

Although Jia Jin Sheng’s death involved the asset struggle of the Jia family, its severity level was merely average, and was far below the point where the divine investigator has to put so much emphasis on.

Towards this, Tie Ruo Nan was always doubtful.

And now, Tie Xue Leng mysteriously disappeared, not even telling his own daughter.

Where did he go? What did he do?

"Father, you have an injury, please take care of your body." Tie Ruo Nan was worried.

This situation had happened several times before. Every time, it was when Tie Xue Leng was fighting against a strong foe and could not distract himself to protect Tie Ruo Nan, thus choosing to battle alone.

His injuries right now were caused by a strong foe under such circumstances previously.

"Although father is injured, he is after all a Rank five expert. Ordinary Rank four Gu Masters are not his match. Father, I believe in you, I will wait for you to return!" Tie Ruo Nan’s eyes shone with light as she encouraged herself.

Gu Yue Bo got closer as the young girl raised her head, staring right at the Gu Yue clan leader. "Explanation? You want an explanation, but does it mean I need to give you one?"

Gu Yue Bo’s face grew even grimmer as he said, "Little wretch, you sure talk tough, it seems I can only take you captive and use you to exchange for our clan’s Fang Yuan!"

"Hehehe." Tie Ruo Nan laughed instead. "Gu Yue clan leader, would you really dare to do such a thing? My uncle is the current Tie clan leader, do you want to cross swords with my Tie family?"

Gu Yue Bo stopped in his tracks.

He was anxious and almost forgot.

Tie family!

It was but a super clan, having thousands of years of legacy, standing strong even today. Standing tall in the Tie clan mountain fort was the Demon Suppression Tower, imprisoning countless demonic Gu Masters, the symbol of the righteous faction.

Gu Yue clan was only a slightly average clan, and was smaller than Jia clan. But Jia clan was also merely a young clan, unable to compare with the Tie clan.

Even in the entire Southern border, the Tie clan is a first class powerhouse, a large clan with strong foundations!

Tie Ruo Nan’s words softened. "Gu Yue clan leader, I am not here to be enemies with you. But please believe in my sincerity. I do not know where father went, but I will not leave or secretly run away. The Tie family only dies in battle, there are no cowards that run from battle. Not only will I stay here, I will also arrest the criminal that killed Jia Jin Sheng!"

"Fang Yuan might not be the murderer!" Gu Yue Bo frowned, showing a fierce expression.

"But he might be!" Tie Ruo Nan stared, her heroism overflowing; at this point she was refusing to relent.

Both sides stared for a long time.

Tie Ruo Nan continued, "Fang Yuan went missing, so it is very likely that he is escaping for his crimes, thus he has greater suspicion. But I will definitely not malign an innocent party!"

"Hmph, I hope so." Gu Yue Bo swung his sleeve and left.

Fifteen minutes later....

Gurgle gurgle.

The spirit spring’s whirlpool moved violently as a lotus image flickered above the spring water like an image.

Pieces of primeval stones were thrown in by Fang Yuan, causing the appearance of the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus to become clearer.

"Earlier at the classmate gathering, they gave me around ten thousand primeval stones. Together with Gu Yue Mo Chen’s forty thousand, I’ve already thrown them all in. Why is it that this Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus still hasn’t shown its true body?"

Fang Yuan stared intently through the crystal walls, glaring at the center of the spirit spring, feeling uncertain.

The Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus was very precious. After continuous advancing and reaching Rank six, its value would be no less than the Spring Autumn Cicada.

Even in his previous life, Fang Yuan had only heard of it, and never interacted with it.

Thus right now, it was his first time seeing one, and so he was slightly unsure.

But he soon calmed himself, laughing, "Around fifty thousand primeval stones, it’s more than enough. Why am I worrying over nothing here? So what if the refinement fails? Hehehe."

Thinking so, he no longer hesitated. Taking in a deep breath, he jumped up, knocking onto the crystal wall.

This wall was formed by the Moat Gu.

When Fang Yuan knocked onto it, it was like jumping into the water. There was a ripple in the walls as he was instantly swallowed up.

Water surrounded Fang Yuan from all directions.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes, but he could not see the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus.

The Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus could only be seen through the water crystal walls before extraction.

Fang Yuan knew this well, and was not surprised. He had already estimated the distance, and even accounted for the refraction of the light due to the water, and grabbed according to his memory.

This grab, was like grabbing out of thin air, conjuring a lotus.

The lotus was blue and white, its petals closed, looking like a lamp filled with a holy aura. But it had its own consciousness, and even though it was grabbed by Fang Yuan, it resisted.

But that was nothing!

Just by leaking a little of the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura, this Rank three flower Gu was instantly refined.

Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus obtained!

In the spring water, Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a smile.

He willed, and the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus turned into a white blue light, shooting into his aperture.

Without the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, the numerous whirlpools in the spirit spring vanished. The spring water that was filled with vitality turned into a puddle of still water without any signs of life.

"The spirit spring is no more. This place is no longer safe, I have to leave as soon as possible." Fang Yuan’s expression turned serious, and just as he was about to leave, something suddenly happened!

Deep in the spirit spring, a blinding blood colored light shot out.

A large suction force suddenly appeared. Caught off guard, Fang Yuan was sucked deep into the water.

The spring water turned red, becoming blood water, wrapping around Fang Yuan completely, dragging him down.

Sky Canopy Gu! Thunderwings Gu!

In the moment of crisis, Fang Yuan screamed in his heart and a white armor appeared on his body. At the same time, a pair of large lightning wings appeared behind his back.

Thunderwings spread, giving Fang Yuan an upward force. But the blood water came endlessly, and its suction force became greater and greater; there was no way to oppose it.

Puff......

Hearing the water all around him, Fang Yuan was dragged by the currents, along the tunnel, heading straight down.

Just when his breath was used up, the surrounding pressure vanished.

Fang Yuan took a deep breath. At least he did not die of suffocation, but he found that he was falling from a high spot.

He subconsciously activated his wings, but the Thunderwings Gu was in bad shape.

The originally strong wings, were tired and soft.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank. He tried his best to maintain his balance in the air, slowing his descent.

This was an area underground. It was not dark, but filled with red light. Fang Yuan was falling from about fifteen metres, and below him, was a pond.

But this underground pond was not of the transparent colour; it was red, like blood water.

No, it IS blood water!

The piercing blood stench assaulted Fang Yuan as he continued to fall.

This situation was weird no matter how he looked at it, so for safety, Fang Yuan did not want to land in this bloody pond.

Chainsaw Golden Centipede!

He activated the Chainsaw Golden Centipede, his palm entering the centipede’s mouth and swinging it like a whip.

The golden centipede’s body stretched to the longest, and its tail stabbed into the mountain wall at the side.

Fang Yuan willed with his mind, and the golden centipede’s body constricted. This way, it brought his body to the side of the mountain wall.

These walls were slippery and did not have a good landing spot. But as Fang Yuan relied on the Chainsaw Golden Centipede, he managed to find an uneven area and placed his feet above.

"Where the fuck is this?" Stabilizing his body, Fang Yuan immediately observed the surroundings.

According to his estimations, this should be in a place deeper underground, even below the underground cave.

"How can there be such a place?" Fang Yuan was shocked. In his previous life, he was not strong enough to learn about the secrets of the higher-ups.

The truth is, this was the blood pond graveyard, the forbidden grounds that buried the first generation’s coffin. Even among clan elders, only one or two knew this secret.

Fang Yuan looked down. This blood pond shone with a bloody radiance. Its circumference was even larger than the village, emitting an eerie and scary aura.

At the top of the cave, there was up to a hundred holes that had water gushing down, bringing the shells, turtles, snakes and fish from the river with it.

Swoosh swoosh...

Streams of water continued to pour down from the holes, entering into the blood pond.

The blood water was turbulent as numerous seafood moved around, entering the pond. However, in a few breaths, all the blood in their bodies were sucked out. They turned into dry corpses and floated on the surface of the water, appearing and disappearing as the waves moved them about.

The blood pond’s redness only intensified.

As Fang Yuan looked on, his iris shrunk a little. If he had landed in this pond, even with the Sky Canopy Gu’s protection, he would not be in good shape.

He continued to observe, and other than fresh dry corpses, there were also some bones in the water.

Some were fish bones, bear bones, and even human skeletons.

This was a giant burial ground; it was creepy, and bloody.

The ripples and waves in the blood pond raged on and swept into the surrounding walls, the bright red and glowing blood water entering the surrounding soil. This caused the soil to all turn into a bright red color, turning into red soil.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Oh shit, Fang Yuan dropped into a nasty place! What next?? Find out tomorrow!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Wait a second, red soil?"

Fang Yuan’s mind jolted at the sight.

He stretched his hand out and grabbed the wall beside him, taking out a lump of red soil.

This red soil was very soft and emitted a faint red light. Fang Yuan merely pressed it lightly, but it crumbled down.

"So, it was like this." He seemed to have come to a realization.

The first time he had entered the secret cave inside the rock crack, he saw that the secret cave was full of this red soil which emitted faint glow; there was no need for any other lighting source.

He had felt it weird at the time because Qing Mao mountain’s soil was blue-black in color. He had thought this was arranged by the Flower Wine Monk, but now it seemed that the source was this strange blood lake.

Fang Yuan felt even more wary; his five hundred years of experience had almost become an intuition.

"This place is not only strange, but also dangerous. I don’t have the time to dilly-dally, I need to think of how to leave here." Fang Yuan raised his head and looked at the cave walls, where hundreds of holes were in the top part of the wall; which was the one connected to the spirit spring?

Fang Yuan hesitated for a moment.

Water could flow down here, but it didn’t mean that the passages were wide enough for a human to pass through.

"And...." Fang Yuan looked grave as he tried shaking his two wings.

However, he couldn’t control these thunderwings perfectly like before, and the originally clear blue thunder was now stained with some scarlet; it gave off a contradictory feeling of power and weakness existing at the same time.

The Thunderwings Gu had become unreliable, it was very possible for it to screw up and drop Fang Yuan in the middle of flight.

Swoosh....

An inexplicable undercurrent surged up from within the blood lake, giving off the enormous aura of Rank five gu.

"That is...." Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk; a long shadow gradually appeared in the blood lake.

Its length surpassed forty meters and its width over six meters.

This was an enormous python; it dwelled in the depths of the blood lake, but now that it had smelled out the scent of flesh on Fang Yuan, it came out to begin the hunt!

"Damn it....." Fang Yuan felt a pressing urge in his heart.

Right now, he was relying on the Chainsaw Golden Centipede to puncture the wall, barely managing to hang onto the soft red soil. And with his long hair and black gown, he looked like a black ant compared to the enormous blood lake.

Hundreds of black dots appeared in the blood lake and rose up, just like a travelling shoal of fish.

Whooshhh.....

They were much faster than the giant python and flew out of the blood lake within moments, revealing their appearance.

These were not fish, but bats.

These blood colored bats had two long pointed ears with two pairs of wings. The main pair of wings were rather big, whereas the secondary pair of wings was on the smaller side and was below the main wings.

They didn’t have claws, but the edges of the two pairs of wings were as sharp as steel blades.

"Rank three — bladewing blood bat Gu?" A name immediately appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind.

These bladewing blood bat groups were directing their intense murderous aura towards him, but the first thing that appeared in his mind was ‘that’ image.

In the image from the Photo-audio Gu, the Flower Wine Monk’s whole body was covered with blood, with severe injuries to the point of being near death.

Moonshadow Gu was not able to cause such injuries, but these bladewing blood bats were a different matter.

"Could it be that the Flower Wine Monk had come to this place and was injured by these bladewing blood bats?" Fang Yuan’s thoughts revolved rapidly.

Flower Wine Monk’s death had been shrouded in riddles. Now, it appeared extremely likely that it was due to this place.

"Bladewing blood bat...." Fang Yuan murmured. In fact, this Gu wasn’t a stranger to him.

Even though this Gu was a Rank three Gu, it was very easy to feed, its food being blood.

In his previous life, he had established the Bloodwing Devil Sect, and the symbol of the sect was precisely the bladewing blood bat. The resources from the devil sect were more than enough to support close to ten thousand bladewing blood bat Gu, allowing the sect to establish a terrifying might and spread terror.

More precisely, he owed his success to bladewing blood bats.

After over four hundred years in his previous life, he had accidently obtained an inheritance from the Blood Sea Ancestor. With the colonies of bladewing blood bats and his own Rank five cultivation, he became an overlord of a region.

This Blood Sea Ancestor was a Rank seven demonic path Gu Master who took lives as easily as cutting grass, and his evil reputation was such that it resounded throughout the world, having his name recorded in history.

At the beginning, he was just a mortal, but through luck and destiny, he became a Gu Master of demonic path. He started out from the lowest of levels and rose up in ranks, before becoming an authority of demonic path after eight hundred years.

He didn’t have high aptitude, thus he had limited primeval essence in his aperture. Therefore, he had a crazed interest towards researching the fusion of Gu worms.

Wild Gu worms possessed their own will and could absorb the natural primeval essence in the air by themselves. However, after a Gu worm was refined by a Gu Master, its willpower would be dominated by the Gu Master, and it would lose the ability to absorb the surrounding primeval essence. It would be able to only absorb the primeval essence in the Gu Master’s aperture.

Blood Sea Ancestor had invested a lot of efforts in researching Gu which could absorb natural primeval essence even after being refined by a Gu Master.

The righteous Gu Masters were very afraid of this. They were extremely worried that the Blood Sea Ancestor would succeed in his research. As a result, they organized countless traps before moving in for the kill.

In the end, Blood Sea Ancestor wasn’t able to succeed, but it also wasn’t a complete failure.

He succeeded in producing the fusion recipes of bladewing blood bat, blood guillotine and blood frenzy Gu.

Rank three bladewing blood bat Gu was his first accomplishment. It was very easy to feed, but it still needed the Gu Master to provide primeval essence. The colony of bladewing blood bats was very special; a Gu Master just needed to control a male bat, and they could indirectly command all the other female bats.

Blood frenzy Gu was his second accomplishment. This Gu was formless; as a ball of blood essence, it survived by attaching itself to other beings. It was a Rank four Gu and had a very unusual ability. Every Gu worm infected by its aura could absorb natural primeval essence every now and then. But it had a great disadvantage – the Gu worms affected by the Blood frenzy Gu would gradually leave the control of the Gu Master and would turn into a pool of blood after a period of time.

Blood guillotine was the Blood Sea Ancestor’s last accomplishment. This Gu was a Rank five Gu and was no doubt more advanced than the previous two. Its usability and feeding were fused into one. Usings wars to sustain itself, it multiplied by swallowing Gu Master’s blood. It didn’t need the Gu Master to provide it with any primeval essence.

Unfortunately, after the Blood Sea Ancestor created the blood guillotine, due to the many battles and the entrapment by the righteous path, he was defeated.

He suffered from fatal wounds that could not be healed, and he carved out a bloody escape from the layers of entrapment.

The righteous path figures were worried about his final counterattack which could endanger themselves, so they didn’t have any inclination to chase after him and looked on as he made his getaway. Since then, these righteous path figures would regret the moment every time they recalled it; they regretted that they let him get away.

The Blood Sea Ancestor knew his death was a sure thing, so he started setting up a large scale inheritance. In the limited time before his death, with the strength of his Rank seven cultivation, he unexpectedly set up hundreds of thousands of inheritance grounds; his inheritances extended everywhere from the Middle Continent to the Southern Border and other places.

Right before his death, he smiled devilishly, "The blood path is not alone, the legacy will continue for all eternity!"

This statement was not in the least false, for countless Gu Masters benefited from his inheritances, and thus the demonic path flourished greatly.

No matter the bladewing blood bat Gu, the blood frenzy Gu or the blood guillotine, they were all very easy to raise and multiply. Maybe in some unremarkable valleys, at poor villages, at no-man deserts, or beside some mountain paths, you might find two or three Gu left casually by the Blood Sea Ancestor.

These Gu were easy to raise and didn’t have a high demand for primeval essence, thus they could easily be used by Gu Masters with ordinary aptitudes.

Survival was a difficult thing in this world, so which Gu Master wouldn’t thirst for stronger powers? The Gu worms left by the Blood Sea Ancestor represented a whole new strength; this strength was a quick and easy way to rise in power, and it became more welcomed than other Gu worms.

Power itself had no sins; it became good in the hands of good, and evil in the hands of evil. But in the world, how many people could have a resolute mind after a sudden increase in strength?

A man who got money would often become fickle. A sudden rise in strength would certainly nourish ambitions that weren’t there before.

As a result, many Gu Masters that obtained the Blood Sea Ancestor’s legacy would become a devil that massacred everything. Even many righteous path figures had changed their sides.

The inheritances of blood Gu brought great turmoil and danger towards the whole world.

In each inheritance of the Blood Sea Ancestor, there were often only two to three Gu. However, these inheritances were like a spark of fire that could cause a prairie fire if left alone!

There would be demonic path Gu Masters who would come into possession of the blood Gu every so often and cause chaos. Some of them would fail; killed away in some villages. Some would succeed temporarily and become a huge figure, harming a whole region.

No matter if they succeeded temporarily, or failed, at the moment of their exhaustion, they would also leave behind new blood inheritances.

Thus, the blood calamity continued endlessly. Not only did it not end with the death of the Blood Sea Ancestor through the combined strength of the righteous path, it instead thrived even more greatly with the foundations left behind, unable to be eliminated as it continued for eternity.

It was to the extent that the righteous path figures would frequently curse, "These accursed Blood Gu Masters! We have already killed waves upon waves of them. But if we become even a bit careless, we will see a new one coming up from nowhere!"

By now, the Blood Sea Inheritances were already publicly recognized as the most popular in the whole world, with the greatest number of inheritances. There was no competition!

In the strictest sense, Fang Yuan had received a favor from the Blood Sea Ancestor.

"In my previous life, only after over four hundred years, I found a blood sea inheritance and was then able to begin my rule. Now, if I can subdue these blood bats, it will be like completing four hundred years of effort."

Blood bats charged at him but Fang Yuan was not afraid.

He had the Spring Autumn Cicada, so these bats would submit without question in front of the Rank six aura. The only problem was the Rank five Blood Python that was still concealed, hiding within the blood lake.

"But this situation is somewhat fishy. The Blood Sea Ancestor’s inheritances normally only have two-three Gu worms. How come this place has hundreds of bladewing blood bats? Could it be... that rumor is true?"

The rumor said that the Blood Sea Ancestor’s hundreds of thousands of inheritances were diversions, and the true inheritances were only a few.

In these few inheritances, the Blood Sea Ancestor was said to have concealed his best Gu worms, or research insights or fusion recipes.

"Could this place be a true inheritance ground of the Blood Sea Ancestor?" When Fang Yuan thought of this, his heart started to beat loudly.

His thoughts moved like lightning and although he thought of many things, only a little time had passed in reality.

Bladewing blood bats charged at him one after another; Fang Yuan was calm, his long hair and black gown fluttering in the air as he climbed up the wall and was going to summon Spring Autumn Cicada.

But right at this time, there was a sudden change!

"As expected, this place is hiding the blood calamity!" A deep and firm voice, loud like the clash between iron and stone, came from the top of the cave and echoed within the blood lake.

Divine Investigator Tie Xue Leng!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Sorry it’s a bit late, but I finally finished... Gah. Thanks for supporting me on Patreon, guys! o/

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Tie Xue Leng, why is he suddenly here?" Fang Yuan recognised the voice, feeling shocked.

This loud voice echoed above the blood pond, causing intense waves to form.

"This is... Heaven Earth Magnificent Sound Gu?" Fang Yuan gritted his teeth. As the loud voice hurt his eardrums, he felt his entire brain buzzing.

Heaven Earth Magnificent Sound Gu, a Rank five Gu, was from a sound-type Gu. Once activated, it could form soundwave attacks that had a wide range, belonging to an extremely strong area-of-effect attacking-type Gu.

The voice that Fang Yuan was hearing now, is only Tie Xue Leng’s probing; it was just him slightly shouting and not activating his Gu completely.

This intensity was like Fang Yuan using the Moonlight Gu to open the purple gold rock; it was a type of in-depth control of his Gu worm.

Of course, the Heaven Earth Magnificent Sound Gu also had its weakness. If used for long, it would cause great strain to the Gu Master’s throat and vocal cord. Once his limit is exceeded, the Gu Master would become completely mute, losing his ability to speak.

Bam!

A loud explosion occurred as blood and water flew everywhere.

The top half of the huge python’s body appeared in Fang Yuan’s vision.

Blood river python!

Fang Yuan’s irises shrunk as he saw the python with its bright smooth blood red scales, and its head around the size of an elephant. Scarlet-gold coloured sharp bone spikes protruded out from above its eyes, showing its ferocious and frenzy aura completely.

"Blood river python... I remember that in the Gu Yue clan’s history, after the first generation clan leader created the village, a blood river python appeared and was a huge threat to the village. Legend says the first gen killed it, but don’t tell me..."

Fang Yuan’s thoughts moved, thinking of something.

The blood river python was humongous, snake head high in the air, its purple irises staring right at Fang Yuan with two ruthless glances.

It had a ruthless nature, untamable and fed on blood. Even if the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura tried to suppress it, that would only cause it to become more frenzied. Among Rank five Gu worms, it was one of the hardest to refine.

But after the blood river python took a look at Fang Yuan up on the walls, it raised its head higher and turned towards the top of the cave.

At the top of the cave, there was another tiny shadow, floating down from one of the holes at the ceiling.

He wore a bronze mask, his hands behind his back, his gaze cool and calm. Although compared to the blood river python, he was small like an ant, but the imposing aura coming from his body caused a great pressure to emit from him at all directions, like a heavenly being descending down to Earth.

Righteous Gu!

A mind-type Gu that only someone who upheld justice could activate.

People who were villainous or had weak minds and aspirations, were often scared shitless under the influence of the Righteous Gu, afraid of everything as they had a guilty conscience, their battle spirit decreasing in battle and causing them to feel an inability to defeat Tie Xue Leng, thus collapsing without battle.

Screech screech....

Under the pressure of the righteousness, the bladewing blood bat Gu were frantic and could only scream shrilly as a strong pressure pushed down on their bodies. Their wings could only continue to flap as they struggled to stay in mid-air, floating up and down.

They could barely take care of themselves, much less bother about Fang Yuan.

Even the ferocious blood river python slightly lowered its head, feeling Tie Xue Leng’s supreme presence.

"What a good Righteous Gu!" Fang Yuan climbed on the wall, smirking.

This suppression from the Righteous Gu had no effect on him. Only those with weak minds could be greatly weakened. He was a supreme demonic overlord, his mind strong as steel, how could this illusionary pressure scare him?

"Eh?" Fang Yuan’s immunity caused Tie Xue Leng to call out in shock, feeling very surprised.

The Righteous Gu had been with him for many years, and he was very sure about the Gu’s effect.

Righteous Gu’s effect varied. It attacked the mind directly, sometimes having great effect while other times having no effect.

But the times where it did not work, were almost nonexistent. Even righteous people felt a strong suppression in their hearts. After all, their factions did not determine a person’s kindness and evil; there are no perfect humans.

But Tie Xue Leng knew deeply about Fang Yuan’s crimes. The first time they met, he already implanted a Gu on Fang Yuan, using it to track his whereabouts. After that, Tie Xue Leng could faintly discern the changes in the surroundings where Fang Yuan went.

Those who committed great sins, under the Righteous Gu, would definitely waver. But Tie Xue Leng also met a good number of demonic Gu Masters, that were unaffected by the righteous aura.

"There is only one type of person who would be unaffected by the Righteous Gu even after commiting sins. These are the people with real demonic nature, in the deepest parts of their hearts. They are crazy and adamant, not treating their sins as sins, but thinking of it as natural. To think that this Fang Yuan has such an intense demonic nature! Hmph, I’ll get rid of this great demon here first. If Fang Yuan manages to survive, I will come and finish him later!"

Tie Xue Leng hated evil with a burning passion. With a cold snort, he turned towards the blood river python.

Once he appeared, he was locked on by this blood river python. As long as he was distracted in killing Fang Yuan, he would reveal a weakness.

Tie Xue Leng had such a severe injury on him, and at the same time there might be a powerful enemy hidden in the background and observing him. Thus, he did not dare to lose focus.

He stared at this blood river python for a moment, before looking further into the blood pond.

Not long ago, he received a mysterious letter. Inside there was concrete evidence that Gu Yue village held a bloody calamity.

This letter was held by a red-crowned crane coming from the sky, with a questionable source.

But Tie Xue Leng would rather believe it than miss it. After all, the blood calamity was not ordinary, he could not take it lightly. If he lost focus, it would expand and spread like a plague, harming the world.

The best method to deal with it was to eliminate the source before it forms into a strong force.

Coincidentally, he already had another request at hand — it was Jia Fu paying a high cost to ask him to investigate Jia Jin Sheng’s death.

Tie Xue Leng thus brought his daughter and rushed to Qing Mao Mountain.

He ordered his daughter to investigate Jia Jin Sheng’s case. It was to nurture and train Tie Ruo Nan, but also to act as a red herring, stalling for time and hiding in the background investigating this issue.

The first time when he met Fang Yuan, he implanted a Shared-sense Gu on him. Although it was merely at a whim, he did it due to his accumulated experience and instinct.

Shared-sense Gu was formless and colorless, like a signet. He had implanted over tens of them, but the only successful one was the first one he implanted.

"First gen Gu Yue, I know you are not dead. You hid for nearly a thousand years plotting this scheme, but unfortunately, it’s all going down the drain." Tie Xue Leng opened his mouth, causing the air to tremble.

But there were no changes to the blood pond. Instead, the blood river python opened its mouth, screaming furiously.

It was born ferocious, unable to be suppressed. The Righteous Gu triggered its ferocity.

Bam.

It stretched its body abruptly, the huge snake body rising with the tides of blood, bringing a killing intent that tore through the skies, pouncing towards Tie Xue Leng who was in mid-air.

Tie Xue Leng was already wary against the blood river python, and he quickly moved, avoiding the blood river python’s bite.

The python’s body was too long, and its momentum was too strong. It ended up crashing all the way onto the ceiling of the cave.

A loud bang ensued as a portion of the ceiling collapsed, and large amounts of debris fell and caused much commotion in the blood lake waves.

"Hmph, First gen Gu Yue, you think you are safe with just a blood python protecting you? You might as well appear now," Tie Xue Leng snickered. He moved about in the air, and the blood river python’s attacks were like a gentle rain pelting on him.

The blood river python attacked furiously, getting more worked up as it continued to miss.

It had unparalleled strength, able to display it all and cause great damage.

The entire space was shaking from its strength like an earthquake, and the blood lake began to raise strong ripples.

"Fuck!" Fang Yuan was caught by the crossfire, and as the red soil softened, his foothold had been ruined.

He could only use the Chainsaw Golden Centipede as well as the Thunderwings Gu to move along the walls. Meanwhile the rock debris was falling down like rain.

As he had expected, the Thunderwings Gu was really in bad shape. Fang Yuan’s thunderwings were extremely weak and lethargic, unable to provide him much boost in speed.

But the strange thing was, the Thunderwings Gu was taking lesser and lesser primeval essence from Fang Yuan. During the period where Fang Yuan moved about, it started to absorb primeval essence from the surrounding air to replenish itself.

At first, this situation was uncommon and happened in short intervals.

As Fang Yuan continued to dodge, he did not notice initially. But eventually, the intervals got shorter and the duration lengthened.

At the same time, the Thunderwings Gu got weaker and weaker.

"I get it, its the Blood Frenzy Gu!" Fang Yuan’s mind shone with inspiration.

Only when affected by the Blood Frenzy Gu will such a situation occur.

Plop!

Fang Yuan put in 100% effort, but eventually still fell into the blood lake.

The blood river python was rampaging everywhere, using its thick tail to sweep across the place, causing large debris to fall like rain.

Fang Yuan activated the Sky Canopy Gu, covering himself with a white armor. He was good at swimming. In his previous life he had lived in the Eastern Sea for a long time, thus he had sufficient training.

The falling rocks were as large as houses, and he tried his best to avoid them. Sometimes he swam underwater, sinking into the lake to use the water to reduce the impact of the rocks.

But for the smaller fragments, some were fist-sized while others were like grindstones, and he could not avoid them all.

The white light armor was firm like a monolith, but it could not handle the full impact of the rocks, causing him to feel pain when they hit his armor. At the same time, his primeval essence also decreased with each hit endured.

Thankfully, the Righteous Gu’s power was surrounding the area, causing the group of bladewing blood bat Gu to fly around randomly, not finding trouble with Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan’s expression was solemn.

The Thunderwings Gu was half crippled after being corrupted by the Blood Frenzy Gu, and without a special Gu to clean it, it would soon turn into a puddle of blood water, turning into a new pollution origin.

How did it get infected by the Blood Frenzy Gu?

Fang Yuan considered the previous events, and there was only one explanation — in this blood water, there was a Blood Frenzy Gu inside.

The Thunderwings Gu continued to weaken, and started to become uncontrollable.

Thankfully he activated the white light armor in time, otherwise if the Blood Frenzy Gu got into his body and entered his aperture, most of his Gu worms would get corrupted.

But if his primeval essence was expended, or if this armor was broken, the consequences would be severe!

"I have to leave this place as soon as possible!" Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, trying to find a way out from the surroundings as he swam around.

Large amounts of red soil on the mountain walls collapsed from the battle.

The cave ceiling was completely destroyed beyond recognition as well. Tie Xue Leng floated in mid-air, engaging the blood river python in combat.

Rank five battles were not something Fang Yuan could interfere in.

The more a Gu Master advanced, the larger the difference in battle strength among ranks.

Maybe with a sweep of the blood river python’s tail, it could break the light armor and cause the Sky Canopy Gu to be gravely injured, breaking all of Fang Yuan’s bones in the process. Perhaps with a simple wave of Tie Xue Leng’s hands, it could send Fang Yuan falling into an impasse.

The situation right now was like two giant elephants fighting, while Fang Yuan was a domestic cat. Although he had tiny claws, there was nothing he could do.

"Wait, a cave entrance?"

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

I did warn you guys about the cliffhangers.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The tunnel entrance wasn’t big and should have been buried by the red soil before. But now, as the blood lake surged up in a huge wave, the red soil in the surrounding walls were washed away, sinking down in the lake. As a result, the tunnel entrance cleared up again and became visible.

No matter what, this tunnel entrance was like a light of hope. Fang Yuan immediately turned around and started swimming towards it.

BOOM!

Another intense explosion occurred in the air. The enormous force of the explosion struck the surroundings and violently pushed Fang Yuan forward.

"Damn it!" He cursed.

Great amounts of red soil had fallen down and buried the tunnel entrance again.

Iron fist grappling Gu!

In the air, Tie Xue Leng took a deep breath and slowly extended his right hand when he felt the time was right.

There was a ripple in the air before him and a giant black iron hand appeared; it appeared slow but pressed down on the blood river python’s tail within moments.

Blood river python struggled fiercely, and with its wet scales and slick body, the iron hand slipped off it and burst out with golden-red light.

Tie Xue Leng, however, had plenty of battle experiences and wasn’t downcast. He slightly raised his head, puffed up his cheeks and blew strongly towards the Blood River Python.

Whoosh!Pitch black oil fell down like waterfall and formed into the shape of a dragon in the air, before plunging towards the Blood River Python.

Oil Dragon Gu!

The blood River Python was furious. It snarled and started tearing at the Oil Dragon Gu.

The black oil dragon was not in the least inferior to Blood River Python in terms of physique, but it was only a Rank four Gu and did not have a physical body; it was soon torn to shreds by Blood River Python.

Tie Xue Leng smiled, on the contrary.

Beasts were beasts, if a Gu Master had personally controlled it, they would have seen through this classic and ordinary battle tactic. The Blood River Python had been refined and although it had a Gu Master’s imprint on it, it didn’t have the wisdom of humans.

The oil dragon was exterminated, causing backlash to the Oil Dragon Gu in the aperture.

Tie Xue Leng didn’t care; he stopped using the Oil Dragon Gu then began activating Fire Dragon Gu.

He gave a loud shout and his body shook, and then a Gu that looked like a flame shot out of his aperture. The flame quickly formed into a fire snake, winding around its own body.

As the fire snake flew, it grew bigger, then it immediately started growing scales, claws, horns and sharp teeth. Its face started becoming more like that of a horse; it had changed into an enormous fire dragon.

This Fire Dragon Gu was also a Rank four Gu, but it was able to cause a lot of pain to Blood River Python.

This was because of the oil dragon; when it was wiped out, great amounts of black oil stuck to Blood River Python’s body, and now the fire dragon was causing the oil to catch fire and roast the Blood River Python.

Besides the snake, the black oil had also fallen on the lake surface. Right now, a raging inferno was burning on the bright red blood lake, causing the air temperature to increase rapidly.

The fire dragon was not the Blood River Python’s match at all, it suffered heavy injuries and kept on shrinking. But every time this happened, it would drill into the raging inferno and recover some of its power.

With the raging inferno, the fire dragon had a homeground advantage.

Blood River Python was constantly being burned as it fought with the fire dragon, there was even a smell of scorched meat coming off it.

Blood River Python had a berserk nature and it would erupt with even stronger counterattack if it got suppressed. But right now, it was actually shrinking back, giving up on the fire dragon and diving deep into the blood lake.

Humans were the highest of all living beings and possessed the intelligence to develop new concepts. With Tie Xue Leng’s tactics, two Rank four Gu were able to make the Rank five Blood River Python retreat.

But Gu were the essence of the world, containing the secrets of heaven and earth, a portion of the natural laws. And Blood River Python’s ability was extreme self recovery.

As it sank to the bottom of the lake, the blood water continuously nourished it, rapidly healing the wounds on its body. The fire dragon had the field advantage; so did the blood python. As long as the blood lake existed, it was like a cockroach that couldn’t be killed.

Fang Yuan’s situation was even more perilous.

The inferno on the surface of the blood lake was constantly spreading, burning even hotter, and the flames were roasting him alive.

The pressure on the Sky Canopy Gu was getting bigger and bigger. But the most critical point was not this, but rather it was the increasing difficulty in breathing.

The flames used great amounts of air to maintain their combustion, and this place is underground and was originally a half-sealed area, which meant it took more time to replenish the used oxygen. Fang Yuan was gradually starting to feel suffocated.

"Although Oil Dragon Gu and Fire Dragon Gu sent Blood River Python retreating with their combined efforts, this is only temporary. As long as there are large amounts of blood water, Blood River Python will recover with a terrifying rate. Once it comes out, it will have recovered to its peak state and the Fire Dragon Gu would no longer be its match. But, this is basic knowledge, it is impossible for Tie Xue Leng to not know this. Then he...."

Fang Yuan bobbed up and down on the blazing lake; his thoughts were revolving rapidly. And his heart tensed when he thought of this.

If he wasn’t wrong, Tie Xue Leng should have achieved his intention by making Blood River Python retreat.

Tie Xue Leng needed enough time and he needed the situation to be like this to prepare his following killing move.

Sure enough, in the next moment, while floating in the air Tie Xue Leng suddenly extended both his arms and a deep roar emerged from his mouth.

He withdrew the righteous aura that had been suppressing everything, and wholeheartedly poured his Rank five primeval essence into the copper mask.

The copper mask started to brighten up; it was only a glimmer at first but within few breaths of time, it burst out with an extremely dazzling green light, as bright as a fragment of the sun.

The green light shone upon everything like a monarch overlooking the heavens and earth. For a moment, the red soil, blood lake and raging inferno were covered with a layer of dark green light.

The green light contained a mystical power.

Under this power, the mountain rocks began to shake and crumble.

From above the cave, huge rocks came crumbling down, flying towards the copper mask. Great amounts of soil and rocks from the top to bottom of the red walls also slowly flew up.

Tie Xue Leng’s face was already shrouded by the light from the copper mask. Great amounts of mountain rocks gathered around the copper mask and condensed together into a human shape.

Debris continuously converged from all around and the rock figure kept on getting bigger.

From one meter in the beginning, it rapidly grew to three meters... five meters...eight meters...and finally reached eighteen meters!

Giant Mountain Puppet Gu!

The giant figure with indomitable spirit descended towards the blood lake.

Its two feet touched the bottom of the blood lake, but the water only reached up to about its waist. Its body was very robust and grand; horse chariots could run on its two arms and it could hold an elephant on its fist.

Its face looked simple and unadorned; it was the enlarged version of the copper mask.

"Fire dragon, come." It spoke, and its voice seemed to shake the heavens and earth.

The fire dragon which was churning in the fire sea flew up and coiled around the giant puppet’s right arm like a snake, and its head rested on the right shoulder of the giant puppet.

Next, the Oil Dragon Gu flew out and formed a pitch black oil dragon which coiled around the giant puppet’s left arm and its head rested on the left shoulder of the giant puppet.

With dragons on his left and right, the giant figure appeared like a heavenly deity descending down!

Fang Yuan used all his strength to swim towards the tunnel entrance. When the debris had flown and formed the giant puppet, the red soil covering the tunnel entrance had also gone with it, once again revealing the opening.

This battlefield was becoming more dangerous, the tunnel entrance could be buried again at any time; Fang Yuan didn’t dare to stay longer.

The fire sea gradually died out, and suddenly a huge red wave rose from the blood lake.

Blood River Python initiated its attack from the lake; it coiled around the giant puppet and moved upwards. The giant snake head smashed towards the giant puppet’s face like a ram.

This attack was very powerful and if it really struck, more than half of the giant puppet’s head would be destroyed.

"Iron fist grappling!" The giant puppet shouted; the air split open and an iron hand flew out, grabbing at the snake head.

With a loud boom, the iron hand shattered but Blood River Python’s attack was also stopped.

Tie Xue Leng won a brief respite. The giant puppet’s two hands grabbed towards Blood River Python in tandem.

Oil dragon and fire dragon seized the chance and climbed Blood River Python. The two snake combined and formed a blazing flame, roasting Blood River Python.

Blood River Python kept on hissing in pain and struggled furiously. But why would Tie Xue Leng let it escape so easily? The giant puppet’s hands were like pincers as they firmly pressed on the Blood River Python.

The Blood River Python was not able to escape. Its body was scorched black, giving off the smell of burnt meat. This stimulated its vicious nature; since it couldn’t escape, it coiled around the giant puppet and violently contracted, trying to kill it by constriction.

Although the giant puppet was made from condensed mountain rocks, its body had the softness of the red soil. With Blood River Python’s constricting force, its waist quickly shrunk by a fold.

Cracking sounds emerged, and fragments of rocks flew in all directions.

Under the stimulation of death, Blood River Python burst forth with an even greater strength.

Fang Yuan finally climbed to the edge of the tunnel entrance, when suddenly the giant puppet gave out coughing sounds.

Tie Xue Leng’s old illness had reappeared!

The giant puppet’s hands loosened, and the Blood River Python hissed and its body suddenly jumped ahead.

However, the giant puppet’s hands tightened again. The Blood River Python opened its mouth wide and revealed its sharp fangs, its head crazily swaying but it still fell short by a distance.

It was not able to retaliate and it was gradually losing its strength; it would burn to death soon.

But right at this moment, dense bloody fog rose up from the middle of the blood lake.

"Blood Frenzy Gu!" Fang Yuan’s eyes showed a hint of dread; he immediately climbed the tunnel entrance and went inside it.

The bloody fog rapidly pervaded the air, and the raging inferno on the bloodlake had completely extinguished.

A whirlpool appeared in the middle of the blood lake.

The whirlpool had started from the middle of the lake and quickly spread from there, growing bigger until its edges were touching the surrounding walls.

"Humph, Gu Yue first head, you couldn’t endure it anymore?...." The giant puppet coldly snorted.

A giant blood wave reaching as high as ten meters gushed out of the middle of the whirlpool.

And from within the blood wave, a vertical crimson coffin gradually rose up.

" Hehehehe ...." A hoarse and strange voice was transmitted from inside the coffin, and anyone that heard this voice would feel cold to the bone.

"Young junior, thou dare spoil my plan, thou court death and I shall give it to thee!" Before the voice had died away, the coffin lid shot out like a catapult, revealing a shrivelled corpse.

He had a scarlet face and fangs, his hair red like blood, his eyes deep and contained a fire that seemed about to extinguish.

He had no skin, and thin strips of red muscles were clinging onto the white bones, giving him a shrivelled and fierce look.

"Junior, thou art wounded but yet dare to provoke me. Today, thou shalt die!!" The corpse spoke, but there was no movement in its mouth, the voice had come from its abdomen.

He kept on saying ‘ I ’, ‘ thou ’— these were the speech habits of thousand years ago.

"Rank five Blood Wight Gu! Is he really the first head?" Fang Yuan was flabbergasted, but wasn’t surprised.

In this magical world, there were plenty of Gu Masters who lived for centuries. Besides using the most orthodox way of increasing lifespan through the Lifespan Gu, there were also some demonic ways to make one live forever.

For instance, the Rank two Roaming Zombie Gu.

If this Gu was used for too long, the Gu Master would turn completely into a zombie and as long as they sucked blood at specific times, they could live freely forever.

The Gu Yue first head in front of him had used such a way.

Blood Wight Gu was a major Rank five advancement route of the Roaming Zombie Gu. Along with the Asura zombie, heavenly demon zombie, nightmare zombie and plague zombie, they were called five great flying zombies.

The Lifespan Gu was difficult to find. The first head had turned himself into a blood wight flying zombie and buried himself here!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

This was a very long chapter to work on -_-

Please don’t get killed by cliff-san, thank you.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the blood lake, two strong foes opposed each other.

"Even the Rank five Blood Wight is only a zombie at the end. First gen Gu Yue, you are no longer a living person, you are full of death essence. Your aperture is dead too, and even though you can store primeval essence, every bit you use cannot be replenished, you cannot recover on your own," the giant puppet said coldly.

"Hehehe... although I cannot recover primeval essence, so what? I can continue to use primeval stones to regain primeval essence. You have an injury on you, yet you dare disturb me... die!" First gen Gu Yue shouted.

At once, blood mist spewed out, and as blood waves raged on, a large group of insects flew out from the blood lake.

It was the Rank five Blood Guillotine!

At the same time, troops of bladewing blood bats flew out from the cave ceiling and emerged from the blood lake, joining together and attacking towards the giant puppet.

A large pack of bats, almost a thousand of them, formed into a huge army.

Although they were Rank three and were a close-combat type Gu, but numbers made up for quality, even the Rank five Tie Xue Leng felt a headache fighting against them.

But that was not the end, for after First gen Gu Yue’s consciousness awakened, under his command, troops of blood bats continued to show up, gathering here.

He had operated there for almost a thousand years, and had a heaven shattering scheme. He had converted the place into his personal backyard, thus having a great location advantage.

Blood bat groups were organised, staying in formation in the air, continuing to move around like a strong army, surrounding the giant puppet.

The blood river python stopped struggling, instead coiling up its body. This caused Tie Xue Leng to feel a threat, and he concentrated his mind even further.

A Gu’s power although strong, was unintelligent. A blood bat army with or without a Gu Master’s control, had a hell of a difference.

"First gen Gu Yue only just appeared, and yet he has turned the tables, almost suppressing Tie Xue Leng. He has great location advantage, having his troops at his disposal, while Tie Xue Leng has an injury on him, the situation is not looking good."

Fang Yuan had hid into a cave in the walls, using the shadows to hide and observe the battle.

"But Tie Xue Leng has roamed the Southern Borders for many years. With an injury on him but still entering this trap, he has to have some trump card. No matter what, there’s going to be an intense battle soon, this entire district might even collapse. Should I stay here and observe? Staying here is very dangerous, this is the deepest part of the underground cave, I might get buried alive. If I stay and watch the show, what are the chances of me benefiting from their conflict?"

Fang Yuan thought quickly, evaluating the gains and losses.

He was only Rank three initial stage now, and there was a high risk in staying. As long as he got hit indirectly by one of their attacks, he would get heavily injured.

But if he really gained something from this, surviving to the end, the benefits would be overwhelming. After all, what a Rank five Gu Master owns could help him save up to a hundred years of hard work!

"High risk high return..." Fang Yuan heaved a long sigh, and planned to retreat.

The situation was no longer under his control; there was too much risk in staying.

Birds die for food, people die for fortune, these situations, he had seen much of them in his previous five hundred years of living.

He was vigilant in nature. As long as he lived, there would always be more opportunities in the future. After all, he knew countless secrets and many unexposed inheritance grounds; they were all profitable and useful to him, he did not have to risk his life here.

Just when Fang Yuan was about to leave, a small amount of blood bats flew out from the army and towards him.

This blood bat group had around a hundred, causing Fang Yuan to quickly retreat.

"My clan junior, don’t worry. There are traps set up in that cave, and even underground beasts reside there. These blood bats can ensure your safety," the first gen Gu Yue’s voice resounded.

When Fang Yuan heard this, he ran even faster.First gen Gu Yue was slightly shocked, not expecting Fang Yuan to be so observant at such a young age, able to sense his evil intents. Immediately, he pushed his will and another group of hundreds of blood bats chased after Fang Yuan.

His distraction caused Tie Xue Leng to discover a weakness that wasn’t really a flaw.

Heaven Earth Magnificent Sound Gu!

Howl!The giant puppet opened its mouth, giving off a howl that shook the nine heavens. At once, the overwhelming soundwaves rushed towards all directions like the sound of thunder.

The bladewing blood bat Gu closeby were instantly murdered by this power, falling down one by one.

Blood bat groups further away were in disarray from the attack, flying randomly in the air.

The concentrated bat army earlier had in a split second, gone into chaos and could not have any utility in the next short period.

Heaven Earth Magnificent Sound Gu was as high as Rank five, and it was an area-of-effect type that specialized in dealing with blood bat groups. When Tie Xue Leng first used it, the power was not strong, but that was due to him keeping it down forcefully. Now that he used the body of the giant puppet, he could display the true power of the Heaven Earth Magnificent Sound Gu.

Even numerous Blood Guillotine all over the sky were killed. As the blood mist dispersed, clear vision returned.

The soundwaves bounced off the walls as the entire space within the mountain started trembling.

With the giant puppet as the focal point, the blood lake’s water level was forced downwards, forming a bowl shape in the lake, and the blood water oozed out through the cave opening.

But before that, there were sound waves spreading.

Fang Yuan was caught in the crossfire, his white armor shimmering, almost breaking apart. To endure this soundwave attack, his aperture’s primeval essence was used up by about 10%.

The soundwaves echoed in the narrow cave, and Fang Yuan’s ears could not endure the buzzing and he almost tripped on the ground.

But this soundwave was at least helpful to him.

For the two groups of blood bats chasing him, the second was already decimated, and the first were in chaos from the attack, flying all over the place in the cave and not being able to chase Fang Yuan.

It was a rare chance, so Fang Yuan quickly sprinted, pulling some distance from the blood bats.

This group of bats were the furthest from the soundwaves, thus recovering quickly. They flapped their wings, continuing their assault.

There were about a hundred blood bats, all Rank three. Fang Yuan could not fight against them and could only run away.

Earlier, the cave was dark and he did not know the directions. But now, his eyes had adapted to the dark environment, and he could see a bit of the area.

This was all thanks to the red soil emitting light.

Although his thunderwings were already unreliable, it could at least help a little, thus Fang Yuan activated it with all his strength.

But even so, the two had a great difference in speed, and the distance was slowly shortened.

"The distance is almost there, it’s time to use the Spring Autumn Cicada!" Fang Yuan gritted his teeth. As the blood bat group continued to get closer, he could only use this method!

Bladewing blood bat Gu was only Rank three, so the Rank six Gu aura completely dominated them. But Tie Xue Leng and First gen Gu Yue were nearby.

Once the Spring Autumn Cicada appears, it would cause a great mirage and the commotion would attract their attention.

But Fang Yuan had no choice. With the situation before him, he could only hope that they were concentrated in fighting, and could not split their attention towards him.

Screech screech...

The blood bat group continued to get closer, almost less than a hundred steps away.

Fang Yuan breathed out in anticipation, thinking in his heart, "Spring Autumn Cicada, come out!"

One second, two seconds, three seconds......

Fang Yuan was stunned, standing on the spot; the Spring Autumn Cicada was in the center of his aperture, unmoving while emitting a brilliant yellow green light.

"How can this be?!" Fang Yuan was shocked.

...

Far away, the sky glowed amidst the mist.

It was dawn.

On the slope, Gu Yue Bo, Bai clan and Xiong clan leader stood side by side.

"Even though the real competition is tomorrow, we have to have a preliminary competition. The time is just right, shall we start?" Xiong clan leader smiled as he said.

Bai clan leader snorted, ignoring him.

"Then let’s start." Gu Yue Bo answered while distracted. He moved his gaze to the Gu Masters gathered there, trying to search but could not find Fang Yuan among them.

His worry intensified.

These Gu Masters were all under thirty years old, and while standing together, they distinctly split into three groups.

Taking one glance, the three clan’s strength was apparent.

Xiong clan had the most Gu Masters since they retreated at the start, and kept most of their battle strength. Gu Yue clan and Bai clan had less members, but Bai clan had Bai Ning Bing. He alone was enough to promote the Bai clan’s overall strength to the top of the three clans.

Xiong clan leader shouted, "This competition will be held around the surrounding hundred li, all the way until night time, ending when the sun sets. Battles will not have life-and-death restrictions, but I hope you can control yourselves. You have a token in your hands, and the ones who collect thirty of them gets the qualification to enter the three-clans competition! Ready, and start!"

Life and death battles, only those who qualify can enter. There is no participation limit, and the surrounding hundred li is the stage. Even entering midway is permitted.

This is not a fair competition. But the three clan leaders did not have any opinions or grudges towards it.

In this world, survival is based on one’s own strength, one’s fist. The stronger you are, the more rights you have to gain more benefits. If you are weak, then you should begrudge your luck and lay low, accumulating strength and becoming strong.

...

In a few breath’s time, Fang Yuan felt like two or three years had passed.

His forehead was full of cold sweat; the Spring Autumn Cicada was unable to come out, how could this happen?

Spring Autumn Cicada is his vital Gu, it was very important to him. A Rank six Gu, his final trump card, to think it could not be controlled! This was too severe, and Fang Yuan had to place all his attention on this problem.

In the dark cave, he squinted.

He only panicked for less than a second, before calming himself down.

His mind moved like lightning, his spirit entering his aperture; there was nothing wrong with the Spring Autumn Cicada, it was still recovering quickly.

But no matter how Fang Yuan willed it, it remained stagnant at the center, not moving even a single step.

"I get it!" Fang Yuan was enlightened, "This Spring Autumn Cicada, once it becomes a vital Gu, it stays in the aperture and can no longer be moved."

Gu was the essence of living beings, it had endless possibilities, and all sorts of forms and abilities.

For Gu worms – nurture, use, and refine, all three were deep and profound and often were there special cases in these aspects.

On ‘nurturing’, Gu worms only ate specific food. On ‘refine’, they had all sorts of requirements.

On ‘use’, the Bamboo Gentleman could only be used by a Gu Master that has never lied. And to use the Righteous Gu, it needed the Gu Master to have a heart of justice.

Or the Photo-audio Gu, dying after one use, while the visuals could stay on the rock walls for a period of time.

Once the Spring Autumn Cicada is refined, it stays in the aperture and can no longer be moved. This specialty, reminded Fang Yuan of another Gu – The Water Curtain Skyflower.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Sky didn’t die... but Sky had a headache. Do not despair! Sky never forgets the chapters.... so today I will release three chapters (two days missed, and today’s chapter)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The Water Curtain Skyflower Gu was a Rank four Gu. Once used, it would turn into a giant spherical water shield. The defensive strength of the shield was extremely good and it could even resist attacks from Rank five Gu. However, it had a big weakness; it couldn’t be moved and couldn’t be stopped. The water shield isolated the inside and outside world, so even the owner couldn’t freely enter or exit. Thus, this was used by many forces to protect their territories.

Fang Yuan was not familiar with Spring Autumn Cicada.

In his previous life, he died by the besiegement of the righteous path after just having succeeded in refining the Spring Autumn Cicada; he simply didn’t have the time to experiment with it. Also, Spring Autumn Cicada wasn’t his vital Gu at the time and this characteristic hadn’t revealed itself.

In this life, his cultivation was still low, so he didn’t dare to randomly let out the Spring Autumn Cicada.

Spring Autumn Cicada was classified as one of the most unusual Gu and was extremely mysterious. The records of the insights and experiences of its users had never been spread.

Furthermore, once a Gu reaches Rank six and above, they become the only one of their type in the whole world. If someone wanted to refine them, they would only have a probability of success after the previous Gu died, otherwise it was a hundred percent failure.

Thus, this led to Fang Yuan knowing about this characteristic only now.

"Rebirth isn’t an easy thing, the Spring and Autumn conceals disaster. Spring Autumn Cicada’s recovery speed is increasing more and more, and even the cultivation speed of an A grade aptitude with a sea of resources might not be able to match its speed. Their aperture will sooner or later explode under the pressure of Spring Autumn Cicada!"

Fang Yuan clenched his teeth.

Rebirth was beautiful but possessing Spring Autumn Cicada was equivalent to having half a ten extreme aptitude. It was like being under the execution post where you could be executed at any moment!

"If I can’t let Spring Autumn Cicada out, then does that mean I can only use it to rebirth again?" Fang Yuan’s frowns deepened.

This appeared to be the only way. A rebirth would mean Spring Autumn Cicada would enter a weak state again, and at the same time, Fang Yuan could escape from this dangerous situation.

This situation seemed to be perfect, but it contained many problems and huge dangers.

First of all, there was no guarantee of the rebirth being successful.

Fang Yuan had gone through rebirth once and he was only able to bring back his valuable experience.

He came to an understanding by integrating the Earth’s concept: The world is a three-dimensional space and time is an axis connecting the past and present. Without time, space would be stationary. The movements of every matter was a process, signifying the consumption of time.

There were no parallel dimensions in a world. Using the Spring Autumn Cicada to be reborn was to step across from the latter half of the time axis (future) to some point in the first half (past).

However, Fang Yuan’s aged body in the ‘future’ didn’t exist in the ‘past’.

Due to the restrictions from the great dao of the world, his body couldn’t be brought over to the past, and could only self-detonate. The energy from the self-detonation was a propulsion force and the fragment of the laws of time in Spring Autumn Cicada was like a lone boat which carried Fang Yuan’s consciousness from ‘future’ to be reborn into the ‘past’.

Consciousness wasn’t a physical matter like a body. Strictly speaking, this ‘future’ consciousness too, didn’t exist in the ‘past’.

The ingenuity was contained therein!

‘Future’ consciousness led to the Gu Master changing himself, and thereby influencing his surroundings. This influence would gradually extend to the whole world; this was the butterfly effect.

When the butterfly effect took place, the world would no longer be the same, causing the existence of the ‘future’ consciousness to receive the approval of the great dao of the world.

Someone had said that history was like a long river, and a change in an event in the upstream would completely change the downstream.

This mystical world of Gu was like the water in the long river. Almost everyone could only flow along with the stream and go from upstream to downstream. Fang Yuan’s consciousness, however, went against the stream, going from downstream to upstream by relying on Spring Autumn Cicada.

When he made changes in the upstream, there would also be changes in the downstream. But the river was still the same river; the world of Gu Masters was still the world of Gu Masters. It was just that history had turned into another corner, bringing another possibility to the equation.

This analogy could be easily understood.

However, Spring Autumn Cicada hadn’t recovered completely. It was like a leaky, worn-out boat right now.

Fang Yuan’s cultivation was also only Rank three initial stage. There would be an unimaginable difference between the propulsion force of his self-detonation now from the self-detonation of his Rank six cultivation in his previous life. With such a minute force, he simply wouldn’t be able to push the Spring Autumn Cicada, let alone flow against the long river of time.

"I probably won’t succeed by trying to rebirth through self-detonation. Who is to say that the broken boat won’t be stranded in the long river? And if that happens, my consciousness and memories will be ruthlessly washed away by time. To raise the probability of success, it would be best to wait until the aperture is pushed to the limits, stall for time as much as possible and let Spring Autumn Cicada recover more, decreasing the holes in the worn-out boat. At the same time, increasing my cultivation will provide higher propulsive force to go against the stream, after self-detonation." Fang Yuan heaved a long sigh.

This change in the Spring Autumn Cicada was beyond his anticipation. But with his ever cautious nature, he had a plan ready.

The blood bat group was nearing. Fang Yuan, however, had his attention in his aperture.

Yellow-green rays of light flooded his aperture. His white silver primeval sea was as still as a mirror under the majestic aura of Spring Autumn Cicada, but there were dangerous cracks in the light membrane of his aperture.

All the other Gu had been suppressed down to the depths of the sea by Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura.

Fang Yuan sent his will and a Gu slowly flew towards the surface of the sea, resisting the pressure.

This Gu appeared like a square dice; it was gray and very firm.

This was one of the Gu that Fang Yuan had plundered from Bai Ning Bing.

It was a one-time use Gu, and would disappear once used. But its effects were extraordinary, and once used it would completely extract all the strength and potential in a Gu Master’s aperture and instantly raise a Gu Master’s cultivation to the peak stage of the same rank.

"Stone Aperture Gu, explode."

Fang Yuan willed it; the Stone Aperture Gu immediately exploded, changing into grey powders just like the smoke from a cigarette, and pervaded the primeval sea.

The aperture’s walls were originally a light membrane, but once this grey powder touched it, the light immediately dimmed down. The powder stuck to the light membrane and the light membrane gradually thickened, experiencing a qualitative change from light to stony.

After several seconds, Fang Yuan’s aperture walls had thickened by several times and changed into a heavy, sturdy stone aperture.

The yellow-green radiance of Spring Autumn Cicada still fluctuated continuously, but the aperture could now support its pressure.

Fang Yuan was at Rank three initial stage with light silver primeval essence, and his primeval sea shone with light silver light. But right now, his cultivation experienced a sudden rise, leaping from Rank three initial stage to Rank three peak stage, possessing snow silver primeval essence!

"Using the Stone Aperture Gu means cutting off one’s advancement route and using up all the potential within the aperture; it will be very difficult to step to Rank four. But, my cultivation has increased and the aperture has turned into stone walls, which is multiple times thicker and firmer than before, and will be able to support the pressure from Spring Autumn Cicada for the time being! Using the Stone Aperture Gu should have been Bai Ning Bing’s response to the limits of Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique. Unfortunately, the Ten Extreme Aptitudes are much more troublesome than the Spring Autumn Cicada. Their potential is endless and even by turning one’s aperture into stone, the aperture walls will quickly recover."

At this second, the bladewing blood bat group pounced in for the kill.

Fang Yuan gave a cold snort, then took out his Chainsaw Golden Centipede and killed as he retreated.

Fortunately, this tunnel was narrow, and with the Sky Canopy Gu’s defense and the Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s wide body, Fang Yuan was able to block the blood bat group and stop them from surrounding him.

This greatly reduced their threat.

For a moment, there were only continuous ringing sounds within the tunnel.

The sounds of Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s attacks and the sound of bladewing blood bats smashing into the white armor, quickly echoed through the tunnel walls and formed into a medley.

The primeval essence in Fang Yuan’s aperture continued to deplete rapidly.

There were close to a hundred blood bats, but without a Gu Master there to control them, there were a lot of internal frictions between the bats and they couldn’t form a tacit cooperation. Thus, in reality, Fang Yuan only needed to deal with 30-40 blood bats at the same time.

But even this number wasn’t something he could withstand, and he had to retreat while fighting back.

What was even more awkward was that even though he had leaped to Rank three peak stage, his aperture still contained the initial stage light silver primeval essence. Just by relying on his C grade aptitude, the self-production speed of snow silver primeval essence was way too slow. The current situation also didn’t allow Fang Yuan to multitask and take out primeval stones to absorb natural primeval essence.

Consuming primeval stones could quickly recover primeval essence, but this method wasn’t suitable in a real battle.

Distracting oneself in a life and death battle was asking for humiliation; it was an extremely stupid move and was akin to courting death. At the same time, the efficiency in absorbing natural primeval essence at such a situation was also very low.

This way could only be used during normal cultivation, or to exploit short gaps in battles to quickly recover primeval essence.

Luckily, Fang Yuan obtained a grass gu not long ago: Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus.

Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus could produce primeval stones; it was very precious and rare. But in fact, this effect was only an expression of its innate ability.

Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus was also called ‘portable spirit spring’ and its innate ability was to produce natural primeval essence. The primeval essence would then condense together to form primeval stones.

The Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus that Fang Yuan possessed was lying deep in his primeval sea; it appeared like an extremely small spirit spring.

Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus’s recipe was created by Immortal Venerable Genesis Lotus.

Only the Gu Masters who have reached Rank nine were respected as venerables. For righteous path, they were called Immortal Venerables; and for demonic path, they were called Demonic Venerables.

Immortal Venerable Genesis Lotus was also known as the the person with the fastest primeval essence recovery speed since the ancient times. In this aspect, he was above other immortal venerables and demonic venerables, and it was all because of the Essence Lotus!

Fang Yuan’s Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus was only a Rank three and he had just refined it, so it was at its poorest level. But it was already providing a continuous supply of natural primeval essence to Fang Yuan.

The moment this natural primeval essence appeared in Fang Yuan’s aperture, it would be automatically refined and turned into snow silver primeval essence.

Supposedly if Fang Yuan absorbed primeval essence from primeval stones, he would still have to divide a part of his mind. But this Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus was his Gu, so using it was as simple and easy as moving his fingers!

Fang Yuan retreated while fighting, and with the assistance of Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, his primeval essence recovery speed could already be comparable with B grade aptitude Gu Masters.

"Kill!"

He gave a fierce shout before abruptly changing his battle style and charging into the blood bat group.

Chainsaw Golden Centipede exploded forth, and its silver sawtooth crazily rotated around, producing screeching sounds as it cut down on a bladewing blood bat hiding in the rear.

This blood bat appeared rather similar to other blood bats, albeit looking a bit more dominant. This was the sole male bat in this blood bat group, and was refined by the first gen Gu Yue. By controlling it, one could indirectly gain control of the whole blood bat group.

Fang Yuan had been secretly planning this attack after careful observation, and made this attack appear unintentional. With the Gu Yue first head not present on the scene, this attack was very effective.

The male bat died on the spot, twisting into a bloody pulp.

The remaining female bats immediately scattered!

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Second chapter up... third one later.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In a blood bat group, there was only one male bat, while the rest were all females under the command of the male bat.

Between the male and female bats, they looked the same and did not have difference in appearances. But Fang Yuan was beyond familiar with these bladewing blood bats in his previous life. As long as he had enough time, he could differentiate them.

Without the male bat, the entire group fell into chaos.

Fang Yuan took the chance and waved the Chainsaw Golden Centipede, killing his way through.

A moment later, over twenty bladewing blood bats were decimated, showing Fang Yuan’s resolution of battle.

But the intense battle also caused Fang Yuan’s primeval essence in his aperture to decrease tremendously.

"Time to go!" Fang Yuan decisively retreated, running away at full force.

When the blood bat group behind him reacted, Fang Yuan was already a hundred steps away. About twenty bladewing blood bats continued to chase after him while the others flew in all directions.

"Gasp gasp..." In the narrow tunnel, Fang Yuan breathed hard while sprinting, activating the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus.

After an intense battle, the snow silver primeval essence left in his aperture as well as the low primeval sea level gradually rose back up.

The longer time passed, the faster Fang Yuan’s battle strength recovered.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s thunderwings flapped, and the force dragged his entire body forward, almost letting him crash into the cave walls.

The Thunderwings Gu had been polluted by the Blood Frenzy Gu, and it had reached its limits, starting to show signs of being uncontrollable.

"Very soon, the Thunderwings Gu will turn into a pool of blood water and turn into a new pollution source." Thinking so, Fang Yuan stopped hesitating and activated it three times, finally causing the disobeying Thunderwings Gu to detach from his back.

"Go." Fang Yuan resolutely gave up the Thunderwings Gu, throwing it behind him.

The bladewing blood bat group behind him surrounded the Thunderwings Gu completely. They rushed up, tearing the Thunderwings Gu into bits.

This obstruction gave Fang Yuan a little bit of time to recover.

Until the bladewing blood bats caught up to Fang Yuan, the primeval essence in his aperture had already recovered over half of the total.

The snow silver primeval essence compared to the light silver primeval essence, had several times more sustainability, and Fang Yuan’s current battle strength had greatly exceeded an initial stage.

He laughed heartily, waving the Chainsaw Golden Centipede to fight once again.

After killing around 8-9 of them, the rest all flew and escaped.

"Unfortunately I do not have a Gu like the iron hand grappling Gu. The bladewing blood bat Gu flies too fast, and its wings are sharp like blades, it is really hard to capture. If I can capture two or three, that would be nice."

Fang Yuan kept the Chainsaw Golden Centipede, and turned around towards the deeper part of the cave.When he snatched the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, he was engulfed by the blood water. That was definitely caused by the first gen Gu Yue.

First gen Gu Yue used the Blood Wight Gu, turning into a flying zombie. His aperture was long dead and could no longer recover primeval essence. Unless he used primeval stones, his primeval essence in the aperture would be limited by the amount left inside.

But if he had a Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, to a large extent, he could negate this weakness.

Thus, not long ago, he sent two groups of bladewing blood bats towards Fang Yuan, attempting to capture him. Thankfully, Fang Yuan saw something amiss and turned around in time. At the same time, Tie Xue Leng indirectly helped him with the soundwave.

"I wonder how’s the battle between Tie Xue Leng and First gen Gu Yue." Fang Yuan gaze was concentrated.

No matter which side won, they would still target him.

Tie Xue Leng wants to bring him to justice, while First gen Gu Yue wants the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus.

Although the bladewing blood bats had dispersed, Fang Yuan’s danger was still unresolved.

"I have to leave Qing Mao mountain immediately, as soon as possible!" Fang Yun gritted his teeth. He could no longer return, only able to walk along this mountain cave, trying to find a way out.

This cave was obviously man-made, but after a long time, many areas had collapsed.

Fang Yuan continued to advance, and when he met these dead ends he could only use the Chainsaw Golden Centipede.

The Chainsaw Golden Centipede was originally an underground creature, adept at digging holes, so at this time it had a great use.

Fang Yuan also had the strength of two boars, and he dug through the soil and continued forward.

This greatly reduced his speed, and after three to four hours, he finally got to the end of the cave.

A large sturdy rock wall blocked his path completely.

Even the Chainsaw Golden Centipede couldn’t drill its way through.

"Did the First gen Gu Yue seal this cave completely already?" Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

Bam!

The two sides’ palms met, and the Xiong clan Gu Master flew into the air like a rag, landing heavily on the ground.

Cough

The Xiong clan Gu Master coughed out a mouthful of blood, falling unconscious.

In the sky, the sun was shining brightly, sending down scorching rays of light. The sunlight shone over the wilderness, and the light reflected on Bai Zhong Shui’s fat face.

This young Bai clan Gu Master laughed smugly, "Hmph, so what if you’re the Xiong clan Gu Master? Daring to compete strength with me!"

She moved her fat ‘slim body’, trying to finish off her opponent and take the token, but suddenly a moonblade came attacking.

Bam!

Bai Zhong Shui’s body turned, shooting a water ball from her mouth.

The water ball and moonblade collided, exploding together.

Three Gu Masters with Fang Zheng as the lead, jumped down from the branches.

"Gu Yue clan’s people, this is my battle reward." Bai Zhong Shui squinted, her eyes showing a dangerous light.

Fang Zheng’s strangely bloodshot eyes stared at Bai Zhong Shui intently as he said, "So what? Now YOU are our prey!"

At another side of the forest, more footsteps were heard.

A few people walked out from the shadows; it was Xiong clan’s genius youngster Xiong Lin. his bald head reflected the sunlight, causing him to shine like a diamond.

"Hehehe, this has gotten interesting!" Bai Zhong Shui laughed loudly, but the next moment her laughter stopped.

The two sides attacked together, causing Bai Zhong Shui to be caught off guard, getting surrounded.

Bai Zhong Shui coughed out some blood, her expression turning ugly, "What? Gu Yue clan, you are cooperating with these despicable Xiong clan people?"

Fang Zheng was expressionless, his killing intent raging, not saying a word and getting closer to Bai Zhong Shui.

Xiong Lin laughed, "This battle concerns the three clans’ demographics for the next hundred years, so let me tell you. Gu Yue clan has already established an alliance with our Xiong clan. Bai Zhong Shui, today is your death date."

"Spit!" Bai Zhong Shui coughed out a mouth of blood water as she stared at her surroundings in disdain, "So what if I die? Heh, ganging up... you are just afraid of our Bai Ning Bing. It’s useless, this is only the initial battle, there will still be 1 versus 1 later. Is there anyone in your clans that can fight against Bai Ning Bing? We are destined to be number one!"

"Hehehe, thus we decided that in this first battle, we shall cooperate and finish off Bai Ning Bing!" Xiong Lin laughed loudhly.

buzzbuzzbuzz

Chainsaw Golden Centipede’s razors grinded against the rock wall, causing a loud noise to echo in the cave.

This rock wall was sturdy and thick, being very weird. Fang Yuan’s forehead was full of sweat, as he used the Chainsaw Golden Centipede and Blood Moon Gu to attack in turns, but even after many hours, he only progressed about 50cm.

"Is it really the end for me... eh?" Fang Yuan’s heart moved, suddenly feeling that there was a lifeform in the rock wall.

He quickly used the Earth Communication Ear Grass Gu, listening to the rock wall. There was a mysterious lifeform on the other side of the rock wall, but its aura was very weak.

Half an hour later, Fang Yuan dug a hole, ad the mysterious life form showed itself.

Its entire body was pitch black, emitting a metallic glow like iron and steel. Both its chest and back armor were thick lines that showed a dominating aura. It had three pairs of legs, each having spiral shaped feelers at the tip. It caused Fang Yuan to think of the spiral tip of an electric drill.

"It’s the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider!" Fang Yuan was enlightened, immediately thinking of the Flower Wine Monk.

The questions in Fang Yuan’s heart were mostly answered at this point.

Back then the Flower Wine Monk, in order to nurture the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, came to the Gu Yue village. But at the last moment, he was stopped by First gen Gu Yue, thus he used his methods to throw it into the blood river graveyard.

The Flower Wine Monk was also a Rank five Gu Master, he had to have an intense battle with First gen Gu Yue.

First gen Gu Yue had operated for hundreds of years, having terrain advantage, so the Flower Wine Monk could not compete against him, thus he could only escape.

He used the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider to dig out this path, and after leaving the battlefield he had already suffered an incurable injury. At the end of his life, he hurriedly left behind his inheritance as a last act of revenge. He attempted to let his descendants take the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus and ruin the Gu Yue clan’s foundation.

This explains why the Flower Wine Monk was bathed in blood, his body full of injuries.

But the reason for why the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider fall into slumber and seal itself here, that was still a mystery. Also the First gen Gu Yue, what in the world was he after?

"These suspicions are all minute details. What’s important is leaving this place!" Fang Yuan stretched out his hand, sending out some primeval essence and refining the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider.

This sturdy rock wall was the cocoon created by the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider when it fell into hibernation. It was extremely weak, like the White Boar Gu that Fang Yuan took out from the Earth Treasury Flower Gu.

Thus, even though it was Rank five, Fang Yuan easily refined it.

Fang Yuan threw the Thunderwings Gu away earlier and was lacking a movement-type Gu, this being his weakness once again. But now he obtained the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider, so it was like a glimmer of hope in the darkest hour.

This Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider was a large steed-type Gu. It ate soil as food, and was easy to raise.

Fang Yuan injected his snow silver primeval essence into it, and the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider gradually awakened, its aura becoming stronger.

It started to consume, eating large amounts of soil.

When it recovered to an extent, Fang Yuan who couldn’t wait to leave quickly got onto its back, ordering it to move forward.

Although it had only recovered a little, the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider was still a Rank five Gu. Its three pairs of legs moved quickly, dashing through.

After the cocoon broke, the cave behind was exposed too.

This path was the one the Flower Wine Monk created when he escaped. Seniors pave the way for juniors to run along, so this greatly helped Fang Yuan.

The only worry was, steed-type Gu worms took a lot of primeval essence to use.

The Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider was Rank five. Rank three primeval essence could not sustain its expenditure, so every now and then, Fang Yuan had to stop and sit on the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider’s back, activating the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus while extracting natural essence from his primeval stones.

With two sources, as well as his C grade natural recovery, Fang Yuan’s primeval essence recovery rate was fast, incomparable to before.

As he instructed the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider to move forward, he would also stop to recover his primeval essence. When they encountered a cave-in, they would drill their way through, and with such a repeated process, Fang Yuan gradually moved away from the blood lake graveyard, going towards the surface.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

And third chapter.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sun lowers as night descends, and the setting sun was like a burning fire on the horizon.

Standing on a slope was Bai Ning Bing, clothed in white, his hair snowy white. The setting sun’s last rays reflected in his eyes, hinting that his life was ending.

"Such a beautiful sunset, how many more times can I see it... this brilliance of nature, I have only seen a little of them all, what a waste. Especially when around me, these annoying fellows are still arguing."

Bai Ning Bing snorted in his heart, retracting his gaze and sweeping the environment.

Gu Yue and Xiong clan’s alliance, the remaining hundred Gu Masters gathered together and surrounded Bai Ning Bing.

"Bai Ning Bing, if you back out of this competition now, we can spare your life!"

"Indeed, if you know your place, we might as well be kind and let you off."

"Your Bai clan Gu Masters are mostly finished. The remaining ones have all been stopped by us. Don’t rest your hopes on reinforcements, they will not come!"

With Fang Zheng, Xiong Jiao Man, Xiong Lin and Chi Cheng as leaders, the young Gu Masters spoke in turns, trying to break Bai Ning Bing’s spirits.

But these words, Bai Ning Bing did not put to heart.

"A bunch of rats coming to the elephant and screaming, how pathetically laughable," Bai Ning Bing laughed coldly, his gaze sweeping across the crowd, showing disdain. "Among you people, only Gu Yue Fang Yuan is slightly interesting. Too bad he isn’t here. Hehe, come at me together."

Saying so, Bai Ning Bing created an iceblade, using his hand to wipe the sharp blade that emitted cold energy; he did not even look at the people around him.

"This person is too arrogant!"

"Hmph, not taking us seriously!"

"Brothers, let’s attack together. Everyone send out one attack, even ten Bai Ning Bings will be turned into meat paste!"

The Gu Masters jeered, but no one dared to attack rashly.

Although Bai Ning Bing was alone, his aura was overwhelming, causing everyone to feel threatened.

"Everyone calm down, don’t listen to Bai Ning Bing’s taunts. We did not practice together before and do not have good cooperation. If we attack together, we will waste much of our efforts and he will take advantage of it." Xiong Lin shouted.

"Then who attacks first?" Chi Cheng asked.

Although they cooperated with Xiong clan and attacked the Bai clan, this alliance was not a close one. Whoever attacks first bears higher risks, and also risks the other party taking advantage of their combat.

"Nevermind, I’ll engage Bai Ning Bing first. To be honest, I’ve wanted to fight you some long ago." Xiong Jian Man took a step forward.

She blew a whistle, and once she did, sounds of beasts stampeding could be heard from afar. Many blacks shadows overlapped in the forest, and what showed up was over two hundred black bears!

The black bear at the front of the horde was larger than the rest; it was a hundred beast king level black bear.

The wolf tide was dangerous, but it was also an opportunity. Xiong Jiao Man rose to Rank three because of it, and the Bear Enslavement Gu also rose to Rank three, finally being able to enslave bear-type hundred beast kings!

This was Xiong Jiao Man’s trump card.

"Way to go, lady boss!"

"Oh my god~, so many bears."

"With all these bears and us being around a hundred people, Bai Ning Bing is dead meat!"

Xiong clan Gu Masters were stirred, getting excited. Gu Yue clan looked complicated; after Xiong Li died, this Xiong Jiao Man became the number one contender in the Xiong clan. Looking at Gu Yue clan, after Qing Shu died, Mo Bei followed as well. Although Fang Yuan rose to Rank three, his aptitude is only C grade, it was hard to count on him.

"Thankfully, we still have the A grade Gu Yue Fang Zheng!" Many Gu Masters looked at Fang Zheng, thinking so and feeling assured.

Especially during this three-clan competition, Fang Zheng seemed to have gotten more mature, attacking more ferociously, and many Bai clan Gu Masters were killed by him. Such a performance caused many clansmen to feel comforted.

This was the true disposition of a A grade genius!

"The results are pretty much assured. Even a Rank three peak stage with much talent cannot be the match for a hundred people. Lord Qing Shu, I will take revenge for you personally!! After that, if big brother appears..." Fang Zheng stared intently at Bai Ning Bing, thinking rapidly in his mind.

"Merely a hundred beast king, what a boring trick."

His entire body was emitting cold air.

"Northern Dark Ice Soul physique... I’m at my limit already huh." Bai Ning Bing felt his life ending; his body had reached some sort of limit. Not soon after, he would die. Even now, he could feel his body starting to collapse, and much of his flesh and blood was turning into ice and snow.

But even so, Bai Ning Bing remained calm, his gaze concentrated. He took a final look at the sun’s rays, before turning around and looking at the charging bear group.

"Since you are all looking for death, I shall act mercifully and grant you all your wishes. Maybe this way, it can bring some excitement to my life," he sighed softly.

Not far away, the three clan leaders and Gu Masters stood still, completely silent.

"The battle is finally starting! Killing Bai Ning Bing is the greatest victory!" Xiong clan leader was secretly excited.

"Hmph, we were tricked. They actually ganged up to deal with us. Hehehe, you have all underestimated Bai Ning Bing, get ready for a shock." Bai clan leader was calm as water, plotting in his mind.

Gu Yue Bo showed a worried expression.

Up until now, Fang Yuan and Tie Xue Leng did not show up at all.

Although the three-clan competition was important, his mind was elsewhere.

"Desolate Yin Ancient Moon physique... If Fang Yuan really has such an aptitude, we have to protect him at all costs and bring him into the blood lake graveyard!" Thinking so, Gu Yue Bo looked at Tie Ruo Nan without turning his body.

This Tie family young lady had a strong background, but she was already brought around by Gu Yue Bo, secretly a captive.

Tie Ruo Nan was not worried about her situation. She believed her father, and was also thinking about how to capture Fang Yuan.

Whatever aptitude Fang Yuan had, as long as one bothered to, they could assess it. If he really was a ten extreme talent, then his suspicion would be the greatest!

"Fuck!" Fang Yuan cursed, lying on the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider’s back, sticking closely and preventing himself from falling off.

He wanted to use the Flower Wine Monk’s opened path to advance easily.

But good times do not last, for not long after, the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider started to go crazy.

It started to absorb the natural essence in the air, using it. At the same time, its three pairs of legs started to dig out new paths, moving around randomly in the underground cave.

Fang Yuan understood finally.

This Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider, under the Flower Wine Monk’s command, had engaged in battle with First gen Gu Yue previously.

In the battle, it was corrupted by the Blood Frenzy Gu.

The Flower Wine Monk relied on it to escape, then hurriedly created the secret cave, leaving behind his inheritance before dying.

Upon losing its master, the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider lost control and frantically went back to that path that it had dug when escaping.

Right before death, what was fortunate was that the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider sealed itself and fell into hibernation, preserving its last life force before dying.

Hundreds of years later, Fang Yuan returned to the place and dug out the cocoon, causing it to awaken again. But the Blood Frenzy Gu’s problem was not solved, and thus after a while, it started to act up again.

Fang Yuan was deep in the cave, and just by relying on his own strength he could not escape to the surface. He needed the ability of the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider.

The Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider started to go crazy, getting more uncontrollable; Fang Yuan could only ride on its back, betting on his luck.

But at this point, the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider’s frequency of going crazy was not so high, so Fang Yuan still had some control of it.

Although his control was slipping, overall, he still controlled the general direction. He let the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider dig its way to the surface, but where it would end up, Fang Yuan had no idea.

The last of the sun’s rays were like blood, reflecting on the minced corpses and broken limbs everywhere on the battlefield.

Bai Ning Bing stood arrogantly on the battlefield, a thick layer of ice beneath his feet as the icy domain continued to spread outwards.

The remaining Gu Masters amounted to less than thirty, staying closely together trying to find a bit of assurance from each other’s body warmth.

The bear group had long been exterminated. Even Xiong Jian Man had been beheaded by Bai Ning Bing’s iceblade, and her head flew far away as blood poured like a fountain out of her neck.

Xiong Lin was penetrated by the icicles from Bai Ning Bing, and Gu Yue Chi Cheng was turned into a ice sculpture. In the ice coffin, he still retained the dodging action right before death, his face showing shock, fear, and utter shock, vivid and lifelike.

Fang Zheng’s body was full of injuries, but there was no blood; his injuries were all frozen by the ice and snow.

He breathed roughly, looking at Bai Ning Bing in disbelief. What happened earlier was like a nightmare!

Bai Ning Bing was definitely a Rank three, but his battle strength was almost Rank four!!

"Hmph, although lookalikes, but you are not him, how boring...." Bai Ning Bing looked at Fang Zheng, walking closer. Fang Zheng still being alive, was also intentional by Bai Ning Bing.

The Gu Masters all got into a commotion, their morale at its lowest. If not for the fact that their clan leaders were watching from afar, they would’ve broken down and escaped for their lives already.

"Damn it, damn it! Why is our battle strength so different, I am an A grade talent, am I going to die here?" Fang Zheng gritted his teeth, screaming in his heart.

"Die." Bai Ning Bing jumped, raising his iceblade high while in mid-air.

SLASH!

The iceblade expanded, almost five to six times of the original, sending an unblockable aura as it slashed towards everyone.

"I am going to die!"

"Ahhhhh..."

Facing this attack, many Gu Masters broke down and cried in despair.

"Fuck, why did it come to this!" Xiong clan leader’s face was full of despair.

Gu Yue Bo was urging to move, but Bai clan leader snickered, stopping him, "Gu Yue clan leader, no one is to interfere, are you going to turn on your word and break the agreement?"

Gu Yue Bo squinted his eyes, "Bai Ning Bing is only Rank three, he cannot have such strength, you are cheating blatantly!"

"Cheating? Hehe, let me tell you the truth, our clan’s Bai Ning Bing is the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique!" Bai clan leader shouted loudly.

"What? Ten extreme aptitude!" At once, Gu Yue Bo and Xiong clan leader were shocked.

"Reporting! Clan leader, there has been a strange earthquake, many of the clan’s bamboo buildings have collapsed, and the ground is seeping with blood water. Not many people are injured but they are flustered," A Gu Yue clan Gu Master came running.

"To think that there is a thing!" Gu Yue Bo’s expression changed.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

By the way, spiders have 8 legs, but I think the author failed math... or science....?

We are nearing the end of Book 1 soon!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Moon Raiment!" With the blade impending, Fang Zheng shouted, activating his Gu worm. A misty light that was blue like the moon gushed out from his body, extending and surrounding all the Gu Masters around him.

But even so, everyone was still in despair.

"Struggling is useless." Bai Ning Bing’s blue eyes shone with cruelty and indifference.

But at this time!

Bam!

The ground under everyone’s feet suddenly grew and turned into a lump before exploding, sending soil flying.

Gu Masters cried painfully as they rolled away from the impact.

In a cloud of smoke, a giant spider emerged from everyone’s sights.

The aura of a Rank five Gu made everyone wary.

On the spider that looked like it was made of steel, a black clothed, black haired young man was standing upright.

"I finally reached the surface!" Fang Yuan clenched his fist, his eyes emitting a brilliant glow!

"Eh?" Soon after, he saw Bai Ning Bing who was hacking towards him in mid-air.

The giant iceblade cut through the winds as it slashed towards him.

"Fang Yuan, you are finally here!" Bai Ning Bing’s calm face, after a slight stun, completely transformed into one of excitement and battle intent.

Fang Yuan snorted before the iceblade touched him. The icy winds caused him to feel a slight chill as his black hair flew behind him.

He raised his hand, the Chainsaw Golden Centipede!

Bam!

Iceblade collided with the Chainsaw Golden Centipede, and after a stalemate, the golden centipede’s razors rotated furiously, large amounts of ice shards flying out.

[Friction noises]

Cracks quickly emerged from the surface of the iceblade, quickly covering its entire body.

"Break!" Fang Yuan shouted; he had the strength of two boars, his strength completely overwhelmed Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing could only let go as the iceblade broke into pieces, and ice shards fell.

The Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider began to go berserk again, spreading its six legs and attacking towards Bai Ning Bing.

Gu worms had low intellect, but they were born sensitive, able to sense which target was more of a threat to them. Bai Ning Bing’s aura caused the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider to treat him as an enemy, locking onto him.

Bai Ning Bing’s arms waved, and icicles flew out in a row. The icicles hit the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider’s body and shattered, while the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider went berserk and growled, pouncing while Fang Yuan was on it.

Swish swish swish!

Three black spiral legs shot out like an arrow towards Bai Ning Bing’s fragile body.

Sensing danger, a snowy light shot out from Bai Ning Bing’s aperture.

The light expanded, revealing the white form immortal snake Gu, floating in mid-air.

Bai Ning Bing laughed heartily, leaping and landing on the white form immortal snake’s back, staring at Fang Yuan, "Interesting! Very interesting! Fang Yuan, you didn’t let me down after all!"

"B-Big...brother..." Fang Zheng climbed up from the floor. His face had been cut by the iceblade, his face full of blood as he stared at Fang Yuan with a complex expression.

"The opponent has a Rank five Gu as well?" Bai clan leader’s gaze tightened, becoming nervous.

"Fang Yuan, you finally appeared! Rank five Gu... isn’t that the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider?" Gu Yue Bo’s attention was attracted.

On the battlefield, two youngsters of different ages stood on opposing sides.

One wore white robes, had silver hair and blue eyes, riding on the white form immortal snake holding an iceblade in his hand, like a ice immortal descending to the mortal realm.

The other had black robes, black hair and black eyes, standing on the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider’s back, having the Chainsaw Golden Centipede in his hand, buzzing as it rotated, like a demon god summoned into the world.

The two’s opposing stances attracted many gazes.

Bai Ning Bing had an excited expression, raising the iceblade, shouting loudly, "This will be the most exciting battle in my life. Come, Fang Yuan, let us battle to the death!"

"Hmph." Fang Yuan stared at Bai Ning Bing, using his peripheral vision to observe the surroundings.

This was the three clans’ competition.

To think that the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider brought him here......

He did not want to engage with Bai Ning Bing and waste his time here. Whether Tie Xue Leng or the First gen Gu Yue wins, they would definitely hunt him down. But if he does not defeat this Bai Ning Bing, how could he escape?

Thus battle it is!

BAM!

White form immortal snake and Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider collided. The white snake coiled as the black spider stabbed, fighting at close range.

On the two Gu’s backs, two bodies moved about, the iceblade drawing different sparks in the sky while the Chainsaw Golden Centipede buzzed as it extended and contracted at will.

The mountain rocks broke, and thunderous explosions happened continuously.

Icicles hit Fang Yuan directly, but were blocked by the white armor of the Sky Canopy Gu. Blood moonblade hit Bai Ning Bing, causing a large injury that was instantly covered by a layer of frost, sealing the wound. The frost turned into blood and flesh, causing Bai Ning Bing to recover completely.

"It really is the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique!" Xiong clan leader saw this and stared with his eyes wide open.

Ten extreme physiques were legendary aptitudes, he did not think he would see one with his own eyes.

"Hehehe, Fang Yuan dares to attempt to fight Bai Ning Bing, he is assured to lose!" Bai clan leader laughed sinisterly.

"That might not be..." Tie Ruo Nan beside him pouted.

"Ten extreme physique, it has to be it. In such a battle, if he was a C grade, his primeval essence would've been long gone! Fang Yuan, you are indeed the Desolate Yin Ancient Moon physique!" Gu Yue Bo clenched his fist, his expression extremely agitated.

"This is big brother's true power? So big brother really is a ten extreme physique, he's been concealing himself this entire time!" Fang Zheng's mouth was slightly open, his face full of dejection.

The truth was in front of him, so what does his previous pride amount to now?

Everytime, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing's intense clashes would cause his heart to tremble once.

He felt himself getting smaller, and his older brother Fang Yuan's shadow started to enshroud him once again.

"What sort of battle is this! I cannot believe that this is two Rank three Gu Masters fighting!"

"Did I see wrongly? Fang Yuan is so ferocious? Fighting one on one against Bai Ning Bing and being equally matched!"

Some surviving young Gu Masters stared in disbelief.

The battle suddenly shifted once again.

White form immortal snake and the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider both took great damage, but it was not refined by Bai Ning Bing, merely attracted by the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique.

White form immortal snake spit out a lump of white fog, covering the entire battlefield. Then, its body trembled and it threw Bai Ning Bing off its body before leaving.

"This, immortal..." Seeing this, Bai clan leader was shocked. As he watched the escaping white snake, he did not know what to say.

This fog was like a maze, able to obscure vision and follow one like a shadow. Fang Yuan was covered by the white fog, and his eyes saw nothing but whiteness.

But he did not panic, as although his vision was affected, he still had his other four senses — taste, hearing, smell and touch.

Earth Communication Ear grass.

Roots grew out of Fang Yuan's ears, and very soon he heard a sound analyzing the situation within three hundred steps of his radius.

Lightning Eye Gu!

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes shone with lightning. Although Lightning Eye Gu was Rank three and could break through illusions, this fog made by a Rank five immortal snake completely suppressed it.

"Fuck!" He cursed loudly.

Icicle Gu!

Dozens of icicles flew out in all directions.

Fang Yuan’s ears twitched, hearing the sound of the icicles moving against the wind. Thus, he hurriedly flipped his body to the other side of the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider.

Bam bam bam.

The icicles struck the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider’s body, causing it to go into a rage and rush towards the direction of the icicles.

"I’m not going to play with you." Fang Yuan got off the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider, abandoning it and relying on the Earth Communication Ear grass and attempting to leave the battlefield.

This Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider had already been corrupted by the Blood Frenzy Gu, about to turn into a pool of blood water soon, so he should abandon it as soon as possible.

That Bai Ning Bing was now a ticking time bomb, and killing him is akin to setting off a bomb, he cannot be touched.

The Gu Masters observing the battle only saw a lump of mist, before a small piece was divided out and floated towards the southeast direction of the battlefield.

Within this mist, it was naturally Fang Yuan.

The maze fog followed like a shadow, and unless dispelled, it would continue to obscure Fang Yuan’s vision until the maze fog fades on its own.

Fang Yuan’s eyes continued to see nothing but fog, but he had the Earth Communication Ear grass, thus he could determine his location through sound.

The moving wind and tree leaves, the mountain springs and its flowing water, the chirping of the birds, the breathing of the wild beasts, these were all sounds. Only the mountain rocks had no sound, thus, he sometimes knocked into them.

"Iceblade storm!" Behind him, Bai Ning Bing’s voice came.

Huff huff huff...

The winds blew as cold air spread, the temperature in the air started to decrease, and the white colored iceblade storm was formed, even bigger than before.

Even the Thousand Li Earthwolf Spider was repelled by it.

"That lump of mist, it should be Fang Yuan! Quickly stop him!!" Beside, Tie Ruo Nan shouted loudly.

"Fang Yuan, don’t go, Gu Yue village is your home!" Gu Yue Bo was anxious, trying to chase after him but was stopped by the other two clan leaders.

"Why? Gu Yue clan leader, are you going to break the agreement and enter the battlefield?" Xiong clan leader crossed his arms and snickered.

"Hmph, our Gu Yue clan admits our loss for this battle. Now, whoever stops me, I will murder without hesitation!" Gu Yue Bo watched as Fang Yuan got even further, as his anxiety rose.

"Are you threatening me? I am not scared of you, Gu Yue Bo." Bai clan leader’s expression was grim, at the same time signalling to his Gu Masters.

The Gu Master understood, and immediately dispatched his men to chase after Fang Yuan.

"We cannot let him escape, I’m going ahead." Tie Ruo Nan seeing this chance, immediately moved, a pair of black steel wings emerging from her back as she flew into mid-air, chasing after Fang Yuan.

But at this time, a green shadow shot over.

Rank five — Giant mountain puppet Gu!

This Gu looked like a bronze mask. Its appearance was simple, only showing both eyes and mouth. The bronze mask was covered in blood, flying towards the young girl’s face disregarding her shock.

"Father!" Seeing the blood traces, Tie Ruo Nan screamed subconsciously.

At this time, a large steel hand flew over as well, grabbing Tie Ruo Nan and flying far away without a moment of pause.

This sudden change caused everyone to be taken aback.

"It seems Tie Xue Leng is most likely going to lose. Hehe, it has been almost a thousand years, senior brother. You have really brought me, your junior brother, some surprise." Over 300 metres above the ground, an elderly Gu Master stared at the scene, his expression calm and indifferent.

His hair was white, and so were his eyebrows. As he sat on a giant crane, his right palm opened with a Kinship Blood worm Gu.

This Gu was crystal clear, like a red agate. Its shape was like a cicada, emitting a glow at times, pointing towards the Gu Yue village.

"Senior brother, even if you hide here, I can still find you. You stole my opportunity back then, so I will return the favor to you a thousand fold this time!"

The white brow elderly gritted his teeth as he said so, and he showed an expression of utter hatred.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Wow, so close to the ending. Please give more power stones! >:0

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the azure blue sky, numerous clouds were floating aimlessly.

The elderly Gu Master rode on top of the white crane. Under his white eyebrows that were sharp like daggers, his eyes revealed a deep killing intent.

"Hehehe, with this grudge of mine, I shall start taking revenge on your descendants," he laughed, staring down at the battlefield, stretching his thin and dry finger and pointing downwards.

The white crane below him raised its long and elegant neck, crying out in a bright and loud voice.

The voice spread through the skies, and from far away, there were many return calls.

"What sound is this?" Fang Yuan was activating the Earth Communication Ear grass at the time, thus he heard it first and was shocked in his heart.

The crane cries went on endlessly, all at different pitches, giving off an impressive magnitude. This was not over a hundred canes, nor a few thousand crying at once; it was the collective cries of over ten thousand flying cranes that could cause such an effect.

"Is there a migrating flock of cranes nearby?" Out of nowhere, Fang Yuan felt a strong sense of danger.

The crane cries attracted the attention of the Gu Masters in the arena, turning their heads to look at them.

"What’s that in the sky?"

"From the sound, I’d say its a large herd of migrating birds. Tell all the Gu Masters not to attack recklessly and bring trouble upon themselves!" Bai clan leader was just saying, but suddenly he came to a halt.

His eyes dilated, seeing one, two, three... almost ten thousand cranes in the sky, clumped together and attacking towards the arena.

"How can this be?"

"Get your guard on, defend!"

"Let’s escape, there are ten thousand cranes here, there has to be a myriad beast king."

"The wolf tide is just over, now we have a crane disaster? Oh Heavens, Qing Mao Mountain is truly a place of disasters."

Gu Masters started commenting, expressing the shock in their hearts as their spirits wavered.

After finally resisting the wolf tide, a crane disaster appears. The three clans on Qing Mao mountain have suffered great losses already, how could they have the excess energy to deal with such a large flock of cranes?

The flying cranes folded back their wings, shooting down like a rain of arrows.

Under the thunderous cries, screams of fear, pain and horror erupted at once, as all sorts of lights burst forth – moonblades, water balls and steel spikes were sent into the skies.

After a momentary resistance, more than half of the Gu Masters were killed.

These flying cranes were like pile drivers; each time their wings flapped, it had the strength of a boar, and their claws were sharp and could break rocks. Ordinary cranes were hard enough to deal with, not to mention the large amounts of hundred and thousand beast kings among them.

The clans had centuries of experience in dealing with the wolf tide, and also the sturdy villages that can defend against them. But here, it was the wilderness with no buildings in sight. Where could they find anything resembling a fort?

Thus, during the first attack, half the Gu Masters passed away.

The cranes’ long beaks penetrated hearts, their claws grabbing onto skulls. With a flap of their wings, people would vomit blood and be sent flying, all their bones broken.

Fang Yuan was also attacked. his eyes could only see white fog as he relied on the Earth Communication Ear grass to avoid their attacks.

"Fang Yuan, hang in there!" This time, he heard Gu Yue Bo shouting behind him.

Fang Yuan felt puzzled.

What’s up with this Gu Yue Bo, when he shouted Fang Yuan’s name earlier, the tone was weird, like he had intentions to protect him. Now he even ran over to help.

Fang Yuan was a scheming old fox, but even he could not predict everything. In this short period, how could he conjecture that Tie Ruo Nan assumed he was a ten extreme physique?

Gu Yue Bo was a Rank four expert, thus since the cranes attacking Fang Yuan were ordinary beasts, they were easily killed or repelled by him.

"Fang Yuan, is that you?" Gu Yue Bo came to the maze fog.

Fang Yuan’s thoughts whirled in his mind: Right now, his predicament was extremely dangerous, and being near Gu Yue Bo would greatly increase his chances of survival. Thus he answered: "It’s me."

Gu Yue Bo hearing Fang Yuan’s voice, finally breathed a sigh of relief, "Very good! Fang Yuan, let’s not mention what happened in the past. No matter what, the clan will protect your safety. Let’s return to the village, I’ll protect you while retreating!"

What he did not know was that the village was the most dangerous location for Fang Yuan right now.

But the crane disaster was a much greater threat compared to the village. At least if he went back to the village, he would not die immediately compared to staying under the cranes’ attacks.

Fang Yuan sighed without hesitating, "Please lead the way clan leader, I will try to keep up!"

But at this time, a giant crane descended from the sky. The white-brow old Gu Master sat on top of the crane, his tone cold, "No one can escape, all of you shall die here."

Fang Yuan could not see, but heard Gu Yue Bo beside him shout, "Rank five Gu

Master!"

Evidently, the Gu Yue clan leader had investigative methods that was able to deduce the stranger’s cultivation level.

Fang Yuan was stunned in his heart: Where is there another Rank five Gu Master here? This tiny Qing Mao mountain, it was neither a famous location nor full of resources, why are all the Rank five experts gathering here?

"Don’t tell me, this has to do with First gen Gu Yue?" Fang Yuan hit an inspiration.

His heart jumped!

If it was an ordinary crane disaster, he would have no chances left. Wild flying beasts were hard to make use of, and although he was at Rank three peak stage, compared to a Rank five he was still weak and could not get out of the danger.

But now another Rank five Gu Master showed up. Not only is he another source of extreme danger, but also a chance to break out of his predicament.

This current Qing Mao mountain, the three Rank five experts were the crucial players, the rest were insignificant.

Only a Rank five can deal with Rank five.

Immediately, Fang Yuan decided in his heart.

It is time, he has to bet on this!

"Clan leader, the First gen ancestor has fully awakened, we will be safe if we return to the village!" Fang Yuan said.

"What?" Gu Yue Bo shouted in shock.

His shock gave Fang Yuan reassurance.

"I won’t lie about such things. As long as we get back to the village, we can save our lives," Fang Yuan continued.

Gu Yue Bo was a resolute man, thus he brought Fang Yuan and sped towards the village.

But the flying cranes continued to approach, blocking the path. Hundred beast kings and thousand beast kings appeared non-stop.

Gu Yue Bo fought with his life, protecting Fang Yuan. Eventually he could no longer proceed, falling into the encirclement of the flying cranes. Fang Yuan was protected by Gu Yue Bo, thus he was safe for the time being.

Once time was up, the maze fog vanished.

Fang Yuan observed the battlefield, only to see corpses lying everywhere, showing that a terrifying battle had happened. The Gu Masters’ sacrifice was huge, but the flock of cranes were also greatly damaged. Other than broken limbs of humans, there were also crane corpses everywhere.

"Isn’t this the Iron Beak Flying Crane?" Fang Yuan felt puzzled.

Others might not recognise it, for after all, this flying beast was not from the Southern Border. But he knew that this Iron Beak Flying Crane originated from the Middle Kingdom.

"Eh? Myriad beast king, Rank five expert!" Next, Fang Yuan saw in mid-air, a giant crane was flapping its wings, floating. On its back, a white-brow white haired old man was sitting with a cold expression.

Fang Yuan looked away, back at Gu Yue Bo.

This Gu Yue clan leader was already full of injuries, his body full of blood, fighting with his life. Many times he could clearly have avoided, but to protect Fang Yuan, he would rather suffer the injury himself.

"Clan leader! The current situation is not looking good. Gu Masters are fighting bravely, but are all divided into different areas by the flying cranes, they will eventually get overwhelmed. We must gather their strength into one. Only then can we have a chance to break out of this and return to the village!" Fang Yuan said to Gu Yue Bo.

"You are right." Gu Yue Bo looked across the battlefield, shouting loudly, "Everyone, the enemy is before us, our Gu Yue village has a method to deal with the enemy, quickly assemble with me and kill our way out!"

The voice echoed in the battlefield, attracting numerous gazes.

"What? Gu Yue clan still has a trump card to deal with a Rank five?"

"Believing in it is better than nothing!"

"Brothers, let’s go, gather with the Gu Yue clan leader!!"

They were already despairing, but now that Gu Yue Bo said it, they saw some hope.

Under the pressure of death, these former enemies united and worked together, quickly gathering into one spot.

"Gu Yue clan... hehe, you are all senior brother’s descendants." On the huge crane, the white brow elderly laughed coldly, about to command the cranes to intercept, but on second thoughts, he stopped that idea.

"Why not let these people escape back, so I can finish them off together. But these are all his descendants, so in the battle later, I can use them to threaten him. But these three Rank four Gu Masters have the ability to interfere with the battle, I cannot let them stay, I shall kill them first!"

Thinking so, the white brow elderly screeched strangely, flicking his finger and sending three balls of light flying.

"What Gu is this?" Xiong clan leader was first hit by the white ball, and after getting covered by it, his speed fell drastically, slower than a snail.

The other two clan leaders were the same.

"Fang Yuan, quickly go, Gu Yue clansmen listen up, you have to protect Fang Yuan at all costs, he’s the only one that knows the method!" Gu Yue Bo tried all ways but could not get rid of this light ring, thus he screamed loudly and turned around to face the white brow elderly.

Fang Yuan turned around, looking at this Gu Yue clan leader deeply.

"Elder Fang Yuan, let us protect you!" A large number of Gu Yue clansmen gathered beside Fang Yuan, protecting him in all directions.

Healing light as well as speed buffs were all casted on Fang Yuan.

Collision sounds were heard from the back, and under the mystical and cruel fate, the three clan leaders who hated each other worked together tightly right now, battling against the mysterious elderly with their life on the line.

The results of this battle, was decided from the start.

The three clan leaders died one by one as the white brow elderly flicked his sleeves, sitting firmly on the huge crane. Flying cranes engulfed the skies as they gradually forced their way into Gu Yue village.

Gu Yue village was in chaos, and the sad cries of people were heard everywhere.

Large numbers of bamboo buildings fell, and the debris area was full of corpses with white cloths covering over them. Injured members cried in pain, lying on the ground as many healing Gu Masters worked to the bone.

The clan main pavilion was half devastated, and the village square was covered in a layer of blood water; this was extremely horrifying to the clansmen.

Because Tie Xue Leng and First gen Gu Yue engaged in fierce combat, it caused the mountains to shake. Thus, Gu Yue village which was right above was greatly affected.

Gu Yue Yao Ji who was staying in the village, did not manage to receive Gu Yue Bo, but instead saw the injured remnants of the three clans.

"What is going on?" She shouted loudly.

Fang Yuan didn’t reply, because the flock of cranes behind her was the best explanation.

"This?!"

"Oh my god..."

"Is our Gu Yue clan going to perish today?"

Immediately, the village fell into chaos once again.

"Senior brother, your junior, I have come here all the way to see you. Why aren’t you coming out to meet me?" White-brow elderly stood on the crane’s back, his tone full of icy killing intent.

Before he was finished, on the village square, blood water gushed out like a ten metre fountain, and the bright red coffin appeared vertically.

As a blood wight, First gen Gu Yue stood inside the coffin, his blood red eyes staring closely at the white-brow elderly.

"To think that you didn’t die... how did you find this place? As expected, that Gu Master earlier was instigated by you!" First gen Gu Yue said hatefully.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Hello guys, I owe you all two chapters. Sorry for the delay too, but it’s Chinese New Year this week and I’ve been busy...Well if it is any consolation, when I have the time to do them you guys get to binge read the rest!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"How did I find you? Hahaha!" The white-brow elderly laughed loudly, his voice sound extremely happy, while his gaze was ruthless. He opened his palm, revealing a Gu.

It was the Kinship Bloodworm.

Kinship Bloodworm was crystal clear, like a red agate. It was like a cicada, emitting light at times, pointing towards First gen Gu Yue.

"Although senior brother stole my opportunity and backstabbed me, taking away my Gu, I still managed to learn the secret arts. Thus I refined this Kinship Bloodworm. You know how I refined it? Hehehe, using the heart blood of your two blood-related sons. They were only five to six years old and were too young, so without sufficient heart blood, I could only turn them both into living sources, taking their blood every month. After spending tens of years, I finally accumulated enough heart blood and refined this Gu." The white-brow elderly said briskly, his tone extremely smug.

"Oh, right, both your sons died soon after. HAHAHA, after refining the Kinship Bloodworm, I used it to find you for many years. But this world is too big, and you were nowhere to be found. Even though the Kinship Bloodworm was Rank five, its range is still limited. Eventually, when I was almost dying, I could only use the life-retaining Jade Burial Gu, living through death and sealing myself. Not long before this, I had to come out of sealing and I tried one last time. To think I found you by coincidence! Senior brother, do you know how happy and excited I was at that time?!"

"As for that Tie Xue Leng, hehehe, I did send him a letter to attract him here. Seeing him, I thought of our former relationship. How nostalgic. Back then we were from the same sect, chasing after demonic cultivators. We were called the Righteous Twin Cranes, having unlimited glory and pride," The white-brow elderly saying so, showed a nostalgic expression.

His expression was calm and his tone was gentle, but the more he thought about it, the stronger the killing intent was in both of his cold eyes.

This white-brow elderly, came from the Middle Continent; he was known as Lord Sky Crane.

Back then, he used the Rank five Crane Enslavement Gu and ruled over a myriad beast king level crane king and rose to fame. Because he could enslave a myriad beast king, it meant he controlled a ten thousand beast army.

This strength allowed him to use his own power and eliminate a single village.

Lord Sky Crane and First gen Gu Yue both came from the Middle Continent’s Immortal Crane Sect. Hundreds of years ago, they were senior and junior brothers, closer than real brothers, killing many demonic Gu Masters and working together, having perfect synergy with each other.

In one of their attempts in chasing after demonic cultivators, they found an inheritance ground.

This inheritance was one of the many set up by the Blood Sea Ancestor. But if it was an ordinary inheritance, so be it, they would not have turned on each other.

However, this inheritance ground’s treasure was beyond precious; it could allow one to rise to the heavens and become an immortal from a mortal! Thus, the two brothers were moved.

Legend says, Blood Sea Ancestor left behind over a hundred thousand inheritances, spread throughout the world. But his real motive was the few true treasures hidden in a few of these spots. They hid his personal Gu worms, his true methods.

The sect brothers encountered the Blood Sea Ancestor’s true treasure inheritance.

Lord Sky Crane was quicker and obtained the inheritance. Corrupted by greed, First gen Gu Yue schemed against him and stole the Gu worm. Then he attempted to kill Lord Sky Crane, but did not succeed as the latter managed to escape.

Seeing that the matter was exposed, First gen Gu Yue could only hide his name and escape everywhere, preventing himself from getting found by his former sect. After tens of years, he could not find a Lifespan Gu, thus in his final days he stood at Qing Mao Mountain in the Southern Border, changing his appearance and calling himself Gu Yue, establishing the Gu Yue village.

Lord Sky Crane being unable to find him, was filled with hatred. Meanwhile the Immortal Crane Sect was very interested in the blood sea inheritance, thus with their help, Lord Sky Crane used the life-preserving Jade Burial Gu, falling into a deep sleep and preserving his last bit of life.

This life-preserving Jade Burial Gu’s method was also a special method. Similar to First gen Gu Yue’s transformation into a zombie, they were unorthodox methods and were just desperate measures.

Turning into a zombie, replacing life with death. Life-preserving life burial could enable one to hang onto life, but did not increase their lifespan.

There was only one way to increase one’s lifespan in this world. Like what Fang Yuan did in his previous life, they would need to use the Lifespan Gu, increasing one’s own lifespan from the roots; this was the proper way. Other methods had disadvantages and were not recognised by Heaven and Earth, belonging to helpless resorts.

"Senior brother! You shameless disciple, despicable scum! Back then when you backstabbed me, did you expect retribution today? Haha, the heavens did not let me down, for I finally found you. Today, not only will I exterminate your bloodline and destroy your thousand year plot, but I will also take back my opportunity! This day, I have waited far too long!!"

Ending his reminisces, Lord Sky Crane sighed loudly, gathering his killing intent.

But before he struck, First gen Gu Yue acted even faster!

The blood water on the ground poured up like a fountain, giving off a terrifying aura.

The sharp smell of blood spread as within the thick concentrated blood water, tens of thousands of blood guillotines flew out, tightly packed together.

Whoooosh.

Sounds of wings flapping were heard as countless bladewing blood bat Gu flew into the air, engulfing the sky and killing towards the crane flock.

The crane flock fell into chaos.

Blood guillotines and bladewing blood bats were much smaller than the Iron Beak Flying Cranes, gaining movement advantage in battle.

Lord Sky Crane was furious, screaming loudly and ordering the flying crane king he was riding on, rushing towards First gen Gu Yue.

"Retreat!" A Gu Master shouted.

The winds howled as the myriad beast king’s charge was too imposing, like a meteor hitting the ground, causing people to feel shocked and afraid.

But suddenly, a blood wave flew into the sky, and the hiding blood river python assaulted under the cover of the blood water. It opened its mouth, biting at the flying crane king’s long neck. At the same time its body coiled, trying to drag the flying crane king into the blood pond on the ground.

Lord Sky Crane snorted; he knew about the blood river python. Blood water was like a supreme recovery medicine for the python, thus he needed to cut the contact between them.

With this he willed in his mind, and the flying crane king stretched out its steel claws, grabbing onto the blood river python. At the same time it flapped its wings, flying towards the sky. After battling with Tie Xue Leng, the blood river python still had many injuries on its body, and its strength was also greatly diminished. Thus it was carried by the flying crane king into the air, slowing leaving the village.

"Hand over your life!" Lord Sky Crane howled, turning into a white flash and pouncing on First gen Gu Yue was who in the red coffin.

First gen Gu Yue took a step out of the coffin, and with a stretch, wings grew out of his back. These pair of wings were large and strong, like jet-black coloured bat wings.

Zombie Gu are a classic series of Gu worms, widely spread in the world. Rank two Roaming Zombie Gu, Rank three Fur Zombie Gu, Rank four Jumping Zombie Gu, Rank five Flying Zombie Gu. The Blood Wight Gu was one of the flying zombies, of course it could fly!

First gen Gu Yue’s eyes burnt with raging flames as he opened his arms and showed his devious demonic claws. He spread both wings, rushing towards the sky. With a boom, he collided with Lord Sky Crane who was in the air.

The two had almost equal strength, and after retreating for a distance, they stabilized themselves and attacked once again.

Boom boom boom....

The two engaged in aerial combat, their bodies colliding constantly. The power of Rank five was fully displayed, as the aftermath of their conflicts resulted in numerous bamboo buildings collapsing.

After a while, First gen Gu Yue shouted loudly, his body covered in blood shadows, as his attacks became several times more ruthless.

Lord Sky Crane’s eyes glowed with light, attacking like the slashing of a flying blade, or the piercing of an immortal sword, breaking the shadows one by one.

First gen Gu Yue breathed out a bloody mist again, prompting Lord Sky Crane to activate his Gu worm which formed a light barrier, blocking the blood mist from invading.

After a while, Lord Sky Crane was after all a dying old man, his elderly body weak, and thus his strength fell, slowly getting overpowered by First gen Gu Yue, falling into a disadvantage.

"After hundreds of years, you did not improve one bit!" First gen Gu Yue laughed loudly and mocked.

"God damn scoundrel!" Lord Sky Crane scolded in rage; he did not expect First gen Gu Yue to be so strong, be it the blood guillotine or the bladewing blood bat Gu – they were supposed to be his.

Thinking so, he got even more furious.

"Hmph, it’s time to use my trump card!" Lord Sky Crane snorted secretly, his white eyebrows raising lightly, transforming.

His eyebrows grew frantically, becoming two thick bushes over tens of metres, one left and one right like snakes coming out of their dens, moving quickly and coiling around First gen Gu Yue.

First gen Gu Yue struggled to no avail, his claws unceasingly attacking. These eyebrows looked fragile but were stronger than steel, and also malleable. Once restrained, it was like the roots of an old tree.

"It is actually the Raise Eyebrows & Exhale Gu!" First gen Gu Yue’s tone changed for the first time, shocked and furious.

This Raise Eyebrows & Exhale Gu did not use ordinary qi, but primeval energy. Using the primeval essence in the Gu Master’s aperture, and sending it out as primeval energy, this Gu was uncommon as it had a lose-lose type of usage.

By using this Gu now, not only was First gen Gu Yue’s primeval essence rapidly expended, but so was Lord Sky Crane’s.

Raise Eyebrows & Exhale Gu was like a bridge, connecting the two’s aperture, causing primeval essence to be expended. It was often used by high ranking Gu Masters to bully the weak. Once used on someone stronger, it was akin to courting death.

But this situation was different.

Lord Sky Crane and First gen Gu Yue were both Rank five peak stage, but First gen Gu Yue turned into a zombie and his aperture was dead, thus he was unable to recover natural primeval essence. Although Lord Sky Crane was dying of old age and barely had any lifespan, his aperture was full of life, and his primeval essence could still recover. This attacked First gen Gu Yue’s greatest weakness.

Lord Sky Crane’s primeval essence was still recovering, but in First gen Gu Yue’s aperture, his primeval essence would only go down and not up.

First gen Gu Yue desperately retreated, but the white eyebrows extended with him as if they were endless, and at the same time Lord Sky Crane was moving closer as well.

First gen Gu Yue howled, willing in his mind and calling the blood guillotine and bladewing blood bat Gu in attempt to cut the white eyebrows, but it had no effect. The whitebrows were extremely strong, and even if a few were cut, they would reconnect themselves.

His primeval essence continued to decrease, and if this went on, First gen Gu Yue was definitely going to lose. He was after all an ambitious man, forced to his wits end. He gritted his teeth and changed tactics, sending the blood guillotine and bladewing blood bat Gu towards Lord Sky Crane.

Lord Sky Crane had to constantly sustain the Raise Eyebrows & Exhale Gu, and by being attacked like this, he could only use the light barrier and defend himself passively.

The white barrier wavered and Lord Sky Crane’s heart sank, the situation was not looking good for him.

Most likely, before he finishes expending First gen Gu Yue’s primeval essence, his light barrier would be broken through and he would get killed by First gen Gu Yue!

Note: I am so sorry if the name "Raise Eyebrows & Exhale Gu" is dumb but there’s no other way to translate it... Lol.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

I have been very busy, but I’ve been working on TL with the time I had, and I’m posting this to tell you that on Saturday (GMT+8) I am supposed to post up to 199 by then.

So I’m going to post the entire batch of chapters (193-199) up on Saturday so you may read the entire story in one go, instead of cliffhanging everyday. Trust me, it’s much better this way to read the entire batch. Also to some people: Yes the book is ending on Chapter 199, but there’s Book two after that.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The Sky Crane Lord’s face turned malevolent and his two eyes glinted with ominous light as he suddenly threw down a rain of feather arrows.

This arrow rain was not targetted at the First gen Gu Yue; First gen Gu Yue had already turned into a blood wight zombie, a being that possessed astounding defence and would be difficult to breach.

The feather arrows rained down and instead pierced through countless of Gu Masters, instantly killing them!

Along with this, two white lights burst out from Sky Crane Lords’s eyes. As two beams of light swept through the village, wherever they went the bamboo buildings would collapse and street pavements were disintegrated. Anyone that touched these beams of light would melt like the snow meeting the sunlight.

When a Rank five Gu Master acts, he could instantly create huge casualties with every move.

Miserable shouts, screams and cries of despair continuously rang in the battlefield like a medley.

A feather arrow flower towards Fang Yuan, but he casually grabbed someone beside him and threw the man into the arrow’s path. The feather arrow pierced this person’s head and stopped. Fang Yuan then rolled, dodging a claw attack of an Ironbeak Flying Crane.

There was very little that a Rank three could do against a Rank five. Even Bai

Ning Bing was dodging nonstop at this moment. Every time he was injured, the Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique would heal him, but this also brought him closer to death itself.

Rank five Gu Masters were already at the peak of the secular world.

"Stop!" The First gen Gu Yue shouted. As he watched the Gu Masters before him getting slaughtered, his heart felt like it was bleeding.

He had a great conspiracy for establishing the village and spreading his bloodline; it was not simply just to hide his identity. The clan members were the fruits of centuries of planning. But now, as they were slaughtered by the Sky Crane Lord, it was akin to using up the First gen Gu Yue’s centuries’ worth of heart blood.

Being left with no choice, First gen Gu Yue could only five up on Sky Crane Lord. He ordered the blade wing blood bat Gu and blood guillotine to fly towards the village, defending it against the Sky Crane Lord’s attacks.

The Sky Crane Lord laughed loudly. The Blood Sea Inheritance was focused on attack and not defence — by doing this the First gen Gu Yue was giving up on his own advantage and using his weak point to battle.

The Sky Crane Lord understood the First gen Gu Yue very well and knew his scheme. Thus he intentionally let these Gu Yue clan members go first, and then attacked them at this moment. Sure enough, he was able to escape from the perilous situation he was under while the First gen Fu Yue was troubled by trying to take care of the entire situation.

"Not good!"

As the situation continued to be in a deadlock, the First gen Gu Yue suddenly shouted. Shadows of iron chains had suddenly appeared around his entire body.

These shadows immediately turned from virtual into reality, and formed into long iron chains. These chains were like snakes and pythons as they coiled around First gen Gu Yue, binding his hands and feet.

A talisman paper also gradually appeared and stuck right between the First gen Gu Yue’s eyes.

Bang.

First gen Gu Yue was bound by the iron chains; he could no longer stretch his wings and thus he fell smashing down onto the ground.

Such an unexpected scene not only shocked the First gen Gu Yue, but it also caused Sky Crane Lord to be shocked for a while before the latter started to laugh madly. "So this is the Demon Suppression Iron Chain Gu and the Problem Nipped in the Bud Gu. Hahaha, I guess that so-called Divine Investigator wasn’t a good-for-nothing after all. My good senior brother, you are sure to die today!"

These two great Gu were both the main Gu worms of the Tie family.

The Demon Suppression Iron Chain Gu could restrict a Gu Master’s movement ability and thus let others trample upon them. The Problem Nipped in the Bud Gu was able to extract Gu worms from inside the Gu Master and seal them away.

Countless numbers of demonic path Gu Masters had been captured by Tie Xue Leng through these two Gu, and now he had used it on the First gen Gu Yue.

"When did this happen?!" The First gen Gu Yue was startled and also furious. He though back to the final scene when he had struck Tie Xue Leng dead.

The copper mask had flown away, revealing a square face.

Although his death was certain, there was no fear on his features. Two eyes shone with the vicissitudes of time and resoluteness as his bloodied palm struck lightly against First gen Gu Yue’s chest.

However, the strength it contained was so minuscule that First gen Gu Yue had completely ignored it at the time.

"So it was then! Damn it, I would have already sensed it if I had a living body. But though my zombie body is strong in both offence and defence, it is not sensitive." The First gen Gu Yue’s head was full of regrets.

There were many shortcomings when turning one’s body into a blood wight. He should have already died according to his original lifespan, but he lived on by defying the heavens, so how could there not be any price to pay?

"Hahaha! The Sky Crane Lord’s aura grew with his laughter, then he charged towards the First gen Gu Yue.

First gen Gu Yue could only try to resist. Naturally, he fell into an absolute disadvantage.

The Demon Suppression Iron Chain Gu not only bound his whole body, but the phantom image of the black iron chain also appeared within his aperture and sealed it.

The primeval sea surged like boiling water and many Gu worms flew around in the aperture, resisting the suppression of the Demon Suppression Iron Chain Gu.

With this, the First gen Gu Yue’s primeval essence expenditure became extremely huge.

"Your defeat is certain, accept your death!" Sky Crane Lord’s attacks came nonstop, like he had fallen into madness.

First gen Gu Yue’s head was riddled with injuries, while his pale ribs were exposed and his two arms severed from the shoulders by the Sky Crane Lord.

When it seemed that Sky Crane Lord was going to really kill him, the First gen Gu Yue suddenly opened his mouth and gave an unearthly cry.

"Yannngggg—!"

Extremely ear-piercing sound waves concentrated and instantly struck the Sky Crane Lord.

When Sky Crane Lord heard this sound, he felt like he had just met with an enormous attack, and he was sent flying dozens of steps away, his white eyebrows even pulled tight and straight. After that, he rapidly fell down to the ground.

Blood started flowing out of his eyes, nose, ears and mouth. The lingering sound was causing chaos inside his body, causing the blood to flow in reverse; he couldn’t move at all for a moment.

Seeing this chance, many Gu Masters threw moon blades, water bullets and so on from a distance, but they were all blocked by the light halo on the Sky Crane Lord.

Dozens of flying cranes swarmed at the First gen Gu Yue, but their iron beaks felt like it was smashing against steel skin and iron bones as they attacked the blood wight zombie body, and broke off one after another.

A Rank five Gu’s defense was no small thing. Even if Fang Yuan used the Chainsaw Golden Centipede to saw at the blood wight zombie body for some time, he might not be able to cut off even a piece of skin.

Right now, in this battle, only these two Rank five Gu Masters could threaten each other.

Although they were in a very bad state, as long as their primeval essence didn’t end, others could only look on helplessly.

Sky Crane Lord saw that the flying cranes were unable to accomplish anything, while the flying crane king was fighting with the blood river python far away. As for himself, he was unable to move anything other than his eyes properly due to his qi and blood being in conflict. He concentrated his mind on the Raise Eyebrows & Exhale Gu, greatly accelerating the primeval essence consumption.

First gen Gu Yue was on the verge of death!

The primeval essence in his primeval sea quickly decreased and once it was completely used up, his Gu worms would have no primeval essence to resist the suppression of the Demon Suppression Iron Chain Gu. Once this happened, Problem Nipped in the Bud Gu would start extracting the Gu worms and sealing them. That would truly be the end!

First gen Gu Yue shouted in panic, "Quick, lend me a hand! Grab the eyebrows and activate your primeval essence."

"Let’s help!"

"Help the first ancestor!!"

"Let’s go."

A large group of Gu Masters went to help - not only from Gu Yue clan, but even Bai and Xiong clan.

Even First gen Gu Yue was not able to cut apart these white eyebrows, so there was no way these Gu Masters’ methods would work. They could only do as First gen Gu Yue said, stretching their hands and grabbing the white eyebrows.

They had just touched the white eyebrows, when some of the eyebrows split up and coiled around their wrists, arms and then finally extended to their bodies.

"Ahh....." Miserable shrieks echoed in succession.

How could a rank two Gu Master’s primeval essence fight against a Rank five primeval essence? In a short while, their primeval essence was consumed clean, their primeval sea was empty, their apertures completely dried up; their apertures started to crack, before finally crumbling and collapsing.

The aperture was the most vital part in a human body, even more important than heart. Once the aperture broke, many Gu Masters’ eyes would roll and lose their lives on the spot.

"Fuck!" First gen Gu Yue cursed in anger. The Demon Suppression Iron Chain Gu was tightening up, piercing into the skin and flesh; the bones were starting to make cackling sounds.

It was reasonable to say that with Tie Xue Leng’s death, this Demon Suppression Iron Chain Gu couldn’t get primeval essence from its Gu Master and shouldn’t have been able to activate. However, it had been infected by the berserk blood Gu, and thus it could absorb the primeval essence in the air. Also, Demon Suppression Iron Chain Gu was Tie Xue Leng’s Gu, so it contained Tie Xue Leng’s will to subdue First gen Gu Yue.

First gen Gu Yue’s primeval essence was depleting quickly, and he would not be able to bear it much longer.

Many Gu Masters that were rushing to provide assistance, saw this and couldn’t help but slow down.

"What are you afraid of? If the first ancestor loses, we will also die! Are you hoping that you will be spared?" Fang Yuan shouted; he hurried to the side of First gen Gu Yue and grabbed the white eyebrows.

The Thousand Li Earthwolf spider had already died, and the enemy had flying cranes that could fly around to pursue and attack. There was no hope for him if he tried to escape alone.

On the contrary, if he helped First gen Gu Yue and the two sides fought each other to death, he might be able to reap some benefits.

The white eyebrows firmly locked onto Fang Yuan’s wrists, then it followed to his arms and creeped along like a vine towards his waist. The snow silver primeval essence in his aperture was being quickly consumed, but Fang Yuan clenched his teeth and persevered.

His actions served as an example. Other Gu Masters were spurred and rushed forth in succession.

"Let’s do this together, we might have a chance at life!"

"That’s right, there is strength in numbers!!"

"Sigh, what else can we do, we can only stake our lives."

Countless hands touched the white eyebrows; Gu Masters kept on dying and many other Gu Masters kept on filling the gaps to add in to the consumption.

"Hahaha, fighting against a Rank five, how brilliant and interesting!" Bai Ning Bing also stepped forward.

"Life or death will be decided by this." Xiong Jiao Man similarly stood up.

Fang Zheng was nowhere to be seen; he was lost in the wild and hadn’t escaped back to the village. Whether he lived or had died, no one could be sure, but everything bode ill for him.

Time seemed to be passing very slowly at this moment, becoming unendurable.

As time passed, many Gu Masters died. Some Gu Masters directly attacked Sky Crane Lord, but the white halo around him stood as steady as Mt. Tai.

Only Rank three Gu Masters could hold their grounds in this consumption face off.

Many Gu Masters’ confidence started shaking and they were beginning to hesitate.

Both sides were locked up in deadlock. Sky Crane Lord smiled grimly and said, "My victory is certain, you will all die!"

There was too big a gap between Rank three and Rank five. Rank fours would have been able to affect the situation, but the three Rank four clan leaders were already killed by Sky Crane Lord.

First gen Gu Yue was bound by the iron chains while the white eyebrows had also coiled up around him and the Problem Nipped in the Bud Gu on his forehead was swaying; there was already very few primeval essence left in his aperture.

Suddenly the Problem Nipped in the Bud Gu let out a faint yellow light and slowly extracted a ball of yellow light from First gen Gu Yue’s aperture.

This yellow light was bigger than a fist but smaller than a basin. It slowly floated down on the ground, and only a faint glimmer of the yellow light remained.

A Gu that looked like a crystal skull showed up. The Gu was like a skull of a child that could fit on a palm, and the skull was like a crystal filled with reddish bloodstripes.

"Blood Skull Gu! After hundreds of years, I finally get to see you again!" Sky Crane Lord looked on from a distance and wept tears of joy; he was extremely moved.

Note: ‘Problem Nipped in the Bud’ Gu - The name of this Gu is an idiom that means: Solving the problem from the roots itself.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Hey guys! So I stayed up and it’s 6am now... ah, I’ll post the rest when I’m awake. Here’s two chapters first. Also QI told me not to post too many in one go for traffic purposes lol... so I will make a tiny bit of intervals in each two-three. Like 2-3 hours maybe? See how it goes after I wake up.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

First gen Gu Yue clenched his bloody fangs so hard that it made cracking sounds, but he couldn’t even budge, much less struggle.

Suddenly, another ball of light was captured by the yellow talisman and it fell to the ground, turning into an alternating black and white Taiji light sphere.

Two peculiar Gu worms were circling and chasing each other within this light sphere. As the Taiji light sphere continued to rotate, they seemed to carry traces of great dao, shocking many Gu Masters.

"What Gu is this?" Bai Ning Bing and many others were bewildered.

"It actually is a Rank four...." Fang Yuan’s eyes focused in concentration.

"Yin Yang Rotation Gu!!" Sky Crane Lord screamed, his face clearly revealing his shock. He remained stunned for a while, then he raised his head and laughed, "My good senior brother, I truly have to thank you for finding such a good Gu. Hahaha, you actually wanted to turn back into a human, but what a pity, for your plan has been destroyed by me!"

First gen Gu Yue anxiously moved his legs and snarled; he had completely lost his manners. Whether it was Blood Skull Gu or Yin Yang Rotation Gu, they were both crucial to his plan that stretched through a millennium. Now, they were both sealed and extracted; all his painstaking plotting had almost gone in up into smoke now.

Sky Crane Lord’s smile turned even more jubilant, his desire for vengeance was fully satisfied by seeing this expression of First gen Gu Yue.

Another yellow light that was captured fell to the ground; it was a scarlet colored Gu and looked like a translucent water sphere.

On seeing this Gu, First gen Gu Yue suddenly stopped his struggle; he was exulted. He opened his bloody mouth, revealing his fangs as he shouted, "Quick, destroy this Gu worm!"

Several Gu Masters immediately moved forward upon hearing this and used their attacks.

This Gu had been sealed by Problem Nipped in the Bud Gu, stopping the First gen Gu Yue from activating it with his thoughts. There was a layer of yellow light on the surface carrying an imprint; it could only be unsealed by Tie Xue Leng or by using some special Gu worms.

However, this Gu was an expendable Gu and was special as it needed to be destroyed to be activated.

Several Gu Masters made their moves; the yellow light imprint was only a sealing Gu worm and didn’t have any defensive powers. After several attacks, the yellow light imprint collapsed, destroying the sealed Gu worm along with it.

Buzz!

A soft cry resounded, and a blood light bloomed, suddenly expanding and turning into a spherical shield within moments.

First gen Gu Yue was within the shield, while Sky Crane Lord was outside.

The blood red shield’s range was six mu, and Bai Ning Bing and Fang Yuan were both within the shield, whereas Xiong Jiao Man and some others were outside.

The most encouraging part was that the white eyebrows were instantly cut apart into two halves by this shield; with the disintegration of the white eyebrows, Fang Yuan and others recovered control of their bodies.

"The aura of this shield reaches Rank five, but why does it resemble the Water Curtain Skyflower Gu?" Fang Yuan was bewildered; he had never seen this Gu before.

Sky Crane Lord was separated by this shield, and he staggered up before laughing coldly, "Senior brother, such a good move, you are actually able to counterattack and break my Raise Eyebrows & Exhale Gu. It’s a pity such a trifle defense won’t work against me, you are just prolonging your imminent defeat by doing this!"

First gen Gu Yue instead laughed loudly, "Junior brother, how about testing it yourself?"

"That’s my intention!" Killing intent flashed in Sky Crane Lord’s eyes; countless flying cranes and feather arrows shot towards the shield, while his eyes also sent out the white beams at the same time.

However, the blood shield was still unshakeable and was as stable as before.

Sky Crane Lord’s face turned extremely dark as he stopped his attacks, "What Gu is this?"

Gu Yue first threw his head back and laughed, "Let me teach you, this is my personally fused gu: Blood Curtain Skyflower Gu. The Water Curtain Skyflower Gu - a Rank four gu - can block Rank five Gu attacks. This Gu is at Rank five and has even more powerful defense. Water Curtain Skyflower Gu prevents its owner from going in and out; but this Blood Curtain Skyflower Gu lets me go out. Junior brother, don’t be impatient, you can attack slowly, use all your strength. Just wait till I recover, then I’ll come out and cut your dog head, ahhaha!"

"You thief, keep on boasting!" Sky Crane Lord was in turmoil; he had everything in his grasp before, but to think First gen Gu Yue was able to recover some ground and the situation turned into a deadlock again.

He attacked madly and extremely fiercely, killing all the Gu Masters outside the shield including Xiong Jiao Man.

However, inside the Blood Curtain Skyflower Gu, all was calm and quiet. The blood shield was as stable as Mt. Tai, and the group of Gu Masters inside the shield were relieved.

"First ancestor is indeed an unrivalled hero!"

"We are finally saved. The first ancestor will show his divine might and this person will definitely be defeated."

"Hu, this is the strength of Rank five Gu Master? I am actually still alive in front of such strength!"

The Gu Masters cheered and shouted.

On the contrary, Bai Ning Bing snorted; his death was certain due to the Ten extreme aptitude, but this deadlock decreased the splendor of it and he was not happy about it.

Sky Crane Lord kept on attacking for a long while with no results. At one moment, he suddenly stopped as if he had woken up.

First gen Gu Yue’s words were meant to incite him into attacking the Blood Curtain Skyflower Gu and wasting his primeval essence. If he wasn’t wrong, this Blood Curtain Skyflower Gu had the same effect as Water Curtain Skyflower Gu. Its fusion price was extremely high and belonged to one time use expendable category, but it had a high defense, albeit with a set duration. It would automatically dissipate after a certain amount of time.

At this thought, Sky Crane Lord sat cross-legged, then took out two primeval stones and pinched them, starting to recover his primeval essence.

"Lend me a hand, you will only have a chance at life by helping me. Primeval stones, I need a large number of them!" First gen Gu Yue shouted - the surrounding Gu Masters immediately took out primeval stones and piled them around him.

First gen Gu Yue opened his bloody mouth wide and breathed in deeply, sucking the primeval stones into his mouth.

Crack, he chewed the primeval stones; large amounts of natural primeval essence poured into his aperture.

On seeing this, the Sky Crane Lord became anxious and started shouting, "Don’t give them to him, you morons! Once he recovers his movement, he will kill you all and use your blood to upgrade his aptitude. You are causing your own doom!"

"Hmph, using such a low level tactic to sow distrust, so ridiculous!"

"Quick, this old thief is telling us not to give it, so we need to give even more primeval stones."

"Everything depends on lord ancestor!"

Gu Masters provided the primeval stones generously and soon, great quantities of primeval stones entered First gen Gu Yue’s mouth. Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing watched indifferently from the side.

A normal body wouldn’t be able to endure such a large amount of primeval essence pouring into them, but First gen Gu Yue’s blood wight zombie body was powerful and strong. The primeval essence in his primeval sea began to rise rapidly.

The Demon Suppression Iron Chain Gu was becoming weaker, and after quite a while, it turned into a pool of blood; it had thoroughly died out.

With the bindings gone, First gen Gu Yue gave a long roar and activated his blood wight vital Gu. Great quantities of blood were absorbed into his body, and within moments, his powerful arms grew back again with claws as sharp as a knife.

He gave a hearty laugh then stood up.

At this exact moment, the Problem Nipped in the Bud Gu on his forehead also turned into a pool of blood and completely dissipated.

"It seems the heavens do not want me dead!" First gen Gu Yue threw his head back and laughed.

"We ask first ancestor to behead this old thief!"

"Once the lord ancestor makes his move, he will definitely succeed."

The group of Gu Masters was elated.

First gen Gu Yue’s laughter gradually stopped, and fire burned in his eyes as he spoke unhurriedly, "I will, of course, kill my enemy. But before killing him, I still have something I need to do."

"Not good." Fang Yuan’s heart suddenly jumped when he heard the tone of the voice, and he discreetly moved towards the outer edge of the group.

The people beside him were puzzled by this but they were still filled with high fighting spirit, "We are not sure what first ancestor has to do, but we will serve the ancestor to the best of our abilities!"

First gen Gu Yue threw his head back and cackled with laughter, "Haha, the thing I need to do is to take your lives!"

"What?!" The crowd turned pale with shock.

First gen Gu Yue, however, didn’t hesitate to make his move.

Squelch, his claw immediately pierced through a Rank three Gu Master near him. When he took back his palm, there was a pulsing heart on it.

This Gu Master was a Gu Yue clan member, and his expression was one of disbelief at this moment. He gave a loud scream, blood spurting out like a fountain as he fell down with his head facing up.

"Good blood, it can’t be wasted," First gen Gu Yue exclaimed. With a shift of his mind, the Blood Skull Gu flew up and made one round around this Gu Master’s body.

The Gu Master’s corpse twitched, and all the blood in him was extracted by the Blood Skull Gu, entering into its two empty eye sockets.

After the Blood Skull Gu drank its fill, the blood stripes on its crystal skull turned even brighter.

"First ancestor, you?!" As the group retreated with all their might, someone cried out.

"Noisy!" First gen Gu Yue’s figure flashed and appeared in front of this person, slashing his body into two with a knife. Blood spurted out and was absorbed by the Blood Skull Gu.

"First ancestor, you ungrateful beast, if not for our primeval stones, how could you have any fighting strength left?!"

"This first ancestor is no decent person, everyone lets attack together and kill him!"

"That’s right, there is power in numbers....ahh!"

A bloody massacre unfolded. First gen Gu Yue was a peak Rank five and he had completely recovered his primeval essence. These Gu Masters were just Rank one, Rank two or at most Rank three, so how could they be his match?

And this Blood Curtain Skyflower separated inside from outside, forming a sealed space. Only its master, First gen Gu Yue could go out. But once he exited, he couldn’t enter again; he would have to destroy the Blood Curtain Skyflower or wait for it to dissipate.

The group of Gu Masters weren’t able to escape, they tried fighting but were utterly defeated and killed by First gen Gu Yue.

Except for Bai clan’s and Xiong clan’s Gu Masters, he killed every Gu Yue clansmen and used the Blood Skull Gu to absorb the blood. After killing several hundreds, the Rank four Blood Skull Gu was glistening red, as it had reached the limit of what it could absorb.

First gen Gu Yue laughed loudly and summoned the Blood Skull Gu; the Blood Skull Gu came towards him and floated above his head.

"This day, this moment, my centuries of arduous planning has finally come to fruition!" He let out a long exhalation of relief. At this moment, the Blood Skull Gu opened its tightly shut mouth and threw up a blood fountain.

The blood fountain didn’t have the fishy odor of blood, but instead let out a sweet relaxing fragrance.

This blood fountain poured from above First gen Gu Yue and completely soaked him.

However, what was strange and mysterious was that not even a drop of the blood fountain sprayed on the ground. All of the blood stuck to First gen Gu Yue’s body, then slowly seeped inside, finally reaching the aperture.

First gen Gu Yue stood on the spot; he was silent and his head was down as he appreciated this moment. Suddenly, he burst out with a crazed laughter as he spoke, "Kakakaka, my aptitude has advanced, my aptitude has really advanced!"

The rest of the Gu Masters tremored.

Outside the blood shield, Sky Crane Lord pointed at First gen Gu Yue and furiously shouted, "Return my Blood Skull Gu back to me!"

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Second chapter of the day.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

First gen Gu Yue laughed with even more joy; suddenly, he stopped laughing and turned towards Lord Sky Crane, speaking with a voice filled with hatred, "Junior brother, you never thought there would be a day like this, right?! We were both orphans raised by the master. But since young, master always pampered you more. Why? Isn’t it because your aptitude is A grade and mine is only C grade?"

"Naturally, with your A grade aptitude, your cultivation progressed much faster. Did you know, with my C grade aptitude, how much sweat and effort I had to put in compared to you, just barely be able to match with your pace? Although we were called the Twin Cranes of Righteous Paths - you were always the main and I the second. You were like the brightest star, just because you were an A grade genius!"

"Even your luck was good and you obtained one of the true inheritances of Blood Sea ancestor. Blood Skull Gu could purify the blood of the relatives killed and pour them into the aperture, upgrading it. Did you know what my mood was like at the time? I thought day and night, thinking of countless schemes. I knew the Blood Skull Gu was my only hope; with it, I could change my life, change my fate!"

"But it is mine, MINE!" Lord Sky Crane was so angry that he stamped his feet repeatedly.

"Yes, it is yours." First gen Gu Yue nodded, "Your aptitude is great and your luck is also great. Clearly, we started out at the same time, killing enemies together, but the heavens only appreciated you, giving you the true inheritance. Did you know, when I looked at your proud expression and listened to you talking about your future plans, when I was forcing myself to smile, I suddenly realized."

"The heavens favored you, gave you A grade aptitude and the true blood sea inheritance. But what could I do about it? I was only an insignificant C grade talent, so how could I succeed just by relying on myself? I could only seize, rob! Change what wasn’t mine to become mine! The fate that heaven had planned for me was to let me bow under someone, making me a shadow behind others! But I am indignant, for on what basis did he put me below and you above?" First gen Gu Yue actually seemed to be weeping and whimpering at the end.

Blood wight zombie’s appearance was extremely terrifying, and adding on to this strange sound, anyone who heard it would feel coldness seep into their bones.

"Since the heavens don’t favor me, master doesn’t love me, other people don’t value me - I can only love myself more, I can only value myself more, I can only rely on myself more. I can only put in more effort, I can only take more risks, I can only exert myself more! Only then can I succeed! But the righteous path talks of moral codes, ethics, comradeship, qualifications, hierarchy. I am only a lone person, a nobody with no background, no talent and no resources. So tell me, how could I succeed?"

"With the righteous path, I could only let myself be exploited and bullied, I could only look up to these young masters and geniuses. Even if I kept on increasing my qualifications until I got old, I would only achieve minute success. This is the righteous path... a bullshit path!"

"Only by becoming a demon, forsaking ethics, comradeship, the social rules and paying a huge price, I could take another path among the thorns and brambles, a path that belonged to myself! So, I schemed against you, seized your blood sea true inheritance and became a demon. Haha, and a demon I became!"

A demon I became...

A demon I became...

The voice reverberated within the blood shield.

Outside the shield, Lord Sky Crane was in a quiet and sombre mood.

First gen Gu Yue slowly stopped laughing then began killing again. Large numbers of Gu Masters were killed, their blood absorbed by the Blood Skull Gu and concentrated into the blood fountain, pouring into First gen Gu Yue’s aperture and raising his aptitude.

The higher the aptitude, the more primeval essence could be stored in the aperture.

As First gen Gu Yue killed more and more Gu Yue clansmen, his aptitude kept on increasing. After chewing the primeval stones, his primeval essence increased and his fighting strength became more powerful.

Outside the blood shield, Lord Sky Crane was burning with anxiety, but the Blood Curtain Skyflower was like a deep chasm; he could do nothing but sigh. He had tried to prevent it, but he could only give up.

As time passed on, there were only a few numbers of people left inside the blood shield.

"Brat, you stole the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus. I will give you a chance to atone for your crime, obediently hand it over and your life will be spared!" First gen Gu Yue walked closer step by step, his killing intent firmly locking Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan knew the chance of his survival was scarce, but his expression didn’t change and instead sneered, "Only three year old children might be deceived by your bullshit. Hmph, I will destroy Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus if you come any closer. You should know that I have refined this Gu and can easily cause it to self-destruct with a thought. It’s up to you."

First gen Gu Yue’s steps slowed, then he resolutely and quickly pressed on towards Fang Yuan.

"Brat, you have guts and you are smart too. You are indeed my descendant, I will take your blood and use it to raise my aptitude. Of course, I won’t let you go. Originally, I used a blood type Gu to purify my heir’s blood lineage, to try and bring out a descendant with the Ancient Moon Desolate Yin physique. As long as I absorbed the blood of such a genius, I would be able to raise my aptitude sharply to 99% A grade aptitude!"

"If it had been so, I could have let you guys go, but unfortunately your luck doesn’t seem to be good. Humph, the thing I hate the most in my life is being coerced. If Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus dies then so be it, but you are sure to die!"

His words hadn’t even finished when the two wings on his back flapped, propelling him forward; in the blink of an eye, he appeared in front of Fang Yuan.

First gen Gu Yue made a grabbing motion with his right hand; in that split second, Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, and his hairs stood on the end as he retreated hastily.

However, how could it be easy to dodge a Rank five expert? The blood wight claws were almost upon him, but suddenly an ice hand pierced in from his side.

BANG.

There was the sound of a collision, and the ice hand shattered and cold aura flew all over the place; the First gen Gu Yue had to take a step back.

"Bai Ning Bing?!" Fang Yuan was shocked when he turned around to look at the person who had helped him.

Bai Ning Bing took back his broken arm, and cold air blew out from the wound and instantly condensed into a new ice hand just like before. It was just that there was no flesh in the hand - he was already reaching the lifespan limits of his ten extreme aptitude.

"To think that I can have a such a splendid death. It’s a pity I won’t be able to see the conclusion to this battle!" Bai Ning Bing heaved a deep sigh, then suddenly smiled and looked at Fang Yuan with his deep blue pupils, "Fang Yuan, you and I are the same kind of people. My death is certain, but it would be a real pity if you were to die too. So I will protect you, but I have a condition."

Bai Ning Bing may only be a Rank three Gu Master, but as his death closed upon him, his fighting strength continued to grow steeply like a water fountain. The final hope to win against First gen Gu Yue was him!

"What condition?" Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed.

Bai Ning Bing stretched out his two arms like he was embracing the world. Clothed in a white gown, matching with his snowy white hair and sharp eyebrows, he said, "Live on for me and witness the myriad wonders of this world!"

In that moment, Fang Yuan was emotionally moved!

This man...

Fang Yuan looked at Bai Ning Bing and he felt like he was looking at his younger self in his previous life.

Bai Ning Bing’s words might sound like nonsense, but they were genuine. Maybe, ordinary people would never believe it, but Fang Yuan understood the profound meaning contained within these words.

Bai Ning Bing was a top genius, his talent in defiance of the heavens and but his lifespan superficially short. He had already found his path, and found his faith. He wasn’t afraid of death but he was reluctant to leave this world.

He had regrets, but under this situation where he had no other alternatives, he could only entrust them to Fang Yuan.

"Oh, it actually is Northern Dark Ice Soul physique! Tsk, such a pity that you are not a descendant of my lineage, otherwise they wouldn’t have needed to die." First gen Gu Yue smiled malevolently. "But you want to block me by relying on this Northern Dark Ice Soul physique? So naive!"

His figure disappeared and appeared right in front of Bai Ning Bing.

BOOM!

There was a noise of explosion, and the two had traded off a blow.

First gen Gu Yue was forced back two steps whereas Bai Ning Bing’s whole skull and most of his body was blown away.

But in the next instant, crackle, crack...

Cold air permeated the area, ice and frost condensed together to again grow out the body and the skull - Bai Ning Bing was resurrected!

"What!" First gen Gu Yue got the shock of his life. Ten extreme aptitudes were rarely seen and this was the first time he was facing one.

Two people traded off blows again. In the end, Bai Ning Bing’s cultivation level was weak and was firmly pressed in a disadvantageous position, so the situation looked very bad. However, no matter how First gen Gu Yue killed him, he didn’t die.

At this moment, Bai Ning Bing’s Northern Dark Ice Soul body was close to an undying body; no matter how severe the wounds, they would be frozen back to the original state in a matter of seconds.

Gu Yue Bo was becoming more furious and also fearful, and he crazily increased his offensive attacks. Bai Ning Bing gradually lost all color of life, turning into a moving iceman. Even his white hair had turned into thin icicles.

The time had finally arrived...

Death was descending at this moment.

"Infinite brilliance in the mortal realm, to the ends of the world the skies and seas stretch beyond. As the winds blow my ashes back to the earth, it is incomparable to the shining moon in the reflection of the water!" Bai Ning Bing recited a poem with a faint smile.

Henceforth, his facial expression froze.

There was a burst of cold wind and the fog like frost suddenly rose up.

Crackle.....

Large amounts of ice started spreading from under his feet, then the glacier rose up like the birth of a mountain!

The surging majestic ice was like a landslide, like a tsunami, like a dragon rolling on the waves, as it crushed towards First gen Gu Yue.

First gen Gu Yue let out a gasp and brought out all his strength to resist it. The red hairs on his head were all standing on end, mist of blood rising from all over his body, and large numbers of blood guillotine and bladewing blood bat Gu were sent to crash against the glacier in an attempt to slow it down even by a bit.

In the end, he was still suppressed by the glacier, confined and engulfed.

The enormous glacier filled the whole blood shield, but it didn’t touch Fang Yuan as he was in a small space left intentionally by Bai Ning Bing.

Bang.

The Blood Curtain Skyflower burst with a soft sound. With no hindrances, the cold air crazily flew around, and ice immediately condensed into a glacier which continued to spread.

"It broke the shield of Blood Curtain Skyflower gu! Such power..." Lord Sky Crane didn’t dare face the glacier as he promptly took to the air.

Under his astonished gaze, the glacier continued to spread and actually covered the whole Qing Mao mountain from the top of the mountain to the bottom. In this instance, the lush, thriving Qing Mao mountain turned into a sinister land of ice and snow.

The icy ground under Fang Yuan’s feet continued to raise higher, he too was personally observing this scene.

This thousand li glacier was the evidence of the fall of a young genius, and contained within it was Bai Ning Bing’s indignance and helpless sigh.

"Not good, I need leave this place soon! Bai Ning Bing’s consciousness is weakening and gradually dying out, he is already losing the control of the glacier." Fang Yuan found that the space he was on was shrinking, ice continuously condensed and moved forward, compressing the space he was on.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

2 chapters and then the final round.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan immediately used the Chainsaw Golden Centipede, as well as the Blood Moon Gu, trying to break the ice.

But the ice layer was way too thick, and the coldness was oozing. Every layer of ice he shaved off, two layers would grow. Fang Yuan was trapped in a desperate situation, without any way to free himself.

At this same time, blood light emerged from under the icy river.

There was initially a hint of blood light, but it soon spread, becoming stronger and stronger, until a blood coloured aurora enveloped the area.

"Hahaha." With a long laugh, blood light rushed towards the sky as First gen Gu Yue broke the ice and escaped. Although he looked miserable, his tone was arrogant, "This Northern Dark Ice Soul physique, if he reached Rank four, he might be able to kill me. Sadly for him, he is only a Rank three peak stage......"

Saying so, he turned his gaze to Fang Yuan within the ice river.

"Northern Dark Ice Soul physique couldn’t kill you, then let me do it." Far in the sky, Lord Sky Crane flew over casually. The Ironbeak flying crane king he was sitting on, had already returned after killing the blood river python when they flew away earlier.

At this point, in the entire Qing Mao mountain, only three people remained.

Bai Ning Bing had already turned into the ice mountain, his consciousness expended. Fang Yuan was like an insect inside an amber, trapped within the ice.

As for the two Rank five Gu Masters however, after First gen Gu Yue raised his aptitude, his aperture could store much more primeval essence. Lord Sky Crane had already recovered most of his strength after resting.

The two’s gaze were focused on Fang Yuan.

First gen Gu Yue wanted to kill Fang Yuan, to take his blood. Lord Sky Crane wanted to stop First gen Gu Yue, and he would naturally not restrict himself by protecting Fang Yuan, thus he could only strike first and kill Fang Yuan.

With their natures, they would not tolerate a bystander. After all, what if both of them got injured, and a third person profited from it?

Fang Yuan sighed. Seeing their gazes, he knew he was finished.

He had lost the Thunderwings Gu and Thousand Li Earthwolf spider. Even if he had them, he could not escape from two Rank five Gu Masters.

He only had Rank three peak stage cultivation, incomparable with Rank five. In this situation, he was like fish meat, easily cut by knives. And these were two extremely sharp knives!

He could not beat them in combat, and couldn’t escape from them either, but Fang Yuan had a final move!

That is — Spring Autumn Cicada!

Fang Yuan’s mind went into his aperture. The light walls in his aperture had turned into a rough stone aperture.

His snow silver primeval essence was about half left. The stone aperture no longer had recovery abilities, but Fang Yuan’s Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus maintained such a scene in his aperture.

These were not important; he placed all his concentration on the Gu in the middle.

His vital Gu, the Rank six Spring Autumn Cicada!

Only by using this Gu could he travel against the flow of time, creating a new miracle!! Using an impossible method to change fate itself!

Even then—

Such a method, was extremely risky.

The river of time is a forbidden area in the great dao, mortals are not allowed to traverse in it. Once they enter, it is breaking the rules of heaven and earth, and they would face divine retribution.

Secondly, Spring Autumn Cicada had not fully recovered, so it was like a broken boat forcefully travelling in the river of time, he might capsize mid-way and sink.

Lastly, Fang Yuan was only at Rank three peak stage. Activating the Spring Autumn Cicada now was like a baby using a sword, and he might easily get hurt by the sword.

"Once I use the Spring Autumn Cicada, I will have to self detonate. Using all my cultivation and the flesh and blood of my body, as well as all my other Gu worms, as a driving force to move the Spring Autumn Cicada forward. Compared to my previous life,even if I self detonate, this force is too small, and there is a high chance it would kill me directly. But at this point, I have no other ways left, I am forced to use this Gu!"

Fang Yuan was helpless too.

Earlier, he would rather use the Stone Aperture Gu than the Spring Autumn Cicada, because of the great risk involved.

Given 100%, there was less than even 10% chance of succeeding.

Many times, when Gu Masters use high ranking Gu, they would face a strong backlash. Like Gu Yue Qing Shu, right now Fang Yuan could only bet on the fact that "Spring Autumn Cicada is his vital Gu".

"Little rascal, hand over your life and contribute your blood to your ancestor!’

"Lad, you are unlucky, you can only blame this despicable ancestor of yours. I will set you free from your misery!"

First gen Gu Yue and Lord Sky Crane both attacked at once.

Fang Yuan was forced to the cliff’s end, he could only jump.

"Spring Autumn Cicada, do it!" His eyes glowed with wondrous light, as two green and yellow lights burst forth from his body.

"This aura?!"

"How can this be? A Rank six Gu!"

At once, the two Rank five Gu Masters were shocked, but soon, greed emerged on their faces.

"Kill him and take the Rank six Gu!"

"This is a an opportunity from heaven, good lad, hand it over and I may spare your life!"

Their speed was even faster than before.

But at this time, a loud boom occurred.

Fang Yuan self detonated!

"What?!" Before his death, he heard the two Rank five Gu Master’s cries of shock.

Legend says, the world has one long river, known as time! Humans were like fish in the river, and under the currents, the fish could only flow downwards. Sometimes, one or two fish would jump above the surface of the river and see the events below – this was predicting the future.

Without the river of time, the world would be still, becoming a drawing. Only with this river can change occur, and the world can move, either prospering or withering.

The river of time, with roaring currents. Every ripple was a story, an event that occured in the past.

Under the turbulent river water, a tiny Gu worm was flowing upstream.

It spread its wings, moving with difficulty. With the waves crashing against it, every impact could nearly cause its demise.

It carried Fang Yuan’s consciousness and memories, while a yellow green light was protecting its body. It moved up the river shakingly, like a candle blown by the wind.

Eventually, it could only move up a little, before the yellow green light dispersed. The Spring Autumn Cicada had reached its limit, and with a swoosh, it turned into a flash and burrowed into one of the ripples.

Fang Yuan’s body shook, his eyes having a tint of yellow green light deep within.

This light flashed by quickly, and Fang Yuan shuddered.

Consciousness and memories assaulted his brain, merging instantly.

He succeeded!

He was extremely happy, he had rebirthed once more!

After sensing this, he immediately looked around, observing his surroundings.

He found that his primeval essence was being expended as his arms and body were coiled by white eyebrows.

Seeing once again, oh!

So it was this moment.

Tie Xue Leng’s backup plan activated already. First gen Gu Yue was trapped by iron chains, not being able to move. His forehead also had a yellow talismen, the Demon Suppression Iron Chain Gu and the Problem Nipped in the Bud Gu.

That Lord Sky Crane also landed on the ground, his body covered in a white barrier. He activated the Raise Eyebrows & Exhale Gu, trying to exhaust all of First gen Gu Yue’s primeval essence.

Fang Yuan squinted. He was coiled by the white eyebrows, not able to move, thus he could only use up primeval essence and wait for a good chance.

Under the effect of the Problem Nipped in the Bud Gu, a yellow light flew out of First gen Gu Yue’s body.

This yellow light was about fist-size, smaller than a person’s face. It casually landed on the ground, showing the Blood Skull Gu inside.

"Blood Skull Gu! After hundreds of years, I finally see you again!" Lord Sky Crane on seeing this, was exhilarated and his expression extremely excited.

Gu Yue first head clenched his bloody fangs so hard that it made cracking sounds, but he couldn’t even budge, much less struggle.

Suddenly, another ball of light was captured by the yellow talisman and fell to the ground, turning into the alternating black and white Taiji light sphere.

Two peculiar Gu worms were circling and chasing each other within this light sphere. It was the Yin Yang Rotation Gu.

According to Fang Yuan’s memories, Lord Sky Crane shouted again, "Yin Yang Rotation Gu, my good senior brother, I truly have to thank you for finding such a good Gu. Hahaha, you actually wanted to turn back to a human, but what a pity your plan was destroyed by me!"

Fang Yuan looked at First gen Gu Yue.

Indeed, he was anxiously moved his legs and snarled, he had completely lost his manners.

"Wait a bit longer, my opportunity is coming." Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with brilliance, choosing to wait a bit longer.

The third yellow light that was captured fell to the ground; it was a scarlet colored Gu and looked like a translucent water sphere.

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped: "Blood Curtain Skyflower!"

It was this Gu that changed the situation and allowed First gen Gu Yue to overturn the crisis.

Blood Curtain Skyflower was created by First gen Gu Yue, Fang Yuan didn’t know it earlier but now he was clear of its effects.

Indeed, afterwards, First gen Gu Yue shouted, "Quick someone, destroy this Gu worm!"

Several Gu Masters immediately moved forward upon hearing this and immediately used their attacks.

Swoosh!

A soft cry resounded, Blood Curtain Skyflower appeared again, the blood color sphere shield isolating the two areas. Some people were outside, while some were inside.

The blood shield broke the white eyebrows completely, and Fang Yuan and the others no longer had to compete with the Lord Sky Crane in primeval essence, thus regaining freedom.

Lord Sky Crane was blocked by this Gu, hurriedly getting up and snickering continuously.

After some conversation, he could not break the blood shield, and had to stop, asking, "What Gu is this?"

Gu Yue laughed smugly, "Let me teach you, this is my personally fused Gu – Blood Curtain Skyflower. Water Curtain Skyflower - a Rank four Gu - can block Rank five Gu attacks. This Gu is at Rank five and has even more powerful defense. Water Curtain Skyflower prevents even its owner from going in and out; but this Blood Curtain Skyflower can let me leave. Junior brother, don’t be impatient, you can attack slowly, use all your strength. Just wait till I recover, I will then come out and cut away your dog head, ahahaha!"

Lord Sky Crane was furious, attacking again, but failed. After he calmed down, he chose to replenish his primeval essence, waiting for the blood shield to lose effect.

The Gu Masters seeing the blood shield being impenetrable, were overjoyed thinking their lives were saved, quickly flattering First gen Gu Yue, but only Bai Ning Bing snorted.

First gen Gu Yue thus asked for more primeval stones, and everyone quickly contributed what they had.

Although First gen Gu Yue was chained up, and could not move, his mouth continued to crush primeval stones as he recovered quickly.

Sky Crane Lord seeing this, started shouting, "You morons! Once he recovers his movement, he will kill you all and use your blood to upgrade his aptitude. You are causing your own doom!"

No one believed him.

"Hehe, using such a low level tactic to sow distrust, we’ll laugh till our teeth drops!"

"Quick, this old thief is telling us not to give, so we need to give even more primeval stones."

"Everything is depending on lord ancestor!"

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Make sure to listen to epic music for the last 3 chapters~ Coming later.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Large numbers of primeval stones continued to be absorbed by First gen Gu Yue, as he chewed and crushed them.

Bai Ning Bing watched coldly.

But Fang Yuan moved; he did not observe but had a different choice than before.

"First gen Ancestor, the situation is dire, I have the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus to offer!" He was filled with sincerity as he walked up quickly, a look of helplessness but determination.

Gu Yue laughed heartily, "Very good, as expected of my descendant. Such filial piety, as your ancestor, I am very happy!"

He had long wanted the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, and once sent two bladewing blood bat groups to chase after Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan escaped quickly and didn’t give him the chance.

However right now he had no suspicions.

Firstly, he did not fall out with Fang Yuan yet, and earlier he had lied that he was protecting Fang Yuan when he dispatched the bladewing blood bat group.

Secondly, Fang Yuan had taken the initiative to grab onto the white eyebrows and help the First gen Gu Yue in the primeval essence expenditure, causing the wavering people to make up their minds. Such a loyal performance, First gen Gu Yue still remembered it vividly.

Lastly, under such circumstances, Fang Yuan could only place his hopes on First gen Gu Yue. Only then could he defeat Lord Sky Crane and protect his life. First gen Gu Yue did not believe that Fang Yuan would ruin his own survival chances and attack him.

Thus, when Fang Yuan got closer, First gen Gu Yue laughed continuously, "With the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, my chances of victory is higher by 20%. All of you move away, and let him in."

"Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus?" Outside the blood barrier, Lord Sky Crane was stunned and quickly shouted, "You mustn’t do it!"

Under everyone’s gazes, Fang Yuan got to First gen Gu Yue’s side.

"First gen ancestor. I have thought it through! It was you who created the village, it was because of you that all of us descendants exist. Back in the day, you made such a great contribution to the village. Today, you even led our clan towards brilliance. The Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus should be used by you, great ancestor." He was full of admiration, his tone excited and nervous.

First gen Gu Yue nodded continuously, thinking: This lad is good with words. Too bad I still have to kill him later and retrieve his blood.

But at this time!

Fang Yuan lowered his back, striking.

He grabbed First gen Gu Yue, using the strength in his waist to turn his body and moved both arms.

He opened his mouth and growled, using the strength of two boars, expending all his energy to throw!

Swish!

First gen Gu Yue was thrown out of the blood barrier by him.

Dead silence!

At this time, it was as if time stopped.

The outside winds blew relentlessly. First gen Gu Yue was smashed onto the ground, his red hair flying around in the winds as he stared blankly, having unable to react to what had just happened.

In front of him, less than ten steps away was Lord Sky Crane.

This old man was still furious and anxious over Fang Yuan contributing the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus. He did not expect in the least that in the very next moment, such a drastic change would occur.

He was stunned too, staring blankly at First gen Gu Yue.

First gen Gu Yue was his mortal enemy, but at this point Lord Sky Crane was stunned, like he was still dreaming, not moving at all.

In the blood barrier, everyone stood like a statue, silent and unmoving.

Some people opened their mouths, so large that a fist could fit in it. Some stared with wide-opened eyes, almost bulging out.

Even Bai Ning Bing lost his composure, staring at Fang Yuan in astonishment.

Only when half a bamboo building collapsed within the blood barrier did everyone jolt awake all of a sudden.

"Wha... what... what the fuck!" Someone swore.

"Fang Yuan, what dumb shit did you do!" Someone pointed at Fang Yuan, his entire body shivering.

"First gen ancestor!!" Someone attempted to pull First gen Gu Yue back, but was blocked by the Blood Curtain Skyflower.

"Despicable thief! Lying to your ancestor, I will tear you to shreds!" First gen Gu Yue finally reacted, lying on the ground screaming.

"Hahaha..." Amidst the frightened individuals, someone laughed.

It was none other than Bai Ning Bing.

He laughed till his tears came out, giving a thumbs up to Fang Yuan, "Interesting, interesting, truly spectacular."

"Fang Yuan, are you crazy?"

"Fang Yuan, you harmed the First gen ancestor, you plot even against the ancestor, are you still human?!"

"Waaaaaah, Fang Yuan must’ve been bought over by that white hair old man. You spy, you traitor!!"

The surrounding people pointed at him in rage, but Fang Yuan lightly laughed, "I am a Rank three peak stage, who dares to kill me? Who can kill me?"

At this point, within the blood barrier, there were few Rank three Gu Masters. They had little primeval essence left due to the fight earlier, and they even gave up their primeval stones and could not get replenishments. As for the others, they were mortals or Rank one or two Gu Masters.

Without the First gen Gu Yue, within this blood barrier, Fang Yuan really was unstoppable.

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan laughed, bending down and picking up the two Gu worms.

His left hand carried the Blood Skull Gu, and his right hand carried the Yin Yang Rotation Gu. These two were owned by First gen Gu Yue, but right now they had a thin layer of yellow light, sealed by the Problem Nipped in the Bud Gu, unable to sense First gen Gu Yue’s desperate calls.

But this seal was an obstacle to Fang Yuan as well.

He wanted to break the seal and refine the two Gu worms. Forcefully breaking the seal however, will only cause these two Gu to be destroyed.

This was different from the Blood Curtain Skyflower Gu, as the Blood Curtain Skyflower Gu had to be destroyed to be used. By breaking the seal, it was the same as using it.

But Fang Yuan was not anxious.

He knew what would happen next. Both the Demon Suppression Iron Chain Gu and Problem Nipped in the Bud Gu would be corrupted by the Blood Frenzy Gu, turn into blood water and die.

"Hahaha, my good senior brother, to think you have this day! Hand over your life!" Lord Sky Crane howled, rushing into the sky and attacking towards First gen Gu Yue.

First gen Gu Yue was suppressed by the demon suppressing chains and could not move, thus he was a target board and could only take the hits.

He scolded furiously, howling and struggling.

Suddenly the iron chains turned into a puddle of blood water, allowing him to regain his freedom and he hurriedly flew into the air, crashing against the blood barrier.

With a loud bang, unquestionably, he was blocked by the blood barrier.

This Blood Curtain Skyflower was refined by him, and it was his greatest invention. It had superb defense, but once used it cannot be moved nor turned off. For him, he could only exit and not enter.

"Little rascal, you will die a painful death!" First gen Gu Yue’s grievance and rage towards Fang Yuan was greater than anything, rising like a tsunami.

Lord Sky Crane naturally chased him, laughing non-stop.

First gen Gu Yue could only give up on the blood barrier and resist the Lord Sky Crane. He had eaten large amounts of primeval essence earlier, thus he had ample primeval essence. Even though he had the lower hand, he could stabilise his situation.

"First gen ancestor, good luck!"

"Lord First gen, we are cheering for you!"

"Ancestor, you are our only hope..."

The battle between two Rank five attracted everyone’s attention. Fang Yuan however, retracted his gaze and looked at Bai Ning Bing.

This situation was like two tigers competing, while he Fang Yuan was a rabbit. Both the Lord Sky Crane and First gen Gu Yue were crafty old foxes. To wait for the two to injure each other and benefit Fang Yuan, such a chance was slim.

No one was stupid, they would not let the battle adrenaline get to their head.

Moreover, this blood barrier could only protect them for a while. Once the time is up, everyone inside including him would face the slaughter of Lord Sky Crane and First gen Gu Yue.

He had already rebirthed once, thus the Spring Autumn Cicada had fallen into a weak state again, unable to be used.

Right now, he could only try to get as strong as possible, exerting the greatest effort to fight for a chance to survive.

Fang Yuan already had a plan. But in this plan, there was a person who played a crucial role. That person is Bai Ning Bing.

The Northern Dark Ice Soul physique’s self detonation would greatly affect the battlefield. Especially when the two Rank fives were fighting outside of the barrier.

But how was he going to convince Bai Ning Bing?

Fang Yuan looked at Bai Ning Bing, and Bai Ning Bing sensed it, turning back to look at Fang Yuan.

Among the people, they stared at each other.

Fang Yuan in his black robe, with black hair and eyes, revealed a devilish smile as his lips curled.

"I have a way to resolve the ten extreme aptitudes, and allow you to return to life." He said.

Bai Ning Bing’s body shuddered, he obviously wanted to live. "What method?"

However, Fang Yuan’s words changed. "But this method does not have much chance of success, it is highly probable to fail."

Yet this made Bai Ning Bing even more convinced.

Next Fang Yuan said his third sentence, "But I think even if we fail, it will allow your final moments to be as spectacular as ever."

Bai Ning Bing’s was moved.

Fang Yuan used three sentences and targeted his heart’s innermost desires, convincing him!

He was also smart, and after thinking, he asked directly, "Then what do I need to do?"

Fang Yuan’s smile disappeared. At the same time, the Problem Nipped in the Bud Gu turned into a puddle of blood water.

Blood Skull Gu and Yin Yang Rotation Gu’s seal vanished and were about to fly away, but Fang Yuan grabbed onto them.

He used the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura. These three Gu were merely Rank four, they were immediately tamed. Fang Yuan injected his primeval essence and refined them, turning them into his!

"What? Fuck!" Outside the blood barrier, First gen Gu Yue’s head hurt as he lost the connection with the Blood Skull Gu and Yin Yang Rotation Gu.

He was beyond shocked, losing his bearing and rushing towards the blood barrier!

"How can this be? How could you refine my three Gu worms so quickly!" First gen Gu Yue cried out sadly, attacking the blood barrier like a crazed man.

Fang Yuan stole food from a tiger’s mouth. By taking the Blood Skull Gu and Yin Yang Rotation Gu, it was a fatal blow to the First gen.

Everyone was shocked, taking a step back. First gen Gu yue was like a fierce beast trapped in despair, his eyes starting to burn with fire.

But quickly, Lord Sky Crane’s attack came.

"I want you to die, I want you to die!" First gen Gu Yue went frantic, attacking without defending, exerting all his anger on Lord Sky Crane.

Lord Sky Crane was taken aback as he received some damaging blows.

The two fought it out again, as the battle slowly reached its climax.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, saying to Bai Ning Bing: "Come, kill them all with me!"

Before he finished, he acted. As the razors on the Chainsaw Golden Centipede moved, he slashed a Gu Master nearby into half!

Blood Skull Gu!

Soon after, Fang Yuan activated the Blood Skull Gu, absorbing the blood.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

And now, the finale.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Fang Yuan, what are you doing?"

"Quickly stop, the enemy is before us, how can we fight among ourselves?"

"Stop now, otherwise... urgh!"

Everyone was shocked. Fang Yuan was ruthless, killing another clansmen.

"I am only killing Gu Yue clan people, outsiders fuck off! Otherwise I’ll kill you as well!" Fang Yuan screamed.

Everyone was stunned, retreating steps away, not expecting Fang Yuan to be so insane.

"Fang Yuan has lost it!"

"He’s lost his logic, attack together!"

"Indeed, if this goes on, even before the first ancestor defeats the enemy, we’d have been slaughtered by Fang Yuan already...."

It was like Fang Yuan stabbed a beehive, causing everyone to stir, but no one dared to attack; most could only shout and encourage others to fight.

"Hahaha, interesting!" Bai Ning Bing laughed loudly, suddenly attacking and killing someone beside him.

"Lord Bai Ning Bing, you!" The dying person was a Bai clansmen.

"Oh no, Lord Bai Ning Bing lost it too!" Everyone shouted.

Fang Yuan’s gaze concentrated, looking at Bai Ning Bing, not expecting him to change so drastically.

Bai Ning Bing laughed maniacally, "Since you can kill your own clansmen, I can’t lose to you. Sigh, since too many deaths have occurred, Bai clan’s future is ruined already, we can no longer be a village. The clan leader I’m indebted to is dead too, I might as well kill them now, and enjoy the fun."

"Hehehe, that’s great," Fang Yuan laughed heartily, his body moving quickly, starting his slaughter.

Since these clansmen were going to die anyway, they might as well die at Fang Yuan’s hands, contributing to his aptitude growth instead of First gen Gu Yue.

These people in the blood barrier, how could they be a match for Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing together? Especially when Bai Ning Bing who was nearing death, was much stronger and killed even more people than Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan took the last hit and extracted their blood.

After killing a hundred people, the Blood Skull Gu reached its limit, and the crystal skull started to turn blood red.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, activating the Blood Skull Gu, raising it over his head.

The teeth opened, shooting out a fragrant blood stream, drenching Fang Yuan from head to toe.

Fang Yuan enjoyed the discomfort and breathed in deeply, living in the moment.

His black robe and hair together with his bloodbathed body, made him look like a demon straight out of hell. The surrounding people upon seeing him, were all scared and cried out in fear.

"My aptitude really increased!" Fang Yuan’s aptitude was only 44% C grade originally, but after the Man-beast Life Burial Gu, it dropped to 43%. Right now, standing under the blood stream as it gushed into his aperture, his aptitude rose by 10%, going to 53%.

"Indeed a great treasure, no wonder First gen Gu Yue treated it like his life!" Fang Yuan opened his eyes, nodding in satisfaction, starting another round of slaughter.

The two caused much bloodshed within the blood barrier.

This was a large slaughterhouse.

"Fang Yuan, you mad and crazy monster!" Gu Yue Mo Yan rushed up.

Fang Yuan dodged her attack and raised his Chainsaw Golden Centipede before throwing it down.

The young girl was split in half.

"Fang Yuan, let us go please, we’re your uncle and aunt!" Gu Yue Dong Tu and his wife kneeled down and begged.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, his left hand waving, and a blood colored moonblade shot out, beheading the two.

Blood Skull Gu absorbed the Gu Yue clansmen’ blood, turning into a thick blood stream, pouring into Fang Yuan.

"What a pleasure..." Fang Yuan closed his eyes, breathing in deeply, only to feel a warm feeling travelling through his body and causing his mind to become sharper, like he had been reborn.

Aptitude rose again, becoming 63%!

A Gu Master’s aptitude, 40-59% was C grade, 60-79% was B grade, and 80% and above was A grade.

Fang Yuan had officially left C grade and become a B grade talent!

"But, my cultivation dropped..." Fang Yuan opened his eyes, staring intently.

Fang Yuan’s aptitude rose to B grade, but his cultivation dropped from Rank three to Rank two.

Strange!

First gen Gu Yue evidently retained his cultivation level as his aptitude rose, so why was it that when it came to Fang Yuan, such a thing happened?

"This problem should be due to the Stone Aperture Gu!" Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

Fang Yuan had used the Stone Aperture Gu to squeeze out all his potential, causing his cultivation to rise to Rank three peak stage. But this Blood Skull Gu injected the quality blood stream into him, raising the aperture’s potential and raising his aptitude.

Undeniably, these two Gu clashed in nature.

But Blood Skull Gu was Rank four, while Stone Aperture Gu was Rank three. The Blood Skull Gu ruled over the Stone Aperture Gu, causing Fang Yuan’s aperture to turn from stone back to light. However, the cultivation increase that the stone aperture brought was also disappearing, and even reducing his cultivation in the process.

This change was something Fang Yuan did not expect in such a short time.

But Bai Ning Bing was getting stronger, he killed everywhere he went. Thus, Fang Yuan was able to keep his strength and stop attacking, only collecting the bloodline.

First gen Gu Yue who was outside the blood barrier, saw the people getting slaughtered and flew into a rage, screaming but to no avail.

He spread his bloodline, waiting for hundreds of years. It was all for this moment, killing his descendants to raise his aptitude. After planning for so long, in the end, someone else benefited from it.

"This lad, so young yet so ruthless, even more demonic than his ancestor!" Lord Sky Crane seeing this, was slightly shocked too.

The slaughter continued, until six hours later.

Fang Yuan’s cultivation dropped to Rank one initial stage, but his aperture returned to being a light wall, able to recover primeval essence on his own.

He was bathed in blood over ten times, and towards the last few times, the effect weakened. The first few raised his aptitude by 10%, but the percentage continued to drop with each try.

But his aptitude had increased from the C grade 43% to over 90%.

90%, A grade aptitude!

A grade aptitude!!

"Five hundred years of my previous life, I only manage to raise my aptitude from C to B about 200 years later through pure luck. To think that this time, I can benefit from a disaster and rise to A grade." Fang Yuan clenched his fist, secretly excited.

Bai Ning Bing stopped his killing, walking over, "Next, what do we do?"

In the blood barrier, only the two of them were left. The others, whether it was Gu Master or mortal, were all killed.

Outside the blood barrier, no one was spared from the aftermath of the two Rank five experts' battle.

In the entire area, there was only the two inside the barrier, and the two outside.

Fang Yuan looked outside, saying casually, "Next, we wait for First gen Gu Yue to run into defeat, and the Blood Curtain Skyflower to vanish."

"And then?" Bai Ning Bing pursued.

"Then?" Fang Yuan turned around and looked at Bai Ning Bing, then he smiled, "Then you can go and die."

Bai Ning Bing was stunned.

"Oh? What do you mean?" Immediately, his eyes squinted into a line as his blue irises had a dangerous killing intent.

"The Northern Dark Ice Soul physique's self detonation is extremely strong. Even though your cultivation is weak, and the chances are not high, it should be able to hurt Rank five experts. After detonating, are you able to control the direction of the snow and frost?" Fang Yuan laughed.

"How would I know?" Bai Ning Bing's lips twitched. "I've never self detonated before!"

"I know you can!" Fang Yuan laughed heartily, patting his chest. Unknowingly, the image of Bai Ning Bing self-detonating previously appeared in his mind.

And that line—"Live for me, and witness the brilliance of this world!"

"I will stay by your side. After you detonate, and when the time is ripe, I will save your life and cause you to resurrect," Fang Yuan continued.

"What if you can't?"

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan laughed plainly, "Then you need to bet. When you detonate, I will be by your side. If you suspect my sincerity, you can send the ice storm to kill me. You must've noticed already. That's right, my cultivation is already Rank one initial stage. By then, I will have no way to survive."

"But if you believe me, then I could be lying too. Eventually I will not resurrect you, because I have no way to do so. Thus, you need to gamble — whatever choice you make, not just what you are thinking, but also what you are considering in the moment before you die."

Bai Ning Bing was solemn.

Fang Yuan’s words was telling him to gamble away. But actually, wasn’t Fang Yuan betting too? He was using his own life as the wager, fully dependant on Bai Ning Bing’s thoughts.

"Hehe. So exciting. So very exciting! Then I shall bet on it, haha!" A moment later, Bai Ning Bing raised his head, laughing loudly.

Fang Yuan did not care about him, but concentrated on the battle outside the blood barrier.

As expected, First gen Gu Yue had the lower hand, suppressed by Lord Sky Crane.

Although he replenished his primeval essence, he could not replenish it, so under a sustained battle, how could he compete with Lord Sky Crane?

Moreover, Lord Sky Crane was clear of his methods, and he would not allow First gen Gu Yue to take back any advantage.

"I AM SO FUCKING FURIOUS!" A moment later, First gen Gu Yue cried out, "Little thief, you destroyed my thousand year plan, I will spare you today. Someday, I will kill the hell out of you to appease my anger!"

Throwing this angry statement, First gen Gu Yue flapped his wings and escaped the battlefield, flying towards the skies.

"Don’t think of leaving!" Lord Sky Crane quickly turned into a flash of light, chasing relentlessly.

Without their intense battle, this battlefield became quiet instantly.

This was originally the best time to leave, but the blood veil aurora became a huge obstacle.

Four hours later, the blood barrier was thinning, and was about to vanish.

But at this time, a white light flew over, turning into the Lord Sky Crane.

His body was full of injuries. A wound stretched from his left shoulder to his waist, so deep that his bones could be seen, overflowing with purple poisonous red blood. But his face was extremely uplifted, showing the happiness of getting his long awaited revenge.

His right hand held a skull, a blood covered face, it was First gen Gu Yue!

"He actually managed to kill First gen Gu Yue?" Bai Ning Bing showed astonishment.

Fang Yuan laughed instead, "It seems this old fellow hates First gen Gu Yue to the core. Hehe, to kill the First gen, he definitely paid a huge price.

While they were speaking, the blood barrier vanished, and there were no longer any obstacles between the two.

"Little thief, quickly hand over the two Gu worms. I am still in a good mood now, I might spare your lives. Otherwise, when the blood barrier vanishes, you will all die without a resting place!" Lord Sky Crane flew into the sky, looking down and laughing loudly.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing looked at each other before laughing lightly, not speaking.

"Lord Sky Crane flew into a rage. "Good lad, refusing a toast only to drink a forfeit, you deserve to get killed!"

Before he finished his words, he turned into a white light and assaulted.

Bai Ning Bing laughed grandly, taking a huge step in front, "I was waiting for you!"

Saying so, his body lost all color, turning into an ice statue.

Cold winds blew, and as winds turned into a hurricane, frost and ice covered the sky and the infinite ice river appeared.

"This is!" Lord Sky Crane did not expect it in the least that such a development would occur, causing him to be unprepared against Bai Ning Bing’s attack, and was sealed into the ice.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

One more chapter to the end of Book one.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

BOOM! BOOM!

The ice glacier shook intensely as Lord Sky Crane carried out his attacks; he was about to break out of the ice layer in just a few seconds.

"We can’t let this old geezer break free!" Fang Yuan shouted.

Bai Ning Bing couldn’t speak anymore; after Fang Yuan’s shout, he resolutely self-exploded one of his arm, turning it into vast amounts of frost wind. The wind swept through everything, the glacier spread and the ice layer rapidly thickened by a hundred feet.

Lord Sky Crane roared within the ice and started attacking in a frenzy.

Bai Ning Bing exploded his other arm. More ice condensed and the glacier repeatedly pressed down on Lord Sky Crane, suppressing him every time he tried to breakthrough.

Under Bai Ning Bing’s meticulous control, the ice moved like an army, firmly entrapping Lord Sky Crane. Lord Sky Crane may be a Rank five Gu Master, but after killing Gu Yue first head, he was thoroughly spent. He attacked again and again, but couldn’t break out in the end.

"It is actually Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique! But if you want to kill me with just this, you can keep on dreaming!" He suddenly realized and immediately activated Life-retaining Jade Burial Gu.

Green jade light came into being and covered his body. Then the rays of light turned from virtual to material, changing into a transparent jade coffin with Lord Sky Crane inside it.

This jade coffin was abnormally hard; even after trying multiple times, Bai Ning Bing was not able to put even a scratch on it. In the end, he could only add more ice layers around the jade coffin, forming an ice peak that was hundreds of feets high.

Fang Yuan had watched all this from the sidelines.

"Worthy of being a ten extreme physique!" He was impressed even though this was his second time seeing it.

Fang Yuan was standing right beside Bai Ning Bing. Right now, Bai Ning Bing had destroyed his two arms and was turning into an ice sculpture. Even his appearance was becoming indistinct as the ice slowly covered him.

Both his appearance and his consciousness were slowly dissipating. Once his consciousness fades, he would be completely dead.

As the ice layer started to spread towards himself, Fang Yuan was clear on what he had to do: It is impossible to escape by myself; I will be sealed and frozen to death by the glacier sooner or later!

"It’s time." Immediately, he took out a pair of Gu worms from his aperture.

One black Gu and one white Gu were revolving around each other in an orbit, forming a light sphere of Taiji diagram.

This was the Yin Yang Rotation Gu.

"Go." Fang Yuan willed it; the black Gu immediately flew out and merged into Bai Ning Bing’s ice sculpture.

Fang Yuan may just be a Rank one right now, but his aperture still contained large amounts of Rank three snow silver primeval essence which he almost used up in activating this Gu.

In the instance when the black Gu went into the ice sculpture, black light burst out everywhere; yin qi gathered from all around and formed into an energy vortex in the air. A completely new life force came into being within the ice sculpture, and started growing vigorously.

The dazzling black light dissipated; the ice sculpture cracked and broke into pieces, which then flew scattered to the surroundings.

A white gown, silver hair, intact arms, picturesque appearance with lovely blush on the cheeks; Bai Ning Bing broke free of the ice and came out!

The blizzard came to a sudden stop and the cold air also completely dispersed. The ice layer stopped a few inches from Fang Yuan, he had lived through this near death experience!

"I am really alive!" Bai Ning Bing was shocked. He looked at his pretty jade-like hands and then felt his whole body; his disbelief changed to ecstasy.

"Hahaha." Fang Yuan laughed brightly, "I used the Yin Gu of Yin Yang Rotation Gu on you, this Gu can change yang to yin and give you a complete transformation. It is a Rank four healing Gu and has the effect of bringing the dead to life. It has a weak point though, and that is — the Gu Master’s aptitude will be lowered by 10% once it is used."

Bai Ning Bing possessed the ten extreme physique which was a 100% aptitude. Now, his aptitude was lowered by 10%, and was equal to Fang Yuan’s 90% aptitude.

This news, to others, might have been grievious, but to Bai Ning Bing, it was joyous news.

"This feels great. My aptitude has been lowered, I no longer have the Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique. Haha, what does it matter if I only have 90%?" Bai Ning Bing started laughing loudly.

Fang Yuan, however, shook his head. "It is very difficult to change the ten extreme physiques. Although this method lowered your aptitude, as you cultivate in the future, your aptitude will also recover until the day it turns into Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique again. When that day comes, you will need to use this Yang Gu - it will turn you around again and lower your aptitude by 10%."

Upon saying this, Fang Yuan put back the Yang Gu into his aperture in front of Bai Ning Bing's dead-straight gaze.

"Yin Yang Rotation Gu all come in pairs; you have already used that Yin Gu, so only the Yang Gu on me will have any effect on you. Don't even think of stealing it, I have already refined this Yang Gu; I can easily order it to self-destroy with just a thought," Fang Yuan explained.

He only had Rank one cultivation now, but Bai Ning Bing was still a Rank three Gu Master; naturally he needed some ways to stop Bai Ning Bing from taking actions against him.

"I see, Fang Yuan, you really planned it all!" Bai Ning Bing heaved a long sigh, "What do you want from me for that Yang Gu?"

"Hahaha..." Fang Yuan laughed for a good while then turned serious, "Qing Mao Mountain has already turned into a desolate ice mountain. The three great clans along with countless living beings have all been frozen and will die within three to five days. Such a scene will definitely attract the attention and investigation of many forces. Moreover, that old man isn't dead and has sealed himself within the jade coffin, waiting to breakout. We can't stay in Qing Mao Mountain anymore, we need to leave."

"But look at me, I only have Rank one cultivation now; I can't even take out my Gu worms, much less leave by myself. Hence, I need to rely on your strength. This world is so big, so wondrous, and Qing Mao Mountain is only a very small part of it. Follow me as I roam this land, and witness the wonders of the world!"

"It was like this! You really planned out everything. Humph!" Bai Ning Bing grinded his teeth. He was really happy but there was also some resignation now. However, as it turns out, Fang Yuan's proposal moved him. "I can agree to you but I need to make one thing clear."

"What?" Fang Yuan asked.

"It is not me who is following you, but you who is following me as I roam the lands!" Bai Ning Bing's red lips slightly raised with an arrogant smile.

"Hahahaha." Fang Yuan laughed heartily.

"Then, where are we going next? What do you have in mind?" Bai Ning Bing asked.

"Bai Gu mountain." Fang Yuan answered in between his laughters.

"What's so funny?" Bai Ning Bing was truly puzzled.

Fang Yuan laughed until his tears flowed, "You still haven't discovered anything wrong?"

"What is there that's wrong?" Bai Ning Bing raised his dark eyebrows; suddenly, his face turned extremely wonderful.

Surprise, fear, puzzled, panic, shock, anger... all these expressions intertwined in her face.

She looked at her round and full chest, and cried out with a loud voice, "I, how did I become a woman?!"

The voice resounded throughout the Qing Mao mountain, shaking the snow.

"Of course it would be like that! Yin Yang Rotation Gu - Yin Gu is used in male body, to turn yang into yin, and become a woman; likewise, Yang Gu is used in female body, to turn yin to yang, and become a man. Yin Yang Rotation, rotating yin and yang... what do you think it means?" Fang Yuan spoke like it was what it should be.

"I, I... what the fuck!" Bai Ning Bing looked at Fang Yuan with a furious gaze and cursed. With this, she must now get hold of that sole Yang Gu.

"Brother Bai, calm yourself, being able to live is the greatest fortune," Fang Yuan consoled her.

"Fortune my ass, how about you try being a woman?!" Bai Ning Bing’s furious growl resounded within the snow covered mountain and glaciers.

Two days later.

The sun hung high in the sky; the ice was melting down and a stream of clear water flowed through the ice mountain.

Crackle....

The silence of the surroundings was broken by the cracking of ice; a jade light burst out from within the ice and hovered in the air, turning into a jade coffin.

The jade coffin exploded, and Lord Sky Crane gave a long cry upon regaining his freedom and seeing the daylight again.

This Life-retaining Jade Burial Gu was a Rank five Gu and was very mysterious. As long as the Gu Master had one breath of life in him, it could suspend his life and delay the injuries. Not only this, but the jade coffin it formed was extremely strong and could even be considered a defensive weapon.

"Goddamn thief!" He cursed with a pained voice. Right now, he was both furious and impatient.

Even after killing his lifetime enemy, the First gen Gu Yue, he couldn’t get the true blood sea inheritance; how was he going to answer his teacher when he returned?

According to his memories, the ice layer where Fang Yuan was supposed to be was already cut open.

"If only he didn’t get far!" He patrolled the surroundings hoping for a lucky break.

He used his recon Gu and discovered many life forces hanging on to their lives in the depths of the ice layers.

Living beings were tenacious and this tenacity could often bring about miracles. It had only been two days since this glacier covered these life forms, which was not enough to lead to their complete deaths.

"Found him! To think he was actually hiding here, hmph, the most dangerous area is the safest place, right? This guy is really crafty!" Lord Sky Crane’s whole body jolted and became indescribably happy upon this discovery.

He rushed into the ice layer and soon fished out an ice chunk.

Within the ice chunk, Fang Zheng’s whole body was covered with a layer of moonlight from the Moon Raiment Gu. He was already at the edge of death’s door.

Lord Sky Crane could swear he would never forget Fang Yuan’s appearance in this life.

However, he was a Rank five expert and after closely looking at Fang Zheng, he was immediately disappointed. "This person isn’t him, only their appearances are similar. Sigh..."

He heaved a deep sigh before suddenly becoming stupefied.

"Wait a second, their appearances are so similar which means they are extremely likely to be twins! If so, then he is closely related to that little thief!" Lord Sky Crane’s dim old eyes suddenly burst out with a sharp gaze.

With a close relative on him, he could refine the Kinship Blood worm!

It was because of this Rank five Kinship Blood worm that he was able to locate the First gen Gu Yue among this vast world and its diverse life forms.

"I haven’t completely failed teacher’s assignment. There is still some hope. This kid is my only hope. I must save him!"

Fang Zheng slowly opened his exhausted and heavy eyes.

"Where is this?" His eyes were still hazy and he could only see a blurry figure before him. At the same time, his whole body felt weak, along with an intense headache.

The last thing he recalled was the three clans competition, where Ironbeak flying cranes covered the sky and everyone around him had fled.

He had activated the Moon Raiment Gu and resisted against the flying cranes’ attacks. As the battle continued, a flying crane broke through his barrier and pecked fiercely at his forehead.

He had immediately lost consciousness, tumbling down the cliff.

"You are the elder standing on the crane?!" As he became clear on the identity of the person before him, Fang Zheng struggled to get up in shock, but fell down again before he could completely stand up.

"Kid, you are still thinking of escaping in front of me, Lord Sky Crane?" Lord Sky Crane sneered.

He sized up Fang Zheng once and said, "You could say that I am even your lifesaver. If not for me, you would have already frozen to death. I advise you to not move around randomly, don’t blame me if you fall down."

Fang Zheng looked beside him and immediately got a great shock.

There were clouds moving all around him, and he was standing on the back of an enormous crane as it flew in the sky.

"You, who the hell are you? Where are you taking me to?" Fang Zheng cried out in alarm.

"I am Lord Sky Crane, and we are heading to the Middle Continent."

"Middle Continent?!" Fang Zheng shouted in shock.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

And with that, I have finally... finished Book one! I can’t believe it. It has almost been a year since I started... Thank you everyone for all your well wishes, support and encouragement ever since I started. I’m very grateful and happy to have made it this far with everyone.

I know recently I have been busy as it is Chinese New Year + work period, some of you who have followed me long enough know that due to my work nature I updated in batches at one point. I apologize for the recent updates, it has been hectic. But I will always return the chapter I owe...

I hope you all have greatly enjoyed Book one as I did. Thank you so much for reading.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Book 2: The Demon Leaves the Mountain

The Yellow Dragon river is the third river in the Southern Border - it is over eight thousand kilometers. It starts from Mount Huang Guo, and passes through mountains and hills like Mount Xuan Ming, Mount Gui Bei, Mount Qing Mao, Mount Bai Gu and Mount Lei Ci before finally flowing into the ocean.

If the whole Southern Border was seen through a bird’s eye view, one could see the Yellow Dragon river forming a zigzag shape as it ran through over half of the Southern Border.

Several waves roared as they turned over, the violent waves rolling in an imposing manner along the river. It bore through the crack between the shores, and fog was raise up into the blue sky.

The Yellow Dragon river flowed rapidly and unceasingly. Many creatures lived in the river - fishes, turtles, snakes, clams and other life forms. At this moment, there was a bamboo raft bobbing up and down with the waves.

This green raft looked quite battered and seemed to be in need of repair. There was a simple and crude mast in the middle with a shabby white sail hanging on it. A pile of goods were put around the mast to stabilize the center of the raft. The bamboo were tied with hemp ropes and there were many loops around some areas; they were clearly hurriedly done as the raft sailed through the river.

The bamboo raft flowed with the currents of the river, and every time the waves crashed onto it, the raft gave out a creaking noise which was far from reassuring.

This bamboo raft which looked like it could break apart at any moment was carrying two youngsters - one had an ordinary face with black pupils and black hair, wearing a black gown; another was a woman with the looks of an immortal fairy, blue pupils and silver hair, wearing a white gown.

They were Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

After the battle at Qing Mao mountain - Bai Ning Bing self exploding his Northern Dark Ice Soul physique and sealed Lord Sky Crane for the moment - they used all their strength to break out of the ice, then cut off some Qing Mao bamboos to make this raft before immediately hitting the road to flee.

Fang Yuan’s thousand li earth wolf spider was already dead; and ever since Bai Ning Bing’s white form immortal snake had flown out on its own, there had been no news from it.

With no transportation gu worms, the two would definitely be caught by Lord Sky Crane if they were to move on land as their speed would be too slow. Thus, Fang Yuan could only think of this method.

Many tributaries of Yellow Dragon river flowed through Qing Mao mountain. Previously, the Rank five River Swallowing Toad had flowed with the main course of Yellow Dragon river and accidentally flowed to the foot of the Qing Mao mountain.

The bamboo raft flowed through one of the tributaries to the main river course, and as it flowed with the river, its speed was naturally extremely fast.

"It has been five days, it doesn’t look like that old guy will come," Fang Yuan mumbled as he stood on the bamboo raft and took a glance behind him.

The bamboo raft’s speed could definitely not match the Ironbeak flying crane king. But the Ironbeak flying crane king would definitely need to rest and couldn’t compare with the bamboo raft which continuously flowed with the river. And as more time went by, Fang Yuan became more assured.

Moreover, Fang Yuan recalled that Lord Sky Crane had returned alone after killing the Gu Yue first head. The Ironbeak flying crane king was likely to be already dead.

The raging waves of the river bombarded their ears. Bai Ning Bing took a glance at Fang Yuan; she might not have understood the details in his words, but knew what he meant.

She laughed loudly, "What are you so worried for! If that old geezer chases us, we will just fight to death. Fighting on this Yellow Dragon river will be extremely spectacular. Well, the thing is that if we die here, we will end up in the stomachs of some fishes. Haha, that sounds interesting too."

Fang Yuan ignored her, instead gazing towards the distance.

With five days of sailing, they were almost at the Bai Gu Mountain.

According to his memories, there was a secret inheritance hidden in Bai Gu Mountain. The inheritance was arranged by a Rank four Gu Master of the righteous path, for someone fated to it.

"I haven’t personally seen this inheritance in the Bai Gu Mountain, and have only heard about it. But it was rumored that this inheritance had some obstacles which required two people to coordinate to pass through."

When Fang Yuan thought of this, he gave a casual glance towards Bai Ning Bing.

Although they were travelling together, it was only due to the situation and the pressure of a powerful enemy. He himself was only at Rank one initial stage and absolutely needed help to roam outside. But with Bai Ning Bing turning into a woman, he had the greatest hold on her in the Yang Gu, giving her no choice but to compromise.

After entering the Bai Gu Mountain, could they really coordinate with one mind? It was a big question mark.

Snap.

Suddenly, a muffled sound was heard.

"Not good, the rope has come off." This sound was very familiar to Bai Ning Bing as she immediately shouted.

The force of the river flow was fierce, and in these five days, who knows how many times the hemp rope binding the raft had rotted out due to it. Fortunately, Fang Yuan had made enough preparations before they had set out.

"Quick get the hemp rope, I will hold it till then." Fang Yuan immediately crouched down and used his hands to hold the areas where the rope had come loose, preventing the situation from getting messed up.

The river flowed fast and violently, it would take a lot of strength to hold the bamboo raft; Bai Ning Bing wasn’t qualified for this, only Fang Yuan who had the strength of two boars was.

Luckily, this situation had occurred multiple times before and Bai Ning Bing had become more experienced in dealing with this; she quickly went to get the hemp rope tied around the simple and crude mast in the center of the boat.

"Here, take it!" She rushed over and handed the hemp rope.

Fang Yuan agilely took it and rapidly coiled it around the loose areas with sweat starting to drip off his head as he concentrated on the task. After coiling the hemp rope around the loose area several times, the raft finally stabilized.

"This raft has already suffered a lot of damage, from the looks of it, it can only continue on for a day. We need to reach the shore in this duration." Fang Yuan heaved a sigh.

Yellow Dragon river was not safe at all, who knew how many dangers were hidden within this raging river. If the bamboo raft fell apart in the middle of the river, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing would have no choice but to go with the river, with no way of telling if they would survive.

Ta.

There was a soft muffled sound.

"What was that sound?" Fang Yuan immediately furrowed his brows.

Bai Ning Bing listened closely with a doubtful expression: "What sound? I didn’t hear anything."

Roots grew out from Fang Yuan’s ears, and almost immediately he heard the continuous tatata sounds. Along with the sounds, the bamboo raft also started shaking.

"What is that thing attacking the bamboo raft from the river!" Bai Ning Bing cried out in surprise.

A black ray flew out from beside the bamboo raft and brushed past Bai Ning Bing.

This black shadow was too fast and couldn’t be seen clearly. Bai Ning Bing only felt her ear go cold, with some liquid flowing down her cheeks. She subconsciously wiped it; it was blood!

"What the hell is this thing!" She cursed as she looked up, only seeing a spindle-shaped black fish falling into the river from mid-air.

"It is the Shuttle Swordfish, damn it, we need to pull towards the shore immediately!" Fang Yuan shouted before pulling the sail.

The Shuttle Swordfish had a sharp head and tail, whereas its stomach was big, just like a textile shuttle. They only appeared in big rivers or oceans, roaming and hunting in groups of hundreds or thousands. They were carnivorous and would often hunt prey ten times or even hundreds of times their size.

Whooshh!

The Shuttle Swordfishes shot out of the river like black arrows.

The bamboo raft shook violently as many of the Shuttle Swordfishes struck it. Fortunately, Qing Mao bamboo was a top grade bamboo; it was very strong and durable. But as the Shuttle Swordfishes kept on piercing the bamboo raft from below, the raft looked like it would fall apart at any moment.

The sail was adjusted to borrow the force of the wind, thus the raft leaned to a side and sailed quickly towards a riverbank.

However, the group of Shuttle Swordfishes had no intention to give up. They scuttled beneath the river and attacked the raft violently.

Crack.

A Qing Mao bamboo was split open and a Shuttle Swordfish smashed upon the bamboo raft; its momentum was already exhausted as it landed beside Bai Ning Bing.

Its head was like an auger and scales tightly covered its whole body, shining with grim light. Bai Ning Bing watched it struggling helplessly; after she had self-exploded, all the Gu worms she possessed had been frozen to death, while the Yin Yang Rotation Gu saved her but it didn’t have the ability to resurrect her Gu worms.

Crack, crack, crack.

Following closely, other bamboos on the raft started snapping apart.

It was outstanding enough that the bamboo raft could even endure the first wave of attacks. But it couldn’t endure the second wave.

The bamboo raft was damaged and was starting to sink under the river.

"Quick, quick, quick!" Fang Yuan cursed as he protected the sail. If the sail was lost, the raft would lose the propulsive force; Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing would fall into the river, their deaths being a sure thing!

The Shuttle Swordfishes prepared to charge in for a third wave of attacks. Large numbers of the Shuttle Swordfishes shot out like arrows, breaking the bamboos and snapping the hemp ropes; the bamboo raft was breaking apart.

Sky Canopy Gu!

Fang Yuan forcefully activated the Rank three Gu, immediately causing the primeval essence in his aperture to decrease in a terrifying rate.

This was still under the conditions of him having 90% A grade aptitude along with Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus.

A Rank one initial stage’s green bronze primeval essence could hardly meet the requirements for the Sky Canopy Gu.

Even if a white light armor took shape, it looked extremely weak and didn’t exude the aura of a Rank three Gu.

Bang, bang, bang.

A series of dull thuds issued as the Shuttle Swordfishes struck against the white armor; they were unable to harm Fang Yuan. Bai Ning Bing, however, was already injured, and was frantically avoiding the Shuttle Swordfishes that shot towards the bamboo raft. At the same time, she stood behind Fang Yuan, relying on him to block off majority of the attacks.

The situation was very critical; the sail was already covered with holes and the speed of the bamboo raft continued to decrease. There was less than one-third of the bamboo raft left, and it was already sinking down with the water surface reaching the ankles of Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

"Damn it, a Rank five Gu Master couldn’t kill me, but I am going to die by this group of measly Shuttle Swordfishes instead?" Bai Ning Bing let out a deep sigh.

With another wave of attacks, the bamboo raft would definitely sink, and they would surely die after falling into the river.

However....

The Shuttle Swordfishes were delaying their attacks, causing Bai Ning Bing to hold her breath and watch tightly, seemingly on edge.

"We have reached the shore, the Shuttle Swordfishes won’t swim in shallow water. Huff! We are safe for the time being." Fang Yuan let out a breath of turbid air. His whole body ached and was on the verge of giving out.

He had almost no rest in the past few days, what with needing to control the sail and adjusting the direction of the raft from time to time. It had already taxed his body to the limits.

Bai Ning Bing also gasped in the cold air, her white gown dyed with blood. There were many injuries on her body, but fortunately she had combat talent, and with full efforts on dodging along with the bamboo raft lowering the charging momentum of the Shuttle Swordfishes, she suffered only light injuries.

Fang Yuan glanced at Bai Ning Bing, and shortly after, intense pain travelled through his body.

He was also injured, with the bleeding continuing even now.

The primeval essence in his aperture had completely dried out within few minutes of using the Sky Canopy Gu. Without its protection, his flesh body naturally couldn’t resist the Shuttle Swordfishes.

His original plan had been to sail for a day more.

However, unexpected events can happen at any moment. Planning could never overtake the changes, and there was still some distance from Bai Gu Mountain, but Fang Yuan knew they had to pull toward the shore now.

The sail was already useless. Fang Yuan had given all his efforts to steer the raft clear from the reefs, stranding towards a beach.

The two splashed their way through the water and stepped on the soft beach; they had reached the shore.

Bai Ning Bing covered her wounds and sat down on her butt. Her face was pale, "If this continues, I might die from excessive blood loss! Quick, bring out your healing Gu."

Fang Yuan gave a bitter smile, how could he pull a healing Gu out of thin air?

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Hey guys. I am so damn busy lately, I have three projects I need to work on plus other side work, I really do try to work on this novel when I can. I owe you guys a bunch of chapters, hopefully this busy period will pass soon so I can work on the batch and post them. Anyway here is Book two Chapter one, please enjoy a whole new world that you never knew. Next chapter I will update as soon as possible! You can keep updated on the Gu Discord Server.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Five days ago, Fang Yuan rebirthed at Qing Mao mountain.

Back then, he worked together with Bai Ning Bing in the blood barrier, and after his slaughter he obtained much post-battle loot.

But these Gu worms all had injuries in them. For the past five days, Fang Yuan had been floating around Jiang mountain, so they lacked food and all died consecutively.

For healing Gu worms, Fang Yuan always lacked one, and he did not find one he liked either.

"A pity my Gu worms all died in the self-detonation. Otherwise, I would not be injured to this extent..." Bai Ning Bing sighed towards the sky.

But Fang Yuan laughed, "Don’t be too pessimistic, not everything needs Gu worms to be resolved."

"Oh?" Bai Ning Bing looked over with a questioning gaze.

He saw Fang Yuan secretly activating his primeval essence, shooting something out of his mouth as a red light appeared. A flower Gu resembling a lantern, rotating on its own and floating in mid-air.

It was the tusita flower.

Fang Yuan willed and the tusita flower glowed in red as several objects flew out of it while wrapped in bright red light.

There were bandages, medicine cans, and small medicine bottles.

"Small medicine bottles contain powder that can disinfect and diminish inflammation, you just need to use a little. In the medicine cans, there is medicine paste that can stop bleeding and form clots. You should know how to use a bandage right?" Fang Yuan on saying so, split these items into two and gave a portion to Bai Ning Bing.

"These are all methods used by mortals, but I did learn about them in the academy." Bai Ning Bing received them, pouting, "You sure planned ahead."

Saying so, she then opened the large medicine can and a disgusting smell rushed up into her nose, causing her to jump back and scream, "Why is it so smelly!"

Fang Yuan laughed, not replying.

He took off his shirt, pouring the powder from the small medicine can, causing his wounds to feel a sharp burning pain like fire. Next he opened the big medicine can, where inside was the mud-like medicine paste that was a blackish green and smelled horrible.

But Fang Yuan was used to it in his previous life, not even flinching.

He took out a handful of blackish green paste and spread it on his wounds, his actions being extremely refined.

Next, he used the bandage and wrapped it many layers over the wound, quickly taking care of his injury.

Because of the medicine paste, the injury area felt a cooling sensation, quickly replacing the fiery pain felt earlier.

"Your paste is quite useful!" On one side, Bai Ning Bing was still taking care of her injury as she gasped.

Her robe was torn, and after applying the medicine, her breasts and nipples were almost exposed, but she did not have any reaction to it.

While using the medicine, she even sighed, "Sigh, thinking about it now, if only we had a healing Gu, that would be great."

Fang Yuan took a look at her before activating the tusita flower and taking out two sets of clothes.He had prepared sufficiently, having intended to leave the village in the first place, so he bought many sets of clothing. Plus Bai Ning Bing and his age were quite close together; as they had similar body size, his clothes suited her well too.

"Take this." He handed a set of clothes to Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing took the clothing, and chuckled, feeling slightly shocked, "To think you prepared to this extent."

"Precaution averts perils on the safe side," Fang Yuan replied casually, taking off his remaining clothes and even his drenched socks, into new sets.

Immediately, with new clothing, he felt much better.

Bai Ning Bing also changed her clothes, throwing the torn white robe on the beach. But her expression was not looking good, for although they were out of danger at the moment, after changing clothes and bandaging her injuries she also noticed the changes to her body.

"What do you plan to do from now? When are you returning the Yang Gu to me?" She walked up, frowning as she asked.

Fang Yuan picked up the black robe and socks that he changed out of, "Didn’t I say it before, we are going to Bai Gu mountain now. As for that Yang Gu, at least wait until I am Rank three first."

Bai Ning Bing frowned even more tightly, her pitch getting higher, "I have to wait until you are Rank three?"

She had never thought that one day, she would get into such an awkward state. A proper man, transformed into a woman! After the crisis of life and death was over, this strange sensation entered her mind.

If possible, she did not want to endure it for even a second more.

Fang Yuan raised his head and looked at her, not speaking. He walked to the side of the river and used the water to wash his clothing.

Although there were holes on his black robe, it could still be fixed, unlike Bai Ning Bing’s white robe. He did not know how long he would need to stay in the wilderness, so he could not afford to waste the clothing.

Bai Ning Bing was a smart person, and Fang Yuan’s silence made her realize her true predicament.

RIght now, she had Rank three cultivation but not a single Gu worm. Even if she had, she could not do anything to Fang Yuan. The Yang Gu was refined already by Fang Yuan, so as long as he willed it, it could instantly detonate itself.

The Yin Yang Rotation Gu was a pair, and if it was destroyed, Bai Ning Bing would never be able to return into being a male!

Looking at Fang Yuan’s back-view, Bai Ning Bing gritted her teeth, feeling extremely frustrated. To think that she, the Bai clan genius, had gotten into such a state, manipulated by others.

This feeling caused the arrogant and prideful Bai Ning Bing to feel extremely unhappy.

"Now we do not have a healing Gu, so if we get into danger, what can we do? The problem is not just that, but I do not have a single Gu worm with me, I have no fighting strength. No, I have to capture some wild Gu worms and refine them, otherwise I won’t even have any strength to protect myself!"

Bai Ning Bing was rambling on when her stomach suddenly started growling.

"Damn!" She held her stomach, feeling a strong sense of hunger, "Hey, guy who is washing clothes, take out some jerky, I’m starving."

While floating in the raft for five days, they relied on Fang Yuan’s jerky as food.

Although the jerky was tough, with the texture of wood when chewed on, it could fill the stomach and provide energy.

Fang Yuan stood up, using his hands to wring the water off the black robe, shrugging it around before answering Bai Ning Bing, "Why are you so anxious? Hold this."

Bai Ning Bing frowned, taking the black robe in reluctance.

Fang Yuan called out the tusita flower again, taking out a bag of jerky.

Bai Ning Bing grabbed it immediately, chewing on the tough meat. She chewed until her jaws hurt, but she was extremely satisfied.

Fang Yuan looked at her, smiling. When did this Bai clan genius ever starve before? Thinking of his previous life, he knew exactly how she felt.

Bai Ning Bing ate another piece of jerky, licking her dry lips, "This reduces hunger, but is way too tough. Sigh, having meat to eat, it is already a huge blessing."

Fang Yuan’s smile became even more intense, for under Bai Ning Bing’s astonished gaze, he took out an iron pot.

"You even brought a pot? That’s great. We can use water to cook the dried meat. We can just take water from the river, but we need firewood to start a fire, so we’ll have to chop down some wood."

Saying so, Bai Ning Bing looked around, feeling troubled.

They were at a shallow beach, with one side being water and the other being a tall cliff. On top of the cliff was dense vegetation, but there was not a single piece of wood on the beach itself.

Bai Ning Bing wanted wood, so she would need to climb up the cliff and chop the trees.

If this was back when she still had her Gu worms, it would be a piece of cake, easily done. But now that she had nothing, wanting to climb up this slippery cliff was too tough.

Bai Ning Bing felt troubled secretly, but at this moment Fang Yuan took out some coal stones.

Coal stones were better than wood, and Bai Ning Bing was naturally surprised when she saw this.

Soon after, Fang Yuan took out some kerosene and flint as well as a metal rack. Soon, he set it up.

On seeing this, Bai Ning Bing became serious, her blue eyes staring at Fang Yuan, "Your preparations are way too much, did you already have had thoughts of leaving Qing Mao mountain long ago?"

Fang Yuan’s preparation was overboard. With him bringing even these things, the smart Bai Ning Bing found something amiss obviously.

"What do you think?" Fang Yuan smiled, not answering her, but pointing to the metal pot, "You can go get some water now."

Bai Ning Bing gritted her teeth; Fang Yuan’s attitude was annoying her.

She took some water, while Fang Yuan had already started a fire.

First he got the water to boil in the pot, then he threw a bag of jerky inside. Soon after, the smell of fragrant meat could be felt.

Bai Ning Bing sniffed, subconsciously licking her lips.

Fang Yuan took out his chopsticks and ladle, and started having a feast with Bai Ning Bing.

The cooked meat was soft and could be easily swallowed with a few bites, while the boiling meat soup caused the two to feel warm on the inside. The only problem was that this river water had some sand in it, giving a gritty texture when eating.

But under such situations, having such treatment was already nothing to be displeased about.

"I’m not that full yet, let’s cook another half bag of meat." Bai Ning Bing was not satisfied yet, saying as she touched her tummy.

Fang Yuan immediately rejected, "No more, we have to conserve our food."

"Why so stingy! See this forest behind us? How many wild animals could there be?" Bai Ning Bing said in displeasure.

Fang Yuan gave her a stare, "Of course I know there’s animals in there, but that also means wild beasts. How many wild beasts can you take care of now? What if we meet a beast group? What if we get ambushed by wild Gu worms? Even if we kill the wild beasts, if their meat have poison, can we eat it? Can you differentiate between poisonous Gu worms?"

Bai Ning Bing stood dumbfounded, unable to retort.

Fang Yuan snorted. Bai Ning Bing was the Bai clan genius, so she naturally was full of utter arrogance, thus this was enough already. If he continued lecturing her, she would hit her limit.

He sat down cross-legged, taking down the pan and hanging his black robe on the metal rack, using the residue heat from the coal stone to dry it.

Fang Yuan continued, "It’s getting late. Let’s stay here for tonight and continue exploring the forest tomorrow. I specially chose this area with cliff on three sides, so there would be little wild beasts that can reach us, thus this is relatively safer. But we cannot be complacent, let’s keep watch in intervals."

This was the benefit of having two people.

Fang Yuan willed, and summoned the Chainsaw Golden Centipede and Sky Canopy Gu.

"These two Gu worms, I’ll lend them to you for the time being. Get familiar with them," Fang Yuan said.

He was only a Rank one initial stage cultivation, so it was near impossible for him to use a Rank three Gu worm. Even with A grade recovery speed and the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, he could not display the true power of a Rank three Gu worm. He might as well give it to the Rank three Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing received the Gu worm, looking deeply at Fang Yuan.

Between Gu Masters, Gu worms could be lent.

In the Gu worms, a Gu Master’s will resides. As long as the master acknowledges it, others can also communicate with the Gu worm and use their powers. Of course, it is not as convenient as a Gu worm one refines personally.

Also, as long as the original owner wills it and changes his mind, the others would immediately lose their ability to command the Gu worm.

But even so, Gu Masters rarely lent their Gu worms to others.

Although they were forced by the situation, Fang Yuan’s actions were extremely unrestrained and this caused Bai Ning Bing to become alert.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Two chaps today. I’ll post more tomorrow x_x) Busy busy week and weekend.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Chainsaw Golden Centipede...." Bai Ning Bing mumbled with a complex expression as she stroked the dark golden carapace of this Rank three Gu.

She had suffered quite a lot due to this Chainsaw Golden Centipede during her battle with Fang Yuan. Who would have thought that there would be a time where Fang Yuan himself would lend it to her?

The way Fang Yuan used the Chainsaw Golden Centipede had left a lasting impression on her.

Bai Ning Bing immediately copied Fang Yuan’s method and waved the Chainsaw Golden Centipede like a greatsword.

From time to time, she willed the Chainsaw Golden Centipede to lengthen or shorten, waving it around like a whip. The silver blades of the chainsaw rotated and cut through the air, producing a strange distortion of the light.

"Sky Canopy Gu!" She put the Sky Canopy Gu in her aperture, and inwardly poured white silver primeval essence on it with her brows raised. Immediately, her body was covered with an armor of white light.

"Fate really works mysteriously. To think, there would be a day where I would be using your Gu," she sighed while looking towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was silent; he was sitting cross-legged beside the warm coal with his eyes closed.

His attention was on his aperture, where the full primeval sea of an A grade aptitude appeared in front of him.Ninety percent!

His aptitude had only been just over forty percent, and now it had increased by more than double.

"Although my cultivation has dropped from Rank three to Rank one, with my years of hard work wasted, it is still all worth it!" Fang Yuan was satisfied.

In a Gu Master’s cultivation journey, there were three most important things.

Aptitude, resources and Gu worms.

None of these three aspects could be lacking!

Previously, Fang Yuan only had C grade aptitude and had to resort to all kinds of means of resources and Gu worms to try to make up for the deficiency in his aptitude. Those years spent in Qing Mao mountain had been quite difficult and exhausting. His cultivation speed had been pretty good, but that was the result of him exhausting all the means available to him and taking high risks.

If his aptitude had been A grade at that time, he would have faced a completely different scene and be able to easily reach Rank three.

"Such a twist of fate... I now have an A grade aptitude, but don’t have the safe environment to grow up like in the village. Additionally, the resources and the

Gu worms I have now can’t compare to before."

Fang Yuan was now wandering outside his homeground, and with his weak cultivation he could face mortal dangers at any moment; this situation naturally couldn’t compare with the safe and stable environment back at Qing Mao mountain. And of course, there would be no stable trading areas to exchange for mutual benefits.

"Fortunately, with the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, the greatest problem that is resources is resolved, so at least there will be no worries before I reach Rank three." Fang Yuan looked through his ninety percent green copper primeval sea, where a blue and white lotus had taken roots in the depths of his aperture; its petals were healthy and plump, giving off a holy and immortal aura.

This Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus was a Rank three and had an enormous potential for development. Just to refine it, Gu Yue clan’s foundation spirit spring had to be wasted.

It was equivalent to a miniature portable spirit spring, and back when Fang Yuan still had Rank three cultivation, it continuously recovered Fang Yuan’s primeval essence, giving him the recovery speed of a B grade aptitude.

Rank three cultivation possessed white silver primeval essence. Fang Yuan was now only a Rank one initial stage with green copper primeval essence; with the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus in his aperture, his primeval essence recovery speed was raised to an extreme rate.

"If I only use Rank one Gu, my primeval essence recovery speed would be shocking and almost inexhaustible. Using one or two Rank two Gu worms might cause the primeval sea to decrease, but the recovery speed would continuously balance it, causing it to be relatively stable. Using a Rank three Gu will exhaust the primeval essence very rapidly, and the consumption would far surpass the recovery speed. My primeval sea would be thoroughly dry within few moments," Fang Yuan calculated in his mind.

After all, he now only possessed green copper primeval essence and that too was the initial stage jade green primeval essence; the quality was far too low.

Other than Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, Fang Yuan still had other Gu.

First of all was his vital gu: Spring Autumn Cicada.

This Rank six gu was numbered 7 in the list of mysterious Gu. Once it turned into one’s vital Gu, it could no longer be taken out of the aperture and was now residing in the middle of the aperture.

After going through another rebirth, its aura was no longer the same; its bright yellow-green light was completely gone and now looked dispirited and extremely weak.

It was concealing its figure, and as time flowed, it silently absorbed time from the river of time and began another round of convalescence.

Fang Yuan comprehended inwardly, "I absolutely can’t use Spring Autumn Cicada within a short period of time. In such a dangerous state, if I used it, it would be absorbed by the river of time and I would just be throwing away my life by self-detonating."

Without the pressure from Spring Autumn Cicada, other Gu worms could freely let out their instincts.

Four kinds of light flashed around the Rank two Four Flavors Liquor worm’s chubby body as it swam around the surface of the primeval sea, enjoying the moment.

The carp fossil-like hidden Scales Gu calmly laid on the bottom of the sea, letting the primeval sea water cleanse its scales.

A black beetle with a pair of iron pincers on its head was soaring in the air above the sea; it was the Plunder Gu.

And similarly, spiralling with it and having a fun time was the white armored Yang Gu of the Yin Yang Rotation Gu.

Rank four Blood Skull Gu was lying deep in the sea, bright red blood light occasionally flashing on its surface.

As for the other Gu worms - Blood Moon Gu had turned into a red crescent imprint on Fang Yuan’s palm; Earth Communication Ear grass Gu had turned into one of Fang Yuan’s ears and wouldn’t normally show up; the tusita flower resided on Fang Yuan’s tongue as a tattoo.

Sky Canopy Gu and Chainsaw Golden Centipede were lent to Bai Ning Bing.

Calculating the numbers, Fang Yuan possessed a total of twelve Gu worms.

This was a truly big number!

Generally speaking, it was normal for a low level Gu Master to have two or three Gu. When one reached Rank four or five, they would raise this number to four or five. Even Divine investigator Tie Xue Leng only raised about seven Gu.

Do not be fooled by Gu Yue first head or Lord Sky Crane, both were special cases and were old monsters with centuries of accumulation.

The amount of Gu worms possessed by Fang Yuan was three to four times more than normal Gu Masters. More numbers meant huge economical burden on the Gu Masters along with the pressure of managing and raising them.

Fang Yuan may have chosen his Gu carefully with most of them being easy to raise, but with the limited goods and resources in the tusita flower now, Fang Yuan was under a huge burden.

Facing the brunt of this burden was the Four Flavors Liquor worm as its food was fine liquors; there was a lot of wine stored in the tusita flower, but it would only be able to support the Four Flavors Liquor worm for half a year.

"I need to find new source of liquors within these six months, or I have no choice but to reverse-refine the Four Flavors Liquor worm back to Liquor worm."

Next was the Plunder Gu.

Plunder Gu’s food was difficult to find and the amount of the food stored for it in the tusita flower could only last for five months.

Then, it was the Earth Communication Ear grass.

Earth Communication Ear grass’s food was ginseng roots, but thankfully there were a lot of it in the tusita flower, enough to support it for a year.

As for the Blood Skull Gu and Blood Moon Gu, both required blood which needed to be thought out properly.

And for the Yin Yang Rotation Gu, if they were intact and formed a complete Taiji light sphere, they would be self-sufficient in feeding on the transformation of the yin and yang qi. However, only Yang Gu was left now; Fang Yuan would need to take out some time to release it and let it absorb the yang qi in the air.

Raising this Yang Gu was very important. Only with the Yang Gu could Fang Yuan suppress Bai Ning Bing — gaining a cheap bodyguard and a guarantee for survival.

This signified that Fang Yuan couldn’t casually enter mountain and underground caves. If by any chance were he to be trapped in a special situation where yang qi wasn’t available, the Yang Gu would die from starvation, and at that time, Bai Ning Bing - in all his fury and despair - would become the greatest enemy to Fang Yuan.

All in all, Fang Yuan was in an awkward situation now.

He had a lot of high ranked Gu in his possession — Rank three, Rank four and even a Rank six Gu. But the unfortunate thing was that he only had Rank one cultivation at the moment.

To him now, using the high ranked Gu was quite troublesome and inconvenient.

The more crucial point was that he seriously lacked Gu with healing and movement abilities.

"Now what I need to do is gather some wild Gu worms and resolve these issues. If only I get lucky and come across a suitable Gu... Being able to escape from the shuttle swordfish groups could be considered my good luck. But there is no way I could be so lucky every time."After Fang Yuan sorted out his thoughts, he slowly opened his eyes with a grave expression.

When he had just opened his eyes, he saw Bai Ning Bing walking over with a white eggshell on his hand.

"Look at this. I was just trying out the Chainsaw Golden Centipede and drilled the ground, but to think there is an egg hidden under this beach! Too bad it was smashed by Chainsaw Golden Centipede," Bai Ning Bing said.

This egg was the size of half of a washbasin, and the white eggshell was thoroughly smashed and only some yolk remained in it.

Fang Yuan only took a glance at this eggshell before his expression turned tense, "This is bad, this is the egg of a six-foot crocodile. Is this beach a breeding ground for the six-footed crocodiles?"

He quickly stood up: "Quick, use the Chainsaw Golden Centipede and check if there are more of such eggs in this beach."

Bai Ning Bing’s gaze shook and pointed behind Fang Yuan, "It’s too late, look!"

Fang Yuan turned around and saw hundreds of ’dead logs’ floating towards the beach from the river.

The ’dead logs’ came ashore and revealed their true forms; they were all enormous crocodiles.

These crocodiles had thick carapaces, sharp teeth and three pairs of feet. Right now, their bloodshot eyes were tightly staring at Bai Ning Bing.

Six legged crocodile groups!

Bai Ning Bing subconsciously loosened her hand under the glares of the crocodiles; the white eggshell fell onto the sand, smashing further in the process and what little yolk left in it seeped into the sand.

Hisss!

The six legged crocodiles hissed in rage before charging forward on their six legs towards the two youths.

...

At the same time, in Qing Mao mountain, in the former site of Gu Yue village.

Snow covered everything and glaciers had formed everywhere.

A group of people were standing on the snow like iron nails nailed into this white world.

"Father..." Tie Ruo Nan kneeled down on the snow and shouted out her father’s name with tears flowing down her face.

Five to six days ago, Tie Xue Leng had an intense battle with the Gu Yue first head but when he was at death’s door, he kept his daughter’s safety in mind and sent out the Mountain Giant Puppet Gu and Iron Fist Grappling Gu.

The Mountain Giant Puppet Gu formed into a copper mask and covered Tie Ruo Nan’s face, protecting her; the Iron Fist Grappling Gu turned into a giant hand, taking her away from the mess at Qing Mao mountain.

However, these two had already been infected by the Blood Frenzy Gu and had turned into a pool of blood not long after completing their tasks.

Tie Ruo Nan rushed back to Qing Mao mountain in a crazed state, but on the way, she was besieged by a group of beasts.

In the moment of her great danger, Tie family’s reinforcements had arrived. They had come because of Tie Xue Leng; Tie Xue Leng always executed matters earnestly. Just to be safe, he had sent a letter for reinforcements to their clan.

Tie Ruo Nan was able to rush here with the help of the reinforcements. However, the scene that appeared before her was a mountain filled with ice and snow where all the living beings were frozen, and there were no traces of her father.

She and the Tie family reinforcements searched for several days and nights, before finally accepting the cruel reality.

Divine investigator had fallen; her father had died!

"Father...!" Tie Ruo Nan cried out with a hoarse voice filled with extreme sorrow like the wail of the wild goose.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Divine investigator died in battle, this is the glory of a man of the Tie family. Lady Ruo Nan, my condolences," a young Gu Master behind her consoled.

On the snowy grounds, Tie Ruo Nan kneeled as her crying voice became weaker, her shoulders shivering and her fists tightly clenched as the snow melted in her hands into water.

The young Gu Master frowned, continuing, "Throughout the past few days, we have scoured the entire battlefield. We saw some traces left behind, and it seems there were a few that managed to escape this battlefield. Divine Investigator’s letter talked about the blood sea inheritance. I’m worried that the demonic Gu Master who inherited the blood sea inheritance might be among these survivors."

When Tie Ruo Nan heard this, she stopped crying.

She stood up from the icy ground as the freezing winds blew, her hagged face showing determination. "The feud of killing my father is greater than anything. Whoever the killer is, I will definitely find out the truth!"

The young girl’s voice was hoarse, but when she spoke, her gaze and tone became very determined.

The young Gu Master sighed, "Investigations definitely have to be done. Our Tie family people cannot die with injustice. But Lady Ruo Nan, you don’t have to go. Before coming here, the clan leader already informed us to bring you back to the village safely."

Tie Ruo Nan stared with wide opened eyes, "What, don’t think of chasing me away!"

The young Gu Master smiled, looking at the sky.

In the azure sky, there were several clouds floating.

Tie Ruo Nan was about to argue some more, but suddenly her iris shrunk, "You...... "

Before she finished, her eyes closed and she laid on the snow softly, falling asleep.

"Gui Yi." The young Gu Master called.

"Here."

"I order your group to escort lady Ruo Nan back safely."

"Yes..." Gui Yi hesitated. "Then what about you, young master?"

"Me? I have to follow the Yellow Dragon River and chase after them," The young Gu Master laughed arrogantly.

...

The waters from the Yellow Dragon River raged on and winds blew as several hundred six legged crocodiles ascended the beach, attacking Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

"Damn...." Bai Ning Bing gritted her teeth, feeling a strong pressure in her heart.

If it was before, this crocodile group was nothing to her. One iceblade storm and they would be finished. But now, she only had the Sky Canopy Gu and Chainsaw Golden Centipede, while also lacking the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique.

Her blue irises quickly swept the environment as Bai Ning Bing scolded: "What a great place you chose! WIth three sides as cliffs, how can we escape?"

"Why so frantic? It’s only a hundred beast group, not a thousand one, otherwise we would be dead meat. A hundred beast group means we still have a chance of survival, we can kill them all." Fang Yuan quickly kept his clothes, racks, metal pots and retreated behind Bai Ning Bing.

Fang Yuan was extremely confident, causing Bai Ning Bing’s heart to feel slightly at ease."What are you staring at? Go kill them!" Fang Yuan swept his gaze at her, urging, "Why else did I lend you Gu worms? Don’t forget I have the Yang Gu."

"Bastard!" Bai Ning Bing’s stared in rage, her heart burning as she cursed. No one knew if she was scolding the six legged crocodiles, Fang Yuan or both.

But no matter what, she held the Chainsaw Golden Centipede and rushed up.

Buzzbuzzbuzz!

Razors rotated violently as the aggressiveness of a Rank three Gu worm appeared, causing the six legged crocodile to halt in their steps.

"A group of ugly maggots!" Bai Ning Bing chuckled, rushing up and slashing.

A six legged crocodile was hit on its stomach, crying out as sparks flew, cut into two by the razors.

Fresh blood spewed on Bai Ning Bing’s face and clothes, as she felt the stimulation of blood, and intention of battle appeared on her face.

Swishswishswish...

Chainsaw Golden Centipede hacked and slashed, like a tornado passing through. Twenty or so six legged crocodiles died in succession.

The situation became better instantly, but Fang Yuan’s expression grew dim, shouting loudly, "Avoid the six legged crocodile’s back, and attack their stomach!"

"Hahaha, what an aggressive Gu worm, much better than the iceblade Gu! I like it!" Bai Ning Bing ignored him and laughed loudly.

Even though she turned into a woman and was a jade beauty like an ice fairy, the moment she battled her male instincts would cause her to turn into a battle maniac.

But eventually, her attacks started to become slower, and weaker.

"What’s happening? Earlier, I could slash a six legged crocodile in half, but now even after three hits, I can only severely injure it?"

Bai Ning Bing raised the Chainsaw Golden Centipede and looked, only to see that the razors were dented, and the sharpness was greatly reduced.

She was born smart, immediately thinking of Fang Yuan’s advice, clicking her tongue.

A large six legged crocodile rushed up to her and leapt.

It opened its large, bloody mouth, covering Bai Ning Bing with its shadow.

"You are looking for death!" Bai Ning Bing moved her tiny body, raising the Chainsaw Golden Centipede and slashing at the six legged crocodile’s belly.

Pew.

After a light noise, the six legged crocodile’s belly was cut open, forming a severe injury.

This unlucky six legged crocodile was still in the air as a large amount of blood poured out from its wound, and its intestines fell out.

With a plop, it landed on the beach, dyeing the sand red. Its body twitched a few times before it stopped moving completely.

It was completely dead.

"So easy?" Seeing such effectiveness, Bai Ning Bing raised her eyebrows in shock.

Six legged crocodile’s back was tough as armor, but comparatively its belly was very soft. The white belly was their weakness.

With 500 years of experience Fang Yuan was clear of such information. But Bai Ning Bing was born on Qing Mao mountain, never being outside and only had narrow education, thus she did not know much.

Howl!

The crocodiles cried out.

After tens of crocodiles were killed, the wild beasts were infuriated and started to turn wild under the threat of death.

Countless red eyes stared at Bai Ning Bing in hatred.

Wild beasts had limited intelligence. The lightning lycan had human intelligence but it was an exception among the many species of wild beasts.

These wild beasts would always treat the most dangerous enemies as the biggest threat, and the first to eliminate. As for Fang Yuan who stayed at the back, they ignored him.

"Come." Bai Ning Bing moved forward instead. She was not someone stubborn, and after that hit, she immediately changed her tactics.

The centipede tail stabbed onto the beach as its body shrunk, then expanded and slashed at the field with the razors. Six legged crocodiles’ stomach were easily slashed, as blood and intestines spewed.

Crocodiles after crocodiles fell as Bai Ning Bing killed as she wished.

"At the rate this is going, the crocodile group will be nothing to be afraid of. What truly threatens me is not these beast groups, but Fang Yuan." As the situation turned better, Bai Ning Bing considered in her heart, having second thoughts.

The Yang Gu was in Fang Yuan’s hands, causing Bai Ning Bing to be restrained and she had to obey Fang Yuan.

But he was the Bai clan genius, thus there was great arrogance in his heart, how could he resign himself to this?

"If I slaughter Fang Yuan, will I be able to get that Yang Gu?" Bai Ning Bing’s eyes shone with coldness as a thought appeared in her mind.

But once this thought emerged, it was rejected.

She understand Fang Yuan like she understood herself!

With Fang Yuan’s personality, which was tough as steel along with his ruthless methods and meticulous thoughts, if he really was going to die, he would destroy the Yang Gu 100% of the time, there were no other possibilities.

"Moreover, I do not have a Gu worm at all. Sky Canopy Gu, Chainsaw Golden Centipede, they are all his... no, no matter what, I have to get my own Gu worms!"

Fang Yuan’s lips curled, staring at the battlefield.

Bai Ning Bing’s movements became slower while her eyes turned more shiny, and he saw all of it.

Towards her little thoughts, Fang Yuan was crystal clear.

He did not find it strange; he understood Bai Ning Bing’s predicament, he would have had the same thoughts if he was in that situation.

They were both arrogant fellows, how could they submit to others and be another’s puppet?

"But, situations surpass men, so what if its a genius? Hehehe." Fang Yuan laughed coldly in his heart.

Fang Yuan was confident — with such a strong bargaining chip in his hand, Bai Ning Bing was like a butterfly trapped in a net. It was natural to struggle at first, but eventually she would land in his palms, understanding the situation and becoming tamed, turning into a useful pawn piece.

The battle continued.

Large numbers of six legged crocodiles laid on this beach.

Bai Ning Bing breathed roughly, sweating profusely as her attacks slowed down.

Out of stamina!

Strength was always her weakness. When fighting Fang Yuan back then, many times did she have the disadvantage due to the strength of two boars.

Now that she fought for an hour, her stamina was running out.

After all, they did not sleep for almost five days when floating on the bamboo raft, and even after the rest, it was too short to recover.

What caused her to be even more frustrated were those two lumps on her chest. Every time she moved, these two burdens moved along, causing her to feel very uncomfortable!

"Fang Yuan, are you not helping?!" She breathed roughly, calling.

Saying so, she dodged the attack of a six legged crocodile narrowly, pressing on her weak knees and standing up.

Fang Yuan said coldly, "Once I help, I will attract the attack of many six legged crocodiles, you want me to die? If I die, you will never get the Yang Gu."

Three six legged crocodiles approached and Bai Ning Bing had no choice but to retreat.

She was tired to the point of fainting as her stamina reached its limits, and she saw darkness in front of her. The Chainsaw Golden Centipede appeared even more heavy, constantly dragging her towards the ground.

She gritted her teeth, "Fang Yuan, if I die, can you live?"

"Rest assured, I am behind you." Fang Yuan rested his back on the cliff, as he willed and a Blood Moon Gu flew out of his palm, flying towards Bai Ning Bing.

"Take it, and use it well."

Blood Moon Gu originated from Moonlight Gu, so Bai Ning Bing was very familiar with it. With just a few uses, she got used to it and the bright red moonblades stabilized the situation.

But good situations did not last, and although Bai Ning Bing regained her footing, her primeval essence was starting to become insufficient.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

I’ll post another one later!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ordinary Rank three Gu Masters, to deal with beast groups, they have to employ kiting tactics. Using primeval stones to recover their primeval essence, Bai Ning Bing’s method of facing them head on and lasting until now, was already outstanding.

If a Gu Master’s primeval essence runs dry, their battle strength will drop down to rock bottom.

Bai Ning Bing started to look back at the cliff behind her, wondering if there was a way to escape.

When she saw Fang Yuan’s casual expression while he was leaning against the cliff, she flew into a rage, scolding, "Fang Yuan, I fight at the front lines, yet you watch the show behind me?!"

Fang Yuan snorted, "The former Northern Dark Ice Soul physique, the grand Bai Ning Bing, can’t even deal with a hundred beast group?"

Bai Ning Bing was exasperated, "If you have the guts, then you go and fight!"

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, "If I had Rank three cultivation, it is enough to eliminate all these six legged crocodiles, why would I need you?"

Bai Ning Bing breathed loudly, smoke coming out of her pores.

Fang Yuan said seriously, "Bai Ning Bing, I can tell you’re used to fighting without restrain. You are a former Northern Dark Ice Soul physique, but now that you are A grade with 90%, if you still keep fighting like that your primeval essence will definitely be insufficient. An outstanding Gu Master will use their primeval essence in the most efficient way, never wasting a drop. From now on, battle according to my instructions. Your fighting method is too crude, you have to be more meticulous now."

"Huh?" Bai Ning Bing’s lips twitched, "My battle method isn’t meticulous enough? Do you know how many times the clan leader and elders praised me, for being the number one skillful fighter in Bai clan?!"

"What’s there to compare with a bunch of scrubs? Listen closely..."

Bai Ning Bing laughed coldly three times, but Fang Yuan continued talking.

His voice entered Bai Ning Bing’s ears; at first she was indifferent, but eventually, her expression changed.

It went from disdain to seriousness, and finally, turning grave.

Fang Yuan’s words hit the nail right on the head. There was profound meaning in every word, perfectly describing her inability!

This was the collection of his 500 years of life, the essence left behind through the accumulation of time. How could it not let this youngster, naive and innocent, be extremely shocked?

Fang Yuan lived for 500 years, so he was as sly as a fox. His experience was something not even First gen Gu Yue or Sky Crane Lord could match with.

These two old geezers lived for almost a thousand years, but most of their life was spent in deep sleep, retaining that last breath of theirs. Their true "living" phase, was merely two to three hundred years at most.

If it was any other time, Bai Ning Bing upon hearing Fang Yuan’s advice, would merely take it as a joke. She was a proud arrogant genius, even if she was shocked, she would not follow suit. But now, facing the crocodiles’ pressure, her body could not help but execute what he said, and it showed an immediately effect.

Six legged crocodiles continued to die, but her situation improved by leaps and bounds.

Her primeval essence and stamina were depleted, but once she started using them carefully and reduced her meaningless attacks while increasing her attack effectiveness, it caused her primeval essence and stamina to slowly recover amidst battle.

Fifteen minutes later, after at least half the pack of six legged crocodiles were injured and over two hundred corpses on the ground, they finally stopped attacking and started to retreat.

Soon after, a large body appeared from under the water.

It had two rows of sharp blade-like teeth. Its yellow vertical pupils reflected Bai Ning Bing’s body as it emitted a cold killing intent.

This was the six legged crocodile king.

Hundred beast king level, Grand Crocodile king!

Different from other six legged crocodiles, this crocodile king was larger like a yak, and it did not stand on six legs, but only moved with its two hind legs.

It walked like humans, with a back as thick as a bear, and a scaly tail dragging a line across the beach.The other four feet that were free, were in a claw shape. Resembling four arms, they were thick and the muscles were tough as rocks.

Bai Ning Bing could not help but laugh bitterly.

If she was fighting this hundred beast king alone, she could win. But now that she had undergone an intense battle and there was little primeval essence and stamina left in her, she could not deal with this hundred beast king who was in perfect condition.

But at this time, Fang Yuan’s voice came from behind her, "Catch."

A blue and white light entered her aperture, turning into a lotus and rooting deep into her aperture sea.

Immediately, her primeval sea level started rising!

Bai Ning Bing was surprised and overjoyed: "What Gu is this?"

"Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus." Fang Yuan said.

"So this is the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus! No wonder First gen Gu Yue wanted it." Bai Ning Bing sighed again, then scolded, "You have such a Gu, why didn’t you lend it to me earlier?"

Fang Yuan chuckled, talking while minding his own business, "Thankfully this is only a hundred beast king. Remember, its weakness is that white skin near the chest."

Saying so, his body faded like ripples on the water surface, and he slowly vanished.

He activated the Stealth scale Gu.

"Scheming and cunning!" Bai Ning Bing scolded, before focusing her gaze on the Grand Crocodile king.

Only to see that on its chest, there was indeed a white skin, but it was only face- sized, and was protected by its four limbs. How could she strike that area easily?

Howl!

The Grand Crocodile king growled, before rushing at Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing could only rely on herself and roll around desperately, evading the hits and flicking her wrist at the same time.

Chainsaw Golden Centipede smashed on the Grand Crocodile king’s back.

Sparks flew as the Chainsaw Golden Centipede was rebounded, almost causing Bai Ning Bing to trip from the impact.

There was a white scratch on the Grand Crocodile king’s back armor, but other than that it was unfazed.

Howl!

It swung its tail, and winds flew.

Bai Ning Bing only saw a black whip approaching, thick, large and long. She could not evade it, so she was only able to activate the Sky Canopy Gu.

With a bang, she was sent flying, landing tens of metres away. Afterwards, she slammed on the tough sturdy cliff walls.

Bai Ning Bing was in so much pain until she drew a deep breath. Sky Canopy Gu is a Rank three Gu, having great defense but it could not reduce the force from impacts.

Bambambam...

The Grand Crocodile king’s thick strong legs left a strong imprint on the beach as it charged towards Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes shone; seeing the Grand Crocodile king’s attack, she did not move.

The Grand Crocodile king came crashing with its imposing aura, flashing its claws. If it was any other person, they would be scared shitless or run away in fear, but Bai Ning Bing was after all Bai Ning Bing, possessing an iron will.

"Twenty steps, fifteen steps, ten steps, five steps!" Seeing the Grand Crocodile king was near, at the final moment, Bai Ning Bing leapt.

Bam!

She narrowly evaded the Grand Crocodile king, and the latter crashed into the cliff walls, as large amount of debris fell and buried it."A beast is a beast after all!" Bai Ning Bing laughed loudly, about to chase after it, but suddenly thought of something and stopped.

The next moment, the Grand Crocodile king’s tail swept and sent the debris flying all over the place.

Bai Ning Bing observed silently, and a moment later the crocodile king finally got free.

It was in a desperate state. Half its teeth were broken and blood flowed out of its nostrils; its golden pupils also turned red.

It growled furiously at the sky and lowered its body, rushing towards Bai Ning Bing at an even faster speed.

Bai Ning Bing retreated, smiling as she dodged.

Bam!

With a huge bang, the cliff walls collapsed, and smoke flew everywhere......

An hour later, the injured Grand Crocodile king covered its white skin in futile, as blood continued to ooze out of its wounds.

Soon after, it plopped on the ground, on the beach that was completely wrecked by the battle.

"This Blood Moon Gu is pretty useful huh. With that bleeding effect, I can kill that Grand Crocodile king so easily." Bai Ning Bing looked at the red moon insignia, thinking in her mind.

After the crocodile king died, the remaining hundred six legged crocodiles lost their drive and morale, escaping into the river one by one.

"Finally over." Bai Ning Bing shook the Chainsaw Golden Centipede on her hand away, sitting on the beach in exhaustion.

Fang Yuan’s figure came out of the shade, squatting at the crocodile king’s corpse and searching.

"Found it!" When he took back his hand, there was one Gu in each of his palms.

Bai Ning Bing seeing this, breathed heavily in anger. She fought so intensely with the crocodile king, finally killing it and chasing the crocodile group away. But the unscathed Fang Yuan came out to collect the battle rewards instead.

Fang Yuan took a close look.

These two Gu, one was almost dying, but still struggling. It had a turtle shell, around palm-size, but its protruding surface was covered in crocodile scales.

The Carapace Gu.

Another was uninjured, but was not moving at all, letting Fang Yuan squish it with his fingers.

The Crcocodile Strength Gu.

It was very small, smaller than a finger. It was like a mini crocodile, with head, body and tail, but did not have any legs.

Both the Carapace Gu and the Crcocodile Strength Gu were Rank two Gu worms.

Normally, hundred beast kings have Rank two Gu living in them. In the thousand beast king, there was Rank three, and in the myriad beast king there was Rank four.

"As I expected." Fang Yuan seeing the two Gu, did not feel strange. He was experienced and after observing the battle, he had seen through the crocodile king’s abilities.

Immediately, he leaked a little of the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura, and refined these two Gu with his primeval essence instantly.

The Carapace Gu flew to Fang Yuan’s back, forming a large scale insignia, like a tattoo. It extended from Fang Yuan’s shoulder to his waist, covering his entire back.

As with the name, it was a Gu that could enhance the defense of a Gu Master’s back.

Crcocodile Strength Gu turned into a dim yellow light, entering Fang Yuan’s aperture.

It was similar to the black and white boar Gu, able to increase the Gu Master’s strength permanently, by the strength of a crocodile! It had high market value, normally a precious Gu worm without any available in the market.

"This again, instantly refining a Gu worm!" Seeing this, Bai Ning Bing could not continue but be furious, as her pupils dilated to pin-size.

When she fought Fang Yuan earlier, she found this secret.

Back at the clan, she searched the records and checked up on some assistance-type Gu that can achieve this effect.

But at this moment, as she witnessed the scene again, she felt that the truth might be different.

"This guy has so many trump cards. Sky Canopy Gu, Blood Moon Gu and Chainsaw Golden Centipede aside, but even the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus! His battle tactics are also completely superior to the clan’s teachings. Also, what Gu did he use earlier?"

Thinking of this, a cold chill went down Bai Ning Bing’s spine.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Roarrr....

The sky was getting darker as the the river surged and ebbed.

At dusk, the beach was colored red with crocodile blood, and hundreds of six legged crocodile corpses were lying all around two youths.

From beside one particular gigantic crocodile corpse, Fang Yuan slowly stood up.

He did not have any thoughts of fleeing when the six legged crocodile groups had attacked. Although he only had Rank one initial stage cultivation, he had Bai Ning Bing who was a Rank three peak stage Gu Master!

Her cultivation base added with his Rank three Gu worms, were more than enough to annihilate a hundred beast group.

On one hand, he was in need of an external force like the six legged crocodile groups to oppress Bai Ning Bing and also take the chance to train her. On another hand, he also needed to find suitable Gu worms for himself.

"I might only be at Rank one initial stage, but with my A grade aptitude and Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, my primeval essence recovery speed is fast enough to let me use Rank two Gu worms. But what a pity that both the Crocodile Strength Gu and Carapace Gu aren’t really ideal for me," Fang Yuan sighed as he pondered in his mind.

Sky Canopy Gu was a Rank three defensive Gu which he lent to Bai Ning Bing. Now, he needed a suitable defensive Gu for himself. However, the Carapace Gu’s defensive area was too small in that it could only defend his back.

And even though Crocodile Strength Gu was a precious Gu, Fang Yuan already had the strength of two boars; strengthening further would instead harm him.

Below Rank six, Gu Masters only possessed a mortal body which had a limit in how much it could endure and couldn’t be strengthened continuously.

Fang Yuan already used the Black and White Boar Gu to remodel his body and increase his fundamental strength. Using the Crocodile Strength Gu would surpass what his body could endure and would only harm him.

That is to say, unless he found other Gu worms which could supplement for the Crocodile Strength Gu, he would be committing a suicidal act by using it.

"In the inheritance inside Bai Gu mountain, there is a Jade Bone Gu which can increase the strength of the Gu Master’s bones. After using this Gu, there would be no problem in using the Crocodile Strength Gu. However, there is still quite a distance from Bai Gu mountain and it will take at least ten-fifteen days."

Fang Yuan gazed at southeast direction, then he willed and summoned the Crocodile Strength Gu.

He gave the Crocodile Strength Gu to Bai Ning Bing, and at the same time, called back the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus.

"Use this Crocodile Strength Gu, it will let you gain the strength of a crocodile. The process will be a bit tough, but it should be done after you repeatedly activate it for a month," Fang Yuan instructed.

Bai Ning Bing nodded, she was inwardly happy.

With the Crocodile Strength Gu, she could make up for her weak strength. She had looked for such a Gu back when she was in Bai clan, but she had no luck in finding such Gu. To think that she unexpectedly found the Gu which she had always wanted out in the wild!

Dangers lurked everywhere when Gu Masters journeyed outside, but at the same time, there were plenty of opportunities.

"Let’s go, the blood odor here is too concentrated and will definitely attract the wild beasts, the cliff is also almost collapsed; it will be dangerous to camp here."

Bai Ning Bing approved of Fang Yuan’s proposal.

But before leaving, Fang Yuan gathered as much of the crocodile blood and flesh as he could and stored them in the tusita flower.

Crocodile Strength Gu’s food was crocodile flesh. And the fresh crocodile blood could be used to feed the Blood Skull Gu and Blood Moon Gu.

The sun had already completely disappeared into the horizon and the night fell.

Numerous stars could be vaguely seen in the sky.

The cliff had collapsed by the grand crocodile king’s attack, becoming easier to climb. After Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing climbed the cliff, a dense jungle welcomed them.

The jungle seemed to continue on and on, touching the shadows of the faraway mountains. Furthermore, the depths of the jungle were covered in deep darkness, concealing unknown dangers and beasts.

Chichihouhou...

A series of odd noises sounding like the cries of birds or the howling of the apes, resounded in the two youths’ ears.

The two glanced at each other, realizing that the dangers lurked everywhere in the jungle. More so during the night time, where there were scarce light; the jungle became more dangerous than during daytime.

They had no other choices, however.

"Let’s go," Fang Yuan hinted at Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing grinded her teeth, but she had no choice other than to drag her extremely tired body and walk in front, opening a path for Fang Yuan.

The trees in this jungle were at least four meters tall. And being close the river, the air was filled with moisture and the soil was much softer than normal soil.

Under this warm and moist atmosphere, moss grew wildly, spreading over the ground, rocks and tree trunks.

The darkness deepened and the chillness increased as the deeper they went into the jungle.

Fang Yuan was still in a better condition; Bai Ning Bing, however, shivered from cold. She had just engaged in an intense battle, and her whole body was soaked with sweat. Right now as the chill invaded her body, she naturally felt much more cold.

"Hey, how about making a fire and warming ourselves first?" Bai Ning Bing spoke while scouting in front.

Her voice echoed within the jungle, making the quietness of the jungle even more prominent.

"Warm ourselves? Haha." Fang Yuan laughed, "Don’t you feel that this jungle is too quiet? Let’s stop and check the trees in front."

Bai Ning Bing slowed down her steps and concentrated.

The trees in front of them were short and thick, with twisted roots that spread over on the ground. The ends of the branches all grew out into vines like green pythons; either coiling around each other or dropping down into the ground.

The tip of the vines were like venus flytrap or like mussels with open shells, quietly waiting for the pray.

"Beast-trap tree!" Bai Ning Bing thought of what he had learned in the academy and recognized this tree.

This tree was carnivorous, and the ends of its branches had softened down to become vines with only two leaves on the ends. The leaves were wide and big, and would normally remain open like a giant open mouth. However, once a prey walks close, the vines would shoot like a snake and the leaves would snap shut, swallowing the prey. Afterward, the tree would secrete acidic liquid and melt down the prey over the course of tens of days or even months, before absorbing it.

Bai Ning Bing counted the amount of beast-trap trees in front of him; there were at least thirty to forty. There were some distance between each trees, upon which grew ordinary trees.

"This is the area of beast-trap trees, no wonder it was so quiet with no signs of any living creatures. But it isn’t a problem, I can forcefully open up a path with a Rank three Gu," Bai Ning Bing said.

Fang Yuan, however, shook his head, "We need a safe campsite right now, and from how I see it, this area of beast-trap trees looks pretty good. We might not necessarily find a safer place to spend the night in this dense jungle if we charge through this area."

Bai Ning Bing couldn’t help opening up her eyes wide when she heard what was said, "In this place? These beast-trap trees are safer?"

Fang Yuan glanced at her, but didn’t explain; instead he turned around and walked back through the way they had come.

Bai Ning Bing grinded her teeth; Yang Gu was with Fang Yuan, so she had no choice but to follow Fang Yuan back to the beach.

Fang Yuan chose two sturdy crocodile corpses and opened up their cut bellies; he removed the internal organs and cleaned it thoroughly before dragging the corpses back to the jungle.

"You are actually thinking of?!" Bai Ning Bing was smart and as she saw this, she already could vaguely guess Fang Yuan’s motive.

She couldn’t help but be amazed by Fang Yuan’s creativity.

"Humans are above all creatures, having unbound wisdom; thinking up odd ways to survive is normal. We will sleep inside these today," Fang Yuan said, and after explaining what to do, he entered inside a crocodile belly.

The next moment, he rolled inside and got closer to a beast-trap tree in the six legged crocodile’s body.

Swish!

The nearest vine pounced, as swift as the wind. The huge opened two leaves swallowed the whole crocodile corpse in one bite and then firmly closed together.

Following next, the vines twisted and gently supported the heavy leaves to the treetop.

"Go to sleep, we still need to continue on our journey tomorrow." The leaves on the treetop shook for a moment before Fang Yuan’s voice travelled out.

Bai Ning Bing was dumbstruck on the spot, watching this scene with open mouth.

She came to her senses only after a long while.

The darkness completely enveloped the land, and the night wind gently blew and passed through the jungle, producing sounds like that of a sob.

Bai Ning Bing clenched her teeth, and just like how Fang Yuan demonstrated, she drilled into the crocodile belly and rolled towards a beast-trap tree.

Almost immediately, she felt the attack of an external force, causing the whole crocodile body to shake for a while.

After the shaking, she sensed herself slowly rising up.

Finally, the force lifting her stopped.

Bai Ning Bing was lying inside the crocodile’s belly, and the crocodile belly was lying flat inside the leaves.

She gazed outside and her sight passed through the small crack in the closed leaves, landing upon the many stars in the sky.

The surroundings were extremely quiet, and the stars were shining brightly like mischievous kids winking at her.

"The sky is filled with stars; our luck is good, the weather is going to be good tomorrow." Fang Yuan’s voice came from outside.

Bai Ning Bing didn’t reply, she moved her body to get into a more comfortable position.

However, she still felt cold due to the ice-cold crocodile body.

At this moment, she got a whiff of a fragrant scent.

Bai Ning Bing wasn’t surprised as Fang Yuan had already explained this to her; this was the acidic liquid being released by the beast-trap tree.

However, this acidic liquid would need at least three months to melt the crocodile body. Hence, hiding inside the crocodile body was very safe for the moment.

"Oh right, I better use the Crocodile Strength Gu first and then sleep...." Bai Ning Bing thought inwardly but her eyelids seemed to be as heavy as a mountain, gradually shutting close. The next moment, she was in a deep sleep.

She was too tired; first it was continuously drifting for five days and five nights, then it was the intense battle with the crocodile groups. And in the battle, she had surpassed her physical limits and unearthed a part of her potential.

Maybe it was because she had turned into a female, the pressure from Fang Yuan intentionally or otherwise, it made her exhausted in both body and mind.

Fang Yuan, however, wasn’t asleep.

From within the crocodile body, he called out the tusita flower and took out some cotton clothes and cloak. He then divided these into two parts - one part for a cushion under his body; another part for covering his body.

Although he tossed around, this layer of preparation immediately brought him some warmth.

Under the cage of the leaves, the crocodile body changed into a pleasant hotbed.

Fang Yuan still had some energy left; he closed his eyes and fell into meditation, using his primeval essence to nurture his aperture.

He might have no Liquor worm to upgrade his primeval essence, but with the assistance of Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus and his A grade aptitude, the amount of time he could nurture his aperture increased by a great amount.

The primeval sea was turbulent, rising and falling as its waves cleansed the aperture walls. Every time the primeval essence was consumed, it would be immediately replenished. Even continuing to nurture the aperture for a whole night wouldn’t be able to exhaust the primeval essence.

However, Fang Yuan did not do such a thing, for nurturing the aperture couldn’t replace sleep. He stopped cultivating after midnight and went to sleep.

He was a light sleeper and was able to hear the vague sounds of the wind and the howling of beasts in his sleep. Many wild beasts were attracted to the odor of the blood in the beach and trudged through the jungle towards it. And when they passed through this area of trees, they were captured by the beast-trap trees.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

2 chapters for now, I want to do more tonight.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sun hung brightly in the blue skies and white clouds.

Sunlight shone on the land as Yellow Dragon River flowed, with a dense forest beside the river, forming an ocean of greenery.

On the beast-trap tree’s crown, vines hung as eight or nine leaves formed a cage, like a gathering of seashells standing tall.

Suddenly among one of the cages, there was intense shaking.

Pew.

A bright red moon blade shot out from there, tearing the leaves apart.

A young girl in light colored clothing, shrouded in a white colored armor on her body, emerged from the leaf cage.

She was agile, her feet landing on some branches on the trees, moving quickly as she jumped down, eventually landing safely on the ground.

It was Bai Ning Bing.

Throughout the process, the beast-trap tree did not move, as if it was dead.

Bai Ning Bing looked at this beast-trap tree, thinking of what Fang Yuan had said to her the previous night.

"Towards any prey that escaped, the beast-trap tree will not attack further. Because any prey that can escape, is not something the tree can deal with. Even without intelligence, the instinct of the beast-trap tree can allow it to adapt and survive better in the wild."

"Achoo."

Bai Ning Bing could not help but sneeze, as she rubbed her nose, she observed the surrounding and checked out her location.

In this beast-trap forest, most leaf cages were hanging high up in the tree crown like shiny green seashells.

"It seems that the blood smell on the beach has attracted many wild beasts. The beast-trap tree had a great harvest last night," Bai Ning Bing thought in her heart as she stretched her limbs, cracking her neck.

She had an uncomfortable sleep last night — the crocodile’s corpse was hard and tough. Coupled with the cold night, although she was extremely tired, she was woken up by the cold several times.

Thus, with huge eyebags, she was in a bad condition mentally. But after cultivatiing for a while, her stamina had recovered by more than half.

At this moment, she was standing in an area with sunlight, using the sunlight to dispel the coldness in her body.

"Bai Ning Bing, let me out." A voice was heard, none other than Fang Yuan. He did not need to use the Earth Hearing Communication Grass to notice the commotion.

Bai Ning Bing glanced at another beast-trap tree. On this tree crown, the leaf cage that had captured Fang Yuan was still at the same spot.

She laughed inwardly, not replying, instead closing her eyes and resting while bathing in the sunlight, delaying on purpose.

Fifteen minutes later, she shot out a blood colored moonblade, cutting the vines apart.

The seashell-like leaves scattered on the ground as they tore and dispersed.

Bai Ning Bing slowly walked over, using another blood moonblade, cutting the leaves as Fang Yuan moved his way out of the cage.

"What’s with the delay? I woke up ages ago, and even managed to cultivate for a while." Fang Yuan’s face was gleaming, looking extremely refreshed.

The clothes and cloak that he took out last night had already been kept.

Bai Ning Bing snorted. Fang Yuan’s current situation was beyond her expectations.

She had thought that Fang Yuan would be like her, not being able to sleep while feeling hungry and cold. Thus she delayed his release, trying to torture him.

But to think that his condition was at its peak!

"It’s getting late, we have to start moving. Let’s eat first." Fang Yuan shot out the tusita flower, taking out the coal stone, iron rack, iron pot, water bottle and dried biscuits etc.

He moved quickly, cooking a pot of meat stew in a short while.

Next he searched around, finding a large number of mushrooms under the cover of the beast-trap tree.

These tree shrooms were long, dry and thin, looking dark purple or black.

Bai Ning Bing looked at Fang Yuan as he put these into the pan, questioning, "Wild vegetation cannot be eaten without caution, they might be poisonous."

"Yup, you’re right." Fang Yuan nodded. "Then don’t eat."

Bai Ning Bing laughed coldly, "If you get poisoned, I do not have a healing Gu worm."

Fang Yuan indifferently took out a ladle, drinking a huge mouthful of meat soup under Bai Ning Bing’s close watch.

Bai Ning Bing snorted.

Only until Fang Yuan drank five to six mouthfuls of soup did she assure herself that there was no danger in the soup.

After drinking from the ladle, her eyes shone.

Compared to yesterday, this stew had a much fresher and sweeter flavor!

She directed her gaze towards the tree shrooms in the soup. Evidently, the difference was due to these mushrooms.

She could not help but look at Fang Yuan as he sat on a rock, drinking soup with his head lowered as he ate the dry biscuits, full of vigor.

Although their sleeping condition was the same, Bai Ning Bing compared it to her own pathetic state and felt a trace of admiration towards Fang Yuan in her heart, no matter how much she denied it.

Of course, if she knew that Fang Yuan had secretly taken out his cloak and clothes to keep warm, then she would have had a different feeling all together.

Fang Yuan felt her gaze landing on him.

But he did not raise his head, only smiling lightly, pretending he did not notice it and continued eating.

Ever since Qing Mao mountain where Bai Ning Bing resolutely saved him, Fang Yuan felt that pure demonic nature in her.

Demons are crazy, impervious to reason, adamantly walking on their own path. Bai Ning Bing’s demonic nature gave Fang Yuan some ideas on how to make use of her.

But this person, Bai Ning Bing, was also complex.

On one hand, she was too tender. After getting new life and solving the problem of the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique, she did not want to give up anymore, enjoying life and not resolving to die.

But on the other hand, her demonic nature made her pursue excitement, thus having a completely unrestrained personality. She did not fear death, and if death was exciting enough, she would chase after it.

Such a person is like a young dragon, full of curiosity towards the world, carrying an unrestrained nature, and whose wildness was untamable. She had her own path, her own ambitions and aspirations.

Bai Ning Bing had not fully grown into a demon lord; she was merely a demon child now. But this true demon will never change her path, and her direction cannot be altered, and she definitely will not submit to anyone.

True demons are only loyal to themselves, moving in the darkness alone, walking their own paths.

True demons will admire other people, but they will never submit.

A true demon is the lord of their own, the supreme existence!

Fang Yuan understood Bai Ning Bing because Fang Yuan understood himself. He knew that Bai Ning Bing would never submit to him, but not submitting does not mean she couldn’t be subdued. While not able to change her path, it does not mean she cannot be used.

If Fang Yuan had Rank three cultivation, he would not need her. But with only Rank one initial stage now, Bai Ning Bing’s value was great.

Of course, wanting to subdue her and make use of her, some efforts needed to be put in.

Bai Ning Bing was smart and arrogant, and could not be forced. Only through some small matters, or external influence to exert pressure on her, can she slowly be tamed.

Secretly taking out clothes to keep warm, was not because Fang Yuan is petty. Earlier Bai Ning Bing purposely delayed the time, and Fang Yuan did not pursue it; it is not because he is magnanimous.

"To subdue Bai Ning Bing, I need to spend a lot of time. But I’m in no rush, let’s take it slow, I need time to recover my cultivation."

After the two ate, it was near noon already.

On the ground, there were footprints of wild beasts all over. The two continued moving, as Bai Ning Bing paved the way towards the southeast direction.

The deeper they went, the taller the trees in the forest. Earlier there were only beast-trap trees around three to four metres tall, but gradually, they became five to six metres tall, and at times there were seven to eight metre tall king trees, like a crane among a flock of chicken.

Of course there were also dying tree branches that had fallen onto the ground, filled with green moss. Or at some areas, there were budding leaves, or broken wood, split apart by lightning, showing the fury of the heavens.

These great beings grew in close proximity in this area, shrouding the heavens.

The deeper one went, the colder it got.

The strong sunlight was blocked by the lustrous tree leaves, and only a tiny ray could penetrate, creating large shadows in the forest.

The wind blew, and the tree leaves made a swish sound, as shadows moved like shattered gold.

In the forest, not all was peaceful.

At times, there would be deer, foxes, rabbits and other animals moving around.

Most were birds, all sorts of birds, either in groups of threes or fives, or a large flock flying in the sky. Others stood on tree branches as they sang out in harmony.

Sometimes, there would be the roaring of tigers from far away.

The two moved and stopped, relying on the Earth Hearing Communication grass to avoid many dangers. But some areas could not be avoided, thus Bai Ning Bing’s battle strength was needed to force their way through.

Rank three cultivation is already sufficient to deal with problems in the wild.

NIght descended again, and Fang Yuan found a safe camping spot; it was a stone hill.

Bai Ning Bing was extremely tired, falling asleep immediately even on the rough sharp rocks.

On the second day when she woke up, her body ached all over and even her head could not rotate properly, having gotten a stiff neck. Her sneezing also became more frequent; it was obvious she caught a cold.

Fang Yuan took all these into consideration as they continued on their journey.

They moved extremely slowly, because there was no movement-type Gu to travel. Previously, Fang Yuan used the Thousand Li Earthwolf spider and Bai Ning Bing used the White Form Immortal Snake Gu; both were mobile Gu that were Rank five. Unfortunately one died and the other escaped.

But Fang Yuan was not in a hurry — his cultivation was weak and he needed time to cultivate.

Every time there was a break when they travelled in the day, even during rest he would grab every second to cultivate.

At night, he would cultivate into late night.

A few days later, Bai Ning Bing got sick, catching a cold. Her head hurt and her battle strength fell rapidly, also getting a fever.

Fang Yuan had to stop and use the medicine in the tusita flower on her, as well as some medical paste to apply on her body. Although they were burning on the skin, they helped to remove the chill in her body.

Only after resting for six days did Bai Ning Bing recover.

This illness was a huge lesson to her. During the period, she was drowsy and barely had any strength in her body, not even able to apply the paste herself. It was Fang Yuan who helped her.

"If not for Fang Yuan, I'd be in a critical position this time..." After Bai Ning Bing recovered, she sighed inwardly. Not matter how much she did not want to agree with it, it was the truth.

In the past, her tone was tough and was very aggressive. But after this matter, she became much quieter, often keeping silent; at times, she could go for half a day without speaking.

The less she spoke, the more Fang Yuan led and his authority rose. This way, he slowly became the leader among the two.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Time passed quickly.

Half a month later, Bai Ning Bing grew thinner but her body radiated a strong elite aura.

Her concentration was better, and her blue eyes shone with brilliance as she observed around.

Undeniably, she had adjusted to this primal life, and learnt much from this experience.

Fang Yuan knew: Although Bai Ning Bing was solemn, it does not mean she admitted defeat.

Her heart was motivated to learn seriously and try hard to adapt. At times, she would refute some of Fang Yuan's ideas, and although they were still rather shallow, she had gone past her initial naivety.

Fang Yuan could feel Bai Ning Bing improving by the day.

But this situation was not unexpected. To subdue Bai Ning Bing, it was not easy; any true demon would have the spirits to resist greatly.

Under the blazing sun, the two hid in the shaded forest as they carefully observed the mountain valley.

In the valley, there was a huge crocodile, sleeping peacefully.

A lava crocodile.

The size of three elephants placed together. Its body was covered in dark red scales, and its four thick strong legs support its humongous body. A crocodile tail glowed in a metallic lustre as it reached almost 10 metres tall.

Most importantly, on its back there are two lumps, like two mini volcanoes. As it breathed, two columns of black smoke rose from the lumps, varying in intensity.

"This lava crocodile is a thousand beast king! To eliminate it, the risk is too great." Bai Ning Bing stared with wariness.

On a thousand beast king, there are Rank three wild gu worms. Together with the beast king’s strong body physique, even Rank three peak stage Gu Masters would have difficulty finding victory in a 1v1.

"Great risks greater rewards! It is not easy to find a crocodile in the forest. Crocodile strength gu needs crocodile meat to feed on, we have less than half left now. Let’s test out this crocodile’s strength first." Fang Yuan said.

Lava crocodile lived underground in groups. Only the beast king have the strength to get to the surface and breathe in fresh air, enjoying the sun.

Bai Ning Bing gritted her teeth, standing up.

After getting the crocodile strength gu, she had been using it. Now her strength was greatly increased, but there was still a distance from the strength of one crocodile, the increment was not completely done yet.

The lava crocodile was asleep, but when Bai Ning Bing got around 50 steps away from it, it opened its red golden eyes.

Plop!

It supported its body as it turned its head, two gushes of hot air coming out from its nose.

Bai Ning Bing’s expression was solemn, activating the canopy gu, but still feeling a strong feeling of heated air gushing at her face.

She did not take out the chainsaw golden centipede, but shot out the blood moonblade.

The Rank three moonblade hit the back of the lava crocodile, shaving off some scales and succeeded in angering the lava crocodile king.

It aimed accurately at Bai Ning Bing, opening its huge mouth and shooting out a dark red lava fireball.

The lava fireball was the size of a stonemill, Bai Ning Bing did not dare to take it head on, and dodged.

Bam!Lava fireball drew an arc in the sky, landing on the mountain rocks.

In an explosion, shards of mountain rocks flew apart as the flames burnt.

A small sized mushroom cloud floated into the sky before dissipating. At the explosion area, a huge crater was created, and inside fresh lava was still flowing as they slowly cooled down.

"Rank three lava explosion gu." Fang Yuan seeing this, concluded in his heart.

...

Few minutes later, Fang Yuan threw down a rope from above the cliff, and pulled Bai Ning Bing up.

Lava crocodile king growled several times, but did not give chase. Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing’s figure vanished as it continued to lay on the ground, enjoying its sunbath once again.

This is because Bai Ning Bing’s attacks were merely probing. The lava crocodile king did not find her a threat, only thinking that she was an intruding wild beast, thus chasing her away.

"This is a lava crocodile king, with three Gu worms inside it. One lava explosion Gu, one flame stomach Gu, and one accumulating ash Gu, all three are Rank three Gu worms. Covering attack, defense and healing, all three basic aspects are assured." Leaving the valley, Fang Yuan concluded what he observed.

Bai Ning Bing frowned deeply. She herself had probed earlier, and knew that to kill this crocodile king, it was extremely difficult and was near impossible.

"Nevermind that lava explosion Gu, even the the flame stomach Gu’s defense cannot be broken by Blood Moon Gu. Only the Chainsaw Golden Centipede can do it when it gets close. But if we really did that to destroy the flame stomach, the centipede would be crippled as well. These days, after using it to kill enemies, the razors were already in bad shape. Plus, even if we break the defenses, there is still the accumulating ash Gu that can heal the crocodile king. Its stamina is definitely greater than both of us combined, in a battle of attrition we would definitely lose. Most importantly it can burrow underground and go back to its nest, we cannot stop it from leaving." Bai Ning Bing said.

Fang Yuan nodded: "Your analysis is right, but I want to kill it even more now. Since ash Gu that eats ashes as food, it is easy to feed. It is also very suitable as our healing Gu worm."

"Hmph, although the Gu worm is good, we need to live to enjoy it. Although you have the Yang Gu, don’t think of manipulating me, ordering me to risk my life in such a combat," Bai Ning Bing snorted.

"We cannot fight it head on, but we can use intelligence. Nevermind about other wild beasts, but this lava crocodile king, we can use it to attract other beast kings and cause them to fight among themselves, and then reap the rewards from it," Fang Yuan said as he did not wish to give up due to difficulty.

Creating a miracle out of the impossible, it was his favourite thing to do.

If it was any other wild beast, unless they just migrated and arrived, they would have their respective territories. Among themselves, they would know each other’s existence and would not cause any in-fighting.

But the lava crocodile king was different.

It normally lived underground, and sometimes came to the surface to breathe fresh air. Like the fish deep in the sea, jumping out of the surface of the water.

Their existence was not known by other beast kings; they are like illegal immigrants.

Unless it was a beast king like the lightning lycan, most did not have high intelligence. Once a beast king is lured over, they would feel threatened by one another and begin an intense battle.

Once they both got injured, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing would be able to ’rob the owner when his house is on fire’.

Fang Yuan’s words caused Bai Ning Bing’s eyes to shine.

She nodded. "We do not have a movement-type Gu, thus this plan is risky. But compared to fighting the lava crocodile king head on, we have greater hopes of success. We can give this a try."

Like human society, among wild beasts, they each have their own territories.

Stronger beast kings led beast groups and occupied areas with abundant resources. Just like how a human clan would occupy a spirit spring.

Among forces, they would have interactions and as long as they ventured into other areas, they would have some findings.

The next five days, Bai and Fang used the lava crocodile as the focal point as they searched around.

The northwest direction which they came from did not need more scouting.Looping around the valley, towards the southeast direction, they found a white ape gang. The leader was an old white ape, a thousand beast king. A white ape’s speed was fast, and if it was lured, the two would definitely get caught up and be surrounded. Thus, they had to give up their plans here.

At the southwest direction, it was a rotting swamp. The smell was overbearing; this is the world of the poison.

The poisonous snake lay below the roots of the tree, as fist-sized poisonous bees flew around in groups, and large spiders webs had black spiders around the size of a face.

From the center of the swamp, there was frogs screeching. Fang Yuan deduced that it was a healing Gu that was the lord of this swamp — poison swallowing toad. It was Rank four, having a small body and fed on poison as food. If a Gu Master is poisoned, activating it to absorb the poison would result in a healing effect.

Its speed was bad, but entering the deep parts of the swamp and luring it out is harder.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing did not have any healing Gu. If they were bitten by a poisonous creature, it would result in much trouble. Furthermore, finding a tiny poison swallowing frog in a large swamp was extremely difficult.

The two finally moved towards the northeast direction, finding a beehive as huge as a house.

Inside there was a large number of a terrifying insect group — the frenzy needle bee.

These bees were even greater trouble.

Frenzy needle bee once becoming a Gu, had the ability to penetrate all things. That is to say, even with Bai Ning Bing’s Sky Canopy Gu protection, it would be pierced by the Rank three frenzy needles.

The winds howled in the night.

Winds blew into the mountain caves as the campfire flickered in response.

This was a small mound, and a cave was found inside.

THis cave did not have an optimum location, first it did not face against the wind, thus winds blew into the cave and caused it to be very moist. Next the top was not covered, like a well as the stars in the skies could be seen.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were solemn, sitting around the fire.

Fang Yuan was expressionless while Bai Ning Bing sighed in disappointment, "These few days we explored the surroundings completely, although your idea is great, we have no suitable targets. It seems we can only give up on the lava crocodile king."

"Plans are made by men, but success is decided by the heavens, we have insufficient strength, thus we can only rely on luck for some things. Nevermind, I still wanted to raise the crocodile strength Gu, but it seems we cannot kill the lava crocodile king. Tomorrow we will set off, and continued towards Bai Gu mountain." Fang Yuan nodded helplessly.

But at this time!

Suddenly from the outside, the lava crocodile king’s furious growls could be heard.

"What happened?"

"It is that lava crocodile king!"

The two made eye contact as they left the cave, looking towards a faraway place.

Only to see that in the valley, rainbow colors were shining as the flames burnt brightly, giving off an imposing aura.

In the brilliant rainbow light, a pheasant as large as a mountain showed its body. Its crown shone like gold, erecting highly. The feathers on its body shone in all colors, changing all the time and giving an out of this world brilliance.

"Oh no, it is the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant, a myriad beast king level bird! The lava crocodile king is done for," Fang Yuan said immediately

"Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant?" Bai Ning Bing was perturbed.

"This is a lone travelling myriad beast king, able to fly in the skies, only landing to find food. Divine pheasant is low in numbers, they have all sorts of rainbow Gu in their bodies. Once they battle, the skies would be filled with rainbow lights, shining in five to seven different lights. Sigh, we can’t get the lava crocodile king anymore. Let’s hurry in, this divine pheasant is extremely sharp eyed like an eagle. If it finds us and comes for the killing, we would be in great trouble." Saying so, Fang Yuan retreated into the cave.

Bai Ning Bing bit her lips as she followed closely behind.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

An hour later, the lava crocodile king cried out one last time before it went silent.

Soon after, Bai Ning Bing and Fang Yuan heard the sound of the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant pecking its food.

But Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant ’s appetite was huge, and one lava crocodile king could not satisfy its hunger.

This night, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing did not sleep.

After the lava crocodile king’s cries, they heard the white ape’s screaming, the poison swallowing toad’s screech, and the fluttering of the bee groups. Most importantly, there was the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant’s loud cry.

Only until evening did the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant fly into the skies, drawing a rainbow behind its path.

Seeing the trail of the rainbow disappearing in the sky, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing finally dared to walk out of the cave.

The two came to the original valley.

The valley was completely wrecked, half destroyed. The lava crocodile king laid belly side-up on the ground, as dead as it could be.

Its stomach was pried open by the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant, and the flesh and intestines within were all eaten. Only its remaining skeleton held together by the dark red crocodile skin was left.

The two searched for a while.

They soon found a red glass fragment — this was the remains of the flame stomach Gu.

Evidently, the lava crocodile king activated the flame stomach gu for defense, but it was forcefully defeated by the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant , causing the flame stomach gu to be destroyed.

As for the other two Gu; lava explosion and accumulating ash Gu, they were nowhere to be found.

This was nothing strange.

Once the host dies, the Gu worms inhibiting the wild beasts’ bodies will leave and roam around like they’ve lost their homes.

Accumulating ash Gu was a very ideal healing Gu, perfect for Fang Yuan’s situation.

But things did not go according to one’s will most of the time.

Not obtaining the accumulating ash Gu was within Fang Yuan’s expectations. But, they did not return empty-handed.

There was still some flesh left in the lava crocodile king’s corpse.

The Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant ate most of the corpse, but left behind some scraps that Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing could take.

After working for an afternoon, they finally cut out all the meat and stored it in the tusita flower.

"These crocodile meat is enough to feed the crocodile strength Gu for three months. Let’s explore other areas."

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing came to the territory of the white apes.

The dense forest earlier had white ape groups playing and swinging around.

But now everywhere there was broken trees, with white ape limbs in the mix, some old, crippled or young apes defended the corpses of their kin as they cried out loud, the entire forest covered in an atmosphere of sadness and devastation.

The Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant had caused a catastrophe to this thousand beast group the night before. Right now only two or three hundred were left, and the last few hundred beast king white apes were all injured.

Bai Ning Bing stared with shining eyes, "Right now the white ape group is at their weakest, shall we attack?"

Fang Yuan stopped her.

Not that he pitied these white apes, but knew that in a way, they were even more dangerous now.

"An army burning with righteous indignation is bound to win; don’t mess with these white apes. Once you do, they’ll attack in rage, relentlessly attacking until we’re dead. Those few hundred beast kings, although they are injured, it is not something you can deal with alone."

Bai Ning Bing hearing so, looked at Fang Yuan before giving up on her plan to attack.

The two moved towards the southwest area; towards the rotten swamp.

The swamp had turned into a completely different sight, ravaged by the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant.

Their living environment had been greatly destroyed, and the swamp’s major forces were redistributed. Although the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant left, the swamp was not in peace. All sorts of poisonous beings were killing each other, in chaos.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing stood at the fringe of the swamp; in only a while, they saw three battles occurring.

One sight was of two brightly colored poisonous snakes battling, until one was swallowed by the other. But not long after, a crab-sized scorpion came and stabbed the poisonous snake to death.

The second battle was between a poison powder moth and an eerie blue toad. When battle ensued, the toad stretched its tongue and swallowed the moth. A moment later, the moth died of suffocation in the toad’s mouth, but the toad was also poisoned to death by the powder.

The third battle was between a face-sized black spider, coming out from the mud. Its body was covered in ants, after a while the ants won, and completely devoured the spider.

Seeing such a chaotic scene, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing left immediately.

Finally they came to the nest of the frenzy needle bee group.

The house-like beehive had collapsed completely, the surroundings was quiet, not a single frenzy needle bee was left.

The two got closer.

Immediately, the fragrant smell of sesame entered Bai Ning Bing’s nose as she sniffed, "What smell is that?"

"The smell of the beehive. Frenzy needle bee do not create honey, but their hives are a great Gu refinement material. At the same time, it is a kind of food that humans can consume directly." Fang Yuan said so, stretching his arm into the beehive.

Crack.

The beehive fragments were dark yellow color.

Under Bai Ning Bing’s curious gaze, he placed the beehive into his mouth, biting and crushing it in a few bites, swallowing it.

The beehive tasted like biscuits on earth, fragrant and crispy.

But undeniably, this naturally produced food was much more delicious than biscuits. It carried a light sweetness, not oily at all, but instead having a refreshing flavor.

"Mm, good taste!" Bai Ning Bing also took a piece to eat, and after consuming it, she felt her mouth salivating, the sweet flavor caused her frowning eyebrows to ease subconsciously.

"Our salted meat and dry biscuits are finishing. We should collect some beehives and store it in your tusita flower," Bai Ning Bing suggested.

Fang Yuan looked at the sky, his expression slightly worried, "I have the same thought, but we have to move quickly."

"You’re worried that the blood smell of the lava crocodile king as well as the white ape’s corpse will attract new wild beasts? Rest easy, there is no wind today, wild beasts will not be attracted over, at least not in the meantime. During this period, we can collect to our hearts’ content," Bai Ning Bing laughed.

Fang Yuan shook his head, about to speak when suddenly his expression changed.

Buzzbuzzbuzz... The sound of bees buzzing and flying entered their ears.

Bai Ning Bing looked at the sky immediately, only to see a thick cloud formed by numerous frenzy needle bees, attacking towards them.

The frenzy needle beehive, although destroyed by Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant, and the most delicious piece of the beehive at the center was eaten, the frenzy needle bees were not reduced much in numbers.

Frenzy needle bees could not cause damage to the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant, so after the latter ate enough, it did not waste extra energy in exterminating these insignificant things.

Frenzy needle bee group’s house was destroyed, and because they had low intelligence, they started attacking the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant .

But once the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant flew high into the sky, they no longer had the strength to pursue them, and were unable to continue chasing, thus they could only return to their hive and reconstruct their houses.

Afterwards, they saw two youngsters standing in their house eating their hive.

Under this situation, what hesitation was there?

The fury towards the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant earlier, was completely transferred to Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

At once, numerous frenzy needle bees flapped their wings and rained down on the two!

Bai Ning Bing was stunned.

"Why are you still not running?!" Fang Yuan turned around and left, taking huge strides.

Being reminded like this, Bai Ning Bing immediately turned around and chased after Fang Yuan.

The frenzy needle bee group was behind them, relentlessly chasing.

Fang Yuan ran in front while Bai Ning Bing fell behind. They did not have a movement-type Gu, thus Bai Ning Bing was quickly caught by the bee group.

Chink chink chink.

Bai Ning Bing activated the Sky Canopy Gu, and a white armor appeared but flickered immediately, receiving almost a thousand attacks in just a moment.

Frenzy needle bee’s needle were tough as steel, extremely sturdy. Together with their high speed flying, it was no inferior to a needle rain attack.

Large numbers cause a qualitative change.

Bai Ning Bing’s primeval essence continued to reduce; the bee group’s attacks are not to be underestimated!What was more troubling, was that some of the frenzy needle bees had become Gu.

Rank three frenzy needle bee Gu had piercing ability, so even the Sky Canopy Gu could not defend against it. Bai Ning Bing’s back was quickly pierced and she bled, causing her to grunt in pain, while her running speed broke her usual limits due to the stimulation.

Bai Ning Bing had never thought she could run so quickly on her own.

With her speed, it looked like mountain rocks and trees came flying at her, and she had to concentrate with all her mind to dodge them; if she was tripped by anything, the bees would surround her at the first opportunity.

Under such an attack, she was dead meat!

With Bai Ning Bing behind him tanking the pressure, Fang Yuan’s situation was much better.

He activated his primeval essence, injecting them into his Carapace Gu at his back.

The skin on his back became uneven, slightly bulging and becoming a tough and thick crocodile skin armor.

Ordinary frenzy needle bees could not penetrate the crocodile skin armor, and the few bee Gu were attracted by Bai Ning Bing.

After running for another fifteen minutes, the bees still chased relentlessly.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were panting as their speed started to reduce.

"There’s hope, there’s a lake in front!" As the situation turned dire, Fang Yuan suddenly shouted.

Bai Ning Bing was overjoyed.

Trees became less densely packed as a blue white light appeared, expanding within the greenery.

The two rushed out of the forest, and a lake was seen.

Fang Yuan did not hesitate, and with a plop, he jumped into the lake.

Bai Ning Bing followed closely behind.

Swish swish swish!

Frenzy needle bees were bent on getting them, diving into the water as well.

Bai Ning Bing’s white armor shook intensely, as she received a large number of attacks.

As the intense pain hit her, she bit her lips and paddled with her hands, swimming towards the deeper parts of the water.

A moment later, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing emerged from the opposite shore.

The smell of the beehive on their bodies had been washed away, and when looking back at their original spot, there were large numbers of frenzy needle bees indignantly flying about, attacking the water out of frustration.

Although the frenzy needle bees were small, they were resilient. Even if they fell into the lake, as long as it was not too deep, they would resurface.

"Damn it..." Bai Ning Bing cursed, still feeling the lingering fear from earlier.

Her expression was ugly.

Be it the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant, or white ape group, or even the frenzy needle bee group, none of them were those she could deal with.

If last night she was found by the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant, she would become its meal.

Rank three cultivation in this cruel world of nature, was the bottom of the hierarchy.

"I’ve had enough, when will we reach Bai Gu mountain?"

"Shush, be quiet!" Fang Yuan’s expression was solemn, he half-squatted as his finger touched the remains of a fire that had been put out earlier.

Bai Ning Bing immediately frowned deeply.

Undeniably, these were traces left behind by humans.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The lake water was still, reflecting the clear blue sky and white clouds.

Even after losing the frenzy needle bee’s chase, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing’s mood were solemn.

Because in front of them, there was traces left behind that signified this area was once used by people to start a fire and cook meat.

Earth Communication Ear grass!

Fang Yuan willed and roots grew out of his ear, as they extended into the ground and dug their way in, Fang Yuan’s hearing became many times stronger.

After listening for a while, his expression loosened up, as there was no one ambushing in the vicinity.

Soon after, he went to the remains of the fire and touched the ashes, not letting go of any evidence that he could find.

"The fire was started half a month ago, the other party is alone and should not be nearby." After a while, Fang Yuan concluded from his findings.

"Alone? Gu Masters from a clan have to travel in fives. It seems this person is a demonic Gu Master." Bai Ning Bing frowned as she sighed.

If it was a Gu Master from a clan, they would be righteous Gu Masters, and there is hope of interaction. If it was a demonic Gu Master, once they meet a battle is assured.

This situation, is not because "righteous people are kind, while demonic people are evil".

But because when one is alone, they would display their true nature, there are no restraints in the wild, thus they act without reservation.

Righteous Gu Masters, move in groups. When they handle matters, they will think about the opinions of the people with them, thus they would act more closely to society’s norm.

Demonic Gu Masters often moved alone, and were very vigilant, having a strong instinct towards danger. Without anyone to rely on, they would always act to determine and ensure their own safety.

This was not good news to Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

When meeting righteous clan-based Gu Masters, they could avoid battle. But if they met a demonic Gu Master, there would definitely fight, unless they displayed sufficient strength that would cause the demonic Gu Master to shrink in fear and suspicion.

Unfortunately, Gu Masters that could roam around these wilderness alone have around Rank four cultivation, and special methods of their own. How many weaklings would there be?

For Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing, one was a new Rank three while the other was Rank one initial stage. Without sufficient Gu worms to cover all grounds, even when they travelled in the woods, it was full of danger and every step was a difficult gamble.

If they encountered a demonic Gu Master, they will most likely be done for.

"Thankfully we discovered the traces of this campfire, so from now on we should not blinding rush our journey, but recuperate and at least mend our current wounds back to full health," Fang Yuan said.

Bai Ning Bing nodded. After being reminded, she also felt her back hurting.

Fang Yuan summoned the tusita flower, taking out bandages and medicine, giving a large portion to Bai Ning Bing.

Although the Carapace Gu’s defensive area was small, usually being useless, this time it helped Fang Yuan by a lot.

And because Bai Ning Bing attracted most of the firepower, Fang Yuan barely had any injuries.

He quickly handled his wounds, and rushed over to help Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing took off her upper shirt. Numerous fingertip-sized holes filled her back, causing fear to whoever who saw it.

Frenzy needle bee is Rank three, large in numbers and also having penetrating abilities; it countered the Sky Canopy Gu. But Bai Ning Bing also used the Ice Muscles Gu before, so with two layers of defense, her life was saved.

Tsk tsk...

Bai Ning Bing gritted her teeth, breathing in deeply as she endured the pain of cleaning the wound.Soon after, the injury was bandaged.

Fang Yuan placed the empty medicine cans and the last remaining bandage into the tusita flower.

"We have little medication items left, the same with bandages. Even though we have been thrifty and even reused the bandages when we could, it seems we really need to find a healing Gu as soon as possible." Fang Yuan stood up with a solemn expression.

Medication is an expendable item, and was difficult to make, and takes time to collect. If they had a healing Gu, not only would the effect be better, it also used primeval essence that can be naturally recovered.

With this comparison, the superior one stood out easily.

But an ideal Gu worm is too hard to find.

The truth is, within this half a month, they encountered many chances, but they either had insufficient strength, or it was an inappropriate environment, lacking proper preparations to capture the Gu.

"We have to get a healing Gu! But before that, I have a problem here," Bai Ning Bing suddenly said.

"What problem?" Fang Yuan raised his eyebrows.

Bai Ning Bing was naked above and she turned over and pointed to her chest, "Eh, these two lumps of meat, they are in the way. When I run they will jump all over the place, and even in battle they are a burden. I want to slice them off, but I’m worried the injury would be too severe. Without a healing Gu worm, I might get into even more trouble."

She was the Bai clan genius, focused on cultivation. She barely knew anything outside of it, thus having even less concern towards females.

Even though Bai Ning Bing had turned into a girl, she had lived as a guy for her entire life, thus she didn’t care in her mind and did not treat this body as anything sacred.

After all, she knew that the Yang Gu in Fang Yuan’s possession could give her back the body of a male anyway.

Thus, Bai Ning Bing had never thought of herself as a girl.

Fang Yuan stared at her emotionlessly. "There will be too many problems with slicing them off, you can wrap them up."

"Wrap what?" Bai Ning Bing asked.

"Use the bandage to wrap around your bosom and treat them like an injury. Then they will be fixed in place," Fang Yuan said.

Bai Ning Bing’s expression was helpless and anguished, sighing, "Sigh, that’s the best I can do now."

The sun gradually sank as the night sky descended.

There were streams of wild beasts coming to the lake to drink water, and the two did not dare to stay there for long.

Fang Yuan found a naturally formed cave at a nearby steep cliff. Although it was slightly cramped, it was safe. After clearing the birds living within it, the place became their temporary residence.

Few days later, Bai Ning Bing’s injuries recovered mostly.

The two continued on their journey, towards Bai Gu mountain.

But considering that mysterious demonic Gu Master, on this trip Fang Yuan was extra cautious, constantly stopping and using the Earth Communication Ear grass to check the surroundings.

On the second day of their journey, their cautiousness reaped them good rewards.

He found burnt wood under a tree, evidently caused by the demonic Gu Master.

On the third day, they examined traces of an intense battle near a stream.

The corpse of a large green python lay there, the meat fully eaten by wild beasts, leaving behind only a skeleton.

The ground was full of its scales, and the stream even moved in a new path, after many trees were broken and chopped down.

Fang Yuan observed for a while, his tone relaxing, "That demonic Gu Master once fought an intense battle here with the green python. This is a hundred beast king green python. To undergo such a fight, it seems that this demonic Gu Master also has Rank three cultivation."

But even so, Fang Yuan did not want to meet with this demonic Gu Master. He would rather deal with unintelligent wild beasts or Gu Masters.

Gu Masters have intelligence, and would use every bit of strength wisely. A Rank three demonic Gu Master has much greater threat to Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing compared to the Frenzy needle bee.

But things do not go according to wishes, and on the afternoon of that day, the two found traces of the demonic Gu Master once again.

"This demonic Gu Master is injured. There is some flesh that was cut away, on the ground here, so it seems the Gu Master got poisoned," Fang Yuan said.

On Earth, there are no poisonous pythons. But in here, they were extremely common.

Upon hearing so, Bai Ning Bing’s eyes shone brightly.

Undeniably this was good news. The weaker the demonic Gu Master, the more advantageous it is for them.

For the next few days, the trace left behind by the demonic Gu Master increased.

With his 500 years of experience, Fang Yuan deduced that they were getting closer towards the injured demonic Gu Master.

"Be extra careful, I can deduce that this Gu Master’s injury is getting more severe, and the green python’s poison has severely infected his/her body. But because of this, a demonic Gu Master’s attitude would easily become more extreme," Fang Yuan reminded Bai Ning Bing.

Battle would definitely be handled by Bai Ning Bing. Fang Yuan’s Rank one initial stage cultivation is useless.

The greatest advantage now was that the enemy was out in the open, while Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were hidden.

The two moved with even more vigilance than before.

They moved even more slowly, and moved with less distance than before.

Eventually, on one afternoon, Fang Yuan opened his eyes, keeping the roots coming out of his ears, "I found that demonic Gu Master! That person is in that cave, at their last breath!"

Just earlier, he heard the sound of human breathing in that cave.

"Strike while the enemy is weak!" Bai Ning Bing aspired to battle, revealing ruthlessness in her eyes.

But she was stopped by Fang Yuan.

"Be patient. We do not need to strike. With this situation, in just a few days she will die of poison."

"I see." Bai Ning Bing’s killing intent reduced.

But at this time.

"The two outside, why bother hiding. I’ve already found you." A weak voice came from the cave.

Hearing this, it was clear that the demonic Gu Master was female.

Fang Yuan’s expression changed, immediately retreating.

"Don’t you want my primeval stones, my Gu worms?" The voice came from the cave again.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing moved even more quickly.

Although the other party was weak, her tone was firm. There was definitely some traps put in place that allowed her to be fearless.

Moreover, no one is foolish enough to risk it out with a dying person.

"Leaving after coming here? Hehe, there’s no such easy way out, you shall all stay!" Suddenly, a body came out of the cave.

"All up to you." Fang Yuan’s body flickered, hiding his presence.

Bai Ning Bing clicked her tongue, activating the Sky Canopy Gu and summoning the Chainsaw Golden Centipede, engaging the enemy.

The two fought for three rounds, and the demonic Gu Master was suppressed.

She was a middle-aged woman without shoes, having large feet and thick black fur growing on her soles. Her face and limbs had a peculiar green color; it was caused by the green python’s poison.

After a moment, the demonic female Gu Master gradually could not contest. Suddenly, she stepped the ground firmly and jumped back into the cave.

Bai Ning Bing chased after relentlessly.

"Don’t chase her!" Fang Yuan suddenly reminded, but did not make it in time.

Bam!

A loud explosion occurred right under Bai Ning Bing’s feet as her entire body was blown away.

Translator’s Thoughts

Skyfarrow Skyfarrow

Hi guys. Just a quick update to explain, but lately I had some serious issues in real life. Not something I can talk about here... but you can ask me in Discord if you really want. Hopefully it will be stable soon and I’ll update more in future.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Rocks and fragments flew, as smoke rose into the air.

Bai Ning Bing was sent flying to the ground, but with a jump, she stood up again.

She had the protection of the Sky Canopy Gu and was uninjured, but the Sky Canopy Gu in her aperture took the impact, her white armor fading by at least 30%.

"What the fuck?" Bai Ning Bing cursed, concentrating and looking over.

The explosion site had turned into a two to three metre crater.

Inside the cave, the demonic female Gu Master laughed smugly, "Good! Even if I didn’t kill you this time, come at me again if you have the guts, little woman!"

"Hmph," Bai Ning Bing snorted. Although she was furious, she was not an impulsive person.

During the earlier explosion, although the Sky Canopy Gu protected her, if she took a few more hits, the Sky Canopy Gu would have been destroyed.

"What was that earlier? An explosion suddenly burst from the ground, so if I left the ground, would I be able to avoid such an attack?" Bai Ning Bing thought in her heart. She was not stupid, although naive and pure in some areas, and her battle instincts and wits were still at genius level.

"I do not have a flying Gu, and if I leap I am bound to touch the ground, no, I do not have to attack. This person’s words earlier was trying to incite me to attack, hehe."

Thinking so, Bai Ning Bing laughed darkly, "Do you think you are safe if you hide in the cave? I just have to camp here, you will come out eventually."

"Hahaha, then wait all you want. I have prepared a large amount of food, and you are vulnerable to the weather outside, so let’s see who will outlast the other!" The Demonic female Gu Master retorted.

Bai Ning Bing laughed coldly, for the longer they dragged, the more beneficial it was for her. Because this demonic female Gu Master was poisoned by the green python, she would get weaker as time passed.

But at this time, Fang Yuan cupped his fist at the demonic female Gu Master. "We met by coincidence in the wild, we are purely passing by. Sigh, making things difficult for you, is the same as making life hard for ourselves. I hope we do not meet again. Farewell!"

Saying so, he turned around and left.

"Go where? She is only a Rank three Gu Master, as long as we grasp that explosion method, we are assured to win!" Bai Ning Bing frowned.

Fang Yuan snorted, "You are also Rank three, but I am Rank one. Let’s hurry on the journey, stop creating so much troubles. Better safe than sorry."

Bai Ning Bing was stunned, but quickly understood Fang Yuan was acting. Although she did not know what he was planning, with her understanding of him, she decided to cooperate with him, pretending to be angry, "You are always so cowardly, sigh, nevermind, I’ll spare your life."

She looked at the demonic female Gu Master deeply, not hiding her killing intent. Soon after, she followed Fang Yuan into the woods, out of the demonic female Gu Master’s field of vision.

After they got enough distance, Bai Ning Bing broke the silence, "That explosion technique of hers is not a problem. When she fought me earlier, she did not use it. Only when she stepped into the cave and I got into range did the explosion occur. I’m guessing she buried the Gu ahead of time, and cannot move it. We can lure a group of wild beasts and use them to test out her traps."

These words fully displayed Bai Ning Bing’s talent for battle.

But Fang Yuan laughed, asking instead, "Then what comes next?"

Bai Ning Bing was stunned.

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes, his eyes shining brightly, "According to what you said, luring a group of wild beasts to test her traps, so what? Forcing her into a dead end, once she knows she has no chance to survive, she will risk her life to battle, at least bringing one of us with her. Even if we survive, we will suffer losses."

"Plus, even if we defeat her, she will carry the thought of ’not leaving anything valuable to us’, and destroy all her Gu worms. For a Gu Master to destroy his own Gu worms, it only takes a thought. We have no method to prevent it, so after we kill her, we won’t get any Gu worms. What benefit is there to us?"

Bai Ning Bing frowned.

Earlier, they had guarded against this demonic Gu Master, afraid of getting ambushed by her, it was to protect themselves. But once they found out that she was not too strong, their intentions changed completely—

It was to kill this weakened demonic Gu Master, and take her Gu worms, strengthening themselves!

Wild Gu worms were of all types, but those with suitable ranks and were easy to feed were few. A Gu Master’s Gu worms were all carefully selected, considering all aspects. If they can be obtained, it would be much better than capturing wild Gu worms.

But very few people can obtain Gu worms after killing their enemies.

Other than dying in battle, Gu Masters just need one thought to order the Gu worm to destroy itself. Many of those defeated have enough time to react, and would not leave their Gu worms to the mortal enemies that kill them. It would not be hard to kill this demonic Gu Master. But to take all her Gu worms, it would be difficult.

"Don’t you have a Plunder Gu?" Bai Ning Bing asked.

"One Plunder Gu can have little effect. Dealing with wild beasts is still fine, but against Gu Masters, to succeed we need to fulfill harsh conditions." Fang Yuan shook his head.

Bai Ning Bing suddenly thought of something, worried. "If we leave like this and end up allowing her to escape easily, what would we do then?"

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, saying confidently, "In the short period, she will not escape."

Righteous Gu Masters, either clan or sect-based, would receive a degree of nurturing, and had higher quality.

Conversely, demonic Gu Masters were often uneven in quality.

Some were traitors of the righteous path, thus these people have been trained and have Gu Master foundations. However, some were farmers or hunters that obtained a chance to awaken their aperture, obtaining some inheritance and were considered half-baked.

"This demonic female Gu Master has a rough accent and poor fighting tactics. She does not have enough survival experience either. Everywhere she goes, she leaves behind traces, and even after getting injured, she does not conceal the blood traces. I see that her body is tough and healthy, having large hands and feet. She is most likely a farmer, only lucky to have gotten an inheritance."

Fang Yuan continued analyzing, "That explosion earlier should be a Rank two grass Gu that she buried in advance, called the Charred Thunder Potato. No matter who steps on it, an explosion will occur. A farmer peasant, how much knowledge can she have? Getting python poison and being unable to cure it, with her worsening injuries, she feels frightened and unsafe, thus she subconsciously planted many Charred Thunder Potatoes in front of the cave."

"If we force her, she might do some extreme things. But if we leave on purpose, she will have a breather and temporarily relax her emotions. She might even suspect whether or not did we truly leave. There are dangers outside, and she might encounter us. Meanwhile, those Charred Thunder Potatoes give her the greatest assurance. Thus in this short period, she is not going to leave."

Bai Ning Bing was expressionless, listening quietly.

As much as she denied it, she had to agree with Fang Yuan’s analysis. What he said made sense, almost like he could see the events before him; she could not compare to him!

"You analysed well, but she has poison on her, there is no way to drag. She will eventually leave the cave," Bai Ning Bing retorted.

Fang Yuan nodded, pointing at his right ear, "Thus, we have to surveil her."

His Earth Communication Ear grass Gu, although only Rank two, had much greater range than most Rank three Gu worms.

Bai Ning Bing shook her head. "Hmph, your decision has problems too. Activating the Earth Communication Ear grass requires continuous primeval essence expenditure. Even if you have the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus and can recover primeval essence quickly, one person’s effort is ultimately limited. You have to rest and sleep, you can’t be checking on her all the time right?"

Facing this suspicion, Fang Yuan rolled his eyes, "How come you’re becoming stupid? There is one of her and two of us."

Gu worms could be lent, so they could use the Earth Communication Ear grass Gu interchangeably, in intervals.

Bai Ning Bing’s expression froze, shame flashing across her eyes.

"Fuck! Such a simple issue, how could I not think of it?" She gritted her teeth, begrudging her own lowly mistake.

Fang Yuan laughed secretly.

The root of the matter was that Bai Ning Bing did not want Fang Yuan to suppress her, thus she subconsciously wanted to retort Fang Yuan as much as she could, instead causing her to lose her bearings instead.

Fang Yuan was happy to see such retorts, for each time Bai Ning Bing failed, it would cause her to be subdued further.

This submission is negligible, but it was a subtle influence, and even Bai Ning Bing herself could not detect it.

One day when she finally realizes it, she would already be under Fang Yuan’s rule.

To Fang Yuan, this demonic female Gu Master was only one target, while Bai Ning Bing was the second target.

*****

Chen Cui Hua was shellshocked.

She was originally a farmer, and one day when plowing the fields, she fell into a cave.

In the cave, she found a corpse, and became a Gu Master after receiving the inheritance out of the blue.

Gu Master!

Chen Cui Hua never thought that one day she would become one of the esteemed lord Gu Masters herself!

But after a short happiness, disaster ensued.

A mountain leopard as large as a buffalo assaulted her village with green winds surrounding its body.

The entire village was wiped out, and she was chased by the mountain leopard, but managed to escape due to her Gu worms.

After roaming the wilderness for half a year, her Gu worms died out one by one, and finally, she encountered a large python. Although she killed it, she was also poisoned as a result.

And today, she met two Gu Masters.

This was the third time she met Gu Masters. The first two taught her a painful lesson, letting her learn how to protect herself.

But she was still a half-baked Gu Master, severely lacking foundations.

Thinking of the earlier battle, she panicked.

She was not the girl’s match!

Luckily, she had buried many Charred Thunder Potatoes earlier. And thankfully, the male was meek and cowardly, choosing to leave.

Chen Cui Hua saw their bodies vanish into the forest and breathed a sigh of relief.

But she was not certain that they had truly left.

Her investigative Gu worm could allow her to see everything within 350 steps. The clarity was as if they are right in front of her.

But she did not have X-ray vision.

"I’ll wait a few days, I’ll go out after three days," Chen Cui Hua thought to herself. At this point, she had already learnt to be vigilant and patient.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

High in the sky, the winds roared.

"Die!" Lord Sky Crane screamed, using his remaining strength to turn into a white light, crashing towards First Generation Gu Yue.

"You’re too naive to think of killing me." Blood wight opened his mouth, his fangs exposed, as he charged ahead.

Bam!

A large explosion occurred, the impact pushing the two away by a long distance.

Both were injured!

" As long as the mountain remains, water continues to flow ". Junior brother, remember today’s grudge, I will repay it someday." First Generation Gu Yue laughed loudly, activating his bat wings, trying to fly away.

Suddenly a huge shadow appeared in the sky.

He raised his head, only to see that heavily injured iron beak flying crane king.

"Not dead? Damn it..." First gen Gu Yue’s expression changed.

Being intercepted by the iron beak flying crane king, Lord Sky Crane caught up and unleashed a pincer attack. Eventually, the flying crane king’s corpse fell to the ground, while blood wight was completely destroyed.

Lord Sky Crane grabbed First Generation Gu Yue’s head, floating in mid-air, after his gaze was scattered for a while, he finally regained his concentration.

He raised his head and laughed three times, and then started crying.

After venting his emotions, he flew towards Qing Mao mountain, but was suppressed by Bai Ning Bing’s self-detonation, forcing him to use the Life-burial Jade Gu, after he broke out of the ice, he frantically searched around, but only found Fang Zheng who was at his dying breath from under the ice.

The images on the wall, showed this scene truthfully.

What happened next will be skipped, it is the scenery along the path Lord Sky Crane travelled.

Immortal Crane Sect is one of the oldest sects in the Middle Continent. In practice, when a person in the sect goes out for an emergency mission, they would bring along a Gu worm that will record the process.

Regardless of whether the mission succeeds, the Gu Master will return to the mountain and report the results, and the sect will evaluate the assessment based on the events that were recorded.

Lord Sky Crane, although a sect elder, was also not freed from this rule.

However, he was too senior in authority and barely any Gu Masters had the qualification to assess him in the sect; not even the current Immortal Crane Sect leader could.

But at this point, the elderly sitting in front of Lord Sky Crane was not an ordinary person.

Supreme Elder He Feng Yang, Rank 6 Gu Master, titled Winged Crane Flying Immortal!

He was wearing a white robe with a black belt, sitting on a futon with wide sleeves.

His face looked like a youngster, smooth as jade. His eyebrows were green and long, extending to his waist. His eerie dark eyes stared at the scene in the wall, and then slowly retracted his gaze.

Lord Sky Crane stood beside him politely, not even daring to breathe loudly.

Truthfully speaking, Lord Sky Crane had been asleep for almost a thousand years, and the Crane immortal was still his junior. However, seniority was not determined by age, but by strength.

Lord Sky Crane was rank 5, and although he was only a rank away from He Feng Yang, this distance was like an entire world apart, the difference between heaven and earth.

Rank 5 are mortals, rank 6 are immortals!

"Lord Sky Crane." He Feng Yang spoke slowly, his voice as soothing as the calm river water.

"I am here." Lord Sky Crane quickly replied.

"Although you killed our sect’s traitor this time, you did not manage to retrieve the blood skull gu. Instead, you were suppressed and toyed around by two juniors..." in the room, He Feng Yang’s voice reverbed.

Lord Sky Crane’s head was hung even lower, showing signs of shame.

"However, one of them is the Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique, no surprise you got suppressed. What’s fortunate is that you tried to make amendments later. Let me ask you, the young man that you brought back, is he really the twin of the young man in the video?" He Feng Yang asked.

"I’ve already investigated, it is so. The one that escaped is his older brother Fang Yuan, the one captured is the younger brother Fang Zheng. What’s stranger is, these two are not on good terms. When I showed him the video of his brother slaughtering their clansmen, he hated his brother so much he would kill him on the spot." Lord Sky Crane laughed eerily.

He Feng Yang nodded: "It seems you have a plan, but do you have enough time?"

Lord Sky Crane’s expression changed, his face turning solemn: "Supreme elder is right. My lifespan is at its limit, I am about to die, with only a few days left to live. Even the life-burial jade gu cannot change my fate."

His situation can only be resolved by finding a lifespan gu, to solve the root problem.

But lifespan gu is hard to find, there are a few in Immortal Crane Sect, but they are not for him. They are held in the hands of the sect leader and some supreme elders.

"Thus, I have given up my lifetime’s saving and gu worms earlier, to exchange for a spirit incubating flea. I’ve brought Fang Zheng into our sect, and made him my pupil. Afterwards I will teach him, and refine the bloodkin worm. I will then incite him to kill his brother, and retrieve the blood skull gu for our Immortal Crane Sect!" Lord Sky Crane said.

He Feng Yang raised his eyebrows: "It sounds like you are confident of your plans. But, will that Fang Zheng really be manipulated by you?"

"Although he had good talent, he is after all a kid. After I die, and store my soul in the spirit incubating flea, I will accompany him to grow, and advise him in cultivation. The road has already been paved for him, all he has to do is to walk!"

Saying so, Lord Sky Crane kneeled on the ground, begging: "Please give me another chance supreme elder!"

He Feng Yang was solemn, before saying: "Nevermind, this might be your last attempt anyway."

"Thank you elder, thank you elder!" Lord Sky Crane was overjoyed.

"Go, I await your good news."

"Within twenty years, I will attain success!" Lord Sky Crane was excited and his tone was trembling, as he made his way out.

Southern borders, Wan Cheng mountain, Tie clan city.

The tall thick blackrock walls, extended thousands of li. Tie clan city was built at the upper half of the mountain, many rock houses, steel towers, lined up and extended to the mountain peak.

The sunlight shone down on people who moved about in the city; carriages, horses and crowds, showing off a scene of prosperity.

Clan leader pavilion is situated at the mountain peak, heavily defended, and have little people moving around. Patrolling groups take turns and the Gu Masters are all vigilant, with not a hint of slack.

On top of the clan leader pavillion, two people were standing.

A middle aged man with a face cold as steel, with some warmth in his eyes.

Beside him was a young girl, having a sad but determined gaze.

It was Tie Ruo Nan.

"You’ve only been back for a few days right? This is the 19th time you are asking me. I am extremely upset by your father’s death. You lost your mother early, and now your father too, but you must remember, you have me, your uncle. You are my niece, I will not put you in danger." Tie clan leader sighed.

Tie Ruo Nan’s eyes were shining, staring straight at Tie clan leader: "Uncle do you know? Although father passed away, I feel happy for him amidst my sadness. Father has spent his life eliminating evil, punishing crime. He did it, even with his injuries he did not back down. He walked on his path and finished it with resolution. And now, it is time for me to do the same."

Tie clan leader was stunned.

This moment, he could see Tie Xie Leng’s shadow in Tie Ruo Nan.

So similar, these eyes, this gaze.

In his recollection, he seemed to have returned to his younger days, with Tie Xie Leng by his side, staring at the demon suppression tower at the peak of the mountain, saying with determination: "I will bring down all crime in this world, and fill the world with justice and love! Locking all demonic Gu Masters in the demon suppression tower, even if I have to fill it up!"

The oath back then, was still echoing in his ears. But his friend is no longer around......

Seeing the two images overlap, Tie clan leader shook his head, dispelling the memories, he looked at the adamant Tie Ruo Nan with an admiring, loving, worried, and encouraging gaze: "The path that you chose is not an easy one."

TRN did not answer, but looked at the mountain peak.

On Wan Cheng mountain’s peak area, there is a majestic steel tower.

Its aura was overwhelming, like it is holding up the heavens, stepping on the mountains. The white clouds surround it like a mist, causing others to see it in a foggy image, adding a hint of mystery to the tower.

This tower is not only famous in the southern borders, but also famous all over the world, even in middle continent many people know of it.

Demon suppression tower!

The tower itself is a over three hundred metres tall, with almost a hundred floors. It was designed to be rustic, and ancient, overflowing with righteousness. Since it was built, hundreds, thousands, and even ten thousand demonic Gu Masters have been imprisoned by Tie clan.

Even Tie clan leader was not sure.

It was the symbol of righteousness, the pride of the Tie Gu Masters. It is also the resting place for many demonic cultivators, leaving behind their anguish, regret, indignance, and remorse.

Demonic Gu Masters pale when talking about it, and righteous Gu Masters dance in pride when speaking of it!

Tie Ruo Nan opened her mouth, her tone determined, like she was talking to Tie clan leader, and also herself: "Wan Cheng mountain peak has a demon suppression tower. My heart also has a demon suppression tower, this path, father could not finish walking on it, I will walk it for him!"

"I can’t hold on much longer..." Chen Cui Hua felt her head spinning, feeling sick and wanting to vomit at times. But she had nothing to vomit, and her body felt weak, as a sense of lethargy hit her.

Her plan to was hold on for three days, but a day had passed and she knew she was too optimistic.

The danger the python poison caused her was worsening. She knew she was being forced into a dead end; she needed to find a healing gu worm as soon as possible.

"God damn it, if not for those two bastards, I might’ve caught a wild gu and cured my poison already." She felt uneasy, after getting poisoned, she had been trying to find a healing gu, but amidst the large forest, filled with danger, she did not have any catching methods and have no made any progress.

Bai Ning Bing raised her dagger, cutting towards her right ear.

"Hold it." Fang Yuan stretched out his arm, grabbing Bai Ning Bing’s limb.

The sharp knife was only a millimetre away from her right ear.

To use the earth hearing ear grass, one needed to cut off their right ear and replace it. It was just a ear, nothing much, especially compared to the rewards, Bai Ning Bing did not feel any hesitation.

Demonic cultivators, were ruthless in nature; ruthless to others, and even more to themselves!

Only people like who can give up what is needed and can have a great achievement.

"No need to do so, she’s out." Fang Yuan said, starting to move.

He used the earth hearing ear grass, following Chen Cui Hua from far away.

Not long later, he heard fighting noises.

The two moved closely with the dense shrubs, following behind secretly, only to see this demonic female Gu Master fighting with a twin-headed boar.

After watching for a while, their eyes shone with excitement.

Chen Cui Hua’s situation was disastrous, her battle strength was lower than ordinary by a large margin. This twin-headed boar is a hundred beast king, having a defensive gu.

"This is a battle of attrition, we can take advantage of them."

"She really buried the charred thunder potato gu!"

"A bit strange, this Gu Master fought for so long, why isn’t her primeval essence running out?"

"It seems she has some support gu like the heavenly essence treasure lotus, or fish bubble gu etc..."

After another short while, Fang Yuan saw that the time was right, and called the stealth scales gu, handing it to Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing understood and nodded in agreement, hiding her body and getting closer secretly.

Bam!

Another explosion occurred, the twin-headed boar stepped on another charred thunder potato gu.

This time, it fell for good, never getting up again. It laid on the ground, continuing to struggle as its stomach was blown open. Its intestines started to flow out as its blood oozed out.

"This damn boar, what a thick skin. Only after so many explosions did it die!" Chen Cui Hua breathed roughly, leading against a tree, seeing darkness ahead of her.

This battle drained her last remaining energy, as extremely fatigue hit her.

The fear in her heart sustained her, preventing her from just fainting immediately.

"No, I have to hurry back to the cave, if I collapse in the wild, it will be too dangerous!"

She was about to move, when she felt wind by her ears.

"Strange, how can there be wind?" This was the last question in her lifetime.

Bai Ning Bing patiently got closer, and struck like lightning. She used the boar’s death, to cause the demonic female Gu Master to let down her guard, then killed her in one strike!

Chen Cui Hua’s brain was smashed by the chainsaw golden centipede, as her headless body plopped on the ground.

"We did it." Fang Yuan laughed heartily, walking over quickly.

Bai Ning Bing had already squatted down, her mind entering Chen Cui Hua’s aperture, slightly disappointed: "There’s only three gu in the aperture."

Gu worms that were refined by Gu Masters were slightly rigid, not as witty as wild Gu worms.

The demonic female Gu Master was dead. Her aperture started to get dark, as the three Gu worms remained inside.

But this was no problem for Fang Yuan.

"Plunder Gu!" He willed, easily retrieving these three Gu.

They were: One rice bag grass Gu, one iron thorn thistle Gu, and a charred thunder bean mother Gu.

These were not all.

Fang Yuan searched around, and found a hairy leg Gu in the demonic female Gu Master, a jumping grass Gu. Lastly he found a bookworm in her smashed brain matter.

Unfortunately, this bookworm had already been killed by Bai Ning Bing’s attack earlier.

"This bookworm has to be the inheritance item, the information inside helped her to learn many things about Gu Masters, it should have some secret recipes etc." Fang Yuan said in pity.

"Nevermind the bookworm, there’s no healing Gu in this demonic Gu Master?" Bai Ning Bing was greatly disappointed.

Fang Yuan was solemn, not speaking.

He expected her to not have a healing Gu already, since she was poisoned and if she had a healing Gu, even if it could not remove the poison, she would not be in such a bad state.

What he felt weird was, in the battle earlier, this demonic Gu Master’s performance was weird. Especially in terms of primeval essence, her recovery speed surpassed A grade, in par with the ten extreme physiques.

But she was not a ten extreme physique, only having A grade talent, and among these Gu worms, none could help recover primeval essence.

"So this is how the breasts are tied." At this time, Bai Ning Bing unfolded the demonic female Gu Master’s breast wraps.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was fixated on the silver triangle tattoo on the corpse’s breasts.

"The third watch Gu!" Fang Yuan was surprised.

" Third watch 1 Gu, what’s that?" Bai Ning Bing raised her eyebrows.

"This Gu is rank 5, able to accelerate time by three times. It is gone after one use, an expenditure type Gu. Once used on a Gu Master, it will form a silver triangle tattoo on their chest."

Soon after, Fang Yuan explained in detail.

Third watch Gu, when used on a Gu Master, caused their time to flow three times as fast.

The river of time, flowing at its pace, measured at a singular speed. To normal people, a day is a day.

But to the third watch Gu’s user, a day is akin to three days condensed into one.

Chen Cui Hua who had the third watch Gu, experienced rapid cultivation growth. When others used one day to nurture their aperture, she used three. The difference in speed is evidently seen.

There is another advantage, that is primeval essence recovery. On her, the river of time flows faster, three times of normal people. Thus, her primeval essence recover is also three times.

This is also why, in the battle earlier, her recovery was something that caught Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing by surprise.

But everything has two sides, good and bad.

With such a great effect, the third watch Gu has an equivalent weakness!

The worse was, it expended lifespan. When time flows three times as fast, her lifespan shrinks in proportion, reduced to a third of the original.

Chen Cui Hua only got her inheritance for less than a year, but to her it was almost three years.

Also, any injuries or illnesses that required time to aggravate, would intensify on her.

The green python’s poison, needed time to infiltrate her body, and worsen. When others get poisoned, they experience the worsening of poison at a daily rate. But to her, it was three days worth of worsening everyday.

This is also why the poison affected her so greatly.

"To be given this third watch Gu, it seems this woman’s inheritance is at least a rank 5 inheritance. Unfortunately, it had gone to waste, falling in the hands of such a person." Bai Ning Bing snorted, looking at the headless corpse in disdain.

In the long run, the third watch Gu’s danger is huge, shrinking the Gu Master’s life to a third. But the truth is, this Gu is very useful to a demonic Gu Master.

Demonic Gu Masters fight alone, without any clan or sect’s support. They also have to guard against the ganged attack of the righteous faction, and thus put survival as their priority.

Only living is important, everything else can be discarded.

The higher their cultivation, the greater their chances to survive.

Third watch Gu can condense a Gu Master’s life, displaying their full potential at once, like the sakura blossoms, or fireworks, shortlived but brilliance.

But without the third watch Gu, the sakura’s buds won’t grow in time, and would have been uprooted already.

"This is nothing strange, those who use the third watch Gu are all courageous and forward looking people. But this woman had a different personality, weak and meek, like dragging and have no courage to move ahead. Thus she ended up like this, it is life." Fang Yuan gave the corpse a final look, before concluding.

Bai Ning Bing’s expression was ugly.

Without a healing gu, what outcome would they face. This demonic female Gu Master was the best example.

Would this be her future as well?

Fang Yuan laughed instead, patting her shoulders, consoling: "The paths in this world are carved out by humans. Everyone has their own paths, no matter how wide others’ path is, it might not suit you. We are both walking on our own paths, what is there to worry?"

Hearing so, Bai Ning Bing’s expression froze, before lightening up, nodding: "You are right."

Fang Yuan squinted, gazing at the dense forest ahead.

After killing this demonic Gu Master, and obtaining her Gu worms, his strength increased tremendously.

But he knows that he lacked a healing Gu, and did not place his hopes in his luck.

From now on, he might get a healing Gu, or be like this demonic female Gu Master, not getting anything even until death. Or the next moment, he might get trampled by wild beasts and die, ending his ambitions.

But so what?

Stepping on his path, and continuing forward; that is all there is to do.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Really sorry about the lack of chapters lately. As some of you might know, I am Skyfarrow’s partner in translating GZR. He is experiencing some real life problems at the moment. Hopefully things get back on schedule as soon as possible. Enjoy reading this really long chapter, cheers!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Swish swish swish~

In the aperture, waves of primeval essence ebb and flow, rushing towards the surrounding aperture walls.

The sea was jade green, crashing continuously, it was rank 1 initial stage primeval essence.

Rank 1 Gu masters have green copper primeval essence, initial stage being jade, middle stage is pale green, upper stage is dark green and peak stage is black green.

The surrounding aperture walls were shining brightly; under the attack of the jade green waves, his foundation was slowly built up.

Afterwards, the white light burst, and dimmed. White light condensed with each other, forming a water-ish light ripple.

At this point, the aperture light wall turned into a water wall.

"Finally, from rank 1 initial stage to middle stage." A light excitement emerged in Fang Yuan’s heart.

Initial stage aperture walls are light walls, middle stage is water walls.

Once the water walls are created, it means Fang Yuan was back to rank 1 middle stage.

"It has been over 20 days since we killed that demonic female Gu master. During this period, I’ve been cultivating non-stop, not wasting a single minute. It is no wonder I advanced to middle stage." Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes.

"What a pity I do not have the liquor worm on me, otherwise my cultivation would be even faster."

Liquor worm can cause a Gu master’s primeval essence to be refined into one small realm higher. Using it to assist in cultivation, can achieve a greater result with less effort.

Since Fang Yuan’s rebirth, other than the Spring Autumn Cicada, the first Gu worm he got was the liquor worm.

After that, he purchased a second one and refined the two into the four flavor liquor worm.

A pity though, was that the four flavor liquor worm only works on rank 2 Gu masters, being useless to the current Fang Yuan.

The truth is, Fang Yuan had gotten three liquor worms in Qing Mao mountain. The third was from Gu Yue Yao Le’s body.

This liquor worm was kept in Fang Yuan’s hands, but after the Tie father and daughter came, to prevent himself from getting exposed, and being worried about Tie Xie Leng’s investigative methods, he destroyed the liquor worm along with his other loots.

After it happened, whether it was the right move or not, since Fang Yuan did it, he had no regrets.

Even though now, if he had kept the liquor worm, it would be use to him, but at least, during that time, it did not allow the Tie father and daughter to investigate the matter on Gu Yue Yao Le.

"If I reverse refine the four flavor liquor worm, I can get the rank 1 liquor worm, but there are many requirements to reverse refine, I cannot fulfill the conditions.

Gu masters nurture Gu, use Gu, refine Gu. For refining Gu, it is split into fusion and reverse refinement.

Fusion, is to turn low rank Gu worms into a higher rank. Reverse is the opposite.

To reverse refine the four flavor liquor worm, there are many ways. Using the prodigal son Gu, will obtain two rank 1 liquor worms. Using the revert Gu, only 1 liquor worm is obtained. The butterfly transformation Gu will get the eerie qi butterfly. Using the unpredictable Gu, what Gu is obtained will be unknown, possibly something new all together.

For Fang Yuan, the best case was the prodigal son Gu.

But prodigal Gu was rarer than the liquor worm, and was hard to obtain. Best case scenario was revert Gu.

Using revert Gu, although he will lose a liquor worm, Fang Yuan would not hesitate to do it.

Retaining the four flavor liquor worm, and wait for rank 2 cultivation, that is under a safe environment. Now that Fang Yuan was in danger all the time, everything he does has to be for survival.

The higher his cultivation rose, higher the chances to live.

Cheep Cheep Cheep~

Outside the cave, monkey screeches and footsteps could be heard.

Fang Yuan’s ears twitched, he was familiar with the owner of the footsteps.

As expected, not long after, Bai Ning Bing appeared.

Her entire body was covered in a layer of thorn clothing. This special clothing, is completely made of green vines and black sharp thorns, giving Bai Ning Bing defense and also used for attacking purposes.

To those fighting barehanded, these thorns that were as sturdy as steel would leave a lasting impression on them.

This thistle shirt, was formed by the iron thorn thistle Gu.

After killing the demonic female Gu master, Bai Ning Bing wanted this rank 3 grass Gu, requesting for it and refining it as her lifebound Gu.

"So troublesome. Every time I leave and return, I have to be so careful of those charred thunder potatoes. Can’t you bury less of them?" She said as she begrudged, staring at the ground below her, jumping around as she avoided some pitfalls.

"Better to be safe than sorry." Fang Yuan replied lightly, turning his gaze towards Bai Ning Bing’s waist.

On her waist was a string of monkeys.

These monkeys were tiny, the largest was merely arm length. They had round heads, and thick black monkey hair, smooth and shiny. What was most prominent, was the tree leaves growing on their waists.

These green leaves formed a circle, linked together around the monkey’s hip bone and butt, like a grass skirt.

These were the grass skirt monkeys.

The grass skirt monkeys were delicious, being the source of food for Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing these days.

These captured grass skirt monkeys were aware of their outcomes, struggling intensely but to no avail.

The entire cave reverbed with their cries, and horrified screams.

It was lunch time.

"Grill them, I am a little hungry." Bai Ning Bing rubbed her tummy, throwing the tied grass skirt monkeys on the ground.

"Let me prepare them first, you can grill them later. Your grilled meat tastes much better than mine." She squatted down, about to kill them.

Fang Yuan stopped her: "Let me teach you a new eating method."

Afterwards, he moved his finger, and a Gu flew out of Bai Ning Bing’s aperture with a bloody light.

The blood light landed on Fang Yuan’s palm, turning into a blood moon insignia.

It was blood moon Gu.

Fang Yuan’s palm started to glow with red light.

Although the blood moon Gu was rank 3, Fang Yuan was not using it to attack, thus he could still barely control it.

Bai Ning Bing did not know his intentions, her blue eyes staring intensely.

Only to see Fang Yuan stretching his hand, raising a grass skirt monkey. He grabbed its neck, causing its head to be unable to move.

Soon after, the palm shining with red light landed on the monkey’s head, and circled one round.

Back then, he used the moonlight Gu to open the gambling rocks, now he used the blood moon Gu to cut the monkey’s head.

After one round, Fang Yuan’s primeval essence hit rock bottom.

As the red light vanished from his palm, Fang Yuan smiled as he grabbed the monkey’s head, pulling it, and opened its skull.

The white monkey brain was revealed from within.

The grass skirt monkey struggled profusely, screaming in utter pain, its shrill screams echoed in the cave.

But Fang Yuan has the strength of two boars, his arms like steel, not moving at all. The grass skirt monkey’s limbs were tender and did not have claws, unable to harm Fang Yuan at all even if it tried.

"Have a taste of this fresh monkey brain." Saying so, Fang Yuan handed a spoon to Bai Ning Bing.

"Like this, raw?" Bai Ning Bing looking at the white brain with some blood traces, hesitated.

Fang Yuan smiled, demonstrating.

He placed the spoon into the monkey brain, scooping and placing it into his mouth, as he swallowed, the brain flowed down his throat.

At that moment, the grass skirt monkey's screams intensified, its body spazzing like it was electrocuted.

Bai Ning Bing tried too, scooping the monkey brain and placing it into her mouth.

At once, a fragrant grass smell spread from her tongue, without a tint of blood. Like the texture of beancurd, with just a little strength, the entire monkey brain melts in your mouth, with a little sweetness, giving a refreshing taste, in the entire mouth.

Her throat gulped, swallowing this monkey brain. Her blue eyes shone with bright light, crystal clear, as the fairy like face showed an enjoying expression.

"So incredibly delicious!" The young girl exclaimed.

"Only this grass skirt monkey can have such a taste. Their brain is a natural delicacy." Fang Yuan said as he scooped another into his mouth.

He advanced to middle stage, and it calls for a mini celebration, this monkey brain is a good reward.

Bai Ning Bing laughed heartily, moving faster than before, swallowing the second mouthful.

This grass skirt monkey whose skull was cut open, after a temporary madness, was at death's door. Its bright jewel like eyes had already turned dim.

Other grass skirt monkeys seeing their companions' state, struggling like crazy trying to escape.

Under the restrain of the ropes, their struggles were futile, only allowing them to roll around on the ground.

Eating this monkey brain feels like eating ice cream on earth, the two worked together and very quickly finished this monkey brain.

"One more, one more." Bai Ning Bing did not have enough, licking her lips and waving the spoon, demanding.

Fang Yuan's primeval essence had recovered to 90% already, he did the same thing and cut open another skull.

At once, the two continued their meal, satisfied. In the cave, the echoes of the screaming grass skirt monkeys were shrill and painfully heard.

After eating the monkey brains, they grilled the monkey meat.

The monkey meat of the grass skirt monkey were fresh and succulent, especially their breast meat. The entire taste was like fish grilled on bamboo leaves.

Rice bag grass.

Fang Yuan willed, and a green light shot out of his aperture.

The light landed on the ground, growing green buds.

In a few breath’s time, the bud grew into leaves, and the leaves expanded, turning into vines. The vines extended, and after covering ten metres, a few branches grew large leaves.

These leaves looked like buckets. Firstly, only a finger could fit. But eventually, it became fist size, bowl size, and finally ripe.

Bai Ning Bing meticulously plucked a leaf.

Opening the leaves at the top, rice could be seen inside. Large plump kernels, perfectly white.

Bai Ning Bing raised her head and opened her mouth, pouring a mouthful of rice into her mouth, after chewing, she ate some monkey meat to add some flavor.

"Eating till full is satisfaction." She exclaimed.

"How are those grass skirt monkeys." Fang Yuan asked.

Bai Ning Bing’s mind came back: "No issue if we do not enter that forest deeply. But once we do, three monkey kings show up. The wine you want to get is at the most central area of the forest, it will not be easy to obtain."

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Another chapter! Next one will be on the weekends! Enjoy!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In this world, humans weren’t the only ones who knew how to brew wines.

The earliest records of wine came from the legend of Ren Zu.

Ren Zu’s two eyes turned into his eldest son Verdant Great Sun and daughter Desolate Ancient Moon.

Verdant Great Sun was always with Desolate Ancient Moon, and this close association created feelings towards his own sister. However, Desolate Ancient Moon refused his wooing.

Verdant Great Sun was annoyed because of this, and knew he needed some help, thus he asked the Wisdom Gu.

At first, the Wisdom Gu ignored him and avoided him as much as it could. But Verdant Great Sun kept on persevering, and the Wisdom Gu couldn’t endure this annoyance any more, so it told him a way - "In the east dwells a group of honey peach monkeys. Drink the wine brewed by them and come find me."

Thus, Verdant Great Sun went to the east and drank the wine.

The wine brewed by the honey peach monkeys was fruit wine. And ever since Verdant Great Sun drank the wine and returned, his face had a rosy flush. He smacked his lips as he recalled the taste: "So, wine is sweet."

The Wisdom Gu smiled and said: "In the west lies a group of psychic monkeys. Go taste the wine brewed by them."

The wine brewed by psychic monkeys was bitter wine. Verdant Great Sun went to the west and drank the wine; since then, his tongue had a yellowish-brown hue to it. He recalled the taste with a bitter expression: "So, wine can also be bitter."

Wisdom Gu said to him again: "Wine is both bitter and sweet, love is the same and human lives are even more so. At the north dwells a group of vajra monkeys. They also brew wine, go taste it."

The vajra monkeys brewed strong wine.

Verdant Great Sun enjoyed this wine very much, and drank till he was dead drunk.

He felt this wine was really to his taste, and wanted to drink even more after getting drunk. He drank from the bowl at first before trying to drink it directly from the wine jar.

Finally, he started throwing up. The wine started showings its effects, making him feel an unbearable pain.

He felt the insides of his body was on fire, as if lava was flowing through them.

"It’s too hot!" He screamed. All the fire flowed in reverse towards his head and his hair started burning. From then on, his hair burned endlessly like fire.

When Verdant Great Sun woke up, he saw the Wisdom Gu looking at him.

"What did you think of the strong wine?" The Wisdom Gu asked.

Verdant Great Sun heaved a sigh: "I understand now, no matter how good the wine is, you will vomit it out if you drink too much; everything should be taken with moderation."

The Wisdom Gu laughed out loudly: "In the north dwells a group of Skywater monkeys. Their wine is also quite good, go taste it."

Skywater monkeys’ wine was clear wine and was completely opposite of the strong wine.

Verdant Great Sun lightly tasted the wine, and the moment he did so, he completely forgot all his worries and felt like he was floating in the air, with a hazy and intoxicated look in his eyes.

The Wisdom Gu again asked him about his experience. He lightly waved his hands: "Having known the joys of wine, I will not pass it on to those who are sober."

The Wisdom Gu chuckled and left quietly....

Thus, humans weren’t the first species to brew wine, rather it was the monkeys who were ahead of the humans.

Ordinary monkey groups all knew how to brew wine.

The wines were different from one monkey group to another, with all kinds of taste. However, humans collectively called the wine brewed by the monkeys as monkey wine.

Fang Yuan had chosen this cave to rest because he sensed the sign of the breakthrough in his cultivation and stopped at this cave to concentrate on breaking through the bottleneck. Another reason was for the monkey wine.

The higher the rank of the Gu worms, the more food they consumed and at the same time, the period for their feeding increased.

Fang Yuan had made sufficient preparations, but there was a limit to the storage capacity of the tusita flower; after the consumption in this whole journey, there was some space cleared up which would be more than enough to store some monkey wine.

Wine had other uses as well - disinfecting the wounds and warming the body. The reverse refinement of four flavors liquor worm also required wine as an auxiliary ingredient. Even if the conditions for the reverse refinement weren’t met, having wine as a backup food for the four flavors liquor worm was good enough.

However, getting the monkey wine wasn’t easy.

This grass skirt monkey groups were hundred beasts group but their scale was close to that of the thousand beasts group, and had 3 hundred beast monkey kings.

Monkeys were a united bunch and faced their enemies in groups. Bai Ning Bing might be a rank three peak stage Gu master, but she was alone and trying to brute force her way through, would only lead to disaster.

And although Fang Yuan had advanced to rank one middle stage, the amount of help his advancement could give was next to nothing in this situation.

However, Fang Yuan was determined to get the monkey wine and Bai Ning Bing was worried about this.

"So, we need to use our brains, follow me." Fang Yuan stood up and patted Bai Ning Bing’s shoulder. He carefully stepped on the ground, avoiding the buried Charred Thunder Potato , and walked out of the cave.

Outside the cave were lush trees, bright sunlight, with the bird songs and fragrance of flowers in the air.

In moments, the two neared the territory of the monkey groups.

Fang Yuan carefully observed and finally chose a sloped area.

He surveyed the area from the higher grounds before nodding his head in satisfaction. He stepped around on the ground and said: "Let’s dig here."

After enough time passed for an incense stick to burn, this sloped area that faced the sun was dug out by the two, with a depth of thirty feet and a diameter of fifty feet.

Charred Thunder Potato Mother Gu.

Fang Yuan crouched on the bottom of this pit, and summoned the gu with a thought.

This gu resembled a potato, with uneven surface and tiny little holes all over it. Regardless of its appearance, it was a genuine rank three gu.

"My primeval essence won’t be enough, I will lend it to you." Fang Yuan handed the Charred Thunder Potato Mother Gu to Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing held the gu and poured her primeval essence to it; soon, green sprouts sprouted out from those tiny little holes in the potato mother gu’s surface.

The sprouts grew rapidly, blossomed and bore fruit.

After several breaths of time, the finger thick dark green fruit was fully matured. The sprout withered and came falling down with the fruit on Bai Ning Bing’s hands.

Fang Yuan took these dark green fruits and carefully filtered through them; removing the bad, dead or empty shells. After the selection, there were less than one-third of the fruits left.

These fruits were the Charred Thunder Potato Gu, a rank two gu. Once they were buried in the ground, they grew with the help of the fertility of the soil, and as long as any living beings stepped near it, the vibration would cause the Charred Thunder Potato Gu to self-detonate.

Fang Yuan held one of the fruits and refined it instantly. As he pinched it in between his fingers, he poured his green copper primeval essence towards it; the Charred Thunder Potato Gu started giving off a faint green light and slowly hovered up.

With a shift of his mind, the Charred Thunder Potato Gu quickly drilled into the ground.

Fang Yuan deliberately buried it deep on the ground, stopping only when the potato gu was buried an arm’s length into the ground.

The primeval sea in his aperture rapidly decreased as the surrounding fertility of the soil gathered towards the Charred Thunder Potato Gu. In Fang Yuan’s perception, this tiny grass gu instantly grew up to a fist sized potato.

This was a matured Charred Thunder Potato Gu which could explode with even a slight vibration.

Bai Ning Bing marvelled at this scene: "Looks like that demonic path female Gu master buried the Charred Thunder Potato Gu near the surface of the earth, making it easy to self-detonate. The way you buried it, it should not explode even if I step above it, right?"

"Naturally." Fang Yuan replied and continued on his work.

Bai Ning Bing’s mouth twitched, Fang Yuan didn’t reply her properly, and with her proud demeanour, she didn’t question anymore, but rather concentrated her gaze and began to ponder upon it herself.

After being with Fang Yuan for such a long time, she knew Fang Yuan never made useless moves.

Fang Yuan stood up only after burying this layer of the pit; he wiped the sweat on his forehead before calling Bai Ning Bing to bury the pit together.

But after just covering the pit for a bit, when the bottom of the pit was raised by fifteen feet, Fang Yuan ordered to stop, then he continued burying another Charred Thunder Potato Gu.

Bai Ning Bing immediately realized Fang Yuan’s plan upon seeing this.

"So it was like that. Charred Thunder Potato Gu is only a rank two gu and self-detonation of just one has a limited power. By burying them like this, once they explode, even thousand beast kings might not get off easy. But how will you lure those three monkey kings here?"

Charred Thunder Potato Gu was a offensive gu, but it couldn’t be moved, which greatly lowered its practical value.

"How difficult can that be? At the opportune time, we will just capture two to three young grass skirt monkeys and taste their brains here. At that time, their miserable screeches will definitely attract the furious monkey groups. It will only be ordinary monkey groups at first which you will be able to block and fend off. Then it should be those three monkey kings." Fang Yuan replied while burying the grass Gu.

Bai Ning Bing couldn’t help nodding her head.

Wild beasts were wild beasts, possessing limited intelligence. Fang Yuan’s plan might be very rough, but it was absolutely practical.

"As long as we kill the three monkey kings, getting the monkey wine will be as easy as a pie. Of course, it will be even better if we can take the Gu worms on those monkey kings." Bai Ning Bing mulled over it.

Following this, they spent the whole afternoon in this pit.

Bai Ning Bing produced the Charred Thunder Potato Gu continuously, after which Fang Yuan would personally bury them into the ground, and then the two would bury that layer of soil. After one layer of soil was another layer of soil, till the pit was filled to the surface.

The two were drenched in sweat. Fortunately, Fang Yuan possessed the strength of two boars and Bai Ning Bing had also fully cultivated the strength of one crocodile.

However, the next day, Fang Yuan wasn’t showing any signs of stopping and continued to dig out another pit.

Bai Ning Bing was puzzled by it.

Fang Yuan replied: "Just one pit isn’t enough of a guarantee, there should always be backup plans. Being a bit more prepared is always a good thing."

Like this, in the following three days, Bai Ning Bing finally became aware of Fang Yuan’s close to perverted ’cautiousness’.

They had dug no less than five pits and buried great numbers of Charred Thunder Potato Gu. Naturally, the scale of the first pit was the greatest.

Due to all these preparations, the grass skirt monkey plan went by extremely smoothly.

The monkey groups were all defeated with just two pitfalls.

Out of the three monkey kings, two died and one was injured; the injured monkey king escaped with the remaining monkey groups. The dead monkey kings were blasted to pieces, the Gu worms on them didn’t survive.

Fang Yuan stored great amounts of monkey wine till the tusita flower couldn’t store anymore.

The amount of wine was enough to reverse-refine the four flavors liquor worm. There wouldn’t be a problem in feeding the liquor worm for at least two years. And if they came across a caravan, these monkey wine could also be sold for good price.

"Before we go on, we need to clean the battlefield and fill up the two exploded pits."

"Is there a necessity for such cautiousness?" Bai Ning Bing felt pain whenever she thought of the pitfalls, now.

Fang Yuan glanced at her before saying one sentence which made Bai Ning Bing obediently work-

"Did you forget how we chased that demonic path female Gu master?"

It was by relying on the tracks left by the demonic path female Gu master on her way.

Those pitfalls that you dug, don’t end up burying yourself with it!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

One chapter today, another tomorrow. Enjoy! Leave a comment if you want double spaces or single spaces between sentences.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Bai Gu mountain, I am finally here." Fang Yuan sighed as he stared at the white mountain from a slope.

Bai Ning Bing was beside him, standing silently.

The two were in rags with tiredness showing all over their faces.

Just earlier, they had escaped from the Steel Rage Boars family of five.

Steel Rage Boars were a peculiar beast group, having small numbers and moved around in families of less than ten members. But any mature Steel Rage Boars were at least a hundred beast king.

In the family of five that was chasing after Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing - Grandpa boar was a thousand beast king, while daddy boar and mother boar were hundred beast kings, and even their son and daughter had rank 1 Gu worms in them.

It has been 5 days since they stole the monkey wine. After a long and arduous journey, Bai Gu mountain was finally in reach.

The southern border was full of mountains, ordinary hills were not called mountains, only when they were at least ten thousand feet can they be qualified to be called a mountain.

Bai Ning Bing stood on the slope, staring at the faraway mountain.

This was her first time seeing Bai Gu mountain.

There were many hills surrounding the Qing Mao mountain. But this Bai Gu mountain was like a solitary general, rising high above the ground while the surroundings were flat, and the scenery around it was deathly white.

This white, was not the snow-like white, but more of a bone-white color.

Bai Gu mountain, as the name implied, every rock on the mountain were made of bones. People called it bone rocks.

Bai Gu mountain was not an absolute dead area, there were many special vegetation and large numbers of bone beasts living here. At the same time there were many bone type wild Gu worms.

Bai Ning Bing looked and looked, frowning.

Any tall mountain and long river, were the condensation ground of primeval essence. Bai Gu mountain was uninhabited, a completely wild mountain. There were many wild beasts, Gu worms and fatal plants. This is such a dangerous place yet Fang Yuan insists on entering the mountain, what intentions does he have?

Or rather, what thing was there that deeply attracted him?

Fang Yuan was flipping through his memories at this moment.

Bai Gu mountain was still a wild mountain now, without any human inhabitants. But this situation will change completely 10 years later.

A large size village will move their base here and develop.

This clan was named Bai, the Bai village.

In the future, with Bai Gu mountain as their center, they would become the overlord of the surrounding thousand miles of land.

What Fang Yuan remembers most clearly, is not the rise of the Bai village’s power, because in this world, a single person’s strength can be above a group’s.

Rather, he was thinking of a pair of twins in the Bai village.

Bai Sheng and Bai Hua.

This pair of siblings discovered a cave by accident during a test at Bai Gu mountain’s back area, when they were eighteen.

In this cave, they activated an inheritance; it was a complete inheritance of a rank four Righteous Gu Master.

This Gu Master’s name was unknown, only his title was left behind--- "Flesh Bone Lord".

Bai Sheng and Bai Hua benefited greatly from this, and became the twin stars of the righteous path after getting the inheritance. A hundred years later, they both rose to rank five, taking over Bai village.

The strength of two rank five Gu Masters pushed the clan’s strength to an apex.

"The gu worms in a complete inheritance would cover all six aspects of attack, healing, defense, movement, storage and investigation. After getting this inheritance, I will be able to hold my own and have the ability to advance or retreat."

Earlier when Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing escaped from Qing Mao mountain, their gu worms were not well-rounded because of their low cultivation; they were like a boat moving against the tides, moving up the cliff. With just a little bad luck, they would be in danger.

After a tough struggle, their chance came, and they killed a heavily injured demonic female Gu Master. By taking her gu which included the rice bag gu and jumping grass gu, they could barely get by.

But they still had weaknesses.

Not only due to the lack of healing gu, but also because of their low cultivation.

Even if Fang Yuan advanced to rank 1 middle stage, so what? Green copper primeval essence was still green copper primeval essence.

What he was relying on now was his A grade talent and the heavenly essence treasure lotus’ recovery speed to sustain his consumption.

But to be strict, his battle strength was negligible. If not for Bai Ning Bing he might have died to the crocodiles during the battle in the beach.

He was able to get this far due to Bai Ning Bing.

But relying on others could never compare to relying on oneself.

"If I can get the Bai Gu mountain inheritance, many problems would be easily resolved." Fang Yuan thought to himself.

Firstly it was the jade bones Gu. With this Gu, the bones in his body would cast away the brittleness of mortal bones, and become more firm and tougher. His current body can only sustain the strength of two boars, but after he used the jade bones Gu, he would be able to add the strength of a crocodile on top of this.

After that was a healing Gu, Fang Yuan remembered this inheritance has a very famous rank three healing Gu, ’flesh white bones’. In his previous life, it was received by Bai Hua, causing her to become a famous healing Gu Master.

Finally, it was the one Fang Yuan ranked as the most important, "bone flesh unity Gu."

This Gu was the Bone Flesh Lord’s innovation, the only one in the world. This Gu’s incredible usage riled up many large forces in the southern borders, in his previous life.

If gu worms were to be classified according to their use, they could be divided into seven categories.

Attack, Defense, Healing, Investigation, Storage, Movement and Cultivation.

Liquor worm, four flavor liquor worm, man-beast burial Gu, relic Gu, or heavenly essence treasure lotus - they were all under cultivation category.

And this bone flesh unity Gu was a mystical Gu under the cultivation category.

Similar to yin yang rotation Gu, it was a pair of Gu, used on two Gu Masters. It could let the two Gu Masters undergo dual cultivation 1 and advance their cultivation together, getting greater effects with less effort.

"If I can obtain the bone flesh unity Gu, with Bai Ning Bing’s help, I can advance my cultivation quickly. My cultivation will be shocking after I reach rank three stage! Especially in early stages, its effects will be even better than the liquor worm. I must get it no matter what!"

Fang Yuan glanced at Bai Ning Bing through the corner of his eyes.

Bai Ning Bing realized nothing, still staring at Bai Gu mountain.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly in his heart. When they were about to move out, a few silhouettes suddenly flew towards them.

"Eh? Righteous Gu Masters!" Both Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were taken aback.

A total of four Gu Masters were approaching them. When they were a hundred steps away, they landed on the ground and moved towards Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

The leader was an old Gu Master, giving off a rank three aura while the remaining three were all rank two.

Their uniform were the same and their movements were in synergy, showing the signs of an elite group.

"How can we encounter righteous Gu Masters in this desolate mountain range?"

"Gu Masters and wild beasts are completely different, even though I am rank three peak stage, with the chainsaw golden centipede’s razors dulled and Fang Yuan as a burden, I might not be their match. We’re in trouble now..."

The four Gu Masters got closer amidst Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing’s bitter sighs.

Dusk.

The last few rays of the sun were like blood, and crows screeched as they flew back to their nests.

Tie Ao Tian walked in the center of the group with a cold expression.

There were eight people in their group when they had set out of Qing Mao mountain, each were an expert of the clan. But now only three of his group remained.

Tie Ao Tian’s heart bled when he thought of the sacrifices.

The losses were too severe!

This was way out of his expectations. The losses were not because their cultivations were insufficient, but because their luck was too bad!

After finding out Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing’s traces, they started to move along Huang Long river. But Huang Long river flowed too rapidly, leaving behind barely any traces. Even if they used gu worms and had investigative experts, they still deviated from the path.

With no choice, they had to move against the current, spending a lot of time before discovering Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing’s raft.

However, troubles came soon after.

They encountered a large number of six legged crocodiles and were attacked.

To be honest they were pretty unlucky, this beach was the breeding ground of the six legged crocodiles, and after it was destroyed, the six legged crocodiles that dominated the area were wiped out.

Beast groups were also split up into different forces. After the original owner died, this place became free for all, and many surrounding groups of six legged crocodiles competed for it.

Just when they were about to take control of this area, Tie clan’s group arrived on the shore.

"What thing dares to invade our territory?"

"This land belongs to us six legged crocodiles!"

"Snatching territory from us, you’re asking for it..."

The territorial concept of wild beasts was not to be trifled with. Thus, a huge battle broke out, and under the united attacks of two groups of thousand beast groups and three groups of hundred beast groups, the Tie clan group lost two members and were forced to escape.

Fang Yuan’s methods of removing traces were very experienced. Thus, their investigations did not make much progress.

With the help of Gu worms, they eventually found out the direction Fang Yuan was headed to.

But then, a colorful nightmare descended.

The Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant descended from the sky, staring at them and thinking of them as food.

Even now, the entire escape process was deeply buried in Tie Ao Tian’s heart. The image of the Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant became his nightmare, waking him up from his sleep every night.

Xuan Yuan Divine Pheasant took away three of his companions’ lives. Among them were their most professional investigative Gu Master, and even a rank three defensive Gu Master.

Truly insane losses.

Right now, the Gu Master in charge of investigation was a half-baked one.

Even with such a loss, Tie Ao Tian did not think of giving up.

He was the fourth young master of Tie clan, with A grade aptitude and carried the hopes and dreams of the clan since young. He cultivated intensely, inheriting the iron will personality of the Tie clansmen.

Reinforcing Tie Xue Leng and his daughter was his first mission out of the village.

But he only managed to save Tie Ruo Nan, and the divine investigator was sacrificed. This was a great contrast to his original intention.

However, if he caught the demonic bastard that got the blood sea inheritance and take revenge for Tie Xue Leng, it would be a great success.

Such a merit would turn into his asset when vying for the clan leader position in the future, getting him more support from the clansmen.

He was not worried about the strength of the demonic bastards. In the process of chasing them, they had discovered from the traces that the two had limited battle strength, or maybe they had suffered some injuries, only having the collective strength of one rank three Gu Master.

"Even though I lost many companions, I am a rank three Gu Master, and so is Tie Dao Ku. With two other rank two Gu Masters to assist, our strength dominates those two. Once we capture the demonic bastards, the loss of manpower will turn into proof of my "iron will" and "never give up" traits!" Tie Ao Tian’s eyes shone with determination.

"Fourth young master, we have found some traces ahead, it seems the direction we are heading is not wrong!" At this moment, the investigative Gu Master reported.

"Oh? Quickly bring me there."

After the time taken to drink a cup of tea, two holes were dug open, revealing corpses of a large number of grass skirt monkey.

"These grass skirt monkeys have died for less than a week, it seems we are catching up to those two!" Tie Dao Ku said in joy.

Tie Ao Tian breathed in deeply, his mood was suddenly lifted!

"Finally, we’re nearing the end." He clenched his fists, walking forward excitedly.

He stared at the beautiful sky, the night lights shone on his young face, reflecting brightly in his eyes.

All his patience and efforts were not in vain, he was finally getting the results!

"Although the sun is setting, I can see hopes and the future from it..." He sighed in his heart, suddenly having the mood to ascend this slope, and enjoy this beautiful moment.

The few Gu Masters near him, gazed at him with admiration.

"Fourth young master is indeed fourth young master!"

"On this journey, we had thought of giving up, but fourth young master persevered alone, and now he is about to get the fruits of his labor."

"In fourth young master, I can see the clan’s hopes, and a bright future ahead."

"I swear I will only follow fourth young master in this life!"

They stared in daze at Tie Ao Tian ascending the slope. They could almost see the scene where one day, Tie Ao Tian ascends to the position of the clan leader.

But at the next moment, an intense explosion occurred.

BOOM!!!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Note: Bai here means hundred, and not the Bai clan of Qing Mao mountain, which means white.

Enjoy reading!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bai Mo Xing was already sixty-eight years old.

He should have retired already at this age. However, Bai clan was in a rough situation these few years, and as an important clan elder and the uncle of the clan leader, he - who had always been working hard and doing his best - couldn’t abandon the clan. Now, during this crucial moment of his clan’s fate, he undertook the orders to leave the mountain, but during the journey, he accidentally sensed the aura of two Gu Masters.

Were they demonic Gu Masters?

This trip was very important to Bai clan and there could be no mistakes. Thus, he immediately led his group and approached the source of the aura.

"Two youngsters?" He was shocked when he saw Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

His gaze paused on Bai Ning Bing first.

Bai Ning Bing looked frosty and her blue eyes gave off cold light as she stared fearlessly at Bai Mo Xing, revealing her rank three aura.

"So young and already a rank three – a genius!" Not only Bai Mo Xing, the other three in his group also had such thoughts after seeing Bai Ning Bing.

At once, four pairs of eyes were fixated on Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing had transformed into a girl; her beautiful features gave off a cool aura, causing her to appear like a snow fairy. Her pearl-like brilliance that couldn’t be concealed by her tattered clothes, portrayed her firm personality, causing others to love yet pity her.

Compared to her, Fang Yuan’s presence was much dimmer.

He had an ordinary look, with cultivation of merely rank one, many gazes swept through him and went back to Bai Ning Bing.

Fang Yuan liked this; the less attention he receives, the better.

Bai Mo Xing, however, was different, his gaze quickly turned towards Fang Yuan.

Bai Ning Bing was protecting Fang Yuan and her stance showed that she would not give up without a fight. And Fang Yuan had a calm look, even though he was hiding behind her.

"To be closely protected by this young genius girl, this young man seems to be the leader of the two, who is he?" Bai Mo Xing was after all very experienced, his discerning skills were very accurate.

He had thought they were two demonic Gu Masters, but now his heart wavered.

Seeing Bai Ning Bing and Fang Yuan’s appearance, as well as their righteous Gu Masters clothing, they seemed more like young masters in distress.

"If they are demonic Gu Masters, just kill them. But if they are young masters from other clans, we have to watch out. If we cause the forces behind them to take revenge on our Bai clan, I, Bai Mo Xing, will become the clan’s sinner! But thankfully our side is stronger than them, thus the situation is under control."

Bai Mo Xing was still thinking, when Fang Yuan suddenly took a step forward. He cupped his fists: "I am Gu Yue Fang Zheng, young master of Qing Mao Mountain’s Gu Yue clan, my respects to senior."

"Qing Mao mountain?"

"Gu Yue clan young master?"

The people were bewildered.

Bai Ning Bing was also shocked, but she lowered her head so as to cover her gaze from giving them off.

She knew that Fang Yuan was starting to cook up a story again. The enemy was stronger than them, thus they had to rely on wits to get out of their predicament.

She clearly understood the situation, the rapport they had built up these few days caused her to move one small step back towards Fang Yuan’s side. She continued staring at them angrily, like a close bodyguard who was not afraid of dying.

"Young lad, you are lying! Qing Mao mountain has long been destroyed, you think I don’t know that?" Bai Mo Xing shouted with a cold expression.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly, waving his hands: "Exactly because Qing Mao mountain is destroyed, I ended up here. Could I be so presumptuous as to ask for senior’s name?"

Bai Mo Xing hesitated, but a young man beside him quickly spoke: "Then listen closely, we are the elites of Bai clan and this is our Bai clan’s number one elder, also my uncle – Lord Bai Mo Xing!"

Bai Mo Xing really wanted to strangle this nephew to death. This secret operation by Bai clan this time, was on a large scale, but their true intentions were unknown to those who were not higher ups. Thus, these people were completely in the dark.

On the surface they were out hunting to temper the young masters’ bravery. But their true motive was to find the spirit spring in Bai Gu mountain, and start their wild beasts extermination operation.

"But there’s no way they can guess it." Bai Mo Xing calmed down as he looked at Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

"As expected, it was Bai clan." Fang Yuan laughed coldly in his heart.

He had already guessed the situation from these four Gu Masters’ appearance.

Bai clan’s spirit spring was drying out; they needed to find a new one and relocate their clan.

The act of relocating a clan was very important, and many preparatory work went into it, and secrecy was also one of them.

Otherwise, once the enemy forces found out, they could disrupt their plans and cause the entire Bai clan to fall into danger of getting wiped out.

What Fang Yuan had not expected was the Bai clan leader planning so far ahead, starting the preparations ten years earlier; sending these clansmen to Bai Gu mountain occasionally to carry out their scouting.

There were indeed reasons beyond luck in Bai clan’s eventual prosperity.

The appearance of Bai clan Gu Masters was a surprise to Fang Yuan and this would have a great impact on his following actions.

On the surface, however, Fang Yuan smiled and cupped his fists: "Oh so you are from Bai clan, a fellow clan from righteous faction, nice to meet all of you!"

He then turned to Bai Ning Bing and said: "Ning Bing, stay down, we are safe. Bai clan does not have demonic Gu Masters."

Bai Ning Bing felt goosebumps all over her body when she heard Fang Yuan speak in such a gentle manner.

She held in her disgust, and withdrew her battle intent, taking another step back while still remaining silent.

This act caused the four opposing Gu Masters to sigh in relief.

After all, she was a rank three Gu Master.

"So her name is Ning Bing..." Bai Mo Xing’s nephew repeated the name in his heart, his expression slightly dazed.

Bai Mo Xing narrowed his eyes and probed: "It sounds like Junior Gu Yue has met some demonic Gu Masters along the way?"

"Yes, my heart still palpitates when I think about it." Fang Yuan patted his chest with fear in his eyes: "But luckily, the clan leader and a few clan elders came in time, and killed that rank three Gu Master."

"Clan leader and elders..." Bai Mo Xing’s heart jumped as he quickly followed up: "Don’t tell me your clan leader and elders are nearby?"

Fang Yuan shook his head, sighing: "We got lost from the main team."

Bai Mo Xing’s heart eased. But Fang Yuan’s next sentence caused him to be alert again: "But I believe that before long, we will regroup again. Because our destination this time is Bai Gu mountain."

Bai Mo Xing was nervous: "Bai Gu mountain? Why are you all coming to Bai Gu mountain?"

"This..." Fang Yuan hesitated and didn’t speak up.

Bai Mo Xing snorted while a bad feeling emerged in his heart.

Now that Qing Mao mountain was destroyed, what would the remains of the Gu Yue clan do? Obviously finding a new location and rebuild their home!

"Don’t tell me they chose Bai Gu mountain too? Damn it!" In an instant, Bai Mo Xing’s heart surged with killing intent.

If his guess was correct, then Qing Mao mountain’s main team was his Bai clan’s enemy.

But he soon contained his killing intent. He was old and was no longer as impulsive as back when he was young.

When an elder handled matters, stability was their main priority.

He calmed down and thought about it, even if he killed these two immediately, it might not salvage the situation!

Killing these two would not stop the remaining Qing Mao mountain inhabitants from coming, it would instead worsen the situation, creating foes even before they met.

These enemies had no foundation here but were powerful. Didn’t you hear what the Gu Yue young master said? The main team had the clan leader and several elders. The most troublesome part was these people wouldn’t hesitate to fight to death if the situation became desperate.

Furthermore, even if he attacked now, that girl called Ning Bing was a true rank three Gu Master. His side would still have casualties, although they were stronger.

Finally, such an important matter should not be decided by him. The clan leader was not far away, why not ask her for instructions?

Bai Mo Xing decided to stabilize the situation with Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing first as he thought of this.

He started smiling and said enthusiastically: "This is really a coincidence junior, our Bai clan’s main team is just nearby. We are holding an annual hunting event, as half the landlord, we invite you to come and be a guest. Please allow us to host you."

"This..." Fang Yuan hesitated purposely.

"Come, our Bai clan’s grilled lamb leg is top tier." Bai Mo Xing’s nephew also began to persuade, but his gaze was fixed on Bai Ning Bing.

Fang Yuan touched his tummy, showing a conflicted expression - a bit of hesitation but also yearning.

Bai Mo Xing’s eyes shone and laughed loudly: "Junior don’t hesitate, anymore and you are not giving me face."

Only then did Fang Yuan bow: "Then I shall impose upon your clan."

A banquet was held inside a spacious tent.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing took a seat next to each other.

A few clan elders sat opposite each other, and in the head seat was the Bai clan leader.

The tent’s roof was opened, allowing them to see the blue sky. And in the center was a lamb being grilled, its fragrance extending throughout the entire tent.

"Come, lamb leg is the most tender. Guests from afar, please have a taste." Bai clan leader said with enthusiasm.

She was a middle-aged woman, and under her indication, the servants grilling the lamb, cut the lamb leg and offered it to Fang Yuan. Soon after, they cut off the other leg and placed it in front of Bai Ning Bing in a silver plate.

The lamb leg was still sizzling hot, Fang Yuan took a bite; he could taste the crispy fragrant skin and the tender juicy meat. If it had been marinated with some honey or some cumin powder, it would have been even tastier.

"Indeed a delicacy, no less than the grass skirt monkey’s brains." Even Bai Ning Bing was full of praises.

"Our guest’s happiness is our utmost pleasure. Hahaha." Bai Mo Xing laughed.

Fang Yuan ate and ate, when suddenly, his tears started flowing out.

Everyone was shocked. Bai clan leader asked: "Junior Fang Zheng, why are you crying?"

"The taste is truly divine, but thinking of the last few days where I and Ning Bing could barely survive, going through one danger after another, and thinking of our clansmen suffering in the wild without food to eat, I can’t help but feel heartache, please forgive me Bai clan leader." Fang Yuan stood up and cupped his fist.

The few clan elders glanced at each other and sighed.

Bai clan leader asked: "My clan feels deep sympathy towards Gu Yue clan’s disaster. Junior, can you tell me what in the world happened at Qing Mao mountain?"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Daily chapter. Enjoy!

Ps: Not sure if allowed to post here but we have a discord channel if anyone wants to join!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The once lively Qing Mao mountain had turned into a world of ice and snow. Such a change had long attracted the attention and investigations of nearby forces. In these few months, news of Qing Mao mountain being destroyed had gradually spread far.

"I don’t dare to recall, every time I think of it, it feels so painful." Fang Yuan sat down, his face full of grief.

"Servants, bring the wine." Seeing Fang Yuan unwilling to speak, Bai clan leader did not pursue the matter, but ordered her servants to bring two vats of wine.

Bai Ning Bing was indifferent, she never drank wine, only water.

Fang Yuan opened the seal immediately, gulping and drinking a mouthful as his tears fell once again.

Bai clan leader was stunned: "Junior, why are you crying again?"

"Your clan’s wine is intoxicating, but it makes me recall our green bamboo wine and of those days when I drank on Qing Mao mountain." Fang Yuan wiped his tears as he said.

The clan elders’ sighs became even louder, and many started consoling Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s encounter caused them to feel a sense of resonance. After all, Bai clan’s spirit spring was starting to dry out, and if they couldn’t find a new spirit spring, Gu Yue clan’s sorry state would be their Bai clan’s future.

Bai clan leader consoled him once more, only then did Fang Yuan stop crying.

"Who would not feel pain when their home is destroyed? I can understand junior’s feelings. But as long as people remain, there is hope. Junior, don’t grieve. I believe that in a few days, you will be reunited with your clansmen." Bai Mo Xing probed.

Fang Yuan acted as if he was unaware, wiping his tears and answering casually: "Yeah, it should be in a few days."

Hearing this reply, Bai Mo Xing and Bai clan leader glanced at each other.

After the banquet, Bai clan leader called Bai Mo Xing and entered a secret discussion.

"Clan leader, the situation is bad. Gu Yue village was destroyed, why did these remaining people come to Bai Gu mountain? It is likely that they want to snatch this territory, should we strike first instead?" Bai Mo Xing was worried.

"Hehehe." Bai clan’s female leader laughed lightly instead.

Bai Mo Xing was bewildered: "Why is clan leader laughing?"

The female clan leader squinted and explained: "Don’t be rash Elder Mo Xing, this situation has boon and bane. As long as we operate this well, we can save much effort."

Bai Mo Xing started to ponder the clan leader’s words deeply.

That’s right!

Bai clan’s spirit spring was running dry after so many years of usage. They needed to find a new spirit spring as soon as possible, and this time they were searching for a suitable spring on Bai Gu mountain under the cover of hunting.

Bai clan’s main group had just arrived and could not find anything yet. But if Gu Yue clan’s remnants were coming to Bai Gu mountain, they had to know some intel.

It could even be deduced that Gu Yue clan definitely held information on that spirit spring.

Bai clan leader saw Bai Mo Xing’s expression change and continued: "Looks like you got it. Actually, any large mountain is a gathering of primeval essence, and thus a spirit spring will be there. But to find the spirit spring’s specific location, it is not easy and requires a lot of manpower and resources."

"There are Fang, Liao and Fan clan around our Bai clan, they are all strong clans with equal power. If the matter about our Bai clan’s spirit spring running dry gets out, they will take advantage of the situation and attack our weakness, thus we decided earlier that we have to secretly find the spirit spring’s location under the guise of a hunting competition. But by doing this, we are greatly restricted and have to expend even greater manpower and resources in searching for the spirit spring."

Bai clan leader was full of worries, but could not express her helplessness.

Bai Mo Xing continued: "Thus, clan leader wants to obtain information about the spirit spring from Gu Yue clan?"

"That’s right." Bai clan leader nodded, her eyes shining brightly: "Gu Yue clan’s leader and elders won’t be easy to deal with, but with those two youngsters in our control? This is a godsend opportunity!"

Bai Mo Xing frowned: "But, I see that those two are not stupid. That lass is obviously one of those iron-willed stubborn type, while that young lad, although weak, was unfazed in dangerous situations, being calm at all encounters. The first time we met, even when he was surrounded by us, he did not show a hint of panic. It will not be easy if we want them to divulge information."

Bai clan leader chuckled: "If he did not have such composure, how would he be a clan’s young master? These two young masters are very outstanding, but if they weren’t, I would be doubting their identities."

Bai Mo Xing continued: "Thus, you have to think twice clan leader. If we interrogate them forcefully, they might not submit to us. With the traces they left behind, Gu Yue clan will be here soon. These are the type of desperate people with nothing to lose, except their lives."

Bai clan leader waved her hand: "That is not a worry, clan elder, I have a plan."

"Oh? This old one shall listen."

Bai clan leader said it softly while Bai Mo Xing’s old eyes kept on getting brighter.

After Bai clan leader finished, Bai Mo Xing could not help but praise: "This is a good plan! I saw that Gu Yue Fang Zheng is very attached to his clan, he even cried twice for his clan in the banquet. He is after all a youngster, clan leader, this plan that you came up with is like placing honey in front of a young bear or placing a carrot before a young rabbit. There will be no issues getting him hooked."

Fang Yuan opened a corner of the tent’s cover.

It was night time already, but Bai clan’s temporary camp was well lit.

The tents were placed perfectly in order, with iron racks and torches at every certain distance, and patrolling gu master groups all night round.

"Young master Fang Zheng, what is the matter?" Fang Yuan had just opened the cover, and the two guards at the door immediately walked over.

Fang Yuan burped out some wine: "I drank a lot of wine at the banquet, is there anywhere I can relieve myself?"

"Young master, right this way. You are our esteemed guest, the clan leader has arranged a special spot for you, no further than thirty steps away." One of the guards immediately said.

"Give me a direction, I do not like anyone near me when i pee." Fang Yuan rejected.

"I do not dare to disobey young master, the wooden lavatory is right there." The guard pointed towards it, bowed and left.

Fang Yuan got to the wooden lavatory, and after peeing, he pretended to be drowsy and walked in an opposite direction. He was not even twenty steps out when a few patrolling Gu Masters came over: "Esteemed guest, that is the wrong direction, your tent is over there."

"Is that so? I remembered it was there." Fang Yuan burped.

"Esteemed guest, this way please." Bai clan gu masters smiled hypocritically, with a forceful tone.

Fang Yuan was brought back to the tent again.

In the tent, the lights were turned on.

There were two beds on eastern and western side in the tent. Bai Ning Bing was sitting on her bed and cultivating, using primeval essence to nurture her aperture.

Hearing Fang Yuan enter, she opened her eyes, inquiring with her gaze.

Fang Yuan glanced at her, before falling down on the bed: "Ning Bing, sleep early. You were exhausted these few days. Don’t worry, we will join up with our clansmen in few days."

His words slurred at the end, and eventually he closed his eyes, snoring, evidently falling asleep.

Bai Ning Bing’s pupils shrunk. She knew Fang Yuan was acting, purposely saying that as a precaution against any surveillance type Gu worms. He had gone out earlier to pee, but returned so early which meant the area was tightly secured and it was impossible for them to escape quietly in dark.

She couldn’t help but be worried. Although she was at rank three peak stage, her Gu worms were not optimal, causing her battle strength to be insufficient.

While in this camp, Bai clan leader was at rank four, and there are five to six clan elders, and a lot of rank two Gu masters.

" To be meat on somebody’s chopping board. " That was the current situation. Although Bai clan was a righteous faction, people die for fortune and birds die for food, once the benefits exceeded the risk, they would definitely commit murder in secret.

Bai Ning Bing knew the Gu worms in Fang Yuan’s possession were all extremely rare. Heavenly essence treasure lotus, blood skull Gu, once exposed, would definitely attract the greed of Bai clan Gu Masters.

The reason they did not act yet was because Fang Yuan used the threat of the non existent Gu Yue clansmen to temporarily lie to them.

A few days later, when they do not see Gu Yue clansmen arrive, they would be suspicious. By then, Fang Yuan and her would be at a tight spot.

"How do I get out of this predicament?" Bai Ning Bing frowned, staring at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had already turned around, his back facing her, and he seemed to have really slept from the sound of his relaxed breathing.

"You sure take it easy!" Bai Ning Bing snorted, feeling anxious and helpless in her heart.

The next day. It was a bright sunny day.

There were three loud drum beats which signified the Bai clan leader summoning the clansmen.

"Our Bai clan annual hunting competition starts from today and will continue for the next seven days, it is time for you to display your strength. According to our rules, those who get a decent ranking will be heavily rewarded! Next, feel free to display all your bravery and strength."

Bai clan leader waved her hand, and the village gates opened. The Gu Masters were eager to start the competition, rushing out impatiently.

Not long later, they entered the forest from their respective positions, vanishing into the wilderness.

The crowded camp had become more spacious and empty.

"Junior Fang Zheng, did you sleep well last night?" Bai clan leader turned around, asking Fang Yuan with a smile.

Fang Yuan cupped his fist: "Thank you clan leader for the hospitality. Last night I fell asleep immediately after lying down, and it was morning already when I woke up."

"Hahaha." Bai clan leader smiled, patting Fang Yuan’s shoulders, giving off a kind and affectionate feeling: "Does junior want to enter our clan’s hunting competition? Let us see the valor of a Gu Yue clansman!"

Fang Yuan showed a difficult expression, rejecting: "I am ashamed! Junior was heavily injured not too long ago, and my cultivation fell from rank three. Thankfully I was saved by the clan, but now I only have rank one middle stage cultivation."

Even without Fang Yuan mentioning it, his rank one aura was clear to the eyes.

"No worries junior. As our clan’s esteemed guest, you will definitely be well treated. How about this, as long as junior can hunt an adult black bear, this green copper relic Gu will be your reward." Bai clan leader clapped her hand, and a Gu Master beside her opened his palm, as a finger-sized round ball shaped Gu emerged.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly in his heart, but showed an earnest expression: "Then this junior shall take up the invitation!"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Daily chapter, enjoy!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Howl!

In the forest, a plump black bear as large as two meters was standing on its two legs.

It growled towards Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing, but the two were indifferent, causing the black bear to become furious. It landed on all fours and pounced towards the two youngsters.

Do not be fooled by the bear’s clumsy looks, its running speed was, in fact, very fast - twice the speed of ordinary humans.

Seeing the black bear nearing fifty steps from him, Fang Yuan’s lips curled up into a smile as if he had achieved his target.

Bam.

With a loud bang, soil was sent flying.

The black bear cried out pitifully, its advancement came to a stop as if it had suffered a blow to the head.

Overcame by anger due to suffering such an absurd attack, it quickly changed to another direction and rushed towards Fang Yuan once again.

But after only stepping out for ten steps, the ground exploded again.

Howl!

The black bear’s chest was blown to a bloody mess, its eyes turned red as its rage reached a tipping point, rushing forward once again.

"A wild beast after all, lacking in intelligence." Fang Yuan sighed as he retreated.

The black bear chased relentlessly, but there would be an explosion every few steps it took.

After rushing for another few dozen steps, the black bear’s body was full of injuries with none of its fur intact. It was limping as its four limbs were crippled, there was no longer the fearsomeness of before.

Its anger had subsidaed, and the instinct for survival kicked in.

Even though Fang Yuan was standing no further than twenty steps away, it chose to retreat.

But Fang Yuan had already anticipated its retreating path, and dug a deep hole on the path, burying at least five Charred Thunder Potato Gu in there.

BOOM!

With a loud explosion, the battle ended.

At the same time, in the tent, wisps of smoke hovered in the air..

In the smoke, images flashed, as they portrayed the process of Fang Yuan’s battle in real time.

"Elder Mo Xing, what do you think?" Bai clan leader spoke after the battle ended.

Only she and Bai Mo Xing were inside the tent.

"If I am not wrong, this Gu Yue clan young master is using the Charred Thunder Potato Gu? This Gu is an expendable type, absorbing energy from the ground to grow, and explodes after impacted with vibrations. Among rank two Gu worms, it has strong attacking power but this Gu is severely weakened on Bai Gu mountain. Bai Gu mountain has no soil, and even the mountain rocks are made of bones, the Charred Thunder Potato Gu cannot be planted." Bai Mo Xing continued evaluating.

Bai clan leader shook her head: "You analyzed well, but that’s not the point. Did you not notice, Fang Zheng did everything by himself - from burying the Charred Thunder Potato Gu to the end of the battle. He has a rank three bodyguard but chose to use the rank two Charred Thunder Potato Gu himself through a tedious process. Every time he buries a seed, he has to use primeval stones to recover his primeval essence, but he insists on doing it himself, what does that say?"

Bai Mo Xing’s eyes shone: "I understand, this Fang Zheng is an upright person, not one of those who like to scheme and skive. He agreed to enter the hunting competition, thus no matter how hard it is, he will not use outside forces to cheat."

"Scheming and skiving characters have weak will, while upright characters are indomitable. If we want to find out the location of the spirit spring from these two people, the best way is to do so is indirectly, by using our wits. Hehe, my confidence in last night’s plans have increased again." Bai clan leader smiled.

"Luckily I was able to accomplish my goals." After half an incense was burnt through, Fang Yuan placed a torn bear skin in front of the Bai clan leader.

"Hehehe, in such a short time, junior managed to kill an adult black bear, as expected of Gu Yue clan’s young master." Bai clan leader’s face showed a trace of shock, which immediately turned into a smile.

"Junior might as well go back to rest, the Green Copper Relic Gu will be sent over shortly."

"Thank you clan leader, this junior will take his leave."

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing moved out of the central tent and back to their tent.

Soon after, a Gu Master brought over the Green Copper Relic Gu.

Fang Yuan took it, and immediately used it on the spot, raising his cultivation from middle to upper stage.

Gu Master’s small realms were easy to break through and was just a matter of efforts and time. Big realms, however, needed aptitude to breakthrough.

Relic Gu, Stone Aperture Gu along with many other Gu worms could reduce the time needed by Gu Master to raise their cultivation.

As for rank one upper stage, it is still rank one. This small growth could not change or affect the situation at all.

At night, Bai clan leader organized a banquet again, inviting Fang and Bai.

Bai clan’s tradition was to hold banquets everyday during the hunting competition. Large bonfire banquets were held in the open areas. As for the small banquet in the central tent, only the first few ranked participants would be invited.

But because Fang and Bai had different identities, they still remained on the guest seats.

"Come, let me introduce to junior our clan’s rising star. You youngsters should interact with each other." During the banquet, Bai Mo Xing started the conversation.

There were four youngsters in the tent; two males and two females, all were rank three Gu Masters.

One of the guys was Bai Mo Xing’s nephew, Bai Mo Ting; he had a slim body and was ranked third in today’s hunting.

Among the two girls, one was called Bai Cao Shuai who looked very careless, but was ranked fourth. The other was called Bai Lian, she had white skin and thick eyebrows which gave her a fresh aura; she was the most beautiful girl in Bai clan.

The two girls sat opposite each other, forming a stark contrast.

"Bai Zhan Lie greets the two esteemed guests." A young male Gu Master took the initiative and stole the words out of Bai Mo Xing’s mouth.

He was muscular and his manners contained arrogance along with strong battle intent. Looking at Fang and Bai, he first paused at Fang Yuan before showing a smile of disdain. Next his gaze was locked onto Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing was like a snow fairy with her silver hair and blue eyes, surpassing Bai Lian in terms of beauty. More importantly, she was at rank three peaks stage, attracting Bai Zhan Lie’s attention.

He snorted: "It seems that your Gu Yue clan has strong women and weak men?"

Bai Ning Bing was like an ice block, showing no reaction.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned cold and slightly ugly.

Bai clan leader interrupted: "This is the number one youth expert in our clan, junior don’t blame him for his inconsiderate words."

"Of course not." Fang Yuan moved his lips, facing Bai clan leader: "Brother Zhan Lie is a dragon among men, I am deeply amazed."

His tone was complex, and his expression was perfectly displayed; some tolerance due to being under others’ roof, the helplessness of his own weak cultivation and some indignant pride of a youngster.

Even Bai Ning Bing was taken by surprise.

Bai Zhan Lie snorted, while Fang Yuan laughed coldly in his heart.

He knew the Bai clan situation, but Bai clan did not know his true trump cards. The situation might seem dire for him, but he had a strong grasp on the advantage he had - information.

"How to make good use of this advantage, that is the key to getting out of our predicament. Green Copper Relic Gu is a good sign, showing that Bai clan is worried about the non-existent Gu Yue clan remnants. They do not want to do it by force, but instead trick and manipulate us. Is this Bai Zhan Lie the next chess piece? Now that I think about it, his tone earlier was too forceful."

"If he really is the Bai clan’s next move, there will be some problems. I might as well give my ’handle’ to them, and expose my ’weakness’..."

If he allowed the Bai clan to set up traps this casually, Fang Yuan would no doubt fall into a more passive situation.

Instead, he might as well give others a hold on himself, and expose some fake weaknesses, to gain some initiative.

Thinking so, Fang Yuan’s gaze swept through the tent, a ploy brewing in his scheming mind.

He looked at Bai Lian, opposite him.

After staring for a while, Bai Lian seemed to have noticed his gaze, but Fang Yuan turned his head over, seemingly observing something else.

As the banquet continued, Fang Yuan took peeks at Bai Lian from time to time, but avoided eye contact with her.

When the banquet was almost over, Fang Yuan peeked more often.

This situation was easily noticed by the Bai clan leader, and some clan elders.

The clan elders showed some amusement in their eyes.

It was a common thing for youths to get infatuated. Bai Lian was the beauty of Bai clan, it was natural for her to attract the attention of Gu Yue clan young master.

After the banquet was over, Bai Mo Xing excitedly went to see the clan leader: "Clan leader, did you see what happened during the banquet?"

Bai clan leader smiled: "Let me plan a bit more."

The night passed by silently.

During the second day of the hunting competition, Bai clan leader called Fang Yuan again, telling him to hunt a earth horn rhino.

Fang Yuan reenacted the same method, using the Charred Thunder Potato Gu and blasting the earth horn rhino, bringing back its horn.

Bai clan leader praised him and rewarded him with a Clearing Heat Gu.

Clearing Heat Gu was like an armored worm fossil, with a half transparent jade rock texture. He felt a cool air passing on to him when he held it in his hand.

This Gu was a rank two healing Gu, used to cure poison.

Fang Yuan had finally fixed his greatest weakness after getting this Gu.

During the campfire banquet that night.

"This is my son and daughter. Bai Sheng, Bai Hua, stand up and toast this brother." Bai clan leader said.

A pair of twins stood up, raising their cups like an adult, saying together: "Bai Sheng (Bai Hua) toasts Gu Yue young master."

They bowed slightly with a solemn expression, showing their good upbringing. There was no hint of any childishness.

Fang Yuan was slightly stunned and sized up this pair of siblings attentively.

According to his previous life, these two kids would be the famous Righteous Twin Stars, their fame would last a long period of time. Both cultivated to rank 5 and expanded the Bai clan village to an unprecedented height.

At the same time, they were the inheritors of the Bai Gu mountain inheritance, and Bai Sheng even became the Bai clan leader eventually.

In a clan, the clan leader position was usually inherited by the clan leader’s own children. But for Gu Yue village, where the clan leader does not have children, they would choose an outstanding youngster from their pure bloodline descendants.

People have a growing process. Bai Sheng and Bai Hua might be grand heroes in the future, but now they were still too young, not even students yet.

Fang Yuan retracted his gaze and concentrated on Bai Lian again.

The banquet continued.

During the period, Fang Yuan continued to peek on Bai Lian, as Bai Zhan Lie continued to find problems, his tone haughtier than before. Bai Mo Xing’s nephew Bai Mo Ting was instead peeking at Bai Ning Bing.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Enjoy!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

On the third day, Bai clan leader called for Fang Yuan again and gifted him many primeval stones in the name of hunting.

During the banquet, apart from stealing glances at Bai Lian, Fang Yuan took the initiative to toast to Bai clan leader with a sincere and grateful expression.

Bai clan leader didn’t speak but was inwardly very satisfied.

This night, Bai Lian visited Fang Yuan on her own accord. Her friend had been poisoned and clearing heat Gu would be very effective on it. However, clearing heat Gu was rare, thus she came to Fang Yuan to borrow it.

"Can’t endure it anymore huh?" Fang Yuan sneered inwardly while lending the clearing heat Gu without any objection.

Bai Lian seemed to be very grateful for this.

Fang Yuan then took the initiative to enthusiastically chat with her; the two started becoming closer and their relation rapidly improved.

The fifth day, at the banquet.

Bai Clan leader suddenly asked: "Junior, is your Gu Yue clan thinking of settling down in Bai gu mountain?"

Fang Yuan immediately stood up, he tried to appear composed, but couldn’t conceal the panic in his eyes: "Bai gu mountain lies close to Bai village, we could say it your esteemed clan’s territory. How could we dare to encroach upon it?"

Bai Clan leader smiled inwardly, she became more certain that the Gu Yue clan’s objective was Bai Gu mountain.

However, she hypocritically said: "Junior might not be fully aware of the complicated situation here. The pressure on our Bai clan is very big, it would be great if Gu Yue clan could stay here at Bai gu mountain as our clan’s ally."

Fang Yuan promptly denied.

Bai Mo Xing also persuaded, Fang Yuan seemed to be moved but he did not yield.

After the banquet, Bai Lian also came over to indirectly talk about it; Fang Yuan expression became complicated, but he still didn’t admit it.

"Hmph, this kid, his mouth is very tight." After the banquet, in the tent, Bai Mo Xing gritted his teeth and sighed.

"This is the demeanor of the young master of a clan, I am not surprised. We just have to raise the heat." Bai clan leader’s gaze was pensive.

The next day, dawn.

Fang Yuan was still sleeping, when he was woken up by quarrelling noises from outside the tent.

He walked outside the tent to take a look, only to see Bai Zhan Lie aggressively pulling Bai Lian’s hands.

"Bai Zhan Lie, I told you many times to stop bothering me. Love can’t be forced!" Bai Lian swung off Bai Zhan Lie’s hand and said with an icy expression, "I still have things to do, take your leave."

"Today’s hunting competition is about to begin, what things do you have to do? Or are you going to look for that gigolo from Gu Yue village?" Bai Zhan Lie furiously roared.

"Say whatever you want! Young master Fang Zheng is very kind and even lent the clearing heat Gu when I asked for it. If it was not for his help, could Bai Sheng Jing recover so quickly?"

"Lian Er, can you not be so simple minded? Clearing heat Gu, haha, the way I see it he is just thinking to get intimate with you. Don’t tell me you didn’t sense his glances?" Bai Zhan Lie worriedly said.

Bai Lian glared: "Bai Zhan Lie, enough is enough! Ah, young master Fang Zheng..."

As the two quarreled, they saw Fang Yuan who was standing outside the tent.

Fang Yuan looked a little embarrassed and his gaze showed some worry as he said to Bai Lian: "So it was Lady Bai Lian. Please come in if you have something to say."

"You lad!" Bai Zhan Lie turned furious and seemed about to find trouble for Fang Yuan, but was stopped by Bai Lian half-way through.

"Bai Zhan Lie, what do you think you are doing? Are you crazy? This is our clan’s esteemed guest!"

"What esteemed guest, he is no more than a stray dog." Bai Zhan Lie spat in contempt as he pointed at Fang Yuan, "Kid, if you have guts then let’s have a real contest! The loser will have to stop bothering Lian Er."

"Hmph, I am only a rank one whereas you are a rank three and you have the nerve to say this. Could it be the grand Bai clan has no fairness?" Fang Yuan’s expression turned ugly.

"In this world, there has never been fairness, there are only strong and weak. You are a coward if you don’t dare to compete! So it turns out the Gu Yue clan produces cowards, hahaha...." Bai Zhan Lie threw his head back and laughed, the sound attracting many people.

"What’s going on?" Bai Mo Xing hurried over at this moment.

Bai Lian explained everything to him, Bai Mo Xing immediately criticized Bai Zhan Lie: "Stop fooling around, you actually dared to be rude to the esteemed guest!"

Bai Zhan Lie raised his head: "He didn’t dare to take up my challenge, he is not a warrior. Since he is not a warrior, why should I be courteous to him?"

"You!" Bai Mo Xing stared in fury.

Bai Lian said: "Anyone who accepts such challenge would be an idiot. Young master Fang Zheng’s cultivation has fallen because of injuries. If he was at his peak state, you might not be his opponent."

A young lady was saying such things towards Fang Yuan, if Fang Zheng was really here, his heart would have been completely filled with appreciation.

Fang Yuan, however, sneered: Such a good performance!

"I will compete with you in place of young master Fang Zheng." Bai Lian continued.

Bai Zhan Lie gasped with rage: "Why are you sticking out for him, besides on what basis are you representing him? He is only a gigolo, a spineless coward, I alone can win ten of him! I won’t compete with you. Kid, if you have guts then stand up. Not even saying anything, are you still a man?"

"If you want to compete, then let’s compete, who is afraid of whom!" Fang Yuan seemed to have been spurred on by the remarks, as he straightened his neck and said in an impulsive manner.

"Lord elder, did you hear it? He agreed!" Bai Zhan Lie immediately shouted out with glee all over his face.

Bai Mo Xing furrowed his brows: "One should always be brave enough to receive challenges. Junior Fang Zheng, we all see your bravery, but you are our clan’s esteemed guest, how will we explain to Gu Yue clan if there are any mishaps? And your cultivations are not at the same level, so the challenge loses its fairness."

"Lord elder is correct, junior was thoughtless..." Fang Yuan deliberately hesitated.

Seeing Fang Yuan seemingly about to withdraw, Bai Zhan Lie and Bai Lian quickly communicated with their gazes.

Bai Zhan Lie continued to speak, provoking Fang Yuan’s anger and spurring him on.

Bai Lian bit her lips, before walking in front of Fang Yuan. She opened her watery big eyes and spoke softly: "Young master Fang Zheng, if I may be so bold to ask a favor."

"Oh, what request?"

"I really wish young master would accept this challenge and help me get rid of Bai Zhan Lie’s persistence. I really can’t endure his harassment." Bai Lian said with eyes filled with tears.

A young girl was imploring a boy like this, to drive away a nasty pursuer.

Especially if this boy also had good feelings about this young girl.

Tell me, which boy could refuse?

Thereupon, Fang Yuan immediately patted his chest and agreed: "Not to worry Lady Bai Lian, your affairs are my affairs, I will give it my all."

Fang Yuan paused before speaking with some hesitation, "It is just that my cultivation is weaker than his at the moment. Just in case I lost...."

"Please be at ease young master, I have a plan already." Bai Lian’s smile was like the blooming of a daffodil.

She turned around and said to Bai Mo Xing: "Lord elder, young master Fang Zheng might have agreed to the contest, but if we really were to continue with the duel, we might injure our harmony and it also wouldn’t be fair. I have a proposal; the hunting competition is ongoing currently, how about we take this chance to divide them into five person group and compete with the hunting accomplishments?"

"Yes, it is a good proposal." Bai Mo Xing felt his beard and slightly nodded, "Okay, you will choose your own teams. But to be fair, the cultivation level of your teams must be proportionate."

Bai Zhan Lie snorted in annoyance.

"Yes." Bai Lian promptly bowed in happiness.

After an hour, the two sides set off.

On Fang Yuan’s side, there were rank three Bai Ning Bing, Bai Lian and two other female Gu Masters with a similar age to Bai Lian, both all having rank two cultivation.

Among them was Bai Sheng Jing who was very grateful to Fang Yuan. She was the one who was poisoned and had been cured by Fang Yuan’s clearing heat Gu.

The group was harmonious, and although Fang Yuan had the lowest cultivation, he was the core of the group.

"Young master, you don’t need to worry, we have already gotten detailed information on the locations of the more precious preys. You only need to follow us." Bai Sheng Jing was responsible for scouting, and she was quite lively.

The group followed her, and sure enough, they were able to kill many unique prey.

Fang Yuan didn’t have to exert himself and the whole thing felt like he was going on an excursion rather than hunting.

"Young master Fang Zheng, I heard others saying your Gu Yue clan is migrating to Bai Gu mountain, is that true?" Bai Sheng Jing seemed to have asked casually when they were returning from their rewarding hunt.

"Those talks are all baseless." Fang Yuan smiled.

"Young master, you are gentle and refined, an upright gentleman, much better than that Bai Zhan Lie. Sigh, if you could stay at Bai gu mountain then we could meet each other more often in future." Bai Sheng Jing continued.

Fang Yuan laughed and secretly glanced at Bai Lian who was walking alongside him.

Bai Lian seemed to be worried: "Settling down and establishing the village is not an easy thing. The most important condition is to find a spirit spring. However, the primeval energy around the spirit spring is very dense, so there will definitely be beasts pack or formidable wild Gu worms living near it. To establish the village, the very first exploration group will have to go through intense battles, either killing beast packs or the wild Gu worms. This process will definitely be accompanied by bloodbath and sacrifices."

Upon saying so, she looked at Fang Yuan, "Actually, there are many bone Gu living in Bai Gu mountain. These bone Gu have tough physique and are difficult to deal with. There are also no soil in Bai Gu mountain, the ground is all made of bones and stones. It is not impossible to establish a village and survive on this mountain, but the price to pay is very high."

"Oh, is it so?" Fang Yuan’s smile contained a trace of reluctance and his gaze seemed to revealed deep worry.

Then, he pretended to act nonchalant, asking: "I am quite interested in Bai Gu mountain. Bai Lian, your clan could be said to be half the owner, could you tell me what dangers are on this mountain?"

Bai Lian smiled: "Then please listen, young master."

She exaggeratedly spoke while secretly activating the Anxiety Accumulation Gu inside her aperture.

This Gu worked as quietly as the spring breeze and would silently influence everyone within ten steps of it. It aggravated people’s thoughts and increased their worries.

Fang Yuan’s smiling expression gradually faded and the worries in his eyes became more visible.

"Young master Fang Zheng doesn’t need to worry, we will definitely win against Bai Zhan Lie this time." Bai Sheng Jing intentionally eased Fang Yuan’s worries.

Fang Yuan nodded and after replying few sentences, he appeared absent-minded.

Following, he kept on asking many questions.

They were all about Bai Gu mountain, especially about certain areas in the back of the mountain.

Bai Lian patiently answered all his questions.

This scene was playing in real time in the camp.

"The fish has taken the bait." Bai clan leader showed a smug smile, "Back of the mountain..."

She started looking at the map on the table.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Second chapter of the day.

If you have extra powerstones do consider giving them to us, thank you!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

After a short period of time, Bai clan leader took her gaze off the map, giving up.

Bai Gu mountain was huge, even though the range was restricted to the back mountain, it was still a long way to pinpointing the exact location.

"That Gu Yue lad, he is on guard against our Bai clan and would not ask for the direction directly. It seems that to find out the location of the spirit spring, we will need to buck up!" Bai clan leader gritted her teeth, evaluating.

Once they obtained the location of the spirit spring, Bai clan would hold a thorough investigation.

"But if the spirit spring’s surrounding beast groups isn’t a lot, and the price for killing them isn’t huge, I will strike directly. After all, we have the initiative to act first! But if the surrounding wild beasts and gu worms are too many, we will provide support and reinforce Gu Yue clan, making them bear the brunt of the attacks, while we wait for the opportunity to reap the rewards afterwards. If we do this well, we might even absorb the remnants of Gu Yue clan. Hehehe..."

Thinking of the great plan, Bai clan leader laughed out.

She had no idea now, that the so called Gu Yue remnants were just a big fat lie.

In fact, Fang Yuan obtained even more valuable information from Bai Lian.

The righteous inheritance was at the back mountain of Bai Gu mountain, Fang Yuan did not fake the information.

However, there were many bone beasts at the back mountain, and even more Gu worms dominating the area, it would be tough and full of obstacles to claim the area as a clan territory.

He knew from Bai Lian’s words, that there were some exaggeration, relying on his five hundred years of experience, he filtered the exaggerated parts, and obtained one truth —— if he and Bai Ning Bing worked together, to get to the inheritance ground, it would take at least half a year.

The situation on Bai Gu mountain was not like the woods. There were large numbers of wild beast groups, and many ferocious beasts and dangerous gu worms lurked. Many areas needed to be avoided and some places even needed to be steered clear of.

Once back at the village, it was like what Bai Sheng Jing said, their battle results were superior to Bai Zhan Lie.

After a day of circulation, this competition was widely known.

The five walked in the campgrounds, receiving much attention.

"Senior Bai Lian won today."

"That is just Lord Bai Zhan Lie being unlucky. You know, hunting relies on luck too. If you do not encounter rare prey, so what if you have strength?"

"Those two, are they the ones from Gu Yue clan?"

"Who is that girl? So beautiful... not any less than Bai Lian’s beauty!"

"I heard this Gu Yue clan young master is interested in Lord Bai Lian, truly a lame toad trying to eat swan meat ."

"According to my observations, this person’s nature is flawed. Having one beside him already, yet craving another, no wonder Lord Bai Zhan Lie was furious."

"Everyone can tell Lord Bai Zhan Lie is interested in senior Bai Lian. After all, I heard they were childhood friends."

"Sigh, unfortunately the feeling isn’t mutual..."

Many whispers and secret talks were undergoing, as people lowered their heads.

Fang Yuan looked like he was gloomy, even though he won, he did not show any joy on his face.

Only until at night, at the central tent, as another campfire banquet was held.

The twins, Bai Sheng and Bai Hua, toasted to Fang Yuan before being brought away. In the tent, many new faces emerged.

Bai Lian and Bai Zhan Lie’s competition caused them to leave the ordinary hunting competition. Thus, the spots they used to hold were freed now, causing many youngsters in the Bai clan to step up.

These two males were evidently closer to Bai Zhan Lie, one stared at Fang Yuan angrily during the banquet while the other was apathetic.

"Junior, it has been so many days, where are your clansmen?" At the banquet, Bai clan leader asked.

Fang Yuan showed some worry: "According to my calculations, it should be these few days. Sigh, maybe they encountered some trouble, but with their strength, there should be no problems.

Bai clan leader nodded, what she was concerned with was Fang Yuan.

After spending so much effort, and establishing this stage. At this point where progress was being made, and success was around the corner, she did not want the Gu Yue remnants to appear and thwart the entire plot.

What she did not know was, her worry was unnecessary. In this world, only two Gu Yue remained, Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng.

"No worries junior, I have sent people to scout around, I believe that not long later, you will hear news of your clansmen." After reacting, Bai clan leader consoled Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan quickly thanked her, as Bai Ning Bing frowned.

The situation was getting more critical, the longer they dragged, the worse it was for them.

Now was still fine, using excuses to answer them. After all, in the wild, encountering unexpected troubles is normal. But after they dragged it out, Bai clan would be suspicious, and may even find out the truth behind their lies.

But these days, they continued to hunt in the wild, and Bai Ning Bing did not dare to do anything. She knew that there were Bai clan gu masters invigilating the entire process, hiding at a corner.

They lacked a strong movement gu, and with the complex forest terrain, it limited their speed.

In Bai Ning Bing’s perspective, the situation was worsening by the day, they seemed to have fallen deep into the quicksand, sinking deeper as time passed, at this rate they would be thoroughly consumed.

"What exactly are you planning?" Bai Ning Bing stared at Fang Yuan.

She understood Fang Yuan, he was not the type of person to wait and die. But because of her little life experiences, she could not think of a way to break out of the situation.

In this environment, she could not discuss openly with Fang Yuan either.

The pressure in Bai Ning Bing’s heart was intensifying.

Another day passed.

Fang Yuan’s group was narrowly beating Bai Zhan Lie’s group in terms of results.

At the banquet, Bai clan leader called Bai Mo Xing for another secret discussion.

Clan leader tapped on the table with her finger: "This cannot go on, although today during the hunting, Bai Lian continued to talk about the dangers of Bai Gu mountain, I could feel Fang Zheng wavering but time waits for no one. Once the Gu Yue group shows up, Fang Zheng would’ve found his pillar of support, and our efforts would have been in vain."

"Time is not on our side." Bai clan leader sighed, unable to hide her worry.

What she did not know was, Bai Ning Bing was more worried than her.

Time was even more precious for Bai Ning Bing and Fang Yuan.

Bai Mo Xing pondered for a while: "Clan leader, the way I see it, it is not realistic to expect Fang Zheng to trust us in the short run and give us the location of the spirit spring. I have an idea here, but we still need to continue manipulating and intensifying his pressure."

"Oh? Speak."

Bai Mo Xing whispered softly.

Bai clan leader nodded slightly: "You are right, that Fang Zheng is very anxious, probably worried that his clan would suffer too much losses from fighting for the spirit spring. Doesn’t he want information on the area near the spirit spring? He definitely wants it, but is wary of us. Moreover, their cultivation is weak too, your idea seems good....."

Subconsciously, the female clan leader felt that this method was inappropriate, but now that they had no better plans they could only try this.

Thus, on the third day of the duel, Bai Zhan Lie accidentally caught a wild swimming dragon butterfly during hunting, and the entire camp was in a commotion.

Bai Lian showed a grim expression: "The situation is looking bad, swimming dragon butterfly Gu, rank three and very precious. Bai Zhan Lie’s score is way ahead of us, we can only take a risky move to have a chance to win. I am very clear of the forest’s terrain. We can only go into Bai Gu mountain to hunt, and kill bone beasts or capture wild bone Gu."

Bai Ning Bing heard this, and her heart jumped.

Bai Gu mountain, isn’t that the best way to break out of their predicament? Haha, to think that an opportunity would arrive like this.

Although Bai Gu mountain was dangerous, it was the best way to escape Bai clan.

Fang Yuan shook his head: "This is too dangerous, lady Bai Lian, we have limited strength, forget it."

Bai Ning Bing stared with wide opened eyes, wanting to strangle Fang Yuan so badly.

Bai Lian laughed instead: "No worries young master. I have a plan, I have a good relationship with Bai Sheng and Bai Hua, we can coax them into joining the hunt tomorrow. They have no cultivation, thus they are not considered reinforcements for us. But they have Gu Masters hiding around protecting them from danger. If we enter Bai Gu mountain, and encounter danger, how can they not help? We will not take the wild beasts they kill, but only hunt our own. The beast groups are bound to have the old, sickly and weak, the wild beasts on Bai Gu mountain are way more valuable."

Fang Yuan was shocked: "To think that Bai clan is doing this, all just to prevent my suspicion."

As he thought so in his heart, he said instead: "Great idea! Lady Bai Lian is truly pure hearted, I am very amazed."

"No, I am flattered." Bai Lian smiled shyly, but smugness flashed across her eyes.

The next day.

At dusk, in the central tent, Bai clan leader stared at the rainbow smoke in the air tightly.

In the smoke, an image appeared.

In the image, there were seven people. Other than Fang Yuan, Bai Lian and the three, there were also two children, the Bai clan young masters.

"It seems Bai Gu mountain is very peaceful. We’ve moved for so long, and not encountered any trouble." In the image, Bai Sheng Jing spoke.

Bai clan leader snorted out of anger.

To protect them, she sent out a large number of Gu Masters to pave the way, not leaving behind a single elder, all protecting them in secret.

The reason Fang Yuan’s group was having such an easy time, and encountering sporadic wild beasts, was because they were purposely left behind by the Bai clan Gu Masters.

In this six hours, Bai clan had sacrificed tens of outstanding Gu Masters, and even three elders were injured.

Among them, two were severely injured, falling unconscious and were on the way back to camp.

But this was still Bai Gu mountain’s foot, the more they ascended, the more danger lurked.

Don’t see how easily Fang Yuan and the others travelled, this was all due to the other Gu Master’s sacrifice of life and blood.

Especially Bai Gu mountain, no one lived there, and it was a wild beast territory. To pave the way and explore, the price to pay was huge.

Fang Yuan continued to ascend, and with Bai Lian’s guidance, they arrived at Bai Gu back mountain.

"We have limited information, I do not know where to continue going. The sky is getting dark, maybe we should get back." Bai Lian purposely said.

"Since we’re here, we might as well explore." Fang Yuan said instead.

He looked around, trying to discern, like he was trying to find something.

He started to lead them, according to his memories, he knew the inheritance ground was close by.

"Hey, hey, hey, can you at least try to pretend?" Beside him, Bai Ning Bing saw this and was screaming in her heart. Fang Yuan’s behaviour was already out of character.

Bai Ning Bing looked around worriedly, but what was strange was: Be it Bai Lian, Bai Sheng Jing or the others, it seemed they could not tell anything, letting Fang Yuan search in silence.

"Good, this is it! It seems this place is very close to the spirit spring!" In the tent, the clan leader said agitatedly.

"Hehehe, Fang Zheng, you are still too young... Eh? They entered the cave, is the spirit spring inside the cave?" The image flashed, showing the insides of the cave.

Right when Bai clan leader was getting confused, someone reported from the outside: "Reporting to clan leader, an investigative Gu Master is back, bringing a Tie clan Gu Master, they have important news to report!"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Daily chapter, enjoy! Appreciate the comments, thank you for reading.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Important information?" Bai clan leader frowned - what could be more important than the spirit spring?

"Since it’s not an emergency, let them wait first." She instructed before turning her gaze back to the smoke image.

The image shone, showing the situation in the cave; Fang Yuan and the group moved deeper into the cave, till they reached the end.

This cave wasn’t big. Bai clan leader was disappointed as she did not see the spirit spring, there was no way it could be in a place like this.

"It seems that we still need some time to find the spirit spring." Bai clan leader muttered. She swung her sleeves and kept the smoke back in, before saying towards the outside of the tent: "Call them in."

The tent flap was opened; a fierce and vigorous investigative Gu Master walked in and bowed: "This subordinate greets lord clan leader, I have an important news to report."

There was a trace of anxiety in his voice.

"You captured a Tie clan Gu Master." Bai clan leader frowned slightly.

Tie clan was a huge powerhouse which not even ten Bai clans could match. There would be huge trouble if the matter was not handled properly.

Bai clan leader was blaming the subordinate in her heart, this Tie clan Gu Master was like a bomb, he should’ve killed him secretly in the woods. Bringing him back to the clan would leave behind evidence and cause complications.

"This subordinate had received a mission, and while investigating the directions of the Gu Yue remnants, I accidentally found a heavily injured Gu Master. I was suspicious at first, thinking he was a Gu Yue clansmen. But after healing him, he claimed to be a Tie clan Gu Master. And he told me a shocking news! Qing Mao mountain’s three clans were completely wiped out. A mysterious demonic Gu Master managed to escape from the disaster, and the Tie clan mobilized their Gu Masters to pursue these demonic Gu Masters." The Investigative Gu Master reported.

"What did you say?" Bai clan leader was surprised; her heart jumped, and she started frowning.

At this instance, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing’s images flashed in her mind. Are these two youngsters demonic Gu Masters? They didn’t look like it!

Especially when she thought about Fang Yuan’s crying image at the banquet — how can such a person be a demonic Gu Master?

"How can you be sure this person is a Tie clan Gu Master?" Bai clan leader asked again.

"This is the Tie clan token I got from his body! And his Gu worms are also Tie clan’s characteristic Gu worms." The investigative Gu Master said while handing over a metal token.

Bai clan leader received the token, she felt a cold sensation from the token.

It was indeed the Tie clan token, but......

"There is also a possibility that this person killed the Tie clan Gu Master and took the token as their loot. Maybe this person is trying to mislead us, he might just be the demonic Gu Master the Tie clan is pursuing." Bai clan leader thought of a possibility.

In order to live, demonic Gu Masters obviously have to lie about their identity.

The Bai clan leader had too deep of a preconceived perception. But no matter what, she would have to confirm it herself.

She squinted and said: "Bring that captive here."

"Move." Soon, the tent was opened and a Gu Master was brought over.

It was Tie Dao Ku; his hair was a mess and his face pale as he walked towards the Bai clan leader.

"Kneel down!" The Gu Master behind kicked, and this strong willed man grunted, kneeling on the ground.

But he strongly resisted and tried to remain standing.

"Stay still!" Two Gu Masters behind him held each of his arms, forced him down.

Tie Dao Ku struggling was to no avail, he shouted: "I, Tie Dao Ku, will kneel to the heavens and earth, will kneel to my parents, will kneel to the clan leader, but do not humiliate me, or I’d rather die!"

"Oh, great acting." Bai clan leader’s eyebrows raised, but she just sneered and interrogated: "Speak, you are a demonic Gu Master, how did you kill the Tie clan Gu Master and obtain this token?"

Tie Dao Ku was stunned, before spitting out some bloody phlegm: " Spit ! I am Tie Dao Ku of the grand Tie clan, my name and surname will never change. Now that I’ve landed in your hands, do whatever you wish to me, but trying to frame me like this, isn’t it too hypocritical?"

The phlegm did not land on Bai clan leader, as it hit an invisible wall in midair and fell on the ground.

Bai clan leader’s expression turned ugly.

Tie Dao Ku laughed coldly: "Our Tie clan is an expert in pursuing and investigation. Bai clan, you captured me and humiliated me like this, hehe, you better decimate my corpse, and pray you are not found out. If not, heheh, you shall face the wrath and revenge of our entire Tie clan!"

Bai clan leader sneered: "You keep claiming to be a Tie clan Gu Master, but I’ve seen many Tie clan Gu Masters, those who are below rank 5 would move in large numbers, and are extremely spirited, and iron willed. Not only are you travelling alone, just look at your state, you should act better if you want to pass off as a Tie clan Gu Master."

Tie Dao Ku’s cold sneering froze.

Bai clan leader’s words triggered the most painful memory in his heart.

Back when they left Qing Mao mountain, all nine of them were high spirited, but now only he was left and that too as a prisoner!

Sadness...

Especially when he thought about how Tie Ao Tian died, the huge regret and pity intensified his pain.

Tie Ao Tian was the Tie clan’s fourth young master, with superior talent and a determined nature; there were many expectations placed on him since young. He was a strong competitor for the clan leader position, and was the future hope of the Tie clan. The intellect and talent he displayed made Tie Dao Ku see the future of the Tie clan in his hands.

But!

When that overwhelming explosion occurred, everything ended.

It was too abrupt!

Tie Ao Tian who was in the middle of the explosion didn’t even have time to activate his defensive Gu before he was blown to bits.

A generation’s genius, the star of the future, died in such an obscure way!

Not only Tie Ao Tian, some others were affected as well and died in the explosion along with countless Gu worms.

There were only two people alive; both heavily injured.

Tie Ku Dao was one of them. Back then he was at the back of the team, and because his skin had turned into bronze skin by his Gu worm, he preserved his life.

Another injured person had lost half his body, and in a short while, fell into a coma; eventually dying after resuscitation failed.

Tie Dao Ku cried as he buried his clansmen.

He had wanted to bury them separately, but most of the corpses were in pieces. Tie Ao Tian was the most pathetic, only a palm sized piece of flesh was left of him.

He carried his extreme pain and grief, and built a tomb, cutting a huge rock and moving it there as a marking.

Next, he investigated the explosion site.

With his experience, he concluded it was the charred thunder potato Gu.

Almost a hundred charred thunder potatoes, buried together! Without a doubt, this was a huge devious, ruthless and extremely evil trap!

Who would do such a wicked thing!

Who set this trap?!

Tie Dao Ku thought about it hard, and felt that Fang and Bai were the most suspicious. Of course, he did not know their names or the exact info, but he understood that this culprit was most likely the demonic Gu Master they had been chasing.

Too despicable!

Too vicious!

Tie Dao Ku flew into a rage, his hatred as deep as the sea.

Revenge, he must get revenge, and bring this demonic Gu Master to justice!

Tie Dao Ku could no longer return to Tie clan. He was responsible to get to the end of the fourth young master’s death. Furthermore, if he returned empty handed like this, it would be a huge disgrace to his character.

He had to continue the chase!

His life had suddenly turned from colorful to grey. He wanted to kill the demonic Gu Master of Qing Mao mountain to vent his anger. Even if he could not, he wanted to give his all.

"Revenge! Revenge!" He shouted, he would not stop until he killed Fang and Bai.

However, reality was cruel. His injuries could not receive proper healing, and in a few days, he suffered from a high fever and terrible headache. He also encountered beast groups’ attack, and barely managed to escape through the river. But without proper supplies, he still fainted in the end.

When he was awake, he found that he was saved, but became Bai clan’s captive.

Thinking back, it was all a series of painful events!

Tie Dao Ku kneeled in the tent with tears flowing out uncontrollably.

Bai clan leader was amazed, Tie Dao Ku did not answer her questions and just kept on giving off a determined aura.

This did not look like a fake identity, like a demonic Gu Master who wanted to live.

"Is this person really from Tie clan?" Bai clan leader started to feel something amiss, the bad feeling in her heart starting to spread.

She wanted to find out more details, but Tie Dao Ku did not reply and even closed his eyes.

Bai clan leader’s mind turned as she suddenly said: "Not long ago, our Bai clan entertained two Gu Yue clan guests. They are two youngsters, one claiming to be Gu Yue clan’s young master..."

Before she finished, Tie Dao Ku opened his eyes abruptly. His once dead eyes started shining with radiance.

Hatred, anger, joy, all sorts of complex emotions burst forth.

He wanted to get up agitatedly, but was pushed down by the two Gu Masters behind him.

He shouted: "It’s them, it’s definitely them. To think I met them here. Two people, and even youngsters, hmph, they must be the demonic Gu Masters that escaped from Qing Mao mountain!"

Tie Dao Ku did not know the situation on Bai clan, the investigative Gu Master only interrogated, there was no way he would tell him such information.

Bai clan leader quickly asked: "If you are a Tie clan Gu Master, where are your companions?"

Tie Dao Ku’s attitude changed completely at this point; for the sake of revenge, he answered seriously: "They’re dead."

"Where did they die? Where are the corpses?"

Tie Dao Ku’s expression changed: "I cannot tell you this. The dead shall rest in peace, even if you suspect me, I will not allow you to dig their graves!"

Bai clan leader’s heart sank after hearing this.

These were not words a demonic Gu Master would say.

"Don’t tell me..." An intense worry grew in Bai clan leader’s heart.

She could not help but wave her sleeves, as a colorful smoke flew out and coiled around in the air, forming an image.

"Your clan’s young master is in our hands, all of you get out now!" In the image, Fang Yuan had already fallen through with Bai clan, he was gripping Bai Hua and Bai Sheng’s throats as he threatened.

Bai clan leader was instantly dumbstruck.

After a few breath’s time, she flew into a rage, slamming the table in front of her into smithereens.

She wanted to scream ——

"Turns out they were demonic scoundrels!"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Chapter for the day.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bai clan leader’s face looked extremely dark.

She had understood everything!

At first she was hesitant, but after seeing the image in the colorful smoke, only an idiot would not understand what had happened.

Bai clan leader was no idiot, in fact she was wiser than ordinary people. In Fang Yuan’s previous life, she was the one who led Bai clan on the resettlement, and set the foundation for the next generation’s prosperity.

"Damn it! How could this happen?"

"Those two scoundrels were actually demonic Gu Masters. They are too good at acting!"

"Clan leader, the two young masters are in their hands, what do we do?"

In the tent, the other Gu Masters were panicking when they looked at this scene.

The situation was terrible, Fang Yuan was holding the two young masters hostage, and caused everyone to be cautious in their actions.

Bai clan leader forced herself to calm down. She was the birth mother of Bai Hua and Bai Sheng, her worry and anxiety far surpassed the others. However, as someone in power, she had to have her strengths.

Other than her identity as a mother, she was also the clan leader!

She first ordered her subordinates to release Tie Dao Ku.

"We were wrong about you, Tie clan’s warrior, I apologise to you here." She stood up and bowed with a sincere expression.

Tie Dao Ku snorted, although he was extremely displeased, he admired Bai clan leader’s resolve.

After all, he was only a prisoner now, his life and death could have been decided merely at her thought.

He gritted his teeth and tried to stand up, but because his body was extremely weak, even this action was taxing on him.

"Come, bring the Tie clan guest to his seat." Bai clan leader instructed.

Tie Dao Ku sat down, fixing his gaze at the colorful smoke. His gaze seemed to be on fire when he looked at Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing, causing others to look away.

"These two are the demonic Gu Masters who escaped Qing Mao mountain? That explosion trap was set by them? Young master Tie Ao Tian’s death, the ones I am pursuing, are these two youngsters?"

Tie Dao Ku etched Bai and Fang’s appearances and their body shapes into his mind.

"No, it might not be them, this could all be a misunderstanding..." Tie Dao Ku thought of another possibility.

He was upright, and never killed an innocent.

"Regardless, I have to confirm it myself! If they aren’t, I will pursue the true criminals. If they are, I shall cripple these two rascals’ apertures and tear them to pieces!"

Thinking so, he spoke: "Bai clan leader, the matter at hand is to arrest these two scoundrels, as well as saving your clans’ two young masters."

"Tie clan warrior, what do you have to advise me?" Bai clan leader wanted to get some useful information from Tie Dao Ku.

But she was destined to be disappointed.

Tie Dao Ku shook his head, smiling bitterly.

In the cave, swords were brandished.

"All of you, get out, do you want me to repeat myself again?" Fang Yuan threatened in a cold snicker.

"Fang Zheng, what are you doing?"

"What is going on? Why are you holding the two young masters hostage?"

Bai Lian, Bai Sheng and the others were tongue-tied, they thought he had found the spirit spring, but everything happened in a flash, who would have thought that Fang Yuan would suddenly go crazy and kidnap the two young masters.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Three figures suddenly appeared.

"Fang Zheng, you dare to hold our clan’s young masters hostage? How dare you, your crime is unforgivable!"

"Release them, and we may spare you your life!"

"Fang Zheng, release them now, and come back with us, we will let you leave safely!"

The three clan elders spoke, their expression extremely ugly.

They were strong, and followed this group the entire time. But the moment they sensed this change, they rushed to the scene.

"You guys finally decided to show yourselves? Excellent..." Fang Yuan snickered, Bai Sheng and Bai Hua struggled intensely in his hands.

"Evil scoundrel, release us!"

"If you kill me, you will die too!"

The two children shouted with all their strength, their faces were turning red from suffocation.

These two children were future Rank 5 Gu Masters, lords of Bai clan, the Righteous Twin Stars. But now, unfortunately, they were defenseless and were being strangled by Fang Yuan.

After a while, their eyes started rolling back and their breathing slowed.

"Fang Zheng! Don’t make a mistake, release the two young masters!"

"We’ve given you the chance, as long as you release the young masters, we will let you leave, we will definitely not pursue you."

"What do you want? Primeval stones, Gu worms?"

The three clan elders were anxious, and their eyes revealed a ruthless expression as if they couldn’t wait to attack.

"Hmph, weren’t my earlier words clear enough? All of you get out, if not....." Fang Yuan laughed deviously, using his gaze to signal to Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing understood, taking out the chainsaw golden centipede.

She injected primeval essence into it, and the razors started rotating furiously, moving towards Bai Hua’s tender arm.

"Let go of my sister... le... let go...." Bai Sheng stared furiously, his breathing started getting rough as he struggled with all his strength, but Fang Yuan used just a little more strength and his words were stuck in his throat.

"Don’t be rash!"

"Stop, stop!"

At this point, more and more Gu Masters entered, and everyone were screaming in anxiety.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly: "On the count of three, if you are not all out of this cave, your young master’s limb will be gone!"

Everyone gritted their teeth, their eyes burning with fire, they wanted nothing more than to chop Fang Yuan into pieces.

"Still not leaving?" Fang Yuan’s eyebrows rose and he moved Bai Hua closer towards the chainsaw.

"Ah!" Everyone screamed.

"My god!!" A young female Gu Masters covered her eyes.

"Quickly, get out of the cave!" The clan elders shouted, they did not dare to gamble with their young masters’ lives.

Everyone gradually retreated, staring at Fang and Bai on the way out.

If gazes could kill a person, Fang Yuan would’ve been dead a million times. If rage was like water, they would’ve drowned under the tsunami already.

When everyone was out of the cave, Fang Yuan passed Bai Hua and Bai Sheng to Bai Ning Bing, before surveying the surrounding.

Bai Gu mountain was made of bones with no rocks or soil. This cave was the same, white throughout. The cave walls even had sharp bone spikes, although these bone spikes looked the same as in other caves, in fact, if one observed properly, they would find that these bone spikes were spiral at the tip, different from others.

This was the spiral bone cave, also the entrance to the Grey Bone Scholar’s inheritance.

The entire Bai Gu mountain had many caves, but this was the only cave with so many spiral bone spikes.

Fang Yuan had never been here. But in his previous life he had heard many stories which were even testified by Bai Sheng and Bai Hua personally.

"We entered the spiral bone cave first, then accidentally found a bone spike that could be twisted; it was the mechanism to open the entrance......"

Fang Yuan thought for a while, before starting to search for that special bone spike.

There were uncountable bone spikes in this cave, but in Fang Yuan’s previous life, Bai Hua had revealed that back then when she and her brother had been playing in the back mountain, she saw a large bone spike in the cave, with very closely carved spiral markings. She touched it casually, and accidentally twisted it, opening the entrance.

"Fang Zheng, you are surrounded. There is no way to escape, come out."

"To be honest, we were quite kind to you, to think you returned our kindness with ingratitude!"

"Fang Zheng, I’ll give you some advice, leave some leeway for yourself. If anything happens to our young masters, we will take revenge on you with all our might!"

The cave was not deep, the shouts of the Gu Masters could be heard echoing inside.

Bai Hua started to sob.

Bai Sheng said: "Fang Zheng, stop it. Release us and I will let you two leave in peace. I assure you as the young master."

He was young, but was calmer than an adult facing this predicament. The brilliance of a future star was already being displayed in him.

Fang Yuan paid them no heed, suddenly his eyes shone.

He took a step forward before stretching his hand towards a rather conspicuous large bone spike.

Next, he twisted it lightly.

Creak...

There was a loud sound and the bone spikes began to contract; a secret door opened from the side, revealing a squarish cave opening.

Bai Ning Bing's eyes shone.

Bai Hua stopped crying, staring at this change in shock.

"Ah, there's a cave!" Bai Sheng shouted.

"Hmph, keep your mouth shut." Bai Ning Bing chopped on his neck, knocking him unconscious.

Bai Sheng had screamed on purpose to leave traces for the people outside.

As expected, a commotion occurred outside.

"Cave?"

"Not good, they're trying to escape!"

"Chase!"

Fang Yuan growled: "If anyone dares to step inside, I will kill Bai Sheng first."

This shout stopped the Bai clan Gu Masters.

Fang Yuan quickly walked into the cave, Bai Ning Bing also knocked Bai Hua unconscious, carrying them on each of her hands and followed.

This secret path was well lit, shining with a pure white light. It was just that there were bone spikes everywhere, stabbed into the walls like sharp spears..

These bone spears were densely packed, sealing the whole tunnel. There was only a little space between them, allowing Fang Yuan to see a hall beyond them.

"It seems this is the reason you came to Bai Gu mountain, I'll open a path for us!" Bai Ning Bing moved ahead, trying to use the chainsaw golden centipede, but Fang Yuan stopped her.

"These bone spears are extremely tough, don’t be in a hurry." Fang Yuan searched around according to what Bai Hua had said in his previous life; he found the shortest spiral bone spike, and pulled it.

Creak......

Another sound of some mechanisms being activated, the cave behind the two sealed itself while the bone spears in the tunnel contracted back into the walls.

Suddenly, the path ahead was smooth and unobstructed.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, turning and saying to Bai Ning Bing: "Welcome to Bai Gu mountain."

Bai Ning Bing’s gaze flickered, as she looked behind subconsciously.

The cave entrance behind her had sealed itself.

The Bai clan Gu Masters would need to spend quite a bit of time to pursue them at least to open this cave entrance.

Bai Ning Bing’s lips curled, revealing an excited smile.

Everything had become interesting, this was the life that she was after...

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Chapter for the day. Slightly later because I had school earlier, sorry about that.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The secret tunnel was not long; after walking for a while, Fang and Bai arrived at a huge hall.

The pure white hall was made out of bones. In the center was a huge vat.

The vat was filled with milk like white liquid that was giving off a fragrant smell.

As Fang Yuan got close to it, his memories resurfaced.

According to Bai Hua, this vat should be connected to a spring below it.

This spring was a milk spring.

The spring water tasted like milk, a clean sweet taste. Not only was it a top tier beverage, it was also extremely nutritious, children grew better drinking it, and the elderly could maintain a strong healthy body as well.

Milk spring was the specialty product of Bai Gu mountain.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life - after Bai clan relocated here, they unearthed five milk springs, causing it to become their specialty production and even used it as a commercial product to attract many traders and merchants to come and make a deal.

"There is a Gu inside this vat..." Fang Yuan said, indicating to Bai Ning Bing using his gaze.

Although according to his memories, there was no danger at this location, Fang Yuan was vigilant, after all this was not something he had experienced personally and his information was all from a third party.

Things that carried risks, he’d rather let others do it.

Bai Ning Bing snorted, activating her defense and putting her hand into the vat.

"There are so many Gu inside!" Her brows raised in shock.

When she pulled her hand out, her hand was full of Gu worms.

These Gu were as large as a human finger and were completely white. One end was round while the other was sharp, like a miniature spear.

This was the Bone Spear Gu.

"Although this Gu is only rank one, the whole vat is almost filled to the brim with it." Bai Ning Bing was slightly excited.

Bone Spear Gu was similar to Gu Yue clan’s Moonlight Gu in that it was the foundational gu of the White Bone inheritance.

In his previous life, after Bai clan found this inheritance, many of the clan’s Gu Masters equipped this Gu, thus the Bone Spear Gu also became a characteristic of Bai Clan’s Gu Masters.

"Look around again, there should be a rank two Gu inside." Fang Yuan stood at the side with a plain expression.

Bai Ning Bing hauled for a few more times, before finally finding a rank two Gu.

This Gu was similar to the Bone Spear Gu, but on the surface of the bone spear, there were spiral markings — Spiral Bone Spear Gu.

This Gu was the evolution of the Bone Spear Gu, its attack power and penetrative force was higher than the Bone Spear Gu.

In the huge vat, the Bone Spear Gu was in the majority, and only a small number were Spiral Bone Spear Gu.

"This way, I finally have a standard method of attacking." Fang Yuan grabbed a Spiral Bone Spear Gu and thought.

Charred Thunder Potato Gu was very unstable, it needed to be planted in the ground, and it would have been planted in vain if others do not step on it. Also if a Gu Master with poor memory planted it and forgot the location of the potatoes, he might even injure himself by accident.

Moreover, the Charred Thunder Potato Gu’s use had restrictions. It must be used in soil, and the more fertile the soil the better. As for a special location like Bai Gu mountain, the charred thunder potato could not be used. Otherwise, Fang Yuan would not mind setting one or two more traps here.

"A pity there isn’t a rank three Gu." Bai Ning Bing was slightly disappointed. She chose a Spiral Bone Spear Gu and placed it into her sleeves, planning to refine it later.

She only felt curiosity towards these types of rank two Gu worms. They could not display the true power of a rank three Gu Master in battles..

Seeing no danger in the vat, Fang Yuan started to act.

He hauled Gu worms after Gu worms out of the vat, and used the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura to instantly refine them using his primeval essence.

"You, you, this.... What..." Bai Ning Bing was tongue-tied at this scene.

In the matter of a few minutes, Fang Yuan had already refined a few dozen Gu worms, and he was still continuing!

Because of the Spring Autumn Cicada, he could instantly refine them. And because of his aptitude and the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, his primeval essence recovery speed was much greater than the refining expenditure, thus he could continue the refinement non stop.

This was a crazy sight!

Fang Yuan refined over two hundred Bone Spear Gu in his aperture, and over twenty Spiral Bone Spear Gu.

Gu refinement was a tough barrier for Gu Masters, although Bai Ning Bing had seen Fang Yuan instantly refine Gu a few times before, it had never been so visually impactful.

In Fang Yuan’s hand, refining Gu worms was as easy as eating and drinking, no, it was simply as easy as blinking.

Simply way too easy!

"What secret does he have?" Bai Ning Bing was very shocked, Fang Yuan’s image became even more mysterious in her heart.

But on the surface, she just curled her lips and said calmly: "You got so many Gu worms at once, can you afford to raise them?"

Fang Yuan laughed: "Of course not."

Bone Spear Gu, Spiral Bone Spear Gu, they all fed on milk. Thus, they were kept in this vat of milk.

Don’t see how this milk spring is one full vat, the expenditure was huge, only because there is a spring eye at the bottom of the vat, can it sustain till now.

If Fang Yuan wants to raise and feed so many Gu worms, he would need to have a milk spring himself.

"Even though I can’t feed them, I would rather bring more with me, than let the Bai clan people gain them." Fang Yuan laughed, pointing to the vat: "Alright, destroy the rest of the Gu."

The vat had way too many Gu worms, although Fang Yuan refined a lot of them, considering the limits of his rank one aperture, there was still a large number left behind.

A moment later, Bai Ning Bing looked at the floor of Gu corpses with a complicated expression. She knew clearly what the value of these Gu were.

Destroying them was tantamount to destroying a small mountain of primeval stones, even Bai Ning Bing felt heartache.

But, rather than leaving them for enemies, and letting Bai clan take them and grow stronger, they might as well destroy all the Gu.

The two left the hall, and moved along another secret tunnel, getting to the second white hall.

At the center of the hall, there were three white bone pillars.

At the tip of the pillar, it was carved into a human hand, without skin or flesh, only left with bones.

In the white bone hand, they each held one Gu.

Three pillars, three slumbering Gu worms.

Fang and Bai got closer, and saw what was carved on the pillars, explaining characteristics of the three Gu.

"Ribcage shield Gu, Flying bone shield Gu, Arm bone wings Gu..." Bai Ning Bing stared at the pillar, muttering.

Very quickly, her gaze was focused on a line –"Three, choose one, satisfied at heart. Bai Gu inheritance, left for future descendants."

The meaning was obvious, they can only choose one Gu, and leave the others to future inheritors.

Ribcage shield Gu, could cause a Gu Master to grow two rows of ribcages, shielding their chest, and had great defense. It was a rank three Gu, advantages being: Other than the initial growth period, which needs a lot of primeval essence, afterwards it can be sustained without primeval essence, something like the heavenly essence treasure lotus, after it is refined, it can be used without injecting primeval essence.

Flying bone shield Gu, after using, three flying bone shields would fly out, being small and floating around the Gu Master’s surroundings.

Arm bone wings Gu, would grow a pair of bone wings at the forearm area, waving the wings would increase movement speed slightly, most importantly it increased attack speed.

"Ribcage shield Gu can be used together with the carapace Gu, to form defenses front and back. But the carapace Gu is bound to be replaced, and only the Ribcage shield Gu alone is not wide enough. I have the jumping grass, and do not fight close combat, the Arm bone wings Gu is also useless.

Fang Yuan thought about it, and chose the Flying bone shield Gu.

He smashed the bone arm, refining the Flying bone shield Gu and keeping it in his aperture.

As for the other two gu, he did not touch them.

This is a righteous faction inheritance, this area tested the self control of the inheritor, if they cannot control their greed and desires, taking all three Gu, then the future tunnels would change drastically, although there would not be devious traps, their rewards would be much lower.

Righteous inheritance is unlike demonic inheritance.

Normally speaking, they are designed kindly. Gu Masters having luck to encounter their opportunities would gain them, the only difference is how much.

Bai Ning Bing seeing Fang Yuan not moving, also did not dare to move the pillars, afraid of special traps.

The two moved along the secret tunnel entering a third hall.

There was no more tunnels now after the hall, only one human skeleton in the cave in a sitting position.

Before the human skeleton, there was a huge book.

This book was made with bones, as long as an arm, wide as half an arm, and as thick as eight inches.

Fang Yuan indicated to Bai Ning Bing to pick it up, and seeing no danger, took the book from her.

This book, was named "Grey Bone Huge Book" by the Bai clan twins in his previous life. Inside, there were many refinement recipes as well as the creator of the inheritance, Grey Bone Scholar’s life experiences and why he set up this inheritance.

Fang Yuan flipped the book, it was truly so.

This is a genuine righteous inheritance.

At the end of the book it says: This corpse, is the Grey Bone Scholar himself. If the future inheritor has the kindness, they might as well pay respects to it, and kowtow three times. Afterwards, they can split the skull apart, and obtain one Gu. That is the Grey Bone Scholar’s lifebound Gu, if the inheritor obtains it, they should make the world a better place and uphold justice.

Fang Yuan laughed upon seeing this, handing the grey bone huge book to Bai Ning Bing and kneeling on the ground, kowtowing three times respectfully.

This was a true kowtow.

His forehead hit the rough floor, emitting three loud sounds.

Bai Ning Bing was surprised, not expecting this side of Fang Yuan!

After Fang Yuan finished, he stood up, and there was no commotion in the hall.

He did not mind it, smiling lightly.

In this hall, there are no more secret tunnels, but it is not the end. This place tests the inheritor’s nature, if the person is kindhearted and knows gratitude, they would kowtow.

If they do three genuine "knocks" on the ground, a new tunnel would appear.

But this is only one aspect.

If they not only kowtow, but do not move the corpse, showing respect for the corpse of the senior, a second path would appear.

"In the previous life, Bai Sheng and Bai Hua both kowtow, but Bai Hua was afraid of pain, not giving off a loud sound. But Bai Sheng triggered the first path. Bai Sheng wanted to retrieve the Gu, but Bai Hua stood him, wanting to leave the senior in piece. Thus, Bai Hua triggered the second path."

Fang Yuan thought about it, looking at Bai Hua and Bai Sheng.

They were carried by Bai Ning Bing, still unconscious.

Bai Ning Bing also looked at them, sighing: "It seems that from now on, we have to rely on these two to protect our lives. But I am very curious, what the lifebound Gu of this Grey Bone Scholar is, let’s split the skull."

Fang Yuan shook his head: "This is the most exquisite part of the inheritance, curiosity would make a person want to see the Gu inside the skull, and the better they imagine it, it would be even greater than seeing the real thing, don’t be rash."

Once he finished, a part of the bone wall shrunk, moving away and revealing a new tunnel.

"I see." Bai Ning Bing seemed to have understood something, about to strike but stopped by Fang Yuan.

"Although this cave is correct, it is not the most valuable one, wait a bit longer."

Waiting makes time feel much slower.

Especially when Fang and Bai are still being pursued by Bai clan.

After waiting for five minutes, Bai Ning Bing started to get impatient, but suddenly a new door slid open, revealing another tunnel.

"Haha, this is it." Fang Yuan laughed loudly, moving forward and raising his leg, smashing Grey Bone Scholar’s corpse to bits.

When this tunnel appeared, the corpse lost its meaning.

Fang Yuan took out a Gu from the skull, a rank three Bone Spike Gu.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Daily Chapter

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Rumble!

There was an explosion, smoke and dust filled the air before clearing up to reveal a cave.

"There really was a cave!"

"No wonder they disappeared completely, they must have entered this cave."

"It’s odd, why is there such a mechanism here? Ah, clan leader is here."

Bai Clan Leader had arrived just in time to see the group blasting open the wall and revealing the secret tunnel.

"This should be an inheritance ground." Accompanying the clan leader was Tie Dao

Ku who deduced it at a glance.

"So it was like that, those two thieves’ true destination was here!" Bai clan leader gritted her teeth as a chilling light flashed past her eyes.

Truly great acting!

She had been recalling the scenes of her interaction with these two in these few days, on her way here.

The more she recalled, the angrier she got; she was actually duped by two youths. The majestic Bai Clan Leader along with a group of clansmen were all playing into two juniors’ hands!

If words of this were to spread, it would be an enormous strike towards Bai clan’s reputation.

"Junior didn’t handle it properly and couldn’t protect the two young masters, clan leader, I ask for punishment." Bai Lian, Bai Sheng Jing and others nervously knelt on the ground, asking for forgiveness.

"Stand up, you only did it according to my instructions. If we have to blame someone, we can only blame those two thieves for being too cunning!" Bai Clan Leader’s words relieved Bai Lian and the group from a great burden.

"You have been in contact with these two thieves all the time, did you really not find any flaws?" Tie Dao Ku asked.

The three girls stood up with complicated expressions.

It was especially so for Bai Lian; she had been thinking she was playing Fang and Bai like toys in her palms, but to think that she was the one that was played.

"There were no flaws."

"Those two were too capable at pretending!"

"Thinking back now, they were using our Bai clan. Truly cunning and devious."

The three girls shook their heads as a reply to Tie Dao Ku.

Tie Dao Ku had also learned about the general situation from Bai Clan Leader on the way. Of course, the matter regarding Bai Clan spirit spring was naturally not revealed.

"Yes... as you say, those two thieves real purpose should have been this place. Their strength is not enough to let them wander around Bai Gu mountain, so they borrowed your Bai clan’s strength." Tie Dao Ku analyzed from a third person view.

Bai Clan’s Gu Masters’ faces turned ugly upon hearing him.

It was indeed so.

In these days, they had sacrificed a lot and paid a huge price to pave a way through Bai Gu mountain. However, they ended up paving the way for Fang and Bai.

"Curse these two scoundrels!"

"If those two thieves land in my hand, I will cut them into pieces."

"Clan leader, let my group take this task, I will kill those bastards and wipe away this disgrace!"

In an instant, the mountain cave was filled with angry uproars.

Bai Clan Leader looked around her before slightly nodding her head. It was not that she didn’t want cruelest deaths for Fang and Bai; as the mother of Bai Sheng and Bai Hua, she hated not being able to be with her children at this moment.

Morale was at its peak as the entire clan was motivated by anger.

Bai Clan Leader looked towards the elder who had asked her to let him take the task: "Then I order your group to pave the way through this secret tunnel!"

"Yes!" The elder accepted the command.

"Hold up, the bone spikes in this passage are uneven and completely sealed off; how did those two thieves enter inside? There must be some mechanism. Let me check it first." Tie Dao Ku raised an objection.

The elder who had just accepted the command glared: "It is an emergency now, the two masters are in grave danger; it’s going to take forever trying to slowly look for the mechanism!"

"Bone spike Gu..." Fang Yuan held this Gu and observed its details.

This Gu was about a fist sized and was like a ball cactus, with thorns like bone spikes all over on its surface. It was also somewhat heavy.

It was a rank three Gu, a typical Gu which would damage both the enemy and the user; if the enemy received thousand damage then the user would be inflicted with eight hundred damage.

The reason was when a Gu Master used it, their skeleton would undergo changes before sharp and hard bone spikes portrude out.

Before even using these bone spikes to confront the enemy, these bone spikes would first pierce through the Gu Master’s own flesh and skin. The pain was still secondary, if there wasn’t a corresponding healing Gu to pair up with it, the situation would truly be messed up.

The enemy might not die, but it sure would seriously injure the Gu Master that used it.

"What Gu is this?" Bai Ning Bing curiously gazed at it. But when she heard Fang Yuan’s introduction, she lost all her interest.

It was not that she was afraid of pain, but rather she was already using ice muscle Gu.

All the flesh on her body was already permanently changed to ’ice muscle’ by the ability of ice muscles Gu. It not only gave her defense but also stopped perspiration and stopped bleeding.

However, if she used this bone spikes Gu, it would first remove her ice muscles which to her was a loss instead of gain.

Fang Yuan was also not too interested in this bone spikes gu.

But it was after all a rank three Gu, thus Fang Yuan refined it and stored it in his aperture for the moment.

"Let’s go." Fang Yuan chose the hidden door which appeared in the last.

Bai Ning Bing was still the one to scout ahead.

A downward flight of stairs was spread inside the door. This flight of stairs was long, at least about thousand meters.

The surrounding lights gradually dimmed when they reached the latter half of the stairs, and the stairs were also getting narrower.

By the time Fang and Bai reached the end of the stairs, the light had almost completely disappeared. In front of them was a tightly closed door.

There were four words carved on the door — Flesh Sac Secret Chamber.

"These bones are really god damn hard!" Bai clan elder cursed out as he wiped the sweat off his forehead.

Fifteen minutes had already passed, but they had only opened this secret tunnel by half.

These uneven densely packed bone spikes didn’t look any different from the stones of Bai Gu mountain. But only after attacking them would one realize how shocking hard these bones were.

Bai Clan Leader’s expression also didn’t look good.

The more time passed by, the more danger her children could be in.

Right now, this mother felt a century had painfully passed by instead of just fifteen minutes. However, as a clan leader, she had to be calm and cool even if it was only on the surface, she had to be a role model to give confidence to her clansmen.

Crack.

Suddenly, a light sound echoed, the mechanism had turned on, causing the remaining bone spikes to swiftly shrink back to the holes on the cave walls.

Everyone was shocked and looked towards the source one after another.

Tie Dao Ku touched his chin and analyzed to himself: "This mechanism is somewhat ingenius. To open the entrance, one would need to twist the spiral bone spike. This leaves a deep impression on people and when people come to this secret tunnel, they would often rely on this impression and try twisting the spiral bone spikes near them. Unfortunately, to shut down this mechanism would require one to pull up the spiral bone spike and not twist them."

In that instant, everyone was dumbfounded.

The elder who had accepted the command was now completely red and seemed to be very embarrassed.

After the group passed through this secret tunnel, they arrived at the first hall.

"This is?!" They were stunned.

All around them were dismembered corpses. These corpses were the result of Bai

Ning Bing killing the Gu worms that were in the vat.

"These should be bone spear Gu...and there are also spiral bone spear Gu." Some elders quickly recognized these Gu.

"This really is an inheritance ground! In all my life, this is the first time I am experiencing it!" Someone said excitedly.

"Look, there is a big vat in the middle, what could be inside it?" Someone curiously pointed at the vat.

However, the vat didn’t have anything other than the milk spring.

The Bai clan group were disappointed and then turned furious.

"These thieves really don’t leave room for compromise! They didn’t leave behind anything."

"Damn it, so heartless, they destroyed so many Gu worms!"

Many cursed out in sorrow and indignation.

Even the elders felt grief at this.

"Let’s move quickly, the earlier we catch them, the less the damage we suffer." Tie Dao Ku said, causing everyone’s gazes to brighten.

With this stimulation, the morale of the group increased even higher, wishing they could immediately appear in front of Fang and Bai.

The group then arrived at the second hall and saw the three stone pillars.

"There are Gu worms left!" The gu master in front shouted in happiness.

"Please take a look clan leader." Soon, arm bone wings and rib shield Gu both appeared in the clan leader’s sight.

Bai Clan Leader glanced at them and then made her people stow them, she didn’t feel any happiness.

Compared to Gu worms, she was more concerned for her children’s safety.

"Did you see? Those two Gu were rank three Gu worms."

"This inheritance really makes one anticipate what’s coming."

"Luck and misfortune comes in turn, this saying is really true...."

Some were deeply moved and some were in awe.

"Don’t you find it odd? Why did they leave behind these Gu?" On the contrary, Tie Dao Ku could clearly sense something fishy as a spectator.

"Three, choose one, satisfied at heart. Bai Gu inheritance, left for future descendants." Someone soon discovered the words carved in the stone pillar.

"This doesn’t look like a demonic path inheritance, I am afraid it is left behind by a righteous path Gu Master."

"Tsk, heart is satisfied, but none of us are satisfied."

"Let’s move, quick. We need to save the two young masters first, it won’t be late to visit it again later."

The group urged each other and arrived to the third hall.

They saw the skeleton sitting cross legged and an enormous bone book.

"Gray Bone Scholar.... so this inheritance belonged to this senior." An elder opened the book and realized that this was indeed a righteous path inheritance.

Bai Clan Leader’s furrowed brows relaxed a little.

This was the first good news she had heard till now.

Righteous path inheritance was usually mild and wasn’t treacherous like demonic path inheritance.

Tie Dao Ku, however, was starting to frown. He increasingly felt something was wrong, the words on the stone pillar had given to an indescribable worry in him.

The group picked up the smashed skull and saw a bone spike Gu inside it.

Following that, a part of the stone wall slid open and showed a new secret tunnel. The group entered this passage.

"Flesh Sac Secret Chamber..." Bai Ning Bing murmured before trying to push open the door.

The door was not locked at all and easily opened.

Behind the door was a hidden room which was not that big, but was very grotesque.

The walls in the hidden room were all made of flesh. When Fang and Bai walked inside, they felt like they had walked into the stomach of some monster.

The flesh walls were warm and slightly throbbed rhythmically as if there was a heart inside them.

As if sensing someone’s presence, the flesh walls suddenly opened up a small crack and revealed white teeth all over it.

Bai Ning Bing was astonished.

There seemed to be countless opened large mouths in the flesh walls.

The mouths opened up with jaws clenched, revealing a set of even teeth. The phrase ’baring one’s fangs’ seemed to match this scene perfectly.

Heeheehee... hahaha... hehehe...

These mouths let out all kinds of laughing sounds. The laughs mixed together and echoed in this narrow secret chamber; anyone that heard it would feel their hearts palpitate!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

For those wondering, White bone inheritance has three parts.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

This Flesh Sac Secret Chamber was strange.

The surrounding flesh walls were filled with mouths and the mouths were open, revealing tightly clenched white teeth.

Not only this, these mouths were even letting out strange laughters, making one shiver all over.

Fang Yuan patted Bai Ning Bing’s shoulder: "This is the effect of flesh laughter Gu, it is just like Earth Treasury flower, and is used to store Gu worms. No need to worry too much."

He had just finished saying this, when suddenly the teeth completely fell off from an open mouth and a scarlet tongue extended from the mouth.

The tongue was very long, about over a meter, and the front part was curled up.

When the tongue fully extended, the tip of the tongue started straightening and revealed a book on it.

This was a bone book too, except it was many times smaller than the Grey-Bone Huge Book; pocket-sized, about half of an adult’s palm.

Fang Yuan took it and then started looking through it.

The main idea behind the contents of the book was: Since the successor could reach this place, it is a proof of your pure nature and you can now inherit my true inheritance. I have two identities; ’Grey Bone Scholar’ and ’Flesh Bone Master’. This Flesh Sac Secret Chamber holds many Gu, if the successor is fated, you can try knocking the teeth; if your luck is good and you open the teeth, you could take the Gu worm hibernating inside.

"This is purely testing one’s luck." Fang Yuan understood when he read this.

Bai Hua hadn’t told him about this barrier in detail, in his previous life. Fang Yuan could only test it randomly.

The first to succeed, however, wasn’t him, but Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing bent her forefinger and lightly knocked the teeth. These teeth were like musical instruments and would produce some kind of clear musical tone when they were hit.

She had just randomly knocked, and this mouth suddenly stopped its laughter; its teeth completely fell off and scarlet long tongue extended out from it, revealing within it a Gu.

"What Gu is this?" After looking at this Gu, pleasant surprise emerged in Bai Ning Bing’s face before changing into an odd expression.

This Gu looked quite peculiar as it looked like a set of dentures; spotless white teeth with an exceptionally neat set of upper and lower teeth, and gave off a pearl like luster.

Fang Yuan looked at it and immediately, a pleasantly surprised expression appeared on his face: "Not bad, this is the famous rank three healing Gu — Flesh-bone Gu!"

" Raising the dead, flesh white bone ..." Bai Ning Bing mumbled.

Rising dead Gu was accepted as the number one healing Gu among rank four. Even if a Gu Master died, as long as the time of death didn’t cross fourteen hours and their whole bodies were intact, one could use this Gu to resurrect them.

However, this Gu could only be obtained by chance and not by seeking it as it was too valuable and rare. It was also a one-time-use expendable Gu, with high demand but no supply.

Flesh-bone was a rank three Gu, but it wasn’t an expendable Gu and could be used again and again.

It was often used together with rising dead Gu.

If a Gu Master’s corpse wasn’t intact, one could first use flesh-bone Gu to reconstruct their flesh, and then use rising dead Gu to resurrect the Gu Master.

Throughout the history, this pairing was quite common and had benefited a lot of big shots; among them were even rank nine immortal venerables and demon venerables.

This was an ideal healing Gu to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had painfully searched for such a long time, and now his wish was finally being realized.

"Hehe, want it? You can exchange it with Yang Gu." Bai Ning Bing held this Gu in his hand and laughed in satisfaction.

Fang Yuan sneered: "You think I am stupid?"

Bai Ning Bing’s smile faded and her gaze became cold: "We can come to an agreement as long as you hand over the Yang Gu. Fang Yuan, I have followed you for so long, but know that my patience has a limit. I am no longer afraid of death, at worst we will both die together."

"You aren’t afraid of death, but do you think I am afraid?" Fang Yuan sneered. He had already expected such a situation and thus wasn’t surprised.

Bai Ning Bing took back her gaze and then carefully checked the flesh-bone Gu on her hand; the corner of her lips curled up: "Killing you might also be a good option. Look at yourself, you only have rank one cultivation but you can actually instantly refine Gu, and you also have the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus. Besides these, if I kill you, I can at least possess this inheritance. Just thinking about it makes my heart beat in excitement..."

Bai Ning Bing’s words were full of threat.

"Possess this inheritance? Haha, did you forget the Bai clan who is chasing us? They might even be walking down the flight of stairs outside right this moment. Without me, do you know where to go to next? This inheritance looks like a one-way path from the surface, but actually has many branches. I can indeed not fight you at the moment, but you are too naive to think you can seize the treasures by killing me. Do you think I will give you the opportunity to take the Yang Gu? Just try it, if you don’t believe me."

Fang Yuan then turned around and started knocking at the teeth again.

In fact, he also didn’t know where to go from here, as this secret chamber didn’t have any other passages.

Bai Ning Bing looked at the completely defenseless back of Fang Yuan; it looked like she could kill him if she just made a slight move.

But against all reason, Bai Ning Bing, however, didn’t dare make a move recklessly.

Fang Yuan’s words all struck her mind; Without Fang Yuan, how should she move next? Returning the way she came would be a death road.

Bai Ning Bing narrowed her eyes, and for a moment, she even felt ’Is even the Bai clan’s attack under Fang Yuan’s calculation? Creating an external force to prevent her from killing him for the benefits?’

Till now, Bai Ning Bing was in a puzzled state. She couldn’t understand: Why would Bai clan ’cooperate’ and accompany Fang Yuan all the way here?

In fact, her heart concealed deep worry ever since she was controlled by Fang Yuan.

Yang Gu was with Fang Yuan, she had always been worried Fang Yuan would use this to threaten her. Although Fang Yuan said he would hand over the Yang Gu to her once his cultivation reached rank three, what kind of person was Fang Yuan?

Bai Ning Bing couldn’t be more clear about this.

Going back on his words was a common thing to him, as natural as eating food and drinking water.

She might as well go die rather than to believe in Fang Yuan.

Let’s take an example of something that happened just recently. That miserable Bai Clan leader, wasn’t she an able woman? An elite and a very wise person, but after believing in Fang Yuan, what was her current state?

Fang Yuan was too good of an actor!

Goosebumps covered Bai Ning Bing’s body when she recalled the scene of Fang Yuan’s tears in the banquet.

This was a genuine sly fox!

He even intentionally glanced at Bai Lian repeatedly, just to lay a trap in which Bai clan was very happy to step in. She could still remember the brilliant expression on Bai Lian when Fang Yuan revolted; shocked and lifeless.

What Bai Ning Bing was most worried about now was Fang Yuan not handing over the Yang Gu even after reaching rank three.

The possibility was too big.

"Now I am a rank three and he is still rank one, I can still hold some initiative. But in the future when his cultivation reaches rank three or higher, wouldn’t I just be controlled by him and become his chess-piece?"

Bai Ning Bing was holding this kind of worry in her heart, and this worry deepened even more after Fang Yuan used green copper relic Gu and instantly broke through to rank one upper stage.

Bai Ning Bing was worried, but right now, there were many who were more worried than her, their worries even reaching an extreme point.

"What’s going on?" A group of people stood outside the exit of the inheritance and looked at their surroundings, their faces turning horribly ugly.

They had moved quickly through the path and charged through several bone halls. They were able to make some gains, but from the start to end, they didn’t encounter Fang and Bai. In the end, they walked out of the secret tunnel, to the outside of the mountain.

"It really is like this!" Tai Dao Ku suddenly exclaimed.

His words immediately attracted the attention of many.

"Brother Tie, what do you mean?" Bai Clan Leader immediately asked. If it was before, she would have already realized the answer with her astute senses. But now, her children were kidnapped and as time continued to pass by, she became more disconcerted.

"This Bai Gu mountain inheritance seems to be a one-way path, but it actually has many branches. Like this branch in my hand." He casually broke off a thin branch from a bone tree near him.

"The path at the start should have been the same for both us and them, thus we could see their traces on our way. But afterwards, we should have walked through a branch path and they should have walked into another branch. Do you still remember the second hall? There were three pillars and I suspect that there was a contraption set up in the pillars; when we walked into the third hall, there was the Grey Bone Scholar’s skeleton, but there were no signs of the skeleton being moved. The crucial point should be the secret tunnel after the second hall..."

Tai Dao Ku hadn’t finished speaking when Bai Clan Leader coldly shouted: "Let’s go back!"

Time continued to pass, Fang Yuan really wished time could extend by fifty-sixty times right now.

He knew Bai Gu mountain’s inheritance, it could at most hoodwink someone for a while. When Bai clan Gu Masters realize the truth behind the structures, he and Bai Ning Bing would be in danger.

But as it so happens, he didn’t know how to continue from here.

The secret chamber didn’t have any other passages.

They definitely couldn’t return back the way they came; even if the majority of Bai Clan group walked through another passage, they will definitely have some people guarding the exit.

"Could this secret chamber already be the final area? Did Bai Hua and Bai Sheng obtain all their Gu worms from these mouths? That can’t be, the rumors in my previous life said Bai Hua and Bai Sheng arrived at a precipice after going through this inheritance site. This rumor has been publicly approved by Bai clan. Maybe the mechanism to open the passage is hidden in one of these mouths?"

Fang Yuan’s mind moved lightning fast.

They didn’t have much time left...

Bai Ning Bing was confused, he didn’t know the state they were in and only thought Fang Yuan had made some plans. However, Fang Yuan knew their situation was becoming more perilous.

This door didn’t have any defensive functions, who knows whether a furious mob of Bai Clan gu masters might come crashing down the door the next moment.

"By then, we can only rely on Bai Hua and Bai Sheng as our protective amulets. But this is not a very reliable guarantee. This world has many magical Gu worms; there are many with control abilities like causing dizziness, hypnosis, paralysis and so on. Bai Clan is a powerful clan and definitely has such methods." When he thought of this, Fang Yuan couldn’t help looking at Bai Hua and Bai Sheng.

The twin siblings were lying on the ground, still unconscious.

"Got it." Fang Yuan suddenly got a great idea.

He decided to wake up these two kids.

First of all, time was pressing, he needed more manpower. Second, Bai Hua and Bai Sheng were the true fated owners of Bai Gu mountain inheritance. What’s more, they were both mortals, there was no need to worry they could cause any accidents.

Executing his ideas immediately, Fang Yuan quickly walked over and kicked the twins.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Third chapter for the weekends (Please feed Chibi powerstones). No chapter tomorrow. At least there’s no cliffhangers right? Right?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Rumble...

There was an explosive sound before the bone wall collapsed, a new path appeared in everyone’s sights.

Destroying was much easier than creating, especially when this inheritance didn’t have anyone controlling it.

"We have news from ahead. The fifth path has been completely investigated but the target hasn’t been found."

"Reporting to clan leader, I entered the sixth path and found a bone hall. There was a skeleton and a huge bone book in it."

"Reporting, seventh path also has a hall with similar structure, with a skeleton sitting cross-legged and also a bone book."

"Reporting, discovered the eight path!"

"Search again!" Bai Clan leader’s face was gloomy, there were over seven giant bone books piled up in front of her.

"This design really is in accordance to people’s hearts. When a Gu Master finds the skeleton and the bone book, they would subconsciously have a misunderstanding by thinking they already inherited the whole inheritance, but in truth Grey Bone Scholar has set up many similarly structured halls. The true inheritance should be hidden in one of the paths." Tie Dao Ku was deeply interested.

Bai Clan Leader’s brows furrowed even deeper.

The situation had become complicated, she wasn’t worried Fang and Bai would head back the way they came, since she had already arranged many people to guard the entrance.

What she was worried about was Fang and Bai would escape from some paths in the inheritance. After all, she could only control the entrance and not the countless exits.

Right at this moment, a Gu Master rushed over with an ecstatic expression: "Found it. We found a bone hall in the eighth path; the skeleton in there has been smashed to pieces and the Gu worm in the skull has also been taken."

"This is definitely the path they took!" Tie Dao Ku’s spirits was raised.

"Lead the way!" Bai Clan Leader immediately moved.

After a short period, a group of people hurriedly arrived at a hall.

"How can there be two secret tunnels?" An elder was surprised.

"Which path did those two demonic path thieves take?"

"Regardless, we will just go in two groups. Once we reach them, we must protect the young masters no matter what!"

The flight of stairs that led to Flesh Sac Secret Chamber stood out and attracted the attention of Bai Clan Leader, Tie Dao Ku and most of the elders.

"Flesh Sac Secret Chamber?" After a while, the group reached the end of the stairs.

BOOM!

The door was smashed to smithereens, and the group flocked inside.

However, there was not a soul in the secret chamber.

Heeheehee... hahaha... hehehe...

The countless mouths on the wall produced all kinds of laughing sounds.

"What nonsense is this?!"

"Laughter meat Gu, especially used to store treasures. These mouths are like drawers."

"This mouth is opened quite wide, they might have gone through here."

Bai Clan Leader glanced around before finally, her chilly gaze stared at the only secret tunnel in this chamber: "You, you and you will remain behind, rest of you will follow me!"

A while ago, in the same secret chamber.

Bai Sheng had just regained his consciousness when he felt a sharp pain in his stomach.

"If you don’t want to die, stand up!" Shortly, he heard a ruthless voice.

Towards this voice, Bai Sheng had the deepest impression of it.

It was precisely the owner of this voice who had cheated a whole clan and kidnapped him. Even the identity of Gu Yue clan’s young master might be a scam!

Scammer, hoodlum, demon!

Despite cursing in his heart, Bai Sheng still obediently crawled up.

He only then found that he was in an extremely strange place, the flesh walls around him were filled with mouths and were producing cacophony of laughters which was reverberating in his ears.

"Flesh laughter Gu?" He blurted out as he recalled the records in the books.

"Little guy, you are young but are quite knowledgeable." Fang Yuan smiled.

According to the rumors in his previous life, he heard this Bai clan brother and sister were innately intelligent, especially the big brother Bai Sheng who had high wisdom even at young age with a memory ability that was close to photographic memory. Right now, he was able to recognize the flesh laughter Gu, it seemed the rumors were not baseless.

"You two!" Bai Sheng gritted his teeth and stared at Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing with deep hatred.

"Big brother!" Bai Hua had also been kicked awake by Fang Yuan, she ran to Bai Sheng’s side while sobbing.

Bai Sheng promptly protected his sister behind him.

"What a great sibling relationship." Bai Ning Bing chuckled.

"You malevolent woman! You grew up so beautiful, but your heart is as poisonous as a scorpion!" Bai Sheng fearlessly scolded.

The smile on Bai Ning Bing’s face immediately disappeared.

Bai Sheng’s words deeply stabbed her. ’Woman’, ’beautiful’, she didn’t want to hear these words even a little bit.

Slap, slap, slap!

She walked forward and grabbed Bai Sheng before slapping him thrice.

She possessed the strength of a crocodile, and although she restrained majority of her strength, after she finished with her slaps, Bai Sheng’s two cheeks turned red and swollen.

"Venomous woman, evil woman, kill me if you have guts!" However, Bai Sheng still continued to curse.

Slap, Slap, Slap!

Bai Ning Bing gave him another three slaps.

" Sob sob , let my big brother go, please release my big brother..." Bai Hua grasped Bai Ning Bing’s leg and implored, crying.

"Sister...don’t beg her!" Bai Sheng spoke with difficulty.

Fang Yuan sighed, he then walked forward and grabbed Bai Hua’s collar.

The little girl cried out in panic when she was lifted by Fang Yuan.

Bai Sheng could not longer act unyielding as he anxiously shouted: "Evil thief, let go of my sister!"

Fang Yuan extended another hand and tightly pinched Bai Hua’s cheek, before saying in an unhurried tone: "So noisy, if you make anymore noise, do you believe that I will cut off both of your tongues? Yes, how about I start by cutting off this little girl’s tongue first?"

A slight smile raised the corners of his lips; cold light flashed in his eyes as he released his killing intent.

Bai Hua was so scared she didn’t dare to weep anymore, tears floated in her eyes.

Bai Sheng wanted to open his mouth to talk back, but his heart immediately palpitated with a glance from Fang Yuan, and he shut his mouth.

"This is good. Obediently cooperate with me and maybe I will let you live." Fang Yuan was still smiling.

Bai Ning Bing’s mouth twitched.

However, Fang Yuan immediately added on: "I am saying the truth. I don’t dare to make an enemy of your mother, capturing you was also to ensure our safety. If you obey us, we will let you go. Of course, if you don’t cooperate, haha, I don’t mind cutting off your tongues or few of your fingers to play with."

"Then what do you want us to do?" Bai Sheng took a deep breath, he wasn’t afraid of the cold Bai Ning Bing, but was afraid of the smiling Fang Yuan.

"Do you see these mouths in the walls?" Fang Yuan’s smile turned even bigger.

He explained the details and let these brother and sister go about knocking the teeth.

Barely a moment had passed when Bai Hua cried out in fear.

In front of her, a mouth opened up, its scarlet tongue extended and revealed a quail egg sized bone ball.

The ball was covered with black and white stripes, making Fang Yuan associate with an animal from Earth — zebra.

Fang Yuan quickly walked over and took this Gu, his countenance changing in pleasant surprise.

If he wasn’t wrong, this was a movement type Gu — footless bird.

This Gu could only be used once, but it’s body was big and it could fly thousands of miles.

This really was like receiving a pillow when one was sleepy .

Fang Yuan had just been worried about how to escape, and to think Bai Hua would present him with a footless bird!

However, this pleasant surprise was just the beginning.

After a while, Bai Sheng also achieved success.

He knocked and opened a mouth, a bone was revealed on its tongue.

The two ends of this bone was smooth and round; the middle part was long and slender; and there was a greenish glow to the bone like a green jade stone.

Jade bone Gu!

Fang Yuan held it, before immediately refining and putting it into his aperture.

This time, it was Bai Ning Bing’s turn to be envious.

Jade bone Gu could remodel the Gu Master’s skeleton into that of a jade like quality, making the bones harder and more supple. This effect was permanent like black and white boar Gu or the crocodile strength Gu.

Even more important thing was Jade bone Gu could be matched with ice muscle Gu to produce excellent effect.

Bai Ning Bing already had ice muscle, if she also possessed jade bones, she would have ’ice muscles and jade bones’, the two effects would mutually complement each other producing a much better result.

However, this jade bone Gu was a one time use expendable Gu. It also had a shortcoming; the gu master would suffer from extremely intense pain when using it. A lot of Gu Masters with weak willpower have died from the pain of using the jade bone Gu.

"Do you want it? You can exchange it with meat-bone Gu." Fang Yuan smiled.

Bai Ning Bing coldly snorted and turned around without replying, increasing her efforts in knocking the teeth.

But this action was purely relying on one’s luck. There were ten pairs of teeth in a mouth, and one needed to at least knock five teeth in correct order for the teeth to fall off.

Bai Ning Bing hadn’t succeeded apart from his first try.

As for Fang Yuan, he was even more miserable.

However, after some time, Bai Hua and Bai Sheng again gave pleasant surprises.

Bai Hua knocked down another set of teeth, providing Fang Yuan with an Iron bone Gu.

And the mouth Bai Sheng knocked, gradually opened wide, changing into a new secret tunnel.

Such luck of the brother and sister made Bai Ning Bing inwardly gasp in surprise.

She didn’t know this pair of brother and sister was the true fated owner of this inheritance. Fate was a type of otherworldly, magical, mystical strength; especially in this world, there were some rare Gu worms that contained the fragments of the law of fate, giving some lucky Gu Masters a grasp of some powers of the fate.

Since the new secret tunnel had appeared, Fang Yuan didn’t think of staying any longer.

Bai clan Gu Masters could arrive at any time, and the remaining Gu worms were in the mouths which were locked firmly and were very difficult to destroy. They could only be left behind fo them.

Fang Yuan again knocked Bai Sheng and Bai Hua unconscious, carrying them in each of his hands as he followed behind Bai Ning Bing into the giant mouth.

The two came upon a hall as they walked through this secret tunnel.

This was the widest bone hall they had come across.

Just from the area alone, it was over 2 km2 . In the center of the hall was a bone pyramid; the peak was flattened into a platform with two flights of stairs leading to it.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing looked at each other, there were nothing else other than this bone pyramid.

After checking their surroundings and noticing no dangers, the two walked to the platform on the peak of the pyramid.

There was a sculpture of a skull of a giant ferocious beast on the platform; it was taller than half a man and looked like a lion or a tiger, with tightly closed fangs.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Next chapter is really long and "exciting".

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Looks like the sculpture of either a lion or a tiger skull, isn’t this the rumored mechanism which needs two people to cooperate?" A thought flashed in Fang Yuan’s mind.

"There are words carved in this sculpture’s fangs." Bai Ning Bing made a new discovery, she then began to read the carvings in a low voice: " Gemini with one mind, three spirits unite. Fated or not, do not be forceful... what does this mean?"

"This is the code to opening the mechanism in this place. Gemini means two people should work together to open the mechanism. Three souls indicate a person’s mind, palm and eye." Fang Yuan recalled from his memories.

Among the four limbs of a human, palm was most nimble; among the five organs, the quickest was the eyes; and human’s mind could think as fast as a lightning spark.

Hence, they were called three spirits.

"Come, put your palm on the pupils of the sculpture."

There was a translucent, pure red gem in the eyes of the skull sculpture. The red stone was as big as large porcelain bowls and it clearly reflected the figures of Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

However, there was no change at all even after putting their palms on the red gem pupils for a long time.

"Haha, your words make sense but it turned out to be wrong." Bai Ning Bing didn’t let go of any chance to snide at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned dark; Bai Hua had recounted and described about this mechanism according to his previous life’s memories. Logically, this should be the correct procedure, but why was there no change?

"One-minded gemini, three souls united..." Fang Yuan muttered, "Three souls united has been achieved, but one mind, one mind..." A bright light slowly appeared in his eyes as he continued his thoughts.

Is it saying the two people to open this mechanism must be of one mind and one heart?

If it is so, even if he and Bai Ning Bing were working together, they were only forced by the situation and were actually divided in hearts, with each having their own plans. No wonder, they couldn’t achieve the ’one mind’!

When he thought of this, Fang Yuan couldn’t help looking at Bai Sheng and Bai Hua again.

As a result, this pair of brother and sister was again kicked awake by Fang Yuan.

"Evil thieves, what do you want?!" Bai Sheng angrily shouted after having woken.

Bai Hua, however, didn’t cry anymore, her two big eyes were closely gazing at Fang and Bai with deep hatred.

Fang Yuan couldn’t be bothered to explain to them; he directly grabbed the palms of the two and placed them separately on the pair of red gem pupils.

They were truly the inheritors decided by the fate, the moment these two’s small hands touched the red gem, it let out a bright light.

Crack, crack...

The skull slowly opened its mouth and revealed a large pile of coal stones and dry woods.

In the center of the black coal stones was a simple looking pottery container and a scroll lied on it.

"What is this?" Fang Yuan casually threw the twins onto the ground, then picked up and read the scroll before coming to an understanding.

It turns out the owner of this inheritance, Gray Bone Scholar, didn’t have a high aptitude; thus he was distressed about his cultivation throughout his life.

All his life, he put all his efforts into researching a type of Gu that could help a Gu Master to quickly cultivate.

There were already plenty of cultivation assisting Gu worms; the most typical being the liquor worm. However, these Gu worms were mostly very rare and would be very difficult to popularize.

Gray Bone Scholar’s aspiration was big, he wanted to research and refine an excellent Gu worm that could be widely used.

However, even when his lifespan was at its end, even after countless failures, he wasn’t able to achieve success.

At the final juncture of his life, maybe heaven took pity on him, when he was setting up the white bone mountain inheritance, he suddenly had an extremely ingenious enlightenment.

What was the main method to quickly raise a Gu master’s cultivation without the help of the specific Gu worms?

It was to let an elder impart his primeval essence..

Previously at Qing Mao mountain, Gu Yue Chi Cheng had received such help, receiving the refined primeval essence from his grandfather Gu Yue Chi Lian.

However, this move had a big disadvantage.

It was the mixture of different primeval essence, relying on an elder’s higher ranked primeval essence to wash and refine the aperture walls would leave behind his aura in the aperture, causing a Gu Master’s future development to be greatly restricted.

Unless one used cleansing water Gu to cleanse the mixed aura.

However, cleansing water Gu was also a rare Gu and ordinary Gu Masters would find it difficult to obtain it. Even elder level characters would have to rely on luck or pay a tremendous price.

Thus, imparting method also couldn’t be widespread.

Hence, Gray Bone Scholar thought of a wonderful concept.

If there was a Gu which could refine other’s primeval essence into the Gu Master’s primeval essence, wouldn’t that mean there would be no mixed aura after imparting?

He began making series of attempts and after removing most of the possibilities, he made a plan which had the highest probability of success.

The name of this experiment was –"Bone Flesh Unity Gu".

This was what was written in the scroll: To refine this Gu, two Gu Masters must work together. And these two Gu Masters must have blood relation; Parents and children or twins. Relying on the connection of the blood lineage could one transform the primeval essence.

However, Gray Bone Scholar didn’t have enough time to put this concept into practice. After having made most of the preparations, he could only helplessly stop at the final juncture.

Although he had two nicknames, he, however, was only one person. What he lacked were two Gu Masters who fulfilled the criterias.

The final content on the scroll clearly revealed Gray Bone Scholar’s endless regret.

He did not have enough time to redo the preparations, and could only leave behind this blueprint. If someone fated was to arrive to this point and could open the mechanism and see this scroll, that would mean the Gu Masters who met the conditions had appeared!

"There is no harm in trying it, no matter what the result, please convey it to my gravestone." These words in the scroll contained a lifetime of obsession of Gray Bone Scholar.

It turned out this pyramid Fang Yuan was stepping on was the tomb of Gray Bone Scholar.

There was no need to try though, Fang Yuan already knew the idea of bone flesh unity Gu was a success. Because in his previous life, Bai Sheng and Bai Hua — relying on this dual cultivation — had become the twin stars of righteous path, pushing the might of Bai Clan towards the peak with their rank five cultivation.

However, it was quite troublesome for Fang Yuan now.

He had originally thought bone flesh unity Gu was a finished product. But in fact, it had still not been refined into existence yet and couldn’t even be considered half-finished.

Moreover, he and Bai Ning Bing didn’t fulfill the conditions to refine this bone flesh unity Gu.

Unless, Gu Yue Fang Zheng had been here.

Even then, refining this bone flesh unity Gu might not end up good.

According to the description on the scroll, bone flesh unity Gu was a series of Gu and didn’t refer to just one type of Gu. And the deeper the feelings between the two Gu Masters refining this Gu, the better the quality of the refined bone flesh unity Gu.

Looking at the relation between Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng, the refined bone flesh unity Gu would absolutely not be perfect.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, this bone flesh unity Gu had of course been refined by Bai Sheng and Bai Hua. However, the time was now many years in advance, although the two had deep feelings, but they were yet to become Gu Masters and thus couldn’t fulfil the criteria.

Bone flesh unity Gu was the most important target of Fang Yuan in this inheritance. The materials and the forge were already well prepared by Gray Bone Scholar, the only thing lacking was the final step; refinement.

Give up? Fang Yuan, of course, wasn’t willing to.

Then again, to refine it, let’s not speak of the refinement conditions not being met, there was still a group of powerful experts chasing them.

Time was pressing, Fang Yuan gritted his teeth and decided to take the risk.

He and Bai Ning Bing only met half the criteria, but Bai Sheng and Bai Hua, however, met the other half. Maybe there was a hope for success if the four worked together.

"Come, help out." Fang Yuan began to ignite the dry woods in the skull sculpture.

The fire instantly soared and burned furiously.

"You plan to forcibly refine it?" Bai Ning Bing was shocked, "This can’t be a sensible option."

Although she said so, she still made her move and put her palm on the red gem pupil, pouring her primeval essence into it.

The blazing fire suddenly changed color, from orange to eerie blue.

The pottery container was roasted by the fire; the several hibernating Gu worms woke up from the heat and began to crazily struggle. The pottery container shook constantly, but there was no damage to it.

The refining steps wasn’t complicated, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing alternatively poured their primeval essence.

Soon, they reached the final critical juncture.

This step needed fresh flesh from the two Gu Masters, which would be thrown into the fire to be purified. The scroll clearly stated that the more flesh was thrown into the fire, the better the effects would be.

"Fortunately, we have flesh-bone Gu; cutting off few pieces of flesh wouldn’t be any problem." Bai Ning Bing was just about to take action when she was stopped by Fang Yuan.

"Slow down, I have a better idea."

Bai Ning Bing followed Fang Yuan’s line of sight to Bai Sheng and Bai Hua, the twins.

"You actually want to tamper with the modify at this juncture?" A disturbed gaze flashed in Bai Ning Bing’s eyes as she realized Fang Yuan’s intention.

"You, what do you want?!" Bai Sheng protected his sister behind him, as all of a sudden, he felt a calamity looming over them, causing him to feel anxious and panicky.

Being meat or fish on another’s chopping board , when Fang and Bai were refining the Gu worms, they knew they couldn’t run away, thus they had been obediently staying to the side, waiting for their clansmen to come to rescue.

However now, Bai Sheng felt tremendous regret!

"You should feel honored that your sacrifices will bring into existence an entirely new type of Gu worm. Even Senior Gray Bone would feel happy if he knew in the netherworld, right?" Fang Yuan gave an evil grin as he pressed on towards the pair of brother and sister.

"Sister, run away!" Bai Sheng shouted before charging towards Fang Yuan and grasping his leg.

"Big brother!" Tears spilled out from Bai Hua’s eyes, and just when she was hesitating, Fang Yuan had already knocked Bai Sheng unconscious.

Seeing Fang Yuan coming closer to her, an enormous fear was spreading at the little girl’s heart.

She turned around and ran, but how could she be faster than Fang Yuan?

She was quickly caught by Fang Yuan, her heart sank down and she futilely struggled and wailed: "Mother, where are you?"

Fang Yuan’s expression was indifferent as he knocked her unconscious too.

It was all done efficiently; he removed all the clothes from this pair of brother and sister, then carrying one on each hand, he threw them into the fire.

The moment they were thrown into the fire, they immediately woke up due to the heat, severe pain attacked them as they tried to madly flee.

The two jumped out from the fire with their limbs crazily moving about as they desperately struggled.

Fang Yuan coldly snorted, before kicking them back into the fire.

The scroll stated that it required fresh flesh, thus Fang Yuan didn’t want to kick them to death. As such, after he kicked them, they again ran out before he kicked them back in again.

This continued over and over, until Bai Sheng and Bai Hua were finally burned to death.

Their bodies resembled candles as they slowly melted; the fire turned from eerie blue to scarlet blood color.

However, the fire transformation slowed down and didn’t change to reddish-purple.

The scroll had stated, the color of the fire had to change into reddish-purple for this step to be considered a success.

"What to do?" Bai Ning Bing’s brows were furrowed; the Gu Masters would also receive backlash if the Gu refinement failed.

Fang Yuan’s mind worked at turbo speed: "Bai Sheng and Bai Hua were the fated inheritors, why did it fail? It seems because there was a discrepancy because they were not Gu Masters. If so, we need to try again!"

Fang Yuan didn’t hesitate as he activated tusita flower to spit out a sharp blade.

He stretched his forearm and slashed, blood started flowing rapidly and he threw his own flesh into the fire which was now blazing higher than a man’s height.

"Your turn." After doing this, he threw the sharp blade to Bai Ning Bing.

"You sure it will work?" Bai Ning Bing hesitated for a while before she similarly used the blade to slash at her forearm. However, because of her ice muscles, the blade seemed to be cutting into ice.

With no other choice, Bai Ning Bing called out chainsaw golden centipede and sawed a piece of flesh.

When her flesh landed into the fire, the fire immediately turned reddish-purple.

"Good, success or failure depends on this! We need to pour our primeval essence together." Fang Yuan was overjoyed at this scene.

The two poured their primeval essence into the red gem pupils at the same time; the mechanism started slowly closing up, like a bone beast swallowing the blazing flames.

Two rows of fangs came together and the jaws closed securely; the flame continued burning from inside, roasting the skull into a shade of scarlet.

Bang! The pottery container seemed to have exploded.

The whole skull shook.

Only after hearing this sound, Fang and Bai let go of their hands.

Fang Yuan closely stared at the movement while extending his hand towards Bai Ning Bing.

He didn’t say anything, but Bai Ning Bing already knew what Fang Yuan wanted.

She snorted, but thinking about the situation, she had no choice other than to give the flesh-bone Gu to Fang Yuan.

She didn’t have the ability to instantly refine Gu worms, but Fang Yuan could.

Flesh-bone Gu didn’t resist even a bit under the aura of Spring Autumn cicada and was instantly refined.

However, although Fang Yuan refined it, he couldn’t use it due to his low cultivation. Thus, he again handed it to Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing received it and immediately activated it; an orange glow covered the wound on her forearm and almost instantly, skin and flesh grew out and her injury was completely healed!

However, Bai Ning Bing’s rank three peak stage primeval essence was also instantly down by twenty percent!

The disadvantage of flesh-bone Gu was it required instant consumption of a great amount of primeval essence. If it were Fang Yuan’s green copper primeval essence, he wouldn’t be able to activate it even if his primeval sea completely dried up.

Following, Bai Ning Bing healed Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s face was pale, he didn’t have ice muscles to stop his bleeding in a short period, thus he had lost a lot of blood.

The injuries on their forearms had healed, but the pain was still as intense as before and their hearts trembled from the pain, even feeling dizzy!

But the two had iron willpower, despite such pain, their expressions didn’t change as they forcibly withstood the intense pain.

In a flash, the skull slowly opened up; the fire had already disappeared.

There were neither any traces of the pottery container nor the corpses of Bai Sheng and Bai Hua left.

Two Gu worms appeared in Fang Yuan’s sight.

One was green and another red, they were tied together like two jade bracelets, and quietly let out warm luster as they hovered in the air.

"This is the bone flesh unity Gu?" Without taking the time to carefully investigate, Fang Yuan took it and instantly refined it, storing it into his aperture.

"Let’s go!" He flew down the platform and rushed into the new secret tunnel that had appeared at the end of the hall.

Only a short moment after, Bai Clan Gu Masters arrived at this hall.

"Someone refined a Gu here!" The remaining aura in the air made the elders’ expressions change.

"Look, there are clothes of the two young masters." Soon, they found children’s clothing that had been torn by Fang Yuan on the high platform.

Seeing this, an intensely bad feeling struck Bai Clan Leader’s heart, almost causing her to blackout.

She didn’t dare to even make the connection.

"Chase them! They can’t have gone far, my children are definitely with them!" Bai Clan Leader shouted, her two eyes had become bloodshot.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

No dual-cultivation yet it seems...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Sprinting!

The secret tunnel seemed to continue on forever. But any long journey eventually came to an end.

After the first glimmer of light, Fang and Bai’s vision gradually expanded.

"The exit!" Bai Ning Bing shouted.

" According to the info from my previous life, this secret tunnel should lead to a cliff on Bai Gu mountain ." Fang Yuan did not speak, his thoughts rumbled in his mind.

He should thank the two dead siblings, Bai Sheng and Bai Hua. Their information attracted Fang Yuan here. And because of their sacrifice, Fang Yuan managed to obtain the coveted flesh bone unity Gu.

Suddenly, footsteps could be heard from behind.

"We’ve finally caught up!"

"We found those two bastards!"

"Where are you going!"

Bai clan Gu Masters rushed up imposingly, seething with killing intent.

Bai clan leader was ahead of them all, with the elders behind her. The narrow tunnel turned the Bai clan group into a long queue.

Blitz Gu.

Suddenly, a clan elder accelerated, his body moving like a cannon, catching up to Fang Yuan.

"Bai Ning Bing!" Fang Yuan shouted.

Bai Ning Bing gritted her teeth, swinging her hand behind her.

Blood moon Gu.

With a crisp sound, a blood blade flew out, hitting the elder and slowing his movement.

But immediately, all kinds of lights exploded in the tunnel as large numbers of attacks came towards Fang and Bai.

"Bai Ning Bing, take this!" Fang Yuan shouted, lending the canopy Gu to her again.

Bai Ning Bing activated the canopy Gu, iron spike thorns Gu, as well as the defense of the ice muscles, all three together to resist the attacks.

"Bai clan, don’t you want to know the location of your two young masters?" Fang Yuan shouted loudly.

As the Bai clan Gu Masters remembered Bai Sheng and Bai Hua were in Fang and Bai’s hands, they stopped their attacks.

"Speak, what did you do to our clan’s young masters!"

"If anything happens to them, you will pay dearly!!"

"Return my children!!" Bai clan leader flew into a rage, she pointed forward with her finger and a cold light shot out.

Frost fish Gu!

This Gu was only the size of a dart and looked like a fish. It drew an arc in the air as it shot forward, homing down towards Fang and Bai.

Fang Yuan snorted, he didn’t dodge and just let the frost fish Gu hit him.

Suddenly cold air enveloped his body, and his speed drastically fell.

Stealth scales Gu.

With a thought, there were ripples undulating around his body and making him invisible.

"Don’t think so!" A clan elder suddenly stretched out his right hand and grabbed towards Fang Yuan.

Swoosh.

With a soft sound, the stealth scales Gu that was hiding in Fang Yuan’s aperture suddenly broke into pieces and perished.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank, activating the jumping grass immediately.

There was a numbing sensation on his feet as green grass that looked like springs grew out of his flesh and skin.

Fang Yuan used the elasticity of the green grass, and jumped forward, his speed increasing drastically.

"I’ll take my leave first, remember to jump!" He left behind this weird sentence.

"What?" Bai Ning Bing was confused, but then heard the wind blowing behind her.

Her heart jumped when she turned around to look.

It was the Bai clan leader, her eyes dyed red, looking like an agitated lioness. Her furious aura made even Bai Ning Bing’s heart shudder.

After all, she was a rank 4 Gu Master.

Bang!

Bai clan leader punched directly, the huge force shattered the canopy Gu’s white armor immediately.

Bai Ning Bing threw up a mouthful of blood, as she summoned the chainsaw golden centipede.

The chainsaw golden centipede turned into a golden light and coiled around the Bai clan leader.

Using this opportunity, Bai Ning Bing sprinted and arrived at the exit.

It was a cliff!

At this moment, Bai Ning Bing suddenly understood what Fang Yuan meant — he wanted her to jump off a cliff!

"You cannot escape!" Bai clan leader shouted from behind, as for the chainsaw golden centipede, it had been torn to pieces using brute strength.

Bai Ning Bing was struggling.

At this height, it was a guaranteed death if she jumped down. But in this circumstance, she had no other choice.

She gritted her teeth and jumped.

"She really jumped!"

"She’s dead meat!"

Some Bai clan Gu Masters exclaimed, stopping before the cliff.

Bai clan leader looked down and saw Bai Ning Bing rapidly falling down. Her veins popped on her forehead as she growled: "I want to see them if they are alive, and their corpses if they are dead. I will definitely catch them!"

Wind roared in Bai Ning Bing’s ears as she continued to fall.

She had never thought there would be a day where she would be forced to jump off a cliff.

"I’m going to die like this? Although this is exhilarating, I am not satisfied..." As death approached, Bai Ning Bing’s heart was in turmoil.

"I have not obtained the Yang Gu, what a tragedy to die as a female. But once I reach the ground, I will definitely be a pile of smashed meat and no one will be able to tell my gender anyway."

Bai Ning Bing was not sure why she was having such a strange thought right before death.

At this time, the turbulence around her increased, as she heard a voice: "Bai Ning Bing!"

Bai Ning Bing turned around, how could it be anyone else but Fang Yuan?

At this time, Fang Yuan was descending as well, but he was stepping on a white bone bird below his feet.

Footless bird!

This bird had no flesh or blood, its body made of bones. It had an eagle’s head, crane’s body, swallow’s tail and two pairs of wings, but no legs.

Fang Yuan’s body was covered in blood and filth, it was evident that he had sustained many injuries back in the secret tunnel earlier.

"Grab my hand." He squatted on the bird’s back, reaching out his hand.

Clap !

With a clap, two hands grasped each other tightly.

Fang Yuan exerted more strength and pulled Bai Ning Bing onto the back of the bird.

However, at this time, there was a rock less than 300 metres below them, as the footless bird descended towards the rock like a shooting star.

"Careful, we’re gonna crash!" Bai Ning Bing shouted, her heart almost jumping out of her body.

The mountain rock increased in size rapidly in her vision.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with brilliance, shouting ferociously: "How can my demonic path falter in this tiny little Bai Gu mountain, RISE FOR ME!"

RISE, RISE, RISE!

His shout echoed in the valley.

Under his manipulation, the footless bird flapped its wings furiously, using all its strength to slow the descent. Cracks started appearing on its four bone wings.

Fang Yuan’s primeval essence in his aperture reduced rapidly, but with the heavenly essence treasure lotus sending out large amounts of primeval essence, Fang Yuan’s primeval sea rose and lowered continuously.

A group of bone beasts relaxing near the mountain rocks felt the commotion and raised their heads before immediately sprinting in a run.

A grey back ostrich was so scared it dug its sharp head into the white bone mountain rocks, raising its butt high in the sky.

Ostriches were like this, when they were scared, they liked to feel false assurance.

Moments away from crashing!

Bai Ning Bing forgot to breathe and Fang Yuan looked on with furious eyes.

Under the intense wind pressure, the white bone trees on this mountain rock collapsed. But eventually, the footless bird flew past the ostrich’s butt, soaring into the sky at a steep angle.

The ostrich’s butt wing was shaved till nothing was left, revealing its round empty butt.

"Hahaha." Bai Ning Bing started laughing wildly on the bird’s back.

Having barely survived and relieving the pressure of death, she felt her heart gradually sinking back into place.

Exciting, truly exciting, the excitement of life and death was always the most breathtaking. Wasn’t such life what she desired and pursued?

"Footless bird, fly to the blue sky." She was almost on the verge on singing in excitement.

"Clan leader! They’re alive!" At the cliff, Bai clan’s Gu Masters said with dark expressions.

"We can’t catch up, that is the footless bird, able to fly ten thousand miles in a day." Tie Dao Ku sighed helplessly.

Flying Gu worms were rare, and those who could match the footless bird’s speed were little to none. Under rank five, the footless bird was the number one flying steed.

"Alas, the heavens are blind! How can such evildoers be allowed to live!" Some elderly shouted in anger, pounding on their chests.

Bai clan leader’s eyes were bloodshot, she gritted her teeth while clenching her fists so tightly that her bones seemed about to burst out.

Hearing Bai Ning Bing’s laughter, she even had the urge the jump down the cliff to pursue them!

It was not that Bai clan did not have a flying Gu, some Gu Masters had already displayed their abilities, chasing after Fang and Bai. But looking at their speed, even an idiot would know that it would be impossible for them to catch up to these two.

An intense bitterness filled the Bai clan Gu Master’s hearts.

They could only watch helplessly even when the criminal was fleeing before their very eyes.

"No! We definitely cannot let them escape! We cannot!!" A Gu Master shouted in fury, his body suddenly started burning with intense flames.

"Bai Zhan Wen." Bai clan leader’s expression changed.

"Lord clan elder!" Everyone was stunned.

"Grandpa!" Bai Zhan Lie was full of tears.

"Clan leader, everyone! We cannot let these two scoundrels escape, or where will our Bai clan’s dignity lie? The revenge for our two young masters is of utmost importance! After I am gone, please take care of my grandson, this lad’s temperament is as tough as mine..." He started losing his voice at the end.

His entire flesh, skin and bones turned into fire, and his voice naturally disappeared along with them.

Even his pupils transformed into a dark purple color.

He had turned into a human shaped fire!

Fire burned and raised the surrounding temperature, and everyone started retreating back while a sad song seemed to sound in the mountain.

Human Torch Gu.

A rank 4 Gu, which once used, immolated the entire body, turning it into fire until his lifeforce was depleted. This Bai Zhan Wen elder chose to sacrifice his life to gain this immense power.

"Good, our clan shall stand here and witness elder’s contribution!" Bai clan leader was moved.

But Bai Zhan Wen could no longer hear them.

As his life burnt, he felt an unprecedented power flowing in his body, completely free and unbound.

The purple black pupil gazed at the surrounding people and looked at his grandson one last time, before flying into the sky.

The human torch rapidly approached the footless bird.

"Good!" Everyone shouted in excitement.

Bai clan leader’s steel-like cold expression showed some agitation too.

"A strong foe!" Bai Ning Bing’s expression was grim.

She lacked experience in aerial combat, she might fall and be smashed to bits if she was careless.

Howl!

The human torch growled, intense killing intent flickering in his dark purple pupils.

Sparks flashed as the human torch’s speed increased again, pouncing towards Fang Yuan like lightning.

"Hold on tight!" Fang Yuan was concentrating the entire time in maneuvering the footless bird.

Footless bird raised its speed and pulled away, causing the human torch to pounce on empty air.

Waves of sighing and pity could be heard from the cliff.

But quickly, the human torch pounced up again.

Footless bird swerved again and narrowly dodged, Bai Ning Bing was almost thrown off and quickly grabbed into a bone that was jutting out.

Howl!

The human torch came attacking again.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, the footless bird suddenly contracted its wings, dropping to the ground.

The human torch followed closely, its speed surpassed the footless bird and was getting closer.

Footless bird suddenly spread its four wings, stopping its downfall and flying in the reverse direction.

BOOM!

The human torch’s flying was completely dependant on the propulsion of the flames, he had no wings to help him quickly change his direction, and came crashing down onto the mountain rocks.

At once, over 6 kilometre square of land burst into flames, killing all bone beasts and large numbers of bone trees in its range.

In the sea of fire, a lump of fire gathered into a human shape again, flying away, and chasing Fang and Bai relentlessly.

However, the use of Gu worms also depended on their users.

In Gu Master’s cultivation aspects of nurture, use and refine, "use" was one. Not anyone could simply take out a Gu and display its full ability. The methods and techniques involved were very profound.

Human Torch Gu was a suicidal technique and naturally it would be Bai Zhan Lie’s first time using it. But Fang Yuan, although this was his first time riding the footless bird in this life, he had used an uncountable number of flying Gu worms in his previous life, his experience was many times of Bai Zhan Lie, almost to the point of being an instinct ingrained upon his soul.

At the cliff, Bai clan members were observing the battle situation.

Their expressions slowly changed from hopeful and anticipation, to anger.

Anyone could tell now that the footless bird was playing around with elder Bai Zhan Wen.

The human torch’s growling which originally sounded so awe inspiring and full of authority, now sounded like he was helplessly venting in a sorrowful state.

"Damn it..." Someone clenched his fist in frustration.

"How can this happen?" Tie Dao Ku was also stunned by Fang Yuan’s skill, sighing as he knew there was nothing he could do anymore.

"Fang Zheng, I want you to die!" Bai Zhan Lie shouted, the seed of hatred sowing deep in his heart.

Elder Bai Zhan Wen’s sacrifice was becoming a joke, being toyed around by Fang Yuan, it was an ironic slap across Bai clan’s face.

Gradually, everyone’s anger turned into disappointment and despair.

"We can’t catch them anymore."

"Can we do nothing other than to look at this?"

"Gu Yue Fang Zheng..." Many people spoke this name, gritting their teeth.

Footless bird flew casually in the air, dodging the human torch yet again and again.

"Young man, your bird maneuvering techniques are superb, hahaha!" Bai Ning Bing laughed heartily, letting her guard down.

Fang Yuan’s expression froze: "Careful!"

BOOM!

An intense explosion occurred, Bai Zhan Wen knew he could not catch up to Fang and Bai, thus he chose to self-detonate.

The explosion and flames engulfed the footless bird.

Thankfully, the footless bird was made of white bones, even its wings were like pieces of thin bone pieces.

The fire didn’t cause much damage, the true danger was the impact caused by the explosion.

Footless bird’s body was full of cracks, and it lost its balance, plummeting to the ground.

After descending for a distance, under Fang Yuan’s manipulation, it regained its balance, and flew far away.

"Fang Yuan!" Bai Ning Bing screamed.

Earlier, Fang Yuan lent her the canopy Gu, she had the Gu worm to protect her, but Fang Yuan did not.

When the explosion occurred, Fang Yuan had no time to activate a defensive Gu.

When the footless bird rushed out of the flame, Fang Yuan’s body was burning in the fire.

The intense winds caused the fire to burn even more greatly, even the earth hearing ear grass in his right ear was burnt. But his expression was cold like steel, like he was not suffering any injuries at all.

After footless bird regained its stability, Fang Yuan took out tusita flower and poured the milk spring over his head.

The fire was extinguished, but his skin was mostly burnt and his face disfigured; he looked extremely tragic.

Bai Ning Bing tried to speak, but could not say anything.

Fang Yuan, however, smirked and laughed: "I like the footless bird, do you know why?"

He smiled, but the sight was horrifying.

"Why?"

"Because it has no legs, only wings, thus it has no choice but to fly. When it lands, that signifies its destruction."

Betting it all in one chance, fly or die!

Bai Ning Bing’s blue pupils dilated, shining with brilliance. The winds blew on her face, causing her silver hair to flutter, Bai Ning Bing’s lips also curled up: "Hehehe, then let us fly up into the sky."

Footless bird flew into the sky, becoming a dot in the horizon before eventually vanishing.

On the cliff, Bai clan members watched until their eyes seemed to penetrate the sky, but none spoke.

An eerie silence engulfed everyone.

The world was so vast!

The eerie blue sky, the snow-like white Bai Gu mountain, the sunlight shining down, footless bird, Fang and Bai’s silhouettes; this scene was deeply engraved into everyone’s hearts.

Fury grew in their hearts, as hatred germinated in their hearts.

Puff.

Bai clan leader vomited a mouthful of fresh blood, and fell down on her back, fainting.

"Clan leader!"

"Lord clan leader!"

"Quick, healing Gu Masters, save the clan leader!"

Panic ensued on the cliff.

(Author’s note: What is demonic path? A kind of path, that has its own ideology and beliefs. Towards what a demonic path is, everyone has their unique understanding towards it, but to me, the footless bird embodied a kind of demonic spirit. Demonic path is cruel, not only to others, but more towards oneself. Thus, it is not well liked by the masses.) Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Another long chapter. Where’s that promised dual-cultivation?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The setting sun was dyed like blood as the clouds on the west resembled burning flames.

Under the setting sun, the footless bird started slowly dropping down after having flown for the majority of the day.

It had made a series of extreme diving and rising actions, while suffering from the explosion of the human torch; its body was filled with cracks and could no longer continue to fly.

Bam!

Under Fang Yuan’s meticulous control, the footless bird finally fell into a forest.

Smoke and dust flew everywhere and groups of beast escaped in a panic.

"Where is this?" Bai Ning Bing jumped off from the bird and surveyed her surroundings.

The trees were short and thick, but had a lot of lush leaves, unlike the sparse amount in the bone trees of Bai Gu mountain. The trees in this forest were like a canopy blocking the sunlight; and the leaves were all purple - light purple, dark purple, reddish purple, violet...

The evening wind blew over, if one looked into the distance, all they would see was a sea of purple.

"A purple forest... we have been moving north all along and according to our course, this should be near Zi You mountain." Fang Yuan guessed.

His countenance was covered with worry: "Zi You mountain is safe in daytime, but is extremely dangerous in night. It is getting dark, we need to quickly leave and find a safe place to stay."

"Okay." Bai Ning Bing nodded.

After over two hours, they found a cave luckily.

The cave’s original owner had been a Pouched Bear.

This species of bear possessed a natural marsupial pouch on their stomach, just like kangaroo.

Dry wood burnt with crackling sounds, the bonfire quietly blazed; the meat stew in the iron pot over the rack was already boiling, giving off a dense aroma.

The fat, tender bear paws were already roasted. Besides these, there were also many delicacies, from Bai clan, stored in tusita flower.

The two quickly began devouring the food, and their strained mood began to relax.

Bai Ning Bing suddenly laughed, her dark blue eyes looking at Fang Yuan: "Look, this is retribution. You burned that pair of brother and sister to death, and now, you yourself are burned to this state."

The light of the fire shone upon Fang Yuan’s face, the severe wounds on his face made him look horrifying and ugly. If a timid girl saw his appearance, they would probably scream in fear right then and there.

Fang Yuan, however, laughed, not minding the comment, he was even inwardly happy.

"Fortunately, we have meat bone Gu, it won’t be difficult to recover your original appearance. You just need to cut off the burned skin and flesh, then we can use the meat bone Gu to grow them anew. But, you are only a rank one and can’t use the meat bone Gu. Come, beg me, maybe my kind and magnanimous heart will feel pity for you, and heal you." Bai Ning Bing wouldn’t let go of any chance to snide at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan made a motion of raising his eyebrows, despite his eyebrows already being burnt off.

"Why would I want to heal it? Isn’t this situation quite good?" He laughed, "We killed off the two young masters of Bai clan and also played the Bai Clan leader and the elder, do you think they will let us go? This injury saves me the effort to change my appearance."

Earth hearing ear grass was destroyed; Fang Yuan’s right ear was shattered. The injuries to cartilage in his ear wasn’t something the meat bone Gu could heal. But even if he could heal it, he would rather have one ear less to change his appearance.

In past, there was a demonic figure, Bai Shan Zi, who was captured and put into a prison. He feigned becoming mad; smearing his own stool onto his body, even cutting off his fifth limb and became a eunuch. His enemies finally believed he had gone crazy and thus loosened their vigilance, giving him a chance to flee. Later on, he returned to take revenge and massacred the whole family of his enemies, including the old and the young.

There was a great figure of the righteous path, Empress Wu Ji. When she was young, her own elder sister had seized her rights to the throne; she could only hide this grievance inside her. Her elder sister was jealous of her beauty and thus, to avoid letting her make things difficult, Empress Wu Ji cut off the bridge of her nose, disfiguring herself, but gained the space to survive and grow. After over ten years, she overthrew her elder sister’s regime and reestablished her authority. She then ordered her elder sister’s five sensory organs to be cut off, making her live in a state where she couldn’t choose to live or die.

Throughout the history, all the great figures were good at biding their time and not being attached to fleshly appearance.

No matter if it were the righteous path or the demonic, regardless of men or women, they were all like this.

After Empress Wu Ji took the control, she didn’t heal her nose even though she had the healing means, keeping this as a warning to herself. The Wu clan became the top clan of the Southern Border, suppressing Tie clan, Shang Clan, Fei Clan; its dominance couldn’t be challenged!

Those who indulged in fleshly appearance were mostly superficial and it would be difficult for them to succeed.

Regardless of whether it was this world or Earth, both attested to this point.

King You of Zhou, just for a smile from his beloved concubine Bao Si, lighted the warning beacons to trick the vassal states; what was the outcome? People lost their trust in him and he was killed by the barbarians.

Lü Bu for Diaochan; King Wu for Xishi; Xiang Yu the conqueror took Consort Yu when he went on military campaigns; hahaha, what was the outcome of these people?

By contrast, Cao Cao was short; Sun Bin was handicapped; Sima Qian was castrated...

Everyone loves beauty. However, achievements were not in the least relevant to fleshly beauty, only a temperament which could firmly let go was the foundation to a great success.

"Actually, it is you who is too dazzling, with your blue eyes and silver hair, you should change it." Fang Yuan said as he looked all over Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing coldly snorted and didn’t reply.

Fang Yuan continued: "The footless bird was damaged, but we have only flown over few thousands of miles. Although we are quite far away from Bai clan, they will definitely come to capture us for the things we have done. We are in a dangerous situation, if they spread wanted posters, our days will become even more difficult."

Bai Ning Bing considered the idea with a frown, before agreeing: "Alright, I am also tired of this outfit, changing into a new appearance might be a brilliant experience."

Next, the two started to calculate their losses and gains.

There were losses; earth hearing ear grass, chainsaw golden centipede, carapace Gu, iron thistles, stealth scales Gu, footless bird, were all destroyed in the pursuit.

However, to Fang Yuan, being alive was the most important.

Only by being alive could there be possibilities and hope.

This was the foundation to everything.

To continue living, even if he had to give up Spring Autumn Cicada, so what?

In a word, being able to let go was the character of a great man!

As for gains?

There were large numbers of bone spear Gu and spiral bone spear Gu in Fang Yuan’s aperture. They had also obtained rank three flying bone shield, jade bone Gu, iron bone Gu, the healing type meat bone Gu and several bone books recording all kinds of recipes.

Besides these, they had also gained clearing heat Gu from the Bai clan.

Of course, the most significant was still the bone flesh unity Gu which they had successfully refined at such a dangerous moment.

Compared to the gains, their losses weren’t that serious!

This was a complete inheritance, after all. The flower wine monk might be a rank five expert, a cut above the rank four Grey Bone Scholar, but Fang Yuan’s gains from the flower wine inheritance loses out to this Bai Gu inheritance.

The reason was Bai Gu inheritance had been carefully planned out for a long time by Grey Bone Scholar, whereas flower wine inheritance was completed in haste and hurry.

In fact, Fang Yuan only walked through the main path of the Bai Gu inheritance, there were many other side branches, and moreover, there were many steel teeth locks that weren’t knocked open in the Flesh Sac Secret Chamber. These things would all serve the Bai clan.

They controlled this place, and so long as they spent some time and energy, they could definitely devour the whole inheritance.

"But it doesn’t matter, I have taken all the Gu worms in my list. As long as this bone flesh unity Gu displays its effects, it will far surpass the others. It is just that the earth hearing ear grass has been destroyed which is a bit troublesome."

Fang Yuan’s philosophy was only those things that are practical can be valuable.

They had lost the chainsaw golden centipede, but the spiral bone spear Gu could qualify to replace it. Iron thistles and carapace Gu were gone, but they still had canopy gu and flying bone shield. However, with the loss of earth hearing ear grass, they now had a hole in the investigative aspect.

They had lacked in the healing and movement aspects before, but now these two aspects were more or less filled, whereas a gap appeared in the investigative aspect.

In life, things often do not go your way.

The night time in the Zi You mountain was much livelier than daytime. Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing took turns to keep watch; both didn’t get proper sleep.

Occasionally, roars and sounds of battles of the wild beasts came from outside the cave.

Especially at the crack of dawn, an intense battle occurred near the cave, waking up the soundly sleeping Fang Yuan.

This was a fight between two thousand beasts kings!

Two winged black feather python had provoked a dark leopard.

The two exchanged killing moves back and forth, their movements were very noisy, and their momentum, astonishing.

Dark leopard was a ferocious beast specific to the Zi You mountain. They had purple spots on their skin, their bodies were powerful and they were extremely fast; they would often leave behind ethereal afterimages when they moved through the forest. Their movements were quiet and their prey usually ended up in their stomachs without even being able to react.

Fang and Bai were on the edge, they could even say they were trapped in the cave, unable to escape.

As time passed, the dark leopard gradually became outmatched, getting into a corner.

This was a pregnant female leopard.

Dark leopard always came in male and female pairs. The female leopard had been pregnant, and the male leopard had gone out to hunt. Who would have thought the black feathered python would attack during this gap.

In the end, the female leopard died by black feathered python’s constriction.

However, before the black feathered python could escape, the returning male leopard saw it, then after another life and death battle, the male leopard killed the killer, but it was welcomed by the female leopard’s cold corpse.

Dawn came.

The first rays of light shone upon the dark leopard’s beautiful fur.

However, the female leopard was no more.

The male leopard paced back and forth around the female leopard’s side and let out a mournful whimper. They were so near, yet so far, separated by life and death.

"Why is it not leaving?" Bai Ning Bing grumbled.

"Relax, the male and the female dark leopards are of one heart, if one dies, the other will not continue to live alone." Fang Yuan sighed, "I will go back to sleep."

He returned to the depths of the cave to sleep again while Bai Ning Bing remained behind at the cave entrance to keep watch.

The male leopard paced back and forth before lying down; it stuck out its tongue and started licking the female leopard’s wounds.

The wounds on the female leopard had turned pitch black due to the black feather python’s poison.

The male leopard lived all its life here, it could distinguish this poison with only a sniff. However, it no longer cared now.

In the end, its resplendent eyes started dimming and slowly closed.

By the time it was noon, it had passed away. It was quietly lying together with the female leopard, their beautiful fur made them look like delicate artworks.

Having personally seen this whole course of events, Bai Ning Bing couldn’t help letting out a deep sigh.

Not long after, Fang Yuan woke up and walked out full of vigor, he saw Bai Ning Bing resting against the cave wall, staring blankly at the corpses of the two dark leopards.

"How is the harvest?" Fang Yuan asked.

Bai Ning Bing shrugged and spoke with a waning interest: "The Gu worms that could fly have all flown away, I don’t have any means to capture Gu. Besides, didn’t you also see last night’s battle? Those Gu worms died or are injured, the remaining aren’t something we need. Haha, if it were not for that, why would someone like you go back to sleep?"

Fang Yuan laughed: "Although they are two thousand beasts kings, the Gu worms on them aren’t anything great. But that doesn’t necessarily mean there are no harvests, hehe."

Saying so, Fang Yuan walked towards the dark leopards’ corpses.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Daily chapter

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bai Ning Bing couldn’t help but become curious when she saw Fang Yuan walking towards the dark leopard’s corpses.

She saw him squatting down and feeling around the ears of the dark leopards.

After a while, Fang Yuan took out two exquisite purple leaves from the male leopard’s left ear and the female leopard’s right ear.

This was Breath Concealment Gu.

Rank three grass Gu; Gu Masters could use it to conceal their aura and cultivation level. To some degree, it was a camouflage ability.

Almost all the dark leopards had a Breath Concealment Gu in the ears. However, the dark leopards moved in pairs and were at least of thousand beasts king level. They were experts in sneak attacks, and were extremely agile; capturing them was a very troublesome and dangerous endeavor.

Moreover, the dark leopards were specific to Zi You mountain. Thus, the knowledge of there being Breath Concealment Gu in dark leopard’s ears wasn’t widely known yet.

In Fang Yuan’s hundred and fiftieth year in his previous life, there emerged a righteous path figure nicknamed ’Hunting King’, Sun Gan. He was the first to wantonly hunt the dark leopards for their Breath Concealment Gu, and made a fortune by selling them to the market.

After him, countless Gu Masters rushed to Zi You mountain to make a fortune. Like this, in only few years, the dark leopards were all annihilated.

Right now however, the Zi You mountain was still a secluded area.

In this place, daytime was safe whereas the night time was extremely dangerous. There were no clans here, but there was an embryonic form of a clan – a hamlet.

Fang Yuan didn’t have the earth hearing ear grass to scout, but fortunately they obtained two Breath Concealment Gu.

Fang and Bai relied on this Gu to avoid many dangers.

They were not going to go up the Zi You mountain; their current strength was enough to move across the ordinary forests, but not enough to go deep into the famous mountains and great rivers. Even Bai Clan would have to pay a great price to explore these areas, let alone the current Fang and Bai.

They went around the Zi You mountain and moved forward, and after two days, they discovered a mountain path.

It was a man-made path, and was much safer than the forests. Of course, if one’s luck was bad, they might come across dangerous situations.

Fang and Bai moved along the mountain path, until one evening, they saw a thin curl of smoke.

The two glanced at each other before hastening their steps. They saw a hamlet lying in a mountain basin.

The hamlet was surrounded by short stone walls, with guards standing on several points. It was evening now and the farmers were returning in groups, walking to the hamlet with hoes and other farm tools on them.

However, these were all mortals and were nothing to worry about.

"Let’s go." Fang Yuan walked towards the hamlet.

"Just like this?" Bai Ning Bing was somewhat surprised.

Their appearance quickly attracted the curiosity and suspicious glances of the villagers.

Most of the villages in this world weren’t too welcoming to foreigners. The clan villagers were even more so; they would set up tight defense around the whole village, for fear that spies and robbers would infiltrate the village.

"May I ask the two distinguished guests if you are respected lord Gu Masters?" Before Fang and Bai even reached the entrance, two guards who looked alike approached them.

Bai Ning Bing didn’t speak, according to their original agreement, Fang Yuan would take charge of all the communications.

Fang Yuan shook his head: "Hello brothers, we are both mortals."

The two guards seemed to heave a sigh of relief when they heard this, their faces clearly loosening up.

The younger juvenile guard disdainfully sized up Fang Yuan’s body, before speaking with some disgust: "I’ll say, how could such a ugly person possibly be one of those lord Gu Masters who possess divine powers?"

Fang Yuan’s whole body was burned and he had one ear less; such an ugly appearance birthed revulsion in people.

Bai Ning Bing also changed her normal attire, she cut off her long silver hair short and also dyed it black. Her body that was white as snow due to ice muscles, was now blackened. Only the color of her eyes couldn’t be covered, thus she wore a straw hat and covered half her face.

As the two stood together, they remarkably looked like mortal villagers.

"Little brother, watch what you say." The senior guard reprimanded the junior guard, then vigilantly looked at Fang and Bai, "Where are you from and what are you doing here?"

"We are from a hamlet across the mountain. We were taking a handcart filled with herbs and salted meat, thinking to sell them, but sigh, we bumped into a tiger on our way. Whoa, that really scared me to death. We ran crazily all the way and only then could we save ourselves. Sigh... we don’t dare to go back for the moment, so we came to your hamlet and hope to spend the night here. We will immediately leave tomorrow." Fang Yuan spoke off the top of his head.

The vigilance in the guard’s gaze lessened.

Fang Yuan said: "Brother, no need to scold your little brother. I got this injuries from a fire; that day, our house was on fire, and while trying to salvage the rice, I was burned to this state."

"Sigh, everyone is suffering nowadays." The senior guard heaved a sigh, "You can enter the hamlet, and if you don’t find anyone willing to offer you shelter, you need to make do by spending the night in the corner of the walls."

After finishing saying the instructions, the guards opened the way.

After Fang and Bai entered the hamlet, the senior guard instructed his brother: "Go tell the village head, that two outsiders are here, he as an elder has rich experience, ask him to keep a lookout."

"Brother, you are too cautious. How could these two be Gu Masters? Besides, why would Gu Masters try to deceive us mortals? To have fun?"

"If I tell you to go, then just go!"

"Making me run errands again..." The young guard grumbled but still left in the end.

The scene inside the hamlet was peaceful.

The air was filled with the aroma of food. After a day of hard work, families gathered around the dinner table and talked happily.

Bai Ning Bing involuntarily felt relaxed in such an environment.

The reason for her disguise was because they didn’t want to leave behind any traces which could make it convenient for the Bai Clan to track them. Another reason was because of Fang Yuan’s cautious nature; by hiding themselves in an unfamiliar environment, they could react to any abnormalities.

It was easy to find a house to take shelter in, just give the villagers a primeval stone fragment and they would be more than happy to vacate a house.

However, doing this would not be in accordance with their current identities.

Fang Yuan had a better method.

He walked around the hamlet, before stopping in front of a worn out house.

There was only an elderly woman in this household. She had a grandson but he was killed by a wolf when out playing.

The old lady was drawing water from a well in front of her house; the action seemed to take a lot out of her.

"Auntie, let me help you." Fang Yuan put on a silly grin and eagerly ran towards the old lady.

The old lady was shocked when she saw Fang Yuan’s appearance.

However, Fang Yuan acted passionately with a silly grin on his face, and after quickly pulling up several buckets of water, the old lady’s vigilance disappeared.

"Young man, you are an outsider?" The old lady smiled open her mouth which had a few missing teeth.

"Yes, we were hoping to stay over for the night in your house. Auntie, I can do your work, may we?" Fang Yuan foolishly said.

"Okay." The old lady happily agreed. Although the villagers would help each other financially in normal times, she still needed labor force like this.

Bai Ning Bing watched this scene speechlessly.

This Fang Yuan could really act!

After fetching the water, it was chopping the firewoods. Fang Yuan also cooked the meal, the old lady repeatedly praised him for his swift and skilled movements.

"Auntie, let me help you fetch some more water. We will talk after I fill the water vat." After the dinner, Fang Yuan again went to fetch water on his own accord.

The old lady kept on saying no need, but Fang Yuan insisted on doing so.

After the water vat was filled, the old lady talked with tears in her eyes: "Young man, you are really... Sigh, such a bitter life like this old lady..."

Evidently, Fang Yuan had fabricated a miserable tale during the dinner, which left a deep impression on the simple old lady.

Lanterns were a luxury to ordinary people, thus the house was dark in the night.

The only light came through the window from the moon..

The house had two simple and crude beds. Bai Ning Bing was lying on the floor but was very satisfied. The exhaustion accumulated from days of walking was now slowly dissipating.

Fang Yuan laid cross legged on the bed, his mind was in his aperture, observing the bone flesh unity Gu.

He had not used this pair of Gu even once since he got it.

After all, he had refined it after tempering the recipe. And with Fang Yuan’s cautious nature, he naturally needed to properly study it before using it.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan opened his eyes, a bright light flashed past them.

"There isn’t any problem, bone flesh unity Gu can be used." After saying so, he summoned the pair of jade bracelet shaped Gu.

This two jade bracelets; one was green as grass whereas the other was red as blood. They were both tied together and couldn’t be separated.

Fang Yuan had already refined them before. However, to bring out their magical effects, he needed to give up one of them and let Bai Ning Bing refine it.

Bai Ning Bing was sitting in a cross-legged position as she received the Gu, but he wasn’t in a hurry to refine it and instead looked at Fang Yuan: "What do you plan on doing next?"

Fang Yuan chuckled: "And here I was thinking you wouldn’t ask."

Despite it being dark, Bai Ning Bing could sense Fang Yuan smiling at this moment.

She just snorted and didn’t speak.

Fang Yuan didn’t plan to conceal his plans from her: "Our next destination is Shang Liang mountain."

"Shang Liang mountain, Shang clan?" Bai Ning Bing’s brows slightly furrowed.

Shang clan was one of the top forces of the Southern Border, not weaker to Tie clan and Fei clan. Only the Wu Clan was above it.

Shang clan was famed for their businesses in Southern Border, and even the people outside the Southern Border - as long as they had some experience - knew that the Shang Clan of the Southern Border was the center for businesses and trading. Shang clan city was so flourishing that there were opportunities for primeval stones everywhere.

When Bai Ning Bing still had Northern Dark Ice Soul physique, she had looked forward to visiting the Shang clan city. Now however, she was hesitating: "With the crimes we have committed against the Bai clan, we might already be wanted by all the righteous path figures. Wouldn’t we just be heading straight into a trap by going to Shang clan city?"

Fang Yuan smiled: "If there are only two places in the whole Southern Border that could accept us, that Shang clan city would definitely be one of them. Shang Clan might be one of the leaders of the righteous paths, but the Shang Clan city is a place with complete freedom, and also a place where most of the demonic path figures dispose of their goods. If not for that, how could Shang clan be the richest clan in the Southern Border? Even Wu clan is far inferior to them in this aspect."

Bai Ning Bing pondered for a while when she heard this: "The rumors said that you could buy anything in Shang clan city, is this really true?"

Fang Yuan shook his head: "The things in the rumors are all talking of the low level goods. There are too many things in this world that has a lot of demand but no supply. For example — a certain Yang Gu? Hahaha."

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Daily chapter

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the dark room, Bai Ning Bing let out an annoyed snort.

Fang Yuan changed the subject: "At this stage, Shang clan city is the most suitable place for us.There are many stores there from where we can buy the Gu worms suitable for us. Although the Gu worms we have now are excellent, they don’t match with each other. Only with Gu worms that can complement each other, can we exhibit stronger fighting prowess and even fight higher ranks."

Bai Ning Bing was in complete agreement.

All excellent Gu Master would have a set of complementing Gu worms.

For instance, when Bai Ning Bing possessed Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique, the Gu worms she had were ice blade Gu, icicle Gu, water shield Gu, blue bird ice coffin Gu, ice muscles Gu, frost demon Gu...

They all belonged to ice and water series, and easily complemented each other when mutually paired and used.

Now however, Fang and Bai only possessed an assortment of Gu worms, if they were to complete a set of complementing Gu worms, their fighting prowess would at least double.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan had stored large numbers of bone spear Gu and spiral bone spear Gu. All these could be sold in Shang Clan City.

Even if there were none of these Gu, Fang Yuan had Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus and could use it to produce primeval stones.

The first objective in going to Shang Clan City was to lay low. The second objective was to purchase and exchange Gu worms. Fang Yuan’s third objective, however, wasn’t convenient to tell to Bai Ning Bing.

This involved rock gambling.

At a dark corner of a certain rock gambling site, there was a rock hiding a legendary rainbow colored Gu!

The Gu worms in Fang Yuan’s possession were as high as rank six Spring Autumn Cicada, Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus which was involved with a rank nine immortal venerable, blood skull Gu which could change one’s aptitude and also bone flesh unity Gu.

Leaving aside the bone flesh unity Gu, Blood skull Gu had already lost its worth because there was almost no blood relative left of Fang Yuan now. Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus might have excellent results, but it didn’t have any advancement prospects since Fang Yuan didn’t have its fusion recipe; the higher his cultivation becomes, the lesser the help it would provide.

Let’s not even talk about Spring Autumn Cicada.

Right now it is still hibernating. If one said to use it, it would be full of danger; but if one does not use it, once it recovered, it would blow up the aperture.

It was a ticking time bomb.

Spring Autumn Cicada, Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, blood skull Gu and bone flesh unity Gu were the most valuable Gu in Fang Yuan’s possession.

In addition, these four all had a common point; they were all involved in assisting with cultivation.

How big of a help they were to Fang Yuan? Big, very big!

However, their use in battles weren’t that obvious.

That Gu in the Shang Clan City was different in that it was a trump card for battle. With it and some other Gu worms to complement it, Fang Yuan could only then be considered to have rebirthed; he would have some confidence in being unrivalled among those at the same rank, recovering some of the bearings of his previous life as one of the big shots of the demonic path.

"It’s a long journey to Shang Clan City, no need to think about this now, you should first refine the bone flesh unity Gu." Fang Yuan stopped this topic.

Bai Ning Bing felt slightly at ease after knowing Fang Yuan’s plan.

Having been in contact with Fang Yuan for so long, she was becoming more and more aware of how treacherous and crafty Fang Yuan was.

Especially his performance today, such simplicity and honesty even nearly fooled her! Not long ago, she had witnessed how Fang Yuan had refined the bone flesh unity Gu and after connecting all of his behaviour, she was beginning to feel a chill in her heart.

She reminded herself to be careful and learn from the mistake of that miserable Bai Clan leader! If she doesn’t have some vigilance against Fang Yuan, who knows one day she might be sold by Fang Yuan while still counting the money for him?

She shook her head to put her mood in check and began to refine the bone flesh unity Gu.

This pair of Gu had strange shapes with one green and another red. Bai Ning Bing chose the red one and began pouring her primeval essence into it.

This bone flesh unity Gu had already been refined by Fang Yuan at the very beginning. Now, Fang Yuan removed his imprint from the Gu and cooperated with Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing didn’t take a lot of time to refine it.

The moment she finished refining the Gu, there was a change in bone flesh unity Gu.

This pair of linked jade bracelets suddenly completely dissipated in the air. And almost instantly, there appeared circular marks on Fang Yuan’s and Bai Ning Bing’s wrists.

What was different was, the mark that appeared on Fang Yuan’s left wrist was green, whereas it appeared on Bai Ning Bing’s right wrist and was red.

A mysterious connection emerged from both Fang and Bai’s hearts.

This connection allowed Fang Yuan to sense Bai Ning Bing and Bai Ning Bing similarly could sense Fang Yuan, as if their blood and flesh were linked and couldn’t be divided.

This feeling wasn’t good and it made Bai Ning Bing feel nauseous as if she had swallowed a housefly.

Fang Yuan’s brows also tightly furrowed.

This hadn’t been mentioned in the scroll left behind by Grey Bone Scholar.

Fang Yuan thought about it before being relieved: "The gray bone scholar had researched this only in theory and never put it into practice. Not knowing this is very normal..."

This feeling was only a minor detail, the important thing was the next stage.

The two endured the odd feeling and sat cross legged facing each other on the bed, starting their dual cultivation.

They both stretched out their hands, the four palms touching each other.

To be on the safe side, the weaker cultivation Fang Yuan experimented it.

He took out a portion of his green copper primeval essence and cautiously poured it into Bai Ning Bing’s aperture.

The green and red circular marks suddenly let out bright radiance.

The foreign primeval essence - when transferred to Bai Ning Bing’s aperture - immediately changed to Bai Ning Bing’s aura.

"It really worked!" Bai Ning Bing softly exclaimed in delight.

"I clearly transferred ten percent of my green copper primeval essence, but you only received three-fifth of it of it; two-fifth of it was lost in conversion." Fang Yuan’s observation was even more detailed.

Bai Ning Bing wasn’t surprised though: "What’s hard to understand? Didn’t the scroll say it? This bone flesh unity Gu can be divided into five types of quality depending on how deep the relation between the two refiners is. From low to high, it is divided into: fratricidal, friendly relation, indissoluble relation, familial relation, blood kin relation."

She analyzed and continued: "If that pair of brother and sister became Gu Masters, and refined the blood flesh unity Gu by themselves, with how deep the relation was between them, I estimate they would obtain the highest quality ’blood kin relation’.If we had refined it by ourselves, hehe, it would definitely be the worst quality ’fratricidal’, considering our relation. These two neutralized each other and we have thus obtained the mid-quality ’indissoluble relation."

The bone flesh unity Gu referred to a series Gu. Just like how in the boar Gu, there were black boar Gu, white boar Gu, pink boar Gu and so on.

According to what the scroll mentioned, bone flesh unity Gu contained five types of Gu worms.

The worst quality was the fratricidal Gu which converted ten percent primeval essence into one-fifth of it; above it was friendly relation Gu which converted ten percent of primeval essence into two-fifth of it; indissoluble relation Gu could transfer three-fifth; familial relation Gu could transfer four-fifth ; and the top blood kin relation Gu could transfer a hundred percent of the primeval essence without any loss in conversion.

By relying on his previous life’s experience, Fang Yuan had tampered with the recipe at the last moment, obtaining the rank three indissoluble relation Gu which could be considered a pretty good luck.

Researching refinement recipe was not easy. It required continuous deductions and experiments along with many Gu worms.

Fang Yuan was able to succeed with his tampering, one factor was due to the insight from his experience and another factor was luck.

However, he had never liked to rely on luck.

This didn’t mean he was born a jinx or his luck was bad all the time. Fang Yuan’s luck was the same as ordinary people; sometimes good, sometimes bad. Why he didn’t like it was because it was a factor which he couldn’t control.

He was a person who strongly desired being in control; he liked to control the situation, control others and naturally control himself.

"That’s it. Your turn now." Fang Yuan said.

On the whole, he was satisfied getting the indissoluble Gu.

Bai Ning Bing transferred ten percent of her snow silver primeval essence into Fang Yuan’s aperture.

What happened next was shocking!

Just before, when Fang Yuan transferred his dark green primeval essence into Bai Ning Bing’s aperture, it formed into a green water which was swallowed by the snow silver primeval sea in just a while; her primeval sea increasing by a bit.

Now, when she transferred ten percent primeval essence into Fang Yuan’s aperture, before her primeval essence had yet to land into his primeval sea, his aperture started shaking.

Fang Yuan immediately shouted to stop.

This was not a problem in bone flesh unity Gu, but rather was the problem of his cultivation; he was only at upper stage of rank one Gu Master and had stored hundreds of bone spear Gu, and now that he was receiving the snow silver primeval essence, the whole burden was too much to handle for his aperture.

Bai Ning Bing hesitated, if she continued to transfer the primeval essence now, she might be able to break Fang Yuan’s aperture.

But even if she broke his aperture, Yang Gu could still be destroyed with one thought from Fang Yuan.

She thought for a moment before finally deciding to withdraw her primeval essence.

Originally, ten percent of silver snow primeval essence was transferred to Fang Yuan’s aperture, which should have been converted into three-fifth. Now after Bai Ning Bing withdrew her primeval essence, only about a fifth of the converted primeval essence remained.

What made Bai Ning Bing inwardly sigh was the ability of this bone flesh unity Gu.

Fang Yuan transferred all the bone spear Gu to Bai Ning Bing’s aperture, and then accepted the snow silver primeval essence.

When this portion of snow primeval essence was in Bai Ning Bing’s body, it had her aura. Now that it had been transferred into Fang Yuan’s aperture, it suddenly shrunk and changed to Fang Yuan’s aura.

The converted snow silver primeval essence sank towards the bottom of Fang Yuan’s aperture and his green copper primeval essence could only helplessly float above it.

The two existed peacefully, as if this portion of snow silver primeval essence was birthed by Fang Yuan’s aperture.

If it was foreign primeval essence that came this close in contact, it would immediately explode and cause damage to the aperture.

Hence, the normal primeval essence imparting was like walking on a steel rope; very dangerous and exhausting.

Fang Yuan tried moving this portion of the white silver primeval essence to rush at the aperture walls.

Gu Masters were divided into nine ranks of great realms, each great realms were further divided into four small realms; initial stage, middle stage, upper stage and peak stage.

Initial stage was light membrane aperture walls; the light was thin and flickering.

Middle stage was water membrane aperture walls; the light flowed freely.

Upper stage was stone membrane aperture walls; the light was condensed to solid state.

Peak stage was crystal membrane aperture walls with ethereal and pure radiance.

Fang Yuan was now a rank one upper stage; his aperture walls were of stone membrane.

However, with one wave of impact from the snow silver primeval essence, this stone membrane wall actually started shaking violently!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Daily chapter.

Translator note: Well... you all saw this coming

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

231 Addicted to cultivating!

Fang Yuan quickly stopped out of fear.

Although he used the liquor worm before, it was used to refine the primeval essence and raise its quality by one small realm. When had he ever used the snow silver primeval essence which was of a much higher quality?

With no choice, Fang Yuan could only reduce the amount used each time, and also slow the waves crashing into his aperture walls.

"To think there would also be problems when the primeval essence's quality is too high." Fang Yuan was slightly aggravated.

In the darkness, Bai Ning Bing heard this and rolled her eyes.

What sort of godsend opportunity was this!

If anyone else knew, they would probably slap him to death out of anger.

This was really a blissful worry.

After four hours, this 6% snow silver primeval essence was finally expended.

His rough stone aperture walls were already showing a glimmer just from this one round of cultivation. It was like a rough jade that had started to give off a lustre worthy of its quality after processing.

"Quick, transfer another 10%." Fang Yuan urged.

Like this, they cultivated the whole night.

When the rooster crowed in the morning, light had started to shine through the window, and Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes.

His eyes were shining with unconcealable excitement.

He looked at his palm and clenched his fists: "Rank one peak stage!"

Just a night of cultivation, caused him to rise from rank one upper stage to rank one peak stage.

What divine speed is this!

Ever since Fang Yuan started cultivating, he had never felt so comfortable and carefree, even in his previous life!

Such a feeling was almost addictive.

For example—

When he had C grade aptitude, he cultivated like a snail. Using the liquor worm, he walked. With A grade aptitude and heavenly essence treasure lotus, he sprinted.

<nulli>But what the heck was this! With this bone flesh unity Gu, it was like he was soaring with two wings!

Even Bai Ning Bing was stunned.

She was smart and quickly realized that this Gu had another greater use.

"This Gu can also help in breaking through a large realm!"

Liquor worm can only raise the cultivation by a small realm, and the Gu Master had to rely on their own primeval essence when breaking through a big realm, thus aptitude was crucial.

But with this bone flesh unity Gu, they could use another person's primeval essence when breaking through to another realm,.

This was an insane advantage!

"With this Gu, Bai Gu mountain was a complete success, even if I sacrifice the heavenly essence treasure lotus, it would be worth it."

At this time, the morning light entered the farm house, and Bai Ning Bing sighed loudly: "This world holds so many great geniuses!"

Grey bone scholar was only a rank 4 Gu Master, but he managed to invent the bone flesh unity Gu, he was a true genius!

All Gu Masters with titles had their specialities. In comparison, Fang and Bai were living in obscurity.

...

Under the blazing sun, in the fields.

"Auntie, take a rest, I'll help you!" Fang Yuan grabbed the hoe from the old lady's hand.

The old lady could not compete in strength against the young and strong Fang Yuan, she felt happy seeing her hoe snatched away, smiling till her teeth was exposed: "Ah, where can I find such a wonderful lad."

Since the first dual cultivation, two days had passed.

The original plan was to stay a night and leave, but after using the bone flesh unity Gu, Fang Yuan was enjoying the rapid cultivation speed and decided to change his plans, to leaving only after he reached rank two at least.

After all, there were still two to three years before that rock is discovered, he was in no rush.

Bai Ning Bing had no objections, there was a huge difference between rank one and rank two. Becoming a rank two Gu Master would be a great help to their journey.

Thus, they stayed in the village and didn't leave.

The old lady also did not chase them away.

The truth was she wanted the two to stay there forever. They worked so diligently, and although one was slightly dumb while the other was ugly, they were honest kids.

Fang and Bai worked in the day, one had the strength of two boars, while the other had the strength of a crocodile; among mortals it was like having divine strength. Farmwork was a breeze, as easy as pie. Furthermore, it was an old lady's house, what tough work could there be?

Everyday Fang and Bai only slept a little, but were still full of energy.

Such a lifestyle - in comparison to moving in the wilds and living in harsh conditions, while worrying for their safety - was like heaven.

Fang Yuan used all his free time to cultivate, like he was addicted.

With the bone flesh unity Gu, his speed could only be described with a proverb, <nulli>a thousand miles a day!

He reached rank one peak stage in the first night. And in the past few days, he was steadily building on his foundation, and his aperture walls had already turned crystal clear. At this rate, he would reach rank two in a few days.

As the number of times they cultivated increased, the bone flesh unity Gu's status rose in Fang Yuan's heart, surpassing the blood skull Gu and heavenly essence treasure lotus, only lower than the spring autumn cicada.

There was no need to even mention Liquor worm which could only raise one small realm, it was nothing compared to the bone flesh unity Gu.

As for blood skull Gu, it required too much investment and time. Although the heavenly essence treasure lotus was good, it could only provide help to Gu Masters who were alone.

As for this bone flesh unity Gu, according to Bai Ning Bing's phrase, it was a Gu that could change even the very structure of society.

This was no exaggeration and was deeply acknowledged by Fang Yuan.

Bone flesh unity Gu was a low rank Gu, even rank one or two Gu Masters could use it. Although it had many refinement requirements, the standards were really not high, and a clan with enough resources could easy refine this Gu.

This Gu was useless to a loner, but to clans or sects, this was a divine weapon!

Using this shortcut, clan elders could nurture the juniors, reducing the time and funds required to raise a Gu Master, by many folds.

With this bone flesh unity Gu, it was no longer nurturing Gu Masters, but creating Gu Masters in batches.

It was a difference between heaven and earth.

Because of this Gu, Fang Yuan even had a change of thought the night before, getting the urge to change his plans of fighting alone to establishing a force of his own.

On that topic, an organised force was just a tool to be used.

Fang Yuan had created the bloodwing demonic sect in his previous life, and if he wanted to establish an organization in this life, it would be a lot easier because he had already experienced it.

But to establish an organisation, the most important thing was — occupying territory filled with resources. And under layers of control, gather people and use their strength to cultivate together.

Gu Master cultivation was like swimming upstream, it was a journey of accumulation and naturally required resources.

Thus to rank five Gu Masters and below, having an organisation's help would aid in their cultivation. However, once they reached rank six and experienced a qualitative change, turning from mortal to immortal, with the might of heaven and earth gathered in them, an organisation became useless to them.

Knowing this, it was easy to understand Fang Yuan's plans.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan established the bloodwing demonic sect to gather resources. In this life, with his knowledge of many inheritance and secrets, he could simply devour these resources and rise to rank six much more quickly. Why would he need to waste time and effort to create a force of his own?

But now that he possessed the bone flesh unity Gu, it would be much quicker than he previously assumed if he created an organization. There would be less investments, but greater rewards, creating Gu Masters in batches and quickly form a large strength.

But after Fang Yuan thought about it until morning, he dispelled his notion of creating a force.

Such a divine weapon would definitely attract the greed of all the large forces, if revealed.

17:09

If he really relied on the bone flesh unity Gu to create an organisation, it would be courting death.

Such a divine weapon would definitely attract the greed of all the large forces, if revealed.

Not to say that he was starting from scratch, even a clan leader with some foundation would not dare to use the bone flesh unity Gu so openly.

It truly attracted the jealousy of others!

Even Wu clan, the number one clan in the southern borders, would not dare to use it alone.

Fang Yuan estimated there needed to be an alliance of at least Wu clan, Fei clan, Tie clan and Shang clan to guard against the greed of all the Gu Masters over the world, if they were to use bone flesh unity Gu in large scale.

"If I want to create a force, even if it starts to look bright, I will get exterminated from all sides. By then, even if I escape, the foundation that I created would be lost. At the end, I would even become a complete loser, pursued by everyone."

Fang Yuan had completely calmed down, knowing that this was a dead path, thus he affirmed his will of fighting alone in a large scale battle.

"But to be honest, Bai Sheng and Bai Hua were quite intelligent. In their previous life, although they used the bone flesh unity Gu and became the righteous twin stars, they did not use this power to grow their clan's force. With their intentional misleading, although the bone flesh unity gGu's reputation was established, people greatly underestimated its ability."

Fang Yuan recalled, and sensed the wisdom in these two twin stars. Being able to come to Bai Gu mountain this time and killing the siblings prematurely, could be considered a great accomplishment.

But Fang Yuan thought again: "This bone flesh unity Gu can only be used by two people. Bai Hua and Bai Sheng must've used the refinement method on the scroll. Without my unique alteration, the difficulty in defining the bone flesh unity Gu is greatly increased. It is possible that they did not even think of this prospect..."

After thinking for so much, Fang Yuan's head was starting to hurt.

He plowed the fields under the intense sun as he shook his head, collecting his dispersed thoughts.

After all, these things were not important and it was useless to think about it.

"Unfortunately, I do not have Gu worms that aid in thinking like creative thinking Gu, intelligent heart Gu, tactful Gu and lightning thoughts Gu. Even at the very least, the bookworm would suffice. It seems I can only purchase them when I get to Shang clan city."

The old lady's field was small, Fang Yuan quickly plowed half of it, when Bai Ning Bing felt interest and started to help on her own accord.

She had seen farmers plowing fields on Qing Mao mountain, but back then she was still muddle-headed, and now that she was in this state, she wanted to experience the wonders in it.

Only when the night approached, did they start eating in front of the old lady's house.

You must be hungry, there are still sweet potatoes in the pot, it will definitely fill you up!" The old lady grinned as she scooped two bowls of rice.

This rice was not the superior rice from the rice bag grass, but rough grains.

However, the two were not picky eaters anyway.

"Eat slowly, I have good news to share with you two." On the table, the old lady smiled mysteriously.

Daily chapter

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Auntie, what good news do you have?" Fang Yuan immediately asked with a foolish grin.

As he was asking, an old man walked in from outside.

Bai Ning Bing secretly glanced at the old man; this old man was a Gu Master!

However, he only possessed rank one initial stage cultivation and was very old, there was nothing to worry.

"Young man, this is our village head." The old lady introduced the man.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing hurriedly stood up.

Fang Yuan scratched his head appearing to be uneasy: "Honorable village head, I am..."

He hadn’t even introduced himself when the village head waved his hand with a smile: "I know, you two are outsiders."

Gu masters could sense the aura of other Gu Masters. However, Fang and Bai had the breath concealment Gu in their ears; their Gu Master aura were concealed, and the village head couldn’t detect it.

The old village head had obtained the report on these two strangers few days ago. But he didn’t take it to heart.

These days, besides Fang and Bai, there were many new people who had come to the village and lodged.

"If you want to come, just come, why is there a need to bring in gifts?" The old lady grumbled.

The old village head hadn’t come empty-handed, he was holding a string of tied fishes.

"I caught the fish this morning from the pool. Your teeth aren’t in a good condition, drink some fish soup to recover your health." The old village head smiled.

The old lady gave him a supercilious look before accepting the fish: "I will go cook the fish soup."

One could sense the happiness in her voice.

Bai Ning Bing couldn’t sense anything from how the two elderly behaved and spoke to each other. Fang Yuan’s gaze, however, flashed, realizing this old man and the old lady might probably have fallen in love at this old age.

"Auntie, let me do it." Fang Yuan immediately said.

"You guys just sit and chat. There is good news!" The old lady quickly waved her hand, indicating Fang and Bai to sit, "I have told your story to the villagers, the village head is a Gu Master, he can help you guys."

"Gu Master!" Fang Yuan’s eyes immediately opened as wide as saucers, he appeared stunned and stumped as he stood there.

Bai Ning Bing almost couldn’t help rolling her eyes at Fang Yuan’s expression. She also did her best to show a shocked expression, but her performance was clearly far behind Fang Yuan’s, and she knew this clearly.

The old village head laughed loudly at Fang Yuan’s expression, he immediately felt this ugly and silly guy was somewhat adorable. Compared to Bai Ning Bing who only looked somewhat stunned, the old village head liked Fang Yuan more.

"Come and sit down, you two youngsters, don’t be reserved." He waved and sat down first.

Fang Yuan acted bashful before he sat down while puffing hard, he appeared nervous. Bai Ning Bing also followed his expression from behind, but it looked somewhat unnatural.

The old village head, however, didn’t suspect anything: "I heard you guys had gone to sell herbs and salted meat, but unfortunately came across a wild beast. Your auntie told everything to me, you have helped her a lot these days. I have some purple maple leaves here. In a few days, a caravan will be coming here. You can sell these purple maple leaves and recover your capital."

When Bai Ning Bing realized this was the good news the old lady was talking about, she immediately lost her interest.

"Thi..thi..this..." Fang Yuan stuttered with happiness, tears flowed out from his eyes as he choked with emotion, "Honored sir, you are really a good person, a great person!"

The old village head patted the shoulder of this devil and tried to sympathize: "No need to say that. Any person has their ups and downs in life. But I can’t just give these purple maple leaves to you, otherwise the villagers will say something about it. How about this, go help plow the fields in the eastern end of the village, you just need to do it for seven days until the caravan arrives."

He was actually really grateful to Fang and Bai.

He had been a mortal who was born and raised in this village, he and the old lady had been childhood sweethearts. But the affairs of the world was fickle, the old lady was married off to someone else. During one time when a caravan had come by, a Gu Master noticed his intelligence and gave him some help, turning him into a Gu Master.

Because of this, he became the village head. Although he still had feelings for the old lady, both of them had families and children and it would leave a bad impression if he stayed overly in touch with her. Although he is the village head, he couldn’t brazenly assist her.

He had actually been secretly observing Fang and Bai, and felt their nature wasn’t bad; they were hardworking and were honest kids, just that their luck was a bit bad.

Hence, when the old lady told their story to him, he immediately agreed to help.

...

"You agreed to the village head during the dinner. Are you really thinking of plowing the fields for seven days for a cart of that purple whatever leaves?" In the house at night, Bai Ning Bing puzzledly asked.

"Purple maple leaves is of course not my true objective. Didn’t you hear during the meal? A caravan will be passing through this place." Fang Yuan replied.

"So what? Didn’t you mention that caravans pass through Zi You mountain all year round?"

"The caravans pass through once a year sometimes, and sometimes, once per half a year. What I had not expected was that a caravan would be coming in just a few days. I made some indirect inquiries and found that this caravan is travelling from east to west. Even if it doesn’t go to Shang clan city, it will at least travel along our destination."

Bai Ning Bing suddenly understood: "You want to join the caravan and borrow their strength to reach Shang clan city?"

She pondered over it for a while, increasingly feeling this was a great method.

First of all, earth hearing ear grass was destroyed; they lacked investigative Gu which meant it would be quite troublesome if they were to travel by themselves.

Secondly, they had committed crimes, the Bai clan was definitely chasing after them without rest. Joining the caravan was a great way to cover up their tracks.

Finally, they had breath concealment gu and were able to disguise as mortals. The caravans would definitely take precautions against foreign Gu Masters, but definitely wouldn’t have much vigilance against mortals.

Even if they were to be discovered, there wouldn’t be any problems; when that times comes, with a rank three and a rank two cultivations, they could still make an escape.

The heads of the caravans normally possessed rank three cultivation. Those that were rank four like Jia Fu were quite rare.

"But even if we disguise as mortals, could we just casually enter the caravan?" Bai Ning Bing thought about it, but still had this worry.

Fang Yuan chuckled: "Of course, we won’t be able to just casually join a caravan, we would need a guarantor even as mortals. But I reckon the old village head can resolve this problem for us."

Only then did Bai Ning Bing felt relieved and let go of her worry.

"I was worried for nothing. Indeed, with this guy’s craftiness, how could he not have thought of this loophole?" She thought.

"Alright. I will be able to break through to rank two initial stage after seven days. And I think it is time to use the iron bone Gu and jade bone Gu."

Bai Ning Bing’s mouth twitched before saying lightly: "I already told you before to use them, but you didn’t agree and just nurtured them vainly for so many days, wasting so much spring milk."

Fang Yuan heaved a deep sigh: "Youngster, you are ignorant and thus fearless of how much pain is involved in this. Tonight, we won’t do dual cultivation, I need to properly rest my mind before I use the iron bone Gu tomorrow night."

Next day, Fang and Bai went to work the fields in the eastern end of the village like their agreement.

Fang Yuan intentionally worked from morning till sunset. HIs body contained enormous strength, this bit of work wasn’t even worthy to be mentioned, but he could already hear other farmers taking notice of him and even looking up to him.

At night, he sat cross legged on the bed and concentrated on transferring primeval essence into the iron bone Gu within his aperture.

This Gu was like a bone, with rounded and smooth ends, and slender mid-area. The whole bone was jet-black as if it was made from iron.

This Gu was a rank three Gu and it required instant consumption of great amounts of primeval essence to be activated.

Fang Yuan was just a rank one Gu Master and shouldn’t have been able to use it. But after Bai Ning Bing transferred a lot of his snow silver primeval essence,he was barely qualified to activate it.

The transferred snow silver primeval essence was almost completely used up in transferring to the iron bone Gu. This gu first let out dark radiance before immediately melting down into iron liquid; it flew out from the aperture and merged with Fang Yuan’s skeleton.

Pain!

An intense and inconceivable pain!

Fang Yuan felt like his heart was branded by a scalding hot branding iron, anywhere the iron liquid passed through in the bones felt like it was being roasted in burning coals.

This kind of pain penetrated even the soul; Fang Yuan’s face distorted under this pain.

Immediately following, drops of sweat began to fall from Fang Yuan’s forehead, and in the next moment, his whole body was drenched with sweat.

After a long while, Fang Yuan couldn’t endure the pain any longer and let out a groan.

Bai Ning Bing’s expression changed.

Because of the darkness, she hadn’t been able to clearly see Fang Yuan’s earlier expression and situation, but from this oppressed groan, she judged this pain was no small matter!

She knew what insane willpower Fang Yuan had; he hadn’t let out a word even when his whole body was covered with flames.

But after using the iron bone Gu, he let out such a sound; from this, one could tell how intense the pain was.

Among the Gu Master’s cultivation three big aspects of nurture, use and refine; in regards to ’use’, some Gu were extremely peculiar. Iron bone Gu was one of those, giving extremely intense pain when used. Unfortunately, one needed to endure this pain, and if in case they lost consciousness in the middle, all their efforts would be wasted.

Historically, many famous Gu Masters had died from pain of using Gu like the iron bone Gu.

Fang Yuan clenched his teeth and persevered, the unbearable pain continued to flood in; he involuntarily let out several groan like snorts from his nose.

In the end, his whole body was almost paralyzed from the pain, he couldn’t even exert any more strength in his jaws.

When all of his bones were dyed a layer of black by the molten iron, he finally relaxed, and almost instantly, a burst of dizziness attacked him; his eyes blacked out and he started losing consciousness.

However, he forcibly persevered, and after taking few deep breaths, he slowly laid down.

"Is it over?" Bai Ning Bing’s voice came from the darkness.

"Naturally." Fang Yuan sucked in cold air, his voice was hoarse but stable, "Go to sleep, we still need to work tomorrow."

"Ok." Bai Ning Bing felt greatly disappointed when she realized Fang Yuan was still able to be clear-headed. If he had fainted, she might have had a chance to get hold of the Yang Gu.

"No, that isn’t right. Yang Gu is inside Fang Yuan’s aperture, how can I take it out without any special means?" Thinking of this, she let go her dark thoughts.

The next day, Fang Yuan didn’t go to work, instead staying in bed.

The intense pain was still lingering around and tormenting him. If he made even a slight movement, the violent pain that emerged felt like a chainsaw was sawing at his nerves!

The pain was temporarily dominating him and putting him into an extremely weak state. Let alone farm work, he was not able to even leave the bed and walk.

At this instance, Bai Ning Bing realized that Fang Yuan had forcibly kept up a facade last night.

Resultantly, she went to the farm and did the work alone.

By evening, Fang Yuan was able to make some movements. Bai Ning Bing refused to believe him and used the Jade Bone Gu.

Obviously, she found out the absurd amount of pain Fang Yuan had suffered!

As prideful as she was, she couldn’t help groaning in pain and even grabbing the bed sheets.

However, even though her whole body was trembling and shaking, she was able to persist till the end. An intense dizziness attacked her immediately after her success; she fell down on the bed and instantly lost her consciousness.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

On the second day, it was Bai Ning Bing’s turn to lie on the bed, in so much pain that she could not move at all.

Fang Yuan had recovered mostly, going off the plow the fields at the east of the hamlet.

The old lady went into the room, asking in concern.

Bai Ning Bing kept saying she was fine, that she was tired after a day of physical work, and that she only needed to rest for a day.

The old lady gave an understanding smile: "Indeed you were tired , your actions these past two days were slightly loud, I could hear it all."

"What?" Bai Ning Bing could not understand it.

"Young lady, stop keeping it from me, I could tell a mile away!" The old lady laughed.

Bai Ning Bing’s pupils shrunk, did her identity get exposed, how can that be? At once, a deep killing intent arose in her, but she could not bear to do it.

She could cold-heartedly watch the Bai clan siblings burn to death, but that is because the Bai clan was destined to be their enemies. Although she was proud, she was not merciless like Fang Yuan, towards people who had helped her, she would not be able to act.

The old lady in front of her was such a case, and so was the former Bai clan leader (from Bai Ning Bing’s clan).

The old lady held no suspicions towards Bai Ning Bing, she grabbed her hand and patted: "Young lady, I can tell these few days, how can guys have such a butt and waist like yours! No wonder you wear a straw hat, and do not like talking. Although I am old, I am still a woman, we women have a talent compared to guys, that is we are meticulous."

"Ah?" Bai Ning Bing did not know what to say.

The old lady was enthusiastic, speaking in an understanding tone: "I understand you, as a women, dressing up like this outside to protect yourself, otherwise accidents might occur."

Bai Ning Bing was speechless.

She hated people using the word "woman" to trigger her nerves. But towards this enthusiastic and simple old lady, she was very helpless.

The old lady smiled until her eyes were a straight line, suddenly suppressing her voice: "You two must be a couple right. You have been too loud these days, I could even hear you from far away. I don’t want to say this but, those actions, you have to restrain yourselves."

This was simply a nightmare!

Bai Ning Bing’s expression froze, like she was zapped by lightning.

"Auntie, it is not what you think." A long while later, she barely squeezed out this sentence, her expression extremely stiff.

" Sigh , why are you so shy, its nothing, you can tell me everything. I’ve lived for so many years, what have I not seen!" The granny winked, laughing until her teeth were showing.

And then her gaze shifted to the bed, subconsciously or not.

Bai Ning Bing followed her gaze, and just wanted to kill herself.

But honestly, the bedsheets were torn by her...

Next, the old lady said a few things to her, but Bai Ning Bing’s brain was in a mess, not listening to a single word.

In the afternoon, when Fang Yuan came back to eat, the old lady blocked him at the door, kindly reminding: "Lad, your wife has told me already. I know youngsters are in heat but you have to take care of your own bodies, and even more concern for your wife. Remember my words okay?"

"Hah?" Fang Yuan opened his mouth wide, not able to react to what he has just heard.

The old lady clicked her tongue, using a dissatisfied and helpless tone: "Everything about you is good, except that you are too simple. Being so honest, you’ll lose out eventually!"

If Gu Yue clan, Tie divine investigator, or Bai Hua and Bai Sheng heard these words, they might jump out of their graves.

Fang Yuan stood on the spot in daze, suddenly light flashed across his eyes, and he finally got it.

"Oh... that, hehe..." He scratched his head sheepishly, nodding: "Auntie, you are right, I get it."

At the dinner table, he saw Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing looked at him coldly, her body almost emitting cold air.

The corners of Fang Yuan’s eyes had been twitching non stop.

This matter was a reminder to Fang Yuan as well.

Fang Yuan can easily portray any role, that is because he has a rich experience and broad horizon. But Bai Ning Bing was not, because even after disguise, she still has her flaws.

Thankfully, this flaw is small, and in this world, whenever a women travelled, she would definitely dress up as a male, to reduce the potential danger she might encounter.

Even though this misunderstanding was very awkward, Fang Yuan had to admit that this can better conceal their true identities.

Bai Ning Bing’s mood became worse.

That night, she asked Fang Yuan again, when he can return the Yang Gu to her.

Fang Yuan could only answer, that once he reached rank three, he would return it to her.

Bai Ning Bing snorted, she understood Fang Yuan, she would rather die that trust Fang Yuan’s words! But now she could not take the Yang Gu by force yet.

"When I get to Shang clan city, I have to get at least a poison vow Gu, three hand Gu, or even seize Gu would work too..." Thinking so, Bai Ning Bing was even more anxious about getting to Shang clan city.

Other than dual cultivation, Fang Yuan’s cultivation has a new chapter added to it.

That is, using the crocodile strength Gu to increase his strength.

Speaking of which, being able to feed the crocodile strength Gu to this date, was out of Fang Yuan’s expectations.

The ones to thank were the Bai clan. It was due to getting large amount of crocodile meat from them that Fang Yuan was able to raise it to now.

Otherwise, it would have starved to death long ago.

Crocodile strength Gu was like black and white boar Gu, they permanently added strength to the Gu Master’s body.

But before rank six, a Gu Master still has a mortal body. Like a bowl, it cannot contain a lake, a Gu Master’s body has its limits eventually.

That is also why Fang Yuan could not use the crocodile strength Gu before. But now, he had obtained the iron bones Gu and jade bones Gu from Bai Gu mountain.

These two Gu were expenditure type Gu. Each had their merits, and their values were about the same, able to permanently improve the Gu Master’s physique.

Choosing which Gu decides the progression route of the Gu Master.

When Gu Masters use Gu, there were much to consider. Some Gu could not be used together, while some complemented each other and produced greater effect when used together.

Bai Ning Bing once used the ice muscles Gu, thus her body was made of ice muscles. Ice muscles stopped perspiration, thus she cannot use a Gu like "blood sweat Gu" in the future.

And if she uses the jade bones Gu, her original mortal bones would become jade bones. Ice muscles and jade bones, it was a superb combination.

Each person has their own needs, ice muscles jade bones might suit Bai Ning Bing, but it does not suit Fang Yuan.

Considering the legendary Gu at Shang clan city, Fang Yuan plans, he wanted to form the most effective " steel tendon, iron bones ."

Being able to get the iron bones Gu on Bai Gu mountain, it was a perfect scenario for him.

After using the iron bones Gu, Fang Yuan’s bones were tough as iron now. With his body foundation improved, he can now add the strength of one crocodile in addition to the strength of two boars.

His strength continued to rise.

Seven days passed in a flash.

According to their initial agreement, Fang Yuan got a cart of purple maple leaves from the old village head.

These goods were very cheap, the entire cart could not even sell for two primeval stones. But this was not Fang Yuan’s objective, he only wanted to hide his identity and follow and get closer to the caravan.

When the caravan arrived, it was three days later than the old village head expected.

Only on the ninth day did they appear.

The originally peaceful town boomed with life again.

The caravan’s size was huge.

Bus-sized black skin fat beetles carried goods and people as they crawled slowly.

Beside them, colored ostriches dragged the dray. Mountain large spiders wrapped boxes and containers on their bodies, winged snakes meandered, and toads carried large bundles on them.

These stead-type Gu, formed the main body of the caravan. Other than that, there were large numbers of mortals pulling cows, horses, or carrying bamboo bags.

"This year’s caravan is finally here!"

"Everytime I see these snakes, i get a little scared."

"Lord Gu Masters are really amazing, they can make these ruthless snakes so tame."

"I hope my cured meat can be sold this time, I don’t expect a high price, I’ll be satisfied with just a few primeval stone fragments."

"Yeah, our luck is not as good as the outsider..."

"The village head is too biased, that is an entire cart of purple maple leaves, to think he gave them away like that!"

The villagers made many temporary stalls at the village entrance, as Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing dragged a cart of purple maple leaves, mixed among them.

Among these people, some were all locals, others were from other villages, carrying goods with them.

Places with people will have competition for benefits.

Fang and Bai, even though they stay at the village and plowed fields for seven days, their cart of purple maple leaves attracted many jealous gazes into them.

Fang Yuan of course, did not pay them any attention.

He was secretly observing the members of the approaching caravan.

This caravan is a mixed one, with many different clan forces among them gathered together. It was not like the Jia clan caravan, with Jia clan as the main force. This caravan, other than the selected leader, there were also a number of vice leaders, like a alliance army.

This was good news to Fang Yuan.

The more complex the structure of the caravan, the easier it is for him to mix in.

"Hey, how much are you selling this cart of purple maple leaves?" Someone quickly came to ask for prices.

"Two and a half primeval stones." Fang Yuan said.

"Two and a half? You might as well go rob!" The person stared with wide opened eyes.

"Buy it or leave!" Bai Ning Bing said at the side.

"Hmph!" The person waved his sleeves and walked off.

If they really sold this cart, what excuse would Fang and Bai use to join the caravan? Thus, they purposely denied three potential buyers and deterred them.

Until evening, they still did not manage to sell the cart of purple maple leaves. Instead, others managed to sell most of their medicine grass, cured meat, milk etc.

After all, the caravan was huge, they needed to replenish these goods.

Many people saw Fang and Bai as a joke, and some even start to mock them. Some kind people reminded them to reduce the price appropriately.

But Fang and Bai paid them all no heed.

Before night time, Fang Yuan pretended to be dejected, dragging this cart of purple maple leaves back to the old village head’s house.

The old village head asked, and sighed: "You two, I told you that two primeval stones were already a high price. We can sell it even for one and a half. Why didn’t you listen to me? Adamantly selling at two and a half!"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

I know some people love this chapter

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"You have to know, there are lots of purple maple leaves on Zi You mountain. Those people buy it because it is more convenient for them, and they can save time from picking them. Sigh, it’s pointless to tell you now. Nevermind, nevermind...."

The old village head continuously sighed.

Fang Yuan bobbed his head: "We just wanted to sell it for more primeval stones, one is to recoup the cost, the other is to take care of our parents. Who would have thought that after so much effort, it could not be sold."

He sounded anxious, a hint of crying in his speech.

Hearing his words, the old village head’s heart softened, the grudge in his heart dispersing by more than half.

Fang Yuan said again: "No worries lord village head, I have decided to follow the caravan tomorrow. By lowering the price, I’m sure we can sell it eventually."

"Follow the caravan? Who allowed you to follow the caravan?" The old village head stared with wide opened eyes.

Fang Yuan said as a matter of fact: "I saw many mortals in the caravan. If they can follow, why can we?"

The old village head rested his head on his arm: "Those are the family servants of the lord Gu Masters! You think simply anyone can just follow them? What if people with ill intentions mix in among them?"

"Ah?!" Fang Yuan’s mouth opened wide, stunned on the spot: "Then how? The caravan is leaving tomorrow."

" Sigh ..." The old man sighed deeply: "Nevermind, I’ll help you to the end. Tomorrow I’ll beg them to let you into the caravan, it’ll all be up to your fate."

The sun had just rose, and there were still a few stars visible in the light blue sky. Looking afar, Zi You mountain is enveloped in a dark purple colour, peaceful and mysterious.

After a night of rest, the caravan had started loading up their goods already.

"Inspect the goods once more!"

"Tie the ropes tightly, if anything drops during the journey, we will punish you with a hundred beatings."

"Quick, quick, quick, feed our black skin beetles till full."

Gu Masters ordered and sent their family servants into a busy state. Some had bad temper, holding a whip in their hands, whoever moved slowly would be whipped. Some loved their Gu worms, and fed them personally.

"Lord Chen." The old village head bowed, paying respects to one of the vice leaders in the caravan.

"Oh, old Zhang, I am busy here, just tell me what you have to say." This Chen Gu Master said.

"It is like this. I have two juniors, doing small business..." Before the old village head finished, Chen Gu Master suddenly shouted: "Chen Xin, why are you in a daze? Go and feed the winged snakes, you think those servants can feed them properly? That snake of yours had already swallowed three servants these few days!"

"Yes clan elder." Chen Xin was grabbed, raising his head and said.

But Chen Gu Master did not let go of him, chiding again: "How many times have I told you, call me clan elder in the village, in the caravan, you have to address me as vice leader."

"Yes, yes, yes Lord vice leader." Chen Xin answered, running away swiftly.

"This rascal..." Chen Gu Master scolded under his breath in anger, before turning to the old village head: "What did you say earlier? Oh! You want me to vouch for your two juniors to enter the caravan?"

"Lord is truly wise, that is the case." Old village head quickly answered.

"That..." Chen Gu Master purposely hummed.

The old village head was turned into a Gu Master by him, because this route needed for the caravan to pass by, he needed someone who worked for him.

For caravans travelling, those villages were crucial, but the mortal hamlets along the way cannot be ignored as well, they were equally important.

The caravans had many people and much to do, much living resources would be quickly expended and need to be replenished along the way. There are also servants, when they encounter danger, some servants die and manpower becomes lacking. The caravan will have to select some mortals in those hamlets to recruit.

Speaking of which, among Chen Gu Master’s family servants, manpower was starting to feel lacking, after all mortals had cheap lives, they were just a type of expendable resources that can talk and move.

"Henceforth, when I cross by Zi You mountain, I will still need to make use of old Zhang, if I don’t accede to his request, wouldn’t that discourage him? Although I am lacking manpower now, I cannot agree so easily. I have to wait, and sell this favor at a good price."

Chen Gu Master was still considering, when a messenger Gu Master from the caravan came running.

There was a stack of paper in his hand, as he ran and shouted: "All members take note, there is a new arrest warrant, there is a new arrest warrant!"

He shouted as he pasted a piece of paper on a black skin fat beetle’s body.

"New arrest warrant? From which clan? How much bounty, retrieve it for me." Chen Gu Master was interested.

"Yes, vice leader." The messenger Gu Master quickly handed over a piece of paper.

Chen Gu Master looked: "Oh, an arrest warrant from Bai clan. As long as information is accurate, they will give a thousand primeval stones? So much!"

Chen Gu Master’s eyes shone, gaining interest in the matter.

There were two prices on the warrant, one was information price, the other was killing price.

Information priced at a thousand primeval stones, normally it is used for a wanted demonic cultivator that has made a name for himself. But this poster only showed two youngsters, with proper features, and one was even very beautiful.

One male one female, these were two newbies.

"One is a rank one Gu Master, the other is rank three. With information price of a thousand primeval stones, and killing price of five thousand eight thousand primeval stones. Pfft, it seems that Bai clan hates these two demonic rascals to the core. Hehe..." Chen Gu Master laughed at their predicament, so long as it is not his Chen family.

What he did not know was, these two demonic rascals were near him.

The old village head took a look at the arrest warrant, and a chill came from within his heart.

"Gu Master’s world is really dangerous, such a beautiful youngster, is actually a criminal demonic cultivator! Let’s just hope that they are not coming to our village."

"Alright, seeing how you’ve worked hard for all these years old Zhang, I will accede to your request." Chen Gu Master said.

"Ah, thank you lord! Lord, I will call them here now." The old village head was overjoyed.

Chen Gu Master waved his hand: "No need, I’m very busy. Just get them to report to Chen Xin."

Towards two mortals, he held no interest. At the same time, he did not connect them to the arrest warrant in his hand, after all this is the Bai clan’s request, and they were thousands of li away. Chen Gu Master subconsciously felt that he at a very safe distance away.

This was a very common thinking.

Even on modern Earth, when murder cases happen in cities, no matter how ruthless and vile it is, other cities do not feel much danger, even if transportation is so advanced.

Other than that, they also have a fluke mind mentality.

In this vast world, where people lived everywhere, how would these two demonic scoundrels come to my caravan? Then I would be way too unlucky, it’s impossible!

People always tend to think that unlucky events would not occur on themselves.

Moreover, many people in arrest warrants are extremely vicious and cruel characters, attracting people’s attention. Two newbies like Fang and Bai, one rank three and one rank one, what could they amount to?

Chen Xin saw the two of them but did not think of the warrant at all.

Fang and Bai’s image had changed completely, not just the disfigured Fang Yuan, but after these days of practising, she also started to become more natural.

Chen Xin lost interest immediately, especially Fang Yuan’s appearance made him disgusted.

He was only rank one, while Fang Yuan rose to rank two several days ago.

Chen Xin observed them carelessly, and did not feel any Gu Master aura, thus calling an old attendant and getting him to arrange Fang and Bai’s jobs.

"What are your names?" The old attendant asked.

Only at this time did someone ask for their names.

"My name is Hei Tu, my wife is called Bai Yun." Fang Yuan casually said.

"Female?" The old attendant frowned.

He stared at Bai Ning Bing and looked, seeing her dark skin appearance and her dazed look, she’s called Bai Yun 1 ? This Hei Tu is also really ugly!

"Women are trouble, you have to be more careful. If something happens, don’t blame me for not reminding you guys!" The old attendant said.

"I know, this cart beside me is filled with purple maple leaves. My wife is staying on the cart and taking care of the goods, I do not want much interaction with other people." Fang Yuan said.

"Hmph, good that you understand."

The old attendant arranged a physical task for the two, to move goods, but for Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing, it is no issue at all, but Bai Ning Bing had to pretend and act like she was out of breath constantly, causing her mental fatigue.

Not far away, some family servants were slacking, resting at a corner.

Their gazes were directed towards Fang and Bai.

"Brother Qiang, there’s two newcomers. Some people saw them bringing in their private goods! That’s an entire cart of purple maple leaves." A thin family servant said excitedly.

Depriving newcomers, it was the ritual that the caravan old timers often did.

Brother Qiang squatted on the ground, squinting: "I see it. Skinny monkey, go test them out."

His body was strong as an ox, although his muscles were developed, he was not a rash person.

In this world where Gu Masters ruled above all, the strength of a mortal is nothing spectacular. Being able to become the most important person in this small circle, he had some wits after all.

Skinny monkey sighed, under everyone’s supervision, he got near to Fang Yuan.

"Hey brother, where are you from? Others call me brother monkey, from now on we will be working together, I hope we can work together amicably." Skinny monkey forced out a smile.

Fang Yuan gave him a glance, only saying a word: "Scram."

Skinny monkey’s eyes expanded as he showed a look of rage.

Fang Yuan did not look at him, but continued moving his goods. He had worked in the caravan in his previous life, extremely clear of such "rituals".

In plain words, skinny monkey was testing water, using words to test out Fang Yuan’s identity, if he did not have any backing, they would work together and bully him, depriving him of some benefits.

But the truth is, not only are humans like this, Gu Masters were the same, they just did it more elegantly.

Moving alone and risking their lives, it included fighting with wild beasts. Moving together in groups, it was competing with their own kind.

At places with benefits, there were conflicts. There is only so much space after all, everyone wants to live better, and have more room to themselves, what can they do?

They can only invade other people’s spaces.

Skinny monkey had not expected Fang Yuan to not give face, thus he was stunned at the spot, staring intently at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not give a thought about such a character. Mortals were cheap as grass, even if one or two were killed, so what?

As long as the goods were still delivered, the Gu Masters in charge would not care.

Even if they did, Fang Yuan had back up methods to resolve this issue.

All in all, trying to provoke Fang Yuan, these family servants were courting death.

"What, why are you not scramming, you want me to chase you away?" Fang Yuan gave skinny monkey a cold look again.

Skinny monkey snorted, but did not explode in anger, instead taking his leave.

Such a strong attitude, it caused brother Qiang to feel threatened: Did these two have some sort of background? Otherwise how could they be so arrogant? I had better check up on their backgrounds first.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The caravan travelled for the whole day, and chose a valley to camp for the night.

The day went pretty good for the caravan as they only came across three small beast groups.

They killed two groups and chased one away. Calculating the losses and the profits they made from killing the beast groups, they had made some profits instead.

The setting sun dyed the clouds with colors; red, orange, grayish red, purple... there were all kinds of colors. The clouds also formed into all kinds of shapes; appearing like a roaring lion one moment, or galloping pegasus the next moment, or a blossoming sea of flowers.

The multicolored sunlight shone upon the valley which resembled a jade-green gem. After the caravan finished all the arrangements for the night, there was a certain area in the caravan that was a cacophony of noises.

"Come, have a look, today’s freshly slaughtered beast meat!"

"Buttermilk, fragrant and sweet buttermilk..."

"Only ten pieces of clothing remaining, stock clearance sale!"

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were also among the crowd.

They dragged their handcart and occupied an area; at their left was a stall selling wild herbs and at their right was a stall selling milk.

Bai Ning Bing was rather interested in all this as she looked all around her: "To think there would be a small bazaar like this in the caravan."

"If there is consumption, there will be transactions, and the consumption will thus stimulate marketplaces." Fang Yuan answered.

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes flashed, these words were truly incisive.

She looked at Fang Yuan: "Are you planning on selling these purple maple leaves?"

Fang Yuan slightly nodded his head: "We have already entered the caravan so we can just conveniently dispose of them now. Keeping them with us will only attract the greed of some scoundrels."

What’s more, it wasn’t easy to preserve purple maple leaves.

They had it for just over a day, and already the purple maple leaves on Fang Yuan’s cart were showing signs of withering. And as time continued to pass, their value will only get lesser and lesser.

Of course, Fang Yuan didn’t care about measly two primeval stones.

However, just throwing them off wouldn’t be in accord to their current identities, and would only serve to raise suspicions.

"The small bazaar in the caravan is divided into two types. The one we are dealing in is only the transactions between mortals and it will be held every day. Another type is the transactions between Gu Masters, which is held once a week." Fang Yuan said.

Bai Ning Bing’s blue eyes - covered by the straw hat - slightly brightened: "It would be helpful to us if we could join the small bazaar held for Gu Masters. Shang Clan City is still a great distance away; if not anything else, we need an investigative Gu to prevent any unforeseen circumstances."

"I have already planned this out but it’s still too early." Fang Yuan confidently smiled as he thought of a certain thing in his tusita flower.

The two were discussing softly, when a male servant walked over while staggering.

He was wearing shabby and torn clothes, his face filled with bloodstains; a clear resemblance to beggars. As he walked to the stall beside Fang Yuan’s, and saw the pots filled with milk, he swallowed his saliva: "Brother, could you give me some milk to drink?"

"Go away. Don’t hinder my business!" The milk seller impatiently waved his hands.

This male servant, helplessly, walked away towards Fang and Bai’s cart: "Two brothers...."

He hadn’t even finished saying his sentence, when Fang Yuan walked to the front and kicked him, shouting with a vicious tone: "Screw off."

The male servant fell down to the ground, his ragged clothes were stained by the black muddy soil. His previous wounds were stimulated by the kick, making him grimace in pain.

He climbed up with great difficulty, and looked at Fang Yuan with hatred: "Good, I will remember this, we are all mortals, everyone has a bad day. Hmph..."

Fang Yuan’s expression turned cold as he raised his feet again.

Bam.

This servant fell to the ground again.

"Dare to say one more word?" Fang Yuan stared down at this servant fiercely.

The servant gave a vicious glare at Fang Yuan as he crawled up, but he didn’t dare to squeak a word.

However, just as he stood up, he was again met with Fang Yuan’s kick.

"I don’t like your expression." Fang Yuan indifferently spoke with his arms crossed at his chest.

The servant lowered his head and crawled up silently, not daring to look at Fang Yuan again. He didn’t continue begging anymore and walked far away.

Looking at his departing figure, Bai Ning Bing asked in bewilderment: "Strange, how can there be a beggar in the caravan?"

"This is normal. This servant must have made a mistake or his master is in bad mood today. In short, he was beaten by a Gu Master and also had his meal cancelled." Fang Yuan shrugged his shoulders, his gaze, however, coldly glanced towards a corner.

In a corner, three to four sturdily built servants were catching new faces, bullying the newcomers.

After noticing the situation at Fang Yuan’s, they retrieved their gazes and looked at other targets.

Mortals had cheap lives, their status were extremely low, and their survival was as difficult as walking on steel wire. Inside the caravan, the Gu Masters could easily beat them to death and take their lives like cutting grass. Anyway, mortals like them could be replenished easily in the hamlets along the way.

Every time the caravans came across danger, there would be large numbers of dying mortals.

Besides these, there were also secret and almost desperate struggles between the mortals themselves. Fang Yuan had just arrived at the caravan, but two groups already wanted to find troubles for him.

He, naturally, wasn’t afraid of these trouble, and could easily resolve them, but he would rather resolve them earlier.

Of course, there were some mortals who lived beautiful lives.

Most of them were those with backgrounds or were relatives and friends of Gu Masters; using this identity to do as they liked.

After the beggar walked away, two groups of mortals approached Fang Yuan.

The head of one group was an old man with sharp eyes. After asking Fang Yuan for the price, he immediately lowered the price to a quarter. Fang Yuan reckoned this old geezer’s identity should be the chief supervisor in charge of arranging the tasks for the servants.

The head of another group was a woman. She was actually wearing silk clothings and her eyes gave off seductive glances. Fang Yuan immediately understood she must be a sex tool of a certain or some male Gu Masters.

The two heads were both accompanied by a large number of people, and although they were mortals, their status were extremely evident.

They lowered the price to a very low amount, with the intention of buying low and selling high. They had some wealth and were not like most of the servants who could not even be sure if they could get a meal that day.

While Fang Yuan had no need for this cart of purple maple leaves, in order to match with his current identity and not let the cat out of the bag, he refused the lowered prices of these two people.

The old man left with pleasant countenance but there was threat hidden in his tone. The woman just walked away while cursing and swearing.

"I will sell this cart of rotten leaves to the next person that comes to bid." Just when Fang Yuan was pondering over his next action, the small bazaar suddenly went in an uproar.

Some people excitedly cheered and shouted.

"The kind-hearted lady of Zhang clan has arrived!"

"Lady Zhang is compassionate and kind, she is a fairy incarnate!"

"She is a really good person, I won’t go hungry today..."

"What’s happening?" Bai Ning Bing surveyed the situation and saw a green image appearing through the entrance of the bazaar.

Fang Yuan was also bewildered: What’s up with this ?

"Lady Zhang!""Fairy Zhang!!" A group of servants flocked over to the woman, and instantly, the bazaar entrance was crowded.

These people were mostly the ones who were punished by Gu Masters and didn’t have anything to eat now. The man who Fang Yuan kicked earlier was also among them, extending his neck and arms.

"Don’t be in a hurry everyone, there is plenty of it, slow down." The green clothed girl said.

Her voice was gentle and soft, and was immediately submerged in the shouts of the crowd.

"Keep your mouths shut! Line up and come one by one. Anyone that dares to rush over or shout, will immediately be slashed by me!" Suddenly, a thunderous voice resounded within the little bazaar.

An old but tough Gu Master appeared in everyone’s sights. And as he gazed at everyone with his ferocious gaze, the noisy little bazaar immediately went silent.

This was the authority of a Gu Master!

There was no one who didn’t believe he wouldn’t do what he just said. As a Gu Master, so long as their mood was bad, what was killing off two or three mortals considered?

The crowd pushed and shoved each other, and soon lined up in a neat long row.

In front of the queue, the green clothed girl held a basket of steamed buns and distributed them.

The whole little bazaar was absolutely silent.

Countless gazes looked at the green clothed girl with respect, worship and even love.

Bai Ning Bing was curious and asked the stall owner to the side: "Who is she?"

"What, you don’t even know of Lady Zhang Xin Ci? You should be newcomers, right?"

"Zhang Xin Ci?" Fang Yuan asked, his brows tightly locked, "Speak up everything you know!"

The stall owner recalled how ruthlessly Fang Yuan had kicked the servant earlier; he didn’t dare to conceal anything: "Lady Zhang is is also one of the deputy leaders of our caravan. She doesn’t have aptitude towards cultivation and is a mortal like us. However, she has a strong background in her clan, the Gu Master beside her is her bodyguard. I have lived for so long, but truthfully, I have never seen such a kind-hearted person; Lady Zhang brings some food almost every evening for the starved servants. She comes even if the weather is bad... Sigh, heaven is unfair, they prevented such a person from cultivating."

Bai Ning Bing nodded her head and smiled, saying towards Fang Yuan: "Truly, all sorts of people exist in this world."

Fang Yuan didn’t respond.

Bai Ning Bing glanced at Fang Yuan in confusion, and saw something wrong with Fang Yuan’s expression.

The latter was gazing fixedly at the green clothed girl, his brows almost furrowed into a knot.

The green clothed girl had silky jet black hair draping over her shoulders, accentuating her beauty. Her eyebrows were like thin like smoke, her eyes as clear as the moon. Her skin was snow-white, and her lips were pink and tender.

She had no makeup on her face, looking soft and gentle. The slight smile she gave from time to time when distributing the steamed buns, was pure and innocent.

She was wearing green clothing and had a fresh and plain aura. She was elegant like an orchid, graceful like a lotus and gentle like water. In terms of looks, she was on the same level as Bai Ning Bing, but she could be said to be once in a thousand years beauty.

If a woman has fine appearance, they can only be considered to be good-looking, just like common beverages. Only with disposition, can they be called beautiful, like well-aged liquor.

No doubt, this green clothed girl was an absolute beauty.

However, no matter how beautiful you were, how moving your disposition was, they were all pointless in Fang Yuan’s eyes!

Fang Yuan was not looking at her appearance; no matter how beautiful and what disposition one had, if you cut open their skin and flesh, they were all skeletons.

However, he was baffled as he thought of a certain figure: "Isn’t this girl Shang Xin Ci?"

Shang Xin Ci was one of the young masters of the Shang clan.

Within a clan, the clan leader’s sons and daughters were all called ’young masters’. Only the heirs who are able to obtain the elders’ approval, could be called ’young clan leader’.

With her identity as the young master of the Shang clan, Shang Xin Ci was a girl with good fortune.

Everyone knew the Shang clan members were greedy and treacherous, but this Shang Xin Ci was the only exception. She was soft and weak, didn’t like fighting, and was very lenient; she was the worst businessman of the Shang clan.

When she did business, she not only made frequent losses, but was also frequently cheated by others. She easily trusted others, and the crucial point was she didn’t learn after being cheated and would continue to be cheated by others.

As the young master of the Shang clan, she was once taken as a disgrace of the Shang Clan and was someone no one thought highly of. However, considering that she possessed the bloodline of the Shang clan leader, she was not expelled from the clan.

She didn’t discriminate mortals but instead felt strongly sympathetic towards them, giving care and assistance. Several times, she had even bought off all the slaves in auction, and was severely reprimanded by the Shang clan leader.

However, fate was truly wonderful, in the end, she became the head of the Shang Clan!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

There’s good news and bad news. Next month, I’ll be away for around 2 weeks so there’ll be a few days of absence. Good news is, 2 chapters daily from today until end of month, should somewhat make up for it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"But why is she here? And, why is she called Zhang Xin Ci? In my memories, she was clearly a Gu Master, why are they saying she doesn’t have cultivation aptitude and is a mortal?"

Fang Yuan was bewildered.

"Is she not Shang Xin Ci and is only similar in appearance? But this is too similar! No, wait a second..."

Fang Yuan’s rummaged through his mind, and suddenly, he extracted a very old information from the depths of his memories.

"Shang Xin Ci had a rough life. She was an illegitimate child born of Shang clan leader when he had gone out to travel. She didn’t have a father since young and had to endure being bullied. After her mother died, her life became more difficult. She was forced by her clansmen to follow the caravan and become a merchant. In the end, when she arrived at Shang Clan city, the Shang clan leader sensed her bloodline. Shang clan leader felt both surprised and happy, admitting her as his daughter in front of the public. But he still felt he owed her a lot, thus he would bear with and cover up a lot of her mistakes."

Upon thinking this, Fang Yuan’s gaze brightened.

"So that’s it, I understand now!"

Combining the situation before him with the broken clues in his memories, Fang Yuan arrived at the truth.

Many years ago, when Shang clan leader was only a young master of the Shang clan, he left his seed in Zhang clan; it was Shang Xin Ci.

Shang clan and Zhang clan were at odds with each other since ancient times.

When Shang Xin Ci was born, her mother didn’t dare to reveal about the Shang clan leader due to this. Thus, Shang Xin Ci was born as a disgraceful illegitimate child and took on her mother’s surname.

This was the reason why she was still being called as Zhang Xin Ci.

After her mother died, she was forced by the clansmen to be a merchant. And after she ended up arriving at Shang clan city, her bloodline was discovered. Her father had also become the Shang clan leader, and with such a high status, he acknowledged her in front of everybody, completely changing her fate.

"So to say, this caravan is her first journey as a merchant!"

Fang Yuan’s heart began to thump loudly when he realized this.

One should know, this Shang Xin Ci was a stock that was absolutely guaranteed to increase; she was the future Shang clan leader. No one would believe it if it was said now.

Of course, the future was prone to changes.

Even in the original track in his memories, there were drastic changes in the world, and even the powerful Shang clan was already ruined by the time she became the clan leader.

To Fang Yuan, waiting till she became Shang clan leader was a very long investment without any returns.

Her value didn’t lie in the time she became the clan leader, but rather when she was acknowledge by the Shang clan leader and became one of the Shang clan’s young masters.

As a young master, she would definitely be given responsibility over a part of the business. This was the tradition of the Shang clan to nurture the clan’s successors.

It was exactly this point which Fang Yuan desired.

He needed a way to dispose of the goods; a stable, favorable and safe channel.

In his important plans after his rebirth, this was absolutely necessary.

In the future, he would definitely open up many secret inheritances. There would be many things which he does not need, and by selling them he would be revealing their enormous worth.

For instance, those bone spear Gu and spiral bone spear Gu in Bai Ning Bing’s aperture currently.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing just needed one of them, at most another one for backup. If they didn’t sell them, these Gu would just die in their hands and they would even waste a lot of milk in feeding them.

Previously, Fang Yuan had intended to temporarily use Jia Jin Sheng as a channel to dispose goods, then it would be best if he could connect to Jia Fu to nurture this channel.

The result; destiny liked to play with people, because of being subjected to the secret of flower wine monk’s inheritance, he had no choice but to kill Jia Jin Sheng.

"This is a gift heaven has sent to me!" Fang Yuan heaved a deep sigh as his gaze towards the distant Shang Xin Ci turned bright as fire.

Shang clan had deep foundations - at least before that violent storm which engulfed the Southern Border - it was one of the overlords of the southern border. When stolen goods were sold to them, the victims wouldn’t dare to come find trouble.

However, because their influence was too strong, Fang Yuan is also worried about possible backstabbing.

They belonged to righteous path on the surface, but the core of the Shang clan members were all black; this was actually quite normal.

However, Shang Xin Ci was the exception.

She had been tested by many changes and upheaval in the history of her hundred years. Her kindness, gentleness, benevolence and honesty were praised far and wide in Fang Yuan’s previous life, her reputation resounding all over the Southern Border.

The most important thing was that she didn’t have any foundation.

Different from other young masters, she would walk a solitary path after she arrived at Shang clan city. In future, she would make many mistakes, but it wasn’t because she was not intelligent, but rather because of the other young masters secret plotting to suppress their competitor.

Fang Yuan needed her as a channel, and she also similarly needed the external help - Fang Yuan - if she wanted to live a better life in the future.

Most importantly, she was easy to manipulate and influence! Her youth and kind nature were both ’weaknesses’ Fang Yuan could exploit.

"Hahaha." Bai Ning Bing suddenly laughed from the side, "You took a fancy to her, right?"

"What?" Fang Yuan’s thoughts paused.

"Don’t pretend, we are both men, I can understand just from looking at your gaze. Anyway, this little girl is quite pleasing to the eyes, but it will be very difficult for you to obtain her. Unless I help you and find an opportunity to secretly kidnap her. As an exchange, give the Yang Gu to me first." Bai Ning Bing tried to entice Fang Yuan.

However, Fang Yuan next sentence made her seethe in anger: " You are a man?"

"You!"

Things were a bit troublesome now. First of all, Fang Yuan needed to approach Shang Xin Ci, then obtain her trust. However, he didn’t have a lot of time, he must settle everything before she reaches Shang clan city.

Bai Ning Bing’s idea of capturing her was too dumb and risky; it would just cause the situation to be even more messed up.

Fang Yuan was very clear the reason why Shang Xin Ci could be repeatedly cheated; it was not that she was stupid, but rather she was too kind.

In his previous life, there was a demonic path figure called ’Night Gentleman’; he was an expert thief and was as cunning as a fox.

He had swindled Shang Xin Ci many times using the same excuse. One day, he couldn’t endure it anymore and asked: "I always tell you this, aren’t you worried I am swindling you?"

At that time, Shang Xin Ci had replied: "You say you are unable to make ends meet, and if you aren’t able to immediately borrow some primeval stones, your family will starve to death. I know that you are most likely deceiving me, but every time you say this, I can’t bear to think that what if you were saying the truth this time? And if I didn’t lend you the money, then several lives might be lost. Although, that is not likely to happen, I don’t want to bet on it."

When the Night Lord heard Shang Xin Ci’s reply, he couldn’t stop his tears from flowing. He was so moved by her that he fell on his knees on the spot.

After this event, he changed from demonic to righteous, and followed Shang Xin Ci with unwavering loyalty, achieving many war exploits.

The sun was slowly swallowed by the mountain ranges in the west and the night gradually descended.

The long queue of people also decreased, till all the servants received food and dispersed.

"Alright, that’s it for today. I will come again tomorr..." She hadn’t even finished speaking when a figure suddenly jumped in front of her.

What kind of face was this!

Eyebrows all burnt off, only a bit of hair remained and one ear less. Who was it if not Fang Yuan?

Shang Xin Ci was startled, the maids behind her even screamed in fright.

"What the hell are you doing?!" That tall and sturdy old Gu Master immediately shouted.

"Lady Zhang, please buy my goods!" Fang Yuan didn’t care about this old Gu Master, and screamed towards Shang Xin Ci.

Bai Ning Bing silently stood far away, enjoying Fang Yuan’s performance.

"I have one steamed bun remaining, take it, okay?" Shang Xin Ci revealed a gentle smile, she didn’t feel any revulsion towards Fang Yuan, only sympathy. She tried to think of how much pain he must have experienced for such severe wounds.

Sigh, such a pitiful person.

Fang Yuan but threw the steamed bun on the ground: "I don’t need this, I want to sell my goods! I sold my old house and bought this cart of purple maple leaves. But I haven’t been able to sell it, the leaves will soon wither up; what meaning will my life have then? Sob sob...I don’t want to live if I can’t sell it. I should just smash my head and die!"

He started to weep while speaking. He stamped his feet and howled, his expression carried a hint of madness and was extremely moving.

Bai Ning Bing was dumbstruck.

"This acting skill, I really have no hope of catching up!"

If she didn’t know about Fang Yuan, even she might have been deceived by Fang Yuan.

She then observed the expressions and gazes of the crowd; stunned, disdainful, sympathy, indifference, but there were no suspicions.

"Who is this man? Charging over so suddenly, scared me to death!"

"Such greed, he actually wants Lady Zhang to buy his goods."

"Serves him right! Does he think trading is so easy?"

"Sigh, the buyers must have demanded a lower price. When I think of those times I encountered..."

There were all kinds of discussions going on in the crowd.

"Tsk, you lunatic, you actually dared to frighten our young lady, screw off this instant!" That old Gu Master’s tongue seemed to give off lightning sparks as he took a step forward and protected Shang Xin Ci behind him.

"Lady Zhang, I don’t want to live if you don’t buy my goods! Lady Zhang, you are a good person, please buy this cart of purple maple leaves and save me." Fang Yuan wailed without ceasing.

Shang Xin Ci’s heart softened: "Sigh, don’t cry. I will buy them, but life is the most valuable thing in our life, live properly from now and don’t give up on life so easily. Uncle Zhang Zhu, give him three primeval stones."

"Miss..." The old Gu Master’s brows furrowed.

"Huh, it worked?!"

"Maybe I should do this too?"

A commotion erupted among the stall owners.

"Thank you lady, thank you. Lady Zhang, you are my, Hei Tu’s, savior!" Fang Yuan was greatly ecstatic and there were signs of tears on his face as he repeatedly bowed.

The old Gu Master’s eyelids twitched, he looked at the cart behind Fang Yuan: "This cart of purple maple leaves is worth two primeval stones at most. Three is too much!"

"Uncle Zhang Zhu..." Shang Xin Ci said with a soft voice.

The old Gu Master heaved a deep sigh: "Miss, it isn’t that I am unwilling to part with three primeval stones. But this amount is too big for a mere servant like him. It is bound to attract those who will eye the money and scheme against him. Miss, for his own safety, we should just give him two primeval stones. Moreover, all the peddlers might come over tomorrow if you give it to him like this."

"Uncle Zhang Zhu is correct, then please give him two primeval stones." Shang Xin Ci pondered for a while and readily agreed.

Fang Yuan accepted the two primeval stones with trembling hands, he looked deeply at Shang Xin Ci: "Miss Zhang, you are a great person, you will definitely be rewarded!"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Today’s life lesson: Kindness will be rewarded.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Many stall owners looked at Fang Yuan in envy.

Fang Yuan put the two primeval stones he received into his pocket, and abandoning the handcart, he directly left the small bazaar with Bai Ning Bing.

"The way I see it, we should just directly capture her. Don’t forget our current identities if you want to approach her." Bai Ning Bing murmured quietly.

Fang and Bai were currently laborers under Chen Clan, they had relied on this identity to mix in with the caravan, but now this was undoubtedly the obstacle for Fang Yuan in approaching Shang Xin Ci.

However, Fang Yuan had already planned for it, he looked at Bai Ning Bing and smiled: "You are right. So I will go thrash people now."

Bai Ning Bing was stumped: "Thrash?"

The clear night sky was studded with the bright stars.

In a wide tent, several servants were sitting in a circle around a coal stove which had a pot on it.

The upper part of the tent was opened, allowing the smoke from the burning coals to fly out.

There was meat in the pot and the servants were all staring fixedly at it. Faint aroma of cooked meat began to float in the air and one could hear the occasional gulps of saliva.

"Brother Qiang, I have made some inquiries on the details of the two newcomers." Skinny monkey said.

"Oh, speak." The muscular servant called Brother Qiang raised his eyebrows.

"These two were introduced by the village head of the hamlet near the Zi You mountain." Skinny monkey answered.

"That solves it."

"I remember that village head was originally a mortal, the vice leader wanted a strategic point and casually awakened him."

"So they had this background..."

The group seemed to have come upon a realization.

"Although they have a Gu Master behind them, so what? Brother Qiang’s sister is our lord Chen Xin’s concubine!" Someone shouted.

"These two newcomers are too bold, if they aren’t taught a lesson, wouldn’t they just climb over our head in the future?"

"Keep quiet, we will listen to brother Qiang!" Someone else shouted.

The tent quieted down as everyone looked towards Brother Qiang.

Brother Qiang appeared to be hesitating. Fang and Bai had a Gu Master behind them. Even if this Gu Master was not a Chen Clan member, even if this Gu Master was an old geezer with half a foot in the coffin, he was in the end still a Gu Master....

"Have you found out the relation these two has with that old village head?"

Skinny monkey immediately revealed an awkward expression: "This... brother Qiang, you also know that with our identities, being able to investigate even this is already not an easy thing."

Brother Qiang hesitated.

"Boss, these two newcomers are too unreasonable, look at their attitudes towards the skinny monkey today? They are clearly looking down at us! They must be taught a lesson."

"Right. That old village head was originally a mortal like us, and with some bullshit luck became a Gu Master."

"What can we even take him as? Wasn’t he able to become a Gu Master only because our vide leader wanted to use him? He is no more than a high ranked servant."

"Moreover, the caravan merchants always face dangers. Even if these two died, that village head wouldn’t dare to settle it with our Chen Clan!"

The noisy discussions made Brother Qiang’s frowns even deeper.

The skinny monkey observed the situation for a long while. He had wanted to find trouble for Fang and Bai, but was instead oppressed by Fang Yuan this morning, causing him to feel full of hatred towards the latter.

However, he knew that he had no background and he could only rely on Brother Qiang for revenge.

When he felt the time was right, he spoke: "For the life of me, I can’t believe what I heard earlier. A cart of purple maple leaves was actually sold for two primeval stones in the little bazaar!"

Brother Qiang’s eyes immediately brightened.

"What? Two primeval stones?"

"How can it be possible, the prices weren’t lowered?"

"Such luck! Which fool bought it?"

Skinny monkey sneered as he spoke with disdain and envy: "Who else is there? It is that young lady from Zhang clan, a mortal but look at her luck, living a good life."

"Damn, I recall how I had smuggled in some goods and how cheap I had to sell them. Why didn’t I have these two guys’ luck!" Brother Qiang’s eyes became bloodshot.

He indignantly said: "We will put them in order tomorrow. Newcomers must show respect to their seniors. If they don’t understand the rules, then we will just have to properly teach them."

"Yes, Brother Qiang."

"We will do whatever Brother Qiang says!"

"Brother Qiang is wise!" Skinny monkey flattered, then took out the stew with a soup ladle, "The meat stew is done. Brother Qiang, please taste it."

The aroma of the meat assailed the nostrils; the adam apples of many servants moved as they swallowed their saliva.

Brother Qiang licked his lips and took the soup ladle, he blew at it before bringing it closer to his mouth.

Suddenly, the entrance curtain of the tent was lifted open.

Fang Yuan walked inside.

"It’s you!" The crowd of servants were stunned, the target of their long schemings had unexpectedly appeared directly in front of them!

This made them feel at a loss and dismayed.

Skinny monkey jumped to his feet and said with a sinister smile: "Newbie, now you know fear? It is already too late for apolo...!"

He hadn’t finished saying his sentence when Fang Yuan indifferently raised his foot.

Bam.

Skinny monkey was directly kicked flying, his back smashing against the coal stove. The cooked meat stew splashed all over his body and burned him, causing him to scream tragically.

"The meat stew!"

"All spilled! The meat we bought with our money pooled together. It is so hard to even taste it once, this bastard!"

"Bastard, courting death!"

Instantly, all the servants stood up with resentment and roared as they charged at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan threw the two primeval stones he was holding in his hand at them.

"Ouch!"

Two persons were hit by the primeval stones; one covered his eyes and another covered his stomach, both screaming in pain.

"Despicable, actually using concealed weapons!"

"Wait a second, this is... primeval stones?!"

The crowd that was charging over immediately slowed down when they heard this.

Two primeval stones lying on the ground drew the servants’ gazes.

Skinny monkey’s tragic scream also came to an abrupt stop as he stared fixedly at the primeval stones.

Birds die for food, humans die for wealth.

"Has this guy gone mad?"

"Actually throwing primeval stones at people? Hmph, he must have already been scared."

"These are primeval stones, I might not even earn one after two months of working!"

The group of servants’ thoughts rumbled like the raging tide.

Some started looking at Fang Yuan with a bit of hope, as if asking: Do you have more primeval stones, come smash them at me!

"You dare to smash my eye, you are looking to die!" The servant covering the eyes, shouted as he let go of his hand.

His right eye was already swollen and purplish, he couldn’t even open it.

However, that didn’t hinder him from grabbing the primeval stone.

The rest of the servants quivered and they immediately looked at the other primeval stone on the ground.

Bam!

Everyone of them pounced at that primeval stone, throwing everything about Fang Yuan to the back of their heads.

Skinny monkey gritted his teeth in pain as he grabbed towards the primeval stone, quicker than others.

"MINE, this is mine, he smashed it at me!" The other servant who had been hit roared furiously.

"Screw off monkey, weren't you injured? Why are you so fast!" Someone shouted with his saliva flying all over.

"Shut your trap. Who tripped me just now, stand up!" Brother Qiang's face was covered with dirt, he was furious.

Suddenly, a hand appeared and pulled him.

Who had such guts?!

Surprised and angry, he turned his head to look, coming face to face with none other than Fang Yuan's ugly face.

He shouted: "How dare you grab me? Let go of your dog paw!"

Bam!

Fang Yuan waved his fist and punched his face.

Brother Qiang's nose bone instantly broke and blood started flowing madly. He felt intense dizziness and all he saw were stars spinning around.

Fang Yuan let go of his hand and Brother Qiang fell softly to the ground.

"My god!"

"He punched Brother Qiang!"

"Brother Qiang is injured, let's attack this bastard together!!"

The servants were stumped for a while before coming back to their senses; immediately brandishing their fists as they pounced at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan indifferently swept his fist horizontally, sending the nearest servant flying to the side. The servant's teeth were smashed.

Immediately following, another servant closed at him.

Fang Yuan aimed at his crotch and lightly kicked.

"Ouu...!!!" This servant covered his crotch, his two eyes rolled over and immediately fainted.

All the servants were down on the ground with few punches and kicks from Fang Yuan, the only one remaining was skinny monkey who was hiding in the corner.

As Fang Yuan gazed at him, skinny monkey shivered and immediately fell onto the ground.

"I surrender, I surrender. Great hero, please be magnanimous!" He begged loudly, kowtowing continuously.

His head smashed on the ground and continued to produce muffled sounds.

However, there was no sound of Fang Yuan's movement.

Skinny monkey raised his head with fear, but Fang Yuan had already left. The servants inside the tent were collapsed on the ground; some had fainted and some were moaning in pain.

Fang Yuan walked in between the tents.

The noise from earlier would have attracted many people. This was what Fang Yuan wanted.

Bai Ning Bing walked over from within a dark corner: "It is just the first day and we have already beaten up working servants. This won’t be good."

She grinned, taking joy in this disaster. However, she was even more curious of why Fang Yuan did this.

Fang Yuan didn’t reply, walking towards the depths of this temporary camp.

Soon, he arrived at his destination - a horse carriage. He had already inquired and knew this was where the old steward of the Chen Clan slept.

He didn’t immediately go and knock on the carriage, but went into a dark area with no one in the vicinity. He took out the dagger he carried with him and began to slash himself.

In the quiet surroundings, a soft sound of dagger cutting open a flesh could be heard.

Bai Ning Bing’s brows raised when she heard it.

She, once again, realized how ruthless and cruel Fang Yuan was; he didn’t make even a sound when he cut himself with the dagger, and from the sound of it, he seemed to be quite skilled at it. It was as if he was not cutting himself, but some wood.

Thud thud thud....

The carriage door was knocked continuously.

The narrow carriage was filled with goods, along with a small bed.

Fortunately, the old steward was short and when he curled up on the small bed, it didn’t appear to be congested.

Thud thud thud.

The door was knocked again.

The old steward who had been sleeping soundly, frowned as he got up from the bed.

Bang... bang... bang!

The knocks were getting stronger, the old steward opened his bloodshot eyes: "Who is it?"

"It is me, old steward." A sound came in from outside the door.

This voice was unfamiliar but it also seemed to be a little familiar. The old steward’s brows furrowed tighter, and after a long while, he recalled this voice belonged to the newcomer that joined just this morning.

"A newcomer actually doesn’t understand the rules! What the hell are you doing disturbing someone’s sleep in the middle of the night!?"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Guess what’s going to happen?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The old steward’s anger surged to the skies, he decided to give Fang Yuan an unforgettable lesson.

Bang, he opened the door.

However, the scene that appeared in front of him was Fang Yuan’s injuries and blood stains.

The old steward got quite a shock, forgetting his rage, he asked: "You, what happened? Has a beast pack raided us?"

"No, old steward. It was those thieves that injured me, and snatched my primeval stones! Old steward, you need to seek justice for me!" Fang Yuan wiped away his tears and shouted.

....

"Oww...it hurts!"

"Has that lunatic gone away?"

"Damn it, that lunatic is too strong!"

The scene inside the tent was of a complete mess. The aroma of the meat stew was still there, but it could no longer be salvaged and the pot was completely smashed.

The group of servants were slowly recovering their senses; they either had bloody noses and swollen faces, or they were drawing in gasps of cold air.

"Son of a ... A mere newbie dares to beat us, this has gone too far!"

"We have not even gone to find trouble with him yet he dared to find trouble with us first?!"

"I cannot contain this anger. We cannot let this be, we must get back at him!"

"How? Can you even beat him?"

"Why would we beat him? We will just tell on him and let the old steward handle him. This newbie is too tyrannical, how can we still work together later?"

"That’s right. Pass those two primeval stones he threw to me. This will be the evidence!" Brother Qiang suddenly said.

The tent immediately quietened down, everyone knew this was just an excuse used by Brother Qiang.

The servants who hadn’t been able to snatch the primeval stones looked at this with joy, looking at the skinny monkey and another servant.

The two of them seemed to be mumbling, but didn’t speak; clearly, they didn’t want to hand it over.

Brother Qiang was not stupid at all, as he said tactfully: "We are all injured, these two primeval stones are not only evidence, they are also our medical fees."

These words resounded with the servants who wanted to have a share, as they spoke one after another.

"Brother Qiang is right!"

"Monkey, hand the primeval stone to Brother Qiang. Or are you thinking of becoming the boss?"

"Brother Qiang has a deep background, only he can avenge us!"

"Brother Qiang, we believe you..."

Under everyone’s pressure, skinny monkey and the other servant could only purse their lips, and unwillingly hand over their primeval stone to Brother Qiang.

As Brother Qiang received and felt the smooth, glossy primeval stones, he felt his nose didn’t hurt so much anymore.

However, right at this moment, the entrance curtain was suddenly lifted.

Everyone was shocked, thinking Fang Yuan had come again. But the one that was staring at the scene was the old steward.

"Old steward, what are you doing here!"

"Old steward, we were just going to look for you!"

The servants were both surprised and joyous.

The old steward’s expression, however, was not good, especially when he saw those two primeval stones on Brother Qiang’s hand, his looks turned even more gloomy.

He reached in front of Brother Qiang in few steps, then snatched the primeval stones and gave several tight slaps to Brother Qiang.

Brother Qiang was stupefied.

The rest of the servants were also stupefied.

After several moments, the group finally reacted.

"Old steward, why are you so angry?"

"Old steward, you, what are you doing?!"

The old man simply walked away and lifted open the curtains: "Qiang, skinny monkey, you group of bastards, come out!"

Then he directly walked out of the tent.

Brother Qiang covered his face, but he didn’t dare to oppose the old steward. He restrained his anger and walked out of the tent in bewilderment.

The rest of the servants also followed him out of the tent, when they saw Fang Yuan standing to the side; his whole body was injured and his cloth was stained with blood.

"Old steward, they are the ones who stole my primeval stones!" Fang Yuan pointed at them and shouted with righteous indignation.

"What the!" The servants only then reacted.

"Brat, you dare slander us!"

"Asshole, I will peel off your skin!!"

The group of servants were furious and shouted one after another.

Slap!

A clear slap instantly suppressed the scene.

The servant who was shouting the most, was covering his face, and involuntarily took a step back from the slap.

The old steward looked at him darkly: "Why wouldn’t he complain, hmm? Hehe, you guys are getting more and more out of control, you even dare to snatch the primeval stones of your workmate!"

The old steward was well aware of the bullying on newcomers, but he was glad to see that happen.

This was a necessary process. On one hand, it would suppress the arrogance of the newcomers, making his supervision work easier; on another hand, it could also promote the harmony between the oldcomers and the newcomers.

However, the bullying this time went too far, they directly snatched the primeval stones; what difference was there between them and the bandits?

"Old steward, it isn’t what you are thinking...." Someone complained.

Slap!

Another clear slap.

The old steward’s tone turned cold: "Did I tell you to speak?"

"Old steward, we must speak up!"

"Yes, we are being accused!"

Many servants shouted, feeling wronged. We are the victims here!

The old steward seethed in anger as he shouted fiercely: "You guys took his primeval stones and you actually dare to say you are being accused. These two primeval stones, are they his or not? Speak! Speak honestly!"

"Yes, yes."

"It is, but..."

Slap slap!

Two slaps, the two servants shut their mouths.

The old steward pointed at them and angrily rebuked: "Okay, let’s forget about snatching the primeval stones, you actually dared to use knives! You sure have guts! Speak up, who used the knife..."

When the servants were crippled and couldn’t work anymore, their recuperation and treatment would be expenses!

If such matters were delayed, the target of the Gu master’s blame would be the old steward.

"Using knife?"

"We didn’t!"

"Old steward, we are all experienced, who doesn’t know about this?"

"A load of bullshit. Do you think I am blind? If you didn’t use knives, then where did his injuries come from? Are you telling me he cut himself?" The old steward continued to angrily shout.

Bai Ning Bing thought inwardly, while looking at this scene from a dark corner not far away: Old steward, you are quite smart, you actually guessed it.

Slap.. Slap.. Slap...

The old steward’s anger had reached an extreme as he slapped the servants one after another.

Every servants received few slaps; none dare to speak up in fear of the old steward’s authority.

They could only clench their fists in anger. The veins in their forehead out and cracking noises were emitted from their teeth grinding. They were all filled with stuffed feeling with nowhere to vent it on.

"Get back to the tent, I will settle the accounts with you tomorrow." The old steward’s hands were already numb from the slapping; as he was old, he was having trouble breathing but his anger had also mostly dissipated.

The servants didn’t dare to go against this order, but before leaving all of them angrily looked at Fang Yuan, engraving his image in the depths of their hearts.

The old steward walked towards Fang Yuan and gave him the primeval stones, saying with an annoyed tone: "You got your primeval stones back, don’t lose them again. I won’t give a damn if you lose them again!"

Fang Yuan was sniffing and weeping, he seemed to be both moved and afraid: "Old steward, please safeguard these two primeval stones for me. I am afraid they will be snatched."

Old steward was speechless for a while, before feeling a rush of excitement. Merchants were always be in danger, maybe one day Fang Yuan would be swallowed by the wild beasts, wouldn’t these two primeval stones be his then?

"Alright, I will take it upon myself to safeguard them for you." The old steward said.

"Thank you old steward, you truly are a good person." Fang Yuan repeatedly bowed and kept on expressing his thanks.

"Alright, alright, I am tired, you should go rest too." The old steward waved his hand and impatiently walked away. As for where Fang Yuan slept, it wasn’t his concern.

"This Hei Tu is truly stupid." The old steward sneered inwardly.

After everyone left, Fang Yuan’s expression turned back to normal.

"The wounds on your body are still bleeding, aren’t you going to treat them?" Bai Ning Bing came over.

"I still have use for them, let’s go." Fang Yuan smiled.

...

Inside a tent, oil lamps were lit.

Shang Xin Ci was holding a book, when suddenly her brows slightly furrowed: "Xiao Die, did you hear that? It seemed like someone is crying for help?"

The servant girl called Xiao Die, was dozing off with her head slowly moving up and down. It wouldn’t be okay if she slept before the young lady.

Right now, she was startled awake. She leaned her ears to listen and immediately said: "Wah, someone is crying for help..."

"Who is crying so late in the night? Why is it you again!" Shang Xin Ci’s bodyguard Gu Master Zhang Zhu walked out and saw Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was slumped on the ground; snot and tears falling down.

"Get lost. I will kill you if you don’t get lost right this moment!" Zhang Zhu shouted, he didn’t have good impression of Fang Yuan.

"Uncle Zhang Zhu..." At this time, Shang Xin Ci and the servant girl walked out.

"How come it is you again, are you haunting us?!" The servant girl’s eyes were wide open when she saw Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan ignored them and only looked at Shang Xin Ci: "Zhang clan lady, my life has been harmed by you and only you can save me!"

"Tsk, you lunatic, what nonsense are you saying!" Zhang Zhu angrily shouted.

"Our young lady is very kind hearted, how could she harm you? Lady, let’s go, don’t pay attention to this lunatic." The servant girl chided Fang Yuan.

Shang Xin Ci’s nature was such that she could never see other’s suffering and helplessness.

Fang Yuan’s blood soaked and wounded body had already won her sympathy. Now, with his words, if Shang Xin Ci didn’t get involved, she would definitely not be able to have a good sleep.

"You say you were harmed by me? What do you mean? Uncle Zhang Zhu, I have to trouble you to heal him first." Shang Xin Ci said.

Although Zhang Zhu was not willing, he could only do as she said. He pushed his hands, a white ball of light entered Fang Yuan’s body; the bleeding immediately stopped and the wounds were gradually closing up.

Fang Yuan said: "It was those two primeval stones, the others were envious of it and snatched my primeval stones. I can’t fight them and could only ask the old steward to uphold justice. They have returned the primeval stones, but threatened that they will teach me a lesson and make my life worse than death!"

"So, it was like that." Shang Xin Ci sighed when she heard this.

"You reap what you sow. Lady, we shouldn’t get involved with him. He clearly brought this upon himself, selling at such a high price, did he think everything would be fine?" Xiao Die rolled her eyes, showing her displeasure at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan continued: "I have discussed it with my companion, we can only rely on Lady Zhang. Otherwise, we will be killed by them, two lives will be lost!"

"It won’t go as far as killing..." Shang Xin Ci comforted Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan interrupted her: "Lady, you don’t know how dark it is here. They will plot against me during the beasts attacks. Maybe one day, I will be eaten by the wild beasts, but actually it was manipulated by them behind the scenes. Lady, I beg you to take us in your shelter, please save us!"

Shang Xin Ci hesitated, but she finally couldn’t bring herself to reject him, "Alright, I will temporarily take you guys in."

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Please save Fang Yuan from the thugs.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Miss, you can’t." Zhang Zhu immediately said.

"Miss, our Zhang Clan’s group here has the least power in the whole caravan. If we take him in, no doubt we will offend another force. It’s not worth doing it for just two insignificant servants. Miss, even if not for yourself, think about our Zhang clan’s group here, or just think of those with you." Zhang Zhu persuaded.

"This...." Shang Xin Ci was placed in a dilemma and couldn’t make a decision.

"What difficulty is there? Lady Zhang, I am only a hired hand of Chen family and am not their servant. Lady, if you are still feeling troubled, I have a way to solve it. You can tell the Chen clansmen that I and my companion offended you, and you want to punish us so you are imprisoning us. Chen clan definitely won’t offend you for us two mortals." Fang Yuan said.

"That is a good idea!" Shang Xin Ci’s gaze brightened.

"Miss...." Zhang Zhu gave a helpless sigh, knowing he couldn’t persuade her anymore.

Fang Yuan immediately crawled up with a stick and bowed at Shang Xin Ci: "Miss Zhang, you are a good person. I will definitely repay you in the future!"

Shang Xin Ci shook her head: "I don’t need you to repay me. I will definitely help those who need my help to the best of my ability. Sleep in my camp tonight. Xiao Die, arrange a tent for them."

"Yes, missy." Xiao Die answered, unwillingly.

"Follow me. Don’t blame me if you get lost." Xiao Die didn’t show Fang Yuan any hospitality, but led the way anyway.

Zhang Zhu’s brows furrowed deeper as he looked at Fang and Bai’s leaving figures.

He didn’t like these two from the depths of his heart, and at the same time he had to think of Shang Xin Ci’s safety as her bodyguard.

He decided to personally handle this matter.

This was a small tent with not much space inside.

However, Fang and Bai didn’t care. They had treated even the beast trapping trees as tents, much less this environment which was much better.

The two laid down in the dark tent.

Fang Yuan clasped his hands with Bai Ning Bing’s: "Everything will be okay, Bai Yun."

Bai Ning Bing rolled her eyes, she knew Fang Yuan’s true intention. In the darkness, she transferred a portion of her snow silver primeval essence to Fang Yuan through her palm.

"Sleep early, luckily we met such a good person like Lady Zhang." Fang Yuan closed his eyes the moment he finished saying this, and began cultivating secretly.

He was already rank two now; his primeval sea filled with red steel primeval essence. Although he could already use four flavors liquor worm, Bai Ning Bing’s snow silver primeval essence was no doubt much better.

To Fang Yuan, four flavors liquor worm had already lost its use with Bai Ning Bing here.

Snow silver primeval essence cleaned and refined the aperture, rapidly increasing Fang Yuan’s accumulation. He didn’t need to worry about his aura leaking out with the breath concealing Gu.

His disguise wasn’t likely to be broken unless he used the Gu worms outside of his body.

At present, breath concealing Gu had yet to truly walk onto the world stage. In his previous life, only after a hundred and fifty years, it was made popular by the hunting king Sun Gan. Within fifty years after that, in that great war that affected the whole Southern Border, breath concealing Gu was widely used and took the limelight.

In other words, according to Fang Yuan’s previous life, mankind would be conscious of guarding against the breath concealing Gu only after one hundred and fifty years. And after two hundred years, they would have methods and experience to respond against the breath concealing Gu.

Breath concealing Gu was a rank three Gu, this caravan didn’t have a rank four Gu Master and although there were many Gu Masters, why would they especially pay attention to ’Hei Tu’ and ’Bai Yun’, two ordinary people?

Fang Yuan immediately activated crocodile strength Gu after the portion of snow silver primeval essence was used up.

Bits of new strength was permanently added to his body. His skeleton was no longer white, but was like firm black iron. It was like a firm cornerstone, stably supporting the continuous increase in strength.

The night passed quietly.

The next day, at the crack of dawn when the sun had just risen, the whole camp was awake.

After a period of hustling and bustling, the caravan resumed its journey.

Zhang Zhu didn’t go directly to Chen clan, but rather made secret inquiries through his subordinates first.

There was indeed a fight yesterday night, and many had witnessed it.

As for Brother Qiang and his group, they had covered up the fact that Fang Yuan had beat them up; if it were to be known that so many of them couldn’t beat one Fang Yuan, they would lose all their face! How would they be able to go around then?

In fact, they had gone through everything yesterday and strung up false statements which they all agreed to; saying ’they bullied the newcomer and Fang Yuan offered them primeval stones, but later he was indignant and looked for the old steward’.

After confirming the fight really happened, Zhang Zhu set out and found Chen clan’s head in the caravan.

This vice leader couldn’t help but ponder when he heard his two mortal subordinates offended Zhang Xin Ci and were detained.

Although he wouldn’t offend Zhang Clan because of two mortals, if he just readily compromised, Chen Clan’s prestige could fall. Moreover, he had some close people among the servants.

Thereupon, he inquired which two servants they were.

Chen clan’s vice leader was slightly surprised when he heard Zhang Zhu’s answer. He had some impressions of these two, he had let them enter because of the old village head’s request. But to think, they had screwed up on their first day.

According to him, Fang and Bai should be the old village head’s relatives, but so what?

The old village head was someone he enlightened and was someone under his control. Giving up these two would not mean anything to him. Moreover, they were the ones who had commited crimes, bringing troubles upon Chen Clan, even death would not be sufficient punishment.

As he thought of this, the vice leader had already decided to give up these two to resolve the conflict with Zhang Clan.

However, he put on a difficult expression: "Brother Zhang, I won’t conceal from you, our Chen Clan might not have enough manpower if you take those two. We can’t make our Gu Masters work and move the goods, right? How about this, I will call my steward over. He understands the situation, if there really is a scarcity in manpower, we might not be able to hand those two to you at the moment. We will temporarily keep them here and hand them to your Zhang Clan to deal with after we get new workers in the next village."

"That works." Zhang Zhu nodded his head.

Vice leader couldn’t help but reveal a smile. Like this, there wouldn’t be any gossips and rumors saying Chen Clan was afraid of Zhang Clan.

The old steward was somewhat nervous when he was called over: Did I make some mistake?

However, when he was clear of the situation, he suddenly felt alive.

This was a heaven sent opportunity!

These two are really out of luck, falling into Zhang Clan’s hands. Die, both of you die, then those two primeval stones would be mine.

Thinking of this, the old steward immediately slapped his chest and guaranteed that there were no issues with the manpower.

Even if there were to be some issues, he was determined to stake out his weary aged body to personally move goods, for those two primeval stones!

Now, the dust had already settled regarding this matter.

Zhang Zhu bade his farewell; his heart, however, felt stuffed.

In the coming dozen or so days, Fang and Bai worked during the day and cultivated during night.

The caravan had already left Zi You mountain far behind and was now in Fei Hou mountain region.

Fang Yuan knew the farther they were from Zi You mountain, more concealed his identity would be and thus, more safety.

Through these few days of cultivating, he had gained half a crocodile’s strength. Unfortunately, a lot of bone spear Gu had starved to death; the amount of milk spring on him was less than sufficient, he could only give up some to feed the remaining Gu worms.

Fang Yuan felt heartache due to this. Although he wouldn’t use these Gu, they could have been sold.

He planned to purchase a set of Gu worms in the Shang clan city. This required a great amount of primeval stones. He could use the Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus to produce dozens of primeval stones daily, but he couldn’t use it in the caravan so as to prevent his identity from being revealed.

Hence, he needed to get Shang Xin Ci in his grasp even more.

She would become one of the young masters once they reached Shang Clan, this would make Fang Yuan’s trip in Shang clan city extremely convenient.

Of course, the premise was that he not only needed to get close to Shang Xin Ci, but also gain her trust.

The forest in the mountain was dark and mysterious with fog lingering around the air.

The caravan slowly moved through the narrow mountain passage, and as they travelled further, the fog became denser, the range of their sights shrunk till they could only see within ten steps.

Fei Hou mountain was covered with fog, Fang and Bai would need to go through great troubles if they had travelled by themselves. However, they were in a caravan now, and there naturally were investigative Gu Masters.

Suddenly, there was some sort of clamor in front of them; the caravan stopped.

"What’s happening?"

"There is trouble."

"Monkey groups are blocking our path!"

In moments, most of the people in the caravan began discussing, but none of them were surprised.

Fei Hou mountain was ruled by monkeys, there were too many monkeys to count. Caravans passing through this place, would be blocked by the monkey groups and robbed. Anyone who had some experience and knowledge, would not feel surprised at this.

"Monkeys of the Fei Hou mountain? Hehe, I have read about them in the books... to think I could personally see them today." Bai Ning Bing softly said with a hint of excitement.

Initially, when the caravans had first passed through Fei Hou mountain, they had a huge fight with the monkey groups, they killed waves after waves of monkeys but the monkey groups appeared again and again. Finally, the caravans were either annihilated or had to retreat in defeat.

Fei Hou mountain was once known as a forbidden and unpassable land for merchants.

If it were other mountain ranges, the different wild beasts kept each other in check, and there would be a gap to pass through. However, there were only bandit monkeys in Fei Hou mountain. They lived together, and although there were fights between monkey groups, all the bandit monkeys would unite if they came across an external enemy.

Such strength was not something a caravan could rival.

Even a large scale clan might not be able to purge all these monkey groups.

This was until the ’Sky Crown Marquis’ appeared.

This was a rank five Gu Master of the righteous path. He travelled deep into Fei Hou mountain until he reached the peak, and using a monkey language Gu, he came to an agreement with the monkey emperor.

Everything changed thereafter.

A trade route opened through Fei Hou mountain for the first time.

Now, this trade route was one of the three most important trade routes of Southern Border, connecting east and west, its importance was self-evident.

"These damn monkeys appeared again. They are blocking up our path, you all know the rules. I will tell you bluntly, anyone who breaks the rules and implicates us, my Jia clan will not let them off!" The caravan leader shouted, coldly.

"Of course."

"Brother Jia Long is right, everything should be done according to the rules."

"Anyone that wants to take advantage will be driven out of the caravan!"

Other vice leaders went along with Jia Long.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bandit monkeys were very strong and were as big as an elephant. Mature bandit monkey could reach ten meters of height and had bulging muscles all over their body. Their arms were over two times thicker than their legs and their tails were like iron rods, capable of pulverizing rocks.

The fur of bandit monkeys were golden with black tiger stripes covering their body. What was peculiar was the fur from their waist grew out naturally to cover the crotch and the butt area, just like a leather skirt.

Howl!

The monkey king of this bandit monkey group, suddenly opened its large mouth and gave a loud howl.

Its howl were as forceful as lions and tigers.

Houuuuuuuuu!

The monkey king’s howl was answered by the other monkeys.

The howls created soundwaves which engulfed the surroundings, scattering the winds and clouds along with the dense white fog.

Within seconds, everyone’s sights broadened and only then did they realize both sides of the passageway were filled with bandit monkeys; over a thousand bandit monkeys had surrounded the caravan.

They were enormous, the same size as the trees. Some young trees could only reach upto their waists.

In front of the caravan was the monkey king who had an even larger physique, and was boldly sitting on a stone bench. A gray stone wine jar that was as big as a water tank, was lying on its side, giving off a dense fragrance of alcohol.

The monkey king stopped after howling once, but the other bandit monkeys were still howling without stop.

This instead enhanced the monkey king’s majesty.

Its eyes were sharp and bright, its gaze tranquil as it sat there without moving. In contrast, those ordinary bandit monkeys were getting restless as they stared at the caravan’s goods, itching to have a go.

Wild beasts like monkey, fox and wolves possessed intelligence.

This bandit monkey king’s intelligence might only be equal to three year old child and wasn’t at the level of cunning lightning wolf, but it was enough for it communicate.

The leader of the caravan, Jia Long, narrowed his eyes at the monkey king and suddenly said: "Jia Yong, go."

"Yes, chief." Jia Yong stood up.

He was tall and fat, especially with his bulging stomach, but he was actually rather robust.

He was defensive Gu Master and his lifebound Gu was water armor Gu. He was a rank two Gu Master and was specialized in fighting in water. Once, when he was swimming in a river, he luckily encountered a boat-sized tortoise and killed it, obtaining a tortoise strength Gu from its body. After he used it, he was able to permanently gain the strength of a tortoise.

The monkey groups howled even more fiercely when they saw Jia Yong coming closer, their voices shaking the whole forest.

Jia Yong had a solemn expression as he lifted his sleeves and stood in front of the monkey king.

The monkey king was enormous and even while sitting, it was still taller than Jia Yong by a head.

It looked at Jia Yong and howled; several bandit monkeys immediately brought a stone table while panting hard.

The stone table was as large as a bed and was extremely heavy, producing a muffled sound as it landed on the ground.

Another two bandit monkeys came over and moved a stone stool, placing it in front of the monkey king.

The monkey king slammed at the stone table, the sounds produced was as if he had beaten a large drum.

Jia Yong gulped a mouthful of saliva and sat down. He placed his right elbow on the table and extended his forearm.

The monkey king similarly extended his left hand; two palms tightly grasped each other.

Beside the table was an elderly female bandit monkey who suddenly shouted.

Jia Yong and the monkey king heard the signal and immediately put strength in their arms, starting this uncommon style of strength contest.

Bandit monkeys respected strength and arm wrestling was their main social activity. Young monkeys could arm wrestle immediately after being born. Arm wrestling was not only a game for bandit monkeys, it was also commonly used method to resolve disputes.

In the past, the righteous Gu Master Sky Crown Marquis was only a rank five Gu Master, he naturally wasn’t able to slaughter the mountain with this strength. It was this armwrestling custom of the bandit monkeys he used to reach the peak of the bandit monkey mountain and win against the monkey emperor. He was then able to obtain the monkey groups’ approval and came to an agreement, opening the trade route.

From then on, any caravans that were passing through Fei Hou mountain would follow this agreement and arm wrestle with the bandit monkeys.

If they won, they would obtain the bandit monkeys’ approval and be able to pass without paying the toll. If they lost, they would have to let the monkey group take a portion of their goods.

With this, the caravans could carry out their business and the bandit monkeys were also happy to be able to get benefits.

As the years went by and the caravans abided by the agreement, the trade route began to gradually flourish, and the agreement also gradually stabilized.

Jia Yong, sitting opposite the monkey king, was flushed red, his expression was twisted as he was already using all his strength.

However, he still couldn’t resist the monkey king’s strength, and his arm began to gradually incline to the side until finally the monkey king’s arm slammed Jia Yong’s arm to the table.

Victory!

Monkey king stood up and excitedly beat his chest with his fists.

The rest of the monkeys were howling and screeching; the noise was frightening.

Jia Yong walked back to the caravan with his head lowered. The bandit monkeys teased and taunted him while he was walking back - some lifted their leather skirt, showing their butts at Jia Yong; some made faces; and some shook their fingers at him.

"To think there would be a day where I am ridiculed by a bunch of beasts..." Jia Yong gave a helpless sigh with a bitter smile on his face.

Jia Long showed no expression, and just raised his hand.

Jia Clan’s troops began to move forward, the monkeys flocked towards them and began to wantonly take goods from the wagons.

Jia Clan had already made careful considerations; they covered the high quality coal stones with a layer of colorful and gorgeous silk and thin fabric. The monkeys were all attracted by these colorful cloth, and let go of the more valuable ash-grey high quality coal stones.

The monkeys were very happy with their choices, playing around with the cloths. Many wrapped the cloth around their arms, waists and even draped the cloth over their shoulders; the whole scene was noisy and chaotic.

"Where is Jia Ping?" Jia Long shouted with a heavy voice.

Jia Ping slowly walked out, his body was starkly in contrast to Jia Yong, he was thin as stick and looked extremely fragile.

"I will avenge you." He patted Jia Yong’s shoulder as he walked past him.

"This will naturally be easily over with Brother Jia Ping making a move." Jia Yong cupped his hands and gave a forced smile.

Jia clansmen let out a breath of relief upon seeing Jia Ping moving out; their expressions clearly easing up.

The bandit monkeys let out odd yells when they saw Jia Ping’s physique, their gazes filled with contempt and disdain.

Monkey King was already sitting down, he indifferently lifted the wine jar and drank a mouthful of monkey wine.

"They are indeed animals, judging people by appearances." Jia Long sneered.

Jia Ping looked weak, but actually possessed strength of two bears. It was just that he used tendon coiling Gu which intertwined his whole muscles and tendons just like tree roots, and thus compressing his muscles.

Jia Ping sat down and stretched his arm.

His arm wasn’t even a quarter of the monkey king’s arm. However, after they started, the deadlock only lasted a moment before the monkey king was defeated.

Instantly, the howls and screeches of the monkeys stopped.

The monkey king’s eyes were opened as wide as saucers, revealing an incredulous expression.

Jia Long chuckled and waved his hand, signalling the troop to continue moving.

The monkeys that were blocking the path automatically made a way and didn’t make any moves. When a portion of Jia clan’s troops moved forward, the monkeys howled and again blocked the path.

The monkey king wasn’t convinced in its loss as it slammed the stone table and challenged Jia Ping.

Jia Ping had a smile on his face as he gained another victory.

"Everyone, I am going to move first." Jia Long cupped his hands and after calling out to the others, the Jia clan’s troops and wagons passed through the checkpoint.

"Alright, next it is my Lin Clan’s turn. Lin Dong!" Lin clan’s vice leader shouted.

The others didn’t argue, they had already discussed the order of the caravan.

Time continued to pass and parts of the caravan had also moved forward.

To pass through the Fei Hou mountain and decrease the losses to the minimum, all the great clans nurtured a lot of specific Gu Masters.

Ox strength, Tiger strength, Elephant strength, Python strength, Horse strength... the Gu Masters possessing these went to compete, each showing their talents; some lost and some won.

Most of the people had passed through the checkpoint. Finally, it was Zhang Clan’s turn.

Zhang Zhu didn’t look good, he was a healing Gu Master and wasn’t good at strength aspect.

Moreover, when arm wrestling with the monkey king, one could only use their strength and not the Gu worms. If they were discovered to have cheated by using Gu worms, they would be attacked and killed by the monkey groups.

The troops Zhang clan brought in this caravan didn’t have any other Gu Masters except him, a rank three Gu Master. Thus, they were the weakest in strength in the whole caravan.

Shang Xin Ci did not have an easy life in Zhang Clan, and was shunted aside for being an illegitimate child. The situation had become worse after her mother died of illness.

In light of her mother’s will, Shang Xin Ci sold the family assets and organized this caravan.

Most of Zhang Clan’s people looked forward to this disgrace of the clan dying outside. Thus, they didn’t send any Gu Masters to reinforce her.

"Uncle Zhang Zhu doesn’t need to worry too much, they are nothing more than goods, it is okay as long as people are safe." Shang Xin Ci had a delicate heart, she softly consoled Zhang Zhu when she noticed his expression.

"The only one remaining is Zhang Clan."

"Tsk, tsk no need to watch, they are sure to lose. I am quite familiar with that Zhang Zhu."

"It is said that Zhang Clan’s girl organized this merchant group by herself. Hence, there is only Zhang Zhu to put up a front.

Many Gu Master stood behind the checkpoint, waiting to see a good show.

They had all, more or less, lost some goods, their mood were naturally not too good.

Comparison produces happiness, the unlucky people often felt relieved by seeing a more unlucky person.

Many were looking at Zhang Clan, trying to find comfort in their hearts.

"Goods can be lost, only lives are truly important. Uncle Zhang Zhu, you don’t need to go, we will just let these monkey groups take the goods." Shang Xin Ci said.

" Sigh , miss, you don’t know. We can’t pass through without competing, these monkeys are very obstinate, we must arm wrestle. Miss, we can lose but we can’t let others belittle us. I will go!" Zhang Zhu cupped his hands and forced himself to walk out.

"Wait, wait!" Right at this time, Fang Yuan walked out of the crowd.

"Miss Zhang, you are my benefactor. Let me be the one to go." He cupped his hands and said to Shang Xin Ci.

"You?" The servant girl Xiao Die rolled her eyes, "You are not a Gu Master, don’t add trouble at this time of crisis!"

Shang Xin Ci smiled: "Hei Tu, I have received your intention. This isn’t a joke, the monkey king has great strength, didn’t you see some of those Gu Masters’ arms fractured?"

"Miss, even if my arms fracture, I will repay you." Fang Yuan persevered.

"You, how can you be like this, not knowing your limitations. If your arm gets fractured, wouldn’t it be my missy who has to waste time healing you?" Xiao Die waved her hand in disgust, "Don’t stir trouble."

"Lady Zhang, you don’t know, I have always had extraordinary strength since young, even adults didn’t have as much strength as me when I was a kid. I must go this time!" Fang Yuan then turned and walked towards the monkey king.

"Hei Tu!" Shang Xin Ci wanted to stop him, but was stopped by Zhang Zhu.

"Miss, he is not a moron, he definitely has some confidence. Sometimes, we need to believe in others." Zhang Zhu persuaded.

In fact, he had no faith in Fang Yuan. He only thought this would teach a good lesson to these mortals who had brought him trouble.

"Eh, look, Zhang Clan actually sent out a servant!"

"Haha, Zhang Clan has no people left, they are sending out a servant to lose face?"

Fang Yuan’s figure soon attracted the attention of the others.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"It is him, hehe, heaven has opened its eyes." Brother Qiang and his group’s gazes turned bright with excitement upon Fang Yuan’s figure.

"I can’t wait to see his arm break."

"Lady Zhang is kind, he wasn’t put to execution even after offending the Zhang Clan. It turns out they were waiting to send him here."

Fang Yuan walked slowly towards the stone table and directly sat down.

The monkey king gazed at him, then stretched its arm.

The two sides clasped their palms together and began the contest under countless gazes.

The monkey king exerted its strength, but Fang Yuan’s arm was like it was made from steel and didn’t budge even a little.

The monkey king’s pupils shrunk, revealing a hint of astonishment; this was the strongest human it had met in its life!

Fang Yuan inwardly laughed: I could defeat this monkey king even when I only possessed strength of two boars, let alone now when my strength has increased by half of a crocodile’s strength.

The monkey king had already gone through many rounds before and it was already lacking in strength now. One could say, this situation was of an absolute victory to Fang Yuan.

"This monkey king doesn’t have enormous strength. Before, those Gu Masters who possessed strength of a bear or strength of a horse had ended up losing to it, it wasn’t because their strength was inferior to the monkey king’s, but rather because they couldn’t bring out all their strength in arm wrestling."

In fact, all strength type Gu like bear strength, horse strength, rabbit strength, fish strength, tortoise strength, crocodile strength, were different.

This difference wasn’t only in the amount of their strength, but was more on their fields of expertise..

Bear strength for smacking, horse strength for galloping, rabbit strength for jumping, tortoise strength for endurance, crocodile strength for biting. They each had their own fields of expertise.

In other words, in certain situations, some types of powers could be utilized to their maximum effects.

As for arm wrestling, it focused on the strength of arms.

The bandit monkeys were experts regarding this. One could tell just from looking at their physique, with their upper limbs being over two time thicker than their lower limbs. They could arm wrestle from their birth, possessing the foundation of strength training.

If the armwrestling was change to another form of contest, many of the defeated Gu Masters might be able to win against the bandit monkey king.

From this, one could derive that every power possessed their own unique points, and they couldn’t simply be differentiated by looking at the amount of their strength.

"Take humans for example, a punch would definitely be weaker than a kick. Under normal condition, a person cannot use all their strength. I have strength of two boars, half of a crocodile’s strength and my own strength, but it is impossible for my arm wrestling strength to match theirs. Of course, concentrating all of one’s strength in one movement is not impossible. One would need that legendary Gu worm..."

Fang Yuan couldn’t display his true strength in arm wrestling, but he was someone with very deep foundations, and could guarantee his victory.

However, he couldn’t make it blatantly obvious. Hence, he intentionally revealed a strained expression, his arms shaking as he maintained the deadlock with the monkey king.

Slowly, his arm pushed down on monkey king’s.

When the contest ended, almost everyone was stumped.

"He actually won!"

"This guy has innate divine strength!"

The human groups were in an uproar, their surprised gasps spreading to others.

"Inquire about this guy. We need to immediately recruit him if possible!" The heads of main clans felt a rush of excitement.

Compared to the Gu Masters who they could only nurture after investing large amounts of funds, Fang Yuan’s quality to price ratio was much higher.

They could use him without any investment, and bring in profits for their caravan.

"Zhang Clan’s luck is good, picking up such a treasure." Instantly, many Gu Masters’ gazes towards the Zhang Clan contained some envy.

"No wonder we couldn’t beat him!" Brother Qiang and his group were speechless.

"This is a monster."

"Now that I think of it, I am really lucky to not have been beaten to death by him."

As this group of servants thought back, they were immediately filled with afterfear.

They had previously still been looking to take revenge against Fang Yuan, but now looking at this sight, all their hopes of revenge were gone. On the contrary, they became worried that Fang Yuan would look for trouble for them in future.

Chen Clan’s old steward’s expression looked ugly.

"To think this idiot actually had such brute strength. What bad luck... now if only the vice leader doesn’t blame me..." He cautiously glanced at the Clen Clan’s vice leader.

Chen Clan’s vice leader was frowning, he was thinking of much more.

He started to doubt Zhang Clan’s intention. Was demanding for those two a trap? Did they see this servant’s worth and intentionally kept him, then came to demand for them?

The more he thought, the more reasonable he felt his thoughts were; he couldn’t help snorting coldly. Anyone who felt he was played with and cheated, wouldn’t have a good mood.

But the mistake was already done, he could only pinch his nose and endure this bad luck.

"Am I seeing things?" The servant girl Xiao Die covered her mouth; she was speechless at this result.

Worry disappeared from Shang Xin Ci’s face, and was replaced by a smile.

"Let’s go." Zhang Zhu waved at the troops to move ahead with a complex look on his eyes.

Fang Yuan won, allowing Zhang clan’s caravan to pass through this checkpoint.

Fang Yuan won two rounds straight; the Zhang clan’s caravan were able to pass through most of the path. At the third round, Fang Yuan intentionally lost to keep up his disguise, resulting in many goods being taken out of Zhang clan’s wagons.

Even so, Fang Yuan’s performance was enough to make others see him in a whole new light.

He received a warm welcome back at the caravan.

"Lady Zhang, I have finished my mission." He cupped his hands to Shang Xin Ci.

Shang Xin Ci’s beautiful eyes shone as she sized up Fang Yuan again, and said with a gentle voice: "My mother said to never judge people by their appearances, and Hei Tu, you have given me a live example. I am really thankful to you, this is one hundred and fifty primeval stones as my thanks to you."

"One hundred and fifty primeval stones?" The servant girl Xiao Die was startled, "Miss, what are you doing giving him so much!?"

Fang Yuan backed a step and righteously declined: "Lady, I did it to repay your kindness and not for these primeval stones. Please take them back, I can’t take this reward."

Xiao Die immediately agreed: "Miss, look he doesn’t want it, it is better if you put it away."

Shang Xin Ci, however, insisted: "This isn’t a reward, but a gift of thanks, my thanks to you."

Fang Yuan showed a righteous expression and said with a solemn tone: "Let alone this one hundred and fifty primeval stones, even if it was one thousand primeval stones, I don’t want them. Lady Zhang, I may only be a mortal, but please don’t humiliate me!"

"This..." Shang Xin Ci was helpless against such remark and could only put the primeval stones back.

"Hmph, you know how to be tactful." Xiao Die quirked her mouth.

Zhang Zhu remained silent, his gaze turning more complicated.

"The favor of repaying life is hard to repay. Please let me use my strength for you." Fang Yuan cupped his hands.

There were numerous monkey groups in bandit monkey mountain and every so often along the trade route, there would be some monkey groups who would occupy the area and set a checkpoint.

Fang Yuan repeatedly went to compete with them, and under his deliberate performance, he lost some and won some.

Caravans moved and stopped continuously, spending over twenty days in bandit monkey mountain before they got out of this tall mountain.

The goods in the caravans had decreased by almost half by now. The mood couldn’t help being low.

Zhang Clan was the only one that was happy.

Because of Fang Yuan’s strength, their losses were far less than their previous estimations.

Fang Yuan became famous and a many clans sent their servants to visit him.

They all wanted to recruit Fang Yuan and gave attractive terms, but Fang Yuan refused all of them and stayed with Zhang Clan.

"You have some conscience, kid. You didn’t waste missy’s kindness." Xiao Die’s attitude towards Fang Yuan had changed.

This servant girl said whatever she thought and wasn’t shrewd, but whatever her attitude is, it was never in Fang Yuan’s considerations. Fang Yuan only cared about Shang Xin Ci and her guard Zhang Zhu.

Shang Xin Ci was gentle and kind, but also very smart. The Gu Master Zhang Zhu was very experienced and prudent.

Fang Yuan even felt that Zhang Zhu was already beginning to suspect him.

In private, Bai Ning Bing also reminded Fang Yuan: "Refusing that hundred and fifty primeval stones was a mistake. With your current identity, how could your heart not be moved by such a huge sum? For cautiousness, we should stop cultivation for some time to guard against Zhang Zhu’s secret investigation."

However, Fang Yuan refused this suggestion and still cultivated non-stop every night.

Bai Ning Bing also cooperated. She held an indifferent attitude towards her identity being exposed, in fact, she was more willing to see Fang Yuan’s defeat.

Snow silver primeval essence gave an enormous help to Fang Yuan, his cultivation speed was rising as if it had grown wings.

On the night they had officially left Fei Hou mountain’s region, Fang Yuan advanced from rank two initial stage to middle stage.

By the time, the travel-worn caravan arrived at the base of Huang Jin mountain, Fang Yuan was finished with the crocodile strength Gu, his strength permanently increasing by the strength of a crocodile.

Huang Jin mountain possessed a lot of gold mines. Its soil contained abundant gold, and one could even obtain dozens of granules of gold if they scooped the water from the mountain streams and filtered the sediments.

In day, when the sun shone upon the Huang Jin mountain, the mountain would often reflect a layer of hazy golden light. The scene of the mountain surrounded by the light was a glorious beauty.

If this Huang Jin mountain was to be on Earth, there would definitely be bloody fights and wars for it. However, in this world, the currency used was the primeval stone, and gold was reduced to just a type of metal mineral - its greatest use was as a material for refining Gu.

There were two clans located in Huang Jin Mountain.

In the southern side of the mountain was Huang village; and in the northern side was Jin village.

A mountain can’t hold two tigers. One could infer from Qing Mao mountain that the relation between Huang and Jin clan was not harmonious.

The caravan’s arrival would naturally be welcomed by both the clans. However, the notice from the two clans arrived — the caravan could only choose one clan. If they chose Huang clan, they couldn’t go to Jin clan and the same went for opposite.

There were many people in caravan with many things to do, thus there was always a large flow of traffic. There were notorious records of the two clans attacking each other with the help of caravans, thus they laid down strict orders.

The heads of the caravans had different opinions about choosing which clans to go.

They had their own needs and considerations, and so after discussing with each other, this coagglomeration of caravans divided into two; the two groups would go separately to the two clans.

Of course, they couldn’t enter the village, most of the troops could only station around the village.

After this was settled, Zhang Zhu privately looked for Shang Xin Ci: "I have secretly investigated for many days; Hei Tu and Bai Yun are very suspicious, I suggest we evict them from our group!"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

This old man is courting death.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Suspicious?" Shang Xin Ci’s gaze flickered under her thick eyelashes.

Zhang Zhu nodded and said solemnly: "In fact, I had my doubts about them ever since we entered Fei Hou mountain. Miss, you gave them a hundred and fifty primeval stones, but they weren’t moved at all by such a huge sum. This really makes one ponder."

He paused for a moment and continued: "I have been secretly investigating them these days, and found even more suspicious points. First of all, they have little to no communication with the servants around them, as if they were wishing to be invisible. Second, they refused the recruitment offers of many clans, even though the terms were excellent."

"Miss, do you still remember his appearance when he came to ask help from us that night? Hei Tu, that guy has such powerful strength, how could he be wounded by others into such state? And finally, from my observation, his companion is wearing male clothing, but is actually a woman!"

The camp was filled with silence.

After a long while, Shang Xin Ci smiled: "Powerful strength doesn’t mean he can definitely win against others, right? Two fists can’t rival four palms , Hei Tu getting wounded was normal. Actually, I know about all these suspicious point you spoke of."

Zhang Zhu wasn’t surprised at all, he understood Shang Xin Ci and knew of her intelligence.

"Miss...."

Shang Xin Ci blinked, her face containing a gentle and charming smile: "Uncle Zhang Zhu, you have felt stifled for so many days, right? Seeing that I didn’t take actions to deal with this, you came to remind me today."

Zhang Zhu smiled: "I can’t conceal anything from you. But why are you still keeping them by your side?"

"Because I felt no ill intent from them." Shang Xin Ci’s eyes shone with a wise light, "We became suspicious of them at the Fei Hou mountain, and if they hadn’t stood up at that time, we wouldn’t have been able to feel any suspicion. But, why did they still take a risk, wasn’t it to help me?"

"This..."

"If they had harbored treacherous schemes, they would definitely stay hidden and watch the show from the side, right? Or maybe receive that one hundred and fifty primeval stones. But they didn’t. When Hei Tu said he was repaying my kindness, his expression was sincere and I could tell that he was speaking the truth. He really wanted to repay this favor." Shang Xin Ci said.

Zhang Zhu was tongue-tied for a long while: "But they aren’t simple, they definitely have secrets."

A smile blossomed in Shang Xin Ci’s face like a flower: "Everyone has secrets, I also have them, does having secrets make one a bad person? This world is bright, as someone who knows how to repay kindness, there has to be a limit to how bad he can be right?"

"That might be so but I can’t help but wonder what their motives are. Maybe they are plotting something... wait, I know, they must be accomplices of some bandits. They joined the caravan and are planning to rob it by cooperating with demonic path figures!"

"That doesn't make sense." Shang Xin Ci shook her head, "If they were accomplices, they should have even more reason to stay hidden, why would they expose themselves in Fei Hou mountain. So many people tried to recruit them, they could just join other groups and it wouldn't be any less easier to hide themselves. Why did they decide to stick with us? I feel they have definitely been through some suffering. We helped them and they are repaying us. Now, they want to hide their identities, I think we should help them..."

Zhang Zhu sighed while shaking his head: "Miss, why are you always thinking about others? One must know to guard against others..."

"Uncle Zhang Zhu." Shang Xin Ci said, "If we are really robbed, please don't go fight to protect the goods. If the goods are gone, then they are gone, it is not a big problem. My mother's final wish was for me to bring a token to someone in Shang clan city. However, she also said if that person didn't accept us, we should continue living through these goods."

"My mother passed away swiftly, she didn't manage to convey who is the person I am supposed to look for. But I think wealth are just worldly possessions. Mother has already left me, you and Xiao Die are my only remaining relatives. I don't want to see you guys meeting any mishaps."

"Miss, never say that..." Zhang Zhu's eyes were red with emotions.

"Come, take a look, honest and real Shenjia Silk!"

"All kinds of fine liquors, I welcome everyone to taste them."

"Golden Qi Gu, selling for just fifty primeval stones!"

...

The temporary market was a hubbub of conversations and hawkers selling out their wares as people moved to and fro.

Whenever a caravan by, it would be like a festive moment for the clans.

In the temporary market, not only the caravan was selling their wares, some Jin clansmen were also selling their goods.

The goods they were selling were mainly golden statues or tools; there were pots, cups, ladles and basins. Their profound sculpting skills were shown in the lifelike statues of animals and people. And with red, green, yellow and blue gems or pearls as complements, the statues looked even more exquisite.

Huang Jin mountain was a place blessed by heavens with gold found everywhere in it.

The people living here, even the poor slaves were wearing some accessories like golden rings and golden necklaces.

Hairpins, earrings and bracelets worn by many girls were shining with golden luster, looking very beautiful. They were chatting with each other in groups in beautiful voices which was fresh and innocent.

As for the Gu Masters of the Jin clan, their uniforms were similar to Qing Mao mountain's; Short sleeves, long pants, belts, leg wrappings and green bamboo shoes.

It was just that some were using golden rope as leg wrappings. Belts, cloth cuffs or pants, were all rimmed in gold. This was Huang Jin mountain's characteristic.

The clans of the Southern Border had basically the same attires. The demonic Gu Masters, however, wore all sorts of bizarre dresses.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were moving through the crowd. They had already bought some cow and goat milk from three to four Jin clansmen.

Fang Yuan had tried his best to feed all the bone spear Gu. But even so, two-third of the bone spear Gu were already dead from starvation.

"Aren’t you afraid your such big reckless purchasing will expose our identities?" Bai Ning Bing expressed his doubt.

"As long as one uses disguise, they will definitely be exposed one day. I don’t have a thing to worry about, but you, you have too big of a flaw." Fang Yuan glanced at Bai Ning Bing and said.

Bai Ning Bing snorted coldly, she knew what her flaw was: her gender.

Even the old lady at the hamlet could see it. Women and men have physiological differences, this could be disguised, but that required a special Gu worm which Bai Ning Bing didn’t have.

Thus, even if she was wearing loose clothes, covering her face with a straw hat, smearing her body with ash and binding her chest, her gender would no doubt be revealed as time passed by.

Fang Yuan continued: "So, rather than cover the truth, it would be better to reveal some things on our own initiative and let the others set their minds at rest, thinking they have seen through us and have the situation in their control."

Exposing oneself was not always a bad thing. One could only receive trust when they revealed their identities.

Fang Yuan couldn’t reveal his cards by himself, doing so would be too unnatural and not be in harmony with their previous behaviour.

Only when the other side discovered and probed, could Fang Yuan take the opportunity to conveniently reveal some stuff.

Bai Ning Bing understood: "So you are intentionally waiting for them to discover before responding?"

"You have finally become smart."

"Hmph!"

However, three days passed by and the response and probing Fang Yuan expected had still not arrived.

Bai Ning Bing finally got the opportunity to take a dig at Fang Yuan: "So you also have times when you are wrong."

Fang Yuan snorted while pondering inwardly: "I could see from Zhang Zhu’s expression and manners that he was already suspicious of us. He didn’t go into it deeply and restrained himself, most likely because there could be danger at any time on the road. But now that the caravan has arrived at Jin clan, the situation is very safe and he should have already begun his probing. Unless..."

Shang Xin Ci’s figure appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind.

"Truly smart and also bold. She's mostly likely the one that stopped Zhang Zhu. It's a little problematic, seems like being too smart can also be a problem." Fang Yuan heaved a sigh.

Shang Xin Ci's gentleness and kindness had made a deep impact on him, making him slightly underestimate this girl's intelligence.

Shang Xin Ci wanted to reach an understanding between smart people with Fang Yuan, she was clearly trying to play dumb. However, Fang Yuan had a different motive and this layer of understanding had instead turned into an obstacle.

"Since it is so, I will just take the initiative." Fang Yuan sighed and went to find Shang Xin Ci.

"You want to form a partnership with me?" Inside a tent, Shang Xin Ci and Zhang Zhu were wearing surprised expressions when Fang Yuan revealed his intentions.

They hadn't gone to look for these two, but these two instead came knocking on their door!

This was slightly beyond the young girl's expectations.

Zhang Zhu's mind shook: "You finally showed your true colors? Partnership... hmph!"

"Lady Zhang, I am a bit ashamed to say it, but we need primeval stones and I regard myself to be somewhat knowledgeable about merchants. I want to borrow a batch of goods, and we will divide the profits we earn in half, how about it?" Fang Yuan slightly bowed his body, appearing neither servile nor overbearing.

"You don't have any primeval stones and are as poor as a mouse, yet you want to borrow the chicken that lays egg? You are overconfident!" Zhang Zhu's gaze carried a cold light, "Why do you think you will definitely earn profits? And on what basis do you think our Zhang clan will lend the goods to you?"

"There will naturally be profits and losses in business. I also can't guarantee the profits. As to your second question, I think Lady Zhang is a good person and should lend the goods to me, right? You wanted to ask of my reason, I can only answer you that it is this feeling. If this feeling is wrong, then please consider this matter never happened." Fang Yuan answered with a smile.

He was one ear less and his whole body was covered with burns, making him appear terrifying when he smiled.

However, Shang Xin Ci looked at him and saw in him, a kind of confidence, decisiveness and a radiance of careful planning. This radiance emitted a different type of charisma, penetrating through the ugly appearance.

"Interesting, it seems he also sensed our suspicions, so he wanted to reach a tacit understanding with me?" Shang Xin Ci's gaze continued to flash.

After a short while, she laughed.

This kind of 'frank' communication style made her feel an indescribable safety and also a feeling of freshness.

"If you hadn't been there, there wouldn't even be a quarter of goods remaining, they would have already been snatched by those monkeys in Fei Hou mountain. Since you have this notion, I will hand over these goods to you." She said.

If the servant girl Xiao Die were here, she might have started making a big fuss.

Fang Yuan showed an expression of being in a daze for a while, before he bowed to show his thanks.

"Miss, this..." When Fang Yuan left the tent, Zhang Zhu couldn’t endure it any more.

Shang Xin Ci blinked mischievously like a child: "Isn’t this interesting? Did you hear what he said just now, he hadn’t even started on the business, but was already talking of sharing the profits in half. His tone was as if the profits were certain..."

"Hmph, he is but a boor, how much talent could he have?" Zhang Zhu disdainfully scoffed, "If we talk about business talent, who could compare to miss? I still remember how you have managed the properties all these years and expanded them. If it were not for the envy of those petty people in Zhang Clan..."

"Alright, what is the use of talking about the past? Since Uncle Zhang Zhu believes in my talent, then you should trust me. Even if Hei Tu squanders these goods, I could still rebuild the business from scratch, isn’t that right?" Shang Xin Ci said.

"Of course!" Zhang Zhu said without hesitation.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Smart people obviously not referring to Uncle Zhang.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"There are so much goods, it won’t be cheap. It’ll require at least fifty thousand primeval stones." Jin clan’s Gu Master looked at Fang Yuan in suspicion.

After getting approval from Shang Xin Ci, Fang Yuan immediately found a few Jin clan Gu Masters, this was already the sixth.

"I do not have primeval stones." Fang Yuan shook his head: "But I can use my goods to exchange for yours."

"Exchange?" The Gu Master’s eyebrows rose. He was not surprised as it was common to barter, especially in the caravan.

To him, there was no loss in bartering as long as the value was about the same.

"What will you use to exchange?"

Fang Yuan brought him to the goods immediately.

Jin clan’s Gu Master frowned: "Your goods are cheaper than mine."

"But you can get a good price for it on this Huang Jin mountain, am I wrong?" Fang Yuan laughed.

Jin clan Gu Master frowned even deeper: "If the price is set too high, we won’t be able to sell it."

"Then sell it slowly, it’ll be sold eventually. Goods are more expensive when they are rare, by then you will be sitting at home collecting your earnings." Fang Yuan smiled.

The Gu Master laughed, the reason he talked so much was only to lower the price; his heart was moved long ago.

"You are not bad at all. As a mortal, you are neither haughty nor humble. I have three stores, are you interested in working for me? I can give you the position of shopkeeper! Your wages can also be further discussed." The Gu Master patted Fang Yuan’s shoulders.

Fang Yuan rejected politely; the Gu Master felt a little pity.

"Hei Tu, what have you done!" After the transaction was over, Xiao Die ran over with a frosty expression.

"You exchanged all the goods? What are you trying to do? You are too bold!" Xiao Die stomped her foot in anger: "Do you know these goods were all chosen by Missy after much consideration. After we transport them to Shang Clan City, we can sell them for twice the amount! Quick, exchange them back now!"

Fang Yuan’s expression turned cold: "Your Missy has already lent all the goods to me, which is to say, these belong to me. Hmph, I am dealing with my own goods, is there a problem?"

Fang Yuan’s gaze swept through Xiao Die, a cold light flashed in his eyes.

Xiao Die instantly felt a chill that made her heart palpitate.

Fang Yuan had decided to expose a little more and thus putting on such a strong attitude against Xiao Die.

Xiao Die was witty and eloquent all along, but now, a cold feeling crept up her heart: "You, you... I will tell Missy, watch out!"

She tried her best to hide her inner emotions, but still left frantically.

Her report naturally caused no disturbance to Fang YUan.

But the servants that Shang Xin Ci brought along, had much opinions about Fang Yuan’s actions. Many discussed secretly, thinking this Hei Tu had gone crazy.

Fang Yuan knew the value of these goods and could sense Shang Xin Ci’s business talent.

But this was her first time doing business, her experience was very lacking even though she had talent. Business was not just transporting goods to the destination, and earning profits from the price difference.

A true expert merchant earned along the way as well. Using their keen foresight to explore new opportunities, learning about the specialty of each mountains, and tailoring to the needs of each clan; they built networks as they profited from all those around them.

Of course, these requirements were too high for the current Shang Xin Ci. She had just turned 16, although she had talent, she was still a fresh young girl.

Fang Yuan spent about a hundred years in his past life doing trade. He joined caravans and even became a leader He also opened his own shops, including rock gambling and even auctions.

When it came to experience and foresight, those leaders and vice leaders in the caravan could not hold a candle to Fang Yuan, let alone the inexperienced Shang Xin Ci.

"There is still a distance to Shang Liang mountain. If I manipulate this wholeheartedly, I can at least increase the value of these goods by seven or eight times!"

This profit margin was terrifying. Any higher and even Fang Yuan could do it. Due to actual circumstances, seven to eight times was the limit of this world.

"Of course, if I use unorthodox methods, not just seven or eight, I can easily jack it up by seventy or eighty times." Thinking so, Fang Yuan could not help but think of a poem on Earth ——

Obeying the law and living in constant worry, bandits live in pleasure every night; those who harm others to benefit themselves ride horses, while those were righteous and fair starve in hunger. Those who build bridges and repair roads go blind, while those who murder and cause arson have many offsprings. When I died, I asked Buddha, Buddha said: There was nothing I could do!

Haha, the so called system and law was to deprive the masses and limit the weak.

Whichever world it was, the law of the jungle prevailed!

Thus, even during an era ruled by law, countless rich and influential people found loopholes and avoided the judgement of the law. Not to mention this Gu world, where strength was everything one needed to exert influence!

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, he once did business with all his heart, having millions of assets and countless properties. But later, some experts casually usurped them, causing him to go bankrupt and living in the streets.

For the next four hundred years of his life, whenever he thought back to it, he was extremely glad he had such an experience.

Only through pain can one learn about the truth!

Precisely because of this experience, he woke up from his delusions and broke free of the restraints that bound him while living in the lawful society of Earth.

Humans were often blinded not by the sight before them, but by the chains in their hearts.

To Fang Yuan, if he abided by morals of business and be a proper businessman, he could only earn seven to eight times the profit.

But if he used some illegal methods, becoming an unscrupulous merchant, he could make over tenfold worth of profits.

If he abandoned his position, and lied and scammed, becoming a dishonest trader, he could make tens of times of profits.

If he directly murdered and robbed, he would not even need a capital. Business without investing capital, was always the most profitable!

But Fang Yuan had other objectives doing business now. Thus, methods that broke the rules could not be used and this caused him to have some feeling of restraint.

However, the night before the caravan set off, a Jin clan Gu Master secretly approached him.

"There is a secret deal we want to make, are you interested?" This Gu Master was one of those who traded with Fang Yuan earlier.

Fang Yuan did not mind it, but after a few minutes, he changed his ideas.

"You are saying, someone wants to sell Jinzan grass?" He was extremely surprised, almost suspecting that he had heard wrongly.

To Jin clan, Jinzan grass could not be replaced with other materials, it was an important war resource. It was exactly because it could be used as a refinement material that Jin clan could produce large numbers of golden silkworm Gu. But now someone wanted to sell it?

In Fang Yuan’s memories, it was because Jin clan had large numbers of the rank three golden silkworm Gu that their battle strength rose rapidly, thus eliminating Huang clan and becoming the controller of the area.

"Wait a minute, Huang clan still exists now. This means Jin clan has not fully manufactured the recipe for the golden silkworm Gu? That shouldn’t be it, by this time they should have some ideas already, otherwise why would they mass plant Jinzan grass?" Fang Yuan’s thoughts moved like lightning.

He probed: "I’m about done with trading goods. The Jinzan grass is an unpopular material, although it is rare, little people need it..."

Seeing Fang Yuan reject, the Gu Master panicked: "The price can be further discussed, why don’t we have a good talk about it."

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone, seeing the other party was very anxious, he started to lower the price.

After an intense bargaining, the Jinzan grass’ price had been lowered to a horrifying degree.

The Gu Master’s face paled, his expression turned ugly and his tone became irritated: "You win, we’ll go with this price, can we complete the deal now?"

This price was very low, even lower than the cost of nurturing the Jinzan grass. If they sold it, it truly was making a loss.

The Jin clan Gu Master knew this, and so his heart bled.

Fang Yuan also knew this was the limit, but he still shook his head: "This price is too low, to speak the truth your attitude makes me feel uncertain."

The Jin clan Gu Master instantly exploded: "You were the one who lowered the price, now you’re finding it too low?!"

Fang Yuan shrugged: "You said it earlier, this is a private transaction, there is no hard evidence. What if you sell me fake goods, who would I find then? You see, the caravan is leaving tomorrow, by then even if I made a loss, I have no choice but to leave."

"Your suspicions are valid..." Jin Clan Gu Master’s anger subsided: "Don’t worry about the goods, they are definitely real. To tell you the truth, this is secretly sold by our young master."

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone brilliantly, he had finally received some useful information.

He pretended to be shocked: "Your young master stole it?"

"These Jinzan grass is a vegetation loved by the clan leader, purposely growing three acres of it. But we can’t do anything about it since our clan leader has a unique interest. So do not worry, the Jinzan grass is nothing important, the son taking his father’s things to sell, even if it is discovered, he will only be scolded." The Gu Master said.

Fang Yuan immediately understood everything.

So it was like this!

Jin clan had already been trying to fix the recipe for the golden silkworm Gu. At this point, they had a rough idea already and were thus growing three acres of Jinzan grass..

But to prevent unwanted attention from Huang clan, this information was kept among the higher ups of the clan, even the young master did not know, only thinking that this grass was planted out of interest.

The Jinzan grass’ growth period was very long, needing four years to mature.

In his memory, Jin clan launched their attack a year later. They used the rank three golden silkworm Gu which had sharp offensive strength to eliminate Huang clan and dominate Huang Jin mountain.

If this three acres of Jinzan grass was gone, they won’t be able to find that much on the market either. Then to eliminate Huang clan, Jin clan would need to waste a few more years.

Evidently, this Jinzan grass was a dangerous item!

If he really bought it, it would be provoking this large Jin clan.

An ordinary person would avoid it like the plague, but Fang Yuan saw a huge opportunity from it.

This profit, although dangerous, since it was delivered to him with both hands, how could he reject it?

To speak the truth, although Fang Yuan possessed the heavenly essence treasure lotus, he still had a need for primeval stones, and it wasn’t a small amount he needed.

When they reached the Shang Clan City, he needed to purchase Gu worms, and that required a lot of primeval stones. Relying on the heavenly essence treasure lotus’s daily production was troublesome and insufficient.

"That young master is definitely a wastrel, he is probably doted by the clan leader, but is in need of money recently, thus he set his eyes on the Jinzan grass. Hehehe..."

Thinking so, Fang Yuan couldn’t help but laugh.

If he took this profit, not only would it help in purchasing Gu worms, it would also leave a deep impression on Shang Xin Ci. It was simply killing two birds with one stone.

Jin clan Gu Master saw Fang Yuan’s smile, and laughed: "So, you agree?"

"Of course." Fang Yuan looked at him; once this deal went through, this guy would definitely be in trouble.

"But what does his trouble have to do with me?" What Fang Yuan was considering now, was how to swallow this profit without choking himself.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Last day of 2 chapters.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Dawn was breaking in the east, revealing the first rays of light.

The cold air of the night had condensed into dewdrops on the grass and leaves. The temporary market in the Jin clan was currently being dismantled; the tents were packed up, the carpets on the streets stalls were rolled up and the goods were packed in bags.

After having stayed in the Jin village for many days, the caravan was preparing to set off.

As for the merchants, no matter how many goods they sold or bought, they would be making profits eventually. Thus, though they were exhausted, they were wearing cheerful smiles on their faces.

Xiao Die’s expression, however, was horrible.

"Missy, I just checked, that Hei Tu has exchanged almost all the goods. And in the goods he exchanged for, I saw three carts filled with Jinzan grass!"

"Jinzan grass?" Shang Xin Ci’s long brows slightly furrowed.

Xiao Die was extremely angry, as she pulled Shang Xin Ci by her hand: "Even a layman like me knows how worthless Jinzan grass is, but he has exchanged for so many of them. Missy, this Hei Tu is simply making a trouble!"

"Xiao Die, calm down first." Shang Xin Ci patted Xiao Die’s hand, "He should have exchanged for this Jinzan grass yesterday night, I don’t know why he did that but he must have a reason for exchanging other goods. Just think, it is already pretty good that he could accomplish this as a mortal."

"Missy, why are you standing up for him? I am only thinking for you. These goods were originally ours, why would you let others squander it for nothing? Most importantly, he can’t compensate us at all! Lord Zhang Zhu, please persuade Missy..." Xiao Die pouted.

Zhang Zhu who was looking on from the side, sighed: "Miss, Xiao Die is right. We lent the goods to him to test him, but now that we can already see the results, why are we still letting him squander them? We believe in your ability Miss, but if we can decrease our losses, why are we not doing so? It will also decrease our struggles when we reach Shang Clan City."

"This..." Shang Xin Ci mumbled. She was young, her eyes started showing signs of hesitation.

Previously, she had felt the goods exchanged by Fang Yuan was alright. However, this Jinzan grass... it was a great loss to exchange for so much Jinzan grass.

Jinzan grass was easy to preserve, but it simply couldn’t be sold as the demand for it was almost non-existent. Such a large stockpile would rot sooner or later, and finally, they would have no choice but to cut down the price and dump sell the stock - it was destined to make a loss.

"Excuse me, are you Lady Zhang Xin Ci?" Just then, a middle-aged gu master who was sweating profusely, anxiously ran towards Shang Xin Ci.

The iron plate on his belt was carved with number ’two’ showing the rank of this gu master.

Shang Xin Ci gave a slight smile: "Yes I am, may I enquire who you are?"

The middle-aged man cupped his fists: "I am the personal guard of lord clan leader, here on his command to ask for a favor."

"Oh? Please speak."

"Lady Zhang should have bought a large batch of Jinzan grass yesterday night. The whole story is like this, our clan leader is very passionate for Jinzan grass and so he personally raised some for pleasure. But the young master secretly dug them out and sold them behind the clan leader’s back. Now, clan leader has placed the young master in confinement, and also wishes to buy back the Jinzan grass. I sincerely request you to sell them back to us."

This gu master was polite, but that politeness carried his firm attitude.

"Miss..." Zhang Zhu’s expression turned solemn as he reminded Shang Xin Ci.

This personal guard represented the clan leader of the Jin clan, this matter could be both big or small, and it could turn serious if it was handled improperly.

Shang Xin Ci glanced at Zhang Zhu and nodded her head to indicate she understood: "Actually, I am also someone who loves flowers and I can understand honorable clan leader’s passion. We will hand over the Jinzan grass to your honorable clan with not even a stem missing."

"It makes one happy to see such a reasonable Lady." The personal guard gu master’s expression relaxed and revealed a slight smile.

Shang Xin Ci continued: "A subordinate of mine was in charge of this transaction. I will call him over."

Fang Yuan had already been paying attention to the activity here.

"Hei Tu, you are in trouble. Missy has called you." Xiao Die had come to summon him.

Fang Yuan soon appeared in front of the personal guard, and cupped his fists: "I am the one who was responsible for the transaction of Jinzan grass. I heard the honorable clan leader wants to buy them back?"

The personal guard was surprised to see the newcomer was actually a mortal, his face immediately revealed a slight disdain and arrogance.

He snorted: "That’s right. Mortal, you can relax. Lord clan leader is benevolent and is willing to use three thousand primeval stones to buy back the three carts of Jinzan grass on you."

"So much?" Xiao Die was speechless and her gaze revealed her joy.

Zhang Zhu frowned before gradually relaxing. Three thousand primeval stones should be the maximum market price for the Jinzan grass, and this showed Jin clan leader’s sincerity.

However, Fang Yuan shook his head: "Jinzan grass is very precious, only three thousand primeval stones to buy them back, this doesn’t seem to be sincere, right?"

The personal guard immediately frowned: "What? The price I am giving is much higher than the maximum market price of the Jinzan grass. Mortal, what price did you buy it for?"

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose: "Let’s not discuss about the purchase price, we are all businessmen, naturally we will buy low and sell high. Three thousand primeval stones are too less, I am not selling!"

"You!" The personal guard clenched his teeth, before eventually showing five fingers, "Alright, then I will rise it by two thousand, five thousand primeval stones!"

Xiao Die’s eyes widened in shock, her face started to flush with excitement as she looked at the five stretched fingers of the personal guard.

"Five thousand primeval stones? This is what you said, you can’t go back on it!" She was almost jumping in excitement, she hadn’t thought the situation would develop like this; Fang Yuan had profited huge!

However, Fang Yuan still shook his head.

The personal guard’s expression turned cold as he threatened: "Mortal, don’t you think you are being greedy? These Jinzan grass were originally our clan’s goods. You privately exchanged for them which is already not permitted. You don’t even have any evidence of transaction, I can even say you secretly stole them!!"

Zhang Zhu was taken aback by the personal guard’s anger, he looked at Fang Yuan: "Just sell it."

Fang Yuan laughed: "You sold them, I bought, this was mutual consent. What more, it was your young master who sold them to me. I can’t do anything if you are determined to say I stole them. Jin clan is so rich and powerful that it can bully the weak and rob our goods. Hmph, the goods are just there, why don’t you go take them. It is just that as far as I know, it is not just me who bought the Jinzan grass. Many others have a share of it, is Jin clan going to snatch all of theirs too?"

Fang Yuan had already expected this situation, thus he only bought a large majority yesterday night. The remaining Jinjan grass were sold to others by that gu master.

"You!" The personal guard was furious, but he could only clench his teeth at Fang Yuan’s blatant extortion.

He pointed at Fang Yuan: "Your clan bought the most, you little brat, you want to make it hard for me?"

"Of course not, I am only trying to make a transaction." Fang Yuan cupped his hands.

"Hmph, forget it! I will put two thousand more, seven thousand primeval stones! Mortal, bring all the Jinzan grass you bought." The personal guard shouted.

"Hei Tu, just sell it. We need to pay attention to amiability while doing business." Shang Xin Ci couldn’t endure this pressure.

"Since Miss has spoken..." Fang Yuan nodded his head before immediately changing the subject, "Then I will take back a step. Eight thousand primeval stones and all the Jinzan grass I have is yours."

The moment these words came out, Shang Xin Ci and the rest all became dazed.

The personal guard came back to his senses, unable to contain his anger: "What? You bastard!!"

Fang Yuan, however, had a smile on his face: "Business is business, please don’t get angry lord gu master. Actually, I was thinking of selling them for ten thousand primeval stones, if lord gu master can’t decide it, how about letting me discuss with your honorable clan’s clan leader?"

"No need!" The personal guard swung his arm as he looked at Fang Yuan with extreme disgust, "You, a mortal, what qualifications do you have to meet lord clan leader? Bring the goods quickly, taking advantage of others when they are down, I will remember you. Hmph!"

His words, no doubt, meant he acceded to Fang Yuan’s raised price.

The two finished the transaction in moments.

Fang Yuan hadn’t even used five hundred primeval stones to buy them, but in just one night, the Jinzan grass changed hands for eight thousand primeval stones!

"Miss, there are two trunks filled to the brim with primeval stones!" Xiao Die was beaming with joy. She had witnessed the whole transaction process in fear, but now that she looked at these primeval stones, she felt that it was all worth it. Even her gaze towards Fang Yuan changed.

"Did you already know? That can’t be it, this should just be the case of a blind cat coming across a dead mouse !" She looked at Fang Yuan from top to bottom and remarked.

"Offending the Jin clan for just eight thousand primeval stones is not worth it." Zhang Zhu had been frowning from the start, he looked at Fang Yuan with some discontent and warned, "Never take such a risk again."

Fang Yuan only smiled and turned towards Shang Xin Ci: "According to our previous contract, Miss will get half of this eight thousand primeval stones, and I request Miss to safeguard my half of the share too."

...

"Has it been settled?" Jin clan leader stood on a hill, watching the leaving caravan.

An elder was standing to his side and reported: "Yes, clan leader. We have bought back all the Jinzan grass. It is just that Zhang Clan is truly hateful for taking advantage of the situation to extort us."

Jin Clan’s clan leader’s brows furrowed: "Oh? Speak."

The elder elaborated on the details.

Jin clan’s clan leader smiled: "It is just eight thousand primeval stones, no need to care. That Zhang clan’s Lady, however, is intelligent, she pushed out a mortal servant to sound out the situation and earned herself this money."

"Lord clan leader, what if this Zhang clan already knows our clan’s secret and thus took advantage to extort us?"

"Hahaha, don’t be overly suspicious. If they knew the importance of the Jinzan grass to my clan, why would they only extort mere eight thousand primeval stones? They would buy them all or even not agree to sell them. But just in case, send some gu masters to watch them till they completely leave Huang Jin mountain’s region. Make sure to watch if there are anyone who tries to secretly go to Huang clan. If there are, kill them on the spot!"

The clan leader’s killing intent overflowed all around him as he said this.

The elder’s mind trembled: "As you command, lord clan leader!"

Fang Yuan glanced back at the Huang Jin mountain, his lips curled up in a smiled.

Not far away in a carriage, Shang Xin Ci lifted open the curtains and gazed at Fang Yuan’s back. Her beautiful eyes flashed with light, having fallen into deep thought.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Lesson of the day: Don’t do business with Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The caravan crossed mountains and valleys as they traveled west.

Half a month later, the caravan arrived at Hun Mu mountain which had a lot of weird looking trees; Fang Yuan sold half of his goods to buy a lot of these special wood.

Twenty days later, they arrived at Ju Yu mountain.

The mountain was full of bumps and craters, these bumps were all made by the falling raindrops.

At this place, once it rained, raindrops as large as wine vats fell and formed huge craters in the ground. Thus, the Tong clan of Ju Yu mountain was built in the empty caves inside the mountain. If it was an open construct, it would be easily devastated by the rain.

In Tong clan village, the golden lamp oil that Fang Yuan bought on Huang Jin mountain was very popular.

During their stay, it rained three times. Fang Yuan thus acquired many blue oil raindrops. These raindrops were a type of material for many different purposes.

These giant raindrops were the Tong clan village’s misfortune that forced them to live inside the mountain caves. But, it was also their source of income.

After leaving Ju Yu mountain, the caravan arrived at Fang Zhuan mountain.

The rocks on this mountain were peculiar. Each were cube shaped, varying in size and thickness.

Da Fang clan was a large scale clan that had been living on Fang Zhuan mountain for over thousand years.

Their residences were made of tiles; much better than the condition at Tong clan village. Tall large walls were constructed around the village, and within the walls were defense towers, while outside the walls were pillboxes.

Fang Yuan remembered that at Da Fang clan, there was an eccentric elder that liked wood carvings.

After contacting him, all the weird and creepy soul wood he collected on Hun Mu mountain were sold to this clan elder.

Just like this, on this journey, with Fang Yuan’s manipulation, his goods increased and decreased at times, but each time there was a change, he earned a ton of profit.

Once he did this many times, it naturally attracted people’s attention.

Fang Yuan pushed everything to Shang Xin Ci, and rumors of her business talent started to circulate.

Time flew by quickly, after another four villages, the caravan gradually got close to Xiao Yue mountain.

This night, the caravan made a temporary camp near a cliff.

"We have entered Xiao Yue mountain’s territory, the remaining journey is all uninhabited mountains and valleys. Gu worms and beasts roam free, and not even a hamlet exist. From tonight onwards, everyone has to place their full attention on the surroundings." Jia clan’s leader instructed.

In the tent, many vice-leaders nodded in agreement.

Shang Xin Ci’s eyes shone with bright light.

This was the most dangerous segment of the caravan’s route. Once they passed this, they would reach Xue Lei mountain, and after that, they would have to travel past a few more clan villages, before reaching Shang Liang mountain’s Shang Clan City.

"Alright, next we will establish our defensive measures." Jia clan’s leader continued.

An hour later, the discussion ended and everyone left the tent.

Zhang Zhu came up immediately: "Miss, dinner has been prepared. Do we invite Hei Tu and Bai Yun to dine together again?"

"Of course." Shang Xin Ci nodded: "I have to ask him about his experiences in trading during the banquet."

These few days, Fang Yuan’s revenue greatly exceeded his losses, earning five to six times the profits after few trades. This caused Shang Xin Ci, Zhang Zhu and Xiao Die - who knew the truth - to look at him in a different light.

According to the agreement, Fang Yuan gave half the earnings to Shang Xin Ci, but to her, these primeval stones could not compare to his business experience and understanding.

She did not have any cultivation talent, and as a mortal, engaging in business was her proudest ability.

But, in this aspect where she could be proud of herself, Fang Yuan displayed a strength which she could not help but admit was far superior to her!

Many seemingly absurd decisions gave surprising results after the deal was completed.

Shang Xin Ci was not someone who would give up on herself, and after knowing this difference in ability, she invited him to the dinner banquet daily.

A few words of advice from Fang Yuan could benefit her greatly.

Her talent in business was outstanding and she absorbed the knowledge like a sponge, growing rapidly.

The more she interacted with Fang Yuan, the more she admired him.

"Sigh, Miss, you have to be careful. These two obviously have their own stories, they are not ordinary people." Zhang Zhu sighed with worry, he was afraid Shang Xin Ci was sinking deeper into this.

"Don’t worry, Uncle Zhang Zhu, I know what I am doing." Shang Xin Ci was indeed intelligent and smart, she never spoke to Fang Yuan about matters outside of business. She knew what could be said and what could not, never trying to probe further than she was supposed to.

She felt that Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing might be mysterious, but they were not dangerous.

Fang Yuan used proper techniques in his business trading, and he didn’t go back on his words, splitting half the profits with Shang Xin Ci. Unknowingly, such behaviour gave Shang Xin Ci much feeling of assurance.

However, Fang Yuan did not accept the invitation to banquet this time.

"I am feeling a little tired today, I will not be going." He waved his hand at Xiao Die who came to invite him.

Fang Yuan did not accept every single invitation from Shang Xin Ci, normally only accepting one out of three invitations.

Xiao Die pouted as she looked at Fang Yuan begrudgingly, muttering under her breath and leaving.

Previously when Fang Yuan rejected the invitation, Xiao Die made a scene several times, feeling indignant for her Miss. But the more Fang Yuan earned, the more Xiao Die’s attitude changed, from indignant to accomodating and helplessness.

No matter which world it was, at whatever level of society, strength was what gained respect.

Fang Yuan shut the tent; Bai Ning Bing had already sat on one of the beds.

In the darkness, her blue eyes shone slightly.

When Fang Yuan first rejected Xiao Die, she was still a little surprised, but after a few times, Bai Ning Bing found out the brilliance of this action.

As the saying went, one who is unaccountably solicitous is hiding evil intentions 1 . Fang Yuan rejecting this invitation and not accommodating to Shang Xin Ci gave the young girl the feeling that he had nothing to gain from her.

"Let’s start." Fang Yuan sat down on the bed as well with his back facing Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing spread out both palms and placed them on Fang Yuan’s back. Ten percent of her snow silver primeval essence flowed through her palms into Fang Yuan’s body.

Bone flesh unity Gu shone with green and red light respectively, converting the primeval essence; six percent of snow silver primeval essence entered Fang Yuan’s aperture.

Splash splash splash...

Fang Yuan’s thoughts entered his aperture and used these primeval essence to nurture his aperture walls.

When he was rank one, his aperture could not take the impact of the snow silver primeval essence, but now that he was rank two middle stage, his aperture walls had a stronger foundation now and could endure it.

Only that this could not last for a long time, and he needed to rest every once in a while.

The light waves on the aperture walls flowed constantly. The white light grew stronger as some areas started to condense. Evidently, Fang Yuan was a step away from rank two upper stage.

With his rich cultivating experience, Fang Yuan had something like a gauge in his mind. He planned to breakthrough to rank two upper stage in one go!

Time passed and it was already late at night.

Howl—— !

Suddenly, howling of the Grey Wolf King could be heard.

The howl broke the silence of the camp, and soon after, numerous wolf howled in response to their king.

"Wolf assault, wolf assault!"

"Damn it, get up, the wolf pack is attacking camp!"

"So many grey wolves, I can’t even count how many there are!"

...

Many people screamed in shock, waking up everyone else in the camp; everyone was riled up.

"Hey hearing this volume, it seems the wolf pack is quite large." Bai Ning Bing listened and laughed.

In the caravan’s journey, they met many beast groups’ attack, and now she wasn’t shocked anymore.

"This is Xiao Yue mountain, some people say the entire southern border wolves live here. During a full moon, the wolf packs will gaze at the round moon, and the wolf howls can cause the entire mountain to tremble and shake. This is only our first night, and we already encountered a grey wolf pack, our luck is terrible." Fang Yuan opened his eyes slightly, but multitasked and did not stop the cultivating in his aperture.

"Damn it, there are too many wolves."

"Healing Gu Master, where are the healing Gu Masters?! My father is injured, he is bleeding a lot..."

"The southeast direction’s defense has been broken through, go reinforce them quickly!"

The situation was more severe than Bai Ning Bing had predicted. After discovering the wolf pack, in just a few minutes, the first line of defense in the camp was broken through, and the wolves broke into the camp.

"Ah——!"

"Take up your weapons and fight these beasts!"

Servants screamed as sounds of battle and shouting continued.

"Do we go out?" Bai Ning Bing asked.

"For what? What can you do? Don’t forget your identity." After a moment of silence, Fang Yuan replied nonchalantly.

"But the wolves are already charging here, the goods you just purchased might be damaged." Bai Ning Bing laughed, showing glee in her tone.

"Then let them be damaged." Fang Yuan closed his eyes again.

After a while, Xiao Die’s voice came from outside the tent: "Hei Tu, Hei Tu! Are you two in there?"

"What’s the matter?" Bai Ning Bing asked.

"Oh my god, you are still here? Such a loud commotion and you didn’t even wake up! Many grey wolves entered the camp, although the situation is under control, there might be some wolves left out. Miss is asking you to go over, with Lord Zhang Zhu to protect us, it will be safer!" Xiao Die shouted.

"No need, since the situation is under control, we shall not impose on your Miss. I can handle a grey wolf or two with my physical strength." Fang Yuan replied.

Xiao Die urged some more, but was still rejected. Finally she stomped her feet outside the tent: "Ungrateful bunch, don’t blame me for not reminding you if you die. Hmph!"

Saying so, she hurriedly left.

The grey wolves continued to attack for fifteen minutes before retreating.

This beast group assault brought the greatest loss the caravan had suffered since their establishment.

Three Gu Masters died in battle, over a dozen injured, countless servants died, and most of the goods were damaged. Especially Zhang clan’s goods, they received the most damage.

These goods were all borrowed by Fang Yuan, and at first estimation, Fang Yuan lost over a thousand primeval stones in this one night.

When it was daylight, and they calculated the losses, he showed a bitter smile but did not mind it at all.

Because last night, he had advanced to rank two upper stage. Only spending just a few months, this cultivation speed was shocking even to Bai Ning Bing who knew the method.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

That’s wife material right there

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The bloody night passed and the morning sun shone upon the ruined camp.

The atmosphere was solemn as everyone cleaned up the battlefield and packed their goods, setting off with a heavy heart.

However, the wolf pack attack this time was only the beginning.

Few days later, they were attacked again by grey wolf packs.

The scale of the attack this time was even larger than the previous time. But the caravan had taken sufficient precautions and were able to limit their losses to less than the previous time.

They chased away this pack of grey wolves. However, they had yet to regain their breaths, when three days later they were attacked by lighting wolf packs. The pack contained three frenzy lightning wolves and nine bold lightning wolves. Fifteen gu masters were killed while fighting them. The battle ended with wolf corpses all around the ground, and a wounded frenzy lightning wolf escaped with the remaining injured wolves.

There were many gu masters who chased them for revenge, but couldn’t catch up to them and they didn’t dare to enter deep into Xiao Yue mountain. They could only stared fixedly at the retreating wolf packs.

The attack this time made the caravan’s leader and vice leaders realize the danger they were in. On that very evening, they decided to speed up and leave Xiao Yue mountain as quickly as possible.

Even so, for the next fifteen days, they were met with frequent attacks by the wolf packs.

Grey wolves, lightning wolves, snow wolves, two-headed wolves and even blood fang wolves...

Everyone in the caravan let out a breath of relief after they got out of Xiao Yue mountain.

The caravan’s next few days passed peacefully and smoothly, until they entered Bai Hu mountain and were attacked by beast groups again.

This time, it was old turtle carapace apes. These white apes were enormous with a carapace armor on their back - the carapace armor was covered with turtle shell patterns. There weren’t many casualties from the attacks of these ape groups, but the huge damage to the goods caused many to feel heartache.

Fang Yuan’s goods also met with hardship, the dozen carts of goods he had was decreased to less than half.

The morale in caravan fell greatly, these people were merchants trying their best to earn money. However, these losses made this trip worthless to them.

"We have made a fruitless trip."

"I checked my accounts yesterday, my earnings amounted to less than two thousand primeval stones!"

"My situation is even worse, I have already lost thirty percent of the goods."

"Even if it is worse, can it be as worse as the Zhang Clan’s? They have already lost most of their goods!"

"Sigh, if I had known earlier, I would have just curled up in the clan; why would I bother to take risk and only earn this much!"

...

The caravan moved in such an atmosphere. Five days later, they were attacked by a group of white tigers.

There were losses again.

Seven days later, a group of flame tigers ambushed them; fire spread over the camp and a large amount of goods were burned down.

The morale had reached an all-time low, many of the merchants had lost all their investment.

Ten days later, when they were about to cheer as they left the border of the Bai Hu mountain region, a Biao 1 appeared.

Five tigers and one Biao . A Biao was a tiger that had grown wings, and was at least a thousand beast king. And because it had the ability to fly, it was even more troublesome.

Some vice leaders of the caravan lost their lives while resisting this Biao.

The Biao tailed the caravan for almost a hundred miles, constantly harassing them. Finally the caravan higher ups decided to make minor sacrifices, quickly deciding to give up close to a hundred servants.

Most of these servants were injured or crippled, they rained curses and cried for their lives, but could do nothing to change their fate.

Finally, the Biao had its fill and left, satisfied.

The caravan was only able to rest properly after leaving the Bai Hu mountain far behind. The leaders of each clans didn’t stint on rewards, gradually raising the morale.

The scale of the caravan was now already thinned by half of their original size.

But after going through this cruel elimination and sharpening, the caravan now showed signs of an elite group.

" I have been a travelling merchant for so many years and this was the most challenging of them all."

"Who knows what possessed these wild beasts, attacking so frequently!"

"After this trip ends, I will retire and enjoy my life."

"No matter what, the risk of this trade route needs to be reevaluated..."

"The main reason is still because these great mountains don’t have any human inhabitations. With no clans and garrisons to purge these beasts, they have grown without check."

Some sighed, some were downhearted, whereas some still retained some hope.

However, the caravan seemed to be jinxed; on the road ahead, they were not only attacked by all kinds of beast groups, but also by many swarms of insects and wild gu worms.

The size of the caravan was decreasing continuously, the merchants no longer cared about profits and loss; they were starting to sense their lives were on the line.

They even abandoned a lot of goods willingly to speed up their travelling speed.

The setting sun dyed the clouds in blood red.

The caravan was crossing a mountain woods in silence. Everyone was exhausted and numb, their morale very low.

Many had bandages on their body, covering light and heavy injuries. They moved step by step in the bumpy mountain passageway.

It had rained yesterday, causing the mountain passage to be muddy and slippery.

A handcart filled with goods got stuck in the mud. The ostrich that was dragging the cart raised its neck and made shrill crackling noises before using all its strength to pull the cart, but to no avail.

Right at this time, two hands came from behind the cart and lifted it, pulling the stuck wheel out of the mud pit.

It was Fang Yuan.

He casually clapped his hands. The thousands of kilos worth of goods didn’t seem to be that heavy in his hands.

However, although the cart broke away from the mud pit, its wheels were somehow jammed and didn’t move.

Bai Ning Bing who was at the side, bent down to take a look at the wheel.

After being in caravan for so long, she had learned many things with her disguised identity, and had already completely blended in.

"What is this?" She rubbed the axle of the wheel, her eyes filled with doubt.

There was some kind of stuff hidden in the axle of the wheel, and it was continuously grinded down into fine gray powder as the wheels moved.

The fine powder was unnoticeable when they fell down to the ground.

Bai Ning Bing picked some of this powder and rubbed them with her fingers; the powder turned into grease.

"Ah, I put these oil powder in the wheels to lubricate them and make the handcart move more smoothly." Fang Yuan walked over while taking out a cotton handkerchief from his pocket; he grabbed Bai Ning Bing’s hands and cleaned the grease off.

After that, he crouched down and felt around the wheels - the wheels regained their mobility.

"Let’s go." He wiped off the oil powder from his hands and patted Bai Ning Bing’s shoulder.

The two continued to walk.

Bai Ning Bing’s pace continued to become slower as the doubts in her hearts intensified and formed into a dense fog that couldn’t be dispelled.

She sensed something was amiss.

"When did Fang Yuan get this oil powder? How come I had no idea... was it since the beginning, or at Huang Jin mountain or at Xiao Yue mountain? Strange... he doesn’t seem to give a damn about the caravan; he hasn’t even frowned seeing such large losses to the caravan. But why would he care about oiling the handcart? Strange, strange!"

"Wait a second!"

Suddenly, a quick light seemed to flash past Bai Ning Bing’s mind.

At that instant, her whole body shivered and her pupils suddenly shrunk down to pin-sized.

A possibility echoed out from deep within her mind.

She stopped at the spot, her mind filled with shock!

After a long while, the ostrich which had been walking beside her suddenly screeched and woke her up.

Fang Yuan’s figure was already far away now, gradually merging into the crowd in front.

"This guy...." Bai Ning Bing lowered her head, covering the cold light flashing past her blue eyes under the cover of the straw hat.

Sun was slowly setting down in the west and the many stars began to appear in the sky.

The caravan stopped near a beach, they had decided to camp here for the night.

However, just when they were half finished with setting up the camp, a group of cold jade owlcats appeared in the vicinity.

"Beast group, it is the owlcat!"

"Stop your work, make defensive formations!"

"These damn animals, I just had my dinner..."

People cursed and ran, but with the previous bitter suffering and tempering, they soon formed three tight defensive lines.

Cold Jade Owlcat’s body was like that of a leopard’s and was extremely quick. Its face, though, was similar to an owl, its enormous eyes covered almost half of its face and shone with eerie green light in the dark.

The owlcat king gave a loud cry; the owlcat groups charged towards the camp like a tide.

"Kill!" The gu masters who were in the frontlines shouted.

Momentarily, all kinds of colors flashed, fire blazed, rocks and soils flew, lightning rumbled...

Countless owlcats collapsed, but more waves of owlcats rushed forth.

"Heavens, this is a large scale cold jade owlcat groups." Someone shouted.

"Ahh, save...." A part of the defensive lines couldn’t resist the attacks anymore, and a gu master was pounced upon by three owlcats, his tragic scream stopped mid-way, flesh and blood splattered in the air.

"Quick, cover up that gap." Two gu masters were sent as reinforcements.

However, it was of no use, the gap continued to increase, slowly destroying the whole defensive line.

"Retreat, retreat!" In the end, they had no choice but to retreat to second defensive line.

"Link the handcarts and carriages, and pile up the goods into high walls!"

After the second defensive line, the third defensive line hurriedly set up a barricade.

Many servants were busy moving the goods, their bodies soaked with sweat. No one could goof off at this time.

Fang Yuan was moving a large trunk, when Bai Ning Bing suddenly walked over and lifted a side of the trunk.

On the surface, she seemed to be helping Fang Yuan, but actually she moved closer to Fang Yuan and whispered to his ears while gritting her teeth: "You bastard, you attracted these cold jade owlcats, right?"

Fang Yuan looked surprised: "Why do you say such a thing?"

"Stop pretending. There was definitely something wrong with those powder, I don’t believe a guy like you will kindly consider these minor details!" Bai Ning Bing whispered.

"Hahaha, you finally discovered it." Fang Yuan didn’t deny.

Bai Ning Bing couldn’t help gritting her teeth, all the frequent attacks the caravan suffered on the way was all due to Fang Yuan’s ’contribution’!

The two lifted the wooden trunk and moved slowly, the people around them were all busy shouting and moving, their concentration all on the battlefield. Who could have the time to listen to Fang and Bai’s whisperings?

"Why are you doing this?" After a moment of silence, Bai Ning Bing asked.

"Haha." Fang Yuan laughed, "Guess."

Immediately, Bai Ning Bing felt a violent impulse to beat Fang Yuan up.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bai Ning Bing controlled her urge as her eyes squinted.

She was after all an icy genius, easily able to understand things: "What does Shang Xin Ci have that makes Fang Yuan put in so much effort?"

Firstly, she had assumed that Fang Yuan was after Shang Xin Ci’s beauty, but now she had overruled that assumption. She understood Fang Yuan, only a huge amount of benefit could make him exert himself like this.

But after so many days, Bai Ning Bing had already understood Shang Xin Ci’s background, she was ostracised by Zhang clan, and was only a mortal with no cultivating talent.

Shang Xin Ci was indeed beautiful as a flower, but this appearance was not a strength of hers, but a weakness.

This appearance would invite the demonic claws of lust and crime. Most importantly, she did not have the power to protect herself, if not for the loyal rank three Gu Master serving her, she would’ve been caught and turned into a plaything long ago.

Such a person, what value does she hold? Her business talent? It was nothing compared to Fang Yuan’s.

Bai Ning Bing could not comprehend it at all.

Fang Yuan did not speak, and did not reply Bai Ning Bing.

"Those two over there, move faster, stop wasting time!" Not far away, a Gu Master pointed at Fang and Bai, shouting.

Fang and Bai moved more quickly, as Bai Ning Bing suppressed her voice: "You’re messing around like this, aren’t you afraid of getting exposed? If anyone finds out, heheh, these people will fight you to the death!"

"Then did they find out?" Fang Yuan rebuked.

"Tsk..."

The two put down their wooden boxes and walked back.

To eliminate his own suspicion, Fang Yuan sacrificed most of his goods during the first beast group attack. After a few assaults, Zhang clan’s losses were the most severe. Many people felt pity for Shang Xin Ci, and even Shang Xin Ci herself approached Fang Yuan and consoled him.

But now that Bai Ning Bing thought about it, she realized, although Fang Yuan seemed to have lost a lot of goods, his truly valuable goods were still kept till today. These goods were more than half the value of his entire fortune, thus his real losses were not as much as it seems!

His concealment methods were truly divine, if she did not discover it by accident, she would still be in the dark.

Thinking so, Bai Ning Bing felt indignant ——"This guy, he even hid the truth from me!"

The two carried another box.

Fang Yuan seemed to know Bai Ning Bing’s inner thoughts, laughing lightly: "To deceive the enemy, we have to deceive ourselves first. After all, I was not intentionally keeping it from you, you have your purpose to serve."

"Oh, what purpose?" Bai Ning Bing naturally asked.

"To alert myself. You are the person closest to me, if you find anything amiss, the others will do so soon."

"But, it was coincidence today that I..."

Fang Yuan shook his head: "Chance is represented by a certain trend, regardless, it is about time already."

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes shone: "What are you going to do?"

Cold jade owlcat did not manage to break the third line of defense, as the second line of defense still held on, eliminating these attackers.

After the battle, the survivors tallied the results, and cleaned up the battlefield.

"How many times have we been attacked already?"

"I wanna go home!"

"Damn it, our luck is too terrible this time."

"Should we continue forward? Maybe if we stay here and wait for the other caravan’s help, it might be a good idea."

...

Everyone’s morale was low, some people grumbled, while most felt that the future was uncertain, and did not want to proceed further. Fear towards death, frustration and dread of the unknown emanated throughout the camp.

"Jia caravan leader, why do you assign our Chen clan to guard the first line of defense every time? What motive do you have?!"

"Chen vice leader, I have been fair and impartial the entire time. Your Chen clan has the greatest strength, now that we are in this together, we have to help each other. Those who are stronger put in more effort, of course you have more responsibilities as well.

As the argument was sudden, many people’s attention was attracted.

Jia Long and Chen vice leader Chen Shuang Jin stared at each other in a tense atmosphere.

"My Chen clan is the strongest? Haha, Jia caravan leader you are truly speaking b*llshit, everyone knows how much fighting force you have left!" Chen Shuang Jin laughed coldly.

"Ridiculous! From my clan, such a good person like Jia Ping had been sacrificed! What about your Chen clan?" Jia Long chided.

"Both of you, now is not the time for arguments." Lin clan vice leader walked over and advised.

Eventually, Jia and Chen left without coming to an agreement.

"Even Lord Jia Long and Lord Chen Shuang Jin have argued. I thought Jia and Chen clan were very close?"

"Sigh, at this crucial moment, it is everyone for themselves. Thinking of how to preserve their own strength, the relationship no longer matters."

"According to the newest information, Jia clan’s two young masters have a huge disagreement, and Chen clan seem to have gone to rely on Jia Gui."

"So that’s it. Lord Jia Long is Jia Fu’s subordinate, no wonder Chen clan did not give them face."

The few Gu Masters discussed softly, as Fang Yuan’s heart stirred.

Few days later, the caravan whose morale is rock bottom reached Xiang Ya mountain.

Xiang Ya mountain reached into the clouds as large groups of elephants lived in it. The climate on the mountain was unique, from the mountain foot to mountain belt, it was moist and tropical, with lots of rainforests. From the mountain belt to mountain peak, it was snowy, dry and cold as cedar trees grew there.

Everyone was cautious, but good news was that after entering Xiang Ya mountain for a few days, they did not encounter any beast group attacks.

"Are we finally lucky for once?"

"Naturally, after our luck hit rock bottom, it can only go up after that."

"What a pity, our goods were almost all destroyed. We will have loss a lot of profits this time."

"Hmph, be content you can keep your life, that’s good enough already!"

"After Xiang Ya mountain, we have to get by Mu Bei mountain, Shuang Jiang mountain, then we will reach Zhao clan village. At that place I must sleep at least three days straight."

...

Everyone were in a conversation as they commented on the future, as morale rose slightly.

"Eh, snowing?" Someone looked up, seeing spots of white particles floating down from the air.

"Rubbish, this is the foot of Xiang Ya mountain, how can there be snow?" Someone did not believe it, but once he raised his head, his expression froze.

"It really is snowing..."

"Damn it, this isn’t snow, it’s feathers!" Someone shouted.

Many Gu masters in the caravan heard this and shuddered.

White feathers, could it be —— White feather flying elephant?

At this moment, intense winds flew as white feathers floated everywhere, like the advent of a snowstorm.

Angggggg...... 1

Hundreds of elephants cried out at once, stepping in the air as they charged towards the caravan on the ground.

"Damn it, it really is the white feather flying elephants!"

"How did we attract them, they should be living above the mountain belt."

"Get into formation, faster get into formation!"

But it was too late, under the rampage of the elephant group, anywhere they went, people were flipped off their horses.

These white feather flying elephants, their bodies were covered in white feathers. With two three-meter long curved tusks, thick and sharp. With the huge impact of their charging, they were near unstoppable.

The moving caravan were caught off guard. Under just one attack, hundreds of lives were taken away. Many servants were stomped into meat paste, and the carriages were pierced by the tusks. Three black skin fat beetles were killed, and winged snakes and ostriches ran about in panic, causing stomping incidents.

At once, the scene was in utter chaos.

"Gu Masters, all of the Gu Masters, gather here!" Jia Long shouted from among the people.

But once he gathered over ten men, the elephant groups rushed down again, scattering the Gu Masters.

The elephant group flew in the sky, preparing their third attack.

"Sigh..." Jia Long sighed, knowing there was little hope of counter attacking, he could only shout: "Everyone, quickly escape, run into the surrounding rainforests!"

Even without him mentioning it, many people had already rushed into the rainforests.

But the white feather flying elephants’ charge were insanely powerful, after they got into the rainforests, trees were instantly fell as numerous people were stomped by the elephants.

These flying elephants looked sacred and elegant, but their nature were bloodthirsty.

Angggg!

A flying elephant aimed at Shang Xin Ci and descended like a comet.

"Miss, run! I’ll divert their attention!" At the crucial moment, Zhang Zhu stood out and shot a flash of red light at the flying elephant.

The flying elephant was enraged, changing direction and aimed at Zhang Zhu.

Zhang Zhu was a healing Gu Master, his attack and defense was not outstanding, thus escaping pitifully in the rainforest.

The flying elephant came flying, bringing with it a ferocious roar of the wind.

Zhang Zhu sprinted and managed to leap in front of him, as the flying elephant landed right behind him, breaking several trees and feathers dropped to the ground.

"So close!" Zhang Zhu wiped the sweat off his forehead, just as he got up, his vision went dark.

Bam!

A thick tree branch was swung over by the white feather flying elephant, hitting Zhang Zhu’s body directly.

At the moment of life and death, Zhang Zhu activated his defensive Gu, covering his body in a golden light.

Splat!

The golden light dispersed and he vomited out a mouthful of blood, as he was sent flying far away.

His eyes were spinning with stars, as he felt extremely dizzy, lying on the ground unable to move.

Somehow, he could hear the sound of elephant feet stomping, and it was getting louder.

A cold chill went down his spine, his rich battle experience was telling him —— his life was in danger!

He could not think further, quickly rolling on the ground.

At almost the same time, the white feather flying elephant slammed down right beside him.

Bam!

Another thunderous impact, as the white feather flying elephant crashed on the mountain walls, its two tusks stabbing deep into the mountain rocks.

The flying elephant cried loudly, trying to move its head and trying to move backwards with its four legs.

Zhang Zhu’s vision finally started to clear up, and he stood up weakly. Seeing this scene, he could not help but sweat. If he was slightly slower earlier, he would’ve been torn to pieces.

He checked his aperture, and there was still fifty percent of his primeval essence left. His defensive Gu was in a bad shape, close to dying.

"I have to get back to Miss!" He was anxious in his heart, as a Gu Master, he already faced such dangers. Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die were mortals, their lives were in much greater danger and peril.

That white feather flying elephant was still pulling out its tusks, as Zhang Zhu ran away rapidly, running in the direction his memories told him.

At the area where they split, Shang Xin Ci was already missing.

Zhang Zhu was hesitant on where to go, when a Gu Master ran over with three white feather flying elephants chasing him.

"Save me!" He shouted.

"Damn it." Zhang Zhu cursed, he could tell this was Chen clan’s young Gu Master, called Chen Xin.

Zhang Zhu was worried about his lady’s safety, how could he care about Chen Xin, thus rapidly escaping.

Chen Xin saw Zhang Zhu, and like a drowning person seeing a floating log, he chased after him immediately.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

"It is about time already" - Guess what Fang Yuan is planning.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Zhang Zhu cursed but was eventually dragged into the mess. It was a dangerous game of cat and mouse, while barely surviving, the two managed to shrug off the flying elephant but eventually got into a dead end at the cliff, their paths blocked by two flying elephants.

The earth rumbled as a flying elephant came crashing.

"Lad, split up!" Zhang Zhu shouted, sprinting towards the left.

"God damn it!" Chen Xin shouted, before he could react, a flying elephant came crashing, and made a huge hole in the cliff behind him, as the tusks stabbed deeply into the mountain rocks.

Both flying elephants were restricted in a way for now.

"The heavens blessed me, my life is not fated to end yet!" Zhang Zhu breathed roughly, as he sprawled on the ground...

The mountain wall was vibrating, as the two flying elephants growled loudly. They continued to shrug their heads, and caused shrapnels to fly all over the place as the holes that their tusks stabbed into enlarged.

Zhang Zhu was shocked when he saw this, knowing the two elephants would quickly get loose, he propped himself and tried desperately to get up.

He had just stood up, when he heard the wind blow towards him, and he shuddered!

Pew!

A white bone spear, with a spiral design, stabbed him from his back, penetrating his chest and stabbing firmly on the ground.

Blood flowed along the bone spear, dripping on the ground.

Zhang Zhu’s movements halted, opening his mouth slightly as blood oozed out of the corner of his lips.

He gradually lowered his head, looking at this fatal spiral bone spear.

Initially he had thought it was the white feather flying elephants’ tusks, but soon, he realized this was the attack of a Gu Master.

"Who is it?" He wanted to turn his head, to see who had backstabbed him.

But the next second.

Pew , another bone spear was fired!

This spear, flew directly into his brain, and came out of his mouth, as the tip stabbed on the ground.

Zhang Zhu was firmly kept in place, his eyes widening in futile, while his pupils shrunk.

He was dead.

Dying with grievance.

At a hidden corner, Fang Yuan observed from afar.

These few days, he had obtained Zhang Zhu’s information, this person was an obstacle that had to be removed.

The two white bone spears gradually dissipated into white light, dispersing into the air.

Zhang Zhu lost his support, and crashed onto the ground.

A white feather flying elephant pulled out its tusks, and charged towards Zhang Zhu’s corpse, stomping on it, easily turning it into meat paste, and crushing all his bones.

The white feathers scattered and the flying elephant took off, flying into mid air again.

Seeing this, Fang Yuan retracted his gaze, Zhang Zhu was confirmed to be dead. After the flying elephant stomped on the corpse, Fang Yuan did not even need to clear up the crime scene.

He left stealthily.

After he left, the other flying elephant took off as well.

Its tusks penetrated the mountain walls, and left two bowl-sized holes. The wall caved in as it was surrounded by debris.

Suddenly under the pile of rocks, a head emerged.

"My god, I was scared to death! Thankfully I had the bury Gu and avoided this crisis..." Chen Xin dug his way out, breathing raggedly as cold sweat poured down his spine, experiencing after fear.

This bury Gu allowed Gu Masters to dig into the ground and hide. The weakness was, once used, the Gu Master can only be buried at one spot, and cannot move. After activating, the Gu Master also has to consume a lot of primeval essence to sustain it.

Chen Xin was chased as he ran, only at the final moment, did he have the opportunity to use it.

"The situation is getting more chaotic, there is actually a Gu Master assassinating Zhang Zhu." Seeing Zhang Zhu corpse, turned into meat paste, completely unrecognisable, Chen Xin gulped and escaped frantically.

The elephant group continued rampaging for two hours before leaving.

Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die supported each other as the walked out of the rainforest.

Their bodies were full of mud and soil, looking battered and exhausted, and Xiao Die’s face was even blue-black. Evidently, when escaping, she had knocked into something and gotten a bruise.

"Missy..." She was scared out of her wits, death was so close to her, even trembling as she walked.

Shang Xin Ci patted her hand, trying to give her assurance. However, she herself was pale.

Along the way, corpses lined the road as blood flowed into the wilderness. Broken carriage wheels, dead ostriches, and the corpses of black skin fat beetles and winged snakes laid on the pavements.

As the survivors gathered together, anguished cries, sniffing and painful growls mixed into one.

As the leader of the caravan, Jia Long’s face was as black as charcoal. The fatalities were too severe this time, the entire caravan lost majority of its members, less than a-tenth remained, most were crippled.

After gathering the people, only a hundred were left. Majority were Gu Masters, and few were mortals.

The strongest Jia clan and Chen clan were deep in losses, not to mention the others. Lin clan had only three Gu Masters left, and some unfortunate clans’ groups were completely wiped out.

The rainforest also had its danger, many people did not die from the white feather flying elephants’ rampage, but were attacked by the wild beasts and poisonous worms in the rainforest.

"Bai Yun, it is great to see you. Earlier in the rainforest, thanks for drawing a white feather flying elephant away from us." Among the people, Shang Xin Ci found Bai Ning Bing and thanked her.

Fang Yuan did not trust Bai Ning Bing, afraid she would collude with Zhang Zhu, thus he went to kill Zhang Zhu personally. As a result, Bai Ning Bing followed Shang Xin Ci in secret to protect her life.

"This is nothing, I always return kindness. Zhang clan lady, what saved you is not me, but your kind actions in the past." Bai Ning Bing said.

She was always quiet and solemn, almost never speaking. Even if she spoke, she suppressed and changed her voice intentionally.

But now she no longer concealed it, using her normal voice to speak, her tone was cold and indifferent, but clear and evidently female, causing Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die’s face to turn slightly shocked.

"That’s right, Bai Yun, did you see Uncle Zhang Zhu?" Shang Xin Ci asked anxiously: "I’ve looked around but did not manage to find him."

Bai Ning Bing sighed, since Fang Yuan returned, she knew Zhang Zhu was definitely dead.

"No worries lady, Zhang Zhu is a Gu Master, having the ability to protect himself. He might be on the way back." She consoled.

"Hopefully so." Shang Xin Ci’s eyebrows were tightly knit, as the uneasiness in her heart intensified.

At the other side, Leader Jia Long stood at a high ground, shouting: "Everyone, listen up. The smell here will soon attract other beast groups. We have to leave quickly. Everyone move quickly, bring along all the goods that you can salvage. Those that are too heavy, we will have to discard them. In thirty minutes, we must leave this area."

The danger was not over yet, everyone could only force themselves to work under the intense grief.

"Save me, someone please save me! I am still bleeding..."

"Bring me along, I am only crippled in one leg, I can still walk."

"I’m begging you, I’ll pay with primeval stones. Two, three? Even four will do!"

Those family servants who were severely injured and could not move all begged earnestly.

Very few people received help, those who were injured or crippled could not help out in manual labor and were a burden. Many were heartlessly left behind.

Seeing everyone leave, many went into a frenzy and started to curse.

Many crawled on the ground and tried to catch up to the caravan.

"Save me, Lady Zhang, you are the kindest person!"

"Lady Zhang, please show mercy..."

Shang Xin Ci’s footsteps halted, her lips trembling, her face was pale without any blood circulation as her eyes darted around frantically.

The mountain winds blew on her green blouse, and her messy hair made her appear like a small grass in the middle of a storm.

"Lady Zhang, quickly leave. Now is not the time to be kind." Fang Yuan got to her side, and held her arm, forcing her to move ahead.

Xiao Die who could not stop talking normally kept her mouth shut, moving along silently, her legs trembling.

"Trust me, everything will get better." Fang Yuan said in a gentle tone.

Shang Xin Ci grabbed her chest, breathing in deeply. It was as if oxygen was thin and she could not breathe properly.

At the start, she used her nose to breathe, but soon she opened her mouth and swallowed mouthfuls of air.

Her footsteps became more unsteady, as her limbs grew weak, if not for Fang Yuan supporting her, she might have collapsed on the ground already.

The smell of blood assaulted her nose as her entire body was drenched from sweat. When the mountain winds blew, she shuddered from the cold.

But after this shiver, her breathing gradually calmed down.

After a few more steps, she no longer needed to breathe heavily. After thirty steps, she closed her mouth and her nasal breathing slowed. After fifty steps, her footsteps gradually gained strength, and she no longer needed Fang Yuan’s support.

The mountain path extended up the cliff, she walked to the top of a slope and the mountain winds blew her hair all over the place.

She stretched out her arm, and began to comb them.

When she had finally finished arranging her hair, the confusion, fear, and worry in her expression vanished, only a sturdy determined gaze remained.

"Thank you." She said to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan nodded, letting go of her arm.

On the slope, she gradually stopped her steps, looking back.

"Do you know? This is the most difficult road I’ve walked on since my birth." She sighed in agony, her face still pale but her voice was extremely gentle and soft.

Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a smile, so this is Shang Xin Ci? As expected of the person that impacted the southern borders.

Even Bai Ning Bing looked twice, seeing Shang Xin Ci in a different light.

To a mortal young girl, after encountering such a disaster, being able to reorganise herself so quickly was an amazing feat.

On this road, voices of crying and pleas were constantly heard, this was nothing to Fang and Bai, but to Shang Xin Ci, it was a great torture and interrogation!

Especially after Zhang Zhu’s disappearance, after losing her greatest reliance, Shang Xin Ci could still bravely face this situation head on, it was truly outstanding.

On this road, although it was an ordinary mountain path, it was a difficult trial of the heart. Shang Xin Xi gritted her teeth, and did not collapse, walking past with determination.

At this instant, she matured.

Fang Yuan suddenly laughed lightly, staring at Shang Xin Ci deeply: "Lady Zhang, since you are so kind, why did you not save those who were abandoned?"

This attracted Xiao Die’s furious stare.

Shang Xin Ci laughed bitterly: "If I could save them, I would definitely do it, but unfortunately, no matter what I try, I cannot save these people."

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan laughed heartily: "This is the part where I admire you the most. Irrational kindness is a crime. Although you are a mortal, you have my respect. Lady Zhang, in life, there are many obstacles, sometimes the road might be very dirty and difficult, but as long as you do all that you can, you will have a peace of mind."

Shang Xin Ci looked at Fang Yuan, light shining in her beautiful eyes.

She had guessed long ago, that Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were not mortals. From his tone earlier, she finally confirmed this.

In her perspective, she had unknowingly given Fang and Bai some help, these were small acts of kindness, but it won their recognition and admiration.

Afterwards, Fang and Bai helped her many times, first during Fei Hou mountain, and later earning money for her. And a moment ago, they saved her life.

She was a weak girl, chased from her clan, and even lost half of her goods, what did she have that they could exploit?

Nothing!

Under such circumstances, they still stood by her side. Just this action, she could tell that although they were mysterious, their nature were pure and righteous, as true beauty and kindness hid in their hearts.

Meeting them, was her fortune.

Thinking so, Shang Xin Ci’s heart was palpitating with gratitude, as she stared at Fang Yuan deeply, saying sincerely.

"Thank you."

Just two words, expressed the immense gratitude in her heart.

Bai Ning Bing could not help but roll her eyes.

If Shang Xin Ci found out that the entire misfortune was caused by Fang Yuan singlehandedly, who knows how she would react to that?

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

“The heavens blessed me, my life is not fated to end yet!” This is why you don’t raise flags...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"The report on casualties have come out; right now, we are left with a hundred and thirty seven people, among which seventy eight are Gu Masters and fifty nine are mortals." A vice leader reported to everyone.

At this time, in this tattered tent, the surviving leaders of the caravan were all gathered together, discussing their options.

The mood was heavy and oppressive.

The caravan leader Jia Long was frowning and his brows almost tightened into a knot when he heard the report.

Their caravan had originally been a large-sized caravan with over a thousand people, but now it was down to this pathetic number. One might think seventy eight Gu Masters were quite a high number, but only twelve were rank three Gu Masters, twenty eight were rank two and remaining thirty eight were all rank one Gu Masters.

This number included all the injured and disabled Gu Masters. In truth, the amount of Gu Masters who still retained their strength did not amount to even half.

Mortal lives were cheap, they could abandon these servants, but Gu Masters were different.

Every Gu Master was a precious resource to their clans, they couldn’t be abandoned.

Jia Long knew these disabled Gu Masters were a huge burden to the caravan, and were just adding more problems to the already crumbling logistics department of the caravan to preserve their lives and treat their injuries.

However, Jia Long didn’t dare to abandon them, if he abandoned the Gu Masters, the morale would completely break down and all the remaining Gu Masters would feel insecure; the whole caravan would collapse. Their end result would be food for the beast groups.

At this time, the vice leader who had reported the statistics, changed the subject: "The only fortunate thing is there are still a lot of goods remaining in the caravan. If we distribute these ownerless goods, then the primeval stones we distribute will be enough to make up for most of our losses."

In the calamity just before, there were many deaths but the loss to goods was instead few.

If the goods were equally distributed, the survivors could instead profit from this.

Almost everyone present in the tent had shining eyes now.

Merchants chased after profits, even if they were in danger, this innate nature did not change.

The group of people began looking at each other before vice leader Chen Shuang Jin coughed: "I feel that equal distribution isn’t quite proper. In the battle just before, my Chen Clan has sacrificed the most and has also killed the most white feather flying elephants. I want at least thirty percent of these ownerless goods!"

"Thirty percent?"

"Impossible!"

"How much did your Chen Clan sacrifice? What about my Wei Chi Clan that had to sacrifice a young rank two peak stage genius?"

"No matter what, our Zhi Clan demands twenty percent."

...

The commotion in the tent began to turn into disputes. Everyone felt greed in front of benefits.

Only Shang Xin Ci was sitting silently in the group.

The stronger groups demanded more; the weaker groups demanded equal distribution.

The dispute was turning fiercer and even attracted many inquiring gazes from outside the tent.

Shang Xin Ci suddenly stood up.

The tent suddenly quietened down.

"Everyone," Shang Xin Ci’s beautiful eyes swept over everyone, "the urgent matter is not the distribution of these goods but how we should continue forward. Maybe there will be more beast groups at the next moment! We are in the same boat and are tied together by fate. However, our individual strength is limited, so we need to collaborate together to have a chance at survival."

She paused for a moment and continued, "I suggest that we will all contribute our goods and take out the things which can be helpful to us. As I proposed it, my Zhang Clan shall act as the example; I am willing to contribute all of the goods in my possession without seeking compensation."

"What?"

"Free contribution?!"

Momentarily, many became tongue-tied; Chen Shuang Jin, Jia Long and others all showed different expressions.

"I am tired, I hope everyone can agree on an effective method soon. I will take my leave." Saying this, Shang Xin Ci nodded her head and opened the tent flap.

She hadn’t even walked five steps out of the tent, when a huge commotion broke out in the tent.

Now that Zhang Clan’s goods were also added on the list, the benefits had become even higher, making everyone frantic.

Shang Xin Ci’s steps slowed, but she just clenched her fists and heaved a deep sigh.

She was also a merchant and naturally wanted to chase after profits. Her so-called ’voluntary contribution’ just before was of course not heartfelt.

It was just that the current situation had forced her. She was like a child who was carrying a large sum of money and had no choice but to protect herself as she walked among the adults.

When she walked back to her tent, she saw Xiao Die curling up and weeping at the corner, her eyes bloodshot.

She had grown up and lived together with Shang Xin Ci almost all her life. The horror from white feather flying elephants was bursting out right now.

"Xiao Die." Shang Xin Ci sighed and sat beside her, consoling.

"Missy, I am scared. Weep weep.... Lord Zhang Zhu hasn’t returned yet, it can’t be, it can’t be..." Xiao Die buried her head in Shang Xin Ci’s chest as she wept bitter tears.

Shang Xin Ci patted her back and spoke words of comfort, but Xiao Die still continued to cry.

"Xiao Die, Uncle Zhang Zhu might not return ever again." Shang Xin Ci said in a heavy tone.

The moment these words were said, she clearly felt Xiao Die’s body shiver.

"Missy... that’s not true, that can’t be!" Xiao Die raised her head, her eyes were bloodshot and she was repeatedly shaking her head.

"Accept the truth, Xiao Die!" Shang Xin Ci suddenly said in a strict voice, "From now on, we can only rely on ourselves. Don’t cry, don’t cry, crying won’t solve any problems!"

"Rely on ourselves? But we are both mortals, if not for Lord Zhang Zhu, we couldn’t have even embarked on this expedition." Xiao Die said with eyes filled with tears, her morale low.

"You are right. If it was not for Uncle Zhang Zhu’s identity, how could these people let me become on of the vice leaders. Xiao Die, you are right, we are mortals; but mortals also have their strengths!" Shang Xin Ci’s gaze flashed with a resolute light.

She looked at Xiao Die with her bright gaze and shook Xiao Die’s arm: "Xiao Die, do you believe in me?"

As Xiao Die looked at the current Shang Xin Ci, she felt an unknown strength filling her.

This strength came from Shang Xin Ci and then pervaded her body, influencing her heart and making her feel like she was being illuminated by light.

"Missy..." Xiao Die’s gaze flashed, she had never seen this form of her lady; at this instant, she felt that her lady looked more beautiful than ever before.

"I believe you!" She answered softly but resolutely.

"Good. Listen properly, we are in a dangerous situation now, sometimes people can be more dreadful than wild beasts. Bring all our savings and let’s go find Hei Tu and Bai Yun."

"Okay. I will do as you say missy!"

...

After about five minutes.

In the tent, Fang Yuan and Shang Xin Ci was sitting cross-legged opposite each other.

Fang Yuan stared ruminatingly at the beautiful girl in front of him: "You are telling me, you’ve already contributed all of our goods for free? To those insatiable hyenas?"

"Yes, that is so." Shang Xin Ci calmly admitted.

Fang Yuan’s lips curled up, his gaze towards Shang Xin Ci was filled with admiration.

She was truly smart, having the resolution to let go!

Zhang Zhu was dead, Shang Xin Ci was only a mortal and even if she represented Zhang Clan, her position was not equal to the other vice leaders.

It would be easy for these Gu Masters to swallow Shang Xin Ci’s properties.

They would kill Shang Xin Ci and put the blame on the beast groups, no one could say anything at that time. Zhang Clan also wouldn’t investigate thoroughly for a mere Shang Xin Ci.

To Shang Xin Ci, these goods on her hands had become incomparably hot and could court disaster towards her. Hence, she wisely chose to give up these cause of disaster to others, and guarantee her safety.

However, she was very aware that this type of safety wasn’t reliable at all and thus came here.

"I came here to apologize to you, I am really sorry." Shang Xin Ci bowed towards Fang Yuan, "You borrowed these goods, so these goods should have been yours, but I rudely took the matters into my own hands. As an apology, I ask you to please accept these."

Shang Xin Ci brought forward the two wooden trunks.

Without even opening them, Fang Yuan knew these trunks were filled with primeval stones.

Most of it was what he earned himself and the fifty-fifty percentage shares of Shang Xin Ci as well.

Fang Yuan couldn’t help but observe Shang Xin Ci.

Their gazes met each other in the air, gradually coming to a tacit understanding.

They were both smart and understood many things without them having been said.

In Shang Xin Ci’s perception, Fang Yuan was deliberately hiding his identity and could very possibly be a Gu Master. From all his behaviors till now, Shang Xin Ci felt he was a reliable person. If there was someone who could still help her, Fang Yuan was no doubt the best choice because she felt at ease towards him.

However, she also had some misgivings. First, she didn’t know what strength Fang Yuan truly possessed; there was a huge difference between rank one, rank two or rank three. Secondly, there was definitely some painful backstory for Fang Yuan to hide his identity, so he might not necessarily reveal his identity to help her.

Shang Xin Ci had offered up all the goods without getting Fang Yuan’s consent, and after getting the most basic guarantee for safety, she brought out all her savings to find Fang Yuan. She was saying it was her apology, but this action was actually inviting Fang Yuan to her side, hoping to obtain his help.

She knew Fang Yuan and her were the same type of people, and could come to a tacit understanding of smart people.

The two gazed at each other for a long while before Fang Yuan smiled and broke the silence: "These primeval stones, it is better for Lady Zhang to take them back."

Shang Xin Ci’s expression slightly paled as her heart sank.

From her understanding, Fang Yuan refusing these primeval stones meant he was refusing to help her.

However, what could she do about this?

Even if she talked of it, Fang Yuan had already repaid her many times over; there were very few people in the world who would do this. Shang Xin Ci couldn’t demand anything.

However, if Hei Tu didn’t help her, who else was there? Bai Yun? That wasn’t like to work, they seemed to have very intimate relationship; advancing or retreating together.

Shang Xin Ci couldn’t think of any other person, a bitter smile appeared in her beautiful appearance: "I understand. But these primeval stones are my gift to you. Ordinary people holding treasures will court calamity, if you don’t accept them, I might have to contribute them too."

Fang Yuan laughed: "Lady Zhang, you misunderstood me. When I and Bai Yun had just entered the caravan, we were severely wounded and were barely hanging by a thread. Our strength had fallen to an all-time low and our goods were even coveted by some strong servants. Truly, when you are low and down, even scums come to bully you . It was you who sheltered us and gave us enough time to recuperate. It won’t be wrong to see this favor as saving our lives."

"And I am someone who repays kindness and takes revenge for enmity. Although you are a mortal, I acknowledge you and even admire you. It is fate we met each other among such a vast population. A droplet of water received in need will be repaid with a whole spring , let alone the favor of saving life. Take back the primeval stones, I will definitely protect you with all my strength!"

"Ah...." Shang Xin Ci couldn’t help giving a soft cry.

Her eyelashes shook and her eyes reddened, turning tearful.

Because of her tears, Fang Yuan appeared blurry in her vision. However, in her heart, Fang Yuan’s image became incomparably clear.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Moral of the story: Kindness begets kindness.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

As the saying goes, adding icing on the cake cannot compare to offering help in times of need .

Troubled times and turbulence revealed people’s true colors.

Fang Yuan, however, wasn’t concerned with Shang Xin Ci’s expression; next was the truly important thing.

He continued: "There is something I must tell you."

"Please speak." Shang Xin Ci wiped the corners of her eyes with her jade-like fingers, and adjusted her mood.

"Bai Yun and I are demonic path Gu Masters." Fang Yuan said.

Shang Xin Ci wasn’t surprised and instead nodded her head. She had already anticipated this. Previously, Zhang Zhu had also guessed this and had reminded her to be on guard against Fang and Bai.

She was thus mentally prepared and could calmly accept this shocking statement.

She didn’t have the aptitude to cultivate and was, moreover, an illegitimate child; her different life experience made her mature fast and have a deep understanding of the world’s nature.

What’s more, right now, she didn’t have any other better options.

Fang Yuan’s voice turned cold: "Those from the demonic path are vicious and merciless. Bai Yun and I are no exception; we have taken lives."

Shang Xin Ci subconsciously puckered her lips.

"You have to trust me, for me to be able to help you. But rest assured, after I feel that I have repaid your favor in full, I will quietly leave. Others will not associate you with demonic Gu Masters. But before that, Bai Yun and I will show up as Zhang Clan’s Gu Masters, I hope that you can clarify our identities." Fang Yuan indifferently said.

Shang Xin Ci revealed a resolute gaze: "Lord Hei Tu, just address me as Xin Ci. You are of demonic path, but you are frank and someone of principles. Xin Ci is not pedantic, those righteous Gu Masters are mostly just hypocrites, being able to receive your protection is my fortune."

"Hahaha." Fang Yuan laughed loudly and looked deeply at Shang Xin Ci, "As long as you don’t regret it later."

Shang Xin Ci was just about to speak when there came a sound from outside the tent.

"Zhang Xin Ci is in this tent?" It was an arrogant and youthful male voice.

"Lord Gu Master, please stay where you are. Missy is having an important discussion inside." Xiao Die blocked the man.

"Important discussion? Haha, all of your Zhang Clan’s goods have been donated, what important matters could there be to discuss?" The man sneered.

"Lord Gu Master... aahhh!" Xiao Die suddenly screamed, and then there was the sound of her falling to the ground.

"Get lost, you lowly slave dare to block my, Ou Fei’s, path?!"

Shang Xin Ci’s beautiful eyes immediately flashed with panic and worry; she was about to stand up, but was blocked by Fang Yuan.

The tent flap was suddenly lifted and a devious looking young Gu Master appeared in front of the two.

"Zhang Xin Ci!" The young Gu Master’s gaze immediately landed on Shang Xin Ci’s body, without bothering to conceal the lustful desire within.

"Haha, you were here, I have been looking all over for you." He curled up his lips and raised his head, looking at Shang Xin Ci as if everything was under his control.

Shang Xin Ci was wearing green clothings, and looked like a delicate lotus; there seemed to be nothing more beautiful than her.

This beautiful figure was already ingrained into many hearts in the caravan. Ou Fei was one of them; he had always yearned for her and wooed after her several times, but was always rejected by Shang Xin Ci. He had thought of using force, but had to control himself because of Zhang Zhu’s presence.

Now, the only Gu Master from Zhang Clan in the caravan, Zhang Zhu, was dead. Shang Xin Ci was just a mere mortal but was so beautiful; Ou Fei had been coveting her in his heart and now he had this chance.

Ou Fei’s lustful and invading gaze made Shang Xin Ci’s heart twinge, her mood turning dismal.

She had given up the goods of her own accord, but was still not able to obtain safety. Her appearance had become a curse. These righteous Gu Masters who normally appeared dignified had now torn their masks.

Shang Xin Ci was clear that this Ou Fei was only the most impatient one and there were still many other wolves like him.

"I am not sure for what matters has Lord Ou Fei come for?" Shang Xin Ci stood up and asked in greeting.

"Hahaha!" Ou Fei threw his head back and laughed, "I came to help you, Xin Ci. Darling, the Gu Master protecting you has still not returned, he is definitely dead. You are only a weak woman, and as long as you rely on me, you can live safely. Pitiful girl, you don’t need to thank me, this is how kind I am, just follow me."

Saying so, he walked forward to grab Shang Xin Ci.

Shang Xin Ci’s face was pale, she was a young girl after all and couldn’t help taking a step back.

This delicate and pitiful look, instead ignited the lust in Ou Fei.

"Missy, you can’t go with him!" Xiao Die ran into the tent and opened her arms to block in front of Ou Fei.

Ou Fei became furious, and immediately slapped Xiao Die.

Xiao Die tumbled onto the ground, her cheek was already swollen up. She felt dizzy and her ears were ringing from the slap.

"Xiao Die!" Shang Xin Ci quickly crouched down and supported her.

"Missy, leave quickly. Even if I die, I won’t let you take Missy!" Xiao Die slowly stood up and stared fiercely at Ou Fei; her gaze carried fear, anger and also decisiveness.

"You lowly servant, you want to die, I will fulfill your wish!" Ou Fei was going crazy with anger, he raised his hand and slapped down.

However, the next moment, a sturdy hand stretched out from seemingly nothingness, and fiercely grabbed his arm.

"Who is it?!" Ou Fei was startled, but when he looked at the person that was grabbing his arm, he only saw an ugly servant.

"Such audacity!" Ou Fei’s expression twisted into one full of anger.

He tried taking back his arm, but Fang Yuan’s arm was like iron pincers and didn’t even move a bit.

"Dog slave, you are still not releasing your hand?!" Ou Fei’s anger had reached the peak, turning into huge killing intent. He was going to activate his primeval essence when Fang Yuan suddenly smiled.

His whole face was full of burn injuries and he was also one ear short; right now as he smiled, he appeared extremely terrifying.

Ou Fei’s heart immediately palpitated; Fang Yuan had already released his hand.

Then.

He raised his leg and gave a strong kick at Ou Fei’s stomach.

Bang.

Ou Fei only felt an enormous strength - that he had no way to resist - attack him. With the intense pain that followed, his whole body flew out of the tent like tattered rags, stopping only after twenty to thirty feet.

For a person to shoot out from a tent was a rather big commotion.

The surrounding people stopped to watch the show.

The tent flap was torn when Ou Fei flew out. From the torn hole, Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die saw Ou Fei lying motionless on the ground.

The two were dumbfounded.

Merchants always paid particular attention to amiability with others, even putting on smiles when they were wronged. Shang Xin Ci’s came from a poor background, she had already learned to endure and was used to lowering her head. Although she had rank three Zhang Zhu before, he was after all a healing Gu Master and couldn’t do much by himself; most of the conflicting views had to be resolved warmly. Peacefully like the flow of water or the thawing of snow.

However, Fang Yuan’s sudden kick was like a crash of thunder, a steep cliff; with no hints of moderation and restraint, it carried a dominating tyranny.

This intense violence far surpassed the two girl’s imagination.

Ou Fei laid on the ground, stupefied for several seconds. Then the intense pain in his stomach aroused strong hatred and anger in him.

Someone had kicked him and that someone was even a servant!

"Bastard, you actually dared to kick me! How dare you kick me? You lowly mortal, you are asking for death! I will cut your corpse into thousand pieces!!" Ou Fei growled in fury and stood up from the ground.

The anger made his whole face red, he was gritting his teeth and his eyes clearly showed his anger; he looked just like a wild beast that was about to devour a human.

"Go and die!" He crazily charged towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan took a steady step forward, and blocked in front of the two girls with his head high and chest out.

Ou Fei suddenly jumped when he reached close, he reached the heights of twenty feet before diving down at Fang Yuan.

"I will swat you into meat paste!" He shouted and stretched out his two palms.

Under the influence of his Gu, his palms increased in size by over three times, and as it ruthlessly came down on Fang Yuan, even the wind seemed to scream indicating at its violent strength.

If Fang Yuan was truly a mortal, he would definitely be swatted into meat paste by Ou Fei’s palms, dying a terrible death.

However, he was no mortal.

Not only that, he was a rank two upper stage Gu Master.

And not only was he a rank two upper stage Gu Master, he even had a portion of rank three peak stage snow silver primeval essence in his aperture.

Since his advancement to rank two, Fang Yuan’s aperture had been able to contain some snow silver primeval essence. Especially during the frequent attacks by the beast groups, Fang Yuan had stored a portion of snow silver primeval essence to avoid any mishaps. Hence, Fang Yuan might be at rank two upper stage, but his fighting prowess wasn’t limited to that.

And this Ou Fei - was no more than a rank two initial stage trash.

Whoosh!

The strong wind brought forth by Ou Fei’s attack, was blowing at the two girls’ bunned hair.

Xiao Die’s face was deathly pale upon seeing Ou Fei descending like a deity, his two hands swatting down with an extreme power.

Shang Xin Ci’s heart was also palpitating, and couldn’t help but shout: "Careful!"

Fang Yuan only scoffed, before lightly flicking his forefinger.

Spiral bone spear Gu!

A spiral bone spear suddenly shot out towards the sky.

"What?!" Ou Fei was shocked, his mind was in chaos as he tried to immediately dodge.

The bone spear pierced through his defense and skewered his shoulder, before stopping at the scapula; fresh blood spewed out of the wound.

The pain immediately stopped the momentum of Ou Fei’s dive and he fell down on the ground in a sorry state.

"You are actually a Gu Master!" He cried out in panic and surprise.

Fang Yuan didn’t reply, he just rushed forward and smashed his right fist at Ou Fei.

Ou Fei was dazed as he looked at the fist rapidly expanding towards him.

"Damn it!" He cursed and promptly activated his Gu worm as well as subconsciously raising his fan sized palm to block the attack.

Bang!

The strength of two boars and a crocodile burst forth.

The enormous strength tore through Ou Fei’s palms, breaking his defense and then struck his face.

His nose bone fractured and his whole face caved in by the attack. The attack sent him flying, blood spurting out wildly all along the way. And as he fell on the ground like tattered rags, he was already as dead as a corpse could be.

"Oh my god, he killed him!"

"A Gu Master was killed!"

The spectators were horrified; some cried in fear and some screamed.

Fang Yuan’s body was covered by a layer of white light. This was the effect of the canopy Gu. He couldn’t have used his strength as he much as he liked without this layer of defense.

"Gu... he is a Gu Master!!" Xiao Die’s eyes widened into the size of saucers.

Shang Xin Ci was also dumbfounded with shock, she suddenly recalled Fang Yuan’s words as she looked at his back.

"Those from the demonic path are vicious and merciless. Bai Yun and I are no exception; we have taken lives."

They were truly demonic Gu Masters!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Fang Yuan saved the day :)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Dead, he is truly dead!"

"What happened?"

"What the heck is happening here?"

Ou Fei’s corpse was on the ground like a dead dog. How could it not attract attention?

In just a short period of time, the commotion here had become so big that it spread throughout the whole camp.

More and more people started gathering. Most of them cried out in surprise when they saw Ou Fei’s corpse, as they would start inquiring about the events.

In moments, the scene was surrounded by layers of human walls; whisperings and discussions could be heard everywhere.

"Two people suddenly fought and one died immediately after. It’s terrible!"

"He is the killer!" Someone cautiously pointed at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was holding his arms crossed at his chest and his head held high. He was standing indifferently at the same spot, and ignored the discussions in the surroundings as if they didn’t exist.

"Hey, he is only a servant, how could he kill a Gu Master?" There were naturally people who were doubtful.

"He is not a servant, I personally saw him shooting out a white spear and also killing Ou Fei in one punch, it frightened the soul out of me!" A Gu Master who had seen the whole event, said.

"A white spear?!" Chen Xin’s heart suddenly jumped when he heard this.

He had accidentally witnessed the death of Zhang Zhu and the image of Fang Yuan’s spiral bone spear was deeply ingrained in his mind. Thus, when he heard this sensitive term ’white spear’, he immediately linked both scenes.

"What is happening? What the hell happened here!?" Jia Long’s displeased voice travelled over.

"Ah, it is the caravan leader and the vice leaders too." The crowd quickly made a way.

"Someone is dead!"

"Alright, someone was killed... eh, isn’t this vice leader Ou’s son?"

The vice leader who looked at this scene commented in a low voice.

Just after he finished speaking, a mournful scream resounded in everyone’s ears.

"Ahh! My son!! What happened to you, what happened to you?!" A figure rapidly ran to Ou Fei’s corpse, then his movement slowed down all of a sudden.

This person was Ou Clan’s Ou Yang Gong; he was short and thin, with an aquiline nose.

Ou Fei’s face was completely smashed, his brains and blood mixed together to form a small puddle on the ground. It was clear his life force was already completely extinguished.

Ou Yang Gong fixed his eyes at his son’s corpse, tears rolling down his face: "My son, you died such a terrible death. Who was it!? Who was the one that killed my son so viciously!? I am going to rip him into pieces!!"

He was ballistic with anger and his scream was like the ravings of a madman.

Seemingly as a reply to his question, every gazes gathered on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan sneered and calmly said: "Of course it is me. Are you blind? I have been standing here for so long and you couldn’t see me?"

Such an arrogant reply caused the crowd to immediately fall into a clamor.

Jia Long and other vice leaders also couldn’t help frowning.

Fang Yuan’s fearless appearance was causing them to hesitate. In particular, Fang Yuan’s servant clothings made them unable to see the ins and outs of this situation, thus they cautiously chose to stay on the sidelines.

"You are the killer!" Ou Yang Gong stared intently at Fang Yuan with gaze as sharp as a knife, but despite being almost crazed with hatred, he didn’t make a move.

Fang Yuan was slightly surprised.

His own son was lying dead in front of him, but this Ou Yang Gong was actually restraining his killing intent and didn’t rush at him.

Actually, who among those who travelled outside to trade weren’t observant? Ou Yang Gong had lived for so long and was habituated to life or death in his travels. He was an elder and being able to stand in such a high position in Ou Clan was a proof of his ability.

However, him not making a move didn’t mean Fang Yuan wouldn’t.

In all honesty, Ou Fei’s appearance had made Fang Yuan extremely happy — he would make an example out of him as a warning to others, and his strong presence could then awe the crowd.

But just an Ou Fei wasn’t enough for it. But what if he added in this Ou Yang Gong....

Hahaha, that would be perfect!

Fang Yuan’s lips curled up into an evil smile as he thought of this: "Old man, you appeared just in time. Your son dared to be disrespectful to my clan’s lady, the anger in my heart has yet to dissipate! Your son commited a crime because you didn’t discipline him properly. You are the main cause of this, now pay with your life!"

After saying this, he ran forward and, in a blink of an eye, he was almost about to collide against Ou Yang Gong.

Ou Yang Gong’s beard flew with rage.

What was this nonsense? What twisted reasoning was this!?

This guy was clearly the killer but was framing him as the main culprit!!

He was no longer able to restrain his anger and fiercely struck back at Fang Yuan.

Bang , the two collided against each other.

There was a muffled sound and wind surged around them.

Fang Yuan continuously took five to six steps back before he was able to mitigate the impact. The light armor on him flashed weakly several times and then stabilized; in his aperture, canopy Gu had already become listless.

In contrast, Ou Yang Gong was sent flying like a puppet with its strings cut. He puffed out blood in mid-air, and could barely stand up when he fell on the ground, his face already pale as paper.

Anyone could see who was stronger!

"How could this be?"

"That ugly guy is clearly showing an aura of a rank two Gu Master!"

"Ou Yang Gong is disadvantaged, he is old and has become weak. In contrast, that guy is using his advantage to the fullest..."

The vice leaders quickly analyzed the situation.

"You are courting death!" Ou Yang Gong managed to recover after their initial confrontation, his anger flourished even more, wishing he could immediately rip Fang Yuan into pieces.

Just before, he hadn’t expected Fang Yuan to make the first move and not having any information on Fang Yuan, under the urgency of the situation, he couldn’t think properly and chose to meet Fang Yuan head on.

"Rascal, I will let you know the difference between rank two and rank three!" Ou Yang Gong roared in rage and charged at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was fearless as he maintained the canopy Gu; with a spiral bone spear in one hand, blood moon gu in another and jumping grass on his feet, he also rushed towards Ou Yang Gong.

The crowd quickly retreated, opening up a huge empty space.

Ou Yang Gong was at rank three initial stage, and Fang Yuan was at rank two upper stage; the difference between their cultivation bases was extremely far, with the separation of a small realm and a big realm on top of that.

However, Fang Yuan’s situation was very unusual.

He possessed snow silver primeval essence borrowed from Bai Ning Bing and mostly used rank three Gu worms. His total fighting strength was even higher than Ou Yang Gong.

The two fought for five rounds, but Fang Yuan was still at the dominating end.

The crowd were aghast at this situation.

"Thi.. this.. what the hell is going on?"

"A rank three Gu Master is actually being pressured by a rank two Gu Master?!"

"This is ridiculous!"

The crowd couldn’t believe this scene and many had even dazed expressions.

After several more rounds, Fang Yuan completely maintained the upper hand and was firmly suppressing Ou Yang Gong.

A small portion of the crowd realized something.

"This ugly guy is showing rank two aura, but his true cultivation is definitely above this!"

"Right, he must be using a Gu worm to conceal his aura. We didn’t discover it when he was pretending to be a servant before."

"This guy is really vicious, he has been targeting Ou Yang Gong’s vital parts. It doesn’t seem to bode well for Ou Yang Gong."

Right now, Ou Yang Gong was having incessant grievances in his heart, he had thought he could easily beat Fang Yuan, but to think this guy was actually a wolf in sheep’s clothing!

It was no wonder he took the initiative to attack and looked fearless; it was because his cultivation base was not inferior to him.

This guy really was too despicable and shameless!

After several more rounds, the result was clear for all to see, most of the crowd could see how terrible Ou Yang Gong’s situation would be.

"Ou Yang Gong is sure to lose, he will be killed if this continues on!"

"Ou Yang Gong is weaker than the other guy and has been slowly losing since the start of the battle. He won’t be able to avenge his son’s death."

"This ugly guy is really powerful with such great strength and vicious methods, where in the world did this guy pop out from?"

"I know this guy, he is that servant who won against numerous bandit monkey kings in Fei Hou mountain!"

The crowd commented one after another; they were worried, curious, afraid and shocked.

"Both of you, please stop. There has to be some misunderstandings here!" Seeing Ou Yang Gong about to be killed by Fang Yuan, Jia Long - as the caravan leader - couldn’t just sit back anymore, he quickly moved to the battlefield and interrupted the battle.

Right now, Ou Yang Gong was already soaked with sweat, his heart throbbed rapidly in fear of death and his face was deadly pale; hearing Jia Long’s words, he immediately felt joyous and saw a light of hope.

He immediately got away from Fang Yuan and moved closer to Jia Long.

Fang Yuan quickly swept his eyes and realized he would not be able to reach Ou Yang Fei in time; he gave a loud laugh and his momentum stopped: "Brother Jia Long came in time, let’s use the bone spear to kill him together!"

The moment these words came out, the whole crowd was stumped.

This ugly guy knew Leader Jia Long?

This was the first thought the crowd had.

Greeting in such an affectionate way, their relation looked pretty good.

This was the second thought the crowd had.

No, he might be intentionally saying this to mislead them.

This was the third thought the crowd had.

As the proverb goes, people involved in the situation are baffled while the spectators observe clearly . The spectators weren’t battling, naturally they could think more clearly.

At this moment, Jia Long was feeling bewildered, because he had never even exchanged a word with Fang Yuan before.

Ou Yang Gong was even more bewildered, he couldn’t come to a judgement as to what relation Jia Long and Fang Yuan had. He knew Fang Yuan could just be bluffing, but what if it was true?

If it were to be true, then he would be pincer attacked by Fang Yuan and Jia Long.

It was a matter concerning his own life, Ou Yang Gong naturally wouldn’t dare to take the risk, thus he changed the direction and escaped towards southeast direction, away from Fang Yuan and Jia Long.

"Calm down." Jia Long immediately stopped to avoid arousing any suspicions.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly and chased.

Ou Yang Gong immediately realized he had fallen in Fang Yuan’s trap, he was just about to speak up when suddenly someone charged out from the crowd - Bai Ning Bing attacked ruthlessly.

In that instant, three spiral bone spears shot out in a row.

"There was actually another person?!" Ou Yang Gong was horrified and subconsciously activated his defensive Gu without even turning around.

However, this Gu was like a spent arrow, it blocked two spiral bone spears, but the third bone spear directly pierced through Ou Yang Fei’s head from the back and penetrated his front skull.

Ou Yang Gong died!

His death caused everyone to turn pale in fright, a huge uproar occurred among all those present.

This was a vice leader of the caravan, a rank three Gu Master!

Ou Yang Gong’s death caused the caravan leader and vice leaders to turn pale, feeling a dense threat.

"Brazen lunatics!"

"They really dared to kill a vice leader!"

"Let’s combine our strength and capture them!!"

"Who dares to capture me?!" Bai Ning Bing threw away her straw hat; her silver hair floated in the air and her cold eyes swept through everyone as she fully released her snow silver primeval essence.

"Ahh, it is snow silver primeval essence!"

"She is actually a rank three peak stage Gu Master!"

In the caravan, only Jia Long was in rank three upper stage, rest of the leaders were either in initial stage or middle stage.

The group that were just about to make their moves, suddenly halted.

"Come if you want to die, hahaha." Fang Yuan stood side by side with Bai Ning Bing, and willed a thread of snow silver primeval essence from his aperture, playing with it in his hand.

Oh god! Another rank three peak stage!

The crowd trembled in fear, their momentum completely stopped.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing gazed at everyone with cold, indifferent eyes. The camp was silent, completely silent...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Whoosh...

Mountain winds blew through the camp, enhancing the quietness of the camp even more.

The hundred over people formed a circle; inside the circle were two dead bodies and two standing people.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing’s gaze slowly swept through everyone, many did not even dare to match their cold gaze.

At the end, Fang and Bai’s gaze landed on Jia Long and other caravan leaders.

These people had charged out aggressively, but were immediately taken aback by the cultivation levels Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing revealed. Right now, they were in a situation where they could neither retreat nor advance.

With the loss of Ou Yang Gong and Ou Fei, the caravan now had eleven rank three, twenty-seven rank two and thirty-eight rank one Gu Masters.

Their combined strength was naturally greater than Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing by a lot.

However!

The caravan was only a temporary mix-match of different groups. These Gu Masters were from their respective clans and were normally engaged in scheming and guarding against each other. They would only cooperate if it was under a favorable situation.

They had their own interests and were not a united block; and had their own ways of doing things.

They were of different minds and would not be easy to lead.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing displayed rank three peak stage cultivation, no doubt they were two tough figures. No single clan could take them down alone, and even if they combined their strength, there would definitely be severe damage to the caravan.

Momentarily, Jia Long, Chen Shuang Jin and other leaders looked at Fang and Bai, before quietly sizing up each other. None of them wanted to be cannon fodder and benefit others instead.

Moreover, the current situation was one where the beast groups frequently attacked, everyone in the caravan were having trouble protecting themselves, let alone care about others.

External pressure and the worries in their heart made them hesitate.

The corner of Fang Yuan’s lips curled up into an indistinct smile, their reactions were all within his expectations. Now, it is all up to her.

Although things had escalated quickly and he hadn’t communicated with Shang Xin Ci, Fang Yuan believed she should be able to sense this opportunity with her intelligence.

Sure enough, the next moment, Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die walked out of the tent.

"Caravan leaders, these two are my Zhang Clan’s hidden elders: Lord Hei Tu and Lord Bai Yun." Shang Xin Ci took this chance to introduce them.

Her voice wasn’t loud, but she was the only one speaking among everyone present, thus everyone could clearly hear her.

The caravan leaders all had different expressions, whereas the crowd began to think over the two names - Hei Tu and Bai Yun.

Shang Xin Ci faintly smiled: "The two lords were on a secret clan mission and coincidentally entered this caravan on the way."

The caravan leaders looked at each other, all falling into silence.

Since they were hidden elders, even Zhang Clan’s clan leader might not necessarily know of their existences. Moreover, the secret clan mission meant it was inappropriate to inquire about their motives.

Shang Xin Ci’s two sentences blocked any questions they wanted to ask.

Of course, although these words were reasonable, it was only a one-sided statement by Shang Xin Ci.

The caravan leaders were all astute, each of them had made their own contemplations in their minds. Nobody was thoroughly convinced and suspicious ones were still suspicious.

But whether suspicious or believing, Fang and Bai’s strength were already displayed before them, so there could only be one way to end this.

Thereupon...

"Hahahah, so it was like that. Everything was a misunderstanding!" Jia Long suddenly laughed, his face revealing a warm smile.

He cupped his hands towards Fang and Bai; and sincerely praised them: "I had never expected such great heroes to be hidden in our midst. This father and son from Ou Clan were indeed too unreasonable and their way of doing things were also questionable. I have already persuaded them many times before but a pity they didn’t take it to heart. Their execution today can be said to be their just deserts."

These words had immediately concluded this matter.

The other vice leaders also responded at this moment, cupping their hands at Fang and bai while cursing Jia Long inwardly for being shameless.

"Zhang Clan is well known and is worthy of being one of the top clans of our Southern Border!"

"I am Lei Gong Cheng of Lei Clan, it is my good fortune to be able to meet both of you."

"It is our great fortune that both of you have exterminated evil for us!"

The vice leaders were all full of smiles as they said nonsense, twisting logic as they pleased.

The killers became the righteous representative while the Ou clan’s father and son became evildoers. As for Ou clan’s other Gu Masters, there were only three of them remaining, who cared about their unsightly expressions? In any case, Ou Yang Gong was dead, without a rank three Gu Master, who would dare to be bold? Who could stand up for them?

"You scoundrels, still not greeting the two lords!?" One of the vice leaders shouted while pretending to be displeased.

"We pay respects to Lord Hei Tu and Lord Bai Yun." Over twenty people immediately bowed and greeted Fang and Bai.

The whole camp was again sent into a clamor.

"The caravan has suffered heavy losses and is on the brink of crisis, it is our fortune to have met both of you. Please, I invite you into the tent to further discuss our situation." Jia Long walked closer and invited them sincerely.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing glanced at each other, before Fang Yuan walked towards Shang Xin Ci and consulted: "Xin Ci, what is your opinion?"

Seeing this scene, Jia Long immediately raised the status of Shang Xin Ci in his mind.

Shang Xin Ci slightly shook her head and spoke with a delicate tone: "I am tired, it is better for the caravan leaders to discuss together."

Fang Yuan inwardly praised her intelligence, this was just the time to take a step back to make an opportunity for greater advances later.

He nodded and said in agreement: "Our Zhang Clan’s goods have all been donated, we have no interest towards these and will not interfere."

"This..." Jia Long hesitated and was about to persuade but Shang Xin Ci had already turned around.

Fang and Bai also left in an impressive way without giving any opportunity to Jia Long, leaving behind this crime scene for others to deal with.

"Alright, everyone get back to your work now. The camp still needs to be strengthened. It is a good thing two rank three peak stage Gu Masters appeared. And the Ou Clan’s people, clean up these two corpses."

The only three remaining Gu Masters of the Ou Clan ran over. One rank two middle stage and two rank one Gu Masters; tears flowed down their faces as they held in their hatred, lowered their heads and carried the father and son’s corpses.

The crowd slowly dispersed. The high-spirited caravan leaders couldn’t maintain their composure any longer when they were back at the tent, their expressions fluctuating - as the hypocritical smiles disappeared from their faces - into solemness, bewilderment, indifference and worry.

Jia Long slowly sat down on the main seat and spoke with a gloomy voice: "The sudden appearance of two Gu Masters, what do you make of it?"

"Hmph, these are two lawless lunatics, publicly killing people!"

"That pitiful Ou Yang Gong, we were just here sitting with him a moment ago."

"I feel like these two’s origins are highly suspicious!"

"What hidden elders, that is only that Zhang Clan girl’s one-sided statement. From these two’s behaviors, they are very likely to be demonic Gu Masters."

"That’s right, occasions like demonic path’s Gu Masters entering the caravan are common. I bet that Zhang Clan girl was threatened by them."

Jia Long nodded: "My thoughts are also about the same as yours. Zhang Clan’s proud personality and their strengths are all known to us, how could there be any hidden elders? But, these two are vicious and also rank three peak stage...."

"Yes, this is troublesome."

"These two don’t look to be old, but have already reached rank three peak stage. Such talent...."

"Hahaha, everything has merits and demerits. The way I see it, this is also good. Their strengths will greatly increase our power." A vice leader spoke.

"The crucial thing is how can we use them for our benefits? Just now, I took the initiative to invite them to discuss these matters and make them work for us, but it ended up in failure." Jia Long heaved a sigh.

"Hmph, not lending their strength? When the beast groups attack, who can do nothing? By then, it’s not up to them." A vice leader spoke in a displeased tone.

"This matter needs to be considered properly. Demonic Gu Masters are arrogant and unyielding, trying to force them with only external pressure won’t work, they need to be pressured from both inside and outside."

"Hmm? I am not sure what Brother Gong Sun is suggesting?"

"My suggestion is simple but I am afraid you might not like it; it is to give a portion of the goods to those two. They will naturally step forward to protect their goods when the time comes."

The camp fell into silence immediately.

Jia Long looked around before speaking: "This suggestion is good! Humans die for wealth and birds die for food ; without any clan’s backing, demonic Gu Masters have an intense thirst towards cultivation resources. Moreover, you don’t need to be worried about incurring losses, did you forget Ou Clan?"

The pondering gazes of the group immediately started brightening.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing’s sudden appearance had made Zhang Clan into an influential force in the caravan, while Ou Clan was thrown by them into the weakest position.

Ou Clan’s father and son were dead, the remaining two to three small fry in the Ou Clan group were nothing to worry about. The goods held by Ou Clan seemed quite substantial...

...

"Uncle... I have an important matter to inform you!" Chen Xin had constantly been paying attention to the tent, and once the discussion inside was over, he approached the Chen Clan’s caravan leader Chen Shuang Jin.

Chen Shuang Jin grabbed his hand: "I know what you want to say. This is not the right place, let’s go."

The two returned to their own tent and after confirming no one was eavesdropping, Chen Xin spoke: "Uncle, do you remember I reported to you about how Zhang Zhu was murdered?"

Chen Shuang Jin’s face was grave as he nodded his head: "Zhang Zhu was killed by someone with bone spears. And today, that Hei Tu and Bai Yun also used bone spears!"

"That is it! Uncle, those two are harboring some unfathomable motives, are very ruthless. We need to make their crime known and combine our strength to kill off this danger early." Chen Xin was agitated.

Chen Shuang Jin slowly shook his head and sighed.

Chen Xin was puzzled: "Uncle, you don’t approve?"

"It is not that I don’t approve, but that it is not feasible."

"I saw with my own eyes, we have evidence. As long as we announce the matter about them killing Zhang Zhu, no one will tolerate these backstabbing traitors!"

"Hmph, evidence? There is witness testimony but what about material evidence?" Chen Shuang Jin scoffed, "Even if we have material evidence, what good it would do? My nephew, only evidence is of no use. The main thing is whether you have the strength! Just before, they killed the Ou Clan’s father and son, you also saw that and others also saw it. We are all witnesses, but is it any use? We are all from different clans, but with us having different motives, how could we deal against these two foes?"

"Uncle, are we going to just ignore them? They are too dangerous, I can’t even sleep properly. What if they find out that I know..." The more Chen Xin spoke, the more fearful he became.

"Hmph, you think too greatly of yourself. You think they don’t know about you? Maybe they already know or maybe they already saw you but didn’t make a move. Why is that? Because you are nothing to worry about! Chen Xin, stop being naive. In this cold world, the only thing that matters is strength!" Chen Shuang Jin heaved a deep sigh.

Chen Xin remained dazed at the spot; he clenched his fists, his uncle’s words struck his young heart and he couldn’t say anything for a long while.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Fang Yuan: I’ll have you know I buried a few hundred exploding potatoes once just for caution...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Dark clouds filled the sky bringing forth a heavy atmosphere and signs of heavy rain.

The caravan moved along the mountain path with a solemn atmosphere.

All the large black skin fat beetles in the caravan were dead; two winged snakes remained but in a crippled state; instead it was the baggage toads that survived mostly, all because they were small in size and moved pretty fast, easily hiding from the wild beasts’ attacks. As for the ostriches, they were similar in size to the backpack toads, but they had a habit of burying their heads in the ground once they sensed any threats, so this caused their casualty to be the highest.

Shang Xin Ci was mixed in the crowd, her gaze somewhat complex as she looked at the dozen of baggage toads beside her.

The goods these baggage toads were carrying were all Zhang Clan’s.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing didn’t participate in the discussion, but the caravan leaders still sent large quantities of goods to her.

"All of this because of strength..." Shang Xin Ci sighed.

Previously, when Zhang Zhu was here, these caravan leaders showed an indifferent attitude; but now, they were polite to the extent that they even seemed to currying favor with her.

Moreover, when these Gu Masters and the servants looked at her now, their gazes carried reverence and fear.

"All these changes are due to them." Shang Xin Ci gave a complex gaze towards Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing who were not that far away.

On one hand, she received a feeling of security from Fang and Bai; while on the other hand, the kindhearted her felt fear from how they were able to easily kill people.

"Hahaha, it seems we have really frightened that girl." Bai Ning Bing was walking side by side with Fang Yuan and feeling Shang Xin Ci’s gaze, she laughed softly.

Seven to eight days had passed since they killed Ou Clan’s father and son.

This had affected the whole caravan, including Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die.

Xiao Die did not even dare to breath loudly in front of Fang and Bai, while Shang Xin Ci also didn’t dare to match Fang Yuan’s gaze anymore.

Such reactions were all within Fang Yuan’s expectations.

This master and servant pair grew up in Zhang Clan since young, the righteous path ideology was ingrained into them. It was inevitable for them to be aware of the differences when Fang and Bai displayed their demonic nature. They would have to change their thought process to accept these two demonic path figures.

Fang Yuan wasn’t worried.

They would have no choice but to accept and compromise when they face external pressure. After all, humans wanted to keep on living. After few beast group attacks, the estrangement in their hearts would gradually disappear.

"The problem now is him." Fang Yuan looked at Chen Xin.

This young Gu Master was the guy that fled together with Zhang Zhu. Fang Yuan had thought he was already smashed into meat paste by white feather flying elephant, but to think he was actually alive.

Gu Masters that possessed unusual Gu worms, even if their cultivations were not high, could not be looked down upon.

Fang Yuan had lost the earth hearing ear grass and had no other scouting methods, causing him to overlook Chen Xin. He also did not know how much the latter had found out. But regardless, he had countermeasures for everything.

He was cautious in nature and always considered failures first. At that time, he already had measures prepared if someone found out.

Thus, after he killed Zhang Zhu, he intentionally displayed formidable strength. If someone had really found out, they would thus be scared by Fang and Bai’s vicious strength; and would keep themselves hidden.

Ou Clan’s father and son ran themselves into the line of fire; had it not been for Ou Fei coming to find trouble, Fang Yuan would have looked for trouble himself or display his formidable methods during beast group attacks.

Naturally Fang Yuan had many methods to strike back even if he was exposed. The caravan leader Jia Long was one such chess piece.

He was Jia Fu’s subordinate and Fang Yuan had received a token from Jia Fu back at Gu Yue village. As long as he showed the command token, he could obtain Jia Long’s trust for several actions.

However, for every single plan, no matter how perfect it appeared, accidents could always occur when they were implemented.

Also known as: Man proposes but God disposes 1 .

Even if Fang Yuan had plentiful experience, was astute and had deep foresight, he also had the possibility to fail. But it was because of this, that life could be so brilliant and full of uncertainty.

Fang Yuan’s first consideration was the worst outcome.

If his luck was extremely bad and someone saw him or he left behind ironclad evidence when he killed Zhang Zhu; and it led to Shang Xin Ci realizing the truth, she would feel deep hatred towards him; someone who bit the hands that fed him.

What to do then?

Simple, kill Shang Xin Ci.

She was only a mortal now and killing her was very simple. Shang Clan’s clan leader also didn’t know she was his own daughter; there would be no repercussions from Shang Clan if he killed her secretly.

Looking at the outcome now, Zhang Zhu was dead but Fang Yuan’s luck wasn’t the best as he left behind a trail. But it was also not the worst, at least Shang Xin Ci was still in the dark.

Fang Yuan was sure of this because Shang Xin Ci was still young and her emotions were completely exposed in his eyes.

"There is a crocodile-elephant 2 group ahead!"

"A crocodile-elephant group is charging towards us!!"

"Be on guard, be on guard!"

An investigative Gu Master hurried towards the caravan from ahead, bringing bad news.

A disturbance occurred in the caravan before quickly turning calm.

"It is just crocodile-elephants, no need to panic."

"We don’t have enough manpower to defend ourselves here."

"Correct. Everyone disperse, enter the rainforests!"

Gu Masters gave forth the most sensible command; people were already in a very strained state and were able to quickly disperse in all directions.

If they had encountered such situation before Fei Hou mountain, they might be worried about their goods and keep on hesitating. Now however, they firmly gave up the goods without taking another glance at them, concentrating on fleeing.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing directly charged straight into the rainforest while protecting Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die.

He was not surprised at the crocodile-elephant group’s arrival because it was his plan.

Rumble...

The crocodile-elephant group stomped its way through, soon there were blood-curdling screams and sound of trees falling down.

Fang Yuan carefully led Shang Xin Ci and others through the rainforest, but there were too many crocodile-elephants; they still ran into one.

Crocodile-elephants were small in size, about the same size as yaks, which allowed them to be more agile. Their whole body were covered in scales like that of a crocodile with defense that far surpassed white feather flying elephants. Their tails that was similar to that of crocodiles, trailing along the ground.

"Ahh!" Xiao Die let out a scream upon the sight of this hill-like crocodile-elephant charging at them.

Shang Xin Ci was also pale.

"No need to worry." Fang Yuan indifferently said, before charging towards the crocodile-elephant.

One human and one elephant collided midway; their collision producing a loud sound.

Fang Yuan took two steps back, and the white light armor on his body flickered thrice. But that crocodile-elephant, its skull directly shattered and blood spurted out as it fell on the ground, pushed back by a dozen steps before colliding against the trunk of a large tree and stopped.

"Amazing!" Xiao Die’s eyes were wide open with shock.

This was an ordinary crocodile-elephant and not a hundred beast king, while Fang Yuan possessed snow silver primeval essence along with the strength of two boars and a crocodile; handling it was naturally very easy.

However, Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die had never seen such fierce scene.

Zhang Zhu did not have great physical strength and was also a healing Gu Master, so he relied mainly on dodging and assisting during a battle.

Fang Yuan, however, met the attack head on, fighting without restraint; this naturally left a deep impression on the master and servant pair.

About two hours later, the crocodile-elephant group gradually left and the caravan group started walking out of the rainforest.

After the casualties were counted, they had only lost a Gu Master and a dozen servants; it was not a big loss.

The caravan set on their journey again after reorganising all the goods.

Several days later, they were out of Xiang Ya mountain region, and began their journey to Mu Bei mountain.

Within the next half a month, the caravan was attacked by black rock bears, iron crown deers and other beast groups.

And because Fang and Bai acted as inseparable bodyguards, Shang Xin Ci and Xiao

Die suffered no harm. This close contact all the time started to change the master and servant’s attitude.

Shang Xin Ci started to get much closer to Fang Yuan, cheerfully talking with him and no longer evading his gaze. Xiao Die had completely changed into a worshipper of Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

Worshipping the strong was the character of all living beings, because strength meant higher probability of survival.

Moreover, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were people with principles even though they were of demonic path. In the two girls’ perspective, those two did not ask for anything nor took advantage of them, only returning a favor. This conduct was full of heroic aura, and even among righteous path, how many people had such character?

No matter how ugly Fang Yuan looked, in the master and servant’s heart, he was much more likeable than the many hypocritical and crafty righteous path people.

Several days later, the caravan entered Mu Bei mountain region.

Zombies started appearing.

Mu Bei mountain hadn’t always had the same name. Over hundred years ago, there was a large clan on this mountain.

A demonic Gu Master changed everything.

He used to be a servant of this clan. At the day of his wedding, his beautiful wife had been seized by a Gu Master of the clan and humiliated to death.

He buried this hatred deep into his heart and as luck would have it, he obtained the inheritance of ’Zombie King’, a demonic head.

After enduring hardships for nearly hundred years, with rank five cultivation, he commanded an army of zombies and attacked the clan, slaughtering everyone. He did not spare their corpses, turning them into zombies.

After finishing all this, he erected a huge tombstone in the ruins of the clan.

On the tombstone, he carved his wife’s name.

This event shook the whole Southern Border.

This mountain has been called Mu Bei mountain ever since then. Zombies roamed free on the mountain, killing wild beasts or passerbys, absorbing blood as their food. And the ptomaine on them would infect the corpses, producing new zombies.

Like this, there were endless amount of zombies on Mu Bei mountain.

To protect the safety of the trade route, clans organized zombie hunting squadrons every year to clean up these zombies.

But no matter how much they cleaned up, they could not kill all the zombies due to their endless numbers.

After all, the zombie hunting squadrons were limited in size, with so many mountains in Southern Border and dangers in the way, they had to make considerable expenditures for this long expedition. It was a situation where they had to invest a lot but gained less, and even then it was impossible to overturn Mu Bei mountain. As long as a zombie escaped, a zombie army would appear again after a short while. After failing several times even after large scale expeditions, the enthusiasm of the people started to disappear.

The caravan decided to camp at the base of Mu Bei mountain for the night.

The stars were shining brightly in the sky. Fang Yuan looked at the dark Mo Bei mountain, a thoughtful look flashing through his eyes.

"It is time, these people are no longer valuable. It is time to settle all these troubles."

Chen Xin must die, but just disposing of him alone could make the situation even more troublesome. How much did he know, who had he revealed to, and were there anyone else who had seen the murder? Fang Yuan didn’t know any of this.

However, Fang Yuan had no intention to find out. Because in his plan, Chen Xin would die and others would also die.

Only the dead are clean 3 .

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Last chapter until I return. Estimated date is 17-18th. Will try to upload 2chap/day when I’m back. So sorry!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ding Hao looked down at the caravan from the base of the mountain as he hid behind some bushes, licking his lips excitedly.

"According to the information in the cave, as long as I kill a thousand people and amass a zombie army, I can leave this place and go to Zhao Ze mountain to become a formal disciple of master!"

Ding Hao was originally a villager but was recruited to be a laborer by a passing caravan.

However, the caravan was attacked by a large number of zombies when they were passing through Mu Bei mountain. He was abandoned along with dozens of other servants, as cannon fodder.

While all the other servants died one after another, he ran deep into the mountain in panic. Just when he was driven into a corner, he discovered a cave; none of the zombies dared to approach this cave.

He entered this cave and discovered a demonic inheritance.

As it turns out, this was the hidden inheritance of that demonic Gu Master who killed the whole clan and erected the tombstone in the ruins.

This inheritance was deeply hidden and only mortals were allowed to inherit it.

Ding Hao awakened his aperture in this cave and began to cultivate, passing each test one by one.

He only had C grade aptitude originally, but with the use of a rare Gu in the cave, his aptitude upgraded to B grade.

He concentrated fully on cultivating, and after spending over eight years, he reached rank three realm which was the criteria to enter the final secret chamber.

The final secret chamber contained a stone slab which had an inscription left by that demonic Gu Master: I profess myself as the Second Zombie King. If a fated individual truly arrives here, if you so wish, you can go to Zhao Ze mountain to be my official disciple and follow me to roam the Southern Border.

As the final test, the Second Zombie King required the inheritor to kill thousand people and also raise a large zombie army. There were detailed standards to the test, such as how many white-hair zombies, black-hair zombies and green-hair zombies should be in the zombie army. However, if there was a blue-hair zombie, just one would suffice to meet the condition.

Ding Hao was an honest man and honest people usually had a strong point; they were steadfast.

He cultivated on Mu Bei mountain alone for over eight years. He had to endure the silence and loneliness, having only the zombies as his companions as he cultivated bit by bit to rank three.

He had been a servant who could only be a spectator to the world of Gu Masters, thus he did not understand many things.

During the time of his bewilderment, this inscription on the stone slab no doubt gave him a whole new direction and a goal to strive.

The fact that the Second Zombie King had also been a servant and their backgrounds were similar, resonated even more with Ding Hao’s heart.

After reading the inscription, Ding Hao started killing people and amassing his zombie army.

Ding Hao soon realized these two missions actually complemented each other; he could use the corpses of the people he killed to obtain new zombies and the new zombies could thereby increase his strength to kill more people.

Mu Bei mountain was located by one of the three most important trade routes of Southern Border with caravans passing through it every month.

Ding Hao spent another three years of time to reach this point where he was close to accomplishing the mission.

The caravan at the base of this mountain would be his final stepping stone to success! And it was a perfect prey!

There were caravans of all sizes, some big and some small; Ding Hao could do nothing more than hide far away every time a large scale caravan passed by. He did not dare to attack the mid-scale caravan as well. Only against these small scale caravans, could Ding Hao make his move and secretly command the zombies to attack.

When his luck was good, these caravans would abandon some livestock or servants to flee; when his luck was bad and ran into some tough nuts, the zombies would be slaughtered and inflict great losses to him. At those times, he could only slowly amass more zombies again.

However, this caravan was smaller than even small scale caravans and seemed to have already suffered huge damage. It was like an old man struggling at death’s door who could fall over with a light push.

Ding Hao had confidence he could deal with this caravan.

He even felt this was a gift sent by the heavens.

It was night time, dark clouds flitted past in the sky, hiding the moon.

The light was dim around the camp.

"Kill." Ding Hao’s eyes suddenly brightened as he willed. The zombie army which was already arranged properly moved stealthily towards the camp from all directions.

"What sound is this?" A very vigilant investigative Gu Master positioned outside the camp seemed to have heard something.

"What is it?!" The few Gu Masters beside him were tensed.

The five Gu Masters motionlessly stared at the darkness ahead of them.

Although the moon was covered by the dark clouds, there was a huge bonfire burning in the camp.

The bonfire produced crackling sounds as the wind brushed past.

In the midst of the flickering flames, a zombie covered with white hair hopped into the investigative Gu Master’s vision.

The few Gu Masters looked at each other before laughing out loud.

"Haha, a white-hair zombie."

"Tsk, getting worried over nothing, scared the hell out of me."

"Xiao San, go take care of this unlucky zombie..." The leader of this group of Gu Masters said indifferently.

White-hair zombies were very weak, weaker than even the common wild beasts.

"Yes, boss." A young Gu Master laughed and walked towards the zombie.

"Be careful of its corpse poison, it will be troublesome if you are infected as I do not have an antidote type Gu." The healing master in the group reminded.

"Understood, understood. Do you take me as a three-year-old child?" The young Gu Master impatiently waved his hand.

If he was really infected with corpse poison, he could ask other Gu Masters to heal him but it would cost half a primeval stone at minimum.

However, white-hair zombies attacked in a set pattern and was easy to dodge. The young Gu Master had already killed many of them since entering Mu Bei mountain.

"There is no need to worry about this thing as long as I pay attention to dodging... ugh!" The young Gu Master was mumbling to himself when he suddenly stopped on the spot, his voice stuck at his throat.

His pupils shrunk rapidly and his mouth opened wide; his face revealing an extremely frightened expression.

"What is it?" The four Gu Masters at the rear felt something amiss and immediately asked.

The young Gu Master came to his senses, his whole body shook as if it was electrocuted before he immediately turned around and began running.

"Quick, sound the alarm. There are zombies!" He screamed, his face filled with extreme fear.

"It is only a white-hair zombie, why are you freaking out... wha, what the fu-!"

The four Gu Masters all screamed.

There were a few hundred white-hair zombies hopping towards the camp. There were also the stronger black-hair zombies mixed within the horde.

Under the illumination of the bonfire, one could make out the overlapping figures in the darkness but no one knew how many zombies were pressing forward.

Clang Clang Clang...

In the quiet camp, the sound of the bells suddenly rang.

"There is a zombie group moving towards the camp!"

"They have surrounded the whole camp!"

"Quick, quick, everyone prepare to defend..."

Jia Long and some vice leaders climbed up a wooden wall and observed the situation, their expressions extremely grave.

"Damn it, which deity did this caravan offend, such incredibly bad luck!"

"I have been to Mu Bei mountain dozen of times but have never seen such a large scale zombie group..."

"There is no use in complaining. Since we can’t change this situation, we have to fight with our lives on the line if we want to live!"

"We should combine our strength and defeat this zombie group!"

Everyone in the camp felt their morale increasing as they growled in anger. In contrast, the zombie army was completely silent, other than the constant sound of the jumping and landing.

The troop arrangement in the two sides formed a strange and clear contrast.

The battle unfolded completely.

Gu Masters relied on the defense of wooden walls and launched all kinds of long range attacks. All kinds of color flashed around the camp; icicles, fireballs, vines, rolling boulders and so on struck collided right into the vanguard of the zombies.

Large numbers of white-hair zombies fell; cut into pieces, burnt to ashes, froze into ice cubes or stone-rolled into meat paste.

"Kill, slaughter them all. Hahaha..." Ding Hao was observing all this from up the mountain with a cold smile on his face.

He was no longer the inexperienced guy he once was. These white-hair zombies were cannon fodder meant to waste the Gu Masters’ primeval essence.

Sure enough, after some time, the Gu Masters’ attacks became less frequent and weak.

"I am out of steam, I don’t have much primeval essence left."

"I also need to recover my primeval essence!"

"Can anyone take my place? Damn it, why are these white-hair zombies not decreasing?"

There were too few Gu Masters in the caravan while the white-hair zombies seemed to be endless; finally, they were able to resist the pressure and reach the wooden wall.

Under the attack of the zombie group, these temporarily constructed crude wooden walls immediately let out dangerous creaking sounds.

"Damn it, block them, block them!"

"Call in the reserve forces."

Both sides entered a deadlock around the wooden wall. One side charged forward while the other side guarded this barrier. The huge losses to the white-hair zombies caused Ding Hao’s heart to ache.

"It is your turn, my babies." With a thought in his mind, a batch of black-hair zombies charged forward from the rear and entered the battlefield.

White haired zombies were slow and could be harmed by sunlight, so they couldn’t move around in daytime. If they fed on blood for years, they could evolve into black-hair zombies. Black-hair zombies were covered with black hair, their strength and defensive ability were stronger than the white-hair zombies, and their hopping speed was much faster. Although they still received damage from sunlight, they didn’t fear it like the white-hair zombies.

Black-hair zombies had the strength of a hundred beast king!

Ding Hao sent over fifty black-hair zombies in this batch; all of them charging forward in a group. They looked for a gap in the camp’s defensive wall and immediately destroyed a part of it like dried twigs.

Despite the camp sending more manpower to reinforce this gap, several black-hair zombies were still able to charge into the inner camp.

A black-hair zombie swept around its arms and sent a rank one Gu Master flying.

The Gu Master fell on the ground and was unable to stand up immediately. The black-hair zombie pounced at him.

"I am finished!" The Gu Master closed his eyes in despair but suddenly he heard a loud sound.

He opened his eyes; a strong figure was blocking in front of him, while that black-hair zombie collapsed far away.

"It is Lord Hei Tu of Zhang Clan!" The Gu Master’s heart shook.

Grrr!

That black-hair zombie’s chest had caved in from Fang Yuan’s punch but it wasn’t dead, instead it hopped up and charged towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was covered with a layer of white light armor. He slightly frowned and waited for it to come near him, then he grabbed its two arms and pulled them fiercely.

The black-hair zombie was immediately torn apart into two halves.

Foul blood that carried corpse poison splattered but was completely repelled by the white light armor.

Fang Yuan casually threw the two halves of the corpse. Even a myriad beast king level blue-hair zombie would die from such injuries.

"Thank you Lord Hei Tu for saving my life!" The rescued Gu Master was completely absorbed in Fang Yuan’s momentum and said with a voice filled with joy and reverence.

Fang Yuan ignored him but directed his gaze towards the chaotic battlefield.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Our Hero has arrived!! \o/ Also it seems that this is tower defense instead of PvZ.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

By now, the wooden walls were already mostly collapsed, as hordes of zombies charged into the camp and fought with the Gu Masters.

Upon seeing this, Fang Yuan was already certain this zombie army was manipulated by Ding Hao.

If it was an ordinary zombie group, they would all swarm in like bees or the black-hair zombies would attack after the white-hair zombies died. Where would there be battle tactics like shown here, someone was clearly controlling them from behind!

And no doubt, the one controlling these zombies was Ding Hao.

Fang Yuan remembered the Second Zombie King left behind an inheritance after exterminating the clan on Mu Bei mountain. The inheritor of this inheritance was Ding Hao. He later went on to become Second Zombie King’s eldest disciple, and although he was of demonic path, he was very loyal. Later in the battle between Righteous and Demonic on Yi Tian mountain, he took the place of Second Zombie King of his own choice and died in the battle.

"I had thought of looking for you but to think you would deliver yourself to me, that saves me a lot of time."

Fang Yuan’s plan had been to use this Ding Hao to eradicate the caravan and kill everyone. Although he had methods to attract the beast groups, it wasn’t easy to control the size of it.

The caravan strength had already decreased to a very low level and if large amounts of beast groups were attracted, it would instead cause his own life to be in danger. It would be even more troublesome to protect Shang Xin Ci on top of that.

Under such circumstances, Ding Hao was the perfect chess piece.

"But where is this guy hiding?" Fire blazed all around. Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes and observed his surroundings.

"He needs to be at a high ground if he wants to observe the battlefield and command the zombie army. Of course, he might have other Gu worms which could give him a bird’s eye view of the camp. Regardless, the place he is hiding in should be convenient to escape..."

Fang Yuan lost the earth hearing ear grass and possessed no other investigative methods, thus he had to rely on speculations.

The battles were becoming more desperate; while hundreds of zombies were scattered all over the ground, there were also catastrophic losses to the Gu Masters. Under the endless flood of the zombies, the Gu Masters retreated bit by bit and soon reached the central area of the camp.

There, a bunker was made by piling up goods and some rank one Gu Masters were using many methods to reinforce it.

"There are too many zombies, the defense here will fall sooner or later."

"We need to break the siege!"

"Break the siege, how will we break through? There are dozens of black-hair zombies!"

"It would be better to reinforce our defense and wait for dawn. The zombies would receive a huge decrease in strength under the sunlight. We won’t even need to make a move and they will retreat by themselves."

Arguments arose, and people were divided into two sides; one wanted to break through while the other wanted to defend their positions.

The two sides kept on arguing while the zombie horde was already pressing closer.

This temporarily formed caravan showed its biggest weakness right now; being unable to truly unite and lacking a strong figure to take control of the situation.

Fang Yuan had been observing the situation as a spectator; now, he suddenly stood up: "Stop shouting!"

The noisy scene quieted down almost instantly.

In everyone’s eyes, he was a rank three peak stage Gu Master, one of the strongest experts in the caravan. Especially now at this critical life and death juncture, Fang Yuan had even more authority.

Fang Yuan swept his cold and sharp gaze at everyone. His ugly face, under the illumination of the fire, was menacing and ruthless.

"All those that wants to stay and defend are idiots! Why should we stay here if we can break through?" He fiercely scolded, giving off a strong impression.

The Gu Masters who were shouting about staying and defending showed indignant expressions but they didn’t dare to retort; while the Gu Masters who insisted on breaking the siege were joyous.

"Lord Hei Tu is wise!"

"Lord Hei Tu, we will follow you."

"Right now, only Lord Hei Tu can save us from this desperate crisis!"

They continued to praise Fang Yuan to the high heavens, wanting to make him take charge of the dangerous assault.

However, Fang Yuan sneered and cursed: "Shut up! You bunch thinking of breaking through are even greater fools!"

"Ugh..." The Gu Masters that were praising Fang Yuan stiffened, their expressions fluctuating rapidly; while those who insisted on defending their positions showed ridicule and mocking expressions.

"Then, Sir Hei Tu, what do you suggest?" Jia Long’s expression was dark as he spoke in a heavy voice with an unkind gaze.

"Hmph, be it defending the position or breaking through the siege, the situation needs to be investigated properly first. Do you know the scale of this zombie horde? What if there is a large group of them hiding in the darkness, wouldn’t breaking through then be walking right into a trap? And if this is just all of them and you guys insist on defending your positions while you could clearly escape, the bloody odor would attract more zombies and you would just be sending yourselves to death." Fang Yuan spoke with such vigor that his saliva went flying out.

Nobody would show a good expression after being scolded harshly.

Chen Shuang Jin asked in a gloomy voice: "Then what good suggestion do you have?"

Fang Yuan opened his eyes wide in anger and pointed at Chen Shuang Jin: "You fools, your brain is filled with shit! I have spoken for so long and no one understands! Of course we are going to break through but first we are going to check our surroundings. Investigative Gu Masters, you need to work hard!"

Being pointed out by Fang Yuan and reprimanded, Chen Shuang Jin’s expression turned ugly and a fire burned in his heart. However, he still vividly remembered that time when Fang Yuan killed Ou Clan father and son, so he could only suppress his anger.

Many became dissatisfied with Fang Yuan’s aggressiveness; but at the same time, in this situation, such aggressiveness instead gave them a sense of indescribable security.

Soon, a group was organized to break through the siege under Fang Yuan’s manipulation.

"Break through that direction." Fang Yuan said solemnly as he pointed towards southeast direction

"Yes, Lord Hei Tu!"

"Remember, scouting is the priority, protect yourselves and retreat if you can’t continue." Fang Yuan smiled and patted the group leader’s shoulder.

The group leader’s heart immediately relaxed and Fang Yuan’s image in his mind was no longer as repulsive as before.

The zombie horde reached the final defensive line and battles issued everywhere. Breaking the siege group charged forward three hundred steps before they were forced to retreat.

"Too terrifying, I discovered at least hundreds of zombies in the darkness at that side." The investigative Gu Master’s heart was still fearful as he made the report.

Everyone turned slightly pale at these words.

"No problem, take a rest. Second group, break through that direction!" Fang Yuan commanded.

This group charged through four to five hundred steps before they had to retreat.

"There are too many zombies..." The investigative Gu Master was pale.

Fang Yuan let them rest, and said to the newly formed third group: "Go in that direction."

"But that side is a valley." The group leader was somewhat puzzled.

Slap.

Fang Yuan slapped the man: "If I say go, then go. Don’t give me nonsense!"

The group leader was stunned by the slap, but he didn’t dare to meet Fang Yuan’s angry gaze so he turned around and led his group to the direction Fang Yuan pointed.

Fang Yuan had organized three breaking the siege groups, sending them out to probe the situation and finally rule out the possible areas.

"The only place remaining is that high slope now. If I am not wrong, Ding Hao is definitely hiding there." Fang Yuan sneered inwardly and continued to arrange breaking the siege groups.

"These people are really not giving up." Ding Hao’s brows furrowed but soon relaxed, "Haha, you guys might have been able to break through if it was an ordinary zombie horde, but too bad for you, this zombie horde is being controlled by me..."

He mobilized the zombies in the darkness to constantly replenish any gaps. At the same time, he deployed massive forces towards several areas.

Several rounds later, the casualties in breaking the siege groups increased to a disastrous amount.

"This is enough, breaking through can’t succeed, we can’t make any more sacrifices in vain!"

"Sigh, looks like we can only defend our positions...."

"Everyone persevere, endure till the sun rises, these zombies would be weak as paper then."

"Stop your nonsense, success is in sight! I will personally lead this time. Bai Yun, you stand guard here." Fang Yuan cursed and aggressively insisted on breaking through.

Because of his aggressiveness, Gu Masters could only form another group.

Eight Gu Masters charged out with Fang Yuan in the lead; with enormous strength combined with snow silver primeval essence and Canopy Gu, he was able to easily force his way through the encirclement.

"Damn, that side is somewhat thin..." Ding Hao also couldn’t prevent Fang Yuan from breaking through.

He hadn’t thought Fang Yuan would choose this side to break through; this side was a dead end and he had continuously mobilized the zombies to other sides to fill up the gaps caused by the previous break through attempts, causing the zombies in this side to be the least in numbers.

"They really succeeded!"

"They broke through!"

The people in the camp were looking at this scene with wide eyes.

Although in the process, five Gu Masters died, Fang Yuan and the two other Gu Masters successfully broke through.

"We are saved, quick, let’s break through that side!" Everyone was joyous in the camp.

"Don’t even think about succeeding!" Ding Hao gritted his teeth and immediately mobilized zombies to fill the gap.

The camp was still in the process of organizing while white-hair zombies were already covering the area Fang Yuan broke through. There were also five black-hair zombies pouncing upon Fang Yuan’s group.

The two Gu Masters were shell-shocked.

"Follow me!" Fang Yuan shouted and charged towards the direction where Ding Hao was hiding.

The two Gu Masters couldn’t think properly because of their fear and subconsciously followed Fang Yuan.

"Hmph, choosing to run towards me, hahaha, it seems even heaven wants you dead..." Ding Hao’s lips curled up as he looked proudly towards two zombies beside him.

These two zombies were huge, with green hair covering their body. They were green-hair zombies which was stronger than black-hair zombies and could show a power equivalent to that of a thousand beast king during night!

Ding Hao was only able to raise these two during his many years in the mountain.

"Go." He willed and these two green-hair zombies immediately charged out.

Eighty steps later, they met Fang Yuan’s group.

Fang Yuan met one head-on; even though he had strength of two boars and a crocodile, they were evenly matched and both were sent back several steps from the collision.

The two remaining Gu Masters battled the other green-hair zombie, but they were being pressured and the situation already looked dangerous.

"Let me help." Fang Yuan activated jumping grass and lept towards the battle.

The two Gu Masters were exulted and were about to express their thanks, but without warning, two spiral bone spears shot towards them.

Psh Psh... two piercing sounds determined the two Gu Masters’ deaths.

"Eh?" Ding Hao had been observing the battle and seeing this unexpected change raised a huge doubt in his mind.

This distraction caused the two green-hair zombies to slow down.

The next words Fang Yuan spoke caused even more shock to Ding Hao.

Only to hear him shout: "Ding Hao, get out here!"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Guess what he’s trying to do. Also, second chapter today in about 6 hours from this.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ding Hao started to get dizzy as if a flashbang went off in his head.

Who is this guy? He discovered me and even knows my name! Impossible, I have been so careful all these years, never giving myself away. How could he discover me?

Waves rose in Ding Hao’s heart and his thoughts became a whirlpool; the two green-hair zombies along with the black-hair zombies and white-hair zombies around the camp became still.

Everyone in the camp were stunned by this unexpected scene.

However, Ding Hao immediately came to his senses and reacted. The battle in the camp resumed.

Fang Yuan knew he had already half-succeeded upon seeing these two green-hair zombies remaining still. He shouted: "Ding Hao, you will regret if you don’t come out...."

Ding Hao was hiding within some bushes, he gritted his teeth and asked while controlling the green-hair zombies to surround Fang Yuan: "Who are you? How do you know my name?"

Fang Yuan snorted: "Of course it was my master Second Zombie King who told me."

"Ah?" Ding Hao could not stop but let out a cry of surprise; ’master’ and ’Second Zombie King’, these words were like a boulder descending and creating a huge wave in his heart.

He stood up and walked out of the bushes, his two eyes staring tightly at Fang Yuan with shock and doubt.

"Who on earth are you?" Ding Hao anxiously asked.

Fang Yuan snorted and said in an overbearing tone: "Are you deaf? Didn’t you hear me? I am the Second Zombie King’s eldest disciple, Hei Tu. Ding Hao, I will count to three, if you don’t call back these two green-hair zombies by then, hehe...."

"You are eldest senior brother? Wait a second, how did lord benefactor know my name?" Ding Hao held suspicions towards this entire issue, but regardless, he still called back the two green-hair zombies to his side.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned stiff as he scolded: "Who is your eldest senior brother? Master has yet to take you in as his disciple, how dare you pose off as one?"

Ding Hao had no way to retort back.

Fang Yuan tone softened: "Don’t you talk to the stone slab all day, how could master not know your name?"

"Ahh!" Ding Hao uttered a cry of surprise.

All these years, he had lived alone with only the zombies as his companions. When he felt depressed and painful, he would go to the final cave and pour out his heart to the stone slab.

He had never expected Fang Yuan to expose his secrets with one remark.

"I... I thought... that was an ordinary stone slab..." Ding Hao stammered.

"Hmph, what level are you at, of course you cannot understand the profoundness of the stone slab. Master has vast powers, how would you be able to see through it?" Fang Yuan disdainfully sneered.

In actual fact, even if a rank nine Gu Master were to see the stone slab, they wouldn’t be able to see the ’profoundness’ of it. That was just a common stone slab. However, in Fang Yuan’s previous life, Ding Hao himself had personally narrated it in his recollection of his struggles in life after he made a name for himself.

Ding Hao licked his dry lips, he was almost fully convinced but he still had some doubts.

He gave a deep bow towards Fang Yuan and cupped his hands: "Lord Hei Tu, since you are master’s disciple, then please show me our unique characteristic, the zombie heart Gu."

Zombie heart Gu was a Gu specific to the zombie king’s lineage. It resembled a heart, had seven holes and was stiff as stone. It was a rank three Gu, was cold to the touch and seemed to be made of bronze.

Zombie heart Gu could produce rank two running corpse Gu. It was similar to charred thunder potato mother Gu which could produce charred thunder potato Gu.

Rank two running corpse gu was also a consumable Gu and was used on corpses to form zombies.

However, it had an advantage over charred thunder potato Gu; the zombies it created could grow up and advance a stage. For instance, white-hair zombies could become black-hair zombies, black-hair zombies could become green-hair zombies and so on.

Fang Yuan possessed charred thunder potato mother Gu, but he had no zombie heart Gu.

However, he was not in the least nervous towards Ding Hao’s request; he opened his mouth and boldly scolded: "Cut your crap, I am on a secret mission assigned by master, I had to disguise my identity to join the caravan, how could I carry zombie heart Gu with me? Zombie heart Gu feeds upon zombies, how could I get zombies in full view of everyone?"

"Ah, thi-this..." Ding Hao was stumped.

"What this, do you think I can’t kill you?" Fang Yuan timely revealed his snow silver primeval essence.

Rank three peak stage cultivation was clearly ’revealed’; Ding Hao’s pupils shrunk, he was only at rank three middle stage.

Fang Yuan immediately followed: "Although our lineage can control zombies and form an army of them, controlling zombies requires our concentration. If our soul is not strong, our mind will be weak, then our control over the zombie’s quantity and quality will only be ordinary. Although you have two green-hair zombies, there will definitely be gaps when you defend yourself while controlling them; it will be very easy for me to kill you."

Ding Hao licked his dry lips and retreated a step back with some fear.

"However..." Fang Yuan immediately changed the topic, "Before I left, master told me about you and wanted me to check if you had the qualifications to enter his tutelage. To think you actually approached me with killing intent when I have not even starting looking for you, hmph."

"Ahh, th-this... eldest senior brother, it wasn’t intentional." Ding Hao started panicking when he heard Fang Yuan was someone sent by Second Zombie King to inspect him.

"Who is your eldest senior brother? You have yet to receive master’s approval. Hmph, you are still doubtful now?" Fang Yuan raised his brows.

Ding Hao quickly cupped his hands and said in a self-mocking tone: "Eldest senior brother, since you are clear on zombie heart Gu’s food and our weakness, no matter how stupid I am, I recognise eldest senior brother’s identity."

Fang Yuan kept a poker face and did not speak, only looking at the two green-hair zombies.

Ding Hao was stunned for a while before immediately realizing. With a shift of his mind, he sent the two green-hair zombies away.

Then he walked before Fang Yuan, bowed and said submissively: "Please forgive me eldest senior brother, I wanted to kill these people to collect enough zombies. I really hadn’t expected eldest senior brother to be here. If I had known, I would have come down the mountain and welcomed you. I really yearn and am determined to follow master, heaven can testify my loyalty."

Fang Yuan relaxed his tone: "Hmph, master knows of your loyalty. Before I departed, master spoke of it and praised your loyalty when he asked me to inspect you on my journey. Even if you had not reached the standard, as long as there isn’t a huge gap, it’s no problem."

"So it was like that!" Ding Hao was overjoyed.

"However!" Fang Yuan’s expression turned heavy and his tone cold, "You had the cheek to attack the caravan, wrecking my secret mission. Do you know how much effort I and your second senior sister had to waste to infiltrate this caravan?"

"Eldest senior brother, it really was not intentional..." Ding Hao was indignant, his excitement just before sank through the floor due to Fang Yuan’s words, "Second senior sister is also in the caravan? I, I... I will call back the zombie horde!"

"What?" Fang Yuan was furious as he knocked his fingers on Ding Hao’s head, "Is your brain made of glue? Can’t you think? You moron, wouldn’t they start doubting me if the zombies retreated for no rhyme or reason? Idiot!"

Ding Hao rubbed his aching head before quickly nodding and apologizing: "Yes, yes, eldest senior brother is right. Then eldest senior brother, I will do whatever you say!"

Fang Yuan pointed at Ding Hao: "You have already made a serious mistake, but considering it was not intentional, it can’t be helped. Next, do as I say to make up for your mistakes!"

Ding Hao was like a grandson being admonished as he kept on nodding at Fang Yuan.

However, Fang Yuan didn’t mention his demand immediately and instead asked: "Tell me the truth, how many white-hair, black-hair and green-hair zombies do you have? Also any blue-hair zombies?"

Ding Hao showed an ashamed expression: "I am stupid, I have been living at Mu Bei mountain for close to ten years but have yet to raise a single blue-hair zombie. As for green-hair zombies, I only have three of them; I left one inside the cave to stand guard and have brought the other two with me. I have over one hundred and twenty black-hair zombies and close to four thousand white-hair zombies."

Fang Yuan had expected him to not have any blue-hair zombies and was able to be at ease after confirming it.

He intentionally made a sound of surprise and spoke nonsense: "You are not that far from the target. Having three green-hair zombies is pretty good, and as for blue-hair zombies, even I have only two of them."

He was clear of Second Zombie King’s requirement to take in disciples.

Second Zombie King had not just left behind one inheritance; he had taken in seven to eight disciples in Fang Yuan’s previous life, Ding Hao was only one of them.

Later on, Second Zombie King joined Yi Tian mountain and was besieged by the righteous path. The disciples of Second Zombie King commanded great zombie armies and showed off their talents, causing the righteous path allied army to retreat at one point.

As Ding Hao listened to Fang Yuan, his heart was cleared of doubt. He looked at Fang Yuan with admiration: "Eldest senior brother, you are amazing, you have two blue-hair zombies. This junior brother is full of admiration!"

Fang Yuan patted Ding Hao’s shoulder and showed an expression of ’feeling proud inwardly but intentionally suppressing it’: "To raise a blue-hair zombie, if you say it is difficult, it is difficult; if you say it is easy, it is easy . I will explain it to you, you need to first find a rank four Gu Master’s corpse then the rest is up to your luck. It depends on whether this corpse had used a Gu worm in his life to raise his strength. If he did, it will be at least a green-hair. If you use fresh blood to nurture it for a year or two, it will evolve into a blue-hair."

"I see." Ding Hao knew Fang Yuan spoke the truth after he combined it to his own experiences; he gratefully said, "Thank you eldest senior brother for your pointers!"

"Mm." Fang Yuan slightly nodded his head and carefully checked Ding Hao’s expression, knowing the latter had complete trust in him now.

Ding Hao had originally been a servant and then secretly cultivated for close to ten years on Mu Bei mountain. His honest character made him easy to deceive.

In fact, even those who were very scheming would be moved by Fang Yuan's words and would at least believe most of it.

"No use in crying over spilled milk. Act with me and if your performance is good, I will give you a pass from my side." Fang Yuan said.

Ding Hao's eyes brightened and immediately replied: "Please speak elder senior brother, I will definitely do my best to accomplish it!"

Fang Yuan gave detailed instructions before charging back to the camp.

With Ding Hao's secret cooperation, Fang Yuan returned beside Shang Xin Ci without any mishaps.

Seeing an expert like Fang Yuan returning to their sides, everyone in the caravan was surprised, happy and in awe.

In their perspective, Fang Yuan could have already escaped but he fought his way back to them.

"I am burdening you, benefactor!" Shang Xin Ci felt ashamed and guilty.

"No matter. You are only one of the reasons, besides, Bai Yun is also here." Fang Yuan shook his hand and intentionally said this, making Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die feel even more moved.

Bai Ning Bing glanced at Fang Yuan with doubt; Fang Yuan vaguely winked at her, she immediately realized he was up to no good.

Translator's Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Winking because he successfully saved the caravan of course!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The zombie horde's attacks gradually slowed down and the situation came to a standstill.

Time passed minutes by minutes; occasionally, some Gu Masters heroically sacrificed themselves or zombies fell down.

Two hours later, Ding Hao followed Fang Yuan's instruction and steeply increased the attacks of the zombies, breaking the defensive line that was hanging by a thread.

There were only thirty or so people in the caravan now.

They had to break through! They were all of one mind on this as everyone of them could see that there was a chance at survival if they broke through, and if they insisted on defending their positions, their deaths were certain.

To break through would also be a desperate struggle. Layers upon layers of white-hair zombies had encircled them and there were also black-hair zombies obstructing them.

"Give up on these mortals, they will only slow down our speed!" Jia Long shouted.

Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die became pale.

"Don’t worry, I am here." Fang Yuan defended them.

All the remaining mortals were ruthlessly abandoned, only the two of them remained.

Jia Long and other Gu Masters didn’t dare to say anything since they had to rely on Fang and Bai’s strength.

They were progressing shakily through the siege and just when it looked like they were about to break out, two green-hair zombies appeared.

"We will go back." Fang Yuan pulled Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die, and said in a soft voice.

Bai Ning Bing stopped, weren’t they entering into the encirclement again by going back?

However, Fang Yuan was already retreating towards the back with Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die. Bai Ning Bing gritted her teeth as she looked at the empty field in front of her, but she still turned around and followed Fang Yuan.

The other Gu Masters fell into a chaotic battle against the two green-hair zombies.

Green-hair zombies were as strong as thousand beast king, and though there were many rank three Gu Masters, they were already exhausted.

As their battle with the green-hair zombies continued, the surrounding black and white-hair zombies closed in on them.

This instead caused the pressure on Fang and Bai to decrease greatly.

Fang Yuan retreated dozens of steps before he started breaking through again.

Numerous white-hair zombies were blocking their way, but Fang Yuan just plunged and dashed; the power he displayed was extremely high, white-hair zombies died everywhere he passed.

Bai Ning Bing was dumbstruck, was this Fang Yuan’s true strength?

"Eh, these white-hair zombies are too weak..." She immediately found something amiss when she attacked.

The white-hair zombies that were blocking them were many times weaker than before. They had dazed expressions and didn’t even attack properly, they were more like punching targets.

"Did Fang Yuan discover this weakness and is using it now? Strange, these white-hair zombies look the same, how in the world did he discover these weakness?" Bai Ning Bing was bothered and bewildered.

Fang Yuan, however, was hurling curses inwardly right now.

Before departing, he had reminded Ding Hao to make the zombies appear strong although actually weak, and make it realistic. So what horrible performance is this?

Ding Hao was sweating profusely.

He had never exerted so much concentration to control the zombie army.

He was extremely nervous, feeling that he had destroyed eldest senior brother’s secret mission. Guilt and worry made him cooperate with Fang Yuan’s act with all his efforts. It was okay when he didn’t know Fang Yuan’s identity, but now that he knew Fang Yuan was his eldest senior brother, how could he dare to truly attack him?

"Amazing!" Xiao Die exclaimed in surprise.

Shang Xin Ci’s beautiful eyes also brightened.

Fang Yuan was moving unhindered, like an unmatched general maneuvering on the battlefield, giving off a feeling of invincibility!

Who does not love heroes?

Which girl did not dream of a prince riding a white horse, a hero saving the beauty?

Xiao Die did and so did Shang Xin Ci.

Right now, as the master and servant looked at Fang Yuan’s wide back, there were ripples in their hearts.

Fang Yuan was ugly, but at this moment, this ugliness gave off a beautiful radiance to them. His bravery and spirit gave an indescribable sense of security to these two girls who were in this dangerous situation; they could not help but want to rely and depend on him.

"Such terrible acting, this coward!" Fang Yuan really wanted to kick Ding Hao to death. His thoughts moved rapidly and he could make out Ding Hao’s mental state.

"It seems I have no choice..." Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes, then he resolutely deactivated canopy Gu and charged towards an attacking white-hair zombie.

His flesh was torn open, Fang Yuan got injured.

"Good, this is how it should be!" Fang Yuan happily thought. This was the best chance to win Shang Xin Ci’s trust, how could he let it go in vain?

"Damn it!!" Bai Ning Bing cursed and immediately rushed towards Fang Yuan, abandoning Shang Xin Ci. Fang Yuan had the Yang Gu on him, that was the key to her reverting back to a man and it could absolutely not be lost.

"Oh my heavens!!!" Ding Hao’s whole body shook when he saw Fang Yuan being injured. He was blaming himself; the worry and panic was clear on his face as he mumbled: "It wasn’t intentional, it really wasn’t intentional, eldest senior brother!"

"Ahh...." Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die both cried out.

Their hearts ached seeing Fang Yuan injured.

"What are you doing, go back and protect them!" Fang Yuan shouted in a soft voice when Bai Ning Bing approached him.

Bai Ning Bing’s blue pupils widened, she immediately realized Fang Yuan had intentionally received the attack; this bastard!

"Don’t go overboard." Bai Ning Bing’s eyes twitched, she said these words and left.

With Ding Hao’s control, the white-hair zombies made threatening gestures, but it was all show and little action.

Bai Ning Bing kicked a white-hair zombie flying and hurried back towards Shang Xin Ci.

"How is Hei Tu?" Shang Xin Ci grabbed Bai Ning Bing’s arm and asked.

"He is okay." Bai Ning Bing’s lips twitched.

"Why are you not switching with him, he is injured!" The gentle Shang Xin Ci’s words carried a rarely seen grievance.

Bai Ning Bing’s lips twitched, she couldn’t tell that Fang Yuan intentionally received the attack, right? So, she casually made up a reason: "He has always been like this, he will never stop when he starts an assault, unless he falls."

Shang Xin Ci’s beautiful eyes flickered and slightly reddened.

Xiao Die covered her mouth, her eyes were already moist.

There were ripples in the master and servant’s hearts again as they looked at Fang Yuan. What kind of man was this! In this horde of zombies, he moved around without fear, constantly pressing forward. No doubt he was a hero, a sorrowful hero!

Seeing Fang Yuan injured, Ding Hao was shaking with fear and didn’t dare to obstruct the path.

Fang Yuan charged ahead for some distance and led Shang Xin Ci and the group out of the zombie encirclement.

"That’s it?" He smacked his lips with dissatisfaction and grudgingly looked at the only injury on his body. It was such a good opportunity to show off but he only received a single injury; the act was really lacking.

Despite only suffering a single injury, it already made Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die extremely worried.

"Hei Tu, are you okay? You are injured, the wound is so deep, all because of me!" Shang Xin Ci’s eyes were becoming moist with tears.

"So much black blood is flowing out, Lord Hei Tu you have been poisoned." Xiao Die said with deep concern.

Fang Yuan puffed out his chest and said in a deep, fearless voice: "This is just a small injury, the corpse poison is somewhat troublesome but I can detoxify it with clearing heat Gu. You don’t no need to worry. Hahaha..."

He started laughing.

The camp was in ruins, flames blazed everywhere. The remaining people in the caravan had set the camp aflame before leaving; it was to burn their bridges and also to have a source of lighting.

Fang Yuan and the group charged out of the zombie encirclement and reached the outer perimeter of the light from the fire.

The light shone on Fang Yuan’s face, chest and his injury.

He laughed, his appearance was ugly but it gave a different kind of heroic charm to the two girls!

They had dreamt of dreams of hero saving the beauty, dreamt of handsome and unrestrained hero; truthfully, the image of Fang Yuan and their image of heroes were as different as day and night. However, strangely, the two girls felt this was the true hero! He was unrestrained, fearless and had unmatched heroic spirit!

Many years later, Shang Xin Ci would ask herself how Fang Yuan walked deep into her heart... every time, she would involuntarily think of this night....

Layers upon layers of zombies to his back, blazing flames shining upon his face, the burn scars on his face, his smile revealing his white teeth. His deep black pupils looked at herself, the normally cold and indifferent eyes - under the orange flames - revealed a hint of warmth.

"Save us!" The caravan group were deeply encircled by the zombie horde and started shouting for help when they saw the situation in Fang Yuan’s side.

Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed but he didn’t speak. Shang Xin Ci had already grabbed his arm: "You are injured, don’t go, let’s leave. Do you remember what you said to me? Do only what you are able to."

A peace of mind as long as one does what he can.

Fang Yuan laughed and patted Shang Xin Ci’s hand: "Don’t worry, I am not going, there is no kindness or hatred between them and me. Let’s go!"

However, it wasn’t so appropriate to leave like this. What if someone knew he killed Zhang Zhu and under desperation, shouted it, what would Shang Xin Ci think then? In truth, his worries were unnecessary; Chen Xin and Chen Shuang Jin who knew about the matter had already died in battle.

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with a bright light as he shouted loudly: "Continue to persevere, wait till I bring them to a safe place, then I will come help you!"

"Brother Hei Tu is righteous!"

"We hope Brother Hei Tu returns quickly!"

"Brother Hei Tu, if you save me, I will give you a huge amount of money!"

The caravan people shouted one after another.

Fang Yuan laughed bitterly and looked at the master and servant’s puzzled gaze: "I am giving them some hope so that they might create a miracle. Sigh , I can only do this much."

Fang Yuan’s image immediately rose to a much greater height in the two girls’ hearts.

Fang Yuan and the group ran along the mountain passage.

Under the moonlight, the mountain passage looked like it was covered with snow.

As per their previous discussion, Ding Hao arranged a batch of zombies around here to block the path.

The four rushed to the arranged area, Fang Yuan signalled Bai Ning Bing with his eyes then stood at the spot: "You guys leave first, I will stop these zombies and hurry back to you."

The master and servant’s steps immediately slowed down, but under Bai Ning Bing’s persuasion, they continued to run along the path and soon left Fang Yuan’s sight.

Fang Yuan laughed, he acted as if he was in a struggle with the zombies and finding an opportune timing, he activated jumping grass and jumped over the zombies, arriving beside Ding Hao.

The battle with the caravan was still ongoing. There were only three remaining in the caravan side, but what amazed Fang Yuan was a green-hair zombie had actually perished!

After asking Ding Hao, he realized a Gu Master had used a rare rank three detonation Gu.

"Eldest senior brother." Ding Hao immediately bowed, his face was pale and his forehead filled with sweat.

He had never tried splitting his thoughts to control the zombies with such intensity. The main thing was he had to act according to Fang Yuan’s directions, making him more exhausted.

Previously he would just command the zombies to attack or retreat. How could he have commanded them to only make threatening gestures and attack empty air? And he still had to control these zombies to keep still when attacked by Fang Yuan.

"Eldest senior brother, how is your injury? It really wasn’t intentional. I have a healing Gu here." Ding Hao started to explain hurriedly.

Fang Yuan patted his shoulder: "You are good, you have put in a lot of effort. No need to worry about my injury, I suffered it intentionally. Now, you just have to use more strength and eradicate these people!"

"Yes." Ding Hao immediately let out a breath of relief.

With his spirits raised, he started maneuvering countless zombies forward.

The surviving three knew their deaths were certain - one closed his eyes and sighed; another cried out Fang Yuan’s name; and another was crying loudly.

Under the threat of death, their natural instincts were fully revealed.

The zombie horde submerged the three. Fang Yuan satisfiedly nodded: "Was there anyone who escaped?"

"No, absolutely none. I did what eldest senior brother instructed and arranged a large amount of zombies in the perimeter." Ding Hao quickly answered.

"Good, well done. Clean up the battlefield, remember to not leave behind any tracks."

"Yes, eldest senior brother."

Ding Hao had never exposed himself when he attacked the caravans which showed he had certain level of accomplishment in clearing the tracks. He cleaned up the battlefield with ease and disguised the traces as ordinary zombie horde attacking the caravan; Fang Yuan secretly nodded his head in approval.

However, although he was older than Fang Yuan, his experience couldn’t compare to the veteran Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan pointed out some areas that were overlooked, causing Ding Hao to admire him. For instance, the primeval stones couldn’t be entirely taken, they had to leave some behind, after all the zombies wouldn’t collect them. Another point would be not all the corpses should be changed to zombies; the corpse poison could be deep or shallow and they didn’t have a hundred percent chance to turn corpses into zombies.

"Eldest senior brother, please take these primeval stones." About five minutes later, Ding Hao sensibly offered the primeval stones he collected.

Fang Yuan glanced at it, there were approximately thirteen thousand primeval stones. He didn’t hesitate to take it and put them in tusita flower.

"How are your gains?" Fang Yuan patted Ding Hao’s shoulder and warmly asked.

Ding Hao’s pale face let out an excited light: "The gains are huge this time. I obtained five complete bodies and they are all rank three Gu Masters. There are also dozen Gu Master corpses, they are all strength Gu Masters. I will get at least black-hair zombies once they are turned into zombies."

"Hahaha, you have obtained a good harvest. Raise these black-hair zombies properly and you will definitely have new green-hair zombies."

Ding Hao repeatedly nodded his head, his face filled with admiration: "This is the first time I have devoured a whole caravan. It is all thanks to eldest senior brother for attracting beast groups along the way and constantly reducing their forces. All these gains I made is because of eldest senior brother."

"You are not too shabby either, your commanding ability is quite good. But looking at your face, you have used your brain too much, your mind is haggard and your soul is wounded. You need to recuperate for a while. Taking good care of our soul is very important to our lineage. If our soul is not strong, our mind will be weak and commanding the zombies will be more difficult." Fang Yuan smiled, speaking gently.

"Thank you eldest senior brother for your concern!" Ding Hao had lived alone for close to ten years, this was the first time someone showed concern for him, so he couldn’t help being moved.

This emotional spike immediately caused him to have an intense dizziness, his body shook and if not for Fang Yuan supporting him, he might have fallen head-first into the ground.

"I am ashamed! My cultivation is still not enough, I am feeling dizzy and my mind is not working properly." Ding Hao was able to barely stand up.

"There is no need to worry, return to the cave and rest properly. Although you will still feel headaches tomorrow, your mind will have mostly recovered and can smoothly command these zombies." Fang Yuan smiled.

"Yes. I have experienced this before when I tried to control too many zombies, I almost fainted on the spot, hahaha." Ding Hao laughed.

"Okay... I need to leave now, I give you my approval. Rest properly and wait for me to come back, I will bring you to pay respects to master. Right, where is your cave?"

"It is halfway up the mountain beside a dark pond. It is easy to find, that dark pond is very unique, it is shaped like a pentagram." Ding Hao was very happy and immediately answered, "Eldest senior brother, you really won’t come visit my cave with me?"

"I can’t, time is pressing, I need to hand over the secret mission to master. Not good, someone actually feigned death, there is still someone who escaped!"

"Where!" Ding Hao’s mind shook and immediately turned around to look.

Pew!

Next instant, a bone spear pierced his skull.

Plop

Ding Hao collapsed on the ground, a thick spiral bone spear pierced through his skull; blood and brains slowly flowed out the spiral hole.

His eyes were wide open, a look of utter disbelief.

The smile on Fang Yuan’s face disappeared, changing into an indifferent expression. He slowly bent down and grabbed Ding Hao’s leg, dragging him towards the ruined camp.

The flames were still blazing. The zombies - having lost their master - started hopping aimlessly.

The corpses on the ground drew their attention, enticing them.

They hopped towards the corpses, biting and tearing them.

Fang Yuan dragged Ding Hao’s corpse past the corpses strewn battlefield, sounds of zombies eating the corpses kept on reverberating in his ears.

He threw Ding Hao towards the blazing fire and quietly looked on as the corpse slowly changed to ash. The Gu worms on the corpse also mournfully wailed before gradually burning to death.

Once Shang Xin Ci was recognized by Shang clan leader, she would definitely be strictly investigated by the Shang clan. This battle was sure to be of utmost importance.

If Ding Hao was captured by them and interrogated, Fang Yuan could be in danger.

Despite Ding Hao being an honest person, easy to deceive and a very good chess piece, his worth could never match with Shang Xin Ci. And if there were risks, it was better to abandon them. This including giving up the Gu worms on his body. As long as Fang Yuan carried them on him, Second Zombie King could find him. Moreover, it was not convenient for Fang Yuan to feed zombie heart Gu and it might only leave behind traces which could be discovered in Shang Clan’s investigation.

As for these zombies, they had turned back to being common zombie horde after losing their master. Once they finished eating these corpses, a part of them would stay here and another part would leave, wandering about Mu Bei mountain and searching for food.

Once they were done with this, the whole scene would become even more natural.

Only after Ding Hao’s corpse was burned to ashes did Fang Yuan slowly leave.

The zombies were eating the corpses, these mindless things were of no threat now.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

What a hero!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The crescent moon hangs high in the night sky, as moonlight flowed down like water.

Shang Xin Ci stood on a boulder and gazed far away, her face filled with worry: "Why has Brother Hei Tu still not returned?"

"Did something happen?" Xiao Die added.

"How could anything happen to him, don’t worry." Bai Ning Bing leaned on a withered tree, wondering what Fang Yuan was up to again.

Minutes and minutes passed, as Shang Xin Ci’s brows furrowed while her worry kept increasing.

Bai Ning Bing also started feeling something amiss, almost eight minutes had passed, did something really happen to Fang Yuan?

She didn’t care about Fang Yuan’s death, what she cared about was the Yang Gu on Fang Yuan.

Anxiety grew in her heart. Half of this was because of Fang Yuan’s disappearance, the other half was because of her own helplessness. As Fang Yuan’s cultivation continued to advance, she found it incredibly difficult to deal with him and get the Yang Gu. This meant that if Fang Yuan reneged on his promise, she had no way to deal with him.

Bai Ning Bing knew what kind of personality Fang Yuan had after travelling with him for so long. Fang Yuan’s cultivation was nearing rank three; the promised time was coming and her heart was becoming increasingly fretful.

The three discussed and just when they decided to return to assist Fang Yuan, he appeared in their sights on the mountain passage.

Shang Xin Ci let out a breath of relief, but her heart pounded again when Fang Yuan walked in front of them: "Brother Hei Tu, you are injured again!"

Fang Yuan had intentionally made some more injuries on his body. He drew in a breath of cold air: "When you guys had just left, a green-hair zombie appeared. Fortunately, I ran quickly, we should leave immediately, it might still be chasing me."

The three naturally didn’t dare to stay any longer when they heard that and hastened their journey that very night.

So far, Fang Yuan’s objectives were achieved and he behaved appropriately along the way.

After crossing Mu Bei mountain, they arrived at Shuang Jiang mountain.

This mountain had two peaks separated by a deep ravine, the peaks were similar to each other and gave off a majestic aura.

The four no longer had the caravan’s protection now, so it seemed to take a lot more effort when they moved through the mountain.

Fortunately, after crossing Shuang Jiang mountain, it was Xue Lei mountain.

Xue Lei mountain had Zhao Clan and could not be considered to be a wild area since there were human inhabitants on it.

The most dangerous part of the trade route was already over, so the danger had greatly decreased.

Fang and Bai were wanted by Bai Clan, so they didn’t go to Zhao Clan. The four moved on relentlessly; after passing through Xue Lei mountain, they continued to cross Qian Ku mountain, Ju Ren mountain, Lu Zao mountain... crossing over six great mountains.

During this time, Fang Yuan’s cultivation advanced from rank two middle stage to peak stage.

On the whole journey, they only stopped by some remote hamlets to replenish their supplies.

As they neared Shang Liang mountain, the mountain path became wider and there were more people moving through the path.

And finally, on this day, Shang Liang mountain finally appeared in their sights.

"Puff, that is Shang Liang mountain?" Shang Xin Ci put her hand on her forehead to shield her from the sunlight and looked at the horizon before letting out a breath of turbid air.

"Missy, we are almost there!" Xiao Die laughed happily, and excitedly shook Shang Xin Ci’s arm.

Bai Ning Bing only looked and did not speak.

"We will go our separate ways when we arrive at Shang Liang mountain. Lady Zhang, I have paid your favor." Fang Yuan suddenly said.

"What?" Xiao Die gasped, not having expected Fang Yuan to say that, she stood on the spot at a loss.

Shang Xin Ci’s expression changed, her eyelashes slightly trembled as she looked at Fang Yuan.

These days, while Fang Yuan remained silent, he had already become a pillar of support for her. Now that he is leaving, Shang Xin Ci immediately felt a sense of emptiness and loss.

"All things must come to an end." Fang Yuan heaved a long sigh.

"True..." Shang Xin Ci pursed up her lips, her breathing was becoming heavy. After being in contact with Fang Yuan all the time these days, she knew his character; he was a someone acts upon his decisions, a resolute man.

"Let’s go, it isn’t quite safe yet, we will part our ways when we reach the city gate." Fang Yuan started walking in front.

The atmosphere of the group had decreased to a freezing point, even the incessantly chattering Xiao Die was silent.

The closer they were to Shang clan city, the nearer their parting; Shang clan city unconsciously slowed down Shang Xin Ci’s steps. Shang clan city was her destination for this trip and she should have been happy as she neared her target, but right now, she didn’t want to reach Shang clan city.

However, the path was after all limited; they eventually arrived at the foot of Shang Liang mountain.

Shang clan city’s huge gate was right in front of their eyes.

It was time to part ways.

Fang Yuan gazed deeply at Shang Xin Ci and nodded his head, only saying two words.

"Take care."

It was simply two words, but it made Shang Xin Ci’s beautiful body tremble.

Fang Yuan turned around and left.

"Wait." Shang Xin Ci summoned her courage and suddenly spoke.

It was a sea of buzz and commotions around the city gate with people moving to and fro.

Shang Xin Ci’s beautiful pupils gazed at Fang Yuan as the crowds moved rapidly around them.

"We will meet again some day. Benefactor, you might have repaid my favor in your heart, but you have saved me over and over again, this favor you have given to me is as deep as the sea and as heavy as the mountain. Benefactor, you said a drop received in need will be repaid with whole river. I will definitely repay you!" The young girl’s tone was firm and revealed her resolute heart.

Fang Yuan smiled towards her, then turned around and left, gradually disappearing within the crowd.

Shang Xin Ci stood on the spot for a long while.

"Miss, they are really heartless, leaving just like that." Xiao Die walked over and held her hand.

"They do not want to implicate us, their demonic path identity cannot be exposed even on Shang Liang mountain." Shang Xin Ci’s nature was kind, always thinking of people positively.

"Oh, it was like that!" Xiao Die realized.

"They might be demonic Gu Masters but they are good people. I have decided, I will make it big on Shang clan city. There is definitely a place for my talent. I might just be a mortal who can’t cultivate, but I can hire Gu Masters to work for me. I will definitely repay their favor in future!"

"Yes! I believe in you Missy."

...

"Strange, you have protected Shang Xin Ci all the way, why are you intentionally parting ways now that we reached Shang Liang mountain? I have to remind you that there is a huge flow of people in Shang clan city and you don’t have an investigative Gu; if you are just playing hard to get, make sure you don’t lose track of her. If not, you will just be shooting yourself in the foot, it would really be a great joke."

Bai Ning Bing coldly reminded Fang Yuan from the side.

Fang Yuan ignored her, his gaze followed Shang Xin Ci and Xiao Die till they walked through the city gate and only then did he retrieve his gaze.

As per his previous life’s memories, Shang clan leader should detect his bloodline in Shang Xin Ci once she entered Shang clan city. However, for confirmation, the tyrannical Shang clan leader would round up all the people of the caravan, which Shang Xin Ci joined at that time, and keep them in house arrest as he interrogated and investigated them.

When the truth was cleared up and Shang Xin Ci’s identity was confirmed, Shang clan leader generously compensated all the caravan members by twice the amount of their goods.

Shang Xin Ci directly jump from being a mortal girl to being Shang clan leader’s beloved daughter. This event caused a sensation and became a popular conversation topic.

This is why Fang Yuan needed to part ways with Shang Xin Ci.

Fang Yuan had many Gu in his aperture which could never be exposed to others; especially the Spring Autumn Cicada. If he was investigated and his aperture searched, it would become a huge trouble.

If it was an ordinary clan, Fang Yuan would have no worries because the clan leaders who usually had the highest cultivation would only be at rank four stage in such clans. However, Shang clan leader had rank five cultivation and that wasn’t even the highest cultivation here. There were supreme elders in the Shang clan possessing rank six cultivation; if they were to search Fang Yuan’s aperture, the Spring Autumn Cicada would be discovered even if it hid deep within.

Saying his farewell had another advantage; he would appear to have no desire or need anything from Shang Xin Ci, this would deepen the impression of ’only repaying favor’ in her heart. Later, when he meets Shang Xin Ci, he would definitely obtain her trust.

Actually, the quickest way to form an inseparable relation to Shang Xin Ci is through sexual relation.

Fang Yuan could sense Shang Xin Ci had good feelings towards him. If he took her chastity, the future Shang clan leader would fall deeply in love with him.

Fang Yuan might appear ugly, but the charisma he released already moved Shang Xin Ci’s heart.

He knew Shang Xin Ci would not refuse him if he wanted it.

But this way absolutely could not be carried out!

If he did it, he would become Shang clan’s son-in-law and would be bound to the chariot called Shang clan. Then Fang Yuan would no longer be able to do things his own way, his every movement would be watched by others, his hands and feet bound, even his cultivation would have to be purposely suppressed.

As his cultivation increased rapidly, it would expose bone flesh unity Gu which was sure to cause an upheaval and attract all kinds of attention. Fang Yuan understood how much bone flesh unity Gu was worth, even Shang clan could not keep it for themselves.

And if Spring Autumn Cicada was revealed on top of that, hehe, those reclusive rank six Gu Masters, even rank seven Gu Masters would jump out one after another. After reaching rank six, the Gu Master would experience a qualitative change in their strength, each of them able to contend against the strength of a whole clan.

Once he had sexual relations with Shang Xin Ci, after Shang Xin Ci confirmed his identity, even if she was Shang clan leader, they would all come looking for Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan was moreover a demonic Gu Master with unknown origins, it was unavoidable for him to be investigated and interrogated.

If he escaped, he would have to face Shang clan’s pursuit and arrest warrant. This was a completely different concept from Bai Clan’s arrest warrant.

Bai Clan was in dire straits and didn’t have enough strength, but Shang Clan was one of the overlords of Southern Border.

Fang Yuan would only have one way out if that happened, that was to escape from the Southern Border.

...

Shang Yan Fei was sitting cross legged in the air, his whole body bathing in flames.

The flames were scarlet like blood and were burning silently in the dark void.

As the leader of Shang clan, he is occupied with clan affairs everyday and does not have much time to cultivate. Even so, with his domineering aptitude and comprehension, he was able to cultivate to rank five upper stage and was only a step away from peak stage.

Today’s cultivation was about to end...

The scarlet flames slowly dispersed and shrunk, finally changing back to long crimson hair on Shang Yan Fei’s head.

Without the illumination from fire, darkness spread, becoming the sole master of the area.

Suddenly! Shang Yan Fei opened his eyes, his pupils were dyed color of blood and his gaze shone like lightning as it pierced through the darkness.

"A new bloodline that originates from mine... how did this appear out of nowhere?"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Or just impregnate her like every other MC...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Shang Yan Fei’s thoughts stirred and immediately disappeared from within the darkness.

When he reappeared, he was already at the outer area of Shang clan city.

All kinds of noise entered his ears. There were various stalls located on both sides of the street. The people in the surrounding only saw a flash of bloody flame, then a black robed, crimson haired handsome man appeared in their midst.

"Whoa, scared the soul out of me!"

"Who is this man? He actually dares to use his Gu in Shang clan city?"

Many people cast bewildered gazes, only few recognized Shang Yan Fei but they were not sure.

Shang Yan Fei ignored these gazes and followed the bloodline reaction; his sharp senses landed on Shang Xin Ci.

Two girls stopped in front of a stall.

"Missy, this hairpin is really beautiful!" Xiao Die picked up a jade hairpin from the stall and matched it with Shang Xin Ci’s beautiful hair.

Shang Xin Ci forced out a smile, her mood had been down since parting with Fang Yuan.

Xiao Die was instead lively, fascinated by the flourishing scene in the city.

Suddenly, Shang Xin Ci felt something in her heart and turned around. Her gaze immediately landed on Shang Yan Fei.

The black robed, crimson haired Shang Yan Fei was very conspicuous in the crowd, like a crane in a flock of chickens.

However, what attracted Shang Xin Ci was not his appearance but rather a mysterious familial connection and calling from her bloodline.

Without any word being said, the moment Shang Xin Ci saw Shang Yan Fei, she knew this middle-aged man’s identity.

He was her father!

Father... to Shang Xin Ci, this word was mysterious and distant, containing sorrow and sadness.

Since young, she had asked her mother countless times about her father, but her mother always remained silent. And now, she finally met her father.

"So this was the reason mother told me to go to Shang clan city before her death!" Realization dawned upon her and tears uncontrollably fell down her eyes.

The moment Shang Yan Fei saw Shang Xin Ci, he connected it to her mother and realized her identity.

Similar, they were really similar!

This child’s gentle appearance was no different from hers!

Shang Yan Fei suddenly felt pain in his heart, he was vaguely able to see her again.

In that distant afternoon when spring rain was drizzling down, when willow trees were carefreely swaying beside the lotus pool; under a shabby hut, Shang clan’s young master Shang Yan Fei met the young lady of Zhang Clan who was running from rain.

A meeting of a scholar and beauty. It was love at first sight, they poured their hearts out to each other and pledged to be married...

However, one could only be helpless in the affairs of the world. Power and beauty was just like fish and bear paw, who could have both?

The young Shang Yan Fei was someone with blazing fire in his heart, this fire was the natural ambition of men towards power and influence.

Ambition or love, duty or freedom, oppressing his enemies or his promise to the beauty; Shang Yan Fei chose the former in the end and abandoned the latter.

He later defeated his brothers and sisters, ascended to the position of Shang clan leader and sat on the glorious throne. He became a rank five Gu Master, married countless beauties and now had many sons and daughters. And because Zhang Clan and Shang Clan had been enemies for generations, he could no longer look for her.

One cannot control everything in the world.

Clan leader’s identity became his symbol of success but also the shackles that binds him.

The king’s every movement could bring about upheavals and was closely watched by everyone. As the clan leader of Shang clan, how could he let his love affair affect the clan?

All these years, he tried hard to convince himself and hide his guilt and worries deep within by using the reasons of righteousness and duty. He thought he had forgotten it all, but now when he saw Shang Xin Ci, those warm memories hidden deep within him instantly enveloped his soul like the sound of spring rain.

Right now, waves were surging in his heart!

The blood of kinship that is thicker than water had turned into a river; now, his guilt overflowed into this river and became a sea, instantly submerging him.

He took a light step and disappeared, reappearing in front of Shang Xin Ci the next moment.

Xiao Die gasped, the surrounding people all looked astonished and shocked.

But the two people involved did not sense anything.

"You... what is your name?" Shang Yan Fei opened his mouth with great effort, his voice carried a magnetic quality and was filled with strong warmth.

Shang Xin Ci did not reply.

Tears streamed down from her beautiful eyes.

She took a step back and tightly pursed her lips, she then firmly looked at Shang Yan Fei, her gaze carrying stubbornness...

It was this man who hurt her mother’s heart.

It was this man who caused her to suffer discrimination and bullying since young.

It was this man who enchanted her mother, making her think about him even at death.

It was this man and yet he... he is... my father.

Her mood surged and raged, countless feelings mixed together to form a berserk whirlpool, threatening to swallow her mind.

She fainted.

"Missy!" Xiao Die who had been absorbed in Shang Yan Fei’s aura, regained her senses and screamed.

However, Shang Yan Fei was a step faster and held Shang Xin Ci on his hands.

"Who dares to openly violate the city rules and use Gu, do you want to end up in prison?" A group of city guards sensed the abnormal change and came over, swearing.

"Ah, Lord clan leader!" Their expressions instantly changed the moment they saw Shang Yan Fei, and all of them kneeled down.

The whole street was in commotion.

"You... you are... Shang clan’s..." Xiao Die stammered, and was speechless.

Shang Yan Fei grabbed Xiao Die’s arm; a blood colored flame burst forth and the three disappeared.

...

"Line up in a queue, enter one by one. Everyone needs to pay ten primeval stones as the toll to enter the city. Once you enter the city, you are not allowed to misuse your Gu, the violators will be sent to prison for at least seven days!" The guards at the city gate shouted loudly.

There were many arrest warrants posted on the city walls. Some had already yellowed from age and was covered by other warrants, revealing only a corner of them; and some were completely new posted carelessly on the walls.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing moved with the queue and slowly neared the city gate. Sure enough, they saw an arrest warrant for them from Bai Clan.

"Bai Clan..." Fang Yuan inwardly snorted.

"Two sirs, please stop." The gate guards approached Fang and Bai.

The two were wearing common clothings and looked just like ordinary people. Bai Ning Bing lowered her straw hat further down.

"Here is twenty primeval stones." Fang Yuan was not nervous, he simply handed over a bag.

The guards confirmed the amount, and immediately let them pass.

Despite there being arrest warrants packed all over the city walls beside him which he could easily look at, he didn’t give them a single glance from start to end.

These arrest warrants were nothing more than superficial show.

Shang clan prioritized profits, as long as one handed over primeval stones, they could enter the city. Everyday, numerous demonic Gu Masters passed under the eyes of these guards; both sides had reached a tacit mutual understanding.

Demonic Gu Masters would sell their loots in Shang clan city, and they would also need to replenish any lacking Gu worms; Shang clan city was the best option for them.

One could even say, one of the huge pillars for Shang clan city’s development was the demonic Gu Masters.

Of course, the demonic Gu Masters couldn’t enter the city too brazenly and aggressively. After all, Shang clan city represented righteous path and they would also need to consider some consequences of their actions.

A wide street appeared in front of the two after they walked through the city gates.

There were people moving to and fro on the street. Large tall trees were planted on both sides of the street and under its shade were all kinds of stalls; some sold food like sesame breads, soft bean curd, meat and vegetable dishes; while others sold jewellery and all kinds of other stuff.

The two walked past the stalls, then they saw buildings; tall bamboo buildings, mud buildings and white-grey tiled houses.

Shops, hotels, inns, smithies and so on appeared one after another.

"This brother, do you need a room? Our price is very cheap, just half a primeval stone for a night." A middle-aged woman approached Fang and Bai with a smile on her face.

Fang Yuan glared at her and left without saying a word.

His appearance was really terrifying and gave the middle-aged woman a great shock; she did not dare to bother him anymore, instead changing her target to Bai Ning Bing who was behind him.

"This brother, being away from home is not easy. Our inn is quite good, there will even be a pretty girl at night. It won’t be cheap for you to visit the red-light street. Mortals like us who travel outside to sell goods are using our lives to earn money, yet spending our hard earned money on those places would not even cause a ripple. Our inn’s girls are still the best, extremely cheap too! We have mature girls and even fresh, cute and adorable ones. What is your pick, brother?"

The middle-aged woman said in a soft voice, with a vague expression. She misunderstood Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing as mortals from their clothings.

A dark frown appeared on Bai Ning Bing’s face.

"Get lost." She coldly snorted, her tone bone-chilling.

The middle-aged woman’s face rapidly changed, her whole body stiffened as she remained stunned on the spot.

"So she was a female."

"Hahaha, Big Sister Zhang you made an error this time..."

The nearby workers who were of the same profession and were soliciting customers, roared with laughter and ridiculed the middle-aged woman.

Along the way, Bai Ning Bing had made great progress in disguising as a man, so even the experienced brokers made an error.

Four Seasons Restaurant.

One hour later, Fang Yuan stopped in front of a five storey tall building.

The building was made of white-black tiles, with vermillion gate and huge pillars. There was an aroma of wine and fragrance of dishes floating around the place. It was a famous restaurant in Shang clan city.

"Sirs, please come in." A smart waiter saw Fang and Bai, and quickly came out to invite them.

The two had walked for a long while and the journey had been tough, they were also hungry, so they stepped into the restaurant.

"Sirs, please take a seat here." The waiter showed the way.

Fang Yuan slightly frowned: "This hall is too noisy, we will go upstairs."

The waiter immediately revealed an awkward expression: "I won’t keep it from sirs, we indeed have private rooms upstairs, but they are only opened to Gu Masters."

Fang Yuan snorted and revealed a portion of snow-silver primeval essence.

The waiter quickly bent down: "I had failed to recognize Mount Tai, please come upstairs!"

When they reached the stairs, the waiter stopped, a young and sweet looking girl walked over and spoke softly: "Lords, could I ask which floor you want to go? Four Seasons Restaurant has five floors, first floor hall is for mortals; second floor provides for rank one Gu Masters; third floor provides for rank two Gu Masters, there is a twenty percent discount for them; fourth floor provides for rank three Gu Masters and has fifty percent discount; fifth floor provides for rank four Gu Masters and the services are free of charge."

Fang Yuan laughed: "Fourth floor then."

The girl’s expression immediately became a bit more respectful. She bowed in greeting: "Please demonstrate your primeval essence."

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Feed our hero some good food!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Steamed lamb, braised duck, steamed eight treasure pork, glutinous rice stuffed duck, stir-fried carp, assorted stuffed intestines, spicy oil crispy roll, honey yam, sliced fresh peach, eight treasure ding, steamed bamboo shoots, ape lips, camel humps, antlers, bear paws, three fresh osmanthus soup, beeswax pork trotters, fresh sharks’ fin soup...

A moment later, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing sat at elegant seats on the fourth floor, as a spread of delicacies were presented before them, each possessing visual appeal, fragrant smell, and flavor.

Fang Yuan picked up a pair of bamboo chopsticks, and casually ate a few mouthful, he first tried the steamed bamboo shoots, they tasted refreshing, raising one’s concentration. He next took a piece of the fresh peach, its sweetness was perfection. Next he took the bear paw, it was plump and tender, just like the steamed lamb, tasting divine with just a bit of flavoring.

Bai Ning Bing drank a mouthful of the three fresh osmanthus soup, flavor spreading in her mouth as fragrance remained on her lips and teeth, causing her appetite to awaken.

"After spending so much time with you, this is the first time you are so generous." As she ate, she did not forget her sarcastic comments to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan laughed, not giving a reply, he knew Bai Ning Bing’s suspicion and impatience.

He got closer to Shang Xin Ci, using all his effort to protect her laboriously. And yet at their destination, he purposely split away from them; this action was something Bai Ning Bing could not comprehend.

Fang Yuan was now rank two peak stage, only a step away from rank three. The agreement he set with Bai Ning Bing back then regarding rank three, was approaching its end too.

But Fang Yuan would definitely not keep his word! In his eyes, such a thing like integrity, was only a compromise made out of necessity, or a beautiful cover-up, like a convincing mask.

Fang Yuan knew this, so did Bai Ning Bing.

Thus, she was starting to feel hasty.

Because she had already sensed that Fang Yuan would break his word. Yet, there was nothing she could do to Fang Yuan, the Yang Gu was in his possession, her hands were tied.

Right now, without Bai clan’s hunting, and without beast hordes, Fang and Bai ate at the same table, giving off a sense of amiability, but their relationship was extremely tense, if they progressed one more step, they would fall apart and turn against one another.

And this step, is Fang Yuan advancing to rank three.

Once he advances, he and Bai Ning Bing would no longer had any hopes of reconciling, the two would have to face each other directly.

How to deal with Bai Ning Bing?

Throughout the meal, Fang Yuan considered this.

His cultivation could not stay stagnant, one day, the conflict will escalate.

The situation now was very delicate.

Fang Yuan had the upper hand because he controlled the Yang Gu, but in fact, Bai Ning Bing also held Fang Yuan’s handle.

She travelled along with Fang Yuan, experiencing Bai Gu mountain’s inheritance herself, while also saw how Fang Yuan attracted all those beast hordes to attack the caravan.

She knew too much.

Compared to the potential threat Ding Hao was, Bai Ning Bing’s threat towards Fang Yuan was far greater.

"If I finish off Bai Ning Bing, I will not have to worry about Shang Xin Ci, but because my cultivation is insufficient, I missed the best chance to kill off Bai Ning Bing during the caravan journey. Back then I needed her strength to ensure my survival. Moreover, with Shang Xin Ci nearby, I could not strike easily. This Bai Ning Bing had always been wary of me secretly, and she has the ice muscles jade bones to defend her, I cannot finish her in one hit. Furthermore, her battle instinct is outstanding, with her recently gained experience, she is even harder to deal with now..."

Fang Yuan considered all possibilities as his thoughts flowed, but at the same time Bai Ning Bing was also deeply considering her situation.

"Since leaving Qing Mao mountain, there’s finally a time to rest and recover. I have to take back the Yang Gu and regain my male body! I have little chance of succeeding if I directly snatch it, unless I can kill Fang Yuan in an instant. But this scoundrel, even though he is rank two, his fighting strength is much greater than that, such a weirdo, with extremely experienced fighting techniques. Together with that scheming devious mind of his, capable of commiting all heinous crimes, no morals can restraint him, he is somebody who can truly commit any sin."

"Most importantly, I have not discovered his true trump card yet. But I have my advantages, his current cultivation is still dependant on me, and I know too many secrets, maybe I can use these things to force him to compromise. Using the poison vow Gu, and make an agreement with him that cannot be broken, other than that, I can use plunder Gu, seize Gu, petty thief Gu and others to steal the Yang Gu..."

Bai Ning Bing was not stupid, she had been observing along the way, and considering her options.

As the two ate on the same table, not even three steps away from each other, they looked like good friends, but were scheming against each other in their minds.

The disappearance of external pressure caused their internal conflicts to surface. In this relatively safe environment in Shang clan city, they had the time to consider such problems.

But the more they thought about it, the more troublesome they felt the other party was!

Fang Yuan did things without restraints, but Bai Ning Bing was just the same. In her ideology, as long as life is exciting, anything goes. Morals and principles? What are that?

They were very similar, looking at the world with disdain, and were strong willed individuals, with an extremely thirst for power, only trusting themselves.

From others’ perspectives, they were accursed demons, scum that harmed society, their death would benefit the world.

But because they were so similar, the two could feel each other’s danger.

The most difficult enemy to deal with, was often oneself.

Most importantly, they held each other’s weaknesses. If they could not win in one strike, and allowed the other party to escape and recover, then both of them would go down in flames!

The two got a headache the more they thought about it.

"This Bai Ning Bing is not easy to deal with." Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, he had too little resources to manipulate.

"This Fang Yuan has almost no weaknesses..." Bai Ning Bing squinted, her eyes shining with cold light.

The two could not think of anything, thus looking up at the same time, staring at each other.

Their gaze met for an instant, before turning away.

The delicacy before them, although delicious, had barely any flavor to the two who were deep in thoughts.

Even though there was a fifty percent discount, Fang Yuan still paid fifteen primeval stones.

Shang clan city indeed, commodities were expensive here.

The two filled their stomachs, and left the restaurant.

On the streets, Fang Yuan heard people discussing.

"Do you know? At the southern gate, Shang clan leader appeared!"

"How is this possible?"

"It’s true, he came and left like a flash, the entire street was thrown into chaos...’

"Bullshit! What kind of person is the Shang clan leader, why would he appear on the streets for no reason?"

Rumors spread as some claimed it was Shang Yan Fei, while others denied it.

Fang Yuan chose to enter from the eastern gate, while Shang Xin Ci came in from the south. By the time the rumors got to the eastern gate, the truth had already been distorted beyond recognition.

Bai Ning Bing heard this, and thought of it as just a passing rumor, not paying attention to it. Soon, people started a new conversation.

But to Fang Yuan, it was a clear indication of events.

He laughed secretly, it seems that Shang Xin Ci’s situation did not exceed what he had expected from his memories.

Next, he would wait for the fruits to mature, and land on himself.

"Quickly look, its the flying blue whale, Yi clan’s caravan is here!" Suddenly, someone pointed to the sky, shouting in shock.

At once, people on the streets stopped, and looked up in the sky.

A giant shadow engulfed everyone.

In the sky, a giant blue whale slowly emerged.

Well, compared to "flying", one might as well say they are "swimming".

Flying blue whale, was a huge beast capable of moving freely in the air.

They lived above the nine heavens of the eastern seas, having a peaceful and mild temperament. Often Gu Masters used the whale enslavement Gu to control them and used them in the caravan.

Flying blue whale was huge, like a small mountain, and the entire caravan hid within its body, as it flew in the sky. Compared to the caravan moving through the forests, the danger was much less and the speed was much faster.

But the flying blue whale consumed up to five hundred kilograms of food a day, only a large-sized clan could afford to feed them.

In the entire southern border, only Yi clan owned flying blue whales.

Yi clan is one of the overlords of the southern border, almost the same status as Shang clan, and had a close relationship with the forces in the eastern seas.

"What a grand sight." Bai Ning Bing sighed.

She thought about the former Bai clan village, this blue whale just had to land on Bai clan village, and the entire village would be in ruins.

The huge figure moved towards Shang Liang mountain, as the flying blue whale gradually landed on one of the mountain peak.

Fang Yuan could see from afar, it opened its huge mouth and a large number of black dots emerged from its mouth.

These dots were the Yi clan caravan members, but because of the distance, they could not be seen clearly.

"Yi clan caravan is here, the market is going to fluctuate again."

"I heard Yi clan brought a rank five Gu this time to auction on Shang Liang mountain."

"Yi clan and the eastern seas have a deep connection, they definitely brought many specialties from the eastern seas this time, there is value in purchasing them."

The topic quickly shifted to the Yi clan caravan.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing walked up the path together.

Gu Yue clan village was only a portion of Qing Mao mountain, but Shang clan city covered the entire Shang Liang mountain.

In the southern borders, even the number one clan Wu clan, did not have such a massive mountain city.

The entire Shang clan city had all sorts of buildings; bamboo buildings, dried mud houses, brick houses, shacks, treehouses, and even mushroom houses, caves, towers, castles, and much more.

These structures blended together, covering Shang Liang mountain in a beautiful garb with assorted colors.

As the trading hub of the entire southern border, Shang clan city occupied the most space among all forces.

But if one thinks this is all Shang clan city has to offer, then they cannot be more wrong.

This is only the outer city of Shang clan city.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing came to a huge cave.

"Would both guests like to enter the inner city? It will be a hundred primeval stones per person." The guarding Gu Master requested.

"Just entering requires a hundred?" Bai Ning Bing expressed her shock.

"The inner city has a smaller space, this is to prevent irrelevant people from entering, and also to maintain social order." The Gu Master replied respectfully.

Shang Liang mountain had been modelled by Shang clan for thousands of years, not only did they use up the surface of the mountain, but even deeper into the mountain’s interior, they built an inner city.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan paid two hundred primeval stones, and entered the inner city with Bai Ning Bing.

Inner city, although built in the mountain, had wide walking paths that could accommodate ten horse carts travelling in a line.

Once they entered, the crowds became much smaller, less than half of the outer city.

But Gu Masters became littered everywhere, rank ones were all over the place, rank two mixed in among them, and occasionally one or two rank threes.

There were few to no mortals, after all, a hundred primeval stones were needed to enter. Most Gu Master had servants to attend to them, but did not want to waste their money like this.

The illumination of the inner city was through a type of charcoal.

The charcoal stone could burn for a long time, and did not produce smoke. Every hundred steps, Fang and Bai would see a hole dug in the walls, as a bunch of charcoal stones burnt within.

Even though the charcoal stone did not emit much heat, with so many of them burning at once, it still caused the inner city’s temperature to be higher than outside, and the air to be much dryer.

Unlike outer city, which had all sorts of buildings, being a complete mix, the buildings here were all of one structure, and looked the same, made through a heat-resistant red lava stone.

All sorts of paths extended out from the main street.

At the same time, every five hundred steps, a huge round pillar would appear.

There was a spiral stone stairs on the surface of the pillar, as it extended upwards, with railings along the stone stairs.

Through the stone pillars, people could go up one floor, or get to the street one floor lower.

The inner city was not flat, but was more spherical. From up to down, numerous paths and buildings existed, linking together and allowing one to travel anywhere they wanted easily.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing moved towards the deeper part of the mountain, this was still not their destination.

At a certain location, a sentry appeared.

The Gu Master at work had higher cultivation, as the security of the place was heightened.

"Do both of you have a token?" The guard stopped Fang and Bai.

Shang clan gave tokens of varied authority to people of different statuses.

"This is our first visit." Fang Yuan said.

Obviously, he had no such thing.

"In that case, it will be two hundred primeval stones per person." The guard said.

Fang Yuan paid the primeval stones, and the guard let them through.

The two arrived at the fourth inner city as a result.

Shang Liang mountain had been through a few thousand years of development by Shang clan, the entire mountain was remodelled by Shang clan, digging paths and constructing new buildings, classifying the place into regions.

Thus, the inner city was huge, from inner to outer, there was five regions.

The first inner city was called the central inner city, the political heart of Shang clan, and also their military base.

The second inner city was also known as the clan city, only Shang clansmen could stay here.

The third inner city had an elegant environment, with clean and fresh air, it was the high-class zone.

Fourth inner city was the middle-class zone. Fifth inner city was the low-class zone.

Any further and we get to the outer city, having high traffic flow, and all sorts of goods transportation. Compared to the inner city, it was much more chaotic.

This construction structure, was somewhat like a termite hill on Earth.

Termite hills were four to ten meters long, with the termites living within, in small interconnected tunnels, complex and exquisite.

Once the two entered the fourth inner city, they could feel more moisture in the air as the temperature dropped slightly.

Compared to fifth inner city, fourth inner city was a grade higher, not only was the entrance fee twice as high, it also had much better facilities.

Firstly, light was not provided by charcoal, but by a large number of a specific rank one grass Gu.

The name is — Moonlight crawling mountain tiger.

This was a type of vine, growing on the walls of both sides of the street, as it spread out, it could be seen everywhere.

The roots were deep blue, and the leaves were wide and large, emitting a small blue moonlight. Just one segment of the path had thousands of leaves, as the gentle blue light merged into one.

Because of the large numbers of leaves, the air is more humid and water vapor filled the air. Near the ground, there was mist from the condensed vapor.

The moonlight refracted in the mist, turning into an aurora. As one walked on the streets, they had a feeling of walking in a spiritual realm.

The buildings here were mostly full of carvings and decorations. Some residents created grass fields, and placed flower vats, while others made artificial mountains, and pavilions.

There was even less people on the streets here.

Rank two Gu Masters were now the common group, after all, two hundred primeval stones was a huge sum to rank one Gu Masters.

Most evidently, the streets were still noisy in fifth inner city, but here, it was much more quiet.

The two continued deeper, and got to the city gate.

"Without a token, to enter the third inner city, both of you would need to pay six hundred primeval stones." The guard’s cultivation was already rank three.

Fang Yuan gave the primeval stones, and arrived at the third area.

This place was different from fourth inner city yet again.

All infrastructure were made using star stones.

This type of rock, was a widely used material in Gu refinement, able to emit starlight in the darkness.

The entire third inner city used star stones. Not only buildings, but even the walking paths were made of star stones.

At one glance, starlight filled the air as vision is clear, without any mist as obstruction.

The air was fresh and clear. Looking around, there were pavilions, red walls and green bricks, and even transplanted bamboo forests, famous trees, making an artificial mountain, with spring water flowing as well.

The streets had little people, quiet and serene, like a star palace.

"Truly rich and extravagant..." Bai Ning Bing slightly assessed, just the cost of the buildings she could see, was an astronomical figure.

As the most wealthy clan in the southern border, even Shang clan’s leg hair was thicker than normal people’s waists . Although an exaggeration, the rumors were not baseless.

Shang clan’s wealth was like a mountain, in fact, the entire Shang clan city was a literal mountain. Shang clan mainly traded and that involved the entire southern border.

Shang clan’s true wealth and asset, no one could make clear of it.

But Fang Yuan knew, just this third inner city’s construction, could match with tens of Gu Yue clan’s total wealth.

At this place, even rank two Gu Masters became rare.

Once in a while, they saw Gu Masters, but there were almost all rank three.

This was Fang Yuan’s destination.

Any deeper, and it is the second inner city.

But to enter, it is no longer a problem of primeval stones, Shang clan city’s token is required. And this token’s authority has to reach a certain level.

"Tong Ou shop." Fang Yuan looked at the plaque before walking in.

This was a shop that sold Gu worms.

"Two esteemed guests, please enter." The attendant was a young girl, walking over and spoke in a soft volume.

Her aura was not concealed, showing off her rank one Gu Master cultivation.

Although Fang and Bai wore mortal clothing, one was ugly while the other was down and out, this Gu Master girl still showed a respectful attitude, displaying her superior service attitude.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were brought into an elegant room.

This is a private room, with wooden tables and chairs, with sculptures and paintings hanging on the white walls. The brush strokes resembled dragons and phoenixes dancing as the strokes were written with precise strength.

Through the window lattice, the garden could be seen; green trees and red flowers along with the chirping of birds.

The Gu Master young girl brought over two cups of fragrant tea and left.

Just as she left, an elderly man entered.

"May I inquire if our two esteemed guests are here to buy or sell?" The elderly was a rank two Gu Master, smiling as he cupped his fists and asked.

"Both buying, and also selling." Fang Yuan raised his cup as he answered.

The elderly laughed, and two flashes of light flew out of his body, floating in front of Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

It was two bookworms.

Bookworm was a rank one Gu worm, but was precious, as rare as the liquor worm.

Once one appears on the market, it would be sold instantly, there was often demand but no supply for it.

It was like a silkworm, although it had a head, body and stomach, three distinct parts, its body looked like a cocoon overall, round and cute.

Its body was white, but the surface had a layer of enamel, giving off an oily glow.

Holding it in one’s hand, it was round and smooth, like a high grade porcelain vase.

The bookworm was a storage type Gu, similar to the tusita flower.

The difference was, tusita flower stored physical items, while bookworm stored knowledge and information. Even if it was destroyed, it would only explode into a flash of harmless white light.

"Please browse through." The elderly Gu Master said.

The two bookworms were refined by him, thus he could easily lend them to Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

Fang and Bai both used a trace of snow silver primeval essence, and injected it into the bookworm.

The bookworms turned into a flash of white light, entering the two’s forehead, in between their eyebrows.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing gained a wave of information in their heads.

The information was like content they memorised, deeply entrenched in their minds.

Bai Ning Bing bit her tongue secretly, Tong Ou shop sold almost tens of thousands of Gu worms! Gu worms of all kinds, causing one to get dizzy from observing the selection alone.

Among them, there was bookworm, liquor worm, all sorts of precious Gu worms, from low to high, rank one to five.

Of course, there was definitely no rank six Gu.

Each Gu worm had their specialized introduction to state their uses. There was even accurate prices, some were priced highly, while rare and precious Gu worms even had all sorts of token requirements.

This means, only Gu Masters with specific Shang clan tokens had the qualifications to buy these Gu worms.

Fang Yuan needed to purchase large numbers of Gu worms, after browsing through casually, he came back to reality and returned the bookworm to the elderly.

Although he had over ten thousand primeval stones now, to purchase all the Gu worms he needed, there was still some way to go.

Money was not the problem, because some of the Gu worms had token requirements.

"Esteemed guest, what are you interested in? If you purchase in bulk, we can give an appropriate discount." The elderly smiled and said.

Seeing Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing’s snow silver primeval essence, his tone became even more respectful.

Fang Yuan waved his hand: "No rush, I have Gu worms to sell."

Saying so, he summoned a bone spear Gu.

The elderly was not surprised, there was many who came to Tong Ou shop to buy, but also many who came to sell.

He held the bone spear Gu, took a look, and showed a trace of surprise on his face.

He had never seen the bone spear Gu.

Of course he has not.

This was a special Gu worms made by Grey Bone Scholar, it had never entered the market.

"Please enlighten me, esteemed guest." The elderly showed a solemn expression as he cupped his fists.

Fang Yuan nodded, drinking some tea: "Of course. This is the bone spear Gu, a specific lineage of Gu worms. I’ll lend it to you now, you’ll know when you try it."

The elderly wielded it at once, remarking: "This Gu, although rank one, is not easy to raise. But its attack power is high and is rather unique, it is worth this price."

The elderly stretched out his palm, showing a number.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

The elderly stretched out his palm, showing a word: Cliffhanger.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Three hundred ten?

Seeing the amount shown by the elderly, Fang Yuan raised his eyebrows.

Liquor worm’s price was five hundred eighty, bookworm was slightly higher, at six hundred. Black and white boar Gu were also six hundred, but all these Gu worms were rank one rare Gu, with little numbers, thus their price was steep.

Ordinary rank one Gu were around two hundred fifty primeval stones.

One time expenditure Gu like vitality grass were priced at fifty a piece.

Setting the bone spear Gu at three hundred ten was already quite good. This elderly working at Tong Ou shop did not suppress the price purposely.

But even so, Fang Yuan tried to raise the prices as much as he could.

Bargaining was already mastered by him to the limits in his previous life.

In just a few sentences, the elderly had no choice but to raise the price by ten primeval stones.

One bone spear Gu, three hundred and twenty primeval stones.

"Alright, we shall deal at this price." Fang Yuan waved his hand, and a wave of light flew out of his aperture.

Fifty-six bone spear Gu, floated in front of the elderly, causing him to jump from shock.

"So many..." He instantly regretted it. Each raised by ten primeval stones, this is nearly a six hundred primeval stone increment.

The truth is, Fang Yuan took almost two hundred bone spear Gu from Bai Gu mountain.

But as he traded along the way, without sufficient food, most of them had died already, only so little remain.

"Fifty-six Gu, that is seventeen thousand nine hundred and twenty (17920) primeval stones, I will ask the servants to bring over the primeval stones over now." The elderly kept the bone spear Gu into his aperture.

"No rush, look at this." Fang Yuan smiled, taking out a spiral bone spear Gu.

"This rank two Gu resembles the bone spear Gu..." The elderly showed astonishment on his face.

"Indeed, successfully refining the bone spear Gu will create this spiral bone spear Gu. It has a spiral force, thus its penetration ability is very strong." Fang Yuan explained at an appropriate timing.

The elderly tested, and verified what Fang Yuan had mentioned, giving a price of seven hundred eighty primeval stones.

After a few rounds of bargaining, Fang Yuan raised the price to eight hundred per Gu.

These spiral bone spear Gu were well kept by him, there were twenty in his aperture.

This way, he sold them all for sixteen thousand primeval stones.

"Now look at this Gu, seven thousand primeval stones." Fang Yuan gave a price, and took out the bone spike Gu, introducing once again.

The elderly held the bone spike Gu, but did not dare to test it, laughing bitterly: "This Gu is rank three, but it hurts both enemies and user. The pain of bone spikes penetrating the skin must hurt greatly. To use it, a healing Gu has to be used as well, this price is too high, I will consider six thousand five hundred, it is just the right price..."

"Let’s not bargain anymore, I’ll give in a little, six thousand seven hundred." Fang Yuan said.

After two rounds, the elderly found Fang Yuan extremely hard to deal with, he wiped the sweat off his forehead and gritted his teeth: "Deal."

"Then that is forty thousand six hundred and twenty (40620) primeval stones in total." Fang Yuan’s eyeballs moved as he gave an accurate amount.

The elderly suddenly bowed, paying respects to Fang Yuan: "Esteemed guest, these Gu worms that you are selling, I have never seen them in my years of dealing in business. They are all interconnected, with a clear advancement path, they seem to be of one family tree. May I ask you, are these Gu from the same inheritance?"

Fang Yuan nodded: "Any intelligent person can tell, indeed, this was obtained through a lucky opportunity, and I inherited an inheritance, getting these Gu worms.

The elderly was joyful: "In that case, you must have the relevant Gu refinement recipe. Esteemed guest’s luck truly is amazing, even an outsider would be envious, is it possible to sell these recipes together to my shop?"

Fang Yuan frowned.

Goods were expensive when rare, bone spear Gu, spiral bone spear Gu, bone spike Gu, not only he possessed them, Bai clan had them too. No issue if he sold them.

But the complete refinement recipe, he obtained it from the flesh sac secret room, there was only one in the world. Such a thing could not be easily sold.

"Anything that is below rank six, both Gu and recipes, can have a price. But, how much primeval stones can you offer?" Fang Yuan thought, and asked.

As long as the price is appropriate, this recipe could be sold.

He needed money.

After selling the bone spear Gu and others, the forty thousand primeval stones was insufficient for his plans.

The elderly raised two fingers: "Two hundred thousand!"

After selling so many Gu worms, he only got forty thousand. But the formless recipe, could gain him two hundred thousand.

Give a man a fish and you feed him for a day. Teach a man to fish and you feed him for a lifetime.

The method to catching fish far surpasses the value of the fish itself.

Because the method implies a continuous source of fish.

To Tong Ou shop, with a recipe, it means they can produce bone spear Gu and the others themselves, endlessly.

That means a long term transaction item, only sold at a single place, thus the white bone recipe is definitely priced much more highly.

But Fang Yuan smirked: "Two hundred thousand. You dare report this price?"

The elderly’s face turned red, this price was low indeed, he quickly said: "Three hundred thousand!"

Fang Yuan did not speak, but turned to leave.

The elderly gritted his teeth: "Five hundred thousand!"

"This price is finally looking bearable, I’ll sell it for six hundred and eighty thousand." Fang Yuan sipped his tea.

The elderly’s face was bitter: "Five hundred thousand is the limit of my authority. Esteemed guest, you sold so many bone spear Gu, we can hire a recipe master to reverse engineer your recipe. It is really not bad to sell it for five hundred thousand already."

Fang Yuan shook his head, his attitude firm: "The recipe in my hands is unique to this world, there is only one in the entire world! At least six hundred and fifty thousand, otherwise I will not sell it. Within this Shang clan city, I’m sure there are other shops, right?"

"You do not know this esteemed guest, Shang clan city has many shops, but most are under the control of my clan’s young master. If you cannot sell it here, no other places would buy it either. If you do not sell the recipe, I’m afraid you won’t be able to sell these Gu worms too." The elderly cupped his fist, his words being both firm and compromising, with a hint of threat.

"Oh? Then we’ll see about that." Fang Yuan kept all these Gu worms, and left.

"Esteemed guests, I am sincerely advising you, please stay and sell it." The elderly gave his last attempt.

Fang Yuan did not pay him any attention, walking out of the room immediately. Bai Ning Bing could only follow closely behind.

"Esteemed guest, you will come here again." The elderly laughed coldly, sending the two off with his gaze.

After Fang and Bai left, the elderly came to the secret room, and activated his primeval essence, summoning a Gu.

This Gu turned into a flash of light and entered a bronze mirror.

Ripples appeared on the mirror surface, as a young man’s face showed up.

"This subordinate greets young master." Seeing the young Gu Master, the elderly quickly kneeled on the floor.

"What business do you have?" This young man was one of the young masters of Shang clan, called Shang Ya Zi. He was only eighteen, at the peak of his life, but he was an alcoholic, causing his face to be skinny, and his skin to be pale, and giving off a dazed expression.

The elderly spoke about Fang Yuan’s matter.

In Shang Ya Zi’s eyes, a devious but excited light shone.

He shouted loudly: "Excellent. Heaven really leaves a path for the desperate. I was worrying about how to keep my young master position, and now heaven sends me this gift. I have to obtain this inheritance, with this deal, I would be able to pass the evaluation this year!"

"This subordinate will do his best, but I am only in charge of Tong Ou shop, as for the others..."

"I will arrange it, hmph, these two wants to sell Gu worms, they can only bow to me!" Shang Ya Zi snorted in disdain.

Ba Bao shop...

"Sorry guests, there are instructions from the higher-ups, if the two of you wants to sell Gu, you should go to Tong Ou shop."

Yuan Fang 1 building...

"So it is the two esteemed guests, if you sell the recipe, all can be discussed."

Bu Dao store...

"You two are esteemed guests, I am a businesswoman, why would I chase you away, but I am left with no choice either..."

After three shops, Fang Yuan did not manage to sell his Gu worms.

"Haha, to think you would have this day. The old man was not wrong, this is indeed their territory." Bai Ning Bing struck a blow to Fang Yuan relentlessly.

After several rejections, Fang Yuan’s face was still calm: "Shang clan leader Shang Yan Fei has many children, but there is only one position for young clan leader, and ten young masters. Every year there would be an evaluation to choose the young clan leader, and remove the worst performing young master to make room for his other children."

A bright light flashed across Bai Ning Bing’s brain: "So that’s it, that means this Shang clan young master is either vying for the young clan leader position, or to defend his young master title. Otherwise, he would not create such a commotion."

Fang Yuan laughed as he clapped his hands together: "This is Shang clan’s third inner city, no fighting is allowed. Even if Bai clan came here, they cannot do anything here. For the Shang clan young masters, their restrictions is even greater. With the impending evaluation, every movement from them will be strictly observed. We are in no hurry, let’s find a place to sit down first."

At Shang clan, there is no worry about lack of food.

Let’s just stall it out, and wait a few more days with these bone spear Gu, let’s see who outlasts the other!

At the same time, in the first inner city.

"Did you investigate clearly?" Shang Yan Fei stood at the window, staring at the garden.

"This lady is indeed your flesh and blood, clan leader. Moreover, her soul is intact, her body had not been taken over by another person. I’ve already contacted Zhang clan, and clarified her identity. But there is something strange, she was part of a caravan heading towards Shang Liang mountain, but we cannot find anyone who travelled with her in the caravan." The external clan elder Wei Yang lowered his head and reported.

Shang Yan Fei listened quietly, sighing in his heart: "Oh heavens, thank you for giving me a chance to make amendments. I have already let down a girl, I cannot disappoint this daughter of mine anymore!"

...

Shang Xin Ci sat before the table, seeing the hot steam rise from her tea, her eyes were out of focus.

From Xiao Die’s words, she knew of Shang Yan Fei’s identity.

She did not expect her father to be the Shang clan leader, a man with immense authority, whose every action can impact the entire southern border!

Then why did he not find her mother?

Shang Xin Ci was intelligent after all, quickly understanding the reason why Shang Yan Fei abandoned her mother.

But even on her deathbed, her mother missed him greatly.

Shang Xin Ci felt pain in her heart, but also hatred, but mostly emptiness.

She did not know how to face this father who appeared all of a sudden.

But running away was impossible, outside the door there was knocking: " Ci Er 2 , can I come in?"

Xiao Die instantly became nervous.

It was Shang Yan Fei.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Remember the last guy who threatened our righteous MC.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Shang Yan Fei showed a sincere smile as he walked into the house.

Xiao Die hurriedly paid respects, while Shang Xin Ci sat beside the table, motionless as she continued to stare at the same spot.

Shang Yan Fei also sat beside the table, speaking in an extremely gentle voice: "Ci Er, how do you feel now?"

Shang Xin Ci had good upbringing after all, she stood up, took a few steps back and bowed: "Lord Shang clan leader does not have to worry, I only fainted because my emotions were too intense, I have recovered now, I can hear and see well, there is no problem."

Shang Yan Fei quickly waved his hand: "Hehehe, as long as you are fine Ci Er, come sit, sit down and talk."

Shang Xin Ci only addressed him as Shang clan leader, purposely using such a distant term, it caused his heart to ache.

Shang Xin Ci sat down once again, as Xiao Die finally reacted and poured tea for Shang Yan Fei.

"Tell me, how were your past few years?" Shang Yan Fei looked at Shang Xin Ci gently.

"It was rather alright." Shang Xin Ci answered curtly, not wishing to converse deeply into it.

But Xiao Die started to grumble: "From young, Missy has been isolated by the clansmen. After Madam passed away, they got even harsher and wanted to snatch our family fortune. They are too evil, Sir, you have to help Missy!"

"Xiao Die, pour your tea." Shang Xin Ci rolled her eyes at Xiao Die.

Xiao Die instantly shut up, not speaking anymore.

Facing this, Shang Yan Fei did not get anxious, instead the pity and pain in his heart grew.

He laughed: "Right, how did you get here? Coming here from Zhang clan, it is a huge distance away."

"Sir, you almost failed to see Missy. We barely made it out alive in this journey. The entire caravan of a thousand was reduced to us four. Luckily we met Lord Hei Tu and Bai Yun and gained their assistance, if not..." Xiao Die could not control herself and blabbered.

"Xiao Die!" Shang Xin Ci glared at Xiao Die.

Xiao Die had to shut up once again.

Shang Yan Fei memorised the two names, "Hei Tu and Bai Yun", as he smiled: "From now on, you two will stay here. It is extremely safe, when you are bored you can take a walk in the garden, or go outside for shopping. You have just arrived here, and are not familiar with the estate yet, it is easy to get lost. I will send a servant over to you, she is familiar with the environment. I shall leave first, take a good rest for now."

Shang Yan Fei could tell Shang Xin Ci still needed time to adjust her mindset.

At this point, he needed to give her time and space to adapt.

"Master is such a good person, although he is the Shang clan leader, he is so amiable. Missy, he is your birth father after all..." Seeing Shang Yan Fei leave, Xiao Die urged.

"I know, I understood mother’s intentions when I first saw him. Sigh , she instructed me to come to Shang Liang mountain before she died, yet not telling me the reason. That is because she was not certain if he would acknowledge me as his daughter... Although he has accepted me, I do not feel good about it. This is all too sudden..."

"Missy, no matter what, no matter where you go, I will stay by your side." Xiao Die stood before the table, grabbing Shang Xin Ci’s hand and encouraging.

"Mm." Shang Xin Ci was moved and nodded, placing her palm on top of Xiao Die’s.

"Of course, if Missy can stay here, that would be the best. You know, this is Shang clan! Oh god, glory and wealth are all within arm’s reach. Zhang clan can’t even hold a candle to Shang clan, Missy!" Xiao Die made a wry face as she said.

"Oh you." Shang Xin Ci laughing speechlessly, feeling helpless against Xiao Die.

Xiao Die snickered. As her laughter infected Shang Xin Ci, it resolved the remaining grudge in her heart.

Shang Yan Fei walked out of the room, and his smile vanished completely.

He wore a black robe and had blood colored hair; a handsome face with eyes shining with cold light, he habitually tightened his lips together, showing off his determined and decisive personality.

He is Shang Yan Fei, this generation’s Shang clan leader!

He was cruel and ruthless. For the clan leader position, he forced two brothers and a sister to commit suicide.

He was resolute in killing, when he first got into power, a far away clan village thought that they were at a safe distance and attacked Shang clan’s caravan. He ignored all objections and expended much resources, to murder every single person in that village. He murdered all those who surrendered, and their skulls piled into a mountain, in front of those elders who first objected his decision to retaliate.

He held an iron rule, since he got into power, he consolidated his political strength, and practised nepotism , suppressing his competition. Quickly adding over a dozen external clan elders, he used only three years to transform the entire Shang clan higher up into his personal voice.

He had great vision, and talent for business. During his years in power, Shang clan’s caravan grew three times in size. Up to a hundred clans became Shang clan’s subordinates, and formed into a great hidden force.

He appointed people based on merits, even for his own children. There was fifteen Shang clan young master positions originally, but after his rule, he reduced it to ten.

What’s more rare, is his talent, having A grade aptitude, at the same time as he ruled the clan, his cultivation also rose as quickly, ahead of his peers, causing many to admire, hate and be jealous of him.

This is Shang Yan Fei, the man standing on top of the southern border’s mortal realm.

"This subordinate greets lord clan leader." A young female Gu Master bowed and paid respects.

"Tian Lan, from today onwards, you will take care of Missy Ci Er to the best of your efforts." Shang Yan Fei said coldly.

"This subordinate understands." The young girl nodded.

"When you are near her, pay great attention, and find out some information. Missy Ci Er might not like to speak, but her servants speaks without thinking, she is your easiest break through point, I want you to find out how exactly did they manage to come to Shang Liang mountain."

"Yes, this subordinates understands."

"Mm, go now."

"This subordinate takes her leave."

Tian Lan was an orphan adopted by Shang Yan Fei, she was loyal and could be trusted to use. Her ability to perform was great too, in just three days, she completed her mission.

"Hei Tu Bai Yun? Demonic Gu Masters..." Shang Yan Fei rubbed his chin: "If this is real, I have to thank the two of them well. But to prevent other possibilities, I have to investigate them more clearly."

Thinking of this, Shang Yan Fei summoned Wei Yang: "Go find these two, one is called Hei Tu, the other Bai Yun, one male and one female, both demonic Gu Masters, their facial features are as such..."

....

In third inner city.

"It has already been three days, have those two stayed in Nan Qiu garden the entire time?"

"Yes young master, from that day on, they stayed deep within. The most they did was to come out and buy some milk. This subordinate thinks those milk are for feeding the Gu worms."

"Damn it..." Shang Ya Zi gritted his teeth, his gaze was like a dagger that wanted to cut those two people into pieces.

The assessment was impending, among the ten young masters, he was at last place, if he does not get any business done, he would definitely be eliminated.

Shang Yan Fei had many children, but there are only ten young master positions.

Comparing ordinary children and young masters, their treatment were a world apart from each other. Young masters gathered attention, and could control one of Shang clan’s business, with unlimited glamor and fortune awaiting. Young clan leader was even more outstanding.

But if it were just ordinary children, then their treatment was no different than other clansmen.

Shang Ya Zi had already experienced the authority of a young master, asking him to go back to the ordinary lifestyle of the clansmen is akin to asking him to die!

Thus, he needed that inheritance.

Not just obtaining it, but also getting it at a low price.

Only when the price is low, will his profit be high.

But these two, Fang and Bai, were as stubborn as rocks, refusing to bow to him.

If this was the fourth or fifth inner city, he could use some extreme methods, and force them to submit. But now that they stayed in third inner city, Shang Ya Zi would not even dare to think of using force here.

"This cannot go on, they have time to waste, but I do not. It seems I have to go myself, hmph!"

Shang Ya Zi could not take it anymore, bringing his subordinates and arriving at Nan Qiu garden.

Nan Qiu garden was a residential area for esteemed guests to stay in.

In third inner city, there was no inns, only these small-sized gardens.

Staying here for a day requires thirty primeval stones, that is, three hundred for ten days, and nearly a thousand a month.

Nan Qiu garden’s price was still cheap among third inner city estates. Some large-sized gardens require a hundred primeval stones a day. For some special grade gardens, you cannot stay with just primeval stones, you needed the Shang clan token.

In Shang clan city, every acre of land is as valuable as gold, especially in third inner city where commodity prices are sky high.

Shang Ya Zi brought his people over to visit, as Fang and Bai were playing chess beside the lotus pond.

Shang Ya Zi snorted, saying in a taunting tone: "You two sure have great interests, why didn’t you go to other shops to ask these days?"

"What’s there to ask. Those who want to buy, will find their way here, am I right?" Fang Yuan laughed lightly.

"You!" Shang Ya Zi flew into a rage, Fang Yuan’s attitude was angering him.

He gritted his teeth, forcefully suppressing his emotions, raising his head and saying arrogantly: "I’m looking at the fact that you have it tough, I’ll make it five hundred thousand, are you happy now?"

"Five hundred thousand primeval stones? No deal. At least six hundred fifty." Fang Yuan glanced at Shang Ya Zi before turning back to the chessboard.

Shang Ya Zi’s eyes squinted into a thin line as he took a few steps towards Fang Yuan and threatened: "You two demonic Gu Masters, how dare you pretend! I’ve checked up on your backgrounds, you snatched this inheritance from Bai clan right? I heard you even killed Bai clan’s two young masters? You had better take the chance now and sell it quickly. I’ll tell you, these few days, a Tie clan group has already reached Shang Liang mountain, and are looking for your traces. What do you think will happen if I expose your information to them?"

"Oh? Go tell them then." Fang Yuan laughed heartily.

"You!" Shang Ya Zi pointed at Fang Yuan, unable to endure it anymore: "I’ll tell you, five hundred thousand is my greatest sincerity, other than selling it to me, what other choices do you have? None! This is my terrority, you had better understand your circumstances."

At this time, a light descended from the sky, and turned into a Gu Master.

This Gu Master looked around, before bowing slightly, saying towards Fang and Bai: "Sir Hei Tu and Lady Bai Yun, I am Wei Yang, as with clan leader’s orders, I am inviting both of you to the second inner city for a talk."

"Wh- what? Father wants to meet these two personally?!" Shang Ya Zi felt lightning strike him as his eyes stared widely, expressing his utter fear.

This is really bad!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Bad? Hehe...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Shang Ya Zi turned pale with fright.

His action of suppressing the price was against the rules. He would receive severe punishment were it to be discovered.

This was an organization.

Once you were in a high position, you needed to comply with the rules. The rules of a system was to ensure the benefits of the higher ups; despite many of the organizations advertising they represented the benefits of the majority, it was, for the most part, just a joke.

So the higher your position is, the more you needed to comply with the rules.

On the contrary, there was more corruption in the low-mid level positions.

After you reached a higher position, individual benefits had already become inseparably linked with the benefits of the organization; often, the benefits the organization received would represent your own benefits.

Shang Ya Zi could only be said to be a temporary higher up, many paid attention to him as one of the young masters of Shang Clan, but his real authority came from his father; he was just like rootless weed.

This also signified his punishment would be more harsh when he violated the rules because many people were watching him.

"This is not possible, I have already carefully investigated before I came, I even spent a large amount of primeval stones to buy information on these two from Feng Yu Manor. These two are clearly demonic Gu Masters and are also listed as wanted, they are stray dogs, why would lord father invite them?"

Shang Ya Zi felt this situation was incredibly unbelievable.

It was like the case of a rich person making things difficult for two beggars, when suddenly an imperial edict comes declaring that the emperor wanted to see these two beggars!

Shang Ya Zi was pressuring Fang Yuan because they were lone forces; oppressing them and finishing this affair in secrecy should have been absolutely safe and no one would know.

Naturally, there was bound to be some risks but Shang Ya Zi could only take that risk to protect his position as a young master.

"How could they have any relation to father when they don’t have any background? Damn it, has the world gone crazy? What do I do? If they disclose this matter, my young master position is finished! Should I kill them? No, this is just courting my own death. I don’t have any chance of doing anything in this third inner city, especially now that they have received father’s attention. The main thing is these two bastards, they are at rank three peak stage. How am I supposed to do anything in this situation?"

In a split second, thoughts processed like lightning in Shang Ya Zi’s mind, trying to think of countermeasures.

His eyes kept on moving about, and sweat was already starting to seep out of his forehead.

He had played with fire this time!

"Damn it, what do I do, what else is there?!" He was roaring with worry in his mind.

"Shang clan leader wants to see us? What for?" Fang Yuan timely showed his doubt.

Bai Ning Bing was even more puzzled.

What is going on?

She suspected this was Fang Yuan’s trick at first, and so glanced at Fang Yuan.

However, Fang Yuan also showed a puzzled expression which baffled her.

She couldn’t help but think: I have been with him all the time, he shouldn’t be able to conceal anything from me if he was up to something.

Moreover, what kind of person was Shang clan leader, he was high and above, standing at the peak of the mortals. No matter how proud Bai Ning Bing was, even she acknowledged Shang Yan Fei’s authority and power.

"Then why do I feel something amiss, as if I neglected something?"

Wei Yang laughed: "Rest assured, if Shang clan wanted to harm you guys, why would we make it so complicated? This is a friendly invitation, lord clan leader is very interested in you two."

"It is our honor to be able to receive the clan leader’s invitation. We will immediately go see him then." Fang Yuan threw the chess piece on his hand and stood up.

Shang Ya Zi felt even more worried and promptly said: "Six hundred fifty thousand primeval stones, let’s complete the deal!"

Fang Yuan glanced at him and smiled: "Sorry, I don’t intend to sell the secret recipe!"

Shang Ya Zi’s face turned deathly pale, his mouth felt parched and his gaze towards Fang Yuan even contained some vague imploring: "I was anxious and behaved rudely, please don’t take it to heart, esteemed guests. The price can be discussed, we can properly discuss it after you are back!"

Fang Yuan gave a shallow smile. He didn’t reply.

Who would discuss with you? But temporarily stabilizing this man could prevent him from taking desperate actions and reduce some trouble.

As he thought of this, Fang Yuan nodded: "If young master is sincere, then I will look forward to it."

Shang Ya Zi’s expression immediately relaxed and showed a grateful expression; it was like a person that was about to fall from a cliff suddenly found a tree to grab on to.

"Okay, I will wait for you." He promptly said.

"Esteemed guests, please." Wei Yang showed the way.

"Lead the way."

Following Wei Yang, Fang and Bai entered second inner city.

Bai Ning Bing had been anticipating the extravagant second inner city, but when she reached there, she was astonished and disappointed.

In the second inner city, buildings were made of stones and were very simple, even the fourth inner city was better than this.

But her expression soon turned grave as she realized the reason.

It is easy for the frugal to become extravagant, but very difficult for the extravagant to become frugal.

Shang clan’s riches were as high as a mountain but they scrupulously abided by living in a simple way. This was not because they were miserly, but to maintain the vigor of the clan.

Wei Yang led Fang and Bai to a private residence.

"Esteemed guests, you can have some fruits while you wait. Lord clan leader has just recently come out of closed door cultivation and is handling some matters. He will come here soon. This is clan leader’s private residence, please stay here and don’t casually move outside. I will take my leave now."

There was no one else in the house, Fang and Bai were left alone after Wei Yang’s departure.

The two waited for a whole six hours but did not see even a shadow. Wei Yang said they could eat fruits, but where were the fruits? Not even tea could be found!

During the first two hours, Fang Yuan calmly sat on a wide backed wooden chair.

During the next two hours, he could no longer sit calmly and started mumbling to himself, revealing his impatience.

By the sixth hour, he clearly revealed impatience and unease as he began to move to and fro in the house.

"Hmph, what the hell is this Shang clan leader doing? He wants us to wait for him, but where is he? He is too arrogant." Fang Yuan’s tone was angry as he paced around.

"Can you just sit down? My eyes are getting dizzy. Why not just cultivate peacefully?" Bai Ning Bing slightly frowned, this was not like Fang Yuan’s usual behavior.

"There is something fishy here, do you think it was really Shang clan leader who invited us?" Fang Yuan’s brows were tightly knitted together.

"How would I know? I was going to ask you that!" Bai Ning Bing rolled her eyes and puzzledly said, "Did you do something wrong and offended Shang clan?"

Fang Yuan snorted: "You have been with me all the time and you still can’t understand me? There is no one in this private residence, I am not able to be at ease here. Let’s go out and take a look at the situation!"

Bai Ning Bing thought for a little while and stood up: "Alright."

Fang and Bai walked out of the house, the courtyard wasn’t big and there was also nothing strange.

At the same time, in first inner city.

Inside a study, colorful smoke curled up and rose in front of Shang Yan Fei, showing the real time view of Fang and Bai.

"Wei Yang, what do you think of these two?" Shang Yan Fei asked his trusted aide.

Wei Yang mumbled: "The way I see it, these two are indeed demonic Gu Masters. From the information we collected, they are young but have rank three peak stage cultivation, their innate talents should be extraordinary. Among those two, Hei Tu is rather frank and is kind of rash; Bai Yun seems to have deep thoughts and should be very shrewd. Hei Tu, Bai Yun... these names should be fake."

"Mm, your analysis isn't bad. In that case, you will be in charge of interacting with them for these few days. Test their abilities and closely follow them." Shang Yan Fei finished speaking and put away the colorful smoke.

He was only worried about Shang Xin Ci and showed little interest towards Fang and Bai.

The small test just now gave him a basic understanding towards the temperament of these two. And combining it with the intelligence he received, he more or less had a general impression.

Not all demonic Gu Masters were demented people.

These two guys could be considered decent, and maybe it was because they were young, he could clearly sense their lofty character.

People who had principles were often lofty and unyielding.

First impression was important, Shang Yan Fei honestly felt Fang and Bai were quite good. But he was a prudent person, anyone who could sit stably at a position like his were all prudent.

He was waiting, waiting for the people he sent to investigate the truth to come back and confirm everything, then he could rest easy.

"Alright, handle this properly, you can leave now." Shang Yan Fei waved his hands, then he took out the top document from the tall pile of documents in the study.

He had only been in closed cultivation for half a month, and the work had piled up so much already.

...

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing made a round in the private residence, there really was no one else.

The two were hesitating whether to go out to check the situation when Wei Yang appeared before them.

"Two esteemed guests, lord clan leader is very busy with work and is not able to leave right now. We can only cancel this meeting." He looked like he was sincerely apologizing.

"What? We come and leave according to your whims?" Fang Yuan was indignant.

Bai Ning Bing was silent and expressionless.

Wei Yang smiled: "You two are our esteemed guests, why would Shang clan chase away their esteemed guests? Lord clan leader especially had asked me to attend to you as an apology. I have already arranged for a banquet in Shi Tian restaurant, please give me the honor of hosting."

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing glanced at each other, then Fang Yuan said: "Just in time, we are also hungry, let's go fill our stomachs first."

Shi Tian restaurant was one of the best restaurants in Shang clan city and occupied a great amount of space in the third inner city. The decorations were elegant, and its dishes sumptuous. Its chefs were specialized Gu Masters who used special Gu worms to help in cooking delicacies that couldn't be matched by ordinary methods.

A typical meal here would last over four hours and more; there were over a hundred type of dishes, each with their own characteristics. Their top quality wine also left a rich aftertaste.

Bai Ning Bing didn’t eat much and kept on worrying about Shang clan leader’s invitation. She tried to get answers from Wei Yang indirectly at the banquet, but Wei Yang was a cautious guy too and kept his mouth closed.

On the contrary, Fang Yuan ate with gusto, with oil marks around his mouth. He also drank heavily and began to kick up a racket, his resentment and indignance from just before seemed to have completely disappeared.

Wei Yang looked at Fang Yuan who was drinking directly from the wine jar and then looked at Bai Ning Bing who was only drinking water; he instantly felt Fang Yuan, this ugly guy, was much more adorable.

After the banquet was over, Wei Yang dropped the two off at Nan Qiu garden.

Wei Yang left his parting words: "Take a good rest tonight, I will come look for you tomorrow and take you sightseeing around the Shang clan city."

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Our adorable MC is expanding his harem... in the opposite direction :) (I’m joking)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

On the second day.

As expected, Wei Yang came to Nan Qiu garden and brought Fang and Bai to tour Shang clan city.

"Our Shang clan city is number one in the southern border in terms of size. Shang clan has operated here for thousands of years, transforming the entire Shang Liang mountain. Here, there are over ten thousand shops, and hundreds of thousands of people."

"Both of you have not eaten yet, I’ll bring you to a famous breakfast shop, please follow me."

Fang and Bai followed Wei Yang, along the stone pillar and descended.

After three layers, they came to a shop, called Early Spring.

Thousand layer agate cake, crab roe bun, golden field pancake, snow porridge...

"Shang clan city, from inner to outer, has first, second, third, fourth, fifth and outer city. If they were classified even more clearly, there are many zones as well, food zone, gambling rocks zone, caretaking zone, red-light zone and others." Wei Yang introduced.

...

"This is the culinary zone, with many restaurants mostly owned by Gu Master chefs. The delicacies are endless."

...

"This is the caretaking zone, most Gu Masters have excessive Gu worms, so they place them here for caretaking. The price is determined by situations, but ordinarily, a rank one Gu costs eighty primeval stones a month.

...

"This is the Gu fighting zone, this place is solely for Gu fights, Gu Masters cannot interfere, and can only control their Gu. If you two have appropriate Gu worms, you can give it a try."

...

"This is the red-light zone, having the most number of brothels in the entire Shang clan city. Many Gu Masters come here to relax. You two have come here through the caravan, you must know the immense pressure during the journey. Here you can find women, men, and even Gu Masters. Are the two of you interested?"

...

As Wei Yang brought them around, Bai Ning Bing gained much insight to this world.

Shang clan city is bustling and flourishing, causing many to have lingering memories even after they leave.

A day’s time is too short, while Shang clan city is too huge, even if the three used horse carriages to travel, they cannot even cover one percent of the entire city.

On the third day, Wei Yang came over again to attend to Fang and Bai.

"This is the substitute refinement zone. You are both Gu Masters, you naturally understand the difficulties in refining Gu. To us, what we fear most is encountering a strong-willed wild Gu worm during refinement, or a Gu that an expert had left behind. The higher the rank of the Gu, the harder it is to refine. Back in the day, Empress Wu Ji spent eleven years just to refine a rank five dragon strength Gu. Thus, substitute refinement is a necessity, and has always been in the market."

...

"This is the auction zone, every day there will be a small scale auction held here, every two weeks there will be a mid scale auction, and at the end of every month, there will be a large scale auction. Most items that appear on the auction are rare and coveted."

...

"This is the battle zone, with over eighty battle stages. This place is always the most popular! There are single battle stages, for Gu Masters to experiment and practise using their Gu worms. There are dual battle stages for Gu Masters to exchange pointers, and even multi-battle stages, to experience multiple enemies at once."

Just as Wei Yang had said, the battle stages were the most popular place in Shang clan city.

The place was chaotic and noisy, as human traffic stayed high, rank three Gu Masters could be seen everywhere.

"Big brother Wei, why are you here?" From among the crowd, a young man saw Wei Yang and immediately called out, walking briskly towards him.

This man was about twenty seven or eight years old, having a common face but gave off a strong aura.

"Little Xiao, I heard you fought your way into third inner city. Good job!" Wei Yang patted the young man’s shoulders, encouraging.

"Yes, I recently advanced to rank three middle stage, and my fighting strength improved as well. Come to think of it, I have to thank you for all your guidance, or I would have never made it this far." The young man earnestly thanked.

"You have good talent lad, you could do it even without me, You are not thirty yet, but you have already reached rank three middle stage, that is much more impressive than me back then, haha." Wei Yang laughed and said.

The young man gave Wei Yang an admiring gaze: "Big brother Wei Yang, how can I compare to you. You were only rank three middle stage back then, and already dominated the third inner city. At twenty five, you got the attention of the lord clan leader and was recruited. Now, you are already a clan elder, just look at Shang clan, how many external clan elders are there in total?"

"As long as you work hard, you can do it too." Wei Yang encouraged the young man.

Soon after, he turned around, and explained to Fang and Bai: "The battle zone is one of the ways Shang clan recruit outside talents. Back then, I fought my way from the fifth inner city’s battle zone all the way to third inner city, and stayed on the stage for eighteen consecutive rounds before being recruited by lord clan leader."

Back then, Shang Yan Fei was still not the clan leader.

After becoming his trusted aide, Wei Yang was also successfully promoted to an external clan elder after Shang Yan Fei got into power.

Bai Ning Bing suddenly realized.

No wonder the battle zone was so popular.

Shang clan’s enterprise was huge, and they needed manpower in many areas. Just relying on their clansmen would be difficult to handle the entire situation. The many generations of Shang clan young masters would definitely recruit a number of demonic Gu Masters for their own use.

If the young master that supported these demonic Gu Masters became the clan leader, then the demonic Gu Masters under them would likely become an external clan elder, enjoying the treatment of a clan elder.

Gu Master’s cultivation required lots of resources. Many demonic Gu Masters did not have a stable source of resources from their clans, and were often poor. Only by relying on a clan could they better survive.

Wei Yang was a successful example.

In Shang clan city’s battle zone, there are large numbers of demonic Gu Masters. In order to join the Shang clan, and become part of the righteous path, to become someone like Wei Yang, they had to compete as they fought their way up to the top.

"Battle stage, this place is filled with memories, guests, would you like to have a spar with me?" Wei Yang suddenly suggested.

"Big brother Wei is going on the stage?" Little Xiao suddenly became excited, his eyes gleaming.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing looked at each other.

"Alright, then let me experience it." Fang Yuan had expected Shang clan to probe into this, thus he went with the flow.

"Big brother Wei, you don’t come here often, this place has been remodelled many times, let me lead the way." Little Xiao volunteered.

Wei Yang nodded: "Okay."

Little Xiao asked: "Brother Wei, what field do you want, forest, mountain, wilderness, or desert, lake?"

Wei Yang turned around, asking for Fang and Bai’s opinion: "Let our two esteemed guests choose."

Some Gu Masters specialized in mountain battles, some specialized in desert battles, the battle environment was an important element in affecting battle results.

"We can choose different stages here? What fields do you have?" Bai Ning Bing asked curiously.

Little Xiao heard Wei Yang address Fang and Bai as esteemed guests, and did not dare to drag on, quickly explaining to them.

The battle stages in the third inner city had around tens of different environments, almost encompassing all kinds of terrain that one could possible be in.

After hearing so, Bai Ning Bing could not help but have an urge to try: "Then let’s choose the flagstone stage."

Flagstone stage, the most common battle stage, without any wind, snow, rain or sand as natural elements.

The specialized black flagstone, covered over a hundred meters of land.

"Quickly look, it seems to be elder Wei Yang."

"It is elder Wei Yang, that’s him."

"Although he has B grade aptitude, he was a successful story that left the battle stage, back then, I even competed with him."

...

Wei Yang seemed to be popular as his appearance on the battle stage attracted many people’s attention.

But Wei Yang kept a low profile, using his clan elder authority to seal this battle stage, preventing outsiders from watching.

Only Little Xiao was left.

Wei Yang walked to the center of the stage: "According to normal rules, both sides of the competitors have to announce their cultivation, before assessing it fairly. But since we are just having a casual spar, we shall skip that. Please, have the first move."

What he meant was he wanted to challenge both Fang and Bai single handedly.

Little Xiao stood outside the stage, gripping his fist in excitement: "Big brother Wei won as the weaker side back then, using his rank three middle stage cultivation to dominate the stage, and guarding eighteen rounds of battle. Almost every fight was a classic, now that he is rank three peak stage, I have to observe this battle carefully!"

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing gave each other a look, before suddenly attacking, moving towards Wei Yang from the left and right respectively.

"Going for close combat?" Wei Yang stood at the center, not moving as his body glowed in a golden light, forming a battle armor, protecting his entire body.

Pew pew pew

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing activated their spiral bone spear Gu as they charged towards Wei Yang.

Multiple bone spears spun as they penetrated the air, shooting towards Wei Yang.

"What Gu is this?" Wei Yang was confused in his mind, this was the first time he saw the bone spear Gu.

He did not dodge, intending to test out the power of the spiral bone spear Gu, and took three hits.

The light golden armor flickered, but managed to endure the hits.

"This Gu is not bad, having a spiral force and is good at penetrating defenses." Wei Yang did not fluster, utilizing his primeval essence and causing the light armor to regain its toughness.

"My turn!" He lightly shouted, grabbing the air with both hands, as two broadswords of light formed from this air, shining brilliantly.

"It appeared, big brother Wei’s broadsword light Gu!" Little Xiao saw this, and spoke out in excitement.

Wei Yang grabbed the two broadswords, sweeping his gaze and choosing to charge at Fang Yuan.

"Broadsword light Gu and sword shadow Gu are known as the strongest attacking Gu among the rank three Gu worms..." Seeing Wei Yang approaching, Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with a sharp flash.

Even though the broadsword light Gu was strong, he was not afraid.

Jumping grass.

Two spring-like grass appeared on his feet, as he stepped on the ground and after gathering energy, Fang Yuan’s speed increased drastically.

Canopy Gu, flying bone shield.

Fang Yuan’s body shone with a white armor, and three white bone shields surrounded his body, circling continuously around his front, left, back and right.

"Good timing." Wei Yang shouted, as he rushed to Fang Yuan, slamming both of his broadswords from above, intending to strike.

Fang Yuan did not dodge or avoid, raising his right fist and smashing right at it.

Wei Yang’s eyes shone with surprise, not expecting Fang Yuan to fight so bravely.

Two broadswords of light slammed down, as the white bone shields automatically blocked it.

The broadswords cut the white bone shields into halves, before landing on the white armor of the canopy Gu, giving off a strong white light.

At the same time, Fang Yuan’s fist his Wei Yang’s stomach.

Although he did not break the light golden armor, the huge force sent Wei Yang flying.

Bai Ning Bing rushed up at the crucial moment, waving her hand as multiple spiral bone spear Gu shot towards Wei Yang.

The attack was ruthless and decisive, with the intention of sending Wei Yang to his grave.

"Ah, danger!" Seeing this, Little Xiao screamed out.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Here, there’s a choice between sabre/saber, broadsword, and chinese dao. For those curious, just google chinese broadsword, it’s that kind of sword. If you know a perfect translation for it, do let me know in the comments. Thanks.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Wei Yang was sent flying by Fang Yuan’s fist, and before he stabilized himself, spiral bone spears came flying from above.

The spiral bone spears penetrated the air, shooting like lightning with a crisp sound.

At such a distance, Wei Yang could even see the spiral carvings on the bone spear tip.

"These spiral bone spear Gu, although strong and are able to penetrate defenses, are only rank two Gu worms, there is no threat in them." At that instant, Wei Yang’s thoughts moved like lightning.

Bai Ning Bing’s blue eyes were cold as ice, Wei Yang challenging both of them at the same time triggered the arrogance in her heart.

"Spiral bone spear can only restrict him, I don’t have enough Gu, if I want to finish him, i’ll need to use my fists and legs!"

She was a genius.

When Fang Yuan sent Wei Yang flying, although it was just one hit, it showed Bai Ning Bing his weakness.

Wei Yang had never received a permanent strength boost from any Gu worms, he only had the strength of a normal human.

This was a major weakness that could be exploited.

Bai Ning Bing took many steps ahead, following after the bone spears and raising her leg to kick harshly.

"Brother Wei..." Little Xiao who was watching the match saw this scene and started to worry.

If Wei Yang’s movements were restricted by the bone spears, it would give Bai Ning Bing a chance to strike. At the same time, if Fang Yuan cornered him, Wei Yang would be in a disadvantage!

"Hehehe." At the final moment, Wei Yang laughed.

As the spiral bone spear was about to hit him, suddenly, his body shone in a white light, and he turned into a flash and vanished.

"He had this Gu indeed..." Fang Yuan squinted.

"What quick speed!" Bai Ning Bing’s pupils shrunk, feeling astonished.

At the next second, the spiral bone spears pierced through the flagstone, stabbing into the ground.

Bai Ning Bing could not stop her momentum, with a ’bang’, her leg crushed the flagstone. The spider web-like cracks enveloped the ground.

"Big brother Wei’s rainbow light Gu! I thought he might not use it in time, but to think he was waiting for that moment to escape, causing his enemies to hit nothing. Superb, this is a strong blow against the enemy’s psychology." Little Xiao could tell the intentions of his actions.

Seeing that they were about to gravely injure their enemy, an escape at the last moment would turn hope into disappointment, anyone would experience this change of emotion.

Rainbow light tore through the air, as the light dispersed, Wei Yang’s body appeared again.

In the blink of an eye, he flew over fifty meters, more than half the battle stage, pulling great distance from Fang and Bai.

Seeing such speed, Bai Ning Bing’s footsteps came to a halt.

With the rainbow light Gu, Wei Yang could come and go as he pleases, fighting whenever he wants to, at this point, it was impossible for him to lose.

Rainbow light Gu was a rank three Gu, capable of allowing a Gu Master to turn into light and escape, it was the fastest among the rank three movement Gu!

In contrast, Fang Yuan only had the jumping grass, while the other had no movement Gu. With Wei Yang’s speed, they had no chance of hitting him.

In terms of movement, the rainbow light Gu gave Wei Yang a huge advantage, once this Gu was used, Fang and Bai could work together but still fall into a passive state.

"Guests, this is the rainbow light Gu, although it is rank three, its speed far surpasses many rank four Gu. The speed is so fast even the Gu Master cannot react in time, that is the first weakness. To use it, one has to use the lightning thoughts Gu or a flash of inspiration Gu, or others. Otherwise, by the time the Gu Master reacts, they would’ve flown too far and even crashed into a wall."

Wei Yang spoke, admitting the flaws of the rainbow light Gu.

"Its second weakness, is that it expends too much primeval essence. Among rank three Gu, this expenditure is already middle-high tier consumption. There is a third weakness, but I shall not mention it, you can guess for yourselves."

"Is that the fact that you cannot use a strength Gu to raise your physical strength?" Bai Ning Bing immediately answered.

This time, it was Wei Yang’s turn to express shock.

He gave a look of amazement: "Miss Bai Yun really has great cognitive abilities, indeed, if a Gu Master uses a Gu worm to alter their body, and increase their strength, it will be difficult to utilize the rainbow light Gu. Their primeval essence expenditure will increase drastically, or worse, the light transformation might fail and the rainbow light Gu would be destroyed."

But to think, after Bai Ning Bing heard his praise, her expression turned cold as her gaze was like ice, staring at Wei Yang with killing intent: "Hey, let me warn you, do not call me Miss!"

"Eh?" Wei Yang’s expression froze: What did I say wrong? Is it wrong to use the word ’Miss’? What a strange taboo.

Wei Yang thought in his heart, as he apologised: "I’m sorry for the offense, Lady Bai Yun..."

Veins popped on Bai Ning Bing’s forehead, as she gritted her teeth: "Do not use that either!"

"Oh, then... Sir Bai Yun?" Wei Yang observed her expression as he carefully chose his vocabulary.

Bai Ning Bing’s face finally returned to normal.

Wei Yang’s lips curled into a smile, continuing: "Then two sirs, it is my turn to attack."

"Give me all you’ve got!" Fang Yuan patted his chest, screaming and scaring Bai Ning Bing who was right beside him.

"Sir Hei Tu is truly brave and admirable, then take my hit." Wei Yang praised, as he spoke, he turned into a white light and crashed towards Fang and Bai.

Facing such speed, Fang and Bai could not even blink before this rainbow went through the gap between them and arrived behind them.

The white light dispersed, and turned back into Wei Yang.

He held two broadswords, and slashed them towards Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing respectively.

Before this broadsword hit, Bai Ning Bing felt her skin tighten. She immediately knew that the ice muscles’ protection could not endure this blade, and she quickly retreated.

Fang Yuan growled lightly, not dodging but activating the canopy Gu and flying bone shield Gu, sending his fist over.

The light broadsword first split the white bone shield into half.

Wei Yang turned into light and fled again.

Seeing his fist about to land on Wei Yang’s chest, Fang Yuan was just an inch away before missing entirely.

The rainbow light flew away, and stopped far away.

The entire exchange of blows was done at lightning speed.

In less than a few seconds, Wei Yang had moved from a side of the battle stage to another, over a hundred meters long.

"Again!" Fang Yuan howled, battle intent burning in his eyes.

Wei Yang turned into light again, appearing before Fang and Bai in an instant.

Bai Ning Bing could not endure it head-on, she could only use the spiral bone spear but Wei Yang’s speed was too fast, causing her bone spears to hit air.

Fang Yuan could only endure the hits passively, other than the first time, his fist never hit Wei Yang again.

At once, light flashed across the battle stage continuously, like a bouncing ball trapped in a box. Meanwhile, Fang and Bai could barely take the hits, having completely lost their momentum.

"Is this big brother Wei’s true power? Too impressive..." Little Xiao observed the chaotic sight before him.

Wei Yang’s speed was terrific, like a specter moving in the shadows.

After a few more minutes, he stopped his movements: "If both guests want to compete in terms of expenditure, and are trying to exploit the weakness of my rainbow light Gu which consumes massive amounts of primeval essence, I am afraid you are going to be disappointed. I have a light source Gu in my hand, it is an assistance type Gu whose only use is to allow a Gu Master’s primeval essence expenditure to be halved when using a light type Gu."

"Damn it..." Bai Ning Bing clenched her teeth in anger.

Fang Yuan waved his hand about: "No more, I can’t win. Brother Wei, we concede."

Wei Yang laughed heartily, cupping his fists: "It has been an honor."

Little Xiao seeing the battle ended, immediately came over, with excitement still lingering on his face: "Big brother Wei is truly impressive, but both sirs managing to endure so long is equally impressive. You may not know, but brother Wei has superior battle skills even though he is rank three peak stage. He is Lord Shang Yan Fei’s third general, called the White Light Swordsman. If it was me, I would not even be able to exchange twenty blows with him."

"A loss is a loss, there is no big deal. Wei Yang, after I get my hands on suitable Gu worms, i will challenge you once again." Bai Ning Bing’s expression was icy cold, from young, the arrogant her had never lost so badly, her mood was obviously terrible.

Little Xiao seeing Bai Ning Bing address Wei Yang by his name, showed displeasure on his face.

Fang Yuan stood at the side: "Brother Wei Yang held back already, I can feel it. Heh, after I buy some useful Gu, I will spar with you again. Although I lost this time, I am still indignant! Next time, please use your full strength, do not worry about the consequences."

"Hahaha, brother Hei Tu speaks his mind. It is my fault this time, next time I will definitely use my full ability." Wei Yang patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder.

"That’s the way. Brother Wei Yang, I accept my loss completely, let me treat you to some wine. Brother Xiao, you can come along too, and tell me about brother Wei’s heroic tales. I can only beat him after learning all about him right." Fang Yuan laughed.

Little Xiao felt that this person, although ugly and lacked a ear, was very pleasant to look at.

Compared to that freak "Bai Yun’, his temper was way better.

"Alright!" Little Xiao laughed: "Fighting made us closer, I know a restaurant, newly opened, cheap, and also serves good food. We cannot make our guests pay, let me treat tonight, I hope big brother Wei can come too!"

Fang Yuan stared: "How can we do that?"

"Little Xiao is a local, while you two are guests, let him treat." Wei Yang came in to advice.

Fang Yuan thought about it: "Okay, this time you will treat, but let me do it next time! I don’t have money with me anyway, after I sell my recipe and get money, I will treat you two to a good meal. To speak the truth, after coming here, I have been shocked by the commodity prices."

His words were a little cheeky, and also admitted that he was poor, causing Wei Yang and Little Xiao to laugh, thinking that Fang Yuan was a clear and upright man.

Only Bai Ning Bing knew Fang Yuan’s acting skills, seeing this, she was used to it already.

In the room, the three drank wine and spoke, announcing their names, pulling their relationships closer together.

Only Bai Ning Bing drank water, being alone and enjoying her peace.

Little Xiao was called Xiao Yan, twenty seven years old, specializing in fire type Gu worms. Recently his cultivation rose by a small realm, to rank three middle stage, thus finally breaking through the fourth inner city’s battle zone and reaching third inner city.

"Hei Tu Bai Yun are just fake names, my real name is Gu Yue Fang Zheng, she is Bai Ning Bing." Fang Yuan pretended to be drunk and exposed some information.

They had the Bai clan arrest warrant, as long as Shang clan investigated, the matter could not be kept secret. Fang Yuan gave it away on purpose, to give off the impression of having a clear conscience.

Xiao Yan was a little moved.

He and Wei Yang were demonic Gu Masters, Fang Yuan telling them his "real name" , was an act of "true friendship".

"Surname Gu Yue..." Light flashed across Wei Yang’s eyes, this was an important information. It seems that the mission given by the clan leader has been successfully completed.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Or has it?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Gu Yue Fang Zheng?" Listening to Wei Yang’s report, Shang Yan Fei frowned slightly.

Gu Yue was a distinct surname, Shang Yan Fei searched through his memories and soon found it.

"Gu Yue Clan, one of the three clans of Qing Mao mountain, having hundreds of years of history. Qing Mao mountain..." Shang Yan Fei’s gaze brightened as he recalled an intel he got over half a year ago.

Qing Mao mountain was mysteriously attacked and within a night, changed from a green and lively mountain to a deadly domain of ice and snow.

Even till now, the ice and snow on Qing Mao mountain had yet to completely melt. No one knew what happened at Qing Mao mountain, but from all kinds of traces found there, people knew there had been a huge battle between Gu Masters.

Now, Qing Mao mountain’s destruction was classified as a mysterious event and was already spread all over the southern border. As to what caused this, opinions differed from people to people.

However, to certain people, the traces left on Qing Mao mountain made it obvious. The secret of the ten extreme physiques was more or less known to the higher ups of the Gu Master world.

The moment he got this intel, Shang Yan Fei had also immediately guessed this was brought upon by one of the ten extreme physiques, Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique.

"If that is the case, Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s origins can be explained. The group sent to investigate the incident on Mu Bei mountain also sent a letter saying there was no suspicious point."

Shang Yan Fei drew up an approximate outline of the whole affairs in his mind.

"Now, there is only one doubt remaining. Why did they conceal their identities and hide in the caravan?"

Shang Yan Fei already had many conjectures, but it still needed to be investigated.

"Right, you sparred with them, how were their skills?" Shang Yan Fei asked.

Wei Yang’s expression was solemn as he respectfully reported: "Geniuses! Given time, these two will definitely surpass me."

"Oh, you have such a high opinion of them?" Shang Yan Fei was slightly amazed.

We Yang nodded and continued: "They might be concealing their cultivation with some Gu worms, but being able to last so long in battle, they should at least be rank three. Considering their young age, these two should both have A grade aptitude."

Shang Yan Fei smiled: "But Wei Yang, A grade aptitude only represents talent and not everything. You, yourself, are the best proof of this. You have only B grade aptitude but have become one of my external elders. Furthermore, how many A grade talents have died in your hands over these years?"

In ordinary clans, A grade aptitude was an extraordinary matter.

However, to Shang Clan, they were rather common.

One reason was because it was a large clan and there were many clansmen. Another was because they recruited demonic Gu Masters, those demonic Gu Masters who distinguished themselves in battle arena definitely had extraordinary aptitudes. And the third reason was because Shang Clan’s riches were as high as a mountain, they had the ability to purchase aptitude changing Gu worms.

"You praise me too much, lord clan leader." Wei Yang modestly said and continued, "I also understand this logic, thus I am even more sure these two are extraordinary."

"They have rich combat talents and have a sort of innate sense towards the battle situation, as if they were born to fight. They also did not have a complete set of Gu worms, but they were able to last for so long just with two to three Gu, it truly was amazing."

"As to their disposition, they were tough and were not discouraged when disadvantaged. When I exerted pressure on them, they were able to make a breakthrough and constantly adjust themselves, they also have tacit and great teamwork. As the battle continued, they were able to hold their ground even more stably, their improvement was extremely clear."

"Individually, the two have some differences. Gu Yue Fang Zheng is straightforward, charging forward with incomparable bravery and has a lofty disposition. As for that Bai Ning Bing, she is quick-witted with a sharp gaze and only moves when she is sure of it, she had been constantly trying to find my weakness during the battle. In particular, Gu Yue Fang Zheng admitted his loss calmly when I said I possessed a light source Gu, he is broad-minded and absolutely has a larger heart than any ordinary man."

"Lord clan leader, these two; one is a young tiger of the lands while the other is a dragon whelp of the seas . One Yang and one Yin, one domineering and another scheming; a perfect combination, the brilliance of twin stars, each enhancing the other’s strength. If we can recruit them, it will be a huge asset to Shang Clan!"

Shang Yan Fei was moved.

Before, he did not put Fang and Bai in his eyes, now his interest was greatly aroused as he listened to Wei Yang.

"Wei Yang, you have followed me for many years, I trust in your foresight. But there is no need to undervalue yourself, they might not necessarily be able to top you even after they grow up. You are hindered by lacking aptitude, otherwise with your talent, you would be even more outstanding than now. There is no need to worry, if a reform Gu appear, I will definitely help you get it."

Reform Gu could raise a Gu Master’s aptitude; it was extremely rare and expensive.

Wei Yang’s eyes turned red with emotions: "I won’t forget this kindness for as long as I live!"

"I, Shang Yan Fei, will never treat my loyal followers unfairly. Leave now, continue attending to them for a few days and see what they think about Shang Clan and whether we can recruit them or not."

"Yes, clan leader!"

...

In a blink of an eye, three days passed.

Nan Qiu garden.

In the lounge, Fang Yuan and Shang Ya Zi was sitting opposite each other.

Fang Yuan leisurely tasted the tea while Shang Ya Zi’s expression looked rather unsightly.

"These few days, I have been sincerely coming to look for sir, but you have been raising your price again and again. First it was six hundred and fifty thousand, but you have raised it by tens of thousand every day and now sir actually wants eight hundred thousand! Is sir possibly playing with me to pass time?" Shang Ya Zi was feeling stifled and talked with clenched teeth.

If it was before, he would have already burst out in anger and smashed the tea cup on Fang Yuan’s face.

But now, he could not do that.

Why?

Because this guy could directly complain to the clan leader!

I still don’t know what relation they have with lord father! These days, Wei Yang has been accompanying them around the city. What kind of person was Wei Yang? He is known as the third general and is lord father’s trusted aide! His actions don’t usually represent himself, but rather lord father’s will! But why is lord father giving such deferential treatment to these two guys that appeared out of nowhere?

Shang Ya Zi was bothered and bewildered.

Since that day, he had been crazily investigating the two.

But it was in vain.

He was merely a young master, his authority was limited to Shang clan city. He was far from having the huge capability of Shang Yan Fei.

The investigations bore no fruits, so he was forced to make guesses.

Why is lord father expressing his goodwill? Is it because of the inheritance in their hands? No, an inheritance might interest an ordinary clan, but not ours. Unless it is the inheritance of a rank six Gu Immortal, it would just be icing on the cake.

Or is it because they were talents? No way, there are so many loyal demonic Gu Masters in the battle stage, they would die to join Shang clan, and are extremely skilled in fighting. If father is not interested in those people, why would he want these two?

No matter how he thought about it, Shang Ya Zi could not think of an answer.

When these two guesses were rejected, a thought emerged in Shang Ya Zi’s mind.

Are these two father’s illegitimate child? Isn’t Shang Tuo Hai, the current young clan leader, father’s illegitimate child?

Shang Ya Zi pondered it again and felt that it couldn’t be.

The implication of being father’s bloodline is too great; when Shang Tuo Hai was discovered, he was firmly protected and safeguarded, unlike the these two.

Shang Ya Zi kept on agonizing over this but could not make progress.

And it was because of this, he was even more afraid of Fang and Bai. The most terrifying things were often the unknown.

Fang Yuan could tell this young master Shang Ya Zi was becoming more and more restless and impatient over these few days.

This was what he wanted to see.

This was also one of the reasons he was intentionally raising the prices every day.

If he directly raised six hundred and fifty thousand to eight hundred thousand, the negotiations would definitely collapse. But by raising the price by tens of thousands time and again, it would instead wear down Shang Ya Zi’s resistance in his firm resolute heart.

The time was ripe.

Fang Yuan placed the teacup down and smiled: "Everything has their worth. This might only be a Gu Master’s inheritance to others, but to you, esteemed young master, it is the final hope to protect your young master status."

"As such, the price should be a little higher, and as the evaluation date draws closer, the price for this inheritance will naturally keep on getting higher. Thus, I have been increasing the price every other day, isn’t this something natural?"

"Hehe, if the price is lowered, how could it be worthy of your final hope? How could it be worthy of such an important position as Shang Clan’s young master? After all, only Shang Clan young masters can compete for young clan leader’s position."

Shang Ya Zi’s eyes shook with anger.

This was blatant blackmailing, this guy was raising the price as he pleased!

How could he be so shameless?

Shang Ya Zi wished he could chop Fang Yuan into pieces. But he thought of the position of young master and was able to barely restrain himself: "You are really scheming. If I spend eight hundred thousand, it will be a complete loss and will instead lower my evaluation. Those elders in charge of evaluation are not stupid! Thus, I simply can’t buy it at this price."

Fang Yuan had already expected this answer; the corner of his lips slightly curled up into a smile: "Therefore, I have a good solution. I will be openly selling it to you in six hundred and fifty thousand, but you will actually be giving me eight hundred thousand. You will maintain your young master’s position and I will be getting a reasonable price, it is a complete win-win situation."

Shang Ya Zi’s expression immediately changed and stared at Fang Yuan with wide eyes:"You want me to make a false account? This is impossible! If I am found out, no matter when, my young master’s status will be revoked and moreover, I will receive a severe punishment."

Fang Yuan gave a frivolous look: "You can’t say that. Who said anything about false account? I am only selling the secret recipe to you, and you feeling that I am an upright man, kindly gave me some primeval stones as a gift. There is simply no relation between the two!"

At that instance, Shang Ya Zi could only look at Fang Yuan, stupefied and speechless.

He had previously thought Fang Yuan was shameless, but now saw that he had greatly underestimated this guy’s shamelessness!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

He is so righteous and inspirational that you are giving him primeval stones as a gift. No issues there.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Shang Ya Zi left worriedly.

Before he left, he told Fang Yuan, that this matter was important and he needed more time to consider it.

But, the fact that he was considering it meant that success was near.

Fang Yuan had seen through this person, knowing that the matter is as good as decided. In fact, he could even raise the prices again when the time comes.

Right now, he was hesitant, so Fang Yuan could not use prices to agitate him.

Once he is determined, hehe, then the prices will soar again, that is simply too easy.

Two days later, Shang Ya Zi carried a haggard expression as he visited Fang Yuan again.

"I agree, let’s deal according to what you have requested!" He gritted his teeth, after showing a hesitant expression for a long time, he finally relented.

"Trust me, you will definitely remember this decision! Come, drink." Fang Yuan smiled lightly, pouring a glass of wine for Shang Ya Zi.

Shang Ya Zi raised his cup, drinking the wine in one mouthful.

"What sort of shitty wine is this!" After drinking it, he frowned and scolded.

"This is the cheapest rice wine. Lord young master, I have no money to purchase good wine." Fang Yuan laughed lightly.

"You will have it soon enough. Puff ..." Shang Ya Zi breathed out heavily.

He had first thought about it, and as he concentrated on making a decision, it was a painful process. But now that he has decided, he felt relaxed.

"Alright, I have prepared the agreement, take a look." Fang Yuan brought over a proposal.

Shang Ya Zi glanced at it, and stared in anger, his eyes wide with rage as he slammed the table and screamed: "Nine hundred and fifty thousand? You raised the prices again! Last time, you said eight hundred thousand, but it has only been a few days and you raised it by a hundred and fifty thousand?! Do you think I'm made of gold? Scoundrel! You think my primeval stones fall from the sky?!"

Fang Yuan smiled lightly as he said calmly: "It has already been three days, of course the prices increased, you know it yourself."

Shang Ya Zi's forehead was popping with veins, as he jumped from his seat: "Do you think I am easy to bully? I do not have so much money! This tiny little inheritance, you want nine hundred and fifty? You are like a lion opening its huge mouth 1 !"

"Calm down, anger will harm your health, lord young master, this is not a tiny inheritance, it concerns your young master position. Think about it, every year, one young master will be eliminated. How many people are craving for this spot?" Fang Yuan said casually.

Once he heard the young master position, the furious Shang Ya Zi lost his rage.

Fang Yuan looked at his expression, knowing that nine hundred and fifty was over his limit, and relented: "Alright, alright, then how about nine hundred thousand primeval stones. I concede to you."

Shang Ya Zi slowly sat down.

He had only gotten into the young master position for a year, and had to deal with the evaluations, the actual amount of primeval stones he managed to pocket was only around four hundred thousand.

No doubt, after this transaction, his one year of savings will be depleted. The assets that he had managed to save would be gone.

But concerning the young master position, he had to relent.

He was solemn for a moment, before nodding: "Then nine hundred thousand it is, but I do not trust a paper agreement, we need to swear, let's use the poison vow Gu!"

Fang Yuan showed hesitation.

"Why, are you afraid? How would I know if you would not run away if we do not use the poison vow Gu? We have to do this, there is no way I'm giving in on this!" Shang Ya Zi's attitude was firm.

Fang Yuan had expected this to happen anyway.

"In that case, let me do it first." Fang Yuan stretched out his left hand.

Only then did Shang Ya Zi let out a smile, calling out the poison vow Gu.

Poison vow Gu is a purple red worm, only finger size and has a dangerous looking mouth; it was a rank three consumable Gu.

It flew to Fang Yuan's left index finger, and bit on it.

At once, a heart burning pain assaulted Fang Yuan's nerves.

Fang Yuan endured the pain as he started to read the details on the proposal. After he finished, the poison vow Gu nearly doubled in size, as it absorbed Fang Yuan's heart blood.

Soon after, the poison vow Gu flew to Shang Ya Zi's finger and started to suck blood.

Shang Ya Zi gripped the paper, and used a trembling voice to read the details, and the poison vow Gu doubled in size again.

His face turned pale from pain, as he clenched his teeth and drew in a deep breath: "This goddamn agreement, why is it so lengthy! Can't you write less words? Is there anything to add?"

Fang Yuan shook his head.

Shang Ya Zi's lips curled, revealing a smile. But his face was twisted, and his smile was a little hideous.

Bam.

The poison vow Gu stuffed with blood, suddenly exploded.

But no blood splattered but instead turned into numerous red light spots.

The light spots flew towards Fang Yuan and Shang Ya Zi, like rain falling into a pond, and fused into their bodies.

This shows that the poison vow Gu has taken effect.

If both sides read the details and it did not fulfill their true inner intentions, after the poison vow Gu explodes, it would turn into a puddle of stale blood. This situation, means that one side or both had violated the vow, causing it to fail.

Seeing this, Shang Ya Zi's smile became even deeper.

He looked at Fang Yuan: "Hehe, we have vowed already, if you change your mind in the future, or violate the agreement, you will turn into a puddle of blood and die."

Fang Yuan's expression remained the same, only saying: "Where are my primeval stones?"

Shang Ya Zi shrugged: "Don't worry, why would I violate the agreement, here!"

He tossed out a Gu.

This Gu was like a ball, as exquisite as a crystal, half transparent and palm-sized. There was a cloudy figure in the ball, as if it has sealed numerous clouds.

This white cloud figure looked like a hunchback old man carrying a walking stick.

The old man had long white hair, having an immortal feeling as the wrinkles on his face looked extremely realistic, and he was smiling sincerely.

This is the primeval elder Gu.

A Gu specifically used to store primeval stones.

As the saying goes, professionals have their domain of expertise , the primeval elder Gu is only a rank three, but it can seal up to a million primeval stones.

"There is eight hundred and seventy thousand primeval stones here, the remaining thirty thousand, I will pass them to you when I finish gathering them." Shang Ya Zi passed the primeval elder Gu to Fang Yuan with much reluctance.

Inside, six hundred thousand was the trade credit of Shang clan, the remaining two hundred and seventy was Shang Ya Zi’s personal savings.

After Fang Yuan received it, he cooperated with Fang Yuan in refining it.

Primeval elder Gu changed owners, and change occurred within the clouds, the old man was originally looking at Shang Ya Zi, but now he started to smile towards Fang Yuan instead.

Fang Yuan moved the primeval elder Gu around, but no matter which direction he moved, the clouds would transform and the old man would smile towards Fang Yuan regardless.

Actually, this Gu is quite interesting.

If the primeval stones inside are little, the old man would frown and show a bitter expression. If the amount was just nice, the old man would be expressionless. And finally, the more the number of primeval stones towards the limit, the more the old man would smile.

Shang Ya Zi saw Fang Yuan manipulate the primeval elder Gu and knew he was clear on how the Gu worked.

He snorted: "This primeval elder Gu is quite valuable, I cannot give it to you for free. I bought this on the auction and it cost me six thousand six hundred primeval stones."

Fang Yuan nodded, rank three Gu were sold by thousands of primeval stones, and the primeval elder Gu was a rare one, it was definitely worth that amount.

He immediately took out primeval stones to give Shang Ya Zi.

Shang Ya Zi used an ordinary storage Gu and kept these primeval stones, feeling horrible on the inside.

These were originally his primeval stones!

"Nevermind, as long as I can keep my young master position, all is possible, i can earn my primeval stones back, and for this guy who extorted me, he will die a horrible death!"

Shang Ya Zi was not a big hearted person, Fang Yuan robbed him of all his fortune, and he even had to borrow around for the final thirty thousand.

White bone recipe was normally six hundred thousand, but Fang Yuan sold it for nine hundred.

Shang Ya Zi rubbed his nose, after suffering such a loss, he felt extreme hatred towards Fang Yuan.

"The final thirty thousand, I will pass it to you in three days. This matter is known by the two of us only, no third party is allowed to know. Not even your companion. Don’t think of finding a loophole, it is useless." Shang Ya Zi got up and left, he could no longer stand being there.

Every extra second he looked at Fang Yuan’s hideous face, the anger in his heart would accumulate a bit more.

"There are no loopholes in the agreement, you looked through didn’t you?" Fang Yuan showed a plain expression.

Shang Ya Zi snorted, he was born of Shang clan, being influenced from young, and also having managed this shop for a year, there were no loopholes that could avoid his notice.

"I bet you wouldn’t dare to break the agreement." He laughed in disdain, quickly leaving.

Fang Yuan did not take it to heart, he knew that Shang Ya Zi’s current mood was very understandable.

As for the poison vow, he was not going to obey it.

Poison vow Gu’s restriction is very strong, otherwise, no Gu Masters would use it.

No way of exposing it to a third party, that is absolute. Any curveballs were risking one’s own life.

Like earlier, Fang Yuan passed six thousand six hundred primeval stones to Shang Ya Zi.

This was an extra action; he could have just deducted it from the thirty thousand primeval stones.

But no.

In the poison vow, they stated nine hundred thousand, thus Shang Ya Zi had to fork out nine hundred thousand primeval stones to Fang Yuan.

This was the cold hard rules.

Three days later, Shang Ya Zi gathered thirty thousand primeval stones, and handed it to Fang Yuan.

At the same time, Fang Yuan passed the recipe to him, of course, the most valuable bone flesh unity Gu was not sold.

Shang Ya Zi only knew of the bone spear Gu, spiral bone spear Gu etc, after looking at the recipe, he found many other recipes that uses the bone spear Gu as the base, and felt pleased by it, his mood turning better.

Fang Yuan then sold the bone spear Gu, spiral bone spear Gu as well as the bone spike Gu to him.

As with their original agreement, it was forty thousand six hundred and twenty primeval stones.

As a result, after this transaction, Fang Yuan’s assets rose to nine hundred thirty four thousand and twenty primeval stones 2 . With his savings, the total is about nine hundred and forty five thousand 3 .

Fang Yuan placed most of his primeval stones into the primeval elder Gu. To prevent accidents, he also placed some on his body, and some into the tusita flower.

"In my previous life at this time, I was still slogging in the caravan, with only fifty to sixty primeval stones on me. But right now I am nearly a millionaire."

Fang Yuan compared this with his memories, and the advantages of his rebirth can be easily seen.

Of course, he took huge risks as well.

The larger the risk, the greater the benefits. There is no free lunch in this world. Effort might not reap reward, but to gain reward, one has to invest first.

In a flash, three days passed.

Shang clan’s investigations ended, and Wei Yang brought Shang Yan Fei’s invitation over: "Two esteemed guests, my lord clan leader has set up a clan banquet, specifically ordering me to invite both of you over."

"Clan banquet? The moment is finally here." Fang Yuan thought.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

It’s time for his Oscars award ceremony!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

A roomy courtyard was where Shang Yan Fei set up the clan banquet.

It was an outdoor feast, because within the mountain, there was no need to worry about storm or rain.

The courtyard was neither luxurious nor elegant, it was even rather old.

There were a dozen or so tables arranged in a circle in the courtyard, which was already looking crowded from that.

There were some fruits and snacks arranged on the tables and also labels indicating which seat belonged to who.

Three seats were already occupied.

"Big brother, do you know why lord father called us this time?" Shang Chao Feng asked vaguely while popping a red fruit into his mouth.

The eldest Shang Qiu Niu was sitting upright, his eyes closed as he rested. Hearing the question, he opened his eyes by a sliver and spoke in a deep voice: "Lord father has recently come out of closed cultivation, he is holding this clan banquet because he misses us, what’s so strange about it?"

"Big brother might be right, but when has lord father ever held a casual banquet? Look, don’t you think there are a few more seats today?" From the side, Shang Pu Lao interjected.

Shang Chao Feng snickered, and Shang Qiu Niu closed his eyes again.

Shang Pu Lao’s gaze flickered, he was in charge of the red light zone and managed brothels of all sizes; he would be the fastest person to get any news. In truth, he had already heard some talks, he was just about to continue when suddenly his ears twitched: "Someone has arrived."

All three’s gazes turned towards the gate.

Creak, the gate was pushed open and three people walked in.

Wei Yang was at the front followed by Fang and Bai.

Fang and Bai had already been here before; it was that private residence they had been called to before.

"This private residence is the place where lord clan leader, when he was a young master, was suppressed by the alliance of other young masters. Lord clan leader took a step back and abandoned the position of young master of his own accord, becoming an ordinary clansman. During that fallen period, he stayed here. Later when he became the clan leader, he maintained this place as a reminder to himself and later generations. The clan banquets are always held here."

Wei Yang opened the gate and introduced.

Immediately after, he saw the three people in the courtyard: "Oh, three young masters are already here."

Shang Qiu Niu, Shang Chao Feng and Shang Pu Lao stood up one after another and cupped their hands to Wei Yang: "Our greetings, Elder Wei Yang."

Wei Yang was one of the five great generals under Shang Yan Fei and a major figure in Shang clan. Every single young master competing for the position of young clan leader has to go through his evaluation.

"My greetings to all three young masters, these two are esteemed guests invited by lord clan leader." Wei Yang also cupped his hands in greeting, his expression calm. He was an elder, his status was higher than the young master positions and as an important figure in the clan, he would not fawn on these young masters.

"Sirs, please take a seat." Wei Yang led Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing to their seats.

The three young masters looked at each other, they could see bewilderment, surprise and curiosity in each other’s eyes.

This was a clan banquet, why would any strangers be invited?

Who are these two? Their seats are actually closer to lord father’s than ours!

Wei Yang also sat down and continued on with a smile: "Let me make the introductions. This is Shang Qiu Niu, lord clan leader’s eldest son, he manages the caretaking zone. This is clan leader’s fourth son Shang Chao Feng, he manages all the Gu fighting arenas in the city. This is Shang Pu Lao, he manages all the brothels in red light zone."

Shang Qiu Niu was robust and his voice was deep, one could tell he was a calm person from one look. He was the oldest, already nearing thirty.

Shang Chao Feng had a messy hair and high nose bridge. He was giving off a wild aura.

Shang Pu Lao looked the most delicate; a thin physique, white face, beautiful eyes and a loose bearing showing that he loitered around with women all year round.

"Qiu Niu greets both esteemed guests." Shang Qiu Niu took the lead to cup his hands as a greeting.

Wei Yang didn’t introduce Fang and Bai, the three were smart and naturally wouldn’t stupidly pursue it.

"The three young masters are too polite. I am Hei Tu and this is my companion Bai Yun." Fang Yuan introduced.

The names were clearly fake.

This made the three young masters more confused about Fang and Bai’s origins. They could only laugh and go through the motion.

As the time for evening banquet came closer, more young masters appeared.

Shang Pi Xiu who managed rock gambling dens; Shang Suan Ni who managed restaurants and silk stores; Shang Fu Xi who managed auctions; Shang Bi Xi who managed substitute refinement zone; and Shang Ya Zi who Fang Yuan was already familiar with.

Wei Yang introduced them to Fang and Bai; all these young masters more or less revealed strange looks as they saw Fang and Bai.

They sat down as talks commenced with the increased number of people, the small courtyard gradually became lively.

Just before the banquet started, the gate suddenly opened and a young master hurriedly rushed in.

He was tall and thin, thick eyebrows and fierce gaze; he was young master Shang Bi An who was in charge of Shang clan city’s city guards.

The city guards handled all sorts of disputes and contradictions, maintaining the law and order in the city, so it was the busiest.

After greeting Fang and Bai, Shang Bi An was just sitting down, when a blood colored flame flickered on the main seat as Shang Yan Fei appeared.

Shang Yan Fei was wearing a white robe with gold inlaid cuffs. Scarlet hair flew around wildly before resting on his waist; combined with his extremely handsome face, it formed into an aura and charisma that was unique to him.

"Your children greet lord father." The many young masters stood up one after another before half kneeling down on the ground and greeting Shang Yan Fei unitedly.

"Lord clan leader." Wei Yang stood up.

At the same time, Fang and Bai also stood up to greet him.

"Take your seats." Shang Yan Fei laid back against the wide backed chair and casually waved his hand.

Immediately, seven colored beautiful lights sprinkled down like rain.

The beautiful lights landed on the tables and turned into all kinds of fine dishes, their fragrance immediately spreading in the small courtyard.

Fang Yuan instantly recognized the Gu as gourmet food box Gu.

It was a rank five Gu, especially used to store delicacies and maintain their state.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan tried hard to make a living in the caravan, he had no one to rely on after the destruction of Gu Yue clan.

The sudden emergence of an alliance of demonic Gu Masters on Yi Tian mountain overstepped the bottomline of the righteous paths.

All great clans formed an alliance and besieged Yi Tian mountain.

One of the heads of the allied forces, Shang Yan Fei used this gourmet food box Gu to provide for the armies.

With just a wave of his sleeve, tens of thousands of soldiers were provided with gourmet food, becoming an enormous help in raising their morale.

Since then, gourmet food box Gu became a symbol of Shang Yan Fei and was a conversation topic for many people.

At that time, Fang Yuan was able to become a small boss of the lowest level with his advantages as a transmigrator; he joined a sub-branch of a caravan which was in charge of transporting supplies to the righteous path allied forces.

He had personally be able to see the grandeur of Shang Yan Fei using gourmet food box Gu. Dazzling seven colored lights filled the sky and shone down upon the world; it was a magnificent and grand atmosphere.

"Never expected that I would see this gourmet food box Gu years in advance and also become an esteemed guest of Shang clan!" Fang Yuan heaved a sigh inwardly.

There was clear difference between his previous life and this life, this was the enormous advantage of rebirth.

And this advantage was from Spring Autumn Cicada which was the accumulation and accomplishment of his previous life’s struggles.

Shang Yan Fei spread the dishes and immediately addressed his sons: "We have two esteemed guests with us today, you all need to toast them. Qiu Niu, you are the eldest, set an example."

With Shang Yan Fei personally telling them, Shang clan young masters did not dare to act slowly even though they were bewildered.

Shang Qiu Niu immediately stood up and raised a wine glass, saying with his deep voice: "Qiu Niu toasts the two esteemed guests."

With that, he swigged down the glass of wine.

Fang Yuan also drank down a glass of wine while Bai Ning Bing still drank water.

Qiu Niu was the oldest among these young masters; he was almost thirty but his appearance looked quite mature as if he was forty.

By contrast, his father Shang Yan Fei looked like he was a youth in his twenties. The contrast between father and son was quite an interesting sight.

"I had a good talk with the two esteemed guests before. Esteemed guests, if you have time later, you could come to my zone to have fun, Gu battles are truly interesting." Shang Chao Feng also stood up.

Fang Yuan’s lips curled up into a smile, he knew quite a bit about Shang Chao Feng though this was the first time they met.

This man was very aggressive about winning and was ruthless and cunning. In Fang Yuan’s previous life, at one time, he had been the biggest hindrance to Shang Xin Ci’s position as Shang clan young master.

"Fourth brother’s Gu battles are too bloody, the best is still the delight of beauties singing and dancing for you." Shang Pu Lao retorted Shang Chao Feng before proposing a toast to Fang and Bai, his beautiful eyes flashing with light, "I wish to talk about romance and love with the two esteemed guests."

"If we have time, definitely." Fang Yuan said with a smile and chugged down the wine.

This banquet looked like those for celebrities in his eyes.

Most of these Shang clan young masters would have their own story that would spread throughout the southern border in future.

Shang Yan Fei had many children but these people here were able to distinguish themselves in such an intense competition, clearly showing their abilities that surpassed others. One could call them a giant among men or unpolished jade stones.

Moreover, they each had their own ways and styles of doing things; right now as they converged together in the same place, it was like a pearl shining off with light and darkness.

For the time being, there was not much to say about eldest son Shang Qiu Niu, second son Shang Ya Zi, fourth son Shang Chao Feng and eight son Shang Pu Lao.

Ninth son Shang Suan Ni had a lion-like mouth and broad nose. He seemed to be using some type of Gu, as every time he breathed, light yellow smoke came out from his nose and curled around him.

Tenth son Shang Bi Xi was short and stout, looked honest and did not seem to have anything remarkable about him. But Fang Yuan knew Shang Bi Xi was hiding enormous strength that was higher than his by several times.

Twelfth son Shang Bi An would have a marriage alliance with Tie Clan, and come to become southern border’s second divine detective after Tie Xue Leng.

Thirteenth son Shang Fu Xi was very intelligent, his advice when the righteous path allied forces attacked Yi Tian mountain caused huge damage to demonic Gu Masters time and again.

And the twenty-first son Shang Pi Xiu, he was the youngest and was a late bloomer. Many years later, when Shang clan fell into ruins, he threw himself into the demonic path and became a devil whose evil reputation spread far and wide over the southern border.

"Father, I am sorry I am late." As the toasts continued, the courtyard gate was opened and a girl walked in.

She was Shang Chi Wen, sixteenth daughter of Shang Yan Fei and held control over battle arenas. She had a fair face and her two eyes shone with a smart gaze. She was a lively and charming person.

After everyone finished toasting the wine, Shang Yan Fei raised his wine cup and faced Fang and Bai: "Thank you for protecting Xin Ci all the way, that was the only reason I could gain a new daughter."

Once he said so, everyone present was stunned.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

I’ll give a cookie to anyone who still remembers all their names after ten chapters.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Daughter?"

The gang of young masters showed an astonished expression, looking towards one another.

Shang Ya Zi realized at once, patting his own forehead.

So this was it! This was why father met the two with courtesy!

The mysterious veil was lifted, and Shang Ya Zi looked towards Fang Yuan, great hatred hidden in his gaze.

He was no longer afraid.

Now that he knew the reason, after the evaluation when he regains his footing, he would slowly deal with those two scoundrels!

At once, the place fell into silence.

Shang Yan Fei smiled as he observed the people, giving them time to absorb the new information.

Fang Yuan "cooperatively" expressed shock, as he was a little stunned, and muttered with a suspicious gaze: "Don’t tell me?"

"That’s right." Shang Yan Fei looked towards him, nodding: "It is that Lady Zhang both of you escorted and protected in the caravan. She is my daughter, once she stepped into Shang clan city, I detected her bloodline and have already reunited with her."

"Zhang Xin Ci!" Bai Ning Bing immediately followed.

Shang Yan Fei laughed heartily: "Hehehe, she is no longer Zhang now, but Shang. Both of you saved the life of my precious daughter, you are the benefactor of my Shang clan, thus you deserve a toast from us."

Saying so, the door was opened by someone lightly.

The young female Gu Master Tian Lan wore a servant attire as she pushed the door open, returning to Shang Xin Ci’s side.

"Missy..." Xiao Die looked at the courtyard full of people, and felt nervous.

"Let’s go in." Shang Xin Ci breathed out calmly, under everyone’s watchful gaze, walked into the courtyard.

Suddenly, her steps halted, showing surprise and joy on her face.

She saw Fang and Bai.

"It really is her!" Seeing Shang Xin Ci, Bai Ning Bing’s pupils shrunk to pin-size as she was completely and utterly stunned!

In the entire courtyard, no one could understand the shock in her heart.

Bai Ning Bing’s shock was not from Shang Xin Ci, but Fang Yuan instead.

She was an intelligent person, the moment she saw Shang Xin Ci, she understood at once, what Fang Yuan’s true motive was!

Zhang Xin Ci is Shang Xin Ci, thus he protected her.

How did he know her identity? Was this all part of his scheme?!

At that moment, Bai Ning Bing’s thoughts whirled as a storm brew in her heart.

"Brother Hei Tu, sister Bai Yun, why are you here?" Shang Xin Ci stared at Fang Yuan without blinking, her eyes shining brightly.

"Ci Er, father said I would give you a surprise, didn’t I?" Shang Yan Fei laughed gently.

Shang Xin Ci bowed and paid respects: "Thank you father, this is the happiest day I’ve had since coming to Shang clan city."

After the initial chaos, she had already accepted Shang Yan Fei as her birth father.

No matter how much her father had let down her mother, he was still her family!

Even if Shang Xin Ci had grudge and hatred towards Shang Yan Fei, the kinship that tied them together could not be severed, especially for a kind lady like her.

Shang Yan Fei heard her call him father for the first time, and his lips curled up, showing a radiant smile.

Shang Xin Ci turned around again, showing anxiety, as she explained to Fang Yuan: "Brother Hei Tu, I was not intentionally lying to you. After mother passed away, she instructed me to come to Shang clan city. I only understood her efforts and the truth after meeting father."

The words were like lightning bolts striking Bai Ning Bing’s heart.

Her blue eyes squinted into a line, as her heart was filled with surprise and confusion: Even Shang Xin Ci did not know her identity? Why? Why does Fang Yuan know everything?

Originally, Fang Yuan was shrouded in a mist in her heart, unable to observe him clearly.

But now, the mist thickened, and Fang Yuan became even more mysterious and unpredictable!

"So that’s it, I was wondering why Shang clan was treating me so well. So this is the reason..." Fang Yuan sighed as he raised his head, then slowly shook his head, exclaiming: "To think, to think that you are Shang clan leader’s daughter!"

"Brother Hei Tu, can you forgive me?" Shang Xin Ci gripped her hand, asking nervously.

Shang Yan Fei frowned lightly, seeing his daughter’s attitude, he knew that she held him in high regard.

Fang Yuan laughed: "No matter, why would I blame you. The unknowing party is innocent, in fact, I have lied to you too."

"What?" Shang Xin Ci froze.

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose: "Hei Tu, Bai Yun are just fake names."

Shang Xin Ci smiled gently, lightly saying: "I guessed that long ago."

Fang Yuan hesitated deliberately, then gritted his teeth and cupped his fist: "I am ashamed, my real name is Gu Yue Fang Zheng, this is my companion Bai Ning Bing."

"Gu Yue Fang Zheng, Fang Zheng..." Shang Xin Ci repeated this name several times, memorising it to heart.

Shang Yan Fei’s smiled also widened, he appreciated Fang Yuan’s honesty.

The truth is, he had investigated long ago.

Although Gu Yue clan was wiped out, Shang clan had its ways to find out information from Jia clan.

Gu Yue village had this person called Gu Yue Fang Zheng, and this person had A grade aptitude, and was the young clan leader candidate.

At the same time, Bai Ning Bing was the Bai clan’s young clan leader candidate.

The two were hailed as geniuses.

As for why they had to hide themselves and sneak into the caravan, this was easier to investigate.

Because of Bai Gu mountain’s inheritance, Bai clan’s two young masters died in their hands. At the same time, they took over half of the inheritance away.

Bai clan issued an arrest warrant which was the best proof.

"So that’s why my heart was palpitating earlier." Shang Pu Lao laughed.

"This child congratulates lord father." Shang Bi Xi said.

"If you face any problems, tell big brother." Shang Qiu Niu looked at Shang Xin Ci and said.

"This is awesome, I have a new sister. This banquet was worth coming." Shang Chi Wen laughed.

...

The young masters recovered from their shock, and quickly showed their affection.

"This is a joyful occasion for us all, because you have all gotten a new blood related sister." Shang Yan Fei looked at his children, extremely clear of their mental state.

"Shang Xin Ci’s appearance is no doubt a threat."

"From now on, there would be one more person vying for the young master position."

"Back then, wasn’t Shang Tuo Hai father’s illegitimate child? Right now he is the Shang clan young clan leader!"

"Actually there is no need to worry, Zhang clan is a subsidiary of Wu clan, and have enmity with Shang clan. Shang Xin Ci has no foundation here, she is easy to deal with."

The young masters showed a smiling face, but their hearts were weighing the situation.

The imperial family has no place for kinship.

The emperor’s throne is crucial for the greatest benefits, not even kinship can complete.

Shang clan is the southern border overlord, whoever rises to the position of clan leader in the future would be one of the parties that had a say in the entire southern border. High and mighty, ascending to the peak of the mortal realm, the benefits were unbelievable.

Which generation of Shang clan leader did not undergo a ferocious battle, before they ascended to the position painstakingly?

Shang Yan Fei had gone through this before, so he was clear of the situation right now.

Thus, his heart went out to Shang Xin Ci even more.

Right now, by announcing her identity, although it was to protect her, it also threw her into this spiral of competition.

"Come, Ci Er, sit here." Shang Yan Fei patted the seat below him, saying.

"Yes." Shang Xin Ci replied, looking deeply at Fang Yuan as Fang Yuan nodded at her with a smile.

Shang Xin Ci walked over, sitting beside Shang Yan Fei.

Xiao Lan, Xiao Die, these two servants were close behind her.

Seeing this, everyone’s expression was strange.

Since they were born, they had never seen father love one of his children to this extent.

Even his illegitimate son Shang Tuo Hai did not receive such treatment!

"Alright, all of you, take a seat." Shang Yan Fei waved his hand, looking towards Fang and Bai again.

He spoke: "Gu Yue Fang Zheng, Bai Ning Bing, the two of you saved my precious daughter, and escorted her here. Our family is deeply indebted to you, if you have any requests, you may say it now. As the Shang clan leader, I will do my best to satisfy your needs."

The young masters turned to look at Fang and Bai, with a look of envy.

This was the gratitude of Shang clan leader, a promise by the southern border overlord, his words were as heavy as a mountain!

But Fang Yuan shook his head: "Lord clan leader, the reason we protected Lady Shang Xin Ci is due to her previous kindness. Our debt has already been repaid, we do not owe each other anything."

As he said so, everyone showed a shocked expression.

Shang Fu Xi quickly reacted, squinting, praising the ingenuity of the answer.

Fang and Bai saved the Shang Yan Fei’s daughter, he had to reward them handsomely. If he does not, how would outsiders look at Shang clan? If any Shang clan young master encountered danger in the future, who would help them?

Shang Xin Ci saw Fang Yuan rejecting the reward, and quickly got anxious, saying to Shang Yan Fei: "Father, during the caravan trip, brother Hei Tu lost much of his assets too."

Shang Yan Fei was a brilliant man, before Shang Xin Ci finished her words, he understood her intentions. This was to sought money for Fang and Bai.

He nodded: "Since both of you are Gu Masters, I shall gift a million primeval stones to express my thanks."

Hearing this, many young masters almost drooled.

Although they controlled much of Shang clan’s assets, but it was under everyone’s supervision and there was a yearly evaluation, they could hardly line their own pockets.

Shang Ya Zi had talent, but was too greedy, causing his business results to be in jeopardy.

Fang Yuan shook his head again: "To speak the truth, I had gone through a peril situation to snatch an inheritance. After selling the recipe, I no longer lack primeval stones."

"Oh, is that so." Shang Yan Fei looked at Shang Ya Zi with deep meaning.

Shang Ya Zi was so scared his heart nearly jumped out, his mouth went dry and cold sweat gathered on his forehead.

Regarding Shang Ya Zi’s matter, how could Shang Yan Fei not know? Even if he faked the accounting, what happened could be easily guessed.

But Shang Ya Zi was still his own son, even if he violated the Shang clan rules, as long as it was not exposed, that counts as his skill too.

Being at this position, he had learnt long ago: Obeying the rules was not an ability, true ability lies in breaking the rules to gain benefits, yet not receiving punishment. Those with true capabilities demolish the old order, while establishing new rules and enjoying the benefits along the way.

Shang Yan Fei used this chance to remind Shang Ya Zi, before he gave another reward for them to consider.

Shang Xin Ci only heard half of it, before her eyes glowed intensely.

This was exactly what Fang and Bai needed the most!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Let’s see who guesses it right.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Shang Yan Fei saw Fang Yuan reject the primeval stones, and gave another solution: "You are now under Bai clan’s arrest warrant, this is evidently a misunderstanding. I shall explain for you and remove this arrest warrant, what do you think?"

Fang and Bai were wanted, Shang Xin Ci knew this.

"Why didn’t I think of it, to get rid of the arrest warrant for brother Hei Tu, this is undoubtedly what he needs the most." Shang Xin Ci supported this wholeheartedly.

Shang clan was the southern border overlord, while Bai clan was an ordinary clan village. Moreover, their spirit spring was running dry, the clan was gradually getting weaker. Shang Yan Fei’s ’explanation’ will definitely be accepted by Bai clan.

But Fang Yuan shook his head.

Although this was enticing, he had other plans in his heart.

If Shang clan cleared up the matter, it would cause him to be branded as one of them. This would be a great obstacle in his future plans of getting close to the demonic Gu Masters and joining Yi Tian mountain. Short terms benefits in exchange for long term harm.

This arrest warrant may seem troublesome, but it was no harm to Fang Yuan.

Which demonic lord did not have tens of arrest warrants on them? Fang Yuan had over a hundred in his previous life!

So what if the arrest warrants pile up?

The most ironic thing was, after he established the blood wing demonic sect in his previous life, and dominated a region, many clans took the initiative to remove the arrest warrant for him.

This was the truth of the world, eventually, only strength matters!

According to Fang Yuan’s plans, he wanted to stay in Shang clan city for two to three years, during this period Bai clan had no way to arrest him.

After that, he would gather a set of Gu worms and gain a boost in strength, then he would have no fear towards Bai clan’s arrest warrant.

In fact, Bai clan itself was in a dangerous situation, unable to fend for themselves, how could they bother about Fang and Bai!

Thus, Shang Yan Fei’s reward, although it was important in Shang Xin Ci’s eyes, it held zero value to Fang Yuan.

Thus, he shook his head: "Our conflict with Bai clan originated from an inheritance. Truthfully, we snatched their inheritance and killed the Bai clan young masters, but we have never regretted it. My injury is due to Bai clan, one day, I will find them for revenge. I am such a person, repay kindness with gratitude, and return grudges with revenge. A droplet received in need will be repaid with a whole spring, a spark of hatred will result in the burning of an entire forest!"

As he said so, Fang Yuan did not hide his overwhelming killing intent.

Immediately, many of the young masters had differing feelings.

"He has an extremely demonic nature..." Some were disgusted.

"A person exacting revenge on a clan, this person is truly naive." Some looked with disdain.

"Hehehe, being so honest in front of father, is this person a fool, or something with great courage?" Some were amused.

Shang clan was a righteous path overlord, but Fang Yuan declared his intentions for revenge in front of Shang Yan Fei.

His arrogance and confidence caused Shang Xin Ci to feel inwardly shocked, but not surprised. This was brother Hei Tu true nature, wasn’t it?

Shang Yan Fei was also unfazed, in his opinion, Fang Yuan was very honest and straightforward. Wei Yang’s evaluation was spot on. Such a person can be easily read, compared to the quiet Bai Ning Bing, he prefered Fang Yuan much more.

"There is no need for lord clan leader to intervene and remove the arrest warrant for us. I need this to encourage myself, to whip myself and continuously get stronger. Thank you Lord Shang Yan Fei for your kind intentions." Fang Yuan cupped his fists.

"In that case, tell me what reward you want. Don’t talk about your debt being repaid, if my Shang clan wants to reward someone, they will be rewarded. This is our rules. Even if you throw the reward away, that is none of my business." Shang Yan Fei frowned, acting unhappy.

Immediately, the relaxed atmosphere in the courtyard became slightly more solemn.

The young masters became much more careful when they raised their glasses to drink.

This was the dominating aura of Shang clan leader, Shang Yan Fei, a rank five Gu Master.

I want to reward you, even if you do not want it, you have to take it! It is not a choice!

Fang Yuan looked around, and laughed: "But what if I really do not want it?"

Shang Yan Fei spoke calmly, but his gaze was determined: "That is not an option."

Many of the young masters saw this conflict and scolded Fang Yuan as an idiot secretly. He must be stupid, pushing away Shang clan leader’s reward, many people would die for this opportunity. Some praised his overwhelming bravery.

Shang Xin Ci’s hands were sweating, worrying for Fang Yuan.

Wei Yang laughed, soothing the atmosphere: "I thought about it, brother Fang Zheng was injured and disfigured. Why don’t lord clan leader ask the doctor to restore his appearance?"

"Hmm, this is a good idea. Wei Yang, call Doctor Su Shou to come here." Shang Yan Fei nodded and said.

Fang Yuan was silent, as Wei Yang went away.

Soon, Wei Yang reported: "Doctor Su Shou has been invited here, please come with me brother Fang Zheng."

Fang Yuan paid no attention to his own appearance, but at this time he could no longer be pushy.

He looked at Bai Ning Bing: "Come along too, get a full body check up as well."

Bai Ning Bing snorted, she knew exactly what injuries she has. But then again, she knew Fang Yuan had other plans, thus she agreed.

The two left the courtyard and entered the house.

They were familiar with this house, because they had once waited here for Shang Yan Fei for six hours, and did not even get to meet him.

Doctor Su Shou was a slim woman, wearing a veil on her face and a white shirt and skirt. She was drinking tea at her seat.

She had a complex relationship with Shang Yan Fei; favor, grudge, love, hatred, all of them. She held a unique position in Shang clan city, she was a rank five healing Gu Master.

"A rare day where my mood is great today." She placed her cup down, looking at Fang Yuan: "You seek treatment? Go bathe first."

She then stretched out her finger, pointing at Bai Ning Bing: "Especially you young lady, what did you apply on your face, ugly and dirty, clean it before you come back."

Bai Ning Bing had concealed her looks on the entire journey, she continued to do so even in Shang clan city. Her face was smothered with cinnabar, pretending it was her birthmark. She even applied special black oil, and her hair covered her forehead, causing her to look unkempt.

Hearing this, Bai Ning Bing was surprised.

Fang Yuan had the same expression.

Wei Yang quickly explained: "This is Lord Doctor Su Shou’s rule. Every patient has to shower and clean their bodies, use fragrance oil and change into a white robe. Otherwise, she will not treat them. But no worry, I have already prepared it in advance, the hot water is ready, please follow me."

The two entered the inner house, and there were indeed two wooden buckets inside.

Beside each bucket, there were two mortal servants standing, helping the guests to wash themselves.

Bai Ning Bing immediately frowned, saying unhappily: "Get out, I will wash myself."

"This..." Wei Yang was hesitant, these four were Doctor Su Shou’s attendants. Doctor Su Shou was a clean freak, if the servants were chased away, she might not clean herself properly, resulting in her unable to get treatment.

"I’ll keep mine, brother Wei, please go out first. Her loss if she cannot enjoy it." Fang Yuan laughed.

Wei Yang told them his worry, but Bai Ning Bing insisted. Wei Yang did not pursue it further, leaving the room and closing the door, after all, the healing target was Fang Yuan anyway.

Fang Yuan took off his clothing, throwing away his shirt and entering the wooden bucket.

The temperature of the water was just nice, as the two servants worked, one poured the fragrance oil as the other rubbed Fang Yuan’s back, they moved in perfect harmony, obviously experienced.

Bai Ning Bing stood before the bucket, not moving as she hesitated.

Fang Yuan laid in the bucket relaxing, placing his arms at the corner of the bucket, saying lightly: "Bai Ning Bing, our identities have already been exposed, we have no need to hide in Shang clan city, do you really not dare to show your face to people?"

Bai Ning Bing immediately snorted.

Fang Yuan continued: "I called you over with good intentions. This Doctor Su Shou, I have long heard of her great fame, in the southern border, she, Roaming Doctor Jiu Zhi, Doctor Sheng Shou, and Doctor Sha Ren are the four great doctors. You can ask her later regarding the Yin Yang rotation Gu."

Yin Yang rotation Gu!

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes squinted into a line, as they shone unsteadily.

This was Bai Ning Bing’s greatest pain, and the method Fang Yuan used to control Bai Ning Bing. Saying it out loud like this, what was the reason? What schemes does he have now? What is his motive?

All sorts of suspicions arose in Bai Ning Bing’s head.

The mental impact that Shang Xin Ci gave her was still lingering, causing Bai Ning Bing to still experience afterfear.

This Fang Yuan, was like an unknown abyss!

Even Shang Xin Ci did not know her identity, but he knew, otherwise he would not have approached her.

How did he do this?

Bai Ning Bing could not guess the Spring Autumn Cicada, that was a rank six Gu, and too far from her understanding. But she made another guess, that is, a predictive ability Gu.

"Fang Yuan must have a precognition type Gu, able to see scenes of the future. I thought he was familiar with Bai Gu mountain due to the experiences of past people, but now it seems it must be the effect of this Gu. The problem is, which predictive Gu does he own, and what rank is it?"

Undoubtedly, Bai Ning Bing’s pressure at this moment was the greatest.

Even if she understood, that predictive Gu have their own severe weaknesses. Sometimes, the predicted future is either wrong or chaotic.

But now that she wanted to deal with Fang Yuan, she would be forced to think — Would this plan of mine be forewarned? If I use this method to deal with him, will he just make use of it instead?

Enemies that can predict the future were too terrifying.

In the inner house, hot steam rose.

Bai Ning Bing stood on the spot, but felt her hands and legs freezing.

In the steam, she could almost see Fang Yuan lying in the bucket, as the servants washed his body.

She could feel that Fang Yuan was staring at her, using his abyss-like dark eyes, those emotionless and deep eyes, quietly staring at her.

She could hear Fang Yuan screaming in her heart: What are you going to do? Bai Ning Bing! That’s right, this is my trump card, a precognition Gu. You want to deal with me? Go ahead! I can see the future, you have no chance of winning...

But the truth was, Fang Yuan was already resting his eyes.

Whether Bai Ning Bing washed or not, it was part of his probing, killing two birds with one stone. He was testing both Bai Ning Bing and Shang Yan Fei.

The two servants were really experienced, when the water turned cold slightly, they immediately added hot water.

The room was not big, after placing two buckets, it was crowded. This portrayed the state Shang Yan Fei faced when he decided to give up the position of young master back in the day to become a commoner.

But this was normal.

Heroes often met despair. But that is not to say, the fate of heroes is full of calamities. But because, only despair and desperation can create heroes.

Shang Yan Fei could be called a hero, but he is more of a schemer, an ambitious person.

After an hour of washing, the servant stopped.

Fang Yuan wore the shirt they prepared, and walked out of the room, but Bai Ning Bing was still standing there, thoughts flowing in her head.

"Get out, I will wash myself." After Fang Yuan left, Bai Ning Bing chased the two servants away.

Fang Yuan smiled, the more Bai Ning Bing thought, the more pressure she faced. The more she thought, the more her willpower was sucked away.

Sometimes, strengths might not be strengths.

If Bai Ning Bing was a straightforward boor, so be it. But she was extremely intelligent, and the more intelligent she was, the more she thought, and the more she would find Fang Yuan unpredictable, and hard to win.

Bai Ning Bing could have felt nothing wrong with the bath, but Fang Yuan could tell that she had lowered her head to him from this insignificant matter.

Smart people were suspicious, from another angle, it was Bai Ning Bing who helped Fang Yuan subdue herself.

Back at the main room, Fang Yuan found Doctor Su Shou.

She did not waste time, stretching out her palm and placing it at Fang Yuan’s shoulder.

A gush of pure white light burst forth like water and enveloped Fang Yuan’s entire body.

A refreshing and cool feeling spread throughout Fang Yuan’s body.

His burnt skin could be seen recovering rapidly, at the same time flesh started to grow at the right side of his head.

As time passed, the flesh grew and formed into shapes of ear, and cartilage.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, as the numbing feeling assaulted him like waves, continuously challenging his limits.

Quickly, new skin formed on his body, and from the pores that were burnt, new eyebrows grew.

In fifteen minutes time, his injuries healed, he not only regained his looks, but his right ear also grew out, matching with his left.

Doctor Su Shou pulled back her hand, commenting: "Now you look much better. Leave, and bring your companion along, hmph, she chased my servants away, how would I know if she had cleaned herself properly? Eh..."

At this time, the room door opened, and Bai Ning Bing walked out.

She wore a white robe, returning to her formal appearance, without any concealment, her blue eyes shone like the blue sky, with ice muscles and jade bones, her face was slightly red, and she carried with her the lingering steam from her bath. Even the woman Doctor Su Shou was moved by her divine appearance.

Doctor Su Shou’s impression of Bai Ning Bing changed completely, as she said gently: "Little sister looks incredible, I almost got charmed by you."

This attitude was a hundred and eighty degree turn, Fang Yuan could not help but roll his eyes.

But he knew, this was Doctor Su Shou, pursuing all things beautiful in her life. Or using Earth’s words, she had an appearance complex!

Bai Ning Bing shook her head: "I do not need healing, I just want to know about the Yin Yang rotation Gu."

"I will answer anything little sister wants to know." Doctor Su Shou gently said, then turned coldly at Fang Yuan: "As for you, why are you still here, go out!"

Completely different attitudes towards Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose, having being chased out.

The moment he got out, he saw Wei Yang.

"Brother Fang Zheng?" Wei Yang look at him hesitantly.

Fang Yuan nodded, showing gratitude in his eyes: "Thank you brother for guarding here the entire time."

"Haha, to think you look so handsome!" Wei Yang raised his thumb as he praised.

Actually, Fang Yuan looked extremely plain and ordinary, he could only be considered middle-upper level in terms of looks. But his eyes were dark like the abyss, giving off an unquestionable aura.

Most importantly, he was way too ugly when he was injured, in contrast, he became much more ’handsome’.

But Wei Yang quickly laughed bitterly: "Little brother, since you call me brother, I shall lecture you. Why did you refuse clan leader’s reward? I know you have your principles, but Shang clan has their rules, as they say, follow the customs of the place you are in, moreover, lord clan leader is not trying to harm you! This is a good thing."

"But if you continue insisting, the good thing will turn sour. A wise man submits to circumstances, I’m sure you do not want Lady Xin Ci to be stuck in the middle right?"

Fang Yuan frowned: "I accepted treatment because I was considering this point."

Wei Yang’s smile became even more bitter: "Just this treatment alone is no reward. If Shang clan does not produce a proper reward, it will cause outsiders to laugh at us, and ruin Shang clan’s reputation and image. In future, if Shang clan’s young masters encounter trouble, who would help them? Thus, you must accept this reward no matter what."

Wei Yang spoke as he observed Fang Yuan’s expression, seeing him frown even harder, he continued urging: "You, oh you, I don’t know what to say. Something that people would die for, you are doing your best to refuse it. Little brother Fang Zheng, an arm cannot overpower a leg , if you really do not want it, you can accept it now, and after this is over, give it to Shang Xin Ci. Is that not a good solution?"

Fang Yuan thought about it, and said solemnly: "Hmm, this is a good idea. First, it does not violate my principles, second, it would not make life difficult for you. But brother Wei, what do I ask for?"

Wei Yang immediately replied: "Oh course it is a token!"

Fang Yuan laughed secretly, that was what he wanted to hear all along. He wanted to hear it from Shang Yan Fei, but Shang Yan Fei seemed to have wanted to recruit him, intentionally not mentioning it.

Now, he shall make use of Wei Yang.

"Token?" Fang Yuan showed a confused expression.

"You just got to Shang clan city, although you know there is a need for tokens, you do not know the importance of it. Trust brother Wei, a high class token is very important. Sometimes, even if you have money, it is useless without a token." Wei Yang advised wholeheartedly.

Fang Yuan nodded: "Although I don’t get it, since brother Wei said so, I shall request for a token."

Wei Yang instantly felt strongly moved due to being trusted.

He patted Fang Yuan’s shoulders, sighing: "Little brother, we hit it off so well, why would I cause you to lose out?"

Back at the courtyard, Fang Yuan immediately said to Shang Yan Fei: "I was rash, after hearing brother Wei Yang’s advice, I realized a token was so important. I would like to ask for two tokens from lord clan leader."

Shang Yan Fei’s eyes shone, he intentionally kept quiet because he had plans. But to think Wei Yang ruined it, this Wei Yang, he failed while trying to do good, not thinking further into this.

These two saved his birth daughter, the token given cannot be too low class.

Nevermind!

In Shang clan city, what does that little primeval stones they had amount to? In a year or two, it would be finished, even if they had the token, they would still need to rely on Shang clan.

Thinking so, Shang Yan Fei laughed heartily, waving his hand: "Alright, I shall give both of you a purple thorn token each, as my thanks to you."

Almost all the young masters gasped at this.

Even Wei Yang was taken aback.

Shang clan city had black, white, red, orange, yellow, green, turquoise, blue, purple — a total of nine tokens. Black stone token was the lowest, purple thorn token was the highest, it meant one was a VIP in Shang clan, the authority was almost half a clan elder!

Even Fang Yuan did not expect that Shang Yan Fei would give out a purple thorn token. He had planned to receive a green, turquoise or blue token, these three colors. He greatly underestimated Shang Yan Fei’s magnanimity.

Shang Yan Fei took out a token immediately, it was made of cercis chinensis wood, palm sized, the front wrote the two words ’Shang Clan’, while the back was a minimap of Shang Liang mountain.

But this was not the real purple thorn token.

Shang Yan Fei called out another Gu: "This is the special token Gu of Shang clan, it needs your blood."

The Gu worm was like a mosquito, flying to Fang Yuan’s arm, taking a bit of blood, and returned to the surface of the token.

Splat.

With a crisp sound, the token Gu exploded, turning into a lump of blood and merging into the token.

The token seemed to have no changes, but when it got into Fang Yuan’s hands, the surface started to glow with a purple light, like water and shadow.

Only now, did this become a real purple thorn token.

Even if outsiders got the token, it was useless. This could only be used by Fang Yuan.

This was also Shang clan’s protective measure. Making it impossible for outsiders to impersonate. If they used Gu worms as the trust token, other Gu Masters might reverse engineer it and refine the Gu for themselves.

The genius part was, the purple thorn token was not a Gu worm, it only had the power of the token Gu remaining in it.

As time passed, the token Gu’s power would decrease, and the purple thorn token would lose effect.

This was an advantage to Shang clan.

The depreciation of the token, would cause its usage to be sustained at a certain level.

If Fang Yuan’s purple thorn token lost effect, he would have to return to Shang clan city and ask them to create a new one. This was a way Shang clan controlled their tokens.

Fang Yuan obtained the purple thorn token, and the young masters’ gaze towards him changed completely.

Before, he was still just a demonic Gu Master, many looked down on him, felt disdain towards him, but now they held an equal attitude.

The purple thorn token could only be given out when the clan leader, or ten elders came to an agreement. There were only two hundred purple thorn tokens in the world now.

"Your companion?" Shang Yan Fei took out another token.

"Still with Doctor Su Shou, I will go rush her now." Wei Yang was about to get up, when Bai Ning Bing returned, in front of everyone.

Her expression was cold, and solemn. She had heard from Doctor Su Shou, that to return to her male body, she needed the corresponding Yang Gu.

Of course, there was no absolute. If she could get a rank six Gu immortal to help, there was a high chance of success.

Seeing her appearance, many young masters fell into a daze.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

This is so long... consider this two chapters.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bai Ning Bing’s appearance caused the attention on Fang Yuan to divert.

The contrast was simply too great, causing everyone to focus on her.

Fang Yuan had an ordinary appearance, but when he first appeared, even Wei Yang praised him. Bai Ning Bing however, looked stunning, the contrast was much more evident.

Next, Bai Ning Bing also received the purple thorn token.

During the clan banquet, everyone interacted with each other, portraying a cohesive gathering on the outside, but secretly, there were storms brewing.

In large clans, young masters often fought openly and secretly. Because large clans had the resources for them to compete.

On the other hand, normal clans like Gu Yue clan village, Bai clan village, focused on nurturing one successor. It was not a problem of fertility, but because they wanted to avoid internal conflicts between young masters which could cause the clan to decline.

Fang Yuan displayed his forthright and hotblooded side, these young masters were influential people, nurturing a good relationship with them would greatly aid him in his stay on Shang Liang mountain for the next few years.

He clarified his past, as the former Gu Yue clan future clan leader, similar to Bai Ning Bing.

Immediately, he closed the distance he had with the other young masters.

Obviously, there were people who asked about the reason why Qing Mao mountain turned into an icy hell, but Fang Yuan did not explain it.

He only mentioned that the past was a nightmare, and showed a painful expression. He had the purple thorn token in his hand, so no one dared to force him.

A few young masters toasted Bai Ning Bing, but she did not bother responding to them, acting as she pleased.

If it was before, the young master would definitely be secretly angry, but now that she showed her true beauty, no one got angry about it.

They only felt that this woman was beautiful like a fairy, resembling a ice fairy, paired with her cold behavior, it fitted her image perfectly.

The clan banquet lasted for an hour before ending.

"Can I still call you brother Hei Tu?" As they parted, Shang Xin Ci stared at Fang Yuan with glimmering eyes.

"Whichever you like." Fang Yuan smiled warmly.

Shang Xin Ci blinked, saying softly: "Brother Hei Tu’s injuries are healed, it is worth celebrating, but I feel like we are quite far apart. Brother Hei Tu has the purple thorn token now, you can freely leave and enter the second inner city, are you currently staying at Nan Qiu garden?"

Shang Xin Ci was very chatty, from deep in her heart, she felt that Fang Yuan was very close to her, thus she had many things to say.

In a foreign environment, people subconsciously found a sense of security from people they know.

Fang Yuan knew her mental state, initiating: "Yes I am staying at Nan Qiu garden, when you are free, you can come over to visit. Shang clan city is huge, we can go shopping together."

Shang Xin Ci’s eyes glowed brightly, happily nodding.

Xiao Die was beside her, happily shouting: "It has been so boring stay at home these days!"

After Fang Yuan regained his looks, Xiao Die no longer found him so scary.

Soon after, Shang Yan Fei brought Shang Xin Ci away, being the first to leave the place.

The young masters lost the restrain on them, and started to show their true colors.

Many gave invitations to Fang and Bai; Fang Yuan did not reject them but promised to visit when he had time.

These were all empty promises.

When everyone started leaving, the two also went back to Nan Qiu garden.

"Are you happy now?" Bai Ning Bing went to Fang Yuan, laughing coldly.

"Happy about what?"

"Hmph, you know the answer, do you really want me to say it?" Being in Shang clan city, some things were not meant to be said, it would hurt both parties.

Fang Yuan smiled and did not respond.

Bai Ning Bing stared at Fang Yuan with a flickering gaze: "I have to admit, I underestimated you. Even though I want to chop you into pieces, I greatly admire your tactics."

She paused, then continued: "Let’s not beat about the bush, under what conditions will you return the Yang Gu to me?"

"Hehe." Fang Yuan laughed lightly, Bai Ning Bing looking for him meant she had lost her bearings. Shang Xin Ci’s matter had a great impact on her, this was no doubt a chance.

Since she wanted to lay their cards on the table, so be it.

Thus, Fang Yuan said: "We are both smart people, if you were in my spot, what would you do?"

Bai Ning Bing immediately gave a cold snort, her eyes closing into a line, as she shot daggers with her gaze: "Let me warn you, do not go overboard. Otherwise, I will disregard the consequences and act, let’s see who loses out more then!"

Fang Yuan laughed: "You are right, I have been thinking these days, we each hold the other party’s weakness. At this point, how can we struggle among ourselves and let a third party take advantage of our conflict?"

Bai Ning Bing was silent.

Fang Yuan continued: "How about this, assist me to rank five peak stage, and I’ll return the Yang Gu to you."

"F*ck you!" The corner of Bai Ning Bing’s lips twitched, immediately snickering: "You think I am an idiot like Shang Ya Zi? Rank five peak stage, I can’t believe you have to face to say that!"

They agreed upon rank three earlier, but now it seems Fang Yuan was really going to go back on his words!

Although Bai Ning Bing was ready for it, seeing Fang Yuan’s shameless smile, she felt anger rising in her.

"Bai Ning Bing, don’t be ungrateful, I saved your life. If I did not use the Yin Gu, you would have perished on Qing Mao mountain long ago." Fang Yuan’s expression turned cold.

Bai Ning Bing did not relent, immediately retorting: "Hmph, if I did not block first generation Gu Yue’s hit for you, you would have died before me!"

"On Bai Gu mountain, if I did not..."

"That time you fell into the swamp, did I not save your life?"

...

The two bickered in the room, exchanging blows against each other until they both went silent.

Their relationship was a huge mess already. But one thing was sure, they relied on each other’s strength to arrive at Shang Liang mountain. If not for their mutual assistance, they would not have lived until today.

The two fell into silence, as the atmosphere in the room became less tense.

"Next, what plans do you have?" A moment later, Bai Ning Bing broke the silence.

"Stay a few years in Shang clan city, now that we have the token and primeval stones, we can get ourselves a set of complementary Gu worms. You also fought against that Wei Yang, only when we have a set of Gu worms can we display our true power." Fang Yuan said.

Bai Ning Bing snorted: "At most, rank four peak stage. My contributions were high on Bai Gu mountain, you have to give me half of the primeval stones."

Fang Yuan nodded: "Okay, let’s hi-five as a promise."

Bai Ning Bing’s stared at him, furiously growling: "You think I am a fool, hi-five?! Use the poison vow Gu, poison vow, understand?!"

Fang Yuan nodded: "No problem, poison vow Gu it is."

Bai Ning Bing squinted, a dangerous feeling emerging in her heart. Fang Yuan’s quick response caused her to feel that she had been scammed. She seemed to have fallen into Fang Yuan’s trap again.

"But." Fang Yuan’s words shifted.

"But what?" Bai Ning Bing was extremely vigilant.

Fang Yuan continued: "From now on, if we have any gains, it will be split 3:7. You 30%, and me 70%. If we have any Gu, I have choosing priority, I will use primeval stones to compensate you. This is my baseline, you must accept it."

Bai Ning Bing breathed out in relief, now this is Fang Yuan. If he did not have any terms, it would be too weird.

She had travelled with him for so long, he had never lost out in a deal!

This person was too devious, especially today, he caused Bai Ning Bing’s vigilance to surge to an all-time high.

3:7, this was too much. Especially when Bai Ning Bing’s cultivation was much higher than Fang Yuan.

But if Fang Yuan did not list an overbearing condition, Bai Ning Bing would have felt uneasy. She would think this person was scheming again. Thus, after Fang Yuan gave his terms, Bai Ning Bing felt at ease.

"So be it." Bai Ning Bing agreed immediately.

Gains or benefits, she did not care about them. Her only goal was Yang Gu.

After getting information from Doctor Su Shou, her final hope was crushed.

The two conversed for an entire night.

Bai Ning Bing looked at the agreement over ten times, finally concluding that Fang Yuan did not have any loopholes left to use.

Thus on the second day, their first job was to buy the poison vow Gu.

Poison vow Gu was a rank three Gu, with wide uses, almost every shop in third inner city sold it. One cost forty-five hundred primeval stones, and needed at least a yellow pear token.

But when Fang Yuan showed the purple thorn token, the shopkeeper immediately cut the price by fifteen hundred. Fang Yuan paid three thousand and obtained the poison vow Gu.

The nine tokens, held differing discount for different Gu.

"Let me refine it this time." Bai Ning Bing immediately took the poison vow Gu.

She was very careful, personally refining the poison vow Gu to prevent Fang Yuan from making sneaky moves.

This poison vow Gu had originally been refined by the shopkeeper already, with his assistance, Bai Ning Bing spent fifteen minutes to refine the Gu and kept it for her own use.

"Does this shop sell the primeval elder Gu?" Bai Ning Bing asked again.

Shopkeeper shook his head, respectfully explaining that the primeval elder Gu was a precious rank three Gu, it would only be sold in auctions. But the two had the purple thorn token, they could easily pre-order it before an auction as long as it isn’t a large size one.

The auction zone in third inner city, Wei Yang had brought them there long ago. They easily got to the area, and spent sixty-seven hundred primeval stones to purchase the primeval elder Gu.

"We spent ten thousand just like that. We shall split the cost of the poison vow Gu, but the primeval elder Gu’s cost will come from you." Fang Yuan reminded.

"Such small details, I’m not going to nitpick." Bai Ning Bing waved her hand, not interested in calculating. She had been used to spending casually, not caring about monetary fortune. In fact, she looked down on Fang Yuan’s stingy behavior.

Afraid of dragging on, the two returned to Nan Qiu garden and used the poison vow Gu.

This way, a new agreement was established.

According to the agreement, Fang Yuan distributed half of the nine hundred thousand over primeval stones to Bai Ning Bing, placing it in her primeval elder

Gu.

Fang Yuan lost half his fortune, but gained an alliance mate Bai Ning Bing. It was a worthwhile trade.

And Bai Ning Bing also saw hope in regaining the Yang Gu, the two were wary of one another, scheming against each other, it was difficult to get to this stage where both was satisfied.

"Next, can you finally help and aid me in reaching rank three?" Fang Yuan’s expression was solemn.

Bai Ning Bing laughed smugly, seeing Fang Yuan’s ugly expression, she felt extremely happy.

For the last few days, she had not helped Fang Yuan in cultivating. However, with the new agreement in place, it was another story all together.

"Sure, I’ll help you advance to rank three today." She agreed immediately.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Of course there’s a second chapter... Lesson of the day: If your relationship is facing problems, always talk it out.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Swish swish swish...

In the aperture, the primeval sea ebbed and flowed. A gush of primeval essence crashed towards the aperture walls.

The waves were like snow, shining in a silver light, brilliant beyond comprehension, this was the snow silver primeval essence.

In the room, Bai Ning Bing’s palms were stuck to Fang Yuan’s back as the bone flesh unity Gu sent primeval essence continuously into Fang Yuan’s aperture.

Once the primeval essence was converted by the bone flesh unity Gu and became Fang Yuan’s, he could utilize them.

Fang Yuan used the endless amount of snow silver primeval essence and assaulted his aperture walls.

He was now rank two peak stage, his primeval essence was deep red, and his aperture walls were of a crystal form, transparent and shiny.

Initially, in order to breakthrough from rank one peak stage to rank two on Qing Mao mountain, he had to use primeval stones to help him, and after three to four days, he barely succeeded. It was an arduous process.

When he tried to breakthrough into rank three, because of his talent, he had to use the man-beast life burial Gu, an external force.

But now, it was completely different.

Not only because his aptitude had risen to A grade ninety percent, and no longer needed the man-beast life burial Gu, he even had the assistance of Bai Ning Bing.

Human encounters were really mysterious and unpredictable. Even Fang Yuan did not see this coming.

The tough crystal walls, under the impact of the snow silver primeval essence, started to develop cracks.

The cracks grew rapidly, expanding and spreading. A moment later, the entire wall was filled with cracks.

Crack crack...

The crystal wall shattered, and numerous crystal fragments fell into the primeval sea, causing waves to splash.

Soon after, these fragments turned into white spots, dispersing in the primeval sea.

A brand new white light wall, replaced the crystal wall.

At the same time, a trace of light silver primeval essence appeared from deep within the sea.

Light silver primeval essence, it was the symbol of rank three initial stage.

At this point, Fang Yuan finally broke through rank two peak stage, and achieved rank three.

Not mentioning rank six Gu immortal, rank three was already in the middle spectrum of strength. Be it righteous or demonic, they were a strong force.

"After leaving Qing Mao mountain, in less than a year, I regained my rank three cultivation. This speed, is over three times of when I was on Qing Mao mountain, and with my A grade aptitude, my future is bright." Fang Yuan clenched his fist, cheering in his heart.

Looking at the time, only six hours passed.

So fast.

If he used his own effort, he could breakthrough as well, but it would take twenty four hours at least.

Snow silver primeval essence, it truly was the most effective.

Checking his aperture once again.

The sea of bone spear Gu, spiral bone spear Gu had all been sold.

Over half of the deep red rank two peak stage primeval essence remained.

Bai Ning Bing’s did not stop injecting her primeval essence.

A gush of snow silver primeval essence fell from the sky like a waterfall into the primeval sea, and after some turbulence, it sank to the bottom of the sea.

The higher the realm, the better the quality of the primeval essence. Red steel primeval essence and light silver primeval essence could only be pushed up by the snow silver primeval essence.

At the bottom of the primeval sea, a bone-like white and blue flower moved along with the sea currents.

It was the rank three heavenly essence treasure lotus. The "movable primeval spring", able to produce fifty primeval stones a day.

Beside the pure treasure lotus was the demonic blood skull Gu.

The blood colored skull had two eye sockets, glowing with a purple flame.

Near the blood skull Gu, there was a crystal ball, staying motionless.

Inside the crystal ball, there was a thick mist that formed into an old man that gave off an immortal aura.

The old man carried a walking cane, with a thick beard on his face, showing a calm expression.

It was the primeval elder Gu.

The old man was originally laughing and smiling, but after Fang Yuan took out half his primeval stones, his expression turned plain.

There was also another jade pendant-like beetle fossil, half transparent and jade green, it gave off cooling air.

It was the rank two clearing heat Gu, used for curing poison.

Close to them, there was also the charred thunder potato mother Gu and a rice bag Gu.

On the surface of the sea, four flavor liquor worm played with the waves. Its fat body shone with red, blue, green and yellow, symbolizing spicy, bitter, sour and sweet; four flavors in total.

In the air, there was the canopy Gu and Yang Gu, playing around the snow silver waterfall.

The canopy Gu was like a giant ladybug, its half round white shell having black spots. The Yang Gu however gave off a warm white light.

His most important vital Gu, was still asleep, drawing the water from the river of time, to recover its body.

Other than the Gu in his aperture, there was still the bone flesh unity Gu, as a bracelet on his arm, as it formed into a bracelet tattoo.

In his palm, there was the blood moon Gu.

On his tongue, there was the tusita flower tattoo.

On his left ear, the breath concealment Gu.

On his feet, the jumping grass Gu.

Flesh-bone Gu was Bai Ning Bing’s, it had been returned to her. Originally, there was a plunder Gu that resembled a black beetle, Fang Yuan had used it to snatch the Gu worms in Bai Ning Bing’s aperture, but it had died from lack of food during the caravan journey.

These were all the Gu Fang Yuan possessed. 1

"Heavenly essence treasure lotus has to be kept, but I do not have the recipe to continue refining it. I can still use it now, but when I reach rank four, its use will be negligible."

"Blood skull Gu is useless to me now, to nurture my descendants, there is too much trouble in terms of time and effort. Back then, first generation Gu Yue had no choice but to do it. I can change out this Gu, after all, it is one of the inheritance of the blood sea ancestor. I might be able to get a good Gu from the treasure realm. But treasure realm is the foundation of Shang clan, even if I had the purple thorn token... I have to plan this carefully."

"Spring Autumn Cicada, primeval elder Gu, and bone flesh unity Gu are definitely going to be kept, blood moon Gu is easy to raise but does not have enough attack and cannot be used as a set. Tusita flower should be changed too, there are better options available. I have to expose the breath concealment Gu, but jumping grass has to be removed. It was kept as emergency in the first place."

"Other than this, i have lots of strength Gu to buy, and also investigative, movement type Gu. Now that our situation is stable, and I have gained the trust of Shang clan, I can try to interact with the gambling den."

Fang Yuan considered his options.

The Gu on him were all gathered individually, they could not form into a set. And they did not even cover all grounds, severely affecting his battle strength.

At Shang clan city, they finally had time to develop themselves. He has to use this opportunity, and race against time, to get his Gu worm set in two to three years. Creating his own battle style, as well as trying to raise his cultivation as high as possible.

After that, the Three Kings Inheritance would start. Next would be the righteous demonic battle at Yi Tian mountain, one that affected the entire southern border. It was a grand event, where brave warriors reigned supreme. If one did not have enough strength, they would be cannon fodder. If he had the qualification to join, using Fang Yuan’s rebirth advantage, he would be able to gain great benefits.

...

"This subordinate greets Lord clan leader!" In the study room, Wei Yang kneeled.

Shang Yan Fei stopped writing, looking up: "Wei Yang, there is only the two of us here, do not be restrained."

"Thank you for the seat, clan leader." Wei Yang sat at a nearby seat.

Shang Yan Fei laughed, as he recalled: "You, you are still so rigid. Remember when we first met, before you dominated the battle stage, back when I was still a Shang clan young master. So many years have passed already, it was all thanks to your assistance that I became clan leader."

"This subordinate does not dare to claim credit!" Wei Yang quickly stood up, cupping his fist: "I am but a boor, only able to assist in terms of fighting. Clan leader is both intelligent and strong, I am merely the icing on the cake."

"Hehehe. Although I am intelligent and strong, I am still one person. Only with all of you, can I establish a force strong enough to dominate. Two fists cannot rival four palms , a good leader needs his men, am I right?" Shang Yan Fei looked at Wei Yang with deep intentions.

Wei Yang immediately realized that Shang Yan Fei had a deeper meaning, but could not understand his meaning, only cupping his fists: "This subordinate is ashamed."

Shang Yan Fei changed the topic: "I had thought at first that Bai Ning Bing was a girl pretending to be a guy, after all, many clans carry a male leader mentality. But today, I heard from Doctor Su Shou, Bai Ning Bing asked her about the Yin Yang rotation Gu, it seems there is a hidden story behind this. But whether she is a guy or a girl, that is a small detail, it is no longer important. What is important, is whether she and that Fang Zheng would work for us Shang clan."

Wei Yang was enlightened: "This subordinate understands."

"Mm, as long as you understand, you may leave." Shang Yan Fei waved his hand.

"This subordinate takes his leave."

Seeing the study room’s door close lightly, Shang Yan Fei leaned back on his chair and closed his eyes.

Fang and Bai were able to snatch the inheritance from Bai clan, and were able to escort Shang Xin Ci back, it showed that they had both brains and brawn.

They even had good aptitude, the report states they were rank three.

They were not even twenty yet, this truly was great talent!

Most importantly, they knew how to repay kindness, this showed they had proper character, it made people feel at ease.

And finally, they were not peasants, but were born as two clan’s successor, they had the symbol of righteousness ingrained in them from birth.

Shang Yan Fei had been in power for so many years, and had seen many young talents, but very few moved his heart like these two.

But the reason Shang Yan Fei wanted to recruit them, was not for himself, but for Shang Xin Ci.

He opened his eyes, and turned into a pillar of flame, disappearing from the study room.

When he reappeared, he was at a huge walkway.

At the two sides of the walkway, there were tall stone pillars. The ground was paved with a type of white-silver colored brick. Shang Yan Fei stood beside the stone pillar, like an ant beside a pair of chopsticks.

He walked slowly in the empty walkway, only the echo of his walking could be heard.

After a while, he arrived at the end of the walkway.

A giant red door was in front of him.

The giant door was as tall as the walkway, over thirty meters tall. There was no handle on the door, instead there was the carving of a huge human face.

The face protruded out of the door, and was sound asleep. The details of the carving was simply perfection.

Shang Yan Fei came before the door, and stared at the red door, saying in an annoyed tone: "Living treasure door, stop pretending to be asleep, what’s the point? You’ve done this too many times."

The face on the giant door immediately opened its eyes, staring at Shang Yan Fei, complaining: "Sigh, Little Fei Fei, you’ve grown up, you are not cute anymore!"

As it said so, it opened its huge mouth and a strong gust of wind blew, causing Shang Yan Fei’s hair to dance in the wind. Its voice was like thunder, as the echo reverberated in the walkway.

Shang Yan Fei’s eyes twitched: "Stop your nonsense, I am here to exchange for treasure."

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Guess what is Little Fei Fei going to exchange for at the gate of babylon?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Exchange treasure?" The face on the huge door made funny faces towards the tiny Shang Yan Fei, teasing: "Little Fei Fei, are you going to take advantage of me again? I know we are old friends, but as the guardian of the treasure realm, I will not help you to steal from the inside. Although we are such old friends..."

"How many times have I said it, can you change the way you call me?" Black lines appeared on Shang Yan Fei’s forehead.

"Then what do I call you? Little Yan Yan, Little Yan Fei or Little Yan Zi?"

Shang Yan Fei quickly waved his hand, helplessly saying: "Nevermind, nevermind, do whatever you want. Let’s get back to business, I am really here for exchanging treasure."

"Ohhh..." The huge face dragged his words, evidently not satisfied yet: "Getting to business so soon, I wanted to talk more, this place is boring me to death."

Shang Yan Fei sighed: "I am very busy, living treasure door. You know I am the Shang clan leader, it is no longer like before."

"Sigh, nevermind, every generation of clan leaders are like that. I thought you would be different. I have no requirements this time, I just want somebody to complain to, the eons of waiting truly makes me empty and lonely..." Living treasure door sighed gloomily.

"You are a door, what loneliness can you have? Can’t you just sleep? "Shang Yan Fei’s head was full of black lines.

"Sleep? I can’t fall asleep! You have no idea how hard it is to be alone..." Living treasure door started to blabber again.

"I am not here to listen to your grudges, let’s talk about business, real business." Shang Yan Fei coughed.

"Oh, then let’s do that." Living treasure door’s face became solemn: "Sure if you want to exchange treasures, but I have a condition..."

It dragged its words again.

Shang Yan Fei had a bad feeling about this.

He raised his eyebrows: "What condition, don’t tell me...?"

"Ah, looking at your expression, you’ve guessed it! That’s right, that’s right, I want you to dig my nose, dig my nose!" Living treasure door screamed excitedly.

Dig my nose...

Dig my...

Dig...

The loud voice continued to echo in the walkway.

Shang Yan Fei’s forehead was popping with veins: "Scoundrel, you’re trying this again?"

"My nose is really itchy, really itchy, I can’t breathe properly. I have no hands, I cannot dig my nose myself like you humans, I am so pitiful. Ah... Little Fei Fei, my good friend, please help me, please dig my nose. As a reward, I will give you my treasured booger." Living treasure door sang out in a poetic tone.

"Hey, enough is enough!" Shang Yan Fei clenched his fists, screaming out after he could control himself no longer.

Living treasure door snorted, giving a ’what can you do to me’ look.

Then it started to chant...

"Dig my nose!"

"Dig my nose!"

"Dig my nose!"

"Dig my nose or no treasure for you. Dig my nose and you are a good boy..."

The voice shook the air and caused the entire walkway to shake.

Shang Yan Fei lowered his head, supporting his forehead as the sounds of ’dig my nose’ reverberated the walkway.

"Alright, alright, stop chanting, I’ll do it okay?" Shang Yan Fei screamed out, completely helpless in his heart.

Even if he is a rank five Gu Master, the lord of Shang clan, against the living treasure door, there was nothing he could do.

After all, the treasure realm was left behind by Shang clan’s ancestors, this was the work of a Gu immortal beyond rank five!

"Oh yay——!" Living treasure door cried out in triumph, then it urged: "Quickly, quickly, I can’t wait anymore."

Shang Yan Fei’s expression froze, as the corner of his eyes twitched, he stretched out his right hand.

On the palm of his right hand, there was a tiny tattoo in the shape of a palm, blood red in color.

He activated his primeval essence, and the blood tattoo flew out, turning into a giant bright red hand.

Rank five — Blood Handprint Gu!

Whoever is hit by this palm, be it birds, beasts, worms or fish, as long as they had blood flowing in them, they would turn into a puddle of blood. It had great strength and a threatening effect, Shang Yan Fei used it to dominate the southern border, establishing his fierce name.

But right now, he used the blood handprint to satisfy living treasure door's weird request...

Digging its nose.

The bright red palm, turned into a fist, then stretched out its index finger, and entered the living treasure door's nostrils.

Living treasure door hummed: "Yes, that's it!"

"Ahh... it feels so good..."

"Deeper, that's right, a little deeper!"

"More strength please, it feels better if you're rougher."

"Ohh... that was too good..."

"Little Fei Fei, your technique is superb."

"Ah... ah... ahhh... CHOO!" Living treasure door opened its mouth, sneezing loudly.

Numerous red, yellow, blue, and green "booger" were blown out.

If one looked properly, the red one was typhoon mountain pepper, a god-like extinct refinement aiding material. The yellow was worry soil, one of the ingredients used to refine a rank six Gu. The blue was ice heart, only at the center of a ten million year old ice mountain can one of these grow. The green was the grass skirt Gu, rank five without any defensive ability, but once a Gu Master uses it, it can give them a grass skirt that is able to absorb primeval energy from the air, replenishing the primeval essence in the aperture rapidly!

"Alright, my breathing is smooth again. These booger are your gift. I do not want to eat them again, that is too disgusting." Living treasure door sniffed after sneezing, feeling extremely satisfied.

Shang Yan Fei kept these items, before sighing: "Can we get to business now?"

"Of course, of course, what does Little Fei Fei want?" Living treasure door's mood was much better.

"I remember that there is still a rank five man triumphing heaven Gu, I want to exchange for it." Shang Yan Fei replied.

Living treasure door showed a curious gaze: "Man triumphing heaven Gu, it has the ability to defy heaven and change fate, forcefully awakening an aperture for those mortals without cultivating talent. This Gu is extremely precious, Little Fei Fei, although we have a close friendship, and you have dug my nose many times, the treasure realm’s rules cannot be defied. If you want to exchange for this Gu, you will need to offer a Gu with even greater value to the treasure realm."

"Can you stop mentioning the digging of your nose?" Shang Yan Fei’s veins were popping as he called out a Gu.

This Gu was like a baby’s palm, tender and plump, while clear as crystal. There were red blood veins within the palm, causing the palm to emit a ghostly aura.

Living treasure door saw this Gu and exclaimed: "Eh, you are giving up the blood handprint Gu? Little Fei Fei, I remember this is one of your most useful Gu. Weren’t you collecting the blood sea inheritance? Have you given up your aspiration from young?"

Shang Yan Fei sighed helplessly: "The total number of blood sea inheritances are almost uncountable, yet the true inheritances are hidden among them, the difficulty is simply too high. Even if I use the Shang clan to investigate, after all these years, I have only gotten two of them. I want the man triumphing heaven Gu, but my other precious Gu cannot be given up, I have to temporarily sacrifice the blood handprint Gu. Someday, I might come back to redeem it."

Shang Yan Fei’s Gu worms were mostly from the blood sea inheritance, causing him to specialize in the bloodline path.

Because of this, when Shang Xin Ci entered Shang clan city, he could detect it immediately.

"Okay then, since you’ve made your decision." Living treasure door opened its mouth, and swallowed the blood handprint Gu."

Gulp.

With a loud sound, the blood handprint Gu entered the treasure realm.

Next, it regurgitated, and opened its mouth, throwing up one Gu.

This Gu was like a thousand year ginseng, with many roots and a yellow body. Its lustre was dim, as the upper part resembled a body, but the lower part diverged, like a pair of legs.

This was the man triumphing heaven Gu.

"Quickly refine it, once out of the treasure realm, in three breaths, this Gu will regain its wild nature. It will be too difficult to refine it then." Living treasure door urged.

Shang Yan Fei nodded, and activated his purple crystal primeval essence, instantly refining this man triumphing heaven Gu.

"Hehehe, with this Gu, I can awaken Ci Er’s aperture! Now, I just need a few more Gu to raise her aptitude, and assist her to cultivate. Then, I can recruit Fang and Bai, to act as her wings. Ci Er, I will make sure you are happy, but in this world, strength is the prerequisite to all happiness!" Shang Yan Fei kept the man triumphing heaven Gu, as his emotions surged.

"I am leaving, living treasure door." He said to the door.

"Hey, hey, hey, so soon? Stay and talk to me, I am really bored to death." Living treasure door anxiously asked.

But the blood flames flickered, and Shang Yan Fei vanished.

"Ah, this scoundrel, he left me alone again. I am so pitiful, so bored, so tired..." Living treasure door’s grumblings could be heard echoing in the walkway.

...

Another feast with fine wine and delicious food, as people interacted in a heated atmosphere.

"Brother Wei, brother Xiao Yan, come, another glass!" Fang Yuan stood up and shouted loudly as he raised his glass, while Bai Ning Bing watched emotionlessly as she ate her food.

Wei Yang, Xiao Yan raised their glasses at the same time, as the three glasses collided roughly, causing the wine to spill all over the table and dishes.

Back at the battle zone, Fang Yuan wanted to treat them to dinner, but Xiao Yan took the initiative to do so. This time, he kept his word, inviting these two to a feast at a huge restaurant.

"To think that brother Fang Zheng would be the one who saved Shang clan leader’s precious daughter. Good people truly get rewarded . Purple thorn token, hehe, I am extremely envious." Xiao Yan was a cheerful and honest person, not hiding his envy at all.

He had lived in Shang clan city for many years, he knew what the purple thorn token entailed.

Wei Yang put down his glass: "What are the two of you going to do from now on?"

Fang Yuan then answered: "We plan to stay in Shang clan city for a while, and sell the useless Gu we have. Next, we will buy a set of complementary Gu worms."

"Excellent, that is the proper thing to do. If you did not have such plans, I would have reminded you to do so anyway." Wei Yang raised his thumb as he cheered in his heart, Fang and Bai staying here meant that there was a greater chance of recruiting them.

"If the both of you do not mind, you can tell us your plans. Big brother Wei is very knowledgeable, he can give you good advice. My fire Gu path was also recommended by big brother Wei." Xiao Yan said at the corner.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Hope you guys laughed. Now, it’s time for the knowledgeable big brother to teach Fang Yuan how to cultivate.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Nurture, use and refinement, those were the three aspects of a Gu Master’s cultivation.

No matter which aspect, they were extremely profound, and each contained knowledge that was wide as the sea. Many people spent their entire lives without venturing fully into one of them.

"Please advise me brother Wei." At the feast, Fang Yuan cupped his fists.

"We hit it off so well, I shall not beat around the bush." Wei Yang cleared his throat, before officially teaching: "From the general aspect, Gu Masters are split into nine ranks, rank one to five are mortal, while six to nine are immortal. Among ten million Gu Masters, not even one might become an immortal. It is too tough to become one, even recognised geniuses may not reach it. But let’s not talk about immortals, but focus on mortals."

"The five mortal ranks, rank one and two are beginners, and rank four to five are a high level fighting force. Rank three is in the middle, it is what connects the two. By this point, both of you are already full-fledged Gu Masters, rank three is the most important stage, because here, you will build upon your foundations, and choose the right direction to advance, it will definitely result in a better future for you."

"By rank three, a Gu Master’s strength is already a force to be reckoned with. In many villages, rank three are clan elders. At this stage, the Gu Master has to determine the direction they want to go, and create a set of Gu worms along that line. If you want to be a support Gu Master, your Gu worms will be mainly storage type. If you want to be an investigative Gu Master, the core of your Gu worms will be investigative types. If you want a future in Gu refinement, you can choose to work on existing recipes to create your own new recipe. If someone likes to plot, they can collect thinking-assist type Gu worms, like the lightning thoughts Gu or the immortal showing the way Gu."

Wei Yang introduced again.

The so called direction refers to attack, defense, healing, storage, movement, and investigative, the six aspects.

Healing Gu Masters were known as doctors, having a grand status. Storage Gu Masters were support Gu masters, every force and clan needed them.

Wei Yang was a movement type Gu Master, his core Gu worm was the rainbow light Gu.

Of course, other than these six, there were other smaller branches.

Like a Gu Master specializing in substitute refinement, they had Gu worms that increased refinement speed or helped to weaken the Gu worm’s will.

Or maybe those Gu Masters who specialized in catching Gu, they were good at finding and capturing wild Gu worms.

All in all, by rank three, Gu masters would have started to classify into their specific classes, and they become more specialized, becoming an expert in one domain.

Saying so, Wei Yang paused, then looked at Fang and Bai, asking: "Have both of you thought about your advancement direction?"

"Attack." Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing said at the same time with no hesitation.

The two were focused on attack, they had an inborn fighting nature, and could not be easily subdued.

Wei Yang nodded, not surprised at all, he had seen many people, and could guess their choices.

He continued: "Then next, you have to choose Gu worms, and form a set, a group of Gu worms that chains into one system."

Forming a set of Gu worms had many benefits.

Firstly, in terms of feeding, similar Gu worms had similar requirement for food, it was easier to collect, store and trade for these food.

Next, in terms of use, Gu worms could be used together and increase their ability or cover up their weaknesses. For example: Wei Yang’s rainbow light Gu had great expenditure issues, but using the light source Gu, it reduced the weakness.

Lastly, in terms of refinement, placing similar Gu worms together to refine them into higher ranks, it not only saves money, but also has higher chances of success compared to refining an array of Gu worms.

"Both of you chose attack, then without doubt, an attack type Gu will have to be your core. Other Gu worms will have to support this core. Take for example Little Xiao, he chose the red fire Gu as his main attack method, then I advised him to use the duplicate Gu, to increase the number of his flames. I next chose the enlarge Gu, causing the flame to enlarge in size and become stronger. After that, I chose the fire source Gu, to reduce his primeval essence expenditure. Lastly, I chose the fire discharge Gu, as his movement type Gu." Wei Yang patted Xiao Yan’s shoulders as he said.

Xiao Yan purposely showed a bitter expression: "Big brother Wei, you dug up all my secrets."

Wei Yang did not mind it: "Haha, your secrets are well known to everyone. Among the people in the battle stage now, who does not know what Gu you own?"

Wei Yang then turned to Fang Yuan: "It is no matter even if your Gu worms are exposed; as long as you pair it well, you can deal with all situations. Your core Gu worm is the foundation of the entire set. Have you thought of what attack type Gu worms you want to use as your core?"

Fang Yuan clenched his fist: "Before this, i have already used many Gu to raise my strength. Strength is my advantage, I want to continue on it, and crush my foes with overwhelming strength."

Bai Ning Bing said the name of a Gu: "Frost demon Gu."

Speaking of which, Bai Ning Bing had a rank three frost demon Gu in the past, it allowed the Gu Master to turn into the frost demon, Bai Ning Bing had a great compatibility with it.

But during the battle with Gu Yue Qing Shu, it was destroyed.

This caused Bai Ning Bing to still have lingering emotions towards the Gu.

Wei Yang heard this and frowned: "You want to go on the strength path and ice path... For ice path, the advantage lies in defense. Frost demon Gu, snow fairy Gu, ice crystal Gu, these are the three most famous transformation type Gu. Frost demon Gu and snow fairy Gu are for women, while ice crystal Gu is more suited for men."

"As for Fang Zheng’s strength path..." Wei Yang shook his head: "I’m not trying to discourage you, but this would not work. The strength path is the most common route people choose, why is that? Because it is cheap and affordable, most of the Gu related to the strength path are cheap, but because of this, the Gu Masters do not stand out and are very ordinary."

"I’ll tell you the truth, I tried the strength path in the past, but wasted a lot of primeval stones later to remove the increased strength in my body. Most demonic Gu Masters lack resources, and use the strength path as a stepping stone. But brother Fang Zheng, you have the purple thorn token and hundreds of thousands of primeval stones, you do not have to take this narrow path, the strength path makes it hard to succeed in life!"

Hearing Wei Yang’s words, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing looked at each other, nodding.

Wei Yang smiled, he did not waste his efforts.

Xiao Yan laughed too: "After hearing brother Wei’s words, I have gained much insight as well."

"Brother Wei makes sense, but I still want to walk on the strength path." Fang Yuan cupped his fist.

"Yes, I have decided to give up on the frost demon Gu, and choose the ice crystal Gu!" Beside him, Bai Ning Bing also made her decision.

"Huh..." Wei Yang’s smile froze on his face.

"Hey, hey, hey, did you listen to what he said at all." Xiao Yan shouted.

Bai Ning Bing smiled as determination shone across her eyes.

Precisely because the ice crystal Gu is suited for males, that is why I chose it, heh.

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose: "I am thankful to brother Wei for the advice, but I still like the strength path. Others might not achieve success out of it, but if I can, doesn’t that show my superiority? Hahaha, challenges lie in difficulty, and there is only a sense of accomplishment if there is a challenge. I was hesitant before, but now that brother Wei has said it, I am definitely choosing this!"

Choosing the strength path was part of Fang Yuan’s plans; it involves the three kings inheritance in a few years.

Of course, he cannot mention that to anyone.

"You two..." Xiao Yan stared in a daze, unsure of what to say.

"This... you have to reconsider, this is not a joke!" Wei Yang’s expression was solemn, his tone was anxious, he did not expect his heartfelt advice to work in the opposite direction.

"No need to say anything else brother Wei, paths are made by men, my decision is final. Hahaha, let’s continue drinking." Fang Yuan said, showing his determination, causing Wei Yang to swallow his words.

"Sigh..." Wei Yang lifted his glass helplessly, but swore in his heart, that he had to convince them otherwise.

Especially this Fang Zheng, he was truly messing around! Treating his future as a game, he should not do this. At this rate, it would put his superior aptitude to waste!

Wei Yang really could not stand it.

He had to quickly adjust Fang Zheng’s mindset, this was a future star that the clan leader wanted to recruit.

After the banquet ended, and the nagging Wei Yang left together with Xiao Yan, Fang and Bai arrived at the Gu shop.

After showing their purple thorn token, Bai Ning Bing spent twenty-eight thousand primeval stones and bought the rank three ice crystal Gu.

Fang Yuan chose a rank two brown bear innate strength Gu, spending four thousand one hundred primeval stones.

"You really intend to make the ice crystal Gu your vital Gu?" Out of the shop, Fang Yuan frowned and asked.

Bai Ning Bing knew what he truly meant, she was rank three peak stage, if she advanced further, it would be rank four realm. She can totally purchase a rank four Gu worm in advance instead.

But Bai Ning Bing shook her head, her expression grim: "I do not intend to advance to rank four, just yesterday, I found that my aptitude rose by one percent again."

The northern dark ice soul physique was a curse coiling around Bai Ning Bing.

As she continued to cultivate, Bai Ning Bing’s aptitude would eventually return to a hundred percent, regaining the ten extreme physique status.

Thus, she would rather give up on advancing.

Rank four yellow gold primeval essence had better quality than white silver primeval essence, it could nurture the aperture better and would cause Bai Ning Bing"s aptitude to recover more quickly.

Fang Yuan’s steps halted: "Is that so, in that case, you can’t live without the Yang Gu in my hands. Hehehe, maybe you can go to Feng Yu Manor and ask them. They specialize in selling information, they might have what you need."

"You are not going with me?" Bai Ning Bing stopped, looking at Fang Yuan.

"I am going to walk around the gambling den." Fang Yuan laughed.

"Alright."

Seeing Bai Ning Bing walk away, Fang Yuan’s smile vanished.

He returned to the shop: "Shopkeeper, I forgot to buy some things earlier, do you have them?"

He gave a list.

Shopkeeper did not dare to make a purple thorn token owner wait, he quickly looked at the list and nodded: "Yes esteemed guest, we have them all."

"Good, prepare one portion for me, immediately!"

"Yes, yes, yes."

A moment later, he walked out of the backdoor of the shop, and went into another path, going to a lower level and arriving at the gambling den.

"Now then, let me see that sealed legendary Gu fossil." Moving according to his memories, Fang Yuan entered an extravagant gambling den.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

A truly helpful lesson.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

It was a black rock.

The size of a person’s face, the black rock’s surface glowed with bits of blue light.

At one glance, it resembled the stars shining in the night sky.

This was a stellar stone.

But different from the surrounding stellar stones, this one was cubic and looked like a brick.

But this rock, buried in a pile, was that legendary Gu that someone obtained. And that lucky person, from someone unknown, he became a famous strength path Gu Master all due to this Gu, causing everyone to look in envy.

Fang Yuan stood here, observing the surroundings, instantly understanding why no one cared about this rock.

This was an extravagant large sized gambling den, and had great business.

Although it was third inner city, there was human crowd around it.

Gambling rocks were classified into five categories; scrap, low, medium, high, and super grade.

At scrap grade, each rock was sold for over ten primeval stones. Low grade rocks were around a hundred primeval stones, medium grade were a thousand, high grade were ten thousand, and super grade were a few hundred thousand per piece.

And this stellar stone was of scrap grade.

Scrap grade gambling rocks were the ones most looked down on. Most were solid on the inside, even if there was a Gu, it was mostly dead carcasses.

Especially after the demonic Gu Master Wei Shen Jing’s appearance, it caused the scrap grade rocks’ market value to be severely affected.

Wei Shen Jing was skilled at creating counterfeit items, called the Counterfeit Master by people.

He had once sold large amounts of counterfeit scrap grade gambling rocks, causing almost all large clans to post his arrest warrant. In the southern border, he was hated by everybody.

This caused the scrap grade gambling rocks to become even more unpopular, but it was not completely ignored.

Sometimes, when Gu Masters were in the mood when they were shopping, they would engage in small gambles for fun. Buying a few scrap grade gambling rocks, just for entertainment. Other than that, professional gamblers also used them for practice.

After all, scrap grade gambling rocks were cheap, to some Gu Masters, there was no pain in losing the gamble.

But the problem was, this is third inner city.

Here, most Gu Masters were rank three.

Rank three was clan elder level, at this stage, most had their own assets. Even if they were practising, the would choose low grade rocks which had a much higher chance of winning.

Scrap grade rocks were an insult to them.

Despite so, in such a large gambling den, which was overflowing with people, there were certain Gu Masters who had their attention on these scrap rocks.

But still...

"Hehehe, how would they guess, that the stellar stone used to support a leg of this counter would hide a legendary Gu worm." Fang Yuan laughed in his heart.

Indeed, this stellar stone was used to fix a shaky counter, placed below one of its legs.

People moved about, but who would notice an ordinary counter out of tens of rows of counters at the scrap rock area.

These counters were filled with scrap grade rocks, one piled on top of another. They were so cheap it was like the rows of vegetables and fruits in a market back on Earth.

None of the Gu Masters who came here placed their sights on these scrap grade gambling rocks.

Thus, this stellar stone became unnoticed, and eventually gathered a layer of dust, causing it to be even more unappealing.

No one knew when this stellar stone started being used as counter support, but during this period, an uncountable number of people walked past it daily.

Until one day.

A down-and-out Gu Master, came here, and tripped at this counter.

To be honest, this Gu Master should be blamed for not looking at where he’s going. The counter was an inanimate object, so many Gu Masters walked past it daily but no one had ever been tripped by it.

Like a lamp post, it stood straight on the street, being no obstacle to men, but some people tend to knock onto it for no reason. Can you blame the lamp post for that?

But no matter what world it is, reasons do not resolve arguments, only strength does.

A farmer raised a rooster, but it was so noisy the farmer could not get his nap. Feeling angered, the farmer slaughtered the rooster, there was seemingly nothing wrong with that.

No matter which world, the stronger person only had to relent a little to resolve conflicts. But the eventual settlement of the issue would often result in the stronger person not giving in, and the weaker person would pay a heavy price.

The Gu Master was tripped, even though he did not fall down, he was angry. He vented his anger on this piece of rock.

Since you dared to trip me, I will slice you open!

Thus, the Gu Master bought this rock, and dissected it in public.

And then, the legendary Gu appeared in this world.

It was a very dramatic incident, but precisely because it was so dramatic that people passed around the story in Fang Yuan’s previous life.

And now, this incident has not happened yet.

This stellar stone, was still used as a counter support, quietly and silently awaiting its fate.

And Fang Yuan’s feet, was only two inches from it.

"Dear customer, is this your first time here?" A clerk walked over seeing Fang Yuan’s dazed expression, he was not aware Fang Yuan was looking at this rock with the corner of his eye.

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose, saying: "Yeah I guess." If he did not consider his previous life, this was the second time he was at a gambling den.

Newbie.

Easy to trick!

The clerk’s smile became extremely bright: "Please come inside, to speak the truth, the rocks here are the cheapest, but nothing cheap is good. They have poor quality, and are of all shapes and sizes, what can you get out of them? Let me introduce for you, customer."

"Oh? Then talk." Fang Yuan’s eyebrows raised as he followed the clerk into the gambling den.

"Customer, do you know how gambling rocks are formed?" The clerk walked ahead as he looked back and asked.

Before Fang Yuan replied, he answered already: "As the saying goes, Man is the spirit of all livings beings, Gu is the essence of heaven and earth . Man has great inspiration and thus are able to innovate. They have the highest intelligence, and can create many things, many new Gu worms that do not originate from nature. Gu is the essence of heaven and earth, they have little intelligence, but their tiny bodies contain the law fragments of the Great Dao."

"Heaven and earth always leaves a chance of survival, some Gu worms get gravely injured, or run out of food, they might go into hibernation. Through long periods of time, a rock layer would form around their bodies. The rock gets thicker, and thicker, until it gains substantial mass. As time passes, more and more layers form, until a fossil is created. These rocks wrap around the Gu worms, and due to the influence of the law fragments in the Gu worms, they become different from other rocks, and look very different compared to the surrounding soil. People find these fossils, and collect them, this is the truth of the gambling rock that you see before you."

Fang Yuan nodded, as he walked, he answered: "Hmm, I’ve heard of the story of the gambling rock before."

The deeper he went into the gambling den, the more Gu Masters he saw.

Many Gu Masters were picking rocks, or discussing quietly.

The gambling stage and empty spaces felt even more silent due to the soft discussions.

The clerk calmly said: "Since customer wants to gamble, you cannot be rash about it. We might be a gambling den, but we do not scam our customers. We have to let you gamble with a peace of mind, and be informed about your decisions. Here, we sell old man stones, pushing cart stones, stellar stones, cold ice stones. Each rock are split into five grades according to quality, and have different prices. It ranges from over a hundred thousand to a few primeval stones."

"Customer, the area you were at earlier was the cheapest scrap grade area, I did not recommend you to buy from there because the quality there is the worst, let’s take the stellar stone for example."

"In the stellar stone, starlight type Gu are the most commonly seen. These Gu contain the law of the stars, thus, the fossil develops markings that resembles shining stars. Among star type Gu, the most commonly seen are the rank one star dart Gu, thus the fossil would become the shape of a dart. If it is the star arrow Gu, the fossil would be long and have a pointy tip and a spreading end. There is also the shooting star Gu, the fossil would be round but carries a tail. There is a very high chance of having a Gu within rocks of these shapes."

"Of course, other than the appearance, there are many other elements, like the number of shining stars, the more there are, the more likely there is a Gu within, and the higher rank it could be. Customer, what you are seeing now, are medium grade rocks. You will discover that better grade rocks are better. Of course, the price is steeper."

"Yes, that is indeed so." Fang Yuan casually remarked.

The clerk used a proud tone as he said: "Our shop has the most talented rock dissecting masters, they have at least twenty years of experience. There is a Master Duan, he specializes in using acid to dissect the rocks, having over fifty years of experience."

"I strongly advise you to dissect the rock in our shop after choosing your gambling rock. The rock dissecting master are professionals, and they have a set of Gu worms specially used to dissect rocks."

"The method of dissecting has to be appropriate, like for the stellar stone, magnetism should be used. For old man stone, acid should be used."

"If there is a Gu within the gambling rock, they are extremely weak. If a wrong method is used to excavate them, it can deal a fatal blow to them, it would be too late then."

"Customer, if you choose rocks from the high and super grade area, we can dissect the rock for you for free. If you choose from low or medium grade, you will have to pay yourself. For scrap grade, hehe, we do not advise you to waste money hiring a dissecting master. The cost of hiring him would greatly exceed the price of the rocks itself."

Back on Qing Mao mountain, when Jia clan caravan came, Fang Yuan once dissected the purple gold rock for himself.

But his method, was simply brute force.

Thankfully, the purple gold rock was softer, the mudskin toad had a strong life force, of course, it also had to do with Fang Yuan’s great experience.

Rock dissecting cannot be done through brute force, it would easily murder the Gu worm inside.

If Fang Yuan wanted to dissect rocks, he would need to employ the rock dissecting masters in this shop.

After one round, Fang Yuan chose a few rocks at the low grade area. Old man stones, pushing cart stones, and stellar stones, a few of each.

The clerk was disappointed, after spending so much effort in speaking and encouraging, trying to convince Fang Yuan to buy a few high grade rocks, but how could Fang Yuan fall for this.

Getting this result after such a long time, the clerk spoke listlessly: "Dear customer, do you have a token? If it is a yellow pear token and above, there are discounts available. Please show me your token if you have one."

Soon after, his expression changed, as he opened his mouth wide, his eyes about to fall off.

"Purple thorn token? Oh my god!"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Something something recognise Mount Tai. Anyway, we rank 50 yesterday so to celebrate... there will be another chapter in 2 hours.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The purple thorn token was letting out a dreamy and illusionary light.

The clerk stared at this token closely, his expression sluggish as he was lost for words.

After a long while, he came back to his senses and respectfully said: "Esteemed guest, please forgive me for being blind! Please wait a moment, I will go call the shopkeeper."

The shopkeeper was a middle-aged white fatty who ran in flustering when he heard a purple thorn token holder appeared.

He immediately bowed deeply towards Fang Yuan: "Esteemed guest, your presence brings light to this little shop!"

Fang Yuan pointed at the rocks he chose and said indifferently: "I have chosen some rocks, I will have to trouble you guys to dissect them."

The shopkeeper was stupefied when he looked at the rocks, how could they all be low grades?

He could not help quickly glancing at the clerk with a reproachful gaze: ’Those with purple thorn tokens are all important characters, big clients, you actually let him choose these rocks?’

The clerk stood uneasily at the side, words stuck at his throat.

The shopkeeper bowed his head towards Fang Yuan: "Esteemed guest, you don’t need to worry about dissecting the rocks. Purple thorn token holders can have rocks dissected free of charge in rock gambling zone. After calculating the discounts for these rocks, it comes down to six hundred and fifty primeval stones."

"I know the rock gambling rules, pay first before dissecting the rocks." Fang Yuan nodded and took out the primeval stones from primeval elder Gu.

The shopkeeper swifty received the primeval stones and turned towards the clerk: "Go and call Great Master Duan, Master Huang, Master Zhang, Master Zhao and Master Ma here quickly."

He then turned towards Fang Yuan: "Esteemed guest, rock dissection counter is inside, let’s wait there."

The five old masters at dissecting rocks were resting at the small courtyard behind the rock gambling den. At their levels, they couldn’t be bothered with dissecting normal gambling rocks. Those in charge of dissecting normal rocks were their disciples or some young Gu Masters.

The clerk ran all the way to the courtyard and explained the purpose of his visit.

"Oh, requesting all five of us to go?" The five old masters’ gaze shone with radiance.

"Could it be someone bought those few super grade gambling rocks?" The old masters immediately felt their hands itching.

The clerk shook his head: "It is only some low grade gambling rocks."

The old masters expressions changed into an unhappy one.

Great Master Duan snorted coldly.

Asking them to dissect low grade gambling rocks was simply an insult and contempt towards their identities.

But the clerk immediately followed: "The person has a very high status and possesses the purple thorn token. So the shopkeeper intentionally asked me to call all five masters!"

"What, purple thorn token?"

"Are you sure?"

"Shang Clan has existed for thousands of years but the number of purple thorn tokens it has given out is mere a few hundred. And now, someone who holds a purple thorn token appears?"

"Quickly, what are you being dazed for?"

The five Gu Masters hurriedly ran out of the courtyard and walked up the platform.

On the work platform, the young rock dissecting masters got a little shock, and quickly greeted them.

The old masters waved their hands and made these juniors get down from the platform.

This scene quickly attracted the bystanders’ attention and soon many gazes were casted here.

The curious nature of people aroused and they began discussing in whispered tones.

"What is going on here?"

"All five masters have appeared together, this is a rarely seen sight."

"Could it be someone bought a batch of super grade gambling rocks?"

Fang Yuan was accompanied by the shopkeeper and was already before the rock dissection counter with the crowd. However he did not go forward, and just gazed from afar to maintain a low profile. But the five old masters were astute and saw the shopkeeper following a young man like an attendant, how could they still not recognize Fang Yuan’s identity?

However, Fang Yuan remained gazing from afar and did not walk towards the platform.

The five old masters thought: ’it seems this young master doesn’t want to show off."

This was also normal.

Many people behaved the same before dissecting rocks because they would have no face if they lost the gamble!

"I have to do this properly and leave behind a deep impression in this esteemed guest, having a connection with someone of higher status would be great." The five old masters were all scheming in their mind and rubbing their hands, eager to try it out at that thought.

The rocks Fang Yuan chose was delivered by the clerk.

The spectators couldn’t believe their eyes when they saw these rocks.

"What? These are only some low grade rocks!"

"I am not seeing it wrongly, right? These damaged rocks..."

"Making the old masters dissect low grade gambling rocks, this is simply an insult to them."

But what made them even more surprised and stare with their eyes wide open was the following scene.

The five old masters held these gambling rocks and placed them carefully on the stone platform. Their expressions were very serious as they did this, then they summoned their respective Gu worms and began dissecting the rocks.

Most of the five old masters were at rank two peak stage while great master Duan was the only one in rank three. For a moment, the appearance of different Gu worms stunned the crowd.

"What in the world is going on!"

"Could it be these rocks have a long history behind them and aren’t as simple as they look?"

"I have never seen the five old masters look this cautious and serious."

...

On the platform, Gu worms flew about as the five old masters showed off their unique methods.

Great master Duan whose cultivation was the highest was known as a great expert in dissecting rocks in the rock gambling den. He specialised in using acid to dissect rocks. He took out a king-sized bowl then summoned a snake Gu which spurted out acidic liquid into the bowl.

He then carefully put a gambling rock into the acid.

Bubbles continuously formed and popped in the acid.

After quite a while, with his hands covered in a layer of light, he took out the gambling rock which had shrunk by half. He then placed it into another type of acid.

Master Zhang used magnetism to dissect the rocks. His palms faced each other and the gambling rock was put in between them; the gambling rock floated in air and bits of rocks was continually extracted by the power of magnetism.

As for other masters; one called out a frog Gu which used its tongue to lick the gambling rock. Another used fire to roast the rock, and another controlled a small whirlwind to cut down the gambling rock.

The group of young rock dissecting Gu Masters watched from behind the old masters with a stunned gaze.

Why was there a need for such a great fanfare for some low grade gambling rocks? It was simply using an ox-cleaver to carve a chicken or using a talented person for an insignificant task!

’Could it be the old masters have some hidden intent for doing doing this? It won’t do, I need to observe it properly.’

The results, however, made everyone flabbergasted. After the dissection, these low grade gambling rocks didn’t have anything impressive; it was either solid rock or hollow inside, there was not even a dead Gu.

"What the! I thought there was something special going on."

"So they were all ordinary low grade rocks."

"Why were these old masters in such a hurry for? They really wasted my time..."

The surrounding spectators were greatly disappointed and stormed out.

The shopkeeper’s face paled as he heard these remarks. In the past, he would have been really happy if the gamblers didn’t get any Gu worms from the gambling rocks they chose. But now, he really wished he could stuff in some Gu worms inside the rocks.

Purple thorn token holders could not be easily offended!

He cautiously looked at Fang Yuan thinking of something to say to comfort him.

However, Fang Yuan was smiling: "No matter, it seems my luck isn’t good today, so I will stop now. I will come again another time."

The shopkeeper and the clerk respectfully accompanied Fang Yuan towards the door.

They were even thinking of accompanying him out to the streets, but were stopped by Fang Yuan.

Only after Fang Yuan’s figure disappeared in the street, did the shopkeeper lift up his bent back. He turned towards the clerk and gave a strong knock on his head, scolding him for neglecting an esteemed guest!

The clerk rubbed his head in pain, but did not dare to say anything.

Fang Yuan’s purpose in coming here today was only to probe.

Now, since he found his target, his visit today was already achieved. But he couldn’t directly take the stellar stone out, he would have to take twists and turns.

Fang Yuan needed to dissect the stellar stone to get the Gu, but he didn’t have any ways to dissect it by himself. Collecting a set of specialized rock dissecting Gu worms would be too much of a waste, thus he would have to let the old Gu Masters in the rock gambling den take care of it.

It would only lead to a commotion if the old Gu Masters dissected the rock in front of everybody. And requesting them to secretly dissect the rock by using purple thorn token was also not appropriate and would only create suspicions.

If Fang Yuan got a legendary Gu worm right off the start, it would mean his luck was way too good.

Fang Yuan had no doubts of the huge influence of Shang Clan. With the recent investigation on him Shang Yan Fei probably knew about Fang Yuan winning the mudskin toad in rock gambling in Jia Clan’s caravan.

Winning a mudskin toad on his first gamble and a legendary Gu in his next; a smart man like Shang Yan Fei would definitely be suspicious.

The profits involved in rock gambling was huge; if Shang Yan Fei doubted Fang Yuan had some ways to check if the rocks had Gu worms in them or not, he was bound to be tempted and even make his move.

Fang Yuan had no such methods, but no matter what, some Gu worms on him could never be exposed.

Especially Spring Autumn Cicada.

And on Shang Liang mountain, Shang Yan Fei was not the main threat. The real main threat were the rank six Gu Masters.

Almost all the overlord level forces had rank six Gu Masters behind them.

When a Gu Master reached rank six, they would dwell in deep seclusion and rarely come out; one secluded cultivation could last for dozens of years. It was all because their strength would continue to experience a qualitative change and they had their own problems to take care of.

But it would all change if Spring Autumn Cicada was exposed; these rank six Gu Masters were bound to come charging in.

’A little impatience can spoil great plans.’

Fang Yuan was cautious by nature, how could he make such big mistakes in these small places?

He would put an end to all risks that could expose Spring Autumn Cicada, even if that meant there was a risk for the stellar stone to be discovered.

According to his previous life’s memories, the probability of the legendary Gu being discovered was infinitesimally small. But even if it was discovered, Fang Yuan had already planned for it and it was better than attracting suspicions on himself and risk the exposure of Spring Autumn Cicada.

"Now, I will stroll around the rock gambling zone for few days and buys some gambling rocks to leave behind an impression on people."

Fang Yuan continued to scheme while walking back to Nan Qiu garden.

Bai Ning Bing was already back from Feng Yu Manor.

"I have been waiting for you." She took out the ice crystal Gu and gave to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan used the aura of Spring Autumn Cicada to refine it then threw it back to Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing would help him in cultivation and he would help Bai Ning Bing in refining Gu; this was one of the terms in poison vow.

Bai Ning Bing took the ice crystal Gu and walked to a secret room to refine it.

Fang Yuan also walked to another secret room and began refining a Gu.

The name of the Gu — Eating one’s words.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

I think it’s pretty clear what he’s doing now. (For those who said he uses a certain aura of a certain Gu)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Starlight shone on the secret room.

Fang Yuan sat cross-legged on his mat and started refining his Gu.

After he parted with Bai Ning Bing, he went to the shop again and bought all that he needed to refine the eating one’s words Gu. Of course, to prevent his secret recipe from being exposed and hide his true intentions, he bought some unnecessary materials as well.

He willed, and summoned a Gu.

This Gu was round like a ball, fist sized and orange in color. The surface was wrinkled and thick, giving an unpleasant feeling at touch.

This was a rank one smelly fart Gu.

Its only use was to emit a foul odor and possessed no attacking power.

However, even though this Gu has little to no use on its own, it was a widely used refinement material.

Fang Yuan injected light silver primeval essence, causing the smelly fart Gu’s body to expand and float in the air.

At the same time, he opened an urn in front of him.

At once, a rotten smell spread on the room.

In this urn, there was rotting swamp mud - black and gooey. This mud was also a widely used refinement material.

"Rice bag, go." Fang Yuan willed, and a seed flew out of his aperture.

The seed was planted into the mud, and as his primeval sea level fell, dark green vines grew out of the rotten mud.

The vines continued to extend and grow out of the urn; after around 60 centimeters, leaves started to grow on it.

These leaves were bucket shaped. They were small at first, but grew to the size of a bowl quickly.

Fang Yuan peeled the leaf from the top of these buckets, revealing the white delicious rice kernels within.

However, Fang Yuan did not take them out, but poured the rice grains into the rotting mud. He next lowered the smelly fart Gu, and multi-tasked, activating the rice bag grass and smelly fart Gu at the same time.

The smelly fart Gu glowed in an orange light, while the rice bag grass gave off a green light; the two fused together eventually.

The fusion light dimmed, as it went deep into the urn.

The urn vibrated intensely, before finally stopping as a new Gu flew out of it; yellow-brown in color, like a lump of mud, it gave off a slight stench just like faeces.

This was the defecate Gu.

It might look unappealing, but it could cause people to suffer from diarrhoea. Many doctors used it to heal illnesses and for detoxification; this gu was very valuable.

Fang Yuan was calm as always.

Gu existed in all forms and sizes. It could be the pure and holy heavenly essence treasure lotus, the poetic and mysterious Spring Autumn Cicada, the evil and bizarre blood skull Gu. Without a doubt, one that was disgusting in appearance, smell and touch, such as the defecate Gu or smelly fart Gu existed as well.

Refining the rank two defecate Gu was the first step.

Next, Fang Yuan took out the big strength Gu, bought from the shop as well. This could increase a Gu Master’s strength for fifty breaths of time.

Fang Yuan fused the big strength Gu and defecate Gu, successfully refining the big strength defecate Gu.

Although the big strength defecate Gu was rank three, its purpose was the same as the defecate Gu, even looking similar but its effect was three times as strong.

This Gu, however, was much less popular than its rank two counterpart.

Gu worms were not necessarily better as they get higher in rank.

Rank three Gu worms consumed much more food than their lower counterparts, although the big strength defecate Gu was more effective, the same effect could be achieved if one used the defecate Gu multiple times. There were also cases of misdiagnosis, where the big strength defecate Gu was used inappropriately and resulted in a person dying from excessive diarrhoea.

Obtaining the big strength defecate Gu was the second step.

Next, Fang Yuan took out the lion roar Gu.

This Gu looked like a lion head, and once used, it summoned an image of a lion’s head, the size of a stone mill, and unleash the mighty lion’s roar. It was often used to send signals or scare away wild beasts. In battle, when used properly, it could cause the opposing Gu Master to lose their concentration.

Fang Yuan used both the lion roar Gu and big strength defecate Gu.

As a result, a weird scene appeared in the air; a lion head’s image opened its mouth and started to eat the big strength defecate Gu.

But after eating a third of it, the lion roar Gu could not eat anymore, and the image was on the verge of collapsing.

Thereupon, Fang Yuan willed, and summoned a paper crane Gu, also bought from the shop.

This Gu was split into light blue, dark green, pink and several other colors; it was especially used to send letters.

The light blue color paper crane flew towards the lion roar Gu, and was swallowed by lion image.

Doing three things at once!

If outsiders saw this, they would scream out in shock.

It would be impressive if ordinary Gu Masters could do two things at once. But three, few could do it, this was a display of a Gu Master’s extreme talent in refinement.

Many ordinary Gu Masters required the use of Gu worms to be able to multitask.

Fang Yuan used the lion roar Gu, big strength defecate Gu as well as the paper crane Gu using only his own mind.

But to him, this was not talent, rather it was an accumulated experience.

Any skills could be improved with practice. Fang Yuan spent five hundred years, slowly gaining experience, and trained for hundreds of years. From doing a single task at one time, it increased to two, then three, sometimes he could even do four things at once!

Of course, any more and he would need an assistance Gu worm.

After the lion head image swallowed the paper crane Gu, it no longer fizzled, but went back to original.

Fang Yuan continued to will it to eat the big strength defecate Gu.

After another one-third, the same thing happened, as the lion head image fizzled once again.

Fang Yuan was not flustered and calmly called out the second deep green paper crane Gu.

As with before, the lion head image started to become unstable again after it swallowed the entire big strength defecate Gu.

Fang Yuan then used the third pink paper crane Gu.

After swallowing it, the lion head image suddenly shrunk by more than half, and its white body started to glow in light blue, dark green, and pink. At the same time, the lion image started to chant: "Eat shit, eat shit..."

The voice echoed in the room, causing Fang Yuan’s ears to buzz.

He was not afraid of the sound leaking, as it was a special secret room with reinforced walls, isolating any sounds.

He cheered in his heart, this Gu was finally completed!

This was the eating one’s words Gu!

But this eating one’s words Gu could only exist for ten breaths before it destroyed itself.

Fang Yuan did not dare to waste any time, calling the eating one’s words Gu to his side.

As the light blue, deep green, and pink color lights shone on him, Fang Yuan’s body started to produce a faint purple smoke.

"Eat shit, eat shit..."

The smoke trembled and moved about as the lion roared; in two breath’s time, the smoke gathered into the images of two poison vow Gu.

Fang Yuan willed, and the lion head image opened its mouth, swallowing it. As it chewed, the poison vow Gu gave out an indignant cry, but it soon came to a stop.

The lion head image opened its mouth again, swallowing the other poison vow Gu. As it chewed, the poison vow Gu was completely eliminated, not a trace of purple smoke remained on Fang Yuan.

A few breaths later, the lion head image exploded into a three color rain in the air. The light rained down, causing the entire secret room to shine brilliantly.

Fang Yuan stood among the light raindrops, revealing a cold smile as his lips curled up.

Poison vow Gu?

Hehehe... hahaha...

Trying to restrict me with a poison vow Gu, how naive!

However, they could not be blamed. In his previous life, this eating one’s words Gu only appeared two hundred years later.

It originated from a tribe leader in the west desert, only spreading around the world after another few decades. After ten more years, someone finally invented the black and white paper Gu replacing the poison vow Gu; it could not be broken by the eating one’s words Gu.

The eating one’s words Gu lost its effects, but in another few hundred years, the distorting black and white Gu appeared which was able to overrule the power of the black and white paper Gu.

Poison vow Gu, eating one’s words Gu, black and white paper Gu, distorting black and white Gu, this was just a small segment of the struggle between agreements and breaking them. The struggle has been going on since the beginning of time and will continue into the future.

Fang Yuan possessed five hundred years of experience, it was as if he was ahead of the world by five hundred years! It was not hard to overrule the poison vow Gu.

Once the restraints were gone, Fang Yuan felt relaxed. Most importantly, he only removed his side of the vow, thus, Shang Ya Zi and Bai Ning Bing still had the restraints of the poison vow Gu on them.

This way, Fang Yuan held the complete advantage against these two people.

"Shang Ya Zi is narrow-minded, after I extorted him like this, he will definitely take revenge. But I have already planned for that, I shall let him play around for now. As for Bai Ning Bing, now that you are dancing in the palm of my hands, I will make good use of you in the short run, there is no need to fall out yet."

"These few days, after I gave away half my primeval stones, and bought many Gu, I spent over tens of thousands of primeval stones. Including the banquet treat, Nan Qiu garden’s rental, the expenses at the gambling den, and the food for Gu worms, I have only four hundred and twenty thousand left."

If one did not have huge worries, they would worry about small things . Thinking about this, Fang Yuan frowned.

He wanted to assemble a set of Gu worms, he might seem wealthy now, but it was not enough.

Rank one Gu worms were around five hundred primeval stones. Rank two were five hundred to a thousand. Rank three ranged from a thousand to ten thousand.

For rank four, it ranged from ten thousand to a hundred thousand. For rank five, it could range from a hundred thousand to a million.

Rank six Gu has never been sold before.

These prices were only for ordinary Gu. Some rare Gu like liquor worm had the price of a rank two Gu although they were rank one.

The relic Gu was even more expensive. Green copper relic Gu was two thousand, red steel relic Gu was eight thousand, white silver relic Gu was fifty thousand, and the yellow gold relic Gu was close to three hundred thousand!

Fang Yuan had four hundred and twenty thousand now, he could not even afford two yellow gold relic Gu.

Relic Gu were natural Gu, they cannot be refined by Gu Masters. In many occasions, not even money could buy them.

"I want to stay here for two-three years, four hundred and twenty thousand won’t even last me for a year. Gu Masters rely on resources to cultivate, the higher the rank, more the expenses. Next, I still have to spend a ton on the gambling den, I need to find a good way to earn money."

Shang clan city was bustling and competition was intense, but chances were everywhere.

As long as you had the ability, earning money was easy, but without ability, you will get eliminated.

This was another law of nature, filled with cruel competition.

Fang Yuan combined his previous life’s experiences, and his understanding of this life, already having an idea on how to earn primeval stones.

That would be the battle stage.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Now THIS is why I called it eating one’s words Gu. Because Fang Yuan’s words are as good as _____.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Wei Yang was distressed, he had been having a headache for the past few days.

Shang Yan Fei wanted to recruit Fang and Bai, but even after Wei Yang’s probing, the two did not show a hint of interest in joining them.

This was normal.

They were youngsters. Hot-blooded and at the peak of their lives, having grand aspirations and did not want to be under anyone, always thinking that effort was the key to success in this world.

Naive, so very naive.

Wei Yang could understand, he went through this phase in his youth.

Thus, he did not directly recruit Fang and Bai.

Once he made it clear, and got rejected, there would be no way to salvage the situation. Wei Yang was a sly fox, he had already devised a plan to make the two slowly fall into his trap.

He did not think of anything scheming or devious. For something like recruiting talents, the important thing was willingness. If they were forced, it would ruin the entire result.

Especially after Wei Yang had interacted with these two for a few days, he knew they were not the type to give in.

Thus, Wei Yang decided to take it slow as he influenced them gradually, using a righteous method to achieve victory.

For this, he had great confidence.

"What does a Gu Master’s cultivation rely on? Resources! It is easy for righteous Gu Masters, but for demonic Gu Masters... hehe."

Wei Yang was once a demonic Gu Master, fighting his way out of the battle stage.

He knew the hardships of being a demonic Gu Master.

Gu Master’s cultivation could not steer away from primeval stones, Gu worms, and food to feed them. The higher the cultivation, the greater the need for them.

At the start, Gu Masters could still fulfill this need using their own abilities.

But later, they would find that the resources needed were too huge, and competition got more intense, sometimes they were even unable to procure food for themselves!

When Wei Yang was rank one, he stepped into the battle stage. From rank one to two, then to three, the stronger he got, the weaker he felt.

Like a scholar, the more he learned, the more ignorant he felt about himself. The stronger Wei Yang got, the more he knew how weak he was.

An individual was so weak, only by relying on others, and relying on a clan, could one survive better.

When he realized this, he accepted Shang Yan Fei’s offer.

He had gone through this himself.

"When Fang and Bai learn how weak they are alone, Shang clan’s recruitment will come to fulfilment. But before that, I cannot watch Fang Zheng step into the wrong path, this would expend his youth and effort, and put that great talent he has to waste!"

In Wei Yang’s perspective, Fang Yuan choosing the strength path was a huge mistake.

The hot-bloodedness and ignorance of youth.

Strength path?

From Shang clan battle stage, among those demonic Gu Masters who managed to make it out, which one used strength to dominate? None!

Strength path is one for bottom feeders, it cannot help a Gu Master in succeeding.

Thinking of relying on the strength path to make it big in life? Fat chance!

Nonetheless, things did not advance as he wished.

These days, Wei Yang had approached Fang Yuan and advised him many times, but each time, he was rejected as Fang Yuan kept a firm attitude.

Wei Yang learnt just how stubborn Fang Yuan could be, after failing many times, he went back and considered it carefully, finally deciding on a new method of advising...

This day, he came again.

"Brother Wei, you are advising me to enter the battle stage, and participate in battles?" Fang Yuan showed a confused expression.

"Yes, I relied on the battle stage, cultivating step by step, I will definitely share my good experience with you." Wei Yang gave a sincere gaze.

Next, he lifted three fingers: "There are three benefits you can gain from entering the battle stage."

"Firstly, you can earn a fortune. Each battle that you participate in, as long as you win, you can gain primeval stones. The more viewers you get, the more the primeval stones you earn."

"Secondly, you can gain Gu worms. There is a rule in the battle stage, the winner can choose a Gu from the loser and take it from them."

"Thirdly, entering the battle stage can train your battle tactics. At the same time, it examines the strength and cooperativeness of your Gu worms. It would help you to make the relevant adjustments."

Fang Yuan heard Wei Yang’s final sentence, and understood in his heart.

These days, Wei Yang had advised him to give up on the strength path, and change to another path. After failing, he decided to use an indirect method, using the battle stage to let Fang Yuan experience the weakness of the strength path, forcing him to give up on it.

"The cultivation of the strength path was decided after a long and thorough analysis, it has great benefits for my future, how could I change it? But, the battle stage is also part of my plans..."

Thinking so, Fang Yuan nodded, agreeing with Wei Yang.

Wei Yang was joyous: "Back when you fought with me, you only borrowed the use of the battle stage. Shang clan’s battle stage has a refined system, if you want to participate, you will need to sign up for it. Follow me!"

Thus, the two came to fifth inner city’s battle zone.

This was far more crowded than third inner city, as people moved about, all sorts of voices entered Fang Yuan’s ears, and an intense atmosphere assaulted him.

"Did you hear? Li Hao won again, this is this thirteenth consecutive victory, before long, he would be able to rise to fourth inner city."

"He has rank three cultivation, it is certain that he will enter fourth inner city."

...

"Did you see Wang Da Han and Ma De Quan’s battle? It was so exciting!"

"Wang Da Han lost to Ma De Quan, losing his most important raindrop Gu, he is nearly crippled."

...

"Zhao Da Xiong and Zhang Niu’s battle is about to start, go see!"

"These two are both from the strength path, there is nothing nice to watch. We might as well go see the match between Qiao Da and Qiao Er, a battle between brothers."

...

Wei Yang purposely disguised himself, as he led the way for Fang Yuan, as he said: "You need to have thirty net victories in fifth inner city to advance to fourth inner city. There, you will need eighty net victories to advance to third inner city. What do I mean by net victory? For example, if you won ten battles, and lost two, you would have eight net victories."

"The battle stage is split into three levels, low level in fifth inner city, middle level in fourth inner city, and high level in third inner city. Little brother, you are a newbie at the battle stage, your wins and losses are both zero. According to the rules, you will have to start at fifth inner city."

"Don’t be anxious yet, the way I look at it, you should be able to quickly rise to middle level. As for high level, it might take quite some effort, but it should still be quite fast. A year or two would do." Wei Yang patted Fang Yuan’s shoulders and said.

He acknowledged Fang Yuan’s battle talent, but the strength path only dominated the middle and lower levels, once he got to the high level battle stage, where experts roamed, the strength path’s weakness would gradually show, being greatly suppressed by other paths.

Under Wei Yang’s lead, the two came to a grand hall.

In the hall, there was a great number of Gu Masters requesting battles or checking battle details.

Some were here to participate, some were here to watch battles, and there were even some here to set up their betting business.

Wei Yang did not squeeze with them, but pushed open a small door.

There was a narrow walkway behind the door, and two Gu Masters guarded it.

One of the Gu Masters came forward, saying to Wei Yang and Fang Yuan: "This is a special reception, unauthorised people are not allowed to enter."

Wei Yang displayed his clan elder token, and the two quickly cupped their fists and gave way.

After crossing the tunnel, it was another hall, with four reception tables.

Three of the tables had guests already.

This place was much quieter than the grand hall.

Fang Yuan used Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s name to sign up. After paying five hundred primeval stones, he obtained a vine information Gu.

This Gu was like a long vine, having many large jade green leaves.

It was a rank one Gu, storing some of Fang Yuan’s information inside.

This Gu was not bought by Fang Yuan but rented to him by Shang clan city. Fang Yuan was in charge of feeding it, but he could not alter the information inside, only Shang clan could.

Of course, it was not hard to hack the rank one vine information Gu, but Shang clan had a backup copy of the information, and with everyone’s watchful gaze, situations where the information was fake rarely happened.

"There are not many rules in the battle stage, there is a high degree of freedom. If you wish to battle, come here to sign up, Shang clan will assign you an opponent. They can be stronger or weaker than you, but you can also designate the opponent you want, although they will have to agree. Once a month, an individual has one chance to challenge another person, where they are not allowed to reject."

"Moreover, there is also a restriction in the number of battles in the battle stage. A person can only issue one challenge a day. Every ten days, you have to participate in at least one battle or we will remove one win from you. If your overall losses reach five, your qualification will be revoked. If you want to participate again, you will need to sign up again. Now, are you interested in taking part, and trying it out?" Wei Yang smiled.

Fang Yuan nodded.

This was the special reception, the efficiency of the receptionists was high, Fang Yuan was quickly assigned an opponent: "The time is 1:30pm, the location is at number five battle stage, the terrain is grassland."

There were only about seven minutes till the start of the battle.

Wei Yang brought Fang Yuan over to number five battle stage, his opponent was already waiting inside.

He was a young man, tall and skinny, an ordinary appearance and wore a green shirt.

Seeing Fang Yuan enter the stage, joy flashed across his eyes.

Looking at Fang Yuan, he was just a youngster, how high could his cultivation be?

Looking at himself, he had recently advanced to rank two middle stage, this was his first battle since coming out of closed cultivation, it was a good sign.

Fang Yuan entered the field, number five battle stage was a middle stage battlefield, more than twice as large as the previous flagstone stage they had fought in before.

The battlefield was covered in grass, Fang Yuan stepped on the ground with his boots, feeling the soft loamy soil underneath.

There were only two to three people watching, including the disguised Wei Yang.

Watching battles required primeval stones, Fang Yuan was a nobody. His opponent Tang Qing was slightly famous, but after his closed cultivation, the little attention he received previously vanished completely.

Clang!

The bells rang loudly, signifying the start of the battle.

"My name is Tang Qing." The young man was a gentleman, cupping his fists towards Fang Yuan.

Jumping grass.

Fang Yuan willed, stepping hard and bursting forth.

"What the f*ck, attacking like that?!" Tang Qing was taken aback, not expecting this youngster to be so shameless, sneak attacking in public.

He completely ignored the formalities!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Fang Yuan is so kind, trying to end his opponent’s misery as soon as possible.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

No sooner said than done!

Fang Yuan moved like lightning, pouncing on Tang Qing.

Pew!

A strong wind blew. Tang Qing only saw darkness in front of him, and before he was able to react, Fang Yuan’s fist hit his chest.

At once, Tang Qing could feel an intense pain assaulting him, almost causing him to faint on the spot.

His ears could only hear the sound of winds brushing by, as his vision rolled back; he was sent flying by Fang Yuan’s frontal assault.

When he landed, his head spun. He saw grass, then the railings of the battle stage, then his face rubbed against the dirt. As he flipped and rolled, the grass was uprooted by the friction, causing the black soil to be exposed.

His body was covered in grass and soil, the smell from the juices of the grass, the soil and fresh blood mixed together and entered his nose.

He laid on the ground, dazed. After rolling and tumbling for so long, he felt his entire body hurting.

But this feeling, was nothing compared to the intense pain on his chest!

He lowered his head to look at his chest, and breathed in cold air.

Only to see that the left side of his chest had caved in by two inches, his skin was torn and flesh was exposed, his pale rib cage could be seen, broken.

A stream of fresh blood poured out like a fountain.

Fang Yuan had great strength, and also attacked suddenly, causing Tang Qing to be severely injured.

Tang Qing stared with wide opened eyes, after the shock, hatred burst out of his heart like burning magma.

"This rascal, unscrupulous and shameless, attacking me by surprise! Causing me to be severely injured, I want to kill him, I want to tear him into pieces!"

"Go die!" Just at this moment, Tang Qing heard Fang Yuan’s growls.

Fang Yuan took a few steps to arrive before Tang Qing, he raised his leg and stepped harshly at the area between Tang Qing’s legs.

Tang Qing felt his vision blurring, and squinted. Fang Yuan activated the canopy Gu, and his body was covered by a white armor. Tang Qing’s heart trembled.

A rank three Gu Master!

Fang Yuan had first used the breath concealment Gu, but now that he attacked, he could no longer conceal his rank three aura.

The truth directly sent Tang Qing’s soul flying beyond the horizon. Such a young rank three Gu Master?!

He subconsciously activated his defense Gu, as a gust of green wind surrounded his body.

Fang Yuan had stored a lot of energy into this kick, it was supposed to smash Tang Qing’s lower body part into paste. But because of the wind, the impact was greatly reduced.

"Ah!" Tang Qing opened his mouth, his face contorted as he screamed out in utter anguish.

Even with a defensive Gu, the damage he suffered was like a lightning strike, his body automatically bounced up as he sat on the ground, using both arms to shield his pants.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with cold light, his left hand gathered into a fist and punched.

He used all his strength for this punch.

The force tore through the winds!

Bam!

A fist covered in white light landed heavily on Tang Qing’s face.

Tang Qing’s screams came to a stop, as he rapidly fell backwards, his head hitting against the ground.

Motionless, and not breathing.

A fatal blow!

His entire nose caved into his face, his eye bulged out as more than half of his eyeballs were outside the socket, and his skull was completely smashed.

Blood flowed down slowly, dying the soil and grass red.

Fang Yuan stood upright and looked down at the corpse, as the scene froze.

After a few breath’s time, screams erupted from the surroundings.

"Dead... he died!"

"Someone was beaten to death!"

The two to three Gu Masters watching were tongue-tied. Even Wei Yang showed a peculiar expression.

Although there were many battles in the battle stage, there were few deaths.

Firstly, the battle stage allowed surrendering. Secondly, the Gu Master overlooking the battle can often stop the fatal attack in time. Thirdly, competitors tend to control themselves, after all, they were all trying to make a living in the battle stage, they would have to interact with one another quite often. Although they might argue over benefits, they would not try to take the other person’s life.

There was two reasons why Fang Yuan could kill Tang Qing.

Firstly, he had just come out of cultivation, and his battle instincts were dull. If it was during a normal period, he would have used his defensive Gu from the start, not getting into such a state.

Secondly, Fang Yuan looked way too young, and used the breath concealment Gu to hide his cultivation, causing Tang Qing to relax. Before he could react, Fang Yuan launched a sneak attack, with the first blow severely injured Tang Qing, and his next two attacks were lightning fast, before the Gu Master taking care of the stage reacted, Tang Qing was already dead.

The Gu Master hosting the battle rapidly came over.

But when he saw Tang Qing’s concaved face, and the brain matter and blood oozing out from the cracks of his skull, he gave up on trying to save him.

"Youngster, you were too much!" He stared at Fang Yuan, speaking with an unhappy tone.

Although the battle was short, he had observed the entire thing. Fang Yuan had control of the situation, he could have gone easy on Tang Qing and spared his life, but he did not.

Fang Yuan shrugged: "It is just a life, why are you freaking out. According to the battle stage rules, I killed him, so all his possessions are now mine, right?"

The battle stage host Gu Master snorted: "All his things are yours, but we have to take back the vine information Gu. Young man, I have to remind you, you do not respect life at all, that is a dangerous thought!"

"I am really sorry." Wei Yang walked over apologetically, then turned around: "This little brother of mine have been roaming outside, this is the first time he is participating in the battle stage."

The Gu Master did not recognise Wei Yang, showing disgust on his face: "Hmph, you demonic Gu Masters are all like this, such an aggressive nature and enjoy killing and slaughtering. Nevermind, I can’t get through to you, pass me your vine information Gu."

Fang Yuan took out the vine information Gu, and the host Gu Master edited the information inside, and returned it to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan inspected the Gu, and his zero wins record had become one.

He next searched Tang Qing’s corpse, obtaining four Gu. Three rank two and one rank one, they were ordinary Gu worms, the total value was around two thousand primeval stones.

Tang Qing died very abruptly, causing him to have no time to self-detonate his Gu worms.

And he had just come out of closed cultivation, there was only twenty to thirty primeval stones on him.

"Brother Fang Zheng, try to avoid killing in the future." After they left the battle stage, Wei Yang advised Fang Yuan.

"Even though there is no rules to prevent killing in the battle stage..." Wei Yang shook his head: "There is no need to fight to the death in every round. Although the battle zone might be huge, you are bound to encounter an opponent stronger than you eventually. We interact with each other more than you think, after all, we all live in Shang clan city. When it is possible to spare a life, one should show mercy."

Fang Yuan frowned slightly: "But if I let someone off, they might not let me off. I have encountered demonic Gu Masters in the past, attacking without a second word. If I do not strike, I will be assaulted. My experiences tell me to kill when I can, otherwise, I am breeding threats for myself, I cannot give my enemies a chance! Precisely because of this, I am able to live till today."

Wei Yang was caught speechless.

He suddenly thought, wasn’t this Fang Yuan acting just like him in the past? Ruthless and savage, not trusting anyone, it all boils down to having no sense of security.

Demonic Gu Masters had little to no sense of security.

They were different from righteous Gu Masters who had their clans to rely on, clansmen to help them, safely getting resources, it gave them a sense of security and trust in each other.

Demonic Gu Masters were mostly lone cultivators, receiving no support from anyone, even primeval stones and food have to be acquired by themselves. Many times, they eat one meal without the next, unable to fend for themselves, how could they feel safe?

To ensure their survival, they could only take risks and attack people to loot them. Demonic Gu Masters were often alone, they did not dare to attack righteous groups, thus they can only lay their claws on other demonic Gu Masters.

Thus, it leads to a vicious cycle. Demonic Gu Masters do not trust each other, often attacking on sight.

They had no sense of security, thus their attacks were more ruthless.

Wei Yang converted from demonic to righteous, his rich life experience gave him a deep understanding of both factions, more than any ordinary person.

Why is it that the righteous faction flourished, and the demonic faction have to be suppressed?

It was due to this.

Fang Yuan’s ruthless acts were completely understandable to Wei Yang. And because he understood, his heart went out to Fang Yuan.

"Although he is rank three cultivation, and has rich battle senses, he is still a kid. Sigh, looking at his attacks, I can tell how much hardship he has been through. Come to think of it, if he spared his opponent, wouldn’t that be more strange?"

"He did not spare his opponent, just like other demonic Gu Masters who initially entered the battle stage. I was like that too, wasn’t I? Nevermind, as time passes, he will slowly change. This change is gradual and subtle, I cannot forcefully influence him."

Thinking so, Wei Yang stopped his nagging, and changed topic to the battle earlier.

"Little brother Fang Zheng, you said earlier that you have used several Gu to modify your body, and increase your strength. Just how many did you use?"

"Since brother Wei is asking, I shall answer to the best of my ability. I used three, black and white boar Gu, crocodile strength Gu, and currently, the brown bear innate strength Gu that I just bought." Fang Yuan smiled lightly.

"Hehehe, black and white boar Gu gave you the strength of two boars, crocodile strength Gu gave you the strength of a crocodile. But brother, have you thought about it, if a boar charged at you, what injuries would you sustain?" Wei Yang spoke with an enlightening tone.

Fang Yuan knew Wei Yang’s intentions, thus he cooperated, saying: "If he does not defend, how can a mortal body take the hit of a wild boar? His stomach will tear and it would be a gruesome sight."

Wei Yang’s smile widened: "Then if you place that person’s head in a crocodile’s mouth, and the crocodile bites, what would happen?"

"The head would burst like a watermelon." Fang Yuan replied.

Wei Yang next asked: "You have the strength of two boars, one crocodile and your own strength. Your first punch however, only made a dent in his chest, and broke a few ribs. Your third punch landed on his face, but only cracked his skull, what does that say?"

But before Fang Yuan replied, he continued: "Punches and kicks can only unleash a portion of the strength in a person’s body. Although you have two boars and one crocodile’s strength, how many percent can you use? The greatest weakness of the strength path lies here! A person’s strength is like a huge vat, filled with water, but when you battle, you can only use a portion of that water."

"Black and white boar Gu, crocodile strength Gu, brown bear innate strength Gu, these can permanently increase strength, but are expensive Gu. You invested so much money, yet only getting a portion of the results, sometimes not even ten percent. If you invest your money elsewhere, you can gain much greater effect."

"I see, brother Wei is saying all these to make me give up on the strength path." Fang Yuan smiled lightly, like he finally understood what was happening.

"I understand that logic, the human body has a different structure from wild beasts, we can hardly display their true strength. But using Gu also depends on being one with them, I’ve heard of many strength path Gu Masters who managed to unleash the beast phantom, displaying the full power of the Gu worm."

"Hehehe, there is such a thing indeed. When I was still in the battle stage, I met many strength path Gu Masters. As their proficiency in the Gu increases, sometimes, the beast phantom appears in battle and they can use the full strength of the Gu, it is very threatening. But you do not know, the number of times this happens is too few. Moreover, the attack method is very rigid, only when using a specific attack style can the beast phantom be summoned, it is easy to evade." Wei Yang continued to advise painstakingly.

Fang Yuan pondered for a moment, he had the exact thought, but that is also why he needed that legendary Gu.

What came out of his mouth was: "Brother Wei, I appreciate your concern, but the strength path is my choice, I want to see it till the end."

"Sigh, then go ahead with it." Wei Yang sighed, seeing Fang Yuan being so obstinate, he could not force him.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan had already joined the battle stage, Wei Yang thought: What happens next should change Fang Yuan’s mind.

Fang Yuan had to stay in Shang clan city for a few more years, there was a lot of time left, Wei Yang was not anxious.

Soon, half a month passed.

In the gambling den, the shopkeeper bent his back, standing beside Fang Yuan, smiling.

"Brother Wei, want to pick a few rocks to play? We might get something good. I’ll treat you to a few!" Fang Yuan smiled and said.

Wei Yang stood beside Fang Yuan, shaking his head: "Today is the day Tang Xiong forcefully challenges you, to think the Tang Qing you killed was his brother. Fang Zheng, you should be vigilant, in order to take revenge, Tang Xiong purposely fell from fourth inner city to fifth. He has a small fame, able to use the strength of three bears, he is coming with vengeance."

Although he said so, he was not worried, but instead, looking forward to it secretly.

These days, Fang Yuan won another match, thus this would be his third match.

Wei Yang was hoping this Tang Xiong would ’awaken’ Fang Yuan, and cause him to abandon the strength path, changing to another style.

"I will deal with it when it comes, what is there to worry about. If brother Wei is not going to choose, I’m going to. I have already seen several good rocks." Fang Yuan’s eyes glowed as he picked a few gambling rocks.

The shopkeeper instructed his clerks to carefully select the gambling rocks and bring them out.

"Eh?" Fang Yuan said, pointing to a leg of the counter: "This rock supporting the leg seems to be a stellar stone?"

The shopkeeper was stunned, but quickly replied: "Esteemed customer sure has amazing eyes. This rock was placed there a few years ago by me. The counter leg was damaged by a gambler’s kicking, so I picked a squarish stellar stone and used it to fill in the gap."

Fang Yuan frowned: "Rocks are meant for gambling, how can you use it like that? You’re truly burying the rock’s potential! Today, for my last piece, I shall choose that."

"Yes, yes, yes, esteemed customer is right!" The shopkeeper nodded rapidly, but he felt indifferent in his heart.

The grade of the stellar stone was very important, arrow or shooting star shaped ones were the best. This rock was obviously a useless one, no one asked for it when it was on the counter, so the shopkeeper used it to balance the counter instead.

The clerks worked together, pulling out the stellar stone from the counter leg, then placing it together with the other rocks to send it for dissection.

At the dissection counter, a few young dissection masters were opening rocks for a middle aged Gu Master, moving delicately and slowly.

Wei Yang did not approve of Fang Yuan gambling rocks. Seeing him pick this rock, he shook his head secretly. Even if he was not a gambler, he knew the importance of grades. Fang Yuan’s final rock was completely chosen at random, even he could not stand it. Fang Yuan had been spending the last few days at the gambling den, spending primeval stones, but did not get much rewards out of it.

Sometimes he got a few Gu, but they were rank one or two, or even corpses and carcasses.

In Wei Yang’s heart, Fang Yuan was purely wasting his money, but he did not say anything against it. The less primeval stones Fang Yuan had, the more he needed to rely on Shang clan, that was something he wanted to see.

Fang Yuan was excited in his heart but kept a calm expression, staring at the dissection counter in anticipation.

These days, he had been roaming around the gambling dens, purposely choosing some bad rocks to leave an impression.

Although he had controlled himself, and only played small, the gambling rocks were like an endless abyss, in less than a month, he lost over a hundred thousand primeval stones.

But thinking about the legendary Gu he was about to receive, not only a hundred thousand, even five hundred thousand was worth it.

Although this legendary Gu was rank three, its effect was simply amazing, and it was nearly extinct.

Most likely, this was the last one in this world.

Wei Yang frowned: "Mind the time, you have to rush to the battle stage later, shopkeeper, can the dissection be faster?"

"Of course, of course." The shopkeeper recognised Wei Yang the external clan elder, and quickly nodded.

He ran to the dissection counter, waving his hand, saying to the young dissection masters: "Go, go, go."

He sent those dissection masters away, to one side.

"My rocks..." The middle aged Gu Master cried out.

Rock dissecting was a meticulous process, once they got interrupted, the young dissection masters flustered and caused a few of the rocks to be destroyed.

"Li Ran, stop screaming, we will return you your primeval stones." The shopkeeper shouted.

The middle aged Gu Master with a messy beard stared with wide opened eyes, saying indignantly: "What if there was a Gu inside?"

The shopkeeper laughed in disdain, waving his hand at the middle aged Gu Master: "Come on Li Ran, you have been gambling for so many years, you only choose low grade rocks, when have you ever gotten anything good? Stop making a din, or you will lose your compensation!"

" Spit , such a large shops bullying customers, you are looking down on me, one day, I will make it big in life!" The middle aged Gu Master muttered, his tone furious but did not continue making a din.

"Li Ran..." This name made Fang Yuan recall a certain memory.

He could not help but show a weird expression.

This Li Ran, was that person who obtained the legendary Gu. Of course, they might have the same name...

But no matter what, Li Ran’s one chance at success was snatched by Fang Yuan.

The five old masters took the stage, starting to dissect the rocks.

The younger masters were speechless, these seniors were using all sorts of flashy methods. Many rocks were easy to dissect, only requiring little primeval essence, but they had to use their full force, and cause their primeval essence to be greatly expended, using many steps only to raise the success rate by a meagre percent.

More than ten rocks, including scrap grade, low grade and middle grade were quickly opened.

"There is a Gu, the sword shadow Gu!"

"Rank three sword shadow Gu, so rare..."

"A living Gu, it is definitely alive, congratulations esteemed customer."

The old masters cupped their fists at Fang Yuan, sighing in relief.

Fang Yuan had been gambling these few days, but did not get any rewards. It caused these old masters to feel uneasy.

The shopkeeper ran over, looking joyous: "Esteemed customer, you have earned a lot! The sword shadow Gu can be sold for thirty two thousand primeval stones, but you only spent eight thousand!"

The surrounding people were envious of Fang Yuan, and that Li Ran even pouted, saying sourly: "Hmph, you just got lucky."

"That’s good brother, the sword shadow Gu is at the same level as my broadsword light Gu. I advise you not to sell it but use it yourself." Wei Yang congratulated.

"Hehehe, the light at the end of the tunnel, I said my luck was not so bad." Fang Yuan laughed: "Brother Wei, after today’s match ends, I will treat you to a drink, let’s celebrate."

Wei Yang nodded, not rejecting it. He did not know that although Fang Yuan was cheerful on the outside, his heart was in complete shock at the moment!

The sword shadow Gu was an accident, it was not his goal.

That stellar stone supporting the counter had no Gu inside after dissecting it, it was a useless rock!

How can this be?

Where is that legendary Gu?!

At once, Fang Yuan’s mind was flashing with questions as his heart stirred.

Numerous suspicions popped up in his mind.

How can this happen?!

Wasn’t the legendary Gu hidden in this stellar stone?

If it is not this stone, where can it be? Or maybe it was not this rock, or not this gambling den?

Or maybe the rumors were false? Where am I supposed to find that legendary Gu now?

Things had progressed way out of Fang Yuan’s expectations. The Gu that he thought was easily obtainable had gone missing, and the sword shadow Gu he had obtained out of luck was not enough to recoup his losses these few days.

"If there is no legendary Gu, my efforts would have been in vain. Damn it, how can this happen? There might be an error in the rumors, but rumors travel far and wide, there has to be a basis for it. Especially when this detail was so specific, there was nothing that deviated from the rumors, but why is it..."

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth secretly.

Without this legendary Gu, his strength path cultivation would be gone like smoke.

"Do I really need to change my cultivation direction? But if I do that, the three kings inheritance would be greatly affected!"

The result of the rock dissection greatly affect Fang Yuan’s plans. But he did not know what the problem was, or what went wrong.

The rumors had been shrouded in a deep mysterious fog.

"It is almost time, we should head to the battle stage." At this time, Wei Yang reminded.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Another super long chapter. Doesn’t it feel great to see Fang Yuan’s plans go up in flames? Trials and tribulations plague our kindhearted Fang Yuan. He can’t even gamble in peace!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

When Fang Yuan stepped into the battle stage, all the random thoughts were cast out of his head.

He calmly sized up the opponent in front of him.

Tang Xiong.

He was eight feet tall, wide shoulders and a thick waist. Just his arms alone were as thick as Fang Yuan’s thighs, as he stood on the stage without an upper garment or shoes.

His chest was filled with black chest hair, giving off a wild and formidable aura.

"Little scoundrel, you killed my little brother? Today, I shall send you to accompany him in the afterlife!" Tang Xiong looked at Fang Yuan with bloodshot eyes, the flames of hatred could be clearly seen.

The surrounding temperature was burning as if it was the torrid afternoon heat of July or August.

The ground was boiling hot; black and red mixed together to form the lava terrain.

This was a mid-scale battle stage. There were only few spectators about dozens, most of them came to watch how Tang Xiong took revenge.

As for Fang Yuan, he might have obtained two victories but it still wasn’t enough for him to be famous.

"Tang brothers grew up relying on each other; now Tang Qing is dead and only Tang Xiong remains."

"Hehe, I am waiting to see how Tang Xiong tortures this kid to death."

"Eh, what is this kid’s name?"

"I think he was called Gu Yue Fang Zheng, a no-name junior."

"This kid is too thoughtless, he actually dared to break the unsaid rules and kill his first two opponents."

"He should be a demonic Gu Master who had only recently entered the city..."

"Alas, the young do not know to conduct themselves. This day wouldn’t have come if he had shown mercy."

The audience continued talking about the match, but no one was optimistic about Fang Yuan.

Wei Yang was in a disguise and was looking at the battle stage with a burning gaze. Tang Xiong also walked the strength path, he was a rank two peak stage expert but could unleash with the strength of three bears and even won his way through to fourth inner city. He was a strong opponent for the current Fang Yuan.

Ding!

A clear ring of the bell announced the start of the match.

Tang Xiong roared and charged straight at Fang Yuan like a wild bull.

The ground of this battle stage was made of dark red lava rocks. Fang Yuan could feel the scalding heat from the ground even though he was wearing boots. While Tang Xiong was barefooted, he did not pay any attention to the heat.

Tum tum tum.

Every time Tang Xiong’s feet stepped on the ground, it produced a loud and deep sound. At the same time, his every step shattered the lava rocks and left a deep footprint in the ground.

Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes, his gaze as sharp as a blade’s edge!

He was at ease despite Tang Xiong’s aggressive momentum; the corner of his lips curled up into a cold smile as he outrageously charged at Tang Xiong head-on.

"Has he gone crazy?"

"He dares to face Tang Xiong head-on?"

"He could have had a chance to survive if he prolonged the match, this is simply charging towards his doom."

The audience shook their heads as they looked at this scene.

Fang Yuan was young, his body was not even half as muscular as Tang Xiong’s. The scene of him charging at Tang Xiong was like a lamb colliding with a big ox.

Bam!

The two fiercely collided against each other, the enormous strength sent both of them flying.

Tang Xiong was thrown back six steps, as a clearly shocked expression showed on his face. ’How could this kid have such huge great strength?’

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan was thrown back three steps, as the white light armor protecting his body shook.

The result of the collision amazed the audience.

Some had their jaws wide open and some repeatedly blinked their eyes, not having expected Fang Yuan to possess such strength.

"My strength is actually less than his? No wonder little brother died at his hands!" Tang Xiong’s expression changed, and looked at Fang Yuan properly for the first time.

Fang Yuan shook his numb arm, his expression was still indifferent; this result wasn’t beyond his expectation.

He possessed the strength of two boars and a crocodile, there was also some increase to his strength due to using brown bear innate strength Gu these days. And Tang Xiong, he only possessed the strength of two bears.

Grand bear Gu!

Tang Xiong roared, the muscles on his body expanded visibly and his body size grew by a fold; he temporarily gained the strength of a bear.

Bear palm Gu!

A ball of yellow light covered his palms and soles. After the light dispersed, his hands and feet increased in size by over three times; turning into thick and enormous bear palms.

Whooshh!

He jumped with ferocious strength, next, he waved his right palm smashing at Fang Yuan.

The strong wind produced from his motion sent Fang Yuan’s clothes fluttering before the bear palm even hit him.

Fang Yuan was still calm, he clenched his left palm into a fist and struck directly at the bear palm.

Fist and palm struck, producing a muffled sound. It was a draw.

However, following immediately, Tang Xiong’s arm swept horizontally and another palm also came smashing over.

Fang Yuan used offence against offence; bang bang bang, fists and palms struck each other multiple times, the wind was screaming from their attacks.

The audience revealed astonished expressions when they saw Fang Yuan equally matched as he attacked Tang Xiong head-on.

’This youngster has some skills to be able to duke it out with Tang Xiong!"

"What was his name again?"

"This is a tough nut, Tang Xiong is in trouble. Grand bear Gu has a time limit, and once the effect disappears, he will be disadvantaged."

However, right at this moment!

A fierce bear’s roar resounded throughout the battle stage.

A phantom image of a black bear appeared behind Tang Xiong; it opened its bloody mouth and roared towards the skies.

Beast Phantom!

Tang Xiong got lucky and was able to unleash the beast phantom.

The smack that should have been extremely normal, now had the strength of a bear!

Fang Yuan could not dodge in time and hurriedly put up his arms to stiffly block it.

Boom.

With a huge bang, he was sent flying, the white light armor on his body flickered rapidly before dimming.

His arms were numb and would not be usable for some time.

He did his best to maintain his balance in midair; he twisted his waist and landed on the ground on his feet.

The moment he landed, he activated the canopy Gu; the white light armor appeared once more, but this time it looked weak and transparent, its defense had decreased by a lot.

"That is a bear strength phantom, Tang Xiong has flared up!"

"Bear strength specializes in smacking, it is normal for the bear strength phantom to appear since Tang Xiong has already attacked so many times."

"The situation was still in deadlock, but with the bear strength phantom, that kid’s momentum is destroyed. Tang Xiong holds the upper hand now."

"According to the previous statistics, Tang Xiong can use the bear strength phantom five times on average in every fight. If that kid has no way to deal with it, he will definitely be defeated."

Outside the battle stage, the audience kept on making a commotion with their comments.

The appearance of a bear strength phantom meant the true battle was starting, and it roused the audience’s passion.

"I have the strength of two boars and a crocodile; boar strength is good at charging attacks and crocodile strength is good at bite attacks, but I have yet to acquire the bear strength. I can’t bring out the beast phantom by using my fists or palms, moreover the canopy Gu is not good at defending against close combat attacks, and will likely be destroyed by one or two more attacks from the bear strength phantom."

Fang Yuan’s thoughts flashed through and he decided to change his battle tactics.

Jumping grass.

He willed, and a spring like grass soon grew out from his soles then pierced through his boots.

Just as Tang Xiong was charging at him, Fang Yuan stamped on the ground and leapt far away like a frog.

At the same time, his left palm swiped at Tang Xiong’s direction.

A scarlet colored moonblade immediately shot out of his palms and struck Tang Xiong; the defensive light on his body flickered for a while.

Blood moon Gu might not have high offensive power, but it was a rank three Gu after all.

Tang Xiong was distracted for a moment before he pounced upon Fang Yuan again.

Fang Yuan used the same trick again, throwing scarlet moonblades from afar; he had changed his battle tactics and didn’t engage Tang Xiong in close combat.

Tang Xiong had no choice but to use his movement Gu and chase after Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan kept on attacking and retreating. It was not that Tang Xiong didn’t have long range attacking methods, but they were many times weaker than his close combat power and simply could not threaten Fang Yuan.

Tang Xiong growled repeatedly in anger, and tried to provoke Fang Yuan by cursing at him; the audience also made booing noises since they wanted to see intense close combat.

However, how could Fang Yuan be so easily provoked?

He did not have a complete set of Gu worms and had yet to make close combat his forte. Even the long range attacks were forcefully improvised by him.

Time passed by, both their primeval essences continually fell.

Fang Yuan’s advantage became clearer; he possessed light silver primeval essence of rank three initial stage, while Tang Xiong only had B grade aptitude and red steel primeval essence.

Despite the strength path Gu Masters’ advantage in consuming very little primeval essence, they could not last forever.

By the time Fang Yuan’s blood moon Gu made five to six wounds on Tang Xiong’s body, the latter had no choice but to admit defeat since his healing Gu was not very good and blood kept on flowing out of the wounds.

"Just wait, one day, I will smack you into minced meat!" Tang Xiong covered his wounds and walked out of the stage.

He came with the aggressiveness of the devil but was leaving with a pale face, his steps light and weak.

"To think fourth inner city’s Tang Xiong was defeated!"

"What is that Gu? It could form blood red moonblades and blood kept on flowing out of the wounds it inflicted, I have never seen such a Gu before."

"This kid is not one to trifle with, he will advance to fourth inner city’s battle stage before long."

Winner takes it all; most of the audience focused on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan received his third victory, and according to the rules, he took that grand bear Gu from Tang Xiong.

This was the most valuable Gu in Tang Xiong’s possession. With this Gu gone, Tang Xion only possessed the strength of two bears, his battle strength decreased by thirty percent and there was no need to worry about him now.

However, Fang Yuan was not happy.

The legendary Gu was not in the stellar stone used as a leg support, then where was it?

Was there another piece of stone used as a leg support?

However, when Fang Yuan went back to the gambling den, the foot of that counter was already restored.

Maybe, it was not that gambling den?

Fang Yuan inwardly shook at the thought; stellar stone used to support counter in the rock gambling zone, only this gambling den fulfilled this condition.

"Without the legendary Gu, I won’t have any advantage in walking on the strength path. Strength path had prevailed since ancient times, but now it is just a shadow of its previous glory. If I want to walk on the strength path without the legendary Gu, at the very least I will need an ancient strength path inheritance. Unfortunately, I only have memories of three ancient strength path inheritance, of which one is at Eastern Seas and another at Central Continent."

"The third one is at Southern Border, but has already been occupied and exploited by Wu Clan for several years now. Now that I recall it, even Empress Wu Ji of Wu Clan walked the strength path. And because of this ancient inheritance, the Wu Clan was able to sit on the throne of Southern Border’s number one force."

Of course, this throne was only referring to the mortal realm. Rank six Gu immortals were at a level that crossed the ordinary and could not be calculated in this.

Fang Yuan continued to secretly investigate the next seven to eight days without any results.

"Sigh, only one clue remains now, I can only give up if that doesn’t work." Fang Yuan thought, he was not someone who would waste time on an unsolvable problem.

This final clue was Li Ran — the protagonist who obtained the legendary Gu in Fang Yuan’s previous life.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Any guesses what happened to the legendary Gu? (Is this considered third chapter today?)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Although Fang Yuan had the purple thorn token, he did not dare to investigate this openly.

But in his memory, Li Ran also participated in the battle stage. After obtaining the legendary Gu, he won his way up and swept the battle stage.

This made it easier.

Fang Yuan still had the once per month enforced challenge unused, thus, he came to the secret reception area using it.

There were three people who were named Li Ran among the ones who had signed up.

Two males and one female.

Eliminating the female since Li Ran was a male in the rumors.

The remaining two, one was an old man around sixty years old, slightly famous. With rank three cultivation, he had gone up to third inner city’s battle stage a few years ago, but his body was getting worse as the years went, falling back to fourth inner city eventually. This was obviously not the Li Ran Fang Yuan wanted to find either, since Li Ran in his memories had a tough life.

The other is a middle aged man, over fifty years old. With rank two cultivation, he had arrived in Shang clan city for around ten years, but had remained at the fifth inner city battle stage. He loved gambling, and lived a difficult life. He had married and bore children in Shang clan city, but the couple did not get along and separated.

Fang Yuan secretly investigated, and found that this person was the one he saw at the gambling den.

Tailing him for several days, Fang Yuan found that this Li Ran lived from day to day, sometimes, after eating today, he could not afford food the next day.

But this did not mean he had no capabilities.

He relied on the primeval stones he earned in fifth inner city battle stage to survive.

Fang Yuan investigated his battle records, he won more than he lost.

According to logic, he should not be living such a life. But this person loved to eat, gamble and visit prostitutes, he spent his money without restraint. In order to gamble, he would even use all the primeval stones he has, such that for the next half a month, he would have to borrow money from people, and eat the cheapest food possible to survive.

Similarly, in order to have a feast, he would go to the highest grade restaurant, and spend most of the money he had. He even ate without paying, and still owed several restaurants money now.

"This person must be the owner of the legendary Gu in my previous life. But he could not control his desires, thus even with the legendary Gu, what could he do? No wonder he was like a shooting star, going missing soon after his fame." Fang Yuan shook his head secretly.

"He obtained the legendary Gu in my previous life, would he get it again now? It is not possible for me to continue tailing him for long. The day where he finds the legendary Gu is nearing. Am I truly not fated to receive this Gu?" Fang Yuan frowned.

These days, Fang Yuan spent a lot of time and effort in tailing Li Ran. If he spent this time on cultivating, he might achieve greater success.

Most importantly, Fang Yuan had no confidence of whether he would gain anything from doing this.

And if he continued, he might get found out. Thankfully, Wei Yang was a busy man, only coming over to watch when Fang Yuan had a battle, if not, Fang Yuan would not have the opportunity to tail Li Ran.

If Wei Yang found him doing this, how would Fang Yuan explain himself?

The greatest suspicion now was, why was the legendary Gu not inside the stellar stone, this did not match with the rumors!

Fang Yuan could not understand, this was too unimaginable! All the elements were present, but the Gu was nowhere to be found.

It could just be Fang Yuan’s overwhelmingly suspicious nature, but he found this Li Ran very strange. He could not pinpoint what the strangeness was, but it was a feeling, an instinct. It was such a baseless feeling that even Fang Yuan could not be sure of it.

LIke this, after another twenty over days, Fang Yuan fell into deep perplexity. That strange feeling became stronger, but Fang Yuan did not know where it originated.

Li Ran’s actions had nothing amiss.

He lived in Shang clan city for nearly ten years, if there was anything wrong with him, outsiders would’ve known already.

"I am too entrenched into this, and have thought about this too much. At this time, I need an outsider’s opinion to inspire myself." Fang Yuan was clear of his situation.

But he only trusted himself, although he made a poison vow with Bai Ning Bing, Fang Yuan did not trust Bai Ning Bing one bit. He only used her to cultivate, since the bone flesh unity Gu was much better than the liquor worm.

Without anyone to help, Fang Yuan could only rely on himself. And he had gotten used to relying on himself, and liked it too.

Thus, he came to the shop: "Shopkeeper, do you have a flash of inspiration Gu?"

Fang Yuan had asked a few shops, they did not have it. Finally, a shop had it, but it was priced at twenty nine thousand primeval stones.

A flash of inspiration Gu, a rank three consumable Gu, gone after one use. Who would spend so much primeval stones to buy this?

But the truth is, many people did.

These people were recipe masters who specialized in creating Gu refinement recipes.

When they got into a bottleneck, and were a step from success, they would choose to use this Gu. Once this Gu was used, it would give them that spark of inspiration that would allow them to successfully create the new recipe.

A recipe’s worth is far greater than twenty nine thousand primeval stones.

Thus, a flash of inspiration Gu was a Gu with a lot of demand, if Fang Yuan did not have the purple thorn token, the shop would never sell it to him.

A similar Gu to the a flash of inspiration Gu is the cactus pointer.

But the latter was a Tie clan specialty grass Gu, it was not sold in the market.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, buying this a flash of inspiration Gu.

This Gu was like a blue jewel tadpole, small and agile, swimming about and waving its tail.

Fang Yuan activated his primeval essence, and this Gu entered his brain, turning into a white spiritual light, and like lightning, tore across the layers of mystery in Fang Yuan’s head.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with brilliance, finally realizing what the strange feeling was.

"That’s right, although this Li Ran’s life is a mess, without any control over himself, there exists a pattern among this mess. He goes to the restaurant once every three days, goes to the gambling den twice every seven days, and the brothel once every five days. And every ten days, he would go to a restaurant named ’Fu Tai Xiang He’.

From the messy report, under the influence of the a flash of inspiration Gu, the pattern within was revealed .

This was the strange part.

If a person was truly unrestrained and did not think of what to do, his life would be a complete mess, how could it have such a perfect rhythm?

Three days later, in Fu Tai Xiang He restaurant.

"Clerk, the bill." Li Ran looked away from the window, calling loudly.

"Coming, lord Li Ran, five and a half primeval stones please."

"This is six, no need for change." Li Ran tossed out six primeval stones.

"Thank you lord, take care!"

Dun dun dun...

Li Ran walked down the stairs, and as he walked out of the restaurant, he turned into an alley and gradually vanished under the shadow.

Downstairs, Fang Yuan observed silently, before calling the shop assistant, pointing at Li Ran’s seat: "The view here is horrible, I want to sit there instead."

According to his understanding, every time Li Ran came here, he would sit at the window seat, that was indeed strange.

"No problem!" The shop assistant laughed: "It is a man’s interest to peek at beauties."

"What?" Fang Yuan’s eyebrows raised.

"Hmm, isn’t esteemed customer trying to see Qin Yan brothel’s number one star, Lady An Yu? Hehe, that seat can directly look into her room, if you’re lucky, you can even see her body. That Li Ran earlier, he always sits here to look at her. He always makes me reserve the seat for half a primeval stones." The shop assistant said with a lecherous expression.

"Oh is that so?" Fang Yuan replied curtly, sitting at Li Ran’s seat.

Through the window, he could indeed see into the brothel.

Qin Yan brothel had eight storeys, the number one lady An Yu was a rank two Gu Master, having a room at the top floor. She had a great body, and her Gu Master identity could invoke men’s conquering desires, rumors say it takes almost ten thousand primeval stones to have her for a night.

With Li Ran’s fortune, he could not afford this, but was he really here to peek at Lady An Yu?

Looking at the way he left the brothel, he was not such a man.

Fang Yuan looked outside, there were many restaurants around Qin Yan brothel, why did he choose this one?

If he had a Gu worm to improve his vision, then maybe, but Fang Yuan knew he did not have such a Gu.

At this distance, even if Lady An Yu was there, he would only see a blur image.

"Eh? This is..." Fang Yuan’s gaze concentrated on a tofu shop opposite the street.

A pair of mother and son were packing up their stall, ready to go home.

Fang Yuan recognised them, they were Li Ran’s wife and son!

"Don’t tell me, his real motive was to look at them?" Fang Yuan could not help but think.

He closed his eyes, and the map of the street appeared in his head.

There were better places to peek at Lady An Yu, but to observe this mother and son pair, this was the only spot!

"If he really wanted to look at them, why does he have to do it sneakily? According to my findings, he abandoned them years ago, is he feeling guilty? Strange... if he was guilty, and wanted to show concern for them, he could appear in front of them personally, why does he have to be secretive."

"No, it could be that he was too ashamed to face them. But if he was, why would he not turn over a new leaf? This is really weird, he seems to be a mess, and cannot restrain himself, but his life is actually an orderly mess. This evidently shows he has good control over himself."

Fang Yuan’s eyes were eerie as possibilities flashed across his mind.

He chewed on the food, but could not taste them at all.

He felt himself nearing the truth, like a blind man in a room getting close to the door.

All the clues and suspicions flew around in his head like a tornado.

Such a thinking speed, caused his eating action to be greatly slowed.

He slowly put down the chopsticks, raising his wine glass, the wine inside glimmering as it emitted a strong fragrance.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s black pupils expanded!

The wine glass was raised halfway, and his arm stayed in midair, not moving like a statue.

In his mind, a bolt of lightning struck and exploded.

"So that’s why... I finally understand!"

He screamed excitedly in his heart, as a great brilliance flashed across his eyes like lightning.

The mystery involving his last life and current life had finally been solved, all the suspicions were lifted and Fang Yuan found the answer he wanted!

At the same time, he ’found’ the legendary Gu he lost!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

We’re finally getting there... PS: I know we hit rank 40, 3rd chapter will be at the same time as previously.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Wu Ran, if we ask you to sacrifice your future for the clan, are you willing to do it?"

"I am willing!"

...

"Wu Ran, if we ask you to sacrifice your reputation for the clan, are you willing to do it?"

"I am willing!"

...

"Wu Ran, if we ask you to sacrifice your life for the clan, are you willing to do it?"

"I am willing!"

...

"I was right about you, Wu Ran. From your grandfather, father, and then you, you were all loyal Wu clan subjects! Now, the clan has a mission for you, this mission would need you to sacrifice your future, your reputation, and maybe even your life."

"Lord clan leader, I am willing to do it for the clan!"

...

In the darkness, Wu Ran opened his eyes.

" Huff ..." He breathed out slowly, sitting up from his bed, muttering: "I dreamed again."

This dream was not fake, but originated from the deepest part of his memory.

’Li Ran’ is his fake name, his real name is ’Wu Ran’.

The surname Wu, bore great significance in southern border. It represented the number one overlord in the southern border, Wu clan!

Eleven years ago, Wu clan leader Empress Wu Ji gave an audience to Wu Ran, and assigned him a secret mission – Making his way into Shang clan’s higher up level!

For this, he changed his name, and roamed the wilderness for three years before settling in Shang clan city.

He laid low for eight whole years.

"It has been eight years, an entire eight years. Wu clan’s clansmen have mostly forgotten me by now huh? Wu Ran is dead, in this world, only Li Ran remains."

Li Ran sighed in his heart.

He had been lurking for too long. So long that he almost forgot his own name.

Here, he wore a mask, living for eight years, pretending to be a libertine, an ordinary Gu Master of the lowest social level. Even to his beloved wife, he did not say a thing.

During this period, he only left once every half a year to contact Wu clan. It had always been a one-sided contact, hiding all traces to the limit.

Until a year ago, the agent informed him that the clan was going to use him. His excitement then could not be expressed in words!

"After eight years, they have finally activated it, everything will be different now!" Li Ran exclaimed. He willed, and a Gu appeared from his storage.

This fossil was cube shaped, like a brick shining with star light on its surface.

This was a stellar stone.

If Fang Yuan was here, he would find that this rock was very similar to the rock used as a leg support in the gambling den.

Li Ran caressed this fossil gently, frowning slightly.

As a spy, he spent ten years lurking in the city, creating a perfect background for himself. It would definitely gain Shang clan’s trust.

But trust is not enough, he needed ability that surpasses the ordinary man, so that he can dominate the battle stage. Only then would Shang clan recruit him, and make him into an external clan elder like Wei Yang, thus gaining authority in Shang clan.

This ’ability’ had to appear naturally, and it cannot be too abrupt.

Thus, Wu clan leader Empress Wu Ji chose a Gu worm for him personally.

This was a Gu that possessed a legendary tale.

Obtained from an ancient strength path inheritance, it is an almost extinct Gu in the current world, it was extremely rare!

With this Gu, Li Ran can emerge from his slumber and dominate the battle stage.

As to the method of ’obtaining’ this Gu, to avoid suspicion, Wu clan had made preparations.

That is, gambling rocks.

Luck is unpredictable, and an ancient Gu being sealed within a fossil was completely normal.

The demonic Gu Master Wei Shen Jing was a subordinate of Empress Wu Ji. Creating a fake scrap grade fossil was as easy as pie, no one would be able to discern it.

Li Ran spent some effort too.

To make sure people believed this was a fossil from the gambling den, and not his own, he chose a gambling rock that was used as leg support in the gambling den.

This rock was there for many years, people walked about and never noticed it.

Li Ran had communicated with Wu clan, asking Wei Shen Jing to create a similar stellar stone.

Later in his plan, he would swap this rock with the stellar stone in his hand without anyone noticing. He was a Gu Master, after observing for half a year, he knew when was the perfect time to swap the stones without anyone realizing.

When he finally opens the stellar stone, the entire gambling den would testify for him, that it was completely due to luck.

After he obtains this Gu, he would turn over a new leaf, and start the story of a prodigal son. He would rise up, find his wife and child, and become an external clan elder of Shang clan. He would complete his mission, and bring his wife and child back to Wu clan, where they belong.

Thinking of his wife and son, Li Ran felt extremely guilty.

He loved his wife deeply, she is so kind, so strong willed.

At the same time, as a father, he would love to give everything good in this world to his son.

He was only making use of her at the start, but as time went on, their relationship deepened, and he could not stop loving her. After their son was born, his love for them only grew. But eventually, because of his mission and secret identity, he had to temporarily leave them.

"You must hate me now, I've disappointed you too much. But it is alright, soon, soon. I have been deployed, I can bring you happiness!"

Li Ran gripped his fists, his eyes shining with determination.

Tomorrow, he would go to the battle stage, and engage in a battle. The day after, he would bring this stellar stone to the gambling den, and perform his life changing show.

"I had planned to use that stone as a cover, but life is hard to predict, someone actually chose it. Heh, that idiot, choosing a scrap grade stellar stone. But... tomorrow, I will have to be an idiot too."

Li Ran laughed, keeping the stellar stone back into his storage Gu.

Although there was some changes to his plans, it was still fine. He had planned for such a small accident anyway.

He laid down once more, and soon, fell into deep sleep.

This time, he did not have any dreams.

On the second day, he felt great, energetic and full of hope.

He felt that he was like a tourist walking in a dark cavern. After a long journey, he finally saw the light ahead, the exit of the cavern!

Eight years of enduring, everything would become so wonderful!

Everything would definitely become perfect!

With such a belief, he arrived at the battle stage.

He had gotten information of the opponent this time, a rank two peak stage Gu Master often seen in fifth inner city's battle stage, he was a familiar face.

Even the weakest Gu Master, if they can roam in the battle stage without giving up, they have the ability to hold their own.

Li Ran did not look down on his opponent, the Gu Li Ran currently had were quite weak and not considered high quality. He had to conceal himself as well, unable to fight fiercely, thus, this battle could go either way.

Indeed, as they fought, it was as Li Ran predicted.

From probing to fighting, the two were evenly matched, at a stalemate.

The battlefield was ravaged, and the few spectators gasped at the scene.

Suddenly, Li Ran's eyes shone brightly.

A chance!

He found a weak point of his opponent, and was about to attack.

Suddenly, his heart hurt, and his body stiffened; the counter attack from his opponent sent him flying.

Li Ran was heavily injured, groaning in pain. His body flew more than ten steps back, until he stopped himself.

A trace of blood fell from his mouth.

However, the severity of his injuries was on par with the shock and fear in his heart right now!

"My flowerbud Gu, my flowerbud Gu! How did it lose connection with me? The stellar stone is inside it!!"

At the same time, at Li Ran’s residence.

The bed was flipped over, showing a secret compartment.

Fang Yuan stood beside it, holding a flowerbud Gu in his hand.

This Gu was rank two, used to store items. It was shaped like a flower, light blue in color but was crystal in material, shining clearly under sunlight.

Although it was Li Ran’s Gu, with the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura, Fang Yuan instantly refined it.

Fang Yuan’s mind went into the Gu, and saw many things inside. A large sack of rice, some daily necessities, a poor quality block of compressed tea, thirty to forty primeval stones and a few fossils.

"This is it!" Fang Yuan’s heart trembled, as he activated his primeval essence, and a black light flew out of the flowerbud Gu.

The black light landed in Fang Yuan’s palm, turning into a stellar stone.

It looked extremely ugly, squarish and resembled a brick, almost the same as the leg support rock.

The moment the stellar stone appeared, the entire world seemed to have went silent.

Fang Yuan’s pupils expanded.

Thump thump... thump thump...

His heartbeat accelerated, he could clearly hear it.

Including this shabby house and the people walking outside, the surroundings faded away; only Fang Yuan and the stellar stone were left.

He held the heavy stellar stone, and he could feel the cold surface of the rock.

Fang Yuan stared at it passionately, at the same time, his lips curled up as he smiled.

His smile widened, until he opened his mouth and laughed silently!

The legendary Gu, is finally in my hands!!!

He screamed in his heart: "Just as I guessed, this Li Ran is a spy from another clan! When I was at Qing Mao mountain, I used the gambling rock to conceal my liquor worm, he is doing the same thing. No wonder the stellar stone was empty, my previous life’s rumor was all part of his act."

"Today, he is going to the battle stage to fight. Whether he concealed his strength or not, according to his previous records, the opponent is around the same level as him, it would be a tough fight. The legendary Gu's stellar stone is so important, it will be tough to fight if he brings it around. With his vigilant nature, he would not hide the stellar stone in the storage Gu and bring it around."

Because if he lost the battle, his opponent would get to take one of his Gu worms.

He knew there was a legendary Gu within the stellar stone, if his opponent took his storage Gu, he would lose the stellar stone!

Translator's Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Good job Sherlock. You guys had some dark thoughts... I hope Fang Yuan's purity can influence you to be righteous and kind -w-

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"I admit defeat!" Li Ran suddenly half kneeled on the ground, shouting loudly.

His opponent stopped charging forward, holding back his attack as he did not want to drive Li Ran into a corner. There was no benefits in doing that for both parties.

Li Ran spit out a mouthful of blood, standing up shakingly.

In order to quickly leave the battlefield, he purposely took a few hits from his opponent.

The hosting Gu Master walked in front, announcing the results of the battle.

Li Ran was extremely anxious, after taking back the vine information Gu, he quickly left the battle stage after pretending to be dejected.

He half-heartedly bandaged his injuries before rushing back to his house.

"God damn it, how can this happen? What in the world happened, why did I lose connection with flowerbud Gu?"

Li Ran's heart was engulfed by a dark cloud.

The flowerbud Gu was a Gu he had refined, the moment Fang Yuan refined it, he could sense it.

"Only two possibilities exist for such a situation. One is that the flowerbud Gu was destroyed, the second is that someone else refined it! Was I discovered? No, maybe the situation isn't as bad as I imagine, a burglar could've entered my house. F*ck, I have lived in Shang clan city for eight years, I know almost all the thieves there are, why would someone want to steal from that house of mine!"

Li Ran walked quickly, the stellar stone was extremely important, even with his calm nature, he could not help but feel anxious.

He was regretting.

He should’ve hid the flowerbud Gu at a safer location, and not place it in the secret compartment under his bed.

But the truth is, that was not his fault.

He had gone undercover, to conceal himself, he did not have any friends, and for the last few years, he had not contacted his wife or child. He often went to brothels, gambling dens, restaurants, those areas were full of people and he could not hide anything there.

He could hide it at a pawn shop, but placing so much attention on a scrap grade fossil was too peculiar. When Shang clan investigates in the future,that would create huge suspicion.

In Shang clan city, all sorts of people existed, there were many thief Gu Masters. But to forcefully take over the flowerbud Gu, a rank three Gu is required. The problem is, why would any rank three Gu Master want to steal from a run down place like his?

Li Ran had lurked for eight years, so long that he almost forgot his past. When he hid the flowerbud Gu, he was very confident but now his confidence turned into regret and self blame.

"Hopefully, the situation can still be salvaged!"

He returned to his home feeling uncertainty, the door was closed.

He opened it, and saw the place was in a mess.

"It was a thief!" He suddenly had a thought.

Encountering a thief was not scary, as long as his identity was not exposed, all could be salvaged.

"That’s right!" Li Ran consoled himself: "Every time I contacted Wu clan, it was a one-sided transmission. There are no evidence on me, and that legendary Gu is inside the stellar stone. If it is not opened, who would know the value of it? As long as I find the thief, with my eight years of experience in this city..."

As he thought about it, he calmed his emotions, and stopped panicking.

"Should I report the case? Using the guards’ ability to arrest the thief? No, I should be polite before resorting to brute force, it is best if I can get back the stellar stone peacefully. The city guards can’t be trusted too, they would not spend effort for a small fry like me. Maybe I should hire a Tie clan Gu Master?"

"Eh? This is..." At this point, he concentrated, and found a Gu after flipping over his bed.

Heart sound Gu!

This Gu was rank two, green and black in color, around the size of a baby’s thumb. It was shaped like a conch shell, one end was large while the other end was tiny, and had a spiral appearance.

"Heart sound Gu comes in pairs, it can allow two Gu Masters to speak internally within a hundred steps. Don’t tell me... the thief left this behind specially for me?!"

Li Ran’s eyes shone with hesitation, but he gritted his teeth and placed the heart sound Gu into his ear, like a earplug.

"Who are you?" Li Ran injected primeval essence, and activated the heart sound Gu, concentrating his mind and asked.

"That question is not important. The important thing is, Li Ran is a fake name right? Hehehe." Soon after, Fang Yuan’s voice appeared in Li Ran’s head.

That instant, Li Ran’s pupils shrunk as he looked like he was struck by lightning, stunned on the spot.

"Not good, he found out my identity!" Li Ran was horror stricken.

The situation had become the worst!

But he was after all, a spy for eight years, even with this turn of events, he calmed his mind and spoke to Fang Yuan: "Fake name? What fake name, what do you mean?"

He said as he carefully tiptoed, walking around in the shabby house.

He next leaned on the wall, looking at the street outside the window.

"The heart sound Gu has an effective range, only a hundred steps away at most, he must be near me." He rapidly thought of a solution.

To use the heart sound Gu, one has to concentrate in order to speak, ordinary thinking would not be transmitted.

But Fang Yuan was well aware of his mental state, lightly laughing: "Don’t bother acting Li Ran. I am not your enemy, as long as you cooperate, to express my sincerity, we can meet up."

"Meet up?" Li Ran was shocked.

Next, Fang Yuan’s voice rang in his head: "Now, walk out of your room and turn left around the door."

"Why should I listen to you?" Li Ran called out in his mind.

Fang Yuan laughed: "Don’t try to test how much I know, it is beyond your imagination. I will count to five, consider well."

"One." Fang Yuan counted.

Li Ran rapidly thought about the situation.

Even though the flowerbud Gu was in the thief’s hands, they had no evidence that he was a Wu clan spy.

He had lurked for eight years, how could there be evidence?

"Two." Fang Yuan spoke casually.

If at this time, he listened to Fang Yuan, and gets spotted by others, that would be concrete proof that he was a spy.

But if he did not listen, what happens to the stellar stone?

"Five." Fang Yuan continued to count.

Li Ran’s mind was thrown into chaos, as he scolded: "God damn, can you even count properly?!"

"Hehehe, it seems you have come to a decision." Fang Yuan laughed.

Li Ran breathed deeply, his fists clenched tightly, as he gritted his teeth and left the house.

He walked out of the door, and arrived at a busy street. Next, he turned left.

About fifty steps later, Fang Yuan’s voice rang out again: "Turn right, at the third cross junction, turn left."

"He can see my movements, he has to be beside me, but who?" Li Ran had sharp vision, like an eagle sweeping the crowd.

"I would advise you not to look around, that is not your usual behavior. Hehe, after eight years, you want it all to go down the drain?" Fang Yuan quickly said.

"Damn it..." Li Ran gritted his teeth till they squeaked, Fang Yuan’s threat made him lower his head as he looked ahead.

Following Fang Yuan’s instructions, he turned and walked around in circles, until Fang Yuan told him to stop.

"Turn around." Fang Yuan quickly followed: "In your vision, there should be a restaurant, go to the third storey, I will be waiting there."

Li Ran looked, and his heart jumped.

This restaurant, was the one he often came to, Fu Tai Xiang He restaurant.

"Don’t tell me..." He had a bad feeling in his heart. The thief held so much information about him, it felt like he was stripped bare naked in the winter snow plains.

He entered the restaurant.

The familiar shop assistant looked at him, enthusiastically calling out: "Lord Li Ran, you are here, please come upstairs!"

Li Ran’s grim face smiled slightly as he carried his utmost vigilance and ascended the ladder.

Halfway through, before the second floor.

"Wait." Fang Yuan suddenly said.

Li Ran stopped his movement, asking: "What?"

"Go downstairs, and out of the door." Fang Yuan instructed.

Li Ran snorted, having no choice but to leave.

The shop assistant looked at him, feeling confused, quickly asking: "What is the matter lord, are you not eating anymore?"

Li Ran waved his hand, asking him to leave, as he walked out of the restaurant.

"Opposite you, there is a shop selling baked pancakes, go buy a few." Fang Yuan continued.

Li Ran’s eyes twitched, but he followed the instructions, buying a few pancakes.

"Okay, now return to the third floor of the restaurant." Fang Yuan said again.

Li Ran’s forehead was popping with veins as he held the pancake and returned to the restaurant.

The shop assistant saw him entering again, looking at him weirdly: "Lord Li Ran, if you want to buy pancakes, just call me, I can buy it for you."

"Scram." Li Ran shouted, scaring the shop assistant as he shuddered and stopped talking.

He got to the third floor, and stopped after the ladder.

"Continue, take two to three steps and turn left, you will see me." Fang Yuan instructed.

Li Ran followed the instructions, as he walked around a pillar, and finally saw Fang Yuan, sitting at his usual spot.

Next, he saw Fang Yuan stretch out his hand, inviting him to the seat. At the same time, he heard in his mind: "Please take a seat."

Li Ran did not speak, quietly sitting before Fang Yuan, then staring at him without blinking.

The truth is, Fang Yuan’s youthful appearance gave him a huge shock.

When they conversed, Fang Yuan held him tightly by the collar, he subconsciously pictured the image of Fang Yuan as an unscrupulous middle aged man, or an elderly wearing a hat, hiding his face in the darkness.

But the truth was completely the opposite.

The voice from the heart sound Gu would always be tuned, it cannot ascertain age, but could easily determine the gender.

If he did not see it with his own eyes, Li Ran would never have thought the mysterious man was so young!

Fifth inner city’s street lights passed the windows and shone on Fang Yuan’s face. Although he had a plain look, his eyes were as black as ink, like an abyss, deep and mysterious.

Li Ran memorised Fang Yuan’s face deep in his heart.

Although this was the first time they met, he could swear, he would never forget Fang Yuan’s appearance in this life.

Because it was due to this young man that all his plans were foiled, and in such a helpless way!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Eight years of experience heh.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

On the dinner table, dishes and wine produced amazing fragrance.

At the surrounding tables, some people were playing drinking games, some recited poems, others were playing around, it was a relaxed and fun atmosphere.

Fang Yuan and Li Ran sat opposite each other, they looked very peaceful, but they were secretly sizing each other up. It was the calm before the storm. Li Ran had deep killing intent in his heart, and although Fang Yuan looked relaxed, he was also wary of Li Ran.

"Who exactly are you?" Li Ran asked using the heart sound Gu.

"I said before, that is not important. Pass the pancake to me." The first half was spoken internally, while the second sentence was using his mouth.

Li Ran was stunned, before pushing the paper bag towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan opened the bag, taking out a pancake and biting, nodding: "Now this is the flavor I wanted, I’m so sorry for the trouble."

Next, he used the heart sound Gu: "Do you know, I tailed you for several days below this restaurant, I got hungry and bought a pancake, and found it really delicious, want to try?"

Li Ran had no mood to try the pancake.

He snorted in his heart, asking: "Aren’t you afraid I’ll poison it?"

But on the surface, he smiled and said: "It is no big deal, no trouble at all. Don’t forget we have a great relationship."

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan laughed out loud, staring at Li Ran with deep meaning, transmitting in his mind: "You think I don’t know what Gu you have?"

Li Ran smiled more brightly, but his heart sank.

"He is trying to remind me! That’s right, the enemy is hiding in the shadows while I am out there, I did not even sense him tailing me these few days. He should’ve known all about me already. If I fight him now, there is a low chance of success, thus he used this pancake to warn me!"

Fang Yuan saw Li Ran keeping silent, his eyes shifting around, and knew the warning got through, thus he took out the stellar stone.

Li Ran’s gaze was attracted, but the stone was quickly taken away.

The next moment, Fang Yuan’s voice rang in his mind: "Stop pretending, I know the all-out effort Gu is inside this."

"WHAT?!" Li Ran’s heart shook like he had been struck by lightning.

Even if he was a good actor, his expression changed showing fluster and fear.

He had been hoping the secret of the stellar stone would not be exposed. After all, it came form Wei Shen Jing, there were no flaws, but to think the matter had worsened to this extent, the other party knew the all-out effort Gu was sealed inside!

"Wait, the matter regarding the all-out effort Gu, only a few people know about it. Even I only knew about it soon after receiving it, how did he find out?"

"The matter is complex now... I am confident there are no loopholes on my end, thus this should've been exposed on the clan side! Wu clan can send a spy like me here, Shang clan can also send theirs over. The few large clans in the southern border, they infiltrate each other, and there are spies everywhere, they should be clear of each other's matters."

"If not, how could he know about the all-out effort Gu? That's right, I was so vigilant, how could I make a mistake and let him get a hold on me, or even suspect me? To think my home clan has been infiltrated to this extent, it is truly scary!"

"But maybe that isn't the case, in this world, there are too many special Gu worms..."

Fang Yuan left Li Ran ample time to think.

He was a smart person, the more he thought, the more suspicious he would get. Subconsciously, he would imagine Fang Yuan to be stronger, more mysterious, and scarier. That would make him feel inferior during the discussion.

Fang Yuan played with the stellar stone, after a while, when the time was almost ripe, he continued transmitting his voice: "I want the all-out effort Gu."

Li Ran was stunned, not understanding Fang Yuan's deeper meaning.

"But I know, if I take this Gu, I would face the wrath and revenge of your clan. Thus, I need your cooperation." Fang Yuan's gaze was eerie.

To be able to plot against Shang clan, they had to be an equally large clan. If Fang Yuan took the all-out effort Gu by force, he would be enemies with this clan.

This stellar stone was like bait on a hook. If Fang Yuan wanted to eat this bait, he needed to avoid getting stuck on the hook.

Li Ran revealed a mocking smile: "You want me to cooperate with you, what a joke, on what basis?"

"Based on the fact that I do not want to be enemies with you. Even if I have the purple thorn token, I do not want to be enemies with you, because like you, I have people I want to protect." Fang Yuan said in his mind to Li Ran, as he looked out of the window.

At the same time, he said with his mouth: "I heard that shop sells great tofu."

Li Ran squinted, his eyes showing a ferocious gaze, screaming in his mind: "Are you threatening me?!"

Fang Yuan shook his head, in his eyes, there were clouds drifting, as he showed a complex emotion on his face. Li Ran instantly caught his emotion, there were sadness, pain, helplessness, and fondness.

"Are you not clear of your situation?" Fang Yuan said in his mind: "People like us, squeezed between two strong forces, living on the edge everyday, hiding our emotions in the depths of our hearts, and could die anytime. Since we chose this path, we can only continue walking on it. It is all for the clan, we have no regrets. But some people, they are innocent, why should they be implicated into our business, and bear the risks for us?"

Li Ran’s heart stirred, staring at Fang Yuan in disbelief: "You... are a spy too?"

Fang Yuan laughed helplessly, in a bitter tone: "What do you think?"

Li Ran saw this smile, and his eyes watered, as he stared tightly at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s expression did not have a tint of unnaturalness, as he turned to look outside the window.

Li Ran knew he was looking at his own wife and children.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was so gentle, so dazed, as if he was recalling certain memories.

Li Ran did not think he was acting, because this youngster was too young, how could he fake such true emotions? Even at his age, Li Ran could not act to this level.

This was his true emotions!

Unknowingly, a sense of acceptance towards Fang Yuan grew in his heart.

As people in similar situations, they did not need a deep relationship to understand each other.

Fang Yuan blinked, looking back at Li Ran, and said: "Li Ran, you have lurked in Shang clan city for eight years. If your identity is exposed, your mission would fail. Your failure may cause you to lose your life, but more importantly, the clan would suffer a loss, and you would let down their expectations."

Li Ran clenched his fists.

Fang Yuan’s words pulled the strings in his heart.

He was loyal to the clan, almost religiously. Otherwise, the clan would not have chosen him to be the spy.

Fang Yuan said again: "If you fail, your wife would lose her husband. Your son is only five now, he would lose his father. If your identity is exposed, there is a high chance of them dying because of you. You only have one step left to succeed, the position of clan elder is your goal, am I right? But do you think that is the end? No, you will continue lurking, as long as Shang clan existed, the clan would need your spying."

Li Ran gritted his teeth.

Fang Yuan’s words hit the nail on the head.

All these things, did he not consider them? He only dared to think about them for a moment before stopping. The more he thought about it, the more pressure he felt, the future was really too long, it would cause him to lose the courage to continue!

"Thus, you need alliance mates, brother Li Ran." Fang Yuan continued speaking: "You will not betray your clan, I won’t either. You have people you want to protect, so do I. We can cooperate, we need external force to ensure our family’s safety. We have to live in order to make contributions to our clans. And the Shang clan is our mutual goal."

’Of course, this cooperation is only in private. If our clans want to wage war, you will be the first person I will eliminate." After pausing briefly, Fang Yuan added.

Li Ran snorted coldly, Fang Yuan’s truthful declaration only made his words more trustworthy.

To him, loyalty to the clan is the top priority, next is his family, and then his own life.

Fang Yuan’s suggestion catered to his three needs.

"But can this person be trusted? We are from different forces, cooperation between spies is wishful thinking! Maybe... it is because he is young, and coupled with his intellect and courage, he thought of this method? If I was this young, I’m afraid... I may do the same... or not."

The more Li Ran thought about it, the more he felt Fang Yuan’s sincerity.

Most importantly, he had no other way out! He was completely exposed before Fang Yuan.

If Fang Yuan exposed him, his mission would fail, his ten years of hard work would go up in flames, how could he accept this?

Human nature is complex, they have this thing called fluke mentality.

Li Ran was like someone who was driven to a cliff, with his enemies approaching, he could only jump down. Even if he did not know what was below the cliff, he would still pray that there is a water body below, or maybe he would be saved by some tree branches while descending.

He fell into deep silence for a long time.

After a few minutes, he used the heart sound Gu: "How can I believe you?"

Fang Yuan smiled, taking out a poison vow Gu.

...

Three days later, Fang Yuan opened the all-out effort Gu in the gambling den, causing the entire district to go into chaos.

"Did you hear? Someone opened an all-out effort Gu in Lan Chao gambling den!"

"Is that really the all-out effort Gu? It is a near extinct ancient Gu, able to summon the beast phantom a hundred percent of the time!"

"You guys only knew now? Hehe, I know more than you. This extremely lucky person is called Gu Yue Fang Zheng. I don’t know why, but he has a purple thorn token. The all-out effort Gu was not supposed to be his, but was chosen by a Gu Master called Li Ran, but he knocked into Gu Yue Fang Zheng who decided to find problems with him, taking away three fossils from him as compensation. That all-out effort Gu was within those fossils."

"Oh dear, he really is unlucky, the all-out effort Gu should’ve been his!"

"This is fate..."

"Lan Chao gambling den, no, I have to go take a look!"

At once, rumors spread all over Shang clan city.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Not all problems are solved through killing, sometimes, you need mutual understanding, and sympathy for one another especially if you face the same hardships.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"This is the all-out effort Gu?"

In the secret room, Wei Yang held this Gu in his hand as he exclaimed, strange light shining in his eyes.

All-out effort Gu, it was shaped like a rhinoceros beetle.

Now, it was sitting quietly in Wei Yang’s palm, its body was almost the size of Wei Yang’s palm, and was quite heavy.

It was oval in shape, and had a strong armor exoskeleton. There was a strong horn on its head, looking heavy and powerful.

It had three pairs of legs, all strong and thick. Its body was dark brown, and glistened with a metallic surface. People only needed one glance to know it was not ordinary.

"That’s right, this is the rank three all-out effort Gu. Once used, it would summon a beast phantom, able to move according to my will." Fang Yuan was sitting on a cushion opposite Wei Yang, as he explained.

Wei Yang breathed in deeply, handing the all-out effort Gu back to Fang Yuan.

"At this timing, is it fate? Brother Fang Zheng, are you truly bent on the strength path?" He gave his last attempt.

Fang Yuan nodded, not speaking, but his determined expression said everything.

Wei Yang sighed again.

If previously, he was confident of changing Fang Yuan’s mind, at this moment, after obtaining the all-out effort Gu, he knew that Fang Yuan’s decision was final, there was no hope in changing it.

"Fate is really mystical, obtaining the all-out effort Gu would greatly help you on the strength path. The all-out effort Gu is undoubtedly the core Gu worm in assembling your set. If you are so determined, I shall say no more. But I have one final thing to remind you, just treat it as my nagging."

Fang Yuan became serious: "Not at all, please give me your advice!"

"Although you have the all-out effort Gu, times are different now. If this all-out effort Gu is your core, you have to ensure its safety. It is only a rank three Gu now, if you want to refine it into rank four or rank five in the future, there is too much danger in refining it if it is not your vital Gu. If the all-out effort Gu is destroyed in the process of refinement, your entire set would collapse without the core. Thus, my first advice to you is to convert it into your vital Gu. Shang clan can help you to achieve this."

"To make a set, just one core is not enough, you need several important support Gu. Regarding this, you need to choose carefully, and think ahead. If your choice is wrong, it will not allow you to display the full value of all-out effort Gu. Sigh, actually, during ancient times, when strength path flourished, there were much more Gu worms that complemented the all-out effort Gu. Now, most of them are extinct, if you want to assemble a Gu set, you cannot use ancient methods, but can only explore this yourself."

"I have another extremely important matter that you have to take note of. Although you have the all-out effort Gu, you have no corresponding refinement recipe. But thankfully, most of the recipes from the Olden Antiquity Era were passed down. There should be some in certain recipe masters’ hands, you have to collect them. If not..."

Saying so, Wei Yang hesitated.

"You can try your luck in exploring ancient strength path inheritances. Wu clan found such an inheritance several years ago, if you can find one, your future would be set. I really want to see the strength path flourish in your hands!"

After saying these things, Wei Yang took his leave.

Fang Yuan sent him off, and watched Wei Yang turn into light and fly away.

Fang Yuan stood at the door of the secret room, his gaze concentrating.

The advice Wei Yang gave, he had considered all of them long ago, and had plans already.

He already had a copy of the all-out effort Gu’s recipe, obviously from Li Ran.

Wu clan provided Li Ran the all-out effort Gu, they naturally gave him the recipe.

But this recipe only allowed the rank three all-out effort Gu to reach rank four. Any higher, Fang Yuan needed to find out himself.

But in this aspect, Fang Yuan was only rank three initial stage now, in the short run, he had no worries about the rank five refinement recipe.

As for what Gu to choose, in order to complement the all-out effort Gu, and become support for the core, Fang Yuan had his plans.

He had always been the type to walk one step and plan ten ahead, he was extremely confident.

"The strength path Gu set, should use the all-out effort Gu as the core, self-reliance Gu and bitter strength Gu as the support. With a few other Gu worms accompanying, this set of Gu worms can be considered initial success. But to reach greater success, I have to rely on the three kings inheritance."

Spending two to three years in Shang clan city, assembling a set of Gu and reach initial success stage.

When the three kings inheritance activates, he will use the advantages of rebirth and add in useful Gu worms to cause his Gu set to reach greater success stage.

This was Fang Yuan’s plans for the near future.

"This plan has to be executed perfectly. Because after the three kings inheritance, it would be the righteous demonic battle at Yi Tian mountain, if my battle strength is not high enough then, I would not be able to gather enough benefits for myself. Time, is really tight..."

As for the third, his vital Gu.

Fang Yuan’s vital Gu is Spring Autumn Cicada, this cannot be changed.

Then the refinement of the all-out effort Gu would be much more difficult. Since there is a risk to the Gu, the refinement would need to be done extremely carefully.

If Fang Yuan was unlucky, and caused the all-out effort Gu to die during refinement, his set of Gu worms would lose their foundation, like a human without a soul.

If that happens, the outcome would be disastrous, almost equivalent to Fang Yuan’s strength path cultivation being crippled.

But, there were ways to ensure the all-out effort Gu survives during refinement even if it was not his vital Gu.

Wei Yang did not know because he was a frog in a well.

Fang Yuan knew three methods.

First method was to head to the "Land of Bu Bai". This was the Bu Bai inheritance, far away in central continent, the sacred land for refinement masters.

Secondly, he could use the undefeated hundred battles Gu, when refining Gu, it could ensure a hundred percent success rate.

The third was also a Gu, called "green mountain remains". ’As long as the green mountain remains, one need not worry about firewood.’ Only by keeping something vital is there a chance for a comeback. Using this Gu, it can protect the core Gu, even if refinement fails and the other Gu are destroyed, the all-out effort Gu will still remain.

The land of Bu Bai was too far away, it was impossible to get there. Undefeated hundred battles Gu, an extremely rare rank five Gu even during ancient times, right now it was extinct. "Green mountain remains" was in the hands of several refinement masters, this was a rank four Gu, it was difficult to obtain but there was at least some hope.

"There is one undefeated hundred battles Gu in the three kings inheritance. If I can get it, the all-out effort Gu’s advancement to rank four would be ensured. Next, I can only think of other ways... now, it is time to replace everything."

Fang Yuan had a careful nature, before he obtained the all-out effort Gu, even though he had hundreds of thousands of primeval stones, he did not spend them.

Now that it is in his hands, he finally decided to act.

He did not need to leave Nan Qiu garden, instead going to the study room and taking out a large number of invitations.

Ever since he ’gambled’ and won the all-out effort Gu, rumors flew about in Shang clan city, and everyone were acting like cats who saw fish , swarming at Fang Yuan’s place.

Fang Yuan had the purple thorn token, and attended Shang Yan Fei’s clan banquet before, he had a unique identity and no one dared to force him.

They had sent all sorts of invitations, but Fang Yuan stayed in his house for several days, not meeting a single guest.

Now, Fang Yuan took out the invitations, and saw that a portion were from recipe masters, hoping to meet Fang Yuan and become acquaintances, so that they can borrow the all-out effort Gu for research. A Gu from the Antiquity Era would be great help towards their recipe creation.

Another portion were established Gu Masters, holding all sorts of titles, they either wished to spar with Fang Yuan or wanted to exchange Gu worms with him.

But mostly, the invitations came from all the famous shops, and all the large clan’s Gu Masters, hoping to purchase the all-out effort Gu.

Fang Yuan chose a small portion of them, and instructed his servants to send a message to them.

Not long after, a group of Gu Masters came running.

Fang Yuan met them at the reception hall: "I am not selling the all-out effort Gu, I am meeting everyone here today for other trading purposes."

This caused everyone to be disappointed, but some did not give up, only after Fang Yuan’s firm attitude did they give up.

Three hours later, a few business were settled, and everyone left.

Two days later, the Gu worms arrived.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength surged, but he paid a huge price.

Gu worms were seriously too expensive, he spent several hundred thousand primeval stones for them. The old man made of clouds in the primeval elder Gu was already hunching his back as he showed a painful and worried expression, in an extremely pitiful state.

Another day later, Fang Yuan stepped into the battle stage.

At once, everyone went wild.

Outside the battle stage, people were crowding to the point where there was no walking space.

His opponent was none other than Li Ran.

He stared at Fang Yuan, his expression twisted and his eyes burned with fire, as he screamed: "Gu Yue Fang Zheng, you stole my opportunity, that is extremely despicable! Today, I will take back what belongs to me."

"Hmph, who told you to knock into me? I asked for compensation but you refused to pay primeval stones. Those stones covered your debt, you were willing as well." Fang Yuan laughed coldly as he answered.

The viewers outside started to discuss among themselves as they became extremely noisy.

Fang Yuan and Li Ran’s conversation testified the truth behind the rumors these days.

"Ahhh!" Li Ran grabbed his hair, screaming to the sky: "Fang Zheng, you tyrant, I was forced by you! I only knocked into you by accident, but you refused to let me go. Today, I will seek justice for myself!"

Saying so, Li Ran pounced at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, seeing him get close, he willed.

Vertical crash Gu.

Howl!

The winds blew as he took a step, and his body charged forward by fifty steps.

Li Ran felt his vision blur as Fang Yuan had already charged up to him.

All-out effort Gu.

Fang Yuan willed, and light burst forth, forming the phantom image of a wild boar charging in mid air behind him.

The wild boar was black and had sharp tusks, showing a fierce expression as the winds blew!

"Not good!" Li Ran screamed, dodging.

Fang Yuan charged right past him, although Li Ran was not hit head on, his arm was scratched.

Next, with a ’crack’, his forearm bone broke, and the defensive light on Li Ran’s body vanished, as he fell to the ground, unable to get up.

"Just one hit!"

"Was that the all-out effort Gu?"

"That Li Ran is too weak, he is definitely not Fang Zheng’s match!"

Outside, the spectators exclaimed, expressing their shock.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Will Li Ran manage to take revenge and get back his Gu worm?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan charged for fifty steps before he stopped. He turned around, facing Li Ran, about to launch his second attack.

But Li Ran had already raised his hand, shouting loudly: "Wait, no more, I admit defeat!"

Once he said so, the surroundings went quiet, before exploding.

"What, no more?"

"We spent primeval stones to come here and see the all-out effort Gu."

"You coward, are you even a man, stand up and fight!"

Everyone shouted furiously.

Many people were angry and breathed roughly, feeling that their primeval stones were wasted, starting to grumble and scold. But a portion of the people understood Li Ran.

"There’s no way to win, it is wise to concede."

"That hit earlier showed their difference. If they continue, Li Ran’s life would be in danger.

"This Li Ran is a veteran in the battle stage. With his rich experience, I am not surprised he did that."

Clank.

A loud ring from the bell, and this match was over.

The spectators started to leave the stage, as Fang Yuan took his leave as well.

"Fang Zheng, wait first." Li Ran suddenly called, stopping him.

Fang Yuan frowned, turning around and looking at him: "What do you want?"

Everyone’s footsteps halted.

"Fang Zheng, you are indebted to me, but now you hurt and injured me, this is repaying kindness with vengeance, you have to compensate me!" Li Ran shouted.

These words were shameless, he wanted to challenge Fang Zheng without knowing their difference, now that he got injured, how could he say his opponent was "repaying kindness with vengeance".

Many people heard this and snorted, feeling disdain towards Li Ran.

Challenging Fang Yuan forcefully, that was because he could not take it lying down, many people understood his emotions. But after losing, he still continued to pester Fang Yuan, that was going overboard.

Fang Yuan shook his head, turning to leave: "Your brain was damaged by my attack too?"

Many people jeered and laughed.

But Li Ran struggled to get up, shouting at Fang Yuan: "Fang Zheng, I know your personality! You distinguish kindness and hatred clearly, the acclaimed ’a droplet received in need will be repaid with a whole spring, a spark of hatred will result in the burning of an entire forest!’ Shang Xin Ci showed you a little kindness and you risked your life to protect her, escorting her to Shang clan city. Shang clan leader wanted to reward you but you rejected all of them, saying that your kindness had been repaid. The Shang clan leader even had to force you to accept the purple thorn token!’

"Fang Zheng, to be honest, I have done you a favor. If I did not choose that stellar stone, would you be able to get that all-out effort Gu? No! Hehe, nevermind if it is another person, but I know you, I understand you. Although you are oppressive and tyrannical, you have to repay kindness or you will be unable to sleep. Isn’t that so? Think about it, you owe me a favor, can you sleep tonight?"

"Heh, that is because you have never seen Fang Yuan’s true colors!" Among the crowd, Bai Ning Bing heard Li Ran’s words and snorted coldly.

Fang Yuan obtaining the all-out effort Gu had made her curious.

After all, Fang Yuan was her rival.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan stopped in his steps.

As everyone watched, he turned around and faced Li Ran, with a serious expression.

"If you put it like that, it seems I owe you a favor. But firstly, it was because you offended me, and second, I cannot give the all-out effort Gu away. What do you want me to do?"

Fang Yuan’s words made everyone who was leaving stop their steps and observe their conversation again.

Bai Ning Bing gasped in her heart, feeling shocked.

"Although the all-out effort Gu is rank three, it originated from the Olden Antiquity Era, it is considered unique now, its true value cannot be estimated. Give me a hundred thousand primeval stones, and your favor will be considered repaid!" Li Ran thought about it and said.

"Is this Li Ran stupid?"

"He dares to ask for such a ridiculous sum, such stupidity, sigh..."

"Making such a request, he is so shameless!"

Everyone shook their heads, feeling disappointed at Li Ran’s shamelessness.

Fang Yuan thought about it, shaking his head.

"A hundred thousand primeval stones is insufficient, I’ll give you two hundred thousand, that would put me at ease." Saying so, he waved his hand and summoned the primeval elder Gu, pouring all the primeval stones out.

On the floor of the battle stage, a mountain of primeval stones appeared.

"This is eighty thousand, that’s all I have now. I’ll give you the rest when I have money!"

"What?!" Fang Yuan’s words sent everyone into shock.

"He actually gave it? And... and even raised it to two hundred thousand!" Everyone was tongue-tied.

"Did I see wrongly?! Although this Li Ran did not obtain the all-out effort Gu, getting so much primeval stones as compensation is almost as good." Everyone blinked, seeing those primeval stones, they almost drooled.

"This Fang Zheng is really..." Many people saw Fang Yuan leave and felt weird in their hearts, not sure of what to say.

Although they did not manage to see the power of the all-out effort Gu, hearing Li Ran and Fang Yuan’s conversation made the trip worth it.

News about this battle quickly circulated, and spread around Shang clan city.

The fact that Fang Yuan had a purple thorn token also circulated, resulting in people who had ill intentions to vanish without a trace.

Many people started to be envious of Li Ran, while others also felt doubt towards Fang Yuan’s promise of two hundred thousand primeval stones.

But no matter what, Fang Yuan’s ’distinguish kindness and hatred’ reputation also became well-known.

Back at Nan Qiu garden.

"Do you really intend to give that Li Ran two hundred thousand primeval stones?" Bai Ning Bing asked suspiciously.

This was not Fang Yuan’s style at all.

"Of course." Fang Yuan replied curtly. He was obviously not going to tell Bai Ning Bing that this was his secret agreement with Li Ran. Li Ran would act with Fang Yuan, and tell him the refinement recipe, while Fang Yuan compensates him two hundred thousand primeval stones.

Bai Ning Bing was solemn for a while, not believing him, then laughing coldly: "Two hundred thousand just for a reputation, is it worth it?"

Fang Yuan snickered: "Have you never heard the story of reputation Gu?"

Bai Ning Bing’s gaze was hesitant: "What are you trying to say?"

"Reputation is a bridge, one that allows people to cross through the abyss. Reputation is a travel token, more important and precious than the purple thorn token, it allows one to move about with ease. Two hundred thousand cannot even buy the purple thorn token, yet i spent that amount to obtain this reputation. This is the best trade in the world. Hahaha." Fang Yuan laughed.

Bai Ning Bing snorted, but thinking that he had a precognitive Gu, she chose to believe him for now.

Regarding the reputation Gu’s story, it originated from the legends of Ren Zu...

One time, Verdant Great Sun got very drunk, when he woke up, his head hurt and he forgot all that happened when he was drunk. He did not know why he was trapped on a lone hill, one which was surrounded by a bottomless abyss.

The abyss was filled with spiral winds, pale green color, this was the ’usual wind’. The winds blew dust into the air, those were the dark yellow color ’mortal dust’.

Verdant Great Sun’s heart sank, because he recognised that this was the ordinary abyss. No living being had ever managed to fly past it. He was trapped on this lone hill, unable to get out; he would die of starvation eventually.

Thankfully, there was a forest on the lone hill. Verdant Great Sun was hungry, and came into this forest to find fruits to eat. But this forest was very strange, the black soil was like a swamp, smelling extremely pungent. The trees had no leaves, and the branches looked like strange claws. But when the wind blew, there was the sound of leaves moving in the wind.

Verdant Great Sun could not find food, and fell into despair, knowing he was going to die soon.

A few days later, he was so hungry he could not move, leaning on the tree trunk as he laid on the ground.

He eventually fell unconscious.

In his slumber, he could hear many voices talking.

"Hey look, this person finally passed out."

"Mm, as I expected, he’s finished."

"Actually, it is possible to leave the ordinary abyss, you just need the reputation Gu."

"Reputation Gu is at the center of the forest, hidden under a rock. Too bad he doesn’t know, hahaha..."

"Sshhh, speak softer, it will be bad if he hears us."

"It’s okay, it’s okay, he has fainted already, before long, the black soil will bury him, and turn him into nutrients for us trees."

Hearing this, Verdant Great Sun jolted awake.

It turns out this forest is Xi Yu forest, what he had thought was leaves brushing in the wind turned out to be the whispers of the trees.

After hearing the information, Verdant Great Sun walked to the center of the forest, lifted the rock, and obtained the reputation Gu.

Reputation Gu was like a chrysanthemum, its petals were golden yellow, emitting a fragrance.

Reputation Gu said to Verdant Great Sun: "Young man, thank you for lifting the rock, and saving me. To repay you, I have decided to help you get across this ordinary abyss."

Reputation Gu told Verdant Great Sun the method to use it.

Verdant Great Sun was overjoyed, arriving at ordinary abyss, and placed the reputation Gu in his mouth, shouting as loud as he could...

The strange thing was, no matter how loud he shouted, there was no sound, but the vibrations in the air caused the ordinary abyss to shake, as the commotion got bigger, it was like an earthquake. The air was even filled with a brilliant fragrance.

Verdant Great Sun did not feel anything weird, as he had known from the reputation Gu: Reputation itself has no voice, but it can spread wide and create tremors.

As he shouted, a golden bridge appeared in midair, but the bridge’s length was limited, there was still a long distance to the other side.

Verdant Great Sun was too hungry, too tired, after trying several times, the effect continue to diminish, and his chance for salvation seemed dim.

Reputation Gu sighed: "Sigh, you have not eaten anything in a while, even though you have a breath left in your stomach, it is too little. From your diaphragm, it has to go through your stomach, chest, throat, and finally your mouth, the journey is too long, we have to reduce it, here, place me between your two buttcheeks.

Verdant Great Sun did as instructed.

Reputation Gu landed near his private part, and turned into a chrysanthemum cave.

"Okay, you can start shouting again." Reputation Gu said.

Verdant Great Sun forced that last breath of his, out of this hole, out of his body.

Prrrrrrrt—

In his daze, Verdant Great Sun heard a loud sound. The air was filled with an unimaginable stench, but that golden bridge became majestic and large, stretching over a thousand miles, reaching the other side.

A shitty reputation compared to good reputation, is always easier to obtain and maintain.

Verdant Great Sun quickly crossed the bridge, leaving the ordinary abyss and reaching the other side, saving his own life.

Translator's Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Life lesson out of nowhere. It takes a lot of effort to build a good reputation but a bad name spreads naturally on its own.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Eight days later.

Nan Qiu garden.

At the small square, the ground paved with starry stones shone under the starlight.

Fang Yuan stood in the square with his hands folded, legs slightly open and his eyes closed. His breathing was deep and long.

In front of him were a dozen stone pillars.

Every stone pillars were twenty feet thick, and were dark and rigid. The stone pillars were spaced apart so that it almost covered the small square.

Whish...

Fang Yuan let out a breath of turbid air and suddenly opened his eyes.

At that very moment, a ray of lightning seemed to flash through the void!

Dash!

He took large steps forward and in a few steps reached a stone pillar.

His steps stopped, he bent his waist before swinging his arms vigorously and punching at the pillar.

Bang.

With a dull thud, the stone pillar shook, stone fragments flew about and a spherical dent appeared on the pillar.

Again.

Fang Yuan held his breath then used his fists and palms to attack in turns. Not only that, he also used kicks, flying kicks, elbow strikes, knee strikes, shoulder bash... every part of his body became sharp, strong weapons.

Bang bang bang....

The dull sounds continued along with the stone pillar’s continuous shaking and the stone fragments scattering in the air.

Fang Yuan attacked like a storm and gale in one breath, his attacks continuous and endless.

Within seconds, the stone pillar was reduced to half, like a small tree in a storm.

Crack.

Fang Yuan whipped his leg horizontally as a clear sound echoed; the stone pillar that was already hanging by a thread could not endure it anymore and broke into two, falling into the ground.

Fang Yuan relaxedly retracted his leg, his breath was only slightly affected and droplets of sweat seeped out of his forehead.

He looked at the ground.

The appearance of the two broken parts of the stone pillar were changed beyond recognition; their surfaces were filled with dents, results of Fang Yuan’s punches and kicks.

"Indeed, it is difficult to bring out the beast strength phantom without using all-out effort Gu, and with just normal attacks."

Ha!

He shouted and in two large strides, he reached the nearest stone pillar.

His right palm smacked heavily towards the stone pillar.

Growl!

A brown bear phantom image suddenly appeared in mid air behind Fang Yuan. It was quite plump, and its mouth was filled with dense white sharp fangs. At the same time as Fang Yuan, it raised its right palm and smacked, the movement strikingly similar to Fang Yuan’s.

In that instant, Fang Yuan felt a sudden surge of strength in his right palm!

BOOM.

A huge sound thundered at the impact of Fang Yuan’s smack on the stone pillar.

The stone pillar, which needed two people to wrap around it, immediately broke by the smack, producing a loud sound as it collapsed and formed a small pit on the floor.

The countershock immediately struck Fang Yuan and shocked his right palm into numbness.

Fang Yuan had been using brown bear innate strength Gu since he bought it and now he mastered it, increasing his strength by the strength of a bear.

"I needed to hit the stone pillar dozens of times before I could break it. But after using the all-out effort Gu, I broke it in just one smack..."

Fang Yuan clearly perceived the difference.

All-out effort Gu was a support type Gu and not an attack type. But once used, it could produce a devastating blow!

Fang Yuan’s battle strength before and after getting it was like the difference between night and day.

Using a support Gu as the core was quite rare. Most of the Gu Masters used support Gu in their Gu set, as an assistance to the core Gu.

For instance, Wei Yang used rainbow light Gu, a movement Gu, as the core; the offensive broadsword light Gu as one of the main support and light source Gu as another support. As a support, light source Gu could only decrease the primeval essence expenditure of light type Gu worms.

However, the all-out effort Gu was completely capable of filling the core position even as a support Gu. Just from this, one could tell how precious it was.

"But... canopy Gu might have impressive defense but it is too rigid. If I change it to golden shield Gu, there should be a clear difference in results." Fang Yuan pondered.

During the punching and kicking test just now, he used canopy Gu, otherwise his hands and legs would certainly be destroyed.

The effect of force is mutual.

Although Fang Yuan’s bones were iron bones, his skin, flesh, tendons and blood were all normal. Without the use of canopy Gu, the smack attack just before would have mangled up his flesh and muscles, although his bones would be fine.

However, golden shield Gu was temporarily not available.

Fang Yuan also did not have money right now.

At the start, he had over nine hundred thousand primeval stones, but Bai Ning Bing took half of it. Then, he spent a lot strolling around the rock gambling dens for all-out effort Gu. The expenditure for basic needs along with feeding his Gu worms were rather high especially in Shang Clan’s third inner city. Next, he used a lot of primeval stones to change his Gu line-up; eight days ago at battle stage, he gave eighty thousand primeval stones to Li Ran in front of everyone.

Now, Fang Yuan not only had no money, he was also in debt. Because, according to the poison vow contract, he still needed to give a hundred and twenty thousand primeval stones to Li Ran.

Fang Yuan knew this was a necessary investment.

Reputation was second, the important thing was to stabilize Li Ran by showing an attitude of sincere cooperation, despite him already using eating one’s words Gu to disperse the poison vow Gu on him several days ago.

Li Ran was an unexpected gain for Fang Yuan. There would be traces left behind if he killed Li Ran which would attract Shang Clan’s doubts and ruin his plans, so he did not do it.

To Fang Yuan, Li Ran was a chess piece which was not easy to use but had its own use. Someday in future, he might be able to obtain the rank five refinement recipe for all-out effort Gu from Wu Clan through Li Ran.

Right now, the most important thing was to stabilize Wu Clan through Li Ran.

Three days earlier, Li Ran used the emergency contact method to contact the emissary. He expressed that Fang Yuan could be used well. Like this, the chance of Wu Clan taking revenge was small.

Fang Yuan possessed purple thorn token which meant Shang Clan was paying attention to him. Fang Yuan was also a rank three Gu Master and his battle strength increased sharply with the all-out effort Gu. If Wu Clan really wanted to retaliate, they would have to send rank three or rank four Gu Masters. Mobilizing these elder level strengths would smash apart the tacit understanding of secret battles between high-tiered clans.

The benefit of saving Li Ran was evident here.

"Again." Fang Yuan swept away his unorganized thoughts and gave a low shout.

He lowered his body, held his arms and with a shift of his mind, five percent of his light silver primeval essence poured into vertical crash Gu.

Vertical crash!

The Gu’s mystical ability immediately and uncontrollably sent his legs rushing forward.

Bang bang bang!

He dashed forward dozen of steps in a perfectly straight line, continuously knocking down three stone pillars. When he reached the fourth stone pillar, the pillar shook continuously but did not fall down in the end.

This was the result of Fang Yuan not using all-out effort Gu.

Vertical crash Gu was a movement Gu Fang Yuan bought, its ability was to break through by force.

If there were no obstacles, the straight charging momentum could last for fifty steps before it stopped. If there were obstacles, the momentum would last for less than fifty steps.

This Gu was more suitable for Fang Yuan compared to jumping grass.

Jumping grass’s jumping ability came from the Gu worm’s strength, while vertical crash Gu’s strength came from Fang Yuan’s body.

As Fang Yuan becomes stronger, the vertical crash Gu’s forceful break through ability would also increase. In the battle with Li Ran, Fang Yuan had used vertical crash Gu in combination with boar phantom; the combination was perfect and inflicted heavy injuries to Li Ran!

Horizontal charge!

Fang Yuan activated a Gu, his whole body immediately charged horizontally like a tyrannical crab, smashing the stone pillars.

This was horizontal charge Gu and was similar to vertical crash Gu, except it charged horizontally.

Fang Yuan had sold jumping grass and bought horizontal charge Gu and vertical crash Gu as his movement Gu.

These two Gu allow the Gu Master to exert force while moving and were extremely suitable for strength path Gu Masters. The movement itself became a means of attack.

"When I reach rank four, I can then fuse these two Gu into charging crash Gu and continue using them."

This was a long term investment which also indirectly saved money.

Next, Fang Yuan alternatively used these two Gu and crashed here and there on the small square, like a wild bull.

This time, he multi-tasked.

Not only did he use horizontal charge Gu or vertical crash Gu alternatively, he also simultaneously used all-out effort Gu.

The stone pillars were sent flying before collapsing fiercely on the ground and producing dull thuds now and then.

"Using boar strength phantom can send five stone pillars flying and knock down eight. Using bear strength phantom can send seven pillars flying and knock down five. Using crocodile strength phantom can send three stone pillars flying and knock down four."

Fang Yuan carefully experienced these subtle differences.

It was clear that boar was suitable for charging and the longer the distance of the charge, better the result. Brown bear possessed formidable strength at first before becoming weaker later. As for the crocodile, it was clearly not suitable method for charging attack.

"Right now, all-out effort Gu can only activate the phantom of one Gu. I can’t use boar strength phantom and bear strength phantom at the same time. That is to say, my strength of two boars is somewhat wasteful. If it was changed to some other beast strength, they could strengthen other aspects of attacking."

"Now I have strength of two boars, strength of a bear and strength of a crocodile; this has reached the limit of what my body can bear. It is time to use steel tendon Gu."

Fang Yuan had already bought steel tendon Gu.

Steel tendon and iron bones perfectly complemented each other.

But steel tendon Gu was different from iron bone Gu. The latter was an expendable type Gu while the former needed to be continuously used for a period of time before it could bring qualitative change to Fang Yuan’s tendons, turning them into steel tendons.

Fang Yuan called for a servant to clean up the messed up square and returned to his secret room.

He did not want to waste even a second and began using steel tendon Gu to reform his body.

Three days later, fifth inner city’s battle stage.

A blue shirt burly man stood in front of Fang Yuan, his breathing was rough and his heart still had lingering fear.

"I only crossed five to six moves with this kid and suffered heavy injuries. The all-out effort Gu really can’t be stopped... every move can bring out a beast phantom. Truly terrifying!"

This blue shirt burly man stared tightly at Fang Yuan, barely raising his spirits.

"I can’t lose! As long as I defeat him, I can get all-out effort Gu as per the battle stage’s rules. With this Gu, I can also cultivate strength path!"

As the blue shirt burly man thought of this, he gave a fierce growl and pounced upon Fang Yuan.

Water prison Gu!

He opened his mouth wide and spit out a blue ball of water. The water ball rapidly expanded and trapped Fang Yuan inside it.

Fang Yuan coldly snorted and casually punched inside the water.

Boar strength phantom!

The water ball shook thrice before becoming deformed but did not collapse.

"It is no use. To deal with you, I purposely took a high interest loan and bought this rank three water prison Gu." The blue shirt burly man proudly laughed.

Fang Yuan’s gaze turned cold and without any panic, punched again.

Bear strength phantom!

The water ball fiercely shook, deforming intensely and almost collapsed, but still returned to its original state in the end.

"Beast strength is hard, the flow of water is soft. Use softness to subdue hardness, you can’t break it." The blue shirt burly man took a deep breath and relaxed his mind.

But right at this time.

Fang Yuan raised his leg and kicked to the side. Crocodile strength phantom!

Crocodile strength was different from boar and brown bear; it was an amphibious creature and was very adept at the water element.

Bang!

The water prison was smashed into pieces.

"What?!" The blue shirt burly man was pale with fright.

Vertical crash Gu!

Thump.

The blue shirt burly man was sent flying by Fang Yuan, blood spurted out of his mouth in large amounts and he only landed on the ground after flying for twenty full steps.

He struggled violently to get up, but he fell down again before he could stand even a little.

There were no movements anymore.

He was dead.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Omae wa mou...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Even Wang Han lost and died in the battle stage."

"This lad is too ruthless, he does not know how to show mercy!"

"The all-out effort Gu is strong indeed..."

Outside the stage, spectators discussed.

Fang Yuan kicked and destroyed the water prison, charging over and killing the blue shirt man from the impact, causing the battle to end.

The blue shirt man’s chest was completely caved in, as his white ribs were exposed, soon, blood dyed the battle stage’s field red.

The hosting Gu Master walked onto the stage and declared Fang Yuan’s victory.

The blue shirt man’s corpse was left lying there, no one was dealing it with at the moment.

From the hosting Gu Master, Fang Yuan took back the vine information Gu, and looked into the Gu, he had seventeen victories now, with zero losses.

After all, this was the fifth inner city battle stage, it was mostly made up of rank two Gu Masters, Fang Yuan had the cultivation advantage plus the all-out effort Gu, after his first few matches, in the subsequent battles, he only took a few moves to win.

These victories earned him a large number of primeval stones.

Winning in the battle stage, you not only get your opponent’s Gu worms, you can also receive primeval stones as a reward from the battle stage.

The more the spectators, the more primeval stones you earn.

"Li Ran, this is fifty thousand primeval stones, I’m passing this to you in public in case you try to defame me in the future." Under everyone’s watchful gaze, Fang Yuan took out a bag of primeval stones.

Li Ran walked out from the crowd, receiving the primeval stones with a smiling face as numerous envious people watched.

"Fang Zheng, you truly kept your word. First, you passed me eighty thousand, and now fifty thousand, a total of a hundred and thirty thousand primeval stones already." He cupped his fists, saying that as he left.

The crowd went wild.

"This Fang Zheng, first he gave eighty thousand, next fifty thousand, where did he get all those stones?" Some did not understand.

"It is not strange, during these two weeks, he got consecutive victories in the battle stage, the fame of the all-out effort Gu attracted many spectators. Every match earns him thousands of primeval stones. After a few battles, he would have several tens of thousands." Someone replied in a sour tone.

"Not just that, this lad is ruthless, killing his opponent almost every match. Very few people can survive a match with him, thus he can get around two to three Gu worms per battle. After selling them, that is another sum of primeval stones." Someone snorted, revealing Fang Yuan’s brutal acts.

"This Fang Zheng is too much, he is advancing by stepping on our corpses." Someone was furious.

Someone sighed: "We are all demonic Gu Masters, why is there a need to kill each other? Sigh..."

Someone exclaimed: "But to speak the truth, this Fang Zheng has his merits. Actually passing Li Ran two hundred thousand primeval stones as promised. To speak the truth, if I was in that position..."

Once he said so, the crowd became silent.

But someone quickly retorted: "He hasn’t finished paying the two hundred thousand primeval stones. We can talk again after he pays the full sum."

Looking at fang Yuan leaving, someone laughed coldly among the crowd: "His good days are coming to an end. In five days’ time, it would be the date where Li Hao forcefully challenges him."

"Li Hao? Didn’t he ascend to fourth inner city already?"

"Just a little bit to go, hmph, I can’t wait to watch this battle!"

"Hehe, this lad is too arrogant, let Li Hao teach him a lesson."

Swish swish swish...

In the aperture, primeval essence ebbed and flowed, waves appearing on surface of the light silver primeval sea.

Steel tendon Gu swam in the sea, absorbing primeval essence as it emitted a black light.

It was shaped like an earthworm, but had a black body and the surface was not as soft as an earthworm, instead, there was an oily and shiny exoskeleton.

It emitted an eerie light, penetrating the aperture and shining on every part of Fang Yuan’s body.

Under the influence of the eerie light, Fang Yuan’s muscles and tendons were covered in an oily dark color, causing them to become more firm and strong.

After half a day, Fang Yuan stopped using the steel tendon Gu.

He had sweated a lot, his breathing was rough, and his head felt slightly dizzy.

The feeling of using the steel tendon Gu was not comfortable, it gave a sort of numb, painful and itchy feeling, invading his nerves, it put the endurance of the Gu Master to test.

An ordinary Gu Master, when using the steel tendon Gu, it would take half a year to complete.

But in Fang Yuan’s plans, he condensed the time to a month.

This means, the amount of time Fang Yuan uses on the steel tendon Gu a day is six times of an ordinary person, it was a strict test of his willpower and endurance.

"I have to treasure every minute and second, to cultivate! Increasing my strength as fast as possible!"

"I need primeval stones, the battle stage is the best way to earn. But if I lose a match, I would lose the all-out effort Gu. I might be able to use the purple thorn token to stop them, but I would have to pay a huge price in other aspects!"

"I cannot lose at all! I am like a battle horse charging rapidly now, as my battle strength rises. But if I lose one match, it would be game over. My rapid growth would experience a huge setback."

"Shang clan city is merely a starting point, how can I fall here? In this life, I have to become a Gu Immortal, I have to breakthrough to rank seven, eight, and nine. I want to ascend to the peak, and see the view that I did not manage to in my previous life. Legend says that beyond rank nine, it is the supreme realm of immortality! It is easy to have a long life, but to be an immortal, no one has ever managed to do it."

"The highest point for a lifeform is to reach immortality, their greatest desire is immortality. What is the point of wealth, it is merely a hoarding addiction. What men and women, it is just primal instincts. What reputation, it is just bullshit people spew about you, carrying the stench of depravity."

"Wealth, beauty, reputation, status, people who pursue all these are short-sighted. Back on Earth, there was no choice, as everyone was going to die eventually, thus they can only pursue these or life would be meaningless. But in this world, where primeval essence is rich, why would we not pursue immortality given the possibility?"

"For the sake of immortality, wealth, beauty, reputation, status, I can make use of all of them, and I can also discard them as easily! For immortality, fear cannot stop me, I will charge forward relentlessly! For immortality, laziness will not stop me, I will never slack even for a moment! For immortality, pain cannot stop me, gods and demons cannot stop me, even heaven and earth cannot stop me!"

As he affirmed his belief, Fang Yuan’s black eerie eyes seemed to burn with a scarlet red demonic blaze.

After his rest was over, he activated the steel tendon Gu again without hesitation.

The dark eerie light shone on his body, even penetrating his skin.

In the silent secret room, his expression was extremely cold, like a statue made of steel, giving off the feeling of an everlasting toughness.

What numbness, pain or itching, they were merely tiny ripples in his heart.

Others might not be able to stand it, but that does not mean Fang Yuan cannot!

If stubbornness is demonic, then Fang Yuan is a demon among demons.

No matter how many times he dies, it would not influence his resolve! No matter what setbacks he faces, they would only be firewood that allows the demonic ambitions in his heart to burn even more brightly.

...

Bam!

The loud sound reverberated in the battle stage.

Rocks and soil flew, as a blast of air swept the battlefield, although his opponent escaped the fatal blow, he was still pushed away by the air current and retreated over ten steps.

The dust cloud dispersed, and the culprit behind this attack revealed its true form.

This was a giant toad!

It was larger than a mammoth, having two eyes as large as stone mills. Its body was grey and had a huge stomach and strong limbs. There was green moss on its skin, and even some tiny rocks on the surface.

What gathered the most attention, was its back.

Its back was extremely swollen, like it was carrying a small hill!

This hill was the real deal, completely made of mountain rocks, about ten and a half feet high. It had many layers and folds, like it was shaved by swords and axes. Grass and weed grew on the mountain rocks, and there were even two or three trees.

This was the rank three Gu, named mountain back toad. It was heavy and cumbersome, its signature move was to leap up, and crash down like a mountain.

Earlier, it had displayed this move, and caused an earthquake to strike the battle stage, many spectators lost their balance and many things toppled.

"This attack is too strong, really too strong!"

"What a grand sight, even a spectator would feel his heart thumping."

"The mountain back toad is like a castle, attack and defense all in one. The only weakness is a lack of speed, but its owner perfectly covered up this weakness!"

Everyone discussed as they looked at this mountain back toad, but quickly shifted their gaze to a Gu Master.

This Gu Master wore a flowery robe, was thin, and had a delicate appearance.

Although he was a man, he had makeup and powder on his face, as he stood at one end of the battle stage, playing with his long fingernails.

His name is Li Hao, rank three cultivation with a rich combat experience. He was especially proficient in dealing with strength path Gu Masters.

"Just you alone, you want to compete with me? Hehe, admit defeat, don’t waste my time." Li Hao stared at his fingernails, not even giving his opponent a glance.

"Scoundrel, looking down on me! Take this!" His opponent was also someone commonly seen in the battle stage, being humiliated in public like this, his face contorted with anger as he gritted his teeth and pounced on Li Hao.

Li Hao looked at him silently. As the opponent rapidly approached, Li Hao laughed coldly: "You have not learnt your lesson, was it not enough? Then, I’ll let you experience it again."

Position swap Gu!

Li Hao’s gaze gave off a strange light as he looked at his mountain back toad.

In a breath’s time, he vanished on the spot, appearing at the mountain back toad’s location.

At the same time, the mountain back toad appeared at his former location.

Using the position swap Gu, he swapped places with the mountain back Gu.

His opponent was rushing towards Li Hao, but in a split second, the mountain back toad appeared before him.

Bam!

Mountain back toad jumped, and like a flying mountain, it sent the opponent flying.

The battle ended just as expected!

"Mountain back toad with position swap Gu, such a battle strategy is unbeatable."

"That’s right, the position swap Gu can not only change the mountain back toad’s location, it can also swap with the opponent. This completely eliminates the mountain back toad’s weakness of low movement speed."

"After this battle, Li Hao has twenty-nine net victories. Just one more, and he can rise to fourth inner city."

"Hurry and leave, no one can stop him here anymore."

"Who is his final opponent? Eh, it is that super lucky guy who got the legendary Gu."

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

In case anyone got confused like me, Li Hao =/= Li Ran.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the blink of an eye, five days passed.

Fang Yuan had another battle scheduled.

"Your opponent today has quite the background." Wei Yang walked towards Fang Yuan, instructing him to be careful.

Fang Yuan nodded.

He had never fought without adequate preparations, after being in an alliance with Li Ran, he obtained a lot of valuable information about the battle stage participants.

Li Ran was a spy, undercover for eight years, his job was to gather information anyway. His understanding of the battle stage surpasses even Wei Yang.

"Li Hao was also once a strength cultivator, rising to fourth inner city. He once had a glorious past, but encountered a bottleneck. In terms of strength cultivators, they were strong at the start, but start to show weakness in the middle stage, stuck there with no way to progress further. Li Hao was greatly traumatised, giving up on the strength path and changing to a support style."

"Well, it was due to him finally getting lucky, choosing a good rock in the gambling den and obtaining the rare position swap Gu. With his rich experience, he immediately sold all the Gu he had and purchased a mountain back toad in the auction house."

"Next, he relied on the cooperation between these two Gu and won all the matches he participated in. Relying on the Gu and primeval stones he won, he slowly accumulated his assets and gathered a new set of Gu worms. He is forcefully challenging you because he wants that all-out effort Gu, you have to be careful."

Wei Yang said, as he patted Fang Yuan’s shoulders and blended into the crowd.

Fang Yuan looked deeply at Wei Yang, as he walked onto the arena.

Whenever there was an important battle, Wei Yang would come and watch. Fang Yuan understood he was mere to act as mental support for Fang Yuan. One reason was because Shang clan wanted to recruit him, but more likely...

It was because he treated Fang Yuan as a real brother!

Relationships between people is this weird.

Some people interact for tens of years without getting closer. Some people just talk once and become close friends.

Fang Yuan understood Wei Yang’s emotions. He could see his former shadow in Fang Yuan. This strong sense of acknowledgement, as well as Fang Yuan’s candid nature, made him treat Fang Yuan as a close friend.

"Wei Yang..." Fang Yuan thought, as he walked to the center of the arena.

The terrain of this arena is a large sized swamp. Black rotten mud, giving off a putrid smell, and there were even puddles everywhere.

Li Hao had not arrived yet.

Outside the battle stage, large number of spectators were gathered.

This was the most people Fang Yuan had seen at any of his battles. Standing on the arena, he looked around to see people all around him.

Everyone conversed at the same time, causing the entire battle stage to be full of noise and chattering.

"This Fang Zheng is in trouble today!"

"He had been so arrogant these days, he should be taught a lesson."

"Youngsters think too highly of themselves, he really thinks one all-out effort Gu makes him invincible!"

"Li Hao is here." Someone shouted.

The crowd went silent, before going wild again, their voices bursting through the roof.

At the entrance, Li Hao appeared.

"Lord Li Hao, we’re all counting on you!"

"May you win your thirtieth match and advance to fourth inner city."

Among the crowd, many people shouted, some screamed.

Compared to Fang Yuan, they thought more highly of Li Hao. When Fang Yuan first came, he was extremely arrogant, killing many opponents, ruthless and cruel. He had the purple thorn token, causing everyone to be jealous of his good luck.

In contrast, Li Hao was a veteran in the battle stage. He had first walked on the strength path, then fell from fourth inner city. He had risen from the lowest part of his life, signifying the spirit of ’never give up’ in the battle stage, it would ignite everyone’s passion.

Li Hao carried a light smile as he walked onto the stage.

He was thin, wearing a flowery robe and makeup, as he walked casually towards Fang Yuan.

But around sixty steps away, he stopped, not advancing further.

Fang Yuan, in his previous few fights, used the vertical crash Gu to assault his opponents, sending them flying, easily winning in one strike. Li Hao was a veteran in the battle stage, he obviously made preparations for that.

The vertical crash Gu’s effective range was fifty steps, he was safe at the sixtieth border.

"Strength cultivator, hehe..." He gave Fang Yuan a sweeping glance, filled with disdain: "Young man, unfortunately, your consecutive victory ends here. Do you know, looking at you now, it is just like me in the past. There is no future in the strength path, so what if you have the all-out effort Gu? Thank me, after I defeat you today, you will know it is for your own good, letting you understand the insufficiency of the strength path."

He started lecturing Fang Yuan with his status as a senior.

"You sure talk a lot, can you shut up?" Fang Yuan folded his arms, with a plain expression.

"You..." Li Hao’s face flushed with fury, as his laughter was filled with animosity: "Hehehe, young man, you do not respect your elders, you are bound to suffer."

At this time, with the sound of the bell, the hosting Gu Master announced the start of the battle.

Vertical crash Gu!

Fang Yuan took a big stride, charging forward.

Pew!

The soil under his feet danced like waves, splashing high up on his left and right.

"Wow, what a grand sight." Li Hao laughed lightly.

He knew very clearly the vertical crash Gu could only charge fifty steps ahead. Every time it is used, there is a cooldown period of five breaths.

He was sixty steps away, it might seem dangerous, but he was completely safe.

This terrain was advantage to him. A muddy terrain was unlike a rough and flat surface, it was not suited for charging type attacks.

As expected, Fang Yuan charged forty-five steps and stopped.

But soon after, Fang Yuan turned his body to one side, facing Li Hao with his side view.

Horizontal charge Gu!

The soil and mud were split apart as the phantom image of a wild boar appeared, with a charging action, its speed raised sharply, wild and tough. In the blink of an eye, Fang Yuan reached Li Hao.

If he was hit, he would definitely vomit blood and break a few bones.

Li Hao went pale, at the crucial moment, he activated his vital Gu.

Position swap!

In an instant, he swapped with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was facing Li Hao as he charged, but now, Li Hao was behind him as he charged ahead, getting further away from Li Hao.

"I was careless!" In just this moment, Li Hao’s forehead was pouring with sweat.

He did not think that Fang Yuan would be much of a threat to him. After knowing Fang Yuan had the vertical crash Gu and horizontal charge Gu, he did not think much about it, but that almost caused him to be severely injured.

At the crucial moment, his years of experience saved him.

Compared to defending, why not dodge.

One position swap, and Fang Yuan missed.

No matter how great your strength, as long as you hit air, you cannot cause damage, it is pointless.

"This lad has the all-out effort Gu, every move of his strikes hard. I sold my strength Gu and got rid of the beast strength in my body, I cannot compete with him head on."

Li Hao calmed his nerves, and retreated.

He used his movement Gu, his body turning light as the wind, floating backwards, rapidly pulling distance from Fang Yuan.

At the same time, he raised his finger and pointed at the sky, as a green light shot out from his aperture, towards the sky.

It was a jade green light, stopping in mid air, then exploded.

Under the glaring light, the body of the mountain back toad showed itself, descending.

There was a black shadow on the ground, engulfing Fang Yuan, and got larger over time.

Five breaths had long passed, Fang Yuan looked at Li Hao, and activated the vertical crash Gu, charging over.

He raised his speed rapidly, quickly getting out of the shadow’s range.

THe moment he got out, the mountain back toad landed.

Bam!

A loud bang, and the entire battle stage trembled, as black mud and soil flew into the air like tidal waves.

The waves splashed to the edge of the arena, causing the spectators to dodge instinctively, but a huge dark red shield protected them.

The battle stage obviously had defensive Gu to protect the audiences.

"It appeared, Lord Li Hao’s mountain back toad!" Seeing this, someone screamed in excitement.

"Even if Fang Zheng charges at Li Hao, it is pointless. Li hao only needs to use the position swap Gu, and easily change position with the mountain back toad... hehehe."

But Fang Yuan did not charge at Li Hao.

He stopped in his tracks.

The black mud splashed on him like a wave, but were repelled by the canopy Gu’s white armor.

Horizontal charge Gu.

After the waves subsided, he tilted his body away from the mountain back toad, and charged horizontally towards it.

Howl!

The roar of a bear was heard, as a brown bear phantom appeared, howling at the sky, giving off its wild aura.

Bam!

Fang Yuan slammed on the mountain back toad’s body, causing the toad to sway.

But that was it.

The mountain back toad’s unique hill was made of mountain rocks that have great density. It was one of the heaviest rank three Gu.

Once its four legs stood on the ground, it was like an unmovable mountain, causing everyone to gasp at its firmness.

But Fang Yuan did not care, he raised both arms and smashed on it like a hammer.

Howl!

Above his head, the phantoms of boar, brown bear, and crocodile appeared one after another.

His punches tore through the winds as he attacked without restraint. Hitting on the mountain back toad, thunderous sounds went off like firecrackers.

Such a fierce attack sent the spectators into deep fear, as cold sweat ran down their back.

"If I was the target, I would not have a complete corpse by now!"

"The all-out effort Gu is too strong, really too strong."

"But Fang Zheng’s brain is fried, not attacking Li Hao but instead, punching that mountain."

...

The defense of the mountain back toad was impressive, even with Fang Yuan’s ferocious attacks, it did not move, causing people to feel helpless against it.

But Fang Yuan had a cold expression, the more he attacked, the fiercer it got, like this toad had a great feud with him.

Li Hao’s expression changed.

No matter how tough the mountain back toad was, it had its limits, it could not endure this rain of punches anymore.

Gua gua gua...

The mountain back toad started shouting, as the pain was exceeding its limits.

"This cannot go on!" Li Hao’s heart jumped, as he willed and rode on the mountain back toad.

Mountain back toad started to counter attack, stepping on the mud and charging at Fang Yuan.

With its weight, if Fang Yuan took this head on, he would definitely be sent flying.

Horizontal charge Gu.

His eyes shone brightly, moving away at the last moment, dodging the mountain back toad’s attack.

Getting around the toad’s body, and hitting again!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Consecutive (Beast Phantom) Punches!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Roar!

The beast phantom appeared with a flash and gave a loud roar; the mountain back toad croaked in pain and suddenly slammed towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan snorted and dodged.

Mountain back toad carried a small hill on its back; it was very heavy and had a slow speed, so Fang Yuan could easily dodge it.

Horizontal charge Gu and vertical crash Gu were used in succession; mountain back toad repeatedly tried to attack Fang Yuan but could not even touch his clothes.

The audience was watching the match with stupefied expressions.

The mountain back toad was a lofty and immovable image in everyone’s minds, but right now, it was crying out from Fang Yuan’s attacks.

"This kid is actually so violent!" Li Hao was starting to get worried. He gritted his teeth and prompted the mountain back toad to jump.

"You brat, I am going to smash you into minced meat!" Li Hao cracked a sneer; his mind full of killing intent.

However, mountain back toad’s shadow was not over Fang Yuan.

Instead, it was over Li Hao.

Mountain back toad’s enormous body began to fall down and smash heavily on Li Hao.

Most of the audience were so stupefied that they could not react in time. Only Wei Yang and a few others’ eyes shone as they realized Li Hao’s battle tactic.

Just using mountain back toad to smash Fang Yuan was likely to fail easily.

Fang Yuan possessed horizontal charge Gu and vertical crash Gu; he could completely dodge the attack.

However, the mountain back toad was landing on Li Hao and Li Hao could use position swap Gu to change his position with Fang Yuan. As long as he grasped the proper timing, he could prevent Fang Yuan from reacting in time and be crushed by the mountain back toad.

With a weight like that of mountain back toad, even if Fang Yuan was not squashed to death, he would absolutely suffer heavy injuries.

However, the moment mountain back toad jumped in the air, Fang Yuan immediately charged towards Li Hao!

By using horizontal charge Gu and vertical crash Gu, he soon reached Li Hao.

"Accursed brat, he actually saw through my plan!" Li Hao was very annoyed right now.

There was still some distance between Fang Yuan and him now, but if he used position swap Gu now, Fang Yuan would have enough time to dodge mountain back toad's attack.

But if he did not use it now and Fang Yuan stuck close to him, even if he used position swap Gu to change positions, it would be too late to escape and he would be crushed to death along with Fang Yuan by the mountain back toad.

Helplessly, Li Hao activated position swap Gu and changed position with Fang Yuan.

Bam!

The mountain back toad landed on the ground, Fang Yuan, as expected, used horizontal charge to dodge.

He was always paying attention to the cooldown period of horizontal charge Gu and vertical crash Gu. There were three breaths of time interval between them. Taking into account the time taken to charge fifty steps, he would always have a movement Gu to use.

These small details often determined success or failure.

Fang Yuan accumulated a rich combat experience in his previous life, allowing him to have no flaws.

He again charged towards mountain back toad, punching and kicking with an all-out offensive. Beast phantoms also appeared one after another, making his attacks extremely fierce.

Stones flew about, mountain back toad got into a dangerous situation again and began croaking.

The audiences who were hooting before fell silent.

Many watched this scene, startled and their jaws opened wide.

All-out effort Gu became so powerful and tyrannical in Fang Yuan's hands, even mountain back toad could only turn into a punching bag and fall into a vulnerable position!

One side was like wildfire, extremely intense; but at Li Hao's side, it was quiet and still.

Li Hao had never expected Fang Yuan to persevere in attacking the mountain back toad so relentlessly.

His previous opponents had all ignored mountain back toad and tried attacking Li Hao. If Li Hao was defeated, there was no need to worry about mountain back toad.

This was the strategy that smart people used!

But Fang Yuan apparently chose the most stupid target to attack.

He concentrated all his strength on mountain back toad and paid no heed to Li Hao.

Li Hao was given the cold-shoulder, he felt like he had become a spectator who was not related to the situation; the situation was truly embarrassing!

Beast phantoms continually flashed and converged in the air. Fang Yuan moved around mountain back toad and attacked fiercely.

Mountain back toad’s enormous and mighty physique now looked so clumsy.

"Not good, mountain back toad is coughing out blood!" Li Hao who was watching the scene from afar felt his body go cold.

Position swap Gu!

Strange lights flashed in his eyes as he captured Fang Yuan’s image.

The next instant, Fang Yuan’s field of view had changed greatly, he was moved far away by Li Hao in a split second.

In contrast, Li Hao took Fang Yuan’s position and was standing beside mountain back toad.

He placed his palms on mountain back toad and started healing it.

He was inwardly startled by the injuries on mountain back toad.

He had fought so many matches on the battle stage, but had never seen such serious injuries.

"Am I going to lose this match? Losing to such a young junior? No, impossible!" The intense premonition of defeat rose for the first time in Li Hao’s heart.

Fang Yuan sneered and charged again.

How could he allow Li Hao to heal mountain back toad so openly in front of his eyes?

Seeing Fang Yuan charging over, Li Hao gritted his teeth, but he could only give up on healing and retreated back.

He waited till Fang Yuan had charged in front of mountain back toad before using position swap Gu.

Like this, he was again standing beside mountain back toad and Fang Yuan was far away.

But Fang Yuan was not worried and still charged over.

Li Hao’s healing was repeatedly disrupted while Fang Yuan’s attacks also had no effect.

Despite this, Fang Yuan still kept on charging over without giving up.

Several repeated attempts later, it was Li Hao instead who stopped healing; his complexion mixed.

The audience could not make any sense of this.

But there were still some smart people.

"Fang Zheng’s repeated attacks appear to be useless but actually Li Hao’s primeval essence was greatly consumed."

"That’s right. Although position swap Gu is mystical, it has its flaws and huge primeval essence consumption is one."

"The further the distance and stronger the target, the more primeval essence Li Hao needs to expend to activate position swap Gu."

"Fang Zheng possesses the strength of two boars, a crocodile and a bear; the primeval essence consumption of Li Hao to use position swap Gu is definitely a lot. Moreover, he still wanted to heal mountain back toad, even a rank three’s primeval essence can’t support such intense usage."

Li Hao also realized this and thus stopped his healing attempt.

He did not have much primeval essence left now.

If it were his previous opponents, he could still continue with his rank three white silver primeval essence. But his opponent now, Fang Yuan was also a rank three Gu master and had already established superiority in terms of primeval essence.

Looking at Fang Yuan charging over again, Li Hao hesitated but had no choice but to go ahead.

Fang Yuan clenched his fists and immediately abandoned the mountain back toad, attacking towards Li Hao.

Bang bang bang.

His fists broke the air, the momentum and fierceness they contained were incomparable, like tides striking the cliff.

Several moves later, Li Hao could not endure it anymore!

Although he had other Gu, his true core was the mountain back toad and position swap Gu.

In order to decrease the primeval essence consumption of position swap Gu, he had completely removed the beast phantoms hidden in his body.

Fang Yuan’s offensive was extremely fierce like the howling storm, making Li Hao have difficulty breathing.

Li Hao relied on his previous foundation of a strength cultivator to forcefully withstand few moves before he had no choice but use position swap Gu to change places with mountain back toad.

Fang Yuan did not pursue Li Hao but began attacking mountain back toad.

Phantoms of boar, brown bear and crocodile flashed one after another.

Rocks flew about and mountain back toad spurted out large mouthful of blood, counterattacking in a frenzy.

But Fang Yuan used horizontal charge and vertical crash Gu alternatively; as such, mountain back toad’s counterattacks looked really clumsy.

"How could it be like this...."

"Even Lord Li Hao had to fight personally and share the burden with mountain back toad."

"Fang Zheng’s attacks are terrifyingly fierce, suppressing both Li Hao and mountain back toad."

The match’s progress was beyond most of the audience’s expectation. Every since Li Hao abandoned strength path and changed into support path, they had never seen him fall into such a predicament.

Li Hao’s battle tactics were pretty good. The combination of position swap Gu and mountain back toad was brilliant.

Even Fang Yuan could not crack this battle tactic.

However...

He did not need to crack it!

He had never thought of cracking it, just swinging his arms, and continuing his all-out strategy. No matter who appears in front of me, I will beat them!

This seems like a foolish move, but actually concealed great wisdom in it.

Savagery and tyrannical momentum was unleashed like this.

"This is a good method." Some people’s eyes brightened, "If I were to fight Li Hao in the future, I need to be like Fang Zheng; disregarding everything else and attacking mountain back toad."

As soon as these words came out, the person’s words was denied and mocked by others beside him.

"Nonsense! You want to imitate him, is your brain okay? Fang Zheng can do this because he is a strength cultivator and his primeval essence expenditure is low. You are a fire path cultivator, you attacking mountain back toad is exactly what Li Hao would want to see."

Without primeval essence, a Gu Master’s battle strength was sure to fall sharply and would be almost equal to a mortal.

In a battle, the side with higher primeval essence was often dominant. And as the gap between primeval essence quantity increased, this dominance increased further.

The Gu Master who thought of imitating Fang Yuan heard this and immediately choked with no way to retort.

Someone patted his head and said as if he had comprehended something: "I suddenly see that strength cultivators have their advantages."

"That’s right." Someone sitting nearby immediately replied, "Strength cultivators’ attacks draws the strength of their bodies, thus strength Gu Masters have a common advantage in that they have little primeval essence consumption."

"Every cultivation path has its own advantage and disadvantage. Strength path being renowned back in the Antiquity Era was not without reasons."

Everyone looked at the stage again.

Li Hao and mountain back toad were retreating step by step under Fang Yuan’s fierce attacks.

All-out effort Gu’s primeval essence consumption was very small.

And Fang Yuan’s true attacking power came from his several beast phantoms.

But these beast phantoms by themselves did not expend any primeval essence!

This was the most absurd part!

If it were other Gu Masters in Fang Yuan’s place, they would have been tired after dozens of rounds, but Fang Yuan’s attacks became fiercer the longer he continued.

His momentum continually rose, his fists carried with it the sound of the wind and were extremely tyrannical; the sound they produced were like the roars of ferocious tigers or the growls of giant bears!

From Fang Yuan’s performance, the crowd could see the grand and proud demeanour of strength path cultivators from the ancient times!

His heartbeat pulsed rapidly and his blood raced; Fang Yuan felt more pleasant the more he fought.

Since rebirth, he had been extremely cautious in his actions which accumulated suppressed feelings in his heart, and now as he punched and kicked fanatically, those feelings were all let out.

The gloominess in his heart was swept clean.

No doubt, obtaining all-out effort Gu was a turning point in Fang Yuan’s life.

Before this, he had to rush about busily, always in danger, not even able to fill his stomach properly. Encountering even a slightly larger problem would require him to think and ponder extensively.

But after obtaining all-out effort Gu, he finally had the qualification to be proud and could use his fists to resolve many things.

Like now, he did not need to crack Li Hao’s brilliant battle tactic and could just use his fists to sweep across.

Demons was cunning but they were even more tyrannical!

Sweeping the heaven and earth, engulfing the mountains and rivers, blood splashing the world, absolute strength prevails over all schemes!

You are fierce; I am fiercer than you. You are unreasonable; I am more unreasonable than you!

Demon! Demon! Demon!

Kill! Kill! Kill!

Fang Yuan fought to his heart’s content, his emotions surging intensely inside him; finally, he could bear it no longer and the emotions poured out like a torrent.

"Because hardships strengthen resolve, the strong-minded will not be lured by worldly affairs. Today I step on grass; later I shall step on mountains and rivers!"

From today, I will walk on the path of supremacy!

Sweep the earth and laugh at the world.

Tread the green mountains; step on the blue seas; bind the blue dragon; assault the sky!

Bath in difficulties and sharpen the demonic soul; lift the flag and sing in triumph; defy heaven, defy fate, defy the universe!

Bam!

A punch ruthlessly struck the mountain back toad, the small hill on its back collapsed, blood flowed out of its body as it was beaten to death by Fang Yuan!

Horizontal charge, vertical crash!

Li Hao was sent flying for dozen of steps before he fell down on the ground.

Plop, he fell on the mud, no longer moving.

The black mud mixed with dark red blood contaminated his flowery robe.

He paid with his life for his contempt.

The battle ended abruptly. Fang Yuan proudly stood on the spot; his masculine, ferocious aura pervaded the scene.

His declaration still echoed in the battle stage.

Other than that, it was a scene of silence, no one spoke!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

For those thinking he’ll get the toad, nope the toad is dead.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the secret room, Fang Yuan sat on the cushion, his eyes shut tightly.

Light silver primeval essence continued to pour into the self-reliance Gu.

Self-reliance Gu was diving in the primeval sea in Fang Yuan’s aperture.

It was shaped like a cockroach, a dark-brown colored flat body. There were feelers on its head, and wings on its back.

This was the rank three healing Gu that Fang Yuan purchased for a huge amount of primeval stones.

Self-reliance Gu could be said to be the best Gu for strength cultivating Gu Masters.

The greater the physical strength of the Gu Master, the better the effect of the self-reliance Gu’s healing. In contrast, the weaker the Gu Master, the weaker the healing effect.

Self-reliance, relying on oneself, it meant obtaining the ability to regenerate and heal using one’s own strength.

Fang Yuan had the strength of two boars, one bear and a crocodile, now that he used the self-reliance Gu, the healing effect was on par with the flesh-bone Gu. This was not its limit yet, when Fang Yuan gains new strength from more Gu, its effect would surpass the flesh-bone Gu, continually improving.

But the self-reliance Gu has its weaknesses.

It could not heal others, only the Gu Master himself.

This greatly limited its use.

Moreover, it was expensive, as a rare Gu, it costs forty-five thousand primeval stones! Even more expensive than the sword shadow Gu. Thus, although there were many strength path Gu Masters, few could afford it.

Different from ancient times, strength path Gu Masters now were of the lowest social class, holding jobs that involve physical work. There were many low rank ones, few high rank ones, and even less outstanding ones. Barely any stood at the peak, in the entire southern border, only Empress Wu Ji was a successful story. But even she relied on the ancient strength path inheritance to do so.

This was an era where strength path declined.

Now, Fang Yuan was using the self-reliance Gu to recover his injuries.

In the battle with Li Hao, he had gotten injured.

The biggest culprit was not Li Hao, not the mountain back toad, but Fang Yuan himself.

As he attacked with such a ferocious force, and for such a long time, it caused his muscles and tendons to be overworked, and some of them tore, even the canopy Gu was in bad shape, needing time to recover.

Thankfully, he had used the iron bones Gu before, thus there was no problems with his bones. If not, even his bones would have broke.

Normally, when people exerted too much strength, they would pull a muscle. If a cannon is fired too many times, it would be easy to jam up.

Any kind of strength needed a foundation to contain it. On this aspect, strength path Gu Masters follow the same rule.

Fang Yuan had the canopy Gu and iron bones, but his strength was too great, unleashing such a flurry of attacks, even his muscles could not take it, there was great stress on his organs, blood etc.

After this battle, there were lots of hidden injuries in his body.

Even his sweat had blood traces.

"Since I started using the self-reliance Gu to heal, this is the tenth hour already. Mostly because of the steel tendon Gu, it is making my healing difficult." Fang Yuan had an understanding of his situation.

Before this, he had been using the steel tendon Gu to transform and train his body. It caused the tendons in his muscles to gain a layer of black color, shining with a metallic glow, becoming tougher.

Right now, his tendons were either pulled or torn, to reconnect and heal them, it would be much harder than an ordinary person’s muscles and tendons.

Why is that so?

Ordinary people might not know why, only treating this as a natural phenomenon. But Fang Yuan knew clearly, he had been a Gu Immortal after all, he knew these involved the natural laws of heaven and earth.

Man is the spirit of all beings, Gu is the essence of heaven and earth.

Whether the Gu worm’s body is large or small, it would contain a law fragment of the Great Dao.

Steel tendon Gu’s effect is to reinforce the tendons in the Gu Master’s body until they are tough as steel. This caused Fang Yuan’s tendons to contain the corresponding power of the natural law, the traces of Great Dao.

For the self-reliance Gu to heal, it not only has to recover the body’s tendons, but also has to overcome and overwrite this layer of natural law.

But thankfully, this law did not clash with the healing law. Otherwise, not only would Fang Yuan not be healed, he would be damaged instead.

Similarly, the brown bear innate strength Gu, black and white boar Gu, and crocodile strength Gu were the same.

They contained the Great Dao law fragments regarding "physical strength", when their strength lurk in Fang Yuan’s body, they form into beast phantoms and conceal themselves. Only after he unleashes their true power could they be seen by the naked eye.

The so called beast phantom, its essence was the Dao mark of "physical strength"— a trace of Great Dao in heaven and earth.

Take the poison vow Gu as another example.

It contained the law of restriction, it stays in a Gu Master’s body to restrict them.

This Dao mark is normally not seen, but under the effect of the eating one’s words Gu, it will be forced to appear, and then exterminated.

The law contained in the eating one’s words Gu were opposite of the poison vow Gu. But the former was slightly stronger, thus it could overwrite the other.

Or taking it further, why did the rainbow light Gu, position swap Gu, require Gu Masters to be free of strength modifications?

It was the same reason.

The law of strength would interfere with the law of light and the law of space. If the Dao mark of strength is too strong, it would cause the two Gu to fail when utilized.

"Gu Masters use Gu, but the truth is that they use the Great Dao law fragments within the Gu. Gu is the carrier of the fragment, a tool of heaven and earth. When Gu Masters refine Gu, they are fusing laws, and forming laws. Nurturing Gu, using Gu and refining Gu... Gu cultivation is not a small Dao, but a true Great Dao. In cultivating, Gu Masters learn about nature, and learn about heaven and earth. This is why the hope for immortality, and becoming an everlasting existence still remain."

Fang Yuan was clear in his heart.

...

"Because hardships strengthen resolve, the strong-minded will not be lured by worldly affairs. Today I step on grass; later I shall step on mountains and rivers!"

In the study room, Shang Yan Fei muttered, thinking about the poem Fang Yuan recited, showing interest on his face.

"Because of difficulties, one gain aspirations and resolve. The allure of the mortal world cannot restrict one’s heart. What grand aspirations! Especially that last line, are you treating my Shang clan as grass?"

"Lord clan leader, the way I see it, Fang Zheng was referring to his opponent Li Hao, being too weak for him." Wei Yang cupped his fists and said.

Shang Yan Fei shook his head: "It is fine, I am not so narrow minded. But it is a pity I missed a good show. Although I did not see it personally, I can imagine the scene of Fang Zheng unleashing his ability, striking with a grand aura."

Shang Yan Fei stood at a high point, he had a broad vision, and naturally was broad minded. Towards Fang Yuan’s aspirations, he could understand, and appreciate it.

Reminded by Shang Yan Fei, Wei Yang recalled the scene of the battle, and exclaimed: "That is indeed so. The battlefield back then, Fang Zheng was extremely ferocious, stunning the spectators, everyone was dominated by his aura and no one said a word!"

Shang Yan Fei got up from his seat, strolling slowly to the window: "Armies are easily built, but generals are hard to come by. A pity this general is too arrogant, not even placing Shang clan in his eyes. But, he had gone through tough times, managed to survive, and gained much from it, as his cultivation rose rapidly. This caused his nature to develop in that direction."

"Lord clan leader’s analysis is spot on. Young men would definitely have such ambitions, being lawless and fearless." Wei Yang lowered his head, adding on.

Shang Yan Fei looked outside the window, squinting.

Fang Yuan equated Shang clan city to grass, this was an overwhelming aspiration, he was definitely someone with great ambition. But Shang Yan Fei himself did not mind that.

He was a man standing at the peak, on the top of the whole southern border, he could definitely accept people with ambitions. Furthermore, Shang clan city would not truly become grass just because someone said so.

What he minded was the first sentence.

Because hardships strengthen resolve, the strong-minded will not be lured by worldly affairs...

In this world, there were lots of people with great ambitions but no ability, while people with aspirations and talent were few, one in a million. Those who not only had talent and aspirations, but also a firm will, were almost non-existent!

Aspiration and talent were not scary, but if they had an indomitable will and determination, that would cause worry.

Such a person, in history, he would either be called a hero, a villain, or a conqueror.

Such people, can change history, and create history!

Such a person, how would he submit to others? How would he allow himself to be used by Shang clan? If he could not be used, and this person walks the demonic path, he would definitely leave his mark in this world, causing storms and disasters in his life. This was not something the righteous path wants to see...

Thinking so, Shang Yan Fei suddenly said: "I heard, Fang Zheng snatched Li Ran’s opportunity, thus he compensated him two hundred thousand primeval stones to repay the favor. How much does he still owe?"

Wei Yang replied: "He already paid a hundred and thirty thousand, only seventy thousand remain. But it should be repaid soon."

Hearing this, Shang Yan Fei’s worry eased.

He nodded: "That’s true. Someone with ambition would not mind the small details, so what if it is two hundred thousand primeval stones. Hehehe."

Thinking of how Fang Yuan saved Shang Xin Ci, Shang Yan Fei laughed.

He was really interesting, doing things with his own principles, repaying kindness and taking revenge for hatred. But he does not have righteous morals nor any restraints, such a nature was dangerous, but there was still hope of recruiting and controlling him.

Right now he was at the peak of his fame, there was little hope of recruiting him, they had to wait.

After he faces hardship from reality, they will use kindness to move him, and recruit him under Shang Xin Ci’s wing. With such a helper, Shang Yan Fei would feel assured about her safety.

"Nevermind, Fang Zheng, let me see how far you can go..." Shang Yan Fei thought in his heart.

He had a sharp foresight, entirely clear of the situation.

After Fang Yuan killed Li Hao, the entire battle zone went into a commotion.

The power of the all-out effort Gu was seen by everyone.

Many started to realize Fang Yuan was a tough opponent. But on the other hand, it made many experts start to notice and desire the all-out effort Gu.

Fang Yuan would have a peaceful time for a while, but soon, those days will end.

According to his nature, he would definitely suffer extensively. At that time, he would know how weak he truly was.

Using the battle stage, he would be suppressed and polished.

As Shang Yan Fei predicted, Fang Yuan’s days got easier, as he won without a fight in his subsequent matches.

Who was Li Hao?

He was the number one strongest in fifth inner city battle stage, someone about to rise to fourth inner city.

Even he died by Fang Yuan’s iron fist, who could stop him?

But a forceful challenge cannot be cancelled, those demonic Gu Masters thinking of taking advantage of the situation were forced to enter the arena.

At the start, some minded their reputation and tried to spar with Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan heavily injured several people, and after he killed one person, they did not dare to think highly of themselves anymore, once the battle started, they surrendered.

Nineteen, twenty, twenty-one victories...

Fang Yuan went onto the stage no longer to battle, but just to collect primeval stones.

It could be said to be the easiest time of his life.

And during this period, a group of pursuing Bai clan Gu Masters arrived at the foot of Shang clan city.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Here comes Bai clan, here comes another chapter in 2 hours!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"We’ve finally reached Shang clan city." Staring at the mountain of buildings, Bai Feng sighed.

He was a Bai clan elder, when he was young, he roamed the southern border, and had once came to Shang clan city. But this time round, he was already old, the buildings were all unfamiliar to him, and even his goal was to arrest the two demonic Gu Masters.

"Do you guys think those two demonic scoundrels really chose this direction?" Bai Lian sounded worried.

"It should be this direction. We split into a few groups at the place where the footless bird landed, but the other directions were all dead ends. Only this path left behind traces." Tie Dao Ku said.

He was uncertain in his heart.

Although Tie clan was the number one investigator in the southern border, he was an attacking type Gu Master. Moreover, the southern border had many forests and mountains, complex terrain that made it easy to hide oneself and difficult to trace them.

"Maybe the two of them died long ago along the way, becoming food for wild beasts." Someone said optimistically.

There was a huge possibility in this, they had found many traces of skeletons along the way, and all the remains of the caravan assaulted by beast hordes.

"I do hope they are alive!" Bai Zhan Lie gritted his teeth, his grandfather was killed by Fang and Bai, he wanted to kill them with his own hands, taking revenge for that intense hatred in his heart.

"Alright, let’s enter the city first. If there are no discoveries, we shall spend some primeval stones to send a letter to clan leader, and see what orders she has for us." Bai Feng took the first step.

The few of them arrived at the city gate looking like travellers on a long journey.

Coincidentally, this gate was the one Fang and Bai had once gone through.

"To enter the city, each person has to pay ten primeval stones." The city guard stopped them from entering.

Bai Feng took out a yellow pear token, waving it.

The guard looked at it, and after inspecting it, said: "Yellow pear token can exempt three people from the fees."

Bai Feng’s group of six handed in thirty primeval stones.

"This brother, did you see the two of them entering the city?" Bai Zhan Lie pointed at an arrest warrant on the wall, asking.

This was the arrest warrant for Fang and Bai.

But the surface of this arrest warrant had been covered by another new arrest warrant, almost half of the surface was covered.

This was common.

Once in a while, new arrest warrants would appear.

The city guard’s expression changed, howling at Bai Zhan Lie: "What are you saying? A city gate with me guarding, how can there be a demonic Gu Master entering? Do you think I am blind? This is slander, you are slandering a righteous young man from Shang clan!"

Bai Zhan Lie’s expression froze.

Clan elder Bai Feng quickly apologised, in Shang clan city, even if he was a Bai clan elder, he had to lower his head.

The city guard saw Bai Feng’s rank three cultivation, and did not dare to pursue the matter, only muttering under his breath.

Only until Tie Dao Ku showed an unhappy expression, and displayed his identity: "Enough, shut up. Do you think my Tie clan is unclear of what your Shang clan is like?"

The city guard stopped speaking.

After facing this initial display of authority, Bai clan entered the outer city grimly.

"Let’s get some food, we are all tired after these few days of travelling. We need to rest, it will not affect our mission. I know a good restaurant in fifth inner city, it is at the battle zone, I had participated in it back in the day, and reached fourth inner city." Bai Feng recommended.

This suggestion was well received.

The gang arrived at fifth inner city, at the battle zone. Bai Zhan Lie, Bai Lian and the other juniors were instantly awed by the atmosphere of the battle zone.

As they walked, they could hear the people’s excited conversations.

"Tan Jing finally took revenge, and defeated Shi Nan Sheng. Shi Nan Sheng vowed to take revenge, their grudge is growing."

"Sang Kong controls the virus cloud moth, his battle strength has risen again, he can almost dominate the fifth inner city."

"Dominate? Hehe, he will have to wait until Gu Yue Fang Zheng ascends to fourth inner city."

...

"Gu Yue Fang Zheng!!!"

Bai clan’s gang stared with wide opened eyes, like they were struck by lightning. They quickly stopped, and stared at the talking passerby.

They scared the shit out of him.

After three minutes.

On the battle stage, Fang Yuan walked up to the stage. His opponent was a middle aged man, tall and burly, thick waist and shoulder, with a long moustache on his face, looking extremely fierce and aggressive.

Ding!

The bell rang and the battle officially started.

"I admit defeat!" The middle aged man shouted at the first second. He was swift and direct, causing the audience to feel unsatisfied.

"Again?"

"Aren’t you embarrassed, admitting defeat before fighting."

"Embarrassment is better than dying, in the entire fifth inner city now, who dares to fight against Fang Zheng? The all-out effort Gu is too powerful!"

The crowd was noisy as usual.

The battle ended as soon as it started.

The hosting Gu Master took both their vine information Gu and edited the information inside before returning it to them.

The middle aged man turned to leave, admitting defeat was a humiliation, but circumstances forced him to, after all Fang Yuan was cruel and ruthless, he never spares his opponents. He did not dare to fight just to save his reputation.

Fang Yuan did not leave immediately, but took out forty thousand primeval stones and handed them to Li Ran.

This caused everyone to go into discussions again.

"Another forty thousand, he really gave it!"

"Although this Gu Yue Fang Zheng is ruthless, he keeps his word. Two hundred thousand, he has repaid most of it already. Only thirty thousand remain."

"Li Ran used these primeval stones to purchase Gu worms, he is starting to display his strength in the battle zone. I am so envious."

"Repaying kindness and taking revenge for hatred. From this aspect, I truly respect Gu Yue Fang Zheng."

"With this win, he is at twenty-nine net wins. Just one last match, and he would be in fourth inner city."

"The faster the better, how dares to challenge him? Even Li Hao died by his hands..."

...

"Gu Yue Fang Zheng, after all these hardships, we’ve finally found you!" Among the crowd, Bai Zhan Lie gritted his teeth, as his face contorted with anger.

His companions also showed an ugly expression.

They had chased after him for so long, suffering along the journey. In the end, they found that the person they wanted to arrest had been living luxuriously in Shang clan city, making a name for himself.

Before this, they had continuously guessed if he had died under the beast hordes, digested into faeces and defecated.

The scene now, was a huge contrast to their expectations.

Not only did Fang Yuan not have problems, he was living well, even changing his Gu worms and raising his battle strength and cultivation.

What were they supposed to feel!

"Oh heaven is blind, how can such a vile scoundrel live so well?" Bai Feng raised his head and cried out.

"His luck is too good, saving the illegitimate daughter of Shang clan leader and receiving the purple thorn token! In Shang clan city, we can do nothing to him, he is protected by Shang clan!" Bai Lian gritted her teeth, she had learnt much from the passerby.

The enemy who killed the two young masters were right before them, but there was nothing they could do to him.

"Not only him, even that Bai Ning Bing received the purple thorn token. Now, she has also joined the battle stage, and has good battle records." A companion beside her sighed.

"What world is this, evil people live well while good people die. Sigh!"

"Actually, it is not like we have no way to deal with them. They could join the battle stage, so can we." Tie Dao Ku spoke with a low voice, his gaze sharp as daggers.

He had heard from Bai clan leader that Fang Yuan had the charred thunder potato mother Gu.

Right now, he could confirmed that Fang and Bai were the ones who killed his young master!

But arresting them was impossible now, so why not just kill them! That way, young master’s revenge can be taken, and Tie Dao Ku can return to Tie clan.

"That’s right! This is a good idea." Bai Feng’s eyes shone, as his spirits were lifted.

Using the rules of the battle stage, even if Fang Yuan had the purple thorn token, he could not be protected. Even if they could not kill him, taking away his all-out effort Gu would halt his growth.

The truth is, his growth speed was too scary, it struck fear in them. He cannot be allowed to grow anymore!

"Wait, where is Bai Zhan Lie?" Bai Lian suddenly asked.

...

Fang Yuan walked out of the battle stage, as numerous people gave way to him.

Numerous gazes landed on him, there were fear and respect, indifference and animosity.

"Although I killed many Gu Masters, my reputation is not bad. Every time I give Li Ran primeval stones, it is a performance that improves my reputation. Out of the two hundred thousand, only thirty thousand remain."

Fang Yuan walked as he considered his options.

After battling Li Hao, he earned three Gu worms, but did not gain the mountain back toad or the position swap Gu.

He beat the mountain back toad to death, and the position swap Gu is Li Hao’s vital Gu, it perished after Li Hao died.

But that battle had many spectators, Fang Yuan earned over six thousand primeval stones.

This month, his consecutive victories earned him enough to return forty thousand to Li Ran and still save a small sum of primeval stones for himself.

Because of his actions, and Li Ran’s response, Wu clan did not do anything to Fang Yuan for now.

This earned him precious time for development.

"I have twenty-nine victories now, just one more and I’d be in fourth inner city. The pressure there is much higher, with experts everywhere, but wins also give me much more reward. After using the steel tendon Gu, I can increase the number of my beast phantoms already, but..."

To increase the number of beast phantoms, it is a long process, there will only be effect after two to three months.

After getting to fourth inner city, Fang Yuan’s pressure would be greater, he needed more strength to deal with the situation.

"A large size auction will be held soon, and there is an instant success Gu up for bidding. If I can get it, I would be able to obtain new beast phantoms overnight, but my primeval stones are too few, I don’t even have the qualification to participate in the auction..."

Money is always insufficient when one needs to use it!

Just as Fang Yuan was considering who to borrow from, a young man appeared and blocked his path.

"Gu Yue Fang Zheng, do you recognise me?!" Bai Zhan Lie screamed.

"Zhan Lie!"

"Zhan Lie, don’t be rash."

Bai clan and gang arrived, forming a semi circle around Fang Yuan.

A stand-off!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Heaven isn’t blind, Bai clan is evil and got punished, and the kind Fang Yuan was rewarded for his selfless act of saving Shang Xin Ci.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan slightly furrowed his eyebrows and lightly glanced at the group.

He had some impression of Bai Zhan Lie; the number one genius from Bai clan’s younger generation, they had even drank together at one time.

Bai Lian was even more familiar, she had accompanied him for some time, using honey trap on him. Unfortunately, how could beauty shake Fang Yuan’s heart? The result was that Fang Yuan played her at her own game.

Others such as Bai Feng, Tie Dao Ku and so on, Fang Yuan did not recognize them.

Even so, Fang Yuan knew this group of people’s origins and motives.

This was the victim’s family coming to visit.

"Justice has long arms, Gu Yue Fang Zheng, you slaughtered my Bai clan’s two young clan leaders, you will not escape justice even if you escape to Shang clan city!" Bai Feng shouted.

"Fang Zheng, the trap you buried killed my Tie clan’s young master and clansmen. This hatred is absolutely irreconcilable, I, Tie Dao Ku, will take your head!" Tie Dao Ku’s expression was flared up as he pointed at Fang Yuan’s nose and roared.

The disturbance here immediately attracted the attention of nearby passerbys. To go where the crowds were, it was human nature; more people began to pay attention.

"Oh, you are a Tie clansman? Strange! How could I have no idea what you are talking about if I killed your clansmen?" Fang Yuan sneered.

"Stop denying it! You have the charred thunder potato mother Gu, you dug the pitfalls with extremely sinister intentions. My Tie clan group stepped into your pitfall, the explosions blew up even their corpses. We have been chasing your all the way, who could it be besides you?" Tie Dao Ku’s eyes seemed to be almost shooting out flames, wishing he could immediately cut Fang Yuan into pieces.

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan was dazed for a moment before he started laughing, "So it was like that, it seems I did the right thing by digging those pitfalls. Thank you for telling me this good news and making me happy."

"You!" Tie Dao Ku opened his eyes wide, he was seething with anger, "You admitted it! You actually admitted it! Good, very good, Fang Zheng, you are dead meat. You dared to kill my Tie clan’s young master, you have made an enemy out of Tie clan!"

"So what?" Fang Yuan shrugged his shoulders and sarcastically said, "Laughable, I dug those pitfalls to deal with the grass skirt monkeys. But you guys stepped on them, this can only be blamed on your Tie clansmen for not having eyes. Moreover, what crimes did I commit for you guys to tail after me? Courting your own death, hehehe, it is good that they died, it is fabulous that they died..."

The surrounding people were dumbstruck.

"He provoked a Tie clansman so directly?"

"Has Fang Zheng gone crazy? Tie clan is also one of the lords of southern border and isn't any weaker than Shang clan."

"Tie clan has captured demonic Gu Masters from everywhere and its famous demon suppression tower is the nemesis of the demonic path. Fang Zheng actually killed a young master of this clan!"

"He has the purple thorn token and knows he is safe! As long as he stays in Shang clan city, he would be a distinguished guest of Shang clan. Even if Tie clan leader came, Lord Shang Yan Fei would need to protect him. If he didn't protect Fang Zheng and the news spread out, it would signify that Shang clan is afraid of Tie clan. Hehe..."

The discussion of the surrounding people calmed down Tie Dao Ku who was burning in anger.

Fang Yuan possessed a purple thorn token and his cultivation was now rank three; dealing with him was not as easy as before.

"Hmph, Fang Zheng, don't think you are safe by hiding here. You want to rely on the battle stage to become Shang clan's external elder? In your dreams! I will tell you, as long as I Bai Feng am here, you will never be able to dominate the battle stage!" Elder Bai Feng said in a gloomy tone.

Tie Dao Ku followed immediately: "Fang Zheng, I will deal with you in the battle stage. There is no escape for you, the huge crime you have commited must receive severe punishment!"

"Oh, you guys want to stop me in the battle stage?" Fang Yuan's eyes flashed with a trace of cold light.

He was not afraid of these people, even though Bai Feng, Tie Dao Ku, Bai Zhan Lie and Bai Lian were all rank three Gu Masters.

If they were going to deal with him through the battle stage, they could not display their superiority in numbers.

"It is just that my current situation...."

Fang Yuan mumbled inwardly then suddenly chuckled and said to Bai Feng: "Your Bai clan obtained Bai Gu inheritance but are still not satisfied and want to deal with me? Without me, how could you have obtained the inheritance? Hmph, it seems you don't want to know the whereabouts of your two young clan leaders."

The Bai clansmen immediately revealed astonished expressions.

From Fang Yuan's tone, it seemed the two young clan leaders were not dead...

"Fang Zheng, what do you mean?" Bai Feng immediately asked in bewilderment.

"Fang Zheng, don't try to deceive us with lies. We have searched almost everywhere in Bai Gu inheritance ground but haven’t found even a trace of the two young clan leaders." Bai Lian coldly shouted.

"It was me who found the Bai Gu inheritance, does Bai clan think it has more understanding of the place than me? Ridiculous!"

Fang Yuan disdainfully scoffed and continued: "Why would I retreat while carrying those two burdens? Can’t you think with your brains? Deceive you? Hmph, I am not even afraid of Tie clan, why would I fear your puny Bai clan?"

"Fang Zheng, if the two young clan leaders are still alive then this will just be a misunderstanding, our Bai clan... is not an unreasonable clan." Bai Feng picked his words carefully to coax Fang Yuan into revealing the whereabouts of the two young clan leaders.

"You want to know? Hehe, fine. It just so happens that I am starving, how about you treat me to a meal? Let’s go to third inner city’s most famous Shi Zi restaurant." Fang Yuan indifferently said.

Bai clansmen looked at each other.

The whereabouts of the two young clan leaders was extremely important since it affected the future of Bai clan.

Despite Bai clan having extreme hatred towards Fang Yuan, elder Bai Feng gritted his teeth and nodded: "Alright, let’s go there!"

Shi Zi restaurant was not just a simple restaurant, but was a luxurious brothel.

This restaurant introduced women from foreign lands like Northern Plains, Eastern Seas and Western Desert; the women were all enchanting, with plump butt and large breasts. Another speciality of this restaurant was their lion meatball and was served on a human.

Lion’s meat, tiger’s meat and all kinds of precious ingredients were made into meatballs and displayed on top of a beautiful woman in between her breasts.

The name lion meatball held deep meanings. It was not only to eat the food, but also to ’eat human’.

The reason why Fang Yuan wanted to visit this place was not because he was interested in lion meatball, but because this restaurant had a strong background and contained many secret private rooms. Many Shang clansmen would often choose a private room for their private affairs, concealing their names and had no worries about news leaking.

Fang Yuan chose a secret room and sat along with everyone.

A feast was laid before them, the aroma of the dishes assailed their nostrils. However, they did not order the signature dish, lion meatball.

"Say it, where are our two young clan leaders?" Bai Feng impatiently asked the moment he sat down.

"Before I tell you, I would like to ask this Tie clan Gu Master to stay outside for a moment." Fang Yuan gazed at Tie Dao Ku.

"Why?" Tie Dao Ku’s gaze was sharp as knife, as he ruthlessly cut off Fang Yuan. A bad feeling emerged in his mind.

"Because this is a private affair between me and Bai clan!" Fang Yuan’s tone was unyielding, "Besides me, everyone else should be Bai clansmen, otherwise I guarantee I won’t say a word!"

Bai Feng hesitated, the matter concerned the two young clan leaders, he had to be careful about it, thus he looked at Tie Dao Ku.

Tie Dao Ku snorted and annoyedly left the secret room, closing the door shut.

The sound produced in the secret room was isolated from the outside.

"Say it, where are the two young clan leaders, don’t even think of deceiving us! This is Shang clan city, there are many Gu worms that can verify your words." Bai Feng sternly asked.

Fang Yuan lifted a wine cup and sipped at it: "Whereabouts? Of course, they are both dead, you guys are really naive! Since I made an enemy out of your Bai clan, I will naturally eliminate all threats!"

"What!"

"You dared to toy with us?

"Fang Zheng, you are courting death!!"

The Bai clansmen stood up furiously, their flaming anger pressed on towards Fang Yuan.

They were full fury but could not take any actions.

This was not Bai clan’s territory, Fang Yuan possessed a purple thorn token and also had impressive strength. They would definitely have to pay a catastrophic price to kill Fang Yuan. Most importantly, if they killed him like this, it was making an enemy out of Shang clan!

Your Bai clan killed my Shang clan’s esteemed guest in Shang clan city, hehe.

Bai clan was now facing the crisis of their spirit spring drying up, they were in a precarious situation. Now, after obtaining the Bai Gu inheritance, many forces were eyeing it covetously, if they provoked a titan like Shang clan on top of that, the consequences would be too dire to imagine!

Fang Yuan calmly sat on his seat, he raised his eyes and looked at everyone, then indifferently said:

"I actually admire you guys. Your Bai clan’s spirit spring is drying up and are in deep trouble, yet you guys still have the mood for leisure and came chasing after me. Hehe, you are really amazing."

These words were like a bolt of lightning which fiercely struck their hearts, causing tides to surge in elder Bai Feng’s heart.

He was horrified as he blurted out: "This... how do you know this?!"

This information was sealed off by Bai clan’s higher ups, even Bai Zhan Lie and Bai Lian did not know it. But Fang Yuan laid bare the secret with one sentence, how could it not frighten Bai Feng?

"Of course it was from your noble clan’s two young clan leaders. Before I killed them, they knelt and begged for forgiveness, trying to use this information to obtain my trust and exchange for their lives." Fang Yuan talked nonsense, anyway, dead men tell no tales.

"Impossible! This information is only confined to clan leader and few elders.

The two young clan leaders are young and ignorant, how could we let them know this?!" Bai Feng immediately retorted.

Fang Yuan curled his lips: "Maybe they heard it when they were playing around? After all, their mother is your clan leader. These are just minor details."

"Lord clan elder, is what he said about the spirit spring drying up true?"

"How could this be, if the clan's spirit spring dries up..."

Bai Lian, Bai Zhan Lie and others questioned one after another, their expressions worried and frightened.

Spirit spring was the foundation of a clan, there was no need to mention its importance. If the clan lost the spirit spring, no matter how strong it was, it would only be rootless weed.

Bai Feng immediately came back to his senses by their questions and inwardly knew he had messed up.

Maybe Fang Yuan was only guessing, the two young clan leaders were young, their credibility were not high.

Bai Feng felt immense regret and wished he could give himself a tight slap. He was impatient and could not hide secrets. Otherwise, when he was young, he would not have been driven out of the clan by his father to force him to mold his character.

These years, he had cultivated some shrewdness but in the end, a leopard cannot change its spots.

But honestly, he could not be blamed. Spirit spring was too important, Bai Feng was carrying this burden in his heart. The pressure was accumulating like a volcano and burst out due to Fang Yuan's one sentence.

Translator's Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

This is heaven punishing Bai clan for their crimes...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bai Feng's expression was gloomy and his gaze kept on flashing. He was thinking of denying this but Fang Yuan saw through his plan.

"Don't even try to cover it, it's no use. As the spirit spring continues to dry up, the primeval stones produced will also decrease sharply. Bai clan has been concealing it well, you have either used your remaining stock in the storage or traded to fill up this gap. But this will definitely leave traces, as long as someone carefully investigates it, they will find out." Fang Yuan was calm and comfortable.

Bai Feng tightly clenched his fists, glaring at Fang Yuan like he wanted to swallow him alive.

Looking at the appearance of this elder, even a stupid person would realize the truth.

"Our clan’s spirit spring is drying?" Bai Lian was dazed, leaning on her chair listlessly.

Bai Zhan Lie bit his lips, going silent.

The others also did not speak, they were astonished and terrified. The atmosphere in the secret room turned extremely oppressive.

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan chuckled, "Your Bai clan is really in danger. Even a stronger clan will collapse if their spirit spring dries up and they don’t find a new spirit spring. Now, you have obtained Bai Gu inheritance, the forces around you are all coveting it; tell me, what will happen if I spread this secret information?"

"No!" Bai Lian lost color in her face and immediately interjected.

The others also thought of the seriousness of the matter and their expressions turned grave.

Now, Bai clan had obtained Bai Gu inheritance, their strength rose due to the benefits gained from Fang Yuan’s discovery. The few neighbouring large clans were staring at them covetously, but also held their guard.

If the news of the spirit spring drying up was exposed, Bai clan would lose their deterrence and become a paper tiger; the surrounding forces were sure to make their move!

Those forces would never want to see Bai clan survive this ordeal and because of the Bai Gu inheritance, rise in power and suppress them.

Hence, this information had to be guarded!

Bai clan’s gang were startled awake by Fang Yuan, gaining some understanding of the situation. Bai Zhan Lie and others fixed their gazes at Fang Yuan, their eyes shining even more fiercely and emitted killing intent.

"Want to kill me?" Fang Yuan sneered and shook his finger, "Since I am meeting with you alone, I have naturally made thorough preparations. In truth, if you hadn’t come to find me, I would have gone to find you."

These were not senseless words. The Bai clansmen had no choice but to restrain their killing intent and retract the ominous glint in their eyes.

"Alright, let’s get down to business now." The corner of Fang Yuan’s lips slightly curled up as he adjusted his sitting posture.

He pointed his hands down and said: "Take a seat and let’s discuss it."

"Discuss what, what’s there to talk about with you? Hmph!" Bai Feng’s expression was gloomy, but despite saying so, he still sat down.

The remaining clansmen hesitated for a while before sitting down.

The tense situation immediately eased a little.

"Of course we are going to discuss the fees to keep me silent. Was it easy for me to lead you here? Wasting my time and energy, you should compensate me! Primeval stones, I want primeval stones. Give me three million primeval stones and I can promise you I won’t reveal this information."

The Bai clansmen immediately stood up again when they heard Fang Yuan.

"You dare to threaten us!"

"You killed our two young clan leaders, and dare to demand primeval stones?!"

"Fang Zheng, don’t go too far. At worst, I will stake my old life and take you down with me!!"

The group roared and growled in anger.

"Hahaha." Fang Yuan threw his head back and laughed. He then stood up and a cold light blossomed in his dark eyes as he looked at the group.

"That’s right, I am threatening you! You don’t agree? Then I will simply leak this information. What did you say, you want to die together with me? Hmph, even if I die, this information will be leaked to the world. At that time, you will become the sinners of the clan; because you didn’t agree to my request, your clan will be besieged by the surrounding forces!"

"You, you, you..." Elder Bai Feng was angered to his limit as he speechlessly pointed at Fang Yuan.

The other clansmen also glared at Fang Yuan with furious eyes while gritting their teeth, but no one moved.

"You what?" Fang Yuan sneered at Bai Feng, his tone full of disdain, "What can you do to me? Kill me? I have a purple thorn token, do you dare to try it? I know you are all courageous, not afraid of death. But your clan is the most important. If your family and friends die, it will be all because of you!"

The Bai clansmen clenched their fists, standing stunned on the spot.

"Ahh—!" Bai Zhan Lie suddenly raised his head and shouted, he then lifted his fist and smashed it down.

Due to his furious punch, the whole banquet table was smashed and the dishes crashed to the ground.

He felt deep hatred!

His grandfather Bai Zhan Wen had died because of Fang and Bai. This hatred was irreconcilable!

Because of this, he joined the pursuit group, constantly running about, now that he finally found the killer...

The enemy was clearly in front of him, but he could not do anything! Fang Yuan was clearly within his reach, but he could not exact revenge!

Not only could he not exact revenge, he still had to endure Fang Yuan’s threat.

His chest burned with anger, an anger that threatened to burn the sky and was already burning his heart. But he could not move, he did not dare to imagine the consequences if he moved. His life was a minor thing, but the whole clan might face a calamity because of him!!

"No need to get angry. Actually, in this whole event, I was also a victim." Fang Yuan’s tone relaxed and said with a sigh.

"Just think of it, Bai Gu inheritance was originally mine, but your Bai clan stole it from me. Your Bai clan chased after me and Bai Ning Bing, we were forced to kill Bai Hua and Bai Sheng to make it easier to escape. Later, I suffered serious injuries and landed on Zi You mountain, having close encounter with death all along the way. Do you think it was easy for me?"

"Your Bai clan's power is huge and I can't afford to offend it. I could only curl up in Shang clan city, but you still won't let me go. Tell me, what should I do? I am not someone who is unreasonable, three million primeval stones, that is the lowest I will go. I am very sincere, I have told this secret to only a few people and haven't spread it outside. I also intentionally sent the Tie clansman outside in consideration for your Bai clan."

Fang Yuan's expression was very sincere.

"Three million primeval stones, you are demanding an exorbitant price!"

"Fang Zheng, let's be fair, how did our Bai clan treat you! We treated you nicely with food and accomodation, but what came out of it? You repaid our kindness with enmity!"

"Our clan's two young clan leaders died in your hands, elder Bai Zhan Wen also died because of you. Many of our expert clansmen also died or got seriously handicapped while protecting you on your travels around Bai Gu mountain!"

The Bai clan's group all had different expressions; some were extremely angry, some were sneering and some were crying, but they all had a similarity – their deep hatred towards Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan's expression changed, he gave a cold smile: "It seems you are still not aware of the situation, I tried to give you face, but you don't want it? Very well."

Fang Yuan stood up and turned to leave.

Bai clansmen immediately fell into panic.

"Wait, wait a moment." Bai Feng was desperate as he sidestepped and blocked Fang Yuan.

"I will tell you honestly, I am going to go sell this information now. I believe Shang clan's Feng Yu Manor will give a good price for it. Can you guess how much they are going to pay me?" Fang Yuan smiled sinisterly.

"Fang Zheng, don't go too far!" Bai Zhan Lie roared and quickly walked towards Fang Yuan and stared at him dead on.

Fang Yuan nonchalantly said: "You want to attack me? You want to put your clan in danger?"

Bai Zhan Lie's inner fire was stumped, as he stood stunned.

Slap!

Fang Yuan took this chance and slapped. He was very strong and with just a little strength, he sent the energetic Bai Zhan Lie retreating five to six steps.

"What do you think you are doing?!" Bai clansmen immediately flared up and surrounded Fang Yuan.

"Do you all want to become the sinners of your clan?" Fang Yuan snorted, his words were like ice, dousing the Bai clansmen's surging anger.

"You unappreciative scum." Fang Yuan pointed at Bai Zhan Lie, "If I don't teach you a lesson, do you really think you are the Heavenly Emperor?"

Fang Yuan showed no restraint in berating Bai Zhan Lie in front of the Bai clansmen.

He next looked at everyone: "You are all idiots! If I wanted Bai clan to face a calamity, it just takes one sentence from me! A wise man succumbs to circumstances , you still can’t see the situation clearly? Make a move if you want. Come, even if I die, having your Bai clan accompany me in death won’t be so bad."

Fang Yuan was completely surrounded, but his attitude was still unbridled.

Instead it was Bai clansmen, who were bigger in numbers, that had to give in while gritting their teeth and clenching their fists.

Bai Zhan Lie held his swollen face, his eyes bloodshot. This humiliation almost caused the anger in his his heart to burst up to the nine heavens. The veins in his forehead bulged out as he tried his best to maintain the final sliver of reason left in his mind.

The clan was their weak spot; Fang Yuan targeted this and also showed an attitude that was unafraid of death, causing Bai clan fall into a hopeless situation where they could only tolerate Fang Yuan.

"I will give you thirty breaths of time to consider." Fang Yuan continued.

The group of Bai clansmen immediately fell into a struggle.

They did not want to lower their heads to Fang Yuan, this murderer. However, if they did not lower their heads, their clan would be in danger.

They were at a loss and all of them looked towards elder Bai Feng.

Bai Feng’s clenched fists slowly loosened before he again clenched them and unclenched after a while.

This continued again and again, showing the struggle in his heart.

Thirty breaths of time passed by, but Fang Yuan looked like he had forgotten it.

Bai Feng was impatient, but he only opened his mouth after five minutes, breaking the silence.

"Three million... is too much. We can’t agree to this. Moreover, we don’t have that much money on us!" His voice was hoarse like a guy who was about to die of thirst in desert.

He listlessly loosened his hands, having no more strength to clench them again.

For the clan, he had no choice but to give priority to the overall situation. Despite wishing he could cut Fang Yuan into pieces, he chose to lower his head for the moment.

The other Bai clansmen also felt their hearts relieved after hearing his words. Their killing intent towards Fang Yuan sank into the shadows, becoming thicker and deeper.

Fang Yuan laughed: "The three million does not need to be paid in full, just take it slowly, for now hand over five hundred thousand."

"Five hundred thousand? Why would we carry so many primeval stones with us?!" Bai Feng refuted.

Fang Yuan’s brows raised: "You can borrow from loan sharks, pawn your belongings or even sell Gu worms... no matter what you do, I need five hundred thousand primeval stones within a day. Moreover, I do not want to see any of Bai clan’s people staying in Shang clan city!"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Sweet sweet justice.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"What are they doing inside, it has already been over an hour..." Outside the secret room, Tie Dao Ku was standing with his arms crossed, the doubt in his heart increasing with time.

The secret room isolated sound but it was not firm. In the case where a fight broke out, he would be able to immediately sense it.

The problem, however, was that it had been calm and quiet since the start, making Tie Dao Ku unable to figure it out.

Creak.

Just as he was thinking this, the door opened from the inside.

"Brother Dao Ku, please come inside, we have finished our talk." A Gu Master of Bai clan informed.

Tie Dao Ku entered the secret room, the first thing he saw was the table smashed by Bai Zhan Lie and all kinds of dishes scattered on the ground.

Tie Dao Ku could not help but raise his brows.

Clearly, this feast could not be enjoyed anymore. Even if it could, the Bai clansmen present there did not have any appetite.

Their faces were ashen and their expressions sluggish as if they had suffered heavy injuries.

Only Fang Yuan’s complexion was normal and even looked healthier than normal.

Just now, he had reached an agreement with the Bai clansmen and everything was settled by using poison vow Gu on the spot.

"What happened?" Tie Dao Ku was bewildered.

"I will leave first, take care." Fang Yuan left these words and walked out of the secret room.

"Fang Zheng, just wait for me at the battle stage!" Tie Dao Ku growled.

Fang Yuan ignored him and walked away, disappearing from everyone’s sights.

"What exactly happened here?" Tie Dao Ku was very puzzled. How could talking for a while make all these Bai clansmen’s expression change, he could not feel any flames of hatred in them.

"Sigh...." Bai Feng heaved a deep sigh.

He raised his head and looked at Tie Dao Ku, his gaze complex: "Brother Tie, something happened and it is not convenient for me to speak of it. We are withdrawing, we cannot go against Fang and Bai anymore."

"What?" Tie Dao Ku cried out involuntarily, revealing an incredulous expression.

"Our Bai clan has little assets, we cannot afford to take risks. Take care!" Bai Feng stood up and walked straight out of the secret room.

"You don’t have to be worried, he is relying on Shang clan, but isn’t my Tie clan also one of the lords of the southern border?" Tie Dao Ku hurriedly tried to persuade them. To deal against Fang and Bai, it was better with more people. If Bai clan left, he would be all alone!

However, how could he know the situation behind this?

His persuasion was of no use, Bai clan was bent on leaving and he was not able to stop them anymore.

Looking at the image of the Bai clansmen leaving, Tie Dao Ku’s expression turned extremely cold and mumbled to himself: "The supreme art of war is to subdue the enemy without fighting; Fang Zheng, you made a good move! But don’t think I, Tie Dao Ku, will give up just like this. Hmph!"

His will was firm, others might have given up, but he still chose to persist.

He decided to register his name at the battle zone right away. He would hunt Fang Yuan in the battle stage!

"Sir, please stop." A waiter ran over and politely stopped Tie Dao Ku with a smile on his face: "You haven’t paid the bill."

"...what?"

...

"Five hundred thousand primeval stones, how can we prepare such a large sum of money within a day?" Walking on the spacious street, Bai Lian voiced out her worries.

"With my identity as an elder of Bai clan, I can go to the loan sharks to borrow three hundred thousand. As for the remaining two hundred thousand... I will have to pawn small tornado." Bai Feng understood the situation.

The other Bai clansmen were moved.

Bai Zhan Lie cried out: "Lord Elder, small tornado Gu is your core Gu, are you really going to pawn it?"

Bai Feng let out a bitter smile.

"Even with elder pawning small tornado Gu, it won’t be enough to get two hundred thousand. Add in my lotus cloth Gu." Bai Lian pursed her lips.

With this, the remaining Bai clansmen also understood.

"Pawn my fountain thoughts Gu as well."

"My little wind drill Gu as well."

"I will contribute my three forked bone spear..."

Bai Feng slowly nodded: "You all have the spirit of sacrificing for the clan, there is no worry that Bai clan won't flourish. Today's disgrace will be paid a thousand times over in future. But now, we still need to think of the clan. I decided on this, so I will take all the responsibility for this matter once we return to the clan."

"Lord Elder!" The group was stunned.

They could not take their revenge and had to instead sign a disgraceful and unfair treaty. Although it was the best choice, there would definitely be heavy pressure and criticism when they returned to the clan.

Political struggles existed everywhere.

However, Bai Feng was going to bear the responsibility for the whole affair, no doubt he was protecting the political prospects of Bai Lian, Bai Zhan Lie and the others.

Bai Feng revealed an affectionate smile and sighed: "No need to say anything, I am already old, the clan's future lies on your shoulder. How could we gain anything without giving and sacrificing? It is because of countless people sacrificing and enduring humiliation, that the clan is able to thrive, and preserve the smile of our family members."

"Yes!" Bai Lian, Bai Zhan Lie and others nodded, realization dawned on their minds.

Their ashen expressions gradually disappeared and were replaced with a gaze that was glowing brighter and brighter.

...

Three days later, in a large scale auction.

"Ladies and gentlemen, you are looking at a frost breath Gu. Rank three Gu worm, able to breathe out cold air which has the effect of inflicting frostbites and slowing your opponents. Frost breath Gu's biggest advantage is that every activation only consumes five percent of light snow primeval essence. The starting bid is twenty-three thousand primeval stones!" On a round platform, the hosting Gu Master was speaking through sound amplify Gu.

"Twenty-five thousand."

"Twenty-eight thousand."

"Thirty thousand!"

After a round of intense bidding, the frost breath Gu was sold for thirty eight thousand primeval stones.

Fang Yuan calmly looked down at the circular stage from his seat.

He was sitting in a private room at the auction; others could not see him. This was the benefit of having a purple thorn token.

In small scale auctions, he could use the purple thorn token to buy auctioned goods in advance. He was not able to do that for the large scale auctions.

"Please take a look, this is a flame heart Gu. Its shape is like a miniature volcano. After refining it, it resides in the heart of the Gu Master. As everyone knows, its ability is to strengthen fire type Gu worm’s attacks. Rank three flame heart Gu, starting bid of thirty thousand primeval stones!" The hosting Gu Master shouted loudly from the platform.

He had just finished speaking, when someone immediately made a bid: "Thirty-five thousand!"

The first bid immediately raised the bid by five thousand primeval stones, showing a clear assertiveness.

But this could not stop interested parties.

"Thirty-six thousand!"

"Thirty-eight thousand."

"Forty thousand..."

The price finally stopped at forty-two thousand.

"Looks like these people are quite rational. This is a reasonable price..." Fang Yuan watched this from the private room, evaluating the situation.

Shang clan city frequently traded, this type of large scale auctions were held at fixed intervals. The Gu Masters living in Shang clan city were all used to it and were smart when bidding in auctions.

No one was foolish.

Of course, there were occasional extravagant participants.

Fang Yuan had observed for a long while, today’s auction did not seem to have such a person.

This was his luck and also others’ luck.

If there had been such a person, Fang Yuan would have to start bidding and empty out these people’s capital early. This type of battle of wits and contest of force was child’s play to Fang Yuan.

All the Gu showed in the large scale auctions were rare and precious. All of them were rank three or above, there was almost none below rank three.

Besides the Gu worms, there were also rare Gu food, rare Gu refinement materials, Gu refinement recipe, information about some inheritances, perfect looking gambling rocks; there were also female slaves, male slaves, captured beast kings and so on.

Frost breath Gu and flame heart Gu were sold for about thirty to forty thousand; this price could only be considered to be low compared to other auction goods.

Soon, Fang Yuan saw a rank four grass tree army Gu being sold for two hundred and fifty thousand primeval stones.

Grass tree army Gu could turn every plant and tree within a certain range of the Gu Master into an offensive method. In the terrains of Southern Border, it was an absolute killing weapon.

Ordinary rank four Gu could cost up to a hundred thousand primeval stones. Grass tree army Gu’s price already reached the price of an ordinary rank five Gu.

Fang Yuan carried five hundred thousand on him right now, but at this auction, it really was not much and could only buy two grass tree army Gu.

Instant success Gu was a rank four rare Gu.

After a bidding competition, Fang Yuan successfully bought it with over one hundred and eighty thousand primeval stones.

Next, he spent a total of eighty-three thousand primeval stones to buy a white silver relic Gu and a golden shield Gu.

He did not make any bids after that.

Primeval stones could not be spent recklessly and should be spent in useful areas. Currently, all-out effort Gu was his core, he also had self-reliance Gu. He lacked a bitter strength Gu; this Gu was not cheap, moreover it was extremely rare, rarely seen even at Shang clan city.

Why?

Because the fusion success rate was extremely low, so there were only a small number of people who used it.

Gu worm’s transactions also depended on the supply and demand of the market. With low demand and high production costs, the supply would naturally be low.

"If I can’t buy bitter strength Gu, then I can only try refining it myself. It is just that its success rate really causes a headache."

"I got the white silver relic Gu, but there is no hurry to use it. If I was cultivating alone, it would be better if I used it earlier, but now that I have Bai Ning Bing to rely on. I will leave the white silver relic Gu to use for later."

"I have used over two hundred and seventy thousand primeval stones today, now just over two hundred and twenty thousand remains. I will accumulate them for the super sized auction held every two years in Shang clan city."

"Li Ran told me that Bai clan’s group has indeed left Shang clan city. Although I extorted three million out of them, I can’t underestimate this clan. Suffering in silence with the mentality of sacrificing, no wonder they rose to power abruptly in my previous life. Right now, they are using the excuse of exploring Bai Gu inheritance to recklessly search for the spirit spring in Bai Gu mountain. The progress is a lot faster than in my previous life, I have no choice but to be vigilant against them."

"Bai clan has already chased me to here, would Tie clan be far off? Tie clan, demon suppression tower... as for that Tie Dao Ku, he is of no worry for the moment."

Just as Fang Yuan was making future plans, at the entrance of Shi Zi restaurant.

Eighteen foreign girls stood in two rows, laughing and chatting with each other.

They wore revealing clothes and the fragrance of their makeup filled the air. They had plump breasts and looked sultry.

They had no need to solicit customers, just standing there was the best signboard, attracting countless male Gu Masters to loiter around and enter.

With a grim face, Tie Dao Ku was standing at the side with several other Gu Masters, guarding the entrance.

Humiliating!

The shame in his heart had reached its limits.

To think that Shi Zi restaurant’s banquet was so expensive, without any money to pay for it, he could only work to write off his debt.

"Look at what a grand Tie clan’s Gu Master has fallen to, I am actually forced to do this type of thing! The restaurant has background and doesn’t care that I am a Tie clansman. Sigh! I hope no one sees me, absolutely no acquaintances..." Tie Dao Ku prayed desperately.

"Eh! Isn’t this brother Tie Dao Ku? What are you doing here?" A voice arrived.

Tie Dao Ku was immediately stunned.

A familiar person...

Familiar...

Person...

"Aaaah! Fang Zheng, just wait!" Veins bulged out of Tie Dao Ku’s forehead as he roared furiously in his heart.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Tie Dao Ku, the expert at raising flags.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Yin cloud Gu."

In the secret room, Fang Yuan sat on the cushion, muttering as he pointed his finger forward.

Suddenly, a Gu came out of his aperture like a flash of light.

The moment it appeared, it lightly exploded, turning into a dark black cloud.

This cloud sank quickly, as it circulated within itself, in the blink of an eye, it landed on the ground, and placed Fang Yuan above the cloud layer.

Fang Yuan sat on the black cloud, it was softer than the cushion, but slightly colder.

He was not surprised, stretching out his index finger and pointing to the air.

"Yang cloud Gu."

A white light tore through the air as it exploded into pure white mist.

Once the white cloud appeared, it wanted to rise, but sensed the black cloud below Fang Yuan.

The two cloud layers had a formless attraction to each other, as the black and white clouds continued to roll internally, looking after one another.

One was below Fang Yuan, while the other was above his head.

The gloomy cloud was like ink, while the bright cloud was like foam, as the two converged, lightning appeared.

Traces of blue lightning quickly flashed between these two clouds.

Initially, there was one or two traces, but they soon multiplied, growing in numbers, in a few breath’s time, they formed into a field of lightning.

Fang Yuan had already activated the canopy Gu, his body covered in a white armor.

At the same time, he activated the all-out effort Gu as he casually stretched out his arm, and a wild boar phantom appeared behind him, becoming a giant boar image in the air.

Crack crack.

Once the boar phantom appeared, the lightning bolts acted like sharks attracted to blood , shooting towards it.

In an instant, the boar phantom was forcefully suppressed, shrinking to the size of a stone mill. Lightning circulated in its body, like deep blue chains that trapped it.

The rest of the lightning hit Fang Yuan’s body, but was blocked by the white armor.

Fang Yuan recalled the all-out effort Gu, but this boar phantom did not vanish, like a caged bird, trapped firmly.

Under the constant attack of the lightning cage, the boar phantom started to show signs of disappearing.

Lightning, combining destruction and purification into one. After a thunderstorm, new life grows. The power of lightning specialized in destruction, and contained the destruction law fragment.

At this point, Fang Yuan was using the Yin Yang dual cloud Gu to gather lightning and remove one of his wild boar strength.

It had been three days since that auction.

Although the Yin Yang dual cloud Gu was rank three, it was an ordinary Gu bought in the shop. Other than this, he also bought some material, and after failing once, he refined the eating one’s words Gu and removed the poison vow Gu on him.

Fang Yuan had once used the black and white boar Gu on Qing Mao mountain, to gain the strength of two boars.

The rank three all-out effort Gu can only summon one beast phantom at a time. After it reaches rank four, there are stronger beast phantoms available. Thus, the strength of two boars would be redundant and repetitive.

Now that Fang Yuan had excess money, he decided to optimize his body.

To get rid of this boar phantom, it would take some time, at least nineteen days. The cooperation of the Yin Yang dual cloud Gu to summon lightning was the most common and cheap method.

Beast phantoms are the law fragments lurking in a person’s body. To get rid of them, it would take some effort.

Fang Yuan carefully used the Yin cloud Gu and Yang cloud Gu, as both clouds moved rapidly, like two thick carpets filling the entire secret room.

One white cloud covered the ceiling. One black cloud covered the floor.

In the middle, lightning struck, bolts of blue lightning connected the two clouds and trapped the boar phantom as it slowly disintegrated.

A soft ’crack crack’ sound, different from loud thunder, could be heard continuously.

To get rid of this boar phantom, it would take a while, but now Fang Yuan called out another Gu.

This Gu was like a dragonfly, three pairs of wings, palm size. It had four colors that shone brilliantly: jade green, sapphire blue, gold and bright red.

This was the instant success Gu, its body containing the Dao mark of time. As the name suggests, it can speed up the flow of time, it was a rank four consumable Gu.

Fang Yuan split his mind into three, controlling the Yin Yang dual cloud Gu, activating his primeval essence, and injecting them into the instant success Gu.

His primeval sea level fell drastically, eighty, seventy, sixty percent...

Instant success Gu was a rank four Gu, with his rank three initial stage cultivation, it was tough for Fang Yuan to activate it.

When his light silver primeval essence fell to thirty percent, Fang Yuan halted his primeval essence usage, and the heavenly essence treasure lotus slowly opened up, as natural essence gushed out from it, instantly infected by Fang Yuan’s aura and becoming his light silver primeval essence.

His primeval sea level started to rise, forty, fifty, sixty percent...

Rinse and repeat, after his primeval sea level fell and rose several times, the instant success Gu was finally full, and once activated, it gave off a dazzling light show.

This colorful display of lights shone on the Yin Yang dual cloud Gu and the beast phantom, dying the secret room with a rainbow color.

The boar phantom’s disintegration accelerated.

Originally, the speed of disintegration was almost unnoticeable by the naked eye. But now, like a snowball rolling down a mountain, the speed increased drastically.

After more than ten breaths’ time, the wild boar phantom was completely destroyed.

After confirming it, Fang Yuan quickly stopped using the instant success Gu, and kept his Yin Yang dual cloud Gu.

He could return the Yin Yang dual cloud Gu back to the shop, with the purple thorn token, as long as it is within three days, Fang Yuan can return the Gu and get back the same amount he paid. It was safer than borrowing a Gu from people, and he would not make any loss.

If he borrowed a Gu, the initiative is in their hands, with just a thought, they can take back the Gu in an instant, there would be nothing Fang Yuan could do.

As for the instant success Gu.

After the lights were dimmed as much as possible, its three pair of wings only had two left, and its entire body was slowly vanishing.

Once this Gu was used, it could not be stopped, the lights will continue to shine and accelerate time accordingly. Fang Yuan reducing the light intensity would only prolong its remaining time.

"Again."

Fang Yuan made use of his remaining time, next, he activated the galloping horse strength Gu.

This Gu was rank three, able to modify a Gu Master’s body and form a horse strength phantom for him.

Under the influence of the galloping horse strength Gu, Fang Yuan’s body felt numb as the fragment of the strength law started to reside in his body.

This process would last two to three months normally, it was time consuming.

But now, Fang Yuan still had the instant success Gu.

He breathed in deeply, releasing the restraints on the instant success Gu, and a dazzling light shone on him immediately.

The numb feeling intensified at once, the two to three months of torture assaulted him, turning into a painful numb feeling.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, after five minutes, his body was drenched in sweat.

But the horse strength phantom had successfully taken root in his body. After removing the strength of a boar, he added the strength of a horse!

The instant success Gu’s light dimmed again, it had lost another wing in this process, it only had one pair of wings plus another half a piece.

But Fang Yuan paid a much greater price.

Instant success Gu had a great drawback, that is, in this short period, he lost three months of lifespan!

"Again!"

Fang Yuan wiped away his sweat, ignoring the intense pain in his body and used the Gu again.

He had to make the best of his time, while the instant success Gu was still around, he had to make the best out of it.

Green bull labor Gu!

The dazzling light shone on his body again.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, his eyebrows squeezing tightly, as his pain was even greater than earlier, like giant waves crashing on the shore.

It was five minutes again, but this time, it was much harder to endure.

Finally, through Fang Yuan’s determination, he endured through this period. His body gained the strength of a bull!

The instant success Gu now, had two wings left, both tattered and torn. Its entire dragonfly body was turning translucent, like a hologram floating in the air.

Fang Yuan felt an intense headache, his ears were buzzing and his heart was beating quickly.

"Barely any time left..."

He breathed in deeply, forcing himself to focus, as he activated the stone turtle strength Gu.

But this time, the process only lasted half the time before the lights dimmed, and vanished, as the instant success Gu’s time was used up.

The secret room fell into complete darkness after the lights vanished.

The primeval sea was left with less than thirty percent of primeval essence, but under the help of the heavenly essence treasure lotus, it started to rise slowly.

Heavenly essence treasure lotus was a rank three Gu, it was a very strong assistance to the recovering of Fang Yuan’s primeval essence.

Fang Yuan breathed out deeply, feeling fatigue assault him, almost draining his entire body.

Although he was seated on the cushion, his body was swaying, and he had difficulties sitting.

Activating this instant success took half a year’s lifespan from him. It was a heavy price, but he managed to remove the boar phantom, and gain the strength of a bull, horse, and half a turtle!

Thankfully, he was still young, he had enough lifespan to spare.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength rose sharply!

A day later, on the battle stage, Fang Yuan had his thirtieth match.

Ding.

The bell announced the start of the battle.

"I admit defeat!"

His opponent shouted, ending the battle.

Thus, Fang Yuan obtained his thirtieth victory. In fifth inner city, he had thirty consecutive battles, thirty net wins, and rose to fourth inner city!

No one was surprised by this result.

The Gu Masters in fifth inner city battle stage saw him leave and sighed in relief.

...

"I will return this sum of money to you!" Tie Dao Ku said with a serious expression, his attitude extremely firm.

"Just a small matter, don’t mind it. Brother Tie, what plans do you have now?" His friend smiled.

Tie Dao Ku showed a determined expression: "Gu Yue Fang Zheng is my target, I will not stop until I arrest him. I am going to participate in the Shang clan battle stage!"

After saying bye to his friend, Tie Dao Ku came to the battle zone alone, but heard a nightmare.

"What, Fang Zheng went to fourth inner city? Damn it!"

Tie Dao Ku clenched his fist, indignant: "Fang Zheng, do you think you can escape? Hmph, if you went to fourth inner city, so will I. Not mentioning third inner city, but do you think fifth inner city can stop me? I have to hurry, I shall have my first match today!"

"I refined the ice crystal Gu as my vital Gu. Coupled with the vitality Gu to prevent the backlash from the energy of the ice crystal, this way, my core is completed. For close range, I have ice edge Gu, and for long range, should I use snowball Gu or icicle Gu?" Bai Ning Bing thought along the way as she walked to the battle stage.

"Eh? It’s you!" Tie Dao Ku saw Bai Ning Bing walk onto the stage, and was stunned before cheering: "Great! Heaven has eyes, for me to encounter you on the first match!"

Bai Ning Bing heard this, and raised her beautiful jewel-like blue eyes, and spoke in her usual cold tone: "Who are you?"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

I’m not sure what is their obsession with heaven and eyes...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Honestly speaking, Bai Ning Bing did not know who Tie Dao Ku was.

When Fang and Bai left Qing Mao mountain, Tie Dao Ku and gang were constantly lagging behind them. Even during Bai Gu mountain inheritance, the eventual battle did not involve Tie Dao Ku, nor did Fang and Bai meet him.

Only until a while ago, when Tie Dao Ku and Bai clan came to Shang clan city, did he see Fang Yuan in person for the first time.

But after that, Fang Yuan lured them to Shi Zi restaurant, and after a conversation, Bai clan took out all they had and ran away after giving him five hundred thousand, leaving Tie Dao Ku behind, arrested by Shi Zi restaurant and forced to be a guard outside the door.

Bai Ning Bing did not know of his existence.

But Tie Dao Ku recognised Bai Ning Bing.

From the Bai clan arrest warrant, he had already engraved their appearances deep into his heart.

Now that he saw Bai Ning Bing, he was exhilarated.

Heaven is kind to me, heaven has eyes, giving me a chance to take revenge so quickly!

But after his exhilaration, came intense rage.

Bai Ning Bing’s ’who are you’ triggered the rage, hatred, humiliation, grievance in Tie Dao Ku, pouring out of a volcano like molten lava!

You murderer, killing my young master, causing me to nearly die, and caused me to be forced into being a guard for a brothel, causing me to be seen by a friend, and losing my reputation.

These were all caused by you, you culprit, And you, you don’t know who I am!

"Ahhhh!" Tie Dao Ku screamed in fury, his neck turning red from shouting, as intense killing intent burst out of his body.

Ding!

The battle started, and Tie Dao Ku did not hesitate, charging towards Bai Ning Bing.

Feeling her enemy’s intense killing intent, Bai Ning Bing squinted as she snorted coldly, rushing towards him as well.

The two got closer rapidly, almost instantly appearing before each other.

Iron hand Gu! Hand blade Gu!

At once, Tie Dao Ku’s hands became iron, and the edges of his palms became sharp blades.

Ice edge Gu!

Bai Ning Bing placed her palms together, and split them apart, instantly forming a blade of pure ice.

Clang!

A crisp sound, and the iron hand blade collided with the frosty iceblade.

The two crossed swords, and as they travelled five to six steps, Bai Ning Bing twisted her waist and flicked her wrist; three icicles flew towards Tie Dao Ku’s back.

Tie Dao Ku growled, forcefully turning around his body and swinging his palms around, smashing the icicles into bits, then ferociously charging towards Bai Ning Bing again.

Bai Ning Bing’s gaze became serious.

After that short exchange, she had understood that this was a fierce opponent.

"Very good, I can use him to assess the quality of my Gu set." Bai Ning Bing’s battle intent rose.

She was not a monster like Fang Yuan, without such a massive pool of experience, she could only trial and error on her own. Entering the battle stage, one was to earn primeval stones, and two was to develop her own unique set of Gu worms.

Swift shadow Gu!

At this time, Tie Dao Ku’s speed increased, leaving a trace of shadows behind him like a tail.

His acceleration allowed him to reach Bai Ning Bing in a moment.

"So fast!" Bai Ning Bing’s pupils shrunk.

Tie Dao Ku had already stretched out both arms, raising them high above his head, then splitting down, like an axe, chopping towards Bai Ning Bing.

Even before he hit his target, the wind already blew Bai Ning Bing’s silver hair into the air, as her face felt a chill.

The arms were like two sharp blades expanding in Bai Ning Bing’s vision.

Tie Dao Ku first used iron hand Gu, then used the hand blade Gu to cause the edges of his palm to become sharp as a blade.

Not only this, the two sides of his forearm also became dull blades.

Tie Dao Ku’s attack was strong and heavy, with unparalleled sharpness, even a huge rock could be broken, not to mention a fragile human body.

Even with her ice muscles jade bones, Bai Ning Bing did not dare to take it head on, forced to dodge.

Bai Ning Bing retreated as she guarded with her iceblade.

Tie Dao Ku rotated his arms, like a moving windmill, sending his hand blades slashing towards her.

Clang clang clang...

Iceblade and hand blade collided and continuously gave off a loud noise.

Bai Ning Bing created another iceblade, dual wielding, as she retreated and blocked Tie Dao Ku’s furious assault.

Ice edge Gu was the advancement of the rank two iceblade Gu, it had a tougher body and sharper edge.

But Tie Dao Ku also used rank three Gu, using the combination of iron hand Gu and hand blade Gu, with the hand blade Gu was the core of his entire Gu set.

At once, ice shards flew into the air, as the iceblade was filled with cracks.

Tie Dao Ku whipped up a steel blade tornado, he was older and more experienced than Bai Ning Bing, with his anger unleashed, he attacked without rest, forcing Bai Ning Bing to retreat over a hundred steps.

Tie Dao Ku was picked by the Tie clan young master and acted as his right hand man, he had to have some outstanding ability.

If that Tie clan young master became the clan leader in the future, Tie Dao Ku would be like Wei Yang, promoted to an elder in the clan!

Bai Ning Bing was fiercely suppressed, she was bound to lose if this continued. There were numerous cuts on her body as blood poured out.

"This cannot go on... frost breath Gu!" Bai Ning Bing activated her primeval essence, injecting them into her tongue.

There was a six sided ice flower symbol on her tongue, it was the insignia of the frost breath Gu.

Her cheeks puffed up as she exhaled a breath of icy wind.

The light blue icy wind engulfed Tie Dao Ku, causing his arms and half his chest to have a layer of frost.

Coldness assaulted him, as Tie Dao Ku shivered, like he was doused with a bucket of icy water in the hot summer weather, causing his attacks to slow down.

Bai Ning Bing quickly jumped back, pulling distance from Tie Dao Ku.

Tie Dao Ku still wanted to get closer to her, but why would Bai Ning Bing give him the opportunity?

Icicle Gu!

Snowball Gu!

Many icicles and snowballs formed, shooting towards Tie Dao Ku, attacking him like a torrent, as Tie Dao Ku’s assault was forcefully terminated.

Bai Ning Bing breathed out in relief, Tie Dao Ku’s momentum was broken, as she finally caught her breath.

"This person is obviously bad at long range and specializes in close range. But how could I lose in sword technique? Ice crystal Gu!"

Bai Ning Bing was arrogant and proud, her silver hair fluttered as a fierce light shot out of her jewel-like blue eyes.

The cuts earlier had already stopped bleeding, this was the effect of the ice muscles to stop bleeding.

Ice crystal Gu was Bai Ning Bing’s vital Gu, once activated, the sound of water freezing could be heard all over Bai Ning Bing’s body.

Her flesh and blood vanished, converted into a diamond-like crystal form.

At a glance, she was like an ice sculpture, her expression disappeared, her cold appearance became even more emotionless. Her eyes stopped blinking and on the surface of her eyes, there was a thick layer of transparent frost.

Her body grew slightly, her height increasing by two to three inches, and her entire aura had a dominating coldness.

Tie Dao Ku’s ferocious attacks earlier gave her no time to activate the ice crystal Gu, but now she finally could.

When Gu Masters use Gu, they would have to multitask.

Be it battles or refinement, this was so. Even the strong Fang Yuan could only do three things at once with no error, he could not split his mind into four for a long time, otherwise mistakes would occur.

Earlier, Bai Ning Bing had placed all her attention on Tie Dao Ku’s attacks, she concentrated extensively and could not think of anything else. If she activated her ice crystal Gu during that period, she would definitely be distracted and expose a weakness. If Tie Dao Ku made use of it, the consequences would be severe.

Making any changes would require attention, in contrast, doing the same thing only needed one thought.

"It is my turn now."

She lightly shouted, taking huge steps and carried a cool killing intent, charging at Tie Dao Ku.

Clang clang clang...

The two collided and unleashed their attacks.

Fighting offense with offense!

Bai Ning Bing held her iceblades and waved them around, as Tie Dao Ku used his arms as blades, more agile and flexible.

In a few breath’s time, they had unleashed over a hundred attacks, the white iceblade and the black steel hand blade, struck lightning fast, almost turning into a blur black and white silhouette.

The surrounding spectators were not many, seeing this, they breathed in deeply and were shocked.

Evenly matched!

Bai Ning Bing had turned into ice crystal, her body was made of hard ice, when Tie Dao Ku hit her, he could only make a small scar on the ice.

In contrast, Tie Dao Ku had a very outstanding defensive Gu, causing him to turn into a black iron man, when the iceblades hit him, they create slashing marks.

But gradually, Tie Dao Ku felt increasing pressure.

Bai Ning Bing had stop defending, and concentrated on attacking, thus, her attacks became increasingly sharper.

"This person is improving so much amidst battle. She had such outstanding battle talent, she is using me as a practice dummy to refine her sword technique!" Tie Dao Ku was stunned in his heart, he could feel Bai Ning Bing’s attacks, becoming more refined and precise under pressure, as their force increased.

His inner thoughts caused his movements to slow, and finally, Bai Ning Bing found her chance to strike.

"A chance!" Bai Ning Bing’s eyes shone brilliantly, as her right hand slashed towards Tie Dao Ku’s brain.

Tie Dao Ku could not dodge in time, thus had to defend against it. He was very confident of his defense, every close range Gu Master would not have weak defenses, as long as his eyes stayed intact, there was no issue.

But at this time, Bai Ning Bing activated a Gu in her aperture.

Ice explosion Gu!

Bam!

The iceblade in Bai Ning Bing’s right hand exploded intensely.

This change caught Tie Dao Ku off guard, as the force of the explosion tore through his defenses.

He subconsciously closed his eyes, as an intense pain assaulted him.

"Oh no, it’s a trap!" Tie Dao Ku’s heart sank, he had a rich battle experience, meticulous and courageous, encountering this, he did not fluster but quickly used the swift shadow Gu to move backwards.

Bai Ning Bing did not let go of such an opportunity, also activating her movement Gu and chased after him, hacking and slashing.

Tie Dao Ku could hear her movements, with his experience and keen senses, he blocked most of Bai Ning Bing’s attacks.

But Bai Ning Bing held the upper hand, at this moment, there was little hope of Tie Dao Ku turning this around.

As he retreated, he barely opened his eyes, finding his left eye blind and his right heavily injured, as his vision was dyed red.

"I admit defeat!" He screamed his throat out.

"The battle has been decided, both sides stop now!" The hosting Gu Master quickly announced.

Bai Ning Bing laughed coldly, attacking more urgently.

But suddenly, a huge invisible force pulled her and Tie Dao Ku apart. In Shang clan city battle stage, there were obviously defensive measures.

As long as the hosting Gu Master reacted in time and acts, there will hardly be any killings on purpose.

"Hmph!" Bai Ning Bing showed displeasure, she felt this force holding onto her, not allowing her to move.

She had to stop.

Tie Dao Ku breathed roughly, removing his defense and quickly healing himself.

He also had a healing Gu, but it could not heal his left eye, he could only stabilize his right eye’s condition and try to preserve it.

"This scoundrel is truly shameless, I got tricked by her and almost died. Damn it! Too hateful!" Tie Dao Ku still had some afterfear mixed with rage and hatred.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Heaven has eyes but Tie Dao Ku doesn’t... anymore.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"This match is over. I have consumed seventy percent of my primeval essence, only twenty percent is left..." After obtaining victory, Bai Ning Bing left the battle stage.

She summarized her battle learnings while walking.

She would summarize every match she fought. The battle with Tie Dao Ku today, although she felt a pity that she was not able to kill him, her gains were quite great.

"The battle just now was intense but it lasted only a brief period. However, it expended a lot of my primeval essence, come to think about it I have A grade aptitude primeval essence recovery speed. During an intense battle, my set of Gu worms clearly has high primeval essence consumption issues."

Many Gu Masters faced difficulties in this aspect when they organized their Gu worms.

Who did not like powerful Gu worms? But often, those Gu worms with higher efficacy had higher consumption rates of primeval essence.

Of course there were Gu worms who were powerful and consumed less primeval essence. But they were all rare Gu worms and were very expensive.

Bai Ning Bing had extra money on hand, but it was not a lot. She was smart and after quickly realizing her situation, she started saving money.

Before, she would spend money like water and had no clear concept of the value of primeval stones. That was because the clan spent all their efforts in cultivating her.

Now, she was in charge of her own money during in this period of time, her awareness had a significant transformation.

While Fang Yuan was growing, Bai Ning Bing too was improving rapidly in all aspects.

"It would be good if I had Fang Yuan’s heavenly essence treasure lotus. At least in rank three stage, there would be no need to worry about primeval essence expenditure." Bai Ning Bing thought of this, inevitably having a feeling of jealousy.

Fang Yuan walked the strength path. Strength path Gu consumed the least primeval essence and with his ninety percent A grade aptitude, he had an abundant source of primeval essence. Heavenly essence treasure lotus could not display its true value in his hands, it was simply casting pearls before a swine!

"What if I buy heavenly essence treasure lotus from Fang Yuan?"

Bai Ning Bing shook her head, quickly throwing away this impractical thought from her mind.

She understood too well what kind of person Fang Yuan was.

She had never seen him suffer a loss, if someday she was able to take heavenly essence treasure lotus from his hands, then it would definitely be after she pays a heavy price.

"Without the help of the heavenly essence treasure lotus, I can only reduce the Gu worms on me."

After carefully thinking it, Bai Ning Bing decided to give up on snowball Gu.

Snowball Gu was a high tier Gu in rank three and she had planned to use it as a long range attacking method.

However, this Gu expended quite a bit of primeval essence.

It was still okay if she only used it one time. But how could she only send out one snowball in the midst of intense battle?

Five to six snowballs after, her primeval essence consumption would amount to a lot.

"I will give up snowball Gu and keep icicle Gu. Icicle Gu might only be rank two, but it can also restrict the opponent. It would be a threat if I use it with ice explosion Gu."

Ice explosion Gu was a rank three Gu which could detonate ice and form an instantaneous destructive power.

The larger, older, and colder the ice, the greater the power of the explosion.

She was able to establish her dominance in the battle against Tie Dao Ku because of this ice explosion Gu.

Of course, if the ice explosion spread towards Bai Ning Bing, she would also receive injuries. But if she turned her body into ice crystal, the severeness of injuries would fall to a low level.

Thinking of the splendid battle just before, Bai Ning Bing licked her lips in excitement.

A normal ice path Gu Master pursued defensive or trapping abilities. Only those like fire path Gu Masters or thunder path Gu Masters focused on explosive strength.

However, Bai Ning Bing did the very opposite. The inspiration for it was the ice explosion Gu and she had not expected the results to be so good, beyond her original estimation.

"Ice explosion Gu is brilliant and very effective in battle, I will continue to make full use of it later." Bai Ning Bing inwardly planned.

She used to advocate a direct and straightforward fighting style; fierce and swift, slashing everything with her ice wind. However, she was influenced after being in contact with Fang Yuan all the time, and now was interested in making treacherous moves.

She was interested in everything splendid in this world.

"Ice crystal Gu, Ice edge Gu, Icicle Gu, Ice explosion Gu...can this set defeat Fang Yuan?"

Bai Ning Bing considered this, considering Fang Yuan as her number one imaginary enemy.

"Fang Yuan walks the strength path, he has all-out effort Gu and is much more domineering in close combat than that guy just before. With my current methods, it won’t be easy to win against him. Unless I can regain my killer move."

Bai Ning Bing’s killer move was her self created ice blade storm. She had created this using revolving Gu paired with whirlwind Gu and ice blade Gu, forming the icy tornado.

But now Bai Ning Bing’s vision had widened, this move was already old fashioned. Ice blade storm could bully rank two, but would be substandard in rank three realm.

These days, she had been thinking of ways to improve and polish her killer move, but was not able to get any ideas.

She suddenly thought of something and her pace quickened: "Oh right, today is Fang Yuan’s first battle after advancing to fourth inner city. It shouldn’t be too late if I go see now!"

...

"Kill, kill him!"

"Zhu Ba, finish this kid quick!"

"The way I see it, Zhu Ba doesn’t even need to make a move and this Fang Zheng kid won’t be able to bear it."

"Hehe, this kid is in trouble. He ran into Zhu Ba who happens to subdue his strength path on his first match!"

The battle stage was lively and full of people.

"Fang Yuan’s match has attracted many spectators. Well, the battle zone doesn’t have any restriction regarding the spectator’s cultivation. As long as the Gu Master has money, he can come watch." Bai Ning Bing arrived to the battle stage and looked around her before concentrating towards the stage.

This was a mid-scale battle stage and the terrain was ordinary stone tiled floor.

Fang Yuan and a heavily built Gu Master were fighting fiercely. According to the spectators’ comments, Fang Yuan’s opponent should be that Zhu Ba.

Zhu Ba was huge, almost three meters tall. His whole body was full of fats, making his head and limbs look smaller. He was like a enlarged version of the Earth’s sumo wrestlers.

In this world, whether it was a Gu Master or a mortal, their height normally did not cross two meters. Zhu Ba’s height was clearly the result of using some Gu worm.

This was quite normal in fact.

Many flying type Gu Masters would make their bones hollow to reduce the weight. Some earth burrowing Gu Masters would use bone shrinking Gu to turn into a dwarf; like this, their energy consumption would be much lower when drilling a tunnel.

Bai Ning Bing did not have much knowledge about Zhu Ba, but from the continuous comments of the spectators around her, he understood Zhu Ba’s methods.

Zhu Ba was a defensive Gu Master.

The fats in his body provided him with a strong defense.

Fang Yuan moved around Zhu Ba, punching and kicking him. When Zhu Ba received the strikes, the fat on his body shook like water ripples and dispersed the force of the attacks onto all parts of his body. Then with the use of a Gu, this force was gathered together and through a counter-shock method, it was returned back to Fang Yuan.

According to sources, Zhu Ba received his Gu from a demonic inheritance. It was uncertain because he had never exposed the amount of Gu he had and their names.

However, his method of fighting made people helpless, particularly effective against strength path Gu Masters.

"Fang Zheng, take a rest, it is no use. I can send eighty percent of the force of your attacks back at you through counter-shock. Punches and kicks do nothing to me, instead you will be injured. Have you still not realized it?" Zhu Ba spoke in a low muffled voice.

He directly sat on the battle stage, letting Fang Yuan attack him, giving an immovable presence.

Boar phantom, brown bear phantom and crocodile phantom constantly flashed above Fang Yuan. It was the reappearance of the scene when he viciously beat the mountain back toad, but Zhu Ba was indifferent.

No matter how much strength you used, the other did not even glance at you, who would not be discouraged by such a situation?

However, Fang Yuan persevered and continued to move and attack Zhu Ba without saying a word.

It had been like this since the match started and by now, fifteen minutes had passed.

"Puff!" Fang Yuan let out a breath of turbid air and suddenly took back a step, stopping his attacks.

Blood seeped out from the corners of his lips; the counter-shock force from Zhu Ba jolted his organs, inflicting internal injuries on him.

He had iron bones, steel tendons, canopy Gu and there was also golden shield Gu, but this shock passed through all his defense and attacked his internal organs.

His internal organs were not strengthened at all, even though he was healing them with self-reliance Gu, the injuries were getting heavier.

Fang Yuan stopped his offensive, the counter shock force also dissipated. Several breaths later, his internal organs were completely healed.

The offensive resumed!

He took a strong step and began his attacks; his fists smashed like a meteor, bringing with it the sound of the wind. The fats in Zhu Ba shook once again, creating ripples and sending it back.

"Fang Zheng, you have a healing Gu, but so do I. You are suffering eighty percent of the attack, while I only receive twenty percent of the damage. Your consumption is more than mine, it is better to just admit defeat." Zhu Ba continued to persuade.

Fang Yuan only attacked, without replying.

When blood started seeping out again, he stopped the offensive and used self-reliance Gu to recover.

Although he eliminated the strength of a boar, he added in bull strength, horse strength and half a turtle strength; self-reliance Gu’s effect had surpassed flesh-bone.

This state continued to persist and the spectators were starting to get bored, some even yawned.

"Too boring..."

"I really wonder why Fang Zheng is putting in so much effort."

"Today, Zhu Ba also looks somewhat abnormal, why hasn’t he attacked?"

"Hasn’t this been his style all along? First defend and waste his opponent’s primeval essence and fighting spirit, then make his move, beating down his opponent."

"The problem lies here, Fang Zheng has too much energy, he has been attacking for so long with no results but he doesn’t look the least bit discouraged. He is a strength cultivator, so his primeval essence consumption is also small. When will this stalemate end?"

"You guys can’t see what is going on? Zhu Ba is playing with the newbie."

These words immediately caused the surrounding people to laugh.

To these Gu Masters who hung out in the battle zone all year round, Fang Yuan was indeed a very inexperienced newbie.

"Fang Zheng, there is no meaning in continuing this. I have no interest in your all-out effort Gu, I don’t want to bully a newbie as a senior. It will be better for you to retreat, I promise I won’t choose your Gu worms." Zhu Ba chuckled.

He had received Fang Yuan’s attacks which contained the boar’s collision force, the crocodile’s biting force and the brown bear’s smacking force, but he was still able to laugh.

"What kind of strength is this!"

"Indeed worthy of being rank eight in fourth inner city."

"His strength is the real deal."

The audiences were truly moved.

"Shut up, you fat pig!" Fang Yuan suddenly shouted.

The battle stage went silent.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Guess what happens. 1. The pig shuts up. 2. The pig dies. 3. ???

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"He... he actually dared to scold senior Zhu Ba?"

"This newbie is too arrogant."

"Lord Zhu Ba, teach him a lesson, let him know the depths of heaven and earth!"

After the short silence, the audience flared up.

"Young man, you should learn humility. I tried to persuade you with good intentions; nevermind if you don’t listen to it, but you still cursed me. How can a person behave like this? In the end, you will run into walls everywhere and no one will help you." Zhu Ba sighed.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly: "Are you concerned about me, or are you just afraid to attack? More likely, you can only passively defend my attacks. Your ability to send counter-shock force to injure me while defending is really amazing but how many Gu are you controlling to maintain such a defense? At least three? Can’t concentrate enough to attack while defending? I have already seen through your tricks, do you think I am like those idiot spectators?!"

As he spoke, the spectators got furious and started shouting.

"What nonsense is this!"

"He dares to call us idiots, my insight is much wiser than yours."

"This kid is overflowing with arrogance. Senior Zhu Ba, he is treating your kindness as dirt, please quickly teach him a lesson."

Zhu Ba’s expression changed and said in a grave tone: "Young man, since you are so ignorant, I will teach you a lesson to teach you reality. This is a good thing for you."

He then moved.

This movement was not a small action!

His whole body curled into an enormous meatball and rolled towards Fang Yuan.

At the same time a pale black blade aura wrapped around the enormous ball.

As the enormous ball rolled, stone slabs split open and stone fragments flew. The crushing attack fused with the sharp blade aura, further increased in might making people feel the urge to dodge.

"It appeared, Lord Zhu Ba’s killing move — rolling blade meat!" The Gu Master spectators shouted with excitement.

Bai Ning Bing’s gaze concentrated: "A movement type rolling meat Gu with blade aura Gu? A normal person would not be able to unleash such power but Zhu Ba’s enormous body can amplify his attacking strength!"

"Couldn’t endure it anymore?" Facing Zhu Bai’s violent offense, Fang Yuan was not afraid but pleased instead, his lips outlining a trace of madness.

Vertical crash Gu!

Boar phantom!

Abruptly, he charged straight towards the giant ball!

"Has this kid gone mad?"

"Facing this attack head-on, does he not want his life?!"

"Someone is going to die!"

The audience were stunned.

The two sides collided; meat ball’s charge immediately slowed down while Fang Yuan was sent flying before falling heavily on the ground.

"Look, this is what happens when you overestimate yourself."

"Eh? This kid didn’t die!"

Fang Yuan wiped off the bloodstains on the corner of his lips and jumped up.

The giant ball charged towards Fang Yuan again. Fang Yuan gave a loud laugh before charging again.

Thump.

A dull thud and Fang Yuan was sent flying again.

Thud!

Sent flying once more.

Thud!!

Sent flying yet again!!

"This match is already set. Fang Zheng might have all-out effort Gu, but he unfortunately met an opponent who counters him." Someone commented, gloating in Fang Yuan’s misfortune.

"It is difficult to overcome Zhu Ba’s killer move. As his rolling speed increased, his striking force also became stronger. Actually, Fang Zheng’s method was correct, to stop Zhu Ba’s momentum immediately. But the way he chose to do it was too forceful." Another spectator sighed and shook their head.

"I have never seen such a stupid guy. Choosing to ram into Zhu Ba like this, most of the strength is returned back to him as counter-shock." Another spectator scoffed.

"This kid shouldn’t be able to get up anymore. Eh? He actually got up!"

Fang Yuan was sent flying again and again, but also stood up each time.

His injuries were not light, but self-reliance Gu gave him potent sustainability.

"Still so stubborn, then die!" Zhu Ba let out an angry roar and fiercely rammed at Fang Yuan.

Vertical crash Gu!

Fang Yuan did not change his battle tactic. Boar phantom flashed above his head.

The two sides collided like meteors.

However, this time, Fang Yuan was not sent flying, instead his fist wedged deeply into the meatball. Rather it was the meatball that shook violently, as blade aura moved rampantly and slashed Fang Yuan like a dark waterfall.

Fang Yuan was ruthlessly sent flying, as the blade aura was completely expended.

Canopy Gu suffered heavy damage, the white light armor flickered weakly before dissipating completely.

Fang Yuan’s whole body was bathed in blood, deep and long injuries on all parts of his body as if he had been hacked by countless sharp knives. He was not like Bai Ning Bing with the defense of her ice muscles, but still the tendons in his body were mostly intact and there was also no damage to his bones.

Self-reliance Gu!

Fang Yuan activated it and his blood loss immediately came to a stop, new flesh grew and the wounds began healing. However, the recovery of his tendons were slightly slower.

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes flashed as she analyzed inwardly: "Without the canopy Gu, it would be difficult for Fang Yuan to win this battle by just relying on self-reliance Gu’s recovery... eh?"

Right at this time, golden rays of light flashed around Fang Yuan.

The light condensed and formed into a light armor: Golden Shield Gu!

"This kid has quite a few defensive Gu!"

"First it was canopy Gu and now it is golden shield Gu; both are great defensive rank three Gu. This kid is rich!"

Golden shield Gu could not be used at the same time as canopy Gu; it was always stored inside Fang Yuan and now it showed itself for the first time.

Bai Ning Bing was slightly dazed before coming back to her senses. She had gotten many new Gu worms, Fang Yuan certainly would also do the same. To Fang Yuan, golden shield Gu was slightly better than canopy Gu since it was more suitable for his strength path methods.

"Even if you have golden shield Gu, the result remains the same." Zhu Ba’s deep voice came from within the meatball.

The meatball charged towards Fang Yuan, sending him flying again.

"How many times do I have to say it till you understand? You can’t defeat me, you will only bring disgrace upon yourself if you continue." Zhu Ba sighed.

"Enough, how long are you going to keep acting?" Fang Yuan stood up and wiped the bloodstains on his lips. Others felt no hope for him, but he saw victory waving at him!

It was time.

Fang Yuan lowered his eyes, covering his pupils which were flashing with a sharp light.

Charge!

He again charged head-on.

"Ungrateful kid, then I shall show it to you the true difference between us." Zhu Ba rolled towards him.

Horizontal charge Gu.

Fang Yuan suddenly charged horizontally and evaded.

Vertical crash Gu.

After charging fifty steps, he quickly turned his direction and charged.

Howl!

In the moments before collision, he activated all-out effort Gu; a brown bear phantom flashed.

Under this attack, the meatball’s skin and flesh folded over and over like the waves in river and sent the counter-shock back towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was sent back several steps before he charged forward again.

He unleashed violent attacks while constantly moving around the meatball, all his punches and kicks were targeted at different areas. This greatly raised the difficulty for Zhu Ba to defend.

Right now, Fang Yuan’s attacks were fiercer than ever before!

Zhu Ba controlled his Gu worms frantically till he was no longer able to cope with it. The meatball trembled crazily but this time, it was not able to return even a bit of the force as counter-shock.

Howl!

Zhu Ba was extremely furious, he cancelled his meatball form and turned back to his human form. Blade aura formed again and flew towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was overjoyed at this; the more Gu Zhu Ba used, more difficult it would be for him to control all of them.

Zhu Ba’s mind was already in a mess!

The opponents he faced before would admit defeat after being struck several times. Even those persevering ones lost their fighting spirit after experiencing Zhu Ba’s rolling attack.

But unfortunately, he met Fang Yuan.

There were many types of men in this world. Some loved their family and some had high ambitions.

Among them, there was a type of man: After he has a clear goal and ambition, he cannot be stopped even if the whole world turned against him!

Fang Yuan was such a man!

No one could stop him, not to mention just merely this Zhu Ba.

Horse phantom!

Vertical crash Gu!

His speed increased suddenly, rapidly charging fifty steps. Horse strength increased his speed by thirty percent more than boar strength.

Horse hooves hit the floor and sped forward!

Zhu Ba did not expect Fang Yuan to still have this trump card and due to being caught unprepared, his blade aura hit the air behind Fang Yuan.

As for Fang Yuan, he was already right before Zhu Ba.

There were no words. Just...

One punch!

This punch was incomparably powerful, exploding even the air around it, the heavy recoil from the punch destroyed the stone tiles under Fang Yuan’s feet into countless shards and even shook the whole stage.

Zhu Ba’s fats trembled violently to disperse the force of the punch around his body before attempting to return eighty percent of the force back to Fang Yuan.

However, Fang Yuan immediately followed with another punch.

Zhu Ba’s physique was huge and was poor at agility. The punch ruthless hit his body.

"I... I... counter-shock!" Zhu Ba opened his eyes wide as he did his best to manipulate several Gu in his body.

However, he had just used all his concentration to manipulate blade aura Gu, and now he was activating other Gu at the same time; it might be okay if he was at peak condition, but right now his mind was in disarray and his mental state had already weakened due to manipulating all the Gu for such a long time.

A flaw appeared.

The fats on Zhu Ba’s body that was shaking like water ripples stopped.

His defense crumbled!

He was still dispersing the force of Fang Yuan’s previous force and so had to stiffly endure this punch.

An intense pain assaulted him, causing his head to spin. The dispersing process of the force of Fang Yuan’s punch was broken. Eighty percent of the force exploded in all parts of his body.

Backlash!

In that instant, Zhu Ba’s heart suddenly stopped due to the intense pain!

Fang Yuan’s fierce gaze flashed, he had been waiting for this moment for so long and he finally created it forcefully.

Grabbing the opportunity, and strike!

Punches were thrown out like the wind. Bear phantom, boar phantom, crocodile phantom and horse phantom flashed in turns in mid-air.

Wind whistled, beast phantoms roared, golden armor covered Fang Yuan’s whole body as his punches exploded out with unrivalled fierceness.

Under everyone’s astonished gazes, the ’giant’ Zhu Ba was beaten into retreating and howling in pain by the ’dwarf’ Fang Yuan.

However, Zhu Ba’s extremely obese body forced him to become a punching bag.

Fang Yuan’s vigor rose continually, his unyielding ferocity birthed a feeling in all the spectators that this person could not be stopped.

The intense pain surged like a tsunami and struck Zhu Ba head-on, almost drowning his consciousness.

His thoughts were in a mess and he found it even more difficult to activate his

Gu to increase his defense.

Fang Yuan firmly held the upper hand and Zhu Ba was already starting to show the white part of his eyes.

"How can this be? Just now, it was clearly..."

"Was Fang Zheng right about him?"

The audience were in an uproar, the shocking swap of their predicament stupefied them.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

No worries, the fight ends next chapter. Place your bets on whether he dies.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Looking at the number eight expert in fourth inner city senior Zhu Ba, beaten till he vomited blood by a newcomer, this scene overturned many people’s expectations!

But Zhu Ba was still an experienced veteran, he suddenly shouted, stretching out both arms and tightly hugged Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan felt that he was wrapped by cotton, the fat meat squeezed at him from all directions, causing him to be unable to move.

He punched and kicked, hitting flesh with every hit. Zhu Ba’s bones were broken, and his flesh was beaten to pulp, mashed under his skin.

But Zhu Ba gritted his teeth, forcefully trapping Fang Yuan. He was almost beaten senseless by Fang Yuan, but the only clear thought on his mind reminded him, if he let this monster out, he would be in deep trouble.

As the space around him was squeezed, Fang Yuan snorted, showing no fear as he activated the all-out effort Gu.

A green bull phantom appeared in mid air.

"A new beast phantom!" Bai Ning Bing saw this and her pupils shrunk.

"Secretly, Fang Yuan had already grown this powerful. If I go against him, with just my Gu worms, I’m afraid..." Bai Ning Bing’s heart sank.

The bull strength was strong and lasting, Fang Yuan stretched out his arms and pulled Zhu Ba’s fat arms that were tightly coiled around him.

Comparing strength, how could Zhu Ba be his match.

Zhu Ba tried his best, his arms were shivering, and sweat poured down like rain, but he could not stop Fang Yuan.

"Damn, damn it, if he gets loose, I am done for!" Zhu Ba felt an intense feeling of unease, the intense premonition of death was causing him to feel extremely scared.

"I... I admit defeat!" He screamed.

Compared to his life, what was fame?

The hosting Gu Master immediately used the battle stage to forcefully separate the two.

"The battle has been decided, Fang Zheng wins, Zhu Ba loses!" The hosting Gu Master announced.

The crowd gasped.

"He actually won!"

"Zhu Ba is just a paper tiger, pretending to be strong on the outside, I was almost fooled by him."

"Zhu Ba can’t even beat a newcomer, how can he be the number eight expert, this is truly shameful for our fourth inner city battle stage..."

Zhu Ba’s pathetic state now, destroyed the image he had painstakingly built up over the years.

Bai Ning Bing heard the chattering, and shook her head internally: "Zhu Ba has been an expert for many years, he is definitely strong, unfortunately he met Fang Yuan. Zhu Ba’s fighting style was countering his opponent’s attacks. First using defense to waste his opponents’ primeval essence and stamina, then counterattacking to win. But he fought against Fang Yuan, this monster, as a strength cultivator, coupled with the heavenly essence treasure lotus, he has endless primeval essence. Stamina is also his forte as a strength cultivator... the two countered each other in different aspects, but the tougher one won!"

Speaking of which, it was rather ironic.

Bai Ning Bing changed her style, becoming more scheming and devious. Fang Yuan was also changing, from his former scheming style, he started fighting with raw power, a forthright style that goes all in.

The two seemed to have swapped styles.

Zhu Ba fell and admitted defeat, losing to Fang Yuan, his reputation was completely tarnished.

"Good job." Below the stage, Wei Yang laughed as he said to Fang Yuan.

This was Fang Yuan’s first battle in fourth inner city, thus Wei Yang came to watch.

Fang Yuan’s performance was out of Wei Yang’s expectations.

Wei Yang was very concerned about Fang Yuan, one because of the clan leader’s orders and mission, but also because of their friendship.

"Maybe you were born for the strength path." At the banquet, Wei Yang exclaimed.

He patted Fang Yuan’s shoulders: "I walked on the strength path in the past, but failed. Now, I see hope in you, do you know, many eyes are watching you now. Continue walking on this path without doubt!"

Fang Yuan nodded.

He knew his circumstance.

He had just risen to fourth inner city, and met Zhu Ba, defeating him. Getting famous overnight, many were taken aback.

This battle had just ended, but he had received many people’s forceful challenge.

These people were mostly strength path Gu Masters, coming after his all-out effort Gu.

The better he performs, the greater the value of the all-out effort Gu, and the more greed it attracts. Right now, those that were coming for him were all experts in fourth inner city.

Henceforth, his predicament would only get tougher.

But the tougher it got, the more his battle intent surged, as Fang Yuan felt his blood burning.

Just this level of risk and difficulty, what are they? How can they stop me, Fang Yuan’s advancement!

"In this world, nobody is capable of ending my ambitions!"

Eight days later, he fought Jin Bian Yuan, after fighting evenly for a while, he unleashed his beast phantoms, destroying Jin Bian Yuan’s core defensive Gu worm, killing him on the spot.

Ten days later, Liao Hua Dong who is famed for aggressive attacks, fought against Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan fought attack with more attacks, taking him down head-on. If not for the hosting Gu Master, Liao Hua Dong would have been dead.

Seventeen days later, Zhong De who has the strength of five tigers fought an exciting match against Fang Yuan, but was beaten like a dead dog, lying on the ground, motionlessly.

...

Time continued to pass by, as Fang Yuan won again and again.

There were many experts in fourth inner city, but Fang Yuan’s growth was insane.

Be it cultivation, addition of new Gu worms, or other these aspects.

The more he won, the more primeval stones he received.

He fought his way through, advancing bravely, every match was a treat to watch for the spectators.

But on the other hand, he was very vigilant. He had never looked down on any opponent, getting all the information he needed beforehand. With Wei Yang and Li Ran, one having authority while the other one has an underground network, Fang Yuan could gather all the information necessary before a battle.

He was not a brainless brute, he only accepted four matches a month. Although forceful challenge was a rule, to prevent intentional targeting, the challenged Gu Master can have eight days of rest time after every match.

Fang Yuan used this time to prepare himself adequately, ignoring the taunting from others. He focused on cultivating, the battle stage’s purpose was to assess and train himself, as well as a source of revenue.

He had become famous.

His victories caused his name to spread wide.

The strongest newcomer in history!

The star of hope in reviving strength path!

The ferocious and ruthless beast!

...

Many titles were bestowed onto him, depicting his traits: Newcomer but has an amazing win record, owns the all-out effort Gu, ruthless and cruel, never letting go of an enemy he can kill, and others.

Three months passed like this.

This day, in the secret room.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing sat opposite each other.

Bai Ning Bing placed both palms on Fang Yuan’s back, injecting her snow silver primeval essence into him.

The primeval essence were converted over by the flesh bone unity Gu, after some losses, they were injected into Fang Yuan’s aperture.

In the aperture, primeval essence ebbed and flowed, as waves crashed and assaulted the aperture walls.

Swish swish swish...

The tides rose and fell, never ending.

The white light walls were assaulted and started to change.

A moment later, the light walls were replaced by water walls, as the white light flowed like water, causing the aperture walls to become thicker and stronger.

From rank three initial stage, he advanced to middle stage!

Fang Yuan only used a few months.

This was all due to the flesh bone unity Gu and Bai Ning Bing. The higher the Gu Master’s rank, the larger the difference between their cultivation across small realms. Bai Ning Bing was rank three peak stage, it was very helpful to Fang Yuan.

This speed, if exposed, would cause a great commotion. Even Fang Yuan who was knowledgeable felt secretly shocked.

But Bai Ning Bing, who was a former ten extreme physique and had a monsterous cultivation speed, did not feel any shock towards Fang Yuan’s advancement.

If Bai Ning Bing was rank four, using the light gold primeval essence, Fang Yuan’s cultivation speed would be increased further.

Feeling the change in Fang Yuan’s aura, Bai Ning Bing knew he had succeeded and retracted her palm.

"So how, in a few days, you will reach fourth inner city battle stage. Are you interested in raising your cultivation to rank four?" Fang Yuan turned around and asked.

The higher Bai Ning Bing's cultivation was, the faster he could cultivate himself.

"No need, if you can stand firm with rank three cultivation and fight your way through, so can I." Bai Ning Bing snorted coldly, not showing any nice expressions Fang Yuan.

But at the end, she added: "My aptitude rose again, reaching ninety-two percent. At this rate, when are you going to give me the Yang Gu?"

"Oh. That's fast..." Fang Yuan was shocked, he knew a lot about the ten extreme aptitude, but the details were not in-depth.

Even though poison vow was removed, Bai Ning Bing still served a huge purpose.

"You don't have to worry, with me around, I can protect your life. We used the poison vow Gu before, even if you don't trust me, surely you trust the Gu's power?"

"Hmph." Bai Ning Bing did not rebuke him, these last few months she spent with Fang Yuan were the most peaceful period of her life. As the two worked hard together, and with the poison vow Gu allowing them to form an alliance. But it seems..."

"This guy, he's growing faster and gaining more rewards." Regarding this, Bai Ning Bing had a clear understanding of their differences.

Her improvement was large, but his was larger.

These few months, Fang Yuan not only gained the strength of a turtle, but also used the rank three bronze skin Gu, giving his skin another layer of defense.

Rank two bronze skin Gu can only give the Gu Master's skin increased defense for a limited period of time.

The rank three bronze skin Gu, used one's own body and grants this defense to their body permanently.

Now, Fang Yuan's skin is bronze color, like he had undergone a sun tan.

Iron bones, steel tendon, bronze skin, with golden shield Gu, Fang Yuan's defense was at initial success stage, even among third inner city battle stage, it is sufficient to deal with any strong foe.

As for the canopy Gu, Fang Yuan had already sold it. It overlapped with the golden shield Gu, and did not suit Fang Yuan's fighting style.

Just as Fang Yuan advanced to middle stage, a group of people arrived outside Shang clan city.

"Shang clan city... Gu Yue Fang Zheng is inside huh." Tie Ruo Nan thought as she walked ahead of everyone.

"Tie Dao Ku greets young master." Tie Dao Ku rapidly paid his respects.

Translator's Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Can't they leave Fang Yuan in peace... these people are truly unforgivable.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Tie Dao Ku, what happened to your eyes?" Tie Ruo Nan saw Tie Dao Ku wearing a black eyepatch and asked in surprise.

Tie Dao Ku showed an embarrassed expression, speaking the truth: "My eyes were injured by Bai Ning Bing."

A few months ago, he had a battle with Bai Ning Bing, and suffered a great setback.

Losing his left eye, his battle strength fell drastically, and with the hand blade Gu mercilessly taken by Bai Ning Bing, he was no longer her match.

But Tie Dao Ku did not give up.

He had a determined heart, gritting his teeth and relied on the battle stage, along with taking some jobs of escorting and investigating, to survive in Shang clan city.

He was like a lone wolf licking his wounds, as he observed Fang and Bai secretly, slowly gaining back his strength as well as reporting to the clan.

Precisely because of his letter, Tie Ruo Nan brought a team here personally.

"Bai Ning Bing... actually injured you. Tie Dao Ku, your intel had some errors, why did you not mention this in your letter?" Tie Ruo Nan frowned, slightly unhappy.

How could I have the face to say it...

Tie Dao Ku laughed bitterly, he was a rank three Gu Master, he had his pride and dignity.

But towards Tie Ruo Nan’s accusation, he lowered his head, answering: "It was my mistake."

He was a proud man, but he was very respectful to Tie Ruo Nan.

It has been two years.

Two years ago, Tie Xue Leng’s death was reported to the clan, causing them to fall into deep sorrow.

A rank five Gu Master was a great strength, standing at the peak of the mortal realm, even a huge clan like Tie clan would feel pain in losing one.

Moreover, this was the divine investigator Tie Xue Leng.

His name spread throughout the southern border, he was a symbol and a flag for Tie clan.

Tie Xue Leng’s death was a loss to Tie clan, but also a loss to the entire righteous faction.

Just as the clan grieved, Tie Ruo Nan, as Tie Xue Leng’s daughter, stood up.

She had been following her father, roaming the southern border. After returning to the clan, she challenged the Tie clan thirteen halls, defeating her foes in the arena battles and becoming one of the eight young masters in Tie clan. After taking over Tie clan’s internal affairs, she cracked many cases, corruption and greed could not hide from her, as she brought the criminals to justice.

TIe Xue Leng fell, but Tie Ruo Nan rose, taking over her father’s duty, and became the new rising star for the last two years in Tie clan.

Tie Ruo Nan’s name started to travel wide, and even Tie Dao Ku, someone who was far away in Shang clan city, heard about her stories.

Tie clan and Shang clan had different policies, even if Tie Ruo Nan fails to attain the position of Tie clan leader, she will still be an important member, a great general protecting the mountain.

She was young, but already rank three upper stage. Her title of genius was true to its name.

Be it Tie Ruo Nan’s current or future achievements, it was worth Tie Dao Ku’s respect.

"Tie Mu, go see to his injuries." Tie Ruo Nan waved her hand, saying.

Tie Mu had a delicate face, he was the healing Gu Master in the team. He quickly went forward and checked Tie Dao Ku’s eyes in front of everyone.

In just a few breath’s, Tie Mu reported: "His eye is crippled, there is nothing I can do. To heal it, a rank five Gu Master is needed."

He was being humble, merely twenty-eight years old but already rank three peak stage, he was a clan elite from Tie clan’s side branch.

Many people tried to recruit him, but he decided to serve Tie Ruo Nan instead.

These few years, Tie Ruo Nan had taken the role of young master, and her forces expanded, recruiting many talented elites into her faction, TIe Mu was only one of them.

"In Shang clan city, there is a rank five expert named Doctor Su Shou. Tie Dao Ku, take this money and go heal your eyes." Tie Ruo Nan took out a primeval elder Gu, and threw it to Tie Dao Ku.

"Thank you young master." Tie Dao Ku took the Gu and showed a grateful expression.

Doctor Su Shou’s treatment fee was extremely expensive, he had scrimped and saved these few years, to save up enough money to heal his eyes.

But a hundred thousand primeval stones was not a small sum. Commodity prices in Shang clan city is high, and Tie Dao Ku had to buy a hand blade Gu, he had no opportunity to save enough money.

He straightened his back: "I have already reserved a garden estate for young master to stay in, please follow me."

But Tie Ruo Nan waved her hand: "No rush, bring me to Nan Qiu garden, in your report, you mentioned that Fang and Bai stayed at Nan Qiu garden right?"

"Erm... yes, that is so." Tie Dao Ku was stunned, not expecting Tie Ruo Nan to be so direct.

"Lead the way." Tie Ruo Nan instructed.

"Yes."

Tie Ruo Nan had a swift and decisive nature, but a moment later, she was denied entry.

"Sorry, my two masters are cultivating in their secret rooms." Nan Qiu garden’s doorboy respectfully said.

"What, scared? Trying to hide inside!" Tie Dao Ku snorted in disdain.

The doorboy had been specially trained by Shang clan, he had great qualities, after giving Tie Dao Ku a look, he remaining guarding the door firmly, not letting them through.

Tie Ruo Nan was one of the young masters of the great Tie clan, she would not make a fuss towards a child.

She smiled, taking out an invitation, passing it to the doorboy: "No worry, pass them my invitation letter. I have some relationship with your masters, we will come again at night."

"I will definitely convey Lord’s message, but they are in closed cultivation, I cannot guarantee when they will come out. They might not come out by dinner time." The doorboy reminded before they left.

Until dinner time, when Tie clan came again, they were rejected once more.

"I think this Fang and Bai are afraid of young master’s grandeur, hiding inside afraid to show up."

"Maybe they are trying to display their authority, specially targeting us."

Tie clan gang guessed, speaking in indignance.

They had visited twice, but were treated like this. Did they really think so highly of themselves? Even Shang clan young master would need to leave his work and come to attend to the group.

"Do not be anxious, we will come again tomorrow morning." Tie Ruo Nan calmed the gang, handing out another invitation as she showed an expression deep in thought.

On the second morning, Nan Qiu garden closed shut again.

Tie clan gang’s emotions were surging, almost breaking through by force, but were halted by Tie Ruo Nan, who handed out another invitation.

The group had just left, and Fang Yuan came out of his secret room.

"Tie Ruo Nan?" Hearing the servant’s report, Fang Yuan gave a weird look.

He knew that this woman was Tie Xue Leng’s daughter, didn’t she die on Qing Mao mountain?

Tie Xue Leng flew out of the bronze mask of the mountain giant puppet Gu, using the steel hand Gu to save Tie Ruo Nan. Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were engaging in a fierce fight at that moment, his vision obstructed by the white form immortal snake, thus he did not see it.

After the fog dispersed, he was attacked by the crane group, the scene was a mess and he did not have a second to rest. Even until Bai Ning Bing self-detonated, Fang Yuan did not see Tie Ruo Nan.

Thus, in Fang Yuan’s impression, he had always thought that the Tie clan father and daughter had died on Qing Mao mountain.

"To think this Tie Ruo Nan is still alive, not only that, she even became Tie clan young master." Fang Yuan held the three invitations, taking a look and frowning deeply.

Seeing this name, he felt a strong killing intent oozing out of his heart.

This person is too much of an eyesore!

A survivor of Qing Mao mountain, had interacted with himself and Gu Yue Fang Zheng, a huge threat to himself.

If his true identity was exposed, it would affect his current peaceful lifestyle, and the haven he had painstakingly crafted in Shang clan city would be lost.

But this Tie Ruo Nan, Fang Yuan could not do anything to her.

Tie clan young master, in Shang clan city, he was not permitted to kill her.

"I am still too weak, if I was rank six like back then, I could kill this small-fry with one finger." Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

Although his battle strength surged, and his growth was astounding, killing Tie Ruo Nan had consequences the current him could not bear.

In fact, he could not even use his own name at this point.

There is always a mountain higher than a mountain, an expert stronger than another expert. Rank five was only the mortal realm peak, yet he was merely rank three.

Fang Yuan quickly sorted his thoughts, eliminating her was the most direct method, but it could not be used, thus he had to think of a way to deal with this unwanted guest.

"The matter on Qing Mao mountain was not exposed, seeing Tie Ruo Nan’s action, she must not know anything. Otherwise, she would not come with just this group to arrest me."

"She sent out three invitations and purposely displayed her determination of wanting to meet me. It seems she wants to learn what happened back then from me. After all, her father died on Qing Mao mountain."

"Then the matter now is, I am using Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s name now, will she suspect my true identity?"

"If she has suspicions, how do I get rid of her doubts?"

"Or even worse, if my identity is exposed, how do I salvage it? From Shang Yan Fei’s findings, I have an ordinary aptitude, only my brother is A grade aptitude, how do I explain the change in my talent..."

Fang Yuan’s brain rapidly worked.

He was a sly schemer, having a vigilant nature, he always considered the worst outcome, and this huge crisis was no different.

He quickly thought of a countermeasure.

"If I really get to that stage, I will sell the blood skull Gu to Shang Yan Fei. He had been collecting the blood sea true inheritance, if I sell the blood skull Gu to him, he would be able to raise Shang Xin Ci’s aptitude. He dotes on her so much, using the man triumphing heaven Gu for her to change her fate. He will not reject this deal."

Handing over the blood skull Gu, would allow Fang Yuan to explain the reason why he concealed his identity.

But unless the matter had progressed to the worst stage, Fang Yuan would definitely not sell the blood skull Gu.

"The blood skull Gu is a divine Gu to raise geniuses for a clan. If I sell it to Shang clan, Shang clan’s forces would expand rapidly. Although the blood skull Gu has no value to me anymore, it is another story for others."

Fang Yuan did not know Fang Zheng was still alive now, and was experiencing a rapid growth in strength.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

It’s time to use Fang Yuan’s greatest talent.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan could not help but think again: "According to Tie clan’s reaction, Tie Ruo Nan probably has no idea the blood skull Gu is in my hands. Maybe my A grade aptitude now is the greatest facade I have."

Regarding this, Fang Yuan was spot on.

The truth is, Tie Ruo Nan had never suspected Fang Yuan’s identity.

The reason was obviously aptitude.

Tie Ruo Nan had always assumed that Fang Yuan was the Desolate Ancient Moon physique. Regarding the weakness of the ten extreme physique, she had learned much about it in Tie clan. After such a long time had passed, if it was really Fang Yuan, he would’ve died long ago.

Furthermore, from Tie Dao Ku’s reports, Fang Yuan’s fighting style of being brave and forthright, was also a testament to his identity.

In Tie Ruo Nan’s mind, Fang Zheng was the one with such a style, as for that devious Fang Yuan, how could he fight with such ferocity?

On Tie Ruo Nan’s fourth visit, she finally met Fang Yuan.

In the living room, only Fang Yuan and Tie Ruo Nan were present, the rest were sent away.

"To think that you and I would meet under such circumstances." Tie Ruo Nan exclaimed.

Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng were twins, they looked almost identical.

She exclaimed, but Fang Yuan was even more emotional, sighing deeply: "The past is the past. Let it stay that way, I do not want to mention it again."

Tie Ruo Nan’s eyes shone sharply: "No, some things cannot be forgotten. My visit this time is for the matter back then. You must know how my father died, please tell me the truth!"

Fang Yuan looked at Tie Ruo Nan deeply, she showed no fear, staring right back at him. Her gaze showed a strong determined spirit.

Her eyes and eyebrows were sharper than before, as she did not roam around these few years, her slightly dark skin had turned pale, and together with her aquiline nose and red lips, it displayed the image of a heroic female general.

No doubt, she was a beauty. Although no match for Bai Ning Bing and Shang Xin Ci, her body had great shape, especially the long legs. Coupled with her unique disposition, it caused her to shine among people, and lure the conquering desire of men.

But Fang Yuan was not concerned with her appearance, from her gaze, Fang Yuan sensed that she had no doubt about his identity.

This was good.

Then next, the problem was how to explain the matter back then.

Fang Yuan knew, if he did not give a proper explanation, Tie Ruo Nan would not let go.

Regarding this, Fang Yuan had his measures.

Thus, he sighed: "Every time I think about Qing Mao maintain, my heart aches. You may have lost a father, but I lost a clan, every single one of my family, and was forced to roam in the wilds. Although Shang clan city is good, it is after all a foreign land, there is no feeling of home."

Saying so, his eyes turned red.

Seeing Fang Yuan act like this, Tie Ruo Nan’s tough as steel gaze softened.

As people in similar circumstances, both of them were victims. But compared to her, Fang Zheng who had lost all his clansmen was no doubt more pitiful.

"Do you know? You killed a young master from my clan, if I had not stopped them, you would have been trialed by my clan already." Tie Ruo Nan changed the topic.

Fang Yuan’s expression changed, rapidly explaining: "I know about the matter regarding Tie Dao Ku, it was not intentional! I dug the traps to deal with the grass skirt monkeys. Who asked your Tie clan to tail after me and fall into my trap? They were asking for death, how can you blame me!"

"A life for a life, it is perfectly justified, no?" Tie Ruo Nan’s expression turned solemn.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly in his heart: "If that is the case, how many lives would I need to repay them?"

His face showed a cold smile too: "Tie Ruo Nan, after so many things had happened, we are no longer naive kids. Your Tie clan has no justification in this matter, the reason you did not act is because of the purple thorn token in my hand, is that not the case?"

Tie Ruo Nan replied honestly: "The purple thorn token is the main reason. But it can only protect your safety in Shang clan city, once you leave, we will not let you go. If you can tell me the truth behind the matter back then, I can assure you, as long as I live, Tie clan will not pursue you for this matter."

Fang Yuan’s heart was slightly shocked.

This Tie Ruo Nan seemed to have developed well these few years. Even as a Tie clan young master, not many had this level of authority.

"If you do not believe me, we can use the poison vow Gu." Tie Ruo Nan continued.

Poison vow Gu again?

To speak the truth, Fang Yuan was already getting sick of refining the eating one’s words Gu.

"The truth is nothing much, now that you are Tie clan’s young master, can you not guess it?" Fang Yuan lowered his head, secretly observing Tie Ruo Nan.

He used this to probe her, but Tie Ruo Nan did not seem to notice it.

The young girl smiled: "Actually, even if you do not say it, I have an idea already."

Fang Yuan’s tone changed: "You know?"

Tie Ruo Nan sighed slowly: "The ten extreme physique is not a secret to the high-tier clans in the Gu Master world. Causing that scene and sealing the entire Qing Mao mountain in ice, even a rank five Gu Master cannot do it. But what I did not expect is, your brother was not the Desolate Ancient Moon physique, but the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique."

"What?" Fang Yuan called out in his mind, but his expression remained the same, only squinting appropriately.

"Why did she think I am the Desolate Ancient Moon physique?" Fang Yuan felt weird at the absurdity of her claim.

"Wait... no wonder back then, the Gu Yue clan leader protected me for no reason. Don’t tell me, they thought my cultivation speed was due to the ten extreme physique?" As he considered this, many things started to make sense.

"If she thinks so, then the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique is my greatest cover. This means she had never doubted my real identity. As long as I do not show a flaw in my pretense later..."

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan’s face showed a complicated and painful expression.

He did not speak, only sighing.

The more he speaks, the more loopholes he creates, words lead to mistakes!

Tie Ruo Nan looked at his expression and affirmed her guess, as her tone became softer: "Fang Zheng, I know the pain in your heart is very complicated. The only who ruined your home, causing you to roam outside, and murdered your entire clan, was your own brother Fang Yuan..."

Fang Yuan stopped her words, his eyes turning red: "Stop speaking, since you know so clearly, why must you ask me now."

"But I need a clear answer, all these were my assumptions!" Tie Ruo Nan gave a forceful gaze.

Fang Yuan nodded, as tears fell silently.

Tie Ruo Nan seeing this, could not force him further, only saying dejectedly: "Do you know, I had rushed back to Qing Mao mountain, seeing the snow that engulfed the mountain, my heart was a mess. I know my father was killed by Fang Yuan, if he was still around, the hatred of killing my father is greater than the heavens, I will definitely kill him for revenge. But he is already dead..."

"So what if I am not content with the outcome? I want to be filial to my parents but it is too late, I want to kill the murderer but he is already dead. It is the greatest regret in life!" Tie Ruo Nan sighed, not knowing that her mortal enemy was right in front of her.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, showing displeasure: "Fang Yuan is after all my brother, he is already dead, what more do you want?"

Tie Ruo Nan’s eyes shone: "I want to know some things. Back then, my father had received a mysterious letter, I know what is written in it. It says that the Gu Yue village contained a blood sea inheritance, thus my father disregarded his injuries and rushed to Qing Mao mountain immediately. Do you and Bai Ning Bing know about it?"

Fang Yuan shook his head: "If I obtained it, I would’ve used it already. Why would I suffer so much on this journey?"

Tie Ruo Nan stared at Fang Yuan with deep meaning: "The blood sea inheritance brings endless disasters. Back then, the demonic path Gu Master blood sea ancestor left this vile inheritance behind. Getting to the root of the problem, my father’s death was also due to this inheritance. Fang Zheng, if you really received this inheritance, I hope you can hand it over to me, and let me compensate for some of my regrets."

Fang Yuan shook his head: "No means no."

Tie Ruo Nan was solemn, before speaking: "According to my reports, you have a Gu in your possession that gives off a strong blood aura, you used to use it as a long range attack. But after you converted to a strength path cultivation, you no longer use it. Why is that?"

Fang Yuan was stunned, before realizing.

"You are suspecting me of taking the blood sea inheritance, but wanted to conceal it? Hmph, you mean this Gu?"

Fang Yuan willed, and took out the blood moon Gu from his aperture, tossing it to Tie Ruo Nan.

"This is the blood moon Gu from my clan, did you not see my brother use it before? Back when the explosion occurred, my clan leader and Bai clan leader worked together and protected me and Bai Ning Bing at the expense of their lives. The clan leader handed me his remaining Gu, and during the journey with Bai Ning Bing, many Gu died of hunger, but only this blood moon Gu remained became it was easy to feed."

Fang Yuan’s words not only answered Tie Ruo Nan’s enquiry, but even explained why he and Bai Ning Bing were able to escape from the icy hell.

Tie Ruo Nan inspected the blood moon Gu, her expression turning relaxed: "So that’s it. Your clan leader was courageous, in order to protect the bloodline, he sacrificed himself, he is truly noble!"

Fang Yuan snorted: "That is why I have to live better, and rebuild Gu Yue village. Whoever dares to stop me, I will end his life!"

This explains why he was so cruel and ruthless in the battle stage.

"Although we did not spend much time together, I can evidently feel that you have changed." Tie Ruo Nan looked at Fang Yuan, she was only reminiscing and did not suspect him.

After encountering such a trauma, most people would change, that was normal.

Fang Yuan looked at her plainly: "People change, didn’t you change as well?"

Tie Ruo Nan shook her head: "I have just been walking on my own road."

After that, both of them went silent.

Long after, Tie Ruo Nan spoke: "I will bring Tie Dao Ku back. I promise you, Tie clan will no longer pursue this matter. Relying on Shang clan and rebuilding your clan is a good method, many people succeeded, and I wish you success as well."

After saying that, the young girl stood up and left decisively.

Fang Yuan looked at her leave, his eyes squinting.

He had an obscure premonition, this Tie Ruo Nan was not simple, she might bring him great problems in the future.

"I really want to kill her in advance..." Fang Yuan was filled with helpless regret.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

I hope Fang Yuan can rebuild his clan soon. Poor thing.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Tie Ruo Nan really left. And like she said, she took Tie Dao Ku with her.

Fang Yuan understood very well what kind of person Tie Dao Ku was.

Being able to fight intensely with Bai Ning Bing for such a long time, he clearly was an expert and could not be looked down upon. Now, he had been recruited by Tie Ruo Nan.

"This Tie Ruo Nan must be eliminated, leaving her alive will be an enormous threat." Fang Yuan had an intense premonition in his heart, because Tie Ruo Nan, him and Bai Ning Bing had a common point —

They were people who found the road they want to walk on in life.

Such people had great willpower and courage, as long as they didn’t die prematurely, they were sure to have huge accomplishments.

Tie Ruo Nan also had A grade aptitude along with the support of Tie Clan.

She was one of the eight young masters of Tie Clan, just this alone, Fang and Bai could not compare with her even with the purple thorn tokens.

"If our growth continues like this, she will gradually throw me and Bai Ning Bing far away. Only through the three kings inheritance, can I decrease the gap between us." Fang Yuan made a plan.

With a normal development, Fang and Bai were not Tie Ruo Nan’s match. The latter was one of the young masters of Tie Clan, the resources she received were so much that Fang and Bai could not even begin to compare.

Only by walking on an uncommon route, by taking risks and shortcuts, could they decrease this gap.

The three kings inheritance and the great demonic righteous battle of Yi Tian mountain were such ’shortcuts’.

Spring came and left; autumn left and returned.

The river of time continued to flow ceaselessly and over a year passed.

Nan Qiu garden, secret room.

Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged on a cushion, beads of sweat seeped out of his forehead, as he gritted his teeth and endured.

He was refining Gu and it was the crucial moment.

A red, orange and green sphere floated in mid-air; the size of a basket. Its lights tinged Fang Yuan’s face with a variety of colors.

Doing four tasks at once!

"Stone turtle strength Gu, go."

Following Fang Yuan’s will, a darkish light flew out of his aperture and pierced into the three colored light sphere.

The addition of stone turtle strength Gu immediately created an intense reaction in the three colored light sphere.

The light sphere which had red, orange and three colors, now had a dark light mixed into it.

The four colors contended against each other but no one could overwhelm the other, and the battle became chaotic.

For a moment, the four colors moved fiercely, just like boiling water which was being stirred by a large hand.

Boom.

Suddenly, there was a small explosion.

The light sphere burst apart and formed a four colored rain. The light rain came fast and left just as quickly; in a blink of an eye, the secret room was submerged in darkness.

Everything disappeared.

"Failed again..." In the eerie darkness, Fang Yuan sighed softly.

Blood slowly seeped out from his nose and due to the failure in refining Gu, his soul also received a backlash, causing him to have a burst of dizziness.

This was already the fourth failure.

"A year and a half has gone, I have advanced to third inner city from the fourth. However, I haven’t been able to buy bitter strength Gu."

Fang Yuan knew the reason.

One was because bitter strength Gu was extremely rare and also very expensive; it rarely appeared even in Shang clan city.

Second was because Shang Ya Zi was the one who managed the shops and was obstructing Fang Yuan from the dark.

Shang Ya Zi was one of the young masters of Shang clan and was in control of the stores in Shang clan city. Fang Yuan wanted to buy bitter strength Gu, and Shang Ya Zi possessed all kinds of ways to obstruct Fang Yuan.

Two years ago, Fang Yuan arrived at Shang clan city and had extorted Shang Ya Zi. And after this was done, Shang Ya Zi relied on Bai Gu inheritance to pass the clan’s examination and maintain his young master position. Although he was hindered by poison vow Gu - not being able to make fatal moves against Fang Yuan - this way of taking revenge was still allowed.

Shang Ya Zi was after all Shang Yan Fei’s son, each loss he suffered made him wiser. After the setbacks he suffered, he roused his spirit, wiped away his decadence, became cautious in indulging in wine and women, and became more shrewd.

He relied on the clan’s system to deal with Fang Yuan, using more hidden means that even the purple thorn token Fang Yuan possessed was of no use.

Purple thorn token holders were considered Shang clan’s esteemed guests. But in the end, they were outsiders and could not compare to Shang Ya Zi who was Shang clan’s young master.

Since he could not buy bitter strength Gu, Fang Yuan could only attempt to refine it himself.

However, the success rate in refining bitter strength Gu was really very low.

Counting in today’s attempt, Fang Yuan had already tried the fusion four times and in the process lost brown bear strength Gu, galloping horse strength Gu, green bull labor Gu and stone turtle strength Gu.

Apart from these, he had also lost precious supplementary materials and large amounts of primeval stones.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan was able to keep on winning at the battle stage and earn resources, allowing him to bear the cost of Gu refinement failure.

"Sigh, this time is also a failure... I can only wait for my injuries to recover before I try again." Fang Yuan sighed.

Gu refinement required prudence.

Failure to refine a Gu could inflict backlash on the Gu Master’s body and soul.

Injuries on the body were easier to resolve; but because of multitasking, the soul suffered damage which was extremely troublesome to deal.

The higher the rank and rarer the Gu was, the more severe the consequences of failure.

Thus, refinement Gu Masters would often be seriously injured or become bedridden because of Gu refinement failures, and sometimes the backlash even led to deaths.

It was not that Gu which could heal the soul did not exist, but they were all extremely rare and were usually kept secretly by the large clans.

The injuries to his soul this time would inflict light dizziness to Fang Yuan for over a month.

This dizziness would affect Fang Yuan’s battle strength and such a minor gap could be fatal in a battle between experts.

Thus Fang Yuan usually attempted this after an interval of a month to let his soul have enough time to recuperate.

Gu refinement failed but today’s cultivation was not over.

Fang Yuan waited in meditation; a short while later, he heard a knock from outside. He opened the door and welcomed Bai Ning Bing.

Over this course of a year and a half, Bai Ning Bing made rapid progress and also reached the third inner city, having assembled a set of Gu worms. She was on par with Fang Yuan and rarely suffered losses. They were called the two new stars of this generation in the battle stage and received attention from many people.

The two did not speak and only nodded to each other.

Bai Ning Bing sat cross-legged on the opposite cushion and placed her palms against Fang Yuan’s back, pouring her snow silver primeval essence.

Bai Ning Bing was intentionally suppressing her cultivation and thus, was still at rank three peak stage.

In contrast, Fang Yuan’s cultivation was advancing rapidly and was now only half a step away from rank three upper stage.

Four hours later, Bai Ning Bing stopped injecting the primeval essence and withdrew her palms.

Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes.

His aura was even more abundant and there was a vague feeling of fullness. This was the sign of cultivation close to breaking through.

"My cultivation is getting close to rank three upper stage, I will breakthrough within a few days." Fang Yuan calmly analyzed in his mind.

"After I breakthrough to upper stage, I will use the white silver relic Gu and directly push my cultivation to rank three peak stage. Like this, I can catch up to Bai Ning Bing, and also ease Spring Autumn Cicada’s pressure on the aperture."

Spring Autumn Cicada was Fang Yuan’s vital Gu and was also a rank six Gu.

Over this course of a year and a half, it had been continually absorbing the water of the river of time and its aura was growing stronger as it recovered, creating a pressure on Fang Yuan’s aperture again.

But the situation this time was many times better than the one on Qing Mao mountain.

Fang Yuan’s cultivation was advancing rapidly, and with a rank three aperture, it was not as pressing as back then on Qing Mao mountain.

All this should be attributed to bone flesh unity Gu and Bai Ning Bing.

Cultivation ended; Bai Ning Bing stood up and left the secret room immediately.

During the whole process, she did not say a word and her expression was cold as ice.

Fang Yuan was also not someone who spoke a lot. Over this year and a half, the two were already used to interacting like this.

Fang Yuan inwardly pondered: "When I reach rank three peak stage, Bai Ning Bing’s primeval essence won’t be of much help to me. But from this long period of interaction with her and from the minute changes in her aura, I can vaguely feel that she isn’t far from rank four realm."

Even if Bai Ning Bing was trying her best to delay her cultivation, the curse of the ten extreme physique had not disappeared and started showing its effect.

According to what Bai Ning Bing said, her aptitude had raised by two percent again and was now at ninety-three percent.

Another seven percent increase would reach hundred percent and she would regain her northern dark ice soul physique.

"If she reaches rank four, her yellow gold primeval essence would be of great help to me in breaking through to rank four realm."

"In some aspects, she and I are in similar circumstances. I have Spring Autumn Cicada and she has northern dark ice soul physique..."

Seven days later, Fang Yuan received good news from Wei Yang.

An auction!

"A rarely seen disaster appeared at Ju Feng mountain and destroyed Ju clan. The remnants of Ju clan had submitted to Shang clan city and are auctioning large amounts of their clan’s collections to maintain their livelihood. Thus, there will be an auction held soon."

After saying this, Wei Yang intentionally said to Fang Yuan: "Brother Fang, your luck has come. I have investigated and found there is a bitter strength Gu being auctioned this time."

Wei Yang was clear of Fang Yuan’s demand for bitter strength Gu. Fang Yuan had even requested him to make inquiries before.

"The main thing is everyone in Shang clan city are viewing this auction with importance, it will be difficult for young master Shang Ya Zi to play tricks." Wei Yang added.

The conflict between Shang Ya Zi and Fang Yuan was no secret to Shang clan’s higher ups.

"Bitter strength Gu!"

"Ju clan!"

Fang Yuan’s gaze brightened.

Ju clan had centuries of foundation, there was sure to be many useful things up for bidding now that they were selling their properties. Bitter strength Gu which Fang Yuan had not obtained despite searching all over for it, was one of them.

"I have accumulated close to a million primeval stones in the course of this year and a half. I have a huge chance of successfully buying the bitter strength Gu."

"Cases like Ju clan’s destruction aren’t rare. In this world, besides human disaster, there are also natural disasters. Strong wind blows throughout the year in Ju Feng mountain, although it is a spiritual mountain possessing spirit springs, the environment is really bad. There could be many treasures in Ju Clan’s storage."

"I need to participate in the auction!" Fang Yuan immediately decided.

...

"What, Ju Clan has a bitter strength Gu?" In a study, Shang Ya Zi slowly furrowed his brows.

He was holding a document on one hand; the document contained most of the details of the auction.

And his other hand was on the table, his index finger knocking on the surface.

"To think Fang Zheng’s luck is so good, I did everything to obstruct him and it seems he is still going to obtain the bitter strength Gu. Even father is paying attention to the auction this time, it won’t be easy for me to interfere."

"But, Fang Zheng... I won’t let you get the bitter strength Gu so easily. I will also participate in the auction and make sure you suffer a huge loss!"

Shang Ya Zi could not help but let out a cold snort at the thought.

He had always kept a grudge due to Fang Yuan’s extortion.

He was a narrow-minded and petty person, refusing to see Fang and Bai gain fame and status. He could only ease the hatred in his heart by seeing Fang and Bai’s pain and suffering.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Sorry this is late, my windows update took 3 hours :(

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Strong winds blow continuously throughout the year on Ju Feng mountain, since its creation, Ju clan village had been facing the threat of hurricanes.

Ju clan village is situated at the top of Ju Feng mountain, having hundreds of years of history. Contesting the natural disaster as mere humans, the clan often faced the threat of extermination, but they pulled through every time. But this time, they faced a giant hurricane that is rarely seen in a hundred years.

Ju clan village could not longer defend themselves, and was destroyed by the disaster.

The terrifying hurricane destroyed the spirit spring, and many people in Ju clan died. After losing their village, they could only leave and come to Shang clan city, seeking refuge in hopes of rebuilding their home in the future.

Commodity prices are high in Shang clan city, to live, they had to sell their assets.

To Ju clan, this was a disaster, but to others, this was a rare opportunity.

Although Ju clan was a small size clan, they had their secrets for being able to live on Ju Feng mountain and fighting the natural disaster for hundreds of years without falling.

Ju clan selling off their assets made this auction very attractive to people.

Once news got out, it attracted most people’s attention in Shang clan city.

Seven days later, the auction was held.

At the auction, it was overcrowding with people and there were zero empty seats in the large hall. The private rooms on higher floors were all sold out as well.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing, using their purple thorn tokens, snatched a private room for themselves.

Fang Yuan opened a slit in the curtain of the room, standing at one side feeling the rowdy atmosphere of the hall.

At this time, the auction had not started yet, and nearly a thousand people in the hall were talking among themselves, making a great commotion.

"Sigh, what a pity for Ju clan. After hundreds of years, they finally lost to the hurricane. Man really cannot contest the strength of the natural elements." Someone exclaimed.

"This is nothing much, new clans rise up and old clans get eliminated. Just like a few years ago, the three clans on Qing Mao mountain were wiped out together. Ju clan’s demise was nothing extraordinary." Someone felt indifferent.

"Ju clan’s tragedy is our happiness. I hear there are lots of good stuff in this auction." Someone was gloating at the clan’s disaster.

"So many Ju clansmen entered Shang clan city, this will cause great disturbance to Shang clan city’s economy." Someone predicted the future.

At this moment, there was a huge commotion.

"Look, that is Shang clan young master Qiu Niu."

Fang Yuan followed the voice and looked, seeing Shang Qiu Niu walk in from the entrance, taking large strides in.

He had a muscular build and his steps were stable. He was thirty years old now, as Shang Yan Fei’s eldest son.

"Greetings to eldest young master Qiu Niu!"

"My respects to eldest young master."

"It is our honor to be able to see eldest young master in person."

At once, many people rushed up and paid respects to Qiu Niu.

"Hello everyone." Qiu Niu did not speak much, smiling lightly as he calmly faced the situation.

Finally, he walked into a private room under everyone’s gaze.

The auction house became quiet again.

But soon after, a commotion rose again.

"Young master Chao Feng and Fu Xi are here too!"

"They had a great relationship since young, as expected, they came here today together."

The fourth son Shang Chao Feng, still had a messy hair and a wild aura. The thirteenth son Shang Fu Xi was refined and delicate, looking like a scholar.

The two talked as they entered the private room together. Their servants opened a path for them along the way, and they did not care about the surrounding people.

Fang Yuan looked with a cold expression, squinting.

In his memory, Shang Chao Feng almost managed to get the Shang clan leader position, he was Shang Xin Ci’s greatest competitor. He was wicked and devious, and had decisive courage, this was somewhat like Shang Yan Fei.

Shang Fu Xi was his greatest supporter, willingly going under him and had wits, being good at planning. In the future, when the righteous demonic battle at Yi Tian mountain occurred, he schemed and employed strategies that caused great damage to the demonic Gu Masters, gaining fame instantly.

The two, one was capable and the other was good at scheming, complementing each other. The former controlled the Gu battle zone while the latter controlled the auction zone. They were both important domains in Shang clan city, being fully developed. Right now, these two were the third largest faction among the ten contesting young masters.

Before Shang Chao Feng and Shang Fu Xi entered their room, another group of people came.

Shang Pu Lao, Shang Suan Ni, and Shang Bi Xi walked in full of smiles as they spoke.

These three were the eighth, ninth, and tenth children of Shang Yan Fei. Because of benefits, they formed into a small alliance. They were the second largest faction among the contesting young masters as they had a strong collective force and were temporarily suppressing Shang Chao Feng and Shang Fu Xi.

Shang Pu Lao controlled the brothels in Shang clan city, he was a casanova and womaniser. Shang Suan Ni was in charge of restaurants and silk stores, having a large mouth and wide nose, two traces of yellow smoke came out of his nose when he breathed. Shang Bi Xi was short and fat, but was also a strength path Gu Master. His core Gu was the turtle tire Gu, having the strength of ten turtles.

Shang Suan Ni and Shang Bi Xi were strong experts in cultivation, while Shang Pu Lao had literary talent and fate with women. With the three as the head, two fighters and one scholar, they had great coordination.

The three young masters did not choose a room, but sat in the hall.

Shang Pu Lao had great interpersonal communication skills, everywhere he went, people followed. He spoke casually among the people, blending in perfectly, causing the scene to be even more liven.

On his left and right, Shang Suan Ni and Shang Bi Xi stood like two guardians.

"Shang Yan Fei’s children are all dragons and phoenixes among men !" Fang Yuan sighed internally.

He had a clear understanding of Shang clan’s ten young master situation now.

Right now, there were three factions among the young masters.

The first, was Shang Qiu Niu. He was Shang Yan Fei’s eldest son, with just this identity, he had many Shang clan elders and clansmen supporting him.

The second, was Shang Pu Lao, Shang Suan Ni, and Shang Bi Xi, the three gathered into a strong force and were currently the center of attention.

The third was Shang Chao Feng and Shang Fu Xi, hiding their strength and awaiting a chance to rise up.

As for the others, Shang Ya Zi was a loner, having little influence. Shang Chi Wen was bubbly and vibrant, but had no ambition. Shang Pi Xiu had great talent, but was too scheming...

"I want to help Shang Xin Ci ascend to the throne, we cannot compete with the three factions. Although Shang Xin Ci can cultivate, a forcefully awakened aperture only has C grade aptitude, this is not a weak foundation, but zero foundation."

Shang Xin Ci was Shang Yan Fei’s illegitimate daughter, and her mother was from Zhang clan. Zhang clan and Wu clan were very close, having much grudges with Shang clan. This was Shang Xin Ci’s political weakness.

"Every year, during the young master assessment, there is a great opportunity for Shang Yan Fei’s other children to rise up. In my memory, Shang Xin Ci only became Shang clan young master after six years. But this is too long, if I want to make use of her, I have to get her up there as soon as possible. This year’s assessment is a chance." Fang Yuan evaluated in his heart.

To get Shang Xin Ci into power, he had to deal with Shang Yan Fei’s other children. Since he could not deal with the three large factions, he will have to deal with the others.

On this aspect, Fang Yuan had a plan every since he entered Shang clan city.

Just as he thought about Shang Xin Ci, she arrived.

Numerous eyeballs were attracted to the entrance of the auction house.

"Shang clan’s two beauties!"

"Really pretty..."

"Young master Shang Chi Wen looks cute and innocent, but coming with Lady Shang Xin Ci, she loses out in terms of appearance."

The people discussed.

Shang Xin Ci and Shang Chi Wen held hands and spoke as they entered the auction house.

Shang Chi Wen wore a colorful dress, her face was like peach, soft and tender. Shang Xin Ci wore a green skirt, her black hair silky and her eyes shining like the moon. Her skin was white as snow and her lips were pink and tender. She looked elegant and graceful, gentle like water, when she smiled, it was pure and flawless, a perfect beauty. It caused people’s gaze to become dazed.

Beside the two of them, there were four servants.

Two of them were Tian Lan and Xiao Die, Shang Xin Ci’s personal servants.

The servants blocked the excited young men in the hall, as Shang Xin Ci and Shang Chi Wen walked towards Fang Yuan’s private room.

"Brother Hei Tu, Sister Bai Yun." Shang Xin Ci greeted, unable to hide the joy and excitement in her voice.

Shang Yan Fei used the man triumphing heaven Gu to forcefully awaken her aperture. These two years, he used a lot of precious Gu worms to raise her aptitude. From the lowest twenty percent D grade aptitude, it slowly rose to C grade fifty-nine percent, a step away from B grade.

Shang Yan Fei paid such a huge price to nurture her, and taught her personally, Shang Xin Ci felt his fatherly love, and her hatred vanished into thin air, enjoying the love and bliss.

Shang Yan Fei chose many Gu Masters to teach her. Shang Xin Ci stayed home for most of the time, studying more about Gu Master cultivation of her own accord. She was smart and mature, having faced some difficulties, she desired strength but was not arrogant, had strict goals for herself and improved by leaps and bounds, causing Shang Yan Fei to be extremely pleased.

This auction was a rare chance to relax, she had accepted Fang Yuan’s invitation and wanted to come alone, but met Shang Chi Wen along the way.

"Fang Zheng, I came uninvited, are you going to chase me out?" Shang Chi Wen laughed as she followed Shang Xin Ci into the room.

"How would I dare to, please take a seat." Fang Yuan invited her with a smile.

Bai Ning Bing sat at one side, hearing this, she did not turn around, but remained expressionless.

Shang Chi Wen gave this ice beauty a curious look, thinking: "Outsiders say Bai Ning Bing is cold and arrogant, it seems they were right."

Next, she looked at Fang Yuan.

"Actually, this Fang Zheng is also extremely arrogant. After reaching third inner city, and winning all his battles, never having a single loss, many forces started recruiting him. Shang Chao Feng, Shang Qiu Niu, Shang Pu Lao and others, they even held a banquet and invited him personally, but were rejected. These two being together... truly birds of a feather flock together."

Shang Chi Wen controlled Shang clan city’s battle stage, she was extremely clear of Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing’s situation.

Fang and Bai had never lost a battle since they joined the battle stage, they had overwhelming talent and were the most famous people in the battle zone. Their fame even rivalled the two great rank four Gu Masters, Ju Kai Bei and Yan Tu.

Anyone could tell that their future was promising, if any of the Shang clan young masters get their assistance, it would be a huge boost to their force.

But she, Shang Chi Wen, had no ambition, thus she did not send any invitations to them.

"Brother Hei Tu, it has been a while, are you doing fine? I heard you fought with a Gu Master called Teng Jiu Long..." Shang Xin Ci sat beside Fang Yuan, her gaze fixed on him as she asked in concern.

Fang Yuan laughed lightly: "It has only been ten days since we met, why is it ’been a while’? As for Teng Jiu Long, he could not even stop my advancement before losing. In this battle stage, only Ju Kai Bei and Yan Tu are a threat, the rest are nothing to be worried about."

Fang Yuan’s calm words displayed his extraordinary pride and self-confidence, as Shang Chi Wen listened with shining eyes, and Shang Xin Ci’s heart was moved once again.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

If Fang Yuan can remember all of these young masters and their names, so can you.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

As time passed, more and more people entered the auction house.

"Look, that is one of the five generals of Shang clan, White Light Swordsman!" Someone shouted.

Wei Yang’s title was the White Light Swordsman, he came as well.

"I have already checked, the bitter strength Gu you want is the thirteenth item. But, Shang Ya Zi is already in the fifth private room. I heard he purposely withdrew all of his assets, you have to be careful brother Fang Zheng." Wei Yang walked into the private room, giving Fang Yuan important information.

According to logic, the sequence of the auction items should not be revealed, and the identities of the guests should be kept secret as well. But as one of the five great generals of Shang clan, Wei Yang controlled the intelligence agency Feng Yu Manor, thus it was easy for him to get all the information he wanted.

Wei Yang patted Fang Yuan’s shoulders, still feeling worried: "Shang Ya Zi is not here for fun, he has at least one million and two hundred thousand primeval stones on hand. The bitter strength Gu is a treasure for strength path Gu Masters, other than Shang Ya Zi, there are two more people who are your greatest competitors, one is Shang Bi Xi, the other is Ju Kai Bei, you have to watch out."

Tenth son Shang Bi Xi had the turtle tire Gu, having the strength of ten turtles, he was a strength path Gu Master not inferior to Fang Yuan. He controlled the Shang clan city’s substitute refinement zone, although there was not much profits there, his eighth brother Shang Pu Lao controlled the brothels and ninth brother Shang Suan Ni controlled the restaurants and silk stores, they earn buckets of primeval stones everyday. If Shang Bi Xi wants the bitter strength Gu, as an alliance mate, the two of them would surely help.

Other than them, there was still Ju Kai Bei.

He had rank four cultivation, dominating third inner city battle stage.

What did rank four cultivation mean?

In an ordinary clan, he would be a clan leader!

Ju Kai Bei was a rank four Gu Master, but remaining in the battle stage and rejected all of the invitations sent to him by all sorts of forces.

"I will not leave the battle stage unless I defeat Yan Tu!" He declared.

Yan Tu was also a rank four Gu Master, and was the same as Ju Kai Bei as ’half the sky of battle stage’. Both of them vowed to defeat each other, and only after they became a true number one would they leave the battle stage gloriously.

Yan Tu is a fire path Gu Master, he would not have any desire for the bitter strength Gu. But Ju Kai Bei was a genuine strength path Gu Master, he had won numerous battles, only losing occasionally to Yan Tu, he had to have a lot of primeval stones on him!

Thus, be it Shang Bi Xi or Ju Kai Bei, they were Fang Yuan’s competitors.

"I have some spare money here, use them for now." Next, Wei Yang passed Fang Yuan a primeval elder Gu.

Shang Chi Wen gasped, slightly surprised.

She knew Wei Yang and Fang Yuan were close, but did not think their relationship was so deep!

She had investigated earlier, this auction had a light type Gu that would be useful to Wei Yang. To think he would hand his primeval stones over to Fang Yuan just for his sake.

Looking at the elderly’s cheerful expression, this primeval elder Gu had nearly a million primeval stones!

This means that Wei Yang gave up on his own Gu.

"Brother Wei, this..." Fang Yuan showed hesitance, as he also revealed a look of gratitude.

"Say no more, accept them. I am only lending them to you, not giving them. From now on, I am your creditor." Wei Yang laughed loudly, not giving Fang Yuan a chance to reject, forcing the primeval elder Gu onto him.

Shang Xin Ci at the other side also took out a primeval elder Gu.

"Brother Hei Tu, this is mine."

In her primeval elder Gu, the cloud elder was frowning and upset, from that, one can deduce that there was around a hundred to three hundred thousand primeval stones in it.

This was the pocket money Shang Yan Fei gave to her every month. She scrimped and saved, accumulating them and handed them all to Fang Yuan now.

"If I speak anymore, it will be hypocritical. I accept it all, I will definitely repay you later!" Fang Yuan laughed heartily, cupping his fists and keeping the primeval stones.

Shang Xin Ci smiled lightly, not thinking about Fang Yuan’s repayment. Even if she had to give these to him, she would not feel upset. But she knew, with his temper, he will not accept such a ’gift’, thus she could only ’lend’ him.

"That’s the way." Wei Yang nodded.

He had high hopes for Fang Yuan, and liked his clear definition of kindness and grudges.

At one side, Shang Chi Wen hesitated, but eventually did not take out her primeval elder Gu.

Her gaze was flickering with light, as she changed the topic: "Look, Ju Kai Bei is here."

At the entrance of the auction house, a strong and muscular man appeared.

He was at the prime of his life, eight feet tall. His skin was tightly wrapped around his muscles, layers after layers. When he walked, every step was the exact same distance, showing his strict and disciplined nature.

He was like a tower, tall and straight, giving off a sense of pressure to his surroundings. It caused people to move away from him, but also look at him with respect and reverence.

He was Ju Kai Bei.

Rank four Gu Master, the peak of experts in third inner city battle stage!

"Senior Ju, my clan’s young master Shang Ya Zi invites you to the fifth private room."

"Lord Ju, my clan’s young master Pu Lao is already in fourth private room, and has prepared a banquet."

"Sir Ju Kai Bei, this is the invitation from my clan’s young master Chao Feng, please accept it."

...

At once, many servants crowded over, representing their young masters and sent out invitations to Ju Kai Bei.

But Ju Kai Bei snorted coldly, not looking at them, walking to the first row of the hall and sitting down.

The servants looked at each other before helplessly leaving.

Time passed, and after Ju Kai Bei, another important person arrived.

This person was neither fat nor thin, not tall or short, had a common face but his features were strange.

The left of his face was bright red, and the right was pale blue. The two colors split his face into two portions, from the center of his nose, two colors split on both sides.

"He is Shang Bu Li, to think he came." Wei Yang told Fang Yuan immediately.

"It is him indeed. "Fang Yuan nodded slightly, having a clear picture in his mind.

Shang Bu Li, titled ’Two faced man’, was the number one general under Shang Yan Fei. He had rank four cultivation, controlling Gu worms of fire and ice.

He was Shang clan’s most important subject, and was a clan elder in Shang clan, in charge of the trading of servants in Shang clan, his authority was higher than that of Wei Yang.

When Shang Bu Li appeared, it attracted many greetings and bootlicking. He had a proud expression, squinting as he walked slowly between the people, enjoying the feeling of being praised to the heaven.

His authority was greater than the ten young masters.

The young masters can only control some of Shang clan’s businesses, but as the number one subject of Shang clan, Shang Bu Li controlled the entire slave trade market in Shang clan.

"Shang Bu Li, can you walk faster, dragging your steps like this, are you a man?" At this time, an unhappy tone complained.

With Shang Bu Li’s position, in Shang clan city, he was second only to the clan leader, who dared to be so rude to him?

Shang Bu Li heard this, and his heart shuddered, shrinking his head as he turned around, bowing to the person speaking: "Lord Doctor Su Shou, Bu Li pays respect to you."

The person who came was Doctor Su Shou.

She was one of the four great doctors of southern border, and had rank five cultivation, she had once treated Fang Yuan’s injuries.

She still wore a white shirt, and her face was covered in a white veil, preventing others from seeing her appearance, but her body curves could not be hidden.

Shang Bu Li did not dare to look at her body, shifting his gaze to the floor beside her feet.

Doctor Su Shou and clan leader Shang Yan Fei had a complicated relationship, she had a high position in Shang clan. As Shang Yan Fei’s ’rumored lover’, even if Shang Bu Li had a million guts, he would not dare to disrespect her.

"Just don’t block my path." Doctor Su Shou snorted coldly, bringing her eight white shirt servants and walking past Shang Bu Li, entering a private room and vanishing from everyone’s sight.

Shang Bu Li rubbed his nose, laughing bitterly, there was nothing he could do in front of Doctor Su Shou.

Not long after, many people appeared again.

Yan Tu who shared the same fame as Ju Kai Bei, Shang Yan Fei’s fifth general Yi Huo, Yi Bu Hui elder from Yi clan, Fei Luan Feng elder from Fei clan, and others.

"This auction is a gathering of experts. There are established Gu Masters, new generation rising stars, lone warriors, and leaders of large clans. Among them, I wonder how many will become my obstacle?" Fang Yuan thought.

"Sorry for the long wait everyone, the auction officially starts now!" The hosting female Gu master had a young beautiful appearance as she stood on the stage using the sound amplify Gu.

She knew everyone was impatient, thus she spoke quickly, and started introducing the first item.

Frost arrow Gu.

Rank four Gu, shaped like a drain fly, its body was blue like ice, and its mouth was long and needle-like.

This kind of ice type Gu was a treasure in Ju clan village. It was like Gu Yue clan who collected many types of moon type Gu.

"Once the frost arrow Gu is activated, frost energy gathers and it shoots out an arrow of ice to quickly assault the enemy. As everyone knows, its greatest advantage is low primeval essence consumption, even a rank three Gu Master can use it. The base price is seventy thousand primeval stones!" The female Gu Master quickly introduced.

"Seventy-five thousand."

"Eighty thousand!"

"Eighty-five thousand!"

...

The bids continued to rise, until ninety thousand, and the speed decreased drastically. Gu Masters’ bids increased by three thousand, compared to five thousand at the start.

After the hundred thousand benchmark, the three thousand increment shrunk to one thousand.

"A hundred and ten thousand. " Bai Ning Bing said.

"The esteemed guest from ninth private room bid a hundred and ten thousand!" The hosting Gu Master raised her pitch, this was the first time a guest from a private room had bid.

"A hundred and twenty thousand." Shang Ya Zi’s voice came out of fifth private room.

Bai Ning Bing squinted, calling: "A hundred and thirty thousand."

Shang Ya Zi quickly followed: "A hundred and forty thousand."

Bai Ning Bing gave Fang Yuan a glance, saying: "A hundred and fifty thousand."

Fang Yuan shrugged.

This bid was obviously Shang Ya Zi finding problems with them. Bai Ning Bing was in the same room as Fang Yuan, thus she was targeted by Shang Ya Zi, she was really under fire for no reason.

"A hundred and fifty thousand for a frost arrow Gu... hmph, I want you guys to suffer!" In fifth private room, Shang Ya Zi laughed sinisterly, not bidding anymore.

Although Bai Ning Bing bought the frost arrow Gu, she paid forty thousand extra.

"It seems Shang Ya Zi is here with a vengeance." Wei Yang sighed.

Shang Xin Ci also frowned, feeling worried for Fang Yuan.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

How will Fang Yuan deal with this evil villian?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Take a look everyone, this is a thousand year wind willow." The female Gu Master pointed at the item on the stage and introduced.

"Wind willow is a rare type of plant that is used in refinement as material. It only grows in a location where there is sufficient wind energy to sustain its growth. Because Ju Feng mountain has winds all year round, they can produce large amounts of wind willows."

"An ordinary wind willow is only a few decades old, or a few centuries. But the current auction item, it is a thousand years old, able to be used in rank five Gu refinement! The base bid is fifty thousand primeval stones, the auction starts now."

Once she said so, people started bidding.

"Fifty-five thousand!"

"Fifty-eight thousand."

"Sixty-five thousand."

"Seventy thousand."

The bids went up, as many people participated, most of them were professional refinement Gu masters.

A thousand year wind willow is rarely seen, even Ju clan who had lived on Ju Feng mountain for hundreds of years, had only eighteen remaining.

Wind willow did not have tree branches, there is only the roots underground, and one stem.

When the winds blow, this sole stem would sway with the winds, like seaweed underwater.

The thousand year wind willow on the stage had been coiled up, but its length definitely exceeded a hundred meters.

Fang Yuan tried to intervene and bid, but that Shang Ya Zi immediately raised the bid by five thousand.

Eventually, a refinement master obtained the wind willow, spending almost a hundred thousand.

"The thousand year wind willow is the eighth item, during this period, whenever I bid for something, Shang Ya Zi would interfere. If I do nothing, he would remain silent too. It seems his sole purpose here today is to oppose me." Fang Yuan’s gaze shone, gaining a deeper understanding of Shang Ya Zi’s narrow-mindedness.

Time continued to pass.

Ninth item, tenth item...

"What is displayed next is the twelfth item. This is a chasing wind Gu, rank four movement Gu, it allows the Gu Master to have the speed to chase after winds. Base bid is a hundred and eighty thousand." The female Gu Master’s delicate voice reverberated in the entire auction house.

"A hundred and ninety thousand."

"Two hundred thousand!"

"Two hundred and twenty thousand!"

"Two hundred and fifty thousand!"

...

Chasing wind Gu was a popular auction item, once it appeared, the first climax of the auction house appeared.

Many people participated and bid, even the quiet private rooms started to bid for the item.

Wind, light, lightning, cloud, these four types of Gu were outstanding movement Gu worms. Chasing wind Gu was a rank four Gu, it gave a great boost to the Gu Master’s speed.

Fang Yuan tried to bid, but Shang Ya Zi immediately followed after.

Fang Yuan no longer said anything, as their bids were buried under the other people’s voices.

At times, new competitors entered the bidding, but more people gave up after seeing the absurd prices.

When the chasing wind Gu’s price rose to three hundred and fifty thousand, only two Gu Masters were left competing.

One was Yi clan elder Yi Bu Hui, the other was Fei clan elder Fei Luan Feng.

Yi clan and Fei clan did not have a good relationship, the two competed as sparks arose.

Eventually, the chasing wind Gu was bought by elder Yi Bu Hui using four hundred and forty thousand.

Although Fang Yuan had over two million primeval stones, he did not participate.

Chasing wind Gu contained the Dao mark of wind, if he used it, his beast phantoms would cause a huge disturbance to the Gu, causing the effect to weaken. Thus, chasing wind Gu was not a good choice for Fang Yuan.

"If this was the rank four fairy wind Gu, I would buy it, too bad this was merely a chasing wind Gu."

Fang Yuan had a recipe, he could use fairy wind Gu, seven shining stars Gu and a few other materials to refine the fixed star Gu, which was the main ingredient in refining fixed immortal travel Gu.

Dream Travel, Carefree Travel, Fixed Immortal Travel, Liquor God Travel, these were the four great movement Gu.

All of them were rank six Gu.

Dream travel could allow Gu Masters to enter other people’s dreams. Carefree travel was best at dodging attacks. Fixed immortal travel could allow a Gu Master to teleport themselves to anywhere they want to go. Liquor god travel was the most special, and first appeared in <>, but that story is for later.

Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories, thus he had the carefree travel Gu and fixed immortal travel Gu’s recipes. Among them, the fixed immortal travel Gu was most needed by Fang Yuan, but the success rate of refinement was extremely low, and he did not have enough materials for it either, thus he could only set it aside for now.

"Alright, for our thirteenth item, it is a... bitter strength Gu!"

The female Gu master introduced on the stage, but even without her explanation, many Gu Masters’ eyes were shining brightly.

"I have to obtain this bitter strength Gu no matter what, no one can stop me, two hundred thousand primeval stones!" Before the female Gu Master gave the base bid, Fang Yuan quickly shouted.

Fang Yuan’s words made Ju Kai Bei unhappy: "Youngsters are so anxious, I bid two hundred and fifty thousand."

"Three hundred thousand." Shang Bi Xi also bid quickly.

"Five hundred thousand!" Fang Yuan reported a frightening price.

The entire auction house went wild.

"That voice, I think it is Gu Yue Fang Zheng!"

"He sure is rich, bidding five hundred thousand just for a bitter strength Gu."

"He had won so many times on the battle stage, he is affluent and loaded."

People sighed, while some strength path Gu Masters had a bitter expression, they held some expectations towards the bitter strength Gu, and wanted to try bidding, but with Fang Yuan’s bid, they were kicked out of the race before even beginning.

Even the female Gu Master on the stage was shocked.

Bitter strength Gu was rank four, but strength path Gu worms had little requirements towards the Gu Master in terms of primeval essence, rank three could barely activate them. Its market price was around three hundred and eighty thousand, lower than the chasing wind Gu.

To think that Fang Yuan bid five hundred thousand immediately, a hundred and twenty thousand above the market value.

"Youngsters these days sure have vigor." Ju Kai Bei sighed, no longer competing. Half a million primeval stones was enough for him to buy a few other useful Gu worms.

"Eighth brother, ninth brother..."Shang Bi Xi looked at the two young masters hesitantly.

Ninth brother Shang Suan Ni did not say anything, only looking at Shang Pu Lao.

"Tenth brother, this depends on you. If you want to compete for it, we as brothers will support you all the way." Shang Pu Lao smiled and encouraged.

Shang Bi Xi gritted his teeth: "Five hundred thousand... it’s too much of a loss. Nevermind, let Fang Zheng take it."

He also gave up.

Fang Yuan’s determined display removed two competitors for him.

"Five hundred thousand, going once."

"Five hundred thousand, going twice."

"Five hundred thousand, going thric..."

"Hold on, I bid five hundred and ten thousand." Right before the female Gu Master slammed the hammer, Shang Ya Zi said slowly in his private room.

"Hmph, Shang Ya Zi, you think you can stop me? Six hundred thousand." Fang Yuan immediately followed, speaking with strong disdain.

Shang Ya Zi laughed coldly: "I’ll play with you if you want to Fang Zheng. Six hundred and ten."

The people in the auction house started chattering.

"Fang Zheng and Shang clan young master are at odds!"

"How can this be?"

"Fang Zheng has the purple thorn token, and is an esteemed guest in Shang clan, he has no fear towards Shang Ya Zi’s young master identity. But Shang Ya Zi is in charge of all the shops in Shang clan, and has great wealth. This will be a battle among tigers and dragons !"

...

"Seven hundred thousand!" Fang Yuan shouted: "Shang Ya Zi, you lost to me previously, you are a loser. It seems you have not been punished enough."

Shang Ya Zi retorted: "Complete bullshit, we’ll see who teaches who a lesson! Seven hundred and ten!!"

Once he said that, the crowd went wild.

Shang Ya Zi and Fang Yuan’s dispute was no secret to Shang clan city’s higher ups. But to ordinary Gu Masters, it was news to them.

At once, people started guessing why Shang Ya Zi has a grudge against Fang Yuan.

"Evidently, Shang Ya Zi lost in a fight to Fang Zheng before, and wants to take revenge."

"Why bother with the reasoning. Young master Ya Zi is well known for his pettiness, even if a bystander knocks into him, he will take revenge. Fang Zheng is a lawless brute, it is no wonder that they would have conflicts."

"You are both wrong, I heard already, Shang Ya Zi and Fang Zheng went to Qin Yan brothel before, and were interested in the number one lady there. But eventually Fang Zheng got her, and that led to Shang Ya Zi’s animosity."

"Real or fake?" Someone expressed doubt.

The person who spoke earlier, showed a fearless expression, pointing at a seat: "Look there, that is lady An Yu, you don’t have to doubt me, just ask her."

Thus, everyone sent a curious gaze towards her.

Lady An Yu was stunned too, not expecting herself to get involved, but she suddenly saw among the people, her pimp was winking at her.

She immediately understood, this was a way to get famous. For a brothel prostitute like her, only such news would be able to raise her worth.

She did not answer, but lowered her head, blushing. Once she did that, most of the suspicious people believed it.

"So that’s what happened."

"Looking at Lady An Yu’s expression, the answer is clear!"

"You guys do not know the true story, but I do. In history, beauties are always paired with heroes, why do you think Lady An Yu likes Fang Zheng?"

"Why?"

"Hehe... because Shang Ya Zi is thin and weak, he has a ’weak’ lower body. But Fang Zheng is strong and energetic, every one of his ’strikes’ carries the all-out effort Gu’s vigor. The impact of the wild boar, the slamming of the brown bear, the twisting of the crocodile tail, the force of the horse, the stamina of the green bull, and the endurance of the stone turtle... Hehe, such a man, which lady would not like him?"

"Ohhh!" Immediately, many men understood.

Some girls squeezed their thighs together, their faces blushing as they were deep in their imaginations.

Lady An Yu’s head was lowered even further, thinking happily in her heart: "I’m on fire, I’m going to be famous!"

Just as the auction house was filled with rumors and guesses, Fang Yuan and Shang Ya Zi’s competition had reached eight hundred and ten thousand.

"Fang Zheng, with me here today, you are bound to lose. Give up, you are not my match." Shang Ya Zi laughed happily, he added ten thousand every single time to piss off Fang Yuan.

"You think I am afraid of you! It is merely eight hundred and ten thousand, so what." Fang Yuan snorted coldly.

"Young master, this is enough, we should stop now." A servant carefully observed and advised.

Shang Ya Zi hesitated: "I know. Fang Zheng is adamant on getting the bitter strength Gu! After he bids, I am going to bid once more, and stop. This idiot, spending more than eight hundred thousand to buy a bitter strength Gu, it is almost twice the market price. I can finally vent this anger, it feels so good. Hahaha!"

At this time, Fang Yuan continued.

"But this time, I shall let you off. You can have the bitter strength Gu."

Servant: "..."

Shang Ya Zi: "..."

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Chibi: "..."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Haha, I’m afraid Shang Ya Zi’s face is green now." In the ninth private room, Wei Yang laughed uncontrollably: "But brother Fang Zheng, is it really okay for you to not get the bitter strength Gu?"

Beside him, Shang Xin Ci gave Fang Yuan a look of concern.

Fang Yuan laughed: "I must get the bitter strength Gu no matter what, but I am not idiot, spending eight hundred and ten thousand primeval stones on a Gu. I would rather refine it myself, eight hundred and ten thousand... it is enough for many tries."

"The chances of failure is very high, it will harm your body brother Hei Tu." Shang Xin Ci expressed her worry.

Fang Yuan shook his head slowly, he had others plans for this, but he could not tell them.

"Heh! This Fang Zheng played Shang Ya Zi like a fool. He spent eight hundred and ten thousand on a bitter strength Gu." The spectators watched with shining eyes.

"Shang Ya Zi, that idiot, this is a disgrace to all of us young masters!" The Shang clan young masters were furious.

"To say the truth, Fang Zheng’s acting was superb, even I was fooled by him." Someone sighed.

" The person on the spot is baffled, the onlooker sees clearly. I knew something was amiss long ago." Someone claimed that he knew.

"Shang Ya Zi is so petty and enjoys revenge, thus he kept raising his bid. But Fang Zheng also failed to get the Gu he wanted, thus they were both losers. This is why you cannot bring feuds into the auction house." Ju Kai Bei thought in his heart.

"The real winner is the auction house."

"Ju clan must be overjoyed, one bitter strength Gu for eight hundred and ten thousand!"

Everyone discussed among each other.

But the truth is, they forgot one big winner.

That is, Lady An Yu who shot to fame.

Clink.

Shang Ya Zi smashed his cup on the ground, breaking it.

In fifth private room, the servants knelt on the ground, breathing as silently as they could.

Shang Ya Zi sat on his seat, breathing roughly as veins popped up on his forehead, his face flushing with rage.

He was tricked!

Eight hundred and ten thousand, spent on a bitter strength Gu he could not even use.

Shang Ya Zi felt his own heart bleeding!

The truth is, he was smart, after that setback, he learnt his lesson and became wiser. For the last two years, he worked hard and managed the shops very well.

But character decides your fate.

He was petty and spiteful, hatred made him lose his rationality, thus falling for Fang Yuan’s trap.

"Fang Zheng, Fang Zheng, if not for the poison vow Gu, I will definitely kill you, I will chop you into a million pieces!!!" Shang Ya Zi screamed in his heart.

The auction continued.

Fourteenth item, fifteenth, sixteenth... eighteenth... twenty-eighth...

Another climax occurred, as the atmosphere livened up, and people quickly forgot Fang Yuan and Shang Ya Zi’s conflict.

"The thirty-second item — rank four atmosphere Gu." The female Gu Master said.

Atmosphere Gu was shaped like a butterfly, having a pair of blue wings, each time it fluttered, there would be sparkling dust created in the air, it was a very attractive sight.

Atmosphere Gu was a unique Gu, it absorbed life energy and was born from the wind, it was a natural Gu. Up till now, no recipe master had been able to develop their recipe.

There were three types of recipe masters. Those that looked at the past, studying the ancient strength path, qi path and other Gu worms recipes, attempting to restore them. Some looked at the present, studying naturally formed Gu, attempting to produce their refinement recipe. And those who looked at the future, creating new and innovative refinement recipes from afresh.

Atmosphere Gu was not only created in a unique way, its use was also unique.

It could be used on a race or group, using an invisible force to create a habit or hobby that affected the entire group.

In ancient times, Gu Masters used it to deal with beast groups. If they were dealing with a group of steel needle boars, the Gu Master would use the atmosphere Gu and target them, giving them the habit of rubbing their skin on rocks.

The steel needle boar’s fur were like steel needles, it was offense and defense in one. After rubbing on the rocks, they would get damaged, and the Gu Masters would be able to deal with them easily.

But later, Gu Masters eventually realized that the atmosphere Gu was the perfect weapon in ruling tribes or clans.

Some clans lacked food, but loved to brew wine. After using the atmosphere Gu, they removed the habit of brewing wine, and they had more food to eat, allowing the clan to develop better.

The atmosphere Gu could not only be used to deal with internal habits, but also external.

In history, there was a very famous example.

Two clans were in conflict, the weaker one used the atmosphere Gu and caused the stronger clan’s women to have the interest to bind their foot.

The caused the women in this clan to become unable to carry out laborious tasks. The female Gu Masters also experienced a fall in strength, eventually the weaker clan overthrew and wiped them out.

At the end of the day, this was a Gu world, and there were all sorts of unimaginable Gu worms.

The female Gu Master introduced the Gu before saying: "Atmosphere Gu, base bid is two hundred and sixty thousand primeval stones."

"Three hundred thousand." Yi clan elder Yi Bu Hui bid first.

"Three hundred and fifty thousand." Fei clan elder Yan Luan Feng was equally tough.

"Three hundred and seventy thousand." A recipe master shouted.

"Three hundred and eighty thousand." Wei Yang spoke, he was in charge of Feng Yu Manor, he wanted to use this atmosphere Gu to make his subordinates work better.

"Five hundred thousand!" Fang Yuan shouted.

The crowd was silent.

Fang Yuan was silent for a while, but this voice made everyone recall, it was the person who tricked Shang Ya Zi previously.

"Five hundred thousand for an atmosphere Gu? Fang Zheng, you still want to con me? Do I look like an idiot!" Shang Ya Zi gritted his teeth, his eyes burning with rage.

He had just spent eight hundred and ten thousand primeval stones, if he spends another five hundred thousand, he would go bankrupt.

"Five hundred thousand, going once... twice... thrice... sold!" The female Gu Master announced.

Five hundred thousand was slightly above everyone’s budget, no one bid anymore.

The atmosphere Gu was effective on a clan or force, but had little use towards individuals, it made many people feel indifferent towards it.

"Brother Fang Zheng, you could’ve gotten this Gu for four hundred and sixty thousand." Wei Yang sighed.

Shang Xin Ci had a different interpretation: "No, considering Yi clan and Fei clan, those two elders might compete and raise the prices above this. Bidding five hundred thousand made both of them reluctant to bid, it was a good call."

"Four hundred and sixty thousand... five hundred thousand... it is only forty thousand more. Brother Wei, I will keep this Gu then." Fang Yuan waved his hand, not bothered by it.

"Why, don’t tell me you want to rebuild Gu Yue village?" Wei Yang was shocked, not expecting Fang Yuan to be interested in the Gu.

Earlier, he thought Fang Yuan was bidding for his sake.

"Of course I need this Gu, but the reason will have to kept secret for a while longer." Fang Yuan smiled, but did not elaborate.

"Hmph, acting secretive." Bai Ning Bing hated this side of Fang Yuan, she knew he was scheming again and kept her guard up.

After the atmosphere Gu, it was a set of eating wind Gu.

Thirty-eight eating wind Gu, grouped into one set and auctioned together.

Eating wind Gu was only rank two, but had a great use, it allowed the Gu Master to consume wind and fill their stomachs.

Ju clan was situated on top of Ju Feng mountain, they specialized in wind type Gu. The eating wind Gu was one of their specialties.

Time continued to pass.

Thirty-four... thirty-five... thirty-eight... forty-four...

Fang Yuan did not bid anymore, but Wei Yang tried once and successfully bought a light type Gu, getting what he wanted.

Bai Ning Bing also bid three times, eventually getting a rank three tornado Gu.

Just as Fang Yuan lost all his interest, the final forty-ninth item was displayed.

"This is the greatest treasure we have for this auction. It is not a Gu worm, and is not a precious refinement material, but it is a recipe." The female Gu Master introduced.

Next she added: "This recipe, because it is extremely precious, it has not been appraised yet.

This sentence made everyone curious.

Normally, precious refinement recipes would have to be appraised carefully. Because, once the recipe is handed to a recipe master to appraise, there is a danger of it leaking.

Recipe, recipe, it is best if less people know about it. A recipe that is known by everyone, is worth less than a blank piece of paper.

The female Gu Master was experienced, thus she did not speak but let everyone digest the information.

Seeing everyone deep in thought, but gathered their gaze on her once again, the female Gu Master smiled, throwing a bomb at them: "This recipe, is regarding the Heavenly Essence Treasure Monarch Lotus."

"Heavenly Essence Treasure Monarch Lotus? Did I hear wrongly!"

"Rank three Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, rank four Heavenly Essence Treasure Monarch Lotus, rank five Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus... This series of Gu worms are too famous, I can easily recite them."

"This is the Immortal Venerable Genesis Lotus’ core Gu. I heard whoever is able to refine the rank six Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus would be able to receive the Immortal Venerable Genesis Lotus’ inheritance ground!"

"To think Ju clan had such a treasure..."

The people in the auction house were bursting with excitement.

The female Gu Master continued: "Since everyone has an understanding of the heavenly essence treasure lotus, I shall not explain further. This is a recipe involving the refinement of the heavenly essence treasure monarch lotus. The starting bid is five hundred thousand!"

The price of the recipe was much higher than Gu worms.

The recipe of the rank four heavenly essence treasure monarch lotus was even more expensive than the monarch lotus itself.

Give a man a fish and you feed him for a day; teach a man to fish and you feed him for a lifetime. In theory, with the recipe, you will be able to create many heavenly essence treasure monarch lotus.

"Hold on, I have a question. Does this recipe require the heavenly essence treasure lotus as the refinement material?" Fang Yuan suddenly asked, shouting at the top of his lungs.

The female Gu Master’s expression changed, she did not want to answer, but Fang Yuan was the owner of a purple thorn token.

She had been avoiding this question, but did not expect Fang Yuan’s mind to be so astute, asking the most crucial question.

She had no choice but to confess: "Although in principle, we do not reveal the details of the recipe, but with Shang clan’s integrity, this recipe does indeed need the heavenly essence treasure lotus as the main ingredient."

Everyone gasped.

"The heavenly essence treasure lotus is needed as the main ingredient, where are we going to find one?"

"No wonder Ju clan did not refine the heavenly essence treasure monarch lotus despite having this recipe."

"What use does this have? We can’t do anything with it, this is too awkward."

"That was close, thankfully Fang Zheng asked that question."

"Mostly importantly, this recipe’s authenticity has not been appraised yet."

"This recipe was kept as a treasure by Ju clan, it definitely is something good. I will bid five hundred and twenty thousand." A recipe master bid.

Even so, the recipe regarding the heavenly essence treasure monarch lotus still had great attraction to some Gu Masters.

"Five hundred and fifty thousand."

"Five hundred and eighty thousand."

The bids went up, slower and slower, until it stopped at six hundred and sixty thousand.

"Six hundred and seventy thousand." Wei Yang was the last to bid, as he obtained this recipe eventually.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Atmosphere Gu just feels so ridiculously broken, just make your opponent suicidal... PS: Slight changes to the four great travel Gu in the previous chapter, props to ywdwb for pointing out.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

With Wei Yang’s successful bid of heavenly essence treasure monarch lotus’s recipe, the auction ended.

Ju clan was after all a clan which had stood for centuries; it possessed deep foundations. Many auction participants obtained something from their collection while others were able to experience new perspectives.

"It is rare for everyone to gather together, do not leave now, let me host a feast." Fang Yuan urged everyone to stay.

In a restaurant, there were all kinds of delicacies, fine food and liquor, placed on jade plates.

"Brother Fang Zheng, this is the recipe you wanted." After three cups of wine, Wei Yang took out a heart engraved Gu and gave to Fang Yuan.

Heart engraved Gu was like a ladybug and was finger sized. Its whole body was scarlet red, and on its round carapace were four white heart shaped spots.

Heart engraved Gu was a storage type Gu.

It was almost the same as bookworm; they were used to store information.

Heart engraved Gu was a series of Gu that could range from rank one to rank five. A rank one heart engraved Gu only had one white heart shaped spot on its carapace, while rank two had two and so on.

This heart engraved Gu Wei Yang took out had four spots which meant it was rank four.

But, using a rank four heart engraved Gu to store the recipe of heavenly essence treasure monarch lotus was also normal.

Fang Yuan had spent six hundred and seventy thousand primeval stones for this recipe. He had made Wei Yang bid to avoid suspicions.

Seeing this heart engraved Gu, Fang Yuan did not accept it but said: "Since Brother Wei Yang had already refined it, it will be better for you to use it now so that I do not have to refine it again."

"That works too." Wei Yang nodded his head and poured his primeval essence.

The heart engraved Gu turned into a thin flow of pink light with a soft crackling sound. Under Wei Yang’s control, the light flow entered Fang Yuan’s heart and disappeared instantly.

Immediately, a recipe appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind containing the method to refine heavenly essence treasure monarch lotus.

The main Gu worm for the fusion, all the supplementary materials, every step and every matter that needed attention was mentioned in it.

The contents could not be forgotten even if Fang Yuan wanted to forget them as if they were deeply imprinted into his heart. This was the ability of heart engraved Gu; granting a deep memory like it was etched into one’s bones and heart.

A feeling of happiness emerged in Fang Yuan’s heart: "I have heavenly essence treasure lotus but it is only rank three. It is still worth using now, but when I reach rank four, its use will immediately dwindle. Now that I have this recipe, if I can refine heavenly essence treasure monarch lotus in the future, it will no doubt be a great help to me."

Fang Yuan did not know heavenly essence treasure lotus’ recipe. Obtaining this recipe was an unexpected joy.

Although this recipe had yet to be appraised, with Fang Yuan’s plentiful experiences, he was able to give an initial judgement that the probability of this recipe being fake was very small. Otherwise, Shang clan would not have put it in the auction.

"But I still need some Gu to deduce it further and prevent any traps or errors."

"Now that I have bought this recipe, I am afraid some people have some thoughts about it. There will definitely be many people guessing if I have a heavenly essence treasure lotus."

"However, heavenly essence treasure lotus might be rare and precious, but it is not one of a kind and troublesome like the blood skull Gu. Otherwise, I would not be able to brazenly buy this recipe. Now, my Gu set assembly is nearing completion and with my cultivation breakthrough, I have fewer worries and there are not many problems in buying this recipe."

If it was before, Fang Yuan would not have bought this recipe so openly.

But now, he was only half a step away from rank three upper stage which he could reach in a few days.

After that, he would use white silver relic Gu and reach rank three peak stage!

His strength was completely different from when he first came, with the purple thorn token protecting him, plus most people were only guessing, the consequences were something he could accept.

"Calculating the time, Fang Zheng had already been in Shang clan city for over two years. His rapid development was really shocking. Heavenly essence treasure lotus..." Wei Yang thought while drinking wine, but did not speak out.

"Could it be Big Brother Hei Tu has heavenly essence treasure lotus?" Shang Xin Ci also inwardly guessed but did not ask.

On her first day of cultivation, Shang Yan Fei told her about the many taboos of Gu Masters. One of the taboos was to not casually inquire about the Gu worms other Gu Masters possessed.

To Gu Masters, their Gu were their butter and bread. It was their private matter, their secret and their trump card.

Once their Gu worms were exposed, it was very easy for others to target them.

Thus, among Gu Masters, it was a great taboo to ask what Gu worms the other held.

"Fang Yuan has heavenly essence treasure lotus, so he bought the recipe. This is understandable. But why did he give up bitter strength Gu to buy atmosphere Gu?"

Bai Ning Bing was sitting without speaking. She thought for a while but she could not see through Fang Yuan’s move.

"Sigh, it would have been good if I was able to become a young master. Shang clan young master has an opportunity to apply for three Gu worms every year from the clan and the clan will search for the Gu without any charge." Shang Xin Ci said with a sigh.

This was a great policy by Shang clan to nurture their young masters. As long as the requests were not absurd, Shang clan would gather its strength to get the Gu the young masters wanted.

If Shang Xin Ci became a young master, it would be as easy as flipping her palm to get a bitter strength Gu by borrowing the whole clan’s strength.

Fang Yuan had been searching for bitter strength Gu since long ago. One finally appeared in the auction, but Shang Ya Zi prevented him from obtaining it. Shang Xin Ci wanted to help Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan patted Shang Xin Ci’s shoulder and smiled: "It does not matter. Who knows, maybe that Shang Ya Zi might hand over the bitter strength Gu to me."

"Second brother spent eight hundred and ten thousand to buy that bitter strength Gu, he has already become a laughingstock due to it. Wanting him to hand it over of his own accord, I am afraid it would not be possible..." Shang Chi Wen shook her head from the side, thinking Fang Yuan was indulging in fantasy.

"Could it be Big Brother Hei Tu has already thought of a plan?" Shang Xin Ci’s eyes flashed with brilliance.

Wei Yang and others also looked over curiously.

Fang Yuan pointed at Bai Ning Bing, looking confident: "Everything is thanks to Ning Bing."

"Me?" Bai Ning Bing was stupefied.

"Speak quickly, what clever idea do you have?" Everyone could not help becoming more curious.

"You will find out in two to three days. Please wait till then." Fang Yuan laughed.

He then looked at Shang Xin Ci with a solemn expression: "Xin Ci, do you really want to become a young master? Becoming a young master means entering the political whirlpool and you will no longer have the freedom to act independently. You are now clearer of Shang clan’s situation than me. The competition between Shang clan young masters is very intense, the struggle is even more bloody. If you want to become a young master, you will fall into this dangerous conflict."

This was the most crucial of matters; Fang Yuan needed a clear answer.

If Shang Xin Ci did not have such an aspiration, there was no point in helping her.

Under Fang Yuan’s shining gaze, Shang Xin Ci smiled: "Big Brother Hei Tu, even now, do I really have freedom? I am also completely helpless in this."

"The whole journey to Shang clan city after joining the caravan was filled with untold dangers, I narrowly escaped death many times. I have reflected upon it; the world is an ocean and we are small boats on it. The small boats seem to be drifting freely with the flow, but most of them are helpless. Only with high cultivation and influence, can the small boat turn into a big boat and be able to resist the trials and hardships, to provide a safe area for the ones we care about."

Shang Xin Ci’s words were ordinary and did not seem to contain any passion, but everyone could feel a heroic emotion from her.

"Great. You have aspiration." Wei Yang laughed.

Shang Chi Wen also threw an amazed look.

She had interacted with Shang Xin Ci for a fairly long time now but had never expected the latter to conceal such grand aspirations under her gentle appearance.

"My missy is a genius in business, she is more than capable of being a Shang clan young master." Xiao Die stood behind Shang Xin Ci and interjected proudly.

"Xiao Die..." Shang Xin Ci was embarrassed as she gave Xiao Die a stare.

Xiao Die simply stuck out her tongue.

"Haha, she is right. In that case, both of us will lend you a hand and help you become Shang clan young master." Fang Yuan laughed loudly as he felt a relief.

It was not strange for Shang Xin Ci to have such an aspiration.

Poor children matured early, Shang Xin Ci’s childhood was not blessed as she was frequently bullied by her clansmen. She became clear of the cruelty of the world even more in the caravan due to her own negligible weak self. No matter how gentle the person was, they would still be greatly affected by such experiences.

However, Shang Xin Ci’s nature was kind, different from Fang and Bai. She wanted to become strong, not only for herself, but more for the happiness of the people around her.

"Hehehe, this year’s young master examination has already passed. Sister Xin Ci will have a chance in the coming year. But, the competition for the young master’s position is very intense. Lord father has a lot of children; while there is only one young master position available every year, the number of competitors can amount to hundreds." Shang Chi Wen chuckled and gave advice to Shang Xin Ci.

However, she disapproved of this in her heart.

Shang Xin Ci’s cultivation was very low, only at rank one upper stage now. Her aptitude also was not enough, not even having a B grade aptitude, so she did not have potential for development.

Her mother was from Zhang clan which had deep hatred against Shang clan. This was her greatest political disadvantage.

She was alone with no supporters, who would help her?

Her only advantage was that Shang Yan Fei doted on her. For her, Shang Yan Fei paid an enormous price, almost defying heaven, changing her hopeless aptitude into one which could cultivate. This was a treatment that none of his other children received.

However, this advantage was also a disadvantage in some aspect.

Shang Xin Ci was isolated. And even Shang Chi Wen was envious of her inwardly.

All these reasons made Shang Xin Ci unlikely to get the young master position, the chances were extremely slim.

Fang Yuan naturally was clear of these disadvantages. In his previous life, Shang Xin Ci became a young master only after six years. But things have changed, Shang Xin Ci was a lone force in his previous life, but in this life she has Fang Yuan’s help...

"Xin Ci, do not worry. With me helping you, there is no need for next year, I will help you become a young master this year!" Fang Yuan laughed loudly

"Then I will wait and see." Shang Chi Wen had a smile on her face while inwarding curling her lips in disdain, feeling that the more Fang Yuan spoke, the more unreasonable he became, boasting so wildly.

Wei Yang put down his wine cup: "Brother Fang Zheng, the competition for Shang clan’s young master position is not a small matter. As an elder of the clan, I cannot interfere in this."

"There is no need for Brother Wei Yang’s help. The plan had already been made two years ago, and it is all thanks to Ning Bing." Fang Yuan smiled.

"Eh?"

Instantly, the gazes of everyone concentrated on Bai Ning Bing.

Becoming the center of attention, Bai Ning Bing still maintained her indifferent expression, but doubts started rising in her mind and she could not help but curse secretly.

"What does this have to do with me?"

"Ning Bing, Ning Bing, calling my name so affectionately, does he really think our relation is that great!"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Yup, all thanks to her.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the blink of an eye, three to four days passed.

"Bitter strength Gu..." In the study room, Shang Ya Zi held the Gu in his hand, his eyebrows folding into a crease, as he had an overwhelming urge — to crush this Gu worm to death!

But he had to control himself.

This bitter strength Gu cost him eight hundred and ten thousand primeval stones, if he crushed it, his heart will ache.

Every time he looked at this Gu, Shang Ya Zi felt extremely gloomy.

He had an illusion that the bitter strength Gu was soundlessly mocking him, reminding him of his stupidity every single second!

At the auction a few days ago, he was tricked by Fang Yuan in front of everybody.

Right now, he was a laughing stock. Even his surrounding clansmen refused to meet him.

Nevermind if he was an idiot, but he was a Shang clan young master, such a deed brought shame to the entire Shang clan!

As a Shang clan young master, Shang Ya Zi’s every action represented Shang clan and carried its image. His performance at the auction was not only a humiliation to himself, but also dragged the pride and glory of his Shang clansmen through the mud.

As for Shang Yan Fei, he did not say a word regarding this matter.

But this made Shang Ya Zi feel even more uneasy.

"No, I must salvage my reputation. I have to make sure father looks at me in a different light, I must change my clansmen’s impression of me!" Shang Ya Zi gritted his teeth, deciding in his heart.

"Fang Zheng, you dare to oppose me, and played me like a fool. I will make sure you pay a terrible price!" His eyes shone with a dark sinister glow, flickering as he thought of ways to deal with Fang Yuan.

After this matter, his hatred towards Fang Yuan had reached a tipping point, it was hatred that seeped into his soul.

"Young master, young master, there is trouble!"

At this moment, a loyal servant came over, shouting in front of the study room.

"Why are you so frantic, is this the proper decorum? Get in here!" Shang Ya Zi scolded unhappily.

The room door was pushed open, as the servant kneeled on the floor, his face flushed with terror: "Young master, there is trouble. There’s a rumor going around, it has spread all over Shang clan city. It says that you and Fang Zheng had once competed for Lady An Yu but you lost to him. That resulted in a grudge between you two, thus you went to find trouble with Fang Zheng."

"Lady An Yu? That Qin Yan brothel’s prostitute? What rubbish is that." Shang Ya Zi curled his lips, laughing in disdain.

But the servant continued: "They are also saying, you had a secret deal with Fang Zheng in order to pass the yearly assessment, and... and faked the accounts."

"What?!" Shang Ya Zi heard this and howled, his expression changing. He jumped out of his seat, causing the brush and ink on his table to vibrate and fall.

The servant continued carefully but anxiously: "Young master, the rumor is so elaborate, they even have the transaction time, and the exact amount of the account is circulated. It seems the clan’s internal affairs hall has been alerted, and they are sending Gu Masters here to investigate the matter."

"Huh?!"

Shang Ya Zi was dumbfounded, as if lightning struck his brain.

At that instant, his face went pale, like blood drained out of his body.

His heart palpitated, his body went soft as he almost fell onto the ground. Holding on to the study table weakly, he propped himself up.

This impact was too quick, too heavy, too sudden!

"I’m finished, completely finished. Once the matter of the fake accounting is exposed, I will lose the position of young master. This violates the clan rules, even mother cannot protect me. There is no point in begging father either! Once I lose this position, there are countless people waiting to devour me."

As the crisis struck, Shang Ya Zi was extremely frightened, falling into a state of panic.

"How can such news circulate? I was completely careful during the deal, other than Fang Zheng, no other person knew. Impossible, it’s impossible..."

Shang Ya Zi muttered to himself as his expression was in a daze.

He was still too young, without any life-threatening dangers to train him, although he managed the shops for two years, and had good management skills, he only scratched the surface. Once a problem occurs, he becomes shocked and helpless.

...

Nan Qiu garden, the pavilion in the middle of the lake.

Light winds blew, causing small waves to form on the surface of the lake.

The lake was not big, the edges were made of stacked up rockery stones.

On the surface of the lake, there were large lotus leaves, connected together like a chain, the pink-white flowerbud had not opened yet. Gold and orange carps swam in the water, surfacing at times.

The pavilion was made of bricks and had a colorful roof and red pillars, it was obviously meticulously designed.

In the pavilion there was a chessboard, and two youngsters were playing.

One young man wore black clothing, his eyes dark like the abyss. The other was a female wearing white clothing, having silver hair and blue eyes, showing a cold expression.

It was Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing played for a bit, before looking outside at the lake: "This Shang Ya Zi is really stupid, his reaction speed is so slow. I sent out the rumor long ago, why hasn’t he come here yet?"

"No worries, I have instructed the guards to let him in, he will come." Fang Yuan smiled, showing his confidence of being in control of the situation.

After panicking, Shang Ya Zi would definitely suspect Fang Yuan. Thus, he would come over and investigate the situation, even if he had no suspicions, he would come to convince Fang Yuan to cover up for him, to survive this investigation by Shang clan.

Bai Ning Bing squinted her eyes, sighing: "Fang Yuan, I am really impressed, you actually managed to exploit this ’loophole’ in the poison vow Gu. You planned this from two years ago, didn’t you? Just waiting and enduring, until the time was ripe to activate this trap."

Fang Yuan smiled, playing his chess piece as he answered: "Shang Ya Zi is a petty man, he will definitely take revenge. Why would I leave such a threat around? I did not use this earlier because Shang Xin Ci just had arrived in Shang clan and did not have a foundation. Gone with Shang Ya Zi, and in comes Shang Xin Ci, that is beneficial to both of us."

Bai Ning Bing did not speak anymore, but her eyes were shining with blue light.

In her heart, she felt a chill.

Fang Yuan’s schemes came one after another, closely connected, once a person steps into it, it is like being in quicksand, trapped and helpless. The most shocking part was, he planned this two years ago after predicting this situation. Such foresight, it gave people chills, Shang Ya Zi was courting death by being enemies with him!

"Fang Zheng, where are you? Get out here now!" Shang Ya Zi’s furious screams finally came.

The pavilion on the lake was not concealed at all, after Shang Ya Zi was informed by the doorboy, he quickly found Fang and Bai.

"Fang Zheng, you still have the mood to play chess? Do you know how far the rumors have spread? Tell me, was this all done by you!" Shang Ya Zi came to the pavilion, pointing at Fang Yuan as he shouted furiously.

Fang Yuan turned his body around, speaking plainly: "If this was done by me, would I be alive? Shang Ya Zi, I can’t believe you are getting dumber and dumber. Did you forget that we used the poison vow Gu together?"

Shang Ya Zi snorted, his anger subsiding slightly. Fang Yuan was right, if he was the culprit, he would have been dead already. Now that he was sitting there safe and sound, it meant the rumors were not due to him.

But Fang Yuan’s next sentence sent him into pure rage.

"Although I did not create the rumor, my companion Bai Ning Bing did."

Shang Ya Zi was stunned, his relaxed face turned bright red, like a meteor entering the atmosphere.

An intense rage grew in his heart.

"It was you, it was done by you! You bitch, I am going to kill you!" He screamed, his eyes red with anger, as he stared at Bai Ning Bing like he was going to devour her. His aura was insane, like a leopard or wolf trying to attack its prey.

"Oh? You want to strike here? Attack me?" Bai Ning Bing slowly stood up, her absolutely stunning face was cold as ice, as her icy tone contained strong disdain: "I am rank three peak stage, I have never lost a single battle in the battle stage, and I possess the purple thorn token, do you really want to fight to the death with me?"

Shang Ya Zi’s facial muscles twitched, as he gritted his teeth, his eyes burning with fire as he stared fiercely at Bai Ning Bing.

He did not attack in the end.

He was rank three upper stage, and lived in an ivory tower all his life, he was not Bai Ning Bing’s match. At the same time, Bai Ning Bing had the purple thorn token, something Shang Yan Fei gave her personally.

"Fang Zheng, you went back on your word, you will die a painful death! How did she know our deal? No wait, you went back on your word, why are you still alive?! Did you find some way to disable the poison vow Gu?" Shang Ya Zi turned to look at Fang Yuan, feeling uncertain.

"No, no." Fang Yuan shook his head: "The poison vow was — You and I will keep it a secret, and we ’cannot divulge the information to an unknowing third party’. But before the poison vow Gu was used, I already told Bai Ning Bing this matter. Thus, she was a ’knowing third party’. The rumor was also not let out by me. It was all Bai Ning Bing’s effort. Thus, I did not violate the poison vow at all."

Shang Ya Zi opened his mouth wide, showing a dumbstruck expression.

Now that Fang Yuan mentioned it, the vow was indeed like this.

Then why did he not find out this loophole back then?

One, because of his mindset, he did not think Fang Yuan would tell Bai Ning Bing before they even discussed the issue. ’Cannot divulge the information to an unknowing third party’, just looking at this sentence, there was no problems.

Second was because he was the one who initiated the use of the poison vow Gu, Fang Yuan looked unprepared and caught off guard, but he had actually predicted it long ago and was just trying to numb Shang Ya Zi’s senses.

Third, Shang Ya Zi wanted to remain as a young master, and had no other ways. He was anxious and because the vow reciting was extremely painful, he could not think properly.

But now that he knew, it was already too late...

"Fang Zheng, you shameless scoundrel! You dare to trick me and deceive me like this! You are a despicable scum, so extremely despicable and shameless!"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Fang Yuan did nothing wrong.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Shang Ya Zi breathed raggedly, the more he scolded Fang Yuan the angrier he got.

"Ah!" He howled, no longer able to suppress his anger, and flipped the stone table.

The chess pieces were sent flying, and the table almost hit Fang Yuan’s leg, but he dodged in time.

Shang Ya Zi took three steps backwards, his head dizzy and two traces of blood flowed down his nose.

"Shang Ya Zi, I’d advise you to calm down. The poison vow states you cannot harm me. Thank me for dodging, if the stone table hit my leg, your injuries would be more severe." Fang Yuan laughed lightly.

"Ah! Fang Zheng, I will tear you to shred, I want to pull out your tendons, skin you alive and devour every drop of blood and piece of flesh you have!"

Fang Yuan’s smile became wider.

Bai Ning Bing frowned: "Shang Ya Zi, you had better shut up. If not, I’ll throw you out by force! You are a Shang clan young master now, but that does not mean you’ll stay one for long. You are finished now, the internal affairs hall has started investigating, you do not have many days left here."

Her words were like a bucket of cold water pouring on Shang Ya Zi.

That’s right, he was going to lose his young master position! Saving his position was the crucial thing!

But how could he save it?

Whoever started the trouble should end it, he had to look at the source. He could only ally with Fang Yuan, to announce his innocence and deny any acts of fake accounting.

In fact, his original intent in coming to Nan Qiu garden was to find Fang Yuan to collude with him!

Shang Ya Zi felt a disgusting sickness in his heart as he thought about it.

"These two scoundrels, they are the culprits in causing my situation! I want to eat their flesh and drink their blood, but now I have to beg them to cooperate with me?"

Shang Ya Zi could not accept such an ending, his heart could not take it.

Fang Yuan observed his expression, and saw Shang Ya Zi in turmoil, thus he said: "Shang Ya Zi, I am actually a kind person, I always repay kindness with gratitude and hatred with revenge. If you did not find trouble with me multiple times, caused trouble for me secretly, even going to the extent of snatching the bitter strength Gu from me at the auction, why would I find trouble with you?"

"I admit, the poison vow did contain a loophole. But it has been two years since I came to Shang clan city. Have you seen me use it? If it was not you who went overboard, why would we reach such a state? All of these problems were single-handedly caused by you. I told the guards to let you in because I want you to know — your Shang clan is strong and I cannot afford to offend it, but you are just a young master, I am not afraid of going against you. Leave, I do not wish to make your life harder."

" Loosening the reins to grasp them better ... what beautiful words." Bai Ning Bing glanced at Fang Yuan, a cold ridicule showing in her eyes.

But Shang Ya Zi did not leave.

He stood on the spot, motionless like a wooden pole.

His expression was constantly changing, turning pale and green alternatively, sometimes he looked ruthless while at times he frowned in deep thought. In no time his forehead was full of sweat, as he had evidently fallen into great conflict with himself.

Fang Yuan’s words made Shang Ya Zi realize that their relationship had not reached the worst stage yet, there was a chance to salvage the situation.

It also reminded him that the bitter strength Gu was the reason for this.

"To protect my young master position, I have to make sure Fang Zheng cooperates with me. Cooperate..." Shang Ya Zi gritted his teeth, thinking of the bitter strength Gu.

"Do I really give it to him? I spent eight hundred and ten thousand on this!"

"What would others think of me if I give it to him? They might laugh their socks off!"

"But if I don’t, how can I show my sincerity? How could I salvage our relationship?"

"I am indignant, in the end, I bought the Gu just for his sake! This is the biggest humiliation of my life!"

"Because of Fang Zheng, I spent eight hundred and ten thousand to buy a bitter strength Gu, causing everyone to mock me. Now, I have to hand the Gu over to him, isn’t this just pathetic?"

"No, the bitter strength Gu is not the point, what’s important is protecting my young master position. Without it, I am nothing, I will have nothing..."

In a short period of time, Shang Ya Zi considered his options, thinking until his ear were buzzing.

Fang Yuan knew it was time when he saw that pale face, dazed look, and swaying body.

"Shang Ya Zi, we told you to leave, why are you still here? Forget it, you pitiful soul, I do not want to bully you. Let’s go Bai Ning Bing, I heard Ju Kai Bei and Yan Tu are fighting in the battle stage today. If we want to dominate the battle stage, we need to battle them, this is a good opportunity to learn about them." Fang Yuan sent a signal towards Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing stood up and pretended to leave, just as she took two steps, Shang Ya Zi spoke.

"Please stay here." His voice was coarse.

As he spoke, he called out the bitter strength Gu, and held it out with shaking arms.

"Fang Zheng, it was my fault earlier. This is the bitter strength Gu as an apology." As he said this, Shang Ya Zi felt extremely reluctant, but he got used to it as he spoke, and towards the end, Shang Ya Zi felt the huge burden lifted off his shoulders.

"This is the bitter strength Gu?" Bai Ning Bing stopped her steps, taking a glance.

This bitter strength Gu was like a beetle. A small body and large body, it’s body was oval and palm-size. Its body was yellow brown, and had an uneven surface, as lumps grew on its back.

"He handed over the bitter strength Gu as expected, Fang Yuan must be overjoyed now huh?" Bai Ning Bing sighed in her heart, Fang Yuan’s grasp at human behavior was way beyond her level.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, but said: "Shang Ya Zi, I know what you mean, but do you think I can’t survive without the bitter strength Gu? Although it is hard to refine, if I persevere, I will eventually obtain it. Do you think you can create problems for me when you feel like it, then reconcile when you need to? Fighting when you want to, making peace when you feel like it, is this world such an easy place? I, Gu Yue Fang Zheng, have my own dignity, are you trying to humiliate me?"

"You are mistaken." Shang Ya Zi quickly explained.

Fang Yuan snorted.

Shang Ya Zi elaborated anxiously: "I, Shang Ya Zi, swear, from today onwards, I will not create problems for you. The two of us can become good alliance mates, fighting among ourselves will only entertain outsiders. Other than the bitter strength Gu, I can make other compensations. Primeval stones, Gu worms, Gu refinement material, I am in charge of the shops, I can give them to you."

"Is that so..." Fang Yuan’s expression relaxed.

Shang Ya Zi continued urging.

Bai Ning Bing became an outsider, watching this speechlessly.

Shang Ya Zi not only took out the bitter strength Gu, begging Fang Yuan to take it, but also had to compensate other materials.

But she knew that he was just trying to get over this crisis. Shang Ya Zi was a petty man, he would definitely take revenge in the future.

"I’ll keep the bitter strength Gu, I need time to think about it." Eventually, Fang Yuan did not make a decision.

But this was enough for Shang Ya Zi to rejoice.

He thought that Fang Yuan was too proud and was trying to make use of the situation to ask for more compensation.

"I’ll agree to all of them, in the future, I’ll make sure you die horribly!" Vicious thoughts appeared in Shang Ya Zi’s mind, as he smiled even more sincerely.

"Brother Fang Zheng, I am very sincere. Please do not take too long to consider, the internal affairs hall’s investigation will be held these few days. Without the young master position, I would not be able to compensate you."

Fang Yuan nodded, no longer talking.

Shang Ya Zi left in a better mood, as Fang Yuan look at him from behind, he said to Bai Ning Bing: "Okay, you can go report the case at the internal affairs hall already."

Bai Ning Bing nodded, thinking: Tonight, I must go back and reread the vow I made with Fang Yuan, word by word!

...

A few days later.

In the study room, a sigh was echoing.

Shang Yan Fei placed his paperwork down expressionlessly.

The content was sent from internal affairs hall, involving Shang Ya Zi’s fake accounting case.

Such a thing, it was okay to do it secretly. But once exposed, how could the clan tolerate it?

Shang Ya Zi was Shang Yan Fei’s second son, the sigh earlier was a father’s disappointment in his son.

"Revoke his young master status and punish him to join the slave capturing group, he is not to return here for three years." Shang Yan Fei raised his brush and wrote the punishment for Shang Ya Zi.

He is the Shang clan leader, because of this identity, he had to represent the entire clan. His every action and word had considerable consequence.

"Fang Zheng, Bai Ning Bing..." Shang Yan Fei’s eyes were glowing with a bright light.

After settling Shang Ya Zi’s case, this matter was not over.

Shang Ya Zi was a young master of Shang clan, but was schemed by two young outsiders, this was not respecting Shang clan, and him Shang Yan Fei!

"Hmph, Shang Ya Zi is after all my second son, is my son someone you guys can just toy with?"

Although Fang and Bai had once saved Shang Xin Ci, family was still family, in Shang Yan Fei’s heart, his bloodline was closer.

Thus, he willed.

A bright red paper crane Gu flew out.

"Scheming against my son, as his father, I will have to take revenge for him! This is the punishment for you two, but it is also a test." Shang Yan Fei muttered.

The paper crane Gu's speed was extremely fast, entering a secret room.

"The clan leader has sent a letter!"

"Clan leader wants us to forcefully challenge Fang Zheng and Bai Ning Bing?"

In the secret room, there were two people.

One was tall as a tower, the other was thin like a matchstick, both of them looked at this letter and each other wordlessly.

It was the rank four Gu Masters Ju Kai Bei and Yan Tu!

Weren't they at odds?

If outsiders saw them sitting peacefully together, discussing matters, their jaws might drop.

Both of them were rank four initial stage, dominating the battle stage as they competed against each other. They both swore that they will not leave the battle stage unless they defeat the other.

But the truth is, they were Shang Yan Fei's secret pawn pieces.

Shang clan had rules, any Gu Master who dominates the battle stage, and reach Wei Yang's level, would be promoted to an external clan elder in Shang clan.

Ju Kai Bei and Yan Tu were Shang Yan Fei's way of controlling the battle stage!

Translator's Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Expecting our righteous Fang Yuan to collude with you and lie to the clan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Nan Qiu garden, secret room.

The room was covered with darkness, the only source of light was a thin ray of starlight that was flowing like water towards the center of the room.

At the center, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were sitting cross-legged on mats. Bai Ning Bing's palms were placed on Fang Yuan's back; she was transferring rank three peak stage snow silver primeval essence to Fang Yuan.

It was completely silent in the secret room.

However, in Fang Yuan's heart, waves continued to surge.

Rumble!

A snow silver waterfall - chilly and majestic - came crashing down into Fang Yuan’s primeval sea from his aperture.

It was the rank three peak stage snow silver primeval essence that had gone through bone flesh unity Gu.

Rank three Gu Master’s primeval essence was silver. Initial stage primeval essence only had a thin layer of silver color, thus was called light silver primeval essence. Middle stage had varying amounts of silver color; some a lot and some little, thus was called blossom silver primeval essence.

Upper stage primeval essence was shining silver thus was called bright silver primeval essence.

Peak stage primeval essence was snow white silver, a magnificent sight, and was called snow silver primeval essence.

Right now, Fang Yuan was using snow silver primeval essence as the primary force and blossom silver primeval essence as supplementary; under his control, they formed surging waves and continually cleansed the aperture walls.

The aperture that was originally a water membrane, with light flowing as water, was shaking. After the cleansing process went for a while, the quantitative change accumulated to become a qualitative change; light poured out of the water membrane and just like water freezing into ice, it no longer moved, settling down to form stone membrane.

The stone membrane was radiant and glorious, and was even thicker and more stable than the water membrane.

With the formation of stone membrane, Fang Yuan advanced from rank three middle stage to rank three upper stage.

Building a stable foundation, success will come naturally.

Since the cultivation was finished, Bai Ning Bing slowly withdrew her hands, her blue pupils fluctuating with emotions.

With her help, Fang Yuan’s cultivation had advanced rapidly and was finally catching up with her step-by-step.

She knew Fang Yuan still had a white silver relic Gu on him. He had not used it and was saving it for this moment.

That is to say, after tonight, Fang Yuan’s cultivation would advance to rank three peak stage, at the same level as her.

"This guy is a cunning fox and is extremely treacherous. Although I haven’t found any flaws in the poison vow, that doesn’t mean there are no flaws within the poison vow." Bai Ning Bing was silent but her thoughts kept on moving rapidly.

Shang Ya Zi’s downfall was a grim reminder.

The mental pressure Fang Yuan was giving her was becoming bigger and bigger, and now she was starting to have some doubts.

"Don’t worry, I am sincere in cooperating with you. There are no problems with the poison vow." As if he knew what Bai Ning Bing was thinking, Fang Yuan suddenly opened his mouth.

"Hmph." Having her thoughts exposed, Bai Ning Bing’s eyes revealed a trace of chill and said with cold irony, "I hope so."

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh, he had already expected Bai Ning Bing’s reaction when he planned against Shang Ya Zi.

Everything had its merits and demerits.

Now, Shang Ya Zi was removed from his position, leaving a young master’s seat vacant and gave an opportunity for Shang Xin Ci to advance. However, this created a crack in Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing’s collaboration.

At the same time, it also forced Shang Yan Fei to make his move.

Just yesterday, Ju Kai Bei and Yan Tu had issued forced challenge towards Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing at the same time.

Once the news spread, it immediately caused a huge commotion in the battle stage and attracted countless people’s attention.

Ju Kai Bei and Yan Tu were both rank four initial stage Gu Masters and were also called ’half the sky of the battle stage’. With two ’half skies’ cooperating, they became the entire sky.

These nicknames gave a clear description of their status and strength.

Fang and Bai were the two rising stars of the battle stage. They were dazzling, winning all their matches without a single loss. Such strength was rarely seen in the battle stage even in the past.

Ju Kai Bei and Yan Tu were the two heroes of battle stage, standing proudly at the summit. These few years, there were many Gu Masters who wanted to stand out and become an external elder of the Shang clan, but they were stopped by these two and lost their hopes of advancing.

But now, these two jointly challenged Fang and Bai, naturally making everyone curious and also doubtful.

Someone said Fang and Bai were advancing too strongly, causing the seniors Ju Kai Bei and Yan Tu to feel uneasy and thus they were going to eliminate this problem early. Another said, Ju and Yan made a bet, and were using Fang and Bai to determine victory or defeat.

Almost no one thought Fang and Bai had the chance of winning against these two.

The formidable strength of Ju Kai Bei and Yan Tu was already deeply engraved in people’s hearts. Even more importantly; one side was rank four Gu Masters, while the other side was rank three Gu Masters. There was a huge difference between their levels.

As Gu Master advance to higher ranks, the difference between each realm gets bigger and fighting across ranks become extremely difficult.

....

From behind, there was the sound of Bai Ning Bing standing up.

"Tomorrow is the match between you and Yan Tu, how are your preparations going, do you need my heavenly essence treasure lotus? According to our vow, I will do my best to help you." Fang Yuan slowly spoke from the darkness.

"No need." Bai Ning Bing coldly replied.

Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged, he said without turning around: "You are really confident."

"So what if he is rank four? In these two years, you are not the only one who improved." Bai Ning Bing turned around and left.

Heavenly essence treasure lotus was Fang Yuan’s, it would not represent Bai Ning Bing’s true strength.

She wanted to check her progress using the match with Yan Tu.

The door to the secret room opened and closed.

After Bai Ning Bing left, the corner of Fang Yuan’s lips slightly raised into a smile.

"Rejecting heavenly essence treasure lotus... it seems a trace of self-doubt has grown in her heart. This insecurity is very small, maybe she herself might not be aware of it. Bai Ning Bing, you are still too inexperienced..."

Fang Yuan muttered before organizing his cluttered thoughts.

He took out white silver relic Gu.

This Gu was like a round pearl and was white silver in color, with a size of a finger.

Since rebirth, Fang Yuan had seen it once on Qing Mao mountain. It was during the Jia clan’s caravan, the white silver relic Gu was priced at fifty thousand primeval stones, it was an unattainable dream for Fang Yuan at that time.

The series of Relic Gu were extremely expensive. After all, with one use, they could raise a Gu Master’s cultivation by a small realm, saving a lot of time and energy. At the same time, they provided a stable foundation and did not have any side-effects.

Gu worms were bought to be used.

Fang Yuan did not have any hesitation in activating white silver relic Gu; immediately, dazzling and magnificent lights shone upon the aperture walls.

About four hours later, Fang Yuan had leaped from rank three upper stage to rank three peak stage.

"Since rebirth, I have once again reached rank three peak stage!" Fang Yuan’s eyes shone brilliantly and he could not help but clench his fists, his heart surged with emotions and joy.

It was different from the time on Qing Mao mountain, Fang Yuan had used stone aperture Gu at that time and paid a disastrous price of losing his future prospects to advance to rank three peak stage.

This time, Fang Yuan advanced to rank three peak stage while retaining his enormous potential for development. After all, he has A grade aptitude now.

Looking at the Spring Autumn Cicada.

After recuperating for over two years, its condition was recovering at a rapid speed.

Its withered body was gradually becoming glossy. The wings that were dried up like dead leaves, now had a layer of green that was full of life energy.

Its recovery naturally caused great pressure on Fang Yuan’s aperture.

However, compared to the previous time, Fang Yuan’s cultivation was rising rapidly because of Bai Ning Bing and bone flesh unity Gu, his rank three peak stage aperture was still enough to bear this pressure.

The situation had been truly pressing back at Qing Mao mountain, but now Fang Yuan was handling this with ease.

"But I cannot relax yet. Spring Autumn Cicada’s recovery gets faster and faster. My cultivation speeds needs to surpass it, otherwise the same situation will happen again."

Time quietly passed and soon it was the next day.

The audiences were all waiting for the battle between Bai Ning Bing and Yan Tu.

There were green grass all over this super-size battle stage.

This was a grass terrain and was very commonly seen at Northern Plains.

A crowd of spectating Gu Masters had formed a circle around the battle stage, all of their gazes landing on the two protagonists on the battle stage.

The match had not started but the people were already commenting.

"Everything is against Bai Ning Bing this time!"

"Facing Lord Yan Tu, she is certain to lose."

"She is as beautiful as a fairy, it really makes people sympathize with her. Just thinking about her suffering a defeat breaks my heart into pieces..."

In the course of over a year, Bai Ning Bing had earned an impressive reputation, receiving strong publicity. Her appearance and temperament that was like a snow fairy got her a huge amount of attention.

On the stage, Bai Ning Bing and Yan Tu stood opposite each other.

Yan Tu was an old man and had a head full of unkempt and long hair.

He was thin like a stick and his legs were bare. Whether it was his fingernails or toenails, they had not been cut for a long time and were long and crooked.

He was wearing rags and had a hunched back, like an old beggar on the roadside.

"Hehehe, little girl you have such smooth skin, you are really beautiful." Yan Tu sized up Bai Ning Bing and said with a hoarse voice.

Wearing a white robe, the blue pupils and silver hair Bai Ning Bing immediately frowned, killing intent filling her heart: "Old geezer, stop your shamelessness."

"Little girl, you have no manners." Yan Tu laughed dryly, his ten fingers rubbing each other: "It seems I have to teach you how important it is to respect your seniors."

"Pointless banter." Bai Ning Bing had a cool expression, her gaze cold as ice as she stared at Yan Tu, her every movement containing vigorous fighting spirit.

Ding.

The sound of the bell signalled the start of the match.

Icicle Gu!

Fire pellet Gu!

Almost at the same time, Bai Ning Bing and Yan Tu made their moves.

Four white icicles and three balls of fire pellets shot towards one another.

Bang.

An icicle and a fire pellet collided in midair; the icicle melted, but the fire pellet still flew towards Bai Ning Bing, just that its power had greatly fallen.

Bai Ning Bing’s icicle Gu was only rank two, while Yan Tu’s fire pellet Gu was rank three.

Naturally, fire pellet was a notch above the icicle.

"I can only suppress the fire pellet if I use ice explosion Gu to detonate the icicles. However, my primeval essence will be greatly expended if I do that. This battle had just started..."

Bai Ning Bing’s blue pupils flashed with an eerie light.

She jumped agilely and dodged the fire pellets, causing them to miss their target.

At the same time, she waved her hand.

Whooshh.

Three icicles flew towards Yan Tu.

Yan Tu gave a dry laugh, he took a step forward and twisted his body, dodging the icicles with a weird body posture as he began running at the same time.

His index finger repeatedly pointed and balls of fire pellets formed into a dense attack as they engulfed Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing coldly snorted; not to be outdone, she also repeatedly stomped and struck back with icicles.

For a moment, the two kept on contesting against each other while running around the big grassland. Icicles and fire pellets flew, the two dodged and attacked without stopping.

The match had just begun but its intensity had already surpassed everyone’s expectations.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Snow fairy vs old dry twig, guess who wins?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Time slowly passed, the spectators were gradually moved by the match.

"To think Bai Ning Bing is actually so strong, being able to fight so evenly against Lord Yan Tu."

"She is using rank two icicle Gu against Yan Tu, but isn’t at a disadvantage."

"Being able to use Gu worms to attack properly while moving is basic in Gu Master battles, but Bai Ning Bing is executing it perfectly."

"No doubt, Bai Ning Bing is a genius and her foundation is also extremely sturdy. No wonder, she has not been defeated till now."

Fang Yuan was among the crowd and was watching the match calmly.

Wei Yang and Shang Xin Ci had also come, and were standing beside him.

The three were in disguise, hiding among the crowd.

"Bai Ning Bing is fighting very forcefully. Even though she is using icicle Gu, once the numbers of icicles go up, her primeval essence consumption will also go up." Wei Yang was worried.

"There is a difference between the primeval essence of rank three and rank four. But Yan Tu is similarly using fire pellet Gu and his primeval essence is also continuously depleting. He might be rank four but he only has B grade aptitude. Bai Ning Bing is using the primeval essence recovery speed of her A grade aptitude to contend Yan Tu’s rank four cultivation." Fang Yuan understood Bai Ning Bing’s battle tactic with one glance.

"If that is so, then this will be an uphill battle for Bai Ning Bing." Shang Xin Ci exclaimed.

Now, she was also a Gu Master. With Shang Yan Fei’s careful teachings, her vision was expanded and she could see through a lot of things.

As the three conversed, the situation on the battle stage suddenly took a turn.

"Little girl, you really like jumping around." Yan Tu’s lips curled into a smile that did not resemble a smile. He suddenly raised his right hand and grabbed towards Bai Ning Bing from dozens of steps away.

As his right hand made a clawing motion, the imprint of a Gu worm on his palm flashed.

Whoosh!

There was the sound of flames blazing and in a blink of an eye, a giant fiery claw formed and flew towards Bai Ning Bing.

The giant claw only had three fingers, looking like an eagle’s claw, except it was orange-red. Flames were scorching and even before the claw reached her, Bai Ning Bing could already feel the intense heat.

This was a rank three fiery claw Gu!

Bai Ning Bing immediately used her movement Gu to increase her speed and pull apart some distance between them.

She had already inquired about the information on Yan Tu and made preparations. She knew this fiery claw’s attack range was smaller than fire pellets; it could only move several meters away from Yan Tu.

However, Yan Tu cackled and used his movement Gu as well, quickly closing in on Bai Ning Bing.

His movement Gu was rank four and had superior effects compared to Bai Ning Bing’s. Thus, not only was Bai Ning Bing not able to widen their distance, Yan Tu was getting closer instead.

The fiery claw continuously descended on her and made grabbing motions.

It was difficult for Bai Ning Bing to evade the fiery claw as it was quick and stable under Yan Tu’s skilled manipulation.

Bai Ning Bing’s situation was becoming more miserable as she repeatedly rolled on the grassland.

Boom.

The fiery claw brushed past Bai Ning Bing’s shoulder and fell on the grassland, immediately setting that part of the grassland on fire. The flames blazed furiously and started spreading.

Yan Tu willed it and the fiery claw once again rose from within the flames, it was just that it looked less threatening than when it had just been summoned.

However, with a slight decrease in Yan Tu’s primeval sea level, the fiery claw instantly regained its splendor, wiping away all sluggishness.

Frost arrow Gu!

Bai Ning Bing regained her footing and stretched out her little finger; frost arrow Gu was residing in it and had formed a blue tattoo.

A ball of icy blue vapor condensed.

In a blink of an eye, the frost vapor formed into an arrow.

The arrow struck the fiery claw and suppressed its imposing flames.

Frost arrow Gu was a rank four Gu bought by Bai Ning Bing during the auction. It immediately established its dominance once used.

The fiery claw looked like it was about to be extinguished; Yan Tu slightly furrowed his brows, then without considering the expenditure, he poured in primeval essence and the fiery claw showed signs of recovering.

However, how could Bai Ning Bing let him do as he wanted?

Whoosh whoosh whoosh

She activated icicle Gu and at the same time, secretly activated ice explosion Gu.

Bang , the icicles exploded as they struck the fiery claw. The violent explosion completely extinguished the fiery claw.

Fiery claw Gu flew back, Yan Tu did not want to lose it so he immediately took several steps and used his hand to catch the fiery claw Gu as it turned back into an imprint.

Bai Ning Bing did not miss this chance; she formed two long ice blades, dual wielding them as she slashed towards Yan Tu.

Before the blades reached his body, Yan Tu felt the intense killing intent blowing at his face like an icy wind.

"That’s a good blade!" Yan Tu gave a weird smile and then suddenly snorted, two fiery snakes flew out of his nose.

The fiery snakes were initially only the size of a necklace but rapidly expanded, and in the blink of an eye, changed into two large pythons that were several meters long and had the width of a bucket.

A fiery snake moved ahead in front of Bai Ning Bing and blocked Bai Ning Bing’s two blades; while the other fiery snake wriggled around from the side to the back of Bai Ning Bing and started its attacks.

"They appeared, Lord Yan Tu’s twin snake attack!"

"Sigh, I was defeated by this move."

"Yan Tu’s control over the two snakes is really exquisite; the opponent is left unable to defend against both, they are really difficult to deal with."

The blazing snakes caused an uproar in the audience.

Bai Ning Bing’s expression was solemn, the fighting intent in her blue pupils gathered into ice. The fiery snakes gave her a tremendous pressure, but this instead stimulated her fighting spirit even further.

Bai Ning Bing wielded her two blades and fought the two fiery snakes while Yan Tu stood outside the range of the battle and manipulated the snakes.

Yan Tu was able to use his mind to do three tasks at once; although he was only controlling two fiery snakes now, the movement was exquisite and the control was precise, this instead caused him to expend more of his mental energy.

Fiery snake Gu was a rank four Gu and under the pincer attack from two rank four Gu, Bai Ning Bing was slowly falling into a disadvantage.

She was finding it more and more difficult to defend against the attacks, after all her movement Gu and defensive Gu were not outstanding.

Bai Ning Bing was an offense type Gu Master and her Gu set placed attack as the main priority, while movement and defense were on the weaker side.

There was nothing she could do about this.

Gu Master’s primeval essence had a limit and was not infinite. Thus, one needed to allocate the use of their primeval essence properly. Bai Ning Bing proportioned most of her primeval essence into the attack aspect while the primeval essence left for movement and defense were relatively lower.

Because of this, the movement Gu and defensive Gu she assembled were the Gu which consumed less primeval essence.

The Gu worms that consumed less primeval essence were naturally slightly less effective. After all, you get what you pay for.

"These two fiery snakes are restricting Bai Ning Bing’s options. Just look, if the fiery snakes gets damaged from Bai Ning Bing’s attacks, Yan Tu will just expend his primeval essence and heal them. It won’t be good if this continues." Wei Yang stood beside the stage, his brows furrowed.

Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed, he didn’t speak but was looking forward to Bai Ning Bing’s response.

Bai Ning Bing suddenly burst out with attacks.

She used frost breath Gu and frost arrow Gu one after another.

The continuous frost aura slowed and restrained the fiery snakes’ offense.

However, this barrage of attacks sharply increased her primeval essence expenditure.

"Little girl, stop struggling." Yan Tu laughed and shot out balls of fire pellets.

Some of these fire pellets shot towards Bai Ning Bing, forcing her to dodge and waste her energy. The other pellets shot towards the fiery snakes and fused into them, causing the weakened fiery snakes to become even more vigorous.

This was the combination battle tactic of fire pellet Gu and fiery snake Gu.

Yan Tu had refined and perfected this tactic after having gone through hundreds of battles at the battle stage.

Compared to him, although Bai Ning Bing had the talent, was smart and had high comprehension, the time she had spent was too short and did not have as much accumulated experience as Yan Tu.

Bai Ning Bing wanted to make explosive attacks and defeat the two fiery snakes, but this was seen through by Yan Tu and he immediately struck back, twarting Bai Ning Bing’s attempt and displaying his shrewdness as well as his experience.

"How is she going to deal with this?" Wei Yang’s brows were tightly knitted.

"The situation is not looking good..." Shang Xin Ci also slowly analyzed the match.

Bai Ning Bing’s dark blue pupils flashed with a decisive light.

Ice crystal Gu!

She used her vital Gu, her true trump card!

She had not intended to use it this early, but she could do nothing about it; since the match started, besides the deadlock at the start, Yan Tu was gradually gaining the initiative and suppressing her.

Bai Ning Bing was an attack type Gu Master, if she wanted to take back the initiative, she had to increase her offense even more!

Creak...

Bai Ning Bing’s whole body emitted creaking sounds like water freezing into ice.

In a blink of an eye, she changed into a humanoid ice crystal. Her body slightly expanded and her silver hair was covered with frost, becoming rigid. Ice crystals spread towards the two ice blades, making them sharper, colder and even more firm.

"Oh, little girl, you’re going all out now?" Yan Tu spoke but soon his smile froze on his face.

Bai Ning Bing’s whole body turned into ice crystals and had no more hesitation as her attack and defense had integrated into one. She directly charged through the fiery snakes’ attacks, heading towards Yan Tu.

To shoot a horseman, first shoot his horse. To catch bandits, first catch their ringleader.

Yan Tu immediately mobilized another fiery snake and blocked Bai Ning Bing.

Frost breath Gu.

Bai Ning Bing breathed out blue frost.

In her ice form, the frost aura that she breathed out was of a higher level.

The fiery snake immediately shrunk from this frost breath aura.

Bai Ning Bing continued to charge towards Yan Tu: "Old man Yan Tu, come fight with me if you have guts!"

Yan Tu turned grave, he did not specialize in close combat. Bai Ning Bing’s might was awe-inspiring, he would definitely be in trouble if he fought with her in close combat.

He might be at rank four and walked the powerful fire path, but Yan Tu’s fighting style was hit-and-run and because of his shrewd nature, he was not incited by Bai Ning Bing’s remarks and started retreating with his movement Gu.

Bai Ning Bing’s heart sank.

Her body had turned into that of ice crystals, so her movement Gu was less effective than before.

She would have to slow down Yan Tu if she wanted to catch up to him.

Thereupon, Bai Ning Bing repeatedly shot out frost arrows; the cold, frosty aura of the frost arrows had the effect of freezing muscles and blood, thus slowing down the target’s movement.

However, Yan Tu easily dodged with his superb technique; none of the frost arrows landed on him.

The frost arrows could not hit Yan Tu, causing the distance between Bai Ning Bing and him to become larger.

Yan Tu laughed coldly, he felt no embarrassment while being chased by a junior.

He made the best judgement.

Ice crystal Gu could not be used frequently; if it was used for longer periods of time, it could cause the user to completely change into ice crystal and become an ice sculpture.

Thus, Bai Ning Bing used vitality Gu at the same time as ice crystal Gu, to maintain her life force.

However, even vitality Gu could only prolong the time the ice crystal Gu could be used.

Yan Tu knew this clearly. Bai Ning Bing had investigated him, he had also investigated Bai Ning Bing. As long as he prolonged this match, victory would be his for certain.

Although such a method did not display even a little of the dominance of fire path Gu Masters, this was no doubt the most optimal tactic.

Bai Ning Bing stopped.

"I am not able to strike this old guy, only that move can change the situation now."

Her eyes flashed with a trace of hesitation.

"Should I use this move or not?"

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

The move called cliffhanger.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bai Ning Bing hesitated for only a second before her blue eyes shone with decisive light.

"Ice blade storm, reappear once more." Bai Ning Bing sighed softly.

She raised her arms, sharp ice blades acting as an extension of her arms.

Her ice crystal form gave a grim domineering aura. Vitality Gu gave out a warm current and flowed through her heart, liver and other organs, maintaining a part of her life force and preventing Bai Ning Bing from completely turning into ice crystal.

Vitality Gu had another advantage, that is once activated, it turned into a warm current filled with vitality and moved by itself. There was no need consciously control it.

Swirl Gu!

Tornado Gu!

Bai Ning Bing successively used these two Gu.

Swirl Gu was a movement Gu that increased the Gu Master’s turning speed. Now that it was activated, Bai Ning Bing’s whole body started rotating rapidly.

And the activation of tornado Gu immediately created a whirlwind. The whirlwind covered Bai Ning Bing and in a few seconds, enlarged into a tornado.

The dark blue tornado was like a young blue dragon rising into the air.

Ice edge Gu, ice crystal Gu, swirl Gu and tornado Gu; Bai Ning Bing was using her mind to do four tasks at once.

No, it was still not over.

Frost breath Gu!

Bai Ning Bing exhaled and frost aura instantly pervaded her surroundings.

With her mortal flesh body, she could only activate frost breath Gu in intervals to prevent her mouth and tongue from freezing. However, after turning into ice crystal, she could continuously breathe out the frost breath.

The frost aura mixed into the tornado, changing it into an icy tornado.

The wind blew everywhere, grass was sent flying, a light blue icy frost formed on the grassland.

At this moment, Bai Ning Bing was doing five tasks at once!

This was the talent of the ten extreme physique that could look down upon the world. On this aspect, Bai Ning Bing had already surpassed Fang Yuan.

The killer move appeared again, ice blade storm!

Cold wind rose, and the temperature in the surroundings drastically fell. The sharp ice blades gave the tornado even more power.

The two fiery snakes ignorantly charged towards the tornado and suffered severe injuries. The snake heads as well as most of their bodies were cut down by the icy storm.

The fiery snakes hurriedly retreated.

Flames merged into them, as the snake heads and their bodies reformed again. But their bodies were not even half the size of before.

The icy storm was increasing in power, large amounts of frost spread over the grassland.

The parts of the grassland that were burning were already showing signs of extinguishing because of the frost.

Yan Tu’s eyes shrunk at this sight and he recalled the fiery snakes back into his nose.

"What move is this?"

"I have never seen Bai Ning Bing use this move."

"Killer move, this is absolutely a killer move!"

The audiences were thrown into a commotion as they started discussing loudly.

Even Wei Yang showed an amazed look: "Such an extremely powerful killer move. How many Gu did Bai Ning Bing use for this attack?"

Shang Xin Ci’s gaze were nervous and expectant: "This move is so strong, she might be able to win against Yan Tu."

Fang Yuan was silent as he concentrated on the match.

He had already seen Bai Ning Bing use ice blade storm before, but the power of the ice blade storm now had jumped to a whole new level.

Bai Ning Bing’s growth was astonishing.

She had exceptional aptitude and talent, combined with her Gu set, she was a unique Gu Master.

Looking at it now, she had not discarded her meticulously designed killer move, ice blade storm, but instead improved it.

"You still had such a trump card left..." Yan Tu was no longer calm, the moment the ice blade storm appeared, he lost a bit of his confidence.

His heart started to palpitate rapidly. He was actually getting such a feeling from a junior, a rank three Gu Master!

Bai Ning Bing’s strength surpassed Yan Tu’s expectations and caused him to feel an intense threat.

Killer move.

Often formed by using several Gu worms at once, through meticulous pairing, an extremely strong move is born.

A killer move was not something all Gu Masters possessed. Only those with plentiful experiences or great talent could develop their killer moves.

Killers moves often consumed a lot of primeval essence and was very taxing on the mind, but their might were no doubt formidable beyond imagination.

"This is not good, this move is getting stronger, I have to suppress it early. If I let it grow and accumulate momentum, it will truly be unstoppable." Yan Tu was a veteran with great experience and soon saw a weakness.

If it were other Gu Masters, most of them would be scared witless and choose to watch the change quietly. However, Yan Tu was extremely shrewd and saw through this killer move’s weakness.

"It will be difficult to restrain her with ordinary moves, I will just be wasting primeval essence. Since it is so... I shall use my killer move against her killer move!" Yan Tu resolved himself.

Fuel oil Gu!

He opened his mouth wide and spurted out large amounts of fuel oil.

The amber colored fuel oil gave a pungent odor. Yan Tu used all his strength in activating the fuel oil Gu, not daring to have the slightest of reservation.

The fuel oil poured out like a small waterfall onto the grassland and became waves. The fuel oil waves submerged the whole battlefield within seconds.

Ice blade storm was getting bigger and bigger, the cold aura spreading further; the fuel oil’s momentum immediately slowed down as it approached the storm, as large amounts of oil was sent flying.

Ice blade storm had explosive power but the the coldness was not enough to freeze the fuel oil.

At once, fuel oil rained down on the whole battlefield.

Besides the vicinity of the ice blade storm, a thick layer of fuel oil covered all the other areas of the grassland, almost forming a swamp.

Fiery snake Gu.

Yan Tu snorted and the earlier two fiery snakes appeared again.

Twenty percent of yellow gold primeval essence was spent to let the fiery snakes get back to their peak size and power once more.

The fiery snakes landed on the ground and immediately created blazing flames.

The red flames quickly spread, as the whole battle stage instantly changed into a sea of fire.

The flames blazed intensely on the grassland, the green grass wilted and turned into ashes which then further fuelled the growth of the blazing fire.

Only one place remained safe from the fire in the super-size battle stage, and was instead frozen in ice.

That was where Bai Ning Bing’s ice blade storm was at.

She and Yan Tu had changed the grassy terrain into one of ice and fire, the clash of two extremes.

The two fire snakes moved in the sea of fire with joy, circling the rotating ice blade storm and were not in a hurry to attack.

Bai Ning Bing’s ice blade storm was also continuously enlarging and accumulating in power, the top of the tornado had already changed into a dome shaped form due to the constant movement..

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

The icy tornado created violent sounds and gave a majestic aura; causing the audience to smack their lips in anticipation.

"I’m not done yet, fiery claw Gu!" Yan Tu suddenly shouted.

He had four fiery claws Gu on him, and right now he sent them all out.

His primeval essence took a severe hit, the primeval sea in his aperture rapidly fluctuated as the brilliant golden sea level fell sharply.

The four fiercy claw Gu did not charge towards the ice blade storm, instead they flew towards the fiery snakes and merged.

In an instant, the two fiery snakes grew a pair of claws.

Snakes with claws were no longer snakes but dragons!

The two fiery dragons flew with their heads high in the sea of fire, brandishing their claws and revealing a defiant aggressiveness.

"Lord Yan Tu has combined fiery snake Gu and fiery claw Gu to display a portion of the might of the rank five fiery dragon Gu."

"To think that in this match, we would get to see Lord Yan Tu’s killer move — fire sea twin dragon kill."

"Bai Ning Bing is just a newbie, she can be proud of herself, being able to force Yan Tu into using his killer move!"

The audiences were all excited at this scene.

Both sides brought out their killer moves, the battle had suddenly reached the climax.

Killer move vs killer move!

Would the winner be Yan Tu’s fire sea twin dragon kill with its huge and majestic power? Or would it be Bai Ning Bing’s world engulfing ice blade storm that will beat ’half the sky of the battle stage’?

Everyone fixed their gaze on the battle stage, waiting in anticipation.

The fiery dragons raised their heads and let out a soundless hiss before pouncing forward from two sides.

The fiery dragons struck the icy storm, tearing at it with their fiery claws. Their entire body coiled around the icy storm.

The white and blue ice storm was like a huge pillar, standing straight against the attacks.

The sharp ice blades clashed against the fiery claws and continuously slashed the fiery dragons’ bodies.

After some time, the two fiery dragons could no longer endure it and retreated.

They submerged into the sea of fire and absorbed the flames, immediately recovering their power.

The grassland was burning, this overflowing inferno provided enough replenishment for the fiery dragons!

Yan Tu had fully used this grassland.

The two fiery dragons attacked again and again, and were defeated each time.

After the defeat, they would attack again relentlessly.

"Fire sea twin dragon kill can’t push down Bai Ning Bing?"

"Is the sky collapsing? If this goes on, Bai Ning Bing has hope of winning against Yan Tu!"

The audience were amazed again and again.

"No, ice blade storm has been restrained. The wind flow has been forcefully cut and can’t accumulate more power. Bai Ning Bing should start moving and start kiting her opponent!" Wei Yang’s expression was grave, his specialty in battle was kiting.

Fang Yuan’s brows slightly furrowed, an obscure light flashed in his eyes.

He could tell something was wrong.

With Bai Ning Bing’s wisdom, she definitely knew that she could not resist it head on and should fight while moving. However, she did not do that.

"It seems, this killer move is still imperfect..." Fang Yuan inwardly speculated.

Right now, Bai Ning Bing was powerless to dictate her movement!

This was the first time she’s used the revised ice blade storm in battle, she had planned it well but now she discovered a serious problem.

The ice blade storm lacked a forward momentum, it could only rotate on the spot. This was truly an unspeakable embarrassment.

"I changed into ice crystal form and continuously used frost breath, now the tornado has become too dense and there is no way I can move forward!"

Bai Ning Bing used all her effort to activate her movement Gu to change this situation.

However, she was already doing five tasks at once and this was her limit, her mind was already stretched to its limit and did not have any spare energy left.

Fortunately, Yan Tu had still not discovered this.

He took the initiative to attack to block Bai Ning Bing from accumulating more power, but this instead helped her to cover this fault.

"There is only one method left now, to continue walking down this desperate path. Continue to expand the ice blade storm, maybe the wind flow will become strong enough to move it."

Bai Ning Bing’s fighting spirit had not disappeared, this predicament instead bolstered it.

However, whether it was her or Yan Tu, both of their primeval essence were sharply decreasing.

The audience had also fallen into silence.

The majestic ice blade storm and the terrifying orange sea of fire divided the battle stage into completely different terrains.

The barrier around the battle stage isolated most of the power, but wind still blew out.

This wind was sometimes hot and sometimes cold, giving the audience a personal experience of the intensity of the battle.

The sea of fire blazed, the two orange fiery dragons shook the ice blade storm. They were defeated again and again, but charged forward each time, advancing without losing their spirits.

"This is the strength of Lord Yan Tu, the power of a rank four Gu Master." Someone sighed.

"Being able to fight Lord Yan Tu to this extent, Bai Ning Bing can be said to be the third strongest in the battle stage." Someone commented with a visible shock on his face.

In the battle stage, Yan Tu and Ju Kai Bei had fought dozens of battles, but a clear winner had not been determined. They were the strongest two in the battle stage.

Through this battle, Bai Ning Bing’s battle strength was also recognized by the people and was regarded as third strongest.

Time passed by minutes and seconds, the ice blade storm gradually slowed down, as the wind flow decreased.

Meanwhile, the blazing inferno was also mostly extinguished.

The fuel oil was expended and the green grass had all turned into ashes.

However, the fiery dragons were mighty as before; they not only had the replenishment from the sea of fire, but also the support of Yan Tu’s yellow gold primeval essence.

Bai Ning Bing’s primeval essence gradually became insufficient in supporting her expenditure, at this stage, the gap between the cultivation levels was clearly shown.

If she had the heavenly essence treasure lotus, she could still have the strength to fight on. Unfortunately, she refused Fang Yuan’s good intent.

"It is over." Yan Tu laughed and with a shift of his mind, the two fiery dragons suddenly merged into one, forming an even larger fiery dragon.

This change made many people involuntarily gasp in surprise.

This move was Yan Tu’s secret move and had never been revealed, but now he no longer cared about secrecy in order to pierce Bai Ning Bing’s ice blade storm.

The fiery dragon opened its mouth, the four fiery claws waved together and ruthlessly clawed at the ice blade storm.

But suddenly, the storm exploded.

Bai Ning Bing furiously activated frost breath Gu and froze all of the fiery claws!

Ice blade storm suddenly inflated and engulfed most of the fiery dragon’s body like a monster!

"What?!" Yan Tu turned pale with fright, he suddenly realized that the weakening earlier was only Bai Ning Bing’s pretense.

He immediately willed the fiery dragon to retreat.

The fiery dragon suffered serious injuries, its might had diminished; it lost two fiery claws and its size also decreased to less than half.

The audiences immediately rose in uproar at this.

"Is Bai Ning Bing going to win?"

"They had been fighting intensely for so long but she actually has energy left?"

Yan Tu’s expression was grave, Bai Ning Bing’s sudden attack inflicted a disastrous damage to him.

In an instant, he had lost a fiery snake Gu and two fiery claw Gu.

The ice blade storm suddenly dispersed completely.

Bai Ning Bing revoked the ice crystal Gu and returned to her original mortal body. She had used up her primeval essence, her aperture was completely dry.

"I admit defeat." She coldly announced.

There was a temporary silence, but the whole battle stage erupted in an uproar next.

Bai Ning Bing was admitting defeat?

The audience had not expected this.

"She should have exhausted all her primeval essence when she used that final explosion to inflict heavy losses to Yan Tu." Fang Yuan realized.

Even if I cannot win, I will make you feel worse.

Bai Ning Bing’s choice was sensible and she did it decisively and ruthlessly.

After realizing this, Yan Tu was furious but a formless force pressed down from above and suppressed him.

He could not move.

This was the ability of the battle stage.

The hosting Gu Master walked into the battle stage that had changed beyond recognition and announced the result.

According to the rules, the winner has the right to demand the loser to hand over a Gu.

"I want your ice crystal Gu." Yan Tu said with hatred.

"Take it." Bai Ning Bing coldly snorted and handed over the ice crystal Gu.

The two completed the transfer on the spot.

Ice crystal Gu was Bai Ning Bing’s vital Gu, the moment she lost it, blood flowed out from her seven orifices.

Yan Tu’s expression was still unsightly, he had chosen ice crystal Gu to teach Bai Ning Bing a lesson. But even so, his losses were much greater, a rank three ice crystal Gu could not cover his losses.

After this battle, Bai Ning Bing might have lost but it established her fame.

One could say, she had gone down in flying colors.

Shang Xin Ci let out a breath of turbid air and calmed down her mind.

"It is a pity, if Bai Ning Bing had listened to my advice and chose frost demon Gu at that time, the situation would have been much better." Wei Yang lamented.

Ice crystal Gu was suitable for men while frost demon Gu was suitable for women.

"Bai Ning Bing lost ice crystal Gu, maybe this is a chance for her to choose frost demon Gu." Wei Yang said with an expectant tone.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

(Where’s my power-up mid battle?!) PS: Chibi’s going out later, don’t wait for the (3rd) chapter :)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Did you see that battle? It was really splendid!"

"Bai Ning Bing suffered her first defeat and Yan Tu’s victory was also not easy."

"My heart ached when I spent twenty primeval stones to watch the battle, but after the match, I feel that it was truly worth it."

Bai Ning Bing and Yan Tu’s battle was like a boulder falling into the lake, the ripples spreading all over Shang clan city.

In every street, people were discussing the match.

" Old ginger is hotter than young ginger , Lord Yan Tu won in the end."

"But Bai Ning Bing lost gloriously. Fighting to that level, it shows that her future is limitless."

"It is so unfortunately that I couldn’t see that match."

"Bai Ning Bing might have lost her vital Gu and suffered a backlash, but ice crystal Gu is easy find, this will not have too big of an influence on her."

"I am now really looking forward to the match between Fang Zheng and Ju Kai Bei."

"Right, that is sure to be a battle between dragon and tiger!"

The match between Fang Yuan and Ju Kai Bei was scheduled seven days later. And because of Bai Ning Bing’s outstanding performance, their match received countless attention.

Bai Ning Bing, however, went missing.

After that match, she did not return to Nan Qiu garden.

"Did something happen to her?" Shang Xin Ci was worried.

"Don’t worry, I understand her. She has a very prideful nature, after suffering such a defeat, she needs some time alone." Fang Yuan comforted Shang Xin Ci.

Bai Ning Bing might have a female body but her heart was that of a man.

All men were like lions and wolves; when they received injuries, they would look for a secluded place and silently lick their wounds.

Women were different; when they felt wronged, they would want to pour out their grievances. They thirst for protection and comfort.

Shang Xin Ci nodded, her beautiful and gentle eyes looked at Fang Yuan with concern: "Is it possible to not fight? That Ju Kai Bei is as famous as Yan Tu. Big Sister Bai Yun lost and had to give up her ice crystal Gu. Ju Kai Bei is a strength path Gu Master, if Big Brother Hei Tu loses all-out effort Gu..."

Bai Ning Bing lost ice crystal Gu but it could be replenished. However, if Fang Yuan lost all-out effort Gu, he had no way to get another.

Fang Yuan smiled: "Precisely because of that, I cannot lose. Alright, I will be secluded cultivation for a few days to refine a Gu. You should go back first."

Fang Yuan had already made inquiries on Ju Kai Bei’s strength. After the match of Bai Ning Bing and Yan Tu, he was able to make even more conjectures.

Ju Kai Bei was a rank four initial stage Gu Master and was equally matched with Yan Tu. Fang Yuan estimated he only had thirty percent chance of winning against Ju Kai Bei with his current strength.

Thirty percent chance of victory did not look high. But in actuality, if you consider the gap between the two large realms, thirty percent was rather outstanding already.

"If I am successful in refining that Gu, I will have sixty percent chance with its help! I can only hope that the refinement succeeds."

Fang Yuan entered the secret room and began refining.

...

First inner city.

In a study room, bright and gentle lights were on.

Shang Yan Fei quietly looked at a ball of colorful smoke floating in the air. The colorful smoke churned and unfolded the scene of the match between Bai Ning Bing and Yan Tu.

Shang Yan Fei watched this battle from start to finish and then put away the colorful smoke.

Bai Ning Bing had lost.

She lost her vital Gu and also suffered from backlash.

According the intel from Feng Yu Manor, Bai Ning Bing was recuperating at Doctor Su Shou’s place.

With this, she had received the punishment and a lesson for scheming against his second son.

Shang Yan Fei closed his eyes and leaned against the back of the chair.

Bai Ning Bing lost, she did not pass the test, but her innate gifts and talent were already recognized by the public. Given some time, she was certain to surpass Yan Tu and have great accomplishment.

This was a true genius.

Shang Yan Fei cherished and was fond of talented people.

Seeing Bai Ning Bing’s performance, he had an even greater desire to recruit her for Shang Xin Ci.

"Next, it is Fang Zheng’s turn. I wonder what surprise he will give me. Hmm, I heard he might have a heavenly essence treasure lotus..."

Heavenly essence treasure lotus, there were two of these in Shang clan city’s living treasure door. There was also a heavenly essence treasure monarch lotus as well.

However, they would have to pay an even greater price to take out these treasure lotuses.

Living treasure door guarded the treasures and even Shang Yan Fei, the clan leader, had to comply with the rules set by his ancestors.

"Fang Zheng is a strength path Gu Master, heavenly essence treasure lotus will not be able to show its true worth in his hands. It is better for Xin Ci to have it."

Shang Yan Fei pondered for a while while sitting upright. After thinking through, he sent out a paper crane secret letter.

The paper crane followed the dark path and flew inside a secret room.

Ju Kai Bei and Yan Tu soon felt a reaction and gathered in the secret room.

"Master has sent a secret letter again!" Yan Tu unfolded the secret letter and after glancing at it, he gave it to Ju Kai Bei, "It is for you."

Ju Kai Bei skimmed through the secret letter and muttered: "Master thinks Fang Yuan might have a heavenly essence treasure lotus. If I win this battle, he wants me to try and request for this grass Gu. Furthermore, even if he doesn’t have it, I am not allowed to choose all-out effort Gu."

Ju Kai Bei’s brows furrowed after he read this.

He had planned to demand Fang Yuan’s all-out effort Gu. This legendary Gu was extremely attractive to a strength path Gu Master like him.

Unfortunately, Shang Yan Fei sent such a command.

"Master loves talents and wants to protect that Fang Zheng’s growth." Yan Tu analyzed.

He raised his head and looked at Ju Kai Bei’s frown, and mediated: "Brother Ju, take note of your mental state. We are the hidden elders of Shang clan and must follow clan leader’s commands. Times are different from when we freely roamed the world and did whatever we wanted."

Ju Kai Bei nodded his head solemnly and said with remembrance: "Those were memorable times. Walking in the world alone, free and unrestrained."

"Could it be Brother Ju is thinking of becoming a demonic Gu Master again?" Yan Tu’s tone was solemn.

Ju Kai Bei scoffed: "Brother Yan Tu, do you still not know me? It was just a casual remark. Demonic Gu Masters might be free and unrestrained, but the pressure and risks are huge. Their corpse might be found in the wild one day and there wouldn’t even be people to retrieve the corpse."

Yan Tu’s expression relaxed at this.

Ju Kai Bei and Yan Tu were once solitary demonic Gu Masters.

They had even made a name for themselves while roaming around southern border and had endured for ten years. However, they were becoming tired as the time passed; demonic Gu Masters lived extremely free lives, but there was a huge pressure on them, they would have to keep on worrying about the food for their Gu, primeval stones, their own safety and other things.

The two were slowly fed up with such a life, but they did not have the courage to change their ways.

Until one day, when these two encountered each other in the wild.

There was an extreme lack of trust between demonic Gu Masters. The moment these two noticed the other, they immediately attacked to ensure they held the initiative.

Who would have imagined these two were evenly matched and fought from day to night. They used their intelligence, traps, and every kind of trick they knew with all their strength.

When dawn arrived, the two did not have strength to continue their battle; their primeval essence were fully expended and their bodies were covered with wounds. They were both within each other’s reach, but they did not have strength to make the final strike and kill the other.

When the morning light shone on their faces, these two both made an identical decision.

"I am tired of this life. Sigh, if I can survive this battle, I will go to Shang clan city and join the righteous path." Yan Tu softly mumbled.

"I am so sick of it, after this battle, I will go to Shang clan city and fight for that external elder’s position!" Ju Kai Bei fiercely cursed.

They did not know why, but the two spoke at the same time.

After they finished speaking, the two looked at each other.

After a moment of silence, the two laughed heartily at the same time.

This was fate, it was like heaven’s will. On this day, two veteran demonic Gu Masters with not the least bit of trust, gained a best friend for life.

As if they wanted to completely discard their past, they began changing and chose to trust each other.

This trust was a trust without any reservations. The two went from one extremity to another extreme.

"Returning to the topic, Brother Yan Tu, you suffered great losses this time, you ended up in a pathetic state." Ju Kai Bei mocked while winking.

No outsider would imagine he could make such an expression. Normally, Ju Kai Bei was solemn as iron and was very meticulous. But in reality, this was only a mask he had worn when he was walking the demonic path.

Only in front of Yan Tu, his best friend, did he display his true nature.

Yan Tu coldly snorted, he sighed as his brows relaxed: "This Bai Ning Bing is not simple, one day she will surpass us. I only won by a small margin, if she was rank four, the battle could go either way."

Ju Kai Bei nodded: "I disguised myself to watch your match. It is indeed the rise of a younger generation."

Yan Tu patted Ju Kai Bei’s shoulder: "That Fang Zheng is as famous as Bai Ning Bing. They came to Shang clan city together and also lives together, their relation is definitely not normal. They are called the twin stars of the battle stage and some people even call them the black and white demons. Bai Ning Bing already has such strength, Fang Zheng definitely won’t be any weaker. Brother Ju, your strongest moment is also your weakest, you need to be careful."

Ju Kai Bei proudly smiled: "Brother, guess what this is."

He took out a Gu from his aperture.

This Gu was like a beetle, it was black as iron and was fist sized.

"Eh, hard qi Gu!" Yan Tu was astonished before joy filled his face, "This is great, Brother Ju. Your defense falls when you use your killer move. This Gu will make up for your weakness. This Gu is precious and rare, you need to raise it carefully."

Ju Kai Bei nodded and put back the hard qi Gu, he then let out a sigh: "It is such a pity that it is only a hard qi Gu and not strength qi Gu. If it was strength qi Gu, my battle strength would undergo a qualitative transformation and surge by two or three times..."

Yan Tu laughed loudly: "This is just your greed, like a snake trying to swallow an elephant! The ancient qi path has already disappeared, strength qi Gu is extinct. It is your great luck that you could obtain a hard qi Gu, don’t be greedy."

Ju Kai Bei also laughed: "Yeah, but endless greed is also human nature, hahaha..."

Ancient qi path had appeared earlier than strength path.

Qi path Gu worms could alternate between form and formless, their ability were extremely wondrous. In ancient times, when qi path flourished, eight out of ten Gu Masters would walk the qi path.

However, flowers bloom and wilt, powers rise and fall; this is the natural law and qi path was not exempted from it.

After its peak, qi path gradually declined and was replaced by strength path.

Bai Ning Bing’s vitality Gu, Ju Kai Bei’s hard qi Gu and Fang Yuan’s atmosphere Gu were all related to qi path.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

In traditional Chinese culture, qi is believed to be a vital force forming part of any living entity. Qi translates as "air" and figuratively as "material energy", "life force", or "energy flow". ---Wikipedia. Explains why vitality and atmosphere are part of this path.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Seven days passed, and the battle stage held the largest battle seen in a long time.

Ju Kai Bei forcefully challenged Fang Yuan, the former was an experienced senior expert, his fame deeply entrenched in the city. The latter was a rising star in the last two years, shining like the night sky, a young expert of the newer generation.

Other than the excitement of this battle, right before this, Bai Ning Bing and Yan Tu had a battle, it perfectly led up to this climax.

After seven days of circulation, the entire Shang clan city was hyping over this match.

Thus, at the battle stage today, it was packed with people.

The battle stage had also purposely promoted this battle, making it turn into a grand event. The person in charge of the battle stage Shang Chi Wen gained a huge boost to her business revenue and was extremely happy the last few days.

Before the battle started, people already started chatting among themselves.

"Will the more experienced expert Ju Kai Bei win, or will Fang Zheng overcome the odds?" Some people were discussing this, the fight between a veteran and rising star was a popular topic to explore.

"The two of them are strength path Gu Masters, this is the resurrection battle of the strength path!" Many strength path Gu Masters were proud, having strong anticipation towards this battle. In their eyes, this had great meaning for them.

"No matter what, Fang Zheng has to fight with all his strength. Otherwise, his all-out effort Gu will be taken by Ju Kai Bei."

"Fang Zheng is only rank three middle stage, although he is very adept at fighting, his cultivation is even lower than Bai Ning Bing, not to mention in contrast to Ju Kai Bei." After tens of battles, Fang Yuan’s strength could not be concealed anymore, most people did not think he could win, because the difference in cultivation was too great.

"Fang Zheng is here!" Someone shouted.

Fang Yuan walked slowly, entering the battle stage with a peaceful look.

This was a super-size battle stage, black stone forest terrain.

Fang Zheng stood at the center of the stage, folding his arms and taking a look at his surroundings.

The black stone pillars, thick and tough, were placed all over the forest terrain.

Outside, people were crowding and completely surrounded the stage. This was the most people Fang Yuan had seen at one battle in his two years of battling.

Fang Yuan knew clearly, Shang Xin Ci and Wei Yang were among the crowd, even Bai Ning Bing was here, but disguised. He even heard Shang Xin Ci say that some Shang clan young masters were here.

This reminded him of his first battle.

Back then, there was barely any spectators, Fang Yuan was still a nobody.

But now, he was already famous, had become someone who gathered attention.

"This is the final battle." Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

Three kings inheritance was starting, considering the time taken to travel, there was no time left.

After winning this, he still had to assist Shang Xin Ci and make her a young master. It was crucial for his future plans.

The day Shang Xin Ci becomes a young master would be the day Fang Yuan leaves Shang clan city.

Regarding Ju Kai Bei and Yan Tu’s secret identity, others did not know it but Fang Yuan knew clearly.

As long as one dominates the battle stage, they will become Shang clan external elder.

Fang Yuan had never thought of dominating the battle stage. The identity of Shang clan external elder, it might be the dream of many people.

The sparrow makes a nest in the house, only an eagle can build their nest beside a cliff.

Not just the external clan elder of Shang clan, Fang Yuan does not have any interest even in the Shang clan leader position.

All these roles, although glorious, were chains of fame and wealth.

Pitiful.

Among those that live in the mortal realm, who knows how many people these chains have binded.

Ju Kai Bei arrived on the stage too.

A tower-like body, a steel like expression. He had a large body frame and even denser muscles, it gave people a strong oppressing feeling.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life’s memories, at the great righteous demonic battle of Yi Tian mountain, Ju Kai Bei had a great performance too. He killed many established demonic Gu Masters, and was one of the capable generals of Shang Yan Fei.

In him, the aura of rank four flowed. Before the battle even began, he already exerted mental pressure on Fang Yuan.

In terms of cultivation, Fang Yuan was at a disadvantage. He was rank three peak stage, but used the breath concealment Gu, thus on the surface, he was rank three middle stage.

But even if he has lower cultivation, so what?

Hehehe.

Fang Yuan squinted, his eyes glowing with brilliance. A few days ago, he had successfully refined that Gu, and his chances of winning rose to sixty percent. Even though his opponent was strong, Fang Yuan was confident of winning.

This was not overconfidence nor pride, and certainly not arrogance, but an attitude.

Demonic heart!

Cannot lose, cannot fall, must win, must win at all cost!

Even with less than ten percent chance of winning, even without any chance of winning, he had to have an attitude of absolute victory.

For a demonic Gu Master, once they fail, it leads to disaster. Thus, he has to succeed, winning every time, there is no ’if’, there is no ’what if’.

His five hundred years of experience allowed Fang Yuan to develop such a mindset.

Winner takes all, stepping on others’ corpses and climb higher, rising to the apex! Only I can let the world down, whatever justice and integrity, fame, fortune and beauty, hatred and kindness, they will not be an obstacle but merely tools to use.

This was where Fang Yuan differed from Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing had a heart to pursue victory, but Fang Yuan had a heart of absolute victory!

Nothing can stop me, not even demise will subdue my demonic heart.

Ju Kai Bei walked towards Fang Yuan, standing still and maintaining silent.

He did not like to talk.

Similarly, Fang Yuan hated trash talking.

The two look at each other, ignoring the outside noises, one with a firm iron gaze, while the other had dark abyss-like pupils.

Ding!

As the bell rang, the battle began.

All-out effort Gu!

In an instant, light burst from Fang Yuan’s eyes, and he injected his primeval essence, causing a horse phantom to appear behind him.

The horse raised its head as it charged.

With the strength of a horse in him, Fang Yuan activated the vertical crash Gu.

Swoosh!

He charged towards Ju Kai Bei, his speed as fast as a galloping horse!

But when he got to Ju Kai Bei, the horse phantom vanished, and turned into a boar phantom.

The boar had scarlet red eyes, as its tusks stabbed forwards, giving off a fierce aura.

Horse strength made charging faster, while boar strength made the impact of hitting stronger, Fang Yuan was already able to swap his beast phantoms at will now.

Seeing Fang Yuan coming at him, Ju Kai Bei opened his mouth emotionlessly.

His mouth was full of clean white teeth, at this moment, two fangs grew quickly, coming out of his mouth as two elephant tusks appeared.

The tusks bent inwards, its sharp and curved tip stabbing into Ju Kai Bei’s chest.

But there was no blood at his wound, instead, a pure white armor formed at the area of contact.

Like a milky layer of ice, the armor quickly formed on his upper body.

Fang Yuan came over imposingly.

"Good timing." Ju Kai Bei did not dodge but instead took a step forward, bending his waist a little and taking Fang Yuan’s charge head-on.

Bam.

A loud crashing sound, and the two’s shoulders collided.

Fang Yuan took five steps back, while Ju Kai Bei was sent flying.

This caused many to scream out in shock.

"How can this be? Ju Kai Bei is not Fang Zheng’s match?"

"The all-out effort Gu is really too powerful."

"Weird, why does Fang Zheng have rank three peak stage cultivation?!"

Once Fang Yuan attacked, the breath concealment Gu’s effect was overwritten, and his rank three peak stage aura was exposed, as many people noticed quickly.

Ju Kai Bei showed a little surprise in his eyes, but it quickly vanished.

He got up from the ground, not having taken much damage. Only his shoulder armor was cracked and broken.

But quickly, these cracks vanished.

The armor continued to extend, after a while, his arm and waist was covered.

This was the ivory armor Gu’s effect that Ju Kai Bei had been using.

Ivory armor Gu, a rank four Gu with strong defense. But the weakness was, it needed some time to grow, and had no malleability. After the battle ends, the Gu Master has to break it themself.

Fang Yuan moved his shoulder, feeling a little ache.

Earlier, he did not use the golden shield Gu, just the combination of bronze skin, iron bones and steel tendons, made his defense extraordinary.

Strength affects both oneself and foe, there were great requirements in terms of defense for a strength Gu Master.

The attack earlier was just a small test.

"This Ju Kai Bei has great physical strength, since my rebirth, he is the strongest opponent I’ve faced. He is an enemy with great physical strength and defense." Fang Yuan’s gaze was dark and eerie as he pounced again.

Bam bam bam.

The two exchanged blows, landing their punches every time, as Ju Kai Bei was at a disadvantage.

Fang Yuan naturally did not give him any opportunity to continue growing, as the ivory armor broke many times from Fang Yuan’s iron fist, unable to reach its complete form.

But Ju Kai Bei’s strength was getting stronger, he was suppressed initially, but started being tied with Fang Yuan.

That was not surprising, Fang Yuan knew from Ju Kai Bei’s information that he had a rank four habitual strength Gu.

The all-out effort Gu was extinct long ago, thus to replace it, current strength path Gu Masters created the habitual strength Gu.

The lower rank of the habitual strength Gu is the rank three store strength Gu.

The store strength Gu can store energy, and release it slowly attack after attack. But it needed time to do so, and during that period, the Gu Master cannot move at all, thus it is not commonly used.

But at rank four, after the store strength Gu refines into the habitual strength Gu, this weakness is eliminated.

The habitual strength Gu after activation, would cause Ju Kai Bei’s strength to accumulate over time. At the same time, he is allowed to move freely.

Bam!

Fang Yuan’s fists landed on Ju Kai Bei’s chest, while Ju Kai Bei’s palm chopped on Fang Yuan’s shoulder.

Both of them took six steps back, this time it was a draw.

But Fang Yuan’s fist was numb. In contrast, Ju Kai Bei’s chest was covered by the ivory armor, and there was only some cracks on it.

As time passed, Ju Kai Bei continued to move about, and the ivory armor became thicker, causing Ju Kai Bei’s skin to become monstrously thick.

Ju Kai Bei’s strength was starting to show.

Not only does he have rank four yellow gold primeval essence, he also had rank four Gu worms.

Just the ivory armor could compete with Fang Yuan’s steel tendons, iron bones, and bronze skin combination.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Strength path Gu Masters HATE HIM! Refining that Gu doubled his winning chance! A revolutionary discovery! Click here to find out more!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Hook, palm strike, elbow jab, kick...

Fang Yuan and Ju Kai Bei fought head-on, exchanging moves after moves.

Punches and kicks collided, producing intense tremors.

The two moved while striking each other, any stone or tree they struck would collapse with a loud sound.

"Fang Zheng is falling into a disadvantage." Gradually, the spectators understood the situation.

"To deal with Ju Kai Bei, one needs to take him down as soon as possible and not give him any time." Someone sighed.

Ju Kai Bei had habitual strength Gu; his strength grew the longer it stayed active.

"Easy for you to say, who can knock him down at the start? He has rank four cultivation, the ivory armor Gu and plentiful battle experience. Being able to fight him to this extent, Fang Zheng could be said to be pretty good."

Bai Ning Bing watched the match quietly from within the crowd.

She had experienced the pressure Fang Yuan was on right now. Only those who had personally fought against rank four Gu Masters would know the huge gap between rank three and rank four.

"Brother Hei Tu..." Shang Xin Ci clenched her fists tightly, her beautiful eyes followed Fang Yuan.

Wei Yang’s brows gradually furrowed.

Howl!

Suddenly, the roar of a wild beast burst out.

A dragon-elephant phantom suddenly rose up behind Ju Kai Bei; showing a tremendous might.

Dragon-elephant refers to a huge elephant who possesses dragon’s blood. Its physique was larger than a mammoth, it was a humongous beast. If lions and tigers came across it, they would detour around it and not dare to attack.

There was a great possibility of obtaining dragon-elephant huge strength Gu by killing this type of ferocious beast.

Dragon-elephant huge strength Gu was a rank four Gu; while the galloping horse strength Gu, green bull labor Gu and other Gu used by Fang Yuan were only rank three.

Since Ju Kai Bei became rank four Gu Master, he had used three dragon-elephant huge strength Gu and created three beast phantoms for himself.

Right now, he was punching with the strength of a dragon-elephant!

Fang Yuan’s pupils rapidly shrunk. At this moment of crisis, he quickly put up his two arms.

All-out effort Gu — Stone turtle strength!

A huge turtle phantom appeared behind him.

BOOM!

Ju Kai Bei’s bowl-size fist ruthlessly struck Fang Yuan’s arms.

A huge force emerged from the collision; Ju Kai Bei only took a step back while Fang Yuan was sent flying.

Stone turtle phantom collapsed with a loud bang; while dragon-elephant phantom flew higher into the sky.

Stone turtle strength was clearly not dragon-elephant strength’s match.

Fang Yuan was sent flying for almost thirty steps and crashed through two stone pillars before finally stopping.

Fang Yuan got back to his stance again and shook his aching and numb arms. He might look pitiful but was not the least bit harmed. The combination of iron bone, steel tendons and bronze skin gave him a very strong defense.

"Ju Kai Bei punched with the strength of a dragon-elephant!" Outside the stage, many spectators cried out in surprise.

"He has been using habitual strength Gu since the start and now his strength has become exceedingly high. This is still only the strength of a dragon-elephant, senior Ju Kai Bei has a total of three dragon-elephant phantoms in him. I once saw him strike with the strength of three dragon-elephants, he instantly crushed his opponent’s skull!"

"Fang Zheng can’t hold back Ju Kai Bei. Ju Kai Bei striking with dragon-elephant strength is a prelude to his dominance of this match."

Fang Yuan was expressionless as he charged towards Ju Kai Bei once again.

The two exchanged moves again.

Snow silver primeval essence continually poured into all-out effort Gu.

Boar, brown bear, crocodile, green bull, horse, stone turtle, white elephant and black python; eight beast phantoms flashed by one after another.

After the stone turtle strength Gu, Fang Yuan had used white elephant primeval strength Gu and black python coiling strength Gu to gain white elephant phantom and black python phantom.

Eight beast phantoms were Fang Yuan’s body’s limit. Thus after using black python coiling strength Gu, he no longer used other strength Gu.

On the stage, Fang Yuan unleashed a flurry of attacks, his punches broke through the wind and were extremely violent.

Such terrifying offensive power birthed fear in the spectators.

Ju Kai Bei had just burst out the strength of a dragon-phantom and his strength was now back to before, habitual strength Gu started to accumulate power once again. Seizing the opportunity, Fang Yuan started going all out, immediately taking back the initiative.

His eight beast phantoms flashed continuously in the air, while the dragon-elephant phantoms appeared only occasionally.

However, every time dragon-elephant phantom appeared, it would send Fang Yuan flying.

As time passed, Fang Yuan’s injuries accumulated; bronze skin could not resist Ju Kai Bei’s enormous strength and was lacerated.

Ju Kai Bei’s whole body was covered with a layer of ivory armor, so although there were many scars and cracks on it, he stood straight from the start, like an iron tower standing tall on the earth.

After some time.

There was a chance!

Ju Kai Bei made a very tiny mistake which might only appear once in a blue moon.

Fang Yuan grabbed this transient opportunity and suddenly moved to Ju Kai Bei’s back and smacked.

Brown bear phantom.

If this enormous and heavy force struck, Ju Kai Bei would definitely be spurt out large amounts of blood.

Ju Kai Bei had no time to stop it so he could turn around and sweep his arms.

Howl!

Suddenly, there was the trumpet of an elephant; dragon-elephant phantom appeared and completely suppressed the brown bear phantom.

Fang Yuan was instead sent flying. This was the eighth time.

The frequency of dragon-elephant phantom’s appearance became more frequent. When it did not appear, Fang Yuan held a slight initiative. But once it appeared, none of Fang Yuan’s phantoms were its match.

Fang Yuan’s beast phantoms were all ordinary wild beasts, but dragon-elephant had a trace of dragon bloodline in it and was considered a mutated beast!

After one hour since the match started....

Howl! Howl!

Two dragon-elephant phantoms appeared at the same time behind Ju Kai Bei.

His two fists ruthless struck Fang Yuan’s chest and sent the latter flying far away.

Fang Yuan spurted out a mouthful of blood in the air and his vision shook.

Thump thump thump thump thump...

He smashed through five stone pillars before falling down on the ground; dust rose and covered his figure.

"So miserable!" Many Gu Masters’ eyes twitched at this scene. Fang Yuan’s current state was too appaling.

"Rank three beast phantom are not the rank four dragon-elephant phantom’s match."

"Fang Zheng might have all-out effort Gu, but he can only use one beast phantom at a time. On the contrary, Ju Kai Bei’s habitual strength Gu is much better."

"How could this be? All-out effort Gu is a legendary Gu but is actually inferior to the ordinary habitual strength Gu?" Someone shouted in surprise.

Soon, someone explained: "This is not the problem of all-out effort Gu, but rather the problem lies in Fang Zheng. Fang Zheng has the strength of eight beasts in him; they are like a huge water jar but the outlet is only a small bamboo pipe. All-out effort Gu can let this small bamboo pipe discharge water in top speed; while habitual strength Gu is like a bucket that needs to draw water from the water jar. All-out effort Gu allows the continuous flow of a thin stream, while habitual strength Gu accumulates before erupting."

"Brother Hei Tu..." Shang Xin Ci’s heart jumped and she felt suffocated as she saw Fang Yuan’s figure covered with dust.

However, soon, the spectators saw a black figure slowly standing up from within the smoke.

"Three ribs have fractured, and there seems to be internal bleeding. Such a powerful attack...."

Intense pain attacked Fang Yuan, but the corner of his lips instead rose into a smile.

He had a steel willpower, what was this little bit of pain? What was this little bit of injuries?

His battle intent rose with the pain like burning fire! His blood boiled like boiling water!

"This type of battle is the most satisfying! It is only interesting when defeating such a strong enemy! Hehehe... hahaha!" Fang Yuan stood from within the dust with his head high and started laughing without restraint.

"What is Fang Zheng saying? He seems to be laughing?"

"Was his brain damaged by Ju Kai Bei?"

Because of the barrier around the stage, the spectators could not hear clearly.

Ju Kai Bei, who had an indifferent look since the start of the battle, had a change in his expression for the first time after he heard Fang Yuan’s crazed laughter!

"This kid..." His expression turned grim as he got a familiar as well as strange feeling from that laughter.

With a little bit of thinking, he immediately realized.

This was the aura of the demonic path!

A killing intent as sharp as a knife, a crazed will to destroy the world, an arrogance that looked down on the world, a ruthlessness that trampled on all living things...

This laughter seemed to have made Ju Kai Bei return to the past.

That painful and unbearable past.

He had to engage in slaughter almost every day as if walking alone in an endless darkness, with no one to talk to, an endless loneliness repressed into fear, the life of the demonic path that was worse than death...

You must keep going forward and you must keep on winning. It was like walking on a steel rope between cliffs, your nerves stretched to the limits and you had no moment to relax. With just one loss, you could fall into the abyss, consigned to eternal damnation.

Ju Kai Bei was fed up with such a life so he threw in his lot with Shang clan and became a hidden elder. These years, he felt like he was a person who had climbed ashore after struggling and almost drowning in the sea of bitterness.

He was already standing on the shore, but Fang Yuan’s laughter was like a tide making him look back at the sea of bitterness.

This laughter evoked a trace of fear in Ju Kai Bei!

I cannot go back to my past...

I don’t want to think about the past...

I have turned over a new leaf, I have already begun a new life, I am already a member of the righteous path!

Righteous could not coexist with demonic!

Ju Kai Bei’s face shook to reveal a sinister expression, he felt an extreme hatred towards Fang Yuan from the depths of his heart.

Dragon travel tiger steps Gu!

Ju Kai Bei took the initiative to attack, he took large strides like a tiger or dragon and charged into the dust.

His every step was accompanied by the dragon’s cry and tiger’s roar.

This was the rank four dragon travel tiger steps Gu and it allowed Ju Kai Bei to move rapidly. It was also similar to charging crash Gu and used the charging and crashing force to bring out Ju Kai Bei’s stored strength.

Ju Kai Bei charged fiercely into the dust, straight towards Fang Yuan.

Howl!

Dragon-elephant phantom appeared again.

It was only one phantom and not two phantoms.

However, this was enough to suppress Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not avoid it and took it head-on; stone turtle phantom soared behind him.

The two fiercely collided.

The collision created a fierce wind wave, blowing away the dust.

Ju Kai Bei had a flabbergasted look as he retreated five steps; while Fang Yuan did not budge even a bit.

There were only bewilderment outside the stage.

"What in the world is going on?" This scene was beyond almost everyone’s expectations.

It was the same stone turtle strength against dragon-elephant strength, but why was the result completely different?

Ju Kai Bei gritted his teeth as he pounced forward again.

Bang!

A loud sound. He was sent flying by Fang Yuan like a sandbag before crashing onto the ground.

He got up with difficulty and stared deadly at the space above Fang Yuan.

In the air, brown bear phantom and boar phantom slowly disappeared.

"Using two beast phantom at once!"

"How is this possible?"

"This goes against common sense!"

There were cries of surprise and alarm from the spectators.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Fang Yuan vs Ju Kai Bei lasts 4 chapters. I’ll upload 4 chapters today.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Two beast phantoms... my eyes did not deceive me, right?" Yan Tu’s eyes were wide open.

"What Gu is he using to bring out two beast phantoms at the same time?" Ju Kai Bei’s expression turned grave as he looked fixed at Fang Yuan. His pupils suddenly shrunk: "Come!"

Vertical crash Gu!

Fang Yuan’s expression was emotionless and his eyes as dyed in a deep miasma. He charged towards Ju Kai Bei.

At the same time, a horse and boar phantom appeared above his head.

Boar strength increased the force of his charge while horse strength increased his speed instantaneously, making his charging speed even quicker.

With the empowerment of two strengths, Fang Yuan seemed to have turned into a fierce boar charging with the speed of a raging horse; his figure quickly enlarged in Ju Kai Bei’s eyes.

Dragon travel tiger steps Gu!

Facing Fang Yuan’s powerful attack, Ju Kai Bei jumped along with the cry of a dragon and the roar of a tiger.

This time, he dodged of his own accord and brushed past Fang Yuan.

Vertical crash Gu’s weakness was exposed, it could only charge in a straight line; the opponent could easily determine the direction and dodge, causing the attack to fail.

"Ju Kai Bei has taken the initiative to dodge!"

"He had always been attacking head-on and rarely dodged. Since the battle started, this is the first time he has dodged without tanking the hit."

"Fang Zheng is able to bring out two beast phantoms at the same time while Ju Kai Bei’s habitual strength Gu has to accumulate strength again, dodging is a sensible move."

"Fang Zheng is still too inexperienced, although he has high quality Gu worms, his battle experience is far inferior to Ju Kai Bei. This attack was a wasted attempt... ugh."

This spectator were still commenting when there was a sudden change in the stage.

After Fang Yuan brushed past Ju Kai Bei, he suddenly stopped using all-out effort Gu. The two beast phantoms disappeared, his charging force immediately diminished as he smashed into a black stone pillar.

As the black stone pillar collapsed, Fang Yuan’s momentum stopped.

Horizontal charge Gu!

Fang Yuan turned his body and charged horizontally, his two arms attacking straight. Two large phantoms of brown bear and white elephant suddenly rose up.

The distance was too close and Ju Kai Bei was caught unprepared; the attack hit him violently and sent his tall body flying!

The person who had just evaluated Fang Yuan as ’too inexperienced’ was tongue-tied.

Many spectators’ eyes brightened.

Fang Yuan’s attack seemed ordinary, but it involved many factors and was an exceptionally brilliant move.

All-out effort Gu could unleash formidable offensive power when activated, it could also be revoked.

The constant switch between activation and revoking let Fang Yuan move smoothly with great flexibility.

At the same time, he used the terrain to stop his momentum.

Ju Kai Bei was struck by Fang Yuan, not because he was not intelligent but because he was used to habitual strength Gu and his plentiful experiences instead created a blind spot in his thoughts.

Fang Yuan charged again!

Ju Kai Bei rose to resist, but Fang Yuan’s two beast phantoms burst out like a crazed lion, the ferocious roar even caused the spectators’ hearts to palpitate.

Ju Kai Bei became a sandbag, left with no way to retaliate, he held his breath as he defended desperately.

"Heavens, Fang Zheng is merely rank three peak stage but is actually suppressing Ju Kai Bei!"

"Such an unimaginable scene is actually happening in front of my eyes."

"All-out effort Gu is after all a legendary Gu, it is powerful and has marvelous uses, even rank four habitual strength Gu cannot compare to it!

"Fang Zheng has already perfected the use of all-out effort Gu. He might not have plentiful experience, but his innate battle talent is enough to make up for everything else."

The spectators were clamoring.

Bam!

Dust rose up, Ju Kai Bei’s tower-like body was like a sack as he smashed through several thick black stone pillars.

Cough!

He again spurted out a mouthful of blood. He struggled to get up but Fang Yuan was already upon him and did not give him any chance to take a breather.

He stomped on the ground; horse and green bull beast phantoms appeared at the same time.

Ju Kai Bei rolled on the ground, dodging the attack in a sorry state.

Fang Yuan’s right leg stamped on the ground fiercely; a dull sound echoed, soil and stones split and flew, the whole battle stage seemed to be slightly shaking.

A clear concaved depression appeared immediately below his legs.

Vertical crash Gu!

Fang Yuan charged, brown bear and white elephant phantoms simultaneously appeared.

"Damn it!" This time, Ju Kai Bei did not have enough time to dodge, he could only grit his teeth and raise his huge arms to resist.

Howl! Howl!

Behind him, two dragon-elephant phantoms suddenly appeared and rose to the air; Fang Yuan’s brown bear and white elephant phantoms immediately paled in comparison.

Fang Yuan strongly collided into Ju Kai Bei; Ju Kai Bei was only pushed back a little, while Fang Yuan himself was sent flying away.

Two beast phantoms could suppress one dragon-elephant strength. However, Fang Yuan would lose against two dragon-elephant strength.

"Finally, two dragon-elephant strength came out..." Ju Kai Bei let out a breath of turbid air, he was shocked by Fang Yuan’s violent strength. Only when two dragon-elephant strength burst out, did he reclaim his footing.

Habitual strength Gu might be rank four but it was indeed inferior to all-out effort Gu.

Ju Kai Bei had to continuously accumulate and increase his strength by activating habitual strength Gu, then summon the beast phantom. However, even he did not know when it would appear. If he attacked, and one dragon-elephant strength appeared, he would have to accumulate strength all over again which caused his battle strength to temporarily fall.

Ju Kai Bei’s strength was like a water jar and his habitual strength Gu was like a bucket, he needed to draw the water from it every time.

In contrast, all-out effort Gu was a stream and could be used anytime, able to be unleashed whenever Fang Yuan willed. In fact, if Fang Yuan did not want to use it, he could even turn it off. With such a flexible use, Fang Yuan could advance or retreat, he could use to attack or move away quickly.

"If I was the one with all-out effort Gu... sigh ! Unfortunately, even if I win, Shang Yan Fei would not allow me to claim it." Ju Kai Bei felt regret.

He had complete freedom when he was a demonic Gu Master and could do whatever he wanted. By submitting to the righteous path, he gained safety and stability, had enough resources, but he felt his hands and legs bound when doing things.

"If I choose the all-out effort Gu disregarding his orders, what would happen?"

This thought was immediately dispelled the moment it appeared.

If he really did that, it was no doubt offending Shang Yan Fei. Shang Yan Fei was not only a rank five expert, he also controlled Shang clan. If Ju Kai Bei disobeyed him, even if he escaped, his future would never be peaceful.

"Wait a moment! What am I thinking about, the crucial thing now is to defeat Fang Zheng!" Ju Kai Bei’s gaze concentrated, activating dragon travel tiger steps Gu and attacking Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan spurted a mouthful of blood from the attack, his iron-like arm bones were fractured.

The intense pain struck him, but Fang Yuan instead grinned and laughed.

All-out effort Gu!

Brown bear, white elephant and green bull; three phantoms burst out together!

Even Ju Kai Bei could not help but stare with wide eyes, revealing a stupefied expression.

What had just happened to Fang Yuan, happened to himself immediately after.

Ju Kai Bei had thought of taking the chance to attack quickly and had taken the initiative to attack, but he was instead sent flying. There was a huge hole in the thick and solid ivory armor on his chest. He spurted out a huge amount of blood and smashed through the black stone pillars before collapsing on the ground, as a dust cloud appeared. Ju Kai Bei clenched his teeth as he hurriedly got up.

"Three beast phantoms!" The spectators were stupefied.

The scene was extremely clear. Fang Yuan struck with three beast phantoms!

"How did he do it?" Many spectators looked at each other.

"He had just attacked with two beast phantoms, but now there’s three..." Many were speechless.

But even more people already had guesses: "Could it be..."

Ju Kai Bei stared at Fang Yuan fixedly as he squeezed out a name from his teeth: "Bitter strength Gu!"

That’s right, it was bitter strength Gu.

Bitter strength Gu was a rank four Gu and was the perfect companion for strength path Gu Masters; the more injuries the Gu Master suffered, the greater the pain he felt, the more strength they could bring out.

Naturally, there was a limit to the strength the Gu Master could display and it depended on the Gu Master’s foundation.

Fang Yuan possessed eight beast strength phantoms, the strength he contained was like a large water vat. All-out effort Gu was like a bamboo pipe that could be opened and closed at will and could continually draw water from the vat.

Right now, as Fang Yuan suffered injuries and used bitter strength Gu, it was as if many holes appeared on the water vat. All-out effort Gu added in bamboo pipes to all these holes and allowed Fang Yuan to use them as he wished.

Just with all-out effort Gu, Fang Yuan only had a single bamboo pipe to draw the water and thus could only use one beast phantom. But now, under the effects of his injuries and the bitter strength Gu, it was like adding two new outlets to the water vat.

Thus, when Fang Yuan used all-out effort Gu now, he could simultaneously use three beast phantoms.

"To think he has a bitter strength Gu! Didn’t Shang Ya Zi buy this Gu in the auction? Is this bitter strength Gu the one Shang Ya Zi owned?" Yan Tu guessed the answer.

His eyes narrowed and his expression was unprecedentedly solemn.

"If the bitter strength in Fang Zheng’s hand is not Shang Ya Zi’s, then he no doubt toyed with Shang Ya Zi in the auction. But if this bitter strength Gu was the one Shang Ya Zi bought, then the situation is terrifying! Shang Ya Zi had been ousted from his young master position not long ago because of false accounting with Fang Zheng. Maybe this bitter strength Gu is the fruit of Fang Zheng’s victory! This kid is not simple. Brother Ju, you have to be careful..."

Yan Tu could not help but worry about Ju Kai Bei’s situation.

Ju Kai Bei only felt bitterness in his mouth.

First, the all-out effort Gu, now the bitter strength Gu... these two Gu were both what he, Ju Kai Bei, yearned for everyday and had bitterly searched for them fruitlessly.

However, Fang Yuan who was so young was holding both Gu, such luck caused this senior to become green with envy.

With bitter strength Gu, the heavier the injuries Fang Yuan suffered, the more holes there would be on his water vat and he would also become stronger.

In another words, every time Ju Kai Bei inflicted damage, he would instead be increasing Fang Yuan’s battle strength.

It was an unpleasant feeling. His mental endurance also took a hit, not wanting to fight with Fang Yuan anymore. The more Fang Yuan fought, the stronger he got; the heavier the injuries he suffered, the higher his strength. The most important thing was he possessed eight beast phantoms, if they all burst out together, even if Ju Kai Bei’s three dragon-elephant appeared together, it would be useless.

What lowered Ju Kai Bei’s morale even more was that he knew Fang Yuan possessed a self-reliance Gu.

Self-reliance Gu’s healing effects was extremely potent towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was being healed while suffering injuries, maintaining his strength at a terrifying level.

All-out effort Gu, bitter strength Gu and self-reliance Gu; these three formed a tight combination, creating a secure and solid foundation.

Reaching this step, the Gu set that Fang Yuan planned earlier had already reached initial success, forming the skeleton. Their effects were outstanding and even the rank four Ju Kai Bei was suffering from this combination.

Fang Yuan had been in Shang clan city for over two years now, already accomplishing something most Gu Masters would not be able to accumulate even after spending most of their lives. Even a veteran like Ju Kai Bei was jealous and green-eyed.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Lesson of the day: What doesn’t kill you makes you stronger(literally).

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Even if Fang Zheng has bitter strength Gu, the strength he can release is at most eight beast phantoms. Bitter strength Gu cannot raise his strength limitlessly."

"Shang clan leader ordered me to not take all-out effort Gu, I can only choose this bitter strength Gu!" Ju Kai Bei’s eyes brightened as he thought of this.

Whether it was all-out effort Gu or bitter strength Gu, they were both extremely attractive to strength path Gu Masters.

"I still haven’t lost! I am at rank four initial stage, I am superior in terms of primeval essence, and I also have my killer move."

Ju Kai Bei possessed plentiful experience and was able to put his disorganized mind in order after pondering for a short period. He was invigorated and his low morale rose up.

The two began exchanging moves again.

The battle could not longer be described as intense; desperate was more suitable.

The two punched and kicked one after another, attacking and defending.

Ju Kai Bei’s ivory armor was being broken continuously and while repairing itself. From time to time, he would spurt out mouthfuls of blood.

Fang Yuan was also not much better, he was restraining self-reliance Gu which caused his whole body to be full of injuries and blood seeped out continuously, his bones fractured and endless pain continued to assault his mind like tides.

The heavier the injuries he suffered, the stronger he got. Not long later, he could bring out five beast phantoms.

Ju Kai Bei fell into a much more dangerous situation and was almost suppressed to the state where he could not even lift his head.

This was something he had never experienced at the battle stage.

Even Yan Tu was only his equal.

"Junior, you are too arrogant!" Ju Kai Bei furiously swept his arms.

Three dragon-elephants!

He suddenly erupted, as the enormous dragon-elephant phantom appeared behind him.

Fang Yuan was sent flying.

Three dragon-elephants could suppress five beast phantoms.

Fang Yuan’s arms were twisted due to the attack, they were completely fractured. His left arm was even folded into a right angle and the fractured bones were exposed with fresh blood flowing down.

Fang Yuan clenched his teeth and endured the pain as he activated self-reliance Gu.

Such injuries already affected his combat capability and he had to heal it.

He first healed his right arm before twisting his left arm back to its proper state, forcefully joining the broken parts as he activated the self-reliance Gu.

The broken bones began to grow again and join together. Then it was the pieces of flesh and finally the skin.

During the healing process, Fang Yuan constantly evaded Ju Kai Bei’s attacks using horizontal charge Gu and vertical crash Gu, contending with Ju Kai Bei by doing three tasks at once.

When he attacked, he attacked fiercely with a domineering might. But when he dodged, it was a completely different style; he was calm and not flustered in the face of danger, like a slippery loach.

He used the black stone forest terrain to his maximum advantage, so although Ju Kai Bei’s dragon travel tiger steps Gu was faster than Fang Yuan, he could not catch Fang Yuan.

After the healing was finished, Fang Yuan turned around and started attacking again.

Time passed by, the battle situation became more desperate. Fang Yuan’s phantoms gradually rose from five to six then seven until there were eight phantoms!

At the start of the battle, there were spectators who commented and shouted from time to time, but as the match progressed, the audience had gotten silent.

Fang Yuan and Ju Kai Bei’s terrifying strength caused their hearts to feel cold and astonished.

"Too terrifying!"

"Such power, one can only imagine how flourishing the ancient strength path must have been."

"If it was me, I would have already turned into meat paste no matter which one I fought among them."

...

The spectators were speechless but even more secretly felt admiration towards the unyielding spirit of Fang Yuan and Ju Kai Bei. These two were true warriors of steel.

No one had predicted such a result.

Fang Yuan was strong and after he brought out eight phantoms, he was suppressing Ju Kai Bei most of the time.

However, Ju Kai Bei was not weak, his healing Gu was also quite outstanding. The combination of dragon guts Gu, dragon travel tiger steps Gu, and dragon-elephant Gu formed a resonance of Dao marks due to their similar law fragments; this greatly raised the probability of bringing out his dragon-elephant phantom.

Sweat formed in Shang Xin Ci’s clenched hands.

Wei Yang’s frown became deeper and was turning into a knot.

He could see Fang Yuan was getting exhausted.

Even Fang Yuan’s iron body could not endure unleashing the strength of eight beast phantoms; sweat fell down his body like rain and his muscles were already aching and turning numb.

There was another even greater danger.

Being able to simultaneously summon eight phantoms signified his injuries were extremely severe and he was in danger.

Fang Yuan was walking on a steel wire, if he was struck by Ju Kai Bei’s three dragon-elephant phantoms, he might die from the attack!

He was risking his life in battle!

This was a battle of extremes.

From start till now, it had already been over two hours.

The match gradually reached the climax, the two had reached their limits; their attacks were clearly starting to slow down.

However, the match was instead becoming more thrilling and even Bai Ning Bing’s expression was solemn.

The whole scene was silent, all the spectators were concentrating on the match.

Ju Kai Bei finally lost his patience.

He might be able to strike with three dragon-elephant strength, but it all depended on luck and there was no assurance.

Sometimes, the phantoms came out at the wrong timing and Fang Yuan would easily dodge or resist it.

"Why has his primeval essence not been exhausted?"

Even the rank four strength path Gu Master Ju Kai Bei did not have much primeval essence left at this stage.

However, Fang Yuan, a rank three Gu Master, actually appeared to have abundant primeval essence and was very energetic.

"Could it be, he really has a heavenly essence treasure lotus?" Ju Kai Bei could not help but recall that secret letter sent by Shang Yan Fei.

"If Fang Zheng really has it, his luck is simply too heaven defying!" Ju Kai Bei gritted his teeth, the expected superiority in primeval essence did not exist, causing his fighting spirit to dampen.

But the truth was, Fang Yuan not only had heavenly essence treasure lotus, but also blood skull Gu and four flavor liquor worm. If Ju Kai Bei knew this, his expression would definitely be spectacular.

"I can’t lose! It seems I can only use my killer move!!" Ju Kai Bei made his decision.

Dragon travel tiger steps Gu!

He suddenly retreated and this unusual movement immediately attracted Fang Yuan’s attention.

However, Fang Yuan could not catch him.

Dragon travel tiger steps was really fast, far surpassing horizontal charge Gu and vertical crash Gu. Even considering this terrain, it was disadvantageous to pursue him.

Almost instantly, all the spectators gazed at Ju Kai Bei, many realizing something.

"This is bad..." Wei Yang’s expression suddenly changed at this scene and he could not help but cry out in surprise.

"What is it?" Shang Xin Ci immediately looked at him.

"Ju Kai Bei is about to use his killer move! This match has finally reached the climax." Wei Yang’s voice was deep and sweat seeped out of his forehead.

He was extremely nervous as he explained hurriedly: "Ju Kai Bei’s killer move has a flaw. If Fang Zheng can grasp this flaw, he could clinch victory! If not, I am afraid Ju Kai Bei will be the winner."

Wei Yang had just finished speaking, when there was a change in the stage.

Djinn heart Gu!

Djinn body Gu!

Djinn mind Gu!

Three rank four Gu were simultaneously activated.

Body, heart, and mind combined; essence, qi, and spirit merged!

Ju Kai Bei’s physique suddenly enlarged by three times, a white aura appeared around his body as if signifying the descent of a deity. Along with it, his domineering presence increased greatly.

This was his killer move — Djinn transformation! It increased the Gu Master’s strength by three times and even his mental energy was raised by three times.

Gu Master consumed their mental energy to control Gu worms. If they overused it, their mind would feel sluggishness.

But Ju Kai Bei’s mental energy was raised now and he became energetic again.

At the same time, his strength was increased by three times; three dragon-elephant strength became nine dragon-elephant strength!

Once the nine dragon-elephant phantoms burst out, the eight beast phantoms would be crushed and Fang Yuan would certainly lose.

Ju Kai Bei reached his strongest state.

However, right at this moment, the ivory armor covering his whole body broke due to his size.

Many defensive Gu could not be stretched with the user and ivory armor was one of them.

"At this moment, he is completely defenseless. His strongest moment is also his weakest! Quick, grab this single opportunity for victory!" Wei Yang’s eyes widened as he mumbled with clenched fists.

At another corner of the room, Bai Ning Bing’s eyes also suddenly brightened.

As if he heard Wei Yang’s suggestion, Fang Yuan adopted a posture of attacking, but suddenly his movement stopped.

The excited and happy look that had just appeared on Wei Yang’s face froze.

"Strike!" He could not help but shout, his heart pulsed rapidly. Unfortunately, the barrier around the stage isolated sound; the spectators nearby casted strange glances at him.

Fang Yuan did not move but calmly observed.

The broken ivory armor was starting to grow, the new armor covered tightly around Ju Kai Bei’s whole body.

Fang Yuan’s chance at victory was slipping and becoming indistinct.

Wei Yang stomped his feet with anxiety but it was no use.

He raised his head and heaved a long sigh: " Sigh , Fang Zheng lost, he lost his only chance..."

Fang Yuan did not attack and that was quite a surprise to Ju Kai Bei. He had expected Fang Yuan to attack him, and had already made preparations for that, but Fang Yuan, however, made no such attempt.

It was a real pity!

Because, just earlier, he had activated hard qi Gu.

Hard qi Gu turned into a ball of formless air covering his whole body. At that moment, he looked like he had no defense, but in truth his defense was extremely tight and solid like a boulder.

He had covered up his greatest weakness with the hard qi Gu.

If Fang Yuan had attacked, he was certain to meet with Ju Kai Bei’s frontal assault and was likely going to lose.

However, Fang Yuan did not move.

Ju Kai Bei had even slowed down the regeneration speed of the ivory armor to entice Fang Yuan, but he did not move and quietly watched like a spectator.

"Did he detect it? Impossible. Hard qi Gu is formless. I got it just recently and have never used it before."

"Hmph, since you are not attacking, then let me make the move." Bright rays exploded and flashed in Ju Kai Bei’s eyes.

Djinn transformation was a killer move created from using three rank four Gu; whether it was his yellow gold primeval essence or mental energy, they were both decreasing rapidly.

Physical strength and mental energy were both increased by three times. But at the same time, the consumption was also increased by three times.

Ju Kai Bei’s djinn transformation could not be maintained for long.

Dragon travel tiger steps!

Ju Kai Bei charged at Fang Yuan.

Horizontal charge, vertical crash!

Fang Yuan retreated and avoided the attack.

Ju Kai Bei was bewildered.

Fang Yuan changed his style and suddenly retreated, was it to stall for time?

Pointless!

"My body is three times larger now and every step I take is three times as far. With dragon travel tiger steps Gu, my speed is even faster!" Ju Kai Bei scoffed inwardly.

It was pointless even if Fang Yuan used the black stone forest terrain.

By now, almost all the black stone pillars were destroyed. Moreover, djinn transformation could completely crush everything in its path; to the current Ju Kai Bei, the terrain was as flat as a pancake!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

The Wei Yang face slapping game is strong here.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Seeing that Fang Yuan about to be caught, Shang Xin Ci’s heart tightened.

Fang Yuan had severe injuries on him, if he was hit by Ju Kai Bei’s nine dragon-elephant strength, it meant death! Right now, Ju Kai Bei was the oppressing one, if Fang Yuan was caught up in close combat, his situation would be dire.

But unfortunately, Fang Yuan’s movement speed was inferior to Ju Kai Bei. The only way out was if he had a strong long range attack to restrict Ju Kai Bei.

"Fang Zheng, you lost." Ju Kai Bei took big strides and approached, he knew Fang Yuan had a blood moon Gu, but such a weak attack could not stop him.

An ordinary long range attack could not stop him at all. Even in the entire battle stage, only Yan Tu’s Fire Sea Twin Dragon Kill could stop the assault of his Djinn Transformation.

"Fang Zheng is about to lose!"

"In the end, Ju Kai Bei is the victor of this battle."

"Experience is still the deciding factor..."

The people discussed outside the stage, the situation was extremely clear now.

"Sigh..." Wei Yang sighed deeply.

Shang Xin Ci shut her eyes in pain.

Even Bai Ning Bing’s gaze dimmed.

"Hehehe." Yan Tu laughed lightly, once Fang Yuan lost, Shang Yan Fei’s mission would be completed!

Unless, Fang Yuan had a strong long range attack that could stop Ju Kai Bei’s advancement.

But...

Strength path Gu Masters are mostly close range fighters, they had little to no long range methods, it was mostly situational techniques. This was a common weakness of strength path Gu Masters these days, a weakness easily exploited.

Yan Tu and Ju Kai Bei had many intense battles, a portion of their battles relied on Yan Tu using long range attacks to restrict Ju Kai Bei, then winning by an extremely small margin.

All other situations where Yan Tu failed to restrict Ju Kai Bei resulted in a loss after he got close.

Close range, long range, it was the crux of battling a strength path Gu Master, in fact, it was the deciding factor in a battle!

"It’s over." Ju Kai Bei was already extremely close to Fang Yuan, as many people sighed.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a faint smile.

His dark eerie eyes burst forth with a cold glare, it was time!

Eight phantoms instantly appeared behind him.

Next, he activated his Gu worm, and pointed with his finger.

The snow silver primeval essence in his aperture fell drastically, over forty percent was expended in an instant!

Some mystical change had occurred, the beast phantoms originally manifested from the Dao marks, had become more solid, turning from hollow to real.

From a hollow phantom, they became solid phantoms!

Boar, brown bear, crocodile, green bull, horse, stone turtle, white elephant, black python, with a loud roar, they descended from the sky, charging towards Ju Kai Bei.

At this moment, everyone was stunned.

Change had occurred so quickly, Ju Kai Bei could almost see Fang Yuan losing under the might of his fist. Yet at the next moment, the eight phantoms charged towards him, from all directions, encircling him!

Wild boar charged, brown bear smacked, crocodile bit, green bull attacked with its horn, horse stomped, stone turtle suppressed, white elephant attacked with its tusks, and black python coiled!

Bam, bam, bam...

Howl, howl howl...

Boom, boom, boom...

The eight beast phantoms went into a frenzy, assaulting Ju Kai Bei ferociously.

Smoke rose and rocks flew, Ju Kai Bei was pummelled by the eight great phantoms while being surrounded in the middle!

Being attacked from all directions, Ju Kai Bei’s giant body that was three times the original size, became a giant punching bag.

His ivory armor could not take it anymore, breaking as the white fragments flew, at areas where it did not break, cracks appeared.

Many people stared at this scene in shock, opening their eyes and mouths wide, speechless.

There was almost a thousand Gu Masters watching this, yet no one said a word, as they observed the eight ferocious phantoms engulfing Ju Kai Bei.

A moment later, the eight phantoms turned hollow again, as they vanished without a trace.

The smoke dispersed, and Ju Kai Bei half kneeled on the ground, hugging his head as he breathed roughly.

"It’s finally over?" He slowly lowered his arms, staring at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was holding two primeval stones, recovering his primeval essence as much as he could.

He had A grade aptitude and the heavenly essence treasure lotus, now he multitasked, absorbing the essence from both primeval stones, his primeval essence had already recovered to seventy percent.

Seeing this, Ju Kai Bei’s eyes twitched.

He loosened his tightly clenched teeth, throwing up blood and broken teeth fragments.

Intense pain assaulted him from all parts of his body, causing him to feel dizzy as his ears buzzed.

He was thrashed really badly.

"If I had not activated the ivory armor Gu so desperately, I might’ve fainted already..." Ju Kai Bei felt some afterfear, but because he did this, he did not have much yellow gold primeval essence left.

He did not expect this change of event, when he thought of using the dragon travel tiger steps Gu to retreat, it was too late.

The eight beast phantoms surrounded him and prevented him from getting away.

Ju Kai Bei assessed, there was more than ten areas in his body where bones were broken. With such injuries, he could only choose to heal the important areas, as his primeval essence was running low.

He had primeval stones on him as well, but he could not absorb the natural essence during battle.

Fang Yuan would not give him the chance.

To do so, he needed a good opportunity. Like earlier, when Ju Kai Bei was beaten till he was helpless, Fang Yuan had free time to use his primeval stones.

Even so, Fang Yuan was taking a risk. He was doing two tasks at once, absorbing the essence from his primeval stones while controlling his beast phantoms, his control of his Gu was lowered during the period.

"What did I see earlier?"

"Unbelievable, the beast phantoms turned into solid attackers?"

"Since when did strength path Gu Masters become so strong? They had such a strong attack!"

After a while, the spectators finally reacted, asking out in shock.

Outside the battle stage, chaos ensued again.

Shang Xin Ci stared with her eyes wide-open, shocked and overjoyed, brilliant light shone in her eyes.

"Good lad!" Wei Yang punched his fists, shouting excitedly.

Although Bai Ning Bing was quiet, her eyes were shining with an eerie blue light.

"Able to turn the hollow beast phantoms into solid figures. Such a Gu worm, could it be?!" Yan Tu’s expression was solemn, as he thought about the Gu that Ju Kai Bei desired for such a long time, and had constantly told him.

"What you used earlier, is it... strength qi Gu?" Ju Kai Bei slowly stood up, his voice was hoarse as a hint of bitterness could be heard.

He did not attack, and Fang Yuan was happy about that as he absorbed the natural essence, saying: "You guessed right, it is the strength qi Gu."

Ju Kai Bei blanked out for a bit before showing a complicated expression, containing envy, jealousy, helplessness, and bitterness.

"Strength qi Gu, strength qi Gu... hehe." He sighed as he raised his head.

Ancient strength path Gu worms were nearly extinct. Whenever any news of them appeared, it would make Ju Kai Bei extremely interested. He had searched for many years, but to think that he would experience the strength of the strength qi Gu from this young Fang Yuan.

Beast phantoms were the traces of Great Dao, hollow and immaterial, they could not attack directly.

But, once a Gu Master had the strength qi Gu, the Gu Master can activate it and create the formless Qi of Strength.

The beast phantoms leave Fang Yuan’s bodies, and attach themselves to the qi of strength, gaining the ability to attack directly.

After that qi vanishes, the beast phantoms would lose their host, and dissipate, returning to Fang Yuan’s body.

Fang Yuan’s strength qi Gu, was the product of his closed door refinement.

The main ingredient to create the strength qi Gu, was the rank four atmosphere Gu.

When Fang Yuan saw it at the auction, he got the idea of buying it immediately.

Atmosphere Gu, strength qi Gu, they were both qi path Gu. The laws in them were similar, thus, they could be converted to one another using refinement.

This conversion recipe was extremely complex. Using more than twenty ingredients, to carry out reverse refinement, there were more than thirty steps in this. The heat and timing have to be controlled precisely, and there cannot be any errors. The success rate was not low though, it was more than eighty percent.

Strength qi Gu, was only a rank three Gu.

Fang Yuan spent many days and nights, staying in the secret room without any rest, using his rich experience and calm attitude to successfully refine the strength qi Gu.

In his previous life, only after two hundred years did this recipe become popular among recipe masters, and become publicly known.

As for now, the recipe master that created this was not even born yet. Of course nobody knew about it.

"There is no need to continue. I surrender." Knowing that Fang Yuan had the strength qi Gu, Ju Kai Bei lost his will to fight, surrendering.

With this Gu, Fang Yuan had a strong long range attacking method.

Close range, long range, being extremely strong at both. This was the way of the true ancient strength path!

Ju Kai Bei could no longer get close to Fang Yuan, even if he used djinn transformation.

In contrast, Fang Yuan had many ways to finish him. The attack of the eight phantoms, Ju Kai Bei did not want to experience it again.

Of course, Ju Kai Bei knew the weakness of the strength qi Gu very clearly.

It expended a lot of primeval essence, five percent of snow silver primeval essence was needed to contain one beast phantom.

Eight beast phantoms would amount to forty percent.

Even in Fang Yuan’s peak state, having ninety percent primeval essence, he could only use this move twice.

And this was only in theory.

In a real battle, Fang Yuan needed to use his movement Gu, defense Gu, all-out effort Gu, and others, his primeval essence would be expended in more ways, and the number of times he could use the eight phantoms would only be once.

Such a move could not be used easily, because of the great consumption, if it bore no results, the Gu Master would be weakening himself.

Thus, Fang Yuan left it to the end.

After Ju Kai Bei used djinn transformation, he relaxed his mind. Such an attitude was captured by Fang Yuan, thus he managed to injure him heavily.

When Gu Masters battle, they use Gu worms, but the person himself was still the key.

Once a person reveals a flaw, that would be the greatest loophole.

At this time, the hosting Gu Master came up and announced the result.

"Ju Kai Bei admitted defeat?" Many people could not accept this.

"Fang Zheng really shot through the sky!"

"The world is changing, the world is changing!"

Ju Kai Bei was called ’half the sky of the battle stage’, but now this ’sky’ could not contain Fang Yuan anymore.

After this battle, Fang Yuan’s reputation tore through the sky!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

And this is why strength path isn’t only about muscles.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Despite using rank three peak stage cultivation against a rank four, Fang Zheng still won. Not only did he overcome the odds, he even defeated such a strong expert like Ju Kai Bei! He is truly a promising young man!"

"This is no doubt a grand victory. Ju Kai Bei even used his killer move djinn transformation, but was still beaten till he sprawled on the ground by Fang Zheng, forced to admit defeat."

"The attack of the eight beast phantoms is truly terrifying... to think Fang Zheng had the strength qi Gu, he is too lucky, I heard this Gu was a prized treasure of his original clan."

In the tea houses, restaurants, and streets, people talked in their free time, discussing the battle of Fang Yuan and Ju Kai Bei.

At a point where both were at their peak, defeating a rank four with rank three cultivation was truly spectacular.

There was almost a thousand spectators at the battle stage, everyone watched the whole process. Fang Yuan won fair and square, there was no trickery or schemes, he completely dominated Ju Kai Bei through pure strength.

As for the origin of the strength qi Gu, Fang Yuan gave out fake news and caused everyone’s guesses to link to Gu Yue clan.

"From today onwards, Lord Fang Zheng is my role model!"

After this battle, many people started calling Fang Yuan ’lord’. His battle strength had gained everyone’s recognition.

"Lord Fang Zheng is truly awe inspiring, Ju Kai Bei’s era has ended." A few female Gu Masters said with shining eyes.

"The newer generation replaces the old, as Ju Kai Bei topples, it all contributes to Fang Zheng’s reputation." Some old Gu Masters exclaimed, feeling the rise of a new era.

"Fang Zheng defeated Ju Kai Bei, I wonder if he can defeat Yan Tu. If he beats Yan Tu as well, he would be the only person to dominate the battle stage in all these years. As long as he defends his position for eighteen battles, he would become an external elder of Shang clan!"

This battle created trembles in the battle stage.

The old structure was torn down, and a new force emerged.

People started to look at Fang Yuan’s future, feeling excitement and anticipation.

Shang clan had not gotten an external elder for over ten years.

If Fang Yuan defeated Ju Kai Bei with a mild advantage, and had a tough time, their expectations might not have been so great.

But after Fang Yuan displayed overwhelming strength that crushed Ju Kai Bei, they started to analyze —

"Fang Zheng has the all-out effort Gu, bitter strength Gu, self-reliance Gu, and strength qi Gu, even an ancient strength path Gu Master could only reach this level!"

"The all-out effort Gu allows his attacks to be ferocious and dominating! The bitter strength Gu allows him to get stronger as he battles, paired with the self-reliance Gu, it was simply perfection. The strength qi Gu allows him to have a strong long range attack, and completely eliminates his weakness. The scene of the eight beast phantoms attacking together is simply terrifying. This is Fang Zheng’s killer move!"

"Ju Kai Bei’s loss was no fluke. Although he is rank four and had the advantage of cultivation, the strength path has little use for primeval essence, limiting that advantage he had. Furthermore, Fang Zheng’s Gu worms are simply too good, they form into a powerful set, and are all closely related together. Ju Kai Bei probably admitted defeat after being disheartened."

"How can a person’s luck and encounters be this good? Fang Zheng’s luck is off the charts. He had only been in Shang clan city for a few years, yet he is already this developed. His Gu set is so strong, enough for him to spread his name in the southern border and gain his own title."

"Title? He already has it... many people are calling him and Bai Ning Bing the Black and White Demons. But even more people are calling Fang Zheng the Little Beast King."

Fang Yuan controlled the eight beast phantoms, and had a ferocious battle style, charging and crashing, the title of Little Beast King suited him well.

As for why he is not called ’Beast King’.

That is because Beast King is already an established demonic Gu Master. He occupied Bai Shou mountain, using the hundred beasts as his army, and was a rank five Gu Master, unreasonable, ruthless and evil. He was a troublesome person for both the righteous and demonic faction.

Fang Yuan was still rank three peak stage, although he defeated Ju Kai Bei and gained fame overnight. He was still very far from being at the level of ’Beast King’ who was a rank five Gu Master.

From another aspect, people calling him Little Beast King meant that they are thinking highly of Fang Yuan and his future.

"I am looking forward to his battle stage defending battles. Every dominating expert’s defense battle is a classic. Back then, Lord Wei Yang used rank three middle stage cultivation, even weaker than Fang Zheng now, to dominate the battle stage. Every one of his battles was a classic!" A senior Gu Master recalled.

Soon, many people started discussing Fang Yuan’s future prospects.

"At this point, how many are Fang Zheng’s match? Ju Kai Bei, Yan Tu, oh right, and Bai Ning Bing."

"But, Ju Kai Bei had already lost his djinn mind to Fang Zheng, he was really ruthless. Among djinn body, djinn heart, and djinn mind, djinn mind was the hardest to obtain. Without it, Ju Kai Bei’s killer move is not complete. To Fang Zheng, that is one less threat."

"Yan Tu is now Fang Zheng’s greatest competitor. He and Ju Kai Bei were each ’half the sky of the battle stage’, his strength is no joke. But Fang Zheng is able to defeat Ju Kai Bei, and has the strength qi Gu to eliminate his weakness, there is a high chance of defeating Yan Tu."

Someone mentioned Bai Ning Bing as well: "Bai Ning Bing is not to be underestimated, after she lost to Yan Tu, during her next match, she had already broken through to rank four initial stage! A rank four at this age, what sort of talent is that. But she and Fang Zheng have a deep relationship, she might admit defeat when they meet to help Fang Zheng."

Bai Ning Bing and Fang Yuan staying at Nan Qiu garden together was no secret. Many people guessed that they had already done intimate acts.

But then, just as the discussions were at their peak, Fang Yuan suddenly announced he was retiring from the battle stage.

Once news got out, everyone was shocked.

"Why did Fang Zheng give up such a good chance?"

"External elder after dominating the battle stage, it is right before him."

Many people sighed in pity.

"Are there any hidden circumstances?" The demonic Gu Masters started guessing.

"Could it be, Shang clan does not want external elders anymore, and forced Fang Zheng to give up?" Demonic Gu Masters often lacked a sense of security.

"Or is it that Shang clan wants to revise their policy, and remove the external elder position?"

Suspicion caused many to become uncertain.

Shang clan’s recruitment of demonic Gu Masters as their external elder was the only case in southern border.

In southern border, many clans have battle stages. The largest and most popular battle stage lies in the number one clan of the southern border — Wu clan.

But these battle stages were mostly for their own clansmen, rarely for outsiders. Shang clan’s external elder policy became extremely popular as a result, attracting numerous talents.

Even when they traded outside, many demonic Gu Masters do not rob the Shang clan caravans. That is because of the external elder policy, and these demonic Gu Masters needed a backup plan for themselves.

Shang Yan Fei felt something amiss, and quickly clarified the issue.

Although he had secretly use the two pawns Ju Kai Bei and Yan Tu to control the battle stage, such a thing cannot be exposed.

Shang Yan Fei’s authority quickly caused this matter to close.

Soon after, a few days later, Fang Yuan announced in public, he was going to assist Shang Xin Ci and help her ascend to the position of young master.

Immediately, everyone’s attention shifted from the battle stage to the young master competition.

Because Shang Ya Zi’s fake accounting was exposed, his young master position was revoked and there was a spot empty now.

Many of Shang Yan Fei’s children were looking at this position with extreme greed.

"I heard long ago, this Fang Zheng is loyal and righteous. He had his life principles, repaying a drop of water received in need with a spring, and exacting revenge for hatred a hundred times over. He truly is responsible." Someone praised him.

"In order to assist Shang Xin Ci to attain the position of young master, he even gave up the identity of external clan elder that was in sight. This is truly..." Some people could not understand.

"Maybe he and Shang Xin Ci has some underground relationship . If it was me, I would make such a sacrifice too."

"That is possible, wait. If that’s the case, what about Bai Ning Bing?"

People had their gossiping nature, and it spread like wildfire. Fang Yuan, Bai Ning Bing and Shang Xin Ci’s triangle relationship become a hot topic.

Soon after, in a few days’ time, Bai Ning Bing also retired from the battle stage.

"Bai Ning Bing also went to assist Shang Xin Ci!" Someone exclaimed.

"What has this world become? Nobody wants to be an external elder?" Some people’s worldview were tarnished.

"Bai Ning Bing has great courage, reluctant to let him go. For love, she decided to interfere, actually the three of them and their intertwined relationship begun the moment they met." Rumors started to spread again.

Countless scenarios were conjured by the people, there were even plays and dramas appearing in Shang clan city depicting the triangle relationship of Fang, Bai and Shang.

And it was selling like hotcakes!

Forget these details, but Fang and Bai’s change in position did successfully make Shang Xin Ci the center of attention.

Bai Ning Bing was now rank four initial stage, a rank four Gu Master was a clan leader in middle or small sized clans!

Although Fang Yuan was rank three peak stage, his battle strength was on par with rank four Gu masters. Once he becomes rank four, who can imagine how strong he would become?

They were both very young, and had room to grow, thus there were a lot of positive remarks about them.

Getting two experts’ help, Shang Xin Ci immediately become the second most popular person vying for the young master position.

Before her, people thought that the person with the highest hope of becoming a young master was Shang Yi Fan.

After Fang and Bai assisted her, the situation changed, and it became a contest between the two sides.

...

Shang Yi Fan was not tall, in fact he was slightly short. Eagle nose and tiny eyes, he had a sharp gaze.

"Shang Xin Ci..." He sat on the wooden chair in his study room, muttering as his gaze shifted uncertainly when thinking about this person.

Before him was one person.

It was none other than Shang Ya Zi.

"Little brother Yi Fan, I am here to help you. Shang Xin Ci has Fang and Bai’s help, she will be your biggest competitor. Especially that Fang Zheng, you have to be careful, he is scheming and devious, he caused my downfall!"

Shang Ya Zi gritted his teeth and spoke.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Plays and drama selling like hotcakes (͡° ͜ʖ ͡°)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Shang Ya Zi said: "I lost, but I have not failed completely yet. Father sent me to the slave capturing group for three years, but after three years, I will be back. But before that, I have some things to give you."

Saying so, Shang Ya Zi passed a few documents to Shang Yi Fan.

Shang Yi Fan took the documents and gave them a look. The documents contained Shang Ya Zi’s secret assets, his spies and some close aides.

"Brother Ya Zi, this is..." Shang Yi Fan gave a shocked expression.

"Brother Yi Fan, you are the person most likely to become young master among our siblings. I will lend you a hand here and hope you manage to win. As for these resources, feel free to use them. After three years, I will be back, just return them to me then." Shang Ya Zi sighed.

He was forced to train in the slave capturing group, he could not bring his servants and subordinates along. He was not going there to enjoy, but to be punished.

Now that he lost his young master identity, these forces would collapse eventually, he might as well hand them to Shang Yi Fan while he still had the power and let him take care of them. After three years, Shang Ya Zi will return, and would not have to restart all over again."

Shang Yi Fan quickly stood up, cupping his fists: "I will not forget brother Ya Zi’s help. In the future, if I become young master, I will repay you tenfold."

"Sigh, we are brothers, there is no need to talk about repayment. Hehehe..." Although he said so, Shang Ya Zi’s lips curled into a smile.

After they conversed, Shang Yi Fan sent Shang Ya Zi to the door as he left.

Seeing he had left, Shang Yi Fan’s smile turned cold.

"Shang Ya Zi, what a great plan you have, wanting me to preserve your forces for you? Hehe, then I shall use this opportunity to take over all of your assets and absorb them, this is called borrowing without returning ."

He knew Shang Ya Zi’s plan from the start.

"Three years? Many things can happen in three years, do you still think you have a chance. Hmph, naive! Such naivety, no wonder Fang and Bai tricked you. You are a disgrace to us Shang clan!" Shang Yi Fan laughed.

But thinking of Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing, his expression turned dark.

"Shang Xin Ci..." He kept muttering her name.

As Shang Ya Zi fell, he thought this young master position was in the bag. But to think Shang Xin Ci appeared out of nowhere and became his biggest obstacle.

Shang Yi Fan’s eyes squinted, as he analyzed to himself with shining eyes: "Shang Xin Ci’s greatest advantage is father’s affection. Father dotes on her more than his other children combined. But there are clan rules, as everyone competes for the young master position openly, father would not be able to cheat blatantly."

"In fact, because of lord father’s favor, it caused our other siblings to have ill feelings towards Shang Xin Ci, or even hostility. Shang Xin Ci’s greatest advantage is also her greatest weakness."

"Shang Xin Ci’s second advantage is her actual strength, that is Fang Zheng and Bai Ning Bing! These two are truly..."

Thinking of the two, Shang Yi Fan’s face showed strange, envious, jealous, and unbelievable expressions.

"These two, I don’t know what they are after! They rejected the role of external elder to help Shang Xin Ci!"

This feeling, is like someone giving up on a watermelon to pick up sesame seeds.

"How did Shang Xin Ci convince them? Her luck is really good, easily getting these two strong generals. That Bai Ning Bing is already rank four, and Fang Zheng can even defeat Ju Kai Bei!"

She gained two Gu Masters with rank four battle strength just like this.

Even their eldest brother Shang Qiu Niu did not have a rank four subordinate.

Among the ten current young masters, only the young clan leader Shang Tuo Hai had two rank four subordinates.

But those two subordinates were not Shang Tuo Hai’s private force, but sent by the clan to assist him.

As the young clan leader, Shang Tuo Hai controlled a caravan. When he traded outside, he needed sufficient strength to deal with all sorts of situations.

But now, Shang Xin Ci was not even a young master, yet she already possesses the help of two rank four experts.

This situation caused many of Shang Yan Fei’s children to feel jealousy and fear.

"But, even with help from those two, so what? The position of young master belongs to me!" Shang Yi Fan licked his lips, as he thought of something, his spirit was lifted.

...

At the same time, at Nan Qiu garden.

"Shang clan has a complex and complete system of clan rules. Especially the part on successors, the rules are extremely rigid." Wei Yang stood beside Fang and Bai, in front of Shang Xin Ci, as he explained.

"If Lady Xin Ci wants to ascend to young master, you will have to pass the Shang clan test. This test is a tradition, and there is only one type of test, which is trading."

Shang clan used trade to flourish, the development of Shang clan cannot be separated from business. When Shang clan chooses a new young master, they would test their business skills.

"Do not look down on trading, thinking this is only a method to earn money. Trading can assess a successor’s qualities, as many problems often occur when you do trade. The test is on your intelligence and planning, how you adapt to situations, your cultivation strength, and others."

"The clan will give any competing children a start-up fund of a hundred thousand primeval stones. Three months later, whoever earns the most would become the new young master."

Wei Yang was clear of the clan’s rules.

Then, how much do we need to earn to win this competition?" Fang Yuan asked.

The Shang clan young master competition was well-known in the city, the entire Shang clan placed great attention on it. Fang Yuan knew that he had to follow the rules here.

"Normally, as long as Lady Xin Ci has around three hundred thousand by the end of the three months, she would eliminate most of her competitors. If she has six hundred thousand, there would be a high chance of winning. Seven to eight hundred thousand is the first class result of previous years’ assessments. But..." Here, Wei Yang paused.

"This time, among the competitors, there is one whose mother is Lord clan leader’s cousin. In Shang clan, he has a rather big force, he is called Shang Yi Fan, the most favored competitor in this young master competition. With his mother helping him secretly, he would at least have six hundred thousand at the end. If you want to beat him, Lady Xin Ci would need even better results."

Shang Yi Fan would have at least six hundred thousand, thus to get the young master position, Shang Xin Ci would need to get first class results.

But Shang Xin Ci had no authority or force in Shang clan, her mother was even a Zhang clansmen, causing her political weakness. She would not receive any help unlike Shang Yi Fan.

Her only backer is Shang Yan Fei, but as the clan leader, he cannot side with her openly.

Thus, the pressure on her was extremely high now.

After Wei Yang finished speaking, he looked at Shang Xin Ci worriedly. He knew that earning seven to eight hundred thousand was usually due to special circumstances. Very few young masters in the previous years could achieve this. This needed talent, help, and more so, luck.

Originally, Shang Yan Fei did not expect Shang Xin Ci to vie for the young master position so quickly.

It was all due to Fang and Bai influencing her.

After Shang Xin Ci heard Wei Yang’s words, she was quiet for a while before asking: "May I know, what was the best result in Shang clan city’s history?"

"Wei Yang was stunned: "Of course it exceeded eight hundred thousand, reaching nine hundred thousand. But very little people in history managed this, the total is less than twenty. Our current young clan leader Shang Tuo Hai only got to eight hundred and ninety thousand, and that caused a huge commotion already. But your father, back then, he reached nine hundred and twenty thousand. Just this alone, it went into Shang clan’s historical records."

As he spoke, Wei Yang paused again: "But, the best result in Shang clan history is one million one hundred and ten thousand. He is called Shang Gui Cai, having a monsterous talent, but unfortunately he was a ten extreme physique..."

"Nine hundred and twenty thousand, one million one hundred and ten thousand..." Shang Xin Ci listened as her eyes glowed brightly, as she clenched her fists tightly.

She had great talent in doing business. Although Fang Yuan greatly encouraged her for this competition, she was a willing participant herself, and was not forced to do so.

Seeing Shang Xin Ci’s expression, Wei Yang felt assured: "Alright, I have to go.

But before that, I’ll give you some advice. Shang clan’s entire attention is on this competition, do not try to take shortcuts or loopholes, and violate the rules. Trust your brother Wei, all those who tried cheating in the past had never succeeded."

Young masters were the future of Shang clan, it was extremely important and no mistakes could be tolerated.

Shang Ya Zi was a young master, but because of one fake accounting, he was exiled, it shows how much importance Shang clan places on the young masters and their actions.

Shang Yi Fan had his mother’s clan’s backing, but they could only help him within the boundaries of the rules, they did not dare to cheat.

Soon after, Wei Yang gave a few more heartfelt advice before leaving Nan Qiu garden.

He was an important elder of the clan, and was Shang Yan Fei’s aide, according to rules, he should avoid meeting them. But he still entered and left Nan Qiu garden, explaining so much for Shang Xin Ci, it showed how much of a friend he was.

"Brother Wei is taking on a lot of pressure for us. We cannot trouble him any further." Shang Xin Ci said.

Fang Yuan remained silent.

Bai Ning Bing frowned: "Earning six times the initial amount in three months of business, it is easier said than done."

Although she was a natural genius, she had zero talent towards trading and business, feeling extremely troubled now.

But Shang Xin Ci’s eyes shone as she smiled, saying confidently: "Actually I have a good plan. As long as we succeed, I’m sure we can earn six hundred thousand."

"Oh, what plan?" Bai Ning Bing asked.

Shang Xin Ci looked deeply at Fang Yuan, stating her plan: "I got my inspiration from brother Hei Tu’s battles when I went to watch him in the battle stage, we can do business regarding intel."

"Selling information?" Bai Ning Bing frowned.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Or she could write her own original novel. Reverend Insanity: Love Triangle in the City.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"That’s right, information business. Shang clan’s battle stage has over a hundred battles daily, there are so many opportunities hidden in the battle stage that we can use. I’ve thought about it, we can collect the Gu Master information of the battle stage participants, and sell them. We can hire a few famous people to do predictions before a battle, and critique after the battle, and so on." Shang Xin Ci smiled as she answered.

"Brilliant!" Bai Ning Bing cheered.

This idea was ingenious!

Bai Ning Bing had participated in many battles, she knew deeply how brilliant this idea was. Immediately, she knew this idea could bring in huge profits for them.

Even Fang Yuan looked at her in surprise.

He has thought of this idea in his previous life, even using it in Wu clan. Wu clan’s battle stage was grander and had an even livelier atmosphere. Fang Yuan’s idea created a huge commotion and earned him lots of money everyday. But not long after, Wu clan interfered, and all sorts of competition and suppression came, in just a few months, his profits sank and his business was forced to close after half a year.

Fang Yuan reflected, he was able to come up with this idea because of his memories of Earth. But Shang Xin Ci being able to think of that as a native was extremely impressive, it showed her superior talent in business and trade!

Although this idea was good, Fang Yuan shook his head.

Shang Xin Ci gritted her teeth: "Does brother Hei Tu think this idea is bad?"

"The idea is good, but it won’t work. Xin Ci, do you trust me?" Fang Yuan looked at Shang Xin Ci deeply.

Shang Xin Ci smiled gently.

"My life was saved by brother Hei Tu, what is there not to trust?"

Bai Ning Bing snickered in her heart, but remained silent.

She was an insider, along the way, she was extremely clear: Shang Xin Ci’s misery was singlehandedly caused by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan nodded: "Since you trust me, listen to me. We just need twenty days to triple your primeval stones."

"Really!" Shang Xin Ci expressed her curiosity: "Then I will listen to brother’s instructions."

"What scheme is he coming up with this time? Who is he planning to harm?" Bai Ning Bing looked at Fang Yuan with the corner of her eye, guessing in her heart.

...

San Cha mountain, situated in the middle of Zuo clan’s Leng Zhan mountain, and Che clan’s Fei Lai mountain.

Zuo clan and Che clan, the former had six hundred years of history, while the latter had five hundred and eighty.

The two were enemies, centuries of hatred and grudge, causing the two clans to be mortal enemies.

For the past hundred years, the two clans were expanding, and in order to occupy San Cha mountain, they fought.

On the mountain waist of San Cha mountain, an intense battle had occurred, and it was nearing the end.

Blood flowed on the ground, as tens of Gu Master corpses laid on the ground. There were seven people still standing.

Three from Zuo clan, four from Che clan.

Zuo clan elder Zuo Wu Sheng’s chest had a deep hole, as blood flowed out. He pressed down on his injury as he stood in front of Zuo Chan Yu, with a solemn expression: "Big Missy, leave now, we will block them!"

Zuo Chan Yu was Zuo clan leader’s eldest daughter, having A grade aptitude and was the future hope of Zuo clan. She was young and pretty, rank three middle stage cultivation before even twenty years old, she could not afford to die here.

"Elder Wu Sheng..." Zuo Chan Yu showed deep hesitation and dismay.

"Want to leave? Dream on!" Che clan elder Che You Yin sneered as he walked out.

"Old man Wu Sheng, to think this day would come. Hehehe, today, I will make sure all three of you die without a proper burial!" His killing intent burst out.

But after saying so, he instructed a young female Gu Master beside him: "Xiang Er, you have an injury on you, later when we fight, stay back and keep a lookout for us."

Che Qiao Xiang instantly frowned: "Father, I only have a slight injury, it is no matter. I want to fight beside you!"

She was very worried.

Zuo Wu Sheng was her father’s rival for tens of years, they were about the same strength. Although Zuo Wu Sheng was injured, it would not be easy to kill him, his dying counterattack would be terrifying.

"Nonsense!" Che You Yin chided: "Be obedient and listen to father, this is an order."

Che Qiao Xiang pouted, about to rebuke, but suddenly heard a laugh.

"Hahaha... hehehe.... huhuhuh..."

This was a weird laugh, making someone feel an evil wind blowing when they heard it.

Following this laughter, someone appeared on a mountain rock.

This person was extremely handsome, wearing a flowery robe that had pink butterflies. He wore a floral crown on his head, and there was a red flower ball sewn onto the crown. As he laughed, the ball vibrated, causing him to look like an extremely hilarious clown.

But be it Zuo Wu Sheng or Che You Yin, when they saw him, there was no laughter but intense fear instead.

"Ah, you are the ’Pink Butterfly Gentleman’..."

"Kong Ri Tian!"

The two spoke out, revealing his identity.

This moment, the other people’s expressions also changed. Especially Zuo Chan Yu and Che Qiao Xiang, their faces went pale and they became extremely nervous.

This Kong Ri Tian was a demonic Gu Master, having a vile reputation. He loved to wear a flower robe that had pink butterflies, thus he was called ’pink butterfly gentleman’.

But the truth is, he was a serial rapist, targeting virgin women. He was extremely hated by everyone, and thus was a loner.

Most importantly, he had rank four cultivation, once he appeared, the battle situation changed.

Zuo clan and Che clan were at their wits end, their main fighter Che You Yin and Zuo Wu Sheng were injured, and only had rank three cultivation.

"Hahaha... hehehe... huhuhu... That is right, I am Kong Ri Tian!" Although he was exposed, pink butterfly gentleman was extremely happy, laughing in that weird manner again.

Suddenly, he waved his sleeve, and injected his primeval essence, causing a flower petals to rain on the battlefield.

The pink petals turned into butterflies, flying in the air.

At once, fragrance spread throughout the battlefield.

Zuo clan and Che clan quickly defended and unleashed their abilities.

Kong Ri Tian used this opportunity to attack, causing the flower rain to intensify as his body moved around quickly.

After eight to nine rounds, Kong Ri Tian’s body flashed, as he retreated and left the battlefield.

"He retreated!"

"That was close..."

Che You Yin and Zuo Wu Sheng sighed together, but their expressions changed soon.

"My dear Chan Yu!"

"Qiao Xiang! Scoundrel, release my daughter!!"

The two elders were burning with anger.

"Hahaha... hehehe... huhuhu..." Kong Ri Tian laughed, as two ladies were on his left and right hand respectively.

It was Che Qiao Xiang and Zuo Chan Yu, having fallen unconscious as they were captured by him during the chaotic battle.

Kong Ri Tian specialized in dealing with female Gu Masters.

"Great rewards today, to think I’d find two beauties here. Hahaha... hehehe... huhuhu!" Kong Ri Tian was extremely satisfied, when suddenly a change occurred.

The entire San Cha mountain started trembling, as mountain rocks fell due to the tremors!

"What is going on?"

"What in the world is happening?!"

As everyone shouted in shock, three light pillars burst out from the three mountain peaks of San Chan mountain. Three giant light pillars, yellow, blue, and red extended all the way into the sky, above the clouds.

At this point, a voice was heard among all present on San Cha mountain — "Three Kings Inheritance opens today, regardless of righteous or demonic, only fate matters."

Everyone stared at this scene in shock.

Even Kong Ri Tian forgot the two beauties in his arms.

Three kings inheritance... it is actually the three kings inheritance!

Everyone reacted and showed an extremely excited expression.

Three kings inheritance, oh god, all three kings were rank five Gu Masters, this is their inheritance, this is actually their inheritance!!!

...

Three days later, in Shang clan city.

Nan Qiu garden, study room.

Placing a document lightly on the table, brilliance shone across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

"Three kings inheritance has finally opened..."

Looking at the date, it was the same as his previous life. This shows that in this world, even though rebirth can alter history, significant events cannot be changed easily.

"Now that the three kings inheritance has opened, I have little time left. Once Shang Xin Ci becomes the young master, I will have to set off."

Fang Yuan felt an urge in his heart, he needed to act faster.

The three kings inheritance was different from ordinary inheritances.

The flower wine inheritance and white bone inheritance he took previously were only one inheritance each. But this time, it was three collective inheritances in one place.

If he could obtain all three, Fang Yuan’s strength would increase by many times, and the rank four Gu worms he needed would be mostly filled. At least before rank five, he would not need to worry about resources anymore.

But the three kings inheritance was a demonic inheritance, it was dangerous. There were many dog groups inside, and many checkpoints to pass through. In his previous life, countless lives were sacrificed, and only after half a year did someone reach the end and obtain the inheritance.

Thus, there was no point in going at the moment.

"News of the three kings inheritance cannot be hidden. How can those three pillars reaching into the sky be concealed?"

Fang Yuan knew these three pillars were the inheritance entrance. But to enter, there were certain requirements.

"Now, I can finally mass purchase dog enslavement Gu, paper crane gu, and exploding egg Gu." Fang Yuan analyzed.

Before this, although he had cash on hand, he secretly bought the three types of Gu in the market.

He had a vigilant nature, he did not go all in.

Only when the news of the three kings inheritance was released, he knew the time was ripe.

Bulk purchase!

Five days later, Fang Yuan bought a large number of rank one dog enslavement Gu, rank two paper crane Gu, and rank one exploding egg Gu. Not only Shang Xin Ci's hundred thousand primeval stones, but also the three hundred thousand he had just gotten from Bai clan.

Fang Yuan had once extorted three million primeval stones from Bai clan, they had paid almost half of it already.

Adding in Bai Ning Bing's money, Fang Yuan's purchasing plan was a big success.

Translator's Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Hahaha... hehehe... huhuhu...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Shang Xin Ci used all her funds to buy these three Gu worms?" In the study room, Shang Yi Fan was holding onto a piece of paper.

This document was sent over by his mother.

Shang Yi Fan's mother was Shang Yan Fei's cousin, she had great influence and many informants.

"Rank one dog enslavement Gu, rank two paper crane Gu, and rank one exploding egg Gu, what use do they have?" Shang Yi Fan frowned deeply, thinking hard but could not arrive at an explanation.

"I heard Shang Xin Ci gave the entire hundred thousand to Fang Zheng. Although Fang Zheng is strong in battle, I've never heard of his talent in business. Randomly purchasing like this would only cause harm to himself. Did I overestimate them?"

Shang Yi Fan pondered.

Although he did not have high cultivation, he had trained his own ability in doing business, he had great understanding of the market.

Generally speaking, buying Gu worms in bulk like this, any experienced trader would not choose such a method.

Because this investment had no prospects!

But as Shang Yi Fan continued thinking, the uneasiness in his heart did not go away. He felt that he had missed something, as if there was a deep scheme behind this nonsensical bulk purchase.

At this moment, the old steward reported outside the door: "Young master, something huge has occurred, I need to report to you."

"Oh, please come on Old Zhang." Shang Yi Fan quickly asked him to come in.

This Old Zhang was his mother’s capable subordinate. He had rank three peak stage cultivation, able to hold his own and had great experience. Shang Yi Fan could not treat him like an ordinary subordinate.

Shang Yi Fan’s mother had also instructed him, to be courteous to Old Zhang and seek advice from him to learn more about trading.

Old Zhang walked in, his expression solemn: "Young master Yi Fan, things are not looking good, there are news from San Cha mountain, that someone had discovered the correct method to enter the inheritance."

Although the three kings inheritance opened earlier, separated into three pillars of yellow, blue and red light, there were special criterias set by the inheritance and nobody could enter.

During these few days, after many people experimented and tested, they finally found the way to enter the three kings inheritance ground.

Hearing Old Zhang’s words, Shang Yi Fan showed intense curiosity: "Oh, what does one have to do to enter the three kings inheritance? Wait, don’t tell me..."

Suddenly his expression changed, as he stared intently at that document on the table.

He thought of a possibility, as he slowly stood up.

Old Zhang laughed bitterly: "Young master Yi Fan guessed it, that is correct, to enter the inheritance, three different Gu are needed. To enter the yellow pillar, the inheritance of King Quan, a Gu Master needs to refine the rank one dog enslavement Gu. To enter the blue pillar, King Xin’s inheritance, the Gu master needs to have paper crane Gu. If they want to enter the red pillar, King Bao’s inheritance, they will need at least one exploding egg Gu."

"How can this be?" Shang Yi Fan screeched.

He fell on his seat, dejected.

He finally understood, why Fang and Bai bought these three Gu in bulk, so this was the reason.

Right now, news of the three kings inheritance had spread all over the southern border. The inheritance of three rank five Gu Masters together, who knows how many people would gain interest and want to go and get their share of the pie.

But to enter it, one needs at least one of those three Gu.

But right now, in Shang clan city, all of these three Gu belonged to Shang Xin Ci. As long as one is not a fool, they can imagine how much profits she can earn by sell those Gu worms!

Shang Yi Fan was not stupid, in fact he was smart, at least more than Shang Ya Zi.

"Where did they get such information? And so precise!"

"No, now is not the time for that, it is no longer important. More importantly, how am I going to stop them!"

An eerie light continued to flash in Shang Yi Fan’s eyes, as he concentrated and thought.

But a moment later, he showed despair and helplessness.

There was no way!

Shang Xin Ci did an excellent job here. It was a very normal investment, but because of the three kings inheritance, it became a completely different story.

When they purchased the Gu, Shang Xin Ci used way more than a hundred thousand primeval stones, but that was not against the rules, at most it was a curveball.

As long as they can earn primeval stones, and calculate her profits based on her initial capital, there was no problems...

If Shang Yi Fan wanted to find problems here, he had no reason to. That is because he also borrowed forces from his mother, such as Old Zhang. To speak the truth, his curveball was way worse than Shang Xin Ci’s.

"Young master Yi Fan, the other party had the most accurate information this time. After they deal, their capital can at least triple. We cannot find any problems with them, nor can we use any underhanded means. We have to use our remaining time and do our own business. With madam’s influence in the city, in three months, you will have at least six hundred thousand. Young master, we can still win." Old Zhang explained.

"Yes, we can only hope so..." Shang Yi Fan breathed out deeply, but the worry in his heart did not go away.

Regarding the young master competition, this was just the start but he had already received such a ’surprise’. Who knows what might happen later on.

The confident Shang Yi Fan started to become doubtful.

...

Three kings, they referred to King Quan, King Xin, and King Bao.

Their origins were traced back to three hundred years ago.

The three kings came from Wang clan. Wang clan was exterminated by their mortal enemy Wu clan 1 , but they missed out three children from Wang clan.

These three children, two males and one female. The eldest was eight, he would become the future King Quan. The youngest was five, he was King Bao. As for the female, the future King Xin, she was only six at the time.

Wu clan was busy absorbing their remnant forces, to completely digest their gains from Wang clan.

What could three children do?

They were not even Gu Masters, thus they did not bother with the children, only sending out an arrest warrant and forgot about them.

The person sent to kill them was also a lazy man, he picked three kids to kill, faking that he had completed his mission and returned. Thus, the three children were unintentionally saved.

They experienced hardship, suffering, and barely stayed alive. As they supported each other, they developed a deep relationship.

As they grew older, their hatred for Wu clan deepened.

But after Wu clan absorbed Wang clan, they got much stronger, and was a large clan that owned three mountains. After years of operating, their forces were even more deep-rooted. The three kings were alone, not even given the chance to awaken their aperture. It was an impossible dream for them to take revenge on Wu clan.

But life was uncertain, and fate worked in mysterious ways. You can never know what your fate might be in the future.

During one time when they risked their lives, collecting herbs on the mountain to sustain their livelihood, the three were thrown into an ancient inheritance ground.

This was not an ordinary inheritance, it was left behind by a mysterious rank six Gu Immortal.

The three kings thus, experienced a change in fate. They each inherited a portion of the rank six Gu Immortal’s inheritance, and worked hard to cultivate for nearly a hundred years.

The three encouraged each other and worked hard together. When they all got to rank five, they felt that the time was ripe, and thus, left the inheritance grounds to exact revenge on Wu clan.

At that time, Wu clan was at the peak of their development.

The three kings did not use any schemes or plot, but went straight to their doorsteps. Wu clan leader was a rank five Gu Master, how could he endure the assault of three rank five Gu masters?

Especially when these three rank five Gu Masters inherited an ancient inheritance.

King Quan summoned his army of hounds, as he waved his hand, it was a mighty army. The hound groups were like the sea, engulfing Wu clan village.

King Xin was speedy and agile, moving like a spectre, she killed all of Wu clan’s higher ups, causing them to have no leaders and fall into chaos.

King Bao was violent and direct, once he attacked, it shocked the heavens, as he triggered the explosion of the mountain rocks.

The strong and invincible Wu clan, was exterminated by the three kings in three days.

The three mountains’ spirit springs were destroyed, as corpses lined the mountain trails, blood pouring on the ground, it was a grotesque sight.

Wu clan was completely wiped out, but the three kings paid a heavy price.

However, they were willing to do so for the sake of revenge.

After getting their revenge, the three kings felt that life had lost its meaning, they did not want to rebuild Wang clan, as a clan, no matter how strong they were, could not defend against true experts.

They started living in seclusion, no longer coming out. They vanished like three shooting stars, after causing the huge event in southern border, they disappeared quickly, never to be heard from again.

Nobody knows what happened to the three kings after that, until recently, when their inheritance appeared.

"King Quan has at least three rank five dog enslavement Gu. With them, one can enslave myriad beast kings, and command an army, conquering the world!"

"King Xin is most skilled at refining Gu, she developed a unique set of Gu worms from the common rank two paper crane Gu, allowing her to easily get information. It was because of her that King Quan and King Bao found out the security loophole in Wu clan village. She was a huge factor in eliminating Wu clan."

"And there is King Bao, his temper was like fire, every time he attacked, it would cause huge explosions that shook the lands. His power is wild and overbearing, whoever receives his inheritance would be able to stomp on the world!"

"Three rank five inheritances, getting one would allow one to rise to power, two would allow them to leave their names in history, and three would breed the ultimate overlord!"

"This is a huge opportunity, I will not be satisfied unless I try my best."

"I have to hurry there, if I am late, and others get it, I would regret it for life!"

As news of the entry method of the three kings inheritance got out, many people went wild in Shang clan city.

"I want to buy the exploding egg Gu."

"I want the paper crane Gu!"

"I want dog enslavement Gu, paper crane Gu, and exploding egg Gu!!"

"What, why are these Gu so expensive? The prices are three times as before!!"

"Tsk, get lost if you’re poor, there are lots of people waiting to buy."

"Damn it... I’ll buy it!"

"I want to buy, I have to buy it!"

Numerous people gritted their teeth, scolding the unscrupulous merchant under their breaths, but still took out their hard-earned money in great pain.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

That’s capitalism for you.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"During these last ten days, we earned twenty thousand on average a day. In total, the initial hundred thousand had already tripled, we have three hundred thousand now!" Holding onto the account book in her hand, Shang Xin Ci was surprised and delighted.

Ten days into the young master competition, Shang Xin Ci had already tripled the initial capital in her hands, she immediately pulled apart from her competitors.

Three hundred thousand, and this is only the amount earned from the young master’s capital. Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing had also invested much into this, right now they earned a fortune. Fang Yuan’s primeval elder Gu was no longer enough, as he bought two more, his total asset had reached two million and four hundred thousand.

Bai Ning Bing also earned a lot.

Shang Xin Ci’s servants, Xiao Die and Xiao Lan, looked at Fang Yuan with a colorful gaze.

They knew that this amazing result was all due to Fang Yuan.

A good start was half the success. The two servants were doubtful of Shang Xin Ci competing for the young master position, but now they had much more confident.

"But, how did Fang Yuan know such accurate information about the three kings inheritance?" Bai Ning Bing sat at one side as she felt suspicion.

The reason Fang Yuan was able to use this opportunity and earn this time was all due to the information he had.

Does that mean, Fang Yuan had some secret regarding the three kings inheritance? Or did he have a mysterious source of information?

No matter which it was, the truth shows that Fang Yuan was not simple at all.

Although Bai Ning Bing earned a lot as well, she felt a strong pressure in her heart.

She had spent a lot of time with Fang Yuan, she found that often, Fang Yuan would bring her some surprise when she least expects it.

Although he does not appear mysterious at all on the outside, he is, in fact, shrouded in a thick layer of fog.

Precisely because she had spent so much time with him, she could feel this and experience how unfathomable Fang Yuan was!

"Brother Hei Tu, thank you so much this time. With this three hundred thousand, I can better execute my plans now." Shang Xin Ci smiled and said.

But Fang Yuan waved his hand: "No worries, Xin Ci, you had a great idea, but it is very difficult to execute."

He continued: "A business that sells information in the battle stage is unlike us purchasing Gu in bulk. This time, I struck when your competitors were caught off guard, but most important, it was because Shang Ya Zi who controlled the shops was gone, and there was no one managing the Shang clan shops. Without a firm leader, even if others wanted to interfere, they could not do so, and could only watch us earn this profit."

"But an information business is different. To start this, not only do you have a great need for resources, you also need manpower and a huge network to assist you. Otherwise, your competitors will suppress and attempt to ruin your business. Our foundation is weak, we cannot afford any failed attempts. Once we invest in a business, it has to succeed. Thus, we need to make preparations."

Shang Xin Ci’s expression turned solemn, nodding: "Brother Hei Tu, you are right. But it has only been a few years since I came to Shang clan city, I only have Xiao Die and Xiao Lan to help me. As for network, I barely have any contacts."

Xiao Die was a servant she brought over from Zhang clan, she was loyal and now that she was nurtured as a Gu Master by Shang Xin Ci, she had decent aptitude of B grade.

As for Xiao Lan, she is a rank three healing Gu Master that Shang Yan Fei sent to assist Shang Xin Ci, she was reliable and trustworthy.

Fang Yuan laughed: "Xin Ci, don’t think too lowly of yourself. Shang Chi Wen who controls the battle stage has a good relationship with you."

"We can relate to each other because we are girls. At the same time, an intel business helps her revenue, I believe she will not object." Shang Xin Ci analyzed and said.

"Xin Ci, I said I’d help you get the young master position, I have my plans, and ample confidence of winning. No need to worry, just do what I say, there is a high chance of winning." Fang Yuan reassured.

"I will listen to Brother Hei Tu’s instructions." Shang Xin Ci laughed, replying with no hesitation.

Fang Yuan sat on the chair, his strategizing posture gave Shang Xin Ci a strong sense of security.

"Xin Ci, firstly, you have to recruit people. If you want to do this business, you need a large number of loyal subordinates. But before that, you need a manager. He needs to have rank three cultivation and must be able to hold his own, being experienced and capable at trading. I have already found such a person, his name is Zhou Quan, he was a shopkeeper under Shang Ya Zi." Fang Yuan continued to plan.

Shang Xin Ci was slightly dejected: "Zhou Quan? I know him. But he is a rank three Gu Master, he is arrogant and proud. He was once Zhou clan’s clan leader, having rank four cultivation. But after there was an internal strife, and the clan got slaughtered by demonic Gu Masters, he escaped with heavy injuries, thus only having rank three upper stage cultivation left. He takes care of the shops and always has the best performance among all the other shopkeepers. But even Shang Ya Zi could not get his loyalty, such a person, I am afraid..."

Fang Yuan waved his hand: "How would you know if you don’t try? Xin Ci, you have to become confident, trust me, you have a unique charisma. In the future, many people will serve you willingly and fight for you. Zhou Quan is a difficult target, you might not succeed, but as long as you display your sincerity, your hard work will definitely pay off."

"Yes, Brother Hei Tu, I will work hard!" Shang Xin Ci clenched her fists.

Fang Yuan nodded: "Good, then go ahead."

Not longer after Shang Xin Ci left, Wei Yang arrived at Nan Qiu garden.

Fang Yuan attended to him at the lake pavilion: "I understand why brother Wei is here, please take a seat."

Saying so, Fang Yuan poured Wei Yang a cup of tea.

Wei Yang laughed: "Brother Fang Zheng is wise, then please tell me about it."

Fang Yuan used the three kings inheritance to earn a fortune, it was all because he had secret information about it in advance.

Shang Yan Fei was no fool, he immediately knew Fang Yuan possessed valuable information.

The three kings inheritance was the largest event for the last fifty to sixty years. Right now, it had affected the entire southern border, and attracted the attention of many forces. But because in the southern border’s mountain terrain, danger lurked everywhere, it was not easy to get to the inheritance ground. Even so, many clans, as long as they could, sent out their respective groups of Gu Masters.

The inheritance of three rank five Gu Masters, even the super-class Shang clan would be moved.

"My information came from Bai Gu mountain. Grey Bone Scholar had once explored the three kings inheritance grounds, and gathered some information. The truth is, the three kings inheritance ground they discovered now is an ancient Gu Master’s blessed land." Fang Yuan answered in a half-truth manner.

His information was obviously not from Bai Gu mountain. But the information about the blessed land, it was true, he had confirmed it in his previous life.

"Blessed land?" Hearing this phrase, a brilliant light flashed across Wei Yang’s eyes.

Blessed land, blessed land, it is the land of blessings, the place of residence for Gu Masters after they become immortal.

In the blessed land, the scenery is like a drawing, having a unique atmosphere and large amounts of treasure and precious materials. The primeval essence inside is often dozens of times thicker and denser than the outside world.

A blessed land was an independent small world, a utopia, isolated from the world. The Gu Immortal rules the land, and anyone who lives in it can experience serenity and happiness.

"Brother Fang Zheng, are you serious?" Wei Yang’s tone became more anxious.

He had to be serious.

Rank five was mortal, rank six was immortal. Between rank five and six, there was a qualitative difference that made them world’s apart.

The inheritance of three rank five Gu Masters could only pique Shang clan’s interest. But if it involves the inheritance of a rank six Gu Immortal, then all of the super clans in the southern border would go crazy over it!

The inheritance of a rank six Gu Immortal was simply too valuable. It was so important that even those secluded rank six Gu Immortals would appear one after another!

Fang Yuan laughed: "I am not sure about the exact details, but in Grey Bone Scholar’s notes, that is what was written."

He was not afraid of exposing this information earlier, because there was no bad consequences in doing so.

According to his memories, in just a few days, people will start to develop an understanding of this. Anyway, after a short period, Shang clan would also learn of this. He might as well tell Wei Yang in advance to earn their trust.

"Brother Wei, calm down. Although this is a blessed land left by a rank six Gu Immortal, it had long been degenerating. Right now, it is on the brink of collapsing. Back in the day, this blessed land was occupied by the three kings and they dug out all of the resources and treasures inside. Right now, the three kings used this blessed land to build their inheritances, causing the blessed land to feel even greater pressure. Eventually, it will face destruction, and vanish into thin air." Fang Yuan said slowly.

"Oh, is that so?" Wei Yang blinked, as he rapidly processed the information.

"These were all recorded in Grey Bone Scholar’s notes, but to ensure my safety, I had already destroyed all these documents, I cannot show them to you." Fang Yuan smiled lightly.

"Brother, this is too big of a matter. It is not that I do not trust you, but I have to report to lord clan leader, and let him decide." Wei Yang was solemn.

Fang Yuan expressed his understanding: "If Shang clan wants to send out an exploration team, I have some information here that might be helpful."

Fang Yuan had some understanding of the things inside the inheritance.

"Haha, in that case, I cannot let you lose out. Give a price." Wei Yang was in charge of Feng Yu manor, and controlled intel in the city.

Fang Yuan thought about it, and said four hundred thousand.

Wei Yang frowned: "For information on the inheritance of a rank six Gu Immortal, four hundred thousand is... too little. But the reliability of the information has yet to be confirmed, I will pass you four hundred thousand first. After a while, when it is evaluated, no worries little brother, with your brother Wei here, you will not lose out."

"I am assured by brother Wei’s words." Fang Yuan laughed.

After getting this information, Shang Yan Fei paid great attention to it, sending three teams to San Cha mountain. Each team had at least three elders, it was a strong investment.

A few days later, Fang Yuan received the compensation from Wei Yang regarding the information.

The information he provided had helped Shang clan’s teams greatly, and avoided many deaths.

After getting the funds, Fang Yuan approached Li Ran.

Li Ran was a spy sent by Wu clan, right now he was inside third inner city battle stage, his identity was still a secret and nobody knew except Fang Yuan.

"I have some information about the three kings inheritance, I am sure your Wu clan would be interested." Fang Yuan met with Li Ran in secret and immediately said.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

The kindest man alive, giving out information so deaths can be avoided.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Days went by and with the news of the three kings inheritance, a time of unrest began at San Cha mountain.

Many formidable demonic Gu Masters, righteous Gu Masters and people of all occupations and goals rushed towards San Cha mountain.

At first, Shang clan controlled the situation, continually sending reinforcements and tyrannically occupying the inheritance entrances, displaying their determination towards obtaining this inheritance.

However, Wu clan moved and broke the blockade of Shang clan.

After that, news continued to spread. The fact that the site of three kings inheritance had been rank six Gu Immortal blessed land caused a huge uproar and countless people flocked towards San Cha mountain. Several other top ranked clans were also alarmed by the news and dispatched groups of formidable Gu Masters one after another.

With this, even Shang clan and Wu clan could not block the huge wave of people.

San Cha mountain fell into chaos.

There were casualties every day. To seize the chance to enter the inheritance, there were intense battles between righteous and demonic; demonic and demonic; righteous and righteous.

Every change in the situation in San Cha mountain affected the hearts of many people.

Fang Yuan was also paying close attention to this.

After the inheritance opened, close to a month had passed. Some people already gained some benefits in the inheritance, stimulating the passion of many others to explore the inheritance.

However, Fang Yuan did not care about these benefits. With the memories of his previous life, he knew that the true essence of three kings inheritance lied in the depths of the inheritance ground. There were at least a hundred barriers before one could reach there and it was a time and energy consuming process. Sometimes, people would be lost and trapped in fog, and not be able to find the exit. Sometimes, there would be attacks from dogs and many Gu Masters would die under these dogs’ sharp canine teeth.

The three kings were demonic Gu Masters; this was a demonic inheritance.

There were dangers lurking all over in demonic inheritances. In many cases, one needed to risk their lives to explore them.

"It is still too early to go to San Cha mountain, the time is not ripe yet. It is better to benefit from other’s efforts and preserve my strength. When they remove the barriers and clear the obstacles, that will be the time I seize the rewards. For now, I should refine Gu." Fang Yuan had already made a plan.

The Gu he was going to refine this time was none other than liquor worm!

Rank one liquor worm could purify green copper primeval essence by a small realm. Rank two four flavors liquor worm could purify red steel primeval essence by a small realm. Rank three seven fragrances liquor worm could purify white silver primeval essence by a small realm. Rank four nine eyes liquor worm could purify yellow gold primeval essence by a small realm.

Rank five liquor worm, however, did not exist. The recipe grandmaster who researched liquor worm’s recipe had an outstanding talent, but he was killed by enemies when he was young and died prematurely.

Geniuses only represented a possibility.

There were many cases of geniuses who were killed before they matured.

However, the current Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing could already be said to have matured; killing them would not be easy.

After Fang Yuan fused liquor worm into four flavors liquor worm, he had not used it and had only been raising it.

It was because he had bone flesh unity Gu and Bai Ning Bing’s help that the four flavors liquor worm lost its worth. However, it was different now.

Bai Ning Bing was now rank four while Fang Yuan was rank three peak stage; he would also advance to rank four initial stage not long later. At that time, their cultivation would be the same.

The help that bone flesh unity Gu could offer to Fang Yuan would decrease by a lot. At that time, a rank four nine eyes liquor worm would make his cultivation speed faster.

Refine the nine eyes liquor worm!

While Shang Xin Ci was starting to recruit Zhou Quan, Fang Yuan chose to go into closed door cultivation to refine Gu.

Bai Ning Bing also chose to go into closed door cultivation, refining Gu secretly.

To refine four flavors liquor worm, two rank one liquor worms and wine of sour, sweet, bitter and spicy flavors were required. To refine seven fragrances liquor worm, two four flavors liquor worm and seven types of spices were required.

To refine nine eyes liquor worm, one needed two seven fragrances liquor worm and eyeballs of nine different hundred beast kings.

Right now, Fang Yuan was at Shang clan city and had a huge advantage. If it was at other places, he would have to spend large amounts of energy to search for materials to refine liquor worm. However, at Shang clan city, he could easily buy them as long as he had money.

Fang Yuan already possessed a four flavors liquor worm. He bought two liquor worms and fused them into the second four flavors liquor worm.

He then fused these two four flavors liquor worm into seven fragrances liquor worm.

The process till this stage was smoothly finished by him. However, he ran into difficulty while refining the second seven fragrances liquor worm.

While he was fusing the third four flavors liquor worm and the second seven fragrances liquor worm, the fusion failed. The primeval stones spent on it were all wasted. He had to buy the supplementary materials and restart it again.

Fortunately, fusing the two seven fragrances liquor worm was completely smoothly. Three days later, Fang Yuan obtained a nine eyes liquor worm.

Nine eyes liquor worm was like a silkworm and was pure white like a pearl. There were no eyes on its head, but rather it had nine colors that resembled eyes - red, orange, yellow, green, blue and so on - as if they were precious gems embedded on its body.

Nine eyes liquor worm could purify yellow gold primeval essence by a small realm!

Fang Yuan had spent a lot to refine it, his expenses almost reaching two hundred thousand primeval stones.

No Gu Masters could avoid failures in refining Gu. Fang Yuan might have failed many times, but his luck was pretty good.

His failures was all concentrated in the early stage of refining four flavors liquor worm and seven fragrances liquor worm. At the final juncture, he had succeeded in one try.

What Gu Master feared the most in refining Gu was failing at the latter stage. That kind of loss was disastrous.

"I have nine eyes liquor worm now." Fang Yuan observed the Gu for a while before satisfiedly putting it into his aperture.

He was still only at rank three peak stage now and could not use the nine eyes liquor worm; he could only wait till he reached rank four before he used it.

Bai Ning Bing could use it.

However, yellow gold middle stage primeval essence had a strong cleansing effect towards the aperture walls. Bai Ning Bing possessed northern dark ice soul physique, and from what she said, her aptitude had already increased to ninety-six percent now. Nine eyes liquor worm would do more harm than good to her.

"When I reach rank four initial stage and use this nine eyes liquor worm, I will have yellow gold middle stage primeval essence. At that time, the quality of my primeval essence will, for the first time, surpass Bai Ning Bing." Fang Yuan could sense he was not far from reaching rank four realm.

Although they had undergone a ’vow’, he had never forgotten the danger called Bai Ning Bing.

Time passed day by day. A great demonic path figure appeared at San Cha mountain inheritance grounds after Kong Ri Tian.

He was Long Qing Tian, ’one who had dyed the sky blue before’, a famous poison path Gu Master. When he appeared in the inheritance grounds, he killed three

Shang clan elders with poison and gave a huge boost to the demonic path’s morale.

Fortunately, two days later, Wu clan sent the rank four Elder Wu Tong Shen to hold back Long Qing Tian. This brought back the situation in San Cha mountain to an equilibrium.

On Shang Xin Ci’s side, she, as expected, met setbacks when recruiting Zhou Quan and her progress was slow. Zhou Quan was proud and arrogant, his attitude did not ease even a little and his tone also seemed like he had no intentions to discuss.

After Fang Yuan succeeded in refining nine eyes liquor worm, he was putting all his energy in cultivating.

Because Bai Ning Bing was continuously supplying him with yellow gold primeval essence, his cultivation speed accelerated and was quickly approaching rank four realm.

However, these days, Spring Autumn Cicada’s recovery speed was also becoming faster and its pressure on Fang Yuan’s rank three aperture had become more obvious.

On this day, Shang clan city welcomed the Auspicious Festival.

This was Shang clan’s traditional festival, it was an important celebration that commemorated the ancestor, who founded Shang clan thousands of years ago, setting up a stall for the first time.

Shang clan’s first ancestor was a legendary figure.

He was originally a mortal who lived in poverty and made a livelihood by trading. On one certain transaction, he unexpectedly obtained a Gu Master’s inheritance token.

He relied on this token to inherit the legacy of the Gu Master and stepped into a whole new world. He moved forward steadily and step by step, his wealth and power expanded continuously until he finally founded Shang clan city.

Thus, on the day of the festival, Shang clan inner city was decorated with lanterns and colored banners. All large stores, brothels, restaurants and so on closed their business for the day. People were in a joyous mood and excitedly walked on the streets, setting up stalls. Men, women, old and young, all immersed in this lively atmosphere of the festival; on this day, buying and selling were treated as an interesting game.

However, the joyous atmosphere of the festival seemed to have no effect on Shang Xin Ci.

The young girl sat in front of a table with her beautiful brows in a slight frown as she looked at the several invitation cards on the table with melancholy.

These invitation cards all came from the nine young masters.

During Auspicious Festival, the young masters would hold grand banquets, inviting people of all sides and reward them.

"Big Brother Hei Tu, what should I do?" Shang Xin Ci was in a dilemma and subconsciously looked at Fang Yuan for guidance.

"Xin Ci, our sales have tripled your hundred thousand capital and you are now one of the most popular candidate to win the young master competition. They will naturally invite you to participate."

Fang Yuan smiled and continued: "However, we can only choose one of these nine invitations. On the surface, this looks like a joyous and harmonious banquet, but it is actually a political move to determine where you stand."

Fang Yuan explained the deep political meaning behind these invitations.

Shang clan only had ten young masters, there were alliance between these ten young masters and also internal conflicts.

Shang Xin Ci was competing for the young master position and was also one of the most popular candidates. Naturally, the nine young masters paid close attention to her. Shang Xin Ci had yet to become a young master but they were already trying to rope her in.

One had to make compromises in this world.

To be part of Shang clan’s higher-up, one could not avoid being engulfed by the political whirlpool.

"Should I choose Shang Chi Wen’s invitation? After all, she is in charge of battle stage and will be a great help to our later plans." Shang Xin Ci voiced out.

Fang Yuan shook his head: "It looks like there are nine invitations, but actually that is not the case. The biggest power among Shang clan young masters is Shang Qiu Niu who is the eldest son of the first wife and thus has the greatest advantage. Second faction is the alliance of Shang Pu Lao, Shang Suan Ni and Shang Bi Xi; this faction is currently in the limelight. Third faction is the alliance of Shang Chao Feng and Shang Fu Xi who are currently biding their time. Among the rest, Shang Chi Wen does not have any ambitions while Shang Pi Xiu is too playful..."

"Xin Ci, your foundation in Shang clan city is too weak. If you are going to choose, you need to choose between these three factions to make up for your weakness. As for Shang Chi Wen, there won’t be much of a difference whether you choose her or not."

"So it was like this..." Shang Xin Ci’s eyes brightened as she listened.

Hearing Fang Yuan’s words, she felt like she had dispelled the fog around her and was looking at the clear sky.

The bewilderment she was feeling earlier was swept away. She thought a little and made her choice.

She chose the third faction, Shang Chao Feng’s invitation.

"Among the three factions, the first and second faction are competing against each other; I will definitely be offending the other if I choose one of them. It is better to choose the third faction and enter this political whirlpool, but still stay out of it for the time being." Shang Xin Ci explained to Fang Yuan.

Shang Xin Ci immediately understood with her high intelligence.

Fang Yuan was happy at this but also felt a little irony.

In his previous life, Shang Chao Feng and Shang Xin Ci fought and contended for Shang clan leader’s position. To think that in this life, these two arch-enemies would instead choose to walk together.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Liquor worm is back in action <3

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Little brother here toasts to big brother." Shang Yi Fan stood up and bent his back while raising a cup of wine with a smile.

There were splendid lights all over the hall; singing and dancing were being performed, and traditional music flowed to everyone’s ears. Everyone was enjoying the feast and the atmosphere was intense.

"Good." Shang Qiu Niu was standing on the main seat. He raised a cup of wine towards Shang Yi Fan and downed the wine in one gulp.

Shang Qiu Niu’s advisor spoke, "Master Yi Fan, choosing to participate in young master Qiu Niu’s banquet is no doubt a sensible decision. Do not worry, my young master will not treat you unfairly."

"Eldest brother Qiu Niu has always been my role model. In truth, I have always been wanting to get closer to eldest brother and learn many things under you." Shang Yi Fan smiled.

Shang Qiu Niu was head of the first major faction among the current young masters and he happened to have deep relation with Shang Yi Fan’s mother’s side. If Shang Xin Ci chose Shang Qiu Niu’s side, she was certain to be pushed aside by Shang Yi Fan.

However, Shang Qiu Niu had already taken the initiative to send an invitation to Shang Xin Ci.

He would definitely be happy if Shang Xin Ci came.

Why?

Because on Shang Xin Ci’s side were Fang and Bai, two great rank four experts.

This was something no other young master had, and many were envious of this.

"Young master, subordinate has inquired, that Shang Xin Ci went to ..." At this moment, a Gu Master entered the hall and whispered to Shang Qiu Niu’s ear with his waist bent.

Shang Qiu Niu’s gaze turned slightly gloomy when he got the information.

Shang Yi Fan cautiously observed Shang Qiu Niu’s expression and pondered, "Looks like Shang Xin Ci didn’t choose eldest brother’s faction, did she go to Shang Pu Lao’s faction?"

Shang Qiu Niu had already experienced a lot of things, thus his feelings did not show clearly on his face. His expression also had no change, so Shang Yi Fan could only guess without any clues.

However, a short while later, Shang Yi Fan also received the news. Shang Xin Ci had accepted the invitation to participate in Shang Chao Feng’s festival banquet.

This signified she chose Shang Chao Feng’s faction.

Shang Yi Fan could not help but be secretly delighted immediately upon receiving the news, "Shang Chao Feng and Shang Fu Xi might be the third faction but they have been pressured from the start, how could they be Eldest Brother Qiu Niu’s match? I have now even more chance to take the young master position!"

However, the old steward Zhang shook his head, his expression heavy, "Master, young master Qiu Niu’s faction and young master Pu Lao’s faction are locked in a fight. I am afraid the possibility of master borrowing the help of young master Qiu Niu to deal with Shang Xin Ci is not very big."

"This..."

"At this critical moment, young master Qiu Niu cannot afford to make another enemy. Shang Xin Ci’s choice is clever. She has avoided the political whirlpool and managed to watch from the sidelines for the moment. By the time the two factions resolve their issues, the competition for the young master position will already be over."

"Shang Xin Ci has two great rank four experts, any faction she chooses will readily accept her and make an alliance. Young master Shang Chao Feng will definitely help her."

Old steward Zhang gave an incisive analysis of the situation.

"That is to say, even though I joined Shang Qiu Niu’s faction, I still can’t deal with Shang Xin Ci?" Shang Yi Fan’s expression became unsightly.

"I can only say that we cannot borrow Shang Qiu Niu’s strength." Old steward Zhang stroked his grizzled beard, " However, Shang Xin Ci’s problem is also not small. The most important thing is that she still lacks capable manpower. I heard that she has been trying to recruit Zhou Quan. Hmph, how can that even be possible?"

Old steward sneered and continued, "Zhou Quan was once a clan leader; he is proud and arrogant, and his ability is ten times of mine. How would it be possible for such a man to attach himself to this inexperienced little girl? I have already secretly mobilized people to create all kinds of rumors and slanders. Zhou Quan cares for his reputation very much, and the rumors have already prevented him from joining Shang Xin Ci. Shang Xin Ci is trying to recruit Zhou Quan secretly, but by failing to do so, she will lose a lot of her prestige and will have a disadvantageous beginning; she might even become a laughing stock. Hehehe..."

When he reached the end of his words, steward Zhou started laughing evilly.

Shang Chao Feng’s study was arranged in a simple fashion; there was a wide stone table and wide backed stone chairs which gave a boorish and strong aura.

Just as Shang Yi Fan and old steward Zhang were talking, Shang Chao Feng, Shang Xin Ci along with Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were also discussing something.

This discussion had already continued on for a while.

In truth, Shang Chao Feng was somewhat surprised at Shang Xin Ci joining his side.

He had thought Shang Xin Ci would join Shang Qiu Niu or Shang Pu Lao. His own faction was only ranked third and they were currently just watching from the sidelines while accumulating their strength. In normal times, they were very low key and would choose to retreat when there were problems or contradictions. They had never thought they could obtain Shang Xin Ci’s interest.

Shang Xin Ci’s cultivation was only at rank one, while her aptitude was worse and she had almost no foundation in Shang clan city.

However, she had Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

These were two great rank four powers; even Shang Yan Fei when he was a young master, did not have such experts with him.

To be able to have two such experts under her, there were no young masters who did not feel envious.

Shang Chao Feng had also naturally sighed inwardly at Shang Xin Ci’s luck.

Now, if he accepted Shang Xin Ci, he could indirectly obtain Fang and Bai’s help. This was a temptation Shang Chao Feng could not refuse.

The atmosphere in the study was harmonious.

In the talk just earlier, Shang Chao Feng already sincerely expressed his intention to whole-heartedly support Shang Xin Ci in the young master competition.

"Sister Xin Ci, you have already earned three hundred thousand primeval stones from selling Gu worms. We can say that you are at the top currently, but just three hundred thousand is far from enough. What do you plan on doing next?"

Shang Chao Feng then added, "Just say it and I will help you to the best of my abilities."

Shang Xin Ci glanced at Fang Yuan; Fang Yuan faintly nodded his head.

She then said honestly, "I won’t hide it from Big Brother Chao Feng, I am thinking of doing information-gathering business."

"Information-gathering business?" Shang Chao Feng could not help but raise his brows.

"Yes." Shang Xin Ci started to explain her plan in detail.

Who knew Shang Chao Feng’s expression would change and shake his head after hearing it, "You want to do information-gathering business regarding the battle stage? It is not suitable, not suitable."

He said ’not suitable’ twice, expressing his clear disagreement with Shang Xin Ci’s plan.

"Ah, what could be wrong about it? Please teach me Big Brother Chao Feng," Shang Xin Ci said in a sincere voice.

"Xin Ci, I urge you to change this plan. You are a newcomer and so you aren’t clear about it, it is understandable. You should not bump about with the battle stage randomly."

Shang Chao Feng heaved a sigh and continued, "Shang clan city’s battle stage is different from other clans’ battle stage. Here, demonic Gu Masters can become our Shang clan’s external elders. This is a policy exclusive to our Shang clan and we have been able to obtain many talents from this. At present, there are five great elders in Shang clan, among which three are external elders."

"However, this policy has both advantage and disadvantage. The greater the benefits, the higher the chance of malpractice. External elders are the higher ups of our Shang clan, and if some trouble enters through it, it will be a great disaster to our Shang clan. Demonic Gu Masters are after all demonic Gu Masters, and even if they change and become righteous, their loyalty can still be questioned. At the same time, besides the demonic Gu Masters, there are also those righteous path clans with unfathomable motives. Thus, Shang clan’s battle stage is the place which has always been attached with the most importance by Shang clan higher-ups."

"There was once a young master who suddenly got an inspiration to start a betting house for the battle stage’s matches. The result was that he earned five hundred thousand primeval stones after just two days of opening the betting house. However, on the third day, the betting house was closed down and the young master was demoted and exiled. This is the best warning that shows that the battle stage cannot be touched randomly."

Shang Chao Feng spoke of a story only known to insiders.

This information was something Fang Yuan, Bai Ning Bing and Shang Xin Ci did not know.

Fang Yuan might have the memories of his previous life, but it was normal to not know of this small secret historical incident about the Shang clan’s internal affairs, even more so when it was closed down so fast.

The battle stage was a forbidden zone. That young master touched this place and lost his young master position and was even exiled from the clan.

At present, Shang Xin Ci was still not a young master but had a plan towards the battle stage. This made Shang Chao Feng realize that ignorance was truly blissful.

"Xin Ci, your plan is a new approach and you have thought of it properly. If it is done, you will definitely make large amount of profits every day. However, the possibility is too low, don’t take your own future prospects as a joke. I am in charge of the Gu battle zone and your thirteenth brother is in charge of the auction sites; you can lend us a hand in this field and will be able to go head to head against Shang Yi Fan." Shang Chao Feng gently persuaded.

Shang Xin Ci was silent.

Bai Ning Bing furrowed her brows.

The corner of Fang Yuan’s lips curled up into a smile and he was about to speak, but after taking a glance at Shang Xin Ci, he changed his decision and swallowed up the words that were just about to come out of his throat.

For a moment, the atmosphere in the study room had become heavy.

After quite a while of intense pondering, Shang Xin Ci suddenly smiled: "Big Brother Chao Feng, I have a different viewpoint regarding the battle stage. This is well worth doing!"

"Huh?" Shang Chao Feng frowned and fixed his gaze at Shang Xin Ci.

Under the pressure from Shang Chao Feng’s gaze, Shang Xin Ci instead smiled and showed her confident look.

She continued, "The young master before failed after opening the betting house, he was like a moth attracted to fire and was looking for his own doom. His punishment was only by being expelled from the clan; this can be considered merciful from our Shang clan. Why?"

In the study, only Shang Xin Ci’s gentle voice continued to sound out.

"Like Big Brother Chao Feng said, our Shang clan’s battle stage is of the highest importance and has been extremely guarded by the higher ups. Opening a betting house for battle stage to earn huge money will likely give rise to people who will manipulate the battle stage’s result from behind the scenes. This will greatly wreck the Shang clan’s external elder policy. It looks like one can make enormous profits from the betting house, but to the Shang clan’s battle stage, it is a very large vermin. Sacrificing Shang clan’s benefits to fill oneself, such actions definitely need to be eliminated and only then can it let the battle stage continue to mature."

Shang Chao Feng continuously nodded his head; Shang Xin Ci’s words were incisive and had a type of aura that made people want to have faith in it.

"But the information business I want to do has a completely different nature from the betting house. I know Shang clan’s biggest information organization Feng Yu manor has always been investigating into the demonic Gu Masters at the battle stage. They must investigate properly, to know whether these demonic Gu Masters harbor evil intentions. However, these investigation are done in secret and never openly. Why?"

"Hehe. This is because most of the demonic Gu Masters are filled with distrust, doubts and even are overly suspicious. They live in danger all year round in a situation where their life hangs on a thread, so the mental pressure on them is so great that they cannot even relax a bit. And if they were investigated after coming to Shang clan city, they would definitely react badly and be filled with hatred. If Shang clan wants to absorb even more and even better talents, they naturally can’t investigate openly. However, not investigating is even more impossible and the clan cannot be at ease."

"In this situation, I am going to do information-gathering business. I am going to investigate every Gu Master’s general strength, Gu worms and battle achievements, and sell this information. At the same time, I will be requesting experts and authority to forecast the results of important matches and make a ranking. This will be very important information to the Gu Masters participating in the battle stage. Many Gu Masters wish to obtain an external elder’s position and they hope for more fame, and also wish to see their names on the rankings."

"These information will naturally not touch upon secret matters and will only be a summary and comparison of the strength showed by the Gu Masters. To demonic Gu Masters on the battle stage, this will be a great help. At the same time, this will allow the Shang clan to strengthen their grasp more on the battle stage. I think my lord father will definitely be happy about this, why would he suppress such a thing?"

Shang Xin Ci finished explaining her reason and looked at Shang Chao Feng with a smile.

At this moment, her eyes were burning bright with wisdom and confidence, displaying unlimited elegance.

Bai Ning Bing’s brows had also smoothed out.

"This is it..." Fang Yuan inwardly smiled.

Shang Chao Feng slightly opened his mouth, looking at Shang Xin Ci with a stupefied expression.

After several seconds, he came back to his senses and could not help applauding and praising her, "Good point, your analysis is brilliant. Sister Xin Ci, you have a truly unique vision, a pure heart and spirit, I can’t help but admire you. I will definitely help you with all my strength for this business. You lack manpower now, I can give you people from my side! You can have as many as you want!"

Shang Xin Ci shook her head, "Thank you Big Brother Chao Feng, but I have already made my choice regarding the manpower."

Shang Chao Feng looked like he wanted to help Shang Xin Ci on the surface by sending people, but actually, he wanted to place his own people to control this information-gathering business and also strengthen his control over Shang Xin Ci.

However, Shang Xin Ci immediately saw through it and tactfully refused.

Not all help comes with good intentions.

However, Shang Chao Feng was not willing to let it go; the information-gathering business he was avoiding so much earlier had become a rich treasure right now.

He continued to persuade: "Sister Xin Ci, I know you have been trying to recruit Zhou Quan recently, but this person is very proud and contemptuous. Shang Qiu Niu had personally tried to recruit him before, but was refused and was even reprimanded with the words: ’an inexperienced junior dares to recruit me, a hundred year old man?’."

Zhou Quan was now already over a hundred years old, and would not willingly submit to someone, especially a junior.

Shang Chao Feng was not optimistic about Shang Xin Ci recruiting Zhou Quan.

Zhou Quan had the ability and was also recognized for it, but he was too arrogant.

"Let’s take a step back and say that you managed to recruit Zhou Quan. What can one man do? You still don’t have middle and lower level subordinates. These people also must have some ability, most importantly they should be loyal to you. Establishing such force requires time, a long time. With subordinates that you don’t feel at ease, even if you do this information-gathering business, it might very well be destroyed by Shang Yi Fan and he can even steal your gains." Shang Chao Feng might have his own intentions but his words were very reasonable.

Shang Xin Ci’s beautiful brows could not help but furrow when she heard it.

"Regarding this... young master Chao Feng does not need to worry. I already have a plan." At this time, Fang Yuan suddenly spoke.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

That’s very reassuring Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Is that so." Shang Chao Feng replied curtly.

Fang Yuan had personally rejected his proposal for Shang Xin Ci, he could not force them.

Fang Yuan had defeated Ju Kai Bei, had rank three peak stage cultivation but his actual fighting strength was rank four. At the same time he had the purple thorn token, and was an esteemed guest in Shang clan. Because of all these, Shang Chao Feng had already been showing goodwill towards Fang and Bai.

But he was scoffing in his heart.

"Hmph, trying to establish a force. It needs time, how can they succeed instantly? Nevermind, I'll let you guys learn from mistakes. When you fail, I will come out and help you, I would be able to earn more then." Shang Chao Feng contemplated, but he still smiled warmly.

The two discussed for a while more, before Shang Chao Feng sent Shang Xin Ci and the others personally to the exit.

To outsiders, this was an obvious political signal.

After saying bye to Shang Chao Feng, Shang, Fang, and Bai walked onto the streets.

Today was the Auspicious Festival, most of the shops were closed, and two rows small temporary stalls were on the two sides of the road.

"Come, come, come, sour and sweet candied fruits!"

"Let me tell you, this old jade was passed down by my ancestors..."

"Selling rice, selling rice, a bag of five fragrance oil rice for half a primeval stone."

The small stalls were situated one after another, selling all sorts of things. The two rows spread out as far as the eye could see, as people squeezed about as they tried to buy things, while others watched in a circle, some were bargaining and some were looking around.

The Auspicious Festival was held once a year, be it Fang Yuan, Bai Ning Bing or Shang Xin Ci, they were not foreign to it.

"Counting the days, we have already been in Shang clan city for nearly three years." Shang Xin Ci suddenly said in an emotional tone.

"Too many things had happened in the last few years." She sighed, continuing: "If it was before, I would never have guessed I would be Shang clan leader's daughter."

Next, Shang Xin Ci looked at Fang Yuan, smiling slightly, showing her pure white teeth: "If it was not for Brother Hei Tu, I would not have made it this far."

Towards Fang and Bai, Shang Xin Ci always felt extremely grateful to them.

Bai Ning Bing looked speechlessly, the corner of her eyes twitching.

"Indeed, I did not think your father would be the famous Shang Yan Fei! But, it was fate that I saved you. People come and go, that is natural in this world." Fang Yuan looked ahead as he answered.

Shang Xin Ci's expression changed, she understood what he meant: "Brother Hei Tu, you are going to leave Shang clan city?"

"That's right. Soon, I will have to leave Shang clan city with Bai Ning Bing, heading towards San Cha mountain." Fang Yuan said.

Shang Xin Ci gritted her teeth, she wanted to tell him to stay, but she did not say it in the end.

She had spent a lot of time with Fang Yuan, although they never talked about it, she could feel the ambitions in his heart.

This man’s ambition was too great, a place like Shang clan city could not hold him.

"But there is no need to worry. Before I leave, I will make you a young master, and make sure you sit there securely." Fang Yuan laughed: "Let’s go, I’ll bring you to recruit some subordinates. Today, let’s complete the foundation for your future force."

"What, brother Hei Tu, you have ideal candidates already?" Shang Xin Ci asked in surprise.

Organising a force takes a very long time.

It takes years of nurturing to obtain loyal subordinates.

Fang Yuan’s tone made Shang Xin Ci feel that loyal and capable subordinates were like cabbage, easily found in the market.

On what basis was he so confident and assured?

Not just Shang Xin Ci, even Bai Ning Bing was curious.

"Just follow me." Fang Yuan walked ahead, leading the way.

After many twists and turns, they finally arrived at a small alley.

In the middle of a lantern shop and silk shop, there was a small stall.

Fang Yuan walked towards the front of this stall.

Behind the stall, there was a young man lying down.

This young man wore tattered clothes as he leaned on the wall, his eyes half-closed, in a dazed expression as his complexion was poor. He looked like he was drunk, and had completely given up on life.

"Is this young man the person brother Hei Tu is looking for?" Shang Xin Ci analyzed.

Bai Ning Bing used her sharp instincts to assess this man. Although he was a Gu Master, he only had rank one middle stage cultivation, from his appearance, he was not young already, but only had this cultivation, it was pathetic.

"Hi brother, what do you want to buy... oh, Lord Fang Zheng!" The young man sensed people and opened his eyes, but halfway through his words, he showed shock and fluster.

Fang Yuan was now a famous person in Shang clan city, without concealing his appearance, many people could recognise him.

"Lord Bai... Bai Ning Bing." Immediately after, he recognised Bai Ning Bing, and he stammered.

Although he did not know Shang Xin Ci, from her Gu Master aura and her beautiful appearance, he felt dazed.

"This is ten primeval stones, I am buying everything here, you can leave now." Fang Yuan tossed a bag of primeval stones.

The young man’s face showed joy and exhilaration.

But next, he was slightly hesitant.

The stuff he was selling here were the things his grandfather left behind. From his appraisal, all these were scrap and trash, there was nothing valuable.

But why, why did Lord Fang Zheng want to buy them? Was there really a treasure among them?

If there were treasures, would it not be a loss if he sold them?

Just when he was still pondering, Fang Yuan already tossed the primeval stones to him.

"What are you thinking about? You didn’t listen to what I said? Hmph, it is your honor that I wanted to buy these. You can scram now, if you don’t, you will not have the chance to leave this place." Fang Yuan threatened.

The young man was scared until he trembled.

He stammered as he shivered: "Lord... Lord Fang Zheng, you cannot do this. In business, we emphasize on will... willingness. You cannot forcefully buy them like this, you are someone with great reputation... and this is Shang clan city..."

Smack.

Fang Yuan gave him a tight slap and this young man fell on the ground.

"Scram." Fang Yuan declared, using an icy gaze to look at this young man, speaking emotionlessly.

The young man held his face as he trembled under the great fear. He raised his head to look at Fang Yuan, but immediately looked away when he made contact with the abyss-like pupils. He fumbled his way out of the alley silently immediately after.

"Brother Hei Tu..." Shang Xin Ci looked at his background, her conscience unable to stand it.

Bai Ning Bing was expressionless, completely unmoved.

"Xin Ci, I am a demonic Gu Master, I have my ways of doing things, I emphasize on straightforwardness." Fang Yuan explained casually in a righteous tone.

The surrounding stall owners looked towards him.

He gave a sweeping glance, and everyone looked away, afraid to make eye contact.

If it was Fang Yuan in the past, he would have to control himself and use coaxing, lying methods to buy the item in the stall peacefully.

But now, his strength had surged, and his status was much higher, thus he can use the most direct method. It saves energy and time, why not do this?

People from the righteous path loved their reputation, and liked showing off their ’kindness’, often doing good deeds for the weak.

But Fang Yuan was not righteous, he was from the demonic path.

Since ancient times, big fish eats small fish, small fish eats shrimps, this was the law of the jungle, the survival of the fittest.

Demonic cultivators were used to tearing apart flesh and blood, devouring them whole. Righteous cultivators however, will shed crocodile tears while they ate, claiming that they had no choice.

Many stupid people will fall for their deception. Or maybe they were lying to themselves, unwilling to accept the cruel reality.

Hehe.

The truth is, eating will be eating.

Usurper eats the usurped, invader eats the invaded, the strong eats the weak, the suppressor eats the suppressed, the higher-ups eat the lower levels...

All livings beings eat, if not, they would not survive. It is just that they have different eating habits.

Fang Yuan chased that stall owner away and lowered his body, picking a token from among the items in the stall.

This token was made of black steel, ugly and dirty, with half a piece remaining. There were words carved on it but after so long, and without the other half of its body, the words could not be discerned.

But Fang Yuan knew this word was ’Fan’.

Three hundred years ago, a demonic Gu Master was heavily injured and fell into the water, eventually saved by a young lady who was at the river.

The young girl was very kind, after saving the demonic Gu Master, she placed him in the shed and gave him food to eat daily.

After the demonic Gu Master recovered, to thank her kindness, he made a black steel token, carving a ’Fan’ word.

He split the token into two, giving half to the girl while keeping the other half himself.

Before the demonic Gu Master left, he instructed the girl: In future, if you have any difficulties, you can go the Dan Huo mountain’s Gui Ku cave, and find me for help. Even after you pass away, this promise will still be effective to the future owner of the half-token.

The young girl engraved his words into her heart, but after less than fifty years, there was a huge battle on Dan Huo mountain, and the volcano erupted, destroying Gui Ku cave. That demonic Gu Master was captured by Tie clan and thrown into the demon suppression tower.

This half-token lost its use after that. It was passed around by the young girl’s descendants.

Because it involved the demonic path, when the young girl died of old age, she did not reveal the secret to her children, bringing this information to her grave.

The young girl’s descendants were chased away by the clan, and eventually settled down in Shang clan city, as the lineage declined. Descendants were untalented and unfilial, after several generations, only this young man remained.

This young man was spoiled from young, having a ’young master’ temper, and loved to gamble, drink, and visit prostitutes. After his parents died, he would rely on selling his family assets from time to time to survive.

But one time, during the auspicious market festival, his life changed.

Three brothers who were demonic Gu Masters came here to shop, and accidentally found the half-token displayed in the stall.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Here is Chibi’s one time expenditure token "Anti-cliffhanger token". Another chapter up in 2 hours.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The three instantly became overjoyed, taking out the other half of the token and formed the whole token on the spot.

So it turns out, the demonic Gu Master back then had his descendants too. Before he was arrested by Tie clan, he instructed his descendants, to remember this incident and, if possible in the future, repay that kindness.

The three brothers were descendants of this demonic Gu Master, after seeing this token, they immediately explained the matter to this young stall owner, asking him if he needed any help; they would do their best to assist him.

This young man was very crafty.

He immediately replied, he lacked three subordinates and there was nobody around to help him.

The three brothers glanced at each other, before kneeling down together, promising that they would serve the young man for twenty years.

They would listen to all of his orders for twenty years, but after that, they would be free.

These three brothers were famous in the battle stage, they each had rank three cultivation, and were most skilled in multi battles.

The young man relied on the strength of the three brothers, living the next twenty years in luxury. During the period, he asked the three brothers to get food, water, primeval stones for him, and they acceded to all of his requests.

But after twenty years, the three brothers repaid the favor and left. He had long forgotten how to work, and was too ashamed to beg, in fact, he did not even restrain himself, continuing to live like a king. Less than half a month later, he died.

Of course, all these happened in Fang Yuan’s previous life.

At the moment, the three demonic Gu masters have not found the half-token yet.

And this token was already in Fang Yuan’s hands. As for that young man, who cares if he dies?

According to his memories, this half-token would only be discovered by the three demonic Gu Master brothers next year.

But now that Fang Yuan held the half-token, he brought Bai Ning Bing and Shang Xin Ci to find them directly.

The three brothers also opened a stall before their home, enjoying the festive mood and were having fun.

"Ah? It is Lord Fang Zheng! And Lord Bai Ning Bing." Seeing Fang and Bai, the three quickly got up.

They had all been thrashed by Fang Yuan or Bai Ning Bing before in the battle stage.

In this world, strength was everything, even more so for demonic Gu Masters. Bai Ning Bing had rank four cultivation, while Fang Yuan defeated Ju Kai Bei, there was no demonic Gu Master who did not respect the two.

"I am here today to find the three of you." Fang Yuan observed the three brothers emotionlessly.

These three brothers all had the surname Xiong.

The eldest was called Xiong Tu, shortest among the three, humble and honest. He was an earth path rank three upper stage Gu Master.

Second was Xiong Huo, wearing a sleeveless shirt and shorts, his body was bright red. He was a fire path rank three middle stage Gu Master.

The youngest was Xiong Feng, wearing a bamboo hat, having sharp tiny eyes, and enjoys squinting when he looks at people. He was a wind path rank three initial stage Gu Master.

Hearing Fang Yuan’s words, the three brothers became uneasy.

Xiong Tu quickly cupped his fist, greeting Fang Yuan: "Lord Fang Zheng, may I know what is the issue? If my brothers had offended you unknowingly, I apologise to you here."

Fang Yuan frowned slightly: "I’m sure you’ve heard, I had given up on the battle stage to assist Shang Xin Ci in becoming a young master. We are lacking manpower over here, I want all three of you to join us."

"This..." The three Xiong clan brothers frowned.

They came to Shang clan city and entered the battle stage for only one reason: to become Shang clan’s external elder.

But now that Fang Yuan wanted them to assist Shang Xin Ci, it was very different from their goals. Shang Xin Ci was just an inexperienced girl, and only had rank one cultivation with poor aptitude. The three of them all had B grade aptitude, and their combination strike could temporarily match a rank four Gu Master.

Asking them to go under Shang Xin Ci and be her subordinate, the three brothers were unwilling.

If others said this, the three brothers would have attacked already, beating the guy to a pulp. But it was Fang Yuan who said it, causing the three to be in a difficult position.

Fang Yuan had defeated Ju Kai Bei in a battle, they had watched it personally, even if they joined forces, they could not defeat Fang Yuan.

"Fang Zheng is here with ill-intention."

"He is obviously trying to forcefully subdue us!"

"Sigh, what bad luck to have been targeted by Fang Zheng. All three of us cannot defeat him, and he even has Bai Ning Bing beside him. Moreover, the purple thorn token..."

The three brothers looked at each other, knowing each other’s emotions. The three of them were unwilling, but circumstances forced their hand, they could only choose to give in.

But Fang Yuan suddenly said: "I do not wish to force you, come if you are willing to, if not, I will not force you."

The three brothers glanced at each other, unsure if Fang Yuan was speaking the truth, or just trying to act graceful.

But Xiong Feng who was the youngest, was the most daring, as he said carefully: "Lord Fang Zheng, to speak the truth, we are used to freedom. We do not want to be involved in Shang clan’s young master competition. Thus, thus..."

The other two smiled meekly, as they bowed towards Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing apologetically.

"Oh?" Fang Yuan’s brows raised, as a cold light shot out of his eyes: "The three of you are really daring, you dare to reject my invitation?"

The three brothers’ heart thumped.

Xiong Tu quickly cupped his fists, explaining in a hurry: "That is not the case, that is not the case. Lord Fang Zheng, please do not misunderstand, it is our honor to have received your invitation. My brother was too nervous, he did not know what he was saying. Actually what he wanted to say was, we would be glad to go under Lady Shang Xin Ci’s wing."

"Yes, yes, that was what I meant." Xiong Feng continued.

"Hehe, in that case, I am assured. The three of you are so eager, Xin Ci, accept them." Fang Yuan turned around, saying to Shang Xin Ci.

Beside him, Bai Ning Bing frowned. Forcing them to join like this, he would not get their loyalty, such a distant subordinate, what use would it be?

Shang Xin Ci had the same worry, but she still chose to believe Fang Yuan. She took a step forward, saying to the three brothers: "From now on, please work hard."

"Yes."

"The three brothers of Xiong clan pays respect to Lady Xin Ci."

The three cupped their fists and bowed, replying listlessly.

"Hahaha..." Fang Yuan raised his head and laughed.

The three brothers thought: This Fang Zheng is too despicable, leading the life of a whore but still expecting a monument praising chastity 1 . Speaking in a righteous manner but acting like a despicable crook.

"That’s right, I forgot something, take a good look." Fang Yuan stopped laughing, and took out a half-token, tossing it to Xiong Tu.

Xiong Tu caught it subconsciously.

"What is this?" The other two brothers glanced curiously.

But immediately, the three brothers were stunned.

"This, this is?!" The calm and stable Xiong Tu cried out.

Xiong Huo grabbed the token, inspecting it closely.

Xiong Feng also understood what happened, as he urged his brother Xiong Tu: "Brother, quickly take out our token."

Under Bai Ning Bing and Shang Xin Ci’s weird gaze, Xiong Tu took out the other half of the token.

The two half-tokens perfectly fit into one, and a illusionary fire started to burn on the token.

"This, this is real!" Xiong clan’s three brothers stared with wide-opened eyes.

Xiong Tu held the token with shivering arms.

"What is going on?" Bai Ning Bing and Shang Xin Ci had no clue what was happening.

"The three brothers of Xiong clan, did you really think I came here without a reason? Why are you hesitating?" Fang Yuan spoke at an appropriate moment.

His words woke them up.

"Grandfather once said, no matter who the token’s owner was, even if it was an enemy, we have to repay the kindness from back then!"

"That’s right, although grandfather is trapped, we cannot ruin his reputation."

"From now on, Lady Shang Xin Ci is our new master. But, only for twenty years. Twenty years is sufficient to repay the debt."

The three brothers discussed among themselves quickly.

Next, all three of them kneeled on one knee in front of Shang Xin Ci, cupping their fists.

"Xiong Tu, Xiong Huo, Xiong Feng, the three brothers greets Lady Xin Ci!" They shouted loudly, with a different tone from before, filled with drive and excitement.

"Brother Hei Tu, what is happening?" Shang Xin Ci found out that they were sincerely joining her, and felt extremely curious.

Fang Yuan snickered: "It is a long story. We will talk about it next time, now, let’s go recruit some more members."

The gang of six arrived at the slave market.

In the world, there was slave trade. Any strong or affluent first-class clan, or super clan, would engage in slave business.

Shang clan’s slave trade was handled by the head of the five clan elders, Shang Bu Li personally.

Slave trade was too profitable, the higher-ups were not confident of letting an external elder handle it. In history, only Shang clansmen were in charge of it.

Fang Yuan had planned early on, and investigated clearly. He walked ahead, leading the way, quickly arriving at a cage.

Within the cage, there were many people.

"Lady Xin Ci, Lord Fang Zheng, Lord Bai Ning Bing, are you here to purchase slaves? If that is the case, I do not advise you to buy the people inside this cage." A Gu master in charge of handling business quickly came over.

"Oh? What is that so?" Shang Xin Ci asked.

"Lady Xin Ci does not know, these people are from Wei clan. Wei clan had a political uprising some time ago, and Wei clan leader was overthrown by his younger brother. The people inside this cage are from the previous clan leader’s faction. They are being sold now by the current Wei clan leader." The Gu Master answered.

Xin Ci immediately understood why he advised them not to buy these slaves.

Wei clan was a first-class clan. Although it was smaller than Shang clan, it was still a famous clan in the southern border.

Wei clan’s political turbulence was said to be supported by Shang Yan Fei. The current Wei clan leader even sent the clansmen to Shang clan as hostage. Many Wei clan elders also secretly transferred their assets to Shang clan.

Wei clan could be said to be Shang clan’s puppet already.

For Shang Xin Ci who was competing to become Shang clan young master, these people were trouble.

But Fang Yuan quickly said: "We are buying these people."

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Isekai slave harem arc let’s go!!!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"This... Lord Fang Zheng, are you certain on buying them?" The Gu Master in charge hesitated.

"Why, are you doubting my decision?" Fang Yuan gave him a plain glance.

This Gu Master laughed, he was a Shang clansmen, he was not afraid of Fang Yuan like the Xiong clan brothers.

"I wouldn’t dare, I wouldn’t dare." He cupped his fists, turning to Shang Xin Ci: "If I am not wrong, Lord Fang is buying these slaves to act as subordinates for Lady Xin Ci. But they are really bad news for those competing for the young master position. Lady Xin Ci, you are so intelligent, what do you think?"

Shang Xin Ci’s eyes were focused on Fang Yuan, she smiled and replied : "Brother Hei Tu’s decision is my decision. Just do as he says."

"Is that so." The Gu Master in charge was stunned, before smiling: "Since Lady Xin Ci says so, I will do so accordingly. To speak the truth, I am your supporter Lady Xin Ci..."

"You are speaking too much." Fang Yuan gave the Gu Master a cold stare, interrupting him coldly.

"Hehe." The Gu Master laughed: "Then I shall settle the procedures for you, but there are too many people, there will be a lot of procedures to go through, you need to wait a day. A day later..."

Bam!

Fang Yuan raised his leg and kicked.

That Gu Master did not expect Fang Yuan to strike, and was caught off guard and hit on the stomach.

Flying over thirty steps away, he knocked onto a bystander and landed on the ground, falling unconscious after vomiting blood.

"Who dares to fight in Shang clan city?"

"Are you tired of living?!"

"Quickly surrender yourself!"

Such commotion immediately attracted attention. The slave market was heavily guarded in the first place, quickly, three groups of Gu Masters came and surrounded them.

"It was me." Fang Yuan had no fear, standing up.

"It’s Fang Zheng!" The riled up group saw Fang Yuan and immediately lost their vigor.

Fang Yuan had rank four battle strength, they were only rank two and their leader who had the highest cultivation was rank three initial stage. They could not even be side dishes for Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan stood on the spot and took out his purple thorn token.

The Shang clan Gu Masters saw the token and their aura diminished once more.

The leader’s fierce and terrifying face quickly changed, as he smiled and politely said to Fang Yuan: "Lord Fang Zheng, we all know you are Shang clan’s esteemed guest. But even a guest cannot resort to force in Shang clan, you even injured our clansmen. According to the rules..."

"According to the rules, I will be fined forty-nine primeval stones." Fang Yuan immediately said.

The leader was shocked, not expecting Fang Yuan to be so well-versed with Shang clan’s rules.

Fang Yuan tossed out a bag of primeval stones, waving his hand: "There are fifty primeval stones inside, keep the change."

The leader received the primeval stones, feeling like a beggar. He had a shocked and dazed expression as he left with the others.

If Fang Yuan did not have strength, even with the purple thorn token, he would not have gotten out of it so easily. But now that he was strong, even in Shang clan city, if he beat up a Shang clansmen, as long as it was not someone important, there would be no consequences.

The Gu Master in charge was beaten unconscious by Fang Yuan, the slave market quickly sent out another Gu Master to attend to them.

We are buying everyone in this cage." Fang Yuan pointed at the cage and said.

Inside the cage, the people looked at Fang Yuan; most of them had a dazed or numb expression, but a few stared at him in rage.

Fang Yuan’s casual attitude of purchasing made them feel extremely humiliated.

"Yes, yes, yes." The new Gu Master wiped his sweat as he attended to Fang Yuan politely.

In less than fifteen minutes, all the procedures were done.

"This is the rank three poison scorpion Gu, please keep it well Lord Fang Zheng." Lastly, the Gu Master handed Fang Yuan a Gu worm.

This poison scorpion Gu had a white body, like a flawless porcelain, and was the size of two fingers.

This was a rank three Gu, with only one ability: defecating.

The scorpion faeces it produced was black as bean, it was a rank two Gu.

The saying goes: Scorpion faeces are one in the world.

This scorpion faeces Gu, each one had a unique poison. Once used on someone, they needed the corresponding poison scorpion Gu to detoxify them once every seven days.

This was the most common method to control slaves.

Although there is also the slavery Gu, with better effect, but it was rank five. It was expensive and rare, it could not be commonly used.

Poison scorpion Gu, although Shang Xin Ci could not activate it, and could not make it defecate, she could make it sting someone without using any primeval essence.

Fang Yuan planned to first refine this poison scorpion Gu before passing it to Shang Xin Ci and letting her refine it; it was too difficult to let her do it herself.

...

"What did you say? Someone bought those Wei clan slaves? What did I instruct you, I told you to pay attention to them. Wait a few days for me to settle it out with Shang Qiu Niu, and buy them after the situation calms down!" In the study room, Shang Pu Lao had an ugly expression as he scolded the Gu Master in charge.

The Gu Master in charge was lying on a bed with a pale expression.

After being kicked by Fang Yuan, he had just woken up when Shang Pu Lao came to question him.

"Young master Pu Lao, I tried my best already. I wanted to sow discord among them, but that Shang Xin Ci listened to Fang Zheng like a lamb. I tried stalling but before I finished my words, Fang Yuan sent me flying and knocked me unconscious." The Gu Master in charge listlessly explained as he laid in bed.

"Sigh... these Wei clansmen were once authoritative figures, controlling Wei clan’s operation. They have high cultivation and experience in management. If I can get them, I can create half a Wei clan myself. Among them, Wei clan’s first lady Wei De Xin is most skilled at nurturing guards. Wei clan leader’s guard troops had once been famous, successfully blocking many assassination attempts, even blocking the attack of five rank three Gu Masters at once. If not for that internal crisis, how could they fall apart so easily?"

Shang Pu Lao heaved a long sigh.

"I am asking you now, can the situation be salvaged?" He stared sharply at the Gu Master in charge.

The Gu Master shook his head, explaining in a crying tone: "They were all brought away already, the entire procedure was proper and there were no problems at all. Young master, I have failed you."

"Nevermind, have a good rest." Shang Pu Lao heard this and lost his interest all together, giving a word of consolation before taking his head.

Morning of the next day.

In Nan Qiu garden’s residential square, over thirty members of Wei clan stood.

Fang Yuan and Shang Xin Ci came together.

Earlier, Fang Yuan had helped Shang Xin Ci to refine the poison scorpion Gu. A rank three Gu was still too strong for her, thus, Fang Yuan chose some other Gu worms to assist her in controlling the poison scorpion Gu.

"From today onwards, Shang Xin Ci is your new master, why are you not greeting her?" Fang Yuan handed the poison scorpion Gu to her in front of them.

Wei clansmen slowly kneeled on the floor, paying respects to Shang Xin Ci. Their voices were listless, filled with helplessness and numbness, they were all behaving like puppets.

They were banished from the clan, all these authoritative figures who lived a good life had become slaves. Their dejected and low-spirited behavior was completely natural.

Looking at these people, how could anyone feel assured using them?

Shang Xin Ci felt pity for them, but also worry for herself.

"Wei De Xin, come out. I want to have a private talk with you." Fang Yuan stretched out his arm, pointing at one of the women.

They suddenly became energetic, as many of their dazes expressions became fierce and strong.

"What do you want?" Many people moved their bodies, shielding Wei De Xin.

"I am warning you, do not lay a finger on her." One of them pointed his finger at Fang Yuan, showing great alertness.

Smack!

Fang Yuan’s expression turned dark, as he took a few steps forward and gave a slap.

The person who pointed at him was sent flying by an overwhelming force. His mouth was full of blood as his broken teeth fell on the ground.

"It seems you are not clear of reality yet. Although I spent a lot of money to buy all of you, I am not against killing some of you for fun. So what if I want to do anything to your clan leader’s wife, what can you do to stop me?" Fang Yuan had a cruel expression and his voice was like cold as ice.

"You..." Wei clan’s gang were outraged, some youngsters clenched their fists, but they did not dare to speak out again.

"All of you stand down." Wei De Xin made them stand aside as she walked out.

Although her face was filthy, it could not hide her beautiful peach-like appearance.

She bowed to Fang Yuan: "What does Lord Fang Zheng need from this lowly servant?"

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, using a fierce gaze to inspect her body: "Lady Wei, you speak too much. Just follow me and obey what I say."

Saying so, he turned around.

As meat on the chopping block, Wei De Xin was helpless too, she gritted her teeth and followed Fang Yuan to the lake pavilion.

A cool breeze blew, causing ripples on the surface of the lake. Carp swam in the lake, and lotus leaves filled the surface of the water, with red and white flower buds within the leaves.

Such beautiful scenery caused Wei De Xin to relax slightly.

But Fang Yuan’s next sentence made her nervous. He said: "Lady Wei, I am very interested in you."

Wei De Xin quickly kneeled on the ground: "This servant is lowly, it is my great honor that my appearance had attracted Lord Fang Zheng’s attention. But I do not dare to offer my soiled body to lord’s grand and masculine body."

"Hahaha." Fang Yuan laughed heartily: "Wei De Xin, don’t be mistaken. I am very interested in your talent, your body and appearance is just a pair of skeleton in my eyes. Next, I want you to nurture a group of loyal female guards for Shang Xin Ci. At the same time, you have to motivate your Wei clansmen properly, tell them to work hard and have a positive attitude."

Hearing fang Yuan say so, Wei De Xin breathed a sigh of relief, as she promised: "Yes, this servant will follow Lord’s orders."

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan laughed deeply again, saying with deep meaning: "Lady Wei, I know you are pregnant, and I know your intentions. You want to preserve your husband’s only bloodline, and at the same time contact your younger brother Wei Shen Jing to exact revenge for you, am I right?"

As he said so, Wei De Xin’s face went pale as her delicate body shuddered.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

This pink skeleton thinks too highly of herself.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Wei De Xin knew she was pregnant from her own recent bodily reactions.

The new life in her womb gave her great hope.

This was her greatest secret and she had never expected that just a few days later, an outsider would expose it directly.

How could this not shock her, how could she not panic?

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, it was Wei De Xin who helped Shang Pu Lao to win against Shang Qiu Niu and become the most popular candidate for young clan leader’s position at one time.

However, in the great battle between righteous and demonic, Wei De Xin and Wei Shen Jing secretly contacted each other, and helped Wu clan to scheme against Shang clan; eradicating Wei clan in one fell swoop and taking revenge for the murder of her husband. After this was revealed, Wei De Xin gained fame for being the first person to make Shang Yan Fei suffer a loss.

Shang Pu Lao was thus implicated and banished from the clan, having a miserable end. One could say both his success and defeat were due to Wei De Xin.

Wei De Xin’s talent was outstanding and had now fallen into Fang Yuan’s hand. Controlling her and making her work for Shang Xin Ci was not a difficult thing for Fang Yuan.

"Wei De Xin, you don’t need to be afraid. As long as you do your best to help Shang Xin Ci, I won’t do anything to you. I might even help you raise the child in your womb properly. Also, I advise you to not go searching for your younger brother Wei Shen Jing for some time. He has already been recruited by Wu clan now and is being monitored all the time. If you don’t believe me, you are welcomed to find out for yourself."

Fang Yuan stroked his fingers, he was sitting on the stone chair with his back straight, and his tone gave a feeling that everything was in the palm of his hand.

Wei De Xin was completely dominated by his attitude.

The expression on her face as she kneeled on the ground, changed. She opened her mouth several times as if to say something, but finally chose to keep quiet.

In the end, she deeply bowed her head towards Fang Yuan, her forehead touched the ground and she spoke in a respectful tone: "I..."

However, she had just opened her mouth when she was interrupted by Fang Yuan: "No need to say anything else, there is no point. You and your clansmen’s performance will be the best answer. You can leave now."

Fang Yuan waved his hand.

Wei De Xin could only leave.

Fang Yuan sat inside the pavillion without getting up for some time.

He watched Wei De Xin’s figure as it gradually vanished within the rows of green trees. He knew that after this talk, she would assist Shang Xin Ci with all her strength.

After all, in his previous life, Shang Pu Lao also took advantage of the child in her womb to entice her into fully helping him.

Cold wind blew. Fang Yuan gazed at the lake surface. The shimmering lake was reflected in his abyss-like dark eyes.

He was silent.

"Now, Shang Xin Ci has the Wei clansmen to act as her middle and lower foundation. With Wei De Xin, she can organize female guards and form a powerful and stable armed force. There are also the three Xiong brothers who will be her generals. And she has her personal servant Xiao Die and Xiao Lan as trustworthy assistants ."

"With this, the general framework of her force has been constructed. It is enough to deal with this young master competition. But if we can recruit Zhou Quan and make him the steward, this young master’s position will definitely be in the bag! Wei De Xin, Xiong clan’s three brothers, Xiao Die, Xiao Lan are all generals while Zhou Quan will be the commander."

Fang Yuan was very clear that with the help of Zhou Quan who had plentiful experience and outstanding talent, Shang Xin Ci would definitely win the young master’s position and it would even be more stable. Even if Shang Xin Ci did not work hard, with Zhou Quan’s help, her forces would become firmer and slowly increase to an enormous size.

Only Zhou Quan could keep these subordinates of Shang Xin Ci under check.

Right now, Shang Xin Ci could not awe these talents. After all, she was still too young, her aptitude was not high and her cultivation was not enough.

In the Gu Master world, rules are cruel and real, the first thing one looks at is strength. The rest are supplementary.

However, subduing Zhou Quan will not be so easy. Especially now that the rumors of Shang Xin Ci’s failure in recruiting Zhou Quan over a dozen times had spread and were given a vivid description.

Fang Yuan knew someone was secretly doing this to cause trouble and strike at Shang Xin Ci’s reputation.

But although Fang Yuan knew it, he did not stop it.

The timing was still not ripe yet and he already had a plan.

Several days later, at night, in a secret room of Nan Qiu garden.

Swish swish swish...

Waves surged in the aperture and thousands of white silver snowflakes swirled up.

Under Fang Yuan’s will, the peak stage rank three primeval essence rushed at the aperture walls.

Like the prancing of ten thousand beasts or the movement of the galaxy, the ninety percent primeval sea swept through everything with a force majestic and boundless, far above middle and lower grade aptitudes.

Primeval essence continuously cleansed the aperture walls.

The cleansing slowly and quietly caused a hidden change in Fang Yuan’s aperture walls.

When this change accumulates to a certain degree, it would cause a qualitative transformation and cause his cultivation to breakthrough rapidly to another realm.

This realm was rank four!

Fang Yuan used relic Gu to advance to rank three peak stage. And then with the help of Bai Ning Bing and bone flesh unity Gu, his cultivation had been making rapid progress. Every day, he made such progress that it was beyond normal people’s imagination.

"Rank four, I am only a step away..." This sensation was becoming more and more intense in Fang Yuan’s heart.

However, the surface of the primeval sea continued to decrease.

Snow silver primeval essence violently attacked the borders of rank four realm, consuming huge amounts of primeval essence. Ninety percent primeval sea was of no help and the aperture walls were already cleansed to sparkling pure, but there was no change.

Although rank four was only a step away, this step was like a deep gully which was very difficult to cross.

No one knew how many Gu Masters were stumped at the border between rank three and rank four and how many grand ambitions were stifled.

As Fang Yuan looked at the empty aperture, right at that instance, a stream of yellow gold waterfall fell down from the aperture.

This came from outside world; it was reinforcements by Bai Ning Bing through bone flesh unity Gu!

Although it was only rank four initial stage light gold primeval essence, but the moment it appeared, Fang Yuan’s aperture trembled.

Under Fang Yuan’s will, the waterfall-like primeval essence turned into a tidal wave and charged towards the aperture walls, following the steps of the snow silver primeval essence.

All the accumulation before this burst out at this moment!

Crack.

Following a soft sound, tiny cracks started to appear on the aperture walls.

Dazzling white light burst out of the cracks.

The cracks continued to enlarge and the crystal walls started to collapse like the collapse of an iceberg; pieces started falling towards the bottom of the primeval sea and turned into nothingness.

Two whole hours later, under Bai Ning Bing’s unceasing support of primeval essence, this transformation ended.

The crystal walls were no more to be seen, replaced by a layer of thin light membrane. However, this white light was even more dazzling and shone upon the whole aperture.

A drop of light gold primeval essence floated up from the bottom of the sea.

Yellow gold primeval essence!

Fang Yuan advanced into rank four realm!

"I have finally reached rank four! With just two to three years in Shang clan city, I made such huge progress." Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes; bright, sharp light flashed through them and drew a ray of lightning through the dark secret room.

He was pleased with this result.

To be able to advance to rank four using a short period of two to three years, he had to first give credit to bone flesh unity Gu, Bai Ning Bing and then the favorable environment of Shang clan city.

At the same time, the credit also went to his plentiful experience from his previous life and his own efforts.

Advancing to rank four meant stepping into a whole new world! In the mortal world, rank one and two were only low levels, rank three was middle level, while rank four and five were the high levels.

Elders of many clans were all at rank four realm. If Gu Yue mountain still existed, Fang Yuan could now fight for the clan leader’s position!

Whether it were Southern Border, Central Continent or other places, rank four cultivation was enough to let a Gu Master roam everywhere.

Gu Masters with rank four cultivation were a force to reckon with.

Many clans only had one or two rank four Gu Masters.

After reaching this stage, Fang Yuan could be said to have grown and exceeded most Gu Masters.

"Since rebirth, my cultivation has now reached rank four. Compared to my previous life, this speed is faster by countless times. By taking a step first and then moving step by step, I have accumulated my advantage continuously and reach today’s accomplishment. All these were due to the help of my previous life’s experience. All thanks to Spring Autumn Cicada ..."

Fang Yuan was more and more aware of how formidable the rank six Gu Spring Autumn Cicada was.

It was because of Spring Autumn Cicada that he could have another chance.

"However, although I have advanced to rank four, Spring Autumn Cicada’s recovery speed is getting faster as well. The pressure it is exerting on the aperture is also becoming bigger."

"Rank four is a brand new starting point, I can use many more rank four Gu with the light gold primeval essence. Next, I need to refine charging crash Gu. But before this, I still have something I need to do...."

...

Fourth inner city.

"This is the manor Zhou Quan is in charge of?" Fang Yuan stood inside a courtyard with hands behind him and his tone indifferent.

Instantly, he got the answer from a subordinate: "Yes, Lord Fang Zheng."

Right now, standing behind Fang Yuan were Bai Ning Bing, Xiao Die, Xiong brothers along with Wei De Xin and her people who had recovered some of their strength after refining some Gu just recently.

"It is this place. Missy and I came here so many times, but we were given cold shoulder every time." Xiao Die added in angrily from the side.

"Lord, if you wish to see my master, please pass us your visiting letter. My master is currently taking an afternoon nap." The doorboy walked over and said with an arrogant

He recognized Xiao Die and understood these were Shang Xin Ci’s people.

"Afternoon nap? Visiting letter? Hehehe." Fang Yuan laughed coldly before his expression immediately turned dark; he waved his hand: "Go, smash the door!"

"Hehehe..." Everyone was stupefied for a while, as the three Xiong brothers took the lead and walked forward with large strides.

"You... what are you trying to do?!" The doorboy was feeling extreme panicked and could not help but shout.

"You puny thing dares to block our way, get lost!" Xiong Huo gave an evil grin and kicked, sending the doorboy flying.

Bang!

Xiong Tu used his brute force to forcefully smash the large manor door.

"What are you doing?" Some servants ran over at the commotion, but with one look at the group of fiendish Gu Masters, they stood still in terror.

Crash Bang Crash Bang...

Slam Slam...

Fang Yuan’s group intruded Zhou Quan’s manor and starting charging around violently; smashing everything they saw and beating people up. Xiong Feng even took liberties with some pretty looking servants.

The manor was in chaos. Some servants ran around panicking and in fear while some cried, screaming for help and forgiveness.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Like what they say, when one door closes another opens, except here you open your own doors since they refused to open it. Will be uploading 3 chapters for this period, next one in two hours.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"What do we do master?" The steward frantically ran towards Zhou Quan, asking for instructions.

Zhou Quan was shocked awake earlier, seeing that Fang Yuan created a din his house, he was livid.

"This Fang Zheng is completely lawless, he actually dared to use force in Shang clan city! Wait... this aura, rank four, oh god, how old is he, he advanced to rank four already?"

Zhou Quan observed secretly, but suddenly his eyes opened wide, as he was completely stunned.

He was once a rank four Gu master, the leader of a clan. But he only reached rank four realm when he was near fifty years old. Fang Yuan's age was well known in the battle stage, he was only twenty!

What godly talent was this!

Zhou Quan felt lamentation and jealousy, anger and helplessness: "Fang Zheng also advanced to rank four, he is a true rank four Gu Master. He also has the purple thorn token, and has good relationships with Shang Xin Ci and Shang Chao Feng. He is too stubborn, previously he caused trouble in the slave market, but was only fined forty-nine primeval stones. He has a bright future ahead, he is likely to reach rank five. According to the rumors, even Shang Yan Fei thinks highly of him, and now the entire Shang clan is turning a blind eye to his actions. How can I compete with him? But, if I can't afford to offend him, can't I just hide?"

Thinking of this, Zhou Quan sighed, saying to his old steward: "Quickly pack our things, we're going to hide in the shop. They are coming full force at us, we have to avoid them during this period."

"Yes, master." The old steward quickly went to pack up.

A moment later, the gang flipped the manor upside down, the place which was elegant and quiet had become a warzone.

"Lord, we have searched, we did not find Zhou Quan." Xiong Tu reported.

"Mm, he must've snuck out from the backdoor. He couldn't have gone too far, he's probably hiding in the shop. But all these are within my expectations, I purposely left the backdoor intact, hehe." Fang Yuan chuckled.

Zhou Quan thought Fang Yuan would respect Shang clan and stop making trouble. But who was Fang Yuan? In his heart, even the super-size Shang clan was just a slightly larger stepping stone for his ambitions.

"Have you prepared what I instructed you to do?" Fang Yuan turned around, asking Wei De Xin.

Wei De Xin quickly responded: "It has been prepared."

"Very good." Fang Yuan waved his hand: "Let's go."

The gang left the manor, and immediately caused a commotion.

Shang clan city had always been very peaceful and safe. Fang Yuan barging into someone’s home and messing it up had already attracted a lot of attention.

Moreover, Fang Yuan instructed Wei De Xin to circulate news about this matter, thus, it became an even more sensational story in the city.

Numerous passersby were attracted towards the scene.

"Go." Fang Yuan led the way, bringing his followers as he roamed the streets, purposely keeping a high profile.

Along the way, the number of passersby increased, crowding until the road was packed with people.

"Master, master, that Fang Zheng is here again." The old steward reported frightenedly.

"No need to worry, this shop is owned by Shang clan, he wouldn’t have the guts to barge in here." Zhou Quan stroked his beard, calming his steward.

Before his words were finished, he heard a loud sound.

Fang Yuan had sent the door of the shop flying with a kick in front of everyone, and took large steps into the shop.

"Stop there." A group of Shang clan city guards walked out with a grim expression.

Fang Yuan and gang were so noisy, the city guards were informed long ago.

"This is a Shang clan shop, you cannot enter by force. This is violating Shang clan city rules!" The guard leader shouted as he sweated buckets.

He was on duty today, if he did not speak out, Shang clan city will pursue his irresponsibility later.

But Fang Yuan ignored him completely, walking in without heeding a word.

The others followed suit.

Bai Ning Bing stayed outside, looking coldly at the city guard leader, emitting her rank four aura: "We are going in now, so what? Can you stop us?"

This rank two leader’s heart was palpitating intensely.

He gulped, as he responded with a pale expression: "Even if I cannot stop you, we have to try. This is Shang clan city, that is our responsibility. You have to know, Lord Fang Zheng’s actions had violated Shang clan city’s rules, chapter three article twenty-five..."

"We know, a fine right." Bai Ning Bing raised her eyebrows, as she tossed a bag of primeval stones to the leader.

"There are five hundred primeval stones inside, keep the change. We have to continue thrashing the place later, this is an advance payment." After saying that, Bai Ning Bing entered the shop as well.

The leader stood frozen on the spot, as he held that heavy bag of primeval stones, he was completely stunned by Bai Ning Bing’s aura.

"Too arrogant, way too arrogant!" The passersby were roaring.

"I’ve never seen anyone acting so lawlessly in Shang clan city."

"Fang Zheng and Bai Ning Bing are rank four Gu Masters, they have the ability. They even have the purple thorn token backing then, who can imitate them?"

"Even if I have the strength, I wouldn’t dare to. The are simply too daring! Doing this in broad daylight, really..."

As some people discussed, more of the spectators were just dumbfounded.

Some wanted to enter the shop to watch the show, but they were either blocked outside by Fang Yuan’s men, or chased away by the city guards.

"Leader, do we go in?" A city guard asked softly.

"Go in for what? To let them throw primeval stones at us?!" The leader screamed: "Wait, wait for lord elder to come and settle this himself!"

Back to Fang Yuan, who was entering the shop.

"Fang Zheng, what are you trying to do? Barging into a Shang clan shop by force, do you still want to stay in Shang clan city?" Zhou Quan’s face was grim as he tried to suppress Fang Yuan’s dominance using the name of Shang clan.

Fang Yuan sneered, looking at Zhou Quan in disdain: "Old man, weren’t you taking a nap at home? Why are you hiding here? We are both smart people, let’s not beat about the bush, I am here for you. You have two choices now, submit to me, or die. Choose now."

"Hehehe. Young man, I would advise you to stop your arrogance." Zhou Quan squeezed out a smile, his prideful character taking over, refusing to lower his head: "You want to harm me, can’t you see where we are right now? Hmm?"

Fang Yuan laughed loudly.

"Why are you laughing?" Zhou Quan’s face was extremely ugly as he questioned.

"You’ve lived for so many years, your foresight is getting worse. Can’t you see, I am different from Shang Xin Ci? Nevermind, I shall show you mercy and give you a chance, a chance to fully understand me."

Fang Yuan said, suddenly shouting and striking.

Zhou Quan did not expect Fang Yuan to be so uncontrollable, after being assaulted, he was immediately sent sprawling on the ground and nearly fainted.

But he still had his rich experience, quickly getting up and engaging Fang Yuan in battle.

Bam bam bam...

The sound of battle spread outside.

The crowd standing outside the shop stirred.

"They fought, they fought!"

"He really attacked, this Fang Zheng’s guts are made of steel, he is too crazy."

"Zhou Quan is so unlucky to have met him."

Everyone sighed, no one thought Zhou Quan would win.

They were right.

The battle in the shop quickly ended, Zhou Quan was not Fang Yuan’s match at all. He still had some hidden injuries, even though he was rank three peak stage, against the overbearing Fang Yuan, there was no way he could win.

The shop was thrashed during the fight, almost half the place was destroyed. After the smoke dispersed, everyone saw Zhou Quan sprawled on the ground, bleeding and having bone fractures, immobilized.

Fang Yuan was standing on the ground, as he stepped on Zhou Quan’s head, giving off a dominating aura.

"Lord Fang Zheng, what have you done?" Three Shang clan elders came together, shouting.

"Where are your eyes? Can’t you tell from looking? I’m teaching people a lesson!" Fang Yuan rolled his eyes, replying loudly.

The crowd laughed.

"Lord Fang Zheng, we are not here for jokes. This matter is too severe, do you know the consequences?" The clan elders said solemnly.

Zhou Quan who was trampled by Fang Yuan sneered, as blood flowed out of his open mouth.

"Fang Zheng was too rash!"

"He made the matter too severe, how is he going to get out of it this time."

"Although Fang Zheng is a talent, he is after all, not a Shang clansmen..."

Under everyone’s gaze, Fang Yuan laughed: "Of course I know the consequences. Not only that, I also know what’s the consequences of killing a person!"

Saying so, he took out the purple thorn token.

"Elders, if I murder in Shang clan city, it would ruin Shang clan’s peace. According to the rules, I will lose the purple thorn token, is that right?" Fang Yuan questioned.

"Yes." An elder immediately answered.

After getting a clear answer, Fang Yuan’s lips curled up as he showed a callous smile.

He exerted strength, and crushed the purple thorn token into powder.

This action caused the crowd to scream in shock, as the elders’ pupils shrunk.

"Fang Zheng destroyed the purple thorn token!"

"That is a purple thorn token, he destroyed it, what a huge waste!"

"Fang Zheng abandoned even the purple thorn token, he clearly wants Zhou Quan’s life..."

"Zhou Quan is too arrogant, rejecting Shang Xin Ci’s invitation so many times.

He angered Fang Zheng because of this, what bad luck!"

...

Seeing the fragments of the purple thorn token land on the ground, even hitting his own face, Zhou Quan's smile froze.

This was a purple thorn token!!

"Fang Zheng destroyed even his purple thorn token, he wants my life. Is he... he... is he insane?!"

Zhou Quan was completely horrified by Fang Yuan's madness, recklessness and insanity.

Translator's Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Press F to pay respects to Zhou Quan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

He had assumed Fang Yuan was trying to teach him a lesson. But he did not expect Fang Yuan to have killing intent, even willingly giving up the precious purple thorn token!

"Just because of me, you acted so ruthlessly, was it worth it?" Feeling Fang Yuan's 'determination', Zhou Quan wanted to cry.

He was a normal person.

He also feared death.

If not, after Zhou clan was wiped out, and he became alone and injured, he would've died already.

But he lived.

The desire to live was every living being's instinct.

He rejected Shang Xin Ci because he looked down on her. He was a proud man, once the leader of a clan, how could he submit to a weak and powerless girl like her?

But he did not think the matter would escalate to this extent!

Now, he was facing the threat of death! Fang Yuan's insanity was something he did not expect.

"Had I known this would happen, I would've accepted her invitation. To think it would end up like this!" Zhou Quan felt intense regret.

Although he was prideful, he was not stupid.

Survival and pride, he obviously chose the former. If not, he would not have stayed alive like a beaten dog for all these years.

"That's right, I understand! My act of rejecting Shang Xin Ci was a heavy hit on her reputation. Fang Zheng is her greatest supporter, thus he has to eliminate me! Shang Yi Fan had misled me..."

Feeling Fang Yuan’s intense killing intent, Zhou Quan quickly thought of the reason.

With his intelligence, with just a little analysis, he understood that the rumors earlier were all caused by Shang Yi Fan.

Back then, he was still gleeful and smug. These rumors were the best excuse for him to reject Shang Xin Ci. At the same time, he could feel that Shang Yi Fan valued him greatly from these rumors. In the worst case, he could go to Shang Yi Fan.

Whether it was Shang Yi Fan or Shang Xin Ci had no difference to him. As long as he was willing to help, he could make them young master easily.

This was Zhou Quan’s confidence.

But now he was beyond regretful.

Because of this rumor, Fang Yuan wanted to kill him. It was already too late to go to Shang Yi Fan.

Fang Yuan was a maniac, he did not follow the rules. Zhou Quan had completely screwed up this time!

Zhou Quan sprawled on the ground, his bones hurting from the battle, as he was immobilized by Fang Yuan’s leg on his face.

He wanted to open his mouth and beg for mercy.

But he could not say it.

"There are so many people watching, if I beg in public, my reputation will be tarnished. But if I don’t, my life will be forfeited..."

Character decides fate.

At the crucial moment, Zhou Quan’s arrogance was still influencing him.

"The saying goes, a wise man submits to circumstances . Zhou Quan, since you cannot understand your circumstance, you are no wise man. I wasted a purple thorn token to kill you, feel honored. Now die." Fang Yuan sneered as he exerted force on his leg.

Zhou Quan felt an intense pressure on him, he finally abandoned all hesitation and begged.

But because Fang Yuan was using so much force, his cheeks were squeezed together, he wanted to speak, but could not.

Zhou Quan was panicking!

"Wait, I don’t want to die, I want to beg, I want to surrender, let me speak..."

He screamed in his heart, at the same time, he waved his limbs around frantically.

He grabbed Fang Yuan’s leg, but Fang Yuan’s body was as tough as steel, not even moving an inch.

"I’m dead meat..." Just as Zhou Quan was despairing, he heard a familiar voice.

"Brother Hei Tu, have mercy on him." Shang Xin Ci rushed to the scene.

"Xin Ci, it seems you still found out in the end. I know you treasure talents, but you don’t have to beg for his sake. Such a person deserves death." Fang Yuan replied coldly, but stopped exerting force on his leg.

"No, brother Hei Tu, I have to speak." Shang Xin Ci was very determined.

She continued: "You did not spend much time with Sir Zhou Quan, I know him better. Sir Zhou had always been adamant on rebuilding Zhou clan. He bore a heavy weight on his shoulders, he is a person with noble aspirations in his heart. He had once told me with great pain that he could not forget his former clansmen. Before his wife passed away, she told him to rebuild their home. These years, he carried a heavy burden and have been working hard for it. He has his grievances..."

"Is that so?" Fang Yuan reduced the strength he placed on his leg, his expression changing.

"Why don’t I remember ever tell you that?" Zhou Quan felt weird, when his wife died, he was not even at the scene.

But he immediately understood, this was an act Shang Xin Ci was putting on with Fang Yuan.

Actually, Fang Yuan and Shang Xin Ci were still trying to recruit him!

They used Shang clan as the stage and acted out a good show. Her words earlier were his ticket out of this mess.

It not only portrayed Shang Xin Ci’s kindness and love for talented people, it also gave him a way out of this predicament.

"What a great scheme, great scheme indeed... I am the Zhou clan leader, but today I lost to these youngsters. Truly, the new generation is replacing the old. " Zhou Quan gritted his teeth, sighing helplessly.

He felt anger, hatred, but also grief and helplessness.

"So that’s it. To think that Sir Zhou was such a man with aspirations. But you are too stupid, assisting Xin Ci does not clash with your aspirations of rebuilding your home. You are not afraid of death because of your goals, I am impressed by you. But do you know, dying is easy, but enduring shame and staying alive for your ideals, moving forward with the pressure on you, that is true courage." Fang Yuan said loudly.

Zhou Quan heard this, and knew that this was an opportunity Fang Yuan was giving him.

This was most likely the last one as well.

If he does not accept it, his life would be over, there are no more chances left for him.

Thinking so, this old man said: "Sigh! A new generations breeds new geniuses, after listening to what you both have said, I am greatly enlightened!"

Fang Yuan loosened his leg.

Shang Xin Ci was overjoyed, helping Zhou Quan up.

Zhou Quan endured the pain on his body, slowly getting up, then paying respects to Shang Xin Ci: "Zhou Quan greets Lady Xin Ci."

...

"What did you say? Zhou Quan acknowledged that lass as his lord?" In the study room, Shang Yi Fan heard this and froze in shock.

"That is impossible! I know Zhou Quan’s personality, even back then when Shang Ya Zi was in charge, and controlled all the shops, he could not recruit him. What abilities does this Shang Xin Ci have, to manage to gain his loyalty?!" Shang Yi Fan reacted and shouted in astonishment.

"This really happened." Old Zhang sighed: "Shang Xin Ci is still young, she naturally doesn’t possess the ability. But she has Fang Zheng and Bai Ning Bing with her, to speak the truth, I underestimated Fang Zheng, to think that he is so scheming under that straightforward facade, he purposely made the matter impossible to resolve, and forced Zhou Quan to submit to her."

"If Zhou Quan did not submit, Fang Zheng would’ve killed him on the spot. Right now, the entire shop district is talking about the matter. There are rumors everywhere, saying that Zhou Quan had been living while enduring humiliation and shame, in order to rebuild his clan. After being enlightened by Fang Zheng, he decided to join Shang Xin Ci who had a love for talents. Shang Xin Ci’s reputation has surged to a peak now!"

Shang Yi Fan heard that and raged: "That means all the effort we wasted earlier, spreading rumors around, has instead helped them out instead? Liar, they are all liars! All these rumors must be sent out by them, how could there be such a touching story, hmph!"

"Young master Yi Fan, calm down, the competition is not over yet, although Shang Xin Ci has some people now, they might not truly be loyal to her. Now, we still have madam’s help, there is still a high chance of winning." Old Zhang analyzed calmly.

As he advised, Shang Yi Fan’s emotions went back to normal.

He gritted his teeth, his eyes shining with an ominous light: "You are right, building a force takes a lot of time. All these people she recruited were either threatened or forced, how could she gain their loyalty? Hehehe, next, I will stir up discord among them, and then poach them over with money, I’m sure it’ll work!"

...

With Shang Xin Ci in charge, Fang and Bai as guardians, Zhou Quan assisting, and the cooperation of Wei De Xin and Xiong clan brothers, the intel business in the battle stage was finally established.

As Shang Xin Ci predicted, once the business started, it caused a lot of commotion and reaction.

The first day they started, they recouped their invested capital.

On the second day, business was still booming.

On the third day, business was still on fire.

After seven days, Shang Xin Ci’s three hundred thousand primeval stones grew to four hundred and forty thousand.

Shang Yi Fan’s schemes did not make any progress. Shang Xin Ci’s force was very united, and everyone could not be wavered. Such unity made the other young masters feel surprised.

Shang Yi Fan was panicking, because he knew: If Shang Xin Ci continued to develop like this, with her current reputation, she would definitely be the final winner.

Thus, he started using his mother’s influence to affect Shang clan’s higher-ups.

Shang Xin Ci’s intel business involved the battle stage, it was a sensitive topic. Shang clan’s higher-ups held a meeting and were about to stop Shang Xin Ci’s business from operating, when Shang Yan Fei stood up, and swept away all objections, fully supporting his daughter.

Shang Yan Fei’s attitude was the final blow to Shang Yi Fan.

Several months later, Shang Yi Fan and his mother’s forces lost terribly to Shang Xin Ci.

Shang Xin Ci became one of the ten young masters succeeding Shang Ya Zi.

But the pain of separation overwhelmed her joy of success.

"Brother Hei Tu, are you in such a rush?" Shang Xin Ci walked outside the city, bidding farewell.

"You have already become a young master, with your talent, you will definitely grow well here. Xin Ci, there is no banquet that never ends, we will meet again in the future, do not be sad."

Fang Yuan consoled, but then changed the topic: "Before I go, I have something to remind you. Always maintain a wide vision and look ahead, above the ten young master position, there is still the young clan leader Shang Tuo Hai. Above Shang Tuo Hai, there are the five elders of Shang clan, your father Shang Yan Fei, and even the supreme elder of Shang clan..."

"Rest assured brother, back then, when Shang Tuo Hai became young clan leader, he had the perfect conditions. The other young masters also had favourable relationships when they rose to power. But I have neither of those, I can only invest in human capital, only with talents can I compete with them. Brother, if you need anything, inform me, I will do anything I can to help you!" Brilliance shone in Shang Xin Ci’s eyes.

Her words caused Fang and Bai to take a second look at her.

As expected of the future Shang clan leader, the female talent that shook the world!

"Alright, until the next time we meet." Fang Yuan looked deeply at Shang Xin Ci, before turning around to leave.

Bai Ning Bing followed behind him immediately.

The two, one wearing black and the other white, gradually vanished into the mountainous terrain.

Shang Xin Ci and her two servants stood on the spot, staring at the two’s background without moving.

"Brother Hei Tu, San Cha mountain is very dangerous, please take care!" Shang Xin Ci’s eyes were watery as she prayed for him in her heart.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

“We are finally moving to the next arc!” Chibi’s eyes were watery as he uploaded this chapter.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the world of Gu, the regions were magical.

At the east, there was a huge sea, with islands which stood out like chess pieces on a chessboard. It was named Eastern Sea.

At the west, there was a huge desert, greenery was extremely rare, only yellow sand could be seen everywhere. It was named Western Desert.

At the north, there was a huge grassland, people called it Northern Plains.

At the south, there was a mountainous terrain, known as the Southern Border.

And in the middle of eastern sea, western desert, northern plains, and southern border, there was a central area, called Central Continent.

Central continent was over fifty million kilometers wide, primeval energy was extremely rich in the air, and many sects existed. There were many heroes and conquerors, both demonic and righteous, it was an area with plentiful human and natural resources. Its total strength was the strongest compared to the other four regions.

In the southern part of central continent, among tens of thousands of hills, there was a large mountain above the clouds, piercing through the skies.

Fei He mountain!

Fei He mountain was grand and majestic, floating on top of the sea of cloud.

Sunlight penetrated the clouds, and shone on the green forests on the mountain.

At the foot of the mountain, waves crashed as the tides rose and fell.

Whenever the winds blow, the sea of clouds would experience great movements, the bamboo forests would sway with the wind, as ten thousand cranes sang.

Ironbeak flying crane, fire pellet crane, tailwind crane, cloud mist crane, stellar light crane... over ten thousand types of flying cranes flew or rested in the pine trees. It was an overwhelming sight to behold.

The ten thousand cranes on Fei He mountain were famous in central continent. As for the Gu Masters on the mountain, they were famous throughout the world.

This was Immortal Crane Sect.

One of the top ten sects in central continent, possessing one of the strongest force in central continent.

Right now, there was a crucial battle happening in Immortal Crane Sect’s sparring arena.

Two youngsters, wearing similar clothing, were engaging in a fight. The two moved about as they tangled and fought together.

"Too, too strong!"

"I cannot imagine, both of them are only around twenty years old."

Outside the arena, the spectators were watching this battle intently. Shock, admiration showed on their faces.

"Senior brother Sun Yuan Hua, he is a veteran expert. The number one in the previous third year small examination, I am not surprised he has such strength. But that junior brother Fang Zheng, it is shocking that he possesses such ability!"

"That’s right, he is a black horse in this year’s eight year middle examination. No one expected him to reach the finals."

"These years, junior brother Fang Zheng had been keeping a low profile, like an ordinary mountain rock. No one cared about him, he was completely not eye-catching. But who would have thought that during this examination, he would soar into the sky and have his name become renowned in Immortal Crane Sect."

Many people sighed as they showed admiration and jealousy.

Fang Zheng kept a grim expression as he had a sharp gaze, fighting evenly with Sun Yuan Hua.

These years, he had grown taller, his shoulder was broader, and his waist was thicker, he had become more mature and stable.

Suddenly, Fang Zheng unleashed a jade green wind, forcing Sun Yuan Hua to retreat.

"Senior brother Sun, just admit defeat." He said in an extremely confident tone.

"Little junior brother, show me what trump card you have." Sun Yuan Hua laughed, replying with the same level of confidence.

"Alright then." Fang Zheng whistled, as the sound travelled far. Soon, the cranes called back to him.

Everyone turned to look, and numerous eyeballs almost popped out as they stared with wide-opened mouths.

"An ironbeak flying crane group!"

"Oh heavens, so many flying cranes, is this an illusion?"

"How is that possible? This is a myriad beast king! Fang Zheng reaching rank four middle stage was already a god-tier talent! But he can actually control a crane group that is almost ten thousand in number, what method is this?"

Everyone gasped, feeling extremely shocked in their heart, some unable to believe the scene before them.

Even several sect elders stood up from their seats in shock.

Sun Yuan Hua’s expression became extremely solemn.

Ironbeak flying crane group, coming with an imposing aura, and an advantage in numbers, it gave him great pressure.

But he did not intend to give up.

His eyes shone with determination: "Junior brother Fang, you are impressive. But can you really control so many flying cranes? I have not lost yet, because I have a crane group too! Come out!"

Fei He mountain had tens of thousands of flying cranes, such a territorial advantage was well used by the people in Immortal Crane Sect.

Fang Zheng had a crane group, but Sun Yuan Hua was also a genius in the sect that received ample nurturing, he also hid a crane group secretly.

Hearing Sun Yuan Hua’s command, a group of cranes quickly flew out.

This crane group posed a stark contrast to Fang Zheng’s ironbeak flying crane group, there was only a few hundred.

But the cranes Sun Yuan Hua controlled was different from the ironbeak flying cranes. On their bodies, they had white feathers, but there was blue color on the tips of the wings and tail, as well as their claws. Under the sunlight, they gave a metallic shine.

At the same time, when they flew, traces of blue static lightning could be seen on their bodies.

"Be careful, these flying cranes are illusion lightning cranes. They have a fierce nature and are skilled at fighting alone. Ordinary ironbeak flying cranes are not their match." Fang Zheng heard Lord Sky Crane from in his mind.

"I understand, master!" Fang Zheng replied immediately, his eyes shining brilliantly as he observed the illusion lightning crane group and manipulated his ironbeak flying crane group.

"They’re going to crash!"

"The ironbeak flying crane group is too huge, it is like a giant monster. Senior brother Sun’s crane group might not even make a dent in it."

"No, senior brother Sun still has a chance. Crane battles aren’t about numbers, it depends on their control and manipulation."

"Senior brother Sun had been training hard all along, his control of the crane groups is definitely one of the best. It all depends on Fang Zheng’s performance now."

"To speak the truth, I don’t think Fang Zheng will win. Although he is a genius, he is still human. These few years, he had to cultivate to rank four, do the sect missions, and assemble his exemplary set of Gu worms, all these had used up much of his time. I don’t believe he still had time left to train his crane group manipulation skills."

Everyone discussed with great fervor.

Such an intensive fight, it was rarely seen in the sect’s three year small examination and eight year middle examination. Only in the fifteen year large examination, would it be seen occasionally.

Although Fang Zheng possessed a huge number of cranes, not everyone thought highly of him.

The scene now was like the fight between two armies.

Fang Zheng had almost ten thousand flying cranes, he had a large army, but because of the numbers, it was easy to lose control over them. He was only rank four middle stage, the strength of his soul was limited, he could only have that much mental energy.

Meanwhile, although Sun Yuan Hua had fewer cranes, all of them were elites, and he could manipulate them easily. With the amount of time he placed into controlling them, his crane manipulation skill was one of the best in the sect.

Seeing the two army about to crash in the air.

At this moment!

Sun Yuan Hua suddenly leapt.

He activated the Gu in his aperture, causing him to turn into a flash of lightning, closing in on Fang Zheng.

Fang Zheng did not expect him to strike so suddenly.

This way, he Sun Yuan Hua would fall into the encirclement of the ironbeak flying cranes, and get himself into grave danger.

Sun Yuan Hua attacked like a hurricane, like he went mad, his strength was something beyond what he had displayed earlier.

Fang Zheng lost the initiative and was suppressed, only able to defend with all his strength.

The two cranes engaged in the air, while on the ground, Fang Zheng and Sun Yuan Hua fought intensely.

Although the numbers of illusion lighting cranes were few, they were united, and charged together, tearing apart many ironbeak flying cranes.

In contrast, the ironbeak flying cranes, although many, were a mess, like a pack without a leader.

"The ironbeak flying crane group could not block this small number of illusion lightning cranes!"

"Senior brother Sun is amazing! His battle tactic was superb!"

"That’s right, Fang Zheng has limited concentration, manipulating this large group of cranes is like a baby wielding a hammer, amateurish and unskilled. He himself is being attacked by senior brother Sun, he can’t even defend himself properly, with his concentration on defending, how could he bother with controlling the cranes above him."

"But the ironbeak flying crane group is just too huge, there are many hundred beast kings, several thousand beast kings, and even a myriad beast king. In the illusion lightning crane group, there are only three hundred beast kings and one injured thousand beast king. In order to avoid these beast kings, the illusion lightning cranes have to attack from the right and left, even if they injured many ordinary ironbeak flying cranes, they are greatly injured themselves."

"Sun Yuan Hua and Fang Zheng are evenly matched, one attacks and one defends, they are extremely familiar with each other’s moves, there is no clear winner. We can only look at the result of the crane battle." An elder saw the victory condition of this match.

If the ironbeak flying crane group can devour the illusion lightning crane group, then it was Fang Zheng’s victory for certain.

But if the illusion lightning crane group rushes out of the ironbeak flying cranes’ encirclement and goes to help Sun Yuan Hua, Fang Zheng would lose.

"Endure, endure for a bit more. Try and divert some attention to the ironbeak flying cranes and kill all the illusion lightning cranes! If you can do that, it would be a huge breakthrough, it would be extremely helpful to you in the future." In Fang Zheng’s mind, Lord Sky Crane’s voice continued to advise.

Fang Zheng exerted all his strength and followed what Lord Sky Crane said.

But right when he was about to succeed, Sun Yuan Hua would always break his concentration with a flurry of attacks.

Sun Yuan Hua was older than Fang Zheng, he had placed a lot of effort in manipulating cranes, under his control, although the cranes were injured, they were already about to break out of the ironbeak flying cranes’ encirclement.

"Junior brother Fang Zheng, it is still too early for you to defeat me." He sneered.

Such words were heard by Fang Zheng, and it triggered the deepest part of his memory.

Back then, on Qing Mao mountain, Gu Yue village, he and his older brother Fang Yuan fought in the arena.

Fang Yuan said the exact same words.

"No, I cannot lose!"

"I have to take revenge for my clan, for my uncle and aunt, for my clan leader, for Lord Qing Shu!"

"Why have I worked so hard in these last few years? I must stand before my brother and defeat him. How can I lose to Sun Yuan Hua now?"

Flames burned in Fang Zheng’s eyes.

He endured the pain in his head, and diverted his concentration!

The ironbeak flying cranes suddenly moved, like a huge beast opening its mouth, devouring the illusion lightning crane group.

Seeing this, Sun Yuan Hua’s face went pale.

Victory!

The crowd cheered.

Fang Zheng was the number one in the eight year middle examination, defeating Sun Yuan Hua and became an elite disciple of Immortal Crane Sect!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Is this... is this the real MC?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Central continent’s sect system was different from southern border’s clan system.

In clans, blood ties sustained the hierarchy, and clansmen were the target for nurturing. But in sects, masters and disciples replaced the bloodline system. In sects, they recruited disciples and as long as one had good talent and character, they would be accepted.

Precisely so, Fang Zheng was absorbed into Immortal Crane Sect as one of its member.

In Immortal Crane Sect, from low to high, they were classified as, outer disciple, inner disciple, elite disciple, legacy disciple, sect elder, sect leader, and the supreme elder.

Three year small examination, was to choose inner disciples. Eight year middle examination was to choose elite disciples. As for the fifteen year large examination, it allows one to ascend to a legacy disciple.

Above the legacy disciple, it would be the sect elders.

The sect elders in Immortal Crane Sect had at least rank four cultivation. The sect leader would have rank five cultivation, and the supreme elders were rank six Gu Immortals, there was even rank seven among them!

Central continent was the strongest region compared to north, south, east, and west. Immortal Crane Sect was the top ten sect in central continent, it was even stronger than Shang clan.

The disciple selection did not involve place of birth, or any regional priorities. Thus, in Immortal Crane Sect, there were no C grade aptitudes.

B grade was the most commonly seen, but there were many A grades as well.

Fang Zheng was a genius with A grade aptitude no doubt. But in Immortal Crane Sect, in such a super-level force, there were many geniuses just like him.

"Fang Zheng, you were born smart and were willing to undertake hardships, now that you have rank four cultivation, you are already qualified to be a sect elder. But you have only entered the sect for a short time, you need to complete many sect missions to prove your loyalty. I hope you can continue to work hard, become victorious in the large examination, and become a legacy disciple." Immortal Crane Sect leader sat on his grand seat as he looked down at Fang Zheng, who was kneeling below the stairs.

"Yes, I will remember leader’s teachings." Fang Zheng replied.

"Now, I have a sect mission to hand to you and a few elite disciples. Go back and read through the details, go." The sect leader said as a bookworm flew out.

Fang Zheng received it and took his leave.

Once he returned, he laid down on the bed and fell asleep.

Controlling Gu worms required a lot of concentration, he expended a lot of his mental energy in doing so, at times he had to multitask and do multiple things at once.

In the battle with Sun Yuan Hua, Fang Zheng used all his trump cards and truly expended all his means.

He was too tired, forcefully meeting the sect leader to finish the initiation for advancing to an elite disciple. His head was still hurting, like a hammer was hitting him, while his shoulders were so sore that they could barely support his neck. He was drowsy and felt light-headed.

Fang Zheng slept for two days and two nights, until a series of knocking woke him up.

Once he pushed the door open, he saw a group of elite disciples.

These disciples comprised both male and female, they were mostly rank three but there were a few with rank four cultivation.

Different from clans, which did not require loyalty to be tested, sects needed to do so.

The higher the hierarchy, the fewer the number of elite disciples, legacy disciples, and elders. Many cultivated to rank four, but were eliminated during the examinations. Thus resulted in many disciples and elders having the same rank four cultivation.

But regardless of their cultivation, the elders definitely had higher battle strength than disciples. That is because they were chosen strictly through examinations, and were the most talented among thousands.

"Fang Zheng, we have the same mission. On this trip, I hope we can take care of each other."

"Fang Zheng, I saw your battle with Sun Yuan Hua, it was very exciting!"

"I hope we can spar along the way..."

These people were very amiable. That is because they knew Fang Zheng controlled an ironbeak flying crane group that was ten thousand in number. Although he could not control them perfectly, such strength was still respectable.

"You are too polite, my fellow sect brothers. I am ashamed, these few days, I had been sleeping, I have not seen the mission details yet." Fang Zheng cupped his fists, admitting.

"I see, in that case, I will tell you directly, our mission this time is extremely important! Fang Zheng, a few months ago, a shocking event happened at Tian Ti mountain, do you know about it?" An elite disciple asked.

"Tian Ti mountain?" Fang Zheng nodded: "This matter was huge, I know about it. On Tian Ti mountain, Fairy Bai Hu’s inheritance appeared. Fairy Bai Hu is a famous person in the righteous path, a rank six Gu Immortal, and owns the Hu Immortal blessed land. Once this inheritance appeared, many Gu Immortals came out. As long as one inherits this inheritance, they would gain her blessed land. Right now, Tian Ti mountain is heavily surrounded by many Gu Immortals."

"Fang Zheng, I’ll tell you directly, our mission this time is to go to Tian Ti mountain and try to obtain this inheritance. The lord Gu Immortal of our Immortal Crane Sect has already come to an agreement with the lords of the other sects, in order to maintain peace, they will not strike, but instead, choose some elite disciples in their sect to compete in a fair manner."

Fang Zheng heard this, and his eyes widened, showing intense desire: "Are you serious?"

This was the inheritance of a Gu Immortal!

"Of course, if we are truly fated and become her inheritor, we would definitely shoot to success. In the future, we have a great chance of breaking through to Gu Immortal realm. But other than our Immortal Crane Sect, there is also Heavenly Lotus Sect, Spirit Butterfly Valley, Ancient Soul Sect, Heaven’s Envy Sect and the other central continent’s top ten sects. Thus, during this trip, we have to cooperate and stay united!"

"Of course!" Fang Zheng immediately replied.

...

Huo Tan mountain in southern border is a dormant volcano.

It is about three kilometers tall, and the peak of the mountain is flat with a hole that is flowing with magma within. Thick smoke rose from the funnel occasionally like a chimney.

The greatest resource on this mountain were charcoal stones, almost seen everywhere.

This type of charcoal stone burnt for a long time and emitted little heat, and did not give out smoke, it was most commonly used in Shang clan city, fifth inner city.

It had been numerous days since Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing stepped into Huo Tan mountain.

They had set off from Shang Liang mountain, to reach San Cha mountain, Huo Tan mountain was a necessary stop.

Stepping on the charcoal stones, one would feel the heat from below, as the air was dry and without moisture. Looking far, all one could see was dark red charcoal stones.

There were trees on this mountain too.

But these trees were short and thin, their branches were like needles and did not block sunlight.

Thus, on Huo Tan mountain, one could have a wider vision than compared to being on other mountains.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing travelled on the mountain, if birds flew in the sky and looked down, they would see two tiny ants crawling slowly.

The truth is, they were being observed.

"Hehe, they are finally here."

"Huo Tan mountain is a necessary location along the path, they will definitely pass by here if they want to go to San Cha mountain.

At an insignificant corner, two demonic Gu Masters were hiding.

They were two bald men, the older one was called Jiao Huang, while the middle-aged man was called Meng Tu, they were a famous assassination duo among the demonic Gu Masters.

"As long as we kill these two, Shang clan would have ten thousand primeval stones as reward, and we will also get a yellow pair token. How can we let go of such a good deal?" Meng Tu licked his lips excitedly.

"But they are both rank four Gu Masters, we are only rank three peak stage. This is a good deal, but the risks are higher! I’m not sure if it was a mistake to accept this..." Jiao Huang was older and wiser, showing worry on his face.

"Elder brother Jiao Tu, don’t be frightened by their cultivation. So what if they are rank four, they are only rank four initial stage. Most of the Gu worms in their hands are still rank three. Moreover, it is not like we have not killed a rank four Gu Master before, remember that Xiao Fu Lu who was killed by us?" Meng Tu encouraged.

Once he mentioned Xiao Fu Lu, Jiao Huang frowned, as he said nervously: "Didn’t I mention it many times, don’t talk about Xiao Fu Lu. He is the grandson of Xiao clan’s supreme elder, we offended a Gu Immortal when we killed him. Keep this matter in your stomach and never mention it again."

"Hmph, so what if he is a Gu Immortal? Haven’t we lived free and safe all these years?" Meng Tu pouted indifferently: "Gu Immortals are not omnipotent, not to mention these two newly advanced rank four Gu Masters. Brother, don’t forget that we’ve spent several days preparing that trap for them. Hehehe!"

Speaking of that trap, Jiao Huang’s expression relaxed.

He muttered: "As long as they fall into the trap and engage in a fierce battle, their primeval essence will be depleted and we will have a chance to act!"

"Exactly." Meng Tu said, as his eyes suddenly glowed, saying softly but excitedly: "Quickly look, they fell for the trap!"

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing stopped walking.

The nearby ground started shaking violently. Rock shrapnels fell down the cliff from both sides.

On the ground, the soil was moved away as lava crocodiles crawled out from the ground.

"It is a lava crocodile group, there is a thousand beast king!" Bai Ning Bing concentrated, looking at the leader of the group.

This lava crocodile king was huge, the size of three elephants.

Its body is covered with deep red scales, and four thick legs supported its huge body. A crocodile tail giving off a metallic glow was over ten meters long. On its back, there were two lumps, like two small volcanoes. As it breathed, two traces of black smoke rose from the volcanoes, thick and thin rhythmically.

As the lava crocodile king crawled out of the ground, it stared at Fang and Bai, but most of its attention was on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were rank four initial stage Gu Masters, but he had rank four middle stage primeval essence.

The lava crocodile king had sharp senses, it immediately sensed that Fang Yuan’s aura was scarier.

It opened its mouth, and over a thousand lava crocodiles encircled Fang and Bai.

Facing such a dangerous situation, Fang Yuan laughed: "It is but a few crocodiles, Bai Ning Bing, cooperate with me and kill this lava crocodile king!"

"Okay." Bai Ning Bing replied plainly, but battle intent surged in her eyes.

Back then, when they first left Qing Mao mountain, they had also encountered a lava crocodile king, and stayed away from it.

But now, they were different, having rank four cultivation, even if this lava crocodile king was a thousand beast king, it could not stop their path!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Is this a trap or a delicious meal?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Rocks cracked and flew; the crocodile group hissed in pain.

The large battle was at its end; Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing stood high on Huo Tan mountain, surrounding them were corpses of lava crocodiles.

Meanwhile, that thousand beast king lava crocodile king was on the ground with all the bones in its body broken, the two protruding mini volcano on its back were also smashed apart.

It hissed in a soft voice as it laid flat on the ground with blood pouring out from countless wounds on its body. Its claws shook as it tried to rake the ground to drill underground, however it no longer had enough strength.

Its struggles continued to decrease till death finally descended on it.

With the death of the thousand beast king, the remaining lava crocodiles immediately scattered, drilling into the ground or fleeing in disarray.

After roughly clearing up the battlefield, Fang and Bai resumed their journey.

Jiao Huang and Meng Tu were hiding in a faraway corner without moving even a bit. These two famous assassins had quite an unsightly expression right now, just like zombies.

They were scared!

"Are these two still humans? They contended against the whole lava crocodile group with just their own strength!"

"Bai Ning Bing walks the ice path and greatly suppresses the lava crocodiles. That can’t be helped, but the main thing is still that Fang Zheng, he is simply a monster in human skin. The more injuries he suffered, the stronger he became. At the end, he even sent the lava crocodile king flying easily."

Jiao Huang and Meng Tu glanced at each other, both saw palpitation in each other’s eyes.

Fang and Bai’s terrifying strength greatly exceeded their expectations.

They did not live in Shang clan city, so only after seeing the whole battle, did they become deeply aware of Fang and Bai’s terror.

"These two youths are seriously only around twenty years old? Screw that, compared to them, we were simply living a dog’s life for the last forty years of our career." Meng Tu cursed out in fear.

"Brother Meng Tu, don’t say so. Hearing you say that, I am completely ashamed of myself." The older Jiao Huang heaved a deep sigh, "Undoubtedly, these two are geniuses! Comparing oneself to others will only make you angry . We are simply not their match. If I had known this early, I would have never accepted this deal."

"Brother Jiao Huang, your words have spurred on my competitiveness and made me more indignant. This is still not finished, although we can’t defeat them, we still have a chance!" Meng Tu said as he spit out some saliva.

"Eh? What chance?"

"Think of it, brother Jiao Huang. They are going to San Cha mountain to seek benefits from the three kings inheritance. San Cha mountain is extremely chaotic right now with rank four and rank five experts everywhere. They will definitely have to clash with others once they reach there. We will look for an opportunity while they are there. If we can take advantage of the situation while they are in trouble, that will be the best!"

Jiao Huang’s eyes brightened upon hearing this reminder.

He patted Meng Tu’s shoulder: "Brother, what you said makes sense. Let’s go, go to San Cha mountain!"

"There was something fishy about that group of lava crocodiles." Fang Yuan thought along the way.

The timing of the lava crocodiles and the area they appeared in were too coincidental. The moment they appeared, they firmly surrounded Fang and Bai. Bai Ning Bing did not sense anything wrong, but the astute Fang Yuan with his previous life’s experience could smell a conspiracy.

Fang Yuan was very familiar with such situations.

"Someone intentionally designed this trap and wanted to deal with me. But which side is it? Wu clan, Bai clan or Shang clan?" Fang Yuan inwardly pondered.

"Because I know Li Ran’s identity and I have now left Shang Liang mountain, there is a probability that Wu clan would make a move."

"As for Bai clan? I have become their enemy, I know the huge secret of their clan’s spirit spring drying up and have extorted them of three million primeval stones. How could they not hate me?"

"There is also Shang clan. The amount of Shang clansmen I have offended are also many. Shang Ya Zi, Shang Yi Fan, after buying that group of Wei clansmen I also offended Shang Pu Lao. In Shang clan’s young master competition, I was one of the forces of Shang Xin Ci and if I was to be eliminated outside, she would be greatly weakened."

"Forget it, let’s not think too much about it. I will just deal with it as they come." Fang Yuan shook his head and threw the disorganized thoughts out of his mind, clearing his thoughts.

If it was before when he was weak, he would have to exhaust all his energy to plan for everything. But now, his strength had increased by a lot and he had the aura of someone who would not move no matter what wind attacked him.

...

Central Continent.

Wind whistled through the sea of clouds.

Ten thousand flying cranes were flapping their wings together.

Fang Zheng and the other elite disciples of Immortal Crane Sect stood or sat cross-legged on the flying cranes and hurried towards Tian Ti mountain.

"Boss Fang Zheng, your crane group is really mighty. We will definitely shine brightly on this trip to Tian Ti mountain and sweep through everything." An elite disciple said.

He used a Gu while speaking, so no matter how strong the wind blew, his voice was not obstructed and was clearly transmitted to everyone.

"You speak too highly of me. This time, the ones participating in the competition for Gu Immortal Bai Hu’s inheritance are all elites from the ten great sects. If we want to get the inheritance, not only do we need strength, but also luck."

"Boss Fang Zheng, you are too modest. With your myriad crane group, who can stop us?" Immediately another elite disciple said.

"Boss Fang Zheng, you are my role model. No wonder you were dispatched to this mission by the sect leader after just becoming an elite disciple. On this trip to Tian Ti mountain, we will only be following your lead!" An elite female disciple said respectfully.

On the way, Fang Zheng had sparred with all the elite disciples.

He was very strong and also had a spirit incubating flea in his aperture. Lord Sky Crane’s soul resided in the spirit incubating flea and would give guidance from time to time. There was also the support of the myriad crane group.

Because of this, Fang Zheng defeated all the other elite disciples.

He was not arrogant after his victory, he had a great bearing and was modest, easily winning everyone’s good impressions and was pushed to become their head. They were all in admiration of Fang Zheng.

"Among the ten great sects of Central Continent, which one of them does not have deep foundations? I am sure they also have talented people among them. Although I have the myriad crane group, my weakness is that I can’t control them fully. I still need to ask you all to provide guidance regarding the control of the flying cranes." Fang Zheng cupped his hands towards the people beside him.

"We wouldn’t dare. It is our honor to be able to spar with Boss Fang Zheng."

"Boss, you have been cultivating so hard these days that it makes us blush with shame."

"Boss, your progress is remarkable, you have an innate talent in controlling the cranes. You only lacked practice before, and given some time, you are sure to surpass Sun Yuan Hua."

The other elite disciples said words of agreement.

Their words were from the depths of their hearts. On this journey, they could clearly notice Fang Zheng’s progress.

Fang Zheng smiled. With Lord Sky Crane providing guidance and secret experiences, and even controlling his body sometimes, how could he not improve at a lightning pace?

After flying for some time, the ironbeak flying cranes started to cry out one after another.

Fang Zheng and the rest understood.

"Alright. It is time, we need to land and feed the flying cranes." Fang Zheng stamped, the flying crane group started to pierce down through the layer of clouds under his control.

For a moment, it was only a scene of white vastness.

Soon, the clouds and mist disappeared as the group flew down from the layer of clouds to the verdant and lush ground.

Flying cranes also needed to eat. The larger the scale of the crane group, the higher their demand for food. Fortunately, ironbeak flying cranes could eat anything. Sometimes, they even ate stones to fill their stomachs, thus were very easy to raise.

Fang Zheng possessed such a large scale crane group, but it was also equally troublesome. After every set intervals, he would need to fly to the ground and feed the crane group.

"Eh? There is a battle going on!" As they were descending down, an elite disciple suddenly spoke out.

Everyone immediately discovered the unusual state on the ground.

Four demonic Gu Masters were laughing evilly while surrounding three female Gu Masters and slowly nearing them.

" Tsk , it is the four great obscenities." Soon, an elite disciple exposed those four demonic Gu Masters’ identity with a disgusted tone.

These four great obscenities were separately; Eastern Obscenity Chen Yi Dao, Western Thief Yu Ba Guang, Southern Disturbance Shi Bao and Northern Squandering Fan Chun Yao.

They had been travelling all over Central Continent and were all rank four Gu Masters. They were extremely strong and were even able to contend against rank five Gu Masters when they combined their strength.

"Look, they are actually surrounding Fairy Bi Xia of Heavenly Lotus Sect!" An elite disciple with sharp sight shouted.

"Hmph, demonic path’s people, every single one of them needs to be executed!" Fang Zheng’s expression turned incomparably cold and immediately commanded the crane group to charge down without thinking much.

"Hehehe, Fairy Bi Xia, it will be difficult for you to escape this calamity today!"

"To think our luck is so good today to be able to smell the aroma of Fairy Bi Xia. Even if we suffered heavy injuries, it is worth it."

The four great obscenities winked as they pressed on towards the three female Gu

Masters.

"Damn it." Fairy Bi Xia gritted her snow-white teeth. She was seriously injured and did not have strength to break through.

Just as she was starting to feel desperation and was thinking of committing suicide, she suddenly heard the cries of a group of cranes from above her.

"Who is it?" The four great obscenities raised their heads and shouted.

"Immortal Crane Sect’s elite disciple, Fang Zheng!" Fang Zheng was standing on the back of the ironbeak flying crane king, his tongue seemed to burst out with thunder.

He stood upright and proudly on the crane’s back, his body was robust, his brows thick and his eyes like that of a tiger’s. He fixed his gaze on the four obscenities and waved his hand.

The elite disciples behind him and ten thousand ironbeak flying cranes passed him and charged towards the four obscenities.

"Heavens, so many cranes!"

"It is one of the ten great sects, the elite disciples of the Immortal Crane Sect..."

"What bad luck, we have injuries and can’t contend against this group, let’s retreat!"

The four great obscenities sized the situation before turning to flee and soon, they had escaped far away, their figures disappeared from everyone’s sight.

"These demonic path trash, they might not have other abilities but they are pretty quick in running." The elite disciples laughed loudly.

"Are you okay?" Fang Zheng got off from the back of the crane and approached Fairy Bi Xia, asking softly.

"I, I am okay... thank you young master Fang Zheng for saving me!" Fairy Bi Xia looked at Fang Zheng, her face blushed red and her gaze carried hints of infatuation.

She had thought she would not be able to escape this calamity, but a hero came falling from the sky.

Fang Zheng was like the hero saving the beauty and it left a deep impression on Fairy Bi Xia.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Fang Yuan would’ve killed those four immediately. How useless.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Two young babies, leave behind your primeval stones, strip off your clothes and kowtow to your grandpa thrice, and I shall spare your little lives. Gahaha..."

A rank three old demonic Gu Master with dishevelled hair suddenly appeared and blocked Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing’s way.

"Hehe, the old monster Hei Shi is making it difficult for newbies again."

"These two youths are out of luck considering they ran into the old monster Hei Shi."

"That girl looks quite pretty.Why does she look somewhat familiar? It is a pity the old monster Hei Shi is here, otherwise we would have made a move."

From within the darkness, many demonic Gu Masters looked here with sinister smiles on their faces.

Bam!

Fang Yuan’s response was straightforward, he directly summoned his beast phantom.

The moment he made a move, the breath concealment Gu lost its effect, and his rank four aura was revealed in its whole.

Shock and desperation immediately showed on the old monster Hei Shi’s face.

He wanted to escape but Bai Ning Bing also made a move at the same time and kept him in check.

The old monster Hei Shi was directly struck by beast phantom and turned into minced meat.

Blood, bone pieces and brain matter mixed together and splattered all around.

"I... what the f*ck...."

"Oh god, these two youths are both rank four Gu Masters!"

"I remember it now, they are black and white twin demons! One is called Fang Zheng and another is Bai Ning Bing, both are geniuses of the demonic path. They have made great names for themselves in Shang clan city’s battle stage, especially Fang Zheng, people call him little beast king, almost having hegemony over the whole battle stage. Why are these two guys here?"

"The temptation of San Cha mountain’s inheritance is too big, they were also attracted by it. Old monster Hei Shi kicked an iron board , his death was really tragic!"

Many Gu Masters watching from the darkness, as they opened their eyes wide in extreme shock and fear.

"Hmph!" Fang Yuan was not satisfied with killing the old monster Hei Shi. With a shift of his mind, he activated another beast phantom and charged towards a specific shadow.

Bam!

A huge sound resounded, the demonic Gu Master hiding in the shadow directly exploded into meat paste by Fang Yuan’s attack.

Countless demonic Gu Masters drew in a sharp breath of cold air from the darkness.

"Jin Cheng En also died!"

"Little beast king has a heavy murderous nature, he doesn’t let even spectators go."

"Let’s go, let’s go. Even the old monster Hei Shi could not resist their one move, it will be too late if we don’t hurry now."

Trees shook, stones were lifted up; countless shadows scuttled out, fleeing towards every direction.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing quietly watched this and did not block them.

As they got closer to San Cha mountain, the demonic Gu Masters they ran into also increased.

During ordinary times, one could only occasionally run into these guys. However, San Cha mountain was like a fragrant honey that attracted all kinds of flies, bees and so on.

"We have yet to reach San Cha mountain, but we have seen all kinds of demons and ghosts fighting each other. It is obvious how chaotic the situation over at San Cha mountain is now." Bai Ning Bing’s expression was indifferent but her tone was slightly heavy.

Several months had already passed since the three kings inheritance appeared on San Cha mountain, this caused a huge disturbance in Southern Border. Countless figures appeared one after another and rushed towards there.

Righteous path and demonic path fought against each other for a place in the quota to enter the inheritance.

San Cha mountain had already changed into a slaughterhouse. Every day, there was large amounts of lives lost in open fights and schemes.

"Kill them all, gain notoriety through killing. Kill until these people tremble in fear, only then will they not dare to lightly provoke us." Fang Yuan smiled coldly, his eyes filled with thick killing intent.

Fang Yuan was fully aware that reputation was very important when one went outside.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were living in Shang clan city all this while, although their fame had spread, it was mostly limited to within the city.

Most people had not heard about Fang and Bai.

Killing all that stands in their way, killing to gain fame; this would be an enormous help to Fang Yuan’s future plans.

"Alright. Let’s continue using breath concealment Gu and hide our rank four aura. Killing like this is really splendid and very interesting. We can leave deep impressions on others and make them remember us for their whole lives." Bai Ning Bing smiled, her blue eyes shone with cold light. Her beauty was like that of a snow fairy, untouched by the mortal world. Her tone, however, was like a bloody, poisonous scorpion, and was filled with terrifying killing intent.

Breath concealing Gu was only a rank three Gu ; Fang and Bai were barely able to use it to conceal their rank four cultivation.

Fang Yuan advanced to rank four initial stage and he needed to replace many of his Gu. Bai Ning Bing was also the same.

"Three kings inheritance has many of the Gu I need. As long as I obtain those

Gu, my set of strength path Gu worms will push towards completion. It will also provide me great help in advancing to rank five and allow me to dominate the mortal realm."

"Calculating the time, the Hu Immortal blessed land in central continent should also have opened. Fairy Bai Hu was a rank six Gu immortal and the inheritance she had left behind is intact, it is many times better than the three kings inheritance. Unfortunately, I am not in central continent. No, even if I were in central continent, I am not a disciple of the ten great sects and thus cannot participate in the contest at Tian Ti mountain. Sigh, such a pity..."

Fang Yuan gazed far away towards the direction of central continent before continuing to move forward.

Bai Ning Bing was silent as she walked alongside Fang Yuan.

The two crossed mountains and charged around everywhere; they would directly kill any demonic Gu Masters or righteous Gu Masters they met.

Their vicious reputation quickly spread.

In Fang Yuan’s view, at every stage, there was an appropriate manner to developing oneself.

When one was weak, they should keep a low profile and do things secretly, suffering patiently and growing stealthily. When they were strong, they should spread their name and strike when the timing was right, making others feel fear and terror.

Sometimes, reputation was a much stronger weapon than strength.

Soon, Bai Ning Bing realized the advantage of reputation.

When they had just started on the journey, the Gu Masters along the way often tried to make things difficult for them. Just like that old monster Hei Shi, daring to jump out with just a mere rank three cultivation.

Fang and Bai were young, moreover Bai Ning Bing’s stunning appearance caused others to have an impulse to commit crime.

Now, however, even though Fang and Bai were using breath concealment Gu and hiding their cultivation, their path was unimpeded, saving them a lot of trouble.

They had yet to truly reach San Cha mountain but their evil reputation had already spread till there.

Good deeds remain obscured while bad deeds spread over a thousand miles.

Such evil reputation was the fastest to spread.

Right now, everyone knew there were two terrifying demonic path rising stars, rank four geniuses, killing their way towards San Cha mountain, two who were very aggressive and easily killed people.

...

This day, they finally reached the foot of San Cha mountain.

Sounds of a fight suddenly came from ahead.

"Don’t come here, don’t come!" A female Gu Master shouted with terror all over her face and was faintly gasping; her clothing in rags, revealing her beautiful shoulders and thighs.

"Hehehe, little beauty, quietly obey us."

"If you resist anymore, be careful that I might just slash your pretty face!"

"Don’t resist. Let us big brothers give you a taste of euphoria, hahaha...."

The demonic Gu Masters’ eyes shone with a wolf-like green light as they continuously charged towards the female Gu Master.

The female Gu Master resisted with all her might, but she was alone and her strength was not enough; the situation was in full control of the several demonic Gu Masters.

"Damn it, damn it!" The female Gu Master bit her full lower lip with her pure white teeth, her face filled with anxiety and terror.

She retreated bit by bit, the clothings on her body were slowly cut open. Her smooth legs were exposed and her thick hair was in a mess. As she escaped, her chest bobbed like a white rabbit which provoked the attacking demonic Gu Masters to let out wolfish howls.

"Can anyone save me? Can anyone save me? I have thirty thousand primeval stones here!" The female Gu Master shouted, her weak voice further stimulate the desire in these Gu Masters.

"Nobody moves!"

"This little girl is our, Ten Tyrants’, prey. Wait till our boss comes over."

"That’s right, we don’t want the thirty thousand primeval stones. We will enjoy this first, the rest of you can take turns later. Gahaha...."

Some righteous Gu Masters were just about to make their moves to rescue the girl, but when they heard the name of Ten Tyrants, they immediately chose to shrink back.

The boss of the Ten Tyrants was a rank four Gu Master!

"Who can save me, please save me..." The female Gu Master shouted sadly like the lament of a cuckoo. She kept on running, asking for help everywhere, but wherever she went, the Gu Masters would all retreat and avoid her.

Only Fang and Bai stood on their spots, watching indifferently.

"Two lords, please, I pray you for mercy, please save me." The female Gu Master’s eyes shone with hope; the weeping beauty ran towards Fang Yuan and pleaded.

"Where did these two brats come from, mind your own business!"

"We are Nan mountain’s Ten Tyrants, you two young juniors... eh? This can’t be!"

These few demonic Gu Masters suddenly paled when they recognized Fang and Bai’s identity.

"Although that person is disguising as a male, she is a female. These two, one man and one woman; black cloth, black hair and black eyes; white cloth, silver hair and blue eyes, aren’t they the recently famous..."

"Black and white twin demons!"

The demonic Gu Masters immediately stopped, they fixed their gazes at Fang and Bai with profound fear.

Fang and Bai’s reputation were the number one thing they heard recently.

These two might be young, but were true geniuses of the demonic path. They were both extremely ruthless and had a murderous nature. Most importantly, they both had rank four cultivation.

Such cultivation was terrifying!

Rank one were considered substandard, rank two could be said to be lackeys while rank three were the main pillars and held their own.

Rank four were already experts among Gu Masters, and were the leaders of ordinary clans. Even in Ten Tyrants, only their boss was at rank four middle stage.

As for rank five, they stood at the peak of the mortal world and were very few in numbers. Even in southern border with hundreds of thousands of mountains and countless heroes, there were only over a hundred rank five Gu Masters.

"Lord twin demons, save me, please save me!" The female Gu Master found a way out of her predicament and knelt on the ground in front of Fang and Bai, imploring.

The surrounding Gu Masters all casted their gazes here.

"These two are the black and white twin demons who just recently became famous, they are unexpectedly so young!"

"Ten Tyrants against black and white twin demons; one has been famous for a long time while the other are rising stars of the demonic path, this should be interesting."

"As long as the boss of the Ten Tyrants does not show up, they are no match for black and white twin demons. Black and white twin demons got a bargain, getting that beauty for free. Pfft, little beast king will have beauties on his left and right, he really has luck with women."

Under everyone’s gazes, Fang Yuan took a light step back.

"Save you, why would I save you? Because of your superficial beauty, or do you think I am a kind person and like helping people?" Fang Yuan looked down at the kneeling Gu Master, his gaze cold and indifferent.

The female Gu Master stupidly raised her head to look at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan coldly smiled then looked at the Ten Tyrants’ members behind him: "You can continue, I won’t make a move. I’ve had such a tedious journey coming here, please do give me a good show."

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

The show(chapter) will start in 2 hours

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Hearing Fang Yuan say that, a few members of Ten Tyrants showed a softer expression.

Next, one of them pounced and kept the female Gu Master on the ground.

The female Gu Master struggled to no avail, as this member of Ten Tyrants laughed and pulled with his demonic palm.

Tsk...

The silk clothing of the female Gu Master was torn open, showing her underwear.

Such a scene caused the people to howl like a wolf, as the demonic Gu Masters were very aroused.

Many righteous Gu Masters gritted their teeth secretly.

Someone wanted to stop them, but was stopped by another: "Don’t do anything. There is not only the Ten Tyrants here, but also the black and white twin demons, are you courting death?"

"Moreover, that female Gu Master is not a righteous character. You don’t have to involve yourself."

"Damn, members of the demonic path are truly scum of the world, unscrupulous and shameless!" Some Gu Masters were indignant, clenching their fists.

Many female Gu Masters looked away, shutting their eyes.

"No, no! I’m begging you, please stop..." That female Gu Master cried out in despair.

Bai Ning Bing was expressionless, as she stared at Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan was sneering, looking at the scene.

"My respects to the two black and white twin demons. We will report your act of friendship to our boss, since you gave the opportunity to us and merely watched." A Gu Master of Ten Tyrants walked up and cupped his fists towards Fang and Bai, smiling respectfully.

The other members walked to the female Gu Master.

One of them spit out some phlegm, cursing: "Little slut, do you think you can seduce the two lord black and white twin demons by begging? Naive! Stupid!"

"You sure ran fast, next I will make sure you enjoy yourself! Hehehe..." Another person laughed lecherously, looking extremely perverted.

As for the person on top of the female Gu Master, he was about to ’attack’.

At this moment, a pink light appeared from the female Gu Master’s body, and exploded.

The male Gu Master was caught off guard and sent flying. He was like a comet, flying far away, landing after a hundred steps away, fainted.

"What?!"

"This female Gu Master is trying something funny, let’s attack together!"

"What guts! You dare to resist us?"

The other members of the Ten Tyrants shouted as they pounced at the female Gu Master.

But the next moment, the pink light flashed again, and intense screams were heard.

The members of Ten Tyrant were sent flying all together.

The pink light displayed the female Gu Master’s overwhelming battle strength, as she had a alluring and evil gaze, the disguise on her was completely removed, showing her true flirtatious appearance.

The members of Ten Tyrant were lying on the ground, shocked.

Who knows what methods she used, causing them to be weak and powerless on the ground, unable to get up.

The fierce and evil Ten Tyrant members were actually not the female Gu Master’s match.

Such a sudden change caused everyone’s expressions to change. Many people watched speechlessly, extremely surprised.

Only Fang Yuan’s expression remained the same, as if he knew all along.

The female Gu Master laughed, after showing her true appearance, her alluring eyes were soul-stealing. A slender body with perfect curves, like a flowering peach in spring, made everyone extremely comfortable.

During this period, the members of Ten Tyrant got up.

Their strength slowly recovered.

But even so, the shock on their faces were still apparently. They felt a real rank four aura from the female Gu Master.

This female Gu Master’s cultivation, was actually rank four!

Numerous people’s expressions changed when they found out.

"Little beast king, you left a maiden in distress, are you a man?" The female Gu Master looked at Fang Yuan, showing an upset, annoyed expression, causing people greatly pity her.

At once, all the males stared at her fixedly.

Many Gu Master started to be jealous Fang Yuan. If this woman would give them one glance, it was worth dying for!

But Fang Yuan had no emotions, his tone was like ice, chilling to the bone: "Hu Mei Er, do you think this level of acting can trick me?"

The female Gu Master’s pupils shrunk.

She did not expect Fang Yuan to expose her identity so easily.

But she quickly recovered, her lips pouting: "To think that my lowly name is known by lord little beast king. It is my great honor, but, before I exposed my true appearance, how did lord manage to find out?"

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: "Before you showed your true self, I was only guessing. But whether I guessed right or wrong, I have no losses, am I right?"

Even if Hu Mei Er was a demonic Gu Master, upon hearing Fang Yuan’s cruel words, her heart chilled.

"It is actually her..."

"This woman is famous in the demonic path, she is very scary. An expert at disguise, don’t be moved by her appearance, she is a demoness that devours people whole, she is completely ruthless!"

"Hu Mei Er has a broad network, she has slept with many demonic Gu Masters, why did the Ten Tyrants provoke her?"

Ten Tyrant’s members helped each other up as their faces were pale without a trace of blood.

By now, they had already understood, they were obviously toyed by Hu Mei Er.

Hu Mei Er had rank four cultivation, it was easy for her to deal with them. Her earlier disguise and performance was just to toy with them, she was trying to use them to probe and get close to the black and white demons.

But little beast king had sharp eyes, he actually saw through her disguise.

"Hahaha, Fang Zheng, you are truly heartless... But don’t be too smug. You two have been too famous these few days, now the entire San Cha mountain knows that two demonic path geniuses are here. Be it righteous or demonic path, many seniors and experts are now trying to test you. You have offended many people, I advise you to stop here. Otherwise, you might lose your life when you ascend the mountain." Hu Mei Er laughed.

"Oh? That means, you are the first person sent to test us? Hehe, why are you worrying about our safety? As for offending people? The one thing I am not afraid of is offending people. So what if I offend every human alive?" Fang Yuan spoke plainly, but his words were chilling.

Hu Mei Er listened as her eyes glowed brightly, showing excitement in her eyes.

She laughed while covering her mouth: "Well said! What great courage, I like it. Not afraid to offend people? Then let me tell you, you looked down on my appearance, that is offending me. In this world, only villains and women are hard to please. I am not only a woman, but also a villain. Hehehe, little beast king, let’s see who laughs till the end! I hope you can leave the mountain alive!"

Hu Mei Er said with a sharp gaze as she turned to leave immediately.

Everyone watched her pink dress flutter in the wind, her beautiful appearance as she left, leaving everyone speechless.

"Hu Mei Er..." Fang Yuan laughed coldly in his heart.

This Hu Mei Er was a demoness in the demonic path. She was very mysterious, no one knew her origins. In his previous life, she was very active, causing problems everywhere, sowing discord, causing fights and disputes wherever she went.

She cultivated the enchantment path, specifically, enchanting people. Using her appearance, she controlled many demonic experts, and she had many puppets all over southern border, among them, there were even rank five Gu Masters.

There were even rank four Gu Masters who fought due to jealousy over her.

However, others did not know her origins, but Fang Yuan knew.

This demoness had a great origin, she was the granddaughter of granny Mei Hua.

Granny Mei Hua was a rank six Gu Immortal in southern border, occupying the Mei Hua blessed land.

The demoness seduced men all over southern border, and had a specific interest in young men. In his previous life, a hundred years from now, she would gather her force and head to Xi Yang mountain.

Nobody knew what happened on the mountain, but the result was, she alone left the mountain.

What was worth mentioning was, she ascended the mountain as a rank four Gu Master, but she descended as rank five peak stage.

"This demoness has an unspeakable secret. Right now, she is starting to display her enchantment path and recruiting people. To think that she would develop an interest in me this time."

Fang Yuan compared his lives, and exclaimed.

He used the advantages of rebirth to grow quickly, and became chosen by Hu Mei Er. Hu Mei Er was interested in his potential, and wanted to seduce him into her puppet.

But how could that happen?

"Hmph, in the five hundred years of my past life, I had already eliminated my mortal desires. But the enchantment path has its strengths, I cannot be unguarded... Hu Mei Er must’ve gone to incite people to find trouble with me. She has the Gu from granny Mei Hua, if I want to kill her, I will need ample preparation and isolate that Gu from her. Hehe, I wonder which blind fool would dare to find trouble with me."

Fang Yuan analyzed in his heart.

Since he could not kill Hu Mei Er at the moment, he could only deal with the situation step-by-step.

Right now, Hu Mei Er’s enchantment path had not reached greater success, she only had rank four Gu Masters under her charm.

As long as they are not rank five, Fang Yuan had no fear. He was confident that with his experience and this set of Gu worms, even if he cannot win, he will not lose.

...

Central continent, Tian Ti mountain.

Riding the flying crane, Fang Zheng and others travelled days and nights before arriving.

Before them, many elite disciples from the other ten sects had already arrived.

"It is the people from Immortal Crane Sect."

"Hmm? Why did Fairy Bi Xia from Heavenly Lotus Sect come with Immortal Crane Sect?"

"Who is that lad? Fairy Bi Xia is talking so happily with him, I have never seen Fairy Bi Xia speak so nicely to a guy from the same generation before."

Fang Zheng and the others’ arrival attracted everyone’s attention.

"Bi Xia, you arrived too. Do you know, since our last separation, I have been wanting to meet you again. This time, at the Hu Immortal Inheritance, I expected you to come. Thus, I begged my master to let me come here as well." A young man saw Fairy Bi Xia and quickly came over.

Bi Xia was speaking and laughing with Fang Zheng, but upon seeing him, her smile vanished.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

This scene feels familiar.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Oh, it is Sir Wei... no need to worry, thanks to young hero Fang Zheng, Bi Xia is safe and sound." Fairy Bi Xia avoided Wei Wu Shang’s gaze and greeted.

"Young hero Fang?" Wei Wu Shang squinted, looking at Fang Zheng who was standing beside Fairy Bi Xia.

"Hello, I am Immortal Crane Sect’s Fang Zheng." Fang Zheng smiled lightly, cupping his fists and greeting, oozing with friendliness.

"Young hero Fang Zheng, an elite disciple of Immortal Crane Sect, the number one in the most recent middle examination. He can control ten thousand cranes, thanks to these cranes, we could reach Tian Ti mountain so quickly."

Fairy Bi Xia said while looking at Fang Zheng, her face blushing shyly, as her tone carried a faint sweetness.

Along the way, she had conversed with Fang Zheng, and felt that they hit it off.

"Immortal Crane? These are just ironbeak flying ranes, although the number is a little large." Wei Wu Shang’s eyes shone coldly, feeling extremely angry towards Fang Zheng.

He gritted his teeth, greeting Fang Zheng back: "Fang Zheng, you are an elite disciple of Immortal Crane Sect? That’s great. I’ve long heard of Immortal Crane Sect’s crane manipulation skill, I have always wanted to face-off against it. I would appreciate it if you would spar with me."

Saying so, Wei Wu Shang took large steps forward, his eyes glowing with overbearingness as he stared at Fang Zheng.

Fang Zheng was stunned, as he sensed animosity, feeling absurdity from the issue.

"Hahaha." In his mind, Lord Sky Crane laughed loudly: "A beauty’s gratitude is the biggest problem, my disciple, the act of saving that little lass Bi Xia has brought you many enemies. This young girl Bi Xia is a great beauty, now that she likes you, you have trouble ahead. This Wei Wu Shang is your first challenger."

"Huh? Likes me?" Fang Zheng shouted in his mind.

Speaking of love, he felt a deep sorrow in his heart.

These years, he had a girl’s image deep in his heart.

She was a mortal, she was very normal, very ordinary, and much much inferior to Fairy Bi Xia. But in Fang Zheng’s heart, she had an extraordinary cuteness.

The times he spent with her, were the best memories in Fang Zheng’s heart.

Unfortunately, she was already dead, no longer in this world.

She was Shen Cui, Fang Zheng’s former servant.

Thinking of Shen Cui, Fang Yuan’s heart sank: "The girl I liked is dead. Master, you know how hard I’ve worked these years, my biggest goal is to defeat my brother and take revenge for my ancestors, my uncle and aunt, Shen Cui, lord clan leader, lord Qing Shu, and fulfill their wishes. Although Gu Yue village was destroyed, the Gu Yue bloodline still exists!"

"Hahaha, my foolish disciple, even if that is what you want, this Wei Wu Sheng will not let you off. Since you decided to save Fairy Bi Xia, why didn’t you realize that?" Lord Sky Crane laughed.

"But... I do not want to spar with him. I’ve heard of this Wei Wu Shang in Immortal Crane Sect. He is a healing Gu Master, a rising star in Heaven’s Envy Sect, a strong A grade aptitude genius. He is most skilled in healing himself, often leaving unscathed after a battle. If I battle him, even if I win, my condition will not be at its peak. It will negatively affect my performance when competing for the Gu Immortal Inheritance."

Lord Sky Crane laughed heartily: "Don’t worry, go ahead and fight. The Hu Immortal Inheritance on Tian Ti mountain is special. It will not make you compete in terms of battle strength, it is a contest of willpower and determination. With my soul assisting you secretly, you have a great advantage!"

After pausing for a while, Lord Sky Crane continued: "You are still too young, you do not know the usefulness of reputation. Sometimes, reputation is more useful than strength, this is a rare opportunity, defeat these challengers and improve your reputation. Use the flying cranes and don’t worry about their deaths. We have lots of cranes in Immortal Crane Sect, even if you use them all, we can return to the sect and replenish your army."

Hearing his master say so, Fang Zheng sighed, saying to Wei Wu Shang: "Since you want to battle, so be it."

"Excellent! Please." Wei Wu Shang sneered, stomping and shooting into the air like lightning.

Fang Zheng did not show any weakness, waving his hand and stepping on a flying crane, as ten thousand cranes cried out together, as if greeting their king.

Once the battle began, everyone got excited.

"Boss Fang Zheng, all the best, defeat this sissy from Heaven’s Envy Sect!" Immortal Crane Sect’s elite disciples shouted.

"Junior brother Wei, teach this lad a lesson." Wei Wu Sheng had his supporters.

Wei Wu Shang nodded, intense battle intent burning in his eyes.

He was the leader of the elite disciples sent by Heaven’s Envy Sect this time, Fang Zheng’s ten thousand crane group could scare ordinary elite disciples, but not him.

He had his own trump card!

"Battle!" Wei Wu Shang activated the Gu worms in his body, as his body flashed in the air and vanished.

The next moment, the space was torn apart as he travelled through several hundred steps away, directly appearing in front of Fang Zheng.

"Space piercing Gu?!" Even Lord Sky Crane was shocked.

An intense battle unfolded.

At the same time, on San Cha mountain.

In a certain cave, the Ten Tyrants gathered.

"That means, you were all used by Hu Mei Er to test the Black and White Demons?!" The leader of Ten Tyrants, "Tyrant Heng Mei", muttered.

"That’s right, boss, that demoness tricked us all, and even injured seventh and tenth brother. Boss, you have to avenge us!" The second brother of Ten Tyrants shouted.

Smack!

Tyrant Heng Mei slapped.

The second brother of Ten Tyrant was harshly slapped on his cheeks, his body turning on the spot.

"Bo... boss!" He held his face, looking at Tyrant Heng Mei in shock.

"Heavily injured? That is perfect, as long as they’re not dead. You bunch with sperms for brains, control your lower body. I instructed you earlier to mind your actions and words already, do you really think this is still Nan mountain?!"

Tyrant Heng Mei scolded: "Wrong! This is San Cha mountain!"

"Be it Kong Ri Tian, Long Qing Tian, or Wu Shen Tong, Yi Chong, all of them can kill you like an ant easily. Although you have rank three cultivation, what is the most important reason you are able to stay here? Isn’t it all due to me!"

"Hmph, this matter is a warning to all of you. I have to tell you, don’t find problems with Hu Mei Er. This demoness seduces men to their death, she has a wide network. She is involved with Lin San Chi, has rumors with Li Xian, and even Mo Wu Tian."

Tyrant Heng Mei’s words shocked the nine brothers.

Lin San Chi was a rank four demonic Gu Master, he was not only skilled in the metal path, but was also an earth path Gu Master. His metal and earth specialty was renowned through the land.

Li Xiao was similarly just as strong, he was not a native of southern border, but came from eastern sea. He was an unscrupulous merchant famous among the demonic path members, most skilled at finding opportunities to buy low and sell high. His network and human relationships were wide, many demonic Gu Master’s loot were sold off by him.

As for Mo Wu Tian, he is even scarier.

He inherited a mysterious inheritance of an ancient Gu Immortal, and was the number one rising star of the demonic path, an absolute young genius.

Be it Lin San Chi, Li Xian, or Mo Wu Tian, they are all rank four Gu Masters.

"These famous people are all related to that demoness?" The members of Ten Tyrant heard this and went pale, their hearts palpitating with fear.

"I’ll tell you one last time, this is not Nan mountain! Sigh, I asked you all to use your brains often and learn from mistakes, but you refuse to listen. Sigh, this three kings inheritance is not a small matter. Who knows how many formidable characters would show up." Tyrant Heng Mei sighed as he said.

The other brothers looked at each other, speechless.

Tyrant Heng Mei saw that the time was right, and changed the topic: "But no need to worry, on San Cha mountain now, the rank four and five Gu Masters are restraining each other, no one dares to act rashly. We the Ten Tyrants of Nan mountain are not to be trifled with. We cannot take this lying down, let’s go, accompany me to find the black and white demons."

"Boss, you’re going personally to find the black and white demons?" Someone expressed shock.

"Boss, you are rank four middle stage, a senior of the demonic path, when you were roaming in the world, they were still babies."

"That’s right, boss, we’ll go and ask them to come. You giving them an audience is their honor."

"Hmph, what do you know!" Tyrant Heng Mei chided: "The black and white demons are so young. The fact that they did not attack you this time means they know of my name, and know how to hold back. But they are youngsters, they love their ’face’. If I put down my ego and go to meet them personally, it is giving them full respect. Next, if I mention working together and come up with a plan to deal with Hu Mei Er, they are sure to agree. Hehehe..."

"Boss, I understand. You are using them as the vanguard!"

"Boss, you are a genius. This ’Black and White Demons’ are only around twenty years old, they are too young. Now, they and Hu Mei Er are at odds, if they hear your suggestion, they would be extremely thrilled."

"Once boss plans, it truly is phenomenal!"

The Ten Tyrant members started bootlicking their boss.

"Hahaha." Tyrant Heng Mei laughed loudly, waving his hand: "Brother, come with me to visit the black and white demons!"

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing looked up at San Cha mountain peak.

This San Cha mountain has a peculiar design, from the mountain foot, it goes up to three hills, looking from afar, it resembles a fork with three tips, pointing at the sky.

Above the three peaks are the entrances to the three kings inheritance.

Every once in a while, the mountain peak would shoot out three beams of light, and allow people to enter.

Once the number of people reach an amount, the light pillar to vanish, and the entrance would disappear.

After that, Gu Masters who failed to pass through the tests would be thrown out from time to time. Of course, there are also many deaths inside the inheritance every time.

"There is about eight days till the next opening of the inheritance. Let’s find a place to settle down for now." Fang Yuan gave the surroundings a sweeping gaze as he saw a cave in the middle of the mountain waist.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

They just don’t learn. Continuously scheming against Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

San Cha mountain was originally a place no one showed interest towards; and was a place Che clan and Zuo clan had interactions.

However, since the inheritance opened, it had become extremely lively and there would be people moving through the forests frequently.

Clashes and disputes occurred frequently, right now it was still relatively peaceful.

Every time the light pillar opened, the entry quota was limited. At that time, it would be a scene of carnage at San Cha mountain.

To fight for a chance to enter the inheritance, all the Gu Masters chose to stay on the mountain.

This led to a phenomenon. The stronger the Gu Masters, the closer towards the mountain peak they stayed. This caused them to be in a favorable position when the inheritance appeared, since they could much easily rush towards it.

The cave Fang Yuan chose was on the middle of the mountain. From the traces around the cave, there was clearly someone living in it.

Sure enough, when they got near the cave, a loud and clear voice was transmitted from within the cave: "This is my, Mang Kuang’s, territory. Get lost, or else you will die a violent death!"

"Hahaha, Mang Kuang? What crap is that! This place is pretty good, I have taken a liking to it, get lost." Fang Yuan laughed outside the cave and issued an ultimatum.

"Screw your gr*ndmother, you want it the hard way! Since you are looking to die, then don’t blame me for being ruthless!"

Following the voice, a burly man walked out of the cave.

His upper body was bare; he was wearing a worn-out hemp knitted shorts; cyan snake scales covered his whole body; his face was covered with long beard; blood veins showed on his eyes; and his black hair fell down his head in disarray. He walked out of the cave looking like a furious fiend.

"Two blind fools... eh?!"

Mang Kuang looked at Fang and Bai, he was cursing with his rough voice when suddenly his pupils shrunk and his jaw opened wide. His gaze revealed a bewildered expression.

"You two, could you be the black and white twin demons?"

"What do you think?" Bai Ning Bing laughed faintly, her blue eyes flashing with killing intent.

Mang Kuang only felt chills rising from his back and spreading over his body in seconds.

Black and white twin demons were rank four Gu Masters, while he was only at rank three upper stage. Moreover, he had heard about how these two killed without blinking their eyes, and how cruel their methods were.

"Damn it! I have been hiding here without doing anything, what did I do to deserve this? This really is misfortune dropping from the sky..." Mang Kuang’s thoughts were in disorder.

In an instant, the vicious face suddenly changed; the raised eyebrows drooped, the wide opened eyes narrowed down to a slit, the bent corner of his lips immediately rose up into a smile; he did everything he could to show his goodwill.

"It is my greatest fortune in this life for both lords to take a liking to my cave!"

Mang Kuang bent his back and rubbed his hands, giving a flattering smile towards Fang and Bai.

His body was tall and robust but when he shrunk down and bent his back, his original rampant domineering aura immediately disappeared into oblivion; this matched with his boorish appearance was simply like a clown fiesta.

"Hmm, you are sensible, you can get lost now." Fang Yuan waved his hand.

"Yes, yes, yes." Mang Kuang seemed to have received an amnesty as he slipped out and immediately ran far away.

After forcing out Mang Kuang, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing entered the cave together.

The cave was already arranged properly by Mang Kuang and they did not need to waste their energy to make any arrangements.

"San Cha mountain is filled with danger, we will take turns to stay guard at night for the next eight days. If one sleeps, the other must be awake." Fang Yuan warned Bai Ning Bing.

"Naturally." Bai Ning Bing nodded.

"Hui Mei Er won’t leave it at that, we will be facing constant troubles in these eight days. However, it is also good that these people are sending themselves to us, we can establish our might and that matches with our intention."

Fang Yuan had just finished saying this when a voice came from outside the cave.

"Are black and white twin demons inside? I am Tyrant Heng Mei, I have long looked forward to meeting you two. This time, I especially came in to pay a visit."

"Tyrant Heng Mei? Isn’t he the boss of Ten Tyrants? I heard he is very cruel, cultivates strength path, likes to eat little children’s flesh and has spread fear over Nanshan." Bai Ning Bing glanced at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan sneered inside.

He had planned to go find trouble with this Tyrant Heng Mei, but to think the latter actually dropped in himself.

The two walked out of the cave and looked at the eight people standing outside the cave.

At the front was a robust body, bare and flat chest, black chest hair growing all over his chest. A dense aura of rank four middle stage was let out from all over his body.

However, this demonic path’s figure famous for his savageness was wearing a smile right now. When he saw Fang and Bai, he immediately cupped his hands and one could only take him as an elegant black bear at first glance.

"To think the black and white twin demons had such large background." Tyrant Heng Mei had intentionally spoken in a loud voice and attracted the attention of many nearby Gu Masters.

"Even Tyrant Heng Mei came to pay a visit to them personally." Many were surprised.

"Fortunately, I ran out....when did Tyrant Heng Mei become so polite?" Mang Kuang still had not run far away, right now he touched his chest and felt the lingering fear.

"Tyrant Heng Mei, it is good you came, I was just about to visit you." Fang Yuan responded.

Tyrant Heng Mei’s smile became even deeper, thinking Fang Yuan was going to pay a visit to him.

But who knew Fang Yuan’s next words immediately caused his smile to stiffen.

"I heard you are also a strength path Gu Master, let’s enjoy a battle of life and death and determine who is stronger. I, Fang Zheng, am walking the strength path and am going to become the number one in the strength path! Hand over your life!"

Finished speaking, Fang Yuan activated his Gu and directly launched an assault at Tyrant Heng Mei.

"What?!" Tyrant Heng Mei came back to his senses, he was startled and also furious.

He had broken the tradition and came to pay a visit, but to think this ’Fang Zheng’ was an ungrateful guy and attacked him without saying anything further.

This, what kind of person is this?

Is this still a person? The nerves in his brain are jumbled up, right?!

Fang Yuan did not care about his thoughts as he charged quickly towards Tyrant Heng Mei.

All-out effort Gu !

Without saying any words, he directly attacked.

Grrr!

A brown bear phantom appeared from behind him.

Violent strength Gu !

Tyrant Heng Mei opened his eyes with anger, he did not dodge put put his arms up to block head-on.

With the activation of violent strength Gu, his body enlarged and increased his strength sharply.

Bam!

Fang Yuan fiercely smashed into Tyrant Heng Mei, sending the latter back by five steps while he, himself, bounced back from the terrifying strength.

Tyrant Heng Mei was at rank four middle stage and commanded the other nine members of Ten Tyrants. He had lorded over Nan mountain for many years and had deep foundations.

"Hmph! Little beast king, I gave you face but you don’t know what’s good for you." Tyrant Heng Mei shouted, but he did not take the initiative to attack.

He was at rank four middle stage and knew he was stronger after crossing one move with Fang Yuan since the latter was only at rank four initial stage.

However, there was not only one rank four on the scene, there was also Bai Ning Bing who was standing there.

Tyrant Heng Mei was sure of winning against Fang Zheng, but it would be very difficult for him to fight against two.

"Tyrant Heng Mei, why are you being so careful? Bai Ning Bing, you deal with the others, Tyrant Heng Mei is mine!" Fang Yuan laughed loudly and shrugged his shoulders before charging towards Tyrant Heng Mei again.

"I will give you five minutes, if you can’t finish it by then, I will take over." Bai Ning Bing slightly raised her brows, her blue eyes flashing with sharp light.

"Boastful juniors!" Hearing Fang and Bai’s casual conversation, Tyrant Heng Mei felt his anger was about to burst out.

He had a violent temperament, he already outdid himself by maintaining his patience till now. Knowing that the situation was hard to improve, he threw away his other thoughts and let the murderous aura in his mind surge forth.

Fight!

Two sides collided.

Fang Yuan against Tyrant Heng Mei while Bai Ning Bing suppressed the remaining members of the Ten Tyrants.

It was a chaotic battlefield!

Boulders were smashed, mountain creeks ran dry, caves collapsed, and there were sounds of thunder-like explosions.

Tyrant Heng Mei became more fearful. Fang Yuan possessed bitter strength Gu , his strength and fighting strength grew the more injuries he suffered.

When he crossed moves against Fang Yuan just before, he had thought the so-called little beast king was no more than that.

Reaching the halfway stage, his expression turned grave.

And when Fang Yuan burst out with six beast phantoms at the same time, Tyrant Heng Mei’s face lost color.

"This little beast king, how could he be so strong?! Not only is his Gu worm combination superior to mine, he also has plentiful battle experience. How did he live to have such skillful and ruthless moves, there is not even a shadow of a young person in him. He is simply a hundred year old monster!"

"No wonder he acts so overbearingly, with such strength, even I would have no worries in acting like this. I have failed bad this time! I must retreat!"

Fang Yuan met frontal attacks with swift and fierce strikes, like a fierce tiger leaving the mountain or a flood dragon overturning the seas. Tyrant Heng Mei was gasping and his energy and blood were in disorder from Fang Yuan’s attacks.

The main point was, every time Fang Yuan suffered injuries, he would become stronger.

Now, Tyrant Heng Mei was already not able to continue fighting against Fang Yuan. If Fang Yuan became even stronger, that would be too horrible!

Every time Tyrant Heng Mei thought of this, his fighting spirit decreased by a little.

As the fight continued, he did not dare to attack at all. There were clear opportunities to attack Fang Yuan, but he started hesitating.

"What should I do, attack or not?"

With such thoughts, how could he fight well?

Tyrant Heng Mei was slowly falling into a passive situation; Fang Yuan however, had let go of all his apprehension, his attacks were like the tides, coming waves after waves, continuous and endless.

Beast phantoms flashed one after another in the air, there would be violent sounds every time Fang Yuan attacked.

The explosive sounds came again and again, all the people who heard it felt their hearts throb in fear.

"What kind of fierce offense is this?!"

"Even a formidable senior like Tyrant Heng Mei is not Fang Zheng’s match..."

"Fang Zheng is clearly at rank four initial stage but he is suppressing the middle stage Tyrant Heng Mei."

"Little beast king..." Many people were secretly observing the battle and thought over this nickname of Fang Yuan.

"Who is the tyrant here?" Mang Kuang felt quite helpless. He could tell Fang Yuan was more brutish and more unreasonable than Tyrant Heng Mei. The fiendish Tyrant Heng Mei paled in comparison to Fang Zheng.

"Fang Zheng, don’t go too far!" Tyrant Heng Mei spurted out blood; his chest, arms and legs were all completely fractured. He wanted to retreat, but Fang Yuan had already seen through his plan. Bai Ning Bing killed the other members of the Ten Tyrants and firmly locked him down.

Howl howl howl!

Howl howl howl!

Fang Yuan pointed his finger, six large beast phantoms turned into solid forms and fell down from the sky, submerging Tyrant Heng Mei.

Bam!

A loud sound echoed and dust scattered everywhere.

Tyrant Heng Mei was beaten to a pulp, his internal organs and bone fragments splattered over the ground.

Gasp...

Countless sharp inhaling noises could be heard from the surroundings.

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Another villain executed by the fists of justice.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Tian Ti mountain was the number one mountain in central continent. It was also called the land of inheritances and the mountain of sages.

Its height was over three thousand kilometers, it was imposing and had a grand presence. Its peak seemed to pierce through the skies and was hidden beyond the snowy fog and clouds.

What was extremely unusual was there were not many craggy rocks on the mountain.

Giant square shaped rocks reclined upon each other, stretching from the base of the mountain towards the top, forming stairs.

However, the scale of this stairs was so huge that there was an old legend about it in central continent saying the stairway reached the realm of the immortals and was a bridge connecting heaven and earth.

There were many touching, mysterious, tragic, and joyful stories revolving around Tian Ti mountain.

Tian Ti mountain became the holy land of central continent’s Gu Masters, a place closest to the immortal court. Many Gu Masters seeked for immortality but failed, and before death, they would place their tombs here. At the same time, a large majority of them would also set up their inheritances here.

Tian Ti mountain hid countless inheritances, and only those fated could obtain them.

Every year, after clouds and mist that covered it dispersed, Tian Ti mountain would experience an enormous flow of people. Many inheritances would be inherited, and many new inheritances would be set up.

However, this year was different.

This year, the inheritance that opened at Tian Ti mountain was Hu Immortal blessed land which led to the appearance of Gu Immortals. After discussing, they made an alliance and locked this mountain, setting up a contest for their sect’s juniors.

Right now, at the foot of Tian Ti mountain, an intense battle between the youngsters was already reaching its end.

Ten thousand cranes flew together and floated around Fang Zheng. Wei Wu Shang was panting and his clothes were in rags; he stared straight at Fang Zheng from within the layers of encirclement by the cranes.

"No, I haven’t lost yet! I still have my trump card!" Wei Wu Shang was not resigned to admit defeat after being at the losing end.

If it was an ordinary situation, he would have conceded defeat already. But god knew how many elite disciples were fixing their gazes at this match.

Wei Wu Shang was not representing only himself but also the Heaven’s Envy Sect behind him. At the same time, others did not matter but Fairy Bi Xia whom he admired was also watching the match.

"I cannot lose!" With this thought, Wei Wu Shang valiantly activated a Gu in his aperture.

He had always been hiding this Gu, not using it even at the important sect examination.

Once this Gu was activated, it created a colorless breeze.

The light breeze revolved around Wei Wu Shang’s body, moving his clothes and caressing his hair.

However, Fang Zheng looked like he was facing a great enemy.

It was because Lord Sky Crane had already reminded him loudly: "Not good! This kid actually has injury wind Gu. Defend, defend with all your might, this Gu can whip up injury wind; it looks light and harmless, but it is extremely terrifying. Heaven’s Envy Sect’s junior was not weak indeed. This seems to be his trump card!"

Injury wind blew; Fang Zheng completely gave up on attacking and used all his strength to defend.

Injury wind looked gentle, but wherever it blew, the cranes cried out in pain; countless ironbeak flying cranes crashed down to the ground like their wings were broken.

Injury wind blew on Fang Zheng’s body; the defensive light around his body continuously flickered.

Beads of sweat dripped from Fang Zheng’s forehead, he gritted his teeth and transferred the primeval essence from his aperture to his defensive Gu endlessly.

The stalemate lasted a while, finally Wei Wu Shang sighed inwardly and stopped activating injury wind Gu.

It was not that he did not want to continue the fight, but his aperture was already close to drying up.

Gu Masters all had a common point, that was when primeval essence was consumed, the Gu Master’s fighting strength would sharply decrease.

Rank one to rank five Gu Masters all suffered from the restraints of primeval essence. Only when they went beyond mortal and reached the realm of immortals, becoming a Gu Immortal, would they be able to have endless primeval essence.

"I lost." Wei Wu Shang’s gaze was dark.

He had calculated it clearly: His primeval essence was exhausted and so he did not have any more strength to battle. However, Fang Zheng had been commanding flying cranes to battle from the start; his primeval essence consumption was relatively less and was sure to have some more primeval essence left.

"Brother Wei is worthy to be Heaven’s Envy Sect’s elite disciple, possessing such unusual and incisive methods; I have increased my knowledge and my horizons have been broadened. My primeval essence has also almost been exhausted by brother. How about we consider this spar as a draw?" Fang Zheng smiled.

"What?" Wei Wu Shang was stunned.

What was Fang Zheng saying? He was very clear of his own situation. How could he have a Gu that could exhaust Fang Zheng’s primeval essence?

However, Wei Wu Shang immediately realized Fang Zheng was telling a lie.

"Fang zhen is giving me a way out of this situation." After understanding Fang Zheng’s plan, there was a complex expression on Wei Wu Shang’s face.

The disciples of every great sect could not casually make their moves.

Because they represented not only themselves, but also the sect behind them.

Moreover, with Fairy Bi Xia at the scene, Wei Wu Shang could truly not afford to lose this battle.

Since Fang Zheng gave him a way out, Wei Wu Shang quickly cupped his fists towards Fang Zheng after hesitating for a moment: "Brother Fang is a young hero, I am filled with admiration. Immortal Crane Sect indeed has deep foundations for being able to teach a figure like brother. I have benefitted from this spar and like brother Fang said, we will consider this match a draw."

Wei Wu Shang said so on the surface, but in truth, he secretly transmitted to Fang Zheng: "Fang Zheng, I, Wei Wu Shang, shall remember your leniency and will definitely repay it in the future. However, Fairy Bi Xia is my love, I will not concede on this. I will train harder and spar with you again in the future!"

Fang Zheng smiled, he nodded on the surface, but was inwardly feeling a headache.

Wei Wu Shang continued with the secret communication: "Fang Zheng, you need to be careful. Fairy Bi Xia has many admirers, not just me. Even with your formidable strength, you will still have four competitors. They are Heaven River Chen Da Jiang, Rising Purple Lightning Gu Ting, Nine Death Sorrowful Wind Tang Ru Qi and Tigress Zhao Shu Ye. You are so close with Fairy Bi Xia, they will definitely come find trouble for you. You better not lose."

Fang Zheng’s gaze could not help but flicker at the mention of these four famous names, feeling that his headache had become worse.

As for Lord Sky Crane, he was laughing heartily in his mind.

Sure enough, like Wei Wu Shang said, three days later, disciples of Ancient Soul Sect arrived at Tian Ti mountain. Leading them was Gu Ting, and after knowing of the matter between Fairy Bi Xia and Fang Zheng, he immediately sent a challenge.

To avoid this unexpected calamity, Fang Zheng chose to avoid the fight.

Gu Ting naturally was not willing to leave the matter at that; he would visit Fang Zheng’s residing cave every day and provoke him to a fight.

He continued this for seven days in a row.

His words became more vulgar as time passed. Immortal Crane Sect’s other disciples were unsatisfied and went to find him but were defeated.

Ancient Soul Sect’s momentum rose greatly, and at the eight day, everyone went to block Fang Zheng’s cave entrance and cursed endlessly.

"Fang Zheng, you ostrich, still not coming out?"

"Fang Zheng you are hiding now, but can you hide for your entire life? Obediently stop getting in contact with Fairy Bi Xia and big brother Gu Ting will magnanimously spare you."

"Immortal Crane Sect is merely so, they actually taught such cowardly disciple."

...

At the mention of Immortal Crane Sect, Fang Zheng who was in the cave let out a sigh and helplessly walked out of the cave.

He could endure the curses directed towards him. However, once it involved his master, his temperament changed. Disciple needed to uphold the prestige of their masters, this was an important value of central continent. If he did not uphold it, then when he returned to Fei He mountain later, he would be impeached and even receive punishment.

Lord Sky Crane made a loud din inside him: "Gahaha... Fang Zheng, my disciple, do you understand now? What I have been telling you from the start is not wrong, right? Blindly enduring will let others misunderstand and bully you. In this world, the more harmless and cowardly you appear, the more people will appear that will want to bully you. Fight, defeat this Gu Ting! Shut the mouth of these people from Ancient Soul Sect! Improve your reputation!"

"Sigh... one has to compromise in this world , I really feel it now. I can only fight!" Fang Zheng gained an understanding with this event.

Gu Ting, come, let’s fight!

...

At the similar time as the fight between Fang Zheng and Gu Ting, far away at southern border’s San Cha mountain, a battle ended.

The battlefield was a mess; blood all over the ground, smashed rocks, destroyed trees and craters all around.

Fang Yuan stood proud on the battlefield while his opponent Fei Li was kneeling on the ground, kowtowing and begging for forgiveness.

"Lord Fang Zheng, please be magnanimous and spare me!" Fei Li continuously kowtowed while begging bitterly.

He had a cultivation of rank four middle stage and was also a strength path Gu Master. He had been full of spirits, but now his body was soaked with blood, his right arm broken and his two legs fractured, cutting out an extremely sorry figure.

"Since you are begging for forgiveness, then first hand over your expend strength Gu and I shall consider whether to accept it or not." Fang Yuan looked down upon Fei Li, cold light bursting out of his eyes.

Fei Li hesitated before handing over expend strength Gu.

This Gu was his vital Gu and also his core Gu, it made his enemies waste more strength when making any movements, doubling the expenditure of their stamina.

Handing over the expend strength Gu, Fei Li lost his vital Gu and suffered a heavy backlash, spurting out huge mouthfuls of blood.

Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed as he accepted expend strength Gu: "I have considered, expend strength Gu is not enough to exchange for your life."

Fei Li’s eyes opened wide and not considering the critical state of his body, he shouted: "Lord Fang Zheng, this is my most precious Gu!"

Bam!

With a shift of Fang Yuan’s mind, beast phantoms directly pounced forward and turned Fei Li into minced meat.

"Pauper." Fang Yuan looked at the disfigured corpse below him and sneered.

Then his gaze swept through the battlefield.

The spectators were not few, but all of them subconsciously chose to avoid Fang Yuan’s gaze.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly: "What’s wrong? Sky Tiger Xue San Si isn’t here? You guys tell her, we are both strength path Gu Masters, three days later, I will come visit her and exchange pointers!"

The moment these words came out, it caused an uproar.

Little beast king was too violent; a few days ago, he had killed Tyrant Heng Mei, and at this battle, Fei Li begged him for forgiveness, but he did not let him go and smashed him into minced meat.

Now, he was going to challenge Sky Tiger Xue San Si!

What ferocity and wickedness was this!

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Seriously doing a better job than Tie clan at exterminating demonic path Gu Masters.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"What, the little beast king is challenging me?" When she first heard the news, Xue San Si refused to believe it.

She was thinking, she had no relationship with the black and white demons, she had never offended them, not even meeting them before. How could they come to find trouble with her for no reason?

But soon, she investigated, and realized this was true!

"How can this be? What is this little beast king’s brain made of? The three kings inheritance is opening in a few days, he still has the mood to challenge me? What did I do to you, why are you messing with me like this?!"

Xue San Si felt helpless and annoyed.

"Is it simply because we are both on the strength path, thus he wants to compare who is stronger? Sigh, this maniac!"

Xue San Si thought about it thoroughly, finally classifying Fang Yuan as a lunatic, unable to be understood by a normal human.

A few months ago, she had heard of the reputation of the black and white demons.

As the passed, the two of them got more famous, as rumors spread further and wider.

They are the publicly recognised new rising stars of the demonic path.

Initially, Xue San Si did not mind it, Fang Yuan and Hu Mei Er had a conflict, and she was gloating over it.

But now, she could not laugh anymore.

After the black and white demons came to San Cha mountain, they not only did not keep a low profile, but even create huge problems.

Especially that little beast king, he does things with no discretions, unreasonable and ruthless, causing people to feel threatened.

Tyrant Heng Mei from Ten Tyrants visited him out of goodwill, but was killed. Fei Li already begged for mercy, but Fang Yuan did not let him off, beating him to a pulp, into meat paste.

The thing is, those were rank four Gu Masters, with middle stage cultivation. But little beast king used initial stage cultivation to kill these two outrightly. Such battle strength bred fear in people’s hearts.

Xue San Si also had rank four middle stage cultivation, she feels that her strength was about the same as Tyrant Heng Mei and Fei Li. Now that Fang Yuan was challenging her, her heart sank as she felt a great threat, even a trace of fear that she had to admit!

"This Fang Zheng is too cruel and unreasonable. He is trying to step on us, these seniors’ corpses to strengthen his reputation. Fei Li was the sacrifice for his ambitions, now it is my turn."

Such arrogant acts, Xue San Si had done it when she was young.

But back then, she only killed rank three Gu Masters, she was nowhere near Fang Yuan’s ruthlessness, choosing Gu Masters at a higher stage than him to battle.

To speak the truth, Xue San Si did not want to battle with this lunatic Fang Yuan. But unfortunately, her godfather was in closed cultivation refining a Gu recently, now that Fang Yuan publicly challenged her, she had to accept it.

In this world, people often had no choice.

If she, Xue San Si, did not accept the challenge, the reputation that she had built up all these years would go down the drain.

Xue San Si has been in the demonic path for many years. She had a clear understanding of this world’s cruelty.

This was a difficult world to live in, for that chance of survival, all the different species fight it out with their lives!

The kinder and weaker you show yourself, not only would you not gain peace, but you would even get yourself into greater danger, and attract the greed of many.

Demonic path Gu Masters who got to Xue San Si’s height have surely killed many people, and offended even more people.

The world was like this, if you did not kill people, and offend people, how could you gain the resources needed to advance your cultivation? How could you gain fame from battle results?

To defend her reputation, Xue San Si quickly agreed to Fang Yuan’s challenge.

The two decided on a wide valley as the location for their battle.

Three days later, Xue San Si saw Fang Yuan for the first time.

She was shocked, Fang Yuan did not have the fierce appearance in her imagination, in fact he looked rather gentlemanly, without any boorish features, his eyes were dark like an abyss, extremely peaceful.

"Sky Tiger, I’ve heard of you, you offended a higher-up in your clan, and was exiled. You secretly worked hard, taking a risk to kill beast kings, and using the Gu worms u gained to arm yourself, finally becoming an expert slowly and steadily. After that, you went back and killed the numerous elders that framed you in the past. To be honest, I admire you quite a bit." Fang Yuan spoke.

Such a respectful tone caused people to listen in shock.

"Why did he change his nature? Speaking so politely?"

"Does he have an interest in Sky Tiger? To be fair, although Sky Tiger looks ordinary, she has the proper curves, her body is great, she is indeed a beauty."

"Hmph, is little beast king that kind of person? He disregarded even Hu Mei Er, he is ruthless and cold-blooded, a fearsome person. I’ve learnt from these few days, you guys should not place any hopes on him."

As the people discussed, Xue San Si replied Fang Yuan: "I’m flattered. Little beast king, the name of the black and white demons is renowned in this area."

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: "I cultivate the strength path, you are the same. If we spar, it will help both of us learn more. Before this, I have sparred with Tyrant Heng Mei and Fei Li, these two were great and gave me quite an experience. But such a sparring method is boring to me now. This time, why don’t we change the sparring method."

Xue San Si listened, and raised her eyebrows: "Oh? What idea do you have, I’ll listen to it."

"Simple, I’ll stand here and let you hit me. After you finish, I’ll hit you. Isn’t that great and simple, it will end faster too. How about this, since you are a woman, I’ll give you three hits, after that, I will only retaliate with one hit." Fang Yuan smiled as he said.

"Sparring like that?" Xue San Si’s eyes glowed, attracted to Fang Yuan’s proposal.

Fang Yuan staying still and letting her do three hits, such a suggestion was too alluring.

"Alright, let’s do that." Xue San Si considered it through, agreeing.

"Please." Fang Yuan smiled lightly, staying still as he stretched out his right palm.

Xue San Si’s eyes shone with brilliance, as her killing intent surged, shouting: "First move!"

Several Gu worms were activated at the same time in her aperture.

Her slim arms burst out in a bright light, turning into two tiger claws.

The tiger claws tore through the sky, hitting Fang Yuan harshly.

Fang Yuan vomited a mouthful of blood, flying out like a cannonball, landing on a huge rock behind him.

Bam!

There was a loud crash as the rock exploded, rock shrapnels flying everywhere.

"Good hit." Fang Yuan laughed loudly, standing up. His chest had an obvious concavity, at least four ribs were broken.

Not only that, Fang Yuan felt his intestines were bleeding too.

As the intense pain assaulted him, Fang Yuan endured it as his nerves were undergoing a huge trial.

Xue San Si’s expression changed.

"That’s right, Fang Zheng made a good plan. The more injured he got, the greater the strength he can use. Then do I attack harder or softer now?"

The harder she hits, the more injured Fang Yuan gets, and the higher his battle strength gets. If she hit softer, when it is his turn, she would be able to defend more easily.

’No, I should use all my strength to attack. Kill him in three hits!" Xue San Si considered as she made up her mind.

"Second move!"

She shouted and activated her Gu worm, as her body expanded over twice her original size, becoming a giant!

The hair on her body became longer, becoming brownish-yellow tiger fur.

Her eyes became tiger eyes, and her teeth grew out of her mouth, becoming fangs. On her forehead, there was a symbol.

Her strength more than doubled.

As she pounced on Fang Yuan, a beast phantom appeared behind her body.

A fierce tiger growling towards the heavens, giving off an imposing aura! Its body was covered in brownish-yellow fur, and it had a tough muscular body, most importantly, there was a pair of wings on its back.

A tiger with wings!

A fierce tiger that has wings!

That means it is a — Biao!

Tiger was the king of the hundred beasts. And Biao is a flying tiger, the king among the tigers. Three hounds and one molosser, five tigers and one Biao!

The strength of a Biao was five times of a tiger!

The beast phantom of a Biao can suppress three to four of Fang Yuan’s ordinary beast phantoms.

Xue San Si’s strength had already more than doubled, but now she unleashed the strength of a Biao!

Under this huge force, Fang Yuan flew away like a shooting star, landing several hundred steps way, crashing on a mountain wall.

Bam!

The entire mountain valley shook intensely.

The mountain rocks collapsed, engulfing Fang Yuan.

"Such strength!"

"Is Fang Zheng dead?"

"No, not yet, his aura is still around!"

The collapsed rocks were pushed away. Fang Yuan walked out, his arms were completely crippled, his iron bones were broken, his steel tendons were mushed, and his bronze skin was torn.

Every step he walked, his body felt weak and was on the brink of collapsing.

The Fang Yuan now could definitely unleash eight beast phantoms.

But these injuries were recovering.

Fang Yuan activated the self-reliance Gu, the healing effect now had far surpassed the flesh-bone Gu.

"Third move!" Xue San Si was anxious, not wanting to give Fang Yuan time to recover.

A pair of wings grew out of her back.

This large pair of wings was brownish-yellow in color, as it flapped, Xue San Si flew to the sky.

She flew higher and higher, until she was about one kilometer in the sky, before she dived down.

She had calculated it long ago, this was the limit to how high she could go. Any higher and she would get injured from the impact after diving down.

As everyone watched nervously, Xue San Si charged towards Fang Yuan.

The image of a Biao appeared again.

This time, it did not appear above her body, but directly overlapped her actual body.

This moment, she seemed to have become a true Sky Tiger!

"With this move, you are finished!!!" Xue San Si growled as her killing intent surged.

Activating two Biao phantoms in a row caused her to pay a huge price.

This was her strongest power, her strongest attack!

She was confident of killing Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan looked up at her, activating golden shield Gu.

But golden shield Gu was rank three, could it block Xue San Si’s strongest attack?

Translator’s Thoughts

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral

Chibi clicks one wrong button and it takes 30 minutes to salvage :(I’ll just up the next chapter here, 2 more tomorrow...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The lush valley enlarged rapidly in Xue San Si’s eyes.

Wind blew past and buzzed intensely on her ears.

Xue San Si’s face that had completely changed looked down at Fang Yuan with her tiger eyes, the corner of her lips already curled up into a bloodthirsty smile.

She could almost see little beast king being flattened into minced meat by her unprecedentedly fierce attack.

"There is no way he can survive such an impact!"

When she saw Fang Yuan activating golden shield Gu and his body covered by the golden light, she could not help but sneer inwardly.

"Rank three golden shield Gu? Even if it was the advanced rank four golden bell shield, it would not be able to defend against my attack."

The intensity of the battles between rank four Gu Masters was very high and was not something the defense of a rank three Gu could match.

"This time, I will let these juniors know what happens when they act so arrogantly!" Xue San Si’s killing intent was already so overwhelming that it was threatening to burst out.

"Finished, Fang Zheng is finished this time!" When they sensed the fierce attack of Xue San Si, many of the spectators shouted out.

"This is good, little beast king had been too rampant, he should be taught a lesson!" Many righteous Gu Masters were feeling happy at this scene.

"Looks like little beast king wants to rely on golden shield Gu to resist this attack. That is really too naive."

"No, maybe he will activate beast phantom. The combined strength of eight beast phantoms is not a small matter. But if he does that, he would be breaking the agreement they made earlier. As long as he attacks, he will be breaking the agreement and it will mean his loss."

The spectators, whether they were of righteous path or demonic path, all wished for Fang Yuan to lose this battle.

Fang Yuan’s activities these days brought them an enormous mental pressure.

"No, there is still an influencing factor on the battlefield - Bai Ning Bing!"

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Several figures suddenly moved to the entrance of the valley and silently surrounded Bai Ning Bing.

These people tacitly took the same measure.

If Bai Ning Bing moved to save Fang Yuan, they would stop her.

The terrifying thing about the black and white demons was the close cooperation between these two rank four Gu Masters. Now everything bode ill for little beast king after they restrained Bai Ning Bing.

If little beast king fell, then only Bai Ning Bing would be left and it would not be that threatening.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was indifferent as he looked up at Xue San Si, in the depths of his pupils was a trace of mockery.

Xue San Si had yet to collide against him, but a formless wind pressure was already pressing towards him. From another side, it showed the tremendous strength of the imminent collision.

The phantom of Biao enveloped Xue San Si, the wings on her back flapped continuously as her speed increased more and more, and closed towards the ground.

Soon, this force would collide against Fang Yuan.

Suddenly!

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with a bright light, and he activated a Gu.

Horizontal charge Gu!

He suddenly charged towards the left and then turned around.

Vertical crash Gu!

He charged a hundred steps away.

"Little beast king, you!!!" Xue San Si’s anger flared up when she saw Fang Yuan suddenly running away, she opened her eyes so wide that the corners were about to rip!

She did her best to control her descent, but her speed was too fast and she could only let Fang Yuan run out of her attack range.

Seeing Fang Yuan suddenly retreat, the spectators had yet to react when the next moment, there was an enormous explosion like a bolt from the blue.

BOOM!

Xue San Si fiercely collided onto the ground, in that instant, the spectators around the valley could sense the ground under them shaking!

Crushed stones shot out everywhere, the collision created a strong wind pressure that immediately shot out towards all direction.

Everywhere the wind pressure reached, stones, trees, and plants were all uprooted and moved with it.

Smoke and dust whirled around, the enormous destructive force instantly formed a thirty meters huge round crater.

Everyone’s heart pulsed rapidly in fear, and just as they were feeling moved about this destructive force, Fang Yuan suddenly changed direction and charged into the smoke.

Horizontal charge Gu, vertical crash Gu!

He used the two Gu one after another and rapidly charged towards Sky Tiger Xue San Si, not caring about the pain from the cold wind pressure and the crushed stones.

Xue San Si was in the center of the huge crater, her body covered in dirt from the collision and was cutting out a sorry figure.

Her ears kept on buzzing and a burst of dizziness attacked her mind.

The fierce Biao phantom had already dispersed. Her incomparably powerful bearing from just before was no longer there.

Bitter strength Gu, all-out effort Gu!

Fang Yuan hurried, an ominous glint shot out from his eyes.

Howl howl howl...

Eight beasts roared one after another.

Boar, brown bear, crocodile, green bull, horse, stone turtle, white elephant and black python, eight phantoms made their loud debut in the air above Fang Yuan!

Strength Qi Gu!

Yellow gold primeval essence severely depleted as it poured into strength qi Gu, creating a huge formless strength Qi.

This strength Qi attached itself to the eight beast phantoms; the beast phantoms turned solid and life-like one after another.

With a shift of Fang Yuan’s mind, the eight beast phantoms charged towards the crater.

Xue San Si’s body was shaking and she was just about to pull out her legs from the ground when she suddenly heard beast roars from above her.

She immediately raised her head and all she saw was darkness, countless attacks rained down on her like a windstorm.

Bam Bam Bam... the tragic sounds of the battle echoed from the huge crater.

Xue San Si did her best to struggle and resist, after all she was a rank four Gu Master and had strong foundations.

However, not even three minutes later, the sounds of battle stopped. Five out of eight phantoms remained and were shortly recalled by Fang Yuan.

And Xue San Si, as the loser, had a mournful end. Pieces of her corpse were littered over the crater, her blood sprayed all over the ground and dyed the white bone pieces, there were also the brain matter, hair and so on.

Smoke and dust dispersed, the whole battlefield became clear.

When they saw such an outcome, the spectators all burst out in an uproar.

"Sky tiger is dead, another rank four Gu Master has been killed by little beast king!"

"Didn’t little beast king make an agreement with Xue San Si? He said he would not not move, but he ended up running."

"This battle should be little beast king’s loss. Because he went back against the battle agreement he himself set!"

The valley was a scene of commotion as the spectators commented and discussed; they were stunned and furious, showing intense resentment and disdain towards Fang Yuan’s shameless behavior.

Bai Ning Bing laughed heartily and her indifferent gaze swept through the battlefield.

She had already expected this outcome. The so-called agreement was only a trap Fang Yuan set.

What kind of person was Fang Yuan? She, Bai Ning Bing, was the person who knew it the best!

The Gu Masters that were surrounding Bai Ning Bing all tacitly retreated at the same time.

Fang Yuan heard the rebukes, disdain and ridicule of the many Gu Masters around the valley, but he stood there with his hands behind his back and his face tranquil. His eyes squinted as if he was enjoying this.

In his eyes, this so-called ’sincerity’ was merely people fearing deception, thus hoping and requesting others to follow their standards.

Walking the demonic path, one should have no restraints and taboos.

So what if he went against the agreement?

So what if he did not keep his promise?

As long as one had enough strength, they could do whatever they liked. What could other’s disdain and ridicule do? These powerless and hollow words only manifested the helplessness of the weak, could it hurt a single hair of his?

’Hehehe....this Xue San Si is really stupid. She was actually bound by reputation and came running over to accept my challenge.’

Fang Yuan was in contempt of this: "Reputation is meant to be made use of, it is only a tool. But in this world, there are so many people who treats fame more importantly than their lives. Haha... really laughable! Of course, I did use some tricks in this match."

Xue San Si was different from Tyrant Heng Mei and Fei Li; she possessed flying type Gu and she could just fly to a high altitude if the situation turned bad, and Fang Yuan would have no way to deal with her.

Thus, Fang Yuan raised the agreement at the start. His goal was to restrain Xue San Si’s movement ability.

When he mentioned the condition of three strikes, he had already not planned to abide by it.

Xue San Si fell step by step into Fang Yuan’s trap, and Fang Yuan’s injuries enticed her to continually advance forward.

After the second strike, Fang Yuan intentionally healed himself in front of her. Xue San Si was not willing to see her efforts go to waste and under her worry, without thinking much, she flew to the sky choosing to use her strongest attack.

However, in the end, Fang Yuan instead borrowed her strength to weaken her greatly by using little effort, then quickly went in to attack and killed her.

If it was truly an upright and frank battle, Xue San Si could fly with her wings and would absolutely not be so easily killed by Fang Yuan.

"Little beast king, you really are shameless and despicable."

"You went back against the agreement, you are the loser in this match!"

Many spectators started shouting and yelling, saying similar words.

"That’s right. I admit defeat, so what?" Fang Yuan scoffed and replied loudly.

His voice reverberated in the valley.

The clamorous din suddenly quietened down...

’That’s right, so what if he lost? Look at the winner, she has turned into a puddle of blood and flesh, even her own father won’t be able to recognize her. What meaning is there in such an outcome?’

After reacting to this point, the noises in the valley suddenly rose an octave, much more violent than before.

Fang Yuan calmly admitted his defeat and even more showed his shamelessness; causing the spectators to feel indignant and furious.

Fang Yuan threw his head back and laughed heartily: "Since you guys are feeling such anger, do you want to take revenge for Xue San Si? I didn’t know she had such good relationships. Come, come, come, all of you who wants to take revenge come at me together!"

The fierce criticism from the spectators suddenly quietened down and the surroundings turned silent in a moment.

Although Fang Yuan pulled a fast one and killed Xue San Si, Xue San Si was a famous rank four middle stage figure in the end and it was impossible for her to lack strength after the three attacks. However, she was also turned into meat paste by Fang Yuan, displaying Fang Yuan’s formidable fighting strength once more.

Fang Yuan defeated three rank four middle stage experts in a row with his rank four initial stage cultivation. Such strength, other than a few individuals, who would not feel fear?

Moreover, the heavier the injuries Fang Yuan suffered, the stronger his strength became.

Fang Yuan arrogantly challenged them, but no one stood up.

Demonic Gu Masters were mutually restrained and held suspicions towards each other, almost every one of them was a loner; no one stood out for Xue San Si. On the contrary, some members of righteous path wanted to eradicate this devil Fang Yuan, but they could not easily move at this moment.

Why?

Because once they stood up, it would become taking revenge for Xue San Si. And Xue San Si was a demonic figure!

"Is there no one that wants to take revenge for her? Is there or not?" Fang Yuan again asked loudly.

Countless spectators’ expression turned gloomy. Some looked at each other but no one replied.

"If there is no one, I am leaving." Fang Yuan raised his brows and walked a few steps before he stopped, "I am really leaving."

Still, no one spoke.

Fang Yuan’s dominance suppressed everyone present. Such a rampant bearing made many rank four experts indignant.

Many people became restless but still restrained themselves in the end.

"Hahaha..." Fang Yuan raised his head towards the sky and laughed loudly as he walked away with large strides, soon leaving the battlefield.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Big brother Li, you need to make a move..." Hu Mei Er lied back on Li Xian’s chest and spoke coquettishly.

Li Xian was short and fat. He had a round nose, large eyes and wide forehead, his hair also let out a greasy shine. Right now, one of his short and rough hand was on Hu Mei Er’s delicate little waist while the other hand was on her leg.

Li Xian was a rank four upper stage Gu Master! However, he rarely fought, making a living by doing business and was a famous unscrupulous merchant of the demonic path, having wide connections.

He embraced Hu Mei Er and said with a lecherous smile: "Mei Er, your body feels like there are no bones with skin as delicate as jade. I haven’t seen you for a few days and you have become more beautiful."

Hu Mei Er rolled her eyes and said in a displeased tone: "Big brother Li, I am trying to talk to you. That black and white twin demons offended me, I am already yours, you must seek justice for me!"

"Ok, ok..." Li Xian half-heartedly spoke while his ten fingers wandered over Hu Mei Er’s body.

Hu Mei Er’s breathing became rough and her face flushed red. Along with her watery eyes, she looked very alluring.

However, her mind was as clear as snow.

She tried to persuade Li Xian but he only muttered ’mmm’ and did not agree, instead taking advantage of her.

Hu Mei Er pushed Li Xian and stood up with aggrieved expression: "Big brother Li, give me a definite answer! I have been begging you like this, do you not pity me?"

"Sigh, my darling, my little treasure. It is not that your big brother Li doesn’t want to do it, but dealing with the black and white demons will be somewhat tricky. They are two rank four Gu Masters, your big brother Li is a lone force, just one person." Li Xian spread his arms with a helpless expression.

Hu Mei Er snorted: "Alright, I shall lower the bar. You only need to deal against that little beast king. This Fang Zheng is the most hateful! You can leave that Bai Ning Bing alone for now."

"This..." Li Xian hesitated.

"Big brother Li!" Hu Mei Er saw a chance and threw herself into Li Xian’s arms, softly blowing at Li Xian’s fat ear.

Li Xian immediately felt a fire burning near his crotch.

His eyes became dazed: "Okay, since you are asking like this, big brother Li will help you take revenge. But..."

He slightly changed the topic: "Three kings inheritance will open again in one or two days. There cannot be any problems at this critical juncture. After the three kings inheritance, I will go teach that little beast king a lesson, alright?"

The opening of three kings inheritance was near and everyone was paying attention to it.

Hu Mei Er curled her lips, she did not have much to say about Li Xian’s evasion.

After a period of intimacy, Hu Mei Er took her leave.

Although Li Xian tried to make her stay, Hu Mei Er’s attitude was firm; in the end, Li Hao could only send her off.

He stood at the cave entrance and impatiently looked at Hu Mei Er’s figure gradually getting far and disappearing within the forest.

"Hmph, this little temptress!" Li Xian returned back to his cave, the lust on his face nowhere to be seen, replaced by a cautious and gloomy expression.

"Trying to sow discord and use me as a tool to deal with little beast king? This little temptress really thinks she had reached greater success in her enchantment path. Ridiculous!" The smile on Li Xian’s face was cold, "I, of course, have ways to deal with black and white twin demons. But when did I, Li Xian, ever do unprofitable business? Hehe."

"This little beast king Fang Zheng is not simple. He seems boorish but in fact his thoughts are meticulous. Challenging three demonic Gu Masters in a row before the opening of three kings inheritance, this definitely was a premeditated plan!"

Gu Masters came from all over the places and gathered at San Cha mountain, why?

Wasn’t it for the three kings inheritance!

Fang Yuan’s aggressiveness had not caused him any troubles. These days, only he found trouble for others, why was it?

Because everyone were impatiently watching the three kings inheritance, making every effort and secret preparation for it. Who would want to have a bloodbath with little beast king, this lunatic, and miss this great opportunity?

No one!

"This little beast king used this psychology and acted unrestrainedly, establishing his reputation. Two days later when the three kings inheritance opens, who will want to block his way?" Li Xian shook his head as he predicted the future.

Ever since Fang Yuan killed Xue San Si, even he felt some fear towards this little beast king.

Before, when Fang Yuan killed Tyrant Heng Mei and Fei Li, it did not attract Li Xian’s attention. However, when Fang Yuan broke his promise and took the chance to kill Sky Tiger, Li Xian realized what a thorny problem he was!

Why so?

The righteous path categorized talents into four grades.

First grade was having both talent and virtue. Having talent and a moral character was the highest quality talent, able to hold his own.

Second grade was having virtue but no talent. They might have no talent, but they had moral character. Those with filial piety will obey their parents. Those with loyalty will obey their leaders. Those with sincerity would not break their promises. They could be used with ease, at least no huge problems will occur. Moreover, many abilities could be learned through experience.

Third grade was having talent but no virtue. They might have talent but had no moral conduct. With their talents, they could take up a post, but higher ups would not feel at ease using them, afraid they would someday betray them.

Fourth grade was having neither talent nor virtue. No talent and nor moral conduct. They were worthless and no one would feel at ease using them.

What kind of figure would be the most trouble when categorized under the demonic path?

In demonic path, fourth grade was having virtue but no talent. They did not have talent but paid particular attention to virtue, living among their ideals. Often, it was themselves that would cause their own destruction.

Third grade was having neither talent nor virtue. They might not have talent, but they also did not have any moral conduct. They could at least do some lowly works and earn a living.

Second grade was having both talent and virtue. With talent, they could fill their stomachs. However, at the same time, with virtue, filial piety, respect, loyalty and so on became the ropes that bound them. In demonic path, such a mutually deceptive character decided that such a type of people would not play a key role.

And the first grade, having talent but no virtue!

Fang Yuan was such a person.

He had talent, overflowing with talent actually. HIs aptitude was outstanding, A grade aptitude was not something everyone possessed.

Secondly, his battle talent allowed him to overstep realms and fight. Tyrant Heng Mei, Fei Li and Xue San Si had cultivation higher than him, but all died a tragic death in his hands; this was enough to prove this point.

Finally, he possessed the ability to do business. At Shang clan city, he did surprisingly well. And in a short period of a few years, he was able to gather such a formidable set of Gu worms.

If such a talented person had virtue, Li Xian would not be feeling so difficult.

However, Fang Yuan was someone with not even a hint of morality.

He left Hu Mei Er in the lurch, not giving a hoot to beauty. He was boorish, unreasonable, easily killed people and treated life with contempt.

He killed Tyrant Heng Mei and other two, each time he smashed them into minced meat, his savage and ruthless nature was clear from this.

He deceived Xue San Si and broke his promise in front of everyone, but was still proud of himself. This was even more terrifying.

It shows that he did things without any restrain or lower limits, he could betray someone as easily as snapping his fingers with not even a trace of guilt in his heart.

Li Xian was deeply aware: If a person like little beast king were to be placed in righteous path, in a peaceful environment, they would definitely be excluded by the people, suppressed, banished or imprisoned. However, in the chaotic demonic path with its cruel competitive environment, Fang Yuan was like a tiger entering the mountain, a flood dragon entering the sea! As long as his luck was not too bad, he would definitely have great accomplishments!

"Such a person, if I had discovered him early, I would have suppressed and killed him. However, now, it is too late, too late..." Li Xian sighed deeply.

Fang Yuan had already matured and he also had a companion beside him. Although Li Xian had rank four upper stage cultivation, he was best at doing business and not at fighting.

Naturally, there was always someone stronger.

On San Cha mountain, there were also people that could kill Fang Yuan. They were the four rank four peak stage Gu Masters like Kong Ri Tian, Long Qing Tian and others.

However, how could Li Xian command such formidable characters?

Moreover, these four were all in a subtle restraining balance. Not one of them dared to act blindly and all their eyes were set on three kings inheritance, how could they have the mood to consider other things.

"Hmph, this little temptress harbors evil intentions. She actually wants to stir me up and fight with such a demonic figure, how is that possible? Not only will I not offend him, but instead I will build a good cooperative relationship with him. All demonic path figures place benefits at the top."

"However, by killing Xue San Si, little beast king has offended another person. Sky Tiger’s godfather who is the rank four upper stage Gu Master Century Boy. These days, Century Boy has been refining Gu in seclusion, he will definitely appear when the inheritance opens this time. At that time, he will most likely find trouble for black and white twin demons."

"Hehehe, I will secretly befriend little beast king while staying at the sidelines on the surface. I will watch the battle between Century Boy and black and white twin demons, then after looking at the outcome, I will wait for an opportunity to make a move!"

No matter what the outcome was, Li Xian would not have much loss.

This was Li Xian.

An unscrupulous merchant of the demonic path who was an expert at benefiting from others’ expense.

Swish swish swish...

Under Fang Yuan’s will, the bright golden primeval essence tide cleansed the aperture walls.

Even on San Cha mountain, he was always cultivating diligently.

His actual cultivation was only rank four initial stage, it was originally only light gold primeval essence, however under the effect of nine eyes liquor worm, the primeval essence’s quality rose by a small realm and changed into bright golden primeval essence.

Bright golden primeval essence was an enormous assistance to his battles. This was also one of the main reasons for him being able to kill three rank four middle stage Gu Masters in a row.

"These days, my reputation has raised greatly. There are certainly many, many people who hate and fear me. However, what does that have to do with anything?"

"Hehe, what I am treading on is the demonic path, it should be like this. Moreover, this is not Earth; here, individual strength can be above a group."

In different environments, the rules of the game were also different.

If it were on Earth, even if one walked demonic path, they would also have to consider moral character.

Because on Earth, the difference between individual strengths was small. Demonic path’s people also could only gather into a group to be able to accomplish grand ambitions!

"Two more days and it will be the day the three kings inheritance opens. It is unlikely for someone to come find trouble for me, I will use this time to refine charging crash Gu."

Fang Yuan had a precise plan and arrangement for his future.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

At that time, when Fang Yuan chose horizontal charge and vertical crash Gu as his movement Gu, he had already considered the situation when he advanced to rank four.

Horizontal charge Gu and vertical crash Gu were the two main materials to refine charging crash Gu.

With these two rank three Gu as the main, together with the Gu Master’s primeval essence and some supplementary materials and so on, to refine charging crash Gu.

The process of refining charging crash Gu was not difficult.

Fang Yuan had made sufficient preparations and the success rate of this recipe by itself was rather high.

Two days later, Fang Yuan succeeded in refining and obtained a whole new Gu - charging crash Gu.

Horizontal charge Gu and vertical crash Gu could only charge to the distance of a hundred steps together.

But charging crash Gu fused from these two Gu increased this charging distance to two hundred steps. At the same time, the delay between repeated use was also decreased by half.

However, the consumption of primeval essence was increased a little. But this small flaw was nothing to Fang Yuan who possessed the nine eyes liquor worm and heavenly essence treasure lotus.

"I already have six rank four Gu now; bitter strength Gu, charging crash Gu, yang Gu of yin-yang rotation Gu, nine eyes liquor worm, expend strength Gu and blood skull Gu."

"All-out effort Gu, strength qi Gu, golden shield Gu and others are all rank three. They are slowly failing to keep up with my requirements."

Most of the Gu on Fang Yuan were rank three. He was, however, at rank four initial stage now and possessed middle stage bright golden primeval essence, thus these Gu worms were gradually becoming unsuitable for him.

Naturally, it did not mean that the higher the Gu, the better they were.

For example bone flesh unity Gu. It was only a rank three Gu, but it could allow many Gu Masters to use it even at this rank. This made its value stand out.

On the whole, however, Gu worms and Gu Masters needed to have a mutually cooperative rank, and was best if it were the same for it be more convenient in using them.

Fang Yuan made a small consideration; he had a lot of Gu worms to upgrade.

First of all was the all-out effort Gu.

The all-out effort Gu on him was only at rank three; it could only activate rank three beast phantoms. To advance its rank, he would need to get the undefeated hundred battles Gu from three kings inheritance, so this plan could only be put aside for now.

Strength qi Gu was also at rank three, but Fang Yuan did not have its corresponding recipe, so he was unable to advance it.

Fang Yuan planned to advance rank three golden shield Gu into rank four golden bell shield Gu.

The storage type rank three tusita flower could be upgraded to rank four tusita lantern Gu.

Self-reliance Gu was also a rank three Gu, but it was already at its peak stage and did not have relevant recipe for its advancement. But although it was a rank three Gu, as long as Fang Yuan displayed formidable strength, its healing effects could match with rank four healing Gu.

Similar to self-reliance Gu was bone flesh unity Gu.

Breath concealment Gu that was used to hide cultivation was also at rank three. Although it could be advanced, Fang Yuan decided lay it aside. At the present time, he did not need to hide his aura.

And heaven essence treasure lotus was also at rank three.

Fang Yuan already possessed the fusion recipe for rank four heaven essence treasure monarch lotus. But he needed to obtain a number of spirit springs to refine it. This was a large project and could only be put aside for now.

Calculating like this, Fang Yuan needed to advance all-out effort Gu, golden shield Gu, tusita flower and heavenly essence treasure lotus; these four Gu.

However, it was not just like that.

Fang Yuan had used iron bone Gu, steel tendon Gu and copper skin Gu to transform his body. These Gu were all rank three Gu. The defense they provided during fights between rank four Gu Masters were little.

There were also the eight phantoms in Fang Yuan’s body, none of them were from rank four strength Gu. Thus, Fang Yuan also needed replace these phantoms.

"The eight phantoms I have are from ordinary beasts. Only by replacing them with Biao strength phantom, mastiff strength phantom and so on, can I display the strongest fighting strength in rank four realm."

Fang Yuan had been interested in the Biao strength Gu of Xue San Si.

However, he had turned Xue San Si into minced meat and the Gu worms on her body were also destroyed.

Fang Yuan’s methods were too brutal. He frequently smashed his enemies into meat paste.

Although this was also a constant characteristic of strength path Gu Masters, this method was too violent and there would seldom be any surviving Gu worms once the battle ended.

Fang Yuan had won against three rank four demonic Gu Masters in a row, but only obtained an expend strength Gu.

And this expend strength Gu was also surrendered and contributed by Fei Li of his own accord.

The way Gu Masters obtained Gu worms was basically from trading, raising, capturing, fusing or reverse refining.

Gu Masters rarely obtained Gu worms as their victory spoils.

On one hand it was because Gu Masters used secretive and dangerous methods. In case a battle started, both sides would use all their strength to attack and would not spare anything for their safety. Like this, the Gu worms would also be wrecked and destroyed.

On another hand, it was extremely easy for the Gu Masters to destroy their own Gu worms. It only required a thought from them and their Gu worms would self-destruct.

"I have a lot to do to advance all of them..." Fang Yuan sighed and walked out of the cave.

Bai Ning Bing was already waiting for him at the cave entrance, and was gazing at the peak.

Fang Yuan followed her gaze and also looked up.

He only saw enormous light pillars rise from the three highest peaks of San Cha mountain, piercing through clouds and soaring towards the sky. Its enormous aura felt like it was supporting heaven and earth.

The three kings inheritance had opened.

"With this inheritance, my set of strength path Gu will be taken to perfection!" Fang Yuan’s gaze was burning but he restrained it.

Although he had outstanding battle prowess, it was still not his turn to take the stage.

Whoosh Whoosh Whoosh Whoosh!

Four figures separately charged out from east, south, north and west; they stopped in mid-air and confronted each other.

Rank four peak stage aura were let out without any concealment!

From the eastern direction was poison path Gu Master Long Qing Tian.

He had long black hair, pale-green skin and his green pupils faintly flashed like there were too cold fires burning in it.

From the western direction was righteous path Wu clan’s elder Wu Shen Tong.

His fame was powerful and domineering, but his body was thin like a sickly scholar. He had pale complexion and coughed from time to time as if he could not endure this mountain wind.

From the southern direction was the demonic path expert Kong Ri Tian.

He was wearing flower patterned gown. He had a smile on while standing in the air, pink butterflies fluttering around him.

From the northern direction was Yi clan’s elder Yi Chong.

His whole body was covered with blue fish scales which formed into a thin armor. HIs nose was long and protruding out, his eyes were larger than twice that of a normal person’s and he had a head full of blazing unkempt hair.

The muscles in his whole body tangled forming layers of lumps. His stature was short but his physique was extremely imposing. An enormous triangular fin grew out from his back like the black fin on a shark’s back.

These four were currently the strongest Gu Masters at San Cha mountain.

Rank four peak stage cultivation was only a step away from rank five. If they advanced to rank five, they would be the monarchs of the mortal world and wield power over a region, their might and aura would spread everywhere.

These four had already confronted each other for months on San Cha mountain. They had also fought many times with each other over this period of time, but no one could do anything to other, forming a chaotic situation.

Righteous path’s Wu Shen Tong and Yi Chong appeared to be allies but inwardly, they were not of one mind. While Kong Ri Tian and Long Qing Tian would also occasionally collaborate if the situation turned bad.

These four occupied the top caves and were closest to the inheritance entrances at San Cha mountain.

The appearance of these four attracted the gazes of all the Gu Masters on the mountain.

The inheritance was right before their eyes. No matter who it was, they were all restraining the desire to make a move.

After the short stalemate, Kong Ri Tian chose King Bao’s inheritance; Long Qing Tian chose King Xin’s inheritance and Wu Shen Tong chose King Quan’s inheritance.

The three inheritances did not correspond with each other, but there were four rank four peak stage Gu Masters.

The Gu Master remaining, Yi Chong, hesitated for a while before finally choosing King Bao’s inheritance.

"With this, King Bao’s inheritance has Kong Ri Tian and Yi Chong, two experts."

"Long Qing Tian chose King Xin’s inheritance this time, we fell in his trap last time, we must avoid him!"

"Wu Shen Tong is an enslavement path Gu Master, reportedly he has already advanced to middle stage of King Quan’s inheritance. In this inheritance, he is like a fish in water and can display extraordinary strength. If we choose King Quan’s inheritance, we might only get his leftovers."

While the crowd was discussing, a group of Gu Masters ascended to the peak.

They were rank four upper stage Gu Masters. Some had bizarre appearances, some were fiendish, some had dignified appearance and some were gloomy like forest.

Among them, one was a boy wearing black clothes. Before he entered the inheritance, he looked down and gazed deeply at Fang Yuan.

"Hmph, Century Boy..." Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes and let out a dangerous aura.

Century Boy was also a strength path Gu Master and was the godfather of Xue San Si, her patron.

Fang Yuan killed Xue San Si and offended Century Boy.

However, with the three kings inheritance in sight, Century Boy did not have the mind and heart to settle the account with Fang Yuan now. But once the inheritance closed, he was sure to make his moves against Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had not the least bit of fear towards this and was instead secretly looking forward to it.

With his current strength, he was almost unrivalled among rank four initial stage Gu Masters and could also prevail over ordinary middle stage Gu Masters. However, he would be evenly matched against rank four upper stage.

Above that, rank four peak stage would be a difficult opponent. However, if those rank four Gu Masters like Kong Ri Tian and others wanted to kill Fang Yuan, they would also pay a disastrous price.

As the Gu Master’s cultivation reached the later stages, the difference in each small realm was big and it would get more difficult to cross these ranks to battle, let alone cross realms to battle.

Fang Yuan possessed plentiful battle experience and also had a set of excellent strength path Gu worms, but he was also only able to cross one realm and kill middle stage Gu Masters.

"Of course, if I replace my Gu worms to rank four then I will have the strength to win against upper stage Gu Masters! And even be evenly matched against rank four peak stage! Three kings inheritance, here I come!"

At once, Fang Yuan activated charging crash Gu and charged towards the peak.

Rank four upper stage Gu Masters had all entered the inheritances.

The light pillars of the three inheritances were already a lot dimmer.

A group of rank four middle stage Gu Masters were just ascending up San Cha mountain, when they suddenly saw Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing charge towards them. All of their complexions changed and by some tacit agreement, got out of the way.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing entered King Quan’s inheritance together.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The moment his body entered the light pillar, Fang Yuan felt an intense weightlessness.

When his vision cleared up, he found himself standing in the wilderness.

All he could see around him was the greyish white sky.

On the ground, the grey-white rocks formed into short mounds, like gravestones.

The grey colored ground was not fertile, it was hard and dry, with some yellow grass growing in between the cracks.

The sky was white, the earth was grey, and the grass was yellow. The world had three colors.

Other than that, there were no other colors.

All he could hear was silence, or rather, dead silence. There was no wind, no swaying tree leaves, no cries of birds and beasts.

Anyone standing here would feel that in this entire world, he was the only person left, a lone survivor.

Being in the land of nothingness, loneliness, solitariness, loss and even fear would grow in their hearts.

Although he went into the inheritance with Bai Ning Bing, at the moment, Fang Yuan was alone.

But Fang Yuan was extremely calm.

"So this is King Quan Inheritance." He looked around, muttering to himself softly.

Compared to an ordinary rank five Gu Master’s inheritance, the three kings inheritance had a huge difference.

An ordinary rank five inheritance, be it central continent, southern border, northern plains, eastern sea, or western desert, they were all in the main world.

But the three kings inheritance was built inside a Gu Immortal blessed land.

Back then, the three kings were stuck and discovered the inheritance of an ancient Gu Immortal by accident, starting their legend.

The three kings were all geniuses in their own field, after failing to advance to rank six, they set up their inheritances in this blessed land before their deaths.

Thus, Fang Yuan was no longer in the main world now.

Gu Immortal Blessed Land — a small world that existed within the main world.

Every world had different rules and laws.

Entering a world means obeying and following its rules.

"Although Bai Ning Bing entered the inheritance with me, she was definitely sent to another place in this small world. But it is not a problem, as long as she continues to advance into the inheritance, we will definitely meet along the way.

Fang Yuan knew that this was the unique law of space inside a small world.

At the same time, there was also a difference in the flow of time.

"The flow of time here is three times that of the outside world." In Fang Yuan’s aperture, the slumbering Spring Autumn Cicada had awakened, and was recovering at three times the speed inside this world.

The Spring Autumn Cicada fed on the water in the river of time.

In this small world, the water flow in the river of time was three times faster than the outside world. Thus, it greatly assisted the Spring Autumn Cicada’s recovery.

But this was not good news to Fang Yuan.

The pressure that the Spring Autumn Cicada emits in its perfect condition was not something a rank four aperture could contain.

The King Quan Inheritance, although it was a chance for Fang Yuan to grow, it was also a land of death that escalated his demise.

"Staying here for one day means three days outside. I have to hurry, and conserve my time." Fang Yuan felt a strong sense of urgency.

Thankfully, with his memories, this King Quan Inheritance of a rank five Gu Master was not unfamiliar to him.

"If I am not wrong, there should be a dog type wild beast around here somewhere..." Fang Yuan moved around, looking all over the place, searching for what he had in mind.

"Woof, woof, woof!"

Suddenly, he heard a cry from afar, as a weak wild dog ran towards Fang Yuan with its eyes glowing in a weak green light.

This wild dog was thin to the bones, its teeth were yellow and it was only at the height of Fang Yuan’s knee.

It appeared extremely ferocious, evidently hungry, after smelling the human flesh that was Fang Yuan, it rushed over without hesitation.

Fang Yuan frowned, this wild dog was very ordinary, meeting it in the first stage was his bad luck.

He stood quietly on the spot, letting the dog run towards him.

In the currently environment, Fang Yuan could not utilize his other Gu worms, he could only use the rank one dog enslavement Gu.

This was the restriction of the laws in this small world.

King Quan modified the Gu Immortal blessed land, allowing a Gu Master to bring in a rank one dog enslavement Gu into his inheritance, and at the same time, other Gu worms cannot be used.

Of course, other than the Spring Autumn Cicada.

Spring Autumn Cicada was a rank six Gu, after a Gu worm reaches rank six, be it the main world or the small world, there only exists one of it.

Spring Autumn Cicada was not a mortal being, it was an Immortal Gu.

Even in the blessed land, it could be used freely.

"Not just King Quan Inheritance, King Xin Inheritance and King Bao Inheritance are the same. When the Gu Master initially enters the inheritance, they can only use the rank one dog enslavement Gu, paper crane Gu, and exploding egg Gu."

Seeing the wild dog rush towards him, Fang Yuan activated the dog enslavement Gu in his aperture.

This dog enslavement Gu, looked like a jade stone, only thumb-size. The exterior of the jade stone looked like a dog head.

Fang Yuan only used one drop of light golden primeval essence, to activate this dog enslavement Gu.

The dog enslavement Gu turned into a jade light, bursting out and turning from solid to hollow, next, it flew into the wild dog in the blink of an eye.

The wild dog cried out, as if it was heavily injured, and fell on the ground.

Because it was running, it slided across the ground until it rolled to Fang Yuan’s feet.

After resting for a while, the dog got up.

But this time, it did not bare its fangs at Fang Yuan, but instead, sprawled on the ground, sticking out its tongue and wagging its tail.

"Get up." Fang Yuan willed.

The wild dog obeyed and got up.

Its body had soft fur, the fur was dark but there was no injuries on it. The dog enslavement Gu directly went into its soul, it did not cause any damage to the dog’s physical body.

Its four limbs were on the ground, and the head was only near Fang Yuan’s knee.

Fang Yuan observed and shook his head.

This was an ordinary wild dog, it had little battle strength. But precisely so, he could use the dog enslavement Gu on it so easily.

"Regardless, I have to rely on it to get through the second round."

Fang Yuan was thinking in his mind, when suddenly a force from heaven and earth engulfed his body.

Immediately, Fang Yuan could not move an inch.

In front of him, a light flashed and a second dog enslavement Gu appeared in front of him.

Fang Yuan knew this was the reward from the inheritance, as well as the key to the second round, thus he quickly refined it.

This dog enslavement Gu was also rank one, it was easy to refine.

When Fang Yuan refined this Gu, and kept it into his aperture, with a swoosh , he vanished on the spot, moved to another location by the heavenly power.

This was still the wilderness, with white sky, grey earth, and yellow grass.

Fang Yuan stood on a low mound, as three wild dogs were surrounding him.

They were all thin as twigs, as two were lowering their heads scavenging for food. The third was slightly older, lying on the ground motionless.

Fang Yuan’s sudden appearance caused the three dogs to go crazy.

They started running like they were jolted with lightning, towards Fang Yuan from all three directions.

Fang Yuan controlled the first wild dog and activated its ferocity. Under Fang Yuan’s command, it bared its claws on one of the wild dogs.

But it could only stop one wild dog, soon, the second closed in on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan reenacted the same scene from earlier, using the second dog enslavement Gu and tamed it.

The third wild dog pounced, and Fang Yuan split his concentration into two, commanding both wild dogs to attack.

If it was an ordinary Gu Master, and was not familiar with the dog enslavement Gu, holding two fights at the same time would cause them to lose their bearings. But Fang Yuan was not nervous, in fact he was not even going all-out yet.

With his five hundred years of experience, Fang Yuan had commanded numerous beast groups to battle. Especially the blade-wing blood bats from the blood sea inheritance.

In this life, for San Cha mountain’s inheritance, he had trained for several months in Shang clan city, familiarizing himself with controlling dog groups.

The battle proceeded smoothly in Fang Yuan’s expected direction.

But Fang Yuan frowned: "The first wild dog’s body condition is terrible. Fighting like this, even if I win, I will only be left with one wild dog."

As he considered this, he consciously direct the two dogs to retreat while fighting.

Eventually, Fang Yuan successfully merged the two battles together.

This increased the pressure on Fang Yuan’s commands, but it also established great advantage for him.

Fang Yuan’s two wild dogs were cooperating perfectly, but their enemies were fighting alone.

Not long after, this intense battle ended.

The corpses of two wild dogs laid on the ground, blood flowing out of them.

The wild dogs Fang Yuan controlled stood on the ground, covered in wounds. The first dog was more injured, while the second dog was relatively healthier.

The battle had just ended, when the heavenly power descended again, wrapping around Fang Yuan and his two ordinary wild dogs.

His vision changed again, as weightlessness assaulted him.

"Third round..." Fang Yuan observed his surroundings immediately.

This time, he was standing on the top of a mound, surrounded by six wild dogs.

"Six!" Fang Yuan’s gaze concentrated, feeling pressured.

He had two wild dogs with him, having to fight against three times of his force, at the same time, his dogs were injured.

Without time to rest or think, the six dogs detected him and immediately attacked.

Fang Yuan’s eyes brightened, as he saw a pit nearby, he jumped in.

He jumped into the pit, with a hard wall behind him, he placed both his dogs in front of him.

The six wild dogs rushed towards him, at differing speeds. The two healthy wild dogs rushed up first, while the remaining four, with different injuries, were far behind.

Seeing this, Fang Yuan heaved a sigh of relief.

If these six dogs were healthy, he had no chance. But with this terrain advantage, and his skilled manipulation, he was confident of passing this round and moving on to the next!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Woof Woof Woof!

The sound of furious barking of dogs echoed endlessly.

Dozens of dogs were in a fierce fight; one side had many numbers but their formation were scattered. Another side had fewer numbers, but they were in a tight formation, and furthermore they were displaying battle tactics like shielding, retreating, attacking and so on.

Fang Yuan stood on a nearby hill and overlooked the whole battlefield while commanding his dogs.

This was already his tenth battle in King Quan’s inheritance.

With his plentiful experience and the understanding of King Quan’s inheritance, he had sprinted through the whole process without any incidents.

The battle lasted for five more minutes before it ended.

In the whole battlefield, there were nineteen dogs still standing, all of them the result of Fang Yuan’s hard accumulation.

Fang Yuan softly let out a breath of turbid air, his mind felt slightly exhausted.

"In King Quan’s inheritance, the difficulty increases sharply every ten rounds of battles. I used twenty eight dogs this time but had to sacrifice nine of them to resist the assault of nearly sixty dogs and cross this barrier."

To be honest, Fang Yuan had some alarming moments during this process.

"The three kings were demonic Gu Masters, demonic inheritance always held the law of the survival of the fittest, an intense and cold competition. This round should be enough to eliminate most of the participants who want to steal benefits."

There were countless righteous and demonic Gu Masters on San Cha mountain. Every time the three kings inheritance opened, large numbers of Gu Master would come pouring in to try their luck.

However, no matter which inheritance of the three kings inheritance it was, they were all extremely strict. To choose the most suitable inheritor, the barriers the three kings set up were high.

Among the three kings, King Quan was an enslavement path Gu Master, King Xin was a refinement path Gu Master, and King Bao was a fire path Gu Master. Their chosen inheritors naturally should also follow these paths.

The difficulty of the first ten rounds ruthlessly eliminated most of the Gu Masters of other paths.

At the thirtieth round, there would not be any Gu Masters of other paths.

At the fiftieth round, those remaining would be elites and geniuses of these paths.

At the seventieth round, only experts with deep foundations would remain.

Very few could reach the ninetieth round and they could be counted with two hands.

Especially from ninetieth to hundredth round, the final ten rounds, the difficulties were extreme and unsurmountable like the heavenly chasm. Even a monster like Fang Yuan could not cross it.

In his previous life, the three kings inheritance lasted for close to ten years. It involved countless people; both demonic and righteous, heroes and villains.

As of now, it had not been even a year since the appearance of the three kings inheritance and it was in its early stage. It was already amazing for many people to be able to charge through a dozen barriers.

By the middle stage, the participants would find it difficult to continue from around fiftieth barrier; they would exchange their experiences and sum up many rules.

At the late stage, most of the participants would hover around seventieth to eightieth barrier. Only an extremely few number of participants would be struggling at ninetieth round. These people were mostly rank five Gu Masters, their every action attracting many gazes.

And at the final period, the mystical figures of many rank six Gu Immortals also appeared.

Fang Yuan remembered most of the parts clearly. Of course, there were also some blurry areas, but they were minor details.

He had a deep understanding of three kings inheritance.

He knew no matter which inheritance he chose, he could only charge to the ninetieth round with his strength.

After the ninetieth round, the barriers were all something only rank five Gu Masters had a chance of clearing.

Fang Yuan knew it would be very difficult for him to cultivate to rank five. Ten years was absolutely not enough.

This was not only because cultivation became more difficult the higher the Gu Master advanced, but also because of Spring Autumn Cicada.

In this Gu Immortal blessed land, time flow was quickened which intensified the recovery speed of Spring Autumn Cicada.

This was an enormous threat to him.

Heavenly power descended once more and Fang Yuan’s vision flashed.

In a split second, he found himself transported to another strange place.

His field of view was not clear as the previous ten rounds, the surroundings were filled with dense grey fog, making one unable to distinguish even the directions.

Apart from rank six Spring Autumn Cicada, none of his other Gu worms could be used.

Nineteen dogs walked around him, but there was only a faint connection left from the dog enslavement Gu.

However, Fang Yuan was not flustered, he was clear that starting from the tenth round, the inheritance would give every challenger the power to choose.

He stood calmly and soon was able to distinguish.

Towards the depths of the fog on his left was an orange glow like someone had turned on a lantern. It was accompanied by a sound, the clear sound of a dog’s bark.

Towards his front was an indistinct black human shadow, appearing near but also far.

Towards his right, in the depths of the grey fog, a ball of blue lightning crackled.

"The orange light represents chrysanthemum akita dog. This dog is more loyal than the ordinary dogs with me, they are easy to control and can execute exquisite battle tactics. The blue light should be lightning symbol dog; it is very fast, faster than ordinary dogs by two times. And the black human figure should be my opponent, another Gu Master." Fang Yuan pondered.

These were all reminders provided by King Quan’s inheritance to him.

The first time a person enters, they would have a blurred vision and could only feel their way through the barrier, not able to make the most beneficial choice.

However, Fang Yuan was well aware; whether it was chrysanthemum akita dog, lightning symbol dog or the Gu Master, they were all challenges but also opportunities.

Fang Yuan considered it for just a short while and directly walked forward, abandoning the left and right directions.

As he walked forward, the grey fog started becoming thinner and his vision became clearer. At the same time, his control over his nineteen dog enslavement Gu also became stronger.

And the grey fog on his left and right became denser.

Han Bu Liu stood still, calmly looked at the person that walked out of the fog.

Han Bu Liu was already forty-eight, he was a righteous path Gu Master with a cultivation of rank four middle stage, and had already entered King Quan’s inheritance many times.

This allowed him to have a lot of understanding regarding King Quan’s inheritance. Right now, as he saw Fang Yuan’s figure in the fog walking slowly towards him, he immediately knew this was his opponent.

However, he was not in the least bit nervous.

He was an enslavement path Gu Master and was like a fish in water in King Quan’s inheritance.

In this special environment, all the previous accumulation of Gu Masters were not counted. They could only use the Gu the inheritance gave them to fight. The difference in cultivations had sharply decreased.

"This person is really unfortunate, actually bumping into me. I will do my best to win against this person with the smallest loss. Then I will charge towards the twenty-second barrier."

Han Bu Liu was very confident towards himself. He had charged to twenty-first barrier last time. Such an accomplishment was one of the best in his circles, even surpassing many rank four upper stage and peak stage Gu Masters.

Fang Yuan stepped out of the fog; his eyes as dark as the abyss and his expression as tranquil as water.

Han Bu Liu’s pupils shrunk rapidly as he revealed a terrified expression.

"It is little beast king!"

He immediately felt nervous and panicked.

Although Fang Yuan had arrived in San Cha mountain not long ago, he had killed three middle stage Gu Masters with his initial stage cultivation. His might was awe-inspiring and his vicious reputation had spread far.

Han Bu Liu was also at middle stage, but he, himself, knew his battle strength could not compare to Sky Tiger and others.

But soon, Han Bu Liu regained his senses: "This is the Gu Immortal blessed land, not the outside world! In this round, we can only use dog enslavement Gu. Little beast king can’t use his Gu set! He walks the strength path and is so young, how could he have any proficiency in the enslavement path?"

Han Bu Liu’s eyes shone with ecstasy and greed as he roared in his mind:

"Ahahaha, this is a heaven sent opportunity! By killing little beast king, I can greatly spread my reputation. By taking his Gu worms and selling them, I can make a lot of primeval stones! Dogs, charge!"

Righteous path inheritances were gentle and usually did not cause any deaths. Sometimes, even when someone failed, they would have some gains.

However, King Quan’s inheritance was a demonic path inheritance.

Here, one could kill and death was a normal thing.

The most crucial thing was in this Gu Immortal blessed land, Gu Masters could not utilize their Gu worms. This meant if the Gu Master died, they cannot will their Gu worms to self-destruct.

The Gu Masters on San Cha mountain had already discovered this point through fights.

This led to a sharp increase in the number of casualties in the inheritance!

At outside world, Gu Masters could cause their Gu worms to self-destruct before their deaths, not letting their enemies have them. The profits from battles were very small. But here, if a Gu Master died, their Gu worms would be left behind. This enticed people to commit crimes!

If Han Bu Liu killed Fang Yuan, almost all the Gu worms on Fang Yuan would be left behind. Such enormous spoils caused Han Bu Liu to let out his killing intent without restrain.

With a shift of his mind, eleven dogs charged towards Fang Yuan.

Woof Woof Woof!

They let out savage barks, and seemed unstoppable.

Fang Yuan was indifferent, he waited till these dogs neared him then waved his hand.

With a light wave, nineteen dogs rushed out from the grey fog behind him.

"Nineteen?" Han Bu Liu was extremely shocked, his eyes almost falling from their sockets.

"How can there be so many?!" He was filled with doubts.

He was an enslavement path Gu Master and had a lot of experience in commanding dogs, but despite his greatest efforts, only eleven dogs remained when he was done with the tenth round.

And little beast king, this strength path Gu Master has nineteen? A whole eight more than his!

What level of proficiency in enslavement path was this!

"No! Impossible! This is absolutely because he was lucky, otherwise how could he have so many dogs remaining? The true contest starts now. I will let you see what the commanding skill of an enslavement path Gu Master looks like!"

Han Bu Liu calmed his mind and was soon filled with fighting spirit.

In his opinion, little beast king was so young, no matter how much of a genius he was, he could not advance in both strength path and enslavement path at the same time.

"Eh? A flaw." Fang Yuan had been observing his opponent from the start.

Seeing Han Bu Liu’s expression change irregularly, he immediately grasped this fleeting chance and decisively mobilized the few strongest dogs to form an offensive arrow formation.

The next moment, this ’arrow’ suddenly broke the opponent’s formation.

"Oh no!" Han Bu Liu’s heart jumped rapidly as he immediately controlled his dogs.

However, how could Fang Yuan give him this chance, his remaining dogs formed into two exquisite arcs and outflanked the opponent’s formation from left and right, seizing control of the situation in an instant!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

This was an intense slaughter.

Han Bu Liu tried to resist desperately, trying to overturn the situation. But Fang Yuan saw through his actions every time, destroying his battle tactic. All his resistances were suppressed. Every effort he put in yielded no result.

An hour later, there were only eight wild dogs left, they were all Fang Yuan’s.

Han Bu Liu’s expression was pale, sweating profusely as he stood dazed on the ground.

Plop!

He suddenly kneeled on the ground, begging Fang Yuan: "Lord little beast king, please spare my life! I will do anything for you to repay your kindness. You are a genius, a monsterous genius! I was scared and had no options but to battle you. Your mastery of the enslavement path has left me utterly speechless in admiration. Lord little beast king, from today onwards, you are my master!"

"Oh, is that so, but how do you want me to see your sincerity? Unless you are willing to let me use the slavery Gu." Fang Yuan laughed lightly, manipulating eight wild dogs to surrounding Han Bu Liu.

Han Bu Liu flustered: "Lo... lord, inside this Gu Immortal blessed land, Gu Masters cannot use their Gu worms. Moreover, I do not have a slavery Gu."

"Then I have no choice." Fang Yuan waved his hand coldly, as eight wild dogs pounced.

"Lord Fang Zheng! No!" Han Bu Liu jolted up, screaming in fear, trying to escape.

But it was already too late, the eight wild dogs surrounded him, opening their mouths and chew on his body with their sharp canine teeth.

Han Bu Liu screamed pitifully, shrugging his arms like a lunatic, rolling on the ground.

But it was useless.

Even if he had ice muscles, steel bones, or bronze skin, inside the blessed land, all these were weakened and rendered useless.

"Fang Zheng, I won’t let you off even as a ghost... you!"

Under his curses and cries, Han Bu Liu’s flesh and skin were torn apart, his eyes were dug out, and blood flowed out of him, showing his pale white bones.

Fang Yuan watched silently, until he was completely dead and motionless.

He waved his hand lightly, and the eight wild dogs stopped their attacks, retreating to the two sides and opening a path for Fang Yuan.

Their bodies were full of blood traces. Some were still chewing on Han Bu Liu’s bones, some of their claws still had Han Bu Liu’s hair, flesh and so on.

Han Bu Liu’s corpse was completely destroyed.

But his stomach area was consciously left intact by Fang Yuan’s control.

He placed his palm on Han Bu Liu’s stomach, his mind entering the aperture.

This was a standard rank four middle stage aperture.

But Han Bu Liu was already dead, thus his aperture was slowly dying and shrinking.

Due to the law of this blessed land, all his Gu worms were suppressed and unable to move, quietly lying on the surface of the primeval sea.

There were five Gu, all from the enslavement path, with two rank four Gu among them.

Fang Yuan looked around, and retrieved them all out, easily refining them into his own aperture.

Throughout the process, he did not use the Spring Autumn Cicada.

The law of the blessed land did not restrict him at this moment, in fact, it helped him to refine these Gu easily.

King Quan seemed to encourage Gu Masters in killing each other, this showed the cruelty of a demonic inheritance.

Fang Yuan killed Han Bu Liu, having seven wild dogs left.

During Han Bu Liu’s dying struggle, he killed the wild dog that was most heavily injured.

At the brink of death, people were often able to unleash great power.

Fang Yuan looked at these seven wild dogs, showing a bit of regret in his peaceful gaze.

"Only seven wild dogs are left, each with injuries, this will make it much harder to get through the future rounds. But compared to the rewards I got, the death of twelve wild dogs is insignificant."

These wild dogs were commonly seen in forests of the outside world.

Using twelve dogs to exchange for two rank four Gu, three rank three Gu, this was too great of a deal.

"The three kings inheritance, not only is the inheritance a treasure, but the Gu Masters that enter the blessed land are all moving treasures! Killing them and taking their Gu worms, it would strengthen oneself!" As the heavenly power descended again, Fang Yuan sneered as his killing intent rose.

The misty fog appeared before him again.

Fang Yuan looked left and right.

Right in front of him, was a black shadow, it means an enemy Gu Master.

To the left, it was also a black shadow, but the side of this shadow was a protruding spiky shape.

To the right, it was an orange shadow, similar to before, it represented the chrysanthemum akita dog.

"I have seven wild dogs now, my battle strength is lacking, I cannot choose a Gu Master opponent. To the left, it is the hedgedog, its body is full of spikes and the attack power is twice of an ordinary dog. The right leads to the chrysanthemum akita dog..."

Fang Yuan’s eyeballs darted around, and he walked to the right.

Although the hedgedog had higher attack power, to go through this path, his losses would be severe. Fang Yuan’s seven wild dogs were all injured, if their intestines were pierced by spikes, it meant death.

Fang Yuan had experience, the hedgedog was dangerous, without any steel armor dogs or Yin dogs, he should avoid them as much as possible.

All these precious experiences were all intentionally hidden by Gu Masters when they found out during the first few months of the inheritance. Most people only learnt after falling into these pitfalls themselves, and would love for others to experience the same.

Fang Yuan took large steps forward, and the fog thinned.

Near his leg, the seven wild dogs followed closely.

They had battled with Fang Yuan along the way, and were all injured. Especially the intense battle with Han Bu Liu, it expended their life force and battle strength.

Dog enslavement Gu appeared in mid air, landing in Fang Yuan’s hands.

When the fog disappeared, Fang Yuan received twenty dog enslavement Gu, all rank one.

Dog enslavement Gu was hard to retrieve, they were planted into the dog’s soul. When the dog dies, their soul dissipates, and the dog enslavement Gu dies with it.

Even if the Gu Master brought lots of rank one dog enslavement Gu into the inheritance, it would not help.

With the blessed land’s mysterious powers, it would take away all of the dog enslavement Gu in the Gu Master’s hands and not return it, only leaving one for them.

After a few tries, Gu Masters learnt their lesson.

A total of nearly sixty chrysanthemum akita dogs appeared in front of Fang Yuan.

These dogs had orange-yellow fur, like the color of an orange. Their long ears drooped down, covering their ear holes. At the same time, there were chrysanthemum patterns on their fur.

Their body size was around the same as an ordinary wild dog, or even slightly smaller.

But Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

Chrysanthemum akita dogs were naturally good at cooperation, the larger their numbers, the fiercer they fight. And Fang Yuan’s location was terrible, in the middle of a plan, without no terrain advantage, he could easily be engulfed if he relied on just seven wild dogs. Fang Yuan’s ending would not be any better than Han Bu Liu.

"I have to get to the top of that mound!" Only in the time of one breath, Fang Yuan scanned the surroundings and ran towards the mound with no hesitation.

He ran for five steps before the chrysanthemum akita dogs found him.

Woof woof woof...

They barked, as numerous chrysanthemum akita dogs responded.

At once, all the surrounding chrysanthemum akita dogs gathered at one spot, forming into a river-like formation as they charged towards Fang Yuan.

This situation, if it was the wild dogs, lightning symbol dog, or hedgedog, it would not happen, unless there was a dog king to command them.

But the chrysanthemum akita dogs had a strong sense of cooperation, even without a dog king, they could still coordinate and unleash a group attack.

This was completely different from fighting individually.

Fang Yuan narrowly rushed to the top of the mound before the chrysanthemum akita dogs surrounded it.

Fang Yuan retreated until there was a cliff behind him.

The chrysanthemum akita dogs stopped for a moment, before charging again.

Because the terrain was narrow, the dog group could only send out fifteen dogs at once.

Fang Yuan quickly commanded his seven wild dogs to defend against them.

The two groups fought intensely, as Fang Yuan used his outstanding manipulation to hold them back.

At the same time, he waved his hand, throwing the five dog enslavement Gu out at the perfect timing.

Immediately, he had new fighting troops! Five healthy chrysanthemum akita dogs, turning around and joining Fang Yuan, causing the situation to reverse.

The original fifteen against seven, became ten against twelve, Fang Yuan held the advantage.

As companions turned into enemies, the dog group went into a panic. Fang Yuan used that opportunity to attack, killing six chrysanthemum akita dogs, as the other four retreated.

He could have taken down all ten chrysanthemum akita dogs originally, but he chose to let the four chrysanthemum akita dogs escape.

Fang Yuan’s rich experience was not just in this aspect.

He had twenty dog enslavement Gu, but he did not use them all at once, but in batches.

This terrain restricted the number of dogs that could enter battle. At the same time, the fewer dogs there were, the more Fang Yuan could use his exquisite manipulation skills.

When there are more dogs, Fang Yuan would be more distracted across battles, and his control would weaken.

The chrysanthemum akita dog group attacked again at Fang Yuan’s defensive line.

Fang Yuan had calculated to perfection, every time he used the dog enslavement Gu, it was used at the most crucial area. He not only chose the healthiest chrysanthemum akita dog that he could find, but also ruined the formation of the enemy chrysanthemum akita dogs.

Such benefits was not obvious, but in time, he gained much from it.

After nearly ten attacks, the chrysanthemum akita dogs were repelled every time.

Fang Yuan had three dog enslavement Gu left, and the remaining ten or so chrysanthemum akita dogs ran away in fear.

These chrysanthemum akita dogs were all injured, Fang Yuan had let them off earlier, to avoid their dying struggle.

Right now, they were already afraid, and chose to retreat.

"All this is due to the lack of a dog king to command them, otherwise, they would not have escaped so easily." Fang Yuan breathed out some turbid air, choosing not to attack.

After this battle, his seven wild dogs were left with three, but he gained sixteen chrysanthemum akita dogs.

Under Fang Yuan’s skillful control, he distributed the injuries evenly on these dogs. Although they all had injuries, they preserved their battle strength, causing Fang Yuan to recover greatly from his losses in the previous round.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Thirteenth round...

Fourteenth round...

Seventeenth round...

Eighteenth round...

Fang Yuan got through all the stages, and the number of dogs he controlled increased. By the end of the nineteenth round, he had over eighty dogs.

Among them, he had over forty chrysanthemum akita dogs, more than twenty lightning symbol dogs, and nineteen hedgedogs.

During this period, he killed another person, it was a rank three peak stage water path Gu Master.

But, he eventually did not meet Bai Ning Bing.

"Twentieth round." Fang Yuan had been counting in his heart.

In the three kings inheritance, every ten rounds, the difficulty would rise sharply.

After the twentieth round, there would be hundred beast kings, and hundreds to nearly a thousand beasts would attack at once.

Three lumps of light shadows appeared again in the fog, left, right, and center.

The one in the middle was orange, the size of a wicker-basket.

The left was a eerie blue lightning static, shining and was the size of a stone mill.

At the right, it was like the moon in water, flower in fog , it was a green-white formless light shadow. Among the three, this was the smallest light shadow.

Fang Yuan was clear, the size of the light shadow represented the size of the beast group, the larger it is, the more beasts there would be.

The orange shadow in front represented the chrysanthemum akita dogs, around two hundred of it. The left was the eerie blue shadow, showing a hundred and fifty lightning symbol dogs. The right was a green-white shadow, showing the Yin dog group, only around a hundred of it.

Fang Yuan eliminated the chrysanthemum akita dogs from his choice.

Once the chrysanthemum akita dog group had a dog king, they would be even more united. The larger the numbers, the larger their battle strength. Over two hundred chrysanthemum akita dogs was a calamity to the current Fang Yuan.

Next, he ruled out the Yin dog group.

Yin dogs were very unique, they did not have physical bodies, and were like a lump of Yin energy in a dog shape, floating in the air. Ordinary attacks cannot kill them, they can even penetrate mountain rocks, phase through the ground, and hide under water, etc.

Fang Yuan’s dogs did not have the ability to kill them. lightning symbol dogs only represented speed, they did not have the ability to emit lightning.

After thinking for a while, Fang Yuan chose the left path.

After the fog dispersed, the dog group surrounded him, moving alongside him slowly. A rank two dog enslavement Gu fell from the sky, landing in his palm.

When he got out of the fog, the lightning symbol dog group was loitering around the area.

On the mound, there was a larger dog, lying on the grass and sleeping.

It was larger than an ordinary lightning symbol dog by twice of their size, its body was covered in deep blue fur, sharp and spiky, flowing with static.

This was a hundred beast king – Big Lightning Symbol Dog!

"A godsend opportunity!" Fang Yuan was clear of the battle situation, as his eyes shone in a brilliant light, instantly making his decision.

He waved his hand, and sent out all his troops.

More than eighty dogs surrounded him in the middle, charging towards the big lightning symbol dog.

The big lightning symbol dog’s reaction was fast, its ears twitched and it opened its eyes, standing up instantly.

It raised his head and howled, assembling the nearby lightning symbol dog group.

Getting the command from their king, the surrounding lightning symbol dogs responded and quickly gathered at the dog king’s side from all directions.

Although the lightning symbol dogs had great speed, Fang Yuan had the initiative.

He gathered the force that he had, using them to collective assault the leader of his enemies!

Some nearby lightning symbol dogs were faster than Fang Yuan and gathered at the dog king’s side.

"Charge!" Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with resolution, at this time, hesitation was the biggest taboo. Once he had made up his mind, he would charge ahead fearlessly.

The defending lightning symbol dogs were quickly overwhelmed.

Fang Yuan’s formation was tight, while the lightning symbol dogs were loosely positioned, as most of them had not reached the dog king yet.

"Woof!"

As the hundred beast king big lightning symbol dog, seeing its subjects slaughtered, its inner ferocity was unleashed, as it charged towards Fang Yuan while brandishing its claws.

Fang Yuan willed, and twenty lightning symbol dogs split into two groups, flanking from the left and right. Nineteen hedgedogs lined into formation, charging fearlessly at the big lightning symbol dog. The remaining dogs – over forty chrysanthemum akita dogs, surrounded Fang Yuan, slowly spreading out and moving ahead with the hedgedogs.

The big lightning symbol dog had fallen into Fan Yuan’s encirclement, trapped in the middle.

Fang Yuan did not care about the expenditure of his mental energy, mobilizing his dog group and using the most perfect coordination.

The big lightning symbol dog had greater speed than an ordinary lightning symbol dog, but because of Fang Yuan’s encirclement, its greatest advantage was restricted.

It barked loudly, gathering its subjects.

Its subjects were rushing over in a frenzy, trying to defend it.

Fang Yuan had to trap the big lightning symbol dog, while blocking the attacks of the outside dog group, he faced great pressure and his head started hurting, as sweat poured out of his forehead.

The situation was dangerous.

If he fought them head on, even if he won, it would be a tragic victory, and his troops would dwindle. Thus, he thought of the ’capture the king’ approach.

But if he could not control this hundred beast king, then Fang Yuan would become the filling inside a dumpling, not only would he fail this round, he might even lose his life.

In this Gu Immortal Blessed Land, other than the inheritance’s Gu worms, other Gu cannot be mobilized, thus it was easy for Gu Masters to die.

Fang Yuan’s strength qi Gu, all-out effort Gu could not be used.

Of course, he had his final trump card — Spring Autumn Cicada. But with the Spring Autumn Cicada’s current condition, although he could activate it, there was a huge risk in doing so. He was likely to self-detonate and die for nothing. Thus, unless he was forced to the extreme, and had no other choices left, Fang Yuan would not use it abruptly.

Sweat gathered into drops on his forehead, falling onto the ground.

Fang Yuan did not care about wiping it, he was clutching onto the rank two dog enslavement Gu, and did not strike yet.

He was finding the best opportunity.

Using a rank one dog enslavement Gu and subduing ordinary dogs, he could do it half-heartedly. But to subdue a hundred beast king using a rank two dog enslavement Gu, there was a possibility of failure.

That is because the hundred beast king has natural Gu worms on its body. These Gu could ruin Fang Yuan’s plans.

He only had one chance, if the rank two dog enslavement Gu was destroyed, he would be finished. Thus, he had to be careful!

"Woof!"

The big lightning symbol dog was getting anxious, it suddenly opened its mouth and shot out a lump of blue plasma.

The dark blue plasma was like a sticky substance, falling from above. As it landed on the grass, it did not dissipate, but remained shining, turning the grass and rocks charred black with a crackling sound.

"This is a rank two plasma Gu!" FangYuan immediately recognised the culprit behind this plasma.

Plasma Gu did not have a strong attack power.

Although the attack was very suddenly, and engulfed Fang Yuan’s numerous chrysanthemum akita dogs, he quickly ordered the dogs in this field of plasma to retreat at the first second.

The fur on the dogs were all charred, and they were moving sluggishly, after being paralyzed by the current. But they still had some fighting power remaining.

"Woof, woof, woof."

The big lightning symbol dog continued to shoot out plasma, as it covered a large area of grass.

Fang Yuan’s brows were tightly knitted, his expression turning grim.

The plasma Gu’s attack power was not high, but it would affect the terrain for a period of time. During this period, the area would be a forbidden zone for Fang Yuan’s dogs.

Fang Yuan’s troops were already in the center, they did not have much room to move.

The plasma added onto this disadvantage, being a huge restriction to Fang Yuan’s plans in mobilizing troops, or changing their formation.

Without any choice left, Fang Yuan had to redeploy his troops.

He had originally placed the lightning symbol dogs at the outer line of defense, but now they moved in to deal with the hundred beast king. He sent the chrysanthemum akita dogs out, to defend against the over hundred lightning symbol dogs.

Lightning symbol dogs moved freely in the area affected by the plasma, in fact, because of the electric current stimulation, their movement speed was even raised.

The scene had become extremely disadvantageous to Fang Yuan.

Lightning symbol dogs had some fear and hesitation towards the hundred beast king big lightning symbol dog naturally. This caused Fang Yuan’s manipulation to be tougher and more energy intensive, and at the same time his control was weaker.

At the outer ring of defense, the chrysanthemum akita dogs’ speed was inferior to the lightning symbol dogs, they could only form into a tight ring of defense and defend against them passively.

If they were the lightning symbol dogs, Fang Yuan could still use speed to restrict them through kiting.

"Endure, we have to endure this! I’ve already learnt of the hundred beast king’s first Gu, next, we have to continue..." Although he was in danger, Fang Yuan’s heart was still calm and peaceful.

Everytime the plasma Gu was activated, it needed a cooldown of five breaths. The plasma Gu itself needed rest too.

During this five breaths, Fang Yuan could activate the rank two dog enslavement Gu without fear of the plasma Gu’s attack.

But Fang Yuan did not know what other Gu this hundred beast king had.

To be safe, he had to continue testing.

Time continued to pass, and the situation was getting tougher for Fang Yuan.

He had lost fourteen lightning symbol dogs, only having nine left. The hedgedogs were not the same race as the lightning symbol dog, thus there was less casualties, but only eleven remained.

Chrysanthemum akita dogs suffered the greatest loss, from around fifty, they fell to less than twenty.

But Fang Yuan did not manage to find out of the hundred beast king possessed a second Gu.

He decided to strike!

"I can’t wait anymore. Most likely, this big lightning symbol dog only has one Gu on it."

He had to take a risk.

If he continued waiting, his line of defense would be completely broken.

Rank two dog enslavement Gu!

While the big lightning symbol dog shot out a plasma bolt, Fang Yuan quickly struck and unleashed his Gu.

Under Fang Yuan’s supervision, the dog enslavement Gu successfully flew into the big lightning symbol dog and planted itself into its soul.

A formless impact in terms of mental energy assaulted Fang Yuan through his dog enslavement Gu.

Fang Yuan’s head was already hurting, but after suffering this attack, he instantly felt dizzy.

This was the soul of the hundred beast king, the resistance towards the enslavement.

Subduing a hundred beast king was not easy.

Fang Yuan’s body wavered, gritting his teeth as he endured.

A mental connection allowed Fang Yuan and the big lightning symbol dog to communicate. The dog was still resisting earlier, wanting to chop Fang Yuan into pieces, but the moment later, it started barking, wagging its tail at Fang Yuan affectionately.

The surrounding lightning symbol dog group heard the dog king’s call and stopped their attack.

The intense battle had ended, and peace returned.

Fang Yuan stood on the spot, turning his head and looking at the battlefield.

The risk paid off!

Although he had some losses, but looking around him – there were at least a hundred and twenty lightning symbol dogs.

Not to forget, he had a hundred beast king that possesses a plasma Gu.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength surged!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The fog ahead was thick.

Fang Yuan was walking in the fog, beside him, there was a large dog group.

Eleven hedgedogs, a hundred and thirty-two lightning symbol dogs, seventeen chrysanthemum akita dogs. Other than that, there was a hundred beast king, big lightning symbol dog.

Restricted by the heavenly power, the dog group followed Fang Yuan silently, quiet and obedient, not making a sound.

In the world of the fog, all was silent.

It was so silent that Fang Yuan hear his own breathing.

Although he had endured twenty rounds, and the dogs in his hand had reached the highest so far, Fang Yuan was not optimistic.

"In this three kings inheritance, every ten rounds, the difficulty would rise by many times. Although I have more than a hundred dogs now, to survive the next ten rounds and get to the thirtieth round on my first attempt, it will not be easy."

Thirty rounds, that was Fang Yuan’s goal for his first attempt in King Quan inheritance.

In his previous life, the three kings inheritance was only completely rung dry after many years. Fang Yuan would have to spend quite a bit of time on San Cha mountain, it was not realistic to attempt to get the inheritance in one go.

Three kings inheritance, all three were tough. Even if Fang Yuan had a hundred beast king, and over a hundred dogs, he could only stabilize his current position.

In the future rounds, if he got careless in any of them, he might lose everything, losing the dogs that he had painstakingly subdued, and even his life.

A demonic inheritance was this cruel.

"This King Quan inheritance, the deeper we go, the more advantageous it is for an enslavement path Gu Master. I walked on the enslavement path before in my previous life, but this time, I am a strength path Gu Master."

After experiencing that dangerous battle, Fang Yuan’s head was still dizzy.

Using his mental energy so intensely, spending all his energy to control the dog groups to battle, this was the backlash.

But if it was an enslavement path Gu Master who has a strong soul, such symptoms would be very small.

Gu Masters on the enslavement path enslaved beasts or worms. They have to manipulate large numbers of worms or beasts at the same time, it used up a lot of their mental energy. Thus, enslavement path Gu Masters often used a special set of Gu worms to train and increase the quality of their own soul.

In the King Quan’s inheritance, the heavenly power did not restrict the soul enhancements of Gu Masters at all.

Thus, enslavement path Gu Masters had a huge advantage in King Quan Inheritance.

"But the enslavement path is very tough. Firstly, food was a huge burden, the large the size of your beast or worm group, the more food you needed. Secondly, to recruit strong worm or beasts, it is not easy. One can easily suffer a backlash, turning into an idiot. Thirdly, enslavement path Gu Masters overly rely on their beasts or worms. Their bodies are weak, and they are easily to deal with when alone." Fang Yuan analyzed in his mind.

The different styles of Gu Masters, all had their strengths and weaknesses, difficulties and advantages.

The world was changing, the world was transforming. In the current Gu world, qi path was non-existent, strength path was declining, only left with a trace of its former glory. Enslavement path was extremely ordinary, and was hard to rise up. Occasionally, some enslavement path experts rise up, but vanish like a shooting star, only brilliant for a moment.

"Enslavement path Gu Masters have a huge requirement for resources. It is tiring on the mind and body, even a middle-sized clan cannot afford to feed an enslavement path Gu Master. At most, large or super clans would choose to nurture a few enslavement path Gu Masters for war purposes. Within the demonic path, it is even harder for enslavement path Gu Masters to survive, barely any even exists. That is why I did not choose this path."

Fang Yuan calmed his spirit, focusing his mind.

After a while, he felt his head clearing up, as the dizziness faded.

He opened his eyes, looking around.

To his left, right, and front, there was a light shadow each.

Earlier, the light shadows were a blur. But after twenty rounds, they became extremely clear.

The left shadow was a group of chrysanthemum akita dogs, around two hundred of them. Some sprawled on the ground and rested, some were playing, while the rest were drinking milk from their mother.

Fang Yuan concentrated his gaze, looking intensely.

The beast kings of the chrysanthemum akita dogs were different from others, the stronger they were, the smaller their bodies.

Especially in a chaotic battlefield, the beast king mixes in with the dog groups, and become hidden. It was a good way to protect itself.

’Where can the hundred beast king be?" Fang Yuan looked around, and suddenly the light shadow changed, showing a Gu.

This Gu was fist-sized, shaped like a pebble, dark brown in color. Its surface was smooth, like it had a layer of oil.

"Dog guts Gu." Fang Yuan recognised this Gu at the first second: "Appearing after the beast group, that means that if I choose this group of chrysanthemum akita dogs, and attain victory, I will get a dog guts Gu..."

A while later, this light shadow vanished.

Fang Yuan did not make his decision, but looked at the middle one.

The light shadow in front of him was showing a black-ish dog group.

These dogs were barking at each other, charging and crashing together. It showed the ferocity and violent nature of this type of dog.

This was the steel armor dog.

There was a leather armor on this type of dog, the leather armor was dark and heavy, like steel, it had strong defenses.

In the process of growing up, the dogs would knock into one another, to reduce the intense itchiness of their bodies growing bigger.

The hundred beast king of the steel armor dog had the same size as the big lightning symbol dog. It was very noticeable among the dog groups, Fang Yuan found it almost immediately.

Immediately after, the light shadow flashed, and a Gu appeared.

This Gu, Fang Yuan was familiar with it; he had used it earlier.

Rank two dog enslavement Gu.

"If I choose the steel armor dog group and win, I get a dog enslavement Gu..."

Fang Yuan muttered, turning his gaze to the right.

In the light shadow on the right, there was no dogs at all. Instead, it showed a mountainous scene, with grey-white mountain rocks and cliffs, green trees swaying with the wind.

After a while, this image vanished, not showing a Gu like before.

"This is a chance to leave the King Quan Inheritance." Fang Yuan knew in his heart.

King Quan Inheritance was created inside the blessed land, Gu Masters who enter were restricted by the heavenly power, unable to enter or leave at will.

But the three kings inheritance was not a place without exits, there was a hope of survival in it.

At every set interval, there would be a chance to retreat from the inheritance.

Just like this time, if Fang Yuan chose the right side, when he leaves the fog, he would be transported out.

He would appear at the mountainous area as shown in the light shadow, and this mountain waist was not far away, it was somewhere on San Cha mountain.

But Fang Yuan did not choose the right side.

"I have the resources on me to continue forward. It is too much of a pity if I leave now. Of course, there might not be a chance for me to leave later."

This was also a formless test.

Many Gu Masters, although they had strength, in order to stay safe, they decided to give up and leave the inheritance, wasting such a good opportunity.

Some Gu Masters had no talent, but went forward recklessly, missing the opportunity to retreat, they die in regret.

Fang Yuan had never lacked courage, he gave up this opportunity resolutely. To him, there was only two options.

"To the left, it is the chrysanthemum akita dogs. This dog is most united, and the location of the dog king is unknown. If I win, I get a dog guts Gu. Dog guts Gu is a rank two supplementary Gu of the enslavement path. It is used on dogs, once activated, it allows the courage and morale of my dogs in a certain range to rise, sweeping away their fear and drawing out their complete battle strength."

Fang Yuan thought about his previous match.

He was forced to use the lightning symbol dogs to attack the big lightning symbol dog. In the end, the lightning symbol dogs were fearful and battled in trepidation, having much less battle strength than normal. Fang Yuan had to waste his mental energy to force them to fight, causing his mind to feel exhausted.

Beast kings suppressed and generated fear in ordinary wild beasts.

But if Fang Yuan had used the dog guts Gu earlier, using it on the lightning symbol dogs.

These lightning symbol dogs would feel extremely courageous, no longer fearful and could execute brave attacks towards the big lightning symbol dog.

Thus, the dog guts Gu, although not an attacking Gu, it was the best supplementary Gu. It targeted dogs, causing their courage to double or triple, raising their morale sky high!

"Dog guts Gu is only rank two, it can allow ordinary dogs to suppress their fear towards hundred beast kings. Above that would be the rank three dog guts above mountain Gu, able to resist the fear towards a thousand beast king. At rank four, it would be dog guts above sea Gu, able to resist the aura of a myriad beast king. If it can rise to rank five, it would be the infamous dog guts above heaven Gu! It can cause dogs to go into a frenzy, going crazy and attacking like a tsunami, even having the courage to overturn the emperor of dogs..."

Fang Yuan knew clearly, and even knew that in King Quan Inheritance, there were rank one to five Gu of the dog guts series.

In his previous life, many people had obtained the rank three and four dog guts Gu, and there was even a lucky person who obtained the one and only rank five dog guts above heaven Gu.

"If I want to conquer the King Quan Inheritance, the dog guts Gu is necessary."

Fang Yuan had to admit, he had always had a desire towards dog guts Gu.

But his steps did not move to the left, but instead, moved forward —

He chose the steel armor dog group.

Although he wanted the dog guts Gu badly, he was not overwhelmed by greed.

The chrysanthemum akita dogs were extremely united, they were extremely strong in group battles, it would be a tough battle. At the same time, they dog king hid itself very well, Fang Yuan could not find it, it would be a huge threat.

But the steel armor dogs were different.

Their dog king was very apparent, and in Fang Yuan’s hands, he had a special tool that was extremely effective against steel armor dogs.

Fang Yuan walked out of the fog, and the steel armor dog group was vigilant, immediately having a reaction.

As the hundred beast king, big steel armor dog howled, causing the dogs to run and gather by its side.

During the whole process, Fang Yuan observed silently.

He did not attack like before, because last time, he had a rank two dog enslavement Gu, but now he did not have it anymore.

He needed to exterminate this group of dogs to pass this round, and get a dog enslavement Gu as a reward.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The two dog groups were at a stalemate.

At Fang Yuan’s side, the blue color lightning symbol dog were at the main position, with the grey hedgedogs as support along with the orange chrysanthemum akita dogs. As for the steel armor dog groups, it was a sea of black.

Fang Yuan mobilized the big lightning symbol dog to the front, waving his hand and sending the dogs out to attack as the vanguard.

Big steel armor dog barked, upon seeing the big lightning symbol dog appear, it stepped into the battlefield as well.

Beside it, the steel armor dog group followed closely behind, they were like a huge black cloud, flying down from the mound, giving off a terrifying aura.

The dog groups clashed together, Fang Yuan had a limited number of vanguards, quickly engulfed by the huge number of steel armor dogs.

But because of the big lightning symbol dog’s existence, the steel armor dog group could not take them down so easily.

The big lightning symbol dog was after all a hundred beast king, under the attack of the dog group, it was able to handle them left and right, putting up a brave fight. Ordinary steel armor dogs were not its match.

Woof!

The big steel armor dog stepped out, finally stopping the assault of the big lightning symbol dog.

Only a hundred beast king could stop a hundred beast king.

As the intense battle continued, big lightning symbol dog started to weaken. It had just undergone a battle earlier, and there was still injuries on it, causing its battle strength to be lower than usual. Furthermore, its specialty was speed, but it was going head to head with the big steel armor dog who specialized in defense, it obviously had the disadvantage.

Fang Yuan saw this, and sent his dog group over.

The new troops flowed in like a river, entering the battle causing chaos.

But the enemy was the steel armor dogs, experts at defense, most adept at such battles.

Although Fang Yuan sent out his army, and only left a few dog guards behind to protect himself, he could not change the situation.

Be it the hundred beast king battle, or the dog group battle, he was at a disadvantage.

But Fang Yuan was not worried.

The truth is, this was what he wanted all along.

He was waiting.

Waiting for the weapon which suppressed the steel armor dogs to appear.

Woof!

Big lightning symbol dog could not block the attack of the big steel armor dog, and suddenly barked, shooting out a mouthful of blue plasma.

Rank two plasma Gu!

"This is it." Fang Yuan’s eyes shone brightly, as his lips curled up.

Steel armor dog group gathered at their dog king, attacking the big lightning symbol dog while enduring the attacks of Fang Yuan’s dog group, causing them to be closely packed together, like the shape of a black bucket.

Blue plasma landed on the ground, splattering.

Large amounts of plasma landed on the steel armor dogs, causing their bodies to vibrate as they cried. Not only did their battle strength fall, the formation of the entire dog group was broken and heavily obstructed.

The armor on the steel armor dogs were of metallic element. Although the steel gave them superior defenses, it also made them unable to resist the power of electricity.

The attack power of plasma Gu was not high, but once used on the steel armor dogs, it was a formidable move.

The big lightning symbol dog shot out plasma continuously, as plasma covered the entire battlefield, heavily weakening the battle strength of the steel armor dogs.

The firm steel-like formation, had collapsed under the effects of plasma Gu.

Fang Yuan saw an opportunity, and commanded the dogs to charge, the dog group outside worked together with the big lightning symbol dog in the middle, unleashing a high offensive power.

If one watched from the sky, they would see that the large black area was first eroded by blue color, before being devoured by the surrounding blend of colors.

Black continued to reduce, while blue, yellow, and grey overtook them and dominated the field.

The situation changed quickly, soon, Fang Yuan regained his control, killing most of the steel armor dogs and encircling the big steel armor dog in the middle.

Feeling danger, the Gu worm on the big steel armor dog started to work.

Big steel armor dog gained more strength, while black spikes grew out of its body.

Fifteen minutes later, the big steel armor dog’s throat was torn by the big lightning symbol dog, and fell indignantly. Its blood flowed on the ground, but it did not get up anymore.

The battle ended.

As for the two Gu worms on the big steel armor dog, one was destroyed during the battle,while the other flew away.

Fang Yuan’s expression was grim, in order to kill this hundred beast king, he paid a huge price. He only had half of his dog group left, and it would be a problem for his remaining battles.

After twenty rounds, beast kings would appear.

With the beast king, the dog groups would display greater battle strength, at the same time, the beast king itself was a huge threat.

The more Gu worms on its body, the stronger it is, and the worse the situation would be for the Gu Master fighting it.

Fang Yuan’s luck was bad this time, the big steel armor dog he encountered this time had two Gu. Especially when one of the Gu was good at attack and defense, causing Fang Yuan to suffer great losses.

One’s own luck matters when challenging the three kings inheritance.

The steel armor dog group was Fang Yuan’s best choice this time, but his luck was not as good.

A rank two dog enslavement Gu fell from above, as his prize for winning.

Fang Yuan did not use the Spring Autumn Cicada, he instantly refined the Gu with the help of the heavenly power.

"This Gu is the key to getting past the next round." With such a resolution, Fang Yuan stepped into the fog.

Left, center, right, there were light shadows at all three directions. They were: A large numbers of corpse dogs, a certain number of Yin dogs, and a huge number of hyenas!

Fang Yuan’s eyes glowed as he analyzed.

This time, his strength was limited, thus he had to choose wisely, fighting a weak enemy while thinking of the reward of winning.

"If I defeat the corpse dog group, I get a white silver relic Gu. Killing the Yin dogs give me a two tasks at once Gu..."

White silver relic Gu was no use to Fang Yuan. At this stage, only yellow gold relic Gu had an attraction to him.

But unfortunately, yellow gold relic Gu was heavily controlled even in Shang clan city.

Rank four Gu Masters were experts in the mortal Gu Master realm. One yellow gold relic Gu could affect the battle strength among rank four Gu Masters greatly.

In the market, white silver relic Gu was sold normally, while yellow gold relic Gu were extremely rare, often held in the hands of the higher-ups.

Fang Yuan knew, super clans like Shang clan had lots of yellow gold relic Gu in their inventory. But even with the purple thorn token, he could not get them.

Shang Yan Fei held these yellow gold relic Gu in his hand, refusing to let them enter the market.

This was a secret temptation.

If Fang Yuan truly joined Shang clan, the yellow gold relic Gu would be a form of reward.

Shang Yan Fei’s brilliance was not something a commoner could understand. Fang Yuan did not want to compete with him in wits and strength just for a yellow gold relic Gu, and cause his own plans to be stalled.

"In the three kings inheritance, there are yellow gold relic Gu. But only after the fortieth round, if I can get one, the situation would improve greatly.

Fang Yuan had desire towards the yellow gold relic Gu.

But he knew, whether he could get one was all attributed to his own luck.

He could not force this.

As for the two tasks at once Gu, it could allow the Gu Master to split his mind into two and was extremely effective in manipulating worm or beast armies.

Fang Yuan himself could do four tasks at once, if he added in this Gu, he would be able to do six tasks at once.

"Two tasks at once Gu is only a rank two Gu. Going higher, there are three tasks at once, four tasks at once, five tasks at once and so on. Multitask Gu is the most important tool for an enslavement path Gu Master. Hmm, wait... this is?"

Fang Yuan looked at the right, after the hyenas disappeared, it showed a token.

An ordinary reward is an enslavement path Gu.

But this reward was slightly special, it was an ordinary looking token.

The token was rough and had an irregular shape, like it was casually molded into shape by someone. On the surface, there was the carving of San Cha mountain, but this map was extremely casual and ugly, giving a strong feeling of half-heartedness. With one glance, one can easily tell that the person who made this token did not put in any effort, only doing it out of necessity.

But once Fang Yuan saw this token, his eyes lit up.

"King Quan travel token!" He immediately forgot about the white silver relic Gu, two tasks at once Gu.

"What luck to have encountered this token, I must get it!" Fang Yuan had a determined mind, he had to get this token at all costs.

Although this token looked worthless, it was one of the best items.

Right now, no one knew its worth yet, but Fang Yuan knew clearly, towards to end of the three kings inheritance in his previous life, the price of such a token was as high as a rank four Gu!

"But this hyena pack is huge, and there are two dog kings. If I choose this path, the risks are huge. The best scenario is that I enslave one of the two big hyenas during battle. But even so, if I win this battle, I would suffer huge losses and would lose the ability to advance further."

Fang Yuan had a clear understanding of his own strength.

The advantage of experience was shown here, it allowed him to clearly know the advantages and disadvantages of every choice.

Fang Yuan thought about it, and decided to take a risk.

Since he walked on the demonic path, he had to take risks, by taking the extreme path, he would gain the biggest profits. Having no regrets after every choice, this was truly being alive!

Four hours later.

An intense battle ended.

On and below the mound, there were dog corpses everywhere. Fresh blood flowed as limbs decorated the ground.

Fang Yuan stood on the mound, slightly injured. In this Gu Immortal blessed land, he could not use his Gu, causing him to be extremely weakened.

"But I won anyway..." Fang Yuan looked at his surroundings, only a dozen or so dogs were left, as he sighed deeply.

Losing almost all the dogs that he had, there was no longer any hope of advancing in this cruel demonic inheritance.

But Fang Yuan had the last bit of hope in his mind.

The heavenly power descended, sending him into the fog once again.

"If I encounter Bai Ning Bing, by borrowing her strength, I would be able to continue." But Fang Yuan was to be disappointed.

All three directions led to dog groups. If he did not have the travel token, Fang Yuan would definitely die.

He took out the travel token.

Grasping it tightly, he bit the tip of his tongue and spit out some blood.

The blood landed on the token, and Fang Yuan opened his mouth, saying to the token softy: "Woof."

The token emitted a strong light, as it tore through space, dragging Fang Yuan with it.

In the silent fog, there was no one left.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Mountain winds gently blew.

In an ordinary bamboo forest in the middle of San Cha mountain, the space suddenly shattered and light burst out.

The light flickered away instantly; in a bush where there had been no one before, a person appeared.

It was a youth with black hair, black pupils and a calm face. He was holding a token, it was Fang Yuan.

"I have exited King Quan Inheritance..." Fang Yuan had only felt his eyes blur for a moment and the next moment, he was at a strange place.

He looked around, confirming there was no danger around him and that he was somewhere around the middle of San Cha mountain.

According to his initial estimation, he was now at the northern side of San Cha mountain; while the cave he had occupied with Bai Ning Bing was on the southeast side.

He raised his head and looked at the peak.

San Cha mountain possessed three peaks which stood high in the clouds like three equal spear tips.

The light pillars on the peaks were gradually dying down.

The yellow light pillar represented the entrance to King Quan Inheritance; the blue light pillar was King Xin Inheritance; and the red light pillar was King Bao Inheritance.

The size of the light pillars had already decreased by around half compared to when Fang Yuan had just entered.

With the passing of time, the number of Gu Masters that entered the inheritances increased while the light pillars would continue to become small till it completely disappeared; at that time, the entrances to the three inheritances would be closed.

After another round of waiting, the light pillars would activate again and bring in a new round of carnage.

Fang Yuan looked at the token in his hand.

On the surface of this unsightly King Quan token, there were now several deep cracks.

Fang Yuan was not surprised.

King Quan travel token could be used for three times at most. After three uses, the token would completely crack into pieces and could not be used anymore.

However, these three chances for retreating were extremely precious. This was not only a chance to survive, the even more important thing was the Gu Master would have a psychological superiority and could choose their paths more freely.

Fang Yuan stored this travel token carefully and hurried towards his cave.

"Ah, it is Fang Zheng!"

"Little beast king has finally appeared..."

On the whole way, Fang Yuan ran into many Gu Masters; regardless of righteous path or demonic path, they all casted a strange and amazed look at him.

"What happened?" Fang Yuan frowned, he keenly sensed that something rather important had happened.

Halfway to his cave, he casually grabbed someone and questioned.

It turns out Bai Ning Bing killed a Tie clan Gu Master in King Quan Inheritance. After she came out of the inheritance, she was immediately discovered by Tie clan.

Tie clan Gu Masters surrounded the cave and trapped Bai Ning Bing.

Four rank four middle stage Gu Masters moved at the same time and used iron cabinet Gu to lock down the nearby area.

Bai Ning Bing could not force her way through it and was now being attacked continuously by Tie clan Gu Masters.

"Lord little beast king, this matter has been made a big deal and the whole San Cha mountain knows about it. This is no longer a matter of personal hatred but it represents the battle between the righteous path and us demonic path! Actually, everyone is waiting for you. Lord, if you act, those Tie clan Gu Masters won’t be able to block you. You are our demonic path’s genius, our demonic path’s flag! Lord, I have said everything there is to say, can I take my leave now?" That unlucky guy grabbed by Fang Yuan begged in a sobbing voice.

"Such a big thing happened..." Fang Yuan slightly furrowed his brows while holding the unfortunate guy by the collar.

Although this news could startle anyone when they first hear it, it was not beyond Fang Yuan’s anticipation.

There were naturally going to be conflicts as they moved through the three kings inheritance.

This was a demonic path inheritance, the competition was extremely cruel. Sometimes, even if one wanted to retreat, they could not.

"Tie clan has rust flower Gu, this Gu is stored in the souls of Tie clansmen. Whoever kills Tie clansmen would be stained with this formless fragrance. It is not surprising Bai Ning Bing was found out." Fang Yuan nodded while mumbling to himself.

"Lord, you are truly knowledgeable, you are extremely right. Lord, you don’t know that your disappearance these few days caused everyone on San Cha mountain to comment and say you are an ostrich and are afraid of being involved with a top clan like Tie clan. Do I not know what kind of person lord is? Lord, you are the one I admire the most, since you arrived at San Cha mountain, you have killed the tyrant, Fei Li and Sky Tiger. Is there anyone who do not know of your fame and reputation? You definitely have some reason that the outsiders don’t need to know. Right now if you act, those Tie clansmen will definitely wet their pants in fear and implore lord to let them off."

Fang Yuan had great strength and as he grabbed this unlucky guy’s collar, the unlucky guy was having trouble breathing and his face was becoming purplish.

However, for survival, this Gu Master talked non-stop, flattering from start to end, showing his immense will to survive.

Fang Yuan fell silent and only after a long while did he slowly speak: "You are right."

He loosened his hand.

This rank two Gu Master immediately flushed with joy: "What kind of person is lord, any discerning person would be clear of it! Lord is absolutely a great hero, great warrior, those slandering lord are bastards, they are all blind! Lord, I have always supported you and argued with others for you..."

"Hehe."

Fang Yuan suddenly laughed coldly.

His hand moved like lightning, like an eagle’s claws, as he suddenly pinched this rank two Gu Master’s neck.

Crack!

The Gu Master’s eyes quickly widened, the spinal bone on his neck was completely crushed by Fang Yuan and he lost his life on the spot.

Gasp... Upon seeing this, the Gu Masters observing from the shadows drew in a cold breath sharply.

Fang Yuan was an influential figure and because of Bai Ning Bing’s matter, the moment he appeared, his tracks were revealed and his every movement was watched by many.

Fang Yuan killed this person and immediately searched his body.

Unfortunately, whether it was on him or his aperture, all the Gu worms had self-destructed.

Fang Yuan attacked extremely fast, but how could it be faster than a person’s thought?

The speed a person could send a thought was as fast as a jolt of electricity, even a blink of an eye could not match one percent of its speed.

In the outside world, the probability of getting Gu worms as the spoils of battle against Gu Masters was quite low. It was not like at three kings inheritance with the heavenly power’s restriction where Gu at rank five and below could not self-destruct.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s skilled body searching method, the many Gu Masters observing from the darkness felt the chill intensify further in their spine.

"Such skillfulness, how many people has he killed?"

"Fang Zheng does not let even rank two Gu worms go, he is clearly a rank four, we can see how greedy his nature is!"

"Fang Zheng is extremely addicted to killing! That Gu Master was clearly begging him and was of no threat to him, but he still did not let him go."

"Have you guys seen enough? If you have, then screw off!" Fang Yuan stood arrogantly and shouted while looking around him with a fierce gaze.

Soon after, human figures emerged from the lush bushes, trees, creeks, and from under the soil and stones.

These figures quickly retreated and disappeared within seconds.

The area around Fang Yuan had once again regained peacefulness. It was really difficult to imagine that there were so many people hiding.

Fang Yuan had a great reputation for his violence now, he killed three rank four demonic Gu Masters in a row, he got things done by hook or by crook, he was despicable and cold-blooded, and was fiercely addicted to killing. These people had their courage broken by Fang Yuan’s one simple sentence and did not dare to linger around Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan snorted and looked around him once again before proudly leaving this place.

But he knew, he was still being monitored from within the darkness.

The ones scared off by him were all shrimps. The remaining ones were all unique, with the capital to be confident.

Fang Yuan was not concerned about them and strutted out of this place.

In truth, although he had outstanding battle prowess now, he still had a weakness in the investigative aspect. Moreover these Gu Masters who were secretly following and monitoring him were sure to also be experts at speed. Even if Fang Yuan discovered them, he only had charging crash Gu and it would be fairly difficult for him to chase them.

"Where is he going? This direction is not towards the area where Bai Ning Bing is trapped."

"Did he discover me? Just now when he looked around, my heart skipped a beat..."

"Is little beast king afraid? Wait a moment, this cave seems to be Li Xian’s residence?’

These Gu Masters followed after Fang Yuan cautiously, they were all inwardly surprised when they saw Fang Yuan stop in front of a cave.

HIs partner, the inseparable white demon Bai Ning Bing was trapped, but little beast king did not seem to be the least bit anxious. Instead, he walked towards Li Xian’s residence.

Li Xian was a demonic path Gu Master at rank four upper stage. He was cunning and never suffered losses, a troublesome character. Could it be little beast king was looking to find trouble for Li Xian?

The Gu Masters following Fang Yuan secretly made guesses.

Fang Yuan’s arrival immediately attracted Li Xian’s attention.

Li Xian was already near his cave setting up detecting methods.

"Lord little beast king, truly a rare guest! You came to my place, what can I do for you?" Li Xian took the initiative to greet Fang Yuan, he approached Fang Yuan and cupped his fists as a greeting at a distance of twenty steps.

He did not dare to be too close to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was a temperamental ruffian; Li Xian, this unscrupulous merchant was also on edge when facing him.

Fang Yuan’s visit was beyond his expectation. Who knew what Fang Yuan, this lunatic, cunning and shameless guy would do next?

Thus, Li Xian appeared calm on the surface and was full of smiled, but he was already extremely vigilant.

"I came to you naturally for business. What’s wrong, are you not going to invite me in?" Fang Yuan smiled with an indistinct gaze.

"Since you are a customer, I will of course welcome you. Please come in, come in." Li Xian’s gaze flashed and he moved aside, letting Fang Yuan enter first.

Fang Yuan strutted past him and glanced at Li Xian.

Li Xian smiled and walked alongside Fang Yuan into his cave.

"They have gone inside!"

"I can’t follow them anymore, there are investigative Gu installed around the cave. If I trespass, I will definitely be treated as an enemy by Li Xian."

"Is little beast king really going to make a deal? Why do I feel Li Xian is out of luck this time?"

"I can already predict the scene of the explosive and tremendous battle between the two."

"Li Xian is at rank four upper stage, he definitely has many trump cards. If a fight erupts, it is sure to be a battle of dragon and tiger!"

Outside the cave, the group of Gu Masters could only stop and stretch their necks to look at the dark cave.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Inside the cave.

Li Xian asked Fang Yuan to take a seat and then sat beside him.

"Please have some tea." Li Xian stretched his short and thick fingers, his hand opened up and a fragrant tea appeared on his open palm.

Fang Yuan looked at the tea, but did not accepted it or even budged, instead he sighed: "Eastern Sea’s blue sky Gu is really handy. Not only does it have a large capacity, far surpassing others of the same level, it is also easy and convenient to use.

"Eh? I didn’t expect Sir little beast king to recognize this Gu." Li Xian’s gaze slightly flickered.

He was not from Southern Border, but came drifting to here from Eastern Sea. Blue sky Gu was a Gu unique to Eastern Sea and was very uncommon at that.

When Li Xian had dealings with other people, he frequently used this Gu to show his methods.

Southern Border Gu Masters did not recognize this Gu and when they saw such a method for the first time, they would often look more highly at Li Xian.

Fang Yuan smiled and slowly said: " This rank four blue sky Gu is fused from rank three sky granary Gu. The success rate is quite low so it is rare even in Eastern Sea. If blue sky Gu is to be advanced to rank five, the best method is to fuse it with sky well Gu, to form rank five blue sky well Gu. And this sky well Gu is a natural Gu found only in Eastern Sea’s Tian Jing island. Li Xian, if you want to advance it, it will be troublesome. Here in Southern Border, only Yi clan might have sky well Gu."

Yi clan along with Shang clan, Wu clan and Tie clan, was a top clan and had very close relation to Eastern Sea’s forces. Yi clan’s businesses are very prosperous, second only to Shang clan. Their flying blue whale caravan could move through the sky, which even Shang clan did not have.

"Blue sky Gu, sky well Gu, blue sky well Gu and Tian Jing island....how does little beast king know it so clearly?" Li Xian was startled and suspicious when he heard Fang Yuan’s words.

The world of Gu Masters was extremely vast, there were also barriers that acted like heavenly chasm between Southern Border, Northern Plains, Eastern Seas, Western Desert and Central Continent. It was very difficult to communicate with each other and news were also blocked.

Li Xian had already investigated all details on Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan was born in Southern Border and he was so young, how could he have such experiences? Even knowing detailed information about Eastern Sea!

A vague pressure started to form in Li Xian’s mind.

’Strange, strange! What is the origin of this little beast king? How could he know so much? Could there be an expert behind him?’

’With his age and experience, how could he know such details? Oh yeah, he stayed for quite a while at Shang clan city and might have received guidance from Shang Yan Fei. Shang Yan Fei is Shang clan leader, a rank five upper stage Gu Master, an expert at the peak of the mortal world. It is not strange for little beast king to know these under his guidance.’

Li Xian’s gaze continually flickered, his heart covered with haze of doubts. His whole body was in a stiff position and his palm was still holding the purple clay teapot.

"No!" Suddenly, his thoughts flashed like lightning as he thought of the main thing: "I originally wanted to display my methods and pressure him down. To think I became overly suspicious and my mind became uneasy just from little beast king’s several words! Even if he has Shang Yan Fei behind him, so what? Others might be afraid, but I, Li Xian, have my own means! Hmph."

Li Xian softly snorted and placed the teapot on the table. He took this chance to calm his mind.

He was, after all, an elite of the demonic path and adjusted his mind in just few breaths’ time. He then faced Fang Yuan calmly.

It was just that there were some cautiousness and graveness in his eyes now.

"Sir little beast king, please taste the tea. What transaction do you want to make with me?" Li Xian asked.

"You don’t need to think much, it is only a simple transaction." Fang Yuan said, then took out some Gu worms from his aperture and showed to Li Xian.

These Gu worms were the loot he seized from the Gu Masters he killed in King Quan Inheritance.

There were rank three and rank four Gu, but they were not suitable for Fang Yuan’s strength path.

Li Xian could not help narrowing his eyes when he saw these Gu.

He was a very shrewd person and immediately realized many things: ’Who would have expected this little beast king to also have some accomplishments in enslavement path! After entering King Quan Inheritance, he killed two Gu Masters. Such talent is truly demonic!’

Li Xian could not help but think of Mo Wu Tian.

After he came to Southern Border, he had walked on the demonic path for a long time, coming into contact with all sorts of people. He felt that just based on aptitude, talent and temperament, among the younger generation of the demonic path, Mo Wu Tian was at the top.

However, now, he realized the little beast king in front him had a talent that was not inferior to Mo Wu Tian’s!

’Little beast king and Mo Wu Tian, I wonder what will happen if these two came across each other? It is just that the current little beast king’s cultivation is somewhat weak, Mo Wu Tian is older than him and is already rank four peak stage.’

Li Xian pondered, he spoke excitedly, however: "Sir little beast king, you did the right thing finding me for this transaction. I have a Gu on me which I believe will be important to sir."

"Oh?" Fang Yuan raised his brows.

Li Xian spread out his palm and a ball suddenly appeared.

This ball looked nice, shining with white gold light. Fang Yuan carefully looked at it and saw that the ball was an ant ball; over a hundred flying ants crawling on each other and sticking together to form a ball.

These flying ants did not look any different from normal ants.

Except, they were several times larger and they had a pair of transparent wings on their back.

"This is rank three gold eating flying ant Gu, altogether, there are one hundred and twenty. Those several old fellows from Tie clan trapped lord white demon by using iron cabinet Gu along with qi flow Gu. Now, the thousand feet around that area has been locked down. However, the iron cabinet Gu will collapse easily against this group of flying ants. Sir little beast king, I have just calculated, the price of your Gu is just good enough to buy this group of flying ants." Li Xian smiled warmly.

However, beyond his expectation, Fang Yuan only glanced at this gold consuming flying ant Gu once before shifting his gaze: "Who said I am going to buy this thing? This is the list of items, I want all the things written on it."

Li Xian accepted the list and glanced at it, there were many Gu worms and numerous supplementary materials for refining Gu written on it.

Although there were all kinds of items on the list, with Li Xian’s experience and shrewdness, it was not difficult for him to see these things were all necessary for strength path.

’Bai Ning Bing has been trapped by Tie clan, how come this little beast king is not in the least bit worried? Strange! It won’t be easy for him to get rid of iron cabinet Gu with just the strength path Gu on him. Does he have some special methods? Or maybe, the items on this list is to refine the nemesis of iron cabinet Gu?’

Li Xian narrowed his eyes, a bright light flashed past the slit of his eyes. He probed: "Sir little beast king, there are all sorts of things on this list, I cannot bring them out in a short while. Moreover, their total price far surpassed the price of these Gu you are selling."

"No problem, no problem." Fang Yuan waved his hand, "I want to buy all the items on this list. Give me whatever you have currently. As for the others, I will have to trouble you to pay attention to them. Money is not a problem."

Fang Yuan had a lot of primeval stones on him, his financial resources were adequate enough.

Li Xian laughed, he could not probe out anything so he only nodded and agreed.

......

Inside a cave, lights flickered.

Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged on the ground, his whole attention on ball of paste in front of him.

This paste was multicolored and was floating in the air, rolling and churning continually, and gave out a strange fragrance - the Gu fusion process had reached the critical stage.

Fang Yuan constantly threw in primeval stones.

Primeval stones entered the paste and immediately dissolved into essence liquid, diluting the thick paste.

Fang Yuan continued to throw in primeval stones without care, only after the paste thinned to a certain degree did he stop.

Then, he quickly took out a thunderclap Gu.

Thunderclap Gu was a rank three Gu. The paste swallowed it up and immediately flickered lightning.

In a split second, the fragrance in the air was magnified greatly, the multicolored light dispersed and was replaced with abundant blue light. The lightning produced soft crackling sounds like the combustion of tiny firecrackers.

Fang Yuan’s breathing accelerated and when he smelled a burnt smell in the air, his eyes shone with bright light!

"It is time... all-out effort Gu."

Boar phantom immediately appeared above him.

Strength qi Gu.

Fang Yuan activated strength qi Gu; the boar phantom adhered to the formless strength qi, immediately become very menacing.

Under Fang Yuan’s will, the boar phantom flew towards the paste.

The instance the two collided, lightning burst out and shone upon the whole cave, dispersing all the darkness and revealing all the details in the room clearly.

After the light dispersed, the boar phantom in mid-air had experienced a huge change.

The new boar phantom was twice the original size, its tusks were like that of an elephant’s and its whole body was covered with white fur. Especially the fur at its back, they were thick and long, lined up in rows, stiffly pointing towards the sky, and lightning curled up on them.

Lightning boar phantom!

"Success, great. Thunder boar is equal to dragon-elephant, Biao and mastiff. With the thunder boar strength, my battle strength has increased again. Next it is the rock crocodile strength..."

A night of cultivation unknowingly passed.

When the light of dawn shone upon San Cha mountain, Fang Yuan walked out of the cave he stayed at.

Although he was exhausted, he was happy inside. He successfully upgraded boar strength and crocodile strength to thunder boar strength and rock crocodile strength; his battle strength was raised by at least thirty percent!

"Bai Ning Bing..." He looked towards the southeast direction; an area on the middle of the mountain was covered with a dark purple qi barrier.

The qi barrier was like a tall tower, sealing the space within and isolating it from the outside world.

The combination of iron cabinet Gu and qi flow Gu caused Bai Ning Bing to become a trapped beast of Tie clan.

Fang Yuan let out a cold snort.

The situation looked simple but it was a tricky matter.

The four old-timers of Tie clan who trapped Bai Ning Bing were all at rank four middle stage. Although Bai Ning Bing was a genius, she was only at rank four initial stage.

If the Tie clan was truly set on capturing Bai Ning Bing, they would have already captured her but they did not.

On one hand, it was to maintain their strength to fight for three kings inheritance.

On another hand, it was because they were held back by the purple thorn token on Bai Ning Bing.

Finally, it was to bait Fang Yuan!

In case Fang Yuan rashly charged in, Ti clan’s four old-timers could combine their strength to activate the rank five search and lock Gu to easily suppress him and Bai Ning Bing.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, Tie clan’s four old-timers had used this killer move to capture demonic path’s Kong Ri Tian. But soon after, they were killed by a rank three Gu Master.

Rank five search and lock Gu had an extremely huge demand towards primeval essence. Tie clan’s four old-timers were really tragic figures, they cultivated the killer move for so many years and finally were in the limelight, but the scene did not last long because they lacked primeval essence and were killed by a rank three Gu Master.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Dark purple qi barrier was like a high tower firmly locking in thousand meters of area.

The qi barrier, however, did not isolate sight. Who knew how many eyes were secretly watching the scene from outside the barrier.

"Bai Ning Bing, just let yourself be captured obediently. It is impossible for you to escape!" Tie clan’s four old-timers occupied east, south, west and north positions separately, locking Bai Ning Bing in the center.

Bai Ning Bing was sitting cross-legged on a boulder, her two hands holding primeval stones as she replenished her primeval essence.

"Bai Ning Bing, don’t hold any delusions. You killed our Tie clansman, and still thinking you will be able to escape? Hmph." The four old-timers’ gazes were grave and started fixedly at Bai Ning Bing, encircling her with no gaps.

Bai Ning Bing slowly opened her narrowed eyes, her eyes were calm and her tone was indifferent: "Tie clan’s four old-timers, what use is it in speaking so much? If you want to capture and kill me, them bring it on! Even if I, Bai Ning Bing, die at your hands, I will definitely take a few of you down."

She paused for a while before continuing: "You have been continuously maintaining this qi barrier, it should have consumed a lot of your primeval essence, right? Hehe, I know you four are experts at team battle tactics while I am only at rank four initial stage. But you can bet on it that if you killed me, even if you guys don’t die, you will definitely be heavily injured. And in case my partner appears, what will become of you then?"

"You..." The four old-timers of Tie clan were exasperated.

Bai Ning Bing might have borrowed Fang Yuan’s name, but it struck their weak spot.

"Bai Ning Bing, stop being stubborn. Here, let me see what you can do." One of the old-timers stood up.

"Hehehe." Bai Ning Bing softly smiled and slowly stood up to take the challenge. Silver hair and snow white clothes, with a grace that stood out from the crowd, even if she was trapped, she was still calm, a confident bearing that showed she had no worries about this life and death situation.

The two began their fight; sand and pebbles started flying inside the qi barrier, snow light spread everywhere and the clash of steel resounded...

Far away on a short mountain peak stood a group of Shang clan Gu Masters.

"Another round of battle has begun again. This Bai Ning Bing is worthy of her fame in the battle stage. She is able to resist the four rank four middle stage Gu Masters attacking her in turns, she is not simple!" One of them sighed.

"Bai Ning Bing has outstanding battle sense, she is indeed strong. But another reason is because the four old-timers from Tie clan do not dare to use all their strength." Someone analyzed.

"That’s right. The old-timers are worried and afraid of the counterattack from Bai Ning Bing when she is near death. They are good at team battle tactics, and their individual strength aren’t as fearsome as the Gu Masters at the same level. If they become short of a member, their whole strength will fall sharply and it will be difficult for them to contend for the three kings inheritance."

"What I am worried about now is Bai Ning Bing has purple thorn token. If she takes it out, do we make a move?"

"Don’t do anything for now. I have already sent the message, and the clan has already sent a strong reinforcement. Elder Yi Huo is rushing here!"

Hearing this information, Shang clan’s Gu Masters rouse their spirits.

Yi Huo was not an ordinary Gu Master, he was one of the five great elders of Shang clan with a cultivation of rank four peak stage! He was one of the experts under Shang Yan Fei, now that he was dispatched, it was sure to change the situation of the entire San Cha mountain.

...

"To think the things turned out this way. If Bai Ning Bing is killed by Tie clan, our deal with Shang clan will fall through." In an underbrush, Meng Tu observed the battle inside the qi barrier with glowing eyes and said with a worried tone.

He was at the prime of his life and was at rank three peak stage, the same as his partner Jiao Huang.

These two were famous assassins in demonic path, some time back even the rank four middle stage righteous path Xiao Fu Lu died at their hands.

They accepted a mission from Shang clan; if they could kill Fang and Bai, they would be allowed to join Shang clan.

They had already made their move on Huo Tan mountain, but the lava crocodile group they attracted did not pose any problems to Fang and Bai.

The two did not give up and continued to follow Fang and Bai to San Cha mountain, waiting for an opportunity ever since.

"Sigh... what can we do? We are good at assassinations and not at frontal attacks. If we move in front of everyone, our success rate will be too low. If Bai Ning Bing dies, we also can’t do anything about it; we can only leave it up to fate!" The old man Jiao Huang said with a sigh.

"Yes, who knows how many are watching from the darkness. Who is to say we haven’t been discovered while coming here." Meng Tu powerlessly added.

They were assassin Gu Masters and paid particular attention to concealment; it was okay if they did not make a move, but once they made, it must be a fatal strike. Before making their move, they made went through meticulous planning and made large numbers of preparation before bursting out all at once.

If the success rate was too low, they would not make a move and would rather give up the deal.

This was also the reason they were able to survive while roaming in demonic path for such a long time.

Every well-known Gu Master had their own unique ways for survival.

...

"Hehehe... these four old-timers of Tie clan are in such an awkward state." Li Xian stood in front of the qi barrier and looked at the battle inside; his eyes narrowed and were filled with joy towards others’ misfortune.

Although this place had already become a focus of many gazes at San Cha mountain, Li Xian did not care.

He was very confident that he would absolutely not be exposed by others.

This confidence came from his rank five Gu - Invisibility Gu!

Gu worms at rank five were rare. Many rank five Gu Masters would only have one or two rank five Gu on them for many years.

Invisibility Gu could only be detected by specific rank five investigative Gu. However, it had not been long since three kings inheritance opened and there has yet to be anyone who had broken through the middle rounds, so it was not likely to attract rank five Gu Masters to make a move.

Li Xian had his own fortuitous encounters to possess the scarce rank five Gu when he was rank four.

"This iron cabinet Gu recipe was created by Tie clan’s refinement path master Tie Yi Ban. His original intention was to refine a type of firm and secure storage Gu. After he refined this Gu for the first time, he gave it to Tie Xue Leng to test out. The Divine Investigator used it to capture people and it was very durable. When supplemented with qi flow Gu, its effect was amplified. From then on, iron cabinet Gu had become an efficient mean for Tie clan to capture demonic Gu Masters."

"Hehe... but now, these Tie clan’s old-timers have to maintain both Tie cabinet Gu and qi flow Gu, unable to execute their team attacks. If the four attack together, this purple qi barrier will disappear. Without any obstruction, Bai Ning Bing can run free and they will lose a lot of reputation. Hahaha, interesting, interesting. These old-timers have no way out."

Li Xian looked at the show, the corner of his lips could not help but curl up.

But when he thought of someone, the smile on his face slowly disappeared.

"Little beast king, he actually didn’t come to rescue! Did he realize the truth behind this tricky situation or is he truly so cold blooded and decided to abandoned Bai Ning Bing? No matter which it is, it all proves how scary this person is... I should hand that Gu over to him."

...

A Gu was handed over to Fang Yuan.

Its appearance was like that of a bedbug, flat and wide, its head was quite small and its body looked oval shaped. Its whole body was yellow-orange, and gave off a metallic luster like a bronze.

People called it ’ancient bronze skin Gu’.

Bronze skin Gu was a series Gu from rank one to rank three. But if it were to advance to rank four, it would be ancient bronze skin Gu whose defensive power was much stronger than rank three bronze skin Gu.

"Li Xian, you are worthy of being a famous merchant of the demonic path. You could get me ancient bronze skin Gu this quick, it was really a correct decision to make the transaction with you. I don’t have tea here, please have some wine."

Fang Yuan’s tone was polite and his face appeared gentle as he welcomed Li Xian and poured him a cup of wine.

"No, no, it was nothing. It is my honor to be able to do business with lord little beast king." Li Xian appeared very modest, lowering his status.

The two discussed for a while. The atmosphere was very harmonious.

If someone who did not know about them saw this, they would think these two were good-natured and elegant. How would they think these two were two-faced, ruthless demonic path Gu Masters?

"Li Xian, you don’t need to be so polite, you can simply call me Fang Zheng. Let me first give you fifty thousand primeval stones, consider it a deposit for our future transactions." Fang Yuan brought out primeval elder Gu and waved his hand, bringing out fifty thousand primeval stones.

Primeval elder Gu appeared like a crystal ball, there were a lot of primeval stones stored in it, the old man in the clouds in the ball appeared to look very kind.

Li Xian looked at the wide smile on the old man’s face, he could not help evaluating Fang Yuan much more highly.

"I will have to trouble you to help me with something." Fang Yuan suddenly spoke.

Li Xian’s gaze flashed and immediately said: "Please speak."

Fang Yuan brought Li Xian towards the depths of the cave and pointed to a stone vat: "I have a stone vat here but I lack a fire type Gu. I will have to ask you to help me melt these bronze pieces and put them in the stone vat."

Li Xian let out a sigh of relief and smiled: "I just so happen to have a fire type Gu. It will only require a slight effort."

The temperature inside the cave rapidly soared.

After a while, Li Xian melted the bronze pieces into metallic liquid, the stone vat was filled almost to the brink.

Fang Yuan took out coal stones and piled them under stone vat to maintain the temperature.

Then, under Li Xian’s astonished gaze, he softly jumped right into the vat.

The boiling bronze liquid sizzled and immediately burned Fang Yuan’s clothes. His whole body was soaked in the bronze liquid and only his head was revealed outside.

"Little... Lord little beast king, what are you doing?!" Right now, Li Xian could smell the odor of burnt smell.

Fang Yuan activated the ancient bronze skin Gu in his aperture while smiling with gritted teeth: "Li Xian, don’t you know? There is a method to use this ancient bronze skin Gu and accelerate the speed by thirty percent, that is to use it with bronze liquid."

When ancient bronze skin Gu was activated, it could remodel the skin and flesh of the Gu Master into ancient bronze skin. If it was used with the body soaking in bronze liquid, it could shorten the time required. Li Xian had also heard of it, but he had never thought of this.

When Fang Yuan was preparing these things, he had thought these were supplementary materials for refining Gu.

Because this method was extremely painful and cruel.

Gu Master must come in touch with scalding, boiling bronze liquid without using any defensive means. Only a perverted masochist would choose this method.

Is little beast king a masochist?

Li Xian kept on thinking of this question as he returned to his cave with a dazed expression.

At this time, there was another person who was also thinking of Fang Yuan.

"Fang Yuan, why have you not appeared yet?" Bai Ning Bing sat cross-legged on the ground, her eyes half-narrowed as she faintly felt the situation was far from reassuring.

"We have used poison vow Gu, he absolutely cannot leave me in the lurch. But he still hasn’t appeared now, could he still be inside the inheritance or maybe met with some trouble?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

A Gu worm floated above Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s primeval sea slowly fell as he activated this Gu.

This Gu was like a black bone, its two ends were round and smooth, with a thin body. It was emitting black rays of light while floating in the air.

The black light shone upon Fang Yuan’s body, passed through his skin and flesh, and brought changes in his skeleton.

Fang Yuan had already used iron bone Gu, his skeleton was pitch black and was firm like iron. But under the effect of this Gu, his skeleton slowly became more firm.

This was essence iron bone Gu, a rank four Gu; one could get iron bone Gu by reverse-refining it.

Three days after handing over the ancient bronze skin Gu, Li Xian personally came to deliver this Gu to Fang Yuan.

Essence iron bone Gu could make Fang Yuan’s skeleton even more firm and the effect was many times stronger than iron bone Gu. But at the same time, the process needed much more time.

Fang Yuan had been using essence iron bone continually these days along with ancient bronze skin Gu to temper his body.

In this period, he was also using nine eyes liquor worm to purify his primeval essence, refining his initial stage light gold primeval essence into bright gold primeval essence. Then he used bright gold primeval essence to cleanse his aperture and strengthen its foundation.

He made use of every minute and second, cultivating bitterly, and he could feel his strength increasing little by little every day.

"It has already been over a month since I left King Quan Inheritance. I am almost finished with using ancient bronze skin Gu, but there is still quite a distance before I completely master essence iron bone Gu. Unless I use universe path Gu to accelerate the flow of time." Fang Yuan pondered.

The so called universe path was related to time.

The Gu Masters of this path used time related Gu worms.

Third watch Gu and Spring Autumn Cicada belonged to this category.

In fact, there were far more universe path Gu than just these two. It had a full range of Gu from rank one to rank five.

Normal Gu Masters, if they did not have the patience to do this type of grinding work and wanted to speed their progress, they could ask universe path Gu Masters to help or use a universe path Gu themself to accelerate their time.

"But my situation is different from ordinary Gu Masters. I have Spring Autumn Cicada, if I accelerate my time, Spring Autumn Cicada’s recovery speed will also increase and will be my death warrant!"

The time flow in Gu Immortal blessed land in San Cha mountain was three times faster than the outside world. The time Fang Yuan spent in King Quan Inheritance had already caused Spring Autumn Cicada to make some recovery, thus Fang Yuan could only patiently choose the method of bitter cultivation.

Just as he was cultivating, there came an unfamiliar voice from outside the cave.

"Little beast king, could you come out to have a chat?"

Fang Yuan walked out of the cave and saw the person clearly, he looked slightly doubtful: "So it was Elder Yi Huo."

Yi Huo was very handsome; sharp eyes, high bridged nose, and long red hair like it was on fire.

He was a fire path Gu Master who was very famous in Southern Border. People called him ’blazing inferno’, his cultivation was rank four peak stage!

’Yi Huo is one of the five great elders of Shang clan, an expert under Shang Yan Fei and was ranked above light swordsman Wei Yang. The only one that could command him was Shang Yan Fei, his arrival was surely going to change the power balance of San Cha mountain.’ Fang Yuan quickly thought about it and welcomed Yi Huo inside his cave.

"Little beast king, my purpose in coming here is simple, it is to invite you to join our Shang clan." Yi Huo entered the cave, but he did not sit and directly expressed his purpose in coming.

"Join your Shang clan?" Fang Yuan raised his brows, he could fully sense the swift and decisive nature of ’blazing inferno’.

"Right." Yi Huo nodded, his eyes looking straight at Fang Yuan as he smiled, "You and Bai Ning Bing have stayed for some time at Shang clan, you guys surely have deep understanding of our Shang clan’s strength, so I won’t say much on it. The main thing is your partner Bai Ning Bing has been trapped by the four old-timers of Tie clan for around two months now. As long as you two join Shang clan, I will immediately set out and rescue Bai Ning Bing."

His tone was filled with confidence as if rescuing Bai Ning Bing was an easy matter.

When he spoke, he was slightly smiling; his handsome face was like a perfect statue and when he revealed his teeth, it was dazzling like the sun. Many people would feel ashamed when interacting with him.

Yi Huo and Wei Yang had a similar background, they both ruled Shang clan battle stage and were absolute geniuses.

Among the five great elders of Shang clan, Yi Huo was the most popular and was also publicly recognized as the elder with the highest chance of advancing to rank five!

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with a contemplative light.

He was not surprised at Shang clan sending Yi Huo here. Shang clan had been in control of San Cha mountain for a period of time before, but was later suppressed by Wu clan. And with the appearance of demonic path experts, Shang clan groups found it even more difficult to hold their heads up.

Under this situation, Shang clan as a top clan, would naturally send an expert to change the situation.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life memories, Yi Huo was dispatched here by Shang clan. He suppressed Wu Shen Tong and Yi Chong, and defeated Kong Ri Tian and Long Qing Tian, being the ruler of San Cha mountain for a time.

But later, his dominance drove Long Qing Tian anxious. Long Qing Tian used blue halo Gu and poisoned him. He had no choice but to return to Shang clan city to be treated by Doctor Su Shou.

However, this time, Yi Huo came to San Cha mountain to recruit him. This was beyond Fang Yuan’s expectation.

"Lord Yi Huo, I wonder if this invitation came from Shang clan or it is your own thought?" Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed, and asked.

"Hahaha, of course it is my own thought. Fang Zheng, you created a lot of commotion at Shang clan battle stage, and almost became the ruler of battle stage. I have been watching you, you are a genius! If you join Shang clan, it will be greatly beneficial to you." Yi Huo laughed loudly and replied.

Fang Yuan smiled as the trace of doubt he had melted away.

"Sir Yi Huo, from what I know, Shang clan’s external elders don’t have the authority to recommend talents, right?"

External elder, this title made Yi Huo slightly furrow his brows: "You are right. But if you can become the ruler of the battle stage, you can become an external elder of Shang clan. With your talent, I believe the title of the ruler of battle stage is just a matter of time for you."

Fang Yuan could not help but scoff, and did not reply.

Yi Huo’s brows furrowed deeper, this scoff sounded ear-piercing to him.

He patiently said: "Fang Zheng, I will tell you the truth. Before I came here, lord clan leader made a promise to me. As long as I accomplish great accomplishments at San Cha mountain and take control of the situation, I will be bestowed a surname when I return to Shang clan city. At that time, I will no longer be Yi Huo, but Shang Huo. I will become a true elder of Shang clan and I will have the authority to recommend talents."

"Eh? So it was like that..." Fang Yuan clearly revealed a surprised expression, his gaze flickered and he sank into contemplation.

Yi Huo waited for a long time but after getting no response from Fang Yuan, his brows furrowed even deeper and he took the initiative to ask: "Have you thought it through?"

Fang Yuan shook his head: "This matter is too significant, I need to consider it properly."

Yi Huo’s brows relaxed a little: "Since that is so, then I will give you three days. I will come here again after three days, I hope to get a satisfactory reply then."

"Alright." Fang Yuan nodded in agreement and accompanied Yi Huo out of the cave.

Three days later.

"You still haven’t thought it through?" Yi Huo looked at Fang Yuan with some doubts.

"This is a serious matter, I really need to properly consider it." Fang Yuan answered with a heavy voice.

"Alright, I will give you three more days. Fang Zheng, I think highly of you."

Another three days later.

"Lord Yi Huo, I have thought over this matter over and again. I appreciate your good intent but I still prefer the freedom of the demonic path." Fang Yuan sincerely replied.

"What? You thought for three days and this is your answer?" Yi Huo’s tone showed his fury.

"Lord Yi Huo, you can lead a horse to water, but you can’t make it drink." Fang Yuan’s gaze was profound and there was severity within his soft words.

Yi Huo gritted his teeth and said with a deep voice: "Fang Zheng, you need to think it clearly. The four old-timers of Tie clan are not easy opponents. If I don’t help out, everything bodes ill for Bai Ning Bing. Besides this, Sky Tiger Xue San Si whom you killed is Century Boy’s goddaughter. Century Boy has been watching you all this while, he is a wood path Gu Master at rank four upper stage and is a thorny character of demonic path."

"Eh? So it was like that." Fang Yuan showed hesitation, "Then... let me consider it again. Give me ten days of time to think it through."

"Ten days?" Yi Huo immediately wrinkled his brows.

"Fine." He thought for a while and nodded, "This is enough time for you to think everything through clearly. I believe you will make the most sensible choice. But I have to remind you that time cannot be dragged on further, your woman is in crisis. Anything can happen during this time."

Yi Huo considered Bai Ning Bing as Fang Yuan’s woman which Fang Yuan felt was quite laughable.

Whether Bai Ning Bing died or not, it was not an especially important matter to him.

Anyway, the poison vow Gu was already destroyed and he had also matured, reaching rank four initial stage.

Saving Bai Ning Bing or not, it depended on his will.

But if there was no Bai Ning Bing, Fang Yuan would become a lone force and it would definitely create a negative influence on his plans at San Cha mountain.

"There is no need to go save Bai Ning Bing urgently, I should still focus on cultivating and advance forward. I have already no need for the bone flesh unity Gu. As for Bai Ning Bing, she can be outside for a while and attract the attention for me. I should take this chance to surpass her, it will be convenient for me to suppress her in future. And with so many eyes watching the situation, those four old foxes of Tie clan absolutely won’t move in for the kill."

Fang Yuan saw the whole situation clearly.

"As for Yi Huo’s invitation... hehe."

Ten days later.

"Lord Yi Huo, thank you for your good intention. These days, I have pondered restlessly and from every angle, but I still feel that being free is the best." Fang Yuan wore an earnest expression as he said this.

Yi Huo’s expression naturally became unsightly: "Fang Zheng, you have been doing this over and over again, are you playing with me?"

"Lord Yi Huo, your words are not right. I have always been sincere with you. I understand your mood. But right now, the most important thing is three kings inheritance. There is already not much time left before the next opening of the inheritance."

With the mention of the opening of three kings inheritance, Yi Huo could only suppress the anger in his heart. He took a deep look at Fang Yuan and left the cave.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Five days later.

The three light pillars appeared on San Cha mountain, piercing through the clouds towards the sky.

The red light pillar was burning like fire; it was King Bao’s inheritance. Yellow light pillar was bright and dazzling; it was King Quan’s inheritance. Blue light pillar had a demonic charm; it was King Xin’s inheritance.

After a gap of several months, three kings inheritance opened again.

Yi Huo gazed at these three light pillars at the peak, his fierce eyes under his dashing brows flickered with faint radiance.

"Is this three kings inheritance? Sure enough, it gives off a magnificent feeling!" As long as I accomplish great achievements here, I can truly join Shang clan and change my surname to Shang, becoming a member of Shang clan."

Right now, excitement was surging like waves in his heart.

"Hmph, little beast king doesn’t know what’s good for him, actually refusing me again and again. But, he apparently knows some secrets related to three kings inheritance. If I can take him in as my subordinate, it will be a great help to me in controlling San Cha mountain."

Yi Huo could not help but think of Fang Yuan.

Yi Huo was one of the five great elders of Shang clan and possessed his own information channel. He already knew Fang Yuan had made a huge sum of money at Shang clan city by relying on his knowledge of some secrets of three kings inheritance.

Besides this, Fang Yuan, himself, possessed outstanding battle prowess, having the fighting strength of a rank four middle stage.

Moreover, Bai Ning Bing never left the little beast king’s side. Recruiting one naturally meant gaining the other.

Thus, Yi Huo had accommodated to Fang Yuan and displayed complete sincerity to move him.

But Fang Yuan did not know what was good for him and refused him time and again.

Yi Huo could not help starting to feel angry: "When I come out of three kings inheritance, I will teach this little beast king a lesson and let him know that not everyone can fetch a good price! But, for now... I need to suppress some hindrances."

Yi Huo collected his disorganized thoughts and looked towards the few figures at a distance.

’Pink butterfly gentleman’ Kong Ri Tian!

’He who once dyed the sky blue’ Long Qing Tian!

Wu clan elder Wu Shen Tong!

Yi clan elder Yi Chong!

These four were all rank four peak stage experts. Every time the inheritance opened, they would be the first to move towards the entrance.

This time was no exception!

"Hahaha, I have reserved King Bao Inheritance. Who dares to contend with me?" Yi Huo threw his head back and laughed loudly, his laughter wild and unrestrained.

He crossed his arms and looked at the four with a fierce gaze.

He was fire path Gu Master, King Bao was also of the same path. King Bao’s inheritance was naturally the best choice for him.

"Blazing Inferno..." Wu Shen Tong narrowed his eyes and mumbled with some fear towards Yi Huo’s reputation.

Yi Huo was one of the five great generals of Shang clan with the nickname of Blazing Inferno, he was at the peak of power! Even Wu Shen Tong had no choice but to admit that Yi Huo was a notch above him.

"Hmph, I will deal with you!" Kong Ri Tian snorted, his whole body suddenly exploded and turned into phoenix winged golden butterflies.

Hundreds and thousands of golden butterflies, with wings as sharp as knives, enveloped Yi Huo.

"Blazing inferno, you have been in the limelight the last few years." Long Qing Tian also laughed gloomily and pushed his palm.

Whoosh!

A greenish-blue palm of light, with poison gas curling around it, broke the void and directly smacked towards Yi Huo’s face.

"Let me spar too." Yi Chong sneered and suddenly moved.

Swish!

Blue water waves surged up out of nowhere, engulfing Yi Huo within.

All of a sudden, three rank four peak stage Gu Masters attacked Yi Huo at the same time.

"Good." Yi Huo’s lips curled up into an arrogant smile, he stretched his arms then smacked his chest with his palms.

Bam!

Majestic flames suddenly burst forth.

In an instant, the fiery color overwhelmed the light pillars of three kings inheritance and illuminated San Cha mountain.

Flames surged up with incomparable heat and ferocity.

The flames effortlessly covered the water wave, burned the poison palm and sent the phoenix winged golden butterflies retreating in a sorry figure. The golden butterflies flew far away and converged, changing back into Kong Ri Tian.

"This is his rank five Gu prairie fire?" Seeing such a huge fire, Yi Chong and Long Qing Tian’s expressions changed.

Kong Ri Tian did not say a word, while Wu Shen Tong’s eyes flashed.

"This is the might of Elder Yi Huo!" Shang clan Gu Masters shouted out loudly in excitement.

Yi Huo stood proudly within the flames, giving a feeling of a deity. His fiery red hair seemed to merge with the flames, giving off a wild and intense bearing.

The flames swiftly dispersed and he walked towards the red light pillar, King Bao Inheritance.

The four Gu Masters watched him move towards the light pillar, all of their expressions were more or less stiff and unsightly, but they did not block him. This was them acknowledging Yi Huo’s might.

After Yi Huo entered King Bao Inheritance, Kong Ri Tian and other three glanced at each other, but they had no more interest to fight.

Among them, Kong Ri Tian and Long Qing Tian entered King Xin Inheritance; Wu Shen Tong and Yi Chong entered King Quan Inheritance.

"Yi Huo is worthy of being one of the five great experts of Shang clan, he has rank five Gu prairie fire, formidable indeed!"

"These days, Yi Huo has been repeatedly going to little beast king’s place, their relation is not shallow."

"Hmph! Black and white twin demons are known as demonic path Gu Masters, but they are actually lackeys of righteous path. They spent some time at Shang clan and everyone knows they have a deep relation with Shang clan’s young master Shang Xin Ci."

A group of rank four upper stage Gu Masters started discussing after they saw Yi Huo suppressing other four Gu Masters and enter the light pillar with his head high.

Birds of a feather flock together.

Rank four peak stage experts had all entered the inheritance, now it was these people’s turn.

"Century Boy, your goddaughter Xue San Si was killed by little beast king. When are you going to take revenge?" A righteous Gu Master among the group suddenly asked while taking gloating at his misfortune.

Century Boy coldly snorted: "Although Yi Huo has rank five Gu, the battle just before was only a probe, no one used their true methods. If they were to truly fight it out, who lives and who dies is still not certain."

Although he said so, he was actually very afraid.

He had thought of taking the chance that Bai Ning Bing was imprisoned, to find trouble for Fang Yuan. But Yi Huo repeatedly visited Fang Yuan’s residence, so he could only restrain his impulse and quietly observe.

Now, when he saw Yi Huo easily suppressing other four, Century Boy’s heart became much more heavy.

"Such a great opportunity like three kings inheritance is in front of us, who will foolishly battle each other to death? Let’s go, we need to enter too." Soon, this group of rank four upper stage Gu Masters also entered the inheritance.

Fang Yuan climbed up to the peak and was immediately recognized.

"Little beast king!"

"It is Fang Zheng."

"He is entering King Xin Inheritance."

From the peak to the middle of mountain, many Gu Masters stared as they looked at Fang Yuan entering into the light pillar.

"He really forgot about his partner?"

"Bnb is still trapped by the four old fellows of Tie clan. This Fang Zheng is actually paying it no heed as if nothing has happened, like he hasn’t heard of it." Even demonic Gu Masters felt a chill in their hearts.

"Look, this is the heartlessness of demonic path Gu Masters!" Some righteous path Gu Masters commented disdainfully.

"Fang Yuan... you bastard!" Bai Ning Bing also witnessed this scene from inside the qi barrier.

Her face became pale with anger, she clenched her fists tightly and fiercely gritted her teeth.

The four old-timers of Tie clan looked at each other.

They were in an embarrassing situation right now.

Although they succeeded in trapping Bai Ning Bing, Fang Yuan did not come to rescue her. This made their defensive tactics a cold irony.

"Damn it! We can’t deal with so many matters, this time, there will be no share for us at three kings inheritance!"

"How about we retreat?"

"Impossible! We four move together, if we retreat without gaining anything, this will be an insult to our Tie clan and I am afraid we will not be able to raise our heads in front of others."

"Then what should we do?"

Three pairs of eyes looked at the fourth old man, their leader.

The old man pondered for a while and made a decision.

He spoke with a heavy voice: "Request for reinforcements! Shang clan has sent reinforcement, there will naturally be support from our Tie clan too. In the present situation, the competition has turned more intense. Only rank four peak stage powers can fight for a seat. As long as the clan sends a rank four peak stage reinforcement, then with our rank four middle stage strength...."

"Big brother is right."

"Shang clan has sent Yi Huo, if we ask for reinforcement now, we won’t lose face."

"Right, we need to ask support from the clan!

.....

There was endless grey fog completely filling Fang Yuan’s vision and reminding him that he had already entered King Xin Inheritance.

Fang Yuan surveyed his surroundings, he could not tell east from west. However, in his aperture, Spring Autumn Cicada shook its wings slightly. The flow of time here was still three times faster than the outside world.

"I need to hurry." Fang Yuan felt a sense of urgency.

The constantly recovering Spring Autumn Cicada was becoming more and more like a ticking time bomb.

He grabbed a paper crane Gu and activated it.

A ’key’ was required to enter King Xin Inheritance and it was a paper crane Gu. At this very moment, Fang Yuan could only use paper crane Gu, his other Gu besides Spring Autumn Cicada, were all suppressed by the heavenly power.

Paper crane Gu floated in the air in front of him; it flapped its wings and led the way ahead.

Fang Yuan followed the paper crane and slowly moved forward.

He reached a hill and could see a blurry human figure in the fog.

"Human... come out... compete... let’s compete." The human figure opened its mouth, the sound was boorish and sporadic.

When Fang Yuan walked closer, the human figure gradually became clearer.

His figure was similar to ordinary humans, two hands and two legs. It was just that he was very buff, and reddish brown hair grew from all over his body; chest, limbs, even on his face and buttocks.

He looked at Fang Yuan with his bronze bell-like large eyes.

"Compete... let’s compete. Lose... die!" He roared, his eyes were filled with blood veins and looked very malevolent.

Fang Yuan had already expected this and was not surprised, his expression calm.

This was a mutated human.

Beasts had mutated beasts, just like Biao among the tigers, lycan among wolves and mastiff among dogs. Humans also had mutated humans, the mutated human Fang Yuan ran into now was a hairy man.

Hairy man’s whole body were covered with hair, even their eyelids. This type of mutated human has extremely low intelligence but had natural talent in Gu refinement.

There was a group of hairy man in King Xin Inheritance, they were the obstacles Gu Masters had to clear to go forward. Only by winning against them could the Gu Masters continue on. If they lost, the Gu Masters would be torn to shreds by the powerful hairy men and become their food.

"Come." Fang Yuan stood at a distance of ten steps from the hairy man with a tranquil expression.

Several Gu along with some materials appeared out of nowhere in the air and floated lightly to Fang Yuan’s hands.

At the same time, the hairy man also received the same things.

The Gu refinement had begun.

Winner lives, loser dies!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The earliest record of hairy men was in <>.

It was said that Ren Zu dug out his two eyes which turned into a son and a daughter; the son was Verdant Great Sun and the daughter was Desolate Ancient Moon.

Verdant Great Sun liked to drink wine a lot, one time he caused an incident while being drunk and was trapped at the depths of the ordinary abyss. In the end, he profited from the disaster and obtained reputation Gu which looked like chrysanthemum, and was able to escape alive.

Because of reputation Gu, Verdant Great Sun’s reputation gradually became bigger. Soon, news that Verdant Great Sun was a huge drunkard spread all over the world.

One day, a group of tiger-striped honey bees brought their beehive and found Verdant Great Sun.

"Verdant Great Sun, we heard you really liked drinking wine and you have been saying the wine made by the four heaven and earth monkeys are the most delicious in the world. But how could the wine they brewed compare to our honey wine? Today, we have specially brought our honey for you to have a taste."

Each of these honey bees was the size of a leopard with patterns on their body resembling tiger stripes; golden with black stripes on top. They were speaking politely but their tone contained a threatening and forceful intent.

Verdant Great Sun complained in his heart, this was truly misfortune befalling on someone who merely stayed home . Tiger-striped honey bees were very powerful, he was not a match against one of them, let alone a whole group.

Verdant Great Sun could only reluctantly taste the honey wine inside the beehive.

He had only taken a sip when his eyes brightened.

Honey wine was sweet but not overly sweet, the wine fragrance was mellow and very delicious, absolutely a treasure of the world!

"Delicious, delicious, really delicious. This honey wine makes one feel like the most fortunate person in the world!" Verdant Great Sun drank a mouthful of wine, praising it to the high heavens.

Tiger-striped honey bees laughed, feeling very happy.

The leader asked Verdant Great Sun: "The tell us which tastes more delicious, our honey wine or the wines of the four heaven and earth monkeys?"

Verdant Great Sun was already drunk and forgot about the terror of the tiger-striped honey bees, speaking frankly: "They all have their own merits, it is very difficult to compare them."

Tiger-striped honey bees were furious: He said our wine is actually at the same level as those mere monkeys? This Verdant Great Sun is too hateful, we need to teach him a lesson!

They were just about to attack when suddenly Verdant Great Sun disappeared.

This intoxication of Verdant Great Sun lasted for seven days and seven nights.

In his haziness, he heard a voice call calling out for him from the darkness: "Verdant Great Sun, wake up quick. If you don’t wake up, you will be eaten..."

Verdant Great Sun was startled awake.

He discovered he was bound up and was being carried by a group of savage people.

This group of savage people had hair all over their body and their two eyes were dark blue. There was already a bonfire burning and above the bonfire was a cauldron.

The savage people quietly sat down, speaking pleasant sounding words.

"We are refining eternal Gu and were just lacking a human to be the catalyst. Now heaven has sent us Verdant Great Sun, it is truly worthy of celebration!"

"Human is the spirit of all living beings, Ren Zu is the spirit ancestor. Verdant Great Sun was born from his left eye and has ample spiritual energy. The way I see it, the refinement will succeed this time!"

"Throw him into the cauldron quick, we will obtain eternal Gu and live for eternity..."

Verdant Great Sun turned pale from fright at these words; immediately shouting out and struggling with all his strength.

However, these savage people remained unmoved.

At this very moment, Verdant Great Sun again heard the voice from before in his mind.

"Sigh, it is no use. These savages are the hairy men, loved by the world. They have an innate talent in refining Gu worms."

Verdant Great Sun instantly forgot his predicament and curiously asked in his mind: "Who are you?"

That voice laughed: "I am divine travel Gu, as long as any person drinks four different top-tier wines in the world, they will give birth to me in their hearts. I can let you teleport to any place you wish."

Verdant Great Sun was exulted: "Then, please quickly bring me out of here."

Divine travel Gu sighed: "It is no use. You can only use me when you are drunk. Your mind is sober now and so you can’t use me."

Verdant Great Sun suddenly realized: "So that is why I was trapped in the isolated island and almost starved to death that time. Fortunately, I obtained reputation Gu and could leave the ordinary abyss. So it was you who harmed me!"

Divine travel Gu replied: "Sigh, human, I did not have any intent to harm you, it was all because you used my strength after you became drunk. You don’t need to blame me, last time you were almost captured by the tiger-striped honey bees, but you were able to escape thanks to me. One harm and one rescue, we can call it even."

Verdant Great Sun also thought of the tiger-striped honey bees and no longer blamed divine travel Gu.

He was thrown into the cauldron by the hairy men.

The huge fire was burning hotter under the cauldron and the liquid temperature inside also soared.

"Add agates and red pepper!" A hairy man threw precious agates and red pepper into the cauldron.

The liquid inside the cauldron immediately changed to red and dyed Verdant Great Sun’s body red.

"Add blue smoke fox child !" A hairy man grabbed a small fox and threw it into the cauldron.

The small fox’s whole body was hairy and looked extremely cute with its eyes like black diamonds. But the moment it touched the liquid, it turned into blue smoke and blended into the water.

The liquid in the cauldron slowly boiled and Verdant Great Sun also felt more despair, feeling it would be difficult to escape the disaster this time.

Hairy men continued to add in many supplementary materials and Gu worms.

"Add vanity Gu!" A hairy man threw a Gu into the cauldron.

This Gu was strange and looked like a huge blue crab. But different from real crabs, its crab shell was hollow.

The moment it saw Verdant Great Sun, the huge crab like vanity Gu was very excited: "You, you are Verdant Great Sun? I have heard about you, but had never expected I would meet you here, it is really my good fortune. I am too happy, too excited."

Verdant Great Sun gave a bitter smile: "How can it be good fortune when we are about to die."

"I don’t care about death. I only wanted to ask, how did you become so famous? I really admire you! I have the utmost admiration for people like you." Vanity Gu asked with urgency.

"I am not in the mood to talk about this now, I need to escape." Verdant Great Sun struggled in the cauldron and tried to climb up, but was quickly pressed down into the cauldron by a watching hairy man.

"Quick, tell me, tell me quick!" Vanity Gu was not tactful and wholeheartedly wanted to ask for guidance.

Verdant Great Sun furiously rebuked: "Can’t you see the situation we are in now?"

Vanity Gu opened its eyes wide and started at Verdant Great Sun before it beamed with pleasure: "I understand, I understand now. If I want to be popular, I need to endure the heat. Thank you for the guidance, thank you. Verdant Great Sun, as thanks, I will do a favor for you."

Saying so, the vanity Gu exploded.

This explosion was not intense and was very light, only giving off a soft ’bang’ sound. The vanity Gu turned into a formless poisonous wind and attacked the hearts of all the hairy men.

The crystal clear dark blue eyes of the hairy men turned red.

Verdant Great Sun was dazed for a good while, before coming back to his senses. He could not help sighing at vanity Gu’s sacrifice, and immediately shouted: "Although you hairy men can refine Gu, but it is nothing. Even if you all live for eternity, so what? You are so ugly with hair all over your body, you are simply an abomination."

The hairy men were stupefied.

If it was before, they would not care about Verdant Great Sun.

But now, the poison of vanity had spread in the depths of their hearts, shrouding their intelligence.

Hearing Verdant Great Sun’s shouts, the hairy men started refuting loudly: "Nonsense, nonsense! We hairy men are the most perfect, there can be nothing more beautiful than hair all over the body!"

Verdant Great Sun was suddenly hit by an inspiration: "No matter how beautiful your hair is, could it be as beautiful as my hair?"

Because he had drank vajra monkey’s strong wine, his hair had become blazing fire.

The hairy men were baffled at his words.

The beautiful fire was flickering and changing all the time. Even they could not help but admit the movement of Verdant Great Sun’s hair was beautiful.

Verdant Great Sun continued to stimulate them: "Even if you obtain eternity, you won’t be as beautiful as me! Look at my hair, it is as colorful and charismatic as fire."

The hairy men were spurred on by Verdant Great Sun, and finally someone could not endure it: "You have such amazing hair, I will have it too. Look at mine!"

He then used a fire torch to ignite his whole body.

The hair on his body burned and he became a fiery man.

"Hahaha, you only have beautiful hair, but my whole body is beautiful now." This hairy man shouted.

Soon, the other hairy men also rushed to do the same.

All of them became fiery men, the fire burned them and the intense pain caused them to howl in pain.

But when they realized this, it was too late for them to extinguish the fire, and bombastically displayed their beauty.

Divine travel Gu was overjoyed and praised Verdant Great Sun endlessly: "Human, you are really clever, actually thinking of this method."

Verdant Great Sun escaped out of the cauldron and succeeded in surviving. He replied in his mind with a cold smile: "It is not me who is clever. It is the vanity in people that have turned them stupid. They often silently endure pain for false beauty, giving up the goals they should truly pursue."

......

Grand white moon gold, skull stones, dragon-side tooth, young autumn grass along with fifty primeval stones, a flower boar Gu and a boar cage Gu.

This was handed to Fang Yuan as the materials for Gu refinement.

In front of him, the hairy man was already sitting cross-legged on the ground and refining Gu.

Although Fang Yuan was not a refinement path Gu Master, he had ventured into the refinement path in his previous life and knew many recipes.

Right now, he had three choices, every choice would refine a new Gu.

The inheritance did not mention which Gu he had to refine, this meant the Gu he refined needed to be better than the hairy man.

Fang Yuan looked at the process of the hairy man refining Gu and could already guess what he was going to refine.

He sneered inwardly, but on his face appeared a respectful and flattering smile: "Lord hairy man, you are really amazing. The method of your Gu refinement really makes this one sigh in amazement. You are a Gu refinement grandmaster, there is no Gu in this world which you can’t refine."

"Ah? Haha! You... tactful." The hairy man laughed loudly, clearly happy.

This distraction immediately caused the Gu refinement to fail.

The hairy man’s expression suddenly changed and shouted in fear: "No!"

But it was already late.

Heavenly power descended as lightning and struck the hairy man into ashes.

"Hehe." Fang Yuan indifferently laughed and collected the materials in his hand. Under the paper crane Gu’s lead, he slowly walked towards the next round.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Light dispersed and a Gu slowly landed onto Fang Yuan’s palm.

This was water cage Gu which was used especially to capture wild Gu worms and was very effective.

The hairy man in front was in the process of refining Gu. When he saw Fang Yuan was already done, he immediately let out a desperate howl.

Thunder crackled in the sky and the hairy man was killed.

Similar to King Quan Inheritance, King Xin Inheritance was also extremely cruel. Gu Masters had to tread through blood and death to move a step forward.

Fang Yuan sighed and stored the water cage Gu before continuing forward.

If he remembered correctly, this was already the thirty-second round in King Xin Inheritance.

King Xin Inheritance was an inheritance related to refinement path. The difficulty increased every ten rounds and the hairy men that appeared also became smarter and stronger.

In the early twenty or so rounds, Fang Yuan was able to rely on his speech to flatter the hairy men and disrupt their concentration, causing their Gu refinement to fail and give him effortless victories.

But starting from thirtieth round, the hairy men that appeared were huge and had remarkable intelligence; Fang Yuan could only compete fairly.

But fortunately, the Gu refinement materials of the first twenty rounds were accumulated by Fang Yuan and gave him ample options in refining Gu.

These Gu refinement materials could be saved by the Gu Masters and used for future rounds.

This was also a trick King Xin had left behind when she set up his inheritance. In Fang Yuan’s previous life, this trick was made public only after a year. Right now, it was a secret, even if some people realized this trick, the number was only a small fraction of the participants.

Fang Yuan was able to rush forward like this because of his plentiful accumulation and his previous life’s experiences. His achievement here were even better than at King Quan Inheritance.

From fortieth round, the difficulty of King Xin Inheritance increased by several folds.

At this stage, Gu Masters could use one of their Gu. But in King Xin Inheritance, the Gu they use must be of refinement path.

Fang Yuan did not have any refinement path Gu, the materials on him were also almost used up.

He began to feel the difficulty of advancing forward.

It was become very difficult to cross each round.

What was good was that after fortieth round, King Xin Inheritance gave the Gu Masters a corresponding reward.

These rewards could be refinement path Gu worms, recipes, primeval stones and so on, and were very generous.

When Fang Yuan broke through to forty-fourth round, he was given an opportunity to leave. He took this opportunity and left King Xin Inheritance.

The time he spent this time in King Xin Inheritance was even longer than in King Quan Inheritance.

Returning to San Cha mountain, Fang Yuan found Tie clan’s purple light barrier was still standing tall. Tie clan’s four old-timers were very patient and did not enter three kings inheritance; Bai Ning Bing was still trapped.

The three light pillars on the mountain peaks had already shrunk down to a cup sized thickness.

But as long as the light pillars existed, even if it was only the thickness of a tiny needle, it meant the doors had not closed and people could still enter.

But every time the inheritance opened up, no matter which inheritance of three kings inheritance Gu Masters chose, they could only enter one time.

Fang Yuan looked for Li Xian and made another transaction again.

Li Xian received many things from Fang Yuan and was inwardly startled.

"I have a bad news for you. Tie clan’s four old-timers have already requested for support from their clan, Tie clan has already sent a group of reinforcements over and it might be unfavorable for sir."

Fang Yuan was not surprised, this action of Tie clan’s four old-timers was also within his expectations: "Eh? Who did they send as reinforcements?"

"The head is Tie clan’s Tie Ba Xiu, he is a strength path Gu Master with rank four upper stage cultivation. Besides him, there is also Tie Ruo Nan. She is one of the eight young masters of Tie clan and is a rising star who has been in limelight these two years! Every one of Tie clan’s eight young masters are dragons and phoenixes. Especially this Tie Ruo Nan, she is the daughter of Divine Investigator Tie Xue Leng and already has rank four initial stage cultivation at such a young age."

Li Xian placed emphasis on Tie Ruo Nan in this batch of reinforcements, and only gave small snippets of information regarding Tie Ba Xiu and others.

Tie Ba Xiu was already a famous character and everyone knew of him. But Tie Ruo Nan was a rising star and could only be said to have some reputation and had yet to be famous around Southern Border.

Li Xian, however, did not know Fang Yuan was familiar with Tie Ruo Nan.

’Sure enough, she advanced to rank four. Tie Ba Xiu, Tie clan indeed sent this group just like in my previous life...’ Fang Yuan pondered in his mind.

Li Xian had been observing Fang Yuan’s expression the whole time, but seeing him remain calm, he was increasingly feeling more afraid.

"Lord little beast king, when this batch of Tie clansmen arrives, Tie clan’s four old-timers will be free to deal with Bai Ning Bing. There is still time if you make a move now." Li Xian persuaded, with sincerity showing all over his face.

"I will have to ask you to pay more attention to our future deals." Fang Yuan smiled and left the cave.

The moment Fang Yuan left, Li Xian’s expression turned grave.

His small eyes flashed with sharp light: "I have been fanning the flames to this extent but this little beast king remains unmoved. Is he really not worried about his partner’s safety? Could it be the relation between Bai Ning Bing and him is not as close as the rumors say? He is a man and Bai Ning Bing is so beautiful, he will definitely go rescue her. It seems I need to contact Hu Mei Er..."

Riling up people’s emotions had become basic nature to him. He watched others fight and fished in troubled water, obtaining huge benefits.

"Is this true?" Hu Mei Er’s eyes brightened with high spirits when she got the news from Li Xian.

"Why would I deceive my darling?" Li Xian smiled while caressing Hu Mei Er’s waist.

Hu Mei Er smiled tenderly and threw herself into Li Xian’s chest, acting coquettishly: "It is still big brother Li Xian who loves me the most."

.....

A round pearl quietly rested on Fang Yuan’s palm.

It was golden all over and was only the size of a thumb. In the dusky cave, the pearl let out faint golden luster.

This was a yellow gold relic Gu, rank four Gu!

This Gu’s market supply was strictly controlled by all great clans. Even Li Xian could not get it.

It was all because this Gu could directly raise a rank four Gu Master’s cultivation by a small realm. Rank four and rank five were already the higher-ups of a clan; a yellow gold relic Gu could change the power structure of the higher-ups.

"I was quite lucky this time, actually receiving a yellow gold relic Gu as reward in King Xin Inheritance." Fang Yuan sighed before activating this Gu with a thought.

Yellow gold relic Gu immediately turned into golden ray of light and entered Fang Yuan’s aperture.

The ninety percent primeval sea in Fang Yuan’s aperture surged and ebbed. In the center, Spring Autumn Cicada appeared and disappeared at times.

When yellow gold relic Gu entered the aperture, it was firmly suppressed by the indistinct aura of Spring Autumn Cicada. Fang Yuan could only make Spring Autumn Cicada conceal itself then use yellow gold relic Gu.

A ball of golden light immediately spread and covered the whole aperture. Bright golden primeval essence converged together, cleansing the aperture walls.

A night passed and when the light of clear dawn shone upon San Cha mountain, Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes.

Rank four middle stage!

If he used nine eyes liquor worm, he would possess rank four upper stage essence gold primeval essence!

This moment, he had officially surpassed Bai Ning Bing in cultivation. At the same time, the stable aperture walls could bear even more of Spring Autumn Cicada’s pressure now, somewhat delaying this death warrant.

"Next, it is refining Gu..."

Fang Yuan did not urgently use liquor worm, but instead took out a Gu.

This Gu was a ball of bone the size of a quail egg. On the surface, there were alternating black and white stripes like on a zebra.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing had once used this to soar to the skies.

This was the footless bird.

Although it was only at rank three, it could move ten thousand miles and was the number one mount under rank five. But it had a great a weakness - it could only fly once.

The moment it landed, it was the moment of its death.

This footless bird Gu was also obtained from King Xin Inheritance as a reward for Fang Yuan.

Nine palace flowers, aspiring stone, golden crow’s essence, chilling grass... Fang Yuan threw all these materials into the footless bird Gu and also constantly threw in primeval stones.

Most of these Gu refinement materials were materials Fang Yuan had remaining from King Xin Inheritance, while a portion was bought from Li Xian.

He used up a total of a hundred and eighty thousand primeval stones before the Gu refinement finished.

Bone wings Gu!

It was a rank four Gu. It looked like a feather, was spotless white, had bony texture and was light as a feather.

Under Fang Yuan’s will, this Gu flew towards his back and spread, forming into something resembling two pairs of folded wings that covered almost all of Fang Yuan’s back.

He poured primeval essence into the bone wings Gu... suddenly, intense pain attacked him as countless bones grew out from his backbone and ribs. The bony outgrowth pierced through his flesh and grew out before converging together and forming two enormous bone wings.

These bone wings were like the wings on a bird; wide and long. When folded up, the tail of the wings could touch the ground. The current Fang Yuan was truly an eight foot tall man.

Whoosh!

There was a soft sound as the bone wings stretched out. The cave did not look so spacious anymore.

Normal bone wings were spotless white. But the bone wings on Fang Yuan was not only pitch black, but also let out a metallic luster like that of steel and iron.

This was because Fang Yuan’s skeleton surpassed ordinary, having been reformed by iron bone Gu and at the same time, he had constantly been using rank four essence iron bone recently.

This led to Fang Yuan’s bone wings to far surpass other people’s in terms of sturdiness. Rather than to say they were only bone wings, it was better to say they were iron bone wings!

Fang Yuan softly flapped the wings, there was only a blowing sound before a strong whirlwind blew up.

Bone wings could be used as he wished and was like a natural part of his body.

Fang Yuan nodded in satisfaction.

Ordinary Gu Masters were rather cautious in using bone wings Gu. They would often train for two to three years before they were able to fly. If it were to be used in battle, they would have to train even longer, at least five years and above.

After all, humans were creatures who walked on the ground and not flying creatures.

However, Fang Yuan had no such problem.

After five hundred years in his previous life, he had similarly gained plentiful experiences terms of flying.

One could well imagine, if he suddenly used them, it was sure to catch his enemies off guard.

His newly advanced cultivation and bone wings Gu became the new trump cards of Fang Yuan!

"Now, it is time to deal with Bai Ning Bing’s matter." Fang Yuan kept the bone wings, a chilling light flashing past his eyes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

A group of seven people silently moved through a forest.

’We have been hurrying on our way without resting all these days and are already very close to San Cha mountain.’ Tie Ba Xiu thought while rushing through the forest, stepping across stones and tree roots.

He was tall and had a buff physique, on his square face was a steady expression which gave a feeling of reliability.

His cultivation was rank four upper stage and his fame had spread throughout Southern Border. When he was young, he was spurned by the clan, pushed aside and forced to drift outside.

Then he encountered a righteous Gu Master inheritance and changed to strength path, making his name renowned in the world.

Now, he was a famous character of the righteous path. With rank five Gu ’earth overlord’, he was called ’present age overlord’ and had battle strength that surpassed ordinary rank four peak stage!

’At present, there are five rank four peak stage Gu Masters on San Cha mountain; Long Qing Tian, Yi Chong, Kong Ri Tian, Wu Shen Tong and Yi Huo. Among them, Yi Huo’s battle prowess is very high and will be the strongest opponent. In addition to this, there will be more and more formidable characters who will join this struggle. It is just that I do not know what Tie Ruo Nan has planned.’

Thinking of this, Tie Ba Xiu could not help turning his gaze towards Tie Ruo Nan who was running beside him.

Although he had impressive battle prowess, in the group that was sent over this time by the clan, he was not the head. Rather, it was a young junior - Tie Ruo Nan!

After Tie Ruo Nan returned to the clan, she cultivated hard and displayed extremely strong aptitude and talent. Now, she was already one of the Tie clan’s eight young masters. She was meticulous, sensitive to the smallest details and was already being called ’little divine investigator’. She was the strongest rising star that emerged in Tie clan these years, she was gradually soaring up and was being watched by many.

This time, when the four old-timers requested for reinforcements, the clan made an exception and appointed Tie Ruo Nan as the leader of this group. Even Tie Ba

Xiu, this famous senior had to obey her orders. This showed how much the Tie clan higher ups expected from her.

Tie Ba Xiu only took a glance before retracting his gaze.

He was not in the least bit concerned about the clan’s arrangement and was also not jealous.

Tie Ba Xiu was very loyal to the clan; for the clan’s future hope, he was willing to be an assistant, willing to become a stepping stone.

In fact, when he was down and out, he had received Divine Investigator Tie Xue Leng’s help. Tie Ba Xiu had always felt grateful towards him and with the interaction over these days, he sensed Tie Ruo Nan’s brilliance.

"As expected of Divine Investigator’s daughter! Big Brother Xue Leng, you have a worthy successor, you can rest assured in the afterlife." Tie Ba Xiu was gratified.

He was very satisfied with Tie Ruo Nan. Not only did he admire her cultivation talents, he admired her leadership capability even more.

Outstanding young Gu Masters had gathered around Tie Ruo Nan. Not mentioning anything else, one just needed to look at the current group of people.

Tie Mu, rank three peak stage Gu Master, looked gentlemanly and was brimming with talent. He had received many invitations but he chose to join Tie Ruo Nan.

Tie Ao Kai, rank three upper stage, he might look dazed and sleepy, but in the field of investigative ability, he had true prowess.

There was also Tie Dao Ku, an offense Gu Master with outstanding battle prowess. He had once served another young master but was now recruited by Tie Ruo Nan.

Tie Xian Hua, one of the beauties in the clan, young and beautiful. Even clan elders praised her defensive abilities.

These talents gathered under Tie Ruo Nan and would become her crew. Tie Ba Xiu seemed to see the radiant scene where this crew endlessly grew and assisted Tie Ruo Nan in ascending to the position of clan leader.

Each one of the eight young masters of Tie clan had a chance to contend for clan leader’s position!

As they ran quickly, lights and shadows fluctuated in their vision and green light shone on Tie Ruo Nan’s face.

Her slender legs revealed her youthful beauty as she ran through the forest.

Having gained much experiences these years, Tie Ruo Nan had clearly matured. Her brows were sharp as sword and her eyes shone like the stars; when one looked at her from the side, one could feel her power. Her thick eyelashes shaded the resolute light in her eyes.

"San Cha mountain!"

She recited this name in her mind.

She had already received news about San Cha mountain. And she was even aware that San Cha mountain had become a place of unstable changes, a struggling whirlpool that swallowed lives, engulfing countless people of both demonic and righteous paths.

Originally, Tie Ruo Nan had not thought of participating. But an unexpected information made her realize there were hidden details regarding Qing Mao mountain back then.

Her father Tie Xue Leng lost his life at Qing Mao mountain; a hero of a generation had fallen.

Anything that concerned her father, she had to check it out. Thus, she personally accepted the order and hurried to San Cha mountain.

"Bai Ning Bing... Fang Zheng... the truth about Qing Mao mountain, I will get to the bottom of it!"

The group moved forward.

The group of seven moved in an standard battle formation.

The investigative Gu Master Tie Ao Kai was at front, Tie Ruo Nan and Tie Ba Xiu was at middle. Healing Gu Master was at the rear with defensive Gu Master Tie Xian Hua beside him.

No matter what the terrain was, the battle formation showed no signs of disorder. No matter what happened, this group responded to it at the first sight and was not caught unprepared.

"Who is it?!"

Suddenly, Tie Ao Kai who was at the front stopped and shouted, alerting the group.

Something happened!

The whole group swiftly came to a stop, the formation changed slightly to form into the best battle array; it was both closely linked and was also faintly loose to leave a way for retreat.

They could attack if they progressed, and defend if they retreated.

A person who crossed his arms and was standing on a boulder, glanced down at this group of people.

He was tall, with strong back and narrow waist, although he was not exaggeratedly muscular, he still gave a feeling of sturdiness.

He was wearing tight-fitting black clothes, he was standing there alone but it felt like a mountain was standing.

Especially, his black pupils, they were dark as abyss and gave an unfathomable feeling.

"Fang Zheng!" Tie Ruo Nan’s pupils shrunk when she saw this person and blurted out.

This person was indeed Fang Yuan.

"Tie Ruo Nan, we meet again." The corner of Fang Yuan’s lips curled up into a smile, a grim intent was revealed from his expression.

Little beast king!

Tie Ba Xiu’s eyes narrowed and a severe light flashed past them.

The other five people of the group were behaving like they were facing a great enemy. They were very well equipped with intel and knew the person in front of them; a rising star of the demonic path with outstanding battle prowess, his actions were wild and unrestrained - an extremely dangerous character!

"Fang Zheng, I trust you have been since we last met?" Tie Ruo Nan revealed a complicated expression on her face and continued after a sigh, "Fang Zheng, you came to compromise? Actually, there is nothing to it. I know the struggles of three kings inheritance, you either live or die, there are no ways for retreat. Bai Ning Bing ran into my Tie clan’s Gu Master and killed him in as a last-ditch move. I have friendly relations with you both, how about this, come to Tie clan as a guest, explain the matter clearly and redeem this sin by doing some assignments for Tie clan. I can plea for leniency for you and Tie clan won’t pursue this matter anymore."

When she was speaking, Tie Ao Kai nervously activated his Gu to secretly scan his surroundings.

It was truly strange Fang Yuan appeared alone. Maybe there were others lying in ambush!

Fang Yuan could not help but sneer at Tie Ruo Nan’s words: "Sin? She only killed a person, what sin is there? The only slight difference is this person has a somewhat tougher background, that’s all. Tie Ruo Nan, I didn’t think you were so childish. Thinking of luring me into going to Tie clan, and capture me there? When I enter Tie clan, I will be a dragon swimming in shallow water, a tiger moving in plain sight , wouldn’t I be completely at your mercy then?"

Tie Ruo Nan deeply furrowed her brows: "Fang Zheng, you have changed a lot over these years. You feel no guilt over killing a person? Anyway, I am not telling lies. I pledge on my honor that I will guarantee your safety and guarantee you will be given fair trial."

Fang Yuan scoffed: "Is your Tie clan considered safe? At the moment, Divine Thief Lu Zuan Feng has been causing havoc at Tie clan, even infiltrating Demon Suppression Tower. Your Tie clan can’t even help yourselves, can you guarantee my safety? Laughable, truly laughable."

"What? The clan has kept the news regarding Divine Thief Lu Zuan Feng confidential. He is an outsider and has also been staying far away here at San Cha mountain, how could he be so clear of the matter?"

The seven people of Tie clan turned pale.

Divine Thief Lu Zuan Feng was a rank five expert, the matter of him infiltrating Demon Suppression Tower had already caused a lot of disturbance in Tie clan’s higher ups.

Tie clan had always viewed itself as the holy land of the righteous path, its Demon Suppression Tower was even a renowned prison for the demonic path, but Lu Zuan Feng entered and left it as he pleased. This level of humiliation and disgrace was tightly guarded and kept a secret by Tie clan; even top clans like Wu clan and Shang clan had no knowledge of it.

However, this little beast king unexpectedly knew it!

"Do you really believe such nonsense?" Tie Ba Xiu could not help but refuse it as it concerned the reputation of Tie clan.

"Leader, there are no one in the surroundings, he is alone." At this time, Tie Ao Kai reported in a soft voice.

A bright light immediately flashed through Tie Ruo Nan’s mind and she fixed her gaze at Fang Yuan: "Fang Zheng, I understand your intent. You want to use this information to blackmail us and exchange for Bai Ning Bing’s life? We can do that! But we need to know how you you came to know about this secret. Otherwise, we will absolutely not let her go."

Fang Yuan threw his head back and laughed loudly: "Tie Ruo Nan, you are truly naive. I just spoke those words casually. You still don’t understand the purpose of me coming here? Don’t you know there is a battle tactic called besiege an enemy stronghold in order to strike at the reinforcements ?"

"What, you want to go against us?" Tie Ruo Nan’s pupils slightly widened, revealing an inconceivable expression.

The others also looked at Fang Yuan as if they were looking at an idiot.

We are a group of seven while you are just by yourself. We have rank four upper stage senior Tie Ba Xiu, rank four initial stage Tie Ruo Nan, and five rank three Gu Masters, each of them an expert. Just you alone wants to go against us?

"Has this little beast king lost his mind? Is there a problem with his brain?" For a moment, everyone had this thought.

Fang Yuan knew their thoughts as he looked at the change in their expression and eyes.

He did not feel like refuting them. With a cold smile, he suddenly pounced towards the group from high above like a northern goshawk.

"He really attacked?"

"Looking for death!"

The seven people were both startled and furious.

"No, this aura, how could he be at rank four middle stage?!"

Next instance, the seven all felt their hearts thump as they sensed the aura on Fang Yuan.

Facts speak louder than words.

"Rank four middle stage! Not initial stage?" Tie Ruo Nan’s eyes opened wide and was stunned at the revelation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 360: One vs Seven (1/4)

Fang Yuan had been using breath concealment Gu and restrained his aura as much as possible. But now that he made a move, his true aura exploded out.

Add in to that, Tie Ruo Nan’s group had the preconceived belief that Fang Yuan had rank four initial stage cultivation. Thus, for a moment, this seven person group was very surprised.

"Rank four middle stage, this little beast king is so young but has surpassed young master Ruo Nan!"

"Rank four middle stage, no wonder he could be so arrogant."

"So what if he is at rank four middle stage? He actually dared to approach us alone, he is simply seeking his own doom!"

...

All sorts of thoughts flashed in the Tie clan’s group’s minds.

Thud!

A dull sound echoed; Tie Ba Xiu came back to his senses the fastest and stiffly struck against Fang Yuan’s fists in mid-air.

Tie Ba Xiu stably fell to the ground while Fang Yuan was sent flying.

"Fang Zheng, you want to find trouble with us just by yourself? I know you want to rescue your partner Bai Ning Bing, but think it over. You can’t act rashly in a matter of rescuing someone, it is still not too late for you to pull back. If you continue to fight, you will truly be setting yourself against our Tie clan! If that happens, your partner’s life will also be on the line." Tie Ba Xiu expressed himself in few words, seemingly earnest, but was in truth attempting to break Fang Yuan’s fighting spirit; truly proving old ginger is hotter than new.

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan chuckled and looked at Tie Ba Xiu and the rest, his gaze completely exposed his killing intent, "So what if you are Tie clan? So what if I oppose you? If I really can’t save Bai Ning Bing, then I can only blame it on her bad luck. In any case, I already did my best."

Such ruthless and indifference caused the Tie clan’s seven people to feel a chill in their hearts.

Fang Yuan turned towards Tie Ao Kai: "You over there, you don’t need to scout anymore, it is just me alone. Frankly, this path you guys chose is really good, very hidden and very suitable for me to kill you all."

Hearing these words, Tie Ba Xiu’s expression completely turned dark.

"Fang Zheng, you are seeking your own death!"

"Death?" Fang Yuan started laughing loudly without any restraint.

"Is this guy crazy?"

"Has little beast king going mad from cultivation and lost his mind?"

"Demonic path people are all lunatics like this!"

The group all felt the situation was going to be problematic from the unbridled laughter of Fang Yuan.

Fierce people were afraid of unreasonable people and unreasonable people were afraid of those that did not care about death. Despite there being seven people in Tie clan’s side and Fang Yuan was alone, the Tie clan’s group felt fear.

This type of lunatic that was suicidal and did not care about his own life, what was there that he could not do?

Fang Yuan suddenly stopped laughing and stepped forward producing a loud sound. Like a tiger that left the mountain, he resumed his attacks again.

"Fight!" Tie Ruo Nan shouted with a heavy expression, knowing this fight was inevitable.

Tie Ba Xiu retreated and stood beside Tie Ruo Nan; Tie Dao Ku and Tie Xian Hua moved to the front together; and Tie Ao Kai started running at the side.

The whole formation was instantly loosened up like a sack being opened, displaying their skilled battle tactics coordination.

Charging crash Gu!

Fang Yuan rushed forward like a bull, the stones under him were smashed as he moved with powerful momentum and penetrated into Tie clan’s ’sack’ without any fear.

"Little beast king, you are simply too arrogant!" Tie Xian Hua shouted in her delicate voice and stretched out the five fingers of her right hand.

There was a soft sound and an enormous black golden lotus flower blossomed instantly from her palm.

The lotus bloomed, its huge petals were bent down, forming arcs like an umbrella. The dark green lotus stalk continued to grow and in a blink of an eye was over an arm’s size, becoming the handle of the umbrella.

Tie Xian Hua plucked this lotus with her left hand and then charged towards Fang Yuan while holding the dark green lotus stalk.

Umbrella lotus Gu!

Tie Xian Hua was petite while the umbrella lotus was huge and completely covered her, becoming a shield and firmly protecting her.

Fang Yuan sneered, a white elephant phantom appeared above him.

Beast phantom, the strength of an elephant!

Bam!

With no surprise, Fang Yuan sent Tie Xian Hua, who was blocking his path, flying.

Tie Xian Hua flew a whole ten feet like a dead leaf blown by the wind.

"What great strength!" She gritted her teeth, enduring the intense pain from the collision. She twisted her body in the midair and quickly found a balance, landing on the ground without falling.

But the expected attack did not follow, Fang Yuan ignored her existence and directly charged towards Tie Ruo Nan.

"Damn it, he is going after young master!"

"We must block him, protect young master!"

The battle will and killing intent of the group was ignited when they saw Fang Yuan targeting Tie Ruo Nan.

Tie Ruo Nan half-kneeled, her two hands were pressed on the ground; from the moment the battle started, she was creating a puppet.

Plants grew wildly near her.

The fragile grass beside her feet grew to an adult man’s height. Dozens of huge grass intertwined; in the emerald-green light, a grassman puppet was created.

Grass puppet Gu!

Fang Yuan had seen rank one grass puppet Gu at Qing Mao mountain. It was used as a target for practicing moon blades.

Rank one grass puppet Gu was of no threat but once it reached rank two, it could easily kill an ordinary hunter. The one Tie Ruo Nan was using right now was rank three grass puppet Gu.

The grassman puppet she created was short and thin, the leaves tightly weaved together, its one hand was holding a bamboo blade and another hand was raising a rattan shell shield.

This was rattan shell grass soldier! It possessed the strength to kill a rank one Gu Master!

Just one rattan shell grass soldier was no threat to Fang Yuan. But once their numbers increased, they became troublesome.

Rattan shell grass soldier were often used as cannon fodder to consume the opposing Gu Master’s primeval essence. Most importantly, using a rank four Gu Master’s strength, a dozen rattan shell soldiers could combine into a rank four grass sword elite soldier.

In this short moment, Tie Ruo Nan already had eighteen rattan shell grass soldiers beside her.

"Tie Ruo Nan..." Fang Yuan was filled with killing intent, his icy and sharp gaze firmly locked on to Tie Ruo Nan.

This woman possessed outstanding talents similar to Bai Ning Bing, and she had also investigated the affairs on Qing Mao mountain, she could not be left alive. Fang Yuan had already wanted to kill her back at Shang clan city, but the time had not been good then.

Tie Ruo Nan did not budge. She chose to believe in her partners and was still creating rattan shell grass soldiers.

"Block him!"

Tie Ao Kai flung his sleeves and a large swarm of golden needle mosquitoes flew out.

"Don’t even think of taking a step further!"

Tie Dao Ku rushed towards Fang Yuan while activating hand blade Gu and swift shadow Gu.

Fang Yuan laughed and directly clashed head-on without evading it.

Golden needle mosquitoes pierced tiny blood holes all over his body. Tie Dao Ku’s arms struck his chest and slashed out long wounds.

Fang Yuan howled with laughter, and stepped forward with his head high, blood flowing out from the wounds all over his body.

"He is wounded!" The Tie clan group was solemn.

If it were other enemies that were wounded, the Tie clan group would feel happy and relaxed, but Fang Yuan possessed bitter strength Gu; the heavier the injuries he suffered, the stronger his fighting strength became.

Green bull, horse, stone turtle!

Sure enough, three more beast phantoms appeared above Fang Yuan.

He opened the way with his huge strength that could not be blocked!

Tie Xian Hua rushed over and was casually sent flying by Fang Yuan. Tie Dao Ku helplessly retreated while Tie Ao Kai could only wander at the sidelines.

"Good, tyrant strength Gu!" Fang Yuan was about to reach Tie Ruo Nan, when Tie Ba Xiu shouted and stepped forward.

Bam!

There was a huge explosive sound from the collision of the two. Both were sent back seven to eight steps.

It was a draw!

Fang Yuan had four beast phantoms, but Tie Ba Xiu was not famous for nothing; his rank four tyrant strength Gu was inherited from the ancient strength path and possessed the strength of a overlord.

"Interesting, again!" Fang Yuan’s eyes shone brightly and he charged forward again.

Tie Ba Xiu greeted him head-on, firmly blocking his way.

Tie Dao Ku and others all let out a breath of turbid air, feeling relief as they looked at this scene.

"Little beast king is finally stopped."

"This is senior Tie Ba Xiu!"

"Fang Zheng is trapped within our tight encirclement, he is sure to die!"

The Tie clan group’s fighting spirit soared as Fang Yuan lost his momentum. In their eyes, he was like a bull that had fallen into trap, his threat had greatly decreased.

All of them joined in to attack.

All kinds of attacks like swarm of golden needle mosquitoes, flower rain and hand blades were thrown at Fang Yuan from all directions.

Fang Yuan’s skin was torn open, the wounds on his body was becoming more serious and he had no choice but to use golden shield Gu to defend. At the same time, he also used self-reliance Gu to heal his body.

The more he fought, the stronger he got, but Tie Ba Xiu was unexpectedly also the same!

He possessed rank five earth overlord Gu which allowed him to absorb an endless amount of strength from the earth, making his tyrant strength Gu stronger and stronger.

Tie Ba Xiu continuously activated earth overlord Gu, acquiring formless strength from the earth that empowered his tyrant strength Gu and continued to increase his strength.

The battle was in a stalemate.

Fang Yuan and Tie Ba Xiu fought intensely, beating each other up with punches and kicks; they were the center of the fight. Like human-shaped beasts, each of their moves carried heavy weight, and wherever the fight went, stones shattered and dust flew.

Howl!

Suddenly, there was a beast howl and a beast phantom appeared above Fang Yuan.

Lightning curled around it, its tusks were exposed outside and it gave off extremely violent aura - thunder boar phantom!

Tie Xian Hua who was blocking Fang Yuan’s path was suddenly sent flying.

Umbrella lotus Gu broke and its petals scattered in the air.

"Xian Hua, persevere!" Tie Mu rushed over and held Tie Xian Hua who was throwing up huge amounts of blood, and promptly began healing her.

At the same time, a group of rattan shell grass soldiers came over and blocked any gaps in the surroundings, defending these two.

By now, there were already close to a thousand rattan shell grass soldiers around Tie Ruo Nan and were already providing support in the battle. At the same time, she was continuously creating new grassman puppets.

Tie Ruo Nan walked the enslavement path and one could not let an enslavement path Gu Master like her have enough time to prepare.

Enslavement path Gu Masters were the best at fighting war of attrition, the longer the time passed, the more unfavorable Fang Yuan’s situation would be. The best answer was to directly murder the leader.

But this tactic would not work.

Fang Yuan was firmly entangled with Tie Ba Xiu now.

"A ferocious junior!" Tie Ba Xiu could not help but feel admiration towards Fang Yuan in his heart.

Even though he had already predicted it, the strength Fang Yuan displayed still shocked him.

He had thought Fang Yuan’s power was due to the set of strength path Gu with him. Inheriting the precious Gu worms of ancient strength path and moreover, their coordination was also exquisite.

However, as the battle progressed till this stage, Tie Ba Xiu could hardly dare to believe the shrewdness, ruthlessness, calmness and steadiness Fang Yuan displayed.

"This lad’s battle talent... if I was not personally fighting him, I would never believe that there would be such a monster! He needs to be killed, I must kill him. He is even more dangerous than what the intel said, if we give him time to grow, it will be a calamity for the righteous path!" Tie Ba Xiu was shocked and his killing intent soared even more.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 361: One vs Seven (2/4)

The battle carried on like wildfire.

"Little beast king is this terrifying! We have so many people on our side but still can’t catch him!" Tie Mu looked at the battle while healing Tie Xian Hua, his expressions fluctuating endlessly.

"His strength has improved by leaps and bounds, reaching this formidable stage now!" Tie Dao Ku looked at the battle in front, sensing he was already unable to interfere.

"No wonder he arrogantly blocked us, such battle prowess... but even if he is more ferocious, what can he do? Two fists cannot rival four hands , the battle has reached this stage and we still have seven people! This is the cooperative strength of a group! Fang Zheng, this battle is your loss, no doubt." Tie Ruo Nan observed the battle situation from a tall boulder.

In her sight, Tie Ba Xiu and five others surrounded Fang Yuan as a circle. And surrounding this was a large numbers of green ratten shell grass soldiers that had formed into a tight net.

At the same time, some rattan shell grass soldiers were combining with each other to form rank four grass sword elite soldiers.

"The outcome is a foregone conclusion. Little beast king, look at your surroundings! You are already heavily encircled, do you still want to persist obstinately? Let yourself be captured and maybe you can still have a way out!" Tie Xian Hua stood up and attempted to shake Fang Yuan’s fighting spirit.

The injuries on her were already healed by Tie Mu and she now had the strength to fight again.

"Fang Zheng, it is impossible for you to escape even if you grow wings 1 . This is the price for overestimating yourself!" Tie Mu added in from beside Tie Xian Hua.

"Eh? Impossible to escape?" Fang Yuan suddenly exerted strength and forced back Tie Ba Xiu. A mocking smile appeared on his face, "Is it true that I can’t escape even if I grow wings ? I’ll give it a try."

Whoosh!

There was a sharp pain as a pair of pitch black bone wings with metallic luster stretched out fully from Fang Yuan’s back!

"This is..."

"He really has...?"

"What!"

In front of Tie clan group’s amazed gazes, Fang Yuan flapped the wings and softly lifted off from the ground and continued to rise higher, flying into the air.

Tie Mu could never have expected his words to turn out to be a prophecy, and was baffled.

"The intel did not say little beast king had a flying type Gu... this is clearly a rank four flying type Gu, how did he get it?" Tie Xian Hua stared with her eyes wide open in bewilderment.

Flying type Gu were a type of movement Gu worms, they were rather expensive and also very rare, thus only few Gu Masters possessed them.

"Fang Zheng can fly?! No wonder he arrogantly intercepted us." Tie Dao Ku immediately realized.

Tie Ruo Nan’s expression also turned unsightly. Her ratten shell grass soldiers had no use against air targets. The moment Fang Yuan flew, an enormous hole immediately appeared in her painstakingly created layers of encirclement.

"What are you all panicking for!" Right at this moment, Tie Ba Xiu’s loud shout echoed in everyone’s ears.

This rank four upper stage strength path cultivator was a cornerstone of the Tie clan, and right now his eyes were bursting with bright light. His plentiful experiences allowed him to find out a weakness in Fang Yuan.

"How can flying type Gu be easy to control? By nature, humans walk on the ground, if they want to fly and soar freely, they need a lot of painstaking practice! And to battle while flying? It needs even more bitter training! Even Verdant Great Sun, son of the great Ren Zu, died while flying. How much time could it have been since this little beast king obtained his flying type Gu?"

Tie Ba Xiu words forced the Tie clan group to wake up and their spirits rose up again.

"That’s right, the intel did not mention Fang Zheng having any flying type Gu. He definitely obtained the bone wings very recently!"

"Flying needs a huge amount of practice, it is not something that can be picked up and used immediately. Little beast king is too naive."

"The main thing is we are really fortunate to have senior Tie Ba Xiu by our side."

Tie clan’s group regained their fighting spirit.

"My long distance methods are lacking, you guys attack and take him down. Fang Zheng, you made an extremely stupid move! If you had continued to battle steadily, you could have still lasted for some time, but now you have trapped yourself." Tie Ba Xiu shouted loudly.

"Eh? You think so...?" Fang Yuan smiled indifferently, a look of pity in his eyes.

"Little beast king, you won’t be proud for long. Golden needle mosquito... huh." Tie Ao Kai wanted to attack when suddenly his expression turned stiff.

In the battle just before, his golden needle mosquito Gu were already exhausted.

It was all because he saw Fang Yuan not defending against the golden needle mosquitoes’ attack, thus using it readily. The battle was also very intense which made him forget the intense expenditure of the golden needle mosquitoes.

"Not good, my star arrow Gu has already been destroyed by little beast king!"

"Damn it, I only have two flower rain Gu remaining...."

A similar situation played out on, more or less, everybody.

Tie Ba Xiu’s heart sank, it turned out little beast king had already been ready and had all along been hiding his schemes deep within his heart.

"It’s okay, I have blade qi Gu and can do long distance fight!" Tie Dao Ku stood up.

"I have snowball Gu with me and can make little beast king suffer some consequences." Another Tie clan Gu Master also stood up.

Many hands provide great strength ; there were seven people in this Tie clan group and thus they had plentiful methods. Even if Fang Yuan had aimed at this, he was not able to wipe out all their methods.

"Little beast king, get down here!" Tie Dao Ku sent out a ray of blade qi.

The blade qi whistled towards Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan evaded it with a light flap of his wings.

Three snowballs moved in to block Fang Yuan’s retreating path.

Fang Yuan folded up his left wing and made an agile whirling movement, safely passing through the gaps between the snowballs.

Tie Ba Xiu’s heart thumped at this scene and a bad feeling rose up: He evaded them so effortlessly, was that luck?

Soon, the Tie clan group felt stunned and helpless as Fang Yuan agilely and confidently evaded countless attacks.

"He has such a good control over flying type Gu!"

"Damn it, our attacks simply can’t hit him."

"My primeval essence is already running dry, blade qi Gu’s consumption is huge. It seems we can only let Fang Zheng escape this time."

The Tie clan group’s attacks gradually became sparse.

"Little beast king, I can’t help but admire you, you are indeed a great talent. Today, we made it easy for you to retreat, that is also because of your talent. But watch out for the next time we meet." Tie Ruo Nan warned in a heavy voice.

Fang Yuan seemed to have heard the most ridiculous joke in the world and started laughing loudly.

"What are you laughing at?" The ominous feeling in Tie Ba Xiu’s heart became even more intense...

"Hahaha, of course I am laughing at your naivety. Why would I run? The real battle has only begun!" After saying this, Fang Yuan activated all-out effort Gu and strength qi Gu at the same time.

Green bull, horse, stone turtle, white elephant and black python; five beast phantoms turned solid and slammed down.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

In an instant, the battlefield shook, stones crumbled and dust flew everywhere. Ratten shell grass soldiers were sent flying or destroyed and the Tie clan group retreated madly.

"Attack! We can’t be taking hits passive, we must give him no time to take control of the battlefield!" Tie Ba Xiu roared furiously and punched at Fang Yuan from afar with his bowl-sized fists.

A formless majestic fist energy exploded out violently and actually broke the sound of sound, creating a sonic boom!

However, Fang Yuan flapped his wings and rose higher, easily dodging the attack.

Tie Ba Xiu helplessly sighed. His fist energy might be a long range attack but the distance it could reach was short.

He was a strength path Gu Master, this path had always lacked in long range attack methods. Fang Yuan could be said to be an oddity because his strength qi Gu originated from the ancient qi path.

Upon Tie Ba Xiu’s reminder, other Tie clan Gu Masters warded off the beast phantoms and started making aerial attacks.

However, Fang Yuan displayed unmatchable flying ability!

Occasionally, he was like a butterfly, dancing between the attacks and agilely evading them. Occasionally, he was like a goshawk flying towards the sky, forcing people to watch helplessly. Occasionally, he would make arcs with his bone wings like a swift. And occasionally, he would hover and wait for an opportunity before moving, like a dragonfly.

Most of the attacks were dodged by him. And a few attacks that managed to strike his body were resisted by the defensive light of golden shield Gu.

"This is impossible! How could his flying capability be so superb!"

"This level of control isn’t inferior to Lan Mei He, Hong Fei Yu or Fei You Wang!!"

Lan Mei He, Hong Fei Yu and Fei You Wang were experts in flying and were already famed throughout Southern Border.

The Tie clan group were stunned and horrified.

Fang Yuan constantly activated Gu worms to attack to his heart’s content. The earlier battle was only setting up this current situation.

Tie Ruo Nan’s expression was ashen.

She had painstakingly created so many ratten shell grass soldiers but they could only passively take hits now! Moreover, it had wasted a lot of her primeval essence!

"Die!" Fang Yuan hovered for a long while before he suddenly saw an opportunity and pounced down.

"Tie Mu, careful!"

"Dodge quickly!"

Tie Mu heard the others’ fearful shouts and looked up in a flurry.

The dazzling sunlight pierced his eyes first of all. Then he saw a black figure pouncing down like a goshawk.

The intense whistling sounds immediately filled his ears.

An enormous feeling of crisis filled his heart.

"Not good, run!" This thought had just emerged in his mind when Fang Yuan’s hands grabbed his shoulders.

Beast phantom retract!

Fang Yuan’s strength gushed up and he pulled apart his arms, ruthlessly ripping apart the arms.

Blood spurted out like a waterfall and Tie Mu’s two limbs were torn apart from the shoulders.

A violent pain drowned Tie Mu’s mind and he roared furiously, his handsome face twisted into something terrifying.

Bam!

Fang Yuan again exerted strength and smacked his hands; Tie Mu’s head was forcibly burst open like a watermelon!

In an instant, blood and brain matter sprayed on Fang Yuan’s body, face and hair. It was either the grey brain matter or red blood, even the eyeballs stuck on Fang Yuan’s clothes.

The dense bloody stench assaulted the nose. If it were any other person, they might have vomited on the spot, but Fang Yuan smelled it like it was the world’s most fragrant smell. He was enjoying this and there was even a very intense excitement in the depths of his heart!

"Death, such a sweet fragrance!"

"Kill, kill!"

"Let the flower of life bloom brightly in the blood."

He threw his head back and roared, actually improvising a poem.

"Tie Mu!" Seeing Tie Mu’s death, the Tie clan group looked with furious eyes, the fire of their fury seemingly able to burn the sky and ocean!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 362: One vs Seven (3/4)

"You killed Tie Mu, I want you dead!" Tie Xian Hua raised the umbrella lotus Gu, shouting as she pounced.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, after waiting for Tie Xian Hua to get close, he turned his body quickly, and opened his wings, as he moved elegantly and brushed past Tie Xian Hua.

Tie Xian Hua charged for five to six steps before stopping.

Her beautiful face was in a daze. The umbrella lotus Gu fell on the ground, as a trace of blood slowly showed on her neck, before blood poured out of her like a fountain, sending her head flying as she was beheaded.

"Xian Hua!!" Tie clan’s group shouted pitifully, but it could not bring her back to life.

Tie Ba Xiu quickly came over.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, spreading his wings and flying into the sky.

Tie Ba Xiu was obstructed by the ratten shell grass soldiers, although he created a path for himself to charge out, how could he match Fang Yuan’s speed?

Fang Yuan flew in the sky, after some indiscriminate dive bombs, he flew towards Tie Ruo Nan.

"Oh no, his target is young master!" Tie Dao Ku quickly reinforced her.

Fang Yuan suddenly changed directions, landing quickly in front of Tie Dao Ku.

"Die!" Fang Yuan had a cold expression, exchanging blows with Tie Dao Ku, not dodging or evading at all, showing his fierce nature.

Tie Dao Ku was also a man with great courage, facing Fang Yuan head on.

Swift shadow Gu! Hand blade Gu! Iron hand Gu! Consecutive slash Gu! Quick battle gale! Blade qi Gu!

He was an attack type Gu Master in the first place, as he attacked with all his strength, his arms moved like wind as blade shadows flashed quickly.

Fang Yuan activated the golden shield Gu, but it broke quickly under his barrage.

Even with bronze skin’s defense, Fang Yuan’s skin was torn open as blood and flesh flew out.

"Just like this, hold on!" The others quickly changed their directions, going to assist him.

"Oh no, my primeval essence is used up!" Suddenly, Tie Dao Ku’s attacks stopped.

He was a rank three Gu Master, and had been battling intensely. Now, after a flurry of attacks, his primeval essence dried up.

Without primeval essence, Tie Dao Ku turned from a tiger to a sick cat.

Fang Yuan smiled, grabbing his neck and twisted.

Crack, Tie Dao Ku’s neck was easily broken by Fang Yuan. A blade expert, Tie Ruo Nan’s capable general, brave and courageous, lost his life here.

"No!!!" Tie Ruo Nan saw this and her eyes turned red with sadness and anger, as the flames of anger was ignited in her, attempting to burn her into ashes.

Ratten shell grass soldiers, under her command, gathered into a green tidal wave, moving and attempting to engulf Fang Yuan.

Thousands of grass soldier puppets, having strength in numbers, they were already a threat to Fang Yuan.

Tie Ruo Nan’s eyes, nose, and mouth was bleeding, such intensive manipulation of her Gu caused great strain on her mind, and it started affecting her body.

"Ruo Nan, don’t be rash! Do not get engulfed by your own anger!" Tie Ba Xiu saw this and reminded.

But Tie Ruo Nan had lost her reasoning, she had watched her friends die in front of her, this was a huge stimulation to her, it even brought back the pain from back when her father died.

"She is still too young." Fang Yuan sneered, flapping his wings and flying up.

The imposing ratten shell grass soldiers missed their target, as they collapsed together, squeezing into a lump. Not only was their formation a mess, it even caused Tie Ba Xiu and others to have no space to move.

"This is the weakness of a team! Once the cooperation breaks down, you yourself will be the biggest burden to them. Hehehe... such specific allocation of duty also caused the members to be overly reliant on others. Relying on yourself instead of others, that is the truth of the world!" Fang Yuan flew high in the sky, looking at the battlefield emotionlessly, as he moved his gaze towards Tie Ao Kai.

Tie Ao Kai was an investigative Gu master, since the start of the battle, he had been moving around the outskirts.

His speed was fast, he could easily run away and seek reinforcements, he was very crucial to Fang Yuan’s plans to eliminate them all. He had to die at all costs!

Seeing Fang Yuan fly towards him, Tie Ao Kai’s face was aghast.

Fang Yuan was bathed in blood, his black hair, eyes, and wings, made him look like a demonic god incarnate. Ruthless and courageous, but also cruel and devious.

Tie Mu, Tie Xian Hua, and Tie Dao Ku had all died in his hands, even Tie Ba Xiu could do nothing to him.

Facing such a strong foe, how could he be Fang Yuan’s match?

The swarm of ratten shell grass soldier army was once Tie Ao Kai’s reassurance, but now it was a cold mockery towards him.

"Escape, I have to escape to San Cha mountain and report to the four elders of Tie clan!" Tie Ao Kai was scared, giving himself a reason to retreat as he immediately left the battlefield, running rapidly.

"Don’t run, come back now!" Tie Ba Xiu’s gaze was on Tie Ao Kai as he ran into the forest, shouting loudly.

If Tie Ao Kai stayed behind and was united with them, he might have a chance of survival. But he ran away alone, having little primeval essence and low cultivation, how could he be faster than Fang Yuan by running with his two legs, restricted by the terrain?

As expected, in a moment, Fang Yuan carried his head and flew back.

"AHHHH! Gu Yue Fang Zheng! Gu Yue Fang Zheng! You are dead, you are dead meat! You killed my Tie clansmen, you heinous being, there is no salvation for you. Don’t run if you have guts, what kind of man are you to run away from me. You have no balls you coward, come fight with me, I will tear you to shreds, and grind your bones into ashes!" Tie Ba Xiu was extremely furious, giving off a thunderous scream.

Fang Yuan chuckled, not falling for the taunt: "Heinous? Heh, I’ve killed so many people in the past, why didn’t you call me heinous back then? Because I killed a Tie clansmen, that makes me a heinous villain? Hehe, if that is so, then I love such a sin, let me kill a few more and add a few more sins to my name."

Saying so, Fang Yuan spread his wings and continued to divebomb, killing the rest of the Tie clan Gu Masters.

Tie Ba Xiu watched with bloodshed eyes, almost vomiting blood out of anger. But he was trapped by the ratten shell grass soldiers, and his speed was no match for Fang Yuan, watching all these outstanding Tie clan youngsters slaughtered in front of him, losing their lives.

Very quickly, in the battlefield, only Tie Ruo Nan and Tie Ba Xiu were left.

"Die, I want you dead!" Tie Ruo Nan’s eyes were bloodshot as she gritted her teeth, chanting.

She had activated the ratten shell grass soldiers to her limit, her body oozing with blood, combined with her crazed expression, it gave people chills.

"Ruo Nan, calm down, calm down now." Tie Ba Xiu rushed to her side, shaking her shoulders. But Tie Ruo Nan had no reaction towards it, staring at Fang Yuan with deep hatred.

Below Fang Yuan, the ratten shell grass soldiers had gathered together, tightly like a lump. But they could not hit Fang Yuan, thus acting like lost flies.

Tie Ba Xiu sighed helplessly, he had great experience, he knew that this battle was extremely impactful to Tie Ruo Nan, causing her mental state to breakdown, filled by hatred and fury, she was almost taken over by her anger, and could provide no assistance in the short run.

Fang Yuan flapped his wings from time to time, causing his body to remain in the air.

Tie clan only had two people left, but Fang Yuan stopped his attacks.

That is because, among these two, Tie Ruo Nan was like a crazy b*tch, while Tie Ba Xiu had great battle strength, he was a tough opponent. If Fang Yuan got distracted, he would receive great injuries from him.

Looking at Tie Ruo Nan, Fang Yuan’s gaze shone with consideration.

"Tie Ruo Nan has already lost her reasoning in this state. Why don’t I keep these ratten shell grass soldiers here to erode her remaining mental energy. After her mind breaks down, I will take her life. Mm... no, there is a better way. She is the Tie clan young master, Tie Ba Xiu has to protect her. I should use this Tie Ruo Nan to indirectly attack Tie Ba Xiu! If I can kill him, that would be the best."

Tie Ba Xiu was an established expert, rank four upper stage cultivation, and due to the earth overlord Gu, his battle strength surpassed normal rank four peak stage Gu Masters. He could be said to be Fang Yuan’s most powerful foe after leaving Qing Mao mountain.

Facing such attacks, even if Fang Yuan used all his strength, he could not win.

His only weakness was a lack of long range attacks, but that was not a fatal flaw.

But, battles change due to circumstances, even if Tie Ba Xiu had no flaws, right now, he had someone he had to protect right beside him.

Unknowingly, Tie Ruo Nan had become the hostage that Fang Yuan was using to threaten him!

"If I can kill Tie Ba Xiu, even Yi Huo would have to feel threatened by me. But, I have to observe the situation, we cannot drag this. Although these seven Tie clansmen chose a hidden route here, the four Tie clan old-timers might come to reinforce them." Fang Yuan thought in his heart, reminding himself.

He had a careful, vigilant, calm, and rational nature. He did not panic in dangerous situations, while not arrogant when he had advantages.

The four old-timers of Tie clan had a combination killer move, called limitless search and lock. If they plant the lock Gu on the Gu Master, no matter where he goes, they can find him. It is the number one capturing method. In his previous life, even Kong Ri Tian was a victim to this killer move, causing the downfall of a demonic expert.

Although Fang Yuan had the bone wings Gu, and could fly anywhere he wanted, free and unrestrained while having the capabilities to attack or escape, all according to his will. But once he was planted with the lock Gu, no matter where he flew to, above the heavens or above the sea, he would be captured.

There is always someone who can bring you down, balance exists in everything , although the bone wings Gu was good, it was restricted by other methods.

The only reason why this battle was so successful was because Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories, and knew everything about these seven from Tie clan. Secondly, he had destroyed and expended their long range methods from the battle before.

His thoughts only lasted a second in real time.

After deciding, Fang Yuan took out his primeval stone to recover his primeval essence.

The aperture’s primeval sea level started rising again.

At the same time, he inspected his own body, using the self-reliance Gu to heal some critical injuries.

"Damn it!" Seeing this, Tie Ba Xiu’s heart was heavy, like a mountain rock was weighing on it.

If little beast king continued to attack, he would be happy instead, but right now Fang Yuan took his time to rest, not indulging in the pleasure of having the upper hand, instead stopping his attacks to recover his primeval essence and heal his injuries!

"This little beast king, he is so young, how can he be so scheming and calm?!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 363: One vs Seven (4/4)

Fang Yuan’s composure made Tie Ba Xiu shocked and cold.

When the battle started, Tie Ba Xiu had absolutely not expected he would be in such a situation and at a disadvantage.

But now, this established expert, a cornerstone of Tie clan, had no choice but to admit he was in a dangerous situation.

The culprit that led to this situation was this young man in front of him!

He fought against seven people by himself and forced them to reach this stage.

How in the world did he accomplish this?

"From the moment little beast king appeared, his actions and words were all unfathomable and unpredictable traps, luring the seven of us right into it. Even more unexpectedly, he holds a flying type Gu and possesses such skilled flying techniques. With his flying ability, he has taken the initiative, able to retreat and advance as he pleases, eventually leading to this situation, a one-sided slaughter."

Tie Ba Xiu felt his heart turn cold as he recalled the situation.

How did Fang Yuan possess such incredible flying techniques, that question was no longer the most terrifying thing.

"The truly terrifying thing about this lad is his head. How could he have such a meticulous scheming ability at his age? He is simply a monster! If he used it for the righteous path, he would become the most brilliant rising star of the righteous path. Unfortunately, he chose to use his intelligence for the evil demonic path. This is a disaster to the people of the world!!"

Tie Ba Xiu had a premonition, one day this young man in front of him would become a calamity to the whole southern border. At that time, blood would flow into a river and dye the land red, and an uncountable number of living beings would fall victim to his vicious attacks!

"No, my current situation is very dangerous. Tie Ruo Nan can’t fight and my long range attacks are inadequate. Little beast king however, can fly, thus attacking or retreating as he desires. Retreat, we must hurry to San Cha mountain and join with the four old-timers!"

Although Tie Ba Xiu had been famous for a long time, his heart was steady and was not misled by fame and profits.

He could not display all his strength, but under the continuous empowerment of earth overlord Gu, tyrant strength Gu was becoming stronger and stronger, surpassing the limits of Fang Yuan.

But Tie Ba Xiu was not drunken in his powers, with his experience, he could see the situation he was in. Continuing to fight only ends in disaster, the most sensible choice was to retreat!

He did not care that he was forced to retreat by a junior. Even if he lost all his reputation, it was better than dying.

"What’s more, big brother Xue Leng, I can’t let your child die in front of me!" As he thought of this, Tie Ba Xiu became decisive and dragged Tie Ruo Nan to retreat.

"Hmm? Running away!" Fang Yuan’s suddenly shone with severity.

He felt the situation was problematic.

Retreating was truly the most sensible choice for Tie Ba Xiu. This place was near to San Cha mountain and if they managed to attract the four old-timers of Tie clan, it would be Fang Yuan’s turn to retreat.

"Kill!" Fang Yuan naturally did not want to see such a situation happening.

He pointed his hand and activated his all-out effort Gu along with strength qi Gu; beast phantoms turned into solid forms and landed on the ground, blocking Tie Ba Xiu.

However, Tie Ba Xiu was strong, his punches and kicks seem to whistle like the wind and cackle like lightning, scattering these beast phantoms.

Fang Yuan suddenly changed the attack target, the beast phantoms all moved towards Tie Ruo Nan.

"Despicable!" Tie Ba Xiu cursed and moved to protect Tie Ruo Nan.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly at this, if Tie Ba Xiu gave up on Tie Ruo Nan and escaped by himself, Fang Yuan would not be able to stop him. However, Tie Ba Xiu was protecting Tie Ruo Nan, this was seeking his own doom.

Because he was a Gu Master that specialized in offense, not defense.

By protecting Tie Ruo Nan, he was sacrificing himself, tying his own hands and feet, fighting his enemy’s specialty with his weakness.

One side escaped and other pursued, the situation was in a stalemate.

No matter how Tie Ba Xiu cursed and provoked, Fang Yuan only flew in the air and used beast phantoms to attack.

Tie Ba Xiu could not hit Fang Yuan and thus was passively taking a beating. Moreover, there were light injuries on his body while protecting Tie Ruo Nan.

"He is only at rank four middle stage, why does he have so much primeval essence?" Tie Ba Xiu was starting to feel desperate, he did not know Fang Yuan not only had liquor worm, but also heavenly essence treasure lotus; in terms of primeval essence, he could completely match rank four upper stage.

Fang Yuan attacked furiously, sending attacks without an end. If a beast phantom was destroyed, he would immediately send another.

Beast phantoms attacked one after another, if one fell, another arrived. Especially, the occasional thunder boar and rock crocodile phantom which could threaten Tie Ruo Nan.

Tie Ba Xiu was getting exhausted and was slowly unable to endure the attacks, his strength decreasing rapidly.

"Why hasn’t the four old-timers arrived yet!" Tie Ba Xiu kept on running and was already near San Cha mountain, but he still did not see any signs of the four old-timers.

The path they chose was too hidden. And to prevent news from leaking out, they had intentionally departed two days earlier.

These setup instead became an obstruction now for Tie Ba Xiu.

Tie Ba Xiu was very passive now, the injuries on his body continuously accumulated and turned from light to heavy injuries.

Beast phantoms were starting to pose more of a threat to him and it was becoming hard for him move forward!

Tie Ruo Nan had become the greatest burden to him; she kept on struggling and Tie Ba Xiu had no choice but to knock her unconscious and run while carrying her in his arm.

"We are already close to the foot of the mountain, I just need to hold on for a while." Tie Ba Xiu’s body was shaking and his vision was already a scene of blurriness.

"Is he really going to escape? Damn it!" Fang Yuan’s face was gloomy as he saw this from the air. He started making more ferocious and continuous attacks, his offense surging like a tidal wave.

As they were near San Cha mountain, Gu Masters started appearing the surroundings.

"There is a battle going on, it is little beast king!"

"Heavens, did I see wrong? The one being pursued seems to be ’present age overlord’, a cornerstone of Tie clan, Tie Ba Xiu!"

"Little beast king is defying heaven, he is actually chasing the rank four upper stage Tie Ba Xiu!"

...

The Gu Masters that saw the battle were all flabbergasted and incomparably shocked.

Some righteous Gu Masters felt their hearts go cold when they saw Tie Ba Xiu being chased, running away like a pathetic dog who fell into the water.

"Big brother Li Xian, why has little beast king still not appeared? We have been waiting here for such a long time, is your information reliable?" From a dark corner, Hu Mei Er looked at the purple light barrier in front of her and yawned in boredom.

In the light barrier formed by iron cabinet Gu, Bai Ning Bing was still trapped by the four old-timers of Tie clan.

"There is no problem with my information, let’s wait a bit more." Li Xian said that but he muttered in his heart, ’This should not be happening, I have already told the news of Tie clan’s reinforcements to him. How could he still restrain himself? Could it be, he is really going to leave Bai Ning Bing in the lurch?"

If little beast king really did not appear, such heartlessness made even Li Xian terrified when he thought of it. But if he came to rescue her, both sides would suffer, and the benefits in such a chaotic battlefield would be huge.

Just as the two were talking in whispers, they heard some clamor.

"What is going on?" Hu Mei Er puzzledly turned her head to look, but the moment she saw the sight, her puzzled expression quickly became sluggish and after a while, it turned into shock!

The person whom she had been painfully waiting for appeared and even appeared while ostentatiously flying in the air.

Wait a second...

The person that little beast king is chasing looks a bit familiar?

"Wha... what the f*ck, it is Tie Ba Xiu. The ’present age overlord’ from Tie clan is being chased! So little beast king went to intercept the reinforcement!" Li Xian stared tongue-tied at this pursuit and could not help but curse.

At the same time as his realization, he felt extreme shock and bewilderment.

"Little beast king actually went to intercept the Tie clan reinforcement, how can he have such guts? Is he crazy! No, he is not crazy, he won the fight and is now chasing Tie Ba Xiu!"

Tie Ba Xiu was rank four upper stage but his battle prowess surpassed that level, even common rank four peak stage Gu Masters were not his match. Even on San Cha mountain, among the five rank four peak stage Gu Masters, only Yi Huo would be able to contend with this ’present age overlord’.

However, right now, Tie Ba Xiu was actually being chased by little beast king and in such a sorry state.

"Oh god, am I hallucinating?" Someone grabbed his head and looked with an incredulous expression.

"This world is too crazy, it is changing so quickly..." Someone muttered with a dull expression in his eyes.

"Fortunately, I haven’t gone against little beast king!" Li Xian felt fortunate, but immediately felt fear, "No, I still need to be cautious when dealing with Fang Zheng, this guy cannot be assessed using common sense."

"In such a short time, he advanced to rank four middle stage and is also able to fly?!" Hu Mei Er kept her hand over her heart, extremely shocked at this abnormal growth speed of Fang Yuan.

"Demonic path’s scoundrel!"

"Quick, we need to rescue them, that is Tie Ba Xiu!!"

Tie clan’s four old-timers also sensed the situation and immediately revoked iron cabinet Gu and hurried to rescue. As for the trapped Bai Ning Bing or whatever, they stopped caring.

But unfortunately, they were still late by a step.

"I was still a step too slow..." Tie Ba Xiu felt extremely bitter, his eyes were blurry, the pain from the wounds all over his body had already made him numb, and the heavy injuries had already increased so much that he was in a near death state now.

He protected Tie Ruo Nan all the way and did not let even one attack reach her.

"Such a pity that this little beast king did not come down to fight in close combat. Otherwise, I would have killed him!" Tie Ba Xiu felt very regretful, he had a trump card that he had not revealed. However, Fang Yuan acted cautiously the whole time, never flying down and only attacking from the air.

"Ba Xiu, hold on!"

"We are coming to reinforce you."

The four old-timers of Tie clan shouted together and rushed over rapidly.

"Hahaha, you were just a step away, Tie Ba Xiu, you have failed!" Fang Yuan threw his head back and laughed loudly, a rock crocodile phantom fell down with an explosive sound, sending Tie Ba Xiu rolling on the ground.

Tie clan’s four old-timers were rushing over and were extremely near, but this small gap was like the distance between clouds and mud.

"It is over." Fang Yuan’s expression was cold as he pointed and made the fatal attack.

"No, not yet. Iron cabinet Gu!" Tie Ba Xiu used his final remaining energy and placed his palm on Tie Ruo Nan’s back.

A square shaped iron cabinet quickly formed and tightly sealed Tie Ruo Nan.

Beast phantom attacked, ripping Tie Ba Xiu into pieces, but the iron cabinet was firm as ever and Tie Ruo Nan who was inside was unscathed.

At the crucial moment, Tie Ba Xiu gave his final chance of survival to Tie Ruo Nan.

"Ba Xiu!" Tie clan’s four old-timers howled in anger and grief, they reached the scene but were late by a step.

"Little beast king, our Tie clan will not rest till you die!" The four old-timers stared at Fang Yuan, wishing they could bite him to death.

"Eh? Is that so... I fought against seven Tie clansmen this time, six including Tie Ba Xiu lost their lives by my hands. You four old-timers also want to deal with me? Then fly over and fight me." Fang Yuan laughed coldly, a dangerous look appeared in his eyes that made people avoid his gaze.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Heavens, little beast king fought against seven, but actually won!"

"Even ’present age overlord’ lost his life."

"The number one rising star, he is this generation’s number one star of the demonic path!"

There was an uproar in the crowd, many discussed and whispered to each other.

Tie clan’s four old-timers released their aura and started attacking one after another. However, Fang Yuan flapped his wings and lightly evaded them, his nimbleness causings gasps of amazement in the crowd.

"You old-timers, I have still not settled the score with you for trapping me." Bai Ning Bing slowly walked over with a grim expression. She casted a glance at Fang Yuan; her gaze hiding complex feelings.

In these days when she was trapped, Fang Yuan had grown so much!

Not only had his cultivation advanced to middle stage, he also held such skilled flying techniques. Looking at this control, Southern Border now had one more flying expert, how did he manage to accomplish all this?

Bai Ning Bing had once thought of training her flying skills. However, the matter regarding flying was too troublesome; the amount of practice needed was huge and at the same time, it was very time-consuming and needed a long period of grinding. The amount of energy spent was huge but would provide little results in a short period. Bai Ning Bing thus did not do it.

She had never expected Fang Yuan to be able to train his flying ability to such a level without any signs or words!

This was surpassing all common sense!

"Could it be that he had some mystical encounter in three kings inheritance?" Bai Ning Bing naturally considered this point.

In truth, there was no need for Fang Yuan to explain it, many people would connect his performance to three kings inheritance.

With Tie clan’s four old-timers revoking iron cabinet Gu, Bai Ning Bing was free.

Now, with the coordination of Fang and Bai, the situation had become extremely dangerous.

The four old-timers were on their guard, tightly protecting Tie Ruo Nan’s iron cabinet Gu in the center and guarding against Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

Fang Yuan felt somewhat unresigned as he looked at the iron cabinet Gu.

Tie Ba Xiu had failed at the last moment while retreating. And Fang Yuan had also failed at last step while chasing them because he was not able to claim Tie Ruo Nan’s life. No doubt, she was a threat.

"But without Tie Ruo Nan, I could not have killed Tie Ba Xiu so easily. At this point, I can only let it go." Fang Yuan revealed increasing killing intent on outside, but his battle intent was already dispersing.

He had been engaged in intense battle and the primeval essence in his aperture was already inadequate, while Tie clan’s four old-timers were in perfect condition.

At the same time, there were too many spectators, many wolves were preying in the dark and gain some benefits. Even Li Xian had such plans let alone others.

’It is time to stop.’ Fang Yuan heaved a sigh inwardly before shouting in a clear voice, "Tie clan’s four old-timers, my partner killed one of your clansmen and you trapped her till now. I have killed six of your clansmen, how long will you trap me?"

Tie clan’s four old-timers’ eyes twitched when they heard this clear provocation.

"Little beast king, don’t go too far! You killed our Tie clansmen, killed Elder Ba Xiu and chased Tie clan’s young master; you are already our Tie clan’s sworn enemy. I hereby swear, I shall use the rest of my life and pay any price to capture you and throw you inside Demon Suppression Tower, and make sure you suffer endless torment and punishment!" The head of the four old-timers roared in anger.

Although he said so, he did not dare to act rashly.

The battle prowess little beast king revealed greatly shocked him. And if you add Bai Ning Bing on top of that...

"Hahaha, alright. Since it is so, then I shall also view Tie clan as my sworn enemy! From now on, as long as it is a Tie clansman, I will kill one if I see one and will kill two if I see two!" Fang Yuan laughed wildly before flapping his wings and leaving.

Under the disappointed gazes of many Gu Masters that had ulterior motives, he left of his own accord.

Bai Ning Bing also left.

The outcome of this battle spread over the whole San Cha mountain at lightning speed.

What kind of place was San Cha mountain at present?

It was a place where three kings inheritance appeared; a place which was paid attention to by countless clans, righteous path members and demonic path members.

Soon after that, the battle report of Fang Yuan taking on seven Tie clansmen by himself and killing Tie Ba Xiu was spread throughout the whole Southern Border.

Fang Yuan’s reputation soared!

...

"This kid actually killed Tie Ba Xiu? Is this news reliable?"

In Yan clan, when young master Yan Jun heard this report from his subordinate, he almost did not dare to believe his ears.

Who was Tie Ba Xiu?

He had been famous for a long time and was known as the ’present age overlord’. He possessed earth overlord Gu and had a fighting strength that surpassed normal rank four peak stage!

He was a cornerstone of Tie clan, one of the top clans, and was an expert who could take charge of a region by himself.

But he was actually chased and killed by little beast king Fang Zheng, a junior that only had rank four middle stage cultivation?

"This little beast king can surpass realms to battle and killed Tie Ba Xiu. Who in the world is he? I have never heard of him before." Yan Jun asked with a frown.

His subordinate quickly reported: "Young master, you entered an Immemorial Era’s phantom path inheritance and was in closed cultivation for five years, not knowing about Fang Zheng is also normal. This person is only around twenty years old and is a genius rising star of the demonic path that only came to fame in the recent years..."

...

"Little beast king Fang Zheng? The youngsters these days are really terrifying! The new waves are constantly replacing the old waves, while the old waves die by the shore. Tsk tsk..."

In a forest, Feng Tian Yu slowly walked forward while thinking of the news he had just received, mixed within his sighs was a trace of fiery passion.

"I heard the reason little beast king could grasp flying methods and grow up so quick was because he received some benefits from three kings inheritance! Three kings inheritance..."

Feng Tian Yu thought of this and felt a desire to immediately rush towards San Cha mountain.

He was a famous refinement path Gu Master in Southern Border. King Xin Inheritance perfectly matched him.

...

"Fang Zheng actually fought against seven and killed six Tie clansmen including Tie Ba Xiu?!" As one of the five great experts of Shang clan, the moment Elder Yi Huo came out from inheritance, he received this incredulous news.

Tie Ba Xiu’s fighting strength was equal to his. Fang Yuan was able to kill Tie Ba Xiu, does that mean Fang Yuan could similarly kill him?

How could this be?

But the cold hard truth overruled all doubts and claims!

After Yi Huo found out even more details, he slowly came to an understanding: "So he has learnt flying and can use it in battle. No wonder he was able to fight against seven and kill Tie Ba Xiu..."

To Gu Masters, grasping flying methods and being able to use them in battle meant their fighting strength would soar qualitatively.

Humans were creatures that walked on ground and did not have wings. Even Ren Zu did not have ability to fly. Being able to fly by itself was a miracle in defiance of heaven.

If one could fly, then the encirclement tactics on the ground would possess almost no threat.

The wide sky would become the stage that allowed the flying Gu Masters to travel freely. They could attack and defend, advance and retreat; firmly grasping control of the battle.

There were famous flying Gu Masters in Southern Border; Fei You Wang, Lan Mei He and Hong Fei Yu. They were feared by people, battling with them was extremely troublesome and no one wished to make an enemy out of them.

Yi Huo had deep impression of flying Gu Masters.

Because there was a perfect example near him, that was Wei Yang.

Wei Yang was called light swordsman, he could evade as fast as light and quick as lightning. He was also a flying Gu Master!

His aptitude was inadequate and only had rank three peak stage cultivation, but he was able to become a major figure of Shang clan, one of the five experts and was equally famous as Yi Huo, a rank four peak stage Gu Master!

Once, Yi Huo had felt it was a disgrace to be listed together with Wei Yang in the five experts, thus he challenged him to a fight. The result was depressing for him, Wei Yang moved around the battlefield unobstructed, and he could simply do nothing to him!

"If we only look at flying speed, Wei Yang can be said to be the number one in Southern Border, little beast king cannot compare to him. Recently with clan leader’s help, Wei Yang has advanced to rank four..."

Yi Huo felt the pressure in his mind increasing by a layer as he thought of this.

The five great experts of Shang clan were not a united group, they each had their respective factions and were always contending against each other.

Yi Huo accepted the command to come to San Cha mountain in order to establish great merits and become a clansman of Shang clan, obtaining the resources within Shang clan’s living treasure door and advance one step to become a rank five Gu Master!

"Fang Yuan’s battle strength increased greatly with the ability to fly while that Tie Ba Xiu is weak at long range battle and was also concerned about Tie Ruo Nan, thus being killed by little beast king. If we talk of true battle prowess, Tie Ba Xiu surpasses little beast king. It is a pity I cannot recruit little beast king anymore!" Yi Huo felt extremely regretful when he understood this.

The battle prowess Fang Yuan displayed might not equal his, but with flying methods, Yi Huo also could not do anything to him.

Forcing little beast king simply would not work. Instead, it would ruin his reputation since Fang Yuan was Shang clan’s purple thorn esteemed guest.

Besides this, there was also another reason: Tie clan.

Little beast king had now serious offended Tie clan!

The losses to Tie clan were huge and they would certainly deal with little beast king, there was no room for compromising. Moreover, Fang Yuan proclaimed in an extremely arrogant tone in front of everyone that he would kill Tie clansmen if he saw them.

If Yi Huo really recruited little beast king, it would be equal to offending Tie clan.

Tie clan was also a top clan like Shang clan, a major party of the righteous path. At that time, Yi Huo would have to endure pressure from both Tie clan and Shang clan’s higher-ups.

...

"Little beast king definitely grasped some secrets of the three kings inheritance! Otherwise, how could he suddenly gain such profound flying techniques?!" Li Xian was sitting on his seat, his eyes narrowed to a slit, sharp light flickering endlessly inside them.

He had all the details regarding Fang Yuan. However, Fang Yuan suddenly grasping flying methods was simply inconceivable and broke all common sense.

"Even if he bitterly trained in Shang clan city, it is not possible that there were not even a single trace of information about it. Also, he was only there for a few years, how could he have such such a powerful flying tool? Could it be..." Hu Mei Er also pondered from the side.

"Three kings inheritance!" A ray of divine light seemed to pass through his mind and caused Li Xian to blurt out.

In a split second —

The matter about little beast king earning huge profits at Shang clan city by relying on information about three kings inheritance...

The matter of him intentionally delaying the rescue of Bai Ning Bing and entering three kings inheritance...

And also all of the battle gains he brought out from the inheritance each time...

All these events converged in Li Xian’s mind and formed a clear clue — little beast king definitely held some secrets about the three kings inheritance. The time flow inside three kings inheritance was different from the outside world, it was a Gu Immortal blessed land! The reason he could grasp flying methods was definitely due to three kings inheritance!

"That must be it, Fang Zheng holds the secrets of three kings inheritance!" Hu Mei Er also came to a realization. Her thought of charming Fang Yuan and making him become her sexual slave suddenly became even more appealing.

Fang Yuan had his previous life memories and naturally grasped the secrets of three kings inheritance. In this secret discussion, Li Xian and Hu Mei Er had accidentally speculated the truth.

"The problem is since we know this, how do we obtain even more benefits? Little beast king has already grown and even Tie Ba Xiu fell by his hands, he is not someone we can go against." Li Xian clicked his tongue as his thoughts moved rapidly.

"We cannot, but it doesn’t mean others cannot. Humans can be instigated, hehehe." Hu Mei Er laughed coquettishly.

"Are you saying we should leak this information?" Li Xian slightly pondered over it before suddenly slapping his thigh, "Excellent plan, it is an excellent plan!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Back at Shang Liang mountain, Fang Yuan could only be said to have made small name for himself. But after the battle with Tie Ba Xiu, his name spread throughout the Southern Border and truly rose up to fame, becoming a famous demonic path genius.

This news attracted attention from countless people.

Some were experts who had been in closed cultivation for many years while some were Gu Masters who were roaming the world. He faced both righteous path’s attention and demonic path’s coveting. Fang Yuan had truly charged into their sights.

Some people chose to retreat temporarily like Century Boy. Some like Li Xian and Hu Mei Er were adding fuel to the fire. And some people’s battle intent were stimulated and they directly expressed their intent to challenge.

At once, the winds rose and the clouds began to gather, countless waves moved towards Fang Yuan.

San Cha mountain.

In a certain cave.

Fang and Bai were sitting cross-legged. Fang Yuan’s palms were placed on Bai Ning Bing’s back as he transferred his primeval essence.

In Bai Ning Bing’s aperture, essence gold primeval essence fell down into her primeval sea like a waterfall, causing many waves.

The waves surged continuously in the primeval sea and constantly cleansed the aperture walls.

Fang Yuan was rank four middle stage and possessed bright golden primeval essence. But with nine eyes liquor worm, his primeval essence was purified into essence gold primeval essence. Right now, he was pouring his primeval essence into Bai Ning Bing’s aperture through bone flesh unity Gu and helped her nourish and strengthen her aperture.

Several hours later, Fang Yuan retracted his palms while Bai Ning Bing slowly opened her eyes.

Her expression was tranquil.

She did not show a trace of gratitude to Fang Yuan for rescuing her, and also did not show a trace of anger for his procrastination.

She was very tranquil as if she had never even been trapped.

However, in the depths of her heart, she felt extremely complicated.

For a long time now, she had been above Fang Yuan in terms of cultivation. But right now, she had instead become the beneficiary of bone flesh unity Gu.

Essence gold primeval essence gave her huge assistance. After all, she was still at rank four initial stage.

"It seems cultivating together with Fang Yuan isn’t so bad..." The moment this thought appeared, Bai Ning Bing extinguished it in a flash.

She slowly stood up and spoke with coldness in her voice like she was taking joy in Fang Yuan’s misfortune: "Have you heard of the recent rumors? Many people are saying you hold the great secret of three kings inheritance. You did not know any flying methods before but received it from three kings inheritance. Hehe, you need to watch out. Tie clan is furious and has publicly proclaimed you as their enemy, their arrest warrant for you has already spread over the Southern Border."

Fang Yuan indifferently replied while remaining seated: "Hehe, is there anyone who doesn’t know about our relationship? Since Tie clan is coming after me, you will also be on the hit list."

"Hmph. Continue your cultivation till midnight, I will stay guard for you. After midnight, we shall switch." Saying so, Bai Ning Bing walked out.

The current situation, compared to when they had just arrived at San Cha mountain, was much more dangerous. Fang and Bai did their best to cultivate at different times.

In the depths of the cave, Fang Yuan remained alone.

He did not hurriedly cultivate but rather sank into contemplation.

Tie clan’s response was already within his expectations. He killed an elder of

Tie clan and also chased their young master; already ruthlessly infringing their bottomline. Tie clan was a top clan, one of the leaders of righteous path, how could they put up with this? Their retaliation would definitely be extremely fierce!

Besides Tie clan, there were also other problems.

Shang clan, Wu clan and others in the righteous path; Hu Mei Er, Li Xian, Century Boy and others in the demonic path.

This was the price for becoming famous!

Fang Yuan made his name from the battle, but it also pushed him towards the eye of the storm and was now watched by countless people. There were undercurrents and probings from all sides, there were even waves that wanted to submerge him, already having converged into a huge whirlpool.

With his previous life’s experience Fang Yuan knew he was facing a test.

If he could escape from this whirlpool, resist the assault of the waves, then he would truly gain a foothold and become a publicly recognized expert of Southern Border.

But if he was swallowed and shredded by this whirlpool, there was no need to mention anything.

"Now, Divine Thief Lu Zuan Feng should have already repeatedly infiltrated Demon Suppression Tower and caused a great havoc, Tie clan should already be under huge pressure. If they want to gather their energy to deal with me, it won’t be a matter of a month or two. I can forget about them for now."

"The rumors outside claiming that I hold the great secret should be Li Xian and Hu Mei Er’s doing. Hmph, I will deal with these two sooner or later. It is just that Li Xian still has a lot of value currently. And behind Hu Mei Er stands rank six Gu Immortal, I need to plan this carefully."

"Three kings inheritance is a really big cake, I have no way of eating it whole. I can only choose the best parts of it. If I can obtain the essence of the inheritance, like undefeated hundred battles Gu and others, this trip would be a success. My strength will have an enormous boost and it would be extremely helpful in the great battle of Yi Tian mountain."

Thoughts whirled in Fang Yuan’s mind before he dispersed them and thought of Central Continent.

"Calculating the time, Hu Immortal Inheritance on Tian Ti mountain should have opened. This is a true Gu Immortal blessed land and is many times more precious than three kings inheritance. That Feng Jin Huang became a Gu Immortal all due to this inheritance and became a figure whose name would shake the world in the future..."

Meanwhile in Central Continent, at the foot of Tian Ti mountain.

The elite disciples that came from the ten great sects of Central Continent gathered together.

In the crowd, the real Gu Yue Fang Zheng softly let out a breath of turbid air, the great competition that lasted for months was finally over.

Several months ago, the ten great sects sent an order at the same time to organize a great competition for these elite disciples to determine the rankings.

Central Continent’s ten sects contained the strongest inheritances. This generation of elite disciples were all dragons among men, children of heaven. Even the worst disciples among them had one or two trump cards.

Because of Fairy Bi Xia, Gu Yue Fang Zheng did not have an easy time.

In the great competition, many of his opponents showed deep hostility and made heavy-handed attacks. Fortunately, Fang Zheng had deep foundation, possessing an ironbeak flying crane group and also had the guidance of Lord Sky Crane who was inside the spirit incubating flea; these allowed him to struggle through each round and obtain a rather high ranking.

Right now, in the sky of Tian Ti mountain, ten formless Gu Immortal divine consciousness were quietly communicating.

"This generation of elite disciples are also ordinary in general. But there are finally some excellent juniors."

"Hmm... Spirit Butterfly Valley’s Xiao Qi Xing is pretty good. If I am not wrong, he should be the great-grandson of Xiao Bai Hong, right?"

"Myriad Dragon Dock’s Ying Sheng Ji is also very outstanding, Long Nǚ has taught him well."

"Hehehe, you are too kind. Your granddaughter Feng Jin Huang is the truly outstanding one, none of her peers can match her attack."

"Are you all going to keep on flattering each other? Let’s cooperate and completely open this Hu Immortal Inheritance!"

"Alright, alright."

"Then let’s strike together."

"Rise!"

Ten formless powers surged out from the void, majestic and boundless like tsunami or mountain torrent!

The world changed, wind rose and clouds rumbled.

The ten powers revolved around each other before converging together and colliding against a certain place on Tian Ti mountain.

There was no sound, the terrifying formless power vanished like thin air. Golden rays of light blossomed and a vermillion gatehouse slowly rose up.

The gatehouse was a hundred feet tall with a nine colored plaque on it shining brilliantly.

In the air, pink propitious clouds gathered and bright rays of sunlight gathered to become a flight of stairs.

The stairs stretched out from the gatehouse and became a rainbow bridge, landing exactly before the group of elite disciples.

"Enter according to the ranking of the competition." An ethereal voice came from the air and clearly resounded in the ten sects’ disciples’ ears.

This was the voice of a Gu Immortal.

All kinds of expressions appeared on the ten sects’ disciples’ faces; awe, reverence, zealotry and so on. Most of their gazes gathered on a girl.

She was wearing a phoenix coronet, had slanted eyes, her golden brows were thin and long and there was was a small red birthmark in the middle of her brows. Her appearance was dignified and graceful, and her beauty was unrivalled.

She was the winner of the first place in this great competition - Feng Jin Huang!

This girl was magnificent and brilliant, her skin was like snow and her eyes were like lightning. Like the phoenix that soared through the skies, she was elegant and pure, arrogantly looking at the world. When compared to her, the elite disciples around her seemed to have turned into ordinary sparrows.

Fang Zheng had fought with her, but was defeated in just six moves.

Hearing the Gu Immortal’s voice, Feng Jin Huang gave a clear whistle and turned into a golden light, shooting forward.

The golden light became a phoenix and collided into the gatehouse; the vermillion gatehouse shook and opened a void that swallowed Feng Jin Huang.

After Feng Jin Huang, Xiao Qi Xing, Ying Sheng Ji and others entered Hu Immortal Inheritance one after another.

After twenty to thirty disciples entered, it was Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s turn.

Fang Zheng walked through the rainbow bridge and entered the gatehouse. He immediately felt dizzy, colors rotated around to form a whirlpool in front of him, dazzling like the blossoming of all sorts of flowers; he felt like he was drifting in a gorgeous hurricane storm.

"Heeheehee..." A cute and young girl suddenly appeared in his sight.

"You are also another fated person that wants to inherit Hu Immortal Inheritance? In a moment, you will see a mountain. Only the first person that ascends to the peak can obtain me. You need to work hard. Those people that entered before you have already taken a huge lead. Heeheehee..." The girl was wearing rainbow colored clothes, on her back was a snow white fox tail that was moving mischievously, she had large and round eyes that showed her innocence.

"You, who are you?" Fang Zheng was startled and puzzled, he was unable to make sense of this Gu Immortal’s place, how could a girl appear here.

"Heehee, so it is a stupid boy." The girl said and mischievously extended her tender and fair little finger, and softly touched Fang Zheng’s forehead.

Then, just like how she had appeared, she suddenly disappeared.

From this slight touch, Fang Zheng’s body that had been light as a feather recovered its weight and suddenly started falling down.

"Aahhh!" A strong feeling of weightlessness spread over Fang Zheng, and he subconsciously screamed.

He wanted to activate his Gu worms, but to his horror, his whole aperture was locked in by a formless force, making him unable to use the powers of Gu.

"Could it be that I, Gu Yue Fang Zheng, am going to die at this place, dying by falling, having such an absurd death?!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Thud.

A dull sound echoed with dust flying everywhere.

Fang Zheng fell flat on his face on the ground.

Although he fell from a high altitude, it was only for a short time before he landed, thus he survived.

"Spit spit spit!" Fang Zheng sprawled on the ground and spitted grass and mud out of his mouth, a sore pain spreading throughout his body as he felt stifled.

"Where is this?" He took slow, deep breaths and stood up awkwardly before looking at his surroundings.

It was a scenery of green, Fang Zheng felt like he was in a grassland. The grass rustled with the light wind and countless flowers of all colors formed a tapestry that spread to the horizon.

Far away, there was a tall and precipitous crystal mountain.

The crystal mountain was half-translucent and was pink like a scene from dreams.

From his position, Fang Zheng could clearly see human silhouettes climbing the mountain. Compared the the crystal mountain, these figures were very small like ants.

"The first person to ascend to the peak will obtain Hu Immortal Inheritance!" Suddenly, Fang Zheng recalled the mysterious girl’s words.

Who was that mysterious little girl?

Could they really inherit Hu Immortal Inheritance by climbing this mountain?

While Fang Zheng was indulging in his doubts, Lord Sky Crane’s anxious voice appeared from inside him: "Stupid disciple, what are you still hesitating for? Quickly go climb that Dang Hun mountain!"

"Master!" Fang Zheng was both startled and happy, "Who was that little girl? And, why can’t I use any Gu?"

"Get a move on already, grasp every second. I will explain to you, listen properly!" Lord Sky Crane hurriedly explained —

"Hu Immortal Inheritance is not a small matter, it is an intact Gu Immortal Inheritance. There can only be one inheritor, whoever obtains it will soar to the top and will have a huge chance to become an immortal. As for the others, they will obtain no benefits or rewards. The little girl you saw just before is the Hu Immortal Inheritance. As long as you ascend to the peak first, you will become her master and obtain the Gu Immortal Inheritance."

Fang Zheng ran while gazing at the peak.

He had lived in Southern Border and there were many mountains there, he naturally knew the logic of the mountain ’appearing close but was actually very far away’.

"Master, I am very far away from this crystal mountain while they are already climbing it. The gap is too huge. I also cannot use movement Gu, how can I win?"

Lord Sky Crane snorted: "Ignorant! This is Hu Immortal blessed land, this place is not like anything else! Although Hu Immortal has already passed away, her will still exists. Your movement Gu has already been sealed by Hu Immortal’s will, naturally you can’t use it. Others are also the same, they can’t use any Gu. You can only rely on your own physical strength to ascend to the peak and finish this test."

Fang Zheng could not help being dispirited: "I can’t use movement Gu and there is such a huge gap, how can I catch up to them? Strange, we entered the gatehouse one after another, how could the gap be so huge?"

Lord Sky Crane laughed: "This is a Gu Immortal blessed land, the time flow here is different. A day in the outside world is five days here. You guys entered the gatehouse one by one and the time difference was short. But once you enter here, the time difference is suddenly pulled apart. Otherwise, why would there be the great competition to decide the ranking? Each rank represents a certain advantage. The last ranked person basically doesn’t have any hope to win."

"So it was like that." Fang Zheng only then realized the importance of obtaining a good ranking in the great competition.

Unfortunately, he lacked power and his strength could not compare to others.

The ten great sects were the heads of Central Continent, they had a lot of hidden talents with extremely profound foundations. Even Southern Border’s top clans could not compare to them. In this generation of elite disciples, disciples like Fang Zheng, Fairy Bi Xia, Gu Ting and Wei Wu Shang were only second tier.

The first tier were disciples like Feng Jin Huang, Ying Sheng Ji and Xiao Qi Xing. They had powerful background and the support of Gu Immortals. From the very start, they received meticulous nurturing. A huge amount of resources were provided to them, with them never lacking anything, and occasionally, Gu Immortal level existences would personally instruct and guide them in their cultivation.

Comparatively speaking, Fang Zheng was only a countryside boy. Although he had some fortuitous encounters, they could not compare to the support of Gu Immortals.

"My ranking is not high, I can’t do anything about. I already given my best in the great competition, almost all of my ironbeak flying cranes have died." Fang Zheng felt regret and also helplessness.

As he kept on thinking, he suddenly felt something amiss.

"Master, since Gu worms cannot be used here, how come you are able to talk to me? Master, you still had this secret, you are really amazing!"

"Hahaha..." Lord Sky Crane could not help but laugh loudly, "Stupid disciple, you finally realized this? But you are overestimating your master. I was only a rank five while alive and after death, my soul is residing in the spirit incubating flea, I have nothing left. The reason I can talk to you is because of our Immortal Crane Sect’s Supreme Elder Lord He Feng Yang! Fang Zheng, you need to remember, in this world, only Gu Immortals can contend with Gu Immortals."

"Supreme Elder He Feng Yang?" Fang Zheng was filled with shock, Immortal Crane Sect had many Gu Immortals. Among them was He Feng Yang, to think he would be somewhat involved with him.

Lord Sky Crane meaningfully said: "Fang Zheng, Hu Immortal Inheritance is not a small matter, it has a land spirit. That is to say, this blessed land has its own will! Even a Gu Immortal can’t get through force. Land spirits are innocent and stubborn, inheriting their original master’s obsession. If a Gu Immortal forcefully attacks, even if the land spirit can’t resist it, it could choose to self-destruct and destroy the blessed land. The Gu Master that made the forceful attack would also suffer injuries in vain and would have disastrous losses, and all their efforts would become futile. Thus, they sent you elite disciples."

"In this great competition, Feng Jin Huang from Spirit Affinity House is truly amazing! This girl could be said to be a genius among geniuses, arrogantly looking down at the crowd, a phoenix among people. Your strength is inadequate and it is normal for you to be defeated by her. But our Immortal Crane Sect has not necessarily lost. You are our Immortal Crane Sect’s hope for reversal!"

"Me?" Fang Zheng could not help opening his eyes wide as he had never expected there to be such a huge hope entrusted to him.

He suddenly realized.

This contest for Hu Immortal Inheritance looked like a contest among the elite disciples of the ten sects, but actually was the battle between the ten great sects. Disciples like him were the chess pieces while the Gu Immortals of the ten sects were the players; they arranged the pieces from behind the scenes and contested against each other.

And he himself was the ignorant secret weapon chosen by the Immortal Crane Sect.

"Master, isn’t the sect having too much expectations for me? I can’t use any Gu now, how can I be the winner?"

"Hehehe..." Lord Sky Crane proudly laughed, "Fang Zheng, do you know what this crystal mountain is? This is the Dang Hun mountain in the legends of Ren Zu.

"Dang Hun mountain!" Fang Zheng gave a startled cry.

Legends of Ren Zu had spread over the world, Fang Zheng naturally knew of this famous Dang Hun mountain.

Lord Sky Crane continued: "As long as any living creatures enter the range of Dang Hun mountain, their soul would receive a shock. The closer they get to the peak, the stronger the force of the shock would be. Many living beings don’t have strong souls and their soul would often scatter when they reach halfway up the mountain."

"Naturally, this is a righteous path inheritance and isn’t as dangerous as a demonic path inheritance. Dang Hun mountain’s might has already been suppressed by the land spirit, giving you elite disciples a chance of ascending to the peak. If someone is unable to continue, they would be sent out by the land spirit. That is to say, there is no risk to your lives."

Lord Sky Crane’s tone became solemn: "Fang Zheng, the thing I am about to say is very important, listen carefully!"

"You experienced the destruction of your entire clan at a young age and the killer was your own big brother. You are determined to take revenge and your will is firm. Surviving this terrible event had tempered your soul to become stronger than your peers. But there is still a gap when compared to people like Feng Jin Huang and Xiao Qi Xing."

"But you don’t need to be dejected, the ingenuity of Lord He Feng Yang’s plan lies here. He used secret methods to resuscitate Spirit Incubating Flea. Next, I will use my soul to support you and push you towards the peak of Dang Hun mountain!"

Lord Sky Crane was a rank five Gu Master, he had gone through innumerable difficulties throughout his life and at the same time with his long age, he had gained plentiful experience and the strength of his soul naturally far surpassed the disciples like Feng Jin Huang and Xiao Qi Xing.

These geniuses might be at their prime with limitless future prospects, but right now, the foundation of their soul could not compare to Lord Sky Crane.

Fang Zheng was both happy and worried: "With master’s help, I have a chance at winning. But if we cheat like this, won’t it be unfair? If other Gu Immortals discover it, what would we do?"

Lord Sky Crane snorted and reprimanded: "Stupid kid, this is not cheating but ability and talent. We are obtaining the Gu Immortal Inheritance with our ability and talent. This is fair! Don’t worry, behind you is Immortal Crane Sect, and with Lord He Feng Yang protecting you, other Gu Immortals won’t act against you. Moreover, Gu Immortals can’t enter the blessed land. If they enter the blessed land, they will suffer the counterattack from the land spirit, thus even if they discover some clues, they can only watch helplessly! Hahaha!"

"The land spirit is so amazing? Even Gu Immortals are not its match?" Fang Yuan felt surprised.

"One side will go all out while the other side has to restrain themselves... Moreover, land spirit has blended in with the blessed land, and in the blessed land, land spirit is an immortal deity able to control the whole blessed land. Controlling the land spirit means controlling the blessed land." Lord Sky Crane laughed.

Realization dawned upon Fang Zheng: "Ah! I understand, that little girl we saw is the land spirit!"

"Hahaha!" Lord Sky Crane laughed, "Disciple, you aren’t so stupid after all, finally realizing it. That’s right, that little girl is Hu Immortal land spirit. Now charge forward bravely. This Dang Hun mountain is extremely difficult to climb, it would at least take a year or so. Just in case, I won’t speak much from now and will only secretly help you. With my help, you have at least eighty percent chance of seizing Hu Immortal Inheritance! As long as you get the Hu Immortal Inheritance, you can rise rapidly, turning from beggar to tycoon and become fat from just one bite. This is ascending to the heavens in one step!"

"I understand, master! I will do my very best and not disappoint you!" Fang Zheng’s fierce eyes flashed with a firm and courageous light.

"Go, the whole Immortal Crane Sect is looking at you." Lord Sky Crane spurred Fang Zheng on with one sentence and made his blood boil.

Fang Zheng felt extremely energetic!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Several months later.

Southern Border, San Cha mountain.

In a spacious cave lighted with bright lights, a huge banquet was being held where Gu Masters drank and gambled, and fragrance of various dishes permeated the air.

"Come, come, come, everyone, eat and drink to your fill, no need to feel uncomfortable!" Century Boy was sitting on the main seat; he looked around and greeted everyone with a loud voice.

Century Boy was wearing a black robe and looked like a tender boy but was actually over hundred and eighty years old.

In this world, under normal circumstances, a human’s lifespan was only around a hundred years. If one wanted to increase their lifespan, the best method was to find lifespan Gu.

However, lifespan Gu were extremely rare and thus difficult to find.

Humans were the spirit of all living beings, who would mind having a long life? Thus, they thought of many other methods.

Century Boy was one such example, although he did not find lifespan Gu, he possessed return to childhood Gu, which accumulated his lifeforce and slowly released them, gaining the effect of longevity.

The disadvantage of this method was his body and appearance were fixed to have a child’s physique.

Century Boy had rank four upper stage cultivation and at the same time possessed over a hundred and eighty years of experience, he was truly a part of the senior generation of demonic path.

He had become astute with age and had visited a lot of places. He liked holding feasts and entertaining all kinds of people. Sometimes, he also gave pointers to some newcomers and imparted some of his experience. In the demonic path, he had the reputation of guiding the younger generation.

Some demonic Gu Masters who received his pointers recognized him as their godfather. As time passed, Century Boy had gathered a whole group of godsons and goddaughters, forming a rather enormous force.

Among those participating in the banquet today, many were his godsons and goddaughters. There were also distinguished guests like Rock Lizard Li Qiang and Fiery Star Bao Tong; they were all famous demonic path figures and could not be underestimated.

"Shang clan’s Yi Huo is truly powerful, he suppressed the other four rank four peak stage experts. Currently on San Cha mountain, no one wants to fight him."

"Gu refinement grandmaster Feng Tian Yu has arrived and has agreed to refine Gu for Yi Huo. I am not sure what Gu he is refining but Yi Huo’s fighting strength is sure to become more powerful."

In the banquet, the most talked discussion was naturally about the current situation of San Cha mountain.

Yi Huo came from Shang clan and represented the righteous path. His power and influence was huge, suppressing all the demonic Gu Masters on San Cha mountain; they could not even fight properly as they were fearful.

"Yi Huo might be strong, but he is only rank four peak stage. If Tie Ba Xiu was still alive, he could definitely contend with him and Yi Huo would not have been in such a bright limelight like now."

The moment Tie Ba Xiu was mentioned, everyone inevitably thought of Fang Yuan.

"A few days ago, Little Beast King killed Yu Cang; this is the fourth strength path Gu Master he has killed in just this month." Someone whispered.

Yu Cang was a strength path Gu Master and was from Yu clan which was a small-middle sized clan.

Ever since Fang Yuan killed Tie Ba Xiu, his momentum increased tremendously and he looked for trouble again and again, killing both demonic path and righteous path Gu Masters. This awe-inspiring fierce and brutal name shook San Cha mountain.

Century Boy’s ears twitched, and his expression turned unsightly when his keen sense heard ’little beast king’.

Fang Yuan killed Sky Tiger Xue San Si who was his goddaughter. He had been proclaiming he would find trouble with Fang Yuan. However, after Fang Yuan killed Tie Ba Xiu, he immediately gave in and did not talk of Fang Yuan again.

"Hmph! Little Beast King might be strong, but it is because of three kings inheritance. He knows many secrets regarding the inheritance and thus every time he enters the inheritance, his gains are much more than ours. Li Xian, you have made deals with him and know much more about his situation. Is this not the case?" Rock Lizard Li Qiang suddenly spoke loudly.

Li Xian nodded: "Indeed it is so. In these few months, Little Beast King has sold some of the secrets of three kings inheritance many times. The information he gave is mostly correct and has been verified. For example, you can disturb hairy men’s Gu refinement process in the earlier stages of King Xin Inheritance. There are also some of his experiences regarding King Quan Inheritance."

"Little Beast King definitely knows much more important secrets and is hiding them deep in his heart. His luck has come, he really made it big this time, his strength has been increasing by relying on three kings inheritance. Now, he is one of the most popular candidates to inherit three kings inheritance!" Fiery Star Bao Tong said as he drank wine, his tone filled with admiration and envy.

"Fang Zheng is getting stronger and he has replaced his Gu worms to much better ones as well."

"In these few months, he and Bai Ning Bing has been moving together, they are simply a pair of wretched murderous couple! These two are villains colluding together, who knows how many have suffered from their treacherous attacks."

"Little Beast King has extremely big ambitions, from the time he arrived at San Cha mountain to now, he has repeatedly challenged strength path Gu Masters. Recently, he has again claimed to become the number one in strength path and recover the glory of the ancient strength path."

"Fortunately, I am not a strength path Gu Master...."

Everyone discussed and commented.

Fang Yuan only took the initiative to fight strength path Gu Masters, this caused strength path Gu Masters to be in danger, while Gu Masters of other paths watched on from the side with an attitude of taking joy in others’ misfortune.

Although Fang Yuan’s actions were unbridled, he did not provoke public anger.

On one hand, he was powerful and could also fly; truly not an easy enemy. On another hand, he took the initiative to reveal many information on three kings inheritance which caused many people to fawn upon him. Finally, he only went against strength path Gu Masters, only dealing with people of the same path, and did not blindly provoke other Gu Masters.

"Century Boy, you need to be careful. From what I remember, you are also a strength path Gu Master, right? Fang Zheng, that brute is mean and devious, and completely unreasonable, cruel and tyrannical." Rock Lizard Li Qiang stared deeply at Century Boy, seemingly persuading him with good intentions.

Century Boy sighed inwardly.

How could he have imagined Fang Yuan to be so violent!

"Sigh, each generation brings forth new geniuses... Nowadays, newcomers are appearing in flocks; a few years ago, there was Mo Wu Tian and now Little Beast King has appeared. This world is becoming increasingly tough, it is not easy to even be a godfather."

Century Boy thought like that inwardly, but on the surface he was still tough: "Hmph! When heavens want someone dead, it will first make them mad and violent. This Little Beast King is become madder and more violent, he is not far from reaching death’s door. He killed my goddaughter Xue San Si, I will take revenge sooner or later. But there is no need to hurry, wait till three kings inheritance is over and I will slowly settle the scores with him. The important matter is three kings inheritance."

Saying so, he reminded his godsons and goddaughters present in the banquet: "You guys also need to understand the logic of important things first. Three kings inheritance is an opportunity that seldom appears in a hundred years. You need to grasp it as much as possible or else you will regret it for your lifetime."

What he meant was: You guys better avoid any conflicts with Little Beast King.

"Godfather is right."

"Godfather’s words are reasonable and thought-provoking. Revenge is a dish best served cold!"

"This Little Beast King won’t be able to keep bouncing for long, he killed Tie Ba Xue and chased Tie clan’s young master. We will talk after he is hunted down by Tie clan."

"I heard people saying Tie clansmen have already secretly arrived at San Cha mountain..."

"Godfather, wait till my cultivation reaches rank four, there won’t be a need for godfather to make a move, I will be able to deal with Little Beast King!"

"Little Beast King won’t remain proud for long, under my thunderclap Gu, there won’t even be a corpse left of him!"

...

These goddaughters and godsons talked one after another; some expressed great loyalty and said they would go through any difficulties for Century Boy. Some even fawned saying it was not worth for Century Boy to deal with Fang Yuan. Some judged the situation and bluntly said Fang Yuan’s joy would not last long.

"Alright, alright, you are my godchildren. It was not in vain for me to have guided you!" Century Boy laughed loudly.

Right at this time, a voice suddenly came in from outside the cave.

"Century Boy, I am Fang Zheng, get out!"

The merrymaking just before, the clamorous banquet suddenly turned into deathly quietness.

Little Beast King!

How could he come find trouble here?!

Everyone’s eyes opened wide and looked at each other in shock.

This was especially the case with Century Boy and his godsons and goddaughters; they were all stupefied and did not know what to do, not daring to utter a word.

"Right, this is Little Beast King’s voice, it seems he really came." Li Xian held back his smile and broke the silence.

Rock Lizard Li Qiang, Fiery Star Bao Tong and others all put their wine cups down with grave expressions.

Crash! Century Boy smashed his wine cup on the table, then he gritted his teeth and shouted to the outside: "Little Beast King, I am here, what can I do for you?"

Fang Yuan’s voice immediately came from outside the cave: "Hmph, Century Boy, you held such a huge banquet and invited all the heroes, but you actually didn’t invite me? Are you looking down on me? You don’t need to apologize, it is already too late for apologies. Since you are also a strength path Gu Master, then come out and exchange moves with me."

When Century Boy heard this, he was startled, indignant and furious.

Fang Yuan’s appearance made him startled. Fang Yuan’s brashness made him indignant. And Fang Yuan’s such words that made it seem like Century Boy was really going to apologize made him angry.

However, Century Boy did not want to fight to the death with Fang Yuan. He looked around and shouted with a furious tone: "Little Beast King, don’t be too insolent! You came here to find trouble and have no consideration for anyone, you are simply looking down on all the numerous heroes here. I will tell you honestly, Lord Rock Lizard Li Qiang is here, there is also Lord Fiery Star Bao Tong and also young master Li Xian who is an emerging talent of the demonic path. Are you here to court death?"

With these words, everyone in the banquet had different expressions, inwardly cursing this treacherous Century Boy who wanted to pull them down with him.

However, Fang Yuan said: "Century Boy, you coward, the people you have invited are all heroes, but I can clearly tell you that I came to find trouble. But not with others, I came to find trouble especially with you! I want to recover the glory and the radiance of the ancient strength path. You are a puny coward who is damaging the name of the strength path, come out and accept your death."

Li Qiang’s grave expression immediately relaxed at these words.

Fang Yuan explained his purpose for coming clearly, it was directed at Century Boy and this let his mind slightly relax.

"I did not think Lord Little Beast King knew our names." Bao Tong stroked his beard with a satisfied expression.

Li Xian laughed darkly and looked at Century Boy with every intention to watch indifferently from the sidelines.

Century Boy had become astute with age, his expression immediately sunk when he saw everyone’s expressions.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

As Fang Yuan scolded over there, Century Boy’s chest was burning with anger, thinking: "Although little beast king is strong, the reason he killed Tie Ba Xiu was due to the flying ability’s advantage. He is so young, I have eaten more salt than he has eaten rice , as long as I focus on defense, and not act recklessly, I will not be in any mortal danger."

Being in public, Century Boy could only forcefully keep up a facade. If he avoided battle here, the reputation and fame he worked hard to earn for many years would be ruined at once.

"But if I really cannot take it, I can still escape back to the cave. There are so many people here at the banquet, Fang Zheng would not dare to barge in. But what truly angers me is, what these people said earlier were nice words, but at the crucial moment, none of them are dependable!"

Century Boy stared at his godson and goddaughters, feeling upset and disappointed.

Speaking of which, among these godsons and daughters of his, only Xue San Si had the highest cultivation, and was the most outstanding among them, but Fang Yuan killed her already.

"Little beast king, you are too arrogant and overbearing, today I will let you learn that older people are wiser!" Century Boy walked out of the cave, screaming furiously at Fang Yuan.

He looked like a child, but his tone was old and experienced, it was a weird sight.

"Cut the crap, receive my move!" Fang Yuan saw Century Boy walk out and laughed coldly, taking a huge step forward, like a tiger descending the mountain, charging forward with a burst of wind.

All-out effort Gu!

At once, beast phantoms appeared and caused Fang Yuan’s strength to increase sharply.

Bam bam bam...

Sounds of punches and kicks were heavy and continuously.

Outside the cave, two strength path Gu Masters tangled together. They were close range fighters, every attack hit the target as they competed with brute force.

After a while, they had battled over a hundred steps away, everywhere they rampaged through, mountain rocks broke, trees toppled, dust and twigs flew in the air.

The Gu Masters in the banquet had left the cave, watching the battle.

Bitter strength Gu!

Fang Yuan gave up on defending, the more injured he got, the more strength he could exert.

Moo!

Suddenly, there was the sound of a bullcry as a large green bull phantom appeared above his head.

This green bull has a huge body, twice the size of an elephant, its back was raised highly, thick and solid, and full of green moss.

This was the mutated beast kunlun 1 bull, having the same status as Biao, dragon-elephant, thunder boar and rock crocodile!

Fang Yuan exerted the strength of a kunlun bull!

This strike was heavy, as the air exploded, emitting a thunderous roar.

Century Boy was unable to guard in time, sent flying as his tiny body was like a ball, crashing through more than ten trees before stopping.

He coughed out a mouthful of blood, staring fiercely at Fang Yuan.

To think it is the kunlun bull strength, little beast king's strength rose again!

"Century Boy, I killed your goddaughter Xue San Si, didn't you want revenge? Today, I will give you the chance." Fang Yuan smiled mockingly, charging again.

"Little beast king, you are too arrogant, watch this!" Century Boy was red with anger, white smoke coming out of his eyebrows.

He received Fang Yuan's attack but did not counterattack.

Century Boy was a demonic figure who had lived for over two hundred years, he had his abilities, and many trump cards.

When he truly unleashed his strength, Fang Yuan started to feel pressured, on the verge of falling into a disadvantage.

Strength Qi Gu!

Suddenly, Fang Yuan's shoulder shrugged, and a trace of strength qi shot out.

Thunder boar phantom entered the strength qi and turned solid, charging towards Century Boy.

Century Boy could only avoid the attack, as Fang Yuan starting attacking furiously behind the thunder boar. Century Boy's counterattack vanished like smoke.

Fang Yuan's battle experience became more and more rich, and his mastery of this set of Gu worm rose.

Before, he could not use strength qi Gu while attacking at close range, but now after tens of matches, he could coordinate his own body and his beast phantoms perfectly.

Thunder boar charged bravely, smashing rocks and mounds along the way. Rock crocodile was tough, using its tail like a steel whip, and its teeth like razors, it was a ferocious beast. Kunlun bull had brute force and horn attacks, its back was like tough mountain rocks. These three beast phantoms, once activated, caused Century Boy to feel extremely outpaced as he hurriedly defended himself.

Solid beast phantoms were the biggest threat to Century Boy. But after the beast phantom was destroyed, it turned back into a trace of strength qi.

When Fang Yuan activates the strength qi Gu again, the beast phantom would appear good as new.

"Thankfully, little beast king’s three beast phantoms can only be unleashed through luck. His all-out effort Gu is still rank three, it cannot summon these beast phantoms!"

Century Boy was suppressed by Fang Yuan, but he felt glad secretly.

Although Fang Yuan swapped his boar, crocodile, and green bull phantoms to thunder boar, rock crocodile, and kunlun bull phantoms, it caused his overall strength to rise but there was weaknesses.

His all-out effort Gu was only rank three, it could not summon these three rank four phantoms at will.

That is, unless Fang Yuan gets the undefeated hundred battles Gu from King Xin’s inheritance, and raise the all-out effort Gu to rank four.

"Godfather’s situation is getting worse. Do we strike?"

"Do you want to die? They are fighting so intensely, before we even join in, we will be turned into meat paste!"

"Strong, way too strong. Among us, only Sky Tiger can contest, but she was killed by Fang Zheng long ago."

"Do we just watch like this?"

"What are you scared of? Is godfather so easy to deal with? He has his trump cards left!"

Outside the cave, Century Boy’s godsons and daughters saw the intense battle and were trembling with fear, their limbs turning cold.

Century Boy had a tiny body, his fighting style was to find loopholes and dodge everywhere, he liked to aim at crucial areas, when he punches and kicks, it forms an impact.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan attacked directly, punching and kicking, his arms like long spears while his legs were like large poles. At times, he caused explosive sounds when he attacked, giving off a dominating aura.

Century Boy was suppressed gradually, and his moving space shrunk.

These few months, Fang Yuan had improved in terms of Gu worms.

Not only did he turn green bull into kunlun bull phantom, he also finished using essence iron bones Gu, and raised the toughness of his bones again, to about twice or thrice of before.

Other than these, he also used the golden steel tendon Gu, turning his body tendons into the hardness of golden steel.

Ancient bronze skin, essence iron bones, golden steel tendons...

The three defenses molded into one, complementing each other as Fang Yuan’s defense rose sharply. Combined with the golden shield Gu, it was enough to handle the full strength of a rank four peak stage Gu Master!

Century Boy was getting more frightened as he fought: "This little beast king, why is he so experienced?! I had the lower-hand at the start, and I tried to reverse the situation, but I did not succeed once! Is he still a young man? How can such a person be around twenty years old?"

Century Boy thought about himself when he was twenty, compared to Fang Yuan, he felt that he had lived a dog’s life all these years!

"No, I must retreat, this little beast king cannot be assessed by human standards. No wonder Tie Ba Xiu died in his hands, up till now, he has not used the bone wings Gu yet!

Century Boy was suppressed by Fang Yuan, not even able to catch a breath. After thinking about it, he wanted to retreat.

He turned his body, towards the cave.

"Century Boy, are you afraid?" Fang Yuan activated charging crash Gu, chasing relentlessly.

"Century Boy, with me here, where do you think you can go?" Bai Ning Bing suddenly jumped into the battlefield, blocking Century Boy’s path.

"You!" Century Boy’s attention was on Fang Yuan, how would he expect Bai Ning Bing to appear right beside him, and strike an underhanded move? Caught off guard, he was hit by Bai Ning Bing’s attack head-on and lost his bearings.

Fang Yuan did not give up such a good chance, unleashing a flurry of attacks.

And his luck was finally shining, as thunder boar, rock crocodile, and kunlun bull, the three great phantoms all appeared at once.

The great strength surged like a wave, flooding Century Boy like the attack of the sea.

Century Boy did not even manage to scream out before Fang Yuan grabbed both his legs and tore him in half.

"AHHH!"

"Godfather, you died a pitiful death..."

"Lord Century Boy!!"

At once, everyone screamed in shock, as blood spewed, bones broke, and organs fell on the ground.

"Hahah, so much for Century Boy, you are nothing much." Fang Yuan laughed as he raised his head, showing off an extreme arrogance.

Blood poured on his face as he stared at the people in front of him, shouting unhappily: "Why are you being so noisy, Century Boy ran away at the last moment, timid like a rat, he is a disgrace to the strength path, he deserved death!"

Suddenly, his expression eased, laughing: "Everyone here is a smart person and did not help this shameless rat. Come, let’s go in and drink. Li Xian, do you want the information regarding the three kings inheritance? I still have a deal with you."

Everyone was shocked, worried, and also curious.

Shock was because Fang Yuan was like a demonic god incarnate, killing another famous person and showing off a greater strength.

Worry was because Fang Yuan killed people like cutting grass, he had just killed a person, but the next moment he started laughing, talking about life, he did not care about human lives at all. Being with such a person, anyone would feel intense pressure.

Curious was because Fang Yuan knew the three kings inheritance’s secret, and wanted to deal with Li Xian. Could they get some information regarding the three kings inheritance from him?

Everyone had a complex thought and could not decide.

Fang Yuan walked briskly side by side with Bai Ning Bing into the cave.

The people blocking the cave subconsciously gave way to them.

Fang Yuan stepped into the banquet, and sat at the host’s seat, this was originally Century Boy’s seat.

"All of you sit down, no need to be polite. Whoever dares to leave, is not giving me, Little Beast King, face!" Fang Yuan looked at everyone as he threatened fiercely.

Rock Lizard Li Qiang, Fiery Star Bao Tong, and others were only rank four upper stage, they did not dare to speak although enraged, sitting down.

Under the cold silence, everyone looked at each other, worried that Fang Yuan would start killing again, they could only sit down.

Fang Yuan squinted as he showed a smile: "Since everyone respects me, I shall give you some benefits."

Immediately after, he casually gave an information, regarding the life-saving token in the three kings inheritance.

Everyone heard it and their eyes shone, memorising this information to heart.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"So there was such a chance at retreating in the three kings inheritance. If I obtain the token, I can move without restraint and wouldn’t have to retreat early," Bao Tong lamented.

Li Qiang took the initiative to raise his wine cup and toasted Fang Yuan, "Lord Little Beast King’s words are truly worth a thousand gold. I raise this wine cup to congratulate sire for killing Century Boy, this scum of the strength path!"

Tea cools down as soon as the person is gone ; Li Qiang had been talking so closely with Century Boy just before, but now the person had been changed to

Fang Yuan, he immediately changed his words and called Century Boy the scum.

"Hahaha, you flatter me." Fang Yuan, however, did not raise his wine cup, but looked at the godchildren of Century Boy and impatiently waved, "Today, I have exterminated the source of evil and my mood is also good, so I will give you guys a way out. If you don’t want to stay, then get lost. Get lost, get lost, don’t block my view!"

With Century Boy’s death, these godsons and goddaughters were already feeling anxious and frightened, and could not help looking at each other when they heard Fang Yuan.

"What? You want to stay and try to kill me?" Fang Yuan indifferently smiled.

Immediately, there was an uproar, many people left awkwardly and the cave was instantly empty by half.

However, among the godchildren of Century Boy, some still remained.

"Lord Fang Zheng, you are my benefactor!" A godson suddenly kneeled and yelled with tears and snot falling down, "I was forced by that bastard Century Boy to take him as father, Lord Little Beast King, your dominance shakes the world and your aura overwhelms the lands, you have rescued me, you are my great savior!"

"Lord Little Beast King, your power has thoroughly subdued my heart, please let me stay and serve you." A beautiful goddaughter pleaded alluringly.

"Lord Little Beast King, you have rescued me from a disaster, I will never forget your great kindness. You have given me new life, please let me call you godfather!" An old man in his seventies kneeled on the ground and passionately shouted.

Thump thump thump.

Immediately, in front of Fang Yuan was a scene of kneeling people.

With Century Boy, the head of this group’s, death, his force immediately collapsed. Many escaped while a portion looked for an alternative way out and wanted to rely on Fang Yuan.

"Hahaha..." Fang Yuan laughed loudly, "Your words are really pleasant to the ears, good, good."

The group of godchildren immediately showed a joyous expression.

However, Fang Yuan’s smile suddenly stopped as he turned grim, he shouted: "A group of bootlickers! Killing is killing, crime is crime, why are you speaking of great kindness! I scorn this type of hypocritical praise. I like killing people, I like commiting crimes, listen, how direct is this, how pure is it. Screw off you lot, if you want to take revenge, then accumulate your strength, I will wait for you to challenge me!"

The godchildren were shocked, frightened and stupefied.

"Hmm?" Fang Yuan snorted and with a shift of his mind, a beast phantom charged forward, killing one person on the spot.

The rest seemed to have startled awake; screams could be heard as they hurried to escape from the cave in a pathetic state and even pissed themselves.

The remaining Gu Masters all had unsightly looks.

Fang Yuan was very temperamental and easily killed people, causing the people around him to feel great pressure. Although Century Boy was hateful, he was many times more lovable when compared to Fang Yuan.

Only Bai Ning Bing’s expression was tranquil as water; she was sitting on the left of Fang Yuan with her blue eyes half closed.

Li Qiang had been raising his wine cup and still had not placed it down; right now, he forgot his embarrassment and forcefully smiled: "Lord Little Beast King, when cutting grass, you need to pull out the roots. You have let these people go, what if one day they make it big? Just to be safe, it is better to kill them all. Lord Little Beast King, it doesn’t matter if you don’t remember these people, I have memorized their faces. I will kill them in place of you as my thanks for the information you gave."

"No need, no need." Fang Yuan leaned back on his chair and indifferently smiled.

He had his own reasons for letting these people go, but it could not be said out loud.

Thinking for a while, Fang Yuan said: "Since I started walking on the demonic path, I have never feared offending others. As long as I continue to get stronger, what is revenge? If ten people wants revenge, I will kill ten; if a hundred people wants revenge, I will kill a hundred. If the whole world wants revenge, I will exterminate the whole world! If someone succeeds in taking revenge against me, that will mean that I am not strong enough, that I didn’t try hard enough and that I neglected my cultivation; I deserve to die then!"

A terrifying light flickered in Fang Yuan’s eyes as he said this, and when he swept his gaze around, he was like an evil ferocious beast that no one dared to match his gaze.

"Little Beast King is ruthless to others, but is even more ruthless to himself!"

"This Fang Zheng’s demonic nature is too strong! Not fearing revenge, not fearing death, placing his own life and death out of his considerations..."

"Fang Zheng is crazy, his mind is not normal. Making an enemy out of him will be a nightmare!"

Everyone that heard Fang Yuan felt their hearts go cold.

Fang Yuan succeeded in intimidating everyone and did not take it too far, and smiled: "Let’s drink."

Everyone raised their wine cups with trembling hands, they felt like they were accompanying a man-eating tiger and were in danger; the originally fine wine felt tasteless.

But following immediately, Fang Yuan again talked of three kings inheritance and revealed many secrets.

Everyone was engrossed, their breathing started becoming rough in excitement as they listened to the secrets.

Only Li Xian was worried and bewildered: "What is this Little Beast King planning? He is actually revealing such precious information, what is he after?"

The banquet lasted over after two hours.

Fang Yuan killed Century Boy and occupied his cave, even taking charge of the banquet. While others wanted more secrets, they felt their trip was not in vain.

When they got out of the cave, they even felt reluctant to leave and wanted to listen to even more news from the cave entrance.

As for the original host of the banquet, Century Boy, his torn corpse was still on the ground and its blood had already seeped into the ground. The deathly white bones gave a cold shine under the moonlight.

Everyone chatted and laughed, and as they walked past the corpse, no one threw a glance at this loser.

This was the ending of the defeated in the demonic path.

Losers are always in the wrong.

All demonic Gu Masters, more or less, had such a common understanding.

...

Light rain fell from the sky and made pitter-patter sounds.

The sky was gloomy and the wind blew coldly.

The light rain fell on a young girl’s hair, shoulders, back and finally, her whole body.

"Young master Ruo Nan, the dead cannot be brought back, my condolences to you." The head of Tie clan’s four old-timers stood behind the girl and persuaded her with a concerned voice.

But the girl did not speak, the eyes that were as bright as stars before lost its spirit and looked hollow, there was no longer a resolute and sharp gaze.

Tie Ruo Nan looked at the tombstones in front of her in a daze.

These tombstones were cut from the mountain stones and the names of the ones that slept under were carved on them.

Tie Mu, Tie Dao Ku, Tie Xian Hua, Tie Ao Kai, Tie Ba Xiu...

Each of these names could relate to the brightest and most profound memories in the depths of Tie Ruo Nan’s heart.

However, the companions who walked alongside her and fought side by side had become cold corpses within the ground. Similar to Tie Ruo Nan’s heart, they would never have a trace of warmth.

"It is I who harmed you, I didn’t fulfill the duty of a leader!"

"You all died, but I am alive by myself. I am a coward..."

"This is all a nightmare, father, I have blemished your name."

Tie Ruo Nan fell into deep self-blame, besides this, there were also regret and bewilderment.

This genius worked hard to climb up after experiencing her father’s death, and was like a slowly ascending star of the righteous path who received blessings and attention of countless people.

But in the battle several months ago, Fang Yuan personally dropped this star into the abyss; she became a meteorite that smashed into a gloomy corner and was full of cracks.

" Sigh ...." The head of the Tie clan’s four old-timers, Tie Xuan Zhi, looked at the thin and weak figure of the young girl in the rain, and heaved out a long sigh.

However right at this time, an aged voice suddenly came from behind him: "It has been several months already, this child Ruo Nan is still like this?"

Tie Xuan Zhi was startled and frightened!

Who was it, they got so near but he did not sense it at all!

At that instant, the hair on his body stood up and he turned around quickly and subconsciously tried to attack.

However, a wizened hand softly touched his shoulder and a voice followed at the same time: "Xuan Zhi, compose yourself."

Tie Xuan Zhi immediately felt his whole body turn stiff, the surging primeval sea in his aperture was suppressed by a formidable and formless force.

It was like a high mountain had suddenly been suppressed.

The grand head of the Tie clan’s four old-timers, the rank four upper stage Tie Xuan Zhi, could not budge even a bit at this moment, his whole body seemed to be confined like an insect trapped within amber!

But when he saw the appearance of the person, Tie Xuan Zhi’s terror and despair immediately turned into ecstasy.

"Ah, old clan leader!" Tie Xuan Zhi blurted out.

The wizened old man who was standing in front of him was Tie clan’s previous generation clan leader, Tie Mu Bai!

"I have already abdicated as clan leader. Now I am also not an elder, Xuan Zhi, you can just call me Mu Bai." The old man gently waved his hand and smiled.

"Impossible, how could junior dare to call your great name!" Tie Xuan Zhi bowed his back deeply and greeted the old man respectfully.

Towards the old man in front of him, Tie Xuan Zhi was filled with reverence and admiration.

"Name is only a name, the name Tie Mu Bai was meant to be used. There is nothing inappropriate." The old man spoke calmly, vicissitudes of life were reflected in his eyes and he had already seen through fame and fortune.

Tie Xuan Zhi wanted to speak but the old man slightly waved his hand and walked forward slowly toward Tie Ruo Nan.

He stood in front of the tombstones with his back facing Tie Ruo Nan. He then gently caressed the stele and sighed: "Tie clansmen are buried at the place they die. This is the rule of Tie clan since it was established. Do you know why?"

Tie Ruo Nan was still kneeling on the ground and showed no expression as if she did not hear anything.

The old man continued: "Because to Tie clansmen, dying in the battlefield is the greatest honor! Tie Ba Xiu, Tie Mu, Tie Dao Ku, Tie Xian Hua, Tie Ao Kai, these people were the same, your father Tie Xue Leng was also the same. In the future when I die, it will also be the same. And when you die, it will still be the same."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Tie Ruo Nan’s eyes twitched and she slowly raised her head to look at this unacquainted but very familiar old man.

"Our Tie clan, since it was established, had been world-renowned for our bravery, unswerving determination and our iron-cold justice. For many generations, Tie clansmen had been upholding justice and striking down on criminals, in this course, countless people have shed blood and sacrificed their lives. The youths that have died here won’t be the first and also won’t be the last. Do you understand?" The old man continued.

Tie Ruo Nan slightly opened her mouth as if to say something but could not speak anything.

"I am gratified because these people did not die in vain. But I also feel disappointed because you are living in vain. Tie Ruo Nan, do you know the criminal is still out there, getting away with his crimes, and still harming people. That little beast king Fang Zheng..."

Tie Mu Bai paused here and then turned around and looked at Tie Ruo Nan, indifferently asking: "Do you want to uphold justice?"

Tie Ruo Nan looked at this old man and finally recognized his identity.

Tie Mu Bai, rank five peak stage! Tie clan’s previous generation clan leader, he moved unhindered in Southern Border and had dominated a region. When he was reigning, Tie clan was like an iron bucket that pressed down on Wu clan, Shang clan and other great clans, and became one of the heads of the righteous path, causing terror to the demonic path!

Tie Ruo Nan’s deathly-still eyes suddenly twinkled with a spark, and she squeezed out a word with her hoarse voice: "Yes."

"Good." The old man nodded, his gaze gentle and his tone as calm as before, "Starting now, I will impart the metal path to you, the Gu path that our Tie clan’s Gu Masters use to stand on top of Southern Border."

Eight days later...

Three kings inheritance opened once again; red, yellow and blue, three enormous light pillars pierced through the clouds and were visible even from thousands of miles away.

However, San Cha mountain was a scene of stillness with no sound.

Regardless of righteous path or demonic path, countless people looked at the peak - there, a seemingly ordinary wizened old man with grizzled hair and wrinkles all over his face was standing calmly with his hands behind his back.

Not far from him, Yi Huo, Kong Ri Tian, Long Qing Tian, Yi Chong and Wu Shen Tong had dark expressions.

Just a moment ago, this old man suppressed the combined power of these five. He defeated them with no difficulty.

"Powerful, truly powerful!"

"Tie Mu Bai, Tie clan’s previous generation clan leader, was actually still alive!!"

"Too fearsome, is this the power of rank five peak stage? Yi Huo, Kong Ri Tian and others simply cannot compare. It would be as easy as crushing ants for him to kill us!"

"Who could have expected Tie clan to actually send their old clan leader. With this, Shang clan, Wu clan and every other clans are not Tie clan’s match!"

"This is an expert of the old generation, little beast king is not worthy to even carry his shoes. In those days, when he moved unhindered in Southern Border, under his command, Tie clan gained powerful momentum and even suppressed Wu clan and almost became the sole head of righteous path!"

"He is one of the most powerful clan leaders in Tie clan history. He is the glory of Tie clan, a role model of the righteous path and the symbol of justice. His battle accomplishments shines brilliantly and hasn’t lost its color even today!"

After a short moment of silence, there was an uproar on San Cha mountain; sounds of admiration, cheers and terror.

With Tie Mu Bai’s appearance, the power structure on San Cha mountain completely changed.

Three days later, news made its way out.

Originally, Divine Thief Lu Zuan Feng caused havoc in Tie clan and secretly infiltrated Demonic Suppression Tower multiple times, in the end disturbing Tie Mu Bai who had closed himself in cultivation.

Tie Mu Bai personally struck and even though Lu Zuan Feng was a famous divine thief and also a rank five Gu Master, he received serious injuries and had a very narrow escape.

After Tie clan settled this, their gaze gathered at San Cha mountain.

Tie Ba Xiu’s death angered all Tie clan higher-ups. And just as they were about to send an expert over to reinforce the four old-timers, Tie Mu Bai said he was going to personally make a visit.

He came to San Cha mountain and with his absolute strength, he easily prevailed over the experts of both righteous and demonic path. Even experts at the level of Yi Huo and Kong Ri Tian had to concede defeat.

"From this day onwards, no demonic Gu Master may enter three kings inheritance." Tie Mu Bai stood at the peak of the mountain and after winning over the five rank four peak stage Gu Masters, he immediately made the announcement.

With just himself, he swept up all the demonic Gu Masters on San Cha mountain!

Demonic Gu Masters were very angry, however even though they were thousands in number, they did not dare to rebel against the rank five peak stage Tie Mu Bai, this supreme expert who stood at the peak of the mortal world.

On that day, Kong Ri Tian and Long Qing Tian directly left the mountain with dark expressions.

Then, Li Xian, Hu Mei Er and others also left sadly.

"The laws of the heaven are vast, justice will prevail. Even if three kings inheritance is a demonic path inheritance, it will contribute its strength to our righteous path. Everyone, as long as we unite, sparks will gather little by little into a bright light that will cover the whole San Cha mountain. And no longer will there be dark places."

Tie Mu Bai spoke sincerely, then slowly stepped into the three kings inheritance.

There were huge cheers all around San Cha mountain, righteous path’s morale was boosted to the top; the congratulatory sounds continued endlessly like waves after wave.

This time, the opening of the three kings inheritance lasted for more than half a month.

Tie Mu Bai changed the power structure of San Cha mountain by himself, uniting the righteous path and banishing the demonic path, causing the situation to have a violent change. The aged body seemed to manifest the domineering aura of the former clan leader of Tie clan.

Demonic path figures were all banished; they were still not resigned and thus stayed at the surroundings of San Cha mountain and watched as the three light pillars became thinner and thinner.

After the inheritance closed, Tie Mu Bai held a banquet and invited all righteous path Gu Masters.

The banquet was held in the outdoors and was spread over a vast area in the middle of the mountain. The Gu Masters used mountain rocks as tables and chairs, the aroma of wine and food spread everywhere, and they cheered and laughed.

"Junior Yi Huo proposes a toast to senior." Yi Huo stood up with a wine cup in his hands and bowed deeply towards Tie Mu Bai who was sitting on the main seat.

"In the few great clans, Shang clan always had talents appearing in large numbers. I heard Shang Yan Fei has already become the clan leader now? He had outstanding talent since young, you are also not bad. Take a seat." Tie Mu Bai said with a bit of recollection.

With his seniority, Shang Yan Fei was also a junior.

With his rank five peak stage cultivation, even though Shang Yan Fei had astonishing talent, he was still inferior.

Yi Huo could only nod his head and slowly sit down, heaving a sigh inwardly.

With Tie Mu Bai’s arrival, his plan to rule San Cha mountain was already cut at its root. He was unable to catch up to this expert of the old generation and simply did not have any chance of contending with him.

"Old clan leader Tie, on behalf of Yi clan, I congratulate you on coming out of seclusion." Yi clan’s elder Yi chong had a fiery temperament, but he behaved like an obedient grandson in front of Tie Mu Bai.

Gu Immortals always stayed in the background and their traces were rarely seen. To most of the people, rank four Gu Masters were feudal lords while rank five Gu Masters were the emperors that occupied the peak of the mortal world.

Tie Mu Bai coming here was an emperor going on an inspection tour; these feudal lords could only bend their backs and visit the emperor for an audience.

"Old clan leader Tie, you are the glory of our Southern Border’s righteous path and are still awe-inspiring as ever! With one sentence, you made all the demonic bastards retreat helplessly, making us juniors prostrate in admiration. Unfortunately, that little bastard Fang Zheng escaped pretty fast, escaping San Cha mountain few days before you came." Wu Shen Tong said darkly.

"You are talking about little beast king, right?" Tie Mu Bai indifferently smiled without a hint of anger.

"This little kid is outstanding, I heard his accomplishments are rather amazing. He worked hard alone and started from nothing to become a rising star of the demonic path at a rapid speed. He seems impulsive and unreasonable, but actually makes his moves after meticulous planning and is very good at scheming. It was not groundless for the several youths of Tie clan to die by his hands." Tie Mu Bai continued.

His words shocked everyone present. As the victim’s family, the old Tie clan leader whose dignity was offended was actually praising his enemy in front of everyone.

"This old clan leader Tie was rumored to have a fiery temperament with extreme abhorrence of evil. How come he seems to be different from the rumors, and instead is so cultured and indifferent to humiliation?" Wu Shen Tong was inwardly surprised and was just about to speak when he met with Tie Mu Bai’s gaze.

The gaze contained the vicissitude of time and had unfathomable depth, a wisdom that had seen through and experienced all of the mortal world.

Wu Shen Tong immediately felt his schemes had been seen through by this gaze; cold sweat dripped out of his body and he found it difficult to speak.

"Do you find it strange?" Tie Mu Bai looked around and slowly spoke with a smile, "Why am I, who is called the glory of Tie clan, openly praising the mortal enemy of Tie clan?"

"Hehehe, praising one’s enemy is increasing the enemy’s prestige and diminishing one’s morale. But in truth, how could the will of those resolute people be destroyed by these few words? By admiring your enemies, you can find their strong points and warn yourself of your weak points, and treat your enemy more seriously. Don’t let your wisdom be deceived by hatred."

Tie Ruo Nan, who was standing behind Tie Mu Bai, shivered as she heard these words.

She knew old clan leader Tie Mu Bai was saying this mostly to her.

After Tie Mu Bai came out of inheritance, he had been guiding her all the time. He gave her metal path Gu worms and taught her his experiences in using them and also gave her knowledge on the outside world.

Don’t let your wisdom be deceived by hatred... admire your enemies...

Tie Ruo Nan thought over these words and pondered.

"Ruo Nan, what do you think of Fang Zheng?" Tie Mu Bai suddenly called her.

"Yes." Tie Ruo Nan took a step forward and reported, "Although I hate him very much, I have no choice but to admit Fang Zheng is very outstanding. He has the courage to take risks and also moves after scheming. Although he is a strength path Gu Master, he definitely has a formidable and extraordinary investigative method. This point can be seen from how he was able to intercept us."

"The path elder Tie Ba Xiu and I chose was a very hidden path. We were able to deceive everyone else but only Fang Zheng was able to sense it and accurately intercept us. Old clan leader, you secretly arrived at San Cha mountain and no one knew of it, but only Fang Zheng sensed it and escaped early. Little beast king might be at the front of the limelight, but he conceals himself very deep and is absolutely not a person to be underestimated."

"Good, good analysis." Tie Mu Bai nodded, his eyes revealing his praise.

He continued: "In this world, there is a thing that is more precious than life. That is glory. Eons ago, Ren Zu’s eldest son Verdant Great Sun gave up his life while chasing for glory."

"Ruo Nan, this Fang Zheng is a mission for you. Arrest him or kill him, wash away your humiliation and make it a glory that belongs to you. Many people call me the glory of Tie clan, but I will tell you Tie clan’s glory is not just me alone, but you guys, generations of people who stand for what’s right."

Tie Mu Bai’s gaze looked at everyone present when he said this, his voice showing the grandeur of past.

"Similarly, the glory of righteous path should be upheld by every one of us. Come, drink this cup to shine the glory of righteousness onto the world, let the radiance of this sun dispel the darkness and let the demonic path cease to exist!"

"Dispel the darkness!"

"Let the demonic path cease to exist!"

All the righteous path Gu Masters raised their wine cups and shouted together. Their voices were powerful and spread a long distance; countless demonic paths figures’ expressions changed.

"Damn it, this Tie Mu Bai..."

"The glory of Tie clan, time has not been able to wash away his brilliance. Really a terrifying character."

"He is dazzling like the sun... sigh, him coming out of seclusion is the bad luck of our demonic path!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

<<The Legends of Ren Zu Chapter Two, Section Three —

The sunlight of the immemorial antiquity era shone on all living beings.

Cicadas made noises, giving off the clamor of life. Dense green trees formed a large area of shade, as they swayed with the wind.

A large vat of delicious wine was in front of Verdant Great Sun, but he frowned, having no desire to drink.

"Divine travel Gu, oh divine travel Gu, you have harmed me so deeply. Right now, I do not even dare to drink wine. I am afraid of getting drunk, and end up transported to a dangerous land by you." Verdant Great Sun sighed in anguish.

The previous two times, he was sent into the ordinary abyss by divine travel Gu, as well as the cauldron of the hairy men. Thankfully he was lucky, and made it out of both the incidents alive.

Divine travel Gu said: "Prince of humans, I was not intentionally harming you. In fact, every time you got drunk, you were the one who used my power. I am innocent, in fact, I even saved your life once, didn’t I?"

Divine travel Gu had in fact, saved Verdant Great Sun’s life from the tiger-striped honey bees before.

Verdant Great Sun’s expression was dejected: "Sigh... don’t mention the past, now because of you, I do not dare to drink wine. My life has become meaningless and boring."

Hearing this, divine travel Gu felt ashamed: "In that case, let me teach you a method. Go up into the sky, and in the azure heaven among the nine heavens, there is a bamboo forest. Inside the bamboo forest, pluck a jade bamboo that is sky blue in color. Next, go to blue heaven and during the night time, collect the eight-sided diamonds inside the star fragments. Next, when it is dawn, fly into the sky and use the light of glory of the rising sun to turn me into fixed immortal travel Gu. Once I become that Gu, I will no longer send you to random places when you are drunk.

Verdant Great Sun heard this and he was overjoyed.

But he thought about it, and felt that hope was slim: "Oh Gu, I have stepped on the earth since I was born, I am not as light as clouds, nor do I have wings like birds. How can I fly into the azure heaven and pluck the jade bamboo. How can I collect the eight-sided diamonds in the star fragments? Not to mention flying towards the rising sun."

Divine travel Gu said: "That is right, humans cannot fly. But it is not a problem, we can ask wisdom Gu. It has the greatest wisdom in this world, there has to be a way."

Verdant Great Sun and wisdom Gu were old acquaintances, the reason Verdant Great Sun started drinking was because of wisdom Gu’s teachings.

But wisdom Gu taught him to drink merely because it did not want to be disturbed. Sensing that Verdant Great Sun was going to find it again, wisdom Gu quickly went into hiding.

Verdant Great Sun did not find wisdom Gu, and felt dejected.

But divine travel Gu said again: "If we can’t find wisdom Gu, we can find cognition Gu, it is the mother of wisdom Gu."

Verdant Great Sun quickly found cognition Gu, and requested for the methods of flying.

Cognition Gu answered: "You found the right person, because cognition is the wings of freedom. But everyone’s thoughts are different, what wings you have depends on yourself."

Saying so, cognition Gu turned into a warm light and shone on Verdant Great Sun.

In the light, a pair of white pure feathered wings appeared behind Verdant Great Sun’s back.

This pair of wings was very beautiful, white and pure like snow, without a trace of impurity, it was like the wings of a white crane.

Cognition Gu took a look and said: "Mm, this pair of wings is called ’self’, everyone has their own ’self-cognition’, this pair of wings has a high degree of flexibility and freedom. But you must be careful, do not overly bask in sunlight, otherwise, your sense of ’self’ will either expand or shrink."

"Young man, you must remember my words. The higher you fly, the harder you fall." Cognition Gu thought and said the last sentence with deep meaning.

Obtaining the cognition wings named ’self’, Verdant Great Sun was very happy, and flew into the sky.

He flew and flew, going higher and higher.

Humans were not born to fly, like birds soaring in the sky. This brought Verdant Great Sun great curiosity.

He played around freely in the sky, extremely happy. At the same time, he remembered cognition Gu’s warning, and did not overly expose himself to sunlight.

When it was sunny, he would hide in the clouds.

Like this, Verdant Great Sun flew higher and higher, finally reaching the limits of heaven, the end of azure heaven.

There, jade bamboos grew in the air, having lustrous green leaves.

These jade bamboos were rooted in the void, and their tips also extended into the unknown void. Looking from outside, one could only see their thin long stem.

Verdant Great Sun retrieved one segment of the bamboo casually.

This dark green bamboo stem was like jade, palm-sized, and hollow in the middle, giving off a cold feeling.

Verdant Great Sun obtained the jade bamboo and was very happy, he continued flying upwards.

The sky of the immemorial antiquity era had nine levels. White heaven, red heaven, orange heaven, yellow heaven, green heaven, azure heaven, blue heaven, purple heaven, and black heaven.

Verdant Great Sun plucked the jade bamboo in azure heaven, a few days later, he flew to the higher blue heaven.

It was night time, and stars were shining the the sky. The stars flew around happily, raining down stardust. These stardust gathered into a sea, a beautiful river of light made of silver stars, flowing across the entire blue heaven.

Verdant Great Sun willed his wings, and plunged into the star river to swim.

He searched painstakingly in the endless stardust, he did not want those seven-sided or sixteen-sided fragments, he only wanted the eight-sided ones. These star fragments were like diamonds, crystal clear and flawless.

He searched for a long time before finding one.

On the second day, Verdant Great Sun flew towards the rising sun at the break of dawn.

The sunrise was like a large red lantern, emitting a warm light.

This sunlight was not ordinary, it was the light of glory, it could shine on all living beings and penetrate the river of time.

Verdant Great Sun’s left hand was holding into the jade bamboo, his right hand was holding the eight-sided diamond, as he flew towards the sun and summoned divine travel Gu.

Basking under the light of glory, divine travel Gu swallowed the star fragment, and entered the jade bamboo.

"Oh Verdant Great Sun, I need time to metamorphosize and become fixed immortal travel Gu. During this period, you have to fly towards the sun, and do not leave the light of glory. But you have to be more careful, cognition Gu had said, pay attention to the ’self’ wings on your back. Once my transformation ends, you should fly towards the cloud cover immediately. Do remember, remember." Divine travel Gu reminded.

Verdant Great Sun laughed heartily: "Oh Gu, rest assured. I have even survived the ordinary abyss, and lived after the hairy men, I have the reputation Gu, and have transcended vanity, the light of glory can do nothing to me."

"Then I can stop worrying." Divine travel Gu’s voice weakened,as the sunlight turned into threads, forming a cocoon and wrapping the divine travel Gu and the jade bamboo.

Verdant Great Sun moved his pure white wings, flying towards the sun.

During this process, the light cocoon became thicker and heavier.

A moment later, the cocoon was burst open, and a butterfly glowing in green light flew out: "I succeeded, from today onwards, I am not divine travel Gu, but fixed immortal travel Gu. Hahaha."

Fixed immortal travel Gu flew around Verdant Great Sun, happily dancing, but suddenly shouted: "Ah, oh no! Verdant Great Sun, look at your wings!"

Under the light of the sun, Verdant Great Sun’s wings had expanded to three times of its original size.

"Do not fluster, I noticed it long ago, but so what? The larger my wings, the stronger they are, and the higher and faster I can fly." Verdant Great Sun laughed loudly.

"Quickly hide in the clouds, stop flying." Fixed immortal travel Gu said worriedly.

"Don’t worry, don’t worry." Verdant Great Sun was not worried at all.

The ’self’ wings on his back grew larger and larger, becoming even larger than his body. Verdant Great Sun’s speed also became faster and faster.

"Fixed immortal travel Gu, what do you think is above the nine heavens?" He shot up towards greater altitudes.

"Stop flying, stop flying. If you fall down, I cannot save you." Fixed immortal travel Gu was very worried.

"What’s the problem, how could I fall down? Look at my wings, how strong are they, how powerful are they!" Verdant Great Sun was just rebuking, when suddenly, his wings expanded to their limits, and exploded.

Losing his wings, Verdant Great Sun fell towards the ground immediately.

Eventually, he landed on the ground, as an unrecognisable grotesque corpse.

Ren Zu eldest son, met his end.

...

Southern border, Huo Tan mountain.

On the reddish-brown mountain rocks, there were some wine. Using the heat of Huo Tan mountain, the wine was kept at a certain temperature.

Sunlight shone down as Fang Yuan raised his wine cup, drinking it in one shot, sighing comfortably: "Such soothing wine, it is meant to be drank at this temperature."

Beside him, Bai Ning Bing was also sitting, but did not touch the wine, instead, staring at the direction of San Cha mountain.

There, the three light pillars shone up into the sky, shooting through the heavens.

"You are still drinking? It has been months, three kings inheritance has opened twice already. Tie Mu Bai is controlling San Cha mountain now and chased away all the demonic Gu Masters. These few months, we have been lurking on Huo Tan mountain, are we going to continue watching?" Bai Ning Bing said unhappily.

She was not afraid of death, only seeking thrills in life.

Maybe she was spurred on by the four old-timers of Tie clan, or maybe because Fang Yuan’s strength had surpassed her, these few months, she had been cultivating non-stop, not caring about her rising aptitude.

"The way I see it, we can still enter the three kings inheritance, as long as he find the opportunity and wait for Tie Mu Bai to enter the inheritance, we can strike. With our strength, no one on San Cha mountain can stop us." Bai Ning Bing’s words were very aggressive.

But Fang Yuan was relaxing and had a chill expression: "No worries, no rush. Tie Mu Bai is the glory of Tie clan, he is the previous clan leader, having rank five peak stage cultivation. He is such a high and mighty character. Compared to him, we are just rats under his feet. Let him fly higher, higher and higher."

Saying so, he raised his wine cup, pointing at San Cha mountain, smiling lightly as he muttered: "Come, Lord Senior Tie Mu Bai, this junior offers you a toast."

Bai Ning Bing glanced at Fang Yuan, but only saw that pair of black eyes, dark like the abyss, unfathomable.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Central continent, Hu Immortal blessed land.

A tall and large crystal mountain and river, was at the center of the blessed land.

Its name is Dang Hun mountain, pink throughout, emitting the colors of dreams and illusions.

At this moment, the elite disciples from the ten sects were like ants, trying hard to ascend the mountain.

Somewhere near the mountain waist, Fang Zheng was full of sweat, his face pale as his fingers gripped the mountain walls, gasping heavily.

As long as any living beings got close to Dang Hun mountain, they souls will have to endure the pain of vibrating shocks. The higher Fang Zheng climbed, the more he felt dizzy, like his soul was being blown away by the wind, he felt like he was about to collapse.

"Tsk tsk, you can’t hold on anymore? Then give up. Look how much you’ve fallen behind the others, how can you possibly win? Why don’t you just give up, you have no hope left." Hu Immortal land spirit pouted her tiny pink lips as she appeared before Fang Zheng.

Hu Immortal land spirit was like a little girl, snowy white skin glowing with pinkness. Her shiny large black eyes emitted an innocent gaze. What is most attractive is behind her back, where a snow white and pure fox tail grew, it was furry and fluffy, extremely cute and makes one want to play with it.

At this time, Hu Immortal land spirit was sitting in the air, watching Fang Zheng as she made fun of him.

Fang Zheng was not shocked.

After climbing to this height from the mountain foot, the land spirit had appeared many times, watching their progress every time, and was very playful.

Fang Zheng had found the method to deal with her, that is, to ignore her.

As expected, seeing that Fang Zheng was silent, Hu Immortal land spirit’s mouth pouted even more: "You’re a stupid lad, so boring. Please don’t become my master, otherwise my life would be boring to death. Hehe, the others are more fun."

Saying so, she vanished, going to find the other elite disciples.

After Hu Immortal land spirit left, in Fang Zheng aperture, the spirit incubating flea vibrated, as Lord Sky Crane’s voice sounded out.

"Fang Zheng, work hard and hang in there. Now is not the time for me to appear, you have to at least get past the mountain waist, only then can we have a chance of victory. Endure, you have to endure, the strength of the soul can be excavated, you have a lot of potential left to uncover."

Hearing his master’s encouragement, Fang Zheng’s dazed expression became firm again.

He replied in his heart: "Master, don’t worry. I will endure, I am just taking a break, and regulating my breath."

Pausing momentarily, he asked again: "Master, I have a question, what is a land spirit? Earlier that Hu Immortal land spirit was near me, if I catch her, would I be able to skip the climbing?"

Lord Sky Crane was shocked, scolding: "You lad, you have no fear due to cluelessness, even trying to scheme against the land spirit. Do you know how the land spirit is formed? After the Gu Immortal dies, the remaining fragments of their will and soul mixed with the blessed land’s powers, thus forming that spiritual body!"

"What, the land spirit was a Gu Immortal?" Fang Zheng was shocked.

"That’s right, the Hu Immortal land spirit you saw was formed from the former Gu Immortal Bai Hu. But without her past life’s memories, merely her lingering desires remain. Don’t think of her as powerless, inside this blessed land, she can manipulate the heavenly power freely, and can directly combat a Gu Immortal! She can seal any rank one to five Gu worm at will. Only rank six Immortal Gu worms can move freely in the blessed land. Fang Zheng, you are too bold. Climb this mountain properly, do not have any unrealistic thoughts." Lord Sky Crane chided.

"Yes master, I will not dare to anymore." Fang Zheng nodded, admitting his fault in his heart.

After scolding Fang Zheng, Lord Sky Crane’s tone eased, encouraging: "So now you know? As long as you become the owner of the blessed land, you can get the land spirit’s loyalty. Within the blessed land, the land spirit is an existence equal to a Gu Immortal!"

Fang Zheng listened as he was completely stunned.

What sort of strong aid was that! The assistance of a Gu Immortal equivalent!!

Lord Sky Crane continued: "However, the land spirit cannot leave the blessed land. The true essence of the Hu Immortal Inheritance is this wide and rich blessed land. Fang Zheng, you are still too low level, and the things you do not know are simply too many. Wait till you inherit this blessed land, you will slowly understand, what sort of help a blessed land can bring to a Gu Master! You are simply too lucky, encountering a blessed land with a spirit, and also receiving the sect’s help. If it is a blessed land without a spirit, that would be greatly inferior."

Fang Zheng asked curiously: "Master, what happens to a blessed land without a spirit?"

Lord Sky Crane answered: "A blessed land without a spirit is destined to be destroyed. Like a slumbering divine dragon, anyone can eat its flesh and drink its blood. Until it dies, it will not awaken. Fang Zheng, after you become the lord of the blessed land, you have to give the resources within the blessed land to the sect. Immortal Crane Sect had nurtured you this far, you have to give back to the sect. When the sect is stronger, the protection towards you will increase as well. You understand this logic right?"

"Mm, I understand. It was Immortal Crane Sect who adopted me. Without the sect’s help, I would not have any chance in getting the inheritance. I would not even be able to exact revenge on my brother. If there is a possibility, I not only want to repay the sect, but I also want to revive you master!" Fang Zheng nodded, his vision was clear as he held great gratitude and admiration towards Immortal Crane Sect.

Lord Sky Crane heard this and laughed dryly: "Foolish disciple, how can people revive so easily? I am glad you had the thought."

...

The light of glory of the righteous path shone on San Cha mountain.

Under Tie Mu Bai’s influence, three kings inheritance became the righteous path’s garden of exploration.

Any demonic Gu Master was chased out and not allowed to step into the mountain.

"Tie Mu Bai is too overbearing, fencing up the area and refusing to let anyone in."

"He is a senior expert, yet his greed knows no bound. Eating the meat and bones, but refusing to let us drink even the soup!"

"Most importantly, three kings inheritance’s opening time is shortening, and the three pillars are getting weaker. Just as little beast king said a month ago, this Gu Immortal blessed land is decaying, and will face destruction soon."

...

The demonic Gu Masters were feeling flustered and anxious, such a rare opportunity in front of them, yet they are denied entry, only able to watch in vain.

" Stuff the courageous to death and starve the timid to death , brothers, let’s charge up together, no matter how powerful that Tie Mu Bai is, can he kill all of us?!" Someone shouted, encouraging the crowd.

"We can wait for Tie Mu Bai to enter the inheritance, and then go up the mountain. That way, there will be less obstruction." Someone suggested.

"There’s a problem with this solution. When we come out of the inheritance, so would Tie Mu bai. Moreover, nobody knows where we would appear in San Chan mountain, we might get slaughtered by the righteous path." Someone rebuked.

"So what? Danger lurks when seeking wealth, how can we get the cub without entering the tiger’s den? Wanting to gain something without taking a risk, how can there be such a good thing in this world?!"

Just as the demonic path members were shouting and discussing, they heard the wailings of a hundred ghosts near them, and the bright blue sky suddenly became filled with dark clouds.

Within the dark clouds, a shrill voice said: "Gagaga, Tie Mu Bai, you came out of your cultivation, why did you not say hi to your old friend, hmm?"

The dark clouds moved rapidly, forming a face, having an aquiline nose and deep eye sockets, staring at San Cha mountain.

"This laughter and entrance, it is Lord Wu Gui from our demonic path!"

"I remember now. Lord Wu Gui is also rank five peak stage, an expert from the older generation, he is Tie Mu Bai’s lifetime rival!"

"There’s nothing amazing about the righteous path, we have experts in the demonic path too! Go, Senior Wu Gui!!"

At once, the demonic path members cheered, their eyes glowing as some shouted while others screamed.

The dark clouds moved closer, shrouding San Cha mountain quickly. Such a grand entrance, like an entire army, at once, even sunlight was covered, causing San Cha mountain to fall into darkness.

The righteous Gu Masters were all fearful.

"He has such an overwhelming aura!"

"This old demon Wu Gui, he is still alive?"

"Old demon Wu Gui, he is over hundreds of years old. Back when he was breaking through to rank six, he was disturbed and ruined by the young and inexperienced Lord Tie Mu Bai unintentionally. Thus, he felt extreme hatred and had slaughtered Tie clansmen many times as revenge."

...

"Wu Gui, have you been hiding under a mountain all these years? Are you here to experience defeat once again?" At the mountain peak, golden light burst out.

In the golden light, Tie Mu Bai stood upright, his hands behind his back, speaking calmly towards the rolling dark clouds.

"Hmph, you won by merely one move a decade ago, you really think you are better. Little bastard, today you will die without a proper corpse!" The dark clouds moved like steam out of boiling water, turning into a large hand and grabbing towards Tie Mu Bai.

This hand, was extremely large, larger than a small-sized mountain. It gave off an impressive aura, stunning people and gave off the feeling of grabbing the moon and stars.

The dark clouds looked slow but were extremely fast, grabbing quickly.

Corrosive smoke rose, as the hand covered an entire mountain peak, causing the trees and rocks it touched to disintegrate.

"Old tricks." Tie Mu Bai snorted, moving his leg and turning into a golden light, tearing apart the dark clouds, flying towards the sky.

The golden light flew like a shooting star, like lightning, as it crashed into the dark clouds.

Almost the next moment, there was a thunder-like explosion, going off like firecrackers.

The dark clouds moved violently, as golden light flickered.

The two rank five peak stage Gu Masters fought inside the clouds. Although the details could not be seen, outsiders could feel how powerful they were just from the aftershocks sent out by them.

"Wu Gui, when I just started by Gu journey, you were already an established expert. Back then, i had to avoid you if I met you. But fifty years later, I could escape from you. Eighty years later, you could do nothing to me. A hundred years later, you lost to me. And now, after another decade, today, you will lose your life."

Tie Mu Bai’s voice came from within the dark clouds.

"Huff, huff, huff... Tie. Mu. Bai! You are too arrogant, you were lucky to be born in Tie clan, relying on Tie clan, you can speak so arrogantly. If I had the same resources as you, I would’ve become a Gu Immortal by now." Wu Gui screamed in an unstable tone.

Evidently, during the intense battle earlier, Tie Mu Bai had the advantage.

"But, did you think I have no backup?" Hahaha!" Wu Gui breathed roughly, but started laughing wildly.

As he laughed, a third rank five peak stage aura burst out.

"Tie Mu Bai, did you miss me all these years?" A gloomy and shrill voice travelled far and wide.

Tie Mu Bai could not hide his shock: "Ku Mo, to think you came!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The situation at San Cha mountain had a violent change.

After Tie Mu Bai suppressed San Cha mountain for the most part of the year, his old enemy from the demonic path appeared. But Wu Gui who was also rank five peak stage could not beat Tie Mu Bai who made his debut later.

The situation that followed was beyond everyone’s expectations.

The similarly rank five peak stage Ku Mo suddenly made his appearance. The battle situation immediately changed to two demonic path’s rank five pincering Tie Mu Bai.

Righteous path figures cursed at the demonic path’s shamelessness while the demonic path figures continued to rush into San Cha mountain and cheer loudly.

Uncountable gazes fanatically looked at the air.

A battle between rank five peak stage Gu Masters was rarely seen much less the battle between three rank five peak stage Gu Masters.

Tie Mu Bai could suppress Wu Gui, but fighting one against two was far beyond his ability. But Wu Gui and Ku Mo were both demonic Gu Masters and although they had allied, they were similarly guarded against each other.

Like this, the three entered a stalemate.

From the sky covered by the black clouds and fierce wind, an enormous and deafening explosion occurred.

Golden light burst out, a four clawed golden dragon tore the black clouds and moved the wind and rain; its dragon roar spreading over a long distance.

"Hmph, merely a rank four golden dragon Gu, did you take that out to make a fool of yourself?" Ku Mo let out a disdainful snarl, "Look at how I tear you to pieces!"

When his words landed, there was a loud sound; the golden dragon let out a miserable whine and fell down towards the ground.

Just as the golden dragon was about to lose its life, a golden whirlwind blew towards it.

The four clawed golden dragon was surrounded by the whirlwind and its heavy injuries were instantly healed. It raised its head and roared before rising up again.

"This is a rank four golden breeze Gu, its healing ability is extremely powerful and is comparable to rank five Gu!" The spectating Li Xian narrowed his eyes when he recognized this golden whirlwind.

"Don’t even think about it!" Wu Gui suddenly gave an unearthly cry.

This unearthly cry was extremely ear-piercing like the cawing of ravens, the spectators be it righteous path or demonic path felt dizzy and nauseous.

Following the unearthly cry, a shining jet-black halo shot out and firmly collided against the four clawed golden dragon.

The four-clawed golden dragon could not resist it and exploded.

Dazzling light burst forth like a small sun, causing all the spectators to close their eyes.

The sound of the explosion was so loud, it seemed to burst everyone’s eardrums.

A fierce wind pressure soon followed, blowing towards all directions. The wind blew countless trees and stones, burying many Gu Masters alive.

The berserk wind rose as if in defiance of heaven and even dispersed the dark clouds covering the sky.

The spectators regained their senses after a long while and retreated in fear while looking up.

In the sky, three figures were confronting each other!

Tie Mu Bai was wearing a golden chainmail, it was the rank four golden coat Gu and had exemplary defense. His whole body was covered with a layer of gold-red light. It was the rank four golden aurora Gu and could allow the Gu Master to fly.

Wu Gui was stepping on a dark cloud, his lips were sharply sticking forward like a black beak.

And Ku Mo was slowly flapping a pair of bone wings on his back, his whole body was covered with bone armor and there were all kinds of colorful sharp spikes growing out from his elbows, knees, shoulders and other places. At first look, he looked like a malevolent multi-colored human-shaped hedgehog.

The confrontation only lasted for a short few breaths of time.

The three attacked at the same time as quickly as lightning.

In the sky, a golden-red light shuttled back and forth, breaking the void and was as sharp as a sword. A black light soared, moving at one time and stopping at next, it was strange and cunning. A multi-colored light charged and crashed, and displayed the most valiant manner.

Ordinary naked eyes were already unable to make out the progress of the battle. The absolute majority of people could only hear the unceasing explosions that continued to ravage their eardrums.

Suddenly a golden light fiercely streaked across the sky like a blade, towards an area in the middle of the mountain.

Mountain stones and boulders were crushed into fine powder and there appeared a twenty feet wide and over hundred feet tall gorge.

The nearby unlucky spectators were all chopped into minced meat.

Suddenly a raven’s caw echoed like the thunder.

Hundreds of unlucky Gu Masters’ head burst immediately.

From time to time, bone spikes rained down freely from the sky.

Many Gu Masters could not evade in time and were pierced through, nailed at the ground and lost their lives.

The battle had reached the climax, the three sides moved without restraint.

"We can’t endure even the ripples of a battle between rank five peak stage Gu Masters."

"Too terrifying, too terrifying, we need to leave quickly. If we keep on watching, we might have to pay with our lives!"

Everyone was scared witless and hurried out of San Cha mountain one after another.

Even Li Xian, Hu Mei Er and others also did not dare to stay here.

On San Cha mountain, only the rank four peak stage Yi Huo, Kong Ri Tian, Long Qing Tian, Yi Chong and Wu Shen Tong remained.

Even so, their expressions were serious and all their concentration was fixed on the battle with their nerves stretched tight as a bowstring; they were ready to escape the moment there was even a little danger.

Soon, these rank four peak stage Gu Masters also could not continue staying there.

Because the three rank five peak stage Gu Masters used their rank five Gu.

Tie Mu Bai’s turn gold Gu flew everywhere. No matter what it shot through, whether they were rocks, grasses, trees, flowers, birds, fishes or beasts, they would turn into golden sculpture, their life force extinguished.

Ku Mo’s soft bones Gu made any bones within fifty miles of it, turn soft and become a puddle of bone paste.

And Wu Gui’s pitch black Gu spread darkness everywhere, any Gu worms under rank six that touched it would received different degrees of restrictions.

In this world, the higher the rank of the Gu, the stronger and rarer they were. Precious Gu of rank four were already hard to purchase and rank five Gu were practically not circulated in the market. As for rank six Immortal Gu; every one of them were one of its kind.

Fang Yuan had reached rank six Gu Immortal’s realm in his previous life, but he could only refine a rank six Spring Autumn Cicada. As for most of the Gu Masters, rank five Gu were already very hard to get.

The most important thing in a battle between rank five Gu Masters was the power of their rank five Gu.

"This is the power of a rank five Gu? Terrifying, rank four defensive Gu can hardly resist it, let alone rank three Gu..." From some far away corner, Bai Ning Bing observed the battle in San Cha mountain intently, her blue pupils flickering with grave light.

This was not the first time she saw a battle between rank five Gu Masters. She had seen it once before at Qing Mao mountain.

But the fighting strength of these three rank five Gu Masters were clearly much more powerful than Lord Sky Crane and first generation Gu Yue.

This was because first gen Gu Yue and Lord Sky Crane were decrepit rank five Gu Masters who were struggling at death’s door and used all kinds of ways to prolong their lifespan.

First gen Gu Yue hibernated all year round in blood coffin and changed himself into a zombie; neither human nor ghost.

And Lord Sky Crane was not much better, he came from Central Continent, his battle prowess was suppressed to some extent in Southern Border.

But these three rank five Gu Masters Bai Ning Bing was looking at were all at their peak state. Their intense battle naturally gave her spirit an even stronger impact.

"If I face such rank five Gu Masters, I will not be able to resist one move of theirs and there is no hope of even escaping!" Bai Ning Bing looked at the battle for a long time and subconsciously clenched her fists, deeply realizing the gap between her and these rank five peak stage powers like Tie Mu Bai and the rest.

Rank five peak stage Gu Masters were at the peak of the mortal world, an emperor among Gu Masters.

Especially when they used rank five Gu, the strength they could bring out could destroy mountains if they came across mountains, split apart rivers if they came across rivers; such an enormous power gave a feeling that it could not be stopped.

"This is the show you were waiting for?" Bai Ning Bing retrieved her gaze and looked at Fang Yuan standing beside her with a flash of understanding, "Tie Mu Bai is fighting one against two. It seems after this battle the structure of San Cha mountain will have a complete change. Demonic path will suppress righteous path; you were waiting for this opportunity since several months ago, right?"

Fang Yuan calmly gazed into the distance and shook his head indifferently: "Rank five Gu are very rare, many rank five Gu Masters don’t have even one rank five Gu and can only use use four Gu. Thus, a rank five Gu Master’s battle strength is determined by the rank five Gu they hold and their amount."

"Demonic Gu Masters have always lacked resources and can mostly only rely on luck or fate. Ku Mo and Wu Gui have one or two rank five Gu with them. But Tie Mu Bai is different, he has a huge background called Tie clan, he should at least have three rank five Gu on him."

Bai Ning Bing’s expression moved: "You mean Tie Mu Bai will be the winner of this battle?"

Fang Yuan, however, shook his head: "Gu worms are Gu Master’s trump card, the Gu Masters can be targeted against once their Gu are exposed. Tie Mu Bai will not easily reveal all his trump cards. From the start, this battle had neither a winner nor a loser."

Bai Ning Bing was a smart person and immediately understood it after Fang Yuan gave her the clues.

No matter how intense this battle was, it was only a probe.

Why did Tie Mu Bai, Wu Gui and Ku Mo came here?

Was it purely for revenge against each other?

Impossible!

For people like them, their greatest goal is to break away from mortal and charge through to rank six Gu Immortal realm, thereby gaining a longer life.

These three were at the peak, looking down on all mortals, and had rich experiences; gratitude and grudges could not move them. Each of their action held their own deep purpose.

"These three chose San Cha mountain for their battle instead of any other places. So, their purpose is already clear - three kings inheritance!"

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes flickered with a pondering light.

"Three kings were rank five Gu Masters, their inheritance contains rank five Gu worms; each one of these rank five Gu can greatly increase their strength. With a treasure in front of them, how could they battle without care? Unless there is an extremely huge imbalance between the battle strength of the two sides. But from the current situation, it clearly is not so. So this battle can only end in a draw."

The confusing battle situation suddenly became extremely clear.

Bai Ning Bing subconsciously looked at Fang Yuan.

When everyone’s hearts were throbbing intensely because of the intense battle of rank five Gu Masters, he was still so calm like he was a spectator watching something of no concern.

But was it really a matter of no concern?

Bai Ning Bing rejected this thought inwardly, no one knew clearer than her regarding the thirst Fang Yuan had towards three kings inheritance.

But even under such desire, he could still restrain his impulse.

Facing such an opponent, Bai Ning Bing’s heart felt incomparably heavy: "Such unfathomable shrewdness... how will I be able to take the yang Gu that can turn me back to a male from him?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Half a month later.

On a certain peak in San Cha mountain.

A group of ash-grey mountain apes close to a thousand in numbers tightly surrounded Tie Ruo Nan while screeching and screaming.

Tie Ruo Nan took in a deep breath, she suddenly waved her hand and shot a large cloud of golden needle Gu.

Golden needle Gu was not a natural Gu but was a Gu created by Tie clan’s Gu Masters. Every golden needle Gu was a rank two Gu, their length was around an index finger and were like thin golden needles.

Golden needle Gu shot through the apes; some stood on the spot without being able to move, some died from poison and some were driven into a frenzy and actually began attacking their nearby companions.

Tie Ruo Nan repeatedly shot out golden needles; there was chaos among the mountain apes and they suffered huge losses. In a sorry figure and while screeching miserably, they made their escape. Soon, the noisy battlefield quietened down.

Large numbers of mountain apes were on the ground; some were dead and some were at their last breaths.

Tie Ruo Nan slowly walked past them and shot out golden needle Gu again.

But this time, these golden needle Gu had healing effects, they shot into the mountain apes and turned into balls of golden light, moving back and forth between their injuries. Many mountain apes recovered their movement ability.

Golden needle Gu by itself was not wondrous. But when matched with poison liquid Gu, it could turn into poison needle. When matched with stiff Gu, it could make the enemies unable to move a single step. When matched with chaotic mind Gu, it could cause chaos among the enemies making them unable to differentiate between their allies and enemies. And when matched with vitality Gu, it had healing properties.

Tie Ruo Nan had spent around seven to eight days to be proficient in the combination of these four types of battle tactics. Thus, she was able to defeat close to a thousand mountain apes by herself.

"Ruo Nan, this child has an outstanding talent with high comprehension and more importantly, her nature is tenacious and resolute, she is indeed someone who will become a pillar of Tie clan." Tie Mu Bai watched this nearby with no expression on his face, but his heart was full of praises.

This old Tie clan leader had seen the rise of countless talents in his life and also witnessed the fall of innumerable geniuses.

He was very clear: In a dangerous and difficult environment, many outstanding geniuses would emerge. But talent was only one aspect, what mattered was the nature of the geniuses.

If a genius could put up with hardships and endure loneliness, they would definitely have great accomplishments in the future.

A genius that had poor disposition could only be a shooting star, shining for only an instant.

Why would Tie Mu Bai teach Tie Ruo Nan? On one hand, Tie Ruo Nan was blood-related to Tie Xue Leng, who had certain relationship with him; on the other hand, Tie Ruo Nan had been polished like limestone after a series of trials; all traces of impatience had gone leaving behind stability and perseverance.

Tie Ruo Nan was like an unpolished jade that let out dazzling light after being polished slightly.

"Old clan leader." Tie Ruo Nan climbed up the peak towards Tie Mu Bai and cupped her hands in greeting.

The girl was full of admiration and respect towards this old man.

Half a month ago, this old man Tie Mu Bai fought against two rank five experts of the demonic path by himself.

He first used rank five turn gold Gu to contend with the two demons easily. Then, he used rank five liquid metal Gu to make these two experts back out and weakened their fighting spirits; the battle finally ended with both sides relenting.

Tie Mu Bai’s strength was like a basin of cold water that poured on the hearts of the demonic Gu Masters, causing their rising flames of angers to weaken in an instant.

The conclusion of the battle was that both righteous and demonic paths could contend for three kings inheritance. But everyone could clearly see how good Tie Mu Bai was and that he had not used his full strength.

"Good. Being able to grasp this flexible battle tactic in such a short time is remarkable." Tie Mu Bai praised indifferently as he casually waved his hand.

Whoosh!

A large cloud of golden needle Gu shot out.

However, different from Tie Ruo Nan’s golden needle Gu, the golden needle Gu Tie Mu Bai commanded were extremely small like raindrops.

When they moved in the sky, they were like a cloud of golden fog.

The golden fog moved with the wind and brushed past an area of boulders. Pitter-patter sounds as if thousands of silkworms were eating mulberries came from the giant boulders.

Tie Ruo Nan’s pupils shrunk, immediately realizing the amazing aspect of this move.

The golden fog infiltrated and penetrated the boulders, creating countless tiny holes in them. The trees nearby the boulders were also pierced through, all signs of life within them extinguished instantly.

If someone were struck by these Gu, their whole body and insides would be perforated and destroyed; it was a really terrifying killer move!

Tie Mu Bai casually waved his hand and threw out three golden needle Gu.

These three golden needles were, however, different; they were thick and long. Normal golden needle Gu had a finger sized length, but these three golden needles had palm sized length.

The three golden needle Gu flew and pierced into a mountain ape’s head.

One shot like a perpendicular lightning, straight into the mountain ape from the top of its head, while the other two entered through the left and right temples; the needles almost completely entering the mountain ape’s head with only a small portion remaining on the outside.

This mountain ape had been healed by Tie Ruo Nan and was just making its escape when it was struck by the golden needles.

The mountain ape let out a painful scream and leaped a couple of times, kneeling in front of Tie Mu Bai.

The ape’s eyes were wide open with incomparable panic, dread and anger.

The strange thing was it could not control its body and kneeled down reverentially and without making any movements. It was not even able to let out a shout.

Tie Ruo Nan had never expected to see such a peculiar scene and was stupefied for a while.

Tie Mu Bai laughed and looked at the mountain ape at his feet, he indifferently said: "Golden needle Gu combined with create fog Gu can form golden fog. This golden fog looks faint and weak, but is actually extremely powerful and is specialized in breaking through Gu Master’s defense. When I was twenty-eight and was roaming Southern Border, I used this move to dominate the region of Luchuan river."

Tie Mu Bai paused for a while and continued: "Golden needle Gu combined with puppet control Gu, can take control of living bodies. When I was forty-two and my cultivation advanced to rank four peak stage, I ended my closed cultivation and began to roam the world to test my skills. When I arrived at Tie Mu mountain, I was attacked by a group of over fifty demonic path mountain bandits. I used this move to make thirty-eight of them defect and finally captured all of them and got rid of these evil beings."

Tie Ruo Nan became more fascinated the more she heard.

Since her early years, she followed her father and travelled everywhere. And she had heard of this old clan leader’s heroic deeds.

The old clan leader had A grade aptitude and revealed his talent the moment he started cultivating, becoming the number one youth star of Tie clan at that time. He also lived up to others’ expectations, advancing to rank four peak stage before fifty.

He ended his secluded cultivation and roamed Southern Border, crossing mountains and rivers to test his skills, and made a name for himself.

After returning to Tie clan, he became the clan leader and brought Tie clan to new heights. For a while, Tie clan was in such limelight that it made Wu clan, Shang clan and the rest lose their splendor.

His whole life was filled with glory and brilliance. He had countless battle achievements under him, whether it was his lone achievements while roaming the Southern Border or leading a group of heroes to eliminate evil - he had few losses.

The way he did his work was unyielding and domineering, daring to stand directly up to the enemies; many of his enemies would be terror stricken at the mention of him when he was reigning. Even righteous path figures would feel mental pressure when they heard Tie Mu Bai’s name.

Right now, as Tie Ruo Nan listened to the old clan leader recall those olden days indifferently, she became overwhelmed with emotions.

She could not help imagining a scene.

A hero at his prime, handsome and graceful, donning a blue robe, moved unhindered around the world. He defeated powerful enemies by himself, no one could block him and countless people watched him.

However, time was ruthless, turning that young man into an elderly.

But Tie Mu Bai was still Tie Mu Bai.

Even if he was more old, it could not hide his glorious deeds.

These battle accomplishments were a dazzling halo that covered his body and even the layers of dust of history could not block its radiance.

"Lord old clan leader, I will not let you down, golden needle Gu will not shame your name in my hands!" Tie Ruo Nan spoke resolutely.

The old man gratefully nodded and patted Tie Ruo Nan’s shoulder.

"Child, you have a strong mind and our Tie clan’s blood flows in your veins. You have to shoulder the responsibility of our Tie clan’s children. I will teach you all that I know, and I hope that one day, you can be capable enough to raise the flag of Tie clan. I am leaving that little beast king Fang Zheng to you as your test, do you have confidence?"

"I have confidence and also have a plan. Old clan leader, you can rest assured, Fang Zheng has already completely fallen into the demonic path, I will definitely retrieve his head!" Tie Ruo Nan’s eyes shone with resolute light.

"Good, do not be arrogant in victory or discouraged in defeat, you are able to get out of your shock and derive strength from your tribulation, this is something that is impossible for many youngsters. As long as you maintain this, you will definitely become the glory of Tie clan! Now, I shall teach you the principle behind these two tactics along with my insights and experience in them, as well as all the other different combinations that can be derived."

Like this, one taught diligently and another did her best to learn.

After over an hour, Tie Mu Bai finished teaching everything: "Good, you can ask me anything you are unclear about."

Tie Ruo Nan had outstanding comprehension ability and had already engraved all the teachings into her mind.

However, she thought for a while and asked: "These days, I have found that the opening time of three kings inheritance has been getting shorter and the amount of Gu Masters that can enter has also been getting lesser. The three light pillars are no longer as thick and bright as before. Right now, there has been many rumors saying the blessed land is already nearing its end. Is this true?"

Tie Mu Bai nodded: "It is indeed so."

"You are still not ready to learn some things. All living things exist in balance - with darkness, there is light; with water there is fire; with blessing, there is calamity." His gaze turned towards the peak of San Cha mountain and sighed: "Every blessed land will face earthly calamity every ten years and heavenly tribulation every hundred years. This blessed land originated from a mysterious Gu Immortal from ancient times and was later was inherited by the three kings and remodelled into this inheritance site."

"This blessed land is already old, its lifespan is almost at its end. A land spirit could prolong this time, but unfortunately there is no land spirit here."

"A blessed land without a land spirit is an enormous boat that is sinking. Anyone can enter inside and plunder the treasures within. The more they plunder, the bigger the holes in this giant boat and the quicker it would sink. This Gu Immortal blessed land is already nearing its end and will only last for less than ten years before it is destroyed due to the exhaustion of immortal essence."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"To think that even blessed lands faced destruction..." Tie Ruo Nan heard the secret and sighed lightly.

"How can there be any existence in this world that is indestructible? The cycle of heavenly fate, the competition of all living beings, in this wide universe, we mortals are like a single speck of sand at the bottom of an entire sea, small and insignificant. Only by advancing to a Gu Immortal, can we surpass mortality, and have our own foundation, turning from sand into an island, having the ability to resist the sea waves." Tie Mu Bai’s tone was full of lamentation.

"When the blessed land faces destruction, wouldn’t the people inside be in great danger?" Tie Ruo Nan asked again.

"That is right." Tie Mu Bai nodded: "The moment the blessed land vanishes, the wind of assimilation will blow, fusing heaven and earth together, as everything inside the blessed land would turn into the most basic primeval essence in this world. This wind’s power can sweep away all dust and particle, even Gu Immortals fear it, because even Gu Immortals can be destroyed by it."

"There is such a powerful wind?" Tie Ruo Nan was shocked beyond words, showing great worry in her eyes.

Tie Mu Bai waved his hand: "No worry, I have already stepped into the blessed land many times, I have gained deep understanding of it, and have always been observing and learning about it. The blessed land is indeed weakening, but there is still a long time before it faces destruction. During this period, the heavenly power in the blessed land will weaken, and the restrictions towards us Gu Masters would decrease. Slowly, we would be able to use one or two Gu, and then three or four, five or six... Eventually, the blessed land would be full of loopholes, and form an entrance where we can enter and exit at will."

Tie Mu Bai looked afar, his gaze deep and filled with knowledge, like he could predict the future.

"At the final period, that will be the true decisive battle of three kings inheritance. As the restriction from the blessed land is gone, anyone can use their full power. They can plunder and battle to their heart’s extent. By then, San Cha mountain would not only have three rank five Gu Masters, that would truly be the gathering of experts, the rise of snakes and dragons."

Tie Ruo Nan felt a flash of inspiration, and realized.

She finally understood why Tie Mu Bai did not fight to the death with those two demonic Gu Masters.

That is because, his future enemies were not only these two. Fighting with all he had so early on would only benefit others.

Towards the end of the three kings inheritance, the Gu Masters would receive greater and better rewards.

Those who truly understood the blessed land, had already been preparing for the final battle.

...

Central continent.

Tian Ti mountain.

Hu Immortal Blessed Land.

"I am finally at the mountain waist." Fang Zheng breathed roughly, sweat dripping from his forehead.

His arms and legs were numb and sore, they had no energy left. Using his own strength, and climbing to this level, it had squeezed out all the potential he had in his soul.

The mountain winds blew, and a strong feeling of dizziness hit him, causing Fang Zheng to feel like he was going to fall.

His entire vision was spinning, after his soul was expended to the max, he even lost the ability to think.

In his daze, he heard from within his aperture, the incubating flea: "Good, very good, my good disciple, you have endured this far, it was not easy. You have succeeded, now it will be up to your master me!"

Saying so, Fang Zheng felt a formless energy flowing into the deepest part of his soul.

The falling feeling immediately disappeared, like a child who was learning how to walk but was suddenly assisted by an adult.

His vision became clear, and Fang Zheng’s dizziness vanished at a rapid speed.

Fang Zheng breathed in deeply several times, he felt fantastic!

Like a traveller in the desert, about to die of thirst, but suddenly drinking fresh water. Or like someone who had worked non-stop all the time, suddenly sleeping seven days and seven nights.

Everything became great, he felt awesome.

"Good disciple, make use of your time, and climb quickly!" Lord Sky Crane urged.

"Yes master!" Fang Zheng’s eyes were shining like a tiger’s. He raised his head, and saw Feng Jin Huang and others, leading far ahead, but they were getting slower.

Fang Zheng felt an unprecedented sense of confidence.

"I can do it, with master’s help, I can definitely defeat these geniuses, and became the sole inheritor of Hu Immortal blessed land! Fang Zheng, hang in there!"

After encouraging himself for a bit, Fang Zheng continued climbing.

His movements became fast and steady, his speed was extremely fast, like he was bursting out his second wind. This performance, attracted people’s attention and emphasis.

After Hu Immortal blessed land opened, it was connected to the outside world.

Thus, the ten Gu Immortals outside the blessed land immediately found out Fang Zheng’s weird condition.

"Eh? This child, he was at his limit, and was about to be eliminated, how did he suddenly get so energetic?"

"Something’s strange, this speed is even faster than Feng Jin Huang and the others!"

"This junior is from Immortal Crane Sect. So that’s it, I see..."

The ten Gu Immortals exchanged their thoughts, and someone quickly found out Fang Zheng’s trump card.

"He Feng Yang, you sure are generous. Spirit incubating flea is not precious, but to ensure the flea still works, you used one’s own way Gu didn’t you?

He Feng Yang was one of Immortal Crane Sect’s supreme elders, he had a rank six "One’s own way Gu", everyone knew that.

One’s own way Gu, it allowed other Gu worms to operate in the blessed land.

It was an expenditure Gu, only usable for three times. After three times, it would vanish into thin air.

"He Feng Yang, you had great schemes, using this secret chess piece."

"I’m flattered. Among the youngsters, Myriad Dragon Dock has Ying Sheng Ji, Spirit Affinity House has Feng Jin Huang, Spirit Butterfly Valley has Xiao Qi Xing, we Immortal Crane Sect cannot contend, thus we had to do this." He Feng Yang was very modest and low-key.

The other Gu Immortals could only laugh dryly.

They had their own rank six Gu worms, but they did not have one’s own way Gu, they could not provide such assistance.

Rank six Gu worms were Immortal Gu, one in the world. At any point in time, in the whole wide world, only one exists.

Immortal Gu were so much rarer than rank five Gu worms, many rank six Immortals do not even have one Immortal Gu.

Back in Fang Yuan’s previous life, he became an immortal. But to refine his first rank six Spring Autumn Cicada, he spent a massive amount of time and effort, the moment he succeeded, the righteous path attacked him, their motive was the Immortal Gu.

The ten Gu Immortals here, because they relied on their sects, they all had their trump cards. But even then, they only had one to two Immortal Gu.

He Feng Yan had the one’s own way Gu, that means that other Gu Immortals did not!

The most important thing was, He Feng Yang’s act did not exceed their bottomline, nor did he break the rules of the game. The other Gu Immortals could only watch from here, unable to interfere.

"It is a pity my Immortal Gu specializes in attack, if I use it, that would be attacking the Hu Immortal inheritance, it would not work."

"Although I have a defensive Immortal Gu to protect the soul, my disciples do not have the immortal essence needed to activate it. Otherwise, Hu Immortal Inheritance would be ours for sure."

"The results are not determined yet, this disciple from Immortal Crane Sect has the help of the spirit incubating flea and has a huge advantage. But he was lagging behind from the start, we will have to see what happens from now..."

"Eighty years ago, He Feng Yang used the one’s own way Gu, this is the second time. That means, the one’s own way Gu in his hand can only be used one more time. He paid such a huge price, only to gain an advantage in competing for the inheritance."

The other Gu Immortals assessed, and decided to remain observers, not making their moves yet.

...

On San Cha mountain, three pillars of light shot into the sky.

The three kings inheritance opened again, strongly attracting all the southern border Gu Masters.

Just as Tie Mu Bai said, on San Cha mountain, experts started to gather, and a storm was brewing.

"Did you hear? Just yesterday, Li Fei Le came to San Cha mountain."

"Ah, you mean ’sturdy as a mountain’ Li Fei Le?"

Soon, another established expert came to San Cha mountain.

Li Fei Le’s cultivation was rank four upper stage, an earth path Gu Master. His title was ’sturdy as a mountain’, an expert in defense. He was Li clan’s rising star, and was nurtured greatly by the clan. But this person was dedicated towards pursuing strength.

Dedication after losing one’s direction, becomes obsession.

To pursue the greatest strength, he killed people to refine Gu, and was not accepted by the righteous path, becoming a demonic path cultivator.

Li Fei Le was only the start, in the month after, more and more established Gu Masters arrived at San Cha mountain.

The enslavement path Gu Master Zhang San San, when he was rank three peak stage, he killed a rank four Gu Master, now that he was rank four middle stage, people called him the enslavement master.

The righteous path expert Tao Zi, he had a famous rank five healing Gu that was renowned in southern border — spirit peach Gu.

There was also Yun Luo Tian, young clan leader of Yun clan, wind path Gu Master, reaching rank three peak stage at age twenty-three. Right now, he was thirty-five, a step away from rank four peak stage.

More and more famous Gu Masters, like sharks smelling blood, stepped into San Cha mountain, competing for the three kings inheritance and trying to get their share of the pie.

These Gu Masters had at least rank three upper stage cultivation, and some were even rank four realm.

A month later, San Cha mountain saw its fourth rank five Gu Master.

Wang Xiao.

He was the owner of Wu mountain, a demonic Gu Master, rank five poison cultivator, a true overlord of his area.

Two months later, Wu clan’s Wu Lan Shan arrived.

As the number one clan, Wu clan had always been dominating southern border. The Wu Lan Shan they sent was the younger cousin of Wu clan leader, once she appeared, she held a great battle with Wang Xiao.

Although the battle ended in a draw, her performance showed she exceeded Ku Mo and Wu Gui.

Another eight days later, Chou Jiu who was famous among the demonic cultivators, appeared on San Cha mountain’s mountain foot, causing a commotion.

Chou Jiu was also rank five, but had little battle strength. He was a healing Gu Master, the famous killer ghost doctor, one of the four great doctors together with doctor Su Shou, travelling doctor Jiu Zhi, and divine doctor Sheng Shou.

He had a strange personality, having this weird rule, anyone he heals needs to kill a person for him in return.

He saves a live, and takes another. Thus people call him: killer ghost doctor.

He who walks by the river is bound to get his shoes wet. In this cruel world, Gu Masters cannot avoid getting injured and sick, they will have to beg a doctor for help eventually.

The four great doctors healed both demonic and righteous, once the killer ghost doctor ascended San Cha mountain, he was invited by Tie Mu Bai earnestly, and the two drank happily in a banquet.

Time passed by quickly, the three kings inheritance opened and closed, closed and opened.

This day, three kings inheritance opened again.

At the mountain foot, two people appeared.

Soon, people recognised them, screaming in shock: "The black and white twin demons, they are here again!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

On the mountain peak, three light pillars of red, blue, and yellow presented themselves before the people.

Compared to the start, observant people could see that these three pillars had dimmed greatly, at the same time their size had shrunk, less than half of the original.

This Gu Immortal Blessed Land that originated from ancient times, had reached its final moments. After being remodelled by the three kings, it was starting to collapse under the plundering of countless Gu Masters.

It was like a sinking ship, the seawater had submerged more than half of it, only the sail and mast are still floating.

"Old clan leader Tie, you first." After considering for a while, Wu Lan Shan cupped her fists politely at Tie Mu Bai.

Among the rank five Gu Masters present, Tie Mu Bai was still the one with greatest strength.

On this San Cha Mountain, he was the number one person of the rank fives. Even throughout southern border, he was a top-tier rank five Gu Master.

Tie Mu bai’s status was publicly recognised.

Even opponents like Ku Mo and Wu Gui had to admit this point.

Tie Mu Bai looked at the three pillars, nodding: "Then I will go first."

His every action was under everyone’s observation. The few thousand Gu Masters at the inheritance entrance were all looking at him.

Tie Mu Bai took the lead, entering King Xin Inheritance.

Wu Gui and Ku Mo looked at each other, since Tie Mu Bai chose King Xin Inheritance, they should avoid encountering him.

Between rank five Gu Masters, they tend to avoid such unnecessary competition.

The final battle at the end was the stage for them to unleash their true abilities.

After Tie Mu Bai, Wu Lan Shan, Wang Xiao and the others all chose their respective entrances, entering the inheritance.

Next, Yi Huo was the first rank four peak stage Gu Master to enter, followed by the others.

On San Cha mountain, righteous and demonic Gu Masters were gathered together. Enemies who usually fought on sight became extremely orderly when it came to such huge benefits.

But at this moment, the quiet mountain peak became noisy.

First, it was the Gu Masters standing at the outside area discussing among themselves. Soon, Gu Masters in the inner circle also turned their heads to look.

"It is the black and white twin demons, they are finally back!" Some recognised the source of the commotion, and exclaimed.

"They are the black and white twin demons? The recent rising stars of the demonic path?" Some people saw Fang and Bai for the first time and observed them closely.

"These two youngsters are not simple. One was trapped by the Tie clan old-timers for months without falling. The other is even stronger, fighting seven Tie clansmen single-handedly and even killing Tie Ba Xiu!" Someone introduced.

Fang and Bai had caused a great commotion in San Cha mountain, it left a deep impression on them. Now, many people could still vividly recall the scene.

Tie Ba Xiu... I fought against him before. Fang Zheng is truly not simple, being able to kill him at such a young age." Someone nodded, his expression turning solemn.

"From what I see, his ’present age overlord’ is just a overstatement. Letting a junior get famous, he is a disgrace to his generation." A Gu Master scoffed.

"So what if the black and white demons came? Times are different now, on San Cha mountain, there are six rank five Gu Masters! The two of them are rank four Gu Masters, they can’t do anything here."

"That’s right, especially after Fang Zheng killed some Tie clansmen, Tie Mu Bai would not let him off. But he is really daring, still having the guts to come here."

"Isn’t it obvious, he only dared to show up after Tie Mu Bai entered the inheritance."

The people discussed softly, all sorts of gazes were on Fang and Bai; curiosity, inspection, solemn, and frivolous.

There were also many others who did not look at them, but placed their sights on another person.

This person was standing among the rank four Gu Masters, tight clothing with eyes shining like stars, tightly knit eyebrows, it was Tie Ruo Nan.

Tie Ruo Nan was a rank four Gu Master, she naturally stood with the rank four Gu Masters to enter the inheritance.

Although Tie Mu Bai was the number one person on San Cha mountain, he had to follow the rules, and be an example. Otherwise, he would not be able to control the Gu Masters on San Cha mountain.

This was the conduct of a leader of the righteous path.

"Fang Zheng, it’s you!" Tie Ruo Nan stood out from the people, staring fiercely at Fang Yuan, her tone extremely agitated.

Seeing Fang Yuan, the enemy who had so many Tie clansmen’s blood on his hands, the young girl’s heart was filled with hatred and anger, she wanted to go and kill him immediately.

Her tightly clenched fists slowly loosened.

Tightened and loosened, loosened and tightened. Such a repetitive action showed the struggle in her heart.

Eventually, Tie Ruo Nan opened her palm, breathing out deeply, her eyes regaining clarity: "Little beast king, you do not have to worry about old clan leader’s attack. Your life is mine, one day, I will kill you, and offer it to the heroic spirit of my Tie clansmen. Just you wait!"

Saying so, the young girl turned around and entered the light pillar, vanishing.

"Is Tie Ruo Nan afraid? She left without fighting!"

"It seems little beast king’s dominance remains, this Tie clan young master did not dare to battle."

"I feel that this young girl was smart. The three kings inheritance is in front of her, such a rare event should be treasured. What is the point of fighting and killing now?"

Fang Yuan frowned deeply.

Tie Ruo Nan’s performance surprised him. Being able to control her furious emotions, it was not an easy task. Many famous Gu Masters could not do it.

"Tie Ruo Nan... I cannot let you grow further."

This was rare, Fang Yuan felt threat from someone of the same generation.

The things Tie Mu Bai taught Tie Ruo Nan were not a secret, everyone knew about it. Fang Yuan, of course, knew clearly.

Tie Ruo Nan had talent, aptitude, and her heart was determined. Adding in the nurturing of the clan, she was like a swallow soaring into the heavens, one day, she will rise beyond the clouds, and turn into a phoenix.

Controlling the killing intent in his heart, Fang Yuan walked towards the inheritance entrance.

A large portion of the rank four Gu Masters gave way to them immediately.

"Hold it." Suddenly, a righteous Gu Master walked up and blocked their paths.

This righteous Gu Master wore white clothing, his sleeves were wide and swayed with the wind, and he had a handsome face. It was none other than Yun clan’s young clan leader, Yun Luo Tian.

"Little beast king, I heard you killed Tie Ba Xiu." Yun Luo Tian stood before Fang Yuan, after giving him a glance, he started to observe Bai Ning Bing.

"Do you know?" He pointed at Fang Yuan, saying arrogantly: "You won in an unfair way, you used a flying Gu and killed a member my righteous faction, you took the easy way out."

The atmosphere was extremely heavy.

Yun Luo Tian’s words were very offensive, and Fang Yuan was an arrogant person, at this rate, they were going to fight.

Many Gu Masters took steps back, getting away from these two.

Under everyone’s gaze, Fang Yuan’s eyes were eerie as he looked at Yun Luo Tian, nodding, suddenly laughing: "You are right, I used a loophole and killed Tie Ba Xiu, sorry about that."

Yun Luo Tian was stunned, he did not think that this little beast king would reply this way. Isn’t this different from the information about him?

These years of closed cultivation, he had trained in the art of flying. He feels that his flying skills were not inferior to the few flying experts of southern border. Thus, he wanted to challenge Fang Yuan, and build his reputation.

But Fang Yuan was so courteous, he could not continue finding problems with him.

Demonic cultivators were evil and ruthless, but he was a righteous member, and the young clan leader of Yun clan, his every action was closely inspected, after all, it represented Yun clan’s image.

Yun Luo Tian stood dazed for a moment before calming his mind: "We let young master Tie Ruo Nan go first because we admire old clan leader Tie Mu Bai. Since you know you had an unfair victory, you should stand down now. There are so many heroes and geniuses here, it is not your turn to enter yet."

Yun Luo Tian waved his sleeve at Fang Yuan, speaking plainly.

Although he secretly flattered the people around him, it caused them to become even more nervous, and everyone felt a storm approaching.

Just as everyone was preparing for battle, Fang Yuan took a step back: "Sir makes sense. It was my fault, you guys should go first."

Yun Luo Tian laughed loudly, waving his sleeves and relaxed, walking towards the light pillar, entering after tens of steps.

Although he did not fight with Fang Yuan, he felt the gains were greater.

Not long after, words would spread that he challenged little beast king verbally, and scared this demonic rising star till he retreated.

At that time, his reputation would surge, and Yun clan's reputation in the righteous faction would rise as well.

After Yun Luo Tian entered the inheritance, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing entered King Bao Inheritance together.

Seeing them disappear, the remaining rank four Gu Masters started conversing.

"Is this still little beast king? He is so polite?"

"Did he take the wrong medicine, or did I see wrongly? This world is changing too quickly!"

"Hehe, little beast king gave in, he is such a coward. If it was me, I would've rolled up my sleeves and fought."

"Sigh, his opponent is Yun Luo Tian after all! Although Yun clan is not a super clan, it is still a first-class clan."

...

After his vision of the spinning world calmed down, Fang Yuan assessed his surroundings.

Grey-white sky, light red ground, extended towards the horizons. On the ground, there were pieces of volcanic rocks, hot rising steam, or grey dust cloud.

"Devil again, they descended again!"

"My companions, quickly gather together. As long as we fight together, we can defeat the demon king!"

"Come, our Hong Dan village can only be protected by ourselves!"

The top of volcanic rocks were flipped over, and tiny humans walked out.

These tiny people were the size of babies, they were pink and tender, extremely cute. Most importantly, at the middle of their chests, they had a cute and round red egg.

These were the eggmen.

Similar to the hairy men, they were variant humans.

Fang Yuan gave a glance, and knew these were the red eggmen among the eggmen. The egg on them were red, and they used the large volcanic rocks to build their houses, and lived inside.

At this moment, Fang Yuan could only use one exploding egg Gu.

King Bao Inheritance's aim was to make Fang Yuan use the exploding egg Gu to exterminate these red eggmen. That way, he can advance to the next round.

Facing the assaulting red eggmen, Fang Yuan did not move.

He let them attack him.

These attacks accumulated, quickly injuring him heavily.

Fang Yuan could not breathe properly, he was bathed in blood and the feeling of death was creeping up on him. At this moment, even if he used the exploding egg Gu, it could not change the situation.

Letting himself get into such a dangerous situation, Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a smile.

"This moment has finally arrived!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

A bunch of short red eggmen encircled Fang Yuan, attacking constantly.

"Eh? Is this devil a fool, why is he not moving?"

"If only all devils were such fools, that would be great!"

"Do not let your guard down, devils are extremely crafty, quickly kill him."

Seeing Fang Yuan about to die, the red eggmen cheered victoriously.

But at this moment, a formless energy descended and swept Fang Yuan away!

Falling into encirclement, the dying and unconsciously Fang Yuan vanished without a trace, leaving behind a bunch of shocked red eggmen.

When Fang Yuan woke up from his slumber, the scenery before him was completely different than before.

This was a dark blue colored hall.

The hall was extremely plain, made with large cube bronze blocks. There were a lot of moss on the blocks, showing how long they have already existed.

Fang Yuan laid on the center of the hall, feeling the chill from the bronze block under his back.

"I’ve already healed your injuries." A large tortoise opened its wrinkled eyes slowly, staring at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan slowly got up from the ground, first touching his own body, his injuries were truly healed.

Next, he looked around the hall in a calm expression.

Lastly, he turned his gaze over towards the huge tortoise before him.

This huge tortoise was large as a house, a thick and hard jade thin shell on its back. Its four legs were like elephant legs, and there were two dragon whiskers growing out of its face.

Fang Yuan looked at this huge tortoise, his lips curling into a smile, as his smile turned into laughter.

"Hahaha..." His laughter echoed in the hall.

He purposely courted death, not even using the Spring Autumn Cicada, it was all because of his previous life’s knowledge and information, there was a huge risk involved. It could be said, one wrong move and game over . But a demonic cultivator moved forward relentlessly, they were most skilled at all-in gambles. Right now, Fang Yuan reached the main hall, and his risks had all paid off.

After laughing heartily, Fang Yuan stopped laughing, facing the huge tortoise: "Land spirit Ba Gui, you finally awakened from your slumber."

"You know me?" The huge tortoise’s voice created vibrations as there was some suspicion in its eyes.

"That’s right, I know you, and I also know the secret of this blessed land." Fang Yuan nodded, walking in the hall with his hands behind his back.

"This blessed land originated from an ancient strength path Gu Immortal. The Gu Immortal protected the blessed land, resisting calamities and tribulations, but eventually, he died in one of the tribulations. His dying wish gathered with this blessed land’s heavenly power, formed the land spirit. That is you, Ba Gui. As long as I complete his wish before he died, I can become the new owner of this blessed land, am I right about that?"

Fang Yuan spoke openly, not beating about the bush.

Although the land spirit is formed from the Gu Immortal, it is no longer human, but merely the immortal’s will.

Using an explanation from Earth, that would be, a preprogrammed AI 1 .

As long as the land spirit’s requirement is met, one can gain its recognition and become the new owner of the blessed land.

Thus, when Fang Yuan spoke, there was no need for any schemes or plots.

The huge tortoise nodded: "That’s right, his final wish before dying is also the blessed land’s test. As long as you can complete it, you can become my master."

"And the contents of this wish, is to refine the second aperture Gu right?" Fang Yuan followed.

During ancient times, strength path flourished, eight out of ten Gu Masters walked the strength path.

This blessed land’s original master, was a strength path Gu Immortal, he created the recipe for second aperture Gu. But right before the crucial step, he died in a tribulation.

After he died, this final obsession became the land spirit.

That is, the huge tortoise before Fang Yuan now.

To complete this wish, the huge tortoise had been waiting aimlessly. But time passed, and no one that fulfilled the criteria showed up.

This fated person, had to be a strength path Gu Master, owned beast phantoms, and also strong to a degree.

Next, this strength path Gu Master had to be on the brink of death to receive this opportunity.

This is because, the blessed land’s previous owner had a lot of lingering grudge and hatred, refusing to let others gain his fortune so easily.

But he still wanted to refine the second aperture Gu, thus there was such a requirement for the fated person to be as close to death as possible, just like him. Only someone who had shared his emotion could be qualified to gain everything.

But time passed, and the calamities and tribulations continued to occur.

The land spirit Ba Gui could not find a suitable strength path Gu Master.

To preserve its immortal essence, it could only choose to slumber helplessly.

The wide and huge blessed land, after many calamities and tribulations, had shrunk to less than one percent of its original size.

One calamity was enough to puncture a thousand holes in the blessed land.

Thus, there was a hole created, and a path to the outside world was connected to the blessed land.

Three roaming kids came here and relied on the blessed land’s resources to cultivate to fruition. These were the three kings of the demonic path.

After the three kings got their revenge, they returned to the blessed land to live.

As time passed, they got more familiar with the blessed land and were a step away from rank six.

But in the end, none of them broke through and before dying, they remodelled the place into the three kings inheritance ground.

The three kings walked on the refinement, fire, and enslavement path, none was a strength path Gu Master.

The moment the remodelling began, the land spirit was woken up.

It watched silently without stopping them. It wanted to use this inheritance to attract qualified strength path Gu Masters as well.

When the three kings inheritance opened, countless Gu Masters entered, and increased the blessed land’s immortal essence expenditure. As the blessed land faced the risk of destruction, the huge tortoise awakened from its slumber.

After waking up, the first thing the land spirit did was to find the fated person.

In the entire blessed land, there were many strength path Gu Masters. But those who fulfilled its requirements were none.

In ancient times, strength path was mainstream. But now that times have changed, strength path was eliminated, on the brink of extinction. Those who truly cultivated strength path to a high level, were even rarer.

Hearing Fang Yuan talk about the second aperture Gu, the land spirit Ba Gui was stunned: "You know a lot."

It felt strange, but did not pursue the matter.

To it, the fated person had already been found, now the next target was to refine the second aperture Gu.

However, it was not easy to refine second aperture Gu.

That is because, second aperture Gu was not a mortal Gu, it was a rank six Immortal Gu!

But Fang Yuan was already mentally prepared, directly asking: "Second aperture Gu is a rank six Gu. Rank five is mortal, rank six is immortal! To refine an Immortal Gu, the most basic condition is immortal essence! In the blessed land, how much immortal essence is left?"

The tortoise turned its body, gazing deep within the hall.

The flooring cracked open, as a hole appeared, and a bronze cauldron rose slowly. Eventually, the flooring closed up, leaving the cauldron alone in the hall.

This cauldron had three legs and two handles, it was filled with immortal essence inside.

The immortal essence was a greenish water, crystal clear and giving off a rusty smell.

There was very little immortal essence, only a thin layer left in the cauldron, and as time flowed, it slowly decreased drop by drop.

This is because, after the blessed land opened, countless Gu Masters explored, and entered and left multiple times, expending immortal essence.

"But this is already much better than in my previous life. As long as I ration it properly..." Fang Yuan looked at this layer of immortal essence, thinking deeply, as sparks seemed to be flying above his head.

In his previous life, after the three kings inheritance opened, the land spirit waited but did not meet its fated owner.

Only towards the end of the inheritance did the land spirit find a suitable, dying strength path Gu Master and transported him in.

This lucky person was a demonic path member, surviving the ordeal and benefitting from the crisis.

However, he was very poor at refining Gu worms, when he started the refinement process, he died.

Towards the end, Gu Masters had a great understanding of the three kings inheritance, and knew when to advance and retreat. They all had some trump cards or tokens to preserve their lives, and could easily leave at will.

Towards the end, the blessed land could not sustain it much more, and Gu Masters could freely use their Gu worms, fighting and causing bloodshed.

Where there are battles, there are deaths and injuries.

The land spirit found a chance, and chose a few strength path Gu Masters from among them.

But by then, it was already too late. There was a severe lack of immortal essence, and the land spirit was severely weakened, unable to do anything.

In the end, the blessed land continued to break down, as Gu Masters found this hall. Arriving here, they battled with the land spirit, and killed the strength path Gu Master who was refining the Gu.

Only then did they know, that San Cha mountain’s blessed land held such a secret.

But at that time, immortal essence was expended, and the land spirit was dead, the Gu refinement ended in utter failure.

The legendary second aperture Gu, became extinct before the first one was even created.

"Second aperture Gu, allowing a Gu Master to have a second aperture. Even an idiot would know the value of this Gu! I have A grade aptitude now, one aperture holds ninety percent primeval essence. If I have the second aperture Gu, I would have a hundred and eighty percent primeval essence. At the same time, I can have double the primeval essence recovery speed, and even a second set of Gu worms. My battle strength will surge, and create history for myself. Once I succeed, I will definitely be the strongest person among the same rank!"

Fang Yuan was secretly excited.

But to refine this Immortal Gu, the process was really difficult, it would not be an easy task. Even Tie Mu Bai would feel stunned at this.

But to Fang Yuan, it was another situation all together.

Firstly, he was a rank six Gu Immortal in his past life who used the Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth, he also succeeded in refining the Spring Autumn Cicada, he had the precious experience of creating an Immortal Gu.

Secondly, ever since the three kings inheritance opened, he had been plotting.

He challenged strength path Gu Masters everywhere, eliminating his competition. Xue San Si, Century Boy, they were all chosen by the land spirit in his previous life, but now, they died in Fang Yuan’s hands.

Lastly, he had the help of the land spirit.

In his previous life, the land spirit was already very weak when he saw the first lucky person. Towards the end, it was so feeble it got killed by a bunch of mortals.

But this life was different!

Fang Yuan approached death purposely, coming here in advance, he would receive great help from the land spirit.

"Back then, that Gu Immortal had made ample preparations to refine this Gu. With such a foundation, I have at least fifty percent chance of succeeding in this refinement.

Back when Fang Yuan refined Spring Autumn Cicada, he had less than twenty percent chance of succeeding. Now that he was refining the second aperture Gu, he had fifty percent, it was extremely high!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Soon, Fang Yuan calmed down.

Second aperture Gu was only an opportunity, to make it a reality, it needed planning and effort.

"Whether the refinement of second aperture Gu succeeds or fails, a large amount of immortal essence will be consumed. Without immortal essence, the blessed land cannot contend against the upcoming earthly calamity and heavenly tribulation. That is to say, even if I become the owner of the blessed land, this blessed land can no longer be saved and I will have to give up on it."

"Thus, second aperture Gu will be my greatest reward for this trip."

However, the whole matter was not so easy and simple. The situation Fang Yuan was facing now was extremely complex.

With the start of the refinement of second aperture Gu, the remaining immortal essence would start decreasing sharply; the blessed land would weaken greatly and the assistance the land spirit could give would become lesser and lesser.

At the same time, he also needed to consider the Gu Masters within the blessed land. If they discovered this main hall, they were sure to attack together just like in his previous life and disrupt the process of the Gu refinement.

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with sharp light and after pondering for a while, he took the initiative to demand: "Land spirit, tell me the recipe for refining the second aperture Gu."

Land spirit Ba Gui slowly nodded its head and its deep voice entered Fang Yuan’s ears: "Then listen properly, this is the full content of the recipe."

"Rotten soil blood powder, treasure flower in the earth. Jade bone turned into petals, ice muscles into stalks and golden relic into the heart of the flower. A bright stellar fire, gather ice and snow into plains. Yang cloud burns with elixir fire below and yin clouds scatter sand like gold above, add beast phantoms in the middle until lightning crackles, creating beast strength placenta, and start collecting apertures... Wild grass grow wildly, the qi of blood like the sea. Three hundred years as spring, five hundred years as autumn. With unlimited divine opportunity, swim and roam in the wilds, adding in third watch, and another third watch, obtaining nine. Nine as extreme, the refinement is complete!"

The recipe content was huge and had close to ten thousand words.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned grave as he listened.

There were up to a thousand steps in refining this second aperture Gu. The early stage involved hundreds of types of materials, the middle stage used up large numbers of rank four and rank five Gu, and it continued to become more arduous as it got closer to the last step, until finally, it needed the use of another rank six Immortal Gu!

"This is not good, the difficulty in refining second aperture Gu is many times higher than I estimated. The intel in my previous life only talked of the early stage of the recipe mixed with much misinterpretation from the people involved."

Fang Yuan’s heart sank, the fifty percent confidence he had turned to about thirty percent after he heard the recipe.

"You don’t need to worry too much, large amounts of materials and Gu worms for refining second aperture Gu had already been stored in this main hall."

With the land spirit’s words, the whole main hall was suffused with dark blue light.

The brilliant radiance shone over the main hall; the relief sculptures on the surface of the main hall suddenly protruded out and turned into solid.

Fang Yuan was amazed at this change: "This is clearly a kind of storage method, this is the first time I am seeing it. Sigh, many methods of the ancient era had disappeared along the river of time."

Materials after materials of all kinds dazzled his eyes. There were at least five thousand Gu worms from rank one to rank five; among them, there were over six hundred rank four Gu and no less than eighty rank five Gu!

Rank five Gu which were very rare in the outside world had unexpectedly numbered to almost a hundred at this main hall. And the expensive rank four Gu had apparently become as rare as cabbages here.

"So many top-tier materials! There are so many Gu which I have never seen... these strength path Gu, if I obtain them, my battle strength will definitely rise by over ten-folds! And there are also over ten yellow gold relic Gu along with eight purple crystal relic Gu! If I used them, I will be able to advance to rank five peak stage within moments!"

Fang Yuan looked at these rank four and rank five Gu, and had a thought of giving up the refinement of second aperture Gu and directly taking all these Gu worms.

However, this impulse was immediately extinguished by him.

With the land spirit beside him keeping guard, these Gu worms could only be used to refine second aperture Gu and he was unable to use them for his personal use.

Secondly, second aperture Gu would be a great help in the future if it was refined, and it would provide enormous help even at rank six realm.

Second aperture Gu was a long term investment and its benefits would soar to the sky especially after one reached rank six.

"There is still one extremely crucial Gu worm left." Ba Gui said and opened his eyes, using all his strength to control this main hall.

The blue radiance increased sharply and reached and unbearable intensity.

The immortal essence in the bronze cauldron began deplete bit by bit.

Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes, and within this blue light, he saw a confined Immortal Gu.

It was like a round gem, the gem’s whole body was yellow and was hollow inside with a ball of purple smoke in it.

This smoke transformed constantly; suddenly turning into a pegasus or an immortal crane the next moment, or changing into a moving cloud or pure thunderbolt.

Following its appearance, a strong wine fragrance spread through the whole main hall.

Fang Yuan took a few breaths and immediately felt drunk; his eyes turned hazy and his mind became dizzy, he immediately held his breath.

"This is the rank six Immortal Gu – Divine Travel." The land spirit introduced.

Divine travel Gu!

Fang Yuan opened his eyes wide and stared at this Gu without even blinking.

Divine Travel Gu was very mysterious and also legendary. Its earliest appearance was in <>.

<> was the first classic of Gu. It appeared to be a story when one first read it but it actually held profound messages, recording the secrets of the ancient times and all kinds of Gu. Some Gu were directly described like wisdom Gu, strength Gu and so on. And some Gu were hidden, their descriptions were very vague, requiring the readers to dig through it and study carefully.

In the legends of Ren Zu, divine travel Gu's earliest appearance was beside Verdant Great Sun.

Verdant Great Sun drank four different top-tier wines in the world; the dense liquor aura in his body congealed into divine travel Gu.

Divine travel Gu had the power to send the Gu Master to any place in the world. But its activation required the Gu Master to be in a drunken state and its destination also could not be controlled.

Verdant Great Sun was transported to many dangerous places and suffered a lot due to divine travel Gu, his life on the line several times.

"Divine travel Gu might be one of the four great movement Gu and is very powerful at that, but its flaw is extremely big, who would dare to use it? Even Verdant Great Sun had no choice but to refine divine travel Gu into fixed immortal travel Gu in the end. No wonder the original master of this blessed land chose this Gu to refine into second aperture Gu."

Fixed immortal travel Gu was also one of the four great movement Gu and could send the Gu Master to any place they wanted to, even if the destination was at the edge of the world. But the prerequisite was that the Gu Master needed to have a concrete impression of their destination. If there was any huge changes to their destination, they would fail in using the fixed immortal travel Gu.

Fang Yuan carefully pondered and understood the intentions of this ancient strength path Gu Immortal.

Divine travel Gu might be at the noble rank six but its every use carried extremely high risk and had low worth in using. Thus, Verdant Great Sun refined it into fixed immortal travel Gu, while this ancient strength path Gu Master thought of using it to refine second aperture Gu.

The land spirit Ba Gui carefully resealed the divine travel Gu and asked: "When do you plan on beginning the refinement?"

"There is no rush, let me first study this recipe properly." Fang Yuan sat cross-legged on the spot and closed his eyes to contemplate.

Humans were the spirit of all living beings and Gu were the essence of the world.

After a Gu Master's cultivation reached a profound level, they would understand a principle; a Gu Master using Gu was not simply using the Gu worms as a tool. But rather, it was a way to understand heaven and earth.

Gu worms were the vessels that carry the law fragments of the Great Dao. Refining Gu was not simply following random steps but was based on the understanding of law fragments.

A recipe not only contained the process of refining Gu, but even more importantly, it contained its creator’s comprehension of heaven and earth.

From this recipe, Fang Yuan could study the experimentation and insights of the original owner of this blessed land, the ancient strength path Gu Immortal. And when he compared them with his own experiences, he would gain an even deeper understanding of the Great Dao; this was absolutely a beneficial matter.

"Gu Master can only have one aperture from birth, if there was a second aperture, this would truly be an act of defying heaven. I see why divine travel Gu was chosen."

Fang Yuan opened his eyes after a long while, gaining a deeper understanding of the whole refinement process.

"Land spirit, let’s start the refinement!"

"Okay." Land spirit immediately responded and gave two kinds of materials and a Gu worm to Fang Yuan.

First material was green pond rotten soil which originated ten thousand feet deep under a rotten and poisonous marsh, and was extremely toxic. Even Fang Yuan’s arm would be rotten within a few breaths if he touched it.

Second material was a blood colored powder which had a rather large origin. The blood of eight kinds of immemorial desolate beasts were mixed, solidified and then grinded to form this powder.

The Gu worm, however, was common and Fang Yuan had come in touch with it at Qing Mao mountain.

It was earth treasury flower.

Earth treasury flower was a storage Gu. Flower wine monk planted it in the depths of the cave to store several Gu worms which were obtained by Fang Yuan in the end.

With the land spirit’s assistance, Fang Yuan mixed the green pond rotten soil and eight desolate blood powder.

After the mixture became an evenly distributed soil, he planted the earth treasury flower in it.

Earth treasury flower immediately decayed and died when it entered the soil. Whether it was the toxicity of the green pond rotten soil or the violent nature of the eight desolate blood powder, they both were something the earth treasury flower could not endure easily.

However, Fang Yuan had already anticipated this situation and was not discouraged.

Land spirit took out another earth treasury flower Gu, and Fang Yuan casually planted it.

That ancient strength path Gu Immortal had already foreseen the probability of failure in every step and had thus prepared enough spare material.

After continuously failing several times, Fang Yuan finally succeeded in planting the earth treasury flower in the soil.

Green pool rotten soil’s toxicity and the blood power of the eight desolate blood powder formed a kind of subtle balance, causing a strange transformation within the earth treasury flower Gu.

This was the first step of the recipe — rotten soil blood powder, treasure flower in the earth .

Next was ’jade bone turned into petals, ice muscles into stalks and golden relic into the heart of the flower’ ; it required the use of jade bone Gu, ice muscle Gu and yellow golden relic Gu along with skilled Gu refinement techniques.

Third step ’bright stellar fire, gather ice and snow into plains’ ; this could easily be misunderstood with stellar fire Gu and snowy plain Gu. But the firepower from that would be inadequate. In fact, the two phrases needed to be combined to be understood, the true answer was to use stellar fire prairie Gu together with snowy plain Gu, only then would there be balance.

Fang Yuan followed the order one by one.

At the fourth step ’Yang cloud burns with elixir fire below and yin clouds scatter sand like gold above’; this tested his multitasking ability.

Fang Yuan first used yang cloud Gu with elixir fire Gu, then activated yin cloud Gu and used golden sand Gu.

The yin and yang clouds mixed with the smoke from previous steps. Spheres of fiery orange elixir fire rose up from the yang cloud. The golden sand fell down from the yin cloud like a light drizzle.

"Yin above and yang below is anti-balance... this is the critical juncture! Go, white elephant beast phantom." Fang Yuan’s eyes burst out with divine light as he activated all-out effort Gu and summoned white elephant phantom.

White elephant phantom collided into the center of yin and yang clouds and was grinded down by elixir fire and golden sand.

With a soft explosion, white elephant phantom turned into a ball of white light and revolved in the air.

"Again, black python beast phantom." Fang Yuan pointed and sacrificed another beast strength phantom.

Black python entered the center of the clouds and quickly turned into black ray and spun around the white light; the two were in an endless tangle.

"Stone turtle beast phantom, horse beast phantom." Another two beast phantoms flew out of Fang Yuan’s body.

Four beast phantoms tangled against each other and formed a whirlpool of colorful light, but there was still something lacking.

"Strange! Why have they not fused?" Fang Yuan was baffled, this was the first difficulty he had ran into.

The colorful whirlpool was being grinded down by the elixir fire and the golden sand, and was continuously becoming smaller; the multiple auras could not fuse together.

Fang Yuan suddenly had a thought as he looked at the process which was about to end in failure: "Wait a second, could it be..."

He began to control the four beast phantoms.

White elephant beast phantom was steady and simple. Black python phantom was coiling and cold. Stone turtle phantom was still as a mountain. And horse beast phantom ran with the wind.

These four beast phantoms were just carelessly tangling with each other before, but under Fang Yuan’s control now, each of them began to display their true disposition and nature.

Boom!

Thunder crackled and a strange transformation began.

Yin and yang clouds moved, yin cloud sank down and yang cloud rose up; the two forming into a whole entity.

The mist surged and mixed ceaselessly with lightning and thunder constantly crackling inside.

"So it was like that. No wonder it needed strength path Gu Master, although those who merely possessed beast phantoms would still not be able to succeed. The Gu Master must understand the true nature of each beast phantom to start the fusion." Fang Yuan let out a breath of relief and comprehended the process.

Rumble...

Lightning crackled and thunder exploded.

The sound was like war drums, becoming more condensed and finally blending into one.

Boom Boom Boom...

Under continuous rumbling sounds, the mist completely fused into one color before suddenly exploding.

A frenzy wind blew, dispersing all the clouds and mist.

Only one Gu remained in the air.

This Gu was rank five Gu and was like a disk. Its surface was rough like an embryo made of grass and soil. In the middle of the disk was a ferocious beast with the head of a horse, tusks of an elephant, body of a turtle and the tail of a snake.

"This is the beast strength placenta Gu." Fang Yuan relaxed his mind when he saw this Gu; the moment he relaxed, he fell down to the ground and fell asleep.

He had used a total of five days and five nights to refine this Gu. He had not rested a moment during this time and had been multitasking the whole time; his mental energy had been used to the limits, and he was extremely exhausted.

This sleep lasted for a day and a night before Fang Yuan woke up.

He touched the beast strength placenta Gu and recalled the recipe: "Yang cloud burns with elixir fire below and yin clouds scatter sand like gold from above, add beast phantoms in the middle till lightning crackles, creating beast strength placenta, and start collecting apertures..."

"Next is gathering apertures!" Thinking of this, he stood up and said to the land spirit: "Ba Gui, it is time."

Ba Gui was also straightforward: "Alright, I can send you to wherever you want to go in the blessed land."

A large map appeared in front of Fang Yuan along with all kinds of scenes, displaying everything in the blessed land.

Everything from Gu Masters, hairy men, dog beasts and so on were clearly shown.

"This place." Fang Yuan searched through the map before his gaze fixed on a place, and pointed at it.

Next moment, Fang Yuan disappeared and appeared in front of Tie Mu Bai.

"You." Tie Mu Bai was exploring the inheritance and was slightly surprised by Fang Yuan’s sudden appearance.

But he calmed down soon and was just about to say something when Fang Yuan quickly waved his hand and luckily summoned a rock crocodile phantom.

Bam!

Tie Mu Bai’s head was smacked by the rock crocodile’s tail, and it exploded like a watermelon —

He, was dead.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan killed Tie Mu Bai and immediately pounced on his headless corpse, grabbing his arm and letting his mind enter the aperture.

The aperture walls were crystal clear, as the primeval sea ebbed and flowed.

Rank five Gu Masters have purple crystal primeval essence. Initial stage is light purple primeval essence, middle stage is violet purple primeval essence, upper stage is deep purple primeval essence, and peak stage is crystal purple primeval essence.

Tie Mu Bai was a rank five peak stage Gu Master, he had crystal clear primeval essence, like the liquid form of crystals, great power was hidden within its beautiful appearance.

The difference between rank five peak stage and rank four upper stage was very huge. Furthermore, he had ninety-eight percent of such primeval essence, even a hundred Fang Yuan could not compare to him.

In the purple crystal primeval sea, there were Gu worms flying.

A golden small hand, flew randomly above the sea, like a golden light. This was Tie Mu Bai’s vital Gu, the rank five Gu worm that he had once used when he battled Ku Mo and Wu Gui on San Cha mountain — turn gold Gu!

Turn gold Gu had great power, any lifeform that was hit by hit would turn into pure gold, losing their life.

Even Ku Mo and Wu Gui did not dare to take the attack head on. As for Yi Huo, Kong Ri Tian and the other rank four peak stage cultivators, they did not even dare to observe the battle, taking the initiative to avoid them.

This was Tie Mu Bai’s strongest long range attack method.

If Fang Yuan tried to use long range battle, the beast phantoms that possessed the strength qi would turn into golden statues after being hit by the golden light, sacrificing themselves. Fang Yuan would not be able to retrieve them anymore.

Other than turn gold Gu, at the bottom of the purple crystal sea, there was a yellow-gold current.

This current was like melted gold, swimming at the bottom of the sea.

This was the liquid metal Gu, also rank five, once activated, it had great defenses, and allowed a Gu Master to have no worries regarding defense. Most amazingly, it was liquid form, and could change its shape at will, even if it was broken through, it could regather itself like water, and was a tough nut to crack.

If Tie Mu Bai used liquid metal Gu, even if Fang Yuan used all his strength, he would not be able to break this defense.

In the purple crystal sea, there was another eyeball. It seemed inconspicuous, but it gave off a golden light at times, gathering attention and was more alluring than the stars in the sky.

This was the vajra stare Gu.

It was also rank five, but was not an investigative method, rather it was an attack type Gu.

Once activated by a Gu Master, the formless stare gains attacking power, like a giant pole slamming into a person’s heart. Once eye contact was made, it could directly attack an opponent’s soul.

This Gu was hidden by Tie Mu Bai, even during the battle against Ku Mo and Wu Gui, it was not used.

Once used, it would be a contest of souls between both Gu Masters, and the victor would be decided, it was a trump card that should only be used at the end.

Tie Mu Bai had once used many different Gu to strengthen his soul’s foundation. Meanwhile, Fang Yuan walked the strength path, his soul was not strengthened.

If Tie Mu Bai used the vajra stare Gu, he just needed to maintain eye contact with Fang Yuan for a second, and Fang Yuan’s soul would be completely destroyed.

To use this vajra stare Gu, golden eyes have to be used.

If one used ordinary eyes for this, they might turn themselves blind. Only by using two golden eye Gu, and turning one’s own eyes into golden eyes could they use the vajra stare Gu safely.

Evidently, since Tie Mu Bai had the vajra stare Gu, he naturally had golden eyes.

Just like how Fang Yuan turned his skin into bronze skin, and bones into essence iron bones.

Other than these three rank five Gu, Tie Mu Bai’s body also had four rank four Gu worms. Golden dragon Gu, golden breeze Gu, golden coat Gu, golden aurora Gu, all of them were outstanding Gu worms, and were high quality Gu worms within the metal path.

These Gu worms were all excavated by Fang Yuan.

After confirming that Tie Mu Bai did not have any other Gu worms on him, Fang Yuan took out the beast strength placenta Gu, and activated it around Tie Mu Bai’s stomach.

After Tie Mu Bai lost his life, his aperture started to shrink. Right now, after being sucked by the beast strength placenta Gu, the aperture flew out of Tie Mu Bai’s body, and landed in the placenta, devoured by the wild beast inside the placenta.

After devouring the aperture, the rough and coarse beast strength placenta Gu became lustrous and shiny, the original embryo looked like it was made of soil and had crevices on the surface, but now it looked different, thick and tightly packed, just like a concrete brick.

This beast strength placenta Gu was used like this, according to the blessed land’s original owner’s peculiar idea. Continuously absorbing Gu Masters aperture, then slowly accumulating and changing qualitatively.

To refine the second aperture Gu, apertures were naturally the main ingredient.

The beast strength placenta Gu that was refined was intended to plunder other people’s apertures. Killing lives to attain success, this was a demonic path method, one could easily tell that the ancient strength path Gu Immortal was not a kind person.

This beast strength placenta Gu, if others used it, they might feel guilt, but Fang Yuan was extremely fine with using it, he had no mental pressure at all.

In his previous life, to refine the Spring Autumn Cicada, he killed people in more than ten thousand miles of land, blood flowed into a river as he caused an immense bloodshed in the world, he could not even count how many people he killed. How could killing a single Gu Master now affect him?

"Good, good, good! This beast strength placenta Gu, after absorbing Tie Mu Bai’s aperture, it already raised the second aperture Gu’s aptitude to forty percent. Great, excellent."

"Using numbers to make up for quality in order to break through, this is the rule of using sheer quantity to trigger a qualitative change. Going beyond the mortal world, and becoming an Immortal Gu, how can there be no price to pay? Back then when I refined the Spring Autumn Cicada, I slaughtered over ten million people, that was also because of this."

"The better the aperture that is absorbed and the larger the numbers, the higher the aptitude of the second aperture Gu that is refined in the future. Next, I have to kill Gu Masters, go on a killing spree and use all their apertures to raise my beast strength placenta Gu. Hahaha, hahahaha..."

Fang Yuan inspected the beast strength placenta Gu carefully, extremely pleased and raised his head up as he laughed.

Why did he kill Tie clan’s group? It was to make Tie clan furious and send a rank five Gu Master.

The arrival of one rank five Gu Master would break the balance, causing a chain reaction and attracting even more rank five Gu Masters.

"These rank five, rank four Gu Masters are all my prey! To assist me in refining the second aperture Gu!" Fang Yuan laughed.

All his plots and schemes, these few years of planning, and all the risks he took, it was all for this moment.

How incredibly amazing is this, this is the best feeling!!

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, his black hair flying with the wind, as demonic blaze burned in his eyes.

Looking at actual battle strength, the rank five peak stage Tie Mu Bai was over a hundred times stronger than Fang Yuan!

Just simply the turn gold Gu, if Fang Yuan was hit, he would be dead, there was no way to survive.

Even if Tie Mu Bai only used rank four Gu, his rank five peak stage crystal purple primeval essence was not something Fang Yuan’s yellow gold primeval essence could compete with.

But!

In the three kings inheritance, Gu Masters were restricted by the heavenly power, and were unable to use their Gu worms, at the same time, their defenses were all limited, and they became extremely fragile.

But Fang Yuan was different —

He has the land spirit’s help.

What was the land spirit? The lord of the blessed land! With its help, Fang Yuan could use his Gu worms inside the three kings inheritance.

Meanwhile, Tie Mu Bai had his rank five peak stage cultivation, but his strong Gu set was unusable.

Standing before Fang Yuan, he was a living target, just a livestock. Stripped of all his defenses, he was fragile as a baby.

He could not even use a single metal path Gu worm, he could not even self-detonate.

He worked hard all his life, accumulating this set of Gu worms, and now it all went to Fang Yuan.

After Fang Yuan killed Tie Mu Bai, he kept all the Gu worms inside his aperture.

The Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura could only suppress rank four Gu worms. These three rank five Gu could not be controlled by Fang Yuan, but because of the location, these Gu worms were restricted by the heavenly power, unable to move at all.

As Fang Yuan’s primeval essence refined them, they gave up and changed owners.

"Good, you obtained a rank five peak stage aperture, this way, the second aperture Gu’s aptitude has risen to forty percent. But you must take note, to transport you earlier, and support your attack, we expended quite a bit of immortal essence." Land spirit’s voice came, warning Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan stopped laughing, his expression calming down: "I have already considered that."

He sneered, his eyes glowing with brilliance, as his tone was extremely confident and in control of the situation.

He continued: "Ba Gui, you have slept for too long, the blessed land was remodelled by the three kings, you lost too much control of it. Even as the spirit of the blessed land, although you can overwrite these changes, that would use up too much immortal essence. There is little immortal essence left inside the cauldron, if we split these essence into sixteen portions, then the amount we used earlier would be half a portion."

Ba Gui was stunned, praising: "You are absolutely correct. You actually managed to calculate the expenditure of the immortal essence so accurately, your performance has truly amazed me!"

Fang Yuan was a Gu Immortal in his past life, he was extremely familiar with the use of immortal essence. It was easy to make such accurate calculations.

"I estimate that among the sixteen portions, at least eight is needed for the refinement of the second aperture Gu. As for the remaining eight, we need four to sustain the blessed land, and to kill Gu Masters, we need a bit more than three portions. The final bit would be kept to deal with emergencies.

But Ba Gui said: "Young man, you are wrong this time. To refine the Immortal Gu, we need ten portions, and to maintain the three kings inheritance, we only need two. After you kill enough people, I will close the blessed land."

"No, I am not wrong." Fang Yuan shook his head: "To refine the second aperture Gu, although we need to expend immortal essence, the expenditure of some steps can be replaced with primeval stones. That way, we can save two portions of immortal essence. Furthermore, you cannot close the inheritance, you have to keep the entrance open the entire time."

"Why?" Land spirit asked.

Fang Yuan replied: "Because once you close the inheritance, the matter of me killing rank five Gu Masters would be exposed. By then, such a situation would attract even stronger foes."

"Even if you close the blessed land, you cannot chase away the Gu Masters who remain in the inheritance. That is because the three kings modified the blessed land, you will need to waste a lot of immortal essence to expel them. Immortal essence is already running low, even portion is important, it is needed for refinement."

"Towards the later stage of the refinement, immortal essence will run low, and the blessed land will be on the brink of collapsing, and have lots of loopholes, connecting to the outside world. It is no use closing the blessed land, when your strength falls drastically, this hall would be discovered. By then, we would be attacked by the Gu Masters, and the refinement would be likely to fail."

After a while of silence, the land spirit said: "You are right, but your method has a fatal flaw. If we use primeval stones to replace the immortal essence, you need at least thirty million primeval stones. Do you have so many?"

Fang Yuan laughed loudly!

"I only have a million primeval stones on me, it is obviously not enough. But it is not a problem, there are other Gu Masters, especially these rank four and five Gu Masters, they are definitely rich, after we kill them, do we have to worry about primeval stones?"

Ba Gui considered it for a bit: "You are right, the help I can give you will shrink. Towards the end of the refinement, that is the most important step, we will act according to your suggestion."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

A battle between dogs ended.

"Steel armor dog group’s defense is so strong." The rank five demonic Gu Master Ku Mo had several hundred steel armor dogs around him, feeling extremely pleased.

The steel armor dogs had thick leather armor, black and heavy, like steel. In the King Quan Inheritance, it had the greatest defense among dogs for the first fifty rounds.

Just earlier, Ku Mo controlled the dog groups, and had a victorious battle.

His battle result was outstanding, using the dog enslavement Gu to recruit a jade eye dog king.

This jade eye dog king was not only a hundred beast king, it also had a wild Gu worm that was effective against the Yin dogs.

"Last time, I failed because of the Yin dogs. Ordinary dogs cannot hit these formless bodies, with the jade eye dog king, I have no fear now."

This was only the eighteenth round of the King Quan Inheritance, and Ku Mo already had a dog king, and a large number of steel armor dogs.

He was after all a rank five Gu Master, he had amazing methods.

At the same time, his luck this time was great.

King Quan Inheritance was like this, it was the one which required luck the most among the three inheritances. If you start out well, your advantages will snowball and make it easier to pass the middle and later stages.

"Last time, I only got to the sixty-eighth round, I am too embarrassed to speak of such a result! This time, I got lucky and had such a great start. But I cannot be complacent, Tie Mu Bai chose King Xin Inheritance this time, I heard that previously, he got to over eighty rounds."

Thinking of Tie Mu Bai, Ku Mo’s heart became heavy.

He knew that if he fought alone, he was not Tie Mu Bai’s match. Thus, when he chose the inheritance, he purposely avoided Tie Mu Bai, and chose the King Quan Inheritance.

The truth is, among the three inheritances, King Xin Inheritance was the easiest to get through for the first few rounds. The Gu Master can disrupt the hairy men with words, and win without a fight.

This shortcut method was obviously spread out by Fang Yuan.

Ku Mo thought about it for a while, before collecting his thoughts and decided to use his time to continue advancing through the rounds.

Just at this moment, before him, space tore open and an unfamiliar young man appeared.

"Eh? Who is it!" Ku Mo was shocked!

He had tried the three kings inheritance many times. He had a clear understanding of it, but this scene had happened before him causing him to be stunned in disbelief.

The person was naturally Fang Yuan.

He heard Ku Mo’s shouting and laughed: "Who is it? The person who wants your life!"

Saying so, he activated golden dragon Gu.

The golden dragon appeared, roaring. Its dragon whiskers swayed with the wind, as its dragon eyes stared fiercely, brandishing its four fearsome claws.

Ku Mo saw this and almost peed his pants!

He screamed in disbelief: "How can this be! How can you use any Gu? How is this possible!!!"

Moments before death, he shuddered and activated his Gu worms hurriedly.

But he got no response.

Roar!

Golden dragon came attacking, scratching and almost smashing his entire upper body.

The great Ku Mo, an expert of a generation, and old demonic powerhouse, died just like this.

When he died, he did not even manage to use his token. Of course, with the land spirit’s manipulation, even if he used the token, there would be no effect.

"Golden dragon Gu attacks really fiercely, but the handling is so rough, I cannot control it meticulously." Fang Yuan recalled the attack, he had wanted to just smash Ku Mo’s skull, but he ended up destroying his entire upper body, slightly shocking him.

Thankfully, the aperture was near the stomach, and did not get destroyed.

Fang Yuan walked forward, his mind entering the aperture, and started to loot it.

Ku Mo had eight Gu worms, but only one rank five Gu, called soft bones Gu, it was very despicable.

This Gu could turn the bones of any lifeforms soft within a radius of twenty-five kilometres. Even if Fang Yuan turned his bones into essence iron bones, he would still be affected and his bones would turn soft eventually. By then, Fang Yuan would have no way to fight back.

Without his skeleton to support him, he would be like a paralyzed man, lying on the ground, his intestines would squeeze together and his blood vessels and muscles would clog one another. Even without any external attacks, before long, he would die from this.

As for his other seven Gu, they were all rank four. These Gu all had to do with the bone path, and were not particularly good ones.

"It’s a pity, I do not know much about the bone path, the most I can do is scratch the surface of it. If I inherit this set of Gu worms, the battle strength I can display would not be half of Ku Mo. I should keep it for now." Fang Yuan assessed in his mind.

At Ku Mo’s level, the Gu set he created was completely customised for himself, using his battle style, his understanding of the bone path, and his understanding towards battles and Gu masters.

Fang Yuan was most skilled in the blood path. In his previous life, he benefited from the blood sea inheritance, and used the blood path to start his conquest. He had a deep understanding of the blood path, if Ku Mo was a blood path Gu Master, the situation would be different.

After taking Ku Mo’s Gu worms, Fang Yuan used the beast strength placenta Gu and devoured his aperture.

After receiving nutrients, beast strength placenta Gu grew a little again. Its concrete surface had a thin layer of luster, and the surface was smoother, like poorly made porcelain.

It was a pity for Ku Mo, a great expert born as a lone cultivator, slogging it out alone his whole life. He had many encounters and opportunities in his life, and together with his hard work, after experiencing great hardships, he reached this level.

Eventually, he died, and all his hard work and fruits of his labor became Fang Yuan’s loot. A great rank five Gu Master fell from the apex, becoming Fang Yuan’s stepping stone.

"Too bad the dog enslavement Gu can’t be taken back, if not these dogs would be mine to manipulate too." Fang Yuan looked at the dogs as he sighed, vanishing on the spot.

...

A battle was ongoing intensely.

Wu Gui manipulated the chrysanthemum akita dogs, fighting and entangling with a large pack of lightning symbol dogs.

Chrysanthemum akita dogs were a type of dog with great unity, the greater their numbers, the greater their strength. But Wu Gui was unlucky, he had only forty or so chrysanthemum akita dogs.

He placed these dogs at the frontline, as he concentrated in controlling them.

The chrysanthemum akita dogs were fighting a lightning symbol dog dog pack five times their sizes, they were all injured but not dead. The exquisite combination and cooperation showed Wu Gui’s exemplary talent in enslaving beasts.

Wu Gui had become an enslavement path Gu Master many years ago, but eventually because of a lack of resources, he had to change paths.

Swoosh!

Fang Yuan suddenly appeared behind Wu Gui.

Wu Gui was spending all his effort controlling the chrysanthemum akita dogs, he did not sense Fang Yuan’s arrival.

If it was during normal times, he would use an investigative Gu, and once Fang

Yuan appeared, he would get attacked immediately. But in this Gu Immortal blessed land, he was just an ordinary person only able to control dog enslavement Gu and some others, all the body modifications on him were also completely restricted.

Of course, it was also due to Wu Gui concentrating deeply on the dog battle.

Fang Yuan did not trash talk, he waved his hand and a bone spike flew out.

Puchi!

A crisp sound, and a long spear-like bone spike pierced Wu Gui’s heart, as the sharp pointy tip stabbed into the ground.

Wu Gui’s pupils shrunk to pin-size as he was completely stunned and confused at this fatal attack.

"Who... tried to kill me!" He opened his mouth and fresh blood oozed out like a river.

He slowly turned around, trying desperately to see the culprit’s face.

But unfortunately, he lost all signs of life when he turned halfway.

Wu Gui’s body collapsed like a pile of mud, hanging on the bone spike.

This demonic expert who was even more senior than Tie Mu Bai, famous two hundred years ago, had died as well.

When he died, his eyes were staring wide, trying to see who was his murderer.

But this simple wish was not granted.

The great Wu Gui, died with a grievance!

After he died, the chrysanthemum akita dogs who lost their master’s manipulation immediately got engulfed by the lightning symbol dogs. These lightning symbol dogs howled as they pounced on Fang Yuan.

Roar!

Fang Yuan waved his hand, as the golden dragon appeared again, slaughtering all these lightning symbol dogs who did not know better.

Fang Yuan quickly came to Wu Gui’s corpse, doing the same thing again. Keeping his Gu worms then feeding his aperture to the beast strength placenta Gu.

Wu Gui had one rank five Gu.

It was oval and black like a yuhua stone 1 . But the surface had seven white markings, and it looked extremely peculiar and dark. It was the pitch black Gu.

Once the Gu is activated, it would ooze out black smoke. Any Gu worms below rank six would get contaminated by the black smoke and receive various degrees of sealing, losing their abilities.

As for his other Gu worms, there were eight to nine, all rank four. But they were mixed among different paths, and were a mess, unlike Ku Mo and Tie Mu Bai’s complete Gu set.

"These are Wu Gui’s Gu worms, although they can form into a set, they are not a complete set. The reason why he can roam the southern border is mostly due to the pitch black Gu."

Undeniably, pitch black Gu is an extremely useful rank five Gu.

Fang Yuan was extremely happy to have obtained it.

He kept the pitch black Gu into his aperture, but placed the rest of the rank four Gu into his pocket.

His aperture already had many Gu worms, among them, he had five rank five Gu worms, and many rank four Gu. This was placing a lot of pressure on his aperture.

Mostly importantly, it was due to the Spring Autumn Cicada, this rank six Gu was recovering, and it was emitting great pressure on Fang Yuan’s aperture.

"The flow of time in the blessed land is three times out the outside world, accelerating Spring Autumn Cicada’s recovery. I have to race against time, quickly refining the second aperture Gu. With the second aperture, I would be able to relieve the pressure Spring Autumn Cicada is giving me."

To Fang Yuan, the situation was extremely rushed.

He did not only want to refine the second aperture Gu, he also wanted to guard against this major threat, the Spring Autumn Cicada. Towards the end of the refinement, the blessed land would be full of flaws, and after connecting to the outside world, he might receive the group attack of many Gu Masters.

By then, the land spirit would be weak and powerless, it would be useless and Fang Yuan would be in the most danger during that period.

"Refining the second aperture Gu, to closer we get to the end, the tougher it gets. Especially that final step, I need to use the divine travel Gu, I will need to focus and concentrate, my body would be in huge danger!"

Wu Gui’s demise, was the best lesson to Fang Yuan, he had to guard against such situations.

But his situation was slightly different.

"I have another chess piece, that is Bai Ning Bing! Hehehe, she used the poison vow Gu before, she can be trusted. It seems that towards the end, I will need her to protect me."

Thinking so, Fang Yuan vanished, and appeared before Bai Ning Bing.

"Fang Yuan, how did you get here so suddenly?" Bai Ning Bing looked at Fang Yuan, shocked and suspicious.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bai Ning Bing widened her eyes in shock as Fang Yuan suddenly appeared out of nowhere.

By now, Gu Masters already had a clear understanding of the three kings inheritance. And because she was at Fang Yuan’s side, Bai Ning Bing had much deeper understanding of three kings inheritance.

However, precisely because of this ’deep understanding’, she was even more shocked.

Fang Yuan’s sudden appearance looked like a simple phenomenon but it contained astonishing implications!

"Bai Ning Bing, do you still remember our vow? I wonder if you still want Yang Gu now?" Fang Yuan did not mention how he appeared but looked at Bai Ning Bing with his unfathomable and abyssal gaze with his hands behind his back.

"Hmph, as if you don’t know the answer." Bai Ning Bing snorted and narrowed her blue eyes.

She knew Fang Yuan would not speak aimlessly, he definitely had a motive: "It seems you need my help? Speak up, don’t try to conceal anything, otherwise I will not help."

Fang Yuan laughed loudly without being moved: "Back at Shang clan city, we took a poison vow that if one side is in mortal danger, the other must help. I will tell you truthfully that not long later, I will be besieged by Gu Masters and I need you as my protector to block any obstruction towards my Gu refinement."

"Gu Masters’ besiegement? Hehe, I am not surprised, there are plenty of Gu Masters who want to kill you. But refining Gu? What Gu are you refining?"

Fang Yuan was straightforward this time and told the whole story directly.

The most important thing now was that he needed Bai Ning Bing’s full cooperation. This matter also could not be concealed. Bai Ning Bing was not someone so easy to fool.

If because of him hiding the truth, some misunderstanding occurred and caused the Gu refinement to fail in the end, it would be truly disastrous.

"What! This Gu Immortal blessed land’s land spirit is still alive? You are refining an Immortal Gu? You have truly large guts, you are looking for your own doom! Wait a second. What did you say just now? You killed Tie Mu Bai, and also Wu Gui and Ku Mo?"

Fang Yuan kept it brief and said the whole story in a few sentences but the information it contained was huge, sending an enormous shock to Bai Ning Bing’s mind.

She felt like she was listening to a story.

Fang Yuan did not speak anymore but directly took out his loot.

"These Gu!" Bai Ning Bing looked at the Gu worms Fang Yuan took out and was flabbergasted, even losing her self-control.

These Gu were genuine. They were the best proof.

"You really killed them?" Bai Ning Bing stared at Fang Yuan, shock clearly visible in her eyes.

Who was Tie Mu Bai?

He was Southern Border’s super clan Tie clan’s previous clan leader.

He was a genius with outstanding innate talent, his temperament was even more firm and unyielding.

His battle accomplishments in his whole life shone with splendor. And with his talent, he researched many battle tactics of the metal path, causing countless enemies to be terror-stricken by the mention of him.

At a young age, he roamed outside and his name spread throughout Southern Border. In his middle years, he ruled Tie clan with an iron fist and made everyone fear him. At his old age, he became an emperor of a region, his reputation spread wide with no one daring to disobey him!

He was venerated as the glory of Tie clan, radiance of the righteous path. When he announced his seclusion and retirement, many people, be it demonic path or righteous path, let out a breath of relief.

Now, he was out of seclusion and that shook many clans. Even Shang Yan Fei would have to bow in front of him to greet him.

The rank five Gu Master of Wu clan Wu Lan Shan was the cousin of the current Wu clan leader, but even she had to bow despite her pride when facing Tie Mu Bai.

And this Tie Mu Bai had died by Fang Yuan’s hands!

Not only him, Wu Gui and Ku Mo, two rank five Gu Masters also lost their lives to Fang Yuan!

Even more absurdly, not only did they die, all their Gu worms were taken by Fang Yuan!!

"These three rank five Gu Masters really died with grievance..." even Bai Ning Bing, this outsider, felt stifled at the deaths of Tie Mu Bai and others.

"Alright, it is about time. Next, I will send you to King Quan Inheritance. Advance through the rounds according to my instructions. I need dog beasts, the more the better." Fang Yuan’s tone was hasty.

"Hmph, I did not say I will help you." Bai Ning Bing’s gaze flickered.

Fang Yuan smiled: "Don’t worry, if I succeed, I will give Yang Gu to you. Besides, there will be other benefits as well. After leaving San Cha mountain, you can go wherever you want to, I won’t stop you if you want to part ways and will also welcome you if you want to go together. But whether you agree or not, I will refine the Gu."

Bai Ning Bing was exasperated: "You! You shameless guy, you are relying on the poison vow to force me?"

If Fang Yuan was attacked and died while refining Gu, then according to the poison vow, Bai Ning Bing would also die. That is to say, Bai Ning Bing must protect Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan sighed, his tone became mild and even seemed to have a trace of gentleness: "Ning Bing, this is not a threat, but cooperation. Think about it, since Qing Mao mountain, we have been cooperating, and no dangers have been able to stop us as many enemies fell under our feet. This time is also not an exception. Weren’t you always wanting Yang Gu? You can turn back to a male when you obtain it. Or have you have become fond of your female identity?"

Bai Ning Bing felt goosebumps all over her when she heard Fang Yuan call her Ning Bing.

And when she heard Fang Yuan’s final sentence, she clearly knew Fang Yuan was spurring her; she could not help feeling provoked and shouted: "Shut your mouth!"

"It is settled then." Fang Yuan laughed loudly and waved his hand, giving Bai Ning Bing a dog enslavement Gu, then disappeared.

The scene before Bai Ning Bing also changed suddenly, and she was sent to the first round of King Quan Inheritance by the land spirit.

Fang Yuan suddenly appeared in front of Wu Lan Shan.

Wu Lan Shan got a shock when someone suddenly appeared in front of her. But she was a famed figure and a majestic rank five Gu Master, calming her mind in seconds.

"Little Beast King, it is you! You can casually enter and exit this place?" Wu Lan Shan retreated a step, sharp light blossoming in her beautiful eyes.

Fang Yuan pointed his little finger and shot out a bone spear.

Puchi!

There was a soft sound as the bone spear pierced through Wu Lan Shan’s heart like lightning.

Wu Lan Shan’s beautiful flower-like appearance seemed to be frozen as she looked at Fang Yuan incredulously: "You... you can use Gu?"

The moment she finished saying this, her aura dissipated indicating her demise.

Another rank five Gu Master died.

However, Fang Yuan did not obtain her rank five Gu.

The moment Wu Lan Shan died, a mysterious light burst out of her body and enveloped her three rank five Gu worms, tearing through space and bringing them away.

Fang Yuan was not surprised, he knew Wu clan had a rank six Immortal Gu called no loss Gu which possessed the mystical ability to retrieve precious Gu worms.

Although this blessed land could restricted Gu worms of rank one to five, it could not restrict Immortal Gu.

In fact, no blessed lands can restrict the abilities of Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan took the rest of the rank four Gu which were also quite valuable. After that, he took out beast placenta Gu and swallowed Wu Lan Shan’s aperture.

This was already the fourth rank five Gu Master’s aperture.

Beast placenta Gu was nourished and looked like a delicate pottery, and gave a sleek feeling at touch.

Fang Yuan analyzed it and found the aptitude had increased to seventy-five percent.

The aptitude became more difficult to raise the higher it became. At first, the aptitude had directly raised to forty percent when the beast placenta Gu had swallowed just Tie Mu Bai’s aperture. Later, it swallowed apertures of Wu Gui, Ku Mo and Wu Lan Shan in a row, and was only able to raise by another thirty-five percent.

"Of course, this has to do with the foundation of the Gu Master. There are altogether five rank five Gu Masters on San Cha mountain. But only Tie Mu Bai, Ku Mo and Wu Gui are at rank five peak stage; among them, Tie Mu Bai’s foundation was the most profound with the huge amount of resources from Tie clan. Wu Lan Shan and Wang Xiao are both at rank five upper stage. And Chou Jiu is only at rank five initial stage. Killing these people might not be enough to raise the aptitude by another ten percent. But no worries, there are plenty of Gu Masters, Yi Huo, Kong Ri Tian and the rest, all of them must die!"

...

"Corpse dog is purple all over, its skin is slightly rotten, its lower back is crooked and its canines protrude out. Use Yin dogs to restrain them and you will definitely succeed."

"Choose the left path, the reward for that round is three tasks at once Gu which will be of great help to you."

"Next, you will encounter a heavy tai dog king. It is in a seriously injured state but is even more ferocious. You will need to sacrifice a lot of dogs to capture it. This dog king is the only heavy tai dog king in the first twenty rounds. At the twenty-second round, there will be a large group of wandering heavy tai dogs, you can use heavy tai dog king to directly recruit them without losing anything!"

There would be a voice guiding Bai Ning Bing every time she progressed through a round.

This voice was of the land spirit.

Immortal essence was scarce, the land spirit moved Bai Ning Bing to King Quan Inheritance and was not willing to misuse immortal essence on her.

Bai Ning Bing could only go through each round personally.

However, although the land spirit’s control over the blessed land had fallen to rock bottom, it was extremely clear about the contents of three kings inheritance.

There was almost no loss in immortal essence for it to guide Bai Ning Bing, but to Bai Ning Bing, it was of extremely huge help; as if there was a bright lantern guiding Bai Ning Bing through the dark tunnel.

Bai Ning Bing was able to make best choice at every round and her strength continued to expand like a snowball.

"Next, you will encounter a Gu Master as your opponent. But no need to worry, he has just fought a huge battle and only has few dog beasts remaining, you will be able to eliminate him easily. At that time, I will confine him, and after you kill him and take his Gu, you can greatly increase the number of your Gu worms." The land spirit guided again.

Bai Ning Bing nodded and slowly walked out of the fog.

"It is you..." Her opponent was clearly shocked at her sight.

Bai Ning Bing was also stupefied, this person was none other than the person who had tried to make things difficult for her and Fang Yuan before he entered the inheritance; the Yun clan’s young clan leader Yun Luo Tian.

Yun Luo Tian arrogantly snorted: "You are called Bai Ning Bing, right? It is your bad luck you ran into me, you don’t even have half the amount of dogs I have..."

He had not even finished speaking when he stopped. His eyes opened wide and his throat let out a strange ka ka sound like a rooster that had its throat jammed.

From the mist behind Bai Ning Bing, a large numbers of dog beasts walked out one after another.

Endlessly...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Impossible! How can you have so many dog beasts?!" Yun Luo Tian screamed, pointing at Bai Ning Bing, as he shivered, his expression looked like he had seen a ghost.

The sheer number of beasts around Bai Ning Bing had surpassed his wildest imagination.

"How many rounds has it been? Even a rank five Gu Master cannot reach such a number!!" Yun Luo Tian screamed as loudly as he could to vent the horror in his heart.

"You must control some loophole, you cheated. You actually cheated, you shameless scoundrel!!"

Yun Luo Tian’s composure was completely gone, he no longer had the attitude of an Yun clan young clan leader.

Bai Ning Bing sighed lightly, Yun Luo Tian was right, he hit the nail on the head.

It is true, she cheated. And it was the blessed land’s spirit who helped her.

Under the land spirit’s guidance, she had an easy time going through the King Quan Inheritance, like she was on a vacation, it was a complete walk in the park. Compared to the difficulties she faced back when she explored the inheritance alone, this was a clear contrast.

" The incredulous feeling of cheating cannot be described with words ! If doing this means I am despicable, I would rather become even more despicable than this, hehehe."

Bai Ning Bing exclaimed as she waved her hands.

Woof, woof, woof...

Countless dogs received her commands and moved like flood water.

In Yun Luo Tian’s vision, he could see a sea of dogs charging towards him like a tsunami.

He gritted his teeth: "Bai Ning Bing, do not be smug. Once I get out, I will expose you in front of everyone! You know such a huge secret, everyone will be interested, especially those rank five Gu Masters! Hahaha, you are finished!"

Saying so, he took out a token and used it.

But nothing happened.

"Eh?" Yun Luo Tian was shocked, activating it again.

"What happened? Why is it not working? I used it the last time and I was transported out immediately." His gaze flashed as a bad feeling emerged in his heart, causing his expression to turn uncertain.

He took out another unused token, he was the Yun clan young clan leader, he had two tokens to protect him.

But this time, there was no effect either. The token stopped working.

Yun Luo Tian stared with his eyes wide opened, staring at his token, sweat emerging on his forehead.

Bai Ning Bing’s dog army had surrounded him, and started slaughtering his dog group.

"How can this happen? Send me out now!" Yun Luo Tian’s breathing became quicker, as he used the token frantically, to no avail.

"Ah!" He screamed, his beautiful face distorted with fear. His hair was messy and his eyes were bright red, like an angered bull.

"It is you, you did this didn’t you? It must be you! You made the token ineffective, hehe, what great methods you have. But be clear of this, I am the great Yun clan young clan leader. If you kill me, you would offend Yun clan. The entire Yun clan won’t let you off."

Yun Luo Tian recovered from his fear and screamed at Bai Ning Bing.

His arrogance as the Yun clan young clan leader was sustaining him, not letting him kneel down and beg for his life, instead he was getting more haughty.

But such an attitude was completely useless against Bai Ning Bing.

"I’m not even afraid of Tie clan, would I fear your tiny Yun clan?" Bai Ning Bing snickered.

On the battlefield, Yun Luo Tian was alone, his dog groups were no match for Bai Ning Bing’s, massacred till none was left.

Bai Ning Bing willed, and the closest dog barked before pouncing on Yun Luo Tian.

Yun Luo Tian struggled with his life, but his strength could not match the dog.

His throat was bitten by the dog, as blood poured out of it.

As for the other beasts,they stood in a circle and waited.

"I curse you... I curse you have to a terrible death!" Yun Luo Tian cursed before he died, his tone filled with hatred and anger.

Bai Ning Bing shook her head in disdain, walking forward and keeping Yun Luo Tian’s Gu worms.

This Yun Luo Tian walked the cloud path, they were all rank four Gu, and were all of high quality. As for the enslavement path Gu worms he obtained from King Quan Inheritance, they greatly benefited Bai Ning Bing’s Gu worms.

As for his corpse, it was teleported by the land spirit, sent to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was stepping on Wang Xiao, forcing out the location of Wu mountain.

Wang Xiao was the owner of Wu mountain, a rank five upper stage Gu Master, a true regional emperor. He was an established expert.

If it was outside, ten Fang Yuan added together would not be his match. But here, Fang Yuan defeated him easily, like dealing with a baby.

Wang Xiao was extremely angry, he was stepped on by Fang Yuan, as his face and the soil made intimate contact.

For a great rank five Gu Master, the lord of Wu mountain, this was a great humiliation!

"You want to know how to enter Wu mountain? Hehe, stop your wishful thinking! Kill me if you want, after you kill me, you will not be able to know that true path to enter the mountain."

Wang Xiao sneered as he struggled intensely, but Fang Yuan could use his strength path Gu worms, Wang Xiao could not compare to him in terms of strength.

After an intense struggle, he was breathing heavily out of exhaustion, while Fang Yuan’s leg was still firm as a mountain.

Wu mountain was a slightly famous mountain among the hundred thousand mountains of Southern Border.

This mountain was mysterious and illusionary, hidden in a deep layer of fog. In the fog, there were many small paths, but only one led inside.

Wang Xiao knew this path, and thus entered the mountain and made the mountain’s resources his.

Like Qing Mao mountain, a famous mountain like Wu mountain had at least three to four spirit springs. Other than that, there were large numbers of wild beasts and wild Gu. All sorts of resources that could sustain three to four middle-size clans.

But Wu mountain was completely owned by Wang Xiao.

"Wu mountain is a natural danger zone, it is easy to defend and no matter how many righteous Gu Masters there are, they cannot break into it by force. Wang Xiao used this to become a regional emperor, living freely and easily. If I obtain it, I could use it as my base, and I would have no worries for my rank five resources." Fang Yuan thought.

Wu mountain was Wang Xiao’s good fortune, Fang Yuan desired it greatly. But Wang Xiao refused to speak, he knew that once he spoke, he would be killed. Not speaking gave him a chance of survival instead.

Pew!

At this moment, with a light sound, Yun Luo Tian’s corpse was transported over.

Fang Yuan kicked Wang Xiao aside, walking over to the corpse and used the beast strength placenta Gu to devour the aperture.

"It’s him? That Yun clan young leader!" Wang Xiao recognised Yun Luo Tian, and also witnessed Fang Yuan using beast strength placenta Gu, his heart chilled.

Fang Yuan was obviously killing people to refine Gu!

"This Gu can devour apertures, not good, my aperture is way more valuable than

Yun Luo Tian’s." This beast strength placenta Gu had already become smooth and clear, like a beautiful porcelain. But in Wang Xiao’s eyes, it was extremely dangerous and mysterious, giving off a demonic feeling.

Seeing Fang Yuan walk over, Wang Xiao shouted: "Wait, wait. We can negotiate, I can promise you to give you the actual path into the mountain, but you must ensure my safety, I have one poison vow Gu on me..."

Fang Yuan’s killing intent surged, although he had the eating one’s words Gu and can break the vow, he had little time now, how could he waste time to create the eating one’s words Gu?

As he killed these Gu Masters, his immortal essence was depleting, and the blessed land was getting closer to destruction.

The longer they dragged, the weaker the land spirit, an the less immortal essence he had to refine the second aperture Gu.

At the same time, the blessed land’s flow of time was three times the outside world. The Spring Autumn Cicada was posing a huge threat.

Fang Yuan killed so many people, he already used nearly two portions of the immortal essence, about half of his planned amount. The blessed land’s destruction was accelerated, and some people should be able to feel it already.

Fang Yuan’s greatest advantage was having the initiative. If he continued to drag this, it would get more disadvantageous for him.

Compared to the second aperture Gu, Wu mountain’s benefits were huge but not irreplaceable.

"Speak, which is the path into Wu mountain?" Fang Yuan stepped, and broke Wang Xiao’s right wrist, shouting sharply.

"Let me go and I’ll tell you!" Wang Xiao screamed in pain.

"Hmph, stubborn!" Fang Yuan stepped again, the sound of bone breaking was heard as Wang Xiao’s left kneecap was crushed to bits.

Wang Xiao shuddered under the pain, as sweat flowed down his back, but he gritted his teeth and stared deeply at Fang Yuan, refusing to speak.

Fang Yuan was silent, knowing that coercion would not work.

Wang Xiao was an expert of a generation!

He had a cruel and ruthless nature, never going easy on his enemies, but also strict on himself.

He designed an "ice water bed" for himself. Such a bed, as long as one sleeps for six hours, the entire bed would sink into the ice water below.

Wang Xiao slept on such a bed, only resting for six hours a day. He encouraged himself, and worked hard, giving it all his effort. Other than eating, cleaning, and resting, all his other time was spent on cultivation.

His aptitude was not extremely good, uncomparable with Tie Mu Bai and Bai Ning Bing. But because of his hard work, he climb up step by step, becoming famous in southern border, a great demonic expert that no one dared to look down on.

In Fang Yuan’s memories, after Wang Xiao came to Yi Tian mountain, he killed many righteous experts, and his ruthlessness spread, one time, he even got close to vying for the position of the demonic head.

Fang Yuan felt pressure in his heart offending such a person.

Killing Wang Xiao was weakening the demonic faction in the Yi Tian mountain battle. But Wang Xiao could not be kept alive, he had to be killed.

"I have to refine Gu not long after, I do not want to be attacked by you." Fang Yuan sighed, striking the final move and killing Wang Xiao.

Later, he took the Gu and devoured the aperture, this process was extremely smooth.

After devouring Yun Luo Tian and Wang Xiao’s aperture, the beast strength placenta Gu’s aptitude had risen to eighty-three percent. As for the immortal essence expenditure, it had reach slightly more than two portions, he had reached a critical stage.

"Not good, the immortal essence expenditure is higher than my estimation. This blessed land is too old, originating from the antiquity era, it is a miracle that the blessed land is still standing today."

Fang Yuan’s expression was solemn, the actual expenditure had slightly exceeded his initial estimations.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Young man, the primeval essence expenditure had deviated from the plans, you should stop now." The land spirit noticed this error, and suggested.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned cold, retorting immediately: "That won’t do, eighty-three percent is not part of my plans, my plan is to reach ninety percent!"

"Most things in life do not happen according to one’s wishes. How can we get everything we want? Young man, you have been blinded by greed, you are starting to lose your rationality." The land spirit spoke calmly.

Fang Yuan cursed in his heart, without the land spirit’s help, he could not use the immortal essence. Land spirit was already thinking of stopping, Fang Yuan had to convince it.

"Ba Gui." Fang Yuan breathed out some turbid air, relaxing his tone: "The primeval essence expenditure exceeding by a bit is no big deal. In my plan, we had some spare essence."

Fang Yuan planned the immortal essence into sixteen portions.

Among that, eight was for Gu refinement, four was to sustain the three kings inheritance and three portions and a bit more for killing Gu Masters. The final bit would be kept as spare in case anything happened.

Fang Yuan had a meticulous nature, he had planned this for so long, how could he not have a back up plan?

But the land spirit was not convinced, although it was created from lingering thoughts, it had intelligence and could think.

"Young man, your calculation is incorrect. Have you ever considered that the Gu refinement process might fail? There is no way you won’t have issues, once you fail you will waste immortal essence. Eight portions to refine Gu, that was the minimum requirement, that last bit of immortal essence is to allow you to waste when you make multiple attempts. Now that you want to use up this bit, if you fail the refinement even a little bit more, the second aperture Gu’s refinement will not succeed." Land spirit retorted.

Fang Yuan was anxious secretly, he had not passed the test and was not the blessed land’s owner, he could not directly command the land spirit.

If land spirit refused to cooperate, there was nothing he could do.

There was still a rank five Gu Master and many rank four experts left in the blessed land now, these will all be obstacles for him when he refines the Immortal Gu later.

Fang Yuan killing these people now was to eliminate his future enemies, to protect himself.

But the immortal essence left in the blessed land was simply too little, Fang Yuan had to carefully think and plan his usage properly. At the same time, he had to face the blessed land’s inspections.

"Young man, stop taking risks. If you continue being adamant, I will not cooperate with you, I will even take away your examination chance, and leave the opportunity for others." Land spirit was firm in its tone.

Fang Yuan sighed deeply hearing this.

Land spirits were very rigid, in this situation, it was nearly impossible to convince the land spirit.

"We can keep the others, but that rank five Gu Master has to die. He is one of the four great doctors of southern border, he has a great network and relationship, we have to eliminate him to be safe." Fang Yuan urged.

"For your safety during refinement, you have already planned to use that young girl, together with the beast groups, she can block them for a while. At the same time, I will risk my life to protect you. The most important thing is the success or failure of your Gu refinement." Land spirit denied Fang Yuan’s suggestion.

Fang Yuan’s expression sank.

The final rank five Gu Master Chou Jiu, known as ’killer ghost doctor’, although his battle strength was not outstanding, he had great influence.

In his previous life’s memories, he went to Yi Tian mountain and joined the demonic faction. Next, he obtained the third-in-control position. With a wave of his hand, countless Gu Masters gathered.

With his healing, the demonic faction faced less deaths and injuries, their morale surged and that caused great problems for the righteous path.

Only until Shang Yan Fei invited Doctor Su Shou, together with Divine Doctor Sheng Shou, did they manage to suppress Chou Jiu’s glamor.

The battle of Yi Tian mountain made everyone see the ability of Chou Jiu. The ’killer ghost doctor’ also became publicly recognised as the head of the four great doctors.

After Yi Tian mountain was subdued by the righteous path, Chou Jiu was captured, and Wu clan leader valued his talent and wanted to recruit him. But Chou Jiu refused to submit, scolding Shang Yan Fei and Doctor Su Shou, exposing some of their ancient history, causing the furious and ashamed Shang Yan Fei to kill him on the spot.

Any rank five Gu Master was a genius, they cannot be underestimated.

These Gu Masters could emerge from the commoners, and ascend to the peak of the mortal realm in such a cruel environment, surviving many rounds of elimination, they were all heroes or champions.

Once he thought about how a person like Chou Jiu might attack during the final step of the Gu refinement, Fang Yuan could not rest easy.

"Although my cultivation is rank four upper stage, and my cultivation speed is stunning, on this huge stage, I am still too weak, I cannot contend with these rank five Gu Masters. If I had my rank six cultivation back in my previous life, no matter how many rank fives come, I can kill them all like livestock!" Fang Yuan sighed internally.

"You still want to kill someone? Impossible, I will not allow it! Immortal essence cannot be wasted like this, we have to preserve most of it for the Gu refinement." Land spirit heard Fang Yuan’s request and immediately rejected him: "Demonic Gu Masters are all like this, they like to take risks. Sigh, young man, do not be so extreme. In this world, why do you think the righteous path is blooming and suppressing the demonic path? It is because demonic path is too extreme, too greedy, and likes to place themselves in danger. The righteous path pursues stability, slow and steady, unmovable like the mountain."

"Ba Gui, you are wrong. Demonic path members have a tough life, they are forced to take extreme means, if they did not fight for the greatest benefits at every given opportunity, and did not take risks, how could they cultivate, how could they compete with the righteous path? Greed, selfishness, extremity, and risk-taking; these are all laws of survival of the demonic path. As long as the benefits are enough, so what if we have to walk on a tightrope? One wrong step leads to game over, making the impossible possible, that is the excitement of the demonic path! The life of a demonic path member is like wine, intense and alluring." Fang Yuan rebuked loudly.

Land spirit heard such words and sighed endlessly: "Young man, the demonic nature is too entrenched in you, you can’t turn back anymore, in the future it will lead you to destruction. If heaven commits a sin, it can be forgiven, but if one commits a sin himself, he deserves to die ."

Fang Yuan laughed loudly: "Hahahaha, Ba Gui, you are too naive. What is a sin? Commiting a sin means one deserves death, that is only the weaklings’ naive and helpless expectation, they spread such ideology, hoping people would abide by it so as to protect these weaklings. As for me, I want to be a person who commits a sin, yet is able to roam freely and travel the world, a demonic head who slaughters living beings and enjoys all that I can get. I not only want to slaughter Gu Masters, I also want to succeed in refining the second aperture Gu and become the greatest winner! Ba Gui, feel this, what do you think this is?"

Saying so, Fang Yuan activated the Spring Autumn Cicada, and for the first time, leaked its aura out into the world.

The land spirit was flabbergasted!

"This, this is the aura of a rank six Immortal Gu! It seems... it seems to be the Spring Autumn Cicada... Spring Autumn Cicada is the seventh mysterious Gu in this world! You are a mere mortal, how can you possess such an Immortal Gu?"

To convince the land spirit, Fang Yuan took a gamble and exposed the existence of the Spring Autumn Cicada.

Spring Autumn Cicada was a rank six Gu, and the second aperture Gu was also an Immortal Gu, such benefits were enough for Fang Yuan to take this risk.

"Why can’t a mortal own an Immortal Gu? I’ll tell you the truth, the Spring Autumn Cicada was refined by me." Fang Yuan said.

"I understand, I get it. You were a Gu Immortal, but you used the Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth and came back to the past to change history!" Land spirit gasped and sighed.

"Oh? Ba Gui, you seem to know some information regarding the Spring Autumn Cicada, please enlighten me." Fang Yuan quickly inquired.

"Since the immemorial era, there were two types of Gu Masters, space path and time path, forming the basis of heaven and earth. Space path represented up, down, left, and right, while time path represented past, present, and future. Take my blessed land for example, at its peak, there was 6000 km² of land, and the flow of time was six times the normal speed." Land spirit said.

How much was 6000 km² ? On Earth, that is about the size of Brunei.

As for six times the normal speed of time, it was measured according to the river of time.

At its peak, the blessed land’s time was six times of the outside world. Six days inside the blessed land was one day outside.

Of course, by now, the blessed land had severely weakened, not only were the territories mostly eroded, the flow of time was only three times as fast.

In this world, there were many different blessed lands, and the size and flow of time were all different.

Land spirit continued: "Spring Autumn Cicada is one of the Gu worms of the time path. Back then, it had a master who left his name in history, that is Demon Venerable Hong Lian! He resisted the Immortal Court, and broke the chains that bound fate, giving the people of the future hope, and allowed them to grasp their own fate in their hands."

"Demon Venerable Hong Lian?! The most mysterious Demon Venerable in history?" Fang Yuan gasped.

In the Gu world, rank nine was Venerable.

Demon Venerable meant a rank nine demonic path Gu Master. Immortal Venerable is a rank nine righteous Gu Master.

In the eons of history, Demon Venerable and Immortal Venerable were merely a handful of people, they represented a supreme legend. There was only one Venerable in each era, never did two appear at the same time. Thus, Venerables represented true invincibility!

And among these rank nine Venerables, Demon Venerable Hong Lian was the most mysterious, and had the least records in history. Even Fang Yuan merely knew about his existence.

Now, this was the first time he was hearing about Demon Venerable Hong Lian’s details.

Land spirit continued: "This world, wide as one can imagine, is split into five regions, north, south, east, west, and central. They are close together, yet completely independent regions. With one river of time, flowing from the past, through the present, towards the future. That is the time and space of this main world."

"If one says that history is a series of still images, then the river of time is a thin thread that connects these numerous images into a line, You used the Spring Autumn Cicada, forcing your way out of the images, and travelled along the line, moving in the reverse direction as you inject your will and memories into one of the images. That would cause this image’s events to change, and consequently affect the future images as well.

"So that’s it." Fang Yuan benefited greatly from land spirit’s words.

He had used the Spring Autumn Cicada twice, and each was a unique experience, causing Fang Yuan’s understanding of the Spring Autumn Cicada and the river of time to become clearer.

Land spirit’s words gave Fang Yuan the inspiration for a new and unique understanding.

"To think that you are a future Gu Immortal, and even refined the Spring Autumn Cicada. In this blessed land, you are truly the most appropriate candidate to refine this Gu. Nevermind, since you are so confident, I shall trust you once, who do you want to kill?" Land spirit gave in.

Originally, it thought Fang Yuan was only a mortal, he would definitely waste a lot of immortal essence when refining Gu.

But right now, it recognised Fang Yuan’s Gu Immortal identity, and reduced the estimated immortal essence that he would potentially waste, thus accepting Fang Yuan’s request.

Fang Yuan smiled and promised: "Land spirit, it is right to trust me. I will not disappoint you, the Gu refinement will succeed. In the future, I have to rely on this second aperture Gu to ascend to Gu Immortal realm once again."

Land spirit laughed too, having a sense of acknowledgement towards Fang Yuan: "That’s right, you are a Gu Immortal, you know the value of the second aperture Gu much more than mortals. When you become a Gu Immortal, the second aperture will give you unparalleled benefits!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"To think that this three kings inheritance is a trap, the true winner is you, little beast king!" Killer ghost doctor Chou Jiu laid on the ground, staring deeply and closely at Fang Yuan as he exclaimed.

After Fang Yuan convinced the land spirit, he rushed to Chou Jiu and beat him up.

Chou Jiu had an ugly appearance, his hair was like dry yellow grass, his brain was protruding and his eyes were of different sizes. His cheekbone was very high, his nose was flat, there was a large clump of hair growing out of his nostrils, and his yellow teeth were projecting outwards.

But his gaze was very complicated, he had a plotting ability that ordinary people could not possess.

"Little beast king, I know about you, you have great talent, from a vagabond, you grew to this extent, I admire you greatly. Compared to you, I am merely several years older. When I was young, I did not have such accomplishments. You are a dragon among men, you will eventually soar to the heavens, and roam the world freely. I have no intentions to be enemies with you, if possible, I would like to use the information regarding the door of life and death to preserve my life."

Fang Yuan had killed four rank five Gu masters earlier, some of them were shocked, some furious, some fearful, but this Chou Jiu was extremely calm.

After understanding his situation, he placed his ego down and praised Fang Yuan.

He laid on the ground, not moving, as if he gave up on resisting.

But at this moment, the land spirit suddenly transmitted: "Quickly kill him, he is activating his token and Gu worms furiously, I am trying to suppress them but this is causing great immortal essence expenditure."

But Fang Yuan was slightly stunned, almost thinking he had hallucinated: "Door of life and death?"

This door of life and death was a big deal, it was recorded in <>, a secret forbidden land in ancient times. It was similar to the river of time and ordinary abyss.

After Verdant Great Sun died, Ren Zu went to the door of life and death to attempt to revive him.

Legend says that behind the door of life and death holds the secrets of life and death, if a person can comprehend it completely, they would be able to control life and death itself.

"Chou Jiu knows the location of the door of life and death?!" Fang Yuan’s heart was palpitating, as his expression turned cold, warning severely: "Chou Jiu, activate your Gu worms one more time and I will kill you immediately."

Chou Jiu’s expression changed, his pupils shrinking as he slowly sat up, looking at Fang Yuan: "You can sense me using Gu worms!"

A thought flashed across his eyes: "You can use Gu worms, while I can’t use mine at all. Sigh, it seems there is only one possibility — the land spirit is still alive and you subdued it. So this blessed land has such a secret. What a pity, back when the three kings obtained this place, they did not truly control the blessed land, thus you have obtained it now. But this blessed land is on the brink of destruction, there is no way to save it. The land spirit must be extremely old and weak too right, otherwise the Gu Masters would’ve been chased out already. Why would you need to eliminate us personally?"

Although Fang Yuan did not control this blessed land, after expressing his identity, the land spirit would listen to some of his instructions in order to assist him with the Gu refinement.

Chou Jiu was over a century old, he was old and scheming, easily guessing the scenario.

"Since you control the blessed land, then I won’t bother with this pointless act. As long as you preserve my life, what you will obtain will be out of your imagination." Chou Jiu said, stopping his secret actions.

Fang Yuan laughed without denying: "Talk about the door of life and death. You know the location? The door of life and death is a forbidden ground not inferior to the river of time, there is an extremely wide area inside, reflecting the five regions of the main world. Legend says that there are many unique and natural Gu worms inside, like life Gu, and death Gu."

Chou Jiu nodded: "I know the door’s location, not only that, I have even explored it multiple times and captured some of the life Gu and death Gu inside, eventually refining one life one death Gu. I placed this Gu inside the door of life and death, every time a person dies because of me, it will absorb this death energy and convert it into lifeforce. Because of this lifeforce, my healing methods are extremely profound. This is the reason why I became one of the four great doctors of southern border."

Killer ghost doctor revealed his own secret, to increase his trustworthiness.

"Oh? So that’s it." This was the first time Fang Yuan heard such a thing, although he had his previous life’s memories, he was not all-knowing.

"Then in that case, tell me, and I may spare you a life." Fang Yuan promised.

But Chou Jiu shook his head: "The secret regarding the door of life and death is way too important. I have once vowed before the sea oath Gu, to not reveal the details to outsiders. Once I say it, I will turn into dust, wiped off from this world. But if you join the shadow sect, you will be one of us, and I will be able to tell you."

"Sea oath Gu? Shadow Sect?" Fang Yuan frowned.

Sea oath Gu is a rank six Immortal Gu, it was very famous during ancient times, together with mountain pledge Gu. Mountain pledge and sea oath, they worked like the poison vow Gu, but poison vow Gu was an expenditure Gu while these two Immortal Gu could be repeatedly used.

Fang Yuan had heard of the sea oath Gu and had an understanding of it. But he was unfamiliar with ’Shadow Sect’.

Hearing this name, it sounds like a sect for Gu cultivators. That means, the loner Chou Jiu, had a secret organisation behind him?

Fang Yuan felt a little threatened, the situation was slightly out of his expectations.

It was not hard to kill Chou Jiu now, but Fang Yuan knew nothing about Shadow Sect, this gave him a sense of insecurity.

"That’s right, my sect is the Shadow Sect. The great ancestor who created Shadow Sect, was a rank eight Gu Immortal of the Immemorial Era. He was the one who found the door of life and death, and placed it into his blessed land. Later, many Gu Immortals were nurtured in Shadow Sect, the benefits are endless for you if you join Shadow Sect."

Saying so, Chou Jiu said a bunch of benefits, truly expending his verbal talent, spouting an exaggerated tale.

Fang Yuan struggled a little, before calming down: "Hehehe, Chou Jiu, that’s a nice plan there. If I join Shadow Sect, you not only will be free from danger, I will even have to call you senior brother. In such a traditional sect, respecting seniority is the most important thing. If I join it, I will definitely have to make an oath and be restricted with all sorts of methods. At the end, I even have to contribute my gains on San Cha mountain, and do missions for the clan in the name of loyalty, am I right?"

"Shadow Sect?" Fang Yuan sneered, shaking his head: "Let’s not talk about the possibility of you lying, even if it is real, so what? A sect that was created in the Immemorial Era, it is a miracle that it is still around now. You mentioned there were many Gu Immortals in history, but they are mostly dead already right. Otherwise, Shadow Sect would be a great force in the southern border, why would you have to fight alone, and slog it out single-handedly?"

Chou Jiu’s expression turned white, he had to reassess Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was so young, but he was so calculating and scheming. Facing potential benefits, he could remain so calm and analytic, what sort of young man is this? He is definitely a hundred year old monster!

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, continuing: "I am the type of person who likes to take all the benefits for himself, don’t tell me about win-win situations. Even if you made the sea oath, it is not unbreakable. Sea oath Gu and mountain pledge Gu have an obvious weakness. When you made the oath, you had to face the sea or a large mountain. As long as the piece of ocean or the mountain is destroyed, the oath will lose its effect."

Chou Jiu’s heart froze.

Fang Yuan was knowledgeable and knew many things, he was not like a newbie at all.

These kind of people were the hardest to fool.

Chou Jiu calmed his spirits: "It is useless. The sea that I made the oath to is inside the Shadow Sect blessed land, if you want to destroy that sea, you will need to know the location of the blessed land. But for me to say that location, you have to destroy the sea first. It is a dead loop."

Fang Yuan sneered, killing intent surging: "Since there is nothing that can be done, forget it. You can die now."

Chou Jiu sighed greatly: "If you want to kill me, go ahead."

He did not move, but in his heart, he felt certain.

The door of life and death was a legendary location, who did not care about their life and death? Little beast king definitely cannot endure such a temptation, his actions now were only to scare him.

But Fang Yuan shot out the bone spike resolutely.

This bone spike flew towards Chou Jiu’s heart.

At once, an intense sense of danger assaulted Chou Jiu.

"What! He actually wants to kill me?!" Chou Jiu was shocked, quickly evading.

Pew!

A crisp sound and the bone spike pierced his shoulder, inches away from his heart, only after it stabbed through his back did it stop.

"You, you!" Chou JIu pointed at Fang Yuan, his trembling voice contained fear, shock, and confusion: "Little beast king, you madman! You really wanted to kill me, if I did not dodge, I would’ve died! That is the door of life and death, the door of life and death! Back then, even Ren Zu had to spend all his effort to find it. This is an unparalleled holy land, the controller of life and death, as long as you can obtain it and comprehend it, you will attain immortality!"

Fang Yuan looked at him coldly, speaking plainly: "Didn’t you say you can’t tell me the secret? Then what use do I have of you?"

"You can join the Shadow Sect!" Chou Jiu’s body was sweating, either out of pain or fear.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, raising his hand and aiming again.

Chou Jiu quickly waved his hand, shouting: "Wait, wait, don’t be rash. There are other methods than this, we can use the poison vow Gu, if we make a poison vow, we can trust each other."

"I do not need your trust." Fang Yuan replied coldly.

"Then use the slavery Gu, I will acknowledge you as my master, don’t kill me."

"You are a rank five Gu Master, we need to use the rank five slavery Gu. This Gu is extremely rare, way more expensive than its other rank five counterparts, where do you want me to find it? Moreover, even if we use these Gu, can you tell me the location of Shadow Sect’s blessed land?" Fang Yuan retorted.

Chou Jiu’s expression froze.

Fang Yuan observed his expression, and his heart moved, knowing that the words were true.

Fang Yuan’s killing intent was not real, he was merely trying to test Chou Jiu.

Chou Jiu suggested the poison vow Gu, slavery Gu, he was already frantic, but still did not dare to mention the location of the blessed land. It seems he really did make the sea oath.

Chou Jiu wanted to lie and make up a random location.

But as long as he did not die from the oath, it means he lied. If he said the real location, the oath would take his life as well.

Or rather, even if he managed to say it, he would lose all his value and Fang Yuan would not let him off.

In this situation, Chou Jiu was at his wits’ end.

Recognising this, he laughed bitterly: "To think that I Chou Jiu would die here today."

"Being able to die in my hands is your honor." Fang Yuan replied plainly.

Chou Jiu looked at Fang Yuan seriously, nodding in agreement: "That’s true, with your talent and mentality, as long as your luck is not too bad, you will definitely be a walking disaster of the demonic path. You want to kill me, there is no point in begging anymore. It is fine if I die in your hands, at least better than getting killed by those scumbags outside. Actually, I have a plan to allow you to learn about the door of life and death."

Saying so, a cunning light flashed across Chou Jiu’s eyes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Oh? What method?" Fang Yuan’s eyebrows raised.

"Regarding this matter, I have to start from a long time ago..." Chou Jiu heaved a deep sigh as he recalled; hatred, grief, deep love and other complicated expressions appeared on his face.

"I have no time to listen to your story." Fang Yuan ruthlessly interrupted.

Chou Jiu choked: "Then I will make it short."

"My original name was Zeng Ah Niu. I was a farmer who made a living by collecting herbs, one time I unluckily fell from a cliff but I profited from it and entered Shadow Sect’s blessed land. By passing the land spirit’s test, I was able to become a disciple of Shadow Sect. The sect only had two disciples, me and a senior sister."

"Senior sister’s surname is Chen and her first name is Jiu, she was as beautiful as an immortal fairy. She was raised by the land spirit since young and had never left the blessed land, thus her nature was truly innocent. Since birth, I was extremely ugly and had always suffered bullying and ridicule. But senior sister was always amiable and warm to me. I slowly started having feelings for her after being in contact with her all the time. We took an oath in front of the blessed land’s sea, to protect and stand by each other. We cultivated together and entered deep into the door of life and death, capturing life Gu and death Gu...."

"That was the happiest time of my life and I had thought it could continue forever. After an earth calamity, the land spirit suffered injuries and went into hibernation; a hole appeared in the blessed land and connected it to the outside world, allowing a scoundrel to sneak in."

"This scoundrel was heavily injured at that time, and if I had known what would happen later because of him, I would have definitely killed him on the spot! But I didn’t do that and instead saved him. He claimed his surname was Shang, and had blood red hair. He had exceptional eloquence, and using his flowery words, he slowly deceived senior sister during his recuperation. His appearance was indeed slightly better than mine and used his pretty boy face to win senior sister’s favor. Senior sister was innocent and ignorant, the more she talked with him, the happier she became; in the end, she took the initiative to take care of him in every possible way."

"We argued many times about this, falling out with each other a lot. After that thief recovered, I wanted to expel him and continue living a fairytale life with senior sister. But who could have thought her heart had already changed and actually broke the oath we took at that time, injuring me and defecting with that scoundrel!"

"I was really regretful! I regretted my compassion which led to a disaster, and I hated senior sister Chen Jiu for falling in love with somebody else, and even more hatred towards that despicable scoundrel for robbing what I cherished. After I recovered from my injuries, I left the blessed land and roamed around Southern Border, searching for this adulterous couple. But what I didn’t know was, this scoundrel had really high status and was the leader of Shang clan!"

Chou Jiu paused and looked at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was expressionless, he knew many behind-the-scene details due to his previous life memories and already knew who Chou Jiu was talking about in the middle of his conversation.

Chou Jiu could only give a forced smile at Fang Yuan’s indifference: "It seems you have already guessed their identities. That’s right, that thief is the current Shang clan leader Shang Yan Fei and my senior sister Chen Jiu is Doctor Su Shou. Shang clan is a super clan while I am a lone force, I roamed around Southern Border all these years and put in a lot of effort to deal with this adulterous couple! Unfortunately... unfortunately I am going to die here today and have no way of achieving my wish."

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan silently listened to end and suddenly laughed.

He looked at Chou Jiu who was sitting on the ground, his eyes shining brightly: "Killer ghost doctor, you made quite a good plan. According to your words, Shadow Sect has only you and Chen Jiu, if you die, I will have to obtain the information about life and death door from Shang Yan Fei and Doctor Su Shou. But why would they tell me about the matters regarding the blessed land of Shadow Sect so easily? At that time, we will have to fight, and no matter who wins, both will be favorable to you."

"Hahaha... little beast king, you are very blunt and straightforward. People who only plot and scheme will always act under the radar, but your thinking is meticulous and your way of doing things is domineering, you are truly a formidable person who has yet to shook the world. You are right, that is my plan. It is an open scheme and you have already seen through it, so are you still going to make inquiries about the Shadow Sect’s blessed land from them?" Killer ghost doctor laughed heartily.

Fang Yuan looked at this rank five Gu Master for a while before sighing: "Of course."

Life and death door was an immemorial forbidden ground like the river of time.

There were many unique Gu inhabiting in that place.

Spring Autumn Cicada existed in the river of time; life and death door naturally also had similar Immortal Gu.

It was impossible for Fang Yuan to not be moved by such an enormous benefits. Thus, he clearly knew Chou Jiu’s scheme, but was still going to go head-first into it.

Qiu laughed loudly with tears appearing in his eyes: "Little beast king, although you are a talent of the younger generation, I really admire you. I really look forward to the future where you collide with that adulterous couple. It is a pity I won’t be able to see it."

"Our Shadow Sect has different views on life and death. We encountered each other among the countless sea of people because of life and yet my death will be because of you, this is a truly extraordinary fate. Maybe, you really are fated to find Shadow Sect’s blessed land and the door of life and death. I might as well give this mysterious fate to you and hope you can grasp it."

Chou Jiu became tranquil and his gaze were deep as if he had seen through life and death: "It is no matter if I die now, after all in this world, who can live forever? One can gain a long life but immortality is a hopeless prospect. Even those Immortal Venerable and Demon Venerable will only turn into ashes in the end. Little beast king, I will end my own life, you don’t need to do it."

Saying so, he committed suicide by biting off his tongue!

Blood sprayed out as his life went away, the ghost doctor, the head of the four great doctors in the future died like this.

"I did not expect to gain such important information by killing this ghost doctor. Shadow Sect’s blessed land, life and death door... If I am able to rule them, they will definitely be a foundation to my hegemony. It seems I will have to change my plan again."

Every single Gu Master who cultivated to rank five needed to go through the survival of the fittest and many competitions before they were able to distinguish themselves; none of them were a simple character.

They all possessed their own individual opportunities, advantages, trump cards and secrets.

Right now, all the rank five Gu Masters in the blessed land were annihilated by Fang Yuan.

Tie Mu Bai, Wu Gui, Ku Mo, Wu Lan Shan and Chou Jiu had their own distinct individuality, deep foundation and powerful strength. If the current Fang Yuan was to fight them alone, any one of them could easily suppress him; he was absolutely not their match.

"So Doctor Su Shou’s real name is Chen Jiu while the killer ghost doctor named himself Chou Jiu, it seems the hatred was born from love. No wonder in my previous life, during the battle of Yi Tian mountain, he took the initiative to go there and threw himself into that whirlpool, challenging Shang Yan Fei and confronting Doctor Su Shou. And after he was taken as a prisoner, he exposed the matter back then and was killed by Shang Yan Fei."

As for the kindness, grudge, affection and hatred entangling these three, Fang Yuan did not want to judge.

Sympathize with Chou Jiu? But Doctor Su Shou’s choice was also completely understandable. Favor the rich and disdain the poor, detest ugliness and love beauty, these were common in the world.

Shang Yan Fei was a famous handsome man in Southern Border; comparing him to Chou Jiu, one was day and another was night.

The main reason Doctor Su Shou felt deeply attached to Chou Jiu was because she was pure and Chou Jiu was the first male she saw. And later when she met Shang Yan Fei, her eyes were opened and had a comparison.

Moreover, Chen Jiu was someone who innately pursued beauty.

When a patient came to visit her, she would first look at their appearance. If they were ugly, she would not treat them. If they were average, it would depend on her mood at that time and the patient’s examination fees. If they were handsome and beautiful, she would treat them on the spot and not even charge fees.

Someone reproached her for this and she argued righteously: "You ugly beings, the fact that you are alive is simply staining the beauty of life, you should all just die and that will solve all troubles. As for beautiful things, of course we need to cherish and protect them by all means."

These words had caused an uproar in Shang clan city at that time. In the end, Shang Yan Fei personally appeared and suppressed this event.

Doctor Su Shou’s position in Shang clan city was unique.

Back when Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing saw Doctor Su Shou together at Shang clan city, the difference in her attitude was very clear. She was indifferent to Fang Yuan whereas she was very gentle and amiable to Bai Ning Bing.

"But speaking of it, the four great doctors all have their own peculiarity. Leaving aside killer ghost doctor and Doctor Su Shou, Travelling Doctor Jiu Zhi likes to disguise himself as an old beggar and wander around aimlessly. Divine Doctor Sheng Shou is a male who likes other males."

Fang Yuan thought casually while taking out all the Gu of killer ghost doctor.

Chou Jiu had many Gu worms.

Most of them were healing Gu and besides that were movement Gu.

He did not have rank five healing Gu, but instead had a rank five movement Gu called warp Gu.

Warp Gu’s shape was abstract and looked like a fried twisted dough. Its dark golden body was twisted around seven to eight times, its head was twisted around its body, its eyes and wings were misaligned; as if its creator had created it at a whim.

However, this appearance instead matched with its original owner’s appearance.

Fang Yuan slightly sized it up before storing it. Then he used beast strength placenta Gu to swallow Chou Jiu’s aperture.

Looking at Chou Jiu’s corpse, he chuckled: "Chou Jiu... Chou Jiu, you are really cunning. If I did not have my previous life’s memories, I would have truly been deceived by you."

Although Chou Jiu was dead, he was hiding a chance of resurrection.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, Chou Jiu’s throat had been cut and assassinated during the middle stage of the battle in Yi Tian mountain. But not long later, he came back to life, causing both righteous and demonic path to be extremely startled.

It turns out, he had used remnant life Gu.

Remnant life Gu was a rank five expendable Gu, and as long as a Gu Master’s body is intact after death, they can slowly recover after some time and resurrect.

However, since Chou Jiu was at the blessed land, the remnant life Gu’s law fragment in his body was suppressed by the heavenly power and could not activate for the time being. But as long as the blessed land slowly crumbles, its suppression power would weaken and the remnant life Gu’s power could activate again and resurrect him.

Chou Jiu had repeatedly praised and flattered Fang Yuan and put on a show that he was carefreely facing death; it was all to give a good impression to Fang Yuan so that after his death, his corpse would not be ripped apart by Fang Yuan.

In truth, Fang Yuan also did not have a habit of mutilating corpses.

"But today, I will make an exception for you." Fang Yuan ruthlessly attacked and soon turned Chou Jiu’s corpse into minced meat.

He hesitated for a while and was still not satisfied, so he burnt the pool of blood and flesh into ashes.

With a wave of his palm, the ashes fluttered and drifted everywhere.

"Chou Jiu, if you can still resurrect from this, I will admit you have skills! Hahahaha..."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"This is the forty-eighth round." Wu Shen Tong counted in his heart.

He came from Wu clan, the number one super clan in southern border, they had deep foundations, and were the supreme overlord of the righteous path. And he was the heavily nurtured enslavement path Gu Master in Wu clan, his attainments in enslavement was nothing to be scoffed at.

Wu Shen Tong’s name might sound domineering, but in truth, he was thin as a stick, his skin was pale-yellow, and he looked like a sickly scholar.

In truth, he once had a broad shoulder and thin waist, and had a perfect body. But in one battle, he was afflicted with Long Qing Tian’s jade sky Gu poison.

He went to Divine Doctor Sheng Shou for treatment.

Divine Doctor Sheng Shou touched his chest, his eyes shining as he sighed: "You came too late. The Gu poison has seeped into your bone marrow. I can preserve your life and cultivation, but because this poison is deeply rooted, it cannot be removed. From now you, you have to come here once in a while for treatment, I will help you detox at regular intervals."

Precisely because of jade sky Gu’s poison, Wu Shen Tong became thinner and thinner each day, eventually ending up like this.

"I wonder which Gu Master is my next opponent?" Wu Shen Tong walked in the fog, his gaze solemn.

Just earlier, in the three options, he chose the front path.

In King Quan inheritance, towards the later stages, more options appeared. Most Gu Masters would choose to fight dog groups for safety, and in truth, they only chose other Gu Masters out of desperation.

No matter how big the dog group is, they were still beasts. With a Gu Master’s guidance, even if the dog group is weak, they possessed great threat.

Wu Shen Tong however, took the opposite route, whenever he was given a chance to battle another Gu Master, he would not choose any other path.

"In terms of enslavement path mastery, I am top-tier in southern border. In this San Cha mountain, I am almost the best. Only two people can threaten me, one is Wu Gui because he is a rank five Gu Master that had once walked the enslavement path. But sadly, enslavement path used too much resources and he had to change paths midway. The other is Zhang San San, he is a true enslavement Gu Master, but his cultivation is inferior to me."

In the enslavement path, Wu Shen Tong had great advantage. In terms of seniority, Zhang San San was his junior. In this King Quan Inheritance, even if he had to fight Wu Gui head on, he had no fear.

With such great strength, he obviously had to target his enemies and eliminate as many competitors as possible.

Eventually, he will be left alone to devour this King Quan Inheritance.

This was Wu Shen Tong’s brilliance.

"If I had to count, my next opponent should be the twenty-third. Hehe, it is your bad luck to have encouraged me."

Wu Shen Tong snorted internally as he stopped his steps.

Beside him, his group dog guarded him closely.

He looked at the other end of the fog, from the fog, a group of green-purple dogs with rotting skin appeared.

"Oh, corpse dogs." Wu Shen Tong laughed lightly.

He knew that these dogs were extremely useful early on in the inheritance. That is because these dogs can consume corpses to recover their injuries.

But towards the later parts, these corpse dogs would get weaker and weaker. That is because, these dogs were not as fast as the lightning symbol dogs, had lower defense than the steel armor dogs, and were not as united as the chrysanthemum akita dogs.

"Only those half-assed enslavement path Gu Masters would love these useless corpse dogs. Different paths are worlds’ apart, how would those who aren’t enslavement path Gu Masters know the true meaning of enslavement path without decades of experience?"

Wu Shen Tong thought about those Gu Masters and laughed in disdain.

But the next moment,he frowned lightly.

From the fog before him, corpse dogs continued to appear.

"This number is slightly huge, it seems that to win, I will have to pay a small price." Wu Shen Tong thought.

But soon, at the same time as the corpse dogs, different kinds of dogs started appearing in his vision.

"Chrysanthemum akita dogs! The number is slightly big, hmm... it seems this person has some attainments in the enslavement path." Wu Shen Tong nodded lightly.

"A combination of chrysanthemum akita dogs and corpse dogs, although the number is slightly big, their formation is extremely brittle. I just have to use a few dog kings to charge forward later, and they would disperse easily, as long as I act forcefully, I would be able to defeat them and attain victory."

"Eh, the other party actually has hedgedogs?"

From the fog, Wu Shen Tong saw hedgedogs appearing.

These dogs, their entire bodies were filled with spikes, attacking them would injure oneself.

If the steel armor dogs with huge defense were called tough, then these hedgedogs were tough with spikes. To eliminate them, one has to be prepared to get their throats punctured.

"So many hedgedogs! It seems this person is lucky, being able to gather such a huge group. Why didn’t I have such luck?"

Wu Shen Tong sighed, immediately changing his battle strategy.

"The opponent had hedgedogs, I will use the steel armor dogs as the vanguard, and flank with the lightning symbol dogs. Once they engage in battle, the steel armor dogs will charge in and encircle with the lightning symbol dogs, attaining victory easily!"

But after the hedgedogs appeared, large numbers of lightning symbol dogs appeared from the fog.

Wu Shen Tong’s expression turned grim.

The appearance of the dog group meant his earlier strategy no longer worked. That is because the opponent possessed a dog with high speed like lightning symbol dog, they could reverse flank him.

"To think they also have the lightning symbol dogs, and so many!" More and more lightning symbol dogs appeared in his vision, as Wu Shen Tong’s expression turned ugly.

He thought: The other party has so many dogs, this cannot be explained with luck. Evidently, the other part is also an experienced enslavement path Gu Master, already able to threaten him.

"Who is it? Is it Wu Gui or Zhang San San? Regardless, this will be a tough fight. I can only improvise my battle tactic, and change accordingly, thankfully, I have a token!"

Thinking so, Wu Shen Tong’s heart settled.

He took a look at his dog troop, there, a group of dogs laid on the ground, around a hundred and twenty.

The dogs were large in size, twice the size of ordinary dogs, they had sharp claws and their backs were wide and thick, while their nose and mouth resembled a lion’s.

This was the heavy tai dog.

Heavy tai dog had defense equivalent to the steel armor dogs. In terms of unity, they matched the chrysanthemum akita dogs.

"In this King Quan Inheritance, out of the hundred types of dogs, only a few can be part of the main troop. Heavy tai dog is one of them. Lightning symbol dog, chrysanthemum akita dog, and steel armor dog, these dogs are too extreme, their weaknesses are too apparently, they cannot be relied on. Only a dog like heavy tai dog can be relied on. The larger the numbers, the stronger their battle strength.

Wu Shen Tong looked at his heavy tai dogs, feeling satisfied.

These were saved up by him after much difficulty. In usual battles, he did not use them, saving them until now.

"It seems this will be a hard battle, I have to use the heavy tai dogs. I believe that when I strike, the opponent should be very surprised. Hahaha..."

Thinking of this, Wu Shen Tong’s lips curled into a smile.

But the next moment, his smile froze on his face.

From the other end of the fog, heavy tai dogs appeared too.

"The other party also have heavy tai dogs? Indeed, they are an expert in enslavement path, they naturally understand the excellence of the heavy tai dogs, thus they kept a few."

More and more heavy thai dogs appeared from the fog, as Wu Shen Tong started squinting, his brows frowning into a wrinkle.

"So many, why do they have so many heavy tai dogs?"

He had always regarded the heavy tai dogs as his trump card, seeing his opponent have them placed much mental pressure on Wu Shen Tong.

Suddenly, Wu Shen Tong’s pupils shrunk as he stared at the fog.

He saw a domineering dog king.

"Heavy tai dog king! They actually have a heavy tai dog king!" Wu Shen Tong saw this and his heart sank.

With the dog king, the dog group’s battle strength will surge several times. More importantly, Wu Shen Tong does not have a heavy tai dog king to fight back, his trump card would be suppressed by his opponent’s dog king and have less fighting strength than normal.

In just a short moment, his trump card was no more.

"Tough battle, this will be an unprecedentedly tough battle! Who is it? Wu Gui or Zhang San San? It has to be one of them! High chance it is Wu Gui!"

Wu Shen Tong had lost his confidence towards this battle.

"The opponent’s troops are larger than mine, I am likely to lose this. Even if I win this, it will be a tough victory and I would face great losses, unable to continue anymore."

Wu Shen Tong felt regret already.

But very quickly, he felt more than just simply regret.

His eye socket expanded more and more, as his mouth opened subconsciously.

His eyeballs were bulging out of his sockets, like his head was hit on the back. His expression turned from suspicious to shock, from shock to fear.

From the fog, not only did a large number of heavy tai dogs appear, even green hua dogs, smoke song dogs, light heng dogs and star heng dogs appeared!

Green hua dogs, a body covered in green scales, having an extraordinary disposition.

Smoke song dogs, oozing smoke from its nose and mouth, extremely rebellious.

Light heng dogs, a body of white fur, bright and gentle.

Star heng dogs, long and slim, stood out from the crowd.

How is this possible!" Wu Shen Tong screamed: "Green hua, smoke song, light heng and star heng all have differing specialties, they are on the same level, known as the five great mountain 1 dogs collectively, able to form a grand formation! How did they get so many dogs?"

What was hardest for Wu Shen Tong to believe was that the other party not only had large numbers of five great mountain dogs, they also had their respective dog kings!

"Who in the world is he? How can he have so many dog kings? Unbelievable! Is this an illusion?" In the fog, dogs were still coming out one after another, causing a great mental impact on Wu Shen Tong.

Compared to him, the other party was like a giant fighting a baby.

They could be compared at all!

Wu Shen Tong had no battle intent left. He had no way of winning this battle.

The other party just has to wave their hand and the dog groups would overwhelm him, regardless of his manipulation skills, there was no difference.

The different in military force could not be made up for with technical skills.

"Who is it? Did a rank five enslavement path Gu Master come to San Cha mountain? Impossible! Even if it is a rank five enslavement path Gu Master, how can they have such a large army? I have to see who the other party is!"

Wu Shen Tong grabbed his token as he stared at the fog.

From the fog, a persona appeared.

"Finally revealing your true identity?" Wu Shen Tong’s sweat was dripping down his forehead as he gulped.

Swoosh!

At this moment, there was a light sound and Fang Yuan appeared behind him.

"Who?" Wu Shen Tong felt something and before he turned back.

Fang Yuan placed his palm on his head, squeezing.

Splat!

His head was popped like a balloon.

He was dead too.

From the fog, Bai Ning Bing walked out casually.

"How many rounds left?" She looked at Fang Yuan, yawning, like she had not gotten out of bed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Others had to rack their brains and make countless plans to advance through the rounds; people like Wu Shen Tong and Wu Gui also had to meticulously plan and choose their options. But with the help of the land spirit, Bai Ning Bing just had to move forward.

The pitiful Wu Shen Tong, a grand rank four peak stage Gu Master, could not even see Bai Ning Bing’s appearance at the end.

As for Fang Yuan’s appearance, Bai Ning Bing was not in the least bit surprised because the land spirit had reminded her.

In fact, this was the cooperation of the two.

Fang Yuan needed Wu Shen Tong’s aperture while Bai Ning Bing needed Wu Shen Tong’s enslavement path Gu worms and these dog groups he had accumulated.

With Wu Shen Tong’s death, his large dog beasts group was naturally incorporated into Bai Ning Bing’s troops, increasing her enormous dog army by ten percent.

Looking at the vast dog group, Fang Yuan joyfully nodded: "Your dog beasts army has already become an initial formation. In this King Quan Inheritance, with this group, you can already snowball to the final round without any problems. Remember, at the last few rounds, there are a large group of lion mastiffs. These lion mastiffs are all mutated beasts and have much more battle prowess than the five great mountain dogs. They were the trump cards of King Quan. Besides them, there are two dog emperors, ancient mutated beasts which are more powerful than common mutated beasts. Back in the day, they were the left and right arms of King Quan, each of them can match a rank five Gu Master, you must subdue them!"

Bai Ning Bing nodded and left, continuing to charge through the rounds.

"You are indeed someone who came from the future, using Spring Autumn Cicada to come back to the past. You know about three kings inheritance inside out." The land spirit transmitted its voice and praised, "I need to remind you, the immortal essence portions are almost depleted and are only enough for you to kill two more people. Who do you plan on killing next?"

Fang Yuan nodded and said without hesitation: "Zhang San San."

Beast placenta Gu already had eighty-nine percent aptitude and shone like a gem. Compared to its previous rough muddy shape, the difference was like night and day.

Killing two more rank four Gu Masters was enough to achieve ninety percent aptitude.

Second aperture’s aptitude could not be higher than the Gu Master’s first aperture. Fang Yuan’s first aperture was A grade of ninety percent. Thus, the second aperture Gu’s current limit was also A grade ninety percent.

Even if he raised it to ninety nine percent, when it was used, Fang Yuan would only have ninety percent. The remaining nine percent aptitude would be wasted.

Of course, if Fang Yuan could raise his first aperture’s aptitude in the future, the second aperture would also have the potential to rise.

Zhang San San was only a rank four upper stage Gu Master, a stage lower than Gu Masters like Yi Huo and Kong Ri Tian.

But in Fang Yuan’s view, he was the enemy who possessed the most threat.

It was because he was an enslavement path Gu Master second only to Wu Shen Tong and Wu Gui.

Fang Yuan had a plan: "Bai Ning Bing is not an enslavement path Gu Master in the end and is a complete newbie at commanding the dog groups. Later, she will definitely be confused when commanding so many dog beasts, it will be remarkable if she doesn’t make any mistakes. Fortunately, I don’t need her to command and control the dog beasts, and only need her to form a huge battle formation to protect the main hall and wait quietly."

Like this, it would greatly fill up for her inadequacy in commanding ability.

However, such battle formation would be extremely rigid and in case she runs into a proficient enslavement path expert, the situation would turn into a mess.

For instance, Wu Shen Tong and Wu Gui would only need to command a small group of dogs to make several attacks and probe out the actual situation. They could then send troops to lure the dog beasts repeatedly and cause disorder in the battle formation, creating a hole in the defense.

Fang Yuan would need to concentrate all his attention at the crucial stage of refining Gu. Land Spirit would also become very weak and all the defense would lie in the dog group, so Fang Yuan naturally wanted to eliminate the enslavement path Gu Masters who possessed the most threat.

After a while, Fang Yuan killed Zhang San San very smoothly.

Even Wu Gui, Wu Shen Tong and the others were killed by Fang Yuan, Zhang San San naturally could not escape his claws.

But his death gave Fang Yuan an unexpected surprise.

From Zhang San San’s aperture, Fang Yuan actually obtained a rank five slavery Gu.

Slavery Gu were available from rank one to rank five. Once these Gu were implanted on someone, it could control that Gu Master.

Rank five enslavement Gu could be used to control rank five Gu Master and was thus very precious and extremely rare. Back in the day on Qing Mao mountain, Gu Yue clan’s fourth generation clan leader had a great battle with flower wine monk. After he lost the battle, he asked for forgiveness and said he was willing to be enslaved by slavery Gu and be at flower wine monk’s disposal. In the end, flower wine monk was deceived by these words and during his moment of carelessness, he was counterattacked by the fourth generation clan leader, dying regretfully on Qing Mao mountain.

"Famous Gu Masters are not to be underestimated. This Zhang San San is an enslavement path Gu Master, it is not strange for him to possess enslavement Gu. The reason he had not used it was to wait for a good opportunity and get a rank five expert. After all, if a rank five slavery Gu were to be used on a rank four Gu Master, it would be a huge loss."

Fang Yuan slightly thought and guessed Zhang San San’s thoughts.

He looked at the beast placenta Gu, its aptitude had already neared ninety percent, he only needed to kill one more.

Immortal essence portions were exhausted, so Fang Yuan could only kill one more anyway.

"With this enslavement Gu, I can control one person. Sigh, if I had known this Zhang San San had this Gu, I would have first killed him and used the enslavement Gu to subdue a rank five Gu Master."

Fang Yuan felt some regret. If he had used this Gu to subdue Tie Mu Bai, it would be greatly advantageous to his Gu refinement!

Even if he did not get Tie Mu Bai, Wu Gui, Ku Mo, Wu Lan Shan or Chou Jiu were also extremely good choices.

However now, they were all dead, Fang Yuan at best could only subdue rank four Gu Master, but using rank five enslavement Gu on rank four Gu Masters was equivalent to using an ox-cleaver to kill chicken, a complete waste of its value.

However, despite the rank five enslavement Gu being extremely precious and it would be a waste of its value, Fang Yuan was still going to use it!

He would be facing enormous risks while refining second aperture Gu, and would no doubt be much safer with a second rank four Gu Master beside him.

But there were so many rank four Gu Masters in the blessed land, who should he subdue?

Yi Huo, Kong Ri Tian, Long Qing Tian, Yi Chong along with Li Fei Le, Tao Zi, Feng Tian Yu, Yan Jun, Li Xian, Hu Mei Er, Tie clan’s four old-timers, Tie Ruo Nan and others; some were powerful, some were cunning, some were sinister, some were brave, some specialized in long ranged attacks, some had outstanding movement ability, some were superior in healing, some had huge wealth, some had large connections...

Every choice had its consequences.

Fang Yuan’s thoughts rumbled like lightning and after thinking for a good while, he decided upon a choice.

"It shall be him. Land spirit, transport me." Fang Yuan decided and said with no hesitation.

After about three minutes, Feng Tian Yu was kneeling in front of Fang Yuan and wholeheartedly said: "This subordinate Feng Tian Yu greets master!"

"Feng Tian Yu, you could refine rank five Gu when you were at rank three. Although the rank five Gu died after half a day, you achieved instant reputation from this. Now, things have changed, your clan is dwindling and facing extinction, you are no longer the young clan leader that had infinite prospects once." Fang Yuan looked at the kneeling Feng Tian Yu and said indifferently.

Feng Tian Yu raised his head: "Having lord as my master, it is this subordinate’s honor and fortune."

"It is good that you understand this point. Next, continue to charge through the rounds according to my instructions. King Xin inheritance has an undefeated hundred battles Gu, bring it to me." Fang Yuan instructed.

"Yes, this subordinate will exhaust all his strength to do this task for master!" Feng Tian Yu promptly replied.

Under the control of the enslavement Gu, he had become a loyal and devoted slave of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan felt reassured at Feng Tian Yu.

He was not only a famous and talented grand master of the refinement path in Southern Border, he was the biggest beneficiary of King Xin’s inheritance in his previous life.

In Fang Yuan’s memories, it was him who obtained undefeated hundred battles Gu.

Now after rebirth, Fang Yuan was not only going to obtain undefeated hundred battles Gu, but also take the original owner as his subordinate.

"Feng Tian Yu will be guided by the land spirit, it won’t be a problem for him to charge through King Xin’s inheritance. Like this, I have already acquired two of three kings inheritance."

However, this was also not Fang Yuan’s main reason.

The reason why he chose Feng Tian Yu was because of his innate talent at refinement path.

After all, it was the first time Fang Yuan was refining the second aperture Gu. With such a grandmaster of refinement path beside him, it would definitely be a huge help in refining the Gu.

After taking in Feng Tian Yu, Fang Yuan began to consider his last target to kill.

Kill who?

Fang Yuan’s first thought was not the strongest Yi Huo and was also not the influential Hu Mei Er and Tao Zi, but rather Tie Ruo Nan.

Like Tie Mu Bai, Fang Yuan also thought highly of Tie Ruo Nan’s future prospects. Such a genius that had already been sharpened through trials, if she was allowed to grow, she was bound to be a huge threat. She was more terrifying that even Yi Huo and others.

However, the problem now was, the threat Tie Ruo Nan brought to Fang Yuan was far lower than Gu Masters like Yi Huo, Kong Ri Tian and others.

For the second aperture Gu refinement, if Fang Yuan killed Yi Huo, it would absolutely be more helpful than killing Tie Ruo Nan.

To kill Yi Huo just to be safe, or root out Tie Ruo Nan in consideration of the future?

Fang Yuan’s thoughts were suddenly interrupted by the land spirit: "Not good, something happened!"

"What?" Fang Yuan was surprised, the land spirit’s tone hid a trace of panic.

"A rank four Gu Master has discovered a weak area of the blessed land. That area had been seriously damaged due to earth calamity, the heavenly power at that area is the weakest and the Gu Masters can use one Gu there. Now, he is using a rank five Gu to spread poison all over the place. He will open a passage to the outside world in around eight minutes at this rate, and create a hole in the blessed land!"

Fang Yuan immediately sensed the seriousness of the matter.

In his previous life, he was a rank six Gu Immortal and had once possessed a blessed land, naturally knowing the importance of this.

If there was a hole in the blessed land and it connects with the outside world, the immortal essence expenditure would double. If it was not stopped and repaired in time, the hole would grow bigger and bigger, finally attracting winds of assimilation.

Once the winds of assimilation blew, the blessed land would be destroyed.

"I have already separated and cut off most of the areas with holes in the blessed land. But there are three places that are in crucial areas and can’t be cut off. To think this person’s luck is so good to actually bump into one of the areas and even be aware of the hole. For the actual situation, take a look." The land spirit heaved a sigh.

A scene appeared in front of Fang Yuan.

In the scene, there was a Gu Master wearing dark blue robe, he was thin and his gaze was gloomy.

It was none other than Long Qing Tian!

Right now, he was activating his sole rank five poison Gu — jade sky.

Everywhere around him, the land and the sky were all suffused with a layer of pale green light.

He who once dyed the sky jade green!

Jade sky Gu was Long Qing Tian's core trump card, a Gu from the immemorial times and was fundamental extinct now. Long Qing Tian had used this Gu to roam Southern Border and gain terrifying reputation for poisoning countless people.

Now, he was poisoning this part of the blessed land!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"To think my luck is so good, I accidentally found this weakened zone." Long Qing Tian's gaze shone as he showed an excited expression.

After all, although the three kings inheritance had a hundred rounds, each one had multiple choices, like the branches of a gigantic tree.

Him arriving at this place was rarer than one out of ten thousand, his luck was maxed out.

"The heavenly power restricting this place is very weak, I can actually use one Gu. Haha, I will use the jade sky Gu and poison this blessed land, that way, I will be able to communicate with the main world and form a connection.

"Once the path is made, I will be able to use Gu worms here at will, I will not have to obey the three kings' rules. After that, I will use this place as my base and expand my influence, and get all the rewards. Hehehe, eh? Who is it!"

Long Qing Tian sensed something and turned around, seeing one person far away.

"Little beast king Fang Zheng?" Long Qing Tian squinted, feeling weird that Fang Yuan was here.

Fang Yuan did not reply, he waved his hand and a bone spike flew out.

Long Qing Tian snorted, activating his defensive Gu.

All around him was the jade-green jade sky Gu's poison, already invading a huge area. Fang Yuan did not have detoxification methods and did not dare to touch the Gu poison, thus he could only engage in long range battle.

At this time, Fang Yuan only had the mutated beast phantoms left, but he did not have the rank four all-out effort Gu, thus he could not summon them as he wished.

But he had killed so many Gu Master experts, and obtained many different Gu worms that could be used for long range attacks.

In a few rounds of battle, Long Qing Tian was defeated by Fang Yuan.

Long Qing Tian could only use one Gu at any given time. Fang Yuan could use any number of Gu with the help of the land spirit. The difference between the two was huge.

Although he won, Fang Yuan’s expression was ugly.

Long Qing Tian’s corpse was a pale jade-green color, already poisoned by the jade sky Gu poison.

This demonic expert, before his death, smiled at Fang Yuan darkly, before activating the jade sky Gu and killed himself with poison.

Fang Yuan did not kill Long Qing Tian, he knew he had no hopes of surviving and suicided.

"As expected of a demonic head." Fang Yuan breathed out deeply.

Jade sky Gu contained a special poison from the immemorial era, it is already extinct. In the current southern border, only the four great doctors can cleanse it.

If Fang Yuan wanted to devour his aperture, he would have to make contact with the poison. If he got poisoned, in less than two hours, his whole body will fade into a green light.

Very few Gu Masters could survive after getting hit with the jade sky Gu poison.

Wu Shen Tong from Wu clan was extremely lucky.

Even if Fang Yuan risked getting poisoned, he might not get any Gu. With the weak heavenly power here, Long Qing Tian could easily self-detonate his Gu worms one by one.

The benefits were not proportional to the risks, Fang Yuan would not do it.

"But because of this, my last portion of immortal essence has been expended on Long Qing Tian. The beast strength placenta Gu’s aptitude can only reach eighty-nine percent."

Fang Yuan felt great pity, after working so hard, he did not reach his desired ninety percent.

"I am after all too weak. The execution of these kind of plans can only be left to chances.

This unexpected situation that Long Qing Tian caused caught him off guard.

Fang Yuan was human, not god, he did not expect this to occur.

Although he had his previous life’s memories, and could clearly recall the details, for such minor details, if nobody mentioned it, who would know?

Moreover, after his rebirth, he changed many events. Whether this incident by Long Qing Tian happened in his previous life was unknown.

"Nevermind about the beast strength placenta Gu, what’s worse is that the land had already been infected by the jade sky Gu poison, the poison will eventually break out! By then, this land will rot, and turn into green-blue light, creating a huge hole."

Fang Yuan looked at this area, as the green color darkened and spread further out.

Such a loophole would accelerate the blessed land’s destruction. That also means that the land spirit will get even weaker.

"If it was a younger blessed land, as long as immortal essence is sufficient, even if the poison cannot be cured, it will be able to cut away this rotten area and fix the hole. But this blessed land is already too old, and lack in immortal essence. Forming a hole here now is like the last straw that breaks the camel’s back . Sigh, I have little time left to refine Gu, I must hurry."

At this point, Fang Yuan’s merciless slaughter had reached its end. He returned to the hall, and fought against time, refining his Gu!

As days passed, Spring Autumn Cicada’s pressure intensified.

Fang Yuan only slept an hour a day, forcing himself to the limits.

As he worked hard like his life was on the line, other than a few unavoidable failures, his process was rapid. Even the land spirit was full of praises.

While Fang Yuan moved closer towards success, his younger brother was extremely high-spirited.

....

Central Continent, Tian Ti mountain.

At the middle of Hu Immortal blessed land, on Dang Hun mountain, Fang Zheng climbed with great effort, surpassing people after people.

During this period, he became the center of attention, attracting many people’s gazes.

"It’s him, that Fang Zheng from Immortal Crane Sect! He surpassed another person again!" Someone was jealous and envious.

"Fang Zheng..." Looking at Fang Zheng’s ascending silhouette, Fairy Bi Xia had a complicated gaze.

"Something weird is going on with this lad! At this rate, he might be the first to reach the peak!" Wei Wu Shang who has some rivalry with Fang Zheng had to admit that Fang Zheng had a high chance of success.

Fang Zheng used both his hands and legs, climbing laboriously.

He breathed raggedly, with Lord Sky Crane’s help, he surpassed the ten sect elites one by one.

Eventually, there were only three people above him.

Xiao Qi Xing, Ying Sheng Ji, Feng Jin Huang!

"This lad is finally at the front, I did not use one’s own way Gu in vain." He Feng Yang was watching closely, after seeing this, he sighed in relief.

"Without any accidents, the victor will be one of these four." A Gu Immortal said mentally.

"Immortal Crane Sect’s speed is fast, but hehe, it is still uncertain who wins until the last second."

"Indeed, Immortal Crane Sect is only fourth now, and had a huge difference with the first three. Now, it depends on whether he can surpass them in the limited time ahead."

The Gu Immortals conversed.

The entire inheritance competition had reached its final stage!

...

In the grand hall, a lump of multi-colored light about the size of a water tank floated in the air as it spun.

Fang Yuan controlled it as his eyes were bloodshot, muttering: "Retrieve ninety grams of willow orpiment."

At once, a relief sculpture moved away from the flooring, and turned into solid mass, it was the willow orpiment.

This was a material was from ancient times, rarely seen in today’s world, it was retrieved by land spirit, carving out ninety grams and placing it into the rainbow-colored light.

Fang Yuan concentrated, not having any carelessness, as the light turned yellow, he spoke: "Retrieve thirty snowball Gu."

Thirty snowball Gu flew into the yellow light, the light lump that was water tank size was still yellow, but its volume was shrinking.

Eventually, it turned into a tiny inconspicuous soil-yellow rock.

Fang Yuan carefully held this rock, breathing in deeply. To refine this Gu, he spent two days and one night, it had finally ended.

He was extremely tired, lying down and falling asleep immediately, wanting to sleep for an entire week straight.

But after an hour, he was woken up by the land spirit.

This rock could not exist for long, after another fifteen minutes, it would evaporate. By then, Fang Yuan’s hard work would have gone down the drain, and he would need to start over.

"Refining Gu is difficult, it has to be a strength path Gu Master that has mastery over the refinement path. Even I, who has my memories and foundation, found it hard, and almost failed many times before, it was truly nerve wrecking. No wonder no one managed to refine the second aperture Gu in my previous life."

Fang Yuan sighed as he patted his cheeks, waking himself up.

After resting for an hour, he felt much better, but his head was still heavy. He had used up too much mental energy, and he was mentally drained.

The second aperture Gu was a rank six Gu, refining an Immortal Gu was not an easy task.

Fang Yuan did not need to look at the mirror to know that he definitely looked pale with deep eye bags, having messy hair and an extremely exhausted expression.

"Land spirit, how much immortal essence left?" He asked.

"Five portions left." Land spirit answered, weakness could be felt from its voice.

Eighteen days had past since Long Qing Tian was killed.

The rate of weakening of the blessed land shocked Fang Yuan secretly.

To sustain the three kings inheritance, immortal essence was expended greatly. Such a phenomenon had caused the outside world to go wild.

At this period, more and more Gu Master came to explore to blessed land, some were established experts.

"Only five portions of immortal essence are left, but the Gu refinement is only two-thirds done. Land spirit, what day and month is it?" Fang Yuan asked with a grim expression.

"According to your calendar, today is the nineteenth of October."

"Nineteenth of October, according to my calculations, the second aperture Gu’s refinement will reach the last step in five days. October twenty-fourth... eh? In history, isn’t this the day where Feng Jin Huang attains victory and inherits the Hu Immortal blessed land?" Fang Yuan thought of Feng Jin Huang.

This girl had exemplary talent and a strong background, after inheriting Hu Immortal blessed land, she shot up rapidly. In future, she cultivated to Gu Immortal realm using this, and spread her influence throughout the world, shining with a brilliant light.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, he escaped southern border and arrived at central continent, becoming a Gu Immortal and after creating the bloodwing demonic sect, this woman was his mortal enemy. They had at least a few hundred battles, and eventually, Fang Yuan allied with numerous demonic path Gu Immortals and attacked Hu Immortal blessed land together, paying a painful price to kill her.

"My influence now should not have reached central continent yet. Feng Jin Huang obtained Hu Immortal blessed land, the benefit was as great as the heaven! Even second aperture Gu cannot compare to it."

Fang Yuan sighed, his previous life’s enemy was about to soar to heaven, yet he was too far away and could not stop it.

Fang Yuan did not know that his brother was still alive, and was engaging in a fierce competition with Feng Jin Huang and the others.

The influence of his rebirth, had already affected central continent’s ten sects.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

October 20th.

In the main hall, faint red rays of light began to vanish and shone upon the surroundings.

The relief sculptures on the bronze tiles had already disappeared by more than half.

Fang Yuan’s face was pale and he looked haggard, his eyes were red as his gaze was fixed at every change in the light lump.

Everything was silent.

October 21st.

The land spirit brought a bad news; a rank five expert had entered the blessed land.

Fang Yuan looked at the image and immediately recognized this person: "So it was Xiao Mang of Xiao clan. He is an expert of the light path and possesses rank five extreme light Gu. In my previous life, he appeared on San Cha mountain, he came after all."

The land spirit gasped: "Extreme light Gu? Then it means this Xiao Mang can summon the light of glory of the immemorial era! This enemy is a huge threat to us!"

The land spirit was extremely worried.

Immemorial times had nine heavens; white heaven, red heaven, orange heaven, yellow heaven, green heaven, azure heaven, blue heaven, purple heaven and black heaven.

The sunlight of the immemorial era was extraordinary, it was the light of glory and could pierce through the nine heavens and spread its warmth and grace to all living beings.

At present, red, orange, yellow, green, azure, blue and purple heavens were no more, only white heaven and black heaven remained. The sunlight no longer contained the glory of the immemorial era, and had weakened to the extreme, being able to pierce through only the white heaven.

Rank five extreme light Gu, once activate, could burst out with the intense light of glory of immemorial era. This light did not have even a little bit of attack power, but it could pass through everything and shine upon on every corner of the world.

That is to say, even this blessed land could not cut off immemorial light.

Fang Yuan scoffed: "Ba Gui, you can be relieved. He obtained the extreme light Gu from robbing a tomb and is an incomplete Gu. He can only use it three times every month. If he crosses this limit, the Gu will self-destruct."

The land spirit let out a breath of relief: "That’s good. These days, I have been getting weaker. At the final juncture, you will have to rely on yourself."

"Hehe, I have always liked relying on myself." Fang Yuan laughed and continued to refine Gu without saying any more.

October 22nd.

Puff...

"Damn it, another failure!"

Fang Yuan spat out a large mouthful of blood, his eyes turned black and almost lost his consciousness.

He gritted his teeth and held the ground; he felt the world was spinning, he seemed to see stars and there were continuous buzzing sounds in his ears.

Especially, his chest felt stifled and he felt like vomiting.

After a long while, this nauseous feeling eased slightly.

Fang Yuan let out a breath of turbid air and slowly sat down.

"Failure in Gu refinement will cause a backlash. I have already failed three times in this step, it is not that my skills are bad, I already did it perfectly but this step seems to rely on luck and has a probability of one in a ten chance of success. Sigh! There is no time!"

Fang Yuan was looking pale, he resisted the pain of the backlash with great difficulty and began his fourth attempt.

At this moment, the immortal essence in the bronze cauldron was less than four portions.

October 23rd.

Fang Yuan stopped his actions and looked at the Gu worm in his hand with bright light shining in his eyes.

This Gu was like a beetle with a big and graceful belly, a pointed head and tail. It did not have any legs or antennas. It’s shape was vague, seemingly like a vague carving on crude earthenware, with no vitality like a grey stone.

The earth spirit was joyous: "Young man, I really didn’t misjudge you! You have succeeded in refining this false Gu, now you only need to advance a step and turn false into real and refine the true second aperture Gu!"

"That’s right, only one step remains." Fang Yuan’s tone was complicated, relaxed and yet heavy.

Refining this second aperture Gu was like climbing a mountain. There were thousands of steps and who knew how many times he had failed, and he had gotten almost no rest, but finally he reached this stage. His previous effort and investment were not in vain, thus he was relaxed.

However, this final step was the most crucial moment, a step of qualitative change and required the use of Immortal Gu divine travel Gu.

Although Fang Yuan had succeeded in refining Spring Autumn Cicada, he had never used Immortal Gu to refine Immortal Gu; this final step was the step which he did not have any certainty of, so his mood was heavy.

"Three hundred years as spring, five hundred years as autumn. With unlimited divine opportunity, swim and roam in the wilds, adding in third watch, and another third watch, obtaining nine. Nine as extreme, the refinement is complete... This final step required the use of lifespan Gu, divine travel Gu and also two third watch Gu." Fang Yuan pondered.

He understood the earlier steps and could even modify them. But as for this step, he only slightly understood its real intent.

"Land spirit, what changes have occured in the blessed land?" Fang Yuan suddenly asked.

"Two batch of troops have arrived with dozens of rank three Gu Masters, each being led by a rank four Gu Master; their momentum is great." The land spirit showed the scenes to Fang Yuan.

"So it is Che clan and Zuo clan, tsk , the two clan leaders are leading and it seems most of the elders have come." Fang Yuan recognized them with a glance.

The whole San Cha mountain was located in between Zuo clan’s Leng Chan mountain and Che clan’s Fei Lai mountain.

These two clans were continuously expanding and in the recent years, had been competing at the front line of San Cha mountain with the intent to occupy it.

However, the sudden appearance of the three kings inheritance thoroughly ruined these two clans’ plan.

There were a hundred thousand famous mountains in the whole Southern Border along with countless unnamed mountains and hills which were covered with wild and ferocious beasts, their surroundings were dangerous and extremely hard to pass.

Other forces could only send their elites. But these two clans were nearby and had restrained themselves at the beginning, but now when they felt the strange change in the inheritance, they finally send most of their troops.

To Fang Yuan, this was bad news.

At the final juncture, everyone was sure to attack the center of the blessed land, this main hall. These Che clan and Zuo clan’s troops were all Fang Yuan’s enemies.

"Besides them, when the time comes, there will be Li Xian, Hu Mei Er, Yi Huo, Kong Ri Tian and other experts. At the final juncture, I will have to concentrate fully on refining Gu and leave the defense to land spirit, Bai Ning Bing and Feng Tian Yu. This is however only the external danger."

"At the final step, I will need to use two third watch Gu in a row, causing the time to flow nine times faster on me! This is a great tonic to Spring Autumn Cicada and at that time, its pressure will increase drastically and endanger my aperture. This is the internal danger."

"With both internal and external danger, danger lurks everywhere. But I can only grit my teeth and persevere. I have already reached this stage, only one step remains before I am able to step on the summit. I will bet on this. If I really succeed, I will have a second aperture and as I cultivate to rank six in future, I will not fall too far behind Feng Jin Huang.

In Fang Yuan’s plan after rebirth, Qing Mao mountain and Shang Clan were only a platform while the second aperture Gu was the stepping stone.

But it was because of these small accumulations that he could sprint further.

Next, there will be many opportunities which he would have no qualifications to participate without a certain cultivation and strength!

"All living beings have to go through survival of the fittest, I can’t compromise on these opportunities and have to make every second count. Only then will I not let down my future knowledge...."

Fang Yuan heaved a long sigh before beginning to rest, preparing for the final day.

October 24th.

Fang Yuan woke up from his deep sleep and slowly opened his eyes.

"It has been so many days since I had such a comfortable sleep, next is the great battle!" He stood up and slowly paced around the main hall.

Under the land spirit’s guidance, there were already two people standing outside the main hall.

"Master!" Feng Tian Yu immediately kneeled in front of Fang Yuan and offered a Gu worm.

This Gu was nothing special in its appearance, looking like a round piece of limestone. It was none other than undefeated hundred battles Gu.

"Subordinate was able to accomplish the mission, and after going through the hundredth round and receiving King Xin Inheritance, I was able to take in these hairy men."

At his side stood several hundred hairy men, their bodies were filled with dense hair and were standing there quietly.

"Good." Fang Yuan nodded and indifferently praised, he was not surprised.

These hairy men had the innate nature to follow the people who were better at refining Gu than them. It was not surprising for Feng Tian Yu to charge through the hundredth barrier and have these followers.

Fang Yuan then walked towards Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing looked at the great bronze main hall, her gaze flashing with a trace of understanding: "It seems this is the blessed land’s center area."

Saying so, she looked at Fang Yuan: "Hmph, you best remember your promise."

Fang Yuan smiled: "You can be at ease."

He looked behind Bai Ning Bing, seeing the near hundred thousand dog beasts that did not seem to have an end; some were occupying an area, some were having fun with each other and some were running around, making a din.

Fang Yuan slightly furrowed his brows, this was the weakness of Bai Ning Bing’s commanding ability. If it was Zhang San San, Wu Gui or Wu Shen Tong, any one of them could arrange these dogs in a tight formation and have them stand there without moving, like an army.

However, this was after all something entirely beyond Bai Ning Bing, she had never received any enslavement path training before, and it was already not easy for her to be able to reach this stage.

In fact, Bai Ning Bing was feeling dizzy now, her every movement was slightly lagging and her soul felt heavy, she felt her body was like a marionette.

Controlling so many dog beasts at once was truly demanding a lot out of her.

"Listen to my arrangements now, be in a defensive formation. No matter how the enemies provoke you, do not take the initiative to attack. Remember it at all costs, remember." Fang Yuan warned.

"Okay, since it is your arrangement, whether this succeeds or fails has no relation to me." Bai Ning Bing coldly replied.

"Hehe, no matter success or failure, I will give you the Yang Gu." Fang Yuan assured with a smile.

"Hmph, you better do what you said."

...

"Two light pillars have disappeared, this means King Xin and King Quan Inheritance have been taken!" Early morning, at the peak of San Cha mountain, there was a commotion among the Gu Masters.

"This time’s inheritation opening is extremely strange, it has been maintaining itself till today, causing the blessed land to deteriorate extremely fast." Someone was doubtful.

But compared to this, more people were paying attention towards the inheritance.

"Who are the two lucky guys who inherited the inheritance?"

"I think King Xin Inheritance should be inherited by Lord Tie Mu Bai. He has not come out since he entered."

"King Quan Inheritance might have been inherited by Wu Gui."

"No, it should be our clan’s lord Wu Shen Tong."

"Hmph, the way I see it, our demonic path’s enslavement master Zhang San San also has a chance of winning."

The crowd argued for a while before someone finally discovered something strange.

"Strange, none of the several rank five Gu Masters that entered the inheritance has come out. What is going on?"

"King Xin and King Quan Inheritance were inherited, but why have the other guys not come out?"

"They are being detained in the blessed land. This blessed land is already nearing its extinction, not long later the passage will open wide and let all of us enter and exit at will." A resonant voice spread.

"Lord Xiao Mang!" Immediately, the righteous path Gu Masters recognized the identity of the speaker.

"This Xiao Mang has not entered the inheritance after he arrived on San Cha mountain, what the heck is he planning?" Demonic Gu Masters felt apprehensive inwardly, Xiao Mang’s arrival had suppressed their flames.

Xiao Mang proudly smiled after succeeding in attracting everyone’s gaze: "Now I will use extreme light Gu to open the passage for us!"

When he finished speaking, he opened his eyes wide and furiously activated his primeval essence while lifting his fists high.

Extreme light Gu!

Heaven’s will Gu!

Empty fist Gu!

Killer move — Immemorial Light Fist!

Three Gu activated at once, causing the whole sky to dim.

Everyone looked with shock as light rays formed into an enormous fist the size of a mountain, it appeared abruptly and disappeared just as suddenly, striking at some unknown place.

Extreme light Gu might have no attacking power, but when combined with the other two Gu, it could form an incomparably intense attack!

Bam!

A formless membrane was pierced through, the blessed land shook and an enormous hole formed into a passage that connected to the outside world.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

On San Cha mountain peak, only one light pillar remained.

But a grey plain appeared in front of everyone like a foggy image. It looked like it was separated by a veil, giving off a dream-like atmosphere.

How could a plain appear on the mountain peak?

This was caused by Xiao Mang; he penetrated the blessed land and created a loophole.

For a moment, everyone was silent; some were dazed, some shocked, and some looked at each other, no one moved.

Xiao Mang snorted inwardly before slightly signalling with his eyes at somewhere in the crowd.

A Gu Master immediately ran out of the crowd: "Lord Xiao Mang’s might is unrivalled, even forcibly piercing through the blessed land. Like this, we are no longer confined by the restrictions of three kings inheritance and all of us can enter!"

After he finished shouting this, he walked out of the crowd and with several jumps, entered the hole inside the blessed land.

He then activated his Gu worms in front of everyone.

One, two, and three... the heavenly power’s suppression around the hole had weakened, allowing him to activate three Gu worms.

This scene immediately caused the crowd to be restless, countless people seemed to be startled awake and their breathing turned rough.

Being able to use Gu meant they had the ability to defend themselves. That is to say, the risk in the blessed land greatly decreased.

However, the performance was still not over, this Gu Master suddenly ran back and with several jumps, got out of the blessed land and returned to San Cha mountain.

"Hahaha!" He laughed loudly and cupped his fists to Xiao Mang, "Thank you lord for your favor!"

Xiao Mang chuckled: "There is no need for thanks, no need. I only felt that everyone should have the rights to compete for the treasures of heaven and earth. It is too much that only a few people hog them. However, how much you can seize will have to depend on yourselves."

"We are very grateful to Lord Xiao Mang!"

"Lord Xiao Mang is a great person, and his elder brother is the hero Xiao Shan."

"Truly, they are a pair of dragon and tiger brothers!"

"Looking at all the great rank five Gu Masters at San Cha mountain, only Lord Xiao Mang cared about us weaker characters, he is a role model of the righteous path, he is so kind..."

The cheers and flattery of everyone entered Xiao Mang’s ears like a tide.

The crowd of people charged into the blessed land.

"A bunch of idiots." Xiao Mang was beaming with a warm and gentle smile, but was disdainfully scoffing inwardly.

"I came really late compared to Tie Mu Bai, Wu Gui and the others. King Quan and King Xin Inheritances have been taken, now only King Bao remains! Damn them! I had already pleaded with father and the elders, but they were only concerned about Xiao Shan’s illness! Hmph, it would be best if he dies, then I will become young clan leader..."

"Hmph, only after coaxing and pestering was I permitted to come to San Cha mountain, but it is too late already! How can I compare to those guys who came before me? Only by creating a hole in the blessed land, and causing chaos can I get benefits from within!"

"As for this blessed land, the more people that goes in, the more burden it will have to bear. Hehehe, the heavenly power will get weaker and weaker. So what if you guys obtained the inheritance? I can completely use my Gu worms to seize them! King Bao, King Quan and King Qin Inheritance, they are all mine! If I can’t obtain them, then you guys can also stop thinking of them!"

...

"Alright, this is more or less it." Fang Yuan nodded with satisfaction as he looked at his surroundings.

This bronze main hall was situated on a hill. The hill was not steep and rather had gentle slopes around it.

Such a terrain was not easy to defend, but the numbers of the dog beasts slightly made up for it.

For over two hours, Fang Yuan had been arranging the formation for Bai Ning Bing and explaining to her how to deal with any situations that could occur.

BOOM...

Right at this time, the whole world shook and some dust fell off from the ceiling of the bronze hall.

"Not good, that Xiao Mang used extreme light Gu to pierce through the blessed land and formed a passage. Large numbers of Gu Masters are rushing in, killing and competing; the whole situation has completely fallen into chaos!" The lands spirit’s voice resounded.

Fang Yuan chuckled without any panic.

In his previous life’s memories, it had been the same. Xiao Mang’s arrival signified the development of this scene.

"Chaos is good, Xiao Mang wants to profit from this chaos while I need this chaotic situation to help me drag for time." Fang Yuan’s dark eyes flashed with eerie light.

"Eh? A rank five Gu Master actually mixed in among this crowd... this young man is really amazing to be able to deceive my senses, I only found something wrong when he made his move!" The land spirit suddenly said.

Fang Yuan furrowed his brows, this development was beyond his expectation: "Who is it?"

The image in front of him stopped and showed a young man with long black hair that reached up to his waist. He had a pair of deep and dark purple eyes with thick eyebrows which ends were raised up, giving him a crazed disposition like burning flames.

He gave off an awe-inspiring demonic aura, disregarding the world, an unbridled tyrannical aura that seemed to want to destroy the world like the descent of an evil dragon.

"Mo Wu Tian!" Fang Yuan gaze concentrated and recognized the man.

This person was a genius of the demonic path who had inherited an ancient inheritance and was a soul path Gu Master. Whether it was his reputation or power, Fang Yuan was not his match.

In his memories, in the battle of Yi Tian mountain, Mo Wu Tian had beheaded several rank five righteous path Gu Masters, his reputation was fearsome and his demonic flames soared to the skies. At the end, when the demonic path was completely defeated, Mo Wu Tian broke through the besiegement and stormed out with no one being able to obstruct him.

"In my previous life, Mo Wu Tian did not come to San Cha mountain! It seems the influence of my rebirth has already affected a person of such strength?"

Just as Fang Yuan was contemplating, inside the image, Mo Wu Tian seemed to have discovered being watched; he slightly turned around and unexpectedly looked right in Fang Yuan’s direction.

"So it was this way..." He muttered in a soft voice and the corner of his lips formed a sinister smile.

"This is bad, he seems to have sensed us and is charging towards here!" The land spirit immediately gave a warning.

Fang Yuan’s eyes squinted into a slit, Mo Wu Tian was actually targeting him with an intense hostility. What are his intentions, and what did he discover?

"The chaos will only last for a some time and when Tie Mu Bai and the others don’t show up, it will start creating doubt. We don’t have much time, we need to immediately start with the Gu refinement! Land spirit, raise the fog. Feng Tian Yu, follow me into the main hall and help me in Gu refinement!"

They were pressed for time, Fang Yuan shouted his commands and brought Feng Tian Yu into the bronze hall.

As for the hairy men that followed Feng Tian Yu, they were left outside to surround and protect the main hall, forming into the final line of defense.

Looking at Fang Yuan and Feng Tian Yu’s departing figures, Bai Ning Bing’s eyes flashed with a cold light.

The fog began to rise and spread, covering the main hall quickly before covering all the dog beasts on the hill.

...

The bronze hall was spacious and majestic, its walls echoed back Fang Yuan and Feng Tian Yu’s footsteps, making the silence and the emptiness of this place even more conspicuous.

At present, the bronze tiles on the main hall were already a scene of emptiness — most of the materials and Gu worms were already consumed in refining Gu with only a few relief sculptures remaining now.

Fang Yuan walked to the bronze cauldron with Feng Tian Yu and sat cross-legged.

"This is the final step, the true crucial moment!" He took a deep breath, his eyes as clear as water.

Feng Tian Yu’s breathing, however, was rough, showing his excitement. To a refinement path Gu Master, refining an Immortal Gu was something they looked forward to the most their whole life.

"Let’s start." Fang Yuan took out the false second aperture Gu and directly threw it into the bronze cauldron.

The bronze cauldron burned without fire, the thin layer of immortal essence on its bottom started to rapidly decrease and combust!

It combusted and formed into a blue smoke that gracefully rose and covered the false second aperture Gu.

The false Gu floated above the bronze cauldron and was turned into dazzling yellow light by this blue smoke.

Fang Yuan and Feng Tian Yu concentrated all their attention into blending the blue smoke and the yellow light.

After an unknown period of time, the blue smoke turned into beads of grass that floated in the air and started growing. The yellow light turned into flowers that fluttered and fell into the grass.

"It is time!" Fang Yuan took out a dagger and cut his artery, bleeding out his own essence blood.

This step was extremely important; only with this step, could the refined second aperture Gu become Fang Yuan’s. Otherwise, it would be an ownerless object that would fly away once it was refined.

Large amounts of essence blood infused into smoke. The blue smoke and yellow light immediately let out sizzling sounds and turned into a red cloud like a wave of blood sea.

The blood surged and turned into a sphere that floated in the air without spreading.

The cloud was continuously evolving: Blood sea gradually calmed down and formed a field, a large expense of red paddy that was scarlet like blood grew from the field.

Fang Yuan let out a breath of turbid air at this and promptly used a Gu to heal his wounds.

Even so, he had lost a huge amounts of blood and his face had turned wan.

"Wild grass grow wildly, the qi of blood like the sea. Three hundred years as spring, five hundred years as autumn. With unlimited divine opportunity, swim and roam in the wilds, adding in third watch, and another third watch, obtaining nine. Nine as extreme, the refinement is complete!"

He already knew the recipe inside out, but still recalled it once more now.

"Three hundred years as spring, five hundred years as autumn... next, it is lifespan Gu! Ba Gui!" Fang Yuan shouted.

The land spirit was already on standby and immediately took out two lifespan Gu at Fang Yuan’s call.

These lifespan Gu were one large and one small like ginseng or tree roots and gave a crude sense of touch.

The small was three hundred years lifespan Gu; it was like a blue snake that had formed into a round loop, it could increase a Gu Master’s lifespan by three hundred years with no side-effects. The large one was like a young dragon that wanted to fly to the sky, bearing its claws; it could raise the lifespan by five hundred years and similarly with no side-effects.

The worth of these two Gu was self-evident. Feng Tian Yu’s eyes blossomed with light and his whole body shook at the sight of these two Gu.

Fang Yuan first threw in the three hundred years lifespan Gu into the cloud.

The cloud swallowed the lifespan Gu and immediately started raging like boiling water.

Right now, the cloud seemed to have become a blue scaled long snake that attempted to slip out of Fang Yuan’s control!

Fang Yuan was caught unprepared and almost lost his grasp on this blue snake.

When he managed to react, most parts of the blue snake had already slipped out with only its tail remaining in his hands.

Fang Yuan tightly gritted his teeth and opened his eyes wide; they were completely red!

He poured in all his attention and all his strength to tightly grasp the cloud and not let it escape.

Once the cloud escaped, all his previous effort would turn into an illusion!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Seconds passed like days, eventually, the cloud gradually settled down in the air.

Fang Yuan finally had the break he needed to curse the original owner of this blessed land. Such an important point was not mentioned at all in the recipe!

All because of him concentrating hard and reacting in time, together with the help of Feng Tian Yu, he was able to calm and stabilize the situation, slowly getting back his control, otherwise he would have failed.

As time passed, a mystical aura slowly spread.

The cloud completely digested the three-hundred-year lifespan Gu, calming down and turning back to the scene of ’blood field red wheat’. But at this moment, the red wheat had turned blue-green, as if new crops were growing in spring, almost overcrowding. This was what the recipe described as "three hundred years as spring".

"That mysterious Gu Immortal must’ve only developed the recipe but did not actually do it himself, otherwise, he would have mentioned it." Fang Yuan caught a break and thought hard: "Next, I have to use the five-hundred-year lifespan Gu, but no need to rush."

He wiped the sweat off his forehead, calling the land spirit: "Ba Gui, show me the image of the poisoned land.

Immediately, smoke images appeared in the air, showing a picture.

Long Qing Tian’s corpse laid on the ground, as his surrounding sky and land were dyed a deep green colour.

This was Long Qing Tian’s jade sky Gu poison.

This Gu originated from the immemorial era, it had a strong poison that Fang Yuan would not dare to touch.

At this moment, two Gu Masters appeared in the image, they had rank three cultivation.

"This place is weird, why is it so green?"

"Quickly, see, that corpse — It’s Long Qing Tian!"

They entered this place and found Long Qing Tian’s corpse by accident.

"Long Qing Tian is rank four peak stage, a famous demonic head, he was actually killed!"

"Quickly go see, his corpse might have something good!"

The two were happily running towards Long Qing Tian’s corpse, driven by greed, they did not realize their bodies were infected by this green light.

"Courting death." Fang Yuan sneered, as expected, in less than ten steps, their poison reacted and the two of them turned into green light, dissipating.

"The jade sky Gu poison has gotten very deep, this region is almost finished, it has completely rotted, the loophole it forms will be even greater than the one Xiao Mang created."

Time was precious, every second was important, but Fang Yuan did not move regardless of how anxious he felt.

After five minutes, with a boom, the blessed land shook and the hall vibrated.

The second loophole tunnel was created!

The land spirit sighed, this way, the blessed land’s speed of destruction doubled!

"Continue refining Gu!" Fang Yuan took out the five-hundred-year lifespan Gu and threw it into the cloud.

The cloud rumbled again, trying to break free of Fang Yuan’s control.

But Fang Yuan was mentally prepared, he was not caught unaware like last time, and restrained it completely.

But quickly, he felt that there was nothing he could do.

The cloud’s change this time, was not only giving off a slippery feeling, but also an arrogant brute force. Like a green snake that had evolved into a flood dragon, about to break free from Fang Yuan’s control.

Feng Tian Yu quickly came to help, the two worked hard to suppress the cloud’s transformation.

The cloud rumbled many times, about to break free at times, but was eventually suppressed.

Five minutes later, the cloud became clear again, showing a blood field with golden wheat ready for a bountiful harvest. It was the "five hundred years as autumn" scene.

Thankfully, he only refined this Gu after the poison broke out, if not, when the second loophole formed and the hall shook, this Gu refinement would have been interrupted and would not have succeeded.

Fang Yuan waited a while more, as the cloud slowly dispersed after maturing. From the water tank size, it shrunk into a new Gu, falling down.

Fang Yuan held it, it was like a peanut shell, golden and having markings on the surface, that is, scarlet blood traces.

The first false second aperture Gu could only survive for a week, it was unstable. As for this Gu, it could survive for forty years.

At this step, the real second aperture Gu had already formed, and was nurturing in the peanut shell.

But if it was allowed to develop on its own, not just a thousand years, but even if given then thousand years, it might not turn into the real product. Only by using a strong external force, to eliminate the false and make it real, turning from phantom to solid, can it attain a qualitative change, breaking free from mortality and become an immortal!

And this external force is none other than the rank six divine travel Gu!

"Next, we have to use an Immortal Gu to refine an Immortal Gu!" Fang Yuan took deep breaths, regulating his internal flow as he started the most important step of this entire refinement process.

At this time, in the outside world, sounds of killing was overwhelming the mountain...

"This dog is mine!"

"As long as you hand over your Gu worms, I will spare you your life."

"Kill all these eggmen, these variant humans are actually occupying one spirit spring, what a waste of resources!"

...

All sorts of plundering and robbing were happening, as Gu Masters killed till their eyes turned red, casualties increased greatly.

"Strange! Why have we not seen Lord Tie Mu Bai after so long!"

"Where did our Wu clan Wu Shen Tong go?"

Tie clan and Wu clan Gu Masters felt something amiss.

"Search, quickly go search!"

"The heavenly power’s restriction is very small now, we can use most of our Gu worms. The situation is a mess now, there is killing everywhere, as blood flow into a river, we need to find our clan’s experts to suppress the situation."

"Are there any places left unsearched?"

"The deepest part of this blessed land, there is a thick fog."

Just as these people placed their sights on the bronze hall, Mo Wu Tian had walked to the edge of the fog alone.

"There is the aura of a Immortal Gu..."

His purple eyes was deep and mysterious, with arrogance and wildness hidden within. Using the purple eyes, the fog dissipated at times, as an endless number of dogs appeared in Mo Wu Tian’s vision.

He frowned.

There was strong defenses, just him alone cannot penetrate this defensive line. He needed external help.

His brows eased as Mo Wu Tian turned around.

He moved like lightning, tearing through the sky, moving a hundred miles as he landed before Hu Mei Er.

Hu Mei Er was first scared till she turned pale, after recognising Mo Wu Tian, she smiled: "Young master Wu Tian, you came too! This three kings inheritance has little meat but many wolves , you might get disappointed. Eh! You have advanced to rank five!"

Hu Mei Er looked at this man, unable to hide her shock.

She gulped, trying to alleviate this shock as she forced out a smile: "That’s great, you have rank five strength, you have the ability to gain great rewards from this situation. These green eggmen have huge numbers, they have built structures and castles, I cannot break through. There is a green egg empress inside, as long as we capture her, we will be able to have endless fortune."

"Hehehe." Mo Wu Tian looked at the castle, laughing lightly: "Back then, King Bao, Wang Ba Dan, had eight egg empresses, and produced numerous eggmen. King Xin, Wang Xiao Ya’s inheritance has divulge information Gu and undefeated hundred battles Gu. King Quan, Wang Er Gou, had two dog emperors, Ying Ming and

Ba Huang. This is the essence of the three kings inheritance, but none of them interests me."

Hu Mei Er’s smile froze: "To think that young master Wu Tian knows the three kings inheritance so clearly. Since you have no interests in it, why don’t you let me have it."

"As expected of a woman, you are too short-sighted!" Mo Wu Tian laughed loudly, staring at Hu Mei Er’s eyes: "Let me tell you, the land spirit of this blessed land is not dead, in the deepest area, a deceased Gu Immortal’s treasure awaits!"

"What?!" Hu Mei Er was stunned.

"But there is a thick fog there and over a hundred thousand dogs guard it. To go to the central control hall, it is not enough with just the two of us." Mo Wu Tian laughed deeply.

Hu Mei Er was a smart woman, she immediately understood Mo Wu Tian’s intentions.

Her eyes shone as she laughed curtly: "Hehehe, isn’t it easy to recruit people?"

Hu Mei Er was a decisive person, she abandoned the green egg empress, recruiting demonic Gu Masters alone with Mo Wu Tian.

With her network, and Mo Wu Tian’s cultivation and reputation, a large group of demonic Gu Masters soon gathered.

Adding in the details of the Gu Immortal’s treasure, the demonic merchant Li Xian, Fiery Star Bao Tong, Rock Lizard Li Qiang and others all gathered.

Mo Wu Tian returned to the fog, no longer alone, but with a demonic army amounting to thousands of people.

"They are finally here..." Bai Ning Bing sitting on the hill stood up slowly.

The fog could obscure people’s vision, but because of the land spirit’s help, Bai Ning Bing had a clear vision, and could see the demonic alliance army.

Mo Wu Tian observed for a while before saying: "Li Qiang, bring three hundred people and attack head-on. After a few dozen steps, you will face the steel armor dogs. Fight as you retreat, move towards the left and engage with the chrysanthemum akita dogs. Defeat them and you will charge towards the south-east direction.

"Hu Mei Er, bring five hundred people, and go left. As you fighting your way through, you will encounter lightning symbol dogs, hedgedogs and corpse dogs, do not mind the losses, just charge towards the north."

"Bao Tong, go on the right path, bring eight hundred people. Towards the southwest direction, make a din and shout as you charge, no dogs will obstruct you for five hundred steps. After you encounter the lightning symbol dogs, fighting and charge with all you’ve got, if you cannot break through in forty-five minutes, retreat back here!"

"Li Xian, bring four hundred people as back-up, prepare for mobilization anytime, If I give no commands, take care of the returning troops."

"Then what about you Mo Wu Tian?" Li Xian’s eyes shone with deep meaning as he asked.

"I will obviously stand guard at the base, why, you have a problem?" Mo Wu Tian looked at Li Xian lightly with his expression purple eyes.

Li Xian felt a chill in his spine.

"When did this Mo Wu Tian become so scary? His cultivation surged and his killing intent is overflowing, it seems he received an amazing ancient inheritance, if not, how could he improve so much? I had thought that little beast king could fight with him, but now it seems that he is truly the demonic path’s number one genius, he is simply too fearsome."

Li Xian’s heart turn cold as he obeyed the command.

With such an arrangement, four demonic experts brought their troops and charged towards the fog according to Mo Wu Tian’s orders.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"It’s coming." Bai Ning Bing’s gaze shone as her expression was nervous, quickly mobilizing the dog group.

The still dog army started moving, like a giant millstone. As for these Gu Masters, they became the green bean and yellow beans, in a short amount of time, they were grinded to paste. More than half were dead, some saw the danger and retreated immediately.

The demonic army suffered a huge lost, investing over a thousand men, but only a few hundred returned.

"Young master Wu Tian, did you really see clearly?" Li Qiang questioned: "I charged in according to your instructions. We did encounter the steel armor dog on the first wave, and we retreated towards the left, but we met with the assault of both lightning symbol dogs and chrysanthemum akita dogs. The numbers were too great, we can’t deal with that. After a fruitless slaughter, we could only come back!"

Bao Tong’s temper was even more irascible: "I brought eight hundred people, but did not hear the shouting sounds from the northwest side. But towards the southeast side, I heard people fighting. I brought my troops there and met with the combined attack of the lightning symbol dogs, hedgedogs and corpse dogs."

Hu Mei Er’s expression was also ugly: "Young master Wu Tian, I listen to you and prepared to attack. But eight hundred steps in, I did not see any dog groups. Just when I was confused, dog groups came encircling us, luckily we managed to turn around and fight our way back, if not my life would’ve been lost there."

Li Xian was expressionless, standing at one side. His group was meant to protect the returning Gu Masters, and fight the approaching dog groups.

Although there were lots of retreating troops, not a single dog came over, causing him to waste his time waiting.

Mo Wu Tian’s expression was solemn, after a while, he spoke: "I can see the actual scenario much more clearly than all of you. There is someone manipulating these dogs, it is not a fixed formation but an ever-changing one. That is why all of you failed."

Everyone was shocked: "There is someone controlling them? Who is it?"

Mo Wu Tian shook his head: "The fog is too dense, I can only see a faint figure, I can’t tell the identity of the other party. But there is definitely a mastermind, only a human’s intelligence can react so perfectly. But no matter, I have some understanding of the enslavement path, from now you, you have to attack like this, to break through their encirclement and obtain the Gu Immortal treasure!"

Everyone’s face had blood stains as they looked at each other, nodding reluctantly due to Mo Wu Tian’s rank five strength as well as the allure of the immortal treasure.

But this time, they still returned in defeat, suffering even greater losses than before.

"The person behind this has high attainment in enslavement path, I underestimated him." Mo Wu Tian frowned, he had thought of a perfect plan, using all four routes to cooperate, but the other party reacted quickly and found out his intentions. Purposely controlling his troops to intercept the four routes before they converged, such movements were at the level of a master.

"Mo Wu Tian, you have to give an explanation! We fight with our lives and lost so many people, but we have not even seen the shadow of the treasure. Are you standing here for fun? You are a rank five Gu Master, you should put in some effort too!" Bao Tong was furious as he screamed while gripping his injury.

"Oh? You want an explanation? Hehe, then I’ll give you a satisfactory answer." Mo Wu Tian laughed sinisterly, as his purple eyes shone.

"You!" Bao Tong was caught by surprise as he stared at Mo Wu Tian, unable to move.

A moment later, he fell on the ground.

Dead.

The Gu Masters went into a commotion.

Fiery Star Bao Tong, he was a famous rank four fire path Gu Master. Mo Wu Tian did not even attack, he killed him with a single stare!

"You want an explanation, I gave you an explanation, are you satisfied? If you are unhappy, you can tell me." Mo Wu Tian looked at his corpse as he waited for an answer.

"You’re not speaking, it seems you are satisfied." Mo Wu Tian laughed, looking around: "Hehehe, Bao Tong is satisfied, what about you guys? Do you want an explanation from me too?"

It was complete silence all around.

Mo Wu Tian killed people in the blink of an eye, Bao Tong was rank four upper stage but he could not even take one hit, dying immediately.

The demonic Gu Masters were scared and shocked, regretting their greed, why did they follow Mo Wu Tian?

Now that they were roped in, they want to leave? Hmph, too late!

Hu Mei Er and the others lowered their heads, not looking at Mo Wu Tian’s eyes. Mo Wu Tian’s killing technique caused fear in them.

They had thought that he had just advanted to rank five, and might not have true rank five prowess, but to think his fighting strength was on par with Wu Gui and the others!

How old was he?

Number one genius of the demonic path, without a doubt!

After establishing his dominance, Mo Wu Tian laughed sinisterly again: "Bao Tong’s Gu are still around, you guys can split up among yourselves, treat it as a compensation from me."

As he said so, the Gu Masters’ eyes glowed.

Li Xian was the first to react, with a swoosh, he moved like a rabbit, pouncing on Bao Tong’s corpse and taking his Gu.

Almost at the same time, Hu Mei Er and Li Qiang reacted and started their plunder as well.

The others could only watch, not daring to contest.

The three split Bao Tong’s fortune among themselves, earning greatly as the grudge in them dissipated, turning into reverence for Mo Wu Tian.

Mo Wu Tian could kill people with his gaze, that was not surprising, it was a sight-based killer move.

This type of killer move directly competed souls against each other, the loser would have their souls scattered, not even given the chance to self-detonate their Gu.

Mo Wu Tian was a soul path Gu Master, the strength of his soul was way above his peers, dealing with Bao Tong and the others was extremely easy.

" Cough, cough ." Li Xian coughed, saying: "Since there are beast groups guarding, that area has to be where the central control hall is, the Gu Immortal’s fortune is most likely there But how do we get in with all these dogs?"

He was wise like a ghost, as the person who obtained the most benefits out of Bao Tong’s body, he immediately expressed his support towards Mo Wu Tian.

Speaking of the Gu Immortal treasure, Hu Mei Er and Li Qiang’s attention were brought back to this.

Mo Wu Tian looked at this group of people, they were all injured and exhausted, together with some lingering fear, the morale was at an all-time low.

He sighed: "Truly a motley crew. It seems I can only recruit more people to have the hopes of breaking in. Spread the news, regardless of righteous or demonic... just say that Tie Mu Bai and the others have entered the hall and obtained King Quan Inheritance, those Gu Masters are blocking us outside the hall and are trying to hoard the treasure."

"This..." Hu Mei Er hesitated.

Mo Wu Tian laughed coldly: "Time is running short, once the blessed land collapses, we will have nothing left. Without more people, can we break through?"

"Young master is right." Hu Mei Er quickly replied.

"Finally stopped." On the mountain slope, Bai Ning Bing breathed out a sigh of relief, but lightly frowned.

The methods Fang Yuan handed to her were already half used up. After a few more attacks, she would be at her wits’ end.

...

"Hahaha, my tactic at finding a chance in the chaos succeeded. After blowing up this wall, I will get King Bao, Wang Ba Dan’s inheritance!" Xiao Mang laughed loudly.

Right now, he was alone in a hidden cave.

Before him, there was a tall and sturdy stone door. As long as it is blown apart, King Bao’s final inheritance will be obtained.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

Light shone as explosions went off.

A moment later, Xiao Mang stopped his attacks while panting, staring at the stone door hatefully.

The door was intact, there was no traces of any cracks.

"Light path focuses on speed and purification, the destructive power does not match fire path. King Bao evidently wants to find a fated person who can use fire type Gu to break through. But I do not have such Gu." Xiao Mang gritted his teeth, feeling indignant.

At this moment, a Gu Master came to report.

"Go out, who let you in! King Bao Inheritance is mine alone. Eh? What did you say!"

Xiao Mang scolded but suddenly heard his subordinate’s report and grabbed his collar, lifting him up: "You say there is a Gu Immortal treasure hidden in the thick fog, and people are trying to take it down now?!"

"Yes, this information has circulated, countless Gu Masters are gathering, how would I dare to lie to you second young master?" The subordinate quickly replied.

"Hmph, don’t call me second young master! I hate that title!" Xiao Mang scolded, looking at this stone door reluctantly, as his gaze turned from hesitation to determination.

Wang Ba Dan was only a rank five Gu Master, although he was called King Bao, he was only the same rank as Xiao Mang. How could his inheritance compare to a Gu Immortal Treasure?

"Go, let’s go!" Xiao Mang led his subordinates and moved quickly.

...

"The number of people is increasing." On the slope, Bai Ning Bing’s frown deepened as there were almost ten thousand people gathered outside the fog.

These people had differing cultivation levels, there were even rank one and twos. But there were still Gu Masters, gathered together, they formed a tidal wave that could sweep everything in its path.

Although she controlled a hundred thousand dogs, she was a sole person.

Outside, countless gazes looked inside with a burning desire. They were all attracted by the Immortal’s treasure.

As the people created a commotion, Mo Wu Tian smiled without speaking a word.

His motive was achieved, birds die for food and humans die for fortune , this was human heart!

"Over at the righteous path, they are organising people and charging into the fog." Hu Mei Er looked far away, worried: "Young master Wu Tian, all the demonic Gu Masters are here already, are you going to stand up and direct them to form groups? We can’t let the righteous path steal the treasure."

"No worries, no worries. There is such a thick fog, with steel armor dogs acting as steel walls, what can their vanguards do?" Mo Wu Tian laughed coldly, refusing to act.

Righteous path was superior to demonic path, they were more united,and more easy to unite, while demonic path members were loners. Although he Mo Wu Tian had rank five cultivation, he was still young and this was the first time he was leading, he could not subdue everyone. Old demonic experts like Kong Ri Tian and Li Fei Le would not listen to him easily.

Only when they realize that cooperating had benefits, could he use that chance to take over easily!

But now, in the hall, the Gu refinement had reached the crucial period.

After half a day, the golden peanut shell collided with divine travel Gu.

Bam bam bam!

Fang Yuan and Feng Wu Yu’s vision turned black as thunder roared in their ears.

"Divine opportunity is unlimited, travel through the lands! Activateeeeeeeeeee!" Fang Yuan screamed, using all his energy to activate divine travel Gu.

Divine travel Gu was an Immortal Gu, how could he, a mortal, activate it easily?

But thankfully, the land spirit helped him secretly, as the immortal essence poured out, the divine travel Gu turned into light speckles as it entered the golden peanut shell.

The qualitative change had begun!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Xiao Mang looked at the fog in front of him, his gaze deep and solemn.

He relied on his rank five cultivation to gain the commanding position of the righteous path. He organised many assaults, but returned in great failure, suffering a huge loss.

In the fog, countless dogs were hidden, causing every wave of Gu Masters that entered suffer great injuries.

"No matter how big the losses, it will not block my path! Immortal treasure, this is an immortal treasure..." Xiao Mang’s eyes shone with brilliance, shouting excitedly in his heart.

"Let’s go again, organise the next wave of people." Xiao Mang instructed, but this time, little people joined in.

The painful lesson was right in front of them, despite the great benefits, these righteous Gu Masters started to hesitate, after all they only had one life.

"A bunch of cowards!" Xiao Mang saw them hesitate and scolded in his heart. Time was running short for him, other than this immortal treasure, he also had King Bao Inheritance to obtain.

"If we had an enslavement path Gu Master controlling beast groups, we could use them as cannon fodder, reducing our Gu Master casualties, and regain our morale!" Xiao Mang thought of this point.

In such a situation, the importance of an enslavement path Gu Master was evident.

"Where is Wu clan’s Wu Shen Tong? With his help, we would be able to break through the fog and reach the central hall!" Xiao Mang asked.

But the answer he got was disappointing.

Wu Shen Tong had gone missing, even Wu clansmen were trying to find him.

Xiao Mang looked at the demonic faction, and his heart shook: "Not only Wu Shen Tong, even the demonic path’s Wu Gui and Zhang San San are not around. Is the Gu Master controlling the dogs in the fog one of these three people?"

Xiao Mang continued guessing as he looked towards the grand hall. However, the fog obstructed his vision, causing him to feel even more irritated at the situation.

"This damn fog, it is so annoying! Too bad Wan Li Xiong Feng is not around, otherwise my clan’s divine wind will blow this fog away." Wan clan’s Gu Master exclaimed.

"If my clan’s old clan leader is here, why would we fear these dogs?" Tie clan’s four old-timers snorted.

"Lord Xiao Mang, we are not making any progress, the demonic faction is looking at us like a joke. What do we do?" The righteous path’s famous healer Tao Zi came over and asked Xiao Mang.

"These demonic scoundrels!" Xiao Mang looked over at the demonic faction as the irritation in his heart intensified.

"It seems I have to make a move." He snorted, as a brilliant light appeared in his eyes: "All of you, move back."

Everyone heard this and retreated tens of steps away. At once, Xiao Mang’s surroundings were vacated, emphasizing his existence.

Xiao Mang stood on the spot, shutting his eyes as his mind entered his aperture, activating his purple crystal primeval essence. The ebb and flow of the primeval sea became greater.

After storing energy for a moment, Xiao Mang’s eyes opened, as his primeval sea has turned into a furious tsunami, large amounts of primeval essence entered three Gu worms.

Extreme light Gu!

My will Gu!

Bright spear Gu!

Killer move – My Glorious Spear!!

Xiao Mang’s body shone with a piercing white light, the intensity of the light was dense, expanding like a mound.

Xiao Mang’s body was bathed in light, he had an impressive appearance, like a descending holy spirit.

He raised a finger towards the fog.

Immediately, the light around him were manipulated, and shot out ferociously.

All of the white sunlight shot out at the same time, forming a 1.8m long and 0.6m thick spear of light.

Sixty percent of the purple crystal essence in his aperture were used up in this one attack.

The spear of light was powerful, penetrating the fog and landed on the mound at breakneck speed.

Bam!

A fierce explosion occurred.

The intense light caused everyone’s eyes to be shut tightly, as they took a step back subconsciously.

Even Mo Wu Tian’s eyes were squinting into a thin line.

The explosion caused the ground to rumble, as after the light, air current started to spread outwards.

The air currents turned into a strong wind, blowing in all directions causing many people to lose their footing.

Guh! Guh!

In the hall, Fang Yuan and Feng Tian Yu who were refining Gu were interrupted and both vomited a mouthful of blood.

Bai Ning Bing’s face was pale, her ears buzzing from the aftermath of the attack.

"This is the strength of a rank five Gu master? Luckily, such a killer move did not hit me directly. If it landed here, my defensive Gu would not even last for a second!"

Bai Ning Bing unavoidably felt great shock.

The killer move of a rank five Gu Master, it was not something the current her could block.

As the whiteness faded from her eyes, she could see that at the location where the light spear landed, thousands of dogs were vaporised. The mound had turned into a crater.

Bai Ning Bing drew in a breath of cold air, with such might, just a few more hits and the dog formation would be ruined.

Her confidence dropped again, but Fang Yuan had instructed her beforehand what she should do in the event she was hit with such a great move.

As Bai Ning Bing manipulated, large numbers of dogs hurried to the crater, as her defenses were raised once again.

" Gasp... so many dogs!" Xiao Mang’s heart was heavy, and the righteous and demonic Gu Masters gasped sharply too.

When there was a fog earlier, they could not see clearly, but now that the fog was gone, everyone’s vision was clear.

Over ninety thousand dogs, densely packed on the mound, forming an iron bucket defense.

"Lightning symbol dog, chrysanthemum akita dog, hedgedog, steel armor dog, Yin dog..." Some people counted, each dog group had over five thousand and more.

"So many dog kings!" Someone shouted.

No matter how many dogs there were, they could not hide the dog kings due to their disposition. Other than the chrysanthemum akita dogs who were unique, these dog kings were all seated, like a flame in the darkness, extremely eye-catching.

"These dogs and dog kings are not that much of a threat. But there are so many heavy tai, green hua, smoke song, light heng and star heng, these five great mountain dogs!" Some Gu Masters with good vision turned pale.

The outer defense was made up of lighting symbol dogs, chrysanthemum akita dogs, and other ordinary dogs, the inner circle of defense was made up of the five great mountain dogs.

As for the entrance of the hall, the final line of defense, there were several hundred hairy men.

The entire formation was tight and secure, yet not rigid, they all had mobility and flexibility.

"What an iron formation!" Mo Wu Tian’s purple eyes shone with light as he felt the situation getting more troublesome.

Even more people directed their gaze to the bronze hall.

The grand yet modest hall had inscriptions and intrinsic designs, giving off an ancient atmosphere.

"That is the bronze hall that contains the immortal treasure?"

"As long as we get past the dogs, we will reach the grand hall!"

"Immortal treasure... immortal treasure... I wonder what mindblowing riches awaits us?"

Everyone’s gaze were heated, the goal was in front of them, it made their greed overflow.

"Hehehe, it is time." Mo Wu Tian looked around, sensing the change in the atmosphere.

Greed was like fire burning in everyone’s hearts. But the great dog army deterred them, everyone knew that with their own strength, they would never succeed.

This was the basis for cooperation!

"Lord Xiao Mang, let’s talk about cooperation." Mo Wu Tian’s body was like a black smoke phantom, taking several steps and arriving before Xiao Mang.

Xiao Mang snorted, when he saw the overwhelming dog army, he thought of cooperation.

But he was afraid of getting rejected by Mo Wu Tian and also worried about his own reputation if he approached the demonic faction for cooperation as a righteous rank five cultivator.

Right now, Mo Wu Tian approached him personally, it was music to his ears.

"Hmph." Xiao Mang snorted, his attitude was neither cold nor hot, as he made eye contact with Mo Wu Tian.

Mo Wu Tian immediately understood Xiao Mang’s intentions. He was extremely disdainful towards such hypocrisy, but he said: "Then in fifteen minutes, we will attack from the front and back together.

"Mm." Xiao Mang nodded, turning around, no longer looking at him.

Mo Wu Tian sneered, walking back and telling his people: "I just approached Xiao Mang and agitated him, to have a competition with him. Next, we will split into two, attacking together from two sides. We will compete to see who gets to the bronze hall first, whether the righteous faction or us demonic faction wins!"

Xiao Mang announced at the other side: "Demonic scoundrels are greedy and unscrupulous, finding me to cooperate, obviously I rejected them. How can I work with these scum? Fifteen minutes later, they will attack, we will take the chance and attack as they endure some of the pressure for us. Hahaha..."

"Young master Wu Tian rules!""Defeat these righteous hypocrites!" Demonic Gu Masters were riled up as they shouted.

"Lord Xiao Mang is wise!""Let those demonic scoundrels attract the enemy for us!" The righteous Gu Masters were spirited.

"Kill!" Fifteen minutes later, the attack began.

Righteous and demonic were far away, attacking from two directions.

Bai Ning Bing was hidden at some place, relying on her shared vision with the land spirit, using its divine consciousness to scan the battlefield.

Tens of thousand of dogs barked and bared their paws as they charged ahead.

At once, blood flowed and broken limbs flew. All sorts of Gu worms competed, like the dance of fire and ice, lightning exploded and soil was overturned, green vines grew endlessly.

"Kill!" Yi Chong charged ahead, brave and fearless. His body was covered in blue fish scales, the wind blew his fiery red hair into the air.

All around him, there was a light blue spiral wave, together with the black fins that grew on his back, he seemed to have become a fearsome shark in the sea.

None of the dogs could block him.

"Immortal treasure... if I can get it and succeed in my mission, I would definitely be able to change my surname to Shang when I return to the clan." Yi Huo’s gaze was determined as he turned into the god of fire, attacking even more fiercely than Yi Chong, everywhere he went, there was blazing flames and crying dogs.

Kong Ri Tian laughed heartily, turning into a rain of petals.

Li Xian laughed coldly, while people were not noticing, he used his rank five Gu and concealed his body, secretly moving ahead.

"Let’s work together, with me healing there is no worry." Tao Zi shouted as many Gu Masters gathered over.

People were moving and in this great battle, Yan Jun moved slowly and steadily, like a casual traveller.

A strong and brave dog king pounced at him, Yan Hun’s expression was unchanging as he turned into a hollow shadow. The dog king jumped over and went straight through the shadow.

The shadow flickered, turning back into Yan Jun’s flesh body.

The dog king behind him had engaged the Gu Masters behind already.

The Gu Masters displayed all their abilities, battling with the dog group. The scene was as chaotic as it could be, and Bai Ning Bing could barely cope facing such a huge number of opponents, starting to fluster.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Kill!!!"

"Charge!"

"Damn, why are there so many dogs!!"

Murderous yells, shouts, miserable howls, swearing and dog howls combined to form into a huge clamor that seemed to shake the world.

The battle had not even begun for five minutes; blood had formed into a river and there were corpses everywhere.

Bai Ning Bing hid at some secret place and used all her strength to mobile the dog groups. With the help of the land spirit, she was able to gradually stabilize the situation.

Lightning symbol dog, chrysanthemum akita dog and other common dog beasts suffered the most casualties. Gu Masters had charged halfway through the dog beasts and ran into the formation of the five great mountain dogs, having great casualties.

Heavy tai, green hua, smoke song, light heng and star heng; these five great dogs were very powerful and their circular formation was very reliable. They were like a huge dam that blocked these Gu Masters that were charging like a tide.

At this stage, both righteous and demonic factions suffered heavy casualties.

"Big brother, hold on!" Meng Tu grabbed Jiao Huang’s arm; Jiao Huang had suffered heavy injuries from where blood flowed out without stopping.

Jiao Huang borrowed Meng Tu’s strength to barely move along with the majority.

Right now, they could not retreat. They could not even stop to rest, if they left the troops, the dog beasts would submerge their tiny bodies.

"Brother, we have made a huge loss this time. We accepted Shang clan’s assignment to get Fang Zheng’s head. To think we would encounter an immortal treasure, sigh, we gave in to our desire for material benefits and thus fell into such desperate straits." Jiao Huang heaved a sigh.

These two were rank three peak stage Gu Masters, famous assassin group of demonic path. They had even succeeded in assassinating rank four Gu Master Xiao Fu Lu.

They thought of joining Shang clan and thus were prepared to secretly handle Fang Yuan. But the whole way, they did not find any good opportunity.

After charging into the blessed land, they encountered an immortal treasure, and followed with the majority; the result, they sent themselves into danger.

In this chaotic battle, only rank five experts could move unhindered. Rank four peak stage could fight valiantly. Rank four upper stage had to move with the crowd.

Those rank one and two Gu Masters made up the most of the casualties. Rank three Gu Masters also had to rely on luck to survive.

But even so, Gu Masters still charged forward endlessly. The illusionary immortal treasure ignited their most crazed fanatical desires.

They were charging recklessly, all delusional about obtaining the immortal treasure and attaining success in life, becoming an expert.

Only for a certain group of people, at the time of their deaths, they calmed down and regretted endlessly.

Unfortunately, it was too late.

"These people have gone mad, forgetting their own life or death at the enticement of the immortal treasure." Tie Ruo Nan slowed down her footsteps, she was shocked by the state of the battlefield!

Tie clan’s four old-timers were surrounding her in a protective formation.

"The way I see it, this probably has to do with that Mo Wu Tian." The head of the Tie clan’s four old-timers suddenly said in a soft voice.

"You are saying..." Tie Ruo Nan’s gaze flashed.

Far away, Mo Wu Tian was moving forward in the lead, laughing crazily with his purple deep eyes flashing with dazzling light.

He was a soul path Gu Master and had secretly used his Gu to make everyone more fanatical.

"Demonic path members should all be put to death!" Tie Ruo Nan snorted, the killing intent in her heart surging up.

"Young master, Mo Wu Tian is a rank five expert, he is not someone we will be able to fight easily. We need to deal with urgent matters first, our objective is not him." One of the Tie clan’s four old-timers persuaded.

Tie Ruo Nan pursed her lips and heavily nodded her head, her gaze firm as iron: "Right, the most important matter right now is still little beast king Fang Zheng!"

"Hahaha, I hadn’t thought the enslavement path Gu Master in the dark would only amount to this." Mo Wu Tian laughed wildly, the fierce wind blowing in the battlefield blew his black hair and his demonic flames danced rampantly.

The united charge of righteous and demonic Gu Masters was going on much better than he expected.

Bai Ning Bing was after all a newbie, earlier, she had Fang Yuan’s formations and instructions to follow. But the current situation had become more complex with a lot more new changes, it was a lot more than she could take and this in turn were flaws that were clear to Gu Masters at the level of Mo Wu Tian.

Mo Wu Tian’s eyes flashed repeatedly with eerie light, at the same time as charging forward, he was doing multiple tasks. He constantly controlled his Gu to attack the dog beasts and also to influence people’s minds and create a fanatical atmosphere; at the same time, he was also using his Gu to scout the battlefield.

Enslavement path Gu Masters always had powerful offense and could battle many opponents with just the strength of one person.

But everything in this world was balanced. Enslavement path had a clear disadvantage, besides the huge consumption of resources they needed, their individual strength was weak and were easy to kill.

Mo Wu Tian was searching for Bai Ning Bing’s position, as long as he killed Bai Ning Bing, the dog beast formation would fall apart and a large majority of them would even scatter without a fight.

"Found you!" Mo Wu Tian’s gaze suddenly concentrated as he discovered the hiding place of Bai Ning Bing.

"Hehehe, give me your life." He laughed and flung his sleeve, his figure turning into a ball of purple demonic fog.

The demonic fog moved through the battlefield at an astonishing speed and in just a few breaths’ time was only a thousand steps away from Bai Ning Bing.

"Not good!" Bai Ning Bing discovered the charging fog and her heart sank.

Mo Wu Tian was a rank five Gu Master while Bai Ning Bing was only at rank four, by just this she would be hard pressed to fight him, let alone now when she was doing multiple tasks and controlling the dog beasts.

"Fortunately, I also have my trump cards!" Bai Ning Bing was startled but not panicked as she willed, "Go bite him, Ba Huang."

A hill sized enormous dog emperor heard the command and with one leap, flew over a hundred feet and smashed into Mo Wu Tian.

Woof!

Ba Huang barked loudly, its bark was like a bolt from the blue, suppressing the whole battlefield and turning it silent. Following the bark, the dog beasts flared up with high morale; the casualties among the Gu Masters became more intense.

Dog emperor!

Its physique was majestic with its whole body covered with yellow sleek fur. It had a head like that of a lion with thick mane around its neck that was dazzling like a sun.

This was an emperor among the beasts and was not something that could be looked down upon. Once it used the wild Gu on it, it could contend against rank five Gu Masters!

"Damn it." Mo Wu Tian cursed when he was stopped by Ba Huang.

Bai Ning Bing let out a breath of relief, but right at this time, a dazzling silver light shot through the battlefield and appeared in front of her instantly.

"Hehehe. Demonic path junior, take a good look at me." The silver light turned into a human figure, rank five righteous path expert Xiao Mang!

"Ying Ming!" Bai Ning Bing withstood the pressure and commanded in her mind, sending out the second dog emperor.

This second dog emperor was the size of a normal dog beast. There were gorgeous patterns on its snowy white skin like pink cherry blossoms.

Withstanding Xiao Mang’s intense pressure, the wild Gu on the dog emperor activated and created clouds below Ying Ming’s feet, allowing it to fly.

"Just a mere wild dog... eh, it is actually a dog emperor!" Xiao Mang scoffed but after few exchanges of lightning fast attacks and defending, he withdrew his contempt and fought cautiously.

Bai Ning Bing’s expression was gloomy.

Although the two rank five experts were blocked, this situation was only temporary.

Humans were the spirit of all living beings; human’s wisdom was superior to beasts. Sooner or later, Mo Wu Tian and Xiao Mang would understand the dog emperors’ trump cards and then could make their moves with ease, even bypassing them to directly kill Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing looked around the battlefield, the other Gu Masters were still in the middle of the battlefield fighting and charging forward; they were temporarily of no threat.

Bai Ning Bing let out a breath of relief and turned her gaze towards the bronze hall.

"There is not much time..." Her blue eyes narrowed, letting out a clear and cold radiance.

Inside the bronze hall, Fang Yuan took large mouthfuls of air, gasping heavily. Meanwhile, Feng Tian Yu was already lying on the ground, unconscious.

Blood flowed out of Fang Yuan’s seven orifices, but he did not care; a pair of bright eyes stared at front.

A Gu was letting out brilliant light as it floated it in the air.

It did not have a concrete shape; occasionally, it was like a colorful cloud and occasionally it was like a whirlpool of light.

"Success!" Fang Yuan was filled with joy, he had already succeeded in refining divine travel Gu.

Now only one step remained and he could obtain second aperture Gu!

"You succeeded, you really succeeded!" The land spirit appeared beside Fang Yuan. It was extremely weak but its eyes glowed with light, full of happiness at the success.

"You are worthy of being a future Gu Immortal, you could really refine divine travel Gu, amazing! It was indeed a correct choice to entrust this task to you. Now, the most difficult step has passed; it is smooth sailing ahead! Next, you need to use third watch Gu and it will be a success without the least bit of difficulty."

The land spirit heaved a long sigh, its sigh full of emotions.

"Thousands of years of effort has finally succeeded today. The recipe indeed works, I am truly happy. But such a pity... that I can’t see the second aperture Gu in the end..."

After it finished speaking, the land spirit Ba Gui’s body gradually turned fainter and fainter till it completely disappeared.

It was dead.

The immortal essence in the bronze cauldron was almost finished with only a thin trace remaining.

The blessed land had already collapsed for the most part and was at the brink of extinction.

The aged Ba Gui had been helping Fang Yuan in refining Gu and also helping Bai Ning Bing to guard; it finally could not endure such pressure and completely withered away.

But compared to previous life where it had died a death of desperation under many Gu Masters’ attacks, it was much more blessed during this life and could even be said to have had a proper death.

Ba Gui’s death meant the immortal essence could not be used anymore.

However, Fang Yuan was not nervous.

For the next final step, the immortal essence could be replaced with large amounts of primeval stones.

Even if Ba Gui was alive, that trace of immortal essence in the bronze cauldron was required to support the operation of the blessed land and simply could not be used to refine Gu.

"The difficulty of this Immortal Gu refinement exceeds Spring Autumn Cicada. Just now, that huge shock to the main hall almost caused all the efforts to be a waste, and in case the Gu refinement had failed, with just my mortal body, I will definitely die from the backlash without even having time to activate Spring Autumn Cicada."

"Moreover, this most crucial step had an extreme demand on mind and a mortal simply cannot endure it. Fortunately, I chose to enslave Feng Tian Yu just to be safe, otherwise this step could never have been completed."

In his previous life, Fang Yuan was already a Gu Immortal when he refined Spring Autumn Cicada. Now this time, he was refining Immortal Gu with the qualifications of a mortal and he should not have had any chance of success.

However, first, the mysterious Gu Immortal had racked his brain and used up all his life to research and perfect this recipe.

Second, the recipe used the Immortal Gu divine travel which greatly reduced the absurd difficulty.

And finally, it was not done by Fang Yuan alone, he had the help of land spirit and also enslavement path grandmaster Feng Tian Yu.

All these helped Fang Yuan to complete the most difficult and dangerous step.

"Next I have to use third watch Gu, this is much more simple. Right, I wonder how the situation outside is." Fang Yuan calmed his mind and then started hearing the shouts and commotion outside the main hall.

"Fang Yuan, be careful. Someone broke through the dog formation, a rank four Gu Master is coming towards you!" Right at this time, Bai Ning Bing’s warning arrived.

"Hmm." Fang Yuan’s expression was heavy as he slowly stood up.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Currently, the land spirit was dead and Fang Yuan was unable to see the scene outside the hall. However, with his previous life memories, he could guess one or two things without looking at the situation.

"There are only two rank five experts in the blessed land; Xiao Mang and Mo Wu Tian, they will be held back by the two dog emperors for some time. There are a lot of rank four Gu Masters, but at this time, there is only one who can charge to this place. That is the young clan leader of Yan clan, Yan Jun. He obtained the ancient phantom path inheritance and is specialized in hiding and attacking. It should not be a problem for him to charge through the dog beast formation."

Fang Yuan pondered, it was the truth as well.

Phantom path had once flourished in the ancient times; its concept was to be footloose and carefree, invincibility through dodging. As long as one could evade every attack, that was a form of ’invincibility’.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, phantom path Yan Jun had shown great brilliance at the battle of Yi Tian mountain, challenging the demonic path Gu Masters and causing them to suffer severe losses. That was until Mo Wu Tian showed up and beat him into retreating.

"This blessed land doesn’t have strong defense! The central area is so important but there is only a bronze hall built there, although it can be used to store things, its defense is really thin; the whole thing is impressive looking but useless! If it was like the Hu Immortal blessed land with Dang Hun mountain as defense, it would simply be like a heavenly moat and even Gu Immortals would have a headache facing it. Even my own blessed land that had the structure of a blood sea was much better than this hall." Fang Yuan inwardly felt resentment. He walked over to Feng Tian Yu and kicked him awake.

"Get up!" Fang Yuan said in a cold voice.

Feng Tian Yu had worked hard and made great contributions, if it were not for him bearing most of the pressure, Fang Yuan might not have succeeded in refining to this stage.

"Ugh, mas... master..." He woke up with bloodshot eyes, his hair was scraggy like weed and his face was pale-white; his body was swaying as he greeted Fang Yuan.

"Go out of the main hall and block the rank four phantom path Gu Master. Even if you have to sacrifice your life." Fang Yuan ruthlessly commanded.

"Yes, subordinate will do his best!" Feng Tian Yu bit his lips and walked out.

His primeval essence was almost completely consumed and he did not have enough fighting strength left. Moreover, as a refinement path grandmaster, he was not specialized in intense battle. It was almost guaranteed that he would not return alive from this mission.

However, the current Fang Yuan still needed to continue with the final step, he did not have any other force remaining, thus he could only send Feng Tian Yu.

"Second aperture Gu is the top priority. Sacrificing a refinement path grandmaster for it is nothing much." Fang Yuan sat down in a cross-legged position and looked at the continuously changing gorgeous light in the air.

At this step, second aperture Gu was already mostly completely and was interchanging between real and surreal, form and formless. It was unable to be moved and also could only exist for six hours.

After six hours, if the refinement has still not been carried out, the light would disappear and all the previous effort would be wasted.

"There is no turning back now, as long as I finish this final step, I will obtain second aperture Gu! It is just that..."

Fang Yuan subconsciously stroked his abdomen with a grave expression.

In the blessed land, time flew three times faster than the outside world; Spring Autumn Cicada was recovering extremely fast and bringing great pressure to the aperture.

Even though Fang Yuan’s aperture was rank four upper stage, it could not endure this pressure and there were indications of tiny cracks on the aperture surface.

Next, he would have to still use two third watch Gu, and with the effects overlaid, the time flow would be nine times faster.

At that time, could his aperture endure the pressure?

Fang Yuan was not someone who would recklessly take risks and had already meticulously planned before beginning the Gu refinement.

He had a huge chance of winning this gamble. As long as he got the second aperture and promptly left the blessed land, he would be able to have few months of respite.

He naturally had some backup plans at that time.

"Third watch Gu, go." He calmed down his mind and gathered his concentration to begin the final step.

Under the effect of third watch Gu, that light ball immediately started changing rapidly, the light rays were dazzling and gave off a mysterious aura that was hard to describe in words.

"Divine travel Gu broadens the space and third watch Gu condenses the time. This is the using the laws of both space and time, this truly is the way of Gu passed down from the immemorial era..."

Genuine knowledge comes from practice and Fang Yuan gained some comprehension from this.

Time flew, the first third watch Gu’s effect was nearing its end. The light ball faintly solidified, giving off the shape of the final product.

The shouts from outside the main hall became louder, but whether it were Mo Wu Tian, Xiao Mang, or Yan Jun and so on, no one had yet to charge inside.

"Good, next it is the second third watch Gu..." Looking at the refinement finally about to succeed, even Fang Yuan started feeling excited.

However, right at this time!

Bai Ning Bing’s voice came: "Fang Yuan, be careful. Tie Ruo Nan has broken the defense line and is coming towards you!"

Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

At this moment, his whole attention was concentrated on the refinement and he could not pull out from it, how could he face the enemy? With Feng Tian Yu already being sent out, he did not have any defensive force.

What to do?

"Bai Ning Bing, what the hell are you doing! Are you still not going to come to guard me? I can’t move now, if I die, you will also die under the powers of poison vow Gu!" Fang Yuan transmitted his furious voice.

He was extremely helpless and could only call Bai Ning Bing over.

Without Bai Ning Bing to take control, the dog groups outside would definitely be a group of leaderless army and there would be huge chaos. And soon, the group of heroes could kill their way through.

However, Fang Yuan could not care about it!

Right now, he was like a fish on the chopping board, anyone could slaughter him with him not having even a bit of retaliation power. If someone did not protect him, he would be easily killed by Tie Ruo Nan.

Fortunately, the Gu refinement was already at its final stage and now only the second third watch Gu had to be used.

Fang Yuan only hoped for more time.

As long as he made every second count and finished the refinement, with the many rank four and rank five movement Gu on him, he could break out of the siege and escape alive.

As for Bai Ning Bing?

Hehe, she is suitable to block the incoming enemies, her use would be maximised. As for what her ending would be, it was not something Fang Yuan could consider at the moment.

Bam!

The hall’s great door was pushed open violently.

Tie Ruo Nan walked inside and saw the scene in the hall; she was first dazed before immediately reacting with both shock and happiness: "Little beast king, today is the day I shall take your head!"

She went in for the kill before she even finished speaking. With a wave of her hand, countless golden needles flew out.

"Bai Ning Bing!" The concentrated aura of death came pouncing on him and Fang Yuan could not help shouting again.

Whoosh!

Cold wind blew and ice started spreading, forming into an ice wall that blocked all the golden needles.

Next moment, Bai Ning Bing also appeared at the entrance of the main hall.

However, her state was clearly not good, she was covered in blood and injuries filled her body. The most severe injury was on her back, a cut that spread from her shoulder to her sacrum, it was so deep that even her bones could be seen.

There were bits of green leaves sticking on her clothes, her silver hair was scorched, and her whole left arm was purple, she was clearly poisoned.

"Quick, block her!" Fang Yuan shouted, "I only need a little time."

"You still have the leisure to say such nonsense, just make the most of this time to refine the Gu!" Bai Ning Bing gritted her teeth and cursed before starting to fight Tie Ruo Nan.

Tie Ruo Nan laughed coldly, her golden needles flew like lightning with extremely terrifying offensive power.

Bai Ning Bing clenched her teeth, she had suffered heavy injuries and did not even have ten percent of her original strength; she soon fell into disadvantage.

Several moves later, Bai Ning Bing’s injuries intensified; her ankle sprained and her body wavered, Tie Ruo Nan keenly grabbed this chance to move in for a fierce attack.

Bai Ning Bing was again inflicted with heavy injuries and fell down to the ground.

"I shall kill you first!" An imprint that was on Tie Ruo Nan’s forehead flashed and turned into solid, forming a golden flying dagger that shot out fiercely.

Whoosh!

The golden flying dagger cut through the air towards Bai Ning Bing’s neck, but it missed by just a hairline gap and pierced into the bronze tile.

Bai Ning Bing rolled quickly and evaded the fatal attack, shouting: "How long do you still need?"

Fang Yuan’s heart was thumping loudly as he gritted his teeth and shouted: "Just a little bit, hold on even if you die!!"

"If I die, you won’t be able to live either..." Bai Ning Bing cursed but was interrupted by Tie Ruo Nan’s attack.

Tie Ruo Nan’s offense came in wave after wave, Bai Ning Bing was sent into retreat bit by bit and could only make dodging his priority, struggling in between the thin line of life and death.

Several more moves later, Bai Ning Bing gasped roughly: "I can’t continue! Fang Yuan, I am going to self-destruct!"

"Your aptitude has already returned to a hundred percent?" Fang Yuan was startled.

"What do you think!" Bai Ning Bing cursed.

Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes, Bai Ning Bing changing back into northern dark soul ice physique was a definite thing. But he had not expected it to be this quick!

According to his calculation, despite the time flowing three times faster in the blessed land, it should have only have been after several more months.

Fang Yuan was in a critical juncture of the refinement process and was unable to distract his mind to consider too much.

The self-destruction of a ten extreme physique possessed extreme might and even rank five Gu Masters would have to take evasive actions.

Once Bai Ning Bing self-destructed, there would be an extreme change in the whole battle situation.

"Try to hold on, unless you can’t control it anymore, don’t..." Fang Yuan shouted. He was refining the Gu with his back facing the entrance and could not see the concrete situation of the fight between Tie Ruo Nan and Bai Ning Bing.

The response he received, however, was Bai Ning Bing’s deep sigh –

"It’s too late."

The next moment, Fang Yuan felt the cold aura spread everywhere in the main hall and the temperature decreased rapidly.

Crack...

There were continuous sounds of ice forming.

"What Gu is this?" Tie Ruo Nan’s cry of surprise also reached Fang Yuan’s ears.

Fang Yuan turned his head with difficulty to look and saw the main hall already becoming a world of ice and snow. Bai Ning Bing was floating high up in the air, her whole body turning into ice crystal, similar to the situation when she had self-destructed back at Qing Mao mountain.

The cold wind blustered and glaciers rose, crushing towards Tie Ruo Nan with vast and majestic force.

Tie Ruo Nan had a fierce expression as she quickly retreated towards outside.

However, the door of the main hall was already condensed into ice, she was like a turtle trapped in a jar and was surrounded by the icy layers.

"Is this the legendary northern dark ice soul physique?" Tie Ruo Nan cried out in surprise. But it was already too late, she was sealed within the ice like an insect in an amber.

The ice, however, did not stop spreading and was spreading towards Fang Yuan.

"Bai Ning Bing? Bai Ning Bing!" Fang Yuan worriedly shouted, but there was no response from Bai Ning Bing.

Her body had almost become one with ice and her whole face had started turning indistinct. Her crystal like eyes no longer shone and had thoroughly dimmed.

"Damn it!" Fang Yuan’s brain was hurting from the anxiety, the ice had already reached his body, he could only use Yang Gu.

Yang Gu flew out and landed on Bai Ning Bing’s body, immediately Yang aura and the icy coldness formed into a whirlpool of primeval essence; the scene back at Qing Mao mountain many years ago appeared once again!

Ice stopped spreading but this distraction almost caused the Gu refinement to fail.

Fang Yuan’s heart thumped loudly in shock and he immediately concentrated all his attention without being concerned about the situation behind him.

Under his efforts and control, the light clouds finally condensed into second aperture Gu!

"Immortal Gu! I finally succeeded!!" Right now, Fang Yuan’s heart was exploding with joy.

All his efforts and all the risks he took had created a very satisfactory outcome!

Pew!

Right at this time, a sharp ice blade pierced through Fang Yuan’s heart, piercing from behind him and coming out of his chest.

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk to needle-size and he looked behind with difficulty —

"Bai Ning Bing? You!"

"Fang Yuan, to think there would be a day where you fall into a trap!" Tie Ruo Nan slowly walked over, her gaze filled with hatred.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The bronze hall was deathly silent.

Time seemed to have frozen as the atmosphere became very heavy.

Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged on the ground with the rank six second aperture Gu floating in front of him.

Immortal Gu refinement had succeeded, but Fang Yuan’s attention was not at this immortal Gu.

He turned his head with difficulty and gazed at Bai Ning Bing, his eyes revealing his deep doubts.

Bai Ning Bing who had already recovered his male body was holding an ice blade and was expressionlessly standing behind him.

Tie Ruo Nan slowly walked over and fixed her gaze at Fang Yuan, her expression showing both grief and joy: "Fang Yuan, you had never in your wildest imagination, expect this day to occur right?"

Fang Yuan seemed like he did not hear anything and kept on looking at Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing looked at Fang Yuan. With the recovery of his male body, his height had increased, he was wearing a snow white robe, his silver hair was floating in the air and his eyes shone with deep coldness.

He was like a glacier, extremely cold.

"You didn’t expect it, right? That you would finally be defeated by me." Bai Ning Bing indifferently smiled while looking at Fang Yuan, "Since my resurrection back on Qing Mao mountain, I had been pondering on how to recover my male body."

"In the days spent with you, I was firmly controlled by you as a chess piece that could be moved at your will. You are not the strongest enemy in my life, but I have to admit that you are absolutely the most terrifying one."

"Fang Yuan, you are someone with innate talent for scheming, and with your vicious methods, you are a very formidable person. But I, Bai Ning Bing, am also not an ordinary character, how could I become someone’s subordinate? Hmph! The more you controlled me and the more you exploited me, the more I thought of ways to escape, to make a comeback and counterattack!"

"But the Yang Gu was with you and you could cause it to self-destruct with just a thought. Thus, I did not act recklessly but racked my brains to think of countermeasures until one day, I got a superb inspiration and thought of a way."

"Actually, the scene of you voluntarily hand over the Gu had already happened once on Qing Mao mountain. Hehe, right, that is to repeat the scene back on Qing Mao mountain. The time of my self-destruction will be the time you use the Yang Gu."

"With this as the start, I began to plot secretly." The corner of Bai Ning Bing’s lips slowly spread into a smile, "I would self-destruct, but it would naturally not be actual self-destruction since there was a chance you might not use Yang Gu. So, I chose..."

"Ice crystal Gu." Fang Yuan’s expression was dim as water.

Back at Shang clan city, Bai Ning Bing chose ice path. Among the ice path, there were three transformation type Gu; frost demon Gu, snow fairy Gu and ice crystal Gu. Wei Yang had strongly recommended Bai Ning Bing to choose snow fairy Gu.

Snow fairy Gu was suitable for female Gu Masters while ice crystal Gu was suitable for males.

Bai Ning Bing, however, chose ice crystal Gu as a female which had caused Wei Yang to feel great regret.

"Hehe, you finally get it." Bai Ning Bing laughed, "That’s right, I originally chose ice crystal Gu not because I was peeved but because snow fairy Gu changed the body to a snow fairy with clear appearance that could not be hidden. However, if I turn into ice crystal and use ice explosion Gu with it, it could form a majestic scene that is extremely similar to the self-destruction of northern dark ice soul physique. You have seen it just now, didn’t it deceive you?"

"Hmph, if I was not concentrating on refining Gu, I would definitely discover the peculiarity, how could you have succeeded so easily then?" Fang Yuan scoffed.

Bai Ning Bing, however, nodded her head with a serious expression: "Right. You are very meticulous, observing everything to the finest details. When I thought of this method, I also felt it would be strange and there would be a great chance of failure. In fact, there was a change in circumstances that made me almost give up this plan."

The change Bai Ning Bing spoke of was none other than poison vow Gu.

" A great man knows when to yield and when not , my objective was to rely on the poison vow to accomplish my goal. So what if I would be used for some time?" Bai Ning Bing’s eyes turned vague as he recalled, "However, the developments after that made me realize that poison vow Gu was not reliable."

"The poison vow between you and Shang Ya Zi, despite there being a very ingenious flaw, I felt that you were too confident. And I had also secretly investigated the contract with Bai clan, the rumors however were still leaked out, making me feel even more uncertain. One thing that I have learned about you is that you make the best preparations for everything, calculating even the worst outcomes. Thus, I could not help but consider this situation — what if you were not restricted by poison vow Gu, what would I do then?"

"I knew that if that was the case, I had already gotten into a desperate situation. I was restricted by the poison vow while you were not, I would become your chess piece which you could use or kill with no way for me to retaliate. Just relying on my own power, I would never be able to escape this predicament, but there was one person who could help me at Shang clan city."

"Speaking of this person, I still need to thank you for the introduction." Bai Ning Bing smiled mockingly.

He thought of the first meeting with Doctor Su Shou.

It was during the banquet organized by Shang Yan Fei. As thanks to Fang and Bai for escorting Shang Xin Ci to Shang clan city, Shang Yan Fei invited Doctor Su Shou to treat Fang Yuan’s disfigured face.

And to make Bai Ning Bing give up, Fang Yuan intentionally asked her to go together.

After Bai Ning Bing met Doctor Su Shou with her real appearance, Doctor Su Shou’s attitude immediately changed into extreme warmth and compassion.

Doctor Su Shou was one of the four great doctors of Southern Border and had a peculiarity of being attracted to appearance. She was extremely fond of handsome men and beautiful women, as long as their appearance was extraordinary, she would give treatment for free. If the appearance was ugly, she would loathe them and would not treat them even if they gave more money.

Bai Ning Bing asked her about the transformation of Yin and Yang, and with the reply he got, he was even more aware of how important the Yang Gu in Fang Yuan’s possession was.

But at the same time, Bai Ning Bing also got to know Doctor Su Shou. Before leaving, Doctor Su Shou had made a serious promise that no matter what problems he faced, he could go find her.

" Cough cough ." Fang Yuan coughed out a mouthful of blood, the ice blade had pierce through his heart, but with the help of healing Gu, he was able to hang on to life.

However, the chilly aura of the ice blade was slowing down the speed of his blood flow, and the numbness the cold brought was spreading to his whole body.

Right now, however, these injuries were minor details: "The person you are speaking, is it Doctor Su Shou?"

"Hehehe, you are Fang Yuan indeed, you are right." Bai Ning Bing praised.

"That b*tch!" Fang Yuan cursed but also had new doubts, "But didn’t you guys only meet once? Wait... there was also the second time!"

Fang Yuan suddenly recalled something while talking.

At Shang clan city, Bai Ning Bing and Doctor Su Shou had met for a second time!

That time was when Bai Ning Bing lost to Yan Tu by just a little and suffered heavy injuries while also losing her vital Gu. She went to Doctor Su Shou’s place to receive treatment and to recuperate.

"Don’t tell me?!" Fang Yuan seemed to have thought of something and his gaze immediately turned to Bai Ning Bing as if it was the first time he was seeing this cold and handsome young man.

Bai Ning Bing smiled, his blue eyes shining eerily: "It seems you have guessed it. That’s right, I intentionally lost to Yan Tu. Losing a vital Gu is nothing, exchanging it for a chance to evade your suspicions, isn’t it a profitable transaction? At that time, I decided to gamble."

Bai Ning Bing went to Doctor Su Shou’s place and relying just on his intuition, he decided to take a risk — he told the truth honestly to Doctor Su Shou.

Doctor Su Shou sympathized with his experience and did her best to free him from Fang Yuan’s demonic claws.

Bai Ning Bing asked her if there was a way to dispel poison vow.

Doctor Su Shou replied that she could not dispel poison vow, but there was a way which could get rid of poison vow’s binding.

She recalled from her memories: Once, when she was young and ignorant, she was deceived by her sect’s junior brother into using poison vow Gu to make an oath saying they would never abandon each other. Later, she used this method to get rid of the poison vow.

Bai Ning Bing asked: "What is it?"

Doctor Su Shou’s gaze turned grave and said —’To live, one must die.’

Once the poison vow activated, it would cause the death of the vow maker. Doctor Su Shou was a healing Gu Master and her solution was to intentionally let the poison vow activate and cause the Gu Master’s death, the poison would be removed and then revive the Gu Master.

"This method is a forceful removal. The absolute majority of healing Gu Masters cannot do it even if they thought of it. I am able to barely accomplish it because of the unique legacy from my teacher. But even so, this has a one-in-three chance of failure. If it fails, it will mean death. Think it through." Doctor Su Shou gave a final warning.

Bai Ning Bing decided on the spot to use this method.

With Doctor Su Shou’s help, he got rid of the poison vow fortunately.

Without the poison vow’s binding, Bai Ning Bing got in touch with Tie clan and Tie Ruo Nan was able to learn the truth.

The truth that person in front of her was Fang Yuan and not Fang Zheng.

At the same time, she also understood the event that occured on Qing Mao mountain.

To deal with Fang Yuan, Bai Ning Bing and Tie Ruo Nan launched a secret cooperation.

"We had used iron cabinet Gu and qi flow Gu around an area and planned to create the scene of the self-destruction. Unfortunately, you refused to rescue her. I could only gather a group and hurry to San Cha mountain to make new plans." Tie Ruo Nan spoke.

The scene of Bai Ning Bing being trapped for so many days by Tie clan’s four old-timers looked like Tie clan’s reprisal because of Bai Ning Bing killing a Tie clan’s Gu Master in the inheritance, but in truth, it was all a scheme to deal with Fang Yuan.

However, Fang Yuan fought one against seven and slaughtered Tie Ruo Nan’s group which caused Tie Mu Bai to take the stage.

Tie Ruo Nan received Tie Mu Bai’s teachings, cultivating and patiently waiting for news from Bai Ning Bing. This was also the reason why she did not take the initiative to look for Fang Yuan although she had extreme hatred towards him.

However, Fang Yuan made an impressive move that shook everybody; he took control of the whole situation after entering three kings inheritance.

Tie Mu Bai’s death caused Bai Ning Bing to keep silent and conceal himself even deeper. Using Fang Yuan’s trust, he controlled the dog beasts.

With the death of the land spirit, he was unable to suppress the situation anymore and the pressure on him increased. However at the same time, he felt his whole body relaxed as he was free from the land spirit’s surveillance.

He was still not at ease though, thus he intentionally gave way for Yan Jun to probe Fang Yuan.

Sure enough like he expected, Feng Tian Yu was sent out, this proved the land spirit had truly died.

Bai Ning Bing was inwardly happy and again maneuvered the situation to make a way in for Tie Ruo Nan and Tie clan’s four old-timers.

The reason Tie Ruo Nan came to the main hall by herself was also because of this.

"Fang Yuan, I advise you to obediently surrender. Outside, my Tie clan’s enslavement path grandmaster Tie Bai Qi is controlling the dog beasts and obstructing the group of experts. Outside the main hall, there are Tie clan’s four old-timers who are using iron cabinet Gu and qi flow Gu to confine the space so that no one can infiltrate here. Surrendering is your only way out."

Tie Ruo Nan walked over and held the second aperture Gu in her hand while pronouncing Fang Yuan’s fate.

Fang Yuan was silent.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"There are truly are uncountable geniuses in this world..." After being solemn for a while, Fang Yuan raised his head and sighed.

"Bai Ning Bing, what a Bai Ning Bing... hehehe, I underestimated you, and fell victim to your schemes. It was a beautiful victory, your plan was flawless, while I was careless and overconfident, only thinking about the Immortal Gu, allowing you to succeed, it was my mistake!"

"I’m flattered. The reason I could plot against you was due to the perfect time, place and opportunity. If I were the one who had to refine an Immortal Gu while scheming against both the righteous and demonic factions, I would definitely have done worse than you." Bai Ning Bing answered seriously: "But now at this point, winner takes all and the loser loses everything, I hope you would stop your pointless struggle."

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan sneered: "The reason you have not killed me yet is because of the Immortal Gu, you want to know its effects and also the Immortal Gu recipe in my head."

Now that the land spirit was dead, the blessed land was on the brink of destruction, there were loopholes everywhere and without the heavenly power to suppress them, Gu Masters could use their Gu freely.

That is to say, Fang Yuan just had to think about it, and all his Gu would self-detonate, Bai Ning Bing and Tie Ruo Nan had no way to stop him.

"Tie Ruo Nan, Tie Mu Bai and the others died in my hands, you have to take this Immortal Gu back to redeem yourself, otherwise you will lose your young master position." Fang Yuan laughed sinisterly.

Tie Ruo Nan was expressionless, answering frankly: "That’s right, Immortal Gu are unique, they are extremely important, when I bring it back it will be an unprecedented merit, I would receive the Tie clan Gu Immortals’ nurturing and reward. As for the recipe to refine Immortal Gu, right now only you know about it, if I can contribute it to the clan, I would immediately become Tie clan young clan leader."

"When I ascend to the position of clan leader, I will be like Lord Tie Mu Bai, upholding justice and order. After all these things, I have learnt: To uphold justice, one needs to have great strength as well as a strong force! Only in this way can I repay Lord Tie Mu Bai’s teachings, and allow him to feel at peace in the afterlife."

Saying so, Tie Ruo Nan thought about the Tie clansmen who died in Fang Yuan’s hands, her eyes turning red as she felt intense fury and hatred, and also the great satisfaction of getting her revenge.

She breathed in deeply, staring sharply at Fang Yuan: "As for you, Gu Yue Fang Yuan, I will not kill you. You were able to refine an Immortal Gu using a mortal body, such refinement talent is truly spectacular. As long as you surrender, I will send you into the Tie clan Demon Suppression Tower to undergo reform. In the future, when you turn over a new leaf, and leave the tower, you will work for Tie clan, and contribute to the righteous path, repaying for your sins, this is the best outcome."

"Demon Suppression Tower..." Fang Yuan squinted: "You make it sound really nice! Hehehe, you want the Immortal Gu? Sure, let’s make a transaction."

Fang Yuan talked about the details of the transaction as he focused on the movements outside the hall.

He was stalling for time.

In this situation, it may seem like a dead end but he still had one final resort.

Because of refining Gu, Fang Yuan’s mind is tired and he had little primeval essence left. His rank four all-out effort Gu was not refined yet, and many beast phantoms were used up in the Gu refinement process.

He could not force it now, Fang Yuan was not in the best condition, while Bai Ning Bing and Tie Ruo Nan came prepared. Furthermore, there are the four Tie clan old-timers outside as well as Tie Bai Qi who manipulates dog groups.

Spring Autumn Cicada was indeed the best chance he had, but it carried an enormous risk, and carried the danger of dying. Unless he had no other options, Fang Yuan did not want to use it yet.

"My true opportunity lies in the experts waiting outside the hall. With just the dog group and Tie clan’s four old-timers, they cannot block them all forever. As long as they fight their way in here, the situation would be completely overturned.

Fate worked in mysterious ways, not long ago, Fang Yuan was using all his methods to block the experts outside, but now he could not wish more for them to fight their way into the hall.

...

"This accursed Tie clan, the mastermind is them all along!"

"TIe clan’s old clan leader Tie Mu Bai came personally, what attracted him? We should’ve guessed..."

"Tie clan is a super clan, but don’t think of devouring this alone, the immortal treasure belongs to all of us!"

In the intense battlefield, everyone was excited.

Looking at the bronze hall, many Gu Masters’ eyes were burning with passion.

The purple colored light barrier covered the entire bronze hall. Tie clan’s four old-timers were at all four directions, guarding it securely.

As for Tie Bai Qi, he was standing at the door of the hall, looking down at all the Gu Masters as he manipulated the dog group.

He was an old man, his head was full of white hair, and he had a third eye on his forehead, shining brightly. He was a rank five enslavement path Gu Master, a Tie clan elder, and was once Tie Mu Bai’s capable general. Under Tie Mu Bai’s orders, he came out of cultivation, coming to the faraway San Cha mountain.

Right now, Tie Bai Qi was smiling as he looked at the battlefield.

The dog group was under his command, unleashing several times the fighting strength they had compared to before. Tie Bai Qi did not mind the losses, blocking all the experts outside.

"This old fool is really irritating." Mo Wu Tian’s hair was flying in the air as he breathed roughly.

Before him, dog emperor Ba Huang was bathed in blood, in a condition worse than Mo Wu Tian. But soon, the healing Gu on it worked, and under the milky-white colored light, it began to heal rapidly.

Mo Wu Tian tried to attack while there was a chance, but a group of green hua dogs charged in.

"This again!" Mo Wu Tian gritted his teeth, forced to kill this group of reinforcements.

While it had the chance, Ba Huang managed to heal most of its injuries and became revitalized again.

Compared to the time Bai Ning Bing sent out the dog emperor and did not have the energy to control it, Tie Bai Qi had a much easier time. He manipulated the entire battlefield, and controlled the situation, showing the strength of the enslavement path fully.

On the other hand, Xiao Mang was also receiving great attention from Tie Bai Qi.

"This won’t do, the immortal treasure is going to be taken by Tie clan!" Xiao Mang was anxious and hateful, but dog emperor Ying Ming was blocking his path, not allowing him to pass through.

"Bastard, you forced me!!" Xiao Mang growled, flying into the sky.

The sky already had one huge hole, tens of kilometers in diameter, as the outside showed the sky of the main world, full of clouds and was a bright sunny day.

Xiao Mang flew out of the hole, raising his hands.

Rank four, gather light Gu.

Large amounts of sunlight gathered on his palms, the light turned into a ball, flawless and huge; Xiao Mang was like an ant carrying a huge rice bowl.

Rank five, extreme light Gu.

The glorious light of the immemorial era, gathered into the ball, and caused a qualitative change, as the entire ball was infected with the glory of the immemorial times!

Rank five, river under the sun Gu.

The light ball exploded, turning into an overwhelming water of light, each drop was like a fragment of the sun, extremely bright and dazzling.

Killer move – Torrential Light Stream! 1

The river of light rolled and crashed as it poured down on the blessed land from the hole.

The light was blinding, and the waves were fierce, it turned the entire battlefield white, and everyone closed their eyes, unable to resist such a strong light.

"Oh no!" Tie Bai Qi tried to stop it, but the light river’s formation was already complete, he could only reduce its impact by a little.

The grand light river was like a waterfall, crashing on the purple barrier.

The barrier only lasted for a moment before shattering, as the four old-timers who sustained the barrier spurted out mouthfuls of blood, gravely injured.

The light river broke the barrier and was weakened, but it continued on its way into the bronze hall.

The hall was immediately broken through, and the waterfall swept towards Fang, Bai, and Tie.

Bai Ning Bing and Tie Ruo Nan’s pupils shrunk as they subconsciously tried to dodge.

Fang Yuan who was waiting for an opportunity, immediately reacted and activated his primeval essence.

Warp Gu!

He activated this rank five movement Gu.

This Gu was something he got from killing Chou Jiu the killer ghost doctor.

With a swoosh, Fang Yuan vanished on the spot.

The light river crashed on the floor, creating a huge hole that was about two meters deep.

Tie and Bai dodged in time, standing at the edge of the huge hole, extremely calm.

"He escaped indeed, hehehe. It seems he used warp Gu. I think this Gu came from killer ghost doctor." Tie Ruo Nan analyzed.

"We’re letting him escape?" Bai Ning Bing looked at Tie Ruo Nan.

"You forgot about fixed star Gu? Don’t worry, even if he escapes to the end of the world, Tie clan’s four old-timers would be able to arrest him. Let me roam around for now and expend his primeval essence and energy. It saves us some trouble." Tie Ruo Nan smiled lightly, her tone showing a confident attitude towards grasping the situation.

After so many trials and difficulties, she had grown up a lot.

Guh!

Intense pain assaulted him as Fang Yuan vomited a mouthful of blood, feeling extremely dizzy. A sense of disgust almost caused him to fall face flat on the ground, feeling like his intestines were all jumbled up.

Warp Gu was a space path Gu, tearing through space and transporting the Gu Master’s body. The strong effect carried an equally intense backlash.

Gu Masters who constantly use warp Gu would have their tendons entangled, their blood would flow backwards, and their joints would be dislocated. On the outside, the Gu Master would get uglier and uglier, no matter how nice he looked originally, he would turn hideous.

To use the warp Gu, one had to use other Gu worms to modify his own body. But to Fang Yuan, he no longer cared.

"Second aperture Gu will be kept safe by you guys for now. I will return this hatred a million fold in the future!" Fang Yuan quickly assessed his surroundings, realizing that although he was out of the hall, he was still a distance from the bronze hall.

Large numbers of dogs came attacking, and he quickly chose to retreat.

Although second aperture Gu was in Tie Ruo Nan’s hands, the control was still in Fang Yuan’s hands. He refined the second aperture Gu single-handedly, now with just a thought, this Gu would self-detonate.

Of course, unless left without a choice, Fang Yuan would not do something so stupid.

"This battle has just begun. Bai Ning Bing, Tie Ruo Nan, just you wait. Hehehe." Fang Yuan laughed sinisterly.

To use second aperture Gu, immortal essence was needed, otherwise, an insane amount of primeval stones were needed to replace it.

To Fang Yuan, he could not keep this Gu into his aperture.

Spring Autumn Cicada’s pressure was high enough, if he placed another Immortal Gu in, Fang Yuan’s aperture would explode.

If an Immortal Gu was outside the aperture, its aura would leak, and everyone would notice. If Fang Yuan took the Immortal Gu and ran, he would become everyone’s target, immediately being chased down by two rank five, more than ten rank four, and countless rank three and two Gu masters.

"Tie Ruo Nan has the Immortal Gu, she is definitely everyone’s attack target. Hehe, I’ll let you guys compete while I watch on the sidelines, becoming the final winner in the end!" Fang Yuan was resolved to retreat and recover his battle strength, before finding an opportunity to strike.

But heaven did not side with him, as quickly, many Gu Masters found out his movements and screamed.

"Who is it?"

"Little beast king, it seems he came out of the bronze hall!"

"Quick, quick, quick, block him! He must’ve gotten a portion of the treasure."

The voices attracted people’s attention, as Fang Yuan’s surrounding Gu Masters quickly turned around and attacked him.

But the first who attacked were a small group of heavy tai dogs.

Not only was Fang Yuan obstructed by righteous and demonic Gu Masters, he was also specially "taken care of" by Tie Bai Qi.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"God damn it!" Fang Yuan cursed, waving his hand and summoning a golden dragon.

Golden dragon roared as it turned these heavy tai dogs into meat paste, paving a way for him to move.

"Little beast king, where do you think you’re going? Hand over the immortal treasure!" Yi Chong rushed towards Fang Yuan, as the waves came crashing.

Bone wings Gu!

Fang Yuan flapped his wings, avoiding the huge waves and flying into the sky.

"Little beast king, just stay here." Yi Huo waved his hand and fire birds flew out towards Fang Yuan.

Golden aurora Gu.

Fang Yuan’s body was covered in a golden light as his speed increased, retreating quickly and leaving the fire birds behind.

"Oh?" This huge change attracted Mo Wu Tian and Xiao Mang’s attention.

Xiao Mang shot out a giant hand of light, like a huge elephant, flying swiftly towards Fang Yuan trying to capture him.

Fang Yuan turned at a sharp angle, narrowly avoid it.

But at this moment, there was a gentle sound near his ears.

This sound was like a lover’s whisper beside one’s ear, or like the voice of one’s loved ones, causing an unknowing person to feel deeply emotional and unable to focus.

"Mo Wu Tian’s gentle feelings Gu!" Fang Yuan quickly broke free of it after his shock, but his movement was slowed because of this, causing the giant light hand to catch up.

"Oh no!" It was too late to dodge, Fang Yuan could only use his Gu worms to fight back, using offense as defense.

Bam!

The sound of a loud explosion, and the light hand was dispersed, while Fang Yuan flew in the air like a kite with its strings cut, landing towards the ground.

The sound of the wind near his ears woke the unconscious Fang Yuan.

Sensing that he was falling, he quickly activated his Gu worm while shouting: "Tie Ruo Nan obtained a peerless Immortal Gu, she is refining it now!"

Mo Wu Tian and Xiao Mang’s attention were instantly diverted.

Immortal Gu!

Everyone went into a commotion as their enthusiasm surged, causing Tie Bai Qi’s pressure to intensify.

Fang Yuan caught his breath and quickly used Wu Gui’s movement Gu. Large numbers of dark clouds appeared as he hid within, making his escape.

But at this moment...

Swish swish swish swish!

In the air, four chains extended out of nowhere, swift as lightning and flexible like snakes, tying Fang Yuan’s four limbs.

Next, the chains tightened and coiled, spreading until Fang Yuan was tied up tightly, dragged into the void.

The next moment, Fang Yuan reappeared in the bronze hall.

Tie clan’s four old-timers were at the north, south, east, and west respectively, standing around him.

The were half kneeling on the ground, their right palms facing forward while their left hand gripped their right hand, activating their Gu worms together. On each of their right palms, a black steel chain was extending out.

Tie clan’s four old-timers’ killer move — Infinite Search and Lock!

...

At this moment, in central continent, Tian Ti mountain.

In Hu Immortal blessed land, on top of Hun Dang mountain, a competition that decided the blessed land’s owner was at its final moments.

"Fang Zheng, hang in there, victory is within reach!" Lord Sky Crane’s voice came from within Fang Zheng. Compared to the start, he sounded extremely tired and weak.

"Yes, just one opponent left..." Fang Zheng gritted his teeth, his body full of sweat as it swayed, hanging on with just his determination.

"I, the great Xiao Qi Xing, was surpassed by a nobody?" Xiao Qi Xing’s eyes were staring wide as he looked at Fang Zheng climb, at a height beyond him.

"Sigh, to think that it would end up like this." Ying Sheng Ji sighed, letting go and falling down the mountain.

He was furthest from the peak, seeing Fang Zheng’s performance, he knew he had no chance of winning, thus giving up immediately.

Hu Immortal land spirit would not let him die of course, with a snap of her finger, Ying Sheng Ji was transported out of the blessed land.

Climb, continue to climb.

The skin on Fang Zheng’s arms and legs were torn, as blood flowed down.

The closer he was to the peak, the greater the vibration shocks on the soul. Fang Zheng was almost unable to think of anything, there was only the mountain peak left in his mind, as his entire potential was squeezed out, he was extremely tired, and this had greatly exceeded the limits of his body.

"This lad..." Feng Jin Huang was moved.

Fang Zheng was obviously exhausted beyond belief, yet he seemed to have some sort of limitless energy sustaining him.

"Mountain peak, mountain peak..." Fang Zheng gritted his teeth, with only one thought in his mind.

He climbed step by step, surpassing Feng Jin Huang and taking the lead!

At this moment, he was only less than a meter from the mountain peak.

Even the cute and tiny land spirit was standing at the edge of the cliff, looking down and watching the birth of her new owner.

Outside the blessed land, some Gu Masters who were watching started to sigh.

"Congrats to you He Feng Yang, this time your Immortal Crane Sect performed the best."

"Hmph, if my rank six exquisite warp Gu was still around..."

"Or maybe star shuttle Gu, fixed immortal travel Gu, or one’s own movement Gu, the results would be different."

The Gu Immortals had differing attitudes, some were congratulating while others were sighing in pity.

"We were lucky, just lucky!" He Feng Yang was modest but his tone could not conceal his joy.

But at this moment, a Gu Immortal sneered: "He Feng Yang, you are going to be disappointed. This Hu Immortal Inheritance belongs to us Spirit Affinity House."

As the immortal spoke, a change occurred in the blessed land!

Feng Jin Huang shouted, and a beautiful pair of wings grew from her shoulders.

This pair of wings was extremely elegant and beautiful, all sorts of lights shone on it, it was dazzling and alluring, with just one flap, Feng Jin Huang ascended easily.

"What?"

"This is..."

"The legendary Immortal Gu — Dream Wings!"

Dream wings was a special Immortal Gu, it did not exist in the real world, but only appeared in dreams. Activating it did not require immortal essence, but the Gu Master’s spirit and soul instead.

Feng Jin Huang was only a mortal, activating the dream wings forcefully would cause severe damage to her soul, amnesia at best, becoming mentally retarded at worst.

But the proud her had never suffered defeat since her birth. She could not allow Fang Zheng to be the sole winner right before her eyes.

"Even if I have to pay the heaviest price, I have to attain victory!" Under Fang Zheng’s shocked expression, Feng Jin Huang flew up quickly, easily surpassing him and claiming the lead once again.

The dream wings were folded back as Feng Jin Huang stood at the side of the cliff, breathing heavily, she felt a strong dizziness from the depths of her soul, almost causing her to faint.

She reached her limits.

Forcefully activating an Immortal Gu, it was not easy for Feng Jin Huang to reach this step.

"I actually lost!" Fang Zheng stared with wide opened eyes, dejected and upset.

At this moment, Feng Jin Huang was so close to the peak, in fact, her arms were already at the edge of the peak, she was one step away!

"I, I am about... to win!"

At this moment, Feng Jin Huang forced herself to raise her head, using the last bit of strength she had.

Her eyes were glowing like amber, her beautiful appearance and her snow-white long neck, was shining like jade in the blessed land’s pink light.

She was like a young phoenix, expanding its wings for the first time.

Brilliant and glorious!

At once, even Gu Immortals were dazed.

She bit her lips, placing her arms at the edge of the cliff. Next, she used her remaining strength to drag her body up as well.

At the end, she rolled onto the mountain peak.

She succeeded!

The sole winner of this competition, the new owner of the Hu Immortal blessed land!

...

Southern border, San Cha mountain, bronze hall.

Fang Yuan was tied up by the chains.

"Hehehe, Fang Yuan, we meet again." Tie Ruo Nan stood before Fang Yuan, laughed heartily.

Bai Ning Bing sighed: "It is no use, Fang Yuan, I secretly planted the fixed star Gu in your left arm. With this Gu to locate you, the infinite search and lock can catch you no matter where you go, even if you escape to the edge of the world, we can still bring you back. You have lost, admit it."

"What?" Fang Yuan lowered his head, seeing that there was a Gu on his left arm.

This Gu was a star fragment of the immemorial era, it was eight-sided and crystal clear, giving off starlight at times, causing Fang Yuan’s forearm to shine with a transparent eerie blue light.

"Bai Ning Bing!" Fang Yuan howled, struggling frantically, causing the chains to make a loud clank sound.

In his past life, Tie clan’s four old-timers used this killer move to capture Kong Ri Tian, to think that in this life, the same move would be used on him.

Before, when Bai Ning Bing was trapped by the four old-timers, Fang Yuan did not help her immediately, he was wary of this infinite search and lock.

Once he was locked on by this Gu, no matter where Fang Yuan escaped, the chains would extend from the void to capture him. But without the fixed star Gu, infinite search and lock would be like a headless chicken, not a threat at all.

"This fixed star Gu was given to me by the four old-timers personally, and I even spent a long time training to use it. Do you know when I planted it? Hehehe, it was when you injected yellow gold primeval essence to nurture my aperture. You had absolutely no idea huh?" Bai Ning Bing’s eyes were shining with cold mockery.

This move was truly nailing the problem at its roots, crushing Fang Yuan’s hopes of a reversal!

"Fixed star Gu... good, Bai Ning Bing, you are too good!" Fang Yuan stared at Bai Ning Bing, gritting his teeth.

Tie Ruo Nan continued to urge: "Fang Yuan, you have been locked on by infinite search and lock, you Gu worms have already been sealed and you cannot even use your primeval essence. You have no hope left, of course you can still will your Gu worms to self-detonate, but I would advise you not to do that. You are a smart person, you should know which option benefits you the most right?"

Fang Yuan lowered his head, silent.

Earlier, he had activated his Gu worms furiously, but infinite search and lock was famous for a reason, it was both a space path and seal path killer move. Even the rank five warp Gu was sealed, unable to be used.

"It has ended, Fang Yuan. Demon Suppression Tower is your final resting place. You will spend the rest of your life there." Bai Ning Bing sighed, seeing his mortal enemy captured, he felt extremely complicated, feeling both joy and sorrow.

"Throughout these years, thank you for the excitement you have brought to my life. Because of your existence, it lightened up this lonely life of mine, and I became less lonely and bored. Next, I will have an even more exciting life, and you should be honored that you have been a part of it." Saying so, Bai Ning Bing paid respects to Fang Yuan in an earnest and sincere expression.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan raised his head, looking at the sky beyond the bronze hall.

There was a huge hole in the blessed land’s sky, connecting to the outside world. From Fang Yuan’s angle, he could see the sun of southern border.

The sun was setting, it was near dusk.

"5:45pm, at this time, Feng Jin Huang should’ve just inherited Hu Immortal blessed land?" Fang Yuan thought.

In his previous life, he worked with demonic Gu Immortals, attacking Hu Immortal blessed land and taking over Dang Hun mountain. In the end he paid a huge price, killing Feng Jin Huang and narrowly surviving.

After Feng Jin Huang died, the righteous path grieved, writing the "Biography of Feng Jin Huang". The biography listed all the things she achieved in life, and Feng Jin Huang had three great opportunities in life.

Her first encounter, was when she was three years old, when she was sleeping, she obtained the Immortal Gu dream wings in her dreams.

The second opportunity was Hu Immortal blessed land, on this day, at 5:30pm, she successfully ascended the mountain.

"Feng Jin Huang has the Immortal Gu dream wings, the Hu Immortal Inheritance is definitely hers to take. To not give her such a huge lead, I need the second aperture Gu. Unfortunately, my efforts were in vain!"

He sighed in his heart, but his dazed expression suddenly became resolute again.

He had a chance to reverse the situation, he had not lost yet!

That is because, he had Spring Autumn Cicada.

Infinite search and lock could seal rank five Gu, but it could not restrict rank six Immortal Gu!

Fang Yuan raised his head, taking a final look at Bai Ning Bing and the others. There was nothing to say, this time, there was hope if he succeeded, and nothing to say if he failed.

"How can he be so calm?" Bai Ning Bing, Tie Ruo Nan and the others felt something amiss.

Bam!

Fang Yuan self-detonated!

At that moment, Spring Autumn Cicada burst out in two lights, green and orange, as a mystical and profound aura spread out.

All of Fang Yuan’s Gu worms, all his primeval essence, all his flesh and soul, all detonated.

Every use of the Spring Autumn Cicada was a great gamble.

Fang Yuan was at a dead end, he bet on everything he had!

After self-detonating, all the energy was injected into the Spring Autumn Cicada.

Spring Autumn Cicada turned into a brilliant dot, carrying Fang Yuan’s remaining will and tore through space, entering the most famous forbidden ground in this world — the river of time.

The Gu world had southern border, northern plains, western desert, eastern seas, and central continent. There was also one river of time, connecting past, present, and future, that was time itself.

Space and time were the basis that constructed the world.

Swish swish swish...

The river water in the river of time ebbed and flowed, crashing like waves.

Every drop of the water of time was pale white, but over a gazillion droplets of water crashed, intertwined, collided, and spun each time, giving off a brilliant light show.

In this desolate and plentiful river water, Spring Autumn Cicada was like a roaming traveller returning home, its wings flapped as it carried Fang Yuan’s consciousness and moved against the flow.

To Fang Yuan, this was the third time he used Spring Autumn Cicada.

The first time, he entered the river of time without any experience. The second time, he was forced to self-detonate, there was too little time.

This time, he was mentally prepared, and finally experienced the feeling of going against the tides.

This feeling was so mystical and incredible. Countless light shadows, like a movie playing in reverse, appeared in his consciousness.

It felt like a second passed, but it also felt like years had passed.

The dangerous waves came crashing each time, Spring Autumn Cicada quickly lost its stamina, and the energy from self-detonating was expended, it struggled and jumped into one of the droplets, vanishing.

Fang Yuan blinked, and the image before him had changed!

"Hold on, hold on, all can be negotiated. I can promise to tell you the true path, but you must ensure my safety. I have a poison vow Gu..."

Fang Yuan heard a familiar voice begging for his life, he looked down and saw Wang Xiao.

He was stunned, as his heart pounded, his expression changed as he revealed an unconcealed joy.

"Hahaha, I succeeded, I succeeded again, I won the bet, I managed to rebirth!" Fang Yuan spread his arms, laughing loudly.

Wang Xiao: "..."

Fang Yuan’s sudden performance caused him to feel shocked and suspicious.

"What rebirth? What succeeded? Is this guy mentally unsound? But honestly, there are lots of crazy demonic path Gu Masters. Damn it, I encountered such a maniac!"

Being stepped on by Fang Yuan, Wang Xiao who was lying on the ground thought about this and begged even louder.

"Hahaha..." Fang Yuan’s laughter continued, this feeling of escaping from a hopeless scenario and restarting once again was simply too good, he felt great!

He first inspected his aperture.

In the aperture, his vital Gu Spring Autumn Cicada was extremely weak once again, its lustrous body had turned into wilting autumn leaves.

Fang Yuan willed, and Spring Autumn Cicada hid its body, entering a deep sleep, regaining its strength through the river of time.

"This way, the threat Spring Autumn Cicada has been alleviated!" Fang Yuan laughed even louder, his eyes shining brightly.

He looked around again.

This was evidently still the blessed land, he was stepping on Wang Xiao, and there was a corpse beside him, it was Yun clan’s young clan leader Yun Luo Tian.

He was killed by Bai Ning Bing, and his corpse was sent over by expending immortal essence.

Thinking of Bai Ning Bing, Fang Yuan’s laughter stopped, unable to laugh anymore.

It was this guy, planning for so long and finally betrayed him, causing Fang Yuan to fail even though he succeeded in refining second aperture Gu, falling into deep despair. If not for Spring Autumn Cicada and his good luck, Fang Yuan would’ve completely lost. Regardless of death or captivity in Demon Suppression Tower, he would have no opportunities left in life.

Demonic path was like this, it was like walking on tightrope, one step was all it takes for destruction. Falling into the abyss, with no hopes of ever getting back up.

"I was simply too careless, thinking about Feng Jin Huang and wanting to refine an Immortal Gu, I ignored the true demon that was hiding near me! But this Bai Ning Bing’s acting was also convincing, planning for so many years, working so hard to numb my senses, and then giving me the final blow. Heh, I am still a mortal, I am not an invincible god." Thinking of this, Fang Yuan’s mouth was bitter.

Fang Yuan was improving and growing ferociously, Bai Ning Bing was the same.

This was the harshness of reality, and also the beauty of fate.

In this world, everyone was a main character, but everyone was also a side character.

"Everyone has their own advantages, Bai Ning Bing has the Northern Dark Ice Soul physique, Tie Ruo Nan has her Tie clan background, Feng Jin Huang gained an Immortal Gu in her dreams when she was three years old. As for me, I struggled for hundreds of years, cultivating bitterly until I refined the Spring Autumn Cicada."

Fang Yuan thought about this, and his emotions surged again, he smiled brilliantly and recited: "

Viewing thousands of mountains in deep crimson

Layers of trees dyed red

On the limpid blue water

Hundreds of barges race against currents

Hawks spread their wings in the vast sky

Fish swim freely under deep water

All living things vie for freedom under the autumn sky

Pondering over the immensity of the universe

I ask this boundless and misty earth

Who rules the fate of this world?"

If heavens had emotions it would grow old, the Great Dao is emotionless and impartial. Every living being has the chance to rise up, it depends on how one uses their opportunities, and how one fights!

In this world, no one is born to be a side character. And there is no one who is an eternal main character.

Living beings compete, the weak are eliminated.

Precisely because of the heroes competing in this world, facing off with their respective strengths and trump cards, can history be so immense and interesting, making the world such a mystical place.

Thinking so, the bitterness, hatred, shock, grieve and joy vanished in Fang Yuan like a trace of smoke.

His heart was clear, his demonic resolution shone deeply in his eyes.

He started to think calmly.

"So I rebirthed at this time. According to my previous life’s development, I grilled Wang Xiao regarding the path towards Wu mountain, but he did not tell me even after dying. I had no choice and had to kill him, using the beast strength placenta Gu to devour his and Yun Luo Tian’s apertures."

Fang Yuan was solemn, his expression like ice, as he recalled in his mind what was about to happen.

"Next, I spent a lot of effort, exposing the Spring Autumn Cicada to convince the land spirit. Next, I killed killer ghost doctor Chou Jiu, Wu Shen Tong, and Zhang San San. I unexpectantly obtained a slavery Gu from Zhang San San, and was about to continue killing people when an accident occurred. I had no choice but to interfere and kill Long Qing Tian, but because of the jade sky Gu poison, I had no gains."

"Next, I refined Gu, defended the hall, and got betrayed by Bai Ning Bing..."

Fang Yuan’s mind worked like lightning, almost instantly recalling the previous life as his eyes squinted into a line, subconsciously clenching his fists tightly.

"The situation is really perilous!" With his rebirth, Fang Yuan looked at the situation clear as day, his previous life’s carelessness became this life’s alertness.

Firstly, Bai Ning Bing already knows about the details regarding the refinement of the Immortal Gu.

She had secretly cooperated with Tie Ruo Nan, Tie clan had to be prepared long ago, that Tie Bai Qi might have already hidden himself in San Cha mountain, ready to strike at any moment.

The enemy is hidden while I am exposed, this is not good!

Next, during the last few days of refinement, Xiao Mang would arrive here. The unexpected Mo Wu Tian would also join in with his new rank five cultivation.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan killed several demonic heads causing the demonic faction to have no leader. Mo Wu Tian’s arrival easily overturned that as he gathered the demonic path’s strength using his rank five cultivation. It could be said that because of him, it hastened the outside experts’ attack on the hall.

The enemy is strong while I am weak, that is even worse!!

Lastly, the most severe point...

Fang Yuan raised his left arm.

In his previous life, he was kept in the dark, but now he knew: Bai Ning Bing had secretly planted the fixed star Gu on him, on this forearm. Once the Tie clan’s four old-timers used the infinite search and lock, he would have no way to escape, captured even if he ran to the edge of the world.

"Now that I think about it, Tie clan did not move earlier because first, I killed Tie Mu Bai, and that situation greatly exceeded their expectations. Secondly, they want to reap the benefits from others’ conflict, attaining the fruits of victory without loss. Thirdly, they are extremely vigilant. Although infinite search and lock can restrict rank five Gu worms, it could be resisted in other ways. What if they arrested me but did not find the Yang Gu? Thus because of this, they kept it as a final trump card."

Fixed star Gu was secretly planted, Fang Yuan was now like a fish in the net, he could not escape. It was almost a hopeless situation.

(Author’s note: This book is the realization of my dream these six years. Thus it contained many things, and is different from other books. One point especially, that is Fang Yuan the main character, is able to fail. Demonic path was never about winning every battle, demons lose too. If I do not write out the failure, I would not be able to represent the true nature of "demonic". Any risk has a price to pay, if one day, in the event Fang Yuan’s death would make the book more interesting, or even elevate it to another level, then I would write him to death, that is also the tragedy of the demonic path.)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Fixed star Gu, this is like a rope tied around my neck. Although I have methods to get rid of it, I need a lot of time to prepare. If I want to immediately get rid of the fixed star Gu, unless Bai Ning Bing took it back personally, otherwise, I can also chop off my left forearm..." Fang Yuan’s heart was burning with this urge.

Fixed star Gu was hiding in Fang Yuan’s forearm, once he discarded his forearm, Tie clan’s four old-timers would only be able to retrieve his broken limb.

If if he did that, Fang Yuan would lose a limb.

He would have to treat it in the future, making a broken limb grow back, creating something from nothing, it would spend a lot of effort.

Not mentioning how troublesome healing would be, the thing now was once he loses his left arm, it would be alerting his enemies. Tie clan and Bai Ning Bing would immediately realize that Fang Yuan knew what was going on, and would immediately start their attacks.

That way, the attackers of the main hall would also include Tie clan and Bai Ning Bing.

To Fang Yuan, such a situation was worse than the previous life.

"I cannot alert them prematurely! I was lucky to rebirth, compared to last time, my only advantage is that I know what is going to happen. I have to go with the flow, since Tie clan and Bai Ning Bing are still usable to me now. Once I lose my arm, not only would Tie clan be forced to go against me, the situation will also change, and derail from the tracks of my previous life, I would lose my rebirth advantage completely."

But if he did not get rid of his arm, how would he get out of this situation, and counterattack under such dire circumstances?

Fang Yuan pondered, all sorts of people, incidents, cause and effect flickered in his mind.

Wang Xiao, Chou Jiu, Wu Shen Tong, Zhang San San, Long Qing Tian, Xiao Mang, Tie Ruo Nan, Bai Ning Bing, Mo Wu Tian, Yan Jun, Feng Tian Yu...

Slavery Gu, jade sky Gu poison, land spirit, bronze hall, immortal essence, fixed star Gu, second aperture Gu, undefeated hundred battles Gu...

Numerous choices give birth to unlimited possibilities. Infinite possibilities affect each other.

Fang Yuan’s mind worked rapidly, all sorts of inspiration and scenarios happened in his head like lighting a flint in the darkness.

What should he do to protect himself, while maintaining the biggest benefits?

He thought and thought, expending his mental energy, in just a little bit of time, his ears were buzzing.

"Wait!" Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s body shook.

"Maybe... take a step backwards, and the sea and sky becomes wider ? Should I consider this from a wider perspective?" An absurd thought appeared in this head.

"No way, if I do this, the risks are greater!" He shook his head, muttering as he denied this idea.

But this thought was rooted in his head, it continued to influence him.

"If I do this and manage to succeed, my gains will be overwhelming!" Fang Yuan’s eyes shone brilliantly.

But the next moment, he shook his head again: "If there is even an inch of calculation mistake in this plan, I will be completely finished, the consequences would be worse than falling into Tie Ruo Nan’s hands. The Spring Autumn Cicada has already been used, I cannot use rebirth again for a while..."

As he thought, Fang Yuan’s gaze became solemn and deep.

Suddenly, he laughed lightly: "To think that I, a great demonic leader in my time, am being so careful and worried now, afraid to execute my plans. As long as there is hope, I should be brave enough to do it. Only an overwhelming benefit can cause me to go forward relentlessly. Fortune and risks come together, why should I go slow and steady to build my foundation? I want to ascend to heaven in one step!"

"That’s right, this is the plan! Death without a proper burial if I fail, fly into the sky like a dragon if I succeed, and pave the way for my future plans. Hehehe, hahaha, life is but a few hundred years, it is all a grand gamble!"

"Little beast king, don’t be rash, we can talk this out. You want the path into Wu mountain, we can negotiate this, it can be discussed." Wang Xiao underneath his feet begged.

Fang Yuan laughed at times, remained solemn at times, frowned at times, and went back to laughing happily at times. He scared this rank five Gu Master, the lord of Wu mountain, a great demonic expert to death.

In Wang Xiao’s heart, Fang Yuan was a maniac, a mentally ill person.

Demonic path is extreme, without a clan’s support, cultivation is difficult. At times they struggled at death’s door, they face great mental pressure. It is not uncommon for demonic Gu Masters to develop mental illnesses.

Especially when Fang Yuan talked to himself sometimes, or even made poems for himself, it intensified Wang Xiao’s worries.

Against a normal person, he had his ways to deal with them. But dealing with a madman, even a Gu Immortal has no confidence.

"Oh? You plan to tell me Wu mountain’s entrance?" Fang Yuan frowned, looking at Wang Xiao.

"Of course, but you have to let me off." Wang Xiao saw a reaction from Fang Yuan and shouted anxiously.

"Hmph!" Fang Yuan’s gaze became sharp, pressing with his feet and with a crack, Wang Xiao’s head was smash to bits.

Wang Xiao was a great expert, devious and cruel, cold and emotionless. To get him to say the correct entrance into Wu mountain, Zhang San San’s rank five slavery Gu was needed.

But in Fang Yuan’s new plan, Wang Xiao had been discarded, there is no need to waste time talking to him, thus he was directly killed.

A pity for Wang Xiao, the lord of Wu mountain yet he died so pathetically in Fang Yuan’s hands.

After killing Wang Xiao, Fang Yuan took his Gu and used beast strength placenta Gu, devouring his and Yun Luo Tian’s apertures.

"This way, beast strength placenta Gu’s aptitude is eighty-three percent. In terms of immortal essence, we spent a little bit more than expected, slightly exceeding two portions. Ba Gui, you want me to stop?" Fang Yuan suddenly said.

Land spirit: "Eh? How did you know my thought?"

"Of course I know." Fang Yuan snorted, leaking the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura: "Ba Gui, have a feel, what do you think this is?"

The land spirit was speechless!

"This, this is the aura of a rank six Immortal Gu! It seems... it seems to be the Spring Autumn Cicada... Spring Autumn Cicada is the seventh mysterious Gu in this world! You are a mere mortal, how can you possess such an Immortal Gu?"

In his past life, Fang Yuan spent a lot of time talking to Ba Gui, eventually failing to convince it, thus gambling and revealing his greatest trump card, convincing the land spirit.

This time, Fang Yuan revealed Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura from the start and went straight to the point: "Ba Gui, I will not lie to you, I am a future Gu Immortal, using the Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth myself into the past."

"What?!" Land spirit was shocked beyond words, the information was too great, it could not accept it so readily.

Fang Yuan’s expression was arrogant: "I came back from the future, I know everything. Ba Gui, I am your next master, I succeeded in refining the second aperture Gu in my previous life..."

Fang Yuan spoke.

In his last life, he convinced the land spirit, but now, he had the knowledge of the future, as well as the experience of refining second aperture Gu as evidence, the land spirit was quickly convinced.

"Young man, you really are my future master? Listening to your words, it seems you really succeeded in refining second aperture Gu! Regardless of whether you are lying to me, I am exhilarated. Because this means the success of second aperture Gu has been raised by thirty percent!" Land spirit said happily.

"Enough trash talk, Ba Gui, I came from the future, I know the dangers that are lurking. First, I need to kill a person!"

...

A moment later, Long Qing Tian died by Fang Yuan’s hands.

In his last life, this Long Qing Tian went into a weakened land and used the jade sky Gu, poisoning the blessed land and forming a loophole, causing great damage to the blessed land, and also causing Fang Yuan a lot of trouble.

This time, Fang Yuan struck immediately after rebirth. Before Long Qing Tian entered that weakened area, he used the heavenly power to restrict him and easily killed him.

"Young man, I am starting to believe you. You killed a dangerous threat prematurely. Sigh, the three kings modified the blessed land, my control over this land is not strong anymore. You could sense this danger and have the Spring Autumn Cicada, you really came from the future..." Land spirit exclaimed.

Fang Yuan sighed, land spirit was old and dying, it was like a dying old man, it could not compare to a young land spirit.

For example, it could not even detect the fixed star Gu on Fang Yuan’s arm.

Fang Yuan did not waste time with the land spirit, he worked quickly, taking Long Qing Tian’s Gu worms and devoured his aperture.

In his previous life, because of the jade sky Gu poison, Fang Yuan could not take the battle loot after killing Long Qing Tian. But this time, he acted early and Long Qing Tian could not use his Gu, thus Fang Yuan had no restrictions.

After looting Long Qing Tian, Fang Yuan gained several useful things.

Other than the aperture, his greatest loot was jade sky Gu.

This Gu was like a dark green bamboo stem, palm-sized and hollow in the middle, it gave off a smooth texture when held in one’s hands, like a piece of jade.

Rank five jade sky Gu originated from the immemorial era, it was extremely rare now. It had an extremely strong poison and there was barely any ways to deal with it, it could easily poison a person to death, causing them to fade into a green light.

This Gu had great use, Fang Yuan kept it carefully.

"Bai Gui, quickly transfer me to this place."

The next moment, Fang Yuan appeared in front of the demonic enslavement path master, Zhang San San.

Zhang San San had not even reacted before Fang Yuan attacked, ending his life.

Fang Yuan killed and plundered the aperture, it was the same thing again, causing the beast strength placenta Gu’s aptitude to rise again.

Zhang San San was a rank four Gu Master, but had a rank five slavery Gu. Fang Yuan’s greatest motive for killing him was this Gu.

With another flash, Fang Yuan appeared in front of killer ghost doctor Chou Jiu.

"Eh? Little beast king! How did you..." Chou Jiu saw Fang Yuan and was taken aback, his expression extremely shocked.

Fang Yuan’s expression was plain as he used the rank five slavery Gu.

The slavery Gu exploded into a yellow light, landing on Chou Jiu.

Chou Jiu shouted: "F*ck! Rank five slavery Gu! You can kill me but not humiliate me , you want to enslave me, you are dreaming..."

He did not know that in the previous life, he begged Fang Yuan to use slavery Gu.

With the land spirit to suppress him, Chou Jiu could not use Gu worms, the slavery Gu was easily planted on him.

But to control a rank five Gu Master, it was not so easy, it was a contest of souls.

Chou Jiu resisted with all his strength, Fang Yuan’s soul trembled as he entered a stalemate.

Chou Jiu sneered, his forehead full of sweat: "Little beast king, you are too naive. For an enslavement path Gu master, the soul’s foundation is most important, the higher the better. It is not easy to control wild beasts, not to mention men. Man is the spirit of all beings, you want to control me who is a rank higher, it is wishful thinking, hehe... ahhh!"

Chou Jiu screamed in pain, as his smug laughter was terminated by Fang Yuan’s slap.

With this interference, the contest of souls tilted towards Fang Yuan’s advantage, as the yellow light merged into his body.

As long as it is fully merged, Chou Jiu would become Fang Yuan’s most loyal slave!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chou Jiu was shocked, quickly concentrating his mind and pushing his soul, meditating resist this yellow light.

This yellow light was supported by Fang Yuan’s soul power, but he was young and had weaker foundations in his soul compared to this hundred year old monster Chou Jiu. To enslave Chou Jiu, it would not be an easy task.

But why would Fang Yuan not see this coming, he had his ways.

Piak piak piak, bam bam bam.

"Stop, you dare to hit me!"

"Kick my face again and I’ll fight it out with you..."

"F*cker, still kicking, I’ll kill you!!"

"Stop hitting , stop hitting me."

"No, no more..."

Fang Yuan hit Chou Jiu until he rolled around, Chou Jiu could not use Gu worms but Fang Yuan had his strength path Gu worms available.

Comparing strength, Chou Jiu was not Fang Yuan’s match. Quickly, Chou Jiu’s face was bruised, and his distraction meant that the yellow light fused into his body more deeply.

"Hold on, I have to block it, once it fuses completely, I will be his slave, I will have no way out!" Chou Jiu squeezed into a ball as he allowed Fang Yuan to hit him, the strong sense of danger causing his hair to stand.

Just a tiny bit of light left, near his forehead unable to fuse properly.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, suddenly saying: "Zeng Ah Niu, you don’t want revenge? Chen Jiu betrayed you and is living well with Shang Yan Fei."

"You, how did you know?!" Chou Jiu was taken by surprise, the light quickly entering his body with this chance.

Chou Jiu’s expression instantly changed, kneeling before Fang Yuan.

"This subordinate greets master!"

Fang Yuan laughed heartily.

Success!

This rank five slavery Gu should be used on a rank five Gu Master to express its true worth.

Till now, Mo Wu Tian and Xiao Mang had not arrived yet. Tie Mu Bai, Wu Gui, Ku Mo and Wu Lan Shan were all killed by Fang Yuan, the final choice was Wang Xiao the owner of Wu mountain and killer ghost doctor Chou Jiu.

But how could Wu mountain compare to the door of life and death? The door of life and death was a forbidden land on the same level as the river of time!

Enslaving Chou Jiu meant getting the clue to the door of life and death. Moreover, Chou Jiu is one of the four great doctors of southern border, his influence even spread to the righteous path, he was definitely better than Mo Wu Tian.

The only flaw was that enslaving Chou Jiu placed a great burden on Fang Yuan’s soul, it was a problem for his upcoming Immortal Gu refinement.

"Chou Jiu, back then did you use the poison vow Gu with Doctor Su Shou, swearing to love each other for eternity, never abandoning each other?" Fang Yuan looked at the killer ghost doctor, asking a question.

"There is indeed such a matter, but master, how did you know?" Chou Jiu kneeled on the ground and answered with a bruised face, feeling confused.

"Hmph, since you used the poison vow Gu, do you know how Doctor Su Shou lifted its restrictions?" Fang Yuan squinted his eyes.

"Poison vow Gu is mountain pledge sea oath Gu’s replacement, Chen Jiu does not have the ability to negate it. She took a great risk for that gigolo Shang Yan Fei, letting the poison vow kill her. Without a host, the poison vow’s strength vanished. She then used healing techniques to resurrect herself, getting free of the poison vow!"

Chou Jiu said this with a furious expression. He loved his senior sister greatly, but she betrayed him for a gigolo, even ignoring the dangers to her life and broke the poison vow.

Fang Yuan heard this and was even more furious than him, lifting his leg and kicking Chou Jiu away.

"You lying piece of shit!"

He remembered that in his previous life, Chou Jiu said this:

"We took an oath in front of the blessed land’s sea, to protect and stand by each other."

"But who could have thought her heart had already changed and actually broke the oath we took at that time and injured me, defecting with that thief!"

What oath, it was the motherf*cking poison vow Gu!

This Chou Jiu only spoke of less important matters, making important information unclear and concealing himself. If he had said poison vow Gu back then, Fang Yuan reckons: He would not have been so unaware, not knowing that there was a person in Shang clan city that could break free from poison vow Gu, and thus he would’ve been careful of Bai Ning Bing.

"But I should’ve guessed it, when Chou Jiu talked about Shang Yan Fei’s appearance, he said that he was only slightly better looking. Saying such shameless words like it was natural, it was no surprise that he would not mention the Gu."

Fang Yuan looked at Chou Jiu with contempt.

Saying he loved her, but used the poison vow Gu to restrict her, it showed how sinister and inferior his inner heart was. Such a person speaking with exaggerated truths was nothing strange.

Fang Yuan was also suspicious of how Bai Ning Bing broke free from the poison vow, even in his previous life Bai Ning Bing did not say the reason. Now Fang Yuan knew, it was Doctor Su Shou who helped her break free of it.

"Alright, let the past be past. Chou Jiu, go to King Xin Inheritance and get me undefeated hundred battles Gu." Fang Yuan collected his thoughts and instructed.

"This subordinate will do all that he can!" Chou Jiu answered.

Chou Jiu was a healing Gu Master, he was not a refinement path master like Feng Tian Yu, it was impossible to ask him to assist Fang Yuan in refining second aperture Gu. But it was extremely easy for him to get the undefeated hundred battles Gu.

This is because the blessed land was weakening, not long later, Gu worms would be usable, Chou Jiu just needed to charge ahead and he would obtain undefeated hundred battles Gu.

At this point, Fang Yuan's slaughter ended.

He returned to the hall and continue refining Gu.

Compared to his previous life, he saved a lot of time after rebirth. Without the Spring Autumn Cicada's pressure it was much easier.

Back then he only spent an hour a day, refining Gu like a maniac, forcing his own limits. But now he could sleep six hours, slowly and steadily, refining Gu with perfect sequence.

Days continued to pass, and the blessed land was getting weaker. But the immortal essence expenditure was much less than last time. Fang Yuan had his experience from the last time, he took less detours this time, many steps were completed in one try, and the land spirit was extremely amazed.

Three kings inheritance's weird state attracted everyone's attention.

As time went on, Che clan, Zuo clan moved out, and Xiao Mang and Mo Wu Tian also appeared on San Cha mountain.

Finally, October 24th came again.

"Master, this subordinate has succeeded!" Chou Jiu kneeled on the ground, holding up a Gu, handing it to Fang Yuan.

This Gu had a bland appearance, like a grey stone disc, it was none other than undefeated hundred battles Gu.

In his previous life, Feng Tian Yu who Fang Yuan enslaved obtained King Xin Inheritance and had several hundred hairy men as followers. Now, Chou Jiu was not a refinement path master, he broke through by force, only getting the undefeated hundred battles Gu, not a single hairy men followed him.

But the hairy men were good at Gu refinement, they could not battle. The hairy men's line of defense was as good as nothing, Fang Yuan did not mind it.

After keeping undefeated hundred battles Gu, Fang Yuan gave instructions before sending Chou Jiu away. This process was done in the dark, Bai Ning Bing did not learn of it.

Fang Yuan returned to the bronze hall, and Bai Ning Bing had already arrived.

Behind her, there were a hundred thousand dog beasts, either resting or playing around.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: "Bai Ning Bing, hand your Gu worms to the land spirit."

"What?" Bai Ning Bing was shocked: "Aren't I commanding these dogs?"

"The land spirit can use Gu worms, its manipulation is better than yours." Fang

Yuan explained.

Land spirit appeared, slightly worried: "Young man, I have to refine Gu with you while controlling the immortal essence, if I have to expend effort controlling the dogs, I might not have the energy to do so."

Fang Yuan snickered, his expression extremely confident: "No worries, aren’t you confident of my actions? Among the enemies I have my pawn pieces too. There are sufficient primeval stones here for you to manipulate the dogs."

"Is that so..." Ba Gui hesitated, but thinking of Fang Yuan’s secret identity, he agreed in the end.

"As for you Bai Ning Bing, come with me. When I refine Gu, I need a trustworthy person to defend me." Fang Yuan patted Bai Ning Bing’s shoulder, showing a kind and affectionate smile.

Bai Ning Bing snorted, her gaze shining secretly, as she said in a flat tone: "Up to you, as long as you don’t die, whether the Gu refinement succeeds or not is none of my business."

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing entered the hall together.

Fang Yuan sat down as Bai Ning Bing acted as his guardian.

Fang Yuan shut his eyes, not doing anything.

"What are you waiting for? There is not much time." Bai Ning Bing endured for a while before breaking the silence.

"Ning Bing, stay calm, some things cannot be rushed." Fang Yuan smiled lightly, no anxiety at all as he spoke plainly.

Bai Ning Bing snorted, not speaking, her eyes squinting, thinking in her heart: "What is this Fang Yuan thinking of? He took away my commanding rights, is he suspicious of me? No, he arranged for me to be in the hall, he still trusts me! I have to continue enduring."

She thought of Tie Ruo Nan, feeling assured: "She is blocked by the dog groups outside now, without my assistance, she can only break through by force. Damn it, he did not let me control the dogs. Thankfully, we have a backup plan, Tie Bai Qi is already secretly on San Cha mountain."

A moment later, Fang Yuan was calm and resting, not doing anything.

This time, even the land spirit came to urge Fang Yuan to refine the Gu.

But Fang Yuan rejected him, not doing anything.

Land spirit was anxious, its tone became slightly angry, but Fang Yuan used his rebirth identity to convince it.

At this time, on San Cha mountain peak.

Blue, red light pillars were thin and weak, still shining on the mountain peak. King Quan inheritance’s yellow pillar was gone.

The previous time, only red pillar was left, that was because Feng Tian Yu took King Xin Inheritance. But this time, Chou Jiu was not a refinement master, he could not break through the final round, thus two pillars were left.

"I wonder who took King Quan Inheritance!"

"Two left, us smallfry have no chance..."

"But it is really strange, none of the rank five Gu Masters in the inheritance came out, did something happen?"

"That’s right, King Quan Inheritance was inherited, but why did the others not come out?"

"They are being retained inside the blessed land. This blessed land is facing destruction, soon the door will open, allowing us to enter and exit at will." A voice echoed.

"It is Lord Xiao Mang!" Someone cheered, recognising the person’s identity.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Extreme light Gu!

Heaven’s will Gu!

Empty fist Gu!

Killer move — Immemorial Light Fist!!

Xiao Mang stood at the peak of San Cha mountain and used his killer move, causing the sky to dim.

Light rays formed into a giant hill-sized fist and pierced through the blessed land’s barrier.

In an instant, the whole blessed land shook and an enormous hole formed forming a passage connecting the inside to the outside. Gu Masters could enter through it without any obstructions!

"Charge, everything in the blessed land is ours!"

"We need to hurry, or else we won’t be able to seize anything."

"Unfortunately, the good stuff will be taken by those experts. It will be good if they leave just the soup for us."

"How nice would it be If I can luckily obtain King Xin and King Bao Inheritance!"

It was a scene of chaos; countless people cheered while rushing into the blessed land, causing the pressure on the blessed to greatly increase.

"This is it, hehehe, a bunch of idiots!" Xiao Mang laughed coldly inwardly and stepped into the blessed land.

The bronze hall also recovered from the tremors.

Land spirit transmitted its voice to Fang Yuan: "So you were waiting for this tremor to pass, it was really dangerous! If it was during the Gu refinement process, it would have caused a huge disturbance and the consequences would be too terrible to imagine. You are truly a Gu Immortal who has been reborn."

Fang Yuan smiled and transmitted a mental message: "I am not only a Gu Immortal, but also your future master. Ba Gui, you need to know I am the best candidate for refining the Immortal Gu. The more you cooperate with me, the higher our chance of refining the Immortal Gu. Now, I remember there will be two more tremors, we need to avoid them as much as possible. Alright, let’s begin the Gu refinement!"

Fang Yuan threw the false second aperture Gu into the cauldron.

With the land spirit’s cooperation, the bronze cauldron burned without any fire and the remaining bit of immortal essence started combusting!

Immortal essence combusted and formed into a blue smoke that gracefully rose and covered the false second aperture Gu.

The false Gu floated above the bronze cauldron and was turned into dazzling yellow light by this blue smoke.

Fang Yuan concentrated his attention in harmonizing the blue smoke and yellow light.

Previously, he refined the Gu together with Feng Tian Yu, now he was doing it alone and was thus slightly slower.

...

Mo Wu Tian arrived at the edge of the dense fog by himself.

His deep and mysterious purple eyes were enchanting and wild. Through his purple eyes, the fog seemed to be invisible and the sea of dog beasts showed themselves in his sight.

"Such a tight defensive formation, one man alone cannot charge through it, it seems I will need to borrow strength!"

He resolutely turned around and after a while found Hu Mei Er.

"Ah! Young master Wu Tian, you have actually advanced to rank five!" Hu Mei Er was shocked at Mo Wu Tian’s cultivation progress.

Mo Wu Tian talked of the immortal treasure and was able to immediately incite the desire in Hu Mei Er who expressed her full support.

However, when they were on their way, they found that the news about the immortal treasure had already spread.

The two inquired about the details and learned the news was released by the killer ghost doctor Chou Jiu. Right now, he had already gathered a huge group of demonic Gu Masters and was heading towards the bronze hall.

Mo Wu Tian furrowed his brows. Most of the demonic path Gu Masters had already gone with Chou Jiu, and thus he was only able to gather a few people.

Moreover, talking of influence, he was no match for Chou Jiu.

Mo Wu Tian was after all a newcomer while Chou Jiu was an old veteran who had roamed around Southern Border for many years and was also one of the four great doctors. Most of the people would have favors to ask of him and he had some influence even in the righteous path.

With no choice, Mo Wu Tian could only join with Chou Jiu’s group.

"With little brother Mo Wu Tian’s help, these mere dog beasts are of no worry to us!" Chou Jiu welcomed Mo Wu Tian enthusiastically.

Mo Wu Tian’s brows furrowed deeply as he was used as a target board for Chou Jiu. But nevermind, if he endured this and helped out, they would be able to get to the main hall quicker.

The huge crowd of demonic Gu Masters looked majestic, but they did not immediately charge towards the main hall but instead remained there.

"Sir Chou Jiu, time doesn’t wait for anyone, why are we not charging in towards the hall?" Mo Wu Tian’s brows had furrowed into a knot as he urged.

Chou Jiu said with a chuckled: "More people means bigger strength, there are still many of our people that have not joined us. We need to absorb their strength to become even stronger. When we charge at that time, the pressure and danger each person faces will be much less."

Mo Wu Tian urged again but Chou Jiu just chuckled and replied politely, not yielding the least bit.

Mo Wu Tian started to feel anxious, he tried several more times but Chou Jiu remained firm.

"This old fool does not know the value of time!" Mo Wu Tian repressed his anger and immediately contacted Hu Mei Er, Li Xian and others to agitate and incite everyone, making them even more impatient.

Chou Jiu had no way to deal with it since he could not directly go against everyone’s intent, and could only lead a group of demonic Gu Masters to arrive at the edge of the fog.

Mo Wu Tian observed for a while and again made the strategy to divide the crowd in three groups, and so on.

Chou Jiu, however, said it was not a good idea and that the fog was too dense to understand the actual situation. As a doctor, he had his morals as a healer, he could not bear to see everyone risking themselves and delivering themselves to death.

Mo Wu Tian stomped his feet in anger and went to contact everyone and incite them with the allure of the immortal treasure.

The demonic Gu Masters’ mood was agitated, Chou Jiu also took advantage of the situation to push the responsibility for this matter to Mo Wu Tian and chose the people who would charge forward. However, he put a condition that only those who were willing could go forward and they could not be forced.

The demonic crowd readily agreed and moved towards the three paths according to Mo Wu Tian’s arrangement.

"Not good, someone is attacking from outside!" When the refinement was going on, the land spirit’s voice suddenly arrived.

"No need to worry, I have already anticipated this situation, go take charge of the battle outside, I will stabilize the Gu refinement for the moment and wait for you to rotate with me." Fang Yuan’s expression was calm.

The land spirit divided most of its concentration in commanding the dog beasts according to Fang Yuan’s instructions and beat back the demonic crowd just like in previous life.

Mo Wu Tian was unresigned and again formed the second assault group, but they still met with great losses and returned defeatedly.

Chou Jiu came forward at this moment: "Everyone knows my rule, I take one life for every life I save. Right now, I will treat everyone first and hope you all can fulfill the promise later."

Finished speaking, he started healing everyone.

The demonic crowd was moved to tears. Chou Jiu’s influence increased rapidly and even more people left Mo Wu Tian to side with Chou Jiu.

Chou Jiu patted Mo Wu Tian’s shoulder and said in a kind voice: "Brother Wu Tian, do you see it now? I advised you earlier to not take the risk. Now, so many of our comrades have lost their lives, it makes me so sad."

His voice was quite loud which caused Mo Wu Tian’s eye to twitch and his anger reached an extreme level.

"This old sinister fool! If I was successful in breaking through these beasts, it would be his contribution; and now that I failed, he is avoiding all the responsibility! Hmph, I did underestimate these beasts. I had thought the formation was a weak one, and had never thought that there was a Gu Master controlling them from behind. Such a fast adaptation speed and method, this person is definitely someone with deep attainment in enslavement path. Damn it, this is really hateful!"

Mo Wu Tian gritted his teeth but could do nothing.

In the previous life, he was able to use force and threat to make the demonic Gu Masters throw their lives. However, with rank five Chou Jiu here now, he was not able to be so unrestrained.

"Let’s wait. Righteous path Gu Masters will also soon gather together and we can discuss it with them. After all, we only have one life, in case we charge through and let the righteous path get the benefits, it would be really bad." Chou Jiu spoke his plan.

"Lord killer ghost doctor is right."

"Lord killer ghost doctor is indeed benevolent and cherishes the lives of us small characters."

"Doctors have their healer morals, Lord killer ghost doctor is after all a senior of our demonic path..."

Mo Wu Tian gritted his teeth till they made cracking sounds, he really wished he could kill this old bastard.

Like this, the time was delayed for a good while until the righteous path Gu Masters gathered under the lead of Xiao Mang.

They charged through several times but also returned in defeat. Xiao Mang was getting anxious while thinking of the unopened King Bao Inheritance and again used his killer move.

Extreme light Gu!

My will Gu!

Bright spear Gu!

Killer move — My Glorious Spear!!

A 1.8m long and 0.6m thick spear of light landed on the mound.

An intense explosion occurred with shockwaves blowing away everything. After the dazzling light dispersed, the fog that covered the mound also dispersed.

The bronze hall and the majestic dog beasts were revealed before everyone’s eyes in their full glory.

Righteous and demonic crowd felt their hearts thumping in excitement but also turned cold at the scene. The immortal treasure was in front of them but how could they charge through such an enormous dog beast formation.

It could only be done if the righteous and demonic allied.

Those with experience all thought of this.

Xiao Mang looked at the demonic path’s direction and Mo Wu Tian also glanced at the righteous path.

It was clear they needed to ally, but they had to see which side would compromise first.

Time passed by minutes and seconds...

Chou Jiu calmly watched the dog beasts while Xiao Mang’s expression was solemn as he closed his eyes to recuperate. He was the young master of the grand Xiao clan, a famous figure among the righteous path, how could he lower his head towards the demonic path first? If words spread later, his reputation would have a great hit.

"The second tremor has gone, Ba Gui, my secret chess piece has showed its use and for a short time, they won’t attack. Let’s continue the refinement!" Fang Yuan summoned the land spirit.

While the righteous and demonic path were in a stalemate, Fang Yuan once again resumed the refinement.

At this moment, the blue smoke and the yellow light had finally blended with each other.

The blue smoke turned into beads of grass that floated in the air and started growing. The yellow light turned into flowers that fluttered and fell into the grass.

Fang Yuan took out a dagger and cut his artery, bleeding out his own essence blood.

Large amounts of essence blood infused into smoke. The blue smoke and yellow light immediately let out sizzling sounds and turned into a red cloud, like a wave of blood sea.

The blood surged and turned into a sphere that floated in the air without spreading.

After a round of evolution, the smoke sphere settled down and formed a field with abundant red wheat growing in it.

Fang Yuan let out a breath of turbid air when he saw this.

He had lost a lot of blood which caused his face to pale. He immediately used a Gu to heal his wound.

"Wild grass grow wildly, the qi of blood like the sea. Three hundred years as spring, five hundred years as autumn..." He took out a lifespan Gu.

This was a three hundred years lifespan Gu which looked like roots with rough texture, like a snake that was coiled into a circle.

Fang Yuan threw it into the smoke in blood field, the cloud of smoke immediate started raging like boiling water.

In previous life, this strange change had nearly caused Fang Yuan to fail. Now, however, Fang Yuan had was mentally prepared and easily controlled the situation. Under his control, the cloud of smoke gradually settled down.

However, right at this time, the land spirit suddenly warned: "Not good, those Gu Masters have started attacking together! There might not be time to refine Gu."

"No need to worry, everything is under my control." Fang Yuan coldly smiled and took out the second lifespan Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Killlllll..."

"Charge through!"

"Kill these goddamn dogs!"

Shouting, screaming, shrieking, cursing, dog barking, all these sounds merged into one, causing the ground to tremble.

The attack had just begun for ten minutes, but the mound was already overflowing with blood and corpses.

"Sir Chou Jiu, we are slow, with this kind of pace, when will we ever get into the bronze hall!" Mo Wu Tian urged.

Chou Jiu snickered: "The dog groups are huge, is it that easy to get through? It is better that we are slow, the righteous path will take on more pressure for us, we can benefit from the chaos better."

Chou Jiu was already Fang Yuan’s slave, his greatest wish is to continue stalling for time.

Earlier, the righteous and demonic factions were at a stalemate, but this Mo Wu Tian had to ruin it by finding Xiao Mang to cooperate. Chou Jiu could not stop him, he could only go with the flow.

After starting the assault, he tried his best to slow them down.

They had planned to attack from two directions, but because of killer ghost doctor’s manipulation, it caused the righteous faction to be further in the advancement, thus taking more hits. Meanwhile, the demonic path had less losses, but the assault’s momentum was slowly, they were in danger of being surrounded.

"Chou Jiu, what are you thinking of! You are too muddled, we have to charge with vigor, how can we move so slowly? You are old and confused, can’t you see? Our group is already in deep trouble, once our movement stops, we will be surrounded, we will be in greater danger than the righteous path!" Mo Wu Tian was stomping his feet in anger, shouting.

Chou Jiu stared with his eyes wide open, shouting back: "Mo Wu Tian, you junior, why are you screaming for nothing, what do you know? Doing it your way, how many people did we lose earlier! Later when we compete with the righteous faction for the immortal treasure, they will be our enemy, we have to weaken them!"

Saying so, Chou Jiu’s tone changed, consoling softly: "Oh young man, it is not wise to charge ahead recklessly."

Because of what happened earlier, the majority of the demonic Gu Masters supported Chou Jiu and objected to Mo Wu Tian.

Mo Wu Tian’s heart was furious, as he raised his head and screamed: "Old fool Chou Jiu, we have different opinions! You all can wait here and die, I am going to get my immortal treasure!"

Saying so, he moved ahead and charged towards the bronze hall.

Hu Mei Er, Li Xian and the others felt that Mo Wu Tian was right, they wanted to go ahead but their strength was insufficient, they could only go with the crowd.

"Youngsters are so rash." Chou Jiu sighed, then laughed: "Look, after being psyched by me, he is taking on the pressure for us. We will steadily move ahead, using the road that he paved for us, perfect!"

Everyone laughed, praising Chou Jiu’s brilliance.

Countless dogs formed into a wave, as thousands of Gu Masters resisted them.

Blood flowed and broken limbs flew. All sorts of Gu worms competed, like the dance of fire and ice, lightning exploded and soil was overturned, green vines grew endlessly.

Yi Chong’s body was covered in blue fish scales, black fins growing on his back with a light blue spiral wave around him. He seemed to have become a fearsome shark in the sea, charging ahead fearlessly.

Yi Huo turned into the god of fire, charging ahead as he slaughtered, everywhere he went, there was blazing flames and crying dogs.

Yan Jun used the phantom path Gu worm, turning into a hollow shadow as he evaded attacks again and again, safe and sound.

Li Xian used his rank five Gu and concealed his body while people were not noticing.

Kong Ri Tian turning into a rain of petals, floating in the sky.

The experts displayed all their abilities, getting close to the bronze hall. Among them, two were at the frontlines, and were the most prominent.

It was none other than Xiao Mang and Mo Wu Tian.

But good times did not last, Ba Huang and Ying Ming, the two dog emperors appeared, blocking their advancement like last time.

"It is time." At the frontlines, Tie Ruo Nan was bathed in blood as she stopped her footsteps, resting as she breathed heavily.

Tie clan’s four old-timers were guarding by her side, other than that, there was Tie Bai Qi.

"We are a few thousand steps from the bronze hall, there are many dogs here, it is up to you, Lord Tie Bai Qi." Tie Ruo Nan said.

"Hehehe, I have been watching the whole time, my hands are itching already!" Tie Bai Qi took off his hat, showing off the third eye on his forehead.

Pew!

He activated his Gu worm, pushing the space before him with both hands, forming a black hole.

The black hole continued to spin, as numerous white apes jumped out.

The white ape army gushed out, forming into a strong formation as it charged towards the bronze hall.

"Young master, go ahead. I will block them here." TIe Bai Qi’s tone was confident and powerful.

"We’ll be counting on you, the Immortal Gu is most important, for the clan, we have to arrest Fang Yuan alive!" Tie Ruo Nan gritted her teeth, waving her hand and bringing the Tie clan four old-timers and starting their invasion.

With the white ape army to cover for them and sacrifice, Tie Ruo Nan successfully made it into the hall.

Fang Yuan was still refining Gu, he could not do anything else!

Land spirit wanted to strike, but Fang Yuan stopped it: "Ba Gui, don’t force yourself! You have to control the dog groups while manipulating the immortal essence to assist me in refining Gu, how can you be further distracted? Bai Ning Bing, it will be up to you now, go block her!"

Bai Ning Bing snorted coldly, squinting her eyes as he blocked Tie Ruo Nan, engaging in fierce combat.

In the space before Fang Yuan, cloud smoke was moving violently.

In his previous life, he had already used third watch Gu by this time. But now, without Feng Tian Yu’s help, Fang Yuan’s progress was extremely slow, he had just thrown in the five hundred year lifespan Gu.

Without the refinement master Feng Tian Yu, Fang Yuan felt difficulty controlling the cloud smoke.

The cloud smoke reacted violently, causing Fang Yuan to almost fail several times, but he managed to salvage it every time.

Behind him, as Tie and Bai fought, Tie clan’s four old-timers joined in.

Bai Ning Bing could not rival them, as she fell into a disadvantage, shouting: "Fang Zheng, I can’t hold them back anymore, how long more do you need!"

The cloud smoke had finally absorbed the lifespan Gu, turning into the blood fields, golden wheat, filled with crops. It was the ’five hundred years as autumn’ scene.

Fang Yuan’s voice was nervous: "Hang in there, I need a lot of time!"

"If I die, you will not live too..." Bai Ning Bing cursed continuously.

Several moves later, Bai Ning Bing gasped roughly: "I can’t continue! Fang Yuan, I am going to self-destruct!"

"Your aptitude has already returned to a hundred percent?" Fang Yuan was startled.

"What do you think!" Bai Ning Bing cursed.

The cloud smoke was slowly maturing, dissipating. From a water tank’s size, it shrunk to a basin’s size.

"Try to hold on, unless you can’t control it anymore, don’t..." Fang Yuan shouted.

"It is too late." Bai Ning Bing sighed deeply.

Crack crack...

Frost quickly gathered, as the cold aura spread everywhere in the main hall and the temperature decrease rapidly.

"What Gu is this?" Tie Ruo Nan’s cry of surprise also reached Fang Yuan’s ears.

Fang Yuan turned his head with difficulty to look and saw the main hall already becoming a world of ice and snow. Bai Ning Bing was floating high up in the air, her whole body turning into ice crystal, similar to the situation when she had self-destructed back at Qing Mao mountain.

The cold wind blustered and glacier rose, crushing towards Tie Ruo Nan with vast and majestic force.

"Is this the legendary Northern Dark Ice Soul physique?" Tie Ruo Nan cried out in surprise. But it was already too late, she was sealed within the ice like an insect in an amber.

The ice continued spreading towards Fang Yuan.

"Bai Ning Bing? Bai Ning Bing!" Fang Yuan worriedly shouted, but there was no response from Bai Ning Bing.

Her body had almost become one with ice and her whole face had started turning indistinct. Her crystal like eyes no longer shone and had thoroughly dimmed.

"Damn it!" Fang Yuan cursed, standing up and sending the Yang Gu towards Bai Ning Bing.

But halfway, the Yang Gu made a u-turn, and returned to Fang Yuan’s right hand.

At the same time, the cloud smoke turned into a Gu worm, landing on Fang Yuan’s left hand.

This Gu was like a peanut shell, golden and dazzling, the markings on the surface resembles bright red blood traces.

Earlier, the fake second aperture Gu could only live for a week, and was not stable. But this new Gu could survive for forty years!

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan raised his head and laughed, using liquid metal Gu and blocking the frost.

Then he said to Bai Ning Bing: "Bai Ning Bing, have you acted enough?"

The frost came to a stop.

Fang Yuan laughed again, saying: "Did you have a good time cooperating with Tie clan?"

This time, Bai Ning Bing could not longer act, she turned back into flesh body and stared at Fang Yuan with a shocked and solemn suspicion: "How did you!"

"In Shang clan city, you purposely lost to Yan Tu, getting Doctor Su Shou’s help to remove the poison vow, and then secretly contacted Tie Ruo Nan. On San Cha mountain, you plotted together with the four old-timers... all these, did you think I was ignorant?" Fang Yuan played with the two Gu in his hands as he said.

Bai Ning Bing landed on the ground with a dazed expression, stunned beyond words.

"How did Fang Yuan find out all these? I was extremely secretive. This means, he was always watching coldly at my performance! Wait, I succeeded in planting the fixed star Gu though..."

"Fang Yuan, you demon, so what if you found out! You can’t escape today, there is nowhere to run!" Tie Ruo Nan saw that the matter was exposed and quickly broke out of the ice, as the four old-timers joined her.

Fang Yuan chuckled, raising his left arm: "You mean the fixed star Gu? What if I chop off my arm?"

Tie clan’s four old-timers frowned deeply.

Once Fang Yuan chopped off his arm, even if they used their killer move, they would only get his arm.

According to their understanding of Fang Yuan, sacrificing his left forearm was nothing to this cruel and wicked person.

"Hahaha!" Tie Ruo Nan suddenly laughed.

She pointed at Fang Yuan, shouting: "Fang Yuan, stop trying to deceive us! So what if you saw through our scheme? The dog group outside the hall cannot block the two factions. Soon, Xiao Mang, Chou Jiu, Mo Wu Tian, Yi Huo, Yi Chong and the others would charge in, can you defend the Immortal Gu?"

"You are a frenzied lunatic, killing so many Gu Masters and plundering their apertures to refine Gu. These crimes are unforgivable, Bai Ning Bing is the best witness! As long as we announce it to the world, you will be a wanted criminal everywhere. More importantly, your Immortal Gu is not done refining yet!"

"Do you still have a chance of succeeding? Impossible! You have no time left, not long later, this hall will be overrun by people, where can you run to? Try flying out? Hehe, you only way out now is to surrender to our Tie clan, and contribute that half-done Immortal Gu to us, as well as surrender the old clan leader’s Gu worms, and enter the Demon Suppression Tower for reform, that’s the only way you can keep your life."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Tie Ruo Nan took a step forward and looked with a gaze that was sharp as a knife: "Fang Yuan, you are a smart man, you should be clear of your situation!"

"I am indeed clear of my situation." Fang Yuan’s expression was tranquil: "And I am even more clear of your situation."

His lips revealed a trace of cold smile: "Immortal Gu refinement has indeed not finished, but this has let me preserve more portions of immortal essence, enough for me to kill you all!"

However, right at this time, Ba Gui appeared and spoke with a tearful expression: "No use, it is no use. There will be too much loss in immortal essence to kill them and the remaining amount won’t be able to support the Gu refinement. Furthermore, it is late now, there are too many holes in the blessed land and it will completely collapse and disperse into smoke not long later."

Its biggest obsession was to complete the refinement of second aperture Gu, it did not even care about its own destruction.

Right now, Fang Yuan had only refined to this stage and the crucial step still remained which was also the most difficult step; but the situation no longer allowed him to continue.

"Young man, you made a grave mistake in your calculations, our Immortal Gu refinement is a failure!" The land spirit howled in grief.

"Refining Immortal Gu? Never expected it to be so lively here." Yan Jun calmly stepped into the main hall.

In the previous life, he had been obstructed by Feng Tian Yu, but now with no obstructions, he walked freely into the bronze hall.

"Heheh, Fang Yuan, you are not the blessed land’s master, thus the land spirit will not completely obey your commands. Since young clan leader Yan Jun has arrived, the others also won’t be far. Today, your loss is certain." Tie Ruo Nan had some fear towards the land spirit and could only continue to engage in psychological battle.

"No, there is still hope, the Gu refinement can’t be considered a failure." Fang Yuan suddenly smiled.

He moved his gaze towards Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing’s heart tightened; if Fang Yuan used Yang Gu to force her to fight to the death, what course of path should she take?

However, Fang Yuan’s gaze moved past Bai Ning Bing and turned towards the land spirit Ba Gui.

This aged Ba Gui was looking awful right now after crying, appearing extremely broken-hearted.

"Ba Gui, do you still want to refine second aperture Gu or not?" Fang Yuan transmitted his voice.

"Could, could it be that you have some way?" Ba Gui suddenly felt a trace of hope: "That’s right, you are a reborn Gu Immortal, and with your previous life’s experience, you should have expected this situation right!"

"No, the situation is beyond my expectations. The current me is only a mortal and I am unable to make a difference." Fang Yuan said frankly, "Ba Gui, I have failed you, the Gu refinement this time is indeed a failure."

The land spirit started wailing even louder.

However, Fang Yuan immediately changed the topic: "But this failure is only temporary, we can still have hope."

The land spirit’s crying softened as it asked: "What do you mean?"

"After you die, I will be the only person who knows the recipe. The half-finished second aperture Gu is also with me, so Ba Gui, you must protect me."

"Of course I have to protect you! You are the only person who satisfied the requirements of the blessed land and are also a reborn Gu Immortal, there is a huge chance of the refinement of the second aperture Gu succeeding in the future even if it is a failure this time." The land spirit answered as a matter of fact.

"Good. it is is great that you have this understanding. However, you can only protect me for a period but not forever. Not long later, you will die. With the remaining immortal essence, we also cannot completely root out all the enemies in the blessed land. Even if you transport me to the outside world, there are many groups of Gu Masters on San Cha mountain." The corner of Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a sinister smile.

Since the rebirth this time, everything was going smoothly. As he inched closer to success, he could not help but feel a trace of excitement.

"Then how do you want me to protect you?" The land spirit asked.

Fang Yuan chuckled and said profoundly: "Ba Gui, do you remember the third section of the second chapter of the <>?"

The land spirit was dazed as it guessed Fang Yuan’s meaning, it said with hesitation: "You are saying... no, that won’t work, there are two conditions that are not fulfilled. First of all, you need the light of glory of the immemorial era."

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan laughed satisfiedly at this, he raised his hand and pointed to the top of the bronze hall and shouted, "Look, the light is here!"

From the moment he stood up, he had inwardly asked the land spirit to share its vision, thus the situation outside was very clear to him.

Afterward, the talk with the Tie clansmen and others were only delaying the time and waiting for a good opportunity.

This was already the third time Fang Yuan had used Spring Autumn Cicada and by accumulating his experience, he had an even deeper understanding of rebirth.

There was indeed a butterfly effect to the aftermath of rebirth that could cause some things to change completely. However, there was also historical inertia; many great events that occurred were conflicts that accumulated over time, they only lacked a trigger point. Even without the original trigger, a new one would always appear. This was not something a person alone could influence and change easily.

Outside the main hall.

Xiao Mang was getting impatient fighting with Ying Ming and flew to the sky.

Rank four, gather light Gu.

Rank five, extreme light Gu.

Rank five, river under the sun Gu.

Killer move — Torrential Light Stream!

The river of light rolled and crashed as it poured down towards the blessed land.

The light was blinding, and the waves were fierce, it turned the entire battlefield white, and everyone closed their eyes, unable to resist such a strong light.

"Not good!" Tie Ruo Nan and others were in the main hall, Tie Bai Qi tried to stop it when he saw this, but the light river’s formation was already complete and he could only reduce its impact by a little.

The grand light river was like a waterfall, crashing heavily on the bronze hall.

The roof of the hall was immediately broken through, and the light waterfall flew towards Fang Yuan.

"The light of glory of the immemorial era!" The land spirit cried out in shock.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly and poured his primeval essence into rank four bone wings Gu and rank five liquid metal Gu.

A pair of long and wide black wings spread out from his back, while the liquid metal covered his whole body like paint, spreading towards the black wings and dying his whole body with dazzling golden light.

"He, what is he doing?"

"Fang Yuan!"

In Tie Ruo Nan, Bai Ning Bing and the others’ astonished gazes, Fang Yuan flapped his wings and flew directly towards the river of light!

Bam!

There was loud buzzing in his ears and the formidable impact forced Fang Yuan backwards.

However, he had killed many rank five Gu Masters before and obtained many movement Gu like golden aurora Gu and so on. Right now, he activated them all and flew against the flow of the waterfall, flying higher and higher.

When he flew out of the bronze hall, it immediately attracted countless gasps and doubts.

"What is that thing?"

"It is flashing with golden light and looks like a large bird!"

"No, that is a person, a warrior that has been soaked in molten gold!"

There was only a vast sea of whiteness in Fang Yuan’s sight. His primeval essence was depleting rapidly by activating so many movement Gu and defensive Gu.

" Time and tide wait for no man , land spirit help me, divine travel Gu!"

Immortal Gu divine travel landed on his palm.

"Jade sky Gu!"

A ray of green light shot out from his aperture and landed on his hand, turning into a jade-green colored bamboo that was hollow in the middle.

"What in the world is he trying to do? He actually faced the killer move head-on and flew up!" Tie Ruo Nan stared with wide-opened eyes, expressing her shock.

"Did little beast king give up, and is trying to end his life?" Yan Jun’s jaws were wide open as he looked up in a daze.

"Something’s up, I understand him! Everything Fang Yuan does has extremely deep meaning! No matter what, we can’t let him have his way, we must disrupt this!" Bai Ning Bing’s tone was hurried and for some reason, the bad feeling in her heart continued to become stronger.

Tie Ruo Nan nodded and agreed with Bai Ning Bing’s words.

"Four old-timers!" She shouted.

"Understood!" The four old-timers immediately moved separately towards east, south, west and north directions; they kneeled on the ground and held their right wrist with their left hand, their right hands were spread out in a claw form and faced each other.

Killer move — Infinite search and lock!

Almost at the same time, Fang Yuan’s left arm shone with an eerie-blue light; one could vaguely see the fixed star Gu on it.

This Gu was a star fragment of the immemorial era, it was like an eight-sided diamond and was crystal clear!

At the same time, all around Fang Yuan, space tore apart and four chains appeared, moving like pythons.

"Finally reacting at this point? Hmph, too late!" Fang Yuan gave a cold smile.

Divine travel Gu suddenly flew and pierced into his left arm, swallowing the fixed star Gu.

The four old timers coughed out blood as they lost the connection with the fixed star Gu.

The four chains moving beside Fang Yuan also lost their target and flew about carelessly before they were destroyed by the river of light.

After the divine travel Gu ate fixed star Gu, it went into the hollow jade sky Gu and rapidly formed a cocoon.

"Huh? There is a strange person flying directly towards my killer move?!" Xiao Mang was indescribably shocked. Others often did not have enough time to dodge his killer move but now there was actually a fool who was facing it head-on!

"Who is this guy? What is he trying to do?" Yi Huo, Yi Chong and the others stared at the sky with stupefied looks.

"Wait a second, this scene, where did I see it before!" Li Xian frowned deeply, a ray of light flashed in his astute mind.

"How could this be, he seems to be... refining Gu?" Feng Tian Yu looked up for a while and after seeing somewhat clearly he immediately became shocked.

"He is actually refining Gu using the killer move, his courage knows no bounds!" Mo Wu Tian’s eyes shot out purple light that extended two inches into the air.

That’s right, Fang Yuan was refining Gu.

This was Fang Yuan’s plan.

When he enslaved killer ghost doctor, it was certain the second aperture Gu’s refinement would fail.

Because at the last step of merging with divine travel Gu, Fang Yuan was not able to accomplish it by just himself. Previously, he had the help of refinement path grandmaster Feng Tian Yu and the assistance of the land spirit, before he was able to barely finish it.

Now, he did not have Feng Tian Yu’s help, thus this step was destined to fail!

However, after rebirth, Fang Yuan had never truly thought of refining second aperture Gu.

He deceived the land spirit and intentionally delayed time to create such a special situation to convince the land spirit and refine this Gu.

Similar to the second aperture Gu, this Gu was also an Immortal Gu whose recipe was recorded in chapter two section three of <>!

<> was the first classic of the Gu world!

It appeared to be a story when one first read it but it actually held profound messages, recording the secrets of the ancient times and all kinds of Gu. Some Gu were directly described like wisdom Gu, strength Gu and so on. While some Gu were hidden, their descriptions were very vague, requiring the readers to dig through it and study carefully.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The light of glory of the immemorial era shone on the cocoon.

Absorbing the glory of the immemorial era, the cocoon was undergoing a mystical change.

Fang Yuan’s body was shining in golden brilliance, swimming up against the flow of the torrential light stream. Facing the strong killer move of a rank five Gu Master, liquid metal Gu’s defense was starting to become useless.

The golden protection was washed away by the light eventually.

Especially the bone wings, it slowly revealed its original black color after being washed by the torrential light stream.

In the grand waterfall of light, a lone body was flying with great difficulty while facing great pressure.

Such a mystical sight naturally attracted many Gu Master’s attention.

The battlefield slowly turned silent.

Land spirit assisted Fang Yuan fully, after the dogs lost their master, they scattered. All the Gu Masters stood on the spot, raising their heads and watching.

In their hearts, they had one question – “This scenario, I have obviously not seen it before, yet why do I find it so familiar?”

“I remember, I remember now!” Suddenly, someone shouted: “This scene was recorded in the legends of Ren Zu, that’s why it is so familiar!”

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, the number one classic in the world, spread throughout the world widely, no one was unfamiliar with it.

Getting such a reminder, many people realized at once.

“That’s right, this was recorded in Ren Zu’s second chapter, third section.”

“I remember now, Verdant Great Sun flapped his wings and bathed in the light of glory in order to refine fixed immortal travel Gu, flying towards the sun.”

People recalled, laughing immediately.

“What is this person doing? Copying Verdant Great Sun, and disregarding his life?”

“Haha, don’t tell me he is thinking of refining fixed immortal travel Gu?”

“How is that possible! He has divine travel Gu?”

Of course Fang Yuan had it!

But divine travel Gu was not enough, it was recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> – Verdant Great Sun was afraid that divine travel Gu would send him to dangerous places while he was drunk. Divine travel Gu was ashamed because of this, thus directing him: “Go up into the sky, and in the azure heaven among the nine heavens, there is a bamboo forest. Inside the bamboo forest, pluck a jade bamboo that is jade sky in color. Next, go to blue heaven and during the night time, collect the eight-sided diamonds inside the star fragments. Next, when it is dawn, fly into the sky and use the light of glory of the rising sun to turn me into fixed immortal travel Gu. Once I become that Gu, I will no longer send you to random places when you are drunk.”

Thus, Fang Yuan needed the a jade sky colored jade bamboo from azure heaven, and an eight-sided diamond star fragment from blue heaven.

And also, the light of glory of the immemorial era.

Did he have these?

Not at first.

But after rebirth, he killed Long Qing Tian and obtained jade sky Gu.

This Gu was rank five and originated from the immemorial era. It was like a dark green bamboo stem, palm size and hollow in the middle, giving off a texture of jade on the surface.

This was the azure heaven’s jade bamboo!

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> described all sorts of Gu. Immortal Gu were described as they were, like wisdom Gu and strength Gu. Mortal Gu were written more obscurely, the readers needed to look into them and researched carefully.

But the jade sky bamboo was not enough, he needed the eight-sided diamond star fragment.

Did he have it?

Of course not, but Bai Ning Bing planted it on him!

Indeed, the fixed star Gu.

This Gu was a star fragment from the immemorial era, looking like a diamond with eight sides, it was planted on Fang Yuan’s left forearm, giving off starlight, able to project a half-transparent eerie blue light from his arm.

So now he had the jade sky bamboo and the eight-sided diamond star fragment, but to refine fixed immortal travel Gu, Fang Yuan needed one final condition — that is what the land spirit mentioned — the light of glory of the immemorial era.

Did Fang Yuan have this?

From start to end, he had never obtained it.

But Xiao Mang had it.

Xiao Mang controlled an extreme light Gu, this Gu was obtained by robbing graves, it was an incomplete Gu. It could only be used three times every month to unleash the light of glory. Once it exceeded three times, it would self-detonate.

And torrential light stream was a killer move that, in some aspects, replicated the light of glory.

Divine travel Gu, jade sky Gu, fixed star Gu, as well as the light of the immemorial era, all the conditions were fulfilled!

When Fang Yuan rebirthed and realized this, he discarded the second aperture Gu in his heart, changing his objective to refining the fixed immortal travel Gu.

But it was impossible to convince the land spirit.

The land spirit’s obsession was to refine second aperture Gu.

Thus, Bai Ning Bing, Tie Ruo Nan, and the righteous demonic factions became Fang Yuan’s tools!

He calculated meticulously in his heart, controlling the flow of events as he swayed them in his favor, causing this result. When the land spirit realized that no matter what, the second aperture Gu would not be refined successfully, it would change its goal to protecting Fang Yuan, as that is the only way hope remains.

The cocoon absorbed the sunlight, trembling slightly as the aura of an Immortal Gu leaked out uncontrollably.

Everyone was flabbergasted.

“Such an aura, how is this possible?!” Tie Ruo Nan, Bai Ning Bing and the others were staring with their eyes popping out.

“He is refining Gu, he is really refining an Immortal Gu?! Who is he? Is he the reincarnation of Verdant Great Sun?” Yi Huo, Yi Chong, and the others were staring with their jaws dropping.

“Fixed immortal travel! Is he really refining fixed immortal travel Gu? To think that I, Feng Tian Yu, would get the see the birth of an Immortal Gu!” This refinement master kneeled on the ground emotionally, tears overflowing on his face.

In the blessed land, the few remaining hairy men all kneeled down.

This moment, they were idolizing this person refining an Immortal Gu!

Unbelievable.

An event of the immemorial era was unfolding before them…

An unimaginable grandness and beauty caused many Gu Masters’ bodies to shook. Was it excitement, fear, or both?

At once, Fang Yuan’s figure was the center of everyone’s attention.

No matter how glaring the torrential light stream was, everyone’s eyes were wide open, staring without blinking.

The Immortal Gu’s aura became more intense, but at this crucial moment, something happened.

“Trying to use my power to refine an Immortal Gu? Hmph!” Xiao Mang was no fool, after realizing this, he immediately stopped his killer move.

The torrential light stream ended!

Everyone gasped loudly.

“NOOOO!” Feng Tian Yu screamed, his heart pained as he showed grief and despair.

In his vision, the torrential light stream was like a cut ribbon, flowing down weakly, with just three breath’s time, the Gu Master in the light waterfall would be freed. Such a short time was not enough to birth an Immortal Gu.

But why would Fang Yuan not anticipate this?

Third watch Gu! Third watch Gu!

He activated two third watch Gu targeting the cocoon.

At once, time accelerated by nine times, as the Immortal Gu’s aura surged!

“He used two time path Gu worms to accelerate time?” Feng Tian Yu got up like he was jolted with lightning, his eyes glowing as his face turned red, there was still hope?

But immediately, his red face turned pale, as Feng Tian Yu plopped on the ground with a dejected expression, crying: “It is useless, the acceleration is only a temporary measure, if the Immortal Gu is created too quickly, it will not be able to stabilize its aura, and will be destroyed through self-detonation…”

But was Fang Yuan ignorant about this?

He took out a Gu worm.

This Gu had an plain appearance, like a grey stone disc.

In his previous life, he obtained it from Feng Tian Yu, this time, he got it from killer ghost doctor Chou Jiu.

What Gu?

Undefeated hundred battles!

Undefeated hundred battles Gu!, rank five expenditure Gu, once used, it allowed a Gu Master’s refinement to succeed for sure!

The next moment, Feng Tian Yu was stunned, grabbing his head and screaming in great joy: “How can this be!”

Because he felt the Immortal Gu’s aura stabilizing like a miracle!

The cocoon broke open, and a green butterfly flew out — fixed immortal travel Gu!

“It truly is an Immortal Gu!”

“Beautiful beyond words…”

“Who in the world is he, he actually refined an Immortal Gu?!”

At once, everyone’s hearts were pounding, regardless of whether they were aware or unaware of the circumstances, they were speechless and shocked to their limits.

Xiao Mang was stupefied, Mo Wu Tian was in a daze.

“Is this the re-enactment of a legend?”

“What era am I living in?!”

Fang Yuan flew out of the light waterfall, as fixed immortal travel Gu flew around him. Each time it flapped its wings, green light flickered like pollen, it was a beautiful sight.

Of course, Fang Yuan paid a huge price.

A rank five killer move was not a joke, liquid metal Gu died, golden aurora Gu and the others were greatly damaged. The black wings on his back were torn and tattered.

As the liquid metal faded, Fang Yuan’s identity was revealed.

At once, a commotion burst out.

“Who is he?” Mo Wu Tian’s pupils shrunk.

“It, it’s him, little beast king!” Hu Mei Er and Li Xian were shocked.

“It’s him!” Yi Huo’s eyes were popping out.

“It is actually him?!” Jiao Huang and Meng Tu looked at each other, trembling, feeling each other’s shock, after-fear, and joy. They had the guts to assassinate such a strong foe? A man who can refine an Immortal Gu?!

“Fang Yuan…” Bai Ning Bing, Tie Ruo Nan and the others who knew the situation witnessed this miracle with their own eyes, watching like a still statue.

Hundreds of thousands of years ago, during the immemorial era, Verdant Great Sun flapped his wings, refining an fixed immortal travel Gu.

But now, Fang Yuan was doing the same, using his mortal body to accomplish such a grand feat under everyone’s observation.

Once this matter spread, his name would be renowned throughout the continent, shocking the whole southern border.

“You really succeeded in refining fixed immortal travel Gu, incredible! As expected of a future Gu Immortal.” Fang Yuan could hear land spirit’s praise and sigh.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Fixed immortal travel Gu can allow a Gu Master to roam the world, going anywhere he wanted. But it is still an Immortal Gu, your help is needed, to activate it using immortal essence.”

Ba Gui: “Of course. There is still some immortal essence left in the cauldron, recall in your mind where you want to go, you should choose a safe place. Remember, the image in your head has to be the same as the real place, there cannot be too big of a difference.”

“I understand that.”

Ba Gui sighed, speaking wholeheartedly: “Using the fixed immortal travel would allow you to escape this predicament, but without immortal essence, the blessed land will be destroyed immediately. Death is a relief for me. I just wish you would succeed in refining second aperture Gu in the future, and do not waste this opportunity. Before we part, do you have anything to say to me?”

Fang Yuan opened his mouth, but no words came out.

He moved his tattered black wings, flying in the sky and looking around.

The torn bronze hall, the mound battlefield overflowing with blood, and the ruined Gu Immortal blessed land…

Goodbye, Bai Ning Bing.

Goodbye, Tie Ruo Nan.

Goodbye, Southern Border.

The land spirit did not know that Fang Yuan was about to take a an even greater risk. But life was a gamble, if one did not gamble when they had the chance, when would they succeed?

If man did not have aspirations as grand as heaven, they would be letting down their eight feet body! 1

Thinking like this, Fang Yuan felt great ambition and aspiration, his heart boiling with anticipation. Standing before everyone, he felt an urge and expressed it as a poem.

The people present heard him recite –

Since ancient times land immortal pass with the wind, today three kings return to eternal slumber.

Who would not experience failure? Verdant Sun died regretfully. Start over again and proclaim oneself as King.

The carp swims up the heavenly waterfall, travelling alone in the desolate lands and defying heaven.

Spreading my wings and flying away today, becoming an immortal and whipping the phoenix on another day!

As he said so, Fang Yuan laughed loudly.

Everyone was speechless.

Only the land spirit shouted: “Grand aspirations, I will send you on your journey!”

Immortal essence entered the fixed immortal travel Gu, and jade light flashed, as Fang Yuan vanished from the air.

Only his clothes were left, floating in the air like a kite with its strings cut.

“He vanished!”

“He used the fixed immortal travel Gu, I wonder where he went.”

“Ah! Why is heaven and earth shaking?”

Everyone was stunned.

At this time, intense winds blew as mountains broke, the world was collapsing. Loopholes after loopholes were formed, connecting to the outside world.

“Damn it, escape quickly.”

“The blessed land is collapsing, the winds of assimilation is coming!”

“If we do not escape now, we will die, I do not want to die!”

The experts were frightened and shocked, frantically escaping as San Cha mountain went into chaos once again.

…

Central Continent, Tian Ti mountain.

In Hu Immortal blessed land, on Dang Hun mountain, the battle for Hu Immortal blessed land was reaching its end.

“Fang Zheng, hang in there, victory is within reach!” Lord Sky Crane encouraged.

The skin on Fang Zheng’s arms and legs were torn, as blood flowed down.

He surpassed Ying Sheng Ji, Xiao Qi Xing, his body was numb from pain, and his brain was unable to think, there was only Dang Hun mountain left in his mind.

Being the first to ascend, he only had one thought left in his mind.

“I am the great Feng Jin Huang, how can I lose here? I have never lost since I was born, this time is no exception! Come out, dream wings!”

Feng Jin Huang shouted, and a beautiful pair of wings grew from her shoulders.

This pair of wings was extremely elegant and beautiful, all sorts of lights shone on it, it was dazzling and alluring, with just one flap, Feng Jin Huang ascended easily.

“What?”

“This is…”

“The legendary Immortal Gu – Dream Wings!”

The nine Gu Immortals were shocked.

Most Immortal Gu could only be used with immortal essence. But dreams wings were different, it used the Gu Master’s spirit and soul instead.

Feng Jin Huang was only a mortal, activating the dream wings forcefully would cause severe damage to her soul, amnesia at best, becoming retarded at worst.

But Feng Jin Huang was competitive, she wanted victory, willing to pay any price!

Under Fang Zheng, stunned gaze, she overtook him, taking back her head.

The dream wings were folded back as Feng Jin Huang stood at the side of the cliff, breathing heavily, she felt a strong dizziness from the depths of her soul, almost causing her to faint.

She reached her limits.

Forcefully activating an Immortal Gu, it was not easy for Feng Jin Huang to reach this step.

“I actually lost!” Fang Zheng stared with wide opened eyes, dejected and upset.

Feng Jin Huang’s arms were already at the edge of the peak, she was one step away!

“I, I am about… to win!”

At this moment, Feng Jin Huang forced herself to raise her head, using the last bit of strength she had.

Her eyes were glowing like amber, her beautiful appearance and her snow-white long neck, was shining like jade in the blessed land’s pink light.

She was like a young phoenix, expanding its wings for the first time.

Brilliant and glorious!

At once, even Gu Immortals were dazed.

Fang Zheng raised his head to look at her, as Hu Immortal land spirit stared at her in a daze, everyone was waiting for Feng Jin Huang’s victory.

Feng Jin Huang did not let everyone down, she bit her lips, placing her arms at the edge of the cliff.

Next, she used her remaining strength to drag her body up as well. But at this moment!

Swoosh!

Jade light flashed, and a man appeared on the mountain peak.

This man was completely naked, his left forearm had a hole as blood flowed out of it. His youthful body, was strong and muscular, giving off the aura of a veteran expert who had undergone countless battles.

“Brother?!” Fang Zheng was shocked, slipping and falling down the cliff.

The ten Gu Immortals were shocked. Who, who is this naked man?!

Feng Jin Huang raised her snow-white neck, looking at Fang Yuan from his feet, stunned and watching with her eyes wide open like a statue.

Fang Yuan’s body was muscular, the giant monster on his lower body entered Feng Jin Huang’s vision without any doubt.

"I really came here? Tsk, fixed immortal travel Gu has such a weakness, it cannot transport clothes along with me. But thankfully, I placed my Gu worms inside my aperture, and brought them along.

Fang Yuan looked around, realizing his situation.

"Eh? Isn't this person below me Feng Jin Huang?"

It seems <<Biography of Feng Jin Huang>> gave an accurate time. He was a step before her, this competition did not ban Immortal Gu worms, according to the rules, he was Hu Immortal blessed land's owner!

"I succeeded, all my risks paid off. So what if I failed to refine second aperture Gu? Now I have something better, the entire Hu Immortal blessed land, and fixed immortal travel Gu! Hahahahaha…" Fang Yuan laughed crazily in his heart.

"Unfortunately, she has the Immortal Gu dream wings, I can't kill her yet." Fang Yuan looked at Feng Jin Huang regretfully, before raising his right foot.

Under the ten Gu Immortal's supervision, his right foot landed on Feng Jin Huang's face, as a jade-like feeling could be felt on his feet.

"Scram." Fang Yuan pushed, and kicked the weak and dazed Feng Jin Huang down.

Feng Jin Huang was already out of strength, how could she resist Fang Yuan's kick, she immediately descended.

Fang Yuan turned around, facing the land spirit.

"Little Hu Immortal, aren't you calling me you master?"

"Ma… master…" The little girl stared at Fang Yuan, shocked.

After she reacted, she used her small tender hands to cover her large crystal clear eyes.

Next, she lowered her head, her face red with shame, as she stomped her foot, shaking her head, saying meekly: "Master, aren't you shameful, you are so old already, quickly wear some clothes!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Nine days later.

Atop of a lush green mountain valley, a small waterfall flowed downwards like a strip of silvery silk.

The waterfall's stream flowed into an ancient lake. The ancient lake was deep and dark jade in color, with ripples on the surface of the water.

In the pond, all kinds of carp were swimming about.

On the top of a white rock beside the water, Feng Jin Huang sat with her eyes closed.

Her face, bright and beautiful, was reflected in the water, causing this ancient lake to gain a brilliant elegance. The colorful carps in the water, the clear pool water, the silvery waterfall, and the green valley all complimented each other.

However, Feng Jin Huang’s pretty brows were deeply scrunched.

Although she has tried her best to calm down, every time she closed her eyes for more than thirty breaths, an image flashed in her mind from the depths of her heart.

On an illustrious pink crystal mountain peak, a naked man looked down at her with his black eerie pupils.

She was sprawling on the edge of the cliff, and when she looked up, she saw everything on the man’s body.

His bleeding left arm with a bloody hole, his strong muscles, his broad chest, and the massive thing between his legs... the image was engraved into her heart.

The memory was so vivid that the events of that day could never be forgotten by this proud woman.

Especially since afterwards, the man stretched out his right foot and stepped on her face!

Feng Jin Huang wanted to forget the feeling of being trampled on her face, yet the feeling was so vivid that she could clearly recall it even now.

"Forget it, Forget him! Keep a peace of mind, peace, peace of mind, calm down..." Feng Jin Huang breathed more and more rapidly.

Her breathing became heavier, and her chest moved rapidly as a result, and was becoming faster.

In her heart, shame, humiliation, and hatred mixed together, turning into a volcano.

"How dare he? He dared to do that to me! Ahhh!" Feng Jin Huang could not bear it anymore, and suddenly opened her phoenix eyes and stood up abruptly, raising her head and screaming.

Boom!

The volcano in her heart erupted, filling her chest with anger, almost melting her entire body!

"You are a despicable and shameless man, you dared to step on my face. I want to tear you to pieces!" Feng Jin Huang roared, her eyes glowing with fire as she punched randomly.

Bam Bam Bam Bam...

The loud smashing sound, like the sound of thunder, erupted continuously.

Feng Jin Huang’s eyes exuded fire, the beautiful flames evaporated the ancient lake and burnt the green hills around her. She punched without a target, as her frenzied barrage sent the surrounding mountain rocks flying, as the ground cracked!

After almost a few short breaths, Feng Jin Huang completely decimated the valley. Such terrifying battle strength, even if ten Fang Yuan attacked together, he could not reach such a power level.

"Ahhhhhhh!"

"This scoundrel!!!"

"I want rend your flesh, limb by limb! I want to step on your bones and crush them into pieces! I'll make you suffer for seven days and seven nights!"

"I swear, I'll make you to suffer endless pain, I want you to die and regret everything you have done to me. Then, I'll turn you into ashes and scatter you into the wind!"

Feng Jin Huang bellowed without stopping, the anger in her chest making her lose all rationality.

...

A few hundred miles away, there were grass cottages built on a mountain peak.

Through the window of the cottage, a pair of beautiful eyes stared at Feng Jin Huang, looking worried.

"Oh, my little Feng Er..." Inside the cottage, a beauty was dressed in white silk adorned with a green belt. She was dignified and elegant, bearing a resemblance to Feng Jin Huang.

She was the biological mother of Feng Jin Huang, Fairy Bai Qing, a rank six Gu Immortal!

"Stop looking. You have already watched her for seven or eight times the during the last ten minutes. The jade sea tide tea that I carefully brewed for you is getting cold by now, go sit down and drink it." Feng Jiu Ge sat by her side, helplessly saying.

"Drink, drink, drink, all you care about is drinking tea. Is Feng Jin Huang even your daughter? As her father, aren't you worried at all?" Bai Qing turned around, her brows were wrinkled and her tone was resentful.

"Sigh! Our daughter, Feng Er, had always been competitive since she was a child. Her talent was excellent, and no one was her match in her sect, but suddenly she stumbled and lost. Hu Immortal Inheritance was the first failure of her life, but it is also the most important. You are her father, but you're actually still in the mood to drink tea here?"

"Nevermind the failure, what's more important is, Feng-Er suffered such a huge loss! She actually got trampled by someone! Think about it, Feng Er is proud and had never paid attention to any man her age. Yet she was beaten in such a way, with someone's foot on her face, and for the first time, saw a similar aged man's body. This, this..."

The more Fairy Bai Qing talked, the more anxious she grew, and her eyes slowly turned red.

Feng Jiu Ge looked at her and immediately got up, getting to her side, holding her in his arms. He frantically comforted her: "Don't cry, don't cry my Qing Er. Isn't your husband still here? In fact, in my opinion, this event was not without benefits."

"Oh? What good is there?" Bai Qing casted a doubtful gaze at him.

"Sigh, Feng Er is our pride and joy, I'm proud of her yet also worried. She's too competitive and always wants to get first place. Yes, her talent is higher than mine, and she also has great comprehension abilities, but so what if her talent is higher, is it higher than all the heroes in the world? No matter how good her talent is, can it compare to Desolate Ancient Moon?" Feng Jiu explained in earnest.

"The great Desolate Ancient Moon, daughter of Ren Zu, failed countless times. Feng Er had always experienced success and victory but had never understood the taste of failure. This is one of her defects, and also her weakness."

"Qing Er, you are a rank six Gu Immortal, and I am a rank seven Gu Immortal, but even if it was a rank nine Immortal Venerable or Demon Venerable, they can only live long, but not forever. We are able to protect Feng Er now, but one day we will leave her. By that time, she will only be able to rely on herself. Experiencing this failure will help her mature."

"Birds leave the nest and fly alone. After they withstand setbacks, they can train their wings and fight in the sky. In the future, when Feng Er leaves us, we can be relieved."

"Feng Er is my baby, I would love nothing more than to protect her inside the blessed land forever..." Fairy Bai Qing leaned on Feng Jiu Ge’s chest as she wiped her tears.

She sighed and said: "Sigh, you are right, Feng Er will leave us one day, we should let her train more. But this is too much, she had lost too much this time. Hu Immortal Inheritance was lost, she was even bullied by that Immortal Crane Sect lad, are you as her father not going to do anything about it?"

"Hmph." Feng Jiu snorted, squinting as his eyes shone with a cold light: "Immortal Crane Sect went too far indeed, even though they had promised to compensate us and the other eight major sects. But Feng Er is my daughter, how she can experience such bullying? I have already written a letter and it has been sent to them. If this He Feng Yang does not know what’s good for him, I will go to their sect to find him and settle the score!"

Fairy Bai Qing’s heart eased, it turns out that her husband had already acted. But immediately, Bai Qing was nervous and looked at her husband: "Husband, don’t be rash, don’t make a huge commotion. Back when you attacked the top ten sects, Immortal Crane Sect was also one of the victims. They know that you’re the strongest, but don’t do this kind of thing again."

"I know, I know. Haha, you can be at ease." Feng Jiu Ge calmed his wife lying in his arms, his eyes subconsciously squinting as he snorted in his heart: "Out of the top ten sects in central continent now, none are worthy of facing off against me."

...

South of the Central Continent, thirty thousand feet above the mountains.

In the sky, Fei He mountain was floating among a sea of clouds, looking magnificent and grand.

Trees were swaying on the mountain as ten thousand cranes flew by, giving off a living atmosphere of an Immortal’s residence.

Currently, in Shang Qing pavilion at the top of the mountain, it was a heavy and grim atmosphere.

"Feng Jiu Ge has gone too far!" The supreme first elder was staring furiously, his hands clutching a thin letter as he trembled with anger.

With a bang, he slammed the letter on the white jade stone table.

In the letter, Feng Jie Ge listed several overbearing demands. But despite so, supreme first elder did not dare to destroy or burn this letter.

This letter was shining with an azure green color, it was the transformation of the rank five letter sending green bird Gu. Once destroyed, Feng Jiu Ge would sense it, if he became furious, the situation would become troublesome.

This guy, Feng Jiu Ge, was born into the demonic path. In the past, he obtained a rare opportunity and cultivated painstakingly, soundlessly reaching rank six Gu Immortal realm. Once he came out, he amazed the world as he challenged all the heroes in the world, and no one could stop him. The ten sects sent people to challenge him, but they all lost terribly, forced to join forces to resist him.

Feng Jiu Ge, was not afraid, fighting as he travelled for over ten million miles, suddenly changing his tactic and going for the yellow dragon, causing the ten sects to lose miserably. The scene was total chaos and there was nothing anyone could do.

Fortunately, Fairy Bai Qing from Spirit Affinity House moved him with true love, finally reforming this demonic head.

"Back in the day, Feng Jiu Ge used his rank six cultivation and caused a commotion among the ten sects, it was unimaginable. Now, he has rank seven cultivation and has Spirit Affinity House, one of the ten sects backing him. This person has the demeanour of a heavenly immortal, although his requests are slightly overbearing, we can agree to it." Supreme second elder took out the letter, reading it and said with a calm tone.

"He Feng Yang, how can there be such a huge mistake in this matter you were in charge of? That Fang Yuan is not our disciple at all, what motives do you have, defending him like this?" A thunderous voice echoed in Shang Qing pavilion, causing the windows to vibrate.

The person speaking was Lei Tan, rank six Gu Immortal, and was at loggerheads with He Feng Yang.

Places with people have conflict, Immortal Crane Sect also has their conflicts and competition among factions.

At once, all the gazes fell on He Feng Yang.

He Feng Yang was like a young man, gentle like jade. A pair of jade colored brows extended to his waist.

His expression was calm, looking around slowly, then laughed and said: "This Fang Yuan is indeed not our disciple, but his brother Fang Zheng is one of us, the leader of the elite disciples of this generation."

Lei Tan snickered: "A tiny elite disciple’s relative, he is worth our backing, the entire Immortal Crane Sect?! He Feng Yang, do you know how much compensation we will have to give to the nine sects for this Fang Yuan?"

"Of course I know." He Feng Yang glanced at Lei Tan, laughing in disdain: "But these things, even if you multiply it by three, can’t compare to a Hu Immortal blessed land. Not to mention a fixed immortal travel Gu?"

At once, many of the supreme elders understood.

"He Feng Yang! What are you trying to say?" Lei Tan frowned, asking impatiently.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

He Feng Yang only smiled without replying Lei Tan’s question.

It was supreme third elder who laughed and replied: "I understand Elder Feng Yang’s intention. If we didn’t choose to shield this Fang Yuan, Hu Immortal blessed land would still be up for grabs for the ten sects. However, by admitting that Fang Yuan is a member of our Immortal Crane Sect, we have eliminated the other nine opponents, letting only our Immortal Crane Sect seize control of this blessed land."

Lei Tan’s gaze flickered and his expression slightly changed, but he no longer asked any questions.

At this moment, He Feng Yang stood up from his seat.

He first cupped his fists towards supreme third elder who explaining the reason: "Third elder is wise! Things happened too suddenly, who could have thought a mortal would use the Immortal Gu fixed immortal travel to appear the peak of Dang Hun mountain and inherit Hu Immortal blessed land in front of everyone."

"This Hu Immortal inheritance is at Tian Ti mountain. Everyone might know Tian Ti mountain is the stairs that connects to the heavenly court. Even though it was destroyed and had been abandoned for many years, it still represents the might of the heavenly court. In a way, attacking Hu Immortal blessed land is attacking Tian Ti mountain; and attacking Tian Ti mountain is attacking the heavenly court."

"Thus, although there are many blessed lands on Tian Ti mountain, there has never been anyone who had the courage to attack it. Even this time, we waited for Hu Immortal blessed land to open before we ten Gu Immortals joined forces to enlarge the passage, with no intention of attacking."

"Even if we really attacked Hu Immortal blessed land, the blessed land has a land spirit which would require at least three rank six Gu Immortals to join hands and even then they might not succeed. Moreover, the control area of the blessed land is being protected by Dang Hun mountain. Without five or six Gu Immortals cooperating earnestly, who would dare to say they can climb to the peak? Lei Tan, can you?"

Lei Tan snorted, he wanted to retort but kept quiet in the end.

In blessed lands, the land spirit could freely mobilize all the resources and their battle prowess could be compared to a Gu Immortal. The most important thing was that the land spirit could suppress rank one to rank five Gu worms.

If a Gu Immortal wanted to attack the blessed land, their most powerful weapon would be Immortal Gu because land spirits could not restrict Immortal Gu.

However, Immortal Gu were hard to find and many Gu Immortals did not even have one Immortal Gu. Even if they had, it might not necessarily be suited to attack.

This was the classic situation of low offense but high defense.

If they were set on attacking the blessed land, it would often require the cooperation of several Gu Immortals to create a numerical advantage, and then competing through the expenditure of immortal essence. Once the blessed land’s immortal essence was exhausted, they could start their attack.

However in truth, unless it was some special situation, Gu Immortals rarely attacked blessed lands.

Because it was really not worth it.

Not only was immortal essence precious and hard to accumulate, there was also the danger of the blessed land self-destructing.

In the case where the land spirit could not defend and chose to destroy the blessed land, the winds of assimilation would blow over and destroy everything, causing the attackers to have no gains.

When Gu Immortals attacked blessed lands, they would often gain nothing and instead suffer heavy losses. Unless it was a matter of deep hatred, nobody would agree to do such a transaction that only created loss.

Seeing that Lei Tan was keeping quiet, He Feng Yang continued: "That Fang Yuan ascended to the peak and got the inheritance, immediately commanding the land spirit to close the blessed land. Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng looks almost the same, the Gu Immortals of the other nine sects realized this and subconsciously thought this was our Immortal Crane Sect’s hidden move and questioned me one after another. At that time, I thought that if I were to say the truth, the Hu Immortal Inheritance’s belonging would be undecided once again as the ten sects would still compete and fight over it. Thus, I acknowledged it, and even if we had to pay such a price for it, we have eliminated the other nine great sects from the competition. Like this, we can secretly strategize about Hu Immortal blessed land without worrying about other forces."

He Feng Yang explained the whole story, Lei Tan snorted and asked: "There is a big problem in this plan! Hu Immortal blessed land is on Tian Ti mountain and is also closed now, without attacking and creating a loophole, how can we enter?"

He Feng Yang laughed, it seems he already predicted this: "How could I not have any plans? Blessed lands face calamities and tribulations; Hu Immortal died during the fifth earthly calamity. I have already calculated the time, Hu Immortal blessed land will face the sixth earthly calamity in a year and three months’ time. Fang Yuan is only a mortal, how could he know how to resist the earthly calamity? Even with the help of the land spirit, without a sect’s support, the blessed land will suffer heavy damage at that time and a loophole will appear."

Lei Tan scoffed: "Even if there is a loophole, do you dare to attack? Didn’t you say just before that Hu Immortal inheritance is on Tian Ti mountain!"

He Feng Yang instantly replied: "Forcefully attacking is a terrible move and we will only use it if all else fails. That Fang Yuan is only a mortal, as long as a loophole appears and we use some plans and schemes, is there a worry of failing to capture him? Hehe, once the earth calamity passes, he will definitely start worrying and thirst for external help. I have already planned it, first we use Fang Zheng and use the kinship to move and persuade him into cooperating for some transactions. As we make more transactions, his guard against us will naturally loosen, and using logic to persuade him, we might just convince him to join Immortal Crane Sect!"

"If he keeps on being stubborn, we can use some secret methods. Slavery Gu is one good method. There aren’t many ways to deal with the land spirit, but there are plenty of ways to deal with a mortal like him. If we can obtain fixed immortal travel Gu like this, then it is no doubt the perfect outcome."

The elders present felt a rush of excitement at the mention of fixed immortal travel Gu. Many began to whisper and discuss with each other; the outcome He Feng Yang portrayed was truly beautiful. Most importantly, his plan had a chance of success.

Lei Tan could feel the change in the atmosphere as he sat down in anger: "You speak nice words, let’s hope it goes our way."

Supreme third elder mumbled: "Besides special Gu like dream wings Gu that needs to be activated using the soul, most of the other Immortal Gu need immortal essence to activate, and this fixed immortal travel Gu is not an exception. This Fang Yuan has fixed immortal travel Gu and with the help of land spirit to use the blessed land’s immortal essence, he can escape any time he wishes. We need to be very careful to deal with him. Furthermore, there is one point to note, he is but a mortal yet he possesses an Immortal Gu, he should have a rather deep background."

He Feng Yang nodded: "Junior has already thought of this point. Back then, when I claimed Fang Yuan was our sect’s disciple, I checked the reactions of the other nine sects. It seems that not one of the Central Continent’s nine sects are behind him. I am guessing, since Fang Yuan came from Southern Border, he is very likely to have a super clan of Southern Border behind him. But be it Wu clan, Shang clan, Tie clan, Yi clan or other super clans, they are all situated far at Southern Border and cannot help him here. If they were to enter Central Continent, their battle strength would be suppressed. Our Immortal Crane Sect is one of the ten great sects of Central Continent, we have a huge chance of winning against them."

All the elders nodded at these words and started another round of soft discussions.

"Indeed, a mighty dragon cannot suppress the local snake."

"Central continent is our Immortal Crane Sect’s territory!"

"If they were to make a move, hmph."

"Even if their battle prowess was not suppressed, our Immortal Crane Sect is still stronger than any super groups of the four other regions by a mile."

Third elder’s furrowed brows relaxed: "There is one doubt remaining. To use fixed immortal travel Gu, the user needs to have a vivid memory and clear understanding of the terrain he teleports to. Fang Yuan is only a mortal from the far away Southern Border, how could he know the scenery in Hu Immortal blessed land? And how could his timing be so precise? Could it be, Hu Immortal had once set an inheritance in Southern Border? Or it could be one of the tricks of Tian Ti mountain’s demonic path Gu Immortals?"

He Feng Yang bowed: "Junior is also not clear about this. This matter is strange, originally, there was only a clue about the blood sea inheritance. At that time, one of our sect disciples defected and fled to Southern Border. A few years ago, I sent Lord Sky Crane to Southern Border to clean up and trash and bring back the inheritance. But Lord Sky Crane failed and instead it was Fang Yuan who obtained the inheritance, gaining blood skull Gu. This kid is very ruthless and sinister, unexpectedly killing all his clansmen on the spot and used blood skull Gu to raise his aptitude. Lord Sky Crane was unresigned and brought back Fang Zheng for future plans to retrieve the Gu.

He Feng Yang naturally had never have expected a nobody to so outrageously disrupt his plan back then, causing such a huge problem for him.

This was a weird feeling.

It was as if person was walking on the road, when suddenly a small ant jumped on their nose and started scratching it.

Where did this ant come from? Such guts!

The person could just crush it with their finger but because of the peculiar situation, they were not able to catch the ant and could only let this ant feel triumphant for the time being.

"Not this blood sea inheritance again..." Hearing He Feng Yang narrate the whole story, the elders present frowned, their heart turned irritated.

Blood Sea inheritance came from a big shot of the demonic path, Blood Sea Ancestor.

He killed people like cutting grass and his infamy had gone down in history. With the might of a rank seven Gu Immortal, he had unexpectedly set up hundreds of thousands of inheritance sites that spread over Central Continent, Southern Border, Northern Plains, Western Desert and Eastern Sea.

Before his death, he had laughed and proclaimed: "Blood path is not lonely, my mark will remain for all eternity!

Now, just like he proclaimed, countless mortals had benefitted. Blood sea inheritance was already proclaimed as the most popular inheritance with the greatest number in the world. There was no competition! Countless righteous path figures were getting headaches because of it.

"Didn’t that Xue Tu who was only a butcher, become a famous demonic cultivator after obtaining blood sea inheritance?"

"Years ago, Myriad Dragon Dock’s Song Zi Xing obtained one of the true blood sea inheritances and defected his sect, causing great humiliation to our ten great sects. Now, he is already a rank seven Gu Immortal with the title ’Blood Dragon’. To kill this defector and wipe away their humiliation, Myriad Dragon Dock dispatched eight Gu Immortals - five rank six and three rank seven. The result was he killed four of them, crippled three of them and beat one into retreating!"

"It is said that Blood Sea has nine true inheritances. They are: blood skull Gu, blood handprint Gu, blood qi Gu, blood sweat Gu, menses blood Gu, blood shadow Gu, blood battle Gu, as well as the ancient desolate beast violent blood dragon bat and finally, the rank six Immortal Gu blood deity. He was truly someone who achieved great success in blood path..."

"Speaking of which, four true inheritances of the Blood Sea Ancestor had already shown up. One is blood skull Gu which is with Fang Yuan. Another is blood handprint Gu which is with Southern Border’s current Shang clan leader. Violent blood dragon bat is with Song Zi Xing."

"It is said that Shang clan leader has already obtained the second blood sea inheritance..."

"That is only an unconfirmed rumor, there is no evidence to conclude it."

The elders whispered to one another.

"Alright, there is no need to talk about blood sea true inheritance. It is like searching for a needle in a haystack, all kinds of rumors are increasing day by day. My ears are already getting callus from hearing them." Supreme Grand Elder waved his hand and immediately put a stop to the discussion.

He turned his gaze towards He Feng Yang: "Elder He Feng Yang, since you brought up this method, then you shall be in charge of it. If you are able to seize the blessed land and establish your merit, the sect will not be stingy in rewarding you."

"Junior understands!" He Feng Yang accepted the order with a smile.

Seeing He Feng Yang gain such a lucrative task, Lei Tan felt stifled, but since it was Supreme Grand Elder who said so, he could only hide his hatred inside.

However, Supreme Grand Elder added: "Since you are in charge of it, then Elder Feng Yang, you should hand over your one’s own way Gu, right? In Feng Jiu Ge’s demand, he had asked for an Immortal Gu. You are the person in charge of this matter, so you should be the one to settle this."

Lei Tan was immediately joyous.

He Feng Yang could only accept the order with a bitter smile.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes.

All he saw before him was a blur pink color, as his vision gradually returned, he saw a thin silk curtain.

A light wind blew, the chimes rang, the light pink curtain slowly swayed, making it feel like a dream or illusion.

Fang Yuan slowly got up from his bed.

This round bed was extremely large, forty to fifty people could fit on it.

A silk blanket that was red on the bottom with golden rims was covering his body.

Fang Yuan looked around and found himself in a large bedroom.

There was a stove beside the bed, burning some incense. There was a fragrance that arouses people’s feelings in the air.

This room was made with golden brick walls, silver bricks were used on the ground. Beside the bed, the corners of the room, tables and chairs, dressing table, all of them had large amounts of pearls, agate, diamonds and all sorts of precious gems.

The room was grand and elegant, luxurious and glorious, the affluence of the previous owner was emanating in the room.

This was Hu Immortal’s Dang Hun Palace.

"It is a gentle home." Fang Yuan commented lightly, getting down from his bed.

His body shook uncontrollably, as his brain was still dizzy.

Fang Yuan did not find it strange, instead he understood clearly — this was because he had forced himself too much back on San Cha mountain.

Bai Ning Bing’s betrayal, the pressure from the two factions, and he even had to scheme against the land spirit. First refining second aperture, then refine the fixed immortal travel Gu in the torrential light stream. The entire process was accompanied by the mental pressure of taking a risky gamble. To Fang Yuan, be it his body or mind, they had reached their limits.

When he used the fixed immortal travel Gu to arrive at Dang Hun Mountain, Feng Jin Huang and Fang Zheng were at their limits, but so was he.

Compared to them, Fang Yuan’s mental pressure was greater. Spring Autumn Cicada could no longer be used, and he had snatched the Hu Immortal Inheritance right in front of the ten sects’ Gu Immortals, he was trying to pull the teeth out of a tiger , like playing with fire, it was an extremely dangerous move!

Fang Yuan was the first to ascend the mountain, and the land spirit chased the other competitors away. After Fang Yuan officially became the blessed land’s owner, he ordered the land spirit to close the entire blessed land.

After instructing the land spirit with a few key points, Fang Yuan relaxed at a safe area, falling asleep instantly.

"Just how long did I sleep..." Fang Yuan shook his head, he still felt extremely tired, there was a sense of weakness coming from his soul.

At the same time, his ears were buzzing, as his brain could not think as quickly as normal. It was difficult to process questions in his head.

"Oh no, I injured my soul." Fang Yuan’s heart sank, sensing his condition was not looking good.

The main reason was became of the Immortal Gu refinement.

Were Immortal Gu so easily to refine? Many Gu Immortals would suffer a backlash when making a mistake while attempting to do so, injured at best, death at worst.

Fang Yuan used a mortal’s body to refine an Immortal Gu. The main reason was because the recipe was good, originating from Ren Zu’s tales. Secondly, the materials used were appropriate, focused on the divine travel Gu, looking from another angle, it was simply converting divine travel Gu into fixed immortal travel Gu.

It was not like in Fang Yuan’s previous life, where he used a large number of mortal Gu to refine the Immortal Gu Spring Autumn Cicada. Turning from mortal to immortal, the difficulty was a hundred fold.

"Even so, the foundation of my soul was too weak and got injured. But thankfully, this is Dang Hun mountain..." Thinking so, Fang Yuan’s expression turned solemn, as he said lightly: "Where is the land spirit?"

Swoosh, Hu Immortal land spirit appeared before him.

"Master, you are finally awake." Hu Immortal lowered her head, her face was red as she looked at her feet, speaking in a meek tone.

She had the appearance of a five to six year old girl, she was cute and young. With a colorful dress, and a snow-white fox tail behind her, swaying to express her unease.

"Master, when you were sleeping, I acted on my own accord and healed the injury on your left arm. I wanted to bring you clothes but what we have here are not your size." Hu Immortal land spirit reported.

The clothes she mentioned was Hu Immortal’s clothing, they were women’s clothing, of course Fang Yuan could not fit in them.

Fang Yuan frowned: "Clothing is not important, how long have I slept? During this period, did any strong enemies attack the blessed land?"

Hu Immortal’s eyes were large and shining, blinking: "Master, during the seven days you were asleep, nobody attacked."

"Oh?" Fang Yuan’s eyes shone.

He did not know that Immortal Crane Sect’s He Feng Yang defended him, blocking the assault of the other nine sects.

But he understood somewhat why no Gu Immortals attacked the blessed land.

Hu Immortal blessed land was not like the three kings blessed land on San Cha mountain.

This blessed land was still very young, it had a land spirit and ample immortal essence storage, and even Dang Hun mountain as the core protection of the blessed land.

These three elements made Hu Immortal blessed land as secure as a fortress, most Gu Immortals had no way to force their way in.

How hard was it to attack this blessed land, Fang Yuan knew most clearly!

Five hundred years into his past life, he allied with almost ten demonic Gu Immortals, invading this place. Eventually, he had a narrow victory, only he and Song Zhong were left.

Song Zhong was the son of Song Zi Xing, a rising star of the demonic path, he has not been born yet.

"Back then, I was already a senior of the demonic path. Song Zhong inherited his father’s inheritance, gaining great strength and was able to fight with me for tens of rounds without a winner emerging, causing him to rise to fame from that battle."

Thinking of his past life, being used as a stepping stone for this junior Song Zhong, Fang Yuan snickered continuously.

"Everything’s changed now. I’ll find a chance to kill Song Zi Xing, hehe, let’s see how you’ll come into this world."

Song Zi Xing had one part of the blood sea inheritance, it was the ancient desolate beast violent blood dragon bat. This dragon bat is not a Gu worm, it can be captured and taken away.

"With the violent blood dragon bat, I will gain an endless number of blood bats. Manipulating blood bats was one of my greatest skill in my previous life. Of course, that is a plan for the future. Now, I have to rely on this blessed land to cultivate quickly, getting back to my Gu Immortal stage!"

Thinking so, Fang Yuan thought of an important question: "Land spirit, how long more till the next earthly calamity?"

"Master, I was about to inform you if you did not ask me. Right now, the blessed land has already endured five earthly calamities, the sixth is a year and three months away." Hu Immortal’s voice was filled with anxiety and worry.

"What? A year and three months!" Fang Yuan jumped up from his bed, unable to sit any longer, his face turning grim.

Everything exists in balance, heaven is impartial. Strength comes with weakness, blessing comes with calamities. Blessed lands have calamities and tribulations, an earthly calamity every ten years, and a heavenly tribulation every hundred years.

Not mentioning the heavenly tribulation but just the earthly calamity; once it occurs, the might is overwhelming, often causing great disasters, if the blessed land cannot endure it, they will face destruction.

Fang Yuan had a blessed land in his previous life, he was extremely clear of the danger of his current situation!

To a blessed land, every earthly calamity is a strict test. Earthly calamities get stronger than the one before, Hu Immortal died in the fifth, and Fang Yuan was about to face the even stronger sixth calamity.

"There are only a year and three months left to the earthly calamity. Why was it not mentioned in Feng Jin Huang’s biography? That’s right, she is a disciple of Spirit Affinity House, her parents are both Gu Immortals, with their help, it is not hard to block the earthly calamity. But to me, this is a grave situation!"

The sixth calamity is coming too quickly, even with Fang Yuan’s experience, he would not have time to make ample preparations.

Other than that, he still had to guard against external enemies.

"Under everyone’s watchful eye, I snatched Hu Immortal blessed land, although the tens sects have not made a move, they are surely waiting to pounce on me. I understand now, the ten sects are waiting for the earthly calamity, and want to make use of it?"

Once the earthly calamity descends, the land spirit will have to face it with everything she had, she would not have time to take care of this master. Fang Yuan was still rank four upper stage, he was easy to target. Once he dies, the blessed land would be ownerless, and the land spirit will have to find a new master.

If the earthly calamity causes a huge loophole, Gu Masters outside would be able to enter at will. If the ten sects find trouble then, it would add on to his problems, and the situation would certainly turn deadly.

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone, because his soul was injured, it caused his head to hurt.

He rearranged his scattered thoughts, and breathed out deeply, deciding: "I’ll take a look at the situation, make the best preparations for this earthly calamity. If I fail, I will give up the blessed land and order it to self-destruct, not giving the righteous path any resources for free, then escape using fixed immortal travel Gu."

Although the blessed land was good, how could it compare to his safety?

With such a thought, Fang Yuan called the land spirit to bring him outside, he needed to know more about the blessed land now.

"Yes." Land spirit nodded obediently, but hesitantly added: "Master, you do not like clothes? Actually, wearing nice clothing would make one feel more energised, and you will feel happier too."

Fang Yuan: "..."

The dresses in Dang Hun palace was not for Fang Yuan to wear. But he had stored some spare clothing inside the tusita flower.

After changing into a black robe, Fang Yuan followed the land spirit, going up on the stairs and reaching the mountain peak.

Dang Hun montain’s winds were very strong.

But land spirit waved her hand, and it turned into a soothing breeze.

"Master, this blessed land has 4000km2 of land. The flow of time is five times. The 4000km2 of land is mostly grassland, the grass is made up of blue degree grass, water chestnut grass, and six divine grass primarily, there are also seven treasure flowers and milk tea flowers etc."

The land spirit introduced as she drew a virtual image, floating in the air for Fang Yuan to see.

In the image, there was a classic grassland, with all sorts of colors, like a grass carpet right before him.

The blue and poisonous blue degree grass, the chestnut shaped water chestnut grass, six divine grass which looked like six thin leaves with the feeling of jade. And also the seven colored seven treasure flower, the cup shaped milk tea flower filled with nectar that were like milk tea.

With these seven as the main, there were also a lot of weed and wild flowers.

Fang Yuan looked as he nodded.

Do not look down on these grass and flowers, they are cultivation resources.

These seven types of grass and flowers were Gu refinement ingredients. Some of the flowers and grass even has wild Gu worms. With 4000km2 worth of land, compared to Earth, that was one and a half Hong Kong added together. How many Gu would there be in total?

These wild Gu worms were extremely easy to catch. With just a command from Fang Yuan, the land spirit would be able to capture them intact and hand it over to Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan asked: "Then how many Gu are there in the blessed land now?"

The Hu Immortal land spirit raised her head by a bit: "At present, there are over eight hundred and sixty thousand rank one Gu, with about fifty-two types of them. Over a hundred and thirty thousand rank two Gu, with forty-eight types. Five thousand rank three Gu, with twelve types. Only over sixty rank four Gu, with eight types. And only one rank five Gu - fox skin Gu."

After Hu Immortal died, her obsession did not disappear and combined with this land’s heavenly power to form into an unusual existence known as the land spirit. In some way, it could be said to be a continuation of her life.

Thus, the land spirit was the representative of this blessed land and was clear about everything in the blessed land.

As Fang Yuan had become the master of the blessed land now, everything in the blessed land was his.

Over eight hundred and sixty thousand rank one Gu, hundred and thirty thousand rank two Gu; these two combined meant nearly a million Gu worms!

Fang Yuan recalled the time in Qing Mao mountain, those days where he had to scheme and fight for two to three rank one and rank two Gu.

A blessed land could only be created by a Gu Immortal, it was the foundation of their wealth, a heavenly estate. Just this Hu Immortal Blessed Land alone could supply for a super clan. There would not be any problem to put five or six small-mid sized clans like Gu Yue clan here!

As for the Gu worms in the blessed land, their quantity sharply decreased at rank three. Rank four Gu worms did not reach hundred and there was only one rank five Gu.

This situation was also natural.

It was the same with Gu Masters.

Rank one and rank two Gu Masters were extremely common, rank three were already rare, rank four were even fewer, and only one or two rank five Gu Masters might appear among a million people.

This was a pyramid distribution; the quantity reduces the higher you go, and the ones who occupied the top were extremely few in numbers.

"This blessed land is still young and with appropriate managing, the quantity of the Gu worms will still increase. Reaching ten million rank one and two Gu will not be difficult. But whether I can raise them properly or not, it depends on the types and quantity of the rank four and rank five Gu." Fang Yuan calculated.

Mortal Gu Masters would usually only raise five or six Gu, while Gu Immortals could raise a million or even ten million Gu worms. The difference between the two is as far as the clouds were from the mud.

These Gu being raised in Hu Immortal blessed land could only be considered passable.

On one hand, the numbers were little, being only about a million. On another hand, the Gu were not elites. From the introduction Fang Yuan got, they were all ordinary Gu. If they were changed to Gu like liquor worm or breath concealment Gu, their value would be much higher.

Even the rank five fox skin Gu was an extremely common defensive Gu; it was effective against wind and water path Gu worms, but was difficult to use in complex battlefield. Fang Yuan did not even take a look at it.

The thing that really moved him was the time in the blessed land.

Time flowed five times faster in Hu Immortal blessed land. That is to say, one day in the outside world would mean five days here.

This meant Fang Yuan’s cultivation speed would be five times faster in the blessed land! He could cultivate for a year and three months here when only three months would have passed in the outside world.

With this, Fang Yuan’s cultivation speed would surpass most Gu Masters and he would have greater initiative for his future plans.

Naturally, there was a huge disadvantage to this. Fang Yuan’s lifespan was only about a hundred years, thus with this, he would age five times faster as well.

The land spirit continued with the introduction: "At present, there are about a thousand groups of fox living here; red fox, golden fox, cloud fox, wind fox, autumn fox, flowing light fox, and so on. The three largest groups of foxes each has about eight hundred thousand foxes. Altogether, there are about four million and seven hundred thousand foxes."

Fang Yuan quietly listened to it and nodded his head.

Three groups of myriad foxes meant three myriad beast kings. The development of the beasts in the blessed land had still not reached a level of creating a beast emperor.

The classification of beasts was simple. From low to high, they were hundred beast king, thousand beast king, myriad beast king and beast emperor.

For example, Ba Huang and Ying Ming of three kings inheritance were two beast emperors with battle strength that could match rank five Gu Masters; they were able to temporarily obstruct Mo Wu Tian and Xiao Mang’s advance.

"There are a lot of fox groups, but unfortunately they are all common foxes and not mutated beasts." Fang Yuan inwardly evaluated.

Ordinary beast’s worth naturally could not compare with mutated beasts. Examples would be comparing boar and thunder boar; green bull and kunlun bull; wild dog and lion mastiff.

Above the mutated beasts were desolate beasts; above desolate beasts were ancient desolate beasts and immemorial desolate beasts.

Song Zi Xing’s violent blood dragon bat was an ancient desolate beast, one of the nine true inheritances of Ancestor Blood Sea. Immemorial desolate beasts were recorded in <>, an example would be the nine-tailed fox.

"Raising a nine-tailed fox in Hu Immortal blessed land is but a dream. Even raising an ancient desolate beast is impossible. If it is ordinary desolate beasts like hurricane fox or phoenix wings fox, raising one or two of them could be feasible but it would greatly depend on luck." Fang Yuan continued to consider.

Since he had obtained Hu Immortal blessed land, his plans after rebirth had reached a whole new level, thus he had to revise and modify them.

At this time, Jia clan’s internal strife should have already stirred like a wildfire and he would not be able to participate in it. He also could not participate in the great battle of Yi Tian mountain. Fang Yuan intended to make full use of this Hu Immortal blessed land and cultivate to the realm of Gu Immortal. This meant that he not only had to resist the continuous earthly calamities but also had to manage the blessed land.

Currently, the Gu worms were barely passable and the foxes might be ordinary but they had the potential to grow.

"Actually, there were a lot more fox groups in the blessed land. At least, three times more than the present. But the second earthly calamity caused a meteor fire rain that smashed the blessed land’s east area into ruins, burning hundreds of thousands of foxes to death; the dark flames of that time have not been extinguished even now. The fourth earthly calamity was a huge flood that submerged most of the grassland of the blessed land’s northern area, killing many more foxes. Thus, there are only this many remaining at present." The land spirit pursed her pink lips, her eyes revealing fear and panic as she talked about the earth calamity.

At the same time, she waved her small hand and smoke flew to the air, showing the scenes of the eastern and northern parts of the blessed land.

Fang Yuan could see: The eastern part was a scene of ruin with dust and smoke pervading the whole place. There were meteoric craters all over the place, and black flames were burning around the craters. The flames burned without emitting the least bit of sound, but this manifested an even more terrifying aura.

And the northern part was a scene of vast clear water. Dark clouds rumbled in the air and rain fell endlessly. The surging water emitted bleak and gloomy sound. There were bits of grass and destroyed flowers, along with fox corpses floating on the water.

"These are the dark flame meteor and clouded white sea calamities." Seeing such a bleak scene, Fang Yuan could not help feeling gloomy.

The might of an earthly calamity was extremely strong, moreover there were countless types of calamity, and were simply impossible to plan against.

Every ten years, the earthly calamity would pose a destructive threat towards the blessed land. Hu Immortal defended for five times before losing her life. And the devastation the previous earthly calamities left were still there and had not been cured.

This was a really bad news to Fang Yuan.

Hu Immortal Blessed Land has an area of 4000km2, but northern and eastern areas were gone, causing the loss of over 1300km2 of area. Such loss was truly disastrous.

"I must settle these two problems. Apart from anything else, a lot of Immortal Essence will be used in order to suppress the burning black flames and the spreading flood." Fang Yuan mumbled in a soft voice.

However, following immediately, Hu Immortal land spirit mentioned an even worse news.

"Master, the biggest trouble is here. Look, this is what was left from the fifth earthly calamity." She waved her hand and the image changed to show a different scene.

Fang Yuan saw a scene of scorched black prairie, and a human figure formed from blue lightning was sitting cross-legged on the ground.

It’s physique was not big and looked quite alluring, however it was formed purely from lightning. The glorious blue light let out an extremely terrifying might!

"Human shaped lightning, this is the earth calamity — blue charm lightning shadow!" Fang Yuan drew in a cold breath.

This human shaped lightning was one of the earth calamities; it was extremely strong and could match a rank six Gu Immortal!

Fang Yuan looked at this scene and immediately realized the killer that killed Hu Immortal was probably this blue charm lightning shadow!

Hu Immortal was an enslavement path Gu Master who controlled fox groups. Enslavement path was strong but also weak, and could very easily be subdued by beheading the leader tactics. Although there were many fox groups, they could not obstruct blue charm lightning shadow. In the end, Hu Immortal had to fight the lightning figure in close combat and lost her life.

"Damn it, how could there be this lightning shadow in this blessed land?" Fang Yuan’s expression turned extremely unsightly.

He had ways to slowly settle the previous two troubles. However, this human shaped lightning was already beyond his current ability.

"Master, you need to be careful when you roam around later, this human shaped lightning strolls randomly around the blessed land. Only Dang Hun Mountain, it dares not approach." The land spirit’s pink and delicate face was bathed in the image of the blue lightning, her voice slightly shaky.

"This lightning is an earth calamity but is also a type of living thing. Since it is a living thing, it has a soul and thus if it approaches Dang Hun Mountain, its soul will receive shockwaves until it turns to ashes." Fang Yuan had already settled his mind now.

"Maybe I can use Dang Hun Mountain to settle this lightning shadow? But how can I lure it?" Fang Yuan’s thoughts took a turn, however the next instant the buzzing noise echoed in his ears again.

He shook his head and did not continue thinking.

"Are there any other bad news, tell them all at once." He gave a bitter smile and asked the land spirit.

The situation was much worse than what he imagined. Hu Immortal blessed land was in imminent crisis; whether it was the internal worries or external aggression, they were both very grave.

As for Feng Jin Huang - with Gu Immortal parents and also the help of Spirit Affinity House - she naturally did not need to worry about these things.

But Fang Yuan was just a lone force.

Naturally, there were benefits that only a lone force could have. In the biography of Feng Jin Huang, it was recorded Feng Jin Huang had to offer a large amount of resources to her sect after obtaining the blessed land.

The land spirit shook her small head. She had already reported the worst situations, remaining were all good news.

First of all, in the southern area of the blessed land lived a tribe of rockmen.

Rockman was a type of variant humans who lived underground and ate ore as food.

This news was an unexpected surprise to Fang Yuan.

Secondly, there was abundant immortal essence in Hu Immortal blessed land.

The land spirit brought Fang Yuan to the palace in Dang Hun Mountain. In the deepest parts of the palace was an enormous golden bowl which was filled with green immortal essence.

Besides the green liquid in the bowl, most of the Immortal Essence had automatically congealed into a ball. At first glance, it looked like a grape.

This was something only rank six Gu Immortals had — green grape immortal essence!

Each green grape immortal essence pearl contained immortal essence that was much more than the immortal essence in the three kings blessed land.

"With this immortal essence, there is still quite a bit of hope!" Fang Yuan finally breathed in relief.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan counted, the golden bowl had seventy-eight pieces of green grape immortal essence. Adding in the layer of blue-green immortal liquid essence at the bottom of the bowl, it amounted to seventy-eight pieces and a half.

There was ample immortal essence, a hundred times that of the three kings blessed land.

Fang Yuan took out one bead of green grape immortal essence, holding it in his hand, willing and summoning fixed immortal travel Gu.

Fixed immortal travel Gu was like jade, a meticulously crafted butterfly, it was brilliant and elegant, flying over smoothly.

Fang Yuan’s face paled as his body shook, cold sweat emerging on his body as his vision turned dark. If he was not holding onto the golden railing at the side, he would have fallen.

"Master, be careful. Your soul injury was severe, do not summon an Immortal Gu so carelessly, otherwise you would fall into another coma." Little Hu Immortal shouted, her tone anxious and her expression concerned.

"No worry, I know." Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, waving his hand as he spread his palm for fixed immortal travel Gu to land.

fixed immortal travel Gu sensed the green grape immortal essence’s aura and fluttered its wings, gliding in the air and landing in Fang Yuan’s palm.

Next, it laid down on the green grape immortal essence and slowly consumed it.

Fixed immortal travel’s name contained an "immortal" word, that was not for show. Its food was immortal essence.

A moment later, one green grape immortal essence was expended.

Gu Masters refine Gu, use Gu, and nurture Gu. After Fang Yuan succeeded in its refinement, he had not fed the fixed immortal travel Gu yet.

He slept for seven days and seven nights, the fixed immortal travel Gu was starving and its lustrous wings had dimmed.

This was Fang Yuan’s first feeding session for it.

After fixed immortal travel Gu had its fill, it spread its wings and flew in the air. The bright green light appeared again, like dust particles in the air, every time it flapped its wings, it would be a beautiful light show. The unique aura of an Immortal Gu continued to radiate.

"Immortal Gu are expensive to feed, fixed immortal travel Gu consumes an entire piece of immortal essence every time! But after this, I would not need to feed it for six years."

The higher the rank of the Gu worm, the heavier the cost to feed it, but the interval between each feeding session would increase greatly as well.

Rank one and two Gu worms needed to be fed every few days. Rank four were fed one a few months. Rank five were fed every one or two years, and each time they ate, it would be extremely expensive.

Aftering feeding fixed immortal travel Gu, Fang Yuan left it alone to roam Dang Hun palace, as long as it did not leave Dang Hun mountain and get killed by that lightning shadow.

At this moment, Fang Yuan’s aperture was still rank four upper stage, it could not contain a perfectly healthy Immortal Gu.

The reason he could keep Spring Autumn Cicada was because it was too weak. Other than that, it was also his vital Gu.

Problems are classified into important and trivial, after understanding his situation, Fang Yuan confirmed that he was safe for the time being. After settling fixed immortal travel Gu’s matter, he had to fix his soul’s injury next.

"Let’s go, little Hu Immortal, go find the gutstones with me."

"Yes!" Land spirit answered quickly: "Master, you should’ve done this long ago, come with me."

Little Hu Immortal brought Fang Yuan to Dang Hun mountain.

The two moved on the uneven mountain rocks, Fang Yuan’s body was swaying, causing the land spirit to feel worried: "Master, shall I teleport you over?"

"Teleport for what? We have to save immortal essence!" Fang Yuan stared with wide eyes.

Little Hu Immortal stuck out her tongue, frightened by Fang Yuan’s words, thinking: This master is so domineering, even if he is injured, he is still so scary.

"Master, there is a gutstone here." After walking for a while, land spirit stopped and pointed at a rock below her feet, shouting.

This stone was like a person’s gallstone, it grew on the mountain rocks, having mixed colors. If one did not look properly, they would think it was an ordinary stone.

Fang Yuan quickly walked over, squatting down and smashing this gutstone with his hand.

Once the stone shattered, a Gu flew out and turned into a grey eerie light, entering Fang Yuan’s body.

Fang Yuan felt his brain turning clear, a new type of strength had entered his soul, and the buzzing in his ears had lessened.

Dang Hun mountain could shook souls, it was the death grounds of all living beings. It was only because of the land spirit’s suppression that Fang Yuan could move around with ease.

But Dang Hun mountain was not a simple death ground.

The souls of living beings break into pieces on the mountain, scattering and fusing with the mountain. As time passes, gutstones are formed.

And in some gutstones, guts Gu are found, it could strengthen a person’s soul.

This is like how the resting place of a poisonous snake has the herbs to create an antidote. All living beings compete, and the world is fair; where there is life, there is death.

Dang Hun mountain might look like an absolute death ground, but a chance of survival was hidden in it.

But this guts Gu can only exist for an instant, after that, it would either disperse or be broken down by Dang Hun mountain again. Although the land spirit can suppress the mountain, the gutstones cannot be moved, they can only be used on the spot. Thus, Fang Yuan had to go there himself and walk around Dang Hun mountain.

After being rejuvenated by this guts Gu, Fang Yuan was like a thirsty traveller in the desert getting a mouthful of fresh water.

He continued on his way, and with this land spirit acting as a dutiful guide, they found another dozen gutstones, smashing them open one by one.

Thus, Fang Yuan gained another eight guts Gu to replenish his soul. Not only did his injuries heal completely, it even improved compared to before.

"Hahaha, with this Dang Hun mountain, I have a mountain of gutstones. As long as I continue to consume guts Gu, one day, the foundation of my soul will reach a stage where no one has ever gotten to!"

Standing at the mountain waist, Fang Yuan became spirited as he laughed loudly.

Hu Immortal was a lucky person, because of an opportunity, she managed to obtain Dang Hun mountain, like she won lottery, and moved it into her blessed land.

But she was an extremely unlucky person, dying during the fifth earthly calamity.

"If it was not for the blue charm lightning shadow, she would eventually become the strongest enslavement path expert! Unfortunately, Hu Immortal only had Dang Hun mountain, but did not manage to use it for herself. But fortunately, this Dang Hun mountain is mine now!"

The most valuable part of Hu Immortal blessed land was this Dang Hun mountain!

Of course, the soul could not be strengthened endlessly with guts Gu. Once the soul was not concentrated enough, using large numbers of guts Gu would cause it to over-inflate and trigger a certain-death disaster.

But Fang Yuan had his five hundred years of experience, all his ups and downs after rebirth, constantly struggling at death’s door, his soul was already tempered like steel!

Keeping calm at the face of death, a heart of ice at impending doom.

To Fang Yuan, a few hundred guts Gu was no problem at all.

There were a lot of benefits and implications in having a strong soul foundation. Be it refining Gu or enslaving beasts, it would make it much easier. Other than these, once the soul becomes stronger, Fang Yuan would not have to worry about killer moves like Mo Wu Tian’s purple eyes.

Dang Hun mountain is a forbidden ground, first appearing in <>.

Legend says that Verdant Great Sun flew towards the sky, and ended plunging to his death.

Ren Zu, as his father, was extremely upset after receiving the news, finding wisdom Gu for an explanation.

It was wisdom Gu who taught Verdant Great Sun to drink, causing the series of events thereafter.

Wisdom Gu quickly said: "Ren Zu, oh Ren Zu, don’t find trouble with me. Although your son died, it is not impossible to revive him. As long as you enter the door of life and death, and lead him towards the road of life, walking under the sunlight, he would be revived.

Ren Zu was shocked, before becoming overjoyed, and then extremely furious.

He grabbed wisdom Gu and questioned: "Wisdom Gu, oh wisdom Gu, do you still think I am that ignorant boy from before? The door of life and death is a dangerous place, once I enter I will never be able to leave. After harming my son, you want to kill me too?"

Wisdom Gu quickly said: "Other living beings do not know the secret of the door of life and death, thus they cannot leave. But I can teach you all of these secrets."

"You are a living person, to enter the door of life and death, you have to enter from the road of death. This road is extraordinary, it was the road left behind by destiny Gu when it left fairness Gu. The road left behind was called path of destiny. There are many suffering Gu inside the path of life, you have to enter from the road of death, and you need to own courage Gu. That way, you will not fear the torture of suffering."

"When you enter the door of life and death, and see fairness Gu, you are already dead. But at the same time, you will see your eldest son, Verdant Great Sun’s soul. You will bring him away, and go out from another road, the road of life. Road of life was the path treaded on by destiny Gu when it visited fairness Gu, it is also called the path of destiny."

"But during this path, you will meet three obstacles. One is Dang Hun mountain, another is called Luo Po valley, and lastly the reverse flow river. To climb past Dang Hun mountain, you have to smash the gutstones on it, and obtain guts Gu’s help. To get past Luo Po valley, you need to find faith Gu to help. To get through the reverse flow river, you have to move forward continuously, not stopping for even a second during the process."

Ren Zu heard wisdom Gu’s words and let it go.

He quickly found faith Gu.

Ever since he became blind, faith Gu’s light was the only light he could see.

"Oh Ren Zu, I can feel your determination in getting back your eldest son. I am willing to help you, but I urge you not to give up on this goal. Because when you give up, I will leave you for good." Faith Gu said with concern.

Ren Zu found courage Gu next.

Courage Gu and hope Gu were good companions.

Ren Zu had hope Gu, and thus saw courage Gu occasionally, he had a decent relationship with it.

After getting courage Gu’s help, Ren Zu came to the door of life and death, entering the road of death.

The road of death was pure darkness, the large number of suffering Gu were like yellow fireflies, swarming towards Ren Zu. At this time, courage Gu shone brightly, chasing away the suffering Gu for Ren Zu.

Courage was needed to face death.

Ren Zu succeeded in going down, his body turned whiter as it turned hollow, gradually turning into a ghost.

He could "see" again.

When he got to the end of the road, amidst the calm darkness, he saw fairness Gu.

He was extremely shocked by fairness Gu’s huge body, exclaiming: "You are fairness Gu? Why is your body so huge? A mountain is a speck of dust compared to you. The sea is like a droplet compared to you."

Fairness Gu’s voice was grand: "Life and death are the greatest fairness in this world, when I am inside the door of life and death, my body will become enormous. Oh Ren Zu, you are here for your son right. Feel free to go, he is right there."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ren Zu was overjoyed upon seeing his son and ran towards him.

Verdant Great Sun had turned into a white ghost and was lying beside a lake, scooping out the water with a bowl and drinking it.

The water was like wine with its fragrance pervading the area.

Verdant Great Sun drank it with utmost satisfaction.

"My son, don’t drink anymore. Come, let’s go back." Ren Zu walked towards Verdant Great Sun and shouted.

"Esteemed father, how did you come here? This is great, let’s drink together." Verdant Great Sun opened his hazy eyes and looked at Ren Zu.

Ren Zu seized the wine bowl from him and said with exasperation: "Don’t drink anymore, you only know how to drink wine! Everyone knows there is a bewitching lake in the land of the dead, and its water is the bewitching soup. When ghosts drink it, they become muddle-headed and lose the desire to leave."

Verdant Great Sun, however, refuted: "Father, you are wrong. This is not the bewitching soup, it is the soul calming wine. It can calm down your soul and remove all the impurities; your soul will no longer be restless and you will experience utmost tranquility in your heart. This is one of the best quality wines in this world."

"I don’t care what wine it is, you have to follow me back." Ren Zu pulled Verdant Great Sun’s hand, but found Verdant Great Sun was as heavy as a mountain and could not be budged.

Verdant Great Sun shook his head: "Some people, upon death, will be as heavy as a mountain. Some people, upon death, will be light as a feather. Father, I had reputation Gu in my life and died after bathing in the light of glory. When I arrived here, my body had become heavier than a mountain, I cannot even walk a single step and can only lie down here."

"What!" Ren Zu immediately felt gloomy and anxiously shouted, "I told you before, a tall tree attracts the wind, reputation is not always a good thing. Throw away the reputation Gu."

Verdant Great Sun shook his head and sighed: "We were not born with fame and fortune, we also cannot take them with us after death. After I died, reputation Gu left me. It is fixed immortal travel Gu that has accompanied me."

Fixed immortal travel Gu could bring Verdant Great Sun’s soul out of the door of life and death or even bring him to any place in the outside world.

However, Verdant Great Sun could only truly resurrect after walking through the path of life.

"What do we do now..." Ren Zu realized he had been played by wisdom Gu. Although he had arrived at the deepest part of the door of life and death — a death domain that had endless darkness, and has also found Verdant Great Sun, he discovered he could not bring back his son.

At this moment, fairness Gu spoke: "Oh Ren Zu, do you still not understand? There are only two paths in door of life and death, both appeared because of destiny Gu. Life and death is determined by destiny! All living beings live and thus die, this is the cycle that allows the universe to continue existing. Your eldest son Verdant Great Sun died, this is destiny and you should accept it. Moreover, he is living a good life here, obsession death domain is the world’s most tranquil place. He is drinking the world’s supreme quality wine and is free from all the worries of the outside world, do you know how blissful this is?"

Ren Zu stood there and looked at his flesh and blood for a while before heaving a deep sigh.

He knew he could not bring back his son’s soul, at least it was like that for now.

He bid farewell to the fairness Gu and also his son, and left the obsession death domain.

He stepped on another path this time; it was the path of life which went from darkness to light.

However, Ren Zu soon realized walking this path was countless times more difficult than when he walked in through the path of death.

There were many more suffering Gu on path of life than path of death. When Ren Zu had walked through the path of death, his journey became smoother along the way and the suffering Gu lesser the further he walked. But as he walked through the path of life, there was not only more suffering Gu, but every step he took would cause much more suffering Gu to fly over and obstruct him.

Courage Gu could not resist them any longer: "Ren Zu, there are too many suffering Gu and they will continue to increase. There is peace in death, but life has endless suffering. Go to Dang Hun mountain quickly and break some gutstones. If you want to survive, just relying on courage won’t be enough, you need guts too."

Ren Zu hurried forward to Dang Hun mountain and picked the guts Gu while enduring the tremors in his soul.

With guts Gu’s help, his soul strengthened grealy, and although he still suffered the tremors, it was not of much worry.

He passed through Dang Hun mountain and arrived at Luo Po valley.

Luo Po valley was a maze with winding and twisted paths. Occasionally, there were a large area of bewilderment fog which could cause the soul to loosen; and occasionally, Luo Po wind would blow through and cut apart the soul.

Ren Zu had fallen into the lowest part of my life and could not distinguish the directions. Because his soul was strengthened by guts Gu, it was loosening in the bewilderment fog at a slower speed. The loosened soul was cut apart by the Luo Po wind.

Ren Zu almost completely lost his way, but fortunately at this time, faith Gu flew out and shone upon his path.

Ren Zu was able to walk out of the Luo Po valley with only the essence of his soul remaining.

He let out a huge breath of relief and could feel he was close to success.

He walked to the reverse flowing river, this was the final barrier in the path of life.

It was extremely difficult to move against the stream.

Endless suffering pushed upon him, causing him to make very slow progress.

However, he forcibly persevered and walked towards the light.

"Almost there." He looked at the success that was just ahead of him, only one final step remained.

He let out a breath of turbid air and relaxed; forgetting the warning of the wisdom Gu, he stopped.

This brief pause caused Ren Zu to be washed away by the river.

Life was not easy, it was like a boat moving against the flow of the river, if you do not continue moving forward, you will be pushed back.

Ren Zu was washed away by the river into the depths of Luo Po valley, he was so tired he could not budge a bit and was trapped in the Luo Po valley.

...

Fang Yuan broke the final guts stone and groaned in satisfaction.

Right now, he felt very comfortable. The heavy injuries in his soul were already completely recovered and moreover, his soul had even strengthened by five times!

A feeling of power burst out from the depths of his heart.

This feeling did not come from the strengthening of his physical body but from the vigor of his spirits. Fang Yuan had a feeling he could do anything easily, whether it was analyzing problems or doing multiple tasks.

"Unfortunately, there are only over a hundred gutstones on Dang Hun mountain and not all of them contained guts Gu." Fang Yuan felt some regret.

When Hu Immortal obtained Dang Hun mountain, it had already changed hands several times and was completed looted.

Hu Immortal moved it to the blessed land and managed it for decades. Almost every year, she would send large amounts of foxes to their deaths at Dang Hun mountain. Using their soul to irrigate the mountain and create gutstones.

However, these gutstones were almost all used by the Hu Immortal. After she died, these over hundred gutstones had slowly grown over close to eight years and now were completely used by Fang Yuan.

According to the Hu Immortal land spirit’s description, close to ten thousand foxes needed to be sacrificed to grow a guts stone. The stronger the beast kings that died, the more gutstones would be produced.

Fang Yuan could not adopt this method.

When the blessed land was at its prime, it was inevitable and alright for Hu Immortal to do so. However, the blessed land was very weak now and the fox groups had decreased by a large amount. Killing these fox groups was not sensible for long term prospects.

With his soul injuries recovered, Fang Yuan started quietly thinking his future plans without relaxing the slightest bit.

Obtaining the Hu Immortal blessed land was no doubt a huge help to his plans, but at the same time also greatly affected his plans.

"Now, with Dang Hun mountain in my possession, my soul’s foundation can continue to strengthen. And from my previous life, I have experience and insight in controlling the blood bats, such enormous advantage should be used. Walking the enslavement path is an obvious choice now."

"However, there is also a disadvantage in enslavement path in that the enslavement path Gu Masters can be easily assaulted and beheaded. So I cannot relax in my strength path cultivation as well!"

With this, Fang Yuan was going to walk on both strength and enslavement paths, organizing and feeding two sets of Gu worms.

If it was before, it would be difficult for Fang Yuan to do this. But now, with Hu Immortal blessed land, it would be no problem.

"The perfect outcome is to refine second aperture Gu. With second aperture, I could divide the sets of enslavement and strength path into different apertures without disturbing each other. At the same time, there would be enough primeval essence to control the two sets of Gu worms."

At that time, with a wave of his hand, a huge army of beasts and insects would cover the sky and earth, creating a river of blood in a blink of an eye, creating destruction and mayhem.

If there was any foolish person who tried to use the tactic of beheading the leader, then Fang Yuan’s strength path cultivation would make them realize how cruel reality was and why flowers were red 1 !

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan took out the second aperture Gu from his aperture.

This Gu was like a peanut shell, shining with golden light, the patterns on its surface were scarlet veins of blood. This was the embryo form of the second aperture Gu, formed from combining false Gu and lifespan Gu; it could survive for forty years.

"There are enough immortal essence to truly refine the second aperture Gu, two third watch Gu can also be easily obtained, but I still require divine travel Gu." Fang Yuan pondered.

Immortal Gu were unique, only one Immortal Gu of the same type could exist in the world. Divine travel Gu was already transformed into fixed immortal travel Gu and no longer existed now. This allowed a new divine travel Gu to appear in the world.

Moreover, there was an extraordinary advantage of divine travel Gu - it could be easily obtained. It was not like the other Immortal Gu that were so hard to capture.

The legends of Ren Zu had written it clearly; as long as one drank the four top quality wines of the world, divine travel Gu could condense into being in their body.

Apart from the wine brewed by the wild beasts and those that were naturally formed, human’s brewing techniques had flourished continually, and now the amount of top quality wines were much more than the ancient times.

Searching for the four top quality wines might be somewhat troublesome, but could be done by spending some time.

Fang Yuan had the blessed land and the assistance of the little Hu Immortal land spirit,

But the main problem did not lie here.

Because divine travel Gu could be easily obtained, others could also easily take advantage of it. In case, someone else obtained divine travel Gu, no matter how much top quality wines Fang Yuan drank, he would not obtain the divine travel Gu.

"Southern Border’s Fei clan possess a top quality wine Zhuang Si Fei. Eastern Sea’s rank seven Gu Immortal Zui Xian Weng has created a sea of wine, concealing countless wines, and holds a wine reception every year. Northern Plain’s Imperial court has the long life wine. These great forces or maybe other Gu Immortals as well could be in possession of one or two top quality wine; their chances of obtaining divine travel Gu is much greater than mine."

With this calculation, Fang Yuan not only had to resist the earthly calamity and manage the blessed land, he also had to quickly gather the four top quality wine and refine second aperture Gu.

"However, these are not all, the crucial point lies in Spring Autumn Cicada. Time is flowing five times faster here, Spring Autumn Cicada’s recovery speed will also become extremely quick. Being able to rebirth three times is already an extremely good luck, I cannot gamble on luck the fourth time. Before Spring Autumn Cicada recovers, I need to have success at first attempt Gu, immediate success Gu, smooth success Gu or any of the others."

Fang Yuan did not have enough strength before. Now, he had the blessed land and abundant resources, he could try to get these Gu already.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Hu Immortal blessed land, southern district.

"Yan Yong, Yan Yong, wake up quickly. Stop sleeping, you’ve slept for three years already!"

A voice woke Yan Yong up from his sleep.

A lump of grey stones with a mossy surface started to vibrate, as the tremors intensified, causing the dust to disperse. From the large oval stone, four limbs and a head appeared like the blossoming of a flower.

Next, a grey rockman stood up — Yan Yong woke up from his sleep.

"Grandpa?" Yan Yong opened his eyes, looking at the rockman who woke him up, it was his eight hundred year old grandpa, the leader of the Hui Shi tribe.

"Grandpa, why did you wake me up, I want to sleep for another two to three years." Yan Yong sighed, begrudging.

Rockmen loved to sleep. When they sleep, the curled into a ball, forming a large oval stone. Each sleeping session lasts seven to eight years.

"Stop sleeping, my grandson, you are already a hundred and eighty years old. Your father died earlier, and I cannot live much longer. In a few decades, you will be our Hui Shi tribe’s new tribe leader."

Rockmen have a long lifespan, generally a thousand years to live. Ordinary humans could barely live for a hundred years, but Yan Yong was a hundred and eighty, and had just reached adulthood.

"Grandpa, I do not want to be tribe leader. After becoming leader, I will not have time to sleep casually anymore." Yan Yong pouted, but saw his grandpa staring angrily, and chose to shut up.

Hui Shi tribe leader chided: "Why haven’t you grown up? You slept for so many years in vain. Quickly pack up, and clean the moss off you, pull off all the weed that had grown on you. Bring the offerings with you and go with grandpa to the ground, we have to meet the immortal, we cannot be disrespectful!"

"Ah? It is time to pay offerings to the immortal again? But I remember there is still a year left." Yan Yong said as he plucked the weed off him.

After sleeping for so many years, his armpits, his groin, and back all had lots of weed. Especially the black thread grass in his groin area, they were hard as steel and curly. Every time he plucked one, Yan Yong felt great pain.

"Sigh, there is a problem this time. The immortal changed, this immortal came not too long ago, he is calling for us." Old clan leader sighed and said with worry.

"New male immortal? I hope he is easier to speak to than that female immortal. Maybe we can discuss with him, after all, we have to contribute so much offerings every ten years, it is taxing."

"Mm, the other tribe leaders and I also have this thought."

...

On a large altar made of green rocks, Fang Yuan wore his black robe as his long black hair was let down, sitting at the main seat staring at the people below with his deep dark pupils.

There were tens of rockmen kneeling below, among them, eight were rockmen leaders, two grey rockmen, three granite rockmen, one iron rockman, one green rockman, and one white rockman.

At the same time, there were offerings.

Large amounts of ore containing gold, silver, bronze, iron, as well as other gems and jewels, Gu worms etc.

All sorts of metallic elements would grow on the rockmen’s bodies as time passed. Fang Yuan looked at these offerings, understanding at once why Dang Hun palace was built so luxuriously.

If these were brought to Earth, they would be a huge asset, but here, their greatest use was to become Gu refinement materials.

Hu Immortal using these things as decoration was only her womanly love for beauty. If she could choose to exchange them for primeval stones, she would trade away all these gems and jewels without a second thought.

Among the offerings, the most valuable were Gu worms.

But these Gu were mostly rank one rock skin Gu, rank two monolith Gu. There was only one rank three Gu, stone aperture Gu.

Fang Yuan had once used this Gu, back then Spring Autumn Cicada’s pressure on the aperture could not be relieved, thus when he was desperate, he used it.

The rockmen were skilled at digging, they lived deep underground. Their food was dirt, and sometimes when they dig underground, they would discover Gu worms.

"What did you say? You want to reduce the offerings?" Fang Yuan’s eyes squinted as he stood up, slowly walking down the stairs, coming towards the rockmen leaders.

The rockmen were tall and huge, even when they kneeled on the ground, their shoulders were still higher than Fang Yuan’s head.

"Esteemed lord immortal, our rockmen tribes have contributed so much offerings during these thirty years. During these years, the earth rumbled, the north area had floods, the east area had fires, life is difficult. These things that we managed to acquire are getting harder and harder to find. Immortal, please have mercy, and forgive our inability, reduce the offering amount by a bit." The oldest rockmen tribe leader begged.

"That’s right, lord immortal, please reduce the offerings."

"These years, we have been decreasing in numbers."

"Immortal, please understand, we will never forget your kindness!"

The other rockmen leaders started saying.

"Reduce the offerings? Hehehe, of course you can! In fact, I can exempt you all from these offerings." Fang Yuan smiled kindly and warmly.

The rockmen’s expression were joyous.

"But I have a condition." Next, Fang Yuan said: "I need you all to dig a river, from the north, transport the water towards the east, to stop the fire from spreading."

"What?!" Hearing this, the rockmen were shocked.

Quickly, they reacted, shouting loudly.

"Esteemed lord immortal, you cannot do this!"

"Digging a river from scratch, this is a huge project, we rockmen need sleep. Without sufficient sleep, we will die."

"And there is a great fire and huge amounts of water. You ask us to go dig a river, but isn’t that asking us to go die?!"

At once, everyone flew into a rage. Many young rockmen were kneeling at one corner, but hearing this, they rushed over, staring at Fang Yuan vigilantly.

"Master." Hu Immortal land spirit beside Fang Yuan saw this and she felt slightly worried.

The rockmen had a stubborn nature, they had foolhardiness, emphasizing their pride and would not accede to demands. When they are rash, they would even attack Demon Venerables or Immortal Venerables, regardless of who the other party is.

Hu Immortal was only to contain these rockmen because at the start, she had spent a lot of effort and gave them a lot of benefits.

"Master, these rockmen do not reason with people, asking them to offer these things was already their limit..." Little Hu Immortal sent her thoughts to Fang Yuan secretly, reminding him.

"Limit?" Fang Yuan scoffed, his mouth opening as he showed his bright white teeth, laughing ruthlessly: "You rockmen are too insolent, you dare to bargain with me? Hmph! The place you are living at is mine. The dirt you eat is mine. The spirit spring beside your tribe is also mine. You live here, you are my slave! I want to dig a new river, that is not a request, and not a transaction, it is an order!"

The rockmen heard this and they all stood up, looking furious.

"Immortal, you don’t know what’s good for you, you dare to look down on us rockmen!"

"Back then when we relocated here, it was because of a female immortal. But the environment here is getting worse, who would want to stay here anymore?"

"You want us to dig a river, that is asking us to die. Do you think we rockmen are fools?"

"We rockmen are born from heaven and earth, we will not be your slaves. Let’s go, relocate, I’ve had enough of this shitty place!"

The rockmen leaders shouted, falling out with Fang Yuan at once.

The followers they brought, the young rockmen all came forward, clenching their fists as they stared at Fang Yuan with a dangerous look.

"You want to leave? Hahaha." Fang Yuan threw his head back and laughed, like he had heard the funniest joke in the world. Next, he stopped laughing, looking at these rockmen coldly, his tone was chilly: "Where do you think this is? Come and go as you please? The old rules are no more, from today onwards, I am the greatest ruler, my words are heaven’s will! You will abide by my rules, even if you don’t want to!"

"Ahh!" Many young rockmen clenched their fists and howled.

"Immortal, you are trying to step over my tribe’s baseline!"

"Immortal, you might be strong, but we are not afraid."

"We rockmen will never lower our heads to brute force, we are natural warriors, we fear no death!"

"Only love can make us dig out our hearts. Only warmth can make us lower our backs."

Roar!

Fang Yuan pushed with his hand and a golden dragon flew out.

The golden dragon roared, killing the rockman that was screaming the loudest.

"Ah, he killed the granite rockmen’s old tribe leader!"

"Old tribe leader is dead, we have to get revenge!!"

"Even an immortal has to die under our tribe’s fury!"

Granite old tribe leader’s death was like the trigger, causing the rockmen’s anger to erupt.

The rockmen attacked Fang Yuan in waves, every step made a dent in the ground, as they gave off an impressive aura. Dozens of rockmen attacked together, giving off the disposition of a grand army of ten thousand.

From their bodies, numerous lights shone. There were also Gu worms inhibiting these rockmen’s bodies, they were activated through their will.

But a moment later, these lights vanished.

Little Hu Immortal struck, sealing all the Gu worms.

Fang Yuan snickered as he began his slaughter.

The rockmen were not afraid of death, but their strength was inferior to fang Yuan, they were all broken down into shards, dying a pathetic death.

But these rock fragments gathered like magnets, forming new rockmen.

"Kill!"

"Resist the tyranny, take revenge for father!!"

"We are born from heaven and earth, we die due to heaven and earth, thus we have no fear!"

Tiny rockmen charged over, and were all slaughtered by Fang Yuan.

But these rock fragments gathered into even smaller rockmen.

The number of these rockmen continued to shrink, but after they were formed, they charged towards Fang Yuan and shouted things like exacting revenge for their grandpa, father etc.

This was the way the rockmen reproduced. It was a male only race, after the old rockmen dies, the soul and rocks they split into will form new rockmen, and inherit a portion of the old rockmen’s memories, or some important experiences. In some cases, old rockmen sleep too much and their soul foundation accumulates to a degree, they would split out a portion of their bodies to form new tiny rockmen.

After Fang Yuan killed the third wave of rockmen, the world was finally silent once more.

Only one rockman remained, lying on the ground, shivering.

"What is your name?" Fang Yuan slowly walked towards him.

"My... my name is Yan... Yan Yong." The young rockman stammered.

"Do you know why I left only you alive?" Fang Yuan stood on Yan Yong’s head.

"No... I do not know..."

"Because you are terrified. Because I like your fear and horror towards me." Fang Yuan smiled warmly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Three days later, a seriously injured Yan Yong returned to his tribe and woke up all the hibernating rockmen.

"A male immortal is here, he is a demon, he wanted to enslave all of us!"

"Not only this, he also wanted to take away the beautiful men of our rockmen tribe, to become his plaything."

"We rockmen are born of nature, free and unfettered, how could we bow our backs to such lecherous authority?"

"We resisted at the spot. The immortal was too strong, but we rockmen were not afraid of sacrificing and fought him without fearing death; finally, we injured him and beat him into retreat."

"The other tribesmen were all sacrificed and only I was able to return. I am dying but that immortal is still alive. Before he ran away, he said he will lead his fox army and annihilate all our rockmen tribes!"

Yan Yong weakly lamented, announcing a frightening information to his tribesmen.

The rockmen were shocked and afraid, grieving and also furious; some declared war, some wanted revenge, some mentioned migrating and some wanted to discuss.

They had become lost their bearings without a leader; whether it was the inheritor or the old tribe leader, they had all died at Fang Yuan’s hands. There were altogether eight tribes of rockmen and they had fallen into chaos now.

Some rockmen wanted to get the concrete details from Yan Yong, but Yan Yong’s injuries were too severe, and after informing them of this grievous news, he lost consciousness.

While they were still in the midst of discussing, just like Yan Yong said, waves after waves of fox groups started attacking rockmen tribes.

The rockmen resisted with all their strength, but there were way too many fox groups; the situation was gradually turning grave, the eight tribes had no choice but to ally and retreat underground to defend themselves.

However, the fox groups did not let them go and repeatedly attacked the underground. The fox groups paid a disastrous price every time they attacked, but they still came endlessly.

The rockmen cursed Fang Yuan, their hatred towards him were like a inferno that could not be extinguished. The situation became worse day by day and despair spread in the hearts of the rockmen.

However, right at this time, Yan Yong woke up.

Rockmen could recuperate from their injuries through sleep; his injuries had healed for the most part. He immediately led the rockmen and made beautiful counterattacks.

"We rockmen are a courageous group with no fear of death!"

"Even the immortal cannot humiliate us!"

Yan Yong announced to everyone and raised their morale.

"Don’t think the immortal is strong, he is only a paper tiger and can only send these fox groups to their death, he is already injured."

At the same time, he proclaimed the injuries of the immortal and gave hope to the rockmen.

The despairing rockmen tightly grabbed onto this hope like it was a straw that could save them as they were drowning.

Yan Yong changed the subject and talked about the old tribe leaders.

"He was injured by the combined efforts of the old tribe leaders, the sacrifice of the old tribe leaders is our greatest grief."

"Especially the old white rock tribe leader, his life ended as he was in my arms, before he died he entrusted the whole tribe to me. I looked as his soul dispersed, and felt ashamed, why wasn’t it me who died, but him!" He beat his chest as he said this, appearing to be extremely sad.

Immediately, some rockmen persuaded: "Lord Yan Yong, don’t grieve. It is already very amazing you were able to survive and bring us the warning, even leading us towards victory."

"That’s right, we iron rockmen all admire you."

"Since the old tribe leader entrusted the tribe to you, then please lead us white rockmen."

What rockmen liked was to sleep soundly and were not too obsessed with authority. Especially, at this juncture of life and death where they were living in anxiety, the rockmen hoped for a strong and brave rockman to lead them.

Thereupon, Yan Yong first inherited his tribe’s tribe leader position and then white rock tribe.

Over a month later, he got hold of the remaining tribes one after another, becoming the joint leader of the eight rockmen tribes.

Another half a month passed, he led the rockmen and drove out the fox groups, protecting his tribes.

"This is not enough. As long as the immortal doesn’t die, we have no future. The fox groups will regroup and attack our home again."

"We can only attack, attack that immortal mountain and completely kill the immortal for a beautiful and peaceful life."

Yan Yong immediately mentioned attacking Dang Hun mountain.

Some rockmen, however, seemed to hesitate.

"We have just suffered such a bitter battle, we just want to sleep now."

"Our rockmen population has decreased greatly, we don’t have the strength to attack that demonic stronghold."

"We have large numbers of offsprings born from this bitter battle, we need to raise them properly till they become adults."

Yan Yong could only shift the topic to the old white rock tribe leader.

"My tribesmen, will I bring you to your deaths?"

"Attacking the immortal mountain was not my idea. It was a secret the old white rock tribe leader told me before his death."

"He said this immortal mountain is the legendary Dang Hun mountain. Dang Hun mountain has gutstones, if our rockmen can obtain these gutstones, it can increase our strength and make our tribes stronger!"

The old white rock tribe leader was the oldest and the most experienced rockman. He was widely known by the rockmen as the sage.

With his ’last words’ along with Yan Yong’s clear might, the rockmen were agitated and formed an expedition to attack Dang Hun mountain.

Fang Yuan had intentionally arranged some fox groups around Dang Hun mountain, forming a weak defensive line.

Yan Yong continually boosted the rockmen’s morale: "See, there is not much left of the demonic immortal’s fox army. We are already close to victory."

The rockmen sang of victory and triumph along the way, charging toward Dang Hun mountain with uplifted morale.

At Dang Hun mountain, Fang Yuan appeared with a group of foxes and fought a ’great battle’ with the rockmen.

Fang Yuan showed terrifying strength and killed many rockmen, causing all the rockmen to be terrified.

But at this moment, Yan Yong stood up and pointed to Fang Yuan’s injuries and his paper tiger ’immortal essence’, and fought a ’decisive battle’ with him.

The fox groups were eliminated, as Fang Yuan was ’defeated’, forced to escape from Yan Yong’s assault.

"Wait till I come back after gathering immortal essence from the water and fire!

That moment will be your end!" Before retreating, Fang Yuan shouted loudly with a malevolent expression.

Rockmen had rough physique and their movements were slow, and not being familiar with Dang Hun mountain’s terrain, they could only let Fang Yuan ’escape’.

The rockmen worshipped Yan Yong for beating back the immortal and cheered victoriously.

"My tribesmen, now is not the time to cheer." Yan Yong stood up, "We can’t stay on Dang Hun mountain for long, this is a demonic land. The old white rock tribe leader had told me, every year only during these few days, we rockmen can enter this place safely. We need to hurry and collect the gutstones here. Three days later, we need to leave this place!"

Their bodies were made of solid rock. There was a burden on their soul to hold up such a strong and firm body. If the rockmen moved too excessively, it could harm their soul.

Thus, rockmen would spend eighty percent of their whole life sleeping and nurturing their soul.

When the foundation of their soul was thick enough, it would leak out. This overflowing part of the soul would fall on a rock and form a new life. Rockmen tribes reproduce like this.

After the rockmen obtained the gutstones, the guts Gu could strengthen and expand their soul, causing the soul to overflow and form little rockmen.

Three days later, inside the mountain, in Dang Hun palace.

Yan Yong kneeled on the ground and reported with reverence and fear as he lowered his head and bowed: "Reporting to the immortal, with these three days of soul strengthening, our rockmen tribes have increased by six thousand little rockmen. Including us old tribesmen, the whole population has increased to three times the population before the battle!"

Fang Yuan was sitting grandly on the fluffy bed and looked down at Yan Yong.

"Good, with this, your rockmen have enough manpower to start the river construction. Next, you remember what to do, right? Or do you need me to tell you again?"

Yan Yong promptly replied: "Supreme immortal, I did not dare to forget your words and have engraved them in my mind."

"Good." Fang Yuan nodded indifferently, "I will give you three months of time to dig a great river that cuts across the eastern and northern areas."

"Ah, three months?" Yan Yong was stupefied, "Mighty immortal, us rockmen need sleep to nurture our souls. If we move excessively, we will tire ourselves to death. The great river is so long, and with only three months of time, we would have not be able to have any rest. If we work like this, our rockmen tribes will probably die out."

"Hehehe, you won’t die completely. I have already calculated, there will be over two hundred rockmen remaining." Fang Yuan laughed.

Yan Yong felt a chill in his body. There were ten thousand rockmen now, but there would only be over two hundred after the project. How terrifying of a sacrifice was this?

"Three months later, I want to see a great river! If I don’t see it, I will tell the truth to your tribesmen before I kill you. Now roll away." Fang Yuan’s tone was cold and unfeeling.

Yan Yong’s body trembled all over hearing this demonic threat.

He had a very deep fear towards Fang Yuan and did not dare to retort, his body curled up into a ball and surprising, he really rolled away.

"Master, we paid a huge price back then to bring in these rockmen." The little Hu Immortal land spirit tactfully persuaded, she could not endure seeing such a huge amount of rockmen dying like this.

"Don’t worry, the rockmen has still a great use to me. And isn’t it easy to increase their population?" Fang Yuan leaned on a chair with his eyes squinting as he took out a burial soul toad from his aperture.

Burial soul toad was a rank four Gu used to store things. It was one of the Gu worms left by the Hu Immortal.

It was palm sized big and was grey color. There were small warts all over its back and its large eyes flashed with weird and gloomy green light.

It could only store souls and its belly would inflate as it sucked in the souls.

Fang Yuan used this to collect the souls of the rockmen who died in the battle with the fox groups.

Now, this soul burial toad’s belly was deflated. The souls that were inside it before were placed on Dang Hun mountain by Fang Yuan to breed new gutstones.

Fang Yuan used a part of the gutstones to make his soul six times stronger than that of a normal person.

And the remaining gutstones were given to the rockmen tribes.

The rockmen had no idea, the strengthening of their souls was all due to the death of their companions.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Yan Yong got out of Dang Hun palace, after getting through some twisted and dark tunnels, he arrived on Dang Hun mountain.

After seeing the crystal pink mountain, Yan Yong blew out a breath of turbid air, his fear and pressure had decreased greatly after leaving Fang Yuan.

After moving on the mountain for a while, he was finally discovered by his tribemates.

"Oh, our great and honorable leader, our hero, you are here!" Some rockmen cheered.

"Please let me kiss your foot, to express my adoration of you." A few rockmen kneeled on the ground.

"Big hero, big hero! Your courage is greater than heaven, your guts is thicker than the earth." Some tiny rockmen formed into groups and shouted loudly.

Yan Yong laughed, no one knew how bitter he felt.

The cheers he heard were extremely joyous, there were many tribesmen around him, gathering together, but he felt extremely lonely at this point.

He looked at these tribesmen, these smiling rockmen, they were all going to die three months later. Dying of exhaustion after digging the river. But what could he do?

From what the other rockmen saw, Dang Hun mountain’s victory was glorious, it was worth celebrating. But only he knew, this was only a game manipulated in the dark by that immortal.

The cruel and chilling truth made him understand clearly that the sacrifice of those rockmen, and this difficult victory, it was so laughably pathetic, they were powerless.

He led his tribesmen and gained more victories, but at the same time his fear towards Fang Yuan grew.

"That immortal, he is a demon! His heart is harder and colder than us rockmen, his strength is greater than the weight of the mountains. I am so weak, what can I do? Resistance means death. I admit my cowardice, I am really afraid of dying. I have not slept enough, I am only a hundred and eighty years old."

The moment Yan Yong thought about Fang Yuan’s appearance, his heart was filled with terror.

His lingering bit of conscience was torturing him.

He knew: he was about to send his tribesmen to death personally. He was being grilled by his conscience, every praise from his tribesmen was like a whip, causing his heart to be full of pain and scars.

"Our esteemed, beloved tribe leader, you are finally back! Everyone’s waiting." The rockmen gave way to Yan Yong, as he walked unobstructed towards higher ground.

"My tribesmen, these three days, our tribe has grown by many times. Our conquest has gotten us glorious results. But such victory is insufficient. Are you all willing to continue following me, towards a brighter future?" Yan Yong looked down at his tribesmen and shouted loudly.

The rockmen used the loudest cheer they could muster to express their hundred and twenty percent support towards Yan Yong.

Yan Yong nodded, he had expected such an outcome.

Among the rockmen, there were no outliers or knowledgeable old rockmen. During the few intense battles, they had "gloriously" sacrificed themselves.

The remaining rockmen were all newborn, they had a simple mind. As for the remaining old rockmen, they were all hardcore supporters of Yan Yong, his loyal worshippers.

Yan Yong patiently waited for the cheers to stop before continuing: "These three days, I had been considering — how do we deal with the escaped immortal. Immortals have immortal essence, thus they are able to control the fox army, and have terrifying strength. He must have retreated to the lake at the north area, or hid in east area’s fire pit. We cannot allow him to recover."

"Tribe leader is right!"

"Tribe leader is too smart, we cannot allow that evil immortal to recover his immortal essence."

"When that accursed demon recovers his strength, he will definitely find trouble with us rockmen!"

"But what do we do now? The lake and fire pit are both dangerous areas. Even us rockmen cannot last long there. And these two areas are so wide, who knows where the immortal escaped to."

Everyone was speaking as the scene turned noisy.

Yan Yong interrupted everyone’s discussions, shouting: "That’s why, I thought of the only solution. We will use soil to fill the fire pit and lake, that way, the immortal will be unable to recover his immortal essence!"

"Oh god, that is an insane idea!" At once, some rockmen shouted.

"My great tribe leader, the lake is so wide, it causes people to stare in amazement. The fire pit has a fatal temperature, how can we use soil to fill it? That is impossible." An old rockmen immediately argued.

Yan Yong stared at this old rockmen deeply, remembering him to heart.

This rockmen dared to question him, it showed that his idolization was not deep enough, thus he shall get the heaviest and toughest job later, working to death.

At this time, another old rockmen said: "We cannot do this forcefully, I have a solution. Maybe we can dig out a river and direct the lake water to the fire pit, using water to neutralize fire, that will be easier."

Yan Yong’s killing intent rose even more.

This old rockmen was very intelligent, he was a bigger threat than the old rockmen who rebuked him.

He immediately decided in this heart, he was going to send this old rockmen to a defense mission. He shall be killed by the fox army, this threat has to be eliminated!

Yan Yong praised this old man plainly, shouting: "That is exactly my idea, we have to dig a river and direct the water over to end the fire. The immortal will have no place to recover immortal essence! Actually, white stone old tribe leader taught me before dying, he said that the water at the north and the fire at the east were all done by that evil male immortal. That is the source of his power, just like how we rockmen eat soil."

"So white stone old tribe leader predicted this."

"White stone old tribe leader, as expected of our philosopher."

"White stone old tribe leader was already nine hundred and ninety-eight years old, of course he knew a lot."

All the rockmen nodded, expressing their agreement with white stone old tribe leader, but also felt deep pity and anguish towards his death.

Rockmen sleep for a long time, they have little interaction with each other. This sense of distance and mystery caused the deceased white stone old tribe leader’s knowledge to feel extremely profound.

Using a phrase from Earth, if white stone old tribe leader could hear this in the afterlife, he might jump out of his coffin in anger.

But unfortunately, he was completely killed by Fang Yuan, his soul was not spared, broken down on Dang Hun mountain by Fang Yuan. The essence landed on the mountain, forming a gutstone.

Whether this gustone was smashed by a rockmen, or Fang Yuan himself, that would be an eternal mystery.

After discussing, the rockmen agreed that Yan Yong should be the leader, overseeing the digging to connect the water and fire.

Fang Yuan hid in the background, looking at this scene secretly. After seeing the finalized plan, he ordered little Hu Immortal.

The land spirit released a trace of Dang Hun mountain’s power, and the rockmen felt their soul tremble, they got very dizzy. Many young rockmen fainted on the spot.

"Oh no, let’s hurry and get out. Dang Hun mountain is going to attack!" Yan Yong said, as he left his tribesmen away from Dang Hun mountain.

They did not return to their original home, but instead got to the north and east area in a grand fashion.

In Dang Hun mountain, Fang Yuan looked expressionlessly at these leaving rockmen using the smoke cloud.

"Master, have you heard of the story of the rockmen?" Little Hu Immortal’s tail was swaying as she spoke meekly.

Fang Yuan laughed lightly: "You want to urge me to use soft tactics with the rockmen?"

"Master is so smart." Little Hu Immortal’s large eyes were shining.

"Heh, it seems you are not too familiar with this. Often, the power of fear and hatred surpasses gratitude greatly.

Back then, when Fang Yuan found out that there was a group of rockmen, he was overjoyed.

The rockmen lived underground, they ate soil as food and were skilled at digging. A large ground of rockmen could even build and underground city deep in the ground.

Rockmen could excavate resources for the blessed land’s owner, they were excellent slaves. Many Gu Immortals want to buy rockmen and move them into their own blessed land.

For Hu Immortal blessed land, because of Dang Hun mountain, and provided it had enough souls, just one rockman can use the gutstones to breed into a large clan.

Fang Yuan could use this to mass produce rockmen and engage in slave trade with other Gu Immortals.

Back then, Hu Immortal brought all these rockmen in with the same intentions.

It was true, rockmen only succumbed to soft tactics. Most of the rockmen were stubborn and tough, warrior not afraid to die. Thus, many Gu Immortals have to use kindness and benefits to slowly use these rockmen and maximise their worth.

Hu Immortal used such a method.

But Fang Yuan did not adopt this.

It was too gentle.

He wanted squeeze them dry, to gain the most benefits!

This world’s competition is so cruel, not only did man compete with each other, they also had to deal with disasters and calamities, who knows how many heroes had fallen to floods.

So what if you are a Gu Immortal?

If you did not arm yourself and make use of every resource you had to strengthen yourself, Hu Immortal’s demise would be the best example.

A demonic path member has to make the best of his time, considering even the small bit of benefit, taking whatever he can and make himself stronger!

"Anyone in power has to understand: Rules, laws, friendship and morals, these are all tools to squeeze out benefits. Leniency and conscience, cruelty and hatred, they are all the same." Fang Yuan laughed coldly in his heart.

After wasting so much time with the rockmen, there were only seven months left to the sixth calamity.

The lake at the north, fire pit at the east, they were all scars left by previous calamities, weak spots of the blessed land. When earthly calamities occur, they would be the weakest link.

A team is only as strong as its weakest player. The weight a chain can hold up depends on the most fragile section.

"So what if I am hated, detested, and scolded by countless people?"

"If this world was so simple such that hatred, loathe, and curses work, why would I still need strength?"

The most important thing was digging the river as soon as possible, to help the blessed land recover as much as it could, it did not matter how many rockmen died in the process. Since Dang Hun mountain was here, he just had to capture a few souls and there would be an uncountable number of rockmen produced!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Rumble rumble...

Explosions went off one after another, as dust and smoke rose into the air.

This was the site of the river digging project.

The rockmen ate soil as food, many of the Gu worms on the rockmen’s bodies can be used.

"Lord tribe leader, we cannot continue like this! Yesterday, three tribesmen died from exhaustion, they had a pitiful death, not even leaving behind a single offspring."

An elderly rockmen kneeled before Yan Yong as he cried.

Once a rockman dies of exhaustion, their soul will dissipate, they will die for real, there will not be any young rockmen formed from their remaining soul.

Yan Yong slammed his chest, howling: "Why would I not know? Why would I not know? Heroes have sacrificed for our tribe again! For the bright future of our tribe, for a beautiful tomorrow, they contributed their lives!"

"But precisely so, we cannot slow down. Since the start of the excavation, we have faced many attacks from the fox army. The size of the fox group is getting larger, evidently that accursed male immortal is regaining his immortal essence! We have to continue and work hard, digging the river so that he loses his source of power!"

Old rockman was stunned: "But tribe leader..."

"You are a good rockman, you think for our tribe, I understand that. These heroes will not die in vain. Look there, I have already made heroic gravestones for them. Their children and descendants will remember them, and feel gratitude for the sacrifices made." Yan Yong pointed at the gravestones erected, there was a large number of them.

The old rockman looked at the gravestones, sighing.

Once the death of the rockmen appeared, the new tribe leader Yan Yong immediately ordered people to build these gravestones.

The low morale was immediately raised, although everyday, countless rockmen die of exhaustion, they were still in high spirits.

"They are dead, what is the use of these gravestones?" The old rockman was one of the few left who understood the situation, he felt deeply worried.

"Oh leader." He bitterly urged: "Us rockmen have to reproduce as well. These rockmen who die of exhaustion will not even have their souls left, they cannot leave behind descendants."

Yan Yong’s expression remained unchanged, not saying a word.

A young rockman beside him started grumbling: "You old man, are you afraid of dying!"

Old rockman immediately retorted: "Young man, how can you say that? Yes, I am old, but I am a rockman, how can a rockman be afraid of dying?"

"Since you are not afraid to die, why are you talking so much?"

"That’s right. We are making contributions to the tribe!"

"What’s the matter? We are making a small sacrifice for the bigger good."

Beside Yan Yong, a group of young rockmen started arguing.

"Old senior, if you feel tired, take a rest first. It is not a problem, my time is limited, I have to go to the other areas to inspect the progress." Yan Yong patted this old rockman’s shoulder as he walked away, continuing on his inspection.

A group of young rockmen followed behind Yan Yong, talking among themselves, expressing their disdain for that old rockman.

Being despised by these juniors, the old rockman felt very depressed, smoke was coming out of his ears.

He wanted to rebuke them loudly, but he saw all the gravestones near the construction area, with all sorts of words carved on them.

"We have to do this at all cost!"

"As long as we are united, within three days, we will complete the river!"

"The bigger our courage, the more we can achieve."

"To build a beautiful future for our rockmen tribe!"

"Long live tribe leader Yan Yong!"

"For the bright future of the rockmen, we contribute our lives, we contribute our youth!"

The crazed atmosphere engulfed the rockmen’s hearts. Even those rockmen who died from exhaustion showed a smile before they died.

Old rockman wanted to speak, but his mouth opened many times and did not manage to say a word.

He kneeled on the spot in a daze for a long while, until suddenly, he lifted his fist and slammed the ground heavily.

Bam, it was a heavy sound.

The old rockman stood up slowly, silently moving his aged body towards the construction ground.

Yan Yong rushed to the next site.

The river channel was already starting to form, large numbers of adult rockmen were digging in the channel. Beside them, the physically weaker young rockmen formed into patrolling groups. Some were inspecting the river digging, some were carving slogans, some were making heroic gravestones.

These young rockmen were called rock guards, formed by Yan Yong personally.

"Reporting to tribe leader!" Fix to six young rockmen went to Yan Yong and reported the results of these few days of labor.

"Reporting to great leader, we have dug another 25km in this segment!"

"Reporting to great leader, we have unfortunately sacrificed a hundred and twenty tribesmen, they are all heroes of our tribe!"

"Reporting to great leader, we actually found three tribesmen sleeping on the job. This is a disgrace to our tribe, we have to criticize them!"

"Very good, very good, you have all done well! Remember, you have to erect gravestones for our deceased heroes. At the same time, tie up those disgraceful rockmen and criticize them up public, let them learn courage from humiliation." Yan Yong spoke caringly.

"Understood!"

"You are all the future of our tribe, seeing you all is like seeing the bright future of our tribe. You have to continue working hard." Yan Yong praised.

The young rockmen were extremely spurred on, their bodies were trembling.

"Everything for the rockmen tribe!"

"Our esteemed and beloved leader, you are our symbol of pride!"

"We unite by your side, walking towards a bright and meaningful future!!"

They growled one after another, showing a fanatic gaze.

But Yan Yong avoided eye contact with them, these young rockmen’s enthusiasm made him fearful.

He looked at a faraway place.

There, all the different segments of the river were being excavated, Yan Yong could see many rockmen looking down at the yellow soil while lowering their thick backs.

The river channel was tens of meters wide, segment after segment, a long line showed up in his vision.

This was a majestic project!

Every time Yan Yong saw this sene, his heart palpitated — as long as they are united, the rockmen tribe’s strength was overwhelming, it could change the world!

But when Yan Yong thought of Fang Yuan, that terrifying demon, his heart felt a strong chill that turned his enthusiasm into a frozen river.

Be it the fox groups outside, the slogans on the stone boards, or the rock guards he created, they were all a part of the demon’s plot.

With so many methods, he forcefully reduced the rockmen tribe’s resistance to the minimum.

Yan Yong was the one who created this scenario personally, seeing the formation of the river, his fear towards Fang Yuan became greater and greater.

That male immortal not only had terrifying strength, what truly caused despair was that scheming and devious mind of his, making him seem like an unpredictable abyss.

Yan Yong felt himself sinking into purgatory.

He was meek like an ant, while behind him, Fang Yuan giant figure was staring down at him.

He was like a corpse, a puppet, the strings that controlled him was in the hands of Fang Yuan.

Everyday, he saw his tribesmen die, his heart hurt like a dagger was stabbing it.

Seeing the enthusiasm of his tribesmen, dying to dig the river, he felt a pitiful grief.

"If possible, I would rather not know the truth. Maybe, continuing to live in this lie is true bliss?"

Yan Yong retracted his gaze, waving his hand and bringing the young rockmen towards the next river segment.

...

"This is the last estrus Gu, go."

Primeval essence had already been injected, as Fang Yuan flicked his finger and shot the green bean looking Gu into the air.

Estrus Gu exploded, turning into pink powder as it rained down on the fox group below.

The entire fox group breathed in this powder, and immediately stirred.

Very soon, numerous male foxes sprawled on the female foxes’ backs, moving vigorously as they injected their life essence into the female fox’s body.

The fox gestation varied. For example, golden fox took two months to give birth once. Every time, there were three to four foxes. As for desolate beasts like three-tail fox, even a hundred years was not enough to nurture their fetus.

Normally, the stronger the beast, the longer it takes for one gestation.

But right now in Hu Immortal blessed land, the fox groups were ordinary, they had a short gestation period.

Ever since the rockmen started digging the river until the process became smooth, Fang Yuan had been using estrus Gu everyday, creating new foxes and strengthening the fox army.

Hu Immortal did not have an Immortal Gu, during the fifth earthly calamity, she was killed by blue charm lightning shadow, thus her set of enslavement path Gu worms were not spared.

But within Dang Hun mountain, she left behind a number of Gu worms.

For example, assistance type Gu like burial soul toad, or expenditure type Gu like estrus Gu, as well as some spare Gu worms for the enslavement path, most were fox enslavement Gu.

To quickly increase his strength, Fang Yuan already used up most of these Gu worms.

The fox group had increased in numbers by several times after his hard work.

Although the foxes were omnivores, the blessed land could not sustain such a large number. In less than two years, a lot of foxes would be unable to find food and die of starvation.

But Fang Yuan could not care less, his whole mind was on enduring the sixth earthly calamity now.

A few months passed quickly.

A river connected the north and east.

The overflowing lake flowed along the river channel, moving quickly with ripples splashing.

Swish swish...

The great flood flowed into the fire pit, as the two forces clashed, river water evaporated and turned to steam, rising into the air.

After the river water calmed down, almost half the black flames were doused. Only three burning areas remained at the edges.

This way, fire and water wiped each other out, the north area’s flood was alleviated, and the ground surfaced once more.

Large amounts of water flowed along the river and filled tens of pits, forming many lakes.

Even though the north area was still full of mud, and the east area was a burnt land without any living plants, the fusion of fire and water had created something like a scab on a bleeding wound.

As long as time passed, the east and north areas will eventually regain their vitality.

Under Fang Yuan’s instructions, Yan Yong brought the injured and tired hundred or so rockmen back to their homes at the south area.

"Master, what do we do with these clouds?" Little Hu Immortal looked at the sky, the thick clouds made her feel helpless.

Even though it rained many times already, a lot of water vapor was still in the air, forming into clouds.

These clouds blocked the natural light, causing the east area to be shrouded in darkness, it made people feel irritated.

The blessed land did not have sunlight or wind. These clouds would heavily affect the lives of the east area’s inhabitants.

"Ignore them." Fang Yuan looked at the sea of clouds and retracted his gaze.

The appearance of the clouds was expected, it was a minor detail. What is truly important, is the sixth earthly calamity!

If the blessed land survives this, he would slowly settle the issue about the clouds. If it fails to make it, then there is no point in thinking about it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 416: Enduring the Earthly Calamity (1/2)

Several months later.

In Hu Immortal blessed land, the fox groups gathered into an army and surrounded Dang Hun mountain tightly.

Fang Yuan stood with his arms behind his back at the peak of the mountain and looked at the sky with a solemn expression.

Time passed mercilessly, today was the day of the sixth earthly calamity!

Even though Fang Yuan was a Gu Immortal in his previous life, he still felt uneasy facing an earthly calamity.

Every earthly calamity increases in intensity compared to the previous one, it was a cruel trial that decided the life and death of the Gu Immortals and their blessed land. Fang Yuan took over the blessed land when there was only a year and three months left.

This time was truly short, he could only prepare with his best efforts. Digging a river and alleviating the water and fire crisis was one, nurturing foxes and increasing their numbers was two. Holding onto fixed immortal travel Gu and being prepared to retreat was the third preparation.

As for the clouds in the sky, as well as the blue charm lightning shadow at the west area, he had no way of dealing with them.

The mild wind gradually stopped. High up in the sky, clouds were rumbling and a lump of light was forming..

"It’s coming." Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk as he muttered.

In the cloud sea, the lump light burst out, forming a great white round door, facing the blessed land directly.

The light was glaring and dazzling, as a brown-yellow colored large monster descended from the light door like a large rock.

"Looking at this scene, is this the desolate beast calamity?!" Fang Yuan squinted and stared without blinking.

The giant rock continued to descend silently.

Fang Yuan could not help but lick his dry lips as his heart sank.

There were countless types of earthly calamities, among them were the desolate beast calamity.

In the blessed land, one or multiple desolate beasts will appear, charging towards the blessed land’s central control area, wreaking havoc and causing destruction to the blessed land.

If they were not exterminated in time, even a large blessed land would be destroyed and reduced to ashes.

"Damn it, it is a desolate beast, I just hope there is no Immortal Gu on this desolate beast!" Fang Yuan cursed in his heart.

If desolate beasts had Immortal Gu on them, their battle strength would surpass Gu Immortals!

This mysterious desolate beast landed on the ground in a light manner contrary to its giant size.

Looking from afar, it looked like a slightly flat giant rock.

But Fang Yuan could tell from the images that this large rock was only a brown-yellow exoskeleton glowing with a golden lustre. There were thick layers of mud on the shell armor.

Just as Fang Yuan was guessing what sort of creature it was, a large pair of cheliped, like two bronze poles, stretched out from the shell.

Next, nine pairs of chelipeds stretched out from two sides, landing on the ground, raising the heavy body off the ground.

"Swamp crab!" Seeing this, Fang Yuan spoke immediately, recognising the true identity of this desolate beast.

This was a large crab, with a body that was the size of a mountain. When its body was lifted, the height could reach a quarter of Dang Hun mountain.

Its first pair of chelipeds was more fearsome than steel poles, a pair of pincers that could break mountain rocks or cut a flood dragon in half!

Its remaining eighteen chelipeds, although thinner than the first pair, they were still thicker than hundred year old trees.

There were large numbers of Gu worms on its body, most would be water and earth path Gu worms. Rarely, it could even contain an entire set of Gu worms.

"Thankfully, Hu Immortal blessed land has ample immortal essence!" Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, feeling glad in his heart.

Earlier when the swamp crab appeared, the land spirit already struck, using the heavenly power to restrict its Gu worms.

All rank one to five Gu worms could not display their abilities.

The most important point was, this desolate beast had no Immortal Gu. If it did, then the question would be what Immortal Gu that was.

Immortal Gu were unique, surpassing the laws of the mortal realm; blessed lands could not restrict them.

The existence of an Immortal Gu was the most important element in this battle!

The swamp crab fully stretched its limbs and started slowly moving towards Dang Hun mountain.

Fang Yuan willed and moved his troops quickly. Large numbers of foxes all over the mountain, rushed like the tides towards the desolate beast.

In moments, they encircled the swamp crab.

Their claws and teeth scratched the swamp crab’s legs, and the physically tougher golden foxes directly crashed into it.

But the swamp crab was huge like a mountain and continued moving forward. The ordinary fox groups could not stop it, instead they were stomped into meat paste.

Fang Yuan’s expression was cruel as he directed the foxes to continue giving up their lives.

He bred so many of them, they were meant to be used as disposable pieces. Damage accumulates; any amount of damage they could deal counted.

But the swamp crab gave off an unstoppable momentum as it advanced without halting a single step. Like a moving mountain, it did not care about the foxes below.

All sorts of attacks landed on the swamp crab’s body, like a beautiful display of fireworks.

These were the attacks of the hundred, thousand and myriad beast kings of the foxes. They had all sorts of Gu worms.

Under the strength of all the Gu, the mud on swamp crab’s body was all blown away.

This giant crab, for the first time, stopped its movement.

It opened its mouth and spewed out large amounts of mud. At the same time, from its stomach, yellow mud spewed out like a waterfall.

The mud landed on the grass and formed a swamp.

From the mud, weird looking crabs stood up. Some had large sizes, ferocious like a tiger. Some had sharp thin needle like pincers. Some had claw-like legs, having quick speed.

In the blink of an eye, a crab army that numbered to a million formed.

"It is the swamp crab indeed! It can breed at any time and place, creating numerous smaller crabs and forming an army." Fang Yuan’s expression turned darker.

The fox groups were fighting against the crab army, engaging in fierce combat.

The number of foxes continued to decrease. The crab army’s deaths were much greater than the fox group, but the desolate beast continued to give birth, and there was an endless number of crabs.

Fang Yuan quickly instructed the fox groups hiding outside the mountain to return.

"Thankfully, I expended my estrus Gu and bred a large number of foxes, otherwise, my total force would not be enough!"

In just this short period, Fang Yuan felt dizzy.

He directed an insanely large number of foxes, and even though his soul was six times as strong as a normal person, it could not take this pressure.

With the crab army paving the way, the swamp crab continued moving forward, regaining its former speed.

The legs on its body moved one after another, like fingers playing on a piano, with a rhythmic beauty.

But an intense battle was going on below it; blood flowed into river, corpses piled into a hill, and every piece of land was tainted with blood.

The swamp crab did not differentiate enemies from allies, every time its legs landed on the ground, there would be a fountain of blood squirting all over the place. When the crab raised its leg, there would be foxes’ crushed bodies and broken crab carcasses in the deep pit on the ground.

This desolate beast’s body was so large, and honestly speaking, it did not move quickly.

But because of this, it was able to create an immense mental pressure; seeing it moving unhindered, Fang Yuan felt that a grim reaper’s scythe was hanging over his neck.

"Damn it!" Fang Yuan gritted his teeth.

This desolate beast before him was the King of the Swamp. Its body was covered in hard shell, it had lurked deep within the swamp for many years, even its eyes had vanished due to de-evolution, it had no weaknesses left.

Fang Yuan manipulated the fox groups to hold it back, but it was no use.

He could only watch helplessly as the swamp crab got closer!

"Can you teleport it away?" Fang Yuan turned his head, asking the little Hu Immortal land spirit.

Different Gu Immortals gave birth to different blessed lands, and the land spirit’s abilities also varied. Some land spirits could teleport others, like Ba Gui from three kings blessed land, while some could not. Some land spirits could summon rain and wind, and some could manipulate the flow of time freely.

"Let me try." Little Hu Immortal breathed roughly as she felt an intense mental pressure. She activated the immortal essence, and used all her strength until her cute tiny face turned red.

"Ahhh ahhh!’ She shouted in a childish way.

With a swoosh, the giant swamp crab vanished on the spot and was teleported about nine thousand steps away.

"We succeeded!" Little Hu Immortal’s face was red as she gasped.

Fang Yuan relaxed slightly.

"Ma... master, I just expended one bead of green grape immortal essence." Little Hu Immortal reported painfully.

"No matter." Fang Yuan’s expression was cold as he continued to order the foxes to attack the swamp crab.

After five minutes, the swamp crab got close again. Land spirit teleported it away once again.

And thus, another green grape immortal essence was expended.

Little Hu Immortal felt immense pity at this waste, and Fang Yuan’s heart was bleeding.

In the entire Hu Immortal blessed land, there were only seventy-eight beads of green grape immortal essence. Fang Yuan used one to feed fixed immortal travel Gu. Now he used another two to teleport this swamp crab.

He still had to use the immortal essence to refine Gu and manage the entire blessed land in the future.

There were many areas in which immortal essence were needed, but because Hu Immortal died already, these green grape immortal essence could not be replenished, every single bead used was one less left for the future.

Some crabs got through unguarded areas and charged up the mountain.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly at this and ordered the land spirit to unleash the might of Dan Hun mountain.

At once, the area the crab army walked on became a death domain. Numerous crabs died, lying on the ground with their bodies intact. Their souls, however, were completely destroyed, creating a peculiar scene.

"Unfortunately, Dang Hun mountain’s power is to continuously pressure the soul, but the desolate beast’s soul is strong and can last for a while. I cannot let it reach Dang Hun mountain and destroy this precious forbidden ground."

Fang Yuan did not participate in battle.

Even if he used his strength path Gu worms, he would not be able to break its shell.

Most importantly, the swamp crab had not used an Immortal Gu yet, Fang Yuan was uncertain if it had one or not.

The unknown was the greatest threat, Fang Yuan did not dare to strike rashly.

Soon, the swamp crab came again. Just as it was teleported away for the third time, little Hu Immortal’s expression changed.

Not waiting for Fang Yuan’s reaction, she stretched her hand to grab his arm, and they both vanished on the spot.

The next moment, a fierce lightning bolt landed on the area they were standing.

Boom!

With a thunderous sound, mountain rocks shattered.

The lightning paused for a moment before shooting back up.

It turned into a human-shaped lightning and emitted a loud growl.

This was the blue charm lightning shadow!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 417: Enduring the Earth Calamity (2/2)

Blue charm lightning shadow held its head and screamed in pain. The blue lightning flashed around without any target and only settled down after a long while.

Clearly, the lightning figure had suffered injuries in its soul when it entered Dang Hun mountain.

Inside Dang Hun Palace, Fang Yuan’s face became ashen as he looked at the scene in the smoke.

If it was not for the land spirit’s prompt teleportation just before, he might have been dead already.

Little Hu Immortal patted her chest, her face pale and showing lingering fear.

When it rains, it pours . The blue charm lightning shadow joining the battle no doubt made things worse!

Blue charm lightning shadow flew into a rage after its sneak attack did not succeed and started to collide continuously into Dang Hun mountain.

Every time it collided with Dang Hun mountain, there would be tremors in Dang Hun Palace. Soil and stones flew from the impact and large scorched pits were created from the attacks on the mountain; Fang Yuan felt his heart bleed at this scene.

This was Dang Hun mountain!

In this entire world, there was only one of it!

Fortunately, blue charm lightning shadow stopped its attacks after dozens of collisions. Its soul had received considerable damage and the lightning around it was becoming very disorderly. It did not dare to attack again.

During this time, the land spirit had teleported the swamp crab another two times. In total, they had wasted five beads of green grape immortal essence on it!

And the originally endless fox army was already at the brink of extinction.

What made Little Hu Immortal even more discouraged was that this desolate beast only had small wounds and was still moving forward stably like before. It was like an indestructible bone!

Whether it was blue charm lightning shadow or swamp crab, they both had one target; destroying the central area, expending the immortal essence and killing the land spirit. Their final target was to destroy the whole blessed land.

They were on the same faction and did not have any conflicts, instead they cooperated.

While Fang Yuan and the land spirit were having a headache due to this swamp crab, the blue charm lightning shadow gave up on Dang Hun mountain and changed its target to the blessed land itself.

It did not dare to collide against Dang Hun mountain anymore, so it began attacking the sky and the earth of this blessed land.

It destroyed everything it saw and created craters everywhere. Sky crumbled and showed scars like that of a broken mirror.

Fang Yuan felt deep helplessness.

"Not good! Master, there is a hole in the blessed land!" Little Hu Immortal spoke hurriedly.

Blue charm lightning shadow’s attacks shattered the world and created a hole.

"Cut away the surrounding area around the hole." Fang Yuan spoke indifferently, his tone cold as ice.

"What?" Little Hu Immortal opened her eyes wide and gave a cry of surprise.

If they cut off the area like this, they would not be able to restore it.

The holes in blessed lands could be repaired with immortal essence. If the holes were not patched in time and were allowed to enlarge, they would form a passage to the outside world.

Once there was a passage, those Gu Immortals outside the blessed land would absolutely charge in and make all kinds of schemes; at that time, the situation would be even more out of hand.

There were demonic path Gu Immortals on Tian Ti mountain.

Righteous path Gu Immortals did not dare to attack because they had a lot of businesses and assets. However, demonic path has no lack of demented people, they were lone forces and liked to take risks. In any case, Fang Yuan had done this a lot in his previous life.

Under Fang Yuan’s order, Little Hu Immortal repeatedly cut off nearby half a square kilometer of the blessed land.

Blue charm lightning shadow continually destroyed the world and created holes, while the land spirit continually cut them off.

The swamp crab charged towards Dang Hun mountain again and again; the land spirit had no choice but to teleport it time after time, the amount of green grape primeval essence consumed already reached thirteen beads.

" Sob sob , the blessed land has become smaller and so much immortal essence has been lost...." Tears started falling out of Little Hu Immortal’s eyes as she sobbed.

"Don’t cry!" Fang Yuan coldly shouted, his expression ashen.

"There is no point in delaying. Our only hope is to kill these two calamities! But I don’t have an attack type Immortal Gu, and it would be difficult to see any results from attacking the swamp crab with rank five Gu in a short time. My only option now is to gamble!" Fang Yuan gritted his teeth and revealed a crazed determination.

Desolate beasts were very strong, just by relying on their majestic physique and their fierce recovery ability, they could ignore most rank five Gu.

Especially this swamp crab; it had a strong defense and was upper-tier even among the desolate beasts. Fang Yuan had a lot of rank five Gu; turn gold Gu, soft bones Gu, pitch black Gu and so on, but using them against swamp crab would be like throwing pebbles in the lake; they could only create slight ripples. They needed to attack continuously for a slight bit of results.

However, Fang Yuan was unable to activate these Gu and participate in the offense.

If he left the mountain, he could meet with blue charm lightning shadow’s attacks. He could give the Gu worms to the land spirit to use, but he did not dare to take the risk.

Land spirits could also die, and if it was destroyed by blue charm lightning shadow, then Fang Yuan would have no means to even activate fixed immortal travel Gu.

Only Immortal Gu could change the situation.

Fang Yuan might have two Immortal Gu, but both did not have offensive abilities.

"Don’t teleport it anymore, let this damned swamp crab attack Dang Hun mountain!" Fang Yuan said resolutely and commanded the land spirit, "Release the whole might of Dang Hun mountain!"

Ringgggggggg!

Dang Hun mountain had been restricted by Little Hu Immortal the whole time, and right now, as it was finally let loose, dense fog started rising over the whole mountain. An enormous and formless soul shaking power burst out of the mountain, spreading as far as three thousand steps and eradicating everything in its surroundings.

Only Dang Hun Palace - under the land spirit’s control - was intact.

The giant swamp crab soon got close to Dang Hun mountain.

Under the power of Dang Hun mountain, its sturdy shell was unable to provide any defensive support. Its soul received fierce attacks, causing its movements to slow down.

However, this made it go berserk and it increased its speed by another fold, charging towards Dang Hun mountain.

Bam!

The enormous pincers heavily smashed on Dang Hun mountain like steel clamps.

The sturdy boulders were as fragile as flour as they were smashed by the attack, holes forming from the impact.

The huge crater was at least 0.6 acres wide. Smoke and dust flew all around and the entire Dang Hun Palace also shook from the tremors.

The land spirit Little Hu Immortal’s face paled from shock. Dang Hun Palace kept on shaking, dust started falling from the roof and there were fierce cracks on the walls and pillars.

Suddenly, Little Hu Immortal let out a tragic shout: "Not good! That blue charm lightning shadow has already moved towards the north and is openly destroying the sky and earth, creating many holes."

The image in front of Fang Yuan changed and showed the scene of blue charm lightning shadow attacking the world and creating holes.

The blessed land’s eastern and northern parts had been corroded by the remnant force of the earth calamities, and were weaker than other areas. The blue charm lightning shadow saw these weak points and started attacking them.

"Fortunately, we had settled the water and fire, otherwise the result of blue charm lightning shadow’s destruction would be ten times more severe! Master, what should we do?" Little Hu Immortal was feeling at a loss.

The situation had turned to an extremely terrible state.

The swamp crab was like a steel hammer directly pounding the heart and continuously depleting immortal essence while also wrecking Dang Hun mountain.

And blue charm lightning shadow was like an extremely sinister poison. It purposely searched for the weak points of the blessed land and stabbed at them. Every hole it created was like a fresh wound to the blessed land.

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with an ominous glint.

The situation was turning more critical, but it instead aroused his fighting spirit!

"Land spirit, every time you teleport the swamp crab, send it away by three thousand steps!"

"Yes!"

With the distance shortened, the immortal essence expenditure was also comparatively less. And Dang Hun mountain’s soul shaking power worked within three thousand steps, creating injuries to the swamp crab’s soul.

"Land spirit, cut off the whole northern area!" Fang Yuan gave another command.

"What?!" Little Hu Immortal was stupefied and almost did not dare to believe her ears.

Hu Immortal blessed land’s northern area was over 600km2, and Fang Yuan wanted to give up the whole region?

Once they cut off the area, Hu Immortal blessed land would lose this territory forever!

This was definitely a huge sacrifice by Fang Yuan! Hu Immortal blessed land had altogether 4000km2 of land and he was cutting off one-sixth of it!

"Master, this... this..." Little Hu Immortal hesitated.

"Do as I say!" Fang Yuan’s gaze was fixed on the image in front of him as he shouted in a stern voice.

Little Hu Immortal’s pink lips puckered and her eyes were filled with tears. The tears fell down and she started crying loudly.

Land spirits were the representatives of the blessed land; cutting off a part of the blessed land was the same as cutting their own flesh. And abandoning the whole northern area was like a person cutting off one of their legs.

"Master, don’t, don’t do it!" Little Hu Immortal cried loudly and begged.

However, Fang Yuan’s expression was ruthless and did not make the slightest compromise.

Master’s orders could not be violated, Little Hu Immortal could only endure the pain and cut off the whole northern area!

That blue charm lightning shadow was currently in the center of the northern area, destroying the world and creating holes. It suddenly felt something wrong and immediately moved, trying to charge out of the northern area.

However, because of 5km of distance, it could not escape and was trapped in the northern area.

It let out a mournful and sharp screech, its tone full of indignance. However, that bit of distance determined its fate, the blue charm lightning shadow could only follow the evaporation of the northern area and land in the outside world.

"Success!" Fang Yuan almost shouted in joy at this scene.

If it were normal times where the blue charm lightning shadow had no injuries in its soul, it could absolutely react in time. If not for its crazed attacks towards the world, expending its energy and causing its speed to fall, it could absolutely escape.

At the critical moment, Fang Yuan endured the pain and made a minor sacrifice to protect his bigger interests, finally settling this calamity!

As to what calamities it would create at the outside world, that was not part of Fang Yuan’s consideration.

Bam Bam Bam...

The whole Dang Hun mountain was still shaking, the desolate beast swamp crab’s soul was very strong and forcefully withstood the pressure, continuously attacking Dang Hun mountain.

The nearer it got to Dang Hun mountain, the stronger the soul shaking power became.

Little Hu Immortal teleported the swamp crab away time and again.

Right now, it was a battle of foundation between the two sides.

If the desolate beast’s soul foundation was strong and it overthrew Dang Hun mountain, it would be Fang Yuan’s defeat. Conversely, if Dang Hun mountain did not fall, it would be the earthly calamity’s defeat.

Bam Bam...

Dang Hun palace’s pillars crumbled and the beams of the roofs snapped. Dust and dirt flew everywhere, accompanied by Little Hu Immortal’s whimpering cries.

Fang Yuan was silently standing with a cold expression.

"Strength, I need more strength!" He clenched his fists and let out an indignant scream in his mind.

Why was it that despite growing so much, he was still so weak when facing heaven and earth, when facing fate?

"Then continue to grow, continue to become stronger, stronger, and even stronger!"

As he screamed silently, the swamp crab’s movements were gradually slowing down and eventually it collapsed at the waist of Dang Hun mountain... dead.

After an arduous process, the sixth earthly calamity was finally over.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan walked out of Dang Hun palace.

The pink crystal mountain had holes everywhere, broken rocks were scattered on the ground showing a pitiful sight. Fresh red blood, yellow murky mud, fox and crab corpses mixed together.

The desolate beast swamp crab’s humongous body was pressing on Dang Hun mountain’s mountain waist. It was like a small mountain, extremely eye catching.

The mild wind blew on Fang Yuan’s black hair, as his eerie black eyes stared at the battlefield.

The pungent smell of blood entered Fang Yuan’s nostrils.

Closely behind him, little Hu Immortal land spirit’s eyes were red, as there were tears on her face. She reported while sniffing.

"Master, we suffered immense losses. We lost about 666km2 of land, and we only have sixty-eight beads of the immortal essence left. Our fox army of four million and seven hundred thousand has fallen to three hundred and ten thousand. As for Gu worms, we lost around seven hundred thousand of them."

Hu Immortal managed her blessed land for so many years, after this calamity, the entire blessed land lost about forty years of development.

But Fang Yuan did not think so.

His expression was tired, but his gaze could not hide the happiness in his heart.

He survived this earthly calamity. It was an obstacle, now that he survived it, Fang Yuan had time to recuperate.

He had ample time to deal with the seventh earthly calamity.

"Stop crying, the blessed land is safe, that means our hope is safe too. Dang Hun mountain did not collapse, thus we have the resources to start over. Although we lost some land, in the short run, we cannot make use of that land anyway, it will not hinder our development."

Fang Yuan patted the land spirit’s head, consoling: "Look, not long later, Dang Hun mountain will be full of gutstones, and we will control another group of rockmen. Most importantly, that blue charm lightning shadow was exiled, now, we can develop without any worries. Hu Immortal blessed land will definitely flourish again!"

This battle was intense and tragic, there were countless foxes and crabs who died near Dang Hun mountain. At the same time, swamp crab’s soul was smashed into bits by the mountain’s vibrations, absorbed into Dang Hun mountain.

In the near future, not too long away, large numbers of gutstones will appear on Dang Hun mountain unceasingly.

"Master’s words... makes sense." Little Hu Immortal stopped crying and thought about it clearly, it seems he made sense.

The earthly calamity was like a trial, Hu Immortal blessed land got through it, there was not only great losses, but also great gains.

"What a pity, there were many Gu worms living in this swamp crab, but now Dang Hun mountain killed them all." Little Hu Immortal pouted, staring at this swamp crab’s corpse angrily.

"Rejoice, this desolate beast did not have an Immortal Gu, otherwise, we might not be standing here." Fang Yuan sighed deeply.

This was the luckiest part of this ordeal.

One crucial Immortal Gu with overwhelming ability can easily overturn the entire situation.

Even if this swamp crab had an Immortal Gu, and was killed by Fang Yuan, how Fang Yuan would catching this Immortal Gu was also a huge problem.

Maybe this wild Immortal Gu might replace the blue charm lightning shadow and become the next great threat to Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fang Yuan was satisfied enough to have survived this earthly calamity.

After all, he was only a rank four upper stage mortal Gu Master, yet he managed to kill a desolate beast that was a problem even for Gu Immortals.

"Land spirit, clean up the battlefield. Preserve the corpse of the swamp crab well, I am going to rest." Fang Yuan looked around once more before relaxing, immediately feeling strong fatigue.

He commanded over a million foxes, his soul and mind was overused, he needed sleep immediately.

"Okay." Little Hu Immortal answered quickly as she looked at the swamp crab’s shell with glowing eyes.

Every desolate beast was a moving treasure.

The blood, fur, bones, intestines in its body were great Gu refinement material.

"You accursed crab, I will tear you apart!" Little Hu Immortal raised her chin as her mouth opened, showing her small canine teeth, angrily walking towards the swamp crab while muttering to herself.

...

Fang Yuan had an extremely enjoyable sleep.

Three days later, he woke up, and laid on the bed, not wanting to move at all.

This time, he really relaxed his body and mind.

The sixth earthly calamity was over, Fang Yuan earned a lot of time for himself, he could finally catch a breath.

Ever since his rebirth, he had been plotting and resisting, especially on San Cha mountain, he overexerted himself thinking of the ways to get out of his predicament.

Now, he finally protected the blessed land. To Fang Yuan, this was a safe and stable place.

If Hu Immortal blessed land was destroyed, he would be in big trouble.

He exposed many things, let’s take for example, the fixed immortal travel Gu.

Fang Yuan was not a Gu Immortal, he could not keep this Immortal Gu into his aperture, once its aura was leaked, Gu Immortals would easily sense it and come to snatch it from him.

Now, fixed immortal travel Gu was placed inside Hu Immortal blessed land, and because there was immortal essence, he could feed it without worry.

Other than that, there was also the refinement of second aperture Gu.

Without little Hu Immortal to control the immortal essence, Fang Yuan could not refine this Immortal Gu, he had to at least reach Gu Immortal realm first. By then, divine travel Gu might’ve been refined by another person already, it would be too late.

Having protecting Hu Immortal blessed land, it was a great help to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan lied down for a while before getting up to eat. After filling up his stomach, he went to sleep again.

This time, he slept for ten hours, he woke up slowly as he felt all the fatigue had been washed away. His mind was clear, his head was working well, and his condition was as good as it could be.

"Where is the land spirit?" He stomped his feet, calling.

Little Hu Immortal tore through space with a swoosh, appearing before him.

"Master, I have dismantled that crab, we can sell it for a good price!" Little Hu Immortal’s face was red as she was extremely satisfied at breaking apart the culprit for the blessed land’s predicament.

"Oh right, master, there are three letters here, they were sent in from the loophole on the day of the calamity." Little Hu Immortal said, taking out three Gu and handed them to Fang Yuan.

When loopholes enlarge enough to become tunnels, people could enter and exit. But before that, only Gu worms could enter through the small gaps.

These three Gu were all letter path Gu worms.

One had a paper crane appearance, it was the rank three lightning symbol paper crane Gu. One was a green bird, rank five and looking lifelike, it was the letter sending green bird Gu. One looked like a sword, it was the rank three flying sword letter Gu.

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone as he took out the letter sending green bird Gu.

The green bird transformed into a letter, it was sent by the rank seven Gu Immortal Feng Jiu Ge!

Fang Yuan was not surprised, the moment he saw this green bird Gu, he had a feeling it was him.

Feng Jiu Ge’s tone in his letter was calm, he first expressed his admiration and praise for Fang Yuan, before stating his intention – to arrange for a battle with between Fang Yuan and his daughter Feng Jin Huang!

It seems that after Feng Jin Huang returned to Spirit Affinity House, she had been gloomy, moody, and dispirited. During this period, she had been cultivating diligently, to reclaim her pride. The battle was initiated by her, she wants to have a fair and square fight with Fang Yuan, betting the glory of Spirit Affinity House and Immortal Crane Sect!

"Hmph, you want to battle, do I have to agree?" Fang Yuan scoffed in disdain.

His time was so tight, there was not enough time to cultivate, Fang Yuan would not waste his time and effort accepting Feng Jin Huang’s challenge.

Feng Jin Huang was born in a great family, she had Gu Immortals as her parents, and a sect to support her. Even if she had a blessed land, and the calamity came, there would be a huge group of people fighting it for her.

But Fang Yuan was all alone, he had to rely on himself for everything. He had no mood to play around with this rich missy.

"What a stupid idea, she wants to reclaim her glory, so I must play along with her? Laughable!" Fang Yuan snorted. Different from others, he did not fear Feng Jiu Ge. That is because soon, Feng Jiu Ge would be called up by the heavenly court, and would successfully ascend, it will not be easy for him to come down and enter central continent again.

"But in this letter, it seems that this pair of father and daughter think that I am a disciple of Immortal Crane Sect, what is going on?" Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with suspicion.

The other party was a Gu Immortal, they would naturally not make such a lowly mistake. That means, there were hidden complications.

Fang Yuan retrieved the flying sword letter Gu.

Opening it and taking a look, it was another challenge letter!

But in this letter, it was all swearing and scolding, almost all of Fang Yuan’s ancestors were mentioned, even Immortal Crane Sect’s honor was used to incite Fang Yuan to accept the battle. Finally, there was even a threat, if Fang Yuan did not agree, he would reveal the contents of this letter to the public, and let the world know that Fang Yuan was a coward!

Fang Yuan looked carefully, lightly smiling: "Oh, it is this rascal Jian Yi Sheng."

Jian Yi Sheng, a metal path Gu Master, his appearance and personality were very perverted. He was most skilled at sneak attacks, and hated suffering losses the most.

He was one of the demonic path Gu Immortals on Tian Ti mountain, he was truly a mean and devious coward.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, he got ambushed by him many times. He eventually made Fang Yuan angry enough to summon the blood sea, forcing this Jian Yi Sheng to hide in his blessed land, afraid to battle. He blocked him for twenty years, until Jian Yi Sheng realized that he had angered the wrong person. He could not take it, and eventually kneeled down before Fang Yuan to surrender, without a trace of a Gu Immortal’s dignity.

As for why this person was challenging Fang Yuan, it was because he was extremely unlucky.

After Fang Yuan discarded a portion of the blessed land, and threw the blue charm lightning shadow towards Tian Ti mountain, Jian Yi Sheng coincidentally met with it.

At this time, although Jian Yi Sheng was a Gu Immortal, he had no Immortal Gu, and was thrashed by the blue charm lightning shadow. He escaped back to his blessed land pathetically, and finally managed to get free of the blue charm lightning shadow.

After he got home, he counted his losses, and was filled with rage, stomping his feet. After finding the culprit, he sent a flying sword letter Gu, challenging Fang Yuan.

"Hmph, he knows I am a mortal, but still challenged me as a Gu Immortal. He even wrote his letter so righteously, talking about fairness... this piece of shit is still as shameless as I remember. But, why did he think I am a member of Immortal Crane Sect?"

Fang Yuan opened the lightning symbol paper crane Gu with great suspicion.

He opened it slightly, and his pupils shrunk, showing a surprised expression: "What! Fang Zheng is alive?"

Reading on, his suspicions were cleared.

"So that’s it, this He Feng Yang from Immortal Crane Sect is a smart person, using this method to eliminate his competitors."

"But he greatly underestimated me. Why would I join Immortal Crane Sect? But what the letter mentioned is exactly what I need now."

Thinking so, Fang Yuan made up his mind.

He called the land spirit: "Go, open the blessed land slightly, and let the Gu Master who resembles me in."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Tian Ti mountain stood high above the clouds, reaching 3000km in total.

It was situated at the center of Central Continent, it was the land of inheritances, the mountain of saints. During ancient times, it was the ladder of immortals, able to ascend to the heavenly court.

Immortal Crane Sect’s elite disciples were now standing at the foot of Tian Ti mountain, having waited for an hour already.

"How much longer do we need to wait?"

"This Fang Yuan is putting up too much airs right?"

"Ssh, quiet. He is the brother of Gu Yue Fang Zheng, the owner of Hu Immortal blessed land!"

"Speaking of that, this brother of Fang Zheng’s is really amazing, he managed to defeat Feng Jin Huang, Xiao Qi Xing, Ying Sheng Ji and the others."

"So what? If I had a supreme elder supporting me in the dark, helping me to use fixed immortal travel Gu, I would be able to win the blessed land as well."

"Our clan’s elders are truly smart. Using Fang Zheng to attract their attention, while the real trump card was Fang Yuan all along!"

...

In order to make this a reality, Immortal Crane Sect lied to all their disciples. Immortal Crane Sect’ disciples now knew, that there was someone named Gu Yue Fang Yuan in their sect.

During these three months, he had become the hottest topic that everyone was discussing. He was mysterious and low-key, it made people curious. Shocking the world in one move, he obtained Hu Immortal blessed land for Immortal Crane Sect, and even allowed Immortal Crane Sect to stand out among the ten sects, it made the other disciples feel proud.

All their discussions entered Fang Zheng’s ears.

Fang Zheng was stand at the front of these people, his gaze was dim as he looked at Tian Ti mountain.

These days, he had been a walking corpse, he did not know how he survived the last few days.

After Fang Zheng left QIng Mao mountain, he swore to exact revenge, to get justice for his deceased clansmen.

He carried a great hatred with him, the objective of revenge was sustaining and motivating him to cultivate. He was more hardworking than all the other disciples, he did not even slack for a second.

He had fantasized many times, the scene when he finds Fang Yuan – defeating him and making him kneel on the ground, repenting for all that he did on Qing Mao mountain. The clansmen in the afterlife would finally rest in peace after that.

Thus, on Dang Hun mountain, he did not give up despite numerous occasions of wanting to do so.

Every time he thought of Fang Yuan, there would be a strong driving force in his heart, supporting him to continue climbing.

He wanted to get Hu Immortal Inheritance, not only because he did not want to let his master down, or disappointing the clan’s expectations, it was also because his chances of getting revenge would be much greater if he had the blessed land.

But, he did not expect, that life would come hitting him this hard and suddenly.

Gu Yue Fang Yuan, his blood related brother, the main character of his numerous nightmares, appeared on the mountain top! Under everyone’s view, he obtained the inheritance, even Gu Immortals could do nothing to him!

Fang Zheng who failed returned to the sect.

Shock!

Pain!

Loss!

Fear!

He knew the clan’s lies, he knew the truth, but precisely so, the shadow in his heart grew by many times.

This trauma had been nurturing in him since he was young.

Why is brother so smart? But I am so stupid!

Why was it that I cultivated so hard, yet I still lost to Fang Yuan?

Why did this happen in southern border, and also in central continent?!

"Is it true that I Gu Yue Fang Zheng, am destined to live in his shadow my entire life, never to surpass him?!" Every time Fang Zheng thought of this, there would be an indignant feeling in his heart, urging him to cultivate more.

But this time, it was different.

It was different.

Thinking of the mission the clan just passed to him, Fang Zheng’s body shuddered.

The blessed land was in Fang Yuan’s control, in order to obtain Hu Immortal blessed land, the sect was recruiting Fang Yuan. As long as he handed over the blessed land, he would be Immortal Crane Sect’s elder.

Central continent sect members were classified from low to high as outer disciple, inner disciple, elite disciple, legacy disciple.

Above disciples, there were sect elder, often at rank four cultivation, controlling the many aspects of the sect. Above sect elder was sect leader, he had to be at least rank five middle stage, and was the key person in charge.

And above the clan leader, there were supreme elders.

These supreme elders were all Gu Immortals, they were rarely seen during normal times, secluded in cultivation. Only when the sect faces a life and death situation, or when something important happens, they would appear and let the world know the true power of Immortal Crane Sect, as one of the top ten sects!

"Since I joined Immortal Crane Sect, I had cultivated so diligently these years, from outer disciple, I became an inner disciple, and from inner disciple, I became an elite disciple. During the sect examination, I emerged as the top disciple of among the elite disciples. But now, Fang Yuan just has to say a word, and he would become a sect elder. Any disciple who sees him have to bow and pay respects!"

Fang Zheng felt a great pain in his heart every time he thought about this.

If Fang Yuan really became an elder, he would have to bow and pay respects to this enemy every time he saw him! Was there fun in such a life? Was there meaning in living?

"Master, has all the effort and hardwork I put in been in vain?" At this point, Fang Zheng was standing at Tian Ti mountain foot, waiting to meet Fang Yuan. He had unavoidably fallen into deep self-doubt.

Lord Sky Crane quickly consoled him: "Fang Zheng, you have to adjust your mindset. Immortal Crane Sect sacrificed a lot for Hu Immortal Inheritance, we even used an Immortal Gu! For the sect, we have to look at this from the big picture, and put down our personal grudges temporarily. Fang Zheng, you have to understand, it was Immortal Crane Sect who nurtured you, now that the sect needs you make some sacrifices, you cannot forget your roots!"

Although he said that, Lord Sky Crane was sighing in his heart.

He understood Fang Zheng’s personality, thus his heart was even more worried.

All along, the notion of revenge was driving Fang Zheng forward like a pillar, it was also his obsession in this cultivation journey.

But now, the sect’s orders were for Fang Zheng to let down this obsession, this was more fatal than any injury. Most likely, after suffering such an impact, Fang Zheng would no longer have any drive left, he would let himself dwell in self-pity.

"But what can we do? That is a blessed land, and it even contains a forbidden ground like Dang Hun mountain! The gustones on the mountain can be used by our disciples and make our entire sect’s strength surge. Other than that, Fang Yuan has blood skull Gu and fixed immortal travel Gu on him! These things are way too valuable, they are so important, how can an elite disciple compare to them at all?"

Lord Sky Crane felt sad in his heart, but he still said to Fang Zheng: "My good disciple, you have to control your desire for revenge. A little impatience spoils great plans, treat this as a trial of your endurance! After seeing your brother, do not attack. Within the blessed land, you are not his match."

Saying so, Lord Sky Crane recalled what He Feng Yang instructed him —

"I know the enmity between Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng. If needed, we can sacrifice

Fang Zheng, you can negotiate in place of Fang Zheng!"

He Feng Yang’s pressure was great at the moment, all the supreme elders were looking at his actions.

"Master, you are telling me to treat this as a trial? I... I will try." Fang Zheng loosened his clenched fist, then clenched it again, he was struggling in his heart, he felt pain and anger.

If someone swore to get revenge, and cultivated to succession, only to find that his enemy had died. That is pain.

If someone swore to get revenge, and cultivated to succession, but found that he could not beat his enemy, and that his enemy was still living well. That is much greater pain.

If someone swore to get revenge, and cultivated to succession,but found out that not only was he unable to beat his enemy, he even had to use a fake friendly attitude to negotiate with him, hoping the enemy would become his superior. This was the greatest pain of all pain.

"Hehe, Fang Zheng, don’t think much of it. Fang Yuan might not be having a good time, there is a calamity in the blessed land. You cannot imagine the might of a calamity. Even if your brother had an Immortal Gu, he is still a mortal. Soon, he will experience the terrifying powers of an earthly calamity. By then, the blessed land will be full of loopholes, and he would have suffered a huge loss. You have a high chance of succeeding in this trip." Lord Sky Crane consoled him again.

Fang Zheng heard this and his mood became slightly more relaxed.

"The earthly calamity is beginning." He Feng Yang muttered, he had been staying behind the scenes, firstly, it was to protect these elite disciples, secondly, it was to prevent the ill-intentions of other Gu Masters, and thirdly, if Fang Yuan could not block this earthly calamity, he would have to help out.

At this moment, he was starting at the spot where Hu Immortal blessed land was hiding in on Tian Ti mountain, sensing that there was an aura of destruction.

Soon, his lips curled into a smile as there was a peculiar sight on Tian Ti mountain.

Pieces after pieces of grassland appeared on Tian Ti mountain. They were like clouds or fog, illusory and not real.

How could there be a grassland on a mountain?

This was the loophole of the blessed land, and a large loophole at that, allowing outsiders to see the scene inside the blessed land.

Such a loophole could only fit Gu worms, there was still some way to go before Gu Masters can go in.

Lord Sky Crane at the other side had already called out: "The loophole appeared, send the lightning symbol paper crane Gu in."

Fang Zheng gritted his teeth, under everyone’s supervision, he injected primeval essence and activated the Gu worm.

Lightning symbol paper crane Gu was fast as lightning, flying into the loophole.

But right after, the grassland image turned into a lump of primeval essence, as it dissipated in the air. Lightning symbol paper crane Gu flew for two rounds before flying back to Fang Zheng’s hands.

"This Fang Yuan is giving up a portion of the blessed land, completely removing it! It seems he is worried that Gu Masters might entire when the loophole turns into a tunnel." He Feng Yang was slightly shocked, but sneered soon after: "Go ahead, let’s see how much land you can discard. Every piece of land you abandon is akin to giving up your own flesh."

But immediately after, He Feng Yang’s expression changed.

"He’s still continuing? He’s already thrown a few square kilometers worth of land! He is really bold, no wonder he managed to snatch the inheritance."

But a few moments later, He Feng Yang’s expression turned ugly.

"It seems that this earthly calamity is very dangerous this time. But how much land is he going to give up? He has already thrown tens of square kilometers of land away. This wastrel!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

On Tian Ti mountain, loopholes appeared one after another with increasing frequency.

Not only were Immortal Crane Sect’s elite disciples watching carefully, many Gu Immortals were also keeping watch behind the scenes.

During this period, Fang Zheng tried three times, finally managing to send the lightning symbol paper crane Gu into the blessed land.

A green bird spread its wings and flew into the loopholes as well, reaching the Hu Immortal blessed land.

"This is a letter sending green bird Gu! What is Feng Jiu Ge trying to do?" He Feng Yang saw this and his expression turned dark.

But at the next moment, his pupils shrunk to pin-size, his mouth opened wide as he shocked an extremely flabbergasted expression.

"My god! He’s discarding such a big area of the blessed land?!"

He Feng yang was tongue tied, he was stunned like a statue.

Fang Yuan discarded 600km2 worth of land, Tian Ti mountain waist was full of the blessed land’s projected image, grassland filled everyone’s vision.

A Gu Immortal was the first to react, appearing with the flash of a sword.

"Hahaha, what a big piece of blessed land, it is mine, don’t even think of snatching it from me!" Jian Yi Sheng shouted, wanting to pull this piece of land into his blessed land, expanding his territory.

But at this moment, a lightning flash appeared.

"F*ck!" Jian YI Sheng was caught unguarded, he shouted profanities as the blue charm lightning shadow sent him flying like a cannonball.

But Jian Yi Sheng was not to be trifled with, he immediately engaged in battle with blue charm lightning shadow.

They created a huge commotion, the earth rumbled as Immortal Crane Sect’s elite disciples watched in shock.

The more shocking thing was, over a dozen people appeared next, taking a piece of this 600km2 land at lightning speed like a pack of hungry wolves.

"You goddamn bastards!"

"I lured the monster away, I made the most effort, but you guys didn’t even leave me a piece of the land!"

"I f*ck all your ancestors!"

"I curse you all to have constipation, all your children will be born with a chicken’s tail!"

Jian Yi Sheng shouted angrily, he had never suffered such a great loss in his life, getting thrashed by the blue charm lightning shadow so pathetically.

"And there is that little rascal Fang Yuan, he is really evil and daring, scheming against me like this! Fight me fairly if you have guts!" He sent out the flying sword letter Gu.

Flying sword letter Gu was extremely fast, it could tear through space, even without a loophole, it could enter the blessed land.

Immortal Crane Sect’s gang was in a daze.

This, was this the mannerism of a Gu Immortal?

"This Jian Yi Sheng is a complete disgrace to us Gu Immortals..." He Feng Yang covered his face in shame.

At this time, a bright white-gold light appeared.

There was a red door in the light, 30 meters tall, it had a rainbow colored plaque.

Pink colored clouds gathered, as the rainbow light shone on Fang Zheng’s body. In the blink of an eye, Fang Zheng vanished on the spot.

Sending blue charm lightning shadow or the desolate beast swamp crab out of the blessed land was beyond little Hu Immortal’s abilities. But to transport one Fang Zheng, it was easy.

"He got in!" Seeing this, He Feng Yang’s heart eased.

A flash of lightning bolt descended from the sky, it was the blue charm lightning shadow. But the white-gold light moved the red door away in time.

By a hair’s breadth, the blue charm lightning shadow’s intention of entering the blessed land was thwarted.

Fang Zheng felt his surroundings turn blur before he regained his sight, and the environment around him had changed completely.

He was standing on a grassland, grass was all around him. There were clouds above him, extremely thick and dark clouds. Not far away, there are several lakes with ripples on the surface.

"I reached Hu Immortal blessed land." Fang Zheng quickly reacted, all his Gu worms were sealed now, it was the same as during the competition.

A smoky lump of shadow appeared before him, expanding into the size of a mirror. Fang Yuan's figure appeared in the mirror, he was sitting with his back leaning on the chair. He was crossing his right leg over his left leg as his left hand was placed on his knee, while his right hand was holding his chin softly on top of the chair handle.

His black hair was casually hanging over his face as his eyes squinted, showing a lazy and casual demeanour, but also gave people a sense of danger, dark and mysterious.

"My cute little brother, to think I would see you again in Central Continent." Fang Yuan spoke.

His voice was so foreign, yet so familiar to Fang Zheng.

Fang Zheng's body shuddered, his eyes burst forth with intense rage as he growled: "Gu Yu Fang Yuan, you crazy and hopeless demon, you murdered your entire clan! I will kill you personally!"

Saying so, he rushed towards Fang Yuan.

But this 'Fang Yuan' was only a projection from the smoke, after Fang Zheng charged towards it, it dissipated, but quickly gathered back into a perfect image of Fang Yuan again.

Fang Zheng pointed at Fang Yuan, shouting: "Fang Yuan, you don't even have the courage to face me? You coward! Shameless traitor, you are an inhuman animal. So what if you died, to think that you murdered your entire clan just to preserve your life. Such an outrageous act, how could you do it? Are you still human?!"

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan laughed heartily, casually leaning on his chair: "My cute little brother, you are still stupid as ever. Regardless of whether I did anything, they were going to die. If that is so, why can't I live? If not for my counterattack, do you think you would be brought back to Central Continent? In fact, I saved your life. I am your benefactor."

"Dog shit! You are distorting the truth, you are unbelievably shameless!" Fang Zheng heard Fang Yuan's words, and was extremely angered by it.

Fang Yuan's laughter came to a stop, he sighed: "Fang Zheng, my brother, you are a huge disappointment. All these years, you have not improved one bit. No matter how high your cultivation is, you are just a pawn piece. Alright, let's talk business. I've seen Immortal Crane Sect's letter, don't bother mentioning those ridiculous promises like making me an elder. We can however, go through with the transaction and deals."

Fang Zheng's chest was moving up and down, his breathing was heavy as he stared at Fang Yuan's image with hatred.

This pair of twins, they looked almost identical, and had closest blood relation in them. Unfortunately, they were life-and-death enemies.

Fang Zheng took a few deep breaths, holding in his killing intent towards Fang Yuan, thinking of the clan's instructions: "Within Hu Immortal blessed land, our sect is not interested in the fox groups or Gu worms. But the gutstones on Dang Hun mountain have some value. We will send disciples here by batches, you will bring them to Dang Hun mountain..."

"Stop." Before Fang Zheng finished speaking, he was interrupted by Fang Yuan: "I do not believe your Immortal Crane Sect's sincerity."

"This is what I want, prepare it for me as soon as possible, and hand it over to me. I do not have primeval stones, but I have the swamp crab’s corpse to trade instead. The details are in the letter, go back and consider it."

Once he finished speaking, a small lightning bolt flew and landed in Fang Zheng’s hand.

It was that lightning symbol paper crane Gu.

This lightning symbol paper crane Gu had already been refined by Fang Yuan, and was now used by him. The contents included the Gu worms and materials Fang Yuan wanted, as well as details on the swamp crab’s blood, meat, bones, and shell etc.

Fang Zheng raised his head, and wanted to speak, but he saw the scene before him change — he had been transported out already.

"Check around, are there any suspicious things?" After Fang Zheng left, Fang Yuan did not relax, but instead gave instructions to land spirit.

The blessed land could not restrict Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan did not meet with Fang Zheng personally because he was worried about him bringing an Immortal Gu.

Immortal Crane Sect had a lot of resources, they had quite a lot of Immortal Gu.

Although Fang Zheng’s aperture was not able to carry Immortal Gu, as the aura would easily leak, all sorts of things could happen in the Gu world, there were definitely methods to conceal an Immortal Gu’s aura. Fang Yuan had to guard against this.

The land spirit checked for a few times and there were no problems, at this point, Fang Yuan finally relaxed.

"After the earthly calamity, will the situation improve from here?" Fang Yuan squinted his eyes, considering his current predicament.

The current situation was way more advantageous for him than he expected.

In order to devour Hu Immortal blessed land alone, Immortal Crane Sect shield him. Such guts, it was expected of one of the ten great sects of central continent!

Benefits above everything, enemies and friends were all built on this basis.

Using common words, it was the foresight of a ’big picture’. Restricted by the sect system, and under the pressure of the ’big picture’, so what if Fang Zheng hated him? He still had to come over and discuss the transactions.

"Once they realize that they could not capture me so easily, that being forceful would just destroy everything, Immortal Crane Sect would naturally come to negotiate with me, to make transactions. Even if outsiders find out, there would be no rumors of ’allying with the demonic path’. That is because, Immortal Crane Sect had already admitted that I am a part of their sect! It was a meticulous decision."

"But this is what I needed too. Even if this disciple identity is so fake, it is enough to drive away the other forces. Looking at Jian Yi Sheng and Feng Jiu Ge’s letters, one can easily tell how precious this identity is." Fang Yuan thought about it, he did not mind this.

The truth is, he is still in the demonic path, he is still alone, doing things his way, no one could restrict him.

But at the same time, he could do transactions, and exchange for resources he needed.

"Originally, I wanted to go to Lang Ya blessed land and snatch connecting heaven Gu. But now that I can deal with Immortal Crane Sect, I do not need to do that. Although, with Hu Immortal blessed land being in my possession, Immortal Crane Sect would not let this go, they are making deals at this point because of wariness, and that they have no choice for now. I cannot be careless and give them a weakness to exploit."

Fang Yuan reminded himself. As for his brother Fang Zheng, that was secondary.

Killing him would only be for the blood skull Gu, to raise the aperture’s aptitude by a little. The problem it would bring is making an enemy out of Immortal Crane Sect, and putting himself into grave danger.

Killing his own brother is a pure demonic act, if outsiders find out, it would be interpreted as Fang Yuan betraying Immortal Crane Sect. At that point, the ten sects and numerous demonic Gu Immortals would place their greedy gazes towards Hu Immortal blessed land.

There is no such thing as an absolute secret, once the matter is exposed, even if Immortal Crane Sect wanted to continue acting, they would not be able to.

Fang Yuan’s current situation was, raising aptitude was less important than his other objectives.

Even if his aptitude was raised, he still needed resources to cultivate.

The most important point now was to stabilize the situation and make full use of the blessed land’s resources to convert them into his own strength!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

He Feng Yang carefully read the detailed content of the lightning letter.

Fang Yuan only made three types of requests; primeval stones, Gu worms and materials.

"Requesting for five million primeval stones? No problem! Let alone five million, it is no issue even if he wanted ten million or fifty million." He Feng Yang grinned.

When one reached the Gu Immortal realm, their attention was on immortal essence. They could have any amount of primeval stones they wanted, it was simply not a thing of concern.

"Huh? Five spring egg Gu?" He Feng Yang was slightly dazed.

Spring egg Gu was a rank five Gu that had the appearance of a white goose egg; it was obtained from killing specific eggmen.

Placing spring egg Gu deep underground could form a spirit spring eye. That means, it could grow a spirit spring.

Every spring egg Gu represented a small scale spirit spring.

Every small scale spirit spring could produce at least a hundred million primeval stones from the moment they formed till they disappeared!

However, spring egg Gu’s price was much higher than hundred million primeval stones. Gu Immortals would frequently buy it and plant it in their blessed land to form spirit springs and provide spiritual essence to all living beings.

Sufficient spirit springs meant the primeval energy in the blessed land would be thicker and be beneficial to the cultivation and nurturing of Gu worms.

Conversely, if there were no spirit springs, the primeval energy in the blessed land would be created by diluting the immortal essence.

From a certain aspect, spirit springs could cut down the use of immortal essence.

"To think this Fang Yuan, a mere mortal, also knows the importance of spring egg Gu. But this Gu, even Gu Immortals have a lot of demand for it, how could we give you five of them? Three is enough, the Hu Immortal blessed land you are managing will sooner or later become our Immortal Crane Sect’s property."

He Feng Yang’s gaze moved over the list.

Below, Fang Yuan had mentioned many Gu worms.

"What does he want so many low ranked Gu worms for?" He Feng Yang felt some doubts.

If Fang Yuan demanded those rare and powerful rank five Gu worms, it would be understandable. However, what he was requesting for were some rank two and rank three Gu worms. Although he mentioned some rank four Gu, it was just a few.

"Hmph, I understand. This kid has strong vigilance! He is afraid that if he directly asks for rank five Gu, we would tamper with it, and so he intends to refine the Gu himself. Gu refinement process involves many subtle details, if the Gu worms had been tampered with, it would definitely destroy the whole refinement process. Conversely, a successfully refined Gu would be completely clean and secure."

He Feng Yang felt somewhat irritated.

He originally had such an intention, but now he knew that this scheme could not be implemented and was already useless.

"This kid is not easy to deal with... but, how would he know so many Gu refinement recipes? His background is definitely not simple!" He Feng Yang felt some apprehension inwardly.

He thought for a while more and laughed.

"This Fang Yuan doesn’t know what’s good for him! Are Gu so easy to refine? Every Gu refinement needs huge resources. The higher the rank of the Gu to be refined, the higher the chances of failure and higher the losses. You kid, just how old are you? Gu refinement cannot succeed just with innate talent, even more importantly, you need experience and accumulation."

He Feng Yang did not know the exact details of Fang Yuan, and even more importantly he did not know that fixed immortal travel Gu was refined by Fang Yuan. If he knew, he would definitely not be able to laugh.

He Feng Yang continued to read.

"Huh? He has requested relic Gu too. A yellow gold relic Gu and three purple crystal relic Gu?" He Feng Yang’s gaze paused as he understood Fang Yuan’s scheme.

Fang Yuan had rank four upper stage cultivation, this was already noticed by the ten sects’ Gu Immortals and was not a secret.

If Fang Yuan used a yellow gold relic Gu, he would be at rank four peak stage. After advancing to rank five initial stage, he could use the three purple crystal relic Gu one by one and directly jump to rank five peak stage.

Immortal Crane Sect was one of the ten great sects of Central Continent and had abundant resources, it naturally had these relic Gu. Every year, there would be disciples and elders who would contribute the relic Gu they obtained to the sect in exchange for contribution points. And the sect would place these green copper to purple crystal relic Gu as rewards for sect missions.

He Feng Yang could easily bring out these relic Gu, but letting Fang Yuan advance to rank five so fast did not sit well with Immortal Crane Sect’s benefits!

"Hehehe, I will first hand over one purple crystal Gu to create envy in this kid. These relic Gu are the things he wants the most, we will use it to get a hold on him and make him exchange them with guts Gu!"

He Feng Yang continued to read the letter, after the Gu worms were names of some materials.

These materials were also common for the most part. Although there were some precious Gu refinement materials listed, they were few in number.

"It seems this kid’s main plan is to refine Gu. Hmph, you want to refine? Go ahead. But why does he need star heron bile, toad stones, ascension wine, and these other extremely uncommon materials?"

There were very few recipes that included the use of these materials, some of these materials had value that could compare to parts of a desolate beast. Even He Feng Yang would have to expend some effort to get these things.

"Whether this kid is deliberately mystifying it to scatter my attention or is really refining some rare Gu, I cannot give all these materials to him at once. I need to make him feel anxious to probe out his true intent. Hmm, for this transaction, I will give him a vat of ascension wine."

This ascension wine was a top quality wine brewed by Immortal Crane Sect’s supreme third elder. Over a hundred years ago, He Feng Yang had officially sided with the third elder. In the banquet, the supreme third elder was in a great mood and rewarded him with three vats of ascension wine.

Supreme third elder liked drinking wine and it was one of his hobbies. However, He Feng Yang did not like to drink and ascension wine was worthless to him.

He Feng Yang saw each part of the desolate beast listed at the end of the letter.

He licked his lips.

This was a desolate beast, an existence that could be compared to Gu Immortals!

"Such a complete desolate beast corpse, looks like the earthly calamity this time was the desolate beast calamity. This kid’s luck is really good, using Dang

Hun mountain to destroy the swamp crab’s soul and obtain such a complete corpse."

He Feng Yang instantly guessed the details of the earthly calamity.

"We can completely procure this swamp crab, but why has he not requested rockmen? Could it be that he does not know of the rockmen because of limited knowledge? Or is it because the group that migrated at that time is still alive? There is too little information."

What was the situation in Hu Immortal blessed land, how did Fang Yuan obtained fixed immortal travel Gu, who was behind him; He Feng Yang did not know the answers to any of these questions.

The five great regions - central continent, southern border, northern plains, western desert and eastern sea - were mutually independent, separated by barriers and each of them were incomparably vast.

Immortal Crane Sect had yet to grasp the whole central continent, let alone make contact with every region of southern border.

However, after Fang Yuan seized Hu Immortal’s inheritance, Immortal Crane Sect had already sent elders to southern border to investigate.

...

Several days later.

"We’re here, plant the spirit spring at this location." On the grassland, Fang Yuan stopped walking and said to little Hu Immortal following behind him.

Little Hu Immortal nodded her little head and raised her palm upon which a spring egg Gu flew out.

Spring egg Gu landed on the ground and drilled deep underground. Within moments, Fang Yuan felt the ground shake and could hear the sound of flowing water becoming louder rapidly.

And then, a fountain of spring water spurted out of the ground and flew as high as twenty to thirty meters.

The spring water was milky white and produced water vapor. After a few breaths’ time, Fang Yuan could feel the primeval energy in the air becoming very dense.

"Primeval energy is the origin energy of all living beings; with the increase in primeval energy, the land will become more fertile, vegetation will flourish and beast groups will prosper even more, there will be a lot of benefits to the rockmen as well." Fang Yuan nodded his head in satisfaction.

The transaction with Immortal Crane Sect was a success. Fang Yuan sold the whole swamp crab’s corpse and in return obtained most of the things he needed.

Among them were three spring egg Gu.

This spring egg Gu was a rank five Gu and was a one time expendable Gu that could turn into a small scale spirit spring.

It had a high demand on primeval essence to be activated and even rank five upper stage Gu Masters would have to exhaust all their primeval essence to succeed in activating it.

Fang Yuan was only at rank four upper stage and was absolutely unable to activate spring egg Gu. But fortunately, he had the little Hu Immortal land spirit as his helper.

Fang Yuan buried these three spring egg Gu near the rockmen tribes.

After the trial of the sixth earthly calamity, there were only a few pitiful fox groups left in Hu Immortal blessed land and were not worth nurturing. Fang Yuan thus put all his attention on the rockmen tribes.

Now, there were only a few hundreds rockmen left, much lesser than the foxes. However, with Dang Hun mountain and these three spirit springs, the rockmen tribes could rapidly grow and develop.

"Hehehe, Master, this is awesome! With three spirit springs, our green grape immortal essence expenditure will greatly reduce." Little Hu Immortal looked at the spurting spring water and narrowed her eyes in happiness.

"These three spirit springs can produce at least three hundred million primeval stones and can last for fifty to sixty years. But if we look at the whole blessed land, it is far from enough. It is lacking even for the southern area of the blessed land." Fang Yuan calculated.

Spirit springs were classified into small scale, mid-scale and large scale.

Small scale spirit springs could last for fifty to sixty years; mid-scale spirit spring could last for about a hundred years and more; large scale spirit spring could last for centuries.

The spurting spring water loosened the surrounding soil and the spring mouth gradually enlarged. The force of the spring water was not enough and its height slowly reduced.

In four to five days, the spring mouth would form and the spirit spring would start flowing, spreading to the surrounding soil. In several months, the dense primeval energy would condense into the first batch of primeval stones.

"Let’s return. The rockmen tribes should be having the time of their lives now." Fang Yuan commanded the land spirit.

The next moment, the two teleported to Dang Hun mountain.

"Heavens, so many gutstones!"

"The place is in a mess, there definitely was a huge battle here. Maybe that male immortal is already dead."

"Our rockmen tribes’ glorious days are coming!!"

"We will have endless offsprings. Tribe leader Yan Yong, we can establish the world’s largest rockmen tribe!"

The rockmen cheered and shouted, indulging in this moment of happiness and fortune.

Dang Hun mountain was filled with gutstones. There was one every five steps.

The rockmen struck the gutstones in a frenzy and strengthened their soul.

There were many young rockmen who also struck the gutstones and rapidly strengthened their newborn souls, allowing them to control more rocks as their body.

There were only a few hundreds rockmen at first, but in only a day, their population expanded by ten times!

The more the population grew, the faster they multiplied.

On the morning of the second day, their population broke ten thousand. On the evening of the third day, their numbers reached three hundred thousand.

All the gutstones on Dang Hun mountain were plucked clean.

On the fourth day, Dang Hun mountain started emitting pressure and the rockmen could only reluctantly leave the place, majestically returning to their homes.

There were unexpected gifts, the new three spirit springs, waiting for them there.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Blub blub blub blub...

In a huge five-man-tall cauldron, green-blue colored liquid was bubbling inside.

The liquid seemed to be boiling, but cold air was emitting from it, even a rockman’s hand would turn into an icicle if he placed it in.

Fang Yuan stood before the large cauldron, multitasking as he controlled it while taking out a primeval elder Gu.

He multitasked, activating primeval elder Gu as primeval stones flew out from within.

Plop plop plop...

Primeval stones caused a splash when they entered the cauldron.

Primeval elder Gu was a rank three storage Gu, it could hold up to a million primeval stones. It was shaped like a crystal ball, half transparent with clouds forming into an old man inside. The old man smiled when there were a lot of primeval stones inside, and cried with there were few primeval stones.

As large amounts of primeval stones were thrown in, the old man’s smile turned into a bitter expression.

Fang Yuan expended around half a million primeval stones for this refinement.

If it was the past, he would not be able to afford it. But now, he is affluent, after he sold the desolate beast swamp crab and bought quite a bit of things, he had around six million primeval stones left.

As primeval stones were thrown in, a large spiral formed inside the cauldron, causing the liquid to flow faster. The cauldron was slightly shaking.

At this crucial moment, Fang Yuan invested all his concentration into it, he could not be distracted anymore.

Sweat quickly formed on his forehead, he could only call out: "Land spirit."

"Yes!" Little Hu Immortal responded quickly, throwing pieces and pieces of silver ingots into the cauldron.

The ingots entered the liquid, causing the spiral to slow down.

One by one, the ingots fell in until the surface of the cauldron became still, forming into silver colored ice.

Eventually, all the liquid inside was frozen, large amounts of silver colored mist flew out, freezing the entire cauldron, in fact, it extended five steps from the cauldron, dying the ground silver.

Fang Yuan breathed heavily: "After refining Gu for three days, it’s finally done. Up!"

Silver colored ice broke apart, and Gu worms flew out.

These Gu were all rank three, they were shaped like little cups, while also resembling trumpet flowers. Three of them could fit on one palm.

They were silver in color, used to hold liquid or store Gu worms.

Little Hu Immortal counted, smiling brightly, clapping her hands: "Hundred and thirty seven, hundred and forty-six, hundred and fifty-nine! Master, you are amazing, refining a hundred and fifty-nine rank three Gu worms at once. We can sell these for quite a sum, what are these Gu worms?"

"Hehe, these are silver cup Gu, we have to use them to refine Gu, they are not for sale." Fang Yuan smiled.

Three hundred and eighty years into Fang Yuan’s previous life, these silver cup Gu were created by a Gu Immortal. Continuing to refine them until they were rank five, that was the Gu Fang Yuan needed.

Of course they could not be sold now.

"These days, I used a large number of guts Gu to raise my soul to fifty-two times of a normal person. Thus, I did not feel much fatigue, and was able to refine so many Gu at once." Fang Yuan was extremely pleased with the results of this refinement.

The benefits of having a strong foundation in his soul was shown here.

If He Feng Yang saw this, he would no longer underestimate Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan’s ability at refining Gu had already greatly exceeded his own.

But his head was still dizzy.

Every Gu refinement caused a strain on the soul, it used a lot of mental energy, not to mention Fang Yuan’s large-scale refinement.

If it was before, Fang Yuan could only sleep to rest his soul. But now, he had a better method.

"Land spirit, this cauldron is useless now, get rid of it, I am going outside to walk."

"Yes master." Little Hu Immortal immediately got to work.

Three to four days had already passed, large numbers of gutstones had formed on Dang Hun mountain.

Fang Yuan casually stepped on a few pieces, the guts Gu that flew out recovered his soul, even strengthening it.

Fang Yuan instantly felt the dizziness go away from his head, he could think at lightning speed.

He laughed heartily: "This guts Gu is truly a divine Gu, the effect is so amazing. In that case, I shall strengthen my soul to the limit today."

Sixty-eight times! Fang Yuan felt refreshed, his movements were extremely fast and light.

Seventy-seven times! Fang Yuan could think at lightning speed, every thought moved like a spark.

Eighty-five times! Fang Yuan’s soul had already vaguely hit his body’s limit.

Ninety-two times! Fang Yuan could clearly feel his own soul. In his perception, his soul was grey-white color, its outer appearance was just like Fang Yuan’s appearance, except it was extremely strong, muscular and had a bear-tiger like body. As for Fang Yuan, although his body was muscular, he only had muscular shoulders with a thin waist. His soul was quite squeezed inside this body.

Was he at his limit?

Ninety-three times! Fang Yuan used one more guts Gu, his soul strengthened once again. This time, Fang Yuan felt an unprecedented feeling, it was amazing and comfortable. It felt a hundred times better than taking drugs, eating good food, or having intercourse! It made a strong man like Fang Yuan groan out in pleasure.

An indescribable sensation of comfort and addiction made him savour this feeling, unable to forget it.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone in a cold light, his heart became alert.

He stepped on a few more gutstone, and his soul got stronger again. The feeling of comfort this time was much more intense than before!

Ninety-seven times, ninety-eight times, ninety-nine times!

The feeling came from deep within his soul, it was so intense that Fang Yuan’s body shuddered, his bones felt like they were melting and his muscles were twitching, it could not be described with words.

A hundred times!

The intense sensation and addiction assaulted like a tornado, Fang Yuan almost fainted from this.

"This is the limit, I cannot use the guts Gu anymore!" Fang Yuan bit the tip of his tongue, using the pain to keep himself conscious, not falling into addiction.

Normal people could only strengthen their soul by a hundred times, it was called hundred man soul!

This was also the extreme limit. If the soul strengthened just a bit more, it would explode in a loud bang. Like a stomach that burst from overeating.

But the explosion of the soul was many times more severe than the bursting of a stomach. The soul would complete disperse in the air, completely destroyed, the flesh would be preserved for a while before rotting away, revealing the white skeleton.

If Fang Yuan indulged in the feeling, and used one more guts Gu, he would not even have the time to use Spring Autumn Cicada, he would die immediately, wiped off from this world.

Too bad I don’t have Luo Po valley, inside it, there is the bewilderment fog that can loosen the soul. There is also the Luo Po wind that can cut the soul. After torture and trials, the soul will become more refined and condensed." Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

Simply strengthening the soul was a quantitative advantage. Only through refinement and purification can there be a qualitative advantage.

In this world, there were many Gu Masters who cultivated their soul, they were called soul path Gu Masters. Soul path and strength path were at the same level, glorious during the ancient times. Except, strength path was now at its lowest point, while soul path was staying strong, it was the largest path in the current world.

The Gu Master who created the soul path is renowned in the entire world’s history.

He is Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

Rank nine Gu Master, standing at the top of the universe, looking down at mortals plainly, he was truly invincible, a legend who dominated his era.

At the same time, he was the rank nine Gu Immortal with the greatest killing nature.

Among all Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables, he killed the most people. During his dark era, he made the five regions into his personal slaughterhouse. All living beings were his livestock, they had no way to resist.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable once said: In this huge world, Dang Hun mountain is the best at strengthening soul, and Luo Po valley is the best at refining soul. One mountain and one valley, if one had both, they would achieve great success in the soul path, and they would be able to dominate the world.

Thus, Dang Hun mountain and Luo Po valley were the two sacred lands of soul path Gu Masters.

Fang Yuan obtaining Dang Hun mountain was a huge blessing, he got a great deal from his rebirth. If he wanted to get Luo Po Valley, there was little hope, he did not know where it was.

"But, even without Luo Po valley, I can use other soul path Gu worms to replace it. Divine soul Gu, dragon soul Gu, ice soul Gu, dream soul Gu, moon soul Gu, general soul Gu, grudge soul Gu, poem soul Gu and others, they can all refine my soul and allow me to continue strengthening my soul, to break through hundred man soul, to reach thousand man soul, or even ten thousand man soul."

He could not get these Gu from Immortal Crane Sect. That is because these Gu that were directly used on the soul, if Immortal Crane Sect did something to them, it would be too dangerous.

But Fang Yuan knew very little of these Gu worms’ recipes. Most importantly, he has not decided on which Gu would suit him the most.

"For now, hundred man soul is sufficient to deal with my problems, I should place my energy on how to trade rockmen." Fang Yuan’s train of thought came back to the matter at hand.

He had already sold swamp crab, but next, he did not intend to sell the gutstones.

If he sold gutstones, that would strengthen Immortal Crane Sect, that was not favorable.

For the following days, Fang Yuan continued to refine Gu while cleansing his aperture.

A month passed quickly, with the nine eyes liquor worm’s help, Fang Yuan successfully advanced to rank four peak stage.

At the same time, he refined a hundred and fifty-five gold cup Gu.

Gold cup Gu and silver cup Gu were about the same, they were rank three Gu used to store fluids.

Next, he used both silver cup Gu and gold cup Gu in refinement, after seven days and six nights, his luck was not bad, he obtained three rank four gold and silver cup Gu.

He put down his work at hand, and turned his attention to the rockmen: "So many days have passed, the rockmen should’ve reproduced already."

In a rockman’s life, most of the time was spent on sleeping.

Normally, when a rockman reaches three hundred years old, his soul would accumulate to a degree, and he would produce an offspring. Next, every two hundred years, he will produce one young rockman.

Without accidents, a rockman can live to a thousand years, and they would have four offsprings when they die.

But because of the gutstones, the rockmen tribes expanded rapidly, they had around three hundred thousand tribesmen now.

The increased numbers caused the internal conflicts among rockmen to increase, intensify, and erupt.

Rockmen’s social system was very relaxed, it could at most govern a hundred thousand people. As expected, after some political strifes, the rockmen split into three groups, each with around a hundred thousand people, each occupying one spirit spring, making their new homes there.

Fang Yuan took out the new slavery Gu that he made and handed them to the little Hu Immortal.

Slavery Gu, ranged from rank one to five. Fang Yuan refined rank three slavery Gu only, it was enough to enslave the rockmen tribes.

Little Hu Immortal teleported the slavery Gu for about ten thousand miles away, using them on the most crucial rockmen.

The rockmen’s soul were not Fang Yuan’s match, they were easily enslaved.

In the blink of an eye, Fang Yuan controlled three rockmen tribe leaders including Yan Yong, as well as over a dozen rockmen tribe elders.

At once, the three hundred thousand rockmen were under his control.

Governing many lives and making great changes with just a wave of his hand, this was already showing the ability of a Gu Immortal!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Not selling gutstones, but selling rockmen instead?" He Feng Yang looked at the letter in his hand with a grim expression.

In Hu Immortal blessed land, the guts Gu from Dang Hun mountain was the thing Immortal Crane Sect needed the most. Once they had the guts Gu to raise the foundation of their disciples’ soul, Immortal Crane Sect’s strength in terms of disciples would rise by thirty percent.

Furthermore, gutstones could not leave Dang Hun mountain, they could only be used on the spot. Thus, with this reason, Immortal Crane Sect disciples could freely enter Hu Immortal blessed land. As time passed, Fang Yuan’s alertness would gradually fall, and Immortal Crane Sect would be free to set up some traps inside the blessed land.

But Fang Yuan adamantly refused to sell the gutstones, He Feng Yang was very troubled: "Since when did great Gu Immortals like myself have to be subjected to such difficulties from a mere mortal rascal?!"

He gritted his teeth as he thought, his handsome young face distorting with anger.

He had battle strength, but he could not display them. Fang Yuan was hiding inside the blessed land like a tortoise, he also had fixed immortal travel Gu and could leave at any time. He Feng Yang, and even the entire Immortal Crane Sect were afraid of his trump cards, and thus did not dare to attack.

"It seems the rockmen that Hu Immortal brought into her blessed land are still alive. But this Fang Yuan is selling so many of these rockmen now, just how many guts Gu did he use to create them!"

Thinking of this, He Feng Yang’s heart was bleeding.

Several months had passed since the last transaction. The time in Hu Immortal blessed land was five times faster, thus he had around a year or so.

Fang Yuan nurtured so many young and strong rockmen, if these expended guts Gu were given to Immortal Crane Sect, and used to nurture disciples, how good would that be?

But this rascal Fang Yuan, he would rather nurture rockmen than give these guts Gu to Immortal Crane Sect. His motives are execrable, execrable!

What made He Feng Yang most furious was not just this. Most importantly, he was angry at himself — these rockmen that Fang Yuan was selling, even if he was a Gu Immortal, his heart was moved.

In a blessed land, if there were ample rockmen, Gu immortals could develop their underground land and excavate large amounts of resources.

All sorts of metals, gems, ore, as well as Gu worms, underground animals, they could be endlessly obtained.

Other than that, if they had enough rockmen, they can build an underground city, this was, in a way, expanding the blessed land’s territory.

If there was no manpower in the blessed land, the resources Gu Immortals excavate would mostly be from the surface, it was limited. But if they had rockmen, and could even use the resources underground, the profits would be many times more than before.

Thus, in the market, rockmen were in high demand and low supply.

A rockman’s life is mostly spent on sleeping. An ordinary rockman lives to a thousand years old, in one life, they have four children.

It was not impossible to use soul path Gu worms on them to raise their soul’s strength, many Gu Immortals tried it, but none succeeded.

There was only one reason, cost.

The value of a soul path Gu worms greatly exceeded a single rockman.

Unless a Gu Immortal has a special need for rockmen, they would never profit from this.

In this world, only Fang Yuan who controlled Dang Hun mountain could nurture rockmen on such a scale.

Furthermore, the price Fang Yuan quoted in this transaction was also very appealing. Even if Immortal Crane Sect did not need it, they could resell it and earn at a huge profit.

But because this was such a good deal, He Feng Yang felt extremely troubled.

He knew this was bait from Fang Yuan.

Not afraid that you aren’t moved, just afraid you won’t take the bait!

Just as Fang Yuan had expected, He Feng Yang was already inclined towards the deal, not just him, Immortal Crane Sect would also be moved, and other Gu Immortals would also want this deal. The rockmen trading business could flourish for at least a hundred years.

"This wicked little rascal Fang Yuan, he is really devious. But with this batch of rockmen, I could show some results to supreme grand elder, second elder, and third elder, I can also make Lei Tan shut up. I can catch a breather in that case." He Feng Yang breathed heavily, calming his mind.

He squinted his eyes, his mouth curling into a cold smile: "But don’t be too smug Fang Yuan. Tit for tat, if you don’t sell guts Gu, I will not sell relic Gu. Didn’t you want yellow gold relic Gu and purple crystal relic Gu? No way in hell!"

...

Fang Yuan laid on his chair, looking at Immortal Crane Sect’s reply.

Because blue charm lightning shadow was still guarding Tian Ti mountain, little Hu Immortal did not dare to open the blessed land’s doors, thus Immortal Crane Sect used the flying sword letter Gu this time.

Fang Yuan took a look and understood the content.

In He Feng Yang’s letter, other than agreeing to the deal, he also stated his objective: to buy guts Gu. For the guts Gu, he could sell relic Gu, or even lend a hand to help survive the seventh earthly calamity.

Fang Yuan chuckled continuously.

Letting He Feng Yang into Hu Immortal blessed land was a greater danger than the calamity itself, that was impossible.

As for the relic Gu, did he think that threat would be Fang Yuan’s weakness? What a laughable idea.

"I will definitely not sell the guts Gu, but I can sell rockmen, I have no worries about attracting Immortal Crane Sect. But I cannot just deal with Immortal Crane Sect alone, I also need to expand my business further." Fang Yuan considered.

With his five hundred years of experience, Fang Yuan knew that his sale price as lower than the market value.

Immortal Crane Sect would definitely profit from this trade.

But this was also arranged by Fang Yuan.

That is because at the moment, he needed his identity as an Immortal Crane Sect disciple, thus he also needed to maintain and sustain this fictitious relationship.

"With this profit, He Feng Yang’s pressure would be lifted off him, he wants my blessed land, but I also need time to grow. After I become a Gu Immortal, would I still be afraid of Immortal Crane Sect?" Fang Yuan laughed plainly.

He looked at the letter again, at the end of it, He Feng Yang decided on a time, and requested Fang Yuan to open the door, to send in the hole earth Gu.

This was a very large scale transaction, Fang Yuan was going to sell sixty thousand rockmen. But these rockmen could not leave from the blessed land’s doors.

At the moment, that blue charm lightning shadow was still moving around Tian Ti mountain. If the doors were opened, and it managed to rush in, Fang Yuan would be in huge trouble.

Thus in this situation, he needed to use hole earth Gu.

This Gu was rank five, and consisted of two Gu, the main Gu and the sub Gu.

Its biggest use was to connect the two places with one tunnel. The Gu Master will enter from the sub Gu, and come out from the main Gu, similarly for the opposite direction as well.

Hole earth Gu was often used to connect two blessed lands. Normally, hole earth Gu was used to transport and send resources. During war or battles, reinforcements could be sent in via the hole earth Gu, assisting immediately.

"To undergo the transaction and send these rockmen away, hole earth Gu has to be used inevitably. But I am worried that your hole earth Gu might have some traps in it, I’d rather refine it myself."

Fang Yuan thought about this and leaked the Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura, refining the flying sword letter Gu and rapidly writing a letter back to He Feng Yang.

Half a day later, He Feng Yang received the letter, looking at it only to find large amounts of Gu worms listed in it, and all sorts of ingredients.

"Oh? You don’t want to use my hole earth Gu, but you improved on the recipe and want to refine the new version yourself?" He Feng Yang was furious.

"Bullshit! Hole earth Gu has already been used for five hundred years, the recipe is known by all Gu Immortals, you think you can refine it further? Fang Yuan, this rascal’s alertness is too high, he wants to use this chance to extort me, so that I would not dare to reject his deals again. I don’t need to see to know that the relic Gu or spring egg Gu or some rare Gu worms in the strength path is included... eh? None?"

He Feng Yang gave it a glance, but did not see any relic Gu, spring egg Gu, or any strength path Gu listed.

But there were a lot of uncommon Gu, and even some low ranking Gu worms. The highest was rank five Gu worms, the earth path build a mountain Gu, normally used to increase the success rate of Gu refinement. Other than that, he requested a lot of rank four Gu, the commonly seen moving form Gu, and the very useful another perspective Gu.

He Feng Yang wavered: "Looking at this list, it seems he really is going to refine Gu. As long as his luck is okay, the materials are enough to refine three hole earth Gu. Don’t tell me, he really improved the recipe of hole earth Gu? No, Fang Yuan is a mere mortal, how can this be? But what if he has a Gu Immortal behind him?"

If it was an improved recipe, then the new Gu would definitely be far stronger than hole earth Gu.

He Feng Yang’s heart wavered.

Even if he could not get the recipe, after Fang Yuan succeeds the refinement, he would have to give the sub Gu to him. By then, he as a Gu immortal would be able to infer many details about the Gu from that sub Gu, and he has a high chance of recreating the same recipe.

Two days later, Fang Yuan received the letter.

Fang Yuan opened it and looked, just as he expected, He Feng Yang made all sorts of excuses inside the letter, intentionally reducing the amount of many materials and Gu worms, his motive was clear, he wanted to probe Fang Yuan’s true recipe.

Fang Yuan laughed and shook his head while sighing, this He Feng Yang was too meticulous in this thoughts, this was both a strength and a weakness.

Although they had interacted for merely a few times, Fang Yuan had already seen through him.

Fang Yuan replied blandly that He Feng Yang was not to reduce any of the materials, otherwise the refinement would fail.

But He Feng Yang continued to argue and bargain, he said so much garbage that he almost believed his own excuses.

After a few times, Fang Yuan "helplessly" chose to give in, writing another list.

"Lad, you are too young to compete with me." He Feng Yang saw this letter than handed over a portion of the materials, while finding excuses to delay the others.

With the constant stalling, they wasted about eight to nine days.

Only until Fang Yuan showed an extremely helpless and angry attitude did He Feng

Yang stop, realizing that the time was ripe, using the sixth list which had far less materials to do his research.

But his Gu refinement skills were not good, even after researching it thoroughly, and trying a few times, he did not get any results.

Half a month later, in central continent’s time, he received the hole earth Gu from Fang Yuan.

He received it like a treasure, going into deep research again.

But this time, he spent three days before successfully reverse-engineering the recipe.

Looking at this recipe, He Feng Yang screamed: "Fang Yuan, you little bastard! This is the normal recipe for hole earth Gu!"

Immediately, he screamed and scolded Fang Yuan calling him shameless, unscrupulous, devious, vile, and his insults even extended to Fang Yuan’s ancestors.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The west area of the blessed land was a vast grassland.

It was a scene of green that extended all over the place. A newborn fox was having fun playing with a fluttering butterfly.

In Hu Immortal blessed land, foxes were the strongest predator and thus had worry-free lives.

Although they suffered an extreme grave loss during the sixth earthly calamity, they did not die out completely. On the vast grassland, the fox groups were slowly but surely growing.

Suddenly, the space rippled and two figures appeared scaring the little fox away.

One was a man wearing a black robe, he was tall and valiant with black hair and eyes as deep as abyss. The other was a cute and young girl who was wearing colorful clothes, her eyes shone like stars and she had a snowy-white soft fluffy tail, the thin and long fur on her tail slightly shook with the wind.

They were none other than Fang Yuan and little Hu Immortal land spirit.

"The position is good, it should be here." Fang Yuan looked around before taking out a hole earth Gu from his aperture.

This Gu looked like a walnut with a wooden and uneven surface, and was as large as a watermelon.

Hole earth Gu was a rank five Gu and required at least a rank five peak stage Gu Master to activate it with all his primeval essence.

Fang Yuan naturally could not do it, thus he gave the Gu to the land spirit.

After little Hu Immortal activated it, the hole earth Gu immediately burst out with intense scarlet rays of light before piercing into the ground.

In an instant, red light shot to the sky and 50km of ground shook.

The red light abruptly dissipated and a crack as big as two hundred and seventy feet appeared on the ground.

The soil around the crack bulged up and if one were to look from above, it would look like a person’s lips.

Immediately following, the two sides of the cracks slowly opened up and revealed two rows of compact cube blocks of rocks resembling human teeth.

The ’teeth’ also opened up and revealed an eerie large cave.

"Master, I’m hungry..." The lips-like crack opened and closed, unexpectedly speaking in a loud voice, causing the nearby ground to shake.

Fang Yuan smiled and took out a primeval elder Gu.

He sent his primeval essence and the amiable looking old man’s happy expression gradually disappeared because large amounts of primeval stones were being taken out and thrown into the huge lips like crack.

After throwing in as much as two hundred thousand primeval stones, Fang Yuan stopped and put back the primeval elder Gu into his aperture.

The huge lips like crack slowly closed, its two rows of giant stone teeth started grinding the primeval stones into powder.

’Gulp ’, there was a loud sound like that of a person swallowing food, it echoed and shook the ground.

After swallowing these primeval stones, the lips-like crack calmed down and made no more noise.

At this point, the hole earth Gu could be said to have succeeded.

It could not be moved now, they would have to wait for He Feng Yang’s sub Gu to activate before the two sides could link.

Feeding the hole earth Gu was an extremely huge expenditure. It would have to be fed two hundred thousand primeval stones yearly. And a large amount of primeval stones needed to be used every time it was activated.

Which ordinary Gu Master could use it alone? Besides the large sects and clans, only the Gu Immortals with huge resources could raise it and activate these hole earth Gu.

"Land spirit, this place needs to be strictly guarded from now on. Enslave some fox groups and place them here." Fang Yuan said while looking at the large lips-like crack.

"Yes, master."

...

"To protect our homes, we need to fight!"

"That damned immortal has come back stronger, we need to advance against this hardship. For a beautiful future and for our tribesmen, raise your fists!!"

"Although there are some grudges between us and the other two clans, they are all small conflicts within our stonemen tribes. This time, our three tribes will each send twenty thousand warriors to form an army to march west and attack the immortal’s nest."

"This is a huge war, everything is for our people."

"Our parents and ancestors gave their lives and souls to defeat the immortal, and create this peaceful life we are enjoying now. We need to follow the footsteps of our elders and advance courageously in this war!"

The land spirit mobilized fox groups to appear near the stonemen tribes. The higher ups of the stonemen tribes took advantage of this to quickly form an allied army.

The majestic allied army marched towards the west area.

On their way, they had five to six small scale fights; they all ended in the stonemen army’s victory while the fox groups had to retreat bit by bit.

"Look there! That is the demon’s nest!" Yan Yong walked in front towards the hole earth Gu.

"Oh Mother Earth, you are our mother and have nurtured us stonemen. Why do you shield such an abominable immortal?" Yan Yong shouted in deep pain.

The huge crack slowly opened and little Hu Immortal spoke after using a Gu worm to change her voice.

The stonemen heard the gentle voice of a woman: "Oh stonemen, my children. I did not want to shield that immortal, but he entered my stomach and is hiding in my heart, threatening me to protect him. I will open my mouth, please come in and eliminate him, I will give you my blessing!"

The stonemen were astonished at first before they started shouting enthusiastically.

"Mother Earth spoke!"

"We are the warriors blessed by Mother Earth!"

"How despicable is this immortal, actually threatening our benevolent and gentle Mother Earth. We will definitely cut him into a thousand pieces!!"

The allied army of the stonemen felt their morale rising to the limit.

The large lips like crack opened wide. Yan Yong took the lead and shouted: "Stonemen, charge!"

He then jumped into the cave.

"Charge, we can’t let our tribes’ hero fight alone."

"Charge, we are fearless, we are omnipotent, we will kill the immortal!"

"Mother Earth is on our side, this battle will be our win!"

The stonemen jumped like dumplings into the large crack.

They fell down the dark tunnel for a while before they landed on the ground.

"Where is this? It is completely dark."

"This is even darker than underground, we can’t see anything."

"How can we fight if we can’t see?"

The stonemen were feeling doubtful when suddenly there was a huge coughing sound. A ball of light suddenly burst open above their heads. Rapid airflow instantly formed and carried them, as they were shot out.

"Two hundred thirty, two hundred forty..." Immortal Crane Sect’s disciples were standing beside the hole earth Gu’s sub Gu and were meticulously counting the stonemen that were shot out.

After the stonemen were shot out by the huge lips-like crack, they were immediately restrained by Immortal Crane Sect’s disciples when they fell on the ground, unable to resist and unable to move.

Yan Yong and some stonemen elders stood at the side, looking at this scene in fear and their heads were lowered.

He Feng Yang had been furious after being played by Fang Yuan, but he eventually took consideration of the whole situation and did not smash the hole earth Gu’s sub Gu under his anger, but instead planted it on Fei He mountain.

As for the stonemen...

Fang Yuan used their belief in Mother Earth and then used the fox groups and the stonemen higher ups to smoothly entice sixty thousand young stonemen into Fei He mountain and sell them.

Man is the spirit of all living beings.

In this world, apart from the humans born from Ren Zu’s proper bloodline, there were also variant humans.

Variant humans might be more intelligent compared to other lifeforms but they were far from having human wisdom. Hairy men were ignorant, eggmen were innocent and stonemen were naive and barbaric...

Even a smart seven or eight year old child could deceive them. Whether it was Southern Border or Central Continent, such things often happened - some kids would bump into hairy men or stonemen at some place and deceive them all the way to the market. The variant humans would be ignorant even after being sold off, still the counting the money for them.

With this transaction Fang Yuan earned over one million six hundred thousand primeval stones.

Although each of the sixty thousand stonemen were young and energetic, they could not match the value of a swamp crab. On top of that Fang Yuan had to pay for the Gu refinement materials and there was the loss of sixty-five thousand primeval stones to use the hole earth Gu, and he also bought some common materials.

He Feng Yang had raised the price by ten percent as revenge, and also decreased many things Fang Yuan requested.

Fang Yuan did not care, the things he really wanted were already in his hands.

After the transaction was over, Yan Yong and the other stonemen elders followed the hole earth Gu back to Hu Immortal blessed land. Fang Yuan had already arranged a proper explanation to them and was sure the stonemen tribes would not rebel. Even if there was a rebellion, he could kill them and raise another batch. In any case, there were still a lot of gutstones on Dang Hun mountain.

Fang Yuan calmed down in his mind and continued his cultivation.

However, at rank four peak stage, nine eyes liquor worm had lost its use.

Liquor worm could purify the quality of the primeval essence, but only by a small realm. Fang Yuan was now at rank four peak stage and possessed the peak stage true gold primeval essence. Another step forward would be rank five initial stage light purple primeval essence.

Fang Yuan sealed the nine eyes liquor worm.

This Gu worm had accompanied him since Qing Mao mountain. From rank one liquor worm to current rank four nine eyes liquor worm, now it could finally retire.

By simply relying on true gold primeval essence to nurture his aperture, Fang Yuan’s cultivation had become slower.

Naturally because he was at Hu Immortal blessed land, his cultivation speed was at least five times faster than the ordinary Gu Masters in the outside world.

"With this speed, I will have at least rank five middle stage cultivation or even near to upper stage by the time the seventh earthly calamity strikes."

Fang Yuan possessed A grade aptitude now, breaking through to rank five was not a problem. However, the higher the Gu Master’s cultivation, the more time it would take for them to advance.

He had taken the purple crystal relic Gu into consideration when he said rank five middle stage.

Such speed compared to the five hundred years of his previous life was countless times better. Now, he was just slightly above thirty and was already at rank four peak stage. While in his previous life, at this age, he was still struggling at rank two realm.

"But this speed is still slow. There is the seventh earthly calamity outside in the blessed land while I have a great internal threat called Spring Autumn Cicada!"

Fang Yuan calculated that he would have to leave the blessed land in at most three years and go through a series of adventures. At least, he needed to find smooth success Gu or immediate success Gu to use on Spring Autumn Cicada and obtain a greater opportunity to live.

"Sigh! How I hope I could just keep on cultivating in the blessed land like Feng Jiu Ge and roam the world after reaching Gu Immortal realm."

Spring Autumn Cicada’s ability to let the Gu Master rebirth was not fake, but there were too many restrictions. Even if the rebirth succeeded, the Gu Master would have to guard against it bursting their aperture. If there was not such a great fault, Fang Yuan’s cultivation would be many times easier.

"For the next three years, I will have to refine Gu, use gutstones to expand the stonemen population and sell them for all kinds of resources."

However, while Fang Yuan’s plan was near flawless, it could not compete against fate’s prank.

Merely a month later, a huge change occured that gave him no choice but to leave the blessed land to an earlier date.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Crack.

Fang Yuan crushed a gutstone in his hand, immediately, mud flowed out, staining his palm.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was solemn, he picked another rock on the mountain and held it in his hand.

His hand was stained with yellow mud, with a slow speed, it was slowly disintegrating the rock, turning the hard rock into more mud.

A moment later, Fang Yuan could distinctly feel the rock shrinking.

After ten minutes, the rock completely turned into mud, vanishing.

The yellow mud flowed down the space between Fang Yuan’s finger, flowing onto Dang Hun mountain and continuing to cause damage to the mountain.

Fang Yuan was quiet for a moment before speaking, asking: "How severe is the situation?"

Little Hu Immortal wiped her tears as she sobbed, answering: "Most of Dang Hun mountain had been affected by the mud. Six out of ten of the gutstones below the mountain waist is turning into mud. Master, what do we do? Dang Hun mountain is going to perish... sob sob , it is my fault, I did not notice it earlier."

Fang Yuan patted little Hu Immortal’s head, consoling: "This is not your fault, you do not need to blame yourself. The culprit is that swamp crab, as expected of a desolate beast, as expected of an earthly calamity!"

Land spirits’ abilities are all different, they all differed and were greatly dependent on the Gu Immortals and their blessed lands.

He sighed, continuing: "I was still rejoicing earlier than the desolate beast did not have an Immortal Gu. It turns out this swamp crab used an expenditure type Immortal Gu and hid the Gu’s power inside this mud. Nothing happens if it comes into contact with flesh, but all mountain rocks would be turned into mud upon touching it."

During the calamity earlier, the swamp crab spewed out large volumes of mud, and the crab army appeared from within the mud.

Fang Yuan killed an immense number of crabs, but little did he know, the real trump card was the mud itself.

Fang Yuan guessed that this is the effect of the rank six gruel mud Gu.

Gruel mud Gu was a naturally formed Gu, very commonly seen as rank one and two, and still rather popular as rank three and four. It was often used by Gu Masters to build cities. As rank five Gu were rare, many rank five Gu Masters would choose to temporarily use this gruel mud Gu when they did not have a good rank five Gu. When this rises to rank six, there would only be one in the world, and this Gu was a one time expenditure type.

Gruel mud Gu can only be used on mud, evidently, the swamp that swamp crab used to live in was created from the effects of gruel mud Gu. The swamp crab ate and defecated mud in the swamp every day, thus it was able to bring the ability of the gruel mud Gu into Hu Immortal blessed land.

After the swamp crab died, although the battlefield was cleaned up, large amounts of mud had already seeped into the mountain, moving deep underground.

Gruel mud Immortal Gu’s ability was so hidden, and there was no Immortal Gu aura in the yellow mud, if Fang Yuan had not ordered the rockmen to crush the gutstones, he might not have found out at all.

But even if he found out early, he had no ability to stop this during the calamity.

Fang Yuan’s expression was still as water.

Dang Hun mountain was being corroded by an Immortal Gu, slowly turning into yellow mud, this was a great nightmare!

The last valuable thing in this blessed land was this mountain. He wanted to rely on this mountain to nurture and sell rockmen. In the future, his own soul strengthening will also depend on this mountain. He could not sit around and watch the situation worsen.

At once, Fang Yuan ordered little Hu Immortal to clear out as much yellow mud as possible.

This way, the danger was greatly slowed.

But Dang Hun mountain’s interior was also corroded, this method could not cure the root of the problem. This was the power of the gruel mud Immortal Gu, to remove it, he needed to use an Immortal Gu’s power!

"I took such a huge risk to obtain this sacred land for soul strengthening. Even after I become an Immortal Gu, this mountain is still extremely valuable. I cannot let it be destroyed. Heaven does not want this sacred land to end up in the hands of men, thus it sent such a calamity, but I will defy heaven. Hehe, competing with men, competing with heaven, this is the fun of life, that’s all there is."

With Fang Yuan’s knowledge, he was not helpless and without a solution.

He thought of more than ten ways to solve this, after eliminating half of which were not feasible, and removing those which were too hard, he was left with three solutions.

The first solution was the earth path rank six turn rock Gu. This Gu was in western desert, held in the hands of rank six Gu Immortal Sun Cu. Sun Cu is a righteous path Gu Master, he used this Gu to turn sand into rocks, in order for people to build structures in the desert, he was very popular and received gratitude from the people. He was kind hearted but not resolute, he loved his family and doted on his granddaughter the most, if Fang Yuan could hold her hostage, he would definitely comply.

The second solution was another earth path rank six Immortal Gu, called ’Rebuilding Mount Dongshan’. This Gu had already been refined, it was hidden in eastern sea’s Hai Shi blessed land, Fang Yuan could enter the blessed land and use an Immortal Gu to exchange for this Gu.

The third was the time path rank six Immortal Gu ’A Mountain Like Before’. This Gu had not existed yet, it was not naturally formed. Its owner is Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he was still a rank five Gu Master in northern plains at the moment.

"In southern border on San Cha mountain, I refined fixed immortal travel Gu in public, it is obvious without a doubt that southern border is already in a huge commotion over it. A mortal that possesses an Immortal Gu, I’m afraid all those Gu Immortals in southern border are all notified now, and are looking for me all over the continent."

Until Fang Yuan becomes a Gu Immortal, he was not going to step into southern border again.

"Although the five regions are isolated, the super clan Yi clan has a relationship with a mysterious organisation in eastern sea. It will take at least two to three years until the news of me refining an Immortal Gu reaches central continent, but that might not be the case for eastern sea."

Fang Yuan eliminated eastern sea.

"As for western desert, it’s the place where caravans flourish the most. Cities after cities, surviving using the oasis in the desert. If I can sell the rockmen there, I would earn a ton of profits. Unfortunately, a flourishing caravan trade means that information also travels fast. As a southern border Gu Master, I am an easy target. Once I reach there, I’d probably be marked the moment I enter a city."

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, he roamed around all five regions during the five hundred years, finally choosing central continent to settle down, and become a Gu Immortal. Thus, he had a clear understanding of western desert.

"Compared to western desert, northern plains is a huge grassland, all sorts of tribes graze their livestock, migrate, battle, and procreate there. There is high mobility and some small-mid tribes have chaotic management, I can easily blend in with them."

Western desert was different from northern plains.

In western desert, humans relied on oasis to live, thus people are always gathered together. As long as the oasis is intact, nobody would make life difficult for themselves and go to another living area by making a dangerous and arduous desert journey.

But in northern plains, tribes have to move around often, finding rich and fertile land to relocate to. The weather there is ever-changing, strong weather conditions can destroy homes in a night, tribes have no choice but to move. Because of this, the high mobility among tribes also cause conflicts to occur often, and battles often takes place. Thus, the number of Gu Masters in northern plains is the highest, and they are also the ones most skilled at fighting among the five regions.

If Fang Yuan chooses western desert, abducting a hostage and threatening a Gu Immortal would cause a huge and lasting impact on the stability of western desert.

But if he chose northern plains, even if he killed the rank five Gu Master Tai Bai Yun Sheng, it would only be a mild commotion. In a few months, people will forget him.

Fang Yuan thought it through, and decided that the chaotic northern plains is most suitable for his actions.

Sun Cu in western desert is already a Gu Immortal, while Tai Bai Yun Sheng in northern plains is still a rank five peak stage.

After deciding on his destination, Fang Yuan started to think hard, compiling all the important information he had in his memories, to organise his plans for

northern plains.

Plans do not keep up with changes, ever since rebirth, his plans had been changing continuously.

The first time was on Qing Mao mountain when he became A rank aptitude, it was a huge breakthrough and thus caused a shift. San Cha mountain was the second change, Fang Yuan soared to the sky in a single step, making all his plans unusable.

Although there were still benefits in the great battle of Yi Tian mountain, he could no longer stay in southern border.

As for central continent, that would be even worse.

He was a mortal, the ten righteous sects, the whole of Immortal Crane Sect, and all the demonic Gu Immortals on Tian Ti mountain were looking at him.

As long as he did not reach Gu Immortal realm, he would have to stay inside the blessed land, unable to come out.

He had also planned to do that, growing his strength inside Hu Immortal blessed land.

The blessed land had ample resources, Fang Yuan wanted to be like Feng Jiu Ge, cultivating in secret until he reached Gu Immortal realm, and get rid of the biggest problem called Spring Autumn Cicada.

Although Fang Yuan was a risk-taker, and liked to make profitable gambles, often struggling at death’s door, it did not mean he rejected a peaceful and stable life.

Refusing to stay in a safe environment, and wanting to go around and create trouble for himself, taking risks and getting himself into danger, that is a fool.

Loneliness, solidarity, boredom, those were not obstacles to Fang Yuan’s cultivation.

If he did not have the nature to endure these, how could he walk on the road to success?

But the world never goes your way, problems often find you when you least want it.

Fang Yuan wanted to cultivate in secret, developing the blessed land as he lived in peace. Although Immortal Crane Sect was trouble, Fang Yuan kept the initiative the entire time, although the other party is strong, they cannot do anything to him at the moment.

The future prospects were great, his life was going smoothly, everything had changed for the better. But at this moment, a problem happened to Dang Hun mountain!

To Hu Immortal blessed land, Dang Hun mountain’s importance is insurmountable. If anything happens to this mountain, Fang Yuan’s transactions would crumble, and his cultivation plans would turn into a mere dream.

Thus, Fang Yuan had to change his plans, leaving the blessed land and entering northern plains.

"Thankfully, I planned in advance, and made a few backup plans, otherwise, I would be extremely caught off-guard now."

For the next few months, Fang Yuan spent all his efforts on Gu refinement.

He used the rank four golden and silver cup Gu, combining with rank four another perspective Gu and rank four moving form Gu to refine the rank five moving perspective cup Gu.

Next, he refined dusty Gu, bright pearl Gu, dark toss Gu and earth treasury flower king Gu.

"Land spirit, during the days I’m gone, follow my instructions." Before leaving, Fang Yuan instructed.

Little Hu Immortal’s eyes were red as she said reluctantly: "Master, I am waiting for you here, you have to return quickly."

Saying so, she used the green grape immortal essence and injected it into fixed immortal travel Gu.

With the burst of a jade-green light, Fang Yuan vanished on the spot.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Howl!

In the night sky on the grassland, poison beard wolf king raised its head, howling loudly for a long time.

The ears of the few hundred poison beard wolves near it twitched, as their bodies shot out like arrows.

The wolves split into two, moving in a tight army-like formation.

The young girl Ge Yao ran for her life.

But her horse had already died, as her small red shoes stepped on the mud, she felt like her legs were tied with lead, extremely heavy.

The sprinting poison beard wolves successfully encircled her, and the two ends met. They were afraid of the young girl’s Gu worms, thus they only circled around her and did not attack immediately.

All of a sudden, a poison beard wolf lost its patience and jumped out. Moving quickly, its body turned into a lump of black shadow as it charged towards Ge Yao.

Ge Yao shouted, using her Gu worms. As she pointed her finger, a light blue water arrow flew out.

The water arrow pierced through the poison beard wolf’s head accurately while spiraling.

This courageous wolf died on the spot, its corpse fell on the slightly rotten grassland as it tumbled backwards, until it stopped moving forever.

Bright red blood quickly flowed out of its wounds, staining the grass nearby.

The restless wolves stopped momentarily, but soon the smell of blood spread in the air and the wildness and savageness of the wolves were brought out.

At once, hundreds of poison beard wolves started howling.

Ge Yao’s beautiful face was full of regret and despair.

She should not have come out alone, to this poison grassland, trying to find some spirea. Now she was in a deadly situation, about to be torn apart and eaten by wolves.

"Sorry father, I am not longer able to take care of you!"

"Daughter knows that you arranged a marriage for my own good. But daughter does not want to marry..."

"Oh our ancestors in longevity heaven, if you can hear me, listen to my prayer and send a courageous warrior to save me."

The attack earlier had expended Ge Yao’s last bit of white silver primeval essence. Ge Yao could only pray now.

The wolves lost their patience, the wolf king howled, and all the poison beard wolves charged towards the girl at the center, giving off an impressive aura.

"I am going to die!" Ge Yao’s expression paled, she looked at the wolf group in a daze, she was helpless.

Right at this moment, a bright jade-green light flashed.

The poison beard wolves shut their eyes due to the light, howling in pain. The wolves that charged ahead knocked into one another, falling and causing a chain reaction, as their assault failed and the scene turned into chaos.

"What happened?" Ge Yao was shocked, ignoring her tears, she looked over.

From the jade-green light, the silhouette of a young man could be seen.

After the light faded, a naked man appeared in front of Ge Yao.

"A... a man?" Ge Yao’s eyes were wide open, her mouth formed into an ’o’ shape, she had an unbelievable thought: "Did my ancestors in longevity heaven listen to my prayers and send a savior to me?!"

But why was this savior naked?!

A huge question appeared in Ge Yao’s mind.

"I reached northern plains?" Stepping on the grass barefooted, Fang Yuan looked around quickly.

"Oh? Why is there a human here... and wolves?" Fang Yuan squinted, to think that an accident occurred the moment he reached northern plains.

This trip to northern plains had to be kept secret, to think that he was exposed so quickly.

The wolf king howled, turning around as it opened its mouth, attacking Fang Yuan with its sharp and pointy teeth, targeting his neck.

"Hmph, a mere hundred beast king..." Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with cold light, as a golden dragon appeared before him.

Rank four golden dragon Gu!

Roar!

The four clawed golden dragon roared, brandishing its claws as it flew towards the poison beard wolf king, crashing into it.

This hundred beast king’s body was completely smashed, all its bones broke as it was sent flying like a rag. After crashing onto the ground, it struggled, but could not get up.

Fang Yuan frowned slightly, using another golden dragon to finish off the wolf king.

After the wolf king died, the wolf group broke down as they all escaped several miles away in a few breaths’ time.

Only the wolf king’s corpse was left, and also the young girl Ge Yao who was staring at Fang Yuan blankly.

Fang Yuan directed his dark eerie gaze towards this young girl.

The young girl was wearing a leather robe exclusive to northern plains, the robe was blue and white, with golden rims at the edges, showing off elegance and purity.

There was a purple gold belt at her waist, and also many beautiful and small accessories on her black lustrous hair.

She also had bright red leather shoes.

Her skin was slightly dark, but still had a pinkish tone, it was the unique skintone of northern plains natives. Her body was slim and strong, like a cute little deer.

Ge Yao retreated one step after Fang Yuan’s stare, and she asked curiously: "Who are you? Are you sent from longevity heaven, the hero who is tasked to save me?"

Before waiting for Fang Yuan’s reply, she continued: "I am a member of Ge tribe, my name is Ge Yao. My father is the tribe leader of Ge tribe, young warrior, you saved my life, you will be most welcomed in Ge tribe. Oh, I have not asked for your name yet."

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: "Beautiful lady of the grassland, just call me Chang Shan Yin. Longevity Heaven is Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s place of residence, how could I have come from there, I am but a mere Gu Master."

Saying so, he took out a wine cup from his aperture.

The top half of this cup was gold, the bottom was silver. It was rank five and was used as storage, it was the moving perspective cup Gu that Fang Yuan refined in the blessed land.

After Fang Yuan injected primeval essence into it, he took out a set of clothing.

This was a set of black tight-fitting battle attire, after wearing it, Fang Yuan gave off a sturdy and valiant aura.

During the process, Ge Yao stared at him fixatedly, her heart pounding as her face turned red.

The young women in the grassland were this open about their feelings.

After Fang Yuan wore his clothes, he walked towards the corpse of the poison beard wolf king.

Poison beard wolves were commonly seen in northern plains. But different from other wolves, they did not have a strand of fur, instead their bodies were black and their skin looked it it was covered in a layer of enamel. They did not have ears, only two long moustaches that were five inches long. When they ran, their moustache will sway along the wind, beside their bodies. When they fought, the moustache will stand up straight.

Fang Yuan searched but did not gain anything.

This poison beard wolf was a hundred beast king, it had rank two Gu worms in it.

There were two rank two Gu worms on this wolf, acid Gu and poison needle Gu.

Acid Gu could allow it to shoot out green acid from its mouth, corroding flesh or even steel and rocks. Poison needle Gu shot out poison needles, it was an offensive technique.

But unfortunately, Fang Yuan only got fragments of these two Gu.

There were no defensive Gu on this wolf king, no wonder it was so easily killed by Fang Yuan.

Normally, beast kings could have enslavement Gu in them. For example, on a dog king, there might be dog enslavement Gu, on a wolf king, there might be wolf enslavement Gu.

Even if it was a rank two wolf enslavement Gu, Fang Yuan needed it now.

Just as Fang Yuan was searching the wolf corpse, Ge Yao walked over: "Chang Shan Yin, your name sounds familiar. Are you a member of Chang tribe? But looking at your clothes, you seem to be an outsider? Are you from eastern sea? Central continent? Or western desert?"

Fang Yuan stood up: "I am from northern plains."

The young girl pouted, showing her white teeth as she laughed: "Liar! We northern plains natives do not have an accent like yours. Warrior Chang Shan Yin, don’t worry, you saved my life, you are a benefactor of the Ge tribe, we will not ostracise you."

Be it central continent, southern border, or northern plains, as long as it is an outsider, they will be ostracised.

Before waiting for Fang Yuan’s reply, the bubbly girl pointed at fixed immortal travel Gu on Fang Yuan’s shoulder, asking: "Warrior Chang Shan Yin, this Gu on your shoulder is so beautiful, what Gu is this? Did you bring this Gu over?"

Fang Yuan’s gaze concentrated, observing this young girl’s expression. She was not acting or pretending, she really had shallow knowledge, she did not know this fixed immortal travel Gu, this made Fang Yuan slightly relieved.

The killing intent in his heart surged, but he showed an honest and sincere smile on the outside: "Beautiful young girl, are you a lark? Why are you constantly chirping non-stop. Hehehe, alright, I have to go, until we meet again!"

Fang Yuan raised his head, looking at the stars in the sky, trying to determine the direction.

Next, he walked past Ge Yao, towards the deeper parts of the poison grassland.

The young girl quickly caught up: "I am not a lark, it’s your fault for being so mysterious, and appearing so suddenly. Heyheyhey, don’t go there. This direction is the way out of poison grassland."

"I am going inside." Fang Yuan replied without turning around.

"Why are you going in? The deeper you go into the poison grassland, the more dangerous it gets. Although you are rank three peak stage, your fists cannot rival an entire wolf pack." Ge Yao sprinted towards Fang Yuan, urging him.

The five regions of the Gu world were independent, when Gu Masters cross regions, their battle strength will be suppressed by one rank.

Fang Yuan was a southern border Gu Master, when he is in northern plains, he will be suppressed when battling. Although his aperture still has rank four peak stage true gold primeval essence, the effectiveness was only at rank three peak stage snow silver primeval essence.

Thus, Ge Yao felt that his aura was rank three peak stage.

In addition, the rank four golden dragon Gu from southern border could only display the strength of a rank three Gu.

If this was southern border, one blow from the golden dragon Gu would have killed this poison beard wolf without doubt. But here in northern plains, Fang Yuan had to use it twice to kill the wolf king, and the wolf king’s corpse was still intact at the end.

Fang Yuan’s steps halted, as he looked at Ge Yao with a solemn expression and a determined gaze: "I am going into poison grassland for my own reasons."

Ge Yao was stunned by this aura, reacting only after Fang Yuan had walked a few steps away.

The girl quickly chased him: "Warrior Chang Shan Yin, I’ll go with you, we can take care of each other."

"Got her." Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a smile.

His currently battle strength was only rank three peak stage, it was insufficient to charge into poison grasslands’ deepest part. Thus, he needed northern plains Gu worms to arm himself.

But even if he killed Ge Yao, he might not get her set of Gu worms. Thus, Fang Yuan set a little trap, purposely acting distant, easily tricking the young girl into joining him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Although this was Fang Yuan’s motive and Ge Yao took the initiative to join him, Fang Yuan still asked her: "Take care of each other? What do I need you for?"

Saying so, he ran his eyes over her, his tone carried a hint of arrogance.

The girl immediately raised her head: "Don't you know the poison grassland is filled with purple poison fog and you will be poisoned if you breathe it for a long time. I have detoxification Gu worms with me. Also the deeper you go, the denser the poison fog will become as ghosts and spirits will also appear. At that time, you won't be able to distinguish the direction, and only my return heart Gu can point out the correct way back."

Guuuu...

As the girl said this, her stomach suddenly let out a hungry rumbling sound.

Fang Yuan glanced at her stomach and the girl immediately felt her face go red.

She explained while stammering: "This... my big stomach horse was eaten by the poison beard wolves. My primeval stones and rations were all stored there."

Big stomach horse was a mount that was extremely popular in northern plains. It had two stomachs; one was used to consume food and another was used to store goods.

The Gu Masters of northern plains usually used this type of big stomach horse when relocating their homes.

Fang Yuan curiously asked: "Since your father is Ge tribe's tribe leader, why are you - his own daughter - using such a common mount?"

"Sigh, he kept my Gu away from me. Being able to escape alone with a big stomach horse and preparing so much resources was already amazing!"

Ge Yao spoke frankly but right after saying it, she felt something wrong and her expression turned sluggish as she realized what she had said.

"Escaped? Could it be that you are escaping from marriage?" Fang Yuan raised his brows.

The little girl exclaimed in surprise and looked at Fang Yuan with wide eyes: "Do you have mind reading Gu? How did you know?"

Fang Yuan laughed, he was only guessing but it was not without any evidence.

In northern plains, the position of women was much lower than that of men, even being treated as goods and casually sold in markets. In southern border, there were female clan leaders, but northern plains had no such precedence and women were not allowed to be in power.

Why was that so?

This tradition dated back to the era of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

In Fang Yuan's memories, during these three years, many great heroes would fight for supremacy in northern plains and a great storm would blow. Eventually, Hei tribe leader Hei Lou Lan succeeded and became the lord of the imperial court for ten years. He was also the most controversial lord of the grassland in future generations.

Hei Lou Lan was extremely lecherous, and after becoming the ruler of the grassland, he made beauties of many tribes part of his harem. But on other hand, he made a new policy to raise women's status and attempted to create gender equality.

This gravely infringed upon all forces' interests and led to conflicts, causing an institutional turmoil among all northern plains tribes.

Thus, Hei Lou Lan had only been the lord of the grassland for two years when he was deceived by his own tribesmen to go outside the imperial court and was killed secretly. Immediately following, all tribes allied to overthrow Hei tribe’s rule and again contended for the position of the ruler of the imperial court. The bloodshed and war lasted for an entire five years before it settled.

After this chaotic war, every tribe of northern plain suffered great losses. And in the future, when Central Continent attacked the four other regions, this became the greatest weakness of northern plains.

A lot of northern plains women thus choose to run away in order to avoid marriage. This girl standing before him had come alone to poison grassland even though she was the daughter of the tribe leader. Fang Yuan naturally made such a guess.

Fang Yuan took out food from moving perspective cup Gu and gave them to Ge Yao.

This girl seemed to be very hungry; she wolfed down the food and rolled her eyes, slurring her words: "It was Man Duo of Man tribe who wanted to marry me. He is Man tribe leader’s third son and is thin and small, like a monkey. Moreover, he is suffering from illness and only has rank two cultivation. Usually, he would rely on his father to act tyrannically in his tribe. He has not the slightest bit of heroic spirit! I don’t want to marry to such a good-for-nothing."

"But Man tribe was a huge force while our Ge tribe has just migrated over with greatly reduced strength. Man tribe’s betrothal gift was also very grand and they also promised to give a piece of fertile grassland to my Ge tribe. Father wanted these gifts and tried to marry me off. And so in my fury, I fled. Warrior Chang Shan Yin, how about you snatch me?"

Northern plains had simple and coarse customs. One of their customs was bride kidnapping.

The snatched bride was often more precious than an officially married wife.

Fang Yuan laughed: "I have no interest in you, eat quickly, we will leave after you are full."

Ge Yao’s dark pupils darted around: "There is another method, that is, you can marry into my Ge tribe. According to the grassland customs, only a brave warrior can possess beauties. Even if Man tribe wants to find trouble, it has to be done according to the customs; Man Duo, that skinny monkey would have to challenge you to a fight. Warrior Chang Shan Yin, you are so strong, you will certainly beat that Man Duo to a pulp!"

Fang Yuan stopped smiling: "I said I don’t have any interest in you."

Ge Yao, however, became even more passionate and displayed northern plains women’s characteristic boldness and wildness: "Why don’t you have any interest? Could it be that I am not beautiful? I am the flower of Ge tribe, that kid Man Duo glanced at me from afar and fell for me at first sight, asking his father to propose the marriage! Warrior Chang Shan Yin, there are benefits for you as well in living with my Ge tribe. You are an outsider, if you don’t marry into the tribe, others will not take you as one of their own and you will suffer exclusion and vigilance in northern plains."

Fang Yuan said with a solemn tone: "I said I am a northern plains native."

Ge Yao gave a sweet smile: "Warrior, you can’t deceive me. Your accent revealed your background, and your food is also not the northern plain’s biscuits and dried meat. Just take me, don’t you think our encounter is the arrangement of longevity heaven?"

Fang Yuan lowered his head to cover the cold light that was vaguely flashing in his eyes as the smile on his face became deeper.

"Let me consider it for a while, don’t be in such a hurry to decide." Fang Yuan said and gave some primeval stones to Ge Yao.

Ge Yao nodded: "You have to think about it properly... properly."

She took the primeval stones and said with a cautious tone: "I will return these primeval stones to you in the future."

Fang Yuan nodded.

Ge Yao did not speak anymore and concentrated on absorbing the primeval stones to replenish her primeval essence and recover her strength as fast as possible.

As they continued moving deeper into the poison grassland, the thin poison in the air gradually became denser. They were unnoticeable before to the naked eyes, but now one could clearly see the light purple color.

"Stop, there is a wolf pack!" Ge Yao suddenly stopped, her gaze revealing panic.

Clearly, the battle with the poison beard wolves had left a deep impression on her.

Fang Yuan stopped, and after three breaths of time, he discovered the tracks of the wolf pack with his investigative Gu worm.

He could not help but glance at Ge Yao, indeed as a tribeswoman, the investigative Gu worm on her was great.

Fang Yuan had refined this rank four investigative Gu in Hu Immortal blessed land. But in northern plains, it was suppressed and could not compare to Ge Yao’s rank three Gu.

The wolf pack’s excited howls got louder and louder.

Soon, hundreds of poison beard wolves appeared in their vision.

"So many wolves!" Ge Yao’s face turned pale and her delicate body trembled as she took in a breath of cold air. The wolf pack’s numbers were many times higher than the previous ones, reaching close to a thousand.

The stronger the beast king, more the number of beasts they could control; this hundred beast king was clearly much stronger than the previous one.

"Hmph, what are you panicking for? Just protect yourself." Fang Yuan snorted and fiercely stomped his foot, charging forward.

Ge Yao exclaimed in shock at this, she wanted to call out to Fang Yuan but he had already entered the wolf pack.

Many poison beard wolves ran and charged at Ge Yao.

The girl shouted in her delicate voice: "Water armor!"

Immediately, water vapor condensed and formed into a layer of light blue armor that covered here whole body.

"Spiral water arrow Gu!"

She extended her finger and a spiral water arrow flew out.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

She killed three poison beard wolves instantly while injuring five or six more.

But at the same time, a dozen poison beard wolves came charging at her.

The girl panicked and retreated, responding in a flustered manner.

"Water dragon Gu!" She pushed with her palms and a three clawed water dragon whistled out and swept through the surroundings, increasing the water vapor in the air.

With the appearance of the water dragon, Ge Yao was able to control the situation.

"Warrior Chang Shan Yin, don’t die!" The girl immediately looked at the center of the wolf pack.

She was almost stunned at the sight.

The scene she saw was not what she had expected, she only saw Fang Yuan charging all over the wolf pack, every collision would send large numbers of poison beard wolves flying.

The ferocious poison beard wolves seemed to be weaker than sheep in front of him.

His whole body was covered in a layer of bright golden light armor, and a golden dragon came out occasionally, sweeping through the surroundings. There were so many poison beard wolves, but they could not subdue him.

He was fierce and fearless, his fighting style was extremely valiant, his every move would cause the wind to scream. His strength was so huge that as long as a poison beard wolf came into contact with his fists or kicks, their skeleton would definitely shatter and they would howl with pain, no longer able to stand up.

Not only that, he was also fighting an intense battle with the wolf king.

This poison beard wolf king was indeed very strong. Lightning flickered arounds its whole body, and it occasionally shot out green venom. Its movement speed was so fast that it created an afterimage when it ran.

"This wolf king has at least three wild Gu." Ge Yao’s heart sank as she learnt this, becoming worried for Fang Yuan.

Soon, the girl let go of her worry and admiration towards Fang Yuan rose in her heart.

Fang Yuan fought in a smart manner, he was continuously on the move and did not blindly engage with the wolf king, instead using the ordinary poison beard wolves to hinder the wolf king’s movement.

The wolf king had movement Gu but it was restrained by the wolf pack and could only passively take a beating.

Fang Yuan’s fists attacked its targets with high power; Ge Yao’s blood boiled at the scene.

"This is a true man!" She exclaimed in her mind and after disposing of the poison beard wolves around her, she shouted loudly and sent the water dragon to kill the wolf pack.

She was after all a rank three middle stage Gu Master, she was not to be underestimated. The wolf pack immediately turned chaotic from the attacks and a large portion of them rushed towards her.

Fang Yuan’s expression changed as he shouted: "Who told you to come? Move to the side!"

The girl’s face turned pale at the wolf pack’s counterattack and immediately retreated.

Fang Yuan continued to attack with boundless vigor and after spending a huge effort, he finally turned the wolf pack’s attention back to him.

After some time, he suddenly activated a beast phantom and smashed the wolf king’s defense.

Taking this chance, he got close to the wolf king and pressed its skull down to the ground, then he ruthlessly smashed it.

It was a brutal scene. This wolf king that was on the verge of becoming a thousand beast king was beaten to death by Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

With the death of the wolf king, the wolf pack’s morale collapsed and they all started fleeing in disorder.

A fierce battle ended so abruptly.

"You got injured?!" Ge Yao came running and looked with a concerned gaze.

"It’s nothing." Fang Yuan’s injuries looked terrifying but it was all under his control. He activated self-reliance Gu on the spot; the wounds started closing and healing.

Self-reliance Gu was a rank three Gu but could only show the effects of a rank two in northern plains. After Fang Yuan’s injuries healed a little, its effects immediately weakened.

"Warrior Chang Shan Yin, let me heal you." Ge Yao waved her hand and water vapor rose, forming a green-blue cloud above Fang Yuan.

Light rain started pouring down from the cloud and splashed upon Fang Yuan’s body, healing his wounds.

"This is spring rain Gu?" Fang Yuan furrowed his brows, "This Gu has a huge healing range, isn’t it a waste to use it on just me alone? Deactivate it."

After saying so, he activated golden breeze Gu.

This Gu was obtained from Tie Mu Bai and was a rank four healing Gu but now it only showed the efficiency of a rank three. However, it was still a top quality Gu.

Ge Yao saw a golden whirlwind form beside Fang Yuan; after it spun around him several times, all his wounds disappeared.

"What Gu is this?" The girl asked curiously.

Fang Yuan did not reply, but turned around and crouched down, searching the wolf king's corpse carefully.

Ge Yao followed behind him and bent her back to look at him, exclaiming in praise: Warrior Chang Shan Yin, you are a true expert. Father has always told me that going into battle by just relying on one's cultivation is stupid. I saw you charging into the wolf pack, it was such a dangerous situation, but you moved skillfully like it was a simple task. I finally understood that what father said was true."

Fang Yuan snorted and stood up.

With his five hundred years of battle experience, it was rather easy for him to do this. If not for the region's restriction, how could he take so much time to deal with this puny wolf pack?

After searching, he found out that the wolf king had three wild Gu, but they were all dead.

Fang Yuan's expression turned unsightly at the lack of loot, he glanced at Ge Yao and said gruffly: "Stupid? Do you think you are just stupid? You are utterly stupid!"

Ge Yao was immediately stifled: "Hey! Why are you so blunt!"

"Hmph, earlier, your careless attack attracted most of the wolf pack and almost screwed up my control of the situation. Do you have the brains of an ox?" Fang Yuan snorted and blamed.

Ge Yao knew that it was her mistake, her aura immediately weakened and she lowered her head, looking at her feet: "I know you attracted most of the wolf pack away for me. But I also wanted to help you."

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh: "Forget it, I will let it go this time. I will try to make an effort to teach you what you have to do to, so that you will not impede me again in the future."

"Who needs you to teach?" Ge Yao turned around and snorted with dissatisfaction.

...

""You need to be calm when activating spiral water arrow Gu. If you just recklessly shoot them, you would simply be wasting your precious primeval essence rapidly."

"Water dragon Gu wastes a lot of primeval essence, don't use it if it is not necessary. This is why you are always running out of primeval essence!"

"Don't use spring rain Gu, that is a large scale healing Gu that is not worth it for just the two of us."

As they continued on their way, Fang Yuan gave many tips to Ge Yao.

The girl's words before were just said in a fit. Although, she did have a young missy's temperament, this was something that concerned her deeply, so she earnestly listened to the suggestions and absorbed the knowledge, improving rapidly.

The two continued moving through poison grassland and ran into several waves of wolf packs, and Ge Yao’s performance also became better each time.

"Haha, are you afraid? You abominable poison beard wolves, get lost." After repelling a poison beard wolf pack again, Ge Yao stood with her hands on her hips as she said proudly.

"Truly a naive girl." Fang Yuan looked at her back with a cold light flashing across his eyes.

Naturally, the reason he guided Ge Yao was not purely to raise her battle strength, more importantly it was to probe out her Gu worms.

The result was, the girl revealed all her trump cards to Fang Yuan.

Ge Yao was a water path Gu Master with rank three middle stage cultivation.

Rank three fog sparrow Gu as the investigative Gu; three claw water dragon Gu and spiral water arrow Gu for attack; water armor Gu for defense; water trace Gu for movement; and spring rain Gu for healing.

She did not have a storage Gu, the big stomach horse she used to replace this aspect had already died by wolf pack’s claws.

Besides these, she also had cleansing Gu for detoxification; and return heart Gu for discerning the direction.

This set of Gu worms was very appropriate given her identity.

Fog sparrow Gu was a very precious investigative Gu among rank three which could condense fog into sparrows that could fly to scout the area and had a very huge range.

Her attack and defense Gu were also of top quality.

Water trace Gu’s ability to raise the speed could almost rival some rank four Gu. The only disadvantage was that the water trace would leave behind footprints that were easy to track. At the same time, it would make the shoes wet.

This Gu had the potential to be nurtured. At rank four, it could become wave trace Gu which had an even stronger effect.

For rank five, it had two different refinement directions. One was wandering wave trace Gu that had instant evasion properties; and another was the river wave trace Gu that allowed the Gu Master to run quickly on water surfaces.

At rank six, it would be the extremely famous worldly wave trace Gu.

All of these Gu were the best among rank three. Along with Fang Yuan’s meticulous guidance and the wolf packs’ pressure, it was no wonder Ge Yao was improving rapidly with her battle strength rising step by step.

"Warrior Chang Shan Yin, you are a sage. Your guidance is much more amazing than my tribe’s three top elders. Even if you don’t take a fancy upon me, I want to invite you to be a guest of our Ge tribe. If you are interested, I will do my best to persuade father to make you an external elder!"

Ge Yao turned around and walked to Fang Yuan’s side, and invited him with a sincere expression.

She was after all the young missy of Ge tribe, her foresight was extraordinary.

She realized Fang Yuan’s worth; not only his bravery, but more importantly his ability to educate others. This was the strength of wisdom, if he educated the tribe’s next generation, the whole tribe could flourish.

"I can become a guest of Ge tribe, but I don’t have any interest in becoming an external elder." Fang Yuan walked forward while shaking his head to refuse.

Ge Yao persuaded him several times, but Fang Yuan’s attitude was firm.

The girl sulked and followed behind Fang Yuan, looking at his back with an angry gaze.

"Do you think you are amazing just because you can teach? Hmph. I used such an urging tone, yet you remain unmoved. No interest to become my Ge tribe’s external elder? Are you looking down on my Ge tribe?"

"Chang Shan Yin, you scoundred!"

Ge Yao gritted her teeth in hatred while having a doubt in her mind: "But this name Chang Shan Yin, it is really familiar, where in the world did I hear it?"

Poison grassland was covered with dark clouds all year round, and in this dusky light, the two walked for some distance.

Fang Yuan stopped.

In front of him was a large field of sunflowers.

Each of these sunflowers had a dark purple stalk and large pitch-black petals. Its basin-sized stamen showed a pale human face.

Ghost face sunflower!

This sight caused Ge Yao to immediately hold her breath and grab Fang Yuan’s sleeve, whispering in a very soft voice: "A lot of people definitely died here, with many ghosts wandering around, it led to the growth of so many ghost face sunflowers. Every ghost face sunflower is a ghost that died unjustly. Let’s detour around this place, there are definitely many ghost cry Gu living in these ghost face sunflowers and there could even be ghost face Gu."

Ghost cry Gu was a rank three soul path Gu which could let out a mournful wail that could cause the soul to shake.

Ghost face Gu was a rank four soul path Gu that could create a tremendous impact on the soul.

"It is such a large field of ghost face sunflowers, how long will we take to make a detour?" Fang Yuan concentrated on this sea of sunflowers, he did not show any expression on the surface but was actually very happy inside.

This confirmed the direction he was walking towards was not wrong.

As long as he walked along this direction, he will find that battlefield twenty years ago and obtain the Gu worms left behind on the battlefield.

Northern plains was different from southern border.

Southern border had lots of mountains and one could distinguish their general direction; while northern plains was grassland as far as the eye could see and was very easy to get lost.

Thus, Ge Yao carried return heart Gu with her for support. Return heart Gu would always point towards the direction of the home in the Gu Master’s heart.

However, return heart Gu could only indicate the direction and not the position.

If Fang Yuan wanted to ensure that he was moving in the correct path, he would have to take the risk of moving through this field of sunflowers.

Fortunately, he was already prepared.

He lightly removed the girl’s hand on his sleeve and squatted down. He put his palms on the ground and then activated a Gu in his aperture.

Soon, green underbrush grew out from the ground.

The lush underbrush rose little by little and the slender grass and leaves coiled around each other, gradually forming into a puppet.

Enslavement path, rank three grass puppet Gu.

This Gu worm was something only Southern Border had; Ge Yao looked at each grassman puppet with astonishment, they continued to grow and soon formed a group.

These grassman puppets were short and thin, the leaves tightly weaved together, they held a bamboo blade on one hand and a rattan shell shield in the other.

This was the rank three rattan shell grass soldier.

Previously when Fang Yuan had fought one against seven at San Cha mountain, Tie Ruo Nan had used such a Gu. Later, Fang Yuan obtained a grass puppet Gu in three kings blessed land from one of the people he killed.

Grass puppet Gu was rather common in Southern Border. Rank three grass puppet Gu could could create an army of rattan shell grass soldier that had the strength to kill rank one Gu Masters. Rank four grass puppet Gu could create grass sword elite soldiers which possessed even stronger battle strength.

However, at northern plains, the grass puppet Gu also suffered from the restriction and the rattan shell grass soldiers it created were weak.

However, Fang Yuan created these rattan shell grass soldiers not for battle and was indifferent about them.

After a while, close to a thousand rattan shell grass soldiers started clearing the way in front of him.

Fang Yuan pulled Ge Yao’s hand and under the protection of another hundred rattan shell grass soldiers, they walked into the sea of ghost face sunflowers.

"Yaaa—!"

"Mieee~~~"

"Dieee..."

Every ghost cry Gu let out a sharp screech; the rattan shell grass soldiers ahead collapsed. The voices the ghost cry Gu let out were not the same. Some were sharp frightened sounds; some were like the bleating of sheeps; and some seemed to be recounting hidden bitterness.

"Ghost... ghost faces are rising." The girl shook as she looked at the pale, terrifying ghost faces fly out from the sea of sunflowers.

Fang Yuan gently patted her hand and then calmly organised the puppets.

Soon, some rattan shell grass soldiers left the main group and sacrificed themselves to lure the ghost faces away.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The two got through sunflower sea safely.

Ge Yao looked behind her, breathing out deeply, her worried heart finally settled.

"To think that we got past the sea of ghost face sunflowers so easily."

After regaining her composure, the young girl looked at the grassman puppets around her.

There were only a few dozen puppets left, forming a weak defensive layer around them.

Ge Yao had never seen such a Gu in her life, this was an eye-opener.

"These Gu, although they do not have high combat strength, the greatest advantage is to use them as fodder. Chang Shan Yin came prepared indeed." Thinking so, the young girl diverted her gaze towards the person beside her.

The more she spent time with Fang Yuan, the more curious Ge Yao got, and the greater her determination to find out more about him.

"What sort of person is he? Entering poison grassland, what motive does he have? Chang Shan Yin, Chang Shan Yin... this name is so familiar, I’ve heard it before. Ah!"

The young girl’s face turned red.

When they had crossed the sunflower sea earlier, Fang Yuan held her hand. Those ghost cries and scary ghost faces made her frightened, she got closer to Fang Yuan and was almost hugging his arm, but she did not notice.

Ge Yao quickly let go of Fang Yuan’s arm, getting free of his hand.

After she got to a safe distance, Fang Yuan slowly stopped his steps, turning to look at these sunflowers.

"These ghost cry Gu and ghost face Gu are decent Gu, but I do not have the specialized Gu worms needed to catch them."

Catching a wild Gu worm requires specific methods. These two Gu worms were soul path Gu, the Gu needed to catch them were even more peculiar.

"It is time." Fang Yuan’s gaze concentrated, discarding his mild regret as he turned his gaze towards fixed immortal travel Gu on his shoulder.

Immortal Gu have overbearing aura, they could not be stored into mortal apertures. Spring Autumn Cicada could barely be kept in the aperture due to its weakened state.

Even if Fang Yuan ordered fixed immortal travel Gu to stay on his shoulders and not move about, the Immortal Gu’s aura would still leak, if a Gu Immortal senses it, it would invite grave danger!

But thankfully, Fang Yuan had measures against this.

He took out bright pearl Gu.

"Go." He injected his primeval essence, and the bright pearl Gu turned into a warm white light, floating onto fixed immortal travel’s body, covering it completely.

Bright pearl Gu is a rank four storage type Gu, mainly used to seal Gu worms and cause them to go into deep slumber and be easily stored.

Fang Yuan expended almost all his primeval essence before he successfully sealed the fixed immortal travel Gu.

Fixed immortal travel Gu was like a jade butterfly, sealed into a fist-sized pearl. But it was an Immortal Gu, its aura still leaked out through the pearl.

Except, it was much weaker now.

Fang Yuan was not surprised, this was only step one.

The following journey was much smoother.

Perhaps due to that sunflower sea, not a single poison beard wolf appeared.

The two continued to venture deeper, as the poisonous fog on the grassland became thicker, until one could clearly see the purple fog in the air.

When the two started coughly, they would stop moving and take out their Gu worms respectively, getting rid of the toxins that accumulated in them.

The deeper they went into the grassland, the thicker the fog, and the more often the two of them stopped.

Ge Yao who was active and lively also started keeping quiet in order to avoid breathing in too much of the poison fog.

Eventually, the purple fog started to obscure their vision.

"How much deeper are we going?" Ge Yao could not help but ask.

The deepest part of the poison grassland was a forbidden area for living beings. The deeper they go, the stronger the wild beasts inside. Many experts who went to explore lost their lives here, none returned. Among them were rank three peak stage experts, and even rank four.

"Soon." Fang Yuan replied plainly as he walked slower, until he stopped.

"Are we there? It’s here?" Ge Yao asked happily.

Fang Yuan did not say a word, he squatted down and moved away some poisonous shrubs that had a weird appearance, as a hole that was hidden by the bushes appeared before him.

This hole was the size of a large bowl, it has a smooth edge. Inside the hole was pure darkness.

Ge Yao saw this and her eyes were fixed on the hole, breathing roughly: "This, this is a hole dug by a earth spike rat. They live together in thousands and even ten thousands, forming into a huge group. They live under the grass inside the soil, as long as there are vibrations in the ground, they would attack from below. Their heads are like steel spikes, once they shoot out, it can pierce a person’s feet. Even a horse’s hoofs can get pierced."

"We cannot go forward anymore. Once we get encircled, there will be no way to survive. We will be submerged by endless rats. Along the way, we met no poison beard wolves, this shows that the earth spike rats are the lord of this area. Who knows, the earth spike rat king might be a myriad beast king!"

The young girl had lived in the grassland since young, she knew clearly how powerful the earth spike rats were.

"No, my destination is further ahead." Fang Yuan stood up.

"Chang Shan Yin! Excessive bravery is courting death. You cannot walk over this. In fact, in just a few steps, you will get attacked by the rats." Ge Yao quickly explained.

But Fang Yuan smiled lightly: "Who said I am going to walk over?"

Just as he said so, pitch-black wings grew on his back.

"This..." Ge Yao stared with wide-opened eyes, before she reacted, Fang Yuan already carried her up.

As the girl screamed, Fang Yuan flapped his wings and flew above the ground.

Ge Yao felt like her heart was stuck in her throat, the wind was blowing at her ears as she felt herself on swimming in clouds, her legs could not touch the ground thus she subconsciously grabbed Fang Yuan’s neck.

After a while, the young girl reacted, and laughed heartily in Fang Yuan’s arms: "Chang Shan Yin, to think that you can fly. Father has a flying cloud Gu, he used to bring me to play in the sky when I was young. Sigh, sadly flying cloud Gu is a rank four Gu, I cannot use it. But even if I could, father would not allow it, he would be afraid of me falling from the sky."

Ge Yao recalled, before asking curiously: "Chang Shan Yin, what flying Gu is this? Why have I not seen it before?"

Fang Yuan did not answer.

The young girl did not give up: "This is the rank three eagle wings Gu? Such speed and altitude is similar to eagle wings Gu, but this does not look like it."

Fang Yuan sighed: "You ask too many questions. Rather than asking me useless questions, why don’t you spend your effort on the shadow crows ahead of us."

"Shadow crow?" The young girl reacted, seeing three shadow crows in front flying towards them soundlessly.

The shadow crows were large as an eagle, their bodies were black and they moved without sound. In this foggy poison grassland, they were even more stealthy.

The young girl’s expression paled, her voice trembling: "Chang Shan Yin, how good is your flying technique? If you are not good, let’s land and defend on the grassland."

"No worries." Fang Yuan’s voice was emotionless: "I’m carrying you, I cannot attack. Next, it will depend on whether your spiral water arrow is accurate."

"What? Ah!"

The young girl had not understood what he said, when Fang Yuan flapped his wings fiercely and charged towards the three shadow crows.

Fang Yuan used his actions to reply Ge Yao.

"This is too insane! He did not think of running away, but instead wants to kill these three shadow crows!" Ge Yao was shocked, in her panic, she shot out two water arrows.

But these two water arrows, one missed completely while the other grazed the shadow crow’s wing.

"Too slow, again!" Fang Yuan made a perfect turn as he flapped his wings towards the shadow crows again.

"What? Hey, wait, don’t fight them. We are not on the ground, our opponents are the shadow crows famous for speed!" Ge Yao shouted.

The two humans and three birds charged towards each other in the air, as they got closer and closer.

Ge Yao could see a shadow crow enlarging quickly in her vision, as they got close, the shadow crow brandished its dagger-like sharp claws.

Seeing that the sharp claw was about to hit her, Ge Yao’s body turned cold from fright, her fingers and legs were stiff as she was immobilized.

"We’re going to collide, I am going to die!" Just as she had this thought, Fang Yuan kept his wings and they descended quickly, narrowly avoiding the shadow crow’s claw.

Next, he stretched out his wings and flapped hard, making a zigzag turn, flying up and chasing behind the shadow crow.

"Fire quickly!" Fang Yuan shouted.

Ge Yao’s body reacted to his voice and subconsciously shot out a spiral water arrow.

Fang Yuan’s flying technique was too profound, he directly flew behind the shadow crow, its back was completely exposed to Ge Yao.

The spiral water arrow shot the shadow crow, piercing its body and causing a trail of blood.

The shadow crow was killed on the spot, like a kite with its strings cut, it fell onto the ground with a loud thump.

The grassland was silent for a moment before the ground vibrated, as numerous earth spike rats popped up from underground.

That shadow crow corpse was immediately dismembered and dragged into the holes made on the ground piece by piece.

The large shadow crow vanished in an instant, leaving behind a pool of blood, as well as some small pieces of intestines.

The young girl became overwhelmingly nervous after seeing this. If she really fell, she would immediately get attacked by the earth spike rats, she would definitely die!

"What are you thinking? Shoot them!" Fang Yuan chided, interrupting the girl’s thoughts as she hurriedly attacked, shooting over ten arrows before killing the two shadow crows.

The two shadow crows landed on the ground and were immediately taken by the earth spike rats, Ge Yao looked at this as cold sweat appeared on her face.

"Your accuracy is terrible, quickly use primeval stones to recover your primeval essence!"

As Fang Yuan scolded, Ge Yao took out one primeval stones, but because she was flustering, this primeval stones fell out of her hand and landed on the ground.

"You idiot!"

"So... sorry!"

The young girl apologised in a sobbing tone.

"Focus, calm down! Display your usual ability, there will be many shadow crows later, I have to depend on you." Fang Yuan’s voice became more gentle.

"Yes, yes." Ge Yao nodded her head in succession, after Fang Yuan consoled her, her mind slowly returned to a calm state.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

An entire hour later.

Fang Yuan carried Ge Yao as they safely landed on the ground.

Ge Yao’s legs went soft, her expression was pale and she had to catch her breath after getting back to the land, recovering slowly.

During the flying process, she had killed at least a hundred shadow crows, she had felt that she was struggling at death’s door during the process.

During the process of flying, they were in great danger, facing the assault of many waves of shadow crows, and even attracted the attack of the earth spike rats.

Not only were there an endless number of shadow crows in the sky, numerous earth spikes would shoot up from the ground at times; it was a truly precarious situation.

Fang Yuan spread his wings, twisted and turned, circled, dived, and rose into the sky under such attacks. Finding impossible opportunities, he managed to find a way out of the rain of attacks.

"I actually survived from facing such an insane number of enemies?" This was Ge Yao’s first thought when she landed.

The relief of surviving an ordeal, an unbelievable feeling of happiness, and the after-fear of recalling the situation, after she had experienced all these, Ge Yao looked at Fang Yuan with a complicated expression, as he was healing the injuries on his body.

Even if the girl was ignorant, after such an experience, she knew that Fang Yuan was a grand expert in flying.

Moreover, Ge Yao was not an ordinary young girl from the grassland, her father was the leader of a tribe, in her entire life, she had been greatly influenced by him, her horizons were expanded and she knew much more than her peers.

"The man before me, he has such skilled flying techniques, he is so strong. Inside that strong body of his, is there a flying eagle’s soul? Such flying technique can compete with ’Lightning’ Dong Po Kong, ’Water Immortal’ Song Qing Yin, and ’Green Bat’ Wu Ye! This is a first-rate flying technique in northern plains! Chang Shan Yin, Chang Shan Yin, what kind of person are you..."

Fang Yuan quickly took care of his injuries.

Facing a storm-like attack, even if his flying technique was top-tier, he could not avoid getting hit sometimes.

Most importantly, the rank four bone wings Gu only had rank three effectiveness in northern plains. At the same time, he was carrying a person, with the increase in weight, it affected his agility.

"But, having Ge Yao’s help, the advantage was greater than the disadvantage. If she did not use water arrow and water dragon to kill the crow groups, or if she did not use water armor to defend us, my primeval essence might not be enough." Fang Yuan thought.

"As a southern border Gu Master, when I am in northern plains, my cultivation will be suppressed, but thankfully, as time passes and I slowly assimilate into northern plains, this suppression will decrease."

Man is the spirit of all beings, they had great adaptability with the environment they were in.

Of course, when Fang Yuan completely mixes in with northern border, and his cultivation returns to normal, when he returns to southern border, he will face suppression again, and would need to adapt and assimilate once again.

"Man can adapt to the environment, but Gu worms cannot. Southern border Gu worms will continue to face suppression, all my Gu worms still expend the same amount of primeval essence but their use is greatly reduced. Rank four Gu worms in southern border are inferior to rank three northern plains Gu worms here."

But if he killed Ge Yao, he only had a very small chance of getting her Gu worms.

Ony by using her like this, can this rank three middle stage Gu Master’s worth be fully displayed.

"If not for Ge Yao, I would not be able to advance so quickly. Although her Gu worms are good, I have no way of taking them. These southern border Gu worms, I need to change them out, other than considering their battle strength, they are also the greatest flaw in hiding my identity. I have to get to that battlefield."

Fang Yuan sighed internally, taking out bright pearl Gu.

Fixed immortal travel Gu is sealed inside bright pearl Gu, like a beautiful amber.

In front of Ge Yao, Fang Yuan took out bright pearl Gu forthrightly.

Dusty Gu was like a cocoon, its body was dark grey, and felt like sandpaper. Fang Yuan injected primeval essence, and dusty Gu exploded lightly, turning into a grey smoke cloud.

The grey smoke moved towards bright pearl Gu as if it was sentient.

The originally shining bright pearl Gu was covered by this dust cover, and dimmed. The fixed immortal travel Gu’s aura diminished once again.

This became a dusty pearl.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, when he got to central continent and caused the five region chaotic battle, some Gu Masters slipped into other regions to battle, and in order to hide their identities and conceal their aura, they created this method.

"What are you doing?" Ge Yao asked curiously.

Fang Yuan did not answer her, he kept the dimmed pearl into his pocket and continued on his journey.

The two continued to advance, as the poison fog in the air became thicker, the thick purple color fog started to affect their vision.

The two had to stop more frequently, using Gu worms to eliminate the poison in them.

Crack...

A crisp sound came from the below their feet, like they had stepped on some twigs.

Ge Yao directed her gaze over in suspicion, before screaming and jumping back like a rabbit.

"Wh... why is there a human skull here?" She said with a trembling voice.

"Because this is a battlefield." Fang Yuan walked ahead of her, not turning back but instead walking even faster.

"Battlefield? Hey, wait for me, don’t go so fast!" Ge Yao quickly followed after Fang Yuan.

The more she walked, the more shocked she was.

Before, the thick purple fog was covering her vision, but now that she got close, she could see many skeletons on the rotting grassland, skeletons of both humans and wolves.

There were deep pits and trenches in the ground, evidently, a fierce battle had taken place here.

"So many people died, who engaged in such a brawl here? But the trenches and pits have already been outgrown by poisonous grass, looking at the other traces, this battle took place at least twenty years ago."

Ge Yao was behind Fang Yuan, seeing him search continuously, like he was trying to find something, she understood.

"So Chang Shan Yin’s purpose for entering this poison grassland is this battlefield. What is he looking for? Wait, twenty years ago, in the poison grassland, there was indeed a huge battle. Father had spoken with someone about this, I was beside him at that time..."

A memory surfaced deep in Ge Yao’s mind.

Back then, Ge Yao was still young, she was only four or five years old. Her father invited an esteemed guest, and brought her along with him.

In the tent, the adults were talking about the heroes in the grassland.

"Speaking of which, Chang tribe has an amazing person!"

"You mean the Wolf King?"

"That’s right, this person is an enslavement path Gu Master heavily nurtured by Chang tribe, he moved like the wind and attacked like the rain, he could alter his battle formations as he wished, he has great abilities. Most importantly, he is a righteous figure, he is extremely filial to his mother. This time, because his mother was poisoned by a unique poison, it can only be cured by the snow wash Gu inside the spiraea. He ignored all opposition and ventured into poison grassland alone."

"Sigh, that is exactly why Wolf King died."

"Yes, this matter was a huge scheme from start to end. Wolf King’s enemy Ha Tu Gu planned this. Ha Tu Gu wanted to kill Wolf King, but he was not to be trifled with, killing all of the bandits with Ha Tu Gu and eliminated a huge pest for the grassland."

"But it is a pity for this hero, Wolf King Chang Shan Yin, he lost his life at poison grassland."

...

"Chang Shan Yin? You are Wolf King Chang Shan Yin!" Thinking of this, Ge Yao opened her mouth, staring at Fang Yuan fixatedly.

"Oh? You know about Chang Shan Yin too?" Fang Yuan replied lightly as he continued searching.

But Ge Yao quickly shook her head: "No, no way. Looking at his age, by now, if Chang Shan Yin is alive, he should be at least forty years old. How can he be as young as you. Furthermore, your appearance and accent are completely different. You are not Chang Shan Yin!"

"Hehehe, if I am not Chang Shan Yin, who am I?"

"Oh right, who are you? Why are you impersonating a dead Gu Master?" Ge Yao’s mind was full of questions.

Suddenly, her eyes brightened up: "Wait! Although after Chang Shan Yin died, his mother also died of poison. But he was already married and had kids. His son is already grown up, and is quite a talented person. Don’t tell me... you are Chang Shan Yin’s son?"

Fang Yuan laughed, just as he was about to answer, he heard a strange sound near his ears.

This sound was like old wheels rolling on the ground.

Following this sound, a large white bone wheel appeared in the purple fog.

It was as tall as two men, 1.5m in width, its body was made of white bones. On the surface of the carriage, sharp bone spikes were protruding out. At the spoke of the wheel, there was a large skull. The skull’s horrific eye sockets were burning with blood-red flames.

"Careful, this is Ha Tu Gu’s rank five Gu – Battle Bone Wheel!"

Fang Yuan had just warned, when the wheel accelerated, crushing over with an imposing aura.

Golden dragon Gu!

Fang Yuan pushed with his hand, and the dragon roared, smashing on the wheel.

The wheel vibrated, easily smashing the golden dragon to bits and continued to attack Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan quickly spread his bone wings and flew into the sky.

But the wheel also lifted off from the ground, flying into the air.

Golden coat Gu!

Fang Yuan knew he could not dodge and decided to face it head on.

Bam, he was sent flying, landing on the ground, causing his body to be covered in rotten grass.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Three spiral water arrows shot the wheel consecutively.

The white bone wheel landed on the ground, causing mud to splash. It gave up on Fang Yuan, turning its target to Ge Yao, rolling over.

Ge Yao quickly activated the water trace Gu, summoning her water armor and dodging while attacking back.

Fang Yuan also arrived quickly and started to assist her.

This was a tough fight.

The opponent was a rank five Gu, it was Ha Tu Gu’s core Gu. After Ha Tu Gu died, it became a wild Gu, and ate white bones as food.

White bone wheel’s attack was fierce, it often crushed its opponents into meat paste.

Fang Yuan was suppressed, and his battle strength was lowered, he also did not bring a rank five Gu, he could not face the white bone wheel directly.

His original plan was to avoid the white bone wheel and find Chang Shan Yin’s corpse.

But with Ge Yao to assist him, he changed his plans and decided to battle.

After fighting for four hours, using the kiting tactic devised by Fang Yuan, the two bullied the white bone wheel’s lack of intelligence, taking breaks in turns and eventually caused the white bone wheel to fall over.

Once the battle was decided, Fang Yuan placed both hands on the white bone wheel, sending his will and primeval essence into it.

White bone wheel was a rank five Gu, even if he had the rank six Spring Autumn Cicada and fixed immortal travel Gu, they could not help him to instantly refine it.

But the wheel was full of cracks, it was almost going to break apart, it was a step away from being destroyed. With Fang Yuan’s hundred man soul, he had ample mental energy and with his firm will, he continuously injected primeval essence into it, after spending fifteen minutes, he finally subdued it.

Rank five Gu obtained!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan’s mind entered his aperture.

After the white bone wheel entered his aperture, it floated along the waves of his true gold primeval sea, half sinking and half floating, showing a lifeless appearance.

Gu worms naturally get hurt, damaged, or even die.

"This white bone wheel is already on the verge of destruction and can no longer be used, unless I can find the bone bamboo Gu and combine it with the ghost fire Gu to repair it." Fang Yuan thought in his heart.

There are many healing Gu which are not intended for human bodies.

Some Gu, such as wolf smoke Gu, are specifically used to treat the injuries of wolves, while other Gu, like pig iron Gu are used to treat chainsaw golden centipede.

Bone bamboo Gu, combined with ghost fire Gu, can repair the damage of the white bone wheel, so that it can function again.

"Speaking of the battle bone wheel Gu, it’s actually quite famous, since it was used by the rank eight Demonic Gu Immortal Shen Jie Ao. He was also known as the Proud Bone Demon Lord. His talent was outstanding and shocking. When he became a rank six Gu Immortal, he lacked a rank six Gu. He came up with a killer move known as White Bone Chariot. The white bone chariot consisted of many rank five Gu, such as the white bone wheel, and had power comparable to a rank six Gu!

"By the virtue of his ingenuity, Shen Jie Ao reached rank eight realm, and made his killer move ’White Bone Battlefield’ famous in the world; it was a killer move that combined three Immortal Gu’s power, it was even more powerful than before. He used this to dominate the world, killing an uncountable number of Gu Immortals, his fierce name spread wide as he caused the righteous path to be helpless. Sigh, when can I reach such a stage?"

In his past life, Fang Yuan lived for about five hundred years, and became a rank six Gu Immortal, one step away from rank seven. When he later refined the Spring Autumn Cicada, he was attacked by the righteous path and consequently self-detonated.

Every time he thought about Blood Sea Ancestor, Proud Bone Demon Lord, Soul Specter Demon Venerable, all of them were amazing characters, Fang Yuan could not help but be impressed.

"As a man living in present age, I should be like this, unrestrained by the mortal realm, doing things without worry, killing whoever I dislike. When my heart is evil, I slaughter all beings, and when I am virtuous, I bless the world. The world moves according to my emotions, I dominate everything, any enemy who resists me are trampled underfoot. Oh, this is a true freedom, a cheerful and carefree life!"

Fang Yuan let out a heartfelt sigh and took out a bright pearl Gu from his pocket.

Bright pearl Gu was already dusty, its light was dim. Sealed inside was fixed immortal travel, the aura of the Immortal Gu was also fading.

Fang Yuan took out the dark toss Gu.

This Gu and dusty Gu looked almost the same, a silkworm cocoon like shape, except it was deep black in color.

Fang Yuan transferred his primeval essence, the black silkworm cocoon wiggled up, ten tendrils twisted out, twisting like snakes, and climbed on the bright pearl Gu.

In just a short moment, the bright pearl Gu was enveloped by a black silkworm cocoon.

This was known as "tossing pearls in the dark", it was developed during the battle of the five regions, to completely conceal the aura of Gu worms.

Because of this, fixed immortal travel’s aura was even fainter now.

"Warrior Chang Shan Yin, you are trying to seal this beautiful jade butterfly?" Ge Yao stood to the side and gradually understood Fang Yuan’s intention.

Fang Yuan gave her a mysterious smile and kept the dark pearl into his pocket and continued to be buried in his research of the battlefield.

This battlefield was created twenty years ago, after the battle between Chang Shan Yin and Ha Tu Gu.

Chang Shan Yin was a rank four peak stage Gu Master, while Ha Tu Gu was already a rank five initial stage Gu Master who also lead a large band of subordinates.

The two were originally childhood friends, but they fell in love with the same woman. The woman ultimately chose Chang Shan Yin, and from then on Ha Tu Gu became filled with a jealous rage. This led to an unceasing hostility growing between the two of them, a hatred that could only be washed away with the blood of the other.

After Ha Tu Gu poisoned Chang Shan Yin’s mother, in order to find the snow wash Gu, he lead the wolf packs deep into the poisonous plains.

When he reached the plains, Chang Shan Yin set up an ambush there. When Ha Tu Gu brought his gang of bandits and came, as large groups of wolves attacked from all directions.

This was a bitter fight to the death, until the sun went down.

Eventually, the wolves were all killed, along with all the horse bandits, who were either killed or fled. Chang Shan Yin was at his limits, and Ha Tu Gu’s primeval essence was exhausted. The two resorted to fighting with their bare hands.

Both men fought till their eyes turned red and made use of everything in their surroundings to gain the advantage.

They wrestled together, biting with their teeth, clawing with their hands, until they finally expended all their strength, and collapsed to the ground, with barely enough strength to breathe.

The life and death enemies, once incomparably close friends, were only two or three steps away from each other, but all they could do was gasp for air and stare at each other.

They were powerful Gu Masters, one a righteous hero, the other a demonic devil, yet both had lost their strength. At this moment, both were as fragile as a child, if a rabbit came running and blocked their face, they would suffocate to death.

They were at a deadlock, when suddenly Ha Tu Gu suddenly burst into hearty laugh. He was, after all, a rank five Gu Master, and his primeval essence recovery rate was quicker compared to Chang Shan Yin’s.

His primeval essence recovered first, enough for him to cast a poisonous bone spear.

Seeing the bone spear being shot towards him, Chang Shan Yin’s eyes widened, as a miracle burst of strength emerged in him.

Using all his strength, he managed to turn half his body, but the poisonous bone spear, which had been aimed at his head, still pierced his chest.

The intensity of the pain made Chang Shan Yin roar, but by relying on the wolf strength Gu to increase his strength, he managed to break the bone spear and clutched it tightly in his hand. Slowly, he dragged his body towards Ha Tu Gu’s side.

In the end, Chang Shan Yin took the poisonous bone spear and stabbed it into the eyes of Ha Tu Gu, ending the life of his mortal enemy.

Although Chang Shan Yin had won, the poison of the bone spear had already spread throughout his whole body.

By utilizing all the primeval essence that he had just recovered, he activated the wolf fetus burial Gu.

This Gu utilized a hundred and eight different species of pregnant female wolves, and its specialty was to save a life. If long as they had one breath left, the user could be saved.

Chang Shan Yin used the Gu, drilled into the ground, and fell asleep.

About thirty years later, a rank three Gu Master, Ma Hong Yun, was chased to the battlefield by a pack of wolves. In his desperation, he coincidentally managed to find the buried Chang Shan Yin.

After Ma Hong Yun saved Chang Shan Yin, the latter not only helped him repel the wolves, but also helped him become one of the four great generals. In the future struggle for power in the grassland, Chang Shan Yin contributed countless merits, and Ma Hong Yun who was born as a slave became the lord of the imperial court.

Chang Shan Yin experience both ups and downs of life, his tale was quite legendary. His story spread widely throughout the north, it was no secret.

Later, with the aid of Ma Hong Yun, he became a rank seven Gu Immortal, receiving the title of "Sky Wolf General", gaining even greater authority.

Ultimately, while resisting the invasion of the Central Continent, he died in battle, and his descendants passed down his biography — this is also why Fang Yuan was so knowledgeable about his history.

"Hmm? I found it!"

His long search had finally come to an end.

Fang Yuan stepped forward and found a huge wolf tail on the grass.

The wolf tail, covered with mud, was covered by poisonous grass and could hardly be seen. If it wasn't for Fang Yuan's persistence and careful search, it would have been impossible to find.

"Originally, while Ma Hong Yun was escaping, he tripped on this wolf tail. When he pulled on the wolf tail, he saved not only Chang Shan Yin, but also himself."

Fang Yuan was feeling overwhelmed by emotions, he grabbed the wolf tail and forcibly pulled it out.

Suddenly, the land writhed, and a huge female wolf's body appeared out of the ground, its eyes were closed, the whole body covered in purple fur, with a white belly.

It was humongous; even while it was lying down, it was taller than a person.

Ge Yao hurriedly ran over, her face flushed with surprise: "What wolf is this, why is it so big? Ah, it looks like a female wolf, look at its belly, it must be pregnant!"

"It's not a wolf, it's a Gu." Fang Yuan said, taking out a sharp knife from moving perspective cup Gu.

He sliced open the belly of the wolf, causing a long gash to appear.

Immediately, the wolf's bulging belly was torn open, and a large amount of amniotic fluid, mixed with blood, spewed all over the ground; the lower part of Fang Yuan's body was soaked.

Ge Yao saw what was happening, and hurriedly jumped out of the way to avoid becoming a victim of the filth.

She then widened her mouth in surprise, crying out, "Why is there a man inside the wolf's womb?"

As the amniotic fluid continued to flow out, a person also came out. It was the true Chang Shan Yin!

His eyes were closed, and his body was full of injuries, especially the part with the half-bone spear sticking out. He was covered in thick amniotic fluids, his expression showing great pain, and his skin was green.

Fang Yuan quickly squatted down and extended his hands. It looked like he was observing the injuries of Chang Shan Yin, but in fact, he secretly pinched the neck of Chang Shan Yin.

Poor Chang Shan Yin, a hero who succeeded in killing his enemy, and lived for another twenty years using his Gu worm. After another ten years or so, his fated lord appeared and saved him. But now that Fang Yuan had stepped in, the future of this man, the famous 'Sky Wolf General' and the future rank seven Gu Immortal was killed.

Chang Shan Yin died while he was unconscious, unable to resist, letting out only a faint breath.

When Fang Yuan killed him, his body did not even tremble. Needless to say, since he was unconscious, he could not self-detonate his Gu worms.

Fang Yuan’s mind entered his aperture and immediately found several tortoise breath Gu inside.

Tortoise breath Gu was a storage Gu, like the bright pearl Gu, it was used to seal Gu worms.

Before Chang Shan Yin entered the belly of the wolf, to prevent his Gu worms from starving to death, he seal his Gu worms one by one in the tortoise breath Gu.

They were rank four Gu, shaped like oval stones, and were slightly larger in size than a fist. The surface of the stones was covered with markings, similar to that of a tortoise shell.

By leaking the aura of the Spring Autumn Cicada, Fang Yuan instantly refined these tortoise breath Gu.

He took all the tortoises out, and under the watchful eyes of Ge Yao, he crushed them all one by one to reveal the Gu inside.

There were a total of eight Gu from the enslavement path, all of which were precious rank four Gu worms. Some of them were even more precious than ordinary rank five Gu. Chang Shan Yin meticulously arranged this collection, and with this set of Gu, he made a reputation for himself in northern plains. Using this set of Gu, he killed rank five Gu Masters before.

And with the help of Spring Autumn Cicada, all of them became Fang Yuan’s possession.

"And now, I finally have an excellent set of rank four Gu from northern plains!" The corner of his mouth curled into a faint smile.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

But merely retrieving the Gu worms was not the whole purpose of Fang Yuan’s journey.

After placing all of the Gu worms into his aperture, he turned his attention to Chang Shan Yin’s corpse.

He started using Gu worms, helping the body to detoxify.

"Isn’t he already dead?" Ge Yao asked by his side, looking confused. Detoxifying a living person made sense, but what was the point of detoxifying a corpse?

Fang Yuan did not bother turning to answer her, but told her: "Stop looking, use your cleansing Gu and help."

Fang Yuan and Ge Yao worked in turns; gradually, Shang Chan Yin’s corpse was losing its toxicity.

"Don’t tell me... is he Chang Shan Yin? He’s your father?" Ge Yao had a sudden realization, and sent a look of inquiry towards Fang Yuan, "No, Chang Shan Yin’s son is a native of northern plains. Looking at your appearance, you’re obviously a foreigner."

Fang Yuan let out a cold grunt, saying expressionlessly: "I told you, I am Chang Shan Yin."

As the toxins in his body were purged, the surface of Chang Shan Yin’s skin gradually returned to it’s natural complexion, losing the wretched green color that came as a result of the poison.

Fang Yuan, upon seeing that the cleansing was almost complete, asked the girl to step back. He stripped Chang Shan Yin of his clothes, and rinsed them with water.

"You... you want to bring his body back?" Ge Yao surmised.

However, Fang Yuan’s following actions immediately overturned her conjecture.

She saw Fang Yuan retrieve a regiment of black ants from his aperture.

Fang Yuan injected his primeval essence, and the black ants immediately rushed towards Chang Shan Yin’s pale and naked corpse and began to consume it.

The black ants crawled all over Chang Shan Yin, swallowing all of his skin into their stomach, turning the corpse into a mess of fleshy tendons, and leaving the body beyond recognition.

Ge Yao saw what was happening, and resisted the urge to vomit.

Fang Yuan collected the ants once they were done, took out a seed, and planted it into the ground.

As he poured his primeval essence, the seed began to grow at a visible rate: rooting, germinating, and blooming into a beautiful flower.

The flower was in full bloom, yet it was quite strange in that it appeared as if it was covered in a membrane of skin, like the inner flesh of a mouth. The inner petals also had a row of tiny jagged sawtooth.

The black ants converged into a group, climbing up the flower, and entered the core of the flower.

The flower then closed again, its jagged teeth whirling wildly, as the teeth rubbed against each other, it made a humming sound, and made the whole flower tremble.

Fang Yuan took out another Gu worm, which Ge Yao failed to recognize. The Gu turned into a multi-colored blaze, and attached itself to the top of the flower.

The flower twisted wildly while it burned in the flame, giving off a sharp shriek.

The shriek of the flower was so sharp that it forced Ge Yao to cover her ears and move backwards several more steps.

At this point, the girl realized that something was amiss, this strange method reeked of the demonic path. Ge Yao’s complexion paled, and when she looked at Fang Yuan, she saw that his face had not changed, standing on the spot, both his eyes were shining as he paid attention to the flower.

"Open." Suddenly, both of Fang Yuan’s eyes emitted an explosion of light as he shouted loudly.

The corolla of the flower opened up a small slit, allowing the multi-colored flame to enter. Afterwards, the whole flower suddenly exploded and a Gu worm flew out.

The Gu Worm had a multi-colored tint, constantly transforming; occasionally yellow-green, and occasionally blood-violet. Like a smokey fog that was rising upwards.

"Human skin Gu, the refinement has finally been completed." Fang Yuan, upon seeing it, let out a sigh of relief. Next, he willed, retrieving an old removal Gu from his aperture, as it turned into a cooling breeze.

The breeze flew out of the aperture, flowing all over Fang Yuan’s body, permeating his skin, tendons, and bones.

Fang Yuan had originally used three Gu; ancient bronze skin, essence iron bones, and golden steel tendons, to modify his body, and now it was all washed away.

Then, from the moving perspective cup Gu, he took out a sharp dagger.

"The following scene is going to be a bit bloody, you should close your eyes." With his hand clutching the dagger, he gave his warning to Ge Yao.

Ge Yao hurriedly took a breath, looking at Fang Yuan in confusion, unable to speak a word.

Then at the next moment, the girl’s pupils shrank, both of her hands covered her mouth, unable to suppress her alarmed yelp.

Under her horrified gaze, Fang Yuan pointed the dagger to his chest and softly sliced it.

Swish!

He had cut from himself from the neck down to his abdomen.

Yet strangely enough, his blood did not flow out, he had prepared a staunch bleeding Gu in advance.

After that, Fang Yuan expressionlessly slit the dagger along the middle of his body, then he stretched out his hand and ripped the skin off of his chest.

The girl, upon seeing this horrifically violent scene, could not help but repeatedly step backwards again, her entire face had turned pale like paper.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth to endure the pain, and under the urging of his mind, the colorful smoke that was in floating in midair covered his whole chest.

Sizzle...

In the midst of the strange sound, Fang Yuan’s bare and bloody chest was covered by a new layer of skin.

The peculiarity of it was, although the skin had just grown, it did not have the expected baby-like tenderness; instead it had the pale solidity of old skin.

Then, Fang Yuan repeated the process, peeling the skin of his arms and his legs, completely removing them, to grow a new layer of skin.

"This, don’t tell me..." Ge Yao could gradually see what was happening, and was flabbergasted.

When he was peeling the skin of his back, Fang Yuan was somewhat troubled, but under his strenuous effort, he managed to succeed.

Eventually, it was time for the most critical part, the face.

Fang Yuan stop for a moment, taking a quick rest, then, lifting up his dagger, he aimed at the tip at his eyelid.

Ge Yao watched with her whole body trembling, yet Fang Yuan’s hands were steady like they were cast iron, each of his actions were precise and minute. He first cut his eyelids off, followed by his eye sockets, the knife tip curved out and reached his ear, and moved from his cheek to his chin.

Turning around at his chin, he did the same to the other side, and ended up completing a circle.

Next, Ge Yao saw Fang Yuan removing his own face; her heart pounded furiously, and her legs felt weak.

The colorful smoke then flew over again, and grew a new layer of skin.

Subsequently, Fang Yuan did the same to the skin on his neck, ears, and scalp.

When he turned his face to look at Ge Yao, he had already changed into a new person, sporting the appearance of Chang Shan Yin.

"I told you, I am Chang Shan Yin." He said in a bland tone.

Ge Yao looked at Fang Yuan in disbelief, he had actually spoken in a perfect northern plains accent.

Of course Fang Yuan could speak in the northern accent, he just chose not to earlier.

"You, you!" Her finger was pointed at Fang Yuan, her body trembled violently, her face had turned pale, and her expression was filled with horror.

Fang Yuan laughed in disdain internally: the human body is merely a sack of flesh, I was just changing the sack, what was the point of making such a fuss? The so-called beauty and ugly are superficially and weak things. If this is Earth, people have no powers and the immortal path is cut, then so be it. But in this world, only eternal life is worth pursuing!

This human skin gu, hundred of years later, it would be developed by Gu Masters during the five region chaotic battle. It could be used by Gu Masters to cleverly disguise themselves as another person, with their face being identical.

Many of central continent’s Gu Masters, using human skin Gu, were able to penetrate deep into enemy headquarters. Allowing for secret assassinations and mass destruction, it had greatly augmented the military power of the central continent, making the four other regions panic and doubt each other.

Not paying any attention to the pretty lady who was scared out of her wits, Fang Yuan stood where he was and brought his hands to eye level to observe them.

By now, his hands had completely changed.

His fingerprints and palm prints were exactly the same as Chang Shan Yin’s.

Next, he felt his chest.

His chest was originally smooth and flat, but now it sported chest hair that extended downwards from his throat to his crotch.

He felt his own nose, a northern man’s stiff nose, then he felt his rough cheeks. He took out a mirror and observed his features, his face had already become that of Chang Shan Yin, going to the extent that he had begun to grow hair in the same style. Even the grey hair that came with old age were completely replicated.

Human skin Gu, it referred to the fact that human skin was the main ingredient of the Gu worm. In addition, the transformation was a complete transformation. Not just skin, but hair, eye color, the shape of his bones, and even old injuries were completely replicated

...

Ge Yao looked at Fang Yuan, it felt like a dead man had just resurrected.

"You, who the hell are you?" She stared at Fang Yuan, full of vigilance and alertness.

Fang Yuan gave her a smile, saying gently: "I told you, I am Chang Shan Yin."

"Do you think I’m a fool? Just a moment ago, I saw the whole thing, I saw it first-hand till the end. Also, you are an outsider, stop using our northern accent to speak!" The girl shrieked, her expression looked almost deranged.

Fang Yuan looked at her with a considerate gaze, his face showing great wisdom that came with age, he let out a sigh filled with great emotion: "Little lady, rest assured, I mean you no harm, I am Chang Shan Yin, from the beginning to the end, I did not lie to you."

"So, so how do you explain what just happened?" The young girl asked.

Fang Yuan’s eyes glanced upwards, ignoring the girl, and looked at the sky, his expression was in daze as he spoke in a reminiscent tone: "Little lady, have you ever heard of soul seizure?"

"Soul seizure?" Ge Yao had a blank look, her eyes flickered with confusion, and her tone was uncertain, "You mean, when a body is taken over by another soul?"

Fang Yuan slowly and gently explained: "It seems you have heard about it before. Yes, you’re right, I was on the verge of death, with no one to rescue me, so I had no choice but to escape with my soul. In poison grassland, it is cloudy all year round, and the sun isn’t visible, which allowed my soul to wander freely. I wandered for a whole twenty years, until I was able to seize the body of a foreign Gu Master. While I teleported back with my Gu worm, I met you coincidentally."

"Really? Is what you are saying really true?"

"Hehehe, if I meant you harm, I would have killed you long ago, there would have been no reason to allow you to accompany me here, or even teaching you how to battle right?."

"That’s true but..."

"If I wanted to guard against you, I wouldn’t have let you witness these things. You are a northern plains native, and I am the great Chang Shan Yin, I wouldn’t do despicable things to a girl such as yourself. Why was it that I only managed to seize a body after twenty years? It was because I did not want to slaughter a northern plains native for my own selfish reasons. Little lady, will you attack me because of an outsider?" Fang Yuan’s smile was bright as the sun, speaking in a righteous tone.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ge Yao gradually let her guard down: "Your words are reasonable. If you truly are Chang Shan Yin, then you would be the great hero of our northern plains! For a mere outsider, I definitely wouldn’t make things difficult for you. Yet how can you prove your identity?"

Fang Yuan chuckled and his expression changed, revealing a trace of the arrogance that belonged to a senior expert: "I, Chang Shan Yin, will neither change my name or surname, I am me, why would I need to prove myself? Little girl, if you want to leave now, I will definitely not stop you."

Fang Yuan’s statement of allowing her to leave succeeded in shaking Ge Yao’s doubts, creating enormous hesitation in her heart.

Fang Yuan did not miss this chance: "Little girl, it’s alright to be on guard, but just think, how many opportunities did I have to kill you on the way? There is no need to mention anything else, just think of the time we spent flying. I just had to release my hands and you would have fallen into the earth spike rat group, your death would have been certain. But didn’t I do that? Our meeting was fated; since you had the courage to flee your marriage, why don’t you have courage to face me?"

Ge Yao fell into silence.

Fang Yuan observed her expression and knew the time was ripe, finishing off his explanation: "Come with me, you are still young, it is not safe for you to wander around the depths of poison grassland alone. Didn’t you tell me you were searching for the snow spirea? You want to find a snow wash Gu in the snow spirea, and bring it back to the clan to earn great merit, allowing you to cancel your marriage, correct? Honestly speaking, that line of thinking isn’t realistic; one or two snow wash Gu won’t change your situation."

"It just so happens I also need a snow wash Gu. I will bring you along to search for the snow spirea and capture a few snow wash Gu, then I will take you back to your tribe and personally persuade your father. What do you think?"

"Really?" Ge Yao’s eyes immediately shone brightly: "I remember that father idolizes you, saying that you were a great hero. Father will definitely listen to you. But what do you still need the snow wash Gu for? Your mother has already passed away..."

"Sigh!" Fang Yuan’s voice was melancholic, his expression lonely; he lowered his head before smiling bitterly, "I already know my mother passed away due to poison over twenty years ago. I could not find the snow wash Gu and return in time, I was unfilial. Do you know, since then, snow wash Gu had already become my obsession? I must definitely capture one and kneel in front of my mother’s tomb to repent."

Tears fell down Fang Yuan’s cheeks as he spoke of this.

The girl looked at Fang Yuan’s tears and was thoroughly convinced by Fang Yuan’s lies. Her heart ached and consoled: "Senior Chang Shan Yin, this is not your fault. Everything was because of that damned Ha Tu Gu!"

"Don’t speak anymore, let’s go." Fang Yuan waved his hand and walked forward.

"I am sorry, I was wrong. I should not have doubted you." Ge Yao felt a twinge of guilt, immediately following behind Fang Yuan to apologize.

Fang Yuan consoled the girl, causing her inner guilt to become even heavier.

The two continued to walk to the depths of poison grassland; the purple fog continued to become denser and even poison resistant wild beasts like poison beard wolves rarely appeared.

After walking two to three hundred li, Fang Yuan and Ge Yao had no choice but to use their Gu to detoxify themselves. After walking another five to six hundred li, the poisonous purple fog became so dense that they could not even see their own hands.

Ge Yao’s fog sparrow Gu had already lost its use in such a situation. However, Fang Yuan was already prepared and could still scout the distance of a thousand steps.

"Senior Chang Shan Yin, we should return. We can still go in another direction, maybe we can find the snow spirea there. If we go any deeper, I’m afraid..." Ge Yao’s face was suffused with a purple color, she had already reached the point where she could endure no more.

But Fang Yuan shook his head and refused to accept her suggestion, persisting on moving forward.

The girl did not understand, but Fang Yuan was understood that snow spirea grew in very poisonous environments.

And this poisonous grassland also had a lot of history.

In the deepest part of poison grassland, there was a blessed land where rank the seven Gu Immortal Zi Yan Ran, titled Lady Poison Scorpion, resided.

An uncountable number of poisonous grass grew on her Zi Du blessed land with many large poisonous swamps and marshes. Large amounts of poisonous beasts and poisonous Gu lived on her blessed land.

The toxins of these poisonous beings accumulated to such an intensity that even the blessed land could not endure it.

Thus, every few years, the blessed land’s entrance would open to release the dense toxic gas outside.

Most of the toxic gas formed into the purple poison fog in the poisonous grassland.

Some creatures at the lowest rung of the blessed land also took this chance to sneak out. Thus, there were large numbers of poison beard wolves in the poisonous grassland.

After a long period of this cycle, a complete change occurred to the surroundings of Zi Du blessed land. Dark clouds covered the surroundings all year round, creating a world devoid of light. Purple fog lingered and tormented all living beings. Large numbers of poisonous grass grew, and the poison beard wolves rampaged around outskirts of the poisoned lands. The grassland had become a forbidden zone for living beings and was named the poisonous grassland by the mortals out of fear.

Zi Du blessed land was at the center of the poisonous grassland, and the place Fang Yuan was currently at was around the center.

In the depths of the grassland, dense poisonous fog lingered all year round, encouraging the growth of a large number of snow spirea. Fang Yuan knew if he persevered in moving forward a little longer, he would definitely see the snow spirea.

Sure enough, as he had expected, after walking forward another few hundred steps, Fang Yuan discovered a snow spirea.

The snow spirea was twenty feet tall; it had numerous branches and leaves on a pitch black trunk, contrasted by the countless drooping spirea branches that were pure white. Within the dense purple fog, it appeared sacred and noble.

Fang Yuan walked to the snow spirea with Ge Yao, who immediately let out a shout of joy.

The two began to carefully observe the snow-white leaves on the spirea branches.

Soon enough, Ge Yao discovered one leaf that had already turned into a Gu.

It was a snow wash Gu, an invaluable rank four Gu. Snow wash Gu’s detoxification ability was extraordinary, widely acknowledged by the northern plains’ Gu Masters.

The two searched for a long while and found three snow wash Gu.

Fang Yuan only took one and gave the other two to Ge Yao, causing the girl to inwardly feel grateful.

After he acquired the snow wash Gu, Fang Yuan took out a dark pearl.

The Immortal Gu, fixed immortal travel, was sealed inside, and at that moment, it quietly let out a slight amount of it’s immortal aura. If this aura persisted, it would easily be discovered by Gu Immortals.

"It is time." Fang Yuan willed and summoned a Gu from his aperture.

He poured his primeval essence towards the Gu at once, turning the Gu into a red iron cabinet, which then firmly sealed the dark pearl.

Immediately, the Immortal Gu aura was cut without the slightest bit leaking out.

This was the Gu worm Fang Yuan captured on San Cha mountain, unique to Tie clan - iron cabinet Gu.

Fang Yuan carried the iron cabinet on his back and walked back the way they came with Ge Yao.

After walking around two to three hundred li, Fang Yuan stopped and took out earth treasury flower king Gu, stored the iron cabinet in its stamen, then planted it deep under the ground.

This Gu was a rank five Gu and Fang Yuan had to spend quite some effort to plant it. His primeval essence was not enough, thus for a period, he had to pour primeval essence slowly while he absorbed primeval stones.

It took him whole four hours before he finished.

At Qing Mao mountain, Fang Yuan had obtained Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance. The Flower Wine Monk had hidden his Gu worms into earth treasury flower Gu.

Earth treasury flower Gu was only a rank two Gu, and only after it advanced again and again, could it become a rank five earth treasury flower king.

When earth treasury flower king bloomed open, it was ten times larger than earth treasury flower. It had huge dark golden petals that were as soft as silk and in the depths of its stamen was dark golden floral liquid.

However, when earth treasury flower king closed shut, its whole size was smaller than an infant’s fist.

It completely curled up in the depths of the ground, not leaking out the slightest bit of aura.

After planting the earth treasury flower king, Fang Yuan carefully destroyed all traces of it on the ground. At this moment, he had genuinely and completely hidden the Immortal Gu fixed immortal travel.

Fang Yuan’s aperture could not store fixed immortal travel. He could only use this method to hide the Immortal Gu and retrieve it in the future.

In such a vast grassland, who would think an extremely precious Immortal Gu was buried here?

Yet the aura of the Immortal Gu had still been a problem. Its aura would persist for a long while and attract Gu Immortals.

Thus, Fang Yuan had intermittently sealed the Immortal Gu when he buried it; it was to guard against a Gu Immortal’s search.

"Unless, the Gu Immortals that come possess an investigative Immortal Gu, capable of seeing through the ground and scouting hundreds of li deep into the ground, the possibility of its discovery is slim."

If fixed immortal travel Gu was truly discovered by some Gu Immortal and taken, Fang Yuan could only attribute it to his bad luck.

However, even if that happened, he would absolutely not bring fixed immortal travel with him. Compared to the Immortal Gu, he felt his own life was more precious.

The two continued moving through the grassland and returned to that battlefield.

When they reached the place, Fang Yuan looked for another direction and did not move along their original way, using Ge Yao’s return heart Gu to point the direction.

The return trip was not smooth, Fang Yuan and Ge Yao encountered the attacks of wolf groups’ time and again.

They even encountered thousand wolf groups three or four times; Fang Yuan could only grab Ge Yao and fly to the sky to avoid this calamity.

As the two got closer to the outer edge of poison grassland, the number of wolves and difficulty they encountered decreased.

...

About a hundred poison beard wolves pounced upon Fang Yuan and Ge Yao.

Fang Yuan laughed brightly, he was happy instead of shocked as he flew to the air and pointed down.

"Wolf enslavement Gu, go!"

A rank two wolf enslavement Gu turned into a lump of blue smoke and descended, enshrouding the hundred beast wolf king.

The hundred beast wolf king struggled intensely, its soul resisting strongly. But in front of Fang Yuan’s hundred man soul, it failed utterly.

"Howl, howl."

When Fang Yuan landed on the ground, the hundred beast wolf king ran around Fang Yuan’s feet with its tail swaying like a little puppy.

The wolf group it brought also remained motionless under its command, becoming Fang Yuan’s minions.

This was already the second wolf group Fang Yuan had subdued.

As they continued, Fang Yuan’s strength became stronger, the wolf group around him growing larger.

Their trip of death before had unknowingly become a leisurely outing.

When the wolf group following Fang Yuan increased to a thousand wolves, with four hundred beast wolf kings, poison grassland was no longer scary.

With this safety, Fang Yuan began to settle the Gu worms from southern border.

Northern plains natives were xenophobic; his original appearance would have made him suffer exclusion and vigilance wherever he walked, making it difficult for him to do things, and the southern border Gu worms were also enormous flaws which could expose his identity.

The innately cautious Fang Yuan would not allow these gaps to exist.

All the Gu worms on him that were not from northern plains must be dealt with.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The wide and huge poison grassland became even darker at night.

Wind blew near the ears as the howling of wolves could be heard, resembling the cries of wandering spirits.

A fire was burning silently on the grassland.

Ge Yao got close to the fire, expelling the chill in her body.

There was a pot on top of the fire, and a meat soup was cooking in it, emitting a fragrant smell.

Ge Yao swallowed her saliva as her hunger intensified. Eventually, she gulped and asked Fang Yuan: "Senior Chang Shan Yin, can this meat soup be eaten already?"

Fang Yuan sat opposite the young girl, the two were separated by the fire.

"No rush, this dried meat has just entered the pot, it needs to cook to a boil. Wait a while more, when the meat is soft and juicy, it will be extremely delicious." Fang Yuan took out the moving perspective cup Gu as he said plainly.

"Oh, we still have to wait so long." Ge Yao pouted, her beautiful face was shining in the flame, together with her long robe exclusive to northern plains and her beautiful accessories, it showed a unique style.

But such a tranquil scene was not enough for Fang Yuan to take a second look.

His gaze was on the moving perspective cup Gu.

Moving perspective cup Gu was a rank five Gu, now that it was in northern plains, it was suppressed to rank four. Speaking of capacity, it was weaker than other rank four Gu. It was expensive to feed, one of the most expensive among the rank five Gu worms. It was also extremely heavy on primeval essence consumption. But why did Fang Yuan choose it specifically, expending his energy and resources to refine it?

That is because it originated from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, he stole from heaven and robbed earth, he was the wealthiest venerable in history.

He spent his entire life’s effort to find the rumored legendary space cave.

Space cave was first depicted in <>, it was a forbidden ground on the same level as the river of time. In the river of time, there were large numbers of time path Gu worms. Inside the space cave, there were countless space path Gu worms.

It connected the five regions, hidden in a place no one knew. Pushing open a door from inside the space cave, one can reach any place in the world. The door that connected the space cave was also known as the space door. Space door was omnipresent, it could be in a narrow crack, or in the wide and boundless sky. Where there is space, there is a door into space cave.

But from the past until now, very little people could find the space cave, not to mention going inside. In the entire human history, only one person had managed to enter and exit it.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable discovered the recipe of the moving perspective cup Gu, his intention was to send this moving perspective cup Gu into the space cave, and bring out large numbers of wild Gu worms inside it.

But he failed, yet succeeded.

Four hundred years later, his blessed land was excavated, and all sorts of Gu Immortals competed for it. The recipe of the moving perspective cup Gu was also spread as a result, its strong effect quickly caused many Gu Immortals to recommend it, and it became famous throughout the regions.

Fang Yuan took out the golden dragon Gu from his aperture.

The rank four golden dragon Gu was suppressed into a rank three. After it flew out, it entered the moving perspective cup Gu.

Fang Yuan injected large amounts of primeval essence into the moving perspective cup Gu.

This cup with a gold top and silver bottom, immediately gave off a strong golden-silver light, floating in the air.

Fang Yuan pulled back his hand, and pushed the cup slightly forward.

The moving perspective cup Gu moved forward, until it vanished. First, the sides vanished, and then half the cup was gone, finally it vanished in mid air.

Ge Yao stood up abruptly, staring with wide opened eyes as she saw this strange scene.

At the same time, far away in central continent, Hu Immortal blessed land.

Little Hu Immortal suddenly had a feeling, immediately teleporting into Dang Hun palace’s secret room.

In the secret room, a moving perspective cup Gu gave off a shining radiance as it floated in the sky. As if it was pulled by an invisible force, it moved forward slowly before vanishing in the air.

When moving perspective cup Gu completely vanished, Fang Yuan stretched out both his palms parallel to the ground as he activated his primeval essence again.

Suddenly, a golden-silver light burst out in his palm.

Immediately after, Ge Yao saw the rim of a cup appearing, gradually growing to become half the cup, and finally,the entire cup appeared from thin air.

When the light faded, the cup-like Gu worms landed in Fang Yuan’s palms.

"Done." Fang Yuan muttered, seeing this cup, he knew that his plans did not go out of control.

"Senior Chang Shan Yin, what did you do? Eh, this Gu doesn’t seem right." Ge Yao walked a few steps towards Fang Yuan and asked curiously.

"In what way?" Fang Yuan laughed lightly, taking out a primeval stone and recovering his primeval essence quickly.

Ge Yao did not speak, she only stared at moving perspective cup Gu, when suddenly her eyes shone, as she shouted: "This Gu is not the same, originally it was golden top and silver bottom, but now it is silver top and golden bottom."

Fang Yuan laughed.

That’s right!

There was not just one moving perspective Gu, there were two.

These two Gu worms, one was golden top and silver bottom, while the other was silver top and golden bottom. The two together, made up the complete moving perspective cup Gu. Before Fang Yuan left, he brought one with him while placing the other in Hu Immortal blessed land.

When he injected his primeval essence, the two moving perspective cup Gu entered the space cave, and swapped positions with each other inside the space cave. The one that was in the blessed land thus came to Fang Yuan. As for the cup that held golden dragon Gu, it returned to Hu Immortal blessed land.

In the past, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable wanted to rely on the moving perspective cup Gu to steal the Gu worms inside space cave. He failed and did not achieve his goal. But the moving perspective cup Gu, in another way, was a great success.

Using the omnipresent space cave, a pair of moving perspective cup Gu could interchange in the space cave and transport resources between two places.

Most importantly, it was rank five, it was not a unique Immortal Gu.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, during the chaotic battle of the five regions, moving perspective cup Gu was a must-have Gu for all factions. Even Gu Immortals competed for it.

Fang Yuan took out a letter from this moving perspective cup Gu.

It was written by little Hu Immortal, stating the current situation in the blessed land.

Fang Yuan had only been in poison grassland for five to six days, but a month had already passed in Hu Immortal blessed land.

The letter stated that other than Dang Hun mountain, everything was going well. Immortal Crane Sect suggested another transaction, but according to Fang Yuan’s instructions, little Hu Immortal rejected it.

If they did more transactions, Immortal Crane Sect would have a higher chance of finding out that Fang Yuan was not in the blessed land. Fang Yuan was in northern plains, but he was still concerned with the blessed land. Using the moving perspective cup Gu to exchange letters like this, he could control the situation behind the scenes, and other people’s schemes would not succeed.

Fang Yuan sent a letter back after looking at the one he received.

Ge Yao was completely lost, she could not read central continent characters.

Together with this letter, Fang Yuan placed three rank four Gu inside, golden coat Gu, charging crash Gu, and bone wings Gu.

The more things were placed inside, the more primeval essence consumed by the moving perspective cup Gu. In contrast, the distance between the two cups did not matter.

This is because moving perspective cup Gu was created in a special way, it used the mystical forbidden passage of the space cave.

Fang Yuan’s earlier attempt was a test run. After making sure that the moving perspective cup Gu was working fine, he started to send all his Gu worms that were from southern border into the blessed land, for little Hu Immortal to take care of them.

In the blessed land, little Hu Immortal sprawled on the table, staring at blank space with her large shining eyes.

The golden dragon Gu in the moving perspective cup Gu was already taken away.

Suddenly, moving perspective cup Gu started floating again, and entered the space cave. Afterwards, another cup appeared and landed on the table.

Little Hu Immortal took out the things inside moving perspective cup Gu, and saw Fang Yuan’s reply, extremely elated as she shouted: "Master’s reply!"

With just one cycle, the primeval essence in Fang Yuan’s aperture were mostly expended.

He had to hold onto a primeval stone and replenish his primeval essence again.

Ge Yao stood at one side, gradually starting to understand. She, who was overwhelmed with curiosity, asked a few more questions again. But Fang Yuan only smiled plainly, not replying her.

"Hmph, acting all mysterious, it’s no big deal." The girl pouted, sitting back at her original seat in displeasure.

She sat down, frowning as she stared at Fang Yuan angrily.

Fang Yuan completely ignored her, causing her to be even more angry.

She was doted on by her father since young, she was the beauty of her tribe, no one had ever dared to look down on her. But during this entire journey, Fang Yuan did not give her any attention.

Many youths had pursued her with great enthusiasm, causing her temperament to become even more arrogant.

Ge Yao stared at Fang Yuan for a while more, after he recovered his primeval essence, he started to use the moving perspective cup Gu again, completely forgetting her existence.

However this time, this northern plains young girl’s displeasure vanished.

"He is after all Chang Shan Yin, he is not someone those young and immature brats can compare with. In his eyes, what am I? Just an unimportant junior I guess."

Thinking so, Ge Yao felt dejected, as she looked at Fang Yuan’s face, she became dazed.

Fang Yuan used human skin Gu to change his appearance, with the features of a northern plains native, it matched her sense of beauty even more.

When Chang Shan Yin was young, he was one of the most handsome teenagers in Chang tribe.

His five features were proper, his nose was sharp, his brown eyes were deep, his thick lips showed his determined personality.

His sideburns were already turning white, it showed the experience and wisdom of a mature man. That was an intense attraction to a young girl.

As the light of the flame flickered, Fang Yuan’s expression flickered along with it, his determined and mature disposure was strongly felt.

Ge Yao’s thoughts drifted, she thought secretly, what kind of person was Fang Yuan?

The startle when they first met, the warmth when he smiled, the knowledge when he gave her pointers, the bravery when he fought, and the absolute calmness when he tore down his own skin.

All these scenes flashed in the young girl’s heart, it was so vivid, like the memories were ingrained in the girl!

"What about his past?" Ge Yao thought again.

Chang Shan Yin’s past was a heroic tale, it was widely spread in northern plains.

Numerous people respected him, love him, and thought well of him.

When he was young, his reputation was overwhelming, he was the future hope of Chang tribe.

He was famous very quickly, his first-rate wolf enslavement skill caused people to marvel.

Most importantly, he was righteous and just, forgiving and kind, he never oppressed the weak, was filial to his parents, and helped tribesmen in need. At the same time he had a great sense of brotherhood and loyalty, he placed his life on the line to protect his tribe, and performed great deeds for Chang tribe.

He married a beautiful wife, but gained the betrayal of his childhood friend. Fate toyed with him, causing this man to lose his mother, his sworn brother, his beautiful wife, and almost, his own life.

But he survived in the end.

Relying on his own hard work, he crawled up from the abyss of death, and created a legend that normal people could never imagine!

"This man shoulders endless pain and suffering, countless wounds and injuries are hidden within him." Ge Yao thought of this and had a strong urge to hug Fang Yuan, using her warmth to heal this injured lone wolf, the former Wolf King.

As the fire burned on, the wood was crackling under the flame.

Ge Yao’s gaze towards Fang Yuan became more infatuated, she could not longer help herself.

Under the warm fire, a young girl’s feelings were developing, and growing.

When Fang Yuan finished this round of cup exchange, and took out a primeval stone to recover his primeval essence, Ge Yao secretly made the most important decision in her life.

She suddenly stood up, shouting towards Fang Yuan: "Chang Shan Yin! Be my husband!"

The voice spread far and wide in the quiet grassland.

"What did you say?" Fang Yuan frowned, even with his five hundred years of experience, he could not anticipate this girl’s change of heart.

After he reacted, he smiled: "Stop fooling around, young girl, I am your senior. Looking at our age, I am over twenty years older than you, my son will be a good match for you."

"No, Chang Shan Yin, I want you!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"No, Chang Shan Yin, I want you!" Ge Yao’s voice resonated in the grassland.

Under the illumination of the bonfire, her eyes shone brightly as she stared head-on at Fang Yuan: "Chang Shan Yin, you are the hero of this great plains, your reputation extends far and wide. You are the man I can entrust my whole life to! Age is not a problem. Back in the day, didn’t old ancestor Giant Sun marry young women every year even after he was a thousand years old?"

Fang Yuan’s expression turned dark: "Alright, don’t make a scene."

Ge Yao stamped her foot and raised her voice: "I am not making a scene! Chang Shan Yin, I have already been deeply attracted to you along the way. Just earlier, I discovered that I had completely fallen in love with you. I am willing to give myself and everything to you, please accept me."

"Young girl, I already have a wife." Fang Yuan heaved a sigh and said with a complex expression.

Ge Yao immediately shook her head: "Your wife has already remarried. Even if you snatch her back, I don’t mind. I don’t intend to take your first wife’s position, I am satisfied being your concubine. Old ancestor Giant Sun had hundreds of thousands of imperial concubines, but only had one empress."

However, Fang Yuan refused firmly: "I won’t marry again. My heart is already still, just like this poison grassland. You are still too young and are unable to understand my mind. During the days I spent in the wolf’s belly where I could not move at all, I felt extremely painful. When my soul floated over the vast plains, I wandered around aimlessly, but my mind gradually elevated to a greater height. I recalled my past, watched many people’s life and death. The suffering or happiness of my former life were no longer able to enter my heart. I have been completely reborn, I am a new Chang Shan Yin, I also won’t return to Chang tribe."

"Then, come to my Ge tribe." Ge Yao’s eyes shone.

She invited with utmost sincerity, but Fang Yuan still refused and did not show any signs of being moved.

"Chang Shan Yin! Is your heart made of iron? You doubt me? Do you want me to take out my heart to let you check, just like those rockmen?" Ge Yao muttered, her eyes turned red and tears were on the verge of falling.

Howl!

Right at this moment, the howling of wolf groups signified that they were nearby.

A large group of poison beard wolves were attracted by the fire and rapidly approached Fang Yuan and Ge Yao.

However, there were large amounts of wolves resting beside the bonfire.

The two groups of wolves soon clashed against each other and an intense battle unfolded.

"This is a thousand beast group!" Ge Yao’s attention was attracted towards the wolves, her expression becoming grave.

If it was before, they would choose to retreat when they came across such a scale of wolf group, but now Fang Yuan smiled coldly: "No matter, the situation is different from before, we also have a wolf group to help us. Ge Yao, I need to ask you to restrict the thousand beast wolf king. My primeval essence is exhausted, I will come assist you after I replenish it!"

The girl nodded her head but she did not immediately leave and instead looked at Fang Yuan with her bright gaze.

Fang Yuan looked at her: "Go."

Ge Yao pursed her lips, her gaze was firm as she still remained motionless.

Fang Yuan could only use a soft stance and said gently: "Alright, I will consider this matter."

"But I want the answer now!" Ge Yao immediately said.

A dark light flashed past Fang Yuan’s eyes, but on the surface he heaved a sigh and proposed: "If you can kill this thousand beast king alone, I will agree and take you as my wife."

"Really?"

"Hehe, a promise that us northern plainsmen make can never be broken."

Ge Yao’s eyes shone brightly at this reply: "Okay, then just wait!"

Battle intent filled the girl’s heart and she charged towards the battlefield, directly taking on the thousand beast wolf king.

Gazing at her leaving, Fang Yuan’s smile quickly disappeared, replaced by indifference.

He did not expect Ge Yao would be so attracted to him, the feeling of love had already taken his roots deep within her. However, when it came to love, this thing had always been unreasonable and was very difficult to deduce with common sense. Long long ago, Desolate Ancient Moon climbed Cheng Bai mountain and met with a rockman’s pursuit.

According to <> —

Ren Zu could not save his eldest son Verdant Great Sun, and at the final juncture of resurrection, he made a great mistake and was swept away by reverse flow river back into Luo Po valley.

His eldest daughter Desolate Ancient Moon heard of this and wanted to go rescue her father.

However, one must have the help of courage Gu and faith Gu to enter the life and death door.

But these Gu were with her father Ren Zu.

Desolate Ancient Moon was unable to enter the life and death door. She wanted to rescue Ren Zu but had no ways, so she asked for guidance from cognition Gu.

Cognition Gu gave her two methods.

The first method was to enter space cave, then open the space door to directly move to Ren Zu’s side. She could then use the space cave to escape life and death door. However, this method could only rescue Ren Zu’s soul and could not resurrect him.

The second method was to climb to the peak of Cheng Bai mountain and find the one and only success Gu. As long as she made a wish to success Gu, she could rescue Ren Zu and allow him to successfully resurrect.

Desolate Ancient Moon already knew of space cave’s existence, but she had no idea how to find the space cave. Moreover, to let her father truly resurrect, she had to go to Cheng Bai mountain.

Cheng Bai mountain was not tall and was like a mound. It was peculiar as it was made from millions and millions of ’pebbles’.

These ’pebbles’ were actually failure Gu. And there was only one success Gu; at the peak of Cheng Bai mountain.

Desolate Ancient Moon walked to the foot of the mountain and began to ascend the mountain.

Her movement woke up love Gu who was sleeping nearby.

Love Gu was very angry at having its sleep disturbed and wanted to take revenge against Desolate Ancient Moon. It used its unique power to awaken a piece of stone.

The stone gained life because of love Gu and became a rockman.

The rockman was tall and might, his body filled with gold, silver, copper and iron, looking very dazzling and gorgeous.

After the rockman was born, the first thing he saw was Desolate Ancient Moon. Her shocking beauty immediately conquered his heart.

He started following behind Desolate Ancient Moon, and as he looked at her fair back view, his heart was filled with love.

Finally, he could not endure it anymore and ran past Desolate Ancient Moon and blocked her, shouting loudly: "Beautiful lady, your appearance is so dazzling, your body is so elegant and your temperament is so noble. The very first moment I saw you, I was subdued by you. You are my love, please accept my love for you!"

The rockman’s physique was huge, completely blocking Desolate Ancient Moon’s path.

Desolate Ancient Moon slightly furrowed her brows and sized up the rockman before speaking coldly: "Love, what is that thing? You want me to accept your love, but where is it?"

The rockman immediately took off the iron pieces from his body and offered them to Desolate Ancient Moon: "Beautiful lady, this is my firmness. I give it all to you, this is my love."

Desolate Ancient Moon disappointedly shook her head; she had no interest in these iron pieces.

The rockman was dazed before taking out the copper pieces from his body and piling them above the iron pieces: "Beautiful lady, this is my obstinance. I give it all to you because this is my love."

Desolate Ancient Moon impatiently said: "Please move away, I have no interest in love, I need to rescue my father."

The rockman panicked seeing that the goddess of his heart was unmoved. He kneeled down and made up his mind, taking out all the silver pieces in his body and piling them above the copper pieces: "Beautiful lady, this is my dignity. I give it all to you, this will prove my love for you, right?"

Desolate Ancient Moon’s furrowed brows deepened: "Listen, I don’t have time to waste with you."

The rockman became more anxious and took out all the gold pieces in his body and put them above the silver pieces: "Beautiful lady, this is my self-confidence. I give it all to you, they represent my love for you."

Desolate Ancient Moon heaved a deep sigh: "Rockman, to express your love for me, you gave up your firmness, put down your obstinance, lost your dignity and even gave up your self-confidence. However, what I see is a very ugly rockman. Get up, I cannot accept your love, I have more important things to do."

After losing his gold, silver, copper and iron decorations, the rockman looked very small and weak, even appearing comical. It lost all the beauty and might it had before.

The rockman wept and begged Desolate Ancient Moon: "Then, how can I obtain your love?"

Desolate Ancient Moon was anxious, but the rockman kept on kneeling on the ground. She thought of an idea and changed her expression to show a smile: "Rockman, since you love me, take out your real heart for me to see."

The rockman opened his chest without any hesitation and offered his scarlet heart to Desolate Ancient Moon.

Desolate Ancient Moon took the heart and immediately kept it.

The rockman then said: "Now, I can obtain your love, right?"

Desolate Ancient Moon shook her head: "Even if you offer your heart, it cannot exchange for my love."

...

"Chang Shan Yin, look at this!" Ge Yao’s whole body was soaked in blood and injuries, her breathing was rough as she walked towards Fang Yuan with the head of the thousand wolf king in her hand.

With the loss of their wolf king, the invading wolf group collapsed and fled.

Fang Yuan slowly stood up and nodded: "You killed the thousand wolf king."

Ge Yao showed extraordinary performance in the battle, but she suffered grave injuries, her whole face was stained with blood and her primeval essence was completely dried up. She looked at Fang Yuan with glittering eyes: "Chang Shan Yin, you are a hero, you won’t go back on your words, right?"

"Of course I won’t. Your love has moved me. From today onwards, you are my wife." Fang Yuan gazed at Ge Yao profoundly, then step by step, he moved closer and hugged her.

The girl relaxed her hands, the wolf king’s head fell down on the ground, and she passionately hugged Fang Yuan back. Her breathing sped up and her heart thumped rapidly, this moment was even more nerve-racking than when she was fighting the wolf king.

In Fang Yuan’s warm embrace, she felt happiness and her eyes reddened.

Chi.

A soft sound suddenly echoed.

The girl’s face stiffened and she used all her strength to get out of Fang Yuan’s embrace, then lowered her head to look at her chest.

There, a sharp dagger had pierced into it.

It was a fatal strike to both her body and mind.

"Wh... why?" Ge Yao gazed at Fang Yuan with disbelief, her delicate body shook, and her gaze was filled with anger, hatred, shock and doubt.

Fang Yuan looked at the girl and said, expressionlessly.

He spoke of the story in <> –

"The rockman was panicking seeing Desolate Ancient Moon had stored his heart away. He said: ’Heartless woman, your cold-heartedness has made me despair. Since I can’t obtain your love, then please give back my heart. Without my heart, I will die.’"

"But Desolate Ancient Moon did not return the heart and watched as he slowly died."

"’Why? I love you so much, why are you killing me!’ The rockman shouted before his death."

"Desolate Ancient Moon looked at him with pity, but her voice was tranquil: ’Rockman, I did not want to kill you. But you blocked my path to success.’"

"Path to success?" After Ge Yao heard this reply, she could no longer stand and collapsed on the ground.

The dense aura of death made her body increasingly colder.

The girl raised her small head, revealing her swan-like exquisite neck. She gazed at the dark night sky and laughed mournfully.

She laughed only for few seconds before tears fell down her face.

She looked at Fang Yuan, her gaze still expressing the deep love as before: "Chang Shan Yin! I don’t know how I am blocking your path to success. But now, even if you kill me, I do not hate you. Maybe you are seeking revenge? I will leave all my Gu worms to you, I hope they can be of some use to you in your path to success."

" Cough cough ..." The girl coughed out blood and begged Fang Yuan with a grieved smile, "I am going to die, but before I die, I have a small favor to ask. I hope you can hug me, I really want to feel your warm embrace..."

However, Fang Yuan did not move, his gaze coldly looking at the girl.

He looked at the girl and saw her expression becoming stiffer as vitality left her bit by bit.

Finally, the flower-like girl became an ice-cold corpse.

Fang Yuan fell into a long silence as he looked at Ge Yao’s face.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Even if it was daytime, poison grassland was still solemn and dark. The thick dark clouds obstructed the entry of sunlight.

Behind a low mound, one hump wolf was lurking.

The hump wolf’s size was as large as a war-horse. Its body had black and long fur, and two camel humps on its back. A pair of wolf eyes shone with eerie light in the darkness.

It was lying on the mound, completely still like a statue. Even its breathing was slow, if one took a glance, they would think it was a piece of steel.

Suddenly, the hump wolf’s long ears vibrated.

Under its watchful gaze, a grey rabbit jumped out of a hole on the mound, starting to look for food.

Even though there were delicious grass near its hole, the grey rabbit did not care about them, it rushed out to look for grass far away.

Rabbits did not eat grass near their hole as it would expose the hole that they lived in.

The hump wolf saw the grey rabbit emerge, and its eyes drooped even lower, hiding most of its pupils, only leaving a small slit.

As the grey rabbit ate grass, its ears were standing high in the air. If there were any danger alerts, it would raise its head quickly and look around, extremely vigilant.

Hump wolf was extremely patient, watching the grey rabbit eat happily, it did not move, as if it was dead.

The grey rabbit continued to eat, indulging in its delicious meal.

When it was full, it started to return.

Just at this moment, the hump wolf struck. It jumped out of the mound and charged towards the rabbit.

Grey rabbit’s return route was blocked by the hump wolf, in its shock, it turned around to escape.

Its speed was fast, as it sprinted, it resembled a white lightning swimming in the grass. The rabbit’s speed was higher than the hump wolf, quickly pulling some distance between them.

But after sprinting for a while, it slowed down.

The grey rabbit has explosive speed, but its stamina was much less than the wolf.

The two ran and chased on poison grassland, engaging in a death chase. This was the most common scene in poison grassland – the game of survival between predator and prey.

The hump wolf got closer and closer, seeing the grey rabbit right before it, the wolf jumped and assaulted.

But at this moment, the rabbit’s speed rapidly increased, as it jumped to one side. After dodging the fatal attack, it moved away from the hump wolf again.

This grey rabbit is very crafty, its fatigue earlier was just an act, it still had the ability to protect itself.

Hump wolf did not succeed in its attack, thus it had to continue chasing after the rabbit.

Soon, the distance between them shortened again.

The hump wolf jumped again, but missed once more.

After three to four times, the rabbit was exhausted, it was finally killed by the hump wolf.

The hump wolf breathed roughly, sprawling on the ground before getting up after a long while. In this cruel competition, the predator did not always have an easy time, they often faced much difficulty and suffering.

After catching this grey rabbit with much effort, the hump wolf did not enjoy this delicacy, but held it in its mouth as it returned to its home.

In the den, there was a female hump wolf and numerous newborn wolf cubs to feed.

But when this hump wolf got back to its den, it only saw blood traces and cold corpses.

Howl!!!

It abandoned the grey rabbit corpse, and howled angrily towards the sky. The fur on its neck stood up, as the intense hatred turn its eyes red.

A large group of poison beard wolves surrounded it from all directions.

Far away on a mound, Fang Yuan crossed his arms as he looked down, observing this battlefield.

"Hehehe, as expected, a male wolf came." He laughed lightly, feeling that his recent luck had finally improved.

Hump wolves were outstanding mounts in northern plains, although Fang Yuan had Chang Shan Yin’s rank four wolf sprint Gu, it expended quite a bit of primeval essence. He would rather ride a hump wolf, it was quicker and easier.

When Fang Yuan accidentally found this wolf’s den, he killed the weak female wolf and its cubs, obtaining a rank two wolf enslavement Gu.

He did not leave in a hurry, but instead used the poison beard wolves as ambush, awaiting the return of the male wolf.

The battle between hump wolves and poison beard wolves had just gotten intense.

The hump wolf had a large physique, together with the furious emotions it had, it battled even more fiercely. Using its claws, ordinary poison beard wolves were not its match.

But with Fang Yuan’s manipulation, the poison beard wolves were very cunning, they did not fight it head on, but cooperated and worked with great teamwork, taking turns to drain the hump wolf’s stamina.

After an hour, the hump wolf was breathing raggedly as it lost the ferocity it had earlier.

Around it, there were sixty or so poison beard wolf corpses, that was its greatest achievement. Of course, if Fang Yuan wanted to kill it, with his skill in enslavement path, he would only need to sacrifice thirty poison beard wolves. But Fang Yuan wanted it alive, thus when he battled, he was restricted in many ways.

"It’s about time." Fang Yuan looked at the hump wolf’s trembling limbs in the wind, he slowly walked down and got closer to the wolf.

Now, most of his Gu worms were sent back to Hu Immortal blessed land using moving perspective cup Gu.

When he was two hundred steps away from the hump wolf, Fang Yuan’s finger pointed and a rank two wolf enslavement Gu flew out.

The wolf enslavement Gu exploded, turning into a light smoke that covered the hump wolf’s body.

Hump wolf quickly jumped back to evade, but the light smoke chased after it. The hump wolf howled, charging towards Fang Yuan. However, the poison beard wolf pack stopped it with their full force.

In a few breaths’ time, the smoke completely merged into its body.

Hump wolf lied down on the ground weakly, its body was covered in wounds that were bleeding, its bright red eyes no longer stared at Fang Yuan with hatred, but showed submission.

"Hundred man soul is really useful, if I did not use the guts Gu, I would need to spend a lot of effort to capture this hump wolf." Fang Yuan sighed in his heart, before activating wolf smoke Gu in his aperture.

Wolf smoke Gu flew out, turning into thick smoke as it engulfed hump wolf, as well as most of the injured poison beard wolves.

In a moment, the thick smoke dispersed, and hump wolf’s injuries were fully healed, it even grew new fur. The injured poison beard wolves also regained their vitality.

However, even without injuries, their battle strength was not at their peak.

What affected the battle strength of beats was not just injuries, but also their hunger.

For wolves to display their full strength, they cannot be too hungry, as it leads to weakness. But they cannot be too full, as that would make them more sluggish.

Earlier, when the hump wolf hunted, why did it patiently wait for the grey rabbit to get full? It was the same reason.

Only when the wolves are half full and half hungry, could they have the will to fight, fighting most harshly and fiercely.

After battling for so long, be it the hump wolf or the poison beard wolves, they had lost a lot of stamina and were hungry.

Fang Yuan willed, and the poison beard wolves started eating the corpse of the dead wolves. Hump wolf ate that grey rabbit, and by the command of Fang Yuan, started to devour the dead female wolf and her cubs as well.

Fang Yuan stood on the spot, taking out his rations and consuming them.

Three days had passed since he killed Ge Yao.

Ge Yao had to die, the moment she saw fixed immortal travel Gu, her death was guaranteed.

Furthermore, she had first seen Fang Yuan step into northern plains naked, and then saw him bury the Immortal Gu, as well as using moving perspective cup Gu.

She knew too many things, in Fang Yuan’s heart, she was a definite target to kill.

Except when Fang Yuan first came, his battle strength was low, in order to move around in poison grassland, he needed her assistance.

But Ge Yao could not be allowed to live, if her naivety could be used by Fang Yuan, others could naturally use it as well. She was such a burden, with her ordinary soul foundation, others only needed the mind reading Gu or recollection Gu on her to be able to completely expose Fang Yuan’s plans, and divulge his secrets to the world.

This was a premeditated murder by Fang Yuan.

As they survived hurdles one after another, the ghost face sunflower sea, the earth spike rats, the shadow crows, as well as finding Chang Shan Yin and using his skin, to finding snow wash Gu and burying the earth treasury flower king Gu, her value and use was diminishing. At the same time, her threat was rising slowly.

Her love towards Fang Yuan also made him, who was disguised as Chang Shan Yin, feel like a dagger was placed at his throat, a great sense of danger.

A young girl in love would use all ways possible to understand the person she loves, not just the present, but also his past and future.

What happens when she finds out the truth?

Moreover, she had a tribe behind her, she was the young missy of her tribe.

Being loved by such a person, no matter how low-key Fang Yuan was, he would be at the center of attention.

Remember that there were many young masters in Man tribe who were infatuated with Ge Yao’s beauty.

If Fang Yuan returned with Ge Yao, he would definitely be heavily watched by the two tribes. Why did he have to attract so much hostility for this burden?

Fang Yuan was not afraid of hostility, but his purpose in northern plains was not for a vacation. He had limited time, he was racing against time. Dang Hun mountain was nearing death, and Spring Autumn Cicada was recovering slowly, meanwhile his cultivation was only rank four peak stage.

He had to strive towards success, he could not fail. Once he failed, he would fall into the abyss, he would have no hope left.

On this road, he was destined to be lonely, there were only two outcomes. Either he succeeds, or he faces destruction!

Thus, when the two got close to the outer border of poison grassland, Fang Yuan used an opportunity when there were few people and it was convenient to kill to end her life!

After Ge Yao was killed, Fang Yuan ordered the wolves to devour her corpse. Her soul was obviously not spared, he used the burial soul toad to swallow it, it had already been sent to the blessed land and was crushed by Dang Hun mountain.

The area near the fireplace had already been carefully inspected, there were no traces or evidence left.

All in all, Ge Yao had been wiped off the face of this world. Her only remains, might probably be the faeces that the poison beard wolves excrete.

Hehehe.

This so-called beauty, in the end, she was just a pile of shit.

Ashes to ashes, dust to dust.

A beautiful young girl, in this heaven and earth, she was just like a flower. Either she gets trampled on at the roadside, or she wilters when her time is up, becoming an ugly fertilizer for the earth.

"Without eternal life, even the most beautiful thing is but the reflection of the moon in the water. The value of their existence is mere for that second of elegance." The more experiences that Fang Yuan went through, the more he understood the cruelty of this world. Without immortality, even the most valuable of things will become worthless.

"The so-called praised for a hundred years, or leaving a stench for ten thousand years, these are all superficial thinking of those cowards. The so-called immortality in spirit is merely a tool for descendants to make use of. Is it true that the existence of humans can only be affirmed through one another? So be it on Earth. But here in this world, if there is even a slight possibility, I want to pursue it!"

"Even if I die on the road while pursuing my goals, even if I die a million times worse than Ge Yao, I have absolutely no regrets..."

Fang Yuan was resolved for death from the start.

But only if he placed all his effort, and contributed his all towards the pursuit of his dream, could he die without a hint of regret.

Heh.

Who could understand the heart of this transmigrator plus reincarnator Fang Yuan?

The road he walked on was destined to be filled with endless darkness, he was destined to be lonely forever.

The direction he walked was towards the light in his heart — immortality — a possibility so slim that it was almost impossible.

In this world, nobody understood him.

But he...

Does not need anyone’s understanding.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The wolf group finished eating. Fang Yuan rode on the hump wolf’s back and resumed his journey.

"These days, I have been moving according to the direction Ge Yao pointed. I am almost at the edge of poison grassland. If I move further, I will see human habitations."

Hump wolf was a natural mount, its two humps formed a comfortable saddle.

Fang Yuan sat between the two humps, inspecting his aperture while moving forward.

There were only around ten Gu worms remaining in his aperture. Besides Spring Autumn Cicada and moving perspective cup Gu, they were all northern plains Gu worms.

The Gu that were from southern border and central continent were already sent to Hu Immortal blessed land. Fang Yuan did not keep even a single primeval stone.

Southern border primeval stones could be used in northern plains, but they had some differences with northern plains primeval stones. Ge Yao could not see it because she was too young and too naive. But generally, any Gu Master that had some experience and shrewdness could notice it.

"Unfortunately, moving perspective cup Gu - a rank five Gu - has been suppressed to rank four in northern plains and can only contain rank four Gu. If I could send fixed immortal travel to the blessed land with it, it would be perfect. Sigh, I hope my method is effective."

If some other Gu Immortal took fixed immortal travel Gu, it would be a heavy loss to Fang Yuan.

However, Fang Yuan could do nothing else as he had already done everything possible.

"Immortal Gu’s aura lasts for about a month. If there are no problems during this period, then fixed immortal travel Gu will be safe."

"Soon, I will run into northern plains Gu Masters. I absolutely cannot be careless, it would be best if I can subdue a thousand wolf king during this period of time and raise the number of the wolves to over two thousand."

Sometimes, humans were more terrifying than wild beasts. A wolf group of over two thousand wolves could intimidate most of the small characters.

"Currently, I only have one rank three and one rank two wolf enslavement Gu, I must use them carefully. I will be moving using Chang Shan Yin’s identity in northern plains, wolf enslavement should be the main priority. But there is an obstacle, I do not have the recipes for rank three and rank four wolf enslavement Gu."

Almost all the beast enslavement Gu were expendable Gu, and after they were used, whether it resulted in success or failure, they would disperse.

Rank three wolf enslavement Gu could enslave thousand wolf king. Rank four wolf enslavement Gu could enslave myriad wolf king or mutated beasts.

Without the recipe for these two Gu, Fang Yuan would not have many wolf enslavement Gu. Without these wolf enslavement Gu, Fang Yuan’s wolf group could at have a most a few thousand wolves, it was not enough to enter the limelight.

With the hump wolf’s pace, the following journey was sped up by three times.

Fang Yuan travelled day and night, the dark clouds hovering over his head also gradually thinned.

Two days later, he finally reached the edge of poison grassland.

In the sky, the dark clouds were dispersed here and there. Rays of sunlight passed through the gaps between the dark clouds and fell on the ground in the form of light pillars.

Looking from afar, the green grassland flourished under the light; flowers having the colors of blue, purple or yellow eagerly blossomed.

The low and gently sloping mounds were completely filled with greenery without any gaps.

A small river flowed gently beside the mounds and sparkled like a silver necklace under the sunlight.

"I am finally out." Fang Yuan felt moved. Riding on the hump wolf’s back and surrounded by poison beard wolves, he slowly walked towards the sunlight.

The poison beard wolves were restless.

They were adapted to hunting in dark surroundings, the sunlight would greatly affect their battle strength.

Fang Yuan did not care, these poison beard wolf group were only temporary, they would be eliminated sooner or later.

Fang Yuan gazed back, poison grassland behind him was still covered with dark clouds, dusky sunlight and gloomy cold wind. On the corrupted land, there were dark purplish poisonous grass, bent into all kinds of shapes.

Compared to this side of the grassland which had sunlight shining over it, it showed a clear contrast, like they were two different worlds.

"Hu Immortal blessed land’s eastern area is also covered in dense clouds. If they are not dealt with in time, that land would also develop towards the direction of poison grassland. Poison grassland... I will be back."

Just as Fang Yuan was mumbling, his body suddenly relaxed.

Since the time he entered northern plains, he felt uncomfortable, a formless restriction had covered his body.

Right now, this restriction slightly loosened and Fang Yuan immediately felt he was much closer to this vast land.

Subsequently, his aura rose and from rank three peak stage, it reached rank four initial stage.

A joyous feeling rose up involuntarily, causing Fang Yuan to laugh heartily.

With his body gradually adapting to northern plains, his cultivation also slowly recovered; this would be a great help to his following plans!

"Northern plains, I’m coming!" Fang Yuan shouted. He squeezed the wolf’s belly with his legs, the hump wolf started running towards a distant location, leading the poison beard wolf group.

...

"Kill!"

Shouting resounded over a hill, dozens of Gu Masters were in an intense battle with over a thousand wind wolves.

The battle had already continued for fifteen minutes.

"This damned wind wolves!" The leader Ge Guang cursed with a malevolent expression, he waved the sabre in his hand, cutting off the head of a wind wolf.

But after cutting off the head, his sabre broke into two. The two halves of the sabre were also already filled with holes.

Howl!

A wind wolf suddenly leapt and charged towards Ge Guang.

"Young tribe leader, careful! Spiral water arrow!" A Gu Master behind Ge Guang anxiously shouted.

Hearing this shout, from a tacit understanding that came from fighting all year round, Ge Guang did not think and suddenly bent his waist; it looked like he took the initiative to send himself to the wolf’s mouth.

The wind wolf that was in mid-air opened its mouth and revealed its sharp fangs. Just as it seemed like it was going to bite off Ge Guang’s head, a blue water arrow shot out from behind Ge Guang with a strong rotational force.

This spiral water arrow ruthlessly shot into the wind wolf’s mouth, sending it directly towards the afterlife.

Taking this chance, Ge Guang squeezed the wolf’s belly, urging his hump wolf to retreat into the defensive range of his group.

Sabre Gu!

He put his palms together and squeezed out the final trace of primeval essence in his aperture, pouring it into the sabre imprint on his palm.

Whoosh!

A completely new sabre instantly formed; Ge Guang suddenly swung his right hand and tightly grasped it.

"Die!" He growled with an iron-like hoarse voice.

The new sabre was extremely sharp, cutting a cold light in the air and splitting a wind wolf into two.

But this was only a small victory, it was truly difficult to have an active influence on the whole devastating situation.

"Damn it, I don’t have enough primeval essence!"

"There are at least over three thousand wolves, it’s too many!"

"Young tribe leader, we are completely surrounded! There is no hope even if we fight to the death, it would be better to break through the east, the defensive line there is the weakest!"

The surrounding Gu Masters shouted one after another.

Ge Guang’s fierce eyes shone and after thinking for a moment, resolutely refused: "No, there are puddles in the eastern side. The defense there looks the weakest, but it is actually a trap prepared by the wind wolf king. If we go in, we will be sending ourselves into its trap!"

"Then what should we do?"The surrounding people asked.

Ge Yao gritted his teeth and firmed up his mind: "Turn around, we will break through the west."

"But we have still not found lady Ge Yao. If we return like this, what will we say to lord tribe leader?"

Ge Guang snorted: "Although Ge Yao is my sister, for her own selfishness, she ignore our tribe’s circumstance and fled the marriage. Sacrificing great men for a mere woman is not worth it! Spread the command, we will break through! Let those lowly slaves stay behind. It is time for them to offer their lives for their masters."

"Understood!" The surrounding people immediately transmitted the order.

Northern plains tribes would go on war campaigns all year round. Some defeated Gu Masters would become slaves. Slaves had very low status and when necessary, they would be treated as cannon fodders and abandoned.

Soon, Gu Masters divided into two groups.

A pair of slaves was to stay behind on the mound and use their lives to block the enemy. While the other group was led by Ge Guang to break through the west.

"Kill kill kill!" Ge Guang charged through the frontlines riding on the hump wolf, wielding his saber roughly and bravely.

"Protect young master!" The Gu Masters behind him were also tall and stoutly built men, they closely moved around Ge Guang on their hump wolves.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, a large three-leaf wind blade flew towards them.

"Master!" A loyal Gu Master warned loudly and was the first to react.

He did not have a trace of primeval essence left, he directly charged towards the front on his hump wolf and used his own body to obstruct the wind blade.

Nothing surprising happened, he was cut into two by the wind blade, immediately losing his life.

The wind blade was weakened to two-leaf but still moved towards Ge Guang.

Ge Guang reacted, immediately lifting his sabre to block it.

Bang!

The wind and the sabre collided; the sabre shattered into pieces, Ge Guang spurted out a large mouthful of blood and fell from the hump wolf’s back.

"Young tribe leader!" The Gu Masters behind him immediately came over to protect him, but with this, their break through failed. Endless wind wolves came over from both sides and firmly surrounded them again.

The wind wolves quietly parted open a path; a young and vigorous wind wolf king slowly walked through the path and appeared before everyone.

Thousand beast king!

Its body was enormous like a warhorse. Brisk dark green fur covered its whole body and its eyes were like emeralds. Its alternating steps and unhurried pace unexpectedly gave an elegant and noble feeling to Ge Guang and the group.

Right now, the slave Gu Masters that had stayed behind on the hill were already killed. Large amounts of wind wolves came over after killing them.

The Gu Masters had already exhausted their primeval essence, the wind wolf king’s appearance caused them to feel restless.

Someone pulled Ge Guang to retreat, but Ge Guang swung his arm and stood up with difficulty, he shouted: "What are you afraid of? I don’t have primeval essence, but I still have my hands, legs and teeth! Warriors, don’t let these beasts scorn you. We will use our blood to prove ourselves, we are the brave tribesmen of Ge tribe!"

Everyone was agitated by his words, their morale immediately rose and a will to fight to death emerged in them.

The wind wolf king was walking leisurely, when suddenly it turned its head to look at the eastern direction of the battlefield.

A large group of dark purplish poison beard wolves were rapidly closing in!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The poison beard wolves did not make any stops, they charged towards the wind wolves.

"It’s the poison beard wolves!" Very soon, Gu Masters discovered the poison beard wolf pack and looked up.

"Strange, don’t the poison beard wolves only move around in poison grassland, why are they outside?" Some Gu Masters felt perplexed.

"There’s probably a Gu Master controlling them!" Ge Guang clenched his fists, seeing the approaching poison beard wolves, his eyes which showed despair started to shine with the light of hope.

"Young master is wise, look there, there’s a person!" A few breaths later, a Gu Master pointed to a faraway place.

As everyone observed closely, Fang Yuan appeared before them while riding the hump wolf.

"We’re saved!" Everyone cheered.

"Not necessarily..." Ge Guang’s eyes squinted, he was very rational: "Less than a thousand poison beard wolves, we might not be safe, it’ll depend on his wolf enslavement skill."

With this reminder, the Gu Masters started worrying.

"This person should be an enslavement path Gu Master, but he does not have many poison beard wolves."

"Not good, poison beard wolves are weaker under sunlight, they are slightly inferior to the wind wolves."

"Oh no, this enslavement path Gu Master does not even have a thousand beast king, he only has a few hundred beast kings, how can he block the assault of the wind wolf king?!"

Ge Guang suddenly said: "No matter, as long as this Gu Master can gather the poison beard wolves and charge all at once, he can break the encirclement and would be able to save us."

This greatly reduced the people’s worry, but just as they felt hopeful, Fang Yuan willed, and the entire poison beard wolf pack spread out like pouring a basin of water.

"This, this, this!" Many Gu Masters were tongue tied.

"It’s over, he’s courting death!" Some closed their eyes.

"Idiot, wasting such a chance." Some Gu Masters were stomping their foot in anger.

They were extremely disappointed, they cursed and swore, some even started to hate Fang Yuan.

Ge Guang’s expression paled, as long as there was a chance to live, who would want to die? Fang Yuan’s appearance gave them hope, but he also destroyed their hopes single-handedly!

Wind wolf king howled, causing the entire wind wolf pack to attack.

Just as the two packs were about to engage in battle, Fang Yuan let out a loud howl.

He was human, but he emitted the cry of a wolf.

This call was desolate, it was wild, it was like a fire that was being blown by the wind in the night sky.

The wolf howl could be heard from eight hundred steps away, the poison beard wolves in this range turned frenzy upon hearing it, summoning twice their original battle strength!

"Ah, this is the rank four wolf howl Gu, it can increase the battle strength of wolf packs temporarily, it is a precious Gu. This person is a rank four Gu Master!"

Fang Yuan’s howl was shocking, it changed the expressions of the Gu Masters.

Many pairs of despairing eyes gave off hope once again.

Rank three and rank four were two different concepts.

Rank three was elder, rank four was leader.

Even Ge Guang was only rank three upper stage.

After recognising Fang Yuan’s cultivation level, nobody scolded him anymore. Although northern plains Gu Masters were brave, they were not arrogant, they were filled with respect for experts, and were humble towards strength.

The poison beard wolves were originally weaker than the wind wolves, but now their battle strength surged, and they quickly overwhelmed the wind wolves.

After just a short battle, the wind wolves retreated, and a large number of wind wolf corpses were left on the battlefield. Over a dozen wind wolves were sacrificed for the life of one poison beard wolf.

"What level of wolf enslavement skill is this!" Such a grand feat caused the Gu Masters to stare till their eyes fell out.

"Unimaginable! This is the attainment of an enslavement master, who in the world is this person?" Many people looked at Fang Yuan like he was a monster.

"I have never heard of such a hidden expert living in this area!" The gang was excited and shocked.

Fang Yuan’s strength caused the wind wolf pack’s attention to be placed on the poison beard wolves. They only surrounded the Ge tribe Gu Masters without attacking. This allowed these people to have a moment of rest under such circumstances.

"The wind wolf king is here!" Ge Guang said, as everyone became nervous again.

Wind wolf king had higher intelligence, it howled and gathered the elites of its pack.

Very soon, with wind wolf king as the arrowhead, these elites moved like an arrow, charging into the formation, straight into the center, and attacked Fang Yuan.

Enslavement path Gu Masters were most afraid of ’beheading the leader’ tactic, this wind wolf king was a thousand beast king, as it led the group of elites in attacking, they were simply unstoppable. Meanwhile, Fang Yuan only had a few hundred beast king level poison beard wolf kings.

But Fang Yuan was overjoyed instead of afraid, as he smiled lightly: "It could not resist it."

Wind wolf king’s intelligence was higher than other wolves, but it was still a wild beast, it could not compare with humans. Against other wolf packs, Fang Yuan needed to charge himself, but when battling the wind wolf king, Fang Yuan could create this formation to attract the wind wolf king to charge towards him.

Swoosh!

Wind wolf king who was sprinting opened its mouth and shot out three large wind blades.

The wind blades flew ahead and sliced through the wolf pack, creating a path as it targeted Fang Yuan.

"Careful!" A Gu Master on the mound could not help but scream, as the others were extremely nervous.

Fang Yuan did not move, he waited for the wind blades to get near him before manipulating the hump wolf to evade, easily and narrowly avoid them, as the green-blue wind blades passed right beside him.

"Expert!" Fang Yuan’s calm and composed demeanor made the Gu Masters think of this word.

Fang Yuan willed and several poison beard wolf kings were already prepared, charging forward and forming a formation, blocking the Wind wolf king.

Wind wolf king’s speed was fast, and had strong attacks with sturdy defenses, it was stronger than any of the poison beard wolf kings. And yet, it could not break through this barrier.

Fang Yuan’s precise control allowed him to overcome a stronger foe, restraining the wind wolf king as it could only howl angrily and helplessly.

"Formidable! The great wind wolf king is being toyed by this man."

"This person’s enslavement skill is on par with Jiang Bao Ya, Yang Po Ying, and Ma Zun. Northern plains has a new first-rate enslavement expert now!"

"If his wolf pack is stronger by a few times, he could take on a small-mid tribe single-handedly!"

"Who is this person? He looks rather old." Ge Guang was in a daze looking at Fang Yuan deal with the wind wolf king, feeling great admiration in his heart.

Everyone shook their heads, guessing among themselves, this gave Fang Yuan an aura of mystery.

"It is about time." Fang Yuan muttered.

He had the entire battle in his grasp, seeing that the wind wolf king was about to escape, he knew that its battle intent was gone.

"Rank three wolf enslavement Gu, go!"

Fang Yuan willed, and his sole rank three wolf enslavement Gu flew out and turned into a light smoke, engulfing the Wind wolf king.

Wind wolf king howled as it struggled, holding on as it did not submit to Fang Yuan’s authority.

"Hmph." Fang Yuan’s eyes shone brightly, he had a hundred man soul, he was not afraid of such competition between souls.

As expected, after a while, the wind wolf king could not resist anymore and submitted to Fang Yuan.

"This person’s soul is extremely strong, he most likely has a hundred man soul!" Someone exclaimed.

"With such skill in enslavement, it is not strange that he has a hundred man soul." Someone rebuked: "Like Jiang Bao Ya, Yang Po Ying, and Ma Zun, they all have thousand man souls!"

After successfully planting the wolf enslavement Gu, Fang Yuan obtained his first thousand wolf king.

Wind wolf king howled, and the wolf pack stood its movement, the noisy battlefield turned silent.

The remaining thousand wind wolves obeyed the wind wolf king and joined Fang Yuan.

This way, Fang Yuan’s wolf pack size doubled, reaching two thousand and four hundred wolves.

"I was lucky this time, if not for these Gu Masters restraining the wolves, I would have had a pay a bigger price to subdue this wind wolf king." Fang Yuan rode on the hump wolf as he gradually moved towards the mound.

Ge Guang and gang were holding their breaths, this person would decide their life and death.

As Fang Yuan got closer, Ge Guang stood out from the crowd and placed his right hand at his chest, bowing deeply at Fang Yuan, shouting: "Esteemed expert, your strength brings me great admiration and reverence. Now, our lives are in your hands. To live or to die, we will listen to your command, we will not have any complaints."

"Hehehe, young warrior, I saw your battle earlier. You are as brave as a stallion, it reminds me of myself in the past." Fang Yuan sat on the wolf’s back, laughing as he looked at the people warmly: "You are the first batch of humans I’ve seen since I left poison grassland. I am very happy to return to this land, rest assured I, Chang Shan Yin, am not a cruel and wicked person."

Hearing Fang Yuan’s words, the Gu Masters laughed as they relaxed.

They had little primeval essence left now, if Fang Yuan wanted to kill them, they had no way of retaliating.

Sometimes, men were more dangerous than wolves. If they met a demonic Gu Master, their outcomes would be even more tragic. Right now, everyone felt glad, they thought that they had met a righteous expert.

"Benefactor Chang Shan Yin, I am Ge tribe’s young tribe leader, you saved my life, allow me to repay this debt. Let me invite you to our tent as a guest, I will do my best to make your stay an enjoyable one." Ge Guang invited earnestly.

Of course, gratitude was a part of the reason, but he was also looking at Fang Yuan’s strength. The chance of become familiar with an expert was not just good for him, it benefited the entire tribe as well.

"Ge tribe?" Fang Yuan thought for a while: "Alright, I have already expended my primeval stones, and I also need to replenish my Gu worms, I do need to rest and reorganise."

He subtly expressed his needs and requests, it was a hint to Ge Guang.

Without disappointing him, this young clan leader’s eyes shone as he memorised these words to heart, laughing heartily: "Benefactor Chang Shan Yin, thank you for accepting, then let me lead the way."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan followed Ge Guang and the others towards the west direction.

They had the hump wolf, the speed was not slow.

Along the way, the group’s atmosphere was uplifting.

On one hand, Fang Yuan was intentionally getting close to them, he had his motives. On the other hand, Ge Guang was doing his best to form a relationship with this expert, he had great respect for him in his heart.

Northern plains natives were brave and fierce, but they were also forthright and candid.

If you did not have strength, they would look down on you, they were hard to talk to. But if you had a strong and tough fist, they would respect you. And when your personality matched theirs, their enthusiasm would make you understand what was ’to regret meeting too late’.

In just two days, Fang Yuan became very close to Ge Guang.

Fang Yuan intended to use this stepping board called Ge tribe to fuse into northern plains. After all, Chang Shan Yin had vanished for twenty years, now that he returned, it was hard for people to accept that fact.

At the same time, he had few primeval stones left, and he lacked a defensive Gu, he needed transactions to get them.

On Chang Shan Yin’s corpse, Fang Yuan did not find any defensive Gu, most likely it was destroyed during the battle with Ha Tu Gu.

And Ge Guang was also very grateful, respectful, and curious about Fang Yuan,

Grateful because Fang Yuan saved his life.

Respectful because Fang Yuan’s wolf enslavement skill was first-rate. With just a bit of guidance, Ge Guang’s bottleneck was easily broken, it was truly the demeanour of a first-rate senior, the disposition for an expert.

Curiosity was because Fang Yuan spoke of the past, he often used a reminiscent tone and an old and wise gaze, he was obviously an expert with a deep story. Ge Guang had the desire to find out more, but he did not dare to ask excessively.

Five days later, the gang returned to Ge tribe’s camp base.

The campsite was huge, there was a thick sturdy wall at the outer border of the camp, it was around 6 meters tall, green in color as vines grew and intertwined on it. Large numbers of leaves covered bunches and bunches of grape-like fruits.

These were obviously not fruits, but the wood path mind confusion Gu. When wild beasts attack, these grape-like fruits would explode and their juices would splatter on the beasts, causing them to go into confusion, and their bodies would shake as they lose their balance, unable to continue fighting.

After the great wall, there were tall watchtowers. Three Gu Masters were stationed on top of each tower, one defensive and two investigative Gu Masters taking turns to keep watch.

When the camp gates were opened, many Gu Masters came out to welcome them back.

"Young tribe leader is back, young tribe leader is back."

"Young tribe leader has only left for a few days, they’re back already?"

"I heard they met with a wind wolf pack, and almost lost their lives, thankfully an enslavement path expert helped them out!"

"That middle-aged man? These wolves are all following him, he is amazing! But I wonder he is expert from which tribe in northern plains."

Before Fang Yuan and others reached the camp, they had already met with the investigative Gu masters patrolling the camp. Thus, the camp had already received their news before the gang even reached.

As the information spread, many people pointed fingers at Fang Yuan, extremely curious.

Some children were jumping and shouting, following behind the gang excitedly.

Fang Yuan was seated on the back of hump wolf, looking at Ge Guang wave his hand towards the tribesmen. Every time he waved his hand, there would be a loud cheer from the crowd. It showed this young man’s important position in the tribe.

From their conversations along the way, Fang Yuan had already understood Ge

Guang completely. He was the brother of Ge Yao, a typical northern plains native, forthright and had a strong sense of brotherhood, he placed glory above his life. He had both wisdom and strength, and had the traditional northern plains mindset of patriarchy deeply ingrained in him. He was extremely angry and disgusted at his sister for escaping the wedding.

But his negative emotions did not mean that their sibling relationship was cold.

In fact, if he knew that Fang Yuan was the murderer of his sister, even without any primeval essence, he would use his teeth and limbs to try and exact revenge on Fang Yuan.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, he had lived in northern plains, thus he had a deep understanding of their nature.

Along the main path, the gang moved towards the center of the camp.

All around them were tents, resembling the mongolian tents on Earth. These were the accomodation of mortals.

Many people heard the commotion and lifted their window flaps, as their expressions changed when they saw the wolf pack behind Fang Yuan. Upon seeing the young tribe leader, they used their right hand to cover their chest as they paid respects to Ge Guang, shouting loudly to greet him.

In southern border, mortals had to kneel down when they met Gu Masters. But in northern plains, the male warriors only kneeled to heaven, their ancestors, and family elders. Normally, they did not kneel even to the tribe leader or tribe elders.

These mortals wore fur robes. Some females with better family background would have some accessories, while the males would have golden or purple threads on their shirts. Those who were poor would wear tattered clothes, with holes covered by additional cloth.

But this was much better than slaves.

Along the way, the people Fang Yuan saw who were kneeling were all slaves.

These slaves wore barely any clothing, they were skinny and pale. In northern plains, these slaves had very lowly status, and lived a pitiful life.

In the hearts of northern plains natives, keeping slaves was the same as rearing cows or sheep. Slave trade was the most flourishing business in northern plains.

In northern plains, mortals lived in tents. The tents were scattered at the outer ring of the camp, while the inner area was the residential area for Gu Masters.

If beast groups attacked the camp, the morals were the first to die.

After Fang Yuan and the others passed the tent area, they reached the Gu Master domain.

The Gu Masters on the grassland did not live in tents, but lived in Gu houses.

Gu houses were houses made of Gu. Simple Gu houses were made using one Gu. Complex Gu houses were made from a combination of many Gu.

In southern border, the large size caravans that travelled across mountains and forests had such Gu houses.

Back then on Qing Mao mountain, Jia clan brought a Gu house that was made using a wood path Gu worm, three star cave.

It was 18 meters tall, a truly tall tree. The roots were thick and strong, intertwining like coiling snakes, a small portion were exposed on the ground, while the rest were deeply buried underground.

The tree trunk had three layers, and on the surface, there were windows. The defensive power was on another level compared to the ordinary tents.

When used, the support Gu Master would plant the seeds, and inject their primeval essence for it to grow. When they wanted to keep it, the tree would turn back into a seed.

But in northern plains, ordinary Gu houses were not large trees like three star cave. Such a tall tree would be an easy target for lightning when it rained heavily.

Thus, the first Gu house that Fang Yuan saw was the most common house lizard Gu.

This was a rank two Gu, its outer appearance was like a lizard with many colors. The most commonly seen colors were dark green, sky blue, and milky white. They were huge in size, like the buses on Earth, the lizard had two eyes that acted as windows. The two sides of their body also had windows.

The lizard sprawled on the ground, opening its mouth to reveal a door.

After opening the door and entering, one would see a long passage. On the left and right, there were two rows of rooms. At the end of the passage, it was the toilet, the temporary area to store body waste.

When the tribe relocates, the lizard would get up and move with its four strong limbs.

When there was too much waste in the toilet, these lizards would defecate, lifting their tails to expose their anus, excreting all of the waste they had.

A family living inside a Gu house needed to have at least one Gu Master.

Such living environments were a level higher than the tent area.

At the door of the Gu house, there were often big stomach horses standing there, as their ropes would be tied to the lizard’s huge teeth. A small number of families even had hump wolves.

Fang Yuan and gang moved past these lizard Gu houses and saw the mushroom forest Gu houses.

These Gu houses were formed by planting large numbers of mush room Gu. Each house was a large mushroom, with a grey colored round top that can let rainwater flow away, they did not attract lightning from storms and were very stable when strong winds blew.

The mushroom had a strong and circular stem, the interior was white walls with windows on it.

A few mush room Gu formed together to create a unique living environment. With dozens of mush room Gu, the area turned into a small mushroom forest.

Those who lived in the mushroom forest were tribe elders or affluent Gu Masters.

Hearing the movement from Fang Yuan and gang, the windows of these mushroom houses opened, showing some women and children. Some lively children ran out to touch the wind wolves or poison beard wolves’ fur, they were more bold than mortal family’s children.

"Benefactor Chang Shan Yin, ahead is the king tent of our Ge tribe." Ge Guang said.

The gang came to the center of the campsite, and there were over a hundred mush room Gu here.

An old man, with an amicable appearance, led a group of Gu Masters to welcome them.

Fang Yuan guessed that he was the Ge tribe leader, and to express his politeness, he got off the hump wolf.

Old tribe leader came before Fang Yuan, placed his right hand at his heart as he bowed deeply: "Esteemed expert, you saved my son, you saved the future of our Ge tribe. Please come in, we have already prepared high quality kumis 1 , and the beef and lamb are also grilling right now. I will arrange for people to feed your wolf pack."

"Alright." Fang Yuan nodded, following Ge tribe leader into the this largest mushroom forest.

In the mushroom forest, people sat in order of status in the largest mush room Gu.

Fragrant kumis was placed in a leather water bag, presented before the people by young beautiful girls.

Large numbers of delicacies were placed on the table.

Soon, someone placed the grilled lamb and beef in the center of the room.

Old Ge tribe leader worked personally, he got to the center of the room and used a dagger to cut out the eyes of the cow and sheep, and also their back and chest meat, before placing them on a golden plate and bringing them to Fang Yuan with both hands.

"Benefactor, please." Old Ge tribe leader lifted his wine cup and stood before Fang Yuan as he toasted.

Northern plains natives respected honorable men the most, and were extremely hospitable. In northern plains, if the host toasts a guest, and the guest drinks it all, then that is respect to the host. Similarly, if they did not drink it, that means they did not respect the host, or held disdain towards him.

When Fang Yuan drank the entire bowl of kumis, the room cheered as the atmosphere became more lively.

After Ge tribe leader toasted, Ge Guang followed, and Fang Yuan drank it all in one shot. Afterwards, the tribe elders started toasting him, and Fang Yuan drank them all, his grand attitude won the good feelings of everyone.

After the toasting ended, the atmosphere in the room was absolutely heated.

"Benefactor Chang Shan Yin, you name is very familiar, are you a member of Chang tribe? In Chang tribe, I have several friends, my second daughter is married to Chang tribe. We might even be relatives." Old Ge tribe leader placed his cup down as his slightly red face had bright shining eyes.

"Ge tribe leader, I know what you want to ask. I am a tribesman from Chang tribe Yuan Feng faction, a Shan generation descendant who is the sole child in my family. My father is Chang Sheng Dun, and my mother is Chang Cui." Fang Yuan sighed, replying in a solemn expression.

Old Ge tribe leader’s eyes were wide as he stared at Fang Yuan in shock: "You, you are really Warrior Chang Shan Yin?!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ge tribe leader had some doubts when he heard Chang Shan Yin’s name in his subordinate’s report.

Now, when he received Fang Yuan’s confirmation, he was very moved.

All the elders present there also cried out in shock.

"Chang Shan Yin?" Ge Guang was sitting at the side and said with some doubts.

"You are young, not knowing is normal." Ge tribe leader heaved a sigh and instructed, "Son, toast to Chang Shan Yin. He is not only your benefactor but more importantly, he is our northern plains’ hero!"

"Old tribe leader." Fang Yuan gave a bitter smile and placed down his wine cup, "I am only a broken vagabond, not a hero. Maybe it was the blessing of longevity heaven, I was able to luckily escape from the edge of death. But I have slept for twenty years and when I woke up, everything seems to have changed. I am an unfilial child and have no face to return to my tribe..."

Tears dripped down Fang Yuan’s eyes as he said this.

The elders sighed.

Ge tribe leader promptly consoled: "Benefactor Chang Shan Yin, what are you saying? If you are not our northern plains’ hero, who can it be? Ha Tu Gu’s group of bandits were so savage and who knows how many tribes were looted by them, the weaker ones were even wiped out and even the livestock were not spared."

"By killing them, you have eliminated a huge threat in our northern plains. Your mother was injured by a villain, it was not because you were unfilial. On the contrary, your morals and righteous conduct were widely spread and known by all of us. Your return is the fortune for our northern plains’ righteous path."

"Lord tribe leader is correct!"

"So sir was actually Chang Shan Yin, it is really our honor for being able to see the hero."

"That’s right, the return of hero Chang Shan Yin is a great fortunately event for our righteous path!"

The elders praised repeatedly.

Ge Guang’s eyes shone, he only knew now that Fang Yuan actually had such a great origin and so many tales. This intensified his respect towards Fang Yuan.

"Let the past remain as the past. Everyone, our meeting is fate, let’s drink to it." Fang Yuan did not want to talk of these; he understood the past of Chang Shan Yin, but it was best if he avoided the topic.

He showed a depressed and gloomy expression.

Everyone observed his expression and did not mention the topic again, only speaking of joyous events.

After confirming Chang Shan Yin’s identity, Fang Yuan received much passionate treatment.

The banquet lasted all the way from afternoon to late at night. The elders were lying down after drinking too much, if not for Fang Yuan pretending to be drunk, he would not have been able to leave.

Next day, Ge tribe leader invited Fang Yuan to banquet again.

"Benefactor Chang Shan Yin, this is a small gift as thanks for saving my son’s life. Please take it!" Before the banquet started, the old tribe leader gave a million primeval stones to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was somewhat surprised as he had not thought he would get such a big gift.

Ge tribe was only a small-mid scale tribe which was not in a good financial situation; it could be seen from the position of their camp and the clothings of the people.

Currently, Fang Yuan was in poverty; these northern plains’ primeval stones could be used to resolve his current problems. He accepted the gift: "Ge tribe leader, I did not rescue Ge Guang for money. However, to be honest, I am currently out of primeval stones. I won’t be polite then. I will definitely repay Ge tribe’s kindness in the future."

Hearing Fang Yuan’s final sentence, Ge tribe leader, Ge Guang and the group of elders all smiled.

Being able to make friends and connect to such a heroic expert like Chang Shan Yin was the thing that a small-mid scale tribe like theirs would dream about.

The banquet continued and the atmosphere was much more bustling than yesterday.

Yesterday was only a first meeting, and today, both sides were familiar with each other. Fang Yuan raised his cup and proposed to all the elders; he remembered all their names clearly.

This made all the elders feel overwhelmed, making them feel even more closer to Chang Shan Yin.

During the banquet, some people were inevitably curious of Fang Yuan’s experiences.

Fang Yuan had already prepared a good tale and told it to everyone. It was the same thing he told to deceive Ge Guang, but compared to deceiving a young girl, he spoke more carefully this time.

He recounted his events and said his cultivation had fallen from rank four peak stage to initial stage due to injuries.

His words had no flaws, causing everyone to gasp, sigh and feel even more respect towards him.

And Fang Yuan just kept on sighing, not caring the slightest bit about his past accomplishments; his gaze showed the vicissitudes of time and his tone was melancholic.

Ge tribesmen realized the legendary hero also had a painful side to him; seeing such a sincere person, they grieved and sympathized with him, feeling even more closer to Fang Yuan.

On the third day, Ge tribe still continued the banquet with very high liveliness.

This time, a strange elder appeared in the banquet. He was in charge of Ge tribe’s intelligence, and just as Fang Yuan had reached the camp, he had received an order to lead a group to search for Ge Yao.

"Sigh, it is all my fault. I have a crafty girl, I have spoiled her too much, she actually fled her marriage!" Ge tribe leader sighed.

"Right, big brother Chang Shan Yin, you returned from the poisonous grassland. Did you see my little sister on your way?" Ge Guang asked.

Fang Yuan calmly replied with no hesitation, his expression extremely natural: "I am sorry, I only had wolves as my companion on my way. You guys were the first humans I saw, so I felt even closer to you."

Ge Guang was also casually asking and did not have any expectations.

Besides, the poisonous grassland was so huge, Fang Yuan not running into Ge Yao was also normal. If they met each other, it would instead be a rare thing.

"This insensible little sister, I really don’t know where she fled to without leaving behind any message. Sigh... it has become troublesome, Man tribe leader’s third son Man Duo is the person who wants to marry her. Now, sister has fled the marriage, and because he failed to obtain her, Man Duo might take it out on Ge tribe."

Ge Guang sighed with a frown on his face.

The other elders also looked gloomy. Man tribe’s pressure on them had been increasing these days.

None of them knew that Chang Shan Yin whom they had been enthusiastically entertaining for three days had already killed Ge Yao.

"Trees die when moved, humans live when they move. Brothers of Ge tribe, why are you reluctant to leave this place? There is only just over a year left until the great blizzard. You can migrate to the north, participate in the heroes assembly and rely on Huang Jin tribe. With this, you can hide in Wang Ting blessed land when the great blizzard comes." Fang Yuan persuaded.

The Gu Master world was a world of cruel environment and was not easy to survive in.

In southern border, humans made fortified villages which could defend against the beast tides, but northern plains had no mountains and the tribes would have to suffer the baptism of wind and snow.

Every ten years in northern plains, there would be a great blizzard that engulfs the entire northern plains.

It would last for months, the sky would be gloomy and snow would drift everywhere. Cold winds would whip around like blades and white snow would cover up the world. The whole vast plains would freeze into a world of ice and snow.

Every time the blizzard occurs, it would bring about a large number of deaths. Wolves, foxes, eagles, vegetations and humans; none could escape.

Especially during the blizzard, large numbers of strong wild Gu worms would appear.

Often, after the blizzard, the large scale tribes of northern plains would shrink down to mid-scale and mid-scale would shrink down to small scale due to the large numbers of casualties.

Ge tribe leader heaved a long sigh: "Brothern Shan Yin, I am old and no longer have ambitions I had when I was young. If we seek refuge with Huang Jin clan, our Ge tribe will be dragged into the whirlpool of conflicts. It is good if we succeed, but the consequences for failure is too severe. Our Ge clan had been making progress with great difficulty, we won’t be able to endure the loss."

"The struggle in the imperial court is not something small clans like ours can participate in. Actually, this environment is not bad, soil is fertile and there are abundant resources. There is even Hong Yan valley nearby where underground fire burns. During the blizzard, our tribe can move inside the valley and survive this disaster."

However, Hong Yan valley was firmly controlled by the overlord of this place, Man tribe.

Ge tribe would need to come in terms with Man tribe to enter Hong Yan valley.

Man Duo’s marriage proposal to Ge Yao was an extremely good opportunity. For the whole tribe’s benefits, sacrificing a girl’s happiness for marriage was a very good deal to Ge tribe leader and Ge Guang.

Sacrificing an individual benefits for the whole, this was the most common scene in an organization.

However, Ge Yao fled the marriage with her whereabouts unknown. Man tribe has been pressuring them to hand over Ge Yao, but Ge tribe was not able to do that.

Fang Yuan immediately realized the intention of Ge tribe leader from his words, they wanted to seek refuge with Man tribe.

He understood this very well but felt some pity inwardly.

Heroes assembly was his next target destination. If he could make Ge tribe migrate, he would be able to journey smoothly without having to face the many dangers along the way.

After mentioning the blizzard and Man tribe, everyone’s mood turned grim.

"Brother Shan Yin, are you really not going to return to Chang tribe?" Ge tribe leader asked.

"Of course I can’t return. If I return, wouldn’t it be easy for my impersonation to be exposed?!" Fang Yuan thought in his mind while speaking, "Sigh, in my current circumstance, I am unable to face my elders and tribesmen."

Ge tribe leader nodded his head, expressing his understanding and feeling some sympathy.

Chang Shan Yin slept for twenty years and after waking up, everything had changed. His mother had died, his wife had been remarried to his brother. Chang tribe had become his sore spot, it was a normal thing for him to not able to face these for a while.

In the previous banquet, Fang Yuan had mentioned he wanted to go to the heroes assembly and also recover his cultivation quickly.

"Brother, if you really want to participate in the heroes assembly, just relying on your current wolf group, it would not be enough for your journey. It will be better for you to rest for a few days." The old clan leader proposed.

Fang Yuan nodded and did not object: "I have the same idea. But this way, I will have to continue imposing on your tribe."

"Of course not, it is our honor that you are a guest here!" The old tribe leader laughed heartily, expressing his willingness.

Ge Guang also smiled: "A few days later, the surrounding few tribes will hold a market together. Uncle chang can come take a look."

Like this, Fang Yuan stayed over at Ge tribe.

Several days later, Ge tribe decamped and moved towards the southwest, converging with several other tribes.

An enormous tribal market rapidly emerged.

Fang Yuan rejected Ge Guang’s invitation and entered this hustling and bustling market alone.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Come, have a taste of this fragrant rice cake."

"Selling tea, selling tea, this is top grade brick tea!"

"Ah Su family’s kumis, we are a ten year old brand, anyone who drinks this will know."

...

There was a huge mix of small stall on the ground as different smells entered the nose, shouting and bargaining noises were heard all over the place.

Fang Yuan walked among them, almost at a shoulder touching distance with the surrounding people, the festive mood was so intense.

Not only was food on sale, but clothing too.

Ordinary sheep skin robe, dog skin robe, or the higher quality bull skin robe. There were beautiful fox snow robes, or the wolf skin robe that had metal pieces in them which were often worn by warriors.

Children were having fun at the food stalls, while men were bargaining at the weapon stalls. Women were choosing gems, pearls, or gold and silver accessories.

As he walked in, Fang Yuan saw a square that was assembled casually.

On the square, there were large wooden cages filled with people.

Outside the cage, there were specialized Gu Masters guarding the place, as a fat man was shouting at the top of his lungs: "Selling slave, five male slaves for half a primeval stone!"

Fang Yuan took a look and knew that it was the flourishing slave trade in northern plains.

These people were from tribes who lost in battles, after being captured alive, they lost their freedom and became commodity.

Inside the cages, there were children who were thin and wore no clothes, there were also kneeling men who lowered their heads while locked by a steel chain. Of course, there were women too."

The fat man shouted for a long time, his forehead was sweating but the passersby were only watching. His eyes rolled as he thought of an idea, opening the wooden cage and letting a woman whose face was full of dirt walk out.

"Look, this is a top quality woman."

As he shouted, he ripped off the torn clothes of the woman, exposing her breasts.

"Look, what a plump breast she has!"

Next, he turned the woman to the other side and slapped her butt in public.

"Look again, such a huge butt, she can have many children. Buy her home to have kids, you can even use her for manual labor!"

During the process, the woman’s expression was numb, she was like a wooden puppet that could be manipulated by anyone.

As the fat man shouted earnestly, some commotion finally occurred in the crowd.

Someone asked: "How much are you selling her for?"

"Three taels of primeval stone. Just three taels of primeval stone." The fat man raised three fingers.

Three taels of primeval stone, it was not even half a piece.

But the person who asked for the price suddenly shouted: "What, three taels! Is this robbery, I might as well save up two more taels to buy a big stomach horse, that is much more worth it!"

The fat man’s oily face trembled as he spit on the ground: "Rubbish! You can buy a woman and ride her in bed, but if you buy a big stomach horse, although you can ride it, can it make babies for you? Poor miser, get lost if you do not want to buy!"

The fat man was a rank one Gu Master, and the person scolded was a mortal, he immediately shrunk his neck and walked away feebly.

Fang Yuan gave a few glances of interest before retracting his gaze.

The slaves that the fat man was selling were just mortals, they could not fetch a good price. But if he sold variant humans, they would be sold for a much higher price. If he sold Gu Masters, they would be high quality slaves, the price would be the highest.

Seeing these slaves, Fang Yuan could not help but think of Ma Hong Yun.

This person was born as a slave, but he had heaven defying luck.

First as a slave, he participated in battle. When his tribe lost, he saved the young tribe leader by pure luck when escaping for his life. Because of this huge merit, he was given the surname Ma, and was no longer a slave.

He became an ordinary mortal in Ma tribe. In order to earn a living, he went out to hunt, but because of his poor skills, he had no earnings. When he returned, he was tripped by a rock, he smashed this rock in anger, but discovered a white silver relic Gu under the rock. He contributed this rock to his tribe’s young tribe leader.

The young tribe leader needed this white silver relic Gu and was overjoyed, not only did he reward Ma Hong Yun handsomely, he even gave him an opportunity to cultivate.

Ma Hong Yun awakened his aperture and had B grade aptitude, but did not have any useful Gu worms. He was often bullied by nearby Gu Masters, and was thrown into the river once.

Ma Hong Yun who could not swim drank a lot of water as he flowed downstream along the river.

At the lower stream, Sheng tribe leader’s third daughter, Sheng Ling Er, was bathing. Ma Hong Yun saw everything and according to Sheng tribe’s rules, the beautiful Sheng tribe genius female Gu Master had no choice but to become his wife.

Ma Hong Yun thus received a lot of help from Sheng Ling Er, he never lacked any Gu worms or primeval stones.

In fact, Sheng Ling Er even stole her tribe’s precious Gu to raise his aptitude to A grade.

When the matter was exposed, Sheng tribe leader did not want his daughter to marry this poor lad, thus he secretly sent an expert to kill Ma Hong Yun.

But this expert had an argument with someone along the way and was killed by another expert.

Ma Hong Yun and Sheng Ling Er thus became husband and wife, and held an important position in the tribe, he was hated by Sheng tribesmen due to jealousy, and they plotted against him secretly.

He had no choice but to escape to poison grassland, and just as he was about to be killed by the poison beard wolves, he found Chang Shan Yin. After saving Chang Shan Yin, he became his loyal subject.

Just like this, due to his ridiculously good luck on many occasions, Ma Hong Yun rose up slowly, eventually becoming the lord of the imperial court.

After Hei Lou Lan died, he became the overlord of the imperial court for over a hundred years, over a dozen times.

Later, he obtained Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s partial inheritance, and became a Gu Immortal. He was even given a blessed land by a Gu Master.

When battle and conflicts raged in the world, Ma Hong Yun became one of the powerhouses of northern plains, resisting the grand army from central continent and gained overwhelming reputation.

"At this time, Ma Hong Yun should be thirteen years old. It is a pity I do not know his true identity. Ma Hong Yun is only a name given to him after he saved Ma tribe’s young tribe leader. Ma tribe is part of the Huang Jin bloodline left behind by Giant Sun, to vie for the imperial court, they had been expanding these few years, absorbing the members of many tribes. I wonder if Ma Hong Yun has already become Ma tribe’s slave."

Fang Yuan collected his thoughts, and found himself outside a gambling den.

There were two couplets on the door.

Left was: Show some courage, gain the fortune of the four seasons.

Right was: Show some skill, obtain the wealth of the four cardinal directions.

Across, it wrote: Luck changes with time.

The gambling den had great business, Fang Yuan was moved.

"With my experience, I might be able to earn a small fortune." With this thought, Fang Yuan smiled, thinking of Ma Hong Yun.

This lad with overwhelming luck, he was deceived by someone who gave him the lowest grade rock to gamble with him.

Under such absurd circumstances, he obtained a rank five Gu!

Fang Yuan still had some business at the moment, he did not enter the gambling den yet.

He walked past the entrance of the gambling den, and entered the central area of this market.

This place was much quieter, there was less traffic flow and almost all passersby were Gu Masters. Even if there were mortals, they were attendants and followed beside the Gu Master, lowering their heads as they carried goods. Other than that, there were some young masters and young ladies who had not awakened their aperture.

Although there were no guards, there was a clear distinction between the two areas for mortals and Gu Masters.

The difference in strength was a formless barrier, it divided the two types of people with evidently different lives.

Fang Yuan walked briskly, wherever he went, Gu Masters gave him a look of admiration and respect, when they were in front of him, they would stop and give way to him.

Some people started talking among themselves: "Why is there a rank four expert?"

"This person has an unfamiliar face, he does not seem to be from the few large tribes around here."

"Be careful, whenever the market opens, there will be some demonic Gu Masters who come in to get rid of their loot."

Rank three and four were completely different.

Rank three were the middle pillar, most tribe elders of major tribes were at this level. Rank four were experts among Gu Masters, most tribe leaders were rank four, and they could roam the mortal realm freely without restraint.

Rank four initial stage aura made every action of his attract the attention of everyone.

Reverence, curiosity, or apprehension.

This place was solely for the business of Gu Masters.

There was a Gu refinement area, where Gu refinement were done in place of a Gu Master, at the same time they sold and bought recipes.

Fang Yuan lacked the recipe of the wolf enslavement Gu, after a few transactions, he bought the recipe for the rank one to three wolf enslavement Gu.

The recipe for rank four was held in the hands of the few large tribes, it was rarely seen in the market.

Thereafter, Fang Yuan went to the restaurant, but did not manage to find any top quality wine.

He went to the largest shop next.

"Esteemed expert, your presence is our shop’s honor. Please come in." The shopkeeper was a rank three elderly Gu Master, he came out personally to attend to Fang Yuan.

"I need large numbers of wolf enslavement Gu." Fang Yuan stated his needs immediately.

"Yes, please come with me for further discussion." The elderly brought Fang Yuan to a beautiful room on the third floor.

After some bargaining, Fang Yuan bought five rank three wolf slavement Gu and thirty-eight rank two wolf enslavement Gu.

The shopkeeper was rubbing his palms in joy, he knew he had met a huge client: "Esteemed customer, is there anything you still need, feel free to state them."

"Do you have defensive Gu?" Fang Yuan asked.

The elderly reported a long list of Gu names, and Fang Yuan shook his head as he listened. There was one rank four Gu but it did not fit his enslavement path. The rest were all ordinary Gu worms.

Next, Fang Yuan asked about flying Gu.

Flying Gu were rarely seen, because it had a steep learning curve. Normally, only outstanding members of large tribes would train in it from young. But because they had their tribe’s resources, they did not need to buy flying Gu.

As for other Gu Masters, very few tried to learn flying.

The shopkeeper said proudly: "Customer, you came to the right place. In this entire market, only my shop has a rank four flying cloud Gu!"

But Fang Yuan shook his head.

Although flying cloud Gu could ascend to a high altitude, it had poor maneuverability and had average speed, it was suitable for Gu Masters who did not have proper flying skills.

For him, he might as well use the rank three eagle wings Gu, it could twist and turn easily in the sky, he could use it more efficiently.

After buying one eagle wings Gu, Fang Yuan asked about the bone bamboo Gu and ghost fire Gu.

He needed these two Gu to repair the rank five battle bone wheel.

The shop had many rank two ghost fire Gu, but there was none of the rank one bone bamboo Gu.

The shopkeeper laughed bitterly: "Customer, my apologies. All the bone bamboo Gu in the market had been bought by Man tribe’s new external tribe elder. Not just my shop, but none of the other shops have any left."

"Oh? Who is this person?" Fang Yuan’s gaze shone.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Man tribe owned Hong Yan valley, they had won a few battles these years and had expanded greatly.

Northern plains was different from southern border.

Southern borders had a forest and mountain terrain, it was easy to defend but hard to attack, long distance travelling causes huge expenditure. Southern border clans worked on self development, accumulating slowly and growing stably, keeping a pure bloodline.

But northern plains was a huge grassland, there were lots of conquests going on. The tribes of northern plains rise up fast but also fall just as quickly. A few wins might allow a small size tribe to become a medium size tribe, and from a medium size tribe, expand into a large size tribe. But one loss could also cause this large size tribe to break down into numerous small size tribes.

Man tribe had absorbed Shi tribe recently, and the elder Shi Wu from Shi tribe became Man tribe’s external elder.

He was a bone path Gu Master, he was the one who bought all the bone bamboo Gu in the market, as he claimed to be researching a new Gu path recipe.

Fang Yuan memorised this person to heart, before asking the shopkeeper about soul path and strength path Gu worms.

"I have a rank one jin strength Gu, it can raise the strength of a Gu Master by one jin 1 . Each Gu is sold for two hundred and twenty primeval stones."

"I have the rank two strength of ten jin Gu, it raises the Gu Master’s strength by ten jin, it is sold for six hundred and ninety primeval stones."

"I also have the rank three jun strength Gu, one jun is thirty jin, each Gu is sold for four thousand five hundred and fifty primeval stones."

"Although I do not have the rank four strength of ten jun Gu, if customer needs it, i can arrange for it to be transported over, each strength of ten jun Gu is sold for thirty-six thousand primeval stones."

The shopkeeper gave a chain of prices that he was extremely familiar with.

At the end, he added: "Of course, this is only the jin strength Gu and jun strength Gu. If customer wants to walk on the strength path, and require beast strength Gu, we also have wolf strength Gu. It can give you the strength of a wolf, gaining stamina and endurance as well. I also have horse strength Gu, it can give you the strength of a horse, it is most useful for running."

Before, Fang Yuan was using beast strength Gu to walk on the ancient strength path. Jin strength Gu and jun strength Gu were new popular alternatives that appeared in the last few hundred years.

Although strength path was weak and no longer had its former glory, there was still developments done for it.

The one who had this contribution was a famous rank seven Gu Immortal in northern plains called Chu Du, titled ’Domination Immortal’. He was the one who invented the jin strength Gu and jun strength Gu, and even refined the rank six Immortal Gu ’Strength of a Thousand Jun’.

A jun was thirty jin.

A thousand jun was thirty thousand jin.

In one of Earth’s legends, the Victorious Fighting Buddha’s Jingu Bang was only thirteen thousand five hundred jin. Er Lang Shen’s ’Three-pointed, Double-edged Lance’ was only twenty five thousand two hundred jin.

Hu Du became a Gu Immortal three hundred years ago, the recipe he refined was widely spread, quickly becoming the main branch of the strength path in northern plains.

Ancient strength path used beast strength Gu, like green bull strength Gu, Biao strength Gu, dragon strength Gu and so on, Because the materials from the ancient times were already extremely rare by now, the cost of refining Gu was huge.

Domination Immortal Chu Du’s recipe was superior in that the materials were easy to find and had low cost, and the success rate of the Gu refinement was higher than beast strength Gu.

Northern plains was most probably the region where strength path was most flourishing at the moment. Northern plains had battles and conquests often, with strength path’s low cost, they gave evident increase in strength to low rank Gu Masters.

Thus, many Gu Masters in northern plains cultivated strength path as their minor path.

They often fought in fierce battles, when they expend their primeval essence, they would need their physical bodies to fight. Physical strength was very important then.

There is a phrase on Earth: war is the catalyst for technological advancement. This sentence worked perfectly well in this world as well. Northern plains was a place where new Gu worms were constantly invented.

From that Shi Wu elder who joined Man tribe, one could see the attitude that northern plains Gu Masters had towards innovation.

Domination Immortal later died in battle, by the hands of Feng Jiu Ge who descended from the heavenly court. After he died, he was crowned as the ’Twilight of Strength Path’ by future generations, after his death was announced, countless Gu Masters in northern plains cried painfully.

"Sigh... the number of talents and geniuses in this world is like the number of stars in the night sky, the number of talented people are like carps in the river. The five regions are too big, the size of one Earth cannot compare to even one region. Especially in the battle five hundred years later, dragons and snakes rise from the land, experts and powerhouses compete, and old monsters come out of seclusion one after another, as new talents rise up to power. Countless heroes, conquerors, the differing personalities from the righteous and demonic paths clash and engage in a life-and-death battle. It is truly a grand and exciting event that would go down in history."

"I have already used old removal Gu secretly to remove ancient bronze skin, essence iron bones, and golden steel tendons, and even my beast phantoms. Firstly, these strength path beast phantoms originate from southern border, they would be restricted in northern plains, and could not be used well. Secondly, if I summon a beast phantom, there is a danger of exposing my identity."

"My greatest advantage now is Dang Hun mountain, and my five hundred years of experience, with the blessed land’s resources, I can walk on the enslavement path. But enslavement path has a weakness, that is the ’beheading the leader’ tactic, thus I need strength path to go along with it. Since I have Chang Shan Yin’s appearance now, I also need to merge into northern plains, I should use this jun strength Gu."

Fang Yuan’s thought flickered as he made a decision, requesting for the rank four strength of ten jun Gu from the shopkeeper.

Next, he looked at the soul path Gu worms.

There were much more soul path Gu worms than strength path.

There were ghost fire Gu, ghost cry Gu, ghost face Gu, ghost axe Gu and so on for attacking. There were ghost cage Gu, ghost hand Gu, ghost hitting wall for confinement and confusion.

For defense, there were ghost sealing shirt Gu, soul shield Gu and others. For healing, there were ghost qi Gu, ghost tears Gu and others. For investigation, there was ghost eye Gu. For movement, there were soul fly Gu, and elusive ghost Gu.

There were also ghost soldier Gu, impermanence ghost, air travel ghost, and nine son mother ghost Gu, all of them had to do with enslavement path.

This was the true manner of a great path.

Strength path was extremely weak now, while soul path was still standing strong, this point could be easily seen here.

Strength path Gu worms only consisted of jin strength Gu, jun strength Gu, and beast strength Gu, most were for attacking. In terms of defense, investigation, and assistance, there were little. It was hard to create a Gu set from just strength path Gu.

As for soul path, there were many Gu worms that were in all the different aspects. Forming into a set, they could help each other and obtain greater effects.

Look at that Domination Immortal Chu Du, he was a strength path Gu immortal, but he used other Gu worms for defense, investigation, and storage etc.

Fang Yuan came with an objective, he set aside all these soul path Gu worms, only looking at those which could be used to refine the soul.

There were no rank four Gu for that, but a bunch of rank three.

There was divine soul Gu, dragon soul Gu, ice soul Gu, dream soul Gu, moon soul Gu, general soul Gu, grudge soul Gu, poem soul Gu, horse soul Gu, heroic soul Gu, qi spirit Gu, body spirit Gu, cloud spirit Gu, wind spirit Gu, tiger spirit Gu, and others.

These Gu worms could refine the soul, they all had their unique use.

For example, refining the soul into ice soul, in the future when the Gu Master uses ice type Gu worms, they would gain a considerate boost. Cloud spirit, wind spirit, had the same effects.

If one used dragon soul Gu to refine a dragon soul, when he uses dragon strength Gu, dragon scales Gu, or dragon travel Gu, there would be a boost to the effect.

Fang Yuan looked for a while, and did not find any Gu that was more suitable for him, thus he chose the wolf soul Gu that he had planned to buy.

From ancient times, soul and enslavement were of the same origins.

Enslavement path was originally split from the soul path, when Gu Masters combined it with the immemorial wisdom path, the enslavement path finally became an independent path.

Beast enslavement Gu, slavery Gu, they were used to control the soul, allowing one to become a ruler of the mind.

If Fang Yuan refined the wolf soul, it would greatly help him in enslaving wolf packs.

The rank three wolf soul Gu was seven thousand and seven hundred primeval stones. Fang Yuan bought them in bulk, buying all of the stock in the shop, getting all eight wolf soul Gu.

Wolf soul Gu’s effort could be stacked, a rank three wolf soul Gu was not enough to refine Fang Yuan’s hundred man soul.

Wild Gu worms had their own will, they were hard to refine. But the Gu worms Fang Yuan bought had already been refined by others, thus when the transaction ended, all these Gu were in Fang Yuan’s control.

He kept all these Gu inside his aperture, and left the shop, going to other shops.

His aim was rank two and three wolf enslavement Gu, as well as rank three wolf soul Gu.

A million primeval stones was insufficient, but what Fang Yuan wanted were common rank two and three Gu.

He did want to buy rank four Gu.

But this market was too small, there were few rank four Gu, and were all not the ones he wanted.

After three days, Fang Yuan became famous in the market. Every shop knew that there was a rank four expert buying Gu in bulk.

By the fifth day, Fang Yuan spent a lot already, over five to six hundred thousand primeval stones.

During this period, he would walk around the market’s ranch often.

In the ranch, there were many livestock sold, of which big stomach horses were most popular. This horse, even mortals needed it badly. As for those who bought the hump wolves for battle, they were mostly Gu Masters.

There were also many Gu Masters who caught wild beasts to sell here. Like bulls, horses, falcons etc. On the grassland, the most commonly seen were wolves, they were also sold in large numbers.

Fang Yuan asked around, comparing goods and prices, until he saw a pack of thick back wolves that he wanted.

Fang Yuan had poison beard wolves and wind wolves. It was hard to replenish poison beard wolves, and since they were weak in the sunlight, they were destined to be eliminated. Wind wolves had fast speed, while thick back wolves had high defense. If they could be added into his wolf army, they would cooperate well together, and form a proper wolf pack.

But on the ninth day, Fang Yuan accidentally found out that among a group of water wolves, there was a young mutated beast.

He immediately bought these water wolves without causing suspicion, getting a great deal for himself.

The market lasted thirteen days.

Fang Yuan bought over a thousand water wolves, and many Gu refinement materials, as well as food to feed his Gu worms, as he left on the tenth day.

After his purchases, he had only three thousand primeval stones left on him.

Money was spent like flowing water, Ge Guang watched in amazement as he admired ’Chang Shan Yin’ secretly, this hero truly had a grand disposition.

Fang Yuan followed Ge tribe and returned to his original place to stay.

He cultivated with all his heart, using wolf soul Gu to refine his soul while refining Gu on the other hand.

After two failures, he successfully refined the rank three golden back wolf skin Gu into the rank four azure wolf skin Gu.

Azure wolf skin Gu was used for defense, although it was common, it fixed Fang Yuan’s problem of insufficient defense.

On this day, he finished his soul refinement and stopped cultivating, when a cry was heard outside his room.

"What happened?" He opened the door and asked the Gu Master who was guarding the place.

The Gu Master said grimly: "Our big missy Ge Yao died. The search team found her torn clothes in poison grassland, she was killed by poison beard wolves!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

A month later, Ge Yao’s death was finally discovered.

The news spread as many Ge tribesmen cried. Although Ge Yao had a troublesome personality, she was kind-hearted and the beauty of the tribe, people loved her. She had many pursuers in Ge tribe.

"Oh my daughter, it was father who harmed you..." Old Ge tribe leader was extremely upset, falling terribly ill.

Ge Guang was the stand-in tribe leader with the elders assisting him. Ge tribe was anguished and upset, they had a heavy mood.

Ge Yao’s death had huge impacts. Man tribe leader’s third son Man Duo fell in love with Ge Yao at first sight, he had been demanding for her, now that she was dead, where were they going to find a girl for him?

Man tribe was a large tribe, they had expanded greatly these years, and had absorbed many small tribes in the process. After a few victories, their morale was high, and they were even more arrogant against the despondent Ge tribe. During their conversations, they gave Ge Guang great pressure as they demanded fiercely.

Ge tribe was a newly arrived tribe, they were not as huge as Man tribe, and now that they had lost their home, they had to live in someone else’s territory, relying on Hong Yan valley during the snowy climate. Thus, Ge Guang was very passive now, he was extremely anxious.

...

In his room, Fang Yuan sat on his bed as he opened his eyes.

On his right palm was a wolf soul Gu.

This Gu was about thumb-size, it was like a grey wolf-shaped doll, giving off an eerie blue light.

"This is the ninth wolf soul Gu." Fang Yuan injected his primeval essence and the wolf soul Gu expanded, in a few breaths’ time, it turned into a grey-white wolf soul.

The wolf soul opened its mouth, howling silently as it crashed into Fang Yuan’s body.

This impact was silent, but Fang Yuan could feel his soul trembling, as his eyes went into a daze.

The wolf soul directly crashed into his soul, the originally human-shaped hundred man soul underwent some reaction, and lost its human form, fusing with the wolf soul into a surging soul mist.

The soul mist did not disperse, instead it moved and rolled around in Fang Yuan’s body, showing a wolf’s head, tail, or even Fang Yuan’s appearance at times.

After five minutes, the soul mist gathered and formed a new human soul.

Except this human soul was different.

Fang Yuan’s hundred man soul earlier was completely his own appearance, his eyes, ears and nose were all the same. But after going through nine wolf soul Gu’s refinement, although the hundred man soul was still human-shaped, there was a pair of wolf ears on his head, and his hair extended to his waist, his eyes also became wolf eyes, his entire body was thinner and his nose was sharper.

Before, his hundred man soul was huge and was almost bursting his actual body. But now, after refinement, it was more condensed and the color had turned from pale-white to a slight hint of grey-white.

Fang Yuan calculated, when he finishes using his wolf soul Gu, the hundred man soul would be refined to its limits.

By then, his entire soul would become half-man half-wolf, the so-called wolfman soul.

Wolfman soul is many times stronger than an ordinary hundred man soul.

After having the wolfman soul, Fang Yuan would be able to continue strengthening his soul, raising the hundred man soul to thousand or even ten thousand man soul.

Of course, ten thousand man soul was not the limit, there was even hundred million man soul.

"In theory, the soul can strengthen limitlessly. Back then, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who created the soul path definitely surpassed hundred million man soul! His Demon Venerable Soul had a thousand arms and palms, three heads, the front head had dragon horns, lion mane, snake eyes, and elephant tusks. The left head had a peach forehead, grass hair, and three flower-like eyes. The right head had a cloud fringe, lightning eyes, fire ears, and golden mouth. He was unbelievable strong, his might was immeasurable. Even now, this appearance was still deeply worshipped and adored by many people. Many mortals in southern border use clay to create his statue, to pray to and give offerings."

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was the number one soul cultivator in history. Fang Yuan’s wolfman soul now was like a ant against a giant, he still needed to grow stronger.

After a little rest, Fang Yuan took out the strength of ten jun Gu.

This Gu was an iron weight, it was very heavy to carry.

Fang Yuan bought five strength of ten jun Gu, he was already using the third now, his body’s physical strength had increased to twenty jun, that is, six hundred jin.

The rank four strength of ten jun Gu was weaker than rank four beast strength Gu, but its advantage was that the strength could be stacked.

Previously, Fang Yuan had used a kunlun bull strength Gu, and obtained the beast phantom of the kunlun bull. But if he used a second kunlun bull strength Gu, there would be no effects, and he would not get another beast phantom either.

But jun strength Gu did not have this restriction, it could be stacked until the body’s limit was reached.

Of course, although Fang Yuan had the strength of six hundred jin, he could not unleash them all at once normally.

The common weaknesses of strength path, jun strength Gu still had them. Otherwise, Domination Immortal Chu Du would not be called the ’twilight of strength path’, but the ’rise of strength path’.

Of course, similar beast strength Gu could be stacked, but an additional beast fetus Gu was needed to do so.

Many different recipes of beast fetus Gu were passed down. But even so, the materials needed for the Gu refinement were very rare, as the cost of the Gu refinement was too high, and the success rate was inferior to jun strength Gu, it eventually got eliminated in the competition.

Fang Yuan activated his primeval essence, injecting them into jun strength Gu. The jun strength Gu flew above his head, giving off a strange light. The light shone on Fang Yuan as his body was steadily modified.

But at this time, there were knocks on his door.

Soon after, a voice was heard: "Uncle Chang Shan Yin, junior Ge Guang would like to meet you."

Fang Yuan let him in, only to see that Ge Guang was in a pathetic state, there was even a white bone arrow on his shoulder, he was in a terrible condition.

Upon seeing Fang Yuan, Ge Guang kneeled on the ground, his eyes were red, begging: "Uncle, please save me."

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone, he had an answer in his heart, as he spoke: "What happened? Is Man tribe attacking us at full force, have they charged into Ge tribe’s camp already?"

Ge Guang answered: "Uncle is half right, the problem is Man tribe. The Man tribe leader’s third son Man Duo heard that father was bedridden and unconscious, thus he immediately brought his Man tribe experts over to challenge us, wanting us to hand over my sister Ge Yao. But my sister is already dead, how can I hand her over to him? No matter how I explained, that Man Duo lad did not believe me. According to the rules of the grassland, we Ge tribe have to accept the challenge. Now, he had already killed our tribe’s third elder, and even injured three people, even I lost to them."

Fang Yuan’s guess was completely right, these few days, Man tribe had been oppressive and tyrannical, the more Ge tribe endured, the more it fuelled Man tribe’s arrogance.

Although Fang Yuan had been cultivating hard these days, he was not in closed cultivation, he was clear of the outside situation.

"Speaking of which, Chang Shan Yin’s return to northern plains requires a grand stage to create some commotion. I should use this chance to announce the return of the former hero."

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan helped Ge Yao up and said: "During these days, I have been imposing on Ge tribe, I cannot watch from the sidelines, bring me there."

"Uncle, I thank you on behalf of our entire tribe!" Ge Guang was overjoyed.

The two walked out, but before they got to the entrance, they heard the shouts and screams outside.

"Ge tribe is full of cowardly rats, come out and accept your death!" This was the voice of a young man.

"Man Duo, you are going too far!" A Ge tribe elder screamed.

"Hehehe, so what if I am bullying you. Leopards and wolves capture their prey, eagles and falcons bully small birds, this is the rule of the world! Quickly hand over Ge Yao, otherwise I will continue challenging you and kill every single member of Ge tribe."

"Despicable! If old tribe leader was here, would you dare?" Ge tribe elder rebuked.

Man Duo was furious: "Hmph, you are the despicable ones, you agreed to the wedding but now you refuse to hand over the woman. You went back on your words! I know, you are hiding Ge Yao, trying to stall for time. First, you said she ran away, now you said she’s dead. Do you think I am a fool? If a mere rabbit dares to toy with a wolf, you will have to pay with your life. Shi Wu, continue beating them, challenge them. Ge tribe, quickly send your next victim here to fight. Hahaha!"

Ge tribe elders’ expressions were pale, they looked at each other but none dared to go up.

Shi Wu was huge and bald, with his bulging muscles, he walked onto the stage with a cruel smile.

He was rank three peak stage, having great strength. The elder that Ge tribe sacrificed was beaten to death on the spot.

He walked on the center of the stage, staring at Ge tribe’s camp: "Why is no one here? Don’t tell me you are afraid!"

Ge tribe was furious and ashamed, fire burnt in their eyes as they stared at Shi Wu.

"Cowardly chicken, let me give you some courage. I have a hundred thousand primeval stones here, if anyone dares to come here and defeat me, I will hand the primeval stones over to you."

No one answered him.

Shi Wu laughed in a frenzy: "Ge tribe, Ge tribe, you are but a bunch of rabbits and sheep!"

"Have you laughed enough?" With Ge Guang leading the way, Fang Yuan walked out of the crowd with a plain expression.

Shi Wu’s laughter stopped, his pupils shrunk as he looked at Fang Yuan in shock.

"Rank four Gu Master! Who is this person?" Not just Shi Wu, but all of the Man tribesmen here had this huge question.

"Was Man tribe concealing another rank four Gu Master?" Man Duo felt something amiss.

He came here to find trouble because old Ge tribe leader was bedridden. But to think that Ge tribe had a second rank four battle strength expert!

"Before I came, I had already checked clearly, where is this expert from?"

Carrying such suspicions, Man Duo jumped down from his horse, changing his attitude as he placed his right hand at his chest, greeting Fang Yuan: "Hello friend, you are not from Ge tribe, why must you interfere in our matters?"

Fang Yuan gave this Man Duo a glance, feeling amused by this young man.

The first time he had heard of this Man Duo was from Ge Yao’s descriptions.

Although this Man Duo was the third son of Man tribe leader, he was weak and sickly since young, and had poor aptitude, only C grade. Although he was over twenty years old now, he only had rank two cultivation. He was dark and skinny like a monkey.

But he was definitely not as feeble as Ge Yao described, he had a scheming and devious pair of eyes, with the flames of ambition burning within them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In northern plains where only experts were respected, where only strength mattered, Man Duo was able to gain his father’s favor, and was able to mobilize tribe elders to challenge Ge tribe. It showed his ability and courage, he was definitely not a good-for-nothing young master.

Fang Yuan’s eyes showed amusement: "I, Chang Shan Yin, was fated to be Ge tribe’s guest, I know northern plains rules and it is true that I should not interfere in others’ business. But I had just heard this little brother taking out a hundred thousand primeval stones. I am lacking primeval stones recently, why would I reject money offered to me?"

Shi Wu heard this and wished he could slap his own mouth.

"My mouth was really itchy, to think I attracted a rank four expert." His heart was sour and bitter.

Man Duo laughed dryly: "This is an easy matter, if senior lacks primeval stones, this junior is willing to offer five hundred thousand primeval stones to you!"

What he meant was, he wanted Fang Yuan to keep out of this.

At once, Ge tribesmen looked nervously at Fang Yuan.

Although Fang Yuan was the legendary hero, it was only his reputation, those who truly acted like a hero were rare.

Moreover, there was a phrase: a wise man submits to circumstances . Ge tribe was in a slump now, while Man tribe was huge and powerful. Chang Shan Yin was only an outsider, he had no reason to help and bring trouble to himself.

Thus, Fang Yuan became the center of attention, his attitude decided how this situation would progress.

As everyone watched nervously, Fang Yuan laughed proudly: " A gentleman only takes wealth that he deserves. I do not feel that I deserve a gift of five hundred thousand primeval stones. But a hundred thousand primeval stones that I earn from battle is extremely valuable. Come, according to northern plains rules, I accept this battle."

Fang Yuan walked onto the stage.

"Uncle Chang Shan Yin!" Ge Guang felt extremely touched, tears were overflowing as he was lost for words, shouting behind Fang Yuan as he cheered.

The elders of Ge tribe were all extremely moved.

"As expected of Chang Shan Yin, a true righteous hero!"

"Unmoved by benefits and money, he is truly a man of justice."

"There are many people who offer icing on the cake, but few people help out in times of need. Chang Shan Yin will be an esteemed guest in our tribe forever!"

Man Duo’s expression was grim, extremely ugly. He knew that there was no need to say more, he shut his mouth and looked at Shi Wu.

Shi Wu felt Man Duo’s gaze and felt bitter in his heart.

He had just submitted to Man tribe not long ago, and became an external elder of Man tribe, he wanted to make contributions to the tribe badly. Although Man Duo’s cultivation was low, he was the tribe elder’s third son, upon hearing that old Ge tribe leader was sick, he came over with Man Duo to challenge them. But he did not expect to meet Chang Shan Yin!

Although the other party was only rank four initial stage, he was already rank three peak stage, the two stages might look close, but Wu Shi knew clearly that this difference in a large realm was incredibly large.

But in this situation, he had no other way out, if he avoided battle, he would be greatly despised and criticized. In northern plains which advocated courage and fighting spirit, he would no longer have a future.

Shi Wu gritted his teeth secretly as he entered the stage forcefully.

"Please." He bowed to Fang Yuan, barely forcing a smile.

Fang Yuan nodded lightly, standing on the spot as light azure wolf fur grew on his body rapidly.

The wolf fur covered his entire body, his ears, face, and even limbs.

"This is azure wolf skin Gu." Wu Shi’s heart sank, although azure wolf skin Gu was a very common and ordinary rank four Gu, its defense was not something that a rank three Gu could easily penetrate.

The Ge tribesmen behind Fang Yuan all concentrated and watched as their eyes shone, awaiting Fang Yuan’s grand display of his prowess.

Some even shouted loudly: "Kill this fellow, he killed our tribe’s third elder!"

Shi Wu heard this and his heart shrunk, he sighed bitterly, feeling the huge trouble ahead of him: "Oh no! After the earlier battles, I have less than thirty percent of my primeval essence left, I am not his match at my peak condition, not to mention now."

Looking at Shi Wu who had a distracted gaze and stiff movements, Fang Yuan snickered in his heart. This person had lost his fighting spirit, even if he had his complete strength, he could not display half of it. After several matches, his primeval essence was obviously lacking.

Such an opponent, in Fang Yuan’s eyes, was fish on a chopping board.

But Fang Yuan did not want to kill him.

For what?

He was Man tribe’s external elder, if he killed him, that would be a slap on Man tribe’s face. Although Fang Yuan was not afraid of trouble, he did not want to create unnecessary trouble for himself.

Even though Shi Wu killed a Ge tribe elder, that was their own business!

"Come!" Fang Yuan stepped, and activated wolf sprint Gu, bursting forward like an arrow, as afterimages appeared behind him.

Shi Wu’s heart was already in despair, seeing Fang Yuan’s fierce charge, he retreated in fear.

At the same time, he summoned three flying bone shields.

Piak piak piak!

Fang Yuan moved like a shadow, getting close for a physical fight, he struck three times and smashed all three bone shields.

Shi Wu tumbled and rolled away, summoning another three bone shields.

Piak piak piak!

As Fang Yuan attacked at lightning speed, the three bone shields broke again.

He had the strength of twenty jun now, although he could not display all of it, it was no problem breaking these shields.

"What other moves do you have, use them all." Fang Yuan did not attack again, he gave Shi Wu a chance to catch his breath.

Shi Wu was sweating profusely, he gritted his teeth and rubbed his hands, summoning two iron bone broad axes.

"Waaaaaaaah!" He shouted loudly, raising both axes as he attacked fiercely.

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan laughed lightly, not attacking but placing both arms behind his back, using the wolf travel Gu to move.

His movements were unpredictable, like petals floating in the air, his broad shoulder and thin waist gave a brilliant unrestrained feeling.

Shi Wu growled loudly, no matter how he moved both his axes, he could not even touch Fang Yuan’s clothes, he was completely at Fang Yuan’s mercy.

"Lie down." Fang Yuan sighed, stretching out one finger, it looked slow, but it rapidly touched the axe.

Shi Wu was already dizzy from Fang Yuan’s movements, after feeling this force, he lost his balance and fell face flat on the ground.

Ge tribesmen saw his pathetic state and cheered loudly, as the thunderous sound turned into one phrase: "Kill him, kill him!"

Shi Wu’s expression was ashen, his fighting spirit was gone. Fang Yuan had control of the entire situation, he was like a lion toying with a sheep. He felt that he was not Fang Yuan’s match, but the more he thought like this, the less battle strength he could muster, and the worse the battle situation became.

Man Duo’s heart also sank to rock-bottom.

"Damn it, this Shi Wu did not display his true ability, he was scared witless by the other party! But even so, that rank four Gu Master is too strong. He defeated elder Shi Wu without breaking a sweat. Sigh, If Shi Wu dies, I would lose a tribe elder, I would have to face the accusations and fury of my brothers when I return!"

But unexpectedly, Fang Yuan did not attack anymore.

"You are but a rank three, if I use rank four cultivation to kill you, others might think that I, the great Chang Shan Yin, am bullying the weak. Leave." Fang Yuan waved his hand.

"Uncle Chang Shan Yin! You cannot spare this scoundrel." Behind him, Ge Guang shouted.

But Fang Yuan ignored him.

Shi Wu reacted quickly, getting up and showed an expression of joy as he escaped death: "Thank you lord for sparing my life, thank you lord for sparing my life."

Fang Yuan frowned: "Scram."

"Yes, yes, yes." Shi Wu turned and left.

"Senior, I'll take my leave." Man Duo paid respects and rode his battle horse. Ge tribesmen mocked and scolded them as they left with great humiliation.

...

"Father, I have failed you, I am here to ask for punishment." Man Duo kneeled on the ground, lowering his head in shame and fear.

Man tribe leader had a muscular body, having rank four peak stage cultivation. He sat on the tiger skin chair grandly as he looked at Man Duo below his feet: "This time, old Ge tribe leader was bedridden, and you brought multiple rank three experts, how did you fail? You did badly for sure, but I heard news that Ge tribe brought out another rank four expert?"

"That is indeed so. Shi Wu was defeated by him. This person only displayed a bit of his actual strength, and he managed to toy around with our strongest elder Shi Wu, his true ability was unfathomable. However, I was in charge of this matter, it was my fault for not getting enough information, resulting in this failure. This child is very ashamed, I implore father to punish me!" Man Duo's eyes were red as he said in a sobbing manner.

Man tribe leader heard this and his tone relaxed: "Stand up, although you failed, you are still my son. Tell me about the incident."

Man Duo quickly spoke, describing the scenario that happened that day.

But when he had just started, Man tribe leader jumped up from his chair, staring fiercely at Man Duo: "He said he is Chang Shan Yin? Which Chang Shan Yin? Are you sure his name is Chang Shan Yin?"

"I would not dare to lie to father even with ten thousand guts." Man Duo quickly explained.

Man tribe leader was in a daze.

"Father, father." Man Duo called him softly: "Is this Chang Shan Yin an expert with a great background?"

Man tribe leader recovered from his daze, his expression was solemn: "I can't tell yet, he could be an imposter. But if it is true, then northern plains has another formidable character emerging... You can leave now, I will handle this matter."

Man Duo jumped from shock, his father was an extremely busy man, but now that he was handling this himself, that showed how important this Chang Shan Yin was.

"Chang Shan Yin, Chang Shan Yin, who in the world are you?"

...

A few days later, in Ge tribe.

"A few days ago, it was all thanks for brother Shan Yin’s help. This is five hundred thousand primeval stones, it is a token of our gratitude, please accept it." Old Ge tribe leader had a pale expression, he seemed to have aged ten years after losing his daughter.

Fang Yuan rejected it for a few times before accepting it: "These days, I have been staying in your tribe, it is only right that I helped out. But I really lack primeval stones now, I shall borrow these from you for now."

"Brother Shan Yin had great morals, you are truly a hero of northern plains." Old Ge tribe leader was speaking, when his subordinate brought in an invitation, as well as a present.

The old tribe leader’s expression was grim, he handed this invitation and present to Fang Yuan: "Brother Shan Yin, Man tribe leader knows you are here, he is inviting you to his tribe as a guest."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan took a look at the invitation, the words written were very polite, of course they were written using northern plains characters, they looked wild but profound, and at the end, there was Man tribe leader’s name — Man Tu.

This letter was written by Man Tu personally, it showed his sincerity.

The content of the letter was Man tribe leader’s admiration towards Chang Shan Yin, and stated that the matter earlier was but a misunderstanding among children, since Chang Shan Yin did not kill the external elder Shi Wu, Man tribe was extremely grateful.

Thus, he was holding a banquet at night, and was sincerely inviting Fang Yuan to come. At the same time, this present was an item to apologise on behalf of Shi Wu, for offending a hero.

Fang Yuan opened it and laughed: "This Man tribe spent a lot of effort."

In the box, there was a hundred bone bamboo Gu.

Evidently, after Man Duo returned, he investigated Fang Yuan clearly, and learnt that he was making purchases in the market.

"Oh brother Shan Yin, I have a favor to ask of you." Old tribe leader spoke.

Fang Yuan waved his hand: "I understand brother, don’t worry, I will urge them during the banquet, to reduce the conflicts between both your tribes."

"Ah, my greatest thank to you, brother Shan Yin!" The old tribe leader was very touched, he got up in a hurry and bowed deeply towards Fang Yuan.

There was still some time until the banquet, Fang Yuan sent them off before closing his door.

Fang Yuan sat on the bed, he willed and a light flew out of his aperture.

The weak light dispersed revealing the battle bone wheel.

This rank five Gu is huge, its height was almost at the ceiling, once it appeared, the large room instantly felt cramped.

There were many cracks on the battle wheel, and even some severe scars that threatened to destroy it. The deepest scar was extremely damaging, nearly splitting the wheel into two, only connected by a little bit of white bone. It was a shocking sight.

This rank five Gu worm’s luck was not good, after being beaten up by Chang Shan Yin, its original owner Ha Tu Gu died, causing it to become a wild Gu. It had to eat the skeletons on the battleground to barely survive, unable to fix its injuries.

After that, it was attacked by Fang Yuan and Ge Yao together, the Spring Autumn Cicada was a rank six Gu, it could not subdue rank five Gu easily. Fang Yuan could only beat it till its last breath to subdue it.

But precise so, the battle bone wheel was at the brink of destruction, when it appeared, several bone fragments fell off the wheel.

One could say, its situation could not be any worse.

Fang Yuan took out a bone bamboo Gu from the gift box, using Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura, he refined it instantly.

This Gu worms was shaped like a finger-bone bamboo, it was pale white and looked like a white candle.

Fang Yuan held the bone bamboo Gu in his hand, as his primeval essence moved according to his will, going out of the aperture towards the underside of his tongue.

The ghost fire Gu was residing at the underside of his tongue, having formed into a blue lump of fire.

Fang Yuan breathed in and blew out.

With a ’huuu’ sound, he breathed out a lump of eerie blue ghost fire.

The ghost fire landed on the bone bamboo Gu, slowly burning the top of the bamboo.

Fang Yuan held the bottom of the ghost bamboo Gu like he was holding a candle.

Ghost fire continued to burn, emitting a cold feeling that was chilling to the bone. As the top part of the bone bamboo Gu burnt with ghost fire, it slowly melted and turned into a trace of white bone smoke, floating up.

Fang Yuan placed the bone bamboo Gu closer to the battle bone wheel, and the white bone smoke moved towards the crack of the battle bone wheel like it was sucked over. The battle bone wheel shook slightly as it recovered slowly.

In a while, the eerie blue ghost fire got smaller, as Fang Yuan breathed out another lump of fire to sustain the candle.

After five minutes, this bone bamboo Gu was used up, as Fang Yuan took out the second bone bamboo Gu from the gift box and continued using the ghost fire to ignite it, causing white bone smoke to appear.

As he repeated the cycle, after more than thirty bone bamboo Gu, Fang Yuan finally repaired the deepest crack on that battle bone wheel completely.

The gift box which was filled with bone bamboo Gu had lost about a quarter of them, if Fang Yuan wanted to repair the entire battle bone wheel, just these bone bamboo Gu were not enough.

And the battle bone wheel was far from being usable in battle.

The deepest wound was fixed, but the other injuries were still plaguing the wheel.

It was like a patient, after Fang Yuan’s resuscitation, it was pulled back from the abyss of death. But this patient was still in grave danger, it needed to continue receiving treatment.

" You cannot get fat from eating one mouthful , battle bone wheel’s damage is too severe. But if that was not the case, I would not have been able to subdue it. Even if it is fully fixed now, my primeval essence cannot activate it. There is no rush here."

Fang Yuan got down from the bed, flexing his numb limbs as he opened the windows, it was already dark, the stars were shining in the sky.

"It is time." Thinking of the banquet at night, Fang Yuan stepped out of his room.

As he walked out the courtyard, Man Duo and Ge tribe’s father and son were already waiting for him.

"Man Duo greets Lord Chang Shan Yin!" Man Duo saw Fang Yuan and immediately greeted, showing absolute respect.

"Have you all waited for a long time?" Fang Yuan nodded, asking casually.

"Man Duo replied: "It has only been six hours, it is not a problem. It is my great honor to stand before lord’s doors. Senior Chang Shan Yin, father has already set up a grand banquet nearby, awaiting your arrival. Ge tribe’s father and son will accompany you to this banquet as well."

Fang Yuan looked at this Man Duo, feeling pity in his heart.

This lad was intelligent and capable, but fate toyed with him, giving him poor aptitude, he was just like Fang Yuan in his previous life.

"Alright then, come along." Fang Yuan rode his hump wolf as he left Ge tribe campgrounds with the rest of them.

Man Duo guided the group of about a dozen people as they rode their hump wolves to a faraway place.

The cool night breeze blew past the ears, as the grassland was running in the opposite direction.

Moonlight poured down like water, one could clearly see at a short distance, but from afar, the moonlight looked like a foggy veil. The grass on the ground was oozing with jade-green essence. The mountains looked like they were gradually flowing towards the sky.

Under such a night sky, wolves sprinted on the never-ending land, as the beautiful moon gave an unrestrained sense of freedom!

As everyone sprinted, they saw a group of hump wolves on a mound. There were a group of Gu Masters sitting on the wolves’ back. A Gu Master was waving a huge flag in his hands, that had the word ’Man’ on it.

After seeing Fang Yuan, the group of Gu Masters rode the hump wolves as they came over.

Man Duo saw this and laughed: "Lord Chang Shan Yin, my father is the one ahead, he is here to welcome you."

This was the custom of northern plains — if an esteemed guest was invited, the host would often travel ten li, to greet them.

The two groups of hump wolves met in the middle.

Man tribe leader got off his wolf, laughing as he walked over: "Hahaha, today’s moon is as bright as the sun, this is the radiance to welcome the return of northern plain’s hero. Lord Chang, I have heard so much about you."

Man tribe leader was nine feet tall, he was extremely muscular and strong. He wore a loose sleeveless fur robe, showing his two shoulders, his ancient-bronze colored arms were thicker than a normal male’s leg.

But just as he finished his sentence, it seemed like heaven played prank on him.

The night sky was covered by some dark clouds, as the moonlight vanished, causing the grassland to sink into darkness.

Man tribe leader’s loud laughter became softer, as he felt extremely awkward.

It was Man Duo who was quick-witted, immediately laughing as his eyes rolled: "Senior Chang Shan Yin is our northern plains’ great hero. Father, you are the most respected hero in our Man tribe. Tonight is a meeting of heroes! Look, the great aura of heroes caused heaven to tremble, causing winds and clouds to stir!"

His words caused the awkwardness to fade away, as Man tribe leader’s expression returned to normal as he walked to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan and the others also got off the wolves.

Man Tu first gave Fang Yuan a deep greeting, as Fang Yuan placed his right hand as his chest to return the greeting.

Next, Man Tu stared at Man Duo intentionally, using a scolding tone: "Nonsense! How can I compare to Lord Chang. Lord Chang was renowned in northern plains as the Wolf King, he dominated the world with his wolf enslavement skill. He even killed the rank five Gu master Ha Tu Gu, eliminating a bunch of bandits and got rid of a great evil, causing his name to go down his history."

"Hehehe, tribe leader Man Tu, why are you so humble?" Fang Yuan laughed lightly: "You are Man tribe leader, ruler of near a thousand Gu Masters. You are a true conqueror, leading Man tribe to many victories, and you even control Hong Yan valley, you are the overlord of this area. My cultivated had fallen to rank four initial stage, while you are at peak stage, you surpass me greatly. Although I have wolf enslavement skill, I can only control beasts, unlike you who control people, our difference is night and day. Tribe leader Man Tu is the true heroic conqueror!"

Man Tu was stunned.

The Wolf King was well-known for his aloofness and arrogance, he was hard to talk to, to think he was so talkative now, and showed such a humble attitude.

But he understood quickly after thinking about it.

This Chang Shan Yin was famous when he was young, with the nature of a young man, he was arrogant. Now that he was a middle-aged man, and had gotten into such trouble, his nature was had already been refined, it was normal for him to be more composed now.

Man Tu did not expect Fang Yuan to be so approachable, but to receive such praise from Wolf King Chang Shan Yin, he was secretly happy.

He thought even more highly of Fang Yuan in his heart now.

Although his cultivation was rank four initial stage, he had once killed the rank five Ha Tu Gu, Man Tu did not dare to underestimate him.

He laughed and said: "Lord Chang was already rank four peak stage twenty years ago. Even though your cultivation fell due to injuries, you can still recover quickly, or even surpass your former cultivation. By then, how would my cultivation be your match?"

At this time, the dark clouds dispersed and moonlight shone down again.

"Hehehe, the two of you are the current hero and conqueror of northern plains." Ge tribe leader spoke at an appropriate timing: "The most valuable thing is that the meeting of tiger and wolf did not lead to a fight, but instead you appreciate each other. We are lucky to witness this, this is truly seeing the moon after the clouds part ."

Such words made everyone laugh.

"Hahaha, brother Ge, your words described the scenery perfectly. Quick, the banquet has already been prepared, it is just nearby!" Man Tu looked at Fang Yuan and made an inviting pose.

He did not set the banquet at his camp, but rushed here to set up the banquet close to Ge tribe camp, it showed his hospitality and sincerity.

"Good, after you!" Fang Yuan laughed and agreed, but his heart tightened.

The dark clouds came and left quickly, it was a peculiar sight. Most likely, Gu Masters were on the move, it has not been a month since he buried fixed immortal travel Gu. The Immortal Gu aura has not faded yet, hopefully a Gu Immortal does not find it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the night sky, the moon shone brightly.

A large group of dark clouds moved quickly despite looking slow, it moved above Fang Yuan and gang’s head, five thousand li towards the south, towards the sky of an unnamed little hill.

Dark clouds covered the beautiful moonlight, casting a large shadow as darkness engulfed this hill.

The dark clouds stopped moving as a sword light flew out from it, it was the flying sword letter Gu.

The flying sword letter Gu shot into the mound, and entered a mysterious space, vanishing.

After a while, the little hill shook, as a bright red light flashed.

The red light was dazzling, like the setting of the sun, it gathered into a lump, like the creation of a red sun.

At once, the radius of a few hundred li was engulfed in bright red light.

From this mini sun, a jade bridge stretched out.

A rank six Gu Immortal, having a youthful appearance and a round and white face, stepped on the bridge and walked out.

He wore a snow fox fur robe, his face was glowing with red light as he looked up at the dark clouds, laughing: "Gui Wang, it has been a while."

Kek kek kek...

Accompanying the terrible sounding laughter, a person emerged from the dark clouds.

He gave off the strong aura of a rank six Gu Immortal, it was Gui Wang.

Gui Wang quickly descended, just as he was about to land on the ground, a large pair of greenish-black bat wings appeared behind his back.

The bat wings flapped as he remained in the air, looking at the rank six Gu Immortal on the bridge.

"Loner Hong Yu, these are the lava bats I promised you, a total of three million and five hundred thousand. Take a look." Gui Wang spoke, his voice was very coarse and unpleasant, it gave people goosebumps.

His appearance was also extremely ugly, messy hair, a high forehead, deep eye sockets, tightly shut eyes, and ears as large as half his brain.

Loner Hong Yu heard this and raised his head, looking at the dark clouds in the sky.

His brown eyes started heating up and turning red, turning into a color resembling heated metal.

His gaze literally became hot, as it pierced through the dark clouds and allowed him to see the countless bats flying inside.

These bats were all dark-red in color, giving off great heat. They screeched as they flew around each other.

Loner Hong Yu looked around as he nodded in satisfaction: "Three and a half million lava bats indeed, with them, my Hong Yu blessed land would not need to get rid of lava into the ground every month, I can benefit from this greatly. I will keep these lava bats."

" Kekekekek ..." Gui Wang laughed heartily, the dark clouds tore open as the bats flew out after losing their restraints.

These bats did not fly around randomly, they quickly descended like a black-red waterfall, entering the sun.

Each blessed land’s door was different.

This mini sun was Hong Yu blessed land’s entrance.

After these chaotic bats were brought into Hong Yu blessed land, Gui Wang said: "Loner Hong Yu, since you accepted these bats, it means you agreed to barge into Lang Ya blessed land with me."

"Of course, when have I, Loner Hong Yu, ever broken my promise? A month later, we will get to Lang Ya blessed land. But that land spirit is still around, with just the two of us, it might not be enough." Loner Hong Yu said in worry.

"You do not have to worry about this, I have asked the Hua Hai three immortals to help." Gui Wang said.

"Oh? The righteous path’s Hua Hai three immortals agreed?" Loner Hong Yu was shocked.

"Hmph, what is righteous, what is demonic? It is but personal interests. Lang Ya blessed land has countless recipes, the Hua Hai three immortals are obviously moved."

"Haha, you are right! I have to make arrangements for these bats, I will not send you off Gui Wang." Loner Hong Yu said.

Gui Wang snorted as his bat wings flapped, bringing his body into the dark clouds as quickly as lightning.

Dark clouds moved, flying towards the north, covering the moon in its path.

As it entered poison grassland’s sky, the cloud stopped, Gui Wang stopped and showed some confusion: "Eh? What’s going on! There is the aura of an Immortal Gu?"

He showed a look of disbelief as he landed, the place he was standing at was the location where Fang Yuan and Ge Yao first met.

"Although the Immortal Gu’s aura is already extremely weak, it is a real Immortal Gu! Strange, there is the aura of an Immortal Gu, but no Gu Immortal’s aura. Is this a wild Immortal Gu? No, that’s not right, this is man-made. That means, a mortal obtained an Immortal Gu?"

Gui Wang thought about this and felt great excitement.

Fifty years had already passed since he rose to Gu Immortal realm, yet he still had no Immortal Gu, forced to use rank five Gu worms only.

Immortal Gu were extremely rare, many Gu Immortal live their entire life without having a single one.

"Don’t tell me, after working hard for half my life, my luck is finally here?" An Immortal Gu’s allure was overwhelming, Gui Wang’s heart was palpitating.

He flapped his wings, following the Immortal Gu’s aura as he flew over.

He wanted to search for the Gu using the trail of aura.

After a moment, he stopped, the sea of ghost face sunflowers was before him.

"To think there are so many ghost face sunflowers here, kekekek , they are mine!" Gui Wang laughed coldly, although his eyes were closed, it did not obstruct his vision.

He willed and the dark cloud which accompanied him started rolling, as it descended like a huge beast, biting the large field of sunflowers.

Immediately, countless ghost face Gu flew up as numerous ghost cry Gu started to shriek.

"Nether ghost claw!" Gui Wang stretched out his hand and a huge green claw shadow appeared, scooping up these ghost cry Gu and ghost face Gu.

At once, many wild Gu were caught.

A moment later, the dark clouds flew into the sky again, the sea of sunflowers was gone, only a huge crater was left in the ground.

"Great harvest." Gui Wang’s mood was good, compared to the Immortal Gu, this was a small appetiser.

After leaving the newly created hole, Gui Wang frowned: "What’s going on? The Immortal Gu’s aura weakened? Don’t tell me, it’s sealed?"

He continued flying forward, trailing after fixed immortal travel Gu’s aura, he was extremely fast.

After fifteen minutes, his eyebrows raised: "The Immortal Gu’s aura moved from the ground to the air, how can this be?"

He looked around, and after a few breaths’ time, he understood.

"I see, this is the earth spike rats’ territory, this mortal Gu Master flew across it. Heh, his Gu worms are not bad, actually having a flying Gu."

Gui Wang snickered as he spread his wings and flew into the air.

He followed Fang Yuan’s previous path, meeting the shadow crows along the way.

"A bunch of small birds." Gui Wang snorted, his body shook slightly as a hundred pale wandering ghosts flew out.

Rank five, hundred ghost night travel Gu!

The wandering spirits flew around, knocking into the shadow crows and smashing their soul to bits. The shadow crows’ bodies were unharmed, but they fell down and were dismembered by the earth spike rats.

Gui Wang went on a slaughtering spree, as this area’s blood smell intensified, causing more shadow crows to come and scavenge for food. At the same time, the entire earth spike rat group was alerted, they pierced out of the ground attempting to attack Gui Wang.

Gui Wang chuckled, activating hundred ghost night travel Gu and several hundred ghost face Gu.

At once, numerous spirits and souls flew in the air, different ghost faces danced in the air, like a stone mill crushing everything in its path.

Hundreds to thousands of shadow crows fell onto the ground like dumpling entering a pot. The earth spike rats feasted upon their bodies, but the wandering spirits and ghost faces caused damage to them as well.

Earth spikes hit Gui Wang’s body one after another, but were repelled by the black light on his body. Other than that, many shadow crows assaulted him with their steel claws.

Gui Wang neither dodged nor avoided, he flew straight ahead.

If it was a rank five Gu Master, under such circumstances, facing numerous attacks every second, he would run out of primeval essence after a moment.

But Gu Immortals had immortal essence, one bead of green grape immortal essence could be diluted into a large amount of primeval essence, it could fill the entire blessed land for tens of years, even a hundred years without vanishing.

This meant that every Gu Immortal had endless primeval essence that they could use, able to use rank five Gu without stopping!

After thousands of shadow crows were sacrificed, the shadow crows retreated in fear.

Gui Wang did not chase them, after flying past the earth spike rats’ territory, he landed at the place Fang Yuan landed.

This was where Fang Yuan used dusty Gu on bright pearl Gu.

"The aura thinned again! How can a mortal seal an Immortal Gu? No, there is another possibility, that is this Immortal Gu is heavily injured on the verge of death! I have to hurry." Gui Wang felt a strong sense of pressure as he continued flying close to the ground.

Using another rank five Gu worm to accelerate, he raised his speed again.

Twenty minutes later, he arrived at the battlefield where Chang Shan Yin and Ha Tu Gu fought to their deaths.

Here, Fang Yuan took out Chang Shan Yin’s corpse and used dark toss Gu to suppress fixed immortal travel Gu’s aura again.

Sensing that the Immortal Gu’s aura was near indiscernible, Gui Wang’s patience reached its limits. He stopped for a moment, using his investigative Gu to scan the surrounding, continuing on his journey after having no discoveries.

"This Immortal Gu will be mine. Be it dead or alive, I must see it!" Gui Wang flew close to the ground, swearing in his heart.

...

The banquet had already been going on for a long time, there were young women dancing, delicious wine and food to consume, under this lively atmosphere, Fang Yuan had already formed a brotherly relationship with Man Tu.

"Brother Man Tu, I offer you a toast. I hope that you can do me a favor and mend your relationship with Ge tribe." Fang Yuan raised his wine cup and drank.

Man Tu showed a look of difficulty, after drinking the wine in his cup, he said: "I would not dare to refuse brother Chang’s wine, but Hong Yan valley is a small place, we Man tribe expanded quickly and now our numbers are huge. If we have to provide for another Man tribe, I’m afraid... Moreover, Ge tribe went back on their words, the promised wedding was delayed and even fell through. We are truly angry and disappointed!"

Man Tu sounded angry but he already had a scheme in his heart.

He wanted to absorb Ge tribe, but he could not find an excuse. At the same time old Ge tribe leader was a rank four Gu Master, with him still around, Man tribe could not take them down easily.

Thus, when Man Duo proposed the wedding, he agreed immediately.

Next, with news of Ge Yao’s death from Ge tribe, Man Tu did not believe. In his opinion, this was an excuse of Ge tribe after they realized Man Tu’s intention of devouring them!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Speaking about Ge tribe, the lively banquet atmosphere turned cold.

Old Ge tribe leader quickly stood up and gave an explanation.

Ge Guang stood at one side, looking at his father, he felt bitter and pained.

His sister was dead, his father was grieving, he wished none of this was real. But now, he had to explain to outsiders, proving to them that his daughter was truly dead.

This was such a painful torture.

While Man Tu listened to their explanations, he refused to accept it.

Chang Shan Yin was a righteous hero, and also the genius Gu Master that Chang tribe nurtured back in the day. After he killed Ha Tu Gu and the bandits, he was praised by the people, and with his great reputation, he was known by almost everyone in northern plains.

Thus, to give Chang Shan Yin face , Man Tu gave them his full attention.

But even if Chang Shan Yin’s reputation was five or six times higher than now, it could not match the benefits of him absorbing Ge tribe. Now that he had a proper excuse to do so, Man Tu would not let go of it so easily

Thus, he ’patiently’ listened to Ge tribe leader’s explanation before looking at his third son.

Man Duo laughed coldly in his heart, standing up.

He bowed deeply at Fang Yuan, before taking out a Gu worms in public: "Please take a look Senior Chang."

This Gu looked like a butterfly, its long body was like an incense stick, with its tail still burning with thick smoke. The smoke changed into rainbow-like colors at times, while being colorless and odorless at times.

"Is this, the chase smoke Gu from ancient times?" Fang Yuan’s gaze shone.

Man Duo was stunned, using a tone of admiration: "Senior is absolutely right, this junior is in awe of senior’s knowledge. I obtained this Gu by chance, as long as one is stained by this smoke, it would not dissipate for months, it is perfect for finding someone’s traces."

After pausing for a while, he continued: "To speak the truth, when junior first saw Ge Yao, I used this Gu on her. Now, as long as we activate this smoke Gu, the traces will appear and we can see it clearly."

Man Duo had a smug expression as he continued: "Ge tribe leader, if we use this Gu, and find Ge Yao hiding in your tribe’s campgrounds, what will we do?"

He wanted to devour Ge tribe, he obviously had plans. This chase smoke Gu was suggested by Man Duo, to think that it would actually be used like this.

Facing Man Duo’s threat, Ge tribe father and son relaxed in their heart.

This chase smoke Gu was good, once it was used, the truth of their words would be attested to without doubt.

But Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, this chase smoke Gu could stain people who got close to it. He had once been in close proximity with Ge Yao, and even hugged her. With this smoke, wouldn’t he be exposed?

What now?!

Fang Yuan did not expect this, his heart was sinking.

The Gu worm set on him was Chang Shan Yin’s enslavement path Gu worms, it was good at huge battles, but had little use for personal fights.

At this banquet, he was only rank four initial stage, but Man tribe and Ge tribe leader had higher cultivation. There were even several elders and guards with rank three cultivation.

Even if he brought the wolves over, two to three thousand ordinary wolves could not turn this situation around!

At once, Fang Yuan’s mind worked at lightning speed, all sorts of possibilities appeared as they sparked like flint.

Soon after, he laughed heartily: "This is great. With the chase smoke Gu to certify, the truth will be out. Junior, quickly use it."

He wanted to stall for time or reject the use of it, but that was impossible. Firstly, he as an outsider rejecting the use of chase smoke Gu was very strange, it was almost admitting his guilt. Secondly, be it Man tribe or Ge tribe, they both wanted to use chase smoke Gu to confirm some details, there was no way to change their minds now. Thirdly, chase smoke Gu was in the hands of someone else, even if Fang Yuan objected to it, could he stop Man tribe from using it?

Thus, Fang Yuan took the initiative to urge him, giving them an impression of being open and fearless.

Hearing Fang Yuan’s words, Man Tu was overjoyed: "Since brother Chang Shan Yin has said it, son, use it."

But Man Duo was not happy, he observed the people’s expressions, and realized that Man tribe father and son were looking forward to this.

"Is Ge Yao really dead?" Man Duo controlled his uneasiness and willed, activating this chase smoke Gu.

At once, the colorless and odorless smoke appeared in the air, turning black.

"Hmm?"

"Eh, what’s going on?"

"This is..."

As expected, there was a thick cloud of smoke on Fang Yuan, in this illuminated banquet, it was very eye-catching.

At once, everyone’s gaze was on him!

The lively atmosphere immediately turned solemn, no one said a word, there was a heavy mood in everyone.

Fang Yuan frowned, his expression was a combination of shock and surprise, it made people think he was innocent.

As if he thought that he was not eye-catching enough, Fang Yuan stood up from among the crowd, leaving his seat as he walked around. The black smoke trailed after him, forming a black smoke tail behind Fang Yuan.

Man Duo’s gaze flickered as Man Tu said happily: "That means brother Chang Shan Yin has met Ge Yao, and even had close interaction with her!"

Old Man tribe leader had a complicated expression as he looked at Fang Yuan with a uncertain gaze.

Ge Guang was still young, he was not composed enough as he stood up from his seat, staring at Fang Yuan in suspicion, asking: "Uncle Chang Shan Yin, what is going on? Did you meet my sister Ge Yao when you were in poison grassland?"

Fang Yuan’s expression was solemn, he did not explain himself, but walked back to his seat, saying seriously: "To speak the truth, you are suspicious, but so am I, why is there so much smoke following me?"

Man Duo said sinisterly: "Senior Chang is a great hero of northern plains, I would not dare to come up with a conjecture for your suspicions.

"Senior Chang Shan Yin!" Ge Guang could not hold it any longer, he stared at Fang Yuan with a flickering gaze.

Fang Yuan heard him and looked at Ge Guang in the eye with no guilt, then turning to old Ge tribe leader: "Brother Ge, you know my character. I swear in the name of the Wolf King, I did not meet your daughter in poison grassland!"

Ge tribe leader placed his right hand at his chest, making a great gesture with a solemn expression: "Brother Chang Shan Yin, we hit it off so well when we first met, I believe your words!"

Ge Guang by the side wanted to speak but he controlled himself.

Fang Yuan obviously understood that these words were not enough to dispel their suspicions. Immediately after, he frowned, showing a thinking expression, saying: "I slept for twenty years, after I woke up, I left poison grassland. Along the way, I subdued many poison beard wolves, during the cold nights, I rest on the fur of my wolves to gain warmth. Most likely, one of the wolves ate brother’s daughter, and thus, the smoke was passed to me when we made contact."

"Is that so?" Ge Guang gritted his teeth, his gaze flickering continuously.

Fang Yuan’s explanation made perfect sense, he was the first person who saw Fang Yuan leave poison grassland, when he saved him from the wind wolf group, he was manipulating the poison beard wolves.

"We can get to the truth easily, my wolf pack is still resting in Ge tribe’s ranch, can everyone follow me to the ranch, and we will be able to see the truth." Fang Yuan suggested.

This suggestion made everyone interested.

"Then we will go ahead with this?" Man Tu turned his gaze at Ge tribe father and son, he still did not believe Ge Yao was dead.

Old Ge tribe leader stood up: "Let’s go, we can be the witnesses."

Everyone rode their hump wolves towards Ge tribe’s ranch.

Fang Yuan’s wolf pack was resting inside, they were strong and fit.

Under the night sky, the poison beard wolves were more energetic.

Using the chase smoke Gu’s black smoke, the group successfully found out that a few of the poison beard wolves had much thicker smoke than Fang Yuan.

Oh longevity heaven, with the blessing of our ancestors, the murderer of my daughter was here all along!" Ge tribe leader saw this and cried in pain, he next bowed deeply at Fang Yuan, just as he was about to speak, Fang Yuan stopped him.

"Brother Ge, I know what you want to say. These poison beard wolves are yours to deal with." Fang Yuan said.

Old Ge tribe leader cried tears of gratitude: "Benefactor Chang Shan Yin, thank you! You not only saved my son, but you also brought the murderer of my daughter here. You are the closest friend of our Ge tribe for eternity!"

Ge Guang was silent.

It was true that Fang Yuan saved him, but this was not enough to certify that he was innocent. If Chang Shan Yin killed his sister and ordered the poison beard wolves to consume his sister’s corpse, that would also cause this result.

Man Tu was panicking at the side.

From start to end, he did not believe Ge Yao is dead.

If Ge tribe discovered the chase smoke Gu and cooperated with Ge Yao to fake this, it was very easy.

Thus, he spoke: "Ge tribe leader, you have truly misunderstood brother Chang Shan Yin. Brother Chang is a great hero of northern plains, he is such an admirable person, how could he commit such a sinful act? The way I see it, we should follow this chase smoke Gu into poison grassland and continue to collect evidence to clear brother Chang’s name!"

He wanted to use Fang Yuan as an excuse to find out the truth, whether Ge Yao was really dead or not.

If Ge Yao entered poison grassland, there would surely be a trail of smoke along the way.

But at this time, Ge Guang spoke: "No need for that, I have a way to prove uncle Chang Shan Yin’s innocence. Father, back then when you prepared a set of precious water path Gu worms for sister, you used the rank five hints and clues Gu on them. Sister knows this, thus if she is killed, she will follow your instructions to keep these Gu worms intact, leaving them for her murderer. This way, we can find her killer and exact revenge for her. As long as you take out that hints and clues Gu, that will be the best proof."

Saying so, Ge Guang looked deeply at Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Gui Wang moved quickly along the way, following the faint Immortal Gu aura to a stalk of snow spirea.

"The Immortal Gu’s aura stopped here, the trail ends here!" Gui Wang’s gaze was anxious as he searched all around the snow spirea.

"No? No Immortal Gu! The snow spirea’s snow wash Gu was already taken, obviously someone came here. But why is there no Immortal Gu? If the Immortal Gu continued moving, its aura would move too. But this aura ended here, is the Immortal Gu dead?" Gui Wang had a guess.

But he refused to believe this, he used his investigative Gu and searched the entire place thoroughly.

"No, there’s nothing here!" Gui Wang gritted his teeth, his heart was filled with indignance and regret.

"Wait!" Suddenly, his gaze turned ruthless as he thought of a possibility: "At the center of this poison grass land is Zi Du blessed land, the rank seven Gu Immortal Lady Poison Scorpion lives in it. Did she take the Immortal Gu? A mortal’s aperture cannot hold an Immortal Gu, but a Gu Immortal’s aperture can. After the Immortal Gu enters the aperture, the aura would stop leaking. In that case, this would be the most logical explanation!"

"That means Lady Poison Scorpion stayed home and had an Immortal Gu arrive at her doorsteps? Damn it, curses!" Gui Wang stomped his foot, he would rather believe that the Gu was taken by Lady Poison Scorpion than the fact that it could have died.

But he would never guess that the real Immortal Gu did not die, but instead Fang Yuan used iron cabinet Gu to seal its aura before backtracking and burying the Gu along the way.

Gui Wang followed the aura’s trail, moving forward, as Fang Yuan controlled the sealing, the Gu worm’s aura weakened as he followed it, this created a speculation.

Gui Wang wanted to chase after the Gu, he would never have guessed that along the way, the fixed immortal travel Gu was buried somewhere.

When he thought of Lady Poison Scorpion, jealousy and hatred forced his speculations to hit a dead end.

"Lady Poison Scorpion is a rank seven Gu Immortal, she is very strong. I can gather the Hua Hai three immortals and Loner Hong Yu to attack Lang Ya blessed land, that is because of the promised benefits. I do not have the bargaining chips to get them to attack Zi Du blessed land as well. This is so hateful! If I came ten days ago, the Immortal Gu might have been mine."

"Looking at the time, Zi Du blessed land is about to open its doors and expel the poisonous gas inside, I am not her match, I should leave now."

Gui Wang stomped his feet and flew into the air, entering the dark clouds.

The dark cloud moved around as Gui Wang looked around with indignance, only after a long while did he fly back to his home.

...

This was destined to be a busy night, at Ge tribe ranch, everyone’s attention was on Fang Yuan.

If Fang Yuan killed Ge Yao and took her Gu, the hints and clues Gu would cause him to be exposed.

Fang Yuan’s earlier lie would be exposed as well — if you did not meet Ge Yao, why do you have her Gu?

By then, no explanations would work!

"Son!" Ge tribe leader stared angrily at Ge Guang, extremely furious: "Benefactor Chang Shan Yin is so righteous and upright, how can you be suspicious of him?! Quickly kneel down and kowtow to our benefactor to ask for forgiveness!"

"Father." Ge Guang was shocked, he did not expect Ge tribe leader’s reaction.

Wasn’t he always trying to get revenge for sister? Father missed out one point so I pointed it out for him, what did I do wrong?

At one side, Man tribe father and son started watching this show as bystanders.

"Brother Ge, your son had said that, you do have a hints and clues Gu right?" Fang Yuan’s expression was calm, his gaze clear as water: "Then please take it out and activate it."

"This..." Old Ge tribe leader hesitated.

"Brother Ge, if you have a method to prove my innocence, why are you still hiding it? Hahaha, I am overjoyed by it." Fang Yuan smiled warmly.

Ge tribe leader observed his expression for a while, then looked at Man tribe’s father and son. The two were staying silent, quietly watching this, but their gazes had deep meaning in them.

"Nevermind, since benefactor Chang Shan Yin insists, I will go ahead with it." Ge tribe leader gritted his teeth and took out hints and clues Gu.

This Gu was shaped like a black spider, it was fist-sized and was plump. Eight hairy black legs with shiny tips, resembling water chestnuts.

Ge tribe leader injected primeval essence, and hints and clues Gu’s body gave out a faint white light. Within five hundred li, if there were Gu worms that were marked by the Gu Master, it would emit a red light and point in their direction. If the Gu Master was hiding the Gu worms inside their aperture, this range would be only within a thousand steps, but it stayed in Ge tribe leader’s hand without having any changes.

Seeing this, Ge Guang kneeled on the ground with a plop and kowtowed to Fang Yuan: "Uncle Chang Shan Yin, I was wrong! I wanted to get to the bottom of the matter and offended you. Please punish me!"

"Quickly get up, I have to thank you for proving my innocence, what wrong did you do?" Fang Yuan smiled faintly as he helped Ge Guang get up.

......

Rewinding back to the day when Fang Yuan killed Ge Yao.

Before death, the young girl cried: "Chang Shan Yin! I don’t know how I am blocking your path to success. But now, even if you kill me, I do not hate you. Maybe you are seeking revenge? I will leave all my Gu worms to you, I hope they can be of some use for your path to success."

" Cough cough... " The girl coughed out blood and begged Fang Yuan with a grieved smile, "I am going to die, but before I die, I have a small favor to ask. I hope you can hug me, I really want to feel your warm embrace..."

However, Fang Yuan did not move, his gaze coldly looking at the girl.

He looked at the girl and saw her expression becoming stiffer as vitality left her bit by bit.

Finally, the flower-like girl became an ice-cold corpse.

Fang Yuan fell into a long silence as he looked at Ge Yao’s face.

"She gave all her Gu to me? What is the meaning of this?"

"She loved Chang Shan Yin indeed, but how can she not hate me for killing her? Her love was only a young girl’s affection, breeding for only a few days. Her hatred was due to the loss of her life, the hatred of being killed. It is evident which is a stronger emotion."

"Heh! This girl is still too young, her acting is terrible, how can she hide that hatred in her eyes when she spoke to me? Although I lack Gu worms, and her Gu worms are all of high quality, she intentionally left them for me... to play it safe, I should not take them."

Next, Fang Yuan willed, and the poison beard wolves moved, devouring her corpse until nothing was left.

From start to end, he did not touch the Gu worms in Ge Yao’s aperture at all.

"Seeing this result, Ge tribe leader breathed out a sigh of relief, praising Fang Yuan continuously: "Brother Chang Shan Yin, I have learnt much today. You are indeed a great hero of the grassland, your conduct is like tonight’s moon, pure like water, with no impurities. No matter how dirty the floor is, it will not pollute the moon. No matter how thick the clouds are, they will not hinder your radiance. We Ge tribe owe you a great deal, my son was rash and suspected you. We only have this rank five hints and clues Gu, I will give it to you today as an apology, please accept it, otherwise, I will not be able to sleep properly."

Rank five Gu was hard to come by, but under everyone’s gaze, Ge tribe leader handed it over to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan rejected it for a few times, but Ge tribe leader was very insistent, he had "no choice" but to accept it.

Just like this, Fang Yuan obtained his second rank five Gu in northern plains.

Next, everyone continued the banquet until late into the night, as they parted happily under the moon.

Man Tu invited Fang Yuan earnestly to be a guest as his tribe. But Fang Yuan said that he was going to leave not long later, to join the heroes assembly. But before leaving, he would go visit Man tribe first.

Looking at Fang Yuan and Ge tribe’s father and son leave on their hump wolves, Man Tu’s smile vanished and his expression turned ugly.

"It seems this Ge Yao is dead without doubt." Man Tu’s tone was gloomy.

"Father, no need to fret." Man Duo at the side snickered: "This Ge tribe wants to make use of Hong Yan valley, he has to beg us, they have nowhere to run."

Listening to his son’s words, Man Tu’s expression relaxed, he patted Man Duo’s shoulders: "You are right, I was too obsessed with it. These years, Man tribe had been expanding, you have contributed greatly to it. But you are only C grade in aptitude, your talent is insufficient, when father retires, and your elder brother takes charge of Man tribe, you have to assist him well."

"Yes father, do not worry." Man Duo replied curtly and positively, but he was snorting in his heart.

He was also his father’s son, why can’t he compete for the leader’s role, why must he give it to his brother? Because of aptitude, he cannot become the tribe leader?

No!

"If elder brother ascended to the position of tribe leader, he will kill me. Sigh, what a pity, I wanted to marry Ge Yao to make Ge tribe part of my force, with this relationship tying us together. But heaven played a joke on me, Ge Yao actually died!"

...

"Unfilial son, kneel down!" Once they got into the secret room, with only the two of them left, Ge tribe leader’s expression sank as he screamed at Ge Guang.

"Father!" Ge Guang was shocked, he did not understand why his father was so furious, but he subconsciously kneeled down first.

"Father, I am your son, you can scold or beat me, as long as your anger fades. But I have a request, I hope that father can tell me why you are so furious after you calm down. I will change and no longer make you angry." Ge Guang said.

Ge tribe leader laughed coldly, standing before Ge Guang and pointing at his nose: "I know you feel very indignant, let father tell you the reason, to let you know the immense danger we were in tonight! Did you really think Man Duo proposed to your sister because of her good looks?"

Ge Guang was stunned: "Was that not the case? Ge Yao was the beauty of our tribe, so many youngsters were chasing after her."

"Bullshit!" Ge tribe leader howled: "Beauty is just the icing on top of authority. Man Duo has Man Tu behind him, his objective is to devour our Ge tribe, that is why Man Tu supported Man Duo greatly to marry your sister."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Huh, Man tribe wants to devour our Ge tribe?" Ge Guang screamed.

Old Ge tribe leader sighed: "Sigh, your sister is already dead, they were not willing to listen to my explanation, why do you think that is the case? Because this excuse is perfect for them to send their troops! But father found Chang Shan Yin to assist us, he was the hero of northern plains, he had great reputation, and had Chang tribe behind him. Man Tu did not dare to accuse us blindly, thus he did not attack us tonight."

Ge Guang exclaimed: "There is such a twist behind it? But father, I do not understand, since you understood Man tribe’s intentions already, why did you agree to this wedding, and betrothed sister to that monkey Man Duo?"

Ge tribe leader raised his finger, knocking on Ge Guang’s head: "Do you not have a brain? Why did I agree to the wedding? Did you think I want to torture my own daughter?! It is because the great blizzard is coming, if we can become relatives through marriage, we can stay inside Hong Yan valley, and protect all our tribesmen! Sacrificing your sister’s happiness to protect Ge tribe. This wedding is a transaction, sigh, but your sister ran away from her wedding, and died in poison grassland!"

Ge Guang frowned, blinking: "Father, I understand now."

"No, you know nothing." Ge tribe leader understood his son well, he explained in a disappointed tone: "Tonight, Man tribe leader invited Chang Shan Yin, and we followed him. But the truth is, their target was us, and I dragged Chang Shan Yin along as our shield."

"That Man Duo used the chase smoke Gu, he is truly evil! When all of you suspected Chang Shan Yin, I said to him that I trusted him completely. Did you think I was not suspicious? I am not so muddleheaded yet!"

Ge tribe leader stomped his foot, his tone was grim: "But father did not dare to suspect him. The reason we could contend with Man tribe is because of Chang Shan Yin. If we suspected him, their instigation would have succeeded, and ruined our relationship with Chang Shan Yin. If Chang Shan Yin did not side with us, we might not return alive from tonight’s banquet."

Shock was written all over Ge Guang’s face: "Ah, are they so daring, would they try to kill the both of us?"

"Hmph, why did you think that you met so many wind wolves during the search? In northern plains, there are lots of instances where beast groups were used to commit murder. But tonight, Man tribe might not kill us, but they would imprison us. By then, they would use Ge Yao’s matter as an excuse to devour our Ge tribe, without us, Ge tribe would be without a leader, the result would be disastrous."

Hearing his father’s explanation, Ge Guang finally understood the danger they were in, showing after-fear on his face.

"For the sake of the tribe, for the big picture, even if Chang Shan Yin was the killer, we cannot suspect him! Did you really think I forgot the hints and clues Gu? How can that be! But you had to mention it, if the killer was really Chang Shan Yin, what would we do?" Old Ge tribe leader spoke meaningfully.

Ge Guang fell into deep silence, after a long while, he said: "So that is why father gave the precious hints and clues Gu to Chang Shan Yin. It is to mend our relationship with him, so that he would side with us?"

Old Ge tribe leader nodded: "You are finally learning. Son, although you have outstanding aptitude, and high cultivation, you are still far from being the new Ge tribe leader."

"Father, it is great to have you around. I will have to learn more from you, Ge tribe can lose anybody but you father." Ge Guang said in admiration.

Ge tribe leader shook his head: "Time waits for no man, I am already old, Ge tribe is counting on you. Sigh... after this matter, I have understood Man Tu. He is a greedy jackal, no matter how much his wealth is, he would never be satisfied."

"Now that your sister is gone, we have no excuses left to use Hong Yan valley. But we cannot disband and join Man tribe right? Ge tribe cannot go extinct like this, otherwise I will be the greatest sinner of our tribe! After this night, I have already learnt that we cannot stay here any longer, otherwise we will definitely be devoured by Man tribe. A few days later, we will depart for the heroes assembly."

"Father, if we leave like this, will they let us go so easily?" Ge Guang was worried as he asked.

"Of course they are not willing to let us go, but we are travelling with Chang Shan Yin. Man Tu is wary of Chang Shan Yin, he would not strike." Ge tribe leader snickered.

"But, we are making use of senior Chang Shan Yin like this, isn’t that..." Ge Guang was apprehensive.

"You fool! Why would we not make use of him? What’s wrong with that? A good hunter makes full use of his surroundings. When we have insufficient strength, we use knowledge to supplement it. This is all for the survival of the clan!"

After Ge tribe leader scolded, he stopped and showed a complex expression: "But this Chang Shan Yin is truly a legendary heroic character... he might’ve already understood the situation, yet he still chose to side with us. Such a righteous and upright person, choosing to assist the weak, he is truly the role model of the righteous path, the light of the people. Son, rejoice, we Ge tribe actually met such a person!"

...

Time passed quickly, a few days went by.

Inside the room, Fang Yuan held his bone bamboo Gu as the ghost fire burnt it completely, breathing out heavily: "This is the final bone bamboo Gu."

These days, he worked hard and used up all hundred of the bone bamboo Gu in the gift box.

After his treatment, eight of battle bone wheel’s most severe wounds were healed. Now, although the wheel was still covered in injuries and cracks, it had left the emergency stage.

Sending the battle bone wheel back to the aperture, Fang Yuan started to inspect his aperture.

He had rank four peak stage cultivation.

Thus, his aperture walls were in the form of transparent crystals. His primeval sea was at ninety percent full, all of it was true gold primeval essence.

But Fang Yuan had just arrived in northern plains, before he adapted to the environment, his true gold primeval essence was only at the initial stage light gold primeval essence.

Thus, Fang Yuan’s cultivation was not progressing. Using light gold primeval essence, I cannot breakthrough the aperture walls and become a rank five Gu

Master.

"To accelerate my adaptation, there are ways to do so, most commonly, it is to use the third watch Gu, to accelerate my own time. But that way, the Gu Master’s lifespan will also be shortened proportionally.

Such a measure that pursued quick success was not acceptable to Fang Yuan.

It was not because he treasured his lifespan, but because of Spring Autumn Cicada.

If Fang Yuan used third watch Gu on himself, the river of time on him will flow three times faster. That way, the Spring Autumn Cicada’s recovery will also be three times as fast.

Other than his vital Gu and fixed immortal travel Gu in poison grassland, Fang Yuan still had multiple Gu worms.

Among them were two rank five Gu from northern plains.

One was battle bone wheel, it was recovering and could not be used in the meantime.

The other was hints and clues Gu, it could be used to scout or track people.

"Ge tribe still had some foundations, they actually had a rank five hints and clues Gu. This Gu can be used to track Gu worms, it is used to capture wild Gu worms to prevent them from escaping. Unfortunately, even though Ge tribe leader had this Gu worm, he did not dare to search for his own daughter."

Towards the conflict between Ge tribe and Man tribe, Fang Yuan was clear as day.

Man Tu’s third son Man Duo had great ambition, he wanted the tribe leader position, but because of his low cultivation, he wanted to have Ge tribe. After marrying Ge Yao, and making Ge tribe related to him through his wife, they would be able to fight for the tribe leader position.

Man Tu was not necessarily ignorant of his son’s intentions, but he was very interested in devouring Ge tribe.

Meanwhile, Ge tribe wanted to use the marriage to sacrifice Ge Yao in exchange for Hong Yan valley, to survive the once in ten years great blizzard, and get through this difficulty.

Ge tribe naturally did not want to dissolve, but Man tribe wanted to gain the benefits of absorbing them without facing any consequences.

After Ge Yao escaped, Man tribe used this excuse to turn on them, in fact, they might have even caused Ge Guang’s incident.

As long as they killed Ge tribe’s father and son, Ge tribe would be leaderless, and they would fall into chaos, easily taken over by Man tribe.

Ge Guang was ignorant and naive, but old Ge tribe leader was experienced and wise, he knew the circumstances they were in, and found out that he was unable to satisfy Man Tu’s greed, but at this point, they had no way out, thus he controlled himself and stayed inside the tribe, not giving Man tribe a chance to strike.

Chang Shan Yin’s arrival gave Ge tribe hopes of getting out of this problem.

When old Ge tribe leader found out Fang Yuan’s identity as Chang Shan Yin, he thought of using him. Thus, he attended to Fang Yuan warmly and even gave a million primeval stones as a gift.

Next, he did well, using Chang Shan Yin’s power to contest with Man tribe.

At that moonlight banquet, it might have looked like a cosy gathering, but the three sides were competing, danger was lurking at every corner, and everyone was hiding their lethal weapons.

The result was —

Man tribe suffered a setback, not only did they fail to deal with Ge tribe, they even lost the excuse that they had, Ge Yao. But they did not lose, they were still the strongest among the three.

Ge tribe used Chang Shan Yin, making use of his reputation to protect their tribe, surviving this crisis. Even though they succeeded, they were still at the weaker position.

As for Fang Yuan, he pretended to be ignorant, using the two sides and their conflict to achieve his goal of spreading his name, while benefiting from their competition and strengthening himself.

Man is the spirit of all beings, when humans competed, it was not simply through fights and killing. Even in this primitive and open northern plains, knowledge and schemes was still used to compete..

As for Ge Yao...

This innocent young girl was only a sacrifice for the two tribe’s political struggle.

In fact, according to Fang Yuan’s personal guess, Ge Yao’s escape was unnatural, she was able to get out of the tightly secured Ge tribe camp, mostly likely the old Ge tribe leader had arranged for it in an attempted to probe Man tribe. But accidents always happened in reality, plans cannot keep up with changes, Man tribe’s eldest son or second son might’ve struck, afraid of Man Duo gaining power, hoping that Ge Yao would die. Anyway, after Ge Yao escaped to poison grassland and met Fang Yuan, the series of events unfolded.

Shaking his head, Fang Yuan cleared these guesses out of his mind: "The basis of any scheme is power. Why did Man tribe not attack Ge tribe directly, that is because they were not a super tribe but a large tribe only, they had limited strength. Why was Ge tribe able to stay safe until now, not just because of me, but also because of their foundation as a former large tribe. If old Ge tribe leader had rank five cultivation, he might’ve used hints and clues Gu long ago."

"No matter which world, strength is the foundation for everything. But now, the astute Ge tribe leader might be planning to migrate his tribe again. To deal with the ten year blizzard, he might need to borrow the imperial court’s power!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

What happened next was all according to Fang Yuan’s expectations.

Just a day later, Ge tribe leader visited Fang Yuan, saying he had thought it through, he did not want to stay in Hong Yan valley, but instead wanted to migrate the entire tribe, to participate in the heroes assembly and fighting for a place in the imperial court.

Fang Yuan knew old Ge tribe leader’s intentions, it was to make use of Chang Shan Yin once more to get free of Man tribe’s control.

Fang Yuan agreed immediately, if he was to travel on the grassland alone, it would be troublesome. With the accompaniment of Ge tribe, the risks would be much lower, and he would have a layer of protection.

"Brother Ge is wise, but we cannot wait anymore, we should leave as soon as possible. Once we make a move, I’m sure Man tribe would notice immediately." Fang Yuan reminded.

Old Ge tribe leader’s heart shook, just hearing this sentence, he knew Chang Shan Yin was aware of what was happening.

Fang Yuan continued: "I had originally promised Man tribe to visit them. But since Ge tribe is relocating, to play safe, I will not go to them. Just say that I had felt my cultivation returning during these few days and have gone into closed cultivation. I will write a letter now, I will have to trouble brother to find someone to send it over for me."

If Ge tribe did not relocate, then Fang Yuan would have no issues visiting Man tribe.

But if Ge tribe wanted to leave, Man tribe would not let go of them. Man tribe is worried about Ge tribe and Chang Shan Yin cooperating, they might even hold him captive, to deal with Ge tribe separately.

Earlier, when Ge Guang was attacked by the wind wolves, it was most likely done by Man tribe. Man tribe was after all part of the righteous faction, to prevent rumors from spreading, they would not kill Chang Shan Yin, but Ge tribe was too alluring, they could use all sorts of reasons to place Chang Shan Yin under house arrest, that was something they could do.

After old Ge tribe leader heard Fang Yuan’s words, he looked at him deeply and stood up, bowing: "Standing before brother, my wisdom is nothing. I was muddleheaded earlier, brother has a clear picture of the current situation."

"Hehehe, as someone involved in this contest, it is easy for you to be misled, that is normal, do not worry about it. As long as we leave this area, Ge tribe would be free!" Fang Yuan consoled old Ge tribe leader as he wrote a letter and handed it to Ge tribe leader.

"Brother Ge, I have to cultivate, I will not send you off."

"Today, I will start the preparations for moving off, the letter will definitely be sent, goodbye."

Old Ge tribe leader took the letter and left the room.

After he returned to his tent, he called the elders for a meeting and gave the instructions to prepare for migration.

After Ge Yao’s supposed marriage, Ge tribe elders have a terrible impression of Man tribe, they praised this ingenious decision.

After Ge tribe father and son returned to their study room, old Ge tribe leader opened Fang Yuan’s letter immediately.

"Father, isn’t this a bit..." Ge Guang felt embarrassed.

"Heh, let father teach you another lesson today. This is the letter Chang Shan Yin wrote to Man Tu, but he did not use a letter Gu, why do you think that is so?" Old Ge tribe leader snickered.

"Because he doesn't have a letter Gu? No, if he wants to use it, he can borrow it from us." Ge Guang thought about it, as his eyes flashed: "That mean, this is intentional?"

"Hehehe, that's right. The reason why he is sending a normal letter is so that we can see it. Ge tribe is about to migrate, next we will travel together, this letter is to display his intention to cooperate with us along the journey. Come here, we will look at this together." Saying so, Old Ge tribe leader unsealed the letter.

The content in the letter was very simple, it explained that Fang Yuan needed time to recover his cultivation through closed cultivation. He expressed great regret for not being able to visit Man tribe, and he would definitely make up for it in the future.

Next, he wanted to purchase bone bamboo Gu from Man tribe, saying that he will pay 120% of the market price for them. At the same time, he wrote a large number of Gu refinement materials, as well as Gu worms like third watch Gu, hoping they could have a transaction.

"Oh, so uncle Chang Shan Yin needed these Gu worms. Father, I think we should try and give them to him, after all, he has helped us so much." Ge Guang said.

Old Ge tribe leader stared at this letter, his eyes shining brilliantly as a chill emerged in his heart.

This battle between Ge tribe and Man tribe was mostly through hidden schemes, they did not fall out with each other on the surface, this was the rule of the righteous path that had to be adhered to.

They sacrificed many people, one of Ge tribe's elder died after being challenged by Man Duo, and Ge Yao also died in poison grassland. Other than that, many Gu Masters became the wolves' food.

In this contest, be it Man tribe or Ge tribe, neither of them were winners. Man tribe did not achieve their aims, and Ge tribe also had many sacrifices.

However, there was one person who benefited completely.

This person was 'Chang Shan Yin'.

Look at it this way, when 'Chang Shan Yin' left poison grassland, he was empty handed, without a proper set of Gu worms, but now?

In this hidden battle, he earned till his pockets were full, having over a million primeval stones as gains, not to mention the rank five hints and clues Gu.

Ge tribe leader suddenly understood: Ge tribe was making use of Chang Shan Yin, but was Chang Shan Yin not making use of them as well? Chang Shan Yin might seem like he was trapped between two tribes, forced into their political strife, and attracted problems for himself unnecessarily. But the truth was, neither of them wanted to offend him, thus he gained benefits from both sides!

"We do not need to prepare these for Chang Shan Yin. Man tribe will send these things over, in fact, they might even give these to him for free." Ge tribe leader heaved a sigh as he tried to expel that cold feeling in his heart.

"Huh?" Ge Guang was shocked: "How is that possible? Uncle Chang Shan Yin is evidently helping us, is Man tribe so stupid?"

"Someone in a high position sees things differently. What is the value of these things? Merely a few hundred primeval stones, it is nothing to Man tribe. Using these goods to gain the friendship of an expert, isn’t that a good deal? Have you thought about how much we gave Chang Shan Yin already?"

Ge Guang immediately thought of the million primeval stones and the rank five hints and clues Gu.

Ge tribe leader sighed deeply, there was another meaning to this, but it was still too early for Ge Guang to comprehend.

Why did Chang Shan Yin want to deal with Man tribe?

He was not making a deal, he was establishing a relationship with them! Using this, Chang Shan Yin expressed to Man tribe that although he went back on his word and did not visit Man tribe, he was not their enemy despite being at Ge tribe. He did not want to be enemies with Man tribe, in fact he wanted to be friends, thus, they could undergo transactions.

Man Tu was not a fool, he would understand what Chang Shan Yin was trying to express in his letter, his goodwill. If Man tribe rejected this deal, that would be rejecting Fang Yuan’s kindness. If they sold the goods according to their price, this would show an indifferent attitude. If they gifted the goods to Fang Yuan, that would mean Man tribe was accepting this kindness, and was willing to be friends with Chang Shan Yin.

This deal was not important, the underlying meaning was.

Such a hidden and implicit communication method was something the righteous path higher-ups often did.

Ge tribe leader suddenly had a flash of inspiration, thinking: "This Chang Shan Yin, the reason why he is helping Ge tribe might not be due to his righteous nature. But because he can have the greatest benefits by siding with us."

Man tribe was huge and powerful, having a Chang Shan Yin was only adding icing on the cake. But Ge tribe was weak, with Chang Shan Yin, it was simply a great asset as he had the ability to stabilize the power balance between the two.

With this thought, old Ge tribe leader shuddered, the coldness in his heart became thicker, almost freezing his bones.

The old tribe leader subconsciously rejected this thought: "If Chang Shan Yin is such a scheming person despite being a hero of this magnitude, would there still be righteousness and light in this world? I am simply measuring the stature of great men by the yardstick of small men."

Three days later.

Man tribe’s father and son stood on the mound, watching Ge tribe leave towards the south.

"Lord father... there is something I don’t understand, I would like to ask father." Man Duo asked.

"Speak."

"You gave the things mentioned in the letter to Chang Shan Yin for free, I understand the meaning of that. But why did you also give Ge tribe a thousand

and five hundred tonnes of provisions. Not only is our prey escaping, we even have to supply them, this..." Man Duo felt indignant.

Man Tu’s expression was solemn, looking at the leaving Ge tribe, he said: "Man Hao, explain."

Elder Man Hao who was standing at the side laughed as he explained: "No need to worry third young master, lord tribe leader had planned this long ago. Ge tribe is dreaming if they want to leave so easily, there are a large number of wolf lure Gu inside the provisions, at the same time, we have tribesmen ahead, with three myriad wolf groups waiting in ambush for them."

"So that’s it!" Man Duo understood at once: "Father is wise, once Ge tribe is unable to resist the wolf pack, our tribe will move out and save them, assimilating them using this chance. In future, if anyone suspects us, father can use this thousand and a half tonnes of provisions to show his sincerity and magnanimity, it will shut those suspicious people up. But..."

Towards the end, Man Duo was hesitant.

Man Hao sighed, saying: "But this way, Ge tribe would suffer great losses, and the gains of our tribe from taking over Ge tribe would be far less. In fact, we might even have to invest an amount of resources to take care of the injured."

But Man Duo shook his head, Man Hao’s concerns were not the same as him: "Ge tribe has that Chang Shan Yin, he is hailed as the Wolf King, can these wolves stop him?"

Man Tu started frowning.

Man Duo expressed his own worry, he had such thoughts as well.

But Ge tribe left too quickly, Man tribe was part of the righteous path, they could not act recklessly, in this short period, they could only gather three myriad wolf groups.

If Ge tribes survives this assault, Man tribe can only watch them leave. But if they suffer great losses during the process, Man tribe would have the excuse to send ’reinforcements’.

The greatest uncertainty in this plan was Chang Shan Yin.

"Don’t worry third young master, although this Chang Shan Yin is known as the Wolf King, that is over twenty years ago. His current cultivation is only rank four initial stage, and during the banquet, we checked secretly, his soul is no longer thousand man soul but has dropped to hundred man soul." Man Hao spoke with disdain.

"Hehe, even if he is the Wolf King, he is only a weak and barely surviving Old Wolf King. Moreover, what trump cards does he have? Only a thousand wind wolves and a thousand poison beard wolves, and a thousand water wolves. Hahaha, against three ten thousand wolf groups, what can his wolves do? The way I see it, his reputation will be ruined soon enough. We can prepare to devour Ge tribe already."

Man Duo did not rebuke him, but said: "Hopefully so."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Urgent report! A large group of turtleback wolves has appeared three thousand li ahead. They have a huge number, estimated to be a group of ten thousand wolves!" Ge tribe’s investigative Gu Master came running over and reported to Ge tribe leader.

Ge tribe leader’s expression turned solemn and waved his hand to the Gu Master: "Investigate it again."

Not long earlier, he had already received a letter Gu from investigative Gu Masters. But often in the battlefield, to prevent the letter Gu from being cut off by the enemies, investigative Gu Masters would come over to personally deliver the message.

"Turtleback wolf is the wolf species with the strongest defense. Ten thousand of these wolves will be a difficult bone to chew."

"We have already ordered Gu Masters to lure them, but there has been no results. This wolf group is heading towards us."

"Hmph, how long has it been since we started migrating? It seems Man tribe doesn’t want to let us go...."

"Fortunately, these wolves are not fast which leaves us time to arrange our formation."

Ge tribe’s elders made comments one after another.

In the chaotic northern plains, none of the Gu Masters that could climb to a high position was a fool. Right now, all the elders had already realized the truth.

Most of Ge tribe’s troops had already halted their movements and formed into a circular formation. Large number of Gu Masters were nervously using Gu worms to erect high walls, archer towers and many layers of defense.

The higher-ups of the Ge tribe were overseeing the situation from the central tent.

"Son." Ge tribe leader softly called.

"Father, I am here." Ge Guang immediately answered.

"Invite Lord Chang Shan Yin to come over." At this battle which concerned the survival of the tribe, Ge tribe leader was not willing to let go of any battle strength.

"Yes." Ge Guang bowed and left; he had just walked of the main tent when he saw Fang Yuan.

"Uncle." Ge Guang greeted cheerfully.

Fang Yuan nodded his head, directly walking towards him and said in a slightly urgent tone: "I know about the wolf group’s invasion. How is the situation?"

"We have about eight minutes before the wolf group reaches. Since our relocation, to prevent Man tribe from playing tricks, father had assigned light cavalries to scout a distance of six hundred li !" Ge Guang followed Fang Yuan and reported to him from the side.

The two walked inside the main tent which was situation on a mound.

The mound had already been raised by using Gu worms; the higher-ups of Ge tribe had excellent field of view from the mound.

This was because they encountered the wolf group. If they had ran into the eagle or owl group, they would have dug a tunnel. Different methods dealt with different situations.

Seeing Fang Yuan, the Ge tribe higher-ups hurriedly greeted him. The atmosphere here was tense like a storm was brewing.

"Our Ge tribe is really fortunate to have brother Wolf King to help us, I can be at ease." Ge tribe leader sighed and spoke with gratitude.

"Hehehe, the fate between me and the Ge tribe is not shallow. Friends should help each other when they walk the same path! How is the situation?" Fang Yuan asked.

"Please take a look." Ge tribe leader led Fang Yuan towards a table where there was a sheepskin which had a map drawn on it. He pointed towards it and introduced the surrounding terrain, Ge tribe’s defensive lines and wolf group’s movement.

"Sir has arranged it properly, there is nothing wrong." Fang Yuan first praised, then pointed towards a mark on the map.

Everyone’s gaze followed his finger; it was a river beside their camp.

"Since there is such a danger area, why don’t you use it for defense?" Fang Yuan proposed.

"Brother might not know yet, we have already thought of it, but most of the troops have slow movement and it will be too late by the time we reach the river, set up a camp again and arrange new defensive lines." Ge tribe leader gave a bitter smile.

For the tribe’s migration, most of the tribesmen were using big stomach horses. However, due to many things being stored in the big stomach horses, their speed was slow.

Ge tribe’s Gu Masters could quickly reach the riverside on the hump wolves. But most of the mortals would fall behind and once the wolf group arrived, all the mortals might be annihilated.

Without mortals, how could there be any future new Gu Masters in any tribes? Mortals were the cornerstone of all tribes.

However, Fang Yuan gave a bright smile: "Brother, I am also a northern plainsmen, I naturally know this. We are not able to go to the riverside, but we can let the river come to us."

The Ge tribe’s higher-ups’ eyes brightened at these words.

"Right, we can dig a canal and draw in the river to help us defend."

"Turtleback wolves have heavy bodies and are unable to swim; once they fall into the river, they will sink to the bottom and drown to death."

"Lord tribe leader, send the command quickly!"

Ge tribe leader also directly sent the command: "I command Ge Cui, Ge Xiang, and Ge Mi to lead the first, seventh and eighteenth troop respectively, immediately stop all current tasks and go to the riverside to dig a canal. As for the third, fifth and the sixteenth troop, you shall take over the unfinished tasks of first, seventh and eighteenth troop."

"Yes!" The investigative Gu Master outside the tent immediately received the order.

Several breaths later, three letter Gu flew out separately towards distant locations.

"Fortunately, brother was here to guide us out of this bewilderment." The old tribe leader greeted Fang Yuan again with a grateful expression that came from the depths of his heart.

Just relying on this suggestion from Fang Yuan, they could preserve around a hundred Gu Masters and even could reduce the casualties.

He is the Wolf King after all...

Instantly, all the Ge tribe’s elders’ gaze towards Fang Yuan faintly changed into that of praise and admiration.

During this tense and busy period, time passed quickly.

Investigative Gu Masters came to the camp one after another to report the position of the wolf group. At the same time, they had also clearly scouted the numbers of the turtleback wolves.

Over thirty-eight thousand!

When the wolf group was only eight hundred li away from the camp, Ge tribe leader began to call back the investigative Gu Masters orderly.

By the time the wolf group reached five hundred li away from the camp, the canal was formed and the river water was drawn in.

When they reached three hundred li , three defensive lines finished forming and combat troops were deployed urgently. The support and logistics Gu Masters in charge of the construction retreated one after another, using primeval stones to quickly recover their primeval essence. They did not dare to relax for even a moment. When the battlefront was unable to endure, they would have to go as reinforcements.

At a hundred li away, everyone could see a large number of ghostly shadows of the wolves in the horizon.

In the main tent, eight investigative Gu were activated; smoke rose and could be seen from all directions.

Turtleback wolf group was mainly coming from the northern side. At the same time, there were also a lot of wolves coming from the northeast and southeast.

As the wolf group neared closer and closer, all the mortals could see them clearly.

Turtleback wolves possessed broad physique, their whole body was dark-green and had dark-blue eyes. On their back was a shell like that of a turtle.

This shell was very heavy and about one-third of a turtleback wolf’s weight was due to it. Apart from defensive purpose, it could also store nutrition just like camels.

The charging of a few tens of thousands of wolves caused the ground to start shaking.

Fang Yuan walked out of the main tent and gazed at the grassland only to see large numbers of wolves moving on the ground. He then looked at the camp below; the Ge tribesmen were moving about busily without disorder, it was a normal thing to encounter beast attacks in northern plains. Thus, whether it were Gu Masters or mortals, they had cultivated a strong mind.

The first defensive line at the north was the first to meet the attack.

"Fight!" A Gu Master leader who was watching from a tower shouted loudly and threw a wind blade.

Soon after, the surrounding Gu Masters also began to make their moves.

A row of wind blades flew far, cutting over dozens of turtleback wolves instantly.

When the wolf group reached closer, the Gu Masters abandoned the wind blades and used the more powerful fire Gu, lightning Gu and so on.

For a moment, countless colorful lights burst out in the battlefield, like simultaneously fired fireworks. Human shouts, furious wolf howls and the piercing sound from the wind blades formed into a medley of sounds.

The wolf group’s offensive was like a rain that came unceasingly, and succeeded in charging over. They first came across the earth walls.

The earth walls were thick, and their foundation had been reinforced with copper and iron.

Countless turtleback wolves were badly bruised when they smashed against these earth walls and even died on the spot.

However, the wolf group advanced wave upon wave, some trampled upon the corpses and leapt high, while some clawed the earth walls to pierce through.

Next, the defensive lines at the south east and north east also entered the battlefield.

Shouting resounded all over the sky and casualties began to appear. Healing Gu Masters began to show their worth.

Because they had made sufficient preparations, the whole Ge tribe was moving very orderly.

"Look, it is a myriad wolf king!" Someone shouted while pointing at a certain direction.

Everyone immediately followed the voice and looked.

This turtleback myriad wolf king was enormous, even ten times the size of a normal turtleback wolf was slightly inferior to it. Its tyrannical aura manifested as it crouched on the ground and howled, commanding the wolf group to divide.

Turtleback wolf group divided into five to six groups and began to circle around the Ge tribe camp, searching for a hole in the defense.

Like this, Ge tribe was surrounded by wolves from every directions, and battle unfolded everywhere.

On a nameless hill outside of the battlefield, a group of man tribesmen were using Gu worms to conceal themselves and were using investigative Gu to observe the situation.

"The battle has started!" Man Hao smiled, taking joy in Ge tribe’s calamity.

"Ge tribe actually channeled the river through a canal, Ge tribe leader is truly an old fox! But, there are over thirty thousand turtleback wolves, even if Ge tribe is able to resist them, they would suffer serious losses." Man Hong smiled coldly.

His appearance was strikingly similar to the tribe leader Man Tu; he was Man Tu’s eldest son and had a cultivation of rank three middle stage.

"Young tribe leader is right. Even if Ge tribe can block the first wave of the wolf group, there is still the second wave and also third wave." Man Hao flattered.

Although Man Hong was the eldest son, but he was still not truly the young tribe leader. However, Man Hao had already pledged his allegiance to Man Hong and was his zealous supporter; he called Man Hong as young tribe leader, it was a flattery and also his expectation.

"Young tribe leader?" Man Hong did not refute and instead nodded his head, "Father has given this important task to me, I will be establishing great merits by finishing this and might indeed be a young tribe leader when we return to the tribe. Unfortunately, that sneaky brat Man Duo did not come over, otherwise I could borrow the strength of others and conveniently get rid of that sinister brat!"

"Man Duo might be somewhat intelligent, but his aptitude is lacking and he is simply not young tribe leader’s match. Look, hundred wolf kings have made their move!" Man Hao said.

Hundred beast kings had rank two Gu worms residing in their bodies, and were very strong. Their appearance immediately caused the pressure on the Ge tribe’s frontline forces to increase greatly. The number of casualties increased sharply, and 2 to 3 hundred wolf kings smashed the earth walls and pierced through the Ge tribe’s defense.

"Hehehe." Looking at the Ge tribe’s Gu Masters dying one after another, Man Hong showed a pleased, sinister smile.

This ignorant bunch of fools actually did not join Man tribe, now weren’t they suffering their just desserts?

"Hmm?" Man Hong’s smile stiffened; through the investigative Gu worm, he saw a wolf enslavement Gu entering a hundred wolf king.

It immediately changed its alignment and let out a howl, causing the wolves beside it to fall into chaos.

Soon after, these turtleback wolves followed the wolf king towards the Ge tribe’s camp and gathered under a Gu Master.

Man Hong narrowed his eyes and looked at this Gu Master: "Could this person be the Wolf King, Chang Shan Yin?"

"Yes, young tribe leader." Man Hao confirmed.

Man Hong scoffed: "Father said he was the greatest uncertainty. Let me see what ability he has!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 452: Intense Battle (1/3)

"Look there, it is the great hero of northern plains, Chang Shan Yin!"

"Chang Shan Yin struck, he truly is spectacular!"

The camp was cheering.

Not only Man tribe, but even Ge tribe Gu Masters were looking at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had just tested his skills, subduing a hundred wolf king and instantly made several hundred turtleback wolves part of his force, it turned this battlefield into a safe zone.

"Chang Shan Yin..." High up on the mound, old Ge tribe leader looked at Fang Yuan's back view as he muttered.

In everyone's mind, there was one question — The former Wolf King, the genius of northern plains, how much battle strength did he have left now?

Fang Yuan looked at the tens of thousands of turtleback wolves in front of him with an earnest gaze.

In other people's perspective, these wolves were a threat, but in Fang Yuan's eyes, these were presents sent to him.

He was worried about not having enough wolves in his group, but if he could subdue these wolf kings, his battle strength would surge!

At this time, it was a clear blue sky as sunlight shone down, vision was clear as the battle was ongoing.

Ge tribe had prepared sufficiently, having three earth walls to defend them, and also built water canals to divide the incoming wolves into segments, preventing them from encircling the Gu Masters, this was a terrain advantage.

Looking at themselves, Ge tribe's Gu Masters were defending with young tribe leader Ge Guang leading, they were extremely safe. Ge tribe were united in defending against the wolf groups, their hearts were as one, this was the most favourable condition.

"If I travelled alone, I would have to run away from a beast group of such a grand scale. But now, all the conditions were perfect for me! This is a godsend opportunity placed in front of me, how can I not make full use of it?"

Thinking so, Fang Yuan laughed cheerfully, his battle intent rose as he said to the people: "Everyone, come with me!"

Ge Guang and the others responded.

Under Fang Yuan's lead, the Gu Masters started to move their formation, going to another area of the battlefield.

Bam!

A tall arrow tower fell onto the ground, smashed into pieces.

The culprit behind this roared loudly as it battled a dozen rank two Gu Masters around it.

This was a hundred wolf king.

At this point, all the wolves around it had died, it was battle alone fiercely.

The surrounding Gu Masters used their Gu worms to attack from a distance, trapping it as they whittled away its life slowly.

On the battlefield, there were three Gu Master corpses.

At this point, Fang Yuan and the others ride their hump wolves and arrived.

"Wolf enslavement Gu, Go!" Fang Yuan pointed with his finger and the rank two wolf enslavement Gu turned into a light smoke, landing on this hundred wolf king’s body.

The wolf king howled angrily, unwilling to be enslaved, resisting with all its energy.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone as he suppressed it with his hundred man soul!

The wolf king whimpered as the smoke settled into its body, turning it into Fang Yuan’s personal pet instantly.

The hundred wolf king sprawled on the ground, keeping its claws and teeth as its body was covered in injuries, oozing with blood.

"Healing Gu Master." Fang Yuan instructed, and a Gu Master walked out from behind him, activating his Gu worm and healing this hundred wolf king.

"This goddamn beast! He killed my brother!" A young Gu Master who had entered battle still wanted to attack.

"Ge Can!" Ge Guang shouted, staring at this person.

The young Gu Master’s neck stiffened as he walked to the hundred wolf king, kicking it fiercely, but did not try to kill it.

Next, he covered his face and cried, sobbing uncontrollably.

The surrounding Gu Masters felt a strong resonance with him.

After the young Gu Master cried for a while, he raised his head, wiping his tears as he said: "Go, let’s continue killing wolves!"

"Alright!"

"Let’s follow brother Ge Can."

This ordinary small group entered the battlefield again.

"Let’s go to the next stop." Fang Yuan continued to move ahead.

At the northwest area, three hundred wolf kings broke through the earth walls and ravaging the line of defense.

Fang Yuan quickly arrived: "I am Wolf King Chang Shan Yin, all Gu Masters listen to my instructions."

With Ge Guang beside him, he successfully gained the commanding rights.

"These three hundred wolf kings, what are their respective Gu worms?" Fang Yuan asked.

Immediately someone reported.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone as he split the people into three groups.

"Group one will lure the left hundred wolf king, and bring it to the second line of defense." Fang Yuan instructed.

"Bring it there?" A Gu Master was shocked, expressing his concern.

Fang Yuan stared at him fiercely: "I said bring it over, so do as I say. This is an order!"

"Yes!"

"Group two, restrict the wolf king on the right, make sure you destroy its defensive Gu."

"Yes!"

"Group three, follow me." Fang Yuan waved his hand and entered the battlefield personally.

After a bit of battle, he used the wolf enslavement Gu.

The light smoke was about to land, when this wolf king shot out a flame that burnt the smoke away.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned cold, he felt heartache losing this rank two wolf enslavement Gu.

Ge Guang scolded: "Why did it still have a firelight Gu?"

"Please forgive me young tribe leader, this is the first time this Gu has been used!’ The subordinate quickly reported.

"Ge Guang, you are in charge of this firelight Gu, use all methods you have, I will come back shortly." Fang Yuan saw that this wolf king could not be handled in the meantime, thus he gave his instructions and passed the trouble to others. Meanwhile, he swapped his target to another wolf king, using a wolf enslavement Gu.

This wolf king’s defensive Gu worms was already destroyed by Gu Masters, without any accidents, Fang Yuan easily captured it.

When he turned around, Ge Guang already created trees and sealed this hundred wolf king’s mouth with vines, it could not shoot out any more flames.

"Good job." Fang Yuan praised as he used a wolf enslavement Gu.

The hundred wolf king watched the light smoke enter its body, after a mild resistance, it lost to the hundred man soul, becoming another one of Fang Yuan’s pet.

After keeping these two hundred wolf kings, Fang Yuan turned around and captured the hundred wolf king at the second line of defense as well.

In just a short time, Fang Yuan divided the three hundred wolf kings up, and captured them one by one, resolving this crisis.

Everyone was amazed, they continue following behind Fang Yuan, listening to his commands. Eventually, they realised that as long as they followed his commands, they would result in the least injuries or deaths possible.

"This Chang Shan Yin has some skills." Outside the battlefield, eldest son Man Hong used his investigative Gu worm to watch Fang Yuan’s performance, his expression sinking.

"His soul is a hundred man soul, it is not hard to subdue these hundred wolf kings. But just this cannot change the situation. It will depend on his wolf manipulation skill!" Man Hao consoled at the side.

"Mmm..."

Fang Yuan sat on the ground directly, holding two primeval stones as he recovered his primeval essence.

Activating wolf enslavement Gu did not expend much primeval essence, but most importantly, it was the burden on his soul.

Fang Yuan subdued hundred wolf kings one after another, he used his hundred man soul to suppress the wolf kings. After the competition between souls, Fang Yuan’s soul became more impatient and impulsive, while the annoyed feeling in his heart intensified.

If he left this symptom alone, he might develop dizziness, or worse his soul might get damaged, losing his memories or lowering his intelligence.

Fang Yuan closed his eyes and mediated, calming his mind and soothing his soul.

After resting for a while, the hundred man soul stabilized, all his negative emotions vanished into thin air!

"Everyone, continue following me on our conquest." Fang Yuan rode on his hump wolf as Ge Guang and the others followed.

Like this, after moving around the battlefield for a while, Fang Yuan subdued three hundred wolf kings, and eight hundred ordinary turtleback wolves.

Howl!

Fang Yuan’s actions angered a thousand wolf king.

Seeing his subordinates surrender to an enemy, this thousand wolf king howled as it led the wolf group towards Fang Yuan, attacking fiercely.

A thousand beast king could control thousands of wild beasts, while also having several hundred beasts kings under it.

There were rank three Gu worms in its body, ignoring the wolf group, at least three cooperative Gu Master groups were needed to kill one thousand beast king. If there were three rank three Gu Masters, they could barely match evenly with it.

Seeing the thousand beast king charging over, Ge Guang and the others’ expression changed. They were mostly rank two elites, only Ge Guang was a rank three Gu Master.

"Don’t worry young tribe leader, we are here to give you a hand!" Just at this moment, three Ge tribe elders came over.

Fang Yuan had made an agreement with Ge tribe higher-ups in the main tent, Ge tribe had to help out in this.

"Hahaha, with your help, this wolf is as good as ours." Fang Yuan laughed heartily.

An intense battle occured.

This thousand wolf king attacked in a frenzy, it used its claws and teeth, and was even able to summon a wolf strength phantom. On the battlefield, it rampaged and moved about without restraints, attacking mercilessly.

But on Fang Yuan’s side, they had greater strength. Four rank three Gu Masters, one rank four Gu Master, as well as a number of rank two elites.

After two elders were mildly injured, Fang Yuan found a good opportunity and used a rank three wolf enslavement Gu.

The rank three wolf enslavement Gu turned into a light smoke, much thicker than the rank two version, as it landed on the thousand wolf king.

Fang Yuan used his hundred man soul to suppress it, and after a dozen breaths’ time, the light smoke succeeded and completely fused into the thousand wolf king’s soul.

This was the first thousand beast king Fang Yuan subdued in this battle.

After the thousand wolf king surrendered, the two hundred wolf kings and several thousand ordinary turtleback wolves under it also changed allegiance.

Such a great number of turtleback wolves revolted and switched to Ge tribe’s faction, causing this part of the battlefield to cease battle.

The entire wolf group only had around fifteen thousand wolf kings, but now one was taken by Fang Yuan.

At this moment, even the myriad wolf king felt something amiss, it howled as a huge four-leaf windblade rotated and shot towards Fang Yuan.

"Three claw water dragon Gu!" A clan elder shouted, pushing with his hands as a light blue water dragon crashed into the windblade, exploding and causing a small drizzle.

"Fist stone Gu!" The second elder punched with his right fist, as a large rock was created in mid air, flying forward like a fist, but was shaved by the windblade.

"Lightning web Gu!" The third elder shot out a large web made of lightning, covering the windblade.

The windblade was weakened, after it was covered by the lightning web, it rotated furiously and cut the web open, but it was at its final moments. As it flew in the air, it slowly dissipated.

Throughout the whole process, Fang Yuan did not do anything.

Ge tribe’s Gu Masters were very protective of Fang Yuan, even if he was a rank four Gu Master that had higher cutlivation than them.

Enslavement path Gu Masters’ lives were extremely important. Thus, when they battled, there were often Gu Masters in charge of protecting them.

Ge tribe’s actions were not overly protective, it was just a norm of the Gu Master world.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 453: Intense Battle (2/3)

Myriad wolf king’s attack caused all of Ge tribe to be nervous.

Far away, Man Hong’s eyes brightened: "Is this myriad wolf king going to join the fight?"

But soon, his gaze dimmed.

After myriad wolf king failed in its attack, it did not make another attack and instead continued sitting at the rear while commanding the wolf group.

A branch of a thousand wolf group moved over to fill the gap created due to the previous thousand wolf king’s surrender.

Crimson flames burned all over this thousand wolf king and its nose let out thick black smoke from time to time.

"A rank three self-ignition Gu." Fang Yuan recognized one of the Gu.

With this Gu worm protecting the thousand wolf king, wolf enslavement Gu’s smoke would be burned off before it even landed.

Fang Yuan’s eyelids twitched and he glanced at the far away myriad wolf king. Myriad wolf king also seemed to be staring back at him; when beasts evolves to myriad beast king stage, their intelligence would greatly surpass similar species, and this myriad wolf king was clearly indicating its decision to target Fang Yuan.

"Ge Guang stay behind and cooperate with three elders to kill this wolf! As for the others, follow me." Fang Yuan turned around and walked; subduing this thousand wolf king was not an impossible matter, but it would be very troublesome and time consuming.

This wolf was not suitable, so it was better to go to another. Anyway, the battlefield was so large, Fang Yuan did not believe all of them would have methods to suppress wolf enslavement Gu.

Sure enough, he moved around to several places and reaped great harvests. In just about two hours, he subdued seventeen hundred wolf kings and two thousand wolf kings.

Adding in all the wolves, Fang Yuan now had four thousand wolf kings, over thirty hundred wolf kings and ordinary wolves were already over eight thousand in number, nearing ten thousand.

Most of them were all turtleback wolves, but there was also a thousand beast level wind wolf king. Among the hundred wolf kings, there were also poison beard wolf king, water wolf king and wind wolf king.

With his actions, the military strength between the two sides in the battlefield was being equalized. A portion of the thirty thousand ten thousand wolf group was incorporated by Fang Yuan into his troop and adding in countless deaths, the wolf group only had about twenty thousand remaining now.

The battle surged on like wildfire and Ge tribe leader eased his brows, seeing the hope of victory.

"With Chang Shan Yin making his move, the pressure on my tribe’s troops has greatly decreased."

"He is after all the legendary hero, his skills are truly exceptional!"

"This is not strange, he is a rank four Gu Master, moreover he walks the enslavement path; such battlefields are his domain."

All the elders praised and the atmosphere in the main tent became relaxed.

"Don’t be careless, myriad wolf king still has not made its move, the outcome of this battle is yet to be certain." Ge tribe leader timely warned others.

"Lord tribe leader is right, we can’t relax yet."

"In my opinion, this myriad wolf king might not join the fight. The wolf group has suffered huge losses, it is normal for the wolf king to retreat in this situation."

"Huh? Not good!"

Just as they were talking of it, myriad wolf king suddenly let out a long howl. All the wolves in the battlefield simultaneously went into crazed offense when they heard this howl.

Over twenty thousand turtleback wolves charged towards the camp without caring for their lives; for a moment, Ge tribe was caught off-guard and was utterly losing.

"Order the frontline to quickly retreat to the second defensive line." Ge tribe leader immediately commanded.

"The wolf group is making an all-out attack!" Ge Guang who was on the frontline paled.

"Go help the Gu Masters to retreat, I will go back to the ranch to rest and organize, wait for my support." Fang Yuan’s expression was dark.

"Lord, we have been ordered by the tribe leader to protect you." Some Gu Masters hesitated.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes and let out a sharp gaze; the Gu Masters where his gaze landed all lowered their head.

"Ge Guang." Fang Yuan looked at the young tribe leader of Ge tribe.

Ge Guang gritted his teeth: "I shall listen to uncle."

He then waved his hand: "All of you follow me!"

Fang Yuan returned to the ranch alone, surrounded by wolves.

He gathered all the wolves together. With close to ten thousand wolves crowding together, this temporary ranch immediately felt narrow.

Fang Yuan willed and a strong vigorous water wolf moved out of the wolf group.

To ordinary people, this was a water wolf. But in Fang Yuan’s eyes, it was a white-eyes wolf.

White-eyes wolf was a mutated beast, like Biao among tigers and lightning boar among boars. Every single ordinary adult mutated beasts would attract wild Gu worms and possessed the strength that could match myriad beast kings.

However, this white-eyes wolf was still in infancy and had not matured yet. The fur on its whole body was like water and was dyed with a light blue color; the appearance of a common water wolf. But as long as people carefully observed it, they would discover its pupils was more white with little black, greatly differing from ordinary water wolves.

When it completely reached adulthood, its pupils would become white. At the same time, its vision would be greatly magnified, comparable to some rank four investigative Gu and even at night, its vision would not be affected.

Fang Yuan had accidentally discovered this white-eyes wolf in the market, and without making any suspicious movements, he bought all the water wolves.

At present, this white-eyes wolf had already been planted with rank three wolf enslavement Gu by Fang Yuan. And to speed up its growth, he had used third watch Gu.

This created a violent increase in the white-eyes wolf’s appetite, about thirteen times more than the ordinary water wolves. Also, its lifespan had shortened.

"Go." Fang Yuan gave a command and this white-eyes wolf whose speed already surpassed that of the wind wolves, quickly moved out of the ranch towards the higher grounds.

Wolf care Gu!

Fang Yuan covered his right eye and only used his left eye to look at the white-eyes wolf. At the same time, he poured his primeval essence into Chang Shan Yin’s investigative Gu.

Instantly, the scene in his left eye changed; as if he was overlooking the battlefield from a high ground.

This was the ability of the wolf care Gu; it could share the sight of the specific wolf to the Gu Master’s eyes.

Fang Yuan then opened his right eye, and two different scenes transmitted to his brain at the same time.

His left eye showed the battlefield, letting him be clear on the situation; and his right eye showed the ranch where the wolves were crowded together.

Fang Yuan summoned all the wolf kings and searched through the Gu worms in their body.

If there were any rare Gu worms, Fang Yuan would take them so as to not let them be destroyed in the battlefield.

Naturally, his main focus was the wolf enslavement Gu.

Wolf enslavement Gu was a one time expendable Gu.

To capture so many wolf kings, Fang Yuan had used up a lot of wolf enslavement Gu.

Generally speaking, wolf kings would have corresponding wolf enslavement Gu on them.

Sure enough, Fang Yuan got a rank three wolf enslavement Gu and five rank two wolf enslavement Gu from these wolf kings.

As for other Gu worms, they were all ordinary with only one or two being better. But they could not catch Fang Yuan’s eyes, so he left them on the wolf kings to preserve their battle strength.

Wolf smoke Gu!

Fang Yuan activated this rank four healing Gu which was especially used to heal the injuries on wolves. Surging smoke enveloped the whole ranch for a long time.

Fang Yuan’s primeval sea rapidly lowered to the bottom.

The primeval essence consumption to heal so many wolves at once was very huge.

When the primeval sea hit the bottom, Fang Yuan took out primeval stones and quickly recovered his primeval essence.

After healing them twice more, Fang Yuan saw Ge tribe leader lead a group of elders and rush towards the frontlines. Soon, intense explosions sounded out from the frontlines.

Through his left eye, Fang Yuan saw that the motionless myriad wolf king had also joined the fight. Ge tribe leader and others all went all-out against it.

With myriad wolf king joining the fight, there was a tremendous influence on the wolves and under its lead, the wolf group began to fight with even more madness.

The second defensive line of Ge tribe was also thus broken.

Fortunately, with the canal blocking the way, most of Ge tribe’s Gu Masters could smoothly retreat towards the third defensive line and maintain the defense. For a moment, the atmosphere on the battlefield intensified to the extreme, causing great palpitation in the people.

The third defensive line was the final defense. Behind it was the weakest mortals, in case it was broken through, the consequences would be unimaginable.

"There is no time to heal again." After recovering the primeval essence in his aperture to ninety percent, Fang Yuan looked at the surroundings.

After three rounds of healing, the heavy injuries on these wolves had become light injuries while the light injuries were completely healed.

Wolf howl Gu!

Fang Yuan howled towards the sky, letting out a furious howl like that of a wolf king.

Under the effect of the Gu worm, the wolf group on the ranch faintly enlarged, their energy inflated and their battle strength multiplied!

Fang Yuan laughed loudly and rode on a hump wolf, with a shift of his mind, the wolf group immediately started howling together.

Howl---!

At this moment, when the sky was dyed red with the setting sun, when the wind was starting to blow strongly and when the battle was raging, the wolf howl spread without restrain, travelling a thousand li.

"Eh? Chang Shan Yin is making his move!" Outside the battlefield, Man Hong and Man Hao’s expression turned grave.

Ge tribe, however, was jubilant.

"Chang Shan Yin, it is lord Chang Shan Yin!"

"We still have lord Chang Shan Yin..."

"Lord Chang Shan Yin is coming to support us, everyone persevere!!"

"Step aside, open up a path for lord Chang Shan Yin."

Instantly, Ge tribe’s troop morale rose rapidly.

Fang Yuan sat upright on the hump wolf and lightly waved his hand; close to ten thousand wolves surged forward, moving past the simplistic fence around the ranch, but they did not go to rescue the northern side, but instead moved towards the south.

Just like the collapse of a large dam, a powerful flood burst out! The whole wolf group rapidly charged out of the camp; twelve hundred wolf kings arranged as the arrowhead ruthlessly charged into the battlefield

The enemy wolf group had fought for a long time and was already exhausted, and now this new battle force attacked them, causing countless deaths in moments.

With only one assault, Fang Yuan collapsed the offense of the turtleback wolves on the southern side of the camp.

Wolf enslavement Gu! Wolf enslavement Gu! Wolf enslavement Gu!

Under the protection of the wolf group, Fang Yuan repeatedly activated three wolf enslavement Gu; the enslavement Gu changed into faint smoke and subdued three hundred wolf kings in moments.

"Charge to the left!" He willed it and the whole wolf army smoothly changed direction and charged towards the southeast battle.

Fang Yuan’s gaze scanned the battle like an eagle and soon locked onto the thousand wolf king.

Thousand wolf king howled and did its utmost to command the wolf group. But most of the wolf group were in deeply locked in the battle in the frontline and would be difficult for them to turn around for a while.

This thousand wolf king could only mobilize a few hundred wolves which were easily drowned by Fang Yuan’s army.

Rank three wolf enslavement Gu!

Fang Yuan caught the chance and a faint smoke drilled down into the thousand wolf king; this thousand wolf king might have been scared stiff as it let out a whimper, its soul did not give any resistance and was quickly subdued.

This was the fifth thousand wolf king!

The wolf group that had been fighting with the Gu Masters, under its beckoning, stopped the fight and gathered under Fang Yuan’s army.

The chaos at the southeast area immediately ceased!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 454: Intense Battle (3/3)

The battle that the Gu Masters had been fighting with their lives on the line was settled in the blink of an eye. Their mortal enemies had instead become their allies.

"Is this the ability of lord Chang Shan Yin?"

"Terrifying, terrifying..."

"Leading myriad wolf groups by himself, no wonder he is called Wolf King!"

Gu Masters looked at Fang Yuan with stupefied gazes. Their gazes looked at his receding figure, leaving this place towards another battlefield.

Moving unhindered, truly unhindered!

All those who dared to block his way were completely swept away.

Under his will, tens of thousands of wolves rushed forward. Under his indication, his troops moved everywhere, unrivalled!

With just his lone strength, he was overturning the crisis, changing the whole situation; he was the light of the enslavement path!

Outside the battlefield, Man Hong, Man Hao and the rest all lost color in their face.

Under their complicated gaze, Fang Yuan’s wolf group rapidly expanded like a rolling snowball, getting bigger the more they killed. Everywhere they moved, they would leave behind ruins and a group of stupefied Gu Masters, before they swaggered off.

This wolf commanding tactic was simply unreasonable and also extremely domineering!

Under this huge strength, small hindrances were directly crushed.

Fang Yuan intentionally avoided the myriad wolf king’s battlefield and circled around the Ge tribe camp, subduing three thousand wolf kings. In total, the number of thousand wolf kings he had reached eight.

As for the number of hundred wolf kings, they had almost doubled, reaching fifty-nine.

Fang Yuan’s wolf formation was like a mythical beast, swallowing all turtleback wolves on its path and expanding itself.

After repeatedly subduing these wolf kings, Fang Yuan’s soul also suffered from backlash; he felt jittery and nauseous.

Fang Yuan endured this feeling and gathered the wolf group before returning to the ranch.

The ranch could not hold these wolves anymore.

There were too many wolves, Fang Yuan also did not know the exact amount clearly, he could only guess the amount had surpassed twelve thousand.

Fang Yuan did not hurry to join the battle.

The situation was already determined now. He got off the hump wolf and closed his eyes to rest his spirit.

Every set interval, he would open his eyes to observe the battlefield through the white-eyes wolf’s vision and keep an eye on the situation of Ge tribe leader and the others. These higher-ups of Ge tribe could not die. If they died, Man tribe might be roused into making a move.

After resting for a while, although Fang Yuan had not fully recovered, there was no problem in commanding the wolves. He joined the battlefield again.

This time, he only mobilized the eight thousand wolf kings to the battle. Ordinary wolves was too low of a threat against myriad wolf king.

On his way, every Ge tribesmen would call out his name loudly.

"Chang Shan Yin has come to assist!" Hearing such voices, Ge tribe’s higher-ups who were surrounding the myriad wolf king all felt their spirits invigorated.

"Everyone, please take a step back and rest for a moment, let me handle this!" Fang Yuan reached the battlefield and under his will, the eight thousand wolf kings encircled the myriad wolf king.

Myriad wolf king already had the intention to retreat, but whether it charged left or right, it could not break through the encirclement.

"Such wolf manipulation skills!" Seeing the myriad wolf king being played around by Fang Yuan, Man Hao, Man Hong and the rest revealed astonished expressions.

Previously, Fang Yuan had charged with grand troops, flattening everything on his way, so they were not able to see his wolf manipulating skill. Now, he was commanding the wolves meticulously, revealing the top-tier wolf manipulation skill of the northern plains.

There were merely eight thousand wolf king, and seven of them could not display their full strength due to the pressure from the myriad wolf king.

However, under Fang Yuan’s control, the myriad wolf king felt like it was encircled by thousands of soldiers, as if it was a fly that was trapped in spider web.

Finally, the myriad wolf king was thoroughly exhausted to death by Fang Yuan, and in its final counterattack before death, it took away a thousand wolf king’s life.

"Wolf King! Lord Chang Shan Yin is truly the Wolf King!" Looking at the myriad wolf king’s enormous body falling down loudly, all the Gu Masters cheered loudly.

"Wolf King!"

"Wolf King! Wolf King!"

With this battle, everyone felt the nickname of Wolf King was truly fitting.

The shouting surged one after another and soon many joined in, shouting loudly with fervent gazes, and some even had tears falling from their eyes.

This was a type of emotional feeling, a type of worship towards the heroes, reverence towards the strength.

"With this person here, it is easier said than done for us to annex Ge tribe!" Man Hong’s expression looked ashen to the extreme, this battle had thoroughly dispelled his ambitions.

"Wolf King..." Man Hao who had felt contempt towards Chang Shan Yin, absent-mindedly muttered this name. He had never felt how heavy the weight of this name was as much as this moment!

On the battlefield, Ge tribe leader brought the elders towards Fang Yuan.

"The might of the former hero still remains! Today’s battle really makes me prostrate in admiration. I, on behalf of the whole Ge tribe, express my utmost gratitude to your favor of helping us!" Ge tribe leader deeply bowed towards Fang Yuan.

"Brother Ge, you speak too highly of me. Let’s clean up the battlefield quickly." Fang Yuan smiled.

The myriad wolf king’s corpse was lying on the ground, but Fang Yuan did not take the matters into his own hand to avoid suspicion.

"If I had a rank four wolf enslavement Gu, I could have taken in this turtleback wolf myriad wolf king, such a pity." Fang Yuan felt regret in his heart.

Rank four beast enslavement Gu could control myriad beast kings. A myriad beast group was a huge force to a tribe.

Thus, normally, rank four beast enslavement Gu was not sold in the markets of northern plains.

For the price of many Gu worms, once they reached rank four, would rise sharply. Beast enslavement Gu was one of them, there was also relic Gu besides this.

Fang Yuan had only been able to purchase rank two and rank three wolf enslavement Gu in the market, and did not get a rank four wolf enslavement Gu.

"Right now, I have a large amount of rank two and three wolf enslavement Gu. But it seems I will have to refine the rank four wolf enslavement Gu myself."

Fang Yuan currently lacked rank four wolf enslavement Gu; with rank four wolf enslavement Gu, he could control myriad wolf king, and the burden on his soul to control the wolf group through the wolf king would decrease by a lot.

His mutated beast white-eyes wolf was currently an infant and could be enslaved by rank three Gu. But once it matured, it would require rank four enslavement Gu, otherwise it would not listen to commands and could even flee.

"Lord, we have found a rank four wolf enslavement Gu!" Right at this time, a Gu Master that was searching through the myriad wolf king’s corpse shouted loudly.

"What?" Ge tribe leader’s eyes flashed brightly and soon after, laughed, "Haha, precious Gu should fit a hero, this Gu should be give to brother Chang."

Although there was a great probability for a rank four beast enslavement Gu to reside in myriad beast king, Fang Yuan was still happy.

There might have been some flaws in today’s battle, but the outcome still made Fang Yuan very satisfied.

It was regretful to have killed the myriad wolf king, but he was still able to obtain a rank four wolf enslavement Gu.

This Gu worm’s arrival was really at great timing, it had been a long time since Fang Yuan had such a good thing happen to him.

He carefully accepted this Gu worm and said his goodbye to the Ge tribe’s higher-ups, he did not even join in the celebratory banquet, using the excuse of refining this rank four Gu to evade it.

Nightfall.

The celebratory bonfire outside the tents was burning brightly. The victorious shouts and the cries for the casualties mixed together and spread towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged on the ground, his mind was calm as he looked in his aperture.

The ninety percent primeval sea was tranquil, the water shining brightly like gold. Unfortunately, Fang Yuan had still not completely adapted to the northern plains, thus there was still the suppression, causing his cultivation to temporarily stagnate; the true gold primeval essence looked amazing but was useless right now.

However, cultivation was only one part of strength.

There were other ways for Fang Yuan to increase his strength.

For example, the strength of ten jun Gu he was currently holding.

This Gu was also a rank four Gu, but its price was much lower than a rank four beast enslavement Gu. And because it could be easily refined and the manufacturing costs were also low, it was rather common in the market.

Strength of ten jun Gu did not look anything special, looking just like a common iron weight.

Fang Yuan poured primeval essence to it, it then floated above Fang Yuan and let out dreamy light which shone upon Fang Yuan’s whole body, engraving some Dao marks of the strength path on Fang Yuan’s body.

After a while, the strength of ten jun Gu suddenly let out a slight explosion and broke into pieces, falling down on Fang Yuan’s hair.

Strength of ten jun Gu was an expendable Gu, this was the third strength of ten jun Gu Fang Yuan had used.

Fang Yuan shook off the iron pieces and grasped his fists, feeling an increased strength: "The strength increase has reached a bottleneck. Next, I need to enhance my skeleton, skin, tendons and so on, to cause the water bucket - my body - to become deeper, larger and firmer, so it can hold even more strength.

Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed as he took out a wolf soul Gu.

"This is the final wolf soul Gu."

Fang Yuan poured his primeval essence into the wolf soul Gu; the wolf soul Gu burst and changed into a grey wolf soul that smashed into his body.

Hundred man soul and wolf soul tangled with each other, the difficulty this time was many times more than before. Previously, when Fang Yuan used the wolf soul Gu, he only had over three thousand wolves under him. Now, after today’s battle, he had taken in many wolf kings and thus the burden on his soul was much bigger.

Fang Yuan’s brows furrowed into a knot, sweat perspired out of his forehead and he gritted his teeth to persevere; finally, the hundred man soul and the wolf soul merged together.

Boom!

A soft sound echoed in his ears, the long term quantitative accumulation had brought a qualitative change at this moment.

Hundred man soul had thoroughly changed into the wolfman soul.

The wolfman soul looked like a grey color that had been condensed to an extreme. The soul’s appearance was mostly like Fang Yuan’s, except the bridge of the nose was longer, eyes sharper and his body thinner. There were two sharp wolf ears, long hair that reached his waist and a hairy wolf tail that grew out of his butt.

With the formation of the wolfman soul, Fang Yuan felt relaxed as if he had gotten rid of a very heavy burden.

In his mind, the connection to the wolves became much more close, and he could even feel a faint familiar feeling from the wolf kings’ souls.

This was not there when he had the hundred man soul.

After forming the wolfman soul, Fang Yuan gained the aura of a wolf, causing these wolf kings to think him as one of their species. Thus, it was no longer the pure suppression using the hundred man soul, but also a feeling of approval from the wolves.

"Hundred man soul was almost reaching its limits after enslaving so many wolves. Now, with wolfman soul, I can take in three times more wolf kings!"

"It is just that there will probably be few opportunities like today. But the grassland is so big and the wolf group are plenty, I will at least be able to double this wolf group on our way to the heroes assembly."

Looking at the large amount of rank two wolf enslavement Gu in his aperture, many rank three wolf enslavement Gu and one rank four wolf enslavement Gu, Fang Yuan was full of expectations towards the future.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

There were few stars in the sky.

Bone-chilling wind blew through the grassland at night.

Two hump wolves were moving through this night; carrying Ge tribe’s investigative Gu Masters, one old and one young.

"Huff huff huff, so cold." The young Gu Master curled up his body and blew out hot air.

"I told you to wear some more clothes, but you didn’t want to. This is called suffering from not listening to your elders ." The old Gu Master laughed, he was wearing a thick leather robe with long sleeves and long boots, along with a felt hat; he did not feel the slightest bit of cold.

"Uncle, this is my first time scouting, I lack experience." The young Gu Master mumbled in a soft voice before swearing, "F*ck, when I go out to scout tomorrow, I will definitely wear the thickest clothes."

"It should not be overly thick. Overly thick clothes will only affect your movement in battle. Moreover, you are likely to doze off if it is too warm. We are the eyes of Ge tribe, we need to be vigilant at all times. The best would be clothes that will keep you just warm, so you will feel cold if you stay still for long, this will urge you to keep on scouting." The old Gu Master shared his experience solemnly.

It was already the third day since the battle with the turtleback wolves.

The old Gu Master’s partner had died in the battlefield, thus the young Gu Master was sent over to make up for the gap; the young Gu Master was still inexperienced and needed the old Gu Master’s guidance.

"Uncle..." The young Gu Master was just about to open his mouth.

"Shush!" The old Gu Master suddenly stretched out his hand to signal a stop, his eyes squinted and looked at the light that suddenly emerged far away.

"What is that?" The old Gu Master was immediately on guard, he used his investigative Gu but could not make out anything.

"Kid, use your hand-ear Gu to listen!" The old Gu Master commanded.

"Yes!" The young Gu Master did not dare to be careless, he immediately turned over his body and got off the hump wolf and stretched out his right hand.

He transferred primeval essence towards his right palm; grass sprouted out from the palm, creating a flesh bud. The flesh bud then opened up to form an ear.

The young man closely stuck this ear on the ground and attentively listened.

"There is nothing other than the sound of the wind." The young Gu Master did his best to listen but got no result.

He laughed: "Uncle, are you trying to scare me? There is not even a fart."

"The battle just ended, so maybe I was too nervous." The old Gu Master heaved a sigh. He again looked at a distance, but there was nothing unusual; he felt his eyesight might have blurred just before.

"What is there to be nervous about, there is the old tribe leader here and we also have the Wolf King Chang Shan Yin with us. There is no need to be afraid even if another group of turtleback wolves come." The young man’s gaze flashed when he talked of Fang Yuan, unable to conceal the worship in his eyes.

"Yes, it is indeed our tribe’s fortune to have the help of the Wolf King." The old Gu Master sighed as he recalled the scene in the battlefield.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Suddenly, the sound of arrows quickly moving through the air spread towards them!

"Who?" The old Gu Master shouted, he subconsciously jumped off the hump wolf and smoothly rolled several times.

Thud thud thud...

Sharp bone spears pierced the ground one after another.

"Enemy attack!" The old Gu Master had this thought the first moment. He quickly stood up and hurriedly warned towards the young Gu Master.

The young man had already been pierced by a bone spear and had died on the spot.

The old Gu Master’s heart twitched, but he did not have the time to grieve, immediately taking out a signal Gu from his aperture.

But before he was able to activate it, he was hit by a fatal attack.

He stiffly stood on the spot like a statue. A line of blood slowly appeared on his neck, becoming clearer and clearer.

Finally, his head inclined towards the side and fell on the ground, completely separated from the neck.

Fresh blood spurted out like a geyser from his neck.

Several figures walked out of the darkness, leading them was Man tribe’s external elder Shi Wu. He looked at the two corpses and proudly said: "These ants, killing them is as easy as flipping my palm."

"Lord elder is formidable!"

"With lord elder here, Ge tribe’s investigative Gu Masters are only empty shells!"

Several Gu Masters following behind flattered.

Shi Wu narrowed his eyes in joy and looked towards the direction of the Ge tribe’s troops: "Hmph, this Ge tribe could win earlier because of their scouting, being able to make ample preparation in advance. This time, lord tribe leader has dispatched almost all the elders, Ge tribe will not be able to escape the calamity this time! Hehehe, I really want to see the shocked and frightened expressions on these people when ten thousand nights wolves attack them at once."

Ge tribe might have already been on the move for several days, leaving Hong Yan valley and succeeding in defeating the turtleback wolf group, but Man tribe had no intention to let them go.

Three days after the attack of the turtleback wolf group, Man tribe Gu Masters secretly led night wolf group to make the second wave of attack on Ge tribe. At the same time, Man tribe’s elders also moved out to kill large numbers of Ge tribe’s investigative Gu Masters.

A large conspiracy against Ge tribe was already unfolding.

When this ten thousand wolf group was discovered, they were only hundred li away from the camp.

"Wolf attack! Wolf attack!" An investigative Gu Master observing from a watchtower shouted.

Whoosh Whoosh Whoosh...

Several signal Gu were shot out into the sky, bursting into bright fireworks.

"Everyone get up, there is an attack, it is a group of ten thousand night wolves!!" The Ge tribesmen who were in a deep sleep were startled awake.

"Quick, notify the tribe leader!" Investigative Gu Masters rushed about as quickly as they could.

Human figures gradually appeared from everywhere in the Ge tribe camp; doubts and panicked shouts mixed to form a commotion.

In the main tent, Ge tribe leader’s expression paled when he got this news.

"Those damned investigative Gu Masters!" This was the first thought of the old tribe leader.

But he soon frowned.

Even if the night wolves were difficult to detect at night, but with so many night wolves, why hadn’t the investigative Gu Masters reported sooner?

His sharp senses smelled a trace of conspiracy.

He quickly threw these thoughts to the back of his mind. It was not the time to think of these!

"The night wolves are already so close to the camp, there is no time to construct defensive lines! What do we do?""

In this boundless darkness, there was no clear intel on the enemy situation.

Ge tribe leader only knew this wolf group was large, at least a ten thousand wolf group. But he did not know if there were other wolf group or if Man tribe’s Gu Masters were hiding in the surroundings.

At this urgent moment, Ge tribe leader could not think of a countermeasure and could only send an order: "Send my command, all Ge tribe Gu Masters shall gather in the main tent!"

The night wolf group was fast and had reached the camp.

"The wolf group is here!"

"Block them, we must block them!"

"Quick, activate light sphere Gu."

A Gu Master who was at the frontline shot out a rank two light sphere Gu towards the sky.

Under the illumination of the light sphere, the densely packed night wolf group showed their appearances.

These night wolves were thin with strong posture, they had black glossy skin but had no fur. Their black pupils and claws gave off a cruel light.

A hundred wolf king growled and charged over.

"My god!" The Gu Master could only shout in shock before he was killed instantly by the wolf king.

The night wolf group was like a torrent, bursting through the simplistic stakes around the camp, and started their massacre.

Right now, Ge tribe’s Gu Masters were still gathering towards the central main tent.

The vast outer camp had already turned into a sight of the netherworld. The wolves were howling excitedly, humans were wailing in grief and the cries of fear bursted forth together.

Night wolves were fast, and were tearing through the tents. Many mortals who were still in their sleep died cruelly under their claws.

They used death and blood as a warning.

The inner camp was in an uproar; the terrified humans surged out and tried to run away, trampling over each other.

A night raid!

Ge tribe leader stood outside the main tent; the corners of his eyes were almost tore open at this sight, his heart was bleeding.

The wolf group’s massacre indeed caused many deaths, but even more deaths were caused by the people trampling on each other. Such a chaotic situation already was already beyond control, causing the Ge tribe leader’s plan to counterattack after organizing the troops to be in vain.

Most of the Gu Masters were trapped among the chaos.

Only many of the elders and a few elite Gu Masters were able to successfully gather in the main tent.

"Our advantage is no more!"

Ge tribe leader closed his eyes in pain, his body was cold as he fell into deep despair and grief.

"With this battle, even if we luckily gather in the remaining people, Ge tribe will fall down to a small scale tribe! Ge tribe had fallen in my hands! I am ashamed to face my ancestors! I am Ge tribe’s sinner!"

In the main tent; some elders were shouting, some had lifeless expressions and some were panicking.

"Ge tribe is still not finished, everyone, there is only one way left to turn around this situation!" Following the sound, Fang Yuan walked into the main tent.

Ge tribe leader’s eyes brightened like a drowning person finding a life-saving log.

"Brother, please speak quickly!" He looked at Fang Yuan and asked hurriedly.

Fang Yuan got right to the point and said resolutely: "Now, the camp is in chaos, we cannot simply defend, the situation has gone out of control. Only by using offense as defense, can we have a chance at survival."

"Wolf King, your meaning is?" Ge tribe leader mumbled.

Everyone looked at each other.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: "Brother Ge, did you forget that I have a rank four wolf enslavement Gu with me?"

He looked at everyone’s expressions and continued: "The ones here are all Ge tribe’s elites, its strongest battle strength. We will form into a group and immediately move out, flowing against the wolf raid towards the myriad wolf king. In the battle, I will subdue the myriad wolf king, and the whole situation will turn around!"

Everyone’s expressions changed.

This was a thoroughly messed up plan!

One should know, Gu Masters would rely on terrain advantage to resist the myriad beast group and fight a war of attrition, but even this would create huge casualties. Now, Fang Yuan wanted them to use their blood and flesh body to charge against the offense of the myriad beast group and kill myriad wolf king among the countless wolves; this was simply courting doom.

This method was too risky, if someone else said it, they would have been furiously rebuked and even ruthlessly ridiculed it.

However, it was Chang Shan Yin proposing it which caused everyone to fall into silence.

"Madness, this is complete madness." An elder mumbled.

Others showed hesitant expressions; going against the momentum of the wolf group would result in deaths nine out of ten times. Frankly speaking, it was asking them to give up their lives in exchange for the survival of the whole clan.

These rank three Gu Masters had been higher-ups for a long time and would normally be living luxuriously. All of them cherished their lives.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ge tribe leader was hesitating, he was not a coward afraid of dying, because at this age, his cultivation was stagnant and he had already stopped caring about life and death.

His hesitation was, whether to use this method or not.

Ge tribe’s era was over, but that did not mean it was destroyed completely.

If mortals died, they can just be replenished through snatching, in a Gu Master’s eye, mortals were just numbers. As long as the Gu masters were intact, and the elders were intact, the tribe’s structure would still be around.

If they retreated now, and gave up on the rest, only Ge tribe’s higher-ups would be left, they would have to seek refuge with Man tribe.

But Man tribe had the intention to devour Ge tribe, this night wolf group’s assault was most likely part of their schemes!

But if they used Fang Yuan’s method, the risks were too great. If they fail, Ge tribe’s higher-ups were finished, and the mortals would only be sheep waiting to get eaten.

"Father, and all the uncles here, I think that uncle Chang is right, this is the only way to save the tribe!" Ge Guang spoke, seeing the hesitant group, he felt a chill in his heart.

He was still young, he was hot blooded. At the crucial moment, he saw everyone’s true colors, he had never seen this fragile side of Ge tribe.

Fang Yuan snickered in his heart.

When he first heard that the wolves were attacking, he was shocked, but soon he felt great joy.

If he was able to subdue this myriad beast king here, then his strength would rise once more, it could potentially double!

This was a one-off opportunity, he wanted to grab onto it. But under such circumstances, to enslave the myriad wolf king, he would need Ge tribe’s help.

There was danger in charging at the frontlines, but to Fang Yuan, it was not too much of a problem.

He was a rank four Gu Master with a rank three eagle wings Gu, if the situation turned south, he could fly away to escape easily.

It was too much of a pity to let Ge tribe decline like this, since he wanted to make use of them, he should maximise their worth.

"Everyone!" Fang Yuan shouted, attracting everyone’s gazes.

His words resounded like thunder, as he shouted: "What are you waiting for? Why are you hesitant? Are all Ge tribesmen cowardly and afraid of death?!"

"Listen, those are the cries of our Ge tribesmen, these vile night wolves are slaughtering our parents, our friends, our wives and children! If Ge tribe is wiped out tonight, you will all be homeless!"

"Can you bear to see our family die right under our very eyes? I cannot! Although I, Chang Shan Yin, am just an outsider, during these days of living here, I felt warmth, I felt the intense love that the Ge tribesmen had towards each other. For your friends, for the justice of this world, I will charge forward, and fight for a chance of survival for everyone."

"The males of Ge tribe, are your sabres still around? Your ancestors are watching you. Are cowardice and weakness flowing in your blood?"

Fang Yuan shouted in a righteous tone, his aura was overwhelming.

His voice was so long, even the Gu Masters outside the king tent were attracted. The tribe elders looked at him deeply with a shocked gaze.

What was a hero?

The ability to turn the tides and overcome difficulty, that was only the hero’s strength.

But at the crucial moment, at the moment of death, he would step forward and face the difficulty head on, he brought confidence and courage to others. That was the true demeanour of a hero!

Ge Guang heard Fang Yuan’s words and his body trembled.

At this moment, Fang Yuan’s image was so majestic, it was deeply engraved in his heart.

His eyes were shining, his pupils turned red, his heart was pounding, he felt a warm feeling surging inside him.

Swoosh , Ge Guang activated sabre Gu, holding it in his right hand as he raised it up highly.

Next, this young Ge tribe leader screamed: "No! The warriors of Ge tribe are still around. Ge tribe’s sabres are still around! Our ancestors are all watching us descendants! Oh Wolf King, others might be afraid of death, but I, Ge Guang, am willing to follow you to the depths of hell!!"

Saying so, a few hot-tempered elders were so triggered they shouted in shame.

"So what, the worst result is death, there is nothing to fear!"

"Those f*cking night wolves, I will kill you all!"

"Wolf King, young tribe leader, consider me, Ge De, a member of the vanguard troop!"

These people not only responded, they even gave a disdainful and scornful gaze towards their surroundings.

Even more people were triggered by this, after all, northern plainsmen were usually very courageous.

"Kill! Use our blood to prove the bravery of us Ge tribesmen!"

"Battle to the death, battle to the death!"

"Count me in, I will battle too!!"

The overwhelming atmosphere burst out in the tent.

Even elders who did not want to join this fight shouted out their willingness to participate. They did not want to be called a coward for life. In northern plains, as long as one gains such a bad reputation, they would be despised by everyone.

The development of this situation was far beyond the hesitant Ge tribe leader’s control.

He was old, he did not want to take risks.

He already had the intention to retreat long ago, as long as the higher-up Gu Masters were around, Ge tribe had their foundation and could start all over again.

If they charged forward, the risks were too great, there was an unknown number of night wolves in the darkness of the night, other than that, Man tribe might even be scheming something, and Chang Shan Yin might not succeed in subduing the myriad wolf king. Even if everyone charged out, if the myriad wolf king refused to fight them head on and chose to escape, what then?

Fang Yuan’s plans had too many flaws, it was not reliable.

"Oh no." Old Ge tribe leader saw the surrounding elders’ red eyes and realized that his hesitation was already useless, they had no choice but to fight now.

"Battle to the death! Battle to the death!"

"For Ge tribe, for tomorrow!"

"A battle of life and death, this will show our overwhelming bravery and courage!"

Outside the main tent, cheers and slogans were resounding as the morale of the troops surged, they were united now.

Fang Yuan’s words easily turned the situation towards his intended direction.

Everyone’s heart was united, old Ge tribe leader no choice but to go along with them, he bowed deeply towards Fang Yuan: "Wolf King, you are a true hero! Ge tribe’s future lies in your hands, we will accompany your wolf group in charging forward and taking down the myriad wolf king."

Everyone accepted the orders.

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone, Ge tribe leader’s intention was to sacrifice the wolf group to protect the Ge tribe Gu Masters.

But a little sacrifice was no big deal. As long as he obtains the myriad wolf king, it would be a huge gain!

"Everyone, charge with me!" Fang Yuan shouted, bringing all the Gu Masters and left the main tent.

A few hundred wolf kings and thousand wolf kings also gathered.

"Brother Chang, why are there only these wolves? Where are your other wolf kings? Where is your wolf army?" Old Ge tribe leader questioned, his heart sinking.

Fang Yuan snorted in his heart, why did he have to sacrifice his wolf kings to protect these Ge tribesmen?

All living beings in this world were equal, there were none who were more valuable or royal than another.

Wolves and men were both living beings, ignoring their standpoint, they were equal lifeforms.

Why did wolves have to sacrifice their lives for men? Were humans more noble than wolves?

No.

Whether one was noble or lowly, that was only a class system. And that system was based off strength.

Be it Earth or this world, the biggest law was the elimination of the weak, the big fish eats the small fish, the small fish eats the shrimps.

The so-called nobility was built on the foundation of greater strength. Without this, even the purest and most elegant lady is nothing more than a promiscuous b*tch!

Fang Yuan needed Ge tribe’s accompaniment earlier because he had few wolves, it was dangerous for him to travel alone, and there were greater difficulties in doing so.

But now, he had the myriad wolf group, Ge tribe’s value diminished greatly.

The wolves obeyed him, he could control their life and death at will. But could Ge tribesmen allow this?

"For an outsider, you want me to sacrifice my closest and most loyal subjects?

Did you really think I was a dimwit like all your hot-blooded tribesmen?" Although Fang Yuan felt great disdain in his heart, he showed a confident and warm smile, saying to old Ge tribe leader: "Don’t worry brother Ge, the situation is chaotic now, the ranch was destroyed and the wolves are scattered. I have ordered the wolf kings to assemble, soon, we will have a reinforcement wolf troop coming."

Old Ge tribe leader looked at Fang Yuan deeply, and was about to speak.

But Fang Yuan did not give him the chance, he shouted: "Everyone, Ge tribe’s survival depends on this moment, charge with me!"

Saying so, he squeezed with his legs and ordered the hump wolf below him to charge forward.

"Kill!"

"Kill these goddamn wolves!"

"For Ge tribe, for tomorrow!"

Everyone shouted in a frenzy, as young Ge tribe leader followed behind Fang Yuan closely.

Old Ge tribe leader was so angry he pulled his son back, shouting at his ear: "Remember, you are the young tribe leader of Ge tribe!"

After that, the father and son started to charge towards the night wolves while protected deep inside the formation.

Two rank four, seventeen rank three, and a great number of rank two elites, it was a great strength, like a sabre that stabbed into the battlefield.

They had an overwhelming aura, no wolves could stop them, soon, they charged out of the camp and went straight for the myriad wolf king.

Once out of the camp, everyone’s pressure intensified. Especially the Gu Masters at the outer edge, all they could see were night wolves.

Wind blades, water dragons, stone fists, golden cones... all sorts of attacks were unleashed like cheap fireworks. The wolves were hit unguarded, and many died in the process.

Everyone fought and killed, creating a path for themselves.

Howl!

Myriad wolf king howled, and twelve thousand wolf kings and tens of hundred wolf kings gathered, attacking Fang Yuan and gang from all directions.

Myriad wolf king understood Fang Yuan’s intentions, to compete against him, it sent elites to fight the elites.

Fang Yuan had stealthily gone to the most inner circle of the group, he shouted in a frenzy: "Chaaaaaarge! Faster, if you do not charge faster, we are all dead meat! If we enslave the myriad wolf king, we would overturn the situation!"

In a moment, hundred wolf kings and thousand wolf kings entered the battle.

The troop’s advancement became even slower, as many rank two elites were sacrificed.

"Oh no, my primeval essence is running low, I can only activate the self-detonate Gu... For the tribe!" A tribe elder shouted loudly, going out of the formation and charging into the wolves.

The wolf king opened its mouth as it bit him.

This tribe elder snickered as he exploded, killing this thousand wolf king on the spot!

This was the first tribe elder that died in this battle.

Old tribe leader saw this and he felt his heart bleeding.

These elders were the foundation of Ge tribe, they were the main pillars of support. Seeing their deaths, old tribe leader could almost see the collapse of the main tent.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The old tribe leader became increasingly dissatisfied with Fang Yuan, shouting: "Wolf King, where are your promised reinforcements?"

"Brother Ge need not worry, they will arrive soon! Everyone, follow me to take revenge for the elder’s death!!" Fang Yuan roared and moved ahead of everyone towards the frontline.

"Protect Lord Chang Shan Yin!" Ge Guang immediately shouted.

"Lord Wolf King, you are our key to victory, please stay within our protection zone!"

"Kill, kill these beasts!!"

Everyone in the troop had bloodshot eyes, they forgot any worries of death and entered a berserk state. Even if they died, they would take the wolves with them.

The ferocious nature of northern plains natives could be seen clearly.

Ge Guang who was charging towards the front was dragged behind by the old tribe leader: "Stay behind me!"

Ge Guang shouted and after killing for a while, he moved towards the front again.

Ge tribe leader angrily grabbed him again and raised his hand: "Stay behind me, don’t forget you are our Ge tribe’s young tribe leader!"

"This old guy..." Fang Yuan sneered inwardly when he saw this scene. In the whole troop, the old tribe leader and him were the only two people with a clear mind.

"You guys go ahead, I will pin down these damned wolves!" Battle hall elder shouted.

His body suddenly inflated and became a giant rockman. He was a Gu Master at rank three peak stage, but now his cultivation suddenly surged to be comparable to rank four stage!

"Battle hall elder!" Ge tribe leader felt extreme heartache; battle hall elder was Ge tribe’s second strongest expert, but he was sacrificing his life here.

"Once lord battle hall elder used this Gu, he had already sacrificed his own life..." Everyone felt an intense tragic feeling.

"Don’t let battle hall elder’s sacrifice be in vain, we will definitely turn the tide!" Fang Yuan shouted.

"Come, you beasts, let this old man keep you company. Hahaha!" Battle hall elder laughed heartily and with just his own strength, temporarily pinned down almost all the hundred wolf kings and thousand wolf kings.

With his help, the troop could finally reach the myriad wolf king.

"Kill!" Since things had already happened, Ge tribe leader charged forward without saying anything.

The rest also followed behind and sent out formidable killer moves.

Night wolf king spurted out acidic liquid and shot out poisonous needles, its whole body was covered with a layer of golden light and looked extremely ferocious.

"This is golden bell shield Gu, we must destroy it, only then can I use wolf enslavement Gu." Fang Yuan shouted.

Howl....

The wolf group howled and snarled as they surrounded the troop. Besides the Gu Masters, large numbers of night wolves were near the night wolf king.

The Gu Masters would have to deal with the night wolf king and also these ordinary night wolves.

More and more Gu Masters died; they used their life and blood to compose a moving battle song.

Night wolf king was extremely fast, much more faster than cheetahs. It did not have any fur but its black skin shone like armor and had great defensive power.

It moved here and there, and every time its strong and sharp claws attacked, an unlucky Gu Master would be torn to pieces. Every time its slender tail flung, the surrounding battlefield would be cleared.

Gu Masters continued to die and injuries also started accumulating on the night wolf king’s body. But the golden bell shield Gu was still not broken.

The offense had only continued for a short while when a large group of wolf kings rushed over from behind.

Battle hall elder was dead and these wolf kings were no longer hindered.

"Wolf King, where are your reinforcements?!" Ge tribe leader shouted as his heart became filled with worry.

"Soon, just a little longer!" Fang Yuan hurriedly replied and ordered, "Ge Guang, lead a group and pin down these wolf kings."

"Understood! Uncle Chang can rest at ease, as long as I have a breath left, I will not let these wolf kings disturb you! Those willing to follow me, come over!" Ge Guang shouted and turned around, valiantly rushing towards those wolf kings.

Ge tribe leader’s face turned purple with anger.

Fang Yuan shouted again from the side: "Brother Ge, don’t be dazed, we need to quickly break the golden bell shield Gu. Once I enslave the wolf king, not only us, even the whole Ge tribe will be rescued!"

"Chang Shan Yin... If anything happens to my son, I will not let you off!" The old tribe leader swore in his heart.

He did not dare to call back Ge Guang under everyone’s eyes, this would be showing favoritism openly. He could only attack the night wolf king in a frenzy.

"Tribe leader is mighty!" All the elders felt their morale raise when they saw the old tribe leader showing off his might.

"This old guy has extraordinary battle strength, he really concealed it deeply." Even Fang Yuan could not help looking at the old tribe leader in a new light.

Those who were at high positions definitely had some areas that surpassed others. The old tribe leader had led Ge tribe for so long, he was astute, capable and not a simple character.

The wolf king was ruthlessly beaten by the old tribe leader; it suddenly opened its mouth and shot out numerous eerie blue ghost fire.

Ghost fire Gu was a rank two soul path Gu. Once it advanced, it would be rank three ghost flame Gu. However, the ones being let out now were from the rank four ghost blaze Gu on the night wolf king.

The ghost fire surged rapidly, its bone-chilling coldness forced the Gu Masters to retreat; the tight encirclement also loosened.

Night wolf king thus gained precious time to take a breather and immediately prepared to retreat.

"Don’t even think about it!" Ge tribe leader shouted and suddenly breathed in violently, sucking in all the ghost fire into his stomach.

Rank four — swallow fire Gu!

This Gu was not an attack Gu. Accurately speaking, it was a storage Gu, especially meant to store fire.

"This old guy has many good Gu worms." Fang Yuan was inwardly surprised.

Ge tribe leader’s stomach inflated by three times after he swallowed all the ghost fire, appearing quite abnormal.

At the same time, his skin turned dark-blue, and blood started flowing out of eyes, nose, mouth and ears.

Rank four — vine claw Gu!

Ge tribe leader shouted and extended out his left hand.

His left hand inflated by five times and turned into wooden root. His five fingers turned into strong purple vines and like a snake or a whip, it whipped towards the night wolf king.

The purple vines grew quickly and bound the night wolf king.

Night wolf king’s attempt to flee was thwarted, it struggled with all its might and used its enormous brute force to violently tear apart the vines.

Ge tribe leader’s face turned pale, although he had cultivated strength path as a minor path, how could his strength compare to the strength of the night wolf king.

The purple vines were roughly torn apart. Ge tribe leader screamed in pain, his left hand turned back to its original shape and his five fingers were all broken!

"Wolf King..." The old tribe leader snarled.

Fang Yuan knew he was going to ask ’where are your reinforcements’, thus he walked towards him and said: "Brother Ge, careful!"

Right at this time, the night wolf king’s tail flung over.

Fang Yuan activated azure wolf skin Gu and moved towards the tail, appearing like he was blocking the attack for Ge tribe leader.

Smash.

A clear sound echoed and he was thrown far away by the wolf tail.

"This... I could have avoided it!" The old tribe leader was stupefied.

"Quick, go save Lord Wolf King!" Academy elder furiously shouted and rushed towards Fang Yuan.

The night wolf king rushed over, it could sense that Ge tribe leader possessed the greatest threat towards it, so it directed most of its attacks towards the old tribe leader.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The old tribe leader dodged and used his Gu worms to bombard the night wolf king; a man and a beast were fighting a life and death battle.

"Dragon Head Drill!" The old tribe leader attacked and retreated, before suddenly activating three Gu simultaneously, unleashing his killer move!

A four clawed wood dragon roared and soared. The dragon head turned into a pike and continuously spiralled, directly smashing against the night wolf king.

The golden bell shield Gu that had been protecting the night wolf king until now, flickered and finally broke.

Dragon head drill still had plenty of strength left as it pierced into the night wolf king’s body. The night wolf king let out a painful howl; the sound was so loud that it seemed to tear everyone’s eardrums, even suppressing all the mixed sounds in the battlefield.

With this heavy injury, the night wolf king’s speed was greatly reduced and blood flowed out of it like a fountain.

But before the Gu Masters could rejoice, this night wolf king’s eyes suddenly turned crimson, its battle intent surged and it counterattacked madly, forgetting all its pain.

Its battle strength had not fallen, but instead rose to almost double of its original strength.

"This is the rank four brave fight Gu, damn it! Chang Shan Yin, where is Chang Shan Yin!" The old tribe leader shouted.

"Lord Wolf King has fainted, we are currently healing him!" Academy elder and the others were protecting the ’fainted’ Wolf King from the wolf group.

"Of all times, he chose this moment to faint!" The old tribe leader almost spurted out blood when he heard this. His eyelids fierce twitched and fiercely shouted: "Then, we won’t wait for Chang Shan Yin! We will kill this myriad wolf king. The wolf group will collapse when we kill it!"

Although the night wolf king’s strength rose, but without the protection of the golden bell shield Gu, it was easily injured.

The battle turned extremely bitter, almost every moment, there would be rank three Gu Masters being heavily injured or even dead.

With the intense battle lasting till now, the primeval essence in the Gu Masters were also almost used up. For the victory, they had to use this limited primeval essence to continue to battle.

Exchanging injuries for injuries, wasting each other’s energy, the side that was able to remain standing at the end would be the victor.

The night wolf king felt the aura of death and became even more berserk.

The Gu Masters were all in disorder, only the old tribe leader was holding up a fight.

"Persevere, hold on!" The old tribe leader moved here and there, working as a rescue worker, and timely saved an elder. He repeatedly shouted, causing his voice to become very hoarse. His speed also became slower and his concentration started to slip.

He was old after all.

"Old tribe leader, careful!" An elder shouted from a short distance away.

The old tribe leader quickly turned his head and saw the night wolf king high in the air, pouncing towards him with murderous intent.

"Retreat!"

The old tribe leader had this thought, but his body could only stagger, the exhaustion had accumulated so much that had finally surpassed what his aged body could endure.

He was out of energy!

Boom!

The next moment, the night wolf king pounced and ruthlessly smashed him to the ground.

"Old tribe leader!!" Everyone shouted and rushed over as they forgot about the danger around them.

Ge tribe leader madly poured his primeval essence into his defensive Gu, creating a thick wooden shield.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The night wolf king’s claws repeatedly smashed the wooden shield; the wooden shield only lasted for few breaths’ time before it collapsed. The enormous wolf claws then smashed upon Ge tribe leader.

The old tribe leader had also used Gu worms similar to ancient bronze skin and essence iron bones Gu, but he was not able to resist the tyrannical strike of the night wolf king.

"Old tribe leader!" Everyone cried out and crazily attacked, trying to draw away the night wolf king’s attention.

But the night wolf king only had Ge tribe leader in its eyes, it was going to kill the old tribe leader to vent its anger even if it had to endure the attacks.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Father!" Ge Guang immediately let out a wild howl at this scene, his eyes almost splitting open.

Brave fight Gu’s effect disappeared, the night wolf king’s battle intent disappeared and it got away from Ge tribe leader’s body, pushed back by everyone’s attacks.

"This is the moment!" Fang Yuan’s heart stirred and he ’woke up’.

Rank four — wolf enslavement Gu!

Wolf enslavement Gu turned into a large cloud of smoke and moved towards night wolf king’s head, covering it.

The night wolf king’s battle intent had disappeared and with its heavy injuries, its consciousness was almost already on the verge of collapsing; and now it had to contend against Fang Yuan’s soul.

Fang Yuan’s soul already surpassed the strength of hundred man soul.

Night wolf king had an intense feeling of conflict, but it sensed the aura of a similar species from Fang Yuan’s wolfman soul.

This feeling of conflict thus rapidly decreased and under the pressure of Fang Yuan’s soul, it did not last for long; the smoke merged with its body.

"Success!" Fang Yuan’s eyes shone brightly.

Wolf smoke Gu!

He quickly hurried to the battlefield and breathed out large amounts of wolf smoke, covering the night wolf king.

Night wolf king’s critical injuries were soon stabilized.

It let out a long howl; under this howl, the night wolf group turned chaotic and shortly retreated.

Ge tribe’s crisis was resolved!

However, the surviving Gu Masters did not have any happiness of winning. They gathered around a deep pit.

Inside the deep pit was Ge tribe leader.

Several Gu Masters were beside him, doing all they could to heal him.

Ge tribe leader’s body had already become a mushy paste, but under this intensive healing, most of his body was gradually restored.

However, it was in vain!

His injuries were fatal, and following the exhaustion of the healing Gu Masters’ primeval essence, the slight hope of bringing the old tribe leader back to life also completely disappeared.

"Father, father!" Ge Guang kneeled on the ground, grabbed Ge tribe leader’s hand and shouted loudly in heartache.

"Old tribe leader..." Remaining elders were also filled with tears.

The old tribe leader’s face suddenly had a trace of red, and before his death, he exerted his last strength to grab Ge Guang’s hand: "My son, be careful of..."

He was just about to say Chang Shan Yin’s name, but right at this time, Fang Yuan pushed his way through the crowd.

"Brother Ge!" His face was full of sorrow, his shoulders slightly shook and warm tears trickled down his eyes.

The old tribe leader gazed deeply at Fang Yuan, his mouth opened and closed a few times but in the end, he had no choice but to change the subject: "Son, from today on, you are Ge tribe’s leader!"

"Father, you can’t die, I am still lacking by a lot, I still need your guidance. Ge tribe needs you!" Ge Guang replied with tears covering his face.

The old tribe leader gasped like a fish that was out of water, his vision dimmed and his consciousness rapidly faded like the ebbing wave.

The aura of death on him was already extremely dense.

"But I am not at ease! I have too many things I am unable to let go of..."

The obsession in him allowed the old tribe leader to muster the final drop and trace of strength; he grabbed Ge Guang’s hand, as his blurred vision cleared up for an instant.

An unknown burst of strength gave him a final breath of life; he shook Ge Guang’s hand: "Son, you need to remember you are Ge tribe’s leader. For the tribe, never let yourself be impetuous and let your emotions affect you!"

With these words, the old tribe leader’s body stiffened and his raised head also softly fell down.

Life left his body. This Ge tribe leader who did his utmost for the tribe, becoming the leader at thirty-eight, and dying in battle at eighty-seven. For Ge tribe, he did everything that he could, using every last drop of his blood.

To protect Ge tribe, he fought an intense battle against the wolf group and bravely sacrificed himself!

"Father? Father!!" Ge Guang howled, not willing to accept this cruel reality.

But truth was truth, since it had already happened, there is no way to salvage or change it.

"Father..."

"Old tribe leader..."

The battlefield was engulfed in great sadness and crying voices lingered in everyone’s ears.

...

Dawn gradually approached, in the main tent, bright light had been kept on for the entire night.

At daybreak, Man Tu finally received a letter Gu from the battlefield.

"As long as we take over Ge tribe, our Man tribe’s power will double!" With this expectation, he opened the letter Gu and hurriedly skimmed through it.

His gaze soon dimmed, disappointment appearing on his face.

"Lord father, could it be that even though we exerted almost all our forces, we still didn’t succeed?" Man Duo was at the side, having waited similarly for a long time.

Man Tu let out a long sigh: "The night wolf group had already charged to Ge tribe camp, but Ge tribe leader and Chang Shan Yin joined hands to gather all their high level strength and staked everything on a counterattack. Chang Shan Yin subdued the night wolf king and put an end to the desperate battle. Ge tribe made a comeback..."

"Chang Shan Yin, him again..." Man Duo fell into deep silence.

Soon after, his eyes brightened as he suggested: "Lord father, we have not lost yet, there is still the final third wave of the wind wolf group. I have a plan."

"Ah? Speak."

"Our Man tribe was defeated twice, the real reason being the Wolf King Chang Shan Yin. This person is indeed amazing, as long as we get rid of him, Ge tribe will be ours."

"What plan do you have, speak up, don’t keep me in suspense."

Man Duo laughed sinisterly and frankly said: "Chang Shan Yin has subdued the night wolf king, this is his strength but also his weakness. With the night wolf king, he has control over the wolf night wolf group. Such huge battle strength surpasses the whole of Ge tribe. Chang Shan Yin has become a ferocious beast that is lying beside Ge tribe, as long as he has a slightly bad intention, Ge tribe will be in danger. An astute person like Ge tribe leader will definitely be fearful and afraid. We will use this to spread rumors and make Ge tribe suspicious of Chang Shan Yin, driving a wedge between them."

Man Tu regretfully sighed: "This plan is good, but is no longer useful. I haven’t told you that the Ge tribe leader has already died under the night wolf king. Ge Guang has already succeeded the tribe leader position."

"What?" Man Duo was stunned, "That old fox actually died? How could it happen so coincidentally?"

With the Ge tribe leader’s death, the whole Ge tribe only had Chang Shan Yin as a rank four Gu Master, others simply could not compete with him.

Add in the losses the Ge tribe suffered after two battles, and Chang Shan Yin’s wolf group enlarging to over twenty thousand, the strength between the two sides was already completely overturned. The situation was all up to Fang Yuan now and with his high prestige, no rumors could shake his authority.

"Ge tribe leader died, but the Wolf King still remains strong and has again subdued a large wolf group. Lord father, does this mean we have no more chance?" Man Duo asked indignantly.

Man Tu snorted, he put the letter Gu on the table and got up from his seat, pacing across the main tent with his hands behind his back.

"What more can we do? Are we going to mobilize the tribe and send troops? We have already lost the excuse called Ge Yao, we have no proper reasons left. This time, I listened to your plan and mobilized the elders, that was already overstepping the borders. Chang Shan Yin, our Man tribe lost simply because of this person." Man Tu heaved a long sigh.

"Then the third wave of wolf group..." Man Duo hesitated before asking.

A ferocious light flashed past Man Tu’s eyes: "Since we have already reached this stage, then continue luring them. We will create even more losses to Ge tribe. If this wind wolf group is also taken by Chang Shan Yin, then I will wait to see the great Wolf King make a fool out of himself!"

...

Several days later, Fang Yuan let his large army and welcomed the wind wolf group.

With his exquisite control, he was able to gain a huge victory. Besides killing the myriad wind wolf king, he also subdued large numbers of thousand wolf kings and hundred wolf kings.

After calculating the results after the battle, Fang Yuan discovered his wolf group had already reached an enormous number of thirty-five thousand.

It was like doing business, the early stage was the most difficult, once capital was accumulated, it would be easy to expand.

After three battles, Fang Yuan’s army of wolves had taken its form.

But to reach this stage, Ge tribe also paid a huge price. Countless mortals died along with large numbers of higher-up Gu Masters. Less than half of the elders remained and even Ge tribe leader had to sacrifice himself.

"Uncle Chang, it is really thanks to you that our Ge tribe could break away from Man tribe’s control." Several days later, Ge Guang paid a visit to Fang Yuan, bringing a rank four impermanence bone Gu with him.

"Uncle Chang’s favor to Ge tribe is as great as the mountains and rivers. But Ge tribe is beset with difficulties inside and out, so we are not able to repay your kindness. Junior saw this rank four Gu in the tribe’s warehouse, I thought it might be of use to uncle so I brought it over." Ge Guang calmly said.

Setbacks force people to mature. With his father’s death, Ge Guang received the position and became the tribe leader. His entire personality seemed to have changed and was much more steadfast.

"You have only recently assumed the tribe leader position and have been managing the tribe, if you need any help, you can tell me. Maybe there are some disagreements with the other elders, you can tell me." Fang Yuan accepted the impermanence bone Gu and asked in concern.

"There might be two-faced elders. It is only that the tribe has few primeval stones currently and we also suffered huge losses to our provisions, providing for the injured and so on are emptying the tribe warehouse. The situation has stabilized now, several days ago, some tribesmen even secretly escaped. Sigh, especially the matter regarding food, if this continues, the provisions will be emptied out in half a month and the whole tribe will have to go hungry." Ge Guang said this and looked at Fang Yuan, his gaze somewhat evasive.

Fang Yuan chuckled: "I know what you want to say, the tribe has to expend a lot to feed my wolf group."

Ge Guang promptly stood up: "Junior is ashamed, uncle Chang has shown kindness to our Ge tribe, but right now, Uncle you..."

"Hehehe, no matter. Actually, even if you had not mentioned it today, I would have done so. The wolf group’s number has gone up a lot, I do not wish to trouble your tribe. So I will personally lead the wolf group to hunt for food. At the same time, while hunting, I will intentionally cut down on their numbers. The wolf meat produced can be used as rations for Ge tribesmen." Fang Yuan warmly smiled.

"Uncle Chang, I don’t know what I can say to express my respect towards you!" Ge Guang was moved, his eyes reddened as he realized a friend in need is a friend indeed.

"Speaking of it, I am also to blame for your father’s death. After all, I made that suggestion. I will reduce my wolf group to thirty-two thousand, I will move along with your Ge tribe, I’m sure you need this protective force as well, do you understand what I am saying?"

"I understand."

Fang Yuan patted his shoulder: "Work hard, don’t let down your father’s expectations. You can leave now."

"Yes, I will take my leave."

Looking at Ge Guang’s receding figure, Fang Yuan sneered.

The young man was so naive and tender, if Ge tribe leader was here, he would already have tried all ways to weaken the wolf group right now.

After all, Fang Yuan already had the strength to exterminate the whole Ge tribe.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sun slowly rose from the east, as rays shone down on the vast, limitless grassland.

Enormous iron-shelled flowers bloomed at a visible rate. A small pink rabbit jumped out of the flower.

This was a pink flower rabbit, a common animal in the grassland.

It did not dig holes, but instead lived in the stamen of the iron-shelled flowers. Iron-shelled flowers had steel like firm petals and could defend against wolves and birds.

The pink flower rabbit hopped towards a flower. It sniffed first and after sensing there was no poison, it began to eat it.

Suddenly, the pink flower rabbit’s ears twitched, an intense warning emerging in its heart.

Whoosh.

Immediately, an iron feather arrow shot through it and stabbed into the grassland.

Two investigative Gu Masters were coming over from a distance on their hump wolf.

"Brother, your iron feather arrow Gu never misses."

"Sigh, the provisions in the tribe have been decreasing. We have no choice but to hunt down wild animals and provide food for the tribesmen."

The two were talking about Ge tribe’s recent situation with worried expressions.

Although Fang Yuan decreased the numbers of his wolves and the dead wolves were also made into dried meat, to Ge tribe that had so many tribesmen, it could only ease a portion of their problems regarding supplies.

As the provisions decreased further, Ge tribesmen were panicking.

The two investigative Gu Masters continued forward.

Not long later, Ge tribe’s troops also moved here like an old beast.

Most of the mortals were pulling big stomach horses, while some slightly well-off households were letting curved-horn bulls pull handcarts which were packed with goods.

Gu Masters were mostly riding on hump wolves and because there was no need to battle, a lot of goods were tied around the hump wolves as well.

Besides these, there were also the lizard house Gu that were very prominent, moving forward like an elephant with their huge legs.

Fang Yuan was lying in a lizard house Gu, his eyes closed as he rested his mind while meditating.

After he had taken in large numbers of wolves, the burden on his soul had become very heavy. Every day, he needed to sleep for at least four hours, and also close his eyes to rest his spirits from time to time.

It was not easy to become an enslavement path Gu Master.

Every path had its own expertise and advantages. At the same time, there were also disadvantages and difficulties.

His body followed lizard house Gu’s movement, bobbing up and down. His mind went into his aperture.

The true gold primeval sea was slightly bellowing in waves, the crystal walls were bright and clear. With such degree of clearness, if he was in Hu Immortal blessed land, he could have already tried advancing to rank five.

But right now, Fang Yuan was in northern plains and his cultivation was slowed down temporarily.

He looked at his Gu worms.

His vital Gu rank six Spring Autumn Cicada was hiding its figure, hibernating at the center of the aperture.

Above the sea, a lump of dark cloud with the shape of a wolf was floating. This was the wolf smoke Gu, used specifically to heal wolves.

On the surface of the primeval sea was the rank five battle bone wheel; it still had many cracks and was drifting along with the waves.

The snow wash Gu was doing the same. It was like a snow willow leaf floating on surface of the sea.

Hints and clues Gu that looked like a cuttlefish was swimming in the primeval sea.

At the bottom of the sea were large numbers of wolf enslavement Gu; there were many rank two, few rank three and no rank four wolf enslavement Gu.

There were also two Strength of ten Jun Gu at the bottom. Fang Yuan had bought five Strength of ten Jun Gu, he had used three and now only two remained.

A Gu with the head of a wolf and stomach of a fish was lying at the bottom of the sea, roaming around from time to time.

This was wolf swallow Gu, a rank four storage Gu.

Fang Yuan had another storage Gu as well. It looked like a cup, it was the rank five moving perspective cup Gu. Naturally, it only had rank four effectiveness in northern plains.

Besides the ones in the aperture, there was a vague second pupil in Fang Yuan’s left eye; it was wolf care Gu.

In his throat was wolf howl Gu.

On the underside of his tongue was ghost fire Gu.

On his chest was an azure wolf tattoo; it was azure wolf skin Gu.

On his back was a tattoo of a pair of eagle wings; it was rank three eagle wings Gu.

He also had bone bamboo Gu and wolf soul Gu, but they were already used up.

There were two rank four wolf sprint Gu on both his feet, they were used for movement.

Of course, Immortal Gu fixed immortal travel was buried in poison grassland.

"I have inherited Chang Shan Yin’s set of Gu worms. Now, I have tens of thousands of wolves, I can say that I already have achieved small success in enslavement path."

But with this level of strength, bullying the weak was possibly but there were still many glaring weaknesses when fighting against experts.

Enslavement path’s Gu Master’s greatest fear was ’beheading the leader’ tactics. When Fang Yuan collaborated with Ge tribe earlier, they were dealing with a wolf group that did not have high intelligence. It would be much more difficult to fight against Gu Masters.

As long as the Gu Master was not stupid, they would target Fang Yuan first.

Back then, Chang Shan Yin was able to kill off Ha Tu Gu’s group of bandits; besides having thousand man soul, he had several myriad wolf kings, hundreds of thousands of wolves, and even a trump card; a pack of elite wolves made up of mutated white-eye wolves.

Fang Yuan’s current strength in enslavement path was not even twenty percent of the real Chang Shan Yin.

"My biggest problem now is that I have hit a bottleneck, my cultivation in all aspects have halted. Regarding my soul, I have already cultivated a wolfman soul, and to further strengthen it, the best method is to use guts Gu. Unfortunately, I am in northern plains and cannot go back to Hu Immortal blessed land. Dang Hun mountain is also dying, waiting for me to save it. Because of Immortal Gu Gruel Mud’s effects, fewer guts Gu are being produced now."

Several days ago, Fang Yuan used impermanence bone Gu to completely transform his bones into impermanence bones.

Human bodies were like leather bags where soul was stowed. Impermanence bones allowed Fang Yuan to make this leather bag firmer, containing thousand man soul was no longer a problem.

"My cultivation has stagnated because of the suppression from the region. My soul has also reached a bottleneck. Regarding strength path, after using three Strength of ten Jun Gu and raising my strength by thirty jun, it had also reached my body’s limit."

"Besides this, with the explosive expansion of the wolf group, the disadvantage of enslavement path has become prominent. To feed these wolf group, I have to release them every day to let them hunt by themselves or lead them to hunt, and if my luck is bad, they might have to starve. The burden is too heavy and the resource consumption is also a lot. If this task was not entrusted to Ge tribe, it would not be something I can do alone."

Fang Yuan had taken the initiative to reduce the numbers of the wolf wolf group to reduce the pressure on him.

Enslavement path Gu Masters consumed a lot of resources and were often only raised by large scale clans. Even super clans could only nurture two to three of them.

These days, Fang Yuan had been considering how to solve the problem of food.

Different from others, he had one great advantage; he controlled a blessed land.

If the wolf group could be sent to the blessed land for feeding and be taken out when he needed them, this problem would be perfectly resolved.

But Hu Immortal blessed land was in central continent and hole earth Gu’s range was limited to a region. That is to say, hole earth Gu could connect to any place in central continent, but it would be useless beyond central continent.

Hole earth Gu was of no use, so Fang Yuan thought of stargate Gu.

This was a new Gu invented during the chaotic battle of the five regions in his past life.

It was a rank five expendable Gu and had stricter activation requirements than hole earth Gu. It could only be activated using the power of the stars in black heaven, and only during the night when there were many stars in the sky.

But it had a huge range that traverse the five regions.

Fang Yuan had the recipe for stargate Gu, but the materials required were rare; it needed many ancient Gu worms and one or two supplementary materials were even from the immemorial era.

Moreover, the refinement success rate of stargate Gu was extremely low, there might not even be one success out of a hundred refinement attempts.

A reason as to why Fang Yuan did not try to exchange for the materials to make stargate Gu in his transaction with Immortal Crane Sect was this.

Another important reason was blue charm lightning shadow.

After Fang Yuan expelled the blue charm lightning shadow from the blessed land, it had been hovering around Tian Ti mountain, not having the slightest intent to give up entering Hu Immortal blessed land.

Immortal Crane Sect also did not take care of this problem, the Gu Immortals on Tian Ti mountain also only cared about their own problems and did not bother about other people’s misfortune.

How was the use of stargate Gu and blue charm lightning shadow related?

As mentioned earlier, stargate Gu needed time to absorb the power of the stars in black heaven to form. But Hu Immortal blessed land was a world of its own and had neither a sun nor stars.

If Fang Yuan wanted to absorb the power of the stars, he would have to open the entrance and let the starlight from the outside world enter.

But if he did this, blue charm lightning shadow would use the chance to break in.

The trade-off was absolutely unacceptable.

Dang Hun mountain was dying, its might had greatly reduced; if blue charm lightning shadow entered the blessed land, it would make the current situation many times worse.

Thus, stargate Gu could not be used.

"It seems I can only look at Lang Ya blessed land to see if there is a way to resolve this. According to this speed, we will reach crescent lake in about seven days."

Fang Yuan sighed, placing his hopes on Lang Ya blessed land.

...

In the dark night with sparse stars, the moon shone brightly and cold wind blew.

On the grassland, there was a crescent moon shaped lake that was fifteen thousand li long and five thousand li wide. The two ends of the lakes were bent and pointed while the middle part was wide like a crescent moon. The lake was tranquil and gave off a crystal-like sparkle. The crescent moon in the sky and the crescent lake gave off their respective light.

It was crescent lake.

The aquatic plants were plentiful here, the surrounding was tranquil, and many kinds of living beings lived here.

There were three-horned rhinos, water wolves, dragon-fish, iron-shelled flowers, steep cliff grass and so on. Horseshoe trees surrounded this lake, forming a sparse woodland.

Lumps of pitch black dark clouds surged over from far away, bringing a chilling and evil aura.

The dark clouds blocked the moonlight and casted a dense shadow. The shadow was like an evil beast, crossing across the crescent lake’s surface and stopping at its center.

"It is here." Several people stood on the cloud, and one of them was cackling.

He was ugly, his forehead was bulging out, his eye sockets were deep, his eyes were closed, and his ears were big and conspicuous. Having disheveled hair and wearing a black robe, he was giving off a thick evil aura.

It was none other than the rank six Gu Immortal — Gui Wang.

"Lang Ya blessed land is hidden here?" Loner Hong Yu casually asked from the side.

He was also a rank six Gu Immortal; with the appearance of a youth, round face and fair appearance.

"I personally investigated this, there can be no mistake. Calculating the time, it will soon be the time for Lang Ya blessed land to face its earthly calamity. Kekekek, we will observe the changes first and make our move together when the time comes." Gui Wang’s tone was filled with confidence.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Time passed bit by bit. The several figures on the dark clouds waited quietly.

Other than Gui Wang and Loner Hong Yu, there were also three female immortals.

Each of these three immortals were beautiful and charming; they were the Hua Hai three immortals.

The cold looking blue robed immortal was Fairy Qing Suo. The petite and fair girl wearing a yellow garment was Fairy Huang Sha. The coquettish girl wearing a pink skirt was Fairy Fen Meng.

The three stood together at some distance away from Gui Wang and Loner Hong Yu; like they were on different sides.

Fairy Qing Suo looked at crescent lake while Fairy Huang Sha and Fairy Fen Meng were conversing softly, glancing at Gui Wang and Loner Hong Yu from time to time with vigilant gazes.

Not mentioning Gui Wang’s ugly appearance that caused the three beauties to feel revulsion, Loner Hong Yu killed his own parents to refine a Gu, and betrayed his brothers, it caused the three female immortals of the righteous path to feel contempt.

But Lang Ya blessed land was an extremely important matter, the Gu Immortal that had resided here before was the famous ’number one refinement path immortal’—Long Hair Ancestor.

This person had rank eight cultivation and was extremely proficient in refinement path, having great talent in refinement path that was rare even during immemorial times.

He had lived a long life, he lived during the era of two venerables; Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

What did this mean? This meant that these two rank nine Gu Immortals did not live as long as him.

His refinement path talent even made Thieving Heaven and Giant Sun, two venerables, sigh in admiration countless times, and concede to him. They had both requested Long Hair Ancestor to refine Gu for them.

In the statistics made by later generations, Long Hair Ancestor had refined at least thirty-eight Immortal Gu in his life; this was only the conclusive summary, it did not account for his many legends and rumors.

However, such a person also could not fight against the flow of the river of time and finally died of old age.

According to the rumors, he became a land spirit after death and was still refining Gu incessantly in Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya blessed land was Long Hair Ancestor’s residence, thus it contained large amounts of Gu worms recipes, including recipes for Immortal Gu!

Hua Hai three immortals might not like Gui Wang and Loner Hong Yu, but the allure of Immortal Gu recipe was enough to let them set aside their righteous path identity and collaborate with these two demonic path Gu Immortals.

Time slowly passed.

Crack.

Suddenly a soft sound echoed, the space on top of crescent lake cracked open and revealed a shining flash of lightning.

"The earthly calamity has begun!" Gui Wang shouted excitedly.

For a while, above the center of crescent lake, lightning rumbled unceasingly.

This was no doubt the descent of the earthly calamity, having created a hole in the blessed land.

Loner Hong Yu’s gaze shone as he stared at this scene without blinking.

Hua Hai three immortals glanced at each other and saw the excitement in each other’s eyes; their breathing also became faster.

Immortal Gu were difficult to find, none of these five Gu Immortals possessed a single Immortal Gu. Of course, they had rank five Gu, and in large amounts at that, with all of them being top quality Gu.

But no matter how many mortal Gu they had, it could not match a single Immortal

Gu.

Gu Immortals’ thirst for Immortal Gu were much more greater than a lecherous person seeing an absolute beauty.

Rumble...

Thunder rumbled in the air above the lake with lightning smashing down continually, resembling a thunderstorm pouring from above.

The second hole, third hole... the earthly calamity created hole after holes.

"This is the earthly calamity — ’Endless Thunder and Lightning Rain’, such terrifying might." Loner Hong Yu expressed shock at this sight.

"If this occurred in our Hua Hai blessed land, even if we three sisters join forces, we might not be able to resist it. Lang Ya blessed land is indeed worthy of being Long Hair Ancestor’s residence, can we really snatch the Immortal Gu recipe this time?" Hua Hai three immortals looked at each other, their faces were pale.

Previously, Gui Wang had given them many benefits and thus Hua Hai three immortals came rushing over. Now, the three felt this task would not be easy and forcing their way into Lang Ya blessed land would not be a simple matter.

Gu Immortals were the elites of the human race with wisdom that far surpassed the norm.

Be it the Hua Hai three immortals or Loner Hong Yu, they were all cautious and vigilant.

Gui Wang observed everyone’s expressions and coarsely laughed: "This dogshit world has always been trying to maintain balance! Blessed land has fortune, so the world sends down calamities and tribulations, doing all that it can to wear down this fortune. The better the blessed land is managed, the stronger the calamities and tribulations they will face. Look at the might of this ’endless thunder and lightning rain’, isn’t it comparable to those blessed lands that has forbidden grounds? Everyone, just think of it, how many recipes are stored in this Lang Ya blessed land? There are definitely many Immortal Gu recipes, otherwise why would this shitty heaven send down such a powerful earthly calamity?"

These words moved the immortals’ heart.

Desire and vigor appeared in these people’s gaze when they thought of the Immortal Gu.

"Gui Wang is right. I have also entered some blessed lands before, and those ownerless blessed lands that were on the verge of collapse had earthly calamities that were as weak as a drizzle. But the blessed land is extremely important, which Gu Immortal would not want it to develop well?" Loner Hong Yu laughed bitterly: "The more developed the blessed land, the stronger the calamities and tribulations, it is not easy to be a Gu Immortal..."

"Kekekekek... cultivation means going against heaven, this shitty heaven wants to weaken us and suppress us, so we have to go against it and progress." Gui Wang added.

"Both of you are rather extreme. Cultivation is actually following the mandate of heaven. We use Gu worms to study the great Dao and law of the world. We manage the blessed land in order to bring blessings and nurture fortune in place of heaven and earth, for all living things to prosper." Immortal Qing Suo retorted with a clear and pleasant voice.

Loner Hong Yu did not reply, he did not want to argue about this topic, considering the situation.

This was the difference in ideals between demonic path and righteous path. Since immemorial times, the difference in perspective had been debated with no conclusion to which is closer to the truth.

Gui Wang laughed and pointed to the hole below: "The earthly calamity has become even more dangerous. To prevent the land spirit from cutting off these holes, we should strike now."

"Alright." Loner Hong Yu expressed his support.

"Please make a move first, Gui Wang." The three immortal fairies reached a consensus.

Gui Wang snickered and took out a green grape immortal essence bead, he then activated a Gu worm that flew towards the hole while holding the immortal essence bead.

This Gu worm entered the blessed land, but it was either suppressed or destroyed by the earthly calamity, as Gui Wang instantly lost his connection with it.

However, Gui Wang’s green grape immortal essence also entered Lang Ya blessed land and immediately exploded, causing the immortal essence in Lang Ya blessed land to be expended.

To Gu Immortals, every bead of immortal essence was very precious. Normally, the Gu Immortals would always try to accumulate them and would not use them lightly unless absolutely necessary.

Seeing Gui Wang act act as the example, the other four successively sent out an immortal essence bead.

Gui Wang sent his second immortal essence bead, and the others also sent their second immortal essence bead.

After Gu Immortals die, they would form into the land spirit, but will no longer produce immortal essence. The immortal essence left for the land spirit, would decrease the more it was used, while Gui Wang and the group were four people and occupied the advantage in numbers.

But even after a hundred rounds, this Lang Ya blessed land still had immortal essence to use.

Besides Gui Wang, the other immortals showed signs of hesitation.

"That Long Hair Ancestor was a rank eight Gu Immortal, although he died, the immortal essence he left were white litchi immortal essence. One hundred green grape immortal essence beads cannot compare to one white litchi immortal essence." When it was Fairy Fen Meng’s turn, she held a green grape immortal essence bead but did not immediately make a move.

Gui Wang’s eyes flickered with a dark light and sneered: "What are you afraid of? Long Hair Ancestor is a person from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s times, and did everything to prolong his life till he was struggling at death’s door during Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s times, and finally died of old age. Although he left behind white litchi immortal essence, but the blessed land has already endured through the eras of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. The former Lang Ya grotto-heaven had already fell and became a blessed land. Now, how much white litchi immortal essence would there be left? Probably only some diluted immortal essence paste."

Loner Hong Yu chuckled: "Gui Wang makes sense. You guys also saw the earthly calamity just before. Lang Ya blessed land holds so many recipes, even including many Immortal Gu recipes, this good fortune is too big and thus the earthly calamity is so strong. Even if it has more white litchi immortal essence left, they would also be quickly exhausted."

"In this world, the daring are rewarded and the cowards starve! Throw in more immortal essence, having invested so much already, do we give up at this point? We might not be that far from succeeding." Gui Wang enticed.

The three female immortals glanced at each other, Fairy Qing Suo spoke: "You are correct, but our immortal essence was saved by us bit by bit, and did not appear out of nowhere. Let’s do this, we will throw in fifty more beads and see what happens."

Like this, after sending immortal essence beads for fifty more rounds, Lang Ya blessed land started to show its inability to keep up.

Gui Wang laughed heartily as he cackled.

The three female immortals used to feel that Gui Wang’s laughter was coarse and ear-piercing, but now they felt happiness from hearing it. They could almost see the Immortal Gu recipes beckoning them.

Thirty more rounds later, the four immortals’ immortal essence entered the blessed land and inflated, mutually affecting each other and creating a chain explosion, but the blessed land had no activity.

This meant the blessed land’s immortal essence was used up!

"Everyone, I shall move first!" Gui Wang suddenly laughed, and flapped his blue-black bat wings towards the hole, and was the first one to enter Lang Ya blessed land.

"Not good!" Loner Hong Yu shouted, and fearing he would fall behind, he turned into a red light and shot ahead.

"These demonic path Gu Masters are indeed treacherous and crafty!"

Hua Hai three immortals twitched their nose with anger and quickly followed behind.

The three immortals entered the blessed land and felt their rank five Gu could be casually activated.

"Lang Ya blessed land’s immortal essence has definitely been emptied!" Fairy Huang Sha said with excitement.

The three immortals charged past the endless thunder and lightning rain and arrived at the depths of the blessed land.

However, what they saw was a scene of white clouds covering the whole area.

In the sea of clouds, there were twelve buildings, each decorated grandly and was majestic, having the beauty of a thousand years of history. Around the buildings; immortal cranes flew, feathermen hovered in the air, colorful clouds moved around and the fragrance of sandalwood pervaded the air.

"This is cloud soil, one can step on it like real land and its soil is very fertile, far surpassing the mortal world’s soil." Fairy Qing Suo stepped with her beautiful feet and spoke excitedly.

"A scene worthy of the Old Ancestor Immortal!" Fairy Fen Meng exclaimed in admiration.

"Legend has it that within the twelve cloud buildings, there are countless recipes stored! To think I can see them personally today." Fairy Huang Sha felt really fortunate.

"Hahaha, everything is mine!" Far away, Gui Wang’s ear-piercing voice spread to them, he was flying into a building on the sea of clouds.

As for Loner Hong Yu, he had already approached a nearby cloud building.

Hua Hai three immortals frowned and after looking at each other, they flew separately towards three cloud buildings.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Several days later.

Carts rumbled and horses neighed.

Ge tribesmen arrived at crescent lake and set up camp around the sparse horseshoe trees.

Ge Guang and the Ge tribe’s higher-ups could finally heave a sigh of relief.

Aquatic plants were plentiful here along with large numbers of beast groups. They could hold a hunting festival and store provisions for their later journey.

"We finally arrived." Fang Yuan was overwhelmed in his heart.

At night, he used the excuse of leading the wolf group to hunt to leave Ge tribe’s sight.

It was a moonless night, but there were many stars.

The wolf group sprinted against the flow of the night wind as they discovered several small-mid sized beast groups, devouring them one by one.

The wolf group excitedly howled, they had been in a half-starving state these days and now they could eat to their fill.

Even if he had a group of thirty thousand wolves, Fang Yuan still carefully maneuvered the wolf group’s movement. The wolf group might be of a large scale, but crescent lake had many dangers, there was an even larger group of water wolves, a three-horned rhino group and a group of a thousand mutated beasts, and finally, a worm group that had hundreds of thousands and even up to a million insects.

Of course these worm groups and beast groups had their own territory and would not move around everywhere like those on the grassland.

There was plenty of aquatic plants beside crescent lake; they did not need to move around to search for food.

As long as Fang Yuan and Ge tribe did not invade their territory, the beasts and worms would not find any issues with them.

According to his previous life’s memories, Fang Yuan moved along the lakeside towards the east and arrived at a stone forest.

This stone forest was very common; there were stone pillars which were grey, purplish black, greenish-yellow and so on, quietly standing straight with a precise distance between them.

There were many stone forests beside crescent lake, but this particular forest was rather special. If someone looked from high above, they would only see grey-white stone pillars and would discover that the stone pillars vaguely formed into a ’thief’ 1 character.

This stone forest had a really impressive origin; it was personally created by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

Back then, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable requested Long Hair Ancestor to refine a Gu for him. Thus, he made a bet with him, he won three rounds out of five; the Long Hair Ancestor had no choice but to accept his loss and agreed to refine the Gu.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable wanted to enter the legendary space door all his life, and requested Long Hair Ancestor to refine the Immortal Gu — Space Escape Gu, an Immortal Gu that could allow a Gu Master to enter the space door.

He placed all his effort in researching the recipe for it. Long Hair Ancestor was very excited and felt that the recipe was good and proper, but there were some places that could be improved.

After discussing with Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, the Demon Venerable became very happy and exclaimed that Long Hair Ancestor’s refinement path attainment far surpassed his.

The two immortals cooperated and spent twenty-one years to successfully refine ’Space Escape Gu’.

However, although this Gu was refined and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable could activate it, it was not able to enter the Space Door no matter what he did.

The Demon Venerable felt discouraged and the proud Long Hair Ancestor also suffered a huge setback.

Later, Long Hair Ancestor researched with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable but did not make any progress. The space escape Gu became the only failure in Long Hair Ancestor’s life.

It was said that even at his deathbed, Long Hair Ancestor could not forget this. His good friend Immortal Yi Yan could not endure seeing his old friend pass away like this and expended fifty years of his life to deduce the future.

He predicted that many years later, after three great eras, three venerables would appear, two men and one woman. The first was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, second was Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable and third was Great Dream Immortal Venerable. As for the problem regarding the space escape Gu, it would be solved by Great Dream Immortal Venerable.

Immortal Yi Yan was a rank eight wisdom path Gu Immortal and was proficient in making predictions, he often made accurate one sentence predictions, and was thus known as Immortal Yi Yan 2 . And this deduced prophecy would later be known as the famous ’Prophecy of Three Venerables’.

Sure enough, the world went through countless changes and continuously moved forward, after Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable appeared. After the Demon Venerable died, a rank nine male Gu Immortal appeared in righteous path and was, as predicted, known as Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

Now Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was already dead, ’Prophecy of Three Venerables’ was mostly complete, only Great Dream Immortal Venerable who has yet to be born remains.

Speaking of it, Long Hair Ancestor was both happy and sad at this prophecy.

Happy because the problem of space escape Gu could finally be resolved. Sad because he would not be able to see that day.

Long Hair Ancestor died and turned into a land spirit with only one obsession - to see Great Dream Immortal Venerable. As long as she solved the problem of space escape Gu, the whole Lang Ya blessed land would belong to her.

"Back then, when Long Hair Ancestor refined the space escape Gu for Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, the result was a failure but they could not find the problem with it. Being greatly embarrassed, he promised to refine nine more Gu worms for Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and he would even provide all the materials required to refine the Gu. Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable later requested Long Hair Ancestor to refine six Immortal Gu. Before Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable mysteriously disappeared, he set up his inheritances in the five regions and made an agreement with Long Hair Ancestor that the remaining three chances for Gu refinement will be left for his inheritor. Long Hair Ancestor agreed and the two made a secret code."

"After more than a decade from now, one of the Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritances would suddenly activate and be known by everyone. The content of the inheritance is a riddle and the riddle points towards Lang Ya blessed land. From then on, a craze of solving riddles in northern plains with countless people trying to solve it started. The rumors spread endlessly, but no one succeeded."

"Later, Ma Hong Yun was forced to flee after being defeated on the battlefield and came running to crescent lake. At the lakeside, he encountered a premeditated ambush. Panicked and left with no choice, he ran over to this stone forest and accidentally discovered a passage in the stone forest. Going through this secret passage, he entered Lang Ya blessed land and met the land spirit. After getting the secret code right, Lang Ya land spirit refined three Gu worms for him as per the agreement."

"Ma Hong Yun obtained these three rank five Gu and after recovering from his injuries, he returned to the stone forest and turned the tide with great might; starting all over again and finally, he obtained the throne of the imperial court for the second time."

Fang Yuan recalled while slowly moving forward.

Then, his eyes brightened and he stopped before a purple stone pillar.

This stone pillar was also common, but a stone that was flat like a stool was near the bottom of the pillar.

During that time, after Ma Hong Yun was defeated, he was chased by the enemy troops and was already on the verge of death. He fled to this place and had nowhere to run with his injuries reaching a critical state.

He sat on this stone stool and gazed up at the sky while leaning on the stone pillar.

Suddenly, he felt that this stone pillar looked like his dear wife.

His consciousness was on the verge of collapsing, he used his blood-stained hand to gently caress the stone pillar and said with deep love: "Lian Yun, oh Lian Yun... I really regret not listening to your advice. I want to see you, I want to tell you personally: I love you, I was wrong..."

At this time, the enemies had already arrived and were raising their sabres high.

But at the next moment!

Ma Hong Yun suddenly disappeared; he had entered Lang Ya blessed land.

Fang Yuan sat at this stone stool, leaning on the pillar and gazing up.

But he could not see a woman’s appearance anywhere on the stone pillar.

Fang Yuan laughed uncontrollably: "It seems this Ma Hong Yun was just thinking of his wife when he stared at the stone pillar. His longing was so deep that he could see Zhao Lian Yun on anything."

This Zhao Lian Yun was also a weird woman, in the future she became a wisdom path Gu Immortal and was a good wife to Ma Hong Yun, helping him strategise. But currently, she was only a little girl.

Fang Yuan took out a dagger and cut his flesh, letting the fresh blood smear this purple stone pillar.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had put a mysterious Gu worm on this purple stone pillar. Blood was only the first criteria for its activation, there was still the second criteria, that was to say ’I want’.

When Fang Yuan said these two words, his body instantly disappeared and his vision suddenly changed.

When he regained his senses, he was in a room.

In the room, the smell of an alchemy furnace wafted in the air. There were dragon pillars, golden curtains, crane lanterns and vermillion windows.

A sagely old man was sitting cross legged on a bed of cloud, his eyes closed as if he was meditating.

He was thin with white hair, having a beard that reached his chest and a ruddy face like that of a baby’s. He was wearing a wide robe and the two sleeves were fluttering in the air.

"Demon Venerable’s inheritor Chang Shan Yin has come to pay respects." Fang Yuan touched his chest with his right hand and slightly bowed.

"You are Chang Shan Yin?" The old man slightly opened his eyes, his eyes flashed with bright light as he looked at Fang Yuan with a gaze that seemed to materialized, "This outer skin of yours is quite interesting. Hm... you used human skin along with shame plum, autumn voice grass. Hmm, there is also pill fire Gu, medicine strength Gu, and some..."

The land spirit frowned deeply and caressed his beard, a hesitant expression on his face.

He could actually see through Fang Yuan’s disguise and even roughly deduce human skin Gu’s recipe by just observing.

"Lad, do you want to exchange this Gu worm’s recipe? I will use a similar grade Gu worm to exchange for it. Or you can choose a similar grade Gu worm recipe. Ah, right! Secret code, the secret code!" After speaking for a while, the land spirit suddenly remembered the secret code and smacked his head.

Fang Yuan shrugged his shoulders: "The secret code that you created with the Demon Venerable back then? Ha, there is no secret code. As for the human skin Gu recipe, I cannot exchange it yet."

"You don’t want to exchange? Why!" The land spirit was furious, a heavy pressure pressed down on Fang Yuan; he could not budge, his whole skeleton emitted creaking noises under the suppression.

But he sneered with no concern: "I have my reasons for not doing the exchange. You do not need to know about it!"

The land spirit laughed sinisterly: "Hehe, you don’t want to exchange, then I shall imprison you here and peel off your skin. After studying it few times, I can reverse engineer the recipe of this human skin Gu."

"No, you can’t make a move on me." Fang Yuan was confident, "I am Demon Venerable’s inheritor, you can’t do anything to me before the agreement of the three Gu is completed."

According to Earth’s understanding, the land spirit was equivalent to an artificial intelligence.

Except that, this land spirit birthed from Long Hair Ancestor had quite a high intelligence and was good at scaring others. In his past life, Ma Hong Yun had been scared by the land spirit and lost the precious opportunity to refine Immortal Gu, refining only three rank five Gu. After that incident, Ma Hong Yun regretted it endlessly. After becoming a Gu Immortal, whenever he thought of this matter, he would wring his hands and sigh.

"You!" The land spirit blew its beard and opened its eyes which seemed to puff out fire; a posture that seemed ready to kill.

But Fang Yuan remained unmoved.

The land spirit kept on staring for a long while before suddenly turning exhausted like a ball that was leaking air.

He then scowled miserably and got off the bed of clouds, walking towards Fang Yuan and softly pleaded while pulling his sleeves: "Young lad, please do a good deed and exchange this recipe with me, please?!"

Fang Yuan was speechless!

This... what was this situation? His attitude change was way too fast!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Young lad, please have some tea. This is a high-grade cloud smoke tea, have a taste of it." Lang Ya land spirit sat at the edge of the bed as he brewed a cup of tea for Fang Yuan personally.

Fang Yuan sat at the spot the land spirit was sitting at previously, looking at this ’peculiar’ land spirit wordlessly.

In the conversation earlier, Fang Yuan had talked to this land spirit, and understood — this land spirit liked collecting recipes, it will try its best to get its hands on any new recipes it discovers.

If it were any other person, the land spirit would’ve extorted and threatened him already. But Fang Yuan was a Demon Venerable’s inheritor, he did not dare to do so, thus he could only beg nicely.

"Handsome young lad, is the tea not nice? Are you happy? For the sake of this tea, exchange that human skin recipe with me please." Lang Ya land spirit showed a smiling expression as he tried to please Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan drank his tea silently.

The mysterious, strong, and sagely image of Lang Ya land spirit collapsed rapidly.

"Young lad, do me a favor, pity this old man! I live alone here, I am so lonely, so bored, so thirsty. I can only look at these recipes daily to pass time. Are you so cruel, to reject the request of such a pitiful old man like me?" The land spirit had a grandpa appearance, having white beard, white hair, and white eyebrows, staring at Fang Yuan pitifully.

"Hey, have some self awareness, you are a land spirit, not a human." Fang Yuan’s eyes were twitching.

"Young lad, whatever you say, as long as you will give the recipe to me, you can do anything to me!" The ’grandpa’ winked at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan controlled his urge to kick this creep, as he shouted: "No means no."

"Lang Ya land spirit’s body shuddered, as it started crying, rolling on the ground: "No, I want to exchange. I want the recipe, I want the recipe, young lad, you are too cruel, too ruthless, you lack compassion. Why are you not exchanging the recipe with me, will it kill you? Please just exchange it."

"Seriously, rumors cannot compare to meeting in real life..." Fang Yuan’s head was full of black lines as the image of Lang Ya land spirit that he had broke into pieces, and was stepped into tiny shards on the ground.

However, this showed Lang Ya land spirit’s innocence and sincerity.

The land spirit grandpa rolled on the ground and cried for a long time, but Fang Yuan did not relent.

He had no choice but to stand up, with tears all over his face, even his beard, hair, and eyebrows were wet.

"Young lad, what’s wrong with your conscience? You are simply too cruel, as expected of the inheritor of a Demon Venerable..." The grandpa complained as he looked at Fang Yuan, like a wife who had just been cheated on.

Fang Yuan could not stand this gaze, he shuddered as he sighed: "Nevermind, nevermind, I can give you the human skin Gu’s recipe. But you have to wait until the time is right."

"Young lad, you are awesome, you are the kindest person ever. So when will the time be right?" Land spirit was extremely overjoyed.

"Hehehe, five hundred years later."

Land spirit grandpa frowned, and immediately slumped: "That’s so long away..."

"Hmph, this is the best I am willing to offer, why, you don’t want to exchange anymore?"

"Of course I want to exchange. It’s just five hundred years, I can wait. Young lad, I will be waiting for you, this is our agreement for a lifetime." The old grandpa said affectionately.

Fang Yuan held his face, sighing deeply: "I have a recipe here, I want to exchange it for connecting heaven Gu."

Once he heard Fang Yuan’s request, Lang Ya land spirit’s expression changed, he stood up right and raised his head slightly, showing an arrogant expression: "Oh, you want to get connecting heaven Gu..."

He spoke slowly and casually: "To tell you the truth young lad, I have an uncountable number of recipes here. If the recipe you produce is already owned by me, I will not take it."

Fang Yuan laughed confidently: "Old man, your era is long over. Bring me a brush and paper, I will write a portion of it for you."

Just after he wrote half of the content, Fang Yuan stopped.

"Write, write it, what else is there?" Land spirit stood at the side, scratching his ears as his eyes shone. He had already confirmed that this was a new recipe, he had never seen it before.

"This is a rank five recipe, where is your connecting heaven Gu?"

"Here, here." Land spirit waved his hand and a connecting heaven Gu appeared on the table.

Fang Yuan finished writing this recipe and refined the connecting heaven Gu, keeping it in his aperture.

At the side, land spirit looked at this recipe gleefully.

The Gu worm in the recipe was a new Gu discovered by Gu Masters five hundred years later. During the chaotic five region battle, it was an era of innovation, of all sorts of new Gu were developed and created.

Every time such a chaotic era appeared, a rank nine Gu Immortal would be born.

Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories, although he forgot a lot of things, he still had a great number of recipes inside his head.

These recipes, to exaggerate, were ahead of the current times by an era! Of course the land spirit had never heard of them.

"Do you have divine sense Gu?" Fang Yuan kept connecting heaven Gu and asked.

"Yes."

"Exchange?"

"You still have recipes?" Land spirit grandpa was shocked and overjoyed.

Fang Yuan smiled as he took the brush and paper, writing once again.

But this time, halfway through, the land spirit laughed: "Young man, I have the recipe of this Gu worm already."

"Oh?" Fang Yuan stopped writing, his expression was stunned.

He did not think that the land spirit was lying. Land spirits were pure, yes means yes, and no means no.

"If you don’t believe me, you can look at this." Lang Ya land spirit grabbed the air, and a cowhide recipe appeared, landing on the table.

Fang Yuan took a look, it was the real deal.

"It seems that the Gu worms in my memories, although they only appeared five hundred years later, might not be new Gu after all."

Thinking so, Fang Yuan laughed, saying to the land spirit: "No worries, if this is no use, I have another recipe."

But this time, Fang Yuan only wrote a third of it before the land spirit clapped: "Although I do not have this recipe, I have something very similar, look at this."

Saying so, he handed Fang Yuan a recipe, it was 90% similar to his.

Fang Yuan immediately understood: "My recipe might have been improved on by a Gu Master using an ancient recipe."

"Young lad, this recipe does not have much value, I will not exchange for it." Land spirit said.

Fang Yuan revised his plans.

When Long Hair Ancestor was alive, he loved to collect and research on recipes. He was known as the number one immortal of the refinement path of all times. He lived for a long period of time, and collected a vast number of recipes, he could be said to have been an extremely successful collector.

As for Fang Yuan’s generation of the new age, they had not reached the apex of the time period, at least Great Dream Immortal Venerable had not appeared yet. The Gu worm recipes in Fang Yuan’s memories, compared to Lang Ya blessed land’s accumulation from many eras, seemed to be extremely insignificant.

"Look at these then." Fang Yuan started scribbling again.

But for these recipes, either Lang Ya blessed land had it or it was a modified ancient recipe, the land spirit had no intentions to get them.

Fang Yuan was helpless.

In his memories, there were some Gu worms that were definitely new, but they had a great importance in the future, each represented a great benefit to him, and could easily change the situation of the regions. Once they get exposed by Lang Ya blessed land, his losses were small issues, but it might potentially alter history, the disadvantages were too great for Fang Yuan compared to the gains.

"Land spirit, look at this recipe." Fang Yuan thought, and wrote the stargate Gu’s recipe.

Land spirit took a look and was interested. The more Fang Yuan wrote, the more its interest grew.

"I’ve never seen these recipes before, they are rather peculiar, very peculiar."

The old grandpa muttered as he rubbed his chin.

This was a rank five Gu recipe, Fang Yuan successfully obtained the divine sense Gu from it.

"Young lad, this stargate Gu is interesting, it has the effect to cross the five regions. The five regions have their respective barriers at the boundaries, but this can actually make use the power of black heaven. This type of Gu worm, usually only hole earth Gu and connecting heaven Gu are popular classics. But this stargate Gu can compete with the two of them, and is not inferior in any way! Did you create this Gu’s recipe?" Land spirit asked.

"Of course!" Fang Yuan admitted it without hesitation.

He had zero guilt in impersonating and taking this glory for himself.

Next, he started to brag shamelessly: "The few recipes earlier were also devised by me, although I also used some current recipes as the base for my research."

This act undoubtedly deepened his relationship with Lang Ya land spirit.

"Little friend, you have talent for refinement path, I am truly amazed!" Land spirit grandpa stopped calling Fang Yuan young lad, but started calling him little friend.

"But this stargate Gu has its weaknesses. You need to gather starlight at night to activate it. Other than that, this Gu’s refinement success rate is low, but if we add a few supplementary materials into it, we can raise the success rate by 30%."

Next, the land spirit listed a few materials.

Fang Yuan frowned as he listened, he had never heard of these materials.

It seems that they were either materials from the immemorial era, or just simply too rare and unique, with little use normally.

Land spirit continued: "It seems this stargate Gu is best paired with the starlight fireflies. WIth the starlight fireflies, you will have starlight, and the stargate Gu can be used regardless of time or location."

"What?" Fang Yuan heard this and his heart pounded, asking quickly: "Starlight firelfies, what are starlight fireflies?"

"You don’t know about starlight fireflies? That’s true, they were already extremely rare during the immemorial era, and were extinct during the olden era. When the immemorial nine heavens were still around, most of the starlight fireflies lived in orange heaven." Land spirit exposed another ancient secret.

Fang Yuan was disappointed: "Since it is extinct, there’s no need to mention it."

"The so-called extinct is merely in the mortal realm, recently, I saw a swarm of starlight firelight when making a transaction in treasure yellow heaven, I think it belongs to Star Lord Wan Xiang." Land spirit recalled.

"Really?" Fang Yuan’s eyes were shining.

The reason he exchanged for connecting heaven Gu and divine sense Gu were so that he could impersonate a Gu Immortal and make transactions in treasure yellow heaven, to obtain resources and stop his reliance on Immortal Crane Sect.

Land spirit’s words greatly increased his interest in the starlight fireflies.

Fang Yuan’s eyes rolled, laughing craftily: "Land spirit, I still have many recipes here, but I only want starlight fireflies!"

Land spirit shook its head: "I can’t exchange that."

"Why?"

"I do not have starlight firefly Gu." Land spirit said as a matter of fact.

Fang Yuan said snappily: "If you do not have starlight firefly Gu, can’t you use connecting heaven Gu to buy it in treasure yellow heaven?"

The land spirit looked at Fang Yuan with a weird expression: "Why do I have to buy starlight firefly Gu?"

"If you do not buy starlight firefly Gu, how are you going to exchange for my recipe?"

Land spirit shook its head, adamantly saying: "Your recipe can only exchange for Gu worms I currently have in the blessed land."

Fang Yuan was speechless, the land spirit was rigid, it could not make such compromises, after all, it was not human, as a land spirit, it could not make flexible decisions.

In the end, after Fang Yuan talked until his lips were about to tear, no progress was made.

The land spirit only followed the rules.

Fang Yuan could only stop his attempt, but suddenly he had a thought: "Wait, you said you will only exchange for Gu that are currently in your blessed land?"

"Yes."

Fang Yuan licked his dry lips: "Then I’ll use my Immortal Gu recipe to exchange for your Heavenly Primeval Treasure Imperial Lotus, is that okay?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was a a rank six Immortal Gu, but it was not a natural Gu, instead was invented by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable.

Rank three Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, rank four Heavenly Essence Treasure Monarch Lotus and rank five Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus could produce primeval essence, giving an enormous help in a Gu Master’s primeval essence recovery.

Rank six and above Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, however, produced immortal essence and had extremely huge use.

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable relied on this Gu to become the person with the most abundant immortal essence among rank nine Gu Immortals in all history.

After Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable died, his Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was protected with layers of layers of security, becoming a famous treasure in the world. However, after dozen of years, an extremely daring rank seven Gu Immortal stole it.

This rank seven Gu Immortal was the venerable after Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, the one who became the heavenly thief, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

After Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable died, this Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was also destroyed.

Long Hair Ancestor had many interactions with Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and after the Demon Venerable went missing for hundreds of years, Long Hair Ancestor tried to refine the Gu. Finally, he succeeded in refining a rank six Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.

Later, he developed a preference for it and advanced it to rank eight stage.

Immortal Gu were one of a kind and their names also remained the same. After they advance to stages beyond rank six , their names would not change.

For example — Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus and Spring Autumn Cicada; when they advanced from rank six to rank seven, they would still be called Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus and Spring Autumn Cicada.

After Long Hair Ancestor died, his obsession merged with the heavenly power to form a land spirit. This rank eight Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus also remained in Lang Ya blessed land.

"Lang Ya blessed land would later be accidentally discovered by a soul path Gu Immortal called Gui Wang, leading the first wave of attacks. The result was that they were captured by the land spirit. However, the news regarding Lang Ya blessed land was leaked by Gui Wang and attracted more Gu Immortals. Later, a second wave of attacks came, and later, the third wave and so on. During the seventh wave, the heavenly court dispatched several rank seven Gu Immortals who brought Immortal Gu to the mortal realm."

"After a tragic battle, Lang Ya blessed land finally collapsed while the Gu Immortals also suffered disastrous losses. Feng Jiu Ge died in this battle. However, Lang Ya blessed land’s great number of recipes were taken by the heavenly court. Central continent’s strength thus rose sharply and with just their strength, they attacked the four great regions."

With his previous life’s memories, Fang Yuan was clear of the future development.

At this moment, when Fang Yuan suddenly mentioned the use of Immortal Gu recipe to exchange for Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, the land spirit refused without hesitation: "This is not possible! Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus can produce immortal essence, it is the reason why I can defend against the calamities and tribulations. At the same time, I need to use these immortal essence to refine Gu. Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus is non-exchangeable."

"Is that so." Fang Yuan nodded with some disappointment since he had some expectations.

However, the land spirit’s next sentence ignited his hope again.

"However, I have other Immortal Gu here. What recipe do you have? Rank seven recipe can only be exchanged for rank six Immortal Gu. Rank eight recipe can be exchanged for rank seven or rank six Immortal Gu."

Fang Yuan’s eyes let out a bright light.

He knew Lang Ya blessed land had a rank seven beast enslavement Gu.

This Immortal Gu could subdue any wild beast in the world; including mutated beasts, myriad beast emperor, even desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts!

Long Hair Ancestor used this Gu to subdue many desolate beasts, including several ancient desolate beasts whom he buried under the twelve cloud buildings.

With these desolate beasts’ protection, the whole Lang Ya blessed land became a fortified castle and was able to resist till the sixth wave of Gu Immortals’ crazed attack, and finally fell at the seventh wave.

"This beast enslavement Gu is extremely important to the blessed land, the land spirit definitely won’t exchange it. But Long Hair Ancestor has refined many Immortal Gu, he definitely had more than just beast enslavement Gu and Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus."

Fang Yuan felt a rush and after thinking for a moment, he began to write a recipe.

The old land spirit looked from the side with his hands behind his back. After observing for a while, he started laughing: "This is the second aperture Gu’s recipe, right?"

"Eh? You have this recipe too?" Fang Yuan stopped writing.

"Of course, I have countless recipes here, including thousands of Immortal Gu recipes." The land spirit said proudly.

’Such wealth, I see why even the heavenly court decided to attack.’ Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed as he sighed inwardly.

"In that case..." He contemplated and started writing on another paper.

He was writing the recipe for the rank six Blood Deity.

The land spirit’s eyes immediately let out a bright light when he saw the start of the recipe. But the light gradually dimmed.

When Fang Yuan had written the third line, the land spirit said: "Although your blood path recipe might be amazing, it is only a remnant recipe. Even though some parts were patched up, there are many conflicts in the steps; there is a very small chance of successfully refining it. You cannot exchange this recipe for an Immortal Gu."

Fang Yuan let out a sigh.

Back then, this Blood Deity recipe that he obtained was a remnant piece. After his painstaking research and request for other Gu Immortals to repair it, this current recipe was formed.

He knew, however, this recipe was not accurate. The reason why he did not choose to refine Blood Deity in his previous life was also mainly because of this.

Later, through a coincidental opportunity, he obtained the accurate recipe for Spring Autumn Cicada. Thereupon, he abandoned the Blood Deity to refine Spring Autumn Cicada.

However, Spring Autumn Cicada involved his greatest secret of rebirth, even if Lang Ya blessed land did not have this recipe, Fang Yuan would not take it out to exchange.

He had taken the initiative to expose it in three kings blessed land because he was in dire straits and wanted to gamble for an overwhelming benefit.

However, right now, he was not in a tight spot and thus did not need to take the risk.

Since it was like this, Fang Yuan did not continue writing the recipe for the Blood Deity.

The Immortal Gu recipes he knew was only about a dozen. But most of them was remnant recipes. Blood Deity’s recipe was already the best of these remnant recipes.

He only had two intact and correct Immortal Gu recipes; second aperture Gu and Spring Autumn Cicada. However, Lang Ya blessed land already had the recipe of the former while Fang Yuan did not dare to expose the latter.

Fang Yuan fell into silence and after thinking for a while, he asked: "Land spirit, can I use rank five recipe to exchanged for a stargate Gu?"

The land spirit shook his head: "No. You can only exchange for the Gu worms that I currently have."

Fang Yuan was unresigned and asked: "Land spirit, could it be that you don’t want to refine stargate Gu? This is a completely new Gu we are talking about here."

"Of course I want to. Although it is not suitable for me to use, I can put it in treasure yellow heaven to sell. Hmm... but I can refine it whenever I want to, and I am not certain when I will do it." The land spirit suddenly reacted.

He showed his intelligence at this time.

"Little friend, you are Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritor. You have three opportunities to ask me to refine Gu. But if you want to refine Immortal Gu, whether it succeeds or fails, it will be counted as one chance. If you want to refine mortal Gu, I will definitely make you the Gu. If you want the stargate Gu, I can refine it successfully for you." The land spirit proposed.

Fang Yuan suddenly realized that there were these small details.

No wonder Ma Hong Yun choose to refine three rank five Gu; at that time, when he fell into this place, he was only a mortal and might not know the value of a Immortal Gu. Moreover, a mortal body cannot use Immortal Gu. Thus, he refined three rank five Gu that could immediately increase his battle strength. After returning to the outside world, he turned the tide around, gathering his troops again and turned defeat into victory.

When Ma Hong Yun later became a Gu Immortal, he realized how precious the opportunity in Lang Ya blessed land was. Unfortunately, he could only regret at that time.

Ma Hong Yun’s awkwardness became Fang Yuan’s awkwardness too.

Fang Yuan was only a mortal now, even if he got an Immortal Gu, he could not use it. Little Hu land spirit could use Immortal Gu, but whether it was hole earth Gu, connecting heaven Gu or stargate Gu, they could not support an Immortal Gu.

That is to say, even if Fang Yuan possessed an Immortal Gu, he could not send it to Hu Immortal blessed land.

Moreover, these three opportunities to refine Immortal Gu also had a precondition, that is Fang Yuan had to provide the recipes for them.

If there was an error in the recipe, the refinement would fail. Immortal Gu were the only one of its kind, if someone else already possessed that Immortal Gu, the refinement would fail then as well.

According to the land spirit’s words, if the Immortal Gu refinement fails, one opportunity would be lost.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable could refine six Immortal Gu at that time; one reason was because Long Hair Ancestor was arrogant and refused to fail intentionally, and another reason was Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was brimming with talent with formidable ability and had made sufficient preparation and made use of every opportunity, causing Long Hair Ancestor to lose great amounts of precious and rare Gu refinement materials six times.

Now, Long Hair Ancestor was dead and had turned into a land spirit, although he would not play tricks when refining Immortal Gu for Fang Yuan, he was after all a land spirit and not Long Hair Ancestor himself, thus his ability in Gu refinement was greatly reduced.

’In that case, do I waste one precious opportunity to refine a stargate Gu?’

Fang Yuan fell into deep contemplation.

According to common sense, these three opportunities should be sufficiently exploited to refine three Immortal Gu like Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable did back in the day.

However, Fang Yuan had huge problems in doing so.

Firstly, he did not have Immortal Gu recipes. Secondly, he did not have the ability of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, and could not guarantee the success of Immortal Gu’s refinement. If the refinement failed, it would mean one chance wasted. It was worse than refining a rank five Gu. The final crucial point was that he was only a mortal and could not use Immortal Gu. Although Immortal Gu had a very high value, it was of no help to him and would instead attract disaster, it would be worse than a rank five Gu.

Even rank five Gu was not suitable for Fang Yuan; with Fang Yuan’s current situation in northern plains, using rank four was the best.

"Of course, I can leave these three opportunities for now. Anyway, I have already obtained the opportunities, even if Ma Hong Yun came personally or that Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritor appears, there would be no effect. However, I truly need stargate Gu at present!"

Fang Yuan was hesitating and felt that he was in an awkward position.

His current strength path cultivation only had thirty jun of strength, he urgently needed Gu worms to reform his skin and flesh. In terms of enslavement path cultivation, there was a great burden in feeding the wolf group and without a tribe to support them, he could only maintain around thirty thousand wolves by himself.

In terms of soul, the wolfman soul was already formed, he could go to Dang Hun mountain and use guts Gu to strengthen it. In terms of cultivation, he fulfilled the conditions to breakthrough, but because of the region’s suppression, he could not breakthrough to rank five right now.

His current situation was like a chess player with all the chess pieces in places where they could not be moved. He was stuck in a deadlock, facing a huge bottleneck.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

If there were no external influences and Fang Yuan could just rely on his own strength, he would be able to accumulate strength and breakthrough when the opportunity comes.

However, because of Spring Autumn Cicada, what he lacked was time. Not only that, if he wasted time and could not make it to some opportunities, the advantage of his rebirth would also be gone.

"These three chances are indeed very precious. Although blindly saving these chances for the future may give the impression that I will be able to make full use of these opportunities, it will in fact delay my growth. Specific situations need specific analysis; I cannot blindly follow Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s example, but Ma Hong Yun’s choices also wasted these three chances."

After deep and careful contemplation, Fang Yuan made his decision.

"Land spirit, I have thought it through." Fang Yuan spoke slowly, "This time, my request is for you to refine stargate Gu. As for the remaining two chances, I will leave it for later."

"You really want me to refine stargate Gu? You need to know you are giving up a precious chance to refine Immortal Gu. Maybe, you can take a gamble and use that recipe for Blood Deity." land spirit instead tried to persuade Fang Yuan.

He liked recipes to an extreme degree, Blood Deity’s recipe might be damaged but he still wanted to collect it.

Fang Yuan shook his head, when he decided on something, he would not hesitate: "No, refine stargate Gu."

"Alright. There is no strongest Gu worm in this world, only a Gu worm that is most suitable for oneself. You can’t use Immortal Gu, but looks like this stargate Gu is extremely useful to you. I will refine this Gu for you."

The land spirit grandpa then willed as he teleported five Gu Immortals over.

Among these five Gu Immortals; one was very ugly, one had a ruddy face, one wore blue clothes, one wore yellow garments and one wore pink skirt. They were Gui Wang’s group.

They attacked Lang Ya blessed land, throwing in their green grape immortal essence to expend Lang Ya blessed land’s white litchi immortal essence.

However, the result was that the land spirit had intentionally shown weakness in order to capture all of them.

Lang Ya blessed land had rank eight Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus and would never lack white litchi immortal essence. Gui Wang and the group did not have an Immortal Gu, thus the land spirit enticed them into the blessed land.

It waited till these five rushed into the cloud buildings before confining their rank five Gu.

Gui Wang and the rest realized the situation was bad, promptly using all their immortal essence but they could not compare to the Lang Ya land spirit.

The land spirit did not use even a single desolate beast to capture these five immortals.

Having cultivated to this stage, the five immortals knew to adapt to the circumstances and immediately chose to save their lives by submitting to the land spirit.

After finding themselves teleported over, they soon reacted and bowed to the land spirit, greeting together: "Subordinates greet Lord Lang Ya land spirit!"

"Hm..." The land spirit stroked his snow white beard, recovering his sagely demeanor just like when Fang Yua first saw him.

"This is Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritor Chang Shan Yin, greet him." land spirit introduced Fang Yuan.

"Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritor?!" The five immortals looked at each other, clearly seeing the shock in each other’s eyes.

Their contempt towards Fang Yuan because of his mortal identity immediately disappeared. Who was Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable? He was a rank nine Gu Immortal!

Since Immemorial Era to Remote Antiquity Era, Olden Antiquity Era, Medieval Antiquity Era, Early Antiquity Era to present age, only around ten venerable level Gu Immortals had appeared in human history.

An inheritor of a rank nine Gu Immortal...

This identity shocked the five immortals before this shock turned into envy and jealousy.

"Why don’t I have such luck to become an inheritor?"

"This kid’s luck is too good, simply too heaven defying. He actually became Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritor!"

"Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had set up many inheritances, it is rumored that his greatest inheritance is in space cave. I wonder how many inheritances did he get?"

The five immortals’ thoughts surged rapidly while they greeted Fang Yuan.

The act of Gu Immortals greeting mortals was like an elephant kowtowing to an ant. But the five immortals did not feel any humiliation.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan was extremely indifferent, even if a rank nine Gu Immortal kowtowed to him, he would not feel any honor. If the roles were reversed, even if he had to beg and kneel to a mortal, he would not feel any humiliation.

In his eyes, all that would eventually die were equal.The only difference was whether they died early or late.

Be it those with status and social class, whether they were nobles or peasants, they were nothing more than a group of fools waiting to die. All of them live in a fake world with self-imposed rules, by comparing the lives of each other, a portion of these fools would feel that they were living a great life.

In truth, those fools who think of themselves as nobles or aristocrats were only deceiving themselves. And those fools who think of themselves as lowly are even more pitiful. Are kings given their high status upon birth? All living beings are born equal, why should one bow to others?

"There is only immortality, only eternal life should be the goal one should pursue! If one cannot live forever, is there any difference between a rank nine Gu Immortal and a pile of shit in the gutter?! I am a huge fool, but I do not wish to be a fool that is made of shit..."

There was no way to express such mental behavior and aspirations to others, and even more importantly Fang Yuan did not want to express them.

Fang Yuan indifferently accepted the greetings of the five immortals then looked at Lang Ya land spirit: "Land spirit, are you not going to personally refine the Gu?"

"Of course I will personally refine it, but having these five as support can be considered making use of trash." Land spirit snickered.

Being called trash and also being disregarded by Fang Yuan caused these five immortals’ expressions to turn unsightly.

Rage was burning in them, but they were captives right now and they could not flare out. They could only helplessly hold in this anger and listen to the land spirit’s commands.

However, the first try at Gu refinement by former Long Hair Ancestor who turned into a land spirit, along with the help of five immortals, ended up in failure.

"Hmph, this stargate Gu is rather difficult. There was no mistakes from me, but rather the refinement itself has only a fixed success rate." The land spirit explained and said to Fang Yuan, "Don’t worry, stargate Gu is only rank five, I will definitely complete the refinement for you."

"Hehe, I will be waiting." Fang Yuan lied down on the cloud bed with no hurry.

The time flow in Lang Ya blessed land was thirty-six times faster than the outside world. Over a month here would only be a day in outside world.

The land spirit had inherited Long Hair Ancestor’s arrogance and his temperament became bad when he failed.

He glanced at Fang Yuan and saw that he had already finished drinking the cloud mist tea, he casually pointed to an immortal: "You! Clumsy and having breasts for brains, I don’t need you to refine the Gu, go make tea for my little friend!"

The female immortal who was scolded and ordered was Fairy Huang Sha.

She was furious, but did not dare to flare up as her life was in Lang Ya land spirit’s hands. She could only bite her lips and forcibly restrain her anger to steep tea for Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan, however, said: "I don’t like to drink tea, do you have wine here? I only like drinking top quality wine, there should be some in your grand Lang Ya blessed land, right?"

"Hmph! Why would there not be? Celestial horse wine and destitute wine, both are top quality wine, which one do you want to drink?"

"Bring out both of them for me to taste." Fang Yuan said without batting an eyelid.

Thereupon, Fairy Huang Sha became Fang Yuan’s serving maid.

The celestial horse wine was milky white and gave off a thick fragrance of milk; it tasted silky, mellow and soft. Destitute wine did not have any special color, looking like clear soup, and did not have even a bit of wine fragrance; it also tasted flavorless. However, the after-effect was extremely strong, usually only one mouthful would be enough to make one completely drunk for seven-eight days.

Taking advantage of the land spirit refining Gu, Fang Yuan just took a light sip before openly storing these two vats of wine in wolf swallow Gu.

The second Gu refinement attempt also failed.

The land spirit’s expression became even more unsightly as he howled: "Hmph, I don’t believe it, I will continue!"

The land spirit naturally sensed Fang Yuan storing the wine, but right now because of his self-respect, he chose to ignore it.

"Young master, please be merciful and save this servant." Looking at the land spirit and the rest going for third attempt at Gu refinement, Fairy Huang Sha implored to Fang Yuan with a soft and weeping voice.

Her skin was white and tender, like a litchi whose skin had just been removed. Her eyebrows were bluish-black, her eyes were like a lake hiding an amorous gaze. Her breasts were very big and her waist was thin, her figure was endlessly seductive and one could even say it could shock heart and soul.

Right now, as she talked with eyes that had tears in them, let alone men, even women would be moved.

"If you can save this servant, I am willing to serve you for my whole life and follow your orders." Fairy Huang Sha implored again with soft voice.

This was a pleading from a female Gu Immortal!

If it were any other mortal men, they would already be extremely moved and their little brother would furiously rise up. Men all had a desire to conquer, especially if it was conquering a noble woman.

But Fang Yuan did not even glance at her. These five immortals were all cannon fodder in his past life, they all died in Lang Ya blessed land. They paid a proper price for their greed and impulse.

Although Fairy Huang Sha was beautiful, she was no different from a pile of dung in the gutter in Fang Yuan’s mind.

"But if I cannot obtain immortality, I am also a pile of shit in the gutter... hehehe." Fang Yuan sneered in his mind.

Fairy Huang Sha was about to plead again. She had complete confidence in her beauty, and right now she had a feeling that this person might be her only chance to escape with her life.

However how could she know Fang Yuan was even more abnormal than Lang Ya land spirit.

"You are too noisy, get lost." Fang Yuan directly kicked the half leaning delicate body of Fairy Huang Sha.

Fairy Huang Sha fell down on the floor, she was baffled and could not react for a long while.

She was actually rejected? Is he not a man?!

A strong sense of humiliation struck her proud heart, causing her face to become twisted and her gaze towards Fang Yuan filled with extreme resentment.

"Hehe." Fang Yuan scoffed, got off the cloud bed and walked towards Fairy Huang Sha, then he lifted his foot in front of her face.

A dull sound was heard, Fairy Huang Sha was kicked over and her head struck the floor, producing another heavy dull sound.

Her rank five Gu worms were all taken away. Under the situation where her immortal essence was used up and was under Lang Ya blessed land’s suppression as well, how could she be Fang Yuan’s match?

"You!"

Fairy Huang Sha’s lungs were about to burst with anger, her incisor tooth had broken from the kck, causing her mouth to fill with blood. She let out a deep growl and her expression turned malevolent; compared to her weeping and pitiful look just before, they looked like two completely different person.

"Hmph, how can mere beauty entice me? If you look at me one more time, do you believe I will not smash all your teeth?" Fang Yuan’s dark and deep pupils shone with cruelty.

Fairy Huang Sha’s delicate body shuddered, she tightly clenched her fists and seemed to exhaust all her strength to stand up.

But she lowered her head in the end and did not look at Fang Yuan again.

At the other side, stargate Gu’s refinement failed again.

The land spirit stomped his foot in anger, his expression turning even worse. He was aware of the situation with Fairy Huang Sha.

He approached Fang Yuan and smiled: "Little friend, please don’t get angry. I just captured this little thing, so haven’t had the time to teach them properly. You can play with her if you want, make her dance or strip her clothes or do anything you want. Hehehe, materials have been used up, I will go buy them."

Hearing these words, Fairy Huang Sha seemed to have fallen into an ice hole. An intense feeling of humiliation surged in her heart like a tide.

"Make me strip my clothes and dance?!"

This proposal made her feel incomparably cold and afraid. Since young till now, she had never received such treatment. A grand Gu Immortal being played with, Fairy Huang Sha felt it would be better to die instead!

Gui Wang and Loner Hong Yu at the side seemed to have been stimulated as they licked their dry lips and looked at Fairy Huang Sha with burning gaze.

The two who were normally close to Fairy Huang Sha like sisters, Fairy Fen Meng and Fairy Qing Suo, remained silent as if they had not heard anything.

As the tragedy was about to unfold, Fang Yuan sneered: "Strip her clothes, make her dance? No need, what meaning is there in that? Lust? Desire to conquer? Hmph, nothing but pointless urges. What I am interested in now is only stargate Gu."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Gui Wang and Loner Hong Yu were very disappointed.

Fairy Qing Suo and Fairy Fen Meng let out a breath of turbid air, their expressions were complex.

The heavy stone in Fairy Huang Sha’s heart fell and her body completely relaxed, almost falling down to the ground. The hatred in her heart towards Fang Yuan and the land spirit deepened by several times.

"As long as I can escape, as long as I can make a comeback, I will cut your bodies into a thousand pieces to relieve this hatred in my heart!"

"Hehe... little friend is indeed worthy of being a Demon Venerable’s inheritor." The land spirit let out a forced laughter and took out connecting heaven Gu.

This connecting heaven Gu turned into a round mirror when it was activated and flew to the top of the land spirit and stayed there.

The scene of pitch darkness in the mirror suddenly changed, letting out a bright yellow light.

The land spirit activated divine sense Gu, divine sense was transmitted into the mirror in waves after waves, and exchanged with other waves of divine sense.

At the same time, the surface of the mirror continuously changed and showed pictures of all kinds of materials.

The land spirit seemed to have already made an agreement; he took out two immortal essence stones out of nowhere and threw into the connecting heaven Gu.

The surface of the mirror seemed to ripple; the immortal essence stones went into the mirror and materials were spurted out by the mirror one after another.

"This time, I have bought twenty sets of materials, I don’t believe the refinement won’t succeed!" The land spirit said fiercely.

The Gu refinement began again and at the final stage, bright starlight converged to become a pair of oval stones.

"Success!" The land spirit laughed heartily and handed these two oval blue gemstone like Gu worms to Fang Yuan, "This is stargate Gu, I have finished the agreement."

"How do I know if it works or not?" Fang Yuan held this pair of stargate Gu and asked.

The land spirit fumed in anger as if it had received a great insult: "Are you doubting my Gu refinement ability? You can exchange it if it won’t do!"

"Alright, I shall take my leave then." Fang Yuan was extremely straightforward and expressed his intent to leave.

The land spirit fiercely stared at his eyes: "Leaving just like that? Then the remaining two chances, you won’t use them now?"

"I am saving them for now. Where is the exit?"

The land spirit waved his hand, teleporting the five immortals away. His expression then greatly eased: "What recipes do you have now? Write them all out and let me look."

"None left. If I had any, I would have exchanged them with you." Fang Yuan shirked.

"I have a feeling little friend, you have something good still left!" The land spirit looked at Fang Yuan doubtfully and mumbled, "Alright then, I shall wait for your return."

The land spirit then waved his sleeve.

Fang Yuan’s vision blurred and when it cleared, he saw he was back at the stone forest. Beside him was the stone stool he sat at before and behind was that purple stone pillar.

The stars shone brightly at the sky, the temperature was low and one could see their breath coming out.

Everything before seemed like a dream, causing Fang Yuan to feel like it was all a life-like illusion.

He looked at the sky, he had spent quite some time in Lang Ya blessed land, but only 1/36 of that time had passed in the outside world.

Stargate Gu, divine sense Gu, connecting heaven Gu and the two small vat of top quality wine in wolf swallow Gu were clear evidences that allowed Fang Yuan to recall this fortuitous encounter.

"I had intended to use all the three chances, but who knew I could use recipes to exchange for Gu, thus I still have two chances left. If this stargate Gu can be used, it would make spending a Gu refinement chance worth it!"

Fang Yuan thought of this as he left the place and returned to the wolf group.

This was a time where he had to make use of every second to prevent causing any complications. Fang Yuan sat cross-legged at the grassy land under the protection of the wolf kings and began writing a letter.

The letter was soon finished, he then activated moving perspective cup Gu. After a moment, the moving perspective cup exchanged with the other one through the space cave; and Fang Yuan took out a rank four Gu and a letter from it.

This Gu was like a dried fish, named dried pond Gu and was a water path Gu worm with a special effect. It is used to boost the effects of other Gu worms.

Once this Gu arrived in northern plains, it was immediately suppressed to rank three.

Fang Yuan browsed through the letter and nodded in satisfaction: "During these days when I was not at the blessed land, it seems little Hu Immortal had been extremely diligent and did not forget the task I gave before I left, refining twenty dried pond Gu. Great!"

Fang Yuan then sent another letter including several praises towards little Hu Immortal.

"Master praised me, I am so happy." Little Hu Immortal’s face flushed with happiness after she read the letter.

"Master, I miss you..." Little Hu Immortal lied down on the table and started writing, "When master is not here, I feel anxious. Master, are you okay? I am sending another dried pond Gu there."

Little Hu Immortal used her delicate small hand to fold the letter properly before putting it into moving perspective cup Gu.

At the same time, she also added a dried pond Gu.

After a good while, moving perspective cup Gu leisurely flew up and entered space cave, exchanging with the other moving perspective cup and appearing before Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan immediately took out the dried pond Gu and glanced at the letter. Then he absorbed primeval stones to recover his primeval essence before activating moving perspective cup Gu again.

After repeating this over and over, he received a total of eight dried pond Gu.

"If I use the eight dried pond Gu together, their effects should stack up and match a rank four level."

Fang Yuan crushed these dried pond Gu on the spot; the dried pond Gu turned into eight halos which twisted around moving perspective cup Gu. At the same time, on Hu Immortal blessed land, Little Hu Immortal also crushed eight dried pond Gu and overlaid them on moving perspective cup Gu.

Moving perspective cup Gu was a rank five Gu, but in northern plains, it was suppressed to rank four. Thus, it could only transport rank four Gu worms.

Now, after using eight dried pond Gu, moving perspective cup Gu’s ability advanced to rank five and could transport rank five Gu.

Fang Yuan waited for a while before taking out connecting heaven Gu and gravely put it in moving perspective cup Gu, then transferred his primeval essence.

After successful activation, the two moving perspective cup completed their exchange in space cave and the cup with connecting heaven Gu appeared in Hu Immortal blessed land.

Little Hu Immortal cheered and took out the connecting heaven Gu.

Tiny cracks appeared on moving perspective cup Gu.

Although dried pond Gu could amplify a Gu worm’s ability, it was like draining the pond to get the fish or burning the forest to hunt. Although it greatly raised the power, the Gu worm would perish because of the excessively forced power-up.

Next, Fang Yuan sent divine sense Gu to Hu Immortal blessed land, and the cracks on moving perspective cup Gu intensified.

Fang Yuan silently took out primeval stones and quickly replenished his primeval essence.

He then sent one blue gemstone of the stargate Gu to Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fortunately, stargate Gu was not an Immortal Gu, but a rank five Gu, allowing Fang Yuan to be barely able to use moving perspective cup Gu to send it to Hu Immortal blessed land.

After the stargate Gu was sent to the blessed land, moving perspective cup Gu had already become deformed with cracks all over it and was on the verge of collapse.

At this point, it could still be used for one last time.

Fang Yuan stored the moving perspective cup Gu in his aperture and did not use it again.

He was waiting now.

Moving perspective cup Gu had been refined by him and possessed his will. But he had already lent it to little Hu Immortal, thus she could also use it.

The several times before were all him using moving perspective cup Gu.

It was because Hu Immortal blessed land’s timeflow was several times faster than at northern plains. If little Hu Immortal recklessly activated it from the blessed land, it was very possible Fang Yuan would not have been prepared.

" Puff ... it is up to little Hu Immortal now. If she fails, she will have to send another moving perspective cup Gu for the final use. Hopefully, she can succeed."

Before Fang Yuan left, he had refined only one set of moving perspective cup Gu. But he had reminded Little Hu Immortal. For a period of time, Little Hu Immortal and Immortal Crane Sect had made several transactions and exchanged many Gu refinement materials, and had already refined the second set of moving perspective cup Gu.

Time was becoming somewhat difficult to endure.

Whether it was connecting heaven Gu or divine sense Gu, they were both rank five Gu and had an extremely huge demand for primeval essence. Even a rank five peak stage Gu Master might only be able to last for several breaths. Thus, usually only Gu Immortals or land spirits would consume immortals essence to use them.

As for why Fang Yuan did not activate moving perspective cup Gu at Lang Ya blessed land, it was because he did not want to expose them. If it was exposed, the Lang Ya land spirit would definitely demand for its recipe.

Minutes ticked by, and with several times the speed at Hu Immortal blessed land.

The chilly night wind made Fang Yuan slightly restless. He stood up and began to pace around.

The sky was filled with many stars, providing sufficient starlight. The stargate Gu in Fang Yuan’s hand, however, had no movement.

"Did it fail? Was that group of starlight firefly Gu at treasure yellow heaven bought by someone else?" As time passed by, Fang Yuan’s heart continued to sink.

He stopped pacing about and stood on the spot for a long while with his hands behind his back.

He gazed afar, crescent lake sparkled with light in tranquilness. The wolf group beside him; some were standing and some were lying down, all with different postures.

He could not help thinking back to that scene when he went to capture the liquor worm at Qing Mao mountain.

He broke out in laughter, his worries gone and his gaze once more became unclouded.

All the worries, all the pressure, all the impatience since the start till now dispersed with the wind.

He gazed at the night sky and breathed out all the turbid air in him, and suddenly felt that his current life was so beautiful; giving everything to pursue the greatest goal, having no regrets.

He came to an understanding, his heart was clear like a mirror that could not be stained by dust, tranquil like this crescent lake.

Since his rebirth at Qing Mao mountain, he had always been exhausting his mind, and now he suddenly understood something.

This comprehension was unclear as it lingered around his heart before finally turning into a sentence, he mumbled: "The night sky is really beautiful."

This was his heartfelt emotion.

The moment he said these words, Fang Yuan’s body lightened and felt he had unloaded a thousand jin of weight, as if he was about to fly.

His entire disposition also seemed to have changed. The cold aura disappeared without a trace, turning into a clear and carefree aura. The dark pupils with abysmal depths let out a clear light now, just like a newborn baby or like a star.

The stargate Gu in his hand slightly shook at this moment and the shaking intensified.

Fang Yuan opened his hand.

The blue gemstone-like stargate Gu leisurely flew in the air, large amounts of starlight gathered and condensed towards it. The scene was beautiful and dreamy.

In an instant, the starlight formed into an enormous oval door.

Stargate Gu had succeeded!

Fang Yuan calmly watched it; the corner of his lips slightly curled up into a smile, but his eyes were still calm as water.

He unhurriedly stepped into the stargate, the starlight in front of him turned into a whirlpool and flew away with his body.

After a dozen or so breaths of time, he walked out of the stargate and appeared in Hu Immortal blessed land.

"Master, you are back!" Little Hu Immortal was extremely happy as she leapt into Fang Yuan’s chest.

Fang Yuan chuckled and rubbed the land spirit’s tiny head.

"Yes, I am back." He gently said.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

After several months, Fang Yuan finally returned to Hu Immortal blessed land.

The little Hu Immortal land spirit became very excited upon his return; the flow of time inside of the immortal land was five times faster compared to the outside world. While Fang Yuan had only spent a few months in northern plains, to her, it had already been a year.

Fang Yuan looked at the stargate behind him.

This stargate, compared to the one in northern plains, was much smaller. It was about the height of a person, and barely allowed Fang Yuan to fit through.

The one at the crescent lake in northern plains was much taller, and was many times wider.

"Stargate Gu isn’t isn’t split into main and sub Gu, it consumes too much primeval essence, even a rank five peak stage Gu Master cannot sustain it for three breaths’ time, only immortal essence could allow it to be used continuously. If little Hu Immortal land spirit activates it first, while i hold the other half in my hands and activate it along with her, I will not have to consume primeval essence."

"However, the stargate Gu’s activation not only requires large amount of primeval essence, it also needs a large amount of starlight, in order to form the gate. Northern plains is one of the five regions, stars fill the sky and starlight is abundant. But here in the Hu Immortal blessed land, the starlight is vastly inferior, as the only source comes from the starlight firefly Gu."

As Fang Yuan was inwardly thought to himself, his gaze rested upon the small swarm of starlight firefly Gu that fluttered about in the air.

The starlight firefly Gu was a rank three Gu, small in size, almost like a normal firefly, but when they were activated, they emitted genuine azure starlight.

This swarm of fireflies, originally consisted of more than five hundred, but because of the activations of the stargate Gu, thirty-two of them already died. In order to maintain the activated stargate Gu, one firefly dies in every three breath’s time.

Five hundred starlight firefly Gu, while it may seem like a large amount, it could not maintain the gate for a long period of time.

Because of this, Fang Yuan commanded little Hu Immortal to deactivate the stargate Gu.

The stargate dissipated, and reverted back into a oval sapphire. Little Hu Immortal stretched out her pale and delicate hands, and commanded the precious stargate Gu to return to her.

"Master, here you go!" Little Hu Immortal cupped the stargate Gu with both of her hands, and looked up with her big watery eyes, offering the stargate Gu to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan gently rubbed her little fox ears, and gave her a soft smile: "I’m leaving it with you, so take good care of it. If I need to use it in the future, I will contact you using the moving perspective cup Gu."

"Yes, Master! I’ll definitely take good care of it!" Little Hu Immortal solemnly put the stargate Gu within the small pocket of her dress, and patted it with her tiny hand.

As for the stargate Gu in northern plains, it rested on the grassland, closely guarded by the myriad wolf pack.

"Master, there are two pieces of immortal essence stones left. I listened to your instructions, using the Immortal Gu recipe to trade for the starlight firefly Gu, this is the excess." Little Hu immortal presented them to him.

Normal primeval stones, were the size of duck eggs, and were grey in color. Immortal essence stones were also the size of duck eggs, but were not oval in shape, rather, they were round like pearls, and the entire body was glossy, having a translucent and sparkly appearance. They resembled crystals, but had the lustre of jade.

If normal primeval stones were equated to mortals, then the immortal essence stones could be equated to immortals.

Immortal essence stones were extremely precious, as it can be used to replenish immortal essence. In addition, it was also used in transactions between immortals, adopted as a precious currency. In the vast Gu world, only the heavenly court could produce immortal essence stones.

"I see immortal essence stones once again." Fang Yuan smiled with a sigh.

These two immortal essence stones were incredibly valuable, more valuable than two hundred million primeval essence stones.

In his previous five hundred years, the most number of immortal essence stones Fang Yuan had held at one point in time was merely over sixty pieces.

Fang Yuan put away the immortal essence stones, "Good, let’s return to Dang Hun mountain".

Little Hu Immortal grew delighted upon hearing this, and quickly held Fang Yuan’s hand, and in the next moment they teleported inside Dang Hun palace.

"Quickly activate the connecting heaven Gu." Fang Yuan commanded.

There was another stargate Gu was in northern plains, he could not relax.

Trouble brews as time passes, Fang Yuan should act quickly and efficiently settle the matters of Hu Immortal blessed land.

Little Hu immortal promptly activated the connecting heaven Gu.

Hole earth Gu, once planted in the blessed land, could no longer be changed. It was the same for connecting heaven Gu.

Fang Yuan’s connecting heaven Gu, since it was linked to treasure yellow heaven, it could no longer be altered.

Little Hu Immortal consumed a slight amount of immortal essence, and the entire body of the Gu worm grew into a round mirror, and floated in the air.

Reflected in the mirror was a scene of treasure yellow heaven.

The grotto-heaven was deserted and absolutely empty, with a lemon-like yellow color dying the air slightly. The grotto-heaven was devoid of any mountains, vegetation, and animals which were usually found in ordinary grotto-heavens.

Above blessed lands were grotto-heavens.

The most famous grotto-heaven was recorded within <>, it was the famous immemorial nine heavens.

Verdant Great Sun refined the fixed immortal travel Gu, and flew up to the nine heavens. In azure heaven, he obtained a segment of the jade-green jade bamboo.

In blue heaven, he collected the eight-sided diamonds inside the star fragments.

The immemorial nine heavens consisted of; white heaven, red heaven, orange heaven, yellow heaven, green heaven, azure heaven, blue heaven, purple heaven, and black heaven.

But later, when Ren Zu’s son caused havoc in heaven and earth, red, orange, yellow, green, azure, blue, and purple, the seven heavens were destroyed consecutively, and all that remained were white and black heavens, with the two alternating between day and night.

The treasure yellow heaven, was closely related to the yellow heaven of the immemorial nine heavens.

In the Medieval Antiquity Era, a rank eight Gu Immortal, known as Daoist Countless Treasures, acquired a fragment of yellow heaven by chance. He fused the fragment into his grotto-heaven, and formed treasure yellow heaven.

Treasure yellow heaven was a very unique grotto-heaven, it was empty without any mountains, trees, or rivers, and there were also no birds, beasts, worms, or fish, there were only precious treasure within.

There was a rank eight immortal Gu in treasure yellow heaven — treasure light Gu.

Rank one to rank three treasure light Gu were everywhere, rank four to rank five treasure light Gu were often held in the hands of large forces. Above rank five, the treasure light Immortal Gu, of course, there was only one which was inside treasure yellow heaven.

Treasure light Gu specialized in assessing the value of an item. The greater the value of the item, the brighter the light of the treasure light Gu.

In Shang clan city, the battle stage would use the treasure light Gu to evaluate the value of their various Gu worms, and thus assess the strength of the Gu master.

The main application of treasure light Gu was not merely appraisal, but it could also be used to search for treasure.

The range of the treasure light Gu was small, and often had to be used in tandem with other Gu worms to boost its detection range.

In the past, Daoist Countless Treasures used the Immortal Gu treasure light to find countless number of treasures. As time passed, he gained his reputation and title of "Countless Treasures".

Little Hu Immortal continuously activated the connecting heaven Gu, the image in the mirror changed constantly, as pictures of various objects appeared.

Gu worms, beast groups, variant humans, vegetation, ore veins, soil, water, quality wine, and other various supplies, all that could be bought was sold.

Suddenly, the screen displayed a swarm of starlight firefly Gu.

"Master, this is sold by Starlord Wan Xiang." Little Hu Immortal land spirit used the divine sense Gu to communicate with the merchant.

"Starlight firefly Gu cannot reproduce, I need a large amount of ordinary starlight fireflies." Fang Yuan nodded as he said.

Little Hu Immortal communicated for a while, then turned to Fang Yuan: "Master, Starlord Wan Xiang said he’s not selling."

Fang Yuan was not upset, but instead chuckled: "Hehe, there is nothing that cannot be sold in this world. Not selling merely means the price isn’t high enough, the benefits are not enough to entice them."

As he spoke, he recalled the remnant recipes of a few Immortal Gu, he wrote them down on a piece of cowhide, and threw it into the connecting heaven Gu.

The cowhide was completely ordinary, but because it recorded the remnant recipes of Immortal Gu, it was invaluable.

Once it passed through the connecting heaven Gu and arrived at treasure yellow heaven, all of the cowhide pieces showed three to nine meters of treasure light. This treasure light was rainbow-colored, a beautiful mix of purple and red, it was exceptionally beautiful.

"Inform him that the price is negotiable." Fang Yuan gave a bright smile, and informed little Hu Immortal.

He wasn’t afraid of Starlord Wan Xiang’s refusal.

Immortal Gu were incomparably enticing to Gu Immortals. Although they were just remnant recipes, they were still often in high demand without ample supply.

Looking at those Gu Immortals who had lived for a long time and had great foundations, which one of them did not have tens of Immortal Gu remnant recipes in their hands?

But these remnant recipes were rarely sold.

Similar or closely related Immortal Gu remnant recipes, when combined with each other, would often allow the actual recipe to be discovered. After the Immortal Gu were refined using the recipe, no one else would be able to create them.

Because of this, the Immortal Gu remnant recipes were rarely traded. Even if they were sold, it would be to exchange remnant recipes for remnant recipes.

Earlier, Fang Yuan had only given the most lacking recipe that he could remember, the treasure light only glowed for one meter, and Starlord Wan Xiang gave him a swarm of starlight fireflies, and two immortal essence stones in exchange.

Now, with so many secret recipes, the treasure light was at least three meters, Starlord Wan Xiang had to be moved.

These remnant recipes, once sent in, attracted countless gazes within treasure yellow heaven.

A large number of divine senses were immediately sent over, little Hu Immortal had to use the divine sense Gu until her little cheeks turned pale.

"Master, so many Gu Immortals have sent their divine senses over, asking for the price for these remnant recipes!"

Fang Yuan gave a laugh, "Send a message over, tell them: Each of these recipes can be sold, but they have to queue up one by one. Tell them about the starlight firefly, demand at least a hundred thousand."

Little Hu Immortal sent her divine sense over, and immediately, someone called ’Fairy Yao Guang’, a female Gu Immortal said that she nurtured a large number of starlight fireflies in her blessed land, and wished to exchange.

Fang Yuan smiled.

As expected, Starlord Wan Xiang also changed his attitude, repeatedly approaching him with offers.

A third Gu immortal, calling himself ’Di Yuan’ , said he possessed a large number of starlight fireflies.

Fang Yuan paused for a short while, and when he did not see another Gu Immortal making an offer, he could help but let out a sigh of sorrow: these starlight fireflies were immemorial creatures, by the present age, only a small amount were still around.

With competitors, everything became easier.

Fang Yuan stayed silent, and let the three Immortals bid against each other. This was an undisguised scheme, but how could there be any morons who cultivated to the level of Gu Immortal? The three immortals did not bid against each other aggressively, instead they negotiated properly, each offering thirty-three thousand starlight fireflies.

The three groups of starlight fireflies, entered the connecting heaven Gu respectively, each emitting a treasure light.

Among them, Fairy Yao Guang’s group of fireflies emitted the most feeble light, only three meters in length, Di Yuan’s fireflies emitted a treasure light of five and a half meters, while Starlord Wan Xiang’s fireflies emitted the most powerful light, seven meters in length. This was because there were many starlight firefly Gu mixed in with his group of fireflies.

"It seem this Starlord Wan Xiang nurtured a lot of starlight fireflies. I remember now, originally after the stargate Gu appeared, Starlord Wan Xiang acted quickly and relied on selling starlight fireflies Gu to earn a large amount of immortal essence stones."

Fang Yuan suddenly recalled this bit of information.

Five hundred years of memories contained too much information, many details were not clear, but upon seeing this, his originally obscure memory became clearer.

After the appearance of the stargate Gu, the price of starlight firefly Gu also rose like a boat riding the tide. In the future, the treasure yellow heaven would not even sell starlight firefly swarms anymore, but only sold starlight firefly Gu.

Gu worms cannot reproduce, but only ordinary insects had that capability.

Immediately, Fang Yuan traded three recipes, and obtained over a hundred thousand starlight fireflies. As long as he bred them carefully afterwards, Fang Yuan would be able to produce his own starlight firefly Gu and not need to pay an exorbitant price to purchase them in the future.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Despite having purchased over a hundred thousand starlight fireflies, the trade was far from over.

Fang Yuan also needed to take care of the issue of feeding these insects.

"Starlight fireflies consume star fragment grass, I happen to have a large amount of star fragment grass on me, I can sell them to you." Starlord Wan Xiang conveyed his thoughts using divine sense.

"I need the seeds as well as your farming knowledge. Let’s look at the treasure light intensity first." Fang Yuan spoke through little Hu Immortal, who relayed the information to Starlord Wan Xiang, Fairy Yao Guang, and Di Yuan using divine sense.

Soon, three documents entered into treasure yellow heaven, each giving off a strong treasure light.

This time, instead of Starlord Wan Xiang, it was Fairy Yao Guang’s document which had the greatest treasure light, at nearly two meters tall.

"I am most fond of growing grass, I deliberately migrated a small swarm of starlight fireflies for the production of star fragment grass. If you follow my instructions, you will definitely not suffer losses." Fairy Yao Guang conveyed with her divine sense.

Fang Yuan contemplated.

Originally he had already forgotten about it, after all in his previous life, he had had no use for and had never use the stargate Gu.

Now, through the successive reminders from Lang Ya land spirit, connecting heaven Gu, and Starlord Wan Xiang, his brain gradually began to recall more distinct memories.

In his memories,once stargate Gu came into the limelight, everything related to starlight firefly Gu became secret, not a single person wanted to sell information.

"Now that Lang Ya land spirit had obtained stargate Gu’s recipe, perhaps it might refine the stargate Gu, then put it in treasure yellow heaven for sale. Once the stargate Gu is put up for sale in treasure yellow heaven, getting more of such secret information will not be easy."

Thinking of that, Fang Yuan made his decision, he let little Hu Immortal transmit his thoughts: "I will buy from all three of you, we’ll deal using immortal essence stones."

The purchasing power of immortal essence stones was very high.

One piece of immortal essence stone, could purchase all three documents, with a quarter remaining.

Fang Yuan opened the three documents, and saw many things written on them—

"Star fragment grass can only be planted in the sky, it grows on clouds. Therefore, it is a good idea to use high quality cloud soil..."

"Star fragment grass is fond of yin energy, but loathes yang energy, therefore excessive sunlight can kill the star fragment grass. However, it cannot be completely derived of light, the amount it requires is about..."

"If starlight fireflies live in the star fragment grass, it will aid in spreading the seeds, and possibly increase the area that the grass can grow in as well as its quality..."

Among the three documents: Di Yuan was simple and brief, Starlord Wan Xiang had innovative ideas, and Fairy Yao Guang was verbose and detailed. Fang Yuan used their knowledge to make up for his shortcomings, and quickly memorized everything. In an instant, he became an expert in cultivating star fragment grass.

He laughed internally: "With this, I will become the largest seller of starlight fireflies in the future. When the stargate Gu is becomes popular, I will make a fortune!"

"It’s time to buy liquor." Fang Yuan did not forget the need to purchase top quality wine.

He had already collected three kinds of top quality wines, this was the last one left.

Within treasure yellow heaven, naturally, top quality wine was sold. It was primarily used to refine Gu by Gu Immortals, but it was also an excellent beverage for enjoying life.

But when Fang Yuan wanted to purchase his wine, the whole of treasure yellow heaven erupted, as countless divine senses were stirred up.

"Immortal Gu, someone is selling Immortal Gu!" Little Hu Immortal land spirit cried out.

The mirror flashed, and the image of an Immortal Gu appeared.

"Divine travel Gu!" Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk.

The immortal Gu that was being sold was exactly the one he needed, divine travel Gu. Someone was one step ahead of him and had already grabbed possession of the divine travel Gu.

"Sigh, after all is said and done, I was late by one step." Fang Yuan was stunned for a moment, then laughed out loud.

He wanted to refine second aperture Gu, thus he needed divine travel Gu. But in three kings blessed land, due to the circumstances, he refined divine travel Gu into fixed immortal travel Gu.

According to the records in <>, consuming four top quality wines was the criteria to obtain divine travel Gu. Fang Yuan had been collecting wine for this purpose, but now, someone was a step ahead of him.

"Without divine travel Gu, the second aperture Gu would be stuck at the last step, I won’t be able to complete it. Thankfully, there is still a few decades of its lifespan."

"All in all, it was because I was too high profile on San Cha mountain when I refined the Gu, causing everyone to know about it. It is not strange that someone snatched it from me."

Fang Yuan shrugged, he had predicted this long ago.

When he used divine travel Gu to refine fixed immortal travel Gu, it was seen by a lot of Gu Masters. This definitely caused a great commotion, the Gu Immortals in southern border were not idiots, how could they not act?

But earlier, Fang Yuan was banking on the competition between Gu Immortals, that they would restrict each other and delay their progress, thus he was working hard to collect the wines.

In life, there were always a few things that one had to work hard for despite a low chance of success so that they would not have regrets. If they did not even work for it, then it would be absolutely hopeless.

"Regarding matters in this world, most do not go according to one’s wishes, I am used to that. But since this divine travel Gu was put up for transaction here, I have to take a look, there might still be a chance."

Fang Yuan took it in his stride, he did not worry about losses or boast over gains, his mind was always peaceful and calm.

Since treasure yellow heaven was the greatest transaction market among Gu Immortals, there were very rare instances where Immortal Gu were sold.

These transactions were mostly using Immortal Gu to trade for Immortal Gu. But the Gu Immortal who sold the divine travel Gu, Old Man Yan Shi, had a rather peculiar transaction request.

"I want to use this divine travel Gu to exchange for the second aperture Gu’s recipe."

The information in this request was too stunning, it created a lot of commotion. In treasure yellow heaven, the divine senses of all sorts of Gu Immortals were interacting with each other, turning the scene into chaos.

"Divine travel Gu! To think that we will get to see this legendary Gu worm today."

"Although it is an Immortal Gu, the divine travel Gu’s ability is way too random. Back then, even Ren Zu’s son got into trouble using it, it will be even more dangerous for us tiny Gu Immortals."

"But divine travel Gu is still an Immortal Gu, keeping it with you, when you are forced into a dead end, you can use it to gamble at the moment of despair."

"Compared to the divine travel Gu, I am more interested in the second aperture Gu’s recipe!"

"That’s right, I’ve heard of the second aperture Gu long ago, but to think the recipe really exists?"

"A second aperture! Hehe, mortals might not understand the full value of this, but to us Gu Immortals, who would not be moved?"

...

Fang Yuan had already stood up, gazing at the connecting heaven Gu in mid air.

He had the second aperture Gu’s recipe, he just needed a thought to exchange for this Gu.

But!

"This Old Man Yan Shi who is selling the divine travel Gu is coming for me. He requested for the second aperture Gu’s recipe... and his timing in selling this Gu was neither early nor late, he picked the exact moment when I was browsing through... impressive! This Gu Immortal is mostly likely on the immemorial wisdom path, he is adept at predictions and deductions. The fact that I had used connecting heaven Gu and was trading in treasure yellow heaven was already foreseen by him!"

Wisdom path was a very mysterious path among Gu Masters. It had been passed down since the immemorial era, but the numbers were always very small.

The creator of the wisdom path was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the lord of the second generation heavenly court. She lived for nineteen thousand years, and had the second longest lifespan among the rank nine Gu Immortals.

Before she died, she deduced from the heavenly secret, and obtained the information of all that happened three million years after her death. She found out that after her death, the heavenly court would be without a lord for a long time, causing a long period of turmoil as three Demon Venerables appear.

She made three arrangements that dealt with each of the three Demon Venerables respectively. Next, she instructed her descendants to follow what she said to ensure that the heavenly court was peaceful for three hundred years.

After she died, there was a huge turmoil indeed as the era shifted, as during three great generations, three Demon Venerables appeared one after another.

The three Demon Venerables were invincible during their times, attacking the heavenly court but were obstructed by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s plans, failing and causing the heavenly court to stay intact.

"Wisdom path Gu Immortal... Old Man Yan Shi..." Fang Yuan squinted his eyes, muttering. It was not a good thing to be targeted by a wisdom path Gu immortal.

Wisdom path Gu Immortals knew about the heavenly secret and were most skilled at making arrangements ahead of time and making predictions about the future. Often, they could scheme against people without them knowing, causing others to fall into traps unknowingly.

"I gathered too much attention in southern border, and ended up attracting a wisdom path Gu Immortal. Hehehe, in this life I was courageous and made great progress, charging through a dangerous cliff, I went too fast and with just my mortal body, I gained the attention of a Gu Immortal!"

Such a scenario was like an ant attracting the attention of an elephant.

At once, Fang Yuan could almost see a pair of wise and scheming eyes piercing through the connecting heaven Gu to observe himself.

The air was filled with formless pressure.

But Fang Yuan’s state of mind was no longer like before, he laughed with his head up high, dispelling the pressure in his heart.

"Good, the schemes of a wisdom path Gu Immortal makes this much more interesting. Hmph, just a mere divine travel Gu, just a mere second aperture Gu, how can that entice me?"

His five hundred years of experience nurtured a keen instinct that was sensitive to danger.

Fang Yuan had a vague feeling, this divine travel Gu was likely bait that Old Man Yan Shi was using to attract him.

"Although an Immortal Gu is good, my goal is eternal life, this so-called Immortal Gu is merely a tool in my cultivation journey."

...

At the same time, in southern border, Sheng Si blessed land.

An old man, wearing a black robe, gave off the eerie aura of a rank seven Gu

Immortal as he sat on the cushion silently.

His face was wrinkled, his eyes were dark without any white parts in them.

He stared at the connecting heaven Gu in the sky, feeling the divine senses moving about inside treasure yellow heaven. He was expressionless and motionless.

It was Old Man Yan Shi!

Before the old man was the kneeling killer ghost doctor Chou Jiu.

He looked at connecting heaven Gu for a long time, before showing disappointment: "Supreme Master, it seems that Fang Yuan did not take the bait."

Old Man Yan Shi smiled, not showing any annoyance: "This tiny fish is interesting, he is able to let go so easily, as a mere mortal, his disposition surpasses a large number of Gu Immortals. But he was too daring, he turned you into his slave and messed with us Shadow Sect. He is simply courting death."

Chou Jiu quickly bowed: "All thanks to Supreme Master’s return, otherwise, I would’ve suffered the fate of being a slave for life!"

"Mm..." Old Man Yan Shi raised his head: "Little disciple, I have already altered the slavery Gu on you. I calculated that Fang Yuan would join the righteous demonic battle of Yi Tian mountain, at that time you can be a spy by his side, and wait for a chance to strike."

"Yes, Supreme Master!"

"Mm, go down and call your junior sister Bai Ning Bing."

"Yes, this disciple takes his leave."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

An Immortal Gu was hovering in the air, emitting quiet and exquisite light.

A lemon colored halo completely covered Bai Ning Bing’s body and sank into her aperture.

Yellow-green light colored vines had already creeped around her aperture walls, densely attached to the walls.

After a moment, Old Man Yan Shi took a deep breath and recalled the Immortal Gu back to his aperture: "Alright, I have used everlasting Gu’s ability on your aperture; you will be fine for the next three months. According to your cultivation speed, you must come here after three months to reinforce your aperture again."

It has already been a long time since the San Cha mountain battle. Bai Ning Bing’s aptitude had already recovered to a hundred percent, restoring one of the ten extreme aptitudes - Northern Dark Ice Soul physique.

A hundred percent primeval essence emitted an extremely great pressure on her aperture. If not for Old Man Yan Shi using everlasting Gu to reinforce her aperture, Bai Ning Bing would not have survived till now.

Although Old Man Yan Shi was her life saving benefactor, Bai Ning Bing did not feel any gratitude, instead she stood upright with an ice cold demeanour.

After Old Man Yan Shi took away the Immortal Gu, she opened her blue eyes, her gaze cold and her expression indifferent.

She was no more the novice, greenhorn kid from back then.

By travelling alongside Fang Yuan, she had learned many things.

Old Man Yan Shi had taken the initiative to look for her after knowing about her through Chou Jiu, clearly to make use of her. Her joining Shadow Sect was also no more than a transaction.

Old Man Yan Shi smiled warmly: "Bai Ning Bing, as long as you sincerely pledge allegiance to Shadow Sect, and make a new sea oath, I will turn you back to a male."

"Hmph, no need. You are helping me to suppress my aperture, so I am joining Shadow Sect temporarily to help you deal with Fang Yuan and obtain fixed immortal travel Gu from him; this is nothing more than a fair transaction. As for my male body, I will personally retrieve it, only then can it be spectacular. How could I, Bai Ning Bing, do something like relying on others?"

Bai Ning Bing then turned around and left.

Only when she exited the secret room, did Bai Ning Bing’s ice cold expression loosen up, her brows furrowed and her gaze turned cold.

She did not like this rank seven wisdom path Gu Immortal Old Man Yan Shi; she always felt he had a hidden motive.

Although the other was a Gu Immortal, Bai Ning Bing had never feared death. As a person who was not afraid of death, why would she be afraid of Gu Immortals?

However, they had the same objective, both f them wanted to deal with Fang Yuan, so Bai Ning Bing agreed to this transaction and joined Shadow Sect temporarily.

"Fang Yuan..."

When she thought of him, Bai Ning Bing could not help thinking back to the scene at three kings blessed land.

Under countless people’s eyes, Fang Yuan flew towards heaven and with a mortal body, refined an Immortal Gu!

Shortly after, three kings blessed land collapsed and everyone fell into chaos as they hurried to leave San Cha mountain. Winds of assimilation blew and wiped out the whole San Cha mountain until it was a barren land.

Little beast king’s name was talked by countless people and soon spread to the whole southern border crazily. Fang Yuan disappeared, and Gu Immortals gave orders to all their forces to look for him.

Bai Ning Bing who had travelled together with him, naturally became a target all great forces chased after. Whether it was righteous path or demonic path, they all wanted to get her.

If not for Wei Yang’s sense of brotherhood and thus intentionally let go of Bai Ning Bing, as well as her meeting Chou Jiu while gravely injured, Bai Ning Bing would have been a captive somewhere already.

After Chou Jiu healed her injuries, he made a proposal to her to join Shadow Sect and deal with Fang Yuan together.

After Bai Ning Bing’s scheme against Fang Yuan failed, she was even confident of her guess that Fang Yuan had a prediction Gu. And when she heard behind Chou Jiu was a similar predictive wisdom path Gu Immortal, she could not help but be moved.

Although she did not fear death, she was truly not resigned to losing her life like that and letting Fang Yuan live; it would be her greatest defeat, and was too lackluster.

Thus, she agreed to Chou Jiu’s request and temporarily joined Shadow Sect, making an oath in front of the Immortal Gu, Sea Oath Gu, with Old Man Yan Shi and Chou Jiu: She was free to leave and regain her freedom once they killed Fang Yuan. At the same time, Shadow Sect cannot directly or indirectly make a move against her.

When Bai Ning Bing’s receding figure disappeared, Old Man Yan Shi’s expression slowly turned dark.

Bai Ning Bing had a demonic nature, causing even this wisdom path Gu Immortal Old Man Yan Shi to find it hard to control her.

"This kid has no care for laws and morality, and is only joining hands with me because of the situation. She is absolutely not someone who will stay under others for long." Old Man Yan Shi’s gaze was extremely profound.

"But it is not important. I have planned for so many years in my quest for immortality, why would I be afraid of the tiny ripples that this little fish can create? Hmph!"

Old Man Yan Shi coldly snorted and turned his gaze to connecting heaven Gu’s screen.

Right at this time, a divine sense was transmitted to him —"I have second aperture Gu’s recipe here, I want to exchange with your divine travel Gu."

The owner of the divine sense called himself Lang Ya old immortal.

"Hehehehe..." Old Man Yan Shi laughed heartily.

The fish has taken the bait!

Who said this bait could only lure Fang Yuan? Fang Yuan was only a small fish, Lang Ya land spirit was the true big fish.

"Lang Ya blessed land is rumored to have stored countless recipes. It has dropped from a grotto-heaven to a blessed land, and in the present age, it can be said to be the number one blessed land! Even more importantly, this blessed land has a lot of Immortal Gu as well. Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus is at the top, I must obtain it!"

Old Man Yan Shi’s eyes flickered with a burning light filled with avarice.

He had been scheming since a long, long time ago.

In actual fact, the second aperture Gu recipe that Lang Ya blessed land had was intentionally due to his planning.

With Lang Ya land spirit’s love for collecting recipes and refining Gu, he would definitely want to refine second aperture Gu!

"Now I have to wait for a good opportunity!" Old Man Yan Shi sneered at the side while sending out his divine sense to accept Lang Ya land spirit’s offer and began their transaction at Treasure Yellow Heaven.

Divine travel Gu came out from the mirror, even if the connecting heaven Gu’s ability had been amplified by many other Gu, it still caused the connecting heaven Gu to be filled with cracks, and after several breaths, completely collapsed.

Lang Ya land spirit did not care about this connecting heaven Gu, there were still many connecting heaven Gu left in the blessed land.

The land spirit looked at divine travel Gu with a burning gaze and laughed heartily: "I had already wanted to refine second aperture Gu, haha, this is really too good!"

He took out another connecting heaven Gu on the spot and connected to treasure yellow heaven, looking for Gu refinement materials without restraint.

"Hehehe, an easy pray!" Old Man Yan Shi laughed heartily as he looked at this scene through connecting heaven Gu.

A heavyweight transaction relating to Immortal Gu naturally would be noticed by many Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan was also paying attention.

"Who bought the divine travel Gu?" Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed and immediately asked Little Hu Immortal.

"It is Lang Ya old immortal." Little Hu Immortal replied with clear voice.

"Lang Ya land spirit... Just like what I expected." Fang Yuan slightly narrowed his eyes before concentrating on connecting heaven Gu again.

After a moment, he discovered Lang Ya land spirit wantonly buying Gu refinement materials; his eyes flashed with rays of cold light.

"Hmph, so many Gu Immortals are dumping precious Gu refinement materials to Lang Ya land spirit. This is clearly a trap. The land spirits have wisdom, but their obsessions are much deeper and can be easily exploited by Gu Immortals. Wait a second..."

Fang Yuan’s thoughts suddenly shook.

The immortals selling the Gu refinement materials were metal path Gu Immortal Tie Jia Zi, soul path Gu Immortal Wang Gan Yang, wood path Gu Immortal Fairy Tan Xiang, enslavement path Gu Immortal Great Immortal Xue Xiong... These names were familiar.

’Weren’t they the Gu Immortals who participated in the second wave of attacks against Lang Ya blessed land?’

For a moment, Fang Yuan’s eyes flickered with sharp light, he became aware of an enormous scheme that had not been recorded in the history.

"So it was like this! In my past life, Lang Ya blessed land endured six waves of attack before finally collapsing in the seventh wave. So there were manipulators behind the scene, they were hatching a sinister plot."

Before, Fang Yuan was only an audience, but now that he was involved, he discovered this truth.

"This Old Man Yan Shi’s purpose in selling divine travel Gu is not just to aim at me, his bigger target is Lang Ya blessed land. Out of the seven waves of attack, how many did he organize?"

"If he is southern border’s Gu Immortal, then why would these northern plains Gu Immortals listen to his arrangements? Is he indirectly making use of them or did he give them a direct order?"

No doubt, the wisdom path Gu Immortal Old Man Yan Shi had organized a group of immortals; just this information created a formless pressure.

Fang Yuan did not know right now that this organization was the Shadow Sect he had heard before!

But this did not hinder him from guessing the strength and the mystery of this organization.

An organization that spanned across southern border and northern plains, how big would it be? But Fang Yuan had never heard of such an organization, even in the five hundred years of his past life. How mysterious was this organization?

"Of course, all these speculations are based on the foundation that Old Man Yan Shi is a Gu Immortal of Southern Border. Maybe it is all just a coincidence?"

"Let me think again, did Old Man Yan Shi plan the first wave of attack? As for the next waves of attack, did he have a hand in them? As for the seventh wave, it was Heavenly Court’s move, that was absolutely not something Old Man Yan Shi could control."

Fang Yuan was certain of this.

Heavenly Court was high above others, it originated from central continent and had a formidable background, it was not something an immortal of Southern Border could interfere in.

Among the five great regions, since ancient times till now, the greatest Gu Immortal organization was only the Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court’s might made people feel suffocation. Only rank eight and rank nine Gu Immortals could establish their presence there.

This point could be judged from the conclusion.

After the Heavenly Court made their move, they left after taking away all the recipes in Lang Ya blessed land.

"Where was Old Man Yan Shi at that time in my previous life?"

Old Man Yan Shi was a mysterious character who had hidden in the depths of the history! Behind him was a mysterious organization that had influence in both northern plains and southern border, two great regions.

"Wisdom path Gu Immortal, a mysterious organization, Heavenly Court... The path to immortality is truly fraught with danger at every step. When I burst through these obstacles, how great would I feel?"

The higher the difficulty and stronger the enemies, the more fighting spirit Fang Yuan would have.

The path he was walking on was destined to be a lonely one from the start, destined to make an enemy of the world. Heavenly Court and the mysterious organization were like two giant beasts blocking this path. At the same time, this dark path was filled with thorns, traps and schemes.

This was an incomparably difficult path.

And no one had been able to reach the end since ancient times.

Fang Yuan, however, was fighting by himself, marching by himself and waging war by himself.

The source of all his motivation was the simplest, most insatiable, most sneered at and most incomprehensible...

Dream.

A seemingly unrealistic dream about eternal life.

Whether he could succeed or not, Fang Yuan had never considered it.

He only knew that even if he failed and died, he would have no regrets.

Today, through a transaction, he discovered the whirlpool that had been hidden in the shadows. Then he looked at the prospects of his own path which was filled with incomparable darkness, incomparable danger and dead ends at almost every step.

"Since there is no path to walk on, I shall carve out my own path."

Fang Yuan smiled, his gaze containing a profound light and his disordered thoughts all tidied up as he once again concentrated on connecting heaven Gu.

It was time to buy relic Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Relic Gu can directly increase the foundation of the aperture, raising a Gu Master’s cultivation realm.

From rank one two five, they were: green bronze, red steel, white silver, yellow gold, and purple crystal relic Gu. Relic Gu were mortal Gu, there were no rank six and above Immortal Gu for it.

Among them, green bronze, red steel, and white silver relic Gu were widely sold in the market. As for yellow gold and purple crystal relic Gu, because they affected the battle strength of rank four and five Gu Masters, and could influence the status of many forces, they were restricted and controlled by large organisations, and were hardly sold in the market.

But in treasure yellow heaven, yellow gold and purple crystal relic Gu were available.

Gu Immortals could not raise their cultivation through purple crystal relic Gu, but they were still very rare Gu.

Because not only could these two Gu be used to rank cultivation, they were used to refine Immortal Gu as well. In Immortal Gu recipes, they were often used as important catalysts.

Other than refinement, if a Gu Immortal had descendants, they would collect many relic Gu for their clans or juniors to use.

Thus in treasure yellow heaven, although rank one to three relic Gu were sold in batches, there were few rank four yellow gold relic Gu, and even less purple gold relic Gu.

Yellow gold, purple crystal relic Gu, these were widely used in Immortal Gu recipes, when Fang Yuan refined the Spring Autumn Cicada, and the second aperture Gu, he used them in the process. In fact, even the Immortal Gu Blood Deity’s remnant recipe also required large amounts of relic Gu.

But because Immortal Gu were involved, prices of relic Gu were always sky high. Even so, this situation was way better than the mortal realm’s restrict control.

Fang Yuan immediately bought three purple crystal relic Gu, and spent a great sum to buy an immediate success Gu.

This Gu was much more expensive than purple crystal relic Gu, because it could raise the success rate of Gu refinement.

Thereafter, Fang Yuan bought a large number of low rank Gu and refinement materials, preparing to refine rank five breath concealment Gu and others.

Although treasure yellow heaven could inspect the treasure light, just the height of the light could not detect whether the Gu worm had been tampered with. Thus, it is not very safe, and Fang Yuan decided to refine the Gu himself to be safe.

Selling all the remnant recipes in his hand and buying large amounts of resources, after deducting treasure yellow heaven’s processing fee, Fang Yuan had twenty-eight pieces of immortal essence stones left in his possession.

Of course, he could repeatedly sell these Immortal Gu remnant recipes, but their corresponding treasure light would decrease, only after an amount of time would the treasure light recover.

Transactions in treasure yellow heaven heavily depended on the treasure light. The stronger the light, the higher the price. When the treasure light weakened, the sale price would fall as well.

After all, the value of remnant recipes drop when more people know about them. If he continued to sell them, Fang Yuan’s earning will decrease, and the Gu Immortals who bought them earlier would feel that they suffered a loss. Waiting for a period of time before selling it again benefited both parties.

The seller sells at the original price, while buyers gain a lot of precious time to research on the recipe, after all, Immortal Gu were unique once they were created.

"This way, the most precious recipes I have left are Spring Autumn Cicada, second aperture Gu, and the remnant recipe of Blood Deity. As for the other recipes, I can sell them again, but only in a few months."

This time obviously referred to the five regions’ time.

As for the other recipes like using divine travel Gu to refine fixed immortal travel Gu were known by all. There would be no light if it was placed into treasure yellow heaven.

"Rockmen, I have to provide them to Immortal Crane Sect, this is to make sure Immortal Crane Sect does not find out the truth, so that I can relieve our tensions and stall for time."

Now that Dang Hun mountain was dying, the production of guts Gu were decreasing. The number of rockmen in each transaction had been dropping, as Immortal Crane Sect’s patience was running thin. They would fight eventually, but Fang Yuan had to stall for as much time as he could.

"But thankfully, they would only think that I was defending Hu Immortal blessed land from the inside, and was a trapped fish. They would never expect me to have gone to northern plains, and was even able to return. Even that Old Man Yan Shi would not see this coming."

Wisdom path Gu Immortals were skilled at deductions and predictions, but they could not gain information out of nothing. They had to use all sorts of clues and traces, to track back to the source and make their deductions.

Fang Yuan’s vital Gu was Spring Autumn Cicada, his greatest advantage was rebirth. With five hundred years of memories, he had stargate Gu, moving perspective cup Gu, all these were Gu worms that were more advanced than the current five regions by a generation.

"I can’t sell remnant recipes for the time being, and the rockmen have to be supplied to Immortal Crane Sect, but I have other things to sell!"

Fang Yuan had a plan long ago, this item was none other than soil.

The soil in treasure yellow heaven were all rare goods, like cloud soil, rotten soil, salt soil etc. Many blessed land produced soil, and they would sell it inside treasure yellow heaven to exchange for what they needed with other Gu Masters.

The soil Fang Yuan wanted to sell was not ordinary either, it was the gruel mud.

Back then, when the earthly calamity struck and Dang Hun mountain was damaged, polluted by the ability of Immortal Gu Gruel Mud, the entire mountain started to turn into rotten mud.

But in this world, fortune and misfortune came together.

Although Dang Hun mountain rocks were turned into mud, they contained the gruel mud Immortal Gu’s power, in Gu Immortals’ eyes, this was a must-have ingredient when refining the gruel mud Immortal Gu!

As expected, after Fang Yuan placed it into treasure yellow heaven, a large amount of attention was garnered.

"What day is it today, so many good things are on sale?"

"Gruel mud, this is the real gruel mud, I can feel the intense Immortal Gu aura from it."

"It is a pity I do not have the gruel mud Immortal Gu’s recipe, I have no use for this mud..."

The divine senses of the Gu Immortals were moving about as many sent their divine senses to compete for the item.

"I need the gruel mud Immortal Gu’s recipe, I will not exchange it for anything else." Under Fang Yuan’s orders, little Hu Immortal sent her divine sense over.

This strict request caused the Gu Immortals to scoff.

"Using a pile of mud to exchange for an Immortal Gu’s recipe? You are way too greedy."

"The gruel mud Immortal Gu is a one-time consumable Gu, the recipe is evidently more important than Gu worm itself, you have the face to say you want to exchange it for the recipe?"

"This is too unrealistic, I advice you to change your condition, otherwise, this pile of mud will stay in treasure yellow heaven without a buyer forever."

But little Hu Immortal quickly said: "I am not requesting for the complete Immortal recipe, whoever has the remnant recipe with the highest treasure light will get this."

The Gu Immortals stopped talking, starting to observe this.

Soon, a Gu Immortal took out a remnant recipe and the treasure light was about four meters.

This was not up to Fang Yuan’s standards, he stared at the mirror and laughed, instructing little Hu Immortal: "As long as the other Gu Immortals each took out a remnant recipe, we will add one jin of gruel mud."

"Yes master!" Little Hu Immortal replied quickly.

In Hu Immortal blessed land, there was a lot of gruel mud.

From start to end, all the gruel mud were cleared out of Dang Hun mountain by little Hu Immortal, but they did not throw it out of the blessed land, instead transferring it to the west area.

After these years, through the conversion of the gruel mud inside the blessed land, there was a swamp forming slowly.

The former disaster was now a resource.

In treasure yellow heaven, the Gu Immortals’ divine senses were in a commotion.

With the addition of every remnant recipe, little Hu Immortal would add a jin of gruel mud. Such an act was telling others clearly — we have a ton of it here!

All the remnant recipes were added in one by one, as the treasure light intensified. From the four meters, it had already rose to about six meters and was still increasing.

Fang Yuan looked for a while and his smile became wider.

His soul was from Earth, his marketing skills far surpassed this world. On Earth, enterprises boomed while in treasure yellow heaven, immortal essence stones could barely be used as the currency of trade, most transactions were done using the primitive bartering method.

Fang Yuan’s method was a form of increasing his exposure, it attracted many Gu Immortals to sell the remnant recipe of the gruel mud Immortal Gu.

Of course, this was only a tiny trick.

Next, Fang Yuan instructed little Hu Immortal to handle the other matters one by one.

"It is about time, I have to go now."

Fang Yuan was counting the time, dividing the time he spent in Hu Immortal blessed land by five, was the amount of time that had passed in northern plains.

"Master, goodbye, you have to come back often okay." Little Hu Immortal brought Fang Yuan to the west area of the blessed land, and under the radiance of the starlight firefly Gu, it activated the stargate Gu once again.

Fang Yuan was carrying many refinement materials, as well as low rank Gu worms as he stepped into the stargate.

Not long after, he stepped out of the other stargate, back to the crescent lake in northern plains.

As he had calculated, it was currently near dawn, as the sun was rising, the first ray of sunlight shining on the land.

The light breeze caused small ripples along the surface of the lake.

The air was refreshing, there was dew on the grass near him, and there were bird groups gathering on the surface of the lake, spreading their wings like they were dancing.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, his heart was overjoyed.

Snatching Ma Hong Yun’s fortune by force, Fang Yuan obtained Lang Ya land spirit’s help this time. In Lang Ya blessed land, he used one of the chances to obtain the stargate Gu and others.

After that, he returned to Hu Immortal blessed land and used connecting heaven Gu to settle the problem of the lack of resources.

"But after this, all my stagnating chess pieces have room for further development. The entire chessboard is alive once more."

As the sky turned bright, Fang Yuan returned to Ge tribe camp under the wolf group’s accompaniment.

"I am going to refine Gu in closed cultivation, nobody is to disturb me." He gave his orders as he locked himself inside the lizard house, starting his Gu refinement.

Regardless of where the Gu refinement materials came from, the Gu worms created belonged to the region it is born in. That is to say, although the materials in Fang Yuan’s hands came from central continent, as long as he refined them inside northern plains, all of them will be northern plains Gu, and would not be suppressed here.

The first Gu he was going to refine was the moving perspective cup Gu.

Moving perspective cup Gu was rank five, the set that was refined in Hu Immortal blessed land was about to break, it could only be used one more time. After visiting treasure yellow heaven, Fang Yuan had the resources now, he was obviously going to refine another set of moving perspective cup Gu.

At the same time, in crescent lake.

Yan tribe’s nine Gu Masters were travelling quickly on their hump wolves.

"Stop, there are wolf footprints here!" Yan tribe leader stopped his wolf, looking at the large number of footprints in front of him, he expressed great shock.

"So many wolves, this is a myriad wolf group..." The other Gu Masters exclaimed.

"Ge tribe camp is not too far away, do you think this myriad wolf group is heading towards them?"

"Not good! Look at these footprints, there are poison beard wolves, wind wolves, as well as turtleback wolves and night wolves and so on."

"Wild wolf groups only live among themselves, a mix of so many wolves only means that they are being controlled by a Gu Master!"

Yan tribe leader pondered: "Ge tribe was once a large size tribe, but now that they were forced to migrate, they are no longer as great as before, they have no way of feeding such a huge wolf group. Most likely, this wolf group belongs to a demonic Gu Master, our objective this time is to seek reinforcements from Ge tribe, let’s go see what happens first. If Ge tribe faces trouble, we will retreat quietly. If we can do them a cheap favor, we will help them encircle the wolves."

"Yes lord tribe leader!" Everyone shouted.

"Go, let’s go to Ge tribe."

The hump wolves moved again, bringing these people towards Ge tribe camp.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Halt!" The patrolling Ge tribe Gu Master saw the Yan tribe Gu Masters and shouted.

Yan tribe Gu Masters stopped their hump wolves, as an elder spoke: "The person beside me is Yan tribe leader Lord Yan Tian Ji, we are here to visit Ge tribe leader."

"Yan tribe?" Ge tribe Gu Master’s expression changed.

"That’s right, our main tent is about a hundred li away."

"Please wait here lords."

According to northern plains time, Ge tribe had just reached crescent lake and had set up camp for just a day. Ge tribe camp was still busy constructing their homes.

"Lord, the wolf group footprints all entered Ge tribe camp." A tribe elder said softly at Yan tribe leader Yan Tian Ji.

Yan Tian Ji nodded, his gaze turning firm: "To think this enslavement path Gu master is from Ge tribe. It seems we came to the right place, this is a strong aid in dealing with Water Demon Hao Ji Liu."

"But Ge tribe might not necessary help us." A tribe elder was worried.

Yan Tian Ji sneered, acting as if he had Ge tribe dancing in the palm of his hands: "Hmph, Ge tribe wants to attend the heroes assembly. My daughter is Liu Wen Wu’s fiancée, if I use Liu tribe’s name to ask for reinforcements, can this tiny Ge tribe refuse?"

Saying so, the newly constructed camp gates opened, as Ge tribe’s new leader Ge Guang came out with the band of elders.

"Yan tribe leader has come personally, it is our honor. Please follow me to the main tent." Ge Guang invited him enthusiastically.

"Why is he only a rank three Gu Master?" Sensing Ge Guang’s cultivation, the Yan tribesmen showed contempt.

Bringing the Yan tribesmen into the camp for a banquet, after they had some wine, Yan tribe leader gazed at his elder.

The elder quickly said: "To speak the truth, Ge tribe leader, we are here today to ask for help from your tribe."

"Help?"

The elder continued: "That’s right. Our tribe’s big missy Yan Cui Er was kidnapped by Hao Ji Liu, this person is unscrupulous and shameless, hiding in crescent lake and extorting our tribe. He is a water path Gu Master, he has great battle strength when fighting underwater, our tribe’s few attempts at saving her failed. This time, we would like to ask for Ge tribe’s help."

"Hao Ji Liu? You mean, that Water Demon Hao Ji Liu?" Ge Guang thought of this person and his expression changed.

This person was a rank four upper stage Gu Master, he walked the water path and his vile name was famous in northern plains, he was a devious and scheming demon.

Ge Guang frowned deeply, after thinking about it, he rejected: "Members of the demonic faction deserves to be brought to justice. As a member of the righteous faction, Ge tribe should help out, but right now, we do not have the ability to do so. My father had died in battle, I was tasked to be the tribe leader immediately after. We have already suffered great losses, we have no strength left to exterminate the Water Demon."

"Why? Ge tribe leader is unwilling to help?" Hearing Ge Guang’s words, Yan tribe elders’ expressions sank.

An elder sneered: "Ge tribe leader, you are too young, you do not know certain things, let me tell you. Our tribe’s big missy Yan Cui Er had been engaged to Liu Wen Wu, her status is Liu Wen Wu’s fiancée. If you do not help us save her, when Liu tribe pursues the matter, you will not be able to explain yourselves."

Ge Guang’s expression changed.

There were a few super tribes in northern plains, among them were Hei tribe and Liu tribe.

Liu tribe’s third young master Liu Wen Wu, was an expert in both the brush and sword , he had outstanding talent and high aspirations. This time, he brought his supporters from his tribe and separated from Liu tribe, trying to create his own tribe from scratch, he was one of the few most famous competitors for the throne of the imperial court.

Liu Wen Wu had a huge force, Yan Cui Er was his fiancée, if Ge tribe did not save her, Liu Wen Wu would definitely find trouble with them during the heroes assembly.

But now Ge tribe was in dire straits themselves, they had just lost a lot of high rank Gu Masters. If they fought the Water Demon, they would have to shoulder a great loss.

Ge Guang thought about his tribe’s benefits and did not wish to make enemies with the Water Demon for no reason, but if they did nothing, it might attract Liu Wen Wu’s animosity.

Ge Guang was very troubled.

Yan tribe leader saw Ge Guang’s hesitation and laughed: "The righteous path had always stuck together, I believe that Ge tribe would not leave us in the lurch. Ge tribe has outstanding strength, you do not need to conceal it. When we came, we found a large number of wolf footprints, as long as Ge tribe mobilizes your enslavement path Gu Master, we are willing to pay three thousand primeval stones in advance."

Ge Guang was secretly furious.

Just three thousand primeval stones, were they giving loose change to a beggar?

He controlled his anger and laughed bitterly: "You might not know, this enslavement path Gu Master is not a member of Ge tribe, I cannot command him. He is Lord Chang Shan Yin."

"Chang Shan Yin?" Yan tribe leader was stunned, thinking that this name was very familiar.

Ge Guang then told him what he knew about Fang Yuan’s origins and identity.

Yan tribe’s gang were overjoyed at hearing the news.

"Chang Shan Yin, he is alive!"

"I remember now, he is someone from my generation. He was once famous throughout northern plains, a highly acclaimed genius enslavement path Gu Master."

"This is great! Even heaven is helping us, Chang tribe had already submitted to young master Liu Wen Wu, if we tell Chang Shan Yin our request, he will definitely help."

Yan tribe leader was candid: "Tribe leader Ge Guang, lead the way."

Ge Guang laughed bitterly: "If I can bring you to him, I would have done it long ago. Lord Chang Shan Yin returned this morning and announced he was going into closed cultivation to refine Gu, if we interrupt him, I’m afraid..."

"What are you afraid of?" Yan tribe leader stood up: "Chang Shan Yin is from the same generation as me, I’ve heard of him long ago. Chang tribe and Yan tribe are already under young master Liu Wen Wu, we are on the same side. Young master Liu Wen Wu is Chang Shan Yin’s master. Furthermore, this matter is so important, it is no big deal even if we interrupt his Gu refinement. Bring me there."

"This..." Ge Guang hesitated.

Yan tribe leader’s expression turned stiff: "Ge tribe leader, do not stall for time. If we are too late and my daughter faces mortal danger, when young master Liu Wen Wu blames you..."

Ge Guang gritted his teeth, conceding: "Alright, I will bring you there."

...

"Water Demon Hao Ji Liu?" Fang Yuan raised his eyebrows, looking at these Yan tribe Gu Masters.

"Brother Chang, you have been asleep for twenty years, you might not know this.

This Water Demon was a rising star from the younger generation, after receiving a mysterious opportunity, he is already rank four upper stage at thirty-five years old." Yan tribe leader explained.

Fang Yuan nodded, exclaiming: "Northern plains is huge, there are countless heroes and conquerors! Since Yan tribe is asking with their life on the line, I shall make this trip."

The expression of Yan tribe’s gang changed.

What was Chang Shan Yin saying! What ’life on the life’, it sounded like they were very feeble and defenseless.

"Lord Chang Shan Yin, why are you lauding the spirit of the enemy and belittling that of our own? That Water Demon is scheming, hiding inside crescent lake while holding our big missy hostage, that is why we cannot take him down." An elder was indignant.

"Lord Chang Shan Yin, your Chang tribe has already submitted to young master Liu Wen Wu. This is your opportunity." Another elder spoke as if he was thinking for Fang Yuan’s benefit.

Yan tribe leader smiled lightly: "Hehehe, brother Chang, with your help this time, what can a mere Water Demon amount to?"

Fang Yuan snickered: "By logic or emotion, I should help out. I will battle alongside all of you."

Yan tribe was overjoyed: "Good, let us set off now."

...

"Yan tribe’s old man, I want ten million primeval stones and that backwater battle Gu, did you bring them?" Water Demon stood at the edge of crescent lake as he looked at the people with caution.

"Of course I brought it. Where is my daughter?" Yan Tian Ji said, taking out two Gu, one was a rank five storage Gu, the other was backwater battle Gu.

Backwater battle Gu was a rank five Gu, it could greatly boost the power of water path Gu worms, it was very precious with no market supply.

Seeing these two Gu, Water Demon’s gaze became heated.

He had a young appearance, his face was pale as he had broad shoulders and a thin waist, he was handsome and had a carefree disposition. His sideburns were already turning white, giving him a mature aura.

"Return my daughter and I will pass you what you want. Now I want to see my daughter first." Yan Tian Ji said solemnly.

Water Demon snorted, snapping his fingers.

Swoosh!

In the lake water behind him, waves started moving as a giant fanshell appeared from under the water.

This fanshell was as big as an elephant, the surface was shiny. As the two sides of the shell opened, a young girl could be seen inside.

The young girl was tied up tightly, her mouth was gagged. When she saw Yan tribe leader she was so agitated that tears were flowing on her face as she struggled.

Water Demon snorted: "You’ve seen your daughter, now hand over the Gu. Don’t try anything funny, your daughter is in my hands, if anything happens to her, how will you account to Liu Wen Wu? Hehehe..."

Damn it!"

"Despicable scum, fight me fair and square if you have the guts!"

Yan tribe elders gritted their teeth.

Yan tribe leader’s expression was calm as water as he tossed two Gu towards Water Demon.

Water Demon received it carefully, he did not use his hand to grab it, but instead let the two Gu fall onto the ground.

"You did not do anything fishy to these Gu worms right?" Water Demon squinted, looking at Yan Tian Ji sharply.

Yan Tian Ji’s expression was livid: "Hmph, go ahead and refine it."

Water Demon snickered: "Step back by thirty steps."

Yan tribe’s gang had no choice but to comply.

Water Demon stared at the Yan tribe Gu Masters, before squatting down and picking up the two Gu worms.

He first inspected them and found no problems with them. Next, he carefully started refining the backwater battle Gu.

Backwater battle Gu had Yan Tian Ji’s will, as he cooperated with Water Demon, it allowed him to refine the backwater battle Gu easily.

Water Demon chuckled: "Very good, Yan Tian Ji, you are very tactful. Next, I will inspect the primeval stones, if the amount of correct, I will return your precious daughter to you. Don’t worry, I do not wish to be enemies with Liu Wen Wu, your daughter is still a virgin, I did not even touch her hands."

"Hmp!" Yan Tian Ji snorted, not saying a word.

He willed and aided Water Demon in refining the storage Gu.

Water Demon’s mind entered the Gu as he saw a large amount of primeval stones, unable to control his joy as it showed on his face.

But at this time, from among these primeval stones, a Gu flew out and crashed onto him at breakneck speed.

Rank four — immobilization Gu!

"Strike!" Yan Tian Ji shouted, and the elders surrounded Water Demon quickly.

"Oh no!!" Water Demon was grabbing the storage Gu, as he was unable to move, he watched himself get surrounded helplessly.

"Water Demon, today will be your death date." Fang Yuan rode the hump wolf as he and a large group of wolves emerged from a nearby woodland.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Kill!" Yan Tian Ji shouted.

In an instant, Yan tribe’s Gu Masters starting attacking, using an assortment of moves.

Water flow, starfire, white bone, firebird, all sorts of attacks were unleashed and targeted Water Demon.

Bright rainbow color lights soon shone on Water Demon’s face.

These attacks were eye-catching and dazzling, they were like fireworks in the night sky, beautiful and lethal.

Water Demon was in a dangerous situation, but he did not dodge or evade, instead he showed a cold smile.

In his eyes, a piercing eerie light burst out, the light was shining brightly as it stunned a Yan tribe elder in front of Water Demon.

This Yan tribe elder grimaced as he felt his vision blurring.

This was Water Demon, activating the rank three sight blow Gu, his gaze had a strong attack and could bypass defensive measures, directly attacking the Gu Master’s soul.

Yan tribe elder who was attacked took three steps back, trying to regain his composure.

A mere rank three sight blow Gu could only be used as a surprise attack, it caused little damage to Yan tribe elder, it could not change this dangerous situation around for Water Demon.

But Water Demon’s lips curled into a cold smile.

He activated his rank four yellow gold primeval essence, injecting it into one of the Gu in his aperture.

Rank four — Location Swap Gu!

Swoosh!

With a light sound, Water Demon Hao Ji Liu’s body vanished, and reappeared at Yan tribe elder’s location. As an exchange, the Yan tribe elder who was attacked appeared at his original location.

"Oh no!"

"Oh no, quickly stop!"

Yan tribe’s Gu Masters shouted, such a change caught them off guard, they were greatly shocked.

They wanted to hold back on their attacks, but the attacks were already formed, they could not be stopped.

That Yan tribe elder was scared out of his wits, he frantically activated his defensive Gu, but this Gu only lasted for half a breath’s time before dying.

"Academy elder!" Yan tribe leader Yan Tian Ji shouted, seeing his tribesmen dying in front of him, engulfed by the assortment of attacks, beaten to a pulp.

"Hahaha, great, great. It seems that Yan tribe Gu Masters are all dumb pigs, you actually killed yourselves. Hahaha..." Water Demon Hao Ji Liu laughed as he raised his head, saying in a mocking tone.

"Water Demon, Yan tribe will be enemies with you for all eternity!"

"Hao Ji Liu, I will tear your tendons apart to relieve this anger in me."

"Kill, tear this demon to shreds!"

Yan tribe Gu Masters shouted angrily, their necks turning red from agitation.

But even though they shouted loudly, none of them attacked.

Water Demon had a rank four location swap Gu, this was beyond their expectations.

Rank four location swap Gu was a unique movement Gu. One had to make contact with the other party in order to swap locations. But the use of the Gu worm not only depended on suitability, but also its compatibility with other Gu worms.

Water Demon Hao Ji Liu used the rank three sight blow Gu together with the location swap Gu. As long as his gaze attack works, it means he made contact with the other party, and he could use the location swap Gu using this exploit.

Hao Ji Liu had such a Gu worm, he was not afraid of fighting a crowd. This was why he dared to challenge the entire Yan tribe higher-ups, kidnapping Yan tribe’s big missy Yan Cui Er, and extorting Yan tribe.

Although there were many Yan tribe Gu Masters, the academy elder just died in front of them, everyone was lost and did not have any confidence at the moment.

"Water Demon, so what if you have location swap Gu? This Gu causes intense primeval essence expenditure. How many times can you still use it? I’ll tell you, we invited the righteous hero Wolf King Chang Shan Yin who had just returned, you are now surrounded by the wolf group, there is nowhere to run." At the crucial moment, Yan Tian Ji stood up, his words were like a tranquilizer that stabilized the people.

"Wolf King Chang Shan Yin?" Hao Ji Liu’s gaze concentrated on Fang Yuan who was sitting on his wolf.

Fang Yuan had a broad shoulder and thin waist, his gaze was sharp and divine. He rode the hump wolf as he was surrounded by wolves, like he was standing at the top of a mountain, although he was silent, he gave Hao Ji Liu a strong sense of pressure.

"Wolf King Chang Shan Yin, I have heard of your name since I was young. You are not dead?" Water Demon Hao Ji Liu concentrated on guarding against the Yan tribe Gu Masters as he tried probing Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was a little more than three hundred steps away from Water Demon, he observed him from far away with a plain expression.

Water Demon’s heart shook, although the sight blow Gu had a wide attack range and could attack anyone who could be seen with his eyes, the further the distance, the weaker the attack would be. A distance of three hundred steps was the limit of the sight blow Gu, and it had zero threat once the target was further than three hundred steps away.

Fang Yuan’s location made Water Demon very uncomfortable.

This was a very peculiar distance, if Water Demon moved a step out, he could hit Fang Yuan, but it felt like Fang Yuan was trying to trick him into doing so.

Hao Ji Liu’s heart felt greater pressure: "If this person really is Chang Shan Yin, I cannot use the sight blow Gu to attack him. Sight based attacks compete the souls of both Gu Masters, as an enslavement path Gu Master, his soul is definitely extremely strong."

"Are you really Chang Shan Yin? What evidence do you have? Hmph, your Yan tribe randomly brought one person to impersonate the Wolf King, do you think I am a fool?" Hao Ji Liu purposely snorted.

Yan Tian Ji laughed coldly: "Water Demon, you really failed to recognise Mount Tai. Is the Wolf King so easy to impersonate? When we battle later, you will feel the Wolf King’s true power!"

"Lord Chang Shan Yin, it is up to you."

"Kill this Water Demon, get rid of a great threat to the people!"

The other Yan tribe elders shouted, trying to make Fang Yuan fight for them.

Fang Yuan sat on the wolf back, looking around. When he saw that his wolf group was at their planned location, and encircled this battlefield completely, he knew the time was ripe.

His lips curled, revealing a cold and callous smile.

He nodded slightly, the killing intent surging in his eyes: "Indeed, you reminded me, it is time to strike."

As he said that, the wolves howled as they opened their bloodthirsty mouths, flashing their sharp claws and teeth as they charged relentlessly.

In an instant, ten thousand wolves attacked and starting killing the Gu Masters.

The grand army caused everyone’s expressions to change.

"Chang Shan Yin, what are you doing? How can you attack us?" Yan Tian Ji shouted furiously, while feeling shocked and suspicious.

"Quickly stop! We are on the same side."

"Wolf King, are you crazy? You dare to attack us? Our Yan tribe and your Chang tribe had already submitted to young master Liu Wen Wu!"

The other elders blocked the wolves as they shouted frantically.

"That is exactly why I am dealing with you all. Go in peace, I will send the Chang tribesmen to accompany you soon enough." Fang Yuan said hatefully, his face distorting into a maniacal expression.

Soon after, he shouted: "Hmph, I swore long ago, I will take revenge for what happened back then one by one!"

"Back then, when Chang Shan Yin fought Ha Tu Gu and the bandits alone, Chang tribe did not send a single person to help him, there were hidden reasons after all!" Water Demon Hao Ji Liu felt his heart jump as he thought of something.

He did not expect such a huge change, he dodged the wolves’ attacks as he shouted anxiously: "Wolf King, I do not wish to be your enemy. The enemy of an enemy is a friend right?"

Fang Yuan gave him a cold glance, saying lightly: "Look at you jumping all over the place, you are simply like a flea, just die together with them."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"What?" Water Demon Hao Ji Liu was furious.

Ever since he started travelling the world, no one had dared to make such remarks about him or showed such contempt.

"Wolf King, you are too arrogant! Today, I shall make you pay the price for it!!" Water Demon Hao Ji Liu roared furiously and pushed forward with his palms.

Rank four — waterfall Gu!

His primeval essence poured crazily into the Gu, causing water vapor to fill the air, then with a rumbling sound, an enormous water stream appeared out of nowhere.

The water stream was incomparably fast, just like a waterfall crashing down from a high altitude.

The light silver rapid stream brought with it an intense chilly might as it fiercely struck the wolf group.

In an instant, over a thousand wolves died or were injured. The rapid stream spread far away, thoroughly clearing the area around Hao Ji Liu.

At the same time, Yan tribe’s Gu Masters jointly activated a Gu worm.

This was a rank five wind barrier Gu; and when activated, it formed an enormous wind. The wind was silky, and brought with it some green threads as it surrounded everyone.

The wolf group’s assault was all blocked by the formless wind. The wild Gu on many wolf kings attacked the wind barrier, but it was like a pebble falling into a sea as the attacks vanished without trace.

"How can this be?" On crescent lake, Yan Cui Er who was taken as a hostage looked at the intense battle on the lakeside with a dumbfounded look.

She had never expected the situation would develop in such a way. She, who had been the main reason of the fight previously, was now a spectator instead.

Hump wolves retreated, pulling distance from Fang Yuan and Water Demon Hao Ji Liu.

"Idiots." Fang Yuan sneered as he looked at Water Demon Hao Ji Liu charging over, approaching closer, and Yan tribesmen who were in a defensive formation.

Water Demon Hao Ji Liu and Yan tribe leader Yan Tian Ji were two rank four Gu Masters. Moreover, there were also Yan tribe’s higher-ups; a dozen or so rank three Gu Masters, their strength could be said to be truly formidable.

However, an enslavement path Gu Master’s strength was the ability to fight an army alone!

Back then, Chang Shan Yin led his wolf group and battled higher realm experts, not only killing rank five Gu Master Ha Tu Gu, but even exterminating Ha Tu Gu’s group of valiant generals.

How?

Because he was an enslavement path Gu Master.

At present, the wolf group with Fang Yuan had already taken shape to form a decent size. The wolf group’s scale had reached thirty thousand and above; not only did it contain hundred wolf kings and some thousand wolf kings, there was also a night wolf myriad beast king and a young mutated beast white-eyes wolf.

This scale might not even be half the size of the wolf group Chang Shan Yin had at his peak period, but it was already enough to annihilate two to three Ge tribes!

And right now, Fang Yuan only had to deal with just twenty or so Gu Masters, it was like using an ox cleaver to kill a chicken.

Sure enough, after some time, Water Demon Hao Ji Liu was gasping and his momentum gradually stopped.

He felt exhausted!

"Damn it! Such troublesome wolf manipulation skills, there are only some hundred wolf kings and thousand wolf kings..." Water Demon Hao Ji Liu’s gaze towards Fang Yuan had already changed right now.

It was not that he had not fought enslavement path Gu Masters, but how could those enslavement path Gu Masters he had fought before compare to Fang Yuan?

"Is this the Wolf King’s wolf manipulation skills... being in it is like falling into a deep swamp, you sink deeper and deeper!" Water Demon Hao Ji Liu’s heart turned cold as he kept on warding off the wolf group’s assault.

He divided a bit of concentration to look into his aperture and grumbled.

That intense charge and the activation of many powerful abilities to clear the path had caused his primeval essence to be expended intensely, now there was less than half his total primeval essence left.

Once the primeval essence was at the point of exhaustion, a Gu Master’s battle strength would start plummeting to the abyss.

Hao Ji Liu had no choice but to exercise restraint once he considered this to be a long battle. Like this, his momentum thoroughly disappeared and he was firmly surrounded by the wolf group.

"Water Demon Hao Ji Liu, a rank four Gu Master who uses water path Gu worms, has great offense and is an expert at fighting one against many. He roamed all over northern plains since his early years and has committed many crimes, gaining a bad reputation... After capturing Yan Cui Er and successfully extorting Yan tribe, he then went on to participate in the heroes assembly, offering Yan Cui Er to Hei Lou Lan. Hei Lou Lan was joyous and gave him great status. After entering Wang Ting blessed land and making great merits, Hao Ji Liu became Hei Lou Lan’s number three general."

Fang Yuan recalled the relevant memories, his gaze flickering faintly.

In his past life, this Hao Ji Liu was also able to make a name for himself and after living actively for eighty-nine years, he was killed by Chang Shan Yin.

"Great offense usually means a huge consumption of primeval essence. Hao Ji Liu is nothing to worry about anymore, and right now, he should be secretly making an escape path for himself. He is good at escaping in water, it will not be easy to make him stay today. After all, there are not many water wolves with me. But my main target is not him, but Yan tribe’s Gu Masters."

Fang Yuan turned his gaze towards the Yan tribesmen.

Yan tribe’s Gu Masters were experts in defense and were famous for it in northern plains. These Gu Masters sure enough defended extremely well, their rank five wind barrier Gu was simply like a tortoise shell, firmly protecting everyone within it.

"Hmph, these Yan tribesmen are really naive, they still have the intention to protect their energy and watch from the sidelines when they are trapped. No wonder, history said Yan Tian Ji was extremely conservative, lacking initiative. Even though they want to stall for time, this is also exactly what I want." Fang Yuan sneered inwardly and intentionally slowed down the wolf group’s offense.

As time passed, Hao Ji Liu and the Yan tribesmen’s primeval essence were also being depleted.

Suddenly, a large group of shadows emerged from the woods.

"Lord Chang Shan Yin, we have arrived!" Ge tribe’s current tribe leader Ge Guang arrived with Ge tribe’s Gu Masters behind him.

"You came quite fast." Fang Yuan indifferently glanced at him with a profound meaning.

Ge Guang seemed to be pierced by the profound light in Fang Yuan’s eyes as he unconsciously lowered his head and thought with reverence: ’ This is the true heroic nature of the Wolf King, I didn’t think I would see it today!’

"Yes, after receiving lord’s letter, we immediately hurried over. People need to repay favors; lord, you have helped our Ge tribe time and again, lord’s hatred is our Ge tribe’s hatred too." Ge Guang immediately answered.

It would not have been good for Fang Yuan to make a move at Ge tribe camp, thus, he agreed to Yan tribe on the surface. After gathering all the wolves, he used a Gu worm to send a letter when they were halfway to the lake.

When Ge Guang received the letter and read it, his face was immediately filled with shock and horror.

"Lord Chang Shan Yin wants to attack the whole Yan tribe?" He could not help but cry out on the spot.

Stabilizing his emotions, he continued reading and saw Fang Yuan’s reason for it.

It turned out that back then, Chang Shan Yin’s mother had been secretly poisoned and Chang Shan Yin entered deep into poison grassland to search for the Gu worm that could detoxify the poison. On his way, he was ambushed by Ha Tu Gu and his group of experts. The whole matter was a sinister plot, it was due to internal conflict in Chang tribe and a move to suppress Chang Shan Yin.

In Fang Yuan’s past life, after Chang Shan Yin was saved by Ma Hong Yun, he did not return to his tribe but instead joined Ma Hong Yun; it was also because of this reason. Later, after Chang Shan Yin helped Ma Hong Yun ascend to the position of Lord of the Imperial Court, he targeted Chang tribe, getting rid of all the Chang tribe higher-ups. He then became Chang tribe leader and took revenge for what happened back then.

Now, Fang Yuan was using this reason to deal with Yan tribe and persuade Ge Guang.

Ge tribe originally had ties of friendship with Chang tribe. When old Ge tribe leader had first met Fang Yuan, he had said that his second daughter was married in Chang tribe.

But after Ge Guang read the letter, he immediately made a decision to stand with Fang Yuan.

"Ge Guang, you have matured, Ge tribe will prosper under your rule." Fang Yuan lightly commented while sitting on a wolf, then waved his hand, "You don’t need to move in this battle. It will be enough for you guys to make a tight encirclement. Remember that every Yan tribe elder that we block means a higher chance of success when we attack Yan tribe camp."

"Yes, junior shall listen to Wolf King’s instruction!" Ge Guang agreed and brought the group of Gu Masters to outside the battlefield, forming an encirclement formation.

Seeing Ge tribe Gu Masters coming over to reinforce Fang Yuan, Yan tribe Gu Masters were shocked and furious.

"Ge Guang, you despicable, shameless scoundrel!" A Yan tribe elder shouted furiously.

"Ge tribe, you have made a wrong decision. Making our Yan tribe your enemy means you are going against young master Liu Wen Wu. None of you will have a good end!" Another elder cursed.

Ge Guang sneered, his heart filled with disdain.

Bringing out Liu tribe’s name when their death was imminent, was there any use?

"We cannot wait any longer, we need to charge and break through!" Yan tribe elders realized the severity of the situation as they shouted with ashen expressions.

"Go!"

Yan tribesmen charged together, attempting to carve out a blood path.

Pill fire Gu, gold silkworm Gu, frost breath Gu, snowball Gu, tornado Gu, thunderclap Gu, fire claw Gu and other Gu were activated one after another. Fire and snow continually shot out, golden silkworm turned into a light ray and charged, blue frost breath was breathed out, tornado caused havoc, thunder rumbled in all directions, flames formed into claws and attacked...

Under this fierce assault from Yan tribe’s Gu Masters, Fang Yuan’s wolf group suffered heavy injuries, but they moved forward unceasingly, coming waves after waves disregarding their death.

"These Gu Masters might be experts among mortals, formed from rank three and rank four, but so what?" Fang Yuan maneuvered the wolf group while sitting on a wolf.

He had wolfman soul which made it a lot easier for him to maneuver these wolf group than when he had hundred man soul. It was as smooth as a wolf king personally commandeering them.

Fang Yuan’s expression did not change at the sight of the wolves dying like flies, he remained aloof and indifferent.

These wolves were only ordinary wild beasts, if they died, then so be it, there was no heartache over it.

Instead, using them as cannon fodder to wear down these Gu Masters’ primeval essence would be a great beneficial deal.

The weakness of these Yan tribe Gu Masters was their low numbers. Although they were experts, they lacked subordinates to share the pressure of the battlefield.

The battle was already in Fang Yuan’s control and was moving in his intended direction; they simply did not have time to calm down and recover their primeval essence.

"Terrifying, there is actually such a fearsome wolf manipulation skill in this world!" A Yan tribe’s elder said with ashen face.

"Could it be that we are going to die like this?" The aura of death was already pouncing upon them.

"Chang Shan Yin, by killing us, are you not afraid young master Liu Wen Wu would take revenge?!" An elder was hoping to pressure Fang Yuan.

"Charge, don’t stop!" Yan Tian Ji shouted, his voice had already become hoarse and his primeval essence was less than half of his total amount.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"It is time." Fang Yuan willed, as the night wolf myriad beast king brought over a dozen night wolf thousand beast kings and entered the battle, blocking the Yan tribe Gu Masters.

Under the wolf group’s attacks, Yan tribe suffered their first death.

Wolf howl Gu!

Fang Yuan howled at the sky, crying like a wolf as his voice spread far and wide, increasing the wolf group’s battle strength.

Wolf smoke Gu!

Immediately after, he emitted dense smoke that engulfed the battlefield, healing the wolves’ injuries.

Yan tribe were shocked.

Water Demon Hao Ji Liu’s face became pale and white.

Earlier, Fang Yuan merely dispatched his wolves, now that he joined in, he turned to advantage into a victory.

Tens of hateful, frightened, furious, and icy gazes shot towards Fang Yuan. Under everyone’s stare, Fang Yuan smiled lightly as he moved backwards with the hump wolf, pulling some distance from Yan tribe’s gang.

To prevent the ’beheading the leader’ tactic, Fang Yuan had many wolves around him, he even had a white-eyes wolf, although it had not matured yet, it still surpassed ordinary hundred wolf kings in terms of battle strength.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s movement, the trapped Gu masters felt their hearts sinking as their spirits dampened, they had a feeling of being captured by a demon, and had no way to escape.

TIme continued to pass, Yan tribe Gu Masters seemed to have fallen into a swamp as they sank deeper as they struggled.

Fang Yuan had used cannon fodder wolves earlier to expend their primeval essence, the effect was starting to show.

Yan tribe elders died in battle one by one, as a sad and angry atmosphere took over the battlefield.

"Chang Shan Yin, I will not let you off even as a ghost!" An elder screamed, cursing before his death.

But this curse only made Fang Yuan scoff coldly in his heart: "You have no chance to be a ghost, your soul will become fertilizer for Dang Hun mountain."

"Wolf King, fight me alone if you dare!" Yan tribe’s battle hall elder screamed.

"Come, you coward, you chicken!" He tried to provoke Fang Yuan, using the last drop of his primeval essence to charge at Fang Yuan for the final time.

Fang Yuan looked at him expressionlessly, as he willed, the wolves charged over like a wave and ripped the battle hall elder to shreds even before he got near.

As the wolves dispersed, his broken corpse remained on the ground. His bones were showing as blood poured out, his furious eyes were staring wide towards the air.

"Battle hall elder..." Yan Tian Ji growled, his body was trembling. With the sacrifice of each elder, an intense pain assaulted his heart every time, he was turning numb from the anguish.

"Chang Shan Yin, you will die a painful death! In spite of being a righteous hero, you actually assaulted your comrades! You will not have a good ending, young master Liu Wen Wu will take revenge for us!!" Yan Tian Ji’s face was full of hatred, his expression twisting into an ugly sight. If it was possible, he would love to eat Fang Yuan’s flesh and drink his blood.

"Hmph, the curses of a loser is just like the whimpering of a dog before death. Entrusting your hopes of revenge to others, that is a weakling’s mentality." Fang Yuan evaluated coldly before waving his hand, as the night wolf myriad beast king burst out like a dark lightning, sending Yan Tian Ji flying.

Yan Tian Ji’s primeval essence was expended, after this blow, almost all his bones were broken.

He was like a kite with its strings cut, flying far away and drawing an arc of red blood in the air. When he landed, his entire body was smashed as he no longer breathed.

"Lord!" Ge Guang led a band of elders as he hurried over.

"Wolf King is mighty! After this battle, Yan tribe’s higher-ups were all exterminated, there was only one rank three elder left in Yan tribe camp. The letter Gu that Yan Tian Ji sent out was obstructed by us, Yan tribe has no idea what just happened now. It is a good time to assault them." Ge tribe’s battle hall elder shouted.

"It is a pity that Water Demon Hao Ji Liu escaped, Lord Wolf King, do you think we should chase after Water Demon or take down Yan tribe camp?" Ge Guang asked.

Fang Yuan smiled indifferently: "Of course we attack Yan tribe camp."

A clam Gu spun its body as it dived in crescent lake rapidly.

Swoosh!

The clam drilled out of the water surface as its shells opened, shoot out two people who were inside.

They were a male and a female, the male was Water Demon Hao Ji Liu, and the female was Yan tribe’s big missy Yan Cui Er.

"Huff huff huff... " Hao Ji Liu’s breathed roughly as he looked behind with lingering fear. He only relaxed after seeing there was no one chasing him.

This was a floating island on crescent lake, when Hao Ji Liu was scouting the area, he chose this as his third route to escape.

"Wolf King Chang Shan Yin..." Hao Ji Liu muttered this name in his heart. Hatred, anguish, fear, and shock were flashing in his eyes as he showed a complex expression.

Until now, he had never faced such a huge loss.

With rank four upper stage cultivation, he could roam northern plains freely. But today, he met Fang Yuan and felt an unprecedented weakness, helplessness, and loneliness.

"This is the strength of an enslavement path Gu Master? This is not even his peak condition. Back then, Chang Shan Yin could kill Ha Tu Gu who was a realm higher than him, and exterminate the entire group of bandits, how great was his strength back then?"

Hao Ji Liu thought about this as he felt difficulty in breathing.

Fang Yuan’s wolf manipulation skills made him think of Jiang Bao Ya, Yang Po Ying and Ma Zun.

"It seems that among the first-rate enslavement masters in northern plains, they would no longer be just three people, but it would be a contest among four. Luckily, he did not have many water wolves with him, otherwise I would be dead meat today."

Thinking of the dangerous scene when he escaped for his life, Hao Ji Liu felt a great fear.

"But why do I have the feeling that Chang Shan Yin purposely gave me a way out?" Hao Ji Liu was a vigilant person, when he recalled the scene, he felt a sense of suspicion.

"A pity that Yan tribe’s higher-ups were all killed by Chang Shan Yin, I can no longer extort them. But forget about that, I have already obtained backwater battle Gu, this trip was a success. Now, I should follow my original plan and escort this Yan tribe missy to young master Hei Lou Lan, as a gift." Thinking so, Hao Ji Liu’s eyes shone with brilliance.

The ten year blizzard of northern plains, it was a huge challenge even for lone travelling demonic Gu Masters.

But with the lack of resources, Hao Ji Liu wanted to use the heroes assembly to join a certain force. If he was lucky enough to enter the imperial court, not only will Hao Ji Liu keep his life, his cultivation would even go a step further.

There were a few favourite candidates in this contest to be the lord of the imperial court.

Hao Ji Liu thought about it and decided to bet on the most popular person — young master Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan’s lecherous nature was known to all. If Hao Ji Liu gave Yan Cui Er to him, he would be handsomely rewarded. Yan Cui Er was not only beautiful like a flower, she also had a special identity, the fiancée of young master Liu Wen Wu.

And Liu Wen Wu was one of Hei Lou Lan’s fiercest competitors in this contest for the imperial court.

Making your arch-enemy’s fiancee part of your harem, this was an irresistible temptation to Hei Lou Lan.

"If Yan tribe was still around, this gift would be extremely importantly. Unfortunately, after Wolf King killed Yan tribe’s higher-ups, he would definitely deal with Yan tribe." Thinking of this, Hao Ji Liu gave a mocking gaze at the dazed Yan Cui Er, whistling.

He made fun of her: "Little beauty, you have to thank me. If I did not save you, you would’ve died in the hands of Chang Shan Yin."

Yan Cui Er’s thick brows moved as she seemed to have woken up from a nightmare: "What do you mean?"

"Hmph, what meaning is there? Chang Shan Yin killed your father and all the elders with him. He will definitely take over Yan tribe, the wolf group must be on their way to Yan tribe camp already. Hehehe, you were a young missy, but now, you’re going to be alone soon."

"No, no way!" Yan Cui Er shook her head, her expression was pale. She tried her best to deny it, but her logic told her that Hao Ji Liu’s conjecture was accurate.

"Chang Shan Yin is a great righteous hero, how could he do something like this?" She refused to face such a cruel reality, her tears fell like pearls as they flowed down her cheeks, onto the ground. The crying of a beauty, the weeping of a lady, it was a painful scene.

"Righteous hero?" Hao Ji Liu sneered: "Sometimes, righteous heroes are more terrifying than us demonic path cultivators. I only kidnapped you and extorted your tribe, but when Chang Shan Yin strikes, he would destroy and devour your tribe. The worst thing is, he has a proper reason to do so, claiming he is taking revenge, he is the ultimate victor. Once Yan tribe is gone, who can rebuke him? Hmph, this is the truth of this dogshit world!"

Yan Cui Er was in shock as she listened, suddenly she kneeled on the ground as she grabbed Hao Ji Liu’s pants, begging: "Please, please save my Yan tribe. My father’s letter Gu were all blocked, Yan tribe is without a leader now, and have no clue what is coming, they don’t know the danger waiting for them."

The world was wondrous and cruel, Yan Cui Er had never thought that one day, she would kneel down on the ground and beg the enemy she had hated the most.

"My father is dead, I am Yan tribe’s next leader. Hao Ji Liu, help me, send a letter for me and inform them. As long as Yan tribe remains, I am Yan tribe leader, I can decide on this and make you Yan tribe’s external elder, all of our resources will be yours to use!" Yan Cui Er gave her side of the deal.

The words made Water Demon Hao Ji Liu’s heart jump, external elder? Yan tribe’s resources?

It was a good suggestion!

But when Fang Yuan’s figure appeared in Hao Ji Liu’s mind, he shuddered.

"Hmph, you dare to tempt me?" His expression changed as he gave Yan Cui Er a tight slap.

Yan Cui Er grabbed her face as her tears fell, completely stunned by this as she looked at Hao Ji Liu blankly.

"Don’t worry, I have already found a good partner for you. Hehehe..." Hao Ji Liu laughed as he grabbed Yan Cui Er, tossing her into the clam Gu.

The large clam’s shells closed, as Hao Ji Liu stepped on the water surface, giving the shore one last look.

At Yan tribe camp’s position, there were huge fires as smoke rose into the air.

"Yan tribe is finished!" Hao Ji Liu was gloating but he also felt a chill in his heart.

This world worked on the survival of the fittest, there is one mountain higher than a mountain, and a person stronger than another person. Yan tribe was a huge force to him, but to Chang Shan Yin, it was just a plump juicy meat.

"In the following competition for the imperial court, northern plains will definitely be shook as heroes and conquerors arise, I wonder how many people will lose their lives?"

Hao Ji Liu sighed and exclaimed as he travelled west on the large clam.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the fire of war that spread everywhere, the wolf group surged forward with craze.

The attack on Yan tribe camp had already lasted for four hours. Yan tribe’s Gu Masters were experts at defense, but because of the successful ambush and there being no leader, the Yan tribe camp was already ruined beyond recognition by now. There were broken walls everywhere along with human and wolf corpses.

"Brothers, hold on, we need to hold on!" In the center of the camp, the remaining forces of Yan tribe stubbornly resisted.

However, the wolf group surged forward with no end, and the whole defense line was already on the verge of collapse.

"Kill, kill these invaders!"

"Despicable Ge tribe, I curse your entire clan to perish!!"

Besides these curses, there were also the weeping of the old and feeble, the women and the children.

Seeing their family and friends behind them, the already exhausted Yan tribesmen squeezed out every bit of strength they could muster.

In their hearts, a thought kept them going, telling them to hold up their defense, that they must defend! Behind them were their wives, children and their parents. If they could not resist, then all their relatives would end up in the wolves’ mouths!

Suddenly, a thousand wolf king broke through the battle line and charged into the depths of the formation.

"Nooo!"

"Careful!"

"Get away!"

The Gu Masters at the frontline roared with fury in their eyes, but it was already too late for them to rescue anyone; they could only stare as the thousand wolf king opened its bloody mouth and started slaughtering the old, feeble, women and children.

"Bastard, you are looking for death!" At this time, a seriously injured Gu Master who was lying on the ground with just one hand and one leg remaining, jumped up with a strength that god knew where it came from and threw himself into the wolf’s mouth.

The thousand wolf king bit his waist and almost severed him into two.

The Gu Master foamed from his mouth, and gave a desperate yet satisfied smile.

He fiercely clenched the wolf’s head and roared: "Evil beast, die with me."

With that, he self-destructed; blood splashed everywhere and the thousand beast king also died with him.

The encircling Ge tribesmen all saw this scene; someone sighed: "Yan tribe’s sons are so brave!"

Fang Yuan lightly nodded.

Although Yan tribe did not show initiative, they were experts at defense and were extremely united. In this invasion, the number of wolves that died were truly beyond his original estimation.

However, Fang Yuan did not feel any pain and snorted: "What is the use even if they were to be more brave? Those defeated usually have no hope of reprieve; this is the cruelty of the struggle for Imperial Court. Okay, this is enough, go ask them to surrender."

These words caused the Ge tribe’s Gu Masters to feel a chill: If they were ever to be defeated, their tribe would be at the same state as the Yan tribe before them.

However, when their gaze landed on Fang Yuan, their heart relaxed: With the Wolf King beside us, our Ge tribe has a great tree to lean on. We still need to rely on the Wolf King to lead us.

The intense and fierce battlefield gradually quietened.

The wolf group stopped their offence and slowly retreated, opening up a path. A Ge tribe elder moved through the path and appeared before Yan tribesmen.

"Yan tribesmen, surrender." The Ge tribe elder shouted loudly, "Northern plains elites are those who can adapt to circumstances!"

"Bullshit! I shall never surrender to you shameless sneak attackers!"

"Come, just cut my head off."

"Yan tribe’s descendants would rather die than surrender!"

Some Gu Masters roared furiously, but there were also some whose gaze loosened and showed hesitation.

The Ge tribe elder sneered: "If you don’t surrender, we won’t lose anything in killing you all. But shouldn’t you consider your wives and children behind you? They will die a cruel death just because of your stubborn resistance. You will be the ones who harmed them."

These words caused the Yan tribe’s remnant forces to quieten.

The chilly wind blew across everyone’s faces. Those Yan tribe’s Gu Masters who had been roaring furiously had a sluggish expression now. They looked back and their expressions turned soft.

Only the Yan tribe elder felt extreme hatred towards Ge tribe’s psychological tactics when he sensed everyone’s fighting spirit crumbling. However, this discontent, when it reached his mouth, turned into a sigh.

Under everyone’s gazes, he walked forward and said forcibly: "Our Yan tribe... surrenders!"

"Lord!"

"Lord elder..."

Yan tribe’s Gu Masters shouted one after another; some couldn’t believe it, some weeped with grief and some felt relieved.

At the same time, Ge tribe’s Gu Masters also rejoiced.

"Victory, victory!"

"The situation is set, we have annexed Yan tribe!"

They were both at the same place, but their situation was as different as cloud was from mud.

"Gather the troops and clean up the battlefield." Ge Guang also had a joy he could hardly contain on his face. Considering their strength, Ge tribe was below Yan tribe, but they were able to swallow this big force in one move!

"As long as we digest these war spoils, our Ge tribe’s strength will increase by three times, even surpassing the strength we had back at Hong Yan valley. This is all thanks to lord Chang Shan Yin!" Ge Guang could not help looking at Fang Yuan when he thought of this.

Truthfully, Ge Guang had hesitated when he received Fang Yuan’s letter.

But this hesitation was only for an instant before it turned into resolution. The fact had proved his choice was a correct one.

"If I had refused the Wolf King back then, I’m afraid our Ge tribe would have had the same ending as the Yan tribe." Ge Guang’s reverence towards Fang Yuan deepened by another level.

Fang Yuan sized up the whole Yan tribe camp from above the hump wolf.

There were broken debris everywhere; fire still lingered, corpses littered the place and blood dyed the ground red.

All the Yan tribesmen who were hiding were searched and arrested. Yan tribe’s Gu Masters were tied with manacles and leg-irons, their Gu worms seized and their primeval essence locked as they were taken as captives and were strictly watched.

Fang Yuan’s expression was tranquil, he had seen such situations many times. In the great battle of five regions in his previous life, the situation had been much more bitter and terrifying than this.

"Yan tribe is annihilated, next is the heroes assembly. Before this, I need to return to Hu Immortal blessed land. I also need to go to Lang Ya blessed land once, if my luck is good...."

Three days later, it was a night where many stars filled the sky.

Fang Yuan led the wolf group and came upon a remote area. He first used moving perspective cup Gu to communicate with Little Hu Immortal, then used stargate Gu to return back to Hu Immortal blessed land.

This time, thousands of wolves entered with him.

These wolves were either injured or old with weak battle strength.

Ordinary enslavement path Gu Masters’ only choice, in this case, would be to sacrifice them as cannon fodder in battle to stop them from consuming more rations. However, Fang Yuan possessed a blessed land and thus had a better option.

That was to breed them.

"These wild wolves can reproduce at the blessed land and several months later, they should be able to give birth to wolf cubs." Fang Yuan moved this wolf group to the western part of the blessed land.

In this world, the wild beasts’ ability to reproduce were very strong; adding on to the Hu Immortal blessed land’s six times faster time flow than northern plains, Fang Yuan’s troops would from now on be self-replenished.

With this, Hu Immortal blessed land’s western part became the wolf group’s farming land; the northern part was almost completely cut off by Fang Yuan; eastern part was covered with dark clouds along with tens of lakes which filled the air with moisture; and the southern part was the stonemen’s homeland.

In the center was Dang Hun mountain which was gradually dying after being struck by gruel mud Gu.

"Master, master, I have already settled down the starlight worms according to your instructions. Come take a look." Little Hu Immortal was extremely happy at seeing Fang Yuan again, and dragged Fang Yuan to the eastern part of the blessed land.

"Master, look up!" Little Hu Immortal said with a delicate voice.

Fang Yuan looked up at the sky, and saw a large expanse of light blue color clouds.

Threads of starlight shone down like a dreamy gauze and shook gently with the breeze. The scene was very beautiful as if it was carved out of a painting.

Fang Yuan looked carefully and discovered these clouds were not originally blue color, but rather a large number of star fragment grass were planted on them. Star fragment grass were deep blue in color, and starlight fireflies fluttered among the grass, shining with spects of light. Moreover among the starlight fireflies were starlight firefly Gu that blossomed with true starlight radiance.

"Not bad." Fang Yuan evaluated.

Little Hu Immortal immediately squinted her eyes in happiness, rubbing her small head against Fang Yuan’s hand and said with her delicate voice: "Master, pat me."

Fang Yuan lightly smiled and rubbed Little Hu Immortal’s head.

Little Hu Immortal’s long snowy tail immediately curled, the two furry ears on her head also lowered gently and her face reddened in happiness.

Fang Yuan had bought many star fragment grass from treasure yellow heaven. However the grass was extremely peculiar and could not be planted on any mortal soil, only on clouds.

When they had transacted, Fairy Yao Guang had suggested Fang Yuan to buy cloud soil to raise star fragment grass. But Fang Yuan did not take her suggestion because there were enormous scale of dark clouds in Hu Immortal blessed land.

These dark clouds were created from the water and fire collision, when Fang Yuan eradicated the earthly calamities’ effects.

The dark clouds did not dissipate and covered the eastern part of Hu Immortal blessed land, and was a problem that was neither big nor small. It had been obstructing light for a long time and was affecting the whole eastern part’s ecology.

However, now, Fang Yuan used it to plant star fragment grass and turned this calamity into fortune. Not only was it making use of trash, but it also saved Fang Yuan a lot of expenses in buying large amounts of cloud soil.

At present, large plots of star fragment grass were already growing on the dark clouds. The starlight firefly worms lived among them, filling the whole eastern land with beautiful starlight.

"As long as I properly cultivate these star fragment grass, there will be guarantee in the reproduction of the starlight firefly worms. In future, there will be much more starlight firefly Gu to use. If the cultivation raises to an optimum level and there is a surplus of starlight firefly Gu, I can put them at treasure yellow heaven to sell. In the battle of five great regions, starlight firefly worms will be one of the Gu worms with most demand."

Fang Yuan slightly looked forward to the beautiful future, before returning to Dang Hun mountain with Little Hu Immortal.

Standing at the peak of the mountain, he grabbed the soul burial toad Gu.

When he besieged Yan tribe’s higher-ups and during the whole process of attacking Yan tribe camp, he had been using the soul burial toad to collect the souls on the battlefield.

He released all the souls from the soul burial toad.

These pitiful souls had just exited when they were shaken up by the mystical power of Dang Hun mountain, and were turned into the purest nutrient, nourishing the whole Dang Hun mountain.

"Tomorrow, Dang Hun mountain will again be filled with guts Gu." Fang Yuan nodded his head with satisfaction.

Gathering large numbers of souls was one of the reasons why he killed Yan tribe.

"Tonight, it is time for me to breakthrough to rank five." Fang Yuan’s cultivation did not receive any suppression when he got back to Hu Immortal blessed land, he was at true rank four peak stage.

He had already stayed at rank four peak stage for a long time. And with his current A grade aptitude, it was time to challenge the boundaries of rank five realm!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Rumble...

The ninety percent primeval sea in the aperture surged with high waves, and true gold primeval essence shone brightly on the aperture walls.

The aperture walls were also extraordinary; sparkling and clear like crystals, containing life force in them. This was the crystal membrane of rank four peak stage realm.

Waves continually surged, reaching towards the sky. Then, they crashed towards the crystal membrane wave after waves.

At first, the crystal membrane was like the reef of a sea, being unmovable. But it gradually became unable to endure the fierce waves and cracks started appearing.

As time passed, bigger cracks appeared.

The primeval sea slowly reduced, while the crystal membrane was full of cracks and appeared extremely fragile. However, there was still a little distance left from breakthrough.

Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged on the bed with both his eyes closed, and almost all his attention was on the aperture.

He possessed ninety percent aptitude which was classified as A grade, and also had very deep accumulation; he could breakthrough to rank five realm just by relying on his own strength.

Right now, there was about twenty percent left of the primeval sea; the sea waves had also weakened and was getting to the point of being tranquil.

But suddenly, as if it was accumulating its strength, a huge wave erupted out of the true gold primeval sea.

This wave was fierce and majestic, surpassing any of the waves from before; it was like a tsunami, soaring up and then fiercely smashing towards the aperture walls.

Boom!

A soft sound echoed, and the aperture walls were finally unable to bear the pressure. They were smashed into pieces by this enormous wave.

The shattered fragments of the crystal aperture walls were like a broken ice mountain, and as they fell into the sea they turned into pure essence before slowly melting down.

After a while, the fragments on the crystal walls had all fallen down, leaving behind a light membrane that covered everything.

The light membrane was dazzling with very powerful aura, far surpassing the rank four peak stage crystal wall; this was the appearance of a true rank five initial stage!

Following it, a trace of light purple primeval essence appeared in the depths of the sea.

Rank one Gu Masters had green copper primeval essence; rank two had red iron primeval essence; rank three had white silver primeval essence; rank four had yellow gold primeval essence; and rank five was purple crystal primeval essence.

Although it was only a thread of light purple, it was a qualitative difference.

From now on, Fang Yuan’s primeval essence would be light purple primeval essence!

"Since my rebirth, I have wandered around everywhere, drifting miserably. Yet now I am finally a rank five Gu Master." Inside Dang Hun palace, Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes and sighed with joy.

Rank five Gu Masters were the lords in this mortal world, the true peak stage. Those who could cultivate to this stage were not even one in ten thousand.

If it were others, they might have already become wild with joy. However, Fang Yuan had already experienced this in his previous life. Right now, rather than ecstasy, what he felt was joy towards his future prospects.

"Compared to my previous life, being able to enter rank five at such a young age is truly a success."

Fang Yuan was only thirty and so at present; cultivating to rank five at this age was a performance that would only be seen in the absolute top geniuses of the five great regions.

"But rank five is not my end point; it is only a starting point. Next, I need to once again advance to Gu Immortal!"

Those genius Gu Masters would feel some hesitation when they talked about charging to Gu Immortal realm. However, Fang Yuan had his previous life’s experiences, thus he had plenty of confidence in advancing to Gu Immortal realm.

"After becoming a Gu Immortal, the deadly crisis from Spring Autumn Cicada can be completely resolved."

Fang Yuan looked at Spring Autumn Cicada.

Since this rebirth, Spring Autumn Cicada had fallen into deep hibernation, continually absorbing the water from river of time and recuperating.

Right now, it had already mostly recovered and a faint pressure was filling Fang Yuan’s aperture.

For a long time now, Spring Autumn Cicada was like a guillotine hovering above Fang Yuan’s neck. As time passed, this enormous guillotine would move closer towards his neck.

Spring Autumn Cicada gave Fang Yuan an enormous death threat, forcing him to risk dangers and do everything he could to advance his cultivation.

Only by reaching the rank six Gu Immortal realm, could Fang Yuan’s aperture be able to store Spring Autumn Cicada.

At that time, Fang Yuan would have more freedom and leisure, and not be so repressed like now.

Light purple primeval essence continually appeared in the aperture, settling down below the remaining gold primeval essence.

Fang Yuan gathered his concentration and slowly stood up, walking out of this secret room and into another room.

There were several large vats in this room.

There was green liquid in the vats and a purple crystal relic Gu was floating on each liquid.

There were six purple crystal relic Gu. Most of them had been purchased by Fang Yuan or Little Hu Immortal from treasure yellow heaven.

Purple crystal relic Gu could raise a rank five Gu Master’s cultivation! Fang Yuan had paid a considerable price for them.

Fang Yuan only required three purple crystal relic Gu to raise his cultivation to the peak stage. But right now, he looked at the vats with various liquids.

One vat had muddy green liquid; another had a mixture of green and yellow; and the purple crystal relic Gu on two of the vats had tiny purple black hair growing out of them.

The remaining two vats had clear green liquid with no change.

Fang Yuan snorted; most of these six purple crystal relic Gu had been tampered with.

With his five hundred years of experience, Fang Yuan was able to conjecture something wrong with these relic Gu.

Among the purple crystal relic Gu in these six vats of green liquid, only two could be used. Fang Yuan immediately took out the two purple crystal relic Gu from the clear green liquid and used them.

Using two relic Gu, Fang Yuan’s cultivation immediately rose to rank five upper stage realm.

Fang Yuan again took out two purple crystal relic Gu whose bodies were filled with tiny hairs, and repeatedly used them.

The two relic Gu’s strength combined and was able to raise his cultivation to rank five peak stage!

In a short period of time, Fang Yuan advanced from rank five initial stage to rank five peak stage, completing an enormous jump. Moreover, relic Gu had no side-effects and would not cause his foundation to weaken.

Gu Master’s cultivation was extremely focused on resources. As long as there were enough resources, cultivation could make rapid progress.

Theoretically, as long as one had sufficient relic Gu, a Gu Master’s cultivation could advance in a lightning speed. But in reality, extremely few Gu Masters did this.

One reason was that relic Gu could only raise a Gu Master’s cultivation by a small realm; every great realm required the Gu Masters to breakthrough by themselves. It was extremely easy to raise cultivation with enough relic Gu, but this would instead cause normal Gu Masters to be reliant on them, and breaking through a great realm would become much harder.

Second, higher realm did not represent everything. To survive in this cruel world, one still needed planning, wisdom, opportunity, experience and training. A sudden increase in strength without the knowledge to control it was like an infant brandishing a broadsword, they could injure somebody and injure themselves.

Third, relic Gu were extremely expensive, few Gu Masters could enjoy advancing so lavishly. Even if a Gu Immortal’s descendants could enjoy such treatment, their elders would not allow them to be so spoiled.

Finally, there was an even more important point, and that was aptitude. Without good aptitude, relic Gu would have no use even if there were more of it. Fang Yuan could smoothly advance to rank five because of his experience and also the great help from A grade aptitude.

Fang Yuan might be the only one who could could use relic Gu like this repeatedly to sharply raise his cultivation.

If it were other rank five Gu Masters, even if they were geniuses from the Shang house clan, they would still have to follow the prescribed order. After all, a Gu Master’s cultivation still required long training of Gu worms. High cultivation could not directly indicate the battle strength, it was no more than making oneself look like a fat target.

Previous life experiences were Fang Yuan’s great wealth that allowed him to smoothly control this burst of strength.

Unknowingly, a night had already passed while dashing through the cultivation levels. Fang Yuan walked out of Dang Hun palace and onto Dang Han mountain.

Just like he expected, many guts Gu had grown on the mountain rocks.

He walked a few steps and crouched, casually kneading one, but it was only a pile of yellow mud.

Even since Dang Hun mountain was struck by Immortal Gu Gruel Mud, it gradually began to die and a part of the guts Gu created on it would become yellow paste.

Fang Yuan’s expression did not change as he had already expected this; he again pinched seven to eight guts Gu.

But in this process, he only got two good guts Gu. Using their strength, his wolfman soul slightly strengthened once more.

"The Immortal Gu Gruel Mud’s strength has already invaded deep. I remember that four to five guts Gu would be intact out of ten. Now, only three or four are good." Fang Yuan sighed.

Although these yellow mud were all gruel mud and could be sold at treasure yellow heaven, but compared to the guts Gu, the difference in worth was as different as night and day, and was an enormous loss.

Fortunately, all these guts Gu belonged to Fang Yuan alone.

Although six or seven out of ten guts Gu were useless, with their enormous numbers it was still enough for Fang Yuan’s soul to progress greatly.

"Now, I am at rank five peak stage, and the next step would be to attack the Gu Immortal realm. But this matter is quite difficult and I need many preparations and attempt it slowly." Fang Yuan inwardly planned.

With rank five peak stage aperture, Spring Autumn Cicada’s pressure had greatly resolved.

The urgent matter was to rescue Dang Hun mountain.

Though Dang Hun mountain was dying, saving it would be a great help to Fang Yuan’s future cultivation, even after he advanced to Gu Immortal realm.

After completely cleaning off all the guts Gu on the mountain, Fang Yuan entered Dang Hun palace again and collaborated with Little Hu Immortal to activate connecting heaven Gu.

Wave after waves of divine sense were mutually tangling up in treasure yellow heaven.

Just after they opened connecting heaven Gu, a large divine sense rushed was transmitted to Little Hu Immortal, asking about the price of gruel mud.

Fang Yuan had sold great amounts of gruel mud and this attracted many Gu Immortals’ interest.

Using these gruel mud for the Immortal Gu recipe, one could refine the Immortal Gu Gruel Mud. Although this Gu could only be used once, it was a genuine Immortal Gu. In this environment where Immortal Gu were scarce, Gu Immortals scrabbled madly for Fang Yuan’s gruel mud.

As for these gruel mud, Fang Yuan’s price was Immortal Gu Gruel Mud’s recipe.

Originally, these Gu Immortals brought incomparably damaged remnant recipes that did not have even ten feet of treasure light. But after a few days, the recipes these Gu Immortals brought out had already reached a treasure light of thirty to forty feet.

Fang Yuan still kept on disregarding them; he had large amounts of gruel mud to sell. In fact, none of the gruel mud recipes that appeared nowadays could satisfy him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Connecting heaven Gu inlaid itself in the air, figures of wolves flashed past one after another in the mirror.

Suddenly, the scene fixed itself on a turtleback myriad wolf king.

Turtleback wolves possessed broad physique, their whole body was dark-green and they had dark-blue eyes. Every turtleback wolf had shell like that of a turtle.

This shell was very heavy and about one-third of a turtleback wolf’s weight was due to it. Apart from defensive purpose, it could also store nutrition just like camels.

This species had the strongest defense among the wolves.

And the myriad beast wolf king that showed on connecting heaven Gu was no doubt even more enormous, being ten times larger than ordinary turtleback wolves. Its turtle back was towering high, the strong shell shone with bronze color, giving a feeling of abundant strength and power.

"The scale of the wolf group I have is close to thirty thousand. They can mainly be divided into three wolf groups; turtleback wolves, night wolves and wind wolves. There are around ten thousand wolves in each group. Besides them, there are also few poison beard wolves which were obtained from the poisonous grassland. There are also over a hundred water wolves which I bought because of white-eyes wolf."

Originally, Fang Yuan had over thirty thousand wolves. But after several battles, the loss accumulated and now he only had around twenty-seven thousand. After he sent the old, weak and injured wolves sent to Hu Immortal blessed land, the number of wolves left was less than twenty-five thousand.

Thus, they needed to be replenished.

If ordinary enslavement path Gu Masters wanted to replenish their beast group, they would need to organize a group to hunt, requiring much effort and time, moreover they could not take in too big of a beast group.

Fang Yuan, however, after possessing connecting heaven Gu, was like standing on a Gu Immortal’s shoulder, he had one more option than ordinary Gu Masters, that is to purchase the beast groups in treasure yellow heaven.

Most blessed lands would breed wild beasts. However, when the beast population increased a lot, they would influence the ecology of the blessed lands, and the Gu Immortals that controlled the blessed lands would put them for sale in treasure yellow heaven. Like this, not only could it reduce the pressure on the blessed land, it could also provide some revenue.

Similarly, many Gu Immortals who wanted to nurture the blessed land and replenish the ecology, would purchase some beasts to breed in their blessed lands. Thus, transactions of beast groups was extremely common in treasure yellow heaven.

There were many dazzling lineups of wolf groups put for sale in treasure yellow heaven.

Northern plains’ night wolves, wind wolves, water wolves, poison beard wolves, turtleback wolves; southern border’s lightning wolves, azure wolves, blood wolves, two-headed wolves; western desert’s silk wolves, pearl wolves, sand wolves, tyrant wolves; eastern seas’ ink wolves, greed wolves, red wolves, goldback wolves; central continent’s white-eyes wolves, star wolves, color wolves, blood wolves...

The wolves put for sale were not only common wild beasts, but also mutated beasts like white-eyes wolves, tyrant wolves and greed wolves.

Of course, there were no desolate beast level wolves which had battle strength comparable to Gu Immortals. But Fang Yuan knew there was a desolate beast peach wolf in Lang Ya blessed land.

"Among the three greatest wolf groups I have, only night wolf group has a myriad beast king. If my wind wolves and turtleback wolves also had myriad beast kings to unite them, I would not need to control the hundred wolf kings and thousand wolf kings; it will greatly reduce the burden when I command them. By reducing the burden on my soul, I can then take in even more wolf groups."

Fang Yuan did not intend to replace the wolf groups, that would be a superfluous move.

He decided to strengthen the wolf group on him.

Little Hu Immortal sent the divine sense for him and inquired the price of this turtleback myriad wolf king.

The Gu Immortal who put it for sale called himself South Sea Turtle Immortal. He wanted ten thousand stalks of blowpipe grass.

Blowpipe grass was the specialty of northern plains, every grass looked like an erect long pipe. When wind blew, the wind would enter the small holes on the grass and produce pleasant pipe sounds.

Blowpipe grass was a common material used in Gu refinement; at the same time, a large expanse of blowpipe grass would slowly give birth to some sound path and wood path Gu worms.

Fang Yuan did not have any blowpipe grass, and although he knew their location, this season was not the time for them to grow and they were all just seeds buried under the earth.

Fang Yuan knew this situation, but did not give up and made Little Hu Immortal ask: "Ask and see if he accepts immortal essence stones."

Little Hu Immortal conveyed with her divine sense and after communicating for a moment, she reported: "Master, he says he can sell twenty thousand turtleback wolves, but he is asking for two immortal essence stones."

Fang Yuan scoffed, this was a very expensive price. Immortal essence stones were very precious, turtleback wolves were no more than ordinary wild beasts but transactions required the process of bargaining.

After some haggling, Fang Yuan used an immortal essence stones to buy thirty thousand turtleback wolves and one turtleback myriad wolf king from South Sea Turtle Immortal.

After the transaction was finished, Fang Yuan bought another eighteen thousand wind wolves and one wind wolf myriad beast king. He replenished twenty thousand night wolves, five thousand poison beard wolves and six thousand water wolves. Altogether, he spent two and a half immortal essence stones.

It was not over yet.

The wolf groups entered Hu Immortal blessed land, bringing a grim ordeal to the original ecology and causing many effects. To say the least, Fang Yuan needed to provide enough food to these wolf groups, otherwise these wolves would starve to death because of insufficient food.

Hu Immortal blessed land also had many wild beasts like rabbits, pheasants and so on. But these animals were the food sources of fox groups.

Hu Immortal had cultivated large numbers of foxes in the blessed land; there were red foxes, gold foxes, cloud foxes, wind foxes, autumn water foxes, flowing light foxes and so on.

These fox groups had suffered disastrous damaged in the sixth earthly calamity, but a number were still preserved. After many years of recuperation, they would also gradually grow into a large scale and recover some of their strength.

If there were insufficient food, the wolf groups and fox groups were bound to hunt each other and create and extremely severe internal friction; the losses would be more than profits.

Fang Yuan bought food for these fox groups and wolf groups.

"Golden koi, blue jade carp, fat mudfish, which would be good... Eh? There are actually fish roes of air bubble fish!"

Just as Fang Yuan was about to choose one, he accidentally discovered a Gu Immortal was selling fish roes of air bubble fish.

He immediately decided to buy it.

However, air bubble fish’s fish roes had attracted some Gu Immortals’ attention, causing there to be a price competition.

Fang Yuan made prompt decision and raised the price to one immortal essence stone.

"There are just over twenty thousand fish roes, someone is actually paying one immortal essence stone!"

"This person is mad, even if they are bred, there would only be around three thousand air bubble fish. Although they are precious but they are only worth less than one immortal essence stone."

Gu Immortals transmitted divine sense containing their ridicule and contempt.

Air bubble fish were difficult to incubate, with only around thirty percent chance of survival rate. To them, the price Fang Yuan was paying was too high.

"If my memory is not wrong, two Gu Immortals would fight over the air bubble sea at the end of this year, the intense poison would invade into the whole air bubble sea and turn it into a death zone. At that time, air bubble fish’s price would sharply rise to over ten folds." Fang Yuan sneered after obtaining these fish roes.

Those able to become Gu Immortals were no doubt giants among men and great geniuses. Excluding some ignorant and incompetent second generation immortals, most of the Gu Immortals were those with great experiences and wisdom; if Fang Yuan had not started out with such a high price, it would be extremely difficult for him to get these fish roes.

"In future, when the battle of five regions break out, this air bubble fish’s price would increase to hundred folds of now!"

Air bubble fish were the specialty of eastern sea, they were quite peculiar with translucent and round belly, like a round and glossy air bubble. Two dark sesame seeds seemed to be sewed in front of the air bubble, they were its eyes. The fins and tail were very small, giving it very weak movement power.

Air bubble fish were different from other fishes, its movement style was to move by rising and falling. When they were in danger, they would often float out of the surface of the water to the air, to hide from their enemies.

Some mature air bubble fish could even keep staying at the air throughout the year without needing to enter the water, eating the tiny insects in the air as their food.

The greatest use of the air bubble fish was to increase the production of Gu worms.

The worms air bubble fish devoured would be protected and nourished in its belly, gradually evolving into a Gu, then they would pierce out of the belly and fly away.

Because it could increase the rate of Gu worms creation, air bubble fish became a product sought out by all Gu Immortals during the battle of the five regions.

"These air bubble fish needs to be slowly raised, although they only have thirty percent survival rate, they just need to be carefully tended to. Dozens of years later, they would reach a scale where they can be self-sufficient. Hundred years later,they would reach at least fifty thousand in numbers. And same as starlight firefly Gu, it will be a highly demanded good in the battle of five regions."

The fish roes of air bubble fish were an unexpected harvest, and could be considered a small pleasant surprise.

"With air bubble fish, I can’t choose fat mudfish. Although fat mudfish are the easiest to raise, but they will eat the fish roes of air bubble fish, they can even eat mud to fill their stomach when they are hungry."

"Comparatively speaking, between gold koi and blue jade carps; one eats gold as food and another eats gemstones. Both have no interest towards the fish roes of air bubble fish."

Fang Yuan did not lack gold and gemstones because there was a large group of rockmen in Hu Immortal blessed land.

These rockmen lived underground and ate soil as their food. After a long time, all kinds of gold, gemstones and so on would form on their body.

"However gold has a harmful influence on the reproduction of air bubble fish and can decrease the reproduction rate. The mild gemstones, however, have no such disadvantages, so I shall choose blue jade carps."

Fang Yuan pondered and finally decided upon the fish species.

In his previous life of five hundred years, he had also managed a blessed land. And because of many setbacks he had experienced then, he could now make the most sensible choices.

After obtaining blue jade carps, the water wolves’ food problem was solved. Fang Yuan then bought a large numbers of pink rabbit and iron-shell flowers as food for night wolves, wind wolves and turtleback wolves.

And because of poison beard wolves, Fang Yuan also chose some earth skin pigs.

These pigs had a high reproduction rate and could eat both meat and grass; they were also put in the eastern part of the blessed land.

Finally, Fang Yuan bought many Gu worms and large numbers of Gu refinement materials. He spent altogether eight immortal essence stones and hundreds of thousands of primeval stones.

"At once, eight immortal essence stones have been spent." Fang Yuan would not feel any heartache at common primeval stones, but he still cared about immortal essence stones.

Previously, he had sold many remnant recipes and obtained twenty-eight immortal essence stones, now only twenty remained.

"I can still sell the remnant recipes with me, but the more they are sold, the cheaper they will get. I lack means for getting profits, as for the investment in air bubble fish and starlight firefly Gu, they would only show results after a hundred years. I need to use these remaining immortal essence stones carefully."

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh. He handed connecting heaven Gu to little Hu Immortal and let her be in charge of dealing with the residence and various other works regarding wolf groups, fish groups, iron-shell flowers and air bubble fish roes.

Fang Yuan entered Dang Hun palace and used the materials he bought to refine Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

After one day and one night, Fang Yuan walked out of Dang Hun palace with an exhausted expression.

He came to Dang Hun mountain, many guts Gu had been created again during this period of time. But the quantity was half of the first time.

Fang Yuan pinched some of them, most were of no use because of Immortal Gu Gruel Mud’s powers.

But Fang Yuan had slaughtered Yan tribe, after collecting many souls, there were lot of guts Gu. Relying on this enormous number, Fang Yuan’s soul managed to advance by a lot.

"My current soul strength is over five times stronger than before. Unfortunately, there is still a large gap to thousand man soul." Fang Yuan closed his eyes for a while before opening them again with a slightly happy expression.

This progress was quite big. If it were normal Gu Masters, they would require ten years or more to accumulate such results.

But because of guts Gu’s help, Fang Yuan could easily accomplish this feat in less than half a day.

"No wonder Dang Hun mountain was called one of the sacred lands of soul path by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable. Among the things in my possession, Dang Hun mountain’s value is only lower to Spring Autumn Cicada. No matter what, I can’t let it die!"

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had once commented that soul path Gu Masters had two great sacred lands in this world. One was Dang Hun mountain to strengthen the soul; another was Luo Po valley to refine soul.

Soul needed to be strengthened and also required to be refined.

Fang Yuan used guts Gu to rapidly strengthen his soul. But he did not have Luo Po valley to refine his soul, thus he could only use wolf soul Gu instead.

Wolf soul Gu could transform a Gu Master’s soul into wolfman soul, having the effect of refining soul.

Guts Gu’s production continued to drop; by the third time, Fang Yuan only used one hour to pluck them all. Most of the guts Gu had become mud paste, and relying on the small portion of intact guts Gu, Fang Yuan strengthened his soul to six times.

Little Hu Immortal was busy with her work.

The stargate Gu was once again activated and Fang Yuan returned to northern plains.

The moment he stepped out of the stargate, Fang Yuan’s first sight was the loyal guarding wolf group that surrounded the area.

The stargate was connected to Hu Immortal blessed land; Fang Yuan sent poison beard wolves and water wolves to the blessed land while bringing wind wolf myriad wolf king and turtleback myriad wolf king to northern plains. At the same time, he replenished the three wolf groups, raising the scale of the wolf group to sixty thousand!

Fang Yuan did not immediately return to Ge tribe, instead he picked up a half-finished product and began to refine Gu.

After spending a long while, when the first rays of sunlight shone on crescent lake, he obtained rank five breath concealment Gu.

The heaven and earth of the five regions were different, whether it were Gu worms or Gu Masters, once they went into other regions, they would be suppressed.

But different from Gu worms, human is the spirit of all living beings and had great intelligence and adaptability. As long as a few years went by, Gu Masters could completely adapt to the environment and obtain the recognition of the region, no longer facing suppression.

And for the Gu worms to not be suppressed, Fang Yuan refined the Gu at northern plains. No matter where the materials were from or whatever Gu worms were used, the moment the Gu refinement was completed, the new rank five breath concealment Gu was born in northern plains and obtained northern plains’ recognition, not suffering from the suppression.

Back then, Fang Yuan had obtained rank two breath concealment Gu in Zi You mountain. By refining and ranking up this Gu worm, the rank five breath concealment Gu was finally formed.

At rank five, breath concealment Gu did not have any huge changes, was still like a purple exquisite tree leaf, it was just that the purple was deeper in color and even had a slight metallic luster.

After using the breath concealment Gu to hide his cultivation back to rank four middle stage, Fang Yuan let out a breath of turbid air.

He was now at rank five peak stage, and even after suffering the suppression in northern plains, he still had rank five initial stage aura.

If he returned to Ge tribe like this, it was sure to attract suspicion. At the same time, if one day, a portion of the suppression lifts and his cultivation suddenly rose, it would result in conjectures and doubts. Breath concealment Gu could prevent such an accident.

Fang Yuan returned to Ge tribe with the wolf group. As expected, the Ge tribesmen were shocked and pleasantly surprised.

But there were many wolf groups in northern plains, crescent lake was also a place filled with spirituality and many beast groups gathered around it; It was not difficult to explain how Fang Yuan gained such a bountiful harvest.

Fang Yuan placed a part of the wolf group inside the camp and another group outside, letting them move about.

When he returned to the giant lizard house Gu, Ge tribe leader Ge Guang immediately came over to pay respects, bringing two letters with him.

"Congratulations to lord for gaining a huge increase in strength after this hunt!" Ge Guang had two dark circles under his eyes, his face however had a joyous expression.

Throughout this day and night, he had been cleaning up the battlefield with Ge tribe elders, gathering the goods and dealing with those who surrendered, he was so busy that he had no time to sleep. Looking at Ge tribe’s strength expand in his hands, Ge Guang was very excited, causing his respect towards Chang Shan Yin to deepen by another layer.

He understood clearly that without Chang Shan Yin, this day would not have come for Ge tribe.

"My luck was quite good and I had some gains." Fang Yuan sat on the seat and lightly nodded at Ge Guang.

His strength increase did not end with the wolf groups. His cultivation and soul also had huge advancement, Ge Guang and the rest would be terrified if they knew.

At Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan had used up one chance to refine Immortal Gu, and obtained stargate Gu, thus causing his inactive chessboard to become alive again. Fang Yuan’s strength progressed at an unimaginable speed every time he entered Hu Immortal blessed land.

Everyone would find it hard to believe such rapid progress. However, it was also very reasonable when one carefully looked.

Fang Yuan possessed a blessed land, he was growing using the foundation of a Gu Immortal. The difference between immortals and mortals were as different as night and day; adding in his five hundred years of experience that allowed him to absorb the rapid increase in strength, he could grow smoothly without facing any issues.

Fang Yuan had been risking his life, like walking on a tightrope in between cliffs to obtain these enormous wealth that changed into deep accumulation. Finally, the accumulation was changing into explosive growth in strength.

"Lord, by devouring Yan tribe we have obtained a total of over six hundred and thirty four thousand primeval stones, one rank five Gu, twenty-seven rank four Gu and many rank three, rank two and rank one Gu. Besides them, there are over two thousand Gu refinement recipes, three hundred hump wolves and many big stomach horses. Lizard house Gu numbers to thousands, hundreds of mush room Gu, and the number of captives are over seven thousand..." Ge Guang excitedly reported.

Fang Yuan quietly listened; because he had taken down Yan tribe’s higher-ups in one move and also due to the surprise attack, Ge tribe was able to receive huge benefits.

Especially the amount of captives, it was unexpectedly over seven thousand. Among them were large numbers of rank two and rank one Gu Masters who wanted to surrender; after Ge tribe incorporated them, the tribe’s strength had increased by over two-fold.

"Lord, this is the inventory list after calculating, please take a look. You can take anything you want." Ge Guang respectfully handed Fang Yuan a list.

To Fang Yuan, these resources were instead not essential.

He had Hu Immortal blessed land now, the appeal of primeval stones to him had fallen down to the abyss. The days where he had to scheme for one or two primeval stones on Qing Mao mountain had already left him.

He lacked immortal essence stones, the more he had the better. Unfortunately, Yan tribe did not have a Gu Immortal, so how could they have immortal essence stones?

The reason why Fang Yuan assisted Ge tribe was to have a chess piece, to act as a shield for him so that he could meddle in the heroes assembly.

If possible, he did not want to give up the identity of Chang Shan Yin prematurely. The longer he managed the tribe, the more use it would have for him in the battle of five regions.

"According to the rules of the grassland, the half of these spoils are all mine. But these things are not suited for me, so I shall leave them with Ge tribe." Fang Yuan gave back the list to Ge Guang.

"Yes, lord." Ge Guang promptly replied.

"My wolf groups will be fed by your tribe. Account for the expenses using my share of the spoils." Fang Yuan added.

Ge Guang, however, shook his head and said with sincerity: "Lord, the reason our Ge tribe can have this day is all because of you. How could I, Ge Guang, be a person who doesn’t know favors? Feeding the wolf groups is our Ge tribe’s responsibility, there is no need for lord to spend your wealth. I understand deeply that my abilities are not enough to manage the whole Ge tribe. I hope senior can guide and give me pointers in the coming days."

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan laughed and took a deep glance at Ge Guang. This young man before him could be considered to have some experience now.

Although he had only held the tribe leader position for a short time, he had experienced trials and wandered in between life and death, he took risks, and thus progressed rapidly.

As the saying goes: Heroes emerge in troubled times.

This Gu Master world had a cruel environment and it was not easy to live. And precisely so, heroes emerged in large numbers and endlessly.

"Ge Guang, you are pretty good. In that case, I shall become Ge tribe’s external elder."

Ge Guang’s whole body shook before wild joy emerged in his face.

He promptly kneeled on the ground: "Junior is presumptuous and sincerely request senior to become the supreme elder of Ge tribe!"

"Supreme elder?" Fang Yuan muttered.

Ge Guang raised his head and looked at Fang Yuan sincerely. He knew Ge tribe’s current great situation was closely related to Chang Shan Yin, that is the only way they can move stably and far, while obtaining the most benefits.

If Chang Shan Yin was not around, just relying on his rank three cultivation would not be enough to suppress the expanding Ge tribe.

"Alright, I shall accept it." Fang Yuan agreed.

By this point, Ge tribe’s circumstances was also part of his plan. Ge Guang was only a rank three Gu Master and had just taken the tribe leader position, Fang Yuan made Ge tribe take over Yan tribe, it allowed him to have greater control of this person.

By controlling this person , he controlled Ge tribe!

"What? Yan tribe was exterminated by Ge tribe!?" At another place beside crescent lake, Wang tribe leader listened to the news and looked at Bei tribe’s envoy with shock.

Bei tribe’s envoy was an old rank three Gu Master, his face filled with wrinkles, grey hair, sunken and dark eyes. He was an enslavement path expert with some reputation in northern plains, named Bei Cao Sheng.

"That is precisely so. Many tribes already know of this, not long later, the news will spread to the whole northern plains. Your tribe is in a remote location and has many large beast groups in the surroundings, thus you were not able to get this news immediately."

Bei Cao Sheng continued: "I have come here to represent the alliance of Bei, Zheng and Pei tribe to request Wang tribe to join the alliance and punish Ge tribe together!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Eh?" Hearing Bei tribe, Zheng tribe and Pei tribe had already allied, Wang tribe leader slightly furrowed his brows.

In northern plains, it was not strange for tribes to form an alliance. The struggle for the Imperial Court was arriving soon, the appearance of alliances also increased.

"I have a doubt. Ge tribe was originally weaker than Yan tribe, how could such a small existence swallow a bigger force?" Wang tribe leader questioned.

Bei Cao Sheng laughed: "Ge tribe could absorb Yan tribe all because of one person. I wonder if Lord Wang tribe leader has ever heard of Chang Shan Yin?"

"Chang Shan Yin?" Wang tribe leader slightly frowned, this name brought a familiar feeling in the depths of his heart as if he had heard it somewhere.

Soon after, his furrowed brows relaxed and an astonished look appeared on his face: "Chang Shan Yin... could it be the Wolf King who had killed Ha Tu Gu?"

"Hehe. I am in admiration of tribe leader’s knowledge." Bei Cao Sheng cupped his fists, "Yes, it is because of this person’s meddling that led to Ge tribe’s victory. Who would have expected that the hero of northern plains would still alive after all this time? No one knows what happened in all these years. He appeared with low profile and with his lone strength, made Ge tribe, a small existence, swallow the big Yan tribe. Of course, this is also because Yan tribe’s higher-ups were schemed against by Chang Shan Yin and were taken down collectively. This allowed Ge tribe to have dominance when they attacked Yan tribe camp."

Bei Cao Sheng spoke with assurance, he was actually very clear of this inside story.

In truth, after Yan tribe was exterminated, there were naturally some who were able to escape alive and went to Bei tribe to request protection. With such informants, Bei tribe was naturally very clear of the situation.

Wang tribe leader’s brows furrowed deeper: "back in those days, Wolf King with his lone strength could bypass realms and kill rank five Gu Master Ha Tu Gu along with his bandit group. Such strength truly intimidates people. How can we deal with such expert with our strength?"

Rank four Gu Masters were already the leaders of small-mid scale tribes. Rank five Gu Masters were at the peak of the mortal world.

Long ago, the news of Chang Shan Yin killing Ha Tu Gu had created an uproar in the whole northern plains.

Reputation, whether good or bad, follows closely like a shadow; Chang Shan Yin’s deeds had spread throughout northern plains for so many years, it was natural for Wang tribe leader to have some apprehension.

Bei Cao Sheng laughed loudly: "Hahaha, it is natural for lord tribe leader to have worries. Wolf King was indeed an amazing character. But times have changed, today’s Wolf King is no longer as valiant as before."

"Eh? I would like to hear the details."

"Everyone knows the strength of enslavement path Gu Masters is determined by their troops. Wolf King has just come back, his wolf group is no longer of the same scale as before, with not even a single mutated beast. There are only ordinary wind wolves, night wolves and turtleback wolves with him. And in the battle with Yan tribe, they already suffered huge losses. His battle strength is not so mighty."

Bei Cao Sheng continued: "Moreover, Wolf King attacked Yan tribe without rhyme or reason, this is the conduct of the demonic path, slaughtering ordinary mortals goes against northern plains’ rules. He is no longer the hero of our northern plains, but a demon everyone needs to hunt. The one we are punishing this time is a sinner who creates conflicts, an evildoer who invades at will! We have righteousness with us while Ge tribe is at the side of injustice and evil. The heroes assembly has not begun yet, the struggle for Imperial Court has not started yet, but they dared to openly wage a war with another tribe, this is unforgivable. Looking at the history of northern plains, which of the people that violated the bottom line like this has ever had a good ending?"

Bei Cao Sheng’s words were full of passion, indeed as the political advisor of Bei tribe, his words had the power to incite people’s hearts.

But Wang tribe leader also was a seasoned character and not someone who could be easily influenced. His gaze flashed and said with hesitation: "Although it is so, Wolf King is after all the Wolf King. In the battle between giants, there will definitely be injuries. After the battle ends, there is bound to be enormous losses."

Bei Cao Sheng shook his head and smiled without concern: "Hehehe. Wolf King might be strong, but two fists cannot defeat four hands. Ge tribe has just absorbed Yan tribe, they have eaten too much this time and inflated very quickly, they will not be stable for a long time. As long as Wang tribe joins us, why would our four tribes’ alliance be afraid of a puny Ge tribe?"

Wang tribe leader muttered irresolutely for a while and said: "I am not afraid of Ge tribe, but Wolf King is the Wolf King. He mysteriously disappeared for so many years, who knows what happened, he might have even had fortuitous encounter. He definitely has some plan in making his appearance now. Such a character is sure to have trump cards that he has not shown yet."

Bei Cao Sheng scoffed: "Reputation usually comes from exaggeration. Wang tribe leader, why should we puff up the enemy and lower our morale? Why are you so afraid of the Wolf King? He is already past his prime, even if he has trump cards, he is no more than an enslavement path Gu Master in the end. Since he is an enslavement path Gu Master, we have ways to deal with him."

"Truthfully speaking, our Bei tribe also has enslavement path Gu Masters, our tribe’s forest soldier corps which has made its name in northern plains; it can completely face Chang Shan Yin. Besides them, Zheng tribe has the renowned lightning spear battle formation while Pei tribe leader Lord Pei Yan Fei is a famous expert in northern plains and has already advanced to rank four peak stage. Even if Wolf King has much more troops, Lord Pei Yan Fei can move past the troops and directly attack and kill the Wolf King!"

It was common knowledge that enslavement path Gu Masters feared beheading the leader tactics.

As long as this tactic succeeded, even a huge army of millions would immediately fall into chaos and flee in disorder.

Wang tribe leader, however, was still hesitating, and evaded it saying he needed a few days to consider as it was a serious matter.

Disappointment flashed past Bei Cao Sheng’s eyes: "This is a serious matter, it makes sense for Wang tribe leader to consider it carefully. However, this matter cannot be delayed, if we allow the Ge tribe to recover their senses and digest the spoils of the war, our losses when we fight will be much more larger. Please take note of this, lord tribe leader."

Wang tribe leader nodded: "At most three days, during this period, you can stay in our tribe and receive our warmest welcome."

Bei Cao Sheng could only take the initiative to say his farewell after hearing these words.

When he had just left the hall, a person entered.

This person was thin with a yellowish face, there were three strands of beard on his chin and a pair of sharp and bright eyes. He was Wang tribe leader’s competent assistant; Wang tribe elder Wang De Dao, an experienced strategist.

"Lord tribe leader, are we really going to agree to Bei tribe and join this alliance?" Wang De Dao asked with some worries.

"Hehehe, of course not, you don’t need to worry." Wang tribe leader laughed.

Wang De Dao let out a breath of relief: "Tribe leader is wise to not be bewitched by others. The power struggle for Imperial Court is arriving, and years of battle will follow it. Preserving strength is our main priority. The thoughts of Bei, Pei and Zheng tribe, these three mid scale tribes, are very clear. Yan tribe is in-laws of Liu tribe, Yan Cui Er is Liu tribe young master’s fiancee. They are thinking of becoming dogs of Liu tribe, to curry favor with Lord Liu Wen Wu, but they want to involve my tribe to share the risks."

"Yes." Wang tribe leader nodded, "Our Wang tribe is a large scale tribe, we need to make our moves very carefully. The struggle for the Imperial Court is like a battle of dragons and snakes; in the end, who can become the final winner? We need to observe carefully and choose the side we are siding with."

Every ten years in northern plains, there would be a terrifying and shocking blizzard.

Only by entering the Imperial Court, could one have protection to not be affected by the blizzard.

But the quota in Imperial Court was limited; there were too many that wanted to enter, thus they would go through bitter battle, and after eliminating the weak, the master of the Imperial Court would be decided.

Wang tribe might be a large scale tribe but was classified as those tribes with superficial foundation, having no intents to vie for the throne. They only wanted to side with the correct force and become the one with the greatest contribution, thus entering the Imperial Court and avoiding the disaster.

"If we can’t enter the Imperial Court, our tribe will definitely suffer disastrous damage during the blizzard. We will fall from our current large scale force to mid scale, small scale or even complete extermination with a high probability. But if we can enter Imperial Court, through the support of the resources of Imperial Court, we can recuperate and if our luck is good, we can have the qualifications to vie for the next rulership of Imperial Court!" Wang De Dao said with a grave expression.

This matter concerned the survival and prosperity of the whole Wang tribe; every Wang tribesman was cautious and careful.

"Then, how should we deal with Bei Cao Sheng?" Wang tribe leader asked.

Wang De Dao stroked his beard and said after a while: "We should properly entertain this person, and three days later, we can tactfully decline their alliance invitation. At the same time, we will send a letter to Ge tribe behind their back, to express our goodwill to the Wolf King and tell them of this matter. Let them fight each other while we will watch safely from the sideline. If there is an opportunity, we can have no worries in benefiting from their conflict."

"Hahaha, your words deeply resonates with my heart." Wang tribe leader could not help laughing heartily.

Gazing at the letter in his hand, Ge tribe leader Ge Guang had a worried expression.

All the Ge tribe elders beside him were also silent.

The atmosphere had become so heavy in the main tent that it was almost suffocating.

"Bei, Pei and Zheng tribe have allied to combine their strength and pass judgement to our tribe. They are wantonly attracting more allies now. Wang tribe leader has sent this information secretly, I am afraid not long later, the allied army would make their move. Elders, do you have any good plans?" Ge Guang asked.

"This matter is not looking good. Our tribe has just absorbed Yan tribe, although our morale is high, we have yet to digest the spoils of the war."

"If the enemy invades us, it is hard to say if the Yan tribe captives we have won’t rise up in rebellion."

"At that time, with both external and internal threats, our Ge tribe won’t be far from extermination!"

"Then should we retreat?"

"Retreat? Where? We have a camp now and can defend our positions. But if we retreat, there will be nothing to protect us, do we just wait for those tribes to surround us then?"

The elders started discussing.

Ge Guang looked at them with a disappointed gaze, the elders were just making random comments with no one giving reasonable suggestion.

This instead caused the atmosphere in the tent to become more repressing and was vaguely shaking up their battle will.

"Alright, no need to say anymore." He raised his hand and put an end to the discussion.

"I won’t hide this from you, few days ago, Lord Wolf King Chang Shan Yin has agreed to become our tribe’s supreme elder. We need to invite him to discuss this matter." Ge Guang revealed the news.

He had kept this news hidden, now that he said it out, it was like a cardiac stimulant that caused the elders to feel a rush of morale.

"Lord Wolf King has become our tribe’s supreme elder?"

"Great, great, this is a cause for celebration!"

"With Lord Wolf King with us, we have a chance of survival."

The suppressing atmosphere in the tent was immediately swept clean and the fallen morale rapidly soared. This was the effect of an expert; in times of crisis, they were the main pillar that could hold up the sky and earth.

Seeing this, Ge Guang realized why only Gu Masters with high cultivation could become the ones in power in tribes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan was invited into Ge tribe’s main tent.

"Oh, three tribes are allying to deal with us?" Fang Yuan heard this and his eyes shone, asking: "Which three?"

An elder immediately replied: "Reporting to lord supreme elder, it is Pei tribe, Bei tribe, and Zheng tribe."

Pausing for a second, this elder continued: "Pei tribe’s Pei Yan Fei has rank four peak stage cultivation, he is a fierce general famous in northern plains. Although Bei tribe is only a middle-sized tribe, it has two enslavement path Gu Masters. As for Zheng tribe, although they were created not too long ago, their lightning spear battle formation is nothing to be trifled with."

Fang Yuan nodded, he had heard a familiar name, that was Pei Yan Fei.

This person was truly a fierce general in northern plains, after joining Liu Wen Wu, he became Liu tribe’s third general.

In the future battles, he often fought his way into enemy formations alone, assaulting and disrupting their battle formations, as he charged through unstoppably, he aimed for the leader’s head.

As for Bei tribe and Zheng tribe, although Fang Yuan had no memories of them, it did not obstruct him from estimating their strength.

Either of these two tribes were equal to Ge tribe back in Hong Yan valley.

Bei tribe had two enslavement path Gu Masters, this meant that they could resist Fang Yuan’s wolf group head on. As for Zheng tribe, it seemed that they grew to power using the lightning spear battle formation, this was Zheng tribe’s trump card, it could not be underestimated.

"However, I need large numbers of souls to feed Dang Hun mountain and strengthen my own soul. The alliance of the three tribes will allow me to kill many people right? Hehehe."

Thinking so, Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a cold smile.

"Right now, the three tribes have allied, the situation is precarious, uncle Chang Shan Yin, what should Ge tribe do?" Ge Guang was yearning for an answer.

Fang Yuan raised his brows, his words oozing with killing intent: "What can we do? Since they want to kill us anyway, we will strike first and attack them immediately! You have to know, the best defense is offense!"

"What? Attack?!"

Hearing this, Ge tribe higher-ups were shocked.

In their earlier discussions, some people suggested retreating, some suggested defending, but no one had suggested attacking.

This idea was too aggressive and risky. After all, the power of the three allied tribes greatly surpassed Ge tribe. Now that Ge tribe had just assimilated Yan tribe’s captives, they had internal woes as well.

"Is it too crazy to just attack them now?" The elders looked at each other, sensing each others worry from their expressions. But because of Fang Yuan’s attitude, they did not dare to speak out.

At once, everyone went silent.

Ge Guang hesitated for a while, before meekly saying: "Uncle Chang Shan Yin, the enemy is strong while we are weak, but we are going to strike first and give up on defending the camp?"

Fang Yuan snorted: "If you are thinking like this, so are our enemies. Precisely so, we have to initiate the attack and catch them off guard."

"Tonight, we shall gather our forces and assault them in the dark! Which tribe is the closest to us?"

"The closest is Bei Tribe, following by Zheng tribe and then Pei tribe who are the furthest." Ge Guang replied.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly: "Very good, then we shall wipe out Bei tribe first, before slaughtering Zheng tribe and then find a chance to finish off Pei tribe. This battle will be tragic, be mentally prepared. But we cannot make progress without sacrifices, after we devour the three tribes, our Ge tribe will strengthen even further."

The tribe elders looked at each other, tongue-tied, shocked by Fang Yuan’s ambition.

With Ge tribe’s current situation, he still wanted to devour the allied enemies who were two to three times stronger than them. This was unimaginable.

Seeing the hesitant gang, Fang Yuan waved his hand: "Then that will be the plan, go and prepare for it."

"Yes." The higher-ups replied.

That night, the night winds blew and the moon was high in the sky.

Ge tribe camp opened its gates as the wolves ran out like a flowing river. Countless Gu Masters were mixed in with them, as they charged forward with strong killing intent.

"What a good weather, this is a perfect weather to kill people." Fang Yuan sat on a mutated beast as he laughed.

This mutated beast was that white-eyes wolf, it was an infant earlier, but after Fang Yuan used the time path Gu worm to accelerate its growth, it rapidly aged. Now, this white-eyes wolf was several times its original size.

Having a body of white snow-like fur, its body shape was slim and smooth like water, only slightly smaller than a hump wolf.

But its current battle strength was only comparable to an ordinary hundred wolf king. There were no wild Gu inside its body.

Time was needed for wild Gu to live in a beast king. During a beast king’s long period of growth, multiple wild Gu worms would come to seek refuge with them.

But this white-eyes wolf grew too fast, it lacked the foundation built with time, and because it was always by Fang Yuan’s side, there were no Gu on it.

Because of that, Fang Yuan used it as his steed and let it accompany him. Sometimes, using its vision, he could scout areas quickly.

The army moved quickly towards Bei tribe.

Bei tribe camp was situation on a mound, there were originally many trees on the mound, but now they were all removed and a tall wall was erected all around Bei tribe camp.

On the wall, there were observational towers that were giving off a bright light, lighting up the dark camp. On the surface of the wall, there were wooden spikes and several Bei tribe Gu Masters were standing at set intervals, giving off a strong impregnable aura.

"Lord, are we really attacking?" The army stealthily got closer as Ge Guang observed the wall, his heart jumped as he had the urge to retreat.

Fang Yuan laughed: "We will definitely win."

"What does lord supreme elder mean?" An elder did not understand and asked.

Fang Yuan pointed at the wall: "Precise because of the sturdy wall, these Bei tribe Gu Masters are complacent, sending only a few Gu Masters to guard it. The fact that we could get to near to them is proof of this. Furthermore, this light is too bright, it shows Bei tribe’s intention to scare off the weak. Such a false bravado, while attempting to show that they were a stronghold, revealed all their little secrets."

Hearing this, Ge tribesmen were assured.

Fang Yuan instructed again: "Later, I will send the wolves to crush the wall, you will send the Yan tribe captives to charge and lead the way, while Ge tribe Gu Masters watch them. If anyone tries to rebel or run away, kill them on the spot!"

His icy cold voice made everyone shudder.

The moment he said that, before waiting for the elders to react, Fang Yuan waved his hand as two myriad wolf kings led their wolf groups and rushed out. In a few breaths’ time, they got into the lighted area.

"Wolves, why are there so many wolves?!" Bei tribe Gu Masters rubbed their eyes, finding it unbelievable.

"Enemy assault, enemy assault!!" Some people reacted and shouted loudly, using their Gu worms to send signals.

"Block them, reinforcements are coming!" The Gu Masters shouted with all their strength.

But Fang Yuan’s attack was ferocious and overwhelming, it was like two iron fists that had been storing energy for a day.

The battle strength of a myriad wolf king was not to be underestimated, often, a rank four Gu Master and multiple rank three experts were needed to deal with one.

Two myriad wolf kings, under Fang Yuan’s manipulation, unleashed their strongest attacks without hesitation.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

Every impact was soul shaking. The study wall swayed in the wind like a flimsy paper.

Especially the turtleback myriad wolf king, it had a thick skin and a strong body, it caused the most damage to the wall.

Bei tribe Gu Masters were busy retaliating, but their scattered attacks were blocked by the myriad wolf king’s defensive Gu.

When Bei tribe’s reinforcements arrived in a hurry, they saw the collapse of an entire segment of the wall. Two myriad wolf kings led their endless wolf armies as they charged into the camp.

"Night wolf myriad beast king! Turtleback myriad wolf king!" Bei tribe leader saw this sight and he was shocked out of his wits.

These were two types of wolves, as wild wolf groups, they will never work together. This situation only meant one thing, there was someone controlling them.

Who was the culprit?

Bei tribe leader did not need to think twice before a name appeared in his heart — Wolf King Chang Shan Yin!

"Chang Shan Yin..." Bei tribe leader gritted his teeth and fire almost spewed out of his eyes.

But his fury could not stop the attack of the wolf group.

So be it if they were ordinary wolves, but under Fang Yuan’s control, strength and knowledge became the best companions.

Bei tribe tried resisting, and formed many defensive formations, but the wolf group charged without worry for casualties, it was an all-out attack.

The Ge tribe Gu Masters behind the wolf group were like spectators.

Rank four — grass puppet Gu!

Bei tribe leader injected his primeval essence into the grass below his feet.

The grass grew to the size of a person, turning into a grass puppet, holding a green leaf long sword.

This was the grass sword elite soldier!

Large numbers of grass sword elite soldiers charged towards the wolf group.

The grass sword elite soldiers successfully resisted the wolf group’s attack, they formed a formation near the main tent and blocked the wolves like a green monolith.

But this situation was only temporary, when Bei tribe leader’s primeval essence was used up, the grass sword elite soldiers were out of steam and the monolith became smaller, submerged by the wolves.

"Retreat, we will retreat to Zheng tribe! As long we are alive, Bei tribe will have the hopes of returning one day." Bei tribe leader saw that the defeat was set in stone and resolutely decided to retreat.

"Hahaha." Fang Yuan rode the white-eyes wolf as he looked at the escaping Bei tribesmen, laughing loudly.

"Lord, we won!" Ge Guang said excitedly.

"We’ve only won the first out of three battles. Leave some people behind to clean up the battlefield, we will chase them!" Fang Yuan waved and the tens of thousands of wolves howled and changed directions towards Zheng tribe.

"They are chasing us!" The Bei tribe Gu Masters who were escaping saw such a grand army and were scared till their souls trembled.

"No wait, Chang Shan Yin’s next target is Zheng tribe." Someone understood.

"Not only did he take down our tribe, he also wants to take down Zheng tribe?!" Someone furiously screamed.

"Tribe leader, what do we do? My primeval essence is almost used up, soon, they will catch up." Someone shouted frantically.

Bei tribe leader hesitated for a moment, he did not have much primeval essence left, he could only change directions and enter the forest near him.

Fang Yuan led the army and ignored these people, charging straight for Zheng tribe.

"He did not chase us, he went to Zheng tribe after all." Bei tribe’s higher-ups breathed roughly, standing in the forest, they watched the stampede of over ten thousand wolves.

Bei tribe leader’s expression was solemn, the veins on his fists were about to burst, the hatred in his heart and the flames of fury almost incinerated him, but there was nothing he could do!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Prepare the lightning spears!" Zheng tribe leader shouted furiously as he went to the frontline.

After crushing Bei tribe, Fang Yuan led his army without stopping towards Zheng tribe camp.

A bitter battle erupted instantly.

Fang Yuan commanded two myriad beast kings to attack together, breaking through Zheng tribe’s two defensive lines in moments. However, at the third line, they were finally stopped.

The ones who stopped the wolf tide was Zheng tribe’s renowned trump card — the lightning spear corps.

These rank two Gu Masters stood in a row on the walls, emitting strong elite aura; forging a wall made of flesh and blood.

Hearing the tribe leader’s shout, these Gu Masters immediately pushed forward their right hand and poured their primeval essence into the lightning imprint on their right palm.

This was the imprint of the lightning spear Gu.

Next, Ge tribesmen saw lightning emitting out of these Gu Masters’ palms before forming into silverish blue colored spears.

These spears were four feet long and were completely condensed from lightning; lightning flickered and emitted a soft sizzling sound.

"Shoot!" Zheng tribe leader shouted.

Whoosh!

In an instant, five hundred and eighty lightning spears flew together and drew a dense arc in the sky.

The shining lightning illuminated the battlefield for a moment. The blue light shone on everyone’s faces.

The difference was Ge Guang and his group had ashen expressions, while Zheng tribe leader had a proud smile.

Lightning spears rained down upon the charging wolf group.

Even though turtleback wolves had strong shells, they were still pierced by the lightning spears. Let alone the wind wolves and night wolves who were weak in defense.

The volley of lightning spears showed an extraordinary might, instantly clearing up a large area of the battlefield.

The densely packed wolf group also became thinner.

Over five hundred wolves fell, dead. The offense of the wolf group had slowed down.

"Hahaha, look, this is our tribe’s lightning spear corps!"

"With such strong troops, who dares to look down on our tribe?"

"This is the strongest blood and flesh wall of our tribe, what could happen to us even if there were more wolves?"

Zheng tribe’s Gu Masters shouted in excitement at this sight, their morale increasing rapidly. In contrast, Ge tribesmen had grave expressions.

"Chang Shan Yin." Zheng tribe leader used sound amplification Gu to amplify his voice, suppressing all the chaotic noises of the battlefield.

"You invaded my tribe without rhyme or reason, the heroes assembly has not started yet but you are recklessly starting a war with no care for law and order. Your brutal massacre will be punished by all the tribes of northern plains. You have not made a great mistake yet, you still have a chance at redemption, retreat quickly! Otherwise, I shall let the world know of your evil nature, you and the Ge tribe behind you shall be called rats by all northern plainsmen!" Zheng tribe leader berated and warned.

"Lord supreme elder..." Ge tribe’s elders looked towards Fang Yuan with hesitation on their faces.

Fang Yuan’s mad war campaign was indeed violating the rules. Although the three tribes allied to deal with Ge tribe, they had yet to act. Just relying on the evidence gathered by Ge tribe, they could not prove anything.

Northern plains Gu Masters liked to battle but they did not battle recklessly and everything was based on proper reasons.

The more sensible and grand the reasons were, the better it was.

Moreover, the struggle for the Imperial Court had not begun yet, so the tribes were mutually restraining each other. Back when Ge tribe was at Hong Yan valley, Man tribe clearly had more strength than Ge tribe, but they still did not make a direct move. Instead, they used schemes to create a wolf tide. This was because

Man tribe did not have a proper reason to swallow Ge tribe.

This was the rule of the righteous path, the game rule between the tribes of northern plains.

Fang Yuan leading Ge tribe to invade the three tribes alliance was clearly breaking this rule. They were attacking without appropriate reasons which meant their actions lacked righteousness.

Ge tribe's invasive conduct which reeked of demonic nature would cause them to be isolated; other tribes might be vigilant towards them or even attack them.

Thus, Ge tribe's higher-ups were worried. But because of Chang Shan Yin's strength and prestige, they did not openly oppose him.

Right now, the wolf group's offense was obstructed and the Ge tribesmen were starting to show the first signs of worries.

Fang Yuan sat indifferently on the mutated beast white-eyes wolf, gazing at those Gu Masters on the wall.

"The lightning spear corps are indeed extraordinary."

His gaze continued to flash as he saw the ingenuity behind this

In the entire lightning spear corps, there were over five hundred offensive Gu Masters, but the truly important characters were the hundred or so support Gu Masters who were hiding in the corner and were strictly defended.

These Gu Masters used their Gu worms to strengthen the power of the lightning spears or condense the force of the lightning spears into an even stronger attack.

Fang Yuan then looked at the night wolf myriad beast king as well as turtleback myriad wolf king.

These two wolf kings were obstructed by Zheng tribe leader personally along with the lightning spear corps' combined strength, so they had no choice but to retreat.

Their bodies were riddled with wounds. Turtleback myriad wolf king was slightly better, but the night wolf myriad beast king's defense Gu was killed, its entire body was covered with blood and some wounds were so deep, one could even see the bone.

Even though Fang Yuan used wolf smoke Gu to heal most of these wounds, the night wolf myriad beast king's strength had dropped by a level.

Retreat?

Does retreating mean that the others won't pursue?

Fang Yuan sneered, retreating was the fastest way to die.

Only by advancing without stopping, charging forward, defeating the three tribe alliance, annihilating the survivors, could the bad influence of breaking northern plains rules be reduced to the minimum.

Right now, Ge tribe was like a drawn bow, there was no other option but to press on.

Ge tribe's higher-ups were short-sighted, so they could not see the situation clearly. But Fang Yuan, with his five hundred years of experience, naturally was a seasoned veteran and could clearly see the situation.

"Everyone, we are at the most crucial moment now. Ge tribesmen, charge forward, fight to the death, whoever dares to retreat a step shall be killed without question!" Fang Yuan shouted coldly while actively mobilizing all the remaining forces with him.

Howl!

Wind wolf myriad beast king lead the wind wolf group and rushed to the battlefield. Fang Yuan had been intentionally hiding this myriad wolf king outside. He had not brought it to Ge tribe camp and did not use it even when attacking Bei tribe.

"The third myriad wolf king!" Ge tribe and Zheng tribe’s Gu Masters changed expression at the sight of this wind wolf king.

Ge tribe’s higher-ups revealed joy, while Zheng tribe’s Gu Masters felt like a heavy stone had landed on their hearts.

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with cruel killing intent; he waved his hand and the three wolf kings rushed forward together.

Seeing three myriad wolf kings charge together, Zheng tribe leader’s expression paled and furiously attacked.

Killer move — Thunder Bird!

The primeval sea level in his aperture violently dropped as three Gu worms were activated together, forming an enormous lightning bird in the air.

The giant bird flew towards the turtleback myriad wolf king and obstructed it.

"Lightning spear corps, shoot together!" Zheng tribe leader hastily shouted.

Hundreds of lightning spears were shot to the sky. Support Gu Masters acted together, converging the flying lightning spears together. In the blink of an eye, the lightning spears combined to form into a lightning snake.

Eagle claw Gu!

A rank three elder suddenly activated his Gu at the lightning snake. The lightning snake immediately grew out two sharp and steel-like claws.

Rhino horn Gu!

Another Zheng tribe elder activated his Gu; a sharp golden horn grew out of the lightning snake’s head.

Silver scales Gu!

Another elder added bright silver colored, firm scale armor on the lightning snake’s body.

This completely armed lightning spear made a circle in the air, looking like a divine dragon descending into the world. Next, it charged down valiantly towards the wind wolf myriad beast king.

"This move again." Fang Yuan’s eyes twitched; previously, the night wolf myriad beast king had been obstructed by this killer move and suffered serious injuries.

This was the killer move — Gold and Silver Lightning Dragon!

Gu Masters nurtured, used and refined Gu; each aspect was a deep field of study. There was the killer move in the aspect of using Gu.

Some Gu Master experts would exquisitely activate many Gu worms’ abilities consecutively in a very short period and fuse them into an even stronger attack. This was a killer move.

Normal killer moves were activated by one Gu Master. Like Zheng tribe leader’s killer move thunder bird.

The gold and silver lightning dragon, however, was a killer move formed from the cooperation of hundreds of Gu Masters. It condensed the strength of hundreds of Gu Masters as well as rank three experts into an extremely terrifying attack.

As it was obstructed by gold and silver lightning dragon, the wind wolf myriad beast king had no hopes of advancing further temporarily.

However, Fang Yuan was not discouraged.

He still had a myriad wolf king!

Night wolf myriad beast king began a crazed assault under his control.

"Block it, block it!"

"Hold it back even if you die."

"Tribesmen, our parents, wives, children, brothers and sisters are behind us, we absolutely cannot lose!"

"This myriad beast king no longer has its defense Gu, we still have hope!!"

Zheng tribe’s Gu Masters raised their morale and attacked fiercely.

Countless attacks shone brilliantly like fireworks as they landed on the night wolf myriad beast king’s body.

This night wolf myriad beast king’s defense Gu had already died. The attacks easily caused its flesh to lacerate, causing it to howl bitterly in pain.

The intense pain agitated the night wolf myriad beast king; its eyes reddened, its killing intent burst out and its offense became fiercer.

"Damn it!" Seeing the night wolf myriad beast king kill the lightning spear corps, destroying Zheng tribe’s most precious trump card, Zheng tribe leader almost spurted out blood in anger.

However, he could not go to stop it, as right now, he was using all his strength to pin down turtleback myriad wolf king.

To protect their home and family, Zheng tribe’s Gu Masters burst out with much greater strength.

"Die beast!" A rank three elder dashed out without a thought for his safety and flew towards the night wolf myriad beast king’s eyes, fiercely piercing forwarding with his hands.

The night wolf king had no time to dodge and its eyes were pierced.

Amidst the incomparable pain, it opened its mouth and bit this rank three elder apart.

The rank three elder’s body was split into two; but he had a smile on his face before dying.

He used his final trace of primeval essence to inflict heavy injuries on the night wolf king.

Such a situation was not rare. To block the night wolf king, many Zheng tribe’s Gu Masters chose to sacrifice themselves and protect their home.

"Truly brave warriors!" Fang Yuan praised while laughing coldly.

In his mind, Fang Yuan sensed the night wolf king’s intense desire to retreat. But he did not allow that and forcibly made it continue attacking.

Lightning spear corps suffered serious losses in the intense fight with the night wolf king, not even ten percent survived. With there being no decent resistance, Ge tribe’s Gu Masters charged out and created an opening rapidly.

The scales of victory tilted towards Fang Yuan.

Time passed, gold and silver lightning dragon dissipated in the air and the wind wolf king became free; under Fang Yuan’s control, it started killing Zheng tribe elders.

Next, the wolf group charged inside Zheng tribe camp like a tide, mercilessly killing the old, the weak, women and children.

Wretched screams, despairing shouts and shrieks resounded throughout the battlefield.

"Die, go and die, the more deaths there are, the more souls I can obtain." Fang Yuan looked expressionlessly at this living hell, as he secretly used his storage Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In a distant dark corner, close to ten people were gazing at the battlefield; they were the higher-ups of Bei tribe who had escaped.

"Zheng tribe is done for." Bei tribe leader Bei Cao Chuan sighed.

"Who would have thought Chang Shan Yin had a third myriad wolf king!" An elder exclaimed in shock, expressing everyone’s inner thoughts.

They had never expected Fang Yuan to be hiding his strength. In the attack against Bei clan, this myriad wolf king had been hidden all along and never made its appearance.

"With three myriad wolf kings, it is normal for Zheng tribe, a mid scale tribe, to be defeated even if they have the lightning spear corps."

"However, Chang Shan Yin is really sinister, he could actually wait so patiently to this degree. Such temperament is terrifying!"

"Hehe, so what? Zheng tribe leader killed night wolf myriad beast king before his death. Now, Chang Shan Yin only has two myriad wolf kings left."

Some of the remnant Bei tribe elders sighed with sorrow while some sneered.

Capturing a myriad beast king was not an easy matter. Fang Yuan’s loss appeared to be very disastrous to them.

But in fact, replenishing the myriad wolf king was only a thought away for Fang Yuan who could connect to treasure yellow heaven.

"This Chang Shan Yin is crazy and cruel, he could have made the night wolf myriad beast king retreat temporarily, but he kept on pushing it firmly, leading to its death." An elder said with a chill in his heart.

Bei tribe leader narrowed his eyes, recalling the battlefield that was vivid in his mind: "If he had not pushed this strongly, they might not have been able to settle the battle so quickly. Ge tribe is unable to sustain a battle of attrition when attacking a large group with their small group. Chang Shan Yin’s move was very wise."

"It is a pity Zheng tribe leader also died. He was a rank four upper stage expert, if he could have lived..." Bei tribe elders sighed.

The reason for this was also because Zheng tribe leader was overly fond of battles, using all his strength to fight with the enemy. After a long battle, his primeval essence was greatly consumed, but when he wanted to escape, his path was cut off by night wolf myriad beast king and in the end, did not manage to escape.

And Zheng tribe’s lightning spear corps were almost completely exterminated with only two to three small-fry remaining.

These two matters were fatal strikes to Zheng tribe’s morale.

Their tribe leader sacrificed himself and the corps was exterminated; Zheng tribe lost resistance and was utterly destroyed.

Ge tribesmen charged into the camp and unfolded an unrestrained massacre. Zheng tribe showed no intent to battle and did their best to escape; cries of agony and pleading could be heard endlessly.

There even appeared scenes where a rank one Gu Master chased after two to three rank two Gu Masters.

It was not that these rank two Gu Masters did not want to fight, but their primeval essence had been severely consumed in the battle with the wolf group.

Without primeval essence, a Gu Master’s battle strength would fall to the abyss.

The remnant Bei tribesmen fell into silence as they saw Zheng tribe’s miserable state.

They could not help thinking back to the scene where their own camp was attacked; everyone of them gnashed their teeth and clenched their fists, their heart filled with fury and also a bleak feeling.

Chaos was descending!

Every ten years in Northern Plains, a disastrous blizzard would appear, causing great unrest where heroes rose and vied for supremacy.

At that time, the unrest would spread to the entire Northern Plains; this situation was no more than a prelude of it.

Human lives would be cheap as grass as tribes wandered around without a home. Small or mid scale tribes would be like duckweed, being involuntarily swept up by the whirlpool of the battle; they could be crushed if they were in the slightest bit careless.

Even large scale tribes had to be extremely cautious and careful. Only those super tribes who had Gu Immortals and possessed blessed lands had the foundation to remain standing for ages.

"Lord tribe leader, our primeval essence is already recovered. Originally, we wanted to rescue Zheng tribe, but they are already defeated now. Why don’t we go back and take down the Ge tribesmen at our camp and save our tribesmen!" At this moment, an elder suggested.

"Right, Chang Shan Yin’s appetite is too big. He broke through our camp, then went on to destroy Zheng tribe. According to his crazy momentum, he might even be going to Pei tribe. We need to take the opportunity to go back and kill them."

"The people Ge tribe left behind there might be more in number, but they are all rank one and rank two Gu Masters, with only one rank three elder."

The elders could not help being agitated as they looked at their tribe leader.

Although they had fewer numbers, all of them had rank three cultivation while their tribe leader was at rank four realm. With such strength they had a huge chance to go back and save their tribe.

However, the young Bei tribe leader shook his head and resolutely refused: "We cannot! Although Ge tribe left behind very few people and we can go to seize back our camp, but what happens after that? We are too few in numbers, information about our return will definitely leak. After Chang Shan Yin obtains the news and if he returns, would we be able to defend? Can we escape safely with our tribesmen?"

The group of elders went mute.

Bei Cao Chuan was correct.

When they had been defending before, they were at full strength, yet they were still broken by the wolf tide, let alone now.

"Let them become captives. Relax, you saw that after the battle ended, Ge tribe bound the tribesmen and did not kill them. They want to expand their strength, hmph, their appetite is too big!"

Bei Cao Chuan snorted and continued: "We will leave our tribesmen with them for the moment. In a short period of time, this will cause their rations to be consumed and they will have to use more manpower and divide more energy."

An elder’s eyes suddenly brightened: "Then why don’t we directly attack their nest? Ge tribe is only a mid-sized tribe now and they have brought out almost all their forces; their camp definitely has poor defenses right now. We will kill and loot, empty their rations and increase the burden on them, and let them have a taste of being attacked!"

"Good idea!"

"Right, this is a good way!"

"I will definitely let Ge tribe taste the pain of being homeless!!"

The elders discussed in excitement.

"Fools!" Bei tribe leader slammed the suggestion and looked at everyone with a chilly and sharp gaze, "Do you all have pig brains? If we destroy their rations, the ones who would suffer would be our tribesmen. You think they won't kill the captives to reduce the consumption? If someone recognized us, what will we do if they kill the captives to vent their anger?"

Bei Cao Chuan let out a breath of turbid air, his eyes shining with wisdom as he said in a heavy voice: "True revenge is not indulging in quick pleasure. Attacking Ge tribe camp is a small thing, we can't hurt their foundation with it. Only by killing Chang Shan Yin, removing Ge tribe's main source of power, can we overturn the situation! We need to fight."

These words enlightened all the elders.

"Lord tribe leader is wise!"

"With lord tribe leader with us, our tribe has hope."

"We will listen to tribe leader's arrangements!"

The elders looked at Bei tribe leader with respect and admiration.

Bei tribe leader Bei Cao Chuan was also an outstanding person!

He had been pushed aside by his siblings when he was young; the most unlikely candidate to the young master position.

He took less actions, disguised his strength and showed a low cultivation, thus he would be taunted and ridiculed by his siblings in banquets and gatherings.

Bei Cao Chuan was an expert at enduring silently, he restrained himself from making a move. His brothers had internal conflicts while he silently accumulated his strength.

When the old Bei tribe leader was critically ill, he finally got the opportunity.

The old Bei tribe leader was injured because of a backlash from a Gu worm and required a specific Gu to heal. However, the tribe found that this Gu was residing in a spirit rhino myriad beast king.

The spirit rhino beast group had about eighty thousand in numbers, the tribe could do nothing and gave up all hope; but Bei Cao Chuan infiltrated the beast group's dwelling by himself.

After several days of observation, he discovered this spirit rhino myriad beast king would occasionally leave his group to roll and play in a mud swamp. After it played to its fill, it would sleep soundly.

The mud was as smelly as dung and many maggots lived in it; Bei Cao Chuan buried himself in the mud for seven days and seven nights without moving.

Hard work paid off; the spirit rhino myriad beast king finally came again to play. However, spirit rhino myriad beast king was huge and when it rolled about, it stepped on Bei Cao Chuan's leg, crushing it immediately.

Bei Cao Chuan silently endured the pain and did not even let out a groan!

When the myriad beast king played to its fill and was sleeping soundly, he quietly stole that wild Gu worm from the myriad beast king's body.

Bei Cao Chuan obtained the wild Gu worm; and he narrowly escaped this dangerous place, moving without stopping, hopping back to the tribe with his one leg and saved the old tribe leader.

The whole tribe was in an uproar!

Bei Cao Chuan’s actions contained shocking filial piety, outstanding courage and meticulous planning; causing the whole tribe to look at him in a new light.

His siblings were also extremely surprised when he revealed his rank three peak stage cultivation.

After the old tribe leader survived, he emotionally shed tears: "The number of times I have cried in my life can be counted by my fingers. Today, I am crying not because I managed to escape from death’s door, but because I have a son like this; as a father, I am moved by his filial piety, and as the tribe leader, I am happy for the future of my tribe!"

On the spot, Bei Cao Chuan was appointed as young tribe leader.

Bei Cao Chuan did not conceal himself anymore, he started to deal with all the tribe affairs and fought for everyone’s approval. On another hand, he suppressed his siblings and fortified his position, not giving any opportunity to his competitors.

In the end, he became the tribe leader and made vigorous efforts to gradually expand Bei tribe. After repeatedly overcoming several difficulties, he had finally walked to this day.

Although Bei Cao Chuan was only about thirty or so, he had established deep prestige within the tribe and was trusted by all the elders!

....

"Lord supreme elder, lord tribe leader and elders, we have already finished controlling Zheng tribe camp and have gained a lot of resources!" The elder who was in charge of cleaning the battlefield reported excitedly.

"From our initial estimations, we have obtained at least eight million primeval stones. We have obtained thousands of Gu worms with a hundred rank three Gu among them. There is also a Gu house secret room which we are opening right now."

Listening to such spoils of war, Ge tribesmen had extreme joy in their face.

The gains from Zheng tribe was much more than from Bei tribe.

Zheng tribe was a mid-sized tribe, but was a tribe with deep foundation. Even though there were much losses in the battle, the resources that were preserved were still enormous.

"Lord supreme elder, lord tribe leader, what should be our next course of action?" This elder asked after he finished reporting.

All the Ge tribesmen looked at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan said expressionlessly: "Continue attacking, our next target: Pei tribe!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The night wind whistled and the wolf group howled.

Pei tribe and Ge tribe were fighting an intense battle around the walls.

Flames, golden light, lightning, vines, all kinds of attacks converged to become a scene of brilliant fireworks, lifting the veil of the night.

"Kill, break the walls, then we can destroy the Pei tribe!"

"Fight them, kill these Ge tribe thieves!!"

The two sides roared with all their might to boost up their morale.

Thick blood smell was lingering around the battlefield.

Large numbers of cut limbs and bodies were everywhere. The normally respected Gu Masters had lives as cheap as grass here. Of course, there were even more corpses of wolves.

Seeing the turtleback myriad wolf king being repelled back again, Fang Yuan sighed to himself.

Because they had charged through Bei and Zheng tribe one after another, information was inevitably leaked; when Fang Yuan led Ge tribesmen to attack Pei tribe, the other side had already made tight defensive preparations.

After losing the night wolf myriad beast king, Fang Yuan only had two myriad wolf kings left - turtleback myriad wolf king and wind wolf myriad wolf king.

Originally, the attacks from both kings would pose threat to Pei tribe’s defensive formations. But because of one person, Fang Yuan could only send one myriad beast king to attack.

This person was Pei tribe leader Pei Yan Fei!

He was the focus point of this battlefield, being in even more limelight than Fang Yuan’s two myriad beast kings.

Pei Yan Fei was eight feet tall with a stately appearance. His eyes were sharp and full of power, his back wide and his waist thin; right now, he was charging through the wolf group, sweeping everything in his path and revealing the demeanor of an unparalleled general.

The characteristic that was the most focused on was his black eyebrows that shone with a dark luster. The eyebrows were thick in the middle and sharp in their two ends with the tip raised slightly, like a swallow’s wings.

This was not a natural characteristic but the imprint of two rank four swallow wings Gu.

It was precisely because of this person rampaging around the battlefield with no one able to hold him down that Fang Yuan had to make one myriad wolf king stay for protection to defend against Pei Yan Fei’s sudden attack.

With this, only turtle back myriad wolf king went to battle in the frontline, causing the charge towards Pei tribe to decrease by a lot.

"Ahh!" One Ge tribe elder let out a bitter scream before death.

Following his scream, his head flew to the air; cut by Pei Yan Fei.

"Another elder died under Pei Yan Fei’s hands!" Ge tribesmen’s eyes twitched at this scene.

Pei Yan Fei did not directly attack Fang Yuan, but instead rampaged in the wolf group and had already killed three Ge tribe’s elders.

With this way, he was not entangled by the myriad wolf king and had his hands free. He was also indirectly restricting wind wolf myriad wolf king from fighting. One could see his wisdom along with his bravery.

"Is there anyone else?!" Pei Yan Fei used swallow wings Gu to fly in the air and shouted majestically.

His voice suppressed the wolf howls, and spread clearly to all parts of the battlefield.

Ge tribe was silent while Pei tribe’s Gu Masters’ morale was greatly increased.

"Truly a fierce general!" Fang Yuan lightly praised.

Pei Yan Fei possessed extremely strong flying techniques, being an expert in low altitude flying. Although he was not at master level, he was not too far from it.

He was a metal path Gu Master; his attacks were very sharp and ordinary Gu Masters would find it hard to block them, and he also possessed outstanding movement ability. He was moving all over the battlefield with a very fast speed, like a celestial horse going wherever it wanted. Usually, those that were stronger than him did not have a movement ability like his; while those that could catch up to him, did not have a battle strength that could match his.

Several times Fang Yuan tried to mobilize wind wolf myriad beast king towards the frontline but Pei Yan Fei would detour and charge towards him.

Ge tribesmen were unable to block him, so Fang Yuan could only make wind wolf king return.

This wind wolf myriad beast king was slightly stronger than Pei Yan Fei, but it was a wild beast after all and did not have enough intelligence. Even if it was controlled by Fang Yuan, its flexibility could not match with Pei Yan Fei.

"I have very few myriad beast kings, it is getting so difficult just to deal with one Pei Yan Fei. The wolf group’s scale is also not big. A truly mature beast group would have at least hundred thousand beasts. The current three enslavement masters of Northern Plains - Ma Zun, Yang Po Ying and Jiang Bao Ya - have beast groups of hundreds of thousands of beasts. They even have a small group of mutated beasts as their trump card."

Fang Yuan’s mind was on expanding the beast group as he observed the battlefield.

His beast group might have had taken shape, but its strength had clearly weakened after repeatedly fighting three battles. Most of all, the main battle strength was not powerful enough.

The ones that truly decided the war in the Gu Master world were still the high rank Gu Masters.

Fang Yuan pondered while mobilizing thousand wolf kings and hundred wolf kings to lead the wolf group to form a wave of concentrated attack towards the Pei tribe camp.

The wolves howled and charged forward aggressively like a tsunami, causing the Gu Masters on the walls to tense up and hurriedly mobilize everything.

"The attack this time is really fierce, bring the reserve troops here quickly to defend!"

"Earth path Gu Masters, restore the walls fast!"

"Hold on, we must hold on, don’t stint on your primeval essence!"

BOOM BOOM BOOM.....

Large amount of flames shot down and exploded towards the wolf group. Golden spears and arrows flew like dense school of fish, striking down on the wolf group, causing massive casualties.

Several elders joined hands and created two-three small scale tornado that that sent the wolves flying fifty-sixty feet high; the wolves fell to their death.

"Let’s attack!" Ge tribesmen also started their offence.

Ghost flame Gu!

Two-three balls of eerie blue ghost fire smashed towards the wall, hitting a group of Gu Masters; the Gu Masters’ whole bodies were covered with the chilly ghost fire.

They let out the most tragic shouts. The ghost fire did not injure their body, but directly burned their souls; such pain was extremely intense.

Fist stone Gu!

An enormous stone that looked like a clenched fist whizzed through the sky, producing a rumbling sound like that of a lion or tiger, then it heavily smashed on the wall.

A deep crater immediately formed on the wall and the cracks quickly spread towards all directions; the Gu Masters on the wall could not maintain their balance and fell down.

Lightning net Gu!

A large net formed from lightning current flew towards the sky and fell down towards a part of the wall.

The Gu Masters on that part of the wall were paralyzed by the lightning; some stubbornly resisted with their defensive Gu, while some were scorched like coal - dead.

...

The fierce explosions caused huge numbers of casualties within a short period of time, and also quickly consumed the Gu Masters’ primeval essence. Thus, after a while, they had to stop.

Pei tribe’s and Ge tribe’s Gu Masters stopped attacking and retreated. Some directly sat down on their spot and grasped every second to recover their primeval essence.

"Now is the time." Fang Yuan’s eyes brightened as he saw this while sitting on the white eye wolf.When the two sides were gasping for breath, he made his move.

Wolf smoke Gu!

Wolf smoke surged, covering the battlefield and quickly healing the wolf group’s wounds and recovering their battle strength.

Wolf howl Gu!

Fang Yuan let out a long howl towards the sky, and after the mournful howl, the wolf group also roared, their battle strength raising rapidly.

Another portion of wolf group rushed to the battlefield, joining with the remaining wolf group in the battlefield, forming a new wave of attack.

This offensive was directed towards a specific part of the wall.

This part was already on the verge of collapse after being smashed by the giant fist stone.

Howl!

The turtleback myriad wolf king also rushed forward!

The Gu Masters on the wall struggled to stand up and used all kinds of attacks, but turtleback myriad wolf king forcibly resisted the attack and smashed the wall into pieces.

The wall collapsed; a hole appeared in the defensive line. Countless wolves rushed through the hole and started killing Pei tribe’s Gu Masters. Pei Yan Fei immediately activated swallow wings Gu to quickly go back.

Rank four golden coat Gu!

His whole body shone with a golden light which then dimmed down and formed an armor.

Rank four swallow wings Gu!

Another pair of swallow wings grew out from his back, and with two pair of wings, his speed was doubled.

Rank four rainbow transformation Gu!

CLAP , he put his two palms together and raised them above his head, his whole body like a straight pencil, then like a golden arrow, he made an arc through the air.

With the activation of the rainbow transformation Gu, his two pairs of wings and his whole body gradually turned into a golden halo.

Three rank four Gu activated together to form into a killer move.

Pei Yan Fei’s killer move - Golden Rainbow Strike!

Like a rainbow, his whole body turned into a golden meteor, letting out dazzling light like a fragment of the sun, forcing people to narrow their eyes.

Golden rainbow carved out a stunning arc through the air before instantly striking turtleback myriad wolf king.

Under Fang Yuan’s control, in the moment of imminent crisis, turtleback myriad wolf king turned its body and faced Pei Yan Fei with its shell.

BOOM!

The golden rainbow struck the turtleback, producing a huge sound and also giving off infinite golden light.

For a moment, the Gu Masters on the battlefield had no choice but to close their eyes, but even so, the dazzling light caused their eyes to tear up.

The golden rays of light dimmed down, and the Gu Masters slowly opened their blurred eyes.

The turtleback myriad wolf king’s shell was unexpectedly pierced through by Pei Yan Fei, creating a hole from where one could see the right side of the wolf king from its left.

The turtleback myriad wolf king let out a mournful howl; with such injuries, its battle strength had fallen to the bottom.

Meanwhile, Pei Yan Fei’s expression paled as he hovered in the air.

Many shocked sounds echoed at this moment.

Ge tribe’s Gu Masters looked stifled, while Pei tribe’s morale soared, shouting the might of their tribe leader.

"Lord, Pei Yan Fei has battled intensely for so long and now has used his killer move to injure myriad wolf king; his primeval essence should be exhausted. Now is the time to go in for the kill!" Ge Guang excitedly shouted.

Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes. Ge Guang was right, Pei Yan Fei had battled for so long, he should not have much primeval essence left.

Fang Yuan naturally knew this clearly.

But with his five hundred years of memories, Fang Yuan knew Pei Yan Fei had a mysterious Gu called do or die Gu. This Gu was a rank five Gu that could provide the Gu Master with large amounts of primeval essence instantly, but its after-effect was a decrease in their cultivation stage.

Of course, just this point was not enough for Fang Yuan to give up. But...

"Is there any bad news from our camp, Zheng tribe camp and Bei tribe camp?" Fang Yuan asked.

Ge Guang promptly replied: "Not yet."

Fang Yuan immediately knew something was up and sneered, before sending the command: "Our tribe’s battle strength has fallen and Pei tribe has suffered even more casualties. We shall retreat."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bei Cao Chuan had been observing the development of the battle situation.

Beside him, there were eleven Gu Masters. Other than the Bei tribe elders, there were also several Zheng tribe elders, they are all summoned by Bei Cao Chuan.

Their only motive was to kill Chang Shan Yin, to reverse the outcome of this battle.

"Ge tribe is nothing but scattered sand, we do not have to worry about them. The only problem is Wolf King Chang Shan Yin. As long as we kill him, victory is ours! We can still win!!" Bei Cao Chuan’s eyes shone brilliantly as he observed the battle while raising the morale of the people around him.

Zheng tribe elders were all convinced by him: "Bei tribe leader is right, but when do we attack?"

Bei Cao Chuan squinted his eyes: "We have to wait! Wolf King is very vigilant, he only sent the turtleback myriad wolf king to lead the attack, while the wind wolf myriad beast king was always near him. He has ample defensive forces around him, although we are strong, there is only one chance for us to attack him. Once we fail, we can only force our way through. By then, we would be in a hopeless situation, being surrounded by the wolf group, there will be little chance of killing Chang Shan Yin."

At this moment, the most intense clash happened on the battlefield.

All sorts of attacks, in all shapes and colors, filled the battlefield. The loud sound of explosions occurred continually.

Seeing this, everyone’s hearts shuddered. In such a battlefield, even a rank three Gu Master was cannon fodder. Only rank four or five Gu Masters were the main force.

"Lord, now is the best time to attack." An elder suggested.

"No hurry." Bei Cao Chuan waved his hand.

After the attack persisted and eventually ended, an elder could not stand it anymore: "Lord tribe leader, now is the time. While Ge tribe Gu Masters are recovering their primeval essence, we can charge in and catch them unguarded."

"No! Our target is only Chang Shan Yin. Although they had an intense battle, the number of wolves near Chang Shan Yin had increased in numbers instead." Bei Cao Chuan rejected solemnly.

Next, Fang Yuan struck and made good use of his timing to destroy a portion of the defensive wall.

This was a crucial development.

Pei tribe’s defenses were finally broken, large number of wolves charged in as the turtleback myriad wolf king also arrived.

"This is bad! Once the defensive line is broken, the wolf group would carry out a full frontal assault, Pei tribe would not be able to handle it, this is an emergency!"

"Lord, we have to attack. If not, Pei tribe is finished."

"If we strike now, we can still salvage this situation."

"No!" Bei Cao Chuan stood up, his eyes were flashing as he was filled with joy, the long-awaited chance had arrived.

As long as Pei tribe’s defenses were broken, Chang Shan Yin would need to mobilize the wolf group and attack Pei tribe camp. This way, his defenses would be greatly weakened, it would give Bei Cao Chuan a good chance to kill him.

"If we strike now, it would only alert Chang Shan Yin and he would recall his wolves, causing the battle to turn into a stalemate again. After we expose ourselves, we would lose the precious chance to kill him. Our three tribes are allied, why was Pei tribe’s losses so much less than ours? The Wolf King is so vigilant, he is not easy to deal with. Only with Pei tribe as the bait, allowing him to taste the sweetness of victory, can we kill him at the moment when he lets his guard down!"

In an instant, Bei Cao Chuan’s brain worked intensely as he had several thoughts.

But he could not say that out loud, instead he said: "Wait a bit longer, we cannot be anxious. Believe in Pei Yan Fei! He is a famous general in northern plains, do you think he is so weak?"

The rank three Gu Masters heard this and stopped their charging momentum.

Bei Cao Chuan had just said that when Pei Yan Fei unleashed his killer move, Golden Rainbow Strike, the intense explosion forced everyone to raise their arms to shield their eyes from the bright light.

After the light dispersed, turtleback myriad wolf king suffered heavy injures while Pei Yan Fei floated above the rubbles of the defensive wall, his expression was pale.

"So strong!"

"With just one strike, he heavily injured the myriad beast king."

"This is Pei Yan Fei’s famous killer move, it is truly formidable!"

"Bei tribe leader is amazing, he understood the battlefield so well, I have learnt much."

The elders expressed their amazement at Pei Yan Fei’s battle strength, while praising Bei Cao Chuan’s judgement.

Bei Cao Chuan’s lips twitched, he would rather see Pei Yan Fei fail in guarding his camp.

"There is still hope, we have to wait a bit longer. Pei Yan Fei definitely used up a lot of his primeval essence for such a strong move. Looking at his expression, he must be at his wit’s end. As long as wind wolf king is near Chang Shan Yin, he is near invincible. Pei tribe still had the lower hand, if the wolf group attacks Pei tribe camp again, I will continue my plan from earlier. If Pei Yan Fei has the advantage, I will make use of the opportunity and cooperate with him, dealing the fatal blow to Chang Shan Yin!"

Sparks were flying in Bei Cao Chuan’s head, he blinked as he modified his plan.

"I have a chance, there is still hope! I cannot fluster at this moment, I have to calm down and endure... As long as we kill Chang Shan Yin, not only will we turn this around, I will also gain fame. After I become Liu Wen Wu’s subordinate, I can gain important roles and fight for more opportunities for my tribe!"

Bei Cao Chuan cheered for himself in his heart.

But at this moment, his pupils shrunk as he swore: "Oh my god, what the f*ck!"

The elders sent him a peculiar gaze.

All along, even though the battle was tense, Bei Cao Chuan was extremely confident and had the situation in his grasp, why was he losing his nerves now?

Bei Cao Chuan could not care less about the gazes, he stared at the battlefield as he spoke out uncontrollably: "Why is this Chang Shan Yin retreating now of all times?"

The Wolf King was in an advantageous situation, although the turtleback myriad wolf king was heavily injured, it was not dead. He still had another wind wolf myriad beast king!

In contrast, Pei Yan Fei was at his wit’s end. Most importantly, Pei tribe camp’s defenses were broken. As long as he attacked following this weakness, Pei tribe’s pressure in defending would be many times of before! Most likely, they would not able to hold on.

Once the wolf group invades Pei tribe camp, Bei Cao Chuan would have the chance to attack, dealing Wolf King the fatal blow from behind!

But now, he was retreating?!

Why was Chang Shan Yin retreating, Bei Cao Chuan had no time to think about this already.

He was extremely nervous now, his confident face started to show some anxiety.

Wolf King still had much strength now, once he retreated, the assault that he had painstaking waited for would be ruined.

The worst thing was, Bei tribe camp and Zheng tribe camp were in Ge tribe’s control. Once the wolves retreated, they would bring all these captives and resources away, Bei Cao Chuan would lose his tribe completely.

Without even a tribe, only left with several elders, Bei Cao Chuan’s tribe leader status would become the biggest laughingstock.

Just look at the current situation, once he goes to Liu Wen Wu, he would definitely not receive an important position.

"No, I cannot let Chang Shan Yin retreat so easily. Once he leaves, we have no hopes of succeeding!"

Bei Cao Chuan screamed in his heart.

He stood up abruptly, shouting: "Everyone, we cannot wait any longer. Chang Shan Yin is out of steam, they are trying to retreat, now is the time we attack and kill the Wolf King. Everyone, it is time to take back our tribe!"

The elders near him could see the battle situation too.

Bei Cao Chuan’s words made them energized as their battle intent surged.

"Kill!"

"Chang Shan Yin, don’t think of leaving!"

"Wolf King, fight me one on one if you have the guts!!"

A group of rank three Gu Masters left their hiding spot and started attacking Ge tribe’s army from the back under Bei Cao Chuan’s lead.

"Hmph, they appeared as expected." Fang Yuan foresaw this, he did not fluster upon seeing these people.

He understood clearly, Bei Cao Chuan and gang did not go back to reinforce their tribes, thus there were only two possibilities.

One was that they were attacking Ge tribe’s main camp to exact revenge. The other was that they were reinforcing Pei tribe.

Since the three tribes and their camps were intact, these people were definitely hiding nearby.

If Fang Yuan continued attacking Pei tribe camp and fought with Pei Yan Fei with all his strength, during the crucial moment, he would definitely face an assassination. Thus, retreating was the wisest choice.

"But these people were really good at waiting, they appeared now after I forced them, it seems they have deep motives." Fang Yuan rode on the white-eyes wolf as he thought calmly.

Ge tribesmen were anxious.

Bei Cao Chuan and the other eleven people were experts, they were unstoppable in their attack, it brought a huge mental pressure to the Ge tribesmen.

"Lord supreme elder, what do we do?" Ge Guang asked.

"Why are you panicking, listen to my command and retreat." Fang Yuan laughed coldly.

Retreating in the battlefield was extremely risky. Often, when retreating, enemies would chase after them and cause them to fail in getting away. In his previous life, Fang Yuan had participated in many battles, he knew that these wolves were good for covering them when retreating. He had the ability to face pressure from two sides and escape.

He moved the turtleback myriad wolf king near him and recalled his wolf group, making the hundred wolf kings, thousand wolf kings gather towards the center of the army.

As for those ordinary wild wolves, they were left behind to expend the enemy’s primeval essence.

As expected, after a moment, Bei Cao Chuan and gang lost their momentum, starting to use the primeval essence in their apertures sparingly.

"Damn it, do we just watch Chang Shan Yin retreat like this?" Bei Cao Chuan bit his lips, his eyes had turned red from killing, he was extremely indignant in his heart.

"Pei Yan Fei, why are you not attacking? If we cannot take the Wolf King’s life today, how will we have the face to participate in the heroes assembly?" Bei Cao Chuan screamed.

Pei Yan Fei snorted, he was not a brute, he knew that Bei Cao Chuan’s sudden assault was after he threw Pei tribe under the bus, he wanted to use them as bait.

But Wolf King Chang Shan Yin could not be let off.

During this battle, Ge tribe fought three tribes at one go, if they retreated successfully, they would shoot to fame, and these three tribes would become their stepping stones.

Moreover, Pei tribe suffered huge losses, how could he not take revenge for such deep hatred?

Thinking of this, Pei Yan Fei resolved himself.

Rank five — Do or Die Gu!

Swish swish swish!

Pei Yan Fei’s heart felt hollow as large amounts of primeval essence appeared from thin air, filling up his dry aperture.

"Chang Shan Yin, hand over your life!" He howled, rushing over.

Ge tribesmen were flustered.

Fang Yuan laughed, asking around: "Who is this?"

Ge Guang admired Fang Yuan’s calmness and the anxiety in his heart vanished, answering solemnly: "Bei tribe leader Bei Cao Chuan!"

"Bei Cao Chuan... Pei Yan Fei... hehehe, heroes emerge in chaotic times, very good, very good." Fang Yuan praised them loudly as his voice resounded in the air.

Next, he jumped down from the white-eyes wolf, changing his steed to a hump wolf.

White-eyes wolf took a few quick steps, standing together with wind wolf myriad beast king and turtleback myriad wolf king.

"That is..." Bei Cao Chuan’s momentum froze, his pupils shrunk.

Pei Yan Fei’s expression was grim, he was extremely bitter.

White-eyes wolf was a mutated beast with strength equalling a myriad beast king! Earlier, they were too focused on Fang Yuan, thus ignoring his white-eyes wolf. Now that the white-eyes wolf stood out, its identity was immediately exposed.

"Damn it!" Pei Yan Fei gritted his teeth, stopping his attack helplessly.

If Fang Yuan only had the wind wolf myriad beast king left, that would be fine, but with a white-eyes wolf, he had enough strength to resist their attacks and even fight back.

Pei Yan Fei did not dare to take the risk and place Pei tribe in danger again.

He chose to give up.

On the other end, Bei Cao Chuan had no choice but to stop his steps.

He looked at the army retreating, he not only felt dejection in his heart but also a strong chill: "Wolf King Chang Shan Yin, just how many trump cards do you have?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The noisy night winds gradually stopped, thick mist started to form near the wild grass on the ground.

Ge tribe army retreated along crescent lake, moving slowly.

Having successfully retreated, these people still had battle intent left in them.

Even though they did not take down Pei tribe in the end, they had made a name for themselves in this battle, Ge tribesmen were excitedly talking about it.

"This battle was amazing. That dogshit three tribe alliance, they dared to find trouble with us Ge tribe, they were simply courting death!"

’Hmph, what Zheng tribe, Bei tribe, or Pei tribe, they were merely so."

"Now, Bei tribe and Zheng tribe camps have been taken down by us, and Pei tribe suffered huge losses. After this battle tonight, Ge tribe is going to become famous throughout northern plains!"

Using the strength of one tribe to challenge three, such an accomplishment and bravery made the Ge tribe Gu Masters feel proud and confident of themselves.

"It was all thanks to Lord Wolf King Chang Shan Yin." A Gu Master exclaimed.

The words immediately caused a huge commotion.

"Mm, that is right. If not for the wolves charging ahead and paving the way for us, we would definitely suffer great losses and face many casualties."

"This is the power of an enslavement path Gu Master. No wonder so many tribes want to nurture one or two enslavement path Gu Masters even if they had to curb their spending.

"Lord Wolf King is our tribe’s supreme elder. We are one family."

"Mm, it is really our honor to have Lord Wolf King by our side!"

After this battle, Fang Yuan’s prestige in Ge tribe rose to an absurd level.

Fang Yuan rode the white-eyes wolf again, as Ge tribe leader and the band of elders accompanied him.

As the supreme elder, Fang Yuan had the authority to forcefully remove the tribe leader Ge Guang. Of course, Ge Guang was an obedient chess piece, Fang Yuan had no intention to remove him.

The grand army first returned to Zheng tribe camp, the Gu Masters left behind had already gathered the resources and placed them on the thirty blue farm slug transportation troops.

These slugs were known as mucus Gu worms, they were like snails without shells.

They were rank three with a body larger than elephants, they were blue and had blue water crystals growing on their bodies.

These blue farm slug Gu were easy to use.

They expended little primeval essence and Gu Masters only needed to ’stuff’ the items into their bodies.

Blue farm slug Gu did not have any attacking capabilities, after ’swallowing’ the items, their bodies would expand.

These thirty blue farm slug Gu were now five times their original size. Even a myriad beast king was not half of their size.

But even so, there was still a small portion of the resources in Zheng tribe that could not be carried, and could only be left behind in the camp.

The elder that stayed behind handed over the list of gains after calculation.

Fang Yuan browsed through it, the profits were huge.

"We are rich!" Ge Guang saw this and was elated.

"This is a huge fortune!"

"And we obtained so many captives as well, our Ge tribe can quickly become a large-sized tribe!"

"We have to be alert these few days, we have to strengthen our defenses, and prevent the surrounding tribes from eyeing our goods."

"But what do we do with the Gu Masters who surrendered? According to the norm, they will become slave Gu Masters. But we do not have so many slavery Gu."

Ge tribesmen started to feel a headache.

Ge tribe was only a middle-sized tribe, they had a weak foundation. If they were a large tribe, they would be able to better digest these gains.

They left behind a group of people to defend the place, and instructed them to retreat of Pei tribe’s army came over, to preserve their strength.

Ge tribe’s army brought the thirty blue farm slug Gu and large numbers of captives and continued on their journey.

When they reached Bei tribe camp, the troops stopped. When they set off again, the size of the group had expanded by several times again.

When they finally reached their Ge tribe camp, the returning warriors received a warm welcome from all the Ge tribesmen.

The cheers were extremely loud as the first rays of dawn shone on their faces. In contrast, those captives were all either numb or in despair, it was like the two sides lived in different worlds.

Fang Yuan lightly let out a breath of turbid air.

On the way back, he was afraid of Pei tribe’s assault.

"It seems that Pei Yan Fei was concerned with his tribe’s safety and wanted to preserve his forces, thus he did not attack. Otherwise, we will face much greater obstacles on the way. Of course, the main reason for this was because I showed them the white-eyes wolf, displaying a facade that it had the strength of a myriad beast king."

But the truth was, Fang Yuan’s white-eyes wolf had grown because of third watch Gu. There was not a single wild Gu worm on it.

This was the world of Gu, without a single wild Gu, white-eyes wolf could not even defeat a thousand beast king.

If they really fought, white-eyes wolf was only a giant wild wolf.

But if Pei Yan Fei and Bei Cao Chuan were not deterred and continued attacking, Fang Yuan would be in trouble.

He had already exerted 120% of his wolf group’s strength, in terms of strength path, he had just started, having only thirty jun of strength. In terms of soul, he had not reached thousand man soul yet.

"My current strength is still too weak, after three battles in one night, I can vividly feel all my weaknesses."

Now that they were safe, Fang Yuan looked at the wolf group.

The sixty thousand wolf group had suffered great losses, only less than half survived. But his greatest loss was his myriad beast kings.

Fang Yuan had three myriad beast kings, but after this battle, night wolf myriad beast king died in battle, and turtleback myriad wolf king suffered heavy injuries, although it has started receiving treatment, it was still unconscious. Wind wolf myriad beast king was full of injuries, it had lost a lot of the Gu worms on it and its battle strength fell greatly.

But Fang Yuan felt no regrets.

Compared to his gains, these losses were nothing.

Not to say his immense loot from the two camps, Fang Yuan had achieved all his goals from this battle.

Taking the initiative to attack and fighting three tribes alone, the name of Wolf King Chang Shan Yin would spread in northern plains again, becoming a widely known topic.

This was a testament to Fang Yuan’s strength, it would be a great help to his future plans of participating in the heroes assembly and dealing with Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Furthermore, these dead wolves served a greater purpose.

Their souls were kept by Fang Yuan and were used to fertilize Dang Hun mountain.

"After this battle, I have created a name for myself, as well as displaying my ferocity. I’m sure this will deter the nearby forces, with this, Ge tribe can recuperate and regroup, while I can also take some time to expand my wolf group and cultivate my wolfman soul, at the same time, preparing my rank five enslavement path Gu worms."

Lying on his bed, Fang Yuan’s thoughts spanned out and slowly faded.

Outside the Gu house, the cheers were getting louder as the Ge tribesmen celebrated like no tomorrow.

Fang Yuan gradually closed his eyes.

He felt tired.

Three battles in one night, controlling so many wolves to participate in intense battle, it expended his mental energy, a form of fatigue originating from his soul spread throughout his body.

Just when he was sleeping soundly, a great commotion had expanded all over crescent lake. In the morning, almost every tribe leader nearby or their strategist received the information regarding this battle.

There were suspicious people, threatened people, fearful people, or furious people.

But regardless of their feelings, at once, Ge tribe and Wolf King Chang Shan Yin became the hottest topic of every tribe.

"I thought he was just a cat, but he turned out to be a leopard!" Wang tribe leader was staring intently at the paper describing this battle, after a long while, he sighed as he was filled with lamentation.

He wanted to watch from the sidelines, if the situation permitted it, he would reap some rewards from this conflict.

But to think that Ge tribe challenged three tribes in one night under Fang Yuan’s lead, dealing a huge blow to Pei tribe. Bei tribe leader Bei Cao Chuan became a vagabond, and Pei Yan Fei, a fierce general in northern plains, lost a small realm of his cultivation!

"He is simply too daring and ferocious, he is overly ruthless!" Even Wang tribe leader’s stragetist Wang De Dao looked at this information and exclaimed as his expression changed.

"Ge tribe attacked without warning, striking first and catching the three tribes unguarded, two were destroyed while one was half ruined. This is overstepping the line, they broke our unspoken rule, aren’t they afraid of being blamed by all of us?" Wang De Dao said furiously, Ge tribe’s rampant invasion made him feel uneasy.

At this time, the Gu Master outside brought in another letter.

This was a letter from Ge tribe, it was sent to all the forces near crescent lake.

The letter was written by Ge Guang personally, it detailed how the three tribes had ill intentions, in order for Ge tribe to defend itself, they had to retaliate. The letter talked about Yan tribe and all the reasons and justifications they had, including Chang Shan Yin’s grudges from many years ago.

"The truth is, back then, Chang Shan Yin was a victim, this was why he had to face Ha Tu Gu and the bandits alone. Now that he is back, he wants to exact revenge on his tribe. Meanwhile, Chang tribe was already part of young master Liu Wen Wu’s forces, Yan tribe was Liu Wen Wu’s family-in-law, but they did not know about his grudges and asked Chang Shan Yin for help, this is how everything started." Wang De Dao looked at this letter and his expression was uncertain, he became more furious: "Chang Shan Yin is involving the innocent with his personal grudges, what kind of northern plains hero is this?!"

Wang tribe leader was calm, he got to the point immediately: "But this way, Ge tribe has a reason to attack. Although this reason is so forced, they can at least cover themselves with a proper explanation. Ge tribe has Chang Shan Yin’s protection, after defeating three tribes, their strength would definitely increase and they would expand. There is little hope of the other tribes gathering to deal with Chang Shan Yin after seeing the sorry states of these three tribes."

Wang De Dao nodded: "Then what do we do next?"

"Wolf King’s actions were too quick, now that it had already happened, we cannot interfere anymore. Sigh, I underestimated the Wolf King..." Wang tribe leader sighed.

At this time, someone outside informed him that Bei tribe leader Bei Cao Chuan has brought his band of elders to meet Wang tribe leader.

"Bei Cao Chuan? Why is he here?" Wang tribe leader frowned.

Wang De Dao reminded him: "Lord tribe leader, did you forget, Bei tribe had sent an elder to invite us to join his alliance earlier, that elder is still staying with us."

Wang tribe leader patted his forehead: "Oh, I nearly forgot. I said I would host him for three days, today is the third day. No way, I should not meet this Bei Cao Chuan, go and meet him, tell him I have an important Gu to refine today, I cannot leave my closed cultivation."

Bei Cao Sheng had been well treated by Wang tribe these few days, but he did not forget his mission. During this time, he had requested to meet with Wang tribe leader several times but was rejected.

Seeing Bei Cao Chuan, he was very surprised: "Lord tribe leader, and all the other elders, why are you here personally?"

Before he got a reply, Bei Cao Sheng said with an expression of guilt: "Everyone, I have disappointed you. That Wang tribe leader keeps rejecting my offer, not agreeing to join the alliance. But no worry, with the strength of our three tribes, we can easily deal with Ge tribe!"

Bei tribe elders heard this and some of their eyebrows trembled, while the others’ expressions turned grim.

Bei Cao Chuan felt bitter in his heart, at once, he did not know what to say, or how to explain the situation to this elder.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Eight days later, at night.

The stars shone in the sky as the night winds blew.

Fang Yuan rode on the white-eyes wolf’s back, ready to move out.

Ge Guang stood by his side, reporting the situation of the last few days: "During these last eight days, large numbers of small to mid-sized tribes have started on their journey to attend the heroes assembly. Right now, only several large-sized tribes are left in crescent lake. Bei Cao Chuan, Pei Yan Fei and the others were the first to leave.

Fang Yuan adjusted his posture: "Mm, earlier when we took the initiative to challenge the three tribes, it made many tribes apprehensive. Since the heroes assembly was nearing, it is normal that they decided to leave. But for those large tribes, they have a lot of stuff to settle due to their many enterprises. Thus, they usually attend the second half of the heroes assembly."

"Supreme elder is wise, that is indeed so." Ge Guang started bootlicking.

Fang Yuan chuckled: "Crescent lake’s aquatic plants are beautiful, we will stay here for the time being, we should be internalizing our gains from the battles now instead of travelling."

"Yes lord." Ge Guang heaved a sigh of relief, they had such intentions in their earlier discussions.

Ge tribe was now like a fat man who had eaten too much, they could not walk. These eight days, they had been expanding the campgrounds day and night, recruiting those captives. After calculating their resources, the strength of the tribe was growing day by day.

"Those water wolves, are they still there?" Fang Yuan asked.

"Yes, I sent investigative Gu Masters there many times to check them out. These water wolves amount to about five thousand, at night, they will enter that water den to rest. Lord, do you really not need guards?"

Fang Yuan snorted, replying arrogantly: "Any place with wolves will have me Chang Shan Yin. Why would I need guards?"

Ge Guang could hear his unhappiness, thus he quickly bowed and gave way: "I wish Lord Supreme Elder all the best in your recruitment of the water wolves."

"Mm, you will have to be careful of the matters in the tribe. Without me around, you have to take note of those Gu Masters who surrendered."

"Yes lord."

Fang Yuan left behind the wind wolf king, bringing the weakened turtleback myriad wolf king and eighteen thousand wolves, leaving the campsite and starting on their hunt.

He first followed the map that Ge tribe investigators had drawn, getting close to the water den.

Water wolves lived in the water, they ate fish as food. Often, when they were hungry, they would also come ashore to eat some rabbits or rats.

With the arrival of the wolf group, these water wolves were immediately alerted.

To defend their homes, the water wolves formed into a tight formation as they left the water den, staring at Fang Yuan vigilantly.

Fang Yuan expressionlessly sat on his white-eyes wolf’s back, he waved with his hand and countless wild wolves howled as they attacked the water wolves.

The water wolves resisted as the two sides engaged in fierce combat.

Wolf howl Gu! Wolf smoke Gu!

Fang Yuan made his move from the back several times, firming grasping control of the battle in his hands.

His wolf group was larger to begin with, soon, they started killing water wolves.

More than a thousand water wolf corpses were left on the ground, as Fang Yuan used wolf enslavement Gu to subdue more than two thousand of them, the remaining thousand escaped to the deep parts of crescent lake.

Fang Yuan did not chase them, instead he destroyed this water den and obtained several hundred water wolf cubs.

Next, he went to the next location.

After destroying several wolf dens, by night time, Fang Yuan subdued over six thousand water wolves, two thousand turtleback wolves, and a thousand night wolves.

Crescent lake had the most water wolves, but there were also some turtleback wolves, night wolves, and wind wolves.

But the wind wolves were too fast, they were hard to catch. They often retreated at the slightest danger, Fang Yuan targeted a pack of wind wolves but they escaped quickly amidst battle.

Wolf groups were very crafty, in order to capture them, Fang Yuan had to pay a price as well. If the cost was too high, and was greater than the benefits, he would give up on them.

Some large water wolf groups had myriad wolf kings, Fang Yuan did not dare to attack them abruptly.

But this time, his expedition of hunting wolves was only a cover. Now that he had acted enough, he searched for a secluded spot and surrounded himself with wolves. Next, he activated moving perspective cup Gu and contacted little Hu Immortal.

Little Hu Immortal got the news and immediately summoned a group of starlight firefly Gu, using the starlight and green grape immortal essence to activate stargate Gu.

Stargate Gu came in pairs, using the power of black heaven, they could traverse regions.

Fang Yuan waited for a while, seeing the starlight in the night sky descending and gathering on his stargate Gu.

The stargate Gu was like a blue gemstone as it flew towards the sky, when it reached mid air, the starlight exploded as a door was formed.

This time, Fang Yuan did not enter the stargate anxiously, instead, he sent the weak and heavily injured turtleback myriad wolf king in first, as well as large numbers of injured wolves.

The large number of wolves entered the stargate like flowing river water, disappearing.

This way, Fang Yuan only had strong and elite wolves left with him, this greatly reduced his pressure of feeding them.

As for those injured wolves, they would reproduce and grow in the blessed land, giving birth to healthy cubs. As time in Hu Immortal blessed land was faster, they would grow quickly and become Fang Yuan’s new source of wolves.

After sending these wolves into Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan also entered the door.

"Master, you asked me to check on connecting heaven Gu daily, I was very obedient and did as you said. That Lang Ya Old Immortal really appeared again and bought lots of materials in treasure yellow heaven." Little Hu Immortal was very happy upon seeing Fang Yuan, hugging his leg as she used her face to rub it, talking about the things that happened while Fang Yuan was gone.

"Oh? Is that so, what did he buy?" Fang Yuan heard this and was energized, quickly asking.

Little Hu Immortal took out a piece of paper from her pocket and handed it to

Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan looked and browsed through it, these Gu worms and materials were very familiar, they were used to refine second aperture Gu.

What did this mean?

Lang Ya Old Immortal was Lang Ya land spirit. He was going to refine second aperture Gu, thus, he definitely survived the second wave of attacks and had the urge to refine second aperture Gu.

At the same time, that divine travel Gu was definitely in his hands.

Otherwise, why would he purchase ingredients so urgently right after the second wave of attacks?

"Lang Ya land spirit was plotted against by Old Man Yan Shi, he should be defending Lang Ya blessed land now. Although this land spirit is intelligent, he is rigid, and does not possess the ability to scheme. What am I waiting for?"

Fang Yuan thought of this and his heart was palpitating!

He immediately left Hu Immortal blessed land, returning to northern plains’ crescent lake.

Next, he led the wolf group as he charged to that stone forest without rest. Using Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s entry point again, he entered Lang Ya blessed land.

There were many new changes to Lang Ya blessed land, the twelve cloud buildings were attacked, there were much rubble and broken structures, scars from burning flames, lighting strikes, or results of frost.

These were traces of a huge battle.

Especially outside the buildings, on the pure white cloud soil, they were tainted with blood traces, a deer-like desolate beast with the size of a mountain was lying on the cloud soil, dead.

Even though it lost its life, the skin was still shiny and smooth, glowing with a rainbow-like luster, it gave off a holy feeling.

"Why are you here?" Lang Ya land spirit welcomed Fang Yuan grumpily.

"What happened?" Fang Yuan did not answer him, instead he asked and expressed his shock.

"Hmph, a bunch of daring scoundrels, they set their claws on this blessed land, they have all been killed!" Lang Ya land spirit’s expression was grim as his killing intent surged.

Fang Yuan curiously looked at the land spirit: "Isn’t Lang Ya blessed land very secretive, how did they get in? Unless you opened the doors yourself..."

"Get lost! Am I so stupid?" The land spirit howled: "These goddamn scoundrels plotted against me, they did something to the stuff I bought. I originally bought divine travel Gu to refine second aperture Gu, but during the refinement process, a passage formed and these little rats came in."

The land spirit called them rats, but as Fang Yuan looked at the state of the twelve cloud buildings, he could guess the intensity of the battle.

But Lang Ya blessed land was after all, Long Hair Ancestor’s old home. As the ’Number One Refinement Immortal of all time’, someone who was on equal status with two venerables, he definitely had deep foundations and many trump cards.

The second wave of attacks could not take down this deep foundation so easily. At least, Fang Yuan knew there were twelve desolate beasts in Lang Ya blessed land, now only one had died.

However, Old Man Yan Shi was still alive. The second wave of attacks was not the last, but the beginning. The show has just begun.

Fang Yuan laughed: "I guessed right, you are that Lang Ya Old Immortal, you bought divine travel Gu in treasure yellow heaven. It seems you managed to protect divine travel Gu."

Lang Ya land spirit laughed smugly: "Of course! Otherwise, that nine color spirit deer would not have died."

Suddenly, his expression changed, as he thought of something, staring vigilantly at Fang Yuan: "Why are you here lad?"

Fang Yuan bowed to the land spirit, replying as a matter of fact: "What else? I am obviously here to ask you to refine the second aperture Gu for me."

"What?!" Land spirit shouted, staring at Fang Yuan furiously, his eyes about to spew fire.

Long Hair Ancestor had failed to refine an important Immortal Gu for Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable back then, thus he made a promise to refine nine Gu worms for him without any costs, regardless of mortal or Immortal Gu.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable used six chances to receive six Immortal Gu. With three chances left, he sealed it into his inheritances to leave it to a fated person.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, this chance was taken by Ma Hong Yun. But now, Fang Yuan came here earlier and snatched this immortal opportunity.

Earlier, he had used one of the chances to ask Lang Ya land spirit to refine stargate Gu. Now that he was here again, he was going to use the second chance to refine second aperture Gu.

Lang Ya land spirit was formed from Long Hair Ancestor’s obsessions, he could not reject such a request.

But in order to protect divine travel Gu, he had paid a huge choice. Seeing that the second aperture Gu was about to be successfully refined, the result was that Fang Yuan came to take it from him.

Lang Ya land spirit was furious as he stared angrily, using a grim tone to ask Fang Yuan: "Don’t tell me you are the mastermind who planned the attack on my blessed land?"

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose, saying innocently: "Do you think that I, a mortal, could mobilize those Gu Immortals? I only knew you had the second aperture Gu’s recipe after you bought divine travel Gu, and now that you bought a second set of materials, I came over."

Lang Ya blessed land gritted his teeth angrily, pointing at Fang Yuan: "You humans are all devious and scheming. I killed those Gu Immortal, but to think that it was all for naught, I still ended up being scammed by you, this little lad!"

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: "This is not a scam, but a promise that you gave

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable back then. So, are you going to refine the second aperture Gu for me now?"

Land spirit was angry and wanted to chop Fang Yuan into a million pieces, but he had no choice but to refine the Gu for him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"I want to see you refine the Gu personally." Fang Yuan had a thought as he asked the question to probe the land spirit.

The refinement process of Gu Masters were secretive. If someone saw them, the recipe might leak out or even expose the Gu Master’s unique methods.

"Of course, this was one of the agreements." Lang Ya land spirit agreed immediately, out of Fang Yuan’s expectations.

Fang Yuan raised his brows, having a slight understanding.

Back then, when Long Hair Ancestor failed in refining space escape Gu, he wasted all of the materials that Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had collected for his entire life. Among them, many Gu materials were extremely rare and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable only managed to get them out of pure luck.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was a rank nine Demon Venerable, to repay his losses, as well as saving his reputation, Long Hair Ancestor agreed to refine Gu for him.

Allowing Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable to view the entire refinement process, was not only to expose the recipe to pay back the Demon Venerable, it also proved his innocence — you saw the whole process. If the refinement fails, it has nothing to do with me!

But now right, there were no such concerns left.

Land spirits were formed from the blessed land’s heavenly power, the obsessions of the Gu Immortals before death. They did not have vile thoughts, they were candid and straightforward.

However, Lang Ya land spirit was formed from the number one refinement immortal, Long Hair Ancestor, even though he lost most of his memories, he retained most of Long Hair Ancestor’s refinement talent and attainments.

Observing the land spirit refining Gu was a huge benefit to Fang Yuan.

"I had refined second aperture Gu before. This time, I will observe the land spirit’s techniques and gain some experience to improve myself. Maybe, I would get to see a trace of Long Hair Ancestor’s glamor back in ancient times." Fang Yuan was looking forward to this Gu refinement.

Lang Ya land spirit waved his hand and teleported him to a huge hall.

This hall was really big, the diameter of it was at least ten li. There were all sorts of equipment, there were green copper cauldrons, red steel furnaces, rainbow water tanks, and even cave houses.

When Gu Masters refine Gu, they need the help of their equipment as well.

The equipment in this hall was like a comprehensive exhibition, it was a huge eye-opener to Fang Yuan.

Although he had five hundred years of experience due to rebirth, he spent about three hundred years wandering and fighting his way up to the top, he only managed to hold his own and freely roam the world to achieve his grand aspirations in his last two hundred years.

During that period, although he explored many other Gu paths, he had to resist the earthly calamities as well as manage his forces, all while gathering his Immortal Gu refinement materials, he was very busy and overwhelmed. Although his foundation in refinement path could surpass the mortal realm, among Gu Immortals, he was only second or third-rate. There was no comparison to a legend like Long Hair Ancestor.

"This is my Earth-grade Room C Gu refinement hall." Lang Ya land spirit introduced, as Fang Yuan’s expression changed upon hearing it.

The land spirit would not lie, such a grand hall was only one of the many Gu refinement halls in Lang Ya blessed land.

Earth-grade Room C ... how many of such halls did this blessed land have?

At this moment, the land spirit waved.

At an instant, a few thousand hairy men appeared in the hall.

These hairy men were teleported over with a stunned expression, but they soon kneeled on the ground, shouting: "The hairy men greets Lang Ya Old Immortal!"

They spoke at the same time, as their voices echoed in the hall.

Lang Ya land spirit’s face showed some affection as he said: "Children, you may get up."

He then waved his hand, and sent the Gu refinement materials over to them: "Today, we are refining an Immortal Gu, use the Gu recipe that I gave you to do it."

The hairy men were obviously experienced in such matters.

Upon hearing that they were refining an Immortal Gu, the hairy men were stirred as they showed an excited expression.

But immediately after, they calmed down and started researching the recipe in their hands before starting the Gu refinement.

Several thousand hairy men refining Gu at once, this was not the first time Fang Yuan had seen this.

Among the variant men, hairy men were most skilled at refining Gu, they were born with the talent for it. According to the records in <>, back in the immemorial era, the hairy men started to refine Gu, even tying up Ren Zu’s first son Verdant Great Sun, attempting to use him to refine eternal Gu.

Hairy men refine Gu using their talent and inspiration, they worked casually and did not have the trace of toolwork left by human Gu Masters.

At Gu Immortal stage, having already surpassed mortals, to aid them in refining Gu, they would raise a number of hairy men. In Fang Yuan’s previous life, he had kept some of them in his blessed land as well.

But that was blood sea blessed land, the environment was harsh and many batches of hairy men died, causing his interest in raising them to disappear.

After Fang Yuan became a Gu Immortal, he had gathered a large number of hairy men to refine Gu in bulk for his demonic sect.

Precisely because of his own experiences, he could tell that the hairy men here were not ordinary.

These hairy men were simply too well raised.

Look at their hair and skin, they were clear and shiny, their eyes has spirit and their faces were energetic, it showed that they lived in a good environment and had never been tortured by Lang Ya land spirit.

Most importantly, these hairy men were very agile and moved quickly, each of them were great experts in Gu refinement.

During the Gu refinement process, a few old hairy men even gave their suggestions to tweak the recipe!

Looking at their casual movements, Fang Yuan’s heart was pounding.

Such a group of hairy men, if they were sold in treasure yellow heaven, they would be the elite of elite slaves. There would be at least 21 meters of treasure light, those Gu Immortals would fight for them.

These hairy men had shocking attainments, most of them were refinement masters. Several of the old hairy men who could suggest the tweaking of the recipe were already refinement grandmasters!

Right now, Fang Yuan was still barely a refinement master.

With such skilled subordinates, the refinement process was faster than Fang Yuan’s refinement on San Cha mountain by more than ten times.

These hairy men made the half-done product and handed it over to the old hairy men for inspection before giving it to Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit quickly collected the half-done products, and after checking them, destroyed a few pieces and made the hairy men refine them again.

After several tries, Lang Ya land spirit was finally satisfied and started doing it himself, easily getting the half-done product of second aperture Gu.

This was the same as the half-done version that Fang Yuan had right now.

But Fang Yuan knew that the one in Lang Ya land spirit’s hands was way higher in quality.

Eventually, Lang Ya land spirit took out divine travel Gu.

This divine travel Gu’s surface was damaged, it was filled with injuries and Fang Yuan’s heart jumped upon seeing that.

"Lad, it is still not too late to change your mind." Lang Ya land spirit stopped his actions, urging Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan frowned, after thinking through it, he laughed: "No, please continue."

"Scheming fellow, I couldn’t hide it from you!" Lang Ya land spirit cursed, pinching his nose as he teleported several Gu worms over along with some precious materials.

Fang Yuan stared with wide opened eyes, he only recognised two of them, they were precious items that increased the chances of success in Gu refinement. If they were placed in treasure yellow heaven, the treasure light would hit 18 meters!

Lang Ya land spirit’s every movement attracted countless gazes.

The hairy men were watching in awe as their bodies shivered, their eyes were full of extreme reverence.

Fang Yuan watched with great anticipation, when Lang Ya land spirit refined the Gu, it moved as smooth as water, there were no unnecessary movements or any atmosphere of panic.

Lang Ya land spirit displayed exemplary control, Fang Yuan gained a lot of insights.

Although he wanted to continue watching like this, Fang Yuan bit his lips and forced himself to snap out of it, starting to execute his plan.

He sat down cross-legged, and took out two Gu that he had prepared prior to this.

One was clear mind Gu, the other was awaken cloud Gu.

These two Gu were rank four, after Fang Yuan injected primeval essence into them, they started working.

Clear mind Gu turned into a breeze, entering his brain. The cotton-like awaken cloud Gu turned into a small white cloud and floated about Fang Yuan’s head.

Fang Yuan stared at the light lump that Lang Ya land spirit was manipulating while bringing out four top quality wines.

With connecting heaven Gu to enter treasure yellow heaven, it was easy for him to gather top quality wines. For this moment, he prepared at least fourteen different wines.

Sensing Fang Yuan’s movement, Lang Ya land spirit snorted in displeasure, but did not do anything to him.

Fang Yuan sighed inwardly in relief, ignoring the piercing light that made his tears flow, he stared at the light lump intently.

Finally, he saw divine travel Gu turn into flowing water as it mixed with the other materials.

Fang Yuan quickly took out the wine vats and gulped the liquor.

At the same time, an intense feeling of tipsiness assaulted him.

Fang Yuan quickly activated clear mind Gu, forcing himself awake as clarity was restored in his mind. At the same time, awaken cloud Gu rumbled and ensured that his mind was at its peak condition.

After drinking four wines, Fang Yuan was still clear-headed, but he realized that nothing had happened yet.

The light was still transforming, it had expanded by many times already since the start, it was larger than an elephant.

"It seems that divine travel Gu has not disappeared yet, Immortal Gu are unique, I have to continue drinking." Fang Yuan took out another vat and unsealed it, gulping the content.

The light lump shrunk, as Lang Ya land spirit’s expression became more serious as it held the light lump.

A moment later, after Fang Yuan drank the eighth wine, his vision was already turning blurry.

At this moment, in Lang Ya land spirit’s hand, the light lump expanded and shrunk in intervals, after three to five times, it settled, becoming second aperture Gu!

The moment second aperture Gu was formed, Fang Yuan’s body shuddered as all the drunkenness in his body gathered like the merging of rivers into the sea, condensing into one point.

Out of nowhere, a divine opportunity descended as the Dao mark formed, causing this point to explode into one Gu — divine travel Gu!

Second aperture Gu.

Divine travel Gu.

Two Immortal Gu obtained at the same time!

Fang Yuan became completely sober as he stood up excitedly, laughing heartily.

"A truly profound scheme!" Lang Ya land spirit looked at Fang Yuan with an expression of fatigue, its body was also turning hollow and weak.

Fang Yuan was the person who obtained Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritance, although Lang Ya land spirit wanted divine travel Gu, it could not attack Fang Yuan.

The hairy men stared at Fang Yuan with furious, disdainful eyes.

This vile human dared to plot against our beloved and supreme lord Lang Ya Old Immortal!

Fang Yuan paid these hairy men no heed, he stopped his laughter as he bowed to Lang Ya land spirit: "It was just a petty scheme, it is nowhere near graceful. Today, I had a true eye-opener, and had benefited a lot, I am shameful of my actions, but I am respectful towards you, I am willing to become your disciple."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Screw off! If accept you as my disciple, I reckon one day I will die from anger. My children are the best, giving me no worries. Now get lost, I don’t want to see you." Lang Ya land spirit kept on waving his hand, refusing Fang Yuan’s request to be his disciple without hesitation.

He could have obtained the second aperture Gu, but Fang Yuan plotted against him and made him offer the successfully refined second aperture Gu readily along with losing the divine travel Gu.

Fang Yuan chuckled, not minding the land spirit’s refusal.

Land spirits were formed from the obsessions of the Gu Immortals; they were simple and biased, their refusal now meant they would still refuse in the future.

"Such a pity, I originally intended to give divine travel Gu to you as our apprenticeship gift."

"Hmph, the people I don’t like the most are crafty people like you. The hairy men are still the best! I will tell you the truth, I have already taken eighteen hairy men as my disciples. In the future as well, I will only take hairymen as my disciples!"

"Alright, give me the second aperture Gu." Fang Yuan stretched out his hand.

Lang Ya land spirit’s expression turned sluggish and glanced at the Immortal Gu on his hand with reluctance. This was the Gu he wanted to refine and now he had succeeded, but he had to give it up without even getting cozy with it.

But the agreement back then had formed a type of will that became a part of the land spirit. He was unable to violate it, and also did not intend to violate it.

"Kid, I will remember you!" Lang Ya land spirit growled and stuffed the second aperture Gu in Fang Yuan’s hand.

This second aperture Gu looked like a beetle with two sharp ends and a fat middle body.

The beetle was the size of a young man’s fist. It was like blue jade, and felt soft and cool to the touch.

There was a golden eye on its plump back. The golden eye flashed with lightning and had ample spirituality.

"This is the Gu I took the risks for at San Cha mountain and wanted to refine by all means. I hadn’t expected I would obtain this in this way." Fang Yuan sighed, but did not use it hurriedly and stored it in his pouch first.

Under the cooperation of Lang Ya land spirit, this second aperture Gu was already Fang Yuan’s object, but he was still not a Gu Immortal and did not have green grape immortal essence, so he could not activate it now.

"You already have the Immortal Gu, you can leave now if you don’t want to use your final chance." Lang Ya land spirit wanted to make him leave.

Fang Yuan, however, took out divine travel Gu and waved it in front of Lang Ya land spirit with a smile: "You don’t want this Immortal Gu?"

Lang Ya land spirit’s brows raised: "What, you want to sell it?"

He had connecting heaven Gu and could connect to treasure yellow heaven to buy all kinds of Gu refinement materials. Even the human apertures required to refine second aperture Gu could be obtained by buying enslaved Gu Masters and killing them.

Second aperture gu was an expendable Gu; it would disappear after Fang Yuan used it.

Lang Ya land spirit could completely refine another. Of course, the precondition was that he needed to have divine travel Gu. Without divine travel Gu, he would never be able to refine second aperture Gu.

Fang Yuan, however, did not directly answer and instead asked: "Tell me, if I use another second aperture Gu, can I have a third aperture?"

"Hmph, keep on dreaming." Lang Ya land spirit immediately scoffed, "This is the second aperture Gu, not the third aperture Gu. You want to form a third aperture? Then go refine the recipe for third aperture gu!"

Fang Yuan nodded and said sincerely: "I also thought so."

The land spirit would not deceive him just because it wanted the divine travel Gu. At the same time, he also knew second aperture Gu’s recipe, so he had already deduced this.

He asked this just to confirm it.

With this, the divine travel Gu and the semi-finished second aperture Gu with Fang Yuan had lost their use.

Fang Yuan already possessed a second aperture Gu; he was a lone force and did not have any trusted aide to support, so he did not need another second aperture Gu.

Moreover, when he observed the land spirit’s Gu refinement process just before, he knew the final step was extremely dangerous! The light ball’s inflation and contractions required extremely strong control which required at least thousand man soul to maintain.

How could Immortal Gu be so easy to refine? Fortunately, back at San Cha mountain, Fang Yuan did not set his heart in refining the second aperture Gu after rebirth. Otherwise, with his strength back then, he would absolutely have had a terrible ending. Just the backlash could put him on the brink of death.

Of course, he could also sell them at treasure yellow heaven.

But if he did so, he would attract Old Man Yan Shi’s attention and expose many of his trump cards. At the same time, the things he got might be tampered with by other Gu Immortals.

Transacting with Lang Ya land spirit was different.

At least, the land spirit would not give him shoddy goods, and also had robust financial resources, so he could buy divine travel Gu to refine Gu.

Last but not least, Fang Yuan could also avoid revealing himself, thus it was very secure.

"Land spirit, take a look at what this is." Fang Yuan thought for a while before directly taking out the semi-finished second aperture Gu that he had personally refined.

This semi-finished product had a vague appearance like a semi-finished pottery, with no hints of life.

It was like a piece of grey stone that was carved into a beetle. Its big belly looked elegant with sharp head and tail, but no antennas or legs.

Although its appearance was similar to the real second aperture Gu, they clearly could not be compared because of qualitative difference.

Lang Ya land spirit’s eyes could not help but brighten when he saw this semi-finished product: "To think you had actually reached such a stage. But the most difficult step in refining second aperture Gu is the final step. The steps before it, can be refined by the refinement path Gu Masters at master level."

The land spirit’s tone carried a trace of joy.

Fang Yuan had divine travel Gu and also the semi-finished product. If he could get them both, then only the final step would be remaining to refine second aperture Gu.

To Lang Ya land spirit, this temptation was hard to resist."Speak, what do you want?" Lang Ya land spirit removed his burning gaze and looked at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan looked at the divine travel Gu on his right hand and immediately said: "Immortal Gu are priceless, so of course I want to exchange it with another Immortal Gu. This is the old rule in transacting Immortal Gu."

Lang Ya land spirit’s expression immediately fell: "Although it is the old rule, it is not suitable for our situation. First of all, divine travel Gu is not practical and can only be used as an escape means as a last resort. In case it teleported the Gu Master to the depths of a volcano or to the depths of the earth, it would simply be finding one’s doom. Secondly, I will be using divine travel Gu to refine Gu. But what use can second aperture Gu be for a land spirit like me?"

Fang Yuan was happy; the land spirit’s gaze was fixed on the divine travel Gu when he was haggling over the price. Although he sounded unyielding, his expression betrayed his thoughts.

"Land spirit, you are too stingy. I know Lang Ya blessed land has many Immortal Gu. Divine travel Gu is a rank six Immortal Gu, I won’t be greedy and only want to exchange it for a rank six Immortal Gu."

The land spirit shook his head repeatedly and said many things, but Fang Yuan did not loosen up. The land spirit gradually felt anxious and fury filled his expression. He looked like he wanted to eat Fang Yuan alive.

When Fang Yuan saw that the time was right he said: "Let’s do this then, I shall take a step back and exchange for one of your expendable type rank six Immortal Gu. When I have used this Immortal Gu, you can then refine it again, right?"

The land spirit’s expressions relaxed; Fang Yuan taking the step back first gave him a satisfying feeling of victory.

He snorted few times and raised his head, looking arrogantly at Fang Yuan: "Alright, we shall do it like that."

He then spread out his hands and brought five Immortal Gu out of nowhere.

"Lang Ya blessed land’s foundation is really strong." Fang Yuan sighed inwardly - he was suddenly stupefied when he looked at them.

"I want this Immortal Gu." Fang Yuan’s expression was slightly strange as he pointed to one Immortal Gu among them.

This Immortal Gu was none other than Immortal Gu Gruel Mud, the perpetrator in causing Dang Hun mountain to slowly die. He had not thought Lang Ya land spirit would refine it.

The two sides quickly completed the transaction. Fang Yuan obtained the Immortal Gu Gruel Mud; he did not put it in his aperture, but stored it in his pouch for the moment.

"I used all my mental and physical efforts for this semi-finished product, you will be saving great expenses by getting it. We are both familiar with each other now, I will sell it to you cheap; I only need one thousand hairy men. I won’t be greedy, you can give me those old hairy men that refined the Gu just before as well."

"Bullshit!" The land spirit was fuming with anger, "You think I am a three year old kid? Those hairy men are at least of master level in Gu refinement, the treasure light if they are put in treasure yellow heaven will be at least seventy feet high!"

Fang Yuan snickered, he really coveted these hairy men. These hairy men would be of enormous help to him.

"Alright, I don’t want a thousand, eight hundred will do."

"Bullshit eight hundred, all these hairy men are my children, I won’t sell a single one!" Lang Ya land spirit roared in anger.

"All things have a price. We can still discuss!"

"Not for sale means not for sale! If you mention this again, you can take your semi-finished product with you, I am not buying it."

Fang Yuan was inwardly shocked at Lang Ya land spirit’s firm attitude. He had dropped down the price to the bottom and Lang Ya land spirit would clearly have profited, but he still did not agree to sell the hairy men. It seems he really had emotional attachments to the hairymen.

This situation was not strange.

Many Gu Immortals raised variant humans in their blessed land like raising pets. They would see their growth and even expend many efforts in raising them. And when they died, the Gu Immortals would also shed tears because of heartache.

Of course, this situation would never happen to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan felt a pity at not being able to buy these hairy men, so he changed his request: "Since it is so, then I want to exchange for wolf enslavement Gu’s recipes."

There were large numbers of recipes in Lang Ya blessed land. After gathering them from ancient times until now, one could even say they were as vast as the sea.

It was impossible for it to not have common recipes like that of wolf enslavement Gu.

Fang Yuan had been wanting to purchase these recipes all along, but ever since he discovered the existence of Old Man Yan Shi, he had been restraining his actions in yellow treasure heaven.

Wisdom path Gu Masters were experts at deductions, but deductions need a foundation and require large amounts of information. With these information as the base, they could then deduce and predict the outcome.

If Fang Yuan wantonly bought wolf enslavement Gu recipes from yellow treasure heaven, it was hard to guarantee that Old Man Yan Shi would not be be able to deduce something.

"Take them. These are the recipes for rank one to rank five wolf enslavement Gu." Lang Ya land spirit handed a large stack of recipes to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan skimmed over them and saw that there were eight types of recipes just for the rank five wolf enslavement Gu recipe. They used different materials and different procedures to obtain the similar Gu worm. And there were even more types of rank one to rank four wolf enslavement Gu recipes.

"This transaction is worth it!" Fang Yuan was inwardly happy.

"Transaction is finished, you can leave now." Lang Ya land spirit impatiently waved his hand.

Fang Yuan, however, smiled: "No hurry, no hurry, I still have a transaction you will definitely be interested in."

"Hmph, young man, don’t talk big. There are not many things that can interest this old man in this world." Lang Ya land spirit stroked his beard and said with pride.

"What I am transacting this time is information. This information is about the time I will use the second aperture Gu."

Lang Ya land spirit’s expression turned sluggish and looked dazedly at Fang Yuan, his brows deeply furrowed and looked at Fang Yuan with intense disdain and hatred: "You, how can you be so despicable and shameless!? Aren’t there any limits to the degradation of your morals?!"

"Hahaha." Fang Yuan laughed loudly, "Could it be you are not interested in this information?"

Lang Ya land spirit immediately felt like he had been raped and he still had to bear the humiliation to apologize to the criminal.

Could he not be interested?

The second aperture Gu was an Immortal Gu and Immortal Gu were unique. If Fang Yuan never used it, then he would forever be unable to refine another second aperture Gu.

"How do you want to sell it?" The land spirit endured the impulse to beat up Fang Yuan and asked, swallowing his anger.

Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes, sharp rays of light flickering in them: "I won’t take advantage of you, so I want to exchange information for information. I want to know all the information about the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building in Imperial Court blessed land."

"Eighty-Eight True Yang Building? You actually know that this Immortal Gu house has something to do with me!?" The land spirit was shocked.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Thud Thud Thud.....

A series of hurried sounds came from afar.

Soon, a group of Gu Masters riding terror claw horses came to the swamp.

Terror claw horses had bloodshot eyes with fangs and were carnivorous.

They did not have any hair on its body. The skin was tight and their muscles were clearly visible, giving a feeling of strength that could not be underestimated. The most peculiar point was that they did not have horse hooves, but instead had four long sharp claws.

There were also webbings connecting the claws, so terror claw horse were not only suitable for climbing but could also move freely at swamps.

"Lord elders, they have passed through here towards that direction." An investigative Gu Master’s eyes flickered with red light as he scanned all around and reported.

A young Gu Master at the side immediately frowned and anxiously said: "Not good, uncle! If we continue along this way, we will reach rocks pool over there. Once they cross rocks pool, they will be out of warm pond valley. It will be difficult to kill them then."

"Relax, Fei Qing has been struck by your dad’s poison Gu and is in imminent crisis, moreover he is bringing his child with him. The further he moves with his ghost cloud, the more the poison will worsen. Hehe, he won’t be able to run far. Let’s continue our chase!"

The elders laughed and waved their hand, continuing the chase.

After they chased into the sparse woods, the swamp they had been standing at suddenly surged and a yellowish silkworm drilled out.

The silkworm was broken from the inside and two people walked out; a middle-aged Gu Master and a child.

The two looked in a very miserable state and gasped for breath as they dropped to the ground.

"We finally deceived them." The middle aged Gu Master, Fei Qing, had a purple hue all over his face; the poison had spread deep.

His movement Gu — the swift ghost cloud Gu, had been tampered with. Fei Qing had been feeling something wrong when they were chased all the way, thus he immediately gave up the swift ghost cloud Gu and let it fly away. After that, he took his son and hid within the swamp.

But with this, he lost his movement ability and his body was also poisoned; there was no longer any hope to escape.

"Fei Chang you despicable person! For the clan leader position, you actually secretly poisoned me, your own cousin! Damn it you abomination...."

Fei Qing got more angry the more he thought about it; under this desperation and with fury filling his heart, he suddenly spurted out a mouthful of green blood.

"Father, father! Are you okay? You need to hang on." The child started weeping when he saw the blood and threw himself into Fei Qing’s chest.

"Son..." Fei Qing’s despairing eyes showed a trace of hope and resolution.

He lovingly looked at his only heir and rubbed the small head: "Little Cai, father can’t go on. Fei Chang has plotted deeply, I can only deceive him this one time. Not long later, he will definitely find something wrong and return back. Leave quickly, father will hold off these people for you. Go along that small path I told you of, and perhaps you can survive on."

"No, father, I want to leave with you. Let’s run together... father, I beg you..." The son, Fei Cai, weeped in grief.

Fei Qing was feeling very anxious, so he roused his spirits and grabbed Fei Cai’s shoulders: "Little Cai, don’t cry. Northern Plains men can shed blood but not tears. You need to have confidence, in your body flows Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s bloodline, you are a member of the Huang Jin family. The bloodline in you is thick and rarely seen. You have the qualifications to enter Eighty-Eighth True Yang Building."

" Cough, cough ...." Green blood continued to seep out from Fei Qing’s mouth and nose, "Little Cai, take care of yourself. If you have a chance in the future to enter Imperial Court blessed land, go to Eighty-Eighth True Yang Building and obtain the grace Ancestor Giant Sun left behind for the later generations. Only then can you avenge me!"

"Father...."

"Leave, it will be too late if you delay any longer!"

Fei Qing pushed his son; Fei Cai took back several steps, helplessly looking at his father with tears filled face.

"Leave quickly!" Fei Qing growled.

Fei Cai wiped away his tears before tears immediately fell down. He fiercely gnashed his teeth, turned around and ran.

"Son, father has done his best, as long as you can escape the evil clutches..." Fei Qing sat on the ground and looked at Fei Cai’s receding figure; but soon his eyes gradually widened.

"Fool, stop!" Fei Qing could not help straightening up his upper body and shouting at his son.

"Fa... father..." Fei Cai had only run a few steps before he heard Fei Qing’s shout; he gazed back with doubt.

Veins popped out of Fei Qing’s forehead as he shouted: "You idiot, I told you to run towards north-west direction. Why are you running towards south-east? Are you thinking of going back to the tribe camp to look for your own death?!"

"Ah, ah!" Fei Cai quickly changed direction.

But Fei Qing soon shouted again: "You dunce, that is south-west direction!"

Fei Cai quickly changed direction again, moving towards the correct path, and only then did Fei Qing let out a breath of turbid air.

"Sigh...." The middle aged Gu Master helplessly sighed. His son had thick bloodline, but was somewhat of an idiot and moreover had a really poor sense of direction. Could he truly escape to see the day?

Thinking of Fei Chang’s deep conspiracy, Fei Qing did not have big hope, but he had done what he could do, now it all depended on the heavens.

After a while, like Fei Qing expected, Fei Chang returned with a gloomy face, leading three Gu Masters on their terror claw horse.

"Fei Qing, hmph, you were sure enough hiding here!" Fei Chang’s voice was gloomy and hoarse; his gaze as sharp as a knife, not concealing the dense killing intent within.

"To think I would die by a vile character like you." Fei Qing scoffed with disdain; right now, his body was already paralyzed and could not budge.

Fei Chang snickered coldly, and said with an expression like that of a cat playing with a mouse: "I won’t kill you so quickly. Fei Qing, Aren’t you noble and aloof? Wait till I capture your son, I will let you witness your son being tortured and killed. Hehehe..."

Fei Qing couldn’t keep his calm anymore and stared furiously: "Fei Chang, you are his senior, to think you actually can be so vicious!"

"Hmph, when you cut grass, if you don’t root it out, then it can grow again when the spring wind arrives. Men, bring Fei Qing to me." Fei Chang ordered; the Gu Masters beside him immediately moved and bound Fei Qing tightly, then using a hemp rope, they dragged him on the ground.

"Hehehe, Fei Qing, get a good taste of the mud. Chase, we must find that kid and kill him!" Fei Chang laughed loudly, full of satisfaction.

Fei Chang was thinking: Since Fei Qing was caught, catching that stupid kid would be an easy matter.

But reality was different.

Fei Chang came to the rocks pool, but he did not find anyone besides his men.

"F*ck, this kid didn’t run towards here? Speak, where did he go?" Fei Chang asked in a chilly voice.

Fei Qing had been dragged all the way, his body was badly battered and had already lost his consciousness.

Fei Chang kicked him awake, but he only got Fei Qing’s ridiculing gaze.

Fei Chang laughed sinisterly: "You think I won’t know if you don’t speak?"

Saying so, his eyes let out a weird light that shone on Fei Qing’s body. Fei Qing’s body shuddered, his soul immediately receiving heavy injuries.

Soul search Gu!

Fei Chang stretched out his bony right hand and grabbed Fei Qing’s head before closing his eyes and agitating his primeval essence.

Fei Qing’s body shuddered and started foaming. The two Gu Masters at the sight kept quiet in fear.

In an instant, Fei Chang opened his eyes; his face had paled and his gaze was blurred.

This rank three soul search Gu could search a portion of the memories stored in the soul. But it had a lot of restrictions; first the memories it obtained would be very disordered and secondly it could not be frequently used, otherwise it could confuse the soul and make one have blurred consciousness; thus could be extremely harmful to oneself.

Fei Chang had grievances with Fei Qing for a long time and also knew Fei Cai had a thick bloodline; he could only be at ease when he personally killed the kid. Thus, he did not stint on using soul search Gu.

"So there was a hidden path nearby. Hmph!" Fei Chang smiled proudly; he was fortunately able to search the memories he wanted.

He turned around his horse and immediately moved towards that hidden path.

But when they arrived at this place, he could not find any traces of a person.

"How can this be? That kid is still not of age and has not opened his aperture yet, is only a mortal. It is impossible for him to hide from my investigative Gu. Could it be the memories I plundered is only a part of the crucial point?" Fei Chang scouted once more and saw the narrow road in the bushes; his face became very cloudy.

Wooo Woooo....

Right at this time, a deep and powerful bugle horn sounded from outside the warm pond valley.

Fei Chang and the rest immediately paled.

"Lord elders, lord elders, please go back to reinforce the troops! Ma tribe has brought a huge army, starting a war without any notice. The tribe is already is a state of emergency!" A Gu Master hurried over on a flying bird with the information.

"What?!" Fei Chang was extremely surprised, just as the Fei tribe’s internal disorder had started, Ma tribe came to invade, this timing was too coincidental!

’If there is no Fei tribe, then what meaning would there be in taking the Fei tribe’s tribe leader position? Defend, defend to death, we must defend! Warm pond valley is easy to defend and hard to attack, Ma tribe’s army retreat isn’t impossible. Right, I still have hope!’ Thinking of this, Fei Chang immediately threw Fei Cai off his mind, then hurriedly rushed to the tribe camp.

However, Ma tribe’s invasion had been planned in advance. They took advantage of Fei tribe’s internal disorder and ambushed.

Fei tribe might have the advantage of occupying warm pond valley, but they finally could not resist Ma tribe’s strong and huge wave of soldiers.

Right as Fang Yuan entered Lang Ya blessed land, a great event occured in Northern Plains -

A large scale force of the Huang Jin family — Fei tribe that were occupying warm pond valley was exterminated!

No doubt this news would create a huge influence in the whole Northern Plains.

On a slope, Ma tribe’s higher-ups were observing the ruined Fei tribe camp from their war horses.

These people were circling around a young man, like the stars surrounding the moon.

Seeing batch after batch of goods being stored in the carts and groups of captives being escorted away, Ma tribe’s higher ups had a joyous expression.

One rank three Gu Master elder cupped his fists towards the young man in the center: "Congratulations to young master! It was all because of young master’s plan to drive a discord and create internal disorder in Fei tribe that we could so easily capture warm pond valley, swallow Fei tribe and establish great merits for the tribe!"

This young man was Ma tribe’s young tribe leader Ma Ying Jie.

He had a wide back with thin waist, sharp brows and bright eyes, a heroic spirit and a cultivation of rank four middle stage. He was an enslavement path Gu

Master with some fame, also called Little Ma Zun!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

They won but Ma Ying Jie did not show any arrogance, instead he said: "Warm pond valley is easy to defend and hard to attack, possessing large areas of warm pools. The great blizzard is about to come and this place is a naturally protected place. By obtaining it, my tribe has a base of operations. We can advance while attacking or defend if we retreat!"

"But the thing I am even more happy about is obtaining over two hundred thousand terror claw horses. With these horses, uncle can greatly raise his horse group’s scale and increase my Ma tribe’s supreme might in the coming heroes assembly!"

His uncle was none other than one of the current three great enslavement masters - Ma Zun!

When Ma Zun was mentioned, all the Ma tribe’s Gu Masters showed admiration.

"Before we left, uncle had told me: It was not easy for our Ma tribe to become a large scale tribe. Only after several hundred years of accumulation, efforts and extraordinary fortune, were we able to reach this state. But as the tribe grows, defending this foundation is becoming more difficult. Even by striking warm pond valley, we have only obtained a base to preserve the fire. The only way to preserve the whole tribe is to advance a step further; that is to enter the Imperial Court!"

Ma Ying Jie looked at everyone before continuing: "Imperial Court blessed land is Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s grace left to his descendants. Especially that Eighty Eight True Yang Building, which has the inheritance of the Immortal Venerable! Uncle said my bloodline has already fulfilled the criteria to enter Eighty Eight True Yang Building. If I can obtain Immortal Venerable’s inheritance and later become a Gu Immortal, our Ma tribe will become the new super tribe of northern plains!"

"Super tribe..."

This phrase immediately caused the Ma tribesmen to show a spellbound look.

"Young tribe leader, you are a once in a hundred years genius of our tribe. Our tribe’s future lies on your shoulders."

"Lord Ma Zun might be taciturn, but he really cares about the tribe in his heart and has a far foresight...."

"Being able to witness everything and fight with young tribe leader is my lifetime’s glory!"

"Young tribe leader, lead us to brilliance."

Ma tribe’s Gu Masters cheered excitedly.

Ma Ying Jie smiled.

In truth, Ma Zun had never said anything like this, and these words were all his own fabrication.

Borrowing Ma Zun’s prestige, Ma Ying Jie added light and color to his name. Just think! Even Ma Zun looked so highly of him, so the others would have to be blind to not support him.

Ma Ying Jie was also not worried that Ma Zun would tear apart this name after he knew of this.

Ma Zun was an eccentric; he spoke extremely few times even as a child, his silence almost made his parents think he was a mute.

Ma Zun loved horses and was jokingly called ’horse maniac’ and ’horse fool’ by the tribesmen when he was young.

He had a reclusive nature and never married in his life. He only loved horses and would live with them all year round, with not even a slightest bit of interest and concern towards worldly powers and affairs.

Ma Ying Jie’s gaze brightened like stars: "All of you are the pillars of my Ma tribe, with many outstanding points that are worth for me, Ma Ying Jie, to learn. I am still young, Ma tribe cannot be supported by me alone. In the future, I hope to rely on everyone’s help."

"What is young tribe leader saying!"

"Young lord’s words make us blush with shame."

"Over these years, young tribe leader’s performance has deeply entered our hearts. We will definitely follow you!"

The group of Ma tribesmen quickly agreed.

Ma Ying Jie continued: "Although uncle Ma Zun has entrusted his hope on me, we still need to look at destiny to obtain the Immortal Venerable’s inheritance in Eighty Eight True Yang Building. But even if I can get it, there are many inheritances left all over the Imperial Court blessed land besides the True Yang building. Thus, all the tribes who have had entered the Imperial Court throughout history, had a huge raise in their strength. Every time I think about this, I cannot help feeling excited."

The tribesmen laughed heartily.

"Not just excitement, even my saliva drips out every time I think of it."

"Haha, young tribe leader does not need to have too much pressure. If we lose, we can come back again. Our Ma tribesmen are warriors who will never surrender!"

Imperial Court blessed land was similar to Tian Ti mountain in that Gu Masters often left behind their inheritances.

Northern Plains had a very cruel environment with there being a great blizzard every ten years; the snowy disaster engulfing the entire northern plains. The blizzard would cut through everything like knives. Many inheritances set up in the wild would be destroyed.

Thus, setting up inheritances in Imperial Court blessed land had gradually turned into a tradition of northern plains.

Imperial Court blessed land had many other inheritances besides the Eighty Eight True Yang Building’s Immortal Venerable inheritance, waiting for their fated person.

Of course, this fated person had to first enter Imperial Court blessed land to be able to receive the fortuitous destiny.

Being able to evade the blizzard and live safely, along with the inheritances spread everywhere was the reason why the struggle for Imperial Court would cause intense contests between all the tribes of the grassland.

This contest involved the whole northern plains and was of an extremely large scale. Small scale tribes wanted to survive, mid-scale tribes wanted to advance, and large scale tribes wanted to defend their foundation. Not only righteous paths, but even demonic path Gu Masters wanted to enter the blessed land and seize the Gu Master inheritances.

For this struggle, the heroes assembly came into existence and slowly took form till it became a firm tradition of northern plains people.

As the great blizzard approached, all the famous regions of northern plains would hold a heroes assembly at the same time.

"We have annihilated Fei tribe this time, it will bring us great benefits in our progress in Tian Chuan’s heroes assembly. As long as we can subjugate Cheng tribe, our Ma tribe will have a strong lead!"

"Right, only by winning the heroes assembly, can we attract more experts and make many tribes attach to us.This is the first step of the great battle of Northern Plains, and also the most important step."

"We are looking to enter Imperial Court blessed land, so we need to survey other regions too. Yu Tian’s, Meng Qiu’s and Cao Fu’s heroes assembly, all need to be observed closely."

Just as Ma tribe’s higher ups were passionately discussing, a messenger Gu Master rushed in and delivered the newest intel to Ma Ying Jie.

Ma Ying Jie’s face turned gloomy as he read the intel and shortly after, handed this intel to the group beside him.

Everyone read it one after another, letting out small exclamations, gasps or conjectures from time to time.

"Dong Fang tribe has already subjugated Zhao tribe; with this, they are the ruler of Cao Fu’s heroes assembly."

"In Meng Qiu region, Nu Er tribe has actually sent Nu Er Tu, their momentum is very terrifying, I am afraid Lui tribe won’t be able to hold them off."

"There is also an uproar in Yu Tian’s heroes assembly. The Wolf King of before, Chang Shan Yin, actually appeared!"

"This Chang Shan Yin is really fierce, he actually led Ge tribe and challenged three tribes, even defeating Pei Yan Fei!"

"In Yu Tian region, Hei tribe’s Hei Lou Lan and Liu tribe’s Liu Wen Wu are the elites. Now that the Wolf King has appeared, this will definitely have a big influence. It is very difficult to say what will happen in Yu Tian’s heroes assembly."

Soon, everyone’s discussion focused on Fang Yuan.

Chang Shan Yin’s identity had already spread for many years in northern plains. Now, suddenly, he resurrected and was causing a stir.

Ge tribe was only an ordinary mid-scale tribe, but with Chang Shan Yin’s meddling, they were able to forcibly challenge three tribes and even defeat an expert like Pei Yan Fei.

Especially when they made inquiries and found Ge tribe’s newly appointed tribe leader was only a rank three young Gu Master, their evaluation of Chang Shan Yin raised by several layers.

"Every ten years, heroes emerge and vie for supremacy with monsters and freaks emerging from every corners. It is only that this time, such a great character jumped out."

"Young tribe leader, if this Wolf King Chang Shan Yin and our tribe’s Lord Ma Zun fought, who would win?"

Everyone could not help having some worries.

Ma Ying Jie slightly furrowed his brows.

If it was other path’s Gu Masters, it would be alright. But this Chang Shan Yin was an enslavement path Gu Master, an expert in fighting ten thousand with one.

He could change the situation alone with his huge troops!

"You have all read the intel. Enslavement path’s Gu Master’s strength depends on the scale of their beast group. Chang Shan Yin has reappeared only recently, so the beasts he has are only some ordinary turtleback wolves, night wolves and wind wolves, and also has only three myriad beast kings. One has died and another is heavily injured, how can he compare to my uncle Ma Zun?

Ma Ying Jie coldly snorted and continued to raise the morale: "Uncle Ma Zun has a horse group with three hundred thousand horses. Adding on these terror claw horses, the scale will expand to five hundred thousand! Besides this, he also has a horse emperor, nine myriad beast kings and five mutated horses. Now say yourself, can the Wolf King be mentioned on equal terms with him?"

The surrounding Gu Masters took a sharp breath; shocked and happy.

"I didn’t think Lord Ma Zun’s strength would be so big!"

"The insignificant Wolf King is like a baby when compared to Lord Ma Zun."

"Five hundred thousand, such huge scale. It is enough to annihilate seven or eight mid-scale tribes."

Ma Ying Jie changed the subject: "But wolf king Chang Shan Yin still cannot be underestimated. My tribe is going to become the master of Imperial Court, we will run into this person sooner or later. More importantly, in case he joins the heroes assembly and attaches himself to a Huang Jin family, he will definitely receive huge assistance. Large number of Gu Masters will help him to subdue wolf groups and urge him forward."

The joy on everyone’s faces gradually dimmed down.

This young Gu Master heaved a deep sigh and continued: "We have swallowed Fei tribe, this is only the first step of our journey. Next, we will be facing even more strong opponents. We need to unite together, only then can we defeat them and enter the Imperial Court."

"Yes, young tribe leader is right."

"Young tribe leader is wise and powerful, I am in great admiration!"

"With the leadership of the tribe leader and young tribe leader, our Ma tribe will definitely rule the northern plains!"

Everyone was unconsciously battered by Ma Ying Jie’s few words and became even more aligned towards Ma Ying Jie.

This Ma tribe’s young tribe leader let out a pleased smile in his heart.

On the surface, he showed a light and confident expression.

"Father, you died such a miserable death..." Right at this time, a tragic cry sounded from the foot of the hill.

This sound attracted the Ma tribesmen’s gaze.

Ma Ying Jie looked at the battlefield where corpses strewed the battlefield; a child had thrown himself on a corpse that was filled with scars and cried very grievingly.

"Brat, get lost. You are already my Ma tribe’s slave!" An adult man at the side beat up the child and dragged him forcibly.

But this kid struggled with all his might and bit at the adult man’s wrist.

The adult man screamed, loosening his hand.

The kid scampered along the way and again threw himself at that corpse, crying bitterly.

"Sigh..." Ma Ying Jie let out a sincere sigh, "This misery and suffering is not what I wish for, but in these troubled times, who can live well by themselves? If you don’t die, then I die. Human power is so insignificant. I will do everything I can to protect our tribe to not let the children of my Ma tribe suffer such a fate."

"Young tribe leader is benevolent." The surrounding Gu Masters also sighed.

Ma Ying Jie pointed down: "This kid is a loyal and filial person, but is facing this difficulty because of me. One of you, go stop him and bring him here, he will become my personal servant from now on."

"Yes, lord." His attendants answered.

They did not dissuade it as adopting servants was a tradition in northern plains.

Moreover, what threat can a thirteen year old kid who had not awakened his aperture possess to their lord young tribe leader?

"Kid, get up!" A higher up of Ma tribe stopped the adultman from beating the kid and grabbed the kid’s neck.

The kid struggled fiercely: "No, I want to be with my father."

"Kid, your father is already dead. Your luck is good today, my tribe’s young leader has noticed you and is taking you in as his personal servant." The Ma tribe’s higher up said with a gentle voice.

But the kid did not listen and only kept on crying: "Father, father!"

Suddenly, he stopped and looked sluggishly at his father’s corpse.

"Ah! You are not my father, my father’s skin is darker than yours and his nose bridge is higher than yours, he also has some white hair...." The kid talked to himself in shock, before furiously kicking the corpse and started crying again, "Father, where are you?"

Dark lines appeared all over every Ma tribesmen’s forehead.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

While the chaotic situations converged in Northern Plains, the transaction in Lang Ya blessed land also reached the end.

"You want the information of Eighty Eighth True Yang Building? Hmm...it is not impossible." Lang Ya land spirit muttered before looking at Fang Yuan with a sharp gaze.

Lang Ya land spirit’s obsession was related to space escape Gu and Great Dream Immortal Venerable.

Moreover, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already passed away and Lang Ya land spirit was also not the Long Hair Ancestor himself, but a different living entity.

"When the Immortal Gu house was refined, only Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was there as the bystander. How could you know such a secret?" Lang Ya land spirit asked.

Fang Yuan smiled.

In his previous life, Ma Hong Yun entered the Eighty Eighth True Yang Building and obtained the inheritance of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Later, Ma Hong Yun was defeated and was chased until he mistakenly entered Lang Ya blessed land and obtained the destiny left behind by Demon Venerable stealing heaven. Lang Ya land spirit saw his tracks and while discussing, spoke of this secret.

Ma Hong Yun became a Gu Immortal later on, turning into a cornerstone of the northern plains, a great hero who resisted the invasion of the Central Continent.

In an intense conversation once, he spoke of this secret which then spread out to the world.

Naturally, Fang Yuan would not admit this fact in front of Lang Ya land spirit.

"I have inherited the inheritance of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable. And have many clues regarding Giant Sun Immortal Venerable as well. The reason I know of this secret is actually is from calculations and deductions," Fang Yuan answered with a slight arrogant smile appearing on his face.

Lang Ya land spirit looked at Fang Yuan’s expression and suddenly realized something as he asked: "Are you?"

"Yes, junior has some attainments in wisdom path." Fang Yuan casually lied with an extremely honest expression.

Lang Ya land spirit sighed, the gaze he looked at Fang Yuan carried a complicated expression.

Wisdom path appeared long ago; tracing back its origins, it was created three million years ago in ancient times by an almighty rank nine.

This person was a rarely seen female venerable.

She was called by the world as Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. She controlled heavenly court as the second generation Immortal King.

It was rumored that she had once held wisdom Gu itself and created the wisdom path.

Before her death, she deduced heavenly secrets and made three arrangements for the three millions years after that.

After her death, three Demon Venerables appeared successively in human race, each charging their way to the Heavenly Court but were blocked by these three arrangements in the end.

Being able to calculate the appearance of three venerables, one could see some grandeur of wisdom path from this.

"Kid, you are actually able to deduce to this degree, it seems you have indeed obtained the essence of wisdom path." After learning Fang Yuan was a wisdom path Gu Master, the land spirit’s tone unexpectedly became milder.

To this age, there were extremely few true inheritors of wisdom path, but even then no one would have contempt for wisdom path Gu Masters. Wisdom path Gu Masters were good at scheming and deductions, and many of their enemies would not even know how they died.

Moreover, since ancient times, refinement path was closely connected to wisdom path. To comprehend the world and deduce Gu refinement recipes, Gu Masters would need to use many methods of wisdom path. Many Gu refinement masters and grandmasters would request help from wisdom path Gu Masters when they met a bottleneck in creating recipes.

Lang Ya land spirit was disgusted with Fang Yuan’s slyness, but when he knew Fang Yuan had extraordinary achievements in wisdom path, his attitude became gentler.

Lang Ya land spirit liked refining Gu, and naturally also liked researching and innovating Gu recipes. In this process, he would naturally encounter many obstacles which would be hard to resolve with just his wisdom.

"Maybe I will have to request his help to deduce recipes in the future?" This thought emerged in Lang Ya land spirit’s mind.

As the saying goes: One can be austere if he has no selfish desires.

Since Lang Ya land spirit had some request for Fang Yuan, his attitude naturally turned better.

He summoned a rank four east window Gu and held it.

This gu was a rank four Gu under information path. It was like a ladybug but its carapace was square shaped like a window frame and was especially used to store information.

Lang Ya land spirit poured his thoughts within it and loosened his hand only after a while.

East window Gu opened up its window-like carapace and flew, making a circle in the air before flying towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan sent out his thoughts and checked it; his face immediately revealed joy.

"This is the information you wanted. Now, it is your turn." Lang Ya land spirit reminded.

Fang Yuan chuckled: "Since second aperture Gu has formed, I also am somewhat impatient to use such a good thing. I will send you the news before I use it."

"Slow down!" Lang Ya land spirit showed its cleverness, "How would I know till when you are going to delay it? You are a wisdom path Gu Master, you are the top in scheming, are you still thinking of using this to cheat me again? We have not transacted this east window Gu yet, hehe, with my one thought, the east window Gu on your hand will self-destruct."

Fang Yuan frowned: "Could it be you don’t trust me?"

Lang Ya land spirit had suspicions all over his face: "Hmph! Just the fact alone that you are the inheritor of Demon Venerable Stealing Heaven, I can’t trust you. You are so crafty and also have wisdom path methods; once you exit the blessed land, can I still be able to chase you? In case, you delay and take the chance to extort again, what would I do?"

"Then how about you tell me what should we do?" Fang Yuan impatiently said.

"Of course, now. Use this second aperture Gu right in front of me. Only then can I be at ease." Lang Ya land spirit stroked his grizzled beard, pleased at thinking of such a good idea.

Fang Yuan grinned: "Heh, I am only a mere rank five now, how can I use this Immortal Gu without immortal essence? Wait till I go out of the blessed land and ask for grandpa to help me."

"Your grandfather can help you, but I can’t? Don’t speak rubbish, lend the second aperture Gu to me, I will personally do it!"

"This..." Fang Yuan tried to make an excuse.

The land spirit saw this and felt that Fang Yuan had really wanted to trick him, thus his attitude became more firm.

Fang Yuan looked like he had no choice and reluctantly let Lang Ya land spirit help.

Lang Ya land spirit received the second aperture Gu and poured immortal essence in it before throwing it to Fang Yuan.

This second aperture Gu turned into a bean-sized green light and flew into Fang Yuan’s body.

Fang Yuan’s whole body shook intensely.

The bean sized green light first poured into Fang Yuan’s navel area.

But in there, it was rejected by Fang Yuan’s aperture and could only hop over to the center of Fang Yuan’s chest.

Then an explosion sounded like the thunder from the sky.

The bean-sized green light exploded and formed into a new aperture that looked both real and virtual.

Second aperture!

"This is second aperture?" Fang Yuan felt his chest and mumbled to himself in a daze.

"Nonsense, what is it if not the second aperture?" Lang Ya land spirit rolled his eyes, "Second aperture has great advantages to cultivators like you, providing even greater advantage when you become Gu Immortal. But, if you are still thinking of having the third aperture Gu, that is impossible. You would have to deduce and infer this whole new third aperture Gu's recipe."

Fang Yuan returned to his senses and looked profoundly at Lang Ya land spirit. The other intentionally raised this topic; no doubt it meant that he wanted to cooperate and deduce the Gu recipe.

Lang Ya land spirit's face reddened when he saw Fang Yuan's evident gaze.

Fang Yuan laughed and said his goodbye to Lang Ya land spirit: "We will talk of this later, I will take my leave now."

"Get lost, get lost!" Lang Ya land spirit repeatedly waved his hand.

Only when Fang Yuan had completely left did Lang Ya land spirit let out a breath of relief, a trace of humiliation appearing on his face for having his intentions seen through: "This sly kid."

But when he thought of Fang Yuan's last words which showed the intent of cooperating, Lang Ya land spirit's eyes flickered brightly.

He stroked his beard and could not help falling in daydream; he had dozens and dozens more of incomplete Gu recipes.

"Since that kid could deduce such secrets, he definitely has extraordinary achievements in wisdom path. With his help, I will be able to make some breakthrough in most of these Gu recipes, and thirteen of them could even be perfected. But just two people's cooperation is far from enough to complete the remaining seven Gu recipes."

""But I need to be vigilant when I interact with this kid in the future to avoid being schemed by him. Fortunately, I was cautious today and made him use second aperture Gu on the spot, otherwise I might have been blackmailed by him again! Eh, something does not feel right... I wasted immortal essence to activate the second aperture Gu!""

After exiting Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan returned to Hu Immortal blessed land through stargate Gu.

Under his management, Hu Immortal blessed land already showed many good changes.

In the beautiful western part of the blessed land, large numbers of wolf groups and small numbers of fox groups were co-existing with each other.

Wolf groups' arrival might have disrupted the easy life of the fox group, but they did not disastrous casualties.

The credit for all this went to the large numbers of iron shell flowers planted on the ground.

Countless pink rabbits lived in this sea of iron shell flowers.

Pink rabbits could be easily multiplied and became the main source of food of wolf groups and fox groups.

At the eastern part, dreamy starlight pervaded the area, covering all the lakes with starry gauze.

The wide expanse of dark clouds were planted with star fragment grass. The star fragment grass grew rapidly, and while they could only occupy the central area of the dark clouds at first, now they had already spread to the edges of the clouds.

"Fairy Yao Guang’s planting methods are really good. Star fragment grass are the food of starlight fireflies, and at the same time their growth is rapidly increased with the help of the starlight fireflies."

Fang Yuan repeatedly nodded his head. It was precisely because of the exchange for the starlight firefly group’s breeding insights from Star Lord Wan Xiang, Fairy Yao Guang and others, that he could avoid many detours and obtain quite a bit of gains.

"It is only that although the starlight firefly group is also expanding, but the number of starlight firefly Gu are instead decreasing. These days, I have been repeatedly using stargate Gu, the consumption of the starlight firefly Gu is much higher than the rate of their creation."

Fang Yuan then turned his gaze towards the lakes on the ground.

These lakes were created by him drawing in the water in reverse to quench the fire.

Now, many water wolves were living around these lakes. These water wolves made their nests beside the lakes, eating the blue jade crucian carps in the lakes and sometimes going ashore to devore the earth skin pigs who came to drink water.

Blue jade crucian carps and earth skin pigs were both animals Fang Yuan purchased before. Now, large groups of them had adapted to the new environment under Little Hu Immortal’s control and became a part of the Hu Immortal blessed land’s food chain.

Especially the earth skin pigs, its reproducing ability was stronger than even pink rabbits and could eat almost anything, including mud. The pig group’s scale was gradually expanding. If not for water wolves and poison beard wolves, the number of earth skin pigs would have been thirty to forty percent higher.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

What Fang Yuan was most concerned about was air bubble fish’s situation.

The lakes where air bubble fishes were placed on was carefully selected by Little Hu Immortal. Above these three lakes were the starry clouds where there was the most dense amount of star fragment grasses and also large numbers of starlight fireflies.

The air bubble fishes grew on these lakes where there were no water wolf groups, and even the numbers of blue crucian carps were very few.

These three lakes were personally protected by Little Hu Immortal to let as much precious air bubble fish grow smoothly from the fish roes and mature.

Now, there were many newly hatched fishes moving about these lakes.

These baby fishes were similar to goldfish with round bellies, small and pointed head and tail. However, it was not brightly colored as a goldfish and was mostly milky white. It also did not have the wavy fins and tail; their tails were small and exquisite.

Moreover, their swimming method was different from other fish species. These baby air bubble fishes were moving while bobbing up and down.

"If there is no big change, at around the end of this year, Eastern Sea’s air bubble sea will be poisoned because of a fight between Gu Immortals. The price of air bubble fish in treasure yellow heaven will greatly increase. But I don’t have enough air bubble fishes for my own use, let alone sell them in a short period of time." Fang Yuan pondered.

Whether it was the starlight firefly Gu or air bubble fish, they were both long term investments. It would require at least a hundred years for him to start receiving the profits.

Regarding the knowledge in breeding air bubble fish, Fang Yuan did not buy it from outside.

With his know-hows from his past life, he could increase the reproduction rate of the air bubble fishes by thirty percent. That is to say, he was at forefront among Gu Immortals at this.

Fang Yuan was satisfied from this inspection.

He praised Little Hu Immortal, causing her to feel extremely happy; her face reddened and her snow-white tail excitedly wagged.

However, Dang Hun mountain was still in a worsening condition.

Standing on Dang Hun mountain, Fang Yuan could sense a kind of dying aura. This caused Fang Yuan’s mood to become grave.

Dang Hun mountain was the most valuable thing in the whole Hu Immortal blessed land. Starlight firefly Gu or air bubble fish could never be able to compare to it.

Fang Yuan returned to Dang Hun palace and summoned Little Hu Immortal, activating connecting heaven Gu to link up with treasure yellow heaven.

Just as they connected, several divine sense were transmitted.

"Are you selling gruel mud or not?"

"I will add a pair of hole earth Gu on top of Gu recipe."

"Although my remnant recipe only has a treasure light of sixty-five feet, but I can give some hairy men as complementary. Everything can be discussed."

...

These divine senses were all regarding the transaction for Gruel Mud.

Fang Yuan had put large amounts of gruel mud for sale before, directly requesting Immortal Gu Gruel Mud’s recipe as the exchange. As this concerned Immortal Gu, this transaction had attracted many attention.

"Although Gruel Mud is one of the necessary materials to refine the Immortal Gu. But the Gu recipe’s value is no doubt many times higher than Gruel Mud. These Gu recipes they want to exchange for have already reached the highest price."

Fang Yuan took a glance and knew the time for the transaction was ripe.

The prices everyone gave had reached the maximum amount possible with little difference between them. Fang Yuan looked at the prices but took a fancy upon one side.

The other was called Immortal Mudfeet; his Immortal Gruel Mud remnant recipe had a sixty-five feet high treasure light.

This level of treasure light was a bit lower than the other competing bidders. But the message he left showed he could add some hairy men to complement for this difference.

Normally, Gu Immortals raised hairy men to help them in refining Gu.

With the help of a large number of hairy men, Gu Immortals would not lack rank five Gu, but they would have to keep on trying for Immortal Gu.

Treasure yellow heaven transacted slaves and hairy men were one of the most popular among them, with price that was often higher than slaves of other races. Rockmen could not even be mentioned together with them.

Fang Yuan had already intended to buy some hairy men back at Lang Ya blessed land.

Thus, he had been excited when he saw those hairy men at Lang Ya blessed land. Unfortunately, Lang Ya land spirit did not yield in selling them, and Fang Yuan could do nothing about it.

Now, he required a large number of wolf enslavement Gu.

He already obtained rank one to rank five wolf enslavement Gu recipes from Lang Ya land spirit. He only lacked these hairy men to help him refine them.

If it was only him and Little Hu Immortal who refined the Gu, they might not be able to refine the amount he required even in two-three months.

Immediately, Little Hu Immortal conveyed the divine sense.

Immortal Mudfeet also happened to be present, immediately replying: "I am willing to add in ten thousand hairy men!"

But Fang Yuan was disappointed when he looked at the goods: "Although you are giving a lot of hairy men, they are all young ones and won’t be a big help in refining Gu. What I need is the old hairy men."

"Old hairy men? Then the quantity will be decreased." Immortal Mudfeet pondered before replying. In these years, the hairy men’s population in his blessed land had reached an excess so he was trying to get rid of a batch and was thus selling them cheaply.

After a round of haggling, Immortal Mudfeet finally agreed to sell over three thousand old hairy men and over seven thousand young hairy men to Fang Yuan.

For this, Fang Yuan had to add in half an immortal essence stone.

The transaction was finished. Fang Yuan checked the remnant recipe of Immortal Gu Gruel Mud.

The recipe was indeed damaged with only sixty percent of the contents in it. And the contents in it should moreover have been tampered by Immortal Mudfeet many times which required Fang Yuan to comb through them for the real contents.

This was not surprising.

Immortal Gu recipe was very precious, and if it was him who sold them, he would also tamper it like this. Although the treasure light would decrease after the tampering, the competition between Gu Immortals was precisely like this.

"With this remnant recipe, I have a foundation to deduce the complete recipe for Immortal Gu Gruel Mud in future; it will be much easier than deducing it with no foundation! More importantly, Immortal Gu Gruel Mud is with me. As long as I don’t use it, no one will be able to refine the Gu. I can still keep on selling the gruel mud and profit."

But he could not bring the Immortal Gu Gruel Mud to Hu Immortal blessed land for the moment. After Fang Yuan left Lang Ya blessed land, he used many methods to cover the Immortal Gu’s aura and bury it.

This was something he had no other way to deal with.

Before he became a Gu Immortal, he could only deal with it like this.

Most of the Gu Immortals who purchased these gruel mud wanted to refine Immortal Gu. Unfortunately, it was impossible for them to reach their objective.

Fang Yuan continued to put gruel mud for sale while checking the wolf groups.

Wolves possessed very strong reproductive ability, and most of the blessed lands would get rid of the surplus every once in a while.

Thus, there were many Gu Immortals selling wolf groups in treasure yellow heaven.

"The wolf group suffered a huge loss in the battle with the three tribes, I need to replenish the number of myriad beast kings. Eh, someone is actually selling wolf emperor."

Fang Yuan was pleasantly surprised.

The structure of beast groups was quite simple, they were separately classified into - ordinary beasts, hundred beast king, thousand beast king and myriad beast king. Above myriad beast king was beast emperor.

Rank five wild Gu resided in the beast emperor’s body. They had the battle strength of a rank five and could control myriad beast kings.

Ying Ming and Ba Huang whom Fang Yuan used in the three kings blessed land were dog emperors. These two dog emperors were able to help him to hold off the attacks of rank five Gu Masters. Unfortunately, Fang Yuan was later occupied with escaping for his life and could not attend to them. He did not know if they were killed in the battle or were taken in by others.

Normally speaking, very few Gu Immortals would sell beast emperors as the beast emperors were a reflection of the blessed land’s strength.

Fang Yuan looked at the particulars and realized the reason.

It turned out that this was an old beast emperor with wounds all over its body. The wild Gu on it were badly damaged with only two-three remaining.

"It seems a new wolf emperor appeared in the night wolf group and fought with the old wolf emperor. This old wolf should have been killed by the young wolf emperor, but the Gu Immortal moved at the crucial time and put this old wolf emperor for sale." Fang Yuan Guessed the reason correctly.

But even so, this old wolf emperor still got three bidders.

Divine sense kept on exchanging and finally, Fang Yuan used two immortal essence stones to buy this old night wolf emperor along with over eighteen thousand night wolves.

Then, Fang Yuan continued to buy thirty thousand turtleback wolves and ten thousand wind wolves; among them, there were two turtleback myriad wolf kings and one wind wolf myriad wolf king.

Adding in the previous wolf group, Fang Yuan’s wolf group reached a hundred thousand.

"This is the benefits of having a blessed land. I can stand on the shoulders of Gu Immortals and casually transact beast groups, instantly recovering their size and also would not have to worry about feeding or logistics problem. But a hundred thousand is still few. Ma Zun, Yang Po Ying and Jiang Bao Ya, these enslavement path masters have beast groups of at least four hundred thousand beasts. Especially Jiang Bao Ya who had over six hundred and fifty thousand beasts in his prime!"

The heroes assembly was to begin, where heroes rose and vied for supremacy.

Fang Yuan knew he was unable to avoid competing with these people with his identity as Chang Shan Yin.

So he had to expand his wolf group further!

Fang Yuan started to buy again, buying ten thousand water wolves which contained one water wolf myriad beast king and 6 thousand wolf kings.

Then he carefully pondered for a while and finally decided on vermillion flame wolves.

He bought eighty thousand vermillion flame wolves from different Gu Immortals.

In northern plains, vermillion flame wolves were quite rare compared to turtleback wolves, wind wolves and night wolves.

Vermilion flame wolf had red fur all over its body which shone like fire. They attacked fierce and quick and had flame path Gu worms on them. They could very easily destroy the grassland and create an inferno. If one could use this superiority properly, they could cause enormous casualties to the enemy.

Fang Yuan’s plan was to have a wolf group of a hundred thousand vermilion flame wolves. He only got eighty thousand after buying from everyone, so the task of buying the remaining twenty thousand was given to Little Hu Immortal.

"Six vermillion flame myriad wolf kings, one water wolf myriad beast king, three turtleback myriad wolf kings, two wind wolf myriad beast kings, one mutated beast white eye wolf and one night wolf beast emperor."

Fang Yuan surmised his wolf group’s batter strength had increased by tenfold at once.

If it were common Gu Masters without the methods of Gu Immortals, they needed the help of a large tribe to reach this stage and even then would require six-seven years of searching all over the northern plains.

There were all sizes of wolf groups in northern plains. The small wolf groups often only had few hundreds and were not good enough. The large wolf group had tens of

Capturing wolf groups required careful planning or it was better to not do it. A bitter victory would not work, and only by getting a decisive victory could one get the most harvests.

Fang Yuan’s current leap to success seemed easy, but actually could be concluded as a Gu Immortal’s methods.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"This way, the wolf group’s numbers have hit two hundred thousand! But... this is still not enough." Fang Yuan eyes were shining with contemplation: "I do not need to gather ordinary wolves, by that time, someone will naturally bring them to me. Now, I need to prioritize on my upper-level battle strength."

Although there were beast emperors on sale in treasure yellow heaven occasionally, they would be quickly bought by Gu Immortals after appearing for a short time.

Fang Yuan knew that it was not realistic if he wanted to buy a few more wolf emperors. Thus, he placed his attention on mutated beasts.

Every mature mutated beast had battle strength equivalent to a myriad beast king.

Any first-rate enslavement path Gu Master would have a troop of mutated beasts as their trump card and ultimate force.

For example, southern border’s King Quan had a mastiff group, Jiang Bao Ya had the mountain drilling rat group, Yang Po Ying had the thunder eagle group, and Ma Zun had the pegasus group.

There were many wolf-type mutated beasts. At this moment, four types were sold in treasure yellow heaven.

The first was blood forest wolf.

This wolf had a huge body, almost like a mound. An adult standing beside it would look like a fox standing beside and elephant.

The blood forest wolf had blood red fur, and the fur looked dry like wormwood. On each of their backs, there was a ’white forest’.

These ’trees’ are actually the blood forest wolf’s bones, they protrude from the back and grow vertically upwards. The white bone trees have blood red leaves growing on them. As the trees grow closely to each other, it looked like a ’blood forest’.

After a blood forest wolf gives birth, it would send the cub into the blood forest on its back, and the huge space would allow the child to live comfortable. The blood fruits on the trees would provide nutrients for the cub.

Blood forest wolf were like mobile fortresses, although they were not fast, they had overwhelming strength. This was something not even myriad beast kings could do.

The second type was shark fin wolf.

This was both a land and aquatic mutated beast, it looks like an elephant but there were smooth and shiny crocodile scales on its body. At the same time, there are sharp deep blue fins on the side of their bodies. On their backs, there are rows of fins that resembles a shark’s, these fins form a line extending from the wolf’s head to its tail.

Shark fin wolves had the greatest defense among mutated wolves, at the same time, they could fight underwater.

The third was frenzy wolf.

The frenzy wolf has a silver and grey body, it has three eyes and a body that was not large, around the same size as thousand beast kings.

But those who looked down on it due to its size would often pay a terrible price.

Once the frenzy wolf battles, it goes into a berserk state, it moves extremely fast and would not stop until the enemy is dead. Especially after its third eye opens, its battle strength will surge by five times!

Once the three eyes are open at once, regardless of the battle results, it would die.

This was a type of wolf breed that disregards their own body when entering fierce battles.

The fourth was the white-eyes wolf.

The eyes of the white-eyes wolf were pure white. They had extremely good eyesight, even during the night, their vision cannot be obstructed.

In treasure yellow heaven, there was one blood forest wolf, three shark fin wolves, two frenzy wolves, and five white-eyes wolves on sale, they were all bought by Fang Yuan.

At the same time, far away in southern border’s Shadow Sect blessed land, Old Man Yan Shi squinted his eyes as he stared at the connecting heaven Gu in mid air.

Fang Yuan bought wolf groups in bulk, even wolf emperors and mutated wolves, it attracted the attention of this wisdom path Gu Immortal.

"This Fang Yuan, he suddenly bought so many wolves, what is he trying to do?"

This mysterious rank seven wisdom path Gu Immortal who had always stayed in the background frowned.

He tried using his Gu to make a deduction.

But the result was that Fang Yuan wanted to rear wolf groups for profit and business.

This result did not satisfy him.

"Hu Immortal blessed land’s environment is most suited for growing fox groups. Although wolves are similar to foxes, they are different after all."

Blessed lands are blessed, they were the land of fortune. But every blessed land was different, they received different blessings.

For example, Hu Immortal blessed land was most optimal for raising foxes. Foxes that lived in this area would grow better and breed faster. As for Lang Ya blessed land, it was suited for refining Gu, the environment was suitable for hairy men to live in.

Shadow Sect blessed land benefited the cultivation of soul path Gu Masters.

The instinct deep within his heart told Old Man Yan Shi that Fang Yuan's actions had much deeper meaning.

But wisdom path was not all-knowing, it had its weaknesses. Otherwise, wisdom path would rule the Gu world, there would not be a scene of variety where many paths flourished.

Wisdom path needed evidence to make deductions. The more evidences they had, the more reliable their deductions would be. The wisdom path Gu Master would be guided towards making a more accurate answer.

But for Old Man Yan Shi, although he was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he would never have expected Fang Yuan to be from the future.

Old Man Yan Shi had deduced that Fang Yuan used Fixed Immortal Travel Gu to go to Hu Immortal blessed land. But he would never be able to guess that Fang Yuan went to northern plains.

If Fang Yuan had sold divine travel Gu in treasure yellow heaven, he might have been able to make the connection.

But Fang Yuan was vigilant, he sold divine travel Gu to Lang Ya blessed land. Old Man Yan Shi lacked the most critical piece of information, thus his deduction ended up being wrong.

He tried for a few more times, but he still received the same result.

"Do I really have to use my vital Gu for this?" Old Man Yan Shi thought of this as his pores expanded, as traces of cloud smoke flowed out of him.

The white cloud smoke rose up and gathered above his head, forming into a rumbling cloud.

The cloud was misty, once it appeared, a thick Immortal Gu aura burst out of it.

But this rank seven Immortal Gu had an indiscernible aura, it was like the stars in the night sky, there was no way to locate it. It was also like the scent of a lotus from a thousand steps away, the presence was extremely faint.

Every time the cloud rumbled, there were infinite changes undergoing inside, there was no way to understand it all. If outsiders forced themselves to comprehend it, they would receive ambiguous answers.

This was Old Man Yan Shi's vital Gu — Heavenly Secret!

Heavenly secret Immortal Gu!

It could expose the secrets of heaven and earth, even if the Gu Immortal did not have any evidences or clues, it could directly lead them to the truth.

When Old Man Yan Shi found out that killer ghost doctor was under the slavery Gu, he used the heavenly secret Gu to deduce that Fang Yuan would one day return to southern border.

Thus, Old Man Yan Shi set up this trap and waited for Fang Yuan to come.

Right now, Old Man Yan Shi was hesitating, he was wondering if he should use heavenly secret Gu.

Although heavenly secret Gu was powerful, it had a weakness.

Old Man Yan Shi would not succeed every time he used it, out of ten tries, at least eight would fail. Once he fails, Old Man Yan Shi would face the backlash of an Immortal Gu.

If this backlash was common injuries, so be it, but it was extremely powerful and caused anyone to feel fear.

Old Man Yan Shi’s soul and body would be intact, the heavenly secret Gu’s backlash only targeted his lifespan.

Once he faces a backlash, Old Man Yan Shi would lose ten to seventy years of his remaining lifespan!

A Gu Master’s cultivation to raise his rank did not have any effect on his lifespan. To extend their life, Gu Masters had one way that was the best, that was lifespan Gu.

Lifespan Gu can be used to increase a Gu Master’s lifespan without any consequences.

Other than that, there were other unorthodox methods that could increase lifespan. But each of these methods had either weakness or flaws.

"My current body has around eighty years of lifespan left. Even the most severe backlash will only take seventy years of my life, I will still have ten years left, it is enough to execute my heaven defying plan! But these small matters would usually not give a huge backlash, most likely, I will lose about thirteen or fourteen years. But..."

"Is it worth it for me to use heavenly secret Gu for this? This act of defying heaven will definitely be noticed by my enemies when I reach the crucial stage. In the future, I will still need to use heavenly secret Gu to predict the future."

"But, if I can get the fixed immortal travel Gu that Fang Yuan has, it is a great help towards my plan. Just talk about now, if I had fixed immortal travel Gu to attack Lang Ya blessed land, I will be able to attack or retreat at will. What can Lang Ya land spirit do to me? I will not have suffered such a huge loss this time."

Old Man Yan Shi thought through it, and decided to give up.

Although heavenly secret Gu was powerful, it was a huge trap. The chances of success was simply too low, furthermore, the consequences of failure was too severe, Old Man Yan Shi did not want to waste his lifespan for nothing.

Back then, in order to deduce that Fang Yuan had fixed immortal travel Gu, or where he went, he first spent seventy years and got a result that stunned him for a long time.

He was in central continent!

He was in Hu Immortal blessed land!

How did he get there? What opportunity did he get, in order to get a visual image of Hu Immortal blessed land?

Okay, Fang Yuan started hiding inside the blessed land and refused to come out, Old Man Yan Shi's plan to take Fixed Immortal Travel Gu flopped before it even began.

But thankfully, he used heavenly secret Gu and expended another eighty years of his lifespan to find the most possible opportunity to strike.

In the future, on some day, Fang Yuan will return to southern border and join the battle of Yi Tian mountain!

For this Fixed Immortal Travel Gu, Old Man Yan Shi spent a hundred and fifty years of his life.

"Nevermind, since I got the results already, I shall wait here for him. The matter of him raising wolves is not a concern. As a wisdom path Gu Immortal, how can a mere mortal escape from a scheme that I made myself? Hehe."

Old Man Yan Shi snickered as he opened his eyes.

His eyes were like the white-eyes wolf, there were no pupils, only white color.

He stared at connecting heaven Gu, his lips becoming more curled as he said: "You are a mere mortal but you wasted a hundred and fifty years of my life. In the future when you die from my plot, it will be your greatest honor. But now, don't think you will have a good time!"

Old Man Yan Shi worked for a while, very quickly, Fang Yuan felt something amiss inside Hu Immortal blessed land.

"Oh no, someone is buying the materials for refining wolf enslavement Gu in bulk!"

Fang Yuan wanted to buy these materials, but Old Man Yan Shi was a step ahead of him.

He quickly tried to buy them, but faced much obstruction. A number of Gu Immortal purposely raised the prices against him, causing him to spend a lot more, and the total amount of materials he procured was less than expected.

Fang Yuan squinted, his gaze sharp like a needle: "Someone is intentionally making problems for me. Hmph, it can't be Lang Ya land spirit, it does not have such influence. Then, other than Immortal Crane Sect, it can only be that mysterious Old Man Yan Shi!"

"Hehe."

Suddenly, Fang Yuan laughed.

If it was before, he would be helpless against such a situation. But now, it was different.

He had a large number of wolf enslavement Gu recipes. These recipes ranged from rank one to five, and at every rank, there were different types of wolf enslavement Gu recipes.

These materials that the Gu Immortals obstructed him from getting were merely materials in ordinary wolf enslavement Gu recipes. Many Gu recipes had innovative ideas and took different routes, especially Lang Ya land spirit's personal recipes, how could these Gu Immortals understand the use of these materials?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

A moment later.

"Hmph..." Fang Yuan’s gaze was cold as he memorised these Gu Immortals’ names.

Diao Sou, Great Immortal Ju Shi, Dian Huang Tianmu...

"Old Man Yan Shi, so it was you." He finally understood who the people finding problems with him were. Because most of these Gu Immortals were the ones who attacked Lang Ya blessed land back in his previous life, according to his memories.

"These Gu Immortals mostly come from northern plains, but there are also some from southern borders, eastern sea, western desert, and central continent. If I count Old Man Yan Shi as well, this hidden and mysterious Gu Immortal organization is truly huge!"

Because of this uncommon clash, Fang Yuan learnt about many secret details, he was secretly shocked.

What kind of force was it, who created it?

In his previous life, he had absolutely no idea about it, he was kept in the dark.

Such a huge force was hiding in the background, they were not a simple poisonous snake, but a ferocious tiger hidden behind the trees.

What were they planning, what was their motive?

In the future developments, during the battle of the five regions, what influence did they have in all of these events? As for Old Man Yan Shi, what was his role in this mysterious organisation?

Thinking back about their earlier strife, while it seemed like they were aggressively attacking, they did not use their full strength after all, they had perfect control over their actions.

Outsiders would not have sensed anything, they would only think of this as an ordinary contest.

Even himself, if not for his five hundred years of memories, he would only think that he was unlucky and faced fierce competition when procuring materials.

They struck secretly, interfering with him and found that they could not stop him, thus they stopped.

The entire assault was like throwing a rock into the water, after several ripples, the water surface returned to normal.

Fang Yuan was clear in his heart, he could escape from their assault this time because of Lang Ya land spirit’s recipes, but that was only a foundation. Most importantly, the other party did not want to expose themselves or attract any suspicions, thus they did not go all-out.

Although Fang Yuan was a Gu Immortal in his previous life, he was only a mortal now.

Although he had one blessed land, he could not compete against the cooperation of two Gu Immortals, as well as such a mysterious and powerful force.

"The reason why I attracted the attention of Old Man Yan Shi is most likely due to fixed immortal travel Gu." Fang Yuan thought to himself.

Back then, he used a mortal body to refine an immortal Gu in front of everyone, it was simply too glaring and attention catching.

Immortal Gu were something not many Gu Immortals had. Not to mention fixed immortal travel Gu, such a top tier rank six Gu? Naturally, it would attract the greed of Gu Immortals.

The problem was that high profile he had!

But Fang Yuan had no choice, back then, the situation forced him to do so. This also resulted in the best outcome, there was no better way out of it.

"After such a long time, I’m sure the news have spread already. Immortal Crane Sect is definitely investigating this thoroughly, but that is a good thing."

"The clearer they investigate this, the more they would learn about me. I am only about thirty years old, I am a vagabond from a destroyed small-mid sized clan, I am a lone cultivator, or rather, I am a demonic Gu Master!"

"As such a person with low aptitude and lacking resources, I actually managed to learn about Hu Immortal blessed land’s scenery and was able to refine an Immortal Gu? How is that possible? This is like an ant becoming a giant and swallowing an elephant, or a pig that grew wings and flew even higher than eagles."

Or using a phrase from Earth, this is scientifically impossible!

"This way, they will definitely deduce that there’s an expert behind me! Someone of this level has to be a strong and mysterious Gu Immortal. I am merely a chess piece that this person is using behind the scenes."

"And because of this, if they want to deal with me, they will have to consider the person behind me, or the organisation backing me up. What if this background organisation is a group of people, a super clan, or a super sect? Nobody knows. Any person would want to investigate the unknown, to use all means to learn about their enemies."

"Before they investigate clearly, as long as I hide inside Hu Immortal blessed land and do not do anything overbearing, they will only try to probe me but would not truly go all-out."

Fang Yuan’s thoughts moved like waves, sparked like flint rocks as he evaluated his current situation.

"Of course, this is only temporary. Paper cannot cover up a fire, once they find out the truth, or lose their patience, my trouble would come."

The moment Immortal Crane Sect attacks Hu Immortal blessed land, the best outcome for Fang Yuan is to self-detonate the blessed land and make both sides suffer a huge loss, nobody will obtain Dang Hun mountain in that case.

After losing the protection of his blessed land, Fang Yuan would be hunted down by everyone.

Thus, he was using the identity of Chang Shan Yin as a future back-up plan, to leave a way out for himself.

A crafty rabbit makes three homes, as a demonic lord in his time, Fang Yuan understood this clearly.

After collecting his thought, Fang Yuan sighed.

He had to cultivate quickly, it would be best if he reached Gu Immortal stage once again before Immortal Crane Sect and the mysterious force struck. But even so, it would still be a great danger. If he could not survive it, he would be smashed to bits, and end up in the pitiful state of eternal rest.

"The pressure is great..."

Even though Fang Yuan obtained the greatest benefits back at three kings blessed land, because of his actions, he lost the initiative.

Spring Autumn Cicada, Immortal Crane Sect, Dang Hun mountain, mysterious force, earthly calamity of the blessed land...

Even though he obtained Hu Immortal blessed land and his strength soared because of it, he was in even greater danger now.

All the intense and precarious situations, are pressuring him step-by-step, like a whip or a scythe, driving him to move forward.

If he slows down for even a moment, the outcome would be unthinkable!

If it were others, they would have exhausted their mind and body, crushed into pulp by such despairing circumstances. Only Fang Yuan, by racking his brain and thinking out of the box, could manage to find a chance of survival amidst looming disaster.

But even though he tried so hard, the situation was not taking a turn for the better.

Like now, he was facing a new problem.

Immortal essence stones were running out!

He had first sold large numbers of Immortal Gu recipes and obtained twenty-eight immortal essence stones. But after some purchases, especially the current bulk purchase, his spending was too high and his funds were running out.

Right now, Fang Yuan had four immortal essence stones left. But there were too many areas he needed to invest in.

Helpless, he had to stop investing in the wolf groups.

But Fang Yuan’s original plan was to dual cultivate strength and enslavement path. Now that he had a second aperture, this plan was taking form.

Three things dictated an enslavement path Gu Master’s strength.

Firstly, it was the size of the enslaved beast group.

Secondly, it was the enslavement path Gu worms that the Gu Master had.

The third was the enslavement path Gu Master’s soul. The deeper the foundation of their soul, the more beasts they could enslave, and the stronger beast kings they could control. The time that they could manipulate beast groups to battle would lengthen as well.

"After my purchase, my wolf group’s size is already second-rate in northern plains’ mortal plane. The first-rate enslavement masters are still the three of them — Ma Zun, Jiang Bao Ya, and Yang Po Ying."

"But my enslavement path Gu worms were all from Chang Shan Yin. They are only rank four, I have to get them to rank five so as to deal with the great battle in northern plains."

"Thankfully, despite Dang Hun mountain’s slow death, it can still be used. With guts Gu, my expenditure is greatly reduced, but other than that, I still need large numbers of wolf soul Gu to improve my wolfman soul."

Facing his cultivation requirements, the immortal essence stones in Fang Yuan’s possession seemed lacking. Bulking purchasing wolves only fulfilled one of the three aspects in Fang Yuan’s enslavement cultivation.

Next, he bought a few more Gu recipes in treasure yellow heaven, as well as many refinement materials and the rank five wolf soul Gu that he desperately needed, getting a total of eighteen.

This way, he spent another immortal essence stone, he only had three left.

Fang Yuan placed his sights on relic Gu next.

His second aperture Gu was just formed, it is only rank one initial stage, it had to cultivate from the beginning.

But where would Fang Yuan get the time to cultivate? By using relic Gu to boost the cultivation level, he could bring out this second aperture’s usefulness in the short run.

Even though he had such intentions, the immortal essence stones were almost used up already, Fang Yuan could only buy the green copper, red steel, white silver, and yellow gold relic Gu.

Next, he chose the body modification Gu worm.

The body is like a sack, it holds the soul. When the soul is strong, while the body is unable to hold it, it would form a bottleneck, and the soul’s growth would be halted.

Similarly, if the body was not strong enough, the one had to be careful when using strength path Gu worms. If they overexerted themselves, they might break their own bones and tear their flesh before even hitting the enemy.

After Fang Yuan finished his transaction, he had only two immortal essence stones left.

These two stones were kept to deal with emergency situations.

For the next two days, Fang Yuan did not leave Hu Immortal blessed land, he cultivated on Dang Hun mountain.

"This is the final guts Gu." On a cliff, Fang Yuan grabbed this Gu.

Splat.

With a crisp sound, yellow-brown mud flowed out.

This was a rotten Gu, its body was corroded by the gruel mud Immortal Gu, it lost the ability to enhance souls.

"Dang Hun mountain’s vitality is falling, the number of intact guts Gu is dropping as well... but, after these few days of strengthening, due to the huge number, my soul still managed to reach thousand man soul."

Fang Yuan closed his eyes, feeling the soul in his body.

This thousand man soul was much more solid than before, it gave off a dense feeling. Almost as if it was stuffed inside Fang Yuan’s body, it gave a feeling of almost bursting out.

Thousand man soul was the signature trademark of an enslavement expert. Back then, Chang Shan Yin had thousand man soul.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes, with a thought, he called little Hu Immortal, and teleported himself into Dang Hun palace.

Sitting on his cushion, he took out a white silver relic Gu.

Through his earlier tests, there was no problems with this relic Gu, thus Fang Yuan injected his primeval essence into it.

A moment later, he opened his eyes, after inspecting the second aperture, he nodded in satisfaction.

"Second aperture has reached rank three peak stage too."

This way, Fang Yuan’s first aperture was rank five peak stage, having crystal purple primeval essence. Second aperture was rank three peak stage, having snow silver primeval essence.

Although snow silver primeval essence could not compare to crystal purple primeval essence, it could still provide some help to Fang Yuan.

After all, in the northern plains contest for the Imperial Court, rank three Gu Masters were the absolute vital force.

"After I use the yellow gold relic Gu, I will reach rank four peak stage, that would be the best. Of course, the happiest thing is that the second aperture gives me the option for another vital Gu. This way, I alone can have two vital Gu."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Throwing aside expendable Gu, a Gu Master’s first choice of a Gu worm would become their vital Gu.

The relation between vital Gu and a Gu Master were very close; one could even say their lives were connected.

No matter which side was injured, the other side would also be implicated.

Vital Gu had one advantage which other Gu did not have — that was no matter how severe the backlash was after Gu refinement failure, the vital Gu would still preserved.

Thus, most Gu Masters would regard the vital Gu as their core Gu. Generally, the

Gu Master’s strongest Gu worm is their vital Gu.

Once a vital Gu forms, it would be difficult to change it.

But that was not absolute.

If the Gu Master found an extremely good Gu worm and wanted to cultivate it as their vital Gu, they could destroy their original vital Gu.

But this type of action was extremely dangerous.

Once the vital Gu was destroyed, the Gu Master would suffer enormous backlash; at the least, they would suffer heavy injuries, and the worst outcome meant death.

After rebirth, Fang Yuan’s vital Gu was Spring Autumn Cicada which had been hibernating in the center of his first aperture with no movement.

Now, he had a second aperture and had a chance to choose a second vital Gu.

He had been able to guess this from the Gu recipe, but Fang Yuan was still happy after truly finding that it gave him this chance to choose.

’Which Gu should I choose as my second vital Gu?’

Immortal Gu could be taken out of the equation.

Fang Yuan’s second aperture was only a rank three mortal aperture, unable to store Immortal Gu. Spring Autumn Cicada was a special situation.

Besides Spring Autumn Cicada, Fang Yuan also had two other Immortal Gu - Fixed Immortal Travel and Gruel Mud.

But Immortal Gu Gruel Mud was an expendable Gu; if he made it his vital Gu, after it is used up, Fang Yuan will suffer heavy backlash. Fang Yuan naturally would not do such a stupid thing.

As for Fixed Immortal Travel, it was far away at the poisonous grassland so there was no need to mention it.

Without much hesitation, Fang Yuan made his decision.

It was rank three all-out effort Gu!

He was cultivating strength path and enslavement path. All-out effort Gu was a must and was also the most ideal core of the strength path.

Previously, Fang Yuan intended to use undefeated hundred battles Gu to ensure the safety of the all-out effort Gu during Gu refinement.

But due to many reasons and because of the situation, Fang Yuan had no choice but to use undefeated hundred battles Gu to refine Immortal Gu Fixed Immortal Travel.

As long as all-out effort Gu became his second vital Gu, Fang Yuan would no longer need to worry losing this precious Gu worm after Gu refinement failure.

Two days passed in an instant.

Fang Yuan returned to the northern plains through stargate Gu.

The time flow in Hu Immortal blessed land was five times faster than the outside world. Fang Yuan had spent two days in the blessed land but only a night had passed in northern plains.

It was crack of dawn.

From the edge of the sky, gentle purple and white colors started to appear.

As the sun started to rise, the grass started to gradually look glossy green from the previously dark color.

The crescent lake reflected the dazzling sunlight and sparkled.

The light of dawn shone upon Fang Yuan’s face, he smiled and looked at the side.

The sparse wolf group was once again replenished with many white wolf figures.

These were water wolves with a size that crossed ten thousand; a water wolf myriad beast king led them along with 6 thousand wolf kings under it.

As for the vermillion flame wolf group, night wolf group, mutated beasts and so on, Fang Yuan did not bring them.

It would be too abrupt and conspicuous if he brought them all out at once.

Fang Yuan was disguising as Chang Shan Yin and wanted to properly manage this identity, thus he had to avoid such exposing actions.

Water wolves were different.

This action was proclaiming he was taking in wild water wolves. The water wolves’ appearance was easily explained. But if night wolf beast emperor or those mutated wolves appeared, it would make no sense.

"I will have to continue taking in the wild water wolf groups." Fang Yuan rode on the hump wolf and with a thought, the whole wolf group again moved out majestically towards the next destination.

Three days later, on a certain area beside the crescent lake.

Gu Masters from two tribes were furiously looking at each other.

"Zhong Fei You, your Zhong tribe is too much of a bully, these five black skin fat beetles are clearly our tribe’s goods, but you actually dare to seize it out in the open!" One tribe’s tribe leader Chai Zhang shouted.

"Bullshit! We have already agreed to our territories with this water wolf nest as the boundary. And this is our Chai tribe’s territory. As these five black skin fat beetles have come to our Zhong tribe’s territory, they naturally become ours!" Zhong tribe leader Zhong Fei You sneered.

Chai tribe’s Gu Masters were furious at such words.

Chai Zhang’s face even flushed with anger as he lashed out: "Shameless! Our Chai tribe is moving out our camp to hurry to the heroes assembly, and naturally we need to pass through this place."

Zhong Fei You’s eyes shone with a chilly light as he grinned: "So this is your Chai tribe’s mistake. You could have detoured this place, why would you walk into my tribe’s campground?"

Chai tribe’s Gu Masters were raging. Zhong tribe camp was placed at a tricky position, occupying the main road. It would be even more troublesome if Chai tribe was to take a detour; the way around had at least three myriad beast groups. Zhong tribe’s action was intentionally extorting them.

"Zhong Fei You, aren’t your actions too unsightly?" Chai Zhang gnashed his teeth.

Zhong Fei You shrugged his shoulders without concern, laughing coldly: "If your Chai tribe doesn’t accept it, we can fight it out."

Cha tribe’s Gu Masters’ momentum slowed down.

Chai tribe was a small scale tribe while Zhong tribe had expanded into a mid-scale tribe two years ago.

Zhong tribe was strong; if they fought, Chai tribe would definitely suffer!

As the Chai tribe’s leader, Chai Zhang was naturally clear of this. He had thought of retreating but three of these black skin fat beetles were holding their tribe’s most precious goods.

These goods had been meticulously gathered and were what the Chai tribe wanted to use with, to side with Liu Wen Wu. If he had to give them up, Chai Zhang was of course very unwilling.

In the end, should he fight or retreat?

Just as the two sides were in a stalemate and Chai Zhang was hesitating, from far away wolf howls resounded.

Howl... Howl...

Wolf howls came one after another, endlessly. At the same time, the sounds of a large number of beasts rushing forward were also transmitted to everyone.

"This lineup..."

"Wolf group!"

"It is noon right now and the water wolves’ nest is nearby, how could a wild wolf group come here?"

Zhong tribe and Chai tribe’s people shifted their gaze towards the location of the sound, as if they were facing a great enemy.

They soon saw the majestic wolf army rushing towards them like a river, through the sparse jungle.

In this wolf group, there were strong night wolves, the defensive turtleback wolves, outstanding wind wolves and the white fur water wolves, which were the majority.

Different from other wolf groups, they were moving harmoniously like an army. There was only one reason for this.

Chai Zhang’s heart thumped as he immediately thought of a person - Chang Shan Yin!

Zhong Fei You’s expression became extremely unsightly.

Their Zhong tribe also wanted to side with Lord Liu Wen Wu, thus they were coveting after these goods of Chai tribe, but they had never thought someone would upset the whole situation at the crucial moment.

As the wolf group approached closer, the Gu Masters of the two tribes became restless.

"Such a large wolf group!" Someone could not help exclaiming in shock.

"Gasp... this scale, there are at least twenty eight thousand turtleback wolves, fifteen thousand night wolves, and the wind wolves are even more than the night wolves. The water wolves are the largest with about thirty two thousand." Someone drew in a cold breath and calculated the numbers with his rich experience.

The wolf group’s size was really too big. They spread open grandly, forming a half-moon shaped formation and covering the two tribes.

Zhong tribe and Chai tribe’s Gu Masters were instantly surrounded; and with the crescent lake behind them, they were in an unfavorable situation.

"Didn’t they say Chang Shan Yin suffered huge losses after attacking Pei, Bei and Zheng tribes? Why does he still have so many wolves left?!" Chai Zhang’s lips turned dry; the dense wolf group not only covered them, there were still many of them left who were hiding in the forest, their figures indistinct.

Zhong Fei You could not keep up his relaxed attitude from before. He looked at the large numbers of thousand beast kings and myriad beast kings among the wolf group; his heart stuck in his throat.

Enslavement path was different from other paths; they could change the situation with just a lone force.Normal enslavement path Gu Masters were already people who should not be underestimated, let alone Chang Shan Yin!

Zhong Fei You understood clearly that these wolf groups were enough to annihilate their Zhong tribe two-three times over and still have enough strength left!

Simply because they were in the wild with no obstacles to rely on. They did not have the walls of their camp, they were not in formation, they did not have time to rest and also no time to recover their primeval essence.

One hump wolf carrying Fang Yuan on its back leisurely walked out of the thin forest.

"Chang Shan Yin!" Zhong Fei You and Chai Zhang similarly called out.

In an instant, countless eyes gathered on Fang Yuan’s face.

Fang Yuan expressionlessly rode on the hump wolf with his back upright just like Chang Shan Yin’s habit.

His sharp gaze swept through everyone. He did not speak, but his closed lips was sufficient to display Chang Shan Yin’s proud and aloof aura vividly.

Zhong tribe and Chai tribe’s Gu Masters were silent. They only felt an enormous rock pressing down on their heart; the atmosphere seemed to freeze and made it difficult for them to breathe.

Especially when they thought of the Wolf King Chang Shan Yin challenging three tribes in one night, many started to shiver.

Pei, Bei and Zheng tribe had been mid-scale tribe for long time. While Chai tribe was only a small scale tribe and Zhong tribe had only advanced to mid-scale tribe not long ago.

Zhong Fei You and Chai Zhang glanced at each other, seeing the graveness and the intent to cooperate in each other’s eyes.

The two were similarly agonized: Just now, they were both about to fight, and now they had the hearts to ally. This play of fate really made one not know whether to cry or laugh.

"Lord Chang Shan Yin, your fame is well known to me, Zhong Fei You..." Zhong Fei You gritted his teeth and bowed deeply towards Fang Yuan.

No one felt that the grand tribe leader Zhong Fei You’s action was inappropriate. The other was Chang Shan Yin!

But Zhong Fei You had yet to finish speaking when Fang Yuan waved his hand and indifferently said: "All of you get lost, don’t block me."

Zhong Fei You’s eyes widened, his eyes showing an unconcealable humiliation.

But he did not retort and instead lowered his head, bowing towards Fang Yuan again before turning around to his Zhong tribesmen: "Retreat."

Chai Zhang discerned the situation and also immediately shouted: "We are also retreating."

Immediately, both the tribes started retreating far away.

Soon, the crowded lakeside only had the wolf groups and Fang Yuan, one person.

Of course, there were also those three slow moving black skin fat beetles.

Fang Yuan glanced at these three black skin fat beetles without interest. The things the two tribes were fighting for, did not have enough attractive force towards him.

He waved his hand and the water wolf group immediately rushed into the water, circling and attacking the water wolf nest here.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The water wolf den here had four thousand water wolves, it was a thousand beast group.

Although water wolves rarely stepped foot on land, when their homes were invaded, that would be another issue.

After sensing Fang Yuan’s wolf group approaching, this group of wild water wolves attacked together, engaging with Fang Yuan’s wolves.

Facing obstruction, Fang Yuan’s wolf group stopped their movement.

But he snorted, activating wolf howl Gu, sending three groups of reinforcements to help.

The wild water wolves only managed to hold on for a moment before being unable to hold the pressure, immediately overwhelmed as they lost completely.

Far away.

"Tribe leader, our things are still there." A Chai tribe elder looked indignantly.

Chai tribe leader sighed deeply: "Nevermind, let it be, it is better than losing our lives."

"Shouldn’t we stay and watch? A person like Chang Shan Yin, he might not be interested in these three black skin fat armor worms." Another Chai tribe elder was still hopeful.

But Chai Zhang understood the truth, he snorted: "If you are not worried about offending Chang Shan Yin and attracting his slaughter, then stay."

This Chai tribe elder’s face froze.

"Hmph, this idea, do you think Zhong tribe can’t think of it? Even if Chang Shan Yin doesn’t want them, we will not be able to take these resources! Sigh, with such an expert like Chang Shan Yin here, we can’t stay in crescent lake any longer, we should set off now, and leave quickly." Chai Zhang waved his hand, his tone filled with helplessness, but also anger and weakness.

Chai tribe was only a small size tribe, they were weak. Especially with the ten year blizzard approaching, as well as the fight for the Imperial Court, it will be an era of turmoil where northern plains is engulfed in battles and chaos.

A tribe like Chai tribe was like a tiny boat amidst the chaos, being blown by the winds and waves, they can only ride on weakly. Only by clinging onto a stronger force can they increase their chance of survival.

Chai tribe left after packing up, without a bit of delay.

A moment later, Zhong tribe’s investigative Gu Master reported to Zhong Fei You with some afterfear: "Lord, Wolf King was victorious, with just a wave of his hand, he exterminated that wolf den. Out of the four thousand water wolves, he recruited three thousand, yet he only lost three hundred."

Zhong Fei You and the Zhong tribe higher-ups shuddered upon hearing this.

Such loss to gain ratio was terrifying! No wonder this Wolf King’s wolf group could be replenished so quickly.

"Lord tribe leader, you did not see personally, Chang Shan Yin’s manipulation was otherworldly, he is truly skilled!" Investigative Gu Master wiped the sweat off his forehead as he added.

Zhong Fei You snorted, refusing to put his own tribe down, shamelessly saying: "Chang Shan Yin has a water wolf myriad beast king. The leader of this group of wild wolves is only a thousand beast king. Once they battle, the water wolf group would face great suppression, their battle strength would be weakened. It is easy to recruit them because of them. What about those three black skin fat armor beetles?"

The investigative Gu Master answered: "They were all taken by Chang Shan Yin."

Zhong Fei You’s expression turned ugly.

He tried to steal a chicken only to end up losing the rice used to lure it 1 , not only did he fail to get the resources, he even made an enemy out of Chai tribe.

Speaking of which, Chai tribe and Zhong tribe were in-laws, they had a close relationship. Otherwise, they would not have moved together, and when they set up camp, they chose to live closely to each other, to look out for one another.

But, the world is cruel.

Right now, the Imperial Court competition was not just about benefits for Zhong tribe and Chai tribe, it was about their survival.

Their relationship was only a method to defend their interests. When it was time to abandon the other, they would do so without hesitation.

In the main tent, there was a pressurizing silence.

Long after, Zhong Fei You sighed: "A person like Chang Shan Yin, even if we gather all our strength, we cannot compete against him. But northern plains is not his alone, there are three enslavement master stronger than him! We will note down this battle, and after we go to Lord Liu Wen Wu, one day, we will take revenge!"

Zhong tribe elders nodded in agreement.

Not long after, Zhong tribe set off as well.

Using a total of nine days, Fang Yuan led the wolf group that had expanded drastically in size back to Ge tribe camp.

Ge Guang led the Ge tribe higher-ups as he went out to welcome Fang Yuan back.

"Lord supreme elder, your cultivation recovered?!" When Ge Guang felt Fang Yuan’s rank four peak stage aura, he was shocked and delighted.

Fang Yuan nodded, replying plainly: "It recovered, it was about time anyway."

Back then, Chang Shan Yin’s cultivation was rank four peak stage. Later, he fought a grand battle with Ha Tu Gu and was injured to the point of nearing death, going into hibernation.

But now, Fang Yuan’s first aperture had reached rank five peak stage. Even with northern plains’ suppression, he still had rank five initial stage aura.

His current rank four peak stage aura was only due to the effect of breath concealment Gu.

As for his second aperture, because it first appeared in northern plains, there was no suppression and it was still rank three peak stage.

Keeping it secret for now, and then slowly releasing the aura, not only could be keep it as a trump card, he could even allow others to gradually accept his improvement without suspicion.

Fang Yuan followed the Ge tribe higher-ups back to camp.

Ge tribe camp was expanding, along the way, construction could be seen everywhere. Large numbers of mortal slaves or even Gu Master slaves were being mercilessly utilized.

Winner takes all, this was the cruelty of war, and also the beauty of it.

Ge tribe higher-ups were cheerful and joyous, after Ge tribe took down Bei tribe and Zheng tribe, they expanded greatly, as they tried to digest this new found force, the entire tribe’s strength had increased greatly.

The biggest problem now is the lack of slavery Gu. If we had large numbers of slavery Gu, we could send these slave Gu Masters into battle. This will greatly increase our battle strength!" Ge Guang exclaimed.

Slavery Gu was a Gu worm that could control people.

But man is the spirit of all being , they were much harder to manipulate than beasts. The burden on the soul was greater, especially when enslaving Gu Masters with strong soul.

Thus, in general, a Gu Master rarely controlled more than five slaves. As for slave Gu Masters, the numbers were fewer. Normally, a Gu Master could only control one slave Gu Master, any more and the burden on their soul would be too much.

As for those slave Gu Masters with strong souls, to control them, one’s soul had to be even stronger.

Fang Yuan naturally had the ability to get lots of slavery Gu.

But if he did so, he would expose many things. Ge tribe was only a chess piece in his plans, he did not need to worry for them to that extent.

"Next, I need to continue cultivating in seclusion. You will help me feed this wolf group." Fang Yuan spoke.

"Yes." Ge Guang quickly replied, but his heart was crying out.

Now that Ge tribe was expanding, they were facing a huge lack of manpower. The wolf group was too huge, the burden of feeding them would be great, this would expend a lot of labour for Ge tribe!

But Fang Yuan’s next sentence made this young Ge tribe leader joyous —

"I brought a lot of resources back this time, they were obtained when I was hunting wolves. Use them as you wish, but remember, the things on those three black skin fat armor beetles are mine, safeguard them for me properly."

"Yes, Lord Supreme Elder!"

For the next few days, Fang Yuan stayed inside Ge tribe camp, cultivating bitterly in seclusion.

His second aperture’s cultivation level needed to increase. Although he had thousand man soul, he still needed wolf soul Gu to strength himself, becoming a thousand man soul level wolfman soul.

At the same time, his strength path also needed improvement, he needed to continue using jun strength Gu.

When he needed to relax, he would take out the items on those three black skin fat armor beetles and inspect them.

These resources that Chai tribe painstakingly gathered were very strange, they were all grey-white stone slabs.

But the surface of these stone slabs were filled with black ink lines. Some were straight while others were curled, there were thin and thick lines. The lines were drawn over one another, some looked like letters while others looked like drawings of scenery.

If these stone slabs were real, that would be a huge deal. Tracing their source, they were from the immemorial era, Ren Zu’s ninth daughter, Carefree Wisdom Heart.

<> states that in order to save wisdom Gu, Carefree Wisdom Heart came to the Qian Kun Crystal Wall.

Qian Kun Crystal Wall was straight from top to bottom, it floated in mid air like a giant mirror.

In the mirror, there was a book mountain.

On the book mountain, there was a ink waterfall, landing on the mountain rocks to form a literature spring.

The ink waterfall continued to flow, as it landed on the literature spring, water splashed about. These black color splashes flew in the air as the water droplets formed into words.

This was the origin of the hundred clan writing system in the Gu Master world.

After Qian Kun Crystal Wall was broken, it turned into numerous grey-white stone slabs.

Legends say that if one gathered all of the stone slabs, they could piece back Qian Kun Crystal Wall and the Gu Master would be able to enter book mountain again.

If one looked at the history of humanity, they would find that generations of Gu Masters, Gu Immortals, or even Immortal and Demon Venerables collected these stone slabs before.

Precisely so, large numbers of counterfeit stone slabs appeared quickly.

These fake stone slabs were indistinguishable to real stone slabs, unless the Gu Master was an experienced appraiser.

In history, the most authoritative and accomplished appraiser Gu Immortal was treasure yellow heaven’s owner, Daoist Countless Treasure who owned treasure light Gu.

But even he could only identify them with an accuracy of seventy to eighty percent.

There were simply too many fake stone slabs, too many Gu Masters tried making fakes, even Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable himself.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable purposely created many fakes and scammed many Gu Immortals. The fakes that he made were very convincing, they could even surpass the real deal.

Fang Yuan had never thought of collecting all the stone slabs and restoring book mountain.

Even a rank nine Gu Venerable did not succeed, Fang Yuan had no such drive to waste his effort.

He was only resting now, and tried appraising these stone slabs.

In his previous life, he had trained his eyes to be discerning, he had also once sold and created these fake stone slabs.

Right now, he tried appraising these stone slabs, removing the fakes, it was a form of relaxation.

But unexpectedly, just when he was playing with one of the stone slabs, something happened.

This stone slab that he had evaluated to be a fake, after Fang Yuan injected his primeval essence, the ink lines started to move mystically.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The ink lines changed and morphed randomly, after a long while, it settled and formed a terrain map.

At the center of the map, there was a heightened land. There were no cliffs as the slope was very gentle, there was an opening that resembled a tunnel.

On this place, two words were indicated — Di Qiu.

All around Di Qiu, there were swamps and forests, at the southwest corner, there was a river.

At the lower area of the map, there were four lines — "light in the soil, shine up to a hundred thousand feet high, swimming in the sky for a hundred li, praising plum fragrant snow."

Fang Yuan muttered it silently, but after a long time, he had no idea what it was saying 1 .

These four lines were like poems, or not. They sounded like Gu recipes, but unlikely.

But Fang Yuan was sure about one thing, these four riddle-like lines were definitely clues left behind on purpose.

More amazingly, after the map formed for a while, it faded from the grey-white stone slab.

Soon, this stone slab in Fang Yuan’s hands turned white, there was nothing left on it.

But when Fang Yuan closed his eyes, he could easily recall every detail on this map, at an extreme clarity.

This was not his outstanding memory, instead —

"Painting idea Gu. A painting idea Gu was once used on this stone slab. This Gu can turn into scenery images and etch itself into a Gu Master’s memory, so that they will never forget it."

Light of comprehension flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Evidently, this was an inheritance that a Gu Master left behind.

In order to appraise these stone slabs, Fang Yuan had taken many crystal clear Gu, sunshine Gu, moonshine Gu etc from Ge tribe’s inventory.

Just earlier, he had used these Gu worms and injected his primeval essence skillfully to test them.

These methods were unique ways to appraise grey-white stone slabs.

In the end, these methods became the key to activating the secret of this stone slab.

"The Gu Master who created this stone slab counterfeit not only used painting idea Gu, he also used other Gu worms to form this effect. This is an inheritance from a Gu Master, in order to find the inheritor, he spent quite a bit of effort."

Fang Yuan smiled, to think that under such a situation, he obtained the clues to a Gu Master’s inheritance.

Inheritance was one of the cultural identity of this world.

Be it righteous or demonic Gu Masters, they would choose to create an inheritance, to leave behind an imprint unique to them in this world.

Although he was lucky to receive clues about this inheritance, Fang Yuan did not show much joy.

In his previous five hundred years, he had encountered many of such situations, he was used to it.

Most Gu Masters would leave their inheritances behind.

Therefore, inheritances were always in ample numbers. There were Gu Immortal inheritances, rank four or rank five Gu Master inheritances, these were the truly valuable ones. But there were also many rank two or three inheritances, even those made by rank one Gu Masters.

With the passing of time and natural or man-made disasters, many Gu Masters often leave disappointed when exploring an inheritance.

Some inheritances were destroyed long ago. Others were already taken by the time someone found it. For some inheritances, they were demonic inheritances, traps created by someone meticulously, those mentally twisted Gu Masters who wanted to take revenge on the world before dying.

"I am too busy right now, I cannot abandon my plans for such a vague inheritance. Moreover, with just this map, where am I going to find that ’Di Qiu’ place anyway."

Getting Di Qiu inheritance map was only a tiny accident, Fang Yuan quickly forgot about it.

In the following days, he continued cultivating while refining Gu.

From what he gained from the two tribes, he saw an improved recipe and found it interesting.

Taking out a few Gu worms from Ge tribe’s warehouse, he spent a few days, and after failing twice, he refined the rank three eagle wings to the rank four eagle rise Gu.

Speaking of which, this eagle wings Gu was nearly unused in his hands. After Fang Yuan left poison grassland, he came to Hong Yan valley and reached Ge tribe camp. When he walked around the few markets that were set up during his stay, he bought it.

Wolf King Chang Shan Yin was not a flying expert. Fang Yuan would not use this master level technique easily.

This was a trump card, once he used it, it would shock the world.

Chang Shan Yin went missing for more than ten years, it was easy to make an excuse. Who knows what opportunities and inheritances he came across during the years, why couldn’t he become a flying expert?

A few days after refining eagle rise Gu, Ge Guang visited Fang Yuan personally and brought the latest news with him.

"Ma tribe had completely absorbed Fei tribe, and became Tian Chuan heroes assembly’s main character..."

"At Meng Qiu heroes assembly, Nu Er tribe’s representative is a rank five Gu Master Nu Er Tu."

"Cao Fu’s Zhao tribe? Mm, that Zhao Lian Yun, Ma Hong Yun’s wife, the wondrous woman who became a wisdom path Gu immortal in the future, is only a young innocent girl now."

"No matter what, Ma tribe gained so much attention now, they definitely planning something big, to fight for the coveted throne of the Lord of the Imperial Court. This is the same as in my previous life’s memories. But will Ma Hong Yun appear?"

Fang Yuan thought about it as he recalled.

He could vaguely remember that during this contest, Ma tribe showed outstanding strength, especially during the start, they had strong troops and high morale, they defeated many strong foes.

But a tall tree is the first to face destruction, soil that is nearest to the water will be the first to be swept away by the currents.

Ma tribe gained too much attention, they were targeted by experienced tribes of the Huang Jin family, after several tough battles, although they won, they had great losses and were weakened.

Eventually, Ma tribe was forced by Hei Lou Lan, facing encirclement. Hei tribe had a great number of people, but Ma tribe had fortified defense, they were able to protect themselves.

Hei Lou Lan brought his troops personally but was unable to gain victory, seeing the approaching blizzard, he had to relent.

After Ma tribe submitted to Hei tribe, they gained the rights to enter the Imperial Court. Ma Hong Yun, with his absurd luck, also managed to get in.

Precisely because he used this opportunity, he obtained the partial inheritance of an Immortal Venerable inside the Eighty-Eight Edge Treasure Building, which became the foundation for his rise in the future.

At this moment, Ge Guang spoke, asking Fang Yuan: "Lord Supreme Elder, most of the heroes assembly are taking place fervently now. Our Yu Tian heroes assembly also has many experts and competitors, engaging in fierce competition. Among them, Liu Wen Wu and Hei Lou Lan are the two tribes with the greatest strength, the other forces cannot compete with them."

"Right now, only our tribe is still left in crescent lake. Even the large-sized tribes have set off for Yu Tian, to attend the heroes assembly. After these days of recuperating, we have already digested most of our battle spoils, and stabilized the situation. If we don’t set off now, we might not make it in time."

Fang Yuan nodded.

The heroes assembly was a place where forces probed each other and created powerful alliances.

Although Ge tribe gained strength quickly, they were only a mid-sized tribe. If they did not attend the heroes assembly, and detached themselves from the rules of the game, they would be ostracised, that had a huge impact on them.

Although Ge tribe leader was Ge Guang, every since Fang Yuan took the role of supreme elder, his decision was already the number one priority of Ge tribe.

During these days, Ge Guang and the other higher-ups were starting to get anxious.

They did not have Fang Yuan’s memories, they did not know that during this Yu Tian heroes assembly, there would be a huge contest, and thus it ended the latest.

Fang Yuan had made his arrangements in light of this.

He waved his hand, saying to Ge Guang: "Although the tribe has stabilized, that is only on the surface. In the dark, there are still many people whose hearts are not with us. If we really went to battle, even with a mid-sized tribe’s scale, we would not be able to unleash the corresponding strength."

Ge Guang lowered his head, listening to Fang Yuan’s teachings patiently.

Fang Yuan continued: "Yu Tian heroes assembly’s contest has just entered the climax. We are in no rush to get there. For now, we are going to onion valley."

"Onion valley?" Ge Guang showed some confusion.

Onion valley was a place like crescent lake, it was a wide valley overgrown with green onions, it was a unique habitat.

There, large numbers of beast groups lived, at a larger scale than crescent lake. of course, there were countless wild Gu worms.

Among them, there was the extremely famous rank two Gu, onion explosion Gu.

This Gu looked like an onion, but it was not green or white, instead it was red like fire. Once activated, it would emit an intense odor.

When wild beasts smell it, they would turn irascible, showing their wild nature, they would be more likely to attack people.

Thus, onion valley was much more dangerous than crescent lake.

Why did he want to go to such a dangerous place instead of attending the heroes assembly?

But soon, Fang Yuan said his reason: "Very long ago, I bred some wolves in onion valley, after these years of growing, they should’ve matured and expanded."

"So that’s it!" Ge Guang’s eyes shone.

It was very resource expending to nurture an enslavement path Gu Master, just the food needed to feed their wild beasts daily was an astronomical figure.

These days, in order to take care of Fang Yuan’s wolves, Ge tribe had expended a lot of their resources, causing Ge Guang to wince in pain and have a clear understanding of this.

Thus, many enslavement path Gu Master would choose to let beast groups grow on their own.

They would choose some appropriate locations and leave some beasts behind as the seeds.

Once in a while, they would go to check their growth, if the beast group expanded, they would have profited.

Of course, the chances of having gains was low, in most situations, the beast groups would shrivel, or even get exterminated.

But even so, most enslavement path Gu Masters would choose to do so.

After all, enslavement path was a huge burden on resources. How many moral Gu Master could be like Fang Yuan, sending their beast groups into the blessed land?

After Fang Yuan said that, Ge Guang immediately understood.

"After so many years, the wolf king is still around, but I do not know how many wolves there are left. But this time when we attend the heroes assembly, the more wolves there are, the better it is for us. We will have greater authority and voice if our wolf group is larger."

Hearing Fang Yuan’s words, Ge Guang nodded, agreeing: "Lord Supreme Elder is right, then when do we set off?"

"Today." Fang Yuan said.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sky was pure and azure, and the ground was like a sea of jade.

The soil here was especially fertile with water plants growing lushly, reaching up to a man’s knee.

This was the famous Yu Tian of Northern Plains, reputed as one of the most abundant pasturelands. Now, people were gathering here with their banners fluttering in the wind.

Yu Tian’s heroes assembly had already lasted for half a month.

In the first week, every tribe was shouting their own slogans, causing clamor and disturbance. But gradually, all the forces began to join up through alliances. And now, the two strongest forces remained.

One side was Liu tribe’s Liu Wen Wu and another was Hei tribe’s Hei Lou Lan.

At this moment, the two sides were valiantly confronting each other.

In the center of the people was built a spacious battle stage.

In the battle stage, two Northern Plains’ Gu Masters were having an intense battle; both of them with rank four cultivation.

Outside the stage, everyone was looking at the battle intensely. Battles at tribe leader levels were not something they normally had a chance to observe.

Especially the two people on the stage; one righteous and another demonic, both were famous characters and had deep hatred against each other!

"Water Demon, hand over your life!" The middle aged Gu Master in the battle stage shouted and stamped his foot, jumping into the air.

In the air, he took a deep breath then breathed out a basket-sized dark flame towards his opponent.

Water Demon Hao Ji Liu’s heart gave warning signs.

His eyes flashed with blue light as he crazily poured his yellow gold primeval essence into water wall Gu.

"Rise!"

He raised his two palms from bottom to top; his movement looked heavy as if he was lifting a weight of ten thousand catties.

Following his movement, boundless water vapor formed into a blue waterfall that rose up from the ground.

The waterfall charged up in reverse and then came down, forming an arch of thick water wall.

The dark flames slowly fell onto the water wall and was immediately extinguished.

"Huh?" The spectators were stunned. They were just about to ridicule Water Demon for making a big fuss over nothing, when suddenly the spark with only a bit of light left in it suddenly exploded!

BOOM!!!

The deafening explosion was like the crackling of the thunder.

Great amounts of flames rushed forth and evaporated the thick water wall into water vapor.

The strong impact created a frantic wind that rapidly spread everywhere.

But the storm could not get out of the stage. There were Gu Masters standing around the battle stage, activating their defensive Gu to form a round barrier that firmly guarded the stage.

"Such terrifying skill!"

"Such intense explosion has already neared the effect of a rank five Gu. This killer move has all along been concealed by Fire Prodigal Chai Ming!"

"Although Water Demon detected it, he still underestimated Lord Chai Ming’s attack."

As the shocks from the explosion started to dull down, everyone started discussing and making a din with their gaze concentrating on the battle stage.

Even Hei Lou Lan and Liu Wen Wu were unable to take their eyes off.

But within the round light barrier, water vapor caused the stage to become a scene of white, making people unable to see clearly.

Everyone patiently waited and when the water vapor dispersed, Chai Ming was still standing tall on the stage while gasping and looking at the body under his foot: "Water Demon, did you think a day like this would come when you killed my father that year?!"

Water Demon Hao Ji Liu spurted out mouthfuls of blood showing a pained expression under Chai Ming’s step.

"Hahaha, it is our win!"

"Lord Chai Ming is mighty!"

The spectators were dazed for a while before the side belonging to Liu Wen Wu burst out with extremely loud cheers.

On the other hand, on Hei Lou Lan’s side, some onlookers were silent, while others had twitching mouths.

"Brother Lou Lan, you let me win 1 ." Liu Wen Wu stood up from his seat and cupped his fists towards Hei Lou Lan with a smile, showing an elegant demeanour.

Hei Lou Lan looked like he had not expected this result as he coldly snorted. Just as he was about to say few words to keep up with the formalities...

Whoosh!

A soft sound sounded out, and Chai Ming looked towards his chest in shock.

A sharp water blade protruded out of his heart.

He looked back slowly to see his enemy Hao Ji Liu malevolently smiling towards him with his face full of blisters from the fire.

"This is the real body, then under my foot is...." Chai Ming was full of doubts.

Bang.

Coincidentally at this time, the ’Hao Ji Liu’ under his feet turned into a pool of water and dispersed.

"It is water image Gu!" someone exclaimed.

"Water image Gu is a rare rank four Gu, but Water Demon clearly used many other methods to make his water image look so lifelike."

The sounds beside his ears allowed Chai Ming to understand the reason for his defeat.

"Despicable...." He said the last word of his life and died with an extremely indignant heart.

"Lord Chai Ming!" Many people cried out in sorrow.

"Brother!!" Chai tribe leader cried out with tears rapidly flowing down his eyes.

"Hahaha..." Hei Lou Lan threw his head back and laughed loudly without concealing his joy in the slightest. He raised his thumb towards the Water Demon, "Hao Ji Liu, you did great! Come, drink this wine!"

"Many thanks for lord’s reward." Water Demon walked off the stage while grimacing in pain from the burns that were all over his body, but still accepted the cup of wine and drank it in one shot.

"Great wine!" He gave a flattering smile and returned the wine cup to Hei Lou Lan.

Although everyone disdained his shamelessness, his strength was displayed in front of them and with adding in his evil reputation, no one ridiculed or mocked him.

Hei Lou Lan waved his hand and spoke with his coarse and boorish voice: "Take this cup as a reward too. Yan Cui Er, come, bring me a new cup and pour me the best wine!"

Following his beckoning, a beautiful young girl in gorgeous attire obediently walked forward and places several wine cups in the table in front of Hei Lou Lan, then gracefully poured wine.

She was the eldest daughter of Yan tribe, Liu Wen Wu’s fiancee; kidnapped by Water Demon Hao Ji Liu, she was offered to Hei Lou Lan as a meeting gift.

Hei Lou Lan hurriedly brought Yan Cui Er with him to the heroes assembly as an attack against Liu Wen Wu.

"Young master Liu, you can’t win against me. Why not admit defeat and I shall return your fiancee to you?" Hei Lou Lan drank the wine in one shot and boorishly wiped off the wine that dropped to his beard.

"Hehehe, why does a man have to worry about having no wife? This girl is beautiful, but how could she replace the ambition inside my heart? Brother Lou Lan, haven’t you heard of the old saying that women are like clothes while brothers are like our hands and feet ? Since brother Lou Lan likes her, feel free to have her." Liu Wen Wu chuckled, showing not even a bit of anger.

"Young master Liu is really ambitious!"

"Young master Liu Wen Wu is a true man of our Northern Plains."

"Right, only such a person is worthy for us to follow!"

Liu tribe’s side spoke one after another in support of Liu Wen Wu. Since it was a woman, they were not moved and did not have any thoughts of retorting.

This was the tradition of Northern Plains, regarding men as superior to women; women are like clothes and brothers are like hands and feet – this saying was said by none other than Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

The bloodlines that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had passed on was collectively called as Huang Jin family.

Huang Jin family held the supreme authority in Northern Plains and also followed the old ancestor’s tradition.

Since Liu Wen Wu could compete with Hei Lou Lan on equal terms, he was naturally not somebody easy to deal with. His words were instead secretly ridiculing Hei Lou Lan’s lustful and unambitious nature, giving him an appearance that he was not infatuated with the mortal affairs.

Hei Lou Lan furiously snorted: "Your Liu tribe has always been able to talk well. But so what? Come come come, we will send our people on the stage and have a match!"

Liu Wen Wu’s expression immediately changed a little.

Rather than Yan Cui Er, this was his greatest weak spot.

In the previous nine matches, he only won three matches and lost many experts. In the battle just before, he even lost the rank four expert Fire Prodigal Chai Ming.

Now, Hei Lou Lan was inviting him for battle again, and he had no choice but to accept.

If he did not accept, it would show his cowardice. The men of the Northern Plains despised a cowardly master the most.

But if he accepted, he was sure to lose more than win.

"Damn it, this bastard is intentionally challenging me to weaken my elite battle forces. But I cannot show weakness in the heroes assembly. Who should I send this time?"

Liu Wen Wu inwardly gritted his teeth, his gaze sweeping beside him.

There were people from both righteous and demonic path who had sided with him, with no lack of famous characters. But at this moment, they did not dare to meet Liu Wen Wu’s gaze and either lowered their head or gazed far away.

Right as Liu Wen Wu’s subordinates were feeling awkward, a loud voice came from a distance: "Big brother, no need to worry, send me!"

"Third brother has come." Liu Wen Wu was very happy at the voice.

The crowd parted and created a passage. The person who walked through the path caused everyone to be surprised.

This person was tall with a beefed up body, a fierce mouth and wide nose, skin as dark as ink, with snowy white lush hair and beard that seemed to blend together like a lion’s mane.

The white hair and black skin was such an unusual appearance that caused the crowd to be dazed for a while before someone exclaimed, revealing this person’s identity - "This person — is an inkman!"

Rockman, eggman, hairy man and inkman were not Ren Zu’s descendants but variant men.

Inkman was also recorded in the Legends of Ren Zu. Their homeland was the Book Mountain.

The book mountain had an Ink Waterfall which would crash down on the Literature Spring, and the raging ink would fall on the rocks, forming inkmen.

"Big brother, little brother is late!" This inkman walked to the center of the site and bowed deeply towards Liu Wen Wu.

"Not late, not late. You came at a good time." Liu Wen Wu patted the inkman’s shoulder and introduced him to everyone, "Everyone, this is Mo Shi Kuang, whom I have sworn brotherhood to at my early years."

"Mo Shi Kuang.... Young master Liu really has good vision, fooling around with an insignificant variant man. Alright, let my Viper Prince exchange moves with your brother."

From Hei Lou Lan’s side, a male Gu Master with triangular eyes walked out.

"Come." Viper Prince walked to the battle stage and beckoned Mo Shi Kuang with his finger.

Mo Shi Kuang was provoked by this action and immediately jumped to the stage in fury: "Die!"

He clapped his two palms.

BOOM!

An invisible force swept everything, crushing towards viper prince without any obstacle.

"What? Qi path!? Rank four peak stage!! Shit..." Viper Prince could not even finish speaking before he was crushed into minced meat which then splattered everywhere.

The result was decided with one move.

Gasp...

The sounds of sucking in cold breath resounded in the air.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Hei Lou Lan looked at Mo Shi Kuang with a gloomy face.

He had a bad premonition when Mo Shi Kuang stepped on the stage, but when Mo Shi Kuang smashed Viper Prince into minced meat with one move, Hei Lou Lan’s heart turned heavy.

Mo Shi Kuang was a rank four peak stage expert and cultivated Qi path.

Humans were the spirit of all living beings and could awaken their aperture through hope Gu.

Since variant men had the ’man’ word on them, they naturally had higher spirituality than beasts. But this spirituality was much less than humans. Thus, only few variant men could achieve such accomplishments in cultivating.

The absolute majority of the variant men would never awaken their aperture in their whole life, only a few fortunate ones could.

Only the fortunate among these fortunate ones could achieve success in cultivation.

This Mo Shi Kuang was one such special case.

"No wonder Liu Wen Wu made friends with Mo Shi Kuang, if it were me, I will also be willing to make friends with such a rank four peak stage expert." Realization dawned upon many people.

"Hey, the black-skinned fatty over there, is it you who wants to oppose my big brother? Come come, send your experts, let me slap your lackeys flat!" Mo Shi Kuang patted his chest and shouted loudly, a heroic aura showed in his boorish manner.

"Black-skinned fatty..." Hei Lou Lan’s eyelids twitched and was extremely angry,

’Although I am fat, am I as black as you? This black boor is really hateful!"

"Hei Xiu Yi." Hei Lou Lan lightly called, his calm voice holding within a burning rage.

"Here!" A thin man immediately responded.

"Go teach this guy a lesson."

"Yes, lord tribe leader." Hei Xiu Yi agreed expressionlessly and unhurriedly walked.

His gaze was as indifferent as ice. As he walked, a black light blossomed over his whole light. The black light condensed and formed an armor that firmly covered him.

Next, a dim green halo flew over his head.

Fifty-six flying bone shields flew out and hovered beside him, completely shielding him.

Similarly, nine greyish-blue ghost faces whimpered and hovered around him.

By the time he stepped on the stage, he was completely armed and protected.

The crowd was in a clamor, Hei Lou Lan’s words were very imposing but he actually sent a defensive Gu Master to bring out Mo Shi Kuang’s trump cards.

"Ahahahaha." Mo Shi Kuang was instead very happy, "You are a guy asking for a beating, come, eat my punch!"

The moment he finished speaking, his right hand clenched into a fist and fiercely punched at Hei Xiu Yi.

Instantly, his fist strength condensed into a thick fist qi which fiercely slammed at Hei Xiu Yi who was dozen of steps away.

If it was someone else, just this punch would leave them handicapped if not dead.

But Hei Xiu Yi forcibly took on this punch; his upper body shook a bit, but his lower body did not move in the slightest.

"Good!" Mo Shi Kuang was very happy at this. He was different from ordinary inkmen, and was extremely addicted to fighting. He became thrilled at this moment and shouted, "Again!"

He slowly took off to the air, his snow-white hair swaying loosely with the air. After pulling open a distance from Hei Xiu Yi, he started to punch rapidly.

The punch shadows rained down like a torrential rain, the translucent fist qi shooting towards Hei Xiu Yi.

ORA ORA ORA!!!!

The fist qi exploded on Hei Xiu Yi’s armor, producing a sound like that of thunder crackling.

But Hei Xiu Yi was like a giant reef that would stand tall no matter how many sea waves struck it.

The fifty six flying bone shields dispelled most of the force on him.

Some bits and pieces of fist qi struck at his black iron like armor, but it was of no use.

The scattered qi flow was absorbed completely by the nine ghost faces.

When Mo Shi Kuang’s crazed attacks stopped, the halo above Hei Xiu Yi let out a dim green light and shone down upon the flying bone shield, completely repairing the cracks in the shields.

"Let me return this to you." Hei Xiu Yi sneered; the nine ghost faces opened their mouths together and spurted out dozens of fist qi.

Shockingly, Mo Shi Kuang’s attack was returned back to him in full.

Mo Shi Kuang was dazed at the dozens of fist qi; the fist qi exploded on him one after another and he crashed down to the ground.

"Hahaha, rank four peak stage is nothing outstanding." Immediately, someone shouted outside the stage.

"Young master!" A person beside Liu Wen Wu nervously shouted, "Hei Xiu Yi is one of the three commanders of the black banner troops; a rank four upper stage Gu Master specialized in defense. Should we call Mo Shi Kuang back?"

"Don’t worry." Liu Wen Wu was not worried and instead had a joyful smile as he looked at Hei Lou Lan then at Hei Xiu Yi at the stage, "My third brother is extremely addicted to fighting. The stronger the opponent is, the more excited he becomes. Hehe, watch the show unfold now."

"Hahaha... refreshing, so refreshing." Mo Shi Kuang suddenly let out a crazed laughter and jumped up from the ground.

His eyes turned as red as fire and he looked at Hei Xiu Yi with a burning gaze.

"You are somewhat interesting, worthy of me using half my strength." Mo Shi Kuang said earnestly.

Hei Xiu Yi was naturally not happy: "Hmph, boastful guy, give me all you’ve got!"

"HAAAAAAH!" Mo Shi Kuang’s body shook, an intense inhuman aura like that of lions or bears erupted from his body, oppressing everyone’s hearts.

Whoosh!

He rushed to the sky with overflowing might like that of a demon god, and lifted his right leg.

"Here it comes!" He excitedly shouted and kicked his right leg towards Hei Xiu Yi.

Whoosh!

The sound of the wind suddenly whirled and boundless air condensed into an enormous foot.

This foot was nearly transparent and was as big as a small hill. It crashed down rapidly with an incomparably violent momentum.

"Such an attack!" For a moment, not only Hei Xiu Yi, but Hei Lou Lan and others all stared with their eyes wide open.

"Defend, use all your strength!!" The several rank three Gu Masters who were in charge of defending the site, shouted one after another.

The enormous foot stamped down; Hei Xiu Yi gritted his teeth and immediately sent his fifty-six flying bone shields to take it on.

But the flying bone shields could not last for even a second and were smashed by the foot!

Next, the enormous foot smashed down like a mountain.

The green halo was instantly broken, the nine ghost faces did their best to absorb the force but could only weaken one-tenth of it before dispersing.

The chaotic air flow could not even scatter before it was suppressed by the enormous foot.

Hei Xiu Yi felt an irresistible force heavily pressing down on his spine. He wanted to resist, but was powerless and within a few breaths of time, was pressed down to the ground.

The black iron armor which had made him famous was crushed to pieces by the huge force.

Crack...

The sounds of his bones breaking continuously entered his ears and large amounts of blood flowed out of his seven facial orifices.

The huge force was still spreading towards the surroundings. Several defensive Gu Masters had to sacrifice their lives to maintain the light barrier and not let it collapse.

After the dust dispersed, Hei Xiu Yi was lying on the ground like a dead dog, motionless and at his last breath.

Hei Lou Lan’s expression paled as he stood up immediately. Hei Xiu Yi was part of his direct family line and was one of the three commanders of the black banner troops; without him, black banner troop’s battle strength would fall by at least twenty percent. At the same time, Hei Xiu Yi was Hei tribe’s supreme elder’s grand-nephew’s son, so this was a matter of utmost concern.

Hei Lou Lan had never expected Mo Shi Kuang to be so strong; his strike could almost jump realms and challenge rank five Gu Masters.

Hei Xiu Yi could not be lost, Hei Lou Lan immediately sent orders: "Bring back Hei Xiu Yi!"

Immediately, two rank three Gu Masters rushed forward.

The defensive Gu Masters hesitated but not wanting to offend Hei Lou Lan, they did not block the way, instead loosening up the barrier.

"Lord, this Hei Lou Lan is extremely shameless, actually is trying to break the rules! Let me go too!" A Liu tribe elder shouted in indignation.

Liu Wen Wu, however, just chuckled: "Nothing to worry, let them experience the power of my sworn brother."

"A group of scoundrels!" Mo Shi Kuang shouted in fury before waving forward with his right fist.

He seemed to be dragging a thousand jun of weight as he moved his hand, giving a feeling of slow exertion of power.

An enormous arm made of qi - fifty feet in length and ten feet wide - rapidly formed under everyone’s dumbstruck gaze.

Whoosh...

The qi arm produced a sound like that of a roaring dragon or tiger and also seemed like a hurricane that would blow away everything.

The enormous qi arm fiercely swept across in a wild and unrestrained manner; if it came across mountains, it would break them, and if it came across seas, it would split them!

The two rank three Gu Masters that came to rescue Hei Xiu Yi were like flies as they were swept flying by the enormous qi arm.

The qi arm then swept outside the stage, causing sounds of shocks and screams to resound.

Many spectating Gu Masters who were not able to dodge in time were smashed into minced meat by the qi arm. Hei Lou Lan and his group hurriedly retreated to avoid the brunt of the attack.

"Courting death!"

"Kill him!"

"He actually attacked us, let’s attack him together!!"

Hei Lou Lan and his group who avoided the brunt of the attack, made their moves one after another and immediately shattered the qi arm.

"Hahaha, more!" Mo Shi Kuang did not show a hint of fear in facing so many Gu Masters, and instead became even more happy, his battle intent burning high.

He advanced instead of retreating like a tiger that had came out of the mountain, his beard fluttering as he charged towards Hei Lou Lan and the group.

"Not good, third brother has gone berserk again." Liu Wen Wu could not remain calm anymore, he waved his hand, "Everyone, follow me to reinforce third brother!"

Liu tribe’s side also entered the battle; heroes assembly immediately turned into a chaotic mess, an unprecedented large chaotic battle suddenly unfolded.

Mo Shi Kuang rampaged here and there in the battlefield, and Hei Lou Lan along with his group smoothly grabbed Hei Xiu Yi and retreated. Chai tribe’s Gu Masters charged towards Water Demon Hao Ji Liu, and the heavily injured Hao Ji Liu could only flee here and there...

It was chaos.

"Shit! This is only the heroes assembly, we absolutely cannot have such a battle and suffer huge losses, if so how will we vie for the Imperial Court?"

"What to do? Even if our side wins, it will be a miserable victory!"

Liu Wen Wu and Hei Lou Lan felt the situation was far from good, they tried to stop it but it was in vain.

Howl!

Right at this moment, an intensely desolate wolf howl spread from far away, manifesting the presence of a beast emperor.

Howl!

Countless wolf howls followed soon after. The howling merged into a grand and majestic howl that resounded all over heaven and earth!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"What happened?"

"Is there a wolf tide coming?!"

"So many wolves! There are night wolves, wind wolves, turtleback wolves, wait! There are water wolves and vermillion flame wolves!"

The shocked voices called out as the people stopped fighting, turning around and focusing their attention on the wolves.

But what they saw was a grand wolf army approaching from all directions. All sorts of northern plains wolves gathered together, and charged over collectively.

The black and nimble night wolves, the elegant wind wolves, the defensive turtleback wolves, the pure as snow water wolves, and the ones coated in blazing flames, vermillion flame wolves...

These wolf groups came together, each had at least several tens of thousands in number. At once, the grand wolf army filled everyone’s field of vision, causing people to feel suffocated as a chill grew in their hearts.

A group of people moved slowly under the protection of the wolf groups. Large numbers of farm slug Gu, black skin fat armor beetles carried huge amounts of resources, while lizard house Gu moved their four limbs forward. There was a grand tribe flag carried by one of them, symbolizing the main tent’s location. On the blue flag, there was a huge word written as ’Ge’.

"It’s Ge tribe..."

"That means, this is Chang Shan Yin’s wolf army?"

"Didn’t Chang Shan Yin battle three tribes consecutively, how did his wolf groups expand by so much?"

Suspicion and questions filled everyone’s hearts.

"According to our intel, the Wolf King has night wolves, wind wolves, and turtleback wolves. But where did he get all these water wolves and vermillion flame wolves?" Liu Wen Wu’s face was grim.

"Big brother." Mo Shi Kuang returned to Liu Wen Wu’s side, the huge wolf groups caused his heart to jump secretly.

"The water wolves can be explained, after all Ge tribe stayed in crescent lake for such a long time, and water wolves are most common there. But can anyone tell me where these eighty thousand vermillion flame wolves came from?"

"Vermillion flame wolves are much rarer than wind wolves, water wolves, and night wolves, they have the strongest attack power among wild wolves. We have to check clearly, where did Chang Shan Yin get such a powerful force suddenly? Can anyone tell me?!"

At once, countless tribe leaders and elders cursed the intel gathering Gu Masters in their tribes.

"Forget the vermillion flame wolves, look at that largest night wolf, is it a wolf emperor?!" Zhong Fei You pointed as he shouted.

The truth is, once the night wolf emperor appeared, numerous gazes were already assessing it.

"It truly is... a night wolf emperor." The authority of a wolf emperor was absolute, after Bei Cao Chuan clarified it, he said dryly.

Everyone gasped.

Wolf emperor!

This was equivalent to the strength of a rank five Gu Master!!

Chang Shan Yin was only a rank four Gu Master, he actually had control of a wolf emperor?

As expected of an established character, the hero of northern plains, the one who had once single handedly taken down Ha Tu Gu and his band of bandits, this legend!

"Damn it! How did his strength rise so much? With the wolf emperor, he is already on par with Ma Zun, Jiang Bao Ya, and Yang Po Tian!" Pei Yan Fei who wanted to take revenge clenched his fists, the grand wolf army made him feel a strong sense of helplessness and defeat.

Seeing the wolf army approaching them, everyone showed a grim and fearful expression.

The chaotic battle had stopped, everyone was gathering around Liu Wen Wu and Hei Lou Lan’s side, getting into their formations.

Soon after, under everyone’s gaze, Fang Yuan rode the white-eyes wolf as he followed Ge Guang and the rest and came to Hei Lou Lan.

"Wolf King Chang Shan Yin, I’ve long heard of your name!" Hei Lou Lan first greeted him.

Hei Lou Lan’s body was bulky like an angry bear, his uneven shiny white teeth were like daggers giving people a ruthless feeling. His triangular eyes shone with threatening brilliance.

This person was extremely lecherous, it was a well known fact in northern plains.

Fang Yuan laughed lightly as he turned to look at Liu Wen Wu.

Liu Wen Wu wore white clothes, having a scholarly aura, looking like a perfect young master. His eyes were mild and his face was like jade. Beside him, there was a nine feet tall ink man, his body was black and he had white hair, standing like a guardian, he was the number one fierce general in this Imperial Court competition — Mo Shi Kuang.

Liu Wen Wu’s heart jumped, Fang Yuan’s deep gaze made him feel amiss.

Chang Shan Yin and Chang tribe’s enmity had already been spread to the world by Ge tribe during the battle in crescent lake.

Right now, Chang tribe had already submitted to Liu Wen Wu, if Chang Shan Yin wants revenge on Chang tribe, he would first have to deal with Liu Wen Wu.

Fang Yuan retracted his gaze, looking at Hei Lou Lan, he said with a plain tone but his voice resounded in everyone’s ears: "The reason why I have returned is to exact revenge. Coincidentally, the competition for the Imperial Court was undergoing, this will also allow me to meet all the grand heroes in northern plains. Brother Lou Lan, why don’t we team up?"

Hei Lou Lan’s pupils shrunk, as he happily stood up, walking towards Fang Yuan, grabbing his shoulders as he laughed: "Gaining Wolf King’s help, it would be my greatest honor!"

At Hei tribe, the people suddenly exploded as their cheered loudly.

"Your defeated opponent, Hao Ji Liu, pays respect to Lord Wolf King." Water Demon paid respects to Fang Yuan with trepidation.

Hei Lou Lan frowned, immediately turning around, although Hao Ji Liu had gained some merits, if he offended Chang Shan Yin, Hei Lou Lan would have to kill him to express goodwill towards Chang Shan Yin.

But Fang Yuan nodded at Hao Ji Liu: "No matter, just do your best from now on."

Hao Ji Liu breathed a huge sigh of relief.

"Hahaha, the Wolf King truly has a big heart, such magnanimity, I am in awe!" Hei Lou Lan’s laughter became louder, Hao Ji Liu was a rank four upper stage Gu aster, an absolute expert. Now that he got the best of both worlds, he was overjoyed.

While Hei tribe rejoiced, Liu tribe sank into solemness.

Although Liu Wen Wu had predicted this, his mood still turned terrible.

"If I had known this, I would not have agreed to Chang tribe’s request. How can a Chang tribe compare to Chang Shan Yin? Sigh, but now that the deed has been done, I cannot salvage it further."

He sighed in his heart.

Yan Cui Er was his wife-to-be, but he could discard her. Not just because of the patriarchal traditions, but also because Yan tribe had been exterminated.

But Chang tribe’s strength was still intact.

If he really gave up on Chang tribe, it would make all the tribes that subdued to him feel disheartened and fearful, he, Liu Wen Wu, could not do such a thing.

"Hei tribe leader, my Wang tribe would like to join you, what do you think?"

"Hei Lou Lan, my Fang tribe will be betting on you this time."

"Ye tribe is willing to submit to Hei tribe."

At once, several of the undecided large tribes immediately chose to side with

Hei Lou Lan.

Although Liu Wen Wu had fierce generals like Mo Shi Kuang, Wolf King Chang Shan Yin had allied with Hei Lou Lan.

With such a huge wolf group as the vanguard, who knows how many people’s lives would be saved in the future.

This way, all of the tribes at Yu Tian heroes assembly made their choices. A large portion joined Hei Lou Lan, while the rest went to Liu Wen Wu.

"Hahaha, Liu tribe’s lad, we will meet on the battlefield next time!"

"Brother Lou Lan, till we meet again."

Now was not the time to fight, there were still several powerful forces outside of Yu Tian. The two groups were vigilant as they moved away from each other, towards their main camp.

On the way back, Liu Wen Wu called the intel tribe elder and chided him in public: "Where did Chang Shan Yin’s wolves come from? Investigate, investigate it clearly!"

"Yes young master! I will definitely make up for my mistake..." The tribe elder left with a forehead full of sweat.

"Brother, don’t worry. Regardless of how many wolves he has, I can directly attack and kill that Chang Shan Yin." Mo Shi Kuang consoled him with a fearless tone.

But Liu Wen Wu was deep in thoughts.

Against an enslavement path master, one would definitely choose the beheading leader tactic. But now that Chang Shan Yin has gone to Hei Lou Lan, when they meet in battle again, Hei tribe would definitely keep him protected.

By then, it would be extremely difficult to kill him!

But, he could not ignore the concern of his sworn brother.

Liu Wen Wu smiled lightly, patting Mo Shi Kuang’s shoulder: "Hehehe, third brother, you are an unparalleled warrior that can easily take the enemy’s head, of course I trust you."

"Big brother, you forgot about second brother. As long as he comes out of his closed cultivation, us three brothers would be able to work together, what’s there to fear in the entire northern plains?" Mo Shi Kuang laughed.

"Second brother?" Liu Wen Wu’s eyes shone, the pressure lifting in his heart: "That’s right, when second brother comes out, Chang Shan Yin is not our match when we work together. but now, we should not bother with Hei tribe, this is a troublesome tribe. We should take down the west area and gather our strength, and strengthen ourselves."

"Just do what you want brother, I will follow behind you."

At the same time, at another group, Hei Lou Lan laughed loudly: "Hahaha, after today, Yu Tian heroes assembly’s news will spread, all the forces around here will feel a great headache. Brother Shan Yin, your wolf army will definitely make them suspicious and scared."

Fang Yuan had great strength, Hei Lou Lan had paid attention to him long ago.

Now that he joined him willingly, this Hei tribe leader definitely had to build a relationship with him.

Not only did he treat Chang Shan Yin as an equal, when they talked, he even started calling him brother.

Fang Yuan heard Hei Lou Lan’s words and knew this was a secretive inquisition, thus he laughed plainly: "To speak the truth, I did not expect such gains. Back then at onion valley, I left some wolves behind. To think that after these years, they would expand to this extent."

Ge Guang beside him also said: "That’s right, when Lord Supreme Elder came out of onion valley, the endless number of wolves stunned us all."

The truth was, after Fang Yuan went into onion valley alone, he opened the stargate and connected it to Hu Immortal blessed land, bringing out most of the wolves inside.

When he led the wolf group back to Ge tribe, almost everyone was speechless. This way, the entire Ge tribe was his witness.

At the same time, he covered up his tracks on onion valley.

Right now, the evidences were solid as a mountain.

"Hahaha, brother Shan Yin’s luck is truly admirable. Letting the wolf groups develop on their own is a helpless measure, one rarely gained anything. Brother managed to get some gains, you truly are a fated individual, even heaven wants you to come out of seclusion once more. To speak the truth, after you disappeared, the entire northern plain went silent. Heaven did not want to see this, it did not want a grand character like brother to end up being secluded in the mountains."

Hei Lou Lan’s words were all flattery, it sounded like the entire northern plains only had Chang Shan Yin.

But Fang Yuan gave a mild smile purposely, laughing arrogantly: "This time, I want to exact revenge, but I also want to spar with Ma Zun, Yang Po Ying, and Jiang Bao Ya. Finally, I want to make use of Imperial Court blessed land and improve my cultivation further."

Saying so, he acted as if the entire Imperial Court was his own.

Hearing such arrogant words, even Water Demon Hao Ji Liu bit his tongue.

"Good, this is the aspiration of a true northern plains man!" Hei Lou Lan praised, giving a thumbs up to Fang Yuan, taking out a Gu worm as he handed it to him: "Good Gu belongs to heroes, since brother Shan Yin came to me, that is my honor. This rank five Gu is our meeting gift, please accept it."

Fang Yuan took a look, this was a turtle jade wolf skin Gu, it had great defense. Fang Yuan had heard of this Gu’s recipe back in his previous life, the rank five turtle jade wolf skin Gu was made using a living turtleback wolf emperor.

If there really was a turtleback wolf emperor, Fang Yuan would rather it be part of his force, than sacrifice it and turn it into a Gu.

Although Fang Yuan could use treasure yellow heaven to get rank five Gu as well, this turtle jade wolf skin Gu suited his enslavement path. It would take him a lot of time, effort, and most importantly, immortal essence stones, to get such a Gu.

After all, Fang Yuan only had two immortal essence stones left.

Now that this Gu was given to him for free, that would be the best.

"Alright then, I will happily receive it." Fang Yuan said, as he really grabbed this Gu without hesitation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Twelve days later.

In the secret room, Fang Yuan was seated above a cushion with both eyes closed, his whole body was tense, and his mind was in placid tranquility. His attention was solely focused on the turtle jade wolf skin Gu that was within his aperture.

Currently, the Gu floated atop his primeval sea within his first aperture; primeval essence was continuously poured onto it, which caused the Gu to emit a jade colored light.

The light radiated from his aperture, and illuminated Fang Yuan’s entire body.

Gradually, the rays of light dimmed. The entire turtle jade wolf skin Gu dissipated into tiny fluorescent particles, thoroughly destroyed.

Fang Yuan was already mentally prepared. Turtle jade wolf skin Gu needed to be consumed, and would leave imprints on the Gu Master’s body, similar to the bronze skin Gu and iron bone Gu.

"These past few days I’ve been in constant seclusion, my body has finally been refined to turtle jade wolf skin."

Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes, and pulled back the cuffs of his sleeves to examine the skin on his arms.

His skin still retained the natural color of flesh, but when Fang Yuan took out a dagger and ruthlessly slashed at his arm, immediately, the effects of the turtle jade wolf skin Gu activated.

When the dagger made contact with his skin, the skin immediately turned to a jadish-green, while the faint lines of turtle shells pulsated outwards.

Cutting the skin was similar to a collision with iron, or possibly jade, but the skin still retained a degree of flexibility.

Fang Yuan gave a satisfied nod: "The turtle jade wolf skin Gu is rank five, its defensive power is truly remarkable. Most importantly, it does not require active use; as long as one is attacked, the defensive properties would activate, it is extremely practical as no primeval essence is expended in the process."

It wasn’t difficult for a Gu Immortal to acquire rank five Gu, though for mortal Gu Masters, they were quite rare.

For a large number of rank five Gu Masters, they only possess one rank five Gu. Some do not even possess rank five Gu, but instead resorted to rank four Gu as substitute.

Upon meeting Fang Yuan, Hei Lou Lan immediately used turtle jade wolf skin Gu to entice him, which, in the eyes of bystanders, was a huge investment.

In the eyes of Fang Yuan, a rank five Gu wasn’t much, but it allowed him to sense the sincerity from Hei Lou Lan.

"Turtle jade wolf skin’s modification is done. The next step is to improve my strength." Fang Yuan sat still upon his cushion, seizing the most of every minute, diligently improving his strength.

He sent out a strength of ten jun Gu.

This Gu was like an iron weight. After being infused with primeval essence, it suspended itself above Fang Yuan’s head, and afterwards blossomed with a glorifying radiance, covering his entire body while engraving a particular strength path Dao mark onto his body.

As time passed, the strength of Fang Yuan slowly and steadily grew.

For quite some time, he cultivated his strength non-stop.

He had already used up the five strength of ten jun Gu he purchased earlier. Now, he would have to use Hei tribe’s inventory to acquire more strength of ten jun Gu.

By now, Fang Yuan’s body contained the strength of sixty jun, stored in the very depths of his body.

Ten jun was the strength of three hundred jin, sixty jun was equal to one thousand eight hundred jin of strength.

On Earth, Green Dragon Crescent Blade 1 weighed merely eighty-two jin.

"I have already refined this body with turtle jade wolf skin, thus, it can hold about a hundred jun of strength. One hundred jun of strength or more would be the within the range of rank five realm."

Jin strength Gu and jun strength Gu’s recipes were the invention of a rank seven Gu Immortal. Compared to traditional beast strength Gu, they were easier to refine, while simultaneously costing less, and thus were widespread in the north.

Fang Yuan abandoned his beast phantom Gu, and picked up the jun strength Gu, not only to keep up with current developments, but also to make his path more convenient, allowing him to disguise his own identity.

However, jun strength Gu could not solve the fundamental problem of strength path.

Fang Yuan had sixty jun of strength within him, but in practice could only exert a small portion of it.

To solve the problem, he would have to rely on all-out effort Gu.

All-out effort Gu could allow a Gu Master to make use of their whole body’s strength, allowing them complete liberty to exert strength, it was truly the core Gu of strength path.

Therefore, Fang Yuan decided it would be his second aperture’s vital Gu.

But this all-out effort Gu was a mere rank three Gu, and being in a foreign land resulted in it being suppressed to rank two.

Fang Yuan had the recipe for rank four all-out effort Gu, thus, so long as he is in northern plains when he refines the Gu to rank four, it will not be affected by the suppression.

"But... it would be hard to continue accumulating. Turtle jade wolf skin helps in bearing the weight of my strength, but does not benefit enslavement path. Although I have two apertures, I merely have one body."

In this world, there were few things that could satisfy all of one’s needs.

While advancing strength path, he could not simultaneously advance enslavement path.

If he wanted to advance enslavement path, Fang Yuan should not have employed turtle jade wolf skin Gu, but rather a different rank five Gu, known as wolf totem Gu.

This Gu could be used to store wolf packs. They would be stored in his skin, and for every wild wolf he keeps, a wolf tattoo would also form on Fang Yuan’s skin.

Many enslavement path Gu Masters would choose their corresponding totem Gu, and keep their elite troops in their own bodies.

In critical moments, Gu Masters would reveal the power of their elites, summoning them and making them fight.

Like before, Fang Yuan used rank four impermanence bone Gu, which allowed him to further strengthen his soul.

But impermanence bone Gu did not benefit strength path.

Fang Yuan may be a Gu Master of both the strength and enslavement path, but it was not simple. It was easy to cause a disaster for both paths.

Fang Yuan’s problems were far from just this.

Spring Autumn Cicada was gradually recovering, once again putting him under the pressure of death.

His frequent entering and exiting of Hu Immortal blessed land caused his supply of starlight firefly Gu to dwindle.

Immortal Crane Sect’s great desire towards Hu Immortal blessed land, the mysterious force’s attention due to the fixed immortal travel Gu, the problem of recovering fixed immortal travel and gruel mud Immortal Gu, Hu Immortal blessed land’s earthly calamity, the crisis concerning the death of Dang Hun mountain, and constantly pretending to be Chang Shan Yin, and the mental pressure of making sure I do not show any weakness or flaws...

His situation was terrible, it could even be said that he was beset on all sides.

"But because of the crisis , I can look forward to the moment when I cut through the thistles and thorns and break free of worries."

Fang Yuan let out a cold laugh, organizing his state of mind, and left his secret room.

Outside the secret room stood two rank three Gu Masters, standing like guardians.

The Wolf King’s identity was the main reason for this situation; after arriving at Hei tribe camp, they immediately decided to strictly protect him.

"Greetings, Lord Wolf King." When the two Gu Masters saw Fang Yuan come out, they immediately saluted and reported to him, "Lord Hei Lou Lan invited the other lords to attend the banquet to conduct important business."

After returning to Hei tribe’s compound, Hei Lou Lan one large feast for almost three days, and spent five days at a smaller feast. Several invitations were sent to Fang Yuan, but he was busy cultivating; every sent invitation was completely rejected by him.

Fang Yuan was in a race against time to increase his strength, which was also in accordance with Chang Shan Yin’s haught and lofty disposition.

Though this time, the banquet was extraordinary.

"There are important matters to discuss?" Fang Yuan’s footsteps halted, and he changed his usual attitude towards banquets: "Let’s go".

The secret room was built underground.

Fang Yuan exited his secret room and arrived above the ground, the curtain of night already enveloped the sky, stars scattered about.

Rushing to the banquet, as he had expected, it was the matter of the blood oath.

These days, the banquet did not have Hei Lou Lan’s usual decadence, rather it focused on talks between leaders negotiating the contracts of an alliance.

This heroes assembly was only the preliminary stage to establishing the genuine union, which would unite the forces of all parties into one alliance.

The contract of the alliance already agreed on various things, and the leaders were now working on their individual tribes’ interests. Fang Yuan looked at the contents and saw no issues, so along with everyone else, he used the poison vow Gu.

poison vow Gu had the power to restriction, and was also the foundation of building mutual trust.

But Fang Yuan was the exception.

He possessed eating one’s words Gu. In two hundred years, this Gu would be developed by a western desert chief. When he was in Shang clan city, he used it to break his poison vow with Bai Ning Bing.

And now that he could link with treasure yellow heaven, if he wanted to remove the poison vow, he would merely have to refine it again.

The main tent was brightly lit, with each tribe having their own seat.

Hei Lou Lan held the central seat, and the first to his left was Fang Yuan, with Ge Guang standing behind him.

It was difficult for the young tribe leader to hide his happy expression, holding second seat in the alliance was a result of clinging to Fang Yuan, their benefits surpassed that of any ordinary medium-sized tribe.

Sitting after Fang Yuan were the leaders of the large tribes: Wang tribe, Fang tribe, and Ye tribe.

While down the line were the leaders of the medium-sized tribes, and finally the small scale tribe leaders, as well as the rank four demonic path experts.

Now, the alliance began its preliminary aggregation, before they were merely like loose sand.

"Hahaha, now everyone is family. According to conventional tradition, after having established our alliance, we need to hold a large feast. But these traditions and conventions are total bullshit! I’ve already thought of something better, rather than annexing those weaker powers, we should instead collect wild wolves." Hei Lou Lan began his speech.

Soon, all eyes concentrated on Fang Yuan’s face.

Fang Yuan’s complexion was indifferent, his eyes darted across the room, within his heart he understood that by joining in, he had already altered history.

He vaguely remembered, five hundred years ago in his previous life, after Hei Lou Lan’s alliance was formed, he immediately assaulted the east, launching a bloody war with the Dong Fang tribe.

"But this is good, although Hei Lou Lan prevailed over Dong Fang tribe, he suffered huge losses in the process. Hei Lou Lan is obviously taking consideration of my night wolf emperor, which was expected. With the night wolf emperor, he could incorporate myriad beast groups into his army. The expansion of the wolf group will be a great thing for me.

Fang Yuan thought about it for a moment, and gave everyone a nod: "Since this is the case, I will do my part."

No one in the camp gave an objection.

The larger the number of wolves, the more they would benefit, while suffering fewer casualties, preserving the strength of their tribes as much as possible.

Hei Lou Lan was relying heavily on Chang Shan Yin, everyone understood and agreed.

It would be a shame to have such a great master of the enslavement path and not put him to use!

As for the sharp rise in strength of the Wolf King, they did not have to be too concerned.

They were not aware of the eating one’s words Gu, and had complete trust in the poison vow Gu. Since the covenant had already been formed, they did not have to worry that the Wolf King would take advantage of their interests.

Soon after their discussion, the entire Hei tribe alliance began to work actively. Gu Masters from tribes both large and small dedicated themselves to expanding Fang Yuan’s wolf pack.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the grassland shrouded by the night, Sang Yi was running for his life.

The bone-chilling wind pounced on him, but he, however, was perspiring greatly.

"Fast, faster!" He screamed in his heart, pouring his primeval essence frantically into his movement Gu.

Howl!

Behind him, a night wolf group was charging towards him. The reason for that was the corpse of a night wolf’s cub in Sang Yi’s hand; leading to this pursuit that had continued for several minutes.

If it was before, these few minutes would be gone in a blink of an eye to Sang Yi. But with the myriad wolf group closely chasing him, Sang Yi felt every second of time passing very slowly and unendurably.

"Finally, I’ve arrived!" Seeing the small ravine in front of him, Sang Yi burst forth with newfound strength, rushing towards the ravine.

Rumble...

Close to twenty thousand night wolves followed him into the ravine like a dark flood.

"They have entered!" The Gu Masters lying low in the ravine shouted in joy.

"Collect the net quickly, don’t miss it." A rank three Gu Master who was the leader of this group, sent the command immediately.

"Earth wall, rise up!" A group of rank two Gu Masters simultaneously activated rank two earth mound Gu.

With so many earth mound Gu activated together caused the stones on the entrance of this narrow ravine to rapidly rise up, forming into a barrier like that of a rank three earth wall Gu.

At the same time, on another side of the ravine were dozens of Gu Masters who activated falling stones Gu.

Large numbers of stones fell down and firmly blocked the entrance.

The exit to this ravine was already sealed before. Now with the entrance blocked as well, the night wolf group that had entered was like a turtle trapped in a jar.

The night wolf myriad beast king saw the situation turn bad and immediately led the wolf group to climb up the ravine and cross over it.

However, at this time, a desolate and magnificent wolf howl resounded through the skies.

Fang Yuan was riding on a night wolf emperor, commanding large numbers of night wolves to attack from above.

The wild night wolf group’s eyes turned red and howled furiously, but they hesitated because of the wolf emperor’s presence.

Clear mind Gu!

With a thought, Fang Yuan summoned a clear mind Gu. This was a rank four Gu; after the primeval essence poured into it, it immediately changed into a cool wind.

The cool wind blew gently over the area.

The night wolf group that was starting to turn frenzied due to the effect of onion explosion Gu immediately came to their senses when this cool wind blew over them.

The wolf emperor howled again, turning this wild night wolf group to fall into a chaotic mess; their formation crumbled and their will to fight received a huge impact.

Fang Yuan laughed and commanded his wolf group to attack for real.

There were already Gu Masters who were tangling up the wild myriad wolf king.

Fang Yuan first mobilized his wolf group to divide the wild night wolves before nibbling away at them; the whole situation was in his firm control. Then he approached the wild myriad wolf king and then at the opportune time, used rank four wolf enslavement Gu.

In the end, he only had to pay the lives of few hundred night wolves to smoothly take in this myriad wolf king and close to twenty thousand wolves.

After this great success, the Gu Masters remained behind to clean up the battlefield while Fang Yuan led the increased wolf group towards the next destination.

There, another large group of wild night wolf group was waiting for him.

"You did good." A rank three leader patted Sang Yi’s shoulder and gave him five hundred primeval stones along with a rank three Gu, "This is your well deserved reward."

Sang Yi wiped off the sweat off his forehead and looked at these primeval stones and the Gu while breathing heavily.

He then looked at the distance, looking at Fang Yuan’s receding figure with envy and admiration.

"Although I am a rank three Gu Master and have some fame in the demonic path, I cannot be compared to Wolf King. This is a true big shot. When will I have such an accomplishment?"

In this night, Fang Yuan wandered thousands of li and took in seventy thousand wild night wolves.

Only by dawn when night wolves would not go out to hunt and had all returned to their nest, did Fang Yuan lead the wolf group back to Hei tribe camp.

After Hei Lou Lan established the alliance, with the concept of safety in numbers, five enormous camps were stationed nearby.

Fang Yuan’s wolf group was divided among these five camps for the specialized people to feed them.

These few days, he had taken in large numbers of night wolves; the night wolf group that was only about thirty thousand originally, had now expanded to three hundred twenty thousand!

The night wolf group had become the greatest force in Fang Yuan’s troops in one go.

Adding in the vermillion flame wolves, wind wolves, water wolves and others, Fang Yuan’s wolf group had reached a huge size of five hundred and thirty thousand!

"It is thanks to the night wolf emperor that I could incorporate the night wolves so easily." Settling down the wolf group, Fang Yuan brought his exhausted body back to the secret room to rest.

With the increase in the night wolf group, the numbers of myriad wolf kings Fang Yuan had to control also increased by several times.

These large numbers of night wolf myriad beast kings created a burden on his soul, causing him to feel an increasingly heavy feeling in the depths of his soul.

After sleeping for hours, Fang Yuan opened his eyes and sat cross-legged on a cushion and continued to cultivate.

Wolf soul Gu.

He used the wolf soul Gu, slowly converting his thousand man soul into wolfman soul.

Previously, he had hundred soul level wolfman soul which had a human body, wolf ears, wolf tail and wolf claws. But afterwards, he used large numbers of guts Gu in Dang Hun mountain and his soul rapidly expanded to thousand man soul; this instead caused the wolf soul Gu’s effect to thin out and his soul recovered the appearance of a normal soul.

The wolf soul Gu’s effect was not clear at all, after more than two hours, it only slightly lengthened the wolf ears on Fang Yuan’s human soul.

But to Fang Yuan, the heavy feeling in the depths of his soul had lifted by a lot.

With wolfman soul, controlling wolf groups would become much easier because the wolves would acknowledge the Gu Master as one of their own kind from the depths of their soul.

"Unfortunately, I do not have rank five wolf soul Gu and can only use the rank four wolf soul Gu; its effects are clear on hundred man soul, but the effects have great weakened as I progress through thousand man soul."

After using it for a long time, Fang Yuan stopped it while feeling some regret in his heart.

However, rank five Gu were never easy to obtain.

Refining rank four wolf soul Gu required an intact soul of a myriad wolf king. But to refine rank five wolf soul Gu required the soul of a wolf emperor.

Moreover, even a refinement master would only have about fifty percent chance to successfully refine rank five wolf soul Gu.

Fang Yuan had thought of purchasing it in treasure yellow heaven, but when he recalled he only had two immortal essence stones left and the mysterious force hiding in the dark, he dispelled this plan for safety purposes.

"Although I can’t directly buy it in treasure yellow heaven, I have already mentioned this request to Hei Lou Lan. Hei tribe is part of the Huang Jin family and their supreme elders are Gu Immortals, thus they have extremely deep foundations. Two-three days have already gone by, I might as well ask him now."

With this thought, Fang Yuan walked out of the secret room and met Hei Lou Lan, but he expressed that his hands were tied.

"Brother Shan Yin, truth be told, I have already written a letter to request it from the supreme elders. But they thought it would be better to give a live wolf emperor instead of rank five wolf soul Gu. And the wolf emperor cannot be given casually as well, their intention is to use battle merits to exchange for it.

After all, I need to convince the masses as well."

Hei Lou Lan was very cunning, ever since Fang Yuan took the poison vow, his attitude was no longer as cordial as before.

Together with the fact that he had used large amounts of manpower and physical resources over these days to help Fang Yuan incorporate the night wolf group, he felt he had done more than enough for Fang Yuan.

Simultaneously, Fang Yuan’s wolf group had expanded to over five hundred thousand in number. Such a large force also caused him to inwardly feel fear. Despite the restriction from poison vow, Hei Lou Lan was subconsciously guarded.

Fang Yuan nodded and expressed his understanding.

He had also commanded Little Hu Immortal to keep a close watch on treasure yellow heaven to get any wolf emperors native to northern plains.

Unfortunately, beast emperors were rarely sold. A beast emperor had been put for sale in these days, but it was a boar emperor and not a wolf emperor.

Fang Yuan realized from Hei Lou Lan’s words that he was already unable to hold back and was already preparing to start a war campaign.

Over these days, Tian Chuan, Meng Qiu, Cao Fu and every other region of northern plains were already engaging in battle. Among the popular candidates for the ownership of Imperial Court this time, only Hei tribe had been holding back and growing the wolf group.

Now, they had already accumulated enough wolves, Hei Lou Lan who was full of hope had already been impatient.

"Then brother Lou Lan, which force do you want to attack first?" Fang Yuan asked.

Hei Lou Lan laughed heartily and patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder: "Little brother is really sharp. I won’t hide it from brother, I want to attack Cao Fu and eradicate Dong Fang tribe. Dong Fang tribe has lot of beauties, especially that Dong Fang Qing Yu who is a famous beauty in northern plains. I want to kill all their men and capture all their women! Hahaha..."

Fang Yuan was slightly stupefied, history was still steering in the same direction, after making a detour, the focus still returned to Dong Fang tribe.

"But with my five hundred thousand wolf group, it is different from my previous life. Dong Fang tribe... Hehe." Fang Yuan sneered inwardly.

Reaching this stage, he could already influence the development of the future.

But so what?

Let history be completely changed.

As long as there are profits in front of him, so what if the sky and earth collapses, or if the floods reach heaven! Who cares if his reputation stinks for ten thousand years!

The next day, Hei tribe completely pulled out the camp and began a majestic expedition towards Cao Fu.

This news immediately attracted the attention of all kinds of forces.

The situation was changing crazily and Cao Fu was preparing for a great battle.

Different from Yu Tian’s heroes assembly where Liu tribe and Hei tribe were evenly matched, Dong Fang tribe occupied the greatest dominance in Cao Fu’s heroes assembly, suppressing the heroes and incorporating large numbers of tribes. Only Zhao tribe was barely resisting the pressure, not willing to agree to Dong Fang tribe’s harsh alliance conditions.

The news of Hei tribe large expedition attracted almost all the attention of Dong Fang tribe. Zhao tribe got space for a breather and showed signs of moving their tribe towards a corner.

Dong Fang tribe’s current tribe leader was a rank five wisdom path Gu Master Dong Fang Yu Liang.

After making deductions and forecasts over a night without resting, he immediately changed the stiff stance and changed the conditions for joining the alliance to become extremely lenient and generous.

Dong Fang Yu Liang personally travelled to invite Zhao tribe to join the alliance!

Zhao tribe leader hesitated.

Zhao tribe and Dong Fang tribe had enmities between them, and this enmity had gotten deeper over the years. But Dong Fang tribe’s sincerity could be clearly seen right now and the conditions they offered were also very attractive.

Maybe, this was a rare opportunity to resolve the old hatred and grudges with Dong Fang tribe?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the study room, Zhao tribe leader placed down the document wearily.

Sunlight passed through the window and shone on his face.

Due to handling the tribe affairs for a long time, this fifty year old rank five initial stage Gu Master already had white hair and a face filled with wrinkles.

These days, because of Hei tribe’s large scale expedition and the personal invitation from Dong Fang Yu Liang, the tribe was divided into two factions.

These two factions argued endlessly; one side wanted to side with Dong Fang tribe and resolve the old grudges, while another side wanted to side with Hei tribe as Hei tribe was much bigger.

Could siding with Dong Fang tribe really resolve the old grudges? When he thought of the deep hatred that had accumulated over the generations between their tribe and Dong Fang tribe, Zhao tribe leader could not speak with certainty.

And siding with Hei tribe was also not right.

Zhao tribe’s main headquarters was after all in this Cao Fu region while Hei tribe represented Yu Tian’s tyrants and had already gone through the vow with their allies. As a tribe who joined later, Zhao tribe would unavoidably be bullied and how much profits could they even obtain? They might even be treated as cannon fodder.

Thus, Zhao tribe leader was deeply conflicted. Especially these days, the tribe higher-ups were always busy arguing; Zhao tribe leader had to guard against that cunning Dong Fang Yu Liang’s scheme, while also needing to suppress the internal situation and lead the tribe. He was already very exhausted.

"Sigh..."

He heaved a deep sigh and leaned back on the chair, gazing at the dust that was floating in the sunlight.

In this dazzling sunlight, the tiny dust could be clearly seen and Zhao tribe leader felt he was like one of these dust, hesitating back and forth; now it was floating in the air, but who is to say that it will not fall down to the ground when wind blows over.

The battle between Hei tribe and Dong Fang tribe was precisely a violent wind that would sweep away everything.

Facing such a wind, what path should his tribe take?

Right as Zhao tribe leader was feeling frantic, a weeping sound suddenly came from outside the window.

Hearing this familiar sound, Zhao tribe leader’s brows slightly furrowed and revealed a concerned look as he immediately asked: "What’s the matter?"

The guard outside the door immediately replied: "Lord tribe leader, big missy slipped on the stairs and knocked her head while running here."

"Ahh!" Zhao tribe leader stood up with a pained expression, "How could my little darling fall? How much blood did she lose? Quick, bring her here."

Zhao tribe leader had several sons but they were all schemed and killed by Dong Fang Yu Liang, leaving behind only a daughter.

His daughter was only about five or six with a very mischievous nature, but her appearance was extremely similar to his late wife and so Zhao tribe leader doted on her very much.

Soon, the door to the study room was pushed open.

The guard supported a little girl to the room.

The girl looked like she was carved out of jade and looked extremely cute with her embroidered clothing. Right now, she, however, was sobbing, covering her forehead with her hand.

"My little darling, my little Yunyun, where did you get hurt?" Zhao tribe leader quickly walked over and hugged the little girl, asking her with concern.

’Father, did you go blind? The injury is on my forehead...’ The little girl furiously shouted inwardly, but on the surface, she smoothly leaned on Zhao tribe leader’s chest and acted like a spoiled child, "Father, Yunyun’s head hurts..."

"Oh oh, let father take a look." Zhao tribe leader softly parted the hair that covered the little girl’s forehead and saw a small scrape on her forehead, the scrape had slightly reddened but was still far from bleeding.

But even so, Zhao tribe leader’s heart hurt very much.

He comforted his daughter with warm words before berating the old caretaker that had hurried over: "Nanny Wu, what are you doing? I told you to look after her closely and protect her at all times, look, her forehead is wounded!"

’This old lady should die! Please forgive me lord tribe leader." The old caretaker immediately kneeled with fear, cold sweat filling her face. But her heart was full of grievances, this child was the most crafty child she had seen in her whole life, and the most troublesome little demon. Normally, if she lost her concentration even a bit, the child would disappeared somewhere bizarrely. The child was extremely crafty, toying with this adult women until she wished she was dead. But in front of the tribe leader, the child showed an obedient and pitiful expression, her acting was so brilliant that it seemed she was innately born with it. The old caretaker could not find the least bit of evidence on this little demon!

"Father, don’t blame nanny, it is Yunyun’s fault for carelessly running around." The little girl said in a soft voice.

Adding in a sentence inwardly: ’This old woman is too annoying, always following me the whole day. I had to self-harm myself to enter this study room, was it easy for me huh!’

Zhao tribe leader heaved a sigh and stroked the little girl’s soft dark hair with a gratified expression: "Daughter, you are as kind-hearted as your mother."

The old caretaker however roared inwardly: ’Tribe leader, you have been deceived, your daughter is absolutely a demon...’

But she could only shout in her mind because she knew, very few people apart from her would be willing to believe this fact. She naturally did not dare to tell it, if she said it, who knew how this girl would tease and abuse her later on.

"Useless thing, if it were not for Yunyun asking for leniency... hmph, leave." Zhao tribe leader waved his hand towards the old caretaker to order her to leave before looking at his daughter with a gentle expression, "Little darling, why did you come here to play?"

"Father, Yunyun was worried about you, I heard others say those elders were arguing with father these days and that you were upset and locked yourself in the study." The little girl looked concernedly at Zhao tribe leader with her large gleaming black eyes.

But in truth, she was shouting in her mind: ’Rubbish, if I did not come, my life would be in danger. Convenient dad you are too indecisive, with the situation as it is now, you are still not immediately escaping? What on earth are you dilly-dallying for?!’

Zhao tribe leader felt a twinge in his nose, his eyes reddened, almost letting out tears: "Good girl, you finally know to care for your father, father’s love for you all this time was not in vain. Don’t worry, father’s health is quite good and my mood is much better now after I saw you."

’Convenient dad, it is a matter of life and death now and you are still so optimistic, so intolerable! For my future happy life, I need to show off a bit regardless of consequences!’

The girl roared in her mind and said with a ’couldn’t care less’ expression while waving her small delicate hands: "Father, Yunyun thinks those people who quarreled with you are idiots. Our Zheng tribe is like a sheep, Dong Fang tribe is a wolf while the tiger from Yu Tian is coming over. Wolf can’t beat tiger, so it wants to find the sheep to help, but whichever side the sheep helps, the tiger or the wolf won’t let it go in the end."

The little girl’s words shocked Zhao tribe leader’s mind. The person on the spot is baffled, while the onlooker sees clearly; sometimes the person involved needs to be enlightened by such words from the onlookers.

’That’s right, whether we side with Dong Fang tribe or Hei tribe, it will be like taking favors from a tiger. But can our Zhao tribe stay out of this?’

’No, the blizzard disaster every ten years has already decided there is no utopia in northern plains. The struggle for the Imperial Court is very significant, as long as one can enter Imperial Court blessed land, they can receive astonishing benefits. But which side should Zhao tribe take?’

The little girl had been observing the tribe leader’s expression all this while and when she felt the time was right, she added: "Father, I heard Ma[1] tribe is very strong and also treats its people well. Sheep and horse are both vegetarians but tiger and wolf are carnivorous, it will be better for us to ally with Ma tribe!"

Zhao tribe leader’s body shuddered.

’Right, why not?’

Ma tribe was different from Hei tribe and Dong Fang tribe, the latter two had Gu Immortal ancestors and the support of blessed lands. They had long lasting history and were super tribes with deep foundations.

Ma tribe was also part of the Huang Jin family, but they did not have a Gu Immortal’s support and was advancing towards the level of a super tribe currently. Ma tribe leader and its young tribe leader were outstanding heroes, they would definitely welcome Zhao tribe. Except that to go to Tian Chuan, it would be a long journey...

’Convenient dad, why on earth are you still hesitating? Decide quickly!’ The little girl who had been observing her father’s expression changing frequently, felt very anxious inwardly.

But Zhao tribe leader was thinking of the long distance they had to travel to Tian Chuan to side with Ma tribe. This distance was filled with danger which caused him to hesitate.

Helplessly, the little girl could only add on: "Father, we should leave right away. This is the best time to leave, tiger and wolf are confronting each other, they don’t have any spare strength to care about us."

Zhao tribe leader’s heart trembled.

"Right, why am I still hesitating? If I hesitate any longer, even the best chance to escape will be lost! Whether it is Hei tribe or Dong Fang tribe, they are both not kind. If my tribe wants to get some profits in the battle for the Imperial Court, laying a bet on them is not a good thing!"

"Good girl, you are extremely correct. Our Zhao tribe cannot meddle in such a huge battle, also cannot throw ourselves in this whirlpool. Right, we shall leave!" Zhao tribe leader made the decision.

The little girl leaning on his chest was almost sobbing tears of joy at this moment, as she sighed inwardly: ’Old man, you finally opened your eyes. Ah, it was not in vain that I took so much trouble to run over here to persuade you...’

"But Yunyun, did you think up all these things? Did someone tell you to say so? Who was it, tell father." Zhao tribe leader finally sensed something amiss and gazed at his daughter.

The little girl’s heart thumped, she promptly blinked her large eyes and showed an innocent expression: "No one taught me. Father, this was all thought by Yunyun. Father works so hard every day, Yunyun does not want father to be so exhausted, so Yunyun wanted to help father."

She then carefully said with a pitiful expression: "Father, was Yunyun wrong?"

Zhao tribe leader’s eyes flashed with a pleasantly surprised look. He did not think this little angel before him would deceive him.

How old was this child?

And he had watched her grow up!

Since she was so intelligent at such a young age, her cultivation talent might also be extraordinary.

Seeing his daughter afraid of being scolded, an affectionate feeling rose in Zhao tribe leader’s heart.

He stroked the little girl’s hair: "Yunyun, thankfully I have you. Father is really happy to have such a good daughter!"

’Sigh, it has to be like this, since I’ve transmigrated here already. In life, friends can be chosen, but parents are predestined. Seeing how you have treated me well, I will naturally return the favor...’

The little girl said so inwardly, but on the surface, she hugged Zhao tribe leader’s neck and kissed this convenient dad’s cheek: "Father, daughter likes you the most."

"Hahaha, good girl, you are really father’s darling." Zhao tribe leader laughed loudly.

[1] Also read as horse in chinese.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Zhao tribe tore down their camp and left?" Hei Lou Lan glanced at the information report before casually throwing it on the table.

Zhao tribe might be a large scale tribe but it did not have elite troops and not even a decent Gu Master expert. Although Zhao tribe leader was at rank five initial stage, he was challenged and defeated by Dong Po Kong with his rank four peak stage cultivation three years ago. Thus, he did not have high prestige and also did not make too big of a contribution in his long years of being in power.

If Zhao tribe had sided with Dong Fang tribe, he might have given them some attention; after all, even a weak rank five Gu Master could not be underestimated.

However, Zhao tribe had fled in a sorry figure which caused Hei Lou Lan to be filled with contempt towards them.

Northern plains men admired the brave and looked down upon such cowardly conducts of escaping before even fighting.

"Congratulations to alliance leader, we have not even truly attacked and yet we managed to scare off a large scale tribe of the other side."

"Dong Fang Yu Liang should be bursting with rage, he had personally invited Zhao tribe but the other directly ran away, hahaha."

"In my opinion, Zhao tribe might be a large scale tribe, but they are nothing outstanding, they were actually such cowards. Hmph..."

The Gu Masters in the main tent commented one after another, not concerned about Zhao tribe’s stance.

Fang Yuan who was sitting by the side swept his eyes through the information report on the table.

Zhao Lian Yun.

He remembered this name. A mysterious woman who would become one of Ma Hong Yun’s wives, and also a wisdom path Gu Immortal. Now, however, she was only a little girl.

"Looks like the famous persuasion of tiger, wolf and sheep has already utilized..."

Fang Yuan sneered inwardly.

In his past life, after Zhao Lian Yun became wisdom path Gu Immortal, someone made a biography on her.

This cultural tradition could be traced back to <>. This first classic of Gu was polished by many Gu Masters spending their effort and time. For many outstanding Gu Masters and Gu Immortals, people would write and spread their biography to remember and praise them.

In the contents of the biography of Zhao Lian Yun: Zhao Lian Yun displayed extraordinary intelligence and wisdom since she was young. In the huge battle where ’Black Tyrant Hei Lou Lan’ fought for the ownership of the Imperial court, Zhao tribe was sandwiched between Dong Fang tribe and Hei tribe.

When Zhao tribe leader was hesitating, Zhao Lian Yun used the comparison between tiger, wolf and sheep to persuade her father and made him decide to travel far away to side with Ma tribe. In the end, this allowed Zhao tribe to not only be protected, but also received extremely high importance and cordial welcome.

His five hundred years of memories of his past life was all in disorder, but this information was still fresh in Fang Yuan’s memories.

Simply because in the battle of five regions, Ma Hong Yun, Sheng Ling Er and Zhao Lian Yun would not only become Gu Immortals but also become the symbols and cornerstones of Northern Plains in resisting the invasion of Heavenly Court.

In the five regions, the biographies of such people would be widely spread and reviewed.

"Hmph, people like Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun, I will send them to their deaths before they grow sooner or later. But there’s no hurry at the moment..." Fang Yuan restrained the killing intent in his heart while showing a tranquil expression on the surface.

Whether it was Ma Hong Yun or Zhao Lian Yun, these people who rode the tides of the five regions battle, right now they were still a long distance away from becoming Gu Immortals. Fang Yuan had plenty of time to deal with them.

But Ma Hong Yun, Fang Yuan had to keep him around to deal with the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. As for Zhao Lian Yun, although he wanted to kill her, he was hindered by his identity and the situation.

After all, Fang Yuan was currently playing the role of Chang Shan Yin. The great Chang Shan Yin, how could he attach such importance to a girl that was only a few years old, to the point of wanting to kill her?

"Moreover, the matter of importance right now is to handle Dong Fang tribe!" Fang Yuan collected his thoughts and concentrated on the discussions again.

After having ridiculed Zhao tribe for a while, everyone put their attention on their opponent this time.

Dong Fang tribe was the same as Hei tribe, a super tribe with deep foundations and was preeminently a huge force in Cao Fu region.

Dong Fang Yu Liang was this generation’s tribe leader for Dong Fang tribe, young and promising. Relying on his wisdom path cultivation, he not only handled all the tribe affairs cleanly, the tribe was even showing the trend of becoming more prosperous.

Although Hei tribe’s military strength was superior, their opponent was a wisdom path Gu Master who was an expert in planning and deductions, such strength could absolutely not be underestimated!

"If we talk of the greatest threat in this battle, it definitely is Dong Fang Yu Liang!"

"Right, this kid is young but has great experience and knowledge, accomplished in the four arts as well as astronomy and geology. He lost his parents at eleven, and he had to not only maintain his livelihood but also care for his then six year old little sister Dong Fang Qing Yu. His parents had left him an enormous inheritance, but this kid knew clearly about the nature of men and that he could not protect the inheritance, so he gave these family assets to an authoritative elder, leaving only a small portion for himself."

"He performed extremely well during his time at the academy. After graduating, he became that elder’s trusted aide. Afterwards, he made many contributions which got him the appreciation and recommendation from the elder, unexpectedly obtaining pointers from their Gu Immortal ancestor, finally obtaining his current status and power."

Everyone knew about Dong Fang Yu Liang in detail, each of them said a few words about his origins.

Fang Yuan carefully listened.

He had not heard of these in-depth things in his past life. Now that he was experiencing this, he immediately realized this Dong Fang Yu Liang was not simple and needed to be given importance.

"History is vast and profound, great waves sweep away the sand, who knows how many heroes it will sweep away."

At the same time as everyone was discussing, their focal point — Dong Fang Yu Liang was also planning for this extremely important battle, in the study room.

Dong dong dong.

Three soft knocking sounds were heard.

"You can come in, sister." Dong Fang Yu Liang knew who was it without even raising his head.

The door was pushed open and a gentle, graceful and extremely beautiful girl wearing a light yellow dress came in with a bright appearance.

She had soft and glossy skin with eyes that were clear and transparent, her soft voice was full of concern: "Big brother, the jade apricot blossom we got from central continent should have blossomed. Big brother, accompany me to go look at them."

Dong Fang Yu Liang smiled, he knew he had worried his little sister by sitting in the study for a day and a night, and she was using this excuse to let him loosen up.

"Alright, let’s go, Qing Yu."

The brother and sister walked out of the study together and arrived at the courtyard.

Right now, light rain was falling down and dark clouds covered the sky.

Far away, the rainy curtain and the horizon had merged into one forming a gloomy green color. Coming closer, from the courtyard walls, one could see countless banners and the densely packed tents of Dong Fang tribe.

People moved to and fro in the camp, it was a clamorous scene as they were preparing for the coming battle.

In the small courtyard, there were only the Dong Fang siblings.

The outside clamorous sounds were separated by the rainy curtain, making the small courtyard appear serene and quiet.

Especially that jade apricot blossom with its delicate and exquisite petals which appeared moist and glossy from the rain, and its soft yellow color, gave a comforting feeling to the siblings.

"Big brother, I heard Zhao tribe has moved?" After a while of silence, Dong Fang Qing Yu cautiously asked.

"Don’t worry, little sister, big brother had already anticipated this." Dong Fang Yu Liang smiled and softly held his little sister’s hand.

Dong Fang Qing Yu slightly raised her head and looked at her big brother standing in this light rain with his white clothing, jade-like face, deep eyes along with his strategizing aura, carrying gracefulness and calmness.

Dong Fang Yu Liang continued: "The reason I invited Zhao tribe was to gather all the strength I could. But them leaving is also of no great matter. With my current force, we can still win against Hei tribe army."

Dong Fang Qing Yu’s worries disappeared by over half: "Nothing can escape big brother’s deductions. But the opponent this time is not a small character. Not only is there Hei Lou Lan, I heard the previous hero of northern plains, Wolf King Chang Shan Yin, has also sided with him. Big brother, you need to be careful."

"Hehehe, little sister, do you still not believe your big brother? But..." Dong Fang Yu Liang softly comforted his little sister, a radiant light flashing in the depths of his pupils, "We first met Hei Lou Lan when we went to adventure, this person harbored unkind thoughts towards you and was taught a good lesson by me. But now, it seems this person has still not given up. This time, big brother will teach him a lesson that he will never forget in all his life. As for Chang Shan Yin, big brother has a plan to deal with him. All these are within my plans, you just need to recuperate at ease. Your body has been weak since young, don’t worry too much. If you become ill, it will only distract me."

Dong Fang Qing Yu lightly nodded with her mind completely relieved.

Since young, it was big brother who cared for her, worried for her and looked out for her.

She was like a young, delicate flower that was sheltered by this big tree, her big brother.

All these years, she and her brother had gone through all kinds of difficulties together, this time too would be the same.

’Because since young till now, big brother has always been calm and collected like this. It is only that... if I didn’t have this illness, if I had the aptitude to cultivate, it would have been much better.’ Dong Fang Qing Yu heaved a deep sigh in her heart.

The siblings quietly stood there, looking at the jade apricot blossom.

"Little sister, standing in the rain for too long is not good for health, you should go back to rest." After a while, Dong Fang Yu Liang spoke.

"Mm, big brother don’t work too much." Dong Fang Qing Yu answered with her lovable voice.

Looking at his little sister leaving and disappearing at the corner, Dong Fang Yu Liang could finally not hide his expression, his brows furrowed and revealed a worried expression.

This battle was absolutely not as easy as he made it out to be.

"Hei Lou Lan himself is not an easy opponent, now there is Chang Shan Yin as well. Five hundred thousand wolves, really worthy of being an enslavement path master, just him alone can change the situation, causing this slightly superior Hei tribe to jump far ahead of my tribe."

"For this coming battle, our side must first deal with these five hundred thousand wolves. Otherwise, the hopes for victory will be extremely uncertain."

"I cannot lose! It was not easy for me to make Gu Immortal Old Ancestor agree; if I can complete this secret mission, the old ancestor will personally solve the source of the illness in my little sister. For my little sister, I must become the master of Imperial Court and enter Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!"

"Before this, anyone who dares to block my path must die! So, Wolf King Chang Shan Yin, why don’t you die in this rain before the battle?"

Dong Fang Yu Liang looked at the dense dark clouds in the sky, his handsome face showing a very cold expression.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The weights-like strength of ten jun Gu was quietly hovering above Fang Yuan’s head.

Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged with his eyes closed, his body shrouded by the light from strength of ten jun Gu.

A long time passed.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes, the light slowly dispersed and the strength of ten jun Gu only was half of its original size.

"I can still use it twice." Fang Yuan silently evaluated.

Strength of ten jun Gu was an expendable Gu; after completely using this one, Fang Yuan would possess seventy jun of strength. This strength could only be said to be just passable even among rank four initial stage strength path Gu Masters.

All-out effort Gu was suppressed to rank two and if it was not resolved, there would be no possibility for a qualitative change in Fang Yuan’s strength path cultivation. That is to say, his strength path battle strength was not useful in this short period of time.

He checked his first aperture and second aperture again.

The vital Gu of the first aperture was Spring Autumn Cicada which was still in a concealed state and was recuperating.

The ninety percent purple crystal primeval sea was gleaming with light, dying the rank five peak stage crystal walls with purple color.

Above the sea was wolf smoke Gu which looked a lump of dark clouds in the shape of a wolf.

The completely repaired battle bone wheel was afloat on the surface along with the spotless white willow leaf-like snow wash Gu.

Rank five hints and clues Gu was diving like a cuttlefish, playing occasionally with the wolf swallow Gu.

At the bottom was large numbers of wolf enslavement Gu, many strength of ten jun Gu and some wolf soul Gu.

At the same, the most important Gu to Fang Yuan currently - stargate Gu, moving perspective cup Gu, east window Gu, soul burial Gu and instant success Gu - were lurking around.

As for wolf howl Gu, wolf care Gu, eagle rise Gu, wolf sprint Gu and breath concealment Gu, they were residing in different places on his body.

As the time Fang Yuan spent in northern plains increased, his body was also gradually adapting to the northern plains’ environment. His first aperture’s cultivation had already recovered to rank five middle stage but Fang Yuan had all along been using breath concealment Gu to suppress his aura to rank four peak stage.

It was a different scene in the second aperture.

The crystal membrane of the second aperture shone brightly.

Ninety percent true gold primeval sea rippled and gleamed.

After these days of cultivating, Fang Yuan’s second aperture had grown to rank four peak stage from rank three peak stage.

At the center of the aperture was the rank three all-out effort Gu.

Besides this, there were rank three strength qi Gu which could condense beast phantoms into solid form, rank four bitter strength Gu which could increase strength the more one got injured.

Rank four charging crash Gu, rank three tusita flower, primeval elder Gu, rank four expend strength Gu and the healing Gu rank three self-reliance Gu.

As for vajra stare Gu, turn gold Gu, pitch black Gu, blood skull Gu, bone flesh unity Gu, yin yang rotation Gu and others, they could not be used at the moment and were thus left behind in Hu Immortal blessed land.

Because Fang Yuan appeared in northern plains first from Lang Ya blessed land, his second aperture was approved by northern plains and its rank four peak stage cultivation did not receive any suppression.

Second aperture’s cultivation could increase so rapidly because of those relic Gu Fang Yuan bought before.

But due to the limited immortal essence stones he had, he was unable to buy purple crystal relic Gu, so now the second aperture’s cultivation would depend on Fang Yuan’s own effort.

"Rank four to rank five is a process of qualitative change, there is a huge gap between them. I might as well raise my second aperture’s cultivation to rank five initial stage tonight!" Seeing there was enough time, Fang Yuan continued to sit cross-legged, deciding to breakthrough to rank five realm.

Second aperture’s cultivation was already at rank four peak stage and already had sufficient foundation, its aptitude could not be higher than the first aperture but with Lang Ya land spirit personally refining it, its aptitude also reached ninety percent.

For normal Gu Masters who fulfilled these two conditions, they had enough capital to breakthrough to rank five realm.

Normally, they would gain enough experience after some failures and then successfully advance.

But experience had always been a strong point of Fang Yuan and this obstacle did not exist for him.

More importantly, first aperture and second aperture’s primeval essence could be mutually used!

There were no two leaves that were completely the same in this world; similarly primeval essence was unique to each Gu Master. If Gu Masters transferred primeval essence to each other without the use of Gu like bone flesh unity Gu, the foreign primeval essence would mix together and the aperture would explode eventually.

However, whether it was the first or second aperture, they both belonged to Fang Yuan; their essence was the same so the primeval essence could be mutually transferred.

"Rise."

Fang Yuan silently willed and the purple crystal primeval essence in his first aperture charged towards the second aperture in the center of his chest.

A rank five peak stage primeval essence charging at rank four crystal membrane was bound to cause an intense reaction.

At the crack of dawn, Fang Yuan had successfully broken through to rank five initial stage.

The breakthrough to rank five this time was the easiest one in all the attempts he had ever tried.

"But because I used first aperture’s primeval essence, the second aperture has also received the region’s suppression now." Fang Yuan could perceive that the second aperture right now had light purple primeval essence but activating it would only give the effect of the previous true gold primeval essence.

"In just over half a month, the suppression on the second aperture will fade while the first aperture will completely blend into northern plains’ environment in three months and will no longer receive suppression! It will also be the time when the struggle for the Imperial Court reaches the climax...."

Fang Yuan let out a breath of turbid air and stood up to stretch his body.

A night of cultivation without rest gave him a slight feeling of tiredness.

He pushed open the secret room’s door. The two rank three Gu Masters guarding in front of the door immediately greeted him.

One of the Gu Masters gave good news to Fang Yuan: "Lord Wolf King, our Gu Masters were fortunate enough to capture a shark fin wolf in the wild. We have locked it within a cage, tribe leader has told me to inform lord, when you finish your cultivation, to go to the supply camp to subdue it.

This news was an unexpected surprise to Fang Yuan.

Shark fin wolf was a mutated beast with the battle strength of a rank four Gu Master. Although Fang Yuan had purchased a batch of mutated wolves in treasure yellow heaven, he did not bring them out due to the lack of a clear explanation.

If there was a shark fin wolf by his side guarding him, Fang Yuan would no doubt be much safer while battling.

After a while, Fang Yuan entered the supply camp.

"Tu Bo greets Lord Wolf King." A rank three Gu Master hurried over to welcome Fang Yuan.

He was short and fat, his chubby face shining with a glossy light. He spoke with a flattering voice: "Lord Wolf King, I have already been waiting for a long time to receive you."

At Tu Bo’s lead, Fang Yuan and others soon saw that shark fin wolf in a wooden cage.

The shark fin wolf was as huge as an elephant and was lying in the cage at this moment. Its whole body was covered with firm carapace like a crocodile’s. On its back, a row of shark fins extended from its head to tail.

The light of dawn shone on its body. This shark fin wolf was closing its eyes, its consciousness lost under the effect of slumber Gu.

"Congratulations to lord. Shark fin wolf is the mutated wolf with the strongest defense. With this wolf’s protection, lord will be like a tiger that has grown wings."

"What’s rarer is that shark fin wolf can not only fight on land, but has even more battle strength underwater!"

The two rank three Gu Master guards looked at this divine steed shark fin wolf and commented while congratulating Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled and looked at this shark fin wolf, his eyes slightly narrowed as he absent-mindedly asked: "How many people were sacrificed to capture this mutated wolf?"

Tu Bo knew Fang Yuan was asking him, immediately replying: "We had to sacrifice four rank three Gu Masters and at least over two hundred rank two Gu Masters. If not for Wang tribe leader and Fang tribe leader’s timely reinforcement, this shark fin wolf would have escaped."

Fang Yuan nodded, his eyes squinting to a slit: "This shark fin wolf is riddled with injuries but it looks like it had old injuries?"

"Yes. If not for its old injuries, the investigative Gu Master might not have been able to escape alive and hurry back to report. I can see that Lord Wolf King has obtained the blessing of Longevity Heaven, sending you an injured shark fin wolf before the great battle." Tu Bo flattered.

"Fortunate..." Fang Yuan muttered, a feeling of uneasiness becoming ever stronger in his heart.

He was not clear on how this feeling arose, but it gave him an indescribable sense of danger.

He asked several questions but did not find anything wrong.

Shark fin wolf was a mutated beast, having battle strength of a rank four Gu Master. Because it had old injuries, it could be held back and captured alive.

Everything was reasonable.

The only unreasonable thing was the uneasy feeling in Fang Yuan’s heart.

But Fang Yuan placed utmost importance on this instinct.

He did not have this feeling when he had just crossed over in his previous life. It was an intuition that was born from the accumulation of his plentiful experience after enduring hundreds of years of trials and countless deadly situations.

People became astute as they aged. No matter how stupid someone was, after experiencing many losses and trials, and seeing many things, they would naturally gain some wisdom.

In truth, not only humans, even ordinary beasts would have a type of intuition and sensitivity towards danger.

Under the surrounding Gu Masters’ anticipating looks, Fang Yuan took out a rank four wolf enslavement Gu.

"Here take it, subdue this mutated wolf." What was unexpected was Fang Yuan did not personally make a move, instead gave the wolf enslavement Gu to Tu Bo.

"Lord wants me to use it?" Tu Bo was astonished, "But I am only at rank three..."

"Speak less nonsense and use it quickly." Fang Yuan impatiently shouted, forcibly handing the wolf enslavement Gu to Tu Bo.

Tu Bo was helpless, he did not know what eccentric temperament a lord like Wolf King had, but due to Fang Yuan’s prestige, he could only start pouring primeval essence into the wolf enslavement Gu.

He poured his primeval essence for a long time and only when he was starting to sweat profusely from the exhaustion, did the rank four wolf enslavement Gu slowly activate.

Wolf enslavement Gu turned into a mystical light and descended on the shark fin wolf’s body while flickering.

"Sigh..." A regretful sigh of a female suddenly resounded in everyone’s ears.

At that instant, the warning sign in Fang Yuan’s heart suddenly soared and he immediately retreated without thinking!

A trembling feeling instantly engulfed the souls of everyone present.

Almost at the same moment, Tu Bo suddenly opened his mouth and let out a miserable cry before dying on the spot!

The two rank three Gu Master guards were overwhelmed with shock, they simply did not know how Tu Bo lost his life. Subconsciously, they followed Fang Yuan and quickly flew back.

But soon, one of them suddenly shuddered, losing all life while still in mid-air.

"Soul explosion..." A light flashed past Fang Yuan’s mind as he blurted out.

"Lord Wolf King sure enough has extraordinary insights." A woman’s soft sound echoed beside his ear followed by surging shadows.

The shadows were like swords, overlapping over one another and suddenly opened up like a peacock fanning its feathers before binding Fang Yuan’s body incisively.

Rank four – multiple sword shadow Gu!

Cling Clang!

Immediately, concentrated sounds echoed, blending into one.

Multiple sword shadows struck Fang Yuan’s body, producing dazzling sparks like gold colliding with iron.

Fang Yuan’s skin turned dark-green and if one carefully observed it, they would see patterns over his body like that on a turtle shell.

Rank five – turtle jade wolf skin Gu!

"Female scoundrel!" The remaining rank three Gu Master roared when he saw Fang Yuan being attacked, and changed his direction to help out.

The female Gu Master who was mounting a sneak attack on Fang Yuan snorted, ignoring him as she made the multiple sword shadows go more berserk.

At the same time, she spat out a thin snake.

The snake was like a black thread that passed by the sword shadows and directly moved towards Fang Yuan’s ear.

Fang Yuan was expressionless, his gaze as cold as an icy mountain. He suddenly moved his right hand and grabbed the rank three Gu Master guard who came to assist him.

"Lord Wolf King!" The rank three Gu Master was startled, he had come to protect Fang Yuan and had never imagined Fang Yuan would actually grab him.

While he was astonished and dazed, Fang Yuan pulled him towards his right side, right in between Fang Yuan and shark fin wolf.

Almost at the same time, the rank three Gu Master gave a short pained groan, his whole body twitched, his eyes rolled and he foamed from his mouth!

The thread-like snake took this chance to slitter into Fang Yuan’s ear.

Fang Yuan gave a stuffed snort, he then let go of the rank three Gu Master and started to pound the sword shadows.

The female Gu Master could perceive the enormous strength contained within these punches. She softly chuckled and did not receive the punches forcibly, instead called back the multiple sword shadow Gu, her body then turned into a black shadow as she swiftly retreated twenty steps away.

The black shadow landed on the shadow of a tent and turned back into a woman.

This woman looked exquisite, she wore black clothing and her face was covered with a black gauze, only revealing a pair of narrow red phoenix eyes.

From top to bottom, her body let out a gloomy and solitary aura, adding a demonic charm to her beauty; one look at her and it would be hard to forget.

"Junior Shadowless Sword Bian Si Xuan greets Lord Wolf King." The woman slightly bowed towards Fang Yuan. She was in the enemy camp with enemies surrounding her, but she looked calm and at ease.

Fang Yuan snorted and questioned: "What Gu did you assault me with?"

Bian Si Xuan smiled: "When junior went on an expedition once, in a certain ruins, I unexpectedly discovered a strange Gu worm. When activated, it would pierce into the ear and enter the brain. As long as the person thinks faster for even a bit, this Gu will rapidly expand till the brain bursts. Thus junior has named it brain explosion Gu."

Fang Yuan’s expression sank.

Bian Si Xuan bowed once more, her tone full of sincere admiration: "Senior could actually perceive Lord Dong Fang’s meticulously planned fatal trap and even avoid most of the force of soul explosion, junior is truly in admiration. Taking senior’s life will be junior’s greatest honor, farewell."

Immediately afterwards, she turned into a black shadow and ran through the shadows of the buildings.

"She’s shadow sword expert!"

"Damn it, block her."

Many Gu Masters who had hurried because of the noise, shouted furiously and attacked at the shadows, but Bian Si Xuan’s black shadow had already disappeared.

She left, or was she still here? For a moment, no one dared to be certain.

"We came late, we ask for Lord Wolf King’s forgiveness!"

"Lord Wolf King, are you alright?"

The worried crowd quickly surrounded Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s body did not suffer heavy injuries but his skin and hair were slashed by the sword shadows, making him look quite miserable.

"What could happen to me? A group of incompetent trash, no one realized that the other party had infiltrated the camp! All of you get lost!" Fang Yuan shouted in anger, but he was secretly joyful.

He had not thought that in this assasination attempt, a clue to one of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritances would become his!

Brain explosion Gu?

Did you really think I could not have blocked it?

Hmph, inexperienced junior...

In Fang Yuan’s past life’s memories, this shadow sword expert Bian Si Xuan was an important character.

She was one of Ma Hong Yun’s wives and would become rank six Gu Immortal in the future. It was because of her ’brain explosion Gu’, that Ma Hong Yun could obtain one of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritances.

It was only that Ma Hong Yun had always avoided mentioning what this inheritance was or the concrete details of it, so Fang Yuan was also not clear.

He only knew how to properly activate this ’brain explosion Gu’.

"Ma Hong Yun always avoided talking about it, one could see how big of a harvest he had gained from this inheritance and was afraid of others coveting it if he told the truth." Fang Yuan looked extremely furious on the surface, but his heart was calmly analyzing the event.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"We did not succeed after all..." Dong Fang Yu Liang looked at the rain outside the window with his arms behind his back, sighing.

This shark fin wolf was captured from the wild intentionally, he paid a hefty price.

After that, he made some secret markings on the shark fin wolf, and as he was afraid of his enemy finding out, he purposely chose a rank five soul explosion Gu and planted it inside the shark fin wolf.

Finally, he sent an assassin in the demonic path who was famous in northern plains, Shadow Sword Expert, and gave the corresponding Gu needed to activate the soul explosion to her, instructing carefully.

This assassination that he planned meticulously, in order to not waste his efforts, he made several simulations, until all the flaws and loopholes were removed.

Be it the shark fin wolf’s body, the location or time it appeared, even the attitude of the Gu Master who discovered the shark fin wolf was considered by him.

But even so, he did not succeed.

At the crucial moment, Wolf King Chang Shan Yin found something amiss and ordered someone else to strike. Seeing that the chance was slipping away, Shadow Sword Expert had to activate soul explosion Gu.

The power of soul explosion was formless and colorless, it could not be seen with the naked eye, but Chang Shan Yin was able to escape at the first moment and reveal the truth.

As he was restricted by Bian Si Xuan’s attacks, he only managed to get to the furthest range of the soul explosion, but in the moment of crisis, he was extremely calm, using the reinforcements as a shield and blocked most of the soul explosion’s strength.

"His reputation matches his abilities, as expected of the Wolf King who shook northern plains." Dong Fang Yu Liang heard Bian Si Xuan’s report and raised his evaluation of Fang Yuan.

With a mutated beast before him, he managed to control the temptation. With his vigilant nature, he made the correct judgement in the face of danger, and immediately spotted the soul explosion’s range, the callousness of using his own alliance mate as a shield, as well as the calmness to not chase after the perpetrator after being assassinated.

"Wolf King..." Dong Fang Yu Liang muttered, his heart becoming heavier.

"Dong Fang alliance leader does not need to worry. Although Chang Shan Yin used a meat shield at the last moment, he was still obstructed by me and was within range of the soul explosion. Furthermore, he was afflicted by my brain explosion Gu, even if this Gu didn’t take his life, his battle strength would be greatly affected. We can say that Wolf King is basically crippled now."

At a corner of the study room, Bian Si Xuan wore black clothes as she stood among the shadow, saying in a cold voice.

"Brain explosion Gu?" Dong Fang Yu Liang was stunned, this was the first time he had heard of this Gu.

Bian Si Xuan laughed lightly, explaining to him the origin of this Gu.

"So that’s it..." Dong Fang Yu Liang heard this and his eyes shone, he sighed as he thanked Bian Si Xuan: "It was all thanks to Shadow Sword Expert’s help this time, but you lost a great trump card in the progress."

Bian Si Xuan did not speak.

Actually, her heart was bleeding too.

Ever since she had tested the effects of brain explosion Gu, she had kept it as one of her trump cards. Many of her assassinations succeeded because of it.

But when she assassinated Chang Shan Yin, the situation was urgent and she could not kill Chang Shan Yin on the spot, thus she could not retrieve it. When the enemy forces came, she had to retreat to protect herself.

"This is the reward that you were promised earlier." Dong Fang Yu Liang took out a Gu worm from his aperture.

This Gu’s body was black, it had a horn and square shell. It was fist-sized but gave people a heavy feeling.

This was the rank four overlapping shadow Gu.

Bian Si Xuan’s gaze landed on overlapping shadow Gu, showing some desire and anxious emotion. Although she had multiple sword shadow Gu, the attacks were dispersed and she would face a tough battle when fighting against a defensive opponent.

If she could have overlapping shadow Gu, she could overlap the sword shadows together, and form a strong attack. It would be a huge boost to her battle strength.

But quickly, Bian Si Xuan retracted her gaze, not taking the overlapping shadow Gu.

In the shadows, her cold voice could be heard carrying some arrogance: "This overlapping shadow Gu will be kept by alliance leader for now, after the Wolf King dies, I will come and take it."

Saying so, she fused into the shadows, vanishing.

Dong Fang Yu Liang was slightly stunned, he kept the overlapping shadow Gu back into his aperture.

"This Shadow Sword Expert is truly a person of her word, no wonder she can gain such success among the large tribes despite being a demonic path Gu cultivator. Many righteous path Gu Masters would spend a heavy sum to hire her. It seems that she is very confident in brain explosion Gu... if this can really get rid of Wolf King, then I will have one less threat to worry about, that is the best case."

"But what if she fails? What if brain explosion Gu was successfully resolved by Chang Shan Yin? At the crucial moment, he had chosen to deal with the soul explosion Gu and instead allowed the brain explosion Gu to enter his ear, that shows he had some confidence and countermeasure for this problem..."

Dong Fang Yu Liang’s gaze dimmed: "But Wolf King was indeed affected by the soul explosion... there are more variables now, I have to make new deductions."

Thinking of this, he moved beside the book shelf and turned the incense holder, opening up a secret tunnel.

Walking in the secret tunnel, he came to a deep area.

Here, he had planted an earth bacteria king Gu.

This Gu was a type of Gu house, the space was cramped inside but it was enough for a person to cultivate. Most importantly, the earth bacteria king Gu had strong defense, it could ensure Dong Fang Yu Liang’s safety.

After he entered the Gu house, Dong Fang Yu Liang closed the exit. The entire earth bacteria king Gu curled into a ball and went further down by a few meters before stopping.

The earth bacteria king Gu’s internal walls were soft and thick, like a carpet.

Dong Fang Yu Liang sat down and closed his eyes.

His mind entered his aperture, activating his rank five primeval essence and injected it into his star thought Gu.

He started to think —

"If Wolf King manages to deal with brain explosion, how do I deal with him?"

The moment this question emerged in his mind, under the effect of star thought Gu, it formed into a thought.

Ordinary thoughts were formless and without matter, it could exist in the brain.

But this thought gave off a blue starlight, not only could it be seen with the naked eye, it could also leave his brain and head, flying above Dong Fang Yu Liang.

Dong Fang Yu Liang quickly thought: "To deal with an enslavement path Gu Master, there are three ways."

"The first is the supreme method, pitting enslavement path master against enslavement path master." The second thought shining with starlight flew out of Dong Fang Yu Liang's brain, flying together with the first star thought.

"The second is the domination method, using the beheading leader tactic, charging forward and taking his life from within the army of defense." The third star thought spun around the first star thought as well.

"This third is the peculiar method, assassinating Chang Shan Yin, using bribes or kinship against him." The fourth star thought flew out as well, coiling together with the previous thoughts and collided at times. But no matter how they clashed, the four thoughts remained as four, there were no changes.

Soon after, Dong Fang Yu Liang recalled: Our side's military force, the enemy's military force, both side's rations, Chang Shan Yin's personality and motive, all of our expert Gu Masters' information, all of the enemy's expert Gu Masters' information, the recent weather prediction and changes, the terrain of the battlefield, how many mounds, lakes, how many beast groups nearby, whether any forces will intervene...

Poof.

In an instant, thousands of star thoughts formed at once, gushing out of his brain towards Dong Fang Yu Liang's head.

At once, starlight was shining brightly!

Dong Fang Yu Liang's expression paled as his primeval sea level fell drastically.

He manipulated these star thoughts proficiently.

Orbs of star thoughts, big and small, the biggest were toe-sized while the smallest were thumb-sized. Within this crowded space, these star thoughts collided with each other.

Some star thoughts collided and formed into three or four, even five or six new star thoughts.

Some fused instead, while others split themselves into smaller orbs.

Hundreds and thousands of thoughts filled the air, they were densely packed, circulating around Dong Fang Yu Liang.

The primeval sea level continued to fall, Dong Fang Yu Liang’s mind was completely focused, manipulating these star thoughts to fuse and collide, or split into new ones.

Due to his hard work, or through the help of his other wisdom path Gu worms, the star thoughts continued to decrease in number.

After four hours, from the hundreds and thousands of star thoughts, only eight were left.

But these eight star thoughts were fist-sized, shining with starlight as they contained a complicated thought.

As these star thoughts entered Dong Fang Yu Liang’s brain, his eyes shone with the light of wisdom.

He had successfully deduced several methods to deal with Wolf King. These methods were organized and clear, with proper steps to be taken.

If it was a normal person, they would have to think for a month or two to clear out these thoughts, in fact, it would be difficult to get the solution from among these messy thoughts.

But using his wisdom path method, Dong Fang Yu Liang spent only four hours and got his answer.

But these answers were not the only ones.

Taking out primeval stones to recover his primeval essence, Dong Fang Yu Liang rested for a while before starting to analyze the same question again.

This time, he only spent an hour and obtained seven star thoughts.

The star thoughts entered his brain, and he got some answers after reading them. These answers were very similar to the ones before, but there were minute details that were different.

Dong Fang Yu Liang breathed a sigh of relief, finally stopping.

After a while, he relied on his primeval stones to recover his primeval essence back to its peak condition.

But in the depths of his soul, there was a strong sense of fatigue circulating around him, he could not get rid of it.

The deductions of wisdom path not only expended primeval essence when activating Gu worms, it also expended the soul’s energy. The more deductions made, or the grander the scale of the thoughts, the longer the deduction would take, and the greater the burden on the soul.

Feeling a sense of weakness was normal, if the difficulty of the deduction was higher, the soul might get damaged, or he might even die!

Of course, as a rank five wisdom path Gu Master, Dong Fang Yu Liang who had received guidance from a Gu Immortal naturally had a complete set of Gu worms.

Rank four, refine essence spirit Gu!

Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body became thinner immediately, as the vitality in his body was converted by the refine essence spirit Gu into resources for his soul.

The soul was nourished, and his fatigue faded quickly.

But a strong sense of hunger soon assaulted him.

Dong Fang Yu Liang rubbed his tummy, laughing bitterly in his heart: "Refine essence spirit Gu, a secretly passed down Gu in my Dong Fang tribe, it can heal the soul well but it does not treat the core of the issue. Soul path and wisdom path are closely related, if I can get the legendary guts Gu, I would be able to make deductions as I wish. Even if my soul gets damaged, I can easily heal it. What a pity that guts Gu can only be found on Dang Hun mountain..."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

After a few days of ominous rain, it finally stopped.

The dark clouds dispersed in the sky, as pillars of light shone through the clouds, landing on the wet grassland.

The sky was wide and huge, a truly grand sight.

Hei alliance army formed into a current as they flowed towards Cao Fu.

Looking ahead, there were people all around; looking back, the dark troops looked like a tail, extending beyond where one could see, but this was only the middle troops, other than this, there were the vanguards, support troops, left and right defense troops, this displayed Hei alliance’s grand army perfectly.

A huge twin-headed rhino’s body was covered in steel armor as it moved like a small astle. With sixteen pairs of pillar-like legs, it moved forward, stepping on the grass causing a dent in it.

This was the rank four strength huge beast twin-headed steel rhino, it was being manipulated by an enslavement path Gu Master as it gave off an imposing aura. Hei tribe’s main tent was on its back, as Hei Lou Lan sat at the center of the main tent, the tent was propped up highly and their field of vision was very wide.

He was black and fat, his face was full of hair, he laid down on the tiger skin chair, raising his head to gulp some wine in one mouthful.

"Hahaha, looking at my army’s formation, there is no reason to fear that Dong Fang Yu Liang lad." He looked around, the flames of ambition burning in him, as his laughter revealed a brutal and violent aura.

"Lord alliance leader is right!"

"I’m afraid that Dong Fang lad is already peeing his pants in fear already?"

"Haha, with all the heroes present here, our army can definitely take down the opponent swiftly in this battle."

In the main tent, the higher-ups present were mostly rank four experts, there were few rank three peak stage Gu Masters, they were laughing and optimistic, agreeing with Hei Lou Lan’s words.

Only one person was seated right beside the main seat, he was expressionlessly resting his eyes, like an outsider, paying no heed to the conversations.

But this did not make anyone unhappy, in fact, this felt natural to them.

Hei Lou Lan filled his wine cup as he toasted this person: "Brother Shan Yin, let’s have a drink!"

Fang Yuan opened his eyes, raising his cup as he toasted Hei Lou Lan, drinking the delicious wine together.

"Brother Shan Yin, still thinking about that assassination? Hahahaha, that Shadow Sword Expert is indeed a beauty, I have sent my men to deal with her already. That Dong Fang lad is shameless, he dared to carry out an assassination, but we cannot show any weakness! After we win this battle and capture that woman, she will be yours to deal with!" Hei Lou Lan urged with his rough voice.

Everyone laughed.

"With Lord Wolf King’s assistance, any defense line can be broken!" A Gu Master immediately bootlicked.

"Extremely true, I heard that Shadow Sword Expert is beauty as a flower, she would definitely be fun in bed!" A male Gu Master winked, showing an expression that all men can understand.

"What assassination can take our Lord Wolf King’s life? Hmph, it is but that Dong Fang lad’s wishful thinking, no matter how many assassinations they carry out, we are not afraid." The Gu Master in charge of the camp’s defenses laughed.

Fang Yuan snorted, looking at this person coldly: "How many assassinations do you want? Letting someone sneak in here and leave as they wish, aren’t you ashamed at all?"

The tent turned quiet.

Hei Lou Lan quickly soothed the atmosphere: "Sigh, don’t be angry brother Shan Yin..."

But before he finished, Fang Yuan interrupted him: "Never mind the rest, but Hei tribe leader, where are the materials and Gu worms that I wanted?"

Using the opportunity of the assassination, Fang Yuan flew into a rage and demanded some ’fright recovery fees’.

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes flashed with unhappiness for a moment, as he laughed: "I have sent them to your tent, brother."

Fang Yuan nodded in satisfaction, standing up: "In that case, I shall go and cultivate, when the battle begins, call me."

Saying so, he did not wait for Hei Lou Lan’s reply before jumping off the twin-headed rhino, leaving everyone’s vision.

"Hmph!" Hei Lou Lan snorted with his nose, slamming his wine cup on the table.

After he succeeded in making the alliance, he became the alliance leader, the authority of controlling tens of thousands of people made him feel great satisfaction, he could not tolerate Fang Yuan’s arrogant attitude.

The tent was still silent.

But quickly, an ominous voice spoke: "This Lord Wolf King... I understand now why Chang tribe could not tolerate him back then."

Everyone heard this and did not say anything, but agreement could be seen on their expressions.

Chang Shan Yin was arrogant, but any organisation had its chain of commands, any person in power would not allow a subordinate’s disregard for the system.

"Oh, it is Cunning Gentleman Sun Shi Han." Hei Lou Lan turned his gaze over and saw the person speaking, he pointed at Fang Yuan’s seat: "Come, since Chang Shan Yin left already, you shall sit here."

Sun Shi Han was overjoyed, he made bad remarks about Fang Yuan in order to please Hei Lou Lan after all.

Hei Lou Lan accepted his goodwill, after all, Fang Yuan’s seat was the closest to Hei Lou Lan, but this was the reason why not anyone could sit there.

Sun Shi Han was called Cunning Gentleman, he was a cunning and devious person, adept at using schemes and plots, but he always had a good excuse for what he did, using the banner of righteousness to abide by the rules of the game, although he was extremely shameless, no one could do anything to him.

Sun Shi Han had rank four initial stage cultivation, he knew he had no qualifications to sit on Fang Yuan’s seat.

But he had a plan, he stood up from his seat and bowed to Hei Lou Lan: "Thank you alliance leader, but there cannot be reward without hard work, for this battle, I have thought about it for seven days and seven nights, I have twenty-three ideas to offer to you."

"Oh?"

Sun Shi Han immediately said his twenty-three ideas, each sentence cut to the point, he was extremely familiar with Dong Fang alliance army, especially all the expert Gu Masters that they had, he evidently put in great efforts for this.

At once, everyone’s attention was on him.

After he finished, Hei Lou Lan clapped as he laughed: "As expected of Cunning Gentleman, that is a good plan."

Sun Shi Han laughed as he continued: "Reporting to alliance leader, just earlier, I have thought of a new plan, it is called expression weakness to the enemy. That Dong Fang Yu Liang assassinated Wolf King Chang Shan Yin, the Wolf King was affected by soul explosion Gu but did not die. Dong Fang Yu Liang would definitely plan again and make many moves against Lord Wolf King. Why don’t we make do with this, and order the Wolf King to stay put, only after we tear down Dong Fang Yu Liang’s methods in battle will we call the Wolf King to strike, to put an end to the enemy. What do you think about this, alliance leader?"

Everyone heard this and raised their brows, some were silent.

Hei Lou Lan’s gaze shone for a bit, he thought about it and said solemnly: "Sun Shi Han’s plan is not bad, we will see about it."

This answer was very vague, but Sun Shi Han showed a happy expression.

"Sit." Hei Lou Lan pointed at the seat again.

"Thank you lord for the seat, I am honored." Saying so, Sun Shi Han really kneeled on the ground and kowtowed to Hei Lou Lan.

Many of the Gu Masters present showed a look of disdain, while some old tribe leaders had an expression deep in thought.

...

"E Xuan Ming, Jiang Wan Shang, and Wei Xin pays respect to Dong Fang alliance leader."

In the study room, three enslavement path Gu Masters, two males and one female, greeted Dong Fang Yu Liang together.

Although there were no enslavement masters like Fang Yuan in Dong Fang alliance army, there were quite a number of enslavement Gu Masters from the different tribes, and among them, these three were the most outstanding.

Dong Fang Yu Liang sat as he moved his head slightly at the three, immediately getting to the point: "The reason why I called you three here today is to discuss how to deal with Wolf King Chang Shan Yin."

Wolf King Chang Shan Yin!

Hearing this, their expressions changed.

A person’s name was like the shadow of a tree.

This was an enslavement path master, having shook northern plains decades ago, now that he had returned, he challenged three mid-sized tribes in one night, not only did his strength increase, he even had the night wolf emperor. With the help of Hei tribe, he controlled half a million wolves, and could affect the entire battle single-handedly!

Such an expert, how could they be his match?

These three enslavement path Gu Masters looked at each other and saw the solemn fear they all had.

But at this point, there was no use being afraid, the three said collectively: "We will listen to Dong Fang alliance leader’s instructions."

Dong Fang Yu Liang laughed, but he changed the topic, asking them about the details of enslavement path cultivation.

"Enslavement path requires the most resources, although we have our tribe’s support, my crocodile group is only about fifty thousand in numbers. I am ashamed." E Xuan Ming said.

"I’m sure alliance leader knows my circumstances, I was not an enslavement path Gu master from the start, I started halfway when I found Blood Sea Ancestor’s small inheritance during an expedition, and obtained quite a number of the bladewing blood bats group. These years, I have been gathering the relevant enslavement path Gu worms, but my progress is slow." Jiang Wan Shan sighed.

Wei Xin sighed too: "In my opinion, the hardest part about enslavement path cultivation is the soul. Using ordinary Gu worms to strengthen and refine the soul has too low efficiency. I worked hard for twenty years, almost cultivating daily, but now I have only reached eight hundred man crabman soul."

Among the three, the oldest and strongest person was Wei Xin.

Soul path, enslavement path, and wisdom path, the three paths had a deep relationship, after Dong Fang Yu Liang heard Wei Xin’s words, he thought about his own cultivation, and he showed an understanding expression.

He slowly spoke: "Soul cultivation is very difficult indeed, ample patience is needed to accumulate your growth. Although I used the coptis rhizome Gu, and slow slicing Gu to gain a thousand man soul, it expended ten years of my precious time."

The three heard this and their expression changed when they looked at Dong Fang Yu Liang, turning into a look of admiration.

Coptis rhizome Gu and slow slicing Gu, the former could strengthen the soul, but once a Gu Master uses it, they would experience the most bitter taste in the world, eating anything would be a painful torture to them, if they used this Gu for a long time, they would be unable to eat anything, and the Gu Master would became extremely thin and weak.

Meanwhile, slow slicing Gu could refine the soul, and get rid of the impurities in the soul, but in the process, the Gu Master would feel extreme pain, like their flesh was being sliced away piece by piece.

Dong Fang Yu Liang had outstanding talent, reaching rank five at this young age, but this was also due to his hard work, achieved through an uncountable amount of tears, blood and sweat.

Dong Fang Yu Liang’s expression turned serious: "Do you know about our Dong Fang tribe’s combination killer move used by three people, called three hearts combination soul?"

Killer move — Three Hearts Combination Soul!

The three’s pupils shrunk, Dong Fang tribe’s famous triple combination killer move, who in the world would not know about it?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Red, green, and black, three colors intertwined in the air violently.

A flickering light was reflecting in Fang Yuan’s eyes, he was extremely focused as he concentrated on the half finished product in front of him, trying to stabilize the situation.

Chiiii!

Suddenly, a shrill buzzing erupted.

The sound waves vibrated in the air, forming a violent wind as it overturned the table and chairs in the room, even the flower vase fell and smashed on the ground, ink on the table fell on the ground as writing paper flew in the air.

The three colors vanished, and the half finished product exploded into a pool of blue blood traces, splattering on the surrounding walls.

"Failed again..." Fang Yuan sighed lightly.

These days, he had been refining Gu, this Gu was called nauseous crying baby Gu, used mainly to deal with three hearts combination soul.

Three hearts combination soul was a famous killer move of Dong Fang tribe, it could allow three Gu Master’s soul to fuse into one temporarily, going into a state where all three work as one, regardless of defending, attacking, or retreating.

With Fang Yuan’s experience these few days, his unclear memories started to become more vivid as well.

He vaguely remembered that Hei Lou Lan suffered greatly in this battle against Dong Fang Yu Liang, only winning by a margin. Because of three hearts combination soul, Hei Lou Lan’s side suffered great losses.

After that, Ma Hong Yun rose up, and when he was dealing with Dong Fang tribe, three hearts combination soul caused great problems for him.

Once, he was set up by some people, and lost terribly against this killer move, getting captured alive by Dong Fang tribe.

Ma Hong Yun thus became a prisoner, and met with Dong Fang Qing Yu by accident, gaining her affection. Not only did Dong Fang Qing Yu let him escape secretly, she even told him all the secrets regarding this killer move.

Ma Hong Yun returned safely, and together with his wife, Sheng Ling Er, who was a refinement path master, created the nauseous crying baby Gu, specifically to deal with three hearts combination soul.

Nauseous crying baby Gu had great effects on the battle, using this, Ma Hong Yun obtained a great victory, while Dong Fang tribe lost consecutively.

After they failed too many times, the killer move three hearts combination soul was slowly phased out of use.

During the battle of the five regions, chaos was everywhere and three hearts combination soul was stolen by central continent Gu Masters, they improved upon it and it became a powerful move again. Ma Hong Yun thus released the recipe of nauseous crying baby and after everyone learnt it, they modified it based on the original Gu recipe, to deal with the improved three hearts combination soul.

Thereafter, three hearts combination soul finally lost its use, and was left behind in history.

Fang Yuan rebirthed, with five hundred years of memories, he naturally knew the recipe of nauseous crying baby Gu.

But nauseous crying baby Gu was rank four, while the refinement materials were not rare, the refinement difficulty was extremely high. Even with Fang Yuan’s near refinement master level skills, he attempted it more than ten times but failed them all.

Sighing, Fang Yuan got up and walked to the window.

This window was destroyed by the Gu refinement failure, the air blast broke the glass, as a huge hole was created. The wind from outside carried the smell of the grass as it flowed into the room through the hole.

Fang Yuan pressed his hand on the window as he sent his primeval essence over.

Quickly, the new window panel started growing, forming and blocking all the wind outside.

The walls moved like intestines, the earlier crevices and holes created were all filled, while the broken vase fragments on the ground as well as the blood traces were devoured.

This was the convenience of the large lizard house Gu.

Large lizard house Gu was rank three, advanced from the rank two lizard house Gu.

The lizard house Gu was already large as a bus, it looked like a four-legged lizard on the outside, with a pathway inside the lizard that splits into rooms on both sides.

The large lizard house Gu was like a two-storey building, its body was five times the size of a lizard house Gu.

It was split into two storeys, there were more rooms and a larger space within,. This was given to Fang Yuan by Hei Lou Lan personally after he joined Hei tribe.

His daily cultivation was all done inside this room.

Aside from Fang Yuan, there were six rank three Gu Masters guarding the surroundings.

They took turns as sentries, paired with their investigative Gu that could deal with all hiding and lurking Gu Masters.

If shadow sword expert attacks again, before she even gets close to a hundred steps, she would be discovered by Gu Masters, and her traces would be exposed. This was a measure set up after Fang Yuan’s assassination.

At this moment, Fang Yuan looked down from the window, seeing large numbers of mortals and Gu masters anxiously setting up their defenses.

Some of them were digging canals, some were growing trees, erecting arrow towers, or building mud walls... a tight defensive line was starting to form.

This was the third line of defense.

Northern plains’ terrain was mostly flat grassland, there were little obstacles and horses could run freely. Thus, since long ago, when two forces in northern plains engage in battle, the moment one side loses, they would not be able to escape, the winner would definitely be able to chase them down.

Once a battle is lost, it would mean that it was the end, a tribe would quickly weaken or even face its demise.

But with a defensive line, the results would be different.

Once a battle is lost, be it retreating and escaping, or avoiding the enemy temporarily, waiting for a chance to counterattack, these defensive lines would have great use.

Battles were a matter of life and death, it decided the fate of the tribes, it was dangerous and hard to predict, one tiny accident or a mistake from either side could result in failure.

At this time, when a tribe retreats and defends according to their defensive line, they would stabilize their footing and would be able to regroup.

This was the world of Gu. An individual had mysterious powers, it was not difficult to construct a long defensive line that was longer than the great wall on Earth.

People soon realized the benefits of these defensive lines.

Because battles in northern plains were not decided quickly, defense battles were much more advantageous than offensive assault.

"According to our intel, Dong Fang tribe is already starting on the growth defensive line, there are still about three thousand li of distance between us. According to their habits, every eight hundred to one thousand li would have a new defensive line." Fang Yuan recalled from his memories.

These days, he had been cultivating in closed doors, but he had a firm grasp of the outside information. He was a higher-up of Hei alliance army, everyday there would be Gu Masters coming to give him information.

"Looking at the time, tomorrow our vanguards will meet and begin the battle. But there is still some time before I strike."

Fang Yuan was guarding the central camp now with Hei Lou Lan.

A few days ago, Hei Lou Lan had sent someone to convey the message of the showing weakness tactic. In all, they wanted to make use of the opportunity to lure Dong Fang Yu Liang to make arrangements that he had prepared so that Fang Yuan could deal with him.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly towards this.

He had the night wolf emperor, the night wolf group was easy to replenish. But Hei Lou Lan refused to use these cannon fodder, while he wanted to deal with Dong Fang Yu Liang, he also wanted to suppress Wolf King Chang Shan Yin.

Fang Yuan had displayed Chang Shan Yin’s arrogance perfectly, this made Hei Lou Lan unhappy, as the alliance was newly formed, all the different tribes were contesting against each other secretly, especially when the current situation was Hei tribe’s dominance. thus, all the Gu Masters were competing for battle merit, suppressing others to vie for more benefits.

Water Demon Hao Ji Liu stood in front of the main tent for three days without moving in order to compete for the vanguard’s general position. He blocked the door for three days and made a din requesting to participate in battle, and after defeating over a dozen competitors, he got his wish.

Cunning Gentleman used his schemes to emerge victorious, gaining Hei Lou Lan’s favor by showing his allegiance, now he was the number one strategist in the alliance army.

This was the internal strife.

Any organisation or political system had no lack of internal strifes.

Chang Shan Yin was a loner, and also had five hundred thousand wolves, thus he was ostracised by everyone — since he is so strong, if he strikes, all the battle merits will be his, what would become of our benefits then?

Hei Lou Lan agreed to Cunning Gentleman’s plan because he had to stabilize his position as the leader, and also to defend the hierarchy — Wolf King is way too strong now, it gives me great pressure, there has to be balance, he has to be suppressed.

Towards these issues and these people’s thoughts, Fang Yuan was clear as day.

His situation was different, the fight for the Imperial Court was just a jumping board, his motive was greater, much more than anyone could imagine, with the blessed land in his possession, he had little need for these battle gains.

"Since they do not want me to strike, I would use this time to cultivate, isn’t that more advantageous for me?"

What Fang Yuan lacked now was not these ordinary resources, but precious resources and large amounts of time.

A day later, Water Demon Hao Ji Liu led the vanguard troops and engaged in battle with Dong Fang alliance army.

When the generals were fighting, Hao Ji Liu displayed great strength as he killed the enemy’s general as well as three sub-generals.

The enemy troops were without a leader, they lost their morale and were overwhelmed by Hao Ji Liu’s army, allowing him to gain a great victory. But in the process of chasing them, he was attacked by shadow sword expert Bian Si Xuan, and got heavily injured.

Hao Ji Liu had to stop the attack and make a base there, nursing his wounds while waiting for the main troops to arrive.

Three days later, Hei Lou Lan led the central army and entered the frontlines.

Five days later, the two armies converged.

The two camps were only several hundred li apart, the tribe flags were erected all around the camp as battle was around the corner, the atmosphere was heavy.

Late at night, the bright moon shines in the sky with few stars.

In the room, Fang Yuan sat on the cushion as his eyes were shut, activating space thought Gu.

Space thought Gu, rank five, was bought in treasure yellow heaven. Using moving perspective cup Gu, Fang Yuan obtained it from Hu Immortal blessed land.

Under the effect of space thought Gu, Fang Yuan had half-transparent thoughts that appeared like bubbles, getting closer to the brain explosion Gu in his skull.

Brain explosion Gu was only rank four, Fang Yuan used Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura to forcefully subdue it back then.

But the brain explosion Gu still remained in his head.

These days, the brain explosion Gu had been absorbing his brain matter, while being corroded by space thought Gu, it had finally reached a qualitative change!

In an instant, the brain explosion Gu scattered into a lump of black light, a lump of white smoke, and a fist-sized space thought.

"The reverse refinement succeeded." Seeing this, Fang Yuan breathed out heavily as his heart was filled with joy.

He moved the black light and white smoke out of his head, as they formed into two rank three Gu.

These Gu were ordinary, Fang Yuan casually placed them at the side.

The important thing was that space thought.

Fang Yuan placed the space thought into his brain and read the details in it.

Soon, his body shuddered as his pupils expanded, his face showing an undeniable joy that could not be concealed.

"This particular Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritance leads to Luo Po valley?!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The pioneer of soul path — the legendary Gu Master at the apex of rank nine peak stage, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable once said:

"In this huge world, the best option for soul strengthening is Dang Hun mountain, and for soul refinement, the best choice is Luo Po valley. One mountain and one valley, with both, one can obtain great success in soul path and sweep every obstacle in this world!"

Thus, Dang Hun mountain and Luo Po valley became known as the soul cultivator’s sacred lands.

Fang Yuan was well aware of how huge a help these two sacred lands could provide since obtaining Dang Hun mountain.

His thousand man soul was cultivated through the guts Gu on Dang Hun mountain.

Guts Gu was the number one Gu in increasing the foundation of the soul; it had no side-effects and its efficiency was extremely high as well.

Normal Gu Masters would usually require about twenty years to cultivate their soul to thousand man soul level. Some geniuses with the help of their clans or the guidance of their seniors could cut down this twenty years by half.

But for Fang Yuan?

He used the guts Gu on Dang Hun mountain to strengthen his soul to thousand man level in less than half a year.

This was coupled with the fact that Dang Hun mountain was slowly dying from the Immortal Gu Gruel Mud’s corrosion.

With Dang Hun mountain, the speed at which Fang Yuan was able to raise his soul to thousand man soul level was like charging to the sky with a rocket. But apart from strengthening soul, the cultivation of soul required tempering to purify it.

In this aspect, Fang Yuan’s progress was much slower.

Compared to the speed of soul strengthening, his soul tempering speed was as slow as a tortoise climbing.

Fang Yuan was using wolf soul Gu to temper his soul, to transform his soul to wolfman soul.

But none of the wolf soul Gu he was using were rank five, the most he used was rank four. Using a rank four wolf soul Gu to purify thousand man soul was like pouring a bottle of ink in a lake; the efficiency of dying the whole lake was way too low.

Fang Yuan had been searching for rank five wolf soul Gu, but it was in vain.

But even without rank five wolf soul Gu, there was still one method.

That was to use second watch Gu or third watch Gu to increase the timeflow of his body, or enter the blessed land, to increase the speed of his cultivation.

These methods could be used by others, but Fang Yuan could not.

Fang Yuan’s first vital Gu Spring Autumn Cicada was slowly recovering with time. Before he becomes a Gu Immortal, this Gu would be like an executioner’s blade hovering above his neck.

"My thousand man soul was accomplished using Dang Hun mountain, Luo Po valley is on par with Dang Hun mountain, if I could obtain it..."

For a moment, Fang Yuan had an impulse to change to soul path.

"If I can save Dang Hun mountain and obtain Luo Po Valley, with the huge foundation of two sacred lands of the soul path, cultivating soul path would truly be a wise choice, even having much more prospects than the blood path I cultivated in my past life!"

But soon, Fang Yuan calmed down.

"According to the directions given by space thought, Luo Po Valley is quite far away, the matter of importance right now is saving Dang Hun mountain, now is not the time to go to Luo Po Valley. The battle is approaching, I also cannot casually abandon my current strength path and enslavement path foundation."

Fang Yuan was relying on enslavement path and strength path to become an influential figure in northern plains.

But his current strength was still far from allowing him to roam unhindered and invincible in the mortal world.

One shadow sword expert was able to obstruct him.

Although he had second aperture, cultivated strength and enslavement path, had rank five peak stage cultivation, Fang Yuan was involved in the fight for the Imperial Court, he still appeared insignificant.

This was a whirlpool of war that involved the whole northern plains; if one was just a bit careless, even a rank five Gu Master had the danger of dying.

"My enslavement path cultivation has achieved some success and can influence the whole situation, but it is clear that my attack is strong but defense is weak. On strength path aspect, it is still not enough for defending myself. It will be trouble once people like Mo Shi Kuang and Bian Si Xuan get near to me. I have to be much more careful in this battle with Dong Fang tribe."

Thinking of the imminent great battle, Fang Yuan did not have raging battle intent like others.

It could be said that Cunning Gentleman was doing him a small favor, letting him stay behind the scenes and have more time to cultivate and increase his battle strength.

In the following days, Fang Yuan nurtured his second aperture while trying to refine nauseous crying baby Gu. At the same time, he communicated with Little Hu Immortal to handle all kinds of matters in the blessed land.

In Hu Immortal blessed land, Dang Hun mountain’s situation continued to worsen, the whole mountain was shrinking day by day. Little Hu Immortal disposed of large amounts of Gruel Mud from Dang Hun mountain every day to prolong Dang Hun mountain’s vitality as much as possible.

Starry clouds covered the eastern part of the blessed land, the scale of starlight fireflies had expanded by three times of before, and there were even fifty to sixty more starlight firefly Gu than Little Hu Immortal’s initial assessment.

Being able to get this many starlight firefly Gu in this short period of time was all thanks to air bubble fish.

These air bubble fish were gradually showing their effects.

Previously, Fang Yuan had frequently entered and exited Hu Immortal blessed land, using stargate Gu for a long time which caused the amount of starlight firefly Gu to dwindle. Now, starlight firefly Gu expanded in numbers once more, alleviating his pressure.

At the western part of the blessed land, large numbers of pink rabbits were reproducing.

Since Fang Yuan had transferred the wolf groups to northern plains, the pressure on the pink rabbits had decreased, thus their numbers was quickly expanding.

After Little Hu Immortal reported these news, Fang Yuan immediately made her transfer large amounts of water wolves from the eastern lakes to the western parts to fill the gap in the food chain, but even so, the rabbits were still expanding wildly.

To prevent a rabbit calamity, Little Hu Immortal had put up a large group of pink rabbits for sale in treasure yellow heaven, a few days ago.

Fang Yuan was most concerned about the hairy men who were momentarily placed at the southern part of the blessed land.

This was originally the rockmen’s home grounds, now there was a group of hairy men who suddenly appeared out of nowhere. The two sides fought for their territories causing several small scale conflicts.

Under Fang Yuan’s instructions, Little Hu Immortal secretly helped the hairy men win against a stoneman tribe, and sold the stoneman captives to Immortal Crane Sect.

Immortal Crane Sect kept on trying to make transactions for the guts Gu, but were always refused by Little Hu Immortal. Fang Zheng requested to see Fang Yuan several times as a negotiation representative, but was also refused.

As for treasure yellow heaven, another batch of Gruel Mud was sold, gaining another remnant recipe of Immortal Gu Gruel Mud.

The remnant recipes of Immortal Gu Fang Yuan had sold before was once again resold by Little Hu Immortal after a gap of some time, obtaining eleven immortal essence stones.

When the same Gu recipe is sold multiple times in treasure yellow heaven and more Gu Immortals obtain it, its treasure light will decrease. Thus, this method could not be treated as a long term source of income.

This was like a gold mine which was already mostly mined. The profits in the future would continue to decrease and not be worthy of too much expectations.

After another three days of confrontation, Dong Fang Yu Liang personally wrote a war challenge and sent it to Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan was shocked and asked his subordinates: "Has the rear army of Dong Fang tribe arrived already?"

Cunning Gentleman Sun Shi Han answered: "Their rear army is still five thousand li away, building the fifth defensive line."

Hei Lou Lan gave a sinister smile: "Dong Fang tribe’s military strength was originally lower than ours and they still dare to split their forces!"

Sun Shi Han also smiled: "Dong Fang Yu Liang is playing with fire. We might as well wait until our rear army converges, our military strength will greatly surpass theirs and at that time, we can crush through their whole army in one move."

Baleful light flickered in Hei Lou Lan’s eyes. He had a personal grudge with Dong Fang Yu Liang; when he went adventuring to gain experience in his youth, he saw Dong Fang Qing Yu and drooled over her beauty, but he was taught a lesson by Dong Fang Yu Liang and had suffered quite a bit.

He really wanted to take revenge, but he was not someone who was easily controlled by emotions.

"Even a fool can see through this Dong Fang lad’s intention. He wants to battle but I won’t give him the chance. How long till my rear army arrives?" Hei Lou Lan asked.

"Approximated three days." Wang tribe leader answered from the side.

"Good. I will write a letter to Dong Fang Yu Liang to change the date to four days later!" Hei Lou Lan laughed loudly.

Dong Fang Yu Liang received the letter and skimmed through it.

Dong Fang alliance’s higher-ups were filled with fury.

Hei Lou Lan had written nonsense, proclaiming he was giving three days of time to Dong Fang Yu Liang in magnanimity, and hoped Dong Fang Yu Liang would live up to this good intent and enjoy the last days of his life.

The crowd shouted for war one after another, but Dong Fang Yu Liang calmly smiled: "Everyone, do not be impatient. This letter was already within my expectations. I have deduced many times over these days and have come up with a plan, please listen to the details..."

Four days were gone in an instant.

In this day of battle, it was a day of fine weather with blue sky spreading to the distant horizon.

Knee-length grass grew lushly, the two sides moved in formation that reached hundred li, raising banners with tightly packed troops.

A twin-headed hill sized rhino carried the main tent on its back. On the main tent was Hei Lou Lan, Fang Yuan, Hao Ji Liu, Wang tribe leader, Fang tribe leader, Ye tribe leader and other experts.

Fang Yuan’s position was naturally at the topmost left side of the main seat.

Cunning Gentleman Sun Shi Han was standing behind Hei Lou Lan with a loyal expression; he had already become Hei Lou Lan’s trusted aide.

The wind whistled, causing the banners to flutter wildly. Fang Yuan looked into the distance from his seat, seeing the tight and disciplined formation of Dong Fang tribe with their main tent resting on a white cloud, floating in mid-air.

One could vaguely see Dong Fang Yu Liang sitting on the central seat in the main tent with officials and fierce experts sitting on his left and right. Just from their disposition, they did not appear any weaker than Hei Lou Lan’s side.

At this moment, Hei Lou Lan’s loud laughter rang in Fang Yuan’s ears: "Hahaha, this battle will signify the first step my Hei tribe takes towards the ownership of the Imperial court and ruling the northern plains. Everyone, who wants to go forward and make the first challenge?"

His words had just landed when a group of Gu Masters rose one after another, shouting or vouching for themselves to request to be sent to battle.

Hei Lou Lan’s gaze travelled through the group and landed on one of them: "Pan Ping, you shall go."

Pan Ping was tall and buff, his hair was reddish-yellow, on his waist was a scimitar with gold edge and silver handle. He laughed heartily when chosen and just as he was about to agree, a loud shout came from the enemy: "Junior Tang Miao Ming has heard of the awespiring name of the grand Wolf King for a long time, I have specifically come to get a pointer or two."

"Dong Fang Yu Liang has guts, he actually chose to challenge us first!"

"That is little fox commander Tang Miao Ming, a rank four middle stage Gu Master, she actually directly challenged Lord Wolf King, they must be planning something."

For a moment, everyone’s gaze landed on Fang Yuan, waiting for the Wolf King’s response.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The two armies were poised for battle. Hei tribe had been about to send Pan Ping to challenge, but Dong Fang Yu Liang was the first to send Tang Miao Ming.

Tang Miao Ming was Tang tribe’s specially cultivated enslavement path female Gu Master with rank four middle stage cultivation. She liked foxes and had exquisite control over them, but she did not have any notable achievements in history.

However, Dong Fang Yu Liang specially sent her to directly challenge Wolf King, so it was clear he had a specific plan against Fang Yuan and Tang Miao Ming was one part of it.

Wisdom path Gu Masters were like this with plans within plans. The people fighting against wisdom path Gu Masters would not sense it at the start, but by the time they realised it, they would be deep under already.

Tang Miao Ming’s public challenge attracted everyone’s gazes towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was at leisure as he drank wine and slowly placed down the wine cup, then looked at Hei Lou Lan: "Alliance leader, then should I take the challenge?"

Hei Lou Lan laughed heartily, pleased at Fang Yuan asking him before the battle:

"Let these experts look at brother Shan Yin’s might and be awed!"

Fang Yuan slowly stood up and used a Gu worm to transmit his voice outside: "Little girl, your bravery in challenging me deserves praises, but you are not my match. Moreover... it is getting late."

In front of the formation, Tang Miao Ming clenched her hands which were soaked with sweat. Her lovely body shuddered at Fang Yuan’s words, and her thoughts began to unfold at a rapid speed: ’Wolf King replied! He is truly arrogant, just like alliance leader Dong Fang expected. Now I should act according to his plan and use words to force him to battle with only a hundred beast group against my similar-sized fox group . But... what is the meaning of his last sentence?’

Dong Fang Yu Liang who was sitting in the main tent had been observing the situation.

Tang Miao Ming was an enslavement path expert he accidentally discovered not long ago. After Dong Fang Yu Liang learned the details, he found that Tang Miao Ming was very good at fighting with small scale fox groups. Her skill at this aspect was quite deep, and adding in her set of supporting Gu worms, she could even match an enslavement path master!

Dong Fang Yu Liang immediately thought of using Tang Miao Ming to openly scheme against Wolf King Chang Shan Yin.

The Wolf King’s prestige was deeply set in people’s hearts. If he was beaten under everyone’s gaze, it would definitely greatly raise their morale.

What was even more matching was that Wolf King Chang Shan Yin was very arrogant; Tang Miao Ming was his junior and a female. As long as she was putting herself in a lower position, even Chang Shan Yin would also find it embarrassing to bully a junior in front of everyone.

’Chang Shan Yin, you are really as arrogant as the rumors say. Hehehe, as long as you come out to fight, Tang Miao Ming will definitely give you a great surprise.’

Dong Fang Yu Liang was inwardly excited but also had a doubt: "It is getting late? What is he talking about?"

Not only Dong Fang Yu Liang, but others also had doubts.

But Fang Yuan’s next sentence immediately answered their doubts: "It is getting late, quickly start the battle. I still need to eat my lunch after it. Come, those who want to challenge me, all of you come out!"

After he finished speaking, he stood and then waved his hand from the main tent.

Howl—!

Five hundred thousand wolves howled together.

The explosive wolf howls resounded through the skies. Their vigor was so majestic that even the wind stopped for a moment and all the experts shocked.

"Brother Shan Yin, what are you..." Hei Lou Lan’s hand slipped and the fine wine in his cup spilled down on his robe.

"Could it be, the Wolf King is thinking...?!" Dong Fang Yu Liang’s pupils shrunk, his expression paling.

Following, five hundred thousand wolf group rushed forward like a majestic tide towards the opposite army.

"My... my god!"

"Wolf tide, this is a wolf tide..."

"Chang Shan Yin, he is making a direct attack, he has sent all his wolves!"

Dong Fang alliance army was in a chaos, the enormous momentum from the wolf group shook them. Many people screamed in fear, and countless defensive Gu worms were activated.

For a moment, countless light barriers with all kinds of color shone among Dong Fang alliance army. Some just shielded one person while some shielded a large patch of land. Some formed into armors while some caused the earth to bulge and form into earth walls.

Tang Miao Ming’s face was as pale as paper!

She was standing between the two armies, and with the wolf group rushing forward, she would be the first they would charge into.

Facing the endless wolf tide, she felt like she was a small wooden boat in a vast sea about to be swallowed by a shocking tide.

"Damn it, the Wolf King is not abiding by the rules! I came forward to challenge him and only brought a thousand beast group!!" Tang Miao Ming was shocked and also furious.

Normally speaking, before a battle began, there would be a battle between experts in between the armies.

This was an old practice in northern plains.

In the battle between Gu Master experts, not only would the winner’s side’s morale greatly increase, they could also understand the strength of the other side and be more prepared later. At the same time, this expert challenge could also build friendship. Once the battle ended, the losing side’s Gu Masters would have a way out when they surrendered.

The challenge between experts?!

The moment Fang Yuan raised his hand, he used all his wolf groups and directly cut apart the round of expert challenging.

Wolf King, do you know the rules!?

For a moment, countless people from both sides roared and questioned in their mind.

The two armies were not too far apart; the wolf group’s rush was quick and soon crossed this distance and unfolded an intense battle against Dong Fang army.

"Attack, don’t be in a daze, the wolf group has attacked!"

"Kill, slaughter these damned wolves!!"

"Brothers, move together, fight alongside each other!"

A clamor erupted within Dong Fang army. All kinds of colorful lights, rolling stones, golden lights, wooden spikes, water steam, wind blades and so on landed among the wolf group, causing enormous casualties in Fang Yuan’s wolf group instantly.

Hei tribe army was still standing on their spot, looking dumbfoundedly at the frenzied battle situation in the other side.

"Brother Shan Yin!" Hei Lou Lan stared with wide eyes at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled at fatty Hei: "Dong Fang Yu Liang is a rank five wisdom path Gu Master. Since he initiated the expert challenge, he must definitely have had gathered a lot of intel to help him in making deductions. And it was the talented alliance leader who directly told me to make my move."

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes widened even more.

He had commanded Fang Yuan to make a move, but it was not to make such a big move! Clearly, Fang Yuan had intentionally distorted his intention, but he could not bicker with Fang Yuan at this critical juncture.

"Move! All army charge, attack, attack!!" Hei Lou Lan swallowed his resentment and turned around towards the front, fiercely waving his hand and giving his command.

"Orders from alliance leader, all army charge!"

"Orders from alliance leader, all army charge!"

The command was conveyed from top to bottom. The great army began to move slowly; hundreds of thousands of soldiers followed the wolf group in charging towards the other side.

Tang Miao Ming manipulated her fox group, changing the formation again and again to firmly protect herself.

She was worthy of being the person Dong Fang Yu Liang had chosen. Under the charge of the wolf tide, with just a thousand beast group, she continuously changed the formation to keep on resisting the charge.

Her fox group surrounded her, forming a round formation. The formation kept on rotating with a natural flow to it, like a millstone or a reef. The incoming wolf group was like a tide, attacking wave after wave, but it could not break through the round formation of the fox group.

However, Tang Miao Ming did not have the least bit of joy on her face; she was even shouting madly in her mind —

’This damned Wolf King is simply a lunatic!’

’Damn it, I might be able to hold on for now, but with this, I cannot move a single step.’

’Someone save me, save me... eh!’

Suddenly, Tang Miao Ming’s body stiffened; her complexion went completely white, her eyes showing fear and despair.

In front of her, the Hei tribe army was gradually starting to move before her, quickly increasing their speed. Under the cover of the wolf group, they showed an earth-shattering influence and power of violence!

Tang Miao Ming momentarily lost her senses and the round formation of the fox group immediately collapsed.

The two-headed rhinoceros came rushing over with explosive sounds; as Hei Lou Lan looked on from above, his heart received a slight jolt at Tang Miao Ming’s beauty.

"Who will capture this woman for me?" He had just spoken when Pan Ping shot out.

Pan Ping made a few jumps and fiercely charged to Tang Miao Ming’s side, moving rapidly; in a short few moments, he smoothly captured Tang Miao Ming.

Hei Lou Lan nodded with satisfaction at this scene, then turned his gaze towards the front.

"Dong Fang lad..." He gave a malevolent smile, his eyes burning with the flame of revenge.

After a short time, the two armies officially started the battle. A large chaotic battle had begun.

With Fang Yuan’s one move, this great battle that had just started had entered its climax.

"Beast!"

Facing the incoming night wolves, Tang Fang furiously shouted and poured his primeval essence into fire pellet Gu.

Whoosh!

A fist-sized fireball shot forward, bringing a gale with it.

This orange pellet fire struck the night wolf.

The night wolf whimpered and rolled around the ground, but its whole body burned with the fire before shortly dying.

"Kill!" Tang Fang breathed roughly and was about to charge forward when he was blocked by a Tang tribe elder.

"Third young master, don’t rush ahead, the tribe leader has commanded you to return back quickly!"

"But big sister has been captured!" Tang Fang stared wide, he did not want to turn back. His big sister was Tang Miao Ming.

"Third young master, rushing forward like this will only lead to your death!" The elder hastily persuaded.

"Damn it!" Tang Fang gnashed his teeth and clenched his fists, feeling his powerlessness.

He was Tang tribe’s genius, and he was only twenty two but had already reached rank three. Yet this rank three battle strength that could have controlled the situation in the past was now so minute in this great battle.

The rank three battle strength that was normally hard to be seen were all present in this battlefield.

Rank three Gu Masters were reduced to mid level strength; above them were those rank four Gu Master experts and even more higher were the rank five experts.

"Big sister, wait for me, I will definitely rescue you." Tang Fang calmed down and swore in his mind as he retreated.

"Hmph, leaving whenever you want? Leave behind your life!" Right at this time, a rank three Gu Master of Wang tribe rushed over.

"It is Wang Jiang! Third young master, leave quickly, I will hold him back." The Tang tribe elder instantly recognized the enemy.

Wang Jiang’s fiance Luo Yu Feng had been snatched by Tang tribe, so he had deep hatred towards them. And now in this large battle, he naturally would not let this chance for revenge go.

Such situations were not few.

In this world, people would have gratitude, grudges and hatred.

Now, those with grudges could let out their grudges and those with hatred could repay their hatred!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Tang tribe! The humiliation back then, I will repay it double today!!" Wang Jiang had a malevolent expression on his face as he gave a deep shout, his whole body inflated like a black bear as he violently smashed towards Tang Fang.

Tang Fang was startled and furious at Wang Jiang’s fierce momentum, and had the intention to battle with his life.

Pellet fire Gu!

He pushed his right palm and an orange fire shot towards Wang Jiang.

The fire made an arc in the air, quickly approaching Wang Jiang’s face. Wang Jiang felt the burning heat before the fire even struck him.

But he just laughed nastily and actually opened his mouth, without any intent to dodge.

Gulp!

He swallowed the pellet fire!

"This is rank four swallow fire Gu!" Tang Fang was shocked.

Swallow fire Gu was not an offensive Gu but a storage Gu. But using Gu always relied on a Gu Master’s wits. Who was to say storage Gu could not be used for battle?

Tang tribe always prioritized fire path Gu worms. Wang Jiang spent a huge price to purchase a rank four swallow fire Gu, so he could use it against Tang tribe sometime in the future.

"Wang Jiang, we will help you." At this time, two Gu Masters rushed over, both with rank three cultivation.

Tang Fang and the Tang tribe elder’s expression turned pale. The swallow fire Gu could already restrict them, now the other side had three people, occupying a huge advantage.

"Third young master, leave quickly, I will hold them back!" The Tang tribe elder saw the critical situation and stood up to fight to give Tang Fang an opportunity to escape.

Tang Fang was not a conceited man, he gnashed his teeth and turned around to leave: "Elder hold on, I will quickly come back with reinforcements!"

"Chase!" Wang Jiang and the two others naturally were not willing to let Tang Fang escape safely, but who could have thought the Tang tribe elder that remained was a defensive Gu Master and moreover had a rank three rare Gu ’slow steps’.

As this Gu’s name implied, it could slow down Gu Masters’ speed for a period of time.

Wang Jiang and the two others were slowed down and could only give up on Tang Fang, then with a belly filled with anger, attacked the Tang tribe elder.

The Tang tribe elder could not fend off against the numbers although he had slow steps Gu. First, he was struck by Wang Jiang’s punch, then his arm was severed by wind blade. Finally, a snowball turned him into an ice sculpture, killing him.

"Elder!!" Tang Fang watched with tearful red eyes; when he came back with reinforcements, he could only collect the corpse of this elder.

The flames of hatred raged in his heart, but he could not find his enemies.

The battlefield was in chaos. Large numbers of wolves rushed forward and created a havor. Besides them, there were fox groups, war crabs, bats and other beasts. Metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, lightning, light, darkness... All kinds of attacks streaked through the sky and landed on the ground; rocks were smashed, flames ablazed, ice spread, lightning dazzled the eyes...

Gu Masters shouted and screamed; some attacked while some retreated; some were rushing to reinforce while some were defending.

A great chaotic battle between hundreds of thousands of people was enough to fill a range of thousands of miles.

Rumble...

Suddenly, an enormous blue wave with the momentum of covering the sky, descended like an evil flood dragon.

Large numbers of wolves and Gu Masters were swept by the enormous wave.

This part of the battlefield was instantly cleared up, several large puddles forming in this cleared grassland. A Gu Master arrogantly stood in this center of the battlefield while laughing wildly.

"It is Water Demon Hao Ji Liu!" Tang Fang’s pupils shrunk as he recognized this man.

"Retreat, this person is a rank four upper stage expert, he is a demon." Many surviving rank three Gu Masters wisely chose to retreat.

Water Demon’s fierce gaze swept through the battlefield and landed on Tang Fang’s side who had the highest numbers.

These rank three Gu Masters were moving battle merits to Water Demon, representing a bountiful reward after the war.

Water Demon licked his dried lips with his scarlet tongue, a bloodthirsty killing intent filling his face.

"Consider it your bad luck to have ran into me!" Water Demon laughed loudly as he fiercely pushed forward his two palms.

Rank four waterfall Gu!

BOOM!

In an instant, an enormous torrent bubbled and charged towards Tang Fang and his group with an immense momentum.

Facing such a majestic attack, Tang Fang felt he was like a single person facing a tsunami, feeling he was facing a great catastrophe alone.

"Third young master, we will hold it back, retreat quickly!" Several elders who had been accompanying Tang Fang, gnashed their teeth and stood in front of Tang Fang.

They combined their strength and were finally able to hold back this waterfall.

"Leave!!!" The elders’ urging caused Tang Fang to feel stifled.

"Hold on, I will get father to come rescue you!" He gnashed his teeth and finally chose to leave.

Gagaga...

Water Demon laughed wildly and engaged in the battle with the several Tang tribe elders. His offense surged forward, his water abilities charged forward with huge momentum as he used his power to overwhelm the elders, and although the Tang tribe elders had many people, they were falling into a disadvantage and it was becoming difficult for them to hold back Water Demon.

After several moves, an elder lost his life at Water Demon’s hands.

After dozen or so moves, only one elder remained, with the rest dead.

Water Demon laughed sinisterly and was just about to make the final move when suddenly a cold killing intent pounced on him.

His plentiful battle experience had given Hao Ji Liu an intuitive feeling towards danger. He did not even look and immediately retreated backwards, giving up the battle contribution that was within his reach without any hesitation.

Whoosh!

A soft ripping sound echoed and right at the instant of his retreat, a four-leaf wind blade crossed through the air and brushed past him.

The wind blade kept on rotating, making a long arc through the battlefield, everything that it passed through, whether it were humans or beasts, were cut through; blood flew and limbs scattered.

The light green wind blade spiralled a long arc in the air before flying back to its master.

"It is you? Wind Demon Tan Wu Feng!" The sinister smile on Water Demon gradually disappeared and a solemn look appeared in his eyes.

Tan Wu Feng and him were called wind and water demons, both having rank four upper stage cultivation.

Previously, Water Demon rampaged in the eastern areas of Northern Plains while Wind Demon wreaked havoc in the western areas, their fame echoing with each other. But later, Dong Fang Yu Liang devised three escapements scheme to subdue Wind Demon. Tan Wu Feng became Dong Fang Yu Liang’s subordinate and sided with Dong Fang tribe.

"Water Demon, your laughter is too ear-piercing. Lord has ordered me to bring an end to your life." Wind Demon Tan Wu Feng was clothed in green clothes, hovering in midair, grasping the wind blade that had returned.

The wind blade only had three sides remaining from the consumption in the way, but with Wind Demon pouring in primeval essence again, it gradually began to recover back to the previous four-leaf wind blade.

Normally speaking, wind blades could not be retrieved once they were sent. Wind Demon played with the wind blade like some toy, he clearly had extraordinary wind manipulation skill.

"Hmph, it seems you have been taught pretty well by your master over these years, seeing nothing worthwhile around you." Water Demon laughed sinisterly, gazing at Wind Demon like a falcon.

Wind Demon’s expression suddenly turned gloomy. He swung his palm and shot out the four-leaf wind blade, and at the same time, he also charged towards Water Demon.

"Come!" Water Demon was at ease, a huge wave rising from below his feet. He stepped on the wave and charged towards Wind Demon.

BOOM!

A huge explosion echoed, wind screamed madly and water wave surged high, unfolding an intense battle of rank four level experts.

Surrounding Gu Masters hurriedly retreated and soon a special battlefield was formed for the battle of wind and water demons.

As time passed by, not only these two, other rank four Gu Master experts also found their opponents.

Dozen or so battle rings emerged one after another in the chaotic battlefield. These battle rings were not set in place, but instead moved with the battle between the experts.

With the battle of higher level forces, the whole battlefield began to become clear.

First of all was the large battle rings for the fight of the rank four experts. Surrounding these large battle rings were small scale battle rings where rank three Gu Masters fought. And beyond that were the fights between groups of rank two and rank one Gu Masters.

Fang Yuan took this chance to assemble his wolf group.

The two armies faced off against each other, creating a deadlock.

Usually, the side which broke through this balance would obtain the initiative which would accumulate into advantage. After their dominance was accumulated enough, it would change into victory momentum.

Both Hei Lou Lan and Dong Fang Yu Liang knew this.

Thus, their gaze landed on their elite troop.

These elite troops that were either made of three-four hundred soldiers, or five-six hundred, had received strict training to deploy their Gu worm together and create a formidable attack in an instant. They were the weapons to rampage the battlefield, the trump cards of their commander.

Not every tribe had the ability to form elite troops.

Hei Lou Lan’s side had five divisions of elite troops while Dong Fang Yu Liang had six.

Dong Fang Yu Liang first deployed hundred blossoms elite troop.

This was Hua tribe’s elite troop who were quite weak at attacking and defending, but were specialized at healing.

With this division of elite troop moving out, they immediately healed large groups of wounded and stabilized the situation, providing a great assistance to Dong Fang side’s base level Gu Masters.

Hei Lou Lan looked at this scene from the main tent and snorted, commanding blue butterfly elite troop to attack hundred blossoms elite troop.

The blue butterfly elite troop that contained five hundred soldiers who detoured the rank four Gu Masters battle rings and easily pierced through the battlefield, charging towards hundred blossoms elite troop.

Just when it looked like they were about to succeed, three elite troops charged in separately from east, south and west, surrounding the blue butterfly elite troop.

Dong Fang Yu Liang had already planned for this and sent hundred blossoms elite troop as the bait while making these three elite troops lie in ambush.

Hei Lou Lan naturally was not willing to see the annihilation of blue butterfly elite troop, immediately sending other elite troop divisions as reinforcements.

Each elite troops of the two sides quickly converged and formed into several lines of encirclement; the situation once again entered a deadlock.

"Lord tribe leader, let me go forward and crush them!" Dong Fang She could not restrain anymore as he requested to be sent to battle.

Dong Fang Yu Liang slowly shook his head and did not permit him.

Dong Fang She was Dong Fang tribe’s feather arrow elite troop’s commander with rank four upper stage cultivation.

But as long as Hei tribe’s black banner elite troop did not move, this flower feather elite troop could not be sent out.

Dong Fang Yu Liang slowly swept his gaze through the battlefield and placated Dong Fang She: "Elder She does not need to be impatient, this is not the time for you to take the stage. The current situation is already within my expectations."

Saying so, he calmly smiled and turned towards the three enslavement path Gu Masters: "It is time for you to show your strength."

These three were precisely E Xuan Ming, Wei Xin, and Jiang Wan Shan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

At Dong Fang Yu Liang’s words, E Xuan Ming, Jiang Wan Shan and Wan Xin glanced at each other before nodding and activating their Gu.

Rank three, djinn heart Gu, to enhance the spirit.

Rank two, heart sound Gu, to strengthen the voice of one’s heart.

Rank two, harmony Gu, the harmonization of one’s heart and voice.

Rank three, flying soul Gu, the soul can leave the body.

Rank three, soul chain Gu, souls can be interlinked.

Rank four, soul combination Gu, three souls can be linked and fused as one.

Killer move — Three Hearts Combination Soul!

BOOM...

A soundless explosion burst out, as the three Gu Masters’ souls flew out of their bodies and merged together into a complete entity in the air.

For a moment, in the radius of two hundred li, all Gu Masters with at least five hundred man soul could feel a strong pressure spreading and weighing down on their souls.

The Gu Masters with less than five hundred man soul, however, could not sense anything.

"This pressure... it is already at the level of one thousand four hundred man soul, as expected of three hearts combination soul!" Fang Yuan immediately reacted and gazed towards Dong Fang tribe’s main tent.

He had a thousand man soul originally, but there was injuries from the soul explosion though he was able to escape from most of its force. His soul strength had fell to eight hundred man soul and after these days of recuperation, it had recovered to nine hundred man soul level.

Nine hundred man soul naturally was not able to match against the other side’s one thousand four hundred man soul.

"Unfortunately, there are many eyes within the alliance army, I cannot get rid of them, otherwise I would have gone to Dang Hun mountain and used guts Gu to easily heal all the injuries on my soul."

Fang Yuan inwardly sighed while mobilizing the wolf group.

Large numbers of night wolves, water wolves, wind wolves and turtleback wolves formed into a enormous force that charged towards the enemy army like a raging river.

"Wolf King, let us experience your brilliance today!" Wan Xin, E Xuan Ming and Jiang Wan Shan simultaneous spoke. Because their souls were temporarily merged together, their every movement was done simultaneously and was completely in sync.

Under their command, large numbers steel pincers crabs, crystal drilling crabs and big qi crabs flocked together, forming into a firm defensive line within several breaths of time.

The wolf group fiercely smashed into this defensive line, like a flood striking the dam.

Sharp wolf fangs and claws collided intensely against the firm crab shells.

Fang Yuan snorted and gazed afar while standing on the twin-headed rhino. Under his exquisite control, the whole wolf group formed into waves after waves of offense; the defensive formation formed by the crabs soon was on the verge of collapsing.

"This is... the nine layered wave charge! Quick, reinforce me, my crab group won’t be able to persist longer." Wan Xin had just thought of this when the other two felt it.

Under the effect of three hearts combination soul, they were just like one person, any thought would be immediately known by the others.

"No need to worry, my crocodile group is coming." E Xuan Ming’s expression was unshaken as an excited battle intent emerged in his concentrated gaze.

’The enemy is the famous Wolf King, being able to fight with such an existence, this life was really not in vain!’

Under his control, large numbers of six legs crocodile, lava crocodiles, rock crocodiles and shadow plunder crocodiles soon rushed to the frontline.

After the addition of these new forces, the defensive line that was on the brink of collapsing showed a sign of being indestructible.

"Whether it be crabs or crocodiles, they are both beasts excelling in defense. At the same time, under the three hearts combination soul, they are like three people merged together, increasing their beast commanding skills greatly, directly reaching master level."

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes, there was no signs of irritation due to not getting any results.

Suddenly, he stopped the fierce attacks and wisely chose to slow down the offense.

He was not wholeheartedly controlling the beast group, instead he divided half of his concentration to observe the battlefield.

His enemies were not these three people, neither Jiang, Wei nor E. As a person of importance who could influence the whole battlefield, he was extremely likely to encounter another assassination attempt from shadow sword expert Bian Si Xuan.

Since the battle started, shadow sword expert was nowhere to be seen and was likely observing Fang Yuan from the darkness, looking for a good opportunity to kill him.

It was only that beside Fang Yuan was the rank five Gu Master Hei Lou Lan. Maybe because of this, shadow sword expert had not revealed herself.

Right at this time, a large group of blood colored bats emerged above the wolf group.

These bats possessed four wings; the wings were sharp and firm like knives.

Under the attack of the bat group, large numbers of casualties started appearing among the wolf group.

The crocodile and crab groups took this chance to attack pushing forward their battleline by a hundred steps.

"Sure enough, it is Jiang Wan Shan’s bladewing blood bats group." Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed, he was not a bit surprised.

With the intel from Hei tribe, he had a rather good understanding of the enemy Gu Master experts. Dong Fang Yu Liang did not have any enslavement path masters under him, so Fang Yuan had guessed Dong Fang Yu Liang would use three hearts combination soul to deal with him.

And the candidates to use this killer move were extremely likely to be the strongest three enslavement path Gu Masters.

Now, under Fang Yuan’s probe, these three were sure enough Jiang Wan Shan, Wan Xin and E Xuan Ming.

Bladewing blood bats’ offense were extremely violent, changing the direction of this part of the battlefield the moment they joined the fray.

The wolf group that had been occupying the upper hand was being defeated bit by bit, while crocodile group and crab group seized the chance to attack. Mud crabs, small qi crabs, big qi crabs, steel pincers crabs, crystal drilling crabs, six legs crocodiles, lava crocodiles, rock crocodiles and shadow plunder crocodiles formed into a large mixed army that stretched out like an opened steel fist, defeating the wolves in its way and charging straight towards Hei tribe’s main tent.

According to logic, enslavement path Gu Masters would find it hard-pressed to cooperate with each other. A mixed beast group would usually impede each other, making one plus one less than two.

But Wei, Jiang and E, these three merged their souls with three hearts combination soul and were like one person, forming a qualitative effect of having one plus one greater than two.

"Brother Shan Yin." Facing the mixed beast group’s strong charge, Hei Lou Lan could not help feeling some pressure and his expression turned dark.

If they let this group of beasts charge over, he would have to use black banner elite troop earlier than scheduled. But if he did so, they would not be able to contain Dong Fang Yu Liang’s feather arrow elite troop.

The scales of victory was slowly inclining towards the other side.

Fang Yuan said to Hei Lou Lan in a low voice: "The other has bladewing blood bats group which has very sharp offensive power, and my wolf group is unable to do aerial attacks. More importantly, the other side has used three hearts combination soul to achieve thousand man soul and are able to lead this mixed beast group as if they were one person. If we can break through this killer move, the mixed group will disperse without even putting up any fight."

Hei Lou Lan frowned deeply, an ominous glint flashing rapidly in his eyes as he made a decision.

"Brother Shan Yin, concentrate on the battle, I will resolve this quickly!"

He suddenly extended his arm that was the size of an ordinary person’s thigh, his right palm formed a claw while his palm faced upward. Rank five aura rose fiercely while the primeval essence in his aperture fell rapidly, pouring into four different Gu.

"Dong Fang tribe has three hearts combination soul, while my Hei tribe has dark vortex!" Hei Lou Lan smiled sinisterly, an intense killing intent raging in his heart.

Whoosh...

A pitch black stream rose in the air and rotated once before flowing towards Hei Lou Lan’s palm.

Following, the second stream, third stream, fourth stream...

In a blink of an eye, large numbers of dark streams were created one after another and converged in Hei Lou Lan’s right claw.

Whoosh Whoosh Whoosh....

Countless dark streams rose and merged with each other, creating a wild gale.

These finger sized dark streams pressed at each other and formed a dark speck of light.

As large numbers of dark streams continued to pour into it, the dark speck of light gradually inflated, forming a fist sized dark sphere.

The dark sphere seemed to have immeasurable depth in it as if the night was condensed into it, even absorbing the light around it, causing a terrified feeling to grow in people.

Hei Lou Lan, however, revealed an extremely excitement and a mad killing intent when he looked at this dark sphere.

"Dong Fang lad! Take this!!" Hei Lou Lan suddenly shouted and disappeared from his place.

The next moment, he appeared above the enemy main tent.

"Go and die!" Hei Lou Lan let out a crazed laughter and flipped over his wrist; as if he was holding a thousand jun of weight, he exerted all his strength to slowly push the dark sphere towards Dong Fang Yu Liang.

Following his movement, that small dark sphere madly expanded and in several breaths of time, had expanded to size of a small hill.

The pitch black giant sphere pressed down with a seemingly slow speed but was actually very fast. It covered the light of the sun and casted a giant darkness on the ground.

Before the giant sphere even struck, all the Gu Master experts in the main tent felt terror like they were facing a calamity.

They looked at the pressing giant sphere, and felt heaviness as if lead was poured into their body. They wanted to retreat but were barely able to move!

"Damn it, it is Hei tribe’s killer move dark vortex!"

"Retreat, retreat!!"

Gu Masters exclaimed in shock, not having even a trace of intent to resist. Wei Xin and the other two had a despairing look on their face. They were under three hearts combination soul state, and would require at least two-three minutes to get rid of this killer move.

The corners of Dong Fang Yu Liang’s lips, however, curled up.

He looked towards the sky, the dark sphere growing bigger and bigger in his sight, but his expression was a scene of calmness: "Sure enough like I expected, Hei Lou Lan, I have been waiting so long for your move."

He slightly raised his right foot and lightly pressed on the white cloud below his feet.

The originally tranquil white cloud crazily surged as clouds and mists burst out in blink of an eye like boiling water, and formed into an enormous whirlpool.

The whirlpool slowly rose up like a giant opened mouth and swallowed the dark sphere.

"This is?!" Hei Lou Lan was shocked and furious. At this moment, he realized he had fallen for Dong Fang Yu Liang’s scheme.

Dong Fang Yu Liang had meticulously arranged this trap, waiting for Hei Lou Lan to come crashing in.

"Let me teach you, this is the killer move I spent three years of my life to plan meticulously, cloud whirlpool, it was specially created to deal with your dark vortex. Hei Lou Lan, you have lost just like many years back." Dong Fang Yu Liang proclaimed his victory.

"Damn it..." Hei Lou Lan gnashed his teeth, his forehead filled with sweat. He wanted to pull back but the cloud whirlpool was firmly sucking in his dark vortex.

The smile on Dong Fang Yu Liang’s lips became even bigger as he summoned: "Dong Po Kong, Bian Si Xuan."

His voice was not loud, but under the effect of Gu worm, it could be clearly heard by everyone.

Hearing his command, the shadow sword expert who had been concealing herself for a long time, turned into a dark shadow, and moved while wriggling in the shadows on the ground; in a blink of an eye, she was in front of the twin-headed rhino.

And at the same time, a flash of lightning broke through the air and crossed the battlefield, instantly arriving in front of the twin-headed rhino.

The lightning dispersed and turned into a valiant man, who then pounced towards Fang Yuan.

Flying Lightning Dong Po Kong, Shadow Sword Expert Bian Si Xuan!

In an instant, both Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan had fallen into danger!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Dong Fang Yu Liang lived up to his name as the wisdom path Gu Master, accurately calculating Hei Lou Lan’s reaction.

Three hearts combination soul killer move was only bait to lure Hei Lou Lan into attacking. Then, Dong Fang Yu Liang was able to leisurely unfold his trump card - a killer move that was specially designed to restrict dark vortex and trap Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan had been at the main tent but now he was trapped; the defense around Fang Yuan had suddenly decreased by a very large amount.

Taking this chance, Shadow Sword Expert Bian Si Xuan appeared and charged into the main tent to once again assassinate Fang Yuan.

As long as Fang Yuan died, the wolf group would immediately disperse and the scales of victory would greatly incline towards Dong Fang alliance army.

To make sure this beheading the leader tactic succeeded, Dong Fang Yu Liang had not only arranged Shadow Sword Expert, but also an even stronger Gu Master.

He was Dong Po Kuang known as ’Flying Lightning’! One of the few flying masters of northern plains, a lightning path Gu Master with rank four upper stage cultivation. He had not made a move even in the chaotic battle earlier, patiently waiting till now to shock the world with one move!

"Protect Wolf King!"

"Sneaky bastards, don’t think you can have your way!!"

"Wolf King, leave quickly!"

Six rank three Gu Masters around the main tent jumped up one after another, trying to hold off Dong Po Kuang and Bian Si Xuan.

"Scram!!" Dong Po Kuang coldly shouted, lightning suddenly crackling around him.

The three Gu Masters who were blocking him were struck by the lightning; their defensive Gu worms were instantly destroyed, two instantly died while one was heavily injured.

"Hehehe." Bian Si Xuan chuckled softly, her body turned into a shadow and quickly moved like a poisonous snake through the Gu Masters blocking her, and moved past them.

"What?"

"Such speed..."

"Is this Shadow Sword Expert’s true strength?"

The three Gu Masters were shocked, they gazed back only to see Bian Si Xuan’s seductive back figure.

They wanted to chase, but found they could not move at all. Their hands and feet were tied up by a dark shadow, firmly binding them to the spot.

Facing the above and under pincer attack from Dong Po Kuang and Shadow Sword Expert, Fang Yuan paled, his gaze revealing a frantic look as he retreated in panic and shouted: "Quick, someone come protect me!"

"Wolf King, no need to worry, Hei Xiu Yi will guard you." One person stood behind Fang Yuan, clothed in black and had unshaken expression. He walked forward few steps and stood in front of Fang Yuan.

"Courting death!" Dong Po Kuang shouted, the lightning over his body crackled violently and turned into a battle spear which he then stabbed towards Hei Xiu Yi.

Bian Si Xuan snorted and flicked her wrist lightly, immediately throwing out a torrent of shadow swords.

Hei Xiu Yi’s expression did not change at this combined attack from two experts. He put together his palms in front of his chest and transferred his primeval essence.

BOOM!

Next instant, his defense was fully activated.

Fifty-six flying bone shields flew together and blocked in front of him.

A green halo flew above his head and illuminated a range of a hundred steps.

Black iron-like metallic light formed a set of thick armor which then covered him from top to bottom.

Nine ghost faces whimpered and wept as they revolved around him.

At the same time, a dark brown oil wind breezed in between the flying bone shields.

Dong Po Kuang’s lightning spear pierced through seven flying shields and made a hole through the dark-brown oil wind, but was blocked by the black armor.

Bian Si Xuan’s shadow swords bombarded upon the shields, shattering eighteen shields but were thwarted by the oil wind; the shadow swords seemed to have fallen into a swamp as their momentum dispersed and were no longer a threat.

Hei Xiu Yi was Hei Lou Lan’s expert and also one of the three commanders of black banner elite troop, an expert in defense.

Facing the defense specialized Hei Xiu Yi, Dong Po Kuang and Bian Si Xuan were actually delayed for a while, unable to break through.

Hei Xiu Yi had suffered a terrible defeat during the battle with Mo Shi Kuang; it did not mean he was weak but the enemy was too strong, a top expert in the whole of northern plains in this struggle for Imperial Court.

Now, facing the combined strength of Flying Lightning and Shadow Sword Expert, Hei Xiu Yi shielded here and there, firmly protecting Fang Yuan who was behind him for dozen moves.

His Gu set had complementing Gu worms focused on defense and had been carefully chosen.

Dong Po Kuang and Bian Si Xuan tried to break through multiple times, but it was all a failure.

The aftermath of this battle caused severe pain to the twin-headed rhino. The giant rhinoceros screamed in pain and stamped its feet, recklessly charging in the battlefield without considering allies or enemies.

Hei Xiu Yi’s expression turned heavier.

His primeval essence was quickly depleting because of this intense battle, already reaching the bottom. While the other side had two people and their primeval essence consumption was half that of Hei Xiu Yi.

Hei Xiu Yi was now confronted with a difficult choice.

The first choice was to continue to defend to death without caring about his primeval essence expenditure and hoping Hei Lou Lan or others would come in time to support him. But now the twin-headed rhino was crazily rampaging and had already travelled far away; how high was the possibility for the reinforcements to cross the battlefield and arrive in time?

Second option was to conserve his primeval essence. But with this, his defense would fall and the chance for the enemies to breakthrough would increase dramatically. In case, they were able to move past him, Fang Yuan who was behind him would be in grave danger.

’What should I choose?’

A hesitating look flashed in Hei Xiu Yi’s eyes, but was soon replaced by resolve.

He began to slowly cut down on defense and was no longer very active in facing the enemies’ attacks. Dong Po Kuang and Bian Si Xuan immediately sensed the change in Hei Xiu Yi; they attacked several times and took some risks, and were about to succeed.

Even if Wolf King had an important identity that concerned the whole situation, even if Hei Xiu Yi was appointed by Hei Lou Lan to defend Chang Shan Yin, but at this critical juncture when he was at risk, Hei Xiu Yi was not able to give up his own life.

"If it was Lord Hei Lou Lan behind me, I would definitely risk my life to protect him. But Chang Shan Yin is just an outsider, always acting so arrogant and looking down on me, why should I sacrifice my life for such a person? Even if Wolf King dies, we still have the black banner army and are still a match for the enemy. Yes, I need to save myself and continue to render my service to the tribe."

Hei Xiu Yi’s thoughts surged rapidly to justify himself and gradually began to have a clear conscience.

He was originally guarding Fang Yuan, but now was only looking after himself, thus his primeval essence consumption immediately slowed.

"Now is the time, overlapping shadow Gu!" Suddenly, Bian Si Xuan noticed a gap in the defense, her eyes flashed with a sharp light as she grabbed this chance and activated the Gu worm Dong Fang Yu Liang had lent her.

This overlapping shadow Gu was a rank four rare Gu which was very difficult to find in the market and its price was comparable to many rank five Gu.

Initially, Bian Si Xuan had agreed with Dong Fang Yu Liang for this Gu to be her reward once she assassinated Fang Yuan.

But Bian Si Xuan’s assassination failed and the brain explosion Gu she had struck with was also dealt with by Fang Yuan; with her proud nature, she would naturally not accept this overlapping shadow Gu. But before this battle, Dong Fang Yu Liang had lent her this Gu of his own initiative, just to be on the safe side.

Overlapping shadow Gu might only be a rank four Gu to others, but to Bian Si Xuan, it could raise her battle strength explosively and was even more precious than rank five Gu to her.

Under the use of overlapping shadow Gu, Bian Si Xuan’s multiple shadow swords overlaid upon each other and in just a second, only one sword remained of the overflowing shadow swords.

This shadow sword was as dark as the abyss and was like a solid object; all the offensive power of the shadow swords had been overlaid together in it.

Bian Si Xuan pierced the sword forward; the sword easily broke through Hei Xiu Yi’s defense like a knife cutting through tofu, and pierced towards Wolf King.

The defense that had lasted for a long time was finally broken!

Dong Po Kuang let out a breath of relief at this scene; he continued to hold back Hei Xiu Yi to provide a chance to Bian Si Xuan.

But Hei Xiu Yi could not care about this as he already had an intent to retreat. Now that Shadow Sword Expert was charging towards Chang Shan Yin, this was the chance for him to retreat, why would he not take this chance? Thus, he quickly retreated and directly jumped off from twin-headed rhino’s back.

Dong Po Kuang looked at Hei Xiu Yi’s fleeing figure in shock, he hesitated for a moment before thinking that it was better to quickly kill Wolf King, so he did not chase Hei Xiu Yi.

But when he gazed back, he saw Bian Si Xuan’s shadow sword had already pierced into Chang Shan Yin’s chest.

Bian Si Xuan pierced it so deep that only the hilt of the shadow sword remained on the outside; the sword had pierced through Fang Yuan’s chest and large part of it stuck out through his back.

"Wolf King, remember, the one who killed you is Shadow Sword Expert Bian Si Xuan!" Bian Si Xuan’s eyes turned red, excitement filling her face.

The famous Wolf King whose name had spread throughout the northern plains died by her hands. This glory, this brilliant battle achievement, caused her whole body to shudder in happiness.

"It’s over!" Dong Po Kuang also raised his brows in joy.

"Wolf King has died, my army has now the upper hand and victory is within grasp." Far away, Dong Fang Yu Liang who was observing the battle with a detective Gu, clenched his fists in excitement.

He raised his head and smiled calmly at Hei Lou Lan who was competing with the cloud whirlpool: "Hei Lou Lan, Chang Shan Yin has been beheaded. Now stop and admit your defeat, I will give you the position of a general and also an opportunity to enter the Imperial Court."

But what made him surprised was Hei Lou Lan not only did not fly into a rage but instead revealed a malevolent smile: "Dong Fang Yu Liang, look carefully with your dog eyes!"

Right at this time, Bian Si Xuan and Dong Po Kuang’s shocked exclamations rose from the twin-headed rhino’s back.

"What?" Dong Fang Yu Liang had a very bad feeling and immediately used his investigative Gu to gaze ahead.

He saw ’Chang Shan Yin’ had already turned into a puddle of water. Several Gu worms flew out with only a water image Gu remaining in the water which was almost pierced into two by the shadow sword with only a thin layer of skin holding its body.

This was the water image Gu of Water Demon Hao Ji Liu.

Previously, he had used water image Gu in the heroes assembly to deceive everyone by passing it off as the genuine body, and was able to kill Fire Prodigal Chai Ming.

Before this great battle, Fang Yuan had taken this method into consideration and made a plan with Hei Lou Lan. To prevent news from leaking out, this arrangement was only known to the three of them.

Fang Yuan’s true body had never been in the main tent, but was instead hiding in a corner of the battlefield. With wolf care Gu, he had been observing the battlefield and commanding the wolf group to fight. The dialogues with Hei Lou Lan previously was also a facade prepared by using a series of Gu worms.

"Damn it, this is a fake."

"Where is the real Chang Shan Yin?"

Bian Si Xuan and Dong Po Kuang’s expressions turned extremely unsightly; they had fought so hard for such a long time but the result was that they were tricked!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

From the back of the twin-headed rhino, Shadow Sword Expert and Flying Lightning looked around everywhere.

In the chaotic battlefield, dozen or so rank four Gu Masters had formed their own battle rings out of which three matches were finished; Hei tribe won two while Dong Fang tribe won one.

Several divisions of elite troops were still fighting against each other, and because of Dong Fang Yu Liang’s scheme, Hei tribe was on the losing end in this aspect.

The battle of wolf group with crocodile, crab and bat group was also in a deadlock.

There was no sign of Fang Yuan, no one knew where he was hiding.

Bian Si Xuan and Dong Po Kong searched in vain, their expression turning several shades darker.

Dong Fang Yu Liang soon accepted the fact of this failure, he smiled brightly: "This is somewhat interesting, but still within my expectations. As long as Wolf King continues to command the wolf group, his soul fluctuations will be revealed and sooner or later, we will find his position. Hei Lou Lan, your loss has only been momentarily delayed."

"Hahaha." Hei Lou Lan threw his head back and laughed loudly, his laughter containing a disdainful intent, "Dong Fang child, you really think I was restrained by you?"

Saying so, the skin on his whole body turned pitch dark like the night. At the same time, endless black smoke oozed out of the pores on his body.

The black smoke surged and soon covered his whole body.

In just moments, Hei Lou Lan turned into a human shaped black smoke with smoke rising in spirals. When looked from outside, one would only see a pair of bloodthirsty eyes.

A very ominent feeling welled up in Dong Fang Yu Liang’s heart.

A thought to retreat immediately crossed in his mind.

However, although the cloud whirlpool was restricting the dark vortex and restraining Hei Lou Lan, in another aspect, was it not same as the dark vortex restricting cloud whirlpool?

The next instant, Hei Lou Lan turned into black smoke and actually entered into the dark vortex.

"Not good!" Dong Fang Yu Liang immediately felt his blood run cold.

But it was already too late.

The dark giant sphere that was as big as a small hill, was originally being slowly swallowed bit by bit by the cloud whirlpool. But suddenly, the dark vortex rapidly shrunk.

The cloud vortex was unable to react in time and quickly contracted with the flow of the dark vortex.

But next instant, the dark vortex suddenly expanded violently.

"No, instead of saying expansion, it is better to call it — explosion!" Dong Fang Yu Liang was overwhelmed.

There was no sound, it was a soundless explosion.

The cloud whirlpool could only hold for three breaths before it was burst by the dark vortex. The dark giant sphere continually enlarged and swallowed everything, be it humans or beasts like a prehistoric giant monster.

Only when it covered a radius of ten li, did the semi-circular dark sphere disappear.

There was no sound wave like that of a normal explosion and also no windforce was generated. This strange tyrannical explosion had the nature of corrosion with the ability to melt everything.

After the dark vortex disappeared, ten li of battlefield was completely cleared, with only Hei Lou Lan remaining in the air and Dong Fang Yu Liang who was in a deep crater on the ground.

All the remaining humans or beasts within the radius of the explosion of the dark vortex were eroded into nothingness!

Hei Lou Lan looked down at Dong Fang Yu Liang with extreme exhaustion, he was gasping for breath and his whole body was soaked in dark red blood.

But the corners of his lips had curled up into a crazed, sinister smile.

"Hahaha, Dong Fang Yu Liang, since you can think of this cloud whirlpool killer move to restrict dark vortex, I can also improve on my killer move! How is it, how is the taste of the banquet I prepared for you meticulously? This is a trump card which I have been concealing all along, not even letting my kin know."

Hei Lou Lan laughed wildly, his laughter echoing throughout the whole battlefield.

For a moment, his aura pressed down on his surroundings, even the Gu Masters in the battle could not help but gaze towards him.

When they saw Hei Lou Lan occupying the upper hand, Hei tribe’s Gu Masters’ morale surged high while Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Masters felt a heavy pressure on their heart.

The generals were the source of courage of the troops, the fight between Hei Lou Lan and Dong Fang Yu Liang was crucial to the soldiers, it was very important and was not only a matter that concerned an individual life or death, but would influence this great battlefield.

"Cough cough..."

Hei Lou Lan was laughing wildly, when suddenly he spurted out several mouthfuls of dark blood.

Although this move was very powerful, it would also cause self-harm. It was classified as a self-harming move and no matter what the result, once it was activated, most of the Gu worms that formed the dark vortex killer move would die.

Once Gu worms died, the Gu Masters would naturally suffer from backlash.

But this move was already very profitable.

In one move, Hei Lou Lan not only escaped from the trap, he was able to counter-pressure Dong Fang Yu Liang and also kill Wei Xin, Jiang Wan Shan and E Xuan Ming who were in three hearts combination soul state.

With these three people dead, the mixed beast group immediately began to fight against each other with there being no one to guide them. Just like Fang Yuan said before, they crumbled.

With this mixed beast group rushing everywhere and attacking recklessly, the battlefield turned even more chaotic.

Dong Fang Yu Liang rose up slowly with a solemn expression.

Hei Lou Lan had kept this move extremely confidential. Dong Fang Yu Liang did not even have a trace of any relevant clue, so he had not expected for the killer move to be improved with such terrifying destructive power.

As a matter of fact, he had secretly prepared a means of escape for E Xuan Ming, Wei Xin and Jiang Wang Shan, which could directly transfer these three to the rear of the battlefield.

However, when Hei Lou Lan was improving on his killer move, he added a space path Gu as well. Thus, when the dark vortex exploded, the surrounding space was locked and Dong Fang Yu Liang’s methods lost their effectiveness.

"Dong Fang Yu Liang, it is still not late for you to accept your defeat. As long as you surrender, I can let bygones be bygones and forget all my past hatred, and appoint you as my first military advisor." Hei Lou Lan tried to make Dong Fang Yu Liang surrender in front of everyone.

Dong Fang Yu Liang coldly smiled.

Hei Lou Lan’s lustful nature was widely known and had already been coveting after his sister Dong Fang Qing Yu. Dong Fang Yu Liang might surrender to other forces, but he would never choose to pledge allegiance to Hei Lou Lan.

"Hei Lou Lan, you are really too optimistic. Even if your side is occupying the upper hand, you are still a long way from victory. Come, let us fight. Seven Star Light!"

Dong Fang Yu Liang softly shouted, seven lights swiftly rose up beside him.

These seven lights had different colors, continually rotating around his body, drawing a beautiful light orbit.

This was Dong Fang Yu Liang’s signature killer move. These seven lights had different effects and under their empowerment, Dong Fang Yu Liang activated star thought Gu.

Whooshh...

Countless thoughts gushed out as bright as starlight. The radiance of these star thoughts could not be covered even by the sunlight.

A sea of star thoughts rose up to the air and within few breaths of time, Dong Fang Yu Liang had tens of thousands of star thoughts.

In the air, starlights merged into one and formed a large patch of star cloud which surged forward with great momentum.

"Hei Lou Lan, take this!" Dong Fang Yu Liang shouted and shot the star thoughts beside him towards Hei Lou Lan.

Such an enormous scale of star thoughts burst through the wind with astonishing grandeur.

"Hmph!" A trace of fear flashed past the depths of Hei Lou Lan’s pupils.

Wisdom path Gu Masters were not defenseless people. Each Gu Master path had its own attacking methods.

A path without any attacking methods would be eliminated and vanish in the passage of history.

Many years ago, Hei Lou Lan and Dong Fang Yu Liang had crossed swords. At that time, just a scale of several thousand star thoughts was enough to make Hei Lou Lan suffer greatly.

Star thoughts were very fast and would directly attack the enemy’s mind from any direction possible, and were very difficult to guard against.

"So many star thoughts, it seems Dong Fang Yu Liang really intends to bet his life! Creating so many star thoughts without any restriction, it is already no longer as simple as injuring soul or body; no matter what the outcome of this battle is, Dong Fang Yu Liang will lose at least two years of his lifespan. My state is not good now, I had better avoid it first."

Hei Lou Lan had thoughts of retreating when he looked at such a large scale of star thoughts.

He disappeared from the spot, appearing thousand steps away.

But star thoughts were as fast as lightning as they chased after Hei Lou Lan without giving up.

Hei Lou Lan snorted, healing himself while continually dodging.

The enormous start cloud formed from the star thoughts, continued to chase after Hei Lou Lan, devastating everything in its path.

Some Gu Masters with weak willpower were directly struck into idiocy by the star thoughts.

Most of the Gu Masters whose minds were struck by star thoughts, immediately felt dizzy and could not keep standing stably.

Only few Gu Master experts with firm willpower, moved their thoughts to destroy the external star thoughts. But because of these Gu Masters resisting the star thoughts, the intense battle had slowed down.

Rank four Gu Masters could rampage through the battlefield, but once a rank five Gu Master moved, they could influence the whole situation.

Dong Fang Yu Liang made an all-out attack, pressing down Hei Lou Lan into disadvantage.The star cloud formed from the majestic star thoughts became the first force to dominate the battlefield.

Although star thoughts exhausted rapidly, the star thoughts Dong Fang Yu Liang created were extremely fast.

As time passed, the size of the star cloud did not decrease, but instead slightly increased.

Almost everyone in the battlefield were concentrating on the star cloud. When the star cloud neared, most of the Gu Masters would choose to flee, afraid of being struck into idiocy.

However, Dong Fang Yu Liang did not have the least bit of joy and was instead filled with worry.

Hei Lou Lan’s movement Gu was outstanding, even star thoughts could not catch up. Dong Fang Yu Liang knew clearly there were two people who were the most significant in Hei alliance army - Hei Lou Lan and Chang Shan Yin.

Right now, Hei Lou Lan was escaping faster than a rabbit while Chang Shan Yin was hiding somewhere, meticulously suppressing his soul and only using a portion to control the wolf group. The chance of bringing him out in the light in this chaotic battlefield was extremely minute.

"Since it is so, I shall destroy your elite troops. I want to see if you can still keep on enduring!" A cold glint flashed in Dong Fang Yu Liang’s eyes; the star thought cloud suddenly changed direction and charged towards the battle rings of the elite troops.

These elite troops were at least of rank two cultivation with rank three Gu Masters as their leaders.

They had numerical advantage but could never be Dong Fang Yu Liang’s match. Under the special consideration of star thought cloud, Hei tribe’s blue butterfly elite troop immediately collapsed with countless casualties.

"My elite troop!" At this sight, Ye tribe leader shouted in heartache.

"Still not coming out?" Dong Fang Yu Liang slightly raised his brows and mobilized star thought cloud to attack war dog elite troop.

War dog elite troop was immediately disrupted and the surrounding elite troops took this chance to besiege them, killing this elite troop quickly and easily.

"My war dog elite troop!" Wang tribe leader’s body trembled in heartache. Who knew how much resources and energy Wang tribe had used to cultivate this elite troop.

Such precious battle force was destroyed within moments.

"Hm, still not coming out to rescue them?" Dong Fang Yu Liang’s brows furrowed deeper. Killing two elite troops one after another had caused a huge consumption in the star thoughts, if not for him continually creating new star thoughts, the star thought cloud would have already been used up.

Despite the empowerment from seven star lights, Dong Fang Yu Liang still felt an intense weakness at this moment. Strands of white began to appear in his bluish-black hair.

"Kill, kill, i want to see how long you can maintain this killer move." Fang Yuan who was hiding in some corner enjoying this scene through wolf care Gu while smiling coldly.

To him, the more people that died, the more souls he would be able to collect after the battle.

Anyway, as long as they obtained victory at the end, he still held the qualification to enter Imperial Court.

Dong Fang Yu Liang was trying to force Fang Yuan out by slaughtering the elite troops; but it will only happen in his sweet dreams.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The battle continued.

Because of Dong Fang Yu Liang using all his strength to attack and slaughtering three elite troops one after another, Dong Fang tribe began to occupy upper hand.

"Kill!"

"Let us kill all these Hei tribe thugs."

"Kill all the men, and take all the women to our camp!"

Dong Fang alliance army’s morale surged high, their offense becoming fiercer as they beat back Hei tribe allied army without giving them room for breather.

However, the originator of this momentum, Dong Fang Yu Liang, was somewhat worried.

"Although we look to be moving towards victory, my side has already shown our trump cards. My killer move seven star lights won’t last for long, if I still can’t force Hei Lou Lan and Chang Shan Yin out, then..."

Dong Fang Yu Liang’s eyes flashed with a cold light when he thought of this.

His clear and incisive eyes gazed towards the mid army of Hei tribe where black banner elite troop was stationed. This division of elite troop had formidable strength, far surpassing others; till now, this precious force had not made any move and was holding their position.

Next, Dong Fang Yu Liang’s gaze moved towards a specific corner of the battlefield.

Ge tribe Gu Masters were gathered there with Ge Guang and the rest being blood-soaked and fighting bravely.

Dong Fang Yu Liang expressionlessly split the star thought cloud into two; one half moved towards black banner elite troop while the other half moved towards Ge tribe.

Seeing the invasion of the star cloud, black banner army’s three commanders paled.

"Defend! All forces activate Gu together!"

The commanders sent the command and all the heads of the black banner elite troop put all their efforts in activating Gu.

Battle thought Gu was similar to star thought Gu and empty thought Gu, and was also one of the wisdom path Gu worms. All the different ranking commanders of black banner elite troop coordinated to activate rank three to rank four Gu.

These battle thought Gu were meant to be used on black banner elite troop. During the battle, the battle thought Gu would enter their brain and surge their battle intent, making them fearless.

Star thought cloud pounced towards them. Red thoughts emerged above the black banner elite troop.

There were few of these battle thoughts, but with them guarding beside the black banner elite troop, the elite troop was able to forcibly resist the impact of the star thought cloud.

"Hei tribe is indeed worthy of being a super tribe, the quality of their elite troop is far beyond that of other tribe’s elite troops." Fang Yuan inwardly praised at this sight.

These black banner elite troop belonged to Hei tribe completely and would keep on accumulating their strength during peaceful times. The Gu Masters in this troop were carefully selected elites, and with the large amounts of training and enormous resources invested in them, they were able to form into a trump card.

Each of them had firm willpower and possessed the ability to resist the thoughts impact by themselves. Now, with the protection of battle thoughts added, the devastation of star thought cloud was restrained for the first time.

Naturally, there was a crucial reason for this; Dong Fang Yu Liang had not used all his strength in this and had divided the star thought cloud into two, only using half of it to attack black banner elite troop.

Black banner elite troop’s breathtaking performance shocked the people, forming a clear contrast with the other devastated elite troops.

While on the Ge tribe’s side, miserable screams kept on ringing out; they were being slaughtered under the attack of the majestic star thoughts.

Fang Yuan watched this indifferently. He was able to use wolf care Gu very proficiently, allowing him to see Ge tribe’s miserable condition clearly.

Ge tribe was no more than one of his chess pieces to disguise his identity. As the chessmaster, why would he put himself in danger because of a chess piece?

"Still not coming out?..." Dong Fang Yu Liang waited patiently for a while, secretly observing with his detection Gu; as long as Fang Yuan made any move to rescue the Ge tribe, he would be able to pinpoint Fang Yuan’s exact location through the soul fluctuations.

But, no matter how long he waited, Fang Yuan did not make any move.

Such cold and heartless action of Wolf King made Dong Fang Yu Liang feel a chill down his spine.

On the contrary, when Hei Lou Lan saw his black banner elite troop showing signs of not being able to hold off anymore, he quickly made his move.

"Dong Fang Yu Liang, die!" He shouted with a grandeur that looked like he had already recovered from the backlash.

Dong Fang Yu Liang snorted, large numbers of new star thoughts emerged above his head and charged towards Hei Lou Lan.

The two collided in the mid-air, exchanging many moves; for a time, the victor or the loser could not be determined.

With Hei Lou Lan’s interference, the star thought cloud that was causing troubles for black banner elite troop had no more support, and completely disappeared after causing mayhem for a while.

The battlefield that had turned chaotic for a while, again entered a deadlock.

A smaller part of the dozen or so rank four battle rings, had already ended with the result ending in death or injuries. Among them, Wind Demon and Water Demon were still fighting. Shadow Sword Expert Bian Si Xuan and Flying Lightning Dong Po Kong, however, were moving back and forth in the battlefield.

These two both had outstanding movement Gu, and even when they were blocked by rank four Gu Masters, they were able to easily get past them.

They were continuously searching for Fang Yuan’s traces, but unfortunately Fang Yuan kept on hiding without making any moves, causing their search to be fruitless.

....

At the same time, in Ni Yu blessed land, two Gu Immortals, a male and a female, were sipping tea while observing the smoke image on the center of the table.

The smoke image kept on surging, showing the scenes of the battle between Hei tribe and Dong Fang tribe. The scenes were extremely clear, showing minute details of every corner.

The female Gu Immortal Tan Bi Ya looked away and smiled towards the male Gu Immortal Dong Fang Chang Fan: "Looks like this battle will be determined by the battle between Dong Fang Yu Liang and Hei Lou Lan. Whichever side wins will be the side that will occupy the upper hand. Dong Fang Yu Liang, this young man is pretty good, being able to bring the battle into a stalemate while having weaker military forces than Hei tribe, it seems Brother Chang Fan’s guidance is quite effective."

Dong Fang Chang Fan had an ancient noble appearance, with eyes that intermittently flashed with all kinds of colors. This sole wisdom path Gu Immortal of Dong Fang tribe indifferently shook his head and said with indifference:

"Actually I only said two to three sentences to Dong Fang Yu Liang. But this young lad is indeed good and quite interesting. After returning, he wantonly proclaimed this and rose up borrowing my prestige. He has some talent and also puts in great efforts. I have already promised him that as long as he can be the Lord of the Imperial Court, I will heal his little sister and nurture him as one of my successors."

"Become the Lord of Imperial Court?" Tan Bi Ya was slightly dazed before smiling, "Please forgive little sister for being blunt; in this round of the Imperial Court contest, I am afraid Dong Fang tribe does not have a high chance. Within the several popular candidates this year, Ye Lui tribe’s Ye Lui Sang is thought to have a high chance by everyone. This time, Ye Lui tribe’s Supreme Elder Ye Lui Lai has secretly entrusted an Immortal Gu to Ye Lui Sang. This is already an open secret in the circle."

"Ye Lui tribe might be part of the Huang Jin family and one of the super tribes of northern plains, but they haven’t gained ownership of Imperial Court for the last eight rounds. Because of this, Ye Lui Lai has been made fun of by Hei Cheng of Hei tribe in these days. He is probably mobilizing Immortal Gu this time to regain face." Dong Fang Chang Fan chuckled after he finished speaking, his chuckle seemed to contain disdain.

Tan Bi Ya sipped tea and said: "Yes, speaking of Hei Cheng, Hei Lou Lan is his twenty-seventh concubine’s child. This is his son, so he has been actively supporting from behind because of sentiment and principle. Thus, Hei Lou Lan is also one of the popular candidates. Historically speaking, the struggle for the Imperial Court is no more than a competition between several large Huang Jin family tribes. Those that are able to be the Lord of Imperial Court have immense support from behind. From what I see, Hei Lou Lan’s chances are much higher than your tribe’s Dong Fang Yu Liang."

Dong Fang Chang Fan, however, slowly shook his head.

Tan Bi Ya’s eyes flashed with a trace of interest at this: "What is it? Could it be Brother Chang Fan also privately gave an Immortal Gu to Dong Fang Yu Liang? Or maybe you set up some arrangements to ensure Dong Fang Yu Liang becomes the Lord of Imperial Court?"

Wisdom path Gu Masters had the ability to scheme deeply and make deductions; most Gu Immortals have either experienced this personally or have heard of it. Wisdom path Gu Immortals were few in numbers, Dong Fang Chang Fan was a famous wisdom path Gu Master of northern plains; if he had secretly made arrangements and as long as it did not openly break the game rules for the fight for Imperial Court, Dong Fang Yu Liang would have a great probability of success.

However, Dong Fang Chang Fan negated Tan Bi Ya’s conjecture: "No. During this round’s competition for Imperial Court, Ma tribe has enormous momentum and could be said to have one foot on the throne of Imperial Court. Why would I Dong Fang Chang Fan do pointless work?"

He, Dong Fang Chang Fan, was already old and did not have much time left.

He had calculated that the time of his death was around the corner and thus for the tribe and also for his legacy to be continued, the matter of importance was to choose and nurture his successor. The fight for the Imperial Court was secondary.

Not all Gu Masters could become wisdom path Gu Masters by having a set of wisdom path Gu worms. Dong Fang Chang Fan was very pleased with Dong Fang Yu Liang’s talents and even was slightly fearful. What made him even more pleased was Dong Fang Yu Liang had a weak and sick little sister who was unable to cultivate.

This was Dong Fang Yu Liang’s weakness, and as long as he grasped this hold on him, he would not need to worry about Dong Fang Yu Liang’s loyalty.

The fight for the imperial court was only a plan he set for Dong Fang Yu Liang.

After Dong Fang Yu Liang was defeated, he would definitely come to beg him to save his little sister. This was akin to him gaining a hold on Dong Fang Yu Liang of the latter’s own initiative.

If Dong Fang Yu Liang succeeds by fluke, that would also be an unexpected surprise. Even though he had promised Dong Fang Yu Liang to heal his little sister, who is to say if she would be cured completely?

Tan Bi Ya was surprised: "What is this? Brother Chang Fan, you actually are optimistic about Ma tribe? Ma tribe might be a large scale tribe with quite extraordinary military strength, but they don’t have an Gu Immortal supreme elder."

Dong Fang Chang Fan seemed to be waiting for this question as he leisurely replied: "Sister Bi Ya, you are unaware that snowy mountain blessed land has already secretly contacted Ma tribe to give them support."

"Snowy mountain blessed land, that group of demonic path Gu Immortals?" Tan Bi Ya’s complexion sank as the news had quite a huge impact on her.

She closely looked at Dong Fang Chang Fan: "Brother Chang Fan, How did you know this?"

Dong Fang Chang Fan proudly smiled: "I personally deduced this, you are the first one to know of it."

Tan Bi Ya immediately believed most of it; Dong Fang Chang Fan was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, this deduction he made personally should be equal to the truth. She also knew his details and knew he did not have any reason to deceive her.

Moreover, snowy mountain blessed land’s group of demonic path Gu Immortals had always been coveting after Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. This time, they were secretly supporting Ma tribe to get their hands on Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s inheritance, such things had happened many times in the past as well.

Thinking of this, she could not remain seated anymore.

She was Liu tribe’s external supreme elder and was secretly supporting Liu Wen Wu. In case Liu Wen Wu obtained the throne of Imperial Court, it would be an extremely big help to her status in Liu tribe.

Ma tribe’s existence had severely affected her arrangement. She naturally could not be tolerant and stood up: "Brother Chang Fan, this matter is of grave importance. Demonic path Gu Immortals are jackals and wolves, the others are still in the dark. Little sister will go inform them, please forgive little sister for taking her leave."

"Go, go." Dong Fang Chang Fan slowly nodded and opened the door of the blessed land.

After Tan Bi Ya left the blessed land, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s face that had no change like an ancient well, showed a hint of a smile.

This discussion was a scheme he had made for Tan Bi Ya.

Tan Bi Ya was also an astute Gu Immortal, but since she was involved herself and also had her own expectations from this, she could be easily plotted against.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s gaze moved towards the smoke image where some changes had appeared in the battle.

After a long fight, Dong Fang Yu Liang was slowly unable to hold up and began to retreat. With the main chief commander retreating, the army morale instantly fell and under Dong Fang Yu Liang’s command, also began to retreat.

The army was rattled but retreated without rushing, they had clearly received a lot of training.

Dong Fang Yu Liang had already expected this, thus he had spent a lot of care in planning the retreat prior to the battle.

Dong Fang army slowly retreated while counter attacking occasionally; many Gu Masters of Hei tribe were instead the ones to lose their lives due to carelessness.

"Wind Demon, you gutless rat, want to run?" Water Demon Hao Ji Liu shouted, his body was filled with injuries and was soaked in blood.

Wind Demon scoffed but did not reply, instead retreating silently, firmly acting on Dong Fang Yu Liang’s command.

The defensive line the army had constructed before was several hundreds of li farther. As long as they could retreat to the defense line, they would have time to get some rest and recover their strength.

At that time, it would be Hei tribe army’s turn to feel a headache, and this bad start would only be a small detail.

However, right at this time, wolf group suddenly howled and gathered together, once again forming into a wolf tide that unfolded a death charge towards Dong Fang army.

The wolf group was different from Gu Masters; Gu Masters cherished their lives while the wolf group could charge on without fearing death.

"Damn it!" Dong Fang Yu Liang’s heart was tearing as he looked at this. Under the wolf group’s charge, Dong Fang alliance army suffered countless casualties and panic soon spread in the army, continuing to show signs of crumbling.

Fang Yuan used eighty percent of his master level enslavement attainment. The people who looked at it were dazzled as the assault came in waves after waves, unceasingly; Dong Fang army was like mud which under the cleansing of the wolf tide, broke apart piece by piece.

The strong soul fluctuations revealed Fang Yuan’s position.

But Fang Yuan was already in the open now; he was standing on the calm twin-headed rhino with many Gu Master experts gathering beside him.

"Wolf King Chang Shan Yin..." Dong Fang Yu Liang gnashed his teeth, his eyes seemingly breathing fire.

In this battle, he had thoroughly experienced the ruthlessness and the ferocity of Fang Yuan.

Don’t forget, Fang Yuan had only acted twice in this battle!

The first time he moved, he directly created the all-out war, causing many of Dong Fang Yu Liang’s arrangements to have no place to be used.

And now, the second time he moved, was the time when Dong Fang army was its weakest, throwing stones at them when they were having difficulties. Right now, the Gu Masters almost had no primeval essence in their aperture, having risked their lives for so long. Although they still had strength to battle, they were perishing together with the wolves.

Fang Yuan’s wolf group also had severe losses. But this was already a great profit, his wolves could be easily replenished, there were many wolves in northern plains! But the sacrifice the other side had to make were precious Gu Masters!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Dong Fang army suffered huge losses within a short period of time, and they abandoned the large numbers of corpses as they retreated.

"Run!"

"Run, it will be too late if we don’t go now!!"

The situation Dong Fang Yu Liang was most worried about finally happened - Dong Fang alliance army collapsed with no intent to battle, only concentrating on escaping. Hei tribe army took this chance to unfold a cruel massacre.

Dong Fang Yu Liang gnashed his teeth and promptly mobilized rank four Gu Master experts to hold back the enemy.

The experts turned around and dealt a heavy blow, restraining the momentum of Hei tribe army. But this did not last long as Hei tribe’s rank four Gu Master experts took the stage and hindered the Dong Fang tribe’s experts.

Dong Fang Yu Liang made a move again, but was pinned down by Hei Lou Lan.

Seeing his side troops chasing after the enemy and having the momentum in unfolding cruel massacre, Fang Yuan stopped and summoned the wolf group beside him.

This move immediately won favorable impression from the black banner elite troop’s commander who was beside him.

In his view, this was a great chance for Wolf King to get battle contributions, but the latter instead gave these battle achievements to others. This commander praised Fang Yuan openly.

Fang Yuan knew the other party was trying to express goodwill. Hei Xiu Yi had been appointed as his bodyguard, but Xiu Yi deserted him in the face of danger, and if not for the water image Gu, he would have already been dead.

However, Fang Yuan never counted on someone else’s protection; he only relied on himself. Moreover, Hei Xiu Yi was Hei Lou Lan’s trusted general and because of this, he would not be able to do anything to Hei Xiu Yi if he raised this topic. Even if he could, Fang Yuan was not willing to be in such pointless internal friction.

He casually replied, secretly hinting the commander that he did not put this matter in heart.

Only then did the commander let out a breath of relief, secretly feeling: though Wolf King was arrogant, he was truly magnanimous and extraordinary.

Finally, Dong Fang army made a mad run to the first defense line, paying a disastrous price for this.

Twenty percent of the whole army had died during the first battle but fifty percent had died during the chase by the wolf group and the enemy. The remaining thirty percent who were injured and disabled managed to run to the defense line.

Among the rank four experts, two died in the process of holding back Hei tribe army.

The Hei tribe army chased without stopping, but they were shot through by the feather arrow elite troops who were standing on the defense walls, and lost hundreds of people before running away in sorry figures.

This was the elite troop that the Dong Fang tribe had cultivated by spending a lot of care and resources; they were not any weaker than the black banner elite troop.

Hei tribe’s Gu Masters tried to charge through three times but were shot back into retreat by the feather arrow elite troop. Hei Lou Lan mobilized the rank four Gu Masters to charge forward, but they were trapped by Dong Fang Yu Liang’s arrangement and lost three experts.

"Lord alliance leader, the enemy is relying on their location to defend and they occupy the geographical advantage. Our side has fought hard for long, we don’t have sufficient primeval essence to keep on fighting, it would be better to retreat for now and make new plans." The group of experts returned to the main tent where cunning gentleman Sun Shi Han suggested this idea.

Fang Yuan’s brows furrowed; he had his previous life memories and knew Dong Fang Yu Liang was very good at handling messy situations, winning against stronger opponents as the weaker side. If they delayed for long, the amount of intel he would receive would increase and it would be more unfavorable for Hei tribe.

This time, there was Fang Yuan’s interference which led to the Hei tribe occupying a greater dominance than in his previous life, but Dong Fang Yu Liang who was in a good shape was an enormous threat. To deal with Dong Fang Yu Liang, the best way was to continue attacking, without giving him the chance to scheme and calculate.

Hei Lou Lan pondered on cunning gentleman’s suggestion in silence. He had crossed hands with Dong Fang Yu Liang before and was well acquainted with Dong Fang Yu Liang’s methods. He did not want to let go of this chance in front of him and thus his gaze moved towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan proudly smiled and said to Hei Lou Lan: "Hei tribe leader does not need to worry, I can guarantee you that I will break this defense line in just a quarter of an hour."

The crowd raised their eyebrows in surprise while cunning gentleman sneered, feeling Fang Yuan was boasting.

Hei Lou Lan, however, was joyous: "Then I shall see the Wolf King’s ability."

The wolf group once again gathered together and unfolded an endless charge at Dong Fang tribe’s first line of defense.

The Dong Fang tribe defended very tightly and in just moments, wolf corpses littered under the walls.

Hei tribe’s troops were overwhelmed at this sight; Fang Yuan was simply sending the wolf group to their death, disregarding the sacrifices.

Especially the feather arrow elite troop; they were experts at long distance attacks and were with the direction of the wind from the walls. Rank four experts acted as emergency response group, moving everywhere; as long as an area showed signs of falling, they would move one after another to avert the disaster.

Dong Fang tribe’s defense line was truly like a fortress.

Fang Yuan scoffed while continuously activating wolf howl Gu, and creating shocking variations in the assault. Every variation brought an enormous threat to the defense line.

This high intensity of battle caused enormous sacrifices in the wolf group; two hundred and eighty thousand wolves had died in a short period of time!

Fang Yuan was expressionless as he commanded the wolf group from the twin-headed rhinoceros’s back. The gazes the crowd in the main tent looked at him quietly changed.

Wolf King’s ruthlessness caused fear to emerged in these people.

Such a majestic and fierce wolf tide gave them a feeling of being insignificant.

"Wolf King Chang Shan Yin, such a ruthless heart you have, do you want to spare none!?" Dong Fang Yu Liang’s expression was heavy. The large numbers of sacrifices in the wolf group were exchanged with intense consumption of primeval essence of Dong Fang army.

He was extremely regretful. If he had known this, he would rather give up on Hei Lou Lan, to take Chang Shan Yin’s life!

Finally, Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Masters could not hold up anymore, and the wolf group’s offence made them so exhausted that they did not even have time to take a breather, much less recover their primeval essence.

"Retreat!" Helplessly, Dong Fang Yu Liang could only send down the command to retreat.

Just like Fang Yuan proclaimed, after a quarter of an hour, Dong Fang tribe’s first line of defense was broken. Dong Fang Yu Liang left behind a group of crippled Gu Masters to cover their retreat, and led the remaining troops to escape towards the second defense line in the fastest speed possible.

"My wolf group is very exhausted and is not fit to chase them anymore." Fang Yuan withdrew his wolf group and made way to give Hei tribe army the chance to move.

This action won him almost everyone’s good impressions.

"I have sustained some injuries in this battle, you guys chase them and kill them all. But be careful, that Dong Fang lad definitely has some arrangements." Hei Lou Lan did not move from the main tent, and instead sent Hao Ji Liu, Pan Ping, the Wang tribe leader and others to chase.

The crowd excitedly crossed over the broken defense line and moved in pursuit.

But the troops had just crossed over the defense line when an intense explosion suddenly burst out.

BOOM! Just like the crackling of a thunder, dozens of Gu Masters were instantly fried, leaving behind flesh and broken limbs on the ground.

BOOM BOOM BOOM...

Immediately after that, large numbers of explosions exploded in a chain-reaction, covering the whole defense line.

The troops who went to chase immediately suffered huge losses and fell into chaos.

"It is charred thunder potato Gu! Dong Fang Yu Liang buried large numbers of them under the defense line!" The investigative Gu Masters returned to report in the main tent.

"I can see it!" Hei Lou Lan's expression was extremely dark as he waved his hand for the investigative Gu Masters to take their leave.

He was not stupid and immediately realized he had been schemed by Dong Fang Yu Liang.

Setting up so many charred thunder potato Gu would require a long time. This time was actually given by Hei Lou Lan.

Before the battle, Dong Fang Yu Liang had purposely sent a challenge letter to start the war. In retaliation, Hei Lou Lan listened to cunning gentleman's words and delayed it for several days, only starting the battle after his rear army gathered. This gave Dong Fang Yu Liang the chance to put this plan in action.

The explosions continued without an end, inflicting many casualties among the Hei tribe army. The most crucial point was that their pursuit had stopped; the Hei tribe army could only watch as the Dong Fang tribe's remnant troops safely escaped.

Charred thunder potato Gu might only be a rank two Gu with limited power but there was just too many of it.

Besides this, there were also many rank three muffled thunder potato Gu and a few rank four thunderclap potato Gu mixed among them.

Even if Gu Masters were able to activate defensive Gu and preserve their life, their primeval essence would be greatly consumed. There were only a few Gu Masters who had flying Gu worms. Even if these people could catch up to the enemy, their strength was weak and would instead be giving Dong Fang tribe the opportunity to kill them.

The Gu Masters who had been worked up and excited to establish merits, finally returned to the camp in a sorry figure, full of injuries.

"We have already gained a huge victory today, Dong Fang lad is only delaying his death. I can still have the pleasure of killing him later!" Hei Lou Lan pacified himself and began to handle the postwar affairs.

Cleaning the battlefield, healing the injured, listing the battle merits; these were all complicated affairs that required energy and time.

Fang Yuan naturally was not willing to waste his precious time on this. He casually gave an excuse and left the main tent, returning to his large lizard house Gu to continue cultivating.

He had established huge contributions in this battle, and although he only moved a few times, each time was crucial. In front of his military success and position of strength, even cunning gentleman kept quiet, much less anyone else.

"The Wolf King was not injured by the blast?...." Dong Fang Yu Liang listened to the battle information from the detective Gu Master, and felt quite regretful.

Through this battle, he placed Fang Yuan as the number one enemy with threat even higher than Hei Lou Lan.

Chang Shan Yin was extremely cunning and vicious, not even caring about Ge tribe’s life or death. Although he was only at rank four peak stage, he was much more troublesome than Hei Lou Lan.

Dong Fang Yu Liang had originally calculated that the chance for Chang Shan Yin to mobilize his wolf group to chase them was very high.

But his meticulously prepared trap did not even ensnare a single wolf, and instead killed large numbers of Hei tribe’s Gu Masters.

A Gu Master’s life was much much more precious than wild wolves. But Dong Fang Yu Liang was not happy.

To a wisdom path Gu Master who were experts at deductions and schemes, a strong and powerful enemy was not troublesome. But even though the Wolf King was strong, he was not conceited, and instead was a very calm opponent; such opponents were a thorn in the neck.

It was precisely because of Fang Yuan’s few times of making a move that caused Dong Fang army to fall from slightly losing position to utter defeat. From this, a gap appeared in the two sides where the Hei tribe was in a clear superiority and Dong Fang army was in a disadvantage, in a worsening situation.

Looking at this battle coming to an end, in Ni Yu blessed land, Dong Fang Chang Fan retracted his gaze and collected the smoke on the table into his sleeves.

Even without a need to deduce, he could tell that Dong Fang Yu Liang was already in an absolute disadvantage after this battle. Unless Hei Lou Lan made a great mistake, Dong Fang Yu Liang’s hopes of advancing to Imperial Court had become very minute.

However, Dong Fang Yu Liang had performed remarkably in the battle, even creating a stalemate with his comparatively weaker military force. He had made full use of all the cards available to him.

"Especially his move in protecting the tribe’s strength, which caused there to not be a single loss in feather arrow elite troop. This is his loyalty towards the tribe. Now, it is a test to see how well he deals with this messy situation." Dong Fang Chang Fan slowly closed his eyes, very pleased with this point.

Other tribe’s casualties were their matters, it was okay as long as Dong Fang tribe’s losses were not large.

The struggle for the Imperial Court by itself was an arrangement set by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable; one of the objectives was to preserve his bloodline while weakening the other tribes!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The red cloud surged in the air, giving Fang Yuan a burning hot feeling.

Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged on a mat with his eyes closed, his mind holding the fire cloud together.

"It is time." He inwardly calculated the time and slowly opened his eyes, after which he took out a wine vat.

The wine vat was filled with dark blue liquid, giving off a shine like the reflection of the moon on the sea.

"Descend." Fang Yuan softly spoke and the fire cloud in the air slowly fell down, pouring completely into the wine vat.

For a moment, the contact of fire and water along with their merging produced thick black smoke.

The black smoke rapidly pervaded the whole room.

Fang Yuan could not even see his own fingers as if he was in a dark night.

With a shift of his mind, the wine vat suddenly let out an attraction force that completely absorbed all the black smoke within a few breaths of time.

The room was bright once again with a vague sweetness remaining in the air.

Fang Yuan repeatedly flicked his finger, throwing Gu worm after Gu worm into the wine vat. The wine vat kept on shaking for two-three minutes before finally calming down.

Fang Yuan gazed into the wine vat and only saw black mud inside. Those Gu worms he had thrown inside had completely merged together, forming a semi-finished product that was concealed in the center of the black mud.

"Rise." Fang Yuan cautiously poured his primeval essence.

The surface of the black mud broke open and a thin, delicate sprout grew out of it. The delicate sprout was glossy green and grew rapidly, already growing into a small sapling in an instant.

The sapling grew thicker with a visible speed, slowly growing upwards. Conversely, the black mud in the wine vat rapidly decreased.

When the black mud decreased to eighty percent, the small tree stopped growing. The crown of the tree had formed into a tight shape, like a clenched green fist.

"Open." Fang Yuan gave a light shout and simultaneously poured in large amounts of primeval essence into the tree.

The green fist slowly opened, revealing a Gu worm in its palm.

This Gu had a long oval body with a dark brown carapace. A majestic horn was on its head, which made it look thick and powerful.

It had four pairs of long strong legs and its whole body emitted a glossy metallic luster. One look at it was enough for anyone to know that it was not an ordinary Gu.

A trace of joy flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

This Gu was precisely the all-out effort Gu which he had failed to advance three times before, finally succeeding in this fourth try.

Fang Yuan carefully observed, examining the differences in before and after the refinement.

Rank three all-out effort Gu only had three pairs of legs and because it was from the Southern Border, it received the region’s restriction and was suppressed to rank two.

Rank four all-out effort Gu had four pairs of legs and was larger in size, over two times bigger than its rank three counterpart. And because it was refined in Northern Plains, it became a Northern Plains Gu and did not suffer from suppression, thus letting out a genuine rank four aura.

"With this rank four Gu, my strength path battle strength has immediately recovered for the most part. I will have to make preparations for its rank five recipe. Fortunately, I now possess a blessed land and can connect to treasure yellow heaven, and also have some connection with Lang Ya blessed land. There is hope in getting hold of all-out effort Gu’s rank five recipe."

Fang Yuan stored this new all-out effort Gu into his aperture and cleaned the room once before coming out of the large lizard house Gu.

Outside was a bright and beautiful scene.

Large numbers of Gu Masters were moving back and forth between countless tents, hurrying about their respective affairs. Some were going to supply camps to exchange for Gu worms, some were returning after cleaning up the battlefield and some were building up defensive structures.

Eight days had passed since the great battle with Dong Fang alliance army.

In these eight days, Hei tribe’s army kept its patience, cleaning up the battlefield everyday, making details of battle merits and healing the injured.

These serious and diverse affairs caused the army higher ups to be extremely busy. A mountain of paperworks had piled up on Hei Lou Lan’s table. Cunning gentleman was given heavy responsibilities and was so busy that he had not slept for three days and three nights, and his face had become pale as paper. Each of the tribe leaders were also very busy, rushing about to fight for the benefits of their respective tribes.

As people holding top positions, they naturally had their own duty and responsibility.

In this period of time, Ge Guang also looked for Fang Yuan several times, hoping Fang Yuan would come out for Ge tribe’s benefits, but Fang Yuan ignored and refused to see him, only concentrating in cultivating.

In this time, they appeared to be free and unconstrained like those demonic path Gu Masters. For the most part, they did not receive any implications and only looked after themselves; apart from checking whether their battle merits had not been embezzled, they were either healing their injuries or using battle merits to exchange for new Gu worms, actively preparing for war.

The treatment abilities of this world was far above that on earth.

On Earth, amputated limbs would mean becoming a disabled. If fingers were cut off, the fingers would need to be preserved and transplanted within a set period of time. And this transplantation had a chance of failure.

But in this world, even if one’s limbs were completely cut off, they could be directly grown under the healing effects of Gu worms.

Basically, as long as the Gu Masters were not inflicted with troublesome injuries, they could be healed.

Thus, although only a short period of eight days had passed, the number of injured in Hei tribe army had already decreased by eighty percent, among which most had recovered the ability to fight.

As one went nearer towards the supply camps, they would discover a bigger stream of people.

Over these days, large numbers of Gu Masters came here to exchange their battle merits for goods.

The supply camps became the most busy place in the whole camp. They opened fifteen large tents in a row with each tent occupying at least 3.25 acres, and over a thousand Gu Masters were working to serve people. But even so, the supply camp was packed with people and every tent was crowded and clamorous.

"Subordinate greets Lord Wolf King, please come this way lord." When Fang Yuan arrived at the supply camp, a professional female Gu Master led him to a Gu house with a smile on her face.

As long as there was an organization, there would be hierarchy, upper and lower levels and also difference in treatments.

Fang Yuan belonged to the upper layer in the whole army and the treatment he received would naturally be different from ordinary people.

"Lord Wolf King is mighty, you are the first in the battle merit list in this battle!" The young and beautiful female Gu Master handed a scroll to Fang Yuan with a look of worship.

Fang Yuan gently pulled apart the two ends of the scroll and saw Chang Shan Yin at the very start. After his name was the amount of battle merit, which was a series of numbers written in Northern Plains’ language, denoting over a hundred thousand characters. Fang Yuan only roughly glanced at it.

In this world, battle merits were easy to calculate.

Because there were large numbers of Gu worms that could monitor or capture images. In every large battle, every tribe would use large numbers of Gu worms to record the whole process of the battle. Besides the purpose of calculating the battle merits, it was more importantly for assimilating experience, gathering intel, probing the enemy’s real details and understanding one’s own side’s deficiencies.

Besides this, many Gu Masters would also use their own Gu worms to record their own battle.

With all these details and images of every corner, the battle merits would be calculated again and again to verify the correct statistic.

Fang Yuan opened the scroll further; under his name was Hei Lou Lan. His battle merit was over eighty thousand.

Hei Lou Lan fought and pinned down Dong Fang Yu Liang who was the strongest expert in the enemy’s side. At the same time, he killed Wei Xin, E Xuan Ming and Wan Shan who were under three hearts combination soul, getting rid of the mixed beast group; this was an enormous battle contribution.

Under Hei Lou Lan was Water Demon Hao Ji Liu, Wang tribe leader, Pan Ping and so on with tens of thousands as their battle merits.

As Fang Yuan went further down, the battle merits became less and less. After the top ten, the battle merits fell down to over nine thousand. After the top twenty, the battle merits fell down to around seven to eight thousand.

The scroll recorded one hundred and six people altogether, with most having around three thousand battle merits.

It was clear this scroll was the list of the highest battle merits achiever. The complete battle merit list was erected in the fifteen large tents and was as large as defense walls, with large numbers of swimword Gu used on them. Thus, the characters on the surface of the large list would flicker time to time, showing the change in the battle merits.

The battle merits statistics had started from the moment the battle started, and would keep on being maintained.

Some Gu Masters would exchange their battle merits for Gu worms, thus their battle merits would fall. Some Gu Masters' battle merits would instead continue to rise. Especially healing Gu Masters, they would have considerable gains in the postwar.

Fang Yuan placed the scroll to the side. The female Gu Master had been observing his expression and at this moment, she handed over a Gu worm.

This Gu worm looked like a ladybug with square carapace, protruding edges while the middle part was sunken like a window frame.

This was rank four east window Gu, an information path Gu, used to store information.

Previously at Lang Ya blessed land, when Fang Yuan asked for the information on Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the Lang Ya land spirit had given him an east window Gu.

Fang Yuan took the east window Gu and held it in his hand, pouring primeval essence into it.

East window Gu gave off a glimmer, and an enormous amount of information poured into Fang Yuan's mind.

There was a large number of goods including Gu worms from every path, beasts, vegetation, primeval stones, variant men, Gu recipes and so on.

These goods were put up by all tribes, and according to rules, as the alliance leader, Hei tribe put forward the maximum number of goods, no less than half of all these goods.

Soon, Fang Yuan discovered many things he wanted to purchase from these goods.

Although Fang Yuan could connect to treasure yellow heaven through Little Hu Immortal, the transactions in treasure yellow heaven was the transactions between great sects and clans, which used immortal essence stones as the currency. It was not suitable for Fang Yuan's current state.

At the same time there was also the mysterious force represented by Old Man Yan Shi who was coveting after Fang Yuan's fixed immortal travel Gu. If Fang Yuan wanted to buy rank five Gu to raise his strength, he would need to buy Northern Plains' Gu worms. If he did that, it would definitely provide an important evidence to this wisdom path Gu Immortal.

Thus, the supply camp was much more suitable to the current Fang Yuan than treasure yellow heaven.

"Among my strength path Gu worms, all-out effort Gu has been raised to rank four and has adapted to Northern Plains. But I still have rank three strength qi Gu, tusita flower, primeval elder Gu, self-reliance Gu as well as rank four bitter strength, expend strength Gu and charging crash Gu. These Gu are all from Southern Border and is under region suppression in the Northern Plains."

"To remove the region’s suppression, I would need to advance these Gu to higher rank in Northern Plains. But to do so would mean too much investment."

There was a probability of failure in Gu refinement.

Even though Fang Yuan had close to master level skill in refinement path, he was not exempted from this probability.

The rank four all-out effort Gu he refined had failed several times before succeeding. The refinement of nauseous crying baby Gu failed for over ten times, yet it still did not succeed in the end.

The higher the rank of the Gu, the higher the probability of failing the refinement. This was especially so for rank five Gu as those were very challenging and difficult to refine, with the probability of success usually being less than one in a thousand.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Advancing bitter strength Gu, expend strength Gu and charging crash Gu to rank five was a huge project; Fang Yuan would need to use large amounts of materials and Gu worms.

Thus, often only the Gu Immortals who had blessed lands had the capital to gather a complete set of rank five Gu.

It was very hard for mortals to bear such a price.

Thus, in the mortal world, a lot of rank five Gu Masters did not even have one rank five Gu. Only people like Hei Lou Lan and Dong Fang Yu Liang who had the support of a large force behind them had one or two rank five Gu.

In the information provided by east window Gu, there was only a dark path rank five Gu that could be exchanged with battle merits.

"My enslavement path Gu originated from Chang Shan Yin, almost all are rank four and it will be extremely difficult to raise them to rank five in a short period of time. Thus, I need to concentrate on gathering Gu recipes, just in case."

"As for my strength path Gu, those originate from Southern Border; rather than refining them, it might be better to make direct purchases. After all, these Gu are not my vital Gu, so if the refinement fails, they will perish. And if I want to refine again, I will have to accumulate them again.’

Fang Yuan’s plan was the same as the choice many foreign region Gu Masters sensibly made in the troubled times that were to come in the future.

He made his choice.

There was only one rank five Gu among the goods, but there were many rank four Gu including bitter strength Gu, tusita flower and primeval elder Gu.

But there was no charging crash Gu.

Fang Yuan could only opt for the next best choice and choose two pairs of rank three horizontal charge Gu and vertical crash Gu, intending to fuse them himself.

Self-reliance Gu was a perfect match for strength path Gu Masters, and a rare Gu at that. In Hei tribe’s enormous list of goods, there was one self-reliance Gu, but unfortunately it was only at rank two, even lower than Fang Yuan’s.

Rank three self-reliance Gu could reach a price of forty-five thousand primeval stones which corresponded to forty-five hundred battle merits.

A rank four self-reliance Gu’s price could be compared to a rank five Gu, and had a very low possibility of appearing in the exchange list.

Fang Yuan pondered and bought this rank two self-reliance Gu as well. If there was truly no other way, he could only try to refine it.

If the self-reliance Gu was like this, then there was no need to even mention strength qi Gu.

Strength qi Gu was already extinct in the mortal markets, and Fang Yuan’s strength qi Gu was obtained by reverse refining rank four atmosphere Gu.

But the atmosphere Gu was rank four, and was not a mainstream Gu, and was also very rare on top of that.

If Fang Yuan wanted to obtain strength qi Gu, he could only use Northern Plains’ atmosphere Gu and reverse refine it to rank three strength qi Gu.

He had rank five cultivation now; rank three strength qi Gu was not suitable for him anymore, rank three Gu’s help to him now was extremely small.

"Since there is no expend strength Gu, then so be it. After all, this Gu is used for restricting strength path and has few applications. If I don’t have strength qi Gu, it will truly be miserable; I will be lacking long range attack methods and land in the most common predicament of present age strength path Gu Masters."

Strength qi Gu might not be treated as a core Gu, but it was extremely important to strength path Gu Masters.

"So I can only try to gather rank four and rank five recipes of strength qi Gu for now. Qi path has already died out, treasure yellow heaven has them but the prices are definitely high. Perhaps my greatest hope is in Lang Ya blessed land. But Lang Ya land spirit is not easy to deal with, I will have to pay a huge price if I want to obtain the recipe."

Just when Fang Yuan was inwardly vexed about this problem, he suddenly had a realization.

"Eh? Wrong." His mind received a slight jolt.

"Even if my strength path doesn’t have long ranged attack methods, my enslavement path can make up for it! My situation is no longer the same now, I have two apertures, I cultivate enslavement and strength path, they can complement each other."

Fang Yuan’s view suddenly cleared up.

Although he was someone who had been reborn and was meticulous, it was unavoidable for even him to have times of habitual thinking.

He only had one aperture in his previous life and even though he had touched upon other paths, it was mostly after he became a Gu Immortal. But now, he was already cultivating two paths as a mortal.

"Enslavement path Gu Masters are most afraid of beheading the leader tactics, I can use strength path to defend. On the contrary, strength path’s weakness can be filled by using enslavement path. Strength qi Gu, there is no need for it."

Because he cultivated two paths, this problem that troubled strength path Gu Masters was easily resolved.

Following after this, Fang Yuan used his battle merits to exchange for many space path Gu and large numbers of Gu refinement materials.

These space path Gu and materials were preparations to enter Luo Po Valley later on.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had sealed Luo Po Valley back then. If one wanted to enter, normal methods wouldn’t work; one must have a rank five open door Gu.

Open door Gu could let the fated ones enter Luo Po valley. But to close the passage would require refining a rank five close door Gu, to prevent the exposure of the passage and others entering in.

’Lord Wolf King actually exchanged for so many strength path Gu and space path Gu, and there are also huge amounts of Gu refinement materials.’ The goods Fang Yuan wanted to exchange for, caused this female Gu Master to be inwardly surprised.

Exchanging for strength path Gu was still reasonable, after all strength path might be declining but it consumed less primeval essence. In case primeval essence was about to be exhausted, it could act as a Gu Master’s last support.

Thus, in Northern Plains where battles occurred frequently, almost all the Gu Masters cultivated some strength path Gu.

’But what is Lord Wolf King going to do with these space path Gu?’

’Maybe he wants to use space path Gu to protect himself? After all, enslavement path Gu Masters are often restrained by beheading leader tactics.’

’There are also these astonishing amounts of Gu refinement materials, is Lord Wolf King interested towards refinement path? Or maybe he is researching a completely new enslavement path Gu?’

The female Gu Master was full of doubts but did not express them.

She was very aware that rashly inquiring about these secrets was an extremely great offense to the Gu Master.

Thus, she did not reveal any curiosity on her face, concentrating only on handling these exchanges.

Fang Yuan soon saw his battle merits decreased by over half on the battle list, immediately falling down from first position.

"Lord Wolf King, these goods you exchanged for will be sent to you one by one today and will be completely delivered by dawn." The female Gu Master informed in a soft voice.

Fang Yuan nodded and was just about to leave when this female Gu Master said in a low voice: "Lord Wolf King, please wait a moment. Here is a Gu recipe which is extremely suitable for you, Lord tribe leader specifically told me to hold it for you."

"Hmm?" Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with a bright light.

There was no need to even guess, the female Gu Master before him was definitely Hei tribe’s Gu Master.

In such an important place like the supply camp, Hei Lou Lan could only be at ease if he placed his men inside.

Listening to the female Gu Master’s words, Fang Yuan realized this was Hei Lou Lan’s goodwill towards him. It was extremely likely that it was because of Hei Xiu Yi deserting in the face of danger, and that Fang Yuan let the bygones be bygones, so Hei Lou Lan was secretly reciprocating for it.

Fang Yuan immediately felt some interest and after understanding about the details, he found that this Gu recipe was truly very suitable for him.

This was a Gu recipe of lurking soul coat Gu.

Lurking soul coat Gu had only one ability, and that was to cover soul fluctuations.

Previously, Fang Yuan was hiding in a corner of the battlefield and had to mobilize the wolf group without being able to use his full strength to prevent being discovered. But with this Gu, he could completely cover his soul fluctuations and mobilize the wolf group with his whole strength while hiding.

This Gu recipe went all the way from rank one to rank five, thus it had very high price.

Fang Yuan used all his remaining battle merits and barely obtained it.

He skimmed through the Gu recipe once and saw the difficulty in refining this Gu was not high, but there were monumental amount of refinement procedures. Moreover, the cost involved was not low, especially one procedure among them required a large number of fresh beast skins as Gu refinement materials.

"Tribe leader has said himself that if Lord Wolf King feels like the Gu refinement is too complicated, you can ask the refinement path Gu Masters to do it. You only need to pay equivalent battle merits to them. If Lord Wolf King has insufficient battle merits, you can borrow five hundred thousand." The female Gu Master timely suggested.

Primeval stones were the currency during normal times.

But during battles, because of Gu Masters using a large number of primeval stones to restore their primeval essence, refine new Gu or so on, primeval stones were in scarcity.

At such times, battle merits were often used as currency.

This was not only in Northern Plains, it was also the same in Southern Border and other regions.

Borrowing battle merits naturally was not a treatment given to ordinary people. Fang Yuan, however, was a crucial battle strength as he could directly raise the strength of the whole Hei tribe army by himself, thus Hei Lou Lan was happy to actively promote such actions secretly.

Fang Yuan nodded and borrowed five hundred thousand battle merits on the spot.

With this, his battle merits went into negative, falling down to the last position on the large battle merit list.

The Gu Masters who saw this scene in the fifteen large tents exclaimed in surprise.

In the enormous battle merit list that was as large as defense walls, the negative five hundred thousand which was written in scarlet was exceptionally dazzling.

From first to last, such a huge discrepancy caused people to be greatly taken aback.

Clamorous discussions rose before gradually quieting down.

The Wolf King’s strength and status made them involuntarily accept this fact.

Soon after, several assignments that came from the Wolf King caused the quietened discussions to again turn into a clamor.

The assignments were capturing wolves, gathering souls, peeling off wolf skins and processing them, along with large numbers of Gu refinement assignments; once completed, could give them a lot of battle merits.

These assignments quickly stimulated everyone’s enthusiasm.

In the next few days, Fang Yuan continued to cultivate, concentrating mainly on strength path.

Because of turtle jade wolf skin Gu, his body could bear even more strength.

Several days later, Fang Yuan’s strength path broke through the hundred jun strength barrier, and he had already successively received ten thousand rank one lurking soul coat Gu.

But to push to rank five, this amount was still far from enough.

Hei tribe army rested and reorganized for a week more before pulling up the camp and pushing forward towards Dong Fang tribe’s defense line.

The battle began once more.

Dong Fang Yu Liang relied on tall and firm defense walls to defend tightly, and along with repeated clever plans, he was able to push off the battle to the limit, causing great trouble to Hei tribe.

But it was still very difficult for him to make up for the large gap created by the first battle.

The five defense lines Dong Fang army had built, was broken through by Hei tribe in a row.

In the end, the Dong Fang army had retreated to the final defense line - in the central zone of Cao Fu - and were firmly surrounded by Hei tribe.

"Dong Fang Yu Liang, you are surrounded, your loss is already determined. A wise man submits to fate; as long as you surrender, my army’s main military advisor position will still be yours."

Hei Lou Lan stood high on his twin-headed rhino, his voice echoing throughout the battlefield.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Facing Hei Lou Lan’s offer of submission, Dong Fang Yu Liang went silent.

He was standing on the walls, looking at the black enemy troops, the wind blew his hair and his clothes fluttered lightly in the air.

He sighed lightly.

Even though he had many brilliant schemes and always held the initiative with his predictions, the difference between the two sides was just too overwhelming, in the end, they reached this stage.

Wisdom path was not invincible.

Throughout history, there were a great number of Gu Master path and styles, even qi path and strength path which were dominant in a point in time, did not manage to cause other paths to go into extinction, becoming the sole path of the Gu Master world.

Every path had its strengths and weaknesses.

Especially when Gu Master paths were established on the basis of resources. As times changed, and environments changed, when the resources that Gu Masters needed to cultivate dwindled, that particular path’s vitality would go down.

Any Gu Master familiar with history would know that throughout the long river of time, countless paths were buried.

Speaking of which, wisdom path had been popular since the immemorial era, until this day. Even though they were always low on numbers, such an established path could be said to be independent already.

In this world, there were no invincible paths, only invincible Gu Masters.

But to be truly invincible, there were only ten in history.

Dong Fang Yu Liang was only a rank five wisdom path Gu Master, although he was at the peak of the mortal realm, he was far from invincible.

Even though he had his self created killer move, Seven Star Light, the primeval essence expenditure of it was too great, it could not be sustained. Against a huge force like Hei tribe, he was already feeling overpowered and outnumbered.

"If I was an enslavement path Gu Master, there might be a chance of salvaging it. But even enslavement path would need to be worried of beheading the leader tactic. Even Wolf King Chang Shan Yin does not dare to venture out alone, leading his wolves to leave the main troops. Thus, only by ascending to Gu Immortal can one rule above the mortal world." Dong Fang Yu Liang sighed in his heart.

At this time, Water Demon Hao Ji Liu came forward to battle.

"Wind Demon, come out and die!" He shouted out his enemy’s name.

Wind Demon was furious, growling: "Hao Ji Liu, don’t be arrogant!"

Saying so, he leapt from the defense walls, activating his Gu while in mid air, as two four-leaf wind blades formed, shooting out.

"All you can use are old tricks!" Water Demon laughed, not dodging as he charged head on.

Bam bam bam!

The water and wind demons had battled for dozens of rounds, they were very familiar with each other, thus, the moment they fought, it reached the climax.

Wind blades and water bullets flew on both sides, colliding in mid air as they exploded.

Wind Demon’s attacks were sharp and focused on penetrating and kiting, while Water Demon engaged in frontal assault, overwhelming the enemy.

The two were established characters, now that they were engaging with each other, they were displaying great strength as the battle could not be decided easily.

The Gu Masters from both armies focused their attention on these two people.

The strength of a rank four Gu Master was well known by all, but now, it still gave them a great sense of fear and trepidation.

After a while, Water Demon gradually gained the upper hand.

Wind Demon’s condition was not good, there were times where a Gu Master’s strength fluctuated.

Like now, the conclusion had already been decided, being surrounded by Hei tribe heavily, Dong Fang tribe’s warriors had low morale, Wind Demon was affected too.

Seeing his rival of equal strength suppressed by himself, Water Demon shouted in joy as he attacked even more fiercely.

The general was the courage of the soldiers, seeing this, Hei tribe army’s morale surged, as Dong Fang alliance army sank into silence on the defense wall.

In the main tent, Hei Lou Lan laughed heartily as he sent another rank four expert into battle.

Dong Fang Yu Liang sent a person to deal with him.

But the battle between these two Gu Masters was not as intense as the battle between demons.

Not only was the commotion smaller, they even talked in the middle of battle, talking about their ancestor’s time and their alliance marriage.

Dong Fang Yu Liang’s expression became uglier as Hei Lou Lan’s smile became deeper.

Dong Fang alliance army had low morale, the troops had lost their sense of belonging. All the forces in the alliance were starting to find a way out of their predicament.

Hei tribe army’s morale was high, all the rank four experts requested to battle.

Hei Lou Lan laughed as he approved all their requests.

Quickly, before the two armies, twelve battle rings were created.

"I am Pan Ping, who will battle me?" Pan Ping carried a fierce aura as he became the thirteenth person to enter the battlefield after getting Hei Lou Lan’s permission.

Dong Fang Yu Liang was silent.

By now, the rank four experts under him had mostly perished. Many experts were worried for the present and future, they were no longer giving it their all, but instead hiding their strength.

Although when the alliance was made, all the leaders and experts used the poison bow Gu, the content of the vow was not strict, there were many loopholes that could be exploited.

As the alliance leader, although they would want to tie the large tribes closely to them, other forces were not idiots. Thus the content of the poison vow had been passed down for numerous generations, created through many collective agreements.

As Pan Ping requested for battle, Dong Fang Yu Liang found that he had no one to summon already.

He thought about it before sending an order.

"What? Dong Fang alliance leader is order my father to battle?!" In the camp behind the defense walls, Tang Fang saw this messenger and his expression turned ugly, his eyes almost blowing fire.

In the earlier battle, in order to protect his tribesmen, Tang tribe leader was attacked by two Hei tribe Gu masters and suffered grave injuries. After that, he had been bedridden, he had not even recovered now.

"This is the alliance leader’s orders, are you trying to defy it? I know your tribe leader is injured and bedridden. But there are so many bedridden tribe leaders, after getting the alliance leader’s orders, didn’t they participate too?" The messenger’s words were rigid as he looked at Tang Fang with disdain.

"You!" Tang Fang was furious, shouting: "They are pretending to be injured, my father is truly heavily injured!"

"Alright, son, enough. As the Tang tribe leader, I have to participate in this battle." At this time, the pale Tang tribe leader walked out.

"Hmph, as long as you obey the orders." Dong Fang tribe’s messenger snorted as he walked away.

"But father, your body..." Tang Fang was extremely worried.

"No matter." Tang tribe leader patted his son’s shoulders: "I have been recuperating these days, my injures are mostly healed. Today’s battle might be the last. If I do not participate, it would be detrimental to our tribe, and our reputation."

Tang Fang gritted his teeth: "Then you have to be careful father, sister is still with them, if there is a chance..."

"Mm, I will do my best." Tang tribe leader frowned as he walked out of the tent.

He came to the defense walls as he met Dong Fang Yu Liang, before going to the battlefield, starting the battle with Pan Ping.

Tang Fang stood at the edge of the wall, staring at his father.

"Young tribe leader, we will be fine. Although lord tribe leader still has some poison in him, today’s battle is different, everyone will not go all out." A Tang tribe elder consoled.

Tang Fang looked at his father battling on par with Pan Ping, with neither giving it their all, and the worry in his heart dissipated.

But at this moment, Pan Ping burst out and drew the scimitar by his waist.

Everyone saw a bright white light flash past quickly.

The next moment, Tang tribe leader was beheaded!

"Ah, father!" Tang Fang was stunned before crying out painfully.

This had occurred too suddenly, both sides were shocked for a few breaths’ time before starting to discuss fervently.

"Tang tribe leader Tang You has been taken down by me Pan Ping!" Pan Ping’s eyes were shining with a bloodthirsty light as he raised Tang tribe leader’s head and shouted.

Tang Fang’s vision turned dark as he fainted on the spot.

"What was that?"

"I only saw a flash of light, it was too fast! I could not see anything clearly."

"I wonder what Gu or killer move Pan Ping used?"

Pan Ping killed an expert on the same level as him, he gained great fame as even the resting Fang Yuan opened his eyes slightly to give him a glance.

Northern plains was huge, it was a land of battles. Countless wars and battles created numerous experts. These experts might have some unknown trump cards that they had been hiding forever.

Although Pan Ping was a rank four Gu Master, his reputation was not very high, among the rank four Gu Master, he was not outstanding. But after this battle, he rose to fame by stepping on Tang tribe leader’s corpse.

Pan Ping’s expression was shining like flowers as he returned victorious.

Hei Lou Lan laughed loudly, ordering his men to bring his wine cup and gave the delicious wine to Pan Ping as a reward.

"Thank you lord alliance leader for the reward!" Pan Ping stood in the main tent, drinking the wine in one pulp, his gaze was full of anticipation as his expression was lively.

He got this Gu by accident. Once, there was a market set up by a few tribes, he saw this scimitar and thought it was beautiful, thus he bought it out of interest.

But to think that when he was toying with it, he found the secret in this scimitar.

On the blade of this scimitar, there was a cold light. This cold light was actually a mysterious Gu worm.

Pan Ping spent a lot of effort before finally refining this Gu. Although he did not know the name of this Gu, it had executed many strong foes for him, it had an extremely sharp attack.

He had great expectations for this Imperial Court contest.

Originally, during Hei tribe and Dong Fang army’s first battle, he had requested to be the first to battle. At that time, he was planning on using this Gu to slay a strong enemy, gaining fame immediately.

But Tang Miao Ming called out the Wolf King Chang Shan Yin and challenged him, it obstructed his plans.

What’s worse was, Fang Yuan did not go with the norm, he attacked directly and skipped the challenge, directly causing the war between both sides.

The chance that Pan Ping was looking for was gone like that. Although there were battles later, it was not the environment that Pan Ping was hoping for.

"But today’s battle was a huge chance, Tang tribe leader, Tang You, is an established character. After this battle, my status will rise and I would become Hei tribe’s number one general. After all, Water Demon Hao Ji Liu had greater reputation, but he had not taken down Wind Demon yet. As for Wolf King Chang Shan Yin, he is an enslavement path Gu Master, there is no point competing with him..."

Pan Ping looked around, feeling that everyone’s gaze towards him had changed, the happiness in his heart rose again.

"This is the feeling of a top dog 1 . Hehe, one day, I, Pan Ping, will have my name resound all over Northern Plains!" He shouted in his heart.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ni Yu blessed land.

A long jade-layered walkway led the way along the lake surface towards a pavilion.

Outside the pavilion, there was a light rain and soothing wind.

Different from the outside world, the rain here fell from bottom to top. The name of Ni Yu 1 , came from this.

After the female Gu immortal Tan Bi Ya, there was a new guest in the blessed land.

"Junior Hei Bai pays respect to senior Dong Fang." The person who came looked like an ordinary middle aged man, but he was a true rank six Gu Immortal.

"It has been seventy years since we last met. Back then, you were still Hei tribe leader, a step away from entering the Imperial Court."

Hei Bai stood on the stone bench, bowing slightly: "I am ashamed, back then I was greatly supported by my tribe, but I lost by one move and Liu tribe emerged victorious."

"Hehehe." Dong Fang Chang Fan laughed: "That’s right, the Liu tribe leader back then, Liu Yi Feng, had unprecedented talent, he was a genius barely seen in a hundred years."

"Senior has good memory, junior is full of admiration."

Dong Fang Chang Fan shook his head: "Us wisdom path Gu Masters will always collect every single information we can get in order to make our deductions. Although Liu Yi Feng was glaringly talented, he failed when charging towards Gu Immortal realm. Among the people of that generation, the one who remained standing at the end was you, commonly known as ’Hei tribe rockman’."

"Senior is too kind, this junior was lucky."

"No need to put yourself down, becoming a Gu Immortal is as hard as ascending to heaven, out of ten thousand rank five Gu Masters, not even one might succeed. Sigh, to speak the truth, I have observed many juniors these years, and now my hopes are on this child." Dong Fang Chang Fan pointed with his right index finger, and a colorful smoke rose from the stone bench, reflecting the real-time battle situation in northern plains, Cao Fu.

Coincidentally, the two Gu Immortals saw Pan Ping flash his scimitar as he beheaded Tang tribe leader.

Hei Bai frowned, lightly gasping: "This is interesting, if I did not see wrongly, this is the sole blade Gu. Sole blade Gu is unique, once activated, it can ignore all defenses of the same level. This was created by the Gu Immortal Blade Demon, it has a strange form, merely a flash of blade light, and has to be kept on a blade. This Gu eats blades as food, and the blade it resides in will gradually shrink and turn into dust."

Dong Fang Chang Fan nodded: "That’s right, sole blade Gu can reach rank six at most. Back then, Blade Demon used the rank six sole blade Gu to hold his own, no one dared to trifle with him. But eventually, he lost to Butterfly Sword Immortal. Blade Demon died in battle, and his blessed land was consumed by Butterfly Sword Immortal. The recipe of sole blade Gu was not passed down, but now there are still many sole blade Gu in the mortal realm, these were handed out when Blade Demon disguised as a mortal and travelled the world back then. It seems this lucky lad obtained one of the gifts from Blade Demon back then."

"Senior is wise, I have learnt much today." Hei Bai said with admiration.

Dong Fang Chang Fan was a famous wisdom path Gu Immortal in northern plains, he had glorious battle results his whole life, numerous Gu Immortal suffered from his schemes.

When he was born, Dong Fang tribe was already declining like the setting sun. When he became a Gu Immortal, he single handedly held them up as he made many schemes against his enemies, he had great methods and eventually caused Dong Fang tribe to rise up again.

He was a rank seven Gu Immortal, a great power in northern plains undoubtedly, and the pillar of support for Dong Fang tribe.

But now, his lifespan was at its end, he was eager to leave his inheritance. In the past, Dong Fang Chang Fan had high expectations, and many did not meet his requirements. Now, Dong Fang Yu Liang might not have met all his expectations, but he was the best candidate out of them all.

Lifespan Gu were hard to find, even for Dong Fang tribe which was a super tribe, one of the largest force in northern plains.

Of course, a part of the reason was that the righteous path Gu Immortal secretly colluded to restrict the selling of lifespan Gu to Dong Fang Chang Fan. Similarly, demonic Gu Immortals who were schemed against by Dong Fang Chang Fan hated him to the bones.

Dong Fang Chang Fan schemed against numerous people, but at the end of his life, he was ganged up on collectively by his enemies.

He was clear about this, he had offended too many Gu Immortals. Even the righteous path did not want to see him live longer.

Hei Bai understood, this meeting with Dong Fang Chang Fan would be the last time he could see this legendary Gu Immortal in northern plains.

The rainbow smoke on the stone bench displayed the battle situation perfectly, showing it to them without any lack of clarity.

Dong Fang army, while already weaker in terms of power, got into an even worse situation after Tang tribe leader was killed by Pan Ping.

Eventually, Dong Fang Yu Liang challenged Hei Lou Lan, entering the battle himself.

He wanted to use his own strength to fight for a bit of chance and hope.

But eventually, he could not emerge victorious as he and Hei Lou Lan ended in a draw.

When night descended, Hei Lou Lan ordered a collective attack.

At night, night wolves surge in battle strength. The wolf tide came waves after waves, under Fang Yuan’s manipulation, they broke through Dong Fang army’s final line of defense.

Dong Fang army had low morale and the troops were not united, even though Dong Fang Yu Liang made many preparations, the defensive line only lasted for seven minutes before being taken down.

Helpless, Dong Fang Yu Liang could only surrender.

At this point, Hei tribe and Dong Fang tribe’s battle ended, as Hei Lou Lan and Dong Fang Yu Liang’s personal grudge ended in Hei Lou Lan’s victory.

"This young man, Dong Fang Yu Liang, has few flaws, except that he cares too much for his sister. In order to protect her safety, he made a portion of the troops stay at the back to protect his sister. Thus, Dong Fang army became far weaker than Hei tribe, even though they were already disadvantaged to begin with. If not for this, the first battle’s victory might not have been like this. Hehehe, this is embarrassing to show you, Hei Bai."

Dong Fang Chang Fan smile lightly at this rainbow smoke.

After Hei tribe army stabilized the battle situation, they entered the camp and starting to take over captives and clean up the battlefield.

"Winning and losing is part of battle, if we failed this time, there is always next time. In my opinion, Dong Fang Yu Liang is already very outstanding. He preserved the strength of his tribe well, he did it even better than I would. His affection and protective nature towards this tribe is very precious." Hei Bai said.

"That’s right." Dong Fang Chang Fan’s tone was rueful: "So be it if other tribe members die, but we are all descendants of Ancestor Giant Sun. Back then when ancestor set up the Imperial Court, he had one motive, that was to weaken other tribes and preserve our bloodline. Unfortunately, even a grand existence like Giant Sun Immortal Venerable passed away when his lifespan was expended. In this world, what can truly be immortal and indestructible..."

Hei Bai did not speak, he only listened silently.

Dong Fang Chang Fan soothed his emotions, laughing softly as he stretched out his palm towards Hei Bai: "Alright, let’s get to business."

"Yes." Hei Bai took out a list from his storage Gu and handed it over to Dong Fang Chang Fan.

There was a great amount of content on the list, there was a huge amount of resources listed.

Dong Fang tribe lost in this Imperial Court contest, and became Hei tribe’s captive. According to Giang Sun Immortal Venerable’s rules, Dong Fang tribe could pay a certain amount of resources to redeem themselves.

Dong Fang tribe and Hei tribe were super tribes, they had more than one Gu Immortal.

The contest between two giant forces, this ’Imperial Court contest’ was merely a game. Most importantly, these battles would weaken other tribes and expand one’s own tribe, recruiting and choosing new talents.

This grand scheme engulfing all of northern plains was naturally not created by Dong Fang tribe or Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals. It was created by one of the ten supreme invincible beings, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Dong Fang Chang Fan received the list and started browsing through.

The resources on this list were not only a great amount, there were also many aspects that it touched on, like some specialty Gu worms that only Dong Fang tribe had, or some newly created Gu recipes.

But Dong Fang Chang Fan did not show any indignance, he nodded lightly and agreed: "Winner takes all, since we failed, a small price is but fair, we will go with this."

Loser pays the price, this was the rule that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable set.

In history, there were some times when tribes were unwilling to pay this price, but they all ended up being wiped out.

But now, not a single tribe dared to violate the rule.

This was the rule of northern plains’ righteous path, if any tribe refused to obey it, they would be ostracized, and become the target of all others.

A giant light ring suddenly appeared in the night sky of the battlefield.

After the light ring stabilized, a giant light door of about 60 meters was formed.

The light shone across a thousand li, as it opened, a jade light path was formed.

From the door, a young female Gu Master walked out. She held a token as she landed before Hei Lou Lan under everyone’s gaze.

"I am the envoy, I am here to bring back Dong Fang tribe." She said expressionlessly with a cold tone.

The two finished their business on the spot.

After checking the battle reparation, Hei Lou Lan’s brows were uplifted, he had earned a fortune! Using so much resources, he could equip more Gu Masters and especially the tribes that surrendered, after taking them in, his military strength would surge by at least fifty percent of the original!

"We will meet again." Since the results were decided, Dong Fang Yu Liang had no lingering emotions, he bid farewell to Hei Lou Lan calmly and led his tribesmen on the light road, entering the door.

Because they absorbed a lot of tribes, Dong Fang tribe’s size expanded by thirty percent.

"How great, even if they lost, they can still hide from the blizzard inside the blessed land!"

"There’s no choice, they are a super clan, there are Gu Immortals shielding them."

"Alright, concentrate, it is a turning point for us after submitting to Hei tribe. As long as we win a few battles, our losses would be recuperated. If we are fortunate enough to enter Imperial Court blessed land and obtain those inheritances, we would have a chance of striking it rich!"

Everyone looked at the light ring on the air as they discussed.

Fang Yuan watched this silently.

This ten year blizzard involves the entire northern plains, causing numerous homes to be destroyed and countless people to rise up from battle. It was a contest of the top predators, a game that they engage in together.

Some people immerse themselves in it and chase after fame. Some cry and grief, feeling extreme pain. As for Fang Yuan, as a person within this giant game, he would watch coldly as he make his own plans.

Hehe.

Such is life.

The law of the jungle, it is truly fantastic!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 520: Stealing Shoes (1/2)

In the camp, there was silence.

On a bright red table, books were stacked highly into a pile.

At times, wind would blow through the window and carry the fragrance of the grass with it, as it flips the top few pages of the documents.

It was a bright and sunny day outside, at times, sounds of battle horses or hump wolves could be heard from far away.

This in fact, intensified the silence in the camp.

As Ma tribe’s young tribe leader, Ma Ying Jie was sitting on his cushion as he lowered his head, helping his father settle the administrative matters of the alliance army.

Ever since Ma tribe unleashed a sneak attack and exterminated Fei tribe, their largest obstacle in the heroes assembly had been removed.

Thereafter, at Tian Chuan heroes assembly, Ma tribe suppressed Cheng tribe to become the alliance leader. After taking the poison vow, Ma tribe’s military force rose to six hundred thousand, they were at the peak of their strength.

After that, Ma tribe ventured west, going southwest from Tian Chuan. Along the way, they found beast groups or stubborn forces to train their troops, sharpening their battle strength. Because of the continuous battles and the absorption of defeated tribes, they expanded once more and their morale was surging.

Right now, Ma tribe had arrived at mirror lake and found an equal – Song tribe alliance army.

At the moment, Ma tribe was building their first line of defense.

"Report!" At this moment, the investigative Gu Master from outside the tent reported.

Ma Ying Jie’s eyes shone with brilliance, he knew that this would definitely be some important military information, thus, he placed down his documents and called: "Come in."

The exhausted investigative Gu Master heard the call and was about to enter, but the guard outside stopped him: "Do you know the rules? Change your shoes, don’t dirty the carpet inside."

The investigative Gu Master apologised profusely, after changing his shoes, he entered the tent. Upon seeing Ma Ying Jie, he kneeled down on one knee: "Subordinate greets young tribe leader. I have brought important information regarding Yu Tian."

He reported a summary of the events that happened, and after Ma Ying Jie made some inquiries, about fifteen minutes later, he left.

"Hei tribe defeated Dong Fang tribe, that is the first crucial victory they had." Ma Ying Jie’s heart was slightly heavy.

The Imperial Court contest had occurred for many times, at his level, he was already clear of the rules of this game.

He knew the importance of victory, after Hei tribe defeated Dong Fang tribe, they would receive a huge amount of compensation. These compensation would include Dong Fang tribe’s newest Gu recipes, as well as an ocean of battle resources. As long as they make good use of these gains, and take in the captives, Hei tribe army’s battle strength would rise by five times!

"In all the past Imperial Court contests, the first battle is the most crucial. Once the first fight is won, the foundations would be earned. Those who lost the first fight would almost certainly be eliminated, very few could reverse the situation. Hei tribe has already won their first battle, while we Ma tribe and Song tribe are still at a stalemate..."

Fei Cai carefully came to the tent entrance, trying not to make any noise.

The two guarding Gu Masters gave him a look before diverting their gaze.

After Fei tribe was wiped out, the blur Fei Cai was chosen by Ma Ying Jie and luckily became his personal servant, avoiding the terrible fates of his tribesmen.

His daily job was to manage the shoes outside the tent.

Ma Ying Jie was a clean freak, every guest that entered his tent would need to change their shoes, so as to not dirty his elegant and beautiful carpet.

After every guest wears the shoes provided, Fei Cai would need to wash it before placing it back in.

But this time, it was different.

Fei Cai held the shoes worn by the investigative Gu Master and hesitated for a moment before stuffing the other pair of shoes in front of his chest.

No one noticed this tiny action of his, Fei Cai managed to leave without any problems, and after ten tents, he came to the water pond.

He squatted beside the pond as he started washing the worn shoes, he was extremely focused and did not even notice that there was one person behind him.

"Hey, big dummy, why are you so serious in washing shoes!" A small hand patted Fei Cai’s shoulders roughly.

Fei Cai was shocked, turning around, he saw a girl that resembled jade with pinkish skin, and a pair of crystal clear eyes. It was Zhao Lian Yun.

Zhao Lian Yun used her ’tiger-wolf-sheep’ analogy and conceived Zhao tribe leader to leave, after some hurdles, they arrived at Ma tribe camp without casualties, and was welcomed by Ma tribe leader.

Zhao tribe managed to join Ma tribe army and was highly regarded by Ma tribe higher-ups and received warm hospitality.

"It is you, Lady Xiao Yun." Fei Cai saw Zhao Lian Yun and showed an innocent smile. After his father was killed, he sunk into endless grief. By chance, he became Ma Ying Jie’s personal servant, and was ostracized by the old servants, thus he did not have a single friend.

After Zhao Lian Yun made fun of him many times, but he acknowledged her as his only friend. Thus when he saw her, he was overjoyed.

"Lady Xiao Yun, I have something for you." Fei Cai lowered his volume, moving his head towards Zhao Lian Yun’s ears.

Zhao Lian Yun pushed his head away, muttering unhappily: "Hey blockhead, don’t come so close, do you know that there should be prudency between sexes."

Fei Cai almost fell into the water after being pushed, but he did not mind it, he secretly pulled his shirt and exposed the shoes that he were hiding, asking as if he was looking for praise: "Look, what is this?"

Zhao Lian Yun gave him a look of disdain: "A pair of stinky shoes, they’ve obviously been worn before. Stupid blockhead, why are you so dumb, you actually gave me something like this. It doesn’t even fit me, and I wouldn’t wear this pair of stinky shoes anyway!"

Fei Cai said: "Lady Xiao Yun, didn’t you say you were lacking primeval stones earlier. This pair of shoes is exquisite and beautiful, we can sell it in the black market and exchange it for primeval stones."

Zhao Lian Yun’s brows lifted, looking at Fei Cai in another light: "Oh wow, blockhead, you actually thought of abusing your position and smuggling public property? Amazing, I never thought you would think of this. But how much can this pair of shoes sell for? My daily pocket money is ten times of the shoes. I appreciate it, but you should sell it. Change your tattered and dirty clothes."

Fei Cai rubbed his nose, shaking his head: "No need, my clothes are still wearable. Actually, I did not think of this. Those old servants always do this, since there is a large number of shoes constantly worn by different Gu Masters, and lord young tribe leader loves cleanliness so much, he always changes the shoes together at set intervals."

Zhao Lian Yun nodded.

Snakes and rats have their own way of living. Servants might have low statuses, but they also have their own way of living.

Especially someone like Fei Cai, although he is a servant and lost his freedom, he got close to Ma Ying Jie and was most likely the first person to receive information from Ma tribe higher-ups.

Zhao tribe had entered Ma tribe’s army, Zhao Lian Yun purposely got close to Fei Cai because she also had the intentions of gathering intel.

At this time, a commotion could be heard.

"Where is Fei Cai? Get out here now!"

"Fei Cai, you’re in trouble now, you dared to take young tribe leader’s shoes."

"Young tribe leader wanted to walk around the camp, but realized his shoes were gone. Fei Cai, you are too daring, you are unforgivable!"

A bunch of old servants shouted arrogantly, coming out of the entrance as they searched for Fei Cai’s whereabouts.

Fei cai’s expression paled: "Oh no, I have been discovered. Lady Xiao Yun, quickly leave, this has nothing to do with you. I cannot implicate you, I will go ask for forgiveness from young tribe leader."

"Forgiveness my ass!" Zhao Lian Yun shouted, her expression turning ugly: "You fool, you have been plotted against and you don’t even know it! Quickly follow me and run."

"Ah?" Fei Cai had no idea what’s going on, but as Zhao Lian Yun pulled him, they entered a narrow alley.

"Damn it, this path has been blocked off." Zhao Lian Yun relied on her familiarity of the area and brought Fei Cai around, finding four exits, but three were blocked.

"Lady Xiao Yun, quickly go, it will be too late otherwise!" Fei Cai was getting dizzy from moving around, he had lost his sense of direction. He was anxious as he did not want to get his only friend into trouble.

Zhao Lian Yun stomped her feet in anger, howling in her heart: "Was it easy for me to find an insider to provide information?! In this day and age, where can I find such a dummy like Fei Cai? These old servants are all shrewd snakes, they will request for money when I want a bit of information, and they would even give half-truth information. Hmph! They are jealous of this newcomer Fei Cai and wants to get rid of him. As expected, any place with humans will have conflicts, and thus schemes. No way! I cannot take this lying down, you are courting death if you want to harm my informant!"

Zhao Lian Yun’s expression was full of uncertainty as she tried her best to think of a solution, while the old servants’ voices could be heard.

"He’s not here, I’ve searched the water pond, he’s not there either!"

"Did he leave?"

"How can that be, we were following him, I’m sure he came here."

"We have not searched there yet, go."

Hearing the old servants’ footsteps, Zhao Lian Yun thought of a solution amidst the anxiety.

"Big dummy, you are truly lucky, I just bought some silk from the market." Zhao Lian Yun said as she took out some high grade silk from her pockets.

This silk was meant to be made into clothes for her.

"Big dummy, listen to my instructions and do as I say, this might benefit you greatly!" Zhao Lian Yun placed the silk into Fei Cai’s hands.

"Ah?" Fei Cai was dumbstruck.

Zhao Lian Yun quickly told him about her plans.

After a dozen breaths’ time, Fei Cai walked out and was discovered by the servants.

They were overjoyed, encircling him as Fei Cai clenched his fists, beating them to a pulp like he was crazy.

"He’s revolting, revolting, this dog slave dared to attack us seniors!"

"Fei Cai, you are in huge trouble, young tribe leader is looking for you, we came to arrest you but you dared to resist!"

Fei Cai shouted: "Young tribe leader is looking for me, I will go on my own. Don’t touch me with your filthy hands you lowly scum!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 521: Stealing Shoes (2/2)

The slaves were old while Fei Cai was acting like a crazed man; for the moment, the slaves could only surround Fei Cai without daring to go forward.

Fei Cai stared with wide, furious eyes as he kicked an old slave in front of him: "Filthy bastard, I am going to pay respects to young tribe leader, don’t block my way."

The old slaves felt ashamed and furious, sinister glint flashed past their eyes but they still did not dare to go forward.

They had already noticed a bulge in Fei Cai’s clothes. Many sneered in disdain in their hearts: ’ This stupid kid really has the courage to steal! It doesn’t matter if he stole shoes, but he actually stole the young tribe leader’s shoes, hahaha, his luck is truly bad. I originally wanted him to be relocated to cleaning the latrine, but now this kid might even lose his little life. Serves him right! Is it so easy to become young tribe leader’s personal servant?’

Fei Cai walked towards young tribe leader’s tent while being surrounded by the old slaves.

The two Gu Masters guarding the tent saw Fei Cai and looked at him as if he was a dead person.

Ma Ying Jie stood at the entrance of the tent with a solemn expression. He had been tired of handling the various affairs and wanted to take a walk outside, but he found that his shoes had disappeared.

He called for his old personal servant, and the old slave told him the shoes were very possibly stolen by the new young slave to possibly sell them for money. The old slave also informed Ma Ying Jie that this was not the first time Fei Cai had stolen.

Ma Ying Jie was naturally furious. He had never expected that his kindness would bring in a thief.

Fei Cai was extremely anxious with panic already filling his mind, but he firmly remembered Zhao Lian Yun’s instructions, and walked towards Ma Ying Jie with his head high like a valiant hero.

Ma Ying Jie was secretly amazed at this sight.

Those old slaves that were following Fei Cai to keep an eye on him, instead looked like they were escorting him. More importantly, Fei Cai did not appear panicked, was it not him who stole the shoes?

Unwittingly, the fury in Ma Ying Jie was replaced by curiosity and doubts.

"Subordinate greets young tribe leader." Fei Cai kneeled on the ground and greeted with a clear voice.

Ma Ying Jie looked at Fei Cai and shouted in an displeased voice: "My shoes, did you steal them?"

"I would never dare to steal lord’s shoes even if I had a hundred guts." Fei Cai denied flatly.

"He is lying, his clothes are bulging, he has something there, we will know once we look at it!" The old slaves immediately shouted from behind.

Fei Cai snorted and opened his shirt, revealing a ball of snowy-white, high grade silk.

He carefully took out the silk and opened it, revealing the shoes inside.

Ma Ying Jie looked at this pair of shoes and knew it was the pair which he wore, and he couldn’t help but coldly smiled: "Great, great, the proof is here, a thief having such confidence is really hard to come by."

"I implore young tribe leader to investigate clearly." Fei Cai did not refute and placed the shoes on the ground respectfully. He then placed his forehead on the ground like he was willing to take on any punishment.

"Lord young tribe leader, there is clear evidence, please punish this vile bastard fiercely!"

"Yes, he actually dared to steal young tribe leader’s shoes. He might steal many more things later on."

"He is such a thief, we should just cut off his hands!"

The old slaves continued to speak extremely sinister words; Fei Cai’s heart trembled but remembering Zhao Lian Yun’s words, he did not retort.

This scene caused Ma Ying Jie to be somewhat interested.

Killing a slave was nothing, but Ma Ying Jie had always praised himself as ’wise and benevolent’ to restrict himself so that when he took over the tribe in the future, he could become a wise ruler of the generation.

Especially now that Ma tribe had become the head of a huge army, their every move was being paid attention to by others. Rashly killing a slave just because of a small matter like stealing shoes, would it not be spread as brutal?

Ma Ying Jie had such misgivings in his heart.

A good reputation was easy to build but difficult to maintain.

Thereupon, he asked: "I have always dealt with things fairly. Fei Cai, I will give you a chance to explain yourself."

Fei Cai immediately let out a breath of relief, he had been waiting for these words just like Zhao Lian Yun instructed him. This gave him a huge confidence and he decided he would reply exactly according to Zhao Lian Yun’s instructions.

"My father died because of the internal strife in the tribe, so young tribe leader obliterating Fei tribe can be said to have taken revenge for me. Young tribe leader is so wise and benevolent, how could I do a thing like returning benevolence with enmity?"

When Ma Ying Jie heard the words ’wise and benevolent’, his mood immediately took a turn for the better as he asked in a gentle voice: "Hmm, then do you have some ulterior motives?"

Fei Cai, however, shook his head: "No ulterior motives, it is just that I wanted to repay young tribe leader. But what can I do? I am only a mortal, I have no ways to break through the enemy defense lines for young tribe leader. I am very stupid, I cannot bring forward any plans to young tribe leader. I am only your personal servant who can only clean shoes and place them properly. I thought in young tribe leader’s place — these shoes have been put outside for so long that young tribe leader’s feet might become cold when you wear them, right? So I used all my savings to buy this real silk to cover young tribe leader’s shoes and held it in my clothes. With this, young tribe leader won’t feel cold when you wear them."

"Eh? So it was like that!" Ma Ying Jie was greatly surprised.

He was obsessed with cleanliness and if Fei Cai had directly held the shoes in his clothes, he would instead be disgusted.

But covering the shoes with silk was different.

Moreover this was a genuine high grade silk. There should not be anyone who used such materials to cover shoes, right?

’This Fei Cai is really a good servant, he is actually so considerate.’ Ma Ying Jie’s thoughts moved and the gaze he looked at Fei Cai quietly changed.

If what Fei Cai said was true, his devotion was really overwhelming!

At this moment, Fei Cai suddenly kowtowed: "Young tribe leader, I have sinned!"

"Eh? What sin have you committed?" Ma Ying Jie looked at Fei Cai with a clear smile on his face.

Fei Cai replied: "I only thought of keeping the shoes warm for young tribe leader, but forgot it would be extremely inconvenient for you when you go out. I have sinned, please punish me!"

Ma Ying Jie heaved a sigh: "It is not like I only have one pair of shoes, but because I saw that the pair I usually wore had disappeared, I called you over. It is fortunate, I nearly blamed my loyal servant."

"Lord young tribe leader, don’t listen to his words!"

"Lord young tribe leader, this kid is deceiving you, he is very crafty and is lying to you!!"

The old slaves experienced a reversal of fortune when they saw the normally stupid Fei Cai speak with such a glib tongue, and thus they began to hurriedly shout.

Fei Cai spoke again at this moment: "Young tribe leader, please inspect clearly. There is indeed a matter of stealing shoes, but I have never done it. Instead, it was these old slaves who did it many times. After I was appointed to this post, these old slaves incited me many times, but I never listened, thus they resent me. I am not afraid of being investigated and also not afraid of punishment. I earnestly request young tribe leader to investigate clearly and give me justice!"

Fei Cai was naturally not afraid of investigation as this was the first time he had stolen shoes!

He had heard the old slaves ’carelessly’ speaking that a pair of the finest shoes could sell for a high price.

Fei Cai was ignorant; he had followed the young tribe leader for so long but had not paid attention to the look of the shoes young tribe leader wore, and thus was easily plotted against by the old slaves.

Fortunately, he met a crucial person during the crucial time. Zhao Lian Yun became his savior, and under her instructions, Fei Cai made a comeback and averted danger.

When the old slaves heard the request for investigation, their face turned as pale as paper.

Gu Masters had plenty of methods and could easily get to the bottom of this trivial affair.

These old slaves were already regretting their actions, never having expected for them to be the ones landing in deep trouble!

Ma Ying Jie noticed the change in the expressions of the old slaves, and became seventy-eighty percent convinced in Fei Cai. But since his resolve was to become a ’wise ruler’, he naturally could not rashly decide based on his thoughts.

Immediately, he summoned an investigative Gu Master and commanded him to get to the bottom of this affair.

Receiving Ma Ying Jie’s personal order, the investigative Gu Master investigated enthusiastically. In only five minutes of time, the truth of the matter was brought to light.

As the facts were disclosed, the old slaves kneeled on the ground and began weeping and howling with their bodies trembling in fear, asking the young tribe leader to forgive them.

Ma Ying Jie snorted: "Fawning upon your superiors and bullying your subordinates, you slaves actually dared to deceive me! You should all be put to death, but considering the many years you have served me, and that some of you even having served me since I was a child and also served my subordinates, I will forgive your cheap lives and send you to the supply camp to serve my army. Clean the faeces and latrine!"

"Thank you young tribe leader for showing mercy!" The old slaves kowtowed like they were pounding garlic, extremely thankful for this.

"As for you..." Ma Ying Jie looked at Fei Cai and smiled playfully, "You dared to steal my shoes, you truly are extremely daring! From now on, you shall be punished to be the head of the slaves and redeem yourself by serving me properly!"

Fei Cai was stumped for a long time before he came to his senses; Ma Ying Jie’s punishment was actually a promotion!

He immediately kowtowed and expressed his thanks.

Ma Ying Jie laughed heartily and waved his hand: "Alright, now get lost, think properly on the ways to serve me!"

"Yes, my lord." Fei Cai left with a dazed expression the whole way.

Only after a long while did he become clear, he had profited from the disaster and became the head of the slaves!

"This is all thanks to Lady Xiao Yun... ah, right, Lady Xiao Yun told me to report to her quickly if everything went alright." Fei Cai shook his head and promptly change direction towards the secret place.

"What, you actually became the head of the slaves?" Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes involuntarily widened when she heard this news, and looked at Fei Cai with surprise.

Her plan might have been ingenious but also carried risks in that it depended completely on Ma Ying Jie’s mood.

If Ma Ying Jie was in a bad mood, he would only need to issue a death command and Fei Cai would be done for. But clearly, this big dummy was quite lucky and not only were there no accidents, he even got appointed as the head of the slaves.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Although servants were servants, the one tasked to take care of Ma tribe’s young tribe leader was definitely a crucial person that was closely related to the tribe in many ways. Having such a role, if the low rank Gu Masters want to find out information about the higher-ups, they would need to go through the servant leader.

"What a huge profit, he became the servant leader, I am truly a genius!" Zhao Lian Yun laughed furiously in her heart, she did not waste her efforts after all.

She stared at Fei Cai with shining eyes, saying gently: "Big dummy, after you become the servant leader, you have to work hard."

Fei Cai shuddered at once, replying truthfully: "Lady Xiao Yun, I don’t know why, but that tone of yours made me really nervous."

Zhao Lian Yun immediately changed her expression, kicking Fei Cai’s leg as she screamed: "You idiot, now that you are the servant leader, your situation is more precarious than before. I wonder how many people will target you, and among them, there might even be vile and evil Gu Masters."

Fei Cai was shocked: "Then what should I do?"

"Hmph, you’re lucky to have a friend like me. As long as you listen to what I say, I assure you, you will live blissfully." Zhao Lian Yun stretched out her hand, wanting to pat Fei Cai’s shoulders, but found out that she was too short.

She immediately opened her mouth: "Quick, squat down now."

Fei Cai squatted down obediently, and Zhao Lian Yun succeeded in patting his shoulder, she nodded her tiny head in satisfaction, speaking in an old and experienced tone: "Do you know what to do next?"

Fei Cai naturally shook his head.

"Hmph, you idiot." Zhao Lian Yun snorted: "Since you are the servant leader now, and those old servants have already been sent away, you have to recruit new subordinates first. Otherwise, how can you handle everything alone?"

"Oh? You are extremely right!" Fei Cai realized at once, nodding in agreement.

Zhao Lian Yun snorted again: "But just this is not enough. You need to learn about the young tribe leader’s likes, dislikes, and lifestyle habits. You have to ask those old servants for these information."

"What? Ask them? Will they tell me?" Fei Cai stared with wide opened eyes.

Zhao Lian Yun snickered: "You are now the servant leader, your status is different already. They are the lowest of slaves, I’m sure they are afraid of you taking revenge now. If you ask them, they are sure to tell you everything. Of course, if they do not know what is good for them, I have my ways of making them spill everything obediently!"

"Oh."

Zhao Lian Yun looked at Fei Cai’s blank expression and rolled her eyes uncontrollably.

Her thoughts had already drifted far away: ’I am not a person of this world, hmph, there are simply too many ways to make these stinking men talk. As long as we learn about Ma Ying Jie’s habits and please him accordingly, Fei Cai’s current position would definitely be stable. Hehe...’

Cao Fu, Hei tribe camp.

All sorts of tents and Gu houses covered the wide grassland, as tribe flags fluttered in the wind, large numbers of Gu Masters entered and exited. If one looked from above, they would resemble a nest of ants.

In the supply camp, Fang Yuan held the east window Gu as he checked the resources silently.

The female Gu Master in charge of attending to him stayed focused as she stood at one side, waiting for Fang Yuan to make his decision at any moment.

Ever since they received Dong Fang tribe’s reparations, the resources that could be exchanged for using battle merits had increased by more than ten times.

Of course, among these resources, not all of them were the compensation from war, other than Hei tribe’s previous accumulation, there were also the resources offered by tribes who surrendered and joined the Hei tribe alliance army.

Just a few days ago, Hei Lou Lan organised another alliance meeting, and ordered the newly joined tribe leaders to make the poison vow.

To prevent the good things from being exchanged by others, once the resources were collated, Fang Yuan entered the supply camp at once.

Even Shadow Sword Expert and others, after they joined Hei tribe army, could not affect Fang Yuan’s status of being second to only Hei Lou Lan.

Fang Yuan had such authority, the others definitely had issues with it, but no one dared to reprimand him in public.

"Oh? There’s a rank four self-reliance Gu?" Fang Yuan’s heart was moved, among these resources, he found the Gu that he had greatly desired.

Self-reliance Gu was rather precious, Fang Yuan had a rank three version of it in Southern Border, but after coming to Northern Plains, it was suppressed to rank two. Fang Yuan did not have the relevant Gu recipe, he could not advance it further.

Earlier, he had found a self-reliance Gu in Hei tribe’s resources, but it was rank two. Without a choice, he planned to collect the Gu recipe and use these two Gu as the foundation to refine the higher rank Gu.

But this way, it would take eons for him to get a high rank self-reliance Gu. If his luck was bad and he failed the refinement several times, the duration would be prolonged further.

Now, he found this rank four self-reliance Gu, without doubt, he had to get it!

Other than rank four self-reliance Gu, he also found the rank four charging crash Gu. But he had already bought the rank three vertical charge and horizontal crash Gu earlier, and had succeeded in refining them into a rank four charging crash Gu.

Diverting his attention from charging crash Gu, Fang Yuan found several good things, especially Dong Fang tribe’s unique Gu worms.

Even with his five hundred years of experience, Fang Yuan was still very interested upon seeing these things.

What attracted him the most was the refine essence spirit Gu.

If it was categorised, this should be a healing Gu worm.

Refine essence spirit Gu could convert the essence of a Gu Master’s physical flesh into a mysterious form of energy that could nurture and heal the soul.

There were many Gu worms that could heal the soul, but this refine essence spirit Gu was far superior to its peers. Dong Fang Yu Liang had such a Gu worm, and it was a huge support to his wisdom path deductions.

As for Fang Yuan, this Gu suited him even more.

Different from Dong Fang Yu Liang, Fang Yuan was a dual enslavement and strength path cultivator, his body was strong and his mind was sharp, his soul often felt weakness and exhaustion from commanding the beast groups. The refine essence spirit Gu could be the perfect bridge between his two paths!

Among the resources, other than refine essence spirit Gu, there was also the recipe for it, Fang Yuan took them all.

According to rumors, this Gu recipe was especially created by Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortal Dong Fang Chang Fan in order to cultivate wisdom path. This meant that Dong Fang tribe had much greater attainments in wisdom path than others.

After Fang Yuan obtains this recipe, as well as the refine essence spirit Gu, it would be the same as obtaining Dong Fang tribe’s experimental results for himself.

Gu worms only need one thought from the Gu Master to self-detonate. If this was during normal times, it would not be so easy for Fang Yuan to obtain refine essence spirit Gu.

The Imperial Court competition every ten years was not only a purification and refinement process to weed out the weak, it also assisted in the interactions between all the large forces.

The way of Gu originated from the Immemorial Antiquity era, and Ren Zu was the first Gu Master who used Gu worms. After that, there was the Remote Antiquity era, Olden Antiquity era, Medieval Antiquity era, followed by the Late Antiquity era.

Until today, the way of Gu prospered, in fact it was blooming all over the world, countless paths were created from all the eras like ripples in the river of time, numerous paths flourished at times while vanishing at others.

But because of the harsh living environment, the concept of trading was not very popular with people, all the large forces liked to do their own research and treasured their findings, keeping it from others.

Back then, one of the invincible venerables, Giant Sun, felt this and set up this huge arena. Because of the battle reparations, the Huang Jin family could pass on their learning throughout the ages, grasping the overlord position of Northern Plains throughout history without declining.

After countless Imperial Court battles, Northern Plains became the publicly acclaimed strongest region out of the five in terms of fighting strength.

"But if we look at total power, Central Continent is the strongest, followed by Northern Plains." Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories, he understood clearly the strength of the five regions.

During the battle of the five regions, Northern Plains was the region which resisted Central Continent most fiercely. The other three regions, although having the same terrain advantage as Northern Plains, were suppressed fiercely by Central Continent.

Only Northern Plains managed to organise troops to fight back, invading Central Continent in return.

"Northern Plains has such great strength all thanks to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s setup. Because he used battles and war, while restricting it to a certain level, it allowed Northern Plains to hone the greatest fighting strength. Unfortunately, his plans were still too restricted, he only cared about his bloodline’s benefits. In contrast, Central Continent was strong due to their systemic reforms, it was an advantage that stemmed from their core."

Fang Yuan came from Earth, he had a unique perspective, together with his five hundred years of experience, he had a clear understanding towards the true nature of society.

"Eh, there are over a dozen amplify effect Gu?" Fang Yuan collected his scattered thoughts as he continued looking at the list, finding a new surprise.

Amplify effect Gu was from the rule path, it was used to supplement other Gu worms, to amplify the effects of the chosen Gu worm.

As for the amplification level, it would depend on the rank of the amplify effect Gu. The higher the rank, the greater the effect. Of course, the drawback was that the Gu Master’s primeval essence expenditure would be relatively higher.

Amplify effect Gu was very popular among Gu Masters, because it could be used in any path.

Fire path Gu Masters could use it, water path Gu Masters could use it, and for Fang Yuan, both his enslavement and strength paths could use amplify effect Gu.

Among Hei tribe’s resources, there was only one rank five amplify effect Gu! There were also one rank four, three rank three, and the rest of the amplify effect Gu were rank two.

Fang Yuan had to pick the best one, he chose the rank five amplify effect Gu, it would boost the effectiveness of a Gu worm by five times!

But this way, a new problem occurred.

"Lord Wolf King, you want to take so many Gu, your battle merits might not be enough..." The female Gu Master in charge reminded him as she chose her words carefully.

"Ah, I know. After all one of the rank five Gu is amplify effect Gu. That refine essence spirit Gu is also Dong Fang tribe’s specialty Gu worm." Fang Yuan’s words were very understanding and accommodating.

But his next sentence was not like this: "Never mind if I do not have enough battle merits, just credit another five hundred thousand."

"Ah?" The female Gu Master was shocked, she carefully said: "Lord, you still owe around three hundred thousand of the previous five hundred thousand battle merits you borrowed. According to the rules, you have to pay them first before borrowing again."

Fang Yuan raised his brows, saying nonchalantly: "So what, rules are made by men, since they can be made, they can be altered. I’ll borrow another five hundred thousand, no, eight hundred thousand! I will explain to Hei Lou Lan personally, now give me the goods!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The weather was gradually starting to get cold and gales started blowing over the grassland causing the beast groups to become fretful.

The aura of the ten year blizzard was already manifesting.

And in the majestic northern plains, heroes were rising and vying for supremacy causing the flames of war to burn everywhere.

Mirror lake.

Ma tribe and Song tribe had officially started their battle.

Both of them had erected three to four defense lines before starting this confrontation.

In Ma tribe’s main tent, Ma tribe leader Ma Shang Feng was in the main seat looking with a heavy gaze at Song tribe’s dense battle formation that was surging battle intent; Ma tribe’s military force was stronger than theirs, but it would not be easy getting the victory.

"Lord alliance leader, please send me out to challenge enemy general and raise our army’s prestige!"

"Alliance leader, Fei Sheng requests to be sent to battle."

"The first battle belongs to me, no one shall compete with me!"

Gu Masters were very impatient and eager as they requested to be sent to battle one after another,

Ma Shang Feng looked around him before hesitating at Fei Sheng and Cheng Hu.

The two were both rank four Gu Masters. Fei Sheng cultivated wood path and had been taken in by Ma tribe after they annexed Fei tribe. Cheng Hu cultivation transformation path and came from Cheng tribe. Cheng tribe was subjugated by Ma tribe during heroes assembly and was now the second most influential force in Ma tribe army.

Ma Shang Feng pondered and then smiled towards Cheng Hu: "Cheng Hu, you shall go first and stimulate my army’s morale."

Cheng Hu was overjoyed as he hurriedly bowed and rushed towards the frontline.

"Hah, I am Cheng Hu, who dares to approach their death?" Cheng Hu challenged loudly.

"Arrogant! Let me Su Yi teach you a lesson!" A rank four expert flew out of Song tribe army.

Cheng Hu did not say anything else but directly pounced towards the other person.

Bam bam bam...

The two were incomparably valiant and attacked with grand momentum. For a moment, the stronger and the weaker side could not be determined; the two continued to exchange moves, sending rocks, grass and mud flying around in their battle ring.

The two armies concentrated on the battle with all their attention.

Lower ranked Gu Masters felt their heart shaking, while the upper ranked Gu Master experts were fired up.

Northern plains was filled with many brave heroes and the blood of warriors permeated the bones of their Gu Master!

"Alliance leader, Fei Sheng requests to be sent to battle!" Fei Sheng shouted with a fierce glint in his eyes. He was a newly subjugated person and was filled with enthusiasm to show his loyalty.

Ma Shang Feng nodded with a smile.

Fei Sheng went to the battlefield and Song tribe army also sent their expert to battle him.

The two had just exchanged three moves when at the other battle ring, Cheng Hu suddenly roared, his whole body giving off dazzling orange light.

After the orange light dispersed, he had unexpectedly transformed into a striped tiger king, the size of an elephant!

Cheng Hu was a transformation path Gu Master and could change parts of his body into a tiger tail, tiger claws, tiger skin and so on. The complete transformation was a killer move!

This was also the superiority of transformation path – every transformation path Gu Master possessed at least one killer move as long as they collected the respective Gu worms!

Su Yi turned pale with fright and started to retreat in panic.

The tiger king pounced on him; Su Yi frantically activated his movement Gu and narrowly dodged this attack.

The tiger king swung his tail without turning around; the tail lashed through the air like a steel whip, producing an explosive sound through the air.

Su Yi quickly activated his defense Gu which created a light barrier over his whole body.

But the tiger whip was very powerful and as it fell on the light barrier, the barrier was broken in an instant.

The defense Gu died and Su Yi spurted out a large mouthful of blood due to the backlash. He hurriedly tried to retreat, but it was too late.

An intense bloody wind pounced on his face and the next moment he only saw a huge tiger mouth shrouding over his head.

Crack!

The tiger king directly bit apart Su Yi’s head.

Cheng Hu won, obtaining the first victory for Ma tribe!

Song tribe’s higher ups were slightly moved while Ma tribe’s troops rejoiced.

’Victory! A great start means half the success! Today, my army will definitely win!’ In the main tent, Ma Ying Jie clenched his fists, an extraordinary light flashing past his eyes as his spirits roused to the limit.

And on another battlefield...

In the vast battlefield, one side was shouting in high spirits with their banners fluttering grandly in the air. While the other side’s army formation was shaking, their morale low and was already showing signs of defeat.

"Alliance leader Luo, the enemy’s momentum is too fierce, we can’t hold them back!"

"We need to retreat..."

"A commander needs to be able to judge the situation properly. Right now, Liu tribe’s experts are like tigers, our army truly cannot match them."

The several higher ranked Gu Masters shouted hurriedly, all of them panicked.

Luo Bo Jun looked around him and smiled bitterly: "Retreat? Tell me, where can we still retreat to? This is already our last defense line. Sigh... forget it, since the battle with Liu Wen Wu started, which of our defense lines could hold for more than three days? They are way too strong, we might as well surrender!"

In the first battle, Luo Bo Jun was heavily injured by Liu Wen Wu, Mo Shi Kuang and others; he had yet to recover from it.

These days, Luo tribe army kept on being defeated again and again, no matter how much efforts he made, he was unable to reverse the situation. Now, as he completely realized the enormous gap between the two sides, he became disheartened and had already lost any intent to battle.

The higher ranked Gu Masters let out a sigh of relief at this. Because of poison vow, they could not easily say it, but since Luo Bo Jun himself mentioned surrendering, there was no problem.

The command to surrender was quickly spread and the battle also soon calmed down.

"Hahaha, didn’t I say it, as long as we three brothers join hands, we can rule the world!" Mo Shi Kuang laughed heartily, extremely proud of himself.

Liu Wen Wu also laughed, his heart filled with huge joy.

Liu tribe alliance had won their first battle!

Now, they would annex the enemy army, take in the captives and increase their strength before continuing forward!

...

Meng Qiu.

The leopard group hissed and growled as they fought a bloody battle with rat group.

The great army of Gu Masters of the both sides instead became a background.

Nu Er Tu held his hands behind his back with his head high; mutated leopards moved beside him, showing their dignity and prestige.

By contrast, his opponent Jiang Bao Ya - who was publicly proclaimed as one of the enslavement path masters of northern plains - was sweating greatly and was as pale as paper.

"Jiang Bao Ya, you have already lost. Do you know how you lost? Your rat group’s scale is too large, reaching six hundred and fifty thousand in numbers. Troops are valued for their quality not for their numbers, it is the same with beast groups as well. Now, quietly become a stepping stone for my name to spread in northern plains!" Nu Er Tu lightly spoke but his tranquil voice resounded within everyone’s ears.

"No, I haven’t lost yet, I still have my trump card!" Jiang Bao Ya let out a hysterical shout, "I will let you gain a first hand experience in my enslavement path killer move which I have never displayed before – Rat Epidemic!"

The moment he finished speaking, hundreds of thousands of rats self-destructed at the same time.

The leopard group suffered disastrous casualties in this chain explosion.

The ground slightly shook, turfs were flipped over, soil and stones splattered everywhere, and huge amount of yellow poison gas started appearing.

The surviving leopard group was covered by this poison gas, immediately becoming sickly with their movement slowed down; their battle strength had sharply fallen.

By contrast, Jiang Bao Ya’s rat group moved around in this yellow poison gas without being affected.

"Hahaha, the final winner is me, Jiang Bao Ya! Young man, you want to step on my position, keep on training for five hundred years more!" Jiang Bao Ya howled with laughter.

"Hmph! I had intended to keep on hiding it, but since you want to die, don’t blame me." Nu Er Tu snorted, a sinister smile appearing on his face.

He suddenly shouted: "Killer move – Leopard Dash!"

Howl!

Leopard group howled and unfolded an unmatchable mad charge.

"This?!" Jiang Bao Ya’s eyes opened wide, the leopard group’s battle strength had surged by over two times, furthermore their speed increased by an astonishing eight times!

Under everyone’s dumbfounded look, the leopard group quickly charged out of the area covered by the yellow poison gas and breathed in fresh air, before charging forward like a terrifying tsunami, swallowing and engulfing everything!

...

Du Jiao.

A large battlefield had already ended.

Fire blazed towards the sky, the whole battlefield covered by raging inferno.

A Gu Master stood loftily in the inferno like a fire deity.

He played with the fire in his hand, changing it into all kinds of shapes as he looked at the surrounding Gu Masters with his narrow eyes and spoke, his voice appearing extremely cruel and cold in the blazing inferno: "It is your honor to be defeated by my supreme fire path. Surrender, otherwise... all of you and this lowly grass shall turn into ashes."

The surrounding Gu Masters looked dejectedly at each other.

After few breaths of time, they kneeled one after another.

"I... we... surrender..."

...

After Hei tribe obtained the first victory against Dong Fang tribe, the curtains to many large battles, that had started over Northern Plains, also fell one after another.

The defeated did not lose everything; some surrendered and some ran away choosing to side with another force. This was only the initial stage of the struggle for Imperial Court, they still had hope and chance.

The winners swallowed the weak, obtaining huge amounts of war reparations and expanding themself.

The countless corpses of beast groups, Gu Masters and ordinary mortals instead became nourishments for the grassland, and in the future would sink down under the snowy land, doomed for eternity.

Winner takes all!

After resting and reorganizing for over ten days at Cao Fu, Hei Lou Lan finished absorbing the captives, expanding his military strength by sixty percent and resumed the expedition.

This time, his target was Guan Xi.

The Gu tribe 1 army stationed there had weak military strength and thus became the optimum target for Hei Lou Lan to expand his force.

Seven days later, Hei tribe army confronted Gu tribe army.

Gu tribe suffered a huge defeat at the first battle. Gu tribe alliance leader Gu Guo Long resolutely gave the order to abandon their three defense lines without using them and retreated to their tribe’s main camp.

Hei Lou Lan laughed heartily as he led his army with a crushing momentum.

But at the final battlefield, he was dumbstruck and asked his subordinates: "How is there a mountain here?"

Gu tribe army might be weak but they had their own ways. They built up a mountain by piling stones and garrisoned on the mountain, with countless traps set around the foot of the mountain. They occupied the high ground, having huge geographical advantage. Their intention to defend to the death was abundantly clear.

Hei tribe army attacked several times but were defeated every time, leaving behind large numbers of corpses.

Fang Yuan looked at the battlefield with indifference and did not use his full strength in mobilizing the wolf group, only doing it to show he was putting some effort. Adding in that there were many trees and undergrowth on the mountain, the wolf group could not show their strength properly and were instead separated and killed. Thus, the battle situation might be progressing but it was very slow.

Above all, Gu tribe army was still continuing to add in stones to the mountain, making this mountain become taller and taller.

Hei Lou Lan was furious: "Gu Guo Long is as obstinate as the rumors said. After I win, I will definitely step on him to death!"

However, the situation was still not optimistic.

Just the rocks dropped by mere mortals possessed the strength of a rank one Gu when dropped from such a height.

"If I had known this earlier, I would not have come here to chew on such a hard bone!" Hei Lou Lan had the intent to retreat, but right at this time, a person walked out of the camp.

This person held a letter as he came in front of Hei Lou Lan: "This old man Tai Bai Yun Sheng received benefactor’s letter and came to lend you a hand."

Hei Lou Lan was joyous as he grabbed this person’s hands: "With old sir helping us, we can definitely succeed!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was tall with a strangely ancient appearance. The hair near his temples had turned white and his face was filled with deep wrinkles.

He was already over eighty but his eyes were not dim and blurred, instead had a gentle look that seemed to pity the fate of mankind along with a calmness that had seen through the secular world.

Since he was seven, he had been determined to travel the northern plains to help common people.

His life was full of turmoil, as he was frequently toyed by fate. He became an enslaved Gu Master after his tribe was annihilated, then he was betrayed by his wife and became a captive of variant men. Then in a fortuitous encounter, he obtained a time path Gu Immortal’s inheritance and was rescued by his brothers when he was at the verge of death...

Now, he had already become a living legend.

Although he was a loner, he was publicly accepted as a great righteous path Gu Master. His benevolence reputation had entered the depths of northern plains’ people, the level of his prestige far surpassing people like Chang Shan Yin, Hei Lou Lan and Liu Wen Wu.

Right as Hei Lou Lan was at his wit’s end considering the battle situation and had the thought of retreating, Tai Bai Yun Sheng came to the camp by himself, holding a letter in his hand.

Hei Lou Lan read the letter and immediately realized the reason.

Back then, Hei tribe’s supreme elder Hei Bai took a fancy to Tai Bai Yun Sheng, guiding and rescuing him many times. Now that Hei tribe army had fallen into a predicament, Hei Bai who had been secretly observing all along sent a letter to Tai Bai Yun Sheng to provide assistance.

Hei Lou Lan knew the ability of Tai Bai Yun Sheng and was thus overjoyed. He arranged a banquet that night to serve Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

On the second day, the sky had just become bright; Hei Lou Lan impatiently arranged his army formation and requested Tai Bai Yun Sheng to make his move.

Under everyone’s expectant gaze, Tai Bai Yun Sheng slowly walked to the front and looked at the tall mountain in front of him.

Gu tribe was specialized in earth path and were long famous for it in northern plains. Piling stones to form a mountain, this would be an unimaginable and impossible tactics in Earth. But in this world, this mountain formed in about ten days proved nothing was impossible.

The alliance leader Gu Guo Long looked at the foot of the mountain from the summit.

When a white clothed, white hair old man walked in front of the formation, the Gu Masters around him roared in laughter and made disdainful comments, but Gu Guo Long, however, had a bad feeling in his heart.

He was well aware this mountain that they had formed by piling stones was built on many foundations constructed by his tribe’s earth path Gu Masters. Other tribes might find it hard to imitate, but it was not like there were no ways to break through it.

After being defeated repeatedly for several rounds by Hei tribe army, Gu Guo Long’s military force had suffered damage and his ambition of vying for supremacy had dimmed down. He pondered over this and had decided to side with Liu tribe.

Liu tribe’s Liu Wen Wu was wise and benevolent, treating his people leniently and being strict to himself; his reputation was much better than Hei Lou Lan’s. Several days ago, Gu Guo Long had secretly sent a letter to Liu Wen Wu express his intent to side with Liu tribe.

"Lord Liu Wen Wu has already replied and agreed to my tribe’s request to seek refuge, and is leading his army to reinforce us. As long as I defend for seven more days, this predicament before us will part like clouds and allow me to see the clear sky."

Just as Gu Guo Long was inwardly encouraging himself, Tai Bai Yun Sheng slowly extended his hands.

His large palms were covered with callus and wrinkles, just like an old tree bark.

He slowly transferred his primeval essence, a weak silver light blossomed forth from his hands. The silver light was weak at first but soon turned brighter and brighter, and in a few seconds, the silver light was so dazzling that people could not look at it directly.

"Mountain as before." Tai Bai Yun Sheng slowly chanted, his voice resonating in the air.

On the summit, Gu Guo Long heard this voice and a shocked expression appeared on his face: "Oh no, he is Tai Bai Yun Sheng!"

At the very same moment, silver light burst out, transforming into a straight light pillar that directly rammed into the mountain peak.

Countless Gu Masters saw the situation turning awry and immediately activated their defense Gu or attacked to intercept the light pillar.

But the silver light disregarded all interception and shone on the mountain peak.

Both humans and beasts were unscathed, but the mountain stones below Gu tribe - regardless of how enormous or thick they were - under the silver light, were like snow under scorching sun, as they turned into nothingness in a visible speed, seemingly like they had never even existed!

As Gu tribe army lost the support under their feet, they started falling down one after another. It was a crushing defeat, countless died as they crashed down to the ground from a height of five hundred to six hundred feet.

Even if Gu tribe masters were stupid, they would become aware of their crisis at this moment.

They exclaimed in shock one after another.

"Such strength, this is Lord Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s mountain as before!"

"Heaven, why is old sir Tai Bai helping Tyrant Hei Lou Lan?"

"Lord Tai Bai Yun Sheng helped us restore our tribe’s spirit spring back then, he is our tribe’s benefactor. Now, we need to fight with him?"

The mountain was the source of Gu tribe’s army’s confidence and now it was loudly crumbling apart. But even more than that was Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s prestige that shook their will to battle.

"Hahaha, Tai Bai Yun Sheng is indeed worthy of his name; once he moves, it will be out of the ordinary." Hei Lou Lan laughed wildly as he looked at this scene from the main tent.

Even he had not expected there to be such a hidden expert in the tribe.

But each super tribes’ supreme elders would occasionally fancy someone from demonic and righteous path’s mortal Gu Masters, they would then select these seeds to cultivate.

In case these seeds were able to become Gu Immortals, they would often be taken in by the super tribes and become their external supreme elder.

This was one of the tactics the super tribes used to preserve their position and develop themselves.

Clearly, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a seed the rank six Gu Immortal Hei Bai thought highly of and believed he had hopes of advancing to Gu Immortal realm.

Seeing the sorry figure of the enemy army, Hei tribe army’s morale surged; many started laughing loudly and there were even more who shouted of slaughtering everyone in the enemy faction even the old and the young.

The Gu Master experts in the main tent were also excited with only Fang Yuan having a calm expression. Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s appearance was already within his expectation.

In his previous life’s five hundred years of memories, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had joined Hei tribe army from this point onwards and provided an enormous assistance to Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan being able to become the winner in the end was mostly because of Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a benevolent character and during the expedition, he became deeply aware of Hei Lou Lan’s savage and brutal nature. Thus, when he entered Imperial Court blessed land and advanced to Gu Immortal, he did not agree to Hei Bai’s request to become Hei tribe’s external supreme elder.

"Kill! Kill these bastards, they actually dared to pile stones into a mountain to make a stand!" Hei Lou Lan excitedly shouted.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng who was at the front of the troops, heard Hei Lou Lan’s words and frowned; he heaved a deep sigh and did not continue to attack, instead transmitted his voice to Hei Lou Lan to persuade him: "Alliance leader, heaven care for every living thing, why the need to kill? Throughout history, the struggle for Imperial court has always been accompanied by blood dying the land and disastrous deaths. Since alliance leader wants to enter the Imperial Court, it might be better to take in Gu tribe army, I am willing to persuade them on your behalf!"

Gu tribe piled up stones to form into a mountain and used it to contend against Hei tribe, but against Tai Bai Yun Sheng, this mountain they created instead became a fatal trap to themselves.

The current situation was Hei tribe army tightly surrounding Gu tribe army.

If Tai Bai Yun Sheng just made a casual move, he could reduce Gu tribe by over half. Gu tribe would naturally not sit and wait for their death, but when the mountain was completely collapsed, they would have almost no battle strength left and their final charge would contain no threat.

However, Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not do this.

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes flashed with an ominous glint, although his heart raged with killing intent, he needed to think about Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s face.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was not an ordinary Gu Master.

He was one of the extremely rare time path Gu Masters, and had rank five peak stage cultivation. His prestige in northern plains was like the sun in daytime, his influence was spread throughout the entire region.

Hei Lou Lan thought to himself before replying: "Then I shall listen to old sir, but it is too dangerous for old sir to go up the mountain alone. I will send six rank four experts to escort old sir!"

Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded his head and climbed up the mountain under heavy protection.

He had great prestige and his benevolent reputation had spread into the depths of people; as he climbed up the mountain, the enemy troops spontaneously parted way to reveal a passage in middle.

"I did not think I would meet benefactor at such a time." Gu Guo Long laughed bitterly as he went forward and greeted.

Back then, Gu tribe’s spirit spring had dried up and they were pushed aside by several large tribes. It was very dangerous for them to migrate and thus they requested Tai Bai Yun Sheng to help them. Tai Bai Yun Sheng helped them without taking any fees and became a benefactor to everyone in Gu tribe.

Under Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s persuasion, although Gu Guo Long admired Liu Wen Wu - circumstances are more powerful than individuals - he had no choice but to lower his head.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had only been on the mountain for a quarter of an hour before he descended.

When he climbed up, there were six people with him. When he descended, there were over a hundred thousand!

Evidently, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s persuasion was successful; Gu tribe army pledged allegiance to Hei Lou Lan, thus Hei tribe army’s military strength increased sharply.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng changed the battle situation by himself. And with his deep prestige, he saved over a hundred thousand lives and also established great merits for Hei tribe.

On the very first day Tai Bai Yun Sheng came to Hei tribe army, he reached the top position in battle merit list. And exactly opposite to him was Fang Yuan.

Wolf King Chang Shan Yin’s name was listed at the last on the battle merit list, in scarlet red color and was negative, forming a stark contrast with Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s battle merit.

That very night, Hei Lou Lan sent command for a celebratory banquet and also a welcoming reception for Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

The moon was bright and stars were few; as bonfire raged high.

It was a festive scene with cheerful sounds resounding throughout the place and beautiful young girls in northern plains’ clothings embroidered with gold, silver and precious jewels, danced around the bonfire.

Hei Lou Lan repeatedly toasted towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng and praised: "With old sir assisting us, all defense lines are useless!"

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had two rank five Gu that were recognized by all northern plains’ people.

One was ’mountain as before’ and another was ’river as before’, both were time path Gu worms.

The former could restore earth, hills, mountains, mounds and valleys to their original appearance; and the latter could restore rivers, lakes, streams, springs and waterfalls back to their original appearance.

Gu Guo Long created the mountain on a land that was originally a flat grassland. Thus, under the effect of mountain as before Gu, it returned to its original form.

Gu tribe’s spirit spring had been restored to its original state by river as before Gu, being able to create primeval stones again.

In the battles between great armies, defense lines needed to be created and this usually relied on earth path Gu worms to create long and tall defense walls. These defense walls would be restored to flat grassland under the effect of mountain as before Gu. Thus Hei Lou Lan’s words ’all defense lines are useless’ had deep reasoning behind them!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Northern plains calendar, middle of June.

It should have been summer, but the aura of ten year blizzard had already thickened. The sky would often be gloomy and cold wind blew with increasing condensed frost aura.

And the struggle for Imperial Court that covered northern plains was advancing forward like a wildfire.

At Mirror lake, Ma tribe army and Song tribe had started their battle. Ma tribe’s dominance was huge and they broke through two of Song tribe’s defense lines in a row.

Song tribe alliance leader Song Qing Yin led the army to counterattack and ambushed Ma tribe, causing them to give up a defense line.

But soon after, Ma tribe’s enslavement master Ma Zun moved and mobilized his trump card pegasus group, surrounding and killing Song Qing Yin in the air. Song tribe army became a headless dragon, and after an internal discord caused by Ma tribe secretly, they finally crumbled apart.

Ma tribe annexed most of the tribes while some remnants managed to escape to all directions.

In this battle, one of the few flying masters of northern plains, rank five initial stage Water Fairy Song Qing Yin died and became a stepping stone for enslavement path master Ma Zun’s fame.

The strength Ma Zun displayed shocked the people. Faintly, people were already calling him northern plains’ number one enslavement path master.

Meng Qiu.

Nu Er Tu’s battle with Jiang Bao Ya.

Nu Er Tu was originally not an enslavement path Gu Master and had switched to it midway. But the leopard group he led was unexpectedly able to overpower and defeat the veteran enslavement path master Jiang Bao Ya.

Just because of this battle achievement, Nu Er Tu rose to the ranks of enslavement path masters of northern plains; and together with Jiang Bao Ya, Yang Po Ying, Ma Zun and Chang Shan Yin, were called five beast kings.

However, although Nu Er Tu managed to become famous, the price he had to pay was very high.

Jiang Bao Ya’s counterattack had inflicted disastrous damaged to Nu Er Tu’s troops. Despite annexing the remnants of the enemy after the battle along with the war reparations, Nu Er Tu’s army’s momentum was hindered.

Rat King Jiang Bao Ya managed to escape with his life and gathered the remnant army. His original rat group of over six hundred thousand, now had less than three hundred thousand left.

But even as a defeated general, many large forces still showed interest towards him and over ten forces had already sent him an invitation letter.

Du Jiao.

Ye Lui Sang was empowered by the Immortal Gu and with his formidable rank five peak stage fire path strength, he suppressed all the heroes and swept through the last obstacle, succeeding in dominating Du Jiao region.

However, just as Ye Lui army was spreading towards all directions like an unstoppable wildfire, they were pincer attacked by alliance of seven armies.

Each of the seven armies had at least over a hundred thousand troops. Although none were super tribes, they had famous Gu Master experts.

The alliance of seven armies created an aggressive momentum. Ye Lui army who had just gotten a head start and were about to continue with great momentum, fell into a perilous situation.

At the same time, Hei tribe army was also confronted by a great enemy and did not have any time to relax.

Liu tribe, Liu Wen Wu personally led his army and was pressing closer to Hei tribe every passing day!

Previously, Gu Guo Long had seeked helped from Liu Wen Wu; Liu Wen Wu was quite excited at reading the letter, knowing this was a rare opportunity. As long as Gu Guo Long’s side could hold on, Liu tribe army could pincer attack Hei tribe from behind and gain the upper hand, causing Hei tribe to land in a passive situation.

But the result was that the situation changed way too fast. Liu tribe army was just halfway on their way when they heard the report of Gu tribe’s defeat and submitting to Hei tribe. And the crucial character that made this possible was Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Liu Wen Wu was shocked at this report.

A legendary character like Tai Bai Yun Sheng had actually taken the initiative to come out and help Hei Lou Lan. Obtaining this person was like adding a huge army to Hei Lou Lan’s forces.

Liu Wen Wu soon realized this was the behind-the-scenes move of Hei tribe’s Gu Immortal.

According to the rule Ancestor Giant Sun set, Gu Immortals could provide some help to mortals in the struggle for Imperial Court. Naturally, this type of help had its restrictions, at least the Gu Immortals absolutely could not move personally.

Whether it was the Immortal Gu on Ye Lui Sang or Tai Bai Yun Sheng who assisted Hei Lou Lan after receiving the letter, they were both Gu Immortals’ pawn pieces.

Liu Wen Wu naturally also had the privilege to request help from the Gu Immortal supporting him.

Hei Lou Lan obtained Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s assistance who in Liu Wen Wu’s opinion was much more terrifying than Wolf King Chang Shan Yin!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s reputation was extremely high, whether it was righteous path or demonic path, many had received his grace. If just a small portion of these people had the heart to repay gratitude, the force they could gather would be very terrifying.

Besides, once Hei tribe expanded, those scattered demonic Gu Masters who had been watching from the sidelines would see the hopes of entering the Imperial Court in Hei tribe, and would side with them of their own initiative.

And Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s existence would cause them to be even more inclined to choose Hei Lou Lan.

With this, Hei tribe would continue to be stronger. And as time passed, they would throw all the other competitors behind.

"Hei Lou Lan defeated Dong Fang Yu Liang and obtained a super tribe’s war reparations, this by itself is a great profit. By contrast, we might have defeated several allied armies, but they were all an alliance of large tribes, so the war reparations we received are lower than Hei tribe’s. Now, Hei tribe has Tai Bai Yun Sheng, a living signboard with him, if we give him time to expand, it will be very difficult to deal with him later."

Liu Wen Wu contemplated for a while before resolutely sending a command. Liu tribe army continued along their original plan, pushing on towards Hei tribe.

Hei Lou Lan laughed heartily at this news: "Come, come!".

He then sent the command to set up defense lines around the area.

After constructing the first defense line properly, the large army slowly moved towards Liu tribe army. At every thousand li of distance, they would stop and garrison for several days to construct another defense line.

Twelve days later, Hei tribe army moved on from their fourth defense line and travelled five hundred li before coming face to face with Liu tribe army.

The two army parted a way for the experts challenging stage.

Hei tribe’s expert Hao Ji Liu charged forward, not giving precedence to others.

Liu Wen Wu saw this and sent Pei Yan Fei.

Hao Ji Liu was at rank four upper stage and Pei Yan Fei was also the same. The two exchanged twenty moves, the situation was still neck and neck.

Hao Ji Liu’s offense surged higher and higher, causing people’s hearts to shake. While Pei Yan Fei used sharp and precise attacks, moving back and forth within the attacks, and sweeping everything before him.

As the battle continued on, both of their primeval essence were running low.

Gu Masters were not good at prolonged battled and once their primeval essence was exhausted, their battle strength would sharply fall.

"This cannot go on!" The two had similar thoughts at the same time.

Waterfall Gu!

Hao Ji Liu took the lead and pushed forward his palms; a giant waterfall fell from the air and crashed towards Pei Yan Fei with a rumbling sound.

Pei Yan Fei did not face it head on, instead using his movement Gu to soar to the sky, evading the waterfall.

Rank four golden coat Gu!

Rank four swallow wings Gu!

Rank four rainbow transformation Gu!

Killer move — Golden Rainbow Strike!

Pei Yan Fei staked it all, using his signature killer move.

At that instant, he turned into a golden rainbow and made an arc through the air as fast as lightning, cutting open the waterfall before bursting through Hao Ji Liu!

However, Hao Ji Liu turned into water after being burst; it was not his real body.

Water image Gu!

Hao Ji Liu had fought for a long time and already had the intel on Pei Yan Fei, and knew Pei Yan Fei did not have powerful detective Gu. Thus, when he sent the waterfall, he took the advantage of the giant current blocking Pei Yan Fei’s line of sight to quietly use his water image Gu while his real body hid inside the waterfall. His actions were extremely secretive and most of the Gu Masters from both sides had been deceived.

Pei Yan Fei burst through the water image and immediately had warning signals going off in his heart. Without holding back, he transferred all his remaining primeval essence into his swallow wings Gu.

The two pairs of swallow wings on his back rapidly flapped and took him away from the battlefield.

Hao Ji Liu stood on the spot, his whole body soaked in water. Even though he won the battle, he was not happy. The enemy’s killer move had astonishing power, this time he used water image Gu to deceive him, but what about the next time?

"Big brother, let me go out!" Pei Yan Fei returned in defeat, causing Mo Shi Kuang to fume with anger and impatiently requested to be sent to battle.

Liu Wen Wu had a smile on his face, but he did not agree.

"Third brother, no need to fret. You came forward in the previous battle, it is my turn now." An extremely tall and thin Gu Master with robust and shiny bald head stood out and patted Mo Shi Kuang’s shoulder.

"Second brother!" Mo Shi Kuang helplessly shouted.

This person’s name was Ouyang Bi Sang, a demonic Gu Master. In their early years, by chance encounter, he met Liu Wen Wu and Mo Shi Kuang in an inheritance site. The three combined their strength to tackle the obstacles and obtained the inheritance, and because they felt affinity with each other, they became sworn brothers.

"I am Ouyang Bi Sang, who wants to come spar with me?" Ouyang Bi Sang slowly walked towards the front of the troops and shouted in a soft voice.

Soon after, he looked at Hao Ji Liu: "If Water Demon wants to fight with me, you might as well get some rest first to recover your primeval essence."

Water Demon snickered but did not agree to the provocation: "No need to hurry, there will be many chances later on."

After saying that, he returned to the camp.

With the struggle for Imperial Court advancing to this stage, the intel on experts of every forces was widely spread.

Ouyang Bi Sang was Mo Shi Kuang’s second brother, just this status alone made him someone who could not be underestimated. His performance was extremely glorious during the several large battles before.

He was a transformation path expert and the Gu Masters of this path possessed at least one killer move. With a cultivation of rank four peak stage, he was same as Mo Shi Kuang, possessing the battle strength comparable to a rank five Gu Master!

During his first battle, he had killed the enemy side’s rank five alliance leader. A dazzling battle achievement like crossing realms to fight was something many people would look up to their whole lives.

Facing such an expert, Water Demon Hao Ji Liu might have small chance at victory even if he was at his peak stage. Let alone now, when his energy was already exhausted in the battle with Pei Yan Fei. A Gu Master’s state did not just depend on the amount of primeval essence in their aperture.

Seeing Ouyang Bi Sang coming forward, Hei Lou Lan felt a slight headache.

In contrast to Liu Wen Wu, he currently found that he lacked fierce generals beside him.

After taking in Gu tribe army, Hei tribe army now had three rank five Gu Masters - Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and the just recently subdued Gu Guo Long.

Hei Lou Lan could not easily move because of his status as the alliance leader. Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a healing Gu Master and was not good at fighting. Gu Guo Long was a rank five earth path Gu Master but the other was at rank four peak stage; it would not conform to the rule of battle if he was sent out, and they would only be sneered upon.

He then looked at his rank four Gu Masters - Wolf King Chang Shan Yin, Water Demon Hao Ji Liu, Shadow Sword Expert Bian Si Xuan, Little Fox Commander Tang Miao Ming and Sole Blade Pan Ping.

Chang Shan Yin and Tang Miao Ming were enslavement path Gu Masters, so they could be excluded. Water Demon Hao Ji Liu had already went up, so Hei Lou Lan only had two choices left.

His gaze moved between Pan Ping and Bian Si Xuan.

Pan Ping knew he was not Ouyang Bi Sang’s match by just relying on his trump card, so he looked uncomfortable. While Bian Si Xuan’s face was covered with a black veil, revealing her cold and clear gaze.

Hei Lou Lan turned around towards Bian Si Xuan: "For this challenge, I will have to trouble Shadow Sword Expert to make a move."

"I can only ensure that I won’t lose my life, but I can’t guarantee a victory." Bian Si Xuan coldly replied.

Hei Lou Lan gave a hollow laugh, although he was alliance leader and Bian Si Xuan had taken the poison vow, Hei Lou Lan could not forcibly make Bian Si Xuan fight to the death.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bian Si Xuan moved to the front of the troop and without saying much, quickly started the fight with Ouyang Bi Sang.

The battle between the two attracted the close attention of countless people.

If considering reputation, Shadow Sword Expert could throw Ouyang Bi Sang several streets away. But if considering cultivation and strength, Ouyang Bi Sang was a rank four peak stage Gu Master who was able to cross a great realm and kill a rank five expert, while Shadow Sword Expert was only at rank four upper stage.

Shadow Sword Expert’s Gu worms complemented each other very well and there was no shortcomings. At the same time, she placed high importance on her movement ability.

Her figure turned into shadows and continuously circled around Ouyang Bi Sang, attacking with multiple sword shadows from time to time.

Ouyang Bi Sang stayed stationary on the spot as he defended, his body unmoving like the rocks on the shores of the sea.

The battle went on for a while, when this sworn brother of Liu Wen Wu slowly felt impatient: "If you are only of this standard, then go die!"

He gave a low shout, as great changes appeared over his whole body.

His teeth quickly grew longer and sharper like swords, and his two pairs of canine teeth protruded out of his mouth like fangs.

Green hair started growing out of his bald head. Not only on his head, the green hair grew all over his body.

His body made creaking noises and his blood flow instantly slowed down greatly. The originally tall and skinny body became even more thin, but the aura of danger coming from him grew thicker by ten times!

His eyes were no longer human eyes, but had transformed into a pair of eerie and cold green eyes, giving off a glossy jade light.

Rank five, asura zombie Gu!

This Gu was classified under the most classic zombie series of transformation path.

The series of zombie Gu were spread widely throughout the five regions. From rank two roaming zombie Gu to rank three hairy zombie Gu to rank four hopping zombie Gu till the rank five flying zombie Gu.

There were five great flying zombie Gu in the world - asura zombie, heavenly demon zombie, blood wight, nightmare zombie and plague zombie.

Many Gu Masters who did not have much lifespan left and had no lifespan Gu to increase their life, would often choose to turn into zombies to prolong their life, transforming into a monster that was neither human nor ghost.

Fang Yuan had already seen blood wight Gu before. At Qing Mao mountain, Gu Yue first generation ancestor had turned into blood wight to change his fate in defiance of heaven, but his plan was thwarted by Divine Investigator Tie Xue Leng and others.

This asura zombie Gu that Ouyang Bi Sang was using was a formidable Gu that was equally famous as blood wight Gu!

Clank clank clank...

Bian Si Xuan's sword shadows cut at Ouyang Bi Sang's body, but they actually produced sparks on contact, unable to injure his skin by even a fraction, only cutting several green hair.

Overlapping shadow Gu!

Bian Si Xuan's eyes flashed with a sharp light, multiple sword shadows overlaid on top of one another to transform into an abysmally dark and extremely condensed sword.

"Now this is something!" Green light blossomed in Ouyang Bi Sang's pupils as he looked at this sword shadow attack; he was not afraid, but instead was happy.

He stretched his right hand in a form of a claw and grabbed at the sword shadow like he was grabbing a rabbit.

"This!" Bian Si Xuan revealed shock, the sword shadow in her hand could not go an inch further.

"Gagaga..." Ouyang Bi Sang laughed in a haggard and unpleasant tone as he clenched his claw-shaped right palm.

Puff.

A soft sound echoed.

He actually forcibly burst apart the sword shadow. Bian Si Xuan quickly retreated, the shattered sword shadow burst into many sharp pieces that ruthlessly struck at Ouyang Bi Sang, inflicting several deep wounds on his body, and slashed apart the four fingers on his right hand and almost cut apart the whole right fist.

Bian Si Xuan had bitterly accumulated battle merits from several small battles before and exchanged them for overlapping shadow Gu from Hei tribe supply camp.

Under its effect, the multiple sword shadows' offense could merge and could match the offensive prowess of a rank five attack Gu!

Ouyang Bi Sang was slashed at by the sword shadow, but he did not feel any pain. He had transformed into a zombie which caused the feeling of pain to almost disappear. At the same time, large amounts of eerie green blood flowed out of the wounds.

The wounds were so deep that one could see the bone, but they healed within just few seconds of time. New hair grew on top of it and covered it.

His broken fingers also grew again and it looked like it did not take any effort.

Bian Si Xuan's complexion turned pale white at this sight.

Ouyang Bi Sang looked hot-headed when he forcibly grabbed the sword shadow, but it was actually a psychological tactic. After he transformed into asura zombie, his defense and recovery ability were raised by several folds. Bian Si Xuan’s strongest attack could not affect him in any way.

This unavoidably weakened Bian Si Xuan’s will to battle severely.

Gu Master’s battle strength did not only rely on the amount of primeval essence in their aperture, it also depended on their determination and mental state.

"I am an assassin, an expert at movement and infiltrating secretly. These challenges between the two army are done out in the open and facing someone head-on is not my usual style..." Ouyang Bi Sang’s performance greatly weakened the battle intent in Bian Si Xuan’s heart.

In the next several rounds, she kept on attacking while moving around Ouyang Bi Sang, but it was clear her attacking frequency had decreased by a lot compared to before, and she was dodging most of the time.

After exchanging ten more moves, Bian Si Xuan shouted and quickly pulled open a distance from Ouyang Bi Sang, retreating towards Hei tribe camp.

At this sight, Liu tribe army’s morale rose again, while Hei tribe’s morale shook and the higher ups did not have good expressions.

"Bian Si Xuan lost..."

"Is Ouyang Bi Sang really so strong? His killer move is asura transformation, having killed a rank five expert with this killer move. Now, he has only used asura zombie Gu, not even using his full strength but was still able to defeat Shadow Sword Expert!"

"Shadow Sword Expert did not have a strong will to fight, but by continuously attacking while moving around, she has exhausted a considerable amount of Ouyang Bi Sang’s primeval essence. We can send another person to fight with him!"

The discussions settled and Hei tribe army sent Pan Ping to battle.

But within only a short period of time, Pan Ping seemed unable to stall further and panickedly unsheathed the scimitar on his waist and used sole blade Gu.

A cold light flashed but it was in vain.

Sole blade Gu could ignore defense but it did not work always and had a certain probability. Moreover, once this rank four sole blade Gu was activated, it needed eight hours of rest before it could be used again.

Ouyang Bi Sang got quite a shock. Despite having read relevant intel, sole blade Gu’s speed was way faster than what he imagined, making him unable to react in time!

"I can’t leave him alive!" Ouyang Bi Sang’s killing intent surged as he pounced towards Pan Ping.

Pan Ping already knew the situation was bad the moment he saw his attack did not succeed, so he hurriedly retreated. Ouyang Bi Sang pursued him closely, Hei tribe quickly sent three rank four experts to block Ouyang Bi Sang and rescue Pan Ping.

The three rank four experts surrounded Ouyang Bi Sang and attacked fiercely. Ouyang Bi Sang was about to use his killer move — Asura Transformation, when Mo Shi Kuang who was unable to endure anymore charged out of the main tent and shouted: "Second brother, I will lend you a hand!!"

Ouyang Bi Sang, alone, put Hei tribe army under great pressure, now adding Mo Shi Kuang on top of that and the situation turned way worse.

"Third brother, no need to interfere, what is the use even if there are more people? Look at my asura transformation!" Ouyang Bi Sang furiously roared under the three rank four experts’ violent attacks, and used his killer move.

His aura suddenly increased sharply, his body grew bigger, becoming a giant of over ten feet.

The muscles in his whole body inflated like a balloon and quickly transforming into absurd rock-like bulging muscles. And under his pair of arms, two new pairs of arms grew out.

His body was completely dark-green. HIs feet ripped apart the leather boots and stepped on the grassland, creating a deep crater.

The protruding fangs turned dark brown and a third vertical eye opened from the center of his forehead!

Howl!

Ouyang Bi Sang roared, the berserk sound shaking the whole battlefield.

The three Hei tribe’s Gu Masters felt their momentum slowed down.

Ouyang Bi Sang waved his fist like swatting a fly, sending one flying far away.

The other two attacked violently, golden blades striking rapidly like thunder, but Ouyang Bi Sang took it forcibly; his enormous body not even budging.

"Die!" He attacked with all six hands - punching, swatting, grabbing, holding - with extremely fierce power. And all his hands moved smoothly, not hindering each other in the slightest.

The two rank four could not take it head on, and started retreating.

Ouyang Bi Sang was not satisfied, his every punch produced a sonic boom with power that caused people to pale.

One rank four Gu Master lasted only a short while under this crazed offense and was smashed into blood paste; while another Gu Master was grabbed by Ouyang Bi Sang.

"Don’t kill me, don’t kil—!"

His pleadings came to an end abruptly, blood started flowing rapidly out of his seven facial orifices, his ribs were crushed and his body started deflating - Ouyang Bi Sang had crushed him to death with two hands.

"So violent!" Cunning Gentleman Sun Shi Han involuntarily cried out.

Hei Lou Lan’s expressed turned extremely unsightly, and Tai Bai Yun Sheng also had a solemn expression.

Liu tribe’s army started cheering loudly while Hei tribe’s Gu Masters were in disorder, their morale falling down to the abyss.

Liu Wen Wu laughed at this sight before waving his hand: "Commence the battle! All troops, charge!"

Immediately, Liu tribe army rushed forward like a flood with the gates opened, bringing a momentum that wanted to drown the world! Mo Shi Kuang, Pei Yan Fei and others were leading.

Hei Lou Lan gnashed his teeth and also sent the command for the army to prepare to receive the attack.

The large battle unfolded with all kinds of shouts and cries resounding through the battlefield.

During the intense battle, Liu tribe’s several great experts rampaged everywhere, causing Hei Lou Lan and the higher-ups to fall into disadvantage at the very start.

But at the low level, Hei tribe was actually winning. Under Fang Yuan’s control, the wolf group started wildly slaughtering Liu tribe’s Gu Masters, while Liu tribe army’s Gu Masters had no choice but to waste their precious primeval essence against the encroaching wolves. Thus, even if the wolves died, they died after contributing greatly.

Liu tribe’s Gu Masters experts sensed this unfavorably situation and started searching for Fang Yuan.

However, Fang Yuan used the same old trick, hiding in some corner of the battlefield. He now already had three rank four lurking soul coat Gu, and with the concealment from these Gu, as long as he did not use over eighty percent of his strength, his soul fluctuations would be concealed.

This large battle continued from the early morning to evening.

The setting sun shone like blood as it shone down on the grassland that was covered with corpses and blood.

There was no winner in this battle.

Liu tribe suffered disastrous losses in their military forces because of the wolf group. After the Liu tribe’s Gu Master experts were not able to find Fang Yuan’s location, they all concentrated in attacking Hei tribe’s Gu Master experts.

Hei tribe’s Gu Master experts thus suffered serious damage. Mo Shi Kuang and Ouyang Bi Sang were difficult to restrain, and almost all the Hei tribe Gu Masters were too terrified to confront them.

Hei tribe’s battle intent was dissipating and was barely able to hold on. When the night fell, the night wolves became fierce and Liu Wen Wu, not wanting the lower ranked Gu Master casualties to increase, also had the thought of retreating.

The first battle ended up in a draw with their killing intent gradually calming down as the night progressed. Both sides retreated behind their defense lines to rest and prepare.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Hei tribe’s main tent. The atmosphere here was stifling, almost everyone including Hei Lou Lan was injured.

The lofty and grand Gu Master experts looked very miserable at this moment.

"Liu tribe’s offense was too fierce. Liu Wen Wu, Luo Bo Jun and Nie Ya Qing are rank five experts, Mo Shi Kuang and Ouyang Bi Sang are rank four peak stage experts with battle strength of rank five. Furthermore, there are other strong experts like Pei Yan Fei and Chang Biao... Such quality of experts were rarely seen in the past ten struggles for Imperial Court." Cunning Gentleman Sun Shi Han sighed.

Rank four Gu Masters were already rare; each was the head of small or mid-sized forces or elders of large-sized forces.

And with the high demand of aptitude, rank five was even rarer. Even a super force would only have two-three rank five Gu Masters openly.

Actually, when comparing, Hei tribe was stronger in higher ranked forces.

Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Gu Guo Long were rank five experts. And there were over twenty rank four experts including Chang Shan Yin, Tang Miao Ming, Hao Ji Liu, Bian Si Xuan and Pan Ping.

However, even between same ranked Gu Masters, there was a difference in their battle strength. Gu Masters were a force that surpassed group battles, their individual strength could surpass the accumulation of a group. For example, just Fang Yuan alone could slaughter small or mid-sized tribes. In today’s battle, Ouyang Bi Sang, alone, had slaughtered five rank four Gu Masters and twelve rank three elders.

It was not that Hei tribe was weak but that Liu tribe’s higher ranked battle strength was too strong!

Especially in this battle, Liu tribe had slaughtered many of Hei tribe’s higher ranked Gu Masters, cutting down rank four Gu Masters to almost half, causing the gap to further increase.

The way to deal with the enormous dominance of Liu tribe was a problem Hei tribe had to quickly come up with a solution for.

"If I had some time, I could annex several large armies, and with old sir’s prestige, subdue some experts, maybe we could contend against Liu tribe’s higher ranked strength then." Hei Lou Lan sighed, hating Liu Wen Wu for choosing this time to attack, not giving him any space to develop.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng immediately realized the deep intent behind Hei Lou Lan’s words: "I once rescued Gao Yang and Zhu Zai, and they had said they would repay the favor. I can write them a letter, and maybe they will come over."

Everyone’s spirits rose.

Gao Yang and Zhu Zai were called the twin demons of demonic path in northern plains, they always worked together, having great teamwork with each other. These two were both rank four peak stage experts and had once killed a rank five expert by combining their strength!

The pressure on Hei Lou Lan eased: "If I can get Gao Yang and Zhu Zai’s help, it can slightly make up for the gap between the two armies. But the events of the battle concerns everyone’s life, and we cannot hope for others’ mood in repaying the favor. In today’s battle, it was thanks to Wolf King that we were able to exterminate large numbers of low ranked enemy Gu Masters, causing an enormous loss to Liu tribe. If it were not for Liu Wen Wu feeling hesitation, how could he have retreated so easily?"

Everyone’s gaze landed on Fang Yuan, wanting to hear his thoughts.

Fang Yuan had a tranquil expression, not having a trace of injury on his body. He had been hiding while commanding the wolf group in the battle, but he was the one who gained the most battle merits.

Most of the ones in the main tent were inwardly infuriated at this, having envious and jealous feelings. But due to the situation, they did not dare to flare up.

After the battle, Fang Yuan had been looking through his memories, trying to excavate the information on how Hei Lou Lan had prevailed over Liu Wen Wu, but even after a long time of racking up his brain, he did not get any results.

There was way too much information in the memories of his five hundred years of past life, and much was forgotten. And from the look of it, this enormous problem that was troubling everyone was no more than just a minor detail in the long river of history in his past life.

Feeling everyone’s gaze, Fang Yuan raised his eyelids and lightly said: "Liu tribe has enslavement path Gu Masters but their strongest expert is only Bei Cao Chuan whose grass soldier troops is of no importance. Now, both the enemy and us have our strengths. We are like two giants stabbing each other with spears. Liu tribe is strong in terms of higher ranked Gu Masters, while I can slaughter many of their low ranked Gu Masters with my wolf group. Thus, it resulted in the draw today."

"The way to victory is restraining the enemy’s advantage as well as strengthening our advantage. And restraining the enemy’s Gu Master experts is not an impossible thing, as long as I can have a group of strong wolves as trump cards, I can restrain them. But with this, I will have to use all my strength and the rank four lurking soul coat Gu on me will no longer be able to conceal my soul fluctuations, and thus I will become the enemy’s target."

Fang Yuan’s words caused everyone’s eyes to brighten.

"Trump card wolf group..." Hei Lou Lan lowered his head and mumbled.

The current five great enslavement masters of northern plains were called the five beast kings. Among them, Horse King Ma Zun has mutated pegasus group. Eagle King Yang Po Ying has mutated thunder eagle group. Rat King Jiang Bao Ya has mutated mountain drilling rat group. And the newly advanced enslavement master Leopard King Nu Er Tu controlled glimpse leopard group. Only Wolf King Chang Shan Yin did not have a mutated beast group.

Every mature mutated beast possessed the battle strength of rank four Gu Masters. Once a group of mutated beasts formed, they would be more terrifying than the same amount of Gu Masters. After all, beast group would charge dauntlessly under the enslavement path Gu Master’s control. As Gu Masters had all kinds of self benefits to think about, even if they were under poison vow, they could not be made to fight to the death.

If they had a group of mutated beasts, there was a huge chance of killing rank five experts.

After all, even rank five Gu Masters were mortals in the end, with limited primeval essence and there were times when their strength was exhausted.

However, making a mutated beast group was too time-consuming of a process and would exhaust enormous energy and resources.

To look for a group of mutated wolf group for Fang Yuan in this short period of time, there was only one way - requesting help from Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals.

The people in the main tent, even if they did not know the existence of treasure yellow heaven, they were aware of the huge power of Gu Immortals.

In the history of northern plains, there were several examples where Gu Immortals organized mutated beast group to provide assistance to their respective force.

"Mutated beast group is indeed a way out, I will give it a try first." Hei Lou Lan pondered for a while before saying vaguely.

But everyone clearly knew the meaning behind Hei Lou Lan’s words was to request help from the Gu Immortal behind him.

This immediately caused a new change in the gaze everyone looked at Fang Yuan.

How could this Wolf King Chang Shan Yin have such good luck? Making a Gu Immortal help him to organize a mutated wolf group. If he had to do this himself, he might not even be able to accomplish it in twenty to thirty years! Why don’t we get such benefits?

Everyone felt envious and jealous.

Ultimately, it was the identity of Chang Shan Yin that Fang Yuan carried; an enslavement master was an existence that could turn tides around. Hei tribe was fighting Liu tribe, it was indeed wise to put heavy importance on Fang Yuan and give more resources to him.

"If I remember right, even if there is a mutated beast group, Lord Wolf King’s battle merits is ranked number one from the bottom, the last place in the battle merits list, right?" Cunning Gentleman was filled with jealousy, ’kindly’ reminding as if he had suddenly recalled it.

"Of course, I can’t receive a mutated wolf group for nothing!" Fang Yuan righteously nodded, "Our rules cannot be broken, I will use battle merits to exchange for it. Of course, my battle merits are insufficient right now, so I can only borrow a bit more. This is something that cannot be helped!"

Everyone was speechless.

Many people shouted inwardly at the same time:

’Do you feel no shame speaking such words?’

’Do you still want your face, you already borrowed one million and three hundred thousand battle merits before and you still want to borrow more?!’

’In the entire Hei tribe army, only you have borrowed battle merits! Don’t you feel guilt holding that rank five amplify effect Gu?’

In fact, Fang Yuan not only did not feel any guilt, instead he said with a ’not satisfied’ voice: "Just a mutated beast group won’t do, I still require rank five lurking soul coat Gu. Unfortunately, refining a rank five Gu has a success rate that is too low. I have collected three rank four Gu, but I don’t dare to fuse them to rank five."

Hei Lou Lan gnashed his teeth, the number of times he could request help from the tribe was limited, the more he asked for help, the less the tribe’s evaluation of him would be. But there was no other way, he could only nod at Fang Yuan in order to defeat Liu Wen Wu: "I will do something about it."

Just as Hei Lou Lan and his group were strategizing, Liu Wen Wu and his group were also planning on how to battle Hei tribe.

"In Hei tribe army, Wolf King Chang Shan Yin is the biggest problem. It was because of him that my army suffered disastrous losses in today’s battle, with at least thirty thousand Gu Masters dying in the wolves’ mouths. Sigh, this number is truly making my heart bleed, everyone came forward to side with me because they believed in me. But it is because of my incompetence, we had to suffer such heavy casualties!"

In the main tent, Liu Wen Wu shed tears and sighed.

"Big brother, how is it your fault? We can only blame those Gu Masters for being useless!" Mo Shi Kuang almost jumped up as he hurriedly retorted.

"Wolf King Chang Shan Yin might have huge reputation, but he is not a true hero." Ouyang Bi Sang, however, loftily snorted, his tone contained disdain, "The grand Wolf King was actually sneakily hiding in some corner like a rat, it really makes people look down upon him."

"But, such a Wolf King is the most troublesome!" Liu Wen Wu sighed inwardly while opening his weeping eyes and asked the group, "Do any of you have a good method to deal with Wolf King?"

Mo Shi Kuang and Ouyang Bi Sang stopped speaking.

They were experts at fighting, things like strategizing were not their strong points.

"I have a plan." Bei Cao Chuan stood up and said confidently, "Wolf King Chang Shan Yin was originally Chang tribe’s tribesman. Although he spoke of taking revenge, the blood-ties he has with Chang tribe is unmistakable and cannot be severed. The current Chang tribe leader Lord Chang Biao was once Chang Shan Yin’s best friend. After Chang Shan Yin disappeared, Chang Biao married his wife and raised his three year old son who is currently Chang tribe’s young tribe leader Chang Ji You. We might as well try to use this to deal with Wolf King, who knows if it might be effective?"

"Hmm...this idea is not bad!" Liu Wen Wu’s eyes gleamed.

...

After the discussion ended, Fang Yuan returned to his large lizard house Gu.

The problem of refining rank five lurking soul coat Gu had been hurting his head recently. If he could borrow Hei tribe’s Gu Immortal’s power to organize a mutated beast group and also refine rank five lurking soul coat Gu, it would be the best.

Fang Yuan felt there was a huge chance for this to succeed. Although he could not remember all the minor details of this time’s struggle for Imperial Court, but he knew clearly Hei Lou Lan was able to enter Imperial Court and the support of the Gu Immortal behind Hei Lou Lan was inseparable from this.

"The two sides will at least rest and reorganize for three days. In this time, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals will have received Hei Lou Lan’s letter for assistance. Before this, I need to prepare..."

Thinking of his great plan, the corners of Fang Yuan’s lips involuntarily curled up into a smile.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Xiao Hun blessed land.

This place was always covered in dense dark clouds and female-shaped trees grew on the ground.

These trees were very peculiar; the tree trunk was curved and branches wrapped around each other like a girl’s naked body. The trees were in all kinds of enchanting postures.

Female-shaped trees grew all over the place, becoming a forest.

In the deepest part of the forest was the tallest female-shaped tree with a height of one thousand feet and roots that extended for a range of ten thousand li.

This female-shaped tree king, however, did not look seductive, instead giving off pure and holy aura.

The tree king’s trunk was ramrod straight, giving a highly spirited feeling. Its two enormous branches formed into hands that covered the chest. The side branches from them formed into two well-developed and large palms that lifted a green treehouse.

Red vermillion fruits grew all over the treehouse with reddish-brown rattan twining around them, making the fruits look like hearts.

Two Gu Immortals were sitting inside this treehouse, both in black clothes.

On the left was an ordinary looking man who was called ’Hei tribe stoneman’ during his young age, he was awkward at conversing but was smart and careful inside; he was Hei Bai.

On the right side, however, was a handsome man who was radiating with vigor, having eyes that seemed to shine, and appeared confident and at ease; he was Hei tribe’s supreme elder Hei Cheng, Hei Lou Lan’s father and a famous handsome man as well as the male lead in Su Xian’s night elopement.

"Say, you just returned from Ni Yu blessed land, did you see Dong Fang Chang Fan? How is he?" Hei Cheng asked leisurely while taking a sip of tea.

Hei Bai nodded: "Senior Dong Fang isn’t looking for lifespan Gu, there is not much of his lifespan left, he can probably only live for two-three years more. But his vision is broad and has magnanimous conduct, already seeing through the trouble of life and death and only wants to wholeheartedly nurture his successor Dong Fang Yu Liang now."

"Magnanimous conduct, broad vision?" Hei Cheng scoffed, shaking his head in disdain, "Brother, you saw wrong. Dong Fang Chang Fan is a genuine petty person, he schemed against the northern plains and is extremely insidious and so is hated by all the Gu Immortals. If it was not so, he could have already bought lifespan Gu, why would he have fallen into this state? I have been secretly investigating over these years and have discovered he had a hand in my wife Su Xian Er’s death!"

Hei Cheng revealed this secret information, causing Hei Bai to be extremely startled.

"What? There was such a thing?" Hei Bai exclaimed in shock.

Su Xian Er was Hei Cheng’s wife. Over two hundred years back, Su Xian Er was no more than a daughter of a concubine in Su tribe; and while she poured wine for Lord Hei Cheng back then in the banquet, Hei Cheng immediately fell in love at first sight.

In that banquet, Hei Cheng was poisoned by Su tribe leader, his strength fell to the bottom and he was hunted down.

After Su Xian Er accidentally learned of it, she resolutely rushed out of the tribe in the dead of night to rescue Hei Cheng whom she had only met once.

At that time, Su Xian Er only had rank one cultivation, and ferocious beasts roamed the night grassland that were beyond her ability to contend.

But under the play of fate, she was able to find the unconscious Hei Cheng.

Hei Cheng was thus saved and managed to live. He had then asked Su Xian Er with suspicion: "I was plotted against by your tribe leader and you are a Su tribesman, why would you save an enemy of your tribe?"

Su Xian Er had answered: "Lord has a noble spirit, this humble girl fell in love at first sight. Su tribe leader is short-sighted and plotted against lord under the persuasion of some petty people, but he never considered the result of offending Hei tribe. If he was allowed to have his way, Su tribe is destined to become a sacrificial pawn between two super tribes. People say lord repays a favor received by a hundred times. This humble girl saved lord today and only hopes lord can give me a place to stay. It is just and proper for lord to take revenge against Su tribe, but I hope lord can be merciful and leave behind a trace of bloodline for Su tribe."

The moonlight shone on the jade-like beauty with slender and fair hands.

Hei Cheng was overwhelmed at this sight, he tightly held Su Xian Er’s hand and swore: "Your love is as deep as the sea, I, Hei Cheng, am not a cruel person, how could I not repay you? From today onwards, you will be my only wife! I will not care for any other beauties, no matter how beautiful they are. In this life, I will never betray you!"

Su Xian Er saving Hei Cheng was akin to betraying the tribe. Hei Cheng was very grateful and interlinked with her as husband and wife.

From that day onwards, the two helped each other, loving and respecting each other their whole life. Hundred years later, both became Gu Immortals, becoming a story that spread far and wide in northern plains. And Su Xian’s night elopement was also spread wide, encouraging countless women to bravely take the initiative to love.

Hei Bai’s mood became solemn: "Could it be over twenty years ago sister-in-law did not die because of the blessed land’s earthly calamity?"

Hei Cheng scoffed: "There was indeed an earthly calamity, but the earthly calamity was influenced by people. Don’t forget brother, old ancestor Giant Sun Immortal Venerable has such methods. Dong Fang tribe has entered Imperial Court many times as a tribe with Huang Jin bloodline, they might have received an inheritance relevant to such methods from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. Sigh, I only have a little evidence, it is not enough to prove Dong Fang Chang Fan as the main culprit."

Hei Bai remained dazed for quite a while before sighing: "You really can’t judge people by appearance."

Hei Cheng patted his shoulder and comforted in a gentle voice: "Brother, you have become a Gu Immortal for less than ten years. Gu Immortals’ circle might not be big, but the treacherous conspiracies inside it are much deeper than between mortals."

Hei Bai was just about to speak, when his expression blanked: "Hei Lou Lan has send a letter."

Hei Cheng nodded, and with a shift of his mind, loosened the defense over Xiao Hun blessed land by a little; the space opened up and in flew a butterfly.

Hei Bai stretched his right hand; this butterfly fluttered and gently landed on his palm.

This was rank five butterfly letter Gu.

Hei Bai closed his eyes and concentrated on the butterfly letter Gu from Hei Lou Lan, containing his request.

"What is it, did that disappointing child of mine ask you for help again?" When Hei Bai opened his eyes, Hei Cheng snorted and asked with a displeased tone.

Hei Bai forced a smile: "Brother, Hei Lou Lan is you and sister-in-law Su Xian Er’s son. Although sister-in-law suffered and fell seriously ill when giving birth to Hei Lou Lan, leading to her strength being greatly diminished and thus passing away in the earthly calamity several years later, the child is still innocent, you should not disregard him because of it. You even gave him to the twenty-seventh concubine Fairy Jiang Yu to adopt and did not allow him to light an incense to pay respects to his own mother."

Hei Cheng snorted with dissatisfaction, but did not argue.

Hei Bai sighed: "This is your family affair and it is truly not my place to meddle. But I have given a lot of thoughts to big brother’s actions; you sent Hei Lou Lan to be adopted by the childless Fairy Jiang Yu in order to preserve Hei Lou Lan’s life though her Immortal Gu Dark Limit. Hei Lou Lan has the ten extreme physique — Great Strength True Martial. To stimulate his spirit, you gave him a condition that as long as he advanced to Gu Immortal, he could light the incense for his mother. Little brother deeply admire your actions, but big brother, your way of doing things will only deepen the misunderstandings between father and son, it is not a good method looking at the long term drawbacks."

Hei Cheng heaved a sigh, not replying Hei Bai, but instead asked: "What did that child mention in the request?"

Hei Bai clapped his palm and smiled: "Look big brother, you showed indifference but you still care about nephew’s safety in your heart. Nephew hopes we can prepare a mutated wolf group and also a rank five lurking soul coat Gu."

"Hmph, this kid is truly insolent! Lurking soul coat Gu is okay, but our Hei tribe does not have mutated wolf group."

"Right now, our Hei tribe is battling Liu tribe, Liu tribe’s current generation tribe leader Liu Wen Wu is not someone who can be underestimated. Back then, the inheritance of Harmony Immortal fell in his hand. He has two sworn brothers, both are fierce warriors and can match ten thousand soldiers. However, nephew Lou Lan also has a great general under him - Wolf King Chang Shan Yin. This time’s request is because he has placed his hopes on Chang Shan Yin." Hei Bai explained.

Hei Cheng mumbled: "Rank five lurking soul coat Gu is no issue, I have one with me. But mutated wolf group would have to be purchased from treasure yellow heaven. I will have to request brother for this."

Hei Bai quickly shook his hand: "Brother, you don’t have to be so polite. I still need to rely on nephew to enter Imperial Court and find Immortal Gu Wooden Chicken in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building."

Hei Cheng heaved a long sigh and said with an exhausted voice: "Great Strength True Martial physique needs a strength path Immortal Gu to advance to Gu Immortal realm. Unfortunately, Immortal Gu are very difficult to find, our Hei tribe also does not have any strength path Immortal Gu. Success and failure is decided by heaven, we can only try our best. We have already done all we can, now everything will depend on Hei Lou Lan’s efforts and luck."

’Parents are truly constantly worrying about their children.’ Hei Bai sighed inwardly and said his farewell to Hei Cheng.

After he returned to his Ku Mu blessed land, he immediately connected to treasure yellow heaven and started buying mutated wolves.

Wolf emperors could be considered as a strength of blessed land, it was very hard to find Gu Immortals selling them. But mutated wolves were only equivalent to rank four and were much easier to find.

Hei Bai was not worried, mutated beasts were not rare and precious goods and as long as one had sufficient immortal essence stones, they could buy a large group of them.

Of course, spending a lot to buy the mutated wolf group was a loss to Hei Bai. But he was planning for a Immortal Gu in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, and it was right for him to invest in the early stages.

Imperial Court blessed land was the work of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, and unless one reached rank nine, no Gu Immortals could enter inside!

After the news of buying mutated wolf group in high price was spread, Hei Bai soon received a divine sense from someone called ’Fox Immortal’.

’Fox Immortal’ had over a hundred mutated wolves and quoted a rather high price for them, they were clearly taking advantage of Hei Bai’s difficulty.

Hei Bai had already anticipated such a situation, it was only that he had not expected this ’Fox Immortal’ to move so quickly at the chance. He gnashed his teeth and bought this group of mutated wolves.

The one selling this group of mutated wolves was none other than Little Hu Immortal who had received Fang Yuan’s instructions.

Previously, they had resold Immortal Gu recipes and earned dozen or so immortal essence stones; Fang Yuan had then instructed Little Hu Immortal to purchase purple crystal relic Gu and also look for any wolf groups sold cheaply at treasure yellow heaven, and buy them.

Thus, Hu Immortal blessed land had accumulated over a hundred mutated wolves; among them were blood forest wolf, berserk wolf, shark fin wolf, white-eyes wolf and others.

Now, by reselling these mutated wolves at high price to Hei Bai, they had profited quite a bit.

As for Fang Yuan, he was calmly resting in the camp, waiting for Hei tribe’s assistance.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

It was difficult to move through the muddy swamp, but Ma tribe’s army was in high spirits.

The happiness of annexing Dou tribe army as well as the excitement of a decisive victory could still be seen on everyone’s faces.

Ma Ying Jie was riding a horse and as he looked at the generals and soldiers around him with satisfaction, as an investigative Gu Master brought him the latest battle reports.

He opened up the documents and read:

"Hei tribe and Liu tribe has begun to fight. The first battle resulted in a draw, and currently, both are garrisoned opposite each other. The situation is in a stalemate."

"Ye Lui army was ambushed at night by the seven army alliance. Ye Lui Sang was very powerful and defeated six rank five experts one after another, but he was only one person and was unable to save the situation. Currently, Ye Lui tribe’s remnant army is fleeing towards Qing An region."

"Rat King Jiang Bao Ya has accepted Yang tribe’s invitation and has officially entered Yang tribe’s alliance."

"Nu Er Tu army has not resumed their expedition, instead resting and capturing huge numbers of leopard groups."

...

These battle reports caused Ma Ying Jie to smile with joy: ’Hei Lou Lan and Liu Wen Wu are popular candidates to win this time’s Imperial Court contest. I did not think these two would confront each other this early, it will be good if they both suffer. Since Ye Lui Sang obtained Immortal Gu, he is a one-man army. But for Ye Lui tribe to be suddenly attacked by the seven armies, Snowy Mountain most likely has influence behind it.’

Ma tribe, to advance to a super tribe, had secretly joined hands with demonic path Gu Immortals who were coveting after Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. Ma Ying Jie was Ma tribe’s young tribe leader and thus was aware of the undertable deals of the tribes.

Northern plains was like a huge chessboard while the Gu Immortals were the chess players.

Besides righteous path Gu Masters, demonic path Gu Immortals also had their own pawns whom they supported. And as the tribes with Huang Jin bloodline were willing to join hands with demonic path Gu Immortals in order to have a better survival chance. If they lost in the struggle for Imperial Court, these tribes would often enter the blessed lands of the demonic path Gu Immortals to escape from the blizzard disaster.

Immortal Gu were rare.

Ye Lui tribe’s supreme elder had entrusted an Immortal Gu to Ye Lui Sang; it was equivalent to placing a bet in this game.

According to the rules set by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, as long as Immortal Gu were snatched by mortals in the struggle for Imperial Court, the Gu Immortals cannot take them back.

Such a huge bet had its corresponding risk.

It was because of the Immortal Gu on Ye Lui Sang that caused him to be the target of Gu Immortals. Thus they incited seven armies to ambush Ye Lui army.

"Rat King has joined Yang tribe which means an alliance of Rat King and Eagle King Yang Po Ying, causing this underdog Yang tribe to become a new contender to win the struggle for Imperial Court. But Yang tribe’s foundations are far inferior to our Ma tribe and Rat King was also already crippled, they aren’t of much threat to us."

"Although Nu Er Tu is called Leopard King, his leopard group has been inflicted heavy losses. However, he has been capturing wild leopard groups by himself without asking for help from the Gu Immortal behind him, this is a bit strange..."

"But overall, my Ma tribe’s situation is still much better. Our next opponents are weaker than us. As long as we keep on winning, continue to devour other tribes and expand, our hopes of entering Imperial Court will become bigger and bigger!"

Ma Ying Jie could not help clenching his fists at this, his eyes letting out a fierce light. The ambitions and goals of a man were pushing him to establish great feats and accomplishments.

And at the same time, within the high spirited army was a little girl, who was weeping in a carriage.

"Lady Xiao Yun, don’t keep on grieving, your father’s death was a heart rending event, but you need to eat, if not you will faint from hunger." Beside the little girl, the anxious Fei Cai was comforting her in a clumsy way.

This weeping little girl was none other than Zhao Lian Yun.

Her father, Zhao tribe’s leader, had sacrificed his life in the previous large battle.

Losing the protection of the father who loved her dearly, Zhao Lian Yun immediately felt her world toppling. On the very night of her father’s death, her stepmother remarried the new Zhao tribe leader, and Zhao Lian Yun’s position took a sharp dive.

"There will always be deaths in war, this is normal. My father was also killed by others." Fei Cai continued to persuade Zhao Lian Yun when he saw she was still crying.

Zhao Lian Yun suddenly raised her head while sobbing, looking at Fei Cai with an insoluble hatred in her tear-filled eyes, and kicked him: "You idiot, you don’t even know how to comfort people!"

The sorrow in her heart was not fake. Although she inexplicably arrived in this world and it had not been long since her arrival, her father’s love towards her was filled with sincerity. She was very grateful for this genuine love and her dependence on him had slowly grown into true affection.

But now, her father had died in the battlefield, making her alone and helpless.

"Missy, you were hiding here, you really caused much trouble for me! Quick, follow me, your mother is calling you." At this time, the curtain of the carriage was lifted open by the old caretaker who then grabbed Zhao Lian Yun’s small arm.

Zhao Lian Yun struggled and shouted: "My mother is dead, she is not my mother! I won’t go!"

"This is not up to you!" The old caretaker scoffed and tried to forcibly drag Zhao Lian Yun out of the carriage.

When she had been serving Zhao Lian Yun, she was teased and pranked by Zhao Lian Yun time and again. Now, as she looked at Zhao Lian Yun’s miserable state, the old caretaker felt the pleasure of taking revenge.

"Let go of Lady Xiao Yun!" Fei Cai shouted and punched the old caretaker.

The old caretaker fell out of the carriage from this heavy punch. She stood up and touched her eye that had become purple from the bruise. She screamed in a shrill voice: "You hit me, a slave dared to hit a civilian? Who gave you such big guts!! I will report you, you are going to die. You will be skinned alive and your corpse will be hung up in the sunlight till it dries up!"

The old caretaker was extremely furious, and with her unkempt hair and sinister gaze, she looked like a hopping old hen.

However, her scream had indeed attracted the surrounding people.

Fei Cai clenched his fists and furiously stared at the old caretaker while firmly protecting Zhao Lian Yun behind him.

Zhao Lian Yun pushed aside Fei Cai’s arm and stood on the carriage, her fair face still had tear stains, she looked at the old caretaker and scoffed: "What was it? You want to punish Fei Cai? Alright! Report him, but according to the rules, you need to first inform his master to demand compensation. Since it is so, go look for young tribe leader. Fei Cai is Lord Ma Ying Jie’s slave leader!"

"What?!" The old caretaker cried out in shock, her screams abruptly stopped and the anger in her heart dissipated like a tide, only leaving behind an extreme terror.

This rash stupid kid was actually lord Ma Ying Jie personal slave? Moreover, he was lord Ma Ying Jie’s slave leader who was in charge of his everyday life?

One needed to look at the owner before beating the dog.

The old caretaker might be a civilian with a status higher than that of a slave, but it was a different matter when Fei Cai was Ma Ying Jie’s slave leader.

If she truly reported recklessly, she might instead be sacrificed by Zhao tribe!

After the shock, the old caretaker who had lost her face greatly looked gloomy. She rigidly stared at Zhao Lian Yun: "Little girl, even young tribe leader Ma Ying Jie’s slave leader cannot protect you. You are a person of Zhao tribe, even after your death, you will be our Zhao tribe’s ghost. Your mother is our Zhao tribe’s current tribe lady. Listen to me properly, tribe lady has already arranged your marriage to Wei tribe’s eldest young master! Now behave properly!"

"What?!" Zhao Lian Yun involuntarily cried out.

"Marrying to Wei tribe’s eldest young master is your blessing." The old caretaker sinisterly smiled.

Zhao Lian Yun’s whole body shook and fell down on the wooden board of the carriage.

"Lady Xiao Yun!" Fei Cai quickly supported her.

The old caretaker felt incomparable pleasure at this sight and left with immense satisfaction. She still needed report to Zhao tribe’s tribe lady.

Zhao Lian Yun was expressionlessly, this immense shock left her in a dazed state filled with despair, allowing Fei Cai to hold her in the carriage. For three days, she curled up at a corner of the carriage, without moving or speaking.

Fei Cai’s persuasion was of no use, and could only helplessly feed her.

Zhao Lian Yun was like a wooden puppet, letting Fei Cai control her.

Fei Cai also could not accompany her all the time, and every time Ma Ying Jie summoned him, he would immediately leave.

This sudden change of events and this ice-cold reality shattered the foolish pride Zhao Lian Yun had as a transmigrator.

She suddenly had a profound realization: ’A transmigrator is nothing special. Why did I think I could whip up a storm in this world after being so ordinary in my previous world?’

Moreover, women were discriminated in northern plains and were treated as goods to be used for political marriage. Northern plains’ women could only adhere to men and could not refuse a man’s forceful marriage. This was a rule set by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Previously, when she heard of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s deeds, she felt like she was listening to a story, listening to a legend of a hero. But now, she was personally experiencing the torment caused by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

"Women are like clothes while brothers are like our hands and feet." This was the favorite catchphrase of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he pulled apart the status of man and woman to an extremely unfair level. Now he had become the most detestable person in Zhao Lian Yun’s heart!

"No wonder Su Xian’s night elopement story pierced so deep into people’s hearts, causing northern plains’ women to eagerly imitate it. Rather than passively suffering fate’s arrangement, it is better to take the initiative to chase after one’s happiness. But this carries unknown risks!"

As she thought of this, Zhao Lian Yun’s awareness of the vile living environment deepened by another layer.

"Wei tribe’s eldest young master is a famous trash. He is fat like a pig with pockmarks all over his face and only at rank one peak stage but is extremely lecherous and very fickle-hearted. It is because of his incompetence, Wei tribe’s young tribe leader position went to his younger brother."

"I won’t marry that pig even if I die! But what should I do? I am only a mortal, and since I haven’t reached thirteen, I cannot awaken my aperture and cannot cultivate. It is also possible that I don’t have any cultivation aptitude. And the person who killed my father is Dou E, a rank five Gu Master who has sided with Ma tribe now and is now a higher-up of the alliance!"

"Who can I rely on? What path should I take?"

Bewilderment, hesitation and fear filled Zhao Lian Yun’s heart.

In the early morning of the fourth day, Fei Cai lifted up the carriage curtain and entered with food and clean water. The light of the dawn followed the curtain opening and shone on Zhao Lian Yun’s face.

Zhao Lian Yun woke up, slowly opening her swollen eyes.

"You brought food?" She grabbed the food from Fei Cai’s hand and began to devour it.

"Lady Xiao Yun, are you okay?" Fei Cai was happy at this change.

"Yes, I have thought it through, it is better to rely on myself. Although I have been bound by the wedding betrothment, it can only be implemented when I am sixteen. I still have time!" Zhao Lian Yun’s gaze shone like fire.

"Ah, Lady Xiao Yun, you don’t accept the betrothal?" Fei Cai was startled; in his impression, northern plains could only accept their fate when their marriage was decided.

Zhao Lian Yun rolled her eyes and spoke in a righteous tone: "Hmph, I am not an ordinary person, I absolutely won’t compromise! But I cannot go to the tribe now and can only live here for some time, and rely on you Fei Cai."

"No problem." Fei Cai patted his chest, laughing foolishly.

Zhao Lian Yun’s heart warmed and her tone turned softer: "Fei Cai, your father also died in battlefield?"

"Yes, he died. I was heartbroken during that time. But death is normal in northern plains. Father died in battle, he died a glorious death." Fei Cai said with a smile.

’As expected, winner takes it all! Under the dazzling and splendid throne lies a path of bones.’ Zhao Lian Yun sighed, before cursing, ’What a scam, I crossed over to this world and have yet to mature but my fate has already been decided by others, I can’t even begin to feel anger!’

...

A letter was placed in front of Fang Yuan.

This special letter was openly sent by the enemy and was now brought over by Cunning Gentleman Sun Shi Han.

Fang Yuan opened it and read; this letter was personally written by Chang Biao, reminiscing the past and how they were on opposite sides now. He was inviting Wolf King to have a discussion before the battle and reminisce about the old times. And at that time, he could let Chang Ji You meet his father.

"Great ploy." Fang Yuan scoffed and placed down the letter.

At this time, Sun Shi Han smiled: "The mutated wolf group and rank five lurking soul coat gu have both arrived. But the higher-ups of the alliance are hesitating because of this letter. They are hoping Lord Wolf King would battle against your kin in the name of righteousness, to prove your innocence. Otherwise, I’m afraid this mutated wolf group..."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Liu tribe defense line, inside the camp tent.

"Mother, what kind of person was father?" Chang Ji You had a hesitant expression, after a long while, he asked the burning question in his heart.

He had never met Chang Shan Yin, back then when Chang Shan Yin’s mother died from poison, and when Chang Shan Yin fought to the death with Ha Tu Gu, Chang Ji You was only an unborn child in his mother’s womb.

His mother Ni Xue Tong had a frowned expression as she breathed out, using a nostalgic tone: "My child, has your heart wavered? Don’t forget our current circumstances. Don’t worry about your father, he is a legend in northern plains, back then he killed Ha Tu Gu and the bandits single-handedly, he is a hero who exterminated a great threat for the people."

Chang Ji You interrupted his mother: "Mother, I’m sick of hearing that. Since birth, I’ve been hearing these stories all my life, wherever I go, whatever I do, people will say ’oh look, as expected of Chang Shan Yin’s son’. Father is like the eagle in the sky, flying high and casting his shadow on the ground. In a few days, I will be meeting him, my heart is in a mess, I just want to hear his..."

Chang Ji You was still speaking, when the tent flap was opened, as a domineering middle-aged man with a powerful aura walked in.

It was Chang tribe’s current tribe leader, Chang Shan Yin’s brother, rank four upper stage wind path expert, Chang Biao.

"Greetings to lord stepfather." Chang Ji You quickly paid respects.

"My child, go out first, I need to talk with your mother." Chang Biao said gently.

"Yes." Chang Ji You had to leave the tent.

Once the flap was closed, with the guards outside, there were only Chang Biao and Ni Xue Tong left in the tent.

"Husband!" Ni Xue Tong jumped into Chang Biao’s embrace, tears flowing out of her weak and feeble eyes.

"Sigh, I know you have been feeling terrible these days!" Chang Biao embraced Ni Xue Tong as he caressed her hair softly. At the same time, he used his Gu worm to isolate the place from the outside.

Ni Xue Tong sobbed: "You Er has been asking me about Chang Shan Yin again, what should I say? Do you know, just now I had the urge and almost told him the truth, that he is not Chang Shan Yin’s flesh and blood, that he is the crystallization of our love!"

Chang Biao’s body shuddered, he was also feeling great conflict and pain in his heart.

He solemnly said: "This is all my fault for being useless! Back then we were childhood friends, it was Chang Shan Yin who came into the picture abruptly and lusted after your beauty. On the day of our marriage, he snatched you away. I was not his match, I could only find you at night secretly and that resulted in our son Chang Ji You. But once he was born, if his bloodline was examined, the truth would be out and we would be doomed. Thus, I and Ha Tu Gu cooperated and plotted against Chang Shan Yin."

"Next, I used my status as Chang Shan Yin’s brother to marry you and make Chang

Ji You my godson. These years, although the tribe isn’t in good shape, this is the happiest years of our lives. Chang Ji You was successfully made young tribe leader by me, but precisely so, you cannot expose this secret."

Once the secret is exposed, Chang Biao and Ni Xue Tong would get publicly shamed, they would be called an ’adulterous couple’, and they will never be able to raise their heads again. They even caused harm to an expert of the tribe, for their own selfish motives, they disregarded the tribe’s situation, it was truly a heinous crime!

As for Chang Ji You, he would be the shameful ’illegitimate child’. Be it his young tribe leader position, or Chang Biao’s tribe leader position, they would be at risk of being taken, as people with ambitions would target them.

Righteous path had its own rules.

All along, Chang Biao had been taking care of his deceased brother’s wife, and treated his godson as his own. Such brotherhood was admirable, such gracefulness was praised widely.

And exactly because of this, Chang Biao held a small advantage and became Chang tribe’s new tribe leader.

Once this truth was exposed, he would lose everything. The ambitionists in the tribe would not let him go. In order to recruit Chang Shan Yin, Liu Wen Wu would not give up this chance.

By then, his only option would be to escape with Ni Xue Tong and his own flesh and blood Chang Ji You, becoming a demonic Gu Master. He would be despised by his tribe, and chased by his tribe.

"Why? Why! Why is Longevity Heaven doing this to us! We love each other so dearly, yet we end up in such a spot! Chang Shan Yin was the real culprit, he is an evil person, why is he praised. As for us, we can only wear a mask to live, even lying to our own son?" Ni Xue Tong cried profusely, she was very emotional.

These days, she had been under a lot of pressure.

Ever since ’Chang Shan Yin’ reappeared, she had not been sleeping well, her former nightmare reappeared, causing her to fall into deep worry.

"Do you think that Liu tribe alliance leader is trying to recruit Chang Shan Yin? If Chang Shan Yin agrees, would we have to go back to that life? Chang Shan Yin is taking revenge everywhere now, will he find out the fact that we plotted against him? If he returns to the tribe, what will we do?" Lying in her lover’s embrace, Ni Xue Tong asked multiple questions as she raised her neck.

"It won’t happen, it won’t. Don’t think of it as such a severe situation." Chang Biao gently consoled the woman of his life.

"Firstly, Chang Shan Yin has not found out we were the culprit. Otherwise, with his nature, he would’ve declared it long ago and caused our reputation to go down the drain. He is only suspicious of Chang tribe having a traitor, but he does not know who."

"Liu alliance leader does want to recruit Chang Shan Yin, he is Wolf King after all, an enslavement path master, any alliance would welcome him and get his assistance. But Lord Liu Wen Wu is not a normal person, he knows clearly in his heart that there is little hope of getting the Wolf King to come over, his greatest intention is to sow discord and waver the Wolf King’s fighting spirit."

"Think about it, Chang Shan Yin does not know about Chang Ji You’s true identity, he thinks this is his son. As a father, what would he be thinking? Blood is thicker than water, when Chang Shan Yin thinks about Chang Ji You being killed by his wolf group, would he go all out in the upcoming battle?"

"Is that so..." Ni Xue Tong heard this and calmed down.

"Alright, stop worrying, I am here." Chang Biao patted Ni Xue Tong’s back with an affectionate gaze.

The tent was filled with the warmth of love.

But this kind of atmosphere, how long would it last?

Neither Chang Biao nor Ni Xue Tong had any confidence in this.

Whoosh!

A person broke the large lizard house Gu’s window and crashed in.

Cunning Gentleman Sun Shi Han sprawled on the ground, his face was bruised as he shouted loudly with a fearful and vicious expression: "Wolf King attacked, Wolf King attacked me! He is revolting, he is murdering us, help, save me!"

Sun Shi Han was a popular person near Hei Lou Lan, his shouts quickly attracted many Gu Masters.

Fang Yuan snorted, jumping out of the window and giving Sun Shi Han another kick.

Sun Shi Han did not dare to activate his Gu worm, he could only evade.

But Fang Yuan changed his attack just in time, sweeping with his right fist and slamming into Sun Shi Han’s nose.

Sun Shi Han groaned, just as he got up from the ground, he fell again. His entire face was full of blood, his nose bridge was broken and two of his front teeth fell out, he was in a pathetic state.

But the Gu Masters who came did not do anything, they breathed a sigh of relief secretly.

Be it Fang Yuan or Sun Shi Han, they did not use their Gu worms. This was not breaking the rules, it was merely a small scuffle.

When people interacted, there was bound to be conflict. As arguments occur, it was normal to get physical. As long as Gu worms were not used to fight, the poison vow would not be violated.

"Chang Shan Yin, you are too arrogant! Your wife and children are at the enemy’s camp, I am only reminding you out of kindness, you actually got furious and beat me! You are definitely guilty!" Sun Shi Han crawled up, shouting with his shrill voice.

The words caused the surrounding Gu Masters to talk among themselves. Chang tribe and Chang Shan Yin’s relationship was known to all. These days, Hei tribe army had been talking about it.

Seeing Sun Shi Han’s smug and vicious gaze, Fang Yuan laughed in disdain, he did not say a thing, but instead, responded with his fist.

Bam bam bam!

Fang Yuan’s attacks were full of strength, although Sun Shi Han had some strength path foundation, how could it compare to Fang Yuan’s immense investment in the strength path?

After several moves, he was beaten on the floor again, lying there as he was punched and kicked.

"Wolf King is amazing, although he is an enslavement path master, his strength path foundation is very strong." Everyone was shocked.

"Great fight, I had wanted to thrash this scoundrel Cunning Gentleman long ago." Some of the army’s higher-ups smirked.

"Chang Shan Yin, you think I am easy to bully!" Sun Shi Han was thrashed until his body felt pain all over, his head was in a daze as his heart was filled with rage and humiliation.

"You still have the strength to speak." Fang Yuan snorted as he unleashed another round of punches.

Sun Shi Han was beaten to a pulp, he vomited blood as his front teeth all fell off, even the teeth at the back of his mouth were shaking.

"Wolf King is so ruthless..."

"Sun Shi Han is a rank four expert after all, to think he was beaten defenseless, what a weakling."

"Stupid! He made a poison vow and could not use Gu worms, in terms of close combat, Wolf King is an enslavement path master, he would definitely be suppressed by Sun Shi Han."

The discussions became louder, be it Chang Shan Yin or Sun Shi Han, they were people with great authority. Right now they were brawling it out, such a scene was rare, everyone was watching with bright eyes.

Sun Shi Han heard the comments and felt humiliated, he almost gritted his teeth off.

Although he barely had any left.

He wanted to resist, but neither his strength nor moves were Fang Yuan’s match, he could not take a thrashing.

"Endure, I must endure! If I use a Gu, I would truly lose. I need to wait for alliance leader to come and uphold justice for me, Chang Shan Yin will get it!!" Sun Shi Han screamed in his heart.

"Alliance leader is here!"

"Greetings to lord alliance leader!!"

The surrounding people went into chaos as they quickly gave way.

Hei Lou Lan, Hao Ji Liu and others came to the area. Seeing this, Hei Lou Lan frowned as he asked Fang Yuan coldly: "What is going on?"

Sun Shi Han’s body shuddered, using a mystical source of strength, he struggled as he crawled up and shouted: "Alliance leader, please seek justice for me..."

Plop.

Before he finished, Fang Yuan stepped on his head as he used great force, causing Sun Shi Han’s entire face to sink into the soil.

Hei Lou Lan shouted loudly: "Stop it! Wolf King, what are you doing?!"

"H... he iz revulting! He ish revorting..." Sun Shi Han shouted loudly, his mouth was filled with soil as he spoke unclearly.

Fang Yuan sneered, exerting strength and stepping three times, burying Sun Shi Han’s voice in the soil. Sun Shi Han’s nose and mouth were blocked, his head also suffered a great hit, he felt dizzy and suffocation, his limbs struggled wildly but he could do nothing against Fang Yuan’s strength.

Hei Lou Lan’s face turned pitch black like charcoal.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was like a dagger, staring coldly at him and the Gu Masters behind him: "Can’t you all see what I am doing? I am thrashing him."

Hei Lou Lan stared at Fang Yuan angrily, shouting: "Wolf King, give me a clear explanation, why did you beat him up?! Are you really trying to rebel?"

Fang Yuan laughed in disdain, saying slowly: "No need to be angry Hei tribe leader, if I wanted to rebel, why would I need to make such a din?"

Saying so, he let go of Sun Shi Han.

Sun Shi Han lost the pressure and bounced up, desperately gasping for air like he was suffocating.

But Fang Yuan stepped again, this time, on his right cheek.

Sun Shi Han used both his hands to pull Fang Yuan’s feet, but he was already weak and out of energy. Just like this, he was stepped on the face by someone in public, his reputation was ruined.

Fang Yuan said slowly and casually: "Although I have not thought of rebelling, I do not want any schemes or plots to fall on my wife and children. During the battle, I will do my part and fight with my full strength. By then, if they die, that would be their honor to die on the battlefield. Since I, Wolf King, have joined the Hei army, I would not change my stance just because of relationships. However..."

Saying so, he raised his head as he laughed arrogantly: "It is your own business to be suspicious, that has nothing to do with me. All the mutated beast groups that I want are exchanged using my battle merit, this is a fair trade. I have never owed you anything. Hei tribe leader, if you are suspicious of me, you can take away the mutated beast wolf groups and not let me control them. In the future battle, I swear in the name of the Wolf King, I will still go all-out."

"You..." Hei Lou Lan was furious.

Fang Yuan ignored his threat, and in fact, threatened him instead.

Being suspicious is your problem, you can keep the mutated wolves to yourselves. If we lose the battle, that will be your responsibility.

Can Hei Lou Lan not give them to him?

He had the great strength true martial physique, even if he used dark limit Immortal Gu, he was starting to feel the inability to suppress it. He needed a strength path Immortal Gu to advance to Gu Immortal realm.

However, Wolf King created a din and made everyone know about this. If he did not give him the mutated beast group, what would the army think of him? They would think that Hei Lou Lan refused to utilize Wolf King despite him being here. Like the saying goes, a man being used cannot be suspected while a suspected man cannot be used , if he loses the battle, everyone would begrudge Hei Lou Lan.

"Good, you are amazing Wolf King." Hei Lou Lan’s gaze was cold, he laughed out of anger: "Of course I know the Wolf King’s loyalty, but why did you beat up Sun Shi Han? He is your alliance mate, the enemy is before us, yet you engage in internal scuffle, what are you trying to do?"

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan shrugged: "This is my fault, because this Sun Shi Han looks way too ugly, he made my heart feel bad. Thus, I thrashed him and adjusted his appearance for him, as expected, he looks much better now. This was my personal action, I will take responsibility for it. According to the rules, I have to compensate Sun Shi Han ten thousand battle merits, no worries, I will compensate him!"

Sun Shi Han heard this and his anger rushed to his brain, he vomited out a mouthful of blood and fainted.

The words made all the Gu Master experts present unable to hold in their laughter.

It was too satisfying!

There were many who were unhappy with this scoundrel Sun Shi Han.

Fang Yuan’s assault was truly soothing their hearts.

Even Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s gaze towards Fang Yuan turned to admiration. He felt that although this Chang Shan Yin was ruthless, he did not strike at his family, but still maintained his righteousness and standpoint, he had his limits and was a true man.

Hei Lou Lan’s expression turned even darker.

Sun Shi Han was his man, Fang Yuan beating him up in public was also slapping Hei Lou Lan’s face.

Fang Yuan said it easily, but his battle merits were still in the negative!

But what could Hei Lou Lan do?

To deal with Liu tribe army, he needed to rely on the Wolf King’s strength!

Threatening the Wolf King was to make him carry the sin of killing his own tribesmen, so that his reputation would be affected, allowing Hei Lou Lan to control him more easily.

But since threats had no effect, Hei Lou Lan only had one option left, that was to comply.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 531: Huge Battle (1/4)

The mornings of northern plains were getting colder.

White frost covered the grassland, and people blew out vapor when they breathed.

The two armies, with hundreds of thousands of soldiers, were confronting each other.

Banners fluttered in the sky and the troops formation were as dense as forests.

Liu tribe and Hei tribe had rested and reorganized for over a dozen days after the first battle before sending the war letter, and today, they both came out to battle once again.

"Second brother, you went out the previous time, it is my turn now!" Mo Shi Kuang restlessly shouted and impatiently charged towards the front.

Mo Shi Kuang’s white hair fluttered, his black skin and panther-like eyes shone, his momentum was thunderous as he shouted: "Who seeks death?"

"This black barbarian again!" Hei tribe’s higher-ups felt anger and fear at the sight of Mo Shi Kuang. In the battle before, many rank four Gu Masters had lost their lives at Mo Shi Kuang’s hands. Mo Shi Kuang’s brutal fighting style caused people to be fearful.

Hei Lou Lan scoffed, his expression much relaxed than before. He looked at the two new faces in the main tent: "Who among you would like to go first?"

These two were Gao Yang and Zhu Zai, rank four peak stage Gu Masters, their name of demonic path’s twin demons was spread far and wide.

In their early days, demonic path’s twin demons had received Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s grace and swore to repay him. Not long ago, Tai Bai Yun Sheng used a letter Gu to try calling them. And a few days ago, they took the initiative to side with Hei tribe army.

The addition of the two of them immediately filled the gap between Hei tribe and Liu tribe army and allowed Hei tribe’s higher ranked strength to be free from the previous strained circumstances.

Demonic path’s twin demons were inseparable, but the rule of the challenge was that every side could only send one person to battle.

The two glanced at each other, already having discussed according to the intel Hei tribe had given them. Zhu Zai stood up and slightly bowed: "I shall go."

Hei Lou Lan nodded.

Mo Shi Kuang stared at Zhu Zai’s arrival, revealing a happy expression.

"A rank four peak stage, good, good! But you don’t look that impressive, I hope you won’t go down with just a few punches."

Zhu Zai snorted and activated a Gu, his body then rapidly charged forward like an artillery shell.

Mo Shi Kuang stood at the spot while licking his dried lips, prepared to receive the attack.

BOOM!

Zhu Zai ruthlessly smashed against Mo Shi Kuang, creating an explosive sound like that of crackling thunder. The berserk collision of strength resulted in Zhu Zai retreating several steps while Mo Shi Kuang was directly sent flying.

"Third brother, be careful. This person is Zhu Zai of the demonic path’s twin demons, he cultivates strength path!" Liu Wen Wu reminded in a loud voice from the main tent.

"Hahaha, strength path Gu Master? Great! I like fighting with such exciting opponents!" Mo Shi Kuang spurted out blood from the injury. He jumped up from the ground, the injury making him more excited instead.

A crazed look appeared on his coal-like inky black skin, a loud sound echoed, his aura started surging and Mo Shi Kuang charged towards Zhu Zai.

"Courting death!" Zhu Zai smiled sinisterly as he pounced forward as well.

BOOM BOOM BOOM.

The two sides engaged in close combat, their attacks were so fierce and heavy that the collision produced a series of explosive sounds. Mo Shi Kuang was a qi path Gu Master and was using his weakness to fight the enemy’s strong point, but he unexpectedly was not in a disadvantage while fighting such an intense battle with the strength path Gu Master Zhu Zai!

"Strange, could it be that this Mo Shi Kuang cultivates both qi and strength path?" Hei tribe camp was in a state of shock.

"It is not like that, Mo Shi Kuang looks like he is fighting close combat, but in truth, his punches are not really landing physically, instead he has a translucent qi armor over his body which he explodes by using qi explosion Gu at the same time, creating an explosive strength comparable to strength path." Cunning Gentleman Sun Shi Han said in a solemn voice.

He was specialized in investigating and with careful observation, he managed to see through the trick Mo Shi Kuang was playing.

By synergizing with qi explosion Gu, qi armor Gu became a weapon that could both attack and defend. Gu Masters relied on their wits to use Gu. Often, the coordination of different Gu worms could form a complementing effect.

"This Mo Shi Kuang is really fierce, this is the first time I saw someone actually suppressing brother Zhu Zai head on!" Gao Yang’s expression was solemn, he had been observing the battle since the start.

He was extremely familiar with Zhu Zai and understood Zhu Zai was already using almost all his strength, but the enemy, however, was moving so easily and was clearly much relaxed.

Suddenly, the mad growl of a boar exploded in the air.

The beast phantom of a grand emperor boar that was as large as an elephant and had awe-inspiring might, appeared in the air.

Grand emperor boar was a mutated boar, its strength could not be looked down on.

After dozen or so moves, Zhu Zai finally unleashed a beast phantom. Instantly, his offensive power rose sharply and Mo Shi Kuang was caught unprepared as the huge strength struck him and sent him rolling on the ground.

Zhu Zai took the chance to chase him and activated his trump card.

The grand emperor boar phantom gradually disappeared from the air before condensing again. Moreover, another two grand emperor boar phantoms also appeared.

Three grand emperor boar strength!

BOOM!

The enormous strength burst out, causing Zhu Zai’s every punch to create sonic booms.

Mo Shi Kuang felt a sense of crisis and laughed madly: "Interesting! Come, I will show you my true strength!"

He activated his movement Gu and swiftly flew up, easily dodging the attack of Zhu Zai’s three boar strength.

Zhu Zai’s punch landed on the ground, creating a huge crater with stones and mud flying everywhere.

Mo Shi Kuang’s white hair fluttered in the air as he hovered in the air. He then sent punches after punches towards Zhu Zai.

ORAORAORA...

Fist qi smashed down like a meteor rain.

Zhu Zai kept on dodging while also striking back and destroying these fist qi. But soon after, he was falling into a disadvantage.

Facing a qi path opponent, Zhu Zai’s strength path’s most common weakness started becoming obvious. He was not like Fang Yuan who had strength qi Gu. Zhu Zai lacked long range attacking methods, and Mo Shi Kuang was able to quickly suppress him after changing his battle tactics.

"Not good, brother Zhu Zai won’t be able to hold on if he keeps on defending!" Gao Yang knew Zhu Zai’s strengths and weaknesses, and was very anxious at this scene as he immediately asked to be sent to battle.

Hei Lou Lan also saw the unfavorable situation and immediately agreed.

"A mere variant human, I will teach you a lesson!" Gao Yang softly shouted, mist started curling around him before condensing into a ribbon that pushed him forward.

"Don’t even think of using numbers as an advantage!" Ouyang Bi Sang snorted and moved almost at the same time. His speed was very fast, intercepting Gao Yang midway.

Gao Yang was concerned about Zhu Zai and did not even have any thoughts of fighting Ouyang Bi Sang as he activated cloud rope Gu from a distance.

Milky white mist surged around Ouyang Bi Sang before condensing into a rope which firmly bound him.

Gao Yang was specialized in defense and pinning down enemies, while Zhu Zai was specialized in attacking and investigation; the cooperation between the two complemented each other very well.

Ouyang Bi Sang struggled, the cloud rope shook and broke before condensing again, and actually had the signs of multiplying.

Ouyang Bi Sang was furious as he started transferring his primeval essence into asura zombie Gu in his aperture and transforming into a zombie.

With the transformation into asura zombie, his defense and strength surged rapidly.

Ouyang Bi Sang growled and completely broke the cloud rope with three times the strength. He stamped his foot and flew to the air, blocking Gao Yang again.

Asura zombie was one of the five great flying zombie Gu, it naturally had the ability to fly.

Gao Yang simply did not want to tangle with Ouyang Bi Sang; his brows furrowed deeply as he looked at Ouyang Bi Sang blocking him again, and knew the other wanted to provide time for Mo Shi Kuang to kill Zhu Zai. At this thought, he directly activated his trump card Gu.

Rank five, treacherous cloud wave Gu!

His primeval sea rapidly fell down, almost lowering by half.

A grey cloud that was as big as a carriage surged with dark red light floating inside, and rapidly flew towards Ouyang Bi Sang.

Ouyang Bi Sang moved around and dodged few times, but this cloud followed him like a shadow and finally covered him.

The instant Ouyang Bi Sang was struck by treacherous cloud wave Gu, he felt his sense of direction was lost, his mind seemed to work extremely slowly and his thoughts were slowed down by many times!

He could not differentiate which way was east and which was west and even lost the sense of up and down, left and right. For a moment, as he was covered in the grey cloud, he was like a headless fly that was tossing around in the sky.

"Mo Shi Kuang, don’t be too rampant!" Gao Yang left Ouyang Bi Sang and finally was able to reinforce Zhu Zai in time.

The two combined their strength, and with their deep tacit-understanding, even Mo Shi Kuang who was fierce and fearless was being gradually suppressed.

But the three had exchanged no more than over twenty moves when they heard Ouyang Bi Sang’s shout: "Asura transformation!"

Instantly, six thick arms which looked like they were casted in bronze stretched out through the grey cloud.

From outside, one could vaguely see the figure, inside the grey cloud, inflating like a balloon.

Ouyang Bi Sang used his killer move, his battle strength exploding by several times. His body shook, shaking the dim and lightless grey cloud into dispersing!

"You despicable scoundrels, die!" Ouyang Bi Sang was thoroughly furious as he flew into the air and attacked Gao Yang and Zhu Zai with Mo Shi Kuang.

With such an expert joining the battle, Zhu Zai and Gao Yang were forced to passively defend; the situation had dramatically turned into that of a crisis.

"Alliance leader, Gao Yang and Zhu Zai are experts we must have, we cannot let them die like this!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng saw the situation had turned bad and immediately spoke up.

"Sir’s words are reasonable!" Hei Lou Lan was solemn, and suddenly stood up from his seat.

Although Gao Yang and Zhu Zai had joined them, Hei tribe was still weaker than Liu tribe in terms of higher ranked strength. Hei Lou Lan waved his hand, and just like what he saw Fang Yuan doing, sent the order for an all-out war!

The command was sent and the army began to move.

Liu Wen Wu sneered: "You could not win in experts challenge and now come to gang up. Good, I will accompany you!"

Buggles rang and war drums shook the battlefield; Liu tribe army also moved out.

Two sides, both with hundreds of thousands of soldiers, surged towards the other like a torrent.

The distance between the two army was quickly cut down, and when they were few hundred steps afar, Gu Masters began to attack almost at the same time. For a moment, large numbers of pill fire, icicles, bone spears and wind blades shot towards the enemies. Light armors, bone shields, water barriers and all kinds of defensive abilities were also activated. The originally simple scene had turned into a gorgeous painting of all colors.

BOOM BOOM BOOM......

The attacks from both sides landed on each other almost at the same time.

Like a rainstorm falling down on the lake, ripples started spreading. Only a few Gu Masters with bad luck died or were heavily injured in the intense storm of attack. Most of the Gu Masters continued to attack till the army of the both sides collided. Like the collision of two torrents, blood splattered and chaos descended.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 532: Huge Battle (2/4)

At once, even Gao Yang, Zhu Zai, Mo Shi Kuang, and Ouyang Bi Sang’s battles were interrupted by the huge influx of people.

The two armies intertwined completely, as fighting sounds erupted and filled the heavens.

Waterfall Gu!

In the chaotic battle, Water Demon Hao Ji Liu pushed with his palms as a great current burst forth, sweeping the Gu Masters in front of him irregardless of alliance.

Great tornado Gu!

A large dark-green tornado over tens of meters tall swept the battlefield. Everywhere it went, humans and beasts flew into the air as they lost their balance.

The tornado dispersed and revealed Chang Biao within.

He was floating in the air with his green robe, he had an overwhelming aura.

He and Hao Ji Liu were not far away, naturally, the two rank four experts made eye contact with each other.

The next moment, there were no trash talks, they fought immediately.

...

A flash of golden lightning pierced the battlefield, all the Hei tribe Gu Masters in its path lost their lives.

The golden light dispersed, and a stoic man with broad shoulders and thin waist appeared, it was Pei Yan Fei!

"Chang Shan Yin, today, I will behead you and take revenge for what happened back then! Eh?" Pei Yan Fei was overflowing with battle intent, fire was burning within him when suddenly, his gaze concentrated and he activated his defensive Gu in time.

Behind him, a lump of shadow exploded.

The shadow was deep and profound, turning into multiple sword shadows as it attacked his back, causing Pei Yan Fei to sway violently.

"It’s you, Shadow Sword Expert!" Pei Yan Fei stabilized his footing as he looked at the Gu Master who attacked him, his gaze becoming serious.

Bian Si Xuan who had a black veil covering her face laughed: "Lord Pei Yan Fei is too courteous."

She spoke very respectfully, but her actions were not. The black shadow swords appeared again like a windmill, engulfing Pei Yan Fei.

"Then I shall kill you first!" Pei Yan Fei laughed loudly as he charged forward.

...

"Our battle has not ended, where are you two going?" Ouyang Bi Sang, Mo Shi Kuang came before the demonic path twin demons.

Gao Yang and Zhu Zai felt bitter, they could only continue and engage in battle with Ouyang Bi Sang and Mo Shi Kuang.

As the Gu Master experts continued fighting, their battle rings formed into distinct areas, and the chaotic battlefield gradually became clear.

Tens of large battle rings were filled with rank four to five experts. Outside the large rings, there were small battle rings with rank three Gu Masters as the main strength.

Outside the small rings, low rank Gu Masters form into groups as they fought together in teams.

As the main commander, Hei Lou Lan and Liu Wen Wu were sitting in their main tents, observing the battle situation. At times, they gave orders and dispatched their elite troops to areas of the battlefield to stabilize the situation or to pursue their advantage.

The giant battlefield soon gave off the thick scent of blood. Gu Masters continued to fall, some were turned into icicles, while others were charred, some were torn to pieces while others were poisoned to death.

The clean grassland became a weird monster, devouring fresh blood and life every minute and second.

The battle was so intense, after a while, Hei Lou Lan and Liu Wen Wu were both breaking out in cold sweat.

Large numbers of casualties made their hearts turn cold. The intensity of battle made people’s hearts go numb.

To maintain the situation, the two quickly dispatched their trump cards, the elite troops. Only the black banner elite troops and grand white elite were left to control the area.

As time flowed, deaths and injuries became less, after all, the explosive strength only appeared at the start, by now, Gu Masters experienced intense primeval essence expenditure and were starting to reduce their usage, this way, the battle intensity started to decrease.

The battle entered a stalemate.

The two armies were like two giants competing at equal strength. Either side could snowball from a tiny advantage, until they emerged victorious, and become the winner of the battlefield.

"Our higher level battle strength are doing well. Wolf King, now that the rank five lurking soul coat Gu is in your hands, together with the mutated beast wolf group, the rest will be up to you." Hei Lou Lan transmitted with his Gu worm.

At the start of the battle, Fang Yuan was already not in the main tent, but lurking somewhere on the battlefield. His exact location was not known by Hei Lou Lan either.

Fang Yuan received Hei Lou Lan’s words, but he did not reply. He mobilized the wolf group and started to sprint in two directions.

Liu tribe Gu Masters subconsciously chased after them, but this way, the tight formation was loosened.

Howl!

A group of over eight hundred mutated beast wolf group, comprising white-eyes wolves, blood forest wolves, frenzy wolves, shark fin wolves. The wolf group was like a sharp arrow, shooting out and piercing towards Liu tribe’s main camp.

Fang Yuan’s attack was a fatal blow, it was vicious and cruel, striking at the enemy’s vital points.

"A group of mutated beasts reinforcement as expected huh..." Liu Wen Wu looked at the charging wolves that disrupted his formation, large numbers of Gu Masters lost their lives to the wolves as he frowned deeply.

Hei tribe’s Gu Immortal supplying mutated wolves was information easy to obtain, it was no secret.

Liu Wen Wu was unfazed, he had Liu tribe’s Gu Immortals backing him as well, along with the entire Liu tribe. He had his ways of dealing with this mutated beast wolf group.

"Bei Cao Chuan, it is time to strike." Liu Wen Wu instructed the Gu Master beside him.

Bei Cao Chuan was expressionless, standing up from his seat as he frowned: "I can only last for seven minutes."

Liu Wen Wu nodded:" No worry, go ahead."

Bei Cao Chuan walked out of the main tent, his primeval essence rapidly expending as he activated the Gu worm that he had obtained not long ago.

The refreshing aura of grass and wood spread from his body, for a radius of a hundred li.

All the grass within the range of this aura grew wildly, in a few breath’s time, they grew taller than a man’s height. The large blades of grass intertwined, forming rank two grass soldier puppets.

Soon, there were a thousand grass soldier puppets.

Bei Cao Chuan activated his Gu worm, as a jade colored light rained down. The grass puppets were bathed in the green rain water, as a portion of them advanced to rank three rattan shell grass soldiers. At the same time, the rank two grass puppets were still growing.

Bei Cao Chuan activated his Gu worm again, as an orange wind blew on the grassland. As the wind blew, a portion of the rattan shell grass soldiers advanced into the rank four grass sword elite soldiers!

The empty central camp quickly was filled with an army of grass soldiers. At once, it became the most densely packed area in the battlefield.

The charging mutated wolf group was obstructed by these obstacles.

Fang Yuan frowned, he manipulated wholeheartedly. He hid on the back of the blood forest wolf, his body cloaked in the rank five lurking soul coat Gu, it was like a green-grey wolf skin cape.

The lurking soul coat Gu was indeed amazing, it concealed Fang Yuan’s soul and allowed him to strike with his full strength.

But at this time, Fang Yuan felt that he was battling against an enslavement path master.

Bei Cao Chuan manipulated the grass soldier army as tears overflowed his face.

He now had two souls in one body, in order to defeat Wolf King Chang Shan Yin, Bei tribe’s elder Bei Cao Sheng sacrificed himself and entrusted his soul to Bei Cao Chuan. Using Liu Wen Wu’s Gu worm, Bei Cao Chuan absorbed the power of Bei Cao Sheng’s soul, causing him to gain the attainment of an enslavement path master within this short period of time.

Bei Cao Chuan was originally a rank four enslavement path Gu Master, he was also Bei tribe leader, he had the resources of a clan, his soul foundation was not weak. With Bei Cao Sheng’s help, he was like a tiger with wings, his enslavement path battle strength surged.

Except that this move had huge repercussions. Because he used another person’s soul, Bei Cao Chuan’s soul will be impure and he would have memory lapses, he would need to expend huge amounts of spirit and resources, using specialized soul path Gu worms to nourish his soul and heal this problem.

But now, in order to defeat Hei tribe army and take revenge, Bei Cao Chuan could not care less about the aftermath.

Hei tribe had invited Gao Yang and Zhu Zai to mend the gap of their higher level battle strength. And Liu tribe thought of this method to replenish their lower level battle strength, raising Bei Cao Chuan’s strength to enslavement path master so that he could restrict Fang Yuan.

At once, Fang Yuan’s mutated beast wolf group was barely resisted by the grass soldier army.

"We blocked it? Hahah! Hei Lou Lan, you are bound to lose!" Liu Wen Wu saw this and the worry in his heart vanished, he laughed heartily as his voice resounded the battlefield.

"Damn it..." Hei Lou Lan clenched his fist and gritted his teeth. The situation was terrible, Gao Yang and Zhu Zai were in great danger, and the mutated wolf group that he had placed his hope on was restricted at the enemy’s camp, unable to progress!

Without a choice, he had to mobilize the black banner troops.

"Brothers, it is finally time for us black banner to strike!" Black banner commander received this order and shouted excitedly.

Black banner troop was nurtured by Hei tribe for a long time, the trump card made from expending huge amounts of resources. Once they were deployed, they were like a black blade that stabbed into the battlefield, easily slicing it like tofu.

The entire black banner troop was reinforced by battle will Gu, they were brave and peerless, not afraid of death. They could display 120% of their original strength!

"Can’t control it anymore huh?" Liu Wen Wu’s eyes shone brilliantly, staring at the black banner troop’s movements.

When he saw the black banner troop making a curve around the battlefield, towards his central camp, he instantly understood Hei Lou Lan’s intention.

"So you are trying to stake it all on this, gathering your advantage and piercing the grass soldier army. Hmph, Bei Cao Chuan had such difficulty resisting Chang Shan Yin, if the black banner troops appeared, he would definitely fall. By then, Hei tribe would have a mild advantage and this crucial beast group would be free to attack."

Thinking so, Liu Wen Wu laughed arrogantly: "Your Hei tribe has black banner troops, renowned in northern plains. My Liu tribe also has the grand white troops, of similar magnitude of fame. Black banner and grand white’s competition had been ongoing for hundred of years, let’s see who wins today."

Under his command, the grand white troops unleashed one of their three killer moves directly.

The grand white troops exploded with a piercing white light.

The white light formed into a giant light pillar that pierced into the heavens.

The light pillar rose up, but after an instant, it descended from the sky, shooting at the area that the black banner troops were advancing towards. The three black banner commanders saw this familiar killer move and ordered their troops to stay on guard.

The light pillar dispersed and the grand white troops appeared with a tight formation.

Grand white troops were foot soldiers, while black banner troops rode battle horses. But in terms of mobility, grand white troops were superior, it was none other than the ability of this killer move!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 533: Huge Battle (3/4)

Black banner troops and grand white troops started to fight, ever since they were created, they were opposing forces that had contested for hundreds of years, having victories and losses on both sides. At this moment, the two troops engaged in battle and unleashed their killer moves, having no clear advantage on each side.

Seeing his final trump card engaged in a deadlock, Hei Lou Lan’s expression turned pitch black.

"Hehehe." Liu Wen Wu laughed heartily, feeling great pleasure, his opponent was at his wit’s end, but he was in the same situation.

However, the grass soldier army could still blok the mutated beast wolf group for some time. As for Hei tribe’s higher level battle force, they had already shown signs of collapsing, especially Gao Yang and Zhu Zai against Ouyang Bi Sang and Mo Shi Kuang, their battle was very obviously showing signs of a victor emerging.

Ouyang Bi Sang and Mo Shi Kuang, although they were not skilled at cooperating, they had greater individual strength than their opponents.

If Gao Yang and Zhu Zai were fighting two against one, using their great chemistry, they could have a mild advantage. But now, they could only be suppressed, defending desperately as they were in a passive situation.

Anyone could tell that Gao Yang and Zhu Zai were going to fail very soon. Once they lose, Ouyang Bi Sang and Mo Shi Kuang would be like tigers out of a cage, they would start to reinforce other battles.

That way, their mild advantage will snowball and accumulate, allowing the entire battle to sway in his favor.

Once Liu tribe army gains the advantage, Hei tribe without any more backup would have no way of winning, they would only be able to watch their opponent grow stronger as they fall into a worse situation.

Eventually, the other side will turn advantage into victory, and Hei tribe army would crumble!

Hei Lou Lan could see the problem now, he was sweating profusely. He was all alone in the main tent, at this point, he could only rely on his own strength!

His body vanished in the main tent, appeared in the air above the grass soldier army.

He had the intention of killing Bei Cao Chuan, since Bei Cao Chuan did not have lurking soul coat Gu, he was easy to distinguish, once he is killed, the grass soldier army would crumble.

That way, this battle would go back into a double offense situation, at the end, it would be like the first battle, they would have to regroup and retreat.

Killer move — Dark Vortex!

Hei Lou Lan had just activated his killer move, when a white light appeared before him, showing Liu Wen Wu’s body.

Hei Lou Lan was a dark path rank five, while Liu Wen Wu was a light path rank five, the two had engaged in combat for many times without a clear victor.

But this time, the gentleman-like Liu Wen Wu showed a mild smile of a victor: "Brother Lou Lan, today’s battle depends on a single ray of light. My grass soldier army is going to fall soon, but your higher level battle strength will falter more quickly. What a pity, our armies have very close battle strength, we are nearly evenly matched."

"You are courting death!" Hei Lou Lan shouted furiously, growling and charging at Liu Wen Wu.

The two fought as they moved around, exploding with thunderous sounds or brilliant lights.

"Strange, in my previous life, Hei tribe defeated Liu tribe, but it seems that Liu tribe has the advantage now. Was it because of me that some weird changes occurred?" Fang Yuan hid at a corner as he secretly observed.

He was an enslavement-strength dual cultivator, he had not displayed his full strength yet.

In fact, he had not even displayed his full enslavement path abilities yet.

At this moment, the grass soldier army was barely holding on, he just had to show up and unleash the wolf howl Gu and rank five amplify effect Gu to instantly defeat Bei Cao Chuan.

But Fang Yuan did not move, he chose to observe.

His attention was on Ouyang Bi Sang and Mo Shi Kuang.

Once he showed up, and activated wolf howl Gu and rank five amplify effect Gu, there was a huge possibility that the two of them would come after him.

Truthfully speaking, Fang Yuan was already accomplished in strength path, he was not afraid of fighting Ouyang Bi Sang and Mo Shi Kuang together in close combat.

But...

"My vision cannot be limited to this battle. The fight for the Imperial Court is a competition among super tribes, a game manipulated by Gu Immortals. Once I expose my full strength, even if we win this battle, the other party will definitely target me when they get reinforced by their Gu Immortal. By then, I would have no more hidden trump cards left, my grasp over this situation would fall to rock bottom."

Fang Yuan’s mind was on the Imperial Court, he kept calm at all times and was not disturbed by the dangerous situation ahead of him.

"In my previous life, how did Hei tribe defeat Liu tribe? Although the battle is extremely tense now, both sides had not used their trump cards yet. At least I know that Tai Bai Yun Sheng has a rank five Gu ’man as before’. The less battle strength I expose, the better it is for me. If I strike, it has to be a fatal blow! Now is not the time yet..."

Fang Yuan’s heart was calm, despite this intense battlefield that was filled with corpses and rivers of blood.

In his eyes, these casualties were just numbers.

In this battle, many people screamed at the deaths of their friends and family, many people shouted in joy after killing a strong foe, some Gu Masters ran away under the fear of death. Some Gu Masters were filled with ambition, wanting to be a person of higher status.

Human emotions became riled up in such moments of life and death, they were frenzied, crazy, while arrogant and unrestrained.

Observing the ruthless expressions of the people around, hearing their screaming and shouting, Fang Yuan felt a great sense of serenity and peace.

His heart was firm like an ancient abyss, there were no ripples on the surface.

Fight, kill, a person is born to engage in battle.

Win, lose, continue walking on your path, by stepping on other people’s corpses.

Let blood boil, let sweat flow, the best moment of life is now...

"Take this, this is my killer move — World Devouring Qi!" In the battlefield, an explosive and thunderous shout burst out.

His voice attracted numerous gazes as everyone subconsciously focused on it.

"Oh no, let’s go!" An intense sense of danger assaulted him as Gao Yang shouted, activating his Gu worm and wanting to escape, but the surrounding air was as dense as walls, he could barely move.

Mo Shi Kuang floated in the air, opening his hands as his ten fingers converged before his chest.

Gao Yang and Zhu Zai felt a despairing sense of pressure, squashing them from all directions. Their shocked expressions froze on their faces, the feeling of imminent death filled their hearts.

"Go!" Before the moment of death, Zhu Zai burst out the strength of three grand emperor boar, piercing a hole on the wall-like air.

"Brother!" Gao Yang felt his world spinning, when he reacted, he had already been tossed far away by Zhu Zai, away from the battlefield.

As for Zhu Zai, he was squeezed into meat paste by Mo Shi Kuang’s killer move, through an intense and concentrated air pressure.

"Brother!!" Gao Yang shouted, his heart felt like it was pierced by daggers as tears flowed out of his eyes like a flood.

Mo Shi Kuang also vomited a mouthful of blood.

"Second brother, your killer move is not completed yet, don’t activate it casually." Ouyang Bi Sang quickly hurried over and held him in the air.

Mo Shi Kuang vomited blood as he laughed: "What a great battle, I used it without thinking, hahaha..."

Ouyang Bi Sang shook his head: "Alright, let’s continue killing that Gao Yang, after we resolve the problem here, we will reinforce the other battles!"

Liu Wen Wu who saw this laughed, he declared with overwhelming confidence: "This is the start of our Liu tribe army’s consecutive victories! Brother Lou Lan, you have no way of winning already!"

"Is that so?" It was not Hei Lou Lan who replied him, but Tai Bai Yun Sheng who was at another battle ring.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng who had always been evading attacks suddenly burst out with great speed as he pulled some distance from his opponent, opening his palms and shooting out a silver beam.

The silver beam shone on Zhu Zai’s flesh and blood that became meat paste.

Rank five – Man As Before!

In an instant, silver light shone brilliantly, making people close their eyes in response.

After the light faded, Zhu Zai reappeared on the battlefield, without any injuries on him, as his primeval sea level was also at its peak.

Under the effect of man as before, Zhu Zai returned to the state right before the battle!

The shocked expression not only appeared on multiple Gu Masters’ faces, even Liu Wen Wu, Mo Shi Kuang, and Ouyang Bi Sang had the same expression.

Man as before Gu had an incredible healing effect that made almost everyone feel shocked and speechless!

Man as before Gu, time path healing Gu, could return a target to his condition at a point in time.

"Good, what a great healing Gu!" Hei Lou Lan laughed heartily, he did not expect Tai Bai Yun Sheng to be concealing such a strong trump card. As long as they had this, Hei tribe’s higher level battle could drag on for a long time.

"Good, now is the time!" Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with brilliance as he activated rank four eagle rise Gu, flying up into the sky.

Rank five amplify effect Gu and rank four wolf howl Gu!

Fang Yuan opened his mouth and howled, as his voice spread far and wide.

Under the effect of the wolf howl Gu, all his mutated beasts’ bodies expanded, as their eyes turned bright red, their battle strength grew by five times!

"Go." Fang Yuan floated in the air, staring at the battlefield as he muttered.

The wolf tide burst out, like a tsunami out of nowhere!

"Damn it, I can’t hold on!" Bei Cao Chuan was at his wit’s end, he resisted desperately, but the grass soldier army was like a thin piece of paper under the wolf tide, it was torn to shreds without even lasting for a few breath’s time.

Bei Cao Chuan did not even manage to escape before a frenzy wolf pounced on him and tore his armor with its sharp teeth, before biting his throat.

Bei Cao Chuan resisted with all his strength, sending this frenzy wolf flying, just as he was about to cover his neck and get up, three white-eyes wolves came and after a struggle, he was a corpse torn into several pieces.

The grass soldier army went down, Fang Yuan thus manipulated the wolf group and attacked grand white troops.

Grand white troops were fighting with black banner troops, they were stuck in a stalemate as they exchanged blows. Now that the mutated beast wolf group attacked them from behind, they suffered heavy injuries.

"Hahaha, Liu Wen Wu, it seems that I have the last laugh!" The battle turned in such a sudden direction, Hei Lou Lan was overjoyed and surprised.

"No, I have not lost yet!" Liu Wen Wu’s face was distorted as he shouted frantically, like a gambler who had gone crazy from losing. He turned into a white light, flying towards Ouyang Bi Sang and Mo Shi Kuang.

"Second brother, third brother!" He shouted.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 534: Huge Battle (4/4)

"We are here, big brother!" Ouyang Bi Sang and Mo Shi Kuang shouted at the same time.

"Let them see the true strength of us three brothers!" Liu Wen Wu shouted, and without slowing down, directly smashed into Mo Shi Kuang and Ouyang Bi Sang.

The two laughed loudly, their body giving off green and grey light.

Green, grey and white, three lights collided. BOOM !. Light dispersed and on the spot appeared a human-shaped monster.

This monster had three heads and six arms. It was twenty feet tall with tight muscles and bronze skin.

The three heads had the appearance of Liu Wen Wu, Ouyang Bi Sang and Mo Shi Kuang.

"This....?!" Countless people looked on with wide eyes at this freakish scene.

"I will let you guys know, this is our three brothers’ killer move – Three Heads Six Arms! Are you trembling in fear? Let out all your dread. This will be the last moment of your lives!"

The three heads spoke in unison.

"Hmph, shameless boasting!" Gao Yang snorted, activating his treacherous cloud wave Gu.

A grey cloud shot towards the three heads six arms giant, but before it even reached its target, Liu Wen Wu’s eyes shot two light beams that pierced through the cloud.

BOOM!

With a sonic boom, the three heads six arms suddenly appeared above Gao Yang.

"So fast!" Gao Yang’s pupils shrunk and from the battle experiences he had cultivated over a long period of time, he quickly activated his defense Gu.

The monster waved its two arms.

One arm pierced through the light barrier while another arm smashed Gao Yang’s head like it smashed a watermelon.

Next moment, Gao Yang’s headless corpse fell down from the sky.

"Brother!!!" Rage attacked Zhu Zai’s heart and made him lose all reasoning, as he ferociously charged towards the monster.

"Muahahaha, the lamentation of ants." Mo Shi Kuang’s head laughed loudly and lightly flicked his finger towards Zhu Zai.

BOOM!!!

Qi flow exploded and moved straight through the battlefield with formidable impact force, inflicting injuries for several thousands of steps.

Zhu Zai directly exploded from the attack, his blood and crushed bones flying in all directions. The Gu Masters who suffered the after-effects of the attack were all injured heavily.

"This power... it has increased by at least six times and the speed has increased by nine times at least! This three people combination, is it combining asura transformation, the attacking force of qi path and the effects of light path?" Fang Yuan had an intense urge to battle when he looked at this scene.

"I have all-out effort Gu, and by adding in rank five amplify effect Gu, I can burst out with five hundred jun of strength! I wonder who would win if I fight with this monster?"

But in the next moment, Fang Yuan suppressed his battle intent and flew down, again hiding among the mutated beast group.

Man as before Gu!

At this moment, two silver lights shone down; Zhu Zai and Gao Yang resurrected again, restored to their previous state!

"Old geezer!" The monster’s six eyes were filled with icy glint, killing intent and battle intent, simultaneously charging towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng panickedly retreated; although he had man as before Gu, he could only use it on others and could not use it on himself.

"All those that are free, protect Tai Bai Yun Sheng!!" Hei Lou Lan hurried to reinforce while shouting to his army, realizing the crux of the battle.

"Who can stop me?" Ouyang Bi Sang’s head loftily smiled.

Next instant, the monster turned into a ray of green light that shot towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng like lightning.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was hiding behind others, but no one was able to block the monster as it charged straight, sweeping everything on its path. Anyone that dared to block it, be it Gu Masters or beasts, would become pools of crushed flesh and bones.

"Benefactor, leave quickly!" Gao Yang and Zhu Zai rushed over, guarding Tai Bai Yun Sheng behind them.

"Cumbersome things." The monster waved its six arms so quick that one could only see their afterimage.

THUMP THUMP , Zhu Zai and Gao Yang were smashed again.

"Take my sole blade Gu!" Pan Ping hurried over and activated single blade Gu.

Sole blade Gu successfully activated this time and the monster’s huge body slightly shook, a shallow wound appearing on its chest.

"A little interesting." The monster laughed coldly; the wound had completely recovered by the time he finished laughing. Afterwards, the monster let out a breath of turbid air.

The turbid air detonated and exploded Pan Ping into pieces.

"Tai Bai Yun Sheng, where are you going?" The monster howled with laughter, the voices of the three heads gradually becoming one.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had not moved very far when the monster intercepted in front of him.

Swoosh!

Waterfall flowed in a torrent and Hao Ji Liu came riding it.

The monster pushed forward with all six hands and collapsed the water torrent; Hao Ji Liu screamed miserably and flew backwards in a faster speed than he came.

Seeing this scene, Bian Si Xuan who was charging forward immediately stopped, not daring to go forward.

Dark vortex!

Hei Lou Lan sped down from the sky, and the giant black sphere that was as large as a hill pressed down.

The monster roared, its six hands forming into a claw shape and slashing towards the distant black sphere.

Killer move — World Devouring Qi!

The air became as thick as a wall and solid as a mountain. Hei Lou Lan’s face turned red and purple, but he was not able to continue forward.

Following after, air from all around surged and unexpectedly swallowed his killer move.

The killer move which Mo Shi Kuang could not carry out completely was suddenly perfected in the monster’s hand.

Howl!

The mutated wolf group rushed over while Hei Lou Lan delayed the monster. In an instant, the mutated wolf group had surrounded the monster tightly.

A bloody battle broke out.

The mutated wolves which had a strength of rank four Gu Masters, fearlessly initiated a death charge at the monster.

"KILL KILL KILL!" The monster growled repeatedly as it turned into a berserk state and started fighting the mutated wolves.

His every movement carried his full power. Light path, qi path and transformation path Gu worms jointly attacked with deep tacit cooperation, as if the monster was a cultivator cultivating three paths!

The mutated wolves died one after another, but the monster’s offensive was still as fierce as before.

"Lord alliance leader, let me lend you a hand!" At this moment, a Liu tribe Gu Master hurried over to assist.

But in the next moment, he was smashed apart alive by the monster which had lost its reason!

"Lord Liu Wen Wu has lost his mind!"

"He has become mad!!"

The battlefield was in an uproar and Liu tribe army’s morale fell down sharply.

"My tribe has suffered tremendous losses, we have lost one-third of our Gu Masters, it is time to retreat."

"How can such an alliance leader be worth us giving up our lives?"

"Let’s discuss after we retreat, the casualties have already reached a high level. Retreat now, don’t care about violating the poison vow."

The battle had reached such a chaotic state that was beyond everyone’s expectation. Deserters started to appear from both Hei and Liu tribe.

The black banner troops and grand white troops that had been managing the army were in an intense fight now, how could they have the energy to spare to suppress these deserters?

"What to do?" Hei Lou Lan asked; this monster gave him an extreme headache.

"Don’t worry. Killer moves have astonishing might but their consumption of primeval essence is also enormous. Moreover, this killer move clearly has a defect, this monster has already lost its reasoning. A powerful being without intelligence is nothing to worry about." Fang Yuan calmly analyzed, his voice shaking everyone’s mind.

"Yes, if nothing unexpected happens, then we have already won this battle!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng added.

But he had just finished speaking when the unexpected event happened.

The three heads six arms monster suddenly separated into three people who then charged into three directions.

Liu Wen Wu and Mo Shi Kuang’s charge missed, but Ouyang Bi Sang’s eyes shone as he shouted: "Chang Shan Yin, I have finally found you! Die!!"

Their three people combination into three heads six arms monster allowed their souls to mix and their battle strength would raise rapidly, but this state could not be maintained for long. The longer it was used, the more chaotic their memories would become, finally leading them to lose themself and become a delirious lunatic or become an idiot.

When they killed the Gu Master that had come for reinforcement, their minds shook and barely managed to regain a trace of sanity.

Relying on this sanity, they planned in making a comeback.

Compared to killing Tai Bai Yun Sheng, killing Chang Shan Yin would no doubt be much more important.

The investigative Gu of these three were not common Gu. By carefully observing the battlefield, they calculated the three places where Fang Yuan was most likely to be hiding.

In the end, Ouyang Bi Sang found Fang Yuan’s hiding place.

’Damn it! If the Wolf King dies, the wolf group will crumble apart. Liu tribe’s army will be able to turn around the situation and it will instead become my army’s defeat.’ Seeing Ouyang Bi Sang pouncing at Chang Shan Yin with a sinister smile, Hei Lou Lan shouted inwardly as he crazily rushed to assist, but he was still late.

"Die!" Ouyang Bi Sang unexpectedly still had enough primeval essence left to activate asura transformation again!

"Wolf King is finished!" Sun Shi Han was afraid but also happy.

"Bad! Chang Shan Yin is going to die!!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng and others had pale expressions.

"Father!" Chang Ji You shouted in desperation.

However, the person in question, Fang Yuan, had a strange smile on his face as he saw Ouyang Bi Sang’s attack.

Rank four eagle raise Gu and rank five amplify effect Gu!

A pair of eagle wings suddenly grew out of Fang Yuan’s back and took him towards the sky with five times the speed.

Ouyang Bi Sang was dazed for a second before he hurried chased, shouting: "Don’t even think of escaping!"

But his speed was not enough and he could only look on as the gap between them spread apart.

"Let me!" Liu Wen Wu shouted and turned into a white light that rapidly charged over. But Fang Yuan nimbly turned around and dodged.

Mo Shi Kuang also rushed over at this moment, chasing and intercepting Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was extremely deft - at times, he was like a butterfly passing through the flowers; at times, he was like a lightning; at times, he was like a light wind; and at times, he was like a ghost, playfully circling the three.

"This... this is master level flying skill!" Everyone looked at this sight with dumbfounded gazes.

Gu Masters raised Gu, used Gu and refined Gu; no matter which aspect, they were all profound and vast. It was clearly the same Gu that they were using, but some Gu Masters could use them brilliantly, elevating it to a level of art.

People often called these individuals — masters!

"I had never thought that Wolf King was not only an enslavement path master but also flying master!" Everyone looked for a while and let go of their worries, exclaiming in surprise.

"Wolf King, don’t run if you dare!" Ouyang Bi Sang shouted.

"Chang Shan Yin, if you have any guts, come exchange three hundred moves with me!" Mo Shi Kuang roared in fury.

"Damn it..." Liu Wen Wu gnashed his teeth, his heart already sinking to the bottom.

Fang Yuan’s flying skills left them in the dust. What made them even more vexed was that Fang Yuan was unexpectedly separating his thoughts in controlling the wolf group to slaughter Liu tribe army, while dodging them!

"Oh for heaven’s sake, if I knew you could fly this skillfully, why would we need to fight to this extent?" Looking at Fang Yuan’s skillful maneuvers, Hei Lou Lan felt some resentment in his heart.

As for the Liu tribe three brothers, they were completely speechless.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Liu Wen Wu lost.

It was an indignant loss, but this was the truth, it would not change because of his feelings.

Liu Wen Wu, Ouyang Bi Sang, Mo Shi Kuang all had flying abilities. But in terms of flying attainment, they could not compare to Fang Yuan.

The sky was different from the ground, people could fly freely in the air, up, down, left, right, they could dodge in all directions and fly everywhere. But on the ground, there was much less space for evasion.

No matter how Liu Wen Wu and gang tried to block him, they could do nothing to Fang Yuan.

Meanwhile, as Fang Yuan dodged, he mobilized the wolf army to slaughter Liu tribe’s army.

Liu Wen Wu and gang had no choice but to give up on chasing Fang Yuan, turning to kill the wolf group and helping the low rank Gu Masters.

But this was what Hei Lou Lan, Fang Yuan and others wanted to see!

Using wolf kings or the mutated wolf group to expended the Liu tribe three brothers’ precious primeval essence was very worth it, it was very advantageous to Fang Yuan as well.

As long as a Gu Master did not advance to immortal realm, their primeval essence would be limited. Once they expend their primeval essence, their battle strength would decrease drastically and hit rock bottom.

The wolf tide came again and again, the more wolves the Liu tribe three brothers killed, the more primeval essence they used up.

The wolf group’s scale was huge, it was never-ending, eventually, Liu tribe three brothers killed until their primeval essence was depleted.

By the time they had to preserve their primeval essence they would no longer be able to battle freely. Hei tribe’s higher level battle strength finally had something to do as they suppressed the three of them.

"Hei Lou Lan, today, I did not lose to you, but I lost to Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Chang Shan Yin!" Liu Wen Wu’s hair was messy as his body was covered in injuries, he no longer had his gentleman-like attitude as he shouted indignantly.

He felt that: With their three brother’s killer move ’three heads six arms’, they had great battle strength and could suppress the battlefield. If back then, they got to Fang Yuan and used their supreme speed to kill Fang Yuan, the wolf group would’ve collapsed and Hei tribe would’ve lost.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng had the rank five healing Gu ’man as before’, the effect was godly, it greatly weakened the effectiveness of their killer move.

When they were left with no choice and chased after Wolf King, they found that the enslavement master Chang Shan Yin was actually a mother****ing flying master!

The three brothers could not catch him, they could only watch the battle crumble. Eventually, Liu tribe lost and was chased down by Hei tribe, they suffered great losses and countless people surrendered.

As the alliance leader, Liu Wen Wu and others were captured after their primeval essence was depleted.

Hei tribe and Liu tribe had always been competing, the two super tribes had a tense relationship, it was well known in northern plains. Now, Hei tribe only captured Liu Wen Wu and others and did not kill them, they wisely sought for a great amount of battle reparation from Liu tribe.

Liu Wen Wu was one of Liu tribe’s prospective Gu Immortals, if he was killed, the bottomline of this Imperial Court contest’s rules would be infringed.

More importantly, although Hei tribe won, it was a tragic victory and they suffered huge losses as well. Without Liu Wen Wu to bargain for huge amounts of compensation, just ordinary battle gains would not allow Hei tribe to regain their strength. This was very disadvantageous for their future battles for the Imperial Court.

Three days later, Liu tribe’s envoy came, and brought all of the Liu tribesmen and the tribes that submitted to them back into the blessed land.

As for the tired and heavily damaged Hei tribe army, they set up camp and managed the people who surrendered, reforming their alliance and collating the battle gains, giving out resources and digesting the spoils of war.

In the large lizard house Gu, Fang Yuan sat on the cushion as he cultivated intently.

A rank four wolf soul Gu appeared out of his body through his will.

The wolf soul Gu was only thumb-size, it was like a tiny grey wolf-shaped doll, it floated in the air as it was covered in an eerie blue light.

The primeval sea level in Fang Yuan’s aperture dropped as primeval essence was injected into the wolf soul Gu, causing it to expand rapidly.

Howl!

Wolf soul Gu expanded and turned into a pure grey wolf soul, as large as an elephant.

Next, the wolf soul opened its mouth and howled soundlessly, crashing towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, how could a thousand man soul be so easily affected? The wolf soul crashed on his thousand man soul, and immediately froze, suppressed by his thousand man soul.

The two souls tangled as they turned into mist. A moment later, the wolf soul fused into the thousand man soul and reappeared.

At this moment, the thousand man soul had a long pair of wolf ears on its head, its body was thinner than Fang Yuan’s body, and its nose also became sharper. The only part that had not changed were its long hair, eyes, and tail.

"Ever since the Imperial Court competition, I have been using wolf soul Gu daily to refine my soul. Now, I have achieved small success, my soul is around 30% wolfman soul."

Once he fully converts to wolfman soul, his control over the wolf group would experience another qualitative change. Not only would the numbers increase greatly, he would be able to command them like an extension of his limbs, controlling them would require a mere thought.

After a intense battle, his soul’s tiredness and weariness would also be lower.

"But according to this speed, by the time I completely refine the wolfman soul, the Imperial Court contest would be over already. I only have rank four wolf soul Gu, the efficiency is way too slow." Fang Yuan sighed.

If he had rank five wolf soul Gu, that would be better compared to Fang Yuan’s current situation. But rank four wolf soul Gu was like a grown man using a tiny knife to chop a tree.

In truth, Fang Yuan’s soul cultivation was already very fast.

Ordinary Gu Masters needed to spend at least twenty to thirty years to reach his level. Even a genius Gu Master with a clan’s support could only be like Dong Fang Yu Liang, reducing the time needed to ten years.

Fang Yuan had Dang Hun mountain, his soul foundation grew at rocket speed, his point of view was obviously different.

"If I can get that Thieving Heaven inheritance, and obtain Luo Po valley..." Fang Yuan’s thoughts drifted to this.

But a moment later, he stopped this thought.

In Hu Immortal blessed land, Dang Hun mountain was corroded by the gruel mud continuously, there was only a small mountain left now.

His current objective was to save Dang Hun mountain. As for Luo Po valley, he could only search for it after the Imperial Court contest ends.

While Fang Yuan was cultivating, Chang Biao brought Ni Xue Tong, and Chang Ji You to the door of the large lizard house Gu.

I am Chang Biao, I was summoned by Lord Wolf King." Chang Biao’s voice was low and polite, he respectfully informed the guarding Gu Master.

The two rank three Gu Masters had a plain expression as they stood by the door, one answered; "Lord Wolf King is cultivating now, we cannot enter the Gu house to inform him, you will have to wait!"

"Hehe, that is only natural." Chang Biao laughed, trying to conceal the bitterness and dreariness in his heart.

He and Chang Shan Yin had a huge grudge, he would not be willing to submit to Hei tribe. Originally, he wanted to go to Liu tribe, but Liu tribe wanted him to give up his family name and join Liu tribe, this request was impossible for Chang tribesmen and the elders to accept.

Chang tribe was a large size tribe, once they gave up their family name and became Liu tribesmen, Chang tribe would cease to exist.

Furthermore, Hei Lou Lan captured Liu Wen Wu alive and in order to appeal to the most important person Chang Shan Yin, he added in the condition of taking over Chang tribe among the battle reparation.

Thus, Chang tribe became the sacrificial lamb in Liu and Hei tribe’s transaction. If Chang tribe did not submit to Hei tribe, they would be assaulted by Hei tribe’s army. Forced by both tribes, Chang tribe had no choice but to lower their heads to Hei Lou Lan, becoming Hei tribe’s captives.

Chang Shan Yin and Chang tribe’s enmity was known to all. After Hei Lou Lan captured Chang tribe, he let Fang Yuan deal with them completely.

After Fang Yuan got the news, he expressed his gratitude to Hei Lou Lan, but in fact, he did not care about it.

He was only using Chang Shan Yin’s identity, in order to enter the Imperial Court blessed land. Wolf King’s grudges had nothing to do with him.

But if he settled this casually, it would not fit his current status, and people would get suspicious. Thus, Fang Yuan informed Chang tribe’s current leader Chang Biao to meet him.

Chang Biao waited from evening to midnight.

At this period of time, northern plains’ nights were extremely cold. Chang Biao and the others had their Gu worms confiscated, the primeval essence in their apertures could not resist the cold. Under the blowing night wind, they were shivering from the cold.

Chang Biao kept a calm expression, but Ni Xue Tong was very guilty, she could not conceal the worry in her heart. Chang Ji You was young and at the peak of his health, although his nose was red from the cold, and his body was shivering, his eyes were shining brightly with excitement.

All his life, he had been hearing about the ’Wolf King Chang Shan Yin’ and his great deeds.

Everyone called him the ’hero’s son’, he was gifted this unique status from birth, this gave him great worries, pride, trouble, and even chance encounters.

When he had first heard about Wolf King Chang Shan Yin being alive and had returned, but wanted to exact revenge on Chang tribe, he had very complicated feelings. When he found out that he was going to battle his father, his intense battle intent wavered. During the earlier meeting, Chang Shan Yin did not appear, in fact he went to bash up Sun Shi Han, this made Chang Ji You feel disappointed but also great admiration. After Liu tribe lost, he became a captive but that made him sigh in relief — he no longer needed to fight with his father!

Right now after Liu tribe lost, he was going to meet his real father, Chang Ji

You was very excited in his heart.

Even though he was outside shivering and suffering from the weather, it could not freeze the hot-bloodedness in him.

"The person who gave me everything, my father, what kind of person are you?" He was very curious, but he also felt a bit lost and anxious.

After using three wolf soul Gu, Fang Yuan opened his eyes.

The sound of the icy wind blowing outside the window could be heard in the warm room.

Fang Yuan purposely gave Chang Biao a display of authority, after counting the time that had passed, he knew it was time. Thus, he transmitted his message while controlling the large lizard house Gu and opened the doors.

"Lord Wolf King has finished his cultivation, he will meet you now." The Gu Master guards outside received the transmission and said expressionlessly.

Chang Biao's breathing paused, he felt great trepidation as he walked in first, with heavy footsteps.

If Wolf King found out the truth, then he would die without a proper corpse, his reputation would be ruined. Even if Wolf King did not find out the truth, as long as he wanted revenge, killing the whole of Chang tribe would only be a sentence worth of work.

Being meat on the chopping block, this was the helplessness of being in this world!

Fang Yuan looked at the three people kneeling before him.

Chang Biao lowered his head, gritting his teeth, while Ni Xue Tong had a pale expression and was shivering. As for Chang Ji You, he was breathing roughly, but he took peeks at Chang Shan Yin at times, showing an excited expression.

Fang Yuan laughed lightly.

The laughter was heard by all three of them, causing them to shudder.

Chang Biao shut his eyes, his heart had sank to rock bottom, he was waiting for judgement.

Ni Xue Tong almost collapsed on the ground weakly, but Chang Ji You was very agitated, this was father's laughter, he felt a strong sense of warmth from this laugh.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan observed Chang Biao and the others' expressions fully.

Fang Yuan knew about Wolf King Chang Shan Yin's matters mostly from his biography, he did not know the true culprit behind Wolf King's situation.

But even if he found out, he would not bother taking revenge for the dead Wolf King.

He was Fang Yuan, the so-called Chang Shan Yin was merely a mask.

"From today onwards, I will be Chang tribe’s one and only supreme elder." Fang Yuan spoke, breaking the silence.

Chang Biao’s body shuddered, he opened his eyes and quickly bowed: "Chang Biao pays respect to lord supreme elder."

"Mm." Fang Yuan nodded: "We need to investigate the matters from back then thoroughly. But now is not the time, we have to wait till the Imperial Court contest ends. From today onwards, I will be Chang tribe’s sole supreme elder. Chang Ji You, you will be the tribe leader. Chang Biao will be the number one elder. Ni Xue Tong, our relationship is over, continue to be Chang Biao’s wife."

Because of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s tradition, in northern plains, women had lowly status, they were often sold as commodity in transactions. In fact, at times, when an esteemed guest comes to visit, the lord would send his own wife to the esteemed guest to sleep with him.

"Ah?" Chang Ji You was stunned on the spot, he froze completely.

Ni Xue Tong did not speak.

Chang Biao controlled the shock in his heart, he bowed once again: "This subordinate understands!"

"Leave." Fang Yuan waved his hand, sending them away. He had to make good use of his time to continue cultivating.

The three walked out of the large lizard house Gu in a daze, until the cold night wind blew on them and woke them up.

"I... survived just like this?" Chang Biao felt endless joy and happiness.

"But the matter back then was done flawlessly! Even though there are some traces here and there, after all these years, the evidences are long gone. Back then, I got close to Chang Shan Yin on purpose, and became good buddies with him. Now that Chang Shan Yin had gone through such a great change, plus it has already been so many years, it is normal for our relationship to turn bland." Chang Biao thought rapidly in his head.

The current situation was way better than what he had expected.

"Although I was demoted from tribe leader to elder, most of my authority is intact. Chang Shan Yin still trusts me seeing that he allowed me to be the number one elder! As for making Chang Ji You the new tribe leader, it shows that he is still caring about his own blood and flesh deeply! As long as he cares about his old relationships and friendships, everything will be easy to resolve..." Chang Biao thought and got more energetic.

He was dreaming within his own world, and did not notice his wife Ni Xue Tong’s complicated expression.

The old Chang Shan Yin was extremely infatuated with her beauty, but earlier, Chang Shan Yin did not give her even an extra glance.

On the way here, she was extremely worried about Chang Shan Yin forcing her to his wife again. That way, she will be separated from her lover Chang Biao, that was too painful!

But now, the situation was way better than she had expected.

Not only did Chang Shan Yin not pursue the matters back then, he even allowed her to remain as Chang Biao’s wife!

This was the result that Ni Xue Tong was dreaming of earlier. She should be happy, but for some reason, while she still felt some trepidation from earlier, there was also a sense of loss in her, that she did not want to admit.

As for Chang Ji You, he was in great joy, confusion, and suspicion.

"I’ve finally met father, he was just a few steps in front of me! He is much more authoritative than I imagined."

"Father did not call me his son, but instead called my name. Is he unaware that I am his flesh and blood?"

"But father, why did he let me become Chang tribe leader? I am so young and only have rank three cultivation, can I do it?"

"I get it! This must be a test from father. He is testing me, this son he had never met, if I can manage the tribe well and achieve outstanding results, will he feel happy and proud, will be recognise me as his son?"

Thinking so, Chang Ji You felt extremely excited, he made up his mind, he would exert all his efforts and perform well in the upcoming fight for the Imperial Court.

Fang Yuan would not expect that his simple arrangements would bring such great emotional changes in Chang Biao and gang.

But even if he knew, he would not care.

In the five hundred years of his past life, Chang Shan Yin helped Ma Hong Yun to ascend to the position of the Lord of the Imperial Court, he also had complete control over Chang tribe.

Different from Earth, when strength can be accumulated within a person, the stronger one is, the greater their authority would be.

At this point, Fang Yuan was no longer the low rank Gu Master on Qing Mao mountain, suppressed and weakened by the system. Right now, he had the authority to manipulate and change the power system of a tribe. One could say, he was at the peak of the mortal realm.

He knew in his heart, all this was because of the great strength that he had!

"Right now, my first aperture had already adapted, I can use rank five peak stage primeval essence. My second aperture has also reached rank five middle stage. My two apertures have ninety percent A grade aptitude, to use my two sets of Gu worms now, I have ample primeval essence.

"But enslavement and strength path Gu worms are not extremely strong. In terms of strength path, after getting the rank five amplify effect Gu, my explosive force is already high enough, except that my body is unable to endure the increment in strength.

Earlier, when fighting against Liu Wen Wu and his brother’s combination killer move ’three heads six arms’, Fang Yuan could definitely fight against them using his strength path cultivation.

But Fang Yuan knew clearly that the moment he unleashed five hundred jun of strength, regardless of how his opponent will ends up, his own body would definitely crumble first.

"My bones are impermanence bones. My skin is turtle jade wolf skin. To sustain five hundred jun of strength, this is not enough. But if I modify my muscles and tendons to accommodate strength path, they would not suit my enslavement path. If I modify them for enslavement path, they will not aid my strength path. The root of the problem is that enslavement and strength have some conflict between them, it is difficult to cultivate them together. It is unlike soul and enslavement path, or soul and wisdom path."

This problem had always been troubling Fang Yuan.

If he could not resolve this, Fang Yuan’s enslavement and strength path would only go far, but would not reach the apex and attain ultimate strength.

Although Fang Yuan had information regarding Luo Po valley now, the future was uncertain, anything could happen. Fang Yuan was a vigilant guy, before getting Luo Po valley, he would not make up his mind to cultivate soul path, thus, he needed to perfect his enslavement-strength path route now.

Fang Yuan closed his eyes and thought about it, before opening them and taking out east window Gu from his aperture.

This Gu was a storage Gu, used to store information, it came from Lang Ya land spirit.

Inside east window Gu, there was information regarding the killer move ’three heads six arms’. This killer move was extremely powerful, it could allow Liu Wen Wu, Ouyang Bi Sang, and Mo Shi Kuang to become a giant monster, increasing their battle strength to a terrifying level.

After Hei tribe defeated Liu tribe, they make requests regarding this killer move, thus it became a part of the reparation. Thereafter, Fang Yuan exchanged for it using his battle merits.

These days, when Fang Yuan was free, he would research about this killer move.

When Gu Masters use multiple Gu worms at the same time, allowing their effects to merge and cooperate to form greater effects, that would be the so-called Gu Master killer move.

Killer move ’three heads six arms’, needed eighteen Gu worms to be used at the same time. Gu worms used ranged from rank three to five, the primeval essence expenditure was huge as well. At the same time, three Gu Masters were needed, one could not activate it alone.

This killer move was unusable by Fang Yuan. But that did not mean it was worthless to him.

Killer move, or recipes, displayed exquisite usage of Gu worms.

Why was it that when these Gu worms were used in a specific way, they achieved such effects? Why can these Gu worms do it, but not others? If this Gu was changed to another Gu, can the same effect be achieved? If an enemy uses this killer move, what ways are there to counter it?

Man is the spirit of all being, Gu is the essence of heaven and earth.

Inside a Gu, there were tiny laws of heaven and earth, the fragments of the great Dao.

By understand Gu, one would comprehend the great Dao, and understand the natural laws of this world. Just like on Earth, using experiments to learn scientific theories.

This Gu recipe gave great insight to Fang Yuan.

"If I had three heads and six arms, what would happen?"

A flash of inspiration appeared in his brain, like opening a new window.

His body was like the cornerstone. Enslavement and strength path were like the buildings on top of the cornerstone. Right now, this cornerstone was still small, thus the two buildings could only be low-rising. If he expanded this cornerstone in the future, would it be able to contain two tall buildings at the same time?

Fang Yuan had never cared about his own appearance.

Handsome, beauty, ugly, these were other people’s opinions. What did that have to do with him?

If his battle strength was high, so what if he was called a monster?

Northern Plains, July.

The weather was turning cold, mist turned into frost, it was raining non-stop.

All the armies engaged in many intense battles, there were already less than fifty left.

Although Hei tribe won against Liu tribe, they suffered a great loss as well, they set up camp and made use of all their time to recuperate and recover, like an injured beast.

Middle of July.

At Du Jiao region, Ye Lui army defeated the alliance of seven armies, on the day of the counterattack, Ye Lui Sang killed three rank five Gu Masters.

But in this battle, the biggest achiever was a hidden elder in Qi Lian tribe, Qi Lian tribe leader’s godson, Wu Ming.

Wu Ming was a rank five middle stage dark path Gu Master. During the battles, he snuck into the enemy camp and assassinated the enemies, successfully killing two rank five experts, thirteen rank four Gu Masters, causing the seven alliance armies to feel great fear and low morale.

Northern Plains, August.

After Yang tribe recruited enslavement master Jiang Bao Ya, their strength surged and they experienced many victories, after some battles, they were one of the new popular competitors for the Imperial Court.

The new enslavement master "Leopard King’ Nu Er Tu led his army against Tao tribe. Tao tribe alliance army had suffered many setbacks during the battles, the alliance leader Tao You knew that he had no hopes of ascending to the Lord of Imperial Court position. Thus, he submitted to Nu Er Tu, and after their armies combined, their military power surged.

Middle of August, Hei Lou Lan gave orders to resume their conquest.

By September, the Imperial Court contest was starting to clear up. Only five armies had the highest hopes.

Hei tribe which had Chang Shan Yin, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Nu Er tribe with the new Leopard King, Yang tribe which had Rat King and Eagle King, Ma tribe with Horse

King, as well as Ye Lui tribe which had Ye Lui Sang who possessed an Immortal Gu.

First half of September, Nu Er tribe army fought Yang tribe army. The leopard group could not contest the combination of eagles and rats, after half a month, Nu Er Tu lost.

Start of October, while Yang tribe was digesting the battle reparations, Ye Lui Sang targeted them.

Yang tribe army had people who wanted to fight, some wanted to defend, while some wanted to retreat. Because of differing opinions, the army could not execute proper orders, and thus, was taken down by Ye Lui Sang.

After Ye Lui Sang win, they could not gloat for long, because Ma tribe had their eyes on them.

Ma tribe rushed for three days and three nights, catching Ye Lui Sang off-guard.

A similar scene unfolded again, before Ye Lui army digested their battle gains, they were defeated by Ma tribe.

Ye Lui Sang escaped with his remaining troops, submitting to Hei tribe army.

Start of November, Hei tribe moved north rapidly, setting up eight defensive lines on the way, and during the middle of the month, engaged in the final battle with Ma tribe.

Only the victor could stay in the Imperial Court. Meanwhile, the loser would have to pay reparations and face the ten year blizzard amidst disappointment and pity.

At once, this battle attracted numerous gazes, both participants and the people behind the scenes.

During the first few battles, Hei tribe had the advantage, after Ma tribe lost two defensive lines, they retreated to the third.

Ye Lui Sang wanted to take revenge, thus he kept challenging them, killing till Ma tribe army could only hide and defend themselves, causing their morale to dampen.

Ma tribe had no choice, but to seek help from Snowy Mountain blessed land who was backing them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The lofty Snowy Mountain stood tall and reached through the clouds.

Mountain ranges surrounded it like stars surrounding the moon.

The sky had a hue of light blue color. Thin snow fluttered lightly and landed on the ground.

This was a spotlessly white region with even the buildings on the mountain carved out of ice crystals.

Here was Snowy Mountain blessed land.

The nest of northern plains’ demonic path Gu Immortals, with tens of Gu Immortals occupying different peaks.

On one of the peaks of Snowy Mountain, green pine trees grew everywhere and a seven storey pavilion made of ice crystal stood there. Three large words were carved on the board in the pavillion — Xue Song Pavilion.

The owner of this peak, Xue Song Zi, was a famous rank six demonic path Gu Immortal of northern plains.

He was tall and thin with snow white hair that reached the ground and was clothed in a light blue gown. Right now, he was on the top floor of Xue Song Pavilion, looking down at this Snowy Mountain branch peak that belonged exclusively to him.

He had deep blue eyes and his deep gaze swept through a thousand li of his territory.

"The snow pines are growing well, the snow willows planted two years ago have already grown to over ten thousand willows. This year, the number of Gu worms produced was close to three hundred rank five Gu; there are still a surplus of ice path and water path Gu worms after leaving some for research. I can sell them and gain at least two-three immortal essence stones."

"Of course, my most important income source is still the transaction of snowmen slaves."

Xue Song Zi raised six variant human tribes on his branch peak, they were all snowmen.

Snowman was one of the species of variant humans who lived in ice-cold snowy regions. They had white skin, icy blue eyes and aqua blue hair. When they die, their blood and flesh body would turn into an ice sculpture.

Snowmen normally did not cry or laugh, so their tears were very rare. The absolute majority of the snowmen would never experience crying from joy or pain in their life.

However, if a snowman sheds tears, their tear would instantly condense into ice. Icy tears were precious Gu refinement material that Gu Masters liked deeply.

Xue Song Zi looked around once and nodded, satisfied.

Snowmen looked expressionless, but Xue Song Zi, however, saw them as the variant humans with spirituality that was the closest to humans. Many Gu Immortals raised snowmen, torturing them brutally for their icy tears.

Icy tears could be used in many areas of Gu refinement, and so its transaction in treasure yellow heaven was flourishing.

Many Gu Immortals massacred and killed snowmen to profit from their icy tears.

Xue Song Zi also did such shady business before, but he soon discovered the market for trading snowmen was much more profitable than the icy tears themselves.

From then onwards, he began to raise snowmen and sell them in treasure yellow heaven for other Gu Immortals to torture.

Snowmen could shed tears at most three times in their life and the amount would not surpass sixty drops. Every time they shed tears, the snowman’s lifespan and life essence would decrease by a huge amount.

The more the snowman sheds tears, the faster they will age, speeding up their death.

However, raising snowmen did not cost much.

Moreover, Xue Song Zi possessed this Snowy Mountain branch peak which was very beneficial for the growth of snow pines, snow trees and snowmen, thus his profit from selling snowmen was much higher than when he sold tears.

He was good at making money and had accumulated a large amount of immortal essence stones from his thriving business over the years, and was considered wealthy in the Gu Immortal circle.

But he had one great regret — decades had gone by since he became rank six Gu Immortal, but he still did not have even one Immortal Gu.

No matter how many immortal essence stones he had, he was not able to buy Immortal Gu. After all, there was only one of each Immortal Gu, others would not sell them even if they had it. At most, they would use Immortal Gu to exchange for Immortal Gu.

"Now, Ma tribe has already reached the final step, if it can prevail over Hei tribe and enter Imperial Court, maybe I can obtain my first Immortal Gu from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building... hmm?"

Xue Song Zi was thinking of all the matters, when suddenly he had a feeling and casually waved his hand.

Space tore open and a letter Gu flew in.

Xue Song Zi read the letter which was Ma tribe’s request for help.

"So they have finally gotten to this stage." The corner of Xue Song Zi’s lips curled up into a smile.

He had been paying close attention to the struggle for Imperial Court and already knew the difficulties Ma tribe was facing. Previously, he had gotten in contact with Ma tribe, but Ma tribe had not made a decision. Now due to the tense battle situation, Ma tribe sent a request for assistance, it was akin to agreeing to his previous conditions.

"With this, it is time to make my move." Xue Song Zi gradually restrained his smile and activated divine sense Gu.

Three divine senses separately flew towards three snowman tribes on the snowy peak.

After receiving the divine sense, three snowman Gu Masters immediately hurried towards the mountain peak.

After a while, they were kneeling in front of Xue Song Pavilion and greeted together: "Xue Wa, Xue Mi and Xue Ming greet Lord Immortal!"

Xue Song Zi did not reveal himself, instead sent some Gu worms towards these three snowmen’s hands.

"Take these Gu worms and also battle troop D to the outside world and find Ma tribe, help them win the battle." Xue Song Zi sent another divine sense.

"As you command." The three snowman Gu Masters immediately accepted the order.

Xue Song Zi had four battle troops marked A, B, C and D. They were elite troops formed from experts of the six snowman tribes.

The three snowman Gu Masters led battle troop D out of the Snowy Mountain blessed land, but before they even reached Ma tribe, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals noticed them.

"Elder brother, this Ma tribe has relations to Snowy Mountain’s demonic path Gu Immortals as we expected. The evidence is out in the open now, Liu tribe’s external supreme elder Gu Immortal Tan Bi Ya was not wrong." Hei Bai said to Hei Cheng in Xiao Hun blessed land.

These two were Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals.

Hei Bai had an ordinary appearance and looked to be middle-aged, he looked clumsy but was intelligent. While Hei Cheng was recognized as Hei tribe’s genius since young, he looked elegant and confident, and was also Hei Lou Lan’s father.

Hei Cheng glanced at Hei Bai and calmly said: "Brother, do not fret. Demonic path Gu Immortals have always been lone wolves. Snowy Mountain might be strong and have tens of Gu Immortals, but those that are supporting Ma tribe will only be two-three at most."

Hei Bai nodded: "Elder brother is right, but the current Ma tribe is truly strong. They were able to win great battles just by relying on themselves previously. Now if they obtain Gu Immortals’ support, they are bound to get much stronger."

Hei Cheng was in agreement as he asked: "Have you investigated who the demonic path Gu Immortals supporting Ma tribe are?"

"I haven’t but it should be easy."

"Do it. For the next few days, we will buy five hundred thousand wolves, three hundred mutated wolves, two wolf emperors and a few thousand Gu worms along with other resources to give to Hei Lou Lan."

"Yes, elder brother!"

"Also, instruct Hei Lou Lan to end the battle quickly so as to avoid new problems."

Hei Bai gave an understanding nod, and left Xiao Hun blessed land without speaking any more.

A war did not only pit human lives against each other, it was more about the competition between each other’s foundations, a war of attrition.

The struggle for Imperial Court had advanced to the final stage; Hei Cheng and Hei Bai, two immortals who had been supporting Hei Lou Lan, gradually started to feel an extremely heavy burden.

Although Gu Immortals were rich, they could not support the whole army for such a long period of time.

The amount of resources and mortal Gu needed were extremely enormous. A part came from their blessed land, but most of them were purchased from treasure yellow heaven using immortal essence stones.

With such huge amounts of immortal essence stones being expended, both Hei Bai and Hei Cheng felt distressed inwardly.

The struggle for Imperial Court was essentially a game. But it was not a game all Gu Immortals could afford to play.

Many Gu Immortals would put huge stakes in this game to obtain an Immortal Gu. In the end, if the side they chose did not become the owner of Imperial Court, they would lose disastrously, there were even examples of going bankrupt.

But if they won and obtained Immortal Gu from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, all their investment would be worth it.

After all, no matter how many immortal essence stones they had, they would not be able to buy an Immortal Gu.

After ten days, Hei tribe and Ma tribe began another round of battle. Troops lined up in a seemingly endless battle formation.

In the main tent, Hei Lou Lan sat on the main seat with his eyes gazing at his front and his heroic spirit was overflowing: "We did not cause huge damage to Ma tribe the previous two times, we will teach them a good lesson this time. It is not that easy to become a super tribe, hmph! Who will go first?"

The moment he finished speaking, Water Demon Hao Ji Liu stood up and bowed: "Lord alliance leader, I would like to go first!"

Hei Lou Lan nodded in satisfaction.

Water Demon Hao Ji Liu was an expert who had chosen to submit to him since the heroes assembly.

And he had been assisting and fighting in the struggle for Imperial Court the whole journey, and killed countless enemies and had made huge battle contributions at this stage.

Although Pei Yan Fei also attached to Hei tribe after Liu Wen Wu lost, he could not shake rank four Hao Ji Liu’s position as the first general.

Hao Ji Liu was an ’old general’ of Hei tribe army and adding in the loyalty which he had revealed many times, if nothing unexpected happened, he would be taken in as an external elder by Hei tribe once they become the owner of Imperial Court.

Hei tribe was a super tribe with Huang Jin bloodline, one of the overlords of northern plains. If Hao Ji Liu joined Hei tribe, it would be like taking a shelter under a large tree, similar to Wind Demon Tan Wu Feng joining Dong Fang tribe.

Hao Ji Liu entered the battlefield and started taunting. Ma Shang Feng snorted and pointed at him: "This Water Demon again, who will go teach him a lesson?"

"Lord alliance leader, let me go take care of him this time." A boorish guy stood up; he was Ma tribe’s general, rank four transformation path Gu Master — Cheng Hu.

Ma Shang Feng agreed, Cheng Hu impatiently went to the frontline and started fighting Hao Ji Liu.

Hao Ji Liu attacked cleverly with great offense, torrents surging around him. Because of many precious and rare Gu he had exchanged with his battle merits, Hao Ji Liu’s current battle strength far surpassed the time when he had just started out in the struggle for Imperial Court.

The two sides exchanged moves after moves, and after over ten rounds, Hao Ji Liu slowly began to occupy the upper hand.

Cheng Hu felt stifled as kept on being pushed into disadvantage, he gave a furious roar and activated his killer move, transforming into slant-eye tiger.

The tiger was ferocious and powerful, immediately turning around the losing situation.

Hao Ji Liu was widely known for his fierce offense, but he was having trouble fending off the tiger’s attacks, and could only keep on retreating, changing his battle tactics into defending and counter-attacking.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Swoosh swoosh.

A blue water current shot out. Slant-eye tiger roared in a thunderous volume.

This was the rank four tiger roar Gu!

The tiger roar sound waves caused ripples in the air, as it hit the currents, the water exploded into a huge rain.

After Cheng Hu became the slant-eye tiger, he had great offense, immediately giving off a dominating aura.

Tiger roar Gu, sends out sound waves. Tiger claw Gu, has overwhelming sharpness. Tiger skin Gu, has superb defense!

Tiger tooth Gu, is pointy like spears, has amazing penetration ability. Tiger tail Gu, strong like a whip, moving like one’s arms!

Transformation path Gu Masters would collect relevant Gu worms for their killer move. Once the Gu worm set is complete, they would be able to transform and obtain a huge qualitative surge in their battle strength.

Of course, the stronger the transformation, the more valuable the Gu needed for their set, and the harder it is to collect them.

Even if a Gu Master could transform, they needed a lot of training. Humans were born to walk on two legs, having two arms and one head. If they transformed into another form, it would not be easy for them to adapt.

Same as flying, only huge amounts of training and talent would allow one to have great proficiency in using their new form.

Gu Masters nurture, use, and refine Gu, this was the deep profound aspect of using Gu.

The two armies placed their gaze on the battle ahead.

Hao Ji Liu and Cheng Hu’s battle had already reached the crucial moment.

Cheng Hu used his killer move, turning into the slant-eye tiger, he had the advantage. Hao Ji Liu could only evade primilarily, compared to his earlier frenzied attacks, he was truly pathetic now.

However, as time continued to pass, the battle was still stuck at a deadlock. Although Cheng Hu had a huge advantage, he could not turn this advantage into victory.

Even though most of Ma tribe’s troops were rejoicing, the people sitting inside Ma tribe’s main tent were frowning.

"Not good, this Water Demon is very crafty! Cheng Hu is in danger." Ma Ying Jie said.

Many of the experts around nodded in agreement.

Although killer moves were strong, in truth, they were actually multiple Gu used at the same time. This meant that primeval essence expenditure was very high, for normal Gu Masters, this was a double-edged sword.

After Cheng Hu used his killer move, with Water Demon Hao Ji Liu’s plentiful experience, he immediately changed his hard-hitting tactics. As Cheng Hu was unable to take down Water Demon in time, after his primeval essence was expended, he would return to human form. By then, Water Demon Hao Ji Liu would retaliate.

Ma Shang Feng looked calm, but his heart sank.

If this was the past, Cheng Hu’s success or failure would not bother him. But now, Cheng Hu’s victory or loss was not his problem alone, it concerned the morale of the entire army.

Ma tribe had lost twice already, Ma Shang Feng knew that the tribes that submitted to them had already wavered.

Ma tribe army was led by Ma tribe, the other tribes were needed to make the alliance. Once their hearts wavered, the situation would turn dangerous.

Ma Shang Feng did not wish to see Cheng Hu fail.

But with the current situations, Cheng Hu was very likely to fail, Ma Shang Feng could only sigh in his heart as he called: "Fei Sheng Cheng."

Fei Sheng Cheng immediately stepped up, placing his right palm at his heart, bowing: "I am here."

"You will go for the second battle." Ma Shang Feng said. In order to alleviate the negative influences caused by Cheng Hu’s defeat, he placed his hopes on Fei Sheng Cheng.

Fei Sheng Cheng was a fierce general.

Earlier, he was ostracised by Fei tribe, and could not rise up. Ma tribe thus used him as an insider, and during Fei tribe’s internal political strife, they launched a surprise attack while they were weak and managed to take down Fei tribe.

After Fei Sheng Cheng submitted to Ma tribe, which was a wise ruler, he made many accomplishments and was highly regarded and nurtured.

Right now, he came before the battle area and shouted.

"He is Fei Sheng Cheng, ever since the Imperial Court contest, he had killed eight rank four experts. In an earlier battle, he used numbness Gu and fought three experts of the same realm alone, showing great abilities." In Hei tribe main tent, Sun Shi Han said.

Ye Lui Sang’s expression was cold.

The ’earlier battle’ Cunning Gentleman Sun Shi Han mentioned was the battle between Ma tribe and Ye Lui tribe. In the end, Ye Lui Sang lost and was chased by Ma tribe, almost becoming a vagabond. The tribes that submitted to Ye Lui tribe, like Qi Lian tribe, all went to Ma tribe.

Numbness Gu, a rare rank four Gu, had value equivalent to a rank five. Once a Gu Master was struck, they would be paralyzed, unable to move. Although it lasted a short time, during an intense battle, this was a very deadly technique.

Hei Lou Lan responded in agreement, and looked around, asking: "Who can battle?"

Once he said so, one person laughed heartily and stood up: "Fei Sheng Cheng is nothing much, I am willing to battle and sweep the obstacles away in your path to conquest!"

Hei Lou Lan looked at this person, it was none other than Sole Blade Pan Ping.

Earlier, Pan Ping was defeated by Liu tribe’s three brothers combination move, and was revived by Tai Bai Yun Sheng using man as before Gu after the battle. Not just him, Gao Yang and Zhu Zai were revived in the same way.

"Alright, then you shall go." Hei Lou Lan nodded.

If this was during the start of the battle, he would not think highly of Pan Ping. But after tens of battles, Pan Ping was no longer like before, he had grown quickly to become an expert like Pei Yan Fei.

"Fei tribe lad, you are just a traitor, a shameless scoundrel seeking glory. You being alive is the greatest humiliation, quickly receive your death!" Pan Ping jumped onto the battlefield and shouted, surging with battle intent.

Fei Sheng Cheng was furious, he hated people who called him this: "You are just a demonic path bastard, earlier I let you act arrogantly because you did not anger me yet!"

Immediately, the two fought.

At once, the scene was bursting with attacks as they were evenly matched. When two experts on par with each other battle, it would be an intense battle.

Actually, the two of them had similar circumstances. At the start of the Imperial Court contest, the two of them were people who were not doing well. Pan Ping was a demonic path Gu Master, he lived a tough life. As for Fei Sheng Cheng, he was suppressed by his clan and could not achieve his goals.

But because of this Imperial Court contest, the two gained fame and emerged from the battles while gaining great surge in strength.

Pan Ping only had one good Gu back then, sole blade Gu. But now, he used his battle merits to exchange for an exquisite set of Gu worms, his strength grew by leaps and bounds. It was unlike before when he relied on sole blade Gu alone.

Fei Sheng Cheng was the same.

Earlier, he was ostracised in his clan, even though he had a complete set of Gu worms, he lacked strong effective methods. He had also accumulated battle merits in battle, and exchanged the rank five equivalent numbness Gu, paired with his Gu worms, his battle strength rose sharply.

The two of them engaged with each other endlessly, but they both had their concerns.

Pan Ping was afraid of numbness Gu, while Fei Sheng Cheng was guarding against sole blade Gu.

Speaking of the sole blade Gu, it was Pan Ping’s good luck, it resides in the scimitar instead of the Gu Master’s body or aperture.

After Pan Ping was blown to bits, only the sole blade Gu survived.

After that, when Tai Bai Yun Sheng revived him, he lost all of his Gu worms except sole blade Gu. And thankfully, Pan Ping had a lot of battle merits which he had not used.

But Gao Yang and Zhu Zai were not so lucky.

After they died, they lost all their Gu worms. Most unfortunately, Gao Yang’s rank five treacherous cloud wave Gu was destroyed as well.

Rank five man as before Gu, it could only target human bodies and not Gu worms.

But the two felt calm, after all, being able to revive was the biggest benefit!

Thereafter, they borrowed battle merits to replenish their Gu worms. After several battles, not only did they return all the battle merits they owed, they even had some gains left.

The battle of two rank four experts attracted countless gazes.

Ma tribe saw that Fei Sheng Cheng and Pan Ping were at a deadlock, and sent out another six fierce generals.

Hei Lou Lan accepted all the challenges, sending Pei Yan Fei, Gao Yang, Zhu Zai and others.

When the six pair of experts battled, Cheng Hu finally lost. Water Demon Hao Ji Liu had no strength to chase after him, he could only watch Cheng Hu escape safely.

Hei tribe’s morale surged, but quickly, in the third battle, Ma tribe won, and tied the scores.

The two sides continued to send experts, as more than thirty battle rings appeared before the two troops.

That is so say, there were around seventy rank four Gu Masters fighting at once!

This was a grand scene, in the entire northern plains, there were billions of people, mostly being mortals, but only several hundred rank four Gu Masters, and less than fifty rank five Gu Masters.

Precisely because of the battle for the Imperial Court, all these people gathered and collided with each other, competing intensely. In the battle for life and death, even stronger Gu Masters emerge while the weak get exterminated.

It was near the end of the fight for the Imperial Court. Be it Hei tribe or Ma tribe, they were both huge forces.

Not counting Gu Immortals, either army had a scale that surpassed super tribes greatly.

All members of both armies were definitely excited and filled with ambitions.

Only Fang Yuan was calm, in his previous life he had seen even larger events, that was the chaotic battle of the five regions, it was truly a time of unrest.

"Lord alliance leader, I would like to battle!" A young rank four Gu Master walked up as he could not contain his battle intent.

This was none other than Ge Guang.

Ge Guang was Ge tribe leader, he was originally rank three, but after so many battles, he survived and gained a huge boost in strength, having advanced to rank four successfully not long ago.

Hei Lou Lan was stunned, turning his gaze towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was Ge and Chang tribe’s supreme elder, both tribes were under his control.

Fang Yuan sensed Hei Lou Lan’s inquisitive gaze and lightly commanded: "Stand down Ge Guang, you are a tribe leader, how can you put yourself at risk?"

Ge Guang stepped down obediently.

Fang Yuan asked: "Where is Chang Biao?"

"Lord, I am here." Chang Biao had a sickly expression, he had yet to recover from his injuries from the previous battle.

But Fang Yuan did not care about this, saying: "You will go fight."

Chang Biao wanted to speak but he could not, filled with an intense rage in his heart. Ever since he joined the Hei alliance army, he would be ordered by Fang Yuan to participate in every huge battle.

Even if he was a famous expert, he could not undergo consecutive battles with such a high intensity.

"Damn it! This Chang Shan Yin, is he ordering me like a beast?! Curse my current weak position, I cannot oppose him. I will wait and endure, there is still a long way to go. If I can harm you more than ten years ago, I will still be able to send you to the underworld after so many years!"

Chang Biao screamed in his heart, but on the surface, he chose to obey Fang Yuan’s orders, dragging his injured body into the battlefield.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

With Chang Biao taking the stage, Ma tribe sent a female expert.

This person’s name was Xi Xue, a rank four peak stage Gu Master, a famous expert of ice path. She possessed a rank five flying snow Gu which once activated could cause heavy snowfall and make a range of thousands of steps into an ice zone.

When Chang Biao saw this expert, he inwardly said: ’This will be difficult."

Even if he was at his peak condition, he would have to be careful when facing this woman, let alone now in his injured state.

The two started fighting, Xi Xue had a sharp offense while Chang Biao kept on dodging to prolong the battle; with this, he was unavoidably pressed in a disadvantageous situation.

The battles continued and as time passed, some rank four Gu Masters lost, some retreated due to injuries and some died at the enemy’s hand.

There were casualties in both sides, but with regards to the overall situation, it was a draw.

Slowly, there were fewer and fewer rank four Gu Masters in the main tent of both sides; they did not have enough to mobilize.

"Gu tribe leader, please show your strength now." Hei Lou Lan’s gaze landed on a man who was sitting upright.

Gu tribe leader Gu Guo Long was an earth path Gu Master who had once given huge trouble to Hei tribe army by piling stones into a mountain, and made Hei Lou Lan have the thought of retreating. But after Tai Bai Yun Sheng arrived, Hei tribe won and Gu tribe merged with Hei tribe army as the defeated side.

Gu Guo Long’s appearance shocked Ma tribe army.

This was the first appearance of a rank five expert, Ma Shang Feng immediately responded by sending Cheng tribe leader Cheng Long.

This person was a rank five expert of transformation path and was big brother of Cheng Hu.

Gu Guo Long bowed slightly upon seeing Cheng Long and politely said: "So it is Cheng tribe leader, please give me pointers."

Cheng Long chuckled: "I won’t dare to teach tribe leader Guo Long, let’s just compare our moves."

The two started their battle with such a huge momentum that it suppressed everyone and became the focal point of countless gazes.

Gu Guo Long could attack and defend with stable and unflustered movements. While Cheng Long flew freely in the sky, fierce and calm.

When the two had exchanged twenty moves, Hei Lou Lan sent another rank five expert Luo Bo Jun.

Luo Bo Jun had previously sided with Liu Wen Wu, but after Liu tribe lost against Hei tribe, he became one of the higher-ups of Hei tribe army.

Ma tribe also sent out a rank five expert to take on Luo Bo Jun.

With regards to rank five experts, Ma tribe was not inferior in any respect. Previously, Nu Er Tu annexed Tao tribe but was then defeated by Yang tribe who was then attacked by Ye Lui tribe; in the end, Ma tribe defeated Ye Lui tribe, becoming the final winner. From this battle, Ma tribe gained many large tribes - Qi Lian tribe, Cheng tribe, Zhao tribe, Lui tribe, Tao tribe, Yang tribe and other formidable forces.

At the same time, they also gained Jiang Bao Ya and Yang Po Ying, and together with Ma Zun, they had three enslavement path masters!

Rank five Gu Masters mostly occupied positions of power and prestige; their tone of speaking in the fight was much calmer and cordial in comparison to the boiling killing intent between the rank four Gu Masters. When they attacked, they would also hold back some of their strength in consideration of each other’s feelings.

Because if they died, their tribe would become a leaderless group and would be swallowed by Hei tribe or Ma tribe.

Although they were hostile to the enemy, their heart was still tied to their tribe’s benefits. Even if they were under the constraints of poison vow, there were tacit unwritten rules.

Fang Yuan calmly observed the battle from his seat.

He had only showed rank four peak stage cultivation, but as an enslavement master and a key character that could influence the whole situation, his position was special and was higher than those rank five tribe leaders.

"What a great move by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, a truly wonderful plan!" As he was personally participating in the struggle for Imperial Court, Fang Yuan truly felt more and more overwhelmed.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left built Eighty-Eight True Yang Building as an inheritance for his descendants and at the same time, also set up ’Imperial Court contest’ tradition; one could tell he had pondered about it meticulously.

Leaving aside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, just this struggle for Imperial Court was a field of purging at every stage with Huang Jin tribes swallowed other tribes and strengthening themselves.

At the same time, the gathering of goods developed the abnormally blooming battle merits economy during the battles. And through war reparations, technology and skills were exchanged, which further deepened the foundation of the Huang Jin family.

What was even more important was the survival of the fittest rule which forced Gu Masters to exert their strength at the edge of life and death and become experts. For Huang Jin tribes, this was filtering out the Gu Immortal seeds.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was no longer alive, but his influence was still governing the whole northern plains.

"Compared to the Immortal Venerable, I am only an ant like existence at present. But it was also because I took advantage of this struggle for the Imperial Court that my strength could advance by leaps and bounds..."

Fang Yuan then divided a little of his concentration to look into his aperture.

There were many new Gu worms in his aperture. Most were rank four with one rank three along with one rank five asura zombie Gu and one rank five earth overlord Gu.

Ever since Fang Yuan had gained inspiration from ’three heads six arms’ killer move, he had been combining his foundation and imagination to make some progress in his research.

He then condensed the research findings into a killer move which he called — Four Arm Earth King!

When he activates this killer move, a completely new pair of arms would grow out from his sides. His strength would increase sharply when he used all four of his arms, comparable to the killer move of Liu tribe’s three brothers’’three heads six arms’!

"But, compared to three arms six heads, my four arm earth king’s form can only be maintained for a short time. I will only be able to exert full strength when my feet is touching the land. If I fly, my battle strength will fall by half."

This killer move had been newly created by Fang Yuan and was still not perfected. He would need to examine this killer move through battles, add in some new Gu, replace unnecessary Gu or directly cut down on them, and slowly this killer move would be perfected.

The sun gradually rose higher, but with blizzard disaster approaching closer, the normally intense hot sunlight appeared to have no heat.

The surging battle intent on the battlefield gradually accumulated to the climax.

All sorts of attacks burst out in dozens of battle rings like colorful fireworks, creating an extremely dazzling scene.

There were only a few Gu Masters left in the Hei tribe’s main tent. The rest were either fighting, retreating, recovering or had died in the battlefield.

Considering the overall situation, Hei tribe was in a slightly weaker position.

Since the start till now, Hei Lou Lan had obtained Hei Bai and Hei Cheng, two immortals’ active support. While Ma tribe had only requested assistance from Xue Song Zi only at this battle.

"Hmph, Ma tribe’s bunch of trash can really take a beating!" Hei Lou Lan snorted with a fierce gaze as he started getting impatient.

His gaze landed on Fang Yuan and was just about to speak, when three beast groups rushed out of Ma tribe camp.

From the left side, many horses galloped on the earth, causing the ground to rumble like a muffled lightning!

From right side, countless rats rushed out while squeaking and hissing, so packed that it caused people to feel a chill down their spine.

From the center, eagle group soared up like dark clouds, actually looking like it could cover the sky!

Horse King Ma Zun, Rat King Jiang Bao Ya and Eagle King Yang Po Ying, these three enslavement path masters had moved at the same time.

Beast groups charged, immediately dispersing most of the battle rings.

Ma Shang Feng saw he was slightly winning in the experts challenging and wanted to rely on the dominance of their enslavement path masters to suppress Hei tribe army and change the unfavorable situation.

Facing the combined attack of three beast groups, Hei Lou Lan immediately tensed up and looked at Fang Yuan: "Wolf King, it is your turn now!"

Fang Yuan nodded and leisurely stood up from his seat.

He slowly strolled to the head of the twin-headed rhino and looked down at the three beast groups - all of them were fierce, powerful and were huge in size.

Either one of the three enslavement path masters were at the same level as him and were formidable opponents who would not lose to him in regards to enslavement path.

It was to the extent that the enslavement path Gu worms they had were much more comprehensive and superior to Fang Yuan’s wolf enslavement Gu worms.

Under the condition that he did not reveal his strength path battle strength, Fang Yuan would find it hard to fight against this group by himself. In the previous two rounds of battle, his wolf group had all along been pushed into disadvantage by the three beast groups and had suffered huge losses. Meanwhile, Ma tribe had relied on this advantage to make the beast groups cover their backs and thus they could safely retreat behind defense lines the previous two times.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan coldly laughed, his heart filled with soaring battle intent.

His enslavement path Gu worms were slightly weaker in comparison to these three enslavement path masters, but he had received huge support from Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals before the battle and his wolf group’s size had increased by over ten times.

These wolf groups were hidden within the army and by using some Gu worms, the enemy was unable to sense them.

"Wolf King! I am Yang Po Ying, do you dare to fight me?" In the sky, Yang Po Ying was riding on a huge eagle, his heroic aura shone and his posture was upright as if it was a battle spear that would charge to the sky.

He took the initiative to challenge in order to pin down Fang Yuan’s wolf group.

The eagle group could attack the wolf group from air, thus had a very advantageous position.

"Hahaha, Old Yang, go easy on brother Chang Shan Yin, after all he is an enslavement master like us. You need to give him some face." From the right, Rat King’s ridiculing laughter could be heard.

And on the left, among the horse group, Ma Zun who was not good at talking just groaned and charged forward. Around him were large number of Gu Master experts on war horses, guarding him.

Enslavement path masters could display extreme strength when they themselves were present in the battle while commanding their beast group.

The three masters braved the risks and led their beast group in the charge. This was akin to three heavy punches, if the Hei tribe army did not block it off properly even by a little, they could very well be knocked out, the whole situation could crumble apart and they would have to retreat powerlessly.

After all, a battlefield was filled with unpredictable variables. There were many examples of the weak winning against the strong. Let alone when Hei tribe was only occupying a slight dominance.

"Brother Shan Yin..." Hei Lou Lan could not help revealing a worried expression. Although the scale of the wolf group had increased sharply, beyond that of the three beast groups, he was worried Fang Yuan would not be able to control all of them properly. After all, Fang Yuan had never controlled such a large number of wolves.

If he was not able to control them properly and instead became confused, or even if he could control them, with Wolf King’s rank four peak stage primeval essence, how long could he hold on for?

Fang Yuan stood on the head of the twin-headed rhino, silent as his back faced Hei Lou Lan.

Looking at the three majestic beast groups charging and killing, pincer attacking from both sky and land, and were already approaching close, while Wolf King had yet to make any movement, Hei Lou Lan felt very anxious as he urged: "Brother Shan Yin, make your move quickly!"

Fang Yuan was still silent as if he did not hear it.

The three beast groups rushed over with great momentum and was less than two hundred steps away and looked like it would arrive in an instant; Hei tribe’s army was in an uproar and Hei Lou Lan urged even more anxiously: "Brother Chang Shan Yin!!"

Fang Yuan raised his head and laughed: "It is time! The enemy poured all their strength to pressure me with the beast groups, but they do not know that they have brought about their own demise. Alliance leader Lou Lan, I need to congratulate you."

"Congratulate me for what?"

"This battle has already been won, the die is cast, alliance leader becoming the Lord of Imperial Court is a foregone conclusion." Fang Yuan lightly said.

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes opened wide, he nearly shouted: ’The f*ck! Where are you getting this ridiculous sense of confidence from! Quick, mobilize your wolf group for me, the enemy is already near and you still have time to talk about such nonsense!?’

However, the very next moment, his eyes almost popped out like someone had struck the back of his eyes.

It was because he felt Fang Yuan’s aura having astonishing changes.

From rank four peak stage to rank five initial stage...

From rank five initial stage to rank five middle stage...

From rank five middle stage to rank five upper stage...

And from rank five upper stage to rank five peak stage!

Right now, Fang Yuan was slowly lifting the concealment of breath concealment Gu and did not suppress his true cultivation anymore.

Rank five peak stage, a genuine rank five peak stage!

Wolf King Chang Shan Yin was actually a rank five peak stage enslavement path master!

Hei Lou Lan was dumbstruck and dazed as he stared at Fang Yuan’s back view. The Gu Master guards nearby the main tent also looked with shocked and stunned gazes.

Under everyone’s gaze, Fang Yuan activated eagle rise Gu; large eagle wings gently raised him to the sky.

In the sky, he gave a long howl.

Rank five amplify effect Gu and wolf howl Gu!

The wolf howl resounded throughout the skies, directly suppressing all the sounds from the three beast groups.

Howl... howl... howl!

The wolves started howling one after another in response to Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan flew into the sky.

"Yang Po Ying, Jiang Bao Ya, Ma Zun, today is the day all of you die." He said plainly, his voice was loud and clear, reverbing in everyone’s ears.

Ma Zun: "..."

Jiang Bao Ya snorted: "Hmph, shameless words!"

"You are actually rank five peak stage, Chang Shan Yin, you truly hid your abilities well." Yang Po Ying said with a solemn expression, her eyes burning with fire: "But this ignites my battle intent! This kind of battle is truly interesting!"

But at the next moment, when the wolf group emerged, his battle intent froze.

Many.

So many.

Too many!

A sea of wild wolves surged like the waves of the sea, first was the initial wave, then the second, third... as if connecting heaven and earth, it was unceasing and near infinite!

Ma Zun was finally moved!

The eagle group’s movements halted as Yang Po Ying’s expression was stiff.

"Such a huge wolf group, oh heaven, five hundred thousand? Eight hundred thousand? No, at least a million!" Jiang Bao Ya was shell-shocked, his battle intent vanished without a trace: "Retreat, my rat group was only six hundred thousand at its peak. After so many battles, I have not replenished them yet, thus I have less than two hundred thousand now! This is my foundation, I cannot lose them, retreat, retreat, retreat, we have to run!"

Jiang Bao Ya was a demonic cultivator, he was extremely selfish, he immediately turned around and ran away with his rat group.

Three things influenced an enslavement path Gu Master’s strength. One was the size of their beast group, the second was the cooperation of the enslavement path Gu worms, and third was the foundation of the soul.

Fang Yuan’s soul foundation was at the same level as the three enslavement masters due to Dang Hun mountain.

His enslavement Gu worms, although weaker than the three of them, was only inferior by a bit.

But his wolf group had reached an incredible number of one million five hundred and sixty thousand!

In contrast, the three of them had suffered huge losses to their beast groups after consecutive battles, especially the last two huge battles. There were two hundred thousand rats, a hundred and eighty thousand eagles, and the most number of horses, at three hundred and sixty. But together, there were no more than seven hundred and forty thousand!

Seven hundred and forty thousand, it was merely half of the one million five hundred and sixty thousand wolves!

Moreover, could beast groups really be counted in such a simple additive manner?

It has been mentioned before — No!

Different beast groups when mixed together, unless there were techniques like three hearts combination soul used, would impede each other and cause more trouble than good.

Large numbers of wolves gushed out. Before, they were hiding in the crevices underground, while some were hidden by Gu worms, and others were inside carriages. Now they all showed up!

Even Ma Zun who rarely spoke shouted in shock: "How can there be so many wolves!?"

They were originally going in a three way pincer attack, to take advantage of Fang Yuan being alone. In the end, there were countless wolves, and Hei tribe's weakness because their greatest strength instead!

The Gu Master guards beside him shouted loudly: "Lord Ma Zun, quickly retreat, the enemy forces are overwhelming, we cannot fight them head-on!"

Ma Zun was not a hot-blooded teenager, he quickly manipulated the horse group and changed direction to retreat.

But horse group was different from rat group, rats were mostly small and could change directions easily. When the horses run, it was hard to stop.

Especially when Fang Yuan had purposely waited until the horses and rats came close to Hei tribe army, before mobilizing his wolf group, his intentions were truly sinister.

But Ma Zun was an enslavement master, he had great attainments. He had a good grasp of his horse group's condition, he carefully controlled them and the horse group drew an arc across the ground as they brushed past Hei tribe army, turning to the outside, attempting to break out of this situation.

However, how could Fang Yuan let such a big piece of fat meat fly away?

Ma Zun was an enslavement master, but so was he.

Willing in his mind, the mutated wolf group howled as they chased.

"Mutated wolf group? So many!" Ma Zun's Gu Master guards turned around and looked, their expressions turning pale.

Ma Zun had a mutated beast group with him, called pegasus group, but their numbers could not compare with the mutated wolf group chasing them.

Most of his troops were ordinary horses like terror claw horse, how could these horses run faster than mutated wolves?

Ma Zun controlled the horse group's direction in an attempt to shrug off the wolf group.

But the mutated wolf group split into two, engaging in a pincer attack as they finally intercepted the horse group.

Soon after, a grand number of ordinary wolves pounced and surrounded the horses tightly.

"A spectacular intercept, as expected of a master level!" Seeing this, Hei Lou Lan was overjoyed, finally putting his worries about Chang Shan Yin away.

On the other end, Rat King escaped with a group of mutated wolves chasing him with a sea of wolves behind them. As the slower rats were constantly eaten by the wolves behind, they were like a huge beast rampaging, sucking up all the rats ahead of them.

Fang Yuan took a look and stopped caring about Rat King, he turned his gaze up towards the sky.

The wolf group ran on the ground, while the eagle group soared in the sky, it was beyond the wolf group’s ability to deal with the eagle group.

Thus, among the three beast groups, even though the eagle group was weaker than the horse group, they were in a better position.

"Damn it, two beast groups have been targeted, the horse group is deep within encirclement, while Rat King ran away, only my group is left." Yang Po Ying felt a huge burden on his shoulders.

He knew that if he wanted to win this, the horse and rat groups were extremely precious battle strength, losses to either one would shrink Ma tribe’s hopes of victory greatly.

"The only one who can salvage this situation is me. I have to use the eagle group to attack aggressively, to divert most of Chang Shan Yin’s attention... eh?!"

Yang Po Ying was still thinking, when Fang Yuan controlled hundreds of thousand of wolves, charging and stomping towards Ma tribe’s main tent in a grand manner.

Yang Po Ying was stuck between two hard decisions!

"If we fought one on one, my wolf group would definitely suffer against your eagle group. But we are at war now, if my wolf group slaughters large numbers of Gu Masters, no, even if they just expend most of their primeval essence, it would be a great victory in terms of attrition. Yang Po Ying, what will you do?"

Fang Yuan’s eyes were calm as water, as the corners of his lips curled into a cold snicker.

Yang Po Ying thought rapidly in his head, but the more he thought about it, the colder his heart felt. Chang Shan Yin’s decision was truly sinister and evil, it was a fatal blow.

But after hesitating for a while, Yang Po Ying gritted his teeth and decided to restrain Wolf King.

This way, the central wolf group did not have to engage the eagle group, and successfully charged into Ma tribe’s army.

Ma Shang Feng’s expression was cold as steel, he quickly mobilized his remaining enslavement path Gu Masters and formed a temporary defensive line.

But the wolf group was huge, and there were mutated wolves as vanguard, such a defensive line was thin as paper, easily broken through.

"This was a huge mistake due to my decision making! But we have not lost, everyone, the situation is dire, we have to stake it all here! Fight with me, we still have trump cards!!" Ma Shang Feng shouted, as Xue Wa and the other rank five snowmen showed their true form. At the same time, an elite troop comprising purely snowmen was formed.

Seeing such reinforcements, Ma tribe army’s morale surged, they calmed down from the initial confusion, and rapidly shouted, fighting alongside Ma Shang Feng.

At once, wolves howled as blood splattered everywhere.

First was the central army, followed by Ma tribe’s left and right troops, as the Gu Master starting their advancement.

Hei Lou Lan laughed heartily as he waved his hand, several elite troops of his started to move out. All the respective tribe leaders also led their tribesmen into the battlefield.

The two armies engaged in all-out combat.

Beast groups, humans, entangled together. Fire path, ice path, dark path, light path, all sorts of Gu Masters fought valiantly.

Experts laughed loudly as they slaughtered their enemies. While weaklings helped each other, forming groups as they resisted with their lives, fighting for a chance of survival.

The eagle group shrieked as they attacked Fang Yuan.

But beside Fang Yuan, there were Hei Lou Lan’s personal guards, as well as Ye Lui Sang, Hao Ji Liu, Bian Si Xuan, Pan Ping and other experts, forming a tight defense.

The eagle group’s attack was ineffective, while Fang Yuan used wolf care Gu to bypass his weakness of vision, allowing him to mobilize the wolf group to attack, slaughtering horses, rats, and people.

"We have urgent matters, Wu Ye, you guys go and restrain the experts near Chang Shan Yin!" On the eagle’s back, Yang Po Ying was sweating profusely as he ordered.

Wu Ye was called Green Bat, one of the three flying masters in northern plains.

Among the three original flying masters, Flying Lightning Dong Po Kong was part of Dong Fang tribe, having returned to the blessed land. Water Fairy Song Qing Yin had died in battle already.

Only Green Bat Wu Ye was left, recruited by Ma tribe. He was especially left behind to deal with the new flying master Chang Shan Yin.

Wu Ye heard this and frowned: "If we strike, and the other party attacks, what will happen to your safety?"

Yang Po Ying laughed arrogantly: "I have the protection of the thunder eagles, I am extremely safe. Not even Hei Lou Lan can break my thunder eagles’ defense instantly. Don’t worry and go, don’t forget our assassin Wu Ming!"

Wu Ye heard this and their hearts shook.

These people with flying abilities rushed out, causing Hei Lou Lan and the others’ pressure to intensify when defending.

"Careful, they are trying to disturb us, don’t step out easily. Don’t forget that they have Wu Ming!" Hei Lou Lan snorted as he attacked, instructing his men.

Qi Lian tribe leader’s godson Wu Ming, was a rank five dark path Gu Master. Ye Lui Sang could defeat the seven army alliance because he had assassinated many of their enemy’s leaders, causing them to feel fear and a drop in morale.

After that, Wu Ming’s performance was spectacular, a good number of rank five Gu Masters died in his hands, including even more rank four Gu masters.

He was hailed as the number one assassin in the current world, his reputation had greatly surpassed Shadow Sword Expert Bian Si Xuan.

Right now, he had not shown up yet, who knew which part of the battlefield he was lurking in.

Hei Lou Lan did not dare to be careless.

Once Wu Ming succeeds in assassinating Fang Yuan, the wolf group was collapse and the situation would reverse immediately.

"Charge, charge over and kill Wolf King Chang Shan Yin!" Not just Hei Lou Lan, Yang Po Ying and Ma tribe’s experts also rapidly understood the crux of this battle.

At once, large numbers of Gu Master experts charged towards Hei tribe main camp.

"I will give five million battle merits to whoever kills Chang Shan Yin! He will be given the position of Ma tribe’s supreme elder, and will enjoy Ma tribe’s resources for life!" Ma Shang Feng fought and killed the wolves as he shouted loudly.

Such huge rewards naturally attracted many Gu Master experts, causing their eyes to turn red and their spears to point at Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Very soon, Hei Lou Lan and the rest started to feel a pressure as heavy as a mountain!

"Not good, the enemy has gone crazy, we won’t be able to hold on for long!"

"Black banner troops, come over to reinforce us quick!!"

"Pei Yan Fei, Zhong Fei You, Tang Miao Ming, you guys also come over to protect Wolf King!"

"We cannot continue to defend passively like this, we need to take the initiative to attack. Otherwise, the residual force of the battle will still endanger Wolf King!!"

Ma tribe was absolutely not resigned to losing.

If they lost, they would be completely finished!

They began to stake their lives, the heavy rewards alluring them to brave dangers. The situation quickly escaped out of Hei Lou Lan’s control and the battlefield soon changed into attacking and defending Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s safety and danger directly concerned the result of this battle.

The enemy rank four Gu Masters and rank five Gu Masters all rushed over, creating a huge chaotic scene.

This was a majestic spectacle that was rarely seen in the former Imperial Court contests.

In the battle rings, rank four Gu Masters were already reduced to a supporting role. Even rank five experts could not act freely and were in a risky situation.

Hei Lou Lan, Ye Lui Sang and others had still been paying some attention to Wolf King at first. But soon, they were finding it difficult to protect themselves, surrounding them were flames, ice and snow, sound waves and all sorts of attacks that flew chaotically among the battle rings. The enemy did not remain in a fixed place, fighting anyone they met. There were times they even attacked their own people.

The number one assassin Wu Ming stood at a distant, helplessly looking at the giant chaotic battle ring.

He was an assassin, an expert at getting close while hiding before striking the fatal attack.

But right now, the battleground had become so chaotic with all Gu Masters attacking madly, all kinds of investigative Gu worms scanning around, and Gu Masters killing anybody they came across. The situation was already out of control, the offense too overwhelming, and some rank four Gu Masters had already become hysterical to protect themselves.

Wu Ming was doubtful, if he entered stealthily, he might be discovered within a few breaths of time. It might even be his own people who might attack him in the heat of the moment!

"Even if I don’t make a move, Wolf King will find it hard to keep his life in such a situation!" Wu Ming smiled coldly and kept on watching the show.

Soon, his eyes brightened and saw a rank four Gu Master of his side moving towards Wolf King from the side.

"Cheng Hu!" When he saw the person clearly, Wu Ming almost shouted in excitement.

Someone had struck Cheng Hu from behind and sent him flying towards Fang Yuan.

Previously, Fang Yuan had Bian Si Xuan guarding him from the side.

But just moments ago, Bian Si Xuan had taken the initiative to draw away the encroaching Fei Sheng Cheng. She was not a defensive Gu Master and also did not have any intention to sacrifice her life for Fang Yuan, thus she felt that was the most sensible choice.

"Which scoundrel sneak attacked me!" Cheng Hu fell on the ground and immediately stood up, furiously roaring before turning around and charging towards the direction he came from.

"This?!" Wu Ming did not know what to say at this scene.

However, Cheng Hu had only walked five-six steps when suddenly he seemed to have been struck by a body immobilization spell as he stopped on the spot. He furiously turned around and rigidly stared at Fang Yuan who was within his reach.

After few breaths of being dazed, he finally came back to his senses.

"The guys who sneak attacked me, I really love you!! Hahaha!" Cheng Hu’s pores opened up in excitement and looked at Fang Yuan like he was looking at five million battle merits and endless fame and fortune!

Grrr!

He pounced forward, his limbs instantly transformed into a gorgeous tiger the moment he landed.

Transformation path killer move!

Slant-eye tiger roared, a reeking wind pounced towards Fang Yuan.

"Damn it! Hide quickly!" Bian Si Xuan glanced back and involuntarily screamed.

"Success!!" Wu Ming felt his blood pumping and his body shivering with excitement.

The tiger opened its bloody mouth, leaped to the air and pounced down! The huge shadow shrouded over Fang Yuan’s face. The tiger’s sharp teeth was almost closing at his head!

"I had not thought such a heaven-shaking contribution will fall to my hands... huh?!" The tiger’s eyes suddenly flashed with a shocked look.

A pair of large hands grabbed the tiger’s neck, immobilizing it!

"Hmph!" Cheng Hu snorted inwardly, his many years of battle experience and insight allowed him to quickly slash with his two sharp claws.

Thud.

A muffled sound echoed, the next moment, the two tiger claws were separately grabbed by two metallic hands.

’Where did these hands come from?’ Cheng Hu gazed with bewilderment and saw Fang Yuan’s cold gaze and tranquil-as-ice face, and two bronze arms that had grown from his sides since some unknown time ago!

The two bronze hands firmly grabbed Cheng Hu’s tiger claws.

"Hmph!" Cheng Hu snorted and immediately used his tail as well. The tail lashed through the air, forming a fierce whip shadow that was agile and tricky as it smashed towards Fang Yuan’s head.

SLAM!

A clear sound echoed. There was not the slightest of injuries on Fang Yuan’s head, but instead it was the tiger tail that had turned numb from the pain and lost its control.

Cheng Hu had a killer move, Fang Yuan similarly possessed a killer move.

Killer move — Four Arm Earth King!

There were no less than fourteen Gu worms used for this killer move, including rank five amplify effect Gu!

In such a state, Fang Yuan’s defense had increased by over four times. His strength reaching eight hundred jun! Moreover, when he was touching the ground, his strength would keep on increasing without end.

"Have you played enough?" Fang Yuan gave a cold smile, looking calmly at Cheng Hu, his gaze carrying a ridiculing and cold intent.

An intense coldness rose from Cheng Hu’s heart before quickly spreading over his whole body.

Fear!

Even if Cheng Hu was usually carefree and took his bravery as an honor, right now as he looked at Fang Yuan’s dark and cold eyes, he felt fear!

The intense fear caused him to erupt with strength!

The tiger moved its throat, preparing a sound wave attack.

However, at this moment, Fang Yuan gave a soft sigh.

"Such a boring trick... sigh, it is better for you to die."

His voice was tranquil and light, as if he was talking of an insignificant thing.

PSHHH!

The next moment, the bronze hands exerted strength and pulled.

The gorgeous tiger was ripped into two halves, fresh blood splattered and internal organs fell down to the ground.

Two irregular tiger part fell down to the ground and transformed back to two halves of a human.

And the tiger head turned back to Cheng Hu’s head; his eyes were wide open in fear, completely revealing the fear of death!

Fang Yuan grabbed Cheng Hu’s skull and slowly raised his head, his gaze traversing through everyone and landed on Yang Po Ying.

The hair all over Yang Po Ying’s body stood on their end, an intense sense of danger was rising in his heart!

Fang Yuan flapped his eagle wings and flew to the sky!

Yang Po Ying’s pupils shrunk, immediately mobilizing the thunder eagle group to protect him.

Fang Yuan smiled in disdain: Do you think you can block me with just these beasts with rank four battle strength?

Hehe.

Bam Bam Bam....

He directly charged straight ahead, the thunder eagles in his way were forcefully smashed into pieces.

By the time the Gu Masters in the chaotic battlefield reacted, Fang Yuan had already charged through the thunder eagle group like a hot knife cutting through butter and reached Yang Po Ying.

"You!" Yang Po Ying’s face lost all blood as he looked at Fang Yuan with extreme fear.

Fang Yuan lifted him by his head, his whole body not even able to resist the slightest bit.

Fang Yuan lightly clenched his hand.

Crack!

Fang Yuan burst Eagle King Yang Po Ying’s head as easily as bursting a watermelon.

Blood and brain matter splattered, and the eagle group instantly crumbled apart.

The eagle group flew away back to the sunny sky.

The enormous commotion attracted countless people.

"What? Wolf King personally killed Eagle King?!" A lot of people shouted incredulously at this sight.

"Now, it is your turn." Fang Yuan did not stop, his cold gaze landing on Ma Zun.

They were separated by ten thousand steps of distance and he was protected by the majestic horse group, but Ma Zun still felt a terror as if a calamity was descending upon him.

"Block him!"

"Kill Wolf King!!"

Wu Ye and Xi Xue flew together and pincer attacked Fang Yuan.

"A bunch of trash wants to block me?" Fang Yuan snorted in disdain, he flapped his two wings and easily shook away Xi Xue, directly charging towards Wu Ye.

"This..." Wu Ye had never expected Fang Yuan to be so violent! He overestimated his own defense while also underestimating Fang Yuan’s fierce offensive.

The defensive light barrier only held for half a breath of time before collapsing apart. Wu Ye immediately sensed danger and with his master level flying skill, he was able to make a dodging movement which others simply could not do.

If it were others, they might only be able to let him escape, but Fang Yuan was similarly a flying master!

Bang!

A dull sound echoed, half of Wu Ye’s body was smashed into paste with bones fracturing into pieces and internal organs of half his body bursting apart.

His eyes were wide open as he fell down from the sky.

A generation’s flying master, a demonic path expert had perished!

Fang Yuan moved on towards Ma Zun without even glancing at Wu Ye.

ROAR!

A dragon roar echoed like a thunder, and an enormous dragon blocked Fang Yuan’s way.

This giant dragon had golden horn, three claws and dragon eyes which were burning like lanterns, revealing the flames of revenge: "Chang Shan Yin! you dared to kill my younger brother, you shall pay the most bitter price for this!"

This person was a rank five expert of transformation path, Cheng Hu’s big brother — Cheng Long!

"Noisy earthworm." Fang Yuan snorted and increased his speed, leaving behind an afterimage in the air as he fiercely smashed into the giant dragon.

BOOM!

The explosive sound of the collision was deafening.

The sound wave spread to all directions, resounding through the sky and earth.

Hearts trembled as countless gazes fixed at the distant, looking at Fang Yuan whose body had inflated by two times and was covered in a bronze luster, his four arms thicker than a grown man’s thighs.

He stood proudly in the air, grabbing a broken dragon horn.

While the three clawed golden giant dragon fell down to the ground like a puppet with its strings cut. It fiercely smashed into the ground, creating a giant pit with dragon blood and dragon scales splattering all around.

"What?" Ma Shang Feng’s pupils rapidly shrunk as he blurted out involuntarily, not daring to believe the reality, "Even Cheng Long could not take one move from him!"

"This killer move..." Hei Lou Lan absentmindedly looked at Fang Yuan, seeing the reflection of Liu tribe’s three brothers’’three heads six arms’ killer move.

"Ma Zun, I, Wolf King, will take your life." Fang Yuan lightly said, his voice travelling across the battlefield, his calm tone was like he was once again speaking of insignificant matter.

But to everyone else, his words had a feeling of being unrivalled!

"Uncle Ma Zun, leave quickly. I will block him!" Ma tribe’s young tribe leader Ma Ying Jie shouted from Ma Zun’s side.

The other Gu Master guards also started persuading: "Wolf King is very fierce, we cannot face him head-on. Lord and young tribe leader, please leave, we will hold him back!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

People all around Ma Zun kept on persuading strongly; Ma Zun’s expression was ashen as he resolutely refused: "No, my Ma tribe only has warriors who will fight to death, not cowards who will run away. I am a symbol of Ma tribe, it will be a heavy impact to our army’s morale if I run away! I cannot leave, we have yet to lose, I still have my pegasus group!"

With a shift of his mind, the pegasus flew into the air like clouds.

These grand beasts had snow-white fur, their mane fluttered in the wind as they unfolded their pure white wings.

These pegasus were Ma tribe’s pride.

A grand feeling emerged in Ma tribesmen’s hearts as they looked at these pegasus, the feelings of fear quickly calmed down.

"Right, we still have pegasus.... ah!?" Ma Ying Jie was speaking, when suddenly he exclaimed in shock and terror!

Fang Yuan was shooting towards them like a meteor, fiercely crashing through the pegasus group without any intent to dodge.

The pegasus which had rank four battle strength were smashed through, their blood spurting high.

The horse group neighed in panic, their pure white feathers helplessly drifted in the air as their corpse fell down to the ground.

Fang Yuan moved straight through pegasus group and reached above Ma Zun and the group with none able to block him!

Ma Zun was stunned, the Gu Masters beside opened their mouth wide as they looked at Fang Yuan, their heart filled with extreme shock, helplessness and fear.

Fang Yuan’s ghostly figure deeply imprinted itself in the depths of their heart, never to be forgotten!

"No, I have not lost yet!" Ma Zun freaked out and was about to use his killer move when he was blocked by Ma Ying Jie.

"Uncle, let me do it. Once you use this killer move, your cultivation will fall. Ma tribe can lose me, but it can never lose you!" Ma Ying Jie shouted, his gaze filled with determination.

"Ying Jie!" Ma Zun’s body shook, he looked at this junior whom he appreciated and was most hopeful about, and felt his will to fight to the death.

Ma Zun did not want his nephew to sacrifice for him.

But just like Ma Ying Jie said, Ma tribe could lose Ma Ying Jie, but it needed him, Ma Zun, to command horse group. The eagle group had crumbled apart now and the rat group could not be counted on, if they lose the horse group as well, Ma tribe’s defeat will be certain!

"Also, my death is not certain. Uncle, leave quickly!" Ma Ying Jie turned solemn, mobilizing his primeval essence into several Gu worms.

Killer move — Dragon Horse Spirit!

This was a killer move that was specially prepared for them by Snowy Mountain’s demonic path Gu Immortal Xue Song Zi.

Neighhh Neighhh...

Many horses beside Ma Ying Jie raised their front legs and gave desperate and crazy neighs.

Large amount of blood seeped out of their body; they fell down one after another as they lost their life.

But at the same time, diverse and gorgeous horse souls resembling rainbows pierced out of the corpses.

"Mutated horse souls..." Fang Yuan’s pupils slightly shrunk.

Normal souls were simply impossible to be detected by ordinary people.

But these horse souls had a pair of coral-like dragon horns on their head and were also of every size, as if they were alive, and they also shone with all kinds of colors; only the blind would not be able to see them.

Dragon horses floated up and charged towards Fang Yuan in a very fast speed.

Fang Yuan flew away, pulling apart some distance while also making probing attacks.

These horse souls were troublesome because they were souls. Ordinary physical attacks had no effect on them. At the same time, their self-destruction had the power equal to the soul explosion of the previous shark fin wolf!

Fang Yuan’s killer move was strong, but it was not a soul path killer move; if three horse souls self-destructed at the same time, he would not be able to endure it.

After all, his soul cultivation was still at thousand man soul.

"But why would I face you head-on?" Fang Yuan scoffed and slowly landed on the ground.

He was not simply a pure strength path Gu Master, he still had enslavement path methods.

Next moment, wolf smoke surged and healed the wolves beside him. Wolf howl resounded raising the wolves’ battle strength by several times.

The wolves then charged towards Ma Ying Jie and Ma Zun like hungry sharks.

"Damn it!" Ma Ying Jie immediately experienced Fang Yuan’s insidiousness and unscrupulousness!

He had sacrificed large numbers of horses beside him to form into mutated horse souls for the killer move ’dragon horse spirit’.

But Fang Yuan did not face his horse souls, instead sending his wolf group to death.

The wolves used their lives to wear down the horse souls’ strength, and the mutated horse souls started becoming dimmer as they defended against the wolf group’s fierce attacks; some dispersed and some self-destructed.

Large numbers of wolves died in exchange for a sharp reduction of the horse souls.

Fang Yuan was displaying the essence of the enslavement path to the extreme.

Enslavement path Gu Masters used cannon fodder to exhaust the enemy’s precious strength. For example, consuming their primeval essence, and right now, it was to perish along with the horse souls.

Ma Ying Jie could do nothing to Fang Yuan!

Mutated horse souls were strong, but after slaughtering so many wolves in such a short period of time, they were now powerless to be of any threat to Fang Yuan.

"Uncle, leave! You are our Ma tribe’s hope, leave quickly!" Ma Ying Jie shouted, persuading Ma Zun to leave again.

Ma Zun’s cheeks streamed with tears, his heart filled with pain, hatred, anger and hesitation.

He gritted his teeth to the point of almost breaking them, but in the end, under the urging of his rationality, he slowly moved his body and led a group of horses, leaving Ma Ying Jie and retreating towards Ma tribe camp.

"Hmm?" Fang Yuan immediately sensed Ma Zun’s movement.

Ma Zun was an enslavement path master, hundred times more significant than Ma Ying Jie! Fang Yuan immediately flapped his wings and flew to the sky. He gave up on Ma Ying Jie and began to chase Ma Zun.

"Wolf King, don’t leave!" Ma Ying Jie hurriedly mobilized horse souls to fly into the sky to intercept Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan coldly smiled in disdain and made an exquisite turn in the air, throwing all the horse souls behind him.

He was a flying master while these mutated horse souls were no more than Ma Ying Jie’s puppets.

Looking at Fang Yuan rushing towards them with killing intent, the Gu Master guards beside Ma Zun immediately became fearful.

With no choice, Ma Zun also used the killer move ’dragon horse spirit’!

Under his control, mutated horse souls formed into a tight defense line; their might was much more than what Ma Ying Jie showed.

Even if Fang Yuan had flying master achievement, it would be difficult for him to break through.

ROAR!

A dragon roar resonated at this moment.

An enormous shadow shrouded over Fang Yuan.

The three clawed, golden horn giant dragon once again charged at Fang Yuan!

Cheng Long had been defeated in one move by Fang Yuan and had fallen down to the ground miserably. He had barely crawled out of the hole when he was attacked by several enemies, and after spending all his strength to thwart and beat away these obstacles, he chased after Fang Yuan in rage, to take revenge.

"You actually came to send yourself to death." Fang Yuan coldly smiled, not in the least moved as he looked at the dragon claws that were rapidly approaching him with an invincible might.

The eagle wings on his back flapped and he easily brushed past the dragon claws.

Relying on his exquisite flying skill, he made the giant dragon go circles around him.

"Not good, I am not Wolf King’s match in the air!" Cheng Long soon realized his disadvantage, but it was already late.

Fang Yuan grabbed this gap to fly to the dragon head.

His two bronze arms ruthlessly pounded on the the two eyes of the giant dragon like a battle spear or a sharp sword.

The dragon eyes burst and blood splashed in all directions.

The giant dragon immediately went mad, roaring miserably due to the intense pain.

Fang Yuan was splashed all over with scarlet blood, but he did not stop, he gave a sinister smile and continued piercing deep into the eyes with his two hands, directly attacking the brain membrane. While his other two hands smashed at the dragon head like a heavy hammer.

BANG BANG BANG!

Huge sounds echoed out again and again as Fang Yuan continued to hammer at the dragon head like pounding on a war drum.

The giant dragon started falling down, it struggled with mad fervor and its long tail twisted into a braid.

Stones and mud flew, and the dragon tail lashed out, sending both humans and beasts flying.

Fang Yuan did not stop his attack, he continued to pound for twenty to thirty times and was finally satisfied when the dragon head was thoroughly smashed into pieces.

White brain matter and blood spurted upon his whole body.

He took a deep breath, the intense odor of blood instead making him feel satisfied! Especially when he looked silently at this giant dragon corpse that he had conquered.

"Man, no matter which world they live in, all lives to conquer; conquer the enemy, conquer themselves..." Fang Yuan sighed with emotion.

Although the dragon had already died, the dragon corpse had not transformed back, one could see how profound Cheng Long’s achievement in transformation path was.

"His head was quite tough, but he was no more than an impulsive fool." Fang Yuan lightly commented before looking towards Ma Zun again.

"He... he even killed Cheng Long!"

"Is this still Wolf King? Wasn’t he an enslavement path master?!"

The scene of Fang Yuan stepping on the corpse shocked many.

Most of them simply did not dare to believe their own eyes.

How could Wolf King change from an enslavement path master into such a fierce warrior that rampaged in the battlefield?

Meanwhile, the wolf group howled and charged waves after waves without any pause, showing Fang Yuan’s exquisite beast controlling skill.

Ma Zun’s face was pale, his primeval essence was gradually exhausted as he kept on maintaining the killer move ’dragon horse spirit’.

The mutated horse souls had formed a tight defensive battle formation; the wolf group throwing their lives as they charged forward waves after waves.

Fang Yuan remained unmoved at these sacrifices, only sneering inwardly: ’Now, let me show you the true power of dual cultivation in enslavement and strength path.’

With a shift of his mind, the wolf group immediately changed their offensive pattern, dividing into several groups and breaking forward like sharp cones. The mutated souls’ battle formation was unavoidably pulled apart.

As the defensive line became thinly spread, Fang Yuan took the initiative to launch an assault.

Ma Zun felt a chill in his heart and promptly maneuvered the mutated horse souls to intercept Fang Yuan, but this caused the defensive line to turn chaotic.

Fang Yuan laughed and changed the direction of his assault while making the wolf group charge ahead by three hundred steps.

Ma Zun blocked left and right, soon being unable to hold off the attacks.

If he guarded against Fang Yuan’s assault, the wolf group would be free to charge forward. If he defend against the wolf group, he would not be able to guard against Fang Yuan.

After several rounds, Fang Yuan saw a gap and fiercely charged towards Ma Zun. The first strike broke Ma Zun’s defensive barrier, the second punch seriously injured Ma Zun and the third punch killed this famous enslavement path master!

Ma Zun died!

The horse group crumbled apart and Ma tribe’s army’s morale lowered to the abyss!

"If I had not seen it personally, I would never have believed this!"

"Horse King actually died by enslavement path master Wolf King’s beheading the leader tactic!!"

"Wolf King concealed himself too deeply, he actually cultivated both enslavement and strength path. He simply does not need to fear beheading the leader tactics, how can we deal with such an enslavement path master?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The terrifying strength Fang Yuan displayed inflicted heavy pressure on everyone in Ma tribe army.

Despair was quickly spreading in their heart!

"Now, we can only rely on Rat King, only the rat group can contend against the wolf group!" Ma Shang Feng’s face was ashen, Ma Zun’s death made him feel like he had fallen into an ice cave. But he was Ma tribe leader, and under this desperation, he looked towards Jiang Bao Ya’s direction.

However, the next moment, the only hope left in Ma Shang Feng’s eyes was also obliterated.

Rat King had actually fled!

"Heavens, this Wolf King is a monster! Eagle King, Horse King, Cheng Long, Cheng Hu and Wu Ye were all killed by him, will I be able to survive if I don’t run away now?"

Blood flowed out of all seven facial orifices of Jiang Bao Ya as he ran away.

He could not do anything about this, he had sworn the poison vow when he joined Ma tribe army. Now that he was deserting in the battle, he naturally suffered the backlash of the poison vow.

But Jiang Bao Ya wanted to retreat even if he had to risk the backlash!

Fang Yuan’s terrifying performance had already completely obliterated all will to battle in his heart.

"Rat King, return right now!!" Ma Shang Feng shouted.

But Jiang Bao Ya ignored him and ran madly.

The blood from his seven facial orifices was dying the path, showing his determination to run!

His fleeing attracted the people around him and soon, a large number of Ma tribe Gu Masters began to retreat with large number of tribes gathering their forces as they retreated from the battlefield.

"One really shouldn’t rely on outsiders!" Ma Shang Feng spurted out a large mouthful of blood before he blacked out and fainted.

Ma tribe army was utterly crushed, the situation was set!

Despite having the snowman elite troops, they could not turn around the situation.

Gu Master experts also started to retreat one after another.

’I almost had to break my seal and use my true martial physique to fight. Luckily! Luckily!’ In a battle ring, Hei Lou Lan who had been attacked from all around, was gasping, his body full of injuries and his primeval essence heavily depleted, but the ominous glint in his eyes was becoming colder and sharper.

Under his order, Hei tribe army began a ruthless hunt.

The more they killed, the more battle merits they would obtain. Even a fool understood this.

Fame and fortune incited Hei tribe army to be like brutal famished wolves.

At first, the elite troops were covering Ma tribe’s retreat, but soon Hei tribe’s elite troops rushed to them and pinned them down. Ma tribe army had thoroughly collapsed and countless people were escaping to all directions.

Fang Yuan did not move, instead calling the wolf group to protect him.

"Heavy internal bleeding, soul has been weakened to five hundred man soul..." Fang Yuan inspected his body, swallowing the blood in his mouth as waves after waves of dizziness attacked him.

His two bronze arms quietly disappeared. The repercussions of four arm earth king killer move was much more serious than what he had expected.

"The several experiments before only scratched the surface. Now that I used it to its extreme, even going beyond the theorised time limit, a problem has occured. Sure enough, genuine knowledge comes from practice."

Killer move was an exquisite coordination between Gu worms.

But a killer move was not perfected by just planning it.

Only by putting it into practice and revising it continuously, could the killer move be perfected. And this process to perfect it could last a very long time, lasting generations and even over ten generations of continuous deductions and adjustments.

Four arm earth king was a result of Fang Yuan using his five hundred years of experience along with a moment of inspiration. It was made in a hurry and was still in experimental phase.

Fang Yuan was soon able to understand what caused such heavy repercussions.

"It is the rank five earth overlord Gu. This killer move was originally based on ground fight, the longer one is touching the ground, the lighter the repercussions. But I was flying almost all the time in this battle. Thus, this problem was exposed."

"It seems four arm earth king killer move has a lot of shortcomings. From this battle, I can see flying is much more convenient than charging crash Gu, and possesses much higher threat to enemies. Since I have master level attainment in flying, I should make full use of this superiority."

He was not willing to give up flying, so the four arm earth king killer move had to be greatly altered.

Fang Yuan sat on the aged night wolf emperor, quietly pondering while looking at the wanton slaughtering by Hei tribe army.

"Damn it... still vigilant, not giving me even a little chance!" Assassin Wu Ming was hiding in a distant while observing Fang Yuan.

He had been thinking of taking advantage of Wolf King’s negligence after the battles, to sneak attack him.

If he succeeded and killed Wolf King, Ma tribe would still have a chance to regroup and make a comeback.

But Fang Yuan did not give him any opportunity, almost as if he saw through his plan.

Wu Ming waited for a while more, but because of Hei tribe experts moving about more frequently nearby, he could not endure anymore and quietly retreated.

Ma tribe was fleeing in defeat, and while they were fleeing, Ma tribe leader Ma Shang Feng woke up.

He was still not resigned and after they fled to the defense line, he tried to hold on by relying on the defense line.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s mountain as before Gu wrecked his plan. Hei tribe army broke through the defense line, Pan Ping used his sole blade Gu and luckily managed to get Ma Shang Feng’s head in the chaotic battle.

With Ma tribe leader’s death, Ma tribesmen no longer had the will to battle.

Tao tribe, Yang tribe and Qi Lian tribe surrendered one after another. The surrendering process unavoidably attracted most of Hei tribe’s attention.

"Move faster, faster, faster!" Zhao Lian Yun was urging from inside the carriage.

Fei Cai was taking the coachman position and used all his strength to lash at the horse, the carriage’s two wheels moved at a rapid speed.

Fei Cai was Ma Ying Jie’s head servant and being in charge of Ma tribe’s young tribe leader’s everyday life, he naturally had to accompany Ma Ying Jie to the battle. Zhao Lian Yun was homeless and so could only follow behind him.

Ma tribe was defeated, these two and other mortals also fled for their lives.

However, just relying on the horsepower, the carriage’s speed simply could not surpass a Gu Master. While they escaped, they were thrown far behind by Gu Masters.

But because Fei Cai and Zhao Lian Yun were mortals, the army chasing after Ma tribe army let them go.

The battle merits in killing mortals were next to nothing.

Of course, if they encountered Gu Masters in a bad mood or those who liked to kill or wolves who did not care if they were mortals, just one or two casual moves from either of these could send them to their grave.

However, Fei Cai and Zhao Lian Yun’s luck were really good, not only did they not encounter such situation, they were actually able to smoothly escape out of the battlefield under countless Gu Masters’ eyes.

The two put in all their efforts in escaping.

The old horse pulling the carriage foamed in exhaustion and finally fell on the grassland.

The carriage overturned soon after and broke apart.

Fei Cai and Zhao Lian Yun broke out of the broken carriage in a miserable state. Although they were injured, it was not serious because of the soft grassland.

"Now where should we go?" Fei Cai was indecisive; they were in a vast land without any soldiers or Gu Masters chasing them.

Zhao Lian Yun panted heavily without replying, she was also feeling flustered and helpless.

’Wolf King Chang Shan Yin... there is actually such a terrifying monster in this world! Damn it, if I had known you were this fierce, why would I persuade father to travel so far to side with Ma tribe?’

As she thought of Fang Yuan’s terrifying figure rampaging in the midst of innumerable troops, Zhao Lian Yun’s body and mind trembled.

Remembering her father who had died in the battlefield, their current homeless situation and the ruthlessness of fate, Zhao Lian Yun began to weep in grief.

"Xiao Yun, don’t cry, don’t cry, don’t worry, I am still here." Fei Cai immediately comforted her.

Zhao Lian Yun buried her head in her knees and cried even louder.

Fei Cai panicked as he comforted and apologizes repeatedly, cutting out a very clumsy figure.

Zhao Lian Yun cried for a while, then suddenly raised her head: "What’s the use of your apology! I am really miserable, how could I come to such a world! Now our situation is desperate with nothing to eat or even drink. At night, the bloody odor on the battlefield will attract groups after groups of beasts to forage. Sooner or later, we will starve to death, die of thirst or even freeze to death."

"Eh? Then, then what should we do?" Fei Cai looked at Zhao Lian Yun with an expression that was seeking help.

Zhao Lian Yun rolled her eyes and furiously shouted: "You are really trash! You are older than me, can’t you think of something! You want me to think of everything, do you think I am Dong Fang Yu Liang?!"

Fei Cai lowered his head after being scolded, only daring to look at his feet.

Suddenly, he raised his head with bright eyes: "I, I have thought of a good way."

"Ah? What way?" Zhao Lian Yun raised her brows in amazement, this fool had actually thought of a way?

"I feel that as long as we have a horse, we can escape far away from the battlefield. With no odor of blood, we will be able to avoid the beasts."

Zhao Lian Yun fiercely kicked Fei Cai: "Do you think I don’t know?! You fool, you big idiot! What good method is this? I also want a horse, where will you get me one?"

Fei Cai jumped in pain from Zhao Lian Yun’s kick.

Suddenly, he pointed ahead and shouted: "Look, there is a horse."

Zhao Lian Yun turned around to look and was stupefied, blurting out: "The fuc... there really is a horse!"

But she quickly reacted: "There are no lack of horses in northern plains, but what we lack is the method to capture and tame it. Fei Cai, do you have any method?"

Fei Cai exclaimed, his hand still pointing ahead as he shouted: "Look, there is a person on the horse!"

Zhao Lian Yun concentrated, there really was a person.

As the horse neared the two, Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes suddenly opened wide because of the identity of the injured person on the horse’s back: "Ma Ying Jie!"

...

"Congratulations brother, congratulations. Hei tribe has won this battle, even if Ma tribe gets support from Gu Immortals, they cannot reverse the situation." Hei Bai who had been observing the battle all along, saw Hei tribe was already beginning to clear up the battlefield through investigative Gu, and impatiently congratulated Hei Cheng who was beside him.

Hei Cheng lightly smiled: "Congratulations to you too. Hei Lou Lan, this kid did not betray our expectations. Ah, right, the demonic path Gu Immortal who supported Ma tribe has been discovered, it is Xue Song Zi of Snowy Mountain’s sixth peak."

Hei Bai’s expression immediately turned heavy: "Hmph, so it was him. If not for him meddling and fighting with me over wooden chicken Gu, the Immortal Gu would not have escaped the bindings, and I would have already been in possession of wooden chicken Gu."

Hei Cheng comforted him with a smile: "Brother, no need to worry, it will be the same thing if we can obtain wooden chicken Gu with the help of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. This is called: the road to happiness is strewn with setbacks. Once you obtain wooden chicken Gu, you will become an expert among Gu Immortals immediately."

"I don’t deserve such praise!" Hei Bai immediately bowed at Hei Cheng and sincerely said: "If not for elder brother’s generous help, how could I have such financial ability like Xue Song Zi? Elder brother is really wise and far-sighted, investing so much immortal essence stones, it was an amazing decision. As expected, stocking up the wolf groups before sending them out for support all at once truly caught Xue Song Zi unprepared. This time, even if Xue Song Zi wants to continue sending help, there is no one to receive it."

"Hahaha." Hei Cheng laughed brightly before sighing, "Without investment, how could there be profits?"

He paused a moment and continued: "Also, we were fortunate that other famous super tribes did not really make their move in this Imperial Court contest. There was also the information from Fairy Tan Bi Ya which allowed us to know of the secret relationship between Ma tribe and Snowy Mountain. Another point, this Wolf King Chang Shan Yin is truly a spectacular junior, his performance was outstanding, the one with the most radiance in this contest such that his brilliance surpasses this generation’s Gu Masters in northern plains."

Hei Bai also nodded, having the same feeling: "I have already investigated Chang Shan Yin in detail, he is a person of Chang tribe and was very famous, even us Gu Immortals knew of him. Later, he mysteriously disappeared for over ten years, he clearly had a fortuitous encounter. Now, he cultivates both enslavement and strength path, I saw the killer move he used just before, its repercussions are not small but it is indeed somewhat interesting."

Fang Yuan could conceal his injuries from the surrounding people, but he could not conceal it from Gu Immortals.

Hei Cheng was silent for a while before speaking: "This is a Gu Immortal seed, I plan to take him into Hei tribe. After he enters Imperial Court blessed land, we will properly observe him. If he is willing to join us and offer his loyalty, he might be able to become our Hei tribe’s external supreme elder in the future."

Hei Bai smiled: "The difficulty of ascending to Gu Immortal realm is unspeakable, elder brother truly thinks highly of him. In my opinion, Tai Bai Yun Sheng is also quite good, we can also ask him to join Hei tribe."

"Mm... but he is a little old." Hei Cheng nodded.

In these Gu Immortals’ eyes, only Chang Shan Yin and Tai Bai Yun Sheng piqued their interest and gained their attention among the entire Hei tribe alliance army!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

When Ma Ying Jie finally woke up, his first sight was Fei Cai’s joyous smiling face.

Fei Cai shouted: "Young tribe leader, you are finally awake!"

The simple and honest voice warmed Ma Ying Jie’s heart. He struggled to sit upright, but the intense pain caused him to grimace and froth started to bubble from his mouth, he was barely able to ask: "Where is this place?"

Fei Cai scratched his head, and said in shame: "I also don’t know where this is, but we should have escaped the battlefield."

"Battlefield?" Ma Ying Jie suddenly started and immediately asked, "The battle, what happened?"

"We lost, lord young tribe leader. Many people escaped and even more people surrendered." Fei Cai answered.

Ma Ying Jie’s face turned pale white and his body shook, almost fainting down, but luckily Fei Cai was supporting his back.

Zhao Lian Yun stood at the side, looking at this formerly radiant Ma tribe young tribe leader who had now fallen into such a miserable state; it left a bad taste in her mouth.

’Sigh, this Ma Ying Jie is young and promising, it is a pity he ran into Wolf King Chang Shan Yin. It was not that you didn’t try hard enough, but that the enemy was too much of a monster...’

Ma Ying Jie closed his eyes, two streams of tears quietly falling down.

After a while, he opened his reddened eyes and looked at Fei Cai and Zhao Lian Yun, asking in a hoarse voice: "Did you guys save me?"

Fei Cai and Zhao Lian Yun nodded.

"Young tribe leader, what do we do now?" Fei Cai asked.

Ma Ying Jie said with a gloomy expression: "We will return! This battle is our Ma tribe’s defeat, but we still have some tribesmen remaining behind in warm pond valley."

Back then, before heroes assembly, Ma tribe schemed and brought about internal disorder in Fei tribe, before swallowing Fei tribe and occupying warm pond valley.

Ma tribe’s higher-ups, to be prepared for the unexpected, left behind the old, weak, sick and crippled behind at warm pond valley.

If Ma tribe won, they would take these people back. But if Ma tribe lost, these people would be the seeds to continue the tribe’s bloodline!

"Return to warm pond valley? But we don’t have water and also don’t have any rations. To travel such a long distance..." Zhao Lian Yun’s brows furrowed into a knot.

"Heh, little girl, as long as I am here, there will be sufficient water and food. You guys don’t need to worry." Ma Ying Jie replied.

The three started their journey, coming across many Ma tribesmen who had fled; Ma Ying Jie took all of them in.

"Lord young tribe leader, I had not thought that I, Ma You Liang, would still live to see you!" When Ma You Liang saw Ma Ying Jie, he immediately said this in a sobbing voice.

He was Ma tribe’s rank three elder and was lying on a stretcher now; he had lost an arm and his right leg was fractured, his injuries were severe.

When Ma Ying Jie saw Ma You Liang, tears involuntarily welled up in his eyes: "Elder Ma You Liang, it really is good to see you!"

Although he had taken in many tribesmen along the way, most of them were mortals, while Ma You Liang might be heavily injured and also crippled, but he was still a Gu Master.

Ma tribe had been utterly defeated in this battle.

Before the battle, they had been a large tribe whose foundations were deep enough to charge to super tribe level. But after the battle, Ma tribe was completely reduced to a small tribe, falling down from the pinnacle of their power.

To the current Ma tribe, every Gu Master was a very precious strength and hope of the tribe!

"Lord young tribe leader, old tribe leader died in the battlefield." Ma You Liang cried bitterly as he told this grievous news to Ma Ying Jie.

Ma Ying Jie’s body shook intensely, and despite having already made mental preparations, his heart was still filled with endless sadness and sorrow after hearing this news.

He gritted his teeth, his whole body seemingly having turned into an iron statue.

After a while of silence, he slowly wiped away his tears and spoke: "From today onwards, I am Ma tribe leader! Elder Ma You Liang, you need to pull yourself together. Our Ma tribe might have lost, but we are not exterminated. Back then, Ancestor Giant Sun set the rule that Huang Jin family’s bloodline could not be exterminated. Ma tribe has already paid a disastrous price for the battle, now even Hei tribe cannot eradicate us. We will return to warm pond valley and climb up from this loss. I believe our Ma tribe’s radiance won’t disperse like this!"

Ma You Liang dazedly looked at the young tribe leader in front of him, and in his blurred vision, he seemed to be looking at Ma Shang Feng and Ma Zun’s silhouettes. He stopped sobbing as hope rose up in his heart again.

He then answered with a very deep voice: "Lord tribe leader, I also believe so!"

Winner takes all.

While Ma Ying Jie was miserably fleeing, it was a scene of celebratory feasts in the many tents of Hei tribe’s alliance army with plentiful food and people crowding around the warm bonfire.

"We have won, we were victorious!"

"Ma tribe’s ambition was too big, they actually wanted to become a super tribe.

This ambition was the cause of their destruction."

"Congratulations to Lord Hei Lou Lan for becoming the Lord of Imperial Court!"

"Esteemed Lord Wolf King, please allow me to propose a toast to you."

The main tent was also a scene of festivity. Besides the fine wine and food, there were also beautiful and passionate northern plains’ women dancing gracefully to their heart’s content.

The ones present in the main tent were the higher-ups of Hei tribe’s alliance army and were all experts. The cultivations of these people were at least rank four, one could say they were the most radiant heroes of this generation of northern plains.

Hei Lou Lan was sitting on the main seat, and to the first seat on his left was Fang Yuan.

Before, because of Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s arrival as well as successive joining of several rank five tribe elders, Fang Yuan’s position had been pushed to the back.

But after the third battle with Ma tribe, Fang Yuan revealed his rank five peak stage cultivation and with his strength alone, battled the enemy’s three enslavement masters, and beheaded Cheng Long, Wu Ye and other famous experts.

One could say Fang Yuan was at least seventy percent of the reason Hei tribe could win against Ma tribe decisively.

Everyone in Hei tribe was shocked at Wolf King’s terrifying battle strength and that very night, they readjusted the seat rankings in the main tent.

No one opposed this.

Experts proposed toasts to Fang Yuan one after another, Fang Yuan did not refuse anyone, but only took a sip every time. This was completely not a demeanour of a grand northern plains’ warrior, but right now, this instead formed an arrogant and aloof aura on Fang Yuan.

The main tent was filled with a joyful atmosphere.

The Gu Master who proposed the toast just before was Sole Blade General Pan Ping. He used his sole blade Gu and luckily managed to take Ma tribe leader Ma Shang Feng’s head in the battle. Thus, his position was only inferior to Fang Yuan in the battle merit board now, being ranked at second.

Seeing Fang Yuan taking a sip in response to his toast, Pan Ping gratefully stepped to the side.

Northern plains natives admire warriors, a terrifying performance like Fang Yuan’s was extremely rare even when considering all the Imperial Court contests.

Flying master and enslavement path master, two master level halos shone on his body. His enslavement path and strength path dual cultivation would give an extreme headache to all his enemies.

Seeing Pan Ping becoming satisfied and overwhelmed, and retreating in deference, the surrounding gazes showed respect, worship or fear. Fang Yuan calmly placed down the wine cup and sighed inwardly: "Unknowingly, I have already reached this stage."

Riding on the great wave known as the Imperial Court contest, Fang Yuan’s individual battle strength rapidly inflated. Now, he was already at the summit of the mortal world.

He had reached the peak of the mortals.

Advancing further would be the realm of immortals!

In the battle before, he slaughtered famed experts, rampaging all around with no one being able to obstruct him; very few rank five peak stage Gu Masters could display such performance. Hei Lou Lan’s light was completely seized by Fang Yuan.

Despite there being great flaws in cultivating both enslavement and strength path, despite four arm earth king killer move being newly created and not yet perfected, they were already enough as a cornerstone to allow Fang Yuan to stand proud in the mortal world.

In three kings blessed land, Fang Yuan used the blessed land’s power to kill rank four and rank five Gu Master experts.

And now, he was able to do it with his own strength. Even if Tie clan’s previous clan leader Tie Mu Bai resurrected, Fang Yuan had the confidence of killing him.

In a short period of time, Fang Yuan’s battle strength had truly increased at a sharply flying speed. This accomplishment that others would find it almost impossible to achieve their whole life, was established on five hundred years of his former life’s experience, Hu Immortal blessed land, painstaking efforts and strategies as a base.

’But it is still not enough, far from enough! What can being the peak of the mortal world be considered as? As long as one is not a Gu Immortal, they will simply be chess pieces. Not mentioning the goal of eternal life, just looking at my current goal, I have yet to save Dang Hun mountain.’

Fang Yuan’s gaze turned solemn as the flames of ambition burned in his heart.

He glanced at Tai Bai Yun Sheng who was at the side.

To save Dang Hun mountain, he required Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s Immortal Gu — Landscape As Before.

This was his most important target for this trip to northern plains. Even Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was secondary.

In his plan, if Dang Hun mountain could not be saved, then Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s inheritance could only barely fill his losses.

However, it was a very troublesome thing to take away other’s Gu worms.

A Gu worm’s survival could be decided on simply a thought from its master.

For example, Fang Yuan only needed a thought and even his Immortal Gu, Spring Autumn Cicada, would easily self-destruct.

Precisely because of this, when Gu Masters battled to death, they would often get next to nothing in terms of Gu worms from the corpse.

And Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s situation was even more troublesome!

Immortal Gu Landscape As Before had yet to be born; it was an Immortal Gu created by Tai Bai Yun Sheng after he became a Gu Immortal, and by using river as before and mountain as before as the main materials.

Hence, there were two courses of actions Fang Yuan could take.

First was to capture Tai Bai Yun Sheng and use soul path Gu worms to soul search and plunder the recipe of Landscape As Before from his mind, then refine it by himself.

This plan was too risky.

First of all, Fang Yuan might not be able to capture Tai Bai Yun Sheng alive. Capturing alive and killing were two completely different concepts. Especially when Tai Bai Yun Sheng was very powerful and was a time path Gu Master; the failure of the plan would have huge consequences.

Secondly, even if Fang Yuan was able to capture Tai Bai Yun Sheng alive, does it mean he could get the river as before and mountain as before Gu? In case Tai Bai Yun Sheng made these two Gu self-destruct, all of Fang Yuan’s efforts would go to waste.

Finally, it was still unknown if the current Tai Bai Yun Sheng had the Gu recipe for Landscape As Before in his mind.

The possibility of a mortal being able to come up with an Immortal Gu recipe was extremely small. Especially when Tai Bai Yun Sheng was not a refinement path master.

According to the vague rumors in Fang Yuan’s previous life, when Tai Bai Yun Sheng became a Gu Immortal, heaven and earth reacted, Dao marks attracted each other and his inspiration exploded, making the two rank five Gu spontaneously merge together to form rank six Immortal Gu Landscape As Before.

If it really was so, then the Gu recipe for Landscape As Before simply did not exist and its refinement process could not be duplicated.

The first course of action could not be adopted, then what about the second?

In truth, it was not any better than the first!

After Tai Bai Yun Sheng entered Imperial Court blessed land, he would advance to Gu Immortal realm. The second plan was to wait for him to become a Gu Immortal and possess the Immortal Gu, then deal with him!

The meaning of this was that Fang Yuan, as a mortal, would be entrapping a Gu Immortal!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

How big was the possibility of a mortal successfully plotting against a Gu Immortal?

Fang Yuan might be a rank five peak stage Gu Master, but it would be almost impossible for him as well to cross the boundaries of immortal and mortal.

Fang Yuan was a Gu Immortal in his past life, there might be no mortal that had as deep of an understanding of this as him.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan’s plan was not just himself as a mortal going against a Gu Immortal. He would borrow the strength of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the bright guidance from his previous life’s rich experience and also the precious information from Lang Ya land spirit; all these allowed his plan to have a higher chance of success. With this, he had a twenty percent chance of seizing Immortal Gu Landscape As Before.

Twenty percent probability was already the highest among the three ways to save Dang Hun mountain.

Only an Immortal Gu could contend against Immortal Gu Gruel Mud.

Based on his wide vision and experience from his five hundred years of experience, Fang Yuan knew of only three Immortal Gu that could save Dang Hun mountain.

First was the rank six earth path turn rock Gu, this Gu was with Western Desert’s rank six Gu Immortal Sun Cu.

Second was similarly an earth path rank six Immortal Gu Rebuilding Mount Dongshan, which was in Eastern Sea’s Hai Shi blessed land.

Third was time path rank six Immortal Gu Landscape As Before. This Gu had not yet been created and was not a naturally formed Gu. Its master Tai Bai Yun Sheng was only a rank five Gu Master currently.

To seize turn rock Gu, Fang Yuan would have to deal with Gu Immortal Sun Cu who had been a Gu Immortal for over a dozen years.

And the situation would be even more bad if he wanted to scheme against Rebuilding Mount Dongshan; Fang Yuan would be placing himself under the radar of Gu Immortals, and would he be able to exchange for the Immortal Gu as a mortal? This was nothing more than a kid carrying gold and strolling around the black market.

Thus, the third plan of Immortal Gu Landscape As Before had the lowest risk and the highest probability of success.

Even if Tai Bai Yun Sheng would advance into a Gu Immortal, he would only be a greenhorn and would not be familiar with the qualitative change of strength.

Compared to the veteran Sun Cu and that group of Gu Immortals in the Hai Shi blessed land, this opponent was much more easy to deal with.

...

Northern Plains, December.

The blizzard was gradually becoming bigger and appeared more frequently. Even if there was no blizzard, the pure white snow had covered the whole northern plains, and even the blistering hot sunlight became powerless.

The time of the ten year blizzard was already approaching closer.

Tian Chuan, warm pond valley.

"Tribe leader, this is the spirit spring C." Ma You Liang worriedly pointed at the dried spirit spring and introduced it to Ma Ying Jie.

Ma Ying Jie’s brows furrowed deeply.

This spirit spring C was one of the only three remaining spirit springs of warm pond valley.

Now that it was dried up, only spirit springs A and B were left to support Ma tribe. This was disastrous news to Ma tribe.

The spirit springs in northern plains were different from the spirit springs in other regions.

Northern springs had little spring water and narrow spring opening, so they burst out fiercely and had poor foundation, so they lasted the shortest time.

Eastern springs were plentiful in numbers, southern springs gurgled, northern springs were intense and western springs were pure.

A mid-sized clan could last for over ten years in southern border, using one spirit spring. As long as they did not use up the spirit spring excessively, they could continue to use the thin and continuous flow of the spirit spring.

But it was different in northern plains.

Spirit springs formed quickly in northern plains and quickly finished as well. Add in the intense warfares in northern plains, a mid-sized tribe would require at least three or four spirit springs to sustain themselves.

Ma Ying Jie became Ma tribe’s new tribe leader after he returned to the tribe. Ma tribe had lost at their attempt to charge into super tribe level and was now reduced to a small tribe, causing the large warm pond valley to appear spacious and empty.

Ma tribe had rations and water sources, moreover had made ample preparations.

But a spirit spring was a commodity that was an essential and important resource to a Gu Master’s cultivation. Once the blizzard arrives, places like warm pond valley would become the final place of refuge.

Not only beast groups, other Gu Masters would also come to stay.

As the owner of the place, Ma tribe not only had to resist against the blizzard but had to negotiate with these people as well.

The primeval stones from the spirit spring were the backbone in supporting a Gu Master’s battles. Now, out of the three backbones of Ma tribe, one was broken. The weak Ma tribe that was left with thirty percent of their foundations suddenly had ten percent less because of the drying spirit spring C.

However, Ma Ying Jie had no countermeasures to deal with such a problem.

If he had a ’river as before’ Gu, he could immediately restore spirit spring C to its original condition, resolving this problem, but he did not have it.

"Lord tribe leader, are spirit springs really so important?" Fei Cai asked on the way back.

After he returned to the tribe, as a benefactor who saved Ma Ying Jie, he was immediately liberated from his slave status and was now a free person.

At the same time, he was still Ma Ying Jie’s personal attendant.

Ma Ying Jie worriedly nodded: "A spirit spring’s drying up has an extremely huge influence towards Gu Masters. And Gu Masters are the pillars of a tribe. Our Ma tribe not only needs Gu Masters as an important strength to resist all kinds of calamities during the blizzard disaster, but also to fight for new resources to develop the tribe after the disaster..."

Fei Cai exclaimed then asked while walking: "Then, can’t we find new spirit springs? Our warm pond valley is so large, who is to say that there are only these three spirit springs."

Fei Cai’s words were filled with his optimistic spirit.

Ma Ying Jie gave a bitter laugh: "Northern plains’ spirit springs can indeed form in a short time, there might be a fourth spirit spring in warm pond valley, but the probability is close to zero. The thing is every ten years as the blizzard approaches, spirit springs in all regions of northern plains will continue to become dry and dead. After the blizzard disperses, new spirit springs will gush out in large numbers. At that time, all the regions of northern plains will have plentiful water vegetation and you might even find one spirit spring every hundred li. That is the best time for every tribe and every beast group to grow."

"It was like that..." Fei Cai only then realized he had lived for this long and was still ignorant, and was not familiar to such situations.

"Ahh!" Suddenly, he screamed as he fell down to the side.

They were walking a path beside the cliff, fortunately it was a gentle slope and not a precipice. Fei Cai had lost his footing and rolled down from the slope, screaming as he fell.

"This guy..." Ma Ying Jie was amused at the series of hilarious screams from Fei Cai, his tightly knitted brows slightly relaxed.

"You idiot, you can’t even walk now? Climb up quickly... hmm?!" Ma Ying Jie suddenly stopped, his eyes opened wide as he looked incredulously at a brand new spirit spring gushing out from the slope.

This spirit spring’s mouth had been covered by a rock.

But this stone was pushed by the rolling Fei Cai, letting the spirit spring that was covered reveal itself.

This was clearly a recently formed spirit spring, otherwise Ma tribe would not have missed it during their search before the battle.

The volume of the spirit spring was enormous and in a short few moments of time, over a hundred primeval stones gushed with the spring water and fell on the surrounding ground.

"This...This is actually a new spirit spring and one that directly surpasses the volume of spirit spring A!" Ma Ying Jie was so happy that even his eyes started reddening, "Is this the so-called joy after extreme sorrow? This is definitely the blessing of our ancestors in Longevity Heaven!"

"Tribe..tribe leader... I have returned!" At this time, Fei Cai came back while limping a little, and as he saw the new spring, his eyes similarly opened wide, "Strange, how could there suddenly be a spring here?"

Ma Ying Jie laughed heartily: "Fei Cai, you are the lucky star that heaven sent to me. From today onwards, you should change your name. Fei Cai sounds similar to trash, how could I Ma Ying Jie have trash beside me? From now, you shall be called Hong Yun, Fei Hong Yun! It indicates luck shining on our Ma tribe, joy after extreme sorrow!"

However, Ma Ying Jie was not happy for long, as seven days later, Hei tribe army arrived and surrounded warm pond valley.

The very night the Hei tribe army garrisoned nearby, the three spirit springs of warm pond valley simultaneous turned black, completely polluted.

A letter to surrender soon reached Ma Ying Jie’s land.

Ma Ying Jie had not expected Hei Lou Lan to not let him go even after clearly achieving the final victory!

The spirit springs that were contaminated by the use of Gu worms could no longer produce primeval stones and were all useless. Although Ma tribe still had stocks of primeval stones, they had already lost the possibility of continuing to stay in warm pond valley.

"I had not thought Hei Lou Lan would be so hell-bent on attacking! He has requested our Ma tribe to surrender in the letter, which does not violate the rules set by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable back then! Damn it, he is truly hateful!" Ma Ying Jie clenched his fists, his heart filled with anger, hatred, helplessness and powerlessness.

"Hei Lou Lan who is nicknamed Black Tyrant, has always been brutal and violent. It seems the battle before created a fear in him towards Ma tribe. But because of Ancestor Giant Sun’s rules, he wants to put Ma tribe under his sight and continue to oppress us." Ma You Liang was sitting stiffly on his chair and analyzed this with a heavy voice.

After pausing for a while, he continued: "Actually, this is also good, we can surrender to Hei Lou Lan which would mean we can enter Imperial Court blessed land as well."

Ma Ying Jie shook his head: "This is where Hei Lou Lan’s sinister intent lies in. It is true Ma tribe will be able to stay in Imperial Court, but what about others? Let me ask you, how many tribesmen do we have left with surname Ma?"

Ma You Liang paled as he answered: "Only over one hundred and thirty."

"Precisely so." Ma Ying Jie nodded with a heavy expression, "To grow our tribe, we would need to take in outsiders and also wantonly connect with marriage and have large numbers of offspring. But as long as Hei Lou Lan sent a command to forbid our Ma tribe from taking in outsiders and even only allowing us to have inter-tribe marriage, then how long would it take for our Ma tribe to grow?"

Ma You Liang’s face turned even paler.

He realized the seriousness of this problem.

Politics was dirty, and not allowing them to marry outsiders could be easily done. Hei Lou Lan would only need to use the reason of protecting the purity of Huang Jin family’s bloodline and he would be able to justly suppress Ma tribe’s development.

"Then what should we do?" Ma You Liang lost his composure.

Ma Ying Jie was silent for a while before resolutely saying: "We will bestow surname Ma to the outsiders and take them as our own tribesmen!"

"Lord tribe leader, if we do this, our Ma tribe’s Huang Jin bloodline will really be..." Ma You Liang spoke hesitantly.

"We will have preventive measures. Huang Jin bloodline is our Ma tribe’s pride, we can never let it be contaminated. If the situation takes a turn for the better, we can denounce these people and strip away their Ma surname."

Ma You Liang only then felt at ease and nodded, approving this plan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Moving carriages and neighing horses.

The huge group of nearly a million advanced towards the central Imperial Court region of northern plains.

The blizzard outside was blowing intensely, causing the big stomach horse to lower its head helplessly.

The white snow on the ground was knee-deep, as everyone moved with extremely difficult steps..

One by one, the blue farm slug Gu moved forward. Their stomachs were stuffed with all sorts of resources, turning their original size of three elephants into a mound-like hill.

Carriages after carriages followed behind the blue farm slug Gu. In order to shield these mortals from the approaching blizzard, they were covered in frost.

To prevent the slug Gu from freezing to death, three Gu Masters would be in charge of one slug Gu, removing the frost on them while using fire path Gu worms to give them warmth, maintaining their temperature.

The army pressed forward towards the Imperial Court. As the blizzard became larger, the army’s speed became slower.

Large number of mortal slaves fell during the journey, and never got up again.

Hei Lou Lan could order Gu Masters to save them, but he did not do so.

Even though the Imperial Court blessed land was huge and could accommodate five million people, in Hei Lou Lan’s opinion, the resources within the blessed land were his, why would he distribute them to these lowly slaves?

Every extra person meant he had to lose another bit of benefit.

Using the blizzard to sacrifice large numbers of useless mortals, this was a hidden rule among all past lords of the Imperial Court.

Mortal lives were cheap. They were like grass, once the blizzard was over, they would rapidly grow again, increasing in numbers and using up northern plains’ scarce resources like leeches, awaiting the next ten year blizzard.

As the blizzard became stronger, the people move against the force of the wind.

Fang Yuan was inside the large lizard house Gu, he could hear the wind outside the windows.

Within the large lizard house Gu, it was warm as spring. Using it to move in such an environment had about five to six times the primeval essence expenditure as before.

But to Fang Yuan, just his rank five peak stage ninety percent aperture could easily sustain this expenditure with no problem.

Moreover, his second aperture had also advanced to rank five upper stage recently.

Fang Yuan came before the window, looking outside the tightly sealed glass window, towards the left.

Ma tribe’s members were there.

After Ma Ying Jie took the role of tribe leader, Ma Hong Yun appeared, even Zhao Lian Yun was beside him.

Fang Yuan had already confirmed this secretly, and even instructed Ge tribe to pay special attention to Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun.

In his memory, Ma Hong Yun obtained an inheritance of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. In Fang Yuan’s following plans, he was a very useful pawn piece. As for Zhao Lian Yun, she was still just a child, she posed no threat. At the same time, she was very close to Ma Hong Yun, Fang Yuan wanted to observe them further.

"In my previous life, Ma Hong Yun appeared. Now, despite my influence, Ma Hong Yun still appeared. Then in the future, will he and Zhao Lian Yun still reach that level of achievement just like in the previous life?"

After rebirth, Fang Yuan had been deeply interested towards the topic of changing history, a desire to know growing deep inside his heart.

The flow of history had inertia, as well as changes.

With his personal experience, the butterfly effect theorized on Earth was slightly off.

Five hundred years in his past life, Ma Hong Yun was given a surname and allowed to cultivate as a Gu Master. That was because he obtained a relic Gu and gave it to Ma Ying Jie.

Right now, it was because of Hei Lou Lan’s pressure, that caused Ma Ying Jie to have no choice but make this decision. This decision, gave birth to a new Ma Hong Yun.

The process was different, but the result was the same.

The event that unfolded before him made Fang Yuan ponder, as he uncontrollably thought of one word – fate!

Fate, this was a word much more mysterious and ethereal than space or time.

Legend says that there was a luck path among Gu Master paths, but until today, no one could confirm it.

However, there were many important characters that were connected to fate.

In <>, it clearly indicated the existence of destiny Gu.

The second generation Immortal Venerable of the Heavenly Court, the creator of wisdom path, controlled this Gu, thus being able to plot against three future Demon Venerables.

In three kings blessed land, Fang Yuan was informed by the land spirit – Red Lotus Demon Venerable was a great hero, breaking the restriction of destiny, allowing all life in this world to regain control of their own fate.

In fact, Fang Yuan had vaguely heard such a rumor: Giant Sun Immortal Venerable controlled a luck path Gu worm, thus he had extremely good fortune and ease in his cultivation journey, avoiding disasters and gaining great blessings.

"In this world, is there really a thread of fate that connects all living beings together?" Fang Yuan went into deep thought.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, although he became a Gu Immortal, he only managed to unravel a tiny portion of this world’s mystery and secrets.

Be it his previous life, or this life, the more he progressed, the stronger he got, the more he felt his own ignorance and insignificance.

The more insignificant and ignorant he felt, the more interest he had in moving forward, he wanted to progress further!

"Compared to this world, I am merely an ant..." Fang Yuan’s blood was filled with pride and humility, obstinance and understanding.

Collecting all his scattered thoughts, Fang Yuan concentrated his attention on the matter ahead.

"Imperial Court blessed land rejects Gu Immortals, I am already rank five peak stage, this is likely the first and the last time I am entering the Imperial Court, to physically come into contact with Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

"But this time, Hei Lou Lan purposely went over to warm pond valley to force Ma tribe to surrender, this was a strange move." Fang Yuan’s gaze became solemn.

Ma tribe had already lost terribly, and they had the Huang Jin bloodline, why would Hei Lou Lan do this?

This was understandable in his previous life.

Back then, Ma tribe was not completely helpless, they had strong defense and was a turtle shell that was hard to take down. Hei Lou Lan had no choice but to force them to surrender.

Now that Ma tribe was declining, Hei Lou Lan still moved his army and laboriously forced Ma tribe to surrender, he spent so much effort to suppress Ma tribe, did he have deep enmity with Ma tribe personally?

Fang Yuan shook his head.

There were no evidence that could support this thought.

"Nevermind, maybe Hei Lou Lan was just spurred on and wanted to raise his merits. This is only a small detail, my own strength is always the most important thing."

Thinking so, his mind entered his aperture.

The injuries from using the killer move four arm earth king had already recovered.

As for the killer move, he had several adjustments.

He changed earth overlord Gu to wind overlord Gu. As for the other supplementary Gu worms, they were adjusted accordingly.

This way, he would not need to step on the ground, and would fight best in the wind. The stronger the wind, the more battle strength he can display, and the smaller the drawbacks he would face after using the killer move.

But Fang Yuan was not satisfied.

This was only a temporary compromise, the weakness of this killer move had not been reduced.

If he fought in an environment without wind, the consequences of using the killer move would not be any better as before.

For Gu Masters, there were way too many methods to restrict the wind.

Once his weakness was exposed publicly, his killer move would no longer have any threat to his enemies, they would have no fear towards it.

"Actually, no matter how good my modifications were, I would not be satisfied. My true aim is to eliminate the weakness of my strength-enslavement dual cultivation. The killer move four arm earth king is merely a starting point."

But this result could not escape from the limits of transformation path.

What Fang Yuan wanted was to completely and utterly modify his body, he did not want to achieve such temporary transformation.

Nevertheless, reaching this point had already expended Fang Yuan’s five hundred years of knowledge accumulation.

After all, Fang Yuan was a blood path Gu Immortal back then, his attainment in strength and enslavement paths were merely subsidiaries, he merely touched the tip of the iceberg.

If possible, Fang Yuan wanted to quickly become a blood path Gu Immortal. But it was different now after rebirth. His vital Gu was not a blood path Gu.

A crucial condition for becoming a Gu Immortal was the vital Gu.

Originally, after Fang Yuan got the second aperture Gu, he would have a second chance. But that crucial blood path vital Gu was still buried in the inheritance, it had not appeared yet.

Fang Yuan could not wait in vain, the situation was forcing him, he could only choose to strengthen himself now, to deal with the challenges ahead, and all the enemies lurking around him.

Staying alive, that was the most important thing!

Fang Yuan had also realized that his foundation in strength and enslavement paths were lacking. His involvement in a wide range of paths in his previous life allowed him to easily control Gu worms of many paths, while being skilled in the combination of different Gu worms. Among them, his attainment in enslavement path was the highest.

But to resolve the issue of strength-enslavement dual cultivation, an age old question, he would need to move ahead of history and undergo creative and daring experiments, his foundation was lacking in this aspect.

Even though Fang Yuan had clues to Luo Po valley now, maybe after he obtains Luo Po valley, he would be able to convert to the glorious soul path.

But Fang Yuan never liked placing his hopes on certain possibilities in the future.

Even if he changes to soul path in the future, his hard work in enslavement and strength would be a precious resource and would greatly benefit his future cultivation.

Knowing his own inaptitude, Fang Yuan had been reading intensely these few days.

He used his huge pool of battle merits to exchange for dragon horse spirit, three hearts combination soul, all sorts of killer moves, as well as dozens of small strength path inheritances. He also got the recorded journal of four enslavement masters, among them, rat epidemic, thunder explosion. leopard rush, and horse barrage, these four killer moves were invaluable.

Fang Yuan’s foundation had always been thick, these days he had been reading laboriously, his understanding and knowledge in strength and enslavement path surged greatly by several times compared to before.

Different from his previous life where he studied these paths as a side path, he had personally experienced these paths this time, and together with his theories, he gained countless inspirations.

But these inspirations could not resolve his problem now.

"Actually, looking at information about the transformation of the body, the first records were in <>. When Ren Zu fell into a certain-death situation, in order to save her own father, Desolate Ancient Moon came to Cheng Bai mountain and killed the rockman..."

Fang Yuan had a burst of inspiration as he flipped <> beside him.

This was the first classic of the Gu Master world, countless mysteries were hidden within it. Even existences like Gu Immortal kept a copy of it with them at all times, occasionally flipping and learning from it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan flipped <<The Legends of Ren Zu, and this was recorded within — When Ren Zu was in a certain-death situation, after he fell into Luo Po valley and had no way to get out.

Desolate Ancient Moon, in order to save her father, climbed up Cheng Bai mountain and tried to get to the top, in order to get that one and only success Gu.

As long as she made a wish to success Gu, Desolate Ancient Moon would be able to save Ren Zu.

But when Desolate Ancient Moon got to the foot of the mountain, she was obstructed by the rockman.

It turns out that when Ren Zu’s second daughter arrived at Cheng Bai mountain, she ruined love Gu’s wonderful dream.

Out of anger, love Gu awakened the rockman in order to obstruct Desolate Ancient Moon.

After Desolate Ancient Moon killed the rockman, and got to the mountain waist.

Love Gu had yet to leave, it appeared before Desolate Ancient Moon and said: "Oh human, you interrupted my sweet dream, yet you still desire to take away success

Gu. Now I will topple the entire Cheng Bai mountain, you can have fun finding that one and only success Gu out of billions of rocks. Hahaha."

Saying so, love Gu crashed towards Cheng Bai mountain.

Cheng Bai mountain was not an ordinary mountain, it was a mound entirely made up of stacked rocks.

After love Gu crashed into it, the entire mountain crumbled.

Love Gu left smugly, leaving behind Desolate Ancient Moon who looked at this huge pile of rocks in a daze.

How was she going to find that one and only success Gu among this chaotic pile of rocks?

Desolate Ancient Moon was troubled, without a choice, she had to return to cognition Gu to seek advice.

After cognition Gu heard Desolate Ancient Moon’s description, it sighed: "Love Gu had always been demanding and unreasonable, even if it was me, or my child wisdom Gu, we would not want to confront it."

"Right now, Cheng Bai mountain had collapsed, you can only look at these rocks one by one, to find the real success Gu from among them. There are no other ways."

Cognition Gu said again: "But you have to be careful, there are two Gu on Cheng Bai mountain. One is success Gu, at the peak of the mountain. The other is failure Gu, at the bottom of the mountain. Failure is the mother of success, but it also has many other children. Those rocks are success Gu’s siblings. When you pick those rocks, many unthinkably bad situations will occur. I will tell you a secret here, as long as you continue to affirm the belief of ’me’ in your heart, these disastrous situations will gradually disappear."

Desolate Ancient Moon heard this and her heart sank, she asked again: "Then how do I differentiate the rocks in my hand? What do success Gu and failure Gu look like?"

Cognition Gu sighed: "They look almost the same, but it is easy to differentiate them. Just hold them in your hands, you will learn about their identities."

"In your search for success Gu, that failure Gu will be your biggest threat. You cannot hold on to the failure Gu, otherwise, you will be completely lost and your life would be in danger."

Desolate Ancient Moon heard this and nodded, expressing her gratitude.

Cognition instructed her again before leaving: "Do not say that I taught you that. If love Gu comes to find me, I’d be in trouble. In the face of fanatic and toyful love, wisdom and cognition can only run away."

"Don’t worry, I won’t expose you." Desolate Ancient Moon agreed, returning to Cheng Bai mountain.

Seeing the huge pile of rocks, her heart was gloomy.

Success was not easily obtainable, to obtain success, she would need to bend down and search while taking great risks.

Desolate Ancient Moon breathed in deeply, picking up the first rock.

This rock was ordinary, but when Desolate Ancient Moon held it in her hand, it shook slightly.

A light wound appeared on Desolate Ancient Moon’s hand.

This was not success Gu, but one of success’ siblings, one of the children of failure Gu.

Desolate Ancient Moon’s heart was shocked, she touched the wound on her hand as she recalled what cognition Gu said —"When you pick those rocks, many unthinkably bad situations will occur. You have to affirm the belief of ’me’ in your heart."

"So this is the terrible situation." Desolate Ancient Moon understood.

She chanted in her heart: "Me, me, me, me..."

As she chanted, the wound on her hand miraculously healed! Only a light scar was left.

She tossed the first rock away, and picked up the second rock.

When she held this rock in her hand, Desolate Ancient Moon’s heart jumped, as an intense feeling of fear assaulted her.

Desolate Ancient Moon was shivering in fear, she almost ran away to escape, away from this place.

But she held on, and chanted ’me’.

After a long time, she slowly recovered as the fear in her heart was gone by half, finally picking up the third rock.

This rock made her dejected. She could not help but think: "I want to find that one and only success Gu among these billions of rocks, how difficult is that, how long would it take me?"

She could barely move anymore, she felt that the future was shrouded in darkness, it was too difficult to find success Gu.

She almost wanted to give up, but she thought about her father who was trapped in life and death door.

"If I give up, who will save father?" Desolate Ancient Moon shuddered: "Oh no, I forgot to chant ’me’."

Desolate Ancient Moon chanted again, getting rid of the despair in her heart, bending down to pick up another rock.

Once she held the fourth rock in her hand, Desolate Ancient Moon was shocked to find out that her nose had changed, it turned into a pig’s nose.

She chanted ’me’ once again, allowing her nose to recover.

Spending a lot of time, she exerted all her effort to get rid of the pig nose. But her nose was still slightly deformed compared to before.

Like this, Desolate Ancient Moon continued to pick up rocks, hoping to find that success Gu.

But days passed, and all she found was failure Gu’s children.

Among these rocks, some made her injured, some made her dejected, despair, or fear, while some made her grow a pig head, rat’s tail, etc.

Despite Desolate Ancient Moon chanting ’me’ continuously, some of the scars still remained on her. As they accumulated, these scars turned her into a monster.

She grew six heads, three arms, five tails, and looked like a centaur. She had sixteen legs, and some of her legs had soft fur, some had snake-like scales, some had sharp claws, some had tough hooves.

In the search for success, people often transform and become completely different.

But Desolate Ancient Moon also became much stronger because of this.

After going through so much, she had become several hundred times as strong as before. These rocks could not longer trouble her.

"Success, oh success, where in the world are you?" Her seven mouths opened together. Some were screaming, some were shouting, some were whispering while others were growling.

The more she failed, the more she desired success in her heart.

After her great effort, the number of unpicked rocks became fewer and fewer.

Eventually, when there were only two rocks left, Desolate Ancient Moon was stuck between two difficult choices.

Undeniably, among these two rocks, one was success Gu, while the other was failure Gu.

If she obtains success Gu, that would be the best. But if she picked failure Gu, then Desolate Ancient Moon would become completely lost, she would be in danger of dying.

Even if Desolate Ancient Moon became a monster, becoming so much stronger.

One step to heaven, one step to hell, what should she choose? Desolate Ancient Moon could not help but become hesitant.

"If I do not dare to take the next step for fear of failure, then I will never succeed! I am already so strong, success is a step away from me, even if I take failure Gu, as long as I chant ’me’, I should be able to endure it right?" Eventually, she mustered her courage and stretched out her palm, picking one of the rocks.

Unfortunately, she picked failure Gu.

An unforseen feeling of lost, self-doubt assaulted her.

"Me, me, me..."

Desolate Ancient Moon continued to chant ’me, but her voice became softer, as her seven mouths stopped moving eventually, her expression turning into a daze.

She had fallen into endless perplexity, she had completely lost herself.

The biggest tragedy for a human, is to lose your sense of self.

...

"Sigh..." After reading this, Fang Yuan sighed as he closed the book.

At once, his thoughts were drifting as he showed a very complicated expression.

It was still snowing outside the window, snowflakes were floating in the air.

As the ten year disaster approaches, the blizzard did not show signs of weakening, instead it was growing.

Northern Plains, end of December.

When Hei Lou Lan led the army and and arrived at the last minute, at Imperial Court blessed land's entrance, the alliance had about half its members left.

A large number of mortals died on the way there.

In fact, many Gu Masters died from the attacks of beast groups.

The item to open the Imperial Court blessed land was on Hei Lou Lan.

When he stood up, a mild golden light shone in the air.

Immediately after, the golden light intensified, forming a light ring.

The light ring expanded, turning into a grand city gate.

On the gate, there were exquisite silvery flower patterns. Many fist-sized copper buttons were plastered on the gate.

Boom...

There was like an invisible hand behind the door, pulling the heavy door open.

Immediately, the thick smell of sandalwood spread.

The snow in the air stopped moving. Under the influence of a mysterious power, the snow in the air gathered like bees, in an instant, a solid and magnificent ice ladder was created.

At the top of the ladder, it was connected to the floating Imperial Court gate. It extended all the way to the ground.

"Imperial Court blessed land!" Hei Lou Lan could not conceal his excitement, he took three steps as one step as he ascended the ice ladder, becoming the first person to enter the Imperial Court.

"Eighty-Eight True Yang Building..." Fang Yuan was the second person, his gaze became solemn as he took calm strides in.

After that, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Hao Ji Liu and other high level experts went in.

About an hour later, the entire Hei tribe army had entered Imperial Court blessed land. The ice ladder broke apart, as the red city gate closed itself.

The light ring shrunk into one dot, and vanished.

"They have all entered." The Gu Immortals observed in secret retracted their helpless and nostalgic gazes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

When Fang Yuan opened his eyes, the scene before him had completely transformed.

The sky was light gold in color, the land was like spring, with green agricultural terraces, there were gentle streams flowing, and low-lying mounds, one could see far and wide in this boundless plains.

This was a serene and peaceful world, forming a great contrast to the blizzard outside.

This was northern plains’ greatest utopia — Imperial Court blessed land, it opens every ten years, as a reward to the lord of northern plains.

Fang Yuan looked around and found that he was alone.

Although everyone entered from the same gate, after they stepped through the gate, they were separated and randomly transported to any area of the blessed land.

This was as per usual, Fang Yuan was not shocked. According to the earlier agreement, next he had to travel towards the center of the blessed land, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s former place of residence was there — Northern Plains Sacred Palace!

"I am finally in here." Fang Yuan regulated his breathing, the Imperial Court contest was only a prelude, what was truly important was the following events.

He tried activating eagle rise Gu, his crystal purple primeval essence moved according to his will, entering the eagle rise Gu.

Swoosh!

With a light sound, followed by intense pain, two broad and huge pitch-black eagle wings grew on his back.

Within Imperial Court blessed land, the use of mortal Gu was not restricted. As for Immortal Gu, they could not be restrained in any blessed land.

The strong eagle wings flapped lightly and brought Fang Yuan into the air.

Flying in the air, feeling the light wind brushing past his face, he could smell the unique scent of nature that permeated the entire blessed land.

Compared to the outside world, this place was extremely peaceful, it was like heaven.

Fang Yuan was in no hurry, he flew slowly as he enjoyed the scenery around him.

Imperial Court blessed land’s landscape was quite similar to northern plains. At one glance, it was a huge plain, there were mounds and slopes with beautiful and elegant lines, it was like a stream of jade green flowing smoothly without obstacles.

But different from northern plains, every eight li, there would be a tower on the ground.

These towers made Fang Yuan think of totem pillars. Each one was about twenty-five meters tall, they were tall and straight, with a gold and silver surface, with lots of precious gems adorning it, beautiful and exquisite.

In the tower, there were countless barriers, like a beehive. Inside, were many

Gu worms.

When the worm groups in the blessed land give birth to Gu, these Gu worms would detach themselves from the group and live in these towers.

The towers were built by Giant Sun, no matter what type of Gu worm it was, they would be able to find their food inside the towers.

Every tower had tens of thousands of Gu worms. These Gu consists of many species, there were large numbers of common Gu and few rare Gu.

Undeniably, each of these towers were a huge fortune, even Fang Yuan can feel his attraction to them. He could even see a group of about a thousand starlight firefly Gu in one of the towers.

"Unfortunately, I cannot take these Gu as I wish. When the Imperial Court contest first started, some daring Gu Masters tried to steal or even attack the towers, to take the wild Gu inside. In the end, they were like candles, their entire body melted until their white bone skeleton was left, smashed into a pile." Fang Yuan’s gaze concentrated.

This was the heavenly power of the blessed land, the power of heaven and earth.

No mortals could resist it.

Even Gu Immortals would be left in a pathetic state when competing against it.

After enough lessons taught, by now, no Gu Master had the intention to attack the towers.

"If we chase the origin, the Gu Immortal who created Imperial Court blessed land was a space path Gu Immortal whose name can no longer be found. Because of this, this blessed land is huge, far larger than other blessed lands. Before Giant Sun Immortal Venerable became an immortal, he inherited this place luckily and became the blessed land’s new owner. After Giant Sun became an Immortal Venerable, and obtained unparalleled power, he displayed great methods and set up the tradition of the Imperial Court contest, allowing this ancient blessed land to continue existing until now.

Fang Yuan flew as he recalled.

The methods of an Immortal Venerable were beyond his understanding. Who knows how Giant Sun Immortal Venerable managed to do it, but the result was, under his manipulation, Imperial Court blessed land no longer suffered from heavenly tribulations or earthly calamities.

Hiss hiss hiss...

After flying for an hour, past numerous towers, Fang Yuan was provoked by a giant python on a small valley.

This bright red giant python was at least a hundred meters long, its body was as thick as a tower.

There was a sharp horn on its head, a pair of blood eyes stared at Fang Yuan fixatedly, hissing with its tongue continuously.

Its tongue was a creepy purple color, and there were eerie blue flames on it.

"Eh? It’s a rarely seen eerie fire dragon python." Fang Yuan was slightly shocked.

At this moment, the giant python opened its mouth, and shot out a carriage-sized blue purple flame.

The flame approached quickly, as the temperature in the air rose sharply, from a few hundred steps away, Fang Yuan’s hair and eyebrows were showing signs of drying up. It showed the terrifying temperature of the blue purple flame!

Fang Yuan’s eyebrows rose as he flapped his eagle wings, going to a higher altitude and avoiding the flame easily.

Killer move – Four Arm Wind King!

He activated more than ten Gu worms at once, his crystal purple was expending rapidly, meanwhile two bronze arms grew out of his body.

Thereafter, he flew down like a comet, straight towards the python.

Bam!

He crashed fiercely into the eerie fire dragon python, engaging in fierce combat with it.

At once, smoke rose as shockwaves were sent out, flames shot out as the valley shook.

Eerie fire dragon python was a mutated beast king, mutated beasts has rank four battle strength, while their king had strength equivalent to a rank five Gu Master. But Fang Yuan was rank five peak stage long ago, and after using his killer move, his battle strength was even higher.

If the eerie fire dragon python laid low and hid itself, Fang Yuan might not have noticed it while being on the move. But since it provoked him on purpose, Fang Yuan felt the urge to hunt and improve his killer move by using it as a training dummy.

After half an hour, the battle was over.

Fang Yuan’s body was charred black, he stood in the completely destroyed and ruined valley.

The eerie fire dragon python’s huge body was half covered in broken mountain rocks.

Fang Yuan coughed a few times, throwing up some blood.

The improved killer move had much less severe aftermath than before. A part of the reason was that the eerie fire dragon python did not have wisdom like humans, it could not find out Fang Yuan’s weakness amidst battle.

If the wind was restricted, Fang Yuan would be in a much worse state.

This battle was not easy.

Imperial Court blessed land was a great environment, there were many Gu worms, thus there was a larger number of fire path wild Gu worms on the eerie fire dragon python. Among them, there were several valuable ones.

Fang Yuan’s killer move was strong, but it did not have much defense against fire path.

If he did not need to dodge the flames, the thirty minute battle would be faster by at least a third.

Fang Yuan started collecting his loot.

This mutated beast king’s body was full of value. For example, the python blood was a top ingredient in feeding blood path Gu worms. The python skin, tendons etc, would cause a huge commotion if sold in the mortal market.

Especially the eerie fire snake gall, it was extremely valuable, it could even be sold in treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan organised his gains, in order to save time, he only kept the valuable items in his Gu.

"Eerie fire dragon python, they live in caves as a family. If there are any young dragon pythons, I can capture them and place them inside Hu Immortal blessed land to breed. It would be a good investment for the future." Fang Yuan thought about this and searched around.

Very soon, he made a discovery.

"Eh? There’s a Gu Master inheritance here." Fang Yuan did not find a baby dragon python, but found a bright red rock, like that of a fire lotus.

With his expertise, he quickly understood that this was a Gu Master’s work.

When he got close to the huge rock, this fire lotus-like rock opened up in layers, like a blossoming lotus.

The fire lotus rock opened completely, showing the Gu worms inside as well as a stele.

The stele was one with the huge rock, there were northern plains words on it.

Fang Yuan read it thoroughly and understood its existence.

The fire path Gu Master who left behind his inheritance was called Huo Zheng Jun, he was a righteous rank four fire path Gu Master. He entered this valley by accident, and was attacked by the eerie fire dragon python. Before dying from his injuries, he left behind his Gu worms helplessly and made the inheritance.

In the future, if a fated individual comes here, them this set of Gu worms would be his.

Huo Zheng Jun left behind seven Gu worms. But after these years, four died, and only three remained.

Among the three Gu worms, only one attracted Fang Yuan, it was the rank four fire pupil Gu.

When a Gu Master uses fire pupil Gu, fire would burn at anywhere they looked at, burning their opponents. Such a convenient attacking method often caught people off guard.

But it had its weaknesses.

If it was used for a long time, the Gu Master’s eyes would be damaged. They would need to use good healing Gu as well as complementing Gu worms to weaken this side effect.

This fire pupil Gu was Huo Zheng Jun’s core Gu worm.

Aside from the Gu worms he left behind, there were Gu recipes that he recorded on the stele.

Fang Yuan looked at it three times, storing the information inside east window Gu.

Although he did not cultivate fire path, these recipes were useful for him when researching about Gu refinement or even in his cultivation, as a form of inspiration. Especially the refinement recipe of the fire pupil Gu, it had high value.

According to this Gu Master, rank four fire pupil Gu was advanced using rank three fire eye Gu, together with sight blow Gu and some associated Gu refinement materials.

Fang Yuan knew about rank three fire eye Gu, it was a one time expenditure Gu used for investigative purposes. It could transform the eyes into fire eyes, having the ability to see through fog, but it did not work every time, once it failed, one would turn blind.

Fang Yuan knew about sight blow Gu too, Hao Ji Liu from the Hei tribe army had one. He had once used it together with rank four location swap Gu.

Fang Yuan kept the fire pupil Gu, he did not intend to go onto the fire path.

Fire pupil Gu did not suit his current style. While the attacking method was convenient, it was very restrictive, it was too reliant on visual contact.

There were too many strange Gu in this world, there were countless methods to prevent eye contact.

There was no strongest Gu worm, only strongest Gu Master.

Gu worms were the hosts of the great Dao, they were fundamentally tools. When Gu master use them together, they could form great effects. Some combinations were even far superior and harder to counter, they were known as killer moves.

"This means, this should be the first Gu Master inheritance I’ve obtained in Imperial Court blessed land." Fang Yuan thought about it, feeling interested.

In Imperial Court blessed land, there were countless Gu Master inheritances.

It was because of the superb environment, in contrast, many inheritances in the main world were often destroyed by calamities and beasts before the fated person arrives.

Furthermore, all the Gu Masters that entered Imperial Court blessed land were experts that had undergone tough battles, they had to have at least some superior qualities, if they were not heroes or grand conquerors already.

Thus, there were abundant inheritances inside Imperial Court blessed land. Anyone who was fated would have gains.

Fang Yuan kept the three Gu worms inside his aperture, before smashing the stele to bits.

Next, he searched around, finding a cave indeed. He entered the cave and walked to the lowest part of it, at about a hundred meters underground, he found six eerie fire dragon python eggs.

He was troubled now.

If it was a baby eerie fire dragon python, he could bring them away to Hu Immortal blessed land and allow them to hunt freely.

But it was not easy to hatch an eerie fire dragon python’s egg. He needed to use eerie fire and python blood to bathe them daily. After the little dragon python hatches, they need to taught by the eerie fire dragon python personally, on how to use their strength to hunt.

Fang Yuan did not have the time or effort to waste just to hatch these eggs.

There was no choice, he quickly kept these eggs before getting out of the hot cave, flying towards the sky and continuing on his journey without any lingering feelings.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Just like this, Fang Yuan flew for another three days, but could not see even a glimpse of the sacred palace on the plains.

Fang Yuan thought to himself: "It seems that I was transported very far away after entering Imperial Court blessed land. Otherwise with my speed, I would’ve reached the sacred palace within three days."

On the way, Fang Yuan met many Gu Masters and mortals.

They were Hei tribe alliance members, after entering the blessed land, those with ability would gather at the sacred palace. Those who did not would choose a place and settle down.

Imperial Court blessed land was not safe, there were large numbers of wild Gu worms and vicious beasts.

Hei tribe army came here and destroyed their order, disturbing the beasts and worms which had already sorted out their territory.

Thus, conflict and killing was natural.

But all in all, the environment was infinitely better than the outside world, which was face a fierce blizzard.

Fang Yuan had seen several slaughtering scenes along the way. Some were beast group corpses, some were humans with broken limbs.

Imperial Court blessed land had much greater foundation than Hu Immortal blessed land. There was no weather changes in Hu Immortal blessed land, but Imperial Court blessed land had it.

In fact, Imperial Court blessed land had morning and night!

This might not be spectacular in mortal eyes, because in northern plains, there was also day and night, they were used to it.

Only someone like Fang Yuan would understand the true value of this.

It was very rare for blessed land to have weather changes. If there was day and night, it meant that this particular heaven and earth had sufficiently deep foundations, at least, the time path law here was quite complete.

Normally, blessed land with astronomical phenomenon were first rate blessed lands. Fang Yuan’s Hu Immortal blessed land had not reached this level yet.

Day and night was the characteristic of grotto-heavens.

Blessed lands were small worlds. Above blessed lands, there were even more complete and refined small worlds, they were grotto-heavens.

Imperial Court blessed land already had the characteristics of a grotto-heaven, it could be said to be a quasi grotto-heaven. Lang Ya blessed land was originally a grotto-heaven that fell, by now, it had lost its day and night trait.

Night descended.

Fang Yuan looked at the sky, it turned from a glorious gold color to a light and elegant silver.

The daytime in Imperial Court blessed land was a dazzling golden day. At night, it was not completely dark, as silver light shine in the sky.

Flying in the air, Fang Yuan witnessed the changing of the sky.

Silver light rained down, compared to the hot and dazzling golden rays during daytime, it had traces of sharpness to it.

Fang Yuan’s flying speed was slowing down, he looked down and after searching for a while, he found a gentle slope.

With his years of experience, he knew that the gentle slope was a great place to set up camp.

But he was in no hurry to descend, he circled around the slope several times, like a bird flying freely.

Eventually, when he confirmed that this area was safe, he landed and kept his wings.

The strong eagle wings were pitch-black like steel. After Fang Yuan stopped using eagle rise Gu, the wings vanished into thin air, as one or two black feathers were left floating in the air, landing on the grass.

Fang Yuan willed and activated big lizard house Gu.

Immediately, a mystical light shot out from his aperture, landing in front of him.

The light expanded and grew, as a big lizard house Gu eventually appeared.

The lizard opened its mouth and shot out its tongue, showing the door in its mouth.

The tongue was like a red carpet ladder, as Fang Yuan stepped on it, the door opened automatically. After he entered the lizard house Gu, the door closed on its own, as the lizard closed its huge mouth without a gap.

Although Fang Yuan was energetic, he was still of mortal body, when fatigue accumulates to a degree, he will need to rest to ensure that he stays at peak condition in terms of mind and body.

Chichichichi...

After Fang Yuan got into the lizard house, he heard some noises outside.

His gaze concentrated as he muttered: "As expected, it is the blissful snow bats..."

Fang Yuan had already understood the rules, when day turns to night, large groups of blissful snow bats would fly out.

The blissful snow bats were pure white like snow, they were furry and did not look ugly like ordinary bats, in fact they were rather cute.

Such a beast group was huge in scale, each group had about several hundreds of thousands of bats. Among them were beast kings, and myriad beast kings were very common, there were even snow bat beast emperors.

Even with Fang Yuan’s dual aperture and killer move like four arm wind king, he could not fight against them, he could only avoid them.

The snow bats only hunted in the air, eating the particles in the air or flying worms. The big lizard house Gu was not part of their food chain. But because of Fang Yuan’s vigilance, he moved the big lizard house Gu to the back of the slope.

The big lizard curled up into a ball, from the sky, it resembled a huge rock.

Fang Yuan was on the bed as he slept, but before long, the cries of the blissful snow bats became very erratic, as wolf howls could be heard as well.

"What’s going on?" Fang Yuan was woken up by this noise, he opened his eyes and got up from bed, going to the window.

Only to see that in the silvery backdrop, two beast groups were fighting.

The snow-white lump had a grand scale, it was the blissful snow bats. As for the dark-green lump, it was a pack of azure wolves, although they were fewer in numbers, they fought fiercely and had great cooperation.

Although they were many snow bats, under the wolves’ attacks, they suffered huge losses.

Fang Yuan’s brows lifted, feeling slightly shocked.

Azure wolf had a trace of the desolate beast heavenly wolf’s bloodline, thus it could float in mid air even as a cub. A mature azure wolf can use this talent to its limits, able to run freely in the air.

Azure wolves were elites, they were different from ordinary wolf groups. Among the azure wolf group, each azure wolf was at least a hundred beast king!

Azure wolf groups were often small, but they had great battle strength. But regardless of how strong a wolf group is, they cannot withstand the trial of time, and the trials of mortality.

Right now, in northern plains’ sky, barely any azure wolves could be seen. They were getting rarer, going to be extinct soon.

However, as the largest blessed land in northern plains, Imperial Court blessed land had such a huge scaled azure wolf group, it was not a surprise.

The wolves got more energetic as they fought, as the bat group gradually got into a disadvantage, after leaving behind several tens of thousands of corpses, they escaped.

The azure wolves did not have many deaths, most of the azure wolves landed on the ground and started consuming the bat corpses. Some of them remained in the air, looking around and staying vigilant.

Fang Yuan’s heart was moved: "After entering the blessed land, my wolf group had scattered. Imperial Court blessed land is too wide, I cannot gather them here in such a short time. This azure wolf group is really timely, not only can they fly to keep up with my pace, they can even protect me, in the future when we encounter bat groups, we can just charge through."

At the same time, several wolves found Fang Yuan’s big lizard house Gu and surrounded it.

Fang Yuan left the Gu house immediately and kept the big lizard house Gu, charging towards the myriad beast king in the sky.

The wolf group went into a commotion as they attacked Fang Yuan from all directions.

But the azure wolves which had just eaten were moving sluggishly, their battle intent had also decreased severely. This was the best time for Fang Yuan to subdue the myriad wolf king.

Fang Yuan snickered, he turned left and right, making circles in the air. With his flying master attainment, these azure wolves could only chase after him fruitlessly.

The myriad wolf king that Fang Yuan was going after was different from the other two myriad wolf kings, in the earlier battle, it had charged ahead and sustained some injuries, as well as losing some wild Gu on it. Fang Yuan had paid close attention to it earlier, and knew all the wild Gu worms currently on it.

Going up to the myriad wolf king, Fang Yuan activated the killer move four arm wind king and thrashed the wolf king.

This unlucky myriad wolf king was beaten into a daze by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan used this chance to activate rank five wolf enslavement Gu, subduing it.

Once it joined Fang Yuan, it howled and a third of the azure wolf group changed sides along with it.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, it was dangerous to subdue a myriad wolf king under the attack of the wolf group, but now that he had succeeded, the situation was different.

With the wolf group, the situation was overturned.

Under Fang Yuan’s manipulation, the wolf group attacked from left and right, cooperating with him and surrounding the second azure myriad wolf king.

The wild wolf group attacked furiously, as Fang Yuan used his wolf group to form a line of defense, protecting himself. He himself, engaged with the myriad wolf king.

After fifteen minutes, Fang Yuan subdued the second myriad wolf king.

Victory was assured!

The final myriad wolf king saw this and immediately ran, bringing its subordinates to escape with it.

Fang Yuan first stopped his bleeding and checked his own injuries. After checking the battlefield, he kept the big lizard house Gu and shifted the campsite.

This area was filled with the intense smell of blood, quickly, waves and waves of beast groups were attracted. If Fang Yuan continued staying there, he would be disturbed endlessly.

About ten li away, he rested for four hours before flapping his wings and continuing his journey.

But different from before, Fang Yuan was now surrounded by two azure myriad wolf kings, thirty-eight thousand beast kings, and two hundred fifty-six hundred beast kings. It was a huge force.

In the blink of an eye, six days of travelling went by.

In this process, Fang Yuan found three inheritances. They were small inheritances however, in Fang Yuan’s eyes, they were as good as nothing.

What was worth mentioning was, the wolf group expanded.

With the foundation of two azure myriad wolf kings, another was subdued. This way, Fang Yuan had three azure myriad wolf kings under his control.

Imperial Court blessed land was a true land of treasures. There were huge beast groups within, and even the rare azure wolf was a common species here.

Other than the azure wolves, Fang Yuan subdued batches of night wolves, wind wolves, turtleback wolves, and vermillion flame wolves along the way.

These wolves were originally his to begin with, except that they were scattered after entering the blessed land. Fang Yuan had only found a small portion of them by now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Two days later. A high mountain peak protruded Fang Yuan’s vision.

The deep blue mountain was like a lone vulture with a bizarre shape.

Fang Yuan was somewhat startled as his gaze became suffused with joy: "This should be Xing Jiu peak. It seems my direction is correct, according to Gu Immortal Lord Tian Ku’s description in the past life, the place where the vulture’s gaze falls in is the sacred palace!"

Immortal Court blessed land had a lofty and holy position in the hearts of northern plains’ people, and was a spiritual symbol. It was also a cradle which had nurtured many northern plains’ Gu Immortals in the Imperial Court contests before.

When central continent invaded northern plains, they had first attacked this significant strategic location.

Due to the lack of preparations, Immortal Court blessed land was breached by the alliance of central continent’s Gu Immortals and the sacred palace was ruthlessly destroyed, turning into a ruin. Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was also destroyed, vanishing in the surging river of history, and causing people to sigh while wringing their wrist.

Lord Tian Ku was one of the Gu Immortals who participated in the surprise attack against Immortal Court blessed land. Fang Yuan made his plan by referencing the surprise attack methods of the central continent’s Gu Immortals.

"Hmm? There are people on Xing Jiu peak." When Fang Yuan was about to cross the Xing Jiu peak with his wolf group, he suddenly paused as he saw many Gu Masters at the summit of the peak, among were familiar people as well.

His thoughts moved and decided to not hurry on his way, but instead descended to the Xing Jiu peak with his wolf group.

"Pan Ping greets Lord Wolf King."

"Brother Shan Yin, we meet again."

Looking at the Wolf King descending, the Gu Masters all felt their hearts shiver. From among them, two Gu Masters walked out; one was Pan Ping who had become rich and famous with this time’s Imperial Court content, while the other was one of the twin demons Tai Bai Yun Sheng invited, Zhu Zai.

Pan Ping was now already at rank four peak stage, and with sole blade Gu, his battle strength could match against some rank five Gu Masters.

Zhu Zai was a strength path rank five Gu Master and was an expert in close combat, thus he was much more fearful of sole blade Gu than other people. He had been separated from Gao Yang when he entered Imperial Court, and on the way to the sacred palace, he got into an argument with Pan Ping.

"We greet Wolf King!" After Pan Ping and Zhu Zai, the rest of the Gu Masters greeted one after another while kneeling on the ground.

In Ma tribe army, Fang Yuan’s prestige was raised to the highest status, and was recognized as the number one person of this generation. His prestige suppressing Hei Lou Lan and even Ye Lui Sang who had a fire path Immortal Gu.

If not for Chang Shan Yin not being of Huang Jin bloodline and Hei Lou Lan being the alliance leader, there might have been people who would have shouted to change the alliance leader.

"Stand up, there is no need to be so restrained." Fang Yuan was sitting on an azure myriad wolf king as he lightly nodded and then directly asked, "For you guys to gather here, what inheritance did you discover?"

Everyone inwardly grumbled.

The truth was indeed so. At first, someone had discovered an inheritance in Xing Jiu peak, but did not have enough strength to get it. Helplessly, the Gu Master called for other Gu Masters to explore together. But the result was, they lost several people instead.

The Gu Masters were no resigned to failure and searched all around for help, inviting Pan Ping and Zhu Zai one after another.

The two, for their respective benefits, competed with each other, creating the situation to turn into a stalemate before finally Fang Yuan crashed in.

Now, since Fang Yuan directly asked it, Pan Ping and Zhu Zai did not dare to hide it and could only explain this matter.

"Lord Wolf King, it is fortunate you are here. This inheritance opens every seven days, and during the opening, it lets out a soaring high starlight and reveals a starlight door. This duration is not only extremely short, there are also insect groups that rush out of the starlight door, preventing us from entering." Pan Ping introduced with a slight smile.

"There is only a short time before the inheritance opens now. Lord Chang Shan Yin, since you graced us with your presence, I represent all the Gu Masters here to request you to uphold justice." Zhu Zai said with sincerity on his face.

The corners of Pan Ping’s lips twitched as he glanced at Zhu Zai with extreme disdain.

’Zhu Zai’s reputation of being a famous expert in the demonic path is laughable, he actually is going so far in his flattery!’ Pan Ping was filled with disdain towards Zhu Zai.

’Wolf King might be strong, but I, Pan Ping, will have a day when I can reach his level!’ Pan Ping was young, his heart still had arrogance, but he did not show it, instead lowering his head to show his respect towards Wolf King.

He was a demonic path Gu Master and naturally was extremely clear of his current situation and understood the logic of being able to bow and submit.

Fang Yuan straightforwardly agreed, immediately becoming the main person in charge here.

As time gradually passed, everyone was indeed able to see starlight gradually filling the summit.

When the time arrived, the starlight majestically soared up, piercing through the sky. A small door then slowly opened in the dazzling starlight.

Bzzz Bzzz Bzzz....

Large numbers of insect groups rushed out like a tide.

These insect groups were of all kinds of colors with many wild Gu mixed among them; their stance was fierce but they only hovered near the starlight door and did not pounce upon the people.

Clearly, this was a test.

Fang Yuan carefully observed before snickering - this insect group test was not difficult. Even without him, with the combined strength of the rest of the Gu Masters, they would be able to overcome this.

However, Pan Ping and Zhu Zai’s internal dispute caused the overall strength to be divided with other Gu Masters supporting different sides; no one conceded which allowed Fang Yuan to take this opportunity.

Fang Yuan glanced at Pan Ping and Zhu Zai; these two both had somewhat unsightly expressions right now.

Fang Yuan did not care, instead he sent an order: "These insect groups are often more difficult to deal with than beast groups. All of you, listen to my arrangement, and we will be able to reduce the losses and deal with this easily."

Everyone promptly agreed. Under Fang Yuan’s command, they attacked in segments, drawing away the insect group and exterminating them.

After a dozen or so breaths of time, most of the insect groups had been drawn away and the originally tight defense line now had a huge gap.

Pan Ping said in joy: "Lord Wolf King is truly amazing! All of our eyes were obscured, exterminating the insect groups is not important, the main thing was to open a passageway. With this, we will have plenty of time."

Zhu Zai also sighed: "Having Lord Wolf King to lead us is our fortune."

But Fang Yuan’s next words shocked them: "You guys stay here to hold back the insect groups, don’t make a mistake. I will make a trip inside."

With that, he suddenly rushed to the starlight door with the wolf group.

"Thi... This... Lord Wolf King..." Zhu Zai’s expression paled, he had not expected Fang Yuan to act so selfishly in the open.

Pan Ping’s eyes also opened wide as his heart filled with anger at the injustice.

Under everyone’s gazes, Fang Yuan first sent an azure wolf to investigate the inside and seeing there were no dangers, he rode an azure wolf king and entered the door.

Of course, he left behind a large number of azure wolves to form a defensive line around the entrance to protect his escape route.

"Didn’t they say Wolf King was proud and aloof, how could he be so shameless?"

"He is truly too overbearing, this inheritance was clearly discovered by us first, but now it was snatched by Chang Shan Yin!"

"Chang Shan Yin has let down the name of the grand Wolf King, he actually left us out here..."

The people present were all furious but they did not dare to express their anger.

"Lord Pan Ping, should we also charge in?" A rank three Gu Master rolled his eyes, then turned towards Pan Ping and urged him.

Pan Ping snorted and sent this Gu Master flying with a kick, shouting fiercely: "If you want to go in, feel free. What, you want me to test the water?"

"Lord, you misunderstood, how could I dare!" The rank three Gu Master immediately retorted.

"Get lost!"

Pan Ping angrily rebuked while clenching his fists tightly.

He rigidly looked at the starlight door with sharp light flashing past his eyes.

The gap that had been cleared was now jammed with azure wolves. There were two myriad wolf kings, dozens of thousand wolf kings, over 300 hundred wolf kings, and even over two hundred guarding the air.

Pan Ping could not charge through this scale of wolves.

His thoughts turned around and he then looked at Zhu Zai, speaking in a faint ridiculing tone: "This is the result of you wanting Wolf King to uphold justice?"

Zhu Zai coldly glanced at Pan Ping, immediately seeing through Pan Ping’s thoughts.

He snorted inwardly with disdain: ’This Pan Ping is still young and has been infected by hastiness gained from the recent fame. He actually wants to entice me to ally with him to break the wolf group’s defense line, too naive! Is Wolf King so easy to deal with? Even if Wolf King only left behind one ordinary night wolf, I would not dare to make a move. This brat simply overestimates his own abilities!’

Pan Ping furiously snorted as he saw Zhu Zai not answering him, and could only swallow the words that he had been about to speak.

Fang Yuan arrived before a courtyard after entering the starlight door.

The style of the courtyard was peculiar, it was completely constructed out of blue metal and its shape was strange and abstract, not belonging to any style of the five regions.

Fang Yuan pushed upon the gate and entered. The courtyard was covered in a layer of thin light cotton, and appeared mysterious, quiet and magnificent.

At first, Fang Yuan moved cautiously, but after searching around once, he did not find any mechanisms for tests or traps.

The courtyard had six rooms, and Fang Yuan explored all of them.

"So over a hundred years ago, this was the residence of northern plains’ great poet Du Min Jun." Fang Yuan received the entire inheritance left behind by the courtyard master and learned this person’s identity.

Du Min Jun was a rank five Gu Master, he travelled alone and had never married in his whole life. He was called Vagrant Lone Star by people. He was the famous Poet Immortal in northern plains and his verses mostly portrayed the starry sky, his longing towards his hometown and his powerless struggle against fate.

He was proud and noble, and separated himself from mortal affairs. He had been pursued by many northern plains’ women throughout his life and there were even men who pursued him, but they were all heartlessly rejected by him.

Future generations evaluated and praised him: He was immersed in his own world, although he was in northern plains, his mind was in the starry sky. He was not a northern plains’ man, he was a poet, he was a Poet Immortal who was denounced to the mortal world from the starry sky!

"So Du Min Jun eventually chose to suicide at this place." Fang Yuan sighed.

Du Min Jun was not able to endure the melancholy in his heart in the end; he built his final residence in Xing Jiu peak and ended his life of his own accord. What he had left behind were countless poems to be read and admired by the later generations.

Du Min Jun had outstanding talents and his inheritance was also extremely valuable.

First of all was a emotion poetry Gu. Emotion poetry Gu was especially used to store emotions and along with painting idea Gu, was a wisdom path Gu. It was extremely rare and very expensive.

Then, there were large numbers of star path Gu worms of all types. It basically had all the star path Gu of northern plains.

Fang Yuan was amazed at this.

"It seems Du Min Jun had a fortuitous encounter, otherwise how could he have so many and such complete star path Gu worms? Hmm? He actually innovated an entire set of star Gu recipes?"

Fang Yuan flipped through the recipes and realized how shockingly talented Du Min Jun was.

He founded a set of new Gu, from rank one ’a bit of star Gu’ to rank two ’brilliance of two stars Gu’, rank three ’three stars in the sky Gu’, rank four ’four stars cube Gu’ to rank five ’five stars aligned Gu’.

This set of Gu worms was especially targeted star path Gu and could raise star path Gu’s effects by a huge degree; it was equivalent to a non-mainstream amplify effect Gu. But this set of Gu worms had much higher success rate than amplify effect Gu, moreover their refinement materials were extremely common. This meant, if this set of Gu recipes was spread, it would definitely lead to a huge rise in popularity of star path Gu and would have some amount of influence towards all Gu Master paths!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Although I am not a star path Gu Master, if I refine this set of star Gu, it would be a huge help in opening the stargate and linking to Hu Immortal blessed land."

Fang Yuan could not help but feel a bit of joy in his heart.

He had invested heavily earlier to nurture a batch of starlight firefly Gu in his Hu Immortal blessed land. He also got many air bubble fish to increase the starlight firefly Gu’s growth.

But even so, the starlight firefly Gu’s expenditure was greater than its production.

Every time the stargate was opened, large numbers of starlight firefly Gu would be used. But to nurture starlight firefly Gu, a lot of time was needed.

It was easier for Fang Yuan back in northern plains, when he could use the starlight in the sky for one of the two sides of the gate. But in Imperial Court blessed land, there was no starlight in the sky. Thus, to open the stargate, he would needed to expend even more starlight firefly Gu.

But if he could refine this set of Gu that could amplify the power of star path, one starlight firefly would be able to achieve the effects of a few, that way, he would have several times less expenditure than currently.

"Furthermore, this Gu recipe is interesting, the thought process and viewpoint is different from the norm, it is like a deduction done using Earth’s science and math. To think that Poet Immortal was so knowledgeable, having such incredible ideas."

Fang Yuan could see a portion of Poet Immortal’s wisdom from this Gu recipe.

Taking all that was valuable in these few rooms, Fang Yuan returned back to where he came from.

Du Min Jun was a righteous path Gu Master, his inheritance was naturally a righteous path inheritance, there was only one trial and was not difficult.

When Fang Yuan returned to the mountain peak, the worm group that was troubling everyone had dispersed.

"Lord Chang Shan Yin, you are finally back! I wonder what gains lord had made inside?" Pan Ping’s expression was ominous as he walked up to Fang Yuan. His intention was obvious: You Wolf King took the meat, you have to at least leave us the soup right!

"Hahaha, congrats Lord Wolf King, with this inheritance, you are like a tiger who gained wings." Zhu Zai cupped his fists and spoke, not mentioning anything related to splitting the gains.

Fang Yuan nodded lightly: "This inheritance was set by Poet Immortal Du Min Jun, there are still a lot of beautiful treasures left inside. You can go take it."

Saying so, he sat on the azure myriad wolf king and flew into the sky.

Pan Ping saw him leaving and immediately shouted: Sir Chang Shan Yin! We restrained the worm group for you painstakingly, yet you took all the best things inside the inheritance, according to the rules, you have to give us some compensation."

"Compensation?" Fang Yuan stopped his wolf, floating in the air as he looked at this Sole Blade General with a half-smiling expression.

"What compensation do you want?" Fang Yuan asked.

Pan Ping expressionlessly requested: "We can’t determine what compensation to get yet. Why don’t lord show us the inheritance you obtained, so that we can evaluate it?"

"Hehehe." Fang Yuan laughed, looking at Pan Ping amicably: "Look at this compensation, are you happy with it?"

Saying so, he willed and the azure wolf group surrounded Pan Ping from the ground and the sky tightly.

Pan Ping’s expression changed, he held onto his scimitar as he shouted: "Lord Wolf King, what are you doing?"

Fang Yuan sat on the wolf back, looking down at Sole Blade General, snickering.

Howl!

The azure wolf group moved and charged at Pan Ping.

Pan Ping’s expression turned into shock as he blocked left and right, unleashing all his moves.

He was a rank four peak stage cultivation, after getting much gains in the battles, he had high quality Gu worms that were a complete set, his battle strength far surpassed his previous state.

But the azure wolves were not ordinary wolves. Each one was at least a hundred beast king, this meant that they each had large numbers of wild Gu in them.

After Pan Ping killed several azure wolves, he could not hold on anymore, bleeding profusely as he got into a desperate situation.

"Lord Wolf King, you are too overbearing. We are of the same army, are you trying to kill me?!" He shouted loudly, trying to suppress Fang Yuan using righteousness.

The other Gu Masters had no idea what to do.

Fang Yuan’s overbearing attitude made them uncomfortable. But because of his strength, they did not dare to say anything.

"Lord Wolf King, please calm down. Pan Ping did not know what was good for him, he verbally insulted lord, but lord is such a grand hero, why is there a need to put yourself at his level?" Zhu Zai urged quickly.

Pan Ping was Hei Lou Lan’s beloved general, it is said that he was already part of Hei tribe. If he died here, when Hei Lou Lan pursues the matter, he might not do anything to Chang Shan Yin, but he Zhu Zai would be doomed.

Since Zhu Zai joined Hei tribe alliance army, he naturally wanted to join Hei tribe!

"Zhu Zai, you’re overthinking this, I am not angry." Fang Yuan smiled at Zhu Zai lightly, but the azure wolves were attacking even more fiercely under his manipulation.

Zhu Zai’s heart was anxious, but he was secretly shocked by Fang Yuan’s ruthlessness.

Over there, Pan Ping was in a critical state, he activated sole blade Gu but could only defend himself, he could not break out of the wolves’ encirclement.

"Lord Wolf King, please have mercy. Pan Ping is going to die!" Zhu Zai showed an expression of fear as he urged once again.

Fang Yuan finally stopped his attack, sighing at Zhu Zai: "Sigh, I am not violent, but this junior does not know how to respect his seniors. If I do not teach him a lesson today, is he going to dance on my head in the future?"

"Yes, yes, yes, lord is absolutely right!" Zhu Zai quickly answered.

Fang Yuan waved his hand and the azure wolves stopped attacking, they moved back but the encirclement was still present.

Without the pressure of the wolves, Pan Ping collapsed on the ground.

He was bathed in blood and covered in injuries, he breathed roughly as he stared at Fang Yuan with eyes filled with hatred.

Fang Yuan saw his expression and laughed: "It seems you have not had enough? Maybe my lesson wasn’t severe enough, Zhu Zai, what do you think?"

Zhu Zai shuddered, he could see the overwhelming killing intent hidden in Fang Yuan’s calm gaze. He quickly waved his hand: "Enough, it is enough. Pan Ping had received a sufficient lesson. Pan Ping! Quickly apologise to Lord Wolf King!"

Pan Ping clenched his fist, he gritted his teeth as he took a few deep breaths, closing his eyes and saying with much pain: "Lord Wolf King, I... I am sorry!"

He howled in his heart however: ’ Today’s humiliation, I will return it to you a hundred fold! Wolf King, remember this! I am not someone you can humiliate as you please!’

Pan Ping was a vigilant and low-profile person, but after the Imperial Court contest, the pride in the deep parts of his heart burst out. Especially in the battle against Liu tribe, he was first killed by three heads six arms, but was revived by Tai Bai Yun Sheng later using man as before Gu.

Such a revival process made his nature change slightly, making him feel like he was a ’person blessed by the heavens’.

’According to the rules, I should be allowed to check the gains from the inheritance. Wolf King, you are too overbearing, you will definitely regret all that you did today! Although you are strong now, it is only because you started cultivating several years earlier than me. One day, I will catch up to you, surpass you, and return all this humiliation right back at you!’ Pan Ping screamed internally.

Fang Yuan naturally had no idea what he was thinking, but he was not interested either.

"If I kill him here, Hei Lou Lan would not pursue the matter with me. But this is a demonic act, it clashes with my identity. Furthermore, it does not benefit my future plans at all. I might as well leave this Pan Ping for the future..."

Pan Ping only had one sole blade Gu which Fang Yuan had some interest in.

If he was killed now, Fang Yuan would probably not receive the Gu.

Thus, Fang Yuan said: "Since you admitted your mistake, that is very good, it means you have noticed my hard work. A junior should behave like a junior, do you understand now?"

"Un... understood..." Pan Ping shut his eyes, he was furious but he squeezed out the words.

Fang Yuan snickered, he understood his feelings but he did not expose him, only continuing to say: "Very good. Since that is the case, compensate me. In order to educate you, I made quite a loss, look at my wolves, fifteen corpses are lying here."

"What?!" Pan Ping opened his eyes out of pure rage.

"What, are you unwilling?" Fang Yuan smiled lightly, looking at Pan Ping with an obvious expression of mockery, like a cat toying with a mouse.

"I, I am willing to!" Pan Ping breathed in deeply, nodding his head as he accepted his fate.

"Mm, this is the attitude of a junior indeed." Fang Yuan chuckled, smiling gently and kindly. But in everyone’s view, he looked extremely scary.

"It was all thanks to lord." Zhu Zai was smiling at the side.

"Mm, of course." Fang Yuan nodded in agreement, smiling as he accepted this hypocritical flattery. He then looked around: "What about you guys? Do you need some lessons too?"

Everyone quickly rejected him with pale expression, they were shuddering, obviously scared out of their wits.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, extorting all of Pan Ping’s Gu recipes and several of his Gu worms.

Pan Ping was extremely furious, the few Gu that Fang Yuan chose were critical to his Gu set, without them, his strength would fall by at least two levels.

After toying around with Pan Ping, Fang Yuan felt the fun turning into boredom as he patted the wolf head, rising into the sky: "That will be all, there are still rather good things inside, they are unique. Go ahead and take them."

Everyone heard this and were revitalized. Many people thought: Lord Wolf King is truly righteous, it was natural for him to take the bulk of the meat, Lord Pan Ping was simply too small-hearted.

Only until Fang Yuan and the azure wolf group vanished into the sky did everyone start moving towards the starlight door.

According to seniority, Zhu Zai and Pan Ping were the first two to charge in.

The two first entered a small courtyard, but only found Du Min Jun’s original poems. As for Gu worms, Gu recipes, they were all swept away by Fang Yuan, not a trace of them were left.

"Lord Wolf King was right, these are really unique treasures." Zhu Zai held the poems in his hand as he laughed bitterly.

Pan Ping who was hopeful and wanted to get some benefits to recoup his losses had a dark expression.

Puu!

Suddenly, he threw up a mouthful of blood as he fainted from anger.

Several days later.

"With my current speed, the sacred palace should be close by." Fang Yuan rode on the azure myriad wolf king’s back, pondering to himself.

Soon after, his gaze became fixed at an area on the ground below him.

"Eh? This terrain is so familiar, don’t tell me..."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan looked at the ground.

He saw that there was a mound protruding high up above the ground.

There were no forceful contours on the mound, there was an opening on it that showed a huge hole, like a tunnel underground.

As for the surroundings of this mound, it was a huge swampy area.

There were sparse trees in the swamp.

On the southwest side, there was a river. The river water was not clear, but it was a very long river, both the start and end of the river were beyond Fang Yuan’s field of vision.

"Light in the soil, shine up to a hundred thousand feet high, swimming in the sky for a hundred li, praising plum fragrant snow." Looking at this scene, Fang Yuan could not help but think of this phrase in his mind.

"Is this Di Qiu inheritance ground?" Fang Yuan had a flash of inspiration as he felt dazed.

Back then, he had obtained information about Di Qiu inheritance from a fake grey-white stone slab. The painting idea Gu on the grey-white stone slab etched this map into his brain.

Thus, Fang Yuan had a clear memory of it, he could not forget it even if he tried.

He flapped his wings and flew around it in the sky, confirming that this terrain was exactly as he remembered.

"So this is it. I was wondering before, an inheritance using terrain as a clue was not reliable. If this was outside in northern plains, the terrain could be easily changed or destroyed. But in Imperial Court blessed land, that would be a different case." Fang Yuan thought.

This Imperial Court blessed land opened once every ten years. The victors of the Imperial Court contest would enter and might change the terrain due to battles.

However, when Imperial Court blessed land closes, the terrain slowly recovers.

Until ten years later, it would reopen after being restored to its original state.

"Di Qiu inheritance... since it was set up inside Imperial Court blessed land, and even had an innovative idea of using a fake grey-white stone slab to do it, the owner definitely put in huge effort and time for this. The inheritance should not be bad."

With such thoughts, Fang Yuan slowly flew to the mound, after observing the mound’s entrance for a while, he summoned several azure wolves, and entered the dark hole.

Fifteen minutes later, the azure wolf returned to Fang Yuan unscathed.

This deep hole looked pitch black from the outside, but once someone entered, they would realize that it was full of glowing moss, it was not dark at all.

There was nothing inside the hole, the air was moist and there were only rocks and moss.

Fang Yuan personally entered to check it out, but still found nothing.

He frowned slightly, leaving the place. He was prepared for this result long ago: "This inheritance is not simple, if it can easily obtained, others would have gotten it long ago. Of course, I cannot rule out the possibility that someone else got it before me."

But Fang Yuan analyzed and realized that the possibility of that was very low.

"To come here, there are two conditions, one is to obtain the clue to the inheritance, and decipher the grey-white stone slab, a Gu Master skilled at appraisal is needed to do it. Secondly, they need to enter Imperial Court blessed land, that means they need to survive the Imperial Court contest, thus they need to have a keen eye, in order to be part of the victors."

"This inheritance is not simple at all. It seems that to get it, I will need to interpret the cipher." Fang Yuan concluded.

Light in the soil, shine up to a hundred thousand feet high, swimming in the sky for a hundred li, praising plum fragrant snow.

What was this cipher trying to say?

Fang Yuan thought about it but he got no answers. Even though he had many thoughts, none of them lead to any conclusive ideas.

"Nevermind, I’ll leave it at that. There is still some time left inside Imperial Court blessed land."

Fang Yuan flapped his wings and flew, bringing the wolf group with him towards the blessed land’s central sacred palace. That was the most important part of his plan, he spent so much time disguising himself, it was all in order to enter Imperial Court blessed land.

Obtaining landscape as before Gu was his top priority, but other than that, it was the inheritance of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Not must him, most of the strong Gu Masters would choose to go to the sacred palace.

The sacred palace was the central area of Imperial Court blessed land, it was the essence of the blessed land.

The sacred palace was one of the four resting chambers of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, it was also his most important resting chamber. His other chambers were in eastern sea, western desert and southern border.

In central continent, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had an even larger and grander resting chamber in the sky, it was situated within Longevity Heaven.

In history, there were ten rank nine Gu Masters, known as ’Immortal Venerable’ and ’Demon Venerable’.

These ten existed across the long river of time, from the immemorial antiquity era to the remote antiquity era, to the olden antiquity era, to the medieval antiquity era, and finally, the late antiquity era. Each one of them was the absolute expert of their time, they were unparalleled and invincible in the world. At the same time, they each had their specialities and unique abilities, they were all very different.

The bloodthirsty Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, the mysterious Red Lotus Demon Venerable, the knowledgeable Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the peaceful Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable...

Similarly, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was also a person full of legends and incredible stories.

He was a demonic path Gu Master born of northern plains. He was always lucky and fortunate in his life, having lots of good events. Not only could he avoid dangers, he could even turn them into blessings.

After he became a demonic path Gu Immortal, he was a casonova and toyed with women everywhere, no one could restrain him. Even the number one fairy of Spirit Affinity House in central continent back then, one of the top ten sects, became his wife.

Because of that, he became an external supreme elder of Spirit Affinity House, and converted over to the righteous path.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had a dissolute nature, after becoming an Immortal Venerable, and ascending to the Immortal Court, he became the fourth generation

Immortal King. He next build five great resting chambers, and had over several tens of millions of concubines.

He was extremely energetic, when he was a thousand years old, he was still taking in young girls from all over the world to expand his harem.

Thus, among all of the venerables, he had the most offsprings.

He had too many children, he could not even remember most of their names.

These children were spread all over the five regions. Right now, they were mostly concentrated in northern plains, and those Gu Master who had Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's bloodline, were collectively known as the Huang Jin family.

"Women are like clothes while brothers are like our hands and feet.""Hereditary monarchy!""Beauty is the natural dowry of a woman.""I wish I could marry every single woman in the world!" All these were his catchphrases.

Even though time flowed mercilessly, and eras changed, he still left behind a dazzling proof of his glorious existence in history.

Especially in northern plains, Huang Jin family controlled nearly the entire region, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was still influencing every generation thus far.

Sacred palace, the central control hall.

Night.

The silvery brilliant light shone on Hei Lou Lan's face.

He raised his head as he looked at a plaque on the central control hall. His giant bear-like body stood upright under the silver light.

As the alliance leader, with the Huang Jin bloodline flowing in him, once he entered Imperial Court blessed land, he would automatically arrive in the sacred palace.

This plaque in the central control hall was huge. It was sixty meters long, twenty-five meters wide, and there were two huge words on it — Hereditary Monarchy!

The golden light shining off it was clear and dazzling.

The central control hall was huge and grand, like the house of a giant. Under this plaque, even Hei Lou Lan's fat body seemed tiny.

"Hereditary monarchy huh..." He looked with a complicated expression, there was pain and hatred, admiration, anger, and aloofness.

"Lord." Cunning Gentleman Sun Shi Han came over, calling out softly.

"What is the matter?" Hei Lou Lan turned around, his expression had been completely sealed away, he returned to his usual arrogant, boorish, and irritable attitude.

Cunning Gentleman did not feel anything amiss as he took out a letter from his pocket, reporting: "This is Sole Blade General Pan Ping's letter. He said in the letter that Wolf King Chang Shan Yin devoured an inheritance alone, extorting him in public and made very vile actions. He hopes lord can seek justice for him."

"Oh?" Hei Lou Lan stretched out his fat right arm.

Cunning Gentleman quickly passed the letter to him with both hands.

"Lord, I am not trying to be nosy, but this Chang Shan Yin is getting more overbearing. He actually bullied and humiliated his own alliance mate. Sigh, Lord Pan Ping was too kind hearted, he thought about old relationships and wanted to share an inheritance with Chang Shan Yin. But the result was that he was treated like this. Wolf King Chang Shan Yin has great merits indeed, but this does not mean he can act as he wish. Otherwise, if everyone was like him, wouldn’t we be in complete chaos?"

Cunning Gentleman carefully chose his words while Hei Lou Lan was reading the letter.

Hei Lou Lan snorted, stretching out his hand: "Hand it over."

"Ah, lord you mean..." Cunning Gentleman was shocked.

"This is only Pan Ping’s side of the story, Zhu Zai should’ve sent a letter too." Hei Lou Lan had a sharp gaze.

Cunning Gentleman quickly laughed: "Lord is truly wise and mighty, I am in complete awe."

Hei Lou Lan took the second letter and swept through the content, he was expressionless and Sun Shi Han could not read his intentions at all.

This letter was merely Zhu Zai seeking credit for his actions, combined with the first letter, Hei Lou Lan understood what had happened.

He squeezed with his hand and the two letters were corroded into nothingness by a dark light.

"After Pan Ping and the others arrive, go to the supply camp and give them some compensation." Hei Lou Lan instructed.

"Yes, lord." Cunning Gentleman bowed, but after a while, he raised his head in confusion as Hei Lou Lan did not speak further: "Are we not punishing that Wolf King Chang Shan Yin?"

"Punish? What a joke!" Hei Lou Lan laughed: "Why do I need to punish him? If it was me, I would’ve done the same time. Except I would not do it in such an ugly way."

Sun Shi Han was indignant, urging: "Lord, I am different opinions. This Wolf King Chang Shan Yin regards himself highly and is untamable, we cannot tolerate his actions. Although he has great achievements, without lord’s tribe funding him, would he have such a huge wolf group? He is a northern plains hero, he has great reputation. If lord does not punish him, he is just going to become more overbearing. In fact, he might even overthrow you and in the end, everyone would know the name of Chang Shan Yin, but not lord’s name."

"Hahaha."

"Lord, why are you laughing?"

"Shi Han, you’re overthinking it. After this happened, what reputation would Chang Shan Yin still have? Bullying the weak because he is strong, greedily taking an inheritance for himself, it would ruin his reputation. Furthermore, he does not have the Huang Jin bloodline, without a guest token, he cannot enter the True Yang Building."

After pausing for a while, Hei Lou Lan continued: "From this matter, we can see that Chang Shan Yin is only a mortal. He has desires, and greed, that makes things easy. Moreover, I have Chang tribe and Ge tribe in my hands now. He is already rank five peak stage, such a genius like him would definitely want to progress further. But I will only reveal to him the method to reach Gu Immortal realm after he joins Hei tribe."

"I know you hate Chang Shan Yin, but later, I still need him when challenging True Yang Building. Do not bother me in the future with such tiny matters. Do you understand?"

"Yes lord." Cunning Gentleman lowered his head, his voice slightly trembling.

"Mm, you may leave."

"This subordinate takes his leave." Sun Shi Han brought his disappointment with him as he left the central control hall.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The wind was blowing past the ears.

In the golden sky, brilliant rays were shining down.

The azure wolf group moved in the sky, as Fang Yuan rode the azure wolf king, allowing the wind to blow his hair backwards.

His gaze was solemn, he was pondering internally. These days, he had been trying to decipher the quote from Di Qiu inheritance, but he was making no progress.

A glorious palace gradually appeared in his vision, emerging from the plain horizon.

Sensing this, Fang Yuan looked over as he swept the scattered thoughts in his mind away.

A trace of relief flashed past his face.

Sacred palace, he was finally there!

As Fang Yuan got closer, the large palace slowly showed its full features.

It had eight levels, each was about two kilometers tall. The first level, which was the bottom level, had the greatest surface area. The second level was above the first level, and so on.

Each level had walls around it, forming a hollow tube.

The snow-white walls were nine meters thick, the walls were joined together with no gaps. On the walls, there were rainbow colors towers at set intervals. Each tower had different colors, red, orange, yellow, green, azure, blue, purple, respectively.

After many levels were stacked together, the entire sacred palace looked like a tall mountain.

As Fang Yuan got closer, it was as if the sacred palace was rising from the ground, shooting up and piercing the heavens!

Grand and spectacular, the sacred palace!

Even with Fang Yuan’s depth of knowledge, he was gasping in admiration when he saw this.

"What’s that thing flying in the sky 1 ?"

"Wolf King has arrived!"

"Just like what the information said, that should be the azure wolf group."

Fang Yuan’s arrival attracted the attention of the Gu Masters inside the sacred palace.

At this point, there were almost ten thousand people in the sacred palace. These people were lucky, after entering the blessed land, they landed close to the sacred palace. Thus, they were earlier than Fang Yuan.

Hei Lou Lan had given instructed already, thus the Gu Master tasked to welcome him quickly reacted.

When Fang Yuan landed, there were already people standing at the huge gate of the first level.

The moment Fang Yuan’s myriad wolf king touched the ground, the escort Gu Master came to greet him: "Lord Wolf King, you have arrived. It is my honor to bring you into the city. Your place is residence is on the eighth level, we have already prepared the room for you."

"Mm, no rush, bring me around the place first." Fang Yuan said lightly, getting off the azure wolf. As a form of respect to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Gu Masters were not allowed to ride their steed inside the sacred palace, they could only walk.

"As you wish lord, this is my honor."

Fang Yuan followed the escort Gu into the sacred palace.

Inside the sacred palace, there were large numbers of pavilions and terraces, palaces and courtyards. Looking from outside, the edges of the roof were curved outside, they were silver and golden in color, looking magnificent and grand.

All sorts of buildings were interconnected. At some places, there was lots of free space and buildings were huge. At some places, the pathways were intercrossed and halls were everywhere, making it easy to get lost.

As for the interior of the pavilion hall, be it the pillars or the main support, they were carved with lots of beautiful images and decorations, it radiated an aura of prosperity.

"Lord, this is entertainment palace, the noble ancestor Giant Sun would hold a grand music festival here in this palace daily when he lived here. According to history, during each festival, there would be large numbers of concubines fighting to present their dance, in order to get ancestor Giant Sun’s attention."

"Lord, this is spring soup hall, it has the largest hot spring in northern plains. Ancestor Giant Sun would come here weekly with a thousand concubines, to soak in the water and have fun."

"This is floating scent yard, ancestor Giant Sun had once moved the legendary ’wine pool’ and ’meat forest’ here. Every morning, the meat forest would produce all sorts of delicious meat fruits. At night, the wine pool would produce lots of fragrant wine."

The escort Gu Master introduced each area they went to, he was very eloquent.

Fang Yuan walked casually, looking around, he found it very interesting.

At the sacred palace’s fourth level, the escort Gu Master brought Fang Yuan into the main palace.

"Lord, this is one of the eight main palaces of sacred palace, drawing palace. Ancestor Giant Sun was very talented, he was very skilled at drawing beauties. All of the drawings inside this palace were done by him alone. Please come this way."

The escort Gu Master opened the side door of the palace, inviting Fang Yuan in.

The eight main palaces of sacred palace had main doors, but only Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could use them. Although he was dead already, this rule was passed down, and his descendants followed this rule as a form of respect and reverence towards Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Once they entered the palace, a large wall of drawings filled Fang Yuan’s vision.

There were nothing in this drawing palace, but huge walls. On these walls, there were all sorts of beauties, alluring ones, innocent ones, smiling ones, or those deep in thought. They were in all sorts of postures and positions, there were eighty thousand drawings!

"Those that were drawn here were well-liked by ancestor Giant Sun for a period of time. Of course, it is a woman’s greatest honor to be hand-drawn by a venerable. Ancestor Giant Sun had lots of concubines, but those recorded here were the cream of the crop, they could be preserved eternally here."

The escort Gu master said with a look of admiration.

Fang Yuan did not speak, he only looked and thought to himself: "I wouldn’t call this eternally. At least in my previous five hundred years, Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed by central continent Gu Immortals, and the sacred palace became history. Sigh, true immortality is something that not even someone as strong as an Immortal Venerable could achieve..."

When people came here, they would be stunned by the sacred palace’s grand and imposing aura, even if they were not overwhelmed, they would feel great admiration.

But Fang Yuan could sense a trace of decay and rot in this brilliance.

Without eternal life, so what if you were as strong as a venerable?

Even the casanova Giant Sun had turned into ashes now. His traces were still here, proving his existence, but in Fang Yuan’s opinion, such a proof was filled with the mockery of failure, it was truly pitiful.

His interest had waned.

"Let’s go, bring me to the eighth level’s accommodation." Fang Yuan sighed, instruction.

The escort Gu Master got out of his daze and said hesitantly: "But lord, sacred palace has a lot of famous sites, we just started! Other than these, there are also beauty palace, young girl palace, alluring palace, innocent palace, and unique scent palace. Back then, female variant humans lived there, there were even hairy men. There is also jade statue palace, meant to sculpt beauties, and offer them to the ancestor."

The escort Gu Master was anxious, all these places that he mentioned were not accessible with his status.

He wanted to use this chance to satisfy his curiosity.

But Fang Yuan did not fulfill his wish.

During Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s final years, he rarely went to the mortal realm to stay in sacred palace. He lived in Longevity Heaven, in a reclusive manner.

As for northern plains, large numbers of girls would be chosen for him to fill the sacred palace.

The last time Giant Sun Immortal Venerable came to the sacred palace, he did not meet these girls, instead he built the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and established the rules for the Imperial Court contest, before vanishing from this world completely.

The sacred palace thus faded out of history and those beautiful yet pitiful women became sparrows trapped in cages.

Although Imperial Court blessed land was huge, it had no freedom, it was a prison even though the place was large.

Eventually, they stayed there obediently and exhausted their lifespan. They could not escape, and no one had the guts to save them either.

Under Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s glorious and noble light, countless women were buried in pain, grudge, and sadness.

In Fang Yuan’s eyes, the sacred palace did not have high value.

It was merely Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s inheritance, no Gu Masters dared to set up their inheritance here. As for the precious resources he left behind, they had been taken by previous generations of Gu Masters already. Even the central continent Gu Immortals who came later could not find anything valuable.

The only thing valuable in the sacred palace, was also the entire Imperial Court blessed land, no, more accurately, the most valuable thing in northern plains.

That was at the peak of the eighth level — Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!

As Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had suggested, the Gu house made by Long Hair Ancestor personally.

Rank eight Immortal Gu!

But now was not the time.

At the peak of the eighth level, it was complete emptiness. Only when the ten year blizzard strike would the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building show up.

In the following days, Fang Yuan lived in seclusion, cultivating as he waited for True Yang Building to open.

The azure wolf group was taken care of by others, he did not need to bother with it.

During this period, Hei Lou Lan sent people to invite him, and revealed the intention to recruit him.

To join Hei tribe, and become an external elder?

Towards this suggestion, Fang Yuan said he needed to consider it. Although he showed a moved expression, he would definitely refuse this in this heart.

Human skin Gu could disguise him as Wolf King, but it was a mortal Gu, the investigation of an Immortal Gu could expose him.

The recruitment of external elders was a common trick used by northern plains' super forces. This way, demonic path Gu Immortals could become become righteous, and it would help the Huang Jin tribes greatly in managing northern plains.

As for the incident on Xing Jiu peak, Hei Lou Lan did not mention a word about it. There was a rumor growing however, that Wolf King was extremely overbearing, describing his actions on Xing Jiu peak as vile and evil, using his strength to suppress the weak, the description was extremely biased but it sounded very convincing.

Fang Yuan laughed in his heart, someone was obviously trying to ruin his reputation behind the scenes.

"It is likely to be Pan Ping or Sun Shi Han who has motives to do this, or even Hei Lou Lan. But so what if my reputation turns sour?"

Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had a terrible reputation, he was a demonic Gu Master who toyed with women all over the region. But now? He was a revered Immortal Venerable!

When he expanded his harem, how many women's lives and happiness were ruined by him?

But now, no one publicly accused him of anything.

In this world, strength was everything.

On Earth, one had to be mindful of rumors, it was easy to ruin a person's life with some malicious lies. But that was because they were all mortals, the laws of the world was different, individuals could not surpass the power of society.

But here, it was different.

That was one of the reasons why Fang Yuan loved this world.

Half a month later, there was a water-like ripple in the golden sky.

The entire land started shaking.

Out of nowhere, there was wind as a piercing light shone at the peak of the sacred palace.

The light lasted for forty-five minutes, as it gradually dispersed. A tower appeared at a previously barren area.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

It was a tower.

Like a spring bamboo shoot, it was tall and slender and was upright.

The tower’s shape was vague with all kinds of gorgeous colors, like a body of colorful ink in the shape of a tower as it continually shook.

"This is the initial appearance of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, and only when the storm and snow covers the northern plains, and all the small towers of Imperial Court blessed land sink to the ground, will each layer of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building stabilize. Only then can one enter inside and explore." Fang Yuan stood at the entrance of his residence and looked to the direction of the dome.

At this moment, there were shouts of jubilation and surprise in sacred palace. Gu Masters were cheering in high spirits while many mortals kneeled on the ground, praising the might of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

"But even when Eighty-Eight True Yang Building takes form completely, I won’t be able to enter because I am not a descendant of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and don’t have his bloodline. If I want to enter inside, I would need Hei Lou Lan to get me a guest token. Well, there is no hurry, is True Yang Building so easy to rush into? Hei Lou Lan will need external help like me sooner or later."

After a while, Fang Yuan retracted his gaze and walked back to his room.

As the door of the room closed, the sound of cheers from the outside immediately softened.

Fang Yuan entered a secret room specially meant for cultivation and sat upright on a cushion.

"Both of my apertures have now already reached rank five peak stage. In regards to enslavement path, I have azure wolf group, while with regards to strength path, I have killer move four arm wind king. Combined with my battle experience, I am already at the peak among the mortals. But to deal with a Gu Immortal..."

Fang Yuan’s brows slowly started to furrow.

He was well aware of the enormous gap between immortal and mortal; a mortal going against an immortal was as hard as ascending to heaven.

To him, the best situation right now would be Tai Bai Yun Sheng already having the recipe for Immortal Gu Landscape As Before in his mind.

It would not have been good for Fang Yuan to make a move outside in northern plains, but it would be very convenient for him to do so in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Using Gu to plunder river as before and mountain as before Gu from Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and then plunder the Immortal Gu recipe from his mind.

With such ample conditions, Fang Yuan could jump out of the chessboard and directly kill Tai Bai Yun Sheng who had yet to become an immortal, and then use the third refinement opportunity to request Lang Ya land spirit to refine landscape as before Gu.

However, the possibility of Tai Bai Yun Sheng, a mortal, possessing the Immortal Gu recipe of Landscape As Before was next to nothing.

Moreover, according to the vague rumors in his previous life, when Tai Bai Yun Sheng became a Gu Immortal, heaven and earth reacted and Dao marks attracted each other, making the two rank five Gu spontaneously merge together to form rank six Immortal Gu Landscape As Before.

Fang Yuan had a prudent nature, and would never place all his hopes on an indistinct future.

"If the situation is messed up, then I will have to deal with the Gu Immortal Tai Bai Yun Sheng. At that time, I can only rely on myself. Azure wolf group and four arm wind king clearly won’t be enough."

Fang Yuan’s strength was already at the peak among mortals. Despite cultivation of both enslavement and strength path having the greatest unresolved issue, he was still among the first class of rank five experts.

If compared to southern border, he was in the same level as Shang clan’s genius clan leader Shang Yan Fei and Wu clan leader Empress Wu Ji.

Using the experiences of his past lives, the advantage of rebirth and taking a series of risks, struggling at death’s door several times, Fang Yuan achieved such rapid growth that it would shock the world.

But even so, in front of a Gu Immortal, even if it was a newly advanced Gu Immortal, this strength was not enough.

"To resolve this huge issue, there are only about three ways."

"First is to search Eighty-Eight True Yang Building for the strongest Gu worms or unique methods."

"Second is to secretly make arrangements against Tai Bai Yun Sheng as much as possible so that there will be ample preparation when I have to truly make a move."

"Third is to resolve the problem of enslavement and strength dual cultivation and raise my battle strength further."

Fang Yuan silently pondered.

He was fully aware that he had exhausted almost all his previous life’s foundation in creating four arm wind king. After all, he had specialized in blood path in his previous life and had only dabbled in enslavement and strength paths.

The so-called plots and traps against Gu Immortals were too inferior to be even mentioned and were not reliable. Fang Yuan had advanced to Gu Immortal in his previous life, thus he knew when a mortal transformed to a Gu Immortal, from their head to toe, inside to outside, they would go through baptism, and even their appearance would change.

The only thing that he could truly place high hopes on was Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!

Days passed by, the golden light and silver light in the sky continued to switch between one another.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was still gradually forming, its sunset hues gradually rose and covered most of the sacred palace in its light.

Cool wind breezed through Imperial Court blessed land with birds singing and the fragrance of flowers filling the air. But at the outside world in northern plains, snow had continued to fall for over a month already.

Blizzard was spreading over the northern plains in full force with its bone-chilling cold wind and snow.

Both the sky and ground were a scene of white, and mist covered one’s vision.

Trees had already started dying and were frozen into pillars of ice. Mounds and hills were covered with thick layers of snow and large piles had formed in valleys as well.

Beast groups died in large numbers and even weeds with vigorous life force were also frozen into ice.

Even when one spat, the saliva would instantly turn into ice.

But heaven never blocked all paths, somehow, there would always be a trace of hope left.

In each region of northern plains, there were remnants of tribes. Some were small and some big, and relying on geographically advantageous places like warm pond valley, they were able to resist the wind and snow and survive in the blizzard.

Man tribe who occupied Hong Yan valley was one of them.

Hall of affairs.

The elders divided into two rows with Man tribe leader sitting high at the main seat.

Rank three external elder Shi Wu kneeled on the ground: "Lord tribe leader, I come forward to beg for forgiveness."

"Oh, what is your fault?" Man Tu asked with a slight smile.

"Reporting to lord tribe leader, I was in charge of looking after spirit spring D, but it suddenly froze and dried up yesterday, it is now ruined." Shi Wu respectfully replied.

"Hehehe, not a problem." Man Tu lightly waved his hand; as a matter of fact, he had already known this news.

"Elder Shi Wu, stand up, it is the ten year disaster now, there is a chance of every spirit spring suddenly freezing and drying up. This is not your fault."

’Lord tribe leader’s kindness knows no bounds, I am ashamed!’ Shi Wu was moved to tears and sighed inwardly.

His surname was Shi and was half an outsider to Man tribe. Although he had married into Man tribe, but he had still been pushed aside.

A problem occurred in the spirit spring he had been put in charge of, this matter could have been big or small. Fortunately, this generation’s Man tribe leader was open-minded and did not look into it.

"However, anything concerning spirit springs are major affairs of the tribe. Man Duo, how many spirit springs do we have left now?" Man Tu’s brows slightly furrowed as he asked.

Man Duo was Man Tu’s third son; thin and small in physique but was shrewd and crafty, and had been assisting Man Tu in handling internal affairs of the tribe till now.

He immediately replied: "Lord father, Hong Yan valley now still has seven spirit springs marked A, B, C, E, F, G and H. Among them, G and H spirit springs are already close to drying up and will only last less than a month."

"Alright." Man Tu nodded, "That is to say, a month later, we will only have five spirit springs. Elders, what do you think?"

"Lord tribe leader, this thing is very difficult to deal with. This is a natural disaster, it is almost impossible for humans to reverse the situation, we might as well cut down on the primeval stones given to Gu Masters."

"Hong Yan valley’s eight spirit springs were accumulated bitterly over these ten years by our tribe. The situation of our tribe this year is much better than the previous times. It is all thanks to Lord tribe leader’s wise guidance that we don’t need to worry, other tribes are in a much more worse situation."

"Even if all the spirit springs dry up, it won’t be much problem. Wait till this ten year snow disaster passes, and at that time, new spirit springs will emerge one after another; when fortune arises after extreme suffering."

Elders expressed their thoughts one after another.

Man Tu calmly listened to them and nodded: "Spirit springs are very important for a Gu Master’s cultivation and cannot be neglected. It is difficult for a Gu Master’s cultivation to progress without primeval stones. The blizzard has just started, snow monsters will start roaming about soon. The main defense of the Hong Yan valley will still rely on Gu Masters."

He paused before mumbling: "Let’s do it like this, take out one spring egg Gu from the tribe warehouse and plant it. This new spirit spring shall be titled D."

"Lord tribe leader, spring egg Gu is a rank five Gu." An elder objected in heartache.

Man Tu raised his brows: "So what if it is a rank five Gu? You all know that only with a spirit spring’s supply of primeval stones can our tribe’s Gu Masters advance forward continually. They can then preserve their strength and prepare themselves when resisting snow monsters. As long as there is not a huge loss of our Gu Masters, our tribe can preserve its strength. And when the blizzard passes and spring blossoms, it will be time for our tribe to realize our ambitions!"

Realize our ambitions...

The elders’ eyes brightened at these words.

Man Tu had been putting all his efforts in developing the tribe and under his leadership, Man tribe had continually expanded and swallowed many small tribes over these years. Now, Man tribe was occupying Hong Yan valley, it could already be said to be a ruler of a region.

But from his words, everyone could hear this Man tribe leader still wanted to progress further. The current Man tribe was still not able to satisfy his ambitions!

The elder who had objected quickly apologized: "Lord tribe leader is wise and resolute, I am willing to lay down my life at tribe leader’s command."

"We are willing to give our lives for tribe leader!" Soon after, the other elders spoke together.

"Having everyone with me, we can seek supremacy." Man Tu laughed loudly, then his expression concentrated and he ordered, "Elder Shi Wu will be in charge of the new spirit spring D."

Everyone present gazed at Shi Wu with envy.

Looking after a spirit spring was a lucrative job.

Shi Wu was truly moved this time, his eyes reddened as he said: "I am fortunate to have tribe leader’s trust, I will definitely do my best to repay the tribe!"

The discussions continued for a while longer before everyone dispersed.

Shi Wu did not leave, instead following Man Duo to the tribe warehouse and took a spring egg Gu.

"This is spring egg Gu?" Shi Wu held the Gu in his hand and gazed at it strangely, his tone trembling.

His expression quickly concentrated and he then bowed towards Man Duo: "Third young master, please enlighten me on how to activate this Gu."

Man Duo smiled as he saw Shi Wu adapting to circumstances: "I do not dare to give you advice. This spring egg Gu is a rank five Gu and has extremely high demand on primeval essence, even a rank five middle stage Gu Master cannot activate it at one try. Elder Shi Wu, you have a rank three cultivation, and as such you would need to use lasting Gu and continuing Gu to activate it. But this way, the quickest it will take for you to plant the spirit spring is close to a month. Elder, you don’t need to worry, I will help you by the side during this time."

"I am very grateful to third young master." Shi Wu promptly expressed his thanks.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The location to create the spirit spring had already been decided.

Shi Wu brought the spring egg Gu and went with Man Duo, after making the preparations, he starting using his primeval essence and sent it into the lasting Gu and continuing Gu, before injecting it into the spring egg Gu.

The spring egg Gu floated in the air, absorbing primeval essence as it moved up and down slowly.

For the next eighteen days, Shi Wu slept three hours a day, rushing to eat his meals and settle his excretion. Although it was tough, the effects were showing.

As he continued to inject primeval essence, the spring egg Gu was shining with a brilliant light.

These days, Man Duo had come to inspect again, and upon seeing this, he was overjoyed: "We are almost there. There are mild cracks on the spring egg Gu already, once it breaks, we will succeed. It has been tough on elder Shi Wu."

"Not at all, not at all." Shi Wu refined the Gu while humbly replying.

He was mentally fatigued, his body had gotten thinner. With his cultivation, forcefully activating a rank five Gu was very tiring. But if he succeeded, it would be a huge service to the tribe.

Man Duo continued: "During this elder meeting, lord father had specially mentioned it. Lord Shi Wu’s hard work is evident in everyone’s eyes, if you have any requests, we will try to satisfy it."

Shi Wu was extremely grateful: "I am ashamed, with lord tribe leader’s care, how can I go overboard and request for more. But I have a question."

"Oh? Please speak."

"Young master Man Duo, I feel that Hong Yan valley had been getting colder these days. The surrounding vegetation and beasts have been freezing to death."

Man Duo’s expression turned ugly. Hong Yan valley was indeed facing a problem. It had been mentioned during the last few tribe meetings. The result was, the underground magma supporting Hong Yan valley had been reduced due to unknown reasons.

This was different from historical records.

In the earlier meeting, tribe leader Man Tu flew into a rage, wanting everyone to think of a solution. At the same time, they had to conceal this matter to prevent their morale from sinking.

"Elder Shi Wu is at a crucial moment of refining the spirit spring, I should not tell him this bad news, or his mind will waver and ruin this important matter."

Thinking so, Man Duo lied and reassured Shi Wu.

Shi Wu did not sense anything wrong, he was about to speak but suddenly, his expression changed, shouting: "Oh no, it’s the flying hand snow!"

Man Duo turned around and was shocked: "How can there be flying hand snow in Hong Yan valley?!"

Only to see that in the sky, fierce winds were blowing as palm-sized snowflakes carrying the aura of rank five Gu descended slowly.

"Oh no, come quickly and protect the spring egg Gu!" Man Duo shouted, calling the nearby Gu Masters over.

But the blizzard was powerful, the wind cut like razors and the might of heaven and earth descended, after resisting it for a while, everyone starting to fall into a disadvantage.

"Snow monster!"

"Snow monsters have appeared!"

Trouble comes in pairs, the blizzard gathered and formed into a six meter tall snow monster.

The defense of the Gu Masters was easily broken. In the sky, large numbers of flying hand snow gathered into a huge palm. Under everyone’s furious and indignant, while completely helpless stares, the giant snow hand grabbed the spring egg Gu in the air and squeezed.

Crack!

With a light sound, the snow hand disintegrated.

The snowflakes landed on the ground, the rank five spring egg Gu inside had vanished already.

...

The silver light shone like a miasma gently raining down on Imperial Court blessed land.

Howl howl...

Azure wolf group sprinted on the ground, some ran in the air, while others were dashing with their claws.

Even though there were Gu masters feeding them in the sacred palace, these wolves still desired freedom. They wanted to be ferocious beasts roaming the sky, and not canaries trapped in cages.

As their master, Fang Yuan let them do as they wished. He himself was spreading his eagle wings as he flew in the sky, looking at the ground below him.

It was Di Qiu inheritance.

"Light in the soil, shine up to a hundred thousand feet high, swimming in the sky for a hundred li, praising plum fragrant snow... what does this sentence mean?" Fang Yuan pondered.

He had been coming over to explore the inheritance grounds every few days.

Instinct told him that this Di Qiu inheritance was not simple.

Thus, every time he went out, he used the excuse of walking his wolves, to train them and practise his manipulation skills.

But even so, he could not stay for long.

Fang Yuan was now a person with high status, second to only Hei Lou Lan. His every movement was scrutinized by everyone. He was no longer as invisible as before.

This time, he had no findings, and to prevent suspicion, he could only leave for now.

Even though he could completely occupy this entire area using his status now, Fang Yuan did not do that.

If this inheritance had high value, even if he had great strength, others would compete with him.

He did not have Huang Jin bloodline, to enter Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he needed Hei Lou Lan’s guest token.

However, he had been sending people to scout the area.

The reason was naturally the azure wolf group.

Everytime he went out to hunt with the azure wolf group, there would be a route. Before moving out, he would send Gu Masters to scout out the path for him, and go to the path that had the most prey.

There were five to six routes to choose from each time, but each one of them would be close to Di Qiu inheritance.

One must act flawlessly, Fang Yuan followed the route that he planned and continued hunting with the azure wolf group.

There were a lot of beasts and resources inside Imperial Court blessed land. Especially near the small towers, there were swarms of worms and countless wild Gu.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was something only a small number of Gu Masters had the chance to enter. Most Gu Masters would roam in the huge blessed land, subdue wild Gu, or find inheritances.

Fang Yuan followed the trail and found many Gu Masters.

As for the area near Di Qiu inheritance, there were naturally many Gu Masters passing by.

Fang Yuan was not afraid that Di Qiu mountain would get taken by someone. In fact, he was hoping that someone would find it and trigger it. He would get news of it by then and would be able to strike easily.

After all, he had already used his strength to snatch an inheritance back on Xing Jiu peak.

Rumble rumble...

There were some loud sounds coming from the ground.

Fang Yuan rode the azure myriad wolf king, and looked down, seeing a small tower shining with a bright light, sinking into the ground slowly.

Fang Yuan was not surprised.

In the progress of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s gradually appearance, the small towers in Imperial Court blessed land would slowly sink into the ground.

These small towers were like nests that were filled with all the wild Gu that had grown in the last ten years.

Many people guessed: The wild Gu in these small towers were the energy source to form Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. In a way, these small towers were a portion of the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

This guessed had never gotten confirmation.

Gu Immortals who could confirm this were unable to enter Imperial Court blessed land. And those mortals who could enter were way too weak compared to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, they could not decipher it.

But Fang Yuan was an exception.

"Eighty-Eight True Yang Building has an intriguing design, it is truly a work of heaven. These small towers are indeed a portion of True Yang Building." Fang Yuan was far more knowledgeable than other Gu Immortals in this aspect, because he controlled the most complete information regarding Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

This source of information was Lang Ya land spirit. The land spirit in his life was the rank eight Gu Immortal Long Hair Ancestor who created the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

"Eh? Wait!" Fang Yuan’s body shook, a flash of inspiration appeared in his heart, sweeping away the confusion in his heart.

This moment, he finally found the strange thing about Di Qiu — there was no small tower near Di Qiu!

"Indeed, that is the case." Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with brilliance, in the last few times he brought the azure wolves to hunt, he would either be in the sky near Di Qiu, or the ground near it.

Now that he recalled it, he realized the peculiarity of Di Qiu.

"By logic, every eight li should have a small tower. And every small tower corresponds to the regions in northern plains. But near Di Qiu, there is nothing!"

Thinking so, Fang Yuan got excited.

This was a huge breakthrough!

Following this lead, he could potentially unravel the mystery of Di Qiu inheritance.

But Fang Yuan did not turn back.

Rushing over in an excited manner like this was asking to be suspected.

He controlled his excited emotions, and continued on the route he had prepared. The azure wolves moved out from the sacred palace, and after one round, returned.

The sacred palace was like a mountain peak, the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building at its peak was still nurturing. The aurora it emitted was covering the entire sacred palace. The grand and beautiful sacred palace was shrouded in a mysterious and powerful aura.

Fang Yuan went out to hunt every six or seven days with the azure wolf group.

But plans cannot keep up with circumstances, three days later, the aurora gathered into one point and starting taking form.

The first layer of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had formed!

This was a joyful news, causing the sacred palace to go into a commotion. At once, everyone’s hot topic was about this building.

Of course, most of the Gu Masters could only watch.

Hei Lou Lan went in excitedly, several hours later, he returned in a pathetic state, wounds covering his body.

His injuries were not light, but they could not conceal the shock in his eyes.

During the second expedition, he brought many Hei tribe Gu Masters.

Hei tribesmen had the bloodline of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, they could freely enter and exit True Yang Building without restriction.

During such times, tribesmen were the most reliable. Why was there a need to share with outsiders what one could devour alone?

When Hei Lou Lan returned, he looked extremely tired. As for the Gu Masters who went in, only sixty percent returned.

Thereafter, all sorts of rumors and information spread, they were all regarding True Yang Building.

Some said that the True Yang Building was a work of heaven, it was spectacular; some said that it was difficult to explore, every step was precarious; some said that the rewards for passing it was very enticing...

By now, everyone was moved.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 556: It’s actually a Gu Immortal Inheritance!

Bam!

Hei Lou Lan raised his leg, kicking his tribesman Hei Qi Sheng to the ground.

"Useless thing!" The black fatty cursed, the muscles on his face twitched as he revealed a ruthless and savage gaze.

The hall was silent, all of the Hei tribe Gu Masters did not dare to speak a word.

Hei Lou Lan was called ’Black Tyrant’, it was due to his famous ruthless and cruel personality. Especially when he was obstructed six times by the 54th round, his anger was ignited like a barrel of gunpowder.

"Lord tribe leader, it was my inability, I deserve death!" Hei Qi Sheng sprawled on the ground, begging for forgiveness while prostrating.

"Idiot! Why is there such a useless idiot in our Hei tribe?!" Hei Lou Lan gritted his teeth, kicking Hei Qi Sheng several times. Seeing that he was coughing blood due to the kicks, Hei Lou Lan’s anger subsided slightly.

The surrounding elders were silent, not daring to say a word.

Last time, the elders who pleaded for Hei Qi Sheng were beaten until they received heavy injuries by Hei Lou Lan, they were still bedridden now.

Hei Lou Lan temper had been curbed slightly during the Imperial Court contest. But now that they were in the blessed land, his poor temper and cruel nature were back at full force.

"You are also all idiots, useless trash! Why are you all standing here? Speak, tell me a good method to break through the 54th round. Otherwise, I will dock your salary. The tribe does not feed useless people! I gave you primeval stones, I gave you a luxurious life, raising your status, what was it all for? Now is the time to perform your duties!!" Hei Lou Lan screamed, the windows were shaking from the force of his voice.

The elders were sighing bitterly internally. They were like drooping eggplants, lowering their head and communicating with their expressions, but no one dared to speak first.

Hei Lou Lan stared and looked around, fixing his gaze on elder Hei Pei.

As the most senior and experienced first elder Hei Pei, he gritted his teeth and walked out, bowing in respect: "Lord, the way I see it, this 54th round is a test of enslavement path, it is very difficult and it cannot be passed without master level enslavement attainment. Although elder Hei Qi Sheng is an enslavement path Gu Master that we nurtured, he is not a master. To pass this round, we need Lord Wolf King’s strength."

"Hmph, you are asking me to seek outside help? You want to let the whole world see us Hei tribe as a joke, as a weakling that needs outside reinforcements?" Hei Lou Lan’s gaze was filled with ruthlessness as he screamed fiercely.

Hei Pei’s heart was shivering, but he bowed deeply and responded: "Lord tribe leader is strong and intelligent, you are an amazing leader, the Lord of the Imperial Court. With your presence, whoever dares to think that Hei tribe is useless would be the number one fool in this world. This is not outside reinforcement to be exact. This Wolf King Chang Shan Yin is part of the alliance army, he is your subordinate. Using him for this is but natural. I am sure Chang Shan Yin would be very grateful to lord, after all, he is an outsider but he given the chance to enter True Yang Building, it is his greatest honor."

Hei Lou Lan heard this and his anger expression softened.

The elders watched this as they praised Hei Pei’s eloquence internally, he was indeed skilled to be the first elder.

Hei Lou Lan walked slowly, he was very indignant.

Currently, he had two guest tokens, they were obtained from the 12th and 46th round respectively as a reward from True Yang Building.

It was not that he did not want to waste the tokens, but once he invited Wolf King, the reward for clearing the 54th round would go to Chang Shan Yin.

If it was his tribesmen, Hei Lou Lan could use the authority of the tribe leader to make all of the rewards his. But according to the rules, these rewards should be given to the reinforcement.

The rewards in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was extraordinary, even Hei Lou Lan was deeply moved.

Be it Gu recipes, Gu worms, or others, each item could allow a Gu Master to rise up despite an ordinary background.

Hei Lou Lan walked for several steps, sighing lightly.

He knew that there was no point in forcing Hei Qi Sheng. Hei tribe had nurtured three enslavement path Gu Masters, one died in the Imperial Court contest, while Hei Qi Sheng was the stronger one out of the two left.

But he was not an enslavement master, any master needed sufficient talent, it was not something that could be nurtured through abundant resources.

Hei Lou Lan stopped walking: "Where is Hei Shu?"

"Subordinate is here." Hei Shu was standing outside the hall, he was Hei Lou Lan’s personal Gu Master attendant, hearing Hei Lou Lan’s summon, he came in to greet him.

"Go invite Wolf King here." Hei Lou Lan instructed.

Hearing this, the elders in the hall sighed in relief. Hei Qi Sheng who was lying on the ground relaxed his body — this nightmare was over!

"Yes lord tribe leader." Hei Shu left after receiving his orders.

Bam!

Hei Lou Lan kicked Hei Qi Sheng again: "You trash, why are you still lying here? You want Chang Shan Yin to see how pathetic our Hei tribe is after he comes here?"

"Lord, lord I was wrong!" Hei Qi Sheng quickly apologised profusely.

"Get lost and nurse your injuries!!" Hei Lou Lan screamed.

"Yes, yes, yes lord!" Hei Qi Sheng struggled to get up, leaving in a wobbling state.

Not long after, Hei Shu reported back with an apologetic look: "Lord tribe leader, Lord Wolf King is not in the sacred palace, he is out feeding his wolves."

"What?" Hei Lou Lan’s volume became louder, his brows were raised as his calm expression showed anger again.

The elders were terrified, the first elder Hei Pei accused Hei Shu: "You junior, you do not know how to do your job. Even if Wolf King was not around, how could you return empty-handed? Could you not send a letter over, and state your intention, that Wolf King will come crawling back immediately!"

"Lord, it was not my fault!" Hei Shu cried out innocently: "I already sent a letter over, but Wolf King replied already. He said that he was leading his wolves to hunt, it was a habit and he did not want to cut it in the middle. He wants us to wait, if we cannot wait, we can call Tang Miao Ming and the others instead."

At once, everyone was shocked.

First elder Hei Pei stared with his eyes wide opened, he did not believe it: "How can anyone be so indifferent? Did he really say that?!"

"I have concrete evidence! Lord tribe leader, this is the letter Gu that Wolf King Chang Shan Yin sent back!" Hei Shu said, handing a star letter Gu to Hei Lou Lan.

This was a star path Gu, it was rank four and gave the fastest replies. But it shone in the air as it flew, it created huge commotion and was easy to intercept.

Of course, in Imperial Court blessed land, there was no such worries.

Hei Lou Lan’s mind entered the star letter Gu, as he snickered continuously: "This Wolf King has good temperament, he is able to control his desires so well."

"Lord, Wolf King is an arrogant loner, everyone knows that. The way I see it, he is already laughing secretly, but is trying to put up a front." First elder Hei Pei analyzed, as the others elders nodded in agreement.

"Hmph, of course he is being haughty. He is an enslavement master, and also a flying master. If you guys were masters, would we need to ask an outsider for help?" Hei Lou Lan screamed, causing the elders to shut up as some of the elders lowered their head even more.

Honestly speaking, Fang Yuan was really not placing his attention on True Yang

Building.

He looked at Di Qiu below him, his heart palpitating: "There really isn’t a small tower here. According to the terrain, this area should have a small tower, directly above Di Qiu, but now, this is just a pitch black hole... impressive, the Gu Master who made this inheritance is very impressive!"

The Imperial Court blessed land had a small tower at every eight li interval. Actually, all of them were a part of the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was an Immortal Gu house that Long Hair Ancestor had refined back in the day, it was as high as rank eight.

Next, after Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s preparations, it was a mirror of northern plains. The small towers were all over Imperial Court blessed land, they could be seen everywhere. Each of the towers had thousands of wild Gu, no one dared to target them or they would die.

But now it seems that, the Gu Master who set up Di Qiu inheritance not only moved the small tower, he even set up this inheritance on that spot. Such methods and courage, such abilities, it made Fang Yuan confirm that this mysterious Gu Master was not a simple person.

"No, rather than Gu Master, I might as well call him Gu Immortal! Even with the long time that had passed, and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s setup might have weakened, but it is not something mortals can alter. Only Gu Immortals can make minor changes to these arrangements, and create such a place." Fang Yuan’s eyes were shining with uncertainty.

He had accidentally gotten Di Qiu inheritance, but it was a Gu Immortal inheritance!

Light in the soil, shine up to a hundred thousand feet high, swimming in the sky for a hundred li, praising plum fragrant snow. What did this really mean?

What sorts of treasures would be inside a Gu Immortal’s inheritance.

"Will there be an Immortal Gu?" Fang Yuan guessed daringly.

If there was an Immortal Gu, it could match against the first floor of True Yang Building. Because even in the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the final round of every floor might not have an Immortal Gu reward.

"Even without an Immortal Gu, Di Qiu inheritance was created with so much effort, there had to be an Immortal Gu recipe at least."

Without Immortal Gu, an Immortal Gu recipe was also a huge reward. A complete Immortal Gu recipe was something not sold inside treasure yellow heaven.

Gu Immortals would sell remnant recipes mostly. Even if they had complete Immortal Gu recipes, they would break it up and add in some mistakes before selling it.

Complete Immortal Gu recipes could only be exchanged. And there were few instances of this happening throughout history.

Fang Yuan curbed his imagination, and began to think calmly.

With a crucial clue, his current train of thought had improved rapidly.

He pieced together all sorts of clues, deciphering the time of Di Qiu inheritance’s creation. It should be very long ago, at least, it should’ve existed since Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s time.

But the more he thought, the more questions he had.

Let’s call this person Gu Immortal Di Qiu for now, who were they? Why did they set up an inheritance here? As a Gu Immortal, how did they get in? Most importantly, how did they know about the setup here, and the true principle behind the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building?

If they were like Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and advanced to Gu Immortal realm inside Imperial Court blessed land, then there would be new explanations for what happened...

Fang Yuan felt a headache as he stopped thinking.

One star letter Gu tore through the sky and flew towards him.

Fang Yuan received it, and saw that it was Hei Lou Lan urging him to return.

"Nevermind, I shall go to True Yang Building first, and come back later. Gu Immortal Di Qiu most likely made use of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s setup flaws, once I enter True Yang Building, I might be able to find some clues and understand the mystery behind this!"

Thinking so, Fang Yuan replied with the letter.

Since Hei Lou Lan wrote a letter personally to rush him, Fang Yuan stopped acting arrogantly anymore, he immediately returned.

"I will need to rely on Wolf King’s strength this time." Hei Lou Lan saw Fang Yuan and laughed.

He was very anxious in his heart.

There was not much time inside Imperial Court blessed land. Once the ten year blizzard outside subsides, Imperial Court blessed land would close, and they would need to leave.

Before that happens, Hei Lou Lan not only needs to complete the mission given by his tribe’s Gu Immortals, he also needed to find a strength path Immortal Gu for himself.

After Wolf King returned, Hei Lou Lan quickly organised the group again.

The gang got to the building, as Hei Lou Lan handed Fang Yuan an ancient token: "This is the guest token. Wolf King does not have Huang Jin bloodline, you are an outside in the building’s perspective. To enter it, you will need a guest token each time."

Fang Yuan received the token and laughed lightly without any concern, saying: "I can’t wait to witness the splendor of True Yang Building!"

At this point, Hei Lou Lan did not push the door open, instead, he ’crashed’ into the door.

Fang Yuan followed suit, as the guest token shone in his hand, he imitated Hei Lou Lan and entered True Yang Building as well.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan felt his body stiffen as a strong sense of pressure assaulted him as he entered the building.

But soon after, the pressure lifted.

He had entered True Yang Building completely, there was a lake in front of him.

The sky was blue, there was ripples on the surface of the lake, and the surroundings were shrouded in vague foggy mountain shadows.

The guest token in his hand turned into a puddle of cold molten iron, flowing down the gaps between his fingers.

Each guest token could only be used once.

Fang Yuan shook off the liquid from his hand, until they were all gone.

He looked around, finding himself on an island at the center of the lake. There was someone beside him, it was Hei Lou Lan.

"This is the 54th round." Hei Lou Lan did not look at Fang Yuan, instead facing forward: "Look, that is the problem brother Shan Yin has to deal with."

Fang Yuan looked at the same direction, and saw that not far away, there was another island.

On the island, there was a group of water snake lions.

These water snake lions had a body of bright blue fur, they were extremely smooth. Its limbs were not claws, but were webbed feet like that of frogs. Their tails were poisonous snakes, coiling around the water lion’s back or standing straight up, hissing with their tongues.

Without Hei Lou Lan’s introduction, a barrage of information from a mystical source entered Fang Yuan’s brain at the same time —

"Use the hedgehog fish on the island and break past the water snake lions’ defense, occupy the island over there."

Fang Yuan retracted his gaze, turning to look at the island around him.

In the jade-blue water around the island, he saw the shadows of hedgehog fish swimming.

At this time, Hei tribe elders came in one by one, standing beside Hei Lou Lan.

"Be it water snake lions or hedgehog fish, they are wild beasts from the medieval era. Right now, they can only be found in the deep areas of eastern sea." An elder sighed.

"In my opinion, this round is extremely unfair. The water snake lions are very strong, one of them can compete against five or six hedgehog fish. But the number of hedgehog fish we have here is only about twice of the water snake lions." A Hei tribe elder looked at the island ahead as he explained the situation to Fang Yuan.

"No need to worry brother Shan Yin, we are here today for practice." Hei Lou Lan patted Fang Yuan’s shoulders.

After all, Fang Yuan enslaved wolf groups. But now, it was a fish group, and it was even an extremely rare, nearly extinct hedgehog fish in northern plains.

Hei Lou Lan had failed about eight to nine times already, his best result was only killing thirty percent of the water snake lions. This made Hei tribe Gu Masters understand the difficulty of this round.

Although Chang Shan Yin was an enslavement master, this was the True Yang Building set up by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Fang Yuan looked for a while and frowned.

He estimated, with his abilities, controlling these hedgehog fish to kill the water snake lions was not hard. In fact, it was almost a guaranteed success.

But although this round seemed simple, it was very elaborate.

Back when Giant Sun Immortal Venerable set up the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the purpose was to leave an inheritance for descendants, and reward the outstanding ones. Thus, every round in True Yang Building would be split into low, middle, and high grade.

Getting through with low grade would reward the least rewards, they would directly go to the next round.

Getting through with middle grade would have twice the reward of low grade, during the next round, they would receive information about it.

As for getting through with high grade, not only would they get twice the reward of middle grade, they would even be transported into a deep part of True Yang Building, a place called treasure room.

This treasure room was filled with countless treasures, there were even several true immortal inheritances by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

But the things inside the treasure room cannot be taken away easily, the person who cleared the round would need to exchange for them.

Be it Gu worms, Gu recipes, or even their own cultivation experience, all these could be used for exchanging the items within.

When the person finishes the exchange, they would go to the next round.

Hei Lou Lan only needed a low grade pass to get to the 55th round, that would satisfy him. But Fang Yuan’s goal was different.

He needed high grade pass to enter the treasure room. Only within the treasure room can he be alone, to use the methods he had prepared to obtain the greatest benefits!

"Low grade pass is easy as breathing. But middle and high grade, I do not know what are the conditions for those. I can only try now!"

Thinking so, Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, and nodded at Hei Lou Lan, indicating for him to start.

Hei Lou Lan took out a token and waved it at the sky.

This token was different from the guest token, it was the the owner token. When Hei Lou Lan first entered Imperial Court blessed land, this token appeared before him, signifying his prestigious status.

The owner token vibrated, as ripples formed in the air, dozens of fish enslavement Gu appeared, of rank one, two, and three.

When Fang Yuan received these Gu worms, he easily refined them, the other people were immobilized by an invisible gentle force, no one could assist him.

Only Hei Lou Lan could still speak, he advised: "Brother Shan Yin, mind the time. You have only fifteen minutes."

Fang Yuan nodded, and waved his hand, as the fish enslavement Gu in his hand flew out with dozens of mystical lights.

Everyone saw Fang Yuan’s casual action and was shocked in their hearts.

If it was Hei Qi Sheng, he would need to enslave them one by one, being extremely careful. When using enslavement Gu, the Gu Master would definitely face the resistance of the fish group. If they were careless, the enslavement would fail. If it was severe, the Gu Master would suffer some backlash on his soul.

"Was Wolf King too overconfident?"

"I’ve never seen such an enslavement method before!"

"He’s in troub..."

Everyone’s heart was pounding.

But immediately after, they stared with huge eyes as the fish group swam away towards the island immediately after the enslavement. It was as if they belonged to Fang Yuan from the start, not a single enslavement failed.

The water snake lions were alerted by this, they stopped their lazy actions and sat up, the lion head roared as the snake head hissed.

Many of the water snake lions jumped into the water, setting up their defense lines.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan was standing upright, his arms behind his back as he did not waver at all. The enslavement attainment as well as foundation of the soul he displayed made almost everyone praise him in secret.

"Oh heaven, he did it!"

"Just this alone was an eye opener."

"Wolf King is an enslavement master indeed, he is different from ordinary people."

"A master is a master, maybe he can succeed this time, who knows."

Everyone’s eyes began to show a look of anticipation. Even Hei Lou Lan was looking with a hopeful expression.

But the fish group did not attack the water snake lion group like they wished, instead they were swimming around the area, surveilling the place.

"This... what is Wolf King thinking?"

"Wolf King is being careful, it seems he is trying to get familiar with the fish’s habits!"

But as time passed, the fish continued to swim. Everyone did not get to see the fight between fish and lion as they wished.

By now, even Hei Lou Lan was a bit anxious, he urged: "Brother Shan Yin, there isn’t much time left."

"No rush." Fang Yuan was calm as he replied casually.

The water snake lions saw that the fish group did not attack, some of the water snake fish crawled out of the water, onto the island. The strong defense around the island weakened.

After a moment, Hei Lou Lan urged again:" Brother Shan Yin, half the time has already passed!"

"No rush." Fang Yuan waved his hand, his eyelids drooping, as if he was very sleepy.

Even more water snake lions went onshore. The old lion king even sprawled on the ground, shutting its eyes in slumber.

Everyone was greatly disappointed, they were cursing in their minds.

"This Wolf King is merely strong on the outside, to think I thought so highly of him earlier!"

"So what if he is a master level, this is True Yang Building..."

"It seems that this time, Chang Shan Yin’s goal is to get familiar with the fish group, to accumulate experience for the next assault!"

Seeing that the time was going to be used up, everyone’s remaining bit of hope was expended.

"What a waste of a token, expended like this."

"What shall I eat for dinner tonight?" 1

"After failing this time, I wonder how lord tribe leader will deal with Chang Shan Yin?"

Just as everyone were thinking about random things, Fang Yuan suddenly laughed, manipulating the fish group to charge, attacking the water snake lion group from all directions.

"As expected!" Hei Lou Lan’s eyes shone with brilliance.

He had guessed in his heart already: "Chang Shan Yin wants to save his efforts for the next attempt, then this time, he would definitely familiarise himself with the fish group and their attacking pattern. He would also need to probe the strength of the lion group!"

The fish group’s sudden attack caught the water snake lion group off guard.

The hedgehog fish group was like a hungry shark, devouring the small number of water snake lions in the water in an instant.

"So that’s it! Chang Shan Yin was training the fish group earlier while making the lion group let their guard down."

"This attack has already taken down thirty percent of the lion group, as expected of master level!"

"What breathtaking beast enslavement attainment, Hei Qi Sheng is like a baby compared to Chang Shan Yin."

Everyone stared intently, shocked by Fang Yuan’s amazing talent.

Howl!

Seeing that its subjects were being slaughtered, the old lion king roared, leading the lion group into the water to take revenge on the hedgehog fish.

But what was peculiar was that Fang Yuan stopped his powerful assault, and under his manipulation, the fish group retreated.

The lion group chased after him, but at when they got to one area, the group fell into chaos.

"What happened?" Everyone was perplexed.

"So there was a hidden whirlpool here!" Hei Lou Lan mumbled.

Immediately after, the elders’ eyes shone: "I get it! Wolf King was making the fish scout the area, it was not just to train them, he also wanted to investigate the terrain!"

"That’s right! When beast groups fight, it is like war between two armies. Not only would they need to consider both of the armies, they also need to care about the terrain." Many Gu Masters saw this and almost wanted to pat their legs and scream.

The water snake lion group was trapped by the whirlpool, as the fish group turned around and attacked.

The lions had huge bodies, they were more affected by the water currents. As for the fish group, they were barely affected by it due to their small size.

An exceptional battle strategy unfolded before the crowd.

The strong water snake lion group was as fragile as a piece of water. Under Fang Yuan’s manipulation, the fish group was like an elite troop, they cooperated well and attacked and retreated at will, taking down their opponents one by one.

The fish group gathered and spread at will, attacking fiercely. At times they scattered, causing the lions’ attacks to miss.

"He has them dancing in the palm of his hands!"

"Amazing, incredible!! In just a dozen breaths’ time, Wolf King became victorious!"

"We got through, we got through!"

Hei tribesmen were shocked and exhilarated, their gaze towards Fang Yuan revealed admiration, amazement, and fear etc.

"Good, what a great Wolf King!" Hei Lou Lan laughed as he clapped.

Fang Yuan also laughed heartily, because when he finished killing the lion group, an information went into his head — high grade evaluation!

The next moment, Fang Yuan vanished on the spot.

"What happened?" Hei tribesmen were shocked at this, their eyeballs also fell out.

"He got a high grade evaluation!!" Only Hei Lou Lan was shouting in his heart.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan was in a long crystal hallway.

Light was flashing in all directions, the four walls were made of shiny crystals, one could see their own reflection in them.

Fang Yuan gazed around, behind him, and to his left and right were walls, he could only move forward.

"I am finally inside the treasure room." Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a smile, as he walked forward with huge strides.

The crystal hallway was long and clear, in about five steps, Fang Yuan saw that Gu worms or Gu recipes started appearing on the crystal walls to his left and right. They were like insects sealed in amber, motionlessly fixed in the crystal walls.

These were all the precious treasures in the treasure room, to obtain them, he needed to exchange them with an equivalent item.

"Oh? There’s a Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus here." Fang Yuan halted his steps, he found a familiar looking Gu sealed in the crystal wall before him.

This Gu was like a blue and white lotus, as large as a face. It had an amazing origin, it was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable.

They were a series, the rank three Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, the rank four Heavenly Essence Treasure Monarch Lotus, rank five Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus, and rank six Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.

Among them, Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was ranked sixth among the top ten Immortal Gu, its value was equivalent to Spring Autumn Cicada, and was held in the hands of Lang Ya land spirit now.

Fang Yuan had once used a Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus, it made up for his lack of aptitude during that period, and was a huge help to him. But to advance the Gu, Fang Yuan lacked the relevant recipes, and the refinement cost was too huge, a natural spirit spring had to be used, and it had to be full of primeval energy as well. Old spirit springs that were running dry could not be used. Once he succeeds, the spirit spring would be destroyed.

Rank four Heavenly Lotus needed seven spirit springs. Rank five needed nine. To reach rank six, it needed eleven.

This sum was counted using southern border’s level of spirit springs. If northern plains’ spirit springs were used, he would need 60% more of them.

Back then, it was too difficult for Fang Yuan to advance the Heavenly Lotus, and after his aptitude improved greatly, he gave up on the heavenly essence treasure lotus Gu.

But now, he was moved by this rank five Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus.

"The series of Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus are known as mobile spirit springs. Once refined, they can produce primeval essence naturally. There’s no point in using the rank three Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus anymore, but the rank five Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus is suitable for my current condition."

But to get his Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus, Fang Yuan would need to exchange for it using an equivalent treasure according to the rules.

"Let’s exchange then." Fang Yuan was rather rich now, having a blessed land was like having the foundation of a Gu Immortal.

To exchange for the Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus, others might have to use all of their assets to get it, but for Fang Yuan, it was a question of what to give up.

"What should I use for the exchange?"

Fang Yuan’s mind entered his two apertures.

The strength and enslavement path Gu worms inside his apertures were not exchangeable. His first aperture’s vital Gu Spring Autumn Cicada was the same.

Other than them, there were still quite a lot of Gu worms in his possession.

The individual value of these Gu worms were obviously lower than Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus, but if one was insufficient, he could put two, or even three in.

"Oh? Why are there eighteen spring egg Gu?"

Fang Yuan was shocked to find a batch of precious rank five Gu inside his first aperture.

But he quickly understood the reason: "I almost forgot, this is the reward for getting past the round with a high grade evaluation. It was directly sent into my aperture by True Yang Building."

Normally, a Gu Master’s aperture was the basis of their cultivation, it was their biggest secret. But True Yang Building was truly made by Old Hair Ancestor, with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s setup, it had great power and could directly send Gu worms into a Gu Master’s aperture.

Spring egg Gu was obviously inferior to Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus, but it was still a rank five Gu.

The spring egg Gu looked like a white goose egg, it could be obtained by killing a strong eggman emperor. Placing the spring egg Gu deep underground would give birth to a new spirit spring.

Spirit springs were the foundation for Gu Masters’ cultivation. Many large tribes or clans would collect spring egg Gu to strengthen their foundation, in case of need. Even Gu Immortals would often buy them and plant them inside the blessed land, forming a spirit spring and nourishing their inhabitants.

Fang Yuan took out one spring egg Gu and looked at it.

This Gu was not in good shape, the surface was full of cracks, and there were primeval essence traces inside the Gu, someone had used it before.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with brilliance, he sneered: "It seems that this Gu was snatched by the flying hand snow while it was activated. The rewards in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building are all of such sources."

In order to fulfill his dream of ’hereditary monarchy’, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable set up a huge scheme painstakingly while making sure his descendants had the upper hand.

First was the Imperial Court contest, to weaken other tribes. Next, he used the ten year blizzard to send all sorts of treasures and materials from northern plains into Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

After all, a Gu Master’s cultivation was heavily reliant on resources.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable set up the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, it was a fatal blow. After the resources were taken, he would give them to his bloodline descendants, destroying the hopes of success for other tribes.

In Fang Yuan’s previous five hundred years, central continent Gu Immortals attacked and destroyed Imperial Court Blessed Land using this specialty of the True Yang Building.

They sent pawn pieces into Imperial Court Blessed Land. They then purposely scattered Gu worms and allowed the flying hand snow to take them. Eventually, True Yang Building faced destruction from the inside, causing a fatal loophole to appear.

After central continent Gu Immortals destroyed Imperial Court Blessed Land, they exposed all of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s evil deeds, telling the whole world about his schemes, causing a huge commotion in northern plains as all the mortals went into a frenzy.

But commotion aside, northern plains was still the second strongest region in terms of battle strength, only inferior to central continent. All sorts of super forces, Huang Jin family tribes worked together and caused northern plains to remain stable.

After all, Huang Jin family had controlled northern plains for so many years, they had deep foundations and roots, it could not be easily shaken by public opinion.

However much they reacted, without strength backing them, there was no point.

Fang Yuan placed the spring egg Gu in his hand closer to the crystal wall, towards the wall that sealed the Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus.

As it got closer to the crystal wall, there was a light red light, turning into orange, before finally glowing in yellow.

After the three lights shone, there were no more changes.

Fang Yuan took out another two spring egg Gu, placing them near the wall.

This time, there was a green light shining. But the green light was not strong, it was suppressed by the other three lights.

Fang Yuan sneered as he took out a fourth spring egg Gu, placing it at the crystal wall.

This time, the green light burst out, being balanced with the other three colors.

The crystal wall turned hollow as it vibrated. The Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus inside flew out slowly, while the four spring egg Gu in Fang Yuan’s hands left his control and flew into the crystal wall, replacing the Heavenly Essence Treasure King lotus’ position.

The Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus landed in Fang Yuan’s hands, and Fang

Yuan instantly refined it using his primeval essence.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was truly amazing, it allowed Gu Masters to instantly refine Gu inside the building.

"Red, orange, yellow, green, azure, blue, purple, black... it seems that inside this treasure room, there are eight categories. The more lights there are, the more valuable the treasure. Rank five Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus was only a green light item. This was only mid-tier among the range of treasures in this place."

Fang Yuan evaluated in his heart as his assessment of the treasure room’s value rose and his knowledge of it deepened.

He stretched out his hand, touching the crystal wall.

He could feel an icy feeling on his palm, inside, there were four spring egg Gu, the ones he had used for exchange.

Fang Yuan tried to control them, but there was no effect.

He sighed in amazement in his heart.

To speak the truth, in this current world, Fang Yuan was easily among the top three people in terms of his understanding of the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

That was because he had the detailed information given to him by Lang Ya land spirit.

The more Fang Yuan’s understanding of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building increased, the more he felt the genius mechanics of this building, it was really amazing.

Forget the others, just look at this crystal wall ahead of him, it had a huge origin.

This crystal wall was made back then by Long Hair Ancestor using tens of thousands of Gu Masters. Using a secret technique, he extracted their apertures. Using their aperture walls as the material, he used profound ice Gu, ice wall Gu, grand jade Gu, slow down Gu, vitality Gu, and others to refine it.

This crystal wall was the best spot to seal Gu worms, the Gu inside would go into deep slumber, they could be stored for hundreds or thousands of years without the slightest harm.

According to his information, a newly refined crystal wall would shine with ripples like that of a water surface, one would walk into it feeling like it was an illusory dream.

But now, the crystal wall no longer had that glamor, but it was still crystal clear.

With enough time, water could pierce through rock.

The power of time was one of the most noble heavenly powers.

Even a rank nine venerable could not defeat the power of time. Although True Yang Building was an Immortal Gu house, it opened every ten years, there was still some expenditure incurred.

If not, during Fang Yuan’s previous life, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would not have been taken down and destroyed.

Right now, the luster of the crystal wall was no more, in fact, there was a thick layer of powder at the corner of the walls.

Fang Yuan continued moving forward.

In the crystal wall, there were all sorts of Gu worms, Gu recipes and special refinement materials sealed, but even more were the cultivation experiences of past generations of Gu Masters.

These experiences were extremely precious. Those who could enter the treasure room were geniuses who passed with high grade evaluation, the things they left behind were definitely top quality.

After walking for a little longer, Fang Yuan stopped his footsteps.

The hallway ahead of him looked endless. But a stele was blocking Fang Yuan’s path.

The stele was squarish and smooth, it was about the height of Fang Yuan’s knee. There were two words written in northern plains’ script— guest halt!

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was set up by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, in consideration of his descendants. But those who entered the treasure room might not necessarily be Gu Masters who had the bloodline of Giant Sun.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable considered this point, and thus he placed the most precious resources behind the stele, outsiders like Chang Shan Yin could only watch helplessly.

But Fang Yuan was not Chang Shan Yin.

"Guest halt? Hmph." Fang Yuan laughed coldly in disdain.

He tried walking past the stele, but was blocked by an invisible wall.

"After so many years, although Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had some expenditure, the guest halt stele is still working properly, I cannot force my way through." After testing it for a while, Fang Yuan sat down facing the stele.

He had planned this for so long, he was naturally well prepared.

Immediately, he took out a Gu worm, and it shot into the stele.

The first step to refining Eighty-Eight True Yang Building has started!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Refining Eighty-Eight True Yang Building might sound like an absurd idea, but it was not wishful thinking.

In truth, Fang Yuan was not the ’first person’ to refine Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

In his former five hundred years, when central continent Gu Immortals attacked Imperial Court Blessed Land, they first sent some Gu Masters to infiltrate Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s treasure room.

After they succeeded, they released the entire procedure after recording it with Gu worms, announcing it to the world.

Imperial Court Blessed Land was the spiritual symbol for northern plains Gu Masters, it had great importance. The recording of Imperial Court Blessed Land being taken down was spread over the five regions, it not only displayed central continent’s strength, it was also a poisonous needle intended to destroy northern plains Gu Masters’ mental support!

Most importantly, this recording also proved that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had snatched Gu worms all over northern plains, in order to benefit his descendants.

Once the recording was released, northern plains was in huge turmoil, as the masses went into an uproar.

Although the Huang Jin tribes suppressed the situation, and the internal chaos did not reach the level that central continent Gu Immortals hoped, it did create a northern plains where the people’s hearts wavered and undercurrents were flowing.

Central continent Gu Immortal Song Qie Xing, after seeing this video, gave an accurate prediction: "Once this video is spread all over the region, the spirit of freedom in northern plains would be released from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s prison!"

Fang Yuan naturally had a vivid memory of this video.

After his rebirth, he immediately realized the huge value of this video.

For this trip to northern plains, saving Dang Hun mountain was merely one of his objectives.

Fang Yuan was a careful person, he often considered failure before success.

"How can there be something as good as ’success as one wishes’ in this world? If I fail to save Dang Hun mountain, I can at least seek other forms of compensation inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building."

The video of central continent Gu Immortals taking down Imperial Court Blessed Land had great reference value for Fang Yuan.

But just this clip was not enough.

Fang Yuan could only see what happened on the surface from this clip. But luckily, Fang Yuan had obtained first hand information from Lang Ya land spirit.

Because of this, by fusing theory with practice, Fang Yuan had much greater confidence in refining Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

"With my current cultivation level, it is impossible to fully refine Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. But I can refine a portion of it."

Fang Yuan was very clear of the reality.

He was only a mortal Gu Master, one had to be at least a rank eight Gu Immortal to refine the Immortal Gu house.

In Fang Yuan’s plans, he only wanted to refine a portion of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had existed for a very long time, it was worn down and had loopholes secretly. It was too grand, too majestic, like a giant wooden cage.

Fang Yuan was like a termite compared to it.

The strength of a termite could not destroy the entire wooden cage. But it could devour the edges, the difficulty of the two was as great as heaven and earth.

The guest halt stele in front of him, after a specialized Gu worm entered it, gave off a faint yellow light.

Fang Yuan stretched out his palms in the meantime, injecting his aperture’s primeval essence into it.

At the same time, his will entered the guest halt stele, following the primeval essence.

Gu Masters refine Gu, it was to occupy the Gu worm’s body with their will. And during this process, primeval essence was the perfect carrier.

Fang Yuan’s brows were tightly knotted as his mind entered the stele.

The guest halt stele was only a portion of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was a rank eight Immortal Gu house, it was way too big.

Once Fang Yuan’s will entered, he felt that he was in a sea of darkness.

In this endless darkness, there was a sun-like existence. It gave off a weak light, which moved in waves like that of breathing.

"This is Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s will?" Fang Yuan’s mind went into high alert.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s property, since he refined it, his will was naturally inside the Immortal Gu.

Although Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s body had perished long ago, this will that he injected had survived while slumbering within this shell.

"Such a will is really grand, I feel like I am facing a real sun! Immortal Venerables have unthinkable strength, this is merely a small portion of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s will, left behind and weakened after such a long time."

"Thankfully, this will is currently unconscious, if I move carefully, it should not be alerted. I must not wake it up, otherwise, what happened to those two central continent Gu Immortals whose souls were dispersed in the video will happen to me."

The vast dark space represents the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s remnant will was like the sun, in the center emitting a weak light as it slept.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan’s will was like a sesame compared to it. He also gave off a weak light, but he was lurking at the furthest corner of the entire area.

Fang Yuan continued to inject primeval essence, slowly and carefully.

As the primeval essence entered the guest halt stele, the amount of his will that was inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building increased.

In the dark corner, the light that represented Fang Yuan was expanding, gradually repelling a portion of the darkness, gaining some territory for itself.

Time passed second by second.

Fang Yuan was very careful, his forehead was soon full of sweat.

"To think that refining this stele would be so difficult. With my two rank five peak stage apertures at ninety percent capacity, it was still not enough. If not for the Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus, I might have faced even more trouble."

Four hours passed, Fang Yuan finally breathed out a sigh as he pulled back his palms from the stele.

He was extremely tired, mostly from the mental stress, it was more precarious than walking on a tightrope.

"I finally succeeded."

Fang Yuan looked at the guest halt stele before him, a sense of closeness emitted from the stele into the deep parts of his heart.

But the joy of success quickly faded, as Fang Yuan frowned even more deeply.

"There were indeed many deleted scenes in the video that was shown in my previous life. I spent so much primeval essence, but the Gu Master in the clip was only rank five middle stage, yet he did not take any breaks in the middle, only spending an hour to refine it."

Maybe the Gu Master had some assistance Gu worms in his aperture, but Fang Yuan was more inclined to believe that there was more than meets the eye.

The reason why central continent Gu Immortals released this video was to deal a crushing blow to the Huang Jin tribes, to release the spirit of freedom in other northern plains tribes.

Deep into the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, there were definitely gains or methods that could not be publicly shown.

At the same time, to make the video more concise and interesting, so that people would watch it, the boring and mundane parts were definitely deleted, that had certainly happened.

But this was bad news to Fang Yuan.

Refining the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was a very dangerous act, if he was misled by the video, one mistake would end his life!

"Eighty-Eight True Yang Building is truly phenomenal, I spent so much time, but I have not even refined half a percent of it."

Fang Yuan sighed as he patted the guest halt stele, standing up.

If he looked at Eighty-Eight True Yang Building as a hundred percent, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s remnant will would occupy thirty percent of it.

Out of a hundred percent, after refining the guest halt stele, Fang Yuan’s refinement of the building was still less than half a percent.

"But even so..." Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a smile.

He turned around, talking a few steps back and casually came to a crystal wall that had sealed some treasures.

His gaze concentrated as he stretched out his arm towards the wall.

If it was before, the crystal wall would be like an ice wall, blocking his hand. But now, the guest halt stele shone slightly, and the crystal wall turned hollow.

Fang Yuan’s arm successfully entered the wall like it had gone into a water wall, taking the treasure out from inside.

Once he refined the guest halt stele, any treasure inside this section of the crystal wall could be taken out at will, Fang Yuan did not have to pay any price!

"Oh? This must be the rush thunder stone..."

Looking at the treasure in his hand, Fang Yuan had to appraise it carefully before confirming his guess.

Rush thunder stone was quite a rare Gu refinement material. It was nearly extinct now, it was very rare even inside treasure yellow heaven, only sold once in a while.

This stone was created from the essence of lightning and thunder when the thunder in the nine heavens exploded together.

But ever since the immemorial era, seven of the nine heavens fell, only white and black heaven were left. The chances of these two heavens’ thunder and lightning clashing were very low. Thus, after the immemorial era, the production of rush thunder stones fell drastically.

When thunder path was flourishing, large numbers of rush thunder stones were used to refine Gu.

Thus, the remaining stock of rush thunder stones now was low.

"Heaven and earth is ever-changing, as time passed, thunder path also changed and no longer needed rush thunder stones. Only those Gu Masters or Gu Immortals who wanted to research immemorial thunder path Gu worms would be interested in rush thunder stones."

The value of the treasure room was extremely high, just a casual treasure that Fang Yuan took was a rush thunder stone.

But soon after, Fang Yuan returned the rush thunder stone back to the crystal wall.

Small greed ruins big plans.

Because exchange was needed to obtain treasures, the total treasure amount in the crystal walls was always the same.

Every item here was recorded by all the super forces, or even large-sized Huang Jin tribes.

If someone obtained high grade evaluation and came here later, they would find that treasures were missing, that would lead to great suspicion and shock!

Fang Yuan felt no pity, after testing for a while, he walked towards the deeper parts of the crystal path.

Arriving at the guest halt stele once again, his footsteps became slower.

A few hours ago, the invisible wall that blocked him had vanished. But this did not mean that he could enter safely.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was created by Long Hair Ancestor, it obviously had other defensive measures.

But Fang Yuan was prepared for them.

He willed and at once, five to six mystical Gu worms flew out of his aperture, turning into lumps of colorful smoke as they surrounded him.

Fang Yuan checked again, and after ensuring that he was fully covered, he walked past the guest halt stele.

Smoke of all colors rumbled as they formed into a flash of blood light, spreading out.

Fang Yuan looked around, finding that the treasures in the crystal walls were better than the previous segment by a tier.

"Oh? This is..."

Fang Yuan’s gaze froze for a second as he saw a rank five strength path Gu worm inside the crystal wall.

He was overjoyed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan had just taken a step past the guest halt stele and a pleasant surprise welcomed him.

A borrow strength Gu appeared in front of him.

This was a rank five strength path Gu, it was almost completely extinct and was even more rare than all-out effort Gu. It could not be used by itself, but instead had to be used together with other Gu worms.

When matched with sky strength Gu, it could allow the Gu Master to borrow the strength of the sky. When matched with earth strength Gu, the Gu Master could borrow the strength of the earth. With fire strength Gu, it allowed the Gu Master to borrow strength from fire. With water strength Gu, the Gu Master could take gain strength from water flow.

"My killer move four arm wind king uses wind overlord Gu and tyrant strength Gu. The combination of these two Gu was a substitute for borrow strength Gu, but their effects are not even fifty percent of borrow strength Gu. With this borrow strength Gu, I can raise my killer move to a whole new level!" Fang Yuan was truly happy.

Of course, borrow strength Gu still needed to be matched with other Gu worms.

By now, sky strength Gu was already extinct. But earth strength Gu, fire strength Gu, water strength Gu, wind strength Gu and so on were still widely circulated.

However, the usage of these Gu worms had already side-tracked from their original use.

Earth strength Gu was now frequently used to raise the fertility of the soil to help the Gu Masters in agriculture, or was used together with wood path Gu.

Fire strength Gu was used by some fire path Gu Masters as a support Gu that could slightly increase the strength of fire path Gu worms. Water strength, wind strength, lightning strength and so on were also used similar.

Fang Yuan approached the crystal wall and took out close to ten spring egg Gu to exchange for the borrow strength Gu.

Past the guest halt stele, he could only exchange for the treasures he wanted.

Fang Yuan continued to walk forward.

The treasures in the crystal wall here were clearly a level or two higher than before.

Meteor rain Gu, star lightning speed Gu, wind fog hair Gu, stellar fire prairie Gu, water curtain skyflower Gu...

Rank five Gu which were extremely rare in the outside world could be seen everywhere here. Instead, it was rank four Gu that were very rare in here. But any rank four Gu that appeared here were bound to be very rare and precious among the rank four Gu, their value and strength comparable to common rank five Gu.

Fang Yuan’s gaze swept through the treasures, the blood flame light covering him was wearing down non-stop.

This blood flame light was a barrier protecting him. Once it completely disappeared, he would be detected by Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and be eradicated instantly.

"Before this protection disappears, I need to find that owner token!"

As time passed, Fang Yuan gradually started to feel anxious.

These Gu he used to disguise his identity and deceive Eighty-Eight True Yang Building were not easy to refine, moreover the costs in refining them were considerable. One of the main material was a thousand jin of Huang Jin family blood which required ninety-eight long steps of purification.

Now, Imperial Court contest had already ended; it was even more difficult for Fang Yuan to get these blood in large amounts.

What was even worse was a fork actually appeared in this long crystal corridor!

Fang Yuan could not help stopping to think about it carefully.

Which path was the one he needed to take?

At this moment, the image of the central continent Gu Immortals attacking Imperial Court blessed land in the previous life became a great help to Fang Yuan.

He chose the left path and moved rapidly through it.

Here, the treasures that appeared in the crystal wall were of a level higher in their worth. There were only rank five Gu with no more rank four Gu to be found, and at the same time, there were rare rank five Gu as well.

Fang Yuan quickly walked forward while sweeping his gaze over the treasures, suddenly his gaze stopped: "Found it!"

An owner token was sealed in the crystal wall, just at the knee height of Fang Yuan.

This owner token was the doing of central continent Gu Immortals.

A tall tree attracts the wind; Imperial Court blessed land had existed tall till now which had already attracted the attention of Gu Immortals of all regions. Central continent Gu Immortals had begun their plan hundreds of years ago.

The owner token was generally held by the alliance leader and would self-destruct once it left Imperial Court blessed land.

Close to a millennium ago, central continent Gu Immortals spent a lot of effort to scheme from the dark, not only did they bribe that time’s alliance leader, it is rumored that they also used an Immortal Gu.

Using the power of the Immortal Gu, they tampered with the owner token which then hid inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, becoming a key for the future, waiting for the opportunity to use it.

In Fang Yuan’s past life, central continent Gu Immortals first started the five regions battle and were able to create the opportunity not long after, finally breaching Imperial Court blessed land.

Imperial Court blessed land was an arrangement set by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, breaching this place was much more difficult than breaching other blessed lands.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already passed away while central continent Gu Immortals had painstakingly brewed their scheme for close to a millennium, achieving some success in the end.

However, in this life, this owner token landed in Fang Yuan’s hand.

The process of exchanging for this owner token was extremely smooth. But it would not be easy to make the token usable for him.

This was the final, crucial step.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned solemn as he sat cross-legged on the ground and concentrated.

Gu worms after Gu worms moved at his will and struck the owner token non-stop.

Ding ding ding...

A pleasant music sounded from the collision, and the owner token gradually floated into the air. Every strike would create a layer of halo over the owner token.

When it was covered with thirty-eight halo, the dull color on its surface suddenly dispersed and revealed the words - ’owner token’.

The halo then started to burst like air bubbles.

The owner token lost its buoyancy and fell down, and was immediately caught by

Fang Yuan.

He quickly bit his finger and let the blood drip onto the owner token.

The moment his blood seeped into the owner token, the metallic token suddenly became a translucent glass. Fang Yuan had seen Hei Lou Lan’s owner token and was able to immediately be aware that there was a great difference between his token and the original owner token.

"The methods I used just now was in reference to my past life’s video, awakening the true appearance of this owner token. It seems this is very possibly the strength of an Immortal Gu and also, only Immortal Gu can tamper with owner token while avoiding the detection of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building." Fang Yuan looked at the glass owner token and sank into contemplation.

After a dozen or so breaths, the blood flame light covering him thoroughly dispersed.

The world seemed to have gone mute at this moment as Fang Yuan could clearly hear his heartbeats.

"Safe and sound." The sound of his heartbeats gradually disappeared, Fang Yuan slowly stood up and let out a breath of turbid air.

"Success." He mumbled while clenching his left fist in excitement, but he found his voice was somewhat hoarse. At the same time, his whole body was soaked with sweat and he felt some dizziness.

Truly activating this owner token and making it recognize him was not easy at all. It was even more difficult than refining a rank five Gu.

If there was even a slight mistake, it might have very well been impossible to reprieve.

Fang Yuan endured the enormous mental pressure and finally succeeded.

"Now, as long as I hold the glass owner token, I can freely enter the treasure room. There is no need for any high grade evaluation!"

Holding the owner token was equivalent to being in control of a small part of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Fang Yuan tested the owner token and almost instantly, Hei Lou Lan’s group’s figures appeared in his mind.

After crossing the fifty-fourth round, they had already charged to sixty-first round. Right now, they were having a fierce fight with a golden-white tiger phantom.

A true golden-white tiger was a desolate beast level existence.

The golden-white tiger phantom possessed the aura of a desolate beast and was pressing down Hei Lou Lan’s group.

Hei Lou Lan had numbers on his side, but their defeat was imminent.

Fang Yuan looked closely for a while and inwardly commented: ’If there is no accident, Hei Lou Lan and his group will only be able to last for less than forty-five minutes, before they have to retreat. I don’t have a lot of time!"

Although Fang Yuan entered the treasure room, as long as the possessor of the owner token walked out of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he would also have to leave.

Fang Yuan might have the glass owner token now, and could stay or leave according to his will. But it was not good to expose it at present.

"Just the glass owner token is still far from enough. I still need to find that loophole and completely blow it up; this will create a great hole in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and I will then be able to freely take away the treasures in the crystal wall."

The glass owner token shook slightly, and the next moment, Fang Yuan disappeared on the spot.

"This should be the central control room!"

When Fang Yuan opened his eyes, he had arrived at a secret room.

The secret room was round with its walls flickering with starlight, and a white jade round table on the center. There was an exquisite model of the whole Imperial Court blessed land on the round table, just like a military sand table.

Not only did it depict mountains and rivers and the sacred palace at the center, even the small towers in the blessed land were clearly visible.

Fang Yuan sent out a Gu worm which flew to air and turned into black smoke that fell down to the sand table.

The sand table was contaminated by the black smoke and rapidly turned into black color.

The black color gradually condensed, forming into a large patch of sticky liquid that slowly flowed on the sand table.

Fang Yuan looked at a spot where the black liquid had formed a funnel shape and as if there was a hole below, the surrounding black liquid was slowly entering it.

"Found it, this is that hole! Now, I just need to enlarge this hole and refine the glass owner token into a one-edge owner token. With a one-edge owner token, I can even control a floor of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building at will! Eh?"

Right at this time, Fang Yuan’s movements paused as his eyes rigidly stared at the hole on the sand table.

The whole sand table was covered by the thick black oil like sticky liquid, thus Fang Yuan had not been able to see immediately. But now that he had looked for a while, he suddenly discovered this hole was none other than Di Qiu inheritance site!

"What is going on here? Could it be Di Qiu inheritance is also a concealed move set up by central continent Gu Immortals before like the glass owner token?!"

Fang Yuan was shocked.

But he quickly calmed down and became aware of the shortcomings to this assumption.

"No, wrong. If this was a concealed move prepared to breach the blessed land, then how do I explain that cipher and the clues from the grey-white stone slab? These clues are clearly the clues to the inheritance."

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with bright light.

Right now, the scene in his previous life could not give him any help.

"Could it be that central continent Gu Immortals also discovered this inheritance, but they could not decipher the secret phrase and so are using the inheritance this way? No, this is wrong too. Thinking from their side, if they discovered this inheritance which very likely contained an Immortal Gu, they would definitely be moved. If that is so, then that means that they did not obtain any clues to the inheritance but only discovered this hole?"

"Of course, there is also another possibility that they were not able to decipher the secret of the inheritance, but as breaching the blessed land was an important matter, they chose to break this hole in the end. But if so, Di Qiu inheritance would also be destroyed!"

Fang Yuan thought of this and that, feeling the existence of these two probabilities. But he did not have conclusive evidence now so he could not confirm them.

He hesitated.

In case he used the methods in his previous life’s scene and burst open this hole, then Di Qiu inheritance would definitely be destroyed.

But if he did not do so and chose to preserve Di Qiu inheritance, his plans for Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would stop here.

"Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s worth is much higher than Di Qiu inheritance. This is hopeless, I can only abandon Di Qiu inheritance. But the person who made this arrangement is really amazing, to actually be able to tamper with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangement... hmm? Wait a second!"

Fang Yuan’s mind suddenly shook as he thought of an extremely crucial problem!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

This was a very obvious problem, but normal people would easily overlook it.

Why did this mysterious Gu Immortal go through such great trouble, brave enormous risk, tamper with and use Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangement to set up their inheritance?

"Thinking from their perspective, if I was this Gu Immortal, why would I insist on digging out Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s loophole to set up my inheritance? I could set up one by myself perfectly by just spending a little effort!"

"Eighty-Eight True Yang Building is a rank eight Immortal Gu house and was personally arranged by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. There was truly an enormous risk in using its loophole. If I wanted to wholeheartedly leave behind an inheritance, there would be absolutely no need to go so far and intentionally take risks. Unless..."

Fang Yuan’s eyelids drooped as a cold light flashed quickly past his dark pupils.

"Unless — the inheritance required such an arrangement!"

The moment he thought of this, the fog in Fang Yuan’s mind seemed to be pushed aside by two large hands.

Humans always have objectives in doing things.

Only an enormous objective could make a Gu Immortal take such huge risks!

Maybe this Gu Immortal did not like Giant Sun Immortal Venerable or had hatred against him. But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already passed away for countless years, so this possibility was close to zero.

Removing the factor of emotions, then there was only the factor of benefits.

"For this benefit, the mysterious Gu Immortal was willing to brave the fatal danger of messing with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangement. What in the world did they intend to use Eighty-Eight True Yang Building for?"

Fang Yuan involuntarily thought of the information Lang Ya land spirit gave him.

He had already studied this information hundreds and thousands of times. Even on the day before the large battle of the Imperial Court contest, he had been studying non-stop.

Even after reading so many times, every time he read it again or recalled it, he could not help having a feeling of admiration.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was indeed of exquisite workmanship, its design was spectacular.

This was a fantasy turned into reality, it was a miracle!

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was essentially an Immortal Gu house.

Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made plans for his descendants and took the initiative to find Long Hair Ancestor, requesting him to refine an everlasting inheritance treasure.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s demand was too great, and as such Long Hair Ancestor had to rack his brains and think painstakingly for a hundred or so days to meet the standard.

One day, he suddenly had an inspiration and took an alternate way, coming up with a unique method.

The Immortal Gu house was truly overly enormous. Long Hair Ancestor could only settle for the second best option, and divide it into countless sub-bodies which were the small towers.

The quantity of these small towers reached untold numbers and attracted wild Gu worms for ten years.

As the ten year period neared its end, they would sink one after another, sacrificing the wild Gu inside and simultaneously resonate with the blizzard outside to form a heavenly power.

The heavenly power condensed bit by bit to generate a qualitative change, condensing into a floor of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

As layers and layers formed, they would finally become the complete Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!

From a different perspective: every time Eighty-Eight True Yang Building formed, it was the process of a new refinement.

Long Hair Ancestor was indeed worthy of being known as the number one refinement path immortal of all times, his Gu refinement attainment had already crossed the realm of mortal into a realm of divinity. It was already not easy for ordinary Gu Masters to refine a Gu successfully. It was the same for Gu Immortals as well when they refine Immortal Gu.

But Long Hair Ancestor had already surpassed the limits of the normal Gu refinement to a level of perfection.

So did Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s refinement succeed?

In truth, the refinement was not a complete success.

If a general standard was applied, the truly complete Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would be a tower that would exist for eternity in the blessed land, towering over the sacred palace.

However, this standard was too difficult to fulfill.

Back when Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had mentioned it, Long Hair Ancestor’s brows had furrowed deeply and had immediately said: If the refinement truly succeeds, then this Immortal Gu house would be at rank nine realm!

What was the meaning of a rank nine Immortal Gu?

The Gu in legends like strength Gu, wisdom Gu, fate Gu and so on were all rank nine Immortal Gu. These Immortal Gu were priceless even among the priceless and had already vanished, their radiance only being revered in <>.

Just like rank nine Gu Immortals who were given the title of ’venerable’; throughout the boundless history, only ten of them appeared.

There had never been a rank nine realm Immortal Gu house, but Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not give up on his request.

Long Hair Ancestor could only agree to the request, fearing the might of an Immortal Venerable.

Finally, he thought of a solution that was not a solution, to create a ’rank nine Immortal Gu house that could only exist for a short period of time’ — thus, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building ended up being at rank eight realm.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had not been pleased with it, but his attitude changed after inspecting it, and was full of praise as he said: Eighty-Eight True Yang Building itself holds the secret of a mortal becoming a Gu Immortal!

Why did he say that?

The reason was that a mortal had to cross over the hurdle of the three elements to become a Gu Immortal.

Element of heaven. Heaven above, with immeasurable might, mysterious and mighty.

Element of earth. Earth below, virtuous, stable and profound.

Element of man. Man in the center, the spirit of all beings, exerting oneself to soar above.

Mortal were like tiny insects, and only by connecting with heaven and earth, could they be free of their mortal state and make themselves go through a fundamental evolution.

And Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s formation made use of these three elements.

The Imperial Court contest was to spread the element of man. The ten year blizzard was a cruel and vicious element of heaven. The small towers sinking into the ground were borrowing the blessed land’s element of earth.

The three elements combine into one, and a mortal becomes an immortal.

The three elements combined to form Eighty-Eight True Yang Building that plundered northern plains’ resources to give rise to Huang Jin family’s super tribes, and allowed Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s influence to be inextinguishable for countless years.

"Wait a moment, don’t tell me?!"

Fang Yuan’s body shook slightly as a bright light blossomed in his eyes.

"The small towers are a part of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the mysterious Gu Immortal who set up Di Qiu inheritance broke this small tower and created a hole."

"When the hole formed, according to the principle of the refinement of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, there should be a backflow of heavenly power to condense into a new small tower."

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was a rank eight Immortal Gu house and was very difficult to destroy. But the small towers could be easily destroyed, this was like the difference between a Gu Immortal and mortals. Thus, when Giant Sun Immortal Venerable arranged these small towers in the blessed land, he used the strength of Imperial Court blessed land to protect them tightly and isolate them from most sources of damage.

Long Hair Ancestor was the number one immortal in refinement path, so he naturally had considered the situation of the small towers being destroyed. Thus, every ten years, during the time of the formation of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s main body, the condensed heavenly power would first flow back to repair the gaps in the small towers before condensing into the main body.

However!

"Di Qiu inheritance had already been set up for many years, but the small tower over it has still not been repaired. Moreover, this mysterious Gu Immortal used some method to seal up this gap and deceive Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. I understand now, the reason they did this should be none other than to make use of the heavenly power that condenses into Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!"

"Light in the soil, shine up to a hundred thousand feet high, swimming in the sky for a hundred li, praising plum fragrant snow... it seems this secret phrase is the method of Gu refinement!"

In fact, Fang Yuan had guessed this before.

However, he did not have conclusive evidence back then.

Now, although it was still a guess, but after testing and probing it, Fang Yuan was much more confident.

Time always seemed to move faster when one was pondering deeply.

Hei Lou Lan and his group were defeated by the golden-white tiger phantom, and were sent out of the tower. To not attract any suspicion, Fang Yuan could only use the glass owner token to get out of the tower.

A group of people suddenly appeared at the entrance of the first floor of the tower.

"They have appeared, the lords have returned!"

"Subordinate greets lord tribe leader and all the lords."

The guards sitting there, who were of Hei tribe’s direct line of descent, immediately came forward to greet.

Hei Lou Lan and the group all looked battered and exhausted or were covered in blood.

Although they had failed, they had made much progress and gains as they were even able to push forward for over ten rounds.

However, the situation this time was special, Hei Lou Lan and others’ gazes landed on Fang Yuan, revealing the intent of probing, curiosity, doubts and investigating.

"Hahaha, everyone worked hard and contributed highly for this expedition, especially Wolf King who can be said to be the number one in contribution this time. After returning, organize a banquet immediately, we will celebrate for three days!" Hei Lou Lan laughed loudly and lightly patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder, showing off their close relationship.

High grade evaluation made Fang Yuan’s worth rise by another level in his heart.

"I gained some insight from this trip, I need to undergo closed cultivation to consolidate them. I hope Lord Hei Lou Lan would not blame me." Fang Yuan lightly smiled and directly turned down Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan’s smile froze before immediately recovering the next moment and said it was not a problem, showing the disposition of a magnanimous leader.

As for how furious he was inwardly, or how much the others were envious, Fang Yuan did not care. He wanted to return now to study the secrets of Di Qiu inheritance meticulously.

Six days later.

Fang Yuan pushed open the window and looked down at the sacred palace, his eyes flashing with a light of joy.

He had fully solved the secret of Di Qiu inheritance.

One only required a correct direction for such riddles and it would only be a matter of time.

Just as Fang Yuan guessed before, the cipher was a recipe for refining Immortal Gu.

The mysterious Gu Immortal who arranged the inheritance used the loophole of the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, borrowing the power which would condense into Eighty-Eight True Yang Building to refine an Immortal Gu.

As long as one followed the words of the secret phrase and refined the Gu step by step, even a mortal Gu Master could refine it successfully.

It was because the Immortal Gu refinement was not relying on the mortal Gu Master’s power, but was borrowing from the strength of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

But as for what this Immortal Gu was, Fang Yuan did not know and could only make conjectures from the secret phrase.

"This Gu Immortal should very likely be from central continent. The Gu refinement method is filled with central continent’s style. And adding on my previous life’s video, this inheritance should be in the form of a chain and what I obtained was likely only a part of it." Fang Yuan estimated in his heart.

In Fang Yuan’s past life, central continent Gu Immortals planned to use this loophole to breach Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. They should have discovered some preceding clue to this inheritance.

This was not strange.

Many Gu Masters, when setting inheritances, would arrange them step by step, and leave behind clues after clues. If the fated ones had enough ability, they could inherit the whole inheritance. If their ability was not up to par, they could only receive a part of the benefits.

Central continent Gu Immortals should have obtained the preceding clues to this inheritance and should not have known the latter part of the secret phrase.

Otherwise, they definitely would not waste the chance of obtaining an Immortal Gu.

And what Fang Yuan accidentally obtained was only the latter part. Without the preceding clues, it became extremely incomprehensible. If not for Fang Yuan having the intel of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and his previous life’s memories, he would not have been able to comprehend it even if he was given ample time.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Speaking of it, this central continent Gu Immortal is truly amazing, seeing through Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s hole and also using such an idea. Clearly, they were also a refinement path master... no, to reach this step, they have to be at least a grandmaster in refinement path!"

"They actually left behind an Immortal Gu as an inheritance. This is truly an immortal treasure! They put the clue in fake grey-white stone slabs, such creativity and innovation was really amazing. I wonder what kind of successor they want to choose..."

The most crucial problem of the secret phrase was resolved, but even more questions popped out.

Fang Yuan shook his head and cleared up his disorganized thoughts.

"No matter what, this inheritance is related to an Immortal Gu, I need to give it a try with all my effort. Now, it should take over half a month at least to prepare the relevant Gu worms..."

Light in the soil, shine up to a hundred thousand feet high, swimming in the sky for a hundred li, praising plum fragrant snow — these four phrases might be simple, but Fang Yuan would not have been able to decipher them without his refinement path master attainment.

Based on Fang Yuan’s current comprehension, he needed over two hundred Gu worms to borrow the force of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and refine the mysterious Immortal Gu; among them were twenty-eight rank four and rank five Gu worms.

And this number was only enough for one use.

Fang Yuan, in preparing the Gu refinement, would have to make at least three times the preparatory materials to prevent any errors during the Gu refinement process which could lead to failure. And in case he failed, he would require spare Gu worms.

Sixteen days later.

In the hall, Hei Lou Lan showed the demeanor of the ’Black Tyrant’ to the fullest, shouting fiercely and wantonly venting out the anger in his heart.

The elders who were scolded and even beaten by Hei Lou Lan could not raise their heads and were quiet out of fear.

Ever since Hei Lou Lan entered Imperial Court blessed land, his temper had been getting increasingly violent. After Eighty-Eight True Yang Building opened, this change intensified and his temper became like a barrel of gunpowder, berating and beating his subordinates at the slightest pretext. As of today, there were already three Hei tribe elders who were heavily beaten by him and were still bedridden.

"Lord tribe leader, it is not us slacking in our duty, but this seventy-eighth round is truly too difficult. The golden-white tiger phantom guardian is too strong and has thirty percent of the desolate beast’s powers. With our mortal bodies, no matter how much we try, we can only harass it and have no way to harm it heavily. Moreover, if the golden-white tiger goes on the offense, our Gu Masters would not be able to resist it."

Hei Pei, the head of the elders, waited for Hei Lou Lan to finish venting his anger, before cautiously speaking.

Hei Lou Lan glanced at him and cursed: "Your words are bullshit! Golden-white tiger phantom might have strong attacking prowess, but as long as we all unite and disregard the sacrifices, we can definitely defeat it before the time limit! You guys are all afraid of difficulties, tarnishing my Hei tribe’s reputation of bravery!"

The elders shrunk their heads after being scolded, not daring to say anything.

Hei Lou Lan’s words were actually not without reason.

It was already not the first time in dealing with the golden-white tiger phantom.

If they truly disregarded sacrifices, and people were willing to be cannon fodder and fought to give others an opportunity, even at the cost of their own lives under the claws of the golden-white tiger phantom, then Hei tribe’s offense, although powerless, would accumulate with time, and could be like groups of ants biting an elephant, eventually defeating the golden-white tiger phantom.

But the truth of the matter was when the golden-white tiger phantom attacked, everyone feared for their life and was afraid of going forward, causing Hei Lou Lan’s advancement in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building to stop at this round, unable to progress any further.

Hei Lou Lan’s shouts kept on resounding in the hall.

Right now, no one dared to antagonize this furious Black Tyrant who did not spare even his tribesmen.

After Hei Lou Lan vented his anger once more, he sat down on the main seat with a gloomy expression.

His heart was filled with pent-up fury, especially when he looked at these silent elders, he felt sick to his stomach.

Besides anger, he felt helplessness.

During the Imperial Court contest, these Hei tribe elders had fought bravely and had no fear. But in this place, they were worried for their safety, where did their courage go?

Actually, Hei Lou Lan understood.

During the Imperial Court contest, rewards and punishments were openly issued; people fought to be the first, competing for fame and fortune, to be stronger and to survive.

However, in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the rewards for passing the stages would go to the tribe leader which caused everyone to have very little incentive to charge through the rounds.

The most important reason was that they had already won the Imperial Court contest and there were no more threats to their survival, and there were also many inheritances outside the sacred palace. As long as they survived this period of time, they were bound to have an even more radiant future when they exited Imperial Court blessed land.

Only fools would do things like abandoning their lives and acting as cannon fodder to help someone else!

Hei tribe’s elders were all extremely crafty.

Preserving their lives was most important, and besides that, so what if they were scolded and beaten by Hei Lou Lan? Even if Hei Lou Lan heavily injured them and they had to lie on the bed, it was nothing compared to dying.

Hei Lou Lan was aware of the elders’ thoughts.

’Even if I am a rank five expert, I cannot control their will. Once there is no unity, it will not be easy to lead even if the tribe is stronger. Never mind...’

Hei Lou Lan sighed inwardly and spoke: "Since it is so, then I can only open up Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and gather everyone’s strength to charge through the rounds."

Requesting outside help required guest tokens.

But right now, besides Hei tribe, there were also other Huang Jin tribes like Ye Lui tribe, Ma tribe and so on in Imperial Court blessed land.

One could imagine that once Hei Lou Lan opens up Eighty-Eight True Yang Building to them, these people would definitely charge forward madly. With this, they could be the cannon fodder.

After hearing Hei Lou Lan’s words, the elders exchanged veiled communication with each other through their gazes. This method allowed them to stay away from the vanguard position, but they were somewhat unwilling.

The first elder Hei Pei stepped forward: "Lord tribe leader, this is a clever method but we need to keep up our guard. These people might have the old ancestor’s bloodline running through them, but they are not of our Hei tribe. When they pass the rounds and get the benefits, I am afraid they won’t hand over anything."

"That’s right, lord." Elder Hei Qi Sheng also added, "Our Hei tribe racked our brains and suffered great difficulties before we were able to emerge as the winner in this time’s Imperial Court contest. This Eighty-Eight True Yang Building is ours, why should we share it with outsiders?"

"There are precedents of such actions, but when looking at history, those were all weak tribes who won by fluke and did not have the ability to get through the stages, so they had no choice but to mobilize other Huang Jin tribes. Our Hei tribe is strong and has many competent experts, how can we seek other’s help?"

"Hmph!" Hei Lou Lan raised his brows, "Since our troops are strong, why are we not able to challenge even one golden-white tiger phantom? You group of dogshit trash, only cherishing your lives dearly, but when I want to bring in outsiders to stake their lives for us, you are afraid of them taking the benefits? Do you think there is such a good thing in this world?"

Different from these elders, Hei Lou Lan was already feeling very anxious.

He was the possessor of Great Strength True Martial physique and must obtain a strength path Immortal Gu to advance to Gu Immortal.

Only by becoming an immortal, could he alleviate this threat to his life.

However, whether Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had any strength path Immortal Gu or which floor the strength path Immortal Gu was on, both were unknown.

As such, he wholeheartedly wanted to break the conventions and bring in the situation where the Huang Jin tribes cooperate to get through the rounds. Each round he passed would allow the owner token with him to advance and make it more convenient to proceed onwards.

Although they were defeated repeatedly at this round, Hei Lou Lan thought of it as a good opportunity.

He took the chance to create difficulty and shouted once again.

His furious shouts resounded in the hall, causing everyone’s ears to hear buzzing.

Due to Hei Lou Lan’s might and terrifying reputation, the elders could only choose to compromise.

The first elder Hei Pei said with worry: "Opening Eighty-Eight True Yang Building to others is like letting in a torrent, once its momentum increases, it will definitely cause disastrous losses. I suggest we place some limits. Wolf King Chang Shan Yin was a lesson that is right before us."

These words immediately caused an intense commotion among the elders.

Someone said with a bitter tone: "Right, Wolf King is really a hoodlum, he is hogging the benefits all to himself. Right now, he is in closed-door cultivation, maybe inwardly laughing to himself!"

Someone scoffed with disdain: "Eighty-Eight True Yang Building belongs to Hei tribe, we let him participate to tackle the round because we thought highly of him. But he repays us like this, hmph, what dogshit northern plains hero, he is just an ungrateful thief!"

Someone said with a cold and gloomy gaze: "In my opinion, when we open up Eighty-Eight True Yang Building this time, we should not bring Chang Shan Yin in. This will teach him a lesson!"

Hei Lou Lan coldly snorted, he was naturally greatly dissatisfied with Fang Yuan’s behavior. If it was someone else, he would have already taken action.

But Chang Shan Yin was not a measly character, his bearing in the decisive battle of the Imperial Court contest was still deeply engraved in Hei Lou Lan’s mind.

If he said he was not afraid, he would be lying.

However, openly excluding Chang Shan Yin was not appropriate as well. Not only would that be a display of narrow-mindedness, in case Wolf King was offended, even if Chang Shan Yin did not make a move, he still had the azure wolf group.

"First elder Hei Pei, since you mentioned this, then let’s hear it." Hei Lou Lan spoke.

Hei Pei slightly smiled and said with confidence: "There is no problem in opening Eighty-Eight True Yang Building to the outside from tomorrow. But before entering the building, no matter who it is, they would need to pay a fee. There will only be a quota of eight hundred entrants every day and the fee for entrance will increase according to the order of the entrants. At the same time, they must use poison vow Gu and agree to give fifty percent of all their gains to Hei tribe."

He paused before continuing: "As for outsiders that want to enter the tower, they need to pay a high price to purchase our guest tokens!"

Every elder present at the scene immediately had bright gazes as they praised this suggestion.

Hei Lou Lan swept over the scene once before leaning back on his chair, slowly closing his eyes: "Alright, this matter shall be done as Hei Pei says."

Hei Pei was exulted: "Lord tribe leader is wise and powerful, thank you lord tribe leader for your appreciation."

The news of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building opening to the outside spread and immediately caused a huge sensation in the sacred palace.

Countless people rushed to the place of registration; one side cursed Hei tribesmen for their ruthlessness in asking such a greatly high fee, while another side paid generously and even fought others for a quota to enter.

Fang Yuan observed indifferently, but he was inwardly happy.

Right now, inheriting Di Qiu inheritance was of the utmost priority to him.

Even if Hei Lou Lan took the initiative to invite him, he would not have been very willing. While the others had their attentions on Eighty-Eight True Yang Building now, it was the perfect time for him to make his move on the inheritance!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The night sky of Imperial Court blessed land was covered in silvery light, like silk or fog, it shone down on the land like a vast veil.

A group of azure wolves were running freely in the sky, chasing birds in the air or hunting animals on the ground. They were not hunting for food, it was merely leisure.

Fang Yuan stood above Di Qiu, slowly opening his eyes.

These days, not only did he prepare for the Gu refinement, he even expanded his wolf groups.

Not just the azure wolf group, the land based ordinary wolves, including turtleback wolf, water wolf, night wolf etc, had reached two hundred thousand in numbers.

"The wolf group has previously been spread around a radius of a hundred li, it can be a good method of deterrence. Moreover, the azure wolf group in the sky has already become the symbol of Wolf King, most Gu Masters would understand that Chang Shan Yin is hunting here when they see the wolves, thus they will choose to take a detour."

If they did not detour, it meant that they had ill intentions.

Once these Gu Masters were discovered by the wolves, they would be attacked by them.

Of course, there were innocent people who entered by accident, but Fang Yuan could not care less about them, it is their bad luck if they get killed by wolves.

Fang Yuan turned his gaze towards the sacred palace, although he was far away, he could see the dazzling aurora in the sky.

The sacred palace was shining in bright light once again, it was a beautiful sight — and also the sign that Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was going to materialize the second floor.

This had another meaning in Fang Yuan’s case.

The towers sink and countless wild Gu are sacrificed in order to become the mystical power that forms the Immortal Gu house.

This aurora was the accumulation of such power, and it had already reached the point of reaching a qualitative change.

In order to open Di Qiu inheritance, Fang Yuan needed to borrow the strength of this mystical power, and cause it to flow backwards.

"In order to get through the stages, Hei Lou Lan intentionally opened the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building to the public, causing everyone to get excited and all Gu Masters to feel moved. Once the news spread, all the Gu Masters outside the sacred palace came and gathered here. Everyone’s attention is on the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building now, this is the perfect time for me to open the inheritance!"

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone as he smiled, without hesitation, he struck.

"Go." He patted his belly, and thirty-six Gu worms flew out of his aperture.

These Gu were of peculiar shapes. Their bodies were tiny and were half the size of a fingernail, they were like five-pointed stars, giving off a milky white light.

These were rank one little light Gu, a very famous light path assistance type Gu.

As Fang Yuan willed, these little light Gu flew into Di Qiu’s cave. At once, the darkness in the cave was lifted.

Fang Yuan summoned another thirteen light fences Gu.

This Gu was rank three, also from the light path. Once activated, they can turn into fences and restrain the target.

The light fences Gu flew into the cave and mixed with the little light Gu, but there were no changes.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, he waved his hand and three rank five light path Gu came out.

These three Gu were lightning flash Gu that increased speed, unlimited spring light Gu that healed, as well as the attack type heaven blazing spark Gu.

Lightning flash Gu gave off a blue light, it shone like lightning as it flew into the cave.

The motionless Di Qiu finally had some changes.

As if a mechanism was unlocked, the ground and soil around Di Qiu started to expand and connect.

The blue lightning destroyed the little light Gu from before, and became a light-blue glow, having an extremely powerful aura.

But at the same time, the light fences Gu connected with each other and formed light fences that kept the blue lightning in.

The blue light was about to break out, but at this time unlimited spring light flew in and gave off an unlimited jade-green aurora, it was gentle as water, suppressing the blue light and forming a stalemate.

Eventually, the blazing heaven spark Gu flew in and turned into a bright red light, it pierced the green aura and the blue light, going deeper into the cave.

With some loud sounds, the cave entrance slowly closed. In the deep parts of the land, three lights were mixing together, engaging in a mysterious transformation that Fang Yuan could not describe.

Fang Yuan saw this and his heart settled, he knew that he was right. This was the "light in the soil" part of the quote.

Although he was eighty percent sure, he was worried about mistakes. After all, he only had the latter half of the inheritance’s clue, the first half was held in the hands of central continent Gu Immortals’ hands.

But this latter half described the method to open this inheritance.

Fang Yuan used his foundation as a refinement master, and together with Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s information, he forcefully interpreted this code and gained the chance to snatch the inheritance midway.

About an hour later, the sounds from under the ground became softer.

But the ground became hotter, even though Fang Yuan was wearing northern plains’ deer leather shoes, it could not isolate this heat.

The hole in the ground slowly opened, as the light was gone, leaving pure darkness inside.

Fang Yuan saw this and he became elated.

After ’light in the soil’, it was ’shine up to a hundred thousand feet high’. If interpreted literally, it would be a huge mistake.

This quote was a test, to test the refinement ability of the Gu Master.

The quote was regarding refinement path, ’shine up to a hundred thousand feet high’ was not just a description of the scenery, it also described the steps for the refinement process!

Fang Yuan was not flustered or worried, he threw two defensive rank five shine back spike Gu, three investigative type high observation Gu, one attack type ten thousand heart piercing arrow Gu, and nine assistance type nine feet flame Gu.

Only to see that inside the cave, grey-yellow smoke was rumbling but did not ooze out. The sounds of chirping birds or flying arrows, shrieking sounds that pierced the air came from within the smoke.

This scene lasted for seven minutes, until darkness returned again.

The ground closed again, as the cave vanished.

This time, Di Qiu no longer gave off heat, but instead cold air was seeping, causing Fang Yuan’s legs to turn stiff from the cold.

Fang Yuan breathed out a sigh, turning his gaze towards the sacred palace.

"If my guess is correct, the sacred palace is going to become chaotic now..."

At this moment, in the sacred palace.

At a side hall, the secret door concealed by trees opened.

An elderly man with snow-white hair walked out with a middle aged Gu Master.

"Old sir, please take care." First elder Hei Pei brought Tai Bai Yun Sheng out from the secret door and patted his chest: "Don’t worry, with me here, you are sure to have a guest token!"

Tai Bai Yun Sheng laughed: "Since elder Hei Pei is making a promise, I am sure it will succeed. Of course I am assured, you do not have to send me off, goodbye."

"Goodbye." First elder Hei Pei placed his fist by his chest as he bowed, seeing Tai Bai Yun Sheng turn around the corner and vanishing from his vision under the concealment of the trees.

"The allure of an Immortal Venerable inheritance is really huge, to think that even Tai Bai Yun Sheng came to bribe me." Hei Pei sighed.

Ever since Hei Lou Lan opened up the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, elder Hei Pei who was in charge of this matter became extremely popular. Every day, all sorts of people came to visit him in secret, some used their relationships while others talked about and tried to obtain friendship, there were people who bribed him and people who tried to attract him sexually.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s visit was a shock to Hei Pei.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a huge reputation, he was the number one healer in northern plains, he saved countless people and was an extremely righteous man with great character, his influence was great.

Hei Pei had not expected Tai Bai Yun Sheng to bribe him of all people.

"In the end, Old Sir Tai Bai is still a mortal. There are only so many guest tokens, if it was me, I would not be able to resist it either." Hei Pei laughed, raising his head subconsciously towards the top of the sacred palace.

There, an aurora of dazzling lights had condensed into a thick fog.

Within the thick fog, the second layer of the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was already visible.

"In no time, the second layer will materialize." Not far away, Tai Bai Yun Sheng raised his head and looked.

The colorful aurora shone on his white hair and his wrinkled face.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was in a daze, an event deep within his memories resurfaced.

That day, the sunset was bright like a fire, burning in the sky.

This was the fourteen year old Tai Bai Yun Sheng, who had just met the old beggar who changed his life forever.

"Young lad, you gave me a bowl of water, you saved this old beggar’s life. What do you want, say it, I will try my best to fulfill your wishes!" The old beggar had messy purple-red hair, he was slightly insane at times, while unconscious sometimes. But when he was awake, his gaze was deep as the ocean, he gave off a disposition that could be etched into a person’s memories.

"I want to be a Gu Master!" The young Tai Bai Yun Sheng said.

"What kind of Gu Master do you want to be? Hehehe, I have three complete inheritances! The first can allow you to bathe in flames and step on fire, surpassing mortals. The second can allow you to control wind and the air, roaming the world freely. The third can surpass life and death, allowing you to help the people in the world." The old beggar laughed and his rotten yellow teeth were exposed.

The young Tai Bai Yun Sheng frowned and thought about it, before choosing the third inheritance...

As he snapped out of his daze, returning from the trip to his memory lane, Tai Bai Yun Sheng laughed bitterly, muttering: "In the end, I am a person that is afraid of dying."

When he was young, he did not have such feelings, in fact, he became indifferent after witnessing many situations of death.

When Tai Bai Yun Sheng got old, his healthy body slowly became weak and feeble, he started reminiscing about the times in his youth.

Often, people’s thoughts changed with their circumstances.

On Earth, one could not surpass the limits of life and death, they had no choice but to accept it. But here, as long as there was a trace of hope, they would struggle and fight!

Only when he was faced with such a situation, when Tai Bai Yun Sheng became closer and closer to death did he become aware of this great terror!

Because of this, he secretly observed and waited for several rounds, before clearly understanding the situation, deciding to participate in this Imperial Court contest and enter Imperial Court blessed land.

"If I can obtain lifespan Gu from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, I would be able to increase my lifespan. Although lifespan Gu is hard to find, and even harder to buy or sell, I’m sure there are some inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. If in the end, I cannot obtain a lifespan Gu, I can only attempt to ascend to Gu Immortal realm." Tai Bai Yun Sheng evaluated in his heart.

The inheritance the old beggar gave him was outstanding, it was an entire inheritance that allowed one to cultivate all the way to rank six Gu Immortal realm!

The inheritance stated very clearly the method for a mortal to ascend to Gu Immortal realm.

Thus, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was very clear of the risks he had to take to reach Gu Immortal realm.

To advance to Gu Immortal realm, one needed to gather and fuse the elements of heaven, earth, and man. If either of the three aspects were insufficient, they would die and their soul would dissipate.

If he was not desperate, Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not want to ascend to Gu Immortal realm. That was because even if he ascended to Gu Immortal realm, it could not raise his lifespan.

But in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s inheritance, there was hope left for him.

But this hope was very difficult to obtain, he needed to succeed in advancing to Gu Immortal realm for there to be a possibility.

These years, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had been searching for lifespan Gu, but lifespan Gu were created from heaven and earth, they could not be located easily and were hard to catch, Tai Bai Yun Sheng made no progress.

"There should be lifespan Gu inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, I can definitely find lifespan Gu there!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked at Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s figure as he cheered for himself secretly.

But the next moment, his pupils expanded as he saw an unbelievable scene!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The whole sacred palace fell into shock and fear.

After a while, a large commotion suddenly rose up.

"This... what the hell is going on?!"

"What happened, why is the aurora shrinking?"

A scene that had never occurred before was happening in everyone’s sights.

The second floor that had been gradually condensing into form was slowly becoming fainter. Great amounts of the thick aurora were reducing and becoming lighter at a visible speed.

"What happened?!" Hei Lou Lan’s brows furrowed into a knot as he grabbed elder Hei Pei’s collar with his thick arm and pulled towards him.

His expression was twisted and his eyes opened with fury as he shouted: "Investigate it! I must know what the hell happened!"

Hei Lou Lan possessed one of the ten extreme physiques - great strength true martial physique. Only by becoming an immortal, could he avoid the pressure of death.

However, for ten extreme physiques to become immortal, they required the help of relevant Immortal Gu.

Hei Lou Lan placed his hopes on Eighty-Eight True Yang Building to find the key to become immortal – a strength path Immortal Gu, so how could he let an accident happen to Eighty-Eight True Yang Building?

Elder Hei Pei’s body shivered in fright, Hei Lou Lan asked him to investigate the details, but he was only a mortal, how could he investigate it? What could he investigate? In a sobbing tone, he answered: "This... this subordinate does not know, there were no instances of this happening in historical records..."

"It is getting lighter, it is becoming even more light!" Someone shouted while pointing at Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

The aurora became smaller, and the thick light, dimmer.

Many Gu Masters looked up in a daze, panic quickly spreading everywhere.

"Is Eighty-Eight True Yang Building damaged?"

"This is something our Immortal Venerable old ancestor personally arranged."

"Could it be that Eighty-Eight True Yang Building also cannot compete against the flow of the river of time?"

Some had pale expressions while even more covered their heads, their gaze filled with fear.

"They are in chaos." From far away, Fang Yuan looked with an eerie gaze and a cold smile on his face.

Even if he was far away, the panicked shouts in the sacred palace still reached his ears.

The culprit behind this terror glanced at the sacred palace before looking down at Di Qiu cave below.

His gaze shone with a strange light as he praised: "Amazing, truly amazing!"

Fang Yuan had originally estimated that only ten percent at most would be absorbed, but he had never thought when he activated the mechanism, the backflow of the heavenly power would surpass his estimation!

Based on just this, Fang Yuan could tell this Gu Immortal’s understanding of

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was absolutely not beneath his.

"Who is this mysterious Gu Immortal? What identity do they have? I had a fortuitous encounter, the advantage of rebirth and also the first hand information from Lang Ya land spirit. But how was he or she able to have such a deep understanding of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building?"

Right now, the cave was filled to the brim with light, almost to the point of overflowing, but it was firmly restrained by the layer of black light at the entrance.

The aurora surged freely; the intense light that was brewing inside was becoming more and more vigorous.

Crack...

Cracks started appearing on the first floor of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Hei Pei and the other elders went pale as they looked at this scene in a daze.

As for the other Gu Masters at the lower floors of the sacred palace, many were already kneeling on the ground, kowtowing non-stop.

Some shouted, some wept and some begged —

"Don’t collapse, don’t collapse!"

"Old ancestor, what mistake did we commit, why are you punishing us like this?"

"We beg old ancestor to show mercy, please give another chance to us unfilial descendants!"

All these voices entered Hei Lou Lan’s ears as he stared at the first floor of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building rigidly.

The cracks were continuously spreading on the first floor.

Even if Hei Lou Lan was a rank five Gu Master with an extreme physique, an existence at the peak of mortals, right now he was feeling bewilderment, helplessness, hesitation and weakness!

"No, this can’t go on! I cannot allow this to happen!!" Hei Lou Lan shouted in fury, his expression malevolent and his gaze filled with hot fury.

’I have yet to avenge mother! My vengeance! My strength path Immortal Gu!’ He screamed in his heart.

Rumble.

A soft sound was heard, but the earth shook!

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s first floor, which was completely condensed, collapsed completely and turned back into the free aurora light.

The light was like a flood that had broken the dam as it gushed out and spread rapidly; in just a few breaths of time, it enshrouded the whole sacred palace and dyed the horizons.

Puff!

Hei Lou Lan’s gaze lost its focus as suffocation filled his stomach, he involuntarily spurted out stagnated blood that had flowed in reverse towards his throat.

"No! I won’t allow this! Form back right now! Come back!" He opened up his palms and tried to grab the aurora.

And as if it was responding to his effort, the aurora that were gushing out gradually reduced and the surrounding lights also started falling back.

Hei Lou Lan’s gaze flashed, a spark of hope had just ignited in him, but was completely gone the next moment.

The aurora light might have gathered back together, but it did not condense back to the image of the first floor. The light continue to reduce as if a giant incorporeal beast was swallowing it.

"No, don’t..." Far away, Tai Bai Yun Sheng mumbled, his expression becoming spiritless.

"Do the heavens want my Hei tribe dead?" First elder Hei Pei clutched his hair.

A problem occurred in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building in Hei tribe’s hands, this meant Hei tribe was completely finished. Other super forces and Huang Jin tribes would not let them go.

"Heavens, what happened? Eighty-Eight True Yang Building is actually..." Ye Lui Sang grabbed his chest in fear. Near his heart resided the fire path Immortal Gu which was lent by Ye Lui tribe’s Supreme Elder Ye Lui Lai before the Imperial Court contest. Right now, this fire path Immortal Gu was trembling non-stop.

Almost at the same time, Fang Yuan’s expression also had a slight change.

In his aperture, Spring Autumn Cicada revealed its true body, trembling continuously and was emitting its Immortal Gu aura, causing his rank five aperture to creak from the pressure.

"This is the resonance of the Great Dao in heaven and earth." Fang Yuan was well aware of this.

Man was the spirit of all living beings, Gu was the essence of heaven and earth, a vessel of the Great Dao. If a mortal Gu was said to hold only a tiny fragment of the law of heaven and earth, then an Immortal Gu would hold a corner of the Great Dao, an intact piece of the rules of heaven and earth.

Because of this, there could only be one Immortal Gu of its kind.

Every time an Immortal Gu was born, other Immortal Gu in the surroundings would tremble and respond.

The more closely related or conflicting the law inside Gu worms’ bodies are, the stronger the resonance between them, and the greater the extent they would tremble.

"From the extent of Spring Autumn Cicada’s trembling, this Immortal Gu that is about to be born is not of the time path." Fang Yuan estimated, but his gaze was tightly looking at the cave without the least bit of negligence.

Inside the cave, the aurora from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was continuously being absorbed before fading away as it nurtured the intense light within.

This intense light was becoming more and more flourishing; the black membrane at the entrance was starting to show signs of not being able to restrain it.

"That’ll do. If I don’t make a move now, the black membrane will burst and the aurora will shoot to the sky and expose me. It is still a small matter if Hei Lou Lan and the rest are the ones that discover me, but in case it awakens Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s hibernating will, then it will just take one thought from the Immortal Venerable’s will to turn me into ashes."

Fang Yuan had endured the impulse to make a move several times before, and now the timing was fully ripe, he made his move, throwing in large numbers of Gu worms.

Gu worms from rank one to rank five from all paths sprinkled down like rain.

This situation looked disorderly and complex, but it actually had a special profoundness to it. The Gu worms were not only divided into separate groups, they even had particularly specific distances from each other, to the extent that some Gu worms fell slightly slower while some fell faster.

This was a high grade technique of Gu refinement called the sprinkler. Gu Masters with natural talent and aptitude could master enslavement path and flying skills. But even the Gu Masters with higher natural talent required thousands of tries before they could display a decent use of the sprinkler technique.

Fang Yuan’s attainment in this technique was beyond the level of just a decent performance, and was enough to make other refinement path masters exclaim in surprise.

After the Gu worms sprinkled down, the aurora slowly changed color into that of blue water or the sky, before becoming still.

In the blue light, countless white lights flew like birds and swam like fish. Specks of white light would occasionally gather into a heap and from time to time scatter like stars. Just glancing at this for a moment caused Fang Yuan to feel dizzy.

He quickly moved his gaze towards the sacred palace.

The clamors in the sacred palace had already decreased. After the aurora light enshrouding the sacred palace decreased by around half, the speed of its reduction slowed.

Seeing that no one was paying attention here and the scattered wolf groups were also not sending any battle signals, Fang Yuan inwardly breathed a sigh of relief.

"Everything is going smoothly, it should be the final step now." He was extremely cautious and did not even have the slightest intent of being conceited, instead he was even more vigilant.

Whether it was the history of this world or on Earth, how many cases were there of people failing at the last hurdle?

Moreover, this final step would create a huge commotion and was the step where a problem was most likely to appear.

Fang Yuan slightly flicked his wrist and and a smelly fart Gu that he had been holding lightly flew into the cave.

Immediately a peculiar fragrance spread out of the cave.

The peculiar fragrance flew even without wind, soon spreading out.

"Stopped, it has stopped!" After a while of shock and fear, the Gu Masters in the sacred palace became wild with joy.

"Lord, the aurora has stopped reducing and has begun to slowly increase again!" A Hei tribe elder shouted excitedly, and was kicked by Hei Lou Lan.

"I can see that!" Hei Lou Lan kicked the elder to the ground, his gaze was ruthless but the deep voice could not conceal his joy.

However, his heart was extremely nervous.

The reduction of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s aurora and even the collapse of the floor had never happened before.

What had happened?

Hei Lou Lan’s mind was filled with doubts.

He did not know why there was a problem, it caused him to worry greatly. What made Hei Lou Lan even more helpless and indignant was that Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was the work of an Immortal Venerable —"even if I knew where the problem was, I probably would not be able to solve it with just my ability..."

If he was to know that it was all caused by Fang Yuan single-handedly, then he would probably risk his life and tear off the seal placed on him by Immortal Gu Dark Limit, to pit his life against Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s shocking change was a traumatic experience for everyone in the sacred palace, countless people were worried, scared and helpless.

Fortunately, the situation stabilized not long after Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s first floor collapsed.

The aurora no longer reduced and was instead beginning to increase again.

Maybe because it was provoked, the speed of this aurora’s increase was somewhat faster than before.

Several days later, the thick as water aurora condensed back to the first floor of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

After it had completely formed, Hei Lou Lan and the others immediately entered it anxiously. Their entry to Eighty-Eight True Yang Building proceeded smoothly.

This made Hei Lou Lan greatly relieved and he gradually calmed down.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was extremely significant to him, he needed to become a Gu Immortal to avenge his mother. As the possessor of one of the ten extreme physiques, Great Strength True Martial physique, his only hope of becoming an immortal was to obtain a strength path Immortal Gu from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

This was depicted in <>.

For humans to live, it was okay if they did not have strength or even wisdom, but they could not lose hope.

Hei Lou Lan regained the hope of saving his life, his mood gradually turned better as he started to plan his next breakthrough of the hundred rounds.

The first floor of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had formed anew, so the checkpoints had reset, making Hei Lou Lan’s previous efforts turn into smoke; he needed to overcome everything again.

To Hei Pei and the other elders, this was a very good thing.

"This is joy after extreme sorrow, going through the rounds again will allow us to get even more rewards!"

"Maybe that was a small joke by old ancestor Immortal Venerable..."

"Every floor in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building has a hundred rounds with the difficulty increasing sharply at the later rounds. Looking at history, there were very few Imperial Court winners who were able to cross through every round, we should not be optimistic in being able to overcome the final round. As long as we can put all our efforts in passing the earlier rounds, our tribe’s strength will rise greatly!"

The elders were filled with joy, but this was bad news to Hei Lou Lan.

There were only two ways for him to obtain a strength path Immortal Gu from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

First was to get a high grade evaluation and enter the treasure room, then use his bloodline identity to exchange for the Immortal Gu inside.

Second was to pass the final round of every floor which could give him the chance to obtain an Immortal Gu.

To Hei Lou Lan, the first method required him to bring out an equivalently valuable treasure to exchange, and thus was not practical. The only probability of success was in the second method.

Passing through the last few rounds would be extremely difficult. The rounds were reset now; they would have to overcome these rounds again, which no doubt would waste his precious time.

Time waits for no man, once their time was up, they would be sent out of Imperial Court blessed land. If he could not get a strength path Immortal Gu before this happens, Hei Lou Lan would not only be unable to take revenge, but would also have to welcome his death.

For this reason, Hei Lou Lan stubbornly maintained his stance in spite of others’ wishes and started recruiting other tribes’ Gu Masters, completely opening up Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Everyone could casually enter or exit Eighty-Eight True Yang Building free of charge. Other than Hei tribe elders, everyone in the sacred palace was celebrating in joy.

"Hei Lou Lan has a grand demeanour, doing something that no other Lords of Imperial Court have done before. I, Ye Lui Sang, am in deep admiration!" Ye Lui Sang was the first to enter Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, his face covered in a joyful glow.

He was the current tribe leader of Ye Lui tribe and had been a popular candidate to win the prior Imperial Court contest; the tribe’s Gu Immortals supported him greatly, not even stinting on lending a fire path Immortal Gu to him.

But he lost in the end and to preserve the fire path Immortal Gu, he had no choice but to side with Hei Lou Lan.

They finally won and succeeded in entering Imperial Court blessed land, but as one of the super forces, he felt that it was a disgrace to be a subordinate of Hei tribe. He was sure to be treated coldly, abandoned and even punished when he returned to the tribe.

"If I can have good gains in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, then I can make up for the earlier mistakes and return grandly to the tribe!" Ye Lui Sang’s emotions surged.

"Chang Shan Yin, don’t be proud of yourself. As long as you don’t become an immortal, I will have a chance. Eighty-Eight True Yang Building is my cornerstone to rise up!" Chang Biao had a cold look in his eyes. He was also among the first batch of experts to enter the tower.

He was not moving alone and had a companion beside him.

It was Sole Blade General Pan Ping.

Previously at Xing Jiu mountain peak, Pan Ping’s opportunity had been openly seized by Fang Yuan, which created a lot of indignance in his heart.

Chang Biao learned of this situation and intentionally approached Pan Ping; the two hit it off, becoming partners.

"Go, go, become the vanguards to open my path, use your lives to broaden my way." Hei Lou Lan sneered inwardly, using his owner token while calmly looking at the grand flow of people entering the tower.

After the flow of people had gradually become sparse, Tai Bai Yun Sheng ,with his simple and aged appearance, tall and sturdy physique, clothed in a white robe, he appeared at the top floor of the sacred palace.

"Old Sir Tai Bai." Hei Lou Lan greeted him.

"Lord tribe leader has astonishing mettle, this old man is overwhelmed." Tai Bai Yun Sheng exclaimed in admiration.

He had an elegant demeanour and leisurely attitude. Since everyone could casually enter and exit now, they were not restricted by the quota. He also did not anxiously enter the tower immediately since the rounds which might give lifespan Gu as the reward would definitely be the later rounds.

The two exchanged a few words before Tai Bai Yun Sheng entered the tower.

"There is strength in numbers." Hei Lou Lan was feeling overwhelmed in his mind.

From the information sent by the owner token; in just a short period of time, because of the enormous quantity of Gu Masters, they had successively gotten through the first thirty rounds.

However, at the fortieth round and above, just numbers would not work, they required specific Gu Master experts to cross those rounds.

Pan Ping, Chang Biao, Ye Lui Sang and Tai Bai Yun Sheng made their moves one after another, and were able to push to the fifty-third round. But here, their momentum came to a stop, they encountered a problem; they needed an enslavement path master to pass this round.

"Looks like we must have Wolf King to pass this round." Tai Bai Yun Sheng muttered while stroking his snow-white beard.

In this Imperial Court contest, Fang Yuan's performance left behind an extremely deep impression on everyone. The glorious title of the number one enslavement path Gu Master of this generation in northern plains was already given to him.

Thus, as they encountered this problem, everyone's first thought was Fang Yuan.

"Strange, why don't I see Chang Shan Yin?" Ye Lui Sang looked around him, but could not find Chang Shan Yin.

"Wolf King has been taking his wolves out for hunting these few days." Soon, someone replied.

"Chang Shan Yin is indeed an extraordinary person, we can casually enter and exit Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, but his heart is actually not moved!" Sighs and admiration could be heard among the group.

Pan Ping snorted, speaking in a gloomy tone: "Everyone, please don't forget that our Lord Wolf King has already entered the tower before. According to a reliable source, he passed with high grade evaluation. After he exited the tower, he immediately went to closed-door cultivation and even refused many invitations from tribe leader Hei Lou Lan."

The crowd here knew of the conflict between him and Fang Yuan, and as no one wished to offend this uprising Sole Blade General, the praises and admiration towards Fang Yuan immediately stopped.

Everyone sank into a momentary silence.

Many Gu Master experts also had a slight change in expressions as they showed a somewhat unexpected look on their face.

Pan Ping had a sinister motive in mentioning Fang Yuan had obtained a huge benefit before, leaving it to everyone's ample imagination as to what reward it was, and with this, succeeded in inciting jealousy in their hearts.

If it was before when these people did not have any experience of the enormous benefits provided by Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, it would have been slightly better. But now that they had experienced it as they passed the rounds, the fire of envy was lit up in the depths of their hearts!

At this moment, a young Gu Master's voice broke the silence: "Since Eighty-Eight True Yang Building is opened for everyone, everyone can obtain benefits. Lord father being able to obtain the benefits was due to his own ability!"

The crowd's gazes quickly moved towards the source and discovered it was none other than Chang Shan Yin's own son — Chang Ji You.

Immediately, Pan Ping's expression turned sharp as he viciously gazed at Chang Ji You.

Although Chang Ji You was somewhat weaker than Pan Ping, his heart was filled with reverence towards his father, so he did not back down and instead returned Pan Ping's gaze with his own furious gaze.

Killing intent surged in Pan Ping's mind, but he did not dare to make a move. He was unexpected put on the spot by Chang Ji You, a junior!

The person with the most complicated feelings right now was Chang Biao.

He was Chang Ji You’s own blood father, but right now, he had to look on at his own son defending his greatest enemy.

Grievance and hatred were surging up non-stop in his heart!

"Cough cough." Tai Bai Yun Sheng stood up to alleviate the tension, "Everyone, let’s concentrate on this round."

"At this point, we can only request Lord Wolf King’s assistance."

"Among us, Old Sir Tai Bai has the highest reputation; as long as you personally send a letter, Wolf King will definitely accept the request."

The Gu Masters spoke one after another, but Chang Biao and Pan Ping glanced at each other, their hearts filled with worry.

If Wolf King comes, he was sure to pass this round.

But with this, not speaking of the rewards he would get from passing the round, his prestige would increase even more. This was a situation these two were not willing to see.

Pan Ping wanted to speak up but hesitated.

He had the mind to prevent this, but it was not easy getting a chance to interrupt Tai Bai Yun Sheng and make him back down. If Chang Ji You again interrupted here, his face might be lost completely!

Chang Biao was secretly observing Pan Ping’s expression and saw Pan Ping opening his mouth several times but did not manage to speak in the end. He inwardly cursed Pan Ping for being a coward, then looked around and signalled a planted agent among the crowd.

This planted agent immediately comprehended the signal and shouted out: "In my opinion, Lord Wolf King is occupied with important matters, it probably won’t be easy to invite him. Why don’t we request Lord Tang Miao Ming instead? Her enslavement path attainment is already very close to master realm."

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s thoughts could not help being shaken.

He did not have much interaction with Fang Yuan, but he knew deeply of the latter’s ’arrogance’. Instead of taking the risk of facing embarrassment from being refused, it might truly be better to let Tang Miao Ming try first.

Flap flap flap....

Groups after groups of blissful snow bats flew from all around like rivers converging into the sea, as they flew towards Di Qiu cave.

The peculiar fragrance had spread for a hundred li.

It was this rich fragrance that had attracted the blissful snow bat groups.

At this stage, the Gu refinement was already approaching the end.

"This is using the lives of beasts as sacrifices, it is a wonderful method that is similar to the workings of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. It is just that in case of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the small towers sacrifice the wild Gu to combine their strength."

As he personally put it into practice, Fang Yuan gained an even more profound understanding of this Gu refinement.

The peculiar fragrance gradually dissipated, and without its temptation, the small number of remaining blissful snow bats flew away in disorder.

"It is about to finish!" Fang Yuan’s breathing turned rough and his gaze staring at the cave fixatedly, unable to conceal his excited expression.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

By this point, Fang Yuan was overwhelmed with awe.

This mysterious Gu Immortal who created Di Qiu inheritance was definitely a grandmaster in terms of refinement attainment. The entire process was using Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s heavenly power, it was innovative and daring.

Although Fang Yuan was the executor, his role was really that of an assistant.

Refining Gu was hard, refining an Immortal Gu was even harder, it was harder than ascending to heaven!

For a comparable example, a rock has been pushed onto the peak of a cliff by a mysterious Gu Immortal. Fang Yuan is only giving it a final push, easily sending this rock flying towards the ground and crashing, that would be success.

Swish swish swish...

The cave had already formed into a black water spiral. The spiral continued to spin, letting out a weird noise.

Soon after, the tower’s tip appeared, followed by its body and base. From within the spiral, a brand new small tower appeared with seemingly countless Gu worms inside.

"Incredible! With the appearance of this tower, the final loophole is gone. Even if someone comes here due to the commotion, they would not find anything." Fang Yuan praised as he sighed.

But...

Although the tower was formed, why has the Immortal Gu not appeared yet?

Fang Yuan’s gaze focused, he found that in the small tower, there was a strong light that flickered. There was a weak feeling of connection with it in his heart.

He instantly understood that this was the early stage of the Immortal Gu.

He was about to use this connection to lure the Immortal Gu out.

When suddenly, this strong light escaped like an intangible shadow, towards the southeast direction.

"What happened?" Fang Yuan was shocked in his heart. By now, the four steps of "light in the soil, shine up to a hundred thousand feet high, swimming in the sky for a hundred li, praising plum fragrant snow" had been completed, Fang Yuan did not know what was going on with this sudden change.

"Hei Lou Lan opened up the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building after it formed once more, it was truly a huge move. According to logic, I should be heading to the building to challenge it, that is what a normal person would do..."

The early stage Immortal Gu had flown to a far away place, as Fang Yuan looked at the sacred palace hesitantly.

Although he was outside, he had already made preparations. Be it Chang tribe or Ge tribe, they were sending him real-time information.

The longer Fang Yuan was away from the sacred palace, the more suspicion he would attract. If they were stuck at a stage and needed the Wolf King’s power, some people might come to find him and...

It took time for information to be transmitted.

Fang Yuan had no idea that his enemy Chang Biao helped him indirectly.

At this moment, Tang Miao Ming took great risks and was able to successfully pass the round, causing a huge wave of cheering inside the building.

The Immortal Gu was still the most important matter, Fang Yuan only hesitated for a moment before making up his mind, spreading his wings and chasing after the strong light.

This strong light was like a cocoon, it travelled along the ground at an absurd speed. Because of the trees and bushes shielding it from sight, no one took notice of it.

Fang Yuan chased it in the air, trying to hide his traces as he abandoned the wolves behind, travelling stealthily.

As time passed, this strong light became dimmer, but its speed rose.

Although he was rank five peak stage, his speed was not at the peak of the mortal realm, it was very tough chasing the Gu, but he did not lose sight of it.

In the end, it was because this early stage Immortal Gu was not created solely by Fang Yuan.

Different from when he refined divine travel Gu, Fang Yuan was only an assistant this time, it was all due to the backflow of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s heavenly power. He was a mortal, it was already a huge achievement from much effort to be able to gain a connection to the Immortal Gu.

The strong light entered a valley and flew into a waterfall, vanishing.

But using the connection, Fang Yuan could sense that the early stage Immortal Gu was still.

Fang Yuan penetrated the waterfall but collided on the smooth and wet mountain rock. At once, rocks crumbled as water splashed all over the place.

"Weird!"

Fang Yuan was confused, the connection in his heart told him that the strong light was inside this water, but he diverted the water flow and even destroyed this waterfall, and yet he could not find a trace of this Immortal Gu.

"Was my effort in vain? No, there is a huge trick here!"

He flew up and observed the terrain.

This small waterfall had already become a pool, it was extremely ordinary. The valley was nameless, it was not a unique location.

Fang Yuan placed his sights on this pool.

The connection in his heart told him that the early stage Immortal Gu was inside, but even if he went through the waterfall, or controlled the water flow, he could not find it.

At this time, the Gu master’s investigative Gu worms would be tested.

Fang Yuan was obviously unresigned, he tried many investigative methods. Although he did not excel in investigation, he controlled Hu Immortal blessed land and had access to treasure yellow heaven, he did not lack rank five mortal Gu.

Only when he tried the fifty-seventh method, after a considerable expense in immortal essence stones did he have a discovery.

Only to see that in the pool, there was the silhouette of a pavilion, it looked like the reflection of the moon in the water.

He entered the water, but did not enter the pavilion.

After trying for several times without success, Fang Yuan gasped, he finally recognised this pavilion after a flash of inspiration struck him.

"Is this the long lost Immortal Gu house — Water Pavilion?"

Immortal Gu were unique, so were Immortal Gu houses.

This Water Pavilion was inferior to Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, it was only rank seven. But it had a great reputation, it was the signature method of the Gu Immortal Shui Ni.

Shui Ni was a rank eight Gu Immortal, the legend that created the water path. She was also the creator of one of the top ten sects in central continent, Spirit Affinity House.

In contrast to the grandness of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Water Pavilion could hide itself in the water, becoming like an illusion, it was very mystical. It could move with currents or hide inside mist and fog, flying in the sky. It could even hide in a corner of an iceberg, becoming undetectable.

Without the token to enter the pavilion, Water Pavilion could even repel rank eight Gu Immortals.

But right now, this pavilion was ownerless, its doors were open. Fang Yuan was kept in the dark earlier, but now that he found out the truth, he had the method to enter.

"To enter Water Pavilion, I have to become water. There is a killer move called water spirit transformation, together with a few Gu, I can turn into a water spirit, my battle strength would surge and I would have terrain advantage."

Fang Yuan searched through his memories and found a method.

But in the end, Hu Immortal land spirit bought a rank five current charge Gu for him in treasure yellow heaven.

This Gu could allow a Gu Master to turn into a water current temporarily and charge for a distance. But it was already outdated in the Gu world, that was because when the Gu Master transforms into a current, he might suffer heavy injuries or even die when hit by a fire path Gu worm.

But Fang Yuan was not using this Gu to battle, it was to enter Water Pavilion, it was more convenient than using the killer move to transform into a water spirit.

With a ’swoosh’, Fang Yuan turned into a current and rushed towards Water Pavilion.

The pavilion was neither big nor small, it had three layers. It had a rustic flare to it, as the materials used were very ancient, having furniture and drawings.

Once Fang Yuan entered, he kept the current charge Gu and went to the third floor, pushing open a door to find the early stage Immortal Gu.

Only to see that this early stage Immortal Gu was like a thumb-sized cocoon. It was inside a large red bowl at the moment.

This bowl was larger than a water tank, the edges were uneven, looking like a shark’s teeth.

Inside, there was some blue liquid that was oozing with coldness.

"So that’s it."

Fang Yuan realized at once.

Although the four steps allowed the refinement of the early stage of the Immortal Gu, the Gu was still not complete.

It needed to further nurture and grow.

The mysterious Gu Immortal placed the Water Pavilion here in order to give the early stage Immortal Gu a good place to nurture itself.

There were some words on the large red bowl.

Fang Yuan looked at them and even with his knowledge, he could only decipher a portion of them.

"These are inkman characters, legend says that the splashes of literature water on Book Mountain in Qian Kun Crystal Wall created the first written characters in this world!"

These characters had been lost long ago. Even inkmen barely knew them after being chased out of Book Mountain.

"The Gu Immortals in treasure yellow heaven must have some research materials regarding the inkman language. After all, many Gu Immortals are interested in Book Mountain, they have been searching for the grey-white stone slab in order to recreate Qian Kun Crystal Wall."

Fang Yuan had a thought and immediately contacted little Hu Immortal.

The value of Hu Immortal blessed land was displayed again, it allowed a mortal like Fang Yuan to use the precious resource of mobilizing Gu Immortals.

The price was hefty, but after exchanging for some information regarding inkman language, Fang Yuan deciphered the words on this bowl on the spot.

The result made Fang Yuan become shocked and excited: "So this inheritance was created by Mo Yao!"

This Mo Yao was a brilliant person, the thirty-sixth generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House. She had a special identity, she was an inkman.

But eventually, she broke the limits of her race, and became a rank seven Gu Immortal.

She made tremendous contributions to the righteous path, and used her love to reform a huge demonic character ten thousand years ago, Sword Demon Bo Qing.

Bo Qing was a lone cultivator, he had a lowly start but his talent was superb, he created sword path Gu worms singlehandedly, and roamed the five regions without any obstruction or anyone that could match him.

He was among the most brilliant rank eight peak stage experts in history. He had great battle strength that shook the heavens, his sword path Gu worms were innovative and special, they had great strength. He was known as ’the pseudo-Immortal Venerable who split the five regions with his sword, it was fortunate for the people in the world that love changed him’.

It meant that: This person had great battle strength, only inferior to the Immortal and Demon Venerables of each era. Thankfully, because of love, he changed from demonic to righteous, it was truly a fortunate thing for all life in this world!

Back then, Bo Qing was even a hot favorite for the person to advance to rank nine.

But eventually, he failed when trying to get to rank nine and turned into ashes. As his wife, Mo Yao resisted with her life, and eventually died with him.

"In history, Mo Yao was a true refinement grandmaster. No wonder... back then when Giant Sun Immortal Venerable recruited concubines, the ten central continent sects provided beautiful female Gu Masters. Among them, Spirit Affinity House sent numerous female Gu Immortals into the palaces, as an offering to the Immortal Venerable. Between the concubines that gained Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s favor, a few were from Spirit Affinity House.

As an insider, it was no wonder that her understanding of the sacred palace and Eighty-Eight True Yang Building greatly surpassed ordinary people.

Mo Yao was the thirty-sixth generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House, she was naturally nurtured fully by Spirit Affinity House, it was easy for her to investigate the hidden secrets about Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

The origin of the Water Pavilion here could be explained as such.

In the inkman words, this Immortal Gu’s information was written —

Calamity beckoning Gu!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The corners of Fang Yuan’s lips curled up into a smile as he read the ink text on the sides of the bowl.

This calamity beckoning Gu was a rank seven Immortal Gu, a rank higher than Fang Yuan’s Spring Autumn Cicada. Its ability was extremely strange, actually involving the matter of earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations.

The middle section of the ink text explained its ability in detail. When a Gu Immortal goes through calamity and invokes disaster, calamity beckoning Gu could detach the earthly calamity and heavenly tribulation from the original target, and draw them to oneself.

Fang Yuan’s expression could not help but become strange.

Such an Immortal Gu, who would dare to use it?

What terrifying and destructive strength did earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations have, how terrifying was its heavenly power? Instead of spending one’s days to their heart’s content, using calamity beckoning Gu to attract these earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations, wasn’t this seeking one’s own doom?

Gu Immortal Mo Yao was the thirty-sixth generation fairy of the grand Spirit Affinity House, why would she refine an Immortal Gu like this?

The last section of the ink text provided the reason.

It turned out she was really courting death!

Back then when she and Bo Qing were deeply in love, they were a famous couple of the righteous path and a romantic tale of their story spread throughout the five regions.

Sword Immortal Bo Qing had outstanding talent with no opponents that matched him in the whole world; he was well known as ’the pseudo-Immortal Venerable who split the five regions with his sword, it was fortunate for the people in the world that love changed him’.

Even in the whole wide world, looking at his entire life, the only thing in front of him was the one supreme goal of breaking through to rank nine.

However, challenging the rank nine barrier was extremely dangerous, even the grand Sword Immortal had a feeling that he was walking on thin ice and only had a fifteen percent chance of success at most.

Bo Qing’s ambition was lofty, vowing to reach the apex that was rank nine. Mo Yao persuaded him in vain, and as such, she could only tearfully make preparations to assist him.

Bo Qing set up his inheritances and arranged for future events. His first attempt of breaking through failed; he was left in a state of heavy injuries for seventy years, bedridden the whole time without being able to even budge, his everyday life was all taken care of by Mo Yao.

After his injuries got better, Bo Qing once again desired to break through to rank nine.

Mo Yao knew the difficulty level of this, especially during the final trial of breaking through to rank nine when limitless earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations would descend. Bo Qing might have terrifying battle strength but he lacked the sustainability to endure through the trial.

To help her husband, she secretly betrayed her sect and started to make plans towards Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was the famous setup created by an Immortal Venerable and the skillful Long Hair Ancestor, the number one Immortal Gu house in the world. Mo Yao had already started her research on it a long time ago and had gained much insight from it which helped her to deepen her grandmaster refinement path attainment.

She might be a variant human and did not have Giant Sun’s bloodline, but Spirit Affinity House had provided many outstanding girls to Giant Sun to become his concubines during his time. Among them, several female Gu Immortals had gained Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s favor.

Thus, Spirit Affinity House was able to obtain many secrets of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable which included detailed information on Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Mo Yao was able to learn of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s secret from these resources.

Imperial Court blessed land was situated at the exact center of northern plains, the space inside was as vast as a world and the time was separated into day and night as well, the good fortune in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was extremely deep. Thus, at every set interval of time, it would attract extremely powerful earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable considered this point and placed a ’divert disaster Gu’ when setting up Eighty-Eight True Yang Building which was an important cornerstone of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

This Gu was a rank seven Immortal Gu and was one of the essence of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path; it could divert the earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations in Imperial Court blessed land to the outside world. Because of this, the earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations formed into the ten year blizzard disaster that spread over the entire northern plains.

Conversely, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used this ten year blizzard disaster to set up a rule which formed into the tradition of the Imperial Court contest.

Mo Yao discovered a loophole that was not strictly a loophole in this point.

Originally, Imperial Court blessed land co-existed with Eighty-Eight True Yang Building in symbiosis, and as such, every ten years, there would be vast and powerful earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations. At this time, Imperial Court blessed land would open up a small crack in accordance to divert disaster Gu, to send out the earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations.

Imperial Court blessed land was set by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to only allow mortals to enter or exit and did not allow the entry of Gu Immortals. But at the time when it had to divert disaster, there would be a hidden crack in Imperial Court blessed land from which the calamities and tribulations would rush out like a flood, and at this time the setup that prevents Gu Immortals from entering would be ineffective.

Mo Yao used this small crack and risked her very life in going against the calamities and tribulations to enter Imperial Court blessed land.

She spent close to ten years investigating inside the blessed land and after suffering countless hardships, she was able to find the crucial node through her grandmaster refinement path attainment -—it was the small tower at Di Qiu area.

Next, she risked the danger of awakening Giant Sun’s will and destroyed this small tower, using the backward flow of the heavenly power to sense divert disaster Gu and create a cave that would foster ’calamity beckoning Gu’.

After she succeeded in refining the early stage of the Immortal Gu, she set up the Immortal Gu house Water Pavilion in this nameless valley.

Inside the pavilion, Mo Yao completely nurtured the early stage Immortal Gu to its completed form and brought the calamity beckoning Gu outside secretly using the chance when the blessed land was diverting disaster.

She did not destroy all these arrangements just in case of any accidents. If Bo Qing failed in his breakthrough again and calamity beckoning Gu was also destroyed in earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations, then she would have to enter the blessed land again to refine calamity beckoning Gu.

However, she never returned after this.

Sword Immortal Bo Qing’s second attempt at breaking through to rank nine failed completely and he was turned into ashes by the vast heavenly tribulations. As for Mo Yao, she perished alongside him.

"So it was like that. Breaking through to rank nine involves numerous difficulties and dangers. Mo Yao set up this inheritance secretly beforehand but did not explain the true content of the inheritance; it was because this action was betraying the sect. But she still left the preceding clues for the sect in the end. In my previous life, central continent’s Gu Immortals schemed against Imperial Court blessed land and destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building by using the clues she had left behind." As Fang Yuan recalled now, he immediately had a feeling of the fog dispersing in his mind and everything had gotten an explanation.

There was a poem left at the ending of the ink text —

The long immortal path is filled with obstacles; encounters occur at faraway places.

Too long has passed, emotions and hatred have already lasted for a long time.

My lord thinks about the apex of immortality, while I think of his safety.

Life and death are separated, I will support my lord’s dreams.

This was clearly Mo Yao’s work.

The path of a Gu Immortal is long and filled with difficulties, however I was fortunate enough to meet with my lord.

Unknowingly, emotions and hatred tangled, and I was unable to free myself.

Lord’s sight was focused on the limit of the immortal path, while my gaze was on my lord himself.

The attempt of breaking through to rank nine was a near death situation. I was not willing to be separated with him by life and death, so all I could do was to help my lord realize his dream in my own way!

To protect her love, to help Bo Qing walk to the peak of a Gu Immortal, Mo Yao was willing to sacrifice herself, using calamity beckoning Gu to draw the earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations to herself.

"A strange woman..." Fang Yuan sighed.

Although he would absolute not make such a sacrifice because of love, it did not hinder Fang Yuan from understanding such a person.

It was to the extent where his understanding of this was deeper than others.

Humans that live in this world had desires, they had their goals and meanings in life.

Mo Yao’s goal was her lover. Fang Yuan’s goal was to chase eternal life.

The different desires, different goals and different meanings forged all kinds of lives in this huge world to create heroes that had their own independent character.

Fang Yuan’s gaze fell towards the center of the giant vermillion bowl.

The cocoon had already burst open and calamity beckoning Gu had already completely formed. Its shape was like a silkworm cocoon with a grey body and the size of a little finger. It was currently moving up and down in the water.

Calamity beckoning Gu was a genuine self sacrifice Gu and was used to abandon oneself for others.

This Gu seemed to have no use to Fang Yuan, but in fact still had an enormous value.

First of all, it was an Immortal Gu. Even if he did not use it, he could exchange it for an enormous amount of immortal essence stones in treasure yellow heaven.

Secondly, it was a luck path Gu that was able to attract earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations. Calamities and tribulations were powerful, but as long as one was strong and tough enough, then they could use it in a unique way to harm others.

Finally, it was formed by borrowing the strength of one of the cornerstones of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building — Divert Disaster Gu. It and divert disaster Gu could be said to be two sides of the same coin; one attracted calamities while the other diverted disaster. This connection would provide huge assistance to Fang Yuan’s plans in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

However, even though there was a connection to it in his heart, there was a condition before Fang Yuan could completely subdue this Gu.

Mo Yao had mentioned it in detail in the ink text on the side of the bowl.

There was a necessary condition to subdue calamity beckoning Gu. It did not matter whether it was a mortal or immortal, but they had to have the heart of self sacrifice.

If they did not have the heart to sacrifice themselves and forcibly tried to subdue calamity beckoning Gu, in the best case, it would lead to a backlash from the Immortal Gu; and in the most serious case, the Immortal Gu would self-destruct and cause harm to the Gu Master’s life.

In the Water Pavilion, Fang Yuan stood in front of the giant bowl, with no expression on his face.

Heart of self sacrifice, did he have it?

...

"Cough cough cough." Tang Miao Ming covered her lips with a handkerchief, her beautiful brows furrowing deeply in pain.

"Big sister!" Tang tribe’s third young master Tang Fang called out from the side with a lamenting expression.

Tang Miao Ming was lying back in bed; she waved her hand to indicate Tang Fang to not worry.

Tang Fang heaved a deep sigh as he looked at the blood on the handkerchief: "Big sister, why did you risk your life? What good is there in passing this round? Father and the others have already passed away, you are my only relative left, what would I do if anything happened to you?"

Tang Miao Ming lightly caressed Tang Fang’s hair: "Third brother, you are our Tang tribe’s tribe leader, you should not be lacking in ambition. Our Tang tribe had suffered heavily in this Imperial Court contest and was almost swallowed by other tribes. Now is a very rare opportunity, we need to use Eighty-Eight True Yang Building to make our tribe prosper again."

Tang Fang pouted in a nonchalant manner: "But big sister, you suffered heavy injuries by trying to force your way through the round, the gains do not make up for the losses. I have been very distressed because of this and had no mood to manage the tribe’s affairs these days."

"What?" Tang Miao Ming’s expression turned solemn and she stared at Tang Fang sharply.

Without any hesitation, she reprimanded him: "Tribe leader Tang Fang, you have a heavy responsibility upon you, how could you still have the sentiments of a child? Reviving the tribe is your duty, it is the meaning of being the leader of a tribe. From now on, I do not want to hear you complain like this ever again, do you understand?"

"Big... big sister, I was wrong." Tang Fang immediately stood up from the edge of the bed and lowered his head to admit his mistake with an ashamed expression. His big sister was the one who loved him the most since young.

Tang Miao Ming’s gaze gradually softened, sighing faintly: "Third brother, I know your nature, you like travelling and want to be free from this duty, to live a life without any restraints. But you are the last man in our family, you should be brave enough to assume this responsibility. From now on, the meaning of your life will be to revitalize the tribe, do you understand?"

"Big sister is right, I understand. Don’t get angry big sister, you are still injured."

Tang Miao Ming said in a solemn tone: "After returning, copy the first section of chapter three of <> ten times."

Tang Fang’s heart was immediately filled with warmth.

Since young, his big sister’s punishment to him was to make him copy books.

"Big sister, take a good rest, I will go copy it now."

<>, chapter three, first section —

Ren Zu’s second daughter Desolate Ancient Moon climbed Cheng Bai mountain and searched for success Gu to rescue her father from the door of life and death.

But at the final juncture, she failed and lost her sense of self, becoming an ugly and powerful monster.

Without his daughter to rescue him, and his eldest son Verdant Great Sun still addicted and dejected, Ren Zu was trapped in Luo Po valley, unable to return to life.

Luo Po valley was like a giant maze, its paths twisted and turned. Occasionally, boundless bewilderment fog would spread and cause the soul to slacken; and occasionally, Luo Po wind that was as sharp as a knife would blow and cut down souls.

Ren Zu had a spiritual body now and was unable to find the way out of the bewilderment fog. His soul was cut down by Luo Po wind, becoming weaker and weaker, and the situation turned even more dangerous.

The soul fragments cut down by Luo Po wind started to converge gradually and turned into a youth.

Like this, Ren Zu’s third son was born.

He was Northern Dark Ice Soul.

"My son, thank you for your company. I do not have much time left, having you to accompany me in my final days, father did not have to feel lonely." Ren Zu sighed with deep emotions.

Northern Dark Ice Soul had a cold appearance but was warm-hearted, and although he did not speak much, he was very filial to Ren Zu. And as he looked at Ren Zu growing weaker and weaker every day, his mood also became heavier.

He decided to rescue Ren Zu.

Ren Zu sensed his determination, and felt both happiness and heartache: "Don’t be worried my son, I know of your filial heart, I now understand that life and death cannot be forced. Humans will die in the end, this is our fate."

Northern Dark Ice Soul said in a sobbing tone: "Father, I know your words are right. I also know my efforts might be in vain. But looking at you growing weaker like this, if I do not make an effort, my heart will feel even more pain. Let me do something for you."

Ren Zu sighed and could only let him go.

Northern Dark Ice Soul wandered in the vast Luo Po valley; he was born here, as such, Luo Po wind could not cut down his soul and the bewilderment fog could not obstruct his vision.

He searched bitterly but could not find the exit.

Right as he was becoming more desperate, he came across a Gu worm.

"Well, well, to think I would be discovered by you." This Gu was like a ladybug with a chubby spherical body, but it was extremely agile and was flashing around Northern Dark Ice Soul’s body.

Northern Dark Ice Soul’s eyes brightened as he asked in curiosity: "What Gu are you?"

"I am known as unexpected." This Gu worm replied.

Northern Dark Ice Soul’s gaze dimmed down: "So you are unexpected Gu, it is a pity you are not success Gu."

Unexpected Gu sneered: "Young man, do not look down on me. I have a love-hate relation with success Gu. The strength of unexpectedness is very powerful. Do you know what your encounter with me here represents?"

"What?"

Unexpected Gu shook its chubby body and said proudly: "What kind of place is this? This is Luo Po valley, a death realm. You being here means you are already dead. But by encountering me, you have come across an unexpected event in ’death’ - that is ’life’. Grab me, I will take you out to the human world and you can be resurrected again."

"Really?" Northern Dark Ice Soul was exulted, "Can I bring my father along?"

Unexpected Gu shook its head: "It is you who encountered me, not your father, so I can only take you."

Northern Dark Ice Soul was extremely disappointed, refusing: "Since I cannot take my father with me, then I will not go. I will accompany my father till his final moment."

Unexpected Gu laughed loudly and spoke in a domineering tone: "Unexpectedness in life is beyond your control. Young man, you must come with me!"

The moment it finished speaking, unexpected Gu forcibly took Northern Dark Ice Soul and instantly left life and death door, arriving in the human world.

Northern Dark Ice Soul obtained flesh body and was feeling extremely bewildered facing this vast world alone.

Unexpected Gu disappeared. He suddenly remembered Ren Zu once saying he had an elder sister who was called Desolate Ancient Moon.

At this moment, cognition Gu took the initiative to find him: "Young man, do not be suspicious, cognition has always been the friend of humans, I am here to help you."

Cognition Gu told Northern Dark Ice Soul about Cheng Bai mountain and also the events detailing Desolate Ancient Moon.

Northern Dark Ice Soul decided to first see his elder sister.

When he saw Desolate Ancient Moon, his tears fell in sadness.

Northern Dark Ice Soul tried to converse with Desolate Ancient Moon, but Desolate Ancient Moon who had turned into a monster kept on repeating questions.

"Where is this?"

Northern Dark Ice Soul thought for a while and answered: "This is the human world, living beings can move about here. Above us is the heavens and below our feet is earth."

"Who am I?" Desolate Ancient Moon asked again.

"You are a human, Ren Zu’s second child, your name is Desolate Ancient Moon. You are my elder sister." Northern Dark Ice Soul replied.

"Elder sister, wake up quickly. Our father is trapped in Luo Po valley, dying, we need to resurrect him soon."

"Ren Zu? Desolate Ancient Moon? Resurrect?" The monster shook its head, extremely puzzled, "Why should I resurrect him? Could it be that humans should not die? What disadvantage is there in death? Why do humans live? Why do I live?"

This time, Northern Dark Ice Soul was not able to answer.

Why do people live?

As Northern Dark Ice Soul pondered over this question, bewilderment Gu quietly approached him, making him lose his sense of the surroundings.

Subsequently, love Gu and disguise Gu also approached him.

Cognition Gu felt a big headache when it saw them. These several Gu were famous for their mischief and would often move together, even cognition Gu did not want to provoke them.

"Love, have you not harmed enough people? Why are you not letting them go?" Cognition Gu sighed.

"Don’t try to speak reason with me, I am completely unreasonable." Love Gu said in a unruly tone, "Get lost, cognition, I do not like you."

Cognition Gu could only leave helplessly.

"Another human came again? Haha!" Love Gu was extremely happy when it saw Northern Dark Ice Soul, because it had another target to play with.

It and disguise Gu were sworn brothers, and on the spot, it used disguise Gu’s power to disguise as cognition Gu.

"Young man, your elder sister has lost herself. If you want to save her, you need to find meaning Gu."

Northern Dark Ice Soul regained his senses and asked love Gu without doubting: "I have seen unexpected Gu, please tell me where this meaning Gu is? How should I look for it?"

Love Gu deceived him in a serious tone: "Oh human, you should know, there is a meaning to why you are all living in this world. As long as you find meaning Gu, your elder sister can awaken. Follow the direction I point towards and keep moving forward, you will eventually find meaning Gu."

Northern Dark Ice Soul expressed his gratitude before immediately setting off.

Love, bewilderment and disguise Gu guffawed as they looked at his receding figure.

In this world, how could there be a meaning Gu?

There was simply no such Gu, Northern Dark Ice Soul would, as such, not find it no matter how much he searched for it.

"Fool, who told you all to anger me? I will let you guys know how terrifying the punishment of love can be! From now on, let’s follow him and toy with him in turns."

Love Gu’s proposal was approved by the other two Gu.

Thereupon, the three Gu played tricks on Northern Dark Ice Soul in turns, he suffered so much that words could not describe it. But to find this non-existent meaning Gu, he kept on persevering.

Such spirit moved cognition Gu. And when love Gu was not present, cognition Gu approached Northern Dark Ice Soul to help him.

"Cognition, what are you doing? We are having a great time." Bewilderment Gu and disguise Gu were extremely displeased with cognition.

Cognition Gu laughed: "I am afraid of love, but I am not afraid of you two. Young man, use my strength to come to your senses."

Northern Dark Ice Soul used cognition Gu’s power to realize the truth; he was no longer bewildered and he had seen through the disguise.

Bewilderment Gu and disguise Gu could only leave in defeat.

Northern Dark Ice Soul expressed gratitude to cognition Gu: "Thank you cognition Gu. Because of you, I have thought of a way to save elder sister."

"Eh? What way is that?"

"In this world, there is indeed no meaning Gu. But why can’t I create a meaning Gu?" Northern Dark Ice Soul replied confidently.

Human life might have no meaning, but they could give a meaning to it.

Northern Dark Ice Soul came back to Desolate Ancient Moon’s side and personally created a meaning Gu and pressed it into Desolate Ancient Moon’s head.

"The meaning in my life is to search for success Gu and resurrect father! I understand now, I get it!" Desolate Ancient Moon’s eyes brightened.

...

"Meaning in life huh..." Tang Fang put down his brush.

It was late at night, warm silver light covered the land in Imperial Court blessed land.

He was deeply moved after repeatedly copying the book.

"People will feel bewildered as they live in this world. But as long as they can find their meaning in life, they will find their direction and be able to move forward bravely. At the same time, they will also understand what they want to do and what they do not want to do, and they will not be afraid of sacrifice. Big sister’s intent in making me copy the book should be this."

He lightly pushed open the window and looked at the beautiful and dazzling sacred palace, thinking of the variety of people in it, some were strong, some were weak.

His mood gradually uplifted: "Every person’s life has all sort of meaning. And the meaning of my life is to lead the tribe towards prosperity!"

...

At the same time, in Water Pavilion.

"A heart of self sacrifice?" The corners of Fang Yuan’s lips curled up into a lofty smile.

Without any hesitation, he moved his hand towards the giant bowl and directly picked up the calamity beckoning Gu.

As it absorbed his aura, calamity beckoning Gu’s body flashed with radiance and soon became Fang Yuan’s possession. The whole process was extremely smooth with not the least bit of tremor and backlash.

With the identity of a transmigrator and the experience gained in the five hundred years in his past life, Fang Yuan had already seen through life and death; familial feelings, friendship and love were not any his interests.

Only eternal life, this majestic and unattainable target, could make the journey of his life become more interesting.

This was the meaning he gave to this life!

Pursuing eternal life did not mean he was afraid of death or afraid of failure.

He calmly accepted death and failure.

Whether eternal life existed or not, there was no evidence to prove it.

But even if it did not exist, so what?

Fang Yuan enjoyed the process. In the process of pursuing eternal life, he found his meaning and felt that this life was quite interesting.

The lowly lust and desires of his body, satisfaction of love and hatred, he was already tired of them.

Only eternal life was worthy of being his target to pursue.

"As a result, the necessary resolve to sacrifice, I already have it." Fang Yuan’s gaze shone eerily as he played around with the rank seven Immortal Gu in his hand.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan carefully observed calamity beckoning Gu.

This Gu was a rank seven Immortal Gu and after going through the nurturing process in the giant vermillion bowl, it had already completely formed.

It was the size of a little finger, was completely grey and looked very delicate like a silkworm cocoon.

As Fang Yuan played with it and calamity beckoning Gu continued to absorb his aura, he could sense that the connection in the depths of his mind with calamity beckoning Gu was deepening further.

Ripples appeared in Fang Yuan’s heart.

It would be a lie to say that he was not moved.

In his previous life, he had suffered untold difficulties and slaughtered many lives to refine a rank six Spring Autumn Cicada. And now with the advantage of his rebirth, he had yet to become a hundred years old but had already obtained calamity beckoning Gu which was a rank higher than Spring Autumn Cicada.

Although the use of calamity beckoning Gu was extremely peculiar, offering oneself as a sacrifice by attracting earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations, Fang Yuan believed firmly that the use of a Gu depended on the wits of the Gu Master.

Like Chainsaw Golden Centipede which would be used in a different manner in the future by a rank four mortal Gu Master ’Chainsaw Mad Demon’. So, why would Fang Yuan not be able to create new uses for calamity beckoning Gu?

"Not speaking of other things, just the existence of calamity beckoning Gu proves that the legendary luck path truly exists."

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was extremely lucky his whole life and it was rumored that this was because he had created unique luck path Gu worms.

However, there had never been conclusive evidence regarding this rumor.

Now, Fang Yuan was holding calamity beckoning Gu, a luck path Gu; an Immortal Gu refined by refinement path grandmaster Mo Yao by interaction with the divert disaster Gu of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Divert disaster Gu and calamity beckoning Gu were luck path Gu worms.

The ink text in the bowl was a very strong piece of evidence.

Mo Yao even directly wrote in the ink text that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path Gu worms could steal other people’s good luck and transfer it to himself, and could also transfer his bad luck over, bringing trouble to others.

As a complete path, luck path also had a methodical structure, including aspects of offense, defense, movement, healing and others. It was only that what it targeted was the incorporeal and formless luck which everyone possessed.

After Giant Sun Immortal Venerable innovated the luck path, he kept it hidden and made great profits without making any commotion.

"Giant Sun Immortal Venerable stole luck wantonly and with his death, the luck thief had finally perished." Mo Yao poured her feelings in the text, this strange woman had quite a temperament, daring to criticize an Immortal Venerable like this.

She even speculated Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path inheritance was very likely to be in the treasure room of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!

"If I can obtain this inheritance, could I duplicate Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s success?" Fang Yuan’s heart thumped in excitement.

He pondered for a while before placing calamity beckoning Gu in the giant vermilion bowl again.

Although calamity beckoning Gu had completely taken form, Fang Yuan could not refine it.

The connection between them had thickened to the extreme, but there was still a gap before he could truly become the master of calamity beckoning Gu.

Fang Yuan was still a mortal currently and did not have immortal essence to refine it.

This situation was different from when he refined fixed immortal travel Gu.

At three kings blessed land, he was able to refine fixed immortal travel Gu with the assistance of the land spirit, he was the leading refiner. Thus when fixed immortal travel Gu was born, it became his Gu. But he could not use it, and if not for the land spirit’s help, Fang Yuan would not have been able to travel to Hu Immortal blessed land.

The whole process of refining calamity beckoning Gu, however, was done through the backflow of the heavenly power of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Fang Yuan was an assistant at best; this was already extremely great considering he did not have the help of a land spirit.

"I can only truly refine it when I become a Gu Immortal. Before that, I can only leave it here."

Without advancing to Gu Immortal, there would be no immortal aperture to store calamity beckoning Gu. If it was brought out openly, the Immortal Gu aura would spread which was sure to attract countless coveting people.

Fang Yuan was not worried about Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and the others; he had many wolf groups now and his strength path cultivation was also sufficient.

What he was worried about was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s will in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Previously, the Immortal Gu was in its early form and had a weak aura, but now it had already taken shape, so if it was brought out, it might stir up Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s will and awaken it.

Fang Yuan was not willing to take that risk, more so when his main plan had yet to be completed; he needed to keep on hiding and waiting.

"Who would think that this nameless valley holds a rank seven Immortal Gu? But for now, I should first refine a part of this Water Pavilion before leaving." Fang Yuan pondered.

Water Pavilion was a famous Immortal Gu house. It looked like Fang Yuan was overestimating himself by trying to refine it as a mortal, but this attempt was greatly feasible.

Even the formidable Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had a crack, allowing Fang Yuan to study it in-depth. While Water Pavilion was now a ownerless object, it could naturally be easily exploited.

But to talk about this, we need to know about the inherent nature of Gu houses.

What is a Gu house?

Not mentioning Fang Yuan’s past life, after the rebirth alone, he had encountered many Gu houses.

The most common among them included the Gu house three star cave. It would turn into a seed when it was collected. After planting the seed, it would grow into an enormous hollow tree with three floors.

There was lizard house Gu with the appearance of a lizard, sporting different colors. Its eyes were windows and its mouth was the door; it could move by its own will.

There was also the mushroom forest Gu house which was formed by planting a large number of mush room Gu. Many mushroom houses would form into a courtyard.

These were mortal Gu, there were also Immortal Gu houses like Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and Water Pavilion.

There were too many complicated Gu houses to talk about in their development till this day. But if one were to investigate their origin, the publicly recognized founders were the seven Lui Gui siblings.

These seven were demonic Gu Masters of the olden antiquity era, they were born as septuplets, and from birth to death, they moved together.

They were experts in defence and each of them was a rank five peak stage Gu Master. They also had a defensive killer move formed by combining their strength called ’turtle house’. Relying on this move, they were able to defend against three attacks from a Gu Immortal, establishing a tale called ’three moves pact’ in history.

And this turtle house was the first Gu house in Gu Master history!

Thus, basically speaking, Gu houses were killer moves formed by the combination and solidification of ten or more various kinds of Gu worms.

Mushroom forest Gu house was a model example. It was a courtyard formed by the gathering of large numbers of mush room Gu.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was the apex of examples, possessing the ability to defend, gather, store and other effects. It was formed by countless small towers, divert disaster Gu being one of the main cornerstones. Sacrificing the gathered wild Gu, it created a power that would form the main body.

There was also White Bone Chariot.

Back then, Proud Bone Demon Lord Shen Jie Ao had outstanding and shocking talent. When he became a rank six Gu Immortal, he lacked a rank six Gu. So he came up with a killer move known as White Bone Chariot.

The White Bone Chariot was formed from many rank five Gu, such as the White Bone Wheel, and had power comparable to a rank six Gu!

This White Bone Chariot was actually a Gu house!

As for three star cave, lizard house and large lizard house, they were all branches developed from simplified forms of Gu houses.

Normal Gu houses were formed from the combination of several Gu worms. As three star cave and the others were formed from just one Gu, thus their might was greatly reduced and became commonly used Gu houses.

Water Pavilion was a rank seven Immortal Gu house, this signified there was at least one rank seven Immortal Gu among the Gu worms used to create it!

"With my current level, I cannot refine Immortal Gu. But refining the mortal Gu is still possible."

This was where Fang Yuan’s confidence in refining Water Pavilion lay in.

There were not many difficulties during the refining process.

Water Pavilion was one of the symbols of Spirit Affinity House, wielded by Fairy Mo Yao back then.

Mo Yao betrayed the sect for her love and refined calamity beckoning Gu, sacrificing herself. This Immortal Gu house thus became ownerless.

As such, to Fang Yuan, Water Pavilion was like a little beauty that had its arms wide open and he was free to play with it.

"Amazing, there were actually no less than three thousand Gu worms used in the assembly of Water Pavilion. And every Gu worm was closely interrelated and had a faint resonance between them. The core was rank seven Water Harmony Gu which allows the Gu Master to completely merge and hide in water; as long as the water was not extinguished, they won’t die. Besides this, there were also two assisting Immortal Gu - rank six movement Immortal Gu Worldly Wave Trace and wisdom path Immortal Gu Delight in Water and Mountain."

The process of refining was in fact, the process of deepening his understanding of Water Pavilion.

Refining an Immortal Gu was far beyond Fang Yuan’s ability, so there was no need to attempt it in vain. What he could make a move on were the rank one and rank two mortal Gu.

Fang Yuan spent six hours in refinement till he was dizzy, completely refining five hundred rank one and rank two mortal Gu.

"I now have ten percent control over Water Pavilion. Even if someone discovers it, this ten percent of authority will be able to block them for a while. This time will be enough for me to be alerted and rush here in time."

He refined for another two hours and increased his control authority to thirteen percent.

The difficulty of the refinement continued to increase at the later stages.

"Unfortunately, I have Spring Autumn Cicada which is like a ticking time bomb. I cannot use time path’s instant success Gu and other Gu to help me in the refining process, otherwise my progress would not be just this."

Fang Yuan felt his head spinning and knew he had already reached the limit. The primeval essence in his two rank five peak stage apertures was also almost exhausted.

But just when he thought of pulling away, a figure suddenly appeared in his mind.

"After such a long time, I finally meet the fated one today."

Following the indistinct sigh, the graceful figure of a woman with a slim body, shining dark eyes, and a veil covering her face, appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind.

"This is Fairy Mo Yao’s will, when did it enter my mind?!" Fang Yuan was inwardly shocked.

So much time had passed, Mo Yao was not a venerable but she was still able to leave behind her will, one could tell how strong a cultivation she had back then.

Fang Yuan actually already had taken precautions, but Fairy Mo Yao clearly had some special methods that allowed her will to silently enter Fang Yuan’s mind.

Such an ability was not trivial.

Mo Yao’s will had entered Fang Yuan’s mind, if she wanted to unceremoniously create difficulties for him, then Fang Yuan would absolutely have to suffer the consequences.

Fang Yuan was not a wisdom path expert, only wisdom path Gu Masters had the power to subdue this kind of will.

The most crucial thing was that when people pondered, their thoughts would first emerge. These thoughts would clash with each other in the brain and then transform, creating a new thought. This was the process of thinking.

Now, Mo Yao’s will had entered Fang Yuan’s mind which meant she could hear all his thoughts clearly!

What would happen once Mo Yao’s will learned of Spring Autumn Cicada?

"No need to be afraid, fated one, I have no intention of harming you. I only want to ask you a question." Mo Yao’s will faintly asked.

Fang Yuan did not even need to guess to know what she was going to ask. He told her about the fact of Bo Qing’s defeat on the spot.

When she heard this grievous news, Mo Yao’s will shook to the point of collapsing!

Fang Yuan was rejoicing covertly, but he had to be disappointed because Mo Yao’s will was able to maintain her form in the end.

Her dark as night eyes were filled with tears. Fairy Mo Yao’s expression was extremely complex; there was sadness, but there was relief as well.

Like she said in her poem ’too long has passed, emotions and hatred have already lasted for a long time’ , her love and hatred with Bo Qing was a long tale that was touching and deeply intertwined.

"Fated one, since you can refine calamity beckoning Gu and also found this place and have begun refining Water Pavilion, you should already have a general understanding. Since he is already dead, then let everything go. Sigh... maybe this is the fortune of the living."

Mo Yao’s will paused before continuing: "I have already let down Spirit Affinity House, my only wish now is to return this Water Pavilion. As compensation, I will impart my life’s refinement path attainment insights to you. Besides this, I will also tell you the secret information of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The entire sacred palace was shrouded in an aurora.

The light was dazzling and shone for the radius of a hundred li.

Looking at the top of the sacred palace, two layers of the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had already formed, huge numbers of people were entering and exiting daily.

Retracting his gaze, Fang Yuan softly closed the windows.

Half a month had passed since he refined calamity beckoning Gu and returned from the Water Pavilion.

During this period, Hei Lou Lan opened up Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and did not charge any fees, allowing people to enter as they wished.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building — Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s inheritance ground, it had incredible attraction to all Gu Masters.

Countless Gu Masters with Giant Sun’s bloodline entered like torrents of water, even if they could not get through, they wanted to observe the glory of the event.

Especially after Eighty-Eight True Yang Building underwent a transformation and formed two layers, it triggered the people’s desires to explore.

As for outsiders, they could only enter using the guest token.

The guest token was a one time expenditure item, it could only be obtained on occasion when getting through a round.

Until now, there had only been seven guest tokens obtained. Each fetched an astronomical price, but it did not deter any of the expert Gu Masters who did not have Giant Sun's bloodline.

Fang Yuan had the glass owner token now, he could freely enter and exit Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, and even enter the treasure room. But in order to conceal himself, not long ago, he still paid a hefty price to buy a guest token.

"Young man, I would advise you to prepare the ink transformation killer move that I taught you. That way, once you enter the central control hall, you would have less trouble."

A female voice resounded in Fang Yuan's mind.

It was none other than Fairy Mo Yao's will who had stealthily sneaked in.

Fang Yuan heard this and frowned, in his heart he snorted and replied: "This killer move is too outdated. Some of the Gu worms have already disappeared, if I want to collect them now, it will take quite some effort, how can it be rushed?"

Mo Yao's will laughed: "Young man, you are quite fortunate to have Hu Immortal blessed land. You should make good use of treasure yellow heaven, it is not hard to purchase these Gu worms."

Fang Yuan frowned even more tightly.

He deciphered the code and obtained Di Qiu inheritance, even successfully refining calamity beckoning Gu, but he also gained a huge problem known as Mo Yao's will.

Mo Yao's will was now lurking inside his mind, it was a huge threat.

When Fang Yuan thinks, thoughts would be generated.

Mo Yao's will could read these thoughts and understand Fang Yuan's secrets.

In half a month's time, she learnt about many of his secrets, including Hu Immortal blessed land.

Right now, Fang Yuan could only use space thought Gu to think.

Using space thought Gu as the main component, and other Gu worms to assist it, the thoughts formed had the power of space imbued in them, Mo Yao's will could not read them even if she caught them.

But such a situation was only temporary.

Will ruled above thoughts, Mo Yao's will was inside Fang Yuan's mind, after interacting with these space thoughts for a long time, she would become familiar with them, and this line of defense would not be able to stop her.

"Young man, you are young but you have many secrets. Hehehe, really interesting." Mo Yao's will floated in the air, moving up and down.

She laughed as she covered her mouth, her eyes were watery and her posture was alluring, she was truly a past generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House.

After staying with Fang Yuan for a while, she became more active, and even more curious, her nature of wanting to probe people's secrets showed itself.

Every generation of Spirit Affinity House's fairies was the cream of the crop, one out of ten thousand, she would be talented and beautiful, pure and elegant like a sacred lotus. But Mo Yao was different, her dark pupils contained some craftiness, if she was in the demonic path, she would definitely be a demoness.

She created an illusory robe, covering her body while showing the contours, she looked at the bubble-like thoughts as she grabbed one of them.

Next, she exerted strength and with a ’pop’, this thought exploded with some force.

But she did not gain anything, because this thought’s content was two words, ’eating dinner’.

She gasped lightly, her beautiful lips curving into an arousing angle: "Young man, you are not cute at all. Every time you think about something, you will make up all sorts of random thoughts to conceal the important points. Do you know that this will, in fact, make this big sister even more curious?"

"Hmph, with your age, you have the face to call yourself big sister?" Fang Yuan snorted, threatening, "You are dead, you should rest in peace. Don’t think that I cannot do anything to you now that you are in my mind. Who knows, I might make your will perish the next moment."

"Hehehe, so scary..." Mo Yao patted her plump chest, laughing without any concern: "But during this half a month of time, you attacked me twenty-eight times using nineteen methods. Don’t tell me, you are not only a strength-enslavement dual cultivator, but you also cultivate in wisdom path?"

"Hmph!" Fang Yuan’s heart was surging with killing intent.

" Aiyaya 1 , young man, don’t be like this." Feeling Fang Yuan’s sharp killing intent, Mo Yao waved her fingers: "I am your benefactor, isn’t calamity beckoning Gu your Immortal Gu now? You are still a mortal, it is an amazing accomplishment to have an Immortal Gu. Don’t worry, don’t worry, once you return this Water Pavilion to Spirit Affinity House, my wish would be fulfilled, and this will would no longer have any reason to exist."

Return the rank seven Immortal Gu house Water Pavilion?

The juicy meat had already entered Fang Yuan’s mouth, why would he spit it out?

Fang Yuan did not want to do so, obviously, but he had no other choices.

Not mentioning the piece of Mo Yao’s will in his mind, there was also a portion of Mo Yao’s remnant will inside the Water Pavilion.

That meant, this Mo Yao was quite impressive.

History said that she was a refinement grandmaster. But in terms of wisdom path and soul path, it seems she was even more skilled in them. Fang Yuan’s multitude of mental attacks were all easily dispelled by her.

Fang Yuan had a huge headache now.

Even though he obtained Di Qiu inheritance, he did not earn much.

He took a huge risk and made great investments to carry out Gu refinement. In the end, he obtained calamity beckoning Gu but it was unusable. Mo Yao’s will even entered his mind, causing him to refrain from shooting at the rat for fear of breaking the vase, this was his greatest burden at the moment.

"Had I known this, I would not have gone after this dogshit Di Qiu inheritance."

This thought was not concealed at all, Mo Yao easily read about it.

"Young man, that is not true. The refinement path killer move ink transformation that I taught you over these days is priceless. Didn’t you want to make use of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s loophole, hehe, you are so daring, almost at the same level as me. Don’t worry, I will help you, as long as you return Water Pavilion to Spirit Affinity House." Mo Yao urged.

"Hmph, calamity beckoning Gu is mine, but I also want Water Pavilion, even Eighty-Eight True Yang Building might become my possession! You are a mere will, how can you stop me, a living person?" Since they had fought for dozens of times already, Fang Yuan rejected her outright.

But this time, Mo Yao did not make fun of him, her gaze shone as she recalled something.

Her expression was lonely as she sighed deeply: "Sigh, are all men like this? Even if they did something wrong, they would act in such a confident manner, unrelenting in their convictions being right."

"In this world, what counts as wrong? Who is right, who is wrong? Everyone’s way of life is just different."

Mo Yao’s expression changed, she laughed cheekily: "Young man, this is an interesting answer. But I’ve heard another answer, it was much more domineering than yours. He said —’In this world, anything I think or do is right. Those that differ from me are wrong.’ Hehehe, is that domineering enough?"

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone: "Sword Immortal Bo Qing said that? Unfortunately, he did not succeed in that final step."

These words made Mo Yao sink into silence, her face was full of sadness as she shut her eyes, memories were pouring in her mind as her long eyelashes were slightly trembling.

She hid her figure, vanishing from Fang Yuan’s mind.

"Damn it, she did this again!" Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, every time Mo Yao’s will hid herself, it would be like she did not exist, no matter how Fang Yuan tried to find her, he would not even see a trace of her.

Mo Yao’s attainment in soul path and wisdom path greatly exceeded Fang Yuan’s. This resulted in her having free reign in his mind.

But this time, he was not going to leave empty handed.

In his mind, he found one of Mo Yao’s will’s thoughts.

The content made Fang Yuan’s heart shudder.

This was a killer move, named — Six Arm Heavenly Zombie King!

Fang Yuan had been trying to find a way to combine strength and enslavement paths, he thought hard and obtained an initial result, it was his strength path killer move — Four Arm Earth King.

Using this move, he went on a killing spree in the final battle of the Imperial Court contest, defeating Ma tribe army and pushing Hei Lou Lan into Imperial Court Blessed Land.

But four arm earth king was only a casually created killer move, it was full of flaws and after Fang Yuan improved on it, it became the killer move four arm wind king.

After that, he found a crucial borrow strength Gu inside the treasure room of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, allowing the killer move four arm wind king to gain a huge improvement.

After Mo Yao’s will entered his mind, he purposely exposed a portion of his secrets, among them was this killer move, as well as his thoughts about improving this killer move.

"Fantastic!" Fang Yuan praised.

With his foundation, and Fairy Mo Yao’s attainment, six arm heavenly zombie king was a killer move nearing perfection.

It used borrow strength Gu as the core, six types of flying zombie Gu as the supplement, and another thirty-six Gu worms in order to design this killer move with an amazing and specialized structure, Fang Yuan was in great awe.

"However, I know about the five great flying zombie Gu, but this killer move needs a sixth flying zombie Gu? What Gu is that?"

The killer move in the thought was not complete, it still lacked the final crucial step.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the dark secret room, there was a soothing sandalwood smell.

Fang Yuan sat on the cushion, holding an east window Gu in his hand.

This Gu was of the information path, rank four and shaped like a ladybug, the armor on its back was square, like window panels, specially used to store important information.

This Gu was purposely bought in treasure yellow heaven by Fang Yuan.

The content was all about wills.

Ever since Mo Yao’s will had lurked in his mind, Fang Yuan had been buying and collecting information in this regard, he spent many immortal essence stones.

This east window Gu was not the first.

Long after, Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes, his gaze clear as water.

After reading so much precious information, he had a deeper understanding towards wills.

Thought, will, emotion, the three were of the same branch, the former two belonged to the wisdom path and had much connection to many paths.

Wisdom path, when first created, was a path for Gu Masters that seeked wisdom solely.

When people think, thoughts would appear in their mind, when these thoughts collide, fuse, or cancel each other out, new thoughts would be formed, this would be the thinking process.

These thoughts were classified into different categories, they were all different and had their own specialities.

Among them, the most famous one was the obsession.

When a Gu Immortal dies, their lingering obsession would combine with the heavenly power and form the land spirit within the blessed land.

Gu Masters used these thoughts to create countless related Gu worms, like Dong Fang Yu Liang’s star thought Gu, and Fang Yuan’s space thought Gu, as well as Gu Immortals’ commonly used divine sense Gu.

A few thoughts gather, forming ’will’.

The saying goes: Will can be understood, but not described.

Will cannot be expressed in words, the essence of will has surpassed the limits of written expression, only by using one’s heart, using a human’s spirituality, can it be felt.

Initially, wisdom path Gu Masters created heaven’s will Gu. This Gu was used to comprehend the mechanics of the great Dao of heaven and earth, allowing one to further gain knowledge about heaven and earth, in order to improve on their own attainment.

After that, as the path continued to develop, more Gu were created, killing intent Gu, casual Gu, one’s wishes Gu, proud Gu, evil intent Gu, painting idea Gu and others.

Among them, the most famous one was recorded in the legends of Ren Zu, the legendary unexpected Gu.

As wisdom path continued to develop, generations of Gu Masters continued to research, and they found out that when a few ’wills’ merged together, they become ’emotion’.

Estrus Gu, gentle feelings Gu, and emotion poetry Gu were all from this path. Enchantment path was derived from this.

The most famous Gu in this path similarly came from <> — Love Gu.

"Thought, will, emotion..." Fang Yuan sighed.

The more he learnt, the more he understood — with his current foundation in wisdom path, he could not get rid of Mo Yao’s will!

The difference between them was too great.

For example, in terms of their attainment in will, Fang Yuan was like a mound, while Mo Yao’s will was like a tall mountain. As for how tall this mountain was, or how grand it was, Fang Yuan could not tell as it was shrouded in a thick layer of mist.

Mo Yao’s attainment had greatly exceeded Fang Yuan’s understanding. During these days of interaction and probing, it left a deep impression on Fang Yuan, he felt that she was truly on another level, her attainment was as deep as an abyss.

Facing such great trouble, if he could not get rid of it, what would he do?

Sitting on the cushion, after pondering for a while, Fang Yuan’s gaze turned cold as he made a decision.

His consciousness entered his mind, and with just a thought, Mo Yao’s will felt it and her alluring figure appeared from within the pitch-black area in the mind.

"I accept your suggestion, I will return Water Pavilion to Spirit Affinity House." Fang Yuan transmitted his second thought.

Mo Yao’s eyes flashed with a peculiar light.

She did not expect that Fang Yuan would compromise so quickly.

According to their interaction these days, she understood clearly that Fang Yuan was that type of person with immense willpower, he was very assertive and his personality was tough and bold.

Character decides one’s fate, this kind of person would either become a conqueror or a hero, they were destined to be a man above man, an elite among the elite.

She left behind the six arm heavenly zombie king killer move, but she had some reservations and did not give him the entire thing. Instead of a bait, this was more like an indication of her attitude.

She knew that with Fang Yuan’s intelligence, he would understand what she was trying to say.

She had estimated that Fang Yuan would choose to negotiate with her in about seven or eight days. But in truth, he came to look for her after a day’s time.

"Sigh, a wise man submits to circumstances, a great man is one who is resilient... Unfortunately most people in this world think too highly of their own abilities and refuse to lower their head due to pride. Throughout history, countless experts knew the logic of taking a step back and compromising, but it was easier said than done, when it was their turn, how many people could take that step?" Mo Yao’s will sighed as she said with deep emotion.

"Although Water Pavilion is good, it is not useful to me. You know my situation, right now because of Hu Immortal blessed land, Immortal Crane Sect has declared that I am a member of their sect. Spirit Affinity House and Immortal Crane Sect are both part of the top ten sects in central continent, it will not be easy for me to return Water Pavilion to them." Fang Yuan said.

"Hehehe." Mo Yao’s will chuckled: "Young man, I know what you mean. Don’t worry, you are my inheritor, the calamity beckoning Gu is yours, I have no intention to harm you. Returning the Immortal Gu house is a huge matter, I understand the risks clearly. To accomplish this mission, you need to be a Gu Immortal at least. I will do my best to help you become a Gu Immortal, and I will also assist you in obtaining Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. As for my refinement attainment, it will depend on how much you can learn."

Mo Yao said so as she waved her hand, and a thought floated in Fang Yuan’s heart.

The content was the final crucial part of the killer move six arm heavenly zombie king.

Fang Yuan immediately asked unhappily: "Earth chief zombie? Are you serious, this is the so-called sixth flying zombie Gu?"

Earth chief zombie Gu, he knew about it.

This was obtained by killing an earth chief beast, using its skin and tendons as the materials, combined with tens of Gu worms, and using the yin soil that was nine hundred li deep in the ground, as well as mountain absorbing grass that were hundreds of years old, dark tide flowers and other materials to refine.

Although it was quite strong, a rank five Gu just like asura zombie, heavenly demon zombie, blood wight, nightmare zombie and plague zombie, it could not fly.

Without flying abilities, how could it be a ’flying zombie’ Gu?

Facing Fang Yuan’s suspicion, Mo Yao laughed arrogantly: "Ordinary earth chief zombie Gu would not do. But who is this big sister? Hehe, I modified the recipe long ago, and refined a new earth chief zombie Gu. When a Gu Master uses it and becomes an earth chief zombie, even without wings, they can make use of the natural magnetic field to soar into the air, and fly as they wish."

Saying so, she transmitted another thought, it was the recipe of the modified earth chief zombie Gu.

Fang Yuan looked at it and his eyes shone.

Mo Yao had daringly added several new materials into this Gu recipe, among them was original magnetic essence as the main ingredient. That was the most important element in this modification of the Gu.

Fang Yuan thought about it and with his five hundred years of experience, he knew that this Gu recipe was usable, he could not help but praise in amazement.

Mo Yao’s will was in his mind, she laughed smugly: "Young man, you really know your stuff. Not bad, you have some talent in refinement. But you have to be careful, this killer move was only created based on what you provided me, I would advise you to test it out on a few people before trying it yourself."

Fang Yuan nodded.

The killer move six arm heavenly zombie king had great power, it was about ten times as strong as four arm earth king and four arm wind king.

Because it was so powerful, once it fails, the backlash would also be equally powerful.

Fang Yuan could test the four arm earth king himself earlier because the risks were not great, he could endure them. But this six arm heavenly zombie king was another story.

...

"The third layer, the third layer has formed!" In the sacred palace, cheers resounded throughout the area.

The rainbow colored aurora was still thick as ever.

As time passed, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was forming faster and faster, especially the newly formed third layer, it made everyone’s urge to explore it go wild.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s floors each have a hundred rounds, the earlier rounds were easy. But as they progressed, they got harder and the rewards were greater.

Most Gu Masters do not have the strength to tackle the later rounds, but the earlier rounds had rewards that they would fight for.

A group of Gu Masters, about a dozen, were leaving the palace in a hurry.

When they were about to get past the sacred palace’s eastern entrance, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s third layer formed and these Gu Masters stopped in their tracks.

Jiang Dong looked at Eighty-Eight True Yang Building which was at the peak of the sacred palace, snorting and saying to Ma Hong Yun who was in the group: "You Huang Jin tribe Gu Masters are so lucky, any reward inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building can allow you to soar to success and gain great riches!"

Ma Hong Yun laughed sheepishly: "Leader is right, hehehe. Sadly, my bloodline is not thick enough, I cannot enter Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. Otherwise, I would go in to expand my vision."

Even though Huang Jin tribesmen were Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s descendants, they were not guaranteed entry into Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

If their ancestors had diluted the bloodline too much by marrying outsiders, they would not reach the requirement and would not be able to enter.

Jiang Dong heard this and the bitterness and jealousy in his heart lessened. The other Gu Masters in the group also looked at Ma Hong Yun more gently, someone even patted Ma Hong Yun’s shoulder and consoled: "You are really unlucky, but never mind, you can earn a fortune this time by coming with us to kill the earth chief beast as well!"

"Yes, yes, yes." Ma Hong Yun nodded as he bowed, laughing apologetically.

He had saved Ma Ying Jie coincidentally. After Hei tribe forcefully took over Ma tribe, due to a series of events, he changed his surname and became Ma Hong Yun, finally allowed to cultivate.

Right now, he was a rank one Gu Master, his aptitude was neither good nor bad.

Of course he could enter Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, but with his strength, there was no point in that at all. During his stay in the sacred palace, he could mix around with hunting groups daily and go out to hunt, it allowed him to earn enough to cover his daily expenses and accumulate primeval stones to cultivate.

As for what he told Jiang Dong, that was Zhao Lian Yun’s instruction before he set off.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Boom boom boom...

The earth rumbled, wolves charged out like tides, they were endless like the flood water, charging forward relentlessly.

Tens of thousands of wolves sprinted, the wolf group was in chaos. There were wind wolves running like they were flying, water wolves with their snow-white bodies, night wolves who were slim and stealthy, turtleback wolves who were stable and sturdy, vermillion flame wolves who were burning fiercely.

Hundred wolf king, thousand wolf king, and myriad wolf king led the army along with the mutated wolves, they were travelling in packs and were very conspicuous.

Like the blood forest wolf, with a bone forest on its back, tall as a mountain. The shark fin wolf with with skin like that of an elephant, while being amphibious. The frenzy wolf with three silver-grey eyes, being a battle maniac.

Inside Imperial Court blessed land, in the light golden sky, there were azure wolves running in the air, howling as they gave off a strong aura.

Fang Yuan sat on an azure myriad wolf king’s back as the strong winds could not affect his determined and resolved expression.

His eyes were dark like the abyss, he was looking down with his thoughts unpredictable.

Although the wolves were scattered when he first entered Imperial Court blessed land, Fang Yuan had been handing out missions to others and had been recalling the old wolves as well as recruiting new wolves since. By now, he had about five hundred thousand wolves running below him like the tides of the sea.

At this point, he was truly at the peak of the mortal realm.

During the Imperial Court contest, he was one of the five beast kings together with Jiang Bao Ya, Ma Zun and others. After the Imperial Court contest, just looking at northern plains alone, he was the current generation’s number one enslavement master.

Other than his enslavement attainment, he also displayed great technique in his strength path cultivation, and was also a flying master, it was truly a shocking achievement.

Who did not respect and revere the great Wolf King Chang Shan Yin?

In the entire northern plains, how many could actually put up a challenge before him?

But at this moment, in Fang Yuan’s mind, there was a voice ’discouraging’ him.

"Hehehe, young man, you want to combine strength and enslavement, that is really a tall order. I would advise you to give up on that as soon as possible."

Mo Yao’s will continued: "Strength and enslavement are very distinct from each other. The combination of strength and enslavement has been an age old problem. It was not easy for you to even dual cultivate them, why don’t you change them now while it is early, there is no need to do something so meaningless and troublesome, I had gone through this back in my days. You need to know, there are countless paths and ways to be a Gu Master, our strength is not reliant on the number of paths we are on, but the depth of our attainment."

Mo Yao explained to him patiently, but Fang Yuan scoffed, arrogantly refusing: "Problems are meant to be solved, what is there to be afraid of? Enslavement-strength dual cultivation is an age old problem, that is because I had not been born back in those days. I will eventually have the world in my palms, my name will go down in history, just like Star Constellation, Red Lotus, Paradise Earth and others."

Star Constellation, Red Lotus, Paradise Earth were all rank nine venerables. In the long history of mankind, the river of time flowed endlessly, but there were only ten of them throughout the ages.

Fang Yuan was a mortal, but he was aiming to be such a person, it was like an ant trying to become an elephant.

Such lofty ambitions and tone, even Mo Yao’s will was tongue-tied when she heard it.

...

"Howl!"

"Kill, kill all of these earth chief beasts!"

"Where is the healing Gu Master? Someone is injured, quickly come and help!"

The beasts were growling, the Gu Masters were shouting, a small-scale fight was reaching its climax.

On the relatively small battlefield, there were holes on the ground, broken limbs and blood everywhere. Five to six Gu Masters were surrounding the earth chief beast king, engaging in fierce combat. There were large numbers of earth chief beast corpses surrounding them.

These earth chief beasts had a humanoid body and a snake tail, their face resembled bats, and their nose were pointed up. They had large ears and a black body covered in flesh armor. All around their chests, there were five to six flesh whips, ranging from tens of centimeters to meters long.

The whips were like hands, agile like snakes as they flung with huge force, both offensively and defensively.

The earth chief beasts lived underground, but they only lived near the surface and not deep underneath.

They had great value, be it their eyes, fur, or tail, they were rare and valuable Gu refinement material. What was most rare was their flesh whips, the longer they were the better, whips that were six meters or longer were often priceless, almost none were sold in the market.

Right now in northern plains, earth chief beasts were almost going extinct. But in Imperial Court blessed land, they lived in huge numbers, for example at this area, for the surrounding ten thousand li, there were earth chief beast groups living underground.

Money moved people’s hearts, because this was close to the sacred palace, many Gu Masters often gathered in groups and hunted at this place.

This battling group was one of them.

The Gu Masters in the group had hunted down the earth chief beasts for several times already, they were quite experienced.

But this time, they encountered trouble. Although they attracted an earth chief beast group, there were only a hundred of them which was manageable for them. However, the beast king was not an ordinary hundred beast king, but an old thousand beast king. Although this old beast king could not battle and was old and sickly, it had many wild Gu in it, and had truly the battle strength of a rank three.

Among mortal Gu Masters, rank one were students, they had just started and were weak, being the most commonly seen ones. Rank two were the foundation of tribes, the main source of manpower, they were quite common.

Rank three were elders, they were the pillars of support for the clan, and were much more rare than rank two Gu Masters. Rank four were the leaders, capable to leading ten thousand men. Rank five was the peak of the mortal realm, they were the rarest of the mortal Gu Masters.

Earth chief thousand beast king was not a problem by itself, but the rank three that it had were too much for this group to handle.

During the start of the battle, the leader Jiang Dong was decisive and had great experience, ordering his group and bringing some people to break into the beast group, stalling the earth chief beast king, while the others slaughtered the earth chief beasts. Otherwise, the group would have crumbled already.

"Everyone, put in more effort! This old beast is going down, we will win if we can endure!" Jiang Dong shouted to raise the group’s morale.

Everyone replied quickly, raising their concentration and mental focus.

From the start of the battle until now, an hour had passed. The Gu Masters were almost out of primeval essence, but because of northern plains’ culture, these Gu Masters all cultivated strength path as well.

The Gu Masters fought bravely, using close combat primarily, only using their primeval essence when they had no choice to save themselves or others.

Howl!

Right at this time, the old beast king swung its snake tail, causing the air to crackle. The snake tail hit one of the Gu Masters and sent him flying. When he landed, this Gu Master’s chest was smashed and his bones were all broken, he was beyond dead.

Humans had intelligence, beasts had their craftiness too.

The old beast king was really weak, but that did not mean it was powerless. When it burst out its remaining strength, it killed one person immediately.

The Gu Masters were stunned, their morale fell rock bottom.

"Oh no, we were already at a stalemate earlier, that that we are one man down, and my primeval essence is less than twenty percent left, what will we do?" Jiang Dong’s eyes rolled as he thought of escaping.

This hunting group was only established at a whim, although running away would ruin his reputation, what was reputation compared to death?

Northern plainsmen were battle lovers, it was true that they were ferocious and brave, but they were not stupid.

"In the past, life was tough and I could only fight desperately to survive. Now that I am inside Imperial Court blessed land, with ample resources lying around, I should be accumulating my foundation and soaring into the sky. How can I sacrifice my precious life here?"

"I have parents and children back at home, although these hunting gains were good, the primeval stones are only enough to sustain my own cultivation. That rascal at home will be starting his cultivation journey in half a year... thus, sorry everyone!"

Jiang Dong’s gaze shone for a while, as he retreated suddenly, using all his remaining primeval essence on his movement Gu.

He tore through the air, with a ’swoosh’ sound, he vanished like the wind.

The remaining Gu Masters were stunned again, the leader ran away in battle, what can they do now?

Immediately, everyone scattered as morale became non-existent.

The earth chief beast king growled, chasing after them.

"The f*ck!" Jiang Dong looked back and cursed, his soul almost flew into the nine heavens.

This old earth chief beast king chose to chase after him out of all the people, most likely his ruthless attacks and fierce offense enraged the old beast.

"Oh no, my life will be over at this rate!"

The two ran and chased, as time passed, his primeval was expended and Jiang Dong fell into despair.

"Lord Jiang Dong, please run!"

At this time, a voice could be heard from afar.

Jiang Dong turned around and saw a young man at the left, it was Ma Hong Yun who had joined the group not too long ago. He had rank one cultivation and was a support Gu Master with little battle strength. From the start of the battle, he had been dispatched and was used to investigate the area.

"What a foolish lad!" Jiang Dong was overjoyed, he changed directions and ran towards Ma Hong Yun.

Ma Hong Yun’s eyes were wide open, he saw the old earth chief beast king chasing Jiang Dong and had the urge to remind him. To think that Jiang Dong actually lured the old beast king towards him.

Ma Hong Yun ran immediately, but Jiang Dong was even faster, in a few breaths’ time, he got close to him.

Jiang Dong laughed loudly: "Lad, you saved my life today, your death is not in vain."

Saying so, he used his Gu worm and knocked Ma Hong Yun unconsciously, stretching out his hand and tossing him behind.

But the old earth chief beast king ignored that free meal and still chased after Jiang Dong non-stop.

Jiang Dong’s laughter came to an end, his mood went from heaven to hell.

Just as old earth chief beast king got close to him, he could hear rumbling in his ears as the ground started to shake.

Next, from far away in the sky, a line was getting bigger and clearer.

Wolves!

Why are there so many wolves?!

The wolf tide rained down from the sky, the grand aura it gave off was like flood water that was engulfing the world.

The old thousand beast king froze, after being in a short daze, it shuddered and turned around to run away.

"Vermillion flame wolves, turtleback wolves... such a wolf group, that’s right, there was an announcement, Wolf King was going to hunt at this area! Ahahaha, my life is not meant to be over, I am saved!"

Jiang Dong cheered loudly after his initial shock. He sat on the ground, his body shivering in excitement, the hope after despair was making him feel great relief as tears flowed out of his eyes.

But the next moment, the wolf tide came without slowly down, charging like a waves as it tore him into pieces in a few seconds.

In the golden sky, atop the azure wolf, Mo Yao’s will spoke in Fang Yuan’s mind with a sorrowful sigh: "Fang Yuan, you allow these wolves to kill every living thing in their path, be it enemy or ally. Your killing intent is too strong, are you not afraid of going against the natural order, are you not afraid of other Gu Masters’ opinion?"

"Hmph, I announced my hunt long ago. These people are overwhelmed by greed, they are like ants, there is no pity for them when they are blocking my path." Fang Yuan replied plainly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The wolf groups were like a tsunami leaving trail of blood wherever it went in the blessed land.

Fang Yuan was sitting indifferently on the back of an azure wolf king, turning a blind eye to the massacre happening in front of him.

In his mind, Mo Yao’s will frowned slightly.

She was a fairy nurtured by Spirit Affinity House, a person of the righteous path; she was naturally not happy at Fang Yuan’s casual massacre.

"This young man could disguise his identity and sneak into Imperial Court blessed land under the eyes of northern plains’ Gu Immortals; he is a dauntless and crafty person. He also deciphered the clues of my inheritance and refined the Immortal Gu, he was not only fated but also had extraordinary methods. Even more importantly, he knows to bow and submit, when he knows that things cannot always go his way, he immediately compromises, this person is extremely shrewd as well! What is his origin?"

Mo Yao’s will could not help but wonder about that question.

She had just recently come out of Water Pavilion and resided in Fang Yuan’s mind; she had analyzed many of Fang Yuan’s thoughts and immediately learned many of his secrets.

However, Fang Yuan’s response was quick and immediately took preventive measures, making her progress slow down greatly.

Thus, Mo Yao’s will learnt of Fang Yuan’s secrets but what she knew was limited.

Among them included the secrets Fang Yuan revealed to her of his own accord.

She still did not know that Fang Yuan possessed Spring Autumn Cicada, thus she had no way of knowing Fang Yuan’s biggest secret of being a transmigrator.

This was the world of Gu.

Mo Yao had already perished and what was left was only a portion of her will. Unable to use Gu worms, Mo Yao’s will could only take advantage of Fang Yuan’s low attainment in wisdom path.

"I had just recently awakened, I do not know what his background is. This young man has absurdly firm willpower and is extremely opinionated. I should just bide my time and guide him to return Water Pavilion to the sect first. It will not be too late to persuade him to do good once we arrive at Spirit Affinity House..."

Mo Yao’s will had inherited some intelligence of the main body and immediately kept quiet when she realized any persuasion would be in vain.

There was no resistance at all; Fang Yuan’s dark and eerie gaze slowly retracted, closing his eyes to rest on the wolf’s back.

He was not someone who slaughtered willfully.

There was a reason for letting the wolves massacre at full force today.

One was to attract the earth chief beast groups underground. earth chief beast was a wild beast, the thick smell of blood would attract and stimulate their savage nature, making them risk emerging from the ground.

Second was that the massacre would produce large numbers of souls. Since the start of the Imperial Court contest, Fang Yuan had been using soul burial toad to collect the souls. He had Dang Hun mountain, and as long as Dang Hun mountain did not die completely, the more souls he had, the better it was for him.

Third reason was aimed at Mo Yao’s will in his mind, he was trying to probe her.

As for the nasty repercussions from wantonly killing Gu Masters, Fang Yuan was happy instead of afraid.

Not mentioning that he had already made a public announcement, making the consequences clear to everyone, even if the public stirs and the resentment and hatred towards him rises, so what?

He was at the peak of mortals, the famous Wolf King Chang Shan Yin! He was no longer the minor character several years ago who had to act cautiously.

In this Imperial Court blessed land where Gu Immortals could not enter, his one shout could cause countless Gu Masters to tremble. His stomp could shake the sacred palace. With one thought, the wolf groups would instantly create a bloodbath.

There was a famous saying on Earth — Political power comes from military strength.

A strong fist is power and power is the truth!

But on Earth, power was concentrated in the masses. Besides violence and fists, one needed to use righteousness to conceal the truth and compromise according to the public sentiment.

But here, individual strength was far above the group. Public sentiment and righteousness were much weaker. Not mentioning anyone else, just take the current Fang Yuan as an example — who cares about your dogshit hatred and grudges, whoever comes will face decimation! Whoever is not pleasing to the eyes, they can be slaughtered with no care at all!

Looking disdainfully at all lives, trampling on the public sentiment, without restraints and free like the wind!

But in Fang Yuan’s pursuit of the Great Dao, he had no interest towards casually slaughtering ants. Today’s large scale massacre was no more than a small step towards his majestic target.

As he thought of this trip’s goal, Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes.

Howl!

A beast roar echoed to the skies.

A mound bulged up from a distance before bursting open; mud and stones splattered around as a fifty feet tall earth chief myriad beast king jumped out.

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with a chilly light as he sneered: "You shall be the one."

At once, he commanded the wolf group to attack, endless thoughts flew about in his mind like an endless drizzle.

If one looked from a high altitude, one would see an extremely spectacular scene of innumerable wolves rushing forward like an endless tide.

As they neared the earth chief myriad beast king, the wolves suddenly split into several groups like ants trying to climb up an elephant. At the same time, azure wolves howled and flew down, spiralling around earth chief myriad beast king like birds.

Earth chief myriad beast king jumped towards the wolf group and started rampaging, soon, wolf blood splattered and wolf corpses covered the ground. Its giant legs would leave behind terrifying blood pits in its trail.

Fang Yuan had a smile as he observed the battle from the skies.

Under his control, the wolf groups advanced and retreated, sometimes slowly and sometimes fast, as they charged forward waves after waves, forming a situation of ants devouring an elephant.

Earth chief myriad beast king roared again and again while valiantly charging all around, causing large numbers of casualties in the wolf groups.

In Fang Yuan’s mind, Mo Yao gave a soft exclamation of surprise, slightly shocked at Fang Yuan’s enslavement path attainment.

"Wow, I had not expected this kid to have so much talent at this young age, commanding these wolves as naturally as breathing, and with such ease like he is moving his arms, he has mastered the art of attrition battle of enslavement path, fighting the strong with a weak force, this is a master level attainment..."

But it was nothing more than a slight shock.

Mo Yao had seen and experienced a lot in her life and was not an ordinary Gu Immortal, but a certain generation’s fairy of Spirit Affinity House; her horizons were broad and masters as young as Fang Yuan were not few in her memory.

The battle lasted for a while, earth chief myriad beast king was roaring again and again, its energy was consumed by the wolf groups and could no longer display its fierce might...

Large numbers of earth chief beasts jumped out of the underground and joined the battle.

Fang Yuan chuckled indifferently, commanding the wolves with ease as he had already expected this.

The outcome of this large battle was foreordained from the start. How could a myriad beast scale earth chief beast group be his match?

Such a large battle covered a range of a thousand li, but this was ingeniously divided into dozens of sections of battle circles by Fang Yuan; using the weak wolf groups to surround and then using the strong and vigorous mutated beasts to form an arrow head that charged forward.

The first section of the battle circles was taken down by the wolf group, as they joined with the next group to destroy the second section, the third section; the dominance accumulated and the scales of victory was inclining more and more towards Fang Yuan. Finally, the wolf group’s annexing speed increased faster and faster till they butchered earth chief myriad beast king.

"This kid’s enslavement path cultivation is indeed not ordinary. Although his commanding ability is exquisite and bold, using sharp and mild tactics together, he is still far away from grandmaster level attainment." Mo Yao thought inwardly.

Gu Master raised, used, and refined; no matter which aspect, they were all very profound and deep.

Gu Masters might be using the same Gu worms, but some Gu Masters’ performance would be extremely outstanding to the point that it could be called an art. These people were known as masters!

Master could be discovered but not sought, and could not be cultivated just by investing resources. Not only did it require innate talent, the Gu Master also needed to have capability.

But above master was grandmaster.

Comparing master and grandmaster was like comparing grass and tree. Besides talent, aptitude and resources, grandmaster attainment also required fortuitous opportunities and comprehension.

As long as one reached grandmaster level, they could gain comprehension about any path using their own as a foundation, they could understand about yin-yang and heaven and earth, they could learn about the profoundness of the universe, surpassing the mortal realm and become immortals among immortals, sages among sages.

Mo Yao was a refinement path grandmaster, although she had perished, her broad vision still existed.

She had seen countless masters in her life; the main reason why she felt Fang Yuan’s attainment was impressive was because of his young age.

Not long later, earth chief myriad beast king fell down loudly, having died due to the heavy injuries.

Blood flowed out rapidly and soon formed into a pool of blood beside it.

Fang Yuan descended and personally skinned it, immediately started refining Gu next to the blood pool with wolf groups surrounding him.

Mo Yao’s modified earth chief zombie Gu required the freshest flesh, with the flesh of earth chief myriad beast king being the best, thousand beast king being the second best and hundred beast king being the last option.

Thus, Fang Yuan moved out in a large scale and personally killed the earth chief myriad beast king.

The Gu refinement continued for three days and three nights before succeeding perfectly.

Fang Yuan reached his goal, thereafter he dismissed majority of the wolf groups to hunt in the wild, only taking the elite mutated beasts with him as he returned back to sacred palace without stopping.

The battlefield fell into deathly stillness; suddenly, a bloody person made his way out of a hill-sized blood forest wolf corpse.

The bloody person swayed unstably as he moved and had only walked a few steps before falling down to the ground.

He gasped roughly, an incredulous look in his eyes as he muttered: "I am still alive?"

He vigorously rubbed his face, revealing his face.

It was none other than Ma Hong Yun.

After he had been knocked unconscious by Jiang Dong, he had remained down on the ground.

That old earth chief beast king ignored him and chased after Jiang Dong.

But soon after, wolf group engulfed the area and slaughtered all living beings, and Ma Hong Yun ended up in a wolf’s mouth.

If it had been an ordinary wolf like turtleback wolf, water wolf or wind wolf, Ma Hong Yun would already have been torn into pieces and would be lying in the wolf’s stomach.

Fortunately, it was the hill-sized blood forest wolf that had eaten him.

This wolf opened up its large mouth and with one lap of its tongue, directly licked the ground within a hundred steps. Ma Hong Yun along with the old earth chief beast king’s corpse went down into the blood forest wolf’s stomach.

If it had continued normally, Ma Hong Yun would already have been digested by the blood forest wolf sooner or later and turn into a pile of wolf faeces.

But following the battle with the earth chief beast group, this blood forest wolf was attacked from all around and died on the battlefield; its chest and belly was torn open which allowed air to flow in.

Ma Hong Yun dizzily woke up and hurriedly drilled his way out. At this time, the battle had already ended and the battlefield was covered with beast corpses. Occasionally, some wild beasts that were at their final moments would gasp for air, emphasizing the deathly stillness in the surrounding.

After Ma Hong Yun breathed enough, his strength started to gradually recover and the thick bloody odor assailed his nose.

He realized the situation was anything but reassuring: "I need to leave this place quickly, wild beasts will be attracted by the odor of the blood not long later."

Ma Hong Yun had been born and raised in Northern Plains, this survival common sense was already deeply ingrained in his bones.

He immediately stood up and made sure of the direction towards sacred palace and immediately set off.

But he had just taken few steps when he stopped.

His sight was attracted by a Gu worm.

This was a wild Gu on the corpse of an earth chief beast.

The earth chief beast had died, the wild Gu on it should have perished or flown away, but this wild Gu was unexpectedly held back by a fractured bone and could not fly away.

"This should be a rank two... something something Gu." Ma Hong Yun could not remember it clearly, but it did not hinder him from knowing the value of this Gu.

"Good Gu worm, this is a good Gu worm, after getting it, even if I can’t use it for myself, I can sell it for a lot of primeval stones."

Ma Hong Yun felt a rush of excitement and immediately walked over, easily grabbing the Gu worm.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The silver light shone on the garden where the plants were swaying gently.

In a pavilion, Fang Yuan was fiddling with earth chief zombie Gu.

This Gu’s shape appeared like an earthworm, bright yellow in color and was the size of an infant’s forearm. Right now, it was twining around Fang Yuan’s fingers like a wriggling snake.

Through Mo Yao’s improved recipe and the flesh of earth chief myriad beast king’s corpse, its refinement was successful.

But Fang Yuan had not used it.

He was cautious in nature, this earth chief zombie Gu was refined from a modified recipe, what would he do if there was a problem?

Although he had reached a compromise with Mo Yao’s will, Mo Yao was a fairy of the righteous path’s Spirit Affinity House as well as a refinement path grandmaster; he could not put his guard down.

’But grandmasters are truly worthy of their name, my refinement path attainment has already reached the master realm, but when compared to Mo Yao, I am young like a child.’

Recalling the process of refining earth chief zombie Gu, Fang Yuan was still feeling moved.

During the whole Gu refinement process, Mo Yao only spoke three sentences, but they were the crucial guides, the vital finishing touches. Fang Yuan was able to gain a lot of insight from them.

He, however, did not know Mo Yao was also inwardly moved at this moment.

’Double master attainment... I had not expected this kid to not only be an enslavement path master but also refinement path master. Double master attainment at such a young age, such aptitude and talent are rare even in my memory. No wonder he has such grand ambitions of wanting to rise to the realm of venerable, equal to Thieving Heaven, Paradise Earth, Giant Sun....’

’It is also natural to be arrogant and conceited after getting success at this young age.’ Mo Yao still scoffed at Fang Yuan’s ’goal’ of being equal to venerables, but she understood.

’Becoming a master can’t be done with just talent and aptitude, it also requires sufficient resources and even guidance from great teachers. It seems this kid’s background is quite deep.’

Previously, Mo Yao already knew the secret of Fang Yuan possessing Hu Immortal blessed land. Now, with the intel of ’double master attainment’, she sensed the deep origin of Fang Yuan.

"Lord Wolf King, Ge tribe’s and Chang tribe’s leaders have come forward to have an audience." Right at this time, a servant reported from outside the door.

Fang Yuan collected his thoughts, these two had been called by him. He indifferently said: "Let them in."

"Yes." The servant respectfully retreated.

Not long later, two people came forward and kneeled, kowtowing three times to pay their respects, an extremely respectful and fearful expression could be seen on their faces.

Going through the baptism of Imperial Court contest and being at a high position with no lack of resources, under the shade of a large tree like Wolf King, Ge Guang and Chang Ji You were already rank four Gu Masters.

Fang Yuan glanced and asked without allowing them to rise: "Have you completed the things I told you a few days ago?"

After Fang Yuan succeeded in his expedition and returned to the sacred palace, he gave an order to the two tribe leaders to gather all their tribe’s Gu Masters to clean up the battlefield.

"As per Lord Wolf King’s words, the battlefield has been cleaned up, altogether..." Ge Guang was about to report the gains, but was interrupted by Fang Yuan.

He did not care about these battle spoils, asking: "How many Gu Masters did you arrest?"

Ge Guang did not reply this time, instead signalled Chang Ji You who was at the side, with his eyes.

Everyone knew Chang Ji You was Chang Shan Yin’s own son, and after Fang Yuan took control of Chang tribe, he appointed Chang Ji You as the tribe leader.

Ge Guang was letting Chang Ji You reply to Fang Yuan’s question, in light of this relation and to express his goodwill to Chang Ji You.

Chang Ji You spoke with a respectful expression, his gaze revealing a crazed fanatical worship: "People’s hearts are unfathomable with insatiable greed. Despite lord father’s public announcement, there were still many Gu Masters who sneaked into the battlefield to steal beast corpses or wild Gu. Over these few days, I and tribe leader Ge Guang combined our strength and were able to arrest over one hundred and eighty Gu Masters who are locked up in the prison now. But there were still many crafty and treacherous scoundrels who took advantage of when we were not on guard to sneak in and make some free gains. I have interrogated the prisoners and have much intel on them already. As long as father commands, I will definitely spare no efforts to lock up all these escapees!"

Although Chang Ji You was kneeling on the ground, his upper body was upright as he spoke in an unafraid tone; his aquiline nose, dark brows, broad back and thin waist gave him a heroic aura.

Fang Yuan smiled, he had no interest in capturing these escapees: "The battlefield is vast and is not restricted with doors or obstacles, you have already done great by capturing so many Gu Masters. As for the others, it is their skill that they were able to escape, there is no need to chase after them. You can leave now, and bring those detained captives here."

"Yes, this subordinate (this child) heeds your command!"

Not long later, the two escorted close to two hundred captives to Fang Yuan.

With Fang Yuan’s command, a large hall had been created to lock up these Gu Masters.

"You guys go out and close the door, guard the entrance and don’t let any outsiders enter within a hundred steps. If some experts arrive, inform me in advance." Fang Yuan dismissed everyone, the hall now only had him and the captives.

The door was locked and as no lanterns had been lit, the hall sank into darkness.

This no doubt increased the unease and anxiety in the captives’ hearts.

"Lord Wolf King, what are you intending to do by capturing us? I am a Hei tribesman and talking of relation... Hei Lou Lan is my older cousin!" Among the captives a young Gu Master shouted.

Fang Yuan sneered and with a snap of his fingers, activated a Gu.

Tch. A soft sound was heard and the young Gu Master’s head burst out like a watermelon, spurting out white brain matter.

A huge clamor instantly occurred as the captives were terrified and fell into panic.

Soon, someone took the lead and the others also followed suit, kneeling down one after another.

"Lord Wolf King, I deserve death!"

"I shouldn’t have gone to steal lord’s battle spoils, my conscience was blinded!"

"Lord, please forgive us, lord have mercy..."

Fang Yuan had a terrifying reputation, and now he casually killed without even saying a word.

None of these Gu Masters were experts, most having only rank one or rank two cultivation. Their background was not good and they were unable to enter Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, facing a rank five peak stage expert like Fang Yuan and trying to resist would only be looking for death, so they could only ask for forgiveness.

"Noisy". Fang Yuan shouted in a soft voice, but his voice echoing in the hall.

He casually waved his hand, killing the person that was begging in the most mournful voice, even though they were quite far apart.

"I will kill anyone who dares to make more noise." Fang Yuan indifferently said, his voice was not loud but it lingered in the captives’ ears.

The whole hall instantly fell into deathly silence out of fear; even the sound of a pin dropping could be heard.

Fang Yuan only then felt satisfied and asked Mo Yao’s will in his mind: "Now how should I experiment?"

Mo Yao chuckled: "This is easy, little brother just needs to arrange Gu worms according to my instructions."

She directly addressed Fang Yuan as ’little brother, giving a feeling of intimacy. Fang Yuan snorted inwardly, but did not retort and followed Mo Yao’s instructions.

Every time Mo Yao notified, Fang Yuan would respond by sending out a Gu worm.

These Gu worms were the Gu worms to form six arm heavenly zombie king killer move; earth chief zombie Gu, asura zombie Gu, heavenly demon zombie Gu and so on. Some were thrown towards the roof and some were placed in the corners.

As the Gu worms made an arc through the air, trails of colorful light appeared in the captives’ eyes.

These people were very anxious, but they did not dare to ask anything. They stood on their spots without even daring to move a little just like little whelps.

The headless corpses of the two captives Fang Yuan had killed were still around them, the odor of blood gradually pervaded the hall as the blood flowed out of the severed necks.

After arranging these Gu worms to their spots, Fang Yuan successively started to pour primeval essence into them according to Mo Yao’s instructions.

This process of pouring the primeval essence was quite specific; one moment, he had to choose a Gu worm in the southeast and the very next moment, it would be northwest, and suddenly, it would be the Gu worms to the sides. The main Gu at times, and the supporting Gu worms at times.

Even Fang Yuan felt baffled and had inwardly put up his guard.

When all the Gu worms were activated, the light from them gradually linked together and soon formed a pale yellow light house that covered the hall, including all the captives within.

"This is?!" Fang Yuan’s thoughts shook and his pupils widened.

Mo Yao’s will softly smiled as she explained: "This is a Gu house."

Fang Yuan involuntarily blurted out: "Is the essence of this six arm heavenly zombie king a Gu house?"

Mo Yao chuckled: "Foolish kid, could it be that you don’t know the true nature of a Gu house is a killer move? ... Six arm heavenly zombie king is a killer move, a Gu house is also a killer move, their essence is the same, so they naturally can be mutually switched."

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed brightly as he sensed the unspoken implication of Mo Yao’s words, immediately asking: "From your words, couldn’t all killer moves turn into Gu houses?"

"Of course." Mo Yao unhesitatingly replied, "Man is the spirit of all living beings while Gu is the essence of the world, carrier of the Great Dao. A Gu worm has one ability. What is a killer move? It is an assembly of different Gu worms stacking their abilities; it can raise the strength of one ability to a very high level or produce multiple abilities which can handle different aspects."

Mo Yao did not explain further, whether Fang Yuan could have some comprehension from this was his own matter.

Fang Yuan stared blankly, inspirations started flashing incessantly in his mind!

Mo Yao’s words seemed to pierce through a paper window, allowing his insight to rise to a whole new height.

"Right! A Gu house’s essence is a killer move which has solidified. For example, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building can be compared with Water Pavilion. The former covers the Imperial Court, influences northern plains, plunders resources and holds inheritances. The latter can be concealed, and has the ability of defense and storage. These functions were not provided by just a single Gu worm, but were the result of Gu Masters assembling these Gu worms."

"From another perspective, a Gu house is just one form of manifestation of a killer move. Since six arm heavenly zombie king can only take effect on me, one person, why can it not form into a Gu house and simultaneously take effect on many people?"

At this thought, Fang Yuan looked ahead.

In the Gu house, those Gu Master captives’ bodies were already beginning to show changes.

"Wha... what is happening to me?!" Everyone was shouting in fright as they saw golden scales growing out rapidly on their skin.

"Ahhh, it is painful, it is painful!""It itches, it is too itchy, I can’t endure this, just kill me!" Soon, they fell down to the ground one after another; some madly grabbed their skin and tore off their clothes, while others bent their body like shrimps, covering their chest tightly as blood flowed out of their mouth and nose.

"This, what is this thing? Why is there a monstrous arm growing out of my back!" Not long later, the alarmed screams reached the peak, the soundwaves even shaking the roof.

All sorts of arms started growing one after another; some were dark green, some dark purple, some yellow, and their thicknesses were also different, the deformities looking very unsightly.

But Fang Yuan had never bothered with these minor details to external appearance, his eyes slightly squinted when he felt the dangerous aura the Gu Masters started releasing; he felt very happy as well as apprehensive —

"Mo Yao’s understanding of killer moves is extremely profound. But why do others have no such comprehension? Is it because most Gu Masters and even Gu Immortals don’t have the skill to casually transform killer moves into Gu houses? Refinement path grandmaster... this is truly a terrifying realm!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the deeply secluded hall, only Fang Yuan was standing.

There was a deathly silence.

The faint yellow light merged into one, forming the shape of a Gu house, inside the house of light was a floor of corpses.

Almost two hundred Gu Masters died a terrible death.

Among these corpses, some had scales on their bodies, some were hard as steel, some grew weird limbs and had a grimacing expression, some self-detonated and caused their broken limbs to fly all over the place.

Fang Yuan’s expression was grim, he questioned Mo Yao in his mind: "This is the killer move that you thought of?"

Mo Yao replied with unphased confidence: "These Gu Masters were certainly going to die. Six arm heavenly zombie king is a strength path killer move, it has high requirements towards the body. Now it seems, even with your strength path foundation, it is unable to endure such an intense move."

Fang Yuan scoffed, expressing his unhappiness: "This is your explanation? You think I could not tell? This killer move has so many flaws, initially fifty to sixty people died, midway about a hundred had died, and towards the end we were only left with six to seven Gu Masters. There are at least seventeen flaws! Do not forget that we have an agreement."

"Hehehe." Mo Yao chuckled, she felt nothing from being threatened, as she replied: "Little brother, don’t be so rash, six arm heavenly zombie king has only been created roughly, it is normal to have flaws. As we continue to improve on it, it will eventually meet our expectations."

She replied to Fang Yuan as she thought: "This lad is not simple, he could detect seventeen flaws... with his refinement master attainment, he should only be able to find eleven at most, it seems that his strength path attainment has also reached the edge of master level."

Mo Yao did not know that Fang Yuan was playing mind games here.

"I could only see seven flaws, I purposely added ten in order to probe her, it seems that this killer move’s flaws are more than just seventeen." Fang Yuan assessed in his mind.

Mo Yao was testing out his level of attainment, but Fang Yuan was also probing her foundation as well.

Six arm heavenly zombie king was full of flaws, all of the Gu Masters used for the experiment were dead, but Fang Yuan was happy instead of being worried.

"Logically speaking, Mo Yao has refinement grandmaster attainment, even if it is a roughly made killer move, there cannot be so many flaws! But while Mo Yao is indeed a refinement grandmaster, this is only a part of her will that she left behind..."

Fang Yuan’s compromise was real, but he had never given up on his goal to get rid of Mo Yao’s will.

Through his current probing, he found out one weakness of Mo Yao’s will.

"Although I am not familiar with wisdom path, I had spent a great fortune and bought much costly information from treasure yellow heaven, they are valuable knowledge."

"Wisdom path seeks the path of knowledge, it is split into ’thought, ’will’, and ’emotion’. Thought is the foundation, when a person thinks, thoughts are created. When many thoughts are gathered, will is formed. With many wills intertwined, emotions would form. Thoughts are like weeds, they can be easily created or destroyed, will can be everchanging, firm as steel, empty like vacuum, or fierce like fire... As for emotions, they are like water, a small stream when thin, but cannot be cut easily or steered by reason. When deep, they will be like the sea, having great control and power over oneself."

"Out of these three, emotion is the hardest to get rid of, while thoughts are most easily destroyed and created. I should be glad that what is inside my mind now is Mo Yao’s will and not Mo Yao’s emotions."

"When a person thinks, thoughts are created. When thoughts collide, they either get destroyed or fuse. The eventual thought would be the result obtained from thinking. Then what about a portion of a person’s will? Hehehe."

Fang Yuan thought of the brilliant part and he snickered in his heart continuously.

Wills do not form by just gathering randomly scattered thoughts together. But will is truly the linking together of countless thoughts.

When a will thinks about a question, it will use its own thoughts to fuse and create new thoughts, getting the results of their thinking.

"Mo Yao is a refinement grandmaster, her will also inherited her grandmaster attainment, but the flaws created in thinking about six arm heavenly zombie king were not due to her limited abilities, but because she did not dare to think too deeply as she had to worry about her own safety."

By now, Fang Yuan had discovered Mo Yao’s weakness!

A living person would feel weakness in their body if they thought about things non-stop, not to mention a simple will?

The more a will thinks, the more damaged they would get, and the weaker they would be.

If Mo Yao was alive, the expenditure that her will incurs would be replenished by her main body. But now — Mo Yao was already dead!

Why did her will sleep inside Water Pavilion, only awakening when Fang Yuan entered?

That was because her will could not stay awake all the time, one thinks extensively when they are awake, the more she thought the weaker her will would be, and the faster it would perish.

Look at Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, this majestic rank eight Immortal Gu house, containing Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s will.

Even for someone as strong as Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, the will that he left behind was also slumbering!

Be it Giant Sun’s will or Mo Yao’s will, they were without a power source, they could not be replenished and could only weaken as time passed.

"While my wisdom path attainment is low, I have the greatest advantage in that I am alive! At this point, I cannot contest with Mo Yao’s will, but as long as I have enough time to stall it out, I will definitely win."

After pondering to this point, Fang Yuan stopped this train of thought.

After all, Mo Yao’s will was inside his mind. Reflecting for overly long would create more thoughts, although he could use space thought Gu to hide them, there was no guarantee that Mo Yao would not find a way around it.

"Sigh..."

In the grand hall, Fang Yuan’s sigh could be heard.

Mo Yao was a huge burden, Fang Yuan had to be wary all the time when he thinks.

Originally, getting into Imperial Court blessed land and taking Immortal Gu Landscape As Before was already taxing on him, having to make so many considerations. Coupled with such a huge enemy now lurking inside his brain, Fang Yuan had to be very careful of the danger while attempting to solve it, every time he thought about a problem, he would have to mix in some random thoughts to conceal his intentions.

This kind of thinking would be easily achieved in the past if his heart was calm. But now, Fang Yuan felt that it was very taxing, he felt a strong mental fatigue.

Mo Yao’s will heard this sigh and misunderstood Fang Yuan, consoling: "Hehehe, little brother, you are so young, but already so hardworking, why are you sighing? I have revised the killer move, you need to change six Gu worms and add in three more."

"Oh?" Fang Yuan’s brows rose, he said expressionlessly: "I am listening."

Mo Yao told him the details.

Fang Yuan had Hu Immortal blessed land in his possession, it was not a problem to connect to treasure yellow heaven and exchange for a few mortal Gu.

At the same time, Fang Yuan instructed Ge Guang and Chang Ji You to secretly bring captured Gu Masters into the hall.

Three days later, another round of human experimentation begun.

The experiment’s result was better than earlier, but there were still flaws.

Mo Yao summed up the results and gave another revised suggestion.

Fang Yuan acted accordingly, he showed no impatience even after many rounds. He knew clearly: Mo Yao’s will had refinement grandmaster attainment, but the more she thought, the weaker she would be, the rounds of experiments were so that they could replace the strain on her thoughts by using test subjects.

But even so, Mo Yao’s will had to think of the revision herself. When she thinks about this, thoughts would generate!

The more she does this, the weaker her will would be.

Fang Yuan did not intend to alarm her, he was prepared for a drawn out battle.

After half a month, during the fifteenth experiment.

In the hall, corpses were scattered everywhere.

Fang Yuan kept the dozens of Gu worms used for six arm heavenly zombie king, looking around and giving a satisfied nod.

The test subjects had low cultivation level, they could not endure such a strong killer move like six arm heavenly zombie king, they were sure to die.

But how they died, and what happened to them after they died was the important thing.

Right now, among these corpses, some has turned into zombies, some had yellow scales, some had six arms on their backs, some had sharp spiky scales, some had thick arms with bulging muscles, some had pitch-black claws on their hands, created by their sharp nails.

"Six arm heavenly zombie king uses borrow strength Gu as the core, and the six flying zombie Gu as the foundation, with eighteen Gu as the complements. Strictly speaking, this is a transformation path killer move, gathering the zombie energy to turn a person into a flying zombie. That way, the Gu Master’s body becomes more than ten times as strong, and can hold even greater strength." Fang Yuan spoke slowly, concluding his gains from these previous days.

"But precisely because of this, the zombie energy is extremely dense and the backlash of this killer move is very severe. Even if we had three life force type Gu among the complementing Gu worms, we can only sustain the killer move for seven minutes. That’s about it, right?" Fang Yuan asked Mo Yao’s will in his mind.

Mo Yao laughed: "Little brother makes much sense, that is true indeed. Using borrow strength Gu to borrow the strength of the natural phenomena in heaven and earth, but even a rank five strength path expert cannot use it casually. Thus, I thought of using a zombie body as the strength of a zombie body surpasses living flesh, it has great regenerative abilities and complements borrow strength Gu really well."

"But Gu Masters are alive, while zombie energy is the power of the dead, the longer you maintain the six arm heavenly zombie king transformation, the more zombie energy would be in your body, and when it devours your lifeforce, you will turn into a zombie completely, unable to change back. That is the backlash of this killer move."

"Sigh, life force and death energy, they are entirely distinct from each other and like archenemies. The fusion of life and death is also an age old question, it is out of my capabilities. It was my limit to place three life force boosting Gu worms in the killer move. If we put more of these Gu, it will disrupt the zombie energy and the killer move’s power will fall, or even completely collapse. If we use too few of them, the time you can use this transformation will shrink, and it will turn into an impractical move."

Fang Yuan heard this and nodded on the surface, expressing his agreement, but he was chuckling in his heart.

These words from Mo Yao were a suspicious change in topic.

The fusion of life and death was indeed an age old question, there had never been a case of a person being simultaneously dead and alive, the two could not co-exist.

But Mo Yao was a refinement grandmaster, could she not think of any other killer moves?

Why must she use six arm heavenly zombie king? That was because this could greatly reduce the thinking she had to do, since Fang Yuan provided the base of the killer move ’four arm wind king’, she just had to improve on it.

Fang Yuan was almost certain, with her grandmaster attainment, Mo Yao could easily start all over again and think of a brand new killer move.

"Mo Yao is a variant human, she is an inkman. As someone of a different race, she definitely has a different standpoint. These days, we used up to a thousand Gu Masters to experiment, she is a righteous path person, the fairy of Spirit Affinity House, but she watched coldly by the side. Her lover is the great Sword Immortal Bo Qing, it seems that within her affection, there was also the element of being attracted to the strong?"

Bo Qing was the ’pseudo-Immortal Venerable who split the five regions with his sword’, compared to him, Fang Yuan was only a mortal, in Mo Yao’s heart, was he about the same as those test subjects who died?

"Thus, in this world, one has to depend on themselves. Only you yourself are the most reliable person." Fang Yuan sneered in his heart, but he did not point it out, he asked Mo Yao instead: "So, has the killer move six arm heavenly zombie king been completed?"

Mo Yao shook her head: "Not yet, we only experimented on low rank Gu Masters, we still need high rank Gu Masters, preferably rank five, if they are a strength path rank five, that would be the best."

"Rank five strength path?" Fang Yuan frowned, other than himself, there was nobody he knew who met the criteria.

Fang Yuan shook his head, he decided to put this matter aside: "No rush, I have already obtained the materials for ink transformation. It is time to explore Eighty-Eight True Yang Building again!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan entered the central control room once again.

As the name implied, the central control room was the important control center of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

The secret room was round and its walls were flickering with starlight, with a white jade round table at the center. There was an exquisite model of the whole Imperial Court blessed land on the round table, just like a military sand table.

Not only did it depict mountains and rivers and the sacred palace at the center, even the small towers in the blessed land were clearly visible.

"I have returned once again." In Fang Yuan’s mind, Mo Yao’s will sighed with deep emotions.

Fang Yuan ignored her and looked towards the white jade round table.

He had first used the guest token to enter Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, then passed with high grade evaluation which allowed him to enter the treasure room. He then refined the guest halt stele and found the glass owner token, using it, he then entered the central control room.

But because of Di Qiu inheritance, he chose to momentarily halt his plans for Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, eventually refining calamity beckoning Gu.

All in all, Di Qiu inheritance provided both benefits and harm to Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan was able to obtain an Immortal Gu, but its ability was quite unique in that it harmed oneself to benefit others.

And then there was Mo Yao’s will which had sneaked into his mind; Fang Yuan could not get rid of it and as such the internal pressure on him was huge. But undeniably, the pointers given by Mo Yao’s will reaped him much gains, not mentioning the insights regarding refinement path, just the six arm heavenly zombie king and ink transformation killer moves along with the improved earth chief zombie Gu recipe were extremely valuable!

Besides these, there was also an enormous benefit; Mo Yao’s will would be of huge help to Fang Yuan’s plans in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

After all, Mo Yao was a refinement path grandmaster who had researched Eighty-Eight True Yang Building in-depth. She was a legendary character who, back then, had infiltrated into Imperial Court blessed land and created a loophole where she set up Di Qiu inheritance!

Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories along with the video of the central continent Gu Immortals attacking Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he also had first hand information from Lang Ya land spirit and now, a great assistant was with him in the form of Mo Yao’s will.

As such, he was fully confident in this trip.

But shortly after, his gaze paused as he let out a surprised gasp.

He clearly remembered that the sand table on the round table had been covered with a layer of sticky black liquid and the black liquid had formed into a whirlpool which then slowly entered towards a hole in the sand table.

This hole was none other than the location of Di Qiu inheritance.

But now, there was no trace of the black liquid on the sand table and the location of the Di Qiu inheritance was also completely restored in the sand table, with no trace of any hole.

This sight was like a heavy punch to Fang Yuan’s confidence.

His mind was jolted and as he was about to make guesses, Mo Yao’s will chuckled, already knowing his intent: "If there are gains, there will be losses as well. Little brother, you have already taken Di Qiu inheritance, and with Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s might, it was bound to have fixed that flaw; the cave in Di Qiu inheritance exists no longer and a small tower should have been reinstated there."

"Without the loophole, how can I refine the glass owner token into one-edge owner token?" Fang Yuan asked for advice.

"If there is no loophole, then just create a new one." Mo Yao proudly smiled, "Why did I impart you the refinement path killer move ink transformation? You should have already guessed it, the black liquid covering the sand table you saw back then was caused by ink transformation killer move."

"If there is no loophole, make a new one?" Mo Yao’s words revealed the bearings of a refinement path grandmaster, causing Fang Yuan to raise his brows.

Although it sounded easy from her words, how should he create the loophole?

At least, Fang Yuan who was a refinement path master did not have such ability.

Mo Yao continued: "The loophole cannot be casually created. Carelessly doing it will only awaken the slumbering Giant Sun’s will. If his will awakens, then we will face a tragic end. Fortunately, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building has gone through many changes, it is already no longer as perfect as before, time has created all kinds of blemishes in it; back then, I chose the Di Qiu location because the blemish in it was the largest."

"So it was like that." Fang Yuan nodded, inwardly happy.

Mo Yao’s will was like a water without a source, if they wanted to look for the blemishes and the loopholes, it would require large amounts of thinking, and this would cause her will to be greatly exhausted.

But Mo Yao did not satisfy Fang Yuan’s intention and instead said: "Little brother, use your mind to explore the sand table according to my instructions, I will tell you the secrets of the workings of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and help you find the blemishes."

"Okay." Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed.

This action of Mo Yao was not out of his expectation.

She cherished her existence, but it was okay that she was not thinking. Fang Yuan could use this chance to learn from her and increase his understanding of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

The marvels of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building were extraordinary; as Fang Yuan entered the sand table with his mind, he felt like he was a small boat on an ocean, only sensing its limitless and unfathomable vastness. Every corner and side of it was a lesson to be learned and pondered upon.

He instantly felt that he was a minute existence and gasped in amazement.

According to Mo Yao’s directions, Fang Yuan found a total of fifty-four blemishes, and thirteen blemishes among them were relatively larger, forming into flaws that were comparable to the Di Qiu location before.

This result made Mo Yao sigh: "So many years have gone by and even Eighty-Eight True Yang Building cannot escape the damage from the river of time. Thinking of back then, I could only find thirty-eight blemishes with only six that had formed into flaws."

Pausing for a moment, she then continued to give directions to Fang Yuan: "Little brother, now you can use the killer move ink transformation to refine these several flaws."

Fang Yuan followed her words and with frequent shifting of his mind, over eight hundred Gu flew out of his aperture.

There were Gu worms from rank one to rank five of metal, wood, water, earth, rule, soul, blood and other paths, among these dark path was of primary importance.

Although they were all mortal Gu, but for ten or so Gu worms among them, some were already extinct during Medieval Antiquity Era and some even went as far back as Remote Antiquity Era. Thus, they were extremely rare and were completely extinct from the five regions, with only some Gu Immortals having them in their collections.

Fang Yuan had to spend a considerable amount for these Gu worms, spending at least one and a half immortal essence stones.

Immortal essence stones were extremely valuable and could directly replenish a Gu Immortal’s immortal essence and help them cultivate. At the same time, they were also a currency used by Gu Immortals.

Even during Fang Yuan’s peak period in his previous life, he had only been able to collect just over sixty immortal essence stones.

In this life, he gained profits from risk, and since obtaining Hu Immortal blessed land, his highest amount of savings was twelve immortal essence stones.

Now, he only had two immortal essence stones left.

There was nothing he could do about it, too many fields required the use of immortal essence stones.

Purchasing wolf groups, gathering the intel on wisdom path, purchasing Gu worms and so on, all required immortal essence stones.

Close to a thousand Gu worms fluttered about in the air, like a light drizzle.

Fang Yuan put all his concentration in commanding and arranging these Gu worms and when the time was ripe, he shouted softly: "Ink transformation!"

The Gu worms turned into a dark cloud and rain started falling down from the cloud and made pitter-patter sounds as they hit the sand table, turning into drops of inky liquid.

The ink drops started to add up slowly and covered the whole sand table.

Fang Yuan’s concentration was gathered towards a specific flaw, urging the inky liquid to flow towards the flaw.

The primeval essence of a rank five peak stage aperture rapidly decreased, and the inky liquid was also exhausted by over half before it was able to break through a layer of indistinct obstruction and formed into a whirlpool, slowly pouring into the hole in the sand table.

At this scene, Mo Yao spoke: "Throw in your glass owner token."

Fang Yuan did as told and threw in the glass owner token.

The glass owner token sank into the inky whirlpool with no trace to be seen, the inky liquid also started being consumed even more rapidly. After about an hour, the dark cloud was the first to dissipate. After four hours, the inky liquid disappeared completely, and a completely new owner token slowly flew out of the hole.

Fang Yuan grabbed this owner token that had already changed its appearance. On the edge of the previous surface, a sharp protrusion appeared like a horn.

"One-edge owner token, sure enough fits its name." Fang Yuan mumbled.

"In Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, after a descendant of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable passes a floor, the owner token will advance into one-edge owner token and be able to grasp control of a floor. At the same time, the descendant can enter the treasure room and take a treasure within, without the need to exchange. If the descendant can pass through ten floors, the owner token will become a ten-edges owner token which allows the descendant to retrieve a Giant Sun inheritance from the treasure room." Mo Yao introduced.

"Giant Sun inheritance?" Fang Yuan’s heart thumped in excitement.

Mo Yao continued: "Right, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made arrangements for his descendants, arranged the rules of the Imperial Court contest, set up Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and left behind eighty-eight inheritances in it. An Immortal Venerable’s inheritance is naturally not a small thing. But in history, the Imperial Court winners who were able to pass ten floors were extremely few. When I was alive, there were still fifty-three inheritances left out of eighty eight, I am not sure how many remain now."

"Hehehe, speaking of this, even I am envious of your luck. There are altogether thirteen flaws we found. Every flaw after the ink transformation can advance the owner token by one edge. If you can use them all, you will obtain a thirteen-edges owner token and can totally take a Giant Sun inheritance! Sigh, it is not like back then, when there only were six flaws."

When Fang Yuan heard this, his fiery heart felt like it was doused with a basin of cold water, he bitterly laughly: "Using all the flaws? I won’t conceal it from you, I only have two immortal essence stones now, I can only support one more ink transformation killer move."

"Oh, it was like that?" Mo Yao’s gaze flashed.

While Fang Yuan was probing her, she was also probing Fang Yuan.

Immortal essence stones were one of the important standards of evaluating Gu Immortals. Fang Yuan might still be a mortal but with Hu Immortal blessed land, he was already treated as half an immortal in Mo Yao’s heart.

"So this kid only has two Immortal essence stones? Are his words true or a lie?...It should be the truth. The temptations of Giant Sun’s inheritance is not something normal people can resist. He is a refinement path master, he naturally knows the more flaws he refines and the higher grade his owner token is, the more convenient it will be for his plans towards Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. The most crucial point is I am hiding in his mind, it will be impossible for him to hide from me and secretly refine them."

"Now, he would ask for help from the forces behind him. Hmph, this brat conceals too deeply, he will have to reveal his background at that time, and I will be able to know a thing or two."

While thinking this, Mo Yao had a pleasant and benign expression as she gave an idea to Fang Yuan: "There is no need to hurry. Owner tokens can mutually annex each other. As long as you annex the current alliance leader Hei Lou Lan’s owner token, who is to say you might not be able to gather ten edges?"

She indeed lived up to the name Mo Yao, knowing so many behind-the-scenes details.

Fang Yuan’s gaze turned sharp and he intentionally said in a higher voice: "You want to make me go against Hei Lou Lan? Are you thinking of pushing me to my death? Although Hei Lou Lan is easy to deal with, the Hei tribe behind him is a super level force with many Gu Immortals looking after him!"

"Hey, you are an audacious lad, you can disguise your identity to infiltrate Imperial Court and yet you are afraid of mere Hei Lou Lan? Moreover, I did not say you have to kill him, you only need to take the owner token from his hands, that’s all."

Fang Yuan’s gaze changed: "Hei Lou Lan cannot be killed, killing him is like poking a hornet’s nest, Hei tribe is not something I currently can provoke. But that owner token, he definitely treasures it as dearly as his life. Tell me, what should I do?"

’Can’t provoke currently, isn’t he saying it might be a different case in the future? This kid’s ambition is truly big...’ Mo Yao acutely sensed the key word in Fang Yuan’s speech.

As for the problem Fang Yuan mentioned, she did not want to think too much, so she spread out her hands in Fang Yuan’s mind: "How you take the owner token from him is your problem."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Kill!"

"Damn it, another myriad beast king!"

In the huge desert, the heat in the air was distorting one’s vision, as sandworms crawled out from underneath the golden sand terrain.

The Gu Masters were occupying the small area of a sand dune, desperately defending themselves.

This was Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s seventh floor, the eighty-ninth round.

Every round was a new area entirely, filled with all sorts of tests.

A sandworm myriad beast king entered the battle, causing ripples to form in the Gu Masters’ defenses.

"Hold on, just forty-five minutes more and we will get through this round!" Sole Blade General Pan Ping shouted as he tried to boost morale.

He was a demonic Gu Master who had joined Hei tribe to become their external elder.

He had great battle strength, but this round was focused on defense.

It required the challengers to stay on the specified dune for twelve hours, facing the attacks of the sandworms in waves. Unlike Gu Immortals, mortals had limited strength alone, thus it was the best if more people challenged the round.

But Pan Ping’s words had little effect.

By now, there were great losses to the Gu Masters, they were all tired and reaching their limits.

"The f*ck, another myriad beast king, how are we going to survive?" Big Beard wiped the blood and sweat off his face as he shouted.

Nobody knew his real name, because his beard was really thick, he was simply called ’Big Beard’.

In the earlier rounds, he had gotten through the sixth floor’s eighteenth round, thus becoming a little famous from his previously unknown background.

He was originally a rank two Gu Master, as common as a pebble in the sacred palace, a true fodder, but because of the reward for clearing the round, he rose to rank three realm.

It was different when a Gu Master becomes rank three.

Rank two were common, rank three were rare, they were mostly elders.

When Big Beard became rank three, his situation improved, and his high quality primeval essence caused his battle strength to surge, allowing him to obtain more battle rewards. Not only this, many middle-sized tribes gave him an offer to join — small tribes could not afford to have an external elder while large tribes had no use for him.

"This is the eighty-ninth round, if we get through this, the reward will be shocking! People like us will not obtain it, but the reward for the mission would allow me to obtain two rank three Gu."

Big Beard thought about this and his heart was burning with desire, as he battled, he looked at the higher-ups on the peak of the dune.

It was them who sent out this mission, gathering a thousand Gu Masters to get through this difficult round.

The sandworm myriad beast king rushed into the defensive line, engaging in fierce combat. Golden light, rain of arrows, flames, all sorts of attacks were unleashed on the myriad beast king, but the beast king’s body shone with a yellow luster, as its defense rose and blocked these attacks easily.

It growled continuously, as it whipped up a storm while barging into the people’s territory.

Chang Biao stood on the mound, frowning.

"The situation is a little out of hand." He spoke: "This myriad beast king has a rank five golden armor Gu, if we allow it to continue rampaging, our defenses would crumble."

By now, this was the ninth myriad beast king.

According to the Gu worms on the myriad beast kings, their battle strengths differed. This myriad beast king was comparatively problematic because of the good quality defensive Gu in it, but it did not have a strong area of effect attack.

In such a situation, usually Gu Master experts would choose to strike it themselves as that is the only way to hurt it.

After all, soldiers fight soldiers and generals fight generals.

Chang Biao had this intention as well.

Ma Ying Jie who was standing beside him stood up and spoke: "Then I shall do it."

No one objected.

During the appearance of the myriad beast king, everyone took turns to strike, this was what they agreed on, and according to the order, it was Ma Ying Jie’s turn.

He was the worthily famous Ma Ying Jie indeed, when he personally struck, he led the pegasus group and easily blocked the sandworm myriad beast king, stabilizing the situation.

"Young Ma Zun is really impressive." On the sand dune, everyone praised.

"Brother Chang, what do you think of Ma Ying Jie?" Pan Ping secretly asked by transmitting his voice.

Ma Ying Jie was once Ma tribe’s young tribe leader, his teacher was Ma Zun and after Ma tribe failed, Hei Lou Lan forced them to submit causing the current Ma tribe to be weak, only being a mid-sized tribe.

Chang Biao knew what Pan Ping was saying, he wanted to recruit Ma Ying Jie into becoming a member of the Wolf Killing Alliance.

The Wolf Killing Alliance was a secret organisation to deal with Fang Yuan.

After Pan Ping’s inheritance was snatched by Fang Yuan on Xing Jiu peak, he felt extreme hatred on the inside and wanted to take revenge.

Chang Biao had the grudge of Chang Shan Yin taking his wife, it was absolutely irreconcilable.

Fang Yuan had incredible power, he could contest with Hei Lou Lan. Even though Pan Ping and Chang Biao had great gains in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and obtained much rewards, both being rank four peak stage now, they had a low chance of success in dealing with Fang Yuan, thus they needed more help.

Seeing Chang Biao keeping silent, Pan Ping continued: "Ma tribe lost terribly because of Chang Shan Yin! Ma Ying Jie’s teacher Ma Zun was killed by him as well, he and Chang Shan Yin have a huge grudge too."

But Chang Biao shook his head, transmitting: "No, Ma Ying Jie is a very determined person, but he is also a great leader. In my opinion, he has placed all his efforts on his tribe now, trying to revitalize the dying Ma tribe, he would not oppose the Wolf King if his intention is this. In fact, he might try to mend their relationship. Wolf King has a huge force, our biggest advantage is that we are a secret organisation, we cannot recruit people recklessly, if not, we will expose ourselves."

Pan Ping was not willing to give up, he continued urging: "Brother Chang, how can we as high achievers worry so much?! Chang Shan Yin is a scoundrel, he has his myriad wolves to defend him, in the future when we fight, our strength might be drained by the wolf group. Don’t forget about this person’s high attainment in strength path! Ma Ying Jie controls a horse group, he is called Little Ma Zun now, he has the talent to become an enslavement master, we need such experts to deal with the wolf group."

Chang Biao gave Pan Ping a look, feeling unhappy.

Pan Ping was a demonic Gu Master, he was called Sole Blade General, he acted without restraints and was daring and cruel. This was foolishness and rashness in Chang Biao’s opinion, he could not achieve anything in life.

Actually, Pan Ping was unhappy too, he felt that Chang Biao was too restricted, he worried too much and was not a true hero.

This was the difference in their personality.

Chang Biao was good at enduring, back then when plotting against Chang Shan Yin, he used another person to achieve his aims. He also loved his reputation, after so many years, he did not dare to acknowledge his son Chang Ji You.

As for Pan Ping, from the Imperial Court contest when he challenged the armies and rushed forward in battle, one could see his personality.

But despite their differences, be it Pan Ping or Chang Biao, they could tolerate each other because they understood clearly that Wolf King was not someone they could deal with alone.

"Pan Ping is from the demonic path, how can he understand the thoughts of us righteous path characters! He wants to take in Ma Ying Jie? Hmph, wishful thinking! The moment we tell him about the Wolf Killing Alliance, we might get betrayed by him the next second, in order to appeal to the Wolf King. Sigh, how can I convince him?" Chang Biao sighed in his heart.

But he was very witty, he immediately had a plan.

He transmitted: "Brother Pan, Chang Shan Yin killed Ma Zun, but don’t forget, who was the one who killed Ma Ying Jie’s father?"

"Urgh..." Pan Ping was stunned, he went into a daze.

Ma Shang Feng was killed by Pan Ping during the chaotic battle in the end, because of that, he made a great merit and was given many rewards.

The battle merit back then became his biggest obstacle in taking revenge now, this was something Pan Ping did not expect.

But Pan Ping was an obstinate man, he said: "It is true that I killed his father, but that was due to the fight between two armies, we were fighting for our respective masters. Since Brother Chang thinks that Ma Ying Jie cares most about his tribe, I will believe this judgement. In that case, if we use this as the premise and assume that Wolf King is the biggest obstacle to Ma Ying Jie when he wants to restore his tribe, wouldn’t that be the best?"

Once he said that, Chang Biao was stunned this time.

He gave Pan Ping a look, thinking: "Wise people might have a moment of folly, while foolish people might have a moment of brilliance, to think that this Pan Ping would have a smart rebuttal for once."

Immediately, his mind worked quickly as he assessed: "Indeed, there is a possibility of that. Ma Ying Jie’s weakness is Ma tribe! But how can we plan this so that Ma Ying Jie would willingly join the Wolf Killing Alliance?"

Chang Biao thought of this and had an idea, remembering a small detail that he had heard of earlier.

His gaze turned to the left defensive line.

There was a young rank two Gu Master there.

"He is Ma Hong Yun, he was originally Ma Ying Jie’s servant earlier, but now he is one of Ma Ying Jie’s most trusted aides. Not long ago, Wolf King hunted the earth chief beast group and Ma Hong Yun managed to escape with his life, he obtained not a small amount of battle gains and contributed it to Ma tribe, causing Ma Ying Jie to reward him with three green copper relic Gu, for his loyalty. He even returned all the Gu worms that were contributed, allowing Ma

Hong Yun to keep them.

"This lad’s luck is not bad! He managed to leave before Chang tribe and Ge tribe Gu Masters entered the battlefield, the green copper relic Gu is of considerable value too, after Ma tribe became weak, their morale was low and Ma Ying Jie used the green copper relic Gu that he could not use to demonstrate how his men could be rewarded by the act of a good role model."

"Ma Hong Yun obtained the green copper relic Gu that he needed most, getting to rank two realm in one night, that speed is something not even I could compete with."

Chang Biao thought of this and sighed at the mysteries of fate.

Compared to Ma Hong Yun, Chang Biao had a much higher starting point, he had huge amounts of resources provided to him, but even so, Chang Biao took about ten times as long to advance to rank two.

After all, green copper relic Gu were natural Gu, they were rare and produced at random places, it was thanks to Eighty-Eight True Yang Building that Ma Ying Jie obtained them as a reward.

"This lad Ma Hong Yun had prospered due to Chang Shan Yin, earlier, Chang Shan Yin had ordered Chang tribe and Ge tribe to capture some of the Gu Masters who tried to take advantage of the situation, what will happen if I release this information?"

Chang Biao pondered.

"No... just Ma Hong Yun, who is a rank two Gu Master, would be an ant in Chang Shan Yin’s eyes. He is still too weak, there is no point in reporting him. Furthermore, Ma Ying Jie will not deal with Chang Shan Yin just because of this tiny Ma Hong Yun. We should continuing planning and waiting for this..."

Forty-five minutes later, the sand dune erupted into cheers.

"Victory, victory!"

"It was not easy, we finally got through."

"I wonder what the reward for this round is?"

Many curious gazes landed on Chang Biao, Pan Ping, Ma Ying Jie and others.

After passing this round, Chang Biao and the others’ apertures suddenly had many new Gu worms.

Among them was an east window Gu, storing information.

"Six arm heavenly zombie king?" Chang Biao, Pan Ping, and Ma Ying Jie checked this information and looked at each other.

They had differing expressions.

To think that the reward would be a strength path killer move, according to the description, this killer move’s power was phenomenal!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bam!

A silhouette flew out like lightning, six arms were like heavy cannons crushing a huge helmet crab to death.

At once, fresh blood spewed in this secret room as limbs flew everywhere.

"Hahaha." Pan Ping combed his messy hair, laughing loudly as he ignored the blood and carcasses on the ground.

"Awesome, amazing! This six arm heavenly zombie king killer move is really amazing! Using the zombie body to avoid requiring my insufficient background in strength path, thus even with my mild cultivation in strength path, I can still use it."

Pan Ping’s eyes shone brilliantly as he talked to himself, pondering about the killer move.

He was born from the demonic path, he lacked resources and did not have enough creativity, thus he had never owned a killer move. But one did not need to know how to cook in order to eat, after roaming in northern plains for so many years, Pan Ping’s vision had expanded and he knew that this killer move ’six arm heavenly zombie king’ really had what was in the description — unparalleled strength!

"As long as I have this, my chances of dealing with Wolf King will be higher by ten percent! Wolf King has a strength path killer move, but so do I! Wolf King, don’t be arrogant, one day, I will return all the humiliation that you inflicted onto me by tenfold!" Pan Ping gritted his teeth, his eyes shining with hatred.

At the same time, Chang Biao was also testing this killer move.

"As expected of a reward from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, this killer move is too strong!"

The power of the killer move was very shocking to Chang Biao as well.

"If I have to mention a flaw, it would be that the appearance is too ugly and evil..." Chang Biao looked at the mirror with a dark gaze.

The Chang Biao in the mirror had green-grey skin, fangs were growing out of his mouth and his eyes were yellow. He has green-red messy hair, looking very horrifying. Especially the six monstrous arms on his back, they were of different shapes and sizes, each were ruthless looking and made people feel a chill when they saw them.

Pan Ping originated from the demonic path, he often lacked resources and lived in terrible conditions, with survival as his main goal, he did not care about appearance or image.

But Chang Biao was different.

He was born in Chang tribe, he was like a noble, a reputable figure in the righteous path, he loved his appearance and placed emphasis on his reputation, if he were to show this appearance to people, he would feel very uncomfortable in his heart.

"However, although this form is ugly, I can only resort to this when dealing with Chang Shan Yin!" Thinking of Fang Yuan, Chang Biao made up his mind.

"To speak the truth, this move is quite similar to his strength path killer move. His killer move creates four arms on his back, together with his actual arms, he would have six in total. Meanwhile, my killer move creates six arms, I would have eight in total. This is a difference in appearance, but also shows that my killer move is stronger than his by a level."

Chang Biao was assessing in his heart, his impression of Fang Yuan’s killer move was still the one in the Imperial Court contest.

Suddenly, Chang Biao had an inspiration, he had a guess: "This is quite the coincidence, the two killer moves are so alike... maybe, my version is the original, and what Chang Shan Yin got by chance was only a remnant version that was passed on outside."

The more he thought about it, the more he confirmed his guess.

"Chang Shan Yin is already an enslavement master, with his talent in enslavement path, how can he also have such talent in strength path? Hehehe, in the future when I get rid of him, I wonder what expression he will make when he sees my killer move? I am looking forward to it."

Thinking so, Chang Biao’s lips curled into a smile.

Right at this moment, a servant came and told him Pan Ping had arrived.

Chang Biao’s mind clicked and he knew what Pan Ping’s intention was, he instructed: "Bring him to my study room, attend to him with good tea, I will be there shortly."

Because he was testing the killer move, Chang Biao’s clothes were tattered.

After changing his clothes, he came to the study and saw that Pan Ping was gulping the tea that was served to him.

"What a waste of my good tea." Chang Biao sneered in his heart, before cupping his fists and calling out: "Brother Pan, you look especially happy today, there has been progress in the testing of the killer move?"

"Hahaha, Brother Chang is right, that is exactly so. This killer move is simply outstanding." Pan Ping laughed loudly before changing the topic: "However, there are some problems with this killer move, I tested it for three times, and every time after I end the transformation, I would feel a great pain in my stomach area. In fact, the pain gets worse the more I use it. Is this the backlash of the killer move?"

"Oh?" Chang Biao heard this and his gaze concentrated: "My symptoms are different from you, you have a stomach ache while I feel dizziness, even temporary deafness and blindness. I was going to find you to discuss this problem."

The two talked about the issue, but they did not gain any insights.

They were neither expert strength path cultivators nor refinement masters, their so-called discussion was only based on their own experiments, they could not get to the root of the issue.

Pan Ping suggested: "There are three other people who cleared the round along with us. Why don’t we invite them over as well to discuss this matter. Relationships are built by interaction, once our relationship improves, we can invite them to join the Wolf Killing Alliance!"

Pan Ping was adamant on recruiting more members into their alliance, Chang Biao laughed as he said vaguely: "I have plans for this already, it will take effect in the next few days."

...

Imperial Court blessed land. A thousand li away from the sacred palace.

In the lush and green forest, a group of Gu Masters were carefully moving ahead.

Crack.

With a light, crisp sound, Ma Hong Yun accidentally stepped on a twig.

Everyone’s movements stopped, they sent their angry and frightened gazes towards him.

"You idiot! How many times have we told you to notice what you step on, look down!" The group leader suppressed his volume as he chided with his eyes wide open.

"Sorry, sorry, I did not mean to do that!" Ma Hong Yun quickly apologised.

"Shut up, shut up!"

"Shush, quiet, you idiot!"

The Gu Masters nearby were anxious, the people near Ma Hong Yun even covered his mouth quickly in fear.

The leader’s expression was solemn, he was anxious and some killing intent leaked: "All of you shut up. If you alert the iron beak bird group, we will be finished. We are only here to steal the eggs this time, we are retreating once we do that, I will personally kill whoever ruins this!"

The leader was the only rank three Gu Master here, he had the greatest strength and naturally, authority.

Hearing his words, everyone nodded quickly, including Ma Hong Yun.

The leader looked around, his gaze paused at Ma Hong Yun for a second as he gave him a fierce stare, deciding in his heart: "Once we go back, I am kicking this idiot from the group. So what if he has rank two strength? I must be blind, looking at how complementary his Gu worms were, I agreed to let him into the group. If a Gu Master is stupid to this degree, so what if he has good Gu worms?"

Swoosh!

Right at this moment, there was a sound that resembled waves in the forest.

Largest numbers of iron beak birds flapped their wings as they soared into the sky from the tree branches.

The Gu Masters who saw this felt that they had sunk into an icy abyss.

"What’s going on?"

"Oh no, the birds were alerted! Quickly run!"

"Ma Hong Yun, it is all your fault, if I survive this, I will definitely settle the score with you!!"

Everyone were frightened and anxious, some were furious.

"No, the birds are flying south, it was not us who alerted them, it seems that there were others who accepted Chang tribe’s mission!" The leader saw the situation and was overjoyed, screaming uncontrollably.

Everyone heard this and looked over, seeing this was the case, their moods changed.

"Save, save us!" A group of Gu Masters were flying quickly, towards them.

Looking at the densely packed bird group that were attracted over, the Gu Master’s eyes were almost popping out.

"Don’t, don’t come over!" The leader shouted: "I will kill you first if you come closer!"

"Leader, looking at their clothes, they are Chang tribesmen." Ma Hong Yun said hesitantly.

The leader’s eyes were wide open as he wanted to bash this guy up, shouting: "You idiot, do you still want your life? Go save them if you want to die!"

Ma Hong Yun thought of the time when they faced the earth chief beast group.

He only wanted to remind Jiang Dong, but he was nearly killed as a result.

"If not for my good luck..." Ma Hong Yun thought of this and shuddered, asking the leader: "What should we do?"

The leader gritted his teeth, seeing that the Chang tribe Gu Masters were not listening, rushing over intentionally, he stomped his foot: "What can we do? Split up and run!"

Everyone split up at once, as Ma Hong Yun was in a daze, quickly choosing a direction and running for his life when he realized what was going on.

"Lord, that is Ma Hong Yun, Ma Ying Jie’s confidant." The Chang tribe Gu Masters who were running away might look pathetic, but they were all cool headed and had no fear.

Chang tribe group’s leader was Chang Biao’s confidant, he looked at Ma Hong Yun’s figure as he was shocked: "Is this guy a fool? He is not using his movement Gu?"

Chang tribe was scheming, they naturally got all the details of Ma Hong Yun, they knew that he had a complete set of high quality rank two Gu worms.

"I, I am going to be caught, damn it, why are they so fast? They used a movement Gu, ah! Right, right, I have a movement Gu too!" As he ran, Ma Hong Yun patted his forehead as he quickly used his movement Gu, his speed rising drastically.

"He finally remembered, eh? Why is he still running towards the left?" The leader was shocked.

He did not know that Ma Hong Yun had a terrible sense of direction, back when Fei tribe was in turmoil, his father sacrificed himself to give him time to run, but he ran in a circle and turned back to the same spot.

Because of Ma Hong Yun’s actions, the situation became more serious.

The leader quickly instructed: "You, you, you, quickly catch up with Ma Hong Yun and protect him. In addition, ask Lady Chang Li to go ahead and prepare!"

"Yes, lord."

Even though the Chang tribe Gu Masters were elites, Ma Hong Yun’s random movement often got himself into dangerous situations, the Gu Masters had to attract the bird group while protecting him, they also had to avoid getting detected by him, it was a difficult position. Their plan which was guaranteed to succeed ended up with them sacrificing several elites!

"Sa... save me..." Chang Li was lying on the ground, she was weak and feeble, looking very vulnerable. Her clothes were torn, revealing her alluring shoulder. Her hair was messy and she looked very pitiful, like a fearful rabbit.

Ma Hong Yun ran over quickly, he was looking ahead as he desperately ran, he did not discover Chang Li at all!

Chang Li was stunned, at the last moment, she reacted and stretched out her leg when Ma Hong Yun was about to pass her.

Plop!

Ma Hong Yun fell face flat, he turned around and was shocked.

"What a beautiful lady..."

He was a dummy normally, but he was also at the age of being attracted to girls.

"Young master, please save me." Chang Li’s beautiful voice made Ma Hong Yun’s heart flutter.

"Oh, oh." Ma Hong Yun quickly replied, after some fumbling, he carried Chang Li and ran.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

A day later.

During an evening banquet.

"A tribesman of your esteemed tribe saved my daughter, I, Chang Biao, am extremely grateful. This first cup is a toast to Ma tribe leader!" Chang Biao raised a wine cup.

Ma Ying Jie quickly lifted his cup and modestly replied: "That was only a chance encounter. I had not expected her to be Lord Chang Biao’s beloved daughter, this is Hong Yun’s honor."

"Hahaha." Chang Biao laughed heartily and drank the wine.

Ma Ying Jie also followed suit and downed the wine.

Ma Hong Yun who was sitting beside him had become the main character of the whole banquet at this moment and dozens of gazes gathered on him.

Feeling these probing, curious and doubtful gazes, Ma Hong Yun felt a little uncomfortable.

Chang Biao lightly placed down his wine cup and hinted Pan Ping who was beside him, with his eyes.

As they had already discussed properly, Pan Ping understood the signal, and looked at Ma Hong Yun: "Virtuous junior, if I speak so, aren’t you like a hero saving the beauty?"

"I.. I..." Ma Hong Yun hesitated, speechless.

In truth, he also did not know how he had saved Chang Li. He had only been concerned about escaping from the endless iron beak birds chasing after him; the situation was so urgent, even if he had saved Chang Li, he did not think much.

Pan Ping stared with his eyes wide open at Ma Hong Yun who looked like he would not start speaking even till the cows came home.

Fortunately, Chang Biao had already calculated Ma Hong Yun’s nature in his plan and at this moment, his gaze moved towards a certain person in the banquet.

This person immediately stood up and came to the center, cupping his fist towards Chang Biao: "Elder Chang Biao and all lords, I was one of the people involved in this matter and I was able to fortunately see the whole situation. Lord Ma Hong Yun is generous and modest, not claiming the credit and becoming arrogant, but I cannot endure a heroic deed being buried like this, so I summoned my courage by drinking to narrate the event to all lords."

Hearing these words, everyone knew this person was someone who was good at speaking.

Chang Biao nodded: "You can speak."

This person spoke with confidence, adding plentiful emotions and speaking in a way that echoed and added to their effects; he narrated in such a vivid way that it portrayed Ma Hong Yun as an aloof hero with an unwavering mind, with brains and brawn, not afraid of dangers.

As they listened to the narration, the crowd cheered and praised from time to time.

Their gazes towards Ma Hong Yun also started to change, becoming respectful, warm or appreciative.

Ma Hong Yun’s eyes were wide open as he listened to this seemingly heavenly tale. He was feeling incredulous: "Is this person talking about me? When did I become so amazing? Did he mistake me for somebody else?"

There was one other person who did not dare to believe this - Ma Ying Jie.

Ma Ying Jie was Ma tribe leader, an outstanding hero of this generation. He was familiar with Ma Hong Yun’s nature and character, how could he be deceived by these flowery words?

He had a faint smile on his face, and also nodded at the appropriate timings, looking at Ma Hong Yun approvingly; his mind, however, was in a state of deep thought: ’If say, Ma Hong Yun saved Chang Li by luck, there is nothing strange about it. But why would elder Chang Biao send a phony to explain things for Ma Hong Yun? What is he planning? In this banquet, although there are tens of distinguished guests, but the true main characters are only two in number, Chang Biao and Pan Ping.’

Ma Ying Jie was inwardly on guard.

Ma tribe had lost in the Imperial Court contest, falling down from their peak. Ma Ying Jie’s master and father died in the battlefield, all these difficulties and setbacks caused Ma Ying Jie to quickly mature into an outstanding person.

He was secretly guessing Chang Biao’s plan, but on the surface, he did not even bat an eyelid.

The current Ma tribe was declining, while Chang tribe was like the sun in the noon sky because of Fang Yuan! Pan Ping left demonic path and turned to Hei tribe, and was now an external elder of Hei tribe.

No matter which, they were both not people the current Ma tribe, the current Ma Ying Jie, could offend.

"Good, good, good." After that person finished narrating Ma Hong Yun’s heroic deeds, Chang Biao repeatedly praised him.

"Heroes indeed arise from young people." Chang Biao looked at Ma Hong Yun, not stinting on his praise.

He paused, then continued: "Since ancient times, heroes love beauties and beauties are matched with heroes. I won’t conceal it from everyone, ever since my daughter was saved, she has been silent, taciturn and her mind seems to be drifting off. I inquired her of the reason and only then learned her heart was somewhere else, worrying about the young hero who had saved her during the time of danger. I held this banquet to express my gratitude and also because of this."

The hall was in an uproar.

Countless gazes, mixed with admiration, envy, shock or unconvinced feelings, turned towards Ma Hong Yun.

"What bullshit luck does this kid have? He actually received Chang tribe’s young miss’ favor?"

"Chang Li is beautiful and pleasant, who could have thought she would prefer such a foolish kid. Sigh, if I had known this earlier, I would have also gone to the forest of iron beak birds."

"Chang Li might not be Chang Biao’s own daughter, but he had taken her in and cared for her since she was young, she has always received Chang Biao’s love and is a beloved daughter of elder Chang Biao. If this kid, Ma Hong Yun, marries Chang Li, his father-in-law would be Chang Biao!"

Instantly, everyone’s mood surged.

Ma Ying Jie quickly reacted from his shocked state and rapidly thought with some suspicions: ’Is this the reason for Chang Biao entertaining us with such great fanfare? Although there is the tale of the Night Elopement of Su Xian, but isn’t this going too well?"

There were even better things to come.

In front of everyone, Chang Biao took out two red steel relic Gu: "The new constantly replaces the old, Virtuous junior is a young hero of our northern plains, we cannot have him be unrewarded. These two red steel relic Gu are a little expression of my thanks to the benefactor, please accept them."

The commotion in the hall increased even more.

"Huh?" Ma Hong Yun quickly looked at Ma Ying Jie.

Ma Ying Jie nodded and pointed out with a smile: "We cannot dare to reject senior’s gifts, Hong Yun, why are you not kowtowing and expressing your thanks?"

Ma Hong Yun immediately walked forward and kowtowed: "Many thanks for Lord Chang Biao’s gift."

Chang Biao laughed heartily and also walked forward, personally putting the two red steel relic Gu in Ma Hong Yun’s hand.

Under everyone’s gazes, he amiably patted Ma Hong Yun’s hand and asked: "I wonder how virtuous junior feels about my daughter?"

"Eh?" Ma Hong Yun raised his head with a flushed face, not knowing how to reply for a moment. After a while, he finally squeezed out a few words, "MIss Chang Li is beautiful, very beautiful."

"Hahaha." Chang Biao threw his head back and laughed, "This is good, this is good. Virtuous junior, please return to your seat."

They returned to their seats, and continued to enjoy the banquet.

The banquet continued from evening to late at night; only then the hosts and the guests had enjoyed to their fill and started taking their leave.

As the crowd dispersed, the matter of Chang tribe marrying off its daughter to the lucky kid Ma Hong Yun, also spread everywhere.

On the second day, Chang Biao again invited Ma Ying Jie and Ma Hong Yun to a banquet. The scale of the banquet would be smaller this time and only a few people were invited.

Ma Ying Jie gazed at the invitation card in his hand with a grave look.

After returning back, he had not slept the whole night and was pondering over this matter.

The small invitation card felt exceptionally heavy to him.

He placed the invitation card on the table and called his servant: "Go, call Ma Hong Yun to see me."

The servant immediately accepted the order and when he was arriving at Ma Hong Yun’s residence, Zhao Lian Yun was in the process of instructing Ma Hong Yun: "You fool, what kind of bullshit luck do you have? But this matter is so good that it instead makes it feel hollow. I think tribe leader Ma Ying Jie will definitely call you to ask about this. At that time, explain everything clearly in full detail, don’t hide even the smallest details!"

"Okay." Ma Hong Yun immediately agreed.

"Also." Zhao Lian Yun’s large eyes turned, "Didn’t Chang Biao reward you with two red steel relic Gu? When you meet the tribe leader, offer these two Gu to him."

"What?" Ma Hong Yun’s eyes opened wide as he shouted, "This is something I risked my life for and obtained with great difficulty! And they were gifted to me by Lord Chang Biao, I will immediately advance to rank two upper stage after I use them. These are such good things."

"You fool!" Zhao Lian Yun kicked Ma Hong Yun’s leg in anger.

Ma Hong Yun immediately held his leg in pain: "Why did you kick me?"

Zhao Lian Yun rolled her eyes and unhappily rebuked: "What do you understand?

Even if you become rank two upper stage, what use would it be with your skill? What is the basis for us being able to stand up? It is not your rank two cultivation, but the friendship with tribe leader Ma Ying Jie. How did you advance to rank two? It is because tribe leader Ma Ying Jie gifted you with three green copper relic Gu. Offering the red steel relic Gu is an expression of loyalty, do you think the tribe leader will embezzle your red steel relic Gu? Hmph, he can’t use it for himself, so he will definitely accept them then return them to you again."

"Eh, since he will accept them, why would he return them to me again?" Ma Hong Yun asked with doubt.

"Idiot!" Zhao Lian Yun again rolled her eyes, "Ma tribe has declined, there are very few tribesmen while there are many things to do. The whole tribe only has one rank three elder, Ma You Liang, and he is handicapped now. Ma Ying Jie has recently taken the tribe leader position and doesn’t have any usable subordinates. He wants to revitalize the tribe and will be looking for talents to nurture into trusted aides. Although you were once surnamed Fei, now you are surnamed Ma, and you were once Ma Ying Jie’s head servant. Ma Ying Jie knows everything about you and will be at ease in using you compared to other people. You will be showing your loyalty by offering the Gu worms, he will definitely be happy and accept your Gu worms; this is because he recognizes your loyalty."

"But Ma Ying Jie is not a petty and miserly master, accepting your Gu worms will only be as a gesture and he will definitely return them to you. Why? Because he wants to establish an example, from which the tribesmen can study and be encouraged to imitate your loyalty. I am certain, he will not only return your red steel relic Gu, he will even add in more rewards. Although you are insufficient in ability, you have loyalty. This is called buying horse bones with a thousand gold 1 . "

Ma Hong Yun was confused: "What is buying horse bones with a thousand gold ?"

"Sigh, you won’t understand it even if I explain. Just do what I say and it will definitely be to your benefit."

"Ah." Ma Hong Yun agreed while scratching his head.

The two had just reached an agreement when Ma Ying Jie’s servant came running over to summon Ma Hong Yun.

Ma Hong Yun followed Zhao Lian Yun’s words and offered the two red steel relic Gu. But different from Zhao Lian Yun’s estimation, Ma Ying Jie accepted them but did not return them back to Ma Hong Yun.

After Ma Hong Yun returned, he started complaining endlessly to Zhao Lian Yun.

"Could it be my estimation was wrong?" Zhao Lian Yun also felt some doubts.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the evening, Ma Ying Jie took Ma Hong Yun to Chang tribe’s banquet.

When the banquet ended, Chang Biao urged Ma Ying Jie to stay and have a talk in the study while letting Chang Li entertain Ma Hong Yun.

"I wonder what insights might Ma tribe leader have in six arm heavenly zombie king?" After some discussion, Chang Biao changed the subject to the killer move.

Ma Ying Jie, however, had not tested the killer move, speaking frankly: "I am an enslavement path master and have no affiliation to strength path. I was quite disappointed for the reward in passing the eighty-ninth round to be this killer move. I plan to sell this killer move, thus haven’t tested it. What happened?"

Chang Biao was stupefied, glancing at Pan Ping next to him.

The two had not expected this situation, but it was actually reasonable.

Ma Ying Jie was different from them, he had a concrete and comprehensive enslavement path inheritance. His master Ma Zun relied on this inheritance to make a name and be a ruler of a region.

This inheritance contained a killer move as well. And besides it, Ma Ying Jie still had the powerful killer move from Snowy Mountain’s Gu Immortal — Dragon Horse Spirit.

He had yet to master these killer moves, why would he go cultivate a killer move of another path?

He had been cultivating enslavement path since his youth, and as long as he cultivated it properly, he could become a ruler of a region and revitalize his tribe. Cultivating side paths would instead divide his energy.

Since ancient times, Gu Masters prioritized one path, and very few cultivated two paths. Dividing energy and continually moving back and forth will only result in achieving nothing on both ends.

Fang Yuan could dually cultivate paths because of the accumulation of his previous life’s experiences.

Ma Ying Jie also had to manage the tribe’s affairs and had no extra energy to cultivate some strength path killer move.

"I won’t conceal it from you, I and brother Pan Ping have been testing this killer move. Its might is astonishing and overwhelming. We might as well speak the truth to Ma tribe leader." As he said this, Chang Biao paused, considering his words while somewhat hesitating.

He looked at Ma Ying Jie with a sincere gaze and shockingly said: "I would like to request Ma tribe leader to keep this killer move a secret and not spread it to others. Spreading it outside means the reward for clearing the round will be received by others."

Chang Biao intentionally spoke evasively, Ma Ying Jie was smart as he suddenly understood everything.

"So it was like this! Chang Biao was once Chang tribe’s leader, now he is only a great elder and the tribe leader is his adopted son Chang Ji You, and the true decision maker is Wolf King Chang Shan Yin. Chang Biao obtained this killer move and wants to keep it a secret. This is a normal practice of Gu Masters. But there is a problem, if Chang Shan Yin learns of this and asks him for it, he will definitely have to hand it over."

Ma Ying Jie observed Pan and Chang’s expressions and intonations, and knew six arm heavenly zombie king was absolutely an extraordinary killer move.

Humans were selfish, who would be willing to hand such a valuable treasure for no purpose? Ma Ying Jie understood this point.

Seeing Ma Ying Jie’s gaze flicker, Chang Biao continued: "I have already talked with the others, Ma tribe leader can rest at ease. We still need Ma tribe leader’s strength for the coming round. Hehehe."

Ma Ying Jie’s expression turned solemn: "Lord Chang Biao exaggerates, my ability is limited, it is my fortune to be able to cooperate with all the experts, making it a win-win situation. I am okay with this matter being done like Lord Chang Biao says."

Hearing Ma Ying Jie’s answer, Chang Biao and Pan Ping both smiled.

"Sigh, what lord, Ma tribe leader can just call me by my name." Pan Ping saw the chance, and immediately tried to pull their relation closer.

Pan and Chang wanted to pull Ma Ying Jie to their faction while Ma Ying Jie also wanted to rely on Chang tribe and Hei tribe’s help to grow his tribe. The three went out of their way to curry favor with each other, addressing each other as brothers.

The three discussed in the study till late at night, getting along with each other.

It was near midnight, the three separated after setting Ma Hong Yun and Chang Li’s engagement.

"Brother Chang’s plan is excellent. With this connection by marriage, Ma Ying Jie will be tied with brother Chang, and when we deal with the Wolf King later on, he would have to help out." After closing the door, Pan Ping laughed heartily.

Chang Biao, however, slightly shook his head: "Ma Ying Jie is not someone easy to fool, he knows when to bow and submit, and at the the time of danger, he will definitely make a quick decision. It is still not the time to recruit him now, but as long as we continue to be on good terms with him and let people know of our close relation, and put in some resources to support that Ma Hong Yun, we will be able to increase our control over Ma tribe. And when we declare war against Chang Shan Yin in the future, as long as Chang Shan Yin recognizes Ma tribe as an enemy, Ma Ying Jie will have no choice but to get on our boat to protect his tribe!"

At night in Imperial Court blessed land, the bright and warm silver light shone on the ground.

In a carriage, Ma Ying Jie and Ma Hong Yun were sitting opposite each other.

"Hong Yun, you truly are a lucky guy, actually getting the interest of miss Chang Li. Hehehe, I have already come to a decision with lord Chang Biao; the first day of the next month will be a day of celebration for you and Chang Li." Ma Ying Jie said with a smile on his face.

"Ah?" Ma Hong Yun had not expected this news at all, and was not able to react for a while.

"I have seen your loyalty, good, this is your reward." Ma Ying Jie patted Ma Hong Yun’s shoulder while sighing with emotion as he took out three red steel relic Gu from his aperture.

"This..." Ma Hong Yun was astonished, and dazedly received the three red steel relic Gu.

"You will be getting married with lady Chang Li, if you don’t have power and status, wouldn’t it weaken my Ma tribe’s name? You can advance to rank two peak stage with these three red steel relic Gu; it should not be a problem for you to advance to rank three with your aptitude. I will now appoint you as a deputy elder and your duty will be to handle the miscellaneous affairs of the tribe." Ma Ying Jie proclaimed.

"Ah?" Ma Hong Yun’s eyes opened wide, looking at Ma tribe leader with a stupefied expression.

To him, this surprise was really too heavy and too sudden.

Ma Ying Jie intentionally looked solemn: "You are still not kneeling and thanking me?"

Ma Hong Yun’s mind was in a mess, but his body subconsciously kneeled down on the ground: "Thank you lord for promoting me!"

"Yes, work well." Ma Ying Jie encouraged with a few sentences, his thoughts, however were on a different matter, "Six arm heavenly zombie king, this killer move seems to be really powerful. Since it is regarded with such importance by Pan and Chang, and also does not need too much attainment in strength path cultivation, how about I give it a try as well?"

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, central control room.

"Ink transformation!" Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed with a sharp light as he softly shouted and pressed down his hands.

Immediately, all kinds of Gu worms sprinkled down like rain from air, rapidly mixing with each other as they fell down.

When they landed on the sand table, they had already turned into drops of inky liquid.

The inky liquid quickly accumulated and covered the surface of the whole sand table once again before soon finding a flaw; the liquid then turned into a whirlpool and converged together.

Mo Yao’s will in Fang Yuan’s mind satisfiedly commented at this sight: "Good, you have now become skilled at the refinement technique I taught you - shower. With this method, you can quicken Gu refinement process by at least thirty percent and raise the quality by twenty percent. There is nothing more I can teach you about this method now. You only need to remember the essence of shower lies in speed. But you cannot just go fast, you need to pour all your concentration during the whole process. Thus, this method cannot be used too often. If you use it over the limit, you will feel dazed and dizzy in the minor case, causing the Gu refinement to fail, and in the serious case, your soul can be injured, you can suffer memory loss and you might become demented."

Gu refinement had dangers and was not any safer than an intense battle.

Fang Yuan already knew this; he listened to Mo Yao’s guidance while methodically throwing the owner token into the ink whirlpool.

In a flash, the ink liquid was depleted completely and the owner token slowly flew up before landing on Fang Yuan’s palm.

Fang Yuan observed the owner token which now already possessed five edges.

This meant ink transformation had already been carried out five times.

Strange, Fang Yuan was scarce on immortal essence stones and should have only been able to use ink transformation once more, how could he use it for three extra times beyond that?

After Fang Yuan got the one-edge owner token, his authority was raised and he could learn the contents of rewards for every round of a single floor of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building through the one-edge owner token.

Fang Yuan did not hesitate and choose one floor on the spot.

This floor was the seventh floor.

One-edge owner token could allow the Gu Master to control one floor of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

The seventh floor had already been broken through to the eighty-ninth round by the collective efforts of Gu Masters. So why did Fang Yuan choose this floor instead of others?

It was because the reward for this eighty-ninth round was five immortal essence stones!

Fang Yuan secretly used the owner token to take control of this floor. Chang Biao, Pan Ping, Ma Ying Jie and others passed the round, and Fang Yuan was able to secretly take the five immortal essence stones, sending a downgraded version of six arm heavenly zombie king into everyone’s aperture as the reward.

The genuine six arm heavenly zombie king used borrow strength Gu as its core, the six great flying zombie Gu as the backbone and many other Gu worms as support. Through modification by Fang Yuan and Mo Yao’s will, the downgraded killer move used overlord Gu as its core, which greatly reduced its strength.

Although the other flying zombie Gu were not changed, the old earth chief zombie Gu was used instead of Mo Yao’s modified Gu.

More importantly, the support Gu worms were also modified and some Gu worms like intention Gu were added to secretly gather the information on the use of six arm heavenly zombie king by Chang Biao, Pan Ping and others.

With this, it not only gave others no reason to doubt the reward being tampered with, it also made them test the killer move in place of Fang Yuan to find any insufficient areas.

"Half a month has gone by since the reward of the killer move was distributed. It is time to catch the fish in a net. What do you think?" Fang Yuan used a consulting tone to ask Mo Yao’s will.

Mo Yao mumbled: "It has neither been too long nor too short, we can first take away two sets and see the results."

Fang Yuan grasped the five-edges owner token, and with a shift of his mind, he found two familiar figures in the ninetieth round of the seventh floor.

They were none other than Chang Biao and Pan Ping.

The two were currently running quickly.

Pan Ping shouted to Chang Biao while running: "It has already been seven days since we came here. Even if the time flow here is faster than Imperial Court blessed land, according to our speed, we should have already travelled an immeasurable distance but we have not been able to see anything other than walls."

The running Chang Biao nodded, his clothes fluttering in the wind: "In this place, we cannot fly to the sky nor can we escape under the ground, we can only move in these passageways along the walls. The passageways here spread in all directions, we have travelled so long but haven’t encountered a single monster.

Clearly, this round tests the Gu Master’s scouting and movement ability. This round should be an extremely large maze."

The two guessed correctly, this ninetieth round was precisely a maze.

And just as Chang Biao guessed, it tested the Gu Master’s scouting and movement ability.

But Fang Yuan had taken control of this seventh floor now and after he discovered these two, everything was going to be different.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Howl—!

Wolf howls suddenly echoed out, a large group of turtleback wolves appeared ahead.

"Wolves, how could there be a wolf group here?" Pan Ping’s movement slowed down, shouting in surprise.

Chang Biao’s expression sank. Because of the connection with Fang Yuan, the animal he hated the most now was the wolf.

But he had never even thought that Fang Yuan would be controlling this round, and said in a gloomy voice: "Our priority this time was to probe, now that there has been a new change, we should see what happens after killing these wolves."

"Okay!" Pan Ping nodded in agreement.

The two cooperated and started killing the wolves.

At first, the two were occupying the upper hand even to the extent that it could be called a slaughter; how could ordinary turtleback wolves be their match?

But soon, other species of wolf started appearing continuously in front of them - vermillion wolves, water wolves, wind wolves and so on. Even mutated wolf groups like frenzy wolves and white-eyes wolves started appearing.

The two were gradually becoming unable to endure this.

"How could there be so many wolf groups?"

"Could it be this round also tests the Gu Master’s ability to fight?"

Large numbers of thousand wolf kings entered the battle along with myriad wolf kings; Pan Ping and Chang Biao’s expressions gradually turned unsightly.

"This round is so difficult!" Pan Ping sighed woefully.

"In Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the difficulty keeps on increasing as one passes the rounds, with the ninetieth to hundredth rounds being the most difficult." Chang Biao responded.

After a while more, the two could not continue fighting much longer.

"We have already probed the situation, the ninetieth round not only has a maze, but also wolf groups!" Chang Biao summarized in a heavy voice.

"We have walls on both sides, the terrain is narrow, we already are restricting the large crowds attacking us, what else can we do? Pan Ping frowned.

"Let’s talk after retreating." Chang Biao sighed.

He and Pan Ping did not have Giant Sun bloodline, and had used guest tokens to enter Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Guest tokens were precious, thus they had to spend a lot of resources every time they entered.

"Alright!" Pan Ping already had the thought of retreating, he glanced at the wolf groups with hate, "These damned wolf beasts, there will be a day when I will step on your Wolf King and humiliate him! Hahaha...."

He cursed and vowed, the ’Wolf King’ he was speaking of naturally referred to Fang Yuan.

"Eh!" The next moment, Pan Ping’s laughter suddenly came to a stop, shock and fear replacing it.

"What’s going on? We can’t go out?" Chang Biao who was at the side also discovered this serious problem.

The two had used guest tokens to enter the tower and could leave with just a thought. They had already entered and exited many times, and were very familiar with this.

But now, this floor was under Fang Yuan’s control, the five-edge owner token was many times more powerful than a guest token. These two were like birds within a cage, trapped in a predicament.

"Damn it, what should we do? I only have thirty percent primeval essence remaining!" Pan Ping shouted in panic.

Chang Biao’s expression was grim as he shouted: "Calm down!"

His condition was a little better than Pan Ping with fifty percent primeval essence remaining in his aperture. But even if their primeval essence was full, it would be exhausted sooner or later in front of these endless wolf groups.

"This situation is very rare, how could we not get out of this tower? This round is strange, what it might be testing is the Gu Master’s courage! We cannot act cowardly!" Chang Biao thought for a while and shouted.

Pan Ping heard his words, and slightly calmed down his panicked mind. He remembered that there were indeed strange rounds recorded in the past history, testing none other than the Gu Master’s mind. Often in these rounds, the more cowardly the Gu master becomes, the stronger the monster they would have to face.

Pan and Chang forcibly calmed down, and then tried to break through the wolf groups’ encirclement.

But Fang Yuan was in control of this round and was clear of every corner of the maze.

He mobilized the wolf groups with extreme smoothness; no matter how Pan and Chang tried to break through, there would always be wolf groups encircling and cutting off their path.

"No, I cannot die here! Damned wolf beasts, take my killer move!" With no alternative, Pan Ping used up almost all his primeval essence to activate the killer move ’six arm heavenly zombie king’.

He turned into an eight armed zombie; his battle strength rose explosively, creating surging waves wherever he moved. The wolves suffered severe losses with none being able to resist his attacks.

Chang Biao took the valuable chance to preserve his primeval essence by following behind Pan Ping, and was able to save quite a bit of strength.

The good situation did not last long and soon, Pan Ping’s primeval essence was thoroughly exhausted.

Chang Biao quickly moved to save him: "In this time of danger, we need to work as one to have the hope of escaping alive. Take a rest and use primeval stones to recover your primeval essence, I will protect you!"

Chang Biao also used six arm heavenly zombie king and firmly protected Pan Ping.

With this kind of assistance between the two, they were able to stabilize the situation.

Seven-eight days went by like this, Chang Biao and Pan Ping’s primeval essence were completely exhausted, no longer able to carry on.

"Am I going to die here?" Pan Ping roared at the sky.

"Damn it, there is definitely a way out, definitely!" Chang Biao had lost his earlier demeanour as he started shouting and roaring.

Just at this time of despair, the two suddenly saw a large pile of primeval stones in the corner ahead.

"Primeval stones!"

"Such a mountain of primeval stones, I am not hallucinating, right?"

Finding a way out of death’s door, the two were elated and summoned all their bravery to kill their way through. The situation was stabilized once again as they used the primeval stones to recover their primeval essence.

"I understand, I understand now, this round tests the Gu Master’s endurance!" Chang Biao shouted with wild joy.

"So it was like that." Pan Ping also came to a realization.

The two were so happy they did not realize the strange changes on their bodies.

As they started using ’six arm heavenly zombie king’ more often, their bodies were now growing some irrecoverable zombie speckles.

"This hill of primeval stones is sufficient to last us two-three months." Pan Ping pounced on the primeval stone hill, crying tears of joy.

"Quickly use this time to recover primeval essence. We can’t just keep sitting idly, there should be other primeval stone hills. When thirsty, we can drink wolf blood, and when hungry, we can eat wolf meat, maybe we can pass this round if we persevere like this." Chang Biao’s eyes shone brightly.

"Brother Chang, you are right!" Pan Ping stood up quickly, his face flushed red as he imagined the scene Chang Biao portrayed, "This round is so difficult, it is almost an absolute death ground. There should definitely be a great reward for passing it!"

Chang Biao resisted the wolf groups’ offense, sighing: "I finally know why we can enter but not exit this round. If we could easily leave, how could this round test the Gu Master?"

It was truly a pity these two still did not know this primeval stone hill was intentionally arranged here by their great enemy Fang Yuan. His goal was to make them use the killer move more, and continue the experiment.

The situation was fully within Fang Yuan’s control. Even if these two had not been willing to use the killer move and only used their own moves, Fang Yuan would have controlled the wolf groups to continue attacking them, creating a dangerous set of circumstances where these two would have no choice but to use the killer move.

Fang Yuan’s worry was unnecessary in this aspect.

As these two used the killer move, they started gradually becoming dependent on it, using it more and more. And in the following battles, they rarely used their own methods.

When their zombie speckles became denser and seriously affected them, they came to their senses.

But it was already too late.

"I don’t accept this, I don’t accept this, dying right here! Wolf King, I won’t let you go even as a ghost!"

Pan Ping was the first to die.

Before he died, he cursed Fang Yuan.

Several days later, Chang Biao also died with exhaustion in the battle.

He died with grievance, mumbling to himself as he neared death: "Exit, where the hell is the exit?"

He had a lot of worries, too many things he could not let go.

Wolf Killing Alliance was only just being set up, the scheme of forcing Ma Ying Jie to join it had only just started, but even more than these, what made him the most unreconciled was his own son - Chang Ji You.

Truthfully speaking, Chang Biao was a pitiful person.

For his reputation, he dared not admit his own biological son and was only able to hear Chang Ji You call him ’godfather’, ’godfather’...

Even so, he did not feel secure and to cover it further up, he adopted several orphans as his adopted sons and daughters. Among them was Chang Li.

He had made such painstaking efforts, laid low his whole life, planned so much, but now as he faced death, nothing had come to fruition.

He was unreconciled, full of regrets and annoyance, but what could he do?

"I really... really wanted to hear him call me father..." At this moment of death, his intense thoughts burst out as a sorrowful and regretful voice, passing away with the light of his life.

"The killer move was activated two thousand three hundred and eleven times, although he was exhausted in death, the main reason for fatality is the accumulation of zombie energy in his body." Fang Yuan appeared beside Chang Biao’s corpse out of thin air.

He slightly smiled, the experiment had attained the expected purpose, but he found a problem —

Even if the killer move was used every time, it could not surpass a certain time limit, but instead the more it was used, the zombie energy in the body would accumulate till it led to the Gu Master’s death.

Whether it was Pan Ping or Chang Biao, they both died because of this.

Fang Yuan took out the Gu worms from the two’s corpses and stored them in his storage pouch.

This round was under his control, making it impossible for Pan and Chang to detonate their Gu worms even if they wanted to.

Chang Biao possessed a set of wind path Gu worms, all of them of excellent quality. Pan Ping’s Gu worms were also not ordinary, but with Fang Yuan’s current scope and capital, they were only considered better than nothing.

Only that sole blade Gu had some collection value, making Fang Yuan look at it for a moment.

Several days later.

In a study, Fang Yuan was thinking with his eyes closed while grasping an east window Gu.

"Hostile intent Gu can condense hostile intent. The hostile intent is strong and fiercely encroaching as fire, but it somewhat lacks flexibility and does not have the power to persist for long."

"Sharp intent Gu can condense sharp intent. The sharp intent is very sharp like swords and spears, however it can be subdued through soft tactics and is very difficult to restore."

"Reckless intent can condense reckless intent. Nothing is a taboo for the reckless intent and it can easily spread unchecked, but it is difficult to control and can easily injure the Gu Master."

This east window Gu, which Fang Yuan had purchased from treasure yellow heaven, recorded a fairly intact wisdom path inheritance. He paid all his small savings of immortal essence stones for it.

But it was worth it, Fang Yuan made some gains after reading it.

Fang Yuan pondered: "This inheritance records fourteen wisdom path Gu worms with six that touch upon the aspect of intent - hostile intent Gu, sharp intent Gu, reckless intent Gu, changing intent Gu, cold intent Gu and chaotic intent Gu. The first three are used to condense will, with each having their own pros and cons."

Wisdom path was the most mysterious among Gu Master paths, extremely broad and profound. It originated from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and had existed from Remote Antiquity Era. The Gu Masters who cultivated it were extremely few in numbers, but it still remained and passed down till today, never declining.

"Then what is Mo Yao’s will classified as - hostile intent, sharp intent or reckless intent?"

Fang Yuan was researching these wills to guard against and deal with the enormous hidden danger in his mind.

"Hostile intent is fierce like fire, sharp intent is sharp like a spear, reckless intent is flamboyant and difficult to control, but Mo Yao’s will is mysterious like the sea, hidden and indistinct. From the confrontations I had with her, it felt like I was not able to display my strength, like punching cotton."

Fang Yuan carefully analyzed and perceived Mo Yao’s will was not any one among this list.

This inheritance he had gathered was only a corner of wisdom path; there were definitely many other wisdom path Gu worms.

"It seems I still need to continue gathering information on wisdom path..." Fang Yuan inwardly sighed.

Fang Yuan was not able to easily use his methods against Mo Yao’s will because he was not familiar with wisdom path, and did not know her trump cards.

"As the proverb goes, know yourself and know your enemy, and you will go unscathed through a hundred battles. I need to bear with this for the moment, make her think continuously and wear herself down, while also using her to help in exploring True Yang Building."

Right as he was thinking, Mo Yao’s will appeared with her indistinct figure in Fang Yuan’s mind.

"It is done, the six arm heavenly zombie king this time is truly perfected, there are no more unsuitable factors." Mo Yao said with a weak tone and exhausted expression.

’Looks like she had been worn down a lot from all the thinking over these days." Fang Yuan was inwardly happy, and as he looked at the modified killer move, this hidden happiness gradually turned into exultation!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan was a vigilant person, he had always felt that everyone else in this world was unreliable, the only dependable person was himself. Thus, he researched the six arm heavenly zombie king killer move the moment he obtained it.

This killer move was originally created based on the foundation he provided, furthermore during these few days, with Mo Yao’s guidance, his refinement path attainment was deepening, and his perspective had widened greatly.

Right now, he had a great understanding of the concept of six arm heavenly zombie king, it was clear as water to him.

At this moment, he looked at the completed killer move, without any experiments, he knew that this killer move was close to perfection.

Mo Yao had reduced many supplementary Gu worms from the original base, while keeping the core and the six zombie Gu unchanged, only adding several supplementary Gu worms in.

Sensing the ingenuity of this, Fang Yuan praised endlessly.

In his mind, Mo Yao’s will explained: "This is all thanks to the intention Gu on Pan and Chang. With their experience and insight, I could refine this move to such an extent, we have reached an extreme level of perfection. As long as the time does not exceed thirty minutes, no matter how many times you activate the killer move, it will not accumulate zombie energy in your body and cause zombie speckles to grow."

Fang Yuan nodded, knowing that Mo Yao’s words were true.

This killer move was truly refined to its limits, according to this line of thinking, it had already reached its strongest potential. Unless he added Immortal Gu in the future, or changed the core Gu.

But if he added Immortal Gu in, this would destroy the original coordination of the Gu, he would need to reassemble it and the move would become completely different, it would truly be a situation of ’pull one hair and the whole body moves’.

If he changed the core Gu, that would be going into another line of thought. The new killer move would be completely different, rather than calling it ’six arm heavenly zombie king’, he might as well give it another name.

In all, the killer move six arm heavenly zombie king, be it the core Gu, the zombie Gu or the supplementary Gu, they were being used to their fullest potential, there was no way to refine this further.

Even though there were still backlashes from using it, if one exceeded thirty minutes, the zombie energy would cause great damage to the Gu Master’s body, if the time was too long, the Gu Master might even turn into a zombie.

But this was a problem caused by inappropriate usage by the Gu Master, it could be avoided. The reason was that even if this move was used many times, it would not accumulate the zombie speckles. If the Gu Master activated the move multiple times in a period of time, they could potentially sustain the killer move for a long duration.

Except, Fang Yuan was still not satisfied with this huge result.

"If you have any other ideas to refine this killer move, this grandmaster here is willing to listen." Mo Yao laughed eerily.

"At this point, six arm heavenly zombie king is at its limit, there is nothing to improve. But there is still one part that I am not satisfied with, that is the backlash of the killer move." Fang Yuan said.

"After the improvement, the current six arm heavenly zombie king’s power has doubled, and the duration has reached thirty minutes, it is sufficient for you to handle anything in this mortal realm. What are you dissatisfied with? You must know, any killer move represents the combination usage of Gu worms, since it is the use of Gu worms, there has to be weaknesses. A killer move’s backlash cannot be avoided, they are only different in terms of severity. This strength path killer move’s power is at the top five of killer moves in my memory. Don’t be too greedy." Mo Yao lectured.

Fang Yuan snorted.

His potential enemies were Gu Immortals, beings who surpassed mortals!

With six arm heavenly zombie king, even if Fang Yuan abandoned his enslavement path, he could still dominate the mortal realm, but it was far from sufficient to deal with Gu Immortals.

Battling an immortal as a mortal, this aim was too arrogant, it was too much for people to believe. Fang Yuan had no intentions of informing Mo Yao about this.

Immediately after, he said: "Preparedness ensures success, and unpreparedness spells failure. If one day, because of a peculiar situation, I overuse the killer move and become

a zombie, what happens? I am also clear that the killer move six arm heavenly zombie king cannot be improved further, but now, my goal is to resolve this weakness."

Mo Yao finally understood Fang Yuan’s intention, she sunk into silence.

Fang Yuan was young and arrogant, Mo Yao did not expect that he had such a cautious side. To speak the truth, Mo Yao was looking at him in a different light now —

"This lad, he has talent, resources, and opportunities. He has great perseverance and is able to lower his head when needed. On one hand, he advances bravely, while on the other hand, he is cautious and vigilant, always considering all sides of the matter. This lad, one day, he will definitely shake the world."

She was silent for a short time, soon, Mo Yao said: "It is very troublesome to resolve this backlash. Six arm heavenly zombie king is not an ordinary zombie, the zombie energy is extremely thick, once the Gu Master transforms, they cannot even use Yin-Yang rotation Gu!"

"As a refinement grandmaster, is there nothing you can do?" Fang Yuan did not believe her.

Mo Yao did not fall for his taunting, she spoke in a calm manner: "I need a rank five Gu Master to fully transform into the six arm heavenly zombie king, after which I will experiment on their body. I need this test subject to cooperate with me fully, and I need to have full control over their condition, in terms of body, mind, and personal experience... These are all important information that I need to consider."

Mo Yao did not want to ponder about this deeply as it would expend too many of her thoughts, she used the same method again, planning to use people as experimental fodder. They would replace her thinking and undergo the most crucial steps for her.

Fang Yuan frowned: "Rank five Gu Master? And a fully cooperative one?"

"That’s right, it would be best if they are willingly doing it. Because if slavery Gu is used to control them, their emotions would be affected, their experience and feelings when turning into a zombie would be ruined."

This was troublesome!

If Fang Yuan wanted to resolve the problem of six arm heavenly zombie king, he would need to find a rank five Gu Master, and they would need to be cooperative and listen to Fang Yuan, risking their lives to undergo this experiment.

Where was Fang Yuan going to find such a person?!

Three days later.

Central control room.

From the ink whirlpool, the owner token rose up and flew into Fang Yuan’s hands.

Activating the refinement path killer move ink transformation once again, five-edge owner token had transformed into six-edge.

Fang Yuan was both happy and worried.

Happy because he had the six-edge owner token, once Hei Lou Lan’s owner token becomes four-edge, he would be able to snatch it and form the ten-edge owner token.

With a ten-edge owner token, he could obtain one of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s true inheritances!

An Immortal Venerable inheritance had a huge attraction to almost anybody.

Worry was because Fang Yuan had expended almost all his resources to undergo this sixth ink transformation. In order to accumulate funds, he had sold the Immortal Gu remnant recipes again and caused these remnant recipes to have no value left.

At the same time, he sold large numbers of rockmen, fox groups, wolf groups, Gu worms, and even the precious hairy men and some air bubble fish.

Like the rank four emotion poetry Gu, golden dragon Gu, golden breeze Gu, as well as rank five Gu including multiple spring egg Gu, vajra stare Gu, turn gold Gu, soft bones Gu, pitch black Gu, and hints and clues Gu.

"Right now, I only have the enslavement and strength path Gu worms left in my aperture. In Hu Immortal blessed land, I have Blood Sea Ancestor’s true inheritance, rank four blood skull Gu, as well as rank three bone flesh unity Gu and the yang Gu left after using yin Gu of the yin-yang rotation Gu. Other than that, I still have some stargate Gu, hole earth Gu, connecting heaven Gu, divine sense Gu, burial soul toad, and some supplementary Gu."

These Gu were all of utmost importance, they could not be sold. Some were absolutely necessary, he needed them in the future.

"Hu Immortal blessed land was almost squeezed dry by me, it needs to recover. But now that I have the six-edge owner token, I can control six floors in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building as I wish. All of the rewards in these six floors can be taken by me. These rewards are extremely valuable, if I take them all, my wealth would grow by at least sixty times that of my current foundation!"

Fang Yuan had his plans.

But currently, he could not touch these rewards.

Hei Lou Lan had gathered some experts, and was at the final round of the fifth floor.

Soon, he was going to obtain a one-edge owner token.

With this token, he could check any floor’s round rewards in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

If Fang Yuan took the rewards, wouldn’t he reveal himself?

"At the final moment, when Imperial Court blessed land is about to close and everyone gets sent out, I will take the rewards then, by that point, nobody would know a thing."

...

Bam!

The bear paw smacked and the earth quaked, rocks were sent flying like shrapnel.

As the smoke dispersed, a huge bear paw the size of five to six horse carriages was lifted, showing a huge crater.

The rank four Gu Master who was unfortunately hit by the bear paw had turned into a pile of mushy flesh, mixed with some bone shards and brain matter.

"Too fast! We cannot react to it."

"The final round is truly harder than ascending to heaven..."

"This is only the phantom image of a flying bear, it only has half the strength of the true body. If this was really the desolate beast flying bear, we would not even be able to escape!"

The Gu Masters on the battlefield were all injured, they were in a pathetic state and felt great lingering fear.

It was the phantom image of the desolate beast flying bear that was guarding the fifth floor’s hundredth round.

It had a huge body, like that of a mountain, it had white, snowy fur, and a full set of Gu worms in it, each were elite Gu worms. It attacked fiercely, but moved just as agilely, it could dart around like lightning, which was ironic due to its huge bulky figure. After fighting for only thirty minutes, the Gu Masters had already suffered huge losses.

"Lord tribe leader, we should retreat. Our motive this time is to probe it, now that we have understood most of the Gu worms on the flying bear, we have actually achieved our goal already." Sun Shi Han stood beside Hei Lou Lan, advising.

Hei Lou Lan frowned, looking around the battlefield.

He was an expert in leading men to wars and battles, he knew that his troops had low morale now.

"Since I started challenging the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, this flying bear phantom is the strongest opponent I’ve met. To defeat it, our strength is not enough, we need even more helpers."

Hei Lou Lan assessed in his heart before snorting and saying one word: "Retreat."

Sun Shi Han felt relieved in his heart, and not just him, the other Gu Masters already had the intention to retreat, but because of the Black Tyrant’s fierce reputation, no one dared to suggest it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Everyone retreated from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, as Hei Lou Lan gave an order to recruit experts that night.

He was the alliance leader that won this contest, according to the rules, the entire army was his to mobilize. Everyone knew about the Black Tyrant’s fierce reputation, together with him opening Eighty-Eight True Yang Building to everyone without any cost, they were deeply grateful to him.

With both authority and gratitude, Hei Lou Lan’s influence reached its peak.

With this order, it created a huge commotion as everyone who was called showed up without fail.

Wolf King Chang Shan Yin, Water Demon Hao Ji Liu, Twin Demons Gao Yang and Zhu Zai, Little Ma Zun Ma Ying Jie, Fox Commander Tang Miao Ming, White Fairy Xi Xue, Shadow Sword Expert Bian Si Xuan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Lu Shuang, Tao You, Gu Guo Long, Dou E, Nie Ya Qing, Ye Lui Sang...

On the day of the alliance meeting, the hall was filled with shining stars as heroes and conquerors whipped up a huge storm.

"Old sir, with you here, it is like having a giant pillar of support, we do not have to fear about low morale, hahaha!" Hei Lou Lan sat grandly at the main seat, looking around and laughing with great ambitions.

Among those who were present, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had the greatest reputation, he healed people all over the land, countless people were indebted to him, even Hei Lou Lan or Chang Shan Yin could not compare to him.

But the person who sat next to Hei Lou Lan was not Tai Bai Yun Sheng, but Wolf King Chang Shan Yin.

Reputation was something, but battle strength was another aspect.

After the Imperial Court contest, everyone agreed that Fang Yuan’s battle strength was the greatest. Dual path cultivator, flying master, enslavement master, all these auras gathered into one person, it was dazzling and overwhelming, thus no one had any disagreements regarding Fang Yuan’s position.

Thus, after Hei Lou Lan talked to Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he turned around to Fang Yuan: "Brother Shan Yin, we will need to count on you for this battle! If we get through, you will earn half of the rewards."

He understood Fang Yuan’s nature, he would not act without benefits, thus he gave such a tempting offer.

The final round’s rewards were nothing ordinary. Once Hei Lou Lan spoke, he gave half the benefits to Fang Yuan, this meant that he, along with the others, would have to share the remaining half of the rewards.

As their interests were concerned, some discussions could be heard in the hall.

Many people were indignant regarding this allocation, but no one had the guts to openly oppose Black Tyrant’s arrangements and offend the grand Wolf King in this hall.

"Very well, we will go with that." Fang Yuan nodded, his arrogant gaze swept the hall, as the voices came to a stop.

"Why has elder Pan Ping not arrived yet?" Hei Lou Lan asked around.

Pan Ping was born in the demonic path, nowadays he had entered Hei tribe and become an external elder. As the current Hei tribe leader, Hei Lou Lan’s orders did not summon Pan Ping, Hei Lou Lan was extremely displeased by this.

Actually, not just Pan Ping, Chang tribe’s first elder Chang Biao was not present either.

But Chang Biao was a Chang tribesman, Hei Lou Lan had to ignore it because of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not react.

The information regarding the deaths of Pan and Chang had not been spread yet.

Challenging Eighty-Eight True Yang Building normally took several days or even half a month, the tougher the rounds, the longer it would take. Especially someone like Pan Ping, as a person without Giant Sun bloodline, he would incur huge expenses when he entered Eighty-Eight True Yang Building using the guest token. Precisely because of this, these outsiders treasured their opportunity in entering the building, if possible, they would not leave it unless they had no other choice.

Hei Lou Lan’s words had just been spoken, when his attendant Hei Shu stood up and reported: "Reporting to lord tribe leader, elder Pan Ping and Lord Chang Biao had gone into the seventh floor not long ago, I have sent people to inform them, but the seventh floor’s layout is very confusing, it is like a huge maze. The maze prohibits the use of letter Gu, and there are even wild wolf groups deep inside. The servants have tried to find them for many days, but they only found some battle traces, they could not find the two lords."

Hei Lou Lan snorted as he waved his hand: "Then forget it, we will not wait for them, the guest tokens are ready, we will depart tomorrow morning!"

By the second day, everyone grandly charged into the fifth floor.

This was the largest force that had gathered to enter Eighty-Eight True Yang Building since it was formed, it attracted countless gazes in the sacred palace.

The final round of the fifth floor was a barren and desolate mountain.

Brown soil, hard as steel rocks, with no grass or plants.

The moment everyone entered, the flying bear phantom was alerted and growled, tearing through the air, and causing a thunderous noise.

Swoosh!

They saw in the dark yellow sky, a white whirlwind come crashing down.

The experts retreated at once.

The flying bear phantom crashed on the ground, with a loud bang, the earth shook as intense winds blew, causing many to lose their balance.

"Ferocious indeed!" Pei Yan Fei’s expression was solemn, if he had been hit directly, he would be heavily injured if not dead.

"It was thanks to tribe leader Hei Lou Lan’s reminder, if not, the moment we came in we would’ve been attacked by this bear." Gu Guo Long looked at the howling flying bear inside the crater and said with lingering fear.

"This is called learning from past experiences, the last time we came here, we were sneak attacked by the flying bear, five experts died on the spot!" Hei Xiu Yi gritted his teeth, saying with deep hatred.

"Brother Shan Yin, the rest is up to you guys." Hei Lou Lan urged.

According to their battle plan earlier, the first wave of attack should be unleashed by the enslavement path Gu Masters, in order to wear down the flying bear phantom’s battle strength.

Without any words from him, large numbers of wolves came from all directions, from the sky and land, charging and attacking the flying bear phantom.

In the sky, there was the azure wolf group, on the ground, there were the white-eyes wolves, frenzy wolves, blood forest wolves and others.

Ordinary wolves numbered to over four hundred thousand.

At once, the wolves engulfed the area, charging like the huge waves of the great sea, submerging the island-like flying bear phantom.

Roar!

The flying boar roared, shaking heaven and earth.

Howl!!!!

The wolf groups were not to be outdone, howling in a similar fashion.

The battle ensued, whipping up a bloody storm.

The flying bear phantom’s four paws slammed, killing at least dozens of wild wolves with one strike. The ordinary wolves could only be a disturbance to it, only the mutated beast groups could pose a threat and cause injuries to the flying bear phantom.

But the essence of enslavement path had always been to overwhelm quality with quantity, expending the enemy’s energy to their greatest limit.

Fang Yuan manipulated the wolf group, attacking as freely as the wind, or as crushing as the snow, the flying bear phantom seemed to have sunk into a deep swamp, even with its frenzied attacks, it could not break through the encirclement.

"Now this is a master level attainment."

"Wild beasts are beasts, without a human’s intelligence, they are being toyed around by Chang Shan Yin."

"The beast groups are like a work of art under Wolf King’s control!"

Everyone was in a daze, the enslavement Gu Masters Tang Miao Ming and Hei Qi Sheng could see the brilliance of his actions, feeling a strong sense of admiration and adoration towards Fang Yuan.

But the good situation did not last, the flying bear phantom suddenly stopped its actions, opening its mouth and exhaling.

With this, the world changed colors, as starlight shone brilliantly to form into a river.

Rank five – star river Gu!

The star river poured down, like a dragon or python, it engulfed the places it went, be it frenzy wolf or blood forest wolf, they were swept away by the star river, some were holding their ground desperately with their defensive Gu, but those that did not have defensive Gu were turned into stardust.

At once, the wolf group suffered huge losses.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was unmoved, it was as if the losses did not affect him, and he did not stop for now.

Only until half the wolves were left, did he order them to retreat.

Tang Miao Ming and Hei Qi Sheng quickly ordered their beast groups to replace the wolves.

These two, one was called Little Fox Commander with quasi-master attainment, in terms of enslavement attainment, she was second to Fang Yuan alone in the sacred palace.

The latter was an enslavement path Gu Master nurtured by the super force Hei tribe, although he had not attained master level skill, he had deep foundations and great strength.

Tang Miao Ming controlled the fox groups, while Hei Qi Sheng controlled the eagle groups, one dominated the sky while the other was on the ground.

But the flying bear phantom was getting more ferocious, after the star river had fully looped around in a ring, it clapped its paws together, roaring again as an intense wind blew, and clouds formed from nothing.

In an instant, the intense wind turned into tiger-shaped wind tigers, while the clouds turned into dragon-shaped cloud dragons.

Rank five — wind tiger cloud dragon Gu!

Thousands of wind tigers and cloud dragons charged forward, facing the foxes and eagles head on.

At once, the battlefield was in chaos as blood rained and the pungent smell spread.

"Oh no, at this rate..." Tang Miao Ming’s forehead was full of sweat, her head was hurting as she was gritting her teeth desperately.

The battle was too intense, she wanted to preserve her fox group, thus she manipulated them very meticulously, it caused her soul to be greatly worn out, and she was reaching her limit.

As for Hei Qi Sheng, his situation was even worse than hers.

The fox group could still resist the enemy, but a large proportion of Hei Qi Sheng’s eagle group had already been killed by the wind tigers and cloud dragons, they were in disorder and he could not attend to one aspect without neglecting another.

The other Gu Masters retreated time and time again, but they did not show any surprise.

Star river Gu and wind tiger cloud dragon Gu were exposed in their previous probing, everyone was prepared for them.

"Have you finished the investigation?" Hei Lou Lan asked an investigative Gu Master beside him.

The investigative Gu Master was very nervous, he sat on the ground as he activated his Gu worm wholeheartedly. His forehead was folded into a frown as he replied with a trembling voice: "Star river Gu’s location has been found, it is in the flying bear’s mouth, on the largest tooth on the left side. As for the other Gu worms, we have to continue searching."

It was different to deal with beasts compared to Gu Masters.

All the Gu worms on the wild beast are wild, they can be captured. Gu worms on Gu Masters were usually refined already.

Hei Lou Lan ordered his men to search for the location of the wild Gu because of this.

As long as they can capture the wild Gu on the flying bear’s body, it would be much easier for them to destroy the flying bear phantom.

Even if they could not capture it, it would suffice if they destroyed the Gu.

Gu worms were very fragile on their own, even for Spring Autumn Cicada which was rank six, Fang Yuan just needed to squeeze lightly to squish it.

Wild beasts did not have apertures, the wild Gu resided in their bodies, this was a huge weakness.

Hei Lou Lan snorted, shouting: "Continue searching!"

He was not pleased with this result, the star river Gu was inside the flying bear’s mouth, the difficulty to capture it was too high.

During their conversation, the battlefield’s situation was getting worse.

"Tang Miao Ming and Hei Qi Sheng are slowly becoming unable to resist!" Pei Yan Fei said with a heavy expression.

"The flying bear’s attacks are too ferocious, luckily the wild beasts are attracting its attention. But even if the foxes and eagles die, we can replenish them, our motive of weakening the enemy has been achieved." Sun Shi Han stroked his beard as he evaluated.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Although wild Gu absorbed energy from the air directly, being able to use their abilities freely without any limits on primeval essence.

But during an intense battle, towards the end, the wild Gu would become more and more passive, if they sensed that the battle was going south, they would leave their host and escape on the spot using their instinct of sensing danger.

Thus, when attacking a wild beast, especially beast kings or desolate beasts, during the first half of the battle, it would usually contain the most firepower, after a while, the attacks would slowly become weaker and less oppressive.

"Even so, we cannot allow the fox group and eagle group to suffer such losses, we should invite Lord Chang Shan Yin to step in." At the side, Hei Xiu Yi said.

"Step in... to what end?" Fang Yuan folded his arms, scoffing arrogantly as he heard this: "According to our battle arrangement, I will strike first while the two of them take over after me, with such intervals, we have to each hold on for fifteen minutes. Right now, they have not even been there for half the allocated time, it is not time for me to step in yet."

If they entered the battlefield now, the wolf group would only face the cruel slaughter of the flying bear phantom, although it would weaken the flying bear phantom as intended, if he could reduce his losses, Fang Yuan was very willing to watch on the fence.

As for the others' losses, was that Fang Yuan's problem?

Hei Xiu Yi was furious upon hearing this, but because of Fang Yuan's status, he could only hold in his anger: "Lord Wolf King, everyone is putting in their full effort for this battle, right now Tang Miao Ming and Hei Qi Sheng are fighting with their life, but lord is watching by the side, isn't this too much?"

"Hmm? You dare to lecture me?" Fang Yuan frowned as his killing intent surged.

Although he was folding his arms, a monstrous arm grew out from his back.

The monstrous arm was extremely powerful and strong, but it also moved extremely fast, directly assaulting Hei Xiu Yi.

Never in Hei Xiu Yi's dreams did he think that Fang Yuan would dare to publicly, and especially during such an important battle, try to kill him?!

Before the fist hit, he felt the intense winds blowing towards him, causing his face to feel pain already.

An incomparable feeling of fear and danger instantly filled his heart.

At the crucial moment, his battle senses from many years of fighting saved his life successfully.

He reacted before even thinking, activating his defense Gu and putting up three lines of defense.

He was a defensive Gu Master originally, and because his specialty was defense, Hei Lou Lan had once sent him to Fang Yuan as a form of protection.

But during the battle, Hei Xiu Yi cherished his own safety and forgot about his mission, abandoning Fang Yuan on the battlefield.

The monstrous arm was unstoppable, it smashed the three defenses quickly and hit his chest.

Crack.

A crisp sound could be heard.

Hei Xiu Yi's rib bones were all crushed, the monstrous strength sent him flying like a cannonball.

He vomited blood while flying in the air.

Then with a rumble, he crashed on a small mound several hundred steps away.

When the sound of the impact was heard and the dust settled, he was half embedded into the mound, falling unconscious and losing his battle strength.

"Lord Wolf King?!"

"What happened? What happened! Why did they fight?"

"Hei Xiu Yi urged Lord Wolf King to battle, the two could not get along and Wolf King suddenly burst into anger, sending Hei Xiu Yi flying!"

Seeing such a shocking event, everyone was gasping.

Internal conflicts were always so sudden, so severe.

Hei Xiu Yi’s identity was not simple, he was one of the three commanders of the black banner army, an important person within the Hei tribe higher-ups. Fang Yuan attacking him with such intensity was no different than openly taunting Hei Lou Lan.

Once Hei Lou Lan and Chang Shan Yin stood on opposing sides, this battle would not only end up in failure, the entire sacred palace would also fall into political turmoil!

"Wolf King, what happened? I would like to hear your explanation." Hei Lou Lan’s expression was like still water as he came over to question Fang Yuan.

He usually called Fang Yuan "Brother Shan Yin" to show their close relationship, but now that he called him "Wolf King", it showed his anger.

But no matter how angry he was, would Fang Yuan be afraid?

Immediately, Fang Yuan stared back at him with no fear, his killing intent dispersed as he snickered: "Tribe leader Hei Lou Lan, you came at a good time, your subordinate was truly stepping out of line, he dared to lecture me? Such a lack of respect with a complete disregard for seniority, I punished him for you, no need to thank me, don’t forget about our friendship after all."

Using "disrespect" and "seniority", he sent two reasons over just like that.

His final sentence mentioning "our friendship" had even deeper meaning.

It was like he was trying to say that they had a great friendship, but it could also mean that they had no friendship at all!

Hei Lou Lan stared furiously!

"This Chang Shan Yin is too arrogant! He dared to hit my man! Looking at his lawless manner, does he really think I cannot do anything to him just because of his great battle strength?" Black Tyrant roared in his heart.

He was cultivating dark path on the surface, but in truth, because of the Great Strength True Martial physique, his real cultivation was in the strength path.

His battle strength was superb, but he could not use his strength path methods because that would accelerate the disaster of one of the ten extreme physiques.

"I’ll endure it! Right now, we are at the crucial moment of attacking the flying bear phantom, if we get into an argument now, it would all go to waste! What is most important now is to find my strength path Immortal Gu and ascend to become a Gu Immortal!"

As long as they killed the flying bear phantom this time, Hei Lou Lan would be able to get through this floor and his owner token would immediately become a one-edge owner token.

With the one-edge owner token, he would be able to inspect the reward of any round of any floor, the one with a strength path Immortal Gu would be his focus and target.

Precisely so, it was extremely important to kill the flying bear phantom, even with Hei Lou Lan’s temper and cruelty, he had to endure it.

"I’ll let you be arrogant for once! One day, I will make you kneel down at my feet and lick my toes, if I tell you to shut up, you will keep quiet. If I ask you to bark, you will wag your tail!"

Hei Lou Lan was extremely furious, veins were popping on his forehead, but his eyes were fixed on Fang Yuan intensely.

Just as everyone was feeling a heavy atmosphere from this silence, and were feeling uneasy, Hei Lou Lan suddenly raised his head and laughed loudly: "Good, brother Shan Yin did a good job, such a disrespectful person should be taught a lesson indeed."

This was akin to Hei Lou Lan taking a step back, those who knew his poor temper were all shocked.

"His tribesman was beaten till he was unconscious in public, Hei Lou Lan actually agreed with him?"

"Wolf King is too strong, he did not care about the super force Hei tribe, now even Hei Lou Lan need to take a step back."

"Bullshit, this is tribe leader Hei Lou Lan caring about the big picture! He did not want to stoop to the level of Chang Shan Yin! Chang Shan Yin beat us Hei tribesmen, one day, he will pay the price."

Everyone had their comments as they conversed in secret.

Roar!

The flying boar’s roaring attracted everyone’s attention again.

The eagle and fox groups were facing great losses.

"I have let down all the lords." Hei Qi Sheng’s nose was bleeding, his face was full of shame.

Tang Miao Ming’s expression was pale, as her slim body was swaying with weakness.

"Protect the two of them." Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted.

"Both of you have had a huge contribution to this, I can see your sincerity. After this battle, you will be greatly rewarded." Hei Lou Lan had an amicable expression as he came forward to console them.

The flying bear lost its obstacles and charged forward towards everyone.

By right, the wolf group should be charging up to continue weakening the bear.

But Hei Lou Lan looked at Fang Yuan who was folding his arms arrogantly, not saying a word, in fact his wolves were retreating faster than anyone on the battlefield.

"I’ll endure! One day, I will make you pay a huge price!" Hei Lou Lan gritted his teeth, knowing that he could not make Fang Yuan do anything, if he forced Fang Yuan and got rejected in public, he would take a huge hit to his reputation and be deeply humiliated.

Thus, Hei Lou Lan shouted loudly: "Strike, initiate the second step of the plan!"

"Go!"

Immediately, two people flew out like lightning.

One was a slim and elegant person wearing a fluttering blue dress, it was White Fairy Xi Xue.

The other was muscular and stable, wearing a yellow robe, it was Gu tribe leader Gu Guo Long.

White Fairy Xi Xue flew into the air, her sleeves were waving as she shouted in an alluring manner, causing snow to descend immediately.

It was her signature rank five Gu worm — flying snow Gu.

Gu Guo Long ran on the ground, his legs were moving like turbines, everywhere he went, smoke rose as rocks were sent flying.

It was also a rank five Gu, called flying sand moving rock.

At once, white snow was floating in the air, while sand and rocks were rolling on the ground.

The giant mountain-like flying bear phantom was stuck between the snow and sand, its speed reduced drastically as its vision was also obscured.

It roared loudly, waving its paws in the snow and sand, but the air currents generated from its attacks made the sand and snow even more intense, blurring its sight.

Seeing this, Hei Lou Lan laughed cruelly, ordering: "Third step!"

This time, almost ten people charged into the battlefield.

Every one of them was an expert, there was Bian Si Xuan, Hao Ji Liu, Pei Yan Fei, Gao Yang, Shu Zai, Dou E, Nie Ya Qing, Tao You, Lu Shuang...

These Gu Masters were either rank four peak stage or rank five experts.

Adding in Gu Guo Long and Xi Xue, they were truly a powerful formation.

They drilled into the snow and sand, attacking furiously towards the flying bear phantom.

The flying bear phantom roared continuously, it was very agitated and attacked randomly, but had little effect.

On the other hand, the Gu Masters had used their investigative Gu worms from the start, their vision was clear as they constantly avoided the bear while unleashing strong attacks.

Pei Yan Fei grew wings as his swallow wings were like scissors tearing through the sky.

Swallow wings Gu.

Golden coat Gu.

Rainbow transformation Gu.

Killer move — Golden Rainbow Strike!

He turned into a golden flash of lightning as he charged down with fierce crackling.

The flying bear roared in pain, blood was spewing as a huge injury appeared on its chest, from the left shoulder to its right waist.

Nie Ya Qing followed closely after.

He was a rank five Gu Master, using the iron hook silver slash Gu.

His palm formed into an eagle claw shape as he aimed at the flying bear phantom, slashing with his fingers.

Immediately, several flashes appeared in the air, some were as dark as steel while some were shining like silver.

His claws continued to tear at the sky, as countless flashes attacked the flying bear phantom’s eyes, nose, and mouth.

Nie Ya Qing attacked its weak points, causing the flying bear to take the hit passively.

"Overlapping shadow." Bian Si Xuan shouted lightly, as the shadow sword in her hand waved.

A dark sword shadow flew several hundred steps and attacked the flying bear’s right leg noiselessly, leaving a ten meter long wound.

"Protect me." Ye Lui Sang shouted, raising both his palms as a fireball appeared above him, growing and expanding at a rapid speed.

The fireball became larger and larger, as the battlefield was dyed red, the light from the fireball could not be concealed by the snow and sand.

The flying bear felt the danger too and struggled, charging towards Ye Lui Sang who was in the air.

But the next moment, it was attacked by Dou E, Gu Guo Long, and Tao You.

Dou E was a transformation path Gu master, turning into a giant crocodile as he battled and retreated.

He opened his mouth, shooting out his teeth one by one.

The teeth hit the flying bear’s body and were embedded into it, in a few breath’s time, they exploded, causing the flying bear’s body to be covered in flesh and blood.

Gu Guo Long waved his sleeve and dozens of Gu worms flew out.

These Gu worms landed on the ground, causing the earth to grow into a mound.

The mound broke and rockmen-like giant statues appeared, standing up and attacking the flying bear phantom.

Tao You was an earth path Gu Master.

But he and Gu Guo Long had different methods, he continued to absorb the earth energy as he gathered it into himself.

Next, he punched consecutively, with each punch shooting out earth energy.

Flying in the air, they transformed into meteors and crashed onto the flying bear’s body.

Bam bam bam...

As the intense meteors collided, the flying bear’s attacks towards Ye Lui Sang slowed.

Finally, Ye Lui Sang was finished with his charging and he pressed his palms down, as a giant fireball was sent down like a descending mountain, hitting the huge flying bear phantom without regard for its welfare.

Bam——!

With an intense explosion, ears were deafened.

The intense wind stirred, spreading everywhere, blowing the snow and sand away to the edge of the battlefield.

The Gu Masters who were there were blown by the intense winds, getting shocked as their clothes and hair were pulled along by the wind.

When the dust settled, a huge crater formed on the battlefield.

All around the deep crater, a sand-like surface could be seen due to the strong heat from the fire.

The flying bear phantom was curled up into a ball, making no sounds. Its body was covered in five lights that were interchanging, black, white, red, yellow, and azure.

Rank five – five element bear skin Gu.

This Gu could greatly reduce the damage from metal, wood, water, fire, and earth path Gu worms, but under the attacks of so many experts, the flying bear’s body was covered in injuries as blood spewed everywhere, and some injuries were so deep bones could be seen.

Gu Masters were standing at the edge of the crater, watching the flying bear.

Although the flying bear was strong, after two rounds of battle, such results had been obtained.

"Be careful, do not forget that it still has the grand chaotic dance Gu." Sun Shi Han reminded.

The Gu Masters had a serious expression as some nodded lightly.

Grand chaotic dance Gu was a rank five Gu, it could cause the flying bear to go into a frenzied state, increasing its strength and speed greatly, at the same time its four limbs could be twisted at will.

Once this wild Gu was activated, the flying bear’s danger level would surge, if one was not careful and got caught, they might be turned into meat paste in no more than a few breath’s time.

"What’s there to be afraid of, don’t forget we have Old Sir Tai Bai here, whoever charges first will be heavily rewarded by me!" Hei Lou Lan shouted, his promise of rewards made the Gu Master’s eyes shine brightly.

When great rewards are offered, brave people emerge.

"I’ll do it!" Hao Ji Liu shouted, whipping up a wave as he charged towards the flying bear.

Under everyone’s gazes, he advanced towards the flying bear quickly.

A thousand steps, five hundred steps, three hundred steps!

The flying bear suddenly raised its head, its eyes were blood red as it growled loudly, shooting out an invisible air bubble.

The bubble expanded at lightning speed, covering both Hao Ji Liu and the flying bear, as it contracted quickly and vanished completely.

In an instant, the flying bear and Hao Ji Liu both vanished!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

With such a sudden event, everyone’s expressions changed.

"What happened? Where did they go?"

"He vanished!"

"Don’t tell me this round has some secret behind it?"

Everyone was guessing as they discussed among themselves.

Hei Lou Lan was frowning, feeling very perplexed.

Sun Shi Han’s expression was grim and uncertain, he seemed to have thought of something as he spoke in a hesitant manner: "Is it the battle space Gu?"

"Battle space Gu?" At once, everyone’s attention was focused on Sun Shi Han.

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes shone with brilliance as he said deeply: "This is indeed a space path Gu worm, but if it is the battle space Gu, then elder Hao Ji Liu is in trouble."

"Battle space Gu vanished for so many years, to think it would reappear here today." Tai Bai Yun Sheng sighed, it seemed he had confirmed it.

He had obtained an Immortal inheritance from the old beggar, he naturally had great knowledge.

"What is the battle space Gu?" Everyone asked.

Ye Lui Sang’s gaze was grave, he was the current tribe leader of Ye Lui tribe, a super tribe, but because they lost, he had to join Hei tribe.

He owned a mysterious fire path Immortal Gu, he was well-learnt and had a wealth of knowledge, at this point, he started explaining: "The battle space Gu is a rank five space path Gu worm. Once activated, it can send both the enemy and the user into a unique space. In there, they will fight to the death, so only when the winner is decided, or when the time runs out, would they be released from that space."

"Sigh, to think that the flying bear had such a Gu worm hidden!" Hei Lou Lan sighed as he looked at the sky, speaking with a hateful tone.

Everyone’s expression was grim as ever, expressing their worry towards Hao Ji

Liu’s safety.

The flying bear phantom was so strong, even with everyone’s combined strength, they could not kill it, how could Hao Ji Liu face it all on his own?

The result of this match could be easily predicted by anyone — the flying bear wins and Hao Ji Liu loses.

Although Hao Ji Liu had first rate escaping methods like water image Gu, Ye Lui Sang had already said that the space created by battle space Gu would only close when one side has a clear victory, decided by life and death.

Even if Hao Ji Liu used all his escaping methods, he would be captured and killed by the flying bear phantom eventually.

Unless he had an opposing space path Gu.

But Hao Ji Liu was a water path Gu Master, everyone knew that.

Even among all the experts present, none of them were in the space path, thus there was nothing they could do to the battle space Gu.

"Maybe there is still some hope, tribe leader Ye Lui Sang said earlier that ’only when the winner is decided, or when the time runs out’, this ’time runs out’ means?" Tang Miao Ming asked.

Ye Lui Sang sighed deeply: "Sigh, this time restriction is for Gu Masters. To maintain the battle space Gu, primeval essence will be expended constantly. If a Gu Master uses it, the battle space would vanish when their primeval essence is completely used up."

At this point, everyone lost their hope.

The flying bear phantom’s battle space Gu was a wild Gu.

Wild Gu absorbed the primeval energy in the air, and as the primeval energy in the air was continuously supplied, there was no way for the ’time limit’ to end.

"If we can absorb all the primeval energy in the air, would that work?" Bian Si Xuan gave a very good suggestion, everyone’s eyes were shining.

But it was no use.

After discussing for a while, everyone found that to deal with the invisible and formless primeval energy, qi path methods were required.

But qi path was an ancient path, it had once flourished but had been replaced later by the rising strength path.

By now, strength path had declined, not to mention qi path.

Qi path had been near extinction for a long time.

It was extremely rare to see a qi path Gu Master.

Even though Tai Bai Yun Sheng had roamed northern plains for so many years, he had only see three qi path cultivators. The most recent one, who was also the strongest, was Liu Wen Wu’s sworn brother — the variant human Mo Shi Kuang.

But this person had followed Liu Wen Wu since long ago, he was part of Liu tribe, why would he serve under Hei Lou Lan?

Even if he could help, he was an attack type Gu Master, he might not have the ability to deal with the primeval energy. In any case, no one could enter Imperial Court blessed land anymore at this point.

"Qi path is not the most important. The most crucial thing is to break the connection between the primeval energy and battle space Gu, we do not need to get rid of the primeval energy in this area." Tai Bai Yun Sheng said as he stroked his beard.

But this was something no one could do.

Breaking the connection between the primeval energy and wild Gu was the signature ability of restriction path.

Restriction path was also a rare path, there were very few restriction path Gu Masters.

Among everyone present, no one was a restriction path Gu Master.

"Sigh, earlier when I obtained a high grade evaluation and entered Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s treasure room, I found the restriction path primeval break Gu, it could be used in this scenario. But who could I have predicted this, I ended up exchanging something else." Lui Shuang patted his thigh, expressing his regret.

Fang Yuan was folding his arms, expression and not speaking as he stood at one side.

"Think harder, there has to be a way." Hei Lou Lan had just spoken, when the space shook, the huge body of the flying bear phantom appearing before them.

It opened its mouth and roared, showing its frenzy nature.

Everyone’s heart sank, quickly looking for Hao Ji Liu’s traces.

If he is alive they must see him, if he is dead they must at least see the corpse, but they could not find it anywhere.

"Quick, look at the flying bear’s mouth!" Sun Shi Han was an investigative Gu Master, he was the first to find the trace.

Everyone looked over and saw that the flying bear’s mouth had traces of blood, and there were some cloth stuck in between its teeth.

This cloth was very familiar to them, everyone pondered about it and quickly realized, wasn’t this Hao Ji Liu’s clothing?

They understood at once.

Hao Ji Liu was eaten by the flying bear!

What a pity for Hao Ji Liu, the great demonic path expert, known as the "Water Demon", displaying great brilliance in the Imperial Court contest, yet he died at this very place.

Fate was full of uncertainty, the cruelty of reality made everyone feel a strong sense of pity and dread.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng could do nothing either.

Although he had man as before Gu, but it needed a target to use it on, right now Hao Ji Liu’s corpse was chewed up by the flying bear, and swallowed into its stomach.

How could he be saved?

The Gu Masters’ morale fell.

"The flying bear phantom is too ferocious, how can we fight it?"

"It is so cramped inside the battle space, the flying bear has the five element bear skin Gu, wind tiger cloud dragon Gu, star river Gu, and grand chaotic dance Gu, if we fought it alone, who could be its match?"

"We could never have expected this final round to be difficult to this degree!"

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s rounds got harder towards the later stages, and the final, hundredth round was the hardest.

Right now Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had already created more than ten floors, the Gu Masters were working hard to clear all the rounds for rewards, but most of them were stuck at the ninetieth or so round.

This final round was the first one everyone had arrived at.

"Damn it, morale is so low, it is hard to fight anymore, do we return empty handed this time?" Hei Lou Lan’s expression was grim.

This time, they created a huge party for this challenge, yet they lost an expert without gaining anything. This was a huge blow to his reputation and prestige.

Disregarding that, what Hei Lou Lan wanted was a strength path Immortal Gu, meaning he needed a one-edge owner token.

If he could not clear this floor, he would only have an ordinary edgeless owner token.

If he gave up on this floor and chose other floors to challenge, he would need to expend a lot of time.

Time waits for no man, and this too went for him, Hei Lou Lan!

Just as the troop’s morale was sinking, Fang Yuan slowly said with a calm expression: "What difficulty is there in killing the flying bear?"

Once he said so, dozens of gazes turned around to look at him.

But soon, they lowered their gazes.

Wolf King was no longer the Wolf King in the rumors.

In the past, Wolf King Chang Shan Yin was a great heroic character in northern plains, a legend who exterminated Ha Tu Gu and his band of bandits.

The current Wolf King was a flying and enslavement master, the number one fierce general publicly recognised in this current Imperial Court contest. During the final battle, he took down the enemy’s commander easily from amidst the army, showing his great strength!

He had become even more arrogant and aloof, even becoming cruel and ruthless, striking as a means of persuasion. Hei Xiu Yi who was nearly killed by him was a prime example.

Looking back in time, there was another example, Sun Shi Han.

He had once been attacked by Chang Shan Yin in public, his entire face was trampled on the ground under everyone’s watchful eye, he had lost all his pride and face.

Only Hei Lou Lan’s gaze approached him, only the ’Black Tyrant’ had no fear towards the unrestrained and arrogant Chang Shan Yin.

"Brother Shan Yin, I would like to hear your brilliant plan!" Hei Lou Lan cupped his fists.

Fang Yuan laughed lightly: "It is not a brilliant plan, there is no harm in saying it."

He paused before saying: "This battle space Gu is quite special, but it is only rank five, there has to be restrictions on it, particularly in range. In my opinion, as long as we fight it from afar and avoid the range of battle space Gu’s effect, we will be fine."

Hei Lou Lan was shocked, these words truly made him feel as though he was waking up from a dream!

Everyone’s eyes were shining, some patted their head as they said excitedly: "I was too frightened by battle space Gu’s reputation."

Indeed, any Gu worm had its range of effect.

The battle space Gu’s range should not be wide, otherwise, it would not have waited for Hao Ji Liu to get close before activating it.

Of course, battle space Gu was a wild Gu, so the range had to be assessed more carefully.

"Next, I will manipulate the wolf group and encircle the flying bear, you guys will attack from afar using long range methods." Fang Yuan commanded.

Hei Lou Lan was overjoyed, he could not command Fang Yuan to move, now that Fang Yuan was voluntarily entering battle, he quickly said: "We will do as Wolf King says!"

Battle ensued again.

The wolf group was inside trapping the flying bear. The Gu Masters were outside unleashing a rain of attacks from afar.

Like this, the scene of a group of ants eating an elephant was formed.

Flying bear roared continuously, using star river Gu, wind tiger cloud dragon Gu, grand chaotic dance Gu and others, causing great casualties to the wolf group.

In contrast, the Gu Masters were all safe and sound, no more deaths occurred.

Hei Lou Lan was initially afraid of Fang Yuan withdrawing due to huge casualties in the wolf group.

But Fang Yuan showed a strong attitude, he did not retreat even though he was having losses, he even disregarded the wolf corpses.

Hei Lou Lan was perplexed, but after thinking about it, he attributed Fang Yuan’s reason for not retreating no matter what to his earlier promise — once they cleared this, Wolf King would get fifty percent of the reward!

What he did not know was, Fang Yuan’s true motive was his owner token.

Hei Lou Lan wanted to elevate his owner token, that suited Fang Yuan’s interests, after his owner token becomes four-edge, Fang Yuan would snatch it away and form the ten-edge owner token, obtaining a Giant Sun true inheritance.

Because of Fang Yuan’s intervention, the scales of victory tilted towards the Gu Masters.

Flying bear’s injuries became heavier, as blood flowed down the mound like a waterfall.

Roar!

Suddenly, the flying bear roared again, shooting out another invisible bubble.

The rank five battle space Gu was activated once again.

The Gu Masters were prepared for this, retreating quickly, but the bubble was targeted at a blood forest wolf.

Swoosh.

With a light sound, the flying bear and the blood forest wolf vanished.

"Using the same move again, what’s the use?" Someone saw this and laughed.

"As long as we do not get closer, why would we be afraid of the battle space Gu? Hahaha!"

"All of you shut up!" Hei Lou Lan screamed furiously, showing a very annoyed and irritated expression.

Not just him, Fang Yuan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and the others also had a grim expression.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

This time, the battle space lasted much longer than before, lasting half a day before it dispersed. The hill-sized giant flying bear phantom appeared once again before everyone.

"Damn it, just like we thought!" Sun Shi Han cried out involuntarily.

"Hmph!" Hei Lou Lan was also not looking well.

There were no injuries on the flying bear phantom’s body, a dazzling halo flowing through its snow-white fur. Its eyes were bright and its battle intent soared high; it had seemingly made a complete recovery

Flying bear had a rank five healing Gu which had already been investigated clearly.

As for its opponent - the blood forest wolf - which had been pulled into the battle space, only a pile of white bones remained.

"Can we still fight it?" Even Pei Yan Fei with his raging battle intent, felt indecisive at this moment.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng stroked his beard and muttered: "No matter how serious the flying bear phantom’s injuries are, as long as it uses battle space Gu to enter the battle space, it can recover back to its prime state in half a day. And during this time, we can do nothing but to just look on."

"Right, battle space Gu might only be a wild Gu and not under the flying bear’s control, but a wild Gu’s sense of danger is very sharp, and when it senses danger, it will casually choose a target to pull into the battle space to protect its host."

"Doesn’t this mean the wolf groups also cannot be used? Wolf groups have to engage in close combat, surrounding the flying bear, aren’t they just the best targets to pull into the battle space?"

"Looks like only us Gu Masters should attack now!"

When someone said this, the scene suddenly quietened.

Throwing out the wolf groups and making Gu Masters assault the flying bear phantom was also not feasible!

The flying bear could quickly pull a Gu Master into the battle space. The Gu Master was sure to struggle bitterly to their last breath, using every method they had to keep on living.

There was a very simple way to break the battle space and not give the flying bear enough time to heal: the Gu Master that was pulled in to the battle space needed to immediately suicide.

But no one would want to kill themselves, survival instinct was human nature.

Even Tai Bai Yun Sheng would not be able to save them; Water Demon Hao Ji Liu’s bloody tragedy was a clear example of it.

"The final round is really too difficult. We have gathered so many people with many heroes, but we are actually helpless against this flying bear phantom with our combined strength!"

Flying bear quietly lied down on the ground, vigilantly looking at the crowd. It did not attack and only let out low roars.

"It should not be like this, the crucial thing is we have no way to restrain battle space Gu. We don’t have methods of restriction path and qi path."

"Hei tribe leader, I suggest we change the strategy." Ye Lui Sang was also a tribe leader of a super force, others might not dare to speak up, but he could talk bluntly.

Hei Lou Lan gave a snort but did not reply.

His thoughts moved like lightning: ’Looking at this situation, it is almost impossible to resolve the problem of battle space Gu. It seems like there is only one way, that is for me to go into battle and make the flying bear pull me into the battle space. In the battle space, I can use my strength path killer move and kill the flying bear!"

His strength path killer move was extremely powerful, it was a secret technique of Hei tribe.

Hei Lou Lan could not take care of the flying bear with just the dark path cultivation which he showed on the surface. But if he used his strength path abilities, with the amplification from his Great Strength True Martial Physique, it would not be difficult for him to kill the flying bear.

But if he did so, he would be breaking the sealing effect of Immortal Gu Dark Limit, which would quicken the appearance of the disaster of one of the ten extreme physiques.

"The time I have is already not enough, now if I use my strength path killer move to kill the flying bear, this time will shorten even more. And in this short period of time, I still need to attack another floor, clear a hundred rounds and obtain a strength path Immortal Gu, this difficulty is too large!"

"But if I don’t cross this round, I won’t have a one-edge owner token, so how could I know about the position of the strength path Immortal Gu? Whether I change the strategy or ask for support from the tribe, they both require time!"

"The worst situation will be if I use the strength path killer move, kill this flying bear, obtain a one-edge owner token, but there is no strength path Immortal Gu in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building..."

Hei Lou Lan was hesitating.

This matter concerned his life and death while the path ahead was filled with darkness, even he could not avoid being indecisive and helpless.

"It is not difficult to break the battle space."

One astonishing sentence resounded in the place.

Everyone followed the voice towards its source; it was none other than Wolf King once again.

"Brother Shan Yin, you have another method?" Hei Lou Lan immediately asked.

Fang Yuan smiled: "I should also be making an all-out effort for the fifty-percent reward, right? My plan is divided into three steps. First, we will use long-range methods to exhaust the flying bear’s energy as much as possible. Second, we will send a death warrior to engage in close combat; he will have to immediately suicide if he is pulled into the battle space. Third, the flying bear will have no time to take a breather, and we continue with long-range battle; we will definitely be able to kill this beast once we maintain this plan!"

"Good plan!"

"How could I have not thought of it?"

Some people cheered; some people slapped their thighs loudly in pleasant surprise; while some people inwardly muttered of this plan’s cruelty.

But no matter what they commented, everyone knew this method could solve the problem.

In northern plains where battles occurred frequently, every single tribe possessed death warriors; it was only a matter of whether they had many or few, whether they were elites or ordinary.

Hei tribe was a super force, the death warriors they cultivated were not only many in number, but were also elites.

"This way..." Tai Bai Yun Sheng slightly frowned, disturbed by this plan.

Sun Shi Han’s eyes flashed with brilliance as he looked at Hei Lou Lan without speaking.

Dying in battle and taking the initiative to throw away one’s life were two completely different concepts.

The former was the honor of the brave, while the latter was those in power bringing disaster to other’s lives for their benefits.

If this plan was really to be carried out, Hei Lou Lan, this Hei tribe leader’s reputation would be completely destroyed.

This was against the values of the righteous path.

Being in the righteous path, their biggest concern was reputation.

Those with bad reputation would have a limited achievement in the righteous path. Demonic path was different, no matter what the reputation was, its main value was strength! Thus, within the demonic path, there was the plague-like Hao Ji Liu, as opposed to the life-savior Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Because of this, Sun Shi Han did not attempt to advise this matter.

He was a smart man and knew no matter how he said it or persuaded, it would not be appropriate.

He had even thought of this method earlier, but did not suggest it.

He did not dare.

The current Sun Shi Han was already an external elder of Hei tribe. Once he suggested this, it would be asking to soil his reputation, would he still be able to stay with Hei tribe then?

"Probably only this sinister and cruel Wolf King can say it without any misgivings." Sun Shi Han secretly glanced at Fang Yuan with hatred and fear, his cheeks seemingly twitching in pain.

But what Sun Shi Han did not know was — to Hei Lou Lan, what use would reputation be when his own life was about to be over?!

When Hei Lou Lan heard Fang Yuan’s plan, he immediately decided to use it.

But he still frowned and thought for a long while, hesitating, pitifully sighing and showing a profound ’merciful’ expression. Finally, he heaved a long sigh and spoke a pile of erudite words.

The main idea was: They were forced to use this plan. The tribesmen who die will be given grand burial by him as a brother, and he will personally take care of their family, give compensation, and so on.

Everyone knew it, but they could not point it out, this was the game rule of the righteous path.

After going through this process, Hei Lou Lan immediately summoned Hei tribe’s death warriors to enter the battle.

These death warriors from Hei tribe were all of rank two cultivation and had been brought up by Hei tribe since youth, imbued day and night with the ideology of loyalty to the tribe.

As for rank three death warriors, it was not that there were none of them. But once they reach rank three, they would become a precious resource and almost every one of them would be free from the status of a death warrior.

Only super forces would have a number of death warriors of rank three and even rank four cultivation, but they would not use them so lightly.

Hei Lou Lan was this generation’s Hei tribe leader and if he sent these death warriors to their deaths, they could not refuse him.

If the emperor wants his subjects dead, the subjects need to die no matter what, regardless of their will!

This was the system.

The following battle went without any accidents.

The battle persisted till more than ten death warriors were sacrificed, and the flying bear phantom finally collapsed on the ground, breathing its last.

But when everyone wanted to deliver the final strike, they suddenly discovered they could not even budge.

"What is happening?!"

"It is Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s power making us not able to move!"

"This, isn’t this too shameless. Only a move more and we could kill this flying bear!"

Everyone shouted and raged at this stupefying situation.

Only Fang Yuan’s expression was tranquil, he had a six-edge owner token and knew that this round was over.

Hei Lou Lan also felt this and immediately took out his owner token, fixing his gaze at it and saw an edge gradually emerging from the originally round owner token.

At the same time, a strong sense of fortune entered the depths of his heart, letting him know that he was in full control of this floor.

’So we had no need to kill the flying bear in this final round and only needed to beat it to near death!’ Hei Lou Lan was exulted inwardly, but showed a mournful expression on his face, sighing, "Everyone, do not fret, the battle has ended, we were successful, this round is crossed. Sigh... what happened to my Hei tribe’s children was truly a pity. If not for the battle space isolating the connection between the inside and outside, I would have definitely used puppets or wild Gu to replace them."

"Passed... we passed?" Everyone was shocked and excited.

"Tribe leader Hei Lou Lan, I wonder what the rewards for this round are? Is it possible to let this old man broaden his horizons." Tai Bai Yun Sheng inquired. The motive for him entering Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was lifespan Gu. However, lifespan Gu was rare and precious and could only appear as the rewards for ninetieth or above rounds.

Hei Lou Lan revealed a peculiar expression at the inquiry and pointed at the dying flying bear phantom: "That is this round’s reward."

"What?"

"This flying bear phantom?"

"How could it be?"

Everyone was shocked once again, only Fang Yuan knew clearly.

He possessed a six-edge owner token, and knew the rewards for any round of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s current floors like the back of his palm. Before even tackling this round, he knew of this round’s reward - it was a rank six phantom path Immortal Gu with a simple to understand name - flying bear phantom Gu.

Sure enough, at the next moment, under everyone’s astonished gazes, the dying giant flying bear gradually turned into an enormous ball of white light.

The white light shrunk rapidly, finally turning into a speck of light that flew towards Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan quickly received it and carefully observed it.

He was the master of the owner token, the reward for passing this round was his. He had just come into contact with this flying bear phantom Gu, but easily refined it because of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s power.

Fang Yuan’s six-edge owner token was different. It was created from exploitation and could only receive the floor’s rewards after taking control of the floor. Naturally, it was not like it could not contest against Hei Lou Lan’s owner token, but once they contested, Giant Sun’s will would awaken which would cause a great loss to him, or even face a tragic end.

This risk was better not taken if possible.

Flying bear phantom Gu was looking very dim, its aura was weak like it was near death, its condition was extremely poor.

But Hei Lou Lan was unable to take his eyes off it. What was this?

’This is an Immortal Gu!’

He had just sighed with emotions inwardly when a voice sounded in his ears: "This Immortal Gu, give it to me."

The tone of the voice was flat, but it could not suppress the determination within.

Hei Lou Lan immediately frowned, he did not need to look around to know who the speaker was.

Who else had guts to mention such a request besides Wolf King Chang Shan Yin?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

When Fang Yuan publicly requested the flying bear phantom Gu, Hei Lou Lan’s immediate reaction was to object immediately.

This was an Immortal Gu!

Even an ordinary Gu Immortal would not obtain one easily. No matter how amazing Wolf King was, he was only a mortal, he dared to make such an absurd request?!

Moreover, this flying bear phantom Gu was extremely easy to use.

With just a single thought, and a toss of the Gu, one could make the Gu worm transform into the flying bear phantom and engage in combat.

Although the flying bear phantom’s battle strength was not as terrifying as the desolate beast flying bear, it definitely had half-immortal battle strength, with this Gu, one could easily dominate the mortal realm.

If during the Immortal Court contest, Hei Lou Lan had such an Immortal Gu...

There would be no place for Fang Yuan to display his abilities!

Fang Yuan opened asked for it, it was very rude. However, even though Hei Lou Lan was furious, he felt that this was only natural.

After all, only a person like Chang Shan Yin would have the guts to make such a request in public.

Looking at the flying bear phantom Gu in his hand, Hei Lou Lan slowly calmed down.

"Not good, the flying bear phantom was half beaten to death by us, this Immortal Gu’s condition is extremely poor, it cannot be used now, it has to recover for some time."

"An injured Immortal Gu needs an Immortal Gu to heal it. Other than that, it can only self recover, but during that period it would need to consume lots of food, unceasingly."

"If I did not remember wrongly, this flying bear phantom Gu’s food is the desolate beast flying bear’s flesh and blood. This is problematic! How can I have such a thing? I have to seek help from the tribe’s immortals."

The more Hei Lou Lan thought about it, the more his anger subsided.

He was of the ten extreme physique’s Great Strength True Martial Physique, he needed a strength path Immortal Gu to ascend to Gu Immortal realm and escape the threat of death.

The flying bear phantom Gu was not something he needed, what he desperately wanted now was a strength path Immortal Gu.

"My most important priority at the moment is to find a strength path Immortal Gu. Immortal Gu are often only given at the final round of a floor, during the process of completing this, I will need everyone’s strength."

Although Hei Lou Lan was not afraid of Chang Shan Yin, if he forcefully kept the flying bear phantom Gu, then the Wolf King would definitely become enemies with him. With that gap between them, there was no way he could utilize the Wolf King’s strength again.

He might as well give this Immortal Gu to him, to exchange for his strength, and truly help and benefit Hei Lou Lan himself.

This way, Hei Lou Lan’s reputation could be preserved as well, no one would say that he went back on his words.

Hei Lou Lan made many considerations, but this was only a moment in real time.

"Hmph hmph," Sun Shi Han snickered, " Lord Wolf King, this is an Immortal Gu, you want to take it just like that? My tribe leader promised you half the rewards earlier, but that does not mean we need to give you the Immortal Gu."

"It seems the lesson I gave you earlier was not enough." Fang Yuan heard this and frowned lightly, his gaze turned ice cold as his killing intent was released fully, towards Sun Shi Han.

Sun Shi Han’s expression changed instantly, and he could not help but move closer to Hei Lou Lan.

No one questioned if Fang Yuan would have the guts to directly execute the killing blow.

The ferocity of Wolf King was ingrained in everyone’s hearts.

"Hahaha." Hei Lou Lan laughed loudly, walking towards Fang Yuan as he patted his chest: "A true gentleman never goes back on his words! Earlier, I promised the Wolf King half the rewards, then it shall be fifty percent. It was all due to brother Shan Yin’s brilliant plan that allowed us to get through this round, I will add another ten percent of reward, but the Immortal Gu is unique, its value is immeasurable, even with your sixty percent reward, in what way are you going to compensate the remaining forty percent to us?"

"That’s right, we put in much effort too!"

"I have heavy injuries now, I did not retreat amidst the fierce combat, everyone can be my witness. Even Lord Water Demon Hao Ji Liu died because of this!"

"I believe Lord Wolf King will give us a good solution."

Everyone said in agreement, it was all targeted at Fang Yuan.

Even though Fang Yuan had great strength, but wealth moved people’s hearts, everyone was filled with envy, jealousy and hatred upon seeing that an Immortal Gu was going to fall into his hands. Thus, they pushed all of their unhappiness towards Fang Yuan.

Under everyone’s gaze, Fang Yuan frowned deeper and deeper.

Hei Lou Lan laughed secretly: "Wolf King, oh Wolf King, even with your ferocious reputation and outstanding strength, you will still eventually be captured by me."

Seven days later.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s seventh layer, the ninetieth round.

In the maze, the flying bear phantom was roaring at the sky.

Its body was covered in wounds, blood was oozing at its mouth, and several of its sharp teeth had broken. Its right eye was blinded, hanging outside its socket like a grape, it was in bad shape.

But it only had one enemy.

He was floating in the air, with six arms on his back, compared to the hill-like flying bear phantom which had a massive body, he was very small.

But the flying bear phantom was serious and vigilant like it was facing a strong enemy. After they had battled for fifteen minutes, it could deeply feel how powerful this ’tiny’ enemy was.

"Flying bear phantom Gu, it is deservedly an Immortal Gu! Even after turning into the flying bear phantom, it retains much wisdom, and is quite shrewd, in the future when I face strong foes, I can use it to restrain them and that can help me save a lot of energy."

Fang Yuan looked at the flying bear phantom below him as he evaluated in his heart.

Seven days ago, Hei Lou Lan gathered the band of experts and broke through the final round of the fifth floor, obtaining the flying bear phantom Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan was blunt and unrestrained, as he immediately asked for it.

Even though the other Gu Masters were jealous and envious, trying to come up with endless excuses against this, Fang Yuan announced that he was willing to compensate the remaining half of the Gu’s worth, while giving an unrelenting attitude. Eventually, Hei Lou Lan gave this Gu to Fang Yuan.

With this Gu, Fang Yuan went to Hei Lou Lan that night and borrowed resources, establishing a contract with him in secret.

After returning, he used Hu Immortal blessed land to connect to treasure yellow heaven, exchanging for the relevant Gu worms and food, and during the sixth day, the flying bear phantom Gu was restored to its healthy state.

By the seventh day, Fang Yuan secretly entered the seventh floor of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, personally testing the flying bear phantom Gu and the finalized killer move six arm heavenly zombie king.

Fang Yuan ordered the flying bear phantom Gu to attack him without holding back, while he himself used the six arm heavenly zombie king to fight back.

Flying bear phantom Gu was an Immortal Gu, it had half the battle strength of the flying bear, but it was not Fang Yuan’s match when he was in six arm heavenly zombie king mode.

Fang Yuan was very satisfied with this result.

He thought about it in his mind: "The killer move six arm heavenly zombie king is indeed formidable! It uses borrow strength Gu as the core to borrow the natural strength of heaven, earth, fire, water and others, sustaining itself by allowing a steady and endless torrent of strength to be supplied."

"Most amazingly, it can transform my body into a zombie’s body temporarily, this way, my body will be in a half-dead state, my recovery speed will increase greatly and my sense of pain will reduce, I would be in the state of near unlimited energy and strength, I can do anything!"

If it was an ordinary living body, constantly using strength would tire it out. But by becoming a heavenly zombie, Fang Yuan could avoid such a weakness.

This kind of strength and feeling was intoxicating for Fang Yuan, but it also made him more alert.

"I can only maintain this form for a short period of time, during intense battle, I will have to commit to the battle fully and I would not recognise the flow of time. Although this killer move is great and gives me a good feeling, it is easy to get addicted and lost when using it. I must never forget the time limit of this killer move, otherwise the consequences would be severe!"

The killer move six arm heavenly zombie king was powerful, but had a time limit. Once the time limit was exceeded, the Gu Master might turn into a real zombie from over usage.

The severity of this surpassed even the ten extreme physique’s disaster, even if he used the yin-yang rotation Gu, he could not recover.

Fang Yuan wanted to get rid of this weakness, but Mo Yao’s requirements were too strict, Fang Yuan could not find a suitable person to test the Gu.

"Actually, you have not fully unleashed the true power of this flying bear phantom Gu." At this time, Mo Yao’s will in Fang Yuan’s mind spoke.

"Oh, what do you mean?"

Mo Yao had some understanding regarding phantom path: "Phantom path, it focuses on the forms of phantom and solid, during the initial stage from rank one to five, phantom is the foundation, using phantom form to avoid attacks. Thus, phantom path Gu masters often lack attacking power, but have ample defensive measures. But at rank six and above, phantom path Gu Immortals have both offense and defense, by turning into phantom and solid form at will, they can go into the defensive phantom mode, nullifying all forms of attacks, and also turn phantom into solid, attacking people when they least expect it."

"The flying bear phantom Gu is a phantom path Immortal Gu, it was created by killing the desolate beast flying bear and using all of its skin, bones, flesh, blood, and soul to refine it. Just the flying bear phantom Gu alone has half the strength of the real flying bear. But if it was given accompanying Gu worms, like the battle space Gu, grand chaotic dance Gu, five element bear skin Gu and others, its battle strength would surge greatly."

Mo Yao’s words made Fang Yuan nod repeatedly.

He recalled the fight when they were at the final round, precisely because of the flying bear phantom’s Gu worms could it have a huge boost in battle strength, even causing the band of experts to be helpless.

But after the battle, battle space Gu was taken by Hei Lou Lan, and the remaining Gu worms were also taken by other people.

Fang Yuan was fighting the flying bear phantom alone in secret, the flying bear phantom had no Gu worms left, thus, Fang Yuan could have the upper hand when fighting.

He had some degree of comprehension in this: "Looking at it from another angle, complementing the flying bear phantom Gu with other Gu worms is exactly like using multiple Gu worms at once. Isn’t this a killer move?"

Killer moves are a Gu Master’s unique creation, using many Gu worms at the same time together to create an effect greater than when used individually, unleashing great strength.

Mo Yao nodded in agreement: "Your comprehension is completely right, that is so. However, what truly complements the flying bear phantom Gu are only phantom path Gu worms. Forget the rest, just a single turn phantom Gu would allow the flying bear phantom Gu to turn from solid to phantom form, evading all sorts of attacks."

"Turn phantom Gu?" Fang Yuan’s heart shook uncontrollably.

He could completely imagine that when the turn phantom Gu is used with the flying bear phantom Gu, it would become an extremely troublesome enemy.

This could transform the usage of flying bear phantom Gu completely, achieving a true qualitative change to a degree.

Mo Yao laughed lightly, saying: "Lad, as long as you return Water Pavilion to Spirit Affinity House properly, I will tell you the details of three phantom path inheritances, among them, one is likely to be a phantom path Gu Immortal inheritance."

"We’ll talk about that later." Fang Yuan calmed down, replying in a plain tone.

He had never removed his alertness towards Mo Yao.

Although Mo Yao did not displayed any hostile intentions, Fang Yuan had always felt a sense of danger in his heart.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Time passed by rapidly and a month had passed.

Northern plains.

The wind raged and snow fluttered around.

The world was a scene of white as the white snow covered the large grassland. Bone chilling wind blew everywhere; occasionally, it would form into a tornado and occasionally, it would lift the deep snow on the ground.

Every ten years, the blizzard disaster devastated the whole of northern plains. Living beings lamented and all things turned destitute. At a few limited places, the surviving humans and animals were struggling for their lives.

They not only had to overcome the frigid climate, but also needed to engage in fierce combat against snow monsters and other battles.

However, in such a cruel environment, snowmen were like fish in water, moving very frequently and becoming extremely lively.

The ice cold blizzard was merely a warm spring wind to snowmen.

They hunted in this blizzard, and large numbers of wild snow path, ice path and water path Gu worms started to live one after another on their body.

The snowmen tribes who were hunted by the Gu Masters, beaten down and sold during normal times, were now experiencing enormous growth. Their forces expanded rapidly.

In the raging blizzard, two dark figures appeared.

The dark figures stood on a cliff, overflowing with immortal aura; they were Hei tribe’s two Gu Immortals — Hei Bai and Hei Cheng.

They looked down towards the valley under them.

The blizzard was still wild, but it was not even able to sway the two’s clothes. The snow fluttered madly, but was not able to obstruct the two’s probing gazes.

In the valley, many ice houses were built, packed together with the numbers reaching several tens of thousands.

A group of heroic snowmen warriors had just returned from their hunt. They had returned with great harvests once again.

Rank six wood path Gu Immortal Hei Bai frowned: "Hmph, this group of snowmen is taking advantage of this time period to grow so rapidly! In these three days, this is already the seventh tribe we have seen of such a scale."

Those who are not my race have different motives, although snowmen had men in their name, they were still variant humans.

When the blizzard ends, northern plains’ tribes would actively start developing which was bound to result in many large battles with these snowmen.

To human tribes, such a large number of snowmen meant their enemy was more in number and stronger.

Hei Cheng patted Hei Bai’s shoulder, smiling: "Virtuous brother should be happy. Looking at it from another angle, these snowmen are our wealth! We can take these snowmen as captives and not only exchange them for immortal essence stones with other Gu Immortals, we can also give Xue Song Zi something to cry about."

The corners of Hei Bai’s lips raised to an arc: "Elder brother thinks in a comprehensive way. If not for Xue Song Zi, the wooden chicken Gu would have already been in my hands. And he even meddled in the last Imperial Court contest. These days, we have been hunting snowmen everywhere and selling them in treasure yellow heaven. Hehehe, I really want to see how Xue Song Zi’s expression is like now."

But the moment he finished saying this, his smile disappeared and his gaze revealed a trace of anxiety: "Elder brother, Hei Lou Lan has already been in Imperial Court for so long, and according to the time, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building should have already formed over twenty floors. Why is there still no trace of wooden chicken Gu?"

Hei Cheng laughed: "Do not fret, do not fret. Eighty-Eight True Yang Building has altogether eighty-eight floors, this is not much. Hei Lou Lan, this kid might have a irascible temper, but he is meticulous when it comes to the big picture. He hasn’t broken off the contact with us since he entered Imperial Court, isn’t that right? Moreover, he now already has one-edge owner token, as long as wooden chicken Gu is involved in the creation of a new floor, Hei Lou Lan can sense it, and we will receive the news."

Hei tribe was a super force, although they did not have ability in exploiting the flaws that could match the level of Fairy Mo Yao, they had their own ways to use Gu worms to transfer messages inside and out.

Hei Bai sighed: "Imperial Court blessed land and northern plains’ outside world have differing time flow. A day here in the outside world is equal to over twenty days in Imperial Court blessed land. I am somewhat worried Hei Lou Lan’s notice will be late, and if so, the help we can provide will be small."

Hei Cheng comforted with a smile: "Virtuous brother, the more you worry, the more frantic you will get. Relax, according to Hei Lou Lan’s strength, getting through three or four floors would not be a problem. Before this, we’d better take care of this group of snowmen."

"Okay." Hei Bai’s worry was slightly relieved, as he nodded.

The two shot down like lightning, directly charging into the snowman tribe within the valley.

Hei Cheng chuckled.

Instantly, an unrestrained laughter shook the world, stopping even the moving clouds! The whole valley buzzed from the tremor and the majestic snowfall also slowed.

Crash crash crash....

The soundwave swept through the valley, crushing countless ice buildings into fine powder.

The snowman tribe instantly suffered serious losses!

"Enemy attack! Enemy attack!"

"A strong enemy has appeared. Warriors, it is time to protect our homeland!!"

"Protect our homeland. Remember, we cannot fall down, behind us are our wives, children and parents!"

Snowmen were in an uproar, and after a short moment of panic, they prepared to resist.

"Hmph, overestimating your strength." Hei Bai looked at the snowmen flocking together while floating in midair, his gaze apathetic like he was looking at a group of ants.

He lightly waves his sleeve - buzzz buzzz buzzz.....

A black mass of Gu groups flew out. First the number was in hundreds, then thousands, then it reached tens of thousands.

Finally, the several hundreds of thousands of Gu hovered over the valley like dark clouds pressing down on a city.

The snowmen looked at the sky, their expression filled with terror and lifelessness. The fighting spirit and heroic feelings they raised up just a moment ago, froze completely in front of a Gu Immortal’s might.

At this moment, they were truly able to feel the bone-piercing chill of the blizzard.

Gu Immortals possessed immortal essence, a bead of immortal essence could be regarded as unlimited primeval essence. This meant every single Gu Immortal could control large numbers of mortal Gu, and would never be lacking in primeval essence.

The snowman tribes might be flourishing, but in front of a Gu Immortal’s battle strength, they were like lambs waiting for slaughter and could only let themselves be trampled upon.

Next moment, Hei Bai lightly pointed and the Gu groups pounced down loudly.

Mournful sounds started resounding and echoing endlessly in the valley.

A dozen or so days later...

Imperial Court blessed land.

Hei Lou Lan slowly put down the letter Gu in his hand, sneering.

The letter Gu came from Hei tribe’ Gu Immortal, its content was the same as before, still urging Hei Lou Lan to speed up the search for wooden chicken Gu.

There was originally no way to send messages from or to Imperial Court blessed land, but after so many years had gone by, even if it was an arrangement by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, it could not stand the erosion of the river of time, and a few flaws appeared.

Although they did not have capability in exploiting this on Fairy Mo Yao’s level, the super forces like Hei tribe and Liu tribe had polished the methods to send the message.

"Once a Gu Master advances to an immortal, their physique would thoroughly raise to a higher level and would possess immortal essence. Mortals simply cannot be an immortal’s opponent, to deal with Gu Immortal requires a Gu Immortal!"

"Strength path Immortal Gu..."

Hei Lou Lan softly muttered then slowly stood up from his seat and walked towards the window.

He looked up at the gorgeous aurora moving at the summit of the sacred palace. Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s newest floor had condensed at this moment.

"Thirty-eighth floor." Hei Lou Lan sighed. Having seen this scene so many times, he no longer had the excitement like before when he saw it for the first time. But his esteem towards Old Ancestor Giant Sun, had now reached the level of prostrating himself in admiration before the old ancestor’s heavenly methods every time he saw the scene of True Yang Building condensing a floor.

"Only with Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and Old Ancestor Giant Sun’s power, I can take my revenge!" Hei Lou Lan took out his owner token.

So much time had passed by but his owner token was still one-edge owner token.

Hei Lou Lan knew of history and also knew his own strength.

The current forces, compared to the past winners of the Imperial Court contest, were not bad but also could not be considered too good. Taking everything into account, it was only enough to cross three-four floors.

Hei Lou Lan wanted to acquire his strength path Immortal Gu, but also had the tribe responsibility of getting wooden chicken Immortal Gu. This meant the quota for two clearances was already filled.

Hence, these days, he restrained himself from taking action, making recuperation his priority, and at the same time, he still opened up Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, letting Gu Masters increase their strength as much as possible.

Naturally, he did this to make the Gu Masters, outside of Hei tribe, thankful and admire him. And naturally, many among Hei tribe were dissatisfied and puzzled by it, but mindful of Black Tyrant’s fierce reputation, none dared to speak up.

"Messenger." Hei Lou Lan softly called.

His trusted aide Hei Shu immediately appeared before him and quietly kneeled down, speaking with a lowered head: "Lord tribe leader, please instruct."

"How is the recent situation?" Hei Lou Lan rubbed the owner token, his gaze still at Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

"The situation looks to be steady recently, but undercurrents are starting to surge. Chang tribe’s Gu Masters have repeatedly been killed, many Gu Masters have mysteriously disappeared when going out. Chang tribe leader Chang Ji You has personally moved out, searching everywhere to capture the killers, but no gains have been made. Instead, the attacks on Chang tribe’s Gu Masters have become even more serious." Hei Shu reported.

"Eh, who has such guts?"

Hei Shu revealed an ashamed expression: "Subordinate is still investigating."

Hei Lou Lan slightly nodded, his tone revealing some slight joy in another’s calamity: "No need to hurry, hehe, we shouldn’t hurry in this matter. Chang Shan Yin’s actions are too sinister and cruel, losing favour with people, and now he is tasting the bitter consequences. A few months ago, he wiped out the earth chief beast group and assigned Chang tribe’s Gu Masters to capture many Gu Masters, and he actually killed all of them! Hmph, this had already aroused public anger, but fearing Wolf King’s reputation, no one dared to take actions though they had the heart for revenge."

Hei Lou Lan remembered this clearly.

Because, among these unlucky Gu Masters Fang Yuan captured to do experiments on, were some people who had some relations to Hei Lou Lan.

Wolf King actually did not give him face and killed these people; Hei Lou Lan had secretly been bearing this grudge all this time.

"Tribe leader is wise, subordinate and others also think this is the case." Hei Shu flattered and said in agreement, "Chang tribe leader might be Chang Ji You, but he is Wolf King’s son and was appointed as the tribe leader with one sentence from Wolf King. He is too young and cannot appease the tribesmen. The whole of Chang tribe’s affairs actually lie with Chang Ji You’s godfather Chang Biao."

"But not long ago, the death of the two lords Chang Biao and Pan Ping while roaming seventh floor’s ninetieth round, had spread. There was an indistinct commotion within Chang tribe and Chang Ji You has been finding it hard to maintain Chang tribe’s situation. The avenger saw this great opportunity, and maybe because they had received a great increase in strength from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s rewards, they have been killing Chang tribe’s Gu Masters everywhere."

"Hmm." Hei Lou Lan nodded, Hei Shu’s analysis was similar to his own thoughts.

"Quickly investigate this person. Taking revenge wholeheartedly in spite of Wolf King’s fierceness, this is bravery. Killing Chang tribe’s Gu Masters and not being found even after so many days, this is scheming. This person is brave and can scheme, they should be taken into my Hei tribe. And also, only my Hei tribe can protect their life." Hei Lou Lan instructed.

"Yes, lord."

"Are there any movements from Chang Shan Yin?"

"Ever since Chang Biao’s corpse was found and delivered to Chang tribe, maybe Wolf King found some clues from the corpse, he entered Eighty-Eight True Yang Building that very day and has yet to come out now. Subordinate had sent people to inquire, Wolf King should have gone to seventh floor’s ninetieth maze round. Ever since he entered, people have often reported hearing the howls of wolf groups." Hei Shu reported.

Hei Lou Lan frowned.

Chang Biao, Pan Ping and Water Demon Hao Ji Liu’s deaths were something he had not wanted to see.

But since they were already dead, Hei Lou Lan could only accept this fact.

He could complete forecast once Wolf King exited the tower and knew of Chang tribe’s misfortunes, he would fly up in rage, searching for the killer. At that time, the whole sacred palace might be turned upside down.

Hei Lou Lan was looking forward to Wolf King attracting every more public anger, but he worried Wolf King would even implicate the innocents and start massacring everywhere which would greatly weaken the forces to mobilize in passing the rounds.

Hei Lou Lan must prevent this from happening. But how to prevent it?

Hei Lou Lan fell into silence as he started thinking.

Hei Shu was calmly kneeling down, patiently waiting for Hei Lou Lan’s next command.

Hei Lou Lan did not think for long before an amazed expression appeared on his face.

His gaze instantly turned sharp as he once again looked at Eighty-Eight True Yang Building on the summit of the sacred palace.

There, the thirty-ninth floor was slowly condensing into shape.

Although it had yet to form, Hei Lou Lan was able to know the Gu worms in this floor through his one-edge owner token.

’Wooden chicken Gu! Wooden chicken Gu has finally appeared!’

Hei Lou Lan’s mind was shaken, but soon he calmed down and his gaze quickly moved towards Hei Shu.

"Go, summon Ma Ying Jie to see me. Immediately!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ma Ying Jie heard the summons and quickly hurried to pay a visit.

As Hei tribe’s greatest opponent — Ma tribe had suffered disastrous losses in the decisive battle. Ma tribe’s experts were almost completely annihilated, but the young tribe leader Ma Ying Jie was luckily rescued and bravely rose to take the great responsibility of a tribe leader.

His original plan had been to hole up in warm pond valley and recover as much as possible. But Hei Lou Lan brought his army to the valley and forcibly annexed Ma tribe.

Thus, Ma tribe had not alternative but to follow Hei tribe to Imperial Court blessed land.

Ma Ying Jie had thought Hei Lou Lan wanted to get rid of Ma tribe’s name and completely swallow Ma tribe. For this reason, he expended great effort and even accepted outsiders, giving them the surname ’Ma’.

But the situation he had anticipated never happened. Not only this, Ma tribe did not receive any severe duties from Hei Lou Lan’s side even after arriving at Imperial Court blessed land, instead they were treated without discrimination. Hei Lou Lan selflessly opened up Eighty-Eight True Yang Building to the public from where Ma tribe had obtained many gains. Right now, the whole of Ma tribe was able to recover favorably and the tribe’s forces were prospering day by day.

However, there was no free lunch in the world, Ma Ying Jie had been on tenterhooks because of this.

With Hei Lou Lan’s sudden summons, the unease in his heart immediately increased several times, reaching the extreme limit.

Hei Lou Lan smiled when he looked at Ma Ying Jie: "Ma tribe leader, has Ma tribe been well these days?"

Ma Ying Jie was on guard inwardly and immediately replied: "It is good. We must thank you, lord tribe leader, for disregarding previous enmity and being magnanimous. Ma tribe was on its last breath, but now has recovered some vitality."

"If I am not wrong, Ma tribe received help from Snowy Mountain blessed land’s demonic path immortal Xue Song Zi in this contest, right?" Hei Lou Lan asked amiably.

Ma Ying Jie was tongue-tied, cold sweat started flowing down from his body, and he was not able to speak a word.

Ma tribe, who possessed Huang Jin bloodline, privately joined hands with a demonic path Gu Immortal, this undoubtedly broke the rules Ancestor Giant Sun had set.

’Is Hei Lou Lan looking to settle the score at this time? Damn it, right now, he holds the knife while I am the fish, he only needs to casually say a sentence and Ma tribe would be finished!" Ma Ying Jie was very nervous, revitalizing Ma tribe was his wish, Ma tribe was what he cherished most in his life.

"Hahaha." Hei Lou Lan laughed heartily, his laughter resounding in the study, "Ma tribe leader, no need to worry, as long as you cooperate obediently, glory and riches will come gushing forth."

"Tribe leader, please explain." Ma Ying Jie gnashed his teeth.

A wise man submits to circumstances; with such a pressing situation, he had no choice but to lower his head.

"What?"

However, Hei Lou Lan’s next words shocked Ma Ying Jie, his dumbstruck expression frozen like a statue.

...

Snowy Mountain blessed land.

The lofty Snowy Mountain peaked through the clouds. The clear blue sky shone with dazzling brilliance.

On the fifth branch peak of the mountain range.

Within the Ice Lake Palace, a negotiation was reaching its end.

Xue Song Zi’s expression was worried as he looked at Demon Lord Long Dan, saying impatiently: "Demon Lord, don’t forget who it was that lent you immortal essence stones and settled your debt during your emergency. It was me! Now I have some small troubles and am asking you for help, but you are using all sorts of excuses, isn’t this too disappointing? Is the grand Demon Lord Long Dan such a petty person?"

Demon Lord Long Dan sipped his tea with a smile, his tone calm: "Lord Song Zi, please speak cautiously. The friendship from before, I still remember and have not forgotten even a little. But this time, Lord Song Zi, your troubles are not small. If I helped you, it would be offending Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals. My business at treasure yellow heaven has just recently taken somewhat of a turn for the better, it cannot endure such an attack."

Xue Song Zi made a living out of selling snowmen and had made a lot of wealth. But in these recent months, his business at treasure yellow heaven was intensely impacted by Hei tribe.

Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals wantonly hunted snowmen and sold them at low prices, destroying the established standards and benefits of selling snowmen slaves.

This was an unconventional confrontation and would implicate extensively on him. Xue Song Zi could only take up the challenge to protect his source of revenue, and was barely able to draw a stalemate against Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals.

Although he had riches, but he was after all only a lone force.

To a super force like Hei tribe which had been engaging in business over thousands of years, he paled by comparison.

Thus, he was gradually unable to bear it and began to request help from the surrounding Gu Immortals.

Demon Lord Long Dan’s calm appearance made Xue Song Zi angry and anxious: "Demon Lord, don’t beat around the bush, speak up, how can I make you take action?"

Demon Lord Long Dan laughed heartily, his bright eyes stared at Xue Song Zi: "Lord Song Zi, I know you have a hundred year lifespan Gu in your possession. As long as you give it to me, I will definitely use all my strength to help you!"

Xue Song Zi immediately stood up from the seat and pointed at Demon Lord Long Dan: "Do you feel no shame in making such a request?"

Demon Lord Long Dan raised his brows and said with a gloomy voice: "Why would I feel shame? Who would make a move without good cause? Xue Song Zi, I persuade you to not be impulsive, if you point your finger at me again, I will start to get angry."

"Hmph." Xue Song Zi knew he was not Demon Lord Long Dan’s match and lowered his finger with a snort, then he flicked his sleeve and left.

Demon Lord Long Dan also did not make him stay, looking darkly at his receding figure before letting out a snort. He had already disliked Xue Song Zi for his ordinarily arrogant attitude whilst holding plenty of spare wealth.

Back then, when he asked for immortal essence stones from Xue Song Zi, Xue Song Zi actually dared to lend at an exorbitant rate of interest.

Demon Lord Long Dan had suffered a big loss and had always been keeping it in his mind.

Xue Song Zi returned to his seventh branch peak with an ashen expression.

He sat on a mat, and with no others present, his tight expression finally relaxed as he heaved a deep sigh.

"If I had known this before, I would not have meddled in the Imperial Court contest." He regretted it deeply.

Winner takes all.

Previously, he had invested a lot in the Imperial Court contest, but received no gains. Now, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals were making it difficult for him, and he was not even able to guard his own financial source which was the basis of his status.

"In the end, it is still the righteous path who are united while demonic path has separated minds. Snowy Mountain blessed land has so many demonic path Gu Immortals, but I cannot obtain the help from even one. In contrast, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals involve the assistance of many forces and are suppressing me together."

"Sigh, in this battle, my many years of accumulation have all been used up, resulting in serious losses to me. The water in the Imperial Court contest runs too deep, it is not something I can tread upon. So many demonic path Gu Immortals had involved themselves in Imperial Court contest before, but how many obtained a good ending? Sigh, I got greedy because of wooden chicken Gu and thought that since I had already offended Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals, I might as well directly go further and meddle. But I did not know how many demonic path Gu Immortals were mocking me behind my back. Sigh, it is time to reflect upon myself!"

Xue Song Zi kept on sighing and just when he was going to finish pondering his painful experience in attempting to learn from it, a letter Gu travelled through space and appeared in front of him.

"Eh, isn’t this the letter Gu I gave to Ma tribe to contact me?"

Xue Song Zi was baffled. He held the letter Gu and searched it with his mind before immediately revealing an astonished expression: "What, what does this mean? Hei Lou Lan actually wants to cooperate with me?"

Xue Song Zi scoffed in disdain: "Using wooden chicken Gu as the bait, do you think I will be fooled? Maybe this is another scheme of Hei tribe! Huh, wait a moment, this actually....does Hei Lou Lan really want to work with me? Interesting, hahahaha, interesting!!"

After over half a month....

"Mother! Mother!!" Hei Lou Lan suddenly woke up on the bed.

He was panting and his body was soaked with cold sweat.

A good while later, his eyes gradually recovered their focus.

The nightmare once again.

Since long ago, this nightmare had been tormenting him.

This nightmare was like a pile of firewood that ignited the fire of revenge in his heart, every time it occured.

Recovering his breath, Hei Lou Lan got up from the bed.

His body was obese like a black bear. His triangular eyes began flickering with terrifying sharp light. Only his face had the expression of heavy exhaustion.

But by the time he pushed open the window, this exhaustion was already concealed by him, replaced by a savage and tyrannical aura.

He gazed up at Eighty-Eight True Yang Building while pondering over the cooperation with Xue Song Zi.

In the letter, he had taken great risk, speaking his greatest secret, and delivering crucial Gu worms as a pledge, before he was able to obtain Xue Song Zi’s trust.

Now, the thirty-ninth floor had already been formed for quite some time. The cooperation between him and Xue Song Zi was progressing very well. Benefitting from this demonic path Gu Immortal’s help, Hei Lou Lan was able to smoothly break through the rounds in the thirty-ninth floor.

His action was betraying Hei tribe.

Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals would absolutely not let him go.

Hei Lou Lan did not even have the confidence of being able to conceal this matter for long.

But he knew clearly, he was safe as long as he was within Imperial Court blessed land. Imperial Court blessed land prohibited the entry of Gu Immortals.

At this stage, he was no longer able to turn back and could only move forward until his death. But the most crucial thing in Hei Lou Lan’s plan, the strength path Immortal Gu which could change the whole situation, was yet to appear.

He could only continue to wait.

...

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, seventh floor.

Ninetieth round.

"Chang Ji You pays respects to Lord Supreme Elder." Chang Ji You kneeled down with an ashamed expression.

"Do you know why I called you?" Fang Yuan stood in front of him, and said in an indifferent tone.

"I am ashamed, I failed to live up to Lord Supreme Elder’s trust. I am extremely incompetent, letting the killer get away with it to this day, muffled thuds sounded out as his forehead smashed on the ground.

Soon, blood could be seen on his forehead.

Fang Yuan snorted: "You know yourself and know your incompetence. Don’t kowtow anymore, stand up and answer."

"Subordinate, subordinate does not dare."

"Get up." Fang Yuan emphasized once again, his tone was calm but it was filled with a will that could not be disobeyed.

Chang Ji You stood up with his head lowered, blood slowly flowed down his cheeks, making him look very miserable.

"Sigh." Fang Yuan sighed softly before touching the wound on Chang Ji You’s forehead.

White light appeared, and under the power of a healing gu, Chang Ji You’s wound rapidly healed without even leaving a scar.

Chang Ji You’s body trembled, his eyes couldn’t help but release two flowing lines of warm tears.

Ever since the "father and son" had met, this was the first time Chang Shan Yin had done such an intimate action to his son Chang Ji You.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan wiped Chang Ji You’s tears and said with a mild tone like a spring wind: "What are you crying for, I am Wolf King and you are my son, you can only shed blood and not tears."

Chang Ji You’s mind shook fiercely like he had been struck by lightning, when he heard the word ’son’.

An enormous joy engulfed Chang Ji You’s mind like a tsunami: ’Father finally recognizes me as his son, he called me son with his own mouth!!!"

The grievances that had accumulated in his heart, the pressure he felt, the anger and shame he had put aside, the sorrow at his adoptive father’s death, everything was dispelled at this moment.

He involuntarily was about to cry tears of joy but Fang Yuan’s words lingered in his ears and he endured painfully, his expression twisted and he even bit his lips, but the tears still flowed out with no end.

He opened his mouth, wanting to call out ’father’, but did not dare, and could only keep on apologizing as he sobbed: "Sorry, I am sorry..."

Fang Yuan lightly patted his shoulder and warmly said: "Do you know what your greatest deficiency is?"

Chang Ji You was slightly shocked.

Fang Yuan continued with a decisive tone: "Your greatest deficiency is that you are not strong enough."

"Not strong enough?" Chang Ji You stopped sobbing, his eyes that were hazy with tears looked at the imposing figure in front.

"This is a yellow gold relic Gu, enough for you to advance to rank four peak stage. Also a purple crystal relic Gu which will help you advance rapidly in rank five." Fang Yuan took out two relic Gu and handed them to Chang Ji You.

Chang Ji You dazedly accepted it, soon a surging grateful feeling filled his wild heart.

"This, isn’t this paternal love!? So many poets praised paternal love to be as heavy as a mountain and as deep as the sea.....I can finally enjoy it today!"

"Father..." Chang Ji You was choked with emotions, he gazed at Fang Yuan before kneeling down again.

"An eagle chick cannot grow firm, iron-like wings without going through the tempering of wind and frost. A horse foal cannot run like the wind without experiencing falling down. I have already heard of Chang tribe’s misfortunes, but I will not concern myself with it. Become strong, go through such temperings, take control of the tribe, use this pretext to establish your might, this is something you need to do. I will be watching you from behind."

"Lord father, son, son is ashamed..." Being given such earnest attention by his ’blood related father’, this made Chang Ji You excited and also brought a fearful feeling in him.

Fang Yuan waved his hand: "I know your misgivings. You are worried your aptitude is not enough and you cannot break through to rank five, right? No problem, I will now raise your aptitude and also impart you a strength path killer move set which will increase your strength to an unimaginable level! This is father’s special skill and even at the decisive battle of Imperial Court, I only used thirty percent of its power."

"Ah?" Chang Ji You involuntarily opened up his mouth, shocked and happy.

Father actually had ways to raise aptitude, moreover was also imparting a strength path killer move!

Even during the decisive battle with Ma tribe, father only used thirty percent of this killer move’s power!

’My father is after all my father. Godfather Chang Biao might have treated me very well, but that is nothing compared to my father. This is the deepest bond between blood. Lord father is nurturing me with all his efforts!’ After the shock, Chang Ji You felt a surge of happiness.

"Now I am going to raise your aptitude. Relax your mind, pacify your heart. Sleep, sleep, take a good sleep first." Fang Yuan spoke gently while secretly using hypnosis Gu.

Chang Ji You’s mood was not stable and he had already been exhausted, and with his extreme trust in Fang Yuan, he soon fell asleep under the effect of Gu worm.

Fang Yuan lightly smiled as he took out blood skull Gu.

This Gu had a crystal like texture, the size of an infant’s skull and could be held by a palm.

But right now, it was full from drinking blood and shone with a demonic blood light.

This blood was absorbed from the Chang tribesmen Fang Yuan had secretly killed over these days.

The sound asleep Chang Ji You had a slight smile on his face, a happy smile. He had never even expected the killer who had assassinated Chang tribesmen in these days was his most loved and respected ’blood related father’.

Even Hei Lou Lan and other outsiders were also in the dark, not having the least bit of doubt towards Fang Yuan.

"Go." Fang Yuan willed and the blood skull Gu slowly flew out of his palm and circled around Chang Ji You.

The blood skull Gu then stopped over Chang Ji You’s head; it opened its mouth and puffed out blood with a thick stench.

The blood directly sunk in through Chang Ji You’s head, skin and hairs, followed his veins and finally converged in his aperture.

Chang Ji You’s aperture began to slowly but steadily advance.

By the time Chang Ji You woke up, Fang Yuan had already gone away.

The previous encounter was like a dream, making Chang Ji You feel doubts.

But the Gu worms on the ground and plentiful food left behind, were the best proof that everything was true..

"Heavens, my aptitude really advanced, now it is at ninety-six percent!!" Chang Ji You shouted out with joy after he checked his aperture.

"Stay here for few days and cultivate properly. Use all the relic Gu father left behind, your cultivation will reach rank five upper stage with these. I am temporarily lending the other Gu worms on the ground to you. Among them is an east window Gu which records the contents of the killer move, read it and practice it."

A message echoed into Chang Ji You’s ears.

Chang Ji You was extremely excited: "Ahh, this is father’s voice. Lord father, son will not disappoint you. Son will definitely become a rank five Gu Master and master this killer move!"

Chang Ji You felt extremely bold and was filled with fighting spirit. He sat down cross-legged on the spot and took a yellow gold relic Gu into his aperture.

Fang Yuan was secretly observing this.

"This is the Gu tester you chose? He is truly a good choice." In his mind, Mo Yao’s will let out a cold sneer, "It is only that you clearly indicated the flaws of six arm heavenly zombie king in the east window Gu. And you have also not tampered with the Gu worms you lent him, are you not afraid he will worry about the flaws and be careful, not completely transforming into a heavenly zombie?"

"Hehe, Mo Yao, you don’t need to worry. I still have the ability to grasp people’s hearts. You haven’t used six arm heavenly zombie king, so you don’t know how intoxicating the feeling of endless strength you get when transforming to the heavenly zombie state can be. Even I was intoxicated. Chang Ji You is young and does not have enough control over his heart. When he practices the killer move, he will naturally search for wolf groups to battle with. This here is my territory, I will just lead more wolves towards him when the time comes, no need to be afraid he won’t change into a heavenly zombie!" Fang Yuan spoke with confidence.

"Hmph, you humans are so sinister and crafty. This blood skull Gu you used, we inkmen would absolutely never refine such an evil Gu worm which is used to harm our own people." Mo Yao sneered.

Fang Yuan was not angry, instead smiling: "Eh, aren’t you Spirit Affinity House’s fairy, a representative of the righteous path? Why didn’t you stop me?"

"That is possible only if I had the ability to stop it. Moreover, why would I stop the internal conflicts between you humans? Hmph, I would rather the whole of your human race died. Then, us variant humans can have space to survive." Mo Yao rolled her eyes.

Her identity was special, she was a past generation’s fairy of Spirit Affinity House with an extraordinary relationship with Bo Qing. However, she was also an inkman and was not a purebred human.

The feeling with which she looked at humans fighting each other was the same feeling humans had when they watched internal strife between snowmen or beast groups.

’Just that, you truly don’t have the ability to stop me?...’ Fang Yuan suppressed this doubt within his heart.

Three days later, Chang Ji You finished using all the relic Gu and succeeded in advancing to rank five upper stage.

Immediately afterwards, he began to practice the killer move six arm heavenly zombie king.

Just like Fang Yuan expected, he was addicted to the vast power of the killer move and gradually began to forget its flaws.

Under Fang Yuan’s intentional manipulation, he fought an intense and prolonged battle.

Chang Ji You rampaged around to his heart’s content in the battle, forgetting the time.

Only when the battle ended, did he make a frightening discovery; he had already completely transformed into a heavenly zombie.

Two days later, Fang Yuan appeared before him again.

"Father, save me!" The monstrous Chang Ji You kneeled on the ground and begged with terrified expression.

"Son, how did you become like this?!" Fang Yuan asked in great shock and rage, "I clearly warned you to never use this killer move over the limit. You, you, how could you forget such a crucial thing!"

"Father, son is ashamed, I was muddled for a while and forgot time. By the time I discovered it, it was too late for regret!" Chang Ji You was extremely ashamed as he looked at Fang Yuan with tear filled eyes while kneeling.

Right now, he had transformed into this monstrosity, his only hope rested in Fang Yuan.

"Sigh... this is difficult. Your appearance, even if we use yin-yang rotation Gu, it won’t be able to treat it. This killer move has extreme power, but also because of this, the after-effects are very severe. Even father does not have a way." Fang Yuan held out his hands, showing an expression filled with sadness and anger.

"Ah?! Even father does not have a solution?" Chang Ji You walked towards Fang Yuan on his knees with despair and fear on his face.

Fang Yuan lamented again and again: "This killer move’s origin is not simple. Father took extreme risk and charged through a Gu Immortal’s inheritance alone, risking a fatal danger before I was able to luckily obtain this immortal killer move."

"This is an immortal killer move? No wonder, no wonder it is so powerful!" Chang Ji You was stupefied, Fang Yuan might have a lofty figure in his heart, but there was no doubt he paled in comparison to a Gu Immortal.

Chang Ji You had been Chang tribe’s young tribe leader, he had not been familiar with Gu Immortals, but was also not completely unfamiliar.

"I was wrong, I made a big mistake, how could I seek instant gains!" Chang Ji You wailed, his wail was sharp and unpleasant like a night owl’s.

Suddenly, he started kowtowing to Fang Yuan and sobbed: "Father, son failed to live up to your hope. Son made a mistake, son has disappointed you!"

"No, it is this, I needed you to transform into this.’ Fang Yuan was laughing inwardly while on the surface, he supported Chang Ji You.

"My son, I told you so many times, don’t cry! You cannot cry! Although you made a mistake, the fault lies within me as well. I have only been exploring this maze round over these days and did not look after you. Father believes there is always a way out, we will research together and find a way to turn you back into a human! There is definitely a way, believe in father and believe in yourself!" Fang Yuan said with emotions, with tears in his eyes.

"Father!!!" Chang Ji You wailed again.

He was thoroughly and completely moved.

He had become a monster and he, himself, did not not dare to see his face. But his father, Chang Shan Yin, did not loath him. It was clearly the son’s fault, but he took the blame upon himself.

Now that his son had changed to such an appearance, he still did not give up on him.

"This is the most profound bond between father and son!"

"This is my father, my dad!"

Chang Ji You was extremely moved, a spark ignited in his despair filled heart, giving him the confidence to continue living.

"Son, stay here and let father think properly on how to change you back. As for Chang tribe, father will personally manage it. You don’t need to worry, just recuperate here, with us father and son working hand in hand, what is there to fear about a measly killer move’s zombie transformation?"

Fang Yuan’s words made Chang Ji You feel a source of assurance in his heart.

"Yes, son will listen to father!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ah——!

The pitiful scream was so shrill that it could pierce eardrums.

Chang Ji You was in so much pain that he was shivering from head to toe, his muscles were exploding, as the six arms behind his back were dancing around chaotically, making loud sounds like that of stirring wind and rolling thunder.

But Fang Yuan only needed one hand to hold him tightly in the air.

At this moment, his eyes were like lightning as he manipulated his Gu worms, shouting loudly: "My son, endure it! Now is the time!"

Chang Ji You was about to lose his sense of reasoning due to the pain, this was an inhuman pain.

Even though he transformed into a heavenly zombie and almost lost his sense of pain, he could still feel every single piece of his skin and every muscle tearing and breaking ruthlessly.

But Fang Yuan’s words were like cold spring water that were sprinkling on Chang Ji You’s heart.

Chang Ji You was forcing himself to his limit, just as he was about to faint, the intense pain dissipated like a subsiding tide.

"Su... success?!" Chang Ji You breathed roughly, his head was hurting intensely and he barely managed to open his eyes, seeing that the skin on his arm had already turned back into living flesh and blood.

In fact, the six arms on his back were also slowly shrinking.

There was nothing more attractive to Chang Ji You than turning back into a human.

This moment, he was almost going to cry of joy.

"Oh no!" Suddenly, Fang Yuan spoke, his tone extremely solemn.

Chang Ji You’s newly recovered arm turned back into the heavenly zombie state in an instant, like that of a rotting log.

The six arms on his back grew back as well, becoming tougher and stronger.

"No, no! Why did I change back?! Father..." Chang Ji You was screaming in fear, subconsciously turning towards Fang Yuan for help.

But when he saw the intense fatigue that Fang Yuan was pretending to show on his face, Chang Ji You could not say a word.

"Father is tired! That’s right, these days, he had been helping me, thinking of hundreds of methods to solve this without any rest or sleep. He expended countless Gu worms in the process. I saw at least seventy to eighty rank five Gu! What reason do I have to blame father? This is all because I was too careless, and committed a grave mistake! Father, this son has not lived up to your expectations and nurturing..."

Chang Ji You was heartbroken and ashamed, he had a sensation of bliss from being taken care of by Wolf King as his child, like a small strand of grass being shielded by a tall tree.

"Damn it, this heavenly zombie form is really stubborn. Even this method is not working!" Fang Yuan gritted his teeth secretly, he asked in his mind: "Mo Yao, what other ideas do you have, tell me!"

The dozen ideas that Fang Yuan came up with were all proven to be useless one by one.

The current experimental method was all Mo Yao’s idea.

This was also one of Fang Yuan’s schemes.

On one hand, he was experimenting on Chang Ji You continuously and attempting to find a way to restore him back to human. On the other hand, he was trying to get Mo Yao’s will to think and expend her limited energy.

Mo Yao was silent for a while before saying: "There is still a way, but it is quite dangerous, the person testing the Gu will endure three times the pain as before! Most likely, he would die from the pain alone!"

"He is a heavenly zombie, he is technically dead. How can he feel pain?" Fang Yuan was confused.

"He is only half dead. The body is dead, but his soul still remains in his body. Unless his soul was absorbed into the door of life and death, then he would truly be considered dead." Mo Yao explained.

The door of life and death was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, it was very famous and was recorded in <>.

But the current era was different from the immemorial era.

The life and death door had vanished, and after going through numerous owners, its control over souls of the demised had weakened greatly. This was the reason for the existence of monsters like zombies.

Mo Yao’s idea carried huge risks, it could shatter the person’s soul due to pain, breaking into irrecoverable pieces.

Once Chang Ji You’s soul shatters, he would be truly dead.

Mo Yao urged: "Lad, when there is gain, there is also loss. The killer move has unrivalled attack power, thus the flaws will be extremely hard to get rid of. These few days, you have experimented so many times, and spent a huge fortune, even borrowing extensively from Hei tribe, I’m sure you understand the difficulty of this now."

"This is my final method, I cannot guarantee that it will work. Moreover, this method is extremely dangerous, there is barely a chance of success! You can decide whether or not to do it. Your ’son’ has already turned into a heavenly zombie completely, he has good battle strength. He listens to your words obediently, it is too wasteful to sacrifice him like this. I would suggest that you keep him by your side as a helper."

Fang Yuan was silent and did not reply.

"Father, please rest more, I am not anxious..." At one end, Chang Ji You muttered.

Fang Yuan concentrated and looked over, although Chang Ji You had turned into a heavenly zombie, and looked very ugly, his eyes were crystal clear, showing great admiration and love for Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: "Son, I have thought of a good method. But this method is extremely dangerous, your life will be in danger. The success rate is very high though, thus father cannot decide..."

"Sigh..." In his mind, Mo Yao sighed deeply.

Although Fang Yuan said this, Chang Ji You who hated his current self and wanted to recover would only make one decision.

As expected, once Chang Ji You heard this, he hesitated for a moment before his eyes shone brightly: "Lord father! Please use this method, living in my current form is simply worse than death!"

Fang Yuan stared at Chang Ji You’s eyes intensely: "But, you are my only child..."

"Father!" Chang Ji You cried, he kneeled on the floor as he hugged Fang Yuan’s leg: "I cannot bear to part with you either, father. But son really cannot live with such an appearance, even if there is some bit of hope, I will work hard and fight for it!"

Fang Yuan was silent for a while, before sighing a long, deep breath: "Alright. Humans should live according to their own wishes. Father is unwilling to see you live in such agony as well! Go rest for a few days, father will go prepare. A few days later, we will go with the final try!"

A few days later.

"Ahhhhh..."

Chang Ji You’s screaming voice had already turned hoarse.

"Endure it for a bit more." Fang Yuan’s gaze was warm, but his heart was cold as ice, as he encouraged.

But the next moment, Chang Ji You’s screams and cries came to a stop.

This was the three hundred and seventh time he had fainted from pain.

"Hmph, completely useless!" Fang Yuan’s expression was dim as water, he snorted unhappily as he stopped using the Gu worms.

This experiment had to be undergone when Chang Ji You was conscious and awake, otherwise it would not work.

Chang Ji You fainting meant that his soul was already forming cracks and chips, he was at the brink of collapsing.

Fang Yuan had to stop and use soul path Gu worms to nourish and heal his soul.

"I said before, this method has little hope, it is better to preserve his life." In his mind, Mo Yao spoke in a sad tone.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, squinting as a cold light flashed across his eyes: "One more try, we will try it one last time!"

Chang Ji You slowly woke up, his vision turning from blurry to clear. He looked at Fang Yuan beside him, in his eyes, his ’father’ was extremely worn out and exhausted.

This made his heart tighten as tears flowed down his eyes again in shame, he choked as he said: "Father..."

"Let’s try again, don’t lose hope." Fang Yuan laughed as he encouraged.

"Father, if I still faint this time, then stop trying it. Father, this was all my fault, you really need to take a rest." Chang Ji You said.

"Yes, after trying this, it is really time to rest." Fang Yuan sighed, the precise deeper meanings in his tone were not able to be perceived by Chang Ji You.

First, three rank five Gu worms were activated together.

Next, more Gu worms were added, these Gu worms were all floating around the face of Chang Ji You, some drilled into his skin while others mixed into his blood, flowing towards his heart.

"Ah..." The intense pain assaulted him again, Chang Ji You gritted his teeth in pain but he soon opened his mouth and growled, his expression twisting from the pain.

Fang Yuan’s movements were smooth and methodical as he continued adding in Gu worms.

The more Gu worms that were added in, the more intense the pain Chang Ji You felt. He struggled desperately, his eyes rolling as he felt pain to the point of losing reason, almost as if he was becoming deranged.

"Stop, his soul cannot take this." In his mind, Mo Yao urged.

But Fang Yuan acted like he did not hear it, continuing to add Gu worms regardless of what was going on.

"Enough, this amount has exceeded all our previous attempts, he is really going to collapse." Mo Yao could not bear to see this.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, not saying a word.

"This is too much, if you continue messing around like this, he will really die!" In his mind, Mo Yao’s will protested.

"What can we achieve if we do not take risks?" Fang Yuan laughed coldly, adding more Gu worms until it was the limit.

His eyes were shining with an excited light: "Just three more Gu worms and we will see the effect. This is the first."

"Alright, this is the second!"

"Fantastic, this is the final one, success or failure will depend on this.... eh!"

Fang Yuan’s expression froze, the surrounding Gu worms were breaking apart like the scattering of fireworks.

Chang Ji You no longer struggled, he was floating in the air motionlessly.

He was dead.

His soul had shattered and dissipated from the pain.

His expression however, was very calm.

The surroundings became dead silent.

"You’ve killed him." In Fang Yuan’s mind, Mo Yao’s will spoke coldly.

"Yes, I’ve killed him." Fang Yuan’s brows lifted, laughing lightly: "He did not die in vain after all, at least I got to find out how stubborn this killer move’s flaw truly was."

Mo Yao did not speak, she did not want to respond to Fang Yuan’s cold and unscrupulous nature. She hid her form and vanished from Fang Yuan’s mind.

Fang Yuan’s smile gradually vanished.

He was progressively discovering how big of a threat this will of Mo Yao in his mind was.

Did she know about the way to resolve the flaw of the six arm heavenly zombie king killer move or not?

Did she know the method, but was unwilling to say it, or was she not thinking so as to preserve herself?

Especially when this killer move’s flaw is so severe, if Mo Yao’s will attacks Fang Yuan’s mind during the crucial moment and cause his thoughts to become chaotic, he would not be able to stop the killer move even if he wanted to.

"What was the Gu used to create this will of Mo Yao’s? These days, I have been collecting information on wisdom path, and purchased many wisdom path Gu worms that could create wills. But I have not found any Gu worm which can allow her to hide and completely conceal herself like this, this is such an unfathomable will!"

"Sigh, I don’t have much time left. Right now Eighty-Eight True Yang Building has formed about sixty floors already. Hei Lou Lan is attacking the thirty-ninth floor right now at full force. It seems his target is the wooden chicken Gu."

"I have to work faster, I cannot wait anymore!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

It had been so long since Fang Yuan had come to Imperial Court blessed land, and he had entered Eighty-Eight True Yang Building so many times, but he had never forgotten his original intention in coming to northern plains.

That was to save Dang Hun mountain.

He needed landscape as before Gu to save Dang Hun mountain.

There were many difficulties and challenges to obtain this Gu, the main thing was it was with a person. This person was Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Ever since Tai Bai Yun Sheng joined Hei tribe army, Fang Yuan had been placing his attention on him.

Several months ago, Fang Yuan uncovered some information:

When Hei Lou Lan obtained the one-edge owner token, he was able to explore the rewards of every round; Tai Bai Yun Sheng had gone to visit him and inquired about the existence of lifespan Gu.

But at that time, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building did not yet have lifespan Gu.

When the fifty-fifth floor had condensed, Hei Lou Lan informed Tai Bai Yun Sheng he had discovered a fifteen year lifespan Gu.

After the fifty-fifth floor completely formed into shape, Hei Lou Lan investigated the location of the lifespan Gu and could precisely tell it was the reward for clearing the eighty-fifth round.

From then on, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had put all his energy in the fifty-fifth floor. He called up many Gu Masters, forming an enormous group and forcibly crashed through the rounds. Relying on his might, prestige and enormous rewards, along with repeatedly requesting Hei Lou Lan and other experts, he was actually making fast progress.

Hard work paid off, Tai Bai Yun Sheng spent all his wealth and finally was able to reach the eighty-fifth round.

Fang Yuan naturally did not wish to see Tai Bai Yun Sheng obtaining what he desired.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was old, and did not have much lifespan left; it was natural behavior for him to increase his lifespan with lifespan Gu.

But if he really obtained this lifespan Gu, he was definitely not going to risk advancing into an immortal. If he did not risk advancing to an immortal, there would not be the inspiration from heaven and earth that would form the Immortal Gu Landscape As Before.

If there was no landscape as before Gu, how would Fang Yuan save Dang Hun mountain which was about to completely wither away?

Especially the past few days, he had learned more information: Tai Bai Yun Sheng had attempted many times to pass the round and he had already found hope. He did not stint on borrowing from Hei Lou Lan and even agreed to Hei Lou Lan’s condition of becoming an external elder of Hei tribe.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was then able to use Hei tribe’s resources to recruit large numbers of experts and form a powerful lineup, charging into the fifty-fifth floor to make the final attack.

Despite Tai Bai Yun Sheng taking the risk to advance to an immortal in the memories of his previous life, Fang Yuan was cautious and did not dare to take the risk, deciding to personally intervene.

Time waits for no man.

Fang Yuan had intended to get rid of Mo Yao’s will first, dealing with the internal problem before attacking the external problems. But this matter had not made any progress, so now, he used his owner token to secretly infiltrate into the fifty-fifth floor.

The situation of the fifty-fifth floor had already been probed out by Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

There was a majestic and grand blood river flowing here, and in the depths of the river, there was a legendary and mythical blood palace erected.

The blood palace had three great halls and sixty-nine auxiliary halls.

Every hall contained large numbers of blood path Gu worms as well as blood beast guards.

The large groups of blood path Gu worms were of huge strength, but as long as they were killed one by one over a period of time, there would be a point when they are all slaughtered.

The problem was the blood beasts.

Even after these blood beasts were killed, they would absorb blood and resurrect within a short moment. One could say that they could be killed but not killed, there was no way of reducing their numbers.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s several attempts at passing the round had all been thwarted by these blood beasts.

But at the last attempt, he had unintentionally discovered a pleasant surprise: as long as they keep on charging forward to the depths of the great hall and take out the command token hanging on the main beam, they could make the blood beasts dissipate.

This discovery birthed a strong confidence in Tai Bai Yun Sheng. He was thoroughly poor now, and did not hesitate to sell himself to Hei tribe, borrowing funds and forming a Gu Master group to charge through this round.

When Fang Yuan secretly entered this floor, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s group had already charged through thirty-three side halls and were presently in a fierce battle to reach a towering main hall.

Fang Yuan took out the six-edge owner token, and with a thought, immediately had complete control over this floor.

The six-edge owner token could let Fang Yuan control up to six floors of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Fang Yuan had already used it once to control the seventh floor. Now, he was using it a second time to control this fifty-fifth floor.

Hei Lou Lan had a one-edge owner token and the floor he controlled was the fifth floor.

With a shift of thought, Fang Yuan’s figure disappeared on the spot and appeared on the main beam of the great hall.

He leisurely sat on the main beam, and not far from him was that crucial command token.

With a bit of concentration, the battle scene of Tai Bai Yun Sheng and his group appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind.

The deeper they went towards the great hall, the more blood beast guards there were, and the battles that occurred were extremely intense. This group of Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not even have fifty people now.

They had been charging forward the whole way, suffering disastrous casualties which left behind a trail of corpses along the way.

Two great rank five Gu Master experts Zhu Zai and Gao Yang took turns as the front vanguard of the group.

Meanwhile Tai Bai Yun Sheng, as the number one healing Gu Master of northern plains of this generation, was protected in the center of the formation. He continually used man as before Gu; rays of light shooting forward and shining upon the corpses, resurrecting the Gu Masters, or shone upon live Gu Masters, healing their injuries and recovering their primeval essence in an instant.

But even Tai Bai Yun Sheng, a rank five peak stage Gu Master, was in a very sorry state.

Gu Masters were falling down time and again, and although he used all his strength, he truly could not save everyone.

The countless blood beasts surged out of every corridor near the great hall and every room, blocking the group’s way with very dense numbers.

The closer they got to the main command token, the stronger the blood beasts became.

And blood beasts could absorb blood to quickly recover and resurrect.

By the time Tai Bai Yun Sheng and the group charged to this place, the blood beasts they had killed on their way had once again resurrected and chased them, blocking their way back. The situation was getting very dangerous.

"No wonder Tai Bai Yun Sheng risked advancing to immortal in my previous life. This round’s difficulty is rather high, unless a blood path Gu Master works with them." Fang Yuan was in control of this place and could see the actions that Tai Bai Yun Sheng took as easily as reading the lines of his palm.

To a blood path Gu Master, this round was no less than a paradise. With so many blood path wild Gu to subdue and blood beasts to devour, their blood path cultivation would strengthen rapidly.

It was a pity blood path could not be easily revealed. Because of Blood Sea Ancestor, a blood path Gu Master would be hunted persistently by the righteous path the moment they appeared.

And because blood path Gu Masters could quickly increase their battle strength, even demonic Gu Masters widely feared it.

Often, when a blood path Gu Master was discovered, not only would they be hunted down by the righteous path, they would also suffer sneak attacks from demonic path Gu Masters.

There was not even one blood path Gu Master among Hei tribe army. Even if they existed, they were hidden deeply and would not appear for Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s use.

Fang Yuan ascertained for a moment and knew clearly that the chance of Tai Bai Yun Sheng succeeding was extremely minute.

The worry in his heart immediately dissipated by more than half.

Fang Yuan laid back on the beam and took out <>, passing the time while paying attention to Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s progress.

Death was possible when advancing through Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Fang Yuan was scheming for landscape as before Gu, and could not allow Tai Bai Yun Sheng to die at the moment.

"Kill, we must break through this siege! Otherwise, we are all going to die!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s face was filled with blood stains, roaring loudly to raise the morale.

Waves of blood beasts roared and snarled, before pouncing on the group like a blood colored giant wave.

...

The great hall was a scene of tranquility.

Fang Yuan leisurely flipped through the pages while adjusting his posture to make himself more comfortable.

...

Grrr!

A blood beast with the head of a tiger and body of a horse madly snarled while rampaging in the group of Gu Masters.

Two Gu Masters met its attack; one died while the other was heavily injured.

"Man As Before!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted and raised his palm; a white light immediately shot out and shone upon that injured Gu Master.

The Gu Master immediately recovered his previous uninjured state. The terrifying injuries from the blood beast’s attacks disappeared without a trace.

The Gu Master panted roughly, he was still frightened, retreating back behind the frontlines. The defensive gap he left behind was immediately filled up by another Gu Master.

But that dead Gu Master’s corpse was swarmed by the blood beasts and roughly dragged away.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not make a move.

Without advancing to an immortal, even a rank five Gu Master would have limited primeval essence and have to use it cautiously.

Moreover, that dead Gu Master’s Gu worms were severely damaged, his defensive Gu worm was even pierced and destroyed. Even if he was resurrected, he would be killed again.

The remaining Gu Masters grieved and cursed, but they could only look as their companion’s corpse was madly torn apart by over ten blood beasts.

Blood beasts were extremely sensitive to blood and even a bit of bloody odor could make them go crazy. By swallowing stronger organism’s blood, they could strengthen themselves.

Soon, the dead Gu Master’s blood was completely absorbed by the blood beasts. The whole corpse became a dried up mummy, creating a wretched spectacle.

The beasts that had absorbed his blood started to grow human like forms. Some grew human like eyes; some grew several human ears; and some grew agile human arms.

But when they were spending time in absorbing the corpse, the pressure on Tai Bai Yun Sheng and the group greatly reduced and they took this valuable opportunity to break through and moved forward tens of steps.

...

Fang Yuan flipped through <> to chapter three, section fourteen.

Northern Dark Ice Soul awakened his elder sister Desolate Ancient Moon, and the two again asked for advice from cognition Gu on how to save their father.

Cognition Gu said: "Humans, Cheng Bai mountain has disappeared, who knows when it will form again. I am also not clear on other ways to bring your father back to life. But no need to be dejected, you can try asking wisdom Gu. I am its mother, wisdom is the crystallization of cognition."

The student surpasses the master; the things cognition Gu did not know, wisdom Gu might not necessarily be unknowing of.

Under cognition Gu’s directions, Northern Dark Ice Soul and Desolate Ancient Moon found wisdom Gu.

Wisdom Gu had somewhat of a connection with Ren Zu, back then Ren Zu had used rules and regulations Gu to capture it. But it was able to escape in the end.

At first, wisdom Gu was not willing to help Northern Dark Ice Soul and Desolate Ancient Moon.

But seeing that they were introduced by its mother cognition Gu, it reluctantly said: "Oh humans, I can show you the right path. But I need remuneration, one of you need to hand over your middle age to me."

"I will give my middle age to you." Desolate Ancient Moon immediately replied with no hesitation.

She was awakened by her little brother Northern Dark Ice Soul and had been bestowed with the meaning of her life which was to bring her father, Ren Zu, back to life. Thus, she replied immediately without the intention of passing it to others.

Northern Dark Ice Soul was not able to argue with his sister and could only let her offer her middle age.

This meant, once Desolate Ancient Moon’s youth had passed, she would directly skip middle age to reach old age.

But to save her father, she did not have many misgivings.

Wisdom Gu obtained Desolate Ancient Moon’s middle age and gave her directions: "In the center of the golden desert in the west, there is a still blue sea with no ripples, as flat as a mirror. That is the source of all living beings, all lives in the world originates from there. And in the depths of the blue sea lie many life Gu shining upon all living beings. You need to infiltrate the sea, catch a human shaped life Gu and bring it to shore. This human shaped life Gu can bestow your father a new life. But remember, you cannot spend over fifteen minutes in the sea, otherwise you will be assimilated by the sea.

Wisdom Gu added another sentence in the end: "It is extremely difficult to find human shaped life Gu. Only a person who has truly comprehended the truth of life can do it. If you are not able to do it, don’t blame my solution for not being easy to use."

Desolate Ancient Moon wanted to ask something, but Wisdom Gu quickly flew away and did not give the siblings any chance to make inquiries.

...

The clamorous shouts and cries resounded everywhere.

The blood beasts surged forward like sea tides. Tai Bai Yun Sheng and the group were like a reef, resisting the attacks of the blood beasts time and again, while also moving forward step by step with difficulty.

"Almost there, we are only three hundred steps away from the great hall door!" Someone shouted, boosting the morale.

"Careful!" Suddenly, a Gu Master at the side warned.

That Gu Master who had tried to boost morale was dazed and the very next moment, a blood beast with the head of a dragon and body of a bear fiercely smashed into him.

Crack.

The Gu Master’s ribs instantly shattered from the crash, and the blood he puffed out contained pieces of internal organs.

His body was sent flying from the smash, the Gu Masters behind tried to stop him with all their strength; in an instant, the formation turned chaotic and there was a crisis of it collapsing apart!

"Hold on, continue to hold on!!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng, his face stained with blood, shouted furiously with extreme anxiety.

In such a battle situation, if the Gu Masters scattered, they would immediately be torn to pieces by the surrounding countless blood beasts. Only with the Gu Masters working in a tight formation, could they have a chance at survival!

But the Gu Masters were retreating step by step, large numbers of blood beasts broke the defense line and fiercely pounced upon them.

Miserable screams started rising continuously.

Many Gu Masters were still recovering their primeval essence as much as possible. Being caught unawares, they were immediately torn to pieces by the blood beasts.

A mantis-like blood beast brandished its sickle arms and charged in the very front.

Swish!

A Gu Master's head was slashed apart; blood started spurting out of the Gu Master's neck and the head flew high, but before it fell down, it was grabbed by a blood beast flying in the air and with a 'gulp, was swallowed down.

But the red hot blood fell down, splashing right at Tai Bai Yun Sheng's face.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly wiped away the blood and was barely able to open his eyes; the dense bloody stench assailed his nose, and agitated a group of blood beasts.

"Finished!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng's heart sank to the bottom, but right at this time, a figure pounced down like a tiger getting off the mountain.

BOOM BOOM BOOM.

After several rounds, the figure killed the mantis blood beast and finally stabilized the formation at this final juncture.

It was Zhu Zai!

A rank five Gu Master, a famous expert of the demonic path!!

Everyone was saved, feeling like they were dragged back from the cliff.

But Zhu Zai also paid a price, there were three new wounds on his body, all of them so deep one could see his bones.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly activated man as before Gu to heal him.

Zhu Zai recovered his previous state and the new injuries completely vanished. At the same time, his intensely depleted primeval essence recovered back.

It was only that the several expendable Gu he had used to gain a burst in his battle strength earlier could not be restored.

Man As Before could only target human bodies and had no effect on Gu worms.

...

"This Man As Before has marvellous effect, but unfortunately, it cannot be used on one's own body." Fang Yuan sighed before gazing back to the book in his hand once again.

Desolate Ancient Moon and Northern Dark Ice Soul travelled an arduous journey through the golden desert and arrived at the center of the desert where they saw the blue sea.

The blue sea was so beautiful that nothing more beautiful than it could be imagined.

Just like wisdom Gu said, even strong winds could not cause the slightest of a ripple on the blue sea.

With the soft golden sand surrounding it, it looked like a deep blue gemstone embedded on this golden cloth.

The siblings infiltrated into the depths of the sea and sure enough found large numbers of life Gu packed together in the sea depths.

These life Gu were like blue gems. But they were of different sizes and shapes.

Some looked like a colt; some like a tiger or leopard; some like an eagle or dove; while some like a snake or flood dragon.

The siblings were dazzled from the sight. They saw all kinds of life Gu from flowers, birds, fishes, insects, beasts, snowmen, hairy men and all other shapes, except the human shaped life Gu.

Helplessly, the siblings could only get out of the sea and back to the shore.

The moment they had left the blue sea, a deer shaped life Gu Northern Dark Ice Soul had been holding, let out a soft light before jumping on the sand and turning into a fawn.

This was the birth of a life!

The siblings looked at this sight in wonder, with their eyes wide open.

Only when the fawn had hopped far away, the elder sister Desolate Ancient Moon suddenly comprehended: "No wonder wisdom Gu flew away immediately after speaking and did not let us question it. I have understood the truth of life."

"The truth of life, what exactly is it?" Northern Dark Ice Soul quickly asked.

Desolate Ancient Moon pointed at this blue sea in front of them and asked in return: "Tell me, if we were to really find a life Gu, a human shaped blue gem, and we bring it back, what will it transform into?"

Northern Dark Ice Soul thought for a moment and replied: "It should be like that fawn and turn into a real active life form, right?"

He suddenly looked distracted.

Desolate Ancient Moon looked at him with a smile: "It seems you have also understood. We are these life forms. We were formed from life Gu! We, ourselves, are human shaped blue gems!"

Northern Dark Ice Soul completely understood, where did humans come from?

Wisdom Gu had already made it clear before: This blue sea is the source of all living beings, all lives in the world originate from here.

Humans, naturally also originated from here.

Their father Ren Zu was once a blue gem in the depths of this sea. By some opportunity and coincidence, it was able to come out from the sea and form a zestful life form that roamed the world, surviving with difficulty and reaching this stage.

But humans were the spirit of all living beings, so how many human shaped gems could there be in such a large sea?

It was definitely extremely few, and it was very possible Ren Zu was the only one.

Searching for a small blue gem in such a vast sea, how big of a project was this!

This was innumerable times more difficult than Desolate Ancient Moon looking for the only success Gu in Cheng Bai mountain.

"I know a method which can get us a human shaped life Gu quickly." Desolate Ancient Moon suddenly said.

"What method?" Northern Dark Ice Soul had a bad feeling.

Desolate Ancient Moon smiled: "That is... I will go into the bottom of the sea and assimilate with this blue sea, returning back to a life Gu."

Although Desolate Ancient Moon had transformed into a monster, she was intrinsically a human.

The essence of her life had not changed.

Since she was a human, once she was assimilated, she would form a human shaped blue gem like life Gu.

This speculation was not wrong.

No wonder wisdom Gu said: But remember, you cannot spend over fifteen minutes in the sea, otherwise you will be assimilated by the sea.

Wisdom Gu’s words did not have any superfluous words.

Wisdom Gu had also said: If you are not able to do it, don’t blame my solution for not being easy to use.

One could analyze from this sentence – it was extremely likely there were no human shaped blue gems in the blue sea. If the siblings were not willing to sacrifice themselves, they would not be able to obtain human shaped life Gu. As such, don’t blame me, the wisdom Gu, if you are not able to do it.

"No, you can’t sacrifice yourself like this, elder sister." Northern Dark Ice Soul immediately dissuaded.

Although he wanted to bring his father back to life, he did not want to sacrifice his own sister.

"I need to do it, the meaning of my life is to bring father back to life." Desolate Ancient Moon replied tranquilly.

Northern Dark Ice Soul suddenly could not say anything.

It was him who gave this meaning to Desolate Ancient Moon’s life, and Desolate Ancient Moon was living for this. In other words, if her father could not be brought back to life, there would be no meaning in her life. Then what would be the use in continuing to live?

As long as she sacrificed herself, she could bring her father back to life; this was the greatest meaning of Desolate Ancient Moon’s life!

"Humans originally were gems of the world. It is only that whether the gems are bright or not require us to polish them. Every effort we make, every choice we take, are all polishing each of our gems."

"And humans can only obtain life by sacrificing life."

Desolate Ancient Moon leisurely spoke before sinking into the blue sea.

Northern Dark Ice Soul tried his best to stop her, but he was not able to. Desolate Ancient Moon had become a monster with incomparable strength, and he was not her match.

After fifteen minutes of time, Desolate Ancient Moon was assimilated by the blue sea and turned into a human shaped blue gem.

But this blue gem was not of a healthy human shape but a badly damaged, less than half a proper human shape.

This was because Desolate Ancient Moon had given her ’middle age’ to wisdom Gu.

Humans, in the process of understanding what life was, would often have already used up half of their lives.

Northern Dark Ice Soul held this blue gem with tears in his eyes, and left the golden desert.

He did not have any of the happiness of success, but instead sank down into extreme remorse.

From a certain perspective, it was him who had killed his elder sister.

...

"There are still fifty steps left!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted with all his strength.

They pushed forward with difficulty with a companion falling down every short moment, the intense and bitter battle had left them with only five people now!

But success was right in front of their eyes!

"Just a little more of a push..."

"I will tear these blood beasts into pieces!!"

Zhu Zai and Gao Yang protected Tai Bai Yun Sheng from left and right; they also shouted to raise the morale.

Thirty steps!

Two more fell down, leaving behind Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Zhu and Gao.

The surrounding blood beasts brandished their claws and fangs, looking extremely malevolent. They advanced wave upon wave in their endless numbers.

Ten steps!

Zhu Zai and Gao Yang used all their strength, suffering disastrous losses to their Gu worms because of excessive use, and their primeval essence was also almost depleted.

"This old man owes both of you a favor, I swear I will definitely reward you heavily sometime in the future!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s eyes shone brightly, his tone extremely earnest and sincere.

"Old sir, what are you saying! We were saved by you back then, without old sir, we would not be alive today!"

"Old sir’s life saving favor is as heavy as a mountain! Even if we die today, it can be considered repaying your favor."

Gao Yang and Zhu Zai replied, full of emotions.

There existed two-faced hypocrites in the righteous path, and demonic path likewise was not without true heroes!

Five steps!

"Save me!" Zhu Zai shouted and without caring for defense, pounced on the blood beasts blocking the way forward, perishing together with them.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng stretched out his palm but the white light did not come out.

He shouted out involuntarily: "Not good, my primeval essence is finished!"

This bad news immediately made Gao Yang’s expression turn pale white.

All along, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had served as the core of the group. Only with man as before Gu’s continuous support, everyone was able to push forward this deep.

"It doesn’t matter, no blood beasts will enter the great hall. As long as I can enter the great hall, I can recover my primeval essence quickly and save Zhu Zai!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted.

Gao Yang’s spirits rose.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was right, blood beasts might tear apart the corpse, but their main priority was absorbing the blood. As long as most of the corpse was intact, there was hope of saving Zhu Zai.

Snarl!

Next moment, a strong blood beast that looked like a giant python suddenly moved in from behind and swallowed Gao Yang in one bite!

Two steps!

The great hall’s door was very close; with a body filled with injuries, Tai Bai Yun Sheng staggered forward through a small gap among the blood beasts.

At the crucial moment, he used up his final precious bit of primeval essence to summon a golden armor which resisted the blood beasts’ attacks.

He reached!

"Humans can only obtain life by sacrificing life. Gao Yang, Zhu Zai, I will remember your sacrifices!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng exerted all his remaining strength to push open the door.

He fell down inside the great hall, the blood beasts behind him roared, snarled and brandished their claws, but did not dare to enter the great hall.

It was just like what Tai Bai Yun Sheng had investigated before.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng lay down on the ground with no strength left in his body. The injuries all over his body were continually transmitting intense pain.

He took a few strong gasps of breath, and suddenly started laughing heartily, but his laughter contained a sobbing tone.

Tears were overflowing on his face.

"This round has three great halls and sixty-nine side halls! If one crosses the round completely within a certain time period, they can obtain high grade evaluation. Passing two great halls and forty-six side halls will be considered middle grade evaluation. I surpassed twenty-three side halls and one great hall, I can only obtain low grade evaluation. But regardless, I have obtained lifespan Gu!"

"Fifteen year lifespan Gu can increase my lifespan by fifteen years. A whole fifteen years..."

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was exclaiming with deep and boundless emotion, when suddenly, his eyes blacked out and he fainted.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan lowered his head, observing Tai Bai Yun Sheng who had already fainted and lost consciousness.

He was the culprit who caused Tai Bai Yun Sheng to fall unconscious.

At this moment, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s body was bathed in blood, he was lying on the ground and within his deep eye sockets, his eyes were tightly shut.

There were lots of injuries on him, his snow white hair had stuck together because of dried blood, he no longer had the demeanour and appearance of the number one healing Gu Master in northern plains.

Merely a few steps away, outside the main hall’s doors, a sea of blood beasts were growling, the messy overlapping noises were sent over with great force.

Fang Yuan raised his head, staring at them as he opened his mouth and said lightly: "Shut up."

Almost immediately, there was silence outside the hall.

The blood beasts all became quiet, lying prostrate on the ground like obedient cats or dogs, staying motionless.

Fang Yuan made use of the six-edge owner token to control this floor, he was the master of this floor, these beasts were all his to control, they listened to his commands and moved according to his will.

Fang Yuan shut his eyes, his mind entering this floor’s control system as he let his senses observe the area.

At the moment, in this particular round, there were many Gu Masters remaining.

Among these Gu Masters, some were Gu Masters recruited by Tai Bai Yun Sheng, but during the earlier fighting they had been separated from the main party. Another portion were the information gatherers of all the different forces, they were all investigative Gu Masters. They came from Hei tribe, Ma Tribe, Ye Lui tribe, and all the other large forces, with the intention of observing whether Tai Bai Yun Sheng failed or succeeded.

As for this hall and its surroundings, within them, other than those rotten and dried corpses, only Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were left now.

Fang Yuan closed the great hall’s door, half squatting on the ground as he stretched out his right palm, grabbing onto Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s skull.

His Gu worms had been prepared long ago, he activated them one by one.

Very soon, above Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s head, a weak shining white light was formed, becoming the only source of light in this dark and dim great hall.

As the light got more and more intense, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s face gradually showed a painful expression, and his brows were frowning more intensely.

After a moment of stillness, Fang Yuan suddenly opened his eyes!

His eyes had no pupils, it was pure white in color.

The whites of his eyes gave off a weak light as at the same time, a large number of images flashed across in Fang Yuan’s mind.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s life, from his old age all the way until he was young, all the memories had been extracted by Fang Yuan.

...

An old man was walking in northern plains, the sky was vast and the wilderness was boundless, the winds blew as the grass was drooping in response, wolf groups were howling freely.

...

"Old sir, we brothers will never forget the kindness you have displayed by saving our lives!" Gao Yang and Zhu Zai kneeled down together before Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

...

A purple haired old beggar opened his mouth, showing his remaining few teeth, laughing in a weird manner: "What kind of Gu Master do you want to become? Hehehe, I happen to have three complete sets of inheritances with me here!"

...

"Mm, this lad has a passable appearance, we will choose him." In the inkmen city, an inkman was pointing at Tai Bai Yun Sheng who was in his youth as he laughed loudly and said.

Even further back, during the time when he was even younger...

"Why, why did you betray me?!" On the night of their joyous wedding, Tai Bai Yun Sheng fell weakly on the ground as extremely loud shouting and fighting noises resounded outside the tent.

As for his wife, she had an expression full of coldness and hatred, she slowly got close to him as her eyes shone with a ruthless light, she gritted her teeth as she said: "Tai Bai Yun Sheng, if you want to blame someone, blame your parents. They were the ones who devoured my tribe, they killed my parents, I want to exact revenge for them!"

During the time of his childhood...

"My son, you are the next generation tribe leader of our Tai Bai tribe! You are not allowed to cry, do not have the heart of needless sympathy! To survive in northern plains, we need to have a tougher heart, a tougher stance! After all in the future, you have to lead our Tai Bai tribe." His father was scolding him in a very strict manner.

...

"Ahhh..." Fang Yuan was screaming from the intense pain.

In his mind, countless images were flashing, they were depicting Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s entire life, a legendary tale. Such a huge amount of information had a large impact on Fang Yuan’s mind and caused great damage to him.

Thankfully, the images were not endless and unceasing, there came a time when they finally ended.

After browsing through Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s entire life, Fang Yuan immediately stopped using his Gu worms, sitting down on the ground to rest.

He was breathing roughly and panting, his entire body was coated in sweat. A long time later, his pupils regained their original color.

Soul searching, this was not an easy action. Especially when Fang Yuan was concerned about Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s safety and did not want to cause harm to his life, he could only endure most of the pressure of the soul search himself.

After stopping the soul search, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was still sound asleep, but his tightly knitted brows had slowly eased as he relaxed. His breathing was more stable now, and his expression was rather peaceful.

In contrast, Fang Yuan’s brows were starting to frown instead.

"I did not find it!" He heaved a long sigh in pity.

"What did you not manage to find?" In his mind, Mo Yao’s will could not hold in her curiosity as she asked.

Fang Yuan’s actions were very strange, it made her very curious.

Fang Yuan did not answer her, he only frowned even more as time passed. The matter of landscape as before Gu was related to his grand scheme after rebirth, how could he possibly tell this to Mo Yao?

Landscape as before Gu was an Immortal Gu that Tai Bai Yun Sheng obtained only after he became an immortal.

Rumors said: This Gu was created naturally on its own when Tai Bai Yun Sheng became an immortal, and heaven and earth resonated with him, causing it to spontaneously condense.

But there was another possibility, that within Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s mind, he had the Immortal Gu recipe for Landscape As Before from the start.

If he really had the Immortal Gu recipe, then Fang Yuan could steal this Gu recipe, along with river as before Gu and mountain as before Gu, bringing to Lang Ya blessed land and asking Lang Ya land spirit to help by refining this Immortal Gu on his behalf.

This way, he did not have to take a risk and seize the food from the tiger’s mouth, it would greatly reduce his danger.

But after this soul search, Fang Yuan obtained a horrible result.

Fang Yuan did not manage to find the Immortal Gu recipe for Landscape As Before, this indicated that the rumors were really true. Landscape as before Gu was indeed a product of the resonance of heaven and earth during the moment when Tai Bai Yun Sheng became a Gu Immortal.

That also meant that: If Fang Yuan wanted to obtain this Immortal Gu, he would have to snatch this Gu by force from Tai Bai Yun Sheng who had already become an immortal by then.

Fang Yuan was still not a Gu Immortal, as for battling an immortal as a mortal, Fang Yuan had never heard of any examples of success in his life, it was no doubt tougher than ascending to heaven!

But what other choices did he have?

Back then, among the three options, this was no doubt the easiest way. He had already invested time and effort into this plan, although Fang Yuan did not have absolute confidence of success, he had no choice but to continue making preparations and take a risk to try it anyway!

...

Outside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s image appeared slowly.

"He is back, he is back!"

"How was the result? Someone saw Tai Bai Yun Sheng fighting his way into the main hall."

"Oh no, Lord Tai Bai Yun Sheng is motionless, it seems he has fallen unconscious!"

The surrounding Gu Masters immediately went over as a crowd.

After taking a look, all of their expression changed mildly. Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s body was filled with extremely serious injuries, they were all secretly stunned in their hearts.

"He is still breathing!" Someone stretched out his finger and placed it below Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s nose, shouting loudly: "Quick, who is a healing Gu Master, quickly stabilize Old Sir’s current injuries!"

"I will do it, I will do it!"

"I am also a healing Gu Master!!"

Many healing Gu Masters quickly helped out, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s reputation and extremely kind hearted nature had already been ingrained in everyone’s hearts.

There was no doubt that he was much more popular and loved by people compared to Hei Lou Lan and Chang Shan Yin.

"Even Lord Tai Bai Yun Sheng suffered injuries to such a grave extent, sigh, it seems that this time, the round might not have been passed." Someone sighed.

"The time for the challenge has already ended, but most of the Gu Masters did not return safely, we have truly suffered a huge loss this time!"

"Among all of you, has anyone seen Lord Gao Yang and Zhu Zai coming out?" Someone jolted abruptly, suddenly asking.

Everyone started looking around frantically, but they just ended up staring at each other.

No one saw the figures of Gao Yang and Zhu Zai, meanwhile in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, that round was still intact and available for challengers. Except that in this short period, Gu Masters were not allowed to enter again.

Everyone was very clear about what this implied.

Ever since Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had formed, five rank five experts had already been sacrificed.

Such grave casualties and losses, it caused the entire area to go into deep silence.

When Tai Bai Yun Sheng opened his eyes eventually, he found himself lying on a bed, his entire body was feeling weak to the point where he even had difficulties sitting up.

Seeing that he opened his eyes, a servant nearby who was attending to him shouted immediately out of joy: "Old sir, you are finally awake, you have finally woken up! Someone quickly come, someone quickly come, old sir has woken up!"

Very soon, Tai Bai Yun Sheng could hear a large number of footsteps rushing over towards him.

A group of healing Gu Masters came to his side, checking his body’s condition for him collectively.

"Lord elder, rest assured, your injuries are no longer a problem. Except that you are of old age, so the injuries this time have affected your physical condition. From now on, you have to recuperate carefully, especially for the next few months, your body is weak and lacking in nourishment, you need to rest and recover slowly." The head of the healing Gu Masters urged him in a gentle tone.

In order to get a team to challenge the round, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had no choice but to agree to Hei Lou Lan’s request and had already become an external elder of Hei tribe.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s gaze was completely unfocused, ever since he woke up, he had been in a daze, after hearing these words, he regained some of his senses as he asked: "Where is this place?"

"Replying to lord elder’s question, this is Lord Hei Lou Lan’s residence. Ever since lord elder failed in challenging the round, and returned barely alive, our tribe leader has been very concerned, he personally brought you here to receive treatment. The servants have already reported your awakening, I believe that very soon, lord tribe leader will be here to see you." The leader of the Gu Masters once again replied.

"Failed in challenging the round, and returning barely alive?" Tai Bai Yun Sheng frowned slightly, the memories in his mind were slowly surfacing, as he recalled that final scene that had happened —

He expended his final portion of primeval essence, activating his defense Gu as he successfully charged into the great hall amidst the attacks and rampaging of the blood beasts.

But soon after, he fainted and fell unconscious, losing perception of all his senses!

When he woke up, he found that he was lying here.

"Does that mean, I really failed in challenging the round?!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s tone suddenly turned sharp, as his gaze became sharper than ever.

"Lord elder..." The healing Gu Masters around the bed all looked at each other, they wanted to offer words of consolation, but they could not bring themselves to say a thing.

Thus, they could only lower their heads silently.

The room suddenly became completely quiet.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s gaze was staring into the distance, after being silent for a while, he suddenly raised his head and laughed: "Haha, so I failed after all. All that sacrifice for nothing, all that sacrifice for absolutely nothing!"

He could not get up now, so he could only use his palm to slam the side of the bed with all his strength, laughing maniacally.

"Lord elder, lord elder!" The healing Gu Masters were frantic, they quickly tried to calm him down.

"My pitiful Gao Yang, my pitiful Zhu Zai, they sacrificed their lives in order to protect me!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s eyes were overflowing with tears, his laughter was filled with pure agony.

"My condolences to lord elder, there is a limit to what a person can do, lord elder had already done his best!"

"Lord elder, the fact that you managed to survive is already the greatest fortune among misfortunes."

"People die when they are killed, the dead cannot be resurrected, old sir, you have to stay strong for all of us..."

Everyone spoke one after another, trying to calm down the unstable Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

But these words felt like utter sarcasm when they entered Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s ears. They were like needles stabbing into his heart one by one.

At the final crucial moment, Tai Bai Yun Sheng preserved his primeval essence and did not choose to save Gao Yang and Zhu Zai. It was for himself, to activate the defense Gu and charge into the main hall.

That was him, for his own selfish gains, he had ignored the sacrifices of his comrades.

Was this still Tai Bai Yun Sheng?

Was this still that admirable and publicly recognised figure in northern plains who helped and saved the injured, healing people everywhere, the Tai Bai Yun Sheng who eliminated pain and suffering?

Why did he do that?

But at that crucial moment, he had no time to think about it carefully, he chose to do it in an instant!

Purposely sacrificing Gao Yang and Zhu Zai to obtain a chance for himself to obtain that fifteen year lifespan Gu which was the reward for passing the round! It was for his own purpose of extending his life!

Such a decision made Tai Bai Yun Sheng feel very unfamiliar with himself, he felt extremely ashamed, extremely inferior, and extremely regretful!

Back then, there was no hesitation, he did not think about it, that decision had transformed his morals into a whip, interrogating his soul and lashing at his conscience!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng shut his eyes in great pain, his fists were tightly clenched.

"Lord tribe leader has arrived!"

"Subordinate pays respects to lord tribe leader."

The entire room kneeled, as Hei Lou Lan carried a smiling expression and walked towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Seeing Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s pained expression, Hei Lou Lan frowned lightly, but soon his frown vanished: "Elder Tai Bai, I am very glad that you are awake. I have already heard about the situation, you, Gao Yang, and Zhu Zai had displayed the bravery and courage of us northern plains men, although you failed, it was an admirable attempt! As long as you learn from this attempt, I’m sure you’ll be able to pass this round in the future, overwriting failure with success and washing away the humiliation."

Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not open his eyes, he did not speak a word as his expression remained painful.

He had already understood the reason why he failed.

After he charged into the main hall, he had successfully avoided the attacks of the blood beasts as he fell on the main hall. But after succeeding, he laughed wildly in great joy, and because his state of mind had been greatly volatile and fluctuating, together with his grave injuries, he lost consciousness.

To get through this round, there was a time limit as well.

Once the time was up, his unconscious self was sent out forcefully along with the other Gu Masters at the fringe of the battlefield.

He was obviously a single step away from success, but he failed because he had fallen unconscious.

Such an ironic ending, this was not the source of the intense pain in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s heart.

His pain was because he had abandoned his comrades for his own selfish gains.

Was this still Tai Bai Yun Sheng?

His memories flashed in his mind one by one once more.

From youth, he had always believed in the power of love.

Since he was a child, he had been reputed to have a kind heart.

When Tai Bai tribe devoured other tribes, he saw that his childhood friend was going to suffer the horrible fate of becoming a female slave, thus he stepped up and requested to marry her. Because of this, the batch of captives were also spared.

But on the night of their wedding, his wife betrayed him. The captives contacted outside enemies and assaulted his tribe, causing his parents to die from this incident.

His slave life after that was extremely tough and pitiful, and he had always been suffering the intense guilt and regret in his heart.

Finally, one day, he gave an unacquainted old beggar a bowl of water out of kindness, and the old beggar gave him three immortal inheritances to choose from.

The first could allow him to bathe in flames and step on fire, surpassing the mortal realm.

The second could allow him to control wind and fly in the air, roaming the world freely.

The third could allow him to surpass life and death, gaining the ability to assist the world’s people.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng chose the third inheritance.

From then on, it was as if he found the light in the darkness, his heart was no longer in turmoil as he had no regrets anymore, he had been completely reborn!

After so many years, the old beggar’s laughter was still ringing in his ears.

Surpassing life and death, gaining the ability to help people, this had become his life’s goal.

And indeed, he truly achieved this in his life later on.

Countless people felt gratitude towards him, his kind reputation had spread widely, his light was shining over the entire northern plains.

He was a living legend.

But right now!

He had failed!

His failure was not in that he did not receive the lifespan Gu. But because he betrayed his comrades, he betrayed the way of life that he had set for himself!!

But the most ironic thing was, all these were done by his own subconscious.

He spent almost his entire life to establish a way of life for himself that he believed in. But that at moment, he completely destroyed his own ideals.

He had seen the other side of himself, his own selfish nature.

He had once thought, he was the person everyone knew him as — walking on the grassland under the setting sun, helping and saving people throughout the region, the savior of the world.

But now, in his heart, this image was slowly leaving him, it was limping away from him.

In the brilliance of the setting sun, his shadow was stretched out and extended into the horizon.

The shadow was extremely dark...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Hei Lou Lan’s brows furrowed as he walked out of Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s room.

"An expert cannot become conceited by success nor discouraged by failure; who could have thought the grand, renowned Tai Bai Yun Sheng was no more than this." he was very dissatisfied with Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s mental state.

"Tai Bai Yun Sheng is the number one healer, if his state is not good, the difficulty for me to cross the rounds will increase by a lot." Hei Lou Lan raised his head and looked above.

On the summit of the sacred palace, the bright aurora was surging majestically.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had already condensed sixty-seven floors and was currently condensing sixty-eighth floor.

Hei Lou Lan gazed at Eighty-Eight True Yang Building with an obsessed look, a cold light of ambition flashing in his eyes.

In the sixty-eighth floor there existed a strength path Immortal Gu!

Hei Lou Lan possessed an one-edge owner token, this strength path Immortal Gu was assimilated into Eighty-Eight True Yang Building just moments ago, and he could immediately perceive it.

This was a rank six strength path Immortal Gu called flying bear strength Gu.

The flying bear was a desolate beast with battle strength that could match Gu Immortals.

Flying bear strength Gu could allow the Gu Immortal to have a definite probability of bursting out with a flying bear phantom during battle and strike with the divine strength of flying bear.

This was the Immortal Gu Hei Lou Lan wanted. With it, he could advance into a strength path Gu Immortal!

"I must get this Immortal Gu in my hands. My plan for revenge only has hope if I have it!" Hei Lou Lan unconsciously clenched his fists, but soon relaxed.

His trusted aide Hei Shu came towards him in short, quick steps, and kneeled before him.

Hei Lou Lan’s expression quickly changed back to normal.

Even in front of his trusted aide, he did not reveal even a trace of his true emotions.

Every day, during this time, Hei Shu would come to report on the movements of every great expert in the sacred palace: "Lord Chang Shan Yin is still at the ninetieth round of seventh floor and has still not made any progress. Lord Ye Lui Sang is at the forty-ninth floor, he has crossed the eighty-first round, thirty percent of the Gu Masters with him have perished...."

Hei Lou Lan had completely opened up Eighty-Eight True Yang Building to everyone; it was a generous move that was rarely seen in the history, attracting a craze in everyone to explore Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Even though every owner token’s price was raised to a sky-high amount, there were still countless people scrambling for them madly.

Humans die for wealth and birds die for food; blinded by greed, many had lost their lives.

Adding the casualties from the attempt of Tai Bai Yun Sheng, five rank five experts had died already - Chang Biao, Pan Ping, Hao Ji Liu, Gao Yang and Zhu Zai. This was an enormous loss to Hei Lou Lan.

The smaller the forces he could mobilize became, the harder the difficulty in getting flying bear strength Gu.

Of course, there was also a certain benefit by completely opening up Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. As long as the participating Gu Masters could survive, most would be able to experience rapid increase in strength.

There were also not a small number who were able to successfully advance, creating many new rank four and rank five Gu Masters.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was originally arranged by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable for the benefit of his descendants.

"This sixty-eighth floor is the main focus of our tribe, it even far surpasses winning over the thirty-ninth floor. This is a task specially handed to me by a certain supreme elder of our tribe. Thus, every bit of strength in the sacred palace needs to be treasured. Hei Shu, make this news public: Starting now, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building will be closed and everyone will listen to my arrangements. After breaking through the sixty-eighth floor, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building will be opened again." Hei Lou Lan instructed, his tone containing a will that could not be questioned.

When Hei Shu heard this was actually a task given by the tribe’s supreme elder, his body shook and his expression turned extremely solemn.

"Get to work." Hei Lou Lan waved his hand.

Hei Shu accepted the command and retreated.

Every Imperial Court contest was a chess game played by Gu Immortals. Even the stronger Gu Masters were no more than chess pieces.

To seek some kind of Immortal Gu, Gu Immortals would provide support to certain tribes participating in the Imperial Court contest. This was a common set of circumstances.

Hei Lou Lan was sure that everyone would be dissatisfied by his decision to close Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, but under the pressure of a Gu Immortal’s reputation, no one would dare to raise an issue.

"Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s injuries are too severe, but I can make him participate in the battle after he rests for about half a month. After all, he is a healing Gu Master and will be in the rear of the battlefield. He needs lifespan Gu, I can start from this aspect to mobilize him."

"Chang Shan Yin is fighting the seventh floor. Hehe, his days have not been easy because his son suddenly perished in this round. To get back his reputation, he must pass this round. But he demanded flying bear phantom Immortal Gu from me before, taking loans and owing me a great deal of resources. I can mobilize him."

"There is also Ye Lui Sang, he has a fire path support type Immortal Gu and would be of strong help to me. I can entice him with heavy bait...of course, the crucial point will still be using the strength of the three Gu Immortals, Xue

Song Zi, Hei Cheng and Hei Bai. Hehehe, I should send them letters."

...

Hei Bai was extremely excited after reading Hei Lou Lan’s letter: "I waited so long and now finally the wooden chicken Gu has appeared, I did not think it would be within the sixty-eighth floor."

He did not doubt the contents of this letter in the least.

After all, Hei Lou Lan was Hei Cheng’s son, and was the current Hei tribe leader. If his loyalty was doubted, then was there anyone in the world who was worth trusting?

Hei Cheng smiled brightly: "Virtuous brother, every cloud has a silver lining, hard work will eventually pay off. Did the letter mention anything about strength path Immortal Gu?"

Hei Bai’s face flushed red: "I am ashamed, I was only thinking of wooden chicken Gu and forgot about nephew’s situation. Nephew has Great Strength True Martial Physique, he must have a strength path Immortal Gu to advance to Gu Immortal. Nephew has mentioned about this in the letter, but unfortunately a strength path Immortal Gu has yet to appear in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building."

"Still no strength path Immortal Gu?" Hei Cheng frowned.

Previously, when Hei Bai had been worried about wooden chicken Gu, he was consoled by Hei Cheng. This time, it was Hei Bai’s turn to console Hei Cheng: "Brother, no need to worry, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building has altogether eighty-eight floors, there are still twenty floors that have not condensed yet."

Hei Cheng nodded, sighing: "Immortal Gu Dark Limit won’t be able to mask his physique any longer, this can almost be considered as my son’s final chance at life. Sigh... Man proposes and God disposes, we can only leave things to the will of heaven."

Hei Bai’s heart was fervent as he changed the topic back to wooden chicken Gu. He reminded: "Brother, time waits for no man, let’s quickly prepare to give some help to Hei Lou Lan!"

"Yes. This matter demands immediate actions, which place did the letter mention?" Hei Cheng slowly stood up from his seat.

Hei Bai also followed suit and stood up: "It is near Demon Blood Hill."

"Let’s go."

The two Gu Immortals were very straightforward as they immediately set off.

Not long later, they arrived at the sky above Demon Blood Hill.

Demon Blood Hill was a famous area in northern plains where four great tribes of the righteous path had allied to annihilate a gang of demonic path bandits who had been ravaging around northern plains.

The demonic path bandits were extremely fierce because of their deep background, with demonic path Gu Immortals secretly supporting them from the dark.

After the intense battle, the bandit gang was completely annihilated while the righteous path also suffered serious losses. The blood of demonic path Gu Masters dyed the whole hill red, and thus later generations called the hill ’Demon Blood Hill’.

Hei Lou Lan had requested help in the letter.

Hei tribe’s two Gu Immortals had already prepared for a long time and were ready to leave at any time; this was to help Hei Lou Lan to clear the floor as fast as possible.

But Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was located in Imperial Court blessed land, why would the two Gu Immortals from Hei tribe come here?

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s structure needed to be mentioned for this.

The previous ink text had explained: Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was a rank eight Immortal Gu house formed from innumerable small towers, with divert disaster Gu as one of the main cornerstones.

There were gaps of several li between each small tower, covering Imperial Court blessed land in accordance to each region of northern plains. During ordinary times, the small towers would be taking in the wild Gu within Imperial Court blessed land. As every ten year period arrived, these small towers would start to sink one after another, sacrificing the wild Gu inside them while also resonating with the blizzard in the outside world to achieve a miraculous power.

This power would carry out an enormous plundering of the whole of northern plains, taking in the precious Gu resources of northern plains to above the sacred palace in Imperial Court blessed land, and thus condensing floor after floor of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

These floors would form on top of one another, finally forming the complete Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!

Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s plan had been rejected by Long Hair Ancestor. Long Hair Ancestor was a refinement path supreme grandmaster, and thought of an exquisite plan with a different approach, refining the current Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Every time Eighty-Eight True Yang Building formed was a process of refining Gu once again.

It not only made use of the wild Gu in the small towers but also the Gu worms absorbed into it.

For example, looking at the sixty-eighth floor, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building first absorbed flying bear strength Gu and refined it, using the strength of the Gu to form the hundredth round.

Again, absorbing other strong Gu worms to form the ninety-ninth round. Following was the ninety-eight round, ninety-seventh.....

It was like building a high building, one must first build a strong foundation.

If there were not qualified Gu worms, then Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would replace it with Gu recipe, primeval stones, inheritance secrets and so on.

Everyone knew the harder the rounds in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building were, the more bountiful the rewards would be. Conversely, the more bountiful the rewards or stronger the Gu worms, the more difficult the round would be.

One could say every Gu worm assimilated into Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was a part of its structure.

Countless Imperial Court contests passed by while countless generations of sagely immortals had been probing before the workings of this mechanism of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building were finally discovered.

Originally, there were no flaws in this.

But with the passing of time, changes started to appear which created a loophole, allowing northern plains' Gu Masters to exploit it.

This loophole was in the aspect of 'refinement'.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building plundered northern plains and absorbed Gu worms, 'refining' them and using their strength to form rounds.

What did Gu refinement rely on?

Will!

Back then, how did Fang Yuan refine the liquor worm?

By using primeval essence as a carrier for the Gu Master's will to continually wear down the Gu worm's will, until the Gu worm was filled with the Gu Master's will, thoroughly turning into the Gu Master's tool.

When Fang Yuan refined Gu, he had used Immortal Gu Spring Autumn Cicada to get the desired result at the least expense.

If the Gu worms differ by two ranks or more, there would be suppression. Fang Yuan used Spring Autumn Cicada's aura to force the lower ranked Gu worm's will to curl up at a corner, and then poured in his primeval essence and will straight into the Gu worm, swallowing the withdrawn Gu worm's will.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was not a Gu Master, how could it refine other Gu worms?

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, thus, intentionally left behind his will!

Giant Sun's will!

Fang Yuan had seen Giant Sun's will when he was refining the guest halt stele before. It was genuinely majestic and vast like the sun.

Comparatively speaking, the will Fang Yuan left behind after refining the guest halt stele was as minute as an ant.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building refined Gu worms by using Giant Sun's will.

Immortal Venerable were unrivalled, their wills were also similarly unrivalled and could easily extinguish other wills.

Thus, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had never encountered any problems when refining Gu worms.

However, there was a problem.

Wills were formed from thoughts, if there was not a soul to act as the carrier, continuous thinking would only lead to unceasing consumption.

To resist such astonishing consumption, the will would often choose to hibernate.

When Fang Yuan entered Water Pavilion, Mo Yao's will which was stored inside had awoken from her hibernation.

Giant Sun's will might be vast as the Sun, but Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had passed away for countless years now; the will was gradually unable to resist the power of time and also chose to hibernate!

When Giant Sun’s will went into hibernation, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s Gu refinement speed slowed down.

This reduction in speed caused a loophole to appear in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Strong winds blew and snow wreaked havoc.

Demon Blood Hill which used to have dark red grass growing all over was now a scene of whiteness.

The lofty hill also had surrendered to the power of ten year’s blizzard, appearing weak as a baby.

Roar Roar Roar....

Enormous figures that were as tall as thirty feet, appeared and disappeared in the blizzard. These were monsters that only appeared during the blizzard — snow monsters.

These snow monsters were stronger the larger their size.

A thirty feet tall snow monster could battle a rank three Gu Master. Forty feet tall had the strength of a rank four Gu Master. And fifty feet tall had the terrifying power of a rank five Gu Master.

Following the blizzard, the snow monsters began to devastate the whole of Northern Plains.

They slowly converged together and attacked several surviving areas of Northern Plains, bringing destruction to the dying humans and living beings.

But there is a weakness to everything, snow monsters were snowmen’s prey.

Snowmen could rapidly propagate by devouring snow monsters’ meat and blood, even prolonging their lifespan.

Hei Bai and Hei Cheng stood on the summit of the Demon Blood Hill for a while.

Their black robes were exceptionally conspicuous in the white snowy land.

Beside them were corpses of hundreds of snow monsters. Unless snow monsters that had reached the height of sixty feet appeared, even in great numbers they could only be trash throwing away their lives when fighting Gu Immortals.

Hei Bai and Hei Cheng had already waited for a long time now.

Suddenly, Hei Bai’s expression shook as he got a response, his sharp gaze looking at his left.

There, maelstroms of wind and snow started to form in the air.

Within a blink of an eye, they turned one by one into whole giant hands formed from wind and snow — flying snow hand.

After the enormous flying snow hands condensed completely, they grabbed at Hei Bai and Hei Cheng.

"Haha, we have been waiting for you." Hei Bai laughed brightly and flicked his finger repeatedly, sending out large numbers of rank five Gu worms.

Hei Cheng also made his move.

The enormous flying snow hands grabbed Gu worms and soon each of them clenched tightly. The snow hands crumbled apart while the Gu worms inside disappeared without a trace, captured tightly by a power that took them into Imperial Court blessed land.

Hei tribe’s two Gu Immortals did not resist in the slightest and let the Gu worms be taken by the flying snow hands.

Such a situation lasted for a whole hour before all the rank five Gu worms were captured away. Hei Bai and Hei Cheng only then stopped, looking at each other with a smile before flying away rapidly, disappearing into the horizon in a blink of an eye.

"Support has arrived!" After some time, Hei Lou Lan got a response, his gaze burned as he gazed above at Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

At the peak of the sacred palace, an aurora was shaking.

The sixty-eighth floor was still condensing with the hundredth round already being formed before. The still not formed sixty-eighth floor was only in its embryonic stage, the aurora around it continually shook like liquid, holding the large numbers of Gu worms captured just before from outside the blessed land.

A part of these Gu worms were wild Gu whereas a portion came from Hei Cheng and Hei Bai, two Gu Immortals.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building chose the strongest among them to form the ninety-ninth round, ninety-eighth round....

Hei Lou Lan carefully sensed it for a while before slightly frowning: "The two from Hei tribes have already made their move but that Xue Song Zi is still biding his time, hmph!"

He had bribed Xue Song Zi to reach an agreement. One of the contents of the agreement was Xue Song Zi help him at a designated time period.

However, Xue Song Zi was not showing any signs of movement at present.

Hei Lou Lan was displeased, immediately sending a letter through a Gu worm.

Soon, he received the reply.

In the letter, Xue Song Zi complained about how the two Gu Immortals from Hei tribe were pressuring him these days and how his snowman business had taken a dive, already running at a loss. He also added how he had already supported Hei Lou Lan with many rank five Gu for wooden chicken Gu some time ago. And it was beyond his power to send support now.

"Lies!" Hei Lou Lan was furious, almost pinching this letter Gu to death, "There is indeed no one good in the demonic path, they all are treacherous and sly bastards."

But soon, Hei Lou Lan’s anger subsided.

Truthfully, he had predicted this.

After all, he was only a mortal while Xue Song Zi was a lofty Gu Immortal. A mortal dealing with a Gu Immortal was like an ant negotiating with an elephant.

The two were simply not at the same level. If the Gu Immortal refused to acknowledge and reneged back on the promise, the mortal could do nothing about it.

Hei Lou Lan was secretly worried.

The sixty-eighth floor was in the process of condensing and the longer the time went by, the weaker the effect of a Gu Immortal’s support would be.

"It seems, I need to first obtain wooden chicken Gu to make Xue Song Zi help me!" Hei Lou Lan sneered, immediately sending an order to convene everyone.

Wooden chicken Gu was on the thirty-ninth floor of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

For months now, Hei Lou Lan’s efforts had been concentrated on this floor. He also had Xue Song Zi’s help, thus the progress was very smooth, succeeding in pushing to the last round.

Wooden chicken Gu was exactly the reward for this final round.

This last round; it was difficult in a sense, but it was also very simple.

What it tested was patience in putting in effort over a long period of time.

Hei Lou Lan had personally led people and attempted the round for forty to fifty times altogether, now already having grasped its details. Every time, he would progress slightly and the accumulation of such progress gave shocking results. He was only a paper-thin distance away from success.

"This is good too. Grasping this thirty-ninth floor would raise the morale for when we tackle the sixty-eighth floor." Hei Lou Lan thought for a while and immediately took action.

The next day, he mustered large numbers of people, convening all the Gu Masters in the sacred palace, and held a pep rally.

That very evening, he led everyone and successfully broke through the hundredth round, obtaining rank six Immortal Gu Wooden Chicken.

Just like Hei Lou Lan expected, the breakthrough of the round raised morale and fighting spirit greatly, sweeping away the haze of Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s defeat.

With Immortal Gu Wooden Chicken, Hei Lou Lan’s confidence rose greatly and he used it to lure Xue Song Zi into helping him.

Seven days later, the sixty-eighth floor had completely taken form.

Hei Lou Lan impatiently led everyone to charge into the floor.

However, after arriving at the floor, he did not tackle the rounds anxiously, instead commanding the Gu Masters to spread out.

Over a hundred refinement path Gu Masters were included in the troops.

These people were all carefully selected and their loyalty could be trusted. Although they had not attained master level, they were elites.

The refinement path Gu Masters formed a round formation upon which Hei Lou Lan slowly walked into the center.

He sat down cross-legged and took out the two-edge owner token.

The two-edge owner token slowly flew into the air and at the same time, Hei Lou Lan’s body also began to let out grey light.

The light rays were sharp as needles, piercing into the air.

Not only Hei Lou Lan, the remaining refinement path Gu Masters also let out sharp grey radiance.

These needle sharp light rays continued to strengthen, becoming thicker and longer, flooding the whole round formation.

The individual needle sharp rays started to touch each other, instantly linking together. A giant grey radiance slowly stretched out from the round formation, directly piercing into the two-edge owner token which was floating in the air.

Outside the round formation were large numbers of Gu Masters spectating this while guarding against emergencies.

"What are they doing?" A young Gu Master asked in confusion.

An aged senior beside him patted his shoulder: "Hehe, this is the ability of super tribes! Kid, watch properly, the next scene will make your eyes open and jaw fall down."

As he was saying this, the owner token suddenly shook.

The tremor was weak, but following the dissemination of the giant sharp grey radiance, the scope of the tremor quickly increased.

By the time this tremor spread to the round formation, it had already become a heavy tremor.

The grey light rays condensed in the round formation like a light lake. From this heavy tremor, the lake suddenly erupted with dazzling light, forcing everyone to narrow their eyes.

The grey light shone on every corner of the first round’s area.

Just like the melting of snow, the world in the round gradually started turning transparent before completely dissipating.

It was like a cover had been lifted, and as if the second layer underneath was revealed, Hei Lou Lan and the group arrived at the second round.

"This is?!"

"We actually passed the round without even making a move?"

After a moment of silence, many young Gu Masters started making a big fuss.

That young Gu Master from just before had eyes wide open and his jaw hanging down: "What in the world is this method?"

The aged Gu Master beside replied with satisfaction: "This is a refinement path killer move that all super tribes have — Grey Meltdown. It can be used to rapidly pass rounds in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. Kid, the scope of your vision should have expanded, right?"

The young Gu Master whose vision was expanded, nodded his head nonstop and praised: "Amazing! Truly an amazing method! But, what do they need us for with such a method in their disposal?"

The aged Gu Master’s smile turned forced: "This method is not effective every time. Some rounds can be crossed with this method, while some cannot."

"Tsk tsk, this trick is quite interesting..." In Fang Yuan’s mind, Mo Yao revealed her body.

Her posture was enchanting and her eyes had a hint of seduction. She mumbled to herself in an analytical way: "This should be digging into the hibernating will of Giant Sun’s control, attacking with coordination from both outside and inside. The Gu Masters outside the blessed land would release Gu at certain places, and these Gu worms would be absorbed into Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, refined into the rounds. But Giant Sun’s will is hibernating, so the speed in refining the Gu worms has become slower. At best, they could only be considered half-refined."

"The so-called killer move grey meltdown uses the owner token to connect with the half-refined Gu worms. As such, the core of the round will be directly refined. The round will naturally not be able to continue anymore and switch to the next round."

"To do this, the crucial key is time. The state of the half-refined Gu won’t continue for long. Even if Giant Sun’s will is hibernating, as long as there is sufficient time, it will completely refine these Gu worms. In the case that these Gu worms are refined, the Gu Masters tackling the round cannot induce any reaction and the chance to forcibly refine them would be thoroughly lost."

"Hehehe, you are indeed a refinement path grandmaster, being able to analyze so thoroughly with just a glance." Fang Yuan laughed in his mind, not stinting on his praise towards Mo Yao.

To speak bluntly, this method was fighting with Eighty-Eight True Yang Building to refine the Gu worms.

If Giant Sun’s will was awake, the Gu worms would be refined instantly, not leaving behind any opportunity.

But it was hibernating now, the refinement had become slow and as such, there was a loophole that could be used.

Fang Yuan was from the future, thus he knew this clearly.

In his previous life, after central continent’s Gu Immortals had broken through Imperial Court blessed land, they had shown this method in the image clips they had disseminated everywhere.

But this method could only be used as support.

What central continent’s Gu Immortals truly relied on was still the glass owner token.

This secondary owner token could be considered a divine treasure! Who knew how much energy and resources central continent’s forces had to spend for it, and now it was in Fang Yuan’s possession, raised to six edges.

Taking advantage of everyone concentrating on the second round, Fang Yuan secretly took out the six-edge owner token.

He stroked the six edges of the owner token and sighed, muttering inwardly: "Such a long time of planning and now it is finally time for the plan to begin in full. Flying bear strength Gu with my flying bear phantom Gu, isn’t that what it should be? Hehe, I also think so."

With that and a thought in his mind, he instantly grasped control over this floor!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Hei Lou Lan gazed ahead at the troops making slow progress in the dense jungle.

The intense battle had already lasted for over six hours.

This was the second round; the weather here was hot and damp, and the terrain was a vast ancient rainforest.

To cross this round, Gu Masters needed to traverse through the whole jungle and reach a stone palace at the other side.

However, this jungle could not be taken lightly.

There might not be any beasts in the jungle but it was full of green vines.

These green vines were coiled around tall trees and piled up on the damp ground. Every green vine had the thickness of a king-sized bowl and length of seventy to eighty feet in the minimum.

The common green vines among these were called green snake vines which had snake scales growing all over their surface. And when Gu Masters neared them, the vines would suddenly move and coil around the Gu Masters, constricting them to death.

In every one hundred paces of the rainforest, there were about a thousand green snake vines, filling the whole area.

The difficulty in progressing forward was thus extremely high.

The whole journey was filled with green snake vines attacking from all sides; some shot down from sky, some creeped through the ground and some ambushed from under the ground, causing the group to struggle and not be able to defend properly.

The group’s progress was met with attacks from the green vines at all times, seemingly like they were among an ocean of green vines.

The green vine had powerful attacks and quick speed. Even more dangerous were the wood path Gu worms that lived on their bodies. It was precisely because of these Gu worms that the group had suffered huge casualties.

"Reporting, we have discovered a green snake vine king ahead. Currently, Lord Ye Lui Sang is already in a fight with it." After a while of moving forward, an investigative Gu Master returned from the front group to report to Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan nodded, still continuing with his slow movement.

In every group of green snake vines, there was a green snake vine king which had the battle strength of a rank four Gu Master.

However, Ye Lui Sang was a rank five peak stage expert, the current tribe leader of the super force Ye Lui tribe, and the fire path he cultivated subdued wood path Gu worms completely. There was also the fire path support type Immortal Gu on him, taking care of a green snake vine king was a cinch.

Sure enough, after a while, the report of victory came from ahead: "Lord Ye Lui Sang has eliminated the green snake vine king and has now retreated from the front lines. Lord Chang Shan Yin has switched with him and is leading the wolf group to open the path."

"Okay." Hei Lou Lan lightly replied.

Wolves were good at offense and not at defense, and were not a good match for the vines. But Chang Shan Yin had defense specialized wolves like turtleback wolves. He also had vermillion fire wolves upon which lived fire path Gu worms. In this situation, they were a sharp weapon to cut open the path.

’Wolf King is truly powerful, he can even be said to have the number one battle strength. Especially when he also has the flying bear phantom Immortal Gu, a mere minor round cannot obstruct him.’ Hei Lou Lan pondered while walking.

’Flying bear phantom Gu and flying bear strength Gu, if the two are paired up, that would be perfect. Hmph, I will first make Chang Shan Yin pour in his utmost effort for me and when the time is ripe, I must make him hand over that flying bear phantom Gu! As long as I become a Gu Immortal, wouldn’t a mere Wolf King be mine to toy with?"

’This second round seemingly tests the Gu Master’s strength in doing prolonged battles, but more than that, it is actually testing investigative ability. In this jungle, there are not only the green snake vine groups, but also green dragon vine groups. Green dragon vines are dozens of times more terrifying than green snake vines, they are mutated beings among plants! The path we took avoided these green dragon vines as much as possible. There are only one or two territories of green dragon vines in this path, and presumably there will be one or two tough battles, and that will be the greatest difficulty of this round."

Hei Lou Lan felt proud: ’We are getting closer to the finish line, at this speed, we will cross this round in an hour!"

He had just thought of this when suddenly a change occurred.

Swish swish....

The green snake vines around the group suddenly penetrated the air with terrifying speed, even producing sonic booms!

The offense of the vines had suddenly increased by dozens of times.

The previous battles were the ones where the Gu Masters fought with the green snake vines nearby while the vines outside the range stayed still.

But now, the green vines within a hundred li, no, a thousand li, were engaging in the battle, surging out crazily like a tsunami as they pounced towards the Gu Masters.

The Gu Masters were caught unprepared, immediately suffering heavy losses. Countless Gu Masters were killed within a few moments of time.

"How could this happen? The green snake vines are rioting all of a sudden!" The experts shouted in fright.

"Someone, save me quickly!" Surrounding Gu Masters were wantonly constricted and twisted apart by the green vine group.

"I command all troops to attack, hold them off no matter the consumption! If we can’t hold them back, it will be our death!!" Hei Lou Lan shouted and rose to the air, attempting to control the situation.

Soon, a hundred or so green dragon vines rose to the sky, charging towards him.

Hei Lou Lan gave a shout of fury and used his dark path abilities, killing twenty to thirty green dragon vines instantly before moving towards the ground.

But the ground was also not safe, countless green snake vines and green dragon vines broke through the soil, trapping the entirety of the troops.

"How can this be? The scouting had been done properly, how could we encounter a green dragon vine group here?" The corners of Hei Lou Lan’s eyes were threatening to tear as he could not make sense of this no matter what!

Green vines were strongly territorial. But as long as one does not encroach upon their territory, they would remain still and not take the initiative to attack.

These green vine groups, however, had completely gone crazy, pouncing upon the Gu Masters like they had killed their father.

Green vines possessed strong vitality and even if they were cut into five to six parts, these five to six parts could still attack before dying. Hei Lou Lan even saw many green dragon vines struggling free from their root systems, and flying out to attack.

’This, how is this possible? What the hell is happening?!’ Hei Lou Lan could not make sense of it no matter how he thought. By cutting off their own roots, these green dragon vines were looking for their own death.

All living things possessed survival instinct.

How deep a hatred was it for them to erupt in such bitter suicidal attacks?

The large army was broken apart, each fighting for themselves while slowly starting to retreat bit by bit; in a moment, many youths lost their lives.

"Could it be this second round is actually a giant trap?! This is too strange, this is only the second round, how could its difficulty be so high?!" Hei Lou Lan was dumbstruck, a huge doubt rising in his heart.

This was indeed a huge trap.

But the one who laid this trap was not Eighty-Eight True Yang Building but the one in control of this floor - Fang Yuan.

He had been patient, ordering the green vines everywhere in this round to stealthily move here. He then accepted the command to participate in the front line and switched with others from time to time, intentionally lowering the speed of progress to stall for time.

When large numbers of green vines had gathered, Fang Yuan immediately ordered a surprise attack without any hesitation.

The Gu Masters suffered disastrous losses because of the ambush!

Fang Yuan was an enslavement path master; the green vines which had lower intelligence than beasts, coordinated together under his control, and disregarded their own lives to burst out with a hundred times their normal strength!

Especially for the experts like Hei Lou Lan, Ye Lui Sang and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he had paid even more attention and mobilized green dragon vines which were comparable to mutated beasts, to obstruct them.

"Retreat, retreat quickly."

"There are green vines everywhere around us, if we continue on, the casualties will become even more severe!"

"Lord Hei tribe leader, my tribe leader requests to retreat!"

Several large tribes hurriedly sent their representatives.

Anyone could see they had landed into an ambush by the green vine groups. How could the green vines become so sinister? Right now, no one had the time to tackle this issue.

Hei Lou Lan fiercely gnashed his teeth, his face showed a struggling expression several times before he squeezed out a word: "Retreat!"

He also knew the situation was already out of control, the green vines were charging without fearing death and had already led the formation to turn chaotic. And the experts were not able to fight properly for the fear of hurting their own men.

If they suffered such serious casualties in the second round, then how could Hei Lou Lan have the power to seize the Immortal Gu in the last round?

Retreat was naturally a wise move, but it would depend on whether Fang Yuan would allow it.

He was in control of this floor, sealing the exit and entrance was only a small thing.

Soon, everyone made a terrifying discovery - they could not leave!

This discovery was huge blow on the morale.

The whole army seemed to be about to crumble apart.

At the crucial moment, Hei Lou Lan felt the situation going awry and stood up, his voice spreading everywhere: "All of you, persevere. I will use the killer move grey meltdown to forcibly cross this round. If we persevere, we will win, we will survive!!"

The despairing Gu Masters heard these words and felt like they were drowning men who had found a life saving straw.

The morale that had fallen to the bottom did not crumble in the end and instead stabilized.

Everyone again started fighting, opening a path and forming a tight and connected formation.

Under the heavy protection from all the troops, Hei Lou Lan led a group of refinement path Gu Masters to form a round formation and began to use the killer move grey meltdown.

"Lord, if we forcibly activate it, we will probably lose thirty percent of our men." An old refinement path Gu Master who was familiar with the inside information advised Hei Lou Lan with a pale face.

The killer move grey meltdown naturally had its limitations.

This killer move relied on the coordination of the inside and outside; this required the reward of the round to be Gu worms deliberately provided by either Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals or Xue Song Zi.

But Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would not coordinate, it only chose the suitable Gu worms from those absorbed and refined them to form the rounds.

The first round’s reward were Gu worms that came from Hei Bai. Thus, Hei Lou Lan could use the killer move grey meltdown to exploit Giant Sun’s will still not having fully refined the Gu worms, to forcibly refine them. Like this, he would get the reward and pass the round.

But the second round’s Gu worm reward was wild Gu. Hei Lou Lan was unable to connect with these wild Gu and the killer move grey meltdown could not be used.

The second round could only in accordance with this be completed by going through its requirement.

But the current situation was critical, Hei Lou Lan was left without a better option but to forcibly activate killer move grey meltdown to skip through the second round and connect to the Gu worm reward of the third round.

The third round’s Gu worm reward came from Xue Song Zi. The Gu worm was only half-refined, thus still contained most of Xue Song Zi’s will.

As Hei Lou Lan was working together with Xue Song Zi, Xue Song Zi’s will approved him. He could thus use grey meltdown to connect to the third round’s reward and refine it.

As such, the third round would be passed. And when the third round is crossed, the second round would have no foundation, collapsing apart. Because when Eighty-Eight True Yang Building condensed each floor, it would first form the hundredth round, then ninety-ninth round, ninety-eighth round....

However, if Hei Lou Lan did so, the killer move grey meltdown’s power would increase by several times, far surpassing the amount these refinement path Gu Masters could bear.

Whether it was success or failure, a portion of the refinement path Gu Masters would not be able to bear it and die.

"Tens of refinement path Gu Masters dying is better than the whole army dying!" Hei Lou Lan gritted his teeth, his eyes filled with chilly and cruel light. The situation had forced him to choose the lesser of the two evils.

The old Gu Master did not say any more and retreated back to the formation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The refinement path Gu Masters had solemn expressions while quickly moving into formation. Grey rays of light gradually blossomed and merged into one.

Under everyone’s expectant gaze, Hei Lou Lan waved his hand and threw the two-edge owner token into the air.

The owner token floated in midair, and the giant grey radiance which had been condensed in the round formation shot towards the owner token.

The grey radiance was so dazzling that one could not look at it directly.

"Haha, this is the moment." Fang Yuan had been observing this from the outside, and sent a thought at this time.

The two-edge owner token immediately disappeared, landing in his hand the next moment.

He was in control of this floor, teleporting a small owner token was as simple as breathing.

Without the owner token, the grey radiance immediately collapsed and the killer move grey meltdown forcibly ended; the refinement path Gu Masters in the round formation gave a frightened howl, puffing out blood, with almost all of them dying from the backlash in that instant.

Spurt.

Hei Lou Lan, who was in the center of the formation was no exception to this, spurting out a mouthful of blood and retreating back several large steps like he had received a heavy impact.

"My owner token!" He lost his self control and howled with an extremely shocked, angered and doubtful expression.

Everyone was also stupefied by this change.

Sun Shi Han was baffled, Tang Miao Ming covered her mouth and Pei Yan Fei was also despondent.

Even Mo Yao’s will was raving in Fang Yuan’s mind: "Brat, what did you do? His owner token has no more than two edges now. Adding in your six edges, it is only eight edges! What are you in such a hurry for? Wouldn’t it be good if you had waited for his owner token to rise to four edges?!"

"You don’t know shit." Fang Yuan sneered and under the cover of his large sleeve, calmly put away the two-edge owner token.

The whole process happened under the bystanders’ gazes, but it was completed in total secret without incurring any suspicion.

"This, what the hell happened!" Ye Lui Sang rushed towards Hei Lou Lan with a fretful expression and asked, "Where is the owner token?"

"I... how would I know!!" Hei Lou Lan’s eyes seemed to shoot out flames of anger, his voice raised an octave higher as he burst out with foul language, "What the f*ck happened?!"

In the past records of history, there had never been a situation where the owner token suddenly disappeared!

Grey meltdown had been used so many times by all the large forces and the winners in the past, how could it suddenly fade away in Hei Lou Lan’s hand?

"Damn it, how do we go on without the owner token?" Fang Yuan also hurried over at this moment, his brows were furrowed into a knot and he had a genuine and heavily anxious expression, making others sympathize with him.

The killer move which everyone had placed high hopes on failed at the crucial moment. The two-edge owner token was also inexplicably lost.

The green vines’ offensive was becoming more fierce like a flash flood, not giving anyone the time for a breather.

Morale had fallen to the abyss and many started fleeing in disorder.

"It’s over, we are done for." Xi Xue mumbled.

"Will I die in this place? Is this the final ending?" Tai Bai Yun Sheng laughed bitterly. In this recent period, he was being tormented by his conscience and his body looked extremely weak and thin.

However, the next moment, someone shouted in joy: "We can leave, someone left! We can leave!!"

Fang Yuan did not want to get rid of all these people in one go and left a lifeline, allowing the Gu Masters to freely enter and exit this floor.

If Hei tribe was completely annihilated, he would definitely attract the all-out revenge of Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals.

Moreover, Fang Yuan still required Tai Bai Yun Sheng to refine landscape as before Gu.

Therefore the collapsed and despairing army started retreating.

"I am actually alive!"

"This time was too terrifying, I don’t want to enter there again."

"Boo hoo hoo....father, you died so miserably."

The plaza around the True Yang Building became a scene of gloomy misery.

Hei Lou Lan had convened a large army and entered the tower with grand and vigorous momentum, but such a change while leaving the tower was beyond the expectations of almost everyone.

Hei Lou Lan’s expression was ashen as he glanced at the plaza before leaving without any words.

Hei tribesmen followed behind him, silent and heads lowered.

Ye Lui Sang heaved a long sigh and shook his head, leaving the plaza.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a complex expression as he looked at Hei Lou Lan’s receding figure: "After this expedition, it will probably be difficult to form a presentable party within a short period of time."

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was wrong.

The very next day, Hei Lou Lan again formed a large army and attacked the second round.

So what if he lost the owner token?

Even if he could not use grey meltdown, he could use brute force to pass the round!

Hei Lou Lan had deceived two great Gu Immortals in his pledge to take revenge;

he could no longer turn back.

He must force himself to continue on!

However, during the night of the defeat, Fang Yuan had quietly entered Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

"You are too impatient, you now only have eight edges. What can you do now!" Mo Yao sneered in his mind.

Fang Yuan walked slowly along the secret treasury corridor while gently touching the crystal wall, looking on as treasure after treasure swept past his gaze.

He had a slight smile on his face, replying calmly to Mo Yao’s will: "You are an impressive refinement path grandmaster, a fairy of Spirit Affinity House, just speak clearly if you want to ask, why probe so superficially?"

Mo Yao heard this and immediately changed her expression, smiling coquettishly: "Young man, looks like you already have a plan..."

"That goes without saying." Fang Yuan’s steps paused and he lightly stroked the right crystal wall, taking out a treasure stored within.

Ever since he had refined the guest halt stele, he could take out any treasures around this distance.

Fang Yuan walked a few steps further and took out three Gu worms on top of that.

He then moved to the left crystal wall and took out the objects within.

As this went on, Fang Yuan had taken out tens of Gu recipes, over a hundred Gu worms, all kinds of information on inheritances and over twenty documents on cultivation insights.

Fang Yuan kept around eighty of the Gu worms outside while sending the rest into storage Gu worms.

Mo Yao had observed the whole process quietly, getting more curious as time went on. These Gu worms that Fang Yuan left out here did not match together, she really could not tell what he was doing.

The video of central continent’s Gu Immortals attacking Imperial Court blessed land in his previous life appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind.

There were altogether eleven Gu Immortals who attacked Imperial Court blessed land, men and women, each with extraordinary presence.

A female immortal was the leader, a domineering aura lingered around her which pressured people; other Gu Immortals were cautious and respectful towards her.

She was known as Fairy Black Moon. A half-mask covered her nose, mouth and cheeks, only revealing the upper half of her face which showed her strong contours, sharp and long brows, bright eyes and a heroic aura. A dark gold armor covered her whole body, bringing a heavy feeling of suppression on any that looked at it.

Fang Yuan’s current actions were replicating Fairy Black Moon’s actions to the smallest details.

The treasures he took out were actually of great background. Countless years back, central continent’s Gu Immortals sent outstanding Gu Masters to infiltrate into northern plains; the Gu Masters would pass some rounds with high grade evaluation, entering the treasure room and arranging these treasures here.

The whole process consumed close to a millenium.

Fang Yuan walked past the guest halt stele, and walked over three hundred steps into the long crystal corridor before stopping.

"It is here." He looked around him and after confirming it, began to put the Gu worms he had taken earlier into the crystal wall. Whether it was left or right, top or under his feet, they were placed in a certain pattern.

As for the original treasures within the crystal wall, Fang Yuan took some, left some and shifted the position of some.

"This, could it be...." Mo Yao was bewildered; she had been watching carefully and had gradually inferred some clues with her refinement path grandmaster attainment.

In the range of tens of steps, after Fang Yuan’s adjustments, the Gu worms in the crystal wall had ingeniously formed a formation.

"Right, this is precisely the refinement path killer move grey meltdown. No, to be even more exact, this killer move originates from grey meltdown but its effects are much stronger!" Fang Yuan chuckled.

"What in the world are you trying to do?" Mo Yao asked.

Fang Yuan’s gazed eerily, a confident smile appearing on his face: "Just watch."

He then sent out several Gu worms which floated in the air.

The Gu worms in the surrounding walls started to shake slightly one by one.

Dust seemed to rise up in the air.

The dust gradually became denser till it formed a thick grey fog.

The grey fog kept on accumulating and soon entirely submerged Fang Yuan; he could not even see his own hands.

Fang Yuan stood within the grey fog with his eyes closed and his right hand clutching the six-edge owner token, as he tried to carefully sense something.

Suddenly, he opened his eyes and shouted: "Come back, Fixed Immortal Travel!"

Rumble!

The crystal corridor shook strongly and Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had a sudden tremor.

The twenty-first floor where seventeen rounds still remained, disintegrated into nothingness.

The rewards for the seventeen rounds penetrated through space and appeared before Fang Yuan.

Among them, one Gu worm was dispelling a rank six aura, shining with a green gem-like luster, and flying elegantly like a green jade butterfly.

Its powerful presence pushed the rest of the Gu worms to the side.

What else could it be but Fixed Immortal Travel?

"Immortal Gu! This is Fixed Immortal Travel?!" Mo Yao blurted out.

Fang Yuan stored the other rewards into storage Gu worms while the Immortal Gu Fixed Immortal Travel was left outside, sitting on his shoulder.

Immortal Gu Fixed Immortal Travel was a rank six Gu and at its peak state, his mortal aperture could not store it.

Fang Yuan had not stored flying bear phantom Gu either, instead directly holding it in his pocket.

"There is one more." Fang Yuan licked his lips in excitement.

Another explosive sound rang out.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building shook greatly, the twelve remaining rounds of the thirty-fourth floor were immediately passed!

The rewards appeared in front of Fang Yuan out of thin air and one Gu among them, an Immortal Gu that looked like nothing special, just like a lump of earth, it was —

"Immortal Gu Gruel Mud!" Mo Yao's will blurted out the name.

Fang Yuan laughed and stored the other rewards while putting the Gruel Mud into his pouch.

Back then, he had buried Fixed Immortal Travel and Gruel Mud deep under the ground, waiting for this precise moment.

When Eighty-Eight True Yang Building condensed, it plundered the whole of Northern Plains. This was the arrangement of an Immortal Venerable, his might extended up into the heavens and down into the abyss, nothing could stop his overwhelming force.

Immortal Gu Wooden Chicken had escaped the pursuit of Xue Song Zi and Hei Bai, but was still captured by Eighty-Eight True Yang Building in the end.

The wild Immortal Gu ended up like that while Fang Yuan's meticulously buried Immortal Gu did not even have the will to resist, and were naturally collected by Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

After the capture, they were placed separately as the last rewards for the twenty-first and thirty-fourth floor. But due to Giant Sun's will being in hibernation, the two Immortal Gu had all along been in a half-refined state, just as Fang Yuan had planned for.

"Brat, who in the world are you? Hmph, this is not a small arrangement. You were actually able to mobilize two Immortal Gu. Tell me, which region are you from, which force sent you here?" Mo Yao was unable to hold back after she saw this, and began to ask questions after questions.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The appearance of two great Immortal Gu was way out of her expectations, Mo Yao was very surprised.

What was even more scary was, Fang Yuan had made ample preparations!

The Gu worms he used were originally treasures kept inside the crystal walls. His killer move was even more perfect than grey meltdown, and had stronger effect.

To get to this point, it was not something a single person could achieve, in fact, this could not be achieved with merely decades of set up. Huge amounts of strength and effort needed to be invested, at least hundreds of years of infiltration in order to hide all the Gu worms inside the crystal walls, and to prevent the Gu worms from being taken away by people, they needed to prepare several of each Gu.

All in all, this was not something a person or an ordinary force could accomplish, it had to be a super force with Gu Immortals at least!

Against Mo Yao’s suspicion, Fang Yuan smiled lightly and did not speak.

All these were the set up of central continent’s Gu Immortals. But Mo Yao had died long ago, her will was slumbering within Water Pavilion and was unaware of the changes in the outside world.

Fang Yuan was someone who had been reborn, he had a huge advantage, using the Gu Immortals’ set up, he could accomplish all of this successfully!

To speak the truth, he should thank those central continent Gu Immortals who went around to distribute the footage.

Without the guidance of this clip, Fang Yuan would not be so sure of the inside information of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

His method was inherently the same as Hei Lou Lan’s, but Fang Yuan was sensing his own Immortal Gu, while Hei Lou Lan was sensing other people’s mortal Gu.

Refining an Immortal Gu was at least a hundred times as difficult as refining a mortal Gu, thus, Fang Yuan was not in such a rush for time unlike Hei Lou Lan. The two Immortal Gu were constantly in a state of half-refinement.

Most importantly, the refinement path killer move that Fang Yuan activated was the revised version of grey meltdown that central continent’s Gu Immortals had painstakingly researched in, it had an amazing effect, freeing the Gu Master and saving them the trouble of facing backlash as Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would be the one enduring the pressure.

At the same time, he had to thank all of the Gu Masters who charged through the rounds enthusiastically. If the rounds were intact, Fang Yuan would need to traverse a hundred rounds to communicate with the Immortal Gu, it would be filled with difficulty.

But there were only seventeen rounds left on the twenty-first floor, and the thirty-fourth floor had even fewer rounds, at twelve.

After Fang Yuan successfully took the two Immortal Gu, these two floors were passed automatically.

He took out the two owner tokens, the glass owner token was still at six-edges, after all it was a cheat item and was not authentic.

Meanwhile, the owner token snatched from Hei Lou Lan had turned from two-edges to four-edges.

Combining the two, they were — ten-edges!

Ten-edges, that meant that Fang Yuan had met the minimum requirements to receive an Immortal Venerable Inheritance.

"Immortal Venerable Inheritance..." Fang Yuan chuckled, according to what was shown in the footage, he combined the two owner tokens and created the ten-edge owner token.

Swoosh.

The next moment, he vanished on the spot.

The scenery before him changed drastically, when Fang Yuan finally reacted, he found himself in an area of void.

The surroundings were pure darkness, there was neither heaven or earth, Fang Yuan was floating silently in the air.

Several traces of green or red starlight shone from far away.

"This is Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s true inheritance secluded domain, to think that after so many years, I can come here again!" Mo Yao’s will was surprisingly dejected and downcast, as she muttered to herself.

"Eh? You’ve been here before?" Fang Yuan’s heart jumped.

"Back then... hmph, I’m not going to talk about it. It is your greatest fortune to be able to come here! Although with ten-edges, you can only receive the lowest grade ordinary true inheritance. But this will not hinder you from gaining some knowledge and experience. What you are going to see will surely broaden your vision, you will never forget it!" In just a moment, Mo Yao’s will went back to normal.

Fang Yuan laughed, Mo Yao’s arrogant tone did not make him angry, in fact he nodded in agreement: "Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, I cannot compare to him yet! Today, this will indeed hugely broaden my vision."

Saying this, he waved his hands like he was swimming in water, moving his body forward slowly.

In the video from central continent in his previous life, there were many details omitted during this period.

Central continent’s Gu Immortals invested more heavily than Fang Yuan, they used more than ten Immortal Gu to raise the owner token to forty-three edges.

They gained a lot, but all of the gains were concealed, such an act was no doubt a defensive measure to prevent attracting the greed of the viewers. This, however, increased Fang Yuan’s interest and anticipation towards Giant Sun’s true inheritances.

He followed after a blood red starlight, getting closer to it.

As he got closer, the starlight became brighter, and eventually, Fang Yuan stopped before a round circular light.

This lump of red starlight was the size of a bowl, silently floating around.

"This is an ordinary true inheritance, if you want to understand the contents, you just need to let your consciousness enter it." Mo Yao advised at the appropriate timing.

Fang Yuan was carefully navigating with his mind, as images flashed before him.

A grand and huge ancient forest!

Ancient and tall trees, beasts at the size of mountains!

"Hahaha!" A person with a broad shoulder and thin waist was laughing with his head facing up.

His image was blurred, but his skin was covered in rainbow colors, as ancient totems of every description were carved on it, his dominating presence pervaded heaven and earth!

He stepped on the grey clouds and treaded strong winds, his purple hair was fluttering as there were seemingly flames burning within his double pupil eyes.

Fang Yuan saw this and his heart was pounding, he could feel difficulty breathing. He recognised this person immediately: "This is one of the three Demon Venerables of the olden antiquity era, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable! He is facing the immemorial desolate beast – Primordial Ash Owl! Strange, why is there a Demon Venerable's item within Giant Sun's inheritances?"

"What's so strange about this? Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was the venerable of an era, the supreme ruler of heaven and earth, the invincible being in the universe. He searched the entire world and obtained an item of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, placing it inside his building for his descendants, this is very normal." Mo Yao said.

Immemorial desolate beast, overlords that had existed within heaven and earth since the immemorial era, they had rank eight Gu Immortal battle strength.

This primordial ash owl had a bird head and beast body, it had two pairs of golden pupils and a dragon's horn on its head. Its muscular body was covered in thick rainbow feathers, its bestial aura could overwhelm the world.

Its limbs moved quickly, and could easily destroy mountains and rivers. With one growl, its voice could travel ten thousand li, causing ripples in the air of the entire world.

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable praised: "Good beast!"

The primordial ash owl had intelligence that could rival men, it got angry upon hearing that, shooting out thunder like that of the heavens from its mouth, the blue thunderbolt shot out and pierced ten thousand li into the sky, instantly arriving before Reckless Savage Demon Venerable.

Fang Yuan's expression changed, the magnitude of the lightning and thunder was beyond his imagination! Right now he was like an ant, but even if it was his Gu Immortal self from his past life, he could not survive for three breaths' time from this!

But Reckless Savage Demon Venerable did not move at all, he allowed the frenzied thunderbolt to hit his body directly.

From within the electricity, his bronze colored body was intact, shining brightly. His muscles were like stone blocks, and all the totems on his body were like living beings, as all sorts of fierce beasts were roaming on his body.

From within the exploding lightning plasma, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's face showed an expression of enjoyment. He laughed heartily as he punched with his right fist.

Bam – !

Immediately, heaven and earth changed colors, as winds and clouds moved violently.

The lightning vanished slowly, mountains were trembling, and forests were weeping.

With just one punch, the intense winds blew like an apocalypse, the clouds in the sky vanished, the heavens were stripped bare, and permeating sunlight dispelled all darkness!

Just one punch.

With the intensity of the force that repelled ghosts and deities, the primordial ash owl was crying out pitifully!

It was an immemorial desolate beast, an overlord of a region, it was untamable and wild earlier, giving off a strong aura, but the next moment, its bones were crushed to bits as its rainbow feathers floated in the air, its golden pupils were full of fear and it laid on the ground, like a dead dog.

Fang Yuan was completely moved, this was the first time he had seen the attack of a venerable.

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, with the prowess of rank nine, he was truly invincible in all heaven and earth!

"Nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-ninth ash owl." Reckless Savage Demon Venerable said plainly, opening his palm and grabbing the air.

The next moment, the primordial ash owl was held by a formless strength. It was like a chicken that was grabbed by a butcher, it was helpless and was shrieking for help.

"Transform." Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s body shuddered, he expanded along with the wind, becoming a giant in an instant!

What a true giant.

He was as tall as heaven and earth, as if he could grab the sun if he wished. No tribulations could move him, as he could barely be held by the universe itself!

The giant slowly opened his mouth, as the primordial ash owl struggled intensely, and yet to no avail as it was sent into the giant’s mouth.

The giant swallowed in one mouthful, chewing several times with a sound as if a mountain collapsed, lightning striking everywhere, it was loud as thunder.

With a gulp, the giant sent the primordial ash owl into its stomach.

He actually ate an immemorial desolate beast, a rank eight level existence, just like that.

The prowess of Reckless Savage, it was truly terrifying!

After eating this rank eight desolate beast, the giant patted his stomach, the sound was loud as thunder but his expression was like he did not have enough.

And on his belly, there was a new totem, in the form of the primordial ash owl, but among the innumerable totems on his body, it was not eye catching.

The giant seemed to have sensed something as he suddenly turned around and looked straight at Fang Yuan!

Urgh!

Fang Yuan fell on the ground like he had suffered a huge blow, vomiting out a mouthful of blood in the process.

His soul was trembling intensely, a strong sense of dizziness assaulted him, only recovering after a long time.

Gasp, gasp, gasp...

He breathed roughly, barely opening his eyes.

His eyes could not take it either, as two streams of bloody tears flowed out, flowing from his face towards the ground.

But thankfully, this place did not restrict Gu worms, such an injury could be easily healed with Gu worms.

"This is the test of the inheritance?" Fang Yuan healed himself as he asked.

"Hehehe, what sort of test is this?" In his mind, Mo Yao was gloating, replying in an arrogant tone: "This inheritance has a trace of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s will within it, only Gu Immortals could withstand it. But after getting this inheritance, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already modified it such that mortals could endure it. You owe it to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s mercy that you are still alive."

Fang Yuan snorted coldly: "His mercy is only towards his bloodline descendants, what does that have to do with me? Anyway, Giant Sun true inheritances are not so easy to obtain, there is great danger inside."

"That is of course the case. But you have already survived this test, and remember that this true inheritance is only an ordinary true inheritance. With the ten-edge owner token, you already have the authority to inherit it." Mo Yao said.

As expected, when Fang Yuan’s mind entered, the red light lump opened its ’doors’, as Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s figure did not appear again.

"Primordial ash owl transformation..." Fang Yuan realized now that this was a transformation path killer move. This killer move could allow a Gu Immortal to transform into the primordial ash owl, gaining a huge boost in strength.

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable was the progenitor of strength path, but he was also the creator of transformation path.

His strength could shake heaven and earth, he was the fiercest venerable out of the ten. At the same time, he could transform into countless fierce beasts, having an endless number of transformations, and he could even revive from a drop of blood.

Fang Yuan did not hesitate, he let go of the red light lump and allowed it to fly away from him.

Although the true inheritance was precious, it did not suit him currently.

Fang Yuan was very calm, and held even more expectations.

To think that within Giant Sun’s true inheritances, there would be something involving Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, and this particular inheritance was only the lowest grade ordinary true inheritance.

He could not imagine what other ordinary true inheritances there could be. As for the even greater unparalleled true inheritance, what would they be?

He moved his arms, and swam towards another area within this silent and dark void.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan worked hard to swim towards a jade light.

This lump of jade light was harder to get closer to compared to the red light from before.

It was flying slowly, continuously twisting and turning, as Fang Yuan chased after it for a while before managing to grab it.

It was also as large as a bowl, and Fang Yuan’s consciousness carefully entered it.

An unspeakable force of vibration spread from the jade green light into Fang Yuan’s body.

“Be careful, this is Old Immortal Kong Jue’s item!” In his mind, Mo Yao’s will recognised this item and warned.

“Don’t worry, it cannot escape!” Fang Yuan’s tone was certain, he grabbed onto this light lump tightly.

“Idiot, I am not referring to that. Quickly let go.” Mo Yao said this, but it was already too late.

The mystical vibration spread from within the jade light, all the way into Fang Yuan’s aperture.

Fang Yuan’s aperture started vibrating.

In his ninety percent filled aperture sea, waves were crashing violently.

Swish swish swish...

The huge waves crashed on the surrounding aperture walls, the rank five peak stage crystal clear walls were starting to develop cracks from the pressure of the waves.

Fang Yuan was shocked!

This true inheritance’s test was very peculiar, it was hard to defend against, it actually directly affected the Gu Master’s aperture.

“Lad, quickly cut off your arms using Gu worms. Only by making a sacrifice can you save your life!” Mo Yao’s will shouted in Fang Yuan’s mind.

“Cut off my arms?” Fang Yuan’s expression sank, sweat was forming on his forehead.

He tried letting go of it but this lump of jade light gave off an extremely strong suction force, keeping Fang Yuan’s hands tightly attached to it.

Fang Yuan could not get free from it, and the vibrations in his aperture were getting stronger.

“I got it!” In the moment of crisis, Fang Yuan had an inspiration as he quickly moved the primeval essence in his second aperture into his first aperture.

The vibration moved into the second aperture through the primeval essence.

The second aperture also started vibrating uncontrollably, but this way, the two apertures were enduring this together, and the first aperture’s crisis was soothed to a great extent.

Mo Yao gasped.

As the jade light became dim and the vibrations vanished, it seemed that Fang Yuan had passed the test.

“What is going on, you have two apertures?” Mo Yao said.

With two apertures enduring the test together, although the aperture walls were cracked, they did not break.

“Lad, you hid this very deeply, you actually have two apertures! Second aperture... to think that the rumors that had been going around have been confirmed by you.” Mo Yao said with deep emotions.

Fang Yuan was not willing to talk about this, he asked instead: “You mentioned Old Immortal Kong Jue earlier, is it that refinement path supreme grandmaster from the olden antiquity era?”

“That’s right, it’s him. Refinement path supreme grandmaster... even throughout human history, since ancient times, there had only been three. Future generations called them the ‘Three Olds’. They were the remote antiquity era’s Old Eccentric Tian Nan, olden antiquity era’s Old Immortal Kong Jue, and medieval antiquity era’s refinement path supreme grandmaster Long Hair Ancestor.”

Mo Yao continued recounting: “Among them, Old Eccentric Tian Nan had a weird personality, he tried to refine the sky and ended up losing his life. Old Immortal Kong Jue had the deepest research in apertures, he created the <>, and helped the ten extreme physiques to become immortals. Before him, there had never been any cases where a person of the ten extreme physiques rose to become an immortal. As for Long Hair Ancestor, he had the longest lifespan and refined the most Immortal Gu. Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was refined by him. In fact, there were rumors that he could refine lifespan Gu, causing Old Ancestor Giant Sun to attack Lang Ya blessed land, although there were no results from that.”

Mo Yao talked about many famous pieces of information.

Three old beings, three supreme refinement grandmasters, each of them was a legend.

They were the three peaks of refinement path in human history, even rank nine venerables could not mask their glory and reputation.

“Old Immortal Kong Jue’s inheritance tests the fated person’s aperture. You actually had two apertures, you managed to get through luckily. Look, this inheritance is very good, it will be a huge help to you.” Mo Yao continued.

Fang Yuan’s consciousness went in again.

This inheritance was known as the ‘immortal ascension vital information’, it recorded Old Immortal Kong Jue’s understanding of the immortal ascension process of all the different paths of Gu Masters, all the difficulties they might face and how to deal with those difficulties, it listed the most crucial points for rising to immortal.

Fang Yuan assessed in his heart: “Although this is not a Gu recipe or an Immortal Gu, it has a huge value in terms of theoretical guidance. If Gu Masters get it, it will not only help themselves but even allow them to understand other paths, it is truly an important treasure.”

“This immortal ascension vital information dates back to long ago, it might not be useful for the currently trending paths. After all, these years of development have caused the rise of many new paths, it is no longer as dull and simple as back in the olden antiquity era. What I want to remind you is, the essence of this inheritance is not the immortal ascension vital information itself, but Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s notes when he read through it. His assessment is like the summary of the most important points, it gets right to the point and is truly worth more than a thousand gold.” Mo Yao gave another shocking revelation.

Old Immortal Kong Jue was a refinement path supreme grandmaster on par with Long Hair Ancestor.

His research, along with the Immortal Venerable’s notes, truly has immense value.

When a Gu Master reads it, it will greatly increase the chances of them successfully rising to immortal. In addition, using the perspective of an Immortal Venerable, they can develop in the right direction, their Gu Immortal journey would be guided and they could avoid many pitfalls along the way.

This inheritance had really shocking attraction. Especially for geniuses like Fang Yuan who desired to take one more step and was not satisfied with being a mortal.

But Fang Yuan did not choose it.

He had his previous life’s experiences, he could repeat his run on the blood path.

He had other motives for coming into the true inheritance space.

Thus, Fang Yuan let go and allowed the jade lump to fly away from him, at a speed faster than the red light as it went into an unknown zone.

“You are really giving it up? When you think about this in the future, don’t regret it.” In his mind, Mo Yao sighed.

“Regret? Hehe, there is no such word in my life.” Fang Yuan laughed lightly, continuing his search.

He swam in the darkness for a while, discovering the third light lump.

This light lump was shining with a grey light, its speed was even faster than the first two light lumps, it was like a shooting star. As it flew in the space, there was a frost colored tail trailing behind it.

Fang Yuan tried to get close to it, but Mo Yao said: “Actually, you don’t have to take such a risk every time, since you have already collected many wisdom path Gu worms, why don’t you display their true value?”

“Oh? What do you mean?” Fang Yuan’s speed did not get any slower.

“Lad, thank me well, the move I’m going to teach you will allow you to avoid the test of the true inheritance and search for the content of the true inheritance directly.”

Mo Yao’s method was not very complex.

After Fang Yuan found the true inheritance light lump, the first step was for his consciousness to enter the lump, and that would trigger the test of the inheritance.

Mo Yao’s advice was, to use wisdom path Gu worms to create wills. By injecting this will into the true inheritance, he would wait for a while before recalling it.

This way, he would be able to avoid intimate contact with the true inheritance, it was a opportunist method.

“Wisdom path has thought, will, and emotion. The so called mind is made up of heart sense and divine sense. When your mind enters, your thoughts are exploring and interacting. Thoughts are like water droplets, they are the easiest to create, and also the most fragile. Because the numbers are huge, the droplets will merged into a river and enter to do the investigation. During this process, the Gu Master’s mind has to continue creating them without any pauses. As for will, they are superior to thoughts, like an ice cube. They have greater defense but are harder to create. They can however, move independently, and recalled when needed.” Mo Yao explained.

Fang Yuan was silent.

“Lad, at this point in time, why are you hesitating? Hehehe, I know you have been collecting information on wisdom path, and also purchasing those wisdom path Gu worms. Your special will Gu, deliberate will Gu, play will Gu, keep will Gu, and new will Gu are all useless now, when will you use them?” Mo Yao laughed alluringly.

Pausing for a while, she continued urging: “Right now, you must already be clear: My will is residing in your mind, it is already deeply connected to you. When you use these Gu to create wills, they would be pure and flawless, I cannot infiltrate them. Haven’t you been wary of me? This method has a huge advantage, you can use it to avoid those true inheritance tests and check the secrets of the unparalleled inheritances. Unparalleled inheritance, they have much greater value than ordinary inheritances.”

“What are you...” Fang Yuan’s gaze was hesitant.

All along, he had never been so outspoken about his situation with Mo Yao. To think that Mo Yao would talk about it openly like this now.

What was her true intention? Was it really like what she said, she only wanted to return the rank seven Immortal Gu house Water Pavilion back to Spirit Affinity House?

Mo Yao’s honest expression created ripples in Fang Yuan’s heart.

Maybe he was too vigilant, and was too wary of Mo Yao? But wills were not like thoughts, thoughts were simple and were not good at deception. A land spirit formed from obsessions only spoke the truth.

But wills were different. They were the product of many thoughts fusing together, they were much more complex than thoughts. Thus, they could lie to others.

Fang Yuan shook his head, sending these chaotic pieces of information out of his mind, now was not the time to think about this.

Honestly speaking, Mo Yao’s words were truly useful in Fang Yuan’s viewpoint, he was successfully convinced to attempt it.

Fang Yuan took out the wisdom path Gu worms that he had bought.

He had the land spirit little Hu Immortal and could connect to treasure yellow heaven at any time. Standing on the foundation of a Gu Immortal, it was extremely easy for him to purchase mortal Gu.

Right now, the eight wisdom path Gu worms in his hands could produce wills, but they were all different.

Special will Gu could produce special wills, it could only be activated under special circumstances.

Deliberate will Gu could create deliberate wills, when such a will is produced, it would be like carvings on a steel board, extremely difficult to get rid of compared to other wills.

Play will Gu, creates playful wills. It is the will that is most capable of creating ’emotions’.

There are also keep will Gu, new will Gu, battle intent Gu and others...

What was worth mentioning was that these wisdom path Gu worms could produce different types of wills that were effective against other wills.

For example, special will Gu can produce special wills, but can also devour special wills. Deliberate will Gu can create deliberate wills, they were hard to get rid of but if one uses the right methods and finds the deliberate will Gu, it can be easily removed.

Why did Fang Yuan buy these Gu worms?

It was because of this.

He wanted to deal with Mo Yao’s mysterious will. But he had already bought so many of these Gu, and discovered that none could deal with Mo Yao’s will.

With the current situation, choosing which will Gu to use was not important.

He casually chose the special will Gu, injecting primeval essence as a will was formed.

The appearance of the will was similar to Fang Yuan, he looked like a youth with dark eerie eyes, but different from the main body, his face was more manly and had a more decisive expression.

“Wills can only reside within the soul, if you want to send this will out, you will need a small soul worm.” Mo Yao reminded.

Small soul Gu was a rank one Gu in soul path, it was very common but was the foundation of soul path. Many higher rank soul path Gu worms were refined step by step with it as the foundation.

Mo Yao’s reminder was redundant.

Before she finished speaking, Fang Yuan summoned a Gu worm.

It had no solid body, it was palm sized and looked like a butterfly, flickering like light and shadow. If someone grabbed it, they would not be able to catch its hollow body.

It was the rank two big soul worm.

Fang Yuan patted it lightly, sending his special will into the big soul worm’s body. Next, he used the big soul worm and made it fly to the closest lump of green white true inheritance light lump.

The big soul worm’s speed was much faster than him moving alone.

In just a short moment, it entered the true inheritance light lump and a while later, the big soul worm with a tattered body flew back while wavering.

Fang Yuan retrieved his will and looked.

This third true inheritance was also an ordinary true inheritance, but to some Gu Masters, or even Gu Immortals, it had much greater value than the first two true inheritances!

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral More valuable than tips for ascending to rank 6 hmm...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

599 Longevity, Hard, Hard, Hard

The saying goes: Better to live a bad life than have a good death.

Unless there were special reasons, there was nobody who wanted to stop living or not live longer.

Gu Masters, although they could cultivate, and reaching rank six would improve the essence of their life, they could not gain lifespan directly.

Ever since the way of Gu had developed, countless talents had tried all sorts of methods to create a method to extend their own lifespan.

Like First Gen Gu Yue on Qing Mao mountain who chose to become a zombie. Or the demonic path Gu Master in southern border Century Boy, using the return to childhood Gu on himself to maintain a child’s appearance and reduce the speed of the loss of his lifeforce.

These were only mortal methods, Gu Immortals had even more mystical methods.

This third inheritance was a lifespan increasing method targeted at Gu Immortals. The person who created it was none other than Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

A lifespan increasing method created by an Immortal Venerable! One could imagine the value of this true inheritance!

According to the content, on a certain year, month, and day, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had an inspiration, and it created a brilliant idea.

He named this immortal art — Possession.

The core was a rank six possession Immortal Gu! Other than that, there were about three thousand rank five mortal Gu of all kinds.

“To think that possession Immortal Gu’s origin is actually here.” Fang Yuan looked at this with a palpitating heart, in his previous life, during the chaotic battle of the five regions, possession Immortal Gu had been extremely well-known, many high ranking Gu Immortals managed to extend their lifespan and that changed the situation of the five regions battle.

Although possession Immortal Gu was rank six, it was a crucial Gu worm that could change the very structure of the world!

In an instant, Fang Yuan had a sudden urge — this is the origin of the possession Immortal Gu, as long as he took it and grasped the origin, in the future during the five region battle, he would be able to sell this possession Immortal Gu and gain a terrifying profit!

Especially with his previous life’s memories, he knew who had the greatest need for this possession Immortal Gu, as long as he planned properly, the benefits were unthinkable!

But soon, Fang Yuan calmed down.

The special will on the big soul worm sent even more information.

This true inheritance was only an empty shell, the possession Immortal Gu inside along with the three thousand mortal Gu had all been taken away by someone already.

Inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, there were eighty-eight true inheritances that were set up by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

But after so many years, a portion of them had already been taken by people. Mo Yao had once said, during her time, when she explored Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, out of the eighty-eight true inheritances, only fifty-three were left.

Mo Yao was an expert from ten thousand years ago, as Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s rounds were hard to pass, for every ten years of the Imperial Court contest, there were very few occasions in which a winner reached ten-edges. But even so, after so many years, there were some capable individuals who managed to enter the true inheritance secluded domain.

The number of true inheritances left now was definitely smaller than fifty-three.

“Eh? This is...” While communicating with the special will on the big soul worm, Fang Yuan’s pupils expanded suddenly.

Although the true inheritance was taken away, Fang Yuan’s special will still made some shocking discoveries.

“Using the soul to take over a body, it is nothing but a struggle at death’s door, death is still unavoidable. To extend one’s life, lifespan Gu is the best option. The road of a Gu Immortal is filled with calamities and tribulations, it is hard for the body to resist them, and it is hard for the soul to exist independently, the maintenance of longevity means the defiance of heaven... it is hard, hard, hard!”

Inside the true inheritance, there was such a paragraph.

These words directly criticized Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s method of possession, the tone was simply too arrogant! After looking at multitudes of lifespan extending methods, lifespan Gu still remained as the best choice. The final three ‘hard’ words, were truly filled with emotions.

Finally, the person who wrote this also left his name – Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

Seeing this name, one would feel that it was only natural for the criticism to exist.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had the same status, they were both rank nine Gu Masters. But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was an Immortal Venerable during the medieval antiquity era, while Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was a Demon Venerable who appeared after Giant Sun.

Two hundred thousand years after Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s demise, the demonic path venerable Spectral Soul who had the greatest nature for murder was born. Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had such a huge reputation, when Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was invincible in the world, he naturally found his way into Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, it was nothing strange.

“Don’t tell me possession Immortal Gu was taken by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable? No, the possibility is very slim. Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was the creator of soul path, he was the greatest expert in terms of souls, not even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could match him in that. From the words that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable left behind, he had no interest in the possession method at all. He wanted to exist alongside heaven and earth, but he as one person was facing increasing difficulties one after another, seeing that a predecessor had also searched for a longevity method, he felt some deep emotions and left behind these words.” Fang Yuan analyzed.

Even rank nine venerables invincible in the universe during their time could not resist the flow of time.

Time was the greatest enemies of heroes and beauties.

Lifespan Gu was hard to find, their location was fixed, and they were produced in limited supply, only heaven and earth could create them naturally.

The rank nine venerables searched the lands, using up all of the lifespan Gu, but failed to find new lifespan Gu, thus they can only find new ways to extend their lives.

The number one people in this world, behind their invincible authority, there was the sadness and anxiety towards their limited lifespan.

Thus, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s possession technique made Spectral Soul Demon Venerable lament about the difficulty of longevity.

“Even Immortal Venerables or Demon Venerables, such invincible beings, cannot escape the fate of death. Sigh... the wheel of fortune goes round and round, they may rule for generation after generation, but after their primes they will inevitably break down, and those at rock bottom can have their fortunes reverse. In this world, can there be any eternal existences?” In his mind, Mo Yao had a heavy emotion as she sighed deeply.

But this was not what Fang Yuan thought.

He had an eerie gaze: “The Great Dao of heaven and earth focuses on the balance of all beings, and the restraints they place on each other. But when a Gu Master cultivates, they search all over the world and gather resources, using them to promote the growth of oneself, thus this is really the path that defies the way of heaven. Maybe this is why tribulations and calamities occur. But precisely so, eternal life that surpasses longevity is the goal that is worth my pursuit!”

Thinking so, there was a fire burning in his heart, becoming brighter and hotter!

Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables could only have a long life, but his goal was the greater level of eternal life! This was a realm that venerables could not reach.

Using a phrase from Fang Yuan’s previous world, that would be ‘competing against heaven, competing against earth, competing against humans, the joy is endless!’

Water can only produce beautiful waves when they hit on rocks, people can only feel the joy in life when they engage in competition.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, he was only rank six, close to seven.

Towards the rank nine existences, he had never looked up to them, he only felt a strong aspiration in his heart.

Here, he saw another side of the venerables: fatigue, weakness, helplessness. These made his fighting spirit surge to another level!

The true inheritance ahead of him was empty, it was not worth wasting time for.

Fang Yuan continued searching.

Next, he found two ordinary inheritances, they were all involving wisdom path.

These two true inheritances had two rank six Immortal Gu respectively.

One was ‘false emotion fake will Gu’, and the other was ‘loving affection Gu.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s wisdom path attainment was very profound, this was a well known fact. Especially in terms of emotion Gu, he had expanded it and created many new Gu recipes.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable created a harem and collected beauties, making girls all over the world fall for him, this showed the power of his emotion Gu.

These two inheritances were not what Fang Yuan wanted, he chose to let go.

“Strange, didn’t you say that there were not only ordinary true inheritances, but also unparalleled inheritances in this secluded domain? After searching for such a long time, why haven’t I found one?” Fang Yuan was confused and asked Mo Yao.

During this period, Mo Yao had not said a word, she seemed to have taken a blow from the possession immortal art, her fighting spirit had dwindled and she had hidden in Fang Yuan’s mind without showing herself.

Hearing Fang Yuan’s words, she showed her figure and said plainly: “Hmph, how long has it been, you are already impatient? Back in my day, I searched for a whole three months. The secluded domain is extremely huge, and all the inheritances are moving around, there are only a few unparalleled true inheritances, it is normal that you have not found one. Have some patience, lad.”

Fang Yuan asked again: “Actually, you came here before, what good inheritances did you find, give me some details about it.”

This was his true question.

“Hmph, I saw many inheritances of course, but here, the true inheritances fly around random with no pattern, there is no use in telling you, you can only rely on your luck to search. Heh, beware of the time, the more inheritances you come into contact with, or the longer you stay here, the faster these true inheritances fly, and the more dangerous your situation becomes. Back then, with my Gu Immortal realm, I could only stay for three months, and nearly died here.”

As Mo Yao said this, her tone was filled with lingering fear.

“Even you almost died here?” Fang Yuan saw the main point in her words.

“Lad, you are a mortal, you are too weak. I estimate that you can only check eight true inheritances, and can stay for at most a month. Right now, you have already seen five inheritances, you have to be careful!” Mo Yao vaguely reminded him.

“What was it that threatened the life of a grand Gu Immortal like yourself?” Fang Yuan asked.

But Mo Yao only smiled tenderly, saying, “If you are fated for it, you will know when you experience it,” before concealing herself.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned slightly grim.

He had always held a suspicion.

In the video in his previous life, there were eleven Gu Immortals from central continent, but after they entered the true inheritance secluded domain, after the omitted parts, there were only nine of them who reappeared, all with injuries.

Does that mean, the two missing had died in the secluded domain?

Sometimes, having this Mo Yao’s will was advantageous.

Fang Yuan had gotten Mo Yao’s reminder and became more careful, slowly investigating.

Three days later, he got close to the sixth true inheritance, and used the special will Gu and big soul worm to obtain the information inside the true inheritance.

This inheritance came from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, it was similar to the third inheritance in that they were both lifespan extending immortal arts.

It involved a new path that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had created from researching Ren Zu, he called it ‘yin-yang path’.

To use this method, two Gu Immortals, one male and one female, have to cooperate and copulate, to achieve the result of one of their lifespans increasing.

But there was a flaw.

If one gains lifespan, the other must lose the same amount.

In other words, it was transferring the lifespan of one person to another.

This inheritance had also been taken by others already.

The popularity of lifespan extending methods could be seen clearly here.

“This is the sixth true inheritance.” Fang Yuan muttered, thinking of Mo Yao’s reminder.

According to Fang Yuan’s endurance, he could see eight true inheritances at most, beyond this number, a huge crisis would descend upon him.

If he wanted to obtain a true inheritance, Fang Yuan needed to be careful now.

After all, he only had two chances left, and at the same time he needed to be wary of the inheritance being emptied out already.

Thirteen days later, Fang Yuan found the seventh true inheritance.

This true inheritance light lump was the size of a washing basin, it was shining brightly in white light and had a stronger aura compared to ordinary inheritances.

“Lad, this will broaden your vision, this is an unparalleled true inheritance!” In his mind, Mo Yao said.

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral TRANSLATOR Longevity through yin-yang path (͡° ͜ʖ ͡°) No wonder it’s hard hard hard.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 600: Supreme True Inheritance!

ChibiGeneral

“Unparalleled true inheritance!” Fang Yuan’s gaze brightened upon looking at the lump of burning white light in the distance.

He quickly took out special will Gu and a big soul worm. He condensed a will and moved it into the big soul worm, looking as it flew towards the true inheritance light lump.

“Unparalleled true inheritances far surpass ordinary true inheritances, I want to see what is so different about it.” Fang Yuan was waiting expectantly.

But an unexpected thing happened.

As the big soul worm approached closer to the true inheritance light lump, Fang Yuan sensed his connection with the big soul worm was weakening.

When the big soul worm had not even reached three hundred steps from the light lump, the connection between it and Fang Yuan had thoroughly broken.

“This... What is this situation?” Fang Yuan was startled, looking at the unparalleled true inheritance flying away leisurely in its original orbit. And the big soul worm he had released showed no signs of movement, being completely still. Saying it was dead was also not appropriate, but no matter how Fang Yuan commanded it, it quietly hovered without the slightest bit of response.

“Eh? This unparalleled true inheritance is not simple, be careful.” Mo Yao’s will also gave a sound of surprise and warned Fang Yuan.

“What is going on?” Fang Yuan curiously and cautiously approached the big soul worm, picking it up for examination.

There was no signs of injury on the big soul worm, but the will that had been instilled into it was completely gone.

Big soul worm was a rank two Gu; and its wild will was removed after being refined by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s will occupied its body, thus he could maneuver it like moving his fingers.

But right now, Fang Yuan’s will that was in it, refined into special will by using special will Gu, had inexplicably disintegrated with not even a trace remaining.

The big soul worm had become completely ownerless, anyone would be able to send a trace of their will and instantly refine it.

This was also the reason why Fang Yuan could not command it regardless of what he did.

The previous several times, Fang Yuan had exploited special will to probe out true inheritances, ingeniously avoiding the test of the true inheritance. This method had been proved successful time and time again, he had never expected it to fail before even verifying the unparalleled true inheritance.

What was this unparalleled true inheritance hiding that could completely clear Fang Yuan’s will?

“Ah, I remember! So it was this.” Just as Fang Yuan was hesitating, Mo Yao suddenly spoke up.

She laughed coquettishly: “Kid, should I say it is your good luck or bad luck? There are not many unparalleled true inheritances but there are not few either, and what you are encountering now is the most special among them.”

“Please advise me.” Fang Yuan’s expression turned calm.

“I saw this true inheritance before and it also left behind a deep impression on me. Back then, even I had to expend a lot of effort to approach it. Hehehe, inside it is a rank seven Immortal Gu Giant Sun Immortal Venerable personally refined, called human qi Gu. Its ability is mysterious and could even be said to be strange, even I had to spend a lot to investigate it clearly.” Mo Yao sighed.

While Mo Yao was alive, she had been a rank seven Gu Immortal, a fairy of Spirit Affinity House with awe-inspiring reputation.

However, she had to pay a considerable price to approach this true inheritance. Fang Yuan was only a mortal now, it was natural for him to not even be able to approach it.

“Human qi Gu...” Fang Yuan pondered over this crucial name.

He had a realization and asked: “Could it have some relationship with the three elements of immortal ascension?”

“Lad, your guess is correct.” Mo Yao sighed and explained, “In the advancement to Gu Immortal, the three qi of heaven, earth and human are particularly crucial. When advancing into a Gu Immortal, you would need to completely shatter your aperture and take in the heaven qi and earth qi. The more heaven qi and earth qi you can take in, the higher your chance of succeeding. But heaven qi and earth qi cannot be accumulated limitlessly, they need to be on an equal level with human qi.”

“And human qi is the sum of the Gu Master’s own accumulation. The Gu Master’s battle strength, toughness of their physical body, the depth of their soul, familiarity with Gu worms, understanding of heaven and earth, awareness of their own nature as well as luck, talent, aptitude, fortuitous encounters, insights and so on would transform into human qi when advancing to Gu Immortal.”

“The more the Gu Master has accumulated, the more man qi they would have. The more man qi there is, the more heaven and earth qi they can take in, and the higher their chance of advancing to Gu Immortal. And this man qi Gu’s purpose is to take in the man qi of other people, purify them and add it to oneself when advancing to Gu Immortal, thereby greatly raising the chance of the breakthrough, as well as deepening the foundation and the potential of Gu Immortals.”

Mo Yao’s words greatly broadened Fang Yuan’s vision.

He could not help but praise: “There is actually such an Immortal Gu, created with such an idea! Terrific!”

In human history, Gu Immortals had always been in extremely few numbers. The difficulty of advancing to a Gu Immortal, among numerous famous rank five Gu Masters, there might only be one who could successfully advance.

Among the crucial keys of advancing to a Gu Immortal, one was at the top – the Gu Master’s accumulation.

Many Gu Masters don’t have deep accumulation; the man qi they could condense when advancing to Gu Immortal would be very little but the amount of heaven and earth qi instead appears in very high amounts. As such, the balance would not be reached, heaven and earth qi would suppress and swallow the man qi, finally the Gu Master would be assimilated by heaven and earth and perish.

But if there was man qi Immortal Gu, this difficult test would be eliminated.

By collecting other’s man qi, purifying them and gathering it into one’s body; even if the accumulation is not enough, it would not matter.

One could say, with man qi Immortal Gu, the chances of advancing to Gu Immortal would increase to the extreme, raising the numbers of Gu Immortals.

And raising the numbers of Gu Immortals would mean a distinct increase in a region’s strength.

No doubt, this was a Gu that could change the battle situation of the five regions! As long as the news was leaked, all super forces would fanatically rush over like ducks.

However, man qi Immortal Gu was too strong, it was at rank seven, higher than the Spring Autumn Cicada currently.

Fang Yuan had a mortal body, he could not endure the might of man qi Immortal Gu.

His will had been devoured by the Immortal Gu before it was even able to approach it, purified into a negligible amount of man qi and stored.

If not for Mo Yao giving the information, Fang Yuan would still be in the dark and unknowing of what happened.

“Man qi Gu is definitely good, but it does not suit me.” Fang Yuan regretfully glanced one final time at the burning white light lump and sighed, shaking his head before leaving in another direction without the least bit of reluctance.

Man qi Gu’s realm was too high, Fang Yuan simply did not have the qualifications to control it.

Man is the spirit of all living beings; Gu are the essence of heaven and earth. To Gu Masters, Gu were tools. But man qi Immortal Gu was too strong; if it was an ice blade, Fang Yuan was an infant, he would be frozen by the cold aura let out by the ice blade before he even approached it.

“The most crucial point is that I cannot use man qi Immortal Gu. I need to breakthrough from mortal to advance to Gu Immortal, before that I simply cannot handle man qi Gu. And if I become a Gu Immortal, what would I need man qi Gu for?” Helping others?”

Man qi Immortal Gu was not suitable for the lone Fang Yuan. Only those super forces would need it.

Unless Fang Yuan formed his own force.

He slowly flew around in the true inheritance secluded domain.

Fang Yuan gradually comprehended something and said after a moment of silence: “Mo Yao, I realized the danger you spoke of.”

“Hehehe.” Mo Yao smiled, not surprised, “When Gu Masters enter the true inheritance secluded domain, every time they come in contact with a true inheritance or the longer the time they stay here, the faster these true inheritances would move around. Thus, urging the Gu Masters to quickly choose a true inheritance. By the end, the true inheritances would move as fast as meteors, Gu Masters simply would not be able to capture them. Because of this, the Gu Masters could lose their lives at any minute.”

Pausing a while, Mo Yao continued: “And the danger to life originates from the true inheritances. You saw the unparalleled true inheritance just before. Your will had not even neared it before it was refined into man qi by man qi Immortal Gu. Think about it, if it crashes into you with the speed of a meteor, you won’t have any time to dodge, what will happen then?”

Fang Yuan lightly snorted.

He could completely imagine that scene.

If a mortal body was struck by the burning white light lump, no matter their physical body, soul or will, everything would probably disintegrate and be refined into man qi.

“Like I said before, you are too weak, only at the mortal realm. Even the tests of the ordinary true inheritances are a difficult hurdle to you. Unparalleled true inheritances are even more troublesome. Let me tell you, there is a higher level of inheritance above unparalleled true inheritance – Supreme True Inheritance.” Mo Yao revealed a sensational piece of information.

“Supreme true inheritance?!”

“In this whole true inheritance secluded domain, there are only three supreme true inheritances.” Mo Yao sighed with deep emotions, seemingly immersed in the depths of her memory, “It is simply impossible for a mortal to receive these three supreme true inheritances. The difficulty of an unparalleled true inheritance is already extremely high, moreover Imperial Court blessed land prohibits the entry of Gu Immortals. This is also the reason for Eighty-Eight

True Yang Building being able to stand tall for so long, among the eighty-eight true inheritances, there are still over half remaining.”

Fang Yuan carefully pondered and approved of Mo Yao’s words.

Entering true inheritance secluded domain was extremely difficult, and the opportunity was very uncertain. First of all, one needed to be the winner of the Imperial Court contest held every ten years. Secondly, they needed to complete at least ten floors of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. Finally, after entering, they still needed to successfully pass the test of the true inheritance.

In other words, every ten years, among the many heroes of northern plains, there would only be one who would rise above others and take control of the owner token.

Simply relying on the owner token was still not enough, the winner must have a strong force which should not be exhausted too greatly in the Imperial Court contest, and also should have enough experts beside him. His force should have enough talents in all fields and involving a wide range of paths, only then could he hope to pass ten floors.

After fortunately being able to enter true inheritance secluded domain, the tests of the true inheritances would further wipe away a batch of these winners.

The tests were very difficult, even Fang Yuan, a reborn old monster, almost suffered a setback, let alone these people.

What was more absurd was that even if they passed the test, would that true inheritance be coincidentally suitable for them?

Not necessarily.

Those who could reach this step were usually dragons among dragons, phoenixes among phoenixes, heroes among heroes, with all three aspects of aptitude, talent and fortuitous encounters. Such characters would have extremely high aspirations, and would naturally think about it a lot and look through more options.

As such, by the time they could no longer stay within true inheritance secluded domain, it would be too late for regret.

Who is to say they might not die here?

“The true inheritances’ flying speed is getting faster, you have one more chance left. No matter which true inheritance it is, take it quickly and leave... eh?! Not good, leave!” Just as she was persuading him, Mo Yao’s tone suddenly changed and let out a startled cry.

Fang Yuan turned his head around to take a glance and saw a true inheritance, the size of an adult man, blossoming with all kinds of mysterious colors, whizzing towards him. In the dark secluded domain, it had a very long dazzling and burning tail trailing behind it.

A light lump the size of a large bowl was an ordinary true inheritance.

A basin sized light lump was an unparalleled true inheritance.

Then what was a light lump the size of an adult?

Fang Yuan instantly thought of the name – Supreme True Inheritance!

In the whole true inheritance secluded domain, only three supreme true inheritances existed, and now, one was heading towards Fang Yuan!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 601: Profiting from the situation

“Supreme true inheritance!” Fang Yuan’s pupils enlarged and his gaze burned brightly.

When the true inheritance light lump was still a thousand steps away, Fang Yuan felt its surging aura.

This was a feeling which ordinary true inheritances and even unparalleled true inheritances did not have.

Under the effect of this aura, thoughts started to gather in Fang Yuan’s mind; countless thoughts emerged out of thin air and his memories flashed past continuously.

If his mind was like a deep pond during normal times, then right now, the rapidly increasing thoughts were like a huge waterfall crashing down into this deep pond.

Thoughts surged madly, creating waves after waves!

This feeling was incomparably wonderful, and Fang Yuan was not able to find an accurate word to describe it.

The memories buried deep within his mind started to emerge one after another, the dust on them removed as they realistically and vividly appeared in his mind.

Great numbers of inspirational lights flashed past and all sorts of lively ideas emerged in Fang Yuan’s mind. Some problems and doubts regarding cultivation were being instantly solved under the inspirational lights.

An extremely strong self-confidence involuntarily arose in Fang Yuan’s mind.

This was an indescribably wonderful feeling, as if everything was within his control, as if there were no problems he could not solve.....

This was a special ‘power’ that people could not help but be deeply addicted to.

“Lad, wake up quickly, I also know how intoxicating this feeling is, but if you don’t want to die, don’t lose yourself in it! Look at yourself quickly!” Mo Yao shouted.

This voice awakened Fang Yuan, and when he looked at himself, he was pale with horror!

In just a short moment, his body had become weak and exhausted, his glossy forehead now had wrinkles, his strong arms gave a feeling of being old and decayed and were turning even more weak.

If not for Mo Yao’s reminder, Fang Yuan might have lost himself in that wonderful feeling and overlooked the changes to his body.

“This Gu is...?!” Fang Yuan thought of an incomparably shocking answer, and at the same time, used his movement Gu to quickly retreat!

True inheritance secluded domain did not prohibit the use of Gu worms.

The supreme true inheritance also was not chasing Fang Yuan and just continued to fly on its path.

Fang Yuan rapidly pulled distance with it before fearfully looking at this supreme true inheritance that was flying far away, cutting open the dark space.

“This is only the aura of a supreme true inheritance and it almost made me lose myself and die. How difficult would its test be?” Fang Yuan exclaimed in shock.

He could not even get near human qi Gu, an unparalleled true inheritance. There was no need to speak of supreme true inheritance; let alone approaching it, just by nearing it a little, the aura it leaked out almost took his life.

Just like Mo Yao said, Fang Yuan as a mortal was too weak!

This inheritance was definitely a great thing but he did not have the strength to bear it. It was like a bee picking honey, if the honey was as big as a fist, the bee would instead drown to death.

“The Immortal Gu of this supreme true inheritance, could it be... that legendary Gu?” Fang Yuan spoke with almost eighty percent certainty. But this answer was too shocking, making him somewhat unable to believe it.

“Hehehe.” Mo Yao laughed, “Lad, your guess is correct. Even I did not dare to believe it back then, but the truth is right before your eyes, there is no choice but to believe it! Right, the Immortal Gu contained in this supreme true inheritance is the rank nine Gu of legend, wisdom Gu!”

Wisdom Gu!

It was recorded in <>.

This was a rank nine Immortal Gu which could give endless wisdom to the Gu Master!

But the price to use it was extremely high.

The legends of Ren Zu clearly recorded that Ren Zu and Desolate Ancient Moon had to give their middle age to it to obtain its help.

In other words, using wisdom Gu meant using up lifespan!

Fang Yuan had not even approached it, but his lifespan had been worn down rapidly; wrinkles appeared and his body aged in just a short period of time.

In regards to Fang Yuan, wisdom Gu was a true death god!

“I really don’t know how Giant Sun Immortal Venerable obtained it back then and even more, what heaven defying methods did he use to seal it here. No wonder Giant Sun Immortal Venerable thought up all kinds of methods to extend lifespan, he must have used wisdom Gu a lot.” Fang Yuan was deeply moved.

Mo Yao instead sighed: “Giant Sun Immortal Venerable probably used wisdom Gu for one reason – to extend lifespan. Unfortunately, the more wisdom Gu was used, the shorter his lifespan became, and in the end, he did not obtain the solution he wanted as well.”

According to the historical records, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable lived for over eight thousand years before dying.

Eight thousand years was already a result on the middle to upper level among rank nine venerables. Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable who had the longest lifespan, lived for twenty-five thousand years. The one with the shortest lifespan was Red Lotus Demon Venerable who only lived for three thousand years.

Other venerables generally had a lifespan of around seven thousand years.

“There are three supreme true inheritances in true inheritance secluded domain. Tell me, what are the other two like? I really want to experience them.” Fang Yuan’s eyes let out an indescribable radiance.

Mo Yao felt something wrong with his tone, and quickly persuaded: “Lad, don’t have stupid thoughts, pick up an ordinary true inheritance quickly and leave! You have the ten-edge owner token and can only take away an ordinary true inheritance anyway. Even if you pass the test of an unparalleled true inheritance, you cannot take them. Don’t even mention supreme true inheritances, your weak body that can be blown away by the wind cannot even endure their aura!”

Fang Yuan laughed loudly: “Your words make me even more interested to see them! This opportunity is extremely rare, I am afraid I won’t get another chance if I miss it this time.”

“Brat, have you gone mad? Do you not know you lost at least two years of your lifespan just a few moments ago! If you continue squandering time like this, and the true inheritances start flying with the speed of a meteor, you won’t be able to get anything, and you might even lose your life!” Mo Yao was anxious.

Fang Yuan kept on laughing without being moved.

He continued to wander, detouring far away when he saw ordinary true inheritances and unparalleled true inheritances, with not even a bit of intention to take them.

Mo Yao’s will became more anxious: “You lunatic! Heavens, what in the world are you thinking in your brain? You are letting so many true inheritances go away just to broaden your horizons? You idiot, if you die, what should I do? What about Water Pavilion?”

“If I die, this will of yours will also not be able to survive, but you can rest easy, you still have a will left in Water Pavilion. You can wait for a fated person and entrust this precious task upon them.” Fang Yuan unhurriedly replied.

Mo Yao tried to persuade him again, but Fang Yuan was adamant in doing things his own way.

He kept on exploring non-stop, and after several days, the true inheritances were moving faster; Fang Yuan went into dangerous situations every now and then.

Several times, he faced the danger of losing his life, but narrowly managed to escape in the end.

Mo Yao had been trying to persuade him the whole time, the anxiety making her go mad: “Lad, I surrender, you are truly stubborn! Alright, you don’t have to continue, I will tell you about the other two supreme true inheritances.”

“The first is a luck path inheritance founded by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, using his unique luck path attainment, he was able to become invincible in the world! Second is the control rights of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. This tower was refined by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Long Hair Ancestor; it can plunder the Gu worms of a region, there would be endless Gu cultivation resources for one who obtains it!”

She was truly anxious.

Normally, she might not necessarily be in the mood to provide such inside details to Fang Yuan even if he asked. Now, however, she revealed it, afraid Fang Yuan would continue acting foolishly.

But what she was afraid of happened.

Fang Yuan chuckled and as if he had not heard anything, continued to wander.

Several days later, the true inheritances’ flying speed was already as fast as birds. It was extremely easy for Fang Yuan to evade one or two, but true inheritance secluded domain seemed to be shrinking and all sizes of true inheritances had to fly in the narrowing space. The long tails of all sorts of colorful lights they dragged were almost interweaving a thinly spread light web. Fang Yuan could only survive moving through the cracks of it.

At this stage, Fang Yuan was using all his concentration and did not dare to relax for even a moment, for a moment of carelessness would lead to the tragedy of his death.

“Leave quickly. You can’t even take away ordinary true inheritances now. As long as you continue to stay here, the danger will increase by each second. Sigh, you have actually gone crazy in such a crucial moment!” Mo Yao was getting dispirited from all the persuading.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was burning, suddenly asking: “Tell me, is there a possibility I can find an opportunity to reap benefits when two true inheritances collide?”

Mo Yao was stunned upon listening to this.

But soon, she shouted in a shrill voice: “You fool, you idiot! Would the grand Giant Sun Immortal Venerable commit such a clear mistake? So you were thinking like that, I overestimated you! I overestimated you too much! You have clearly become a victim of your own ingenuity, how could there be such an obvious loophole for you to exploit? You have thought too wishfully, you are too naive!”

“Eh, so it was just my wishful thinking.” Fang Yuan chuckled, his expression undisturbed as he continued to explore.

Actually, he had already known this, but intentionally said it to provoke Mo Yao.

“Why are you still not leaving? Are you looking to die?!” Mo Yao was provoked and was completely driven mad by Fang Yuan.

“Whether I die or not is my matter, it is none of your concern. You have already died, why is a dead person making such a din?” Fang Yuan indifferently ridiculed her; his expression still tranquil as if the one in danger was not him.

“Damn it! Scoundrel! Idiot!” Mo Yao’s face flushed with rage and started hurling out curses.

Rumble...

Right at this time, an explosion suddenly occurred a great distance away.

Fang Yuan gazed at the source of the sound, seeing two true inheritances colliding which then sprang towards different directions.

Fang Yuan was dumbstruck.

He had not expected his nonsensical words to come true, true inheritances actually collided!

Especially when one of the inheritances seemed to be a supreme true inheritance!!

Mo Yao was also dumbstruck.

“How is this possible?” Her voice rose an octave higher into an ear-piercing sound that had no demeanor of a refinement path grandmaster, “Back then, when I explored this place, why did not I encounter such a good thing?!”

But soon, her eyes opened wide, coming to a realization: “So it was like that! That is the luck path supreme true inheritance, back then I did all I could to open up a crack in it to obtain the fortune rivalling heaven Gu, but in the end it flew away. I could only use the other inheritances I obtained to settle for the second best option, refining calamity beckoning Gu!”

Mo Yao had created a crack in this supreme true inheritance, because it was no longer in a perfect state, the original balance was tilted, allowing true inheritances to collide into one another.

Boom!

Another sound of a collision.

Fang Yuan’s eyes opened wide, this collision seemed to have caused a Gu to fly out from the luck path supreme true inheritance?

Fang Yuan was stumped: “What is that?”

Mo Yao was also stupefied before shouting: “That is a luck path Gu worm, what are being dazed for, aren’t you going to take it?”

Fang Yuan, however, hesitated: “If I try to take this Gu, wouldn’t I be met with the luck path true inheritance’s test?”

Luck path true inheritance was a supreme true inheritance, Fang Yuan would never be able to endure its test.

“What damned test! The collision has enlarged the crack in the true inheritance light lump, it is breaking down. Take it and leave quickly, if you don’t leave now, you are going to die here!” Mo Yao shouted.

Fang Yuan chuckled and moved forward, dodging here and there, before being able to approach with great difficulty and pick up that Gu worm.

This was a rank five mortal Gu and not an Immortal Gu.

“Lad, you are still not leaving?!” Mo Yao was almost howling by now.

“Haha, what’s the rush.” Fang Yuan laughed heartily, but did not leave, instead staying within true inheritance secluded domain, observing everywhere.

“Looking at the time, with the current chaos, it is almost ready.” he mumbled.

“Lad, what did you say?”

Mo Yao had just spoken when Fang Yuan sprinkled many Gu worms which activated together to form a whirlpool.

The whirlpool let out a majestic force of attraction, absorbing all the true inheritance lights.

Several breaths later, the whirlpool slowed down and crumbled with a loud sound, revealing a door.

“All according to plan!” Fang Yuan threw himself in without hesitation.

The next moment.

He saw the land spirit!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 602: Frost Jade Peacock

The scene before one’s eyes was that of a grand and elegant white jade hall.

Four huge pillars were holding up the roof, on the ground, light casted shadows on a person.

Be it the walls, pillars, or roof, they were pure and white as snow, they were all created using white jade stones.

At the center of the hall, there was an elevated area with twenty-three steps of stairs.

On the elevated area, there was a green copper divine bird statue. The divine bird was looking up, and spreading its wings, but there were countless black chains, each with the size of an ancient tree, coiling around the divine bird’s body, tangling around its long neck, its slim legs, and even piercing through its feathers and lodging itself into its body.

The divine bird’s eyes were sharp as daggers, it was frowning and had its mouth wide open, almost as if screaming out loud. Its expression was very moving, it looked so real with delicate details, and there was an indomitable spirit of resistance oozing from it, this spirit could leave a firm impression after a single gaze.

Fang Yuan appeared on the stairs, looking at the tall and huge green copper divine bird statue covering his vision, his dark pupils seemed to have flames burning within.

“This, this, this!” The sudden turn of events shocked Mo Yao to the point of stuttering.

She gulped as she pointed her finger, shouting: “This is actually the Frost Jade Peacock, Imperial Court blessed land’s land spirit!!”

“Ah, what’s there to be surprised about?” Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a smile, he said: “Imperial Court blessed land originally had a land spirit, otherwise it would not have recognised Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and made him its master. The land spirit is formed by the combination of an obsession and the blessed land’s heavenly power, to get rid of the land spirit, you will have to deal with the entire blessed land. If the land spirit dies, the blessed land will be destroyed. If the blessed land is destroyed, the land spirit will die too. Currently Imperial Court blessed land is still in good shape, it means the land spirit is still alive.”

His words made Mo Yao shout in anger: “You bastard, such obvious reasoning, how could I not know this!”

Mo Yao had done all she could to research Eighty-Eight True Yang Building for her lover Bo Qing, in an attempt to get the fortune rivalling heaven Gu, and help Bo Qing advance to rank nine.

Eventually, although she succeeded in entering the true inheritance secluded domain, because of her insufficient power she could not obtain fortune rivalling heaven Gu. Instead she had to settle for something else, using her inheritance information and her own foundation as a refinement grandmaster to refine the calamity beckoning Gu.

Because of this, she understood the value of the land spirit of Imperial Court blessed land extremely clearly!

Back then, when Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was not rank nine, he had won in the competition for Imperial Court blessed land’s inheritance, and became the owner of Imperial Court blessed land.

When he became rank nine and was invincible in the world, he had the superior grotto-heaven, Longevity Heaven, and thus Imperial Court blessed land became one of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s multiple residences within the world.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable created Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and set it up within Imperial Court blessed land.

This formed a relationship — if one was targeting Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, they would need to first enter Imperial Court blessed land. Imperial Court blessed land thus became a protective shell for Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

After Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangement, this shell had been exerting great use, in that Gu Immortals could not enter.

But in this setup, there was a huge flaw, any Gu Immortal could see it clearly!

That was the existence of the land spirit of Imperial Court blessed land!

This flaw did not exist when Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was still alive. Because Giant Sun was the master of the land spirit, the land spirit would obey and do whatever he told it to do.

But after Giant Sun Immortal Venerable died, Imperial Court blessed land became ownerless. As long as one could meet the land spirit’s expectations, anyone could become Imperial Court blessed land’s new owner.

And Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was situated inside Imperial Court blessed land, thus whoever controlled Imperial Court blessed land would have Eighty-Eight True Yang Building in their grasp.

As long as one was a Gu Immortal, they would understand this from just a small amount of thinking.

In Mo Yao’s lifetime, when researching Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, she had spent a huge amount of time and effort in this field.

But eventually, she made no progress.

All the hard work and effort she put into this resulted in nothing.

What sort of person was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, how could he be unaware of this loophole? He dealt with this perfectly, sealing the land spirit deep within, and in Mo Yao’s eventual exploration, she could not even find a single feather of the land spirit.

“To think that the land spirit was hidden inside the true inheritance secluded domain! Only when the true inheritances fly at a certain speed would this loophole appear, and allow for the possibility of opening this gateway!” Mo Yao’s heart was shaken, at this moment, she understood what had happened.

The more she thought about it, the more she viewed Fang Yuan with a new and higher level of respect.

“This lad, I underestimated him! What sort of background does he have, he actually knew this method of entry?” Mo Yao was shocked and curious.

Fang Yuan’s performance was very shocking, it greatly exceeded her expectations.

What she did not know was, this was inside the video from central continent’s Gu Immortals in Fang Yuan’s previous life.

In fact, the deep research of central continent’s Gu Immortals was actually built upon the foundation of Mo Yao’s findings.

Mo Yao was an impressive refinement grandmaster, for her lover, she researched the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, and charged in alone. After she died, the previous research material that she left behind was in the hands of Spirit Affinity House.

For the ten thousand years after that, generations after generations of geniuses within Spirit Affinity House continued their research on it. At the same time, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had been corroded by the power of time, showing more and more loopholes over the years, becoming easier to exploit.

But Spirit Affinity House knew that to take down this juicy meat called Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, it was not something a super force could do alone. Thus, Spirit Affinity House secretly worked with several other central continent sects and planned this for thousands of years.

Spirit Affinity House took the lead as they controlled the most important research materials from beginning to end. Later, good preparation would be the key to success, when central continent’s Gu Immortals attacked, the group was led by Spirit Affinity House’s fairy of that generation, Black Moon.

As he walked up the stairs, Fang Yuan arrived at the foot of the green copper divine bird.

This tall statue was Imperial Court blessed land’s land spirit, Frost Jade Peacock!

Except that it was sealed tightly by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, and could not move. Since hundreds of thousands of years ago, throughout the ages, it had been standing here without any movement.

As they got closer, Mo Yao had a discovery: “Heh, lad, your plan will be hard to execute. The green paste on the Frost Jade Peacock’s body is created by the rank seven Immortal Gu Earth Prison. The black chains that are coiling around its body are made from the rank seven Immortal Gu Earth Net... Eh!”

While saying this, Mo Yao thought of something and her words stopped.

At once, in Fang Yuan’s mind, she was staring with her eyes wide open, like she had seen a ghost.

Because she had suddenly remembered: Not long ago, Fang Yuan summoned two Immortal Gu, one of them was Gruel Mud!

Earth prison Gu, earth net Gu, although they were rank seven Immortal Gu and were higher than Gruel Mud by one rank.

But they were one time expenditure Gu, they vanished after one use.

The two rank seven Immortal Gu worked together to seal the land spirit, but after hundreds of thousands of years of corrosion from time, this strength had weakened greatly.

And Gruel Mud was a direct counter to this strength!

“Hahaha, it seems you have already thought about it, you are not too stupid.” Fang Yuan laughed heartily as he took out the gruel mud Immortal Gu from his pocket.

Although this Gu was rank six, because it was an expenditure type Gu, it was comparatively easier to use, there was no need to inject immortal essence into it, he just needed to squeeze it.

Fang Yuan squeezed lightly and it shattered.

The Gu worm burst and oozed out a brown-green light that was like liquid.

The light followed Fang Yuan’s will and flew up, fusing into the divine bird statue.

Throughout the process, Mo Yao watched in a daze, unable to say a word.

After the light fused into the statue, a slight tremor occured, but this tremor was simply too light, it was almost like an illusion.

But soon, this tremor became larger.

The entire divine bird statue starting shaking. Cracks were forming on the green paste covering the divine bird statue, next, the chains starting colliding with one another, making a loud and sharp noise.

“Su... success?! Don’t tell me, after hundreds of thousands of years of wear and tear, the powers of the two Immortal Gu were used up?” Mo Yao muttered to herself, she had a complex expression, there were disbelief, surprise, suspicion, and denial...

But afterwards, the tremors became smaller.

The divine bird statue became silent, and the chains stopped clashing, the entire white jade hall became quiet once again.

Mo Yao was deeply disappointed, she sighed: “Failed in the end! There was the difference of a rank, plus this was the setup of an Immortal Venerable.”

“Hehehe.” But at this point, Fang Yuan laughed lightly: “Mo Yao, look at the divine bird’s head?”

Mo Yao’s will looked over and was shocked: “The green paste on the land spirit’s head is slowly melting! That’s right, this is the gruel mud Immortal Gu’s real effect, I was too caught up with the commotion and got carried away, I lost my bearings and did not think of this. Hehe, laughable, how laughable.”

Mo Yao suddenly shook her head and sighed, immediately afterwards her expression had vanished completely, restoring the demeanour of a legendary Gu Immortal, a refinement grandmaster.

Actually, she could not help but briefly lose her cool.

In her life, she had paid too huge of a price for Imperial Court blessed land, for Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Right now, earth prison Gu and earth net Gu, the powers of these two Immortal Gu, although corroded mostly by the power of time, they still had a portion remaining.

Although gruel mud Immortal Gu was effective against them, it was only rank six, it was still very difficult to get rid of the remaining power.

But don’t forget about the existence of the land spirit!

The tremors earlier were due to the land spirit.

It was the one which exerted strength, causing the two Immortal Gu to divert the majority of their power to suppress it, allowing the gruel mud Immortal Gu’s power to sneak in.

As the green paste melted, it turned into gruel mud on the white jade floor, the green-black mud was a great contrast to the white tiles on the ground.

Drop by drop, they fell on the ground.

The Frost Jade Peacock’s head was released, but after getting to its neck, the speed of melting greatly reduced.

Evidently, earth prison and earth net Gu’s remaining power reacted and started to resist Gruel Mud, causing the efficiency to reduce greatly.

“Heh, just like in the video in my previous life, it is exactly the same.” Fang Yuan laughed as he looked at the land spirit, Frost Jade Peacock: “Oh Imperial Court land spirit, look down at your feet, I was the one who released you. How does it feel to breathe again after hundreds of thousands of years? As long as you recognise me as your master, I will help you to regain freedom!”

Frost Jade Peacock’s angry expression was still fixed on its face, hearing Fang Yuan’s words, it laughed arrogantly: “I am one with the blessed land, all the things that happened in the blessed land for the last hundreds of thousands of years are clear in my heart. If you want to be my new owner, you will need to fulfill one condition.”

Hundreds of thousands of years ago, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s fulfilled this land spirit’s request and became Imperial Court blessed land’s owner.

Today, Fang Yuan was facing this request as well.

At this point, the video in his previous life had no more value. Fang Yuan laughed as his eyes shone, asking –

“What condition?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 603: Sleepless Night

ChibiGeneral

“No, don’t abandon me...”

“Save me, save me, benefactor!”

The voices were reverberating in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s ears, he opened his eyes suddenly and sat up on his bed.

Huff, huff...

He was panting, with his body covered in sticky sweat, it was very uncomfortable.

Another nightmare!

Under the dim light, this rank five peak stage expert’s face showed an old and weary expression befitting his age.

In the silent room, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s breathing sounds became softer, as his frown slowly eased.

Sitting on his bed, he fell into deep silence, like he was in a daze, there was an extreme fatigue hidden in his gaze.

Ever since he failed the round, he had been in deep guilt and self-blame for causing Gao Yang and Zhu Zai to be sacrificed due to his own greed.

Almost every night, he had the same nightmare.

In the nightmare, blood was pouring everywhere, the smell was overbearing. All sorts of ugly blood beasts bared their claws and fangs as he was encircled, facing Gao Yang and Zhu Zai’s pleas.

They called him benefactor, they asked him to save them.

But every time, even though Tai Bai Yun Sheng had an aperture full of primeval essence, he would be unable to move, watching Gao Yang and Zhu Zai get surrounded by blood beasts and eventually consumed, leaving behind their pale white bones.

Throughout the process, Gao Yang and Zhu Zai would sometimes beg him, sometimes they would protect him, or curse furiously, or taunt him.

Eventually, when they turn into pale white skeletons, lying in the pool of blood, they would still say with their remaining skulls—

“I believe in Lord Tai Bai, he is so kind and righteous, he will definitely never abandon us!”

“Mm, I believe in him too! Even if I die, I will believe...”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was in pain, he felt sadness, helplessness, and regret!

Especially at the end, he would kneel on the ground helplessly in his dream, letting the blood dye his white hair red as he cried profusely.

He felt that he was no longer Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

This experience made him reevaluate himself.

But every time he examined, it resulted in a severe negative answer.

Sometimes when he looked in the mirror, he felt that he was looking at a stranger!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was not the only person who had a sleepless night.

It was late at night.

Imperial Court blessed land’s night was dazzling with silver light, shining on the land.

Hei Lou Lan looked out of the window, above the sacred palace, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was still forming new floors, the dazzling aurora was shining brightly in the sky, creating a beautiful scenery.

“Damn it! The owner token went missing, what in the world happened?” Thinking back to the time when he challenged the round, Hei Lou Lan gritted his teeth, he clenched his fists as his eyes shone with ruthlessness, ready to devour people with one glance.

Throughout history, there had never been any Lord of the Imperial Court who lost their owner token, but this had to happen to Hei Lou Lan.

“Forget it! So what if I don’t have the owner token, so what if I cannot use the Grey Meltdown killer move? Whatever the difficulties, they cannot stop me from getting the strength path Immortal Gu! Mother, if you can watch this from the afterlife, see how I take revenge for you!”

Fang Yuan was slowly walking in the sacred palace’s garden.

His expression was not nice, he had a grim look on his face.

In the flower garden, there was a jade fountain and a stone bridge, with flowers blooming and flourishing like it was spring, this beautiful environment was not something he could currently enjoy.

Right after coming out of the white jade hall, Fang Yuan was feeling vexed about the matter of subduing Imperial Court land spirit.

In his mind, Mo Yao’s will chuckled: “Hehehe, to think that Imperial Court blessed land’s condition for ownership was like that. Lad, with your gloomy personality, it will not be easy for you to find a woman that you love, while she also has to be deeply in love with you.”

Not long ago, Fang Yuan faced Imperial Court land spirit Frost Jade Peacock, and was told the condition to become the owner of Imperial Court — true love!

To make the Frost Jade Peacock willingly submit to a master, and obey every command, one person was not enough, it had to be a Gu Master couple who were deeply in love.

It was very easy for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to fulfill this condition.

But for Fang Yuan, it was filled with difficulty.

Not mentioning the other parts, just requiring Fang Yuan to be truly in love with a certain woman was a near impossible matter.

“If this was in my previous life, I would be able to fulfill it. But now...” Fang Yuan took a few steps and stopped at the stone bridge, he rested on the railing and looked at the jade lake below the bridge, laughing coldly.

The lake was like a mirror, under the radiance of the silvery night sky, it was a dazzling sight.

What he did in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building that night was really a scary experience, but that was over now.

At this moment, he was basking in the beautiful scenery around the sacred palace, compared to the dangerous predicament he was in earlier, this truly felt like a dream or illusion.

“Life is like a dream, like morning dew and nocturnal flower, like the shadow of a bubble...” Fang Yuan muttered, going into a daze.

The light breeze caused ripples on the surface of the lake.

Among the ripples, a blurry image of a woman’s figure seemed to appear in Fang Yuan’s absent-minded gaze.

That was the woman he had buried deep in his memories.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, he had faced disaster and was a destitute wanderer, during the lowest time of his life, he had met her, the world’s encounters were just so amazing, and the toying of fate was simply cruel and merciless.

“If we are talking about true love... why am I thinking of her?” Fang Yuan’s fingers which were holding the railing exerted force unknowingly.

He frowned suddenly, and his gaze turned ice cold, the woman’s figure silently vanished, and the surface of the lake appeared before him once again.

Fang Yuan fell into deep thought.

The current situation was not looking good!

Frost Jade Peacock was formed from the obsession of the blessed land’s original owner, although it was arrogant, it would acknowledge true love.

But it was near impossible for Fang Yuan to meet its requirements.

If he could not subdue the land spirit, then Fang Yuan’s plan for taking over Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would fail completely, he would have to stop here.

“No wonder the central continent Gu Immortals in my previous life chose to destroy Imperial Court blessed land, and destroy Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. Gu Immortals have lots of deep secrets and often have extreme personalities, it is harder for them to experience true love than mortals.”

“After using Gruel Mud, even though the melting is slow, the land spirit’s seal is getting weaker. After being sealed for hundreds of thousands of years, the land spirit is filled with hatred and desires freedom badly, it will definitely try to break the seal. Although Giant Sun’s will is still slumbering, when the seal melts to a certain degree, or if the land spirit continues to resist, it will definitely awaken!”

This was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s will!

When an Immortal Venerable rages, blood would flow like a river, all beings would mourn. But the land spirit has the territorial advantage, as long as the blessed land remains intact, it would have a continual source of strength.

When the two contest, it would be scarier than deities fighting. At that point, those who were mortals like Fang Yuan would suffer.

Especially when Fang Yuan was the culprit who released the land spirit, if he was targeted by Giant Sun’s will, he would face a terrible end, there was no way out!

Fang Yuan’s original plan was like this.

First, he would enter northern plains and make his way into Imperial Court blessed land.

He achieved this flawlessly, using his previous life’s memories, he killed the Wolf King Chang Shan Yin who was at his last breath, taking over his identity and becoming a higher-up of Hei tribe army. Next, he hid within the alliance army and got into Imperial Court blessed land.

The second step was to get into Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and gain the most benefits for himself. Using the video from the central continent Gu Immortals in his previous life, he would subdue the land spirit and without alerting the Immortal Venerable’s will, he would become the new owner of Imperial Court blessed land.

The third step, after becoming the owner of the Imperial Court, he would not be in a rush to take down Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, instead he would hide in the background and develop in secret.

Within Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, there was an Immortal Venerable’s will, it was not easy to deal with. Imperial Court blessed land was a sacred place in the hearts of northern plains’ Gu Masters, it could not be defiled or tainted.

If he was discovered, Fang Yuan would face the assault of the entirety of northern plains!

Such frightening power, even if Fang Yuan escaped to other places, it would be pointless. There would not be a single super force that would protect him from the pressure of the whole of northern plains’ forces.

Unless it was during the chaotic five regions battle, when no one had the spare energy to bother with him, and when all five regions suffer setbacks, Fang Yuan would survive even if he was exposed.

After becoming the land spirit’s owner, Fang Yuan would order the land spirit to stay inside the white jade hall, while cooperating with Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s operations.

This way, everything would progress smoothly.

First, he could use Imperial Court blessed land’s strength to deal with the Gu Immortal Tai Bai Yun Sheng. This way, he would have a greater chance of success, and regardless of how their battle end up, Fang Yuan would not lose. Even if he failed to take the Immortal Gu Landscape as Before, Fang Yuan would not be in any mortal danger due to the land spirit’s protection.

Secondly, Fang Yuan could use Fixed Immortal Travel to move between Hu Immortal blessed land and Imperial Court blessed land freely. Hu Immortal blessed land was being covetously eyed by Immortal Crane Sect, and every once in a while, there would be an earthly calamity, it would be the centre of many struggles and not the ideal place to cultivate peacefully.

By becoming the owner of Imperial Court blessed land, he could use Hu Immortal blessed land as his cover and Imperial Court blessed land as his true base. While cultivating, he could scheme against Immortal Crane Sect to gain the most benefits. If it failed, he could discard Hu Immortal blessed land and retreat into Imperial Court blessed land.

Imperial Court blessed land was protected by an Immortal Venerable’s setup, it was hard for wisdom path Gu Immortals to make deductions involving it. Moreover, Fang Yuan would continue to fix and repair the loopholes in the future, thus it would be much safer than Hu Immortal blessed land!

Thirdly, Fang Yuan would own this precious resource, every time True Yang Building opens up, he could collect all these vast amounts of resources including Immortal Gu without putting himself in danger. When the time comes, he would do what he did in his previous life, subduing a blood path Gu worm and becoming a blood path Gu Immortal. It would be slow and steady, safe and sound.

But though the plan was perfect, reality was not.

Fang Yuan put in his best effort, but he was stuck at the second step.

Unable to become the land spirit’s owner, he could not borrow its strength, as a mortal, there was nothing much he could do.

The situation was progressively getting worse, Giant Sun’s will was definitely going to awaken. If Fang Yuan wanted to escape, he could use hole earth Gu and connect to Hu Immortal blessed land to flee. But he could not bring these few Immortal Gu with him!

Moreover, even if he obtained landscape as before Immortal Gu, how would he quickly and safely return to Hu Immortal blessed land?

Without the land spirit’s help, as a mortal, Fang Yuan could not do that.

“At present, the plan can only be to first think of every possible method to convince the land spirit. If I am on its side, we can deal with Giant Sun’s will together, and I might be able to borrow some of its strength. Sigh... I really do not want to use that final method.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 604: Luck Inspection Gu

Half a month later.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

The wind scythe birds were densely packed together, a great number of them engulfed the sky as they charged towards the alliance army.

These wind scythe birds had beaks as sharp as swords, their wings were curved and razor-edged, like that of a scythe. They flew extremely fast, leaving behind afterimages in the air, and had no fear when they charged towards their enemies.

“Kill, kill, kill!” Hei Lou Lan shouted, the black smoke around his body was rolling, creating multiple black tentacles as they one after another captured the surrounding wind scythe birds and devoured them.

The battle of the army fighting against the wind scythe birds had been ongoing for an hour, with both sides suffering heavy casualties.

The floor was littered with bird corpses, but there were also many dead Gu Masters.

“Ahhhhh...” Hei Lou Lan screamed, he was going berserk from fighting, stretching out his right hand.

His right arm was in a claw shape, as a dark spiral was formed, it rotated in the air and converged at the center of his right claw.

In the blink of an eye, thousands of dark streams gathered like they were flowing into the sea, into Hei Lou Lan’s right claw like a black light ball.

The light ball was dark and mysterious, it spun on its own and gave out a thunder like sound.

“Go!” Hei Lou Lan’s eyes suddenly opened wide as he shouted, using all his strength to point his claw at the sky.

He grabbed the round ball of black light like he was lifting heavy weight, his movement was very slow and strenuous.

Following this movement, the light ball slowly flew into the air.

In the air, it rapidly expanded, in a few breaths’ time, it expanded to the size of a mountain.

At once, the black light ball occupied the sky covering half the alliance army’s surface area.

Countless wind scythe birds were engulfed by it, melting and corroding, not even their bones were left intact.

The entire process was silent and strangely overbearing, people’s hearts were turning cold from seeing this.

This was Hei Lou Lan’s signature killer move — Dark Vortex!

After lasting for six breaths’ time, the vortex killed tens of thousands of wind scythe birds.

The numbers of the wind scythe birds were too huge, and because they gathered above the alliance army, they were a terrifying threat.

After the dark vortex vanished, a huge clear hole appeared in the sky, but soon, the wind scythe birds flooded in like a tide, covering up the hole again. Above the alliance army, there were countless wind scythe birds again.

This was the twenty-fifth round of the sixty-eighth floor of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

The numbers of wind scythe birds were too great, among them were large numbers of bird kings, their assault was too powerful.

Actually, according to their experiences, they knew there had to be an easier way to challenge this round, but Hei Lou Lan directly charged in and mobilized all his strength to overwhelm the birds.

This attracted the revenge and counterattack of the frenzied wind scythe birds.

“Hahaha, kill all these damn birds!” At one side, Ye Lui Sang laughed. Hei Lou Lan’s explosive strength triggered his fighting spirit.

Ye Lui tribe was on the same level as Hei tribe, they were both super forces, having Gu Immortals backing them. Ye Lui Sang and Hei Lou Lan had the same status, they were both the tribe leader of their respective super tribes.

When he saw Hei Lou Lan’s killer move that killed countless wind scythe birds, he was not willing to hold back anymore.

“Look at my newly developed killer move — Flame Demon!”

Ye Lui Sang shouted loudly as his sleeves fluttered, and his primeval essence rushed into the Gu worms in his hands.

With a loud thud, his body was clad in flames as the flames burst out, all Gu Masters near him moved away.

Within the radius of a few hundred steps, he was the only person left.

His body trembled and the flames that could rise to heaven split to form a ten metre bronze ape that was completely made of flames.

The flaming bronze ape had an ugly appearance, with teeth like a gorilla, strange horns and bulging muscles. This was the flame demon!

The flame demon rose into the sky, crashing around as all the wind scythe birds that collided with it were ignited, screaming from being burnt alive.

Along its path, flames were burning, causing a straight line of them to form in the sky. Large numbers of wind scythe birds were roasted, falling to the ground.

The flame demon rampaged arrogantly, attracting the attention of many birds, it greatly reduced the pressure of the Gu Masters in the grand army.

“What fire demon, it is nothing much!” Far away, Hei Lou Lan laughed loudly, showing his smug arrogance.

Ye Lui Sang laughed as well: “Hei tribe leader, take another look!”

In saying this, his body shook as the flames fell off him, forming another flame demon.

Hei Lou Lan’s expression changed, not just him, even Fang Yuan who was in the army took a serious look. The flame demon had great strength, but to think he had more than one.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building gave lots of opportunities, it was not just Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan who were improving, other Gu Masters were gaining many rewards as well.

When six flame demons entered the battlefield, the flames on Ye Lui Sang were finally extinguished.

“Six flame demons, thankfully...” Fang Yuan retracted his gaze.

Hei Lou Lan’s expression soothed as well.

Ye Lui Sang had true capability, this killer move was really extraordinary, but that was as far as it got. In terms of power, it could only be on par with dark vortex.

The flame demons rampaged for an hour as their strength fell more and more, eventually perishing among the wind scythe birds.

But soon after, Fang Yuan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Xi Xue, Pei Yan Fei, Tao You, Gu Guo Long and others attacked, using all their killer moves. The great strength of rank five experts quickly changed the battlefield, tilting the scales of victory towards the alliance army.

Eventually, they succeeded, getting into the twenty-sixth round.

“Reporting to lord tribe leader, thirteen tribe leaders have submitted a letter of request, they are asking for a temporarily halt of advancement. They are worried about the huge casualties, they need to rest and recover.” Before Hei Lou Lan had finished probing this round, his attendant Hei Shu had already reported.

Hei Lou Lan frowned immediately, shouting: “Begrudging already despite such few casualties! These useless bums, they are all useless cowards! Return this request to them, and tell them we will advance no matter what. Whoever dares to escape or run away from the alliance army will have their entire tribe and any related tribes executed, none will be spared!”

Saying so, he held the letter in his hand and tore it into pieces immediately.

“Continue advancing, charge!” Hei Lou Lan waved his hand, shouting as he commanded the army.

He was anxious.

These days, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would emit a strange tremor every few days.

Coupled with the disappearance of the owner token, Hei Lou Lan felt that this was not a simple matter, his instincts were telling him that something unthinkable was about to happen.

To avoid any accidents in the future, he had to quickly get the strength path Immortal Gu now. Only after advancing to a Gu Immortal would he have the strength to control this changing situation.

The challenge this time lasted until the twenty-eighth round. Only after everyone was unable to continue and the casualties were too heavy did Hei Lou Lan have no choice but to retreat and recuperate.

...

In his room, Tai Bai Yun Sheng showed a bitter smile as he held several east window Gu in his hand.

These east window Gu contained the cultivation experience of previous generation Gu Masters, among them, most were time path attainment!

These were all the round rewards obtained from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

“Don’t tell me, this is the arrangement of destiny, for me to advance to Gu Immortal realm?”

Back then, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had failed in searching for a lifespan Gu, after wasting all his life’s savings, he had to become Hei tribe’s external elder.

He was a time path Gu master, rank five peak stage, with his sensitivity towards time he knew that he had little time left since a few years ago.

Although advancing to Gu Immortal realm could allow a Gu Master’s life to improve qualitatively, it could not increase his lifespan. But Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s situation was a little special.

His time path inheritance was extraordinary, it was a Gu immortal inheritance.

The core of his inheritance had three Gu, river as before Gu, mountain as before Gu, and man as before Gu.

The inheritance has theorized long ago: When he becomes an immortal, using the supreme opportunity of the resonance of heaven and earth, he could advance his man as before Gu into an Immortal Gu.

The mortal man as before Gu could only be used on others.

Immortal Gu Man As Before, could be used on himself.

“If I have the man as before Immortal Gu, I can use it on myself and extend my lifespan. Unfortunately, man as before is not like the Spring Autumn Cicada, I cannot save Gao Yang and Zhu Zai. Sigh...”

Thinking of this, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s heart was worried, the intense regret and guilt assaulted him once again.

...

Fang Yuan stood at the peak of the tall tower, looking at Hei tribe.

Luck inspection Gu had been activated for a while, it gave him a different field of vision from others.

This rank five mortal Gu was the sole, unexpected gain that he obtained inside the true inheritance secluded domain.

Luck inspection, as the name suggests, could be used to inspect luck. It was an investigative Gu worm.

In his vision, in the living quarters of Hei tribe, there were countless smoke-like luck strands. But among them, two were extremely thick, like cranes among chickens, even the palace’s rooms could not hide them.

One came from Hei Lou Lan, his luck was like a huge pillar, with an azure color, it was thick and long. The other came from Tai Bai Yun Sheng, his luck was like the flames burning during sunset, red and bright, it accumulated above the roof of his house, it was like the feeling of dazzling flames.

“The luck of these two are extremely high, but they are different. Hei Lou Lan’s luck has a lasting feeling. Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s luck is like a pile of old firewood, burning at the last moment. In recent days, I secretly manipulated the rewards and placed many time path attainment experiences as rewards to give them to Tai Bai Yun Sheng. Every time he gets one, the firey red luck above him turns brighter by a bit. The possibility of becoming an immortal also increased slightly.”

Fang Yuan thought about it for a long time, he sighed in his heart when he thought about the mysterious and unfathomable luck path.

But he had only obtained a single luck inspection Gu, he did not know the details of the inheritance, it was like opening a new window, towards this new path, he could only explore it slowly.

He used the luck inspection Gu on himself.

Fang Yuan’s body was shrouded in black ink-like luck. This luck gathered and formed a huge coffin shape, completely covering his body, they were emitting a dense death energy, the energy of great misfortune.

Even though Fang Yuan had looked at this many times, his heart always sank when he observed this.

“My luck is not looking optimistic. But these days, all my talks with the Imperial Court land spirit have had no progress. This land spirit is too arrogant, it only wants to break the seal and regain its freedom. True Yang Building has already shaken thirty-eight times, eventually, Giant Sun’s will would awaken.”

“Eh?” Fang Yuan gasped, he looked at a group of Gu Masters, they were all shrouded in a black coffin-like luck, heading in the direction of Hei tribe.

A moment later, they all entered Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s residence.

Fang Yuan thought about briefly before understanding their intentions.

“This is a good opportunity for me to understand the meaning of this black coffin luck.” Fang Yuan’s gaze was dark, he gave a deep glance towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s location.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 605: Pitiful Person (Double chapter)

“We implore you to help us, old sir Tai Bai!”

“I am sincerely asking old sir to go forward and plead for us.”

“The whole of my tribe, our elderly, the weak, the women and children too, the future of all of our tribesmen are in lord’s hands...”

In the room, a group of Gu Masters were kneeling on the ground, crying profusely or showing a sad expression, they were desperately asking Tai Bai Yun Sheng for help.

These Gu Masters had rather special identities, they were all the tribe leaders of their respective tribes.

Lou tribe, Lu tribe, Xi tribe... all of these tribes were middle sized tribes or small sized tribes, during the process of challenging Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, they suffered the greatest numbers of casualties, if this were to continue, they might face the threat of being wiped out for good.

The previous few times, they had as a group written letters of request, asking to retreat, but they were all harshly rejected by Hei Lou Lan.

Survival was the number one priority.

Hei Lou Lan’s oppressive and all out tactics had already severely harmed the survival and development of these small and middle sized tribes.

But because of the Black Tyrant’s fierce reputation, these tribe leaders did not dare to approach Hei Lou Lan himself. After discussing among themselves, they decided to jointly approach Tai Bai Yun Sheng for help.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was the current number one healing master in all of northern plains, he was well known to be kind and merciful, his reputation in northern plains was second to none. Now that he had become Hei tribe’s external elder, he was greatly trusted and depended on by Hei Lou Lan.

If they could obtain Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s help, their respective tribes might very well gain the precious time to rest and recuperate.

“Please get up and speak.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng urged them.

“Old sir, if you do not accept our request, we will not get up!”

“Please go take a look at our tribes, you will understand our pain and grief then. Our injuries and casualties are simply too great, our women have lost their husbands, our children have lost their parents, and our elderly have lost their children...”

“Old sir, please go and talk to Lord Hei Lou Lan, if this carries on, our tribe is going to perish for good.”

“Hmph, we did not die in the Imperial Court contest, but instead, we are facing extermination within Imperial Court blessed land, if word gets out, where would Hei tribe’s reputation go to? This is simply too ironic!”

The tribe leaders talked one after another, they held a firm attitude and refused to get up from the kneeling position.

“Sigh...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng heaved a long sigh, he had already been very unhappy with Hei Lou Lan’s actions to begin with.

There was enough time to go about this slowly, why did he have to be so anxious and rush their advancement?

Causing such grave and severe casualties, he could not bear to see this in his heart.

From Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s perspective: Most likely, losing the owner token during the challenge of the second round had triggered Hei Lou Lan. Another reason was that the supreme elders of Hei tribe were pressuring him greatly. Because of this pressure, Hei Lou Lan had no choice but to give it his all in challenging the rounds.

“My servants, quickly come and serve tea to the tribe leaders.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng instructed his servants.

He next turned around and consoled the band of tribe leaders: “This old man will do his best to talk to tribe leader Hei Lou Lan, but all I can say is, I will try my best.”

“Old sir, you are truly a kind person, you are so benevolent.”

“Gaining old sir’s help, it is truly our tribe’s greatest fortune!”

“Old sir, this is a letter of request that we have written collectively, we will be waiting for old sir’s good news patiently.”

All the tribe leaders were filled with gratitude and joy.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng received the letter of request from them and kept it in his pocket, after bidding farewell to the tribe leaders, he came to the grand hall and looked for Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan was not settling the administrative matters of the army in the grand hall, instead, he was relaxing in the flower garden.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng hurried over quickly and when he saw Hei Lou Lan, the latter was playing chess in the lake pavilion.

Hei Lou Lan heard his intentions and first rejected him strictly, but when Tai Bai Yun Sheng urged him with reasoning and kind words, Hei Lou Lan slowly became less strict as he said: “How about this, I can let these tribes rest and recover temporarily, but they must lend out all of their Gu worms. My army will continue to advance, but we cannot reduce our strength just because of their absence! Every Gu worm that they lend will entitle them to one person who can rest, rank two Gu worm will exempt a rank two Gu Master. A rank three Gu worm will exempt a rank three Gu Master, and so on.”

“Lord tribe leader is wise and merciful, I will thank tribe leader for his magnanimity on behalf of all the different tribes and their tribesmen.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng knew this was the best result he could get, thus he returned and informed all of the tribe leaders about this result.

The tribe leaders looked at each other as they pondered over this, eventually accepting this condition.

Gu worms were the foundation and base of a Gu Master. Gu worms that were lent out were easy to get damaged, but it was much better than losing their own lives.

The casualties that these tribes were facing were simply too severe.

The next day, Hei Lou Lan ordered the black banner army to go to the respective tribes’ resting area and collect their Gu worms, being late was not an option. He also sent Tai Bai Yun Sheng to control the situation and settle the relevant administrative matters.

After three days, this matter was finally settled.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng returned and reported to Hei Lou Lan, who invited him to a banquet.

During the banquet, Hei Lou Lan lifted his wine cup as he said: “Old sir, please have a drink! It was our great fortune that old sir joined our tribe, allowing the army to face much fewer casualties and injuries. Old sir, you revived countless people, you have accomplished great deeds.”

“I am not worthy of such praise, but we have to try our very best at things, whether we succeed or not is up to heaven. With Longevity Heaven watching us, we can only do our best.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng showed a look of shame, replying as he raised his cup. Hei Lou Lan’s praise reminded him of Gao Yang and Zhu Zai.

In truth, every since he returned from the blood hall, every word of praise that he heard felt like an insult, like sarcastic comments that were whipping at his soul.

But today, after settling this matter, he resolved the conflict between Hei tribe and many small and middle sized tribes, in a way, he saved the lives of many Gu Masters.

This made him feel slightly better.

“With Longevity Heaven watching us, we can only do our best...” Hei Lou Lan drank his wine in one gulp, putting it down as he muttered, sighing: “Old sir’s words are very accurate and articulate, it is truly well said. Longevity Heaven is watching us, the road to the future is filled with mystery and unexpected circumstances, as mortals, we can only do our best. Elder Tai Bai had already done his best, I, Hei Lou Lan, should do the same as well!”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng heard this and suddenly felt that Hei Lou Lan had some additional meaning in his words, he immediately asked: “Lord tribe leader, what do you mean by that?”

Hei Lou Lan laughed heartily, he was about to speak when Hei Shu came in with a report.

His body was covered in blood, his expression was respectful and cautious, he came to Hei Lou Lan’s side and said: “Reporting to lord tribe leader, the black banner army has not failed your expectations, we have already settled it appropriately.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng felt the killing aura around him and had a very ominous feeling, he quickly asked: “What do you mean by settled it appropriately? Hei Shu! What did you guys settle?”

Hei Shu did not speak, he raised his eyebrows as he gave Tai Bai Yun Sheng a passing glance, showing disdain in his eyes towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s compassionate and benevolent attitude.

“Hahaha, elder Tai Bai! It is exactly like what you said — we can only do our best! You are doing your best, and I am doing the same! I have to do all I can to break through the rounds, and accomplish the mission given to me by the supreme elder. Tell me, these people ran away in the middle of our task, what crimes have they committed? They were able to develop to this extent because they relied on me. Taking advantages when they can, and hiding when there is trouble, is there such an easy and simple thing in this world? Hmph! If everyone was like that, would my army need to exist anymore? Will there be anyone left who would challenge the rounds with me?” Hei Lou Lan said this with a sharp and resolute tone, his eyes were shining with a ruthless light.

Saying this, there was no need to mention what the task given to the black banner army was!

“Hei Lou Lan, you!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng stood up in a flash.

He stared at Hei Lou Lan with a furious gaze, he showed shock, anger, and even hatred on his face.

“Insolent!” Hei Shu was unhappy and was about to strike, but Hei Lou Lan stretched out his hand and stopped him.

“Elder Tai Bai, do not forget your current status.” Hei Lou Lan kept away his ruthless expression and poured another cup of wine indifferently.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng clenched his fists, his body was shivering from pure anger.

He stared at Hei Lou Lan fixatedly, he wanted to scold him, but no sound came out of his mouth.

Hei Lou Lan chuckled, pouring a cup of wine for Tai Bai Yun Sheng personally: “Old sir, take a seat, such beautiful and relaxing scenery paired with good wine and food, we should not let it go to waste.”

“Screw your good wine and food!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng swept his sleeves furiously, with a loud crash, all the wine cups fell onto the floor.

Hei Lou Lan was unmoved, instead he pointed at the dishes on the table as he laughed loudly: “Elder Tai Bai, this is a banquet to celebrate your success. If not for your support, why would they trust us so much and lend out their Gu? As they did not have their Gu worms with them, my black banner army could quickly swoop in and take them down, easily obliterating them. I have no one but you to thank for this.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng heard this and felt like lightning had struck him, he staggered three steps back as his face turned completely pale as paper.

“Hei Lou Lan, you are really an unscrupulous scoundrel!”

“Unscrupulous? I cannot believe this, you are saying such naive things? Elder Tai Bai, you were also once the young tribe leader of a tribe, after living for so many years, have you not seen the reality of this world? These so called political affairs have always been dirty.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng wanted to rebuke him, but there were no words he could say.

He snorted coldly, turning around and leaving, walking out of the hall quickly without even turning back once.

“Lord tribe leader, should I send people to surveil Tai Bai Yun Sheng?” Hei Shu inquired.

Hei Lou Lan raised his wine cup, his expression was plain, without a bit of nervousness. He glanced at Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s back as he laughed coldly: “Tai Bai Yun Sheng is merely a healing Gu Master, what’s there to be afraid of? His reputation? Hehe, after this matter, who would dare believe in him again? Good deeds go unnoticed, while bad deeds travel a thousand li...”

Hei Shu heard this and his heart jumped: “Anyone who holds a high political position is an unfathomable schemer indeed!”

At this point, he could see that Hei Lou Lan’s actions were killing three birds with one stone.

Firstly, by causing bloodshed in these small and middle tribes, he was creating an example to show the others. Secondly, he could suppress Tai Bai Yun Sheng, making him understand what status he is currently holding. Thirdly, it is to attack Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s reputation, in order to strengthen his own political power.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng walked quickly towards the scene of the incident.

The slaughter had ended, in order to create more fear in people, Hei Lou Lan did not order his men to clean up the area.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked around, his expression turning white, and his heart was shivering.

The sacred palace was dyed in blood, corpses were everywhere on the ground.

Not just strong adult men, there were even the old, the weak, women and children. Some of them had their eyes wide open, dying an indignant death; some of them had their arms and legs chopped off, some were cut in half, it was a gruesome sight; some had messy clothing, their expressions were twisted and in agony, it was evident that they had been humiliated in an inhuman way before they died...

All of this... all of this...

“It was all caused by me. If not for me trusting Hei Lou Lan, if not for me trying to mediate the tension between the two... I was too foolish, I was too naive! I did not manage to see Hei Lou Lan’s ugly and evil intentions! All these people, they all died because they placed their trust in me!”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s body was shivering, the intense smell of blood was assaulting him, and the scene of a sea of corpses lying on the ground was causing a huge impact on his fragile state of mind.

His back was hunched, the mild wind blew at him and caused his beard to move slightly, he had deep wrinkles and a dazed expression, his fists were tightly clenched, soundlessly expressing the grief, agony, regret, and self blame that he was feeling deep in his heart!

Plop.

He kneeled on the ground weakly, holding himself up with his hands as the blood dyed his palms, his knees, and his pants bright red.

“Sorry, I am sorry...”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng wept profusely, at once, his face was like an overflowing river.

“This is a good person... even though there is also darkness in his heart, in the end, there is great terror when one is between life and death. Facing death, which normal person would not lose themselves?” Far away, at a hidden corner, Fang Yuan had been observing this intently and silently.

He watched the scene unfold with his very own eyes.

It turned out that the black coffin luck represented a severe disaster that would threaten his life. The extermination of these tribes was the best proof of that.

Meanwhile, the death energy on his body was more than dozens of times thicker than these tribes’ members, even a hundred times as thick!

“Hehe, this is so interesting. Luck huh...” Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a cold and arrogant smile, he wanted to see if this so called bad luck could stop him in his steps.

“In this life, there is no person, any reason, or any difficulties that can affect my determination in moving forward!” His gaze was cold and still as ice, looking towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

“Who said that kind people will be rewarded?” Thinking of this, Fang Yuan’s cold expression turned into one that had a trace of sarcasm: “Then let me give you a hand.”

He activated his Gu worms in secret, forming an illusory voice that was untraceable, as the soundwaves entered Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s ears one by one.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s state of mind was close to collapsing, his mind was extremely susceptible to influences.

At this moment, he could hear a voice, it sounded just like Gao Yang and Zhu Zai.

“I believe in you! You will definitely save us, isn’t that right?”

“Old sir, you are our benefactor. We are grateful to you, we are willing to risk our lives in order to come forward and help you!”

“Ah!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng screamed suddenly, opening his eyes abruptly.

With his blurred vision due to his tears, he looked at the blood puddle on the ground.

The blood puddle rippled, as the nightmare that haunted him appeared once again, the image of Gao Yang and Zhu Zai dying from the sea of blood beasts!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s body shuddered, he was still like a statue, but the next moment, he raised his head and screamed with all of his energy.

“AHHHHHHHHHH!”

His shrill and hoarse voice resounded in this bloody slaughterhouse.

“Hehehe, hihihi, hahaha!”

When his screaming ended, Tai Bai Yun Sheng started laughing like a maniac.

His laughter contained the feeling of madness, but also anger and sadness, there was also a trace of mockery towards himself, towards the mortal world.

“Crazy? He’s crazy!”

“Elder Tai Bai has gone mad!!”

The surrounding Hei tribe Gu Masters were shouting in shock.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan was curling his lips and smiling, he was a transmigrator, and had also undergone rebirth, his rich life experience had allowed him to grasp the psychology of people to a very precise degree.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a very good person.

But his subconscious action in the blood hall was akin to betrayal.

This action created suspicion, doubts, and denial that he felt towards himself in terms of his personal values.

If a person denied himself, and suspected himself, then he would no doubt fall into a deep abyss of agony.

Very evidently, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was in great pain, he felt guilt in his heart, almost every night, he was tormented by a similar nightmare.

For him to accept that he had some kind of despicable and lowly character as a fact, it would be impossible to do so. His entire life revolved around justice and benevolence, he had walked on this road for too long, he wanted to return to it, but he knew that in the deepest part of his heart, this action formed a barrier that he could not cross.

He was stuck in the abyss of agony, sinking deeper and deeper the more he struggled.

The tribe leaders’ request towards him was a chance that he had towards salvation, and a redemption for his mistakes.

If he could really succeed, it was undeniably the best medicine for him to pay for his sins, and he would be able to forgive himself.

But the truth was, Hei Lou Lan ordered a mass slaughter, not leaving even a single woman or child behind. This in turn caused Tai Bai Yun Sheng to become the biggest assistant in this murder spree.

His medicine turned into a heart piercing poison, the intense toxins caused him to lose himself, his mental state was close to breaking down.

At this juncture, Fang Yuan pushed him lightly, finally causing Tai Bai Yun Sheng to explode, breaking from the deepest part of his heart.

Perhaps only Fang Yuan could understand him at this point.

To put it in another way, after searching through his soul, Fang Yuan, who had seen Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s entire life, could be said to know him intimately.

But the cruel reality was, this person was not his kin or his friend, he was an enemy plotting against him.

Fang Yuan, who was hidden in the darkness listening to Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s laughter, looked on with an expression of appreciation, smiling lightly.

This was a respectable and pitiful old man, he screamed his lungs out, in his laughter, on his face full of tears, he was questioning himself, he was questioning the cruelty of this mortal world, fate was toying with him and he was helpless to resist.

“If you deny even yourself, what can you do?” Fang Yuan muttered lightly, his gaze was as deep as night.

“Go to the blood hall again and try to challenge the round? No, if you are there, your mind will be full of Gao Yang and Zhu Zai’s images. Go seek help? Who can help you now? Hei Lou Lan? It can be assumed that you have just fallen out with him. Or rather, even if you manage to get the lifespan Gu, will you be able to use it with peace of mind?”

“Hehe, the current you, what options do you possibly have? What choices can you still make? Denying yourself, wallowing in self pity, feeling intense pain and grief, you, a person who is facing a trial of your conscience, what option do you have?”

In Fang Yuan’s heart, an answer was becoming clearer.

“Thus, go ahead and make your decision, I hope you will not let me down!” In the darkness, Fang Yuan’s gaze was shining as he looked at the crazy Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was laughing wildly, his voice was bitter like he was wailing.

He tore his clothes, as tears and mucus were mixing on his face, he did not have the demeanour of a rank five peak state expert at this point.

He was someone who feared death, but he was also a good person who was pushed into a corner by this cruel and ice cold mortal world.

In truth, he was more like a —

Pitiful person.

Since some time ago, a mild wind had started blowing.

The wind gradually grew bigger and bigger, as clouds were forming in the sky.

With Tai Bai Yun Sheng as the center, the surroundings were quietly and rapidly transforming

Some sort of mystical change had started, heaven and earth were beginning to tremble.

“You did not disappoint me in the end...” Fang Yuan was extremely excited, he took his leave and vanished without a trace.

He rapidly travelled far away, retreating.

Because...

It was no joke when a Gu Master advances into an immortal.

Soon, the wind and clouds went wild, as heaven and earth changed!

The dark and thick black clouds looked like they were about to collapse at any time, destroying the sacred palace.

In and out of the sacred palace, shouting could be heard everywhere.

“What is going on?”

“What in the world is happening?!”

Countless people did not know what was happening, they fell into a panic.

“This... could it be?!” Some people with greater knowledge and experience stared at this grand scene with a dumbfounded expression.

“Go investigate, go investigate! Who is it?!” In the hall, Hei Lou Lan was furiously screaming.

“Lord, it is Tai Bai Yun Sheng!” Hei Shu was full of sweat as he stumbled his way into the hall and reported this.

Hei Lou Lan’s expression froze, he was as still as a statue for a moment.

A few breaths later, he reacted and shouted with a twisted expression: “Retreat! Order everyone to leave the sacred palace. Of course, those who wish to die can stay here!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 606: Awakening

The sky turned dark and gloomy, and the wind howled.

A formless heavenly power slowly lifted Tai Bai Yun Sheng into the air.

He laughed maniacally, his white beard fluttering in the wind. There were no signs of the usual warmth and benevolence on his face, it was replaced by a crazed and distorted look.

Everyone in the sacred palace was in panic; Gu Masters fled in a hurry, forming a huge stream of people that was fleeing for life towards the outside.

Only after running an immense distance, did the crowd anxiously stop.

Expert Gu Masters moved toward the peaks of hills or directly flew to the sky, and used investigative Gu worms to observe the scene above the sacred palace with different thoughts going through their minds.

Other Gu Masters also raised their heads to gaze at the floating Tai Bai Yun Sheng with looks of respect, reverence, affection, worry, envy and so on.

The news of Tai Bai Yun Sheng advancing to Gu Immortal had already spread amongst everyone.

Advancing to Gu Immortal!

This was something that most people would not experience in their whole life, and unexpectedly it was happening before everyone’s eyes at this very moment.

“Inconceivable, Tai Bai Yun Sheng has yet to use any Gu worms but he actually caused such a change in weather!” Looking at the surging clouds and hearing the raging winds, many Gu Masters shouted out in surprise.

Soon the surprised voices surged into a commotion.

Because it was not only the weather that had changed, even the ground under their feet was beginning to shake.

At first, it was only a negligible tremor, but soon vast smoke and dust started to rise from the ground.

“This is the turbulence of earth qi!”

“According to the records in the tribe, Gu Masters have to first break their aperture to advance to Gu Immortal! After breaking their aperture, they can attract heaven qi and earth qi!”

Ye Lui Sang, Hei Lou Lan and some others were from super tribes, and knew a lot more than normal people. At this moment, shock could clearly be seen in their eyes.

The first step in advancing to Gu Immortal was breaking the aperture.

Using primeval essence in an all-out assault to completely shatter one’s own aperture. Like this, the sealed aperture that was covered by the crystal wall would turn into a hole in the Gu Master’s body.

“Just this first step needs extremely great courage. Because there is no turning back after shattering the aperture.” Gu tribe leader Gu Guo Long said with a sigh.

“Advancement to a Gu Immortal is extremely difficult, with miniscule chances of success! Tai Bai Yun Sheng is too courageous, actually daring to take this step. He truly leaves us in admiration.” Nie tribe leader Nie Ya Qing was deeply moved.

Hei Lou Lan’s expression was complex.

He knew some inside details, a part of the reason why Tai Bai Yun Sheng was advancing to Gu Immortal was probably due to his actions.

“I was the one who provoked Tai Bai Yun Sheng, leading to him choosing to take the risk to advance in his crumbling mental state. This is good, although I learnt about immortal ascension from records, I really want to personally observe it. Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s advancement into Gu Immortal will provide a great reference and be helpful to me. It is just that... so be it if he fails, but if he really successfully advances into a Gu Immortal, how should I treat him?”

Hei Lou Lan immediately frowned at this thought, feeling a headache.

Fang Yuan observed the scene while sitting on a back of an azure wolf king, surrounded by an azure wolf group.

“Advancement to Gu Immortal...” His dark gaze had excitement and also showed an expression of recalling the past.

He again used luck inspection Gu to examine Tai Bai Yun Sheng, the luck on him was now like a raging wildfire, originally it had been like flames with a growing red glow. Now, it was even more flourishing, blazing like an inferno!

“His luck is blazing, he had successfully advanced into a Gu Immortal in my previous life, that should not be a big problem for him in this life.” Fang Yuan inwardly nodded.

Unlike Hei Lou Lan with his doubts and hesitation, Fang Yuan already had a plan to face the Gu Immortal Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

He tried to look once more, but the luck inspection Gu actually suffered injuries from the extreme pressure.

His own eyes also felt a burning pain.

Fang Yuan immediately stopped the activation, not surprised at all.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had already broken his aperture, attracting heaven and earth qi in a huge surrounding range. Using Gu worms in this range will naturally create chain reactions, making the heaven and earth qi surge and trigger a backlash.

If one was stubborn and forcibly activated their Gu, even an Immortal Gu would be injured and might even die, not to mention mere mortal Gu.

Fang Yuan had not considered using Gu worms at this time to plot against Tai Bai Yun Sheng because of this reason.

If he rashly made a move in this period, he himself might be implicated.

In an instant, the dark clouds in the sky surged, and together took the shape of a giant vortex.

In response to this, yellow-brown dust churned endlessly on the ground, creating a vortex that resembled the formation of a loophole.

“This Tai Bai Yun Sheng has deep foundation and accumulation, his human qi is so majestic, actually attracting so much heaven and earth qi! This scene is actually more spectacular than when my tribe’s supreme elder advanced.” Ye Lui Sang was endlessly shocked.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had an immortal inheritance and roamed northern plains his whole life, gaining extremely rich experience. By now, he had almost run the course of his entire life, thus his accumulation was incomparably deep.

The two giant vortexes covered miles of range.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng gazed up and saw the majestic and fierce vortex which looked like a giant beast opening its mouth.

In comparison, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s body was small, like a tiny insect near a pond.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng still kept on laughing maniacally.

“Come, come!” He shouted, his body shook with fear and excitement, but also relief. Even if he failed, he would at least be freed from this nightmare.

Seemingly hearing his shout, the brewing vortex began to slowly rotate.

In the sky and on the ground, two giant vortexes rotated like a millstone.

Lightning flashed in the dark and cloudy vortex in the sky, with the thunder rumbling repeatedly. On the ground, the dusty vortex caused purple smoke to ascend with violent explosive sounds.

Like grinding stone, the dark and cloudy millstone sprinkled down a clear and bright aura. While from the dusty one below, rose a golden aura.

They were heaven qi and earth qi!

Heaven qi was clear and moved freely; earth qi was profound and dense.

And Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s body released a white human qi.

This human qi was extremely dense and like a cocoon, it formed a large sphere that tightly covered Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Heaven qi was raining down while earth qi was bubbling up, both intertwined in the air with human qi.

Heaven, earth and human, the three qi converged together and began fusing.

“First step is breaking the aperture, the second step is taking in the qi.” Hei Lou Lan mumbled.

“Breaking the aperture is a point of no return, the only possibility of survival is in success and failure means certain doom. And taking in qi tests the nature of the Gu Master and their ability to control it. This step is extremely crucial and is like walking between cliffs on a tightrope. If the balance is even a little off such that the human qi is slightly in excess, it will lead to self-detonation! If heaven qi is slightly more, the Gu Master will dissolve into the sky! If earth qi is slightly more dense, the Gu Master will turn into a fossil and suffocate to death! Difficult, truly hard, truly difficult!” Ye Lui Sang lamented while shaking his head, even as a spectator, his heart shook at this sight.

One can only move forward when they begin the advancement to a Gu Immortal, there is no going back. The danger is extremely high, thus many rank five peak stage Gu Masters, even if they knew the method to advance to a Gu Immortal, would not choose to take the risk unless as a last resort.

The expert observes the process while the layman simply enjoys the show.

Most people only watched the sight while bustling with noise and excitement.

But the few expert Gu Masters who knew the inside details were dripping with sweat, their hearts palpitating with fear from the sight.

Fang Yuan was the one with the most experience regarding this.

The process of charging to Gu Immortal realm and becoming a blood path Gu Immortal in his previous life had left behind an extremely deep impression on him.

“This second step is extremely difficult, it not only tests the Gu Master’s ability to control the balance, what it tests even more than that is the Gu Master’s nature.” He inwardly sighed.

Heaven qi and earth qi attacked the body, and the three qi converged; this was the process of a mortal blending with heaven and earth.

An ordinary person would never have such a moment where they are this intimately close to heaven and earth.

Heaven and earth were the cornerstones to nurture all living beings, the resonance between heaven qi and earth qi would fill the Gu Master’s mind with the wonders of the Great Dao.

Experiencing the Great Dao was an extremely rare opportunity and the Gu Master could easily lose themselves in it, not being able to extricate themselves. This could very easily lead to an imbalance between the three qi.

Even more crucially —

The higher the amount of heaven qi and earth qi taken in, the higher the chance of advancing to a Gu Immortal. At this crucial time, the Gu Master would often get greedy and take in too much heaven qi and earth qi, leading to an imbalance between the three qi and perishing.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not disappoint Fang Yuan, he persevered and stabilized the situation, controlling the three qi perfectly and progressing slowly.

“This Tai Bai Yun Sheng probably received an expert’s guidance!”

“Tai Bai Yun Sheng actually accomplished it, the second step could not stump him at all. This man really is not simple...”

“We need to keep on watching. Being able to do it now does not mean he can maintain the state until the end.”

Hei Lou Lan and Ye Lui Sang were feeling bewildered.

Rumble!

Right at this time, a change occurred.

As the aurora in the sky shook, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building experienced intense tremors. As its cornerstone, the sacred palace started shaking as well, dust rose and many beautiful courtyards collapsed.

“What is going on?”

“Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!”

Everyone shifted their gazes in shock.

“Hmph, it is here.” Fang Yuan sneered, but was well aware of this.

Inside the True Yang Building, the land spirit was furious!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng advancing to a Gu Immortal meant he was taking in heaven qi and earth qi. But this world was not the outside world of northern plains, but was Imperial Court blessed land, a small world of its own.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was using up this small world’s heaven qi and earth qi which was akin to weakening Imperial Court blessed land and was basically extracting the source of the land spirit’s strength.

Could the land spirit not be angry?

It had been imprisoned for countless years and now finally had the hope of obtaining freedom.

Although it was formed from an obsession and did not know how to tell lies, but it had intelligence and understood the strategy of concealing itself.

The land spirit had originally planned to restrain itself, fearing Giant Sun’s will. It would wait till Gruel Mud had corroded the shackles on it to a certain degree before it broke out in one violent move.

But now that Tai Bai Yun Sheng was charging into Gu Immortal realm, he was not only extracting the strength of the land spirit, but was sure to awaken Giant Sun’s will! The land spirit would then have all its hopes dashed.

Even more likely, it would be forcibly suppressed by Giant Sun’s will again.

With no choice, it could only make a quick decision and take advantage of Giant Sun’s will still being in hibernation at the moment, to resist and avoid giving Giant Sun’s will time to be prepared!

Thus, everyone looked on as the True Yang Building shook, bringing destruction to the fish in the ponds as many structures in the sacred palace collapsed.

In the True Yang Building, the land spirit Frost Jade Peacock let out a loud cry.

Its attack was extremely effective as the green paste covering its body immediately melted until below its neck and five to six black chains on its body also broke!

“Huh?”

A light mumble, as if just waking up from a dream, echoed out from the depths of the True Yang Building.

“Who has such guts to awaken me from my slumber?” From the infinite and eerie darkness, a giant will resembling the sun slowly woke up.

It was originally only a small glimmer, but soon brightened up to the extent that it could pierce through ten layers of the underworld, sweeping past every corner of the True Yang Building.

Fang Yuan’s will that had refined the guest halt stele simply could not defend itself and was immediately wiped out. The glass owner token he held also started becoming boiling hot!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 607: Ambushing Giant Sun’s will

A will blazing like the sun passed through the glass owner token and attacked Fang Yuan’s mind.

The will was like a golden flood as it rampaged directly into Fang Yuan’s brain!

Will was formed from large numbers of specific thoughts, if Giant Sun’s will was allowed to erode his mind, Fang Yuan could very likely turn into a demented amnesiac.

“This is bad! Quickly throw away that damned owner token!!” Mo Yao’s will appeared in his mind, and screamed.

She was the will of a Gu Immortal who had reached rank seven before death; her background knowledge of will was much deeper than Fang Yuan’s.

Her own gains and losses were linked to Fang Yuan, like two locusts tied with a thread.

The mind was a vital place, Fang Yuan would not want to start a battle in there.

“No need to worry.” he sneered. He was already prepared so he was not concerned, soon activating the special will Gu.

The special will Gu received the primeval essence and directly flashed into Fang Yuan’s mind, blocking the will of Giant Sun.

The golden-like will came to an abrupt stop, completely halted by special will Gu!

The special will Gu then burst out with a strong absorption force, devouring Giant Sun’s will unceasingly. The small will swallowed the big will, as if an ant swallowing an elephant, but Giant Sun’s will had no ability to resist.

“This is...” Mo Yao’s will was stumped for a while before coming to a realization, “So Giant Sun’s will was a special will!”

Wisdom path had developed for a long time since its start at the Remote Antiquity Era, continuing to this day.

Will was classified under wisdom path and naturally the contents regarding it were plentiful. Not only was will divided into many types, there were also all sorts of effects.

Back when Fang Yuan had just ventured into it, he had already bought many wisdom path Gu worms. For example, special will Gu, deliberate will Gu, play will Gu, keep will Gu and new will Gu which were specially used to condense special will, deliberate will, play will, keep will and new will.

These five types of will had their advantages and disadvantages, requiring the Gu Master themselves to choose the appropriate will according to the situation.

Among them, special will could be arranged in advance and automatically trigger under special conditions.

To explain this in a simple fashion, let’s take a rat trap as an example. When a rat comes in contact with the trap (fulfilling the special condition), the rat trap will then activate, trapping the rat (the prior setup is triggered, activating the trap).

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable considered dangerous situations occurring in the future, and for the benefit of his descendants, he chose to use the most suitable special will Gu to create a will of himself and placed it in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

As long as the danger reached a certain degree, the special condition would be fulfilled and the special will would trigger Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s prior setup. As for what the activation requirement of this prior setup was, outsiders did not know. Even Fang Yuan who had been reborn was not clear about it.

But from the video clips in his previous life, he knew Giant Sun’s will was a special will.

Knowing this made it easier for Fang Yuan.

Giant Sun’s will was an Immortal Venerable’s will, but it must also follow the laws and Great Dao of the world. The will was condensed by a Gu worm, and similarly could be subdued by the corresponding Gu worm.

Thus, Giant Sun’s special will was greatly restrained by special will Gu. Within Fang Yuan’s mind, Giant Sun’s will had yet to show its might before it was swallowed by Fang Yuan’s special will Gu.

After swallowing this will of Giant Sun, special will Gu’s belly immediately bulged like a fatty who had stuffed himself to the limit.

“Haha, what a great will.” Fang Yuan praised it but was inwardly shocked, ‘That was dangerous! Although it was restrained, it was after all an Immortal Venerable’s will. Even if it was only a strand, it was really not easy to deal with!”

The glass owner token was a part of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. Giant Sun’s will attacked Fang Yuan through this owner token. But if the owner token was compared to a passage, this passage was way too small and could only allow a strand of Giant Sun’s will to pass.

If the passage was just a bit bigger, the situation would be completely different.

This strand of will that special will Gu had eaten was simply negligible compared to the Giant Sun’s will in True Yang Building.

Falling prey to Fang Yuan’s small scheme, Giant Sun’s will could not contain its anger: “Swindler, you dared profane my, Giant Sun’s, honor! I will crush you to pieces!”

Rumble!

True Yang Building started shaking, giving off all kinds of lights which infused the sky, a peerless power seemed to manifest, shaking heaven and earth.

Even though Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already died and was unable to mobilize Eighty-Eight True Yang Building using just his will, but within Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had left behind a large amount of rank nine yellow apricot immortal essence!

Wild Gu could directly absorb the primeval essence in the air, but would lose this ability when they are refined and have to absorb the Gu Master’s primeval essence.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was an Immortal Gu House and was under the command of Giant Sun’s will, it could activate by absorbing the immortal essence left behind by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable; it was extremely simple and easy, as if it was natural!

“Run!” Looking at Eighty-Eight True Yang Building about to show its power, Mo Yao’s will anxiously warned Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was a despicable thief who had refined a part of True Yang Building, and now that Giant Sun’s will had awakened, it classified him as an enemy.

Fang Yuan did not have Giant Sun’s bloodline, this enmity was too big, Fang Yuan was directly marked down and an unprecedented killing intent was about to befall upon him!

“There’s no hurry.” Calamity was coming right for him, but Fang Yuan appeared indifferent and relaxed.

He tightly held the glass owner token.

This particular token was not simple!

It was a product created by expending an Immortal Gu using an owner token as the base. It was a crucial key for which central continent’s Gu Immortals and several large forces had prepared with meticulous care over thousands of years.

“Still causing trouble after death, hmph, what era are we living in now!” Fang Yuan snorted and with no fear sent a thought through the glass owner token, launching an ambush.

True Yang Building shook intensely, the aurora that filled the sky instantly collapsed by over half. The phantom image that appeared when condensing the floors was like a candle in front of a great wind, as it collapsed and dissipated.

Everything came to an abrupt stop.

In True Yang Building, Giant Sun’s will let out a frightening and furious howl as it was besieged and attacked by countless special will Gu.

These special will Gu were the preparation of central continent’s Gu Immortals which had been accumulated for thousands of years, a trump card specially arranged to deal with Giant Sun’s will.

Giant Sun’s will’s weakness was thoroughly targeted, like a sheep surrounded by a pack of wolves.

It had immediately wanted to activate Gu worms to massacre these special will Gu.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was an Immortal Gu House, a solidified killer move formed from many Immortal Gu and mortal Gu. Naturally, it had methods to clean up the enemies.

But central continent’s Gu Immortals had researched deeply and already calculated this.

Coordinating with special will Gu’s attack were other shocking methods, actually sealing all of the yellow apricot immortal essence Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left behind.

True Yang Building was not able to move without the immortal essence and immediately stopped all actions. Even though Giant Sun’s will was seething with rage, it did not have any method to instantly resolve this, thus landing in a predicament.

True Yang Building sank into deathly stillness as Fang Yuan put his mind at rest.

In his previous life, central continent’s Gu Immortals relied on this method to slay Giant Sun’s will and destroy Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

“A pity I am still a mortal and not a Gu Immortal, there is no way for me to reap profits from this.” Fang Yuan felt a slight regret.

This was Giant Sun’s will, even at its weakest moment, it was not something he could meddle with.

In truth, even if he advanced into a Gu Immortal, with just one Gu Immortal’s battle strength, the result would not be good. When the central continent Gu Immortals attacked Imperial Court blessed land, they had altogether eleven Gu Immortals, each of them an elite expert, but even then only three were able to return in triumph.

However, the sacrifices were worth it as they received rich battle spoils.

True Yang Building was a spiritual symbol of northern plains and when it was suddenly destroyed, the whole of northern plains suffered heavy impact, their morale fell to the abyss and they were forced into retreat continually in battles. If not for the Gu Immortal Ma Hong Yun who repeatedly playing a vital role as a pillar during the most crucial times, northern plains would have already been annexed by central continent.

As for the current Fang Yuan, he was safe for at least a period of time.

“What happened to True Yang Building just now?”

“Could it be the influence of Tai Bai Yun Sheng advancing to a Gu Immortal was too big and even Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was affected?”

“Imperial Court blessed land prohibits the entry of Gu Immortals, advancing to a Gu Immortal here like Tai Bai Yun Sheng is an extremely rare event. Does this violate the arrangements made by old ancestor Giant Sun back then?”

True Yang Building’s abnormal changes caused this crowd of people who did not know the truth to be bewildered and start making guesses.

True Yang Building fell into a deathly stillness and did not show any movement for the moment. Soon, everyone’s gazes were attracted towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng again.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was floating in between the sky and the ground, continually taking in heaven qi and earth qi, combining them with his own human qi.

The balanced three qi were pouring into the space where his aperture had once been.

An extremely mysterious transformation was happening to his body.

Whether it was his physical body or soul, they were both being tempered by heaven and earth qi. The essence of his life itself was elevating to a higher level.

There were three steps in advancing to a Gu Immortal; the first was breaking the aperture, the second was taking in the qi.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had an intact Gu Immortal inheritance and thus had a clear understanding of the key concerns in the process. So far, he was able to stabilize with no major hindrances.

But how could advancing to a Gu Immortal only have these obstacles?

Compared to the majestic heaven qi and the vast earth qi, human qi originated from only Tai Bai Yun Sheng himself.

Thus, there were endless amounts of heaven qi and earth qi, but human qi was limited in quantity.

The three qi needed to be in balance, there was no way to take in the surplus heaven qi and earth qi, so they were excluded and left to the side.

As time passed, these heaven and earth qi accumulated in the sky and on the ground, gathering and condensing, the sheer quantity causing a qualitative change.

“Tai Bai Yun Sheng had too deep of an accumulation, he was able to draw in so much heaven and earth qi. Now the extra heaven and earth qi are condensing into calamity and tribulation!” Ye Lui Sang’s eyes flashed with burning light.

The deeper the accumulation of the Gu Master, the greater the difficulty in advancing to a Gu Immortal. But if they succeeded, their potential future accomplishment would be that much higher.

The risk and profits in this were directly proportional.

Hei Lou Lan watched on tightly without saying a word, putting all his effort in observing and gaining reference.

Heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities, how did they form?

The scene in front of them was displaying the whole process before everyone’s eyes.

Golden earth qi continued to become denser and the turbid qi condensed into shape, gradually forming a one-horned great tiger. And the green heaven qi condensed into countless giant green willow leaves. Every willow leaf was the size of a boat.

The one-horned great tiger was as large as a hill; it raised its head while crouching down, taking a jumping posture.

The green willow leaves swayed as they spread in the sky, ready to strike.

“This is the earthly calamity lofty tiger and the heavenly tribulation willow wind!” Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed with a sharp light.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng stopped his crazed laughter, a grave expression filling his face.

The crowd who were so far from all this could feel the endless power of the earthly calamity and the heavenly tribulation, then what about Tai Bai Yun Sheng who was at the center of this, the target of the earthly calamity and the heavenly tribulation?

The spectating crowd was silent, the atmosphere turning heavy.

Imperial Court land spirit, however, laughed loudly: “The opportunity to break free from my captivity has appeared!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 608: Giant Sun’s retaliation

Inside True Yang Building.

The land spirit was using all of its strength to attack the seal on it.

Bang bang bang!

Three soft explosive sounds could be heard consecutively, as three black chains binding it were broken.

The green paste on it had thoroughly melted from its neck and even to the tips of its two wings, revealing the bright and lively feathers.

“Little sparrow, you dare!” Giant Sun’s will was bursting with fury.

“Giant Sun, despite being dead, you actually still imprisoned me for hundreds of thousands of years. Today, I will definitely break out of your damn cage!” Frost Jade Peacock let out a shrill scream, similarly furious.

Trapped for so many years, unable to even budge, the suffocation and indignance from being in captivity turned into the strength needed to break its seal.

Giant Sun’s will gave a deep shout, the sun like will suddenly flared up, rushing in all directions like a majestic golden flood.

Ten thousand special will Gu were already surrounding him in layers after layers. They were like a dam blocking the flood, which was Giant Sun’s will.

Giant Sun’s special will was completely restrained by the special will Gu. The whole dam held tight without any cracks, but the situation only lasted for a few breaths of time; the special will Gu had already been swallowing Giant Sun’s special will to the limit and started to burst one by one.

Several breaths later, the ‘dam’ formed by the special will Gu trembled, broke down and shattered apart!

Giant Sun’s special will might have been subdued but the size of it was extremely large, having originated from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. Even after the wear and tear of over hundreds of thousands of years, this was still not something ten thousand special will Gu could suppress.

Restraint was relative.

Water could extinguish fire, but if the fire was fierce enough, it could directly evaporate the water pouring on it.

Giant Sun’s will that was like a sun was extremely grand and large, although there was a lot of consumption when he attacked special will Gu, it was still able to destroy the ten thousand special will Gu in the end.

Without the besiegement of special will Gu, Giant Sun’s will was like a tied up prisoner who had broken out of the shackles, and immediately tried to control True Yang Building.

But the next moment, a full fifty thousand special will Gu rushed out and gathered again, forming a new encirclement!

Central continent’s Gu Immortals had researched very deeply and would never underestimate Giant Sun’s will, thus they had made sufficient preparations. Special will Gu was not an Immortal Gu, its quantity could be piled up.

Giant Sun’s will who had just obtained freedom was again sealed off, letting out a furious roar.

He started attacking again, his momentum as vast as a rapidly flowing river, breaking apart the encirclement of special will Gu.

But soon, the third wave of special will Gu surrounded it. The quantity was even more this time, reaching over a hundred thousand!

Central continent’s Gu Immortals had spent thousands of years for this; several great super forces had joined hands making large purchases, refining Gu non-stop, and spending an astronomical amount of Gu refinement resources.

They had paid such an astonishing price and now they were all being used by Fang Yuan, displaying extraordinary effects.

Being trapped once again, Giant Sun’s will did not shout or roar.

Giant Sun’s will was the will of an Immortal Venerable and knew how to think.

When he realized he had fallen into a scheme and the enemy side had made sufficient preparations, he became calm again.

He began to think and soon discovered a flaw in the encirclement!

Although Giant Sun’s will was surrounded tightly in all directions by special will Gu with no area neglected, this did not signify there was no flaw in this encirclement.

These special will Gu were refined by Gu Immortals and refined Gu worms were unable to directly absorb the primeval essence from their surroundings, and there was no supply of primeval essence for them in here.

Then, where did the primeval essence used to activate these special will Gu come from?

There were so many special will Gu, and there could even be more, their primeval essence requirement would be gigantic. Giant Sun’s will slightly thought over it and realized — what these special will Gu absorbed was not primeval essence but immortal essence!

A bead of the lowest grade rank six green grape immortal essence could convert to what was practically an almost unlimited amount of primeval essence!

Immortal essence was the source of fuel for these special will Gu.

And these immortal essence were concealed very well; clearly, there were other supporting Gu worms coordinating with special will Gu to form an enormous and hidden Gu formation.

“So long as I break their connection with the immortal essence, these special will Gu would not be of much threat.” Giant Sun’s will soon thought of this method.

However, to break the connection between the special will Gu and the immortal essence, he had to fully grasp this Gu formation first.

Just like how central continent Gu Immortals sealed all the yellow apricot immortal essence left behind by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to suppress Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Giant Sun’s will also had a similar idea.

On the spot, Giant Sun’s will thought rapidly and soon found over ten clues.

Following these clues and making deductions, the vague structure of the Gu formation began to gradually become clearer.

The land spirit naturally would not sit and wait for its death.

When it had sensed Giant Sun’s will being suppressed, it mustered all its strength to break the seals on it.

Gruel Mud had terrifying effectiveness against these seals; the green paste on its body was full of cracks and the edges were rapidly melting down. The black shackles on its wings once again consecutively collapsed and four broke apart.

The land spirit, Frost Jade Peacock, gave a shrill cry, its whole body shook intensely, shaking away most of the green paste on its two wings, shortly afterwards it impatiently unfolded them.

Cold aura permeated out from all over its spotlessly white body as it raised its head high, appearing noble and beautiful. But it had yet to completely unfold its large wings when they were tightly pulled in by the black chains.

Its movement came to a sudden stop, the intense pain making it even more furious.

Although there were only three chains left, they still tightly shackled its freedom.

“Break them!” Frost Jade Peacock suddenly turned around its elegant neck, its sharp brows flickering with terrifying cold light.

“Damn it!” Giant Sun’s will who had been thinking intensely, could not help but stop his thoughts as he sensed this situation.

If the land spirit broke his control, then Eighty-Eight True Yang Building could be thrown out from Imperial Court blessed land at any time.

Without Imperial Court blessed land’s protection, countless Gu Immortals would start rushing over to loot True Yang Building.

At that time, it would be the case of an army of ants devouring an elephant; even more yellow apricot immortal essence would not be able to stop the consumption from the dauntless advance of countless Gu Immortals.

But Giant Sun’s will was powerless to stop the land spirit at this moment.

He had been making several probing attacks while thinking at the same time, and although there were some results and he was able to recover some methods, they were still very limited and were not enough to suppress the situation.

......

At this moment, outside the True Yang Building....

Roar!

Lofty tiger roared and jumped.

The world trembled as the hill sized lofty tiger jumped into the air. Its enormous and malevolent tiger claws slammed towards the insignificant insect-like Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng gave a light shout as he dodged quickly!

The tiger claws could not strike him, but the huge wind force from it was still able to make Tai Bai Yun Sheng feel uncomfortable.

At the same time, the willow winds in the sky fluttered down.

These willow winds were as large as a canoe, and their descent was graceful, resembling falling leaves. But the movement that felt slow was actually fast, and the destructive power contained within them was terrifying.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was bathed with blood, paying close attention to the movements of the willow winds. Previously, he had carelessly come into contact with three willow winds, but just that had already destroyed all the defensive Gu on him.

Right now, when he saw the willow winds falling down, he quickly evaded them.

From the earth, the malevolent tiger pounced up; while from the sky, the willow winds fluttered down one after another. Tai Bai Yun Sheng was already finding it difficult to continue after a while, he was in a sorry state and was facing the danger of losing his life.

“Sigh, it bodes ill for Tai Bai Yun Sheng!”

“His accumulation is very robust, but he has not made sufficient preparations to advance to Gu Immortal.”

“Lord Tai Bai Yun Sheng, you can do it!”

Even Fang Yuan could not help but feel nervous at this scene: “Is Tai Bai Yun Sheng going to fail in advancing to a Gu Immortal in this life?”

He suddenly had a thought and disregarding the backlash, forcibly activated luck inspection Gu. But the luck on Tai Bai Yun Sheng was still burning and raging like boiling water, and was still blooming.

But the next moment, a quarter of this flaming luck had suddenly dissipated!

“What’s going on?” It was the first time Fang Yuan was seeing such a change in luck.

And right at this time, a light pillar suddenly erupted from True Yang Building.

The light pillar that was as thick as an ancient tree, charged straight to the sky.

The willow winds were pierced through by this light pillar, immediately crumbling apart and turning back into clear heaven qi, pure and warm.

The light pillar swept through repeatedly, shattering most of the willow winds in the sky, before shooting towards the lofty tiger. The lofty tiger dodged while howling in grief, but the light pillar followed it like a shadow, impossible to avoid!

The earthly calamity lofty tiger continued to decrease in size the more the light pillar touched it, till it vanished into thin air!

“What’s going on?” Everyone was shocked.

“Eighty-Eight True Yang Building has made a move! Old ancestor protected lord Tai Bai Yun Sheng!!” Many people cheered.

But there were also some who scoffed: “Nonsense, Tai Bai Yun Sheng does not have Giant Sun’s bloodline, why would old ancestor protect him?”

“This! Could it be the workings of the rumored divert disaster Gu?” Ye Lui Sang was endlessly shocked.

Hei Lou Lan was even more excited: “The luck path’s divert disaster Gu can divert heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities, greatly reducing their might, even directly obliterating them! If I can obtain this Immortal Gu...”

Divert disaster Gu was one of the cornerstones of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. It was also one of the limited methods Giant Sun’s will could mobilize currently.

Giant Sun’s will’s actions did not stop at this.

He had forcibly extracted a trace of yellow apricot immortal essence by rampaging multiple times. After activating divert disaster Gu, Giant Sun’s will mobilized the human qi Immortal Gu in true inheritance secluded domain.

Right under Fang Yuan’s sight, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s burning luck aura suddenly decreased by another quarter.

Human qi Immortal Gu was activated which similarly let out a ray of of white light.

This white light, however, directly shone on Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Human qi Immortal Gu could increase the Gu Master’s human qi, raising their future potential after advancing to a Gu Immortal. When Tai Bai Yun Sheng obtained its help, the human qi on him instantly inflated by ten times!

With the increase in human qi, he naturally needed even more heaven qi and earth qi.

However, heaven qi and earth qi were drawn out of Imperial Court blessed land.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng laughed heartily, True Yang Building’s help had been out of his expectations, but he still quickly accepted it and absorbed large amounts of heaven qi and earth qi, merging the three elements into one; not only averting danger, his potential had also greatly increased, and his future prospects had turned much better!

The land spirit Frost Jade Peacock gave a shrill, furious cry.

Heaven qi and earth qi were extracted in large amounts, causing an intense feeling of weakness to fill its body.

“Little sparrow, you are still too green.” Giant Sun’s will snorted, he had used all the immortal essence he was able to extract on the most crucial area, acquiring the greatest results, greatly relieving the dangerous situation.

Giant Sun’s will was after all a will that originated from an Immortal

Venerable, its wisdom was extremely high.

The situation had turned around quickly now and it was advantageous to Giant Sun’s will.

The weakening of the land spirit gave Giant Sun’s will plenty of time to grasp the Gu formation of the special will Gu surrounding him. Once Giant Sun’s will breaks apart this encirclement, he would regain control of the situation, and it would be extremely easy for him to undo the seal on the immortal essence then.

As long as the seal on the immortal essence was broken, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would be able to display the supreme might of a rank eight Gu House in all its glory!

“This is bad, I still underestimated an Immortal Venerable’s will. I have less than half the expected time left.” Fang Yuan was able to understand the situation in True Yang Building through the glass owner token.

His heart sank: “Now, I can only put my hopes in Tai Bai Yun Sheng. Hopefully, he can quickly become a Gu Immortal and refine landscape as before Gu...”

ChibiGeneral ChibiGeneral Hopefully he dies immediately after 🙂

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 609: Better to die than not be free

At the center of the scene, the three qi were fusing.

With the help of Giant Sun’s will, the thick qi flows had almost formed a cocoon around Tai Bai Yun Sheng!

All his injuries were long gone without any trace, his body, soul and consciousness were all being refined to a higher level.

He looked back on his life, the scenes of the past quickly flashing through his mind.

The mysteries of the Great Dao circulated in his mind, inspirations came to him without pause, he was obtaining perfect solutions for the difficult problems in cultivation that had restrained him in the past.

At this moment, heaven and earth were like selfless teachers, imparting all their knowledge to Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

However, the mysteries of heaven and earth were too vast and profound, the more Tai Bai Yun Sheng knew, the more he realized his minuteness.

He had no choice but to focus on his time path, refining and developing his knowledge.

His understanding towards time path reached the peak of his lifetime!

Inspiration from nature!

Man is the spirit of all livings beings, Gu is the essence of heaven and earth. Gu Masters used Gu, refined Gu and raised Gu; this was actually an unending process of learning, exploring and studying the world.

In the process of advancing to a Gu Immortal, a Gu Master need not use Gu worms to indirectly understand the world, instead it was a direct interaction with heaven and earth.

This was probably the only chance in one’s whole life before becoming a Gu Immortal to have such a precious opportunity.

Rank five peak stage was the finishing line of mortal Gu Masters. But rank six Gu Immortals were beyond mortal, becoming a Gu Immortal was only a new starting point.

At this crucial starting point, every Gu Immortal’s future achievements would be different depending on the potential they accumulated.

“Such a beautiful experience, but my human qi is not sufficient...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng wished to continue immersing himself in this feeling but could not do so, a regretful expression appearing on his face.

His human qi was already nearly exhausted, and this was after obtaining the help of human qi Immortal Gu, otherwise the time would have been even shorter.

The qi cocoon dispersed and Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s silhouette was revealed again.

The three qi had merged and shrunk down to a mass of tri-colored primordial qi, condensed into where Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s aperture had originally been.

This step signified the completion of the second step in advancing to a Gu Immortal, receiving qi.

Next was the final step of becoming a Gu Immortal — releasing Gu!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was being extremely serious, as he took out river as before, mountain as before and man as before Gu.

These three Gu were his core Gu worms and he was exceedingly familiar with them. Moreover, man as before Gu was even his vital Gu.

“Finally, the most crucial moment...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng first sent his vital Gu to the mass of tri-colored primordial qi in his body.

BOOM!

All of a sudden, a mystical sound like that of thunder storm echoed in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s ears, causing his whole body to intensely shake.

The tri-colored mass of qi was originally merged together and constantly flowing in circulation. But after Man As Before intruded in, it was like it had ignited an explosive; the primordial qi mass immediately exploded loudly.

There can be no creation without destruction, in death there is new life!

This moment was when a mortal could ascend to a Gu Immortal!

The explosive sound was truly mystical, exploding out the marvels of life, exploding out a whole new world!

The mortal aperture was broken, an immortal aperture was being formed!

The immortal aperture was like a small world; the sky was azure like crystals and the ground was a desolate wilderness filled with yellow stones.

It was like a newborn baby and intensely demanded nourishment, erupting at the outside world with an extremely strong force of suction and absorption.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh....

Heaven qi and earth qi madly poured into Tai Bai Yun Sheng, flowing non-stop into the immortal aperture.

In the immortal aperture, the ground quickly expanded; two thirds of a thousand square kilometres, four thirds of a thousand, two thousand square kilometres...

And time flow also rose from the one to one ratio to one to ten, one to twenty....

The immortal aperture was gradually starting to become unstable from the mad flow of qi.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng then sent in River As Before and Mountain As Before, stabilizing the situation.

The immortal aperture was expanding continually, and a tributary of the river of time flowed in the darkness, causing the time flow to increase steadily.

Time passed, Tai Bai Yun Sheng kept on placing Gu worms to maintain the stability of the immortal aperture.

Three and one third thousand square kilometres, four thousand, four and two thirds of a thousand!

One to thirty, one to thirty-one, one to thirty-two, one to thirty three!

The immortal aperture had reached its extreme at this point, as if it had drunk and eaten to its fill, abruptly stopping its growth.

But the clear heaven qi was still pouring in from the sky, and golden earth qi was still surging up from the ground.

At this moment, the immortal aperture absorbed heaven qi and earth qi much slower than before. At first, it was drinking in big gulps, while now it was taking slow sips.

Heaven and earth qi converged into the immortal aperture, green and golden mists and clouds filled the whole immortal aperture.

The dense qi flow was brewing beads of immortal essence within.

They were precisely the green grape immortal essence of a rank six Gu Immortal, thirty six of them in total.

The tribulation clouds in the sky and the calamity dust in the ground, began to gradually dissipate.

The mist like heaven qi and earth qi in the immortal aperture, however, had yet to dissipate.

They condensed around Man As Before, River As Before, Mountain As Before and other Gu worms, causing a dense qi cocoon to form over these Gu worms.

The two qi mixed; heaven and earth interacted.

Within the qi cocoons, each Gu worm was beginning to ferment mysterious changes.

“It is time.” A Gu recipe flashed in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s mind.

This Gu recipe was only a theoretical Gu recipe of an Immortal Gu, it was from the old beggar’s Gu Immortal inheritance.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng could not guarantee whether this theoretical Gu recipe could succeed.

But he no longer had another option.

His lifespan was near its end, about to exhaust completely. After advancing to a Gu Immortal, his senses reached a whole new level, especially the sense regarding time had heightened the most, it was precise to within a single breath.

This novel sensation did not put him in a cheerful mood for long before he fell into silence, feeling oppressed and even afraid.

Because he could sense that the time he had was truly not much, just like a small puddle under strong sunshine, with his lifespan being the thin layer of water left in the puddle.

He had planned to get lifespan Gu but it failed because of Fang Yuan’s secret manipulations. The bloody road he had experienced in reaching the great hall even became a knot in his heart.

Now, his only hope was in man as before Gu.

According to what the theoretical Gu recipe showed, when man as before Gu was advanced to rank six, it could be used on oneself.

“Refine!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng gave a soft shout, countless thoughts emerging in his mind.

These thoughts formed the theoretical Gu recipe which directly poured into the immortal aperture and then into the thick cocoon covering the man as before Gu.

These heaven and earth qi were the source of all living beings. As the two interacted, they evolved into all things in heaven and earth.

These two qi were the origin of all living beings and could replace any Gu refinement materials.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s thoughts were like keys that directed the heaven and earth qi in the proper direction.

The thoughts entered the cocoon and immediately brought upon a violent change.

Although it could not be compared to the explosion of the three qi in the first step of releasing Gu, its effect was not small either.

The qi cocoon erupted with devouring force, swallowing the remaining heaven and earth qi in the immortal aperture without pause.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh....

The qi flow surged non-stop, forming a screaming gale.

Man as before Gu turned into the eye of the storm, large amounts of heaven and earth qi poured into it, turning into Gu refinement resources.

“This it it, this is it....” Tai Bai Yun Sheng mumbled softly in the air, his tone carried gratification and also expectation.

After so much effort and risk, he was now finally seeing the hope of success.

Although the process had been filled with inconceivable events.

If True Yang Building had not made a move, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was sure to fall in the second step.

As he thought of this, he glanced at the True Yang Building.

He was not of Giant Sun’s bloodline, but True Yang Building had actually helped him; this was a fact.

“Did Giant Sun’s will wake up?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng inwardly guessed. He had a Gu Immortal inheritance, his experience and knowledge were not lacking compared to people like Hei Lou Lan and Ye Lui Sang.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable prohibits the entry of Gu Immortals, I have already violated this taboo by advancing into a Gu Immortal here. So, why would Giant Sun’s will still help me?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was puzzled.

Even with his plentiful experience, he could not anticipate the things occurring in the True Yang Building.

Within the True Yang Building, Frost Jade Peacock gave shrill cries, the green paste on its body kept on shaking and bouncing, the iron chains also shook, producing clanking sounds when they collided with each other.

The powers sealing it were melting down from the corrosion of Gruel Mud.

But Frost Jade Peacock showed no signs of joy, instead it was filled with fear and anxiety.

Giant sun’s will, however, laughed brightly: “Little sparrow, your struggle is of no use.”

Through Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Giant Sun’s will was able to exploit some methods to ingeniously strike the Imperial Court land spirit, weakening its strength at its foundation.

Despite the powers binding Frost Jade Peacock weakening constantly, Giant Sun’s will had already bought some time.

He had already seen through most of the special will Gu formation that had besieged him.

How could an Immortal Venerable’s arrangement be so simple?

As long as Giant Sun’s will was completely free, he naturally had large numbers of methods to choose from like metal path, water path, fire path and so on, to seal the land spirit again.

“I have slept for too long, but it doesn’t matter. I will first put this disobedient land spirit in its place, then I shall completely eliminate the minute loopholes in True Yang Building; at that time, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building will once again be like an iron bucket, standing tall for hundreds of thousands of years longer!” Giant Sun’s will’s tone was deep and profound.

“I won’t let you have your way even if I die!!!” After hearing ‘standing tall for hundreds of thousands of years’, all the hairs on Frost Jade Peacock stood on their ends.

A land spirit was formed from an obsession and the matter of recognizing the master was not a flexible one. Frost Jade Peacock was distinct in this even from other land spirits; it was incomparably proud and would not yield even a little.

But Frost Jade Peacock did not struggle anymore, instead it strangely lay down dispiritedly. However, its gaze was still sharp as a knife, filled with hatred completely.

Giant Sun’s will was stupefied before suddenly realizing something as he shouted in rage: “Little sparrow, you dare to do this!”

Outside the True Yang Building.

“The tribulation clouds and calamity dust are gradually dispersing, has Lord Tai Bai Yun Sheng succeeded in advancing to a Gu Immortal?” Those who did not know the truth felt excited at this sight.

“I had never expected Tai Bai Yun Sheng to actually reach the third step! Looking at his appearance, the immortal aperture has already formed. I wonder what grade of blessed land he has formed?” Ye Lui Sang mumbled.

In advancing to a Gu Immortal, after passing the second step, the Gu Master could form an immortal aperture.

Immortal apertures of rank six and rank seven Gu Immortals were blessed lands; rank eight and rank nine Gu Immortal apertures were grotto-heavens!

“Blessed lands are divided into three grades, corresponding to large, medium, and small in size; the more heaven, earth and human qi are fused, the higher the grade of the blessed land. Small blessed lands have an area of up to two thousand square kilometres, they can draw in a small tributary of the river of time, and form over ten beads of immortal essence; there are few resources. Medium grade blessed lands can range from two and two thirds to four thousand square kilometres, they can draw in a slightly bigger tributary of the river of time, and form over twenty beads of immortal essence; they have plentiful resources. High grade blessed lands can range from four and two thirds to six thousand square kilometres, and draw in a large tributary of the river of time, the quantity of immortal essence formed surpasses thirty, and there will be plenty of heaven and earth qi remaining which can mutually interact and refine a mortal Gu into an Immortal Gu!”

Hei Lou Lan’s gaze was fixed directly ahead, the relevant information flashing in his mind.

His brows slightly furrowed, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was able to pass the second step with True Yang Building’s help, reaching the third step. And now, it looked like there was a great chance for him to succeed in becoming a Gu Immortal.

‘If Tai Bai Yun Sheng becomes a Gu Immortal, then what stance should I take, how should I treat him?’ Hei Lou Lan pondered over this issue.

‘If nothing unexpected happens, Tai Bai Yun Sheng will no doubt obtain a high grade blessed land. However, refining an Immortal Gu carries risk, forming calamities and tribulations in the immortal aperture.’ Fang Yuan’s gaze continuously flickered.

For a mortal to advance to a Gu Immortal, there naturally were special risks.

Gu Masters were like this, it applied to Gu worms too.

Humans took in heaven and earth qi, fusing with human qi, the fusion of the three qi would lead to heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities. Gu worms took in heaven and earth qi, and also would induce calamities and tribulations.

It was hard for outsiders to interfere in the calamities and tribulations within one’s own blessed land.

True Yang Building could influence Tai Bai Yun Sheng, but it could not influence the blessed land, the immortal aperture in his body.

In another words, Tai Bai Yun Sheng could only rely on himself.

“Huh?” Fang Yuan suddenly looked at the sky.

Regarding the sky of Imperial Court blessed land, in daytime, golden light glittered, while at night, warm silver radiance shone down.

But right now, pitch-black scars appeared in the golden sky from which specks of starlight shone down.

This was the night sky of the outside world of northern plains.

The whole of Imperial Court blessed land began to tremble.

Everyone started crying out in surprise and shock.

The tribulation clouds and calamity dust which had almost dissipated condensed again. Large amounts of heaven and earth qi poured into Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s body non-stop, directly entering his immortal aperture like moths to a fire.

“What’s going on?!” Hei Lou Lan was dumbstruck.

“What the hell happened!” Ye Lui Sang held his head, shouting involuntarily.

“Too much heaven and earth qi were absorbed from Imperial Court blessed land, its foundation was injured, thus it is revealing the outside world, in linking up with northern plains!” Fang Yuan’s mind shook, his gaze moved from Tai Bai Yun Sheng to Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

He had guessed the truth.

Frost Jade Peacock was actually so proud, it would rather die than be suppressed by Giant Sun’s will any longer.

It lived up to its words!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 610: The key to victory and loss

When a Gu Master advances to an immortal, their aperture will transform into an immortal aperture.

The immortal aperture is a qualitative evolution of the aperture, it is like the creation of a whole new small world.

Rank six and seven Gu Immortal apertures were known as ‘blessed lands’. Rank eight and nine Gu Immortal apertures were called ‘grotto-heavens’.

If a Gu Immortal’s lingering obsession was left behind when they died, it would combine with the heavenly power inside the immortal aperture and become the land spirit.

Every immortal aperture is unique, it is a part of the Gu Immortal’s body. In some ways, even if a Gu Immortal dies, the land spirit and immortal aperture that they leave behind could still be considered a strange form of life extension for them.

Precisely because the land spirit is formed from obsession, it is rigid and not flexible.

In history, there were many such cases. For example, if a Gu Immortal forcefully takes down a blessed land, but did not meet the requirements to become the owner, the land spirit would reject them, in the end, the land spirit may directly self-detonate, causing the Gu Immortal’s efforts to be for nothing.

Giant Sun’s will forcefully sealed Imperial Court blessed land’s Frost Jade Peacock, this had accumulated hundreds of thousands of years of anger in the latter. Now that he wanted to continue sealing it, Frost Jade Peacock’s resolute heart was finally ignited.

“What is going on?”

“Lord Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal ascension caused a loophole to form in the blessed land?”

“Imperial Court blessed land is currently being exposed to the outside world, this is unbelievable, this has never happened in the past!!”

“This is bad, I have a very bad feeling. Do you think the blessed land is going to be destroyed?”

In the blessed land, everyone was shouting in fear, they were panicking and their doubts were spreading.

In the sky, countless cracks were formed. The sky of the blessed land, which was silver and gold, had lots of cracks now, from these cracks, one could see the starry sky of northern plains.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was still calm as ever.

“Imperial Court blessed land would not self-destruct so easily.” He muttered in his heart, regarding this he was extremely confident.

In history, there were many cases of the land spirit suiciding, destroying the blessed land along with them, but that was not going to happen here.

This was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangement, how could it be broken so easily? This was the hard work of a rank nine Gu Immortal, this set-up covered the entire region of northern plains!

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was the biggest obstacle.

“If this was in the past, how could the land spirit cause such trouble? Except that now, Giant Sun’s will had just awakened, he was caught off guard and had to waste time to resolve this mess. Meanwhile, the seal that imprisoned the land spirit had weakened drastically because of my gruel mud Immortal Gu, this allowed the land spirit to struggle so violently.”

In his analysis, Fang Yuan could not help but internally praise Giant Sun’s resolution and methods.

He had used the chess piece Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and with his limited methods, he managed to fight for precious time and allow the scales of victory to tilt towards himself.

“However, even though the land spirit cannot self-destruct, it could still do the most basic thing like absorbing its own heaven and earth qi.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan directed his gaze towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Above Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s head, the scattered tribulation cloud formed once again, and the calamity dust on the ground also started spreading.

Large amounts of heaven qi and earth qi gushed out, they were about to form a new heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity!

“This, what is going on? Why are there still heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities?! Wasn’t it over already?” Seeing this, Ye Lui Sang’s eyes were wide open in shock.

“This is different from what is in the records. There is something strange going on with Tai Bai Yun Sheng, why are there two heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities in a row?” Hei Lou Lan was very confused as well.

Even they had no idea, not to mention the others.

Looking at the imposing heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity forming once again, many people were lost for words as they felt very worried regarding Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s situation.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression was ashen.

“Why is there still a heavenly tribulation forming?! My inheritance did not state that this would happen!” He was shocked and furious.

Because not just on the outside, at the same time, the immortal aperture inside his body was also forming another heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity!

When a mortal Gu becomes an Immortal Gu, it is like a Gu Master becoming an immortal, it is a dangerous process to make a qualitative change that defied heaven. When Gu worms were refined into Immortal Gu, they would need to involve heaven and earth qi, this way, the corresponding heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities would form.

Being faced with trouble both internally and externally, Tai Bai Yun Sheng could neither advance nor retreat, he could not attend to one problem while neglecting the other, his situation was very worrying!

Fang Yuan used the gruel mud Immortal Gu to awaken the land spirit.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal ascension became a crucial chess piece in the fight between the land spirit and Giant Sun’s will.

This immortal ascension had already gone out of his control.

Other than Fang Yuan, everyone else was kept in the dark, they were unaware of the truth.

Only Fang Yuan knew the land spirit’s intention!

In a race against time, the land spirit could not compete with Giant Sun’s will, thus it placed its attention on Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

The heaven qi and earth qi were extracted by sacrificing the land spirit’s own foundation. Its intention was to form the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity that would destroy Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

What benefits would the land spirit gain from killing him?

This would involve the devouring of the immortal aperture.

Mortal apertures were not easy to devour and combine, but after ascending to immortal, the immortal aperture was a small world. Between worlds, they could be devoured and assimilated, there were great benefits to Gu Immortals.

On Tian Ti mountain back then, Fang Yuan discarded a portion of Hu Immortal blessed land’s territory, which were quickly taken by the other Gu Immortals. Swallowing other immortal apertures and strengthening one’s own immortal aperture, there was much to gain from this.

If the land spirit destroyed Tai Bai Yun Sheng, after he dies, his immortal aperture would remain. It would then be absorbed and assimilated by Imperial Court blessed land.

After devouring the aperture, the blessed land’s foundation would rise, and the land spirit would become much stronger. This would be a great help for it to break through Giant Sun’s seal.

In the sky, dark clouds were rumbling as lightning and thunder resounded.

Countless purple lightning bolts formed into balls of lightning.

On the ground, the calamity dust settled down, exposing the bare earth.

A crack formed on the ground, it was hundreds of meters wide, exposing red hot flames from within, it resembled a desolate beast opening its bloodthirsty mouth.

The flames rose up, forming many traces of restraining smoke as they gushed up.

“Chaotic lightning balls, restraining smoke!” Fang Yuan frowned slightly.

The chaotic lightning balls not only had great power, they could even ruin the Gu Master’s mind and will, inducing a chaotic effect. Restraining smoke could seal away the environment, as long as the Gu Master was trapped within, they would lose their five senses, like falling into a maze or an abyss, they would not be able to get free.

Chaotic lightning balls were not fast, but together with the suppression from restraining smoke, they were perfect partners and could unleash the greatest effect!

Fang Yuan could not help but feel some worry.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s failure was not what Fang Yuan wanted to see.

Holding the glass owner token in his hand, Fang Yuan tightened his grasp as his gaze turned dark: “Still too weak, too weak! With my current strength, I am very heavily affected by circumstances...”

Howl, howl, howl!

The chaotic lightning balls flew through the air, emitting a strange and shrill noise. They sounded like a woman screaming and crying at the same time, it was very painful to the ears.

At the same time, the restraining smoke was rumbling, surging towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression turned pale.

The chaotic lightning balls changed their directions randomly, sometimes they traveled right, sometimes left, it was hard to dodge them. Furthermore, there were traces of restraining smoke around him, like he was in the middle of an ancient forest.

“If I come into contact with the restraining smoke, I’ll be finished! Oh no, the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity in my immortal aperture is also forming, moreover I have already lost my defensive Gu!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng gritted his teeth, his gaze was shining with resolution.

Risk it!

His body gave off a shining light, using several movement Gu, his body flew into the air.

The intense wind blew this old man’s hair towards the back, showing an unrestrained demeanour.

Shocked screams could be heard coming from the crowd.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng charged towards the tribulation cloud, above him, there were countless chaotic lightning balls, looking from afar, he was like a moth flying towards a fire.

“Is Tai Bai Yun Sheng seeking death?” Ye Lui Sang frowned deeply.

“Good!” Hei Lou Lan, however, gave high praise.

Fang Yuan’s eyes also shone.

Restraining smoke might seem harmless without any attack power and could only trap enemies, but it held much greater threat than the chaotic lightning balls.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng understood the situation and made the best decision.

Only to see that after he charged into the thunder cloud, countless lightning balls shot down like fish swimming in water.

Bam bam bam...

The lightning balls continued to explode, but it did not affect Tai Bai Yun Sheng at all.

He flew left and right, trying to find a survival chance in the barrage of attacks, his movement speed was fast at times and slow at others, he had great control over the situation!

“Amazing! What level of flying attainment is this!”

“To think that Lord Tai Bai Yun Sheng is actually a flying master!!”

“He hid himself too deeply, I only found out now...”

Everyone was overjoyed to find out that Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a flying master!

“To think that Tai Bai Yun Sheng was skilled at using cloud path Gu worms.” Ye Lui Sang praised, he was not very surprised at the display of flying.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a healing Gu Master, these years when he roamed northern plains, he had encountered many dangers. He had to have a secret ability in order to survive till now.

In truth, most healing Gu Masters were either skilled in defense or movement.

When these Gu Masters were nurtured, they were specially trained in this manner.

That was because in the battlefield, healing Gu Masters were usually the first to be targeted, many times they could not receive protection from their teammates. Thus, healing Gu Masters needed to have certain ways to protect themselves.

“As the number one healing Gu Master in northern plains, Tai Bai Yun Sheng is not skilled in defense, with his age, it is no wonder he has such flying attainment.” Hei Lou Lan thought about this and turned his head, looking at the sky far away.

There, Fang Yuan seated on the azure wolf king’s back, observing Tai Bai Yun Sheng closely.

Compared to Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Chang Shan Yin who was also a flying master was much younger.

“Little sparrow, you are really enjoying yourself.” In True Yang Building, Giant Sun’s will laughed instead of raging.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was shaking intensely, the aurora was wavering in the sky as a huge pillar of light shot out.

Immortal Gu — Divert Disaster!

The light of Divert Disaster shone around Tai Bai Yun Sheng, piercing through the lightning balls and restraining smoke.

“Old ancestor is really blessing Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he struck once again!” Amidst the shocked screams, there were jealous and envious people too.

“This is too weird, Tai Bai Yun Sheng is not part of Giant Sun’s bloodline, to think he could receive such blessings as well!” Someone was suspicious.

“As expected, he struck.” Fang Yuan sighed internally, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had already become a crucial factor in the contest between the land spirit and Giant Sun’s will, the land spirit wanted to harm him, while Giant Sun’s will wanted to protect him!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 611: Landscape As Before

ChibiGeneral

“Luck inspection Gu!”

Fang Yuan’s heart moved, quickly sending his primeval essence into the Gu.

The next moment, his vision changed.

Luck inspection Gu, a rank five luck path investigative Gu, it could allow him to see luck despite its formlessness.

Looking at Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s luck now, his previous fiery red luck that was originally burning with a glowing red glow had shrunken by a bit.

“Earlier, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s will was helping him, thus his luck was being expended. Now that he helped once more, Tai Bai Yun Sheng has only a third of his initial luck left.” Fang Yuan evaluated.

Looking at his own luck, it was still the black coffin luck, as rich and dense as ink, and even larger than before.

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, but quickly snickered to himself, looking at the people in the blessed land.

The people who were watching Tai Bai Yun Sheng ascend to immortal realm had changes to their luck as well.

The overwhelming majority of the Gu Masters had unwittingly developed a small layer of black coffin luck.

Except for Hei Lou Lan, he still had his unchanged profuse azure luck.

Looking around, Fang Yuan felt his eyes hurting, he quickly stopped using the luck inspection Gu.

When a Gu Master ascends, there would be endless heaven and earth qi, using Gu worms in such an environment would cause a backlash.

If he forcefully continued to use them, both he and his Gu worms would suffer injuries, or even face death.

As his vision returned to normal, Fang Yuan looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng again.

He was swimming in the thunderstorm, flying through the crevices of the clouds, showing off his master level flying attainment.

His body had no more defensive Gu, he was relying on his movement to evade the chaotic lightning balls, it was like walking on a tightrope, he was in great danger.

In order to avoid the earthly calamity of restraining smoke, he charged into the thunder clouds, this was a wise decision when weighing the two difficulties, but it was also a helpless choice.

“If not for the fact that I have green grape immortal essence, and can dilute it to form endless primeval essence, such an insane flying speed would have drained my aperture dry long ago.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was breathing roughly, his hair was in a mess and his body was feeling weak, the situation was getting more dangerous.

Swoosh!

Suddenly, a chaotic lightning ball changed directions and charged towards him.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng wanted to evade it, but it was too late, he could only stare indignantly with a furious gaze.

In the moment of crisis, a white light pillar shot over, directly hitting this chaotic lightning ball.

The lightning ball quickly melted from the ray of light, turning into pure heaven qi.

Divert disaster Gu!

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building's help came once again, saving Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

"So close, even though I became a Gu Immortal, I do not have any defenses on me, if I was hit by the chaotic lightning ball, I'd be heavily injured, the consequences are unthinkable!"

Tai Bai Yun Sheng swallowed his saliva, feeling some lingering fear.

After becoming a Gu Immortal, the foundation of his life had been elevated. If he was still a mortal, a chaotic lightning ball could easily kill him. Gu Immortals however, were tougher, even without any defensive Gu, they could endure over a dozen lightning balls without any problems.

But the thing was, these lightning balls had special effects.

After being hit, they would cause Tai Bai Yun Sheng's thoughts to be chaotic, once his mind is in chaos he would not be able to think properly.

At this crucial moment, as long as Tai Bai Yun Sheng stops in the air for a moment, he would be attacked by countless lightning balls at once.

If he was hit by these lightning balls consecutively, Tai Bai Yun Sheng would have no chance to gather his thoughts, he would just be drowned under the endless lightning balls.

"Quickly look, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building saved Tai Bai Yun Sheng once again."

"That's right, this has already happened at least ten times."

"With True Yang Building's help, it seems Tai Bai Yun Sheng's tribulation will succeed without fail!"

Outside, everyone saw this with amazed and envious expressions.

"Such intensive assistance, will it really work?" Hei Lou Lan's eyes were shining brilliantly, he saw the situation with a different perspective.

In such an environment, when heaven and earth qi were rampaging, usage of any Gu worm would create a huge backlash.

Divert disaster Gu was no exception.

In the history of Gu Masters, there were many instances of Gu Immortals helping out during the tribulation, and eventually the backlash destroying their Immortal Gu.

Except that most people were ignorant and did not know such secrets.

"Divert disaster Gu is one of the foundational pieces of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, it is used for Imperial Court blessed land to divert away disasters.

Without it, Imperial Court blessed land would face terrifying earthly calamities and heavenly tributations. Giant Sun’s will would not sacrifice such a precious Gu for Tai Bai Yun Sheng, that means the reinforcement of Giant Sun’s will is limited... What happens now is most crucial, it will depend on Tai Bai Yun Sheng, whether he can quickly survive the calamity and tribulation in the immortal aperture.” Fang Yuan was expressionless as he sat on the azure wolf king’s back, watching with growing tension.

After all, landscape as before Gu was one of his main goals in coming to northern plains.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s speed started to slow down.

He was facing troubles both in his aperture and outside of it, the land spirit was causing him harm, while the calamity and tribulation was forming in his own immortal aperture due to his mortal Gu’s ascension.

This internal threat especially, it was taking away much of his attention, thus his reactions toward the outside world were getting slower.

Suddenly, his body shook, completely stopping his movements.

Immediately after, countless chaotic lightning balls flew towards him.

Divert disaster light pillar was shining brilliantly, it burst out and surrounded Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

“Now is the most crucial time!” Fang Yuan, Hei Lou Lan, Ye Lui Sang and others could see clearly that this was it, their eyes were shining.

At this moment, in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture, bright light exploded, engulfing the entire small world.

The aura of the Immortal Gu was spewing out like a fountain.

In that bright light, an Immortal Gu was rising up slowly.

It looked like a ladybug, it was fist sized and had a jade body. On its round back, there were natural markings, half was of rivers and seas, while the other half was of valleys and mountains.

“So this Immortal Gu was created by combining River as Before and Mountain as Before. It seems the effect is also the product of River as Before and Mountain as Before, but elevated.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng analyzed.

This was refined during the resonance of heaven and earth, it was not refined by him personally, thus, he was still unclear towards the effect of Landscape as Before.

After looking at it for a few breaths’ time, Tai Bai Yun Sheng placed his attention on the most central area of the blessed land.

Immortal Gu Landscape as Before, it was not part of his goal, only an additional surprise.

Now at the center of the blessed land, man as before Gu had turned into a huge cocoon, but cracks were starting to develop on it. Dazzling rainbow light was leaking from the cracks.

Breaking the cocoon and becoming a butterfly!

As the thick cocoon vanished, a colorful butterfly fluttered into the sky.

Wherever it went, rainbow light rained down, trailing behind the butterfly’s path as a curvy rainbow was formed behind it.

“Success, Immortal Gu Man as Before! Ahahaha...” Seeing this, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was extremely happy, he laughed maniacally.

So many years of accumulation, so many years of anticipation and worry, so many times he had fallen into grave danger, but at this moment, he obtained a perfect result!

But his internal threat still remained.

In the immortal aperture, the azure tribulation cloud was rumbling, forming a huge green scaled snake, the snake had a silver horn on its head, and its body was hundreds of metres long, the snake tail had turned into qi, fusing with the tribulation cloud.

As for the ground, it started shaking, making loud sounds that resembled thunder, causing pain to the eardrums.

The newly formed earth burst out with cracks, as lava spewed out of it, the smoke was thick as trees as the surroundings withered.

“Heavenly tribulation — silver horn green scale python, earthly calamity — molten earth!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s heart shook, facing both the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity alone at the same time, he felt an immense pressure.

He placed his hopes on the Immortal Gu Landscape as Before.

“Come.” He willed, as a bead of green grape immortal essence flew out, fusing into the landscape as before Gu.

The ladybug-like landscape as before Gu immediately flapped its wings, flying away like a flash of lightning.

Everywhere it went, in the surroundings, the land returned to spring as the landscape was restored to normal, back to the moment before the earthly calamity struck.

“Good Gu, good Gu!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s heart settled, with landscape as before Immortal Gu, he had no fear towards the earthly calamity.

Hisss—!

The silver horn green scale python opened its mouth, making a shrill sound.

It shot out abruptly, its huge body bringing along a draft of wind, as it pounced on the landscape as before Immortal Gu.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was nervous, although Immortal Gu had huge capabilities, those which were not defensive Gu were usually fragile. Landscape as before Gu was the same, if it was destroyed by the silver horn green scale python, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s situation would turn bad.

Thankfully, landscape as before Gu was born from his aperture during the resonance of heaven and earth, he could control it like moving his limbs.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had deep foundations accumulated in his life, he quickly mobilized landscape as before Immortal Gu and escaped. The silver horn green scale python behind him had attacked dozens of times, it destroyed mountains and rivers, the earth was pierced and rocks were sent flying, as savage winds ravaged the land.

“Oh no! At this rate...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was concentrating intensely, after a few breaths’ time, sweat started forming on his forehead.

His eyes were shut tight, his body was still floating in the air, as the chaotic lightning balls crashed towards him.

But thankfully, due to the divert disaster Immortal Gu’s light pillar, his body was protected.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was unable to care about the outside world since long ago, but he had not forgotten his external threat.

This terrible situation forced him to cut his losses decisively.

“Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s reinforcement is limited, it might stop anytime. I can only do this... With man as before Immortal Gu in my possession, as long as I have time, there is hope! Cut, cut it off!”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted in his heart.

Abandoning the territories to protect his headquarters, he gave up a portion of his immortal aperture, the sky began to cut apart.

The blessed land was the foundation and base of a Gu Immortal, cutting off the blessed land was like self-mutilation, it reduced their own strength and potential.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng had no other choice.

Just like how Fang Yuan survived the earthly calamity back in Hu Immortal blessed land, in order to get rid of the blue charm lightning shadow, he discarded a portion of the blessed land, Tai Bai Yun Sheng also had to make such a sacrifice!

The blessed land’s sky was shaved off layer by layer.

Along with the thick tribulation clouds, they were all sent out of his body.

Outside his body, it was Imperial Court blessed land, Frost Jade Peacock joyfully chirped as it devoured these blessed land fragments, to increase its own strength.

Giant Sun’s will shouted in anger.

He was trying to protect Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s life, but the latter was now fueling his enemy’s strength!

Giant Sun’s will had to protect him, because if Tai Bai Yun Sheng died, his entire immortal aperture would be devoured by Imperial Court blessed land.

Most importantly, divert disaster Immortal Gu was already full of cracks, if he reinforced Tai Bai Yun Sheng any more, the Gu might get destroyed from the backlash.

Divert disaster Immortal Gu was one of the foundation pieces of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, it could not be lost!

But if Tai Bai Yun Sheng died, it was similarly disadvantageous for Giant Sun’s will.

At once, Giant Sun’s will fell into a difficult predicament.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 612: Hoodwinking the Land Spirit

The sky in the immortal aperture started to peel off layer by layer, the dense tribulation clouds thinned out along with it. The devastating silver horn green scale python’s body decreased to one-tenth of its original size, its might extremely weakened.

The situation was taking a turn for the better for Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

“Success is at hand.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s eyes were filled with tears when he opened them. The situation in the immortal aperture was already stabilizing, and he had the room to pay some attention to the external crisis.

The light of Divert Disaster was covering him, preventing the calamity and tribulation from touching him; Tai Bai Yun Sheng felt gratitude from the depths of his heart: “This is all thanks to Eighty-Eight True Yang Building helping me, otherwise I would find it difficult to even have a hope of succeeding... Eh!”

The light of divert disaster suddenly dissipated!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was caught off-guard and was bombarded by the chaotic lightning balls, his mind immediately turning chaotic. He flew around in disorder, knocking into large numbers of chaotic lightning balls as he was unable to act for himself with not even a trace of reason left.

Everyone was shocked but before they could express it, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building burst out with an absolutely powerful absorption force again, directly capturing the hysterical Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Giant Sun’s will could not sacrifice divert disaster Gu and also could not let Tai Bai Yun Sheng die.

The best method was, of course, to throw Tai Bai Yun Sheng out of the blessed land. Unfortunately, only Frost Jade Peacock could do that in this situation.

Helplessly, Giant Sun’s will could only use this inferior method.

This was indeed an inferior solution.

Under everyone’s shocked gazes, the tribulation clouds and calamity dust surged explosively, shrouding Eighty-Eight True Yang Building! Countless chaotic lightning balls crashed down like a violent storm; while restraining smoke coiled around the tower like an immemorial giant python, continually seeping inside.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had brought in Tai Bai Yun Sheng, thus becoming the target for the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity.

To protect Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s life, Giant Sun’s will chose to forcefully resist the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity!

“How could this happen!”

“Lord Tai Bai Yun Sheng was brought into Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!!”

“How on earth does he deserve such assistance from old ancestor? This is a heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity we are talking about, they are extremely dangerous to True Yang Building!”

Everyone looked on with stupefied and shocked gazes.

Under the presence of the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, using Gu worms was asking to suffer backlash.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was a rank eight Immortal Gu house; in its essence, it was an integrated body of many Immortal Gu and countless mortal Gu. And now, it was forcefully resisting the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, the pressure on it was already enormous. And because of the force of the backlash, the coordination between the Gu worms had been affected!

It was clear, this was by no means a wise course of action.

However, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had become a crucial key in the fight between Giant Sun’s will and Frost Jade Peacock; Giant Sun’s will, forced by the situation, could only settle for such a method.

Inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Frost Jade Peacock rapidly moved its wings, continuously dodging in between the gigantic trees.

Five Immortal Gu, with all kinds of flaming tails trailing after them, were pursuing and obstructing it.

Frost Jade Peacock was not willing to be sealed again and used all its strength to run away, gradually it lost its head and was unable to take the exact path, crashing into countless giant trees on the way.

Under Giant Sun’s will’s control, True Yang Building was a natural cage that could utilize the strength of any round, while Frost Jade Peacock was the bird in the cage. The giant trees turned into treemen, opening their arms to block it.

Caaaw—!

Frost Jade Peacock screamed shrilly as it suffered damage.

It tore apart the defense line of three old treemen, but its speed lowered greatly by this, and was caught up by a metal path Immortal Gu from behind.

A golden stream of light rapidly flowed on its body. The golden light condensed into a thick golden shell wherever it touched, firmly covering Frost Jade Peacock.

Frost Jade Peacock sensed it could not budge in any areas covered by the golden light; it was instantly startled and furious.

It hurriedly flapped its wings to increase its speed again. But the next moment, it was attacked by the second Immortal Gu.

An intense sleepiness invaded its mind, causing its eyes to turn hazy as it felt an intense urge to sleep.

Boom.

It crashed down head-first onto the ground, unable to fly any longer.

It had a premonition that its fate was to be sealed again; two rows of tears filled with grief and indignance involuntarily fell down from its eyes.

“Don’t... even... think...” Frost Jade Peacock mumbled to itself, trying to use all its remaining strength to resist.

Although there was still the remaining power of Immortal Gu Gruel Mud on its body, the two Immortal Gu sealing it again were not restrained by Gruel Mud.

“Even if I die, I won’t let you prevail!” Frost Jade Peacock gave off an intense suicidal will, and disregarding everything, it drew out the foundation of Imperial Court blessed land — heaven and earth qi, to intensify the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity.

And it was rapidly weakening.

Imperial Court blessed land was born from a space path Gu Immortal, thus the blessed land’s territory was vast, far surpassing any at an equivalent level.

Later, it was developed by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, becoming a top-notch blessed land and also obtaining the ability to transit between day and night; it could be said to be at the doorstep of transforming into a grotto-heaven.

If it could swallow the time path Gu Immortal Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture, space and time could converge which was the greatest supplement to Imperial Court blessed land. It was extremely likely for there to be a qualitative change which could allow Imperial Court blessed land to advance to a grotto-heaven!

If that happened, Frost Jade Peacock could break apart most of the arrangements of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. Although it could not suppress Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, it would have the power to expel it out of the blessed land.

However, Giant Sun’s will was truly too resolute and would rather suffer the damage from the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity to protect Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s life.

Frost Jade Peacock was only an obsession left behind after a Gu Immortal’s death, how could it scheme against Giant Sun’s will?

But it was also because of its obsession, it was brave and unyielding!

On the verge of being sealed again, it would rather be exterminated, and disregarding the consequences, it drew out large amounts of heaven and earth qi from Imperial Court blessed land.

These heaven and earth qi were like adding fuel to the fire; as they assimilated into the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, the sky rumbled with lightning, the chaotic lightning balls immediately expanded tenfold in quantity, and the restraining smoke had even more changes, its body inflated and its dark color turned even deeper.

Crack crack crack!

Lightning balls rained down like a storm, fiercely striking Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Bursts of explosions sounded out; Eighty-Eight True Yang Building became filled with scars, the eaves of the tower collapsed piece by piece, and a crack even appeared on the outer wall.

Restraining smoke turned into an even bigger problem, becoming a deadly smoke calamity; it was much more powerful and seeped everywhere on Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s surface, gradually dying it black.

The pitch-black walls of the building seemed to have eroded for a thousand years, as they started to peel off.

“The heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity have become stronger!”

“This is too terrifying, retreat, retreat!”

“What is happening? Even the wind and snow from the outside world are pouring in!!”

Everyone started shouting in shock.

Frost Jade Peacock extracted large amounts of heaven and earth qi, injuring Imperial Court blessed land’s foundation. If Imperial Court blessed land was originally a strong house, now the tiles and bricks were taken out, only leaving behind the framework of the house.

This caused countless holes to appear in it, connecting to the outside world.

And the outside world of northern plains was currently experiencing the blizzard of every ten years.

Divert disaster Gu was dormant, causing Imperial Court blessed land to suffer the invasion of the blizzard calamity as well.

Imperial Court blessed land was no longer a refuge; large amounts of wind and snow poured in, the temperature quickly dropped as the heavy snowfall flew inside. Although it had not reached the level of forming snow monsters, it was not too far away.

“Little sparrow, look at what a big mess you have caused.” Giant Sun’s will shouted in annoyance.

Blessed lands and grotto-heavens would attract all sizes of calamities and tribulations in every set interval of time. The larger their fortune, the stronger the calamities and tribulations.

The great snow disaster that wreaked havoc over the whole of northern plains every ten years was actually the calamity and tribulation of Imperial Court blessed land.

Imperial Court blessed land had Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and was also a peak level blessed land with territory that was at the size of a small world; the fortune it contained was gigantic, thus the calamities and tribulations it attracted were extremely terrifying.

Right now, divert disaster Gu was hibernating, while Imperial Court blessed land had connected outside to northern plains, causing the once in ten years blizzard to return into it.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building could forcibly resist the frenzied attacks of lightning balls, the invasion of the black smoke, but it was unable to contend against the blizzard that could wreak havoc over the whole of northern plains.

If this situation continued, Imperial Court blessed land would erode and crumble apart due to the snow disaster.

Frost Jade Peacock did not need Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, but Eighty-Eight True Yang Building needed Imperial Court blessed land.

There was one way to salvage this situation.

That was to use divert disaster Gu to eliminate heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities and turn them into heaven qi and earth qi. Making Imperial Court blessed land take in these heaven and earth qi to stabilize its foundation, and close the connection with the outside world of northern plains.

Giant Sun's will could take the risk in forcibly activating divert disaster Gu. But to make Imperial Court blessed land take in heaven and earth qi required Frost Jade Peacock's cooperation.

"Asking this little sparrow to cooperate is simply an impossible dream!" Even if it was Giant Sun's will, this was a difficult problem.

He helplessly thought of the only way —"Unless Frost Jade Peacock acknowledges a pair of new owners..."

Giant Sun's will did not know that Tai Bai Yun Sheng's immortal aperture contained landscape as before Immortal Gu which could conveniently deal with this trouble.

He thought of another Immortal Gu he had — false emotion fake will Gu!

The condition for Frost Jade Peacock to acknowledge its owner was a couple who had true love for each other.

However, nothing was absolute, even the land spirit could be hoodwinked.

Giant Sun's will knew as long as he found two candidates to use false emotion fake will Gu on, he could hoodwink the land spirit and make Frost Jade Peacock recognize new owners.

Once Frost Jade Peacock was controlled, each problem could be easily resolved.

Moreover, this method was very favorable to Giant Sun's will.

If a couple who had true love for each other became the owners of Imperial Court blessed land, what would Giant Sun's will do if this couple did not obey his commands?

Instead of that, he would hold onto the initiative if he found two unconnected people to use false emotion fake will Gu on and satisfy the requirement to become the owners.

Because false emotion fake will Gu contained Giant Sun's will!

False emotion fake will Gu was subjected to Giant Sun's will's control. Even if the two unconnected people were disloyal in the future, as long as Giant Sun's will still held false emotion fake will Gu, at worst, he could once again select two new candidates.

'Little sparrow, you are a long way from being able to fight with me.' Giant Sun's will was shrewd and wise, inheriting some of the main body's intelligence; the seemingly desperate situation could not hold him back. With just some thinking, he thought of a way to resolve it.

He immediately mobilized Eighty-Eight True Yang Building's strength to inspect the candidates.

Right now in Imperial Court blessed land, everyone was running away from danger here and there, with many casualties appearing.

The situation was quickly worsening, it was so cold that one's spit could instantly freeze into a piece of ice. The majestic blizzard was pouring in without any pause, tall and formidable snow monsters started standing up from the depths of the snow, selecting targets to devour.

But this did not pose any difficulty for Giant Sun’s will.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building could plunder resources from the whole of northern plains, let alone two people that were right in front of it.

These two people would naturally be those with Giant Sun’s bloodline, Giant Sun’s will soon selected two candidates who satisfied it.

“Eh?” Hei Lou Lan’s vision rapidly changed, he was at rank five peak stage, but he did not even have the strength to resist as he was absorbed into True Yang Building.

“Ahhhhh, save me!” Not far away, Ma Hong Yun was still running frantically and did not realize the changes in his surroundings.

Thud.

He bumped head first into a giant tree in front.

“Don’t tell me this kid was running with his eyes closed...” Hei Lou Lan was speechless.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 613: Identity exposed

“Painful, painful!” Ma Hong Yun rubbed his forehead that had turned red, pouting as he got up from the floor.

“Eh! What is this place?” He discovered that the blizzard had vanished without a trace, he was surrounded by a spring-like warmth; it was not a world of ice and snow, instead it was a vast ancient forest.

Around him were gigantic ancient trees, hundreds of metres tall, so thick that even a dozen adults joining hands could not surround it.

The ancient trees were very tall, and their lush leaves covered the sky; rays of sunlight penetrated through the small gaps, forming a tranquil scene under the shade.

Compared to the outside world, this was practically a paradise.

“You are in the center of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.” A voice suddenly echoed within Ma Hong Yun and Hei Lou Lan’s ears.

“Who is this?” Hei Lou Lan’s pupils contracted.

Ma Hong Yun cried out in fear: “Ghost!”

He panicked and subconsciously ran to the side of Hei Lou Lan.

“Ghost? I am no ghost, if I could become a ghost, my affairs would be much easier to settle. Unfortunately I am merely a remnant will, inferior to even a ghost.”

Giant Sun’s will gave a sigh, and suddenly in mid-air, golden speckles of light appeared.

These speckles of light rotated slowly and suddenly condensed, transforming into an imposing body of light and shadow, similar in appearance to Giant Sun.

“Ah, you are!?” Ma Hong Yun stammered, his finger pointing towards the will of Giant Sun in endless shock.

Hei Lou Lan’s pupils contracted, as the head of Hei tribe, he knew a lot. His complexion turned solemn and respectful; placing his hands on his chest, he spoke dutifully: “Descendant pays respect to Ancestor Giant Sun!”

Giant Sun sighed once again, and said: “I know the two of you are feeling confusion within your hearts. To make a long story short, this man broke into True Yang Building, undid the seal on the Frost Jade Peacock land spirit, and thus put Imperial Court blessed land on the brink of crisis.”

As he said that, the golden speckles condensed into the image of Chang Shan Yin.

“Ah, it’s Lord Wolf King!” Ma Hong Yun immediately recognized.

“It was actually him?!” Hei Lou Lan also could not help but cry out.

But Giant Sun’s will immediately continued: “What you see is not his genuine appearance.”

As he spoke, the image of Chang Shan Yin changed, gradually turning into Fang Yuan’s true appearance.

“This is the true face of that person.” Giant Sun’s will spoke.

Fang Yuan disguised himself as Chang Shan Yin using the human skin Gu. This Gu was a mortal Gu, it was able to deceive people like Hei Lou Lan, but it failed to deceive Giant Sun’s will.

Even though when Fang Yuan explored the true inheritance secluded domain in secret, Giant Sun’s will was asleep. But within the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, there were many Gu worms that had recorded his actions.

Seeing the true face of Fang Yuan, Hei Lou Lan and Ma Hong Yun were unable to recognize him.

“So it turn out that this Chang Shan Yin was merely a fake! To actually infiltrate Imperial Court blessed land, he is extremely daring!” Hei Lou Lan let out a cold snort, sensing such a huge conspiracy, he could not help but be both startled and furious at once.

“He not only has guts, but he had also made ample preparations. Looking at the two methods he used to scheme against me, these are not something that one can accomplish on their own, there surely must be a larger force backing him. You two are my descendants; True Yang Building has been infiltrated by outsiders and is in deep trouble, I now need your strength.” Giant Sun’s will spoke.

Hei Lou Lan and Ma Hong Yun glanced at each other, both expressing their desire to cooperate with Giant Sun’s will.

Giant Sun’s will spoke concisely, in a short period of time, he was able to give a clear explanation.

“So it was like this.” Hei Lou Lan came to a realization, and was now able to understand why True Yang Building helped Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

His heart jumped, Giant Sun’s will’s idea was for him to become Imperial Court blessed land’s owner, that involved tremendous benefits.

“Imperial Court blessed land’s ownership condition is special, the blessed land actually requires two owners. No wonder back then, when Giant Sun Immortal Venerable set up the sacred palace, he made it so that his empress could stay in it. He loved his empress very much, now it seems that the empress also had half the ownership of Imperial Court blessed land.”

“Using false emotion fake will Gu to deceive the land spirit, this is quite a good idea. But this kid, how could he be selected to become Imperial Court blessed land’s owner alongside me?”

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes sparkled, shooting a glance toward Ma Hong Yun, concealing his deep disdain.

“Could it be that Ancestor Giant Sun thinks that he is an easier pawn to control?” Hei Lou Lan’s gaze trembled, with Giant Sun’s will present, he did not dare to do anything reckless.

Differing from Hei Lou Lan, Ma Hong Yun suddenly remembered something and shouted: “Wait a moment! Lady Xiao Yun and my wife Xiao Li are still outside, I do not want to be the owner of the blessed land, quickly let me out, I need to save them!”

Lady Xiao Yun naturally referred to Zhao Lian Yun.

His wife Xiao Li was Chang Li. Originally, Chang Biao, in order to coax Ma Ying Jie, allowed his adopted daughter Chang Li to be married off to Ma Hong Yun, consequently turning her into Ma Hong Yun’s wife.

Giant Sun’s will seemed to have taken a fancy to Ma Hong Yun, he laughed heartily: “Hahaha, caring for beautiful women, you are truly my descendant. Boy, once you become the owner of this blessed land, this will become your domain. Then, you will be able to have all the women you desire.”

Ma Hong Yun stared blankly, before quickly shouting: “No, it’s very dangerous outside, I have to go and save them both. No matter what this affair is, we can discuss it later. Release me outside, quickly let me go!”

“Foolish boy, relying on your own strength, you can barely defend yourself, how can you defend other people?” Giant Sun’s will laughed. “Be obedient and stay here, cooperate and become the owner of Imperial Court blessed land. I will be the one to save your women.”

Giant Sun’s will moved rapidly without delay, starting to act the moment he finished speaking.

Great numbers of Gu Masters were in the True Yang Building, and almost all of them were Giant Sun’s descendants.

These were his descendants, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was built for their sake, as an inheritance for his descendants.

Naturally, not all of his descendants had the aptitude to become Gu Masters, Giant Sun’s will had not made a move to save those.

Fang Yuan had a panoramic view of this scene.

“Giant Sun’s will made a move, this time, many people were taken into the building.” Within his mind, Mo Yao’s will spoke.

Fang Yuan sat still on the back of an azure wolf king, floating at a high altitude in the sky, gazing at the distant sacred palace.

But it was a huge distance away from his original location.

The power of the calamities and tribulations getting more fearsome, Fang Yuan, in order to avoid the disaster, could only retreat.

In the surroundings of the sacred palace, the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities continued to increase in power, the area was already extremely dangerous. This Frost Jade Peacock was putting in a last ditch attempt, even the once in ten years blizzard of the northern plains was attracted over.

Now the sacred palace had mostly been destroyed, the broken walls scattered in the wind, its former splendor nowhere to be seen.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was in a terrible state, it was wrapped in layers of heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities. Inside it were the chaotic lightning balls and restraining smoke, while outside was the raging blizzard that was getting stronger.

“Giant Sun’s will has already awakened, he definitely wants you dead, it’s a blessing that he isn’t targeting you now; he absolutely won’t come and save us. We should retreat and return to Water Pavilion. Within Water Pavilion, there is some immortal essence that I have left behind in the past, you can use them to move the Gu House. You can return to central continent, and when you return Water Pavilion to Spirit Affinity House, you will receive more benefits than you can imagine, there is no need for you to take a risk here.” Within his mind, Mo Yao continued to coax him.

Things had already progressed this far, the entire Imperial Court blessed land had been affected, Giant Sun’s will had already awakened, Water Pavilion was still hidden; while True Yang Building was suppressed by the heaven tribulations and earthly calamities, it was a great opportunity to retreat.

“Retreat?” Fang Yuan’s eyes were cold and detached, his line of sight turning towards the glass owner token in his hands as he sneered softly.

He gripped the glass owner token tightly.

This was a crucial trump card he had not expended yet.

Central continent Gu Immortals left behind three methods to deal with Giant Sun’s will.

The first was the Gu formation of special will Gu, effective in dealing with Giant Sun’s will. The second method was a sealing Gu formation, which could temporarily seal the yellow apricot immortal essence left behind by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

The third method was even more hidden but had greater power, it could temporarily expel Giant Sun’s will from the True Yang Building!

The glass owner token was the key to all three of these methods.

Now, both the first and second methods were already used, only the third method was left.

But this third method was much stronger compared with the first two methods, it could be said to be a trump card!

Especially at this moment.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was wrapped in heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities, once Giant Sun’s will gets temporarily separated from the building, he would definitely suffer the fearsome attack of the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities!

Mo Yao’s plan was indeed mature and stable, but great risks come with great rewards.

Meanwhile, in True Yang Building.

Chang Li and Zhao Lian Yun were brought into the building by Giant Sun’s will, appearing in front of Ma Hong Yun.

“Lady Xiao Yun, my wife Xiao Li!” Ma Hong Yun was jubilant, and dashed towards them.

“Husband!” Chang Li was happy to have escaped danger, and threw herself into Ma Hong Yun’s arms.

Zhao Lian Yun also moved quickly towards Ma Hong Yun’s side, her face also full of joy from having returned from death’s door, she lightly kicked Ma Hong Yun’s leg: “Foolish kid, unexpectedly, you were useful for once.”

“Hahaha, it’s only natural.” Ma Hong Yun loosened his hug and cordially looked towards Giant Sun’s will floating in midair, and expressed his gratitude, “Thank you, old ancestor.”

Just as he said that, suddenly, a violent tremor occurred.

For a moment, the entire forest shook.

“What’s going on?” Chang Li and Zhao Lian Yun both turned pale.

“Alright, enough nonsense, the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities are getting more and more severe, eventually, even Eighty-Eight True Yang Building will no longer be able to resist. You must become Imperial Court blessed land’s owners as soon as possible.” The complexion of Giant Sun’s will’s changed as he spoke.

Bam bam bam...

A group of large treemen moved slowly, each footstep they took sounding like thunder.

The treemen lowered their waists, opening their branch-like palms, revealing the giant immobilized peacock.

“This is the land spirit of Imperial Court blessed land, Frost Jade Peacock!” Giant Sun’s will introduced, while at the same time, false emotion fake will Gu flew towards the Frost Jade Peacock.

Hei Lou Lan and Ma Hong Yun stood before the Frost Jade Peacock, as the false emotion fake will Gu let out a yellow light that resembled a fog, gradually enshrouding Hei Lou Lan, Ma Hong Yun and the Frost Jade Peacock.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 614: Otherworldly Demon!

“Listen to my instructions. Hold your breath, be calm, be relaxed, and discard any superfluous thoughts...” Giant Sun’s will spoke in a pensive tone.

Hei Lou Lan closed his eyes and slowed his breathing.

Zhao Lian Yun and Chang Li stood to the sides and did not dare to speak.

A light breeze blew, and the tree leaves rustled, creating a tranquil atmosphere.

Ma Hong Yun looked left and right. Suddenly seeing the Frost Jade Peacock, he was amazed, shouting: “Look quickly, the peacock is alive, it actually shed tears!”

The tranquil atmosphere was disrupted, and the voice of Giant Sun’s will’s stopped. Hei Lou Lan held his irritation, and angrily opened his eyes. He berated: “Nonsense, of course the land spirit is alive. When the land spirit dies, the blessed land will be finished as well. Why do you care if it is shedding tears or not, quickly follow the instructions!”

“Oh, oh. So, it’s like this, my bad, my bad.” Ma Hong Yun was shocked by the Black Tyrant’s anger, he nodded quickly.

“Concentrate, clear your mind, don’t think excessively, this is the best way to display false emotion fake will Gu’s power to its limit.” Giant Sun’s will continued to instruct.

Hei Lou Lan closed both of his eyes and breathed gently, a light breeze blew, bringing with it the sweet fragrance of vegetation.

“Wait a moment, wait a moment!” Ma Hong Yun suddenly screamed.

“You despicable fellow, are you courting death!” Hei Lou Lan clenched his fist, an immense rage was building in his heart, he was outraged and anxious.

“Old ancestor, I am a man, he is also a man. Creating feelings between the two of us, I... I am unable to accept it!” Ma Hong Yun was afraid of Hei Lou Lan’s terrifying aura, he whispered while being on guard against Hei Lou Lan, pleading with Giant Sun’s will.

“You scoundrel...” Hei Lou Lan gnashed his teeth and clenched his fist until they made cracking noises, his eyes revealing an ominous glint.

Were it not for Giant Sun’s will being right by his side, according to his brutal nature, he would have already sent a punch over, blowing Ma Hong Yun’s brains out.

“Idiot! Saving the blessed land is the most urgent matter right now. So what if you’re both men, just be free and relax, there will not be a problem! I will always support you!!” Zhao Lian Yun called out, she was fearful of Hei Lou Lan, yet simultaneously her eyes showed some unexplainable excitement.

“That’s right, husband, look at the big picture, I... I do not mind it,” Chang Li spoke softly in agreement.

Ma Hong Yun rolled his eyes and shouted: “Hey, this does not involve you so you can talk about it casually! Old Ancestor, I have an idea, how about you let me and my wife do it. Our love is genuine and sincere, you can even save up on using the false emotion fake will Gu."

Ma Hong Yun was straightforward, not giving much thought to the complex circumstances.

As far as Giant Sun's will was concerned, not using false emotion fake will Gu was out of the question.

Hei Lou Lan's killing intent burst out, Ma Hong Yun's proposal greatly encroached on his benefits, his anger was about to explode, almost reaching his limit, but he did not dare to attack in the presence of Giant Sun's will, he did not dare to flare up.

As expected, Giant Sun's will rejected Ma Hong Yun's proposal: "Boy, you are too young, true love, is it so easy to find? When calamity strikes, all the birds fly in different directions, human couples are also the same. Do you think this young lady truly loves you? Hehehe."

The words of Giant Sun's will made Chang Li's complexion pale.

Indeed, Chang Li had never sincerely loved Ma Hong Yun, originally, she was looked upon as a political bargaining chip by Chang Biao and delivered to Ma Tribe, intended to be used to form good bonds with Ma Ying Jie, but in the end, Chang Biao died, and Chang Li lost her backing. She could only accept her fate and stay by Ma Hong Yun's side.

Fortunately, Ma Hong Yun could cultivate to rank three, becoming a Ma Tribe elder, the resources he had available to him were incomparable to before, and as he also had Ma Ying Jie's trust, he could provide Chang Li with a good life.

Ma Hong Yun was to become one of Imperial Court blessed land's owners, and since he was close to Chang Li and Zhao Lian Yun, Giant Sun's will began to investigate them.

His investigative method was simple, direct, and effective.

He separated a portion of his will, and ventured into Chang Li and Zhao Lian Yun's minds, looking over their memories and thoughts.

With True Yang Building's support, along with the method of an Immortal Venerable, Chang Li and Zhao Lian Yun were not even aware that, at this time, each of their secrets were rapidly being learned by Giant Sun's will.

"Old Ancestor, what do you mean?" Ma Hong Yun pursed his eyebrows, he was foolish and brazen, while Hei Lou Lan did not dare to offend Giant Sun's will, he dared to ask a direct question.

Giant Sun's will laughed: "You are indeed a fool, boy. Your mind isn't that sharp, but it is excusable, I will now give you a lesson. This little wife of yours approached you with an ulterior motive, her adoptive father deliberately ordered her to come. Even your heroic action of saving this beauty was merely a show."

Chang Li's complexion immediately turned deathly pale and she trembled from head to toe.

Hei Lou Lan was indifferent, he was already accustomed to these dirty political games.

"How could that be?" Ma Hong Yun's eyes widened, unable to believe this.

Giant Son’s will then said: “And there is also your little female companion, called Zhao Lian Yun. Hehe, she had matured young and gained some wisdom, she was forced by circumstances to had no choice but to be with you. From the very beginning she had looked down on you, only wanting to protect herself... Of course, now that you have grown stronger, she has gradually become dependent on you.”

Zhao Lian Yun’s heart went cold, her thoughts were exposed on the spot, making her feel extremely unpleasant, as if the clothes on her body had been forcibly stripped off by someone.

But facing Giant Sun’s will, she did not dare to refute anything. She wasn’t a normal child, she was a transmigrator, the suffering she had experienced in this life had made her aware of the mystery and cruelty of this world.

“Eh!?” Suddenly, Giant Sun’s will’s words came to a stop, and his image in the air showed an expression of shock and fear with his eyes wide open.

“To think, to think that!” Giant Sun’s will’s tone changed abruptly, he stared at Zhao Lian Yun with a hateful gaze, causing her to take a few steps back in fear.

“To think that you are an otherworldly demon! You are actually lurking by Ma Hong Yun’s side! Hehehe, you have such guts, you are really daring. Unfortunately... you met me.” Giant Sun’s will exuded a strong killing intent.

“Otherworldly demon, what is that?” Hei Lou Lan was astonished, as it was his first time hearing this term despite his status and experience.

He looked at Zhao Lian Yun but could not see anything extraordinary about her.

“Old Ancestor, what are you trying to do!” Ma Hong Yun, no matter how stupid, could recognize something was wrong.

He sprinted to the front of Zhao Lian Yun, spreading both of his arms, protecting her behind his body.

“Boy, you want to protect an otherworldly demon?” Giant Sun’s will raised his tone, his expression becoming ice-cold.

“What otherworldly demon! I don’t know any otherworldly demon, I only know she is Lady Xiao Yun, without her help, I would likely have been killed already.” Ma Hong Yun tried his best to defend Zhao Lian Yun.

Giant Sun’s will shook his head and sneered. He had no interest in explaining, yet for some reason, he had to explain: “Killed? Boy, you are a person destined to become a Gu Immortal. Had she not helped you, there would definitely have been others who would have given you assistance. Otherworldly demons are enemies of the entire world, they are a huge menace! If we let them grow, the consequences would be unthinkable. In the past, there was an otherworldly demon who managed to grow successfully, the five regions were almost destroyed as a result!”

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes widened.

The words of Giant Sun’s will were too sensational. Listening to his words, it seemed as if the otherworldly demons could rival rank nine venerables.

How was it possible?

But the one who said these words was someone Hei Lou Lan had no choice but to believe.

For a moment, Hei Lou Lan looked Zhao Lian Yun in the eyes, killing intent emerging.

“No, Lady Xiao Yun is innocent, you must not harm her!” Ma Hong Yun was extremely determined, he wholeheartedly wanted to protect Zhao Lian Yun.

Zhao Lian Yun was stunned.

She looked towards Ma Hong Yun’s lonely and powerless back, her eyes glistening with tears.

She did not know what bullshit otherworldly demons were, but could surmise that perhaps it was related to her own transmigration.

She forced herself to wipe her tears, the corners of her lips raising into a determined arc.

Since Ma Hong Yun wholeheartedly defended her, disregarding his own life, she consequently must not implicate Ma Hong Yun!

She took a step forward, stopping in front of Ma Hong Yun, she looked at Giant Sun’s will, speaking resoundingly: “You want to take my life, come and take it.”

“Good.” Giant Sun’s will had a ferocious smile, killing intent boiling with no trace of sympathy.

He was a huge will congealed by special will Gu, the difference between special wills and other wills were that: they could be given a special command by the Gu Master that would be triggered if specific circumstances were met.

And Giant Sun’s will, during its formation, was given a profound resolve by the main body —— if it discovered an otherworldly demon, no matter the circumstances, killing the otherworldly demon must take priority!

Giant Sun’s will had to kill Zhao Lian Yun, to have been able to restrain himself until now was already really remarkable.

“No——! Ma Hong Yun saw the situation going south, he shouted out in a moment of desperation, extending both his arms and hugged Zhao Lian Yun within his bosom.

“Otherworldly demon, you deserve to die without pity!” Giant Sun’s will sneered, and started to make his move.

Yet the next moment, his expression became rigid, and shortly after he faced towards the sky and bellowed: “Damn it——!”

The roaring voice suddenly came to a spontaneous end, and the image of the will abruptly disappeared in mid-air.

Giant Sun’s will could sense a formidable, hard to resist force, that pulled it outside of the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

“What is going on?”

“What happened?!”

No matter if it was Hei Lou Lan or Ma Hong Yun, both stared blankly at the spot, surprised by the turn of events.

Just a moment ago, Giant Sun’s will was still brilliant and mighty, how could he suddenly disappear?

Outside the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the golden speckles of the majestic will enveloped the entire True Yang Building.

Rumble!

Large amounts of chaotic lightning balls bombarded in succession, the lightning balls could cause one to sink into confusion and in essence attacked wills.

Giant Sun’s will was restrained by the chaotic lightning balls, in no time the explosions put him in a tough spot, a portion of his will was damaged and destroyed.

Meanwhile, the restraining smoke took advantage of the situation, swallowing up the pieces of Giant Sun’s will.

Giant Sun’s will really was too majestic, though the outer shell suffered the bombardment of the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, the inner layer desperately tried to enter the building.

Eighty-Eight True Yang building, presided over by Giant Sun’s will, was now an empty building, although the structure was intact, the Gu worms stopped functioning.

Like an army of soldiers suddenly losing their commander-in-chief, they can only rely on their instincts to act.

At this moment, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had become exceptionally fragile.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 615: We are fellow apprentice brothers!

“You little pest, I will kill you!”

Giant Sun’s will was naturally furious at being subjected to such a scheme once again.

A portion of the majestic will was immediately sent flooding towards the distant Fang Yuan.

However, this torrential portion of will was weathered down by the chaotic lightning balls and restraining smoke in the inner layer, shrinking by thirty percent. And after being ground down by the outer layer’s blizzard, it decreased by another twenty percent.

By the time it approached Fang Yuan, it had already been reduced by more than half.

“This can only last for about fifteen minutes.” Fang Yuan turned a blind eye to the rapidly approaching attack, his mind was cool as ice, as he silently estimated the duration of this third method.

His thoughts moved while tightly clenching the glass owner token, and the next moment, he teleported inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

This was a feature of the glass owner token.

Fang Yuan had been able to move in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building without anyone knowing of it, because of this.

He appeared on an ice mountain, causing the torrential will to strike empty air.

It was a scene of white, the icy-cold wind brushed past his face.

Grrr!

Three-eyed snow rabbits, at the size of adult men, with bulging muscles, drilled out from the depths of the snowy land, surrounding Fang Yuan in a few moments!

This was the round that Tai Bai Yun Sheng had been transported to in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

The snow rabbits kept on appearing endlessly and soon there were tens of thousands of them glaring at Fang Yuan.

Just based on close-quarter combat capability, these snow rabbits did not lose to wind wolves or turtleback wolves. Under the environment of ice and snow, their battle strength even surpassed ordinary wolves.

The large numbers of wild Gu living in their body further increased their ferocity.

One had to spend a lot of time and energy to break through their obstruction.

But Fang Yuan was in control of the glass owner token and did not need to use such a forceful method.

His thoughts moved and the glass owner token gave a faint glimmer.

The crowd of snow rabbits suddenly appeared to be at a loss, their killing intent instantly dissipating.

Fang Yuan waved his hand and they dispersed in confusion, drilling into the thick snowy ground, and before long, they were gone.

Fang Yuan was able to control many floors of True Yang Building with the glass owner token. He had intentionally held back before and did not use up the quota completely, saving several uses for later. Right now, he used it and immediately obtained control over this floor.

Without the obstruction of Giant Sun’s will, he was this round’s true controller and it was very easy for him to disperse these snow rabbits.

Crack...

A glacier split open, revealing a tunnel.

The tunnel directly extended down the inner part of the ice mountain.

Fang Yuan moved quickly in this tunnel and soon saw Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was sealed inside an ice block, seemingly in a deep sleep.

He had been bombarded by chaotic lightning balls when he tried to pass the tribulations before, his mind sunk into chaos and he was not able to think.

Thus, he was easily absorbed into the tower by Giant Sun’s will.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was not of Giant Sun’s bloodline, and moreover was a Gu Immortal, therefore he could not be easily controlled. To prevent him from causing trouble and to seize the moment to handle the land spirit, Giant Sun’s will took advantage of this to seal him here.

With a thought from Fang Yuan, the ice block dissolved and Tai Bai Yun Sheng slowly woke up.

“Chang Shan Yin...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng gradually regained his consciousness, he glanced around and recalled, before gazing at Fang Yuan.

Although he found Fang Yuan’s cruel way of doing things very repugnant, he was grateful at this moment: “You saved me?”

Fang Yuan arrogantly smiled: “If not me, who else could it be? Tai Bai Yun Sheng, do you know you are facing imminent catastrophe?”

“Imminent catastrophe?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression changed, but he was a famed character and was not scared by Fang Yuan’s frightening words.

Instead, he slowly stood up and lightly smiled at Fang Yuan: “Please explain.”

Fang Yuan looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng with indignance and explained: “I was ordered by master to infiltrate into True Yang Building and release the seals on the land spirit, to overturn True Yang Building and take control of Imperial Court blessed land! Master gave me a glass owner token which can use three methods to deal with Giant Sun’s will. But something unexpected happened midway, you suddenly advanced to a Gu Immortal and it was used by Giant Sun’s will to weaken the land spirit, leading to the current peril. Did you think you were favored by Giant Sun’s will? Hmph, he was only using you to protect True Yang Building! Now that you have lost your value, you were sealed up, and if not for me saving you, you would definitely fall into the control of Giant Sun’s will, and end up in extreme misery!”

“What?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s brows furrowed as he revealed a bewildered expression. Fang Yuan’s words not only contained a lot of information but also were very impactful.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng stared at Fang Yuan, his gaze flashing with a bright light as his brows furrowed deeper: “I had been doubting why I suddenly received the help of Giant Sun’s will, but later absorbed into True Yang Building and sealed up for no reason. Your words explain everything. But if so, who are you? Why did you save me? You might have released me from imprisonment, but it doesn’t mean I will believe you unconditionally!”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Who am I? Look carefully!”

He then took a step back and right in front of Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he used a knife to slowly cut his skin starting from his forehead.

A bloodstain extended down to his stomach, following the tip of the knife.

“What are you...?!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was shocked.

Fang Yuan chuckled, he then held the knife behind his head and cut downwards. Using his hands in turn, he cut down a long wound smoothly.

The two long wounds soon exuded scarlet blood.

An intense pain attacked him, but Fang Yuan’s expression did not change.

Next, he started slicing at his arms, thighs and other crucial areas.

His hand was steady as a rock during the whole process, his expression was indifferent as if the one being cut was not him but someone else, not expressing even a trace of pain.

“What are you doing?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng felt a chill down his spine and took a step back, doubts forming in his mind.

But the next moment, his pupils shrunk and his shock could not be concealed on his face.

He saw Fang Yuan clenching his teeth and peeling his skin off like stripping clothes.

His movement was neat and efficient, there was almost not even an inch of skin remaining on his whole body. Like a blood monster, there was only a terrifying human shape with scarlet muscles and snow white teeth left behind.

Next, Fang Yuan activated healing Gu.

Under the emerald light, new tender skin started to grow over his body.

The skin gradually covered all his body and after the emerald light dispersed, the one before Tai Bai Yun Sheng was Fang Yuan with his real appearance.

“Ahh! So you were not Chang Shan Yin, but were just disguised as him. You, who are you?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng might have a benevolent character, but he was not foolish; he immediately realized the truth when he saw this scene.

His heart was filled with extreme trepidation.

Looking at Fang Yuan in front of him, he saw the appearance of an ordinary youth, but the presence he emitted was beyond ordinary, especially that pair of dark eyes, like an ancient lake with unfathomable depths.

He was giving off the intense aura of rank five peak stage, his gaze as chilling as a knife’s edge; Tai Bai Yun Sheng had seen countless people and one look at Fang Yuan told him, the latter was a genius character who was lofty, resolute and did not fear any challenges.

Even in all his life, the number of such people Tai Bai Yun Sheng had seen could be counted with his fingers.

“Who am I?” Fang Yuan chuckled, the corners of his lips curled up to reveal a smile, his expression was proud and vivid.

His burning gaze looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng, his tone serious, containing an earnestness that made people want to subconsciously believe in them: “My true name is Fang Yuan, I came to northern plains from central continent because of an important assignment from master, we are fellow disciples.”

“Fang Yuan? Fellow disciple?” Shocked and astonished feelings attacked Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s mind: “What do you mean?”

“Hmph, you don’t even understand the meaning of fellow disciple? It means my master and your benefactor is the same person, our relation is of fellow apprentices!” Fang Yuan’s brows furrowed and his tone revealed some impatience.

There was no language barrier between Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Fang Yuan, he naturally understood the term, but he was not able to accept the great significance of it at this moment.

After he heard Fang Yuan’s explanation, an image appeared in his mind.

It was an image of an old beggar.

With disheveled purple-red hair, occasionally he was insane, occasionally he was in a stupor, but when he was clear-headed, his gaze revealed one who had experienced vicissitudes over time and an awe-inspiring aura manifested in him.

When he was young, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had given the old beggar a bowl of water out of kindness.

When the old beggar became clear-headed, he gave Tai Bai Yun Sheng three Gu Immortal inheritances to choose from. The young Tai Bai Yun Sheng chose the third inheritance in the end.

This was the most profound memory in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s life and he had never forgotten it in all his life.

Many times, he had recalled the old beggar’s image.

It was him who saved the lost Tai Bai Yun Sheng, pulling Tai Bai Yun Sheng from his lowest point. It could even be said the old beggar created Tai Bai Yun Sheng. Without the old beggar’s help, there would not have been the current Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

“Master...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng mumbled, he had always regarded the old beggar as his supreme benefactor!

His whole body involuntarily trembled.

He had tried to scout out the traces of the old beggar, and had never given up on this. But so many years had gone by and he had almost roamed the whole of northern plains without making any progress in his search.

The old beggar was mysterious; suddenly appearing before disappearing again.

Now when Tai Bai Yun Sheng suddenly heard of the news of his benefactor, his heart was filled with excitement, joy and naturally was even more in disbelief.

“Listen well.” Fang Yuan pointed at Tai Bai Yun Sheng and spoke bluntly, “Benefactor’s name is Purple Mountain True Monarch, master has six great disciples. I, Fang Yuan, am ranked at fifth, I cultivate strength and enslavement path, both are from Gu Immortal inheritances.”

“Purple Mountain True Monarch, Purple Mountain True Monarch...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng pondered over Fang Yuan’s fabricated name like a treasure, his mind involuntarily thinking of the old beggar’s disheveled purple hair.

“Master doesn’t care about his appearance and likes to wander around, exploring the unknown. Before I came to northern plains, I heard him mention you and how he gave you three choices but you chose the most useless time path inheritance. Hmph, if it had been me, I would definitely choose the first inheritance, that fire path inheritance that could burn seas and mountains, it has such extreme power.” Fang Yuan’s tone was filled with anger, yearning and regret, his expression was sincere and vivid as if this had really happened.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s mind shook. He had never mentioned this experience to outsiders. Fang Yuan, however, described the situation back then so accurately!

He naturally did not know Fang Yuan had once searched his soul to confirm if he had landscape as before Immortal Gu recipe.

“Then, you, you are my apprentice brother?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s gaze towards Fang Yuan was a whole lot different now.

“Hmph!” Fang Yuan twitched his mouth in dissatisfaction, “At most, you can only barely qualify as a disciple in name, benefactor has actually taken in many disciples, but they cannot be compared to legacy disciples like me. But according to master’s rule, as long as a disciple in name can advance to a Gu Immortal, they can become his legacy disciple. According to ranking, you are my... uhh... that... fifth senior brother.”

“Huh?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s brows slightly furrowed.

“Hmph, what are you being proud for! It is only because of your Gu Immortal identity, that you are ranked ahead of me.” Fang Yuan coldly looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng, “Wait till I become a Gu Immortal, with my enslavement and strength path dual cultivation, I will push you down and I will be your fifth senior brother! But looking at your elderly appearance, you clearly don’t have much lifespan. I might not even need to become a Gu Immortal, I just have to wait for you to die of old age.”

Fang Yuan’s attitude was extremely rude, even revealing obvious resentment.

This was where the brilliance of his plan lied.

If he just spoke eloquent words and made a vow, that might not make Tai Bai Yun Sheng believe him too much. But it was because his words contained an attitude of rejection and also deep emotions, that made Tai Bai Yun Sheng quietly put down his guard and gradually choose to believe him.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng might be quite old, but his experience paled in comparison to Fang Yuan who had five hundred years of experience in his previous life.

Fang Yuan did not openly explain but using just a few words, he made Tai Bai Yun Sheng interpret the whole story himself and see a glance of his master’s origin.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng muttered: “Then, sixth junior brother...”

Fang Yuan immediately put out his hand: “Don’t call me that, I am not close to you! My task had been going smoothly but it was destroyed by you. Do you know how much time master had spent to make all the arrangements in Imperial Court blessed land? Now, the situation has changed like this, how do I explain it to master? You can just call me Fang Yuan!”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was not angry at Fang Yuan’s interruption, instead a guilty feeling emerged in his heart; he chuckled and cupped his fists towards Fang Yuan, asking sincerely: “Then... Fang Yuan, things have already reached this point, how should I help you to recoup the losses for master as much as possible?”

Success.

“Hehehe, spectacular, this is too spectacular, kid! You are truly insidious, tsk tsk, swindling a Gu Immortal to your side using just a few words!” Mo Yao had all along been observing this, and at this moment, she could not help revealing herself in Fang Yuan’s mind to praise him.

Fang Yuan sneered inwardly, on the surface however, he showed an unhappy expression: “Heh, after such a long time, you have finally spoken sense! Master has a discerning eye, he did not nurture a thankless wretch. Knowing to repay kindness is a trait we should have. Hmm... the situation right now is very bad, the crucial thing is there is not much time left. I have already used the third method master left behind, you must cooperate with me now. It will all depend on the two of us!”

“Please instruct me.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng bowed.

“First use this.” Fang Yuan grinned and tossed out a fifteen year lifespan Gu.

“This!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression changed, an astonished expression appearing on his face at the sight of this lifespan Gu.

“Use it, you may have Immortal Gu Man as Before, but that thing expends a lot of immortal essence. I don’t want you to suddenly end up dead at the crucial moment.” Fang Yuan spoke viciously, with an indifferent expression.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng instead felt a warm feeling in his heart. In his previous five hundred years of life, Fang Yuan’s grasp of the human heart was able to reach to pinnacle after experiencing many trials and hardships..

“This lifespan Gu...”

“My glass owner token can control only a small number of the rounds. True Yang Building only has a single lifespan Gu, quickly use it, stop wasting time!”

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not use it, he kept it in his pocket.

He thought of Gao Yang and Zhu Zai.

Until now, he was still feeling guilty.

The lifespan Gu in his hand had a scent of blood that was very familiar to him.

“What is going on with you?” Fang Yuan acted furious, pretending not to know.

“There are reasons...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s eyelids drooped, he raised his gaze, looking at Fang Yuan with a determined look: “All in all, don’t worry, I can provide you the greatest assistance!”

Fang Yuan grabbed onto Tai Bai Yun Sheng, gritting his teeth: “Bastard, do you know that I disregarded the consequences in using the glass owner token just to obtain this lifespan Gu?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was silent, his expression was gentle as jade, but he was very determined.

Fang Yuan’s words made his heart feel great warmth, his last lingering trace of suspicion vanished like smoke.

After looking at each other for a while, Fang Yuan seemed to have felt Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s determination as he retracted his gaze: “Hmph, if you did not become a Gu Immortal and are also a legacy disciple, I would not care if you died. Alright, according to the details of your inheritance and your tribulation performance, you should have the Immortal Gu Landscape as Before now, right?”

“Mm.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded: “Yes, that is correct.”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone, his mouth cracked open to show his snow-white teeth, he did not conceal his joy: “Very good, come with me!”

Saying so, a large number of starlight firefly Gu flew out of his aperture.

“Oh, that’s right, hold these two for me, put it on your aperture, I cannot bring them along.” Fang Yuan tossed casually.

“Immortal Gu!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s pupils shrunk.

A moment later, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Fang Yuan entered Hu Immortal blessed land using the stargate.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 616: Repairing Dang Hun mountain

“Master, you are finally back!” Little Hu Immortal was already waiting before the stargate and when Fang Yuan appeared, she immediately jumped towards him and hugged his leg, rubbing it with her cute rosy cheeks.

“Hehe, you have worked hard during these days when I was not here.” Fang Yuan smiled warmly and lightly stroked Little Hu Immortal’s head.

Little Hu Immortal’s fox ears shivered slightly, a blissful expression appeared on her face and her snow-white tail started shaking lightly behind her.

“This is... a land spirit? So this is a blessed land!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng stepped out of the stargate closely after Fang Yuan, and was startled at seeing Little Hu Immortal.

He had heard Little Hu Immortal addressing Fang Yuan as ‘master’.

Fang Yuan was only a mortal, but he already possessed a blessed land! In history, there were some people who had such fortune. The most famous one was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. He had luckily inherited Imperial Court blessed land when he was still just a mortal. And in his later cultivation journey, Imperial Court blessed land was of huge assistance.

“Haha, this blessed land’s name is Hu Immortal blessed land. I seized it forcibly from several sects of central continent, under master’s order.” Fang Yuan proudly replied.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s gaze immediately changed.

There was a difference between immortal and mortal, but right now, he was looking at Fang Yuan as an equal, asking: “I would assume that the process of snatching this blessed land was very dangerous, right?”

“Naturally, even now when I think of it, I still have some lingering fear.” Fang Yuan laughed heartily, “But in the end, winner takes all, everything is just that simple. I obtained the blessed land, becoming the final winner. The greater the risk, the greater the profits!”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded, sighing inwardly: this profit is simply too immense!

A blessed land with a land spirit was the immortal aperture of a fallen Gu Immortal. Possessing such a blessed land was akin to inheriting the Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture and cultivation resources!

Simultaneously, the impression of Fang Yuan’s audacious nature deepened by another level in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s mind.

“Master, who is he? His aura is strong.” Little Hu Immortal sensed Tai Bai Yun Sheng brimming with Gu Immortal aura. She could not help but be tense, gripping on Fang Yuan’s pants, appearing somewhat nervous and on guard.

“Relax, he is on our side, and is here to help us save Dang Hun mountain.” Fang Yuan comforted Little Hu Immortal, “Take us to Dang Hun mountain.”

Little Hu Immortal’s eyes brightened upon hearing this. She trusted her master’s words unconditionally.

She immediately let down her guard and disappeared on the spot, taking Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng with her.

The next moment, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were teleported to the center of the blessed land, the location of Dang Hun mountain.

Dang Hun mountain had already been deformed completely from the corrosion of Gruel Mud. Only a small mound remained of the lofty Dang Hun mountain.

Dang Hun Palace, which was on Dang Hun mountain previously, had naturally been destroyed.

“Master, if you arrived any later, you would not have been able to see Dang Hun mountain.” Little Hu Immortal said with a sorrowful voice.

Fang Yuan lightly petted her head, then looked towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a smart man and from this scene along with Fang Yuan’s previous words, he could guess Fang Yuan’s intention in bringing him here.

He nodded towards Fang Yuan, before taking out landscape as before Gu from his aperture.

Immediately, the surging aura of an Immortal Gu filled the surroundings.

“This is?” Little Hu Immortal’s bright eyes opened wide upon this first encounter with landscape as before Gu.

Landscape as before Gu was like a ladybug, it was the size of a fist and had the color of green jade.

Its round shell was engraved with natural patterns; half of the patterns portrayed rivers and lakes that twisted and turned, flowing continuously, while the other half was of mountains and hills, precipitous and overlaid upon one another.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng gave a soft shout; a bead of green grape immortal essence turned into a stream of light that instantly poured into landscape as before Gu.

The Immortal Gu suddenly burst out with green jade light that soared to an extreme height, giving off a radiance that people could not look at intently.

The light radiance covered the remaining Dang Hun mountain.

The corrosion of Gruel Mud on Dang Hun mountain immediately paused under the illumination of the green light. Immortal Gu Gruel Mud’s power was quickly neutralized and then vanquished.

The green light gradually dimmed; Tai Bai Yun Sheng then threw in another bead of green grape immortal essence.

The green light brightened again, covering the devastated Dang Hun mountain and continually cleansing it.

The small mound sized Dang Hun mountain started to grow and strengthen at a visible speed under the radiance.

“Dang Hun mountain is changing back!” Little Hu Immortal clapped her little hands, prancing around happily.

But the good scene did not last long, Dang Hun mountain only recovered by twenty percent when the green light weakened again.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression changed slightly: “What kind of mountain is this? It actually exhausted a green grape immortal essence!”

He was able to create thirty-six green grape immortal essence beads in his ascension to Gu Immortal. But later, using movement Gu crazily to dodge chaotic lightning balls expended one bead of immortal essence. Then in his own immortal aperture, to resist the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity after the formation of Immortal Gu, he had continuously activated landscape as before Gu to restore his aperture to its previous condition, spending three whole beads on it.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a clear understanding of how precious immortal essence was; now he had just started to restore Dang Hun mountain but had used up two beads of immortal essence.

At this rate, he would have to at least expend five to six beads of green grape immortal essence!

Fang Yuan smiled: “Dang Hun mountain.”

“Dang Hun mountain?” When Tai Bai Yun Sheng heard the name, his expression underwent a great change, his eyes opened wide and he spoke with a shocked tone, “Could it be?”

“It is indeed the one in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, how could there be another Dang Hun mountain?” Fang Yuan laughed.

“To think, to think I would actually be able to see the legendary Dang Hun mountain! This is the sacred land of soul path cultivators that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had praised endlessly.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was extremely moved as he kept on exclaiming in admiration.

It was the first time even for him to witness a thing of such legend.

When he glanced at Fang Yuan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s gaze had another subtle change.

He did not say anything else but quietly used a third bead of immortal essence to maintain the activation of landscape as before Gu.

This time, Dang Hun mountain was restored to forty percent before the green light dimmed.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng used a fourth bead, then a fifth bead and finally a sixth bead before Dang Hun mountain fully recovered.

“It is truly Dang Hun mountain, requiring six whole beads of green grape immortal essence to recover completely.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng mumbled while looking at the tall mountain in front of him.

Dang Hun mountain was magnificently beautiful; ordinary mountains could not even compare to it.

It was a pink crystal mountain, emitting an unforgettably dreamy radiance.

“Mast... Master, Dang Hun mountain’s disease has been treated.” Little Hu Immortal’s eyes had turned red, “Sob sob sob....”

She cried tears of joy, before lowering her head and using her delicate little hands to wipe the tears.

Fang Yuan also let out a breath of turbid air when he gazed at Dang Hun mountain.

Now, the objective for infiltrating into northern plains was finally achieved!

So many days and nights of effort, taking risks in the battlefields, disguising, racking his brains to scheme; they were all not in vain.

At this moment, a soaring fire burned in Fang Yuan’s heart.

This burning fire had a name — ambition!

Restoring Dang Hun mountain could no longer satisfy his appetite. There were still opportunities left in Imperial Court blessed land!

Especially now, Giant Sun’s will was expelled out of the tower; Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had become akin to an ownerless object.

Even if false emotion fake will Gu was an Immortal Gu and was difficult to capture, Fang Yuan had used his silver tongue to obtain Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s trust, succeeding in roping in the crucial battle power that could influence the situation.

When the time comes, using a Gu Immortal’s will, forcefully refining false emotion fake will Gu was not an impossible matter.

“Let’s go, back to northern plains.” Fang Yuan came and left just as quickly, with Tai Bai Yun Sheng in tow.

Before leaving, he handed burial soul toad to Little Hu Immortal.

Burial soul toad was a storage Gu used to store souls. There were souls of humans and beasts, and they had mostly been gathered by Fang Yuan from the battlefields.

These would turn into large numbers of guts Gu through Dang Hun mountain.

When they returned to Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the starlight firefly Gu supporting the stargate were already spent by over half; Fang Yuan quickly stored what remained into his aperture.

It was extremely difficult to accumulate starlight firefly Gu. The current amount could only support one more activation of the stargate.

“We are back again.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was deeply moved.

In this trip, he had directly gone from northern plains to central continent and back to northern plains from central continent. It was truly a travel disregarding distance, he felt like he was free to go anywhere in the world!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had only heard of hole earth Gu and connecting heaven Gu in methods that could allow one to connect between blessed lands and grotto-heavens; he had never heard of the method Fang Yuan used.

“Probably only people like sixth junior brother are worthy of such mystical methods. Maybe this was imparted to him by master.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng trusted Fang Yuan even more after the trip to Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fang Yuan was only a mortal at the moment, but he possessed a blessed land, this by itself was sufficient to prove many issues.

Dang Hun mountain’s magnificent scene was even more deeply imprinted in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s mind.

Seeing is believing!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had no choice but to believe it.

Fang Yuan first revealed his true appearance, then used lifespan Gu, revealing secret information to obtain Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s trust. Fang Yuan had also resolved the doubt in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s heart – why True Yang Building had helped him endure the tribulation for no rhyme or reason.

Fang Yuan’s words and the evidence he showed to Tai Bai Yun Sheng were almost all true, except the lies at the crucial points.

Nine truths and one lie; the lie would eventually become the truth. Especially when this lie involved the deepest secret of Tai Bai Yun Sheng. Tai Bai Yun Sheng had never revealed it to outsiders while Fang Yuan knew it by soul searching.

Among all these, the true marvel lied in Fang Yuan grasping Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s psychology completely.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had been feeling extreme guilt after betraying Gao Yang and Zhu Zai; he denied the value of his own existence. Under stimulation, he went through Gu Immortal ascension and even charged towards tribulation, thinking of ending it all.

But when he successfully passed the tribulation and became a Gu Immortal, he stood at a whole new height, looking at a different scene.

His mind came back to life, and after passing the tribulation with much difficulty as well as getting his immortal aperture blessed land, he did not want to die anymore.

He wanted to make a fresh start.

But he had an unresolved matter tugging his heart.

He needed hope, he needed acknowledgement!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng himself was not aware of this psychological need. But Fang Yuan was aware and gave him this acknowledgement.

Fang Yuan’s acknowledgement, in a certain way, represented his master’s acknowledgement.

And Tai Bai Yun Sheng respected his benefactor deeply. His master’s acknowledgement made him feel there was value in him being alive. A mysterious force and a completely new environment attracted his interest.

He had been at the peak of mortals and had experienced all that the mortal world could provide, but in the journey of immortals, he was a child that had just begun to move.

The fifteen year lifespan Gu was in his pocket. He was no longer worried and guilty. He chose to believe Fang Yuan, not only because Fang Yuan explained everything and there were not many pieces of evidence he could contest, but even more importantly –

In the very depths of his heart, he wanted to believe in Fang Yuan!

Every single person who was cheated, was it because they were stupid?

No, it was only because they wanted to believe in it from the depths of their heart.

“Here, your Immortal Gu.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng tossed Fixed Immortal Travel and flying bear phantom Gu to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan nonchalantly accepted them; this casual attitude towards Immortal Gu caused another ripple in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s heart and trust.

But he received a great shock when Fang Yuan brought out the glass owner token, as at the next moment, he appeared in another round.

Tall and ancient trees were everywhere. Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were within a dense forest.

Roars and howls interlinked together, giant trees pulled out their roots and stood up, turning into tall treemen.

Within a few moments, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were surrounded by treemen one after another.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a grim expression; one treeman was nothing to him, but the number of treemen here was extremely astonishing, and to completely exterminate them would require him to pay a significant price.

But the next moment, Fang Yuan lightly waved his glass owner token, and this round immediately became under his control.

The treemen stopped moving forward, their killing intent gone as if it was never there.

While Tai Bai Yun Sheng was wearing a stupefied expression, Fang Yuan grabbed his arm and directly teleported in front of Hei Lou Lan and Ma Hong Yun.

There was already an enormous change in the situation here.

Frost Jade Peacock was half-lying on the ground, with Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun turtling up under its wings. Surrounding it were layers after layers of treemen unfolding mad attacks.

Hei Lou Lan was fighting nearby with false emotion fake will Gu resting on his shoulder.

He blocked the attacks of the treemen while also launching attacks at Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun at the same time.

But these attacks were blocked by the light barrier from Frost Jade Peacock before they could even reach their targets.

“Lord Hei Lou Lan, you are also being attacked by the treemen, your situation is the same as ours! We have neither hatred nor grievance between us, why must you try to kill us?” Ma Hong Yun shouted.

Hei Lou Lan snorted: “Didn’t you hear what old ancestor said? Your girl is an otherworldly demon with a mysterious background and will be a cause of endless disasters, she must be eliminated! Who knows if she and the Chang Shan Yin impersonator are on the same side! Old ancestor was about to attack her just earlier, but suddenly disappeared due to some mishap. You have Giant Sun’s bloodline, you are a person of northern plains; you are actually not able to distinguish right and wrong, you dare to shield an otherworldly demon!”

Ma Hong Yun was furious and immediately retorted: “She is not an otherworldly demon that you all claim, she is innocent! Lord Hei Lou Lan, don’t waste your strength in vain, we have already received the land spirit’s recognition; with the land spirit with us, you can’t kill us!”

When Giant Sun’s will was thrown out of the tower, this round did not have any controller and operated by itself; the treemen treated the land spirit, Ma Hong Yun and others as challengers challenging the round.

Hei Lou Lan wanted to kill Zhao Lian Yun in place of Giant Sun’s will. Ma Hong Yun was ready to give up his life to save her, which strongly shook Zhao Lian Yun’s heart and she started feeling true love for him.

Ma Hong Yun had already treated Zhao Lian Yun with earnest feelings; the two loved each other, and the land spirit acknowledged them as its masters by its own accord.

In this dangerous situation, the land spirit raised a defensive barrier around them, protecting them from the fatal attacks of the treemen and Hei Lou Lan.

As for Chang Li, she had already died miserably under the attacks of the treemen.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng appeared on the crown of a treeman, observing the battle situation.

“Ma Hong Yun... he actually obtained the land spirit’s recognition. Hmph, this kid’s dogshit luck is truly powerful.” Fang Yuan mumbled with a complex expression.

“You know him?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was somewhat astonished as he had not thought the grand Fang Yuan would actually recognize this rank three initial stage minor character.

“It is you!” Hei Lou Lan quickly sensed the distant Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng; his eyes opened wide as he swiftly jumped back like he was facing a great enemy.

His eyes twitched and his heart had already sunk.

Giant Sun’s will had suddenly disappeared, and the mysterious man impersonating Chang Shan Yin appeared with Gu Immortal Tai Bai Yun Sheng standing beside him, and the two seemed to have a very close relation at that! This was extremely unfavorable to Hei Lou Lan.

Ma Hong Yun, however, did not sense anything. The defensive barrier raised by the land spirit was shrinking constantly as it was attacked by the innumerable treemen. His and Zhao Lian Yun’s sight were blocked by the dense amount of trees and leaves.

“What do we do now?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng asked calmly while casting a glance towards the gloomy Hei Lou Lan.

Fang Yuan sneered: “We need Imperial Court blessed land’s land spirit, Frost Jade Peacock’s strength to topple True Yang Building! Frost Jade Peacock might have already recognized its masters, but because Giant Sun’s will is not present, the seals on it are not being manipulated and it is barely surviving. Most of its strength had already been sealed again. The defensive barrier is also on the brink of collapse and simply won’t be able to block me. I will go kill Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun. You go deal with Hei Lou Lan and seize the false emotion fake will Gu, I trust that it won’t be a problem with your Gu Immortal battle strength. Let’s move, we don’t have much time!”

“Immortal and mortal are vastly different, it is just like a wide chasm separates them. You don’t need to worry.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng lightly smiled, moving elegantly towards Hei Lou Lan.

Fang Yuan directly shot forward towards Ma Hong Yun.

The surrounding treemen followed him under his control.

“Such a pity... Ma Hong Yun, I originally wanted to use you as a key to control the events of the future. But who told you to block my way? No matter how good your luck is, your death is certain today!” The brimming killing intent in his heart surfaced as a malevolent smile on Fang Yuan’s face.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 617: The reason for overwhelming fortune

Bam bam bam!

Three ten meter tall treemen raised their hammer-like fists as they attacked time and time again, crashing on the light barrier.

Frost Jade Peacock cried out sorrowfully.

Its huge wings were sealed by gold, only the land spirit’s head was still exposed.

“My masters, I cannot hold on anymore.” The land spirit sighed, its long eyelashes trembling slightly. The light barrier was getting weaker, and under the treemen’s endless attacks, it was on the brink of collapsing.

What was more scary was, Fang Yuan was closing in!

Imperial Court blessed land was already in bad shape, and the land spirit, Frost Jade Peacock, was sealed, the remaining strength of the barrier was not a problem for Fang Yuan, he could break through it any moment.

The fatal threat had already arrived, but Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun still had no idea.

Even though they could not sense Fang Yuan, the thick aura of death was suffocating them.

Zhao Lian Yun was silent and did not speak, she hid in Ma Hong Yun’s arms as she shut her eyes.

After all, she was an ordinary woman.

Ma Hong Yun continually comforted her in a soft voice, even though he felt no hope himself.

“It’s over.” Fang Yuan shot out like lightning, stepping on twigs and branches as he entered the innermost layer of the treeman encirclement.

But just when he was about to execute the finishing blow, as he was charging, Mo Yao shouted in his head: “Eh? This aura! Wait... stop quickly!”

“What is it?” Fang Yuan’s momentum was lost, he stopped at a high area on a tree as he asked in suspicion.

Ever since Mo Yao’s will entered his head, he had never felt such intense emotions from her before!

At this moment, Mo Yao showed herself in Fang Yuan’s mind.

She had tears all over her face as her slim body was shivering, she was muttering: “This aura, this aura... there’s no mistake, there’s absolutely no mistake! This is the aura of fortune rivalling heaven Gu!”

“Fortune rivalling heaven Gu?!” Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, as he immediately recalled.

Mo Yao had researched deeply about Eighty-Eight True Yang Building in her lifetime, taking a huge risk to enter the true inheritance secluded domain for her lover Bo Qing.

Her original motive was to obtain the supreme true inheritance of luck path, she wanted to steal the fortune rivalling heaven Gu in it.

But in the end, she only succeeded partially.

As she spent a lot of effort and exerted all her strength, she was able to create a crack in the luck path true inheritance.

However, fortune rivalling heaven Gu flew into this crack and vanished into thin air.

But Mo Yao did not return empty handed, she obtained a portion of the luck path inheritance’s details. Combined with her refinement path grandmaster foundation, she eventually refined calamity beckoning Gu.

But calamity beckoning Gu was inferior to fortune rivalling heaven Gu, Mo Yao used it to help Bo Qing with his tribulation, and in the end both of them died.

Eventually, Fang Yuan found Mo Yao’s inheritance and refined calamity beckoning Gu once again, accepting Mo Yao’s request to return the rank seven Gu House Water Pavilion to Spirit Affinity House.

Now, Mo Yao felt the aura of fortune rivalling heaven Gu, this was a crucial Immortal Gu that she had failed to obtain after spending her entire life and putting in immeasurable effort.

It was understandable that she had become so agitated and emotional.

“Fortune rivalling heaven Gu’s aura is on this lad! I can’t believe it, I, Mo Yao, spent my entire life and nearly died in the secluded domain, but eventually the fortune rivalling heaven Gu escaped and this mortal lad got it by chance. Hehehe, is this life?” Mo Yao raised her head and sighed, as she laughed and cried, her tone was extremely dejected.

Fang Yuan squinted, his eyes glowing with cold light.

He asked in his heart: “That means fortune rivalling heaven Gu is currently on Ma Hong Yun? Can you confirm that?!”

“Of course, I can never forget the aura of fortune rivalling heaven Gu!” Mo Yao replied unhesitatingly.

She continued and said: “Fortune rivalling heaven Gu is a one time expenditure rank eight Gu. It is formless and ethereal, being in essence a lump of luck, it is extremely difficult to capture with ordinary methods. Back then, my main body could not capture it, thus it managed to fly away from the scene and vanish without a trace. Even True Yang Building could not trap it. It must’ve escaped to northern plains, roaming until it landed on that lad!”

“So it is a one time expenditure Gu...” Fang Yuan was extremely disappointed.

Fortune rivalling heaven Gu was the greatest treasure in Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path inheritance, it had extremely great value.

Fang Yuan was unable to gain benefits in the true inheritance secluded domain, but if he could take fortune rivalling heaven Gu away from Ma Hong Yun, that would be the best.

But unfortunately, fortune rivalling heaven could only be used once before it vanished.

“Fang Yuan, you have to be careful! Fortune rivalling heaven Gu is extremely special, back then Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had fortuitous encounters endlessly, time after time he would turn disasters into blessings, he unceasingly had great luck, and he relied on this Gu to a great extent. Ma Hong Yun is affected by fortune rivalling heaven Gu, he is a true child of luck! His luck could be said to be ranked at number one in the five regions!! The luck that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had back then would very possibly be replicated in him. Although luck is formless and ethereal, it is a part of strength and cannot be underestimated!” Mo Yao quickly said anxiously.

“I know what to do.” Fang Yuan held in his killing intent, his expression turning cold as he stopped on the tree branch, not attacking abruptly.

He looked down from above, at Ma Hong Yun and others, allowing the treemen below him to attack.

Actually, the two were not too far from each other, but even Frost Jade Peacock did not discover him.

This showed how weak the land spirit was right now.

It was obvious at one glance that the two sides had great difference in strength, it seemed that victory was in sight, and killing Ma Hong Yun was extremely easy.

But Fang Yuan did not think so, he was once a Gu Immortal, his vision surpassed mortals.

He understood: These so called paths — wisdom path, refinement path, metal path, time path and others, they looked like they were combinations of complex series of Gu worms gathered together, but in actuality, they were the deciphering of one’s understanding towards heaven and earth, towards the mysteries of the universe.

Luck path was the same.

Based on Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s example, one could see that luck path, even compared to other paths, could more deeply explain the mysteries of heaven and earth in some aspect.

Fang Yuan had never looked down on Ma Hong Yun, he had always been vigilant towards him.

Because his previous life’s memories made him understand how high Ma Hong Yun’s future achievements would be.

In his previous life, Ma Hong Yun became the pillar of northern plains, the leader that resisted the attack of central continent Gu Immortals! When Fang Yuan was killed by the barrage of Gu Immortals, he was still growing and developing.

Fang Yuan knew about Ma Hong Yun’s growth, and now he finally understood the origin of Ma Hong Yun’s heaven defying luck.

That was, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s greatest achievement in luck path — fortune rivalling heaven Gu!

And the cause of all this was Mo Yao who was residing in his mind!

Luck did not have any physical form, and it could not be touched, but Fang Yuan knew the ability of this mystical power.

“No wonder Giant Sun’s will purposely chose Hei Lou Lan and Ma Hong Yun as the people to become the land spirit’s master. Hei Lou Lan is the strongest person among his bloodline descendants, while Ma Hong Yun had fortune rivalling heaven Gu.”

Fang Yuan felt that this situation was troublesome.

Although Ma Hong Yun was a tiny rank three Gu Master, he had the power of a rank eight Immortal Gu protecting him!

A rank eight Immortal Gu, only inferior to rank nine, such as the wisdom Gu and strength Gu of legends. It had absurd and unimaginable strength, anyone who underestimated it would face a pitiful end.

Fang Yuan was only a mortal, back then in the true inheritance secluded domain, he could not even get close to the rank seven human qi Gu, not to mention the rank eight fortune rivalling heaven Gu.

Ma Hong Yun looked harmless, but in all his experiences, when did he ever suffer a true loss? Every time, he benefited from difficulties and had endless fortuitous encounters, all those who wished to harm or kill him faced a terrible end.

Although every time he did not personally take action, but there would always be an external force or accident, along with a series of small coincidences, all of these added together to form a shocking power!

Fang Yuan suddenly thought of Giant Sun’s will.

Earlier, Giant Sun’s will wanted to exterminate Zhao Lian Yun, but Ma Hong Yun protected her with his life. This was as if Giant Sun’s will had become an enemy of Ma Hong Yun.

Just as Giant Sun’s will was about to strike, Fang Yuan appeared, pulling out True Yang Building and causing the heavenly tribulation to strike him.

“Even Giant Sun’s will fell prey huh...” Fang Yuan looked at this from another angle and was shocked.

“I have the glass owner token, I can check the situation inside the entire Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. Why did I not strike earlier? Actually, it was completely unintentional! Or maybe... I heard that Zhao Lian Yun was an otherworldly demon and wanted to protect her, I was curious and wanted to investigate this?” Fang Yuan recalled the scene.

Giant Sun’s will’s was expelled from True Yang Building, he could be said to be the culprit. But the timing was too coincidental, it allowed Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun to escape death.

“If I suddenly attack Ma Hong Yun, would I be like Giant Sun’s will, will an outside force intervene, or will an accident occur?”

Fang Yuan grabbed his glass owner token, considering his plans again.

“Wait!” Fang Yuan thought about it again: “What I’ve heard on this matter was only Mo Yao’s statement. It seems to be credible, but what if she lied to me due to some special reason?”

Fang Yuan suddenly thought of this.

Thus, he asked Mo Yao in his heart: “Strange, earlier when I used luck inspection Gu, I observed the luck of everyone in the sacred palace. If Ma Hong Yun had the fortune rivalling heaven Gu, why did I not discover it? I could only see that the two with the highest luck were Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.”

Mo Yao seemed to have predicted this question, she immediately answered: “What’s so strange about this? Fortune rivalling heaven Gu is a rank eight Immortal Gu, your luck inspection Gu is only a rank five mortal Gu, an investigative Gu that can allow a Gu Master to see luck despite its formlessness. How can a rank five investigative Gu discover the luck created by a rank eight Immortal Gu?”

“If I cannot see it, how can I be sure that Ma Hong Yun has fortune rivalling heaven Gu’s influence on him?” Fang Yuan did not relent, he continued asking.

“Oh Fang Yuan, you are too suspicious.” Mo Yao sighed, immediately answering: “There is a method to make sure. That is to use investigative Gu and check your own luck. Every time you act against the child of luck, because of the mutual influence between luck, your luck will become bad, or even worse. If you do not believe me, you can check it that way.”

Time was limited, Fang Yuan immediately used luck inspection Gu.

His vision changed abruptly.

Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun’s luck were rather tiny, they were the same as ordinary people.

Meanwhile, there was a massive black luck, almost three hundred meters tall, high enough to pierce heaven and earth!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 618: Great Strength True Martial Physique

This black luck aura was so dark that it reached the point of being extremely oppressive. The coffin shaped aura was tightly covering Fang Yuan.

Since an unknown time ago, the black aura on Fang Yuan had become much larger and much deeper.

Far away, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan were engaged in an intense battle.

The luck aura of the two were exceptionally clear.

Above Hei Lou Lan was still the azure luck aura that gave a lasting feeling like a towering tree. The luck on Tai Bai Yun Sheng, however, was smaller than before, not even one-sixth of the original amount; it was no longer the bright burning red cloud, instead it was the shade of heavy evening mist that almost looked like a dark cloud.

Fang Yuan moved his sight back to above him and started testing like Mo Yao said.

Just like Mo Yao said, whenever he thought of attacking Ma Hong Yun, the black coffin luck on him enlarged a little and its dark shade seemed to become even gloomier.

“Fang Yuan, you should leave this troubled place as quickly as possible. The black coffin luck on you right now is too dense and too frightening. Your life is under great threat now! Don’t underestimate luck just because it is ethereal, just think of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s unrivalled powers. You are deep in danger right now, the black coffin luck has not worked its magic yet, but the karma will hit you eventually, it is only that the time is not ripe yet.”

Mo Yao continued to persuade Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan coldly snorted and replied with a resolute will: “Asking me to retreat? Being scared off by merely bad luck? Hehe, how could that be possible!”

He narrowed his eyes, his lips slightly curled up, revealing his snow-white teeth as he looked down from the cover of the treetop: “No matter how bad the luck becomes, it cannot attack me directly. It will need to rely on external influences to kill me. Right now, at this moment, at this place, I want to see who can obstruct me!”

Killing intent surged and bubbled in Fang Yuan’s heart.

He believed in the power of luck path, but he believed in himself even more!

He needed to kill Ma Hong Yun!!

He had to try!!!

If Fang Yuan cowered just because of luck, would it conform to his style?

Ordinary people would feel regret after facing the consequences, but he Fang Yuan would not feel any!

“Have you gone crazy? That is a rank eight Immortal Gu!” Mo Yao screamed when she felt the dense killing intent in Fang Yuan.

“Hehehe, precisely because the enemy is this strong, the battle would be even more interesting, wouldn’t it?” Fang Yuan instead laughed freely. Right now, he no longer had short hair of Chang Shan Yin, but had long black hair that fluttered freely with the wind and his countenance revealed a crazed recklessness.

He was never against bullying the weak, but even more than that, he had the bravery to fight the strong.

How could one obtain a tiger cub without entering the tiger’s den?

If he did not stake it all at this moment, then when should he?!

“Fate teases the turbulent sea, cowardly insects avoid waves and flow along the current. A brave man does not need much wisdom, there is not regret or pain even if his body crumbles.” Fang Yuan mumbled before restraining his crazed mood, his expression turning tranquil. ( )

“Lunatic, you have gone mad...” Mo Yao continued to mutter.

Right now, Fang Yuan’s killing intent had accumulated to the peak.

The black coffin luck aura above him subsequently inflated, expanding by three times within moments!

“Let me see who will save you! Fortune rivalling heaven Gu, let me look at your might.”

Fang Yuan made a motion to attack.

BOOOM!

An explosion occurred; the majestic wind current it created formed into a strong gale that pressed on from a distance.

Hei Lou Lan was standing unstably; while Tai Bai Yun Sheng got up from the crater, fresh blood flowing from his mouth.

He looked at Hei Lou Lan who was floating in the air, shock apparent on his face: “You are actually...”

Before he finished his words, Hei Lou Lan charged at him again.

BOOM!

Ground shook and dust surged everywhere.

“Ten extreme physique.” Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk as he muttered the answer in place of Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

He had never imagined Hei Lou Lan to actually have the ten extreme physique. And from the looks of it, it was extremely likely to be the great strength true martial physique of the ten extreme physiques!

Several breaths later, a shadow flew out from the dust.

It was Tai Bai Yun Sheng!

His hair was a mess, dust covered his face; his chest was caved in till it revealed the deathly white bones.

Blood sprayed out like a spring.

But a green light soon covered his body and the blood-flow immediately stopped; the heavy injuries on his body also quickly recovered.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng had exchanged intel back at Hu Immortal blessed land. And he knew Tai Bai Yun Sheng possessed two Immortal Gu, landscape as before Gu and man as before Gu.

However, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was clearly not using the Immortal Gu Man as Before, but instead ordinary healing Gu.

Immortal Gu Man as Before required immortal essence to be activated, and had extremely great effects, but it was not easy to gather immortal essence. Thus, unless as a final resort, Gu Immortals would not easily use Immortal Gu.

“Tai Bai Yun Sheng, you are a grand Gu Immortal but are afraid of me, a mortal?” A roar shook the sky and earth.

Hei Lou Lan flew to the sky and started hunting down Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

“Such an intense ten extreme aura... terrifying! Hei Lou Lan not only has the ten extreme physique, he is also already on the verge of self-detonation!” Fang Yuan was able to decipher many details right now.

Back then at Qing Mao mountain, Fang Yuan had relied on Bai Ning Bing’s northern dark ice soul physique to cross realms and fight a strong enemy, and overturn the situation.

Bai Ning Bing was only rank three back then!

As the ten extreme physique’s cultivation increased, the power of their self-detonation would increase sharply by many times.

The self-detonation of the rank five peak stage Hei Lou Lan would be beyond compare, so terrifying that even killing Gu Immortals would not be a problem!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a bitter expression on his face, with not even the slightest battle intent.

Previously, Hei Lou Lan’s ten extreme physique was sealed by Immortal Gu Dark Limit, not leaking out even a trace of its aura.

Now that he had torn off the seal, his majestic aura would cause terror to emerge in one’s heart.

He was now a large human shaped bomb, who would dare to approach him? What if he exploded!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had just advanced to a Gu Immortal, wouldn’t it be injustice if he was killed by the desperate Hei Lou Lan in his impending death?

“I had never thought Hei Lou Lan would actually have great strength true martial physique of the ten extreme physiques. And he has actually managed to grow to this extent!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng fled with astonishing speed.

He was a flying master and his cloud path Gu was also one of the better movement Gu.

Hei Lou Lan was hunting him down from behind but could only look helplessly as the distance between them increased further and further.

Rumble!

Hei Lou Lan was furious, suddenly throwing a punch.

This punch had terrifying momentum as it directly broke the sound barrier and burst the surrounding air!

Following this punch, a fist qi suddenly flew out, forming into a strength path phantom figure.

Fang Yuan had also attacked with many beast strength phantoms back in southern border, but the phantom that Hei Lou Lan summoned was not beast shaped, instead it was human shaped.

And this human strength phantom was a vivid image of Hei Lou Lan.

The obese body like that of a bear, the jagged snow-white teeth that were like daggers. A pair of triangular eyes which flashed with malevolent glint. It was truly a second Hei Lou Lan!

“Even if I combine all the beast strength phantoms I used back at southern border, they might not be the human strength phantom’s match!” Fang Yuan’s eyelids twitched.

He had extraordinary judgemental ability and immediately saw the extremely high battle strength that this human strength phantom possessed. It was full of spirituality; once it was summoned, it could chase the enemy of its own will.

This was the strength of rank five peak stage great strength true martial physique!

Simply terrifying!

But how powerful this strength was, Fang Yuan could not estimate it easily. Unless he personally went to battle and experienced it for himself.

But he was sure this terrifying battle strength had already surpassed mortal realm.

It could even be said that Hei Lou Lan was currently at a state that was half a step to Gu Immortal realm.

Ten extreme physique originally broke apart conventions, they were existences that could shatter opponents at the same realm!

Back at Qing Mao mountain, Fang Yuan used the ten extreme physique to survive an ordeal. But this time, the ten extreme physique was his enemy.

“If not for the fact that Gu Masters obtain a qualitative improvement in their body’s defense when they advance to Gu Immortal, Tai Bai Yun Sheng would be in greater danger!”

“Tai Bai Yun Sheng had advanced to Gu Immortal just now, he has yet to accumulate the foundation of a Gu Immortal. Moreover, he is a healing Gu Master, but has to face against this tyrannical and battle-thirsty enemy like Hei Lou Lan...”

For a moment, thoughts shone in Fang Yuan’s mind like sparks.

“The strongest advantage of a Gu Immortal over mortals lies in their unlimited primeval essence. But Hei Lou Lan’s main cultivation path is strength path which relies on primeval essence the least among all paths and has the lowest primeval essence consumption. This advantage is thus almost non-existent.”

“There is also Hei Lou Lan’s killer move, it actually went in an innovative new direction, creating such a sentient human strength phantom. In just a short period, he has already created five to six human strength phantoms. These phantoms are anything but ordinary, filled with spirituality, they actually flanked and blocked Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s retreat paths; this is truly unimaginable!”

Unleashing human shaped phantoms was not a surprising thing.

The crucial point was that he could create such intelligent human shaped phantoms!

Moreover, all of these human shaped phantoms had astonishing strength. The might of their strength and wisdom made even Fang Yuan feel apprehensive.

“No wonder Hei Lou Lan died suddenly in my previous life. So it was because he had the ten extreme physique!” Fang Yuan suddenly realized.

Although he had rebirthed, it did not mean he knew everything.

Right now, this unexpected twist disrupted his plans.

“Damn it...” Fang Yuan subconsciously tightened his grip on the glass owner token.

According to his original plan, he would have gone with Giant Sun’s will’s train of thoughts, using false emotion fake will Gu to subdue the land spirit and become Imperial Court blessed land’s owner.

He needed to subdue false emotion fake will Gu first to accomplish this.

However, false emotion fake will Gu was one of the ordinary true inheritances and it contained a portion of Giant Sun’s will in it. How could a mere mortal like Fang Yuan refine an Immortal Venerable’s will?

Only Gu Immortal’s will had such a possibility.

Thereupon, Fang Yuan used his eloquence to dupe Tai Bai Yun Sheng into become his ally; it was to make use of his will to refine false emotion fake will Gu.

But when he returned to True Yang Building, the situation had already changed beyond his expectations.

Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun obtained Frost Jade Peacock’s recognition, becoming Imperial Court blessed land’s owners.

Frost Jade Peacock’s condition for recognizing its masters was a Gu Master couple who had to have true love for each other.

Ma Hong Yun was a rank three Gu Master, but Zhao Lian Yun was still a young girl and had not begun her cultivation journey yet.

However, she was still recognized as a master!

This showed the condition of ‘Gu Master’ was only speaking of aptitude. As long as the person had the possibility of becoming a Gu Master, they could receive recognition. In Fang Yuan’s previous life, Zhao Lian Yun was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, she naturally had strong cultivation aptitude.

This small details were not worthy bickering over. In Fang Yuan’s opinion, what he needed to do were two things.

First was seizing false emotion fake will Gu. It was on Hei Lou Lan, and Fang Yuan had given this task to Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Second was killing Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun. As long as he killed them, Imperial Court blessed land would return to a ownerless state.

After completely these two matters, Tai Bai Yun Sheng could help Fang Yuan to refine false emotion fake will Gu and take control of the land spirit. Even if Giant Sun’s will returns then, Fang Yuan had the capital to contend against him.

However, right now, none of these two goals were achieved.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 619: The might of overwhelming fortune

Hei Lou Lan revealed his true trump card, displaying he had one of the ten extreme physiques and was close to self-detonation, it had shocking battle strength, with him managing to suppress the Gu Immortal Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and he was chasing after him.

This was quite a shock, but after some consideration, it was nothing strange.

“If he doesn’t defeat Hei Lou Lan, he would not get false emotion fake will Gu. Without false emotion fake will Gu, how will I subdue the land spirit? Damn it...” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth.

His plan was ruined.

“Is this the power of fortune rivalling heaven? The moment I wanted to strike, such an accident occurred!” Fang Yuan took a look at Ma Hong Yun, his expression turning grim.

For some reason, the killing intent in his heart intensified.

He crossed his arms, standing high up in the tree as his mouth showed a cold smile: “It is getting more interesting, fortune rivalling heaven... hmph, now that Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng are fighting, if I really want to kill you, what can you do to resist me?”

This time, Fang Yuan did not go personally, but instead manipulated the treemen.

The treemen at the most inner layer raised their hammer-like fists highly in the air.

Under Fang Yuan’s manipulation, they slammed down at the same time.

Bam!

With a loud bang, Frost Jade Peacock cried out pitifully as its raised head fell onto the ground.

The defensive barrier that it had erected with all its effort was smashed, it turned into golden dust as it quickly vanished into nothingness.

Even the last obstacle was removed.

The closest treeman took a huge step forward, it stretched out its huge arm as it rapidly grabbed at Ma and Zhao.

Zhao Lian Yun shouted shrilly, while Ma Hong Yun held her in his arms, his back facing the treeman’s palm.

“Die.” Fang Yuan muttered, completely ignoring the black coffin luck above his head that was rapidly growing.

The treeman’s palm was towering over Ma and Zhou, it only needed to squeeze lightly and Ma and Zhao would turn into meat paste.

But at this moment!

A huge tremor occurred in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

The entire place was shaking!

“Scoundrel, you dare to chase me out, quickly accept your death!!” A loud voice could be heard, piercing heaven and earth, and causing Fang Yuan’s eardrums to feel slight pain.

Hearing this familiar voice, Ma Hong Yun raised his head in joy, saying: “It’s old ancestor, old ancestor did not die, he is back again!”

Hei Lou Lan expressed joy similarly on his face.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression was pale, if Giant Sun’s will returned, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would display the might of a rank eight Immortal Gu House, it could definitely trap a Gu Immortal, this was no joke!

“How can this be! Even though I spent some time inside Hu Immortal blessed land, but fifteen minutes was far from over.” Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk to the size of a pin, he was very stunned.

He quickly used the glass owner token and checked the situation.

Outside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, there were layers and layers of golden sand-like light particles.

That was the colossal Giant Sun’s will.

He was still growling furiously, as he resisted the assault of the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, he constantly exerted pressure and attempted to barge into Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

“The Giant Sun’s will that is outside did not come in. Then who is this Giant Sun’s will here? Where did he come from?!”

Fang Yuan was very perplexed.

But this Giant Sun’s will that just appeared did not want to give him time to think.

Heaven and earth shook, those which were running, those which were helping Tai Bai Yun Sheng, those which were standing in place, those which were trapping Ma Hong Yun, all the treemen stopped their actions, standing still like statues.

Fang Yuan’s face was red, the glass owner token in his hand was hot like fire!

Cracks started appearing on the owner token, in just a moment, the glass owner token was on the brink of collapsing!

“Damn it!” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, this mysterious Giant Sun’s will was getting rid of the central continent Gu Immortals’ arrangements rapidly.

The third arrangement that central continent Gu Immortals made was extremely hidden, it was not easy for Giant Sun’s will to find it.

But right now, Fang Yuan had completely unleashed it, there was no way to hide it, this mysterious Giant Sun’s will found it easily.

Once the glass owner token breaks, the third arrangement would lose effect, and the Giant Sun’s will outside would be free to enter and exit True Yang Building!

By that time, even if Giant Sun’s will did not use Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he could easily kill Fang Yuan using his own ability.

An unprecedented danger had descended upon Fang Yuan!

“Don’t tell me I need to use Spring Autumn Cicada? No! The risk of using Spring Autumn Cicada is too high, I am not at that stage yet! I have to persevere, I can still go on!” Fang Yuan growled angrily, he sent his will into the glass owner token.

Bam.

The next moment, through the glass owner token, his will clashed with the Giant Sun’s will that had appeared out of nowhere.

Ugh.

Fang Yuan’s body shuddered, he spurted out a mouthful of blood as the will he injected was completely obliterated!

His head hurt intensely, like it was going to break apart. His mind suffered a huge blow, as Mo Yao’s will screamed continually.

Fang Yuan’s body shook, he felt dizzy and could not stand, after enduring for a few breaths, he fell from the tall tree branch.

Swoosh!

Wind blew, as the three closest treemen suddenly stretched out their tree vine hands, grabbing at Fang Yuan with ill intent.

Fang Yuan lost the contest, Giant Sun’s will had regained control of this round, thus, the treemen also became Fang Yuan’s enemies, they would not rest until they killed Fang Yuan!

Because of this sudden event, Ma and Zhou escaped death, under the influence of their will to live, they started escaping blindly among the chaotic tree roots.

At the moment of danger, Fang Yuan was barely able to regain awareness.

He shouted lightly, injecting his primeval essence into his Gu worms, mustering his strength and punching and kicking the large tree hand that was coming for him.

Bam bam bam!

After three explosive sounds, the fists were shattered as Fang Yuan adjusted his balance in the air, landing hastily.

The aftermath of competing against Giant Sun’s will remained, his ears were buzzing and his hearing was nearly completely gone.

But Fang Yuan had no regret.

In fact, he opened his mouth, laughing loudly: “Excellent!”

The earlier clash of wills was not elegant in the least, but it not only allowed

Fang Yuan to keep his glass owner token, he even found out the truth about Giant Sun’s will.

This newly appeared and mysterious will was not as powerful as expected.

He did not expect Fang Yuan to make such a choice either.

This will was split into three, the largest portion of it was dealing with the third arrangement, a small portion was busy fighting for the control rights of this round, while the last portion was victorious in the contest against Fang Yuan through the glass owner token.

In the end, Fang Yuan’s injected will exterminated the victorious Giant Sun’s will, and combined with the third arrangement, although his will was wiped out, he successfully caused harm to that large portion of Giant Sun’s will.

Thus, Giant Sun’s will was only left with a small portion that was controlling this round.

Giant Sun’s will fell into extreme anger, he did not expect this tiny mortal to have the guts to challenge his will directly.

He did not expect that this mortal had stored so many wills in his mind either.

This was all thanks to Mo Yao honestly.

In order to deal with Mo Yao, Fang Yuan stored large amounts of wills in his mind as a back up.

He had special will, play will, deliberate will, keep will, heart will and others, he had a variety of many wills.

Giant Sun’s will greatly underestimated Fang Yuan’s capacity, and as he was anxious to save the situation, he was counterattacked by Fang Yuan and in the end, was caught off guard and suffered a great loss.

“Scoundrel, I will decimate your corpse!” Giant Sun’s will was angered to his boiling point, he continued to manipulate the treemen to attack.

Fang Yuan dodged left and right, using all his effort to heal his injuries.

These treemen had thick skin and flesh, even if their branches, arms and legs were broken, they would not die, they had very strong vitality. It was not a good idea to fight them head on.

While he dodged, Fang Yuan’s injuries recovered rapidly.

He quickly realized that the treemen were not only attacking him, but also Tai Bai Yun Sheng and even Ma Hong Yun.

More accurately, they were attacking Zhao Lian Yun who was beside Ma Hong Yun.

Ma and Zhao escaped under the pursuit of the treemen, they were in a dangerous situation.

They frantically escaped without a goal, but they actually got near to Fang Yuan.

“Please save us!” Ma Hong Yun finally saw Fang Yuan, shouting loudly for help.

“So naive.” Fang Yuan laughed sinisterly, immediately going closer to him.

As the two sides got closer, Fang Yuan shouted loudly: “Giant Sun’s will is trying to kill you, we have a common enemy, come here!”

“Be careful!” Zhao Lian Yun who was running showed hesitation and worry.

But the current situation was, only Fang Yuan could protect them.

They were unable to hold on much longer.

If they stayed, they would definitely get killed by the treemen, if they went to Fang Yuan, they at least had a chance of survival.

“Save, of course we’ll save them! Quickly save them!!” In his mind, Mo Yao’s will suddenly shouted. /

“What?” Fang Yuan thought he heard wrongly.

Mo Yao spoke quickly: “Do you still not understand? Giant Sun’s will is a huge special will, he knows the power of fortune rivalling heaven Gu, his intention is not to deal with Ma Hong Yun. But when he was first formed, his main body had placed a rule on him, that was to exterminate any otherworldly demon he sees!”

“She’s an otherworldly demon, don’t tell me you are not interested! But the most important thing is — if you save that Zhao Lian Yun, it will be the best weapon against Giant Sun’s will. Since Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun are truly in love, they will definitely be enemies with Giant Sun’s will. By then, Giant Sun’s will would be dealt with using the power of fortune rivalling heaven Gu.”

Mo Yao’s words were very moving.

At once, the hidden killing intent that he had towards Ma Hong Yun shrunk.

“Wait! Ma and Zhao are in grave danger now, they might get squashed or trampled by the treemen at any moment! If I appear now, wouldn’t I be saving them?” Fang Yuan suddenly thought of this, becoming stunned!

Although Ma Hong Yun was rank three, he was too hard to kill!

The first time Fang Yuan’s killing intent appeared, Hei Lou Lan showed his trump card, he unleashed his extreme physique and chased after Tai Bai Yun Sheng!

The secome time he had killing intent, Giant Sun’s will came out of nowhere and gravely injured Fang Yuan.

And now, his ears were buzzing and his mind was weakened by at least thirty percent. Even though he protected the glass owner token and caused harm to Giant Sun’s will, he lost control over this round.

Now, Fang Yuan had his third wave of killing intent, and Mo Yao was the one who stopped him! But the problem was, she made perfect sense! Even Fang Yuan himself was convinced!

The reason Fang Yuan wanted to kill Ma Hong Yun earlier was to change the land spirit’s ownership.

But now that Hei Lou Lan showed his true battle strength and protected the false emotion fake will Gu, thus Fang Yuan did not have it. What use was there in killing the two?

“Don’t tell me that this third time, the one stopping me is actually myself?” As he was struck by reality, Fang Yuan was tongue-tied!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 620: Stopped by himself?

Fang Yuan truly experienced the might of fortune rivalling heaven Gu now.

This was a form of helplessness, like being played by destiny, where one would not know whether to laugh or cry, and the more they struggled, the deeper they would fall into despair!

Forced by the situation and in order to avoid calamity, it seemed Fang Yuan could only choose to maximize his benefits.

The distance between the two sides rapidly shortened.

To save them, or not to save them?

Mo Yao repeatedly screamed in Fang Yuan’s mind: “Save, save them!”

Reason also told Fang Yuan that saving Ma Hong Yun would make him stand on the same side as Fortune Rivalling Heaven and he could borrow its strength to deal with Giant Sun’s will.

However!

There was a voice in Fang Yuan’s heart. This voice growled, shouted and roared!

“Save!? Am I going to surrender? Am I going to lower my head? I can kill him with one slap! What am I afraid of? Afraid of these two trash? Even Fortune Rivalling Heaven cannot obstruct me!!”

Fang Yuan’s ears were buzzing non-stop, but this voice kept on getting louder, gradually suppressing every other sound.

He felt bursts of intense headaches.

He felt his mouth go dry in front of these choices.

That voice in his heart, however, was getting louder and clearer till his heart started to tremor!

Every howl, every roar, every shout, seemed to throw a bundle of firewood into the fury in Fang Yuan’s heart.

The burning flames surged!

That was the fire of ambition, his fighting spirit, his unyielding, obstinate spirit of challenging the strong!

The flames soared; Fang Yuan’s eyes turned bloodshot, his blood boiled and surged like the surging waves!

“Come, let me send you off personally!” Fang Yuan spoke, his voice hoarse like sand gritting on iron.

He did what he would normally not do, going against his style of prioritizing benefits.

With a malevolent expression and eyes shining with sharp killing intent, he smashed apart the giant treemen in front of him, tearing the countless twisting and coiling vines.

He reached Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun.

Then...

He lifted his fist!

Before his punch even struck out, the terrifying fist aura already condensed into solid. The brutal killing intent almost solidified even the air!

“Ahhh!” Ma Hong Yun’s eyes opened wide, never having expected Fang Yuan to have such resolute killing intent. He turned pale with fright, and in his panic, he unexpectedly stumbled and fell to the ground.

“Ouch!” Zhao Lian Yun had been holding hands with Ma Hong Yun, and was thus also pulled down to the ground.

This unforeseen event shocked Fang Yuan.

He was already extremely vigilant because of the repeated accidents. But he soon found that this small accident only prolonged the time he struck them by a little.

At the same time, two giant treemen also reached Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun.

No matter which treeman it was, it would only need one foot to crush these two to pieces. But Giant Sun’s will truly did not want to harm Ma Hong Yun, and could only mobilize vines to scuttle to Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun, to separate them and then kill Zhao Lian Yun!

Five treemen suddenly pierced out of the ground at this moment and coincidentally blocked Fang Yuan’s way.

This strong defense required Fang Yuan to waste at least a dozen breath of time.

Giant Sun’s will was using his previous tactics again.

At present, the extremely weak land spirit was already booted from the playing field.

False emotion fake will Gu was safe as it was being protected by Hei Lou Lan.

Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun might have become the owners of the blessed land, but as long as Zhao Lian Yun was killed, this connection would be cancelled.

At that time, it would not be too late to salvage the situation by using false emotion fake will Gu to make Hei Lou Lan and Ma Hong Yun the owners of Imperial Court blessed land.

Thus, Giant Sun’s will was obstructing Fang Yuan from killing Ma Hong Yun.

“Damn it! This kind of feeling again, always at the crucial place and at the crucial time...” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, and used all his strength to forcibly break through the defensive line.

Thud thud thud...

Thunder-like collisions occurred one after another. Fang Yuan was like a tiger let loose, his fierce offense directly breaking the treemen’s defense.

The whole process only lasted less than ten breaths!

However, Fang Yuan also had to pay a heavy price. Three enormous wounds were added to Fang Yuan’s body; one ran through his chest, another pierced his back, and another formed a bloody hole on his stomach with the size of a baby’s fist.

His right forearm was severely fractured, his left leg was twisted grotesquely to the side.

“Hahaha!” Fang Yuan, however, howled with laughter!

He could not use his hand and leg for a while, but he still had movement Gu, he could still fly!

He rapidly chased after Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun through the air.

Ma Hong Yun hunched over, protecting Zhao Lian Yun tightly under him. Vines were coiling around them from outside.

These vines wanted to separate the two without harming Ma Hong Yun.

Ma Hong Yun faced off against the vines. But naturally, he was weaker and looked on as he and Zhao Lian Yun were forcibly separated. He bit his lips and glared with furious eyes, but he was powerless!

“No—!” He roared with bloodshot eyes. Despair and pain filled him as he saw his lover about to die in front of him, appearing like a beast forced into a corner.

“Save him quickly, now is the best time to save him! As long as you save them, Ma Hong Yun will definitely feel grateful to you, you can then borrow the strength of his fortune that rivals heaven! Just think, why is Giant Sun’s will not killing Ma Hong Yun – it is to use his luck!!” Mo Yao shouted again, persuading Fang Yuan. / update by

“You really speak a lot of nonsense.” Fang Yuan replied with ruthless coldness.

Success was in front of him, but he instead calmed down, he had no expression on his face, not even the previous malevolent look.

“Die!”

When Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun was in his range, Fang Yuan immediately struck out with a fatal attack.

This attack had earth-shattering power, bursting all the air in front of it.

The incomparably violent power was like an evil dragon rising to heaven, as it shrouded over Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun.

“No!” This time, it was Giant Sun’s will who let out a helpless and desperate shout.

He immediately mobilized the surrounding treemen to use their own bodies to protect Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun.

The tree vines no longer separated the two, instead they attempted to rapidly evacuate them.

But Giant Sun’s will was still feeling dejected.

He knew all these would be of no use. This strike filled with Fang Yuan's pent-up wrath, how could it be so easily blocked and avoided?

The treemen's trunks were smashed apart, the vines also did not have enough time to evacuate Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun. In the end, the attack that still had its peak offensive power was about to directly smash them into pieces.

Even though there were countless treemen filling the vast forest, it was all too late!

Fang Yuan was resolute, erupting with all his strength to break through the defensive line and succeeded in grabbing the crucial moment.

The treemen's movement was slow and they were not good at providing swift reinforcement.

Ma Hong Yun was definitely dead meat!

At this moment, not only Fang Yuan, even Giant Sun's will also thought this so.

Not only did they think so, even Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun did not have any hope of surviving the attack.

Any factors that could influence the situation had seemingly already played their part.

Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Giant Sun's will, Frost Jade Peacock, Fang Yuan, Mo Yao...

All these people or things had shown all their strength by this point.

Time seemed to slow down, Fang Yuan's lips curled up to reveal a smile: "Now, is there anything left that can save Ma Hong Yun?"

However, at the next moment!

Rumble—!

A loud sound rang out, causing huge tremors and making countless trees creak.

Dazzling golden rays of light shone over the whole round.

"Has Giant Sun's will entered True Yang Building?!" Fang Yuan turned grave, but soon discovered that was not the case.

Giant Sun's will was still taking a beating outside the building. Central continent's Gu Immortals had planned for countless years to create the third method; it could never be underestimated.

If not for this, central continent's Gu Immortals would not have been able to overthrow Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and return victorious in Fang Yuan's previous life.

The enormous golden light lump moved like a meteor and before the sound even registered in one's ears, it crashed onto the ground, instantly destroying the surrounding treemen and protecting Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun within it.

"This, isn't this – that luck path supreme true inheritance!" Mo Yao was so shocked she involuntarily screamed out.

"What's going on? Shouldn't this supreme true inheritance be in true inheritance secluded domain, how did it suddenly crash into this round and throw itself towards Ma Hong Yun’s body?!” With no choice, Fang Yuan could only stop his footsteps.

He had already experienced the might of a supreme true inheritance in true inheritance secluded domain.

This was not something he could touch.

‘But why, Ma Hong Yun is covered by this light, but why has nothing happened to him?’

For a moment, Fang Yuan could not help but feel extremely dejected.

He had used all his strength in his third attempt to kill Ma Hong Yun; he had even seen hope a moment ago, the success had seemingly been right in front of him, but he still failed in the end.

“Why did the supreme true inheritance move to Ma Hong Yun? Impossible, this is impossible!” Mo Yao completely lost self-control as she scratched at her head, causing her long hair to become messy, resembling a crazed woman.

This was not surprising.

She had suffered untold hardships, expended all her energy and effort but was only able to open a crack in the luck path true inheritance from which fortune rivalling heaven Gu escaped. Finally, she had no choice but to refine calamity beckoning Gu.

But this calamity beckoning Gu was not able to assist her husband, Bo Qing, causing her and Bo Qing to perish.

But at this moment, she was watching this luck path supreme true inheritance throwing itself at a rank three mortal!

Even if you had fortune that rivalled heaven, isn’t this going overboard?!

‘Why was it not me, I put in so much effort, paid such a huge price, why was it not me?’

‘Why was it this mere mortal, a fool, a kid!’

It is a comparison that could make one die from anger!

Fang Yuan forcibly calmed down and tried hard to remove the unneeded emotions, reflecting on this event.

A bright flash of inspiration seemed to roam around in his mind, but was extremely hard to get a grasp on.

“I understand!” Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s body shook as he grasped this flash of inspiration, and understood this seemingly impossible event.

This supreme true inheritance recognized Ma Hong Yun and not others as its master of its own accord. This was because, Ma Hong Yun had the power of fortune rivalling heaven Gu on him.

Fortune rivalling heaven Gu was the true essence of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path, the quintessential crystallization of luck path. To the supreme true inheritance, it was the leader and the emperor.

But why did the supreme true inheritance not come earlier or later, but chose this exact moment?

Luck path supreme true inheritance was located in true inheritance secluded domain, how could it come here for no rhyme or reason?

These two questions actually pointed to the same factor — Giant Sun’s will!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 621: Fighting Hei Lou Lan

In the true inheritance secluded domain, all of the true inheritances had Giant Sun’s will in them. Otherwise, how could all these fated individuals succeed in taking these inheritances, especially those Immortal Gu?

It was just like charging through rounds in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

In every one of the rounds that had Gu worms as rewards, these Gu worms were all refined by Giant Sun’s will in advance.

When these Gu Masters succeed and obtain the Gu worms, they are able to refine these Gu worms instantly and keep them in their aperture because Giant Sun’s will was purposely letting them have the Gu.

Because of this reason, as long as a Gu Master is willing to give his Gu worm away to someone else, they can always create a phenomenon of ‘instant refinement’.

Earlier, when Giant Sun’s will was slumbering, the refinement of wild Gu worms was extremely slow. When Fang Yuan first ventured into True Yang Building, he made use of this loophole.

Every true inheritance was governed by Giant Sun’s will.

The reason why the luck path supreme true inheritance did not fly towards Ma Hong Yun earlier was due to this.

But now the true inheritance flew into Ma Hong Yun’s arms and made him its master, this was not Giant Sun’s will’s intention.

What Giant Sun’s will wanted was to control Ma Hong Yun, why would he allow him to grow stronger and become more uncontrollable?

Thus, the truth was revealed!

Within the luck path supreme true inheritance, there was no Giant Sun’s will.

Giant Sun’s will retreated on his own, this allowed the supreme true inheritance to act on its own.

Thereafter, the newly created wild Gu will went towards Ma Hong Yun.

This created another question.

Why would Giant Sun’s will retreat for no reason?

Fang Yuan thought about the second time he struck and was about to kill Ma Hong Yun, but out of nowhere Giant Sun’s will appeared!

At this point, it was no longer a mystery.

Fang Yuan used the third method, temporarily expelling Giant Sun’s will out of True Yang Building.

Afterwards, he entered True Yang Building and successfully convinced Tai Bai Yun Sheng to revive Dang Hun mountain.

After that he came back, attempting to control Imperial Court blessed land. During the second attempt when he tried to kill Ma Hong Yun, he was obstructed by a sudden burst of Giant Sun’s will.

At that point, Fang Yuan was very confused.

But now, he understood.

This mysterious Giant Sun’s will was pulled out of those true inheritances.

Giant Sun’s will was anxious at that time, in order to salvage the situation, he took this step.

He almost succeeded by doing this, but unfortunately, Fang Yuan was too resolute, he directly faced off against him.

Eventually, this forcefully extracted Giant Sun’s will was left with a final small portion that controlled this round.

“This means, the luck path supreme true inheritance was able to save Ma Hong Yun because of me? If I did not expel Giant Sun’s will out of the tower, if I did not face off against Giant Sun’s will, why would this happen now?”

“To think that this third attempt was thwarted by myself after all!”

Thinking so, Fang Yuan sighed deeply as his killing intent towards Ma Hong Yun vanished without a trace.

The current Ma Hong Yun was protected by the luck path true inheritance. As a mortal, it was impossible for Fang Yuan to break through this defense.

“Sigh, I told you to save him earlier, you refused to listen!” In his mind, Mo Yao calmed down and sighed in pity.

Her tone carried some grievance: “If you had saved them, you would gain Ma Hong Yun’s recognition and become protected by the luck path true inheritance just like Zhao Lian Yun. The current luck path true inheritance is a newborn wild will, it is like a baby without any internal defenses. If you are inside the luck path inheritance, you will be able to learn about the details of this true inheritance! This is an immense opportunity, but you gave it up...”

Helping Ma Hong Yun would result in benefits. Dealing with Ma Hong Yun would result in Fang Yuan’s current heavy injuries.

Fang Yuan snickered.

He already did it, there was not a bit of regret in his heart.

He quickly retreated while healing his injuries, meanwhile replying to Mo Yao: “Even if I cannot do anything to this luck path true inheritance, do you think Giant Sun’s will would do nothing?”

This luck path true inheritance is one of the three supreme true inheritances inside the true inheritance secluded domain. Why would Giant Sun’s will allow it to acknowledge a new master like this?

In Giant Sun’s will’s heart, it was not unacceptable to pass this luck path true inheritance to Ma Hong Yun.

But Ma Hong Yun’s heart was with an otherworldly demon, that was a huge taboo!

Giant Sun’s will was a special will, when the main body first created it, he assigned a special meaning for it to ‘do its best to slaughter any otherworldly demon it comes into contact with’.

Now that Zhao Lian Yun was protected by the luck path true inheritance, if Giant Sun’s will wanted to kill this otherworldly demon, he would need to remove the luck path true inheritance’s hindrance.

Thus, the entire forest flew into a rage.

Countless treemen were uprooted, encircling the luck path true inheritance.

Large numbers of treemen were entangling with each other, all of their roots and vines were coiling around each other to form huge treemen, each were at least three hundred meters tall, their aura was shocking to Fang Yuan.

Giant Sun’s will put in all its effort in order to kill Zhao Lian Yun!

Fang Yuan managed to retreat successfully.

Exterminating the otherworldly demon was Giant Sun’s will’s most important mission. With the appearance of the luck path true inheritance, his attention was drawn over.

Fang Yuan was a threat that ranked much lower than them.

Giant Sun’s will also knew that he could do nothing to Fang Yuan now. Weighing the two sides, and because Giant Sun’s will had limited strength, he decided to focus solely on dealing with the luck path true inheritance.

Very soon, Fang Yuan got close to the place Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan were fighting at.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was suppressed, but Hei Lou Lan had no ability to claim victory either.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a healing Gu Master and a flying master, the former allowed him to specialize in drawn out battles, while the latter allowed him to escape like a slippery eel, he was hard to pin down.

The two’s battle had turned into a stalemate.

The two fought from the sky to the ground, their attacks were fierce and the battle brought disaster to the nearby trees, causing the surroundings to be full of fallen trees and debris.

“Senior brother Tai Bai, let me help you!” Fang Yuan shouted.

‘Senior brother’, these two words triggered Hei Lou Lan as he immediately thought of central continent. That was because in the five regions, the other four regions were overwhelmingly family based inheritances, only central continent was dominated by a sect based system.

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes were staring wide, as he screamed like a bear: “You are a scoundrel that had planned for a long time indeed! You two sect brothers have hidden yourselves deeply! Right now, since you are seeking your own death, I will grant you your wish!”

Saying this, he aimed at Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng and sent four punches at them.

The fist qi burst out, transforming into a human strength phantom in midair, having Hei Lou Lan’s appearance.

The four fist shadows split up, one of them charged towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng, while the other three went towards Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan was a mortal, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a Gu Immortal, targeting the weakest link was a common strategy.

Three human strength phantoms attacked Fang Yuan, and the last one was to prevent Tai Bai Yun Sheng from reinforcing him.

“Quickly retreat!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was shocked, he gave a quick warning.

He was very familiar with this strength path killer move’s power.

He had obtained a lot of defensive Gu worms in Hu Immortal blessed land thanks to Fang Yuan’s gift.

But after battling for so long, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s defensive Gu worms were mostly dead, he even suffered heavy injuries several times, it showed the power of Hei Lou Lan’s strength path killer move!

Three human strength phantoms flew over with an imposing aura, whipping up a fierce wind.

“What a strong killer move!” Even Mo Yao’s will in his mind praised upon seeing this: “Be careful, Hei Lou Lan’s strength path killer move definitely surpasses your four arm earth king killer move!”

Fang Yuan snickered, he showed no fear but instead, oozed with battle intent, ready to fight.

“Of course I won’t use four arm earth king, because I have an even stronger strength path killer move.” Saying this, he paused for a while, before shouting: “Come, six arm heavenly zombie king!”

Bam!

A formless aura burst out.

The horrifying pressure flooded the surrounding area.

Intense pain could be felt, like surging waves, they attacked his heart!

Fang Yuan however, felt immeasurable pleasure, his body expanded rapidly, his skin lost its gloss and moisture, becoming dark and hard.

His defense rose rapidly!

In just a moment, he transformed into a six metre tall giant.

On his back, six huge monstrous arms grew out, the fingers were thick and scary, each having their own distinctive appearance, it made people feel fear upon seeing them.

Three human strength phantoms arrived before Fang Yuan.

“Good timing.” Fang Yuan muttered, facing them head on with no fear!

As fists and legs clashed, they fought directly!

Bam bam bam...

Thunderous explosions occurred endlessly.

Be it Fang Yuan, or Hei Lou Lan’s three human strength phantoms, they had great power and each of their blows tore through the air.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a worried expression, but after watching for a few breaths’ time, his eyes expanded.

Fang Yuan was a mere mortal, but he could face off against three human strength phantoms at once.

The two were evenly matched!

But the three human strength phantoms had sentience, after failing to take him down, they started cooperating, pincer attacking Fang Yuan from his front, upper left corner, and lower right corner.

“Be careful!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted to warn him, he had previously suffered greatly due to this.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, displaying his grand demeanour.

He had previously activated his killer move, growing six monstrous arms, with his own two arms, he had eight arms.

The eight arms moved in a circular motion, the punches were executed like a fierce rain, it defended him tightly. He managed to completely block the three human strength phantoms attacking from all directions without a single weak point.

“He actually blocked it, this killer move...” Hei Lou Lan’s heart jumped, his expression turned grim.

“Sigh, half an immortal’s battle strength, this guy is a monster...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng saw this and sighed. He was surprised, and yet not surprised.

Thinking of his master, everything could be explained.

Thus, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s heart was at ease, he could concentrate on dealing with the human strength phantom fighting against him.

He waved his sleeve, and countless lights flew out from it.

Chainsaw wind blade, flame sword flash, azure blue water python, golden silk net...

Up to a hundred Gu worms were activated at once, they gave off a dazzling rainbow light, resembling fireworks.

The human strength phantom was covered by the smoke, its speed became slower, thus it immediately changed directions and shot out like lightning.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s attacks followed after it, it was unceasing.

A fireworks-like display of attacks were unleashed endlessly.

The human strength phantom had the ability to think, it knew how to fly in an arc, attempting to get close to Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng also retreated at the same time, while his attacks showed no signs of slowing down.

He was a Gu Immortal with near limitless primeval essence. If not for the fact that he had just become a Gu Immortal and had not made any accumulations, resulting in a low quantity of Gu worms, he would have hundreds and thousands of Gu worms, once used together, they would create a terrifying attack.

Human strength phantom could block most of the attacks, but under the flurry of attacks, it continued to be weakened, and the phantom was turning lighter and more transparent.

But Hei Lou Lan’s motive had been achieved.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not have a strong attacking method, he could only weaken the human strength phantom slowly.

He was old and wise, but because he was vigilant and had never charged ahead courageous, it was difficult for him to be an effective reinforcement for Fang Yuan.

This was because of his nature, otherwise, back then, he would not have chosen the ‘as before’ time path inheritance from the three immortal inheritances.

However, even though Hei Lou Lan achieved his goals in this battle, he was unable to be happy.

That was because he realized — Fang Yuan did not need reinforcements!

Over there, Fang Yuan was fighting three human strength phantoms at once, both sides used attacks to counter attacks, the six arm heavenly zombie king’s defense was truly astounding.

“Hahaha!” Fang Yuan got more ferocious as he fought, his punches and kicks were lively and their speed was increasing. In the end, his fist shadows turned into a black afterimage from his sheer speed!

The three human strength phantoms were expended greatly in the battle.

Bam, bam, bam.

Three explosions occurred, the three human strength phantoms could not sustain themselves anymore and were smashed to bits, turning into fist qi and vanishing.

Hei Lou Lan’s pupils shrunk, but the battle intent in his heart surged like raging tides.

“Interesting, this killer move is very powerful, it is almost on par with my killer move. But most importantly, he has such rich battle experience, his physical combat skills can be said to be at a master’s level! If it were others, they might not be able to unleash the power of this killer move to such an extent!”

Hei Lou Lan licked his lips, his eyes were shining with ruthlessness and excitement.

The earlier attack was not his full strength, he was only probing.

The battle with Tai Bai Yun Sheng was very annoying, because Tai Bai Yun Sheng was escaping most of the time, while Hei Lou Lan could not catch up to him, thus he could not use any of his strength.

Now that this Fang Yuan who was a tough opponent appeared, his battle intent naturally surged.

After destroying three human strength phantoms, Fang Yuan did not attack rashly, but instead floated in the same spot.

The two were about a thousand steps away, and their vicious gazes were colliding.

“Stop fighting, come over here and help!” At this time, Hei Lou Lan heard Giant Sun’s will’s instructions.

“But, old ancestor...” Hei Lou Lan hesitated, his battle intent was wavering.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s status in his heart was still very high.

This was not about personality, but because he had been influenced to feel the pride of his bloodline since he was young. This was a significant element in Hei Lou Lan’s self worth.

“Forget about them. Killing the otherworldly demon and taking back the luck path true inheritance is most important!” Giant Sun’s will replied quickly: “This is the only record of this luck path true inheritance that I left behind in the entire world. Even in Longevity Heaven, I did not leave behind any details regarding it. I am about to open the entrance to the true inheritance secluded domain, you will go and help push this luck path true inheritance into the secluded domain.”

This round was already controlled by Giant Sun’s will, the treemen filled the area like a sea. However, even though Giant Sun’s will had the ability to break apart the luck path true inheritance by force, he could not do so.

Firstly, it took too much time, that could lead to unexpected consequences.

Secondly, breaking apart the luck path true inheritance was the same as destroying the supreme true inheritance.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 622: Grasping the biggest flaw!

The situation in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building twisted and turned with no end in sight.

Once the invincible being dominating the entire world, the ruler of an era, the rank nine Immortal Venerable Giant Sun; the terrifying will that he had specially left behind to take charge of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building....

The winner of the last Imperial Court contest, the current tribe leader of a super force, Hei tribe, possessing the Great Strength True Martial Physique of the ten extreme physiques, Hei Lou Lan....

Standing tall above the centre of northern plains as countless years of change were experienced, and yet imprisoned for hundreds of thousands of years – the land spirit Frost Jade Peacock...

A living legend, helping the injured for almost all his life, his benevolence and his name renowned far and wide, owning a Gu Immortal inheritance, advancing to a rank six Gu Immortal, possessing two mysterious Immortal Gu, Tai Bai Yun Sheng...

As well as.

The owner of Spring Autumn Cicada, ranked seventh amongst the top ten mystical Gu, the owner of Hu Immortal blessed land, a mortal who has possession of multiple Immortal Gu, a reborn five hundred year old demon, Gu Yue Fang Yuan...

Favored by rank eight fortune rivalling heaven Gu, a Gu Immortal in Fang Yuan’s previous life who had successively inherited Giant Sun’s inheritance and an opportunity left behind by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, becoming a great hero of northern plains who resisted the invasion of central continent, Ma Hong Yun...

Viewed as an ‘otherworldly demon’ by Giant Sun’s will, Ma Hong Yun’s wife in Fang Yuan’s previous life who became a wisdom path Gu Immortal and an provided innumerable amount of assistance to her husband, the legendary woman Zhao Lian Yun...

And also.

The former rank seven Gu Immortal, a refinement path grandmaster, the thirty-sixth generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House – Mo Yao who had schemed against Eighty-Eight True Yang Building; the mysterious will she left behind following her death...

All these existences had their own thoughts with their respective goals. And on this platform of the collapsing Imperial Court blessed land, they collided and contended with each other.

They had their own advantages, abilities and also had their respective weaknesses and flaws.

These were all individuals overflowing with talents, they were elites or heroes of their generations. They were either proficient in scheming and strategizing, being master tacticians, or had immense strength or absurd luck.

The intense stimulation of life and death, the enticement of enormous benefits, caused these existences to perform to their full strength, using all their abilities and trump cards, perhaps betting it all and risking everything in a single moment, or strategizing to control the situation.

Thus, the state of affairs became clear from time to time, while turning indistinct at the next moment.

They had contended till now, but the situation was still chaotic. Only Frost Jade Peacock was pulled out of the game, while the others could tilt the whole set of circumstances with their every move and were not existences that could be underestimated in their influence to the final outcome.

Now —

The main part of Giant Sun’s will had been forced out of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building for the moment by Fang Yuan’s trump card, suffering the intense assaults of the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity.

Giant Sun’s will was the most powerful existence among those present. On one hand, his main portion tried to return to Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, and on the other, he took the risk of drawing out the sub-wills from true inheritances to seize back the control of the round, and then wholeheartedly tried to eliminate the otherworldly demon Zhao Lian Yun.

Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun had become the masters of Imperial Court blessed land by some twist of fate; they were also being protected by the luck path true inheritance and were safe for the moment.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng had made a temporary alliance, engaging in a round of probing confrontation with Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan's battle intent soared violently and he was just about to fight Fang Yuan head-on, when Giant Sun's will asked him to leave and deal with Ma Hong Yun to take back the luck path true inheritance.

Hei Lou Lan hesitated, but chose to listen to Giant Sun's will in the end.

"I will let you guys off for the moment!" He glared at Fang Yuan before turning around and leaving quickly.

Fang Yuan looked on as Hei Lou Lan left, floating in the sky without giving chase.

"Huff huff..." Tai Bai Yun Sheng let out a breath of turbid air, flying towards Fang Yuan.

He might be a Gu Immortal, but he only specialized in healing and lacked large numbers of mortal Gu; his battle strength compared to ordinary Gu Immortals still had a great discrepancy. Through a prolonged battle, he had slowly worn down that human strength phantom to death.

"Hei Lou Lan is going to deal with Ma Hong Yun to retrieve the luck path true inheritance! Should we intervene in this?" Mo Yao's will immediately suggested.

This luck path true inheritance was a supreme hidden treasure left behind by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used it as part of his journey in becoming the ruler of an era, invincible within the world.

This luck path true inheritance held extremely large temptation to any Gu Master!

Fang Yuan's gaze slightly flickered, but he did not move, instead turning his sight to look at his left.

Not far from him, a whirlwind was forming.

"Careful, Hei Lou Lan's fist qi can still condense back even after being destroyed!" Tai Bai Yun Sheng warned.

Fang Yuan snorted, and with one step, appeared before the hurricane, punching it.

Boom.

A muffled sound rang out and the fist qi was scattered again.

The first aura was mostly dissipated, but the remaining fist qi still persisted in condensing back. But this quantity was rather small and was not able to condense into form.

"This strength path killer move..." Fang Yuan's expression was heavy.

Strength path phantoms were the long range attacking method of strength path, however this was the first time Fang Yuan had seen human strength phantoms possessing such spirituality.

This seemed to be an innovation of which no records existed in all the Gu Master history Fang Yuan knew of.

It could be even called as ‘Hei Lou Lan’s strength path phantom’.

More importantly, this ‘Hei Lou Lan’s strength path phantom’ could condense back even after being destroyed.

This gave the feeling of a ‘never-ending source of harassment’!

“Hei Lou Lan has certainly not used his full strength, if he can attack with twenty human strength phantoms at the same time, and the remaining fist qi can condense again, that power would be terrifying. If he can send out thirty human strength phantoms, then this strength path killer move can absolutely contend with your six arm heavenly zombie king!” Mo Yao’s will evaluated with a grave tone.

“What killer move is this, do you have any impressions of it?” Fang Yuan asked.

Mo Yao’s will slowly shook her head: “I am not a strength path Gu Immortal, this killer move also greatly involves soul path and qi path, in addition it has other pivotal mechanics. It should be a modern innovation as it is greatly different from ancient styles, I am guessing that this is an innovation of the current generation.”

Six arm heavenly zombie king was researched by Fang Yuan and perfected by Mo Yao.

But there were no lack of geniuses in this world, it was not just Fang Yuan alone who could innovate a strength path killer move.

Of course, Fang Yuan specialized in blood path in his previous life, and had only cultivated strength path on the side.

Treemen flocked one after the other, forming a majestic green wave that attempted to drown Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun.

However, Giant Sun’s luck path true inheritance was like a giant golden egg that firmly protected the two.

Giant Sun’s will was concerned about the consequences of his actions; he truly wanted to kill the otherworldly demon Zhao Lian Yun, but also wanted to protect this unique existence that was Giant Sun’s luck path true inheritance.

When he saw Hei Lou Lan near, he hurriedly transmitted his voice: “I will open the passage to true inheritance secluded domain, help me push the luck path true inheritance into it!”

Hei Lou Lan nodded. His whole body shook as he punched out with both his fists; fist qi surged out violently!

Boom boom boom...

Muffled explosions rang out in the air non-stop, the fist qi condensing one after another into Hei Lou Lan’s strength path phantoms.

Ten, twenty, thirty... forty!

Fang Yuan’s pupils could not help but shrink upon seeing this.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression turned pale, revealing intense fear in his eyes.

Forty of Hei Lou Lan’s strength path phantoms moved down together and surrounded the luck path true inheritance in just a moment.

A dark crack slowly appeared in the air above the luck path true inheritance. The crack enlarged till it formed a large and round passage.

This deep, dark passage was directly linked to true inheritance secluded domain.

Strength path phantoms shouted together before actually lifting Giant Sun’s true inheritance slightly!

The surrounding treemen also moved their large hands to help. The python-like green vines coiled around together to assist in this.

Giant Sun’s True Inheritance erupted with an intense and dazzling light; the treemen melted like snow, the coiling vines could not even last for two breaths before being destroyed completely.

Strength path phantoms also continued to crumble but condensed back a short while after.

Hei Lou Lan stood at the outer periphery; he was like an endless source of strength, striking out with large numbers of strength path phantoms one after another.

Under his effort, Giant Sun’s true inheritance slowly left the ground.

At the same time, the round passage in the air also erupted with an intense force of suction, like a giant mouth attempting to take back Giant Sun’s true inheritance into its belly.

“He can actually form so many strength path phantoms simultaneously! What kind of killer move is this?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng cried out involuntarily at this astonishing sight.

Mo Yao’s will also said to Fang Yuan: “Your strength path killer move is specialized for close combat. Hei Lou Lan’s killer move, however, is the exact opposite of yours, specializing in long range combat! This killer move is equally matched with your six arm heavenly zombie king. But in Hei Lou Lan’s hands, the strength it can erupt with far surpassess yours by several times.”

Hei Lou Lan was the possessor of Great Strength True Martial Physique of the ten extreme physiques, and Fang Yuan was not.

In the legends, Gu Masters who had Great Strength True Martial Physique not only had immense strength, their stamina would also never run out. At the same time, their self recovery ability was also extremely astonishing!

Any strength path killer move would erupt with strength that far surpassed their usual strength under the hands of Great Strength True Martial Physique.

“What should we do now?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng stood beside Fang Yuan, fixing his gaze at the contest of strength between Hei Lou Lan and Giant Sun’s true inheritance.

He continued with a regretful tone: “This is a supreme true inheritance! Giant Sun’s will is taking it back to true inheritance secluded domain, unfortunately Hei Lou Lan is there, so we cannot get a share of the action.”

His tone contained the meaning of not being able to contend with Hei Lou Lan.

This was not surprising, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a passive nature; a wise man looks after his own hide, he would not take extreme measures unless forced into a corner.

Fang Yuan looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng and smiled.

“What to do?” He asked and answered himself, “Of course we go to true inheritance secluded domain!”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was surprised: “True inheritance secluded domain?”

Mo Yao’s will shook before reacting, almost slapping her own thigh at the sudden realization: “Right, there is no more of Giant Sun’s will remaining in true inheritance secluded domain. Those true inheritances have become masterless objects!”

Previously, these true inheritances contained Giant Sun’s will, thus one could only obtain the qualifications for the true inheritances by using an owner token.

But it was different now, Giant Sun’s will had moved away all the sub-wills. Young wild will grew soon after in the true inheritances, and they only needed to be manipulated appropriately to refine them easily.

“But you don’t have much time, Giant Sun’s main will outside the tower is going to return soon. You will only be able to choose one true inheritance in this time.” Mo Yao’s will reminded, “Fang Yuan, you must quickly consider which inheritance you are going to choose!”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng also realized this and asked another crucial question: “This round is already controlled by Giant Sun’s will, how do we enter true inheritance secluded domain?”

He had not even finished speaking when Fang Yuan took out Fixed Immortal Travel Immortal Gu.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had held this Immortal Gu for safekeeping before, thus he was not surprised; but his gaze turned serious as he looked at Fang Yuan: “If I am not wrong, Fixed Immortal Travel can only carry one person, right?”

“You are right.” Fang Yuan nodded, “So open up your immortal aperture and let me in. I will send you the image of true inheritance secluded domain through thoughts transmission.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng suddenly realized: “I almost forgot that I am a Gu Immortal!”

The immortal aperture of rank six and rank seven Gu Immortals was called a ‘blessed land’.

Imperial Court blessed land, Lang Ya blessed land and Hu Immortal blessed land were immortal apertures; they had vast space and were akin to a small world. Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s Tai Bai blessed land was naturally not an exception.

Fang Yuan lent Fixed Immortal Travel to Tai Bai Yun Sheng and entered his immortal aperture, then sent his thoughts that recorded the image of true inheritance secluded domain.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng activated Fixed Immortal Travel, Giant Sun’s will had no spare energy to stop him and could only let him go to true inheritance secluded domain one step earlier.

Within the true inheritance secluded domain was a scene of chaos.

The dozens of true inheritances were ruled by new wild wills and were like headless chickens, flying around chaotically. From time to time, they collided with each other, letting out sparks and causing unceasing wear and tear.

Mo Yao felt great heartache at this scene: “Make your choice quickly. These true inheritances are destroying each other, if the situation gets worse, even if you can get an inheritance, it might have already lost its essence.”

Fang Yuan did not have much time left and could only pick one true inheritance. He had already made a plan for this.

He said in a deep voice: “Mo Yao, I need your help.”

“Speak quickly.”

“Point me the location of the final supreme true inheritance!”

Mo Yao was stumped at Fang Yuan’s words.

Soon, her eyes and mouth opened wide, her mind was greatly shaken!

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building contained three supreme true inheritances. Mo Yao was extremely clear about them and she had introduced them to Fang Yuan when he had charged into true inheritance secluded domain before.

The first supreme true inheritance was rank nine wisdom Gu.

The second supreme true inheritance was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path inheritance.

The third supreme true inheritance was Eighty-Eight True Yang Building itself!

That is to say the one who obtains this true inheritance could control Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!!

“Why did I not think of it?” Mo Yao mumbled in a daze, “Giant Sun’s will had transferred all the sub-wills away, now is the best time to seize the authority over Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!”

“Right! Giant Sun’s will had neglected this in fulfilling his desire to deal with Zhao Lian Yun, thus exposing his greatest flaw, and giving us the opportunity to turn around this crisis!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with a sharp brilliance.

He looked at his surroundings, the fire of ambition soaring ever so high in his heart.

He acutely grasped the flaw in the enemy!

Win or lose, it all depended on this move; as long as he could take Eighty-Eight True Yang Building for himself, he would have the territorial advantage!

By that time, even if Giant Sun’s main will were to be more formidable, he would only be a despondent dog locked out of the house, standing at the door and barking helplessly!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 623: Refining Eighty-Eight True Yang Building

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng moved forward in the true inheritance secluded domain.

In the dark true inheritance secluded domain, there was no more of the order and serenity from before.

Because Giant Sun’s will had been extracted fully, the dozens of true inheritances here were ownerless inheritances, wild wills formed in them within a short time.

These true inheritances were like shooting stars of all colors, flying extremely quickly in this dark space, they weaved a beautiful huge net with their trails.

Swoosh!

Another true inheritance flew quickly past Fang Yuan’s left side.

This true inheritance was only the size of a bowl, it was giving off a silvery light and was very dazzling.

It almost touched Fang Yuan’s body as it flew past, the silvery light shone on Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s faces.

Their expressions were quite ugly, their gazes were full of anxiety and nervousness.

These true inheritances were powerful and had special abilities, most of them had Immortal Gu among the Gu worms in them. Be it Fang Yuan or Tai Bai Yun Sheng, they could not endure an attack from them.

Especially now, when the true inheritances were guided by the newly birthed wills, who knew when they would display their Immortal Gu abilities?

This could not be predicted!

Moving around this place was like walking on a tightrope above death.

“These true inheritances are getting faster, have you found the target yet?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted at Fang Yuan, his voice was trembling.

“Soon.” Fang Yuan answered.

He also felt the pressure intensifying, even though he was a flying master and had exceptional skill, the pressure now was tremendous.

Bam!

Just at this moment, there was a loud explosion.

“Oh no, quickly dodge!” In Fang Yuan’s mind, Mo Yao reminded.

Not far away, two true inheritances collided, from the intense sounds produced by them, several Gu worms were destroyed on the spot.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had yet to feel pity at this, when his expression paled.

The collision changed the two true inheritances' directions, one of them which was bright yellow flew towards them.

During the moment of crisis, Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly activated all of his defensive Gu, setting up a hundred lines of defense around him and Fang Yuan.

The incoming true inheritance came with a strong force, destroying all of the defensive lines without any difficulty.

But during this period, Tai Bai Yun Sheng managed to earn some precious time for him and Fang Yuan to escape.

The shrill sound almost burst their eardrums, as the meteor-like true inheritance flew away with a blazing tail.

In the blink of an eye, it was more than ten thousand steps away from the two of them.

“My defense Gu were almost all destroyed!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng's expression was pale: “Where there is life, there is hope, we should retreat.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had the intention of leaving already.

Fang Yuan frowned, he was very clear on Tai Bai Yun Sheng's nature.

The older one was, the more cowardly they become.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng lacked the enthusiasm and spirit to take risks now, it was fine to ask him to heal others, but he was not an expert at putting himself into life and death situations.

Just as Fang Yuan was thinking of what to say to spur Tai Bai Yun Sheng's fighting spirit, Mo Yao screamed in his mind: “Quickly look, just above you guys, we found it!”

Fang Yuan's mind became sharp, he quickly looked up.

Indeed, a supreme true inheritance was flying slowly, the speed of the light lump was not fast, it was a stark contrast to the other ordinary true inheritances.

It was the size of an adult person, glowing with an orange and red light, giving off the feeling of warmth.

The surrounding true inheritances, when they got close to it, took detours and changed their directions.

Between Gu worms, there was absolute authority when they had a difference of two ranks.

The authority of a supreme true inheritance was not something ordinary or unparalleled true inheritances could offend.

“Go!” Fang Yuan was overjoyed, he shouted at Tai Bai Yun Sheng before flying over.

...

“Hold on! All of you hold on!” Ye Lui Sang's eyes were red, he shouted loudly as he activated his Gu worms, emitting fierce flames.

The flames burned, quickly spreading.

The golden horn leopard group that was attacking them had good resistance to high temperature. But Ye Lui Sang’s flames used the power of an Immortal Gu, the golden horn leopard group quickly melted in the flames, turning into puddles of golden mud.

Seeing this, the surrounding Gu Masters cheered loudly.

“Lord Ye Lui Sang is incredible!”

“Thankfully lord is here, otherwise we would be dead meat.”

Ye Lui Sang breathed roughly, he was exasperated, helpless and angry.

“Damn it, what is going on? First, Tai Bai Yun Sheng became an immortal, next Imperial Court blessed land was facing destruction, ravaged by the once in ten years blizzard. Now even Eighty-Eight True Yang Building has come into the picture. I thought we could leave the trap, but the building’s rounds suddenly triggered! If I knew this, I would not have entered the last Imperial Court contest!”

Ye Lui Sang was scolding in his heart.

Not just him, Ma Ying Jie, Luo Bo Jun, Gu Guo Long and the other survivors were all kept in the dark, they did not know the truth.

These people were all northern plains Gu Masters who had entered Imperial Court blessed land.

After Imperial Court blessed land was torn with several holes, the once in ten years blizzard entered and wreaked havoc, killing almost all the mortals. Large numbers of low rank Gu Masters were injured or dead.

But later, Giant Sun’s will’s found some time, despite being busy, to save some of the blood related descendants.

Ye Lui Sang and the others were placed into the golden leopard round.

When Fang Yuan activated the final trump card and sent Giant Sun’s will out of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building temporarily, without Giant Sun’s will controlling the round, the large golden horn leopard group started attacking Ye Lui Sang and the others fiercely.

...

Outside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

The golden sand-like Giant Sun’s will was covered the building like a thick layer of armor.

Meanwhile, the terrifying heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity had combined into one, fusing to connect heaven and earth, it was pure white like snow, like a giant cocoon, enveloping the entire Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and Giant Sun’s will in it.

Outside the cocoon, wild winds blew, sharp blades made of ice were flying around everywhere. Inside the cocoon, lightning flashed and the snow poured like a storm.

Crack!

A snow-white lightning flash was formed abruptly, in the shape of a trident.

The strange lightning descended from heaven, stabbing into Giant Sun’s will.

“Snow war tribulation lightning!”

Giant Sun’s will howled, this attack destroyed a large portion of Giant Sun’s will. There was a huge injury appearing on the golden sand-like armor.

This snow war tribulation lightning had amazing strength, it was extraordinary. Even Gu Immortals would be moved when they see it, because it was one of the publicly recognised top ten catastrophes!

Just this hit alone destroyed countless numbers of Giant Sun’s thoughts.

But Giant Sun’s will was left behind by an Immortal Venerable, its foundation was immensely thick. The will that was like a golden sand armor quickly repaired itself.

But other than the snow war tribulation lightning, there were also flying needle rain, explosive thunder hail, cruel wind scythe and others.

These did not exist earlier, they were formed from Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s heavenly tribulation chaotic lightning balls and earthly calamity restraining smoke, fusing with the once in ten years blizzard.

Heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities continued to rain down carrying the intense rage of heaven and earth.

Giant Sun’s will resisted them desperately, his losses were great.

“Soon, very soon! In just several minutes, I will be able to break free of this obstacle and enter Eighty-Eight True Yang Building again... You actually dared to expel me from the building, and keep me outside! I will tear your tendons and bones out, I will grind you to ashes, I will make you suffer a fate worse than death!” Giant Sun’s will had already transcended anger when he thought of Fang Yuan.

...

Inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, there was still a small portion of Giant Sun’s will.

Right now, he was controlling the treemen round, manipulating them in trying to push Giant Sun’s inheritance back to the true inheritance secluded domain.

“Softly, don’t be too rough, this is the only one in the world!” Giant Sun’s will paid close attention to Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan was extremely irritated, but he could only reduce his strength.

This was the one and only record of this luck path true inheritance that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had left behind, once it was destroyed, it would be irrecoverable.

Precisely because of this consideration, Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun who were inside the luck path true inheritance were able to survive.

The two of them were hugging each other closely, they had no choice but to watch the giant light ball that was the luck path true inheritance slowly pushed towards the round tunnel.

Even though they were famous and powerful characters in Fang Yuan’s previous life, both Gu Immortals, right now, they were still too weak.

One was a newly advanced rank three Gu Master, while the other was a mortal who had not even started her cultivation journey.

“Tai Bai Yun Sheng and that Chang Shan Yin have gone missing.” Success was at hand, as Hei Lou Lan could not control it anymore, saying.

Ever since Fang Yuan vanished, he had felt a vague sense of unease.

“Forget about them, in just a moment my main will is going to return. By then, even if two or three more Gu Immortals come, they cannot do anything. The important thing now is to get this luck path true inheritance into the true inheritance secluded domain! Most luck path Gu worms are formless and ethereal. Only that place can contain these Gu worms.” Giant Sun’s will’s voice resounded in Hei Lou Lan’s ears.

Hei Lou Lan nodded, shouting lowly as he mustered his strength.

At once, he unleashed fifty strength path phantoms.

These strength path phantoms had superior wisdom, they quickly rushed towards the luck path true inheritance. Enduring the blazing light, they pushed.

The luck path true inheritance was finally completely pushed into the true inheritance secluded domain by this force.

The tunnel closed.

“Success.” Giant Sun’s will breathed out a deep sigh.

Almost at the same time, the giant main will charged into the building.

Giant Sun’s will which was controlling the treemen round fused with the main will, sharing their memories together.

“Fang Yuan, where are you?!” The main will screamed loudly with deep hatred.

“Greetings to old ancestor.” Hei Lou Lan bowed deeply, showing great joy.

The main will was like a small sun, it shone brightly and was very domineering.

It could be said that Hei Lou Lan had helped Giant Sun’s will in many ways.

Giant Sun’s will was just about to praise him, but suddenly shouted in anger: ” You are all courting death! You dare to refine my Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!”

Inside Giant Sun’s secluded domain, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng stretched out their palms, pressing the true inheritance light lump forcefully, their expressions were pale and their bodies were shivering.

“Quickly! Just one last bit and we would succeed!!” In his mind, Mo Yao’s will shouted anxiously.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 624: Shameless and devious scoundrel!

In true inheritance secluded domain, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were firmly holding a supreme true inheritance from its left and right.

Thanks to the guidance of Mo Yao’s will along with Giant Sun’s will being emptied out, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were able to get close to the true inheritance.

The most crucial point was there was no primeval energy in true inheritance secluded domain.

Wild Gu worms could absorb primeval energy directly from the surrounding air for their use. Without primeval energy, most Gu worms would lose their threat. This was also one of the reasons Giant Sun’s will was trying to push Giant Sun’s Luck Path True Inheritance back into true inheritance secluded domain.

The supreme true inheritance had been letting out a warm orange light before, but in Fang Yuan’s and Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s hands, it let out three colors.

Silver-white light occupied the bulk of it; caused by the refinement from Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s Gu Immortal will. The second color was grey from Fang Yuan. The third was black light from Mo Yao.

Silver-white light was the most abundant, grey came second and black was in the least amount.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was a rank eight Immortal Gu House, formed from extremely large numbers of Gu worms. Fang Yuan’s group had to use all their strength to quickly refine Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

It could be said, whether it was Fang Yuan or Tai Bai Yun Sheng, they had both spent all their strength.

“Just a little left, just a little more effort!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng anxiously yelled.

The main portion of Giant Sun’s will had returned to True Yang Building, the three had heard its furious roar.

The round light lump with the size of an adult had only a final trace of orange left on it. As long as this light was eroded, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would completely change its master and the situation would greatly incline towards Fang Yuan’s side!

However, Giant Sun’s will furiously made his move at this final moment.

The will left by an Immortal Venerable could not be looked down upon!

And this will was the original master of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building! Thus, in just an instant, the final trace of orange was replaced by dazzling golden light.

Fang Yuan’s group immediately felt gloomy at this color.

This color meant that Giant Sun’s will had refined the final remaining trace of the supreme true inheritance’s will!

“Juniors, you are really audacious, you dare to go after my Eighty-Eight True Yang Building! I will make you pay the most terrible price in the world!” From within the light lump, a roar from Giant Sun’s will sounded out.

“Quick! There is only a meagre trace of Giant Sun’s will, we need to move together and destroy it, spare no energy!!” Fang Yuan shouted.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s forehead was filled with sweat; he did not need any reminder to be aware of the utmost importance of this matter.

The two gave a deep shout and moved together, mobilising their wills to form a huge army of thoughts that unfolded a fierce assault towards the last trace of will.

Giant Sun’s will’s roar stopped abruptly as he poured all his energy in defending against the assault.

Its main body was enormous, but it had only refined a trace of the true inheritance and controlled the smallest portion. Even if it possessed majestic strength that far surpassed the allied thoughts army of Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, it did not have the room to display its might, and the power it could let out was an insignificant fraction compared to that of the main body.

The newborn wild will that had been born just recently in the supreme true inheritance had already been thoroughly extinguished.

The tranquil true inheritance light lump became an unconventional battlefield that pitted Fang Yuan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Giant Sun’s will.

Contest between wills involved profound techniques and skill.

But be it Fang Yuan or Tai Bai Yun Sheng, they were not truly soul path Gu Masters. Fang Yuan could be considered to have started it just recently while Tai Bai Yun Sheng was truly a novice, relying on nothing more than the instinct to move his thoughts.

As for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, his soul path attainment was definitely out of this world. Unfortunately, the one confronting the enemy was only the special will he had left behind.

Thus, in this battle of wills, there were no fancy skills; it was only a head-on collision, a bloody fight.

After a dozen or so breaths later, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s wills suffered disastrous losses.

The quantity of Giant Sun’s will might be small, not even filling one percent of the true inheritance light lump, but it stood lofty and majestic.

The main Giant Sun’s will was vast, its power flowed without pause. Every bit of loss it suffered was immediately replenished.

By contrast, Fang Yuan’s group might have occupied the advantage of vast quantity, but they did not have high battle strength and were soon lacking the fuel to continue.

“Damn it! We can’t expel Giant Sun’s will, the situation has gone south!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was deathly pale, the combined attack earlier was their most powerful method, but it showed no effect.

Giant Sun’s will was laughing heartily.

Fang Yuan and the group lacked the energy to continue the attack, and after Giant Sun’s will had resisted their most intense attacks, he began to expand his territory.

In the true inheritance light lump, the part occupied by golden light began to expand bit by bit.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked on with wide eyes; they staked all their energy, but were only able to slow down Giant Sun’s will’s speed of expansion.

Giant Sun’s will was truly terrifying.

Even when it was schemed against repeatedly before, and most of its will was outside, suffering the deathly attacks from the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, the remaining part was still a tall, mountain-like barrier to Fang Yuan’s group.

This enormous difference in their strengths was like a gulf between heaven and earth.

“We are going to lose!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s tone was grave, “This is just a will Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left behind, I really can’t imagine how powerful he was when alive!”

“Damn it, only one last step was remaining!!” Mo Yao’s will grabbed her head, her voice mixed with a tone of sobbing and extreme regret, “If only we were a step earlier, as long as we had three breaths of time, we would have succeeded.”

“Never mind!” Fang Yuan gnashed his teeth, his expression heavy.

He had not given up yet, speaking with ruthless intent: “In this situation, we are unable to get our hands on Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. We cannot exterminate Giant Sun’s will, sooner or later it will swallow the space we occupy. But we have yet to lose! Don’t forget, there are still the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities outside True Yang Building!”

“Are you saying?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression changed, blurting out.

His nature was benevolent and passive, but he was not stupid, and immediately realized when Fang Yuan mentioned it.

“That’s right, if I can’t obtain it, no one else should think about getting it. Since I can’t get Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, I would rather destroy it!” A ruthless glint shone in Fang Yuan’s eyes, his tone was so cold it could make the listener shiver.

“But this is Eighty-Eight True Yang Building...” Mo Yao resounded, but her tone was wavering.

She had no choice but to accept this was the best method to escape their predicament.

Giant Sun’s will finally stormed into true inheritance secluded domain.

“You two tiny ants, you actually forced me to this extent! You scheming scoundrels, your good days have come to an end, your sins are so great that even death would be letting you off cheaply. I will give you a punishment worse than death! I will peel off your skin, pull your tendons and let blood flow! I will burn your souls in flames and let you taste incomparable suffering for all eternity!”

The golden will roared like a furious sea, and whipped up huge waves with it!

Schemed upon time and time again by Fang Yuan, suffering the unrestrained bombardment of the calamities; Giant Sun’s will’s fury had already reached the summit, swearing to kill Fang Yuan, the main culprit.

Compared to the golden wave, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were as small as ants.

The flying true inheritances were swallowed by the golden wave, resulting in splashes but they stopped moving soon after.

Giant Sun’s will had once again taken control of these inheritances.

However, most of the Gu worms required primeval essence or immortal essence to be activated, and just Giant Sun’s will could not activate them.

At present, most of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was controlled by Fang Yuan’s group.

As long as they did not let Giant Sun’s will obtain Giant Sun’s immortal essence, these Gu worms could not be used.

“Start.” Fang Yuan gave a soft shout, his gaze flashing with sharp intent.

Giant Sun’s will’s powerful approach also dispelled Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s hesitation. He was already completely tied to Fang Yuan’s side and could only choose to forcibly advance together.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building originally shone with an aurora, but with the actions of Fang Yuan’s group, the aurora rapidly dimmed until it dissipated.

The furious golden sea suddenly stilled.

The next moment, Giant Sun’s will’s furious roar reverberated: “Bastards! You dared to make Eighty-Eight True Yang Building stop its operation, you, you damned scoundrels, you damned devious, shameless scoundrels!”

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building might have had wild will before, but it had just been born, thus it had still automatically operated as normal.

However, Fang Yuan’s group had refined most of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and they forcibly made it stop its operations.

Even the strongest fort would find it hard to resist an internal collapse.

Although Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had not collapsed, its operations had stopped and just its shell had no might.

Without any might, how could it resist the terrifying heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities?

Fang Yuan’s group could neglect Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, in any case, they would not be able to obtain Eighty-Eight True Yang Building if this situation progressed.

However, Giant Sun’s will could not neglect it.

This was an inheritance from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, left behind for the benefits of his descendants; it must not be destroyed.

Giant Sun’s will was left behind by the Immortal Venerable to manage Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, how could it just watch as the True Yang Building was destroyed?

“Just you wait!” The golden sea of will swiftly retreated.

The vast will of Giant Sun surged out of the tower like water, forming a golden armor as a defense around it.

Giant Sun’s will had no choice but to suffer the ravaging bombardment of the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities to protect the weak Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. However, it still left behind a portion of will which surged towards Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng like a furious river.

Fang Yuan, however, let out a breath of turbid air.

Compared to the majestic furious sea from before, this will might be strong but they could deal with it, albeit with difficulty.

Fang Yuan reluctantly took out a Gu from his pocket.

It was flying bear phantom Gu.

Fang Yuan’s will moved and threw the Gu casually; the flying bear phantom Gu flew forward, blossoming with beautiful white light.

The white light dissipated and a giant flying bear protected Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, obstructing the river of will.

“Damn it, flying bear phantom Gu!” Giant Sun’s will cursed.

Flying bear phantom Gu was rather special; it was an Immortal Gu but it could be activated with just one’s mind, without requiring immortal essence.

Refining it was difficult and feeding it was not easy, requiring the fresh flesh of the desolate beast flying bear.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan possessed Hu Immortal blessed land and could feed this Immortal Gu with the help of treasure yellow heaven.

Even so, he had to pay an enormous price.

Train an army for a thousand days to use it in one fight. Now, it was time for flying bear phantom Gu to show its worth!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 625: Remaining trump card

The flying bear phantom’s battle strength, almost not at the level of the desolate beast flying bear, it had at least half immortal battle strength. Most importantly, it might look bulky and slow, but it was very agile.

The river of Giant Sun’s will swirled to its left and right, attempting to get past the flying bear phantom, to directly attack Fang Yuan and the others, obtaining victory.

But he was still obstructed by the flying bear phantom.

The flying bear phantom, even without Fang Yuan’s manipulation, had some intelligence and was quite crafty, it could battle entirely alone.

Swoosh.

The fat and large bear paw slammed down, carrying the sound of the wind with it.

Bam!

The golden sand-like Giant Sun’s will was smashed into bits by the bear paw, turning into golden dust as it dissolved in the air.

But this was just a subsidiary.

The golden river that was Giant Sun’s will was like a huge python coiling around the flying bear phantom tightly.

At the same time, countless subsidiaries were created, attacking many areas of the flying bear phantom.

The two were fighting closely, at a stalemate, neither could do anything to the other party.

Giant Sun’s will could fuse and split at will, it had the freedom to change forms, flying bear phantom could not take it down. But Giant Sun’s will was tangled by the flying bear phantom and could not deal with the most crucial person — Fang Yuan.

Giant Sun’s will had inherited a portion of the Immortal Venerable’s wisdom, it knew from the situation after some thinking: To kill Fang Yuan, it needed to use at least half of the river’s will.

But the remaining half was not the flying bear phantom’s match.

If he attacked forcefully, it was like he was handing the initiative over.

If Fang Yuan retreated with the true inheritance light lump and dragged for time, after flying bear phantom destroys the Giant Sun’s will that was left fighting it, the situation would become dangerous.

He had already suffered a loss from splitting up earlier when he drew his will out of the true inheritance secluded domain.

At that time, Fang Yuan had used the glass owner token to challenge a small portion of Giant Sun’s will resolutely. In the end, both suffered injuries and eventually led to Giant Sun’s will taking a huge risk and paying a huge price, but only managing to regain control of the treemen round.

Fang Yuan’s expression was grim.

He sustained the true inheritance light lump, slowing Giant Sun’s will’s expansion progress while observing the situation and current battle state.

“If Giant Sun’s will would split up again, that would be great. Unfortunately, it will never make the same mistake twice.” Fang Yuan observed for a while, seeing Giant Sun’s will fighting the flying bear phantom so intensely, but yet it did not think of splitting up, Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

The opponent was not making a mistake, thus Fang Yuan’s predicament was getting more dangerous.

Right now, most of Giant Sun’s will was outside the building enduring the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, to protect Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, only two portions were left now.

A portion was fighting with flying bear phantom. The other was competing with

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, trying to refine the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

The supreme true inheritance that represented Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s ownership only had a trace of golden color originally, but now this trace had grown to palm size.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng had already squeezed out all of their potentials, they were shivering and their expressions were pale, they were sweating profusely but could not resist the expansion of Giant Sun’s will’s refinement.

Giant Sun’s will was simply too great.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng felt like he was facing a valley and mountain during the resistance, he was helpless and felt hopelessness.

Even Fang Yuan, a demonic head with an iron will, felt a strong sense of dejection growing in his heart at this point.

If he allowed the situation to develop like this, one day, when Giant Sun’s will successfully expands, he would regain control of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. By then, Fang Yuan and the others would be dead meat.

He had to do something!

Despite so, Fang Yuan had already been too deeply involved in this supreme true inheritance, he could not do anything else.

His greatest battle strength now was the flying bear phantom Gu, but it was already in use.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a temporary alliance mate that he obtained through swindling, but similar to Fang Yuan, he was already here engaging with Giant Sun’s will, he could not do anything else.

It could be said that other than the Spring Autumn Cicada, Fang Yuan had used all of his trump cards.

“Don’t tell me, I really have to use the Spring Autumn Cicada this time?” A thought flashed in Fang Yuan’s mind.

But immediately after, he rejected it.

“Spring Autumn Cicada is not an Immortal Gu that has a guaranteed success rate, I could fail. The black death bad luck on me right now is so thick. Once I self-detonate, my remaining consciousness would enter the Spring Autumn Cicada and travel upstream in the river of time, there is a high chance of meeting my end! My chances are probably lower than one out of ten.”

How could he resolve this situation?

“Sigh... Fang Yuan, we have no hope of success, let’s retreat! Using Fixed Immortal Travel, we can return to your blessed land.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng suggested.

Should he really retreat?

At this point, if he gave in, Giant Sun’s will would immediately regain control of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. By then, through his obstruction, would Fixed Immortal Travel Gu still activate successfully?

Even if he succeeded, would this satisfy him?

Fang Yuan was indignant!

He had planned this for so long, he schemed so hard, victory was almost in sight, an immense fortune and benefit was right before him, he was just one step away!

Just one tiny step!!

“I am really indignant... Wait!” Fang Yuan’s expression changed, he thought of Ma Hong Yun.

“I have no trump cards, but I can make use of this chess piece.” Inspiration flashed in his mind as Fang Yuan had no more hesitations, he flapped his wings and flew up with the supreme true inheritance.

“Where are we going?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng asked quickly.

“Just follow me.” Fang Yuan replied curtly.

Fixed immortal travel Gu was in his possession and was refined by him, even if Tai Bai Yun Sheng wanted to retreat, without Fang Yuan’s cooperation, he could not escape.

“Don’t think of running away!” The river-like Giant Sun’s will growled, splitting up and forming back into one entity again, passing the flying bear phantom and charging towards Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

The flying bear phantom reacted quickly, it followed after them.

Fang Yuan snickered, changing his direction. After moving in many directions, flying bear phantom returned to Fang Yuan’s side.

Fang Yuan fled while battling, as the two sides fought and stopped many times. Sometimes, the river-like Giant Sun’s will was in front, sometimes, Fang Yuan took detours, using the flying bear phantom to fight back.

The road was filled with shocks but no real danger.

Although there were true inheritances of all sizes flying around chaotically, because of the supreme true inheritance’s aura, none got close.

Using flying bear phantom as a shield, the river-like Giant Sun’s will could not stop Fang Yuan’s movement, he could only slow him down.

But Fang Yuan’s circumstances were the same.

He and Tai Bai Yun Sheng could not do anything to the portion of Giant Sun’s will that was refining the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. In the contest of will, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were heavily suppressed, the golden light was expanding steadily, the two were bound to lose eventually.

“So you are here!” When Fang Yuan saw the luck path true inheritance in his vision, he laughed loudly.

“What are you trying to do?” The river-like Giant Sun’s will felt something amiss, he screamed out in panic.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked at Fang Yuan with similar confusion.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Tell me, what will happen when two supreme true inheritances collide?”

The color on Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s face changed, Fang Yuan’s insanity made his heart jump.

But thinking about it, he realized: This was an amazing and brilliant plan!

He and Fang Yuan were unable to turn back now. The true inheritance light lump in their hands were extremely troublesome, if they let go, they would die, but if they did not, they would die sooner or later.

But if the two supreme true inheritances collided, the results would be unthinkable.

The consequences were so severe even Giant Sun’s will lost his composure!

“You, don’t come over!” Ma Hong Yun shouted.

Zhao Lian Yun was tightly held in his arms.

But on this stage, the two of them were simply the weakest. If not for their extreme luck, they would have been grinded to dust long ago during the intense battles.

Under the influence of luck and coincidences, the luck path supreme true inheritance became their guardian angel, but it had been pushed into the true inheritance secluded domain.

After entering the true inheritance secluded domain, the threat of the luck path true inheritance hit rock bottom, it was almost a guaranteed success for Giant Sun’s will to deal with the otherworldly demon.

If not for Giant Sun’s will being careful about protecting the luck path true inheritance, and was forced by Fang Yuan thus he could not leave and had to deal with him, he would have dealt with Ma and Zhao long ago.

Ma Hong Yun was safe and sound here, in a way, it was all thanks to Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

But now, Fang Yuan was dragging the supreme true inheritance and rushed here on his own.

“He, what is he trying to do?!” Zhao Lian Yun’s body was shuddering, through the translucent barrier, she was frantic and could see Fang Yuan’s cold smile.

“No, you cannot do this! Quickly stop, stop it!!” The river-like Giant Sun’s will was shouting insanely from behind him.

He was anxious!

Once these two supreme true inheritances collide, they would definitely suffer great damages together.

By that time, not only would the last remaining luck path true inheritance get damaged or even destroyed, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would even suffer immense damage that would be hard to imagine.

The river-like Giant Sun’s will underwent intense thoughts, all of the thoughts that formed its will started self-detonating.

The golden sand-like will in the shape of a river burst out with an eye piercing light, his battle strength surged by at least half.

Flying bear phantom growled angrily, but was suppressed thoroughly.

Fang Yuan’s brows were tightly locked, the situation was very dangerous, he had to put a portion of his concentration on the flying bear phantom, manipulating it to battle personally.

Five hundred years of battle experience was nothing to be scoffed at!

Under her manipulation, flying bear phantom moved more agilely, it ignored the injuries on it and blocked the river-like Giant Sun’s will completely in the end.

“Fang Yuan, you are courting death! You want to deal with Ma Hong Yun, but do not forget the overwhelming power of fortune rivaling heaven Gu that he has! As long as you carry ill intent towards him, your luck will decrease drastically, even if you have half immortal battle strength, and is able to resist it temporarily, how long can you last?” The river-like Giant Sun’s will saw that he could not break through and started shouting.

“Fang Yuan, Giant Sun’s will is absolutely right, you need to be very careful!” Mo Yao’s will also said.

Fang Yuan snorted, without a bit of hesitation in his heart.

Seeking fortune amidst danger, to Fang Yuan, only by emerging victorious amidst chaos could he have a chance of survival.

Seeing that the two supreme true inheritances were less than a thousand steps away from each other, at this moment, there were ripples in the air, as dozens of figures were transported into the true inheritance secluded domain.

They appeared ahead of Fang Yuan’s flying route, they were almost all familiar faces.

Ye Lui Sang, Gu Guo Long, Bian Si Xuan...

The leader was a brawny and muscular man, with hammer-like fists, he laughed ruthlessly towards Fang Yuan: “So you are called Fang Yuan! Old Ancestor Giant Sun has already exposed both of your crimes to the outside world. Your schemes have been exposed, it is all over, your life will be over here!”

Who else was it but Hei Lou Lan?

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression changed abruptly, he could not free himself now as he was using all his strength to resist Giant Sun’s will who was refining the supreme true inheritance.

The appearance of Hei Lou Lan and the others was simply too devastating.

At the final juncture, this was akin to a fatal blow!

“Hahaha!” The river-like Giant Sun’s will laughed loudly behind them: “You are all just in time!”

He praised Hei Lou Lan and the others fervently.

This was definitely the act of the main will who took some time to inform and mobilize this bunch of reinforcements.

If this was during normal times, Hei Lou Lan and the others contained battle strength that was insignificant in Giant Sun’s will’s eyes. But at this time and place, they became a life-saving chess piece, they were the best bet in toppling the balance between the two sides!

“Fang Yuan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, you are all dead meat!” The river-like Giant

Sun’s will growled, slowing down and attacking.

The initiative was grasped by Giant Sun’s will’s side once again.

“We lost!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng heaved a long sigh, turning over to look at Fang Yuan, mustering his spirit: “Junior brother, enter my aperture, we will retreat! I have immortal essence, and you have Fixed Immortal Travel, now that Giant Sun’s will is being troubled by the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, we have to retreat now before it is too late!”

Fang Yuan however, shook his head: “It is already too late! Once we let go, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building will fall into the control of Giant Sun’s will. This building has the ability to suck in Immortal Gu, and the range extends to the whole of northern plains, even if we use Fixed Immortal Travel, there is a high chance of failing in the end.”

“Of course I know this.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s tone was anxious: “But we can only take a risk, in order to fight for that slim chance of success. If we drag any longer and lose this last opportunity, we would not even have this slim chance of success left!”

Fang Yuan’s gaze was flickering in hesitation, he looked at the supreme true inheritance in his hand once again.

In the true inheritance light lump, the golden dazzling light had occupied a third of the light lump’s capacity, and was expanding at an increasing speed.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply: “I did not think that we will still get to this point. Sigh, if not for the circumstances, I would not want to do this!”

“Junior brother, you still have a method left?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng heard this and was shocked, overjoyed, and suspicious.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 626: Immortal Ascension!

At this moment.

In true inheritance secluded domain.

Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun, who were mutually dependent on each other and under luck path supreme true inheritance’s protection, looked with panicked expressions.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were in control of the supreme true inheritance that represented Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

The two sides were cut off by Hei Lou Lan and the others, forming a firm defensive line.

Behind Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, the river-like Giant Sun’s will and the flying bear phantom were fighting.

Going even farther outside, the main Giant Sun’s will covered Eighty-Eight True

Yang Building, forcibly resisting the terrifying heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, protecting the inheritance treasure of Giant Sun.

Hearing Fang Yuan still had a method left, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was naturally overjoyed and immediately urged: “Junior brother! What method do you have left, quickly use it.”

Fang Yuan gave a bitter smile: “Senior brother, honestly, because of this desperate situation, I have no other ways but to use this method. I hope you will ensure my safety at the crucial moment.”

“That goes without saying, we are fellow disciples after all!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng immediately guaranteed.

Fang Yuan nodded and instructed: “Senior brother, Giant Sun’s will originated from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, you must never underestimate it. Next, if it tries to sow discord between us, I won’t be able to talk and defend myself, you must never believe it!”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng muttered: “Junior brother, we are of one family, you do not need to say anything and can rest assured. But from your tone, it seems you have a lot of concern and reservation towards using this method, if you are not too sure, we can still use Fixed Immortal Travel and leave immediately!”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, revealing a confident expression: “Haha! Senior brother, rest assured, this method has unparalleled might, even the main Giant Sun’s will cannot leave unscathed. Just watch.”

The two had not used any Gu worms to conceal their conversation. The experts present could not help but reveal shock and doubt.

‘A method that can harm the main Giant Sun’s will, what exactly is it?’ Hei Lou Lan frowned, he might looked crude but was actually astute, and did not carelessly move forward to fight.

Under everyone’s gaze, Fang Yuan closed his eyes, slowly withdrawing his palms that were tightly grabbing the supreme true inheritance.

This action immediately increased the pressure on Tai Bai Yun Sheng by several times!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was shocked, but fortunately Fang Yuan had reminded him before, and he was able to quickly exert all his strength to resist the fierce encroachment of Giant Sun’s will.

“Junior brother, use your method quickly, I cannot hold on for long!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted, beads of sweat dripping down his face.

In just a few short breaths of time, the golden light on the supreme true inheritance light lump wantonly expanded, becoming the size of a washing basin!

The speed was quick and violent!

“Let me see what deceit you are pulling!” Looking at this state, Hei Lou Lan and the group did not dare to rashly charge ahead at this juncture.

However, they had waited for a dozen breaths but still did not see any terrifying offense from Fang Yuan.

This battlefield had sunk into a strange silence.

The two sides did not speak, there were only the swoosh sounds of the flying true inheritances and the occasional collisions of the true inheritances!

“Damn it, we were tricked!” Ye Lui Sang was furious, “This thief that disguised as Chang Shan Yin is truly crafty. He is already at a dead end and has exhausted all his methods, but is still pretending that he has an unfathomable and profound trump card!”

“Everyone let’s go, kill this audacious conspirator!” Gu tribe’s leader Gu Guo Long shouted from the side.

The leader, Hei Lou Lan, however, did not move.

Not only was he not moving, his expression even turned grave.

“Could it be...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked at Fang Yuan with bewilderment, he was the nearest and thus felt a formless heavenly power suddenly forming around Fang Yuan, gently lifting him up.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had an extremely deep impression of this heavenly power, after all he had personally experienced it not long ago.

“Junior brother, you are shattering your aperture and ascending to immortal at this moment?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s words startled everyone present.

The journey of a Gu Master crossing the mortal realm and ascending to an immortal was extremely dangerous and risky. To think Fang Yuan actually recklessly shattered his aperture at this dangerous moment, charging towards Gu Immortal realm.

“Does this guy have a screw loose?”

“He can’t even understand his situation, is he stupid?”

“Did he see no chance of success and used this unusual method to die?”

For a moment, Ye Lui Sang and the others were filled with heavy doubts.

But the next moment, Giant Sun’s will’s furious roar reverberated over the whole of the true inheritance secluded domain: “Fang Yuan! I curse you to have a terrible death!! You actually shattered your aperture at this moment to attract the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity!! You are actually so bent on destroying True Yang Building. Everyone, kill this sinner quickly, the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity are already showing changes!”

This roar was different from before, besides the overflowing fury, Giant Sun’s will’s voice now also contained panic!

The fusion of so many heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities would not be a simple addition of one plus one equals two.

The once in ten years blizzard wreaked havoc over the whole of northern plains; its range might be large but its might was not great. Even mortals could rely on some special places to forcibly resist it.

The chaotic lightning balls and restraining smoke, left from Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s ascension, were mostly targeting wills and were only troublesome for Giant Sun’s will.

But these two merged together and formed snow war tribulation lightning!

This was one of the ten great catastrophes!

This tribulation lightning had terrifying power, and Giant Sun’s will had to pay a large price to resist it.

Now, if a new heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity was added on top of snow war tribulation lightning and if these two heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities merged together, the resulting change would have unparalleled power!

Even Giant Sun’s will felt fear!! It was after all only a special will left behind by the Immortal Venerable, even if it could kill Gu Immortals, but under the might of heaven, it paled in comparison.

“Quick, old ancestor has spoken, we need to attack together!”

“Follow me, kill these two!”

“Heroes of northern plains, crush these two outsiders to meat-paste.”

Hei Lou Lan and the rest were startled awake and started acting according to Giant Sun’s will’s command, fiercely charging forward.

Before they even neared, their respective Gu worms were already activated, forming a majestic offense. Strength path phantoms, malevolent fiery snakes, terrifying sword lights, pure white snow... all kinds of attacks converged together, seemingly forming beautiful fireworks.

The fatal crisis was approaching him, but Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not spare even a trace of his thoughts to it, and used all his strength to resist the encroachment of the portion of Giant Sun’s will in the true inheritance light lump.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes, maneuvering the flying bear phantom as well as activating his killer move.

Six arm heavenly zombie king!

He turned into an eight armed monster, his aura erupted and his will to fight flared.

The flying bear phantom gave a miserable howl before using its gigantic body as a meat shield, blocking the attacks.

The river-like Giant Sun’s will was free to move, immediately attacking Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan protected Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and welcomed the river-like Giant Sun’s will without evading.

Boom!

The two sides fiercely collided, the resulting explosion let out brilliant golden sparks everywhere.

Large numbers of special will shattered and dissipated.

Fang Yuan also suffered heavy injuries; six of his arms broke apart, his chest caved in, his right lower leg was completely gone and one eye was blinded.

“Fang Yuan, your death is certain this time! You dared to ascend to Gu Immortal at this moment, who do you think you are? A reincarnated Immortal Venerable? Hmph, since you are seeking your own death, I shall help you with it.”

The river-like Giant Sun’s will formed a python shape that coiled around into a circle, accumulating its power, its whole body radiating with dazzling golden radiance.

Fang Yuan snorted, not replying. The terrifying injuries on his body rapidly recovered at a visible speed.

He had transformed into a heavenly zombie; the feeling of pain was completely gone and death energy replaced his life energy. His recovery speed was thus greatly amplified, having no need for any rank five healing Gu.

Boom, boom, boom...

The intense collisions erupted repeatedly; Fang Yuan and the river-like Giant Sun’s will carried out an intense battle.

“Thief, come down now!” Giant Sun’s will suddenly transformed into a giant hand and fiercely clawed at Fang Yuan’s back.

With a tearing sound.

The eagle wings on Fang Yuan’s back were directly torn apart, forming two enormous wounds that revealed his bones.

Eagle rise Gu perished!

Fang Yuan was heavily injured, but he did not budge a bit, instead he fiercely twisted his waist.

Crack... He moved with such strength that he actually broke apart his waist!

Disregarding the injuries on his body, Fang Yuan swung his hammer like fist straight into Giant Sun’s will.

Boom.....

In an instant, fierce wind surged and fist shadows flew with unstoppable momentum like a dragon overturning the river, like a fierce tiger leaving the mountain.

The giant hand that Giant Sun’s will had condensed into had no time to split apart before it was struck by this vicious strike. The massive will was bombarded by the attack and shattered, suffering huge damage.

Amidst the drizzle of golden sand-like will, Fang Yuan took the chance to pull back like a bolt of lightning.

Giant Sun’s will had been waiting for a counterattack, but could only roar in fury as Fang Yuan was already far away.

Fang Yuan was not a battle maniac and was as cool-headed as ice, never letting himself be overtaken by the heat of the fight. As the injuries on him rapidly healed, Fang Yuan gasped for breath; the pressure on him was as heavy as a mountain in this battle with Giant Sun’s will.

He had already used all his strength but there was no doubt this was the strongest opponent he had faced since his rebirth!

The two organized themselves again and after a few breaths of time, they charged at each other again.

“So what if you are an Immortal Gu? Go and die!” On the other battlefield, Hei Lou Lan’s violent shout could be heard.

Tens of strength path phantoms suddenly retreated and entered Hei Lou Lan’s body.

Hei Lou Lan’s body merged with the strength path phantoms, transforming into a giant phantom within moments.

The giant reached a height of over a hundred feet. The muscles on it were bulging and vivid, and its appearance was exactly similar to Hei Lou Lan.

“Feel my killer move!!” The giant strength path phantom’s voice rumbled like thunder; it headed straight towards the flying bear phantom and smashed its right fist at the flying bear phantom’s skull.

The flying bear phantom was being held under control by Ye Lui Sang and others; caught unprepared, it was sent rolling down.

Smash.

The giant strength path phantom showered the flying bear phantom with punches; the flying bear phantom was heavily injured after suffering the continuous attacks, and angrily counterattacked.

However, the giant strength path phantom was nimble and displayed a master level attainment in close combat. After a while, the flying bear phantom’s body was beaten into such a mess that its original appearance was indistinct.

“The final strike!” The giant strength path phantom raised its right leg and smashed down like an axe.

Boom!

A huge rumbling sound echoed, the flying bear phantom could no longer endure and its stout giant body disappeared, turning back into Gu form and flying away shakily.

The giant strength path phantom grabbed the Immortal Gu and smiled malevolently towards Fang Yuan.

“Hei Lou Lan’s true strength has reached such a level!”

“Too terrifying, he can almost destroy an Immortal Gu!”

“My loss in this Imperial Court contest was not unjust...”

Ye Lui Sang and others looked on with wide open eyes.

Hei Lou Lan’s battle strength was absolutely not inferior to Fang Yuan’s, and was even higher in certain aspects because of his Great Strength True Martial Physique.

Flying Bear Phantom was an Immortal Gu but without any Gu worms as assistance and Fang Yuan not maneuvering it personally, it was normal for it to be captured by Hei Lou Lan.

The flying bear phantom was destroyed, while Tai Bai Yun Sheng was using all his strength to contend with Giant Sun’s will for the supreme true inheritance. As such, Fang Yuan who was in an intense battle with the river-like Giant Sun’s will was alone and facing danger.

“You have a good head on your shoulders, I will take it as my victory trophy and preserve it.” Hei Lou Lan’s voice came out from the giant strength path phantom.

It slowly flew towards Fang Yuan.

“Fang Yuan, give up resisting. You no longer have a way out!” The river-like Giant Sun’s will spoke.

Although it had fought with Fang Yuan only for a short time, its size was already less than half of before.

One could say Fang Yuan, being able to force the Immortal Venerable’s will to this state, had tremendous battle strength which was not inferior to Hei Lou Lan’s.

Unfortunately, he was shrouded in a black coffin luck aura and his circumstances were extremely bad. Even if he was greatly resourceful and extremely brave, it seemed that he would be unable to reverse this situation!

“Hahaha...” Fang Yuan threw his head back and laughed loudly!

His laughter resounded through the battlefield, displaying a matchless bravery!

“Giant Sun’s will, you want to break my spirit by every possible means, but my heart is like iron and my will is like steel! Our battle has just begun.”

The river-like Giant Sun’s will did not retort, instead falling into silence.

The giant strength path phantom Hei Lou Lan had transformed into also stopped its movements.

Heaven and earth qi manifested around Fang Yuan.

Gu Masters shattered their aperture to ascend to Gu Immortal realm, which would attract heaven and earth qi. Fang Yuan was inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building which delayed this for a moment.

That short moment was the most dangerous and most difficult time, but Fang Yuan was able to hold on by exerting all of his methods.

In the vicinity of heaven and earth qi, ordinary Gu worms could not be used and their activation would cause a backlash. In severe cases, even Immortal Gu could also perish.

Hei Lou Lan was only using mortal Gu, and had no choice but to stop.

The process of Fang Yuan’s immortal ascension had officially begun.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 627: Top Ten Catastrophes, Chaotic Branching Teeth

Clear and glorious heaven qi, golden earth qi, more and more of them surrounded Fang Yuan.

Hei Lou Lan and the others retreated.

The river-like Giant Sun’s will growled endlessly, but did not dare to charge in abruptly.

After the intense battle with Fang Yuan, its mass was reduced by more than half.

It was anxious internally: “Damn it! Unless the main will sends reinforcements over, I alone cannot take down this Fang Yuan.”

The battlefield turned silent temporarily.

Fang Yuan saw that the situation had progressed just as he expected, breathing out a huge sigh of relief.

In the contest for Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, after several twists and turns, the current situation was becoming clearer.

Fang Yuan’s situation was like walking on a tightrope, intense wind was blowing and he was almost blown away several times, losing his initiative. If not for his brilliant schemes and endless trump cards, he would not have lasted this long.

Especially this time, Fang Yuan gambled his life, bravely going for a mutual defeat, finally managing to get back the initiative.

“My northern plains trip has reached the most crucial climax! Next, my immortal ascension is extremely important, it can almost decide victory and loss in this battle!” Fang Yuan concentrated his mind, just as he had said, the real battle was just beginning.

“Junior brother, don’t be too careless!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s tone was solemn, his gaze was anxious as his heart was full of worry.

He had just become an immortal, he was extremely clear about the difficulties of immortal ascension. He knew: If not for Giant Sun’s will’s help, he would not have succeeded. Even if he had his life’s accumulation and that deep foundation!

“Sigh, junior brother is too young and daring, he should not have made this choice! Had I known earlier, I would not have let him take this step! Sigh, hopefully, he had received master’s guidance and can succeed luckily...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng sighed in his heart.

Fang Yuan made eye contact with Tai Bai Yun Sheng, nodding his head.

Next, he closed his eyes, his mind entering his aperture.

Ordinary Gu Masters and Gu Immortals, in their entire lives, they can only have one aperture. But Fang Yuan had once taken a major risk in three kings blessed land, obtaining an immense opportunity. Thus, after using the second aperture Immortal Gu, he now had two apertures.

After the imperial court contest, both his apertures were rank five peak stage, crystal purple primeval essence!

There were three steps in immortal ascension, the first was to shatter the aperture.

Fang Yuan shattered the second aperture.

When Gu Masters shatter their aperture, they can only advance with no way of retreating. That is because they only have one aperture.

But Fang Yuan had two.

That means, even if Fang Yuan fails this tribulation, he would lose one aperture, but he would still keep another aperture.

Keeping one aperture could preserve his life.

This was one of the benefits of second aperture Gu.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not know this secret, if he knew, the worry in his heart would dissipate greatly.

Crack!

Crack!

Crack!

Lightning bolts shot down endlessly, targeting Giant Sun’s will.

“Fang Yuan you scoundrel, you will die a terrible death!” Giant Sun’s will howled, he resisted the tribulation lightning as his golden sand-like will exploded time and time again.

This lightning bolt was extraordinary, it had the appearance of a trident and had great power, as one of the ten great catastrophes.

Originally, snow war tribulation lightning did not strike at such close intervals, one bolt would form every tens of breaths’ time. But now, when Fang Yuan shattered his aperture and drew in the heaven and earth qi, a new heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity were formed.

The heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity fused with the once in ten years blizzard, increasing the power of the snow disaster.

Snow war tribulation lightning acted like it was on drugs, in its excitement, several bolts were shot down with less than a breath’s interval each time!

Every time he resisted it, Giant Sun’s will paid a heavy price.

But he could not leave.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building needed his protection.

Now that Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had lost almost all its functions, it was like an empty shell. If Giant Sun’s will’s protection was lifted, in just a moment, the entire Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would be crumbled under the terrifying might of the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was an inheritance treasury that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had left behind, with Giant Sun’s will as the controller of this building. Its main objective forced Giant Sun’s will to resist the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity head on.

This way, he had become Fang Yuan’s protector during this tribulation.

Protecting his sworn enemy and helping him to ascension to immortal realm, Giant Sun’s will, who was forced by circumstances and had to do this, could feel an immense humiliation and rage in his heart.

“Fang Yuan, you scoundrel, once I survive this heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, I will tear your tendons out, I will drink your blood and eat your flesh!” Giant Sun’s will howled, even though there was the sound of thunder, it could not mask his rage.

Very soon, his howling came to an end, it turned into shock: “This, this is the chaotic branching teeth!”

Only to see that in the air filled with lightning and thunder, eighteen spirals appeared.

The spirals spun faster and faster, as they expanded rapidly.

In each of these black spirals, there was a large snow-white beast tooth forming slowly.

A total of eighteen beast teeth, each white as snow, with a huge size like that of ancient trees, over thirty meters tall.

The beast teeth were waiting to strike, and an intense feeling of danger struck Giant Sun’s will’s heart.

Chaotic branching teeth was also one of the top ten catastrophes, ranked higher than even the snow war tribulation lightning, and had greater might.

“I cannot allow all eighteen chaotic branching teeth to strike at the same time! At that time, even I cannot resist it... I must destroy them in advance!!” Giant Sun’s will was full of battle experience, he chose to strike immediately.

He had no hesitation, creating ten wills in the form of dragons, flying about and charging towards the heavenly tribulation in the sky with no fear.

However, along the way, there were wind blades, icy hail, and snow war tribulation lightning that attacked non stop. The ten dragon will suffered heavy casualties along the way, only five made it to the spirals.

In fact, the result of their attacks was not very evident.

Only three succeeded, destroying the spirals. The remaining two dragon wills suffered too much damage, the spirals that they charged towards flickered for a bit before recovering.

The tribulation lightning crackled, the speed of attacks becoming even quicker than before! It was like a wordless mockery towards Giant Sun’s will.

“Damn it! Despicable!’ Giant Sun’s will was helpless, he split out another ten dragons and charged again in desperation.

Within true inheritance secluded domain, it was a scene of serenity.

Fang Yuan shut his eyes, his expression was calm and he breathed in relaxation.

His mind was mostly focused on the shattered second aperture.

“My first aperture is my vital Gu Spring Autumn Cicada. This Gu is incomparably important, if I ascend to immortal realm with it, I will be a time path Gu Immortal. But my knowledge of time path is too limited, and to undergo tribulation with Immortal Gu, I cannot take this risk without any experience.”

“Only the second aperture, with the vital Gu all-out effort Gu, I can become a strength path Gu Immortal. Since rebirth, I had studied strength path intensely, although it is not on the level of blood path, I still have the foundation to become an immortal.”

This second aperture had already shattered into a mess, forming a hole and sucking in the heaven qi and earth qi.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was less than a hundred years old, but he had the foundation and accumulation to become a Gu Immortal. Fang Yuan had five hundred years of experience, and his knowledge surpassed Tai Bai Yun Sheng who had an immortal inheritance, it was definitely more than sufficient for him to rise to immortal.

“Except that now, it is still not the best time to ascend to immortal.” Fang Yuan laughed bitterly in his mind.

Fang Yuan’s strength path cultivation had not reached its limits. He had only a hundred jun of strength, and his bones were impermanence bones, his skin was turtle jade wolf skin, and his strength path Gu worms were not all rank five.

All these affected his future potential after becoming an immortal, as well as the size of his immortal aperture, it would be best if he could perfect them. Fang Yuan’s original intention was to accumulate his foundation to the absolute limit before taking the risk of immortal ascension after making ample preparation.

Unfortunately, plans do not keep up with changes.

Forced by the situation, Fang Yuan could only do this.

As the heaven and earth qi entered his body, at the same time, Fang Yuan’s body was emitting a thick white human qi.

The thickness of the human qi was like a huge balloon, completely covering Fang Yuan’s entire body.

Hei Lou Lan saw this and his pupils shrunk.

Ye Lui Sang said in disbelief: “How is this possible, he has such thick human qi, this is even greater than Tai Bai Yun Sheng!”

“To think that junior brother’s foundation is so deep. I can see that junior brother had made preparations for this immortal ascension long ago, he is not taking an impulsive risk.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked with a surprised gaze, his heart settling.

The clear and unrestrained heaven qi, the golden and heavy earth qi, together with the pure white as snow human qi, the three merged and formed a multi-colored lump.

At this point, he had reached the second step of immortal ascension — taking in the qi.

“Damn it, the scoundrel has starting taking in the qi. Why are the reinforcements not here yet?” The river-like Giant Sun’s will was burning with anxiety.

He did not dare to act rashly.

Once he was stained by heaven qi, he would melt into air. If he was corroded by earth qi, he would turn into rocks and die.

Fang Yuan, who was the intersection point of the three qi faced dangers after dangers even more so.

He had to balance the three qi at all times, if there were too much heaven and earth qi, he would die. Even human qi, if the balance was off, would cause him to self-detonate.

However, fortune is found within danger, the greater the risks, the greater the opportunities.

The balance of the three qi, the fusion between them was bringing Fang Yuan an unceasing amount of inspiration.

Heaven and earth were the foundation stones that nurtured all life, the fusion of heaven and earth qi filled Fang Yuan’s mind with the grand mysteries of the Great Dao.

The three qi were fusing intensely, as Fang Yuan was inside, returning to his usual appearance after recalling the six arm heavenly zombie king killer move.

His injuries were rapidly healing, the healing speed was faster than his healing during six arm heavenly zombie king mode!

The three qi cleansed his body, not just his flesh, but his soul, mind, and will, they were being elevated.

He felt like a baby, being cleansed and returned to a pure state. Fang Yuan’s eyes became clearer, the contrast between the black and white parts became more evident. His muscles were reconstructed one by one, the scars on his body fell off, and new skin grew on him. Even his hair started growing wildly, it grew longer and longer, when they were waist long, they broke, before growing again, and breaking, repeating the cycle...

Be it his body, his bones, his organs or his face, they were undergoing a magical transformation.

At the same time, the experiences in his previous five hundred years, as well as the events since rebirth flashed in his mind rapidly.

In just a short amount of time, Fang Yuan revisited his entire life.

A complex feeling that was indescribable, his memories that were deep within his mind all resurfaced, filling Fang Yuan’s heart.

In his memories, all those cultivation questions that could not be answered obtained perfect answers like the work of a deity.

At this moment, heaven and earth were impartial, they were generous and imparted the mysterious of the Great Dao towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had to deal with his emotions while cherishing this opportunity to learn more about the mysteries of the Great Dao, and in the meantime balancing the three qi. Should he lose balance, he would die.

Countless Gu Masters failed at this step during their ascension!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 628: Formidable Hei Lou Lan

In true inheritance secluded domain, Fang Yuan was surrounded by the thick lump of the three colored qi, his body completely hidden.

“Junior brother, you have to control yourself. I am not concerned with you having to deal with the emotional turbulence, but I’m afraid that you are young and brave, and might be greedy towards the mysteries of the Great Dao, forgetting your limits and taking in too much heaven and earth qi.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s gaze was filled with worry.

Heaven and earth qi had already spread to his surroundings, he had to flew away from Fang Yuan slowly.

Giant Sun’s will who was fighting with him over the control of the supreme true inheritance slowed his steps.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s pressure reduced, and his situation turned for the better.

“This accursed scoundrel, he actually has so much human qi. Damn it, why hasn’t he lost balance yet?” The river-like Giant Sun’s will gritted his teeth and cursed.

He was not the only one hoping for such a result, Hei Lou Lan and the others were having the same thoughts.

“This guy is so young, yet he can balance the three qi for so long!”

“He and Tai Bai Yun Sheng address each other as disciple brothers, they must have some extraordinary origin. Don’t tell me he is really going to become a Gu Immortal?”

“No way! Is becoming a Gu Immortal so easy! Do you think Ancestor Giant Sun is useless?”

Everyone conversed in secret, not daring to make a move. With such intense heaven and earth qi, once they suffer a backlash, it would be no joke.

Fang Yuan was inside the lump of qi, but his calm face showed a faint smile.

“Incredible, simply incredible...” his eyes were shut tight as he mumbled. All sorts of Great Dao mysteries were flowing into his mind like a warm spring.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan underwent immortal ascension and became a blood path Gu Immortal, this was his second ascension.

With this valuable experience, he was much calmer than any other Gu Master in the world. Compared to usual Gu Masters, he also knew the truth behind this event.

Man is the spirit of all being, they have the greatest spirituality. Gu are the essence of heaven and earth, they are the carriers of the Great Dao.

Any path to longevity was a path of transcendency.

To transcend, one needed accumulation.

And the most basic method of accumulating one’s foundation was to learn.

Gu Masters use Gu, nurture Gu, and refine Gu. From Gu, they learn about the mysteries of heaven and earth indirectly.

But when a Gu Master undergoes ascension, they were directly conversing and interacting with heaven and earth.

This interaction was extremely precious, most likely, each person only had one of such an opportunity in their life.

Fang Yuan treasured this opportunity greatly, he grabbed onto it and tried his best to make use of it.

The mysteries of heaven and earth were even deeper and more profound than the depths of the sea. Fang Yuan knew his limits, he did not venture into it aimlessly, but instead, steered towards strength path, deepening his understanding and feeling the true essence of this path.

He had after all, only cultivated strength path on the side in his previous life, even though he cultivated strength path directly in this life, it was only for a short time.

His original attainment in strength path, strictly speaking, was only quasi strength path master.

But making use of this opportunity, his understanding of strength path surged, bursting through the sky! Very quickly, he got past the barrier to strength path master, quickly surpassing master realm and charging towards the realm of grandmaster.

Fang Yuan had no choice but to do this.

The second aperture that he shattered had the rank four all-out effort Gu as its vital Gu. This Gu was of the strength path, if it was put in first during the third step, it would help Fang Yuan become a strength path Gu Immortal.

But this Gu was not rank five, with a lower rank, Fang Yuan could only use a higher strength path attainment to compensate for the difference, otherwise, the third step of putting in Gu would be extremely risky. If the immortal aperture could not be created, this immortal ascension would end in failure.

Outside True Yang Building.

Intense winds were blowing, tribulation lightning was striking!

The heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities formed a cocoon qi lump, the qi lump was extremely huge and completely covered Eighty-Eight True Yang Building within it.

After Fang Yuan shattered his aperture, the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities underwent a new terrifying change.

In order to protect Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Giant Sun’s will had no choice but to resist it, now was the crucial moment!

Bam...

Following the intense sounds of the wind, nine snow white chaotic branching teeth shot out together like lightning.

Their speed was so fast only nine shadows could be seen, resembling flashes of lightning.

Giant Sun’s will was already mentally prepared, he had been waiting.

The will armor that was shielding Eighty-Eight True Yang Building increased in thickness by many times, becoming ten meters thick.

At the same time, Giant Sun’s will split out dozens of will hands, opening the palms and creating a barrier in the air.

Nine chaotic branching teeth shot down at once, during their descent they collided with each other, causing their directions to change randomly, turning left and right, it was unpredictable.

The will hands flew around following them, defending desperately.

The chaotic branching teeth pierced many of the will hands, stabbing the main

Giant Sun’s will and causing nine deep holes to appear on the thick will armor that was a thousand times tougher than steel.

Giant Sun’s will grunted, the will’s main body was only chaotic for a moment before calming down.

Looking at his injuries, Giant Sun’s will could not help but feel shocked.

Nine wounds of varying depth, two were six meters deep, almost piercing into Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, it was really a dangerous scene.

“Thankfully, I spared no effort in destroying half of the chaotic branching teeth earlier. Otherwise, if all eighteen moved at once, their trajectory would be even harder to predict, how would I be able to weaken them while in the air?”

Giant Sun’s will felt some relief, but his hatred and anger towards Fang Yuan also intensified: “This accursed scoundrel Fang Yuan! I am actually shielding him during his immortal ascension! As long as I recover sufficiently, I will definitely... eh!”

Giant Sun’s will stared at the eighteen spirals forming in the air in a daze.

“There is actually a second wave of chaotic branching teeth?!” Seeing this, Giant Sun’s will was fuming with anger.

To defend against the chaotic branching teeth earlier, he had expended a sixth of his thoughts. But now there was a second wave!

“Wait, this is?!”

Among the eighteen spirals, another eighteen spirals started forming.

Seeing this, even Giant Sun’s will felt suffocated.

“The third wave of chaotic branching teeth came together with the second?!” He howled at the sky, the armor-like main will shook intensely, almost breaking apart. If he could vomit blood, he would have vomited a river by now.

Earlier when defending against the nine chaotic branching teeth, Giant Sun’s will had already used his full strength.

Right now, there were a total of thirty-six spirals, thirty-six chaotic branching teeth, this fearsome power could not be calculated by simple addition!

“This scoundrel Fang Yuan! I curse you to die!!” Giant Sun’s will almost wanted to discard Eighty-Eight True Yang Building at this moment, directly going to Fang Yuan and killing him without considering the consequences.

But he was not an anger will, but a special will.

He had to think of the big picture, he had to protect this inheritance treasure which was Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

He had to contact the other subsidiary wills and gather all his strength, in order to resist these heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities.

“What? The main will wants to send me to defend against the heavenly tribulations?!” Within true inheritance secluded domain, the river-like Giant Sun’s will was still waiting for reinforcement, but the reply from the main will caused his heart to turn cold, like he had fallen into an icy river.

“God damn it!” Giant Sun’s will which was contesting with Tai Bai Yun Sheng over the supreme true inheritance felt great regret, but he had to divert most of his strength to the main will.

But to prevent Eighty-Eight True Yang Building from being taken by Tai Bai Yun Sheng, a portion of Giant Sun’s will was still needed to maintain the situation inside the true inheritance light lump.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng felt his pressure decreasing all of a sudden, and heaved a sigh of relief.

“Giant Sun’s will has finally stopped expanding! Junior brother, your plan has worked perfectly. It seems that the fusion of three heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities creates terrifying might that would force even Giant Sun’s will to defend against it with all his strength. Junior brother, you are worthy of being benefactor’s disciple, you need to survive this. The third step of putting in Gu is the most important of all, success or failure will all depend on this!”

As time continued to pass, the three colored qi lump surrounding Fang Yuan started shrinking, until it completely went into the area of Fang Yuan’s broken aperture.

“He actually completed the step of taking in the qi, he is at the final step!” Hei Lou Lan and the others were watching by the side, seeing Giant Sun’s will retreating, they panicked.

“What do we do now? Do we just watch him become a Gu Immortal?!” Ye Lui Sang screamed.

“Fang Yuan has no more heaven and earth qi around him, we should go and kill him now.” Bian Si Xuan suggested, but she made no movement.

Everyone looked at each other, they were shocked, suspicious, and in a difficult spot.

Fang Yuan still had the Gu Immortal Tai Bai Yun Sheng supporting him.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s pressure was lifted, he held the true inheritance light lump as he faced Hei Lou Lan and the rest of the gang, showing an unyielding attitude.

“Tai Bai Yun Sheng is not a problem, but once the immortal ascension succeeds, our problems would be endless. He is not a weak healing Gu Immortal like Tai Bai Yun Sheng...” Hei Lou Lan clenched his fists, a fierce light shining in his eyes.

After thinking about it, he made up his mind and shouted: “Attack!”

Saying so, the strength path phantom giant took huge strides forward, attacking.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was crying in his heart, he did not dare to take on Hei Lou Lan’s attacks directly, he shouted: “You dare! As long as you come, I will throw this supreme true inheritance at the luck path true inheritance, let’s see how you account to Giant Sun’s will then!”

Everyone’s fighting intent evaporated after hearing Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s threat, their morale sinking.

Don’t listen to him, we’ll leave a few people to protect the luck path true inheritance, the rest will come with me!” Hei Lou Lan snorted, immediately saying.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s heart sank, it was difficult for him to handle the situation.

“Hahaha...” At this moment, Fang Yuan laughed wildly from behind him.

He had already opened his eyes: “Never mind! Come and chase me. Let’s see how many of you are flying masters!”

Eagle rise Gu had already been destroyed, but why would the vigilant him not have spares?

Fang Yuan owned Hu Immortal blessed land and could connect to treasure yellow heaven, he did not lack any mortal Gu.

This sentence was even more demoralising to the gang compared to Tai Bai Yun Sheng. Once they thought of Fang Yuan’s flying master attainment, and the huge space that was available in true inheritance secluded domain, all of their morale almost hit rock bottom.

Hei Lou Lan’s gaze shone for a bit, but he was unmoved.

He was the Lord of the Imperial Court for this round, he had exemplary talent and a ruthless nature, he would not become dejected with just a few words.

“We will chase him even if we cannot catch him, I want to see how he can undergo immortal ascension under such pressure!” Hei Lou Lan’s words lifted the morale once again.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned grim, he did not speak anymore.

Hei Lou Lan hit the main point.

During an ordinary immortal ascension, the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity would be all around him, if his enemies wanted to obstruct him, they would face the might of the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity.

But now that Giant Sun’s will was blocking the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities outside, it gave Hei Lou Lan and the others an opportunity to intervene.

Although in this true inheritance secluded domain, there was still heaven and earth qi left that could cause backlash in mortal Gu.

But Hei Lou Lan and the others were just like Fang Yuan, they were all using mortal Gu, thus they all faced the same backlash.

At once, the situation changed again.

Although Giant Sun’s will left to resist the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities wholeheartedly, Fang Yuan’s predicament did not become any easier.

Hei Lou Lan was indeed a formidable character, he was an outstanding person and knew the perfect timing to strike.

Fang Yuan’s immortal ascension was stuck between the second and third step, the situation had turned dangerous yet again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 629: Formless Hand

“Fang Yuan, why are you running?”

“You cowardly scum, are you afraid? Do you have the guts to fight me for three hundred rounds?!”

“You are unworthy of disguising as Chang Shan Yin. You don’t even have one percent of his bravery.”

Inside true inheritance secluded domain. Fang Yuan was flying away rapidly while the others chased from behind, taunting him endlessly.

These insults and provocations fell on deaf ears, Fang Yuan’s expression was tranquil without any emotions.

He was closely observing his surroundings, true inheritance secluded domain was vast but it was not a flat area and many true inheritance meteors flew around in disorder, even colliding occasionally.

Giant Sun’s will had taken control of many true inheritances just before, but there were still many masterless true inheritances left in true inheritance secluded domain.

If Fang Yuan was unfortunately obstructed by these true inheritances, the group of Gu Masters behind him would be able to near him. Once he was encircled, the situation would turn much more dangerous.

Right at this moment, a dark red true inheritance meteor flew towards Fang Yuan.

Wind flower Gu.

Fang Yuan, however, had a slight smile on his face as he inwardly willed.

A gust of wind condensed into a giant flower which suddenly appeared beside him. The wind flower nimbly changed its direction, carrying him with it.

Swoosh—!

A sharp ear-piercing wind breezed past; Fang Yuan brushed past this unparalleled true inheritance light lump.

The unparalleled true inheritance shot forward directly towards the group of Gu Masters behind; the group was caught unprepared and panicked for a moment, dodging and fleeing.

Taking advantage of this time, Fang Yuan increased his speed and rapidly pulled apart the distance between him and the group.

Hei Lou Lan’s group naturally was not willing to see this situation. Each of them was an elite; they immediately reacted and sent out countless long range attacks.

Fang Yuan sneered, using the primeval essence in his first aperture.

Flash bug Gu.

This was a rare space path movement Gu and under its effect, Fang Yuan immediately disappeared from the spot.

When he appeared, he was already five hundred steps ahead.

The attacks from Hei Lou Lan and the others thus landed on nothing.

Fang Yuan stopped flash bug Gu and changed to eagle rise Gu.

Flash bug Gu was a rank five Gu but its speed was not great, and it also expended a lot of purple crystal primeval essence to move forward by five hundred steps per use. Its main usage was to make sudden movements to avoid attacks.

To truly speed up and fly for a long distance, eagle rise Gu was still a lot better.

Eagle rise Gu might only be rank four Gu, but there were six wings on Fang Yuan’s back; he had simultaneously used three eagle rise Gu!

Eagle rise Gu’s speed was very impressive and rapidly transported him away, while also consuming less primeval essence.

The group of Gu Masters chasing Fang Yuan could only gnash their teeth as he rapidly flew away.

“Damn it! This guy is truly slippery, only focusing on running away, he has not even a bit of bravery.”

“Didn’t he shatter his aperture to ascend to Gu Immortal? How come he still has so much primeval essence left?”

“Hmph, there are many methods for Gu Masters to preserve primeval essence. So what if the aperture is shattered? One just needs to have Gu that can store primeval essence like fish bubble Gu, beggar moth or grave yam Gu.”

“My movement Gu can’t endure it, the backlash from heaven and earth qi is really terrifying.”

Hei Lou Lan sneered: “We are suffering backlash, he is also in the same situation. We will continue chasing without stop. The enemy is a flying master, it is normal for us to not be able to reach him. But as long as we chase closely and not give him time to advance to a Gu Immortal, we will have fulfilled our objective!”

Fang Yuan glanced back and seeing that the pursuers had no intention of giving up, the anxiety in his heart deepened.

Without doubt, he had to admit that Hei Lou Lan was striking at his weak point.

Bursts of pain spread from his second aperture.

The second aperture was already shattered, forming a hole which was occupied by a lump of three colored qi at this moment, waiting for the vital Gu to be put into it and reach the final step, accumulating its foundation till the immortal aperture is born.

If the immortal aperture was not created, Fang Yuan would perish from the backlash of heaven and earth qi.

If the immortal aperture was created, no matter which grade it was, Fang Yuan would have to concentrate on it fully at that moment, causing him to enter a period of weakness where he would be defenseless.

This time could be long or short, depending on the person.

If the enemies took advantage of this time, Fang Yuan's situation would be bleak and was very likely to die in a tragic end!

At present, Hei Lou Lan's group was firmly blocking Fang Yuan at this step.

Fang Yuan did not dare to place in his Gu and could only look on as the extremely compressed three colored lump of qi started to vibrate.

"I can't continue like this! If it is put off any longer, the three colored lump of qi will disperse and all my accumulations used in advancing to Gu Immortal will vanish into thin air." Fang Yuan kept on thinking of one solution after another to get out of this predicament.

Rumble...

Right at this time, true inheritance secluded domain started shaking.

Rumble...

Another tremor soon spread, causing everyone to panic.

"What is going on?"

"What happened, is true inheritance secluded domain collapsing?"

Hei Lou Lan, Ye Lui Sang and others had a worried expression, realizing fully well in their mind: this was the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities outside starting to affect Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were instead overjoyed, this signified Giant Sun's will had already staked all its strength but the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities was so terrifying that even it had reached its limit.

"Damn it, damn it... I barely endured it!" Giant Sun's will gasped for breath with fear and joy, it did not even have the energy to curse Fang Yuan.

The ten meter thick golden armor created by Giant Sun's will that had covered Eighty-Eight True Yang Building tightly was now left with nothing but a thin layer with its luster dimmed.

Thirty-six chaotic branching teeth attacking together was not a simple matter of addition, their overall might was amplified by close to ten times!

During this whole process snow war tribulation lightning attacked crazily like the attacks were free. The lightning which flashed in intervals before had almost become unending like sunlight; one could see the terrifying frequency of snow war tribulation lightning.

Giant Sun's will avoided death narrowly, but there was not even one percent of the original will remaining.

He used all his strength and put in all of his effort to destroy eleven spirals in advance. The remaining chaotic branching teeth erupted together, Giant Sun's will used all his ability and blocked most of them, but he could not block seven of them.

Seven scars appeared on Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. Four scars even directly penetrated through True Yang Building, opening up four passages.

The tremor Fang Yuan and the rest felt in true inheritance secluded domain originated from this.

“My Eighty-Eight True Yang Building...” Giant Sun’s will’s heart bled at the sight and almost howled out in grief.

The losses were too severe, not only were the numbers of Gu worms destroyed extremely huge, two immortal Gu were also destroyed.

Who knew how long it would take to replenish these Gu worms and restore Eighty-Eight True Yang Building to its complete form.

“Fang Yuan, you insufferable bastard. You are undergoing the tribulation, yet I was the one who bore the consequences! I will make sure you regret being born into this world!”

Giant Sun’s will cursed fiercely in his heart.

The giant cocoon formed from the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities had already thinned.

Several rays of light pierced through the layers of dark clouds and shone down on the damaged Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities were slowly dissipating.

Giant Sun’s will felt a huge stone lifting off his heart and was joyous to the point of crying: “The heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities have finally ended!”

“I managed to endure it! Although Eighty-Eight True Yang Building suffered heavy damage, the fundamental Gu worms haven’t been lost, and the mortal Gu might have been destroyed in large numbers, but they can be replenished. The destroyed immortal Gu are rather troublesome to obtain, but they also can be refined again. Even if others refine them first, I can use other Gu worms to replace them. The situation is set, now I shall get rid of the otherworldly demon then teach that scum Fang Yuan his place!”

The heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities were dissipating in front of his eyes, Giant Sun’s will saw the time to take revenge was here and his mood took a turn for the better.

However, right at this time, a light blue giant hand gradually appeared in front of Giant Sun’s will.

“Thi...This is...?!”

The remaining Giant Sun’s will trembled intensely, even more frightened than seeing seventy or even eighty chaotic branching teeth at once.

“This is Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s killer move — Formless Hand. This accursed Fang Yuan, how is his luck so bad that he attracted this disaster!”

Rank nine Gu Immortals were invincible under the heavens and could leave behind unique traces in the whole world.

Even after death, some of their killer moves could emerge again during heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities.

“I got it! This Fang Yuan is too audacious, he was set on killing the child of luck Ma Hong Yun and suffered the backlash from fortune rivalling heaven Gu, causing his luck to be completely messed up, thus attracting such terrifying a heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity!”

Giant Sun’s will felt extremely agonized when he realized the cause.

Going to the bottom of this, it was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable who left behind fortune rivaling heaven Gu. Under an absurd combination of different factors, Giant Sun’s will was actually suffering a loss from his own arrangement!

“Back then, the whole world was helpless when Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable used formless hand to rob countless Gu worms. Fortunately, this formless hand only has five fingers, thus at most, it can only seize rank five Gu, Gu, Gu... oh heavens!”

Giant Sun’s will’s pitch suddenly rose an octave higher, crying out in shock.

The heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity slowly dissipated, large numbers of formless hands appeared one after another.

Two, three... twenty, thirty... two hundred, three hundred...

Innumerable formless hands appeared, covering the whole sky!

Among them, one finger to five fingered formless hands occupied the majority.

There were sixteen six fingered formless hands and nine seven fingered formless hands.

There were even three eight fingered formless hands!

“Impossible! Even if Fang Yuan was targeted by fortune rivaling heaven Gu and his luck became terrible, it could not have gotten to this extent!” Giant Sun’s will shouted in an incredulous tone.

“It’s over, everything is finished!” Giant Sun’s will howled, if he could cry, his face would be filled with tears right now.

Instantly, the large number of Giant Sun’s will dispersed and fell down from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building like sand.

This was the self-collapse of a will!

There was not even a trace of fighting spirit left, it could not endure such an impact.

The heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities had not ended, but were transforming into this final tribulation.

Formless hands!

The remaining Giant Sun’s will curled up into a lump, exposing Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Inside true inheritance secluded domain, Fang Yuan and the others were still in the dark, not knowing anything that occurred outside.

The chase was still continuing.

Due to the backlash of heaven and earth qi, the loss of Gu worms on both sides had reached the hundreds. But they were still persisting firmly.

Fang Yuan had almost no movement Gu left, but he had already found a way to resolve this predicament!

He led the pursuers to make a large detour before suddenly changing direction and flying towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

“Senior brother, quickly open your immortal aperture and let me in. I can evade these pursuers and smoothly advance to a Gu Immortal there!” Fang Yuan secretly transmitted his voice.

“This...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng could not help but hesitate.

The immortal aperture was the foundation of a Gu Immortal. If Fang Yuan was let in and he failed, the resulting destruction would have to be endured by Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

“Senior brother, what are you hesitating for at such a crucial moment? Once I advance to a Gu Immortal, we will have the strength to survive this danger. Don’t worry, I have complete assurance in advancing successfully!” Fang Yuan shouted.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 630: Chaotic and Dangerous Situation

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was already bound firmly on Fang Yuan’s chariot, and thinking of the Fixed Immortal Travel that was with Fang Yuan, he had no choice but to accept Fang Yuan’s request.

Fang Yuan was overjoyed and charged into Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture.

“Damn it!” The pursuers paled at this sight.

“This scum is too crafty, actually hiding in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture. We can’t hunt him now!” Ye Lui Sang helplessly shouted.

“Then, we shall slaughter an immortal! Kill Tai Bai Yun Sheng!!” Hei Lou Lan’s eyes glinted ominously, killing intent pervading from his body.

The strength path giant phantom he had turned into, charged towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng with overwhelming momentum, like a bear pouncing at its prey!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was scared witless, quickly fleeing with the supreme true inheritance light lump.

“Don’t forget that I am also a flying master!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng had learned from Fang Yuan and shouted loudly while flying away.

The pursuers’ momentum was involuntarily destroyed.

Someone powerlessly cursed: “F*ck, two flying masters appeared in this Imperial Court contest and both of them had to be these two!”

Only Hei Lou Lan was provoked by the remark, his battle intent soared to an unprecedented level.

‘Looks like I have to use my full strength as well!’ His expression was solemn as he made a resolution and punched fiercely.

The fist qi surged majestically like a mountain peak!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng nimbly dodged it without receiving any injury.

But the barrage of grand fist qi suddenly transformed into strength path giant phantoms.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was caught unprepared and in a short moment was completely surrounded by these strength path giant phantoms.

“What bad luck.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s face turned pale white.

“Who could have thought Hei Lou Lan’s strength had actually reached such a powerful level! Sixteen strength path giant phantoms, this strength can truly slaughter an immortal!” Ye Lui Sang and the others were greatly shocked at this scene.

“Huff huff huff...” Hei Lou Lan gasped for breath, the strength path giant phantom on him had already dissipated. This move clearly used a lot of his energy and strength.

Even Great Strength True Martial Physique of ten extreme physiques could not endure its usage.

His fat body flickered with a layer of faint black light; that was the power of Immortal Gu Dark Limit, helping him to suppress and conceal Great Strength True Martial Physique.

“What a close call, I almost broke the seal of dark limit Gu!” Hei Lou Lan rejoiced inwardly, a vicious gaze flashing on his eyes as he looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng, “Your death is assured now! My grand plan of revenge will start from you, Tai Bai Yun Sheng!”

However, a change occurred right at this moment!

Giant light blue hands suddenly appeared in true inheritance secluded domain.

The dense giant light blue hands soon attracted everyone’s gazes.

“What is that!”

“What kind of thing?”

Whoosh.

An ordinary true inheritance that was flying like a meteor collided into a giant light blue hand.

The giant light blue hand opened its palm and grabbed this true inheritance, holding it so tightly the true inheritance could not even budge.

The giant light blue hand paused for a breath of time before flying away swiftly.

Under everyone’s gazes, it left behind a trail of gorgeous blue light while its speed kept on increasing.

After it moved thousands of steps away, it suddenly disappeared without a trace, even the true inheritance it was holding was gone.

Everyone’s pupils involuntarily shrunk at this sight.

“These giant hands are so terrifying, they easily subdue the true inheritance!”

“I know, this is definitely Ancestor Giant Sun’s ability. Haven’t you noticed these giant light blue hands are similar to the flying snow hands?”

“Haha, Ancestor Giant Sun has made his move. It seems the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity has already passed, these two scoundrels are finished now!!”

Some people made guesses which were quickly approved by everyone. However, right when they were cheering, a miserable shriek spread to their ears.

Everyone looked at the source of the voice and saw that a Gu Master in the outer periphery was grabbed by the giant light blue hand.

Shortly after, the giant hand seemed to have grabbed something, flying far away with a clenched fist.

That Gu Master let out a miserable howl: “My... that hand seized all my Gu worms!!”

“What!?”

There was a commotion.

Soon, the second victim appeared.

“My vital Gu was actually seized... puff!” He spurted a mouthful of blood. Vital Gu was closely related to the Gu Master’s life and when it was forcibly seized by the giant hand, the Gu Master immediately suffered backlash.

The hands fell down like rain, beginning to wantonly seize Gu worms.

“Run away...” Everyone dispersed in confusion.

“Isn’t this Ancestor Giant Sun’s ability!? Could it be that this is a heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity?” Many cried out in shock.

“What kind of heavenly tribulation is this, it can actually seize Gu worms!!” Someone shouted in bewilderment. The importance of Gu worms to Gu Masters was self-evident.

“Quick, store your Gu worms into your apertures!” Someone reminded in panic.

However, everyone soon discovered even after storing in the aperture, the Gu worms were still being seized.

The giant light blue hands were formless. They did not inflict the slightest injuries and only captured Gu worms. Once the Gu worm was captured by them, the Gu worm would immediately lose connection with the Gu Master.

“What kind of tribulation are these giant light blue hands? Can it seize even Immortal Gu?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng could not make out any details on these giant light blue hands and was very nervous from the scene unfolding in front of him.

At this time, three giant hands moved towards him. He evaded in panic.

Even as a flying Gu Master, he was soon in danger, his face perspiring heavily.

The giant hands were very fast and extremely nimble; the crucial point was they could sneak attack like flash bug Gu, making it very hard to defend against them.

Even Tai Bai Yun Sheng was cutting out a sorry figure, there was no need to mention other Gu Masters.

“There seems to be information of this in the tribe records...” Hei Lou Lan frowned. He could not dodge in time and was grabbed by a four fingered giant hand.

For a moment, he could not budge.

The giant light blue hand seemingly had no substance and like wind brushing past one’s face, it caused no harm to Hei Lou Lan’s body.

However, Hei Lou Lan felt his head go dizzy, instantly losing connection with a rank four Gu.

“Oh no.” Hei Lou Lan inwardly exclaimed, the Gu that was seized might only be rank four but it was very important. It was one of the necessary Gu worms to use his strength path killer move.

Roar!

Hei Lou Lan suddenly let out a beastly roar.

Rank five — fixed sound Gu!

A formless soundwave rapidly chased after the four fingered giant hand and locked it in place like a formless iron chain.

“I don’t care what all these hands are, I’ll destroy them!” Hei Lou Lan gave a loud shout to raise his spirits, and turned into strength path giant phantom once more.

The giant grabbed the giant light blue hand with its house sized fist, and clenched!

The giant light blue hand flickered twice before shattering apart like glass. Hei Lou Lan immediately sensed that crucial Gu worm.

The shattered giant light blue hand fell apart like ice melting into water.

Hei Lou Lan smoothly grabbed the Gu worm and was just feeling joyous when five formless hands suddenly appeared behind him.

His face turned pale instantly. He fiercely turned his body and delivered a horizontal strike with his arm!

He used all his strength in this strike!

Wind erupted, and soundwaves burst out like thunder.

But when the strike touched the formless hands, the giant arm directly passed through like they were image of the moon in the water.

Hei Lou Lan was stupefied, the formless hands quickly moved and grabbed specific parts of the strength path giant phantom.

Hei Lou Lan was paralyzed once more.

Next moment, the strength path giant phantom collapsed with a loud sound.

His killer move was broken!

“My Gu worms... puff!” Hei Lou Lan spurted out large amounts of blood.

His vital Gu was seized which was the core Gu of his strength path killer move! Besides it, four other crucial Gu worms were also seized.

What gave Hei Lou Lan the most heartache was false emotion fake will Gu and wooden chicken Gu, two Immortal Gu, were also seized!

“Stop right now!” Hei Lou Lan exerted all his strength to chase the hands, the matter of Fang Yuan thrown out of his mind.

The giant light blue hands moved everywhere, seizing Gu worms.

The Gu Masters fled and evaded in disorder.

A rumble erupted in true inheritance secluded domain, threads of light shone down as the True Yang Building began to crumble.

“No, I absolutely can’t let Eighty Eight True Yang Building perish! Formless hands cannot be attacked, but when they grab a Gu worm and clench their fist, they can be destroyed. As long as I can protect the several rank eight core Gu worms, with enough time, I will be able to rebuild True Yang Building!”

Outside the tower, the remnant Giant Sun’s will curled up in a ball and was accumulating its energy.

The enormous True Yang Building was like an old man with a foot in the grave, letting the formless hands fly in, grab the Gu worms and fly away.

The beautiful and grand True Yang Building soon turned into a nibbled giant corn; its surface was a mess, filled with holes.

The formless hands continued to rain down endlessly.

True Yang Building’s complete destruction was not far away.

Inside Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture blessed land, however, was a scene of tranquility.

Fang Yuan waited for a while before carefully transferring his second vital Gu.

All-out effort Gu had a beetle-like shape with an oval body and an arching carapace. The majestic horn on its head appeared dignified and powerful. It had three pairs of strong legs, and its entire body was brown which shone with a metallic luster.

Fang Yuan obtained this Gu back in southern border, later he refined it rank four which allowed him to casually strike out with beast strength phantoms.

“Go.” Fang Yuan softly spoke.

All-out effort Gu obeyed Fang Yuan’s intent, charging towards the extremely compressed three colored qi lump.

BOOM!!!

Fang Yuan’s body shook intensely as lightning seemed to have burst in his mind.

The qi lump exploded loudly and like the process of creation after destruction, it gave birth to an immortal aperture!

The sky in the immortal aperture was orange yellow and a white mountain stood tall on the earth.

Since the immortal aperture was newly born, the space inside was limited, but it soon rapidly expanded all around.

Like a newborn baby, it demanded nutrition intensely.

The immortal aperture’s nourishment was the heaven and earth Qi.

“Senior brother, let me out quick.” Fang Yuan immediately sent his voice.

“You succeeded!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was overjoyed before warning, “You need to be careful when you come out, the situation now is quite dangerous!”

Fang Yuan’s vision changed as he was let out of the immortal aperture by Tai Bai Yun Sheng; the next moment, he appeared beside Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

“This, this is formless hand?!” Five hundred years of experience was not for show, Fang Yuan immediately recognized the origin of the giant light blue hands and turned pale with fright.

Feeling his aura, a six fingered formless hand suddenly appeared above Fang Yuan and grabbed!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 631: Striking a fortune

The six fingered formless hand’s appearance was so sudden that Fang Yuan only had the time to raise his head.

The light blue radiance shone down on his face as his sight was filled with the giant light blue hand.

The formless hand did not show any notions of stopping, grabbing towards Fang Yuan, completely shrouding over his body.

“Junior brother!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted in fright.

The next moment, however, this six fingered formless fist loosened up and spread open.

Fang Yuan’s figure showed up five hundred steps away. The six fingered formless hand had grabbed at nothing.

Flash bug Gu!

This Gu was a rare rank five space path movement Gu. Fang Yuan had to spend a lot of efforts to purchase it in treasure yellow heaven.

“Hufff...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng let out a breath of turbid air, a giant stone lifted off his heart.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng knew Fang Yuan was unable to react properly because he had just came out. In truth, it was nothing difficult for flying masters to evade these formless hands.

“Close call!” Fang Yuan’s body let out cold sweat from the fright.

He had much more understanding of formless hands than others; as such, he knew their threat level clearly!

“Formless hand is Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s killer move; it can range from one finger to nine fingers, respectively able to seize rank one to rank nine Gu worms! They can even seize the vital Gu without any problems. If that six fingered formless hand succeeded in grabbing me, I would have definitely lost either Spring Autumn Cicada or Fixed Immortal Travel... my luck is too bad, it actually provoked such a catastrophe!”

Fang Yuan rapidly flew, dodging the pursuit of the formless hand while observing his surroundings.

True inheritance secluded domain had already fallen into complete chaos.

True inheritance meteors and formless hands filled one’s sight; Gu Masters flew around in disorder – some were evading the formless hands, some cried out in grief after their Gu worms were seized, while some used all their strength to attack the formless hands.

“It seems that they have found out already! Once a formless hand captures a Gu worm, it will clench its fist; this is the moment it can be attacked! When it is in its spread out palm form, it is almost completely immune to all attacks and can only be dodged.”

Fang Yuan recalled the relevant information on formless hands.

He was very familiar with the formless hands. In his previous life, Ma Hong Yun had successively obtained a portion of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritance, also obtaining a similar method of capturing Gu worms. He had used this method many times in the great battle of the five regions, resulting in the disastrous loss of many strong enemies and making them flee.

Fang Yuan had thus researched a lot on this.

Fang Yuan continued to dodge, use flash bug Gu, wind flower Gu, eagle rise Gu and so on before he was able to pull apart a huge distance, making the six fingered formless hand chasing him to change its target.

He immediately sent a portion of his consciousness to inspect his immortal aperture.

There were remnants of heaven and earth qi in true inheritance secluded domain.

Ever since Fang Yuan came out, his immortal aperture had been crazily absorbing these heaven and earth qi, growing rapidly.

In just a short while, his immortal aperture had expanded to over 2000km2 and was still growing.

At the same time, the time flow inside the immortal aperture was starting to become faster than the outside world. From a one to one ratio, it increased to six times as fast.

“Damn it.” Fang Yuan suddenly frowned and his face paled.

The change in the immortal aperture was going smoothly, but the problem appeared in the first aperture; more accurately, the problem was the Spring Autumn Cicada.

Spring Autumn Cicada was recovering rapidly and the first aperture was already showing signs of being unable to bear the huge pressure from it!

“Oh no! When an immortal aperture is born, not only does the space enlarge, the time flow also changes. The change in the time flow is the main reason an immortal aperture can turn into a small world and attract a tributary of the river of time! Spring Autumn Cicada feeds on the water of the river of time, and now being so close to the source, it is able to drink a lot and accelerate its recovery speed!”

Fang Yuan was able to instantly understand what was going on.

Since the last activation of Spring Autumn Cicada which had fortunately succeeded, it had been slowly recovering.

It has been a long time since Fang Yuan arrived in northern plains; Spring Autumn Cicada was gradually recovering causing the pressure on the first aperture to increase day by day.

The first aperture was already at rank five peak stage and should have been able to endure for some time according to Fang Yuan’s estimation. But this unforeseen event had greatly shifted the time limit to an earlier date!

Since rebirth, Spring Autumn Cicada had been a hidden danger to Fang Yuan. Now that Fang Yuan was advancing to a Gu Immortal, this hidden danger had expanded to a serious danger that directly pushed itself to Fang Yuan’s sight.

“Damn it.” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth. He suddenly descended; a formless hand passed by his hair, grabbing at the air.

For now, Fang Yuan had no way to deal with this situation.

The immortal aperture must be successfully created, otherwise all his efforts would go to waste. Without a Gu Immortal’s strength, it would be impossible for him to continue contending.

However, Spring Autumn Cicada also could not be ignored.

Crack...

A huge sound echoed in true inheritance secluded domain like some important thing had shattered, causing palpitation in everyone’s heart.

Everyone paused and hurriedly looked up.

Like an egg shell that was smashed, countless cracks appeared on true inheritance secluded domain. The cracks rapidly enlarged and let the outside world’s light flow in.

At the same time, many formless hands also squeezed in through the cracks, a seven fingered formless hand among them!

The Gu Masters let out shocked cries at the sight of so many giant light blue hands.

“Why are there so many giant hands?”

“This is bad, look, a seven fingered giant hand has actually squeezed in!”

With the endless giant light blue hands flying in true inheritance secluded domain, everyone’s situation had become even more perilous.

Hei Lou Lan’s expression was grave and even Tai Bai Yun Sheng felt an intense suffocation.

Flying masters were not omnipotent.

With so many formless hands, the difficult in evading them increased greatly.

Moreover, the longer they spent, the more likely it was for them to make an error under such a strained state.

“This is turning worse!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was gloomy, what he was afraid of came, he made a mistake in the crucial time.

His sole remaining escape path was blocked by six formless hands.

At this moment of crisis, Tai Bai Yun Sheng gritted his teeth and directly crashed towards a three fingered formless hand.

The formless hand grabbed him; Tai Bai Yun Sheng was immediately paralyzed.

But this time period was extremely short and soon, the three fingered formless hand flew away with a clenched fist. Out of danger, Tai Bai Yun Sheng immediately burst out with his greatest speed and escaped through this gap.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s back was soaked with cold sweat from this thrilling situation.

Even Tai Bai Yun Sheng was in such a predicament, let alone others.

All the Gu Masters met with calamity, at worst, not even one of their Gu worms remained.

Without Gu worms, Gu Master’s battle strength plunged down to the very bottom. And even if they had a lot of primeval essence, it would be of no use.

“Save me!” A Gu Master looked on with fright a true inheritance that was flying right towards him.

All his Gu worms were already seized by the formless hands. At this moment of life and death, he cried out for help while swinging his arms crazily to speed up his flight, but his movement speed was no faster than a snail in comparison to the true inheritance.

The surrounding Gu Masters heard his plea for help, but right now they had no way to help however much they wanted to.

Thud!

There was no unexpected event; the unlucky Gu Master was directly crushed into meat paste by the true inheritance.

This blue colored true inheritance did not stop after crushing the Gu Master and kept on flying away.

On its way, formless hands kept on obstructing its path while it kept on evading.

The wild newborn Gu will in the true inheritance also sensed the deadly threat of the heavenly tribulation formless hands, and did its best to escape.

However, the will of Gu worms was not as intelligent as humans.

The blue colored true inheritance evaded several formless hands before it was finally grabbed by a five fingered formless hand.

The formless hand clenched its fist tightly but did not stop at the place.

The true inheritance light lump’s speed was too fast; the formless hand was pulled in its inertia, except that the speed was greatly reduced.

The five fingered formless hand flew away with a Gu worm. But even more formless hands pounced down and covered the true inheritance light lump.

One hand was not enough, another came followed by the next. Soon, ten formless hands were tightly grabbing the true inheritance light lump.

The true inheritance light lump continued to slow until it came to a stop.

The formless hands suddenly separated and flew in all directions with clenched fists.

There was nothing left at the spot, the blue colored true inheritance was already robbed clean.

At this moment, Fang Yuan snickered and flew towards the target he had his eyes on, and started attacking fiercely.

A formless fist was broken by his attacks and revealed the Gu it was holding.

Fang Yuan immediately reacted and grabbed it.

This was a rank five mortal Gu and after he refined it, he stored it in his pocket.

Flash bug Gu!

He disappeared from the spot and suddenly appeared three hundred steps away, right beside another formless fist.

Bam bam bam.

He punched heavily and broke the formless fist in three punches, leaving after grabbing the Gu.

It was an Immortal Gu!

Almost at the very next moment, a formless hand pounced at him, and naturally it was in vain.

Fang Yuan moved like lightning, occasionally soaring like a sparrow and occasionally piercing forward like an eagle.

He was dodging the formless hands while also taking any chance to strike a fortune, grabbing many Gu worms of the true inheritance.

However, the formless fists were very fast and the opportunity to destroy them was fleeting.

The blue colored true inheritance was a good opportunity Fang Yuan ran into, but he only had enough time to break three formless fists, obtaining two mortal Gu and an Immortal Gu.

While Fang Yuan was occupied with breaking the formless fist, the other formless fists had already flown far away and Fang Yuan was not able to chase after them.

“Suppress!”

Fang Yuan transferred his will into the Gu worms to temporarily suppress them.

He did not have the time to refine these Gu worms, let alone study their uses.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s sight was covered with blue light.

Maybe it was because Fang Yuan was too active and attention drawing, eight formless hands attacked him together!

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped and he quickly evaded.

He moved and stopped at times, changing his directions madly; his vision kept on changing intensely, one moment he was above while the next he was below. He almost made himself go dizzy.

He spent tremendous effort before he was able to get rid of the formless hands.

He had just stabilized his breathing when suddenly, there was the sound of wind!

A formless hand was flying right towards him.

Fang Yuan was just about to dodge, but his pupils enlarged rapidly the next moment. This was a formless fist!

He laughed heartily and flapped his six wings, directly punching towards the formless fist. He obtained a rank five Gu after breaking the formless fist.

The Gu worm was vibrating in his hand and struggled intensely, attempting to escape.

Fang Yuan sent a portion of his will inside, but was not able to suppress it.

He immediately frowned as he realized this Gu was not a wild Gu, but a Gu Master’s Gu worm. Because the Gu worm had someone else’s will, the difficulty in refining it was several times greater than refining wild Gu, and even temporarily suppressing it was difficult!

“Let go of my Gu!” A familiar voice sounded by Fang Yuan’s ears at this moment.

Fang Yuan looked at the source of the voice, and immediately smiled.

He saw Hei Lou Lan flying towards him hurriedly and furiously, his gaze fixed on the Gu in Fang Yuan’s hand.

ChibiGeneral Yoink, this is mine now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 632: Coexistence of Pain and Joy

Hei Lou Lan poured incessant grievances in his heart.

He had outstanding battle strength along with an extremely powerful strength path long range killer move, it was just that they were not enough to cover his weakness in the movement aspect.

More accurately speaking, Hei Lou Lan cultivated strength and dark path which were not impressive in movement ability.

But in the present situation, only flying masters could barely survive. Hei Lou Lan’s weakness was thus completely revealed under the pursuit of the formless hands.

The formless hands wantonly seized the Gu worms in Hei Lou Lan’s body.

He had destroyed many formless hands and chased after many, but at the same time, new formless hands would appear to grab even more of his Gu worms.

Right now, Hei Lou Lan was flying fiercely like a berserk bear, his expression was one of malevolence and anger.

He knew Fang Yuan had big advantage in this situation, but he could not give up. The reason was that the Gu worm Fang Yuan had captured was, very unfortunately, Hei Lou Lan’s vital Gu!

The vital Gu was closely interlinked to the Gu Master’s life. Once it was destroyed, the Gu Master would immediately suffer heavy injuries. By grabbing this Gu, it was akin to Fang Yuan controlling a huge weakness of Hei Lou Lan.

Mentioning this vital Gu, it had gone through many difficulties as well; being seized by the formless hands many times while Hei Lou Lan seized it back again.

Counting the number of times, this was already the sixth time this vital Gu had been seized. Only this time, an accident happened, it landed in Fang Yuan’s hand.

His vital Gu was with the enemy, this was a very serious situation and it needed to be retrieved!

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with a cold light.

He did not know the rank five Gu in his hand was Hei Lou Lan’s vital Gu, but he could tell the huge importance of this Gu from Hei Lou Lan’s behavior.

“Hmph! You want to take back this Gu? Keep on dreaming.” Fang Yuan moved the six wings on his back and rose up, flying far away.

Hei Lou Lan had hunted down Fang Yuan again and again before; the hatred between them was already very deep.

But this moment was not a good time to kill Hei Lou Lan.

There were more and more formless hands, Fang Yuan was already feeling difficulty in dodging them. If he fought under this situation, he would surely have to pay an extremely disastrous price even if he succeeded.

It was more so when Hei Lou Lan had Great Strength True Martial Physique, if he was forced into a corner and self-detonated, Fang Yuan would have to suffer the terrible consequences.

“Let’s see how long he can continue chasing me!” Fang Yuan snorted, and forcibly suppressed the restless Gu worm in his hand.

Soon, he shook off Hei Lou Lan. While dodging the formless hands on the way, he sent a portion of his consciousness into his immortal aperture.

The immortal aperture was growing without stop.

Ever since Fang Yuan exited Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture, his immortal aperture had been continuously absorbing heaven and earth qi. Now, it was already over 2600km²; the sky was orange and yellow while the earth was rugged with steep white stone mountain ranges that stood tall and lofty.

The terrain of the immortal aperture was related to the Gu Master’s paths, accumulation, temperament and comprehension.

This was the first time Fang Yuan became a strength path Gu Immortal and he only roughly understood it now, only knowing the general situation. If he wanted to have a deeper understanding, he needed to research in the future

“The time flow has reached one to twelve ratio. One day in the outside world is twelve days inside the immortal aperture. The growth rate is gradually slowing down...” Fang Yuan assessed.

By now, he had almost absorbed all the heaven and earth qi in true inheritance secluded domain.

He was now waiting for the immortal aperture to stabilize completely which was the most important. Once he possessed a Gu Immortal’s battle strength, everything would change.

“I will let you hold onto my Gu for the moment, I will get it back no matter what!” Hei Lou Lan could only roar helplessly as he looked at Fang Yuan fly further and further away.

He was obstructed by the formless hands when he chased and had lost many Gu worms. It was already very difficult for him to evade the formless hands, it was no wonder he would suffer the consequences when he chased after Fang Yuan under such conditions.

Hei Lou Lan helplessly gave up. If he still persisted in chasing, it would definitely make Fang Yuan suspicious. And if Fang Yuan guessed the Gu was Hei Lou Lan’s vital Gu, the situation would turn even worse.

“I can only rely on my connection to my vital Gu and slowly get near him while dodging the formless hands, then I will ambush this damned thief!”

Hei Lou Lan gritted his teeth till they made cracking noises, while thinking of all kinds of schemes.

Formless hands could seize Gu worms but could not refine them. Once the formless hand was broken apart, the Gu worm would be released upon which the Gu Master would be able to immediately sense the Gu and use his will to recall them.

Fang Yuan forcibly suppressed Hei Lou Lan’s vital Gu, but had no time or energy to spare to refine it. Thus, Hei Lou Lan still had connection with the Gu worm, and had hope of turning the situation around.

Time passed, the formless hands had completely gained control of the situation in true inheritance secluded domain. Giant light blue hands could be seen everywhere like swarms of bees hovering around.

Be it Gu Masters or true inheritance light lumps, they only had the choice of escaping.

“Spring Autumn Cicada...” Fang Yuan’s mouth was dry as the pressure in him continued to increase.

Following the growth of the immortal aperture, Spring Autumn Cicada continued to absorb the water of the river of time, causing the pressure in the first aperture to continue to increase. There were already many cracks on the first aperture’s walls.

To decrease the pressure on the first aperture as much as possible, Fang Yuan had already emptied out all the primeval essence in the aperture.

He flew rapidly, using tens of movement Gu which had huge demand towards primeval essence.

“Fortunately I had already planned and prepared long before this, and bought large numbers of beggar moths. But even so, I need to pay attention to my primeval essence. The consequences will be unimaginable if my primeval essence is completely exhausted!”

These beggar moths were Gu worms used to store primeval essence.

They looked like moths, but their wings had round holes. These holes made the beggar moth look tattered, resembling a beggar’s clothings.

In truth, however, the more holes there were on the beggar moth’s wings, the better. More holes meant the beggar moths could store higher rank primeval essence.

In the mortal world, these beggar moths were limited in supply. But Fang Yuan possessed Hu Immortal blessed land and was able to buy groups of beggar moths in treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan directly purchased a group; although there were not many rank five and rank four beggar moths, rank three and rank two were huge in numbers.

Fang Yuan had close to a thousand beggar moths and had brought almost all of them with him.

Mortals could not buy them and would also find it hard to bear the expenses of raising Gu. But Fang Yuan had a Gu Immortal’s assets in Hu Immortal blessed land, and it was easy for him to raise them.

Not only beggar moths, he also had a lot of spare eagle rise Gu and other Gu.

Fang Yuan would keep his eagle rise Gu after using them for certain time and activate another eagle rise Gu.

There were six wings on his back and it looked like he was using three eagle rise Gu, but in truth, he was using more than a dozen eagle rise Gu in turns.

This was because of the heaven and earth qi.

Using Gu worms under this situation would be met with the backlash from heaven and earth qi, the Gu might even perish if they were used for too long.

Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture was growing, as such he was the center of the gathering heaven and earth qi; causing the backlash force on him to be very high.

Thus, by alternating the use of Gu like eagle rise Gu, he could prolong their duration to the greatest limit.

It was again thanks to having Hu Immortal blessed land, having the help of a Gu Immortal resources, that he could be such extravagant.

The backlash of heaven and earth qi was also one of the barriers for a Gu Master to advance to Gu Immortal.

When Tai Bai Yun Sheng faced the tribulations in his ascension, his Gu worms perished in large numbers. If not for Fang Yuan’s support, he would already have no more Gu worms to use after using them all up in facing chaotic lightning balls outside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

If a Gu Master was lucky enough to advance to a Gu Immortal, all their mortal Gu would normally be destroyed.

Advancing to a Gu Immortal was extremely risky and there was a high price to be paid.

In lots of cases, a newly advanced Gu Immortal would have nothing on him. Almost all the Gu worms they accumulated before would be completely used up.

Six Arm Heavenly Zombie King!

Fang Yuan suddenly turned into heavenly zombie form while flying and evading; his six wings soared and he raised his eight arms.

Bam.

The next moment, he directly clashed against a formless fist!

Fang Yuan did not feel any pain and directly shattered the formless fist, obtaining a Gu.

Fang Yuan was overjoyed when he saw the Gu.

This was the third wild Immortal Gu he had obtained after exiting Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture. He was unable to examine it closely, but he stored it in his pocket after suppressing it.

Right now, he had the internal danger of Spring Autumn Cicada while on the outside, there was the formless hand disaster. He had to concentrate completely on flying, as well as pay attention to his primeval essence and the condition of his Gu worms.

But he could not deny his plentiful harvests.

Fang Yuan was deeply realizing what was called the coexistence of pain and joy.

His flying master attainment was a great help to him in this situation.

“Where is Ma Hong Yun?” Fang Yuan stored the third Immortal Gu and looked around him with insatiable greed.

Luck path supreme true inheritance had all along been of extreme interest to him.

Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had, to a large extent, relied on this to dominate the lands and become invincible in the world.

Previously, Fang Yuan had no way to do anything about this luck path true inheritance but now borrowing the strength of formless hands, he could seize the luck path Gu worms. This was an extremely rare opportunity!

However, even after searching all over whenever he had the chance, he did not see even the shadow of the luck path true inheritance.

Clearly, luck path true inheritance was also moving around.

The supreme true inheritance might be protecting Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun, but it was only an acknowledgement of Fortune Rivaling Heaven; and it was still being controlled by a wild will. It was an instinct for wild Gu worms to dodge heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity.

It was a scene of chaos in the large true inheritance secluded domain; there were formless hands everywhere, true inheritance meteors, fleeing Gu Masters or dazzling attacks towards the clenched formless fists, all these were obstructing Fang Yuan’s vision.

Fang Yuan also had to evade the formless hands and could not casually search. Both sides were on the move, thus it was actually normal for them to not bump into each other.

Crack, crack...

The sound of something cracking, like the cracking of egg shell, started to spread.

The cracks in true inheritance secluded domain were enlarging; it was only at one side first, but now the cracks had gradually spread to cover all sides.

More and more giant light blue hands squeezed in through the cracks.

Time passed, the losses to Fang Yuan’s Gu worms were also becoming more severe.

On one hand, because of the backlash from heaven and earth qi, especially the movement Gu worms, even after being used in turn, they had reached the limit and many perished.

On the other hand, the quantity of formless hands had surpassed the point of qualitative change; sometimes, many formless hands would appear together and block all escape paths. Fang Yuan was thus grabbed two-three times.

But every time he was grabbed, he would intentionally choose the formless hand with less fingers, prioritizing his safety and letting his Gu worm be taken of his own accord.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 633: Finally becoming a Gu Immortal

As time continued to pass, Fang Yuan had no more opportunity to go shatter formless fists. He was busy running from the pursuit of the formless hands.

“Return my Gu!” By some coincidence, Hei Lou Lan appeared in front of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan sneered and activated wind flower Gu.

A translucent wind flower appeared beside him and quickly changed direction, taking him with it.

Whoosh!

With the wind flower Gu’s help, Fang Yuan’s speed remained the same when he changed his direction, and was able to avoid Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan, however, was very happy: “I am finally lucky for once! He actually ran that direction!”

Fang Yuan had not flown far away before his speed rapidly declined.

“This is...”

His expression changed as he sensed that he had fallen into a dark vortex.

This was the trap Hei Lou Lan had set using one time expenditure Gu, specially used to trap enemies.

The formless hands were less than a hundred steps away.

Fang Yuan snorted and without losing his composure, used flash bug Gu; he disappeared from the spot and appeared five hundred steps away the next moment.

After getting out of his predicament, Fang Yuan immediately increased his speed, but not even a few breaths later, he once again fell into a dark vortex.

He again used flash bug Gu to free himself.

But following that, he fell in the third dark vortex again.

True inheritance secluded domain was originally a place filled with darkness, as such dark vortexes were extremely concealed here. Without someone running into them, they would remain still and there would be no way to sense them. But once someone ran into them, they would form a sinking force like one had stepped into a swamp or quicksand.

“You can’t run away! I have placed countless traps all over the surrounding hundred li!” Hei Lou Lan shouted while rapidly flying towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was suffering the consequences of a lack of investigation. He shouted furiously: “You are seeking your own death, don’t blame me!”

He activated six arm heavenly zombie king and forcefully freed himself from the vortex, charging straight towards Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan felt a chill before it turned into joy. He was not afraid of Fang Yuan attacking him, but afraid of Fang Yuan fleeing all the time and not give him the chance to fight.

New and old hatred overlapped; both sides wanted nothing more than to kill each other.

However, they had not even fought yet, when Hei Lou Lan suddenly changed his direction and fled.

Shortly, Fang Yuan’s expression also changed and retreated towards the back extremely quickly.

Too horrifying!

A large group of formless hands breezed down from above, their numbers were at least five to six hundred!

The light blue radiance dyed the surrounding space into a scene of blue.

The formless hand group divided into two, chasing after Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan.

Fang Yuan was facing an unprecedented crisis.

He did not dare to fly in between the formless hands. There were too many formless hands, even a light movement could easily seal all his paths.

Fang Yuan could only fly forward swiftly, with the large group of giant light blue hands closely chasing him.

“No, don’t come here!” Ye Lui Sang shouted in panic. He was moving with three other Gu Masters, and coordinating with each other, he was barely able to ensure the safety of his fire path Immortal Gu; however, now he suddenly saw Fang Yuan flying towards them!

And when he saw the group of formless hands behind Fang Yuan, Ye Lui Sang’s heart nearly jumped out in shock.

Fang Yuan not only increased his speed, he also quickly made his move; long range attacks sealed the best escape routes of Ye Lui Sang’s group and also greatly slowed down their speed.

Next, Fang Yuan turned a little and flew past them, continuing to fly swiftly.

Ye Lui Sang’s group was escaping with all their strength, but it was nowhere near enough.

“No—!” This unlucky Ye Lui tribe leader let out a miserable scream as hundreds of formless hands filled his vision.

Like a burst of strong wind wreaking havoc or like locusts passing through the fields, the giant light blue hands plundered Ye Lui Sang’s group and continued to chase after Fang Yuan.

Ye Lui Sang’s group stood on the spot with dazed expressions. There were too many formless hands and in just a few breaths of time, all their Gu worms were seized.

In an instant, they had become completely penniless. Although they still had primeval essence remaining in their apertures, there was nothing to use them on!

“How will I report to supreme tribe elder when I return?!” Ye Lui Sang’s heart was filled with fear and bewilderment.

His fire path Immortal Gu was lent to him by Ye Lui tribe’s supreme tribe elder Ye Lui Lai to help him obtain victory in this Imperial Court contest.

The value of the Immortal Gu was self-evident.

Ye Lui Sang lost in the contest, but to preserve the Immortal Gu, he had to bear the disgrace of siding with Hei Lou Lan who was also a super tribe leader like him.

And now, because of Fang Yuan sending the disaster towards him, the fire path Immortal Gu he had protected with his heart and soul was gone!

Fang Yuan flew rapidly before glancing behind him; he felt relieved when he saw the formless hands had decreased in number.

This was the contribution of Ye Lui Sang’s group.

Fang Yuan saw hope in getting rid of this group of formless hands.

That was to draw the disaster towards others!

He had flying master attainment while others did not.

“Eh? That is!” While fleeing, Fang Yuan finally discovered trace of Ma Hong Yun.

Luck path supreme true inheritance was shielding Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun, while dodging and flying away from many formless hands chasing it. Of course, when compared to the group chasing Fang Yuan, it paled in comparison.

Without the least bit of hesitation, Fang Yuan immediately flew towards Ma Hong Yun.

Sensing an even greater danger, luck path true inheritance light lump instinctively changed its direction.

However, Fang Yuan chased it relentlessly and with extremely deft movements, he was able to gradually get closer.

“Let us go, I beg you, please let us go!” Ma Hong Yun’s pleading came from within luck path true inheritance.

“Don’t come over, don’t come over!” Zhao Lian Yun was also shivering in fear.

Fang Yuan’s heart was tough like iron and cold as steel, how could he be swayed?

His speed suddenly increased violently as he made a beautiful arc beside the luck path true inheritance.

The formless hand group was immediately attracted to the aura of luck path true inheritance and flocked to it.

“We’re finished!” Both of Ma and Zhao’s faces turned as they looked at the hundreds of formless hands blocking their escape routes, attacking like a storm.

“Hahaha, luck path supreme true inheritance!” Fang Yuan made a full circle, before flying back.

“My immortal aperture has almost finished forming, this is truly wonderful, I can use it to store the luck path Immortal Gu!” Fang Yuan’s gaze burned looking at the formless hands shrouding the luck path true inheritance.

Whoooosh Whoosh Whoosh...

Soon, many formless fists started flying away.

Fang Yuan immediately started using all his methods to seize the Gu.

One, two... five, six... the number soon crossed ten.

Fang Yuan knew he would not be able to catch all luck path Gu worms, but he was satisfied at having such a harvest.

“Wait a moment, a six fingered formless fist!”

Fang Yuan suddenly discovered a major target. The six fingers signified this fist was holding a rank six luck path Immortal Gu!

Fang Yuan’s eyes reddened and his breathing sped up as he used all his strength to chase the six fingered fist. He turned into six arm heavenly zombie king and directly pounced towards the fist. His eight arms burst out with fist shadows as he rained down violent punches!

The formless fist shattered and as expected, revealed a luck path Immortal Gu.

“Haha!” Fang Yuan laughed heartily as he quickly grabbed it.

However, right at this instant, a six fingered formless hand flew over and grabbed Fang Yuan! Its timing was impeccable as Fang Yuan's guard was slightly relaxed due to the happiness; the result was extreme joy turning into sorrow!

Fang Yuan felt his mind go blank and cursed out; the time seemed to have stretched out extremely long at this moment.

After two breaths, the six fingered formless fist flew away from him and Fang Yuan recovered the ability to move.

Fang Yuan immediately unfolded his six wings and left the spot immediately.

He hurriedly glanced behind him and saw fifty to sixty formless hands crashing into each other at the spot where he had just been before.

If he had even the slightest hesitation...

Fang Yuan's forehead was soaked with cold sweat.

He then examined his body and the discovery caused him to turn gloomy. The Gu that was seized was not any of the Immortal Gu he had seized or Spring Autumn Cicada, it was Fixed Immortal Travel.

“This damned luck!” Fang Yuan cursed. Fixed Immortal Travel was his primary method to leave this place and return to Hu Immortal blessed land!

He must get it back!

Fang Yuan temporarily suppressed the luck path Immortal Gu and stored it in his pocket, then he stared at that six fingered formless fist and gave chase.

When one walks by the river, how could one's shoes not get wet?

Fortunately, his immortal aperture finished stabilizing during the chase.

Fang Yuan's risky attempt at advancing to Gu Immortal ended in success, at this moment he had become a true strength path Gu Immortal!

His strength path immortal aperture was very huge with about 3500km² of area. The sky was orange-yellow and there were all sorts of lofty, tall and straight mountains on the ground made of white stones with not even a blade of grass on them.

An invisible tributary of the river of time was pulled into the immortal aperture blessed land, supporting the normal operations of this small world.

In comparison to the outside world, the flow of time here was one to sixteen.

The most important point was there were twenty-two green grape immortal essence beads!

“This is a medium grade blessed land...” Fang Yuan sighed.

When a Gu Master advanced to Gu Immortal, their immortal aperture could be classified into three grades.

A small blessed land has a size of 2000km² at the maximum, can draw in a small tributary of the river of time and create over ten beads of immortal essence, while being a land of few resources.

Medium grade can have a size of 2000km² to 4000km², draw in a slightly bigger tributary of the river of time, create over twenty beads of immortal essence and has plentiful resources.

High grade blessed land can have a size of 4000km² to 6000km² , draw in a large tributary of the river of time and create over thirty beads of immortal essence. There will be plenty of heaven and earth qi remaining which can mutually interact and refine a mortal Gu into Immortal Gu during a burst of inspiration!

When Tai Bai Yun Sheng advanced to Gu Immortal, he refined two Immortal Gu; no doubt, his was a high grade blessed land.

Fang Yuan’s strength path immortal aperture, however, was a medium grade blessed land.

“I might have much more human qi compared to Tai Bai Yun Sheng, but he received the help of human qi Gu and his human qi was able to greatly surpass mine. I received the protection of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and Giant Sun’s will; this was both an advantage and a disadvantage. Large amounts of heaven and earth qi were isolated outside and only a small part was able to seep into true inheritance secluded domain which was absorbed by me.” Thoughts flashed Fang Yuan’s mind like sparks.

Giant Sun’s will was after all forced to help Fang Yuan resist the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity due to helplessness.

It absolutely would not kindly allow the heaven and earth qi to enter true inheritance secluded domain which could provide Fang Yuan with more potential.

“Besides this, there is also another important factor – Spring Autumn Cicada.”

Spring Autumn Cicada absorbed the water of the tributary of river of time which was akin to cutting off the nourishment and greatly weakened the accomplishment of strength path immortal aperture.

Thus, Fang Yuan’s strength path immortal aperture’s time flow had one to sixteen ratio which was lower than normal standard.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 634: Wind Veil of Assimilation

Fang Yuan felt no regret towards obtaining a medium grade blessed land.

This was for the best!

Within the first aperture, Spring Autumn Cicada’s pressure had already reached its limits, the first aperture’s walls were full of cracks. If he continued, he might cause the aperture to explode.

If it was a high grade blessed land, it could refine an Immortal Gu and create a heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity within the blessed land.

Fang Yuan’s predicament was extremely dangerous, he had both internal and external threats. If his immortal aperture had a heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity wrecking havoc inside, Fang Yuan would surely become too distracted, it would be fortunate if he only suffered a great loss, but most likely he would lose his life.

“Regardless, becoming a strength path Gu Immortal means I have the ability to interfere in the battle now.” Fang Yuan sighed deeply, throwing all of his Gu worms, be it mortal or Immortal Gu, into his strength path immortal aperture.

The immortal aperture had a huge space, it could easily hold Immortal Gu.

Next, Fang Yuan willed and used a bead of green grape immortal essence.

Immediately afterwards, the green grape immortal essence spread and filled the entire blessed land, turning into almost limitless primeval essence.

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh of relief, from this moment on, he no longer had to worry about primeval essence expenditure, he could use mortal Gu without any restraints anymore.

This was the biggest difference between mortal and immortal.

“At the same time, after becoming an immortal, the heaven and earth qi were all consumed, thus there would no longer be any threat of a backlash!” Fang Yuan’s aura was surging, his eyes were shining with brilliance.

His body shook slightly, and another pair of eagle wings grew on his back.

Flying with eight wings, Fang Yuan’s speed become faster again, chasing after Fixed Immortal Travel.

Seeing that he was about to reach his target, Tai Bai Yun Sheng called out for help behind him.

“Junior brother, assist me, that hand took away my Immortal Gu Landscape as Before!”

Fang Yuan turned around and saw a six fingered formless fist flying towards his left. Tai Bai Yun Sheng was dragging the supreme true inheritance light lump as he chased after it desperately.

Fang Yuan hesitated for a moment, this six fingered formless fist was right beside him, if he did not help, he would not be able to explain himself.

He immediately activated the wind flower Gu, barely turning around.

His speed was simply too fast, even the wind flower Gu in his immortal aperture could not take it, as many petals fell out.

Fang Yuan caught up to the six fingered formless fist and smashed at it, breaking it open and rescuing Landscape as Before.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was overjoyed upon seeing this: “Great, junior brother, if not for your help...”

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, shouting anxiously: “Senior brother, dodge!”

Too late!

An eight fingered formless hand flew over and grabbed onto Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was immobilized, his face was full of shock and fear. During this time, hundreds of formless hands flew over and encircled Tai Bai Yun Sheng!

At the same time, large numbers of formless hands were flying over from far away.

“Damn it... not only was Tai Bai Yun Sheng caught, he had the supreme true inheritance with him. This is bad, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building is going to be destroyed! I have to take back Fixed Immortal Travel quickly!” Fang Yuan did not dare to save him, his eyes flashed with a cold light as he placed the landscape as before Gu into his immortal aperture and turned around to leave.

Fixed Immortal Travel Gu was the best method to escape, it was more important than any other Immortal Gu right now in Fang Yuan’s heart!

Fang Yuan flew rapidly, about to reach the formless fist.

“After I take Fixed Immortal Travel, I will leave, who cares about Tai Bai Yun Sheng anymore!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with brilliance, he had made up his mind.

True inheritance secluded domain was at the deepest part of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, and there were already so many formless hands here, not to mention the outside world.

He had obtained enough benefits, and he had even successfully advanced to an immortal, if he continued staying here, he might lose his life.

Fang Yuan had the intention to retreat already.

But just when he was about to succeed, Hei Lou Lan blocked his path.

“Don’t think that I’ll be afraid just because you became an immortal! Return my Gu worm to me now and I’ll give way immediately!” Hei Lou Lan screamed.

“You are courting death!!” Fang Yuan stared furiously, he wanted to tear Hei Lou Lan into several pieces, but his logic dictated him to change directions and swerve around Hei Lou Lan, continuing his pursuit.

Hei Lou Lan snickered, he was unable to catch up to Fang Yuan, but in terms of long range methods, he had his ways to obstructing Fang Yuan in his chase.

Fang Yuan was obstructed by Hei Lou Lan time and again, he had to change his direction.

“Is this worth it? Just return my Gu to me and you’ll be able to reach this formless fist. Don’t forget, after the formless fist flies for a certain distance, it will vanish along with the Gu worm.” Hei Lou Lan urged.

He was extremely anxious, his vital Gu was in Fang Yuan’s hands, but he had to control himself and mask his anxiety.

Fang Yuan shouted out in anger, his expression still as water.

There was no way he would return the Gu worm to Hei Lou Lan.

The more Hei Lou Lan cared about this Gu, the more important this Gu was to him.

Hei Lou Lan was a huge enemy, even if he returned the Gu worm, if he did not keep his promise and continued obstructing Fang Yuan, what then?

Fang Yuan could only make detours and continue chasing after his target.

Bam!!!

Right at this moment, there was a huge sound.

True inheritance secluded domain completely broke apart, instantly exploding.

Eye piercing sunlight filled everyone’s vision. At once, Fang Yuan and the others were caught off guard, their entire vision turned white.

In such a situation, who would dare to shut their eyes completely?

Even though their eyes were overflowing with tears due to the intensity, they had to open a slit.

As the white light faded slowly, from their blurred vision, everyone could see that they were floating in the air.

“Save us!” Many Gu Masters cried out desperately for help.

They were all unlucky people who had their Gu worms taken away. Without Gu worms, this rapid descent would cause them to die upon impact with the ground.

Nobody lent a hand to help them. Those Gu Masters who were barely floating in the air could only care about themselves, as they looked around in shock.

In the sky, there were thousands of formless hands, closely packed together.

On the ground, smoke was rising and there was debris of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building everywhere. These broken walls and structures were disintegrating, turning back into Gu worms.

The number of Gu worms was too many, each tile could split up into an ant’s nest worth of Gu worms.

“Oh my heavens!”

“Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed!”

“Oh Longevity Heaven, why is this happening?”

Everyone was flustered and shocked, when suddenly a bright golden rainbow shot up in the sky!

“Leave behind the Immortal Gu!” The remaining Giant Sun’s will had been storing energy for this moment, he finally made his move!

The golden rainbow shot out like lightning, in the blink of an eye, it destroyed one formless fist and obtained the Immortal Gu within.

Divert disaster Gu!

Giant Sun’s will entered the Gu and quickly activated it.

Divert disaster Gu shot out pillars of light and shone everywhere.

The formless hands that were swept by the light pillars shrunk in size and their speed fell. Those formless hands that were hit by the light pillar disintegrated rapidly and the Gu worms within were released.

At once, Giant Sun’s will regained several Immortal Gu!

“Otherworldly demon! Luck path true inheritance!!” Giant Sun’s will looked at the luck path true inheritance that was trapped by the formless hands, as well as Ma and Zhao who were inside the light lump.

Without a trace of hesitation, he flew over with killing intent.

“My Fixed Immortal Travel...” Fang Yuan’s heart sank to rock bottom.

He lost his target.

The formless fist that contained Fixed Immortal Travel had gone missing, it had flew away with Fixed Immortal Travel into the unknown.

Fang Yuan had completely lost Fixed Immortal Travel!

“Damn it!” Fang Yuan controlled his heartache as he forced himself to calm down.

Without Fixed Immortal Travel, he could still use the stargate to return to Hu Immortal blessed land, but this stargate needed to be sustained, so if Fang Yuan wanted to leave this place, he first needed to find a safe environment.

“Old Ancestor is here, you have no way out now. Return my Gu worm to me and I can still help you ask for mercy.” Hei Lou Lan flew over, shouting.

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with cold light.

Hei Lou Lan’s words reminded him, his biggest threat now were the formless hands, followed by Giant Sun’s will.

Although the current Giant Sun’s will was heavily damaged and was not even a tiny fraction of its original state, it was still not something Fang Yuan could take on!

The will that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left behind was too grand and majestic. Even though it had undergone such tremendous weakening, even though Fang Yuan was now a Gu Immortal, he was still not its match.

Most importantly, it was currently snatching Immortal Gu all over the place, once it activates the Gu, its battle strength would surge!

“Ordinary Gu worms need primeval essence or immortal essence to activate. No matter how powerful Giant Sun’s will is, he is still a will and needs to use the rank nine yellow apricot immortal essence that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had left behind.”

Fang Yuan’s gaze was like an eagle, he looked towards Giant Sun’s will who was far away.

He had just taken a look when a formless hand flew over.

Fang Yuan flapped his wings, evading successfully.

“Damn it!” Hei Lou Lan cursed ruthlessly, he had also suffered the attacks of three formless hands along the way.

True inheritance secluded domain was broken apart, the number of formless hands in the air increased by at least ten times!

These formless hands attacked, causing Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan to be dodging them with all their effort, they could not spare the energy to care about other things.

Bam bam bam...

Wind blades danced in the air, cutting apart several formless hands.

The Gu that were caught earlier were released, while Giant Sun’s will was like a golden dragon, pouncing on them.

He had much of Giant Sun’s immortal essence, he had the capability to instantly refine Gu worms when he got them, his battle strength surged and his aura was like a rainbow.

“Otherworldly demon! Luck path true inheritance!” Soon, Giant Sun’s will found Ma and Zhao.

They were surrounded by countless formless hands, the originally large true inheritance light lump had shrunk by at least a third of its size.

Giant Sun’s will howled loudly, as several Immortal Gu and hundreds of rank five mortal Gu were used together at once.

The light of divert disaster shot straight, a thousand wind blades danced in formation, a bright red fire crow spread its wings and flew while screeching...

All sorts of attacks surrounded the luck path true inheritance like the falling petals of a flower.

Once any formless hands flew out, they would be instantly destroyed, and the Gu worm within would be taken by Giant Sun’s will.

“Oh no, this luck path true inheritance originally belonged to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. If Giant Sun’s will obtains it, it would truly be a tiger gaining wings, or a flood dragon entering the sea!” Fang Yuan flew rapidly, taking a look at this scene, his heart turned heavy.

He looked around, but realized that to leave this place, he needed the stargate Gu.

“Imperial Court blessed land is on the brink of destruction, the outer fringe of the blessed land is already blowing with winds of assimilation, forming a huge circular wind veil. This wind has tremendous force, even if I am a Gu Immortal, I cannot resist it, I cannot force my way out!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 635: Important Decision

Imperial Court blessed land was the number one blessed land of northern plains, it had deep foundations and tremendous fortune.

Despite this, after Fang Yuan entered it, first, there was the contest of the land spirit, Frost Jade Peacock, and Giant Sun’s will.

Next, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng underwent immortal ascension and took in the heaven and earth qi of the blessed land.

Furthermore, there was the once in ten years blizzard ravaging the blessed land, and it even fused with Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Fang Yuan’s tribulations to form a terrifying heavenly tribulation.

Frost Jade Peacock was able to endure it for so long, that was really quite a miracle already. Imperial Court blessed land’s destruction was a foregone conclusion, now that the wind veil was formed, Imperial Court blessed land was surrounded like a sphere, and the walls of the sphere were extremely thick, at least hundreds of meters.

Even if the formless hands flew there, they would be crushed into bits, being assimilated into wind and lead to growing the strength of the winds of assimilation.

Even with flash bug Gu, Fang Yuan could not get through it.

However, this wind veil also formed an isolation barrier and prevented outside forces from intervening.

At this moment, thousands of meters above the ground, in the sky.

Three Gu Immortals looked down at the grand winds of assimilation that was like a giant dark green bowl inverted on the ground with a grim expression.

The wind veil’s surface was very tranquil, but no one dared to underestimate the power of the winds of assimilation!

“Imperial Court blessed land’s destruction is unavoidable! What happened inside? How did it become like this?!” One of the Gu Immortals, an elderly man, looked with a furious gaze as his brows were tightly folded.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Imperial Court blessed land, they were the arrangement of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to benefit his descendants.

As descendants with Huang Jin bloodline, they had already considered Imperial Court blessed land as their territory since long ago.

But now, the domain that held great treasures had been destroyed, these righteous path Gu Immortals of northern plains’ super tribes were like dormant volcanoes turning active.

“Very evidently, this is a huge scheme. Our investigations earlier have shown that the most suspicious person is that Wolf King Chang Shan Yin. We have enough evidence to conclude that this person is an impersonator, the real Chang Shan Yin had died long ago!” Another young Gu Immortal said solemnly.

After pausing for a while, he continued: “Obviously, not just Chang Shan Yin, but other than him, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Bian Si Xuan and the others are also suspicious. This scheme is very deep, it involves the forces of central continent!! According to what we’ve learnt, there are at least three of the ancient sects in central continent plotting against the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building for the last hundred years!”

Central continent Gu Immortals’ secret plot expended a lot of their effort and resources, to create the loopholes and setups. In the end, Fang Yuan made use of these arrangements in advance, all of their hard work had gone to the benefit of someone else.

Northern plains Gu Immortals were not to be trifled with.

Imperial Court blessed land, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, they were the spiritual symbols of northern plains, they were extremely important.

The moment something happened to Imperial Court blessed land and the happenings inside were exposed to the outside world, northern plains’ forces all paid close attention to it.

Unfortunately, they were all outside, and the situation had advanced too quickly, it was already too late by the time they wanted to save Imperial Court blessed land.

“Sigh...” The leader of the Gu Immortals sighed deeply.

He was good looking with red lips and white teeth, but for some reason, he had the appearance of a child, the aura he was emitting was extremely powerful, he was subtly the leader of the three.

“The most important thing now is not to investigate these matters, but to consider the ways to salvage this situation! Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was the arrangement of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, a rank eight Immortal Gu House, it is profound and mysterious, its heavenly power is not something we can understand. Although the winds of assimilation this time are fierce, forming a wind veil, it might not be able to destroy Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. We will stay here and look for an opportunity to help, while being careful of any unexpected situations.”

The child Gu Immortal’s words made the elderly man and the young man Gu Immortal breathe in deeply.

“Lord Tong Zu, you are absolutely right. Our Chanyu tribe has the immortal killer move — Winged Blade, as long as we activate it together, we will be able to forcefully break the wind veil of assimilation.” The young man Gu Immortal said this, unable to conceal his pride.

“The winds of assimilation is not to be underestimated, even with winged blade, we only have one chance to attack. I have made my calculations, the injury that we cause on this wind veil of assimilation would recover in only eight breaths of time.” The elderly man was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he could make deductions and predictions.

The leader of the three, Chanyu Tong Zu, nodded slightly: “Right now, Hei tribe, Ye Lui tribe, Dong Fang tribe and others are surrounding the wind veil, all these righteous path super tribes have sent their Gu Immortals. There is also the number one demonic path force Snowy Mountain, they sent six Gu Immortals, attempting to take advantage of the situation. Don’t underestimate them, we have our trump cards, so do they. When we use the winged blade, we have to prevent them from taking advantage of us.”

...

“The luck path true inheritance cannot fall in the hands of the otherworldly demon, all these are mine, mine!” Giant Sun’s will shouted loudly, his voice reverberated over the entire battlefield.

He turned into a golden dragon, taking form at will. Sometimes, seventeen to eighteen small dragons were created, while at the next moment, they combined into a giant dragon!

He carried Giant Sun’s immortal essence, using it without holding back.

More than ten Immortal Gu were embedded on the dragon’s body, there were two on its dragon horns, one in each of its eyes, and six to seven in its scales.

Blazing flames, divert disaster light beam, frost energy, all sorts of attacks were unleashed unceasingly.

At this point, Giant Sun’s will could finally use his full strength.

Giant Sun’s will had suppressed his anger for too long, he released all of it at this moment!

First, he had to get rid of the otherworldly demon, and because of the luck path true inheritance’s importance, Giant Sun’s will first surrounded Ma and Zhao.

Large numbers of formless hands covered the luck path true inheritance tightly, at times, formless fists that captured luck path Gu worms flew out.

Giant Sun’s will was like a golden dragon, surrounding the luck path true inheritance and coiling around it, destroying all of the formless fists that came out.

There were many formless fists, even Giant Sun’s will could only choose some and attack those, trying to free more Immortal Gu to raise his battle strength.

But near the giant will dragon, there were also large numbers of formless hands.

When Giant Sun’s will snatches these Gu worms back, the formless hands would steal them again. During this contest, the two were fighting intensely and occupied the sky.

Below this battle, the remaining surviving Gu Masters were fighting with a smaller number of formless hands.

Even though Giant Sun’s will attracted most of the formless hands, the Gu Masters were not having an easier time.

With the destruction of true inheritance secluded domain, the Gu Masters were completely exposed and out in the open, they were attacked by even more formless hands.

The formless hands were almost immune to all attacks, they flew in the sky and pierced through rocks, nothing could obstruct them. Only after stealing a Gu worm would they form into a fist and be susceptible to attacks.

But the speed of the formless fists was very fast, not all Gu Masters could chase after them and destroy them successfully.

Fang Yuan, Hei Lou Lan, and the others were a minority, they were geniuses among geniuses.

“Old ancestor, please help... ahh—!”

A shrill scream could suddenly be heard.

Everyone could not help but raise their heads and look.

Only to see that a Gu Master from a super tribe, one who bears a pure bloodline, was left with no other choice after being chased by the formless hands and flew into the sky to seek help from Giant Sun’s will. But in the end, he was the first to be slaughtered by Giant Sun’s will after he activated the Immortal Gu to attack.

“Such might...” Hei Lou Lan raised his head and looked, even with his Great Strength True Martial Physique, he did not dare to get close to Giant Sun’s will.

Giant Sun’s will had completely erupted, his attacks were fierce and carried tremendous might. His entire mind was on the luck path true inheritance, while competing with the formless hands, he had no energy to care about Giant Sun’s bloodline descendants.

“So painful...” At this moment, Ye Lui Sang drew in a breath of cold air, crawling up from the ground.

The Gu worms on his entire body were stolen, he had fallen from the sky. Thankfully, his body was once tempered using Gu worms, thus he only suffered bone fractures while keeping his life.

Looking at this unlucky person who died, he suddenly felt extremely glad. At least, compared to this unlucky guy, he was still alive!

Being alive was more important than anything.

Fang Yuan could feel an immense mental pressure.

“Damn it...” He gritted his teeth in annoyance, he wanted to leave but had no way to break out of this predicament.

“Thankfully, Giant Sun’s will did not target me at the start, but instead went after that otherworldly demon Zhao Lian Yun, while also wanting to protect the luck path true inheritance.”

Fang Yuan was very clear in his heart, once Giant Sun’s will gets rid of this problem, he would not let him off.

By then, he would be like a sheep standing near a tiger, or a rabbit near a python.

“Giant Sun’s will alone cannot activate so many Immortal Gu. Even though I became a Gu Immortal, if we fought head on, I would still not be Giant Sun’s will’s match. That is unless I cut away his connection with Giant Sun’s immortal essence!”

Fang Yuan’s mind was very sharp.

But unfortunately, there were too many formless hands, he had to exert himself in dealing with them.

Other than Giant Sun’s will, he was the one with the most Immortal Gu, their aura was attracting the attack of many formless hands.

At the same time, Hei Lou Lan’s continuous attacks were also quite a problem.

He had the Great Strength True Martial Physique of the ten extreme physiques, a true child of heaven, he could be thought of as the matured version of Bai Ning Bing. Be it his battle capabilities or foundation and accumulation, they were very outstanding.

He had heaven defying battle strength, even Tai Bai Yun Sheng was not his match, the power of his self-detonation could slay an immortal!

After being obstructed once again by Hei Lou Lan, Fang Yuan’s gaze towards him became more ominous.

At the same time, Fang Yuan thought to himself: “This Hei Lou Lan has an absurd number of Gu worms. He had many of his Gu worms taken away, yet he still has so many remaining!”

There was a reason for this of course.

Hei Lou Lan’s sole purpose was to enter Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and obtain a strength path Immortal Gu, before attempting his immortal ascension in Imperial Court blessed land.

Thus, he made ample preparation, especially with his father’s help, he accumulated many Gu worms.

He considered the backlash of the heaven and earth qi during his immortal ascension which would lead to the death of Gu worms, thus he prepared a lot of Gu worms, more than what anyone could imagine.

“Junior brother, save me!” After dodging for a while, Fang Yuan heard Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s cry for help.

It turns out, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was trapped by the formless hands, floating in the air as he desperately defended himself.

Eventually, his Gu worms were all taken away.

After losing the support of his Gu worms, even as a Gu Immortal, he started falling towards the ground.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was his only alliance mate, he could not abandon him yet.

Fang Yuan immediately made a turn and took a risk to save him.

But who knew that during that period, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s anxious shout could be heard: “Quick, junior brother, take back my Immortal Gu Man as Before!”

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, seeing that a six fingered formless fist was flying out.

If at this moment, Fang Yuan chooses to save Tai Bai Yun Sheng, then he would lose the best opportunity to take back man as before Immortal Gu. Most likely, after he saves Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Man as Before would be transported away by formless fist.

To save Tai Bai Yun Sheng, or to take back the Immortal Gu Man as Before?

At this moment, Fang Yuan had to make an important decision.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 636: Shocking Change

To save Tai Bai Yun Sheng, or take back Man as Before?

At this instant, Fang Yuan hesitated.

Man as Before, this Gu was extremely famous even though it was a mortal Gu. Now that it had become an Immortal Gu, its ability was even greater.

According to what Tai Bai Yun Sheng had said earlier, when it was a mortal Gu, it could turn a Gu Master’s condition back to a state in the past. After becoming an Immortal Gu, it could not only affect others but even himself.

This ‘himself’ naturally meant Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a Gu Immortal, it was not hard to deduce that the Immortal Gu Man as Before could affect Gu Immortals as well!

As a Gu worm that can heal a Gu Immortal, the value of Man as Before need not be mentioned. In fact, its value far surpassed ordinary Immortal Gu!

Thus, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was so anxious, forgetting his own predicament and reminding Fang Yuan to take back Man as Before.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s words were merely out of anxiety, he said it without truly considering the consequences.

In the case that Fang Yuan really abandoned him and attempted to retrieve Man as Before Immortal Gu, Tai Bai Yun Sheng would be in great danger.

Even though the essence of a Gu Master’s life undergoes a qualitative change when becoming a Gu Immortal, if he fell from such a high altitude, even if Tai Bai Yun Sheng survived, he would be gravely injured.

And don’t forget that there were many other Gu Masters who were remaining on the ground.

“Taking back Man as Before would use up a lot of time. Even if I retrieve Man as Before, if this causes a rift between me and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, what should I do then?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted out of anxiety, once he was in grave danger and his life was at risk, he would immediately realize: Compared to the Immortal Gu, his life was more important. If at that moment, he saw his ‘junior brother’ chasing the Immortal Gu and giving up on saving himself, how would he think?

A person’s heart is very fickle and ever changing.

Even though this sentence was said by Tai Bai Yun Sheng himself, when thinking of the circumstances and seeing things from another’s shoes, he would feel doubt and suspicion.

“So be it if I still had Fixed Immortal Travel, but now that I have lost it, and the wind veil of assimilation is still contracting, isolating us from the outside world, I will need to use a stargate to leave this place and connect it to Hu Immortal blessed land!”

Fang Yuan was facing great difficulty.

To open the stargate, he would need to use starlight firefly Gu.

The formless hands were flying about and ravaging the place, they were an unstoppable force.

Once the starlight firefly Gu appeared, the formless hands would show up like flies. Even as a Gu Immortal, Fang Yuan had no confidence in protecting them from the formless hands.

“But now that the wind veil of assimilation has been formed, there is no more heaven and earth qi, even though there are a lot of formless hands, no new ones will appear. Furthermore, with Eighty-Eight True Yang Building breaking apart and dissolving into different Gu worms that are flying around...”

The formless hands had no energy source, they could not be sustained.

Fang Yuan was a veteran demonic path cultivator with five hundred years of experience, he naturally had good insight.

“Once the formless hands weaken, Giant Sun’s will would become the strongest force in this battlefield. By then, after he gets rid of Ma and Zhao, retrieving the luck path true inheritance, he would come after me!”

By then, Giant Sun’s will would have Giant Sun’s immortal essence and many Immortal Gu, he would truly be the strongest foe.

As the weaker party, Fang Yuan had to choose to cooperate against this strong foe, to resist the enemy with numbers.

In this entire battlefield, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was the only suitable person.

Even though he was a healing Gu Immortal, he was still a Gu Immortal!

Even though his Gu worms were all stolen, Fang Yuan could lend him some.

Moreover, Hei Lou Lan and the other blood related descendants were all Giant Sun’s will’s natural allies. No matter how well Fang Yuan could speak, in such a short time and in such a situation, they would not switch sides.

After thinking so deeply, in reality, merely a short moment passed.

Fang Yuan moved like lightning, without hesitation, he flew towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng who was falling.

“Junior brother, you... sigh!” Seeing Fang Yuan make such a choice, Tai Bai Yun Sheng who had calmed down looked with shining eyes, he was touched and wanted to say something, but eventually ended up sighing.

Along the way, many formless hands were obstructing them, but Fang Yuan twisted left and right, he was agile like a bird, he quickly shortened the distance between him and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

But right at this moment, the figure of a person suddenly appeared around Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

“Old fool, you have finally fallen into my hands!” The figure quickly turned solid as Hei Lou Lan grabbed Tai Bai Yun Sheng by the collar, capturing him.

Although Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a Gu Immortal, he had no Gu worms on him, it was simply too easy for Hei Lou Lan!

Hei Lou Lan quickly activated his Gu worm, sealing Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s four limbs and making him faint.

Seeing the captive in his hands, Hei Lou Lan was overjoyed.

He was able to capture Tai Bai Yun Sheng under such chaotic circumstances mostly due to luck. But the result was already a success, now Hei Lou Lan’s mind was full of ways to threaten Fang Yuan, to use this captive to take back his vital Gu!

But he had just raised his head and had yet to speak, before he saw Fang Yuan’s body turning around and flying high up into the air.

“Hei Lou Lan captured Tai Bai Yun Sheng, it is obviously because he wants to threaten me and ask for that Gu worm!” Fang Yuan had guessed Hei Lou Lan’s intention at the first moment.

His heart sank, but he was still as calm as ever.

Since Hei Lou Lan had such an objective, he would not cause harm to Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s life. That means, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was safe for the time being.

In that case, the most important thing for Fang Yuan now was to retrieve the Immortal Gu Man as Before!

He dodged left and right, avoiding the formless hands’ attacks. His eight wings flapped intensely as wind flower Gu and flash bug Gu were used in turns, eventually after fifteen minutes, after exerting all of his strength, with great difficulty he smashed the formless fist and took back the man as before Immortal Gu.

Because he obtained Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s trust, man as before Immortal Gu did not struggle in Fang Yuan’s hands.

Fang Yuan did not use his will to suppress it, he placed it into the strength path immortal aperture.

“Your senior brother’s life is in my hands, quickly return my Gu worm!” At this point, Hei Lou Lan finally caught up and had the chance to issue a threat.

He was full of sweat, chasing Fang Yuan was not easy.

Especially when his movement speed was insufficient, and he still had to carry Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

He thought he understood Fang Yuan’s objectives, he was very confident in himself.

Just as he said that, a formless hand flew over to him, Hei Lou Lan did not dare to resist it head on and had to dodge. This way, the imposing aura that he had tried to create was immediately weakened.

Fang Yuan’s figure was like a lightning shadow, moving around the formless hands easily, when he got close to Hei Lou Lan, he was expressionless, but he was sighing over the inconvenience in his heart.

Fang Yuan knew that he could not resist Giant Sun’s will alone, he needed Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s help.

But now that Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a captive, Fang Yuan was quite restricted.

Although he had man as before Immortal Gu, he was not given permission by Tai Bai Yun Sheng to ‘use the Gu’. If he could use it, when Hei Lou Lan kills the captive and Tai Bai Yun Sheng dies, Fang Yuan could revive Tai Bai Yun Sheng using Man as Before.

But there was a major problem here.

Using Immortal Gu Man as Before required immortal essence.

To revive a mortal, there was no issue. But to revive an immortal, the immortal essence expenditure would surely be huge.

Fang Yuan only had twenty-two beads of green grape immortal essence. He used up one in diffusing it into endless primeval essence, thus he only had twenty-one left.

This was his greatest assurance in fighting Giant Sun’s will.

But to revive Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he would need to use at least ten green grape immortal essence!

Unless there was no choice, Fang Yuan did not want to do that.

Hei Lou Lan was truly a formidable character, it was no fluke that he was the person who became the victor of the Imperial Court contest. He had overwhelming talent and ability, once an opportunity appeared, he knew how to grab onto it.

“Don’t tell me, I really have to return his Gu worm?”

Once that thought appeared, Fang Yuan suppressed it.

Hei Lou Lan was so anxious about that Gu, it was surely something extraordinary. Fang Yuan was not willing to return it just like that.

Most importantly, Hei Lou Lan was not trustworthy!

As time passed, Giant Sun’s will and the formless hands’ battle intensified.

Giant Sun’s will originated from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he was very ruthless and wise, now that his original strength could be displayed fully, he showed off a matchless disposition.

He drew support from the luck path true inheritance light lump, and while fighting against the formless hands, he took back control of the one and only copy of the luck path true inheritance.

After so long, the luck path true inheritance light lump was still quite intact.

There were simply too many Gu worms inside this true inheritance, it was shocking. In just this short while, six luck path Immortal Gu were already taken by the formless hands.

No wonder it was the one and only copy.

Immortal Gu were unique, even for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he exerted all his efforts and could only elevate the true inheritance to this extent.

Three of the six Immortal Gu were retrieved by Giant Sun’s will when he broke the formless fists. Giant Sun’s will could only watch as the other three were taken away by the formless fists.

“Damn it! Too hateful!” Giant Sun’s will got more furious as he fought, he had already hated Zhao Lian Yun to the depths of his soul, now he no longer cared about Ma Hong Yun’s life.

“I want to see how long this luck path true inheritance can protect you for!” Giant Sun’s will gritted his teeth.

If not for him wanting to protect the luck path true inheritance and being unable to attack all out, he would’ve destroyed this light lump and killed Ma and Zhao.

Ma and Zhao hugged each other, towards this situation, there was nothing they could do but to await death.

The great pressure was a huge turmoil on their hearts, their feelings for each other rapidly grew.

But this was useless.

The Frost Jade Peacock that recognised them as its master had already died.

The size of the luck path true inheritance light lump was less than a third of what it had been originally. Seeing that death was approaching closer and closer, Ma and Zhao lost any hopes of surviving.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were at a stalemate, they were bargaining. Both sides were very distrustful of each other, this talk was progressing very slowly.

Clang—!

Right at this moment, from outside the wind veil, there was the sound of a blade.

The sound of the blade was crisp and sharp, it reverberated in everyone’s ears.

“What?”

“This is!”

Everyone raised their heads, they were attracted by this strange event, even the giant dragon of Giant Sun’s will stopped its attacks.

Only to see that above them, on the wind veil of assimilation, there was a huge opening created by a blade.

Everyone could see the outside sky of northern plains through the opening caused by the blade.

In the sky, three Gu Immortals from Chanyu tribe were breathing roughly.

This was the immortal killer move that they activated — Winged Blade!

Around them, there were a dozen or so Gu Immortals.

It turns out that when the three of them were colluding not too long ago, other righteous path Gu Immortals approached them. Because Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals were very sincere and put in a lot of effort, they came to an agreement quickly and thus chose to attack earlier than expected.

With the blade opening, the inside and outside world were connected.

This was a huge influence to anyone in the battlefield!

The ones who reacted faster than Fang Yuan and the other humans were the Gu worms!

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was an ownerless object, after being destroyed by the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities, the walls collapsed and turned into large number of wild Gu worms.

At this crucial moment, using their instincts, these Gu worms flew into the air, towards the opening.

During the process, formless hands were capturing them all over the place.

“This is the best chance to charge through the wind veil and escape from this dangerous place!” The Gu Masters’ eyes were glowing.

“Ah! So many Gu worms, these are all formed from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!” Northern plains Gu Immortals watched with burning and shining eyes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 637: Huge Shocking Change

Originally, within the wind veil of assimilation, the Gu worms were lifeless.

Now, a huge opening was cut into the wind veil of assimilation, opening a link outside to northern plains, the Gu worms all went into a frenzy, frantically rushing towards the opening.

Formless hands arrived, attempting to grab them along the way.

Nearly half of the Gu worms were captured by the formless hands, and carried off by the formless fists, vanishing into thin air.

Despite this, the majority of the Gu worms managed to rush out of the opening, escaping this dangerous area surrounded by the wind veil of assimilation, and arriving in the outside world of northern plains.

“Come to me, be mine!”

“So many Gu worms, eh, that is an Immortal Gu?!”

“Stop at once! Do not fight, distribute the Gu according to our prior arrangement, no one should act recklessly!!”

The northern plains Gu Immortals saw a cluster of Gu worms, like an unceasing torrent of water rushing forth, they were already in a state of shocked ecstasy.

They struck at once, repeatedly shouting, competing against each other, and displaying all kinds of methods.

Fang Yuan raised his head to look, and saw a scene of Gu Immortals madly fighting over Gu worms.

“There are more than twenty Gu Immortals... they probably used the immortal killer move winged blade; this killer move is a first class attacking method of northern plains, during the battle of the five regions in the future, many central continent Gu Immortals died from it.” His expression was grim, his eyes were flickering with cold light, the memories of his previous life was still vivid within his mind.

Winds of assimilation, the number one wind in the world, they were able to assimilate all things, there are few methods capable of restraining it.

But the immortal killer move winged blade had peerless might, it was a rare method that was even able to cleave open the wind veil of assimilation!

“Naturally, this is also because the wind veil of assimilation had not formed for a long time, the wind walls are still not too thick, given a longer period of time, even the winged blade will be unable to damage it.”

Winds of assimilation, they were a wind that blew when immortal apertures faced destruction.

Once the wind gained momentum, and there was enough wind blowing, even rank eight Gu Immortals would struggle to resist it.

As for rank nine Gu Immortals, they were the rulers of the world, they were invincible beings! No matter how strong the winds of assimilation became, it could do nothing to them.

This shocking change was out of Fang Yuan’s expectations, to him, this was not a method of escaping.

He had caused harm to Giant Sun’s will and caused the collapse of Eight-Eight

True Yang Building, he was the culprit behind Imperial Court blessed land’s destruction! Once he went outside, and got caught by the angry northern plains Gu Immortals, he would end up facing a terrible fate. By then, even death would be a luxury.

He placed his attention on Hei Lou Lan now.

If Hei Lou Lan got distracted now, Fang Yuan would launch a sneak attack and take back Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

But Hei Lou Lan’s eyes were fixed on Fang Yuan without a single bit of distraction.

His objective this time was to obtain a strength path Immortal Gu and become a Gu Immortal. But he was did not excel in movement and could not break the formless fists.

However, he had made an agreement with Giant Sun’s will, as long as he helped him, Giant Sun’s will would give him a strength path Immortal Gu as a reward.

This was also the sole reason why Hei Lou Lan had followed Giant Sun’s will since the battle began.

“This fellow...” Fang Yuan had no opportunity at all, he could only grit his teeth.

Right at this moment, there was a transmission from above the wind veil, but the voice was choppy: “Hei Lou Lan... my son... father is here... to bring you back...”

Hei Lou Lan’s own father, the supreme tribe elder of northern plains’ super tribe, Hei tribe, a legendary figure in northern plains who was also the famous main character of the love story, Su Xian’s Night Elopement — Hei Cheng!

He was rank seven and cultivated dark path, his eyes were like ink while his face was like jade, he had a handsome appearance and looked carefree.

At this moment, he was floating in the air, keeping some Gu worms while calling out Hei Lou Lan’s name with much worry: “Don’t worry... father... has already found the strength path Immortal Gu for you...”

But Hei Lou Lan snorted coldly when he heard his father’s call.

He pretended he did not hear Hei Cheng’s words, instead it triggered his anger as his expression turned into one of hatred.

Filled with the deep intent of revenge, he growled at Fang Yuan: “My patience is running out, do you still want your senior brother’s life? Quickly hand over my Gu worm to me, otherwise I will kill him!”

He obviously had to save Tai Bai Yun Sheng, this was the only useful reinforcement that Fang Yuan could use to resist Giant Sun’s will.

Thus, Fang Yuan shouted: “I can give the Gu to you, but you must wake my senior brother up first and let him run a thousand steps away from here!”

His suggestion was immediately denied by Hei Lou Lan: “Impossible! You have to pass the Gu to me first, otherwise I will crush his skull directly!”

Both sides did not trust each other.

Fang Yuan wanted Hei Lou Lan to release Tai Bai Yun Sheng, but Hei Lou Lan was afraid of Fang Yuan’s movement speed.

Hei Lou Lan wanted Fang Yuan to return the Gu first, but Fang Yuan was afraid of Hei Lou Lan playing tricks.

Of course, there was the most common way to settle this.

That was for both parties to act at the same time, releasing Tai Bai Yun Sheng and the Gu together.

But in this environment, where formless hands were flying around everywhere, who would dare to let their Gu worms fly around?

It was not that Fang Yuan did not want to save Tai Bai Yun Sheng, but the discussion was always stuck at this stage.

Fang Yuan raised his head to look, and the scene was making his heart sink: “Oh no... the formless hands disappear after capturing Gu worms. The formless hands will continue to decrease in number, and soon, Giant Sun’s will would gain control of the situation!”

Not only was Hei Lou Lan anxious, Fang Yuan was also starting to become anxious.

Giant Sun’s will was a special will, exterminating the otherworldly demon was his top priority. This objective ruled above his desire to live.

The dragon made of will roared, it ignored the passage above its head as it coiled around the luck path true inheritance.

The remaining luck path Gu worms were the true inheritance’s core.

Giant Sun’s will did not dare to be careless.

“Are we going to die?!” Seeing the luck path true inheritance light lump reduce to a thin layer, Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun felt that all hope was lost.

But right at this moment!

The true inheritance light lump burst out with a dazzling light, the light was so strong it could blind everyone’s vision.

With a whoosh, the true inheritance light lump carried Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun, flying up and turning into a rainbow of light, charging towards the opening in the wind veil.

The luck path true inheritance was governed by the will of a wild Gu, it had a very strong instinct for survival.

“Don’t even think about it!” The dragon of Giant Sun’s will shouted furiously, without hesitation, it gave chase immediately!

The true inheritance light lump was really fast, Giant Sun’s will could not catch up to it.

Seeing that true inheritance light lump was about to get out of the wind veil of assimilation and escape into northern plains, Giant Sun’s will finally let go of his reservations and set his mind on exterminating the otherworldly demon Zhao Lian Yun!

This was the primary objective that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had given to the special will!

When one could not get the best of both worlds, Giant Sun’s will had no choice but to discard one to achieve the other objective!

Giant Sun’s immortal essence was injected into all the Immortal Gu, as the dragon of will shined with a dozen spots of lights. In three breaths of time, the light expanded rapidly, ready to attack.

The will dragon’s aura surged, as it readied itself, a shockingly powerful attack was about to be launched!

But, right at this moment.

From among the group of Gu worms, another true inheritance light lump appeared suddenly!

This true inheritance light lump was about the size of an adult, it was a supreme true inheritance!

This supreme true inheritance gave off a thin layer of light.

This light was not dazzling in brightness alone, but it kept changing into different colors. The light was also very dense, and it covered a huge area, forming a giant halo.

The supreme true inheritance along with the halo crashed fiercely into the dragon of Giant Sun’s will.

Crack crack crack...

Under the halo’s effect, Giant Sun’s will rapidly expanded and exploded, leaving behind the sound of firecrackers.

The giant halo with the supreme true inheritance as its center attacked the dragon of Giant Sun’s will, and attempted to cut the dragon into two at its waist.

Giant Sun’s will howled, falling into extreme anger and shock.

It had broken into two, originally the dozen Immortal Gu were ready to attack, but their lethal attacks had been cancelled already.

“Rank nine wisdom Gu!” Fang Yuan’s expression was unchanging, but his heart jumped.

From the appearance of this supreme true inheritance, its true identity had been exposed.

Within the true inheritance secluded domain, there were only thee supreme true inheritances.

One was Eight-Eight True Yang Building itself, it had already been broken up by the formless hands. This was also why Eight-Eight True Yang Building had collapsed completely and split back into Gu worms.

The other was the luck path true inheritance, it had once fuelled Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s glorious success. Right now, it was heading towards the opening in the wind veil of assimilation, rushing for its freedom.

The final one was the rank nine wisdom Gu, Fang Yuan had once seen it inside the true inheritance secluded domain, if not for Mo Yao’s will reminding him back then, he may have nearly lost his life under wisdom Gu’s influence.

Being as high as rank nine, wisdom Gu which was recorded inside <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> was definitely extraordinary.

It gave off the light of wisdom.

Basking in this light, lifeforms would lose their lifespan rapidly, thoughts would be created and destroyed in their minds quickly, they would collide with each other and create the sparks of wisdom in the process.

When a person thinks, countless thoughts would be created, destroyed, or collide into each other, to obtain the results of thinking.

Wisdom path, with this principle, became one of the paths of Gu Masters.

The light of wisdom would increase the number of thoughts to the limit, the speed of thinking would be raised to the limit, and the collisions would occur at the most rapid rate. By reducing the time to think greatly, one could attain greater effects.

This was the true effect of wisdom Gu!

“That’s right, wisdom Gu also has a wild will, and had been hiding since long ago. Now that the wind veil of assimilation is broken, it is instinctively trying to escape. Except that it had remained silent until now before suddenly striking!” Fang Yuan realized at once.

Fang Yuan felt no shock towards how wisdom Gu was able to easily deal great damage to Giant Sun’s will.

It has been mentioned previously — wisdom path is classified into thought, will, and emotion.

What were wills made up of?

Multiple thoughts!

Under the shining light of wisdom, these thoughts collided intensely, they expanded and faced destruction rapidly.

If the light was shone on humans, new thoughts would develop in their minds.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was dead!

This was only a will that he left behind!

This special will was just like the formless hands, without a source of energy!

Under the light of wisdom, these thoughts collided at an extremely fast face, they were rapidly destroyed but no new thoughts were generated. The dragon of Giant Sun’s will was thus easily snapped into two.

It could be said that wisdom Gu directly countered Giant Sun’s will!

“But this advantage is not enough to take down Giant Sun’s will, unless...” Fang Yuan’s gaze was sharp as an eagle, he looked up while enduring the piercing light from the inheritance.

Indeed!

He saw that in the sky, up to a hundred beads of immortal essence were falling down.

These yellow immortal essence were skull sized, each was filled to the brim and they had their auras concealed. Fang Yuan’s rank six green grape immortal essence could not hold a candle to them.

These were rank nine yellow apricot immortal essence!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s immortal essence which he had left behind!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 638: Unfilial Descendants

Immortal Gu normally required immortal essence to activate. Under most circumstances, will could not activate Gu worms alone. Even Giant Sun’s will was not exempt from this rule.

The reason the dragon of Giant Sun’s will could activate Immortal Gu was because it was holding Giant Sun’s immortal essence.

However, the wisdom Gu’s attack cut apart the dragon of Giant Sun’s will into two and actually revealed it was holding Giant Sun’s immortal essence.

“As expected of wisdom Gu! Such an amazing result in just one move!!” Fang Yuan’s gaze brightened and praised wisdom Gu inwardly.

He had also thought of cutting apart the connection between Giant Sun’s immortal essence and Giant Sun’s will, but he did not have enough strength to do so.

However, wisdom Gu accomplished it!

Wisdom Gu was not the slightest bit afraid of formless hands. The most terrifying formless hands only had eight fingers while wisdom Gu was a rank nine Immortal Gu and could only be grabbed by nine fingered formless hands.

However, wisdom Gu was extremely fragile despite being rank nine. It was not an offense oriented Gu and could still be destroyed.

It wanted freedom and wanted to soar to the skies, and the dragon of Giant Sun’s will which possessed many Immortal Gu was its primary obstacle.

From wisdom Gu’s perspective, dealing with the dragon of Giant Sun’s will was of the utmost importance.

Thus, it concealed itself and waited for an opportunity to strike. It remained inconspicuous when it did not make a move, but when it made a move, it was extremely shocking, striking the weak point of the Giant Sun’s will dragon and cutting its connection with Giant Sun’s immortal essence in one move, thereby causing the Immortal Gu controlled by Giant Sun’s will, more than ten in number, to be of no use.

Giant Sun’s will let out a furious roar at the heavy damage!

However, it did not turn around to attack wisdom Gu and instead relentlessly chased after the luck path true inheritance which was holding Ma and Zhao.

Giant Sun’s will instantly condensed into a huge golden hand that struck towards Ma and Zhao like a meteor.

For a moment, the whole battle situation turned into this

The wind veil of assimilation was separating the ruins of Imperial Court blessed land from the outside world of northern plains.

In the outside world were northern plains’ Gu Immortals.

Inside was the ruins of Imperial Court blessed land.

There was a giant tear in the wind veil of assimilation from which countless Gu worms flew out, sparking conflicts among the Gu Immortals.

Inside the wind veil.

At the highest point was the luck path true inheritance which had turned into a rainbow and flew rapidly towards the tear in the wind veil of assimilation, it was already close to it.

In the middle was the huge hand of Giant Sun’s will which could no longer activate Immortal Gu.

Below Giant Sun’s will was wisdom Gu which was following closely.

Even further below in the mid-air was the deadlock between Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan.

On the ground were dozens of surviving Gu Masters. Formless hands were attracted towards the Gu worms that filled the sky, and as such the Gu Masters’ situation was a lot better.

The huge hand of Giant Sun’s will which had burst out with all its strength was rapidly closing the distance between it and the luck path true inheritance.

Crackle crackle crackle...

Giant Sun’s will was bursting out with explosive sounds.

Wisdom Gu was not far below and Giant Sun’s will had all along been under the light of wisdom; its thoughts violently collided and perished.

The huge hand of Giant Sun’s will was shrinking rapidly at a visible speed.

However, the light of wisdom Gu was not just exhausting Giant Sun’s will, the intense collisions of the will was further increasing the speed and power of the huge hand of Giant Sun’s will.

Finally, when the luck path true inheritance was just about to charge into the wind veil, the huge hand of Giant Sun’s will was able to block its path.

“None of you can escape, die!” The huge hand of Giant Sun’s will grabbed down with extreme killing intent, not caring that the luck path true inheritance was a unique existence and just focused on killing Ma and Zhao.

“Are we going to die?!” Ma and Zhao hugged each other, terror and shock filled them as they looked at the giant hand falling down upon them.

Boom!

Powerful attacks rained down like a hailstorm, smashing down ruthlessly at the huge hand of Giant Sun’s will.

“You unfilial descendants!!” Giant Sun’s will let out a furious roar as its giant hand collapsed.

The luck path true inheritance carried Ma and Zhao, and flew through the wind veil of assimilation to the outside world of northern plains.

“These are Immortal Gu!”

“Grab the Immortal Gu!”

“They are mine, all mine!!”

How could the righteous path Gu Immortals whose hearts were filled with greed know about the identity of the giant hand of will. Even if they knew, would they just look on as the huge hand of will crushed the Immortal Gu?

A man whose heart cannot be satisfied is like a snake trying to swallow an elephant!

The luck path true inheritance was brimming with dense Immortal Gu aura which further intensified the greed of the northern plains’ Gu Immortals.

“Fight!”

“Courting death, who dares to seize the Immortal Gu in front of me?!”

“You shameless bastards! Did you guys forget the agreement we made earlier?”

Verbal agreements between Gu Immortals were already fragile; who would comply with such agreements in front of huge profits?

The northern plains’ Gu Immortals removed all consideration for face and grabbed at the luck path true inheritance!

The majestic auras of the Gu Immortals collided against each other.

Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun blacked out, almost fainting on the spot.

They had left the wolf’s nest and entered the tiger’s den!

“Eh? This aura and radiance, I am not wrong, this definitely is connected to luck path! Everyone move together!” Suddenly, a long and loud whooshing sound rang out.

Over ten Gu Immortals appeared.

At the lead was an old Gu Immortal with a snow-white beard that reached the toes.

The righteous path Gu Immortals narrowed their eyes at the sight of this man. Someone cried out in surprise, introducing this man’s origins: “Old Ancestor Xue Hu, you actually came in person!”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was the leader of Snowy Mountain blessed land, a rank eight Gu Immortal and the number one demonic path Gu Immortal of northern plains!

Following him were Snowy Mountain blessed land’s demonic path Gu Immortals, legendary experts whose names were known far and wide.

“Imperial Court blessed land is about to be destroyed, of course I have to come and reap some benefits! Enough nonsense, strike!” Old Ancestor Xue Hu screamed out before leading the group behind him to join in the fight.

The scene turned even more chaotic.

Righteous and demonic factions battled with all sorts of Gu worms flying about. The luck path true inheritance changed hands several times; Ma and Zhao were in a precarious situation, walking on the edge of life and death.

“Don’t fight, inside the wind veil of assimilation there are definitely many more Immortal Gu!” A Gu Immortal shouted in the chaos.

“The three immortals of Chanyu, make your move. The wind veil of assimilation is closing up!” Another Gu Immortal gave a reminder from within the chaotic battlefield.

The three Chanyu immortals had gathered with the Gu Immortal Tong Zu as the lead. They hurriedly glanced below when they heard the reminder.

Sure enough, the tear on the wind veil of assimilation was already closing up and there was only a thin crack remaining.

The tear that winged blade had created was extremely large, but the wind veil of assimilation’s recovery speed was very fast.

Gu Immortal Tong Zu had estimated the cut would be closed in eight breaths of time. And from the looks of it, it indeed took around eight breaths.

If they used the winged blade now, they would be able to open up a tear again. However, Chanyu tribe’s three immortals showed no signs of using it.

This immortal path killer move had extremely terrifying power, but the price to pay was equally large, consuming a lot of immortal essence. And in this chaotic situation, the three Chanyu immortals did not dare to use it again so as to keep it in reserve to intimidate enemies.

“Brother Hei Cheng, what are we going to do now?” Hei tribe’s Gu Immortal, Hei Bai, lost his cool when he saw the wind veil of assimilation closing up, and hurriedly consulted Gu Immortal Hei Cheng.

Hei Cheng was silent, his expression extremely unsightly.

Hei Bai had been seeking Immortal Gu Wooden Chicken since long ago, they had also received information from Hei Lou Lan that he had already obtained the Immortal Gu. But the wind veil of assimilation was now closed, Hei Lou Lan had not escaped when he had the chance, causing Hei Bai’s plan to be fruitless.

Hei Cheng did not have the ability to cut apart the wind veil of assimilation.

His voice turned extremely gloomy: “Brother Hei Bai, you still have a chance. Those formless hands inside the wind veil are extremely likely to have seized wooden chicken Gu. When they travel through space and their energy is used up, the captured Gu worms will also be freed.”

The investigative abilities of Gu Immortals were much stronger than that of Gu Masters.

After the tear was opened on the wind veil of assimilation, they had immediately glanced at the dangers within the wind veil. And because of the formless hands as well, they did not dare to enter the wind veil and risk themselves.

“It’s like that?” Hei Bai’s eyes brightened before he thought of something, “Then nephew Hei Lou Lan...”

Hei Cheng didn’t speak, but his expression turned even more gloomy.

......

Hei Lou Lan did not grab the opportunity to escape the wind veil of assimilation, this made Fang Yuan inwardly shocked.

However, he did not have the time to ponder over this and threw it to the back of his mind.

He fixed his gaze on the falling immortal essence of Giant Sun.

His mind was filled completely with the thoughts of this immortal essence of Giant Sun.

Gu Masters cannot use the primeval essence of others. Gu Immortals were also unable to use the immortal essence of others.

After Fang Yuan obtained Hu Immortal blessed land, he had obtained a lot of green grape immortal essence left behind by Hu Immortal. But only the land spirit, Little Hu Immortal, could use this immortal essence.

Land spirits were formed from a Gu Immortal’s obsession. Giant Sun’s immortal essence also could only be used by Giant Sun’s will. Even if Fang Yuan obtained this immortal essence, he would not be able to use them.

But this did not affect Fang Yuan’s resolve to seize the immortal essence of Giant Sun even a little bit!

“I can’t use it, but as long I seize all this immortal essence, the power of Giant Sun’s will will drop down to twenty to thirty percent!!” Fang Yuan soared to the sky, crazily activating all sorts of movement Gu to increase his speed.

This exceptionally good opportunity was created by wisdom Gu, Fang Yuan would not be worthy of being an authoritative figure of the demonic path if he did not grab this chance.

“You dare!!” Attacked by his own descendants, and now sensing what Fang Yuan was attempting, Giant Sun’s will was furious as well as anxious.

Without immortal essence, it was not able to activate Immortal Gu and could only use the power of its special will to battle.

It understood the severity of this more than anyone else!

Fang Yuan’s extremely fast speed gave Giant Sun’s will an unprecedented fear!

“Damn it, it’s too late!” The will condensed back together into a giant hand which fell down like a meteor.

“Hahaha....” Fang Yuan threw his head back and laughed loudly, he was less than a hundred steps away from Giant Sun’s immortal essence.

Even if Giant Sun’s will was mighty, Fang Yuan was not worried.

Because between Fang Yuan and Giant Sun’s will was the rank nine wisdom Gu!

“Wisdom Gu is the bane of Giant Sun’s will, Giant Sun’s will would have to detour around wisdom Gu which would waste a lot more time! Hei Lou Lan does not have high speed and he still has to hold Tai Bai Yun Sheng, so he can’t chase me. The only worry is the formless hands...”

Fang Yuan thought of every possible scenario with his understanding of the whole situation.

Wind whistled past, Giant Sun’s immortal essence was already within reach!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 639: Giant Sun flaunts his might, Fang Yuan receives help

Seeing that he was about to succeed, Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a faint smile.

But that did not stop unexpected events from happening.

Wisdom Gu quickly descended, as the light of wisdom shrouded Fang Yuan.

Once he entered the wisdom halo, Fang Yuan’s thoughts were created and destroyed intensely, he aged rapidly.

“This?!” Fang Yuan was shocked, raising his head to take a look, he saw wisdom Gu descending towards himself.

Meanwhile, Giant Sun’s will which had lost a huge portion of its body shrunk into a tiny ball and followed closely after.

In reality, Giant Sun’s will knew that if he took a detour around wisdom Gu, he would not be able to stop Fang Yuan. Thus, he forcefully got close to wisdom Gu and used a technique to send it flying.

Although wisdom Gu countered Giant Sun’s will, Giant Sun’s will was large enough and after paying a huge price, he could barely come into contact with wisdom Gu by risking his life.

This way, wisdom Gu was like a rubber ball flying straight for Fang Yuan, it became greatly troublesome for Fang Yuan now.

“As expected of Giant Sun!” Seeing wisdom Gu approaching himself, Fang Yuan could not help but praise Giant Sun’s will’s decision.

He laughed heartily, his heart was extremely resolute.

If you, Giant Sun, could make such a sacrifice, why can’t I, Gu Yue Fang Yuan?

Thus, Fang Yuan endured the light of wisdom and used his method to sweep away all of the falling immortal essence of Giant Sun!

Immediately afterwards, he used wind flower Gu to change his direction, moving to the side and trying to get away from wisdom Gu.

Wisdom Gu continued to descend, as Fang Yuan narrowly passed by it.

“Cough cough cough...” Fang Yuan coughed non stop, he was finally out of the range of the light of wisdom. But his face no longer had the appearance of a young man, anyone who saw him would think he was a middle aged man.

The closer one was to wisdom Gu, the more intense the light of wisdom would be.

Earlier when Fang Yuan was inside the true inheritance secluded domain, he was still a great number of steps away from wisdom Gu, but in just a few breaths’ time, he lost two years of his life.

Earlier, he was so close to wisdom Gu, and had endured the light of wisdom for such a long time, thus he lost more than ten years of lifespan.

Ordinary people only had a hundred years of lifespan.

In order to snatch Giant Sun’s immortal essence, Fang Yuan paid a heavy price!

“Little scoundrel, die!” Drawing an arc in the air like lightning, Giant Sun’s will pounced like an eagle.

Fang Yuan immediately felt an intense sensation of danger and death assaulting him, at the crucial moment, he only had time to activate six arm heavenly zombie king.

Bam!

With a loud bang, Fang Yuan was swatted like a fly.

Crashing down like a meteor, he landed heavily on the ground, forming a huge crater.

Rocks were sent flying as dust clouds formed.

Fang Yuan was lying in the deepest part of the crater, he regained his senses three breaths of time later.

Out of his eight arms, six were broken. His entire back was in a terrible state, his spine and ribcages could be seen. He was dizzy, he could barely think — the attack of Giant Sun’s will earlier had not just targeted his body, but a large amount of special wills entered his mind, trying to destroy it and affect his cognitive ability!

While only barely conscious, Fang Yuan actually dodged without thinking about it.

The next moment, Giant Sun’s will in the form of a huge golden axe swung down from high in the sky, cutting away Fang Yuan’s left arm and left leg.

If Fang Yuan did not dodge in time, perhaps he would have been split into two by this attack.

As his consciousness recovered, Fang Yuan quickly used his sole remaining palm to support himself, his immense strength pushing his body out of the crater.

But as he was doing so, Giant Sun’s will turned into a huge golden hammer, flying into the sky and slamming towards Fang Yuan.

Bam!

Fang Yuan was like a giant elephant who was hit while running, his ribcage was completely broken while his intestines were crushed to bits due to the impact.

At the same time, in his mind, he was invaded by Giant Sun’s will again, as he fell into greater confusion.

Fang Yuan was like a rubber ball that was slammed on the ground, he rolled along the ground as he flew, causing a long trail to appear on the ground where he was sent flying.

The intense collision caused his clothes to be torn, and he was covered in dust.

Eventually, he sprawled on the ground weakly, motionless. His broken bones and hanging flesh were all exposed, as blood flowed, they were not red, instead, his blood had a deep green color due to six arm heavenly zombie king.

His expression was distorted, his fangs were exposed as he struggled in pain.

At this moment, there was a huge battle in Fang Yuan’s mind, the battle of wills was intense, and Giant Sun’s will had the upper hand.

Fang Yuan was taking a beating passively, although he resisted stubbornly, he could barely think clearly now.

Only after he exterminated the portion of Giant Sun’s will in his mind could he reawaken and regain his consciousness.

But Giant Sun’s will would not give him such a chance.

It condensed into a golden sword, sixteen meters long and six meters wide, it gave off an indomitable aura, and had the ability to judge all beings.

“This, this is Giant Sun’s will’s true battle strength? This is too terrifying...” Far away, Hei Lou Lan held the unconscious Tai Bai Yun Sheng as he said with a tongue-tied expression.

Giant Sun’s will had refined many Immortal Gu, and was struck by wisdom Gu and also attacked by a group of over twenty Gu Immortals, in the end, he had to make a sacrifice and forcefully charge ahead to send wisdom Gu flying.

After all these, he had suffered great injuries, his mass was a miniscule fraction compared to the time he was slumbering.

But even so, Fang Yuan had no way of fighting back. And without using a single Immortal Gu, no wonder Hei Lou Lan watched with such nervousness, this battle strength was simply too terrifying!

But immediately after, Hei Lou Lan calmed down: “No, the special will is not this strong. But earlier, Ancestor Giant Sun struck at the perfect moment, while he was unprepared, he dealt a serious blow. The scoundrel wanted to retaliate, but he could not think as his mind was already invaded by the special will, falling into chaos. If he was prepared and had ample time to react, it would not have ended this way!”

“The main factor was because he inherited Old Ancestor’s battle experience, he is ruthless and decisive, once he finds an opening, he would strike at the opponent’s weakness and give him no chance of fighting back! Especially the will invading the mind, this is too scary, it is simply impossible to fight back. It seems that I need to be careful about this when fighting a wisdom path Gu Master!”

Hei Lou Lan reminded himself as he landed slowly on the ground.

He looked at the sword of will, it was floating and eventually landed above Fang Yuan, the tip of the blade was right on top of his brain.

“This guy is finished.” Hei Lou Lan muttered softly; the great foe before him had landed in such a state because of a mistake that was strictly not his fault. He felt some relief, some joy, and even a slight sadness.

The strength of Giant Sun’s will was due to the battle experience that it had inherited from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Although Fang Yuan had five hundred years of experience, in this aspect, Giant Sun’s will was much stronger than him and had much greater experience.

Once Giant Sun's will gets a chance, he would attack consecutively and gain the upper hand, expanding on his advantage and preventing Fang Yuan from recovering any of his footing!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was not only lucky, this aspect of him displayed his invincible nature, his firm and domineering battle talent.

"It's over." Hei Lou Lan looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng who was in his arms.

Inside the wind veil of assimilation, he was Fang Yuan's only ally, but now he was unconscious.

Hei Lou Lan threw him onto the ground casually, his gaze fixed on the sword of Giant Sun's will.

Without hesitation, the sword of Giant Sun's will shot down soundlessly, the tip of the sword pointed at Fang Yuan's brain.

Even though Fang Yuan was in six arm heavenly zombie king state, and had transformed into the body of a zombie, but once his head was pierced, Giant Sun's will would completely destroy his brain, along with his entire soul.

This was a truly fatal blow!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had fainted, Fang Yuan was unconscious, he had no way to fight back.

But just when the sword's tip was about to reach Fang Yuan's forehead, with just an inch away, a water wall suddenly appeared.

At the same time, a shrill woman's voice could be heard: "With me here, don't think of taking his life!"

"Who is this?" Hei Lou Lan gasped, he looked at the water wall with shock, the surface of the water wall had turned into a spiral, coiling around the sword tip and preventing the sword of Giant Sun's will from descending.

At the same time, a strong aura burst out from Fang Yuan's body.

Giant Sun's will pulled back the sword, retreating several hundred steps away rapidly.

He stood in the air for a moment before saying in a low voice, as he remembered: "It's you! Over ten thousand years ago, you barged into Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, you were the one who freed fortune rivalling heaven Gu!!"

Mo Yao laughed delicately: "I'm surprised you remember."

Saying this, the water wall turned into a liquid armor that covered Fang Yuan's body.

A light blue glow surrounded Fang Yuan, causing his wounds to heal rapidly, his broken limbs, flesh and bones were all rapidly healing.

Giant Sun's will was able to remember because Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had recording Gu worms that filmed all that had happened inside it.

When Mo Yao explored Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, she did not wake up Giant Sun's will. But this time, after Fang Yuan woke up Giant Sun's will, he used the respective Gu worms to look through the records, learning what had happened.

Mo Yao’s voice, appearance, Fang Yuan’s name as well as his wicked deeds inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Giant Sun’s will was very aware of all of them, that was why he was able to expose the secret of the Chang Shan Yin impersonation.

Giant Sun’s will was extremely furious: “You unscrupulous and shameless thieves, you have been targeting my True Yang Building for tens of thousands of years! Die!”

Giant Sun’s will attacked with rage, the golden sword flew like lightning, piercing the air and drawing a golden rainbow in the air.

The rainbow hit the liquid armor, causing ripples on it, but could not pierce the armor’s protection.

Fang Yuan slowly woke up.

“This is... the rank seven Immortal Gu House Water Pavilion?” He looked at the liquid armor on him and realized.

It turns out that since an unknown time ago, Water Pavilion had been on him.

When he was in a chaotic state and his life was at risk, Mo Yao’s will activated Water Pavilion and protected him.

Giant Sun’s will could control Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Mo Yao’s will could naturally manipulate Water Pavilion.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s yellow apricot immortal essence, how could Water Pavilion not have Fairy Mo Yao’s red date immortal essence?

“Lad, you are finally awake. The immortal essence that my main body had left behind is limited, Water Pavilion’s consumption is too great, quickly take over the battle, I will defend your mind!” Mo Yao’s will said.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 640: Fang Yuan vs Giant Sun’s will (1/2)

“Hmph, I could escape death all thanks to you, fairy!” Fang Yuan squinted, his eyes shining with cold light.

He loosened his joints, rubbing his palms as his newly born bones creaked, his battle intent surged again!

“If you want to repay me, return Water Pavilion to Spirit Affinity House.” Mo Yao’s will sighed: “Quickly battle!”

“Hahaha, okay!” Fang Yuan howled, jumping up.

He had turned into six arm heavenly zombie king form, it had great physical strength. With green eyes and fangs, he looked extremely vicious and ruthless.

The water armor shrunk into a lump, before turning into a helmet, protecting his head. This way, he was no longer afraid of Giant Sun’s will’s mental attack.

Without any worries left, Fang Yuan took huge steps forward, raising his fists and punching at Giant Sun’s will!

Swoosh.

The expected impact did not occur, instead, there was a light sound.

Giant Sun’s will was very experienced, he did not fight with Fang Yuan directly. At the crucial moment, the sword turned into a golden ribbon and coiled around Fang Yuan’s wrist lightly, before flying away like a flash of light.

Fang Yuan’s hammer-like fist was cut apart around the wrist and fell on the ground.

Even with the defense of Fang Yuan’s six arm heavenly zombie king, it could not match Giant Sun’s will’s sharpness.

Fang Yuan rolled away and quickly picked up his hand.

The injury on his arm was oozing with green blood slowly. Fang Yuan paid attention to Giant Sun’s will while pressing the fist back onto the wound on his arm.

The flesh on the wound quickly mended and healed, even the bones started to join together.

This was the strong regenerative ability of six arm heavenly zombie king.

But why would Giant Sun’s will give Fang Yuan time to recover? The will turned into a sword resembling a rainbow and charged at Fang Yuan again.

Fang Yuan squinted, he pushed with his legs as his body shot into the sky.

The sword rainbow followed closely behind him, chasing relentlessly.

Fang Yuan activated four eagle rise Gu at the same time, but the sword rainbow was faster, as their distance was pulled closer.

Fang Yuan activated wind flower Gu again.

He had already lost track of which wind flower Gu this was, all in all, he had already expended a lot of them.

Wind flower Gu allowed Fang Yuan to change directions rapidly, but the sword rainbow of will was even more agile, not only did their distance not become larger, the rainbow made use of this chance to catch up to Fang Yuan.

At once, the two sides fought intensely in the air, exchanging blows.

The sword rainbow of will drew a golden arc in the air, circling around Fang Yuan and attacking from time to time.

Fang Yuan was completely at a disadvantage, six arm heavenly zombie king’s strong defense was extremely weak when matched against the sword rainbow of will.

Flesh kept falling from the sky.

These were all cut off from Fang Yuan’s body by the sword rainbow of will.

Thankfully, after activating six arm heavenly zombie king, Fang Yuan lost his sense of pain. Together with Water Pavilion as a helmet, Giant Sun’s will did not manage to succeed in attacking Fang Yuan’s mind.

“You’re not making any progress!” Seeing that Fang Yuan was not taking back the lead, in fact he was taking more of a beating and finding fewer and fewer chances to retaliate, Mo Yao’s will was getting anxious.

“Easy for you to say!” Fang Yuan snorted, his gaze becoming more ruthless.

Giant Sun’s will was different from ordinary enemies, he hardly had any mass and was extremely quick, even when turning. Fang Yuan’s flying master attainment was nothing compared to it.

Giant Sun’s will did not have a fixed form, it could turn into a sword rainbow to cut, an axe to chop, a rain of needles for a wide range attack, or even a hammer for a strong blow.

The most troublesome thing was that he could split and form at will. Suddenly, he could split into two or three sword rainbows and do a pincer attack, distracting Fang Yuan. At times, he could turn into one hammer and one sword. The hammer would strike at Fang Yuan’s defense while the sword would shoot like lightning, all sorts of combinations were used flexibly, with absolutely no errors.

One could say, he fully displayed the advantages and abilities of a will in battle.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan had been reborn, and walked on the strength and enslavement paths. He was skilled at fighting head on, attacking fists with fists, or using numbers to suppress the enemy.

But meeting this kind of enemy was something he had no methods to deal with.

He was at a disadvantage, taking hits passively, that was very natural.

In the sky, Fang Yuan’s green-black figure clashed with Giant Sun’s will’s golden rainbow, forming a large battle arena.

Great numbers of Gu worms were still flying around, their instincts were telling them to give way to Fang Yuan and Giant Sun’s will, while avoiding the attacks of the formless hands.

“Even though so many Gu worms flew out, there are still countless Gu worm groups left here, I cannot begin to imagine how many Immortal Gu were used to form Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.” Ye Lui Sang raised his head and sighed, the injuries on his body had mostly healed.

At the crucial moment, his status of being the leader of a super tribe worked, Ye Lui Sang obtained the help of other Gu Masters.

“There are not many formless hands left, although we have lost many Gu worms, there are so many Gu worms here, we can capture them now and regain our battle strength!” Some Gu Masters suggested.

This suggestion was quickly supported by the other Gu Masters: “We need to work together sincerely, we need to be fast! The wind veil of assimilation is getting thicker, it is spreading and the space in here will continue to shrink.”

Hei Lou Lan looked at the unconscious Tai Bai Yun Sheng, walking over: “The wind veil of assimilation is not something us mortals can deal with, to escape with our lives, we need Ancestor Giant Sun’s strength!”

Everyone was silent.

Above them, in the air, Fang Yuan and Giant Sun’s will were engaging in fierce combat, at times, furious growls and shouting could be heard.

Be it Fang Yuan or Giant Sun’s will’s terrifying battle strength, everyone was scared, they subconsciously avoided those two and did not want to interfere in the battle of these two top experts.

But Hei Lou Lan’s words were extremely true.

Relying on the mortal Gu that they subdue, no matter how many they have, they cannot break the wind veil of assimilation.

Hei Lou Lan asked again: “Don’t worry, how can this scoundrel be Ancestor Giant Sun’s match? Can’t you see that ancestor is having the upper hand all along?”

Everyone’s eyes were shining. The battle situation was very visible in the sky, everyone could clearly tell what was happening.

Hei Lou Lan changed the direction of the conversation: “Although ancestor has the upper hand, he cannot turn the advantage into victory. The root of the problem is that ancestor’s immortal essence has been completely taken by that scoundrel, ancestor has over a dozen Immortal Gu, but he cannot use any of them.”

Everyone nodded, they agreed with Hei Lou Lan’s analysis.

Ye Lui Sang asked: “Then what do we do next?”

Hei Lou Lan laughed heartily, displaying Tai Bai Yun Sheng in his hands: “I have captured this old thief, he is that guy’s senior brother, they share a tight bond. Our ability is limited, we can only try to help old ancestor. My suggestion is still the same, we should capture Gu worms first to increase our strength! In order to cooperate well, we should report all of the Gu worms that we have now! I will start.”

Gu Masters were normally very secretive about the Gu worms that they owned.

This was important information, once it was exposed, others could use it against them and they might lose their lives.

However, this was a special circumstance where their lives were about to be lost.

Thus, everyone could only do this to increase the hopes of their survival.

Hei Lou Lan was a natural leader and had a fierce reputation, as he took the lead to expose his own Gu worms, the remaining Gu Masters followed along and Hei Lou Lan was able to recruit these people into his force once again.

Hei Lou Lan had great ambitions.

He wanted to ascend to immortal and needed a strength path Immortal Gu for it, thus he needed to rely on Giant Sun’s will. These people were the pawns that he needed to fulfill his ambition.

In the sky, the battle was already at its climax.

“I’ve caught you!” Fang Yuan howled, pouncing down as his six arms that were tougher than steel grabbed the sword made of Giant Sun’s will at lightning speed.

But Giant Sun’s will instantly split apart, Fang Yuan’s long awaited counterattack only destroyed a bit of his thoughts.

“Damn it!” Fang Yuan cursed, Giant Sun’s will could split and gather together, it was agile beyond belief, Fang Yuan did not have methods to deal with him, thus most of the time he could only be a punching bag without any feasible counterattacks, he did not manage to make any progress.

“Sigh, if there is no other choice, we can only undergo a drawn out battle.” Mo Yao’s will said: “Giant Sun’s will has no source of energy, during the battle, he needs to think, that will accelerate the collision of his thoughts and thus the expenditure of them.”

Fang Yuan was concentrating on the fight while denying Mo Yao’s suggestion: “We cannot afford to drag this on! Don’t forget six arm heavenly zombie king’s weakness, it can only be used for thirty minutes. Once that time passes, the backlash of the killer move would make me a zombie. If I completely turn into six arm heavenly zombie king form, the entire body would be zombified and both my apertures including my immortal aperture would lose all life force, my cultivation will be cut off from advancing further!”

Mo Yao retorted: “You underestimate yourself, don’t forget that you are a strength path Gu Immortal, the essence of your life has undergone a qualitative change. Thus, the time that you can use the killer move has also been extended, it is far from thirty minutes. My rough estimate is that you have about an hour in length!”

“Even so, we cannot delay this, don’t forget that the wind veil of assimilation is getting thicker, shrinking the space in here. My methods cannot counter the special will, does your Water Pavilion have any methods?” Fang Yuan asked.

Mo Yao heaved a long sigh: “Although Water Pavilion is a rank seven Immortal Gu House, it is not skilled at attacking, but rather, its ability lies in concealment and movement. Most importantly, my main body only left behind twenty or so beads of red date immortal essence. After sustaining the Immortal Gu House’s operations over the years, there are only five left. If you want to use Water Pavilion to turn this around, you should dispel this thought! Watch out!!”

Mo Yao suddenly alerted, but it was too late.

Giant Sun’s will feigned an attack and attracted most of Fang Yuan’s attention, but it suddenly made a turn and got behind him, attacking brutally.

Fang Yuan vomited out a mouthful of green zombie blood, his eight eagle wings were smashed to bits, and his spine was completely shattered, his back was caved in and his chest was caving out of his body.

The intense force caused him to descend rapidly.

Fang Yuan quickly mobilized his Gu worm, attempting to fly into the sky.

But why would Giant Sun’s will give him this chance?

It would beat the dog while it was down, the golden rainbow coiled around Fang Yuan as it attacked. Fang Yuan raised his eight arms to cover his whole body while curling up and was barely able to protect himself.

Giant Sun’s will changed shape freely, slashing, cutting, slamming, piercing, all sorts of attacks caused Fang Yuan’s eight arms to be destroyed, the six arm heavenly zombie king’s body was tattered as there were many injuries on him from the front to back.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan had turned into six arm heavenly zombie king form, otherwise with his human body, he would have already had a tragic death.

Fighting with Giant Sun’s will gave Fang Yuan great pressure, only by using six arm heavenly zombie king non-stop could he barely keep up.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 641: Fang Yuan vs Giant Sun’s will (2/2)

Fang Yuan had, just a moment ago, conversed with Mo Yao’s will and these few sentences were exchanged at lightning speed. Unfortunately, Giant Sun’s will noticed this tiny moment and attacked at the point when Fang Yuan was slightly distracted.

Giant Sun’s will had incredible methods at controlling the fight, he was even stronger than Fang Yuan at grasping battle opportunities!

Bam!

A loud bang.

Fang Yuan crashed on the ground harshly, rocks were sent flying and the ground was shaking slightly.

Giant Sun’s will followed closely after.

Adding salt to the wound!

It turned into a golden sword again, the blade was extremely sharp and fast, it stabbed after leaving a golden trail in the air.

Fang Yuan had no way to resist, at the crucial moment, Mo Yao’s will manipulated Water Pavilion and turned it back into a liquid armor, preserving Fang Yuan’s life.

Giant Sun’s will stabbed again and again, causing huge ripples to appear on the liquid armor.

“Quick, quickly stand up!” Mo Yao’s will shouted anxiously.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, he used his remaining left arm to support his body off the ground, enduring the strong impact of Giant Sun’s will’s as he stood up.

“It is useless, you cannot kill me. I have stored all of your own, Giant Sun’s, immortal essence in my immortal aperture! Hahaha.” Fang Yuan laughed crazily, attempting to break Giant Sun’s will’s fighting spirit.

But his words caused it to become even more furious.

The attacks became faster, he was stabbing at several times the original frequency!

Crack crack crack...

Because he had exceeded his limit, Giant Sun’s will’s thoughts were destroying themselves too.

But because of the furious attacks, the liquid armor could not defend against it, occasionally, the sword would pierce through.

Fang Yuan laughed unceasingly, as he protected his brain. In addition, as long as his mind was protected, he would not be invaded by Giant Sun’s will, he did not care how many times his organs were stabbed.

The liquid armor was pierced through continuously, but also recovered rapidly. Emitting a blue glow, Fang Yuan’s body was nourished as his injuries healed.

“Quickly dodge, at this rate, my immortal essence is expending too rapidly!” Mo Yao’s will reminded him frantically.

“No! This is a rare chance!! We have to endure it!” Fang Yuan refused, standing at the same spot enduring the frantic attacks of Giant Sun’s will: “Even if your immortal essence is used up, you can lend Water Pavilion to me, I still have over twenty green grape immortal essence beads! Giant Sun’s will went crazy, he is doing something very stupid, that is to consume his own thoughts for strong attacks. At this rate, the amount of thoughts he destroys would surpass the damage I have been dealing to him.”

“This...” Mo Yao’s will went into deep hesitation.

The two were expending resources intensively, falling into a stalemate.

“Should we go and assist old ancestor?” Gu tribe leader Gu Guo Long asked.

While Fang Yuan was fighting Giant Sun’s will, Hei Lou Lan led everyone and captured many Gu worms, they had recovered their battle strength.

The reason they were able to capture Gu worms so easily was because there were still many Gu worms inside the wind veil, meanwhile, the number of formless hands was decreasing.

With Gu worms in their possession, they were no longer scared.

In addition, because they saw that Fang Yuan was on the ground taking hits from Giant Sun’s will, not just Gu Guo Long, the other Gu Masters were also moved and wanted to go in and fight.

Hei Lou Lan was silent, watching the surroundings.

The wind veil of assimilation continued to spread, the wind walls getting thicker as the space inside was unceasingly being squeezed between.

Out of their survival instincts, Gu worms could only fly inwards. Thus, the density of Gu worms became even higher, they were all over the place.

In fact, sometimes, a Gu Master only needed to stretch out his hand and grab beside him to capture a Gu worm.

Crack crack...

On the ground below, cracks started forming, this was a sign that the area was collapsing.

Far away.

A huge spherical light halo was created again.

Wisdom Gu, which had been sent flying by Giant Sun’s will earlier, seemed to have sensed the danger of extermination as it exerted all of its strength to defy its fate, preventing other existences from getting near it.

All this showed that: There was not much time left!

Hei Lou Lan decided not to wait anymore, he nodded and shouted: “Everyone listen to my command, we will attack together, do not cause internal conflict and weaken our offensive!”

Everyone nodded, their expressions were serious.

To them, killing Fang Yuan was the same as surviving this crisis.

However, just when Hei Lou Lan and the others were about to strike, Giant Sun’s will suddenly laughed loudly: “Fang Yuan, you have fallen into my trap!”

Saying this, he retreated quickly.

Wills had almost no mass, he retreated as he liked, taking a huge number of steps back in the blink of an eye.

“What?” Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, he saw a formless hand grabbing at him.

He shouted in shock: “Seven fingered formless hand!”

It turns out, when Giant Sun’s will was pretending to fight with Fang Yuan, even using self-destruction to lure Fang Yuan into tanking the hits, his frenzied attacks were only to attract all of Fang Yuan’s attention, to obscure his vision so that this formless hand could be lured over.

In the wind veil, although there were decreasing numbers of formless hands, a large number of them still remained.

Giant Sun’s will lacked immortal essence, he could not use Immortal Gu, but he had never relied on Hei Lou Lan and the others, his plan was to use the external force called formless hands.

He split out a small portion of his will, carrying several Immortal Gu to attract the formless hand.

The formless hand was faster than Giant Sun’s will, Giant Sun’s will thus split up into ten wills that carried Immortal Gu each at regular intervals. Once the formless hand got near, he would destroy the Immortal Gu!

The formless hand did not have any gains, after feeling the aura of the next Immortal Gu, it would go over.

This way, after Giant Sun’s will lost eight Immortal Gu, the formless hand was finally lured over.

“Quickly dodge it!” Mo Yao’s will screamed.

“It’s too late!!” Fang Yuan had already darted away, simultaneously activating eagle rise Gu. But it was no use, he needed time to accelerate, but the formless hand had already arrived.

At the moment of life and death, Mo Yao’s will sighed gloomily, she suddenly activated Water Pavilion and had it leave Fang Yuan, crashing towards the seven fingered formless hand.

The seven fingered formless hand grabbed, and immediately took away the rank seven Immortal Gu that formed part of Water Pavilion, water harmony Gu, away.

Water Pavilion was a rank seven Immortal Gu House, it was made up of over three thousand Gu worms, each of the Gu worms were interlinked and connected to each other.

Their core was the rank seven water harmony Immortal Gu.

Other than that, there were two supporting Immortal Gu, the rank six movement Immortal Gu Worldly Wave Trace, and the wisdom path Immortal Gu Delight in Water and Mountain.

Right now, the one and only core, water harmony Immortal Gu, was taken away by the formless hand, Water Pavilion broke down immediately!

“Hahaha, let’s see what you can use to block me now!” Giant Sun’s will laughed continuously, he paid a huge price and obtained the result he wanted to see.

The formless fist carried the water harmony Gu and flew into the sky.

“Quickly destroy it!” Mo Yao’s will screamed, the remainder of the over three thousand Gu worms carried red date immortal essence as they floated around Fang Yuan.

Without her reminder, Fang Yuan had already begun to do that.

He used all of his movement Gu, chasing the formless fist and attacking fiercely.

Giant Sun’s will snorted, blocking them.

“We will strike too!” Hei Lou Lan and the others saw the good chance and came to join in, attempting to thwart Fang Yuan’s plans.

“You’ve come at the right time!!” Giant Sun’s will praised loudly, he changed his battle tactic and stopped blocking Fang Yuan, turning into a bright rainbow and attacking him instead.

Fang Yuan was faced with the Gu Masters’ attacks, but he did not mind it, he could use six arm heavenly zombie king to resist them.

But Giant Sun’s will’s attacks were very threatening to him.

Giant Sun’s will did not block Fang Yuan at all, his battle tactic was — go ahead and chase it, I’ll let you! In the process of chasing it, I will kill you!

Water Pavilion was broken apart, Mo Yao’s will could no longer provide him any defense.

Fang Yuan got into an even more dangerous situation, Hei Lou Lan and the others’ attacks were troublesome, they hindered his speed.

Pop!

Giant Sun’s will slammed, turning into a monk’s spade as he changed directions, cutting the Gu worms circulating around Fang Yuan into two segments.

“Oh no, my red date immortal essence!” Mo Yao was caught off guard, not only were many Gu worms destroyed by Giant Sun’s will, the red date immortal essence was taken by Giant Sun’s will.

There were already few red date immortal essence left, now they were completely gone, Mo Yao was stunned.

“Mo Yao, I’ll open my aperture, quickly come in!!” Fang Yuan shouted, retreating rapidly at the same time.

The technique of Giant Sun’s will was ongoing and he could not give chase immediately, Fang Yuan was able to pull some distance.

He snorted, flying over quickly in pursuit.

During this time, Mo Yao’s will moved the remaining Immortal Gu and together with them entered Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

“Quickly lend worldly wave trace Gu to me!” Fang Yuan urged.

Mo Yao’s will did not hesitate at all, shouting: “Since I have no immortal essence left anyway, I’ll lend these Gu to you.”

Although Fang Yuan had obtained many Immortal Gu earlier, he did not have time to refine them, he could only suppress them with his will.

There were only two Gu he did not suppress with his will, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s Man as Before and Landscape as Before.

It was a pity that he did not obtain Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s permission, thus Fang Yuan could not use them.

After obtaining Mo Yao’s agreement, Fang Yuan immediately used the rank six Immortal Gu.

He shouted while using one bead of green grape immortal essence, activating Worldly Wave Trace.

This Gu was like a jellyfish, it was the size of a baby’s fist, wrapping around the green grape immortal essence as it consumed it.

Swoosh!

A huge wave appeared below Fang Yuan’s feet, bringing Fang Yuan away at rapid speed, pulling distance away from Giant Sun’s will.

Worldly Wave Trace was a rank six Immortal Gu. Although Fang Yuan was not a water path Gu Immortal, he had rank six cultivation and could activate it fully.

Giant Sun’s will was stunned, this was the first time Fang Yuan was able to shrug him off since the battle began.

But he was merely slightly shocked, snickering immediately after: “If this was the outside world, I would be helpless against you. But inside this wind veil of assimilation, the space is becoming more limited. Go ahead and run, as time passes, I will eventually catch you! Give up on struggling, you destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and ruined Imperial Court blessed land, and you still want to leave? Hmph, don’t think of the impossible, you are dead meat!”

“Don’t worry, if I die, I will drag all of you with me, don’t think of leaving unscathed!” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, his green face and sharp fangs made him look extremely vile and ruthless.

“Then come and battle, don’t run away if you have the guts!” Although Giant Sun’s will could not catch up to Fang Yuan, he chased behind with menacing killing intent.

Fang Yuan did not dare to fight it!

He did not have Water Pavilion to protect his brain, once he exposes a weakness in battle, Giant Sun’s will would invade his mind.

By then, he would fall into confusion again and be unable to think. He would be meat on the chopping block, without any way to fight back.

However, Giant Sun’s will’s earlier words were not wrong.

As the wind veil of assimilation spreads, the space would get smaller. Eventually, it would become small to the extent where Fang Yuan cannot dodge, and would be killed by Giant Sun’s will.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 642: Thirty-Eight Sealing Arts

“Giant Sun, I admit your power. But don’t forget that all of your Giant Sun’s immortal essence is in my immortal aperture. Without any immortal essence, how will you use Immortal Gu? You have no chance of breaking through the wind veil of assimilation just by relying on your special will!” Fang Yuan’s thoughts were racing as he attempted to negotiate with Giant Sun’s will.

“Want to negotiate? Hahaha!” Giant Sun’s will laughed loudly, not concealing the hatred within, “Why would I negotiate with you? Won’t it be the same if I kill you and seize the immortal essence back from your immortal aperture? Why don’t you try to destroy the immortal essence, you might even succeed.”

Giant Sun’s will was self-confident.

It was not that the immortal essence could not be destroyed, but at the moment it was not possible.

If Fang Yuan destroyed the immortal essence in his own immortal aperture, the foreign immortal essence would inflict serious harm to his immortal aperture; this would be the same as seeking his own doom!

If he destroyed the immortal essence outside his body, the scattered immortal essence aura would instead help Giant Sun’s will to activate Immortal Gu.

“Fang Yuan, I won’t compromise. You can’t fight me and can’t escape either. What can you still do? Just let it be, die quickly!” Giant Sun’s will taunted while chasing.

Fang Yuan did not respond and only concentrated on fleeing.

As time passed, the wind veil of assimilation was creeping closer; it made no sound, but it devoured everything in its path, assimilating everything.

The space Fang Yuan could flee to was shrinking. As Giant Sun’s will intercepted his paths, Fang Yuan was facing great dangers all around him.

“Giant Sun’s will, I will stand here, do you dare to come?” Fang Yuan suddenly stood still and stopped using worldly wave trace Immortal Gu.

Giant Sun’s will, however, stopped chasing; they were still hundreds of steps afar, but it did not dare to move closer.

“Hmph, I already expected you would make such a choice.” He scoffed in disdain, “But so what? You are only delaying your death by a few moments. I will watch as you die!”

The area Fang Yuan was standing on was the area covered by the light of wisdom.

The light of wisdom was the bane of Giant Sun’s will; Giant Sun’s will could only stop its chase.

Through this intense battle, its remaining will was only the volume of an adult man, and could no longer endure any more severe exhaustion.

“Fang Yuan, your lifespan!!” Mo Yao’s will warned.

“There is no other way, tell me, what else can I do in this situation?” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, his tone filled with hatred and extreme helplessness.

Standing in the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan could clearly feel his lifespan was decreasing unceasingly, but he did not have any other choice. Giant Sun’s will hated him to the extreme and gave him no chance to make compromises.

“Sigh...” Mo Yao’s will heaved a long sigh, “This is simply a struggle at death’s door. Perhaps wisdom Gu might stop sending out the light of wisdom in the next moment.”

Fang Yuan was silent.

Giant Sun’s will suddenly shouted to Hei Lou Lan’s group: “Go deal with this thief! Most of his defensive Gu have already perished in our fight! Force him nearer to wisdom Gu where the light of wisdom is much stronger; his life span will be used up even faster. Let me see how much lifespan he can waste!!”

Hei Lou Lan’s group accepted the order immediately.

Even Hei Lou Lan with his Great Strength True Martial Physique did not want to fight Fang Yuan in close combat.

They had long ago discussed as appropriate and right now, all of them used long range attacks.

Inside the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan gave a cold snort and used his Gu to counterattack with his own long range attacks while maintaining defensive Gu.

Four to five layers of light barriers covered his body, tens of bone shields hovered around him, and occasionally, stone barriers emerged from the ground to shield him from the attacks of Hei Lou Lan’s group.

Ordinary defensive mortal Gu were not of much use against Giant Sun’s will. But they were still effective in dealing with these mortal Gu Masters.

Fang Yuan cultivated strength path and was not specialized in long range battle. However, he had no shortage of long range attacking Gu worms, it was only that they did not follow a proper fighting system.

More importantly, he had unlimited primeval essence. Thus, he was not at any disadvantage and the situation was even many times better compared to when he fought with Giant Sun’s will.

“Speed up the attacks, don’t stop for even a moment! Even if he has unlimited primeval essence, mortal Gu cannot be activated non-stop!” Hei Lou Lan shouted.

“Right! Mortal Gu are not Immortal Gu and have a limit to what they can endure, activating them unceasingly will only cause them to collapse.” Ye Lui Sang also added.

They were tribe leaders of Hei tribe and Ye Lui tribe, they understood the situation deeply.

Gu were the essence of heaven and earth, carriers of the Great Dao. Essentially, they were tools.

Every tool has their own respective usage. The more they were used, and when the burden on them crosses the limit, they will start breaking down.

When mortal Gu Masters used mortal Gu, they could only activate the Gu worms a few times because of the limitations in primeval essence, thus this flaw was not too evident. When Gu Immortals activated mortal Gu, this issue would become conspicuous.

However, after some time, Hei Lou Lan’s group’s hopes came to nothing.

“Why does he have so many Gu worms?” Someone shouted in an incredulous tone.

The quantity of Fang Yuan’s Gu worms surpassed their imagination. During the course of the fight, he switched Gu worms one after another as if it was very natural and effortless.

“Even if he has a mysterious origin and made prior preparations for Gu Immortal advancement, preparing many mortal Gu, a mortal aperture is not able to hold so many Gu.” No one could explain this no matter what they thought of and were bewildered.

“Could it be...” Giant Sun’s will recalled the scene of Fang Yuan opening a stargate.

Fang Yuan had opened a stargate within Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, thus Giant Sun’s will knew it clearly.

“It seems he relied on that gateway to leave Imperial Court blessed land and obtained significant support!” Giant Sun’s will was very experienced and knowledgeable, immediately realizing the usage of the stargate when it thought of hole earth Gu and connecting heaven Gu.

It was thanks to Fang Yuan having Hu Immortal blessed land behind him that he was able to purchase large numbers of mortal Gu from treasure yellow heaven.

Although he had given most of them to Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he had also left many for himself.

Fang Yuan’s naturally cautious nature of being prepared for anything had paid off at this moment.

“Hmph, you borrowed external strength. Unfortunately, your opponent is me!” Giant Sun’s will gave a cold snort before suddenly making a move.

He pierced the air at lightning speed.

He did not move into the light of wisdom but shot towards the Gu worms.

Several breaths later, he appeared above Hei Lou Lan’s group and dropped a large group of mortal Gu.

“Take it. I am going to impart a killer move to you!” Giant Sun’s will split itself into a dozen or so parts which covered the Gu worms and directly moved into everyone’s apertures.

Every person received thirty-eight Gu.

These mortal Gu had already been refined by Giant Sun’s will.

Under the coordination of Giant Sun’s will, the group was able to immediately refine the Gu worms and learn the killer move through the directions of the special will.

“This killer move!” Hei Lou Lan’s group showed expressions of joy and shock when they comprehended the killer move.

“It is just a small trick my main body created when I had inspiration during my leisure time, I have not given it name yet.” Giant Sun’s will said in a light tone, “Now is a good time to use it, for the time being let’s call it Thirty-Eight Sealing Arts.”

Hei Lou Lan’s group immediately activated the killer move, breathing out rays of purple light qi from their mouths.

Fang Yuan’s eyes narrowed and he immediately dodged them.

But he had limited space and the purple light qi mixed in with other attacks, as such he was still struck.

“So it was like this, this killer move’s effect is this...” Fang Yuan’s expression changed slightly.

Thirty-eight sealing arts was targeted against Gu worms.

This concept was not unusual. A Gu Master’s battle strength came mostly from their Gu worms, thus many Gu worms targeted this point like rank four problem nipped in the bud Gu, or rank five pitch black Gu.

However, this killer move, thirty-eight sealing arts, was much stronger than pitch black Gu. It could contaminate moves that were used by a Gu Master, and all the Gu worms used for it would be sealed one after another.

This killer move naturally could not seal Immortal Gu. And as for mortal Gu, the higher the rank of the Gu, the shorter the duration of the seal.

But it could seal them completely, and the Gu worms that formed this killer move were mostly ordinary and could be easily gathered. It touched upon qi path and even if an attacking Gu was used, it could follow the qi back to the source, sealing the Gu.

This was an exceptional killer move which particularly suited the current situation.

After Fang Yuan was struck, his defensive Gu were sealed successively.

The stone barriers were pervaded by the purple light qi, the stone barrier shield Gu were immediately sealed. The white bone shields hovering around Fang Yuan were also shrouded in the purple light qi, falling down one after another, turning back into flying bone shield Gu.

The windblades Fang Yuan attacked with were touched by purple light qi and even if the corresponding wind blade Gu were inside his aperture, the Gu worms would be covered by a faint layer of dense purple qi and be sealed.

Historically, sealing defensive Gu was easy while sealing attacking Gu was difficult all because defensive Gu were easier to attack. But thirty-eight sealing arts could deal with both equally.

Fang Yuan’s Gu worm quantity decreased the more he used them.

He already did not have a lot of defensive Gu and could not forcibly resist the purple light qi, only able to dodge and evade all over the place.

But there was only so much space, he would sooner or later run out of space to run to.

At this moment, Fang Yuan took the initiative to attack the purple light qi. He would rather more of his attacking Gu be sealed, he required defensive Gu to protect his whole body.

Once the purple light qi touched his six arm heavenly zombie king form, who is to say it might not seal the corresponding Gu worms and break the killer move six arm heavenly zombie king.

Soon, Fang Yuan’s offensive started becoming sparser as he was suppressed into disadvantage by the crowd of Gu Masters.

“Kill, kill this demon!” Ye Lui Sang shouted excitedly and sent out hundreds of fireballs; the fireballs detonated in an intense explosion with dust and dirts flying everywhere. Fang Yuan dodged here and there but he was still struck by the explosions, his skin and flesh were torn open.

“You demon, you are guilty of the most heinous crimes, you went as far as daring to topple True Yang Building! We ended up in this state all because of you!” Gu Guo Long shouted furiously, throwing out endless wind blades that were as sharp as knives and could also chase the target, new cuts were formed on Fang Yuan’s body.

Rays of purple light qi were also constantly sent out now and then.

These surviving Gu Masters, more than ten in number, gritted their teeth with eyes filled with fury; they wished they could eat Fang Yuan’s flesh and drink his blood!

They had painstakingly fought in many battlefields and taken huge risks to arrive at Imperial Court blessed land. It was supposed to have been an enormous opportunity, but they ended up in this plight, almost all of their tribesmen, relatives and friends were dead.

The disparity from the beginning to the end was too large, it could easily be imagined how much hatred and anger they felt towards the main cause of this disaster.

“You will die a dog’s death today, this is your end for offending Ancestor Giant Sun!” One Gu Master did not forget to flatter Giant Sun’s will. It was a pity Giant Sun’s will was not human and his expression could not be seen.

He only reminded everyone: Do not cause harm to wisdom Gu no matter what!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 643: Final Trump Card

Giant Sun’s will was too strong.

Not just his battle strength, but also his deep foundation.

It inherited some of the Immortal Venerable’s experience, just a killer move created out of boredom drove Fang Yuan into a desperate state again.

“Damn it, is it time to use Spring Autumn Cicada again?” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, a thought arising in his mind.

The first aperture was filled with pressure, the surface of the aperture walls was covered with cracks resembling a spider’s web.

Spring Autumn Cicada floated in the center, as yellow and green lights flickered on the cicada’s body.

Fang Yuan was not ignorant, the aperture had obviously reached its limits, it could break the very next second!

But he quickly dispelled the thought of using Spring Autumn Cicada.

More and more of his Gu worms were being sealed, his firepower was weakening, Fang Yuan was starting to take hits passively.

“Come on, why don’t you strike back!” The Gu Masters laughed maniacally.

“Are you afraid now? Come out and fight if you have the guts!” Someone laughed coldly.

“You demon, this is your deserved fate, go and die!” Someone cursed.

Seeing Fang Yuan suppressed by them, they felt unbelievable joy.

Suddenly, Mo Yao’s will’s frantic voice resounded in Fang Yuan’s mind again: “Oh no! Fang Yuan, zombie speckles are showing up on your body. The death energy is starting to invade your body. If the speckles spread over your whole body, you will turn into a six arm heavenly zombie king for real!”

An even worse situation had arrived.

The estimated hour limit had not been reached, but Fang Yuan was already starting to become a zombie.

A body that is zombified will be completely immersed in death energy, they cannot return to normal.

Unless he removed the six arm heavenly zombie king killer move now, the zombie speckles would continue to spread.

“No, once I stop using the killer move, Giant Sun’s will would attack. At this distance, I would not be able to react!” Fang Yuan shook his head, his expression turning solemn.

Although he had defensive Gu, these mortal Gu were not worth mentioning in front of Giant Sun’s will.

Only six arm heavenly zombie king could allow Fang Yuan to hold his own.

Right now, although Giant Sun’s will had not entered the wisdom halo, that was only because the price to pay was too great for a small gain.

Giant Sun’s will was definitely capable of making sacrifices.

To attract a seven fingered formless hand, he lost eight Immortal Gu!

“If I cancel the killer move now, Giant Sun’s will would go all out and kill me regardless of the sacrifice. Once I die, he would take back the immortal essence of Giant Sun, I cannot take this risk!” Fang Yuan’s attitude was firm.

“But, your body...” Mo Yao’s tone was hesitant, sounding worried.

Fang Yuan was unmoved, his expression was determined.

The zombie speckles continued to spread, there was only a dot on his back at first, but now almost his entire back was covered.

The speed of spreading was getting faster, soon, Fang Yuan’s chest turned black.

The Gu Masters saw this and were shocked.

Giant Sun’s will laughed heartily: “So this is it, you have turned into a zombie for too long, the balance of life and death energy had been broken, now that the death energy is invading you, you will turn into a real zombie, a member of the living dead, a monster that is neither human nor a ghost, your cultivation will be stagnant forever!!”

Giant Sun’s will had great experience and knowledge, he understood Fang Yuan’s situation immediately.

The Gu Masters felt a surge in morale, some laughed heartily: “Hahaha, persisting in evil brings about self-destruction, demon, you have committed too many wicked deeds, this terrible end is brought about entirely by yourself!”

“Even without us attacking now, you are finished! Hmph, members of the demonic path crave strength and disregard all else, you have finally experienced the painful consequences now. What a pity, even if you became an immortal luckily, you still became a zombie, a monster!”

“This is the result of you toying with evil schemes and causing harm to everyone, being enemies with Ancestor Giant Sun, and with us of the righteous path!”

Mo Yao’s will urged as well: “Fang Yuan, the price to pay is too huge. In my opinion, Giant Sun’s will might not necessarily attack, it does not have much strength left. You have great talent and ability, you should not end up like this! It is not too late to stop now, once you turn into a six arm heavenly zombie king for real, it will be far too difficult to revert back to being a human!”

Fang Yuan’s gaze was shining, his emotions were in turbulence, as his expression was changing.

But eventually, his gritted teeth did not loosen.

He turned into a six arm heavenly zombie king completely!

The speckles turned his body black, in the strength path immortal aperture, the bright and clear heaven and earth turned into an eerie dark color, white stone mountains collapsed one after another. The sky was dark grey and the land was rotting, there was not a trace of life energy.

Meanwhile, in the first aperture, it was deathly silent too. The purple crystal aperture walls no longer had the crystal clear appearance, they looked like grey rocks.

But precisely because of this, Spring Autumn Cicada's pressure was no longer so threatening.

Right after becoming a Gu Immortal, he degraded into a zombie! All his past accumulations, all his achievements, all turned into nothing.

From this point on, his cultivation could not advance in the slightest!

Without any potential to progress, in this regard, Fang Yuan was worse off than a mortal.

Even with Fang Yuan's iron will, he felt a bit of desolation.

The thought of using Spring Autumn Cicada appeared in his head once more –"If I use Spring Autumn Cicada and restart everything, I will be able to quickly retreat and avoid this terrible situation to the best of my ability!"

But Fang Yuan forcefully suppressed this thought.

The wind veil of assimilation was very close now, without any sound from the wind, it spread silently, compressing the space and bringing an immense mental pressure to all at the scene.

Fang Yuan observed everyone from afar, suddenly doing something shocking – he stopped the activation of all his Gu.

He had completely become a six arm heavenly zombie king, he did not need to use Gu worms to activate it.

As the purple light qi hit him, this move, thirty-eight sealing arts, had no effect.

As long as Fang Yuan did not activate his Gu worms, the purple light qi would not be able to follow the qi within and trace it back to the source, sealing the Gu worms.

Everyone was stunned, even Giant Sun's will gasped lightly.

But next, the Gu Masters erupted with fierce momentum.

"Kill, kill this demon!"

"He stopped using his Gu worms right in front of us, he is courting death!"

Everyone shouted, screamed, and yelled with their lungs.

Fang Yuan retreated step by step, using the six arm heavenly zombie king's defense and recovery speed to endure the attacks.

"Be careful, don't hit the wisdom Gu!" Seeing that Fang Yuan was getting close to wisdom Gu, Hei Lou Lan quickly gave a reminder.

The Gu Masters controlled their firepower, no longer unleashing flashy attacks, but aiming more precisely at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan's appearance was nothing like before, his chest was blown open, his bones were broken, and his intestines were smashed.

He had no choice but to turn around, with his back facing everyone and using it to endure the intense attacks.

Bam!

A bolt of lightning struck Fang Yuan’s back.

An intense force slammed him to the ground.

From behind him, cheering could be heard: “Hahaha, I beat him! This newly caught Gu is not bad, it should be the rank five thunder hammer Gu.”

Fang Yuan crawled up in difficulty.

His back was burst open, the injury was coiling with lightning, his spine and bones were exposed to the air.

“Look at my wind path killer move!” Someone shouted.

Swoosh!

A huge wind blade with jagged teeth spun and shot out, making a loop around Fang Yuan’s arm and cutting it off, it fell on the ground.

This person was breathing roughly, almost all his primeval essence had been expended, but his eyes were shining with a ruthless light of excitement.

He shouted; “Did you see, did you see! I took away one of his arms!!”

“Hmph, you made use of that weakness, if the flesh and skin of that area of his arm hadn’t already been fully removed, left with only a segment of his bone, would you be able to cut it off?” Someone scoffed.

The body of six arm heavenly zombie king was strong, but it could not endure such fast paced and strong attacks.

Everyone laughed wildly, they shouted and cheered, torturing Fang Yuan, feeling pride from the heavy injuries they were inflicting on him, competing against each other.

Fang Yuan was defeated time and time again, his tall and muscular body was becoming smaller.

But he got up every time.

Even though he had one out of eight arms remaining, even though he did not have a patch of undamaged skin left, even though his zombie blood was dying the ground, even though his organs were exposed to the air, even though his right shoulder was only left with a pale white shoulder blade.

“Why, to this extent? Why...” Mo Yao’s will sobbed.

Fang Yuan was silent.

“Enough.” Giant Sun’s will suddenly spoke.

The Gu Masters did not dare to disobey him, they stopped attacking.

“At this point, are you still not giving up? Hmph, your attitude is truly worth admiring.” Giant Sun’s will spoke in a milder tone: “Enough, it is not easy for you to reach this extent. Give up, I will give you a chance to surrender, as long as you recognise me as your master, I will allow you to make up for your mistakes.”

“What?!”

“Ancestor Giant Sun is sparing him?”

“Ancestor, please reconsider it.”

Everyone was shocked.

“Surrender?” Fang Yuan scoffed: “Let me consider it.”

Giant Sun’s will continued: “You destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, your sins are unforgivable! I will give you a chance to redeem yourself, after recognising me as your master, you will help me to once again establish Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, that will make up for your sins. When True Yang Building is rebuilt, not only will I grant you freedom, I will even get rid of your zombie status, and teach you the method to regain a human body.”

If someone else heard this, their heart would waver.

Giant Sun’s will gave Fang Yuan a way to live, most importantly, he gave him hope to continue cultivating.

Fang Yuan was silent: “Let me consider.”

Giant Sun’s will laughed plainly: “I will not give you any chance to stall for time. I will count down from ten, you must give me a response. Ten!”

“Fang Yuan, are you really surrendering? Be careful of Giant Sun’s will’s schemes, as long as you get out, and leave the light of wisdom’s range, you will be a fish on his chopping block, subject entirely to his treatment.” Mo Yao’s will worriedly reminded in Fang Yuan’s mind.

Fang Yuan laughed in his heart: “How could I be so stupid as to believe him?”

Next, he sighed: “Oh, to think that I will still have to use my final trump card.”

“You still have a trump card?”

“To speak the truth, I have Spring Autumn Cicada.”

“What? Spring Autumn Cicada! Don’t tell me it’s that seventh ranked Gu among the top ten mystical Gu worms in the world, it can travel upstream along the river of time, returning to the past, that Spring Autumn Cicada which can change history?” Mo Yao’s will screamed.

“That’s right!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 644: Not committing the same mistake again (1/2)

“That’s right!”

Fang Yuan said, as he snickered in his heart, asking Mo Yao’s will: “You’ve been wanting me to use it, haven’t you?”

“Hmm? Fang Yuan, what do you mean? How would I know that you have Spring Autumn Cicada!” Mo Yao’s will stared blankly, before quickly denying it.

“Hehehe...” Fang Yuan laughed: “Oh, Mo Yao, I am a naturally cautious person, I consider situations where I suffer defeat more than those of victory! Thus, from the moment you lurked in my mind, I had already considered the worst possible situation.”

What was the worst possible situation?

“That was the fact that the greatest mystery of me having Spring Autumn Cicada and being reborn is known by you. I would assume, since the first time I entered Water Pavilion, your will had already known this secret, right?”

Mo Yao’s will appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind, she appeared extremely sincere as she shook her head: “Fang Yuan, are you misunderstanding something?”

Fang Yuan ignored her, continuing: “You knew this secret, but you pretended not to know, revealing yourself on your own initiative. Next, you pretended that you had let down Spirit Affinity House, showing a guilty expression as you purposely gave me the mission of returning Water Pavilion to Spirit Affinity House. In truth, this was a red herring.”

“In order to obtain my trust, you truly racked your brains. You created six arm heavenly zombie king for me and taught me ink transformation along with other refinement path killer moves, assisting me in infiltrating True Yang Building, as well as giving me multiple reminders in battle, acting as a strategist. These acts were to lower my wariness. At the same time, you had been changing my thoughts, subconsciously trying to influence my decisions, you had truly insidious intentions!”

Mo Yao’s will raised her voice, showing some displeasure: “Lad, what is wrong with you? You are actually speaking of me in this way, did you hit your head?”

“Hehehe. Mo Yao, you are very impressive, I truly suffered at your hands. Your acting was nearly flawless, I almost believed you. When Giant Sun’s will awakened, you urged me to leave this place, to take Water Pavilion and return to central continent. But at the same time, you were influencing my thoughts, causing me to make the choice of continuing to take risks.”

“When facing Ma Hong Yun, you urged me to help Ma Hong Yun, but on the other hand, you altered my thoughts, triggering my killing intent and summoning my rage and excitement, causing me to impulsively attack Ma Hong Yun and resulting in my black coffin luck increasing. Honestly, under normal circumstances, I would consider the costs and benefits, how could I be so brainless?”

“When I first saw Imperial Court blessed land’s land spirit, Frost Jade Peacock, I learnt about the conditions for ownership. After leaving True Yang Building, I actually recalled some events in my previous life, a certain person... My true nature is not so weak that I would be affected to that extent. All these are the deepest memories of my previous life that have been buried to the depths of my heart. It was all your doing! You struck in secret, and then while my mind was in turmoil, you attempted to look at the memories of my previous life!”

Mo Yao stared with her eyes wide open, her tone was unkind and aggrieved, sounding like the defense of one treated with injustice: “Fang Yuan, all these were your choices, after landing in this state, you are refusing to admit your mistakes, instead, you are blaming it all on me!”

Fang Yuan laughed: “Hahaha, admit my mistakes, of course I admit my mistakes! My foundation is superficial, especially when compared to you or Giant Sun, experience and insight are no longer to my advantage. But do you know what your greatest flaw was?”

Mo Yao’s will snorted, folding her arms in front of her: “Lad, I am going to get angry if you continue speaking like this! All along I have been helping you, is this how you treat your benefactor?”

Fang Yuan did not listen to her, he ignored this and continued speaking: “Your greatest flaw was that you actually sent Water Pavilion to charge at the seven fingered formless hand.”

“The mission you gave me was to return Water Pavilion to Spirit Affinity House.”

“Why was it that at the crucial moment, you gave up on Water Pavilion to protect me?”

“Don’t tell me that during these days of being together, you changed your principles and had started caring for me? Hehe, I can admit my charisma has not reached that level.”

“This is enough to show, the so-called mission you gave me was a red herring!”

Fang Yuan’s voice was plain, but Mo Yao’s will listened to it like it was rumbling thunder.

She sank into silence.

This time, she did not refute him!

Fang Yuan laughed lightly, continuing: “Other than this, you had more flaws. First, you placed Water Pavilion on my body but concealed that fact, evidently you were hiding ill intentions, wanting to control me using this rank seven Immortal Gu House during a crucial moment.”

“Second, if you were truly going to cooperate with me, why would you hide what kind of will you were? This indicates that the moment your type of will was exposed, I would be suspicious of you.”

“Third, you purposely gave me an incorrect timing so that my body would completely turn into that of six arm heavenly zombie king! After I became a zombie, I felt desolation, that was also because of you.”

“Fourth, you played tricks multiple times and secretly influenced my thoughts, making me think of using Spring Autumn Cicada repeatedly. I am a person with a firm will, I do not hesitate, once I decide on a plan, I will execute it without doubt. How could I have this same thought multiple times?”

Fifth, since you had little immortal essence, and I had become a Gu Immortal, why did you not lend me Water Pavilion earlier? Evidently, you had other plans.”

“Hehehe...” Mo Yao’s will laughed loudly, retorting: “Fang Yuan, your words are contradicting yourself. Don’t forget, I was the one who saved your life. If I did not use Water Pavilion, you would’ve been killed by Giant Sun’s will! Now, you are saying that I purposely harmed you, lying about the timing of six arm heavenly zombie king and causing the transformation to be permanent. In this way, I have saved you and harmed you, am I crazy?”

“Of course you are not crazy, in fact, all along you have been very clear-minded! First you harm me, then you save me, all these were part of your plans. Hehe, if I was you, thinking in your perspective, it is not hard to guess your intentions.”

After pausing for a while, Fang Yuan continued: “If I was a will and had remained in this world for ten thousand years, after my main body was already dead and my lover was also dead after a failed tribulation, at this point, when I see the Spring Autumn Cicada, what would I think?”

“The answer is obvious, I would naturally want to make use of the Spring Autumn Cicada and travel back in time! Spring Autumn Cicada’s effect is to sacrifice everything that the Gu Master has, merely preserving their consciousness in the Gu. At the crucial moment, I would sneak into the Spring Autumn Cicada and destroy the Gu Master’s will, replacing him and going back to the past to revive myself, altering history and changing my fate!”

Fang Yuan had a sound analysis, he exuded self confidence and an extraordinary attitude.

Mo Yao’s will’s pupils shrunk, she fell into silence again.

Fang Yuan continued: “However, for you to fulfill this goal, there were many difficulties, mainly, there were two big obstacles.”

“Firstly, you are just a will, no matter what kind of will you were, you cannot use most Gu worms on your own. Spring Autumn Cicada is not only such a case, it needs even more. It needs the Gu Master to self-detonate, using their essence, flesh, and all other Gu worms as sacrifices to become the driving force to propel the Gu Master back to the past. The stronger the fuel, the further into the past it can return.”

“Secondly, Spring Autumn Cicada is my Gu worm, my vital Gu in fact, it is not ordinary. You are not a formless hand, you cannot take it away from me by force. I had also found many wisdom path Gu worms, and can create many types of wills, thus it was even more difficult for you to snatch it.”

“Therefore, you had no choice but to continue interacting with me and waiting for an opportunity in accordance with the situation. On one hand, you needed to strengthen me and raise my foundation, that way, the force of my self-detonation would create more driving force when activating Spring Autumn Cicada. On the other hand, you needed to create a situation of absolute despair for me, so that I had no choice but to take a major risk, left with no options but to use the Spring Autumn Cicada!”

Saying this, Fang Yuan sighed: “I was vigilant of you earlier, but as you gradually affected my thoughts, I eventually fell for your schemes and arrangements. You influenced me secretly, causing me to take risks time and time again in True Yang Building, and even inducing me to deal with Ma Hong Yun, to deal with Giant Sun’s will, and Hei Lou Lan. Many matters were obviously disadvantageous to me and irrational, but I still acted on impulse time and time again. You caused me to make strong enemies, to create a situation where I would be desperate.”

“But on another hand, you were afraid of going overboard and causing me to die. Thus, at the crucial moment, when my life was at stake, you had to make a move and expose Water Pavilion, in order to help me survive Giant Sun’s will’s fatal blow.”

“Thus, when I was about to be captured by the formless hand, you activated Water Pavilion and crashed into it, you were afraid of it taking away my Spring Autumn Cicada, you were afraid of the Spring Autumn Cicada being exposed.”

The conversation between wills was extremely rapid, even though they had talked a lot.

But after Fang Yuan said that, Mo Yao’s will did not reply for a long time.

It was silence in his mind.

In the outside world, Giant Sun’s will had already counted down to six from ten.

Eventually, Mo Yao broke the silence, clapping as she laughed: “Hehehehe, good, good analysis! You really unravelled the mystery step by step, it was very meticulous and clear. To think that I had planned for such a long time, yet I did not manage to deceive you. I am really amazed by you, lad, even as a reborn person, your talent is simply astounding. If you were born in my time, we might have been good friends, who knows. What a pity, what a pity.”

Fang Yuan had understood everything, this was Mo Yao’s will laying her cards on the table.

Mo Yao’s will could not pretend any further, at this moment, she chose to confess!

Her body was slim and beautiful, a black veil covered her face, even though she was a will, she was like a night lotus silently floating in the dark, she had a graceful bearing and a grand disposition.

As expected of Spirit Affinity House’s thirty-sixth generation fairy, a rank seven Gu Immortal, a refinement path grandmaster. Even though her schemes were exposed, she was not embarrassed or ashamed. Seeing that there was no hopes of continuing her facade, she showed a plain attitude, extremely forthright.

She sighed: “Back then, when my main body took a risk to enter Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, I obtained an inheritance in the true inheritance secluded domain, creating this will of mine with it. I left behind Di Qiu inheritance, on one hand, I was preparing for any accidents, to preserve the chance of refining calamity beckoning Gu. On the other hand, it was a trap targeting Spirit Affinity House. Back then, I had betrayed my sect for Bo Qing, but I did not expect that ten thousand years later, it would be you who came.”

“Actually, back when you refined calamity beckoning Gu, I had already discovered your Spring Autumn Cicada. I am a refinement path grandmaster, I tampered with the Immortal Gu refinement process, the calamity beckoning Gu that you refined already had my will in it. This arrangement was originally meant to target pursuers from Spirit Affinity House, because nobody can stand giving up the chance of refining an Immortal Gu.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 645: Not committing the same mistake again (2/2)

“Just as you said, when I first discovered that you had Spring Autumn Cicada, I was extremely excited, immediately thinking of using Spring Autumn Cicada in order to be reborn. I used calamity beckoning Gu to attract you to Water Pavilion. You refined ten percent of Water Pavilion, that was something I purposely engineered to make you less alert. When you left, I activated Water

Pavilion and hid in the sweat on your skin. But in this aspect, how did you confirm that Water Pavilion was on you from the start?”

“Fang Yuan answered: “This is not hard to guess. You have to ensure my safety, just your will alone is not enough, the rank seven Immortal Gu House Water Pavilion is your strongest safeguard. Secondly, thinking will expend your thoughts, and cause your will to weaken. I made you exert yourself in creating the killer move, but you had never gone into a state of weakness. Next, you contested against Giant Sun’s will in my mind, and even helped to refine the supreme true inheritance of True Yang Building. Furthermore, you were under the light of wisdom, but I did not see your will weakening. The only explanation is Water Pavilion! Your will had always been obtaining replenishment. When I first inspected the Gu worms that made up Water Pavilion, I did not realize it. The most crucial Gu worm is that wisdom path Immortal Gu, delight in water and mountain Gu, right?”

“Hehehe, you are half right.” Mo Yao’s will confessed: “Delight in water and mountain Gu can only create joyful will, but my will is not joyful will, thus I used other Gu worms to convert the joyful will. This will of mine can indeed influence your thoughts, meddling with your lines of thinking and making you act differently to your nature. Am I right to say... you were purposely losing to Giant Sun’s will?”

Fang Yuan laughed: “Giant Sun’s will is indeed strong, but the difference in our battle strengths would not be so absurdly large. When I awakened in shock, I realized that Water Pavilion had already turned into an armor around me, saving my life, at that moment I realized something was wrong. Although I was alert in the past, because of your influence, it gradually vanished.”

“But although I found something amiss, I could not be sure of it. When Giant Sun’s will attacked me in a frenzy, I guessed his tactic. This battlefield is only so big, there are very few outside elements that can influence the battle, why would I not be wary of the formless hands? Thus, I took a risk and went along with his ploy, purposely moving slowly so that the formless hand would attack me. In the end, I obtained proof of your ill intentions!”

“Next, even though Water Pavilion broke apart, I was still afraid of its power. Thus, I coaxed you into entering my immortal aperture, and at the same time, using your Gu worms for fighting. I purposely got hit by many killer moves, and most of the Gu worms that I borrowed from you were sealed as a result. This was to prevent you from having any Gu worms that did not need primeval essence to activate.”

Mo Yao’s will heard this and shook her head, exclaiming: “Fang Yuan, you are too shrewd, the moment you found something wrong, you schemed to this extent, your acting surpassed mine.”

“But there is something I don’t understand.” Fang Yuan asked.

“Oh, what is that?”

“Earlier, I lost fixed immortal travel Immortal Gu to a six fingered formless hand. I know that Fixed Immortal Travel is an Immortal Gu that you really wanted to get rid of, because it affected your plans too much. But how were you so sure that the six fingered formless hand would take away Fixed Immortal Travel, and not other Immortal Gu, least of all Spring Autumn Cicada?”

Mo Yao’s will laughed bitterly: “Lad, I am only a will left behind by the main body for ten thousand years, do you really think I can control the entire situation? Back then, the situation was so chaotic, and at the moment when the formless hand grabbed you, I hesitated, afraid to show Water Pavilion as it would attract your suspicion.”

“But next, after it took Fixed Immortal Travel, I was overjoyed, I quickly interfered with your thoughts, causing you to help Tai Bai Yun Sheng. This delayed some time, and you lost Fixed Immortal Travel.”

Fang Yuan stared blankly: “Your luck is very good.”

Mo Yao shook her head, bitterly smiling: “Back then, I sneaked into True Yang Building and wanted to get my hands on fortune rivalling heaven Gu, releasing it in the end. Since then, my luck had been terrible. Later, when I blocked the seven fingered formless hand for you, my intention was to sacrifice the rank seven calamity beckoning Gu in Water Pavilion, what a pity that the formless hand took the core, water harmony Immortal Gu!”

“If your Spring Autumn Cicada had a mortal’s consciousness, I would’ve struck long ago. Unfortunately, your Gu Immortal will is still inside, and I did not dare to act rashly, only influencing you secretly.”

“When I lurked in your mind, I had been paying attention to your thoughts and had been attempting to read your memories. But after fighting with Giant Sun’s will, I could not split up, all of my will was used to manipulate Water Pavilion to protect your life. Otherwise, I would have noticed when you sensed something amiss. In fact, I would have interfered with your thoughts and made you dismiss this problem.”

“Moreover, I had little immortal essence left, most of it was used to create wills. Your tactic of consuming it was very effective, but if I had five or six more beads of red date immortal essence, the situation would have been very different.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “Sigh, actually, this was not a fair fight. A will alone cannot think as deeply as the main body. Especially when wills have their specialties and would act on those traits. A will is just a will, it cannot replace the main body. If your main body was dealing with me, I would’ve lost long ago. Fairy Mo Yao, you truly live up to your name! With just a will that you left behind, you could reach this stage.”

Fang Yuan sighed continuously, after revealing their cards, he instead started consoling Mo Yao’s will, seemingly forgetting their status as enemies, it was as if he was Mo Yao’s long time friend.

He continued to sigh: “Your plan was really too difficult, it is like walking on a tightrope, you had to be careful of the balance of the situation at all times. If when you schemed against me was prior to now, there was a chance I would have continued being fooled by you. Unfortunately, right before coming to northern plains, I made a similar mistake, and my decree in life is to never commit the same mistake twice!”

Saying so, the image of a young woman dressed in white appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind.

“Actually, it is also thanks to wisdom Gu’s help. Even without using it personally, just by the light halo that it emitted, my thoughts became extremely sharp and I understood many things, thus being able to expose your scheme. As expected of a rank nine Immortal Gu. Hmm, after talking this much, I have a question to ask you, what type of will are you?”

Mo Yao chuckled: “I might as well tell you now. Since you already know my methods, you’ll get the answer sooner or later. In fact, under such circumstances, it is already too late even if you discover my true motive. There is no doubt you will need to use Spring Autumn Cicada to self-detonate! My will is called fake will. Fake and true, truth and lies, fake will can disguise as a person’s thoughts and collide with other thoughts, changing the results of their thinking and influencing a person’s decisions and actions.”

Fang Yuan realized at once: “No wonder I could not find where you were lurking when I checked in my mind. You were disguised as part of my thoughts! But you are wrong on one thing, I will not use Spring Autumn Cicada.”

“Are you sure? Hehehe.” Mo Yao’s will laughed: “Six arm heavenly zombie king was a killer move that I perfected with you. I purposely gave an incorrect estimation and caused your body to turn into a zombie, you no longer have any way to progress. At this point, you have no future. I have been around you for so long, I understand you well, you have no trump cards left.”

“Right now, the wind veil of assimilation is closing in, and you have already lost Fixed Immortal Travel, do you think you can open a stargate here? Don’t be unrealistic! You will be attacked by everyone, even though you purposely acted weaker, your real battle strength is still inferior to Giant Sun’s will. After all, this is not the true inheritance secluded domain. Inside the true inheritance secluded domain, wills and thoughts are suppressed. As for worldly wave trace Immortal Gu, I am not going to lend it to you anymore.”

“Moreover, other than Giant Sun’s will, you still have a huge threat here, that is Hei Lou Lan with the Great Strength True Martial Physique! Rank five peak stage, hehe, think about the force of his self-detonation! Right now, you are only holding on because of the light of wisdom. Hahaha, with so many strong foes, you are at your wits end!”

Mo Yao’s will laughed for a while before her tone became calmer: “You refuse to use Spring Autumn Cicada because you are wary of your black coffin luck. You do not have to be so nervous. Spring Autumn Cicada’s drawback is that it will cause its owner’s luck to become progressively worse. Back then, Red Lotus Demon Venerable was a victim of this. Luck is really strong and influential, no doubt, but it cannot decide everything, it depends on who is facing it. You had so much bad luck, yet with your strength and wisdom, you still managed to get this far. Ma Hong Yun had so much good luck, yet he could not grasp it well, even though he escaped from this place, he would surely fall into the hands of northern plains’ Gu Immortals and become a captive.”

Fang Yuan snickered: “You’ve schemed for this long, I’m sure you’ve made ample preparations, you have the confidence of certain victory. A contest of wills is not my forte, if I self-detonate, that is using my weakness to fight my enemy’s strength, how can I be so stupid?”

Mo Yao also laughed: “To think that you’d have such a timid side. It is a pity, but you are not entirely right. I do intend on using the Spring Autumn Cicada, but it is impossible with your foundation to travel ten thousand years back in time. I plan to find Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s inheritance when travelling upstream in the river of time. Using the power of the inheritance, I would go back to travelling against the current, ten thousand years into the past. Hehehe, don’t you want to see what Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s inheritance looks like?”

Mo Yao said something shocking, she actually knew of Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s secret inheritance ground.

But Fang Yuan gave no response, he was silent.

Outside, Giant Sun’s will finally counted down from “ten” to “one”.

“It seems you are still very stubborn, you want to resist to the end!” Seeing that Fang Yuan did not surrender, Giant Sun’s will said this in a deep and low tone.

“This demon deserves nothing less than death! Ancestor Giant Sun had granted him mercy, giving him a chance to turn over a new leaf, yet he is still refusing to change!” Ye Lui Sang shouted, yet in the depths of his heart he felt eased.

“Kill, kill this demon. Cut his head off and make it our urine flask!”

“Today, we will exterminate a menace of society!” Everyone was riled up.

“Oh no, the wind veil of assimilation is already within a hundred steps of us! Ancestor Giant Sun, what will we do?” Someone said in shock.

Wisdom Gu was maintaining a halo of light to protect itself, the Gu Masters were all standing near its edge and outside of it, only Fang Yuan was inside. As the wind veil of assimilation grew closer, it shrunk the space that was inside and in just a short period of time, the wind veil would reach the surface of the light halo.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 646: Road of Life

The wind veil of assimilation was constantly getting closer, that was why Giant Sun’s will tried to get Fang Yuan to surrender.

If Fang Yuan surrendered and returned Giant Sun’s immortal essence, everything would be easy to settle.

But if Fang Yuan was adamant and refused to surrender, Giant Sun’s will would have to fight him to the death!

“Hei Lou Lan, I am giving you this strength path Immortal Gu, release your dark limit seal and display the true might of one of the ten extreme physiques. Your Great Strength True Martial Physique has the highest recovery speed in the world, it greatly surpasses the other nine extreme physiques. Don’t worry, even if you self-detonate, I have my ways to save you.” Giant Sun’s will said, handing Hei Lou Lan a strength path Immortal Gu.

Obtaining the Immortal Gu that he had been dreaming of, Hei Lou Lan was unable to conceal his excitement: “Thank you lord ancestor!!”

At the same time, Giant Sun’s will promised the other Gu Masters many benefits, handing out Gu worms one by one.

Giant Sun’s will raised the morale: “This scoundrel has committed many evil deeds, you will all be great heroes renowned in northern plains after eliminating him! Your act of bringing peace to the people will make sure you are well respected wherever you go.”

“We know that being basked in the light of wisdom would reduce lifespan. But in this situation, if we continue delaying it, we will be killed by the wind veil of assimilation. How can losing a bit of lifespan compare to death?”

“Furthermore, you just need to restrain him, I will strike and deal the finishing blow!”

Everyone looked at each other.

Giant Sun’s will had incomparable reputation, he was left behind by the old ancestor, under benefits and reputation, forced by the situation, everyone summoned their courage and looked at Fang Yuan, ready to strike.

“Strange, why isn’t he dead yet? After being in the light for so long, he should’ve expended all his lifespan already?” Suddenly, someone asked this.

Because if Fang Yuan was dead, they would not need to take a risk.

“That is because he is already dead. After completely becoming a zombie monster, he is among the living dead. The dead have no lifespan, no matter how long he stays there, he would not die of old age.” Hei Lou Lan explained, destroying their fantasies.

“So that’s it!!”

Everyone was taken aback, they finally understood that this fight was unavoidable.

The air seemed to turn frigid, the Gu Masters’ killing intent surged, without doubt, this was the final battle!

They had great confidence in killing Fang Yuan. After all, there was the Great Strength True Martial Physique as well as Giant Sun’s will. However, they were still nervous.

Fang Yuan’s terrifying battle strength was ingrained into their hearts.

“Of course we have to kill this demon, but there are bound to be casualties in battle, oh great Longevity Heaven, please don’t let it be me!” Those were the inner thoughts of everyone.

The atmosphere was getting more solemn, the battle was going to commence.

But right at this moment, there was another surprising twist.

Wisdom Gu suddenly stopped sending out the light of wisdom, and flew into the sea of Gu worms.

Earlier, it had displayed its rank nine aura at full force, but now it had completely concealed itself, hiding with the Gu worm group, it quickly vanished.

Everyone was shocked.

Giant Sun’s will was the first to react, laughing heartily: “Excellent! This wisdom Gu’s wild will is a newborn, it is still very immature. Earlier, it created the halo to prevent other lifeforms from getting near it, but now that it sensed the battle was near, in order to avoid getting dragged into this, it escaped first!”

Everyone was overjoyed at this, there was no better situation.

Without wisdom Gu’s halo causing trouble, Giant Sun’s will could enter battle directly.

“Demon, the wisdom Gu that you entrusted your life to has run away!”

“Your time of death is now, come and receive your death!”

“Demon, you have committed many heinous sins, landing in this situation today, you are dead meat!”

Everyone shouted, their morale surging.

Giant Sun’s will was ready to strike.

“Hahaha, hahahaha!” Fang Yuan broke the silence, he raised his head and laughed. His laughter boomed over the surroundings, giving off a wild aura, he suppressed all other voices.

He had a green face with sharp fangs, and his eyes were shining with a ruthless light.

Although his recovery ability was strong, his previous injuries were too severe, his body was still in bad shape.

He was left with one arm, his body was crooked, yet his imposing attitude burst out, causing everyone to take a slight step back.

“Damned demon, still being arrogant before your death?”

“What are you laughing for!”

Hei Lou Lan took a big step forward, his body was like a bear, he stared with his eyes opened wide: “Demon, committing evil acts will lead to your own doom, you have no way out but death!”

“Fang Yuan, I had already given you your only chance of surrender, but you did not grab onto it. Now, there is no way out for you anymore.” Giant Sun’s will shouted resolutely.

Mo Yao’s will also said: “Lad, no need to continue acting secretive. Your fake imposing aura cannot stop them. Don’t you want to see Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s secret inheritance ground? The battle is going to commence, if your mind becomes muddled against Giant Sun’s will, I will not be able to save you again. Give up, this is a dead end, there is no way out! Quickly use the Spring Autumn Cicada!”

Fang Yuan’s laughter ended, his voice was coarse: “Isn’t there a saying, heaven will always leave a path for you, as long as I want to walk, there will be a road for me to step on!”

Everyone was shocked, these words were very familiar, thinking about it, they realized it was from <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

<< The Legends of Ren Zu>> chapter three, section three states —

Luo Po valley was a very wide and complex labyrinth, Ren Zu searched for Northern Dark Ice Soul, who was missing, but he got lost in the labyrinth himself, even after several days, he did not find a way out.

He was extremely tired, he had sprawled on the ground, his back leaning against the walls of the labyrinth.

A feeling of boundless loneliness quickly engulfed him.

This was because he had given his original heart to hope, right now, he only had a heart of loneliness left.

The feeling of loneliness was unbearable, Ren Zu was afraid of being lonely, he had once dug out both of his eyes and turned them into a son and daughter to accompany him.

But right now, he could only endure the torture of loneliness.

Amidst the loneliness, Ren Zu felt intense desolation, loss, and pain. Time seemed to have stopped, he was all alone in this world, there was nobody he could rely on, there was no fire that he could gain warmth from.

Ren Zu felt suffocation, but as time passed, he got used to the feeling of loneliness, he even started to savor it.

He started to feel that loneliness was not that scary.

In his loneliness, he felt serenity, peace, and quiet.

He talked to himself: “Oh human, what is the purpose of your existence? Struggling here in this world, rushing about everywhere.”

Next, he heard a voice from beside him: “Oh human, you are the spirit of all beings. You are lonely, thus you wanted to be comforted, to be understood, to be recognised. Right now, the thing you want to do most is to find the way out of this damned place.”

Ren Zu was shocked: “Who, who is talking to me?”

That voice laughed as it said: “I am a Gu, called ‘self’. If you look inside yourself, you will find me.”

Ren Zu quickly inspected his heart of loneliness, as expected, in the deepest part of his heart, he saw a Gu worm.

This Gu looked very real, almost like himself, but it was many times smaller than him, like the size of an ant.

Ren Zu was curious: “Eh, you are a Gu worm, why are you inside my body?”

Self Gu said: “Ever since you gained life, I had been inside your body, you just did not discover me. It is not easy to find me, you will need to inspect your inner heart of loneliness.

“Is that so.” Ren Zu had little interest, he was quite indifferent about this as his mind was entirely concerned with Northern Dark Ice Soul.

Self Gu saw Ren Zu’s lack of concern and laughed: “Oh Ren Zu, you should be happy. You should know, finding yourself and understanding yourself, that is the most important thing in life. You yourself are the most reliable thing in the world, let me help you leave this place.”

“You can help me leave this place? No way, can you bring me out of Luo Po valley, and travel in the reverse flow river?” Ren Zu was shocked and excited.

Self Gu laughed heartily: “Oh Ren Zu, why must you walk on this road? The door of life and death’s entrance and exit are the traces left behind by fate Gu when it visited fairness Gu. When you walk on this road, you will be under the manipulation and arrangement of fate. If you want to revive, to leave this place, you should walk on a brand new road.”

Ren Zu was perplexed: “Isn’t there only one road? Wisdom Gu had already told me that, where can there be a second road?”

Self Gu said: “Oh Ren Zu, as long as you want to walk, there will be a road for you to step on.”

Ren Zu was even more confused now: “Then how should I walk?”

Self Gu said: “Didn’t I say it already, first, you have to ‘think’ about leaving.”

“Think?” Ren Zu tried using his brain, thinking of how to move on.

He thought for half a day, his head was bursting, when finally, a Gu jumped out of his mind.

This Gu was an old friend of Ren Zu, it was cognition Gu.

“Where there is cognition, there is me.” Cognition Gu said: “Oh human, you seem to have gotten into trouble again, let me help you think.”

Saying so, cognition Gu gave off a bright light, enlightening Ren Zu.

Cognition Gu had an ability, that was to enlighten all beings. Any lifeform enlightened by cognition Gu would gain wings.

Back then, Verdant Great Sun obtained the wings of “self”, flying into the sky.

When the light dispersed, Ren Zu obtained a pair of wings.

This pair of wings was located at his heels, they were very delicate.

Cognition noted: “Mm, this pair of wings is called independence, Ren Zu, it will help you walk on a new road. You have to be careful, a new road is hard to walk on, other Gu are unreliable, you can only rely on your self Gu.”

Saying so, cognition Gu vanished.

Ren Zu was still very much confused: “How should I walk?”

“Walk ahead, and carve the path of your road of life. This is a road that is unique to yourself! Only you can walk on it!” Self Gu said excitedly.

Ren Zu took the first step forward.

Bam!

The next moment, his vision changed.

...

Everyone heard Fang Yuan and reacted, flying into a rage.

“This demon has lost his mind!!”

“Kill, we have to work together and kill him!!”

“Hehehe, how dare you compare yourself to Ren Zu? Go ahead and walk, let me see what road you can walk on?”

Everyone lost their patience, they shouted as they charged towards Fang Yuan.

Guh.

At this moment, Hei Lou Lan suddenly showed a pained expression, spitting out a mouthful of blood.

“Good timing.” Fang Yuan smiled, showing an eerie aura.

He raised his remaining hand as he punched directly.

Bam.

With a loud explosion, fist qi burst out as a strength path phantom materialized in the air.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 647: The answer is found in one’s self!

This strength path phantom had a striking resemblance to a youthful Fang Yuan. Vivid and lifelike, and generally in the same dimensions.

It obstructed the charge of the Gu Masters by itself, appearing lonely and insignificant.

“Isn’t this that lad Hei Lou Lan’s killer move?” Mo Yao’s will was surprised, “Ah, I remember now, you seized his crucial Gu worm, but how did you reproduce his killer move?”

While she was speaking, the Gu Masters had already reached the strength path phantom; Fang Yuan’s strength path phantom could only endure three moves before it was torn to pieces.

The remaining fist qi was condensing again, but was extinguished by Ye Lui Sang’s fire.

“This demon is a paper tiger, no need to be afraid!”

“Hmph, the method he is relying on now was merely stolen from Lord Hei Lou Lan.”

“This strength path phantom has the form but at most only has half the strength of Lord Hei Lou Lan’s killer move, what’s there to be afraid of?!”

The group’s morale soared higher, they paused for a moment before moving towards Fang Yuan at an even faster speed.

Only Hei Lou Lan had a bewildered expression and slightly decreased his speed, staying at the rear: “Did he use my vital Gu to create this strength path phantom? How could this strength path phantom actually have his own actual appearance?!”

Although his vital Gu had been seized, his injuries had rapidly recovered. Great Strength True Martial Physique’s recovery ability was at the top of the ten extreme physiques, tens of times stronger than six arm heavenly zombie king.

It was not strange for Fang Yuan to forcibly refine Hei Lou Lan’s vital Gu. Fang Yuan was already a Gu Immortal and with the help of immortal essence, this meant an enormous advantage in refining mortal Gu.

Fang Yuan’s strength path phantom actually had the same appearance as him, this was what made Hei Lou Lan extremely surprised.

“Even if you seized Hei Lou Lan’s Gu and roughly reconstructed his killer move, your strength path phantom merely has its form and it might have the ability to recondense from the fist qi, but the difference when compared to Hei Lou Lan’s genuine killer move is too great.” Mo Yao’s will bluntly commented.

At this moment, everyone had reached Fang Yuan.

On the outer periphery, Giant Sun’s will had curled up into a ball, moving slowly, waiting for the time Fang Yuan showed a weakness during the chaotic battle to deal a fatal strike!

“In that case Mo Yao, open your eyes and watch what happens next closely.” Fang Yuan’s grin slowly turned into a huge smile.

He punched! With the only remaining arm!

Fist qi surged and turned into a strength path phantom. The phantom did not pause, immediately pouncing towards the incoming Gu Masters.

Fang Yuan punched again!

Another strength path phantom appeared, but it was different; this strength path phantom also resembled a young Fang Yuan, but it had two extra arms and it was even more powerful.

Fang Yuan’s breathing sped up as he punched rapidly, the fist shadows interweaving together into a curtain!

BOOM BOOM BOOM.....

Punches after punches in the air sent out cracking noises, producing continuous echoing explosions.

Majestic fist qi surged madly, forming whirlwinds.

Wind and clouds surged and roared like dragons and tigers!

In a blink of an eye, a hundred strength path phantoms were created, forming layers upon layers of protection around Fang Yuan.

The Gu Masters had just finished off the previous two strength path phantoms and were about to charge towards Fang Yuan. But when they raised their heads, all of their expressions turned into great shock!

“How could there be so many strength path phantoms?!” One Gu Master’s eyes almost popped out.

“F*ck, there are still more being created!!” Another Gu Master swore loudly.

Fang Yuan continued to punch; fist qi formed into strength path phantoms as if they were endless.

The Gu Masters could not believe what they were seeing; this number greatly surpassed Hei Lou Lan’s limit, moreover it was still rapidly increasing.

Within moments, there were already a thousand strength path phantoms!

Just recently, Fang Yuan was alone, but now he had an army standing around him!

“Are they phonies?” A Gu Master was suspicious and felt Fang Yuan was using Gu worm to create illusions.

But the strength path phantoms’ solid attacks in the next moment gave a painful answer to the group!

“Kill!”

“We will let you taste our power.”

These strength path phantoms were actually able to speak, and showed extraordinary intelligence.

They attacked together, forming an endless stream of humans! The Gu Masters who were confident in their numbers were now drowned in strength path phantoms.

They seemed to be stranded in a torrential river; suffering the strong attacks of the waves.

“Defend!”

“Stabilize our formation, they are only strength path phantoms!”

“Damn it, these strength path phantoms can actually coordinate and carry out battle tactics!!”

The Gu Masters shouted one after another. Their formation was like a large reef near the shore. However, after engaging in battle, they discovered that the power of these strength path phantoms far surpassed their imaginations!

These strength path phantoms coordinated together and did not care about sacrificing themselves; although they only had singular method of attacking, it generated an extremely large pressure on the Gu Masters.

The Gu Masters’ formation soon showed signs of breaking.

“This... what killer move is this? My strength path phantoms could not coordinate to this extent. This is simply a relentless army fighting to the death!” Hei Lou Lan was shocked and uneasy.

Fang Yuan retreated while continuing to punch out fist qi.

The number of strength path phantoms continued to rise crazily.

“Your... killer move, this... killer... move...” Mo Yao’s will stammered in shock!

She analyzed: “Mortal Gu absolutely cannot have such might, you definitely used Immortal Gu! You still have a trump card that I don’t know about? No, impossible, you definitely had refined Immortal Gu. How could you refine Immortal Gu so quickly?”

Fang Yuan laughed loudly: “Why do you think I tried to get near to wisdom Gu by all means possible? It was to use its rank nine aura to help me refine Immortal Gu! If it were other people’s Immortal Gu, it would not be easy to deceive, thus I could not refine Man as Before and Landscape as Before. But it is very difficult for young wild will to distinguish if this aura originated from me.”

Gu worms higher by two ranks or more could pressure others into submission. Back then on Qing Mao mountain, Fang Yuan used Spring Autumn Cicada’s aura to help him refine Gu.

“That means you had planned to intentionally transform completely with six arm heavenly zombie king?” Mo Yao’s will immediately started feeling uneasy when she discovered this.

The light of wisdom consumed lifespan, but after transforming into a zombie which was already dead, Fang Yuan naturally could stay for much longer in the light of wisdom.

Mo Yao continued to observe and found that Fang Yuan’s killer move followed some certain characteristics of strength path. His strength path phantoms normally had two arms. But sometimes, there would be phantoms with four arms and even six arms occasionally.

The more arms the phantoms had, the stronger they were.

Two armed phantoms only had average battle strength comparable to hundred beast kings. Four armed phantoms were comparable to thousand beast kings and six armed phantoms were comparable to myriad beast kings.

“This... this is simply the re-creation of a beast group!” When Mo Yao’s will became aware of this, her delicate body shivered, and said with an incredulous tone, “You, lad you, you actually managed to resolve the age old question, you have merged the two paths of enslavement and strength!”

Enslavement path controlled a great number of beasts and used numbers to crush enemies.

Strength path focused on strengthening oneself, fighting many enemies alone.

The essence of two Gu Master paths that were polar opposites were now perfectly harmonized and united in Fang Yuan’s killer move!

Fang Yuan had been trying to solve this issue since long ago. But he made no progress and was even ridiculed and persuaded against by Mo Yao’s will.

However, he had never given up on his attempts to resolve this. He would never abandon something because of other people’s denial, ridicule and persuasion.

The most crucial breakthrough came during the process of Gu Immortal advancement.

He used this extremely precious opportunity to advance his strength path realm. Obtaining inspiration from heaven and earth, he abandoned everything else to wholeheartedly seek the answer for the merging of enslavement and strength path.

Heaven and earth were completely open to him, he was imparted supreme mysteries!

But finally, he also had wisdom Gu to thank.

Fang Yuan stayed under the light of wisdom for a long time, wasting away his lifespan and turning into one of the living dead. He paid a heavy price but his rewards were also enormous. Finally, he was able to use his available Gu worms to coordinate together and form the killer move.

Without investment, how could there by any gains?

Of course, he also had to thank Hei Lou Lan, thanks to his vital Gu which was one of the most crucial components of the killer move. Besides it, there were Immortal Gu, as well as many Gu worms which were required to form six arm heavenly zombie king, and in addition Fang Yuan’s second vital Gu, all-out effort Gu, which played an important role.

This was also one of the reasons Fang Yuan intentionally transformed with six arm heavenly zombie king. He needed the Gu worms forming six arm heavenly zombie king to make this new killer move!

Even if the black coffin luck on him intensified, even if powerful enemies surrounded him and the wind veil of assimilation isolated everything from the world, heaven would never seal all of one’s paths!

There was no absolutely desperate situation in this world, there were only people who despair.

The answer to resolving problems will always be in our own hands; when we inspect our inner hearts, we will find that the miraculous heavenly power was in ourselves all along!

To discover oneself, to recognize oneself, and to rely on oneself!

“The convergence of enslavement and strength path is an age old question which has baffled countless heroes and geniuses through the ages. I had never expected it to be perfectly resolved in your hands. Lad, you have ventured on a new road indeed. As you continue to develop this path, you might even be able to truly unite enslavement and strength path, and develop a whole new path. This path will definitely have unprecedented strength!” Mo Yao’s will sighed with deep emotions, her refinement path grandmaster spirit made her not stint on praising Fang Yuan.

“Hehehe.” Fang Yuan was just about to reply when suddenly Giant Sun’s will appeared right in front of him.

It was a sneak attack!

During this critical moment of life and death, Fang Yuan moved his head, his vital area, and used his shoulder to bear the brunt of Giant Sun’s will’s attack.

Boom, a huge sound erupted, Fang Yuan was sent rolling to the ground, plowing a gorge metres in length.

“Looks like there is still quite a bit of your will remaining in my mind, you influenced my thoughts again!” Fang Yuan was furious as he saw through Mo Yao’s scheme.

Mo Yao shed all consideration for face and screamed: “Kid, I asked you to obediently activate Spring Autumn Cicada, but you didn’t give in! Destiny sent you in front of me to give me a chance at rebirth. I will definitely grasp this opportunity!!”

“Hmph! Most of your will and Gu worms have been locked in my immortal aperture. Your red date immortal essence is also under my control; you have no way to replenish your will anymore. To influence my thoughts, your thoughts will have to collide, let me see how long this portion of your will that is hiding in my mind can last!”

Fang Yuan attacked Mo Yao’s will while tightly fixing his gaze on Giant Sun’s will. Strength path phantoms soon gathered around him and filled the gap, once more tightly protecting Fang Yuan.

Giant Sun’s will felt quite troubled, it was okay when Fang Yuan was alone previously, but now he had so many helpers!

Giant Sun’s will excelled in speed and transforming, but was afraid of expending his thoughts. Fang Yuan’s killer move that combined enslavement and strength path was a direct counter to him.

No matter how fast your speed is, I will form a tighter defense. You have your countless transformations, I have my self-detonating phantoms!

There were way too many strength path phantoms; they surrounded Fang Yuan in layers after layers, not only in all directions, there were strength path phantoms even floating in the sky.

There was simply no gap to attack.

“This killer move actually combined the essence of both enslavement and strength path. These strength path phantoms can not only condense back from the remnant fist qi, they can even self-detonate! This kid definitely already had some foundation in this aspect and had made preparations, otherwise just relying on the time within the light of wisdom, he absolutely would not be able to create it out of nothing... Right, he succeeded in his Gu Immortal ascension, it is extremely likely that he received the guidance of heaven and earth during the process of advancement. Damn it!”

Giant Sun’s will pondered intensely before hurriedly stopping his thoughts. There were hardly any left, if he thought for too long, a large portion of him would vanish.

“A chance!” Suddenly, he transformed into a golden rainbow, travelling nimbly between the army of strength path phantoms and ruthlessly striking at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan grinned: “Old geezer, why are you in such a rush?”

He had intentionally revealed this flaw in the strength path phantoms’ formation!

Giant Sun’s will fell for Fang Yuan’s scheme. Three strength path phantoms instantly appeared in front of him.

Giant Sun’s will thought rapidly and like a snake, he coiled around two. However, he could not avoid the last strength path phantom, and directly smashed into it.

Boom!

A huge sound erupted, the strength path phantom was crushed into smithereens.

“Old bastard, do you really think I am easy prey? Hmph, I have already waited for too long!” Fang Yuan was already fully prepared. He raised his fist and pounded down with all his strength at Giant Sun’s will.

Giant Sun’s will was caught unprepared and shattered!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 648: Fierce and Ambitious

Fang Yuan finally displayed his true strength; his punch was extremely fast, Giant Sun’s will was caught unprepared and received the full brunt of the attack.

Bang, the condensed golden will was smashed into smithereens, splitting into countless parts.

But in the next moment, the will condensed again, though its volume had fully decreased by one-fifth.

Having suffered such a great loss, Giant Sun’s will was about to furiously counterattack. However, Fang Yuan had already retreated to safety behind the layers upon layers of strength path phantoms.

Giant Sun’s will was so angry at this that he almost collapsed again.

He could not think about too many things, otherwise he would have already seen this was a trap. Thus, he fell for Fang Yuan’s scheme.

“Hei Lou Lan, what are you still hesitating for?” Giant Sun’s will bellowed.

“How can he send out strength path phantoms that look exactly the same as him?” Hei Lou Lan’s thoughts were tangled and confused, and when he heard Giant Sun’s will’s roar, he quivered before coming back to his senses.

Fang Yuan’s killer move was powerful and had the number advantage, suppressing everyone into such disadvantage that they were not even able to raise their heads. Even Giant Sun’s will could not make any progress.

This was the moment of life and death!

Hei Lou Lan’s Great Strength True Martial Physique was the crucial battle strength that could change the situation! As he thought of this, Hei Lou Lan opened his eyes wide in anger and stood up straight.

BOOM!!!

One ordinary punch produced a terrifying result; the piercingly cold fist qi almost penetrated the heavy layers of strength path phantoms.

Human figures flew all around as the phantoms were smashed to pieces.

This was the true strength of Great Strength True Martial Physique.

At this moment, Hei Lou Lan displayed all his strength without any reservations!

The Immortal Gu Dark Limit’s remaining power on him was a thin layer of black membrane.

When Hei Lou Lan tore apart this layer of black membrane, his figure suddenly changed! The surging aura of one of the ten extreme physiques soared to the skies, a formless aura shook the air and formed a shockwave that engulfed the surroundings.

“This?!”

“What’s going on? Lord Hei Lou Lan actually turned into a woman!”

“The rumor was actually true! In Su Xian’s Night Elopement, Su Xian had given birth to a daughter with Hei tribe’s supreme elder, Hei Cheng...”

It was no wonder that back then, Giant Sun’s will had chosen Hei Lou Lan and Ma Hong Yun to be Frost Jade Peacock’s masters. Giant Sun’s will had already seen through Hei Lou Lan’s true gender.

Hei Lou Lan turned a deaf ear to everyone’s shocked remarks, and fixed her gaze at Fang Yuan. Killing intent surged and a wild, noble aura manifested like a proud tigress starting her hunt – bold and fearless, and hungry to devour humans.

Fang Yuan gave a cold snort, fist qi surged beside him non-stop, condensing into strength path phantoms that had the formation of an army.

He had full confidence in his killer move and was not afraid of Hei Lou Lan: “The self-detonation of one of the ten extreme physiques can indeed slaughter immortals. But my killer move can also do so!”

Strength path phantoms shouted one after another; their rallying cries poured like a river towards Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan who had exposed her true appearance was simply unstoppable, she was like a female warrior goddess who possessed the strength of a thousand troops. The strength path phantom army charged at her, but she was stable and unmoved.

“Save me!” At another side, Ye Lui Sang and the others cried out for help.

Fang Yuan was concentrating on three tasks; facing Hei Lou Lan, taking care of other Gu Masters and also guarding against Giant Sun’s will.

He displayed his master level attainment in enslavement path for all to see.

The strength path phantom army were highly coordinated and they seemed to move like one entity. With no regard for sacrifices, they attacked with a crazy offense; Ye Lui Sang and the others were already in danger, but now could hold on no longer, their final defensive line was broken.

Hei Lou Lan wanted to return and assist them, but was firmly stalled by the strength path phantoms.

“These strength path phantoms actually have an ordinary person’s intelligence! How was he able to accomplish this? He definitely seized my vital Gu, but how could he create strength path phantoms that have the exact same appearance as him!” Hei Lou Lan was extremely astonished.

The more she battled with the strength path phantom army, the more she realized their power.

An individual strength path phantom was of no concern. But three strength path phantoms’ tacit cooperation could slightly resist Hei Lou Lan. Six strength path phantoms could form a small battle formation and stall her. Nine strength path phantoms attacking in succession could pressure her.

The greater the number of strength path phantoms, the higher their battle strength.

This was all because of the exquisite coordination between them!

Even beast groups could not accomplish this, but Fang Yuan’s enslavement path army was actually made of his own strength path phantoms; they came from the same source and thus were of one mind.

Hei Lou Lan was not able to reinforce them in time; Ye Lui Sang and the others were killed one after the other by the strength path phantoms.

And facing the cries for help from his bloodline descendants, Giant Sun’s will made the opposite choice of Hei Lou Lan; he turned into several arrows and tried to take advantage of the chaos to kill Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan mobilized the guards beside him to engage in an intense battle with Giant Sun’s will.

The duration of the battle was extremely short but it was exceptionally fierce.

Seeing that he could not succeed, Giant Sun’s will left after probing and did not continue fighting zealously. There were hardly any thoughts left in this will; the intense battle would demand quick thinking and he would slowly be unable to bear such intensive consumption.

And Fang Yuan also was in trouble.

Mo Yao’s will continued to bother him from time to time, creating distracting thoughts and causing him to repeatedly make mistakes when mobilizing the strength path phantoms, making him unable to display his master level enslavement path attainment to the fullest.

However, as time passed, Fang Yuan gradually attained the upper hand.

His strength path phantom army continued to increase in numbers, the narrow remaining space was filled with these strength path phantoms, their number already surpassing ten thousand.

At the same time, Mo Yao’s will’s influence on him was weakening.

Giant Sun’s will sneak attacked many times but did not succeed, his remaining volume was less than that of an adult.

The only one who was still fighting like an addict, Hei Lou Lan, was a monster with unlimited stamina. Great Strength True Martial Physique’s battle strength could make one speechless. If not for the layers of strength path phantoms which consisted of an absurd number already, they might not have been able to restrain her.

...

“Child, you have to be careful. I researched this strength path killer move for you, although it is strong, it has a flaw. The strength path phantom you create is actually your subconscious image.” Her mother, Su Xian, said in an extremely weak tone at the moment of her death, advising her repeatedly with a worried expression.

Hei Lou Lan sat at the side of the bed, grabbing her hand, nodding her head as she wept without letting out a noise.

“<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> has already told us that every person has a self in their hearts. Child, your strength path phantom is the self in your heart. What I can see from it is that you thirst for tyrannical strength, you long to escape from a woman’s status and have it become that of a man’s. Use this killer move as few times as possible, be careful as the killer move might imperceptibly influence you to become as savage as your strength path phantom in the end.” Su Xian continued to mumble, almost exhausting all of her energy.

“Mother, I understand, you can be at ease.” Bean sized tears trickled down Hei Lou Lan’s cheeks.

“When one day, you can create strength path phantoms that resemble your appearance completely, mother will be at ease. Remember, remember, find your ‘self’. Also... also... be careful of your fa... father...” Su Xian finished her last words, using up her final breath as she left this world.

“Mother—!” Hei Lou Lan’s heartbroken scream echoed in the room.

...

“Hei Lou Lan, what are you doing? You are actually letting your thoughts wander at this moment?” Giant Sun’s will’s furious shout broke Hei Lou Lan’s recollection.

Hei Lou Lan was startled to awareness, she then stared at Fang Yuan, her heart filled with extremely complicated emotions — this guy actually had already found his self!? How did he accomplish it?

“The final moment is arriving, the wind veil of assimilation is already close to us. Hei Lou Lan, self-detonate, I swear upon the honor of Giant Sun that I will save you!” Giant Sun’s will commanded.

Fang Yuan’s gaze became sharp, he might have the phantom army’s protection and was sure they could create enough time for him to open a stargate, but he was not willing to take the risk.

He quickly provoked: “Hehehe, Hei Lou Lan, you are a hero of a generation! Giant Sun’s will might have Immortal Gu, but his immortal essence is still with me, how could he save you? How about you surrender to me, I have a way to escape this wind veil of assimilation!”

Fang Yuan was only probing and did not hold high hopes for it.

But Hei Lou Lan’s movement slowed down and her battle intent clearly lowered when she heard his words.

Giant Sun’s will saw the situation taking a turn for the worse and quickly shouted: “Don’t listen to this demon’s nonsense, he cannot be trusted! Hei Lou Lan, don’t hesitate, this is our final chance to turn around the situation! Could it be that you don’t believe me, your ancestor? Don’t forget that I am only lending you the strength path Immortal Gu, it still has my will and it will self-detonate with just a thought from me!”

Hei Lou Lan roared as her battle intent soared again.

“Demon, you have a glib tongue, crafty as a fox! Damn it, what Gu did you use on me? I will make you pay the most terrible price, hand over your life!”

Hei Lou Lan erupted and like a wild dragon entering the sea, she carved out a path through the layers of the strength path phantom army.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly: “Good, let me personally experience the power of Great Strength True Martial Physique!”

He then faced Hei Lou Lan head-on, and engaged in close combat.

Six arm heavenly zombie king was strong but it was not the match of the ten extreme physiques. This was still the case under the circumstances in which Fang Yuan possessed unlimited primeval essence and was activating large numbers of mortal Gu.

Hei Lou Lan’s feelings were much different.

Fang Yuan’s power and velociousness along with the surrounding strength path phantoms’ tacit coordination made her feel extremely pressured, and she was suffering injuries after injuries.

But Great Strength True Martial Physique’s recovery ability was much stronger than six arm heavenly zombie king, the pain instead caused Hei Lou Lan to become even more fierce.

For a moment, both sides exchanged moves after moves and were evenly matched.

Giant Sun’s will only had to wait for a short while before it saw a flaw from Fang Yuan and sneak attacked at lightning speed.

Fang Yuan retreated a step and turned around, counterattacking with clear hatred at Giant Sun’s will.

Giant Sun’s will gnashed his teeth as he fiercely clashed with Fang Yuan, creating an even bigger flaw. He bellowed: “Hei Lou Lan!”

As long as this exposed flaw was used, Hei Lou Lan could definitely inflict heavy injuries upon Fang Yuan and might even be able to take his life.

Giant Sun’s will finally saw hope at this moment.

“Coming!” Hei Lou Lan charged over and activated her Gu worms, striking with an unprecedented power.

A dozen strength path phantoms suddenly jumped beside Fang Yuan to protect him.

“You!” Giant Sun’s will roared in shock, Hei Lou Lan’s attack did not strike Fang Yuan, but smashed upon him!

Giant Sun’s will crumbled, revealing three Immortal Gu.

Hei Lou Lan opened her mouth, actually swallowing the three Immortal Gu.

With a gulp, the three Immortal Gu entered her stomach.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, the dozen strength path phantoms that had come to reinforce him changed their formation and surrounded Giant Sun’s will, before brazenly self-detonating!

Fist qi surged, almost completely exterminating all of Giant Sun’s will; only four to five traces of golden thoughts managed to escape!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 649: Twin Demons

“Why, why?!” The golden thoughts were furious and puzzled by the betrayal.

“Hmph! Old bastard, I followed your commands earlier because I needed something. Now that the strength path Immortal Gu is already in my possession, why would I still listen to your commands?” Hei Lou Lan sneered, her beautiful appearance filled with pride and coldness.

“You thankless wretch, unfilial descendant, you actually betrayed your ancestor!” The golden thoughts shouted in hatred.

“Shut up, stop screaming. Is it because your thoughts are too few now that you are unable to think and have become so demented?” Hei Lou Lan crossed her arms and squinted her eyes, “You want me to self-detonate, but after making that kind of promise, what can you actually use to save me? Relying on your slavery Gu, divert disaster Gu or Fixed Immortal Travel? These are the only three remaining Immortal Gu on you, now tell me, where is the Immortal Gu that can resurrect me? Hmph, you want to deceive me with such a childish trick?”

“If you were strong and powerful, I would obey you according to the rule of complying to the strong. But look at you now, what reason do you have to order me around? Hmm? Just because you are the remaining will left behind by a dead man? Hehehe, even if it is Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he is already dead, he is a thing of the past! This is a new era, why is a dead man like you still jumping around like a clown?”

Her words were filled with ambitious and ruthless grandeur!

Hei Lou Lan was still that Hei Lou Lan!

“Even if I only have a single thought remaining, I can still cause the Immortal Gu to perish!” The golden thoughts cried out.

However, Hei Lou Lan was calm: “You can try as much as you want.”

“What’s going on? You are actually suppressing four Immortal Gu! You might have Great Strength True Martial Physique, but you don’t have the will of an immortal, how can you suppress four Immortal Gu?” The golden thoughts flashed with radiance before screaming out in an incredulous tone; clearly, it was unable to destroy the Immortal Gu.

“There are still many things you do not know.” Hei Lou Lan seemed to be shrouded in profound mystery at this moment.

“Hei Lou Lan, as a descendant of Huang Jin bloodline and a tribe leader of a super tribe, you colluded with an outsider to scheme against your ancestor! You two shameless bastards, when did you team up? Why didn’t I discover it?!” The golden thoughts asked in a furious tone.

“Sure enough, you are much easier to deal with when you can’t think. Sigh, your pathetic performance really brings shame to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s reputation.” Fang Yuan sighed, but there was a grin on his face filled with disdain.

The two had actually allied just before now.

Earlier, Hei Lou Lan had shouted —”Demon, you have a glib tongue, crafty as a fox! Damn it, what Gu did you use on me? I will make you pay the most terrible price, hand over your life!”

Fang Yuan had not used any Gu, but Hei Lou Lan said Fang Yuan used a Gu.

This was a code word.

Whether it was Fang Yuan or Hei Lou Lan, both were meticulous and suspicious, merciless and formidable characters.

They had cooperated together throughout the Imperial Court contest and had great understanding of each other. Both knew how ambitious the other was and would not resign to being under someone else.

Just because of this, Fang Yuan was willing to take a gamble; anyway, with the strength path phantoms’ protection, the risk was not high.

The two swindlers cooperated together, Hei Lou Lan made use of a opportunity in battle and succeeded in attacking Giant Sun’s will and seizing away all the Immortal Gu.

“I am unresigned, I am unresigned! I am the strongest, yet I was plotted against till I reached this stage. None of you will have a good end, my main body left behind many arrangements which are set to activate when Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapses. True Yang Building will be rebuilt, and you guys will be hunted down to the ends of the world. I didn’t lose to you, if I didn’t make moves against Ma Hong Yun and ruin my luck, how could I lose?! In the end, I lost to luck!” The golden thoughts roared hysterically.

Boom boom boom.

In the next moment, it self-detonated, destroying itself!

It was after all something left behind by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, even if there were only a few thoughts left, it was decisive.

It was worried the secrets on it would be searched and extracted; the situation was hopeless so it directly chose to self-detonate.

The self-detonation of thoughts was extremely fast. Even if Fang Yuan wanted to stop it, he did not have corresponding methods. Unlike blood path, strength path and enslavement path, his wisdom path attainment was still very shallow.

Only by deceiving Giant Sun’s will to enter his immortal aperture, like Mo Yao’s will, would Fang Yuan be able to easily suppress it.

Like this, the strongest existence and ruler of Imperial Court blessed land finally dispersed in smoke, not leaving even a trace of it behind.

Hei Lou Lan let out a breath of turbid air before looking at Fang Yuan with a tranquil gaze, speaking in a serious tone: “Now, let’s have a good discussion, I believe we have the foundation for cooperation.”

Fang Yuan nodded, sneering: “Before speaking of anything else, the Immortal Gu Fixed Immortal Travel you seized is mine.”

That formless fist which seized Fixed Immortal Travel had been broken by Giant Sun’s will. After Giant Sun’s will seized the Immortal Gu, he forcibly suppressed Fang Yuan’s will within the Gu but did not have time to refine it, or it may be that he did not have the strength to forcibly refine it.

Thus, Fang Yuan was not able to sense the connection with Fixed Immortal Travel. He had lost track of the target earlier and thought the formless fist had already torn through space and left.

“I know, this is precisely one of my conditions. Right now, I am suppressing your Immortal Gu, but there is no time for me to forcibly refine it. I need you to lend me this Fixed Immortal Travel!” Hei Lou Lan made an astonishing demand.

Fang Yuan had a calm expression: “Why should I lend it to you?”

“Hmph, the Gu is on me and without Fixed Immortal Travel, how can you escape from here? Only if we sincerely cooperate, can we have the chance to escape.” Hei Lou Lan said.

Fang Yuan chuckled: “Who told you I don’t have other methods to leave this place?”

Hei Lou Lan’s pupils shrunk as she looked at Fang Yuan deeply: “The wind veil of assimilation isolates the outside world from the inside, Gu like hole earth Gu and connecting heaven Gu cannot be used. You actually have another method... but you didn’t use it even until now, heh, it seems this method has its flaws!”

She was a formidable character, regaining her cool quickly and even carrying a probing counterattack.

She sounded extremely certain, but she was not that sure inwardly and was only probing. Fang Yuan laughed loudly, his strength path phantom army was beside him and he did not fear the self-detonation of Great Strength True Martial Physique.

However, his opponent was not any ordinary person of the Great Strength True Martial Physique, but Hei Lou Lan!

This fellow could not be underestimated. They had contested repeatedly in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building but they were evenly matched, in fact, she even caused much trouble to Fang Yuan.

Now, she was clearly still a mortal but was able to suppress four Immortal Gu, causing even Giant Sun’s will to be surprised.

If Fang Yuan did not lend her Fixed Immortal Travel, she was sure to die. But he still had some fear if she counterattacked at the risk of her life.

Without the intervention of Mo Yao’s will, Fang Yuan had returned to his original nature, he calculated his profits; shortly after, he asked the most crucial question –”Then, what can I obtain?”

“Immortal Gu Dark Limit.” Hei Lou Lan calmly replied, but inwardly she let out a breath of relief.

“Oh, I would like to hear the details.”

“I will help you obtain this Gu. This Gu is in the hands of Gu Immortal Jiang Yu, it can conceal aura, hide heavenly secrets and protect you from deductions. My Great Strength True Martial Physique was sealed with the help of Immortal Gu Dark Limit. You have caused such a huge incident, northern plains’ Gu Immortals will definitely track you down and cause troubles for you. Not only them, there are also the arrangements left behind by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. But with Immortal Gu Dark Limit, your location will not be discovered.”

“Interesting, what else?” Fang Yuan rubbed his chin.

Hei Lou Lan smiled: “We are both smart people, I will speak frankly. I shoulder a huge hatred and grudge so I cannot self-detonate to kill you with me. But you also probably don’t want to force me until I drag you along with me, right?”

“Hmph, you are unlikely to kill me, but it is true that it will be really troublesome!” Fang Yuan gave a cold snort.

Hei Lou Lan’s pupils shrunk: “From your words, it seems you still haven’t fully displayed the power of your killer move. But I also have another trump card!”

Fang Yuan nodded, Hei Lou Lan had already displayed it just before. She could suppress Immortal Gu which was not possible by just relying on Great Strength True Martial Physique.

As long as there were enough profits, there was no need for bloodfest. Fang Yuan was not afraid of Hei Lou Lan’s self-detonation, but there would be no benefits to both of them if he pushed her too far.

Hei Lou Lan continued: “I will help you obtain Immortal Gu Dark Limit and will also return Fixed Immortal Travel once I finish using it. I will also give you my strength path killer move, I believe it will provide some help to your new killer move. Moreover, I haven’t killed your senior brother Tai Bai Yun Sheng.”

Fang Yuan glanced at Tai Bai Yun Sheng who was lying on the ground in unconsciousness, with his body covered by a defensive barrier; this was clearly Hei Lou Lan’s work.

His evaluation of Hei Lou Lan could not help but rise by a level.

Hei Lou Lan was truly not simple, she actually protected Tai Bai Yun Sheng until now. Clearly, she was dissatisfied with Giant Sun’s will and had been scheming against it.

More importantly, she gave many benefits; Immortal Gu Dark Limit was an important benefit, Fixed Immortal Travel was second, then the strength path killer move and finally Tai Bai Yun Sheng. Such an arrangement showed how much she understood Fang Yuan.

“Then your condition is?” Fang Yuan asked.

“Protect me during my Gu Immortal ascension and also help me when I kill my father personally!” Hei Lou Lan’s eyes revealed extreme hatred when she said this.

Fang Yuan’s brows involuntarily rose up.

He did not ask why, and he did not need a reason.

“Hahaha.” Fang Yuan laughed brightly. He looked at the surrounding wind veil of assimilation then turned towards Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan who had torn off the seal of Dark Limit and revealed her true appearance was no longer an obese and fierce bear, instead she had a stimulating, charming body with sharp brows and bright eyes; she was a remarkably beautiful woman filled with a tyrannical aura.

“Interesting! Well, there is no harm in cooperating for the moment.” Fang Yuan praised as he agreed.

The benefits of this cooperation were truly shocking.

In any case, Fixed Immortal Travel was in Hei Lou Lan’s hands, Fang Yuan was also helpless about that and so he might as well cooperate.

Next, Fang Yuan mentioned his own conditions and reached a basic consensus with Hei Lou Lan.

The shrinking of the wind veil of assimilation had almost reached the extreme.

Large numbers of Gu accumulated in the narrow space, crowding together. Many Gu worms were already devoured by the wind veil of assimilation, becoming a part of it.

But the tribulation, formless hands, were also completely gone.

“There is no time today, we will talk more in the future.” After a rough agreement, Hei Lou Lan activated Fixed Immortal Travel; dark green light covered her body.

She was not a Gu Immortal but astonishingly, she could activate Immortal Gu!

Before leaving, she gave a deep glance at Fang Yuan and asked, seemingly without much thought: “Your killer move, what is its name?”

“Myriad Self.” Fang Yuan replied.

Hei Lou Lan nodded, engraving this name to the depths of her heart. She knew that sooner or later, this killer move’s name would rise to fame and spread throughout the five regions!

The next moment, Fixed Immortal Travel activated and Hei Lou Lan disappeared.

The moment she left, Fang Yuan immediately destroyed the surroundings to prevent her from using Fixed Immortal Travel to return.

Wind veil of assimilation was already pressing in very closely, there was only a cabin sized space left for Fang Yuan to move.

Large numbers of Gu worms were already devoured by the wind veil of assimilation, while there were still a few that were flying around.

Fang Yuan released starlight firefly Gu and opened the stargate.

But he did not leave immediately, instead deeply gazing at these flying Gu worms.

He did not have any certainty, but still wanted to give it a try.

A few breaths later, a Gu worm flew towards him of its own accord.

Rank nine wisdom Gu!

“Hahaha...” In the narrow space, Fang Yuan’s laughter was echoing endlessly.

....

One could say:

Open attacks and secret ambushes interweave, schemes and conspiracies conjure countless arrangements. Misfortune descends and one loses their rationality, struggling in peril for that sliver of hope. The immortal zombie is dead and has no lifespan, yet with myriad self one has no worries. Crumbling bones pile into a meeting of two demons, thus creating endless mysteries henceforth!

ChibiGeneral And that brings us to the end of book 3. There was no use of Spring Autumn Cicada, the so-called convenient plot device. With our now-zombie MC, more problems are waiting for him but first, it is time to see our Little Fox Loli once again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 650: Return to Hu Immortal Blessed Land

Book 4: The Demon Lord Rampages Unhindered

Slowly opening his eyes, Fang Yuan woke up.

Seeing crystal walls sparkling with a bright pink colored light, Fang Yuan was dazed, before reacting — he had used the stargate to return to Hu Immortal blessed land from northern plains.

Except that in this trip to northern plains, he had exhausted his mind and spirit, it was such a dangerous trip, it was a near fatal experience. Even though Fang Yuan’s body was that of six arm heavenly zombie king, his mind was still filled with fatigue.

After returning to Hu Immortal blessed land, he made some arrangements and fell into deep sleep.

He slowly woke up now, after sleeping for an unknown amount of time.

He was very exhausted, even now, Fang Yuan only wanted to lie down and not get up.

“My body is filled with death energy, I have completely turned into a zombie, my body knows no fatigue, but my soul is still my original soul, it has its limits and will suffer injuries too.”

A thought flashed in his mind, as Fang Yuan gradually got up.

His mind was in tranquility, it was a comfortable feeling.

Sleeping had the effect of soothing one’s soul.

Fang Yuan breathed out some turbid air, stretching his limbs, but he only felt like his body was rusty, he felt very inflexible and heavy.

He was not surprised, he knew that this was the backlash of using his killer move, myriad self — his soul was greatly depleted. Thus, when he tried to move this extremely strong zombie body, he felt difficulty and resistance.

“Where is the land spirit?” Fang Yuan spoke. His voice was coarse and irritating, like the sound of sand grinding on ice shards, it would give a dry and icy feeling to people.

“Master!” At the next moment, the land spirit Little Hu Immortal’s voice resounded in Fang Yuan’s ears.

The voice was still cute and sweet, but there was a hint of worry and sadness in it.

Fang Yuan turned around, only to see Little Hu Immortal appearing before his left hand with reddened eyes.

“How long have I been asleep?” Fang Yuan nodded, asking.

“Master, you have been asleep for two days and three nights.” Little Hu Immortal replied.

Fang Yuan recalled, two days and three nights was in terms of Hu Immortal blessed land time. Five days in Hu Immortal blessed land was one day in the outside world of the five regions. That means that since Fang Yuan left the wind veil of assimilation, less than a day had passed in northern plains.

Fang Yuan’s inner thoughts settled.

Before he slept, he had made an agreement with Hei Lou Lan, they were temporarily cooperating, thus, he would have to return to northern plains soon.

Little Hu Immortal saw that Fang Yuan was silent, and thought he was upset. She opened her tiny mouth and consoled; “Master, master, don’t be too upset. Your current appearance, although it is quite ugly, I’m sure there’s a way to change it back. I believe that one day, master will go back to his original form. Master, you have to cheer up!”

Fang Yuan laughed speechlessly, stretching out one arm and touching Little Hu Immortal’s tiny head.

Little Hu Immortal dodged for a bit, but eventually, Fang Yuan’s terrifying giant zombie hand landed on her head.

She lowered her head, not making a sound.

Fang Yuan started stroking her hair and Little Hu Immortal could not take it anymore, she cried: “Master, although your palm is icy cold, I still like it!”

Saying this, she hugged Fang Yuan’s huge legs and began sobbing.

Little Hu Immortal was still so cute, she was like a five to six year old child, pure and innocent, cute and tiny. She wore a rainbow dress and her snow-white fox tail was drooping towards the ground, showing her current sad mood.

The land spirit was formed from the fusion of obsession and heavenly power, it was different from wills and would never lie.

Little Hu Immortal spoke the honest truth.

Fang Yuan’s expression was calm, he did not speak. But the fangs that were outside his mouth retracted a little, and the movement of his hand stroking Little Hu Immortal’s head became more gentle.

He split a portion of his consciousness and looked inside his body.

In the first aperture, there was dead silence. There was not a bit of primeval essence inside, only Fang Yuan’s first vital Gu.

The originally clear crystal purple walls had turned into a rock-like material. The rock wall was filled with small cracks, the culprit behind this wound was the Spring Autumn Cicada in the middle of his aperture.

Spring Autumn Cicada’s body was glowing with green and yellow light, the aura of a rank six Immortal Gu was permeating the entire aperture.

If it was his rank five peak stage aperture, it might have burst already. But now that the aperture was dead, it could handle more of the Immortal Gu’s pressure. Even though there was a limit, he was far from reaching it yet.

At the same time, Fang Yuan also noticed that the aperture was completely dry and could not produce any more primeval essence.

“This is the price for turning into a zombie, the aperture is dead and cannot produce any primeval essence.” Fang Yuan assessed in his mind.

He could not help but think of First Gen Gu Yue, he had turned into a blood wight and his aperture could not produce primeval essence, thus he had great desire for Gu worms like Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus.

“My current situation is way better than First Gen Gu Yue. I have already ascended into an immortal, I have nineteen green grape immortal essence and limitless primeval essence!”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan moved his consciousness from the first aperture to the second aperture.

The newly born strength path immortal aperture had also turned grey, the blessed land was now a dead land. The sky was grey and the white stone mountains had collapsed, the ground was rotten and dark, emitting a foul odor. The ground was full of cracks, like the aftermath of an earthquake. This was the result of forcefully containing wisdom Gu.

Inside this immortal aperture were almost all of Fang Yuan’s Gu worms.

The most attention grabbing ones were naturally the Immortal Gu.

There were seven Immortal Gu in here!

This amount was bound to shock others if revealed publicly. Immortal Gu were unique, they were extremely hard to get. Most ordinary Gu Immortals would not even have one Immortal Gu.

If he included Fixed Immortal Travel that he had lent to Hei Lou Lan, as well as Spring Autumn Cicada, Fang Yuan had a total of nine Immortal Gu.

This number could put most rank seven Gu Immortals to shame.

There were three Immortal Gu that were related to Water Pavilion, they were: worldly wave trace Gu, delight in mountain and water Gu and calamity beckoning Gu. The other four Immortal Gu were obtained when Fang Yuan painstakingly smashed the formless fists.

Other than the Immortal Gu, there were mortal Gu.

The most valuable mortal Gu were also obtained when Fang Yuan smashed the formless fists. All these Gu worms originated from the true inheritance secluded domain’s many inheritances, each of them were high quality Gu worms and had profound differences from common Gu.

But of greater importance was the second aperture’s vital Gu — rank four all-out effort Gu, as well as bitter strength Gu, borrow strength Gu, self-reliance Gu, refine essence spirit Gu, earth strength Gu, water strength Gu, wind strength Gu, lightning strength Gu, fire strength Gu, lurking beast coat Gu, aura concealment Gu and so on.

It was these Gu worms that formed the foundation of the killer move myriad self, allowing Fang Yuan to ultimately clinch victory within the wind veil of assimilation.

Other than these, there were the other random Gu worms, like the eagle rise Gu which Fang Yuan had used and expended the most in this journey within northern plains. The wind flower Gu which could allow changes in direction easily, the sole blade Gu obtained from Sole Blade General Pan Ping. There was also the battle bone wheel Gu, Stargate Gu, and the Gu that made up the foundation of a Gu Immortal, hole earth Gu, connecting heaven Gu, divine sense Gu and others.

The highest quantity that he had among them were of beggar moths, almost a thousand of them, they had the effect of storing primeval essence. They were a huge help to Fang Yuan during the final moments of his northern plains trip.

After inspecting his mortal and immortal aperture, Fang Yuan directed his attention to his body.

Without using a mirror, he knew that he had turned into a monster completely. Six meters tall, a green face and sharp fangs, blood red eyes, bulging muscles that were tough as rocks. Most importantly, he had eight arms, other than his two human arms, his other six arms were terrifying in appearance, they originated from the other rank five flying zombie Gu — asura zombie Gu, heavenly demon zombie Gu, blood wight Gu, nightmare zombie Gu, plague zombie Gu, and earth chief zombie Gu.

Fang Yuan did not care whether his appearance was handsome or ugly. Little Hu Immortal was concerned about it because she was formed from the obsession of the female Gu Immortal, Fairy Bai Hu.

What Fang Yuan cared about was that the zombie body caused his cultivation to stagnate, he was unable to advance his cultivation in the slightest. This was a huge obstacle in his pursuit of the demonic path and his dream.

He had grand ambitions, he wanted to obtain eternal life. Eternal life was in reference to being the strongest, an indestructible being that cannot be taken down by tribulations or disasters, a person that cannot be harmed by anyone, as well as having infinite lifespan.

Although a zombie body had no lifespan, his soul could still suffer damage, and his body could still be destroyed if he was attacked by someone stronger than him, there were still many flaws and weaknesses. Thus, many Gu Masters and Gu Immortals would turn into zombies only after they were left with no other choice. This method was truly a last resort for survival, it was like longing towards heaven while being in hell.

“How can I get rid of the zombie body, returning to life from death, and obtain a live human body again?” Fang Yuan asked in his heart, evidently, this was a problem that needed to be solved.

Although he had no answers, he had some rough ideas.

Interrogating Mo Yao’s will who was in his immortal aperture was one method. Using wisdom Gu was the second.

Little Hu Immortal’s crying slowly stopped, as Fang Yuan retracted his hand, his emotions calmed down as he asked: “During the days when I was asleep, did anything happen?”

Little Hu Immortal heard her master’s inquiry and immediately stood up straight, she wiped her tears and answered him maturely: “Reporting to master, there were two things. First, your senior brother, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, had already woken up, he has been wanting to meet you over these last few days, he was so anxious he even cried several times. But master had given me the orders, thus I refused to let him in. The second matter is regarding Immortal Crane Sect, they have stopped engaging in our rockmen transactions.”

Fang Yuan heard this and frowned lightly.

Fang Yuan was well aware of the reason why Immortal Crane Sect stopped the rockmen transactions. Hu Immortal blessed land had Dang Hun mountain, this was something known by everyone in central continent. Immortal Crane Sect’s target was Dang Hun mountain, but they could not attack Hu Immortal blessed land directly, thus over a year ago, they had sent Fang Zheng to negotiate, eventually settling on the transactions of rockmen. But their primary objective was Dang Hun mountain and the guts Gu.

After that, Immortal Crane Sect had repeatedly urged and emphasized while requesting Fang Yuan to sell the guts Gu, but he refused them every time.

After a year, seeing that Hu Immortal blessed land was refusing to give in, Immortal Crane Sect had lost their patience, thus stopping the rockmen trade. As to whether they would express anger and want to force Fang Yuan to renegotiate, or whether they have other objectives, that would depend on how the situation progresses.

“Hu Immortal blessed land is not a utopia, it is located at Tian Ti mountain, and the outside situation is also perilous.”

If Fang Yuan had a blessed land as an immortal aperture, his reliance towards Hu Immortal blessed land would greatly reduce. He could even swallow Hu Immortal blessed land directly, making his escape and leaving this place. Unfortunately, he was now a zombie, his immortal aperture was a dead aperture, there was no way to consider this.

Fang Yuan thought about it, but for now could not come up with any ideas.

“Damn it, after becoming a zombie, my cognitive abilities have weakened, my thoughts are moving slower and slower, it is too inefficient.” Fang Yuan frowned deeply, he started to feel the drawback of the zombie body.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 651: Guilt-ridden Tai Bai Yun Sheng

The stagnation of his cultivation was only the main drawback, other than that, there were many other smaller drawbacks. One of them, was the fact that he had no sense of pain. His cognition slowing down was another problem.

In this world, wisdom path had already deciphered the mysteries behind how a person thinks.

When a person thinks, many thoughts would be created in their minds. Intelligent people would generate a large number of thoughts more quickly, while stupid people would generate fewer thoughts, and at a slower pace.

When these individual thoughts collide into one another, they would fuse or possibly be destroyed, eventually, one or more new thoughts would be created. These new thoughts would be the result of their thinking.

The brain is the place which gives birth to thoughts, it is an important domain for all life forms when they think. But this domain is decided on two aspects.

One was the body, while the other was the soul.

If a person’s soul resided in a wild beast’s body, then this ‘wild beast’ would become very intelligent. This level of intelligence would far surpass an ordinary wild beast, but would be lower than a normal human being.

Gu is the essence of heaven and earth, man is the spirit of all beings. Among all living beings, humans were the most intelligent. To achieve this, one needed a human’s physical body and a human’s soul.

Now that Fang Yuan’s body was completely dead, only his soul was intact. Thus, in his mind, the number of thoughts generated would be much fewer, and the speed of his cognition would reduce greatly.

Intensive thinking would lead to a sharp fall in the number of thoughts. Because the zombie’s mind produces fewer thoughts, and at a slower pace, the thoughts generated cannot keep up with the expenditure of thoughts.

If Fang Yuan was a brute, so be it. But he was very skilled at scheming, he was an ambitious person who was used to plotting in order to succeed in situations, after becoming a zombie, he felt very uncomfortable, he was not used to this new change at all.

“No wonder most zombies like First Gen Gu Yue choose to enter deep sleep. When one is sleeping, they would think less, and the consumption of their thoughts would fall sharply, thus they would be able to accumulate more thoughts in their mind. When they battle, they would think intensely and use up these thoughts.” Fang Yuan had a new understanding in his mind.

This was the same reason as that of Giant Sun’s will, who chose to enter deep sleep.

“The less I think, the more dull and slow I would become. To think that one day, I, Gu Yue Fang Yuan, would turn into an idiot. Hehe.” Fang Yuan mocked himself in his mind, collecting his scattered thoughts.

Next, he turned to Little Hu Immortal: “Bring my senior brother, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, in here, I want to meet him.”

Little Hu Immortal replied to him obediently, immediately vanishing from the spot.

She was the land spirit, she could freely teleport anywhere within Hu Immortal blessed land.

After ten breaths of time, Little Hu Immortal reappeared, this time bringing Tai Bai Yun Sheng with her.

“Junior brother, you... sigh!” What shall we do now?” Taking a look at Fang Yuan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was stunned, his eyes turned red as he spoke in a choking voice.

He already was aware of the fact regarding Fang Yuan turning into a six arm heavenly zombie king completely. This was something Fang Yuan had specified to Little Hu Immortal earlier, as something that could be exposed to Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Originally, I had advanced into a strength path Gu Immortal, what a pity that I have ended up in this state, there is no choice, I will have to continue calling you senior brother. Come! Senior brother, this is a crude place, please find a block of stone and take a seat.”

The cave that Fang Yuan was in now was dug out from the center of Dang Hun mountain back in the day by Fairy Bai Hu, it was the place where she had built Dang Hun palace.

After Dang Hun mountain was destroyed by the gruel mud Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan had returned it to normal with Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

The restored Dang Hun mountain retained this mountain cave.

But the golden bricks, the silver tiles, the pink curtains, the large round bed, the golden silk blankets, and the fragrant wind chimes that were in Dang Hun palace were nowhere to be found.

Rank six Immortal Gu Landscape as Before, it could restore any mountain or body of water back to a state in the past. The furniture inside Dang Hun palace did not count as being part of a mountain or body of water.

Of course, Fang Yuan did not want to restore the former Dang Hun palace, either. After all, Fairy Bai Hu’s bedroom was way too pink, it was filled with a feminine aura and did not suit Fang Yuan.

There was no furniture in the mountain cave, it was really crude and simple. Tai Bai Yun Sheng chose the boulder closest to Fang Yuan and sat down.

Right now, his inner thoughts were filled with concern, gratitude, and unconditional trust towards Fang Yuan.

After all, the two of them had braved dangers and near death experiences together, they had gone through a lot in northern plains, and had witnessed the sincerity and feelings in each other’s hearts.

Not to mention the two times Fang Yuan had helped Tai Bai Yun Sheng in the true inheritance secluded domain, he did not hesitate at all, not even batting an eyelid. The first time, it was to retrieve landscape as before Immortal Gu, while the second time, he gave up on man as before Immortal Gu in order to save Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s life.

During that moment, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was so touched his tears nearly flowed down his cheeks.

He had a Gu Immortal inheritance, he naturally knew the immense attraction an Immortal Gu had towards a Gu Immortal. Fang Yuan gave up on the Immortal Gu in order to save him, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, this completely displayed Fang Yuan’s true feelings!

After that, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was captured by Hei Lou Lan. Fang Yuan immediately changed his direction, taking back man as before Gu first, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was in complete agreement with his actions and his heart settled, this was truly a rational decision.

When he woke up, he found that he was inside Hu Immortal blessed land, and was out of danger.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was jubilant, being able to luckily maintain his life was naturally a very joyous matter. But what made him even happier was that afterwards, seeing that he had woken up, Little Hu Immortal returned Landscape as Before and Man as Before, these two Immortal Gu back to him!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a soft and kind nature, he had deep attachment towards these two Immortal Gu. Regaining his important treasures after losing them, he was truly overjoyed.

But when he heard about Fang Yuan’s situation from Little Hu Immortal, his heart shuddered, all of his joy was swept away, his inner thoughts was filled with sadness, guilt, regret, and pity.

Thus, he had repeatedly tried to meet Fang Yuan, attempting to give it his all to save this junior brother.

At this moment, he sat on the stone boulder, he had an expression of grief as he sighed deeply: “I am ashamed, not only did junior brother save this life of mine, I even have to bear your consolation and kind words after meeting you.”

Fang Yuan stretched out one arm, patting Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s shoulders, using his hoarse voice as he laughed: “Destiny is unpredictable, most things in life do not go your way. As a person, we should be more open minded. Although I became a zombie, it is still halfway between life and death, compared to those dead people and Giant Sun’s will, we are much better! Especially when at the final moment, I even obtained wisdom Gu! This is a huge profit, senior brother does not need to blame yourself, you should be happy.”

When Fang Yuan was leaving, he opened the stargate.

Wisdom Gu knew that this was a tunnel to the outside world, its survival instincts urged it to fly towards Fang Yuan on its own initiative.

This was something Fang Yuan had expected.

Stargate Gu was a mortal Gu, it could not contain the aura of an Immortal Gu. Fang Yuan gritted his teeth as he forcefully placed wisdom Gu in his immortal aperture.

Even though wisdom Gu restrained its own aura and Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture was a dead land, having much greater capability to support it, Fang Yuan was barely able to handle it during the short period of time needed to pass through the stargate.

The moment he returned to Hu Immortal blessed land, he quickly let wisdom Gu out.

Hu Immortal blessed land was a rank six immortal aperture, but it was situated on Tian Ti mountain, it took in the earth qi of central continent and was very stable. It was not comparable with an immortal aperture that was still in a Gu Immortal’s body.

Regarding wisdom Gu, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was aware of the matter.

“An outstanding person will do outstanding things, junior brother’s abilities have truly made me feel nothing but deep admiration. But even the legendary rank nine Immortal Gu would not be able to treat junior brother’s zombie body. Why don’t you let me try and use man as before Gu!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was very emotional, at this point, he had already stood up, ready to give it a try.

But Fang Yuan stopped him.

“Senior brother, you know clearly deep within your mind that this man as before Immortal Gu can only return a person to a prior state within one moment in the past. Although it can revive a person, such a long time has already gone by, I do not know what countless number of moments have passed since then. How can it possible heal me? It will be in vain even if you try, why should you waste your precious green grape immortal essence?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression was ashen, his emotions were unstable. When Fang Yuan had finished his words, he suddenly stretched out his palms, slapping harshly on his own face!

Crack crack crack.

Five to six sharp sounds were heard, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was actually slapping himself.

“Senior brother, stop it! What are you doing this for?” Fang Yuan acted like he was caught off guard, he hurriedly stood up, stretching out two arms and grabbing Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s hands.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng could not compete with Fang Yuan’s strength at all, after being immobilized, he cried profusely: “Junior brother, I have let you down, I am really very sorry!”

As he cried, his knees bent as he actually attempted to kneel down.

Fang Yuan quickly grabbed him, asking in shock: ” Senior brother, what are you doing?!”

“Junior brother, if back then, I had lent man as before Immortal Gu to you, you would have been able to use it at the crucial moment and would not have turned into this current form!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng said with a tear stricken face.

He was a very kind person, although he had indirectly caused the death of Gao Yang and Zhu Zai in the past, that was just a person’s instincts to survive. To him, Fang Yuan was the savior of his life, a benefactor. He was also his junior brother, they had the same master, but this person who was his benefactor and junior brother, was harmed because of his own negligence.

If back then, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had taken the initiative to lend his Gu worm to Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan would not have ended up in such an awkward state.

After Tai Bai Yun Sheng woke up, this thought had been lurking in his mind, it caused him to feel great grief and regret, he was in deep agony.

At this moment, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was weakly falling towards the ground, he was in agony and regret, he was only supported by Fang Yuan’s two arms.

Fang Yuan was six meters tall, he looked down at the crying Tai Bai Yun Sheng from above as a trace of eeriness flashed across his eyes.

“I am very glad that you have such thoughts...” He laughed in his mind, but with his mouth he sounded very sincere as he said: “Senior brother, you do not need to be like this. Although a zombie’s body is very hard to revert, there exist many ways and methods that are available for me. And don’t forget that we have wisdom Gu here.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng slowly shook his head, he spoke weakly: “Wisdom... wisdom Gu is as high as rank nine, it came here with you all because of its survival instincts. Junior brother, even if you are a rank six Gu Immortal, you are unable to refine it, and there is no way you can control... can control it!”

“Of course I understand this. But even like this, just a bit of the light of wisdom is able to give me great rewards. In fact, my current zombie body has no lifespan, it is even more suitable for getting close to wisdom Gu!” Fang Yuan stretched out his third arm, patting Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s back lightly as he explained amicably.

“And what’s more, I still have Mo Yao’s will.”

“Mo Yao?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was confused.

“This was an additional gain of mine in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Mo Yao was once a refinement path grandmaster, a certain generation’s fairy of central continent’s Spirit Affinity House.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a born and bred man of northern plains, he had never heard of Mo Yao’s name, but as Spirit Affinity House was one of the the famous top ten sects of central continent, he had heard of it before.

“A certain generation’s fairy of Spirit Affinity House, as well as a refinement path grandmaster. It seems that this Mo Yao is not simple.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s gloomy expression eased.

Fang Yuan laughed again, saying: “And most importantly, senior brother, don’t forget that we still have master. I am sure that master has a solution for this. I will not hide this from you, after master handed me the mission for Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he only left me a single consumable Gu, with the specific use of reporting the details to him. I had already used this Gu two days ago, when I first returned to Hu Immortal blessed land.”

Fang Yuan had searched Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s soul earlier in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, and learnt about his life experiences as well as secrets.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had once met a mysterious beggar, and obtained a time path Gu Immortal inheritance from him.

Thus, Fang Yuan lied and swindled, using his eloquent tongue and world class acting skills to convince Tai Bai Yun Sheng in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, making him believe that both of them have the same master, which is that old beggar.

Fang Yuan even gave that old beggar a random title of Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng believed this lie from Fang Yuan completely.

Now that Fang Yuan mentioned this, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s eyes were shining: “So junior brother has a method to contact master! This is truly fantastic, others might not have a way, but master is such a knowledgeable person, I am sure he has a method!”

The fires of hope were burning in his heart.

From his tone, one could tell that the old beggar held a very important position within his inner thoughts, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was filled with confidence towards this old beggar.

If at this moment, he knew the truth, who knows what expression he would show.

Fang Yuan showed no flaws, replying calmly: “Senior brother, don’t be hasty, I believe that master’s letter is going to come in a few days, we should wait patiently.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded, after Fang Yuan used the name of Purple Mountain True Monarch, his mood had finally calmed down.

He stood up straight, as Fang Yuan let go of his arms.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng took a step back, his gaze was locked with Fang Yuan’s bright red eyes, he raised his palm and placed it by his chest, saying with a very solemn expression: “Junior brother, I will engrave your kindness deep into my heart, I will never forget it. I swear to Longevity Heaven, even if master has no way to cure you, I, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, will spend my entire life looking for a way to revive you, junior brother!”

“Hahaha! Longevity Heaven is Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s grotto-heaven, we have just wrecked this old fellow’s True Yang Building, now you are swearing in its name, this is simply too ironic!” Fang Yuan raised his head and laughed: “Senior brother, I will be frank with you! We are all master’s pupils, and I have saved your life before. A droplet received in need will be repaid with an entire spring, next, I will need you to repay me fully!”

“Tell me.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng immediately responded without hesitation. He had long since decided to repay this debt, even if Fang Yuan wanted him to do the impossible, he would have no objections! During these days after he woke up, he had felt extremely guilty, his conscience was taking a beating and only by making a sacrifice for Fang Yuan would his heart feel slightly better.

Thus, Fang Yuan also became solemn: “This matter, I have been thinking about it for a long time. That is our seniority issue! I am master’s legacy disciple, but because you became an immortal, you caught up to me. I am unsatisfied with this! I was originally a strength path Gu Immortal, even though I turned into a zombie, but sooner or later, there will be a day when I revert back. Thus, according to seniority, I am the senior brother, you are the junior brother.”

“What?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng stared with his eyes wide open, he had never expected that the great debt Fang Yuan was requesting him to pay back was for such a tiny matter.

A touched feeling welled up in his heart.

Fang Yuan was someone who did not want to take advantage of his favor, but was he, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, someone who did not know how to repay favors?

Tai Bai Yun Sheng thought in his mind, he sighed and stretched out his palm, patting Fang Yuan’s leg which was tough like a mountain rock. His sharp and rough leg hair even caused pain to Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s palm.

Fang Yuan was like a giant, about six meters tall.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng could only pat his leg with that height.

He was solemn, before raising his head, looking at Fang Yuan’s face, he laughed teasingly: “Oh junior brother, that is wishful thinking! How can a thing like seniority be so easily changed? Unless master personally rearranges our positions, I will definitely still be your senior brother, hahaha!”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a man not lacking in pride, how could he repay this huge favor so easily?

“Hey!” Fang Yuan shouted, venting his unhappiness: “Old Bai, why are you such a petty person! Could it be that you forgot what I said earlier? I will definitely not call you senior brother!”

“Hahaha, junior brother, I can completely understand you, this senior brother does not mind.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng laughed and laughed, he was so touched his tears were overflowing.

How many years had passed in which he had not laughed so joyfully?

He had finally found his organisation.

Although he had not known Fang Yuan for long, he felt very close to him, it was as if they were family...

His laughter was echoing in the mountain cave, with the pink crystal mountain walls also looking very heartwarming at this moment.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 652: Seeing Wisdom Gu Again

There was only Fang Yuan left in the cave, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had already left.

He sat on the stone bench, his eight monstrous arms were hanging down, some were behind his back, some were crossed, together with his huge body, just by sitting, he gave off a mountainous aura, it gave people fear.

As for the way to deal with Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Fang Yuan had considered it deeply.

Fang Yuan only trusted himself, he would never truly trust others.

If he killed Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he would obtain man as before Gu and landscape as before Gu, as well as his rank six time path immortal aperture. But this was not maximising his benefits.

He could not deny the fact that Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a very useful chess piece.

This ‘useful’ was in two aspects.

Firstly, he was worth using. Before he became an immortal, he was a famous healing Gu Master in northern plains. Now that he was a rank six time path Gu Immortal with a high grade blessed land, and don’t forget, he was even a flying master, he had great value if exploited.

The second aspect was that he was easy to control. Fang Yuan had once searched his soul, thus he knew about Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s life experience clearly. Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a kind-hearted man, he was conscientious and knew how to repay favors. He was indebted to Fang Yuan, because he had been helped several times in True Yang Building, especially during the final moment when he was rescued from the wind veil of assimilation, and even had his two Immortal Gu returned to him, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had placed his complete trust in Fang Yuan now.

This point could be seen when Tai Bai Yun Sheng chose his seat earlier.

There were many boulders in the cave. Fang Yuan had such an ugly appearance and was so huge, normal people who got close to Fang Yuan would feel great pressure and would subconsciously keep a distance from him. But Tai Bai Yun Sheng purposely chose a seat that was closest to Fang Yuan.

This meant that in his heart, Fang Yuan was one of the closest people to him, he was not afraid that Fang Yuan would cause any harm to him.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had once harmed Gao Yang and Zhu Zai, this was the most important point!

His survival instincts took over his reasoning, this was something very natural. After that incident, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was filled with guilt and could not forget it. His appearance was haggard and he was mentally tortured. After Fang Yuan’s entrapment, he had almost gone crazy and rushed his immortal ascension, his original intention was to die.

Attempting suicide because of his guilt, one could see how powerful his conscience was.

By coincidence, Tai Bai Yun Sheng received the help of Giant Sun’s will and successfully became a Gu Immortal, before falling unconscious.

Fang Yuan used the glass owner token, entering the round of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building he was placed in and woke him up. At this crucial moment, he told Tai Bai Yun Sheng about the ‘secret’ of their master. This precisely hit a weak point within Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s mental state.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng denied his own self, thus he was in great agony and was very lost.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan appeared, giving him a group of apprentices and an organisation to provide him a sense of belonging, it gave him a feeling of protection and warmth. Next, Fang Yuan entered and exited his time path immortal aperture, casually asking him to take care of his Immortal Gu, this gave him the initial confidence.

In addition, during their encounters and difficulties in True Yang Building, all that had happened gave Tai Bai Yun Sheng a good reason to fully trust Fang Yuan. In a way, he had to thank Mo Yao for interfering with his own mind, otherwise, how could he have obtained Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s unconditional trust?

“Tai Bai Yun Sheng caused the death of Gao Yang and Zhu Zai, this greatly violated his values and beliefs, he harboured extreme guilt. He felt that he was not such a person, yet he committed such an act. Now that I am his benefactor, he is indebted to me, he will definitely repay me a hundredfold or even a thousandfold. This is not only because he knows to repay favors, but also because this is a chance for him to prove that he is a good person!” Fang Yuan calmly analyzed.

Bad people would not repay favors, in fact, they would even return the favor with ill intentions. In the future, the more Tai Bai Yun Sheng sacrifices for Fang Yuan, the more it would prove that he is a good person. That way, this can cancel out the guilt he felt towards Gao Yang and Zhu Zai. This touched upon the psychological studies from Earth, including the balance theory and compensation mentality.

In a way, Fang Yuan gave Tai Bai Yun Sheng a chance to prove himself once more, and a reason for him to continue living.

Fang Yuan knew this clearly, thus when he saved Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he even returned Man as Before and Landscape as Before, these two Immortal Gu.

“I have way too many Immortal Gu, it is very costly to feed them. At this point, leaving Man as Before and Landscape as Before to Tai Bai Yun Sheng is undoubtedly better. At the same time, my immortal aperture is dead, it cannot produce immortal essence. I only have nineteen beads of green grape immortal essence, the more I use them, the fewer I have left. Although I can use some of Bai Hu’s immortal essence, isn’t it best if I can make use of Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s green grape immortal essence instead?”

Thinking of the cost of feeding Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan felt a headache.

Raising a Gu worm was like supporting a mistress, Gu Masters are often unable to afford it or maintain their upkeep. Ever since Fang Yuan had Hu Immortal blessed land, he had no problems feeding mortal Gu. But now that he had so many Immortal Gu, not even Hu Immortal blessed land could afford such high costs.

This was a blissful worry!

Many Gu Immortals did not have a single Immortal Gu, they were still looking for one. In Fang Yuan’s previous life, he also struggled to refine one, Spring Autumn Cicada, after he finally succeeded after numerous difficulties, he was forced to self-detonate.

Right now, Fang Yuan was racking his brain, trying to think of how to feed so many Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan sat silently, attempting to find some inspiration from his previous life’s memories, after trying for a while, he gave up.

“Sigh, after becoming a zombie, my cognition has truly slowed down. Earlier when speaking to Tai Bai Yun Sheng, I could feel my thoughts moving slowly. Right now, my thinking speed cannot keep up with my original pace.”

He summoned the land spirit, Little Hu Immortal: “How is wisdom Gu? Where is it now?”

Little Hu Immortal was the blessed land’s land spirit, she could understand everything that was happening in the blessed land.

“Master, wisdom Gu had gone deep underground since it was brought here by you. It found a rockman cave and is currently slumbering inside.” Little Hu Immortal closed her eyes, after sensing for a while, she opened her giant watery eyes and said this.

Fang Yuan nodded, ordering: “Bring me there.”

The cave that wisdom Gu was in was rather big, after Fang Yuan was brought over by Little Hu Immortal, he could still move about freely.

Sensing that Fang Yuan had arrived, wisdom Gu shone with a five colored light.

Little Hu Immortal sat on Fang Yuan’s shoulder, staring at wisdom Gu curiously.

This was the rank nine wisdom Gu!

Although Little Hu Immortal could sense everything in the blessed land, but such a close range encounter was still very rare.

“Oh wisdom Gu, I helped you to escape and saved your life. According to our earlier agreement, it is time for you to hold your end of the deal.” In the dark and grey cave, Fang Yuan’s voice echoed.

Wisdom Gu was silent, after a few breaths’ time, it floated up into the air.

At the same time, it summoned the light of wisdom.

“So beautiful!” Little Hu Immortal stared with shining eyes, laughing joyfully.

The sphere shaped light of wisdom was shining in many colors, it engulfed Fang Yuan and Little Hu Immortal.

Fang Yuan could instantly feel many of his thoughts colliding, he could think at lightning speed, this was the result of an accelerated cognition speed.

“This feeling... this is so comforting.” Little Hu Immortal slowly opened her eyes wide and stared dazedly, she was immersed in the wonderful feeling of being in the light of wisdom.

But after a few breaths’ time, her body started fading.

“Little Hu Immortal, you were formed from obsession, although fused with the heavenly power, you are still restricted by the wisdom Gu. You cannot stay here for long, quickly go back.” Fang Yuan stretched out a finger, pointing at Little Hu Immortal’s head, waking her up.

Little Hu Immortal hugged her head, her white cheeks turned red with excitement.

“Master, master, I can’t believe I could become so smart. Wisdom Gu is amazing!” She shouted, like a child who had found new toys, she was overjoyed.

“Master is most amazing, you could even get wisdom Gu! Just let me stay here a bit longer, is that okay?” She started bootlicking Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “It seems that wisdom Gu had made you think more, quickly get out.” Saying so, his two fingers pressed on Little Hu Immortal’s head.

Little Hu Immortal’s cute, tiny head was squeezed by Fang Yuan’s finger, as he pressed again and again.

Little Hu Immortal pouted slightly as she shook her head: “Master, I am going to leave.”

She did not dare to disobey Fang Yuan’s words, she vanished with a flash.

The cave was quiet again, Fang Yuan did not sit down, since the zombie’s body was extremely hard and tough, there was no difference in feeling between sitting or standing.

He stood in the halo, the first thing he did was to inspect Mo Yao’s will which was suppressed in his immortal aperture.

Mo Yao’s will was unaffected by the light of wisdom.

Even though he had confirmed this earlier in the wind veil of assimilation, Fang Yuan’s heart was finally at ease after confirming it once again.

“Once the immortal aperture is formed, it is a small world. The walls of the immortal aperture are the walls of heaven and earth. It isolates the inside and outside, there is almost no outside force that can influence the small world inside.”

Fang Yuan shut his bright red eyes as he started to think and ponder.

He had become a zombie, the production of thoughts in his mind had become much slower, and his cognition had also slowed. But the light of wisdom could cause his thoughts to collide at an increased speed, as they collided, he would expend a lot of thoughts in a short period of time.

If he was another ordinary zombie basking in this light, although he would turn smarter for a moment, he would become an idiot immediately afterwards.

But there were wills in Fang Yuan’s mind.

These wills were all formed from wisdom path Gu worms, they could think.

Earlier, in order to deal with Mo Yao, Fang Yuan had delved into wisdom path and bought many different Gu worms like special will Gu, deliberate will Gu, sharp intent Gu and so on. These wills all helped him at the last moments of his journey in northern plains.

Right now, Fang Yuan’s brain could no longer keep up, he had to use these wills as replacements.

His primeval essence was limitless, thus his wills were also near infinite. Under the light of wisdom, the originally stable wills all melted like snow in sunlight, they were shrinking.

What followed after was the appearance of flashes of inspiration, and his old memories were becoming clearer. As long as Fang Yuan concentrated and recalled his memories, these huge amounts of memories would vividly play out again in his mind.

At this moment, the world seemed brighter.

Even before he had truly thought of the result, Fang Yuan already had many different ideas to resolve the problem. As long as he followed these methods, Fang Yuan was sure that he would be able to find the most suitable method to solve this problem!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 653: Bankruptcy and Zombie Alliance

In the underground cave, Fang Yuan bathed in the light of wisdom and pondered deeply.

“Although I am reborn and have five hundred years of experience from my past life, but in contrast to old monsters like Mo Yao and Giant Sun, I pale in comparison. My previous dominance in this aspect has already vanished.”

Throughout the flow of history, there were as many grand heroes as there were stars in the sky!

In the history of humans, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was an unrivalled expert that could seldom be produced even in a million years.

Fairy Mo Yao was a refinement path grandmaster, and back then was the fairy of Spirit Affinity House; she was a famous and influential person with shocking talent. In those days, she would be listed among the top ten renowned Gu Immortals in the large Central Continent.

Fang Yuan had firm willpower and had gone through unique experiences, but he was also a single unremarkable star in this vast starry sky. With just his current strength and foundation, it was hard for him to be on par with the great experts that appeared in history.

“This trip to northern plains has far surpassed my original expectations. If not for the meddling of Mo Yao’s will, I could have stayed in True Yang Building and explored gradually using a different identity every ten years. But at this point, the die is cast and northern plains is bound to be in a great uproar; countless experts and powerful forces will seek to find trouble with me!”

Fang Yuan summed up his experiences and sensed that the losses he suffered were due to his weakness in the aspect of wisdom path.

His strong points were in calculating and scheming. And building upon his experience preserved from rebirth, his advantages were further amplified.

However, Mo Yao’s will was able to disturb his thoughts which caused him to not be able to think properly.

“Eighty-Eight True Yang Building is a spiritual symbol of northern plains and I am the main culprit in causing it to be toppled. If I am captured now, the consequences will be unimaginable. Although I am able to hide in Hu Immortal blessed land right now, it is not actually safe. Not speaking of Immortal Crane Sect which has been eyeing Dang Hun mountain since the beginning, perhaps northern plains’ Gu Immortals could discover my origins and track me down through wisdom path deductions!”

Fang Yuan knew clearly that holing up within Hu Immortal blessed land seemed extremely safe but was actually akin to waiting for death. Only by going on the offensive before these enemies ascertain the truth could he remedy this perilous situation.

“Dark limit Immortal Gu, I have heard of it even in my previous life, it can indeed conceal aura and obstruct calculations. If I can get this Gu, I believe I can avert the dangerous situation.”

Fang Yuan thought of Hei Lou Lan.

This woman was not of minor importance and was an outstanding, ruthless person. She was pragmatic and could flexibly take advantage of situations; she betrayed her ancestor for her own interests and wanted to kill her own father – these evidently displayed a demonic nature! She possessed Great Strength True Martial Physique and also obtained a strength path Immortal Gu, once she advanced into a Gu Immortal, her path would be one of rapid progress.

One could say that she was similar to Fang Yuan, but precisely because of this, in cooperating with her, it demanded exceptional caution.

Whether it was Immortal Gu Dark Limit or Fixed Immortal Travel, they were both things he desired.

Fang Yuan’s thoughts started to slow down as he thought till this point.

The wills in his mind were nearly expended.

Fang Yuan was dazed for a moment, before retreating from the light of wisdom to activate Gu worms and create new wills.

His mind was soon filled with many types of wills.

“It is a pity that mortal Gu cannot create too many wills and they are easily consumed in the light of wisdom. If I can use an Immortal Gu to create wills, their number would be enormous and could also be sustained for a long period of time, allowing me to think as much as I like!”

Fang Yuan felt some regret.

He had a rank six wisdom path Immortal Gu, Delight in Water and Mountain which could create joyful will.

However, Fang Yuan did not use it after slight consideration.

Immortal Gu required immortal essence. He only had nineteen beads of green grape immortal essence left, and because his immortal aperture had become a dead land, using one immortal essence bead would mean one fewer bead left without replenishment.

He needed to save his immortal essence as much as possible to be prepared for the times when they are necessary.

Thus, he opted to use mortal Gu for now.

After accumulating a fixed amount of mortal wills, Fang Yuan stepped into the light of wisdom again.

This time, he did not think about external situations, instead concentrating on himself.

“I have transformed into a zombie, my cultivation cannot progress an inch, how to resurrect and restore my human body is the first issue. It would be great if I could use yin-yang rotation Gu, but I am an immortal zombie while yin-yang rotation Gu only is at rank four. The second issue is that I am already bankrupt!”

Fang Yuan had invested almost all of his savings in his trip to northern plains. His required expenses were now already greater than his earnings and he was now facing bankruptcy.

He did not even have one immortal essence stone in his possession now, even Hu Immortal blessed land had become extremely barren.

Before the decisive battle in northern plains, Fang Yuan had already used up the remaining immortal essence stones. At the final juncture, he even had to exchange his goods to make purchases. He had already sold almost all the fox groups and wolf groups in Hu Immortal blessed land; in the large grassland in the blessed land, foxes and wolves could only be seen occasionally.

Most of the nearly ten thousand hairy men Fang Yuan had bought in the past were also sold for emergency support. Now there were only around two thousand old hairy men that were experienced in refining Gu left which Fang Yuan was reluctant to sell off.

The rockmen slave transactions had been a strong economic pillar for Fang Yuan. But after Immortal Crane Sect stopped the transactions, this pillar crumbled down. The rockmen trading market in treasure yellow heaven had already been divided up completely and it would be hard for Fang Yuan to squeeze in. This caused the already bad situation to turn worse.

There was no use in merely having powerful battle strength. There must be enough resources to support one’s cultivation.

The way of Gu involved nurturing, using and refining; Gu Masters could not just use Gu, they had to raise and also refine Gu.

Fang Yuan was now a zombie, his cultivation had stagnated which further increased the resources he required. Only by doing so could he have a higher chance of restoring his life.

Three days later.

Within Dang Hun Palace.

Fang Yuan made simple arrangements once again, building a rough hall where stone chairs were arranged in two rows. The main chair was as spacious as a bed with its back as high as a monument, however when Fang Yuan sat on it, it fit him just right.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was sitting on the first seat to Fang Yuan’s left; his brows were furrowed as he held a small and exquisite white dove.

This white dove was flickering with faint radiance, it was the rank five messenger dove Gu.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s consciousness left the messenger dove Gu after few moments; he heaved a deep sigh and worriedly said: “Master does not plan on helping and is making this a test for junior brother.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “Right. Master criticized me in the letter, saying I was greedy for small gains, not listening to his advice before I left and rashly opening Di Qiu inheritance, which caused me to encounter Mo Yao’s will and created a series of ill consequences. So this time, he wants me to resolve this issue by myself. Sigh, master’s style has always been like this, it seems I have no other option but to work hard!!”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded, approving of Fang Yuan’s last sentence.

Back then, the old beggar disappeared right after giving him the Gu Immortal inheritance, not concerned with anything else. This style was the same as Fang Yuan’s test, thus Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not sense anything weird.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng asked in a quiet voice: “Junior brother, you said master had already taken in six legacy disciples. You are ranked fifth, grasping strength and enslavement path, with two Gu Immortal inheritances. That means you have five other fellow disciples, how about we ask them for help?”

Fang Yuan shook his head.

What a joke, of course it was not possible!

This messenger dove Gu's contents were fabricated by Fang Yuan. Purple Mountain True Monarch's name was also casually made up by him. The six great legacy disciples were even more fictitious, how could one ask for help from those that did not exist?

"This is not possible." Fang Yuan gave a bitter smile, his gaze revealing extreme sincerity, "First of all, I only have heard master mentioning these fellow disciples once in a while. I have not personally seen them and also don't know what their identities are or where they are located. More importantly, this is a task assigned by master! He has already approved of your status in the letter and has ranked you as the fifth disciple, and has said you have to help me for this period of time to solve this issue. At the same time, he allowed me to retain and use all the spoils of battle from northern plains, this is the help master is giving me. If I still ask for help from the other disciples, it would not be what master wishes for. After all, this is his test for me."

Tai Bai Yun Sheng worriedly and anxiously said: "Even if master did not say it, I would still remain by junior brother's side and use all my strength to help you! What are your plans now?"

"Old Bai, you also read the contents in the letter. Master mentioned for me to join Zombie Alliance."

"What kind of organisation is this Zombie Alliance?" Tai Bai Yun Sheng asked. He had just recently advanced into a Gu Immortal, as such there were many things regarding Gu Immortals he did not know about.

"Zombie Alliance is just like what its name implies, it is an alliance of zombies. This alliance has existed since long ago, and reportedly it appeared in the Medieval Antiquity Era, three hundred thousand years ago. Now, it is a super force which is spread throughout the five regions; its main headquarters is in eastern sea, with a branch in each of the other four regions." Fang Yuan introduced.

"It actually extends throughout the five regions, could they be even more powerful than northern plains' Huang Jin family?" Tai Bai Yun Sheng was moved.

Fang Yuan shook his head: "That isn't the case. Almost all of Zombie Alliance's members compose of zombies, and their higher ups are immortal zombies like me. For the most part, these immortal zombies are Gu Immortals who reached the end of their lifespan and had no choice but to turn into zombies to prolong their life. These Gu Immortals' immortal apertures are dead; they cannot produce immortal essence nor can they absorb heaven and earth qi, and after some time, their blessed land would start shrinking and parts of it would crumble. Thus, their battle strengths often can't compare to normal Gu Immortals. Naturally, certain immortal zombies are exceptions."

Zombie Alliance's branches were weaker than the respective region's super forces. But the headquarters at eastern sea was a level stronger than the native super forces.

"So it is like that." Tai Bai Yun Sheng had grown in knowledge, he then asked with some doubt, "Then why does master want junior brother to join Zombie Alliance?"

Fang Yuan thought for a moment before saying: "If a Gu Immortal reached the end of their lifespan and transformed into an immortal zombie with no other choice left, then later on, if they obtain lifespan Gu, they are sure to want to resurrect. Originally, one of the purposes for Zombie Alliance's establishment was to help each other to research the method to regain a live physical body. So much time has gone by, they definitely have obtained some results. I think master's purpose lies in this point."

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was happy and also worried: "This suggestion is really good. But how will you join Zombie Alliance?"

Fang Yuan laughed: "Old Bai, you don't need to worry. Joining Zombie Alliance is extremely simple, I only need to show my status as an immortal zombie."

"It's that simple?"

"Of course. Zombie Alliance is suppressed by all the super forces, thus they operate with much difficulty, as such they are very eager to have more members in the alliance. At the same time, an immortal zombie's identity is not easy to disguise. Zombie Alliance has researched very deeply and has many methods to distinguish between immortal zombies. I intend to join northern plains' Zombie Alliance, but before this, we have to wait for someone."

"Hei Lou Lan." Tai Bai Yun Sheng blurted out.

Fang Yuan nodded.

He did not hide his plans to go to northern plains from Tai Bai Yun Sheng and had revealed almost everything, as he still needed to borrow the latter's strength in the future.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 654: Asking Mo Yao's will

"Sigh, it has been so many years since I last saw a mirror willow." Mo Yao's will sighed, she touched the one and only mirror willow tree, speaking with deep emotions as she recalled the memories of her past.

Fang Yuan's will was by her side, he silently watched and did not say a word to disrupt her.

This world was rotting and dark, it was Fang Yuan's dead immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan had tricked Mo Yao's will into entering his immortal aperture, suppressing her afterwards.

Mo Yao was a refinement grandmaster, she was once a legendary Gu Immortal. In the history of central continent, she had left behind her markings.

Her will naturally had great value.

Although Fang Yuan was harmed by Mo Yao's will and had gone through a near death experience in northern plains, Fang Yuan did not hate Mo Yao's will. On the contrary, there was appreciation, even as much as admiration.

If he was the one scheming, he might not have done any better than Mo Yao's will.

He was prepared to interrogate Mo Yao's will, but it turned out that she was extremely cooperative. Towards the questions that Fang Yuan asked regarding refinement path, not only did she answer all of them, she even elaborated on the points and Fang Yuan gained huge insights from her words.

But when Fang Yuan asked about the information of Spirit Affinity House, Mo Yao’s will suddenly had a request: “I have been away from central continent for so many years, over these years, I have been missing the people and things over there more and more. Please find for me a tree of the mirror willow, it will alleviate my longingness for my homeland.”

Mirror willows were ordinary plants, they were about the size of ordinary willow trees, but their leaves were like pieces of mirrors. The leaves of these willows were the food of beggar moths.

In the past, during the rockmen transactions, Fang Yuan had purchased a batch of mirror willows from Immortal Crane Sect and had planted them in Hu Immortal blessed land.

Thus, he casually picked one of them and placed it into his immortal aperture.

“Back in the day, my main body and brother Bo Qing had first met each other under this mirror willow. The world moves on after a genius perishes...” Mo Yao’s will sighed.

Immediately after, she turned around, looking at Fang Yuan’s will: “Thank you for acceding to my request. Since you want to know about Spirit Affinity House’s matters, I will tell you about them. However, my information is extremely dated, you need to take note of this.”

Fang Yuan’s will nodded.

Mo Yao’s will stood below the mirror willow, telling him much of Spirit Affinity House’s inside information.

Fang Yuan listened to her as he made comparisons to his five hundred years of experience, his understanding of Spirit Affinity House greatly increased.

“Your immortal aperture is already dead, the mirror willow will be corroded by the death energy and turn into a dead tree in less than three days. What a pity...” After giving him Spirit Affinity House’s details, Mo Yao sighed again.

But it unclear whether her ‘pity’ was directed towards the mirror willow or Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

“The next time you come here, can you bring a cup of qingpu tea? This is Spirit Affinity House’s specialty tea, it is not rare. Although I cannot taste it, I would like to see it.” Mo Yao said.

Fang Yuan’s will snorted: “It seems you have no awareness of your captive status. You are asking for this and that, are you scheming something again?”

Mo Yao’s will laughed charmingly: “Oh Fang Yuan, you are too vigilant. Ever since my plan was exposed by you and was lured into the immortal aperture to be suppressed, I was already meat on the chopping block, subjected to your supervision at all times, you can do anything you want to me. How can I create any schemes and how would I be able to execute them?”

“However, let’s speak openly. Even though I failed completely and have no way of turning this around, if you try and be forceful, you will get a very incomplete result. After all, soul searching is easy, but will searching is tough. If you were a wisdom path grandmaster, that would be possible, but sadly you have nearly no foundation in wisdom path, all your Gu worms were bought randomly in the market. Wisdom path is different from other paths, it is mysterious and complex, you have not even reached the entry level yet.”

Mo Yao’s will started criticizing Fang Yuan, she was not holding back at all, after all, she knew that Fang Yuan was very broad-minded, he was a rare and extraordinary demon.

Indeed, at the next moment, Fang Yuan’s will laughed: “You are right, my wisdom path attainment is low, but thanks for your cooperation, from now on, you can live in my immortal aperture. I will bring the qingpu tea next time.”

Saying so, his will flew into the sky.

The immortal aperture opened a tiny slit, and this will flew all the way up into Fang Yuan’s mind.

In an instant, Fang Yuan learnt of all the information that this will had gotten from Mo Yao.

Indeed, he lacked methods to proper search wills.

Soul searching was easy, will searching was hard, this was normal.

If that was not the case, when wisdom path Gu Masters fight their enemies using wills, these will would reveal their own secrets to their enemies when they are captured and taken.

Precisely because will searching was hard, wisdom path Gu Masters used them to fight enemies.

As for Mo Yao...

“She is indeed quite a formidable person, no wonder she could leave her name in history.” Fang Yuan praised her and sighed secretly.

Mo Yao’s will’s plan was exposed, she had utterly failed. She could not even self-detonate, she was sealed in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture and was fully suppressed.

But even in such a desperate situation, she did not give up.

She cooperated with Fang Yuan, answering his questions for him, that was to display her value, and to fight for more time for herself.

If one day, Fang Yuan encounters any danger and his immortal aperture shatters, or if he was captured by anyone, or died in the battlefield, Mo Yao’s will would have a chance to escape for freedom.

Mo Yao’s will did not give up, her persistent and unyielding attitude made Fang Yuan inwardly feel admiration towards her.

Of course, if Fang Yuan had the proper methods and could search wills, he would strike at the first moment. But currently, Mo Yao’s will was cooperating with him, this was better for his benefits.

“If I could really find a wisdom path inheritance, it would all be easier. Unfortunately, wisdom path is mysterious and deep, there are very few wisdom path Gu Masters and Gu Immortals in number. There are no wisdom path inheritances that I know of in my memories.”

Back then, Fang Yuan had collected some scattered wisdom path Gu worms in treasure yellow heaven. He had mild progress in terms of wisdom path.

But now that he was bankrupt, he had almost no purchasing power, he could not even continue this mild progress.

As for the details of Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s inheritance, he did not ask. Because Mo Yao’s will knew: Fang Yuan did not have any methods to deal with her yet.

The two of them were smart people, they knew that asking forcefully was not possible.

“Master, Immortal Crane Sect’s reply is here.” At this time, Little Hu Immortal appeared beside him, holding a rank five letter Gu.

Immortal Crane Sect suddenly stopped the purchase of rockmen, not long ago, Fang Yuan had sent them a letter to probe about this.

Immortal Crane Sect’s reply came very quickly.

Fang Yuan took the letter Gu and his consciousness went into it.

The content of the letter was written in a tough stance, they requested for Fang Yuan to initiate the trade of guts Gu, otherwise, Immortal Crane Sect would announce that Fang Yuan was a traitor of the sect, and would mobilize the Gu Immortals to attack Hu Immortal blessed land!

A year ago, Fang Yuan had used Fixed Immortal Travel and snatched Hu Immortal blessed land from under everyone’s nose, it was like he was taking food from a tiger.

Immortal Crane Sect immediately reacted, using the similar appearance of Fang Yuan and Fang Zheng to announce that Fang Yuan was actually a disciple that Immortal Crane Sect had nurtured in secret. The other nine sects thus recognised Immortal Crane Sect’s victory.

Immortal Crane Sect’s plan was to remove the other nine competitors, then deal with Fang Yuan single handedly, attempting to take Hu Immortal blessed land for themselves.

Fang Yuan was happy to see this.

After all, the difficulty of dealing with solely Immortal Crane Sect was completely different from dealing with the ten great sects at the same time.

But this way, Fang Yuan silently agreed with Immortal Crane Sect’s lie — he was Immortal Crane Sect’s disciple.

“Hu Immortal blessed land is situated on Tian Ti mountain, even the ten great sects cannot attack it casually, as it would provoke public anger within central continent. But if they announced that I was a traitor of the sect, they would have the perfect reason to attack.” Fang Yuan’s expression was solemn, thinking about the situation.

He was not afraid, this was something that he had expected over a year ago.

He only did not expect that Immortal Crane Sect’s patience had worn thin so quickly.

Fang Yuan laughed, saying to Little Hu Immortal: “Bring Tai Bai Yun Sheng here.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng heard this news and his face turned gloomy: “What shall we do now? Immortal Crane Sect is one of the ten great ancient sects of central continent, it is a powerful force that surpasses northern plains' super tribes. If they really attack, just the two of us cannot stop them!"

Fang Yuan laughed: "Old Bai, oh Old Bai, I asked you here to inquire about your opinion regarding this difficult question. But the moment you met me, you asked me a question instead."

Tai Bai Yun Sheng gasped, he showed some embarrassment and shame as he frowned, thinking about it. Eventually, he had an idea: "Didn't we ally with Hei Lou Lan? We can ask her to help us!"

Evidently, Hei Lou Lan's great battle strength was ingrained into Tai Bai Yun Sheng's heart.

"Although Hei Lou Lan has the Great Strength True Martial Physique, even if she advance into a Gu Immortal successfully, with just the three of us, we cannot stop Immortal Crane Sect." Fang Yuan sighed and shook his head.

"Then what shall we do? What shall we do?" Tai Bai Yun Sheng paced back and forth, thinking hard.

Fang Yuan looked at him, laughing but not saying a word.

Suddenly, Tai Bai Yun Sheng stopped in his tracks, he patted his head: "I've got it! Didn't master ask you to join Zombie Alliance? We can totally join Zombie Alliance, and use Zombie Alliance's force to threaten Immortal Crane Sect."

But Fang Yuan shook his head, saying: "Zombie Alliance's structure is loose with little binding force, and central continent's Zombie Alliance branch is far inferior to Immortal Crane Sect, it is not threatening in the least. Furthermore, if I try to make use of Zombie Alliance, I will have to give up some benefits. I'm afraid that instead of Immortal Crane Sect, Zombie Alliance would be the first to benefit from this."

"That won't work too, then what are we going to do?" Tai Bai Yun Sheng raised his head and looked at Fang Yuan with a bitter, frowning expression.

But when he saw Fang Yuan's smile at the corner of his lips, he was stunned, before reacting, pointing at Fang Yuan as he scolded laughingly: "What a junior brother you are, actually lying to this senior brother, watching my desperation! You look so confident, it is obvious you already have a plan."

"Hahaha, Old Bai, you have amazing vision, I could not lie to you." Fang Yuan laughed loudly, admitting it.

"What method do you have, aren't you going to tell me?"

Fang Yuan replied: "I had already told you the background of this matter. Immortal Crane Sect said I was their disciple because they were afraid of the other nine great sects' interference. This is their weakness, and is something I am going to use to make a breakthrough."

"What are you going to do?"

Fang Yuan did not keep it from him: "I already have a plan to send a letter to Spirit Affinity House, establishing our first contact."

Earlier, Fang Yuan had asked about Spirit Affinity House's information from Mo Yao for this purpose.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was worried again: "Establishing a relationship now and only sending a letter, isn't that too late? The ten great sects compete with each other, but they also cooperate. Is it possible that Spirit Affinity House would reject your letter and give it to Immortal Crane Sect to express goodwill?"

“Of course not, because this letter... is very special.” Fang Yuan was extremely confident.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 655: Deducing a Gu recipe

Many flashes of inspiration appeared in his mind.

Countless ingredients and Gu worms formed into many different ideas.

The thoughts in his mind were also being consumed at a rapid rate. Such intense expenditure had far exceeded Fang Yuan’s own limit in thinking speed.

“The power of a rank nine Gu is truly terrifying! In fact, I have not even refined wisdom Gu, I am only using a bit of its light of wisdom.” Fang Yuan sighed in shock as he went out of the wisdom light halo.

He was deducing and perfecting the refinement recipe of gruel mud Immortal Gu.

Unlike beforehand when he reflected on the current situation or the changes in his body, perfecting an Immortal Gu recipe needed many more fields of consideration. A set of Gu refinement materials contained up to tens of hundreds of different materials. Not to mention the grouping and coordination of different Gu worms.

Precisely because of this, the wills in Fang Yuan’s mind were depleting at a shocking rate.

After a few days of accumulating wills, they were all expended in a dozen breaths’ time.

The result of this was an advancement of less than 0.1% in the deduction of gruel mud Gu’s recipe.

“But to get such progress, if I did this alone without the help of the light of wisdom, I would need at least half a year.” Fang Yuan estimated.

A dozen breaths’ time in exchange for half a year’s time, this showed the great power of wisdom Gu.

But Fang Yuan was not satisfied.

Deducing Gu recipes required too many areas of consideration, too many of his wills were being consumed, and too quickly. The wills that he accumulated in a few days were quickly used up in such a short time.

The result was, he could not deduce more than 0.1% of the Gu recipe.

Fang Yuan’s original plan was to use wisdom Gu to deduce Immortal Gu recipes, before selling them in treasure yellow heaven for profit. But now he encountered a problem.

“Deducing Immortal Gu recipe requires a great amount of will. But mortal Gu produce too little will each time. Even though I have been using these mortal Gu to create wills at full capacity these days, I have almost pushed them to their limits, if I exceed this, the mortal Gu will be damaged, unless I use the rank six delight in water and mountain Gu...”

Fang Yuan thought about it for a while before deciding to give it a go.

He consumed one bead of green grape immortal essence, activating delight in water and mountain Gu.

Swoosh!

The Immortal Gu floated above his head, bursting out with a brilliant and dazzling light.

The light poured down, like a heavenly river, injecting into Fang Yuan’s mind.

This joyful will was produced at such a grand scale. Compared to rank five mortal wisdom path Gu, the will they produced was like a puddle of water. Meanwhile, this joyful will was produced like a great river!

“As expected of an Immortal Gu!” Fang Yuan was overjoyed.

Joyful will continued to pour and inject into him, only after a long while did it stop.

In Fang Yuan’s spacious mind, a third of it was filled with joyful will.

Special will was a golden color, appearing like sand. Joyful will was bright yellow.

“That is to say, as long as I activate delight in water and mountain Gu three times, my mind would be filled completely? No wonder the market in treasure yellow heaven would have those wisdom path Gu that can make the mind more spacious.” Fang Yuan gained some enlightenment from his experiment.

Strength path Gu worms modified the Gu Master’s body. In contrast, wisdom path Gu worms modified the person’s mind.

Fang Yuan entered the wisdom light halo once again, falling into deep thoughts.

Euphoria!

This felt way too good!

Like there were no limits binding him, everything was clear. For any difficult problem, a breakthrough could be attained in a flash! The only difference was: The harder the problem, the more will would be expended.

A vast amount of refinement materials were chosen one by one, countless Gu worms were combined into groups and tested at lightning speed, before splitting them apart again.

Fang Yuan showed off his great skills, he felt that there was no problems in this world that could trouble him.

This feeling was splendid, only until all of the joyful will was expended, did Fang Yuan leave the light of wisdom reluctantly, he felt that only a dozen breaths’ time had passed by since then.

But in reality, seven minutes had gone by already.

“Puff...” Fang Yuan let of a sigh of turbid air, he shook his head.

After leaving the light of wisdom, he immediately went back to his former self, he was still that zombie with slow cognitive abilities.

The great difference felt like falling from heaven into hell.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, adjusting his emotions as he inspected the fruits of his labor.

The progress of the deduction of gruel mud Immortal Gu’s recipe advanced by one percent.

Compared to before, this was huge progress!

Fang Yuan nodded, but he soon shook his head again.

He silently left the underground cave, going to Dang Hun mountain’s palace.

“Junior brother, how is the situation?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng had been waiting inside the palace for some time, he quickly asked Fang Yuan in concern.

He was covered in dust and sand, he had just returned after inspecting the western area of Hu Immortal blessed land.

“Take a seat.” Fang Yuan waved to him, taking a few big steps to the main seat and sitting down.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked at Fang Yuan with a curious gaze after choosing the seat closest to him.

He knew that Fang Yuan was using wisdom Gu to deduce an Immortal Gu recipe. Not long ago, he had followed Fang Yuan into the underground cave, and had looked at wisdom Gu from far away — he had finally obtained a lifespan Gu from Fang Yuan some time ago, he had limited lifespan and did not dare to get close to this legendary Gu worm.

Fang Yuan leaned on the stone block like it was a chair, his legs were spread open and a pair of his arms were placed on his leg. One pair was crossed over his abdomen, while another pair was at the handle of the seat. The final pair was crossed over his chest, he sat with a grand posture, like an unmoving mountain, he was still and silent, like a giant statue.

He sighed, saying: “Mortal Gu were not efficient to use. I tried using the wisdom path Immortal Gu Delight in Water and Mountain. The river of joyful will that it produced, under the light of wisdom, allowed my Gu recipe deduction to progress by one percent.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng heard this and stood up from his seat in excitement, he showed evident joy on his face: “One percent? As expected of the rank nine wisdom Gu! That means, if we use it a hundred times, we will be able to deduce an Immortal Gu recipe? With these Immortal Gu recipes, we can sell them in treasure yellow heaven, this is a huge treasure chest that can yield us endless profits! By then, we will have an unceasing flow of immortal essence stones!! To think... that after becoming a zombie, junior brother can actually receive such benefits!”

These days, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had been worrying over cultivation resources.

He found out that after becoming a Gu Immortal, he needed much more cultivation resources.

When Gu Master cultivate, they nurture their apertures, when Gu Immortal cultivate, they nurture their immortal aperture.

There are many different ways one can nurture an immortal aperture. But the ultimate goal was the same, that is to make the immortal aperture’s small world more vibrant and diverse.

Planting more varieties of plants in the immortal aperture, bringing in more animals, improving the cycle of life and establishing a proper food chain, nurturing and feeding more varieties of Gu worm groups...

The more prosperous the immortal aperture, the greater life force it would have, and the faster immortal essence would be produced in the immortal aperture.

This was the cultivation path of Gu Immortals, this was their way of improving.

Thus, in treasure yellow heaven, not only were Gu worms and Gu recipes sold, there were also the sale of beast groups, vegetation, mysterious stones, precious water, and so on.

Looking at Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s excited look, Fang Yuan nodded in satisfaction: “It seems that my method of asking you to inspect Hu Immortal blessed land and becoming familiar with the cultivation path of Gu Immortals is very effective. You have finally realized the importance of cultivation resources. But unfortunately, although selling Immortal Gu recipes is a very profitable trade, we temporarily cannot engage in that.”

“Ah, why is that?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was confused.

“Because the investment is too great.” Fang Yuan sighed: “To get something from nothing, to deduce a rank six Immortal Gu recipe, the amount of green grape immortal essence we would need to expend is at least over a hundred.”

“Junior brother, didn’t you deduce one percent of this Immortal Gu recipe?”

“That is because what I was deducing was the gruel mud Immortal Gu remnant recipe. I told you before, earlier I had engaged in the trade of gruel mud, thus I obtained many gruel mud Immortal Gu remnant recipes. But after I collated these remnant recipes, I only obtained this sixty percent remnant recipe.” Fang Yuan answered.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was not stupid, he immediately understood Fang Yuan’s words.

With the light of wisdom, no problem could trouble Fang Yuan.

Under normal circumstances, if he encountered difficulty when deducing Gu recipes, they would be hard to resolve. If he was lucky and had a burst of inspiration, he would be able to think of a solution. But if he was unlucky and could not resolve this problem, he would be stuck there for years, or even decades without making any progress.

But with wisdom Gu, Fang Yuan faced no difficulty when deducing Gu recipes.

Even if Fang Yuan encountered a problem that he could not solve due to his foundations, he just needed to think more. Using the light of wisdom to think, he only needed to consume more wills in order to resolve this problem.

In this way, Immortal Gu recipes were easier to deduce towards the later parts.

A sixty percent remnant recipe means it already has a general direction, this could allow Fang Yuan to rule out a large number of Gu refinement elements. On this basis, he progressed by one percent of the deduction.

That is to say, if he started from zero, from scratch, and deduced the recipe from nothing, it would be extremely difficult, he would not even reach one percent.

Fang Yuan continued: “I only have eighteen green grape immortal essence beads, while you have twenty-six. Hu Immortal blessed land only has sixty-four beads of Bai Hu’s immortal essence. But you and Hu Immortal land spirit cannot be under the wisdom light halo. Even if I lend delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu to you, the joyful will that you create cannot be used by me. At this point, the gruel mud remnant recipe is the most promising of them, but it also requires about forty beads of immortal essence from us. Don’t forget that we are not safe now. Northern plains’ Gu Immortals and Immortal Crane Sect are going to find trouble with us. Especially if wisdom Gu is exposed, I’m afraid every Gu Immortal in the five regions would charge towards us with killing intent!”

“Yes, the investment is too big, and we also need to preserve some green grape immortal essence as a preemptive measure to guard against enemies and accidents.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded, he sighed deeply and looked at the ground, he accepted this fact in disappointment.

But immediately after, he raised his head, his eyes shining with light: “Eh? I have an idea! Junior brother, I remember you told me about the matter with Lang Ya land spirit. Master told you about the secrets of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, thus when you requested help from Lang Ya land spirit, you said you deduced it yourself. That caused Lang Ya land spirit to assume you were a wisdom path Gu Master, and it wanted to work with you to perfect Gu recipes.”

“Oh!” Fang Yuan pretended to jolt into realization, he showed an appropriately excited expression on his face: “There is such a thing, ahh, ahh, after becoming a zombie, my brain is so useless, I did not think of this! Old Bai, you are completely right, the best remnant recipe that I have right now is the sixty percent gruel mud Immortal Gu recipe. There must be many remnant recipes in Lang Ya land spirit’s hands. He probably has remnant recipes with a much higher completion rate.”

“Junior brother, you are familiar with Lang Ya land spirit, and you also know the method to enter Lang Ya blessed land, we can totally cooperate with Lang Ya land spirit!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng thought about this amazing plan and laughed loudly and heartily.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 656: I will take down my brother in the name of justice

“Old Bai, your reminder is very true, but I have no way to directly contact Lang Ya land spirit. I used two opportunities in the past to obtain two Immortal Gu from that old man, Lang Ya land spirit, and I was nearly chased out by him. Hehehe, I don’t think I’ll be able to contact him.” Fang Yuan smiled bitterly.

“Is that so...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s joy on his face froze.

Linking between two blessed lands could be done through hole earth Gu, directly connecting both of their territories. Earlier, when Fang Yuan traded with Immortal Crane Sect, he used this method.

But Fang Yuan and Lang Ya land spirit’s relationship was naturally not close to that extent.

Most critically, Hu Immortal blessed land was in central continent, while Lang Ya blessed land was in northern plains, even the hole earth Gu was not easy to use. To directly connect to there, he needed to use stargate Gu.

Stargate Gu came in pairs, but Fang Yuan only had one stargate Gu left now. The other one was destroyed in the wind veil of assimilation.

“It seems we can only return to northern plains and meet Lang Ya land spirit personally, before asking for cooperation.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng sighed.

“No, there is another method that relies on luck.” Fang Yuan hummed: “That old land spirit loves refining Gu, but he cannot go out to search for Gu refinement materials. Lang Ya blessed land’s terrain is very plain, it can produce very limited varieties of materials, he will have to go to treasure yellow heaven often. We can wait for him patiently, staring at treasure yellow heaven until his divine sense appears.”

“Right, there is still this method!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s eyes shone.

“So from now on, I will be relying on you, Old Bai.” Fang Yuan said as a matter of fact.

“No problem, count on me. I will go back now and open connecting heaven Gu, linking to treasure yellow heaven!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng patted his chest, he could not wait any longer, he was brought back to his residential area by the land spirit.

He chose to build a temporary house at the western area of the blessed land.

That was his temporary home.

The terrain of Hu Immortal blessed land was similar to northern plains, Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not feel any discomfort living here, he felt a serene feeling like being at home.

Having roamed northern plains for about half his life, he had finally found an organisation and had settled down, therefore he especially treasured this home.

After sending Tai Bai Yun Sheng away, Fang Yuan fell into deep thought.

He had already thought of cooperating with Lang Ya land spirit long ago. In truth, a few days ago, he had asked Little Hu Immortal to keep an eye on treasure yellow heaven, waiting for Old Immortal Lang Ya’s divine sense.

But there was no progress at all.

What he was thinking about now was not the matter about Lang Ya land spirit, but about Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

His journey in northern plains was very chaotic, now during these days when he was in Hu Immortal blessed land, he observed Tai Bai Yun Sheng heavily and gained a lot of insight on this person.

“Tai Bai Yun Sheng is indeed a good person. He has ability but no ambition. His intelligence is only that of an average person, what he really has is the wisdom accumulated from his entire life’s experiences. He does not have a grasp of the big picture, it is no wonder that even though he was a former young tribe leader, and having roamed for so many years, with sufficient reputation and strength, he did not manage to create a force of his own.” Fang Yuan evaluated in his mind.

Such a person is best as a follower that closely sticks to him, he should not be left alone due to his lack of leadership capability. Because of his nature and beliefs, if he is far away, not only would he be unable to cooperate, he might even ruin plans.

Over these days, Fang Yuan had been in constant contact with Tai Bai Yun Sheng, their relationship had been improving.

During several of their late night talks, Fang Yuan talked of his experiences since rebirth, only with the addition of the non-existent “Purple Mountain True Monarch”.

Meanwhile, Tai Bai Yun Sheng talked about basically all of his life’s experiences.

Many times, even though Fang Yuan already had some plan in his heart, he still asked Tai Bai Yun Sheng to come over and discuss it.

It might seem like a waste of time, but this was Fang Yuan’s elaborate plan.

Firstly, it was to test Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s ability and true self, to see if his emotions really came from the bottom of his heart.

Secondly, telling him about the current situation without concealing anything increased his sense of belonging, and his feelings of responsibility.

Thirdly, it was a type of formless suppression towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng. The result of all their discussions usually ended up with Fang Yuan’s method being used, and Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s method being denied. As this happened more frequently, subconsciously, Tai Bai Yun Sheng would rely more and more on Fang Yuan, paying greater attention to his plans and denying his own ideas. At crucial moments, Fang Yuan would be able to make decisions without any opposition. They would not quarrel over their own ideas and lead to conflict which could botch a situation.

Fang Yuan was not Hei Lou Lan, Hei Lou Lan had the rank six slavery Gu and could enslave a Gu Immortal.

Fang Yuan did not have it, but Tai Bai Yun Sheng was neither Bai Ning Bing nor Hei Lou Lan.

Most importantly, Fang Yuan had his own methods, and he believed: Even without slavery Immortal Gu, he could still subdue Tai Bai Yun Sheng, to squeeze out his greatest potential and become his tool.

This was the confidence of a demonic path overlord!

Central Continent, Fei He mountain.

The clouds were abundant in the sky, thousands of cranes were flying.

Winds blew on the verdant green mountain, Fang Zheng sat on a cliff, focusing his gaze on thousands of iron beak flying cranes, as they created different formations according to his will. At times they charged, at times they split into two to pincer attack, and at times they formed a circular defensive formation.

The wind blew his long hair, his bright eyes were shining with determination.

Tough times make men grow, to Fang Zheng, the Hu Immortal blessed land's competition a year ago was a major setback for him.

After some consolation, he walked out of his despair, and put in even more effort, he had almost risked his life to cultivate daily!

At this time, a voice came from Fang Zheng's aperture: "Good, your command of the iron beak flying cranes have reached a stage where you can manipulate them with ease, they move with a thought from you. Now, you can already go back to the sect to take the flying crane manipulation test, and attempt to get B grade evaluation. You have a sixty percent chance of succeeding, if you do, you will get the test reward – a rank five, five hole jade flute Gu. Once you have this Gu, your manipulation of the crane group would reach quasi enslavement master level."

The voice originated from a spirit incubating flea in Fang Zheng's aperture.

Fang Zheng's master – Lord Sky Crane's soul was residing in this Gu worm.

"Rank five, five hole jade flute Gu?" His eyes shone, excitement was all over his face: "Yes, master, I will go now."

Fang Zheng stood up, he willed and a large iron beak flying crane king arrived before him.

He jumped and easily got on the crane king's back.

The crane king cried out in a proud tone. Fang Zheng sat on the crane king's back, the crane group flying around him, it was a scene of white as he flew towards Immortal Crane Sect amidst the wind and clouds.

Not long after, he arrived at white jade square D.

The iron beak flying crane landed in the square, Fang Zheng had just landed, when one of Immortal Crane Sect's disciples ran over quickly, greeting him: "Senior brother Fang Zheng."

Fang Zheng nodded: "Junior brother, I am here to take the flying crane manipulation test."

"Senior brother Fang Zheng, please follow me." Immortal Crane Sect's disciple led the way.

"Quickly look, guys, that is senior brother Fang Zheng. He is the number one elite disciple of our batch!"

"Did you hear, senior brother Fang Zheng is actually attending the flying crane manipulation test."

"Senior brother Fang Zheng is an enslavement path genius, to think that he has already reached the stage of quasi enslavement path master, he is truly amazing..."

Along the way, everyone's whispered discussions entered Fang Zheng's ears.

Fang Zheng heard them and smiled lightly.

He was now fully grown, his body was tall and he had long black hair that resembled a cape, his eyes were crystal clear. Although he looked ordinary, he had quite the disposition and was full of life. Wearing a green and white robe, he looked like a gentleman, it was very comfortable to look at him.

“Although senior brother Fang Zheng is strong, his brother is even more amazing, he is a superb character who managed to obtain Hu Immortal blessed land.”

“That’s right, according to a reliable source, his brother, Fang Yuan, is secretly a legacy disciple of a certain supreme elder. When Spirit Affinity House were on the verge of taking Hu Immortal blessed land, the supreme elder had no choice but to send senior brother Fang Yuan out, as expected, he shocked everyone and sealed the deal, obtaining Hu Immortal blessed land!”

“Fang Zheng has a good brother, the guts Gu on Dang Hun mountain can strengthen the soul. I can bet that Fang Zheng used the guts Gu. Otherwise, with just his own hard work, how can he raise his cultivation to rank five in one year? Furthermore, his enslavement path attainment improved at lightning speed, he is actually going to take the flying crane manipulation test!”

The tone of these people was sour and bitter, Fang Zheng heard them as his smile slowly vanished, his fists which were hidden in his sleeves were tightly clenched.

“Brother!” Fang Zheng’s eyes shone with a trace of darkness.

Ever since Fang Yuan used some unthinkable method to snatch Hu Immortal blessed land, Immortal Crane Sect had declared publicly that Fang Yuan was Immortal Crane Sect’s disciple.

During this year, Fang Zheng felt like life had returned to the past, when he was suppressed by Fang Yuan.

No matter what great results he obtained or how many improvements he made, others would only praise him briefly before mentioning the even more impressive Fang Yuan.

“Calm your spirit, my disciple.” Lord Sky Crane’s voice came from the spirit incubating flea.

Lord Sky Crane’s experiences were much richer than Fang Zheng. After these years of staying together, he had grasped a firm understanding of Fang Zheng.

He consoled Fang Zheng: “These years, I have seen all of your hard work. You are in no way inferior to your brother. Don’t forget, you are now a rank five Gu Master, a quasi enslavement master! I bet your brother is not your match right now. In any case, Fang Yuan is going to face extermination soon. The sect has mobilized three supreme elders in this plan, they are tasked to take back Hu Immortal blessed land, your brother has no way to survive.”

Three supreme elders... that is the battle strength of three Gu Immortals.

Fang Zheng heard this and licked his lips, before his gaze turned a bit dimmer.

Lord Sky Crane knew what he was thinking, he laughed and said: “Fang Zheng, don’t feel any guilt towards this. Your brother had ventured into the wrong path, he is walking on the demonic path now. He actually slaughtered his entire clan, this makes him a beast worse than pigs or dogs! Fang Yuan is a true and blue demonic head, you cannot feel any sympathy towards him. Killing him is equivalent to benefitting the people of the world. Think about it, if he is alive, how many innocent people would be harmed?”

“That’s right. Brother’s hands are full of blood, he is a murderer! A killer! I will take revenge for my clan, for my uncle and aunt, for Shen Cui Er!” Fang Zheng inwardly shouted, urging himself.

“Good, that’s it.” Lord Sky Crane was evidently very happy with Fang Zheng’s attitude: “Think about these years, you were training in Fu Hu blessed land, how dangerous and terrifying was it! One year outside was eight years inside Fu Hu blessed land! You became a rank five Gu Master, suffering so much and enduring so much, wasn’t it for the greater plan of taking back Hu Immortal blessed land? Don’t screw up at the last moment, you cannot disappoint everyone at this most crucial juncture.”

“Don’t worry, master! I understand, I will do my best and contribute to the sect, I will exterminate all evil, and take down my brother in the name of justice! I will not disappoint you!” Fang Zheng assured resolutely and unhesitantly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 657: Dong Fang Chang Fan, Miniscule Mountain

The light of wisdom dyed the cave walls with beautiful lights.

Fang Yuan quietly stood in it for a good while before opening his eyes, slowly stepping out of the wisdom light halo.

The wills in his mind were almost fully consumed. Mortal Gu could only produce limited wills and could not compare to wisdom path Immortal Gu.

“My deduction of Immortal Crane Sect’s plan has failed, not because I don’t have enough wills, but because I don’t have enough clues.” Fang Yuan reflected inwardly.

After being in the wisdom light halo many times over these days, he had summed up his experiences.

Wisdom Gu was different from natural inspiration.

Wisdom Gu emitted the light of wisdom which could provide unending insights to Gu Master. But the result of the thoughts and deductions were based on the Gu Master’s foundation as well as the clues they had accumulated.

Fang Yuan’s attempt at deducing Immortal Crane Sect’s conspiracy against Hu Immortal blessed land failed because he did not have enough evidence.

In summary, the deeper the Gu Master’s foundations and the more evidence they gathered, the more accurate the outcome of the deduction would be.

Naturally, when there was more evidence, there would be more factors to consider, and the amount of thoughts and will consumed would also become larger. Especially when deducing Immortal Gu recipes, the factors to consider were too many, thus the wills consumed were enormous.

As for natural inspiration, it was a precious experience when a Gu Master advances to a Gu Immortal.

During this process, the Gu Master questions heaven and earth, and heaven and earth would directly provide the solutions with no need for the Gu Master to think.

Let’s take a difficult mathematical problem from Earth, for example, solving a multivariate equation.

If the Gu Master used wisdom Gu, his thoughts would quickly consume while he would obtain numerous insights, causing there to be many paths to the solution. Some of these paths might be dead ends while some might give wrong results. Only a few would be correct paths which could deduce the solution.

While natural inspiration would be akin to directly giving the correct answers.

The Gu Master would obtain the correct answer, but they had to know how to use it.

Thus, during natural inspiration, the Gu Master should not ask overly profound questions. Fang Yuan did not directly ask about eternal life; maybe heaven and earth would give him an answer but he would absolutely not be able to comprehend it.

It was like a child who had not learned mathematics seeing a linear equation, they naturally would not be able to comprehend the answer.

To comprehend this answer, the child would have to learn numbers, unknown variables, positive and negative numbers, and so on. But this would only be the foundation of the foundation.

To Gu Masters, even if they obtained answers to excessively profound questions, they would not be able to comprehend it or be able to use it.

Even if they asked about all aspects of this difficult problem during natural inspiration and comprehended the basics, the time consumed would be too high, the amount of information would also be so large that the mind would not be able to bear it.

As such, the best way to make use of natural inspiration was to ask according to the state of one’s current foundation, then stabilize the foundation and progress step by step.

“But within wisdom path, there is an Immortal Gu that can allow a Gu Immortal to directly obtain answers. That is heavenly secret Gu. Gu Masters do not need to have their thoughts collide nor make deductions, as long as they grabbed onto that strand of heavenly secret, they would directly obtain the answer. In the records of history, this Gu was created by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable; he possessed a rank eight heavenly secret Immortal Gu but after his death, this heavenly secret Immortal Gu disappeared without a trace and there has been no news regarding it since then.”

Fang Yuan suddenly recalled heavenly secret Immortal Gu.

Gu worms had one ability, and even the rank nine wisdom Gu was no exception. The higher the ranks of the Gu, the more powerful their ability was. If wisdom Gu was truly activated, its effect would definitely be terrifying. But even if it was stronger, it could not replicate the effect of heavenly secret Immortal Gu.

“It was rumored that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was the rank nine Gu Master who could detect and react to the heavenly fate most closely. He created heavenly secret Immortal Gu to interact with heaven and earth, and also to experience natural inspiration again. If I have heavenly secret Immortal Gu, it would combine exquisitely with wisdom Gu. Meanwhile, if anyone else used heavenly secret Immortal Gu to investigate me, all of my secrets would likely be exposed...”

Heavenly secret Immortal Gu could let Gu Masters directly question heaven and earth.

There were no events in the world that heaven and earth did not know of.

It was as the saying goes, except you and me, only heaven and earth know.

As for other wisdom path Gu worms, Fang Yuan did not need to worry for the moment. The wind veil of assimilation had swallowed everything, cleaning up all the traces of crimes Fang Yuan had committed in Imperial Court blessed land.

Without heavenly secret Immortal Gu, wisdom path Gu Masters would have to make deductions according to normal methods and that was to gather as much evidence and clues as possible.

They were unable to plunder any crucial clues from Imperial Court blessed land and could only begin investigating from the Imperial Court contest. It was not impossible to deduce Fang Yuan's true identity with this, it was only that the probability was low and the time required would be longer.

Northern Plains, Jade Pool blessed land.

From a bird's eye view, the blessed land was covered with innumerable large and small deep pools with the color of a mixture of blue and green.

Lead by Chanyu tribe's Gu Immortal, Tong Zu, around ten Gu Immortals of northern plains' righteous path slowly descended from the air.

"The noble Jade Pool blessed land is truly unique and fresh. These innumerable jade pools are like the stars in the sky, their beauty unmatched." A female Gu Immortal strolled through the sky, expressing her admiration. Her hair that was twenty to thirty feet long draped behind her and was extremely eye catching.

"All of these jade pools have different types of water, raising countless aquatic species. Dong Fang tribe's fish groups and water vegetation have been famous for a long time in treasure yellow heaven." A male Gu Immortal opened the third vertical eye on his forehead and gazed at the jade pools with a shining gaze.

"Lord Murong Qing Si and Lord Guan Shen Zhao are exaggerating. My tribe's Jade Pool blessed land has only been in operation for just over six thousand years; the landscape cannot compare to Murong tribe's Yin-Yang blessed land, while in terms of productivity, it still falls short of Guan tribe's Shi Huang blessed land." Gu Immortal Dong Fang Yi Kong who was attending to them, welcomed them with a smile, modestly talking of Dong Fang tribe's specialities.

Jade Pool blessed land was the headquarters of the Huang Jin family's Dong Fang tribe, a super force.

A group of Gu Immortals slowly descended.

This, among the myriad jade pools, did not appear to be a remarkable location.

Beside a jade pool was a small hut.

An elderly man was sitting beside the pool in front of the house, in the midst of fishing.

"These are underworld eels." Guan Shen Zhao's vertical eye on his forehead gazed at the pool before blurting out in shock at the scene inside the clear pool.

When the other Gu Immortals heard it, some of them also showed slightly moved expressions.

"Sir Dong Fang, we have already not seen each other for over ten years. Thinking of back then when we charged into Snowy Mountain and fought side by side.. Sigh, time really flies by...” Everyone stood still, as Gu Immortal Tong Zu who had the highest cultivation made a greeting.

“Lord Tong Zu, you are still as graceful as ever while this old man has one foot in the grave, I don’t dare to compare with you.” The elderly man who was fishing stood up slowly; he was Dong Fang Chang Fan, northern plains’ number one wisdom path Gu Immortal.

Dong Fang Yi Kong walked to Chang Fan’s side, as Chang Fan continued: “Dong Fang tribe is honored with the presence of all of you, being able to welcome everyone to my humble abode is an extreme honor. Everyone, please come in.”

Dong Fang Chang Fan led everyone inside the hut.

The inside of the hut was spacious; there was a plaza and also halls. There were sixteen stone statues at the plaza, seemingly arranged in order as well as randomly, as they were separated by varied distances. The expressions on them were subtle, as if containing some kind of mystical pattern.

“This is Dong Fang tribe’s rank six Immortal Gu House — Modest Thatched Hut? It truly is brilliant.” One Gu Immortal praised directly.

Dong Fang Chang Fan led everyone to the administration hall and seated them. Northern plains’ righteous path Gu Immortals, representing all the different forces, had gathered under one roof!

Dong Fang Chang Fan sat at the main seat and smiled as he observed everyone: “This time, I have invited everyone here personally in order to make a transaction with you.”

Guan Shen Zhao and the others glanced at each other with no one taking the initiative to speak, it was still Tong Zu who responded: “Sir Dong Fang already decided to not make deductions for others tens of years ago. But in the letter, you said you were making an exception for us, and will deduce the true culprit of the destruction of True Yang Building or perhaps other aspects. But I wonder how we can pay for this transaction?”

Dong Fang Chang Fan coughed several times before sighing: “This old man’s lifespan is at its end and I know there is no hope in prolonging my life. But before I depart, I have some concerns lingering in my heart. One is the tribe’s growth and the other is my tribe’s descendants, I hope I can make this transaction with everyone. This old man shall make deductions for each of your tribes once, and after I die, I hope everyone can ally with my Dong Fang tribe.”

“Alliance?”

“Yes, this old man has already roughly prepared the alliance contracts, everyone can examine them and if you have any objections, we can modify it right here.” Dong Fang Chang Fan took out two east window Gu which he then handed to the Gu Immortals.

The Gu Immortals skimmed over the contract one after another. The alliance conditions were extremely lax. Dong Fang Chang Fan did not even request for mutual help and protection among the allies, he only requested that after he died, they had to protect Dong Fang tribe’s peace for fifty years. In this time period, the parties in the contract could not target, suppress or attack Dong Fang tribe.

The Gu Immortals involuntarily felt a rush of excitement.

Dong Fang Chang Fan was currently the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal of northern plains. Besides him, there was no one else suitable to deduce the true culprit of True Yang Building’s destruction!

In the cultivation of Gu Immortals, who would not encounter some difficult problems relating to their cultivation? Or perhaps, they might obtain Immortal Gu remnant recipes that require deductions? With Dong Fang Chang Fan, these issues were very likely to be resolved.

Even more importantly, after Imperial Court blessed land perished and Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed, large numbers of Gu worms were brought over by the formless fists to all regions of northern plains. The aura of Immortal Gu manifested in many places, causing the Gu Immortals to contest over them.

At this crucial time, if Dong Fang Chang Fan deduced the location of an Immortal Gu, then they were very likely to get that Immortal Gu!

Everyone was more than moved and they couldn’t help but praise Dong Fang Chang Fan’s shrewdness.

If it were during normal times, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s bargaining chip might be somewhat less important. But now, when one deduction was very likely to represent one Immortal Gu, all the Gu Immortals were moved.

“Great, Sir Dong Fang, Our Chanyu tribe accepts your conditions.”

Tong Zu spoke first, then Hei tribe, Murong tribe, every tribe’s representatives also accepted.

This situation was within Dong Fang Chang Fan’s expectations. His smile became even brighter: “Since this is the case, Fairy Li Shan, please take action.”

“Fairy Li Shan?”

While everyone was surprised, a rank six female Gu Immortal walked from behind the hall and appeared in front of everyone.

“Fairy Li Shan, I trust you have been well.” A Gu Immortal greeted.

Another Gu Immortal laughed: “Sir Dong Fang sure has made ample preparations, even inviting over Fairy Li Shan. It is just that this Jade Pool blessed land does not have any mountains or rivers, how will we make the oath?”

Dong Fang Yi Kong, who had been silent all this time, stood from beside Dong Fang Chang Fan, and spoke: “Everyone, please wait and see.”

He then opened his palm, lights in vibrant colors floated in the center of his palm, revealing a miniature mountain peak.

“Could this be — Miniscule Mountain?!” Murong Qing Si opened her graceful eyes wide as she reacted first, saying in a disbelieving tone.

“Exactly.” Dong Fang Yi Kong gave a modest smile, but the pride within him could not be concealed.

A commotion erupted among the Gu Immortals.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 658: Difficulty in resolving the issues, Hei Lou Lan appears

In the underground cave, the light of wisdom flickered back and forth from bright to dim.

Fang Yuan quietly stood inside it. Only when the wills inside his mind were fully consumed did he open his eyes and step out of the wisdom light halo.

The deduction he made had succeeded, but Fang Yuan was gloomy because of it.

“To seal Spring Autumn Cicada, as much as over six thousand mortal Gu are required, among them, almost half are rank five, with rare Gu worms reaching two thousand, and there are also about eight hundred ancient Gu worms. These ancient Gu worms are either extinct or on the brink of extinction. My initial estimate is that I require about twenty-three immortal essence stones to use this method.”

Fang Yuan was in a poverty stricken state, twenty-three immortal essence stones were a hopeless number for him currently.

But Fang Yuan had to brace himself to accomplish this task.

Because Spring Autumn Cicada’s recovery was becoming faster and faster, making the situation of the first aperture more critical.

Fortunately, with Fang Yuan having turned into a zombie, his first aperture turned into a dead aperture, thus it was able to hold on till now. If the aperture was like before, it might have already burst.

“According to the current situation, I estimate I still have over two months to plan and prepare. If this time limit is crossed, the first aperture will not be able to endure even if it is already dead.”

Fang Yuan was feeling a heavy pressure.

He was now a member of the living dead, even if his first aperture was destroyed, he would not die. But losing the first aperture would no doubt greatly reduce his future cultivation potential, and that would be an immeasurable loss.

Fang Yuan was in a difficult situation, and there was only one feasible method to earn twenty-three immortal essence stones within a short period of time – selling Immortal Gu recipes.

Returning to Dang Hun palace, Fang Yuan called in Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

“I have been paying close attention to treasure yellow heaven over these days, taking almost no rest. But Lang Ya land spirit’s divine sense has not appeared since the beginning.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s answer made Fang Yuan feel disappointment.

Lang Ya land spirit’s divine sense called itself “Lang Ya Old Immortal” in treasure yellow heaven, and it was very active at that. But now, it had not appeared at all, almost like it was missing.

Fang Yuan keenly sensed Lang Ya land spirit was likely to be facing some problems. He recalled his previous life where Lang Ya blessed land had suffered a total of seven waves of attacks.

“Previously when I was in northern plains, the second wave of experts had already attacked Lang Ya blessed land. Could it be, the third wave of attacks has already occured and Lang Ya land spirit is busy dealing with it, thus having no time to refine Gu?”

Memories of Fang Yuan’s previous life were not able to help him in this aspect.

He only remembered about the seven waves of attacks, and did not remember the detailed timings of these attacks.

Even if he remembered the exact timing, this world was already influenced by him and had experienced huge changes, who is to say that the changes upon changes might not have shifted the attacks to an earlier time.

“My horizons have been continually broadened these days... A piece of ten thousand year profound ice costs half an immortal essence stone! Half a kilogram of hurricane mountain pepper has the selling price of an immortal essence stone! What are divine jade pearls? Ten of them actually cost half an immortal essence stone. There is also, what’s that white spiral silk, its price is even more ridiculous, a pinky sized amount costs three immortal essence stones! Heavens, right now, I realized how poor I am!”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng chattered on about his harvest over this time, speaking in an excited tone.

During these days, as Fang Yuan interacted with Tai Bai Yun Sheng all the time, he gradually discovered Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a shortcoming, that was his prattling mouth, he was talkative.

Fang Yuan handed a letter Gu and interrupted his chattering: “This is the letter sent by Immortal Crane Sect, please read.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng sent his consciousness inside, his brows soon frowned into a knot.

In this second letter from Immortal Crane Sect, their tone was even more harsh and fierce, already making their intention to attack Hu Immortal blessed land exceptionally clear. Immortal Crane Sect even used the tone of the victor, demanding Fang Yuan to surrender.

“These guys have gone crazy for Dang Hun mountain. If it were me, I would at least first stabilize you, then carry out hidden attacks. Aren’t they afraid their actions will make us take preventive measures?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng said in a displeased tone.

“This is the power and confidence of Immortal Crane Sect. They are one of the ten great ancient sects of central continent and have an incomparably deep foundation, having stood tall and straight at Fei He mountain for hundreds of thousands of years. Besides this, I think they are trying to pressure me and also probe the intention of my backers.” Fang Yuan analyzed.

“Yes, Immortal Crane Sect is stronger than any single super force of northern plains by some degree. We are too weak, while they are a colossus becoming more and more overbearing. It will be very difficult for us to protect Hu Immortal blessed land from them...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng spoke carefully, glancing at Fang Yuan several times.

He already had thoughts of retreating, giving up Hu Immortal blessed land and moving far away, he just did not openly express it.

Fang Yuan knew his thoughts. Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a healing Gu Master, he was benevolent and could be said to be feeble, seriously lacking the spirit to make a stand.

Fang Yuan did not rebuke Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s intentions.

In fact, Fang Yuan had also thought of giving up and abandoning Hu Immortal blessed land.

Dang Hun mountain represented extremely huge benefits and Immortal Crane Sect and other super forces would definitely want to possess it.

However, that was, of course, only as a last resort.

As long as there existed hope along with benefits, it could be said that Fang Yuan would absolutely not speak of giving up easily.

Fang Yuan thus consoled Tai Bai Yun Sheng: “Immortal Crane Sect is one of the ten great ancient sects of central continent, a super force, a behemoth, but they also have their worries. How many methods can they use to deal with us specifically? I dare to guarantee, it is not as exaggerated as you imagine, especially when they are greatly underestimating our true battle strength.”

Life was not easy, Immortal Crane Sect also had its own problems.

New sects were emerging endlessly in central continent, continually bringing huge impacts to the ten great ancient sects.

The ten great ancient sects occupied the most important positions in central continent with the best cultivation resources, they naturally would be subjected to competition from all sides.

In history, Immortal Crane Sect had experienced golden ages several times, but at present, there was a clear disparity compared to their most prosperous periods.

Immortal Crane Sect had not expanded for many years already — this meant they were under some restraints.

“Since junior brother wants to battle Immortal Crane Sect, I shall risk my life to accompany you. Don’t worry, no matter how dangerous the situation gets, I will support you till the last moment.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng patted his chest and swore.

Fang Yuan nodded: “I also ask Old Bai to not worry, I, Gu Yue Fang Yuan, am not a stubborn man. If there was nothing to be done and the situation was truly unfavorable, I would definitely take the initiative to retreat. Forcing back Immortal Crane Sect’s first wave of attacks perhaps won’t be difficult, but the main problem does not lie here. Immortal Crane Sect is a very big sect, if we repel them, they will at once arrive with another wave. After this continues for few times, Immortal Crane Sect’s offense will become stronger and they will start treating us more seriously. We need to rely on another great force to resolve this issue, making an alliance with another ancient sect.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng repeatedly nodded in complete agreement: “But junior brother, you have already sent a letter to Spirit Affinity House, but until now they have yet to reply. Was our letter Gu intercepted by Immortal Crane Sect, how about we send some more letters?”

Fang Yuan shook his head, the letter Gu he contacted Spirit Affinity House with was not his, but the rank five letter sending green bird Gu created by Feng Jiu Ge.

Back then, Fang Yuan defeated Feng Jin Huang and obtained Hu Immortal blessed land. Feng Jin Huang was indignant and sent a challenge letter using this letter sending green bird Gu.

But Fang Yuan did not respond to the challenge and instead had been detaining this letter Gu.

He had already speculated this letter Gu’s owner was very likely to be Feng Jiu Ge. The reason being that Feng Jin Huang had yet to reach rank five back then.

Besides Feng Jiu Gu, it was also likely to be his wife, Feng Jin Huang’s mother — Fairy Bai Qing.

Regardless of who the owner was, this letter Gu had already been lent to Fang Yuan, its original purpose being to allow Fang Yuan to respond to the challenge letter.

And Fang Yuan used this letter Gu to contact Spirit Affinity House.

Fang Yuan had been very confident regarding this letter, but Spirit Affinity House still had yet to reply after so long, so he was somewhat unsure now.

According to the common sense conjecture: letter sending green bird Gu was created by Feng Jiu Ge, which represented this expert’s will and prestige to some degree. To intercept this green bird Gu and risk offending his impressive and dignified presence, this was not at all likely.

However, this possibility could not be completely excluded as well.

Thus Fang Yuan nodded and accepted Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s suggestion: “Okay, let’s wait seven days, if we still don’t receive a reply by then, we will send another letter.”

Time passed day by day, Hu Immortal blessed land was in a predicament.

A strong enemy was approaching from the outside, while on the inside, cultivation resources were lacking. Even if Fang Yuan used his zombie body and wisdom Gu to deduce and sell Immortal Gu recipes of the highest grade, the regretful part was that he did not have the capital to kickstart this plan and could only put it aside for the time being.

Lang Ya land spirit and Spirit Affinity House were the keys to break through these predicaments.

But it was a pity that these two keys stayed in the dark with no messages from them. Who knew when Fang Yuan would receive news from them, perhaps he wouldn’t for his whole life.

Destiny created obstacles, the road ahead of Fang Yuan was once again shrouded in obscurity.

“It seems my luck is still not too good.” Fang Yuan scoffed at himself.

There was nothing he could do, since he possessed Spring Autumn Cicada, his luck was likely to only get worse.

He tried asking Mo Yao about improved Immortal Gu remnant recipes, but Mo Yao claimed that she did not know them.

She was residing in Fang Yuan’s body and had gone through the final battle in northern plains with him; she knew Fang Yuan possessed wisdom Gu and thus it was not hard for her to speculate Fang Yuan’s intentions.

Mo Yao was a refinement path grandmaster, she very likely knew Immortal Gu remnant recipes which matched Fang Yuan’s criteria. But she did not reply and since Fang Yuan lacked wisdom path methods, he could do nothing to her.

Under this kind of situation, Hei Lou Lan suddenly arrived at Dang Hun mountain.

Fang Yuan lost a stargate Gu and was already not able to return to northern plains alone. Hei Lou Lan being able to come to Dang Hun mountain was naturally because of Fixed Immortal Travel.

As for how she knew the scenery here, that was because Fang Yuan had sent a will to her of his own accord.

This was the agreed upon plan, but Fang Yuan was still somewhat surprised: “If I am not wrong, there is still half a month left before the limit of our agreed upon time, right?”

“The situation has changed, my friend.” Hei Lou Lan tone’s was grave, revealing a trace of worry.

Making this formidable and ambitious person anxious, the situation in northern plains indeed did not seem to be optimistic.

However, Hei Lou Lan soon realized her flaw and concealed all her emotions, speaking with a cold smile: “Naturally, I have another goal, that is to make sure you are not on guard. After all, this is your headquarters, in case you arranged traps against me, I would be messing up your plans by arriving earlier!”

Fang Yuan laughed, appearing unperturbed, as if there were no issues that could perplex him: “After the battle of northern plains, you and I are already tied together for better or for worse. But for complete cooperation, your previous conditions are still insufficient!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 659: The dirtiness of humans

Hearing Fang Yuan say “insufficient”, Hei Lou Lan snorted in displeasure: “Fang Yuan, you are not very clear about northern plains’ situation, I will tell you right now. Not long ago, northern plains’ number one wisdom path Gu Immortal, Dong Fang Chang Fan, invited all of the super tribes and personally made deductions for them. His condition was that they had to ally with Dong Fang tribe, and within the fifty years of his death, they are not allowed to target or suppress Dong Fang tribe.”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan’s gaze focused: “There’s such a thing? Then, what did he deduce?”

“Reportedly, Dong Fang Chang Fan made one deduction for each tribe, regarding Gu recipes, appearance of Immortal Gu, or some tips for killing desolate beasts. He has already deduced much of your information, though I do not know the deeper details. But now, everyone knows that you are not a northern plains Gu Master, but there is also a northern plains Gu Master colluding with you.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s pupils shrunk, he said with some fear: “He actually deduced so many things? As expected of Dong Fang Chang Fan...”

Hei Lou Lan snickered, continuing: “Fang Yuan, our lives are tied together now! If I die, who is to say that I will not expose you and Tai Bai Yun Sheng. Other than that, is wisdom Gu in your hands?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression changed, he firmly wanted to deny it, but he stopped himself from acting rashly.

Fang Yuan calmly laughed: “How is that possible! Wisdom Gu was already destroyed in the wind veil of assimilation, how could I have brought it here?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng immediately praised him in his mind, Fang Yuan’s skills in lying were simply spectacular. His tone and expression were flawless, it was filled with pity, regret and other sad emotions, it was as if he really had narrowly missed out in obtaining wisdom Gu.

Hei Lou Lan could not see any flaws in his performance, but next, she squinted, saying in a thuggish tone: “I don’t care if you really lost wisdom Gu, I only know that wisdom Gu could have taken the initiative to follow you under the pressure of survival. Hehe, you don’t have to deny it now. I’m sure you understand my idea, it is not safe for you to hide in central continent. It doesn’t matter if wisdom Gu is really in your hands, as long as I spread information that wisdom Gu is with you, there will be nowhere for you to hide! The entire world’s Gu Immortals will chase you down like lunatics, until they get to the truth.”

“Are you threatening me?” Fang Yuan’s expression turned cold, he slowly stood up.

“Hei Lou Lan, you have some guts. Do you not know that you are now on Dang Hun mountain. As long as we instruct it, the land spirit will use Dang Hun mountain and kill you right here.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted.

Hei Lou Lan laughed with her head high, she said fearlessly: “Hahaha, even if this is a dragon’s nest or a tiger’s den, what can you do to me? I made some arrangements before I came, as long as I do not return in three days, the entirety of northern plains will know that you apprentice brothers are the culprits behind the collapse of True Yang Building, furthermore, the entire world will know that wisdom Gu is with you!”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression froze, Hei Lou Lan indeed came prepared, this was targeting his weakness.

But at this time, Fang Yuan’s eerie words made Hei Lou Lan’s laughter stop —”Hei Lou Lan, I know you are not afraid of death, but have you forgotten your hatred?”

Hei Lou Lan’s expression changed, her aura diminished as her eyes were like lightning, looking at Fang Yuan: “State your conditions.”

“You have to agree with my first condition, that is, you have to return Fixed Immortal Travel to its owner, me.” Next, Fang Yuan raised four fingers: “Secondly, after we cooperate, during the process of your revenge, the loot will be split four to six, for you and us respectively. After all, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and I make up two Gu Immortals.”

Hei Lou Lan snorted: “Do you think you have a helper while I don’t? But never mind, I accept these conditions.”

She hesitated for a bit, but she still chose to give in, even though she had a tough personality.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, he could see her sincerity from this, he continued: “Lastly, I need to know the entire story of this, as well as the reason why you need to kill your father personally.”

Hei Lou Lan was silent for a while, but she soon agreed: “You are indeed overly suspicious, I can satisfy all three of your conditions, this is nothing I can’t speak of anyway.”

Next, in their conversation, Fang Yuan finally understood the secret behind Hei Lou Lan’s thirst for revenge.

The root of all this was actually Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

In True Yang Building, there was a true inheritance called “yin-yang life extension method”, it had been taken by Hei Cheng long ago.

Fang Yuan had actually seen the empty light lump of the yin-yang life extension method by coincidence in the past.

This true inheritance was created by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable when he researched about Ren Zu for life extension methods.

To use this method, a male and female Gu Immortal have to cooperate, using copulation to extend the lifespan of one of them.

But there was a flaw in this.

If one gains lifespan, the other must lose lifespan.

In other words, it was to transfer the lifespan of one person to the other.

The story of Su Xian’s Night Elopement had long since been widely spread in northern plains, it had given many young women in northern plains the courage to find their true love, to take the first step.

Two hundred years ago, Su Xian Er was the daughter of a concubine in Su tribe, her status was not high and she was often serving wine to guests in banquets, like a servant.

Once, when Su tribe leader was attending to Hei Cheng, Su Xian Er poured wine for him and fell in love with him at first sight.

However, Su tribe leader harmed Hei Cheng in secret, using a poison Gu on him, causing his strength to fall to rock bottom, and he was chased down by enemies.

Su Xian Er learnt of this and ran out of her tribe’s campsite in the middle of the night, to save Hei Cheng who had only met her once.

Back then, she only had rank one cultivation, but during the night there were wild wolf groups roaming, it was extremely dangerous and she was simply courting death.

But due to coincidence, she found the unconscious Hei Cheng.

Hei Cheng was thus saved, and their following conversation became a classic that was passed down in northern plains.

He had asked Su Xian Er: “I was plotted against by your tribe leader and you are a Su tribesman, why would you save an enemy of your tribe?”

Su Xian Er then answered: “Lord has a noble spirit, this humble girl fell in love at first sight. Su tribe leader is short-sighted and plotted against lord under the persuasion of some petty people, but he never considered the result of offending Hei tribe. If he was allowed to have his way, Su tribe is destined to become a sacrificial pawn between two super tribes. People say lord repays a favor received by a hundred times. This humble girl saved lord today and only hopes lord can give me a place to stay. It is just and proper for lord to take revenge against Su tribe, but I hope lord can be merciful and leave behind a trace of bloodline for Su tribe.”

Hei Cheng was overwhelmed at this sight, he tightly held Su Xian Er’s hand and swore: “Your love is as deep as the sea, I, Hei Cheng, am not a cruel person, how could I not repay you? From today onwards, you will be my only wife! I will not care for any other beauties, no matter how beautiful they are. In this life, I will never betray you!”

From then on, the two of them became a loving couple that respected each other equally.

A hundred years later, they both became Gu Immortals, and the story was a legend of northern plains.

But most people did not know that Su tribe faced extermination soon after.

Hei Cheng had many wives and children, Su Xian Er was neither the first, nor the last.

Hei Cheng and Su Xian Er had a daughter, she followed her father’s surname, while getting the name Lou Lan. Years later, Su Xian Er died, and Hei Cheng was extremely aggrieved, he announced to the public: His wife’s body had deteriorated after giving birth to Hei Lou Lan, she fell heavily ill and her strength fell drastically, thus she died a few years later in her blessed land’s earthly calamity.

“He had obtained the yin-yang life extension method in the true inheritance secluded domain, he kept it very secretive. For his own selfish desires, he lied to my mother with ill intentions. My mother did not know the details and because she trusted and cooperated with him, almost all of her lifespan was taken by him mercilessly.”

“After my mother died, he concealed the truth, thus he could still openly be a righteous path Gu Immortal. He absorbed my mother’s aperture and took all the Gu worms that she accumulated in her life. He is a coward, a dirty and despicable scoundrel, in order to live longer, he actually plotted against the person who loved him the most!”

“Before mother died, she saw his true colors and told me to be careful of him! As expected, mother was right. There was a problem with his cultivation, the lifespan that he took away was consumed very quickly, he is now facing another crisis of dwindling lifespan. This time, his target is me.”

“I have the Great Strength True Martial Physique, once I advance to a Gu Immortal, my foundations will be extremely firm. If he uses the yin-yang life extension method on me, less lifespan would be wasted in the process, and he would gain much more lifespan!”

Hei Lou Lan spilled all of the secrets hidden in the dark, in her calm tone, one could nonetheless sense her utter hatred.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng shook his head as he listened: “To think that Lord Hei Cheng is such a person, this is really disappointing...”

He was a prospective Gu Immortal candidate in the past, with high hopes to become one, he had interacted with Hei tribe’s Gu Immortal, Hei Bai, in secret, and he was even recruited.

Thus, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s impression of Hei tribe had always been good.

Hei Lou Lan’s words destroyed this good impression.

“Hmph, this is the so-called righteous path, who knows how many dirty and disgusting things are going on underneath this glorious surface. In contrast, the demonic path consists of countless characters that are more straightforward!” Hei Lou Lan scoffed.

“No wonder you didn’t respond to Hei Cheng when he called you at the point when the wind veil of assimilation was cut open.” Fang Yuan nodded, he looked at Hei Lou Lan again, feeling a different emotion.

Hei Lou Lan was born with a golden spoon, yet this actually was a tragedy.

Her own father harmed her mother, and was now targeting her, attempting to take her lifespan.

Lacking the warmth of a family, under threats and dangers for many years, she had no option but to disguise herself while secretly putting in immense effort, swearing to take revenge for her mother.

This was likely the reason why she obtained such a formidable personality.

Where there is a cause, there will be consequences.

There is a saying called “heroes often meet their end”, the “hero” here could also be replaced with formidable characters.

But in fact, it is not that heroes and conquerors often meet desperate situations, it is the desperate situations that create them. In this way, they are people with very pitiful lives, they often encounter and feel much greater pain than normal people. But because of this pain, they learn and become who they are.

Those who live in happiness, living like an upright person, being open and honest without any rough rides in life, while attaining numerous achievements and gaining reputation and praise. Are there truly such people in real life?

Fang Yuan thought about Earth, about the five hundred years of his previous life, and scoffed.

Where there are high achievers, there are sacrifices. Those who are higher ups often need to sacrifice their morals.

Of course, there are outliers, lucky people, and those who rely on their family, but how long can they last, how many will be left in the end?

Legend says, when Ren Zu started walking on the road of life, his vision changed, it was pure darkness.

He took the first step.

PIop.

At the next moment, he stepped into the mud.

He raised his foot, wiping it with his hand, it was full of mushy mud and extremely smelly.

He was hesitant to move forward.

At this moment, self Gu said: “Oh human, do not hesitate, if you want to walk on your own road, you will need to rely on your own legs. When your leg steps on the road, do not be afraid of dirtiness.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 660: Snowy Mountain Alliance

Outside the window of a room, snow was silently falling down.

The fragrance of tea pervaded inside the quiet room.

A woman was sitting beside the vermillion red window frame.

She was wearing an embroidered leather skirt, characteristic of northern plains’ women. The leather skirt was embroidered with purplish-red flower buds, while the edges were glittering with silvery light. She bound her hair with a sapphire blue ribbon which had a pure white pearl inlaid in the middle.

Her eyes were drooping, emphasizing her thick eyelashes. Her breathing was soft and her hands that were as white as the snow moved slowly, concentrating completely on brewing tea.

The quiet room was not large and she was the only person inside. But on the table there were four tea cups.

A rich jade-green light suddenly appeared in the quiet room.

The light dissipated to reveal an elderly figure.

The elderly man was tall with an eccentric appearance. His hair was grey and his face was filled with wrinkles. His eyes displayed one who had gone through the vicissitudes of life, warm and tenacious, containing wisdom accumulated in all of his lifetime.

The woman who was brewing the tea stood up at the sight of the elderly man and smiled with interest: “You are Tai Bai Yun Sheng.”

The elderly man was Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he quickly looked around him before greeting the woman: “Junior greets senior Fairy Li Shan.”

The woman nodded with a smile. She was an influential figure in the limelight among northern plains’ Gu Immortals, a rank seven Gu Immortal, Fairy Li Shan.

She looked youthful and beautiful, but her true age was much greater than Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng confirmed the safety of the surroundings before opening his immortal aperture, from which two human shadows leaped out.

One turned into Hei Lou Lan while the other was an eight armed immortal zombie as tall as six metres with a fierce appearance, it was none other than Gu Yue

Fang Yuan.

“Little aunt, I am back.” Hei Lou Lan walked towards Fairy Li Shan, her expression was still cold but her gaze revealed a trace of affection.

Fairy Li Shan glanced at Hei Lou Lan warmly and sighed, then turned her gaze towards Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng: “The relationship between me and Little Lan has always been a secret, to the extent that outsiders aren’t even aware we know each other. Today, she exposed this secret of her own accord, it can clearly be seen that she sincerely wishes to cooperate with you two guests. Especially you, Fang Yuan, Little Lan had mentioned you to me many times over these days. You accomplished such a huge matter, bringing even Eighty-Eight True Yang Building down.”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily and said with the hoarse voice specific to zombies: “Fairy is exaggerating, all this commotion is not what I wished for. To speak the truth, I had been doubting Hei Lou Lan’s proposal for cooperation since the beginning, but who could have thought, Hei Lou Lan had such a close relationship with you. This is the best situation, fairy, with the oath to your Immortal Gu, Mountain Pledge, our alliance can be firm and solid.”

Not long ago, at Hu Immortal blessed land, Hei Lou Lan exposed the reason for her hatred. Then she revealed her relationship with Fairy Li Shan.

Fang Yuan was surprised and yet also not surprised.

Hei Lou Lan was under the strict supervision of Gu Immortal Hei Cheng, it would be difficult for her to obtain her current achievements just by relying on her own strength. Besides her own efforts, there definitely was outside help.

“Please take a seat, this snow oil tea has just been steeped.” Fairy Li Shan extended her hand to indicate Fang and Tai to be seated.

Fang Yuan waved his hand in refusal: “Let’s make an oath and establish the alliance first, it won’t be too late to drink tea then.”

“Virtuous junior Fang is quite decisive.” Fairy Li Shan lightly praised before calling out an Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu resembled a beetle. It was thick and solid, even bigger than an adult’s palm. Its body was ash gray with a stony texture, a pair of large pincers grew on its head, its back was not glossy and was instead rugged like mountains, and there were specks of stripes, like moss, on the joints of its legs.

Fairy Li Shan aptly explained: “This is a rank six information path Immortal Gu, as famous as sea oath Gu. As long as you choose a mountain to pledge to and as long as this mountain still exists, the oath cannot be violated. Virtuous junior Fang, I wonder which mountain you want to choose?”

Fang Yuan slightly raised his brows, then he pointed outside and laughed hoarsely: “What other place can be better than this mountain?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng asked, not understanding the situation: “What mountain is this?”

“This mountain is called Snowy Mountain.” Fairy Li Shan smiled and introduced.

“Snowy Mountain, where have I heard this name, wait a second, could it be this is that nest of northern plains’ demonic path Gu Immortals — Snowy Mountain blessed land?!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng cried out in shock.

“Where else did you think it was?” Hei Lou Lan sneered.

Fang Yuan provided an introduction for Tai Bai Yun Sheng: “There are differences between immortal and mortal. Old Bai, you just recently advanced and you only have heard me mention some information about the northern plains’ Gu Immortal world in passing. This Fairy Li Shan is the owner of the third branch peak of Snowy Mountain blessed land, you can also call her the third leader.”

“Third... leader.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng stared at Fairy Li Shan with wide open eyes, he had never expected for this gentle and refined woman to be a demonic path Gu Immortal, moreover she was the third leader of the largest demonic path nest of northern plains!

...

“Cough cough cough.” Dong Fang Chang Fan was lying on a sickbed, coughing incessantly. With every cough, his pale white face would wither a bit more.

“Lord...” A handsome young man was standing beside the sickbed with a mournful and grieving expression.

He was wearing a white robe, his face was white like jade and his eyes were deep, revealing a calm, mature temperament, it was Dong Fang Yu Liang.

“No need to grieve, Liang Er, cough cough, to be born, get old, be sick and die is the way of nature.” Dong Fang Chang Fan gasped for breath after saying this, and continued after recovering some strength, “Your talents are better than mine, among the whole tribe I feel most optimistic about you. The responsibility of Dong Fang tribe’s growth can only be shouldered by you. I, Dong Fang Chang Fan, would not misjudge this.”

“Lord supreme elder!” Dong Fang Yu Liang’s eyes reddened, sobbing silently.

The old man nearing death in front of his eyes was his benefactor!

Dong Fang Yu Liang lost his parents at the age of eleven, after that he had to maintain his livelihood and also care for his six year old sister, Dong Fang Qing Yu.

To preserve their lives, he gave away all the inheritances left by his parents.

But it was exactly because of this, that he was noticed by Dong Fang Chang Fan, not only becoming a trusted aide, his sister was also given great care.

Later, Dong Fang Yu Liang even received Dong Fang Chang Fan’s personal guidance. And despite the obstructions and oppositions from many sides, Dong Fang Chang Fan appointed Dong Fang Yu Liang as the tribe leader.

After Dong Fang Yu Liang lost in the Imperial Court contest and returned to the tribe, he was suppressed and pushed aside by various factions; it was Dong Fang Chang Fan who protected and shielded him again, paying a considerable price.

Dong Fang Chang Fan was becoming weaker and weaker, he opened his mouth several times but no words came out. Finally, he spoke in an extremely weak voice: “Your hand.”

Dong Fang Yu Liang extended his hand and grabbed the old man’s right hand.

The old man was holding a Gu on his hand.

“Thi... this Gu... take it.” Dong Fang Chang Fan’s face turned red from the strain, extracting the last bit of energy from his dying breath.

He closely stared at Dong Fang Yu Liang and reminded him: “Although Dong Fang tribe has signed an alliance agreement with the other righteous path tribes, the affairs of world are changeable and hard to predict. My death will cause Dong Fang tribe to fall down from its prosperous period, you are my successor, you must be careful. This Gu, once you activate it, it will bring you to a secluded place which contains the cultivation resources I prepared for you, insights about immortal ascension, the tribe’s secret history as well as all my comprehensions of wisdom path cultivation. Remember, always prioritize your safety, don’t be impatient. The tribe has... has demonic path spies.”

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s expression froze, the flush on his face turned fainter and the final trace of radiance in his eyes faded.

“Lord!!” Dong Fang Yu Liang’s face was already covered with tears, and this moment, he could no longer hold them back, crying in sorrow.

Northern plains’ number one wisdom path Gu Immortal, Dong Fang Chang Fan, had passed away.

The news spread, Dong Fang tribe cried for three days and three nights. And when the great forces of northern plains received the information, both demonic and righteous path Gu Immortals let out breaths of relief.

Dong Fang Chang Fan was a legendary character.

At the time of his birth, Dong Fang tribe was already declining rapidly, with only the name of a super force but with no power.

Dong Fang Chang Fan became a Gu Immortal and led the tribe; scheming in all directions, using wisdom path methods to devise strategies, tying bonds to powerful friends, killing the weak, and even plotting for his enemies to fight each other, causing Dong Fang tribe to rapidly rise again.

Dong Fang tribe’s growth was almost entirely because of Dong Fang Chang Fan.

But because of this, all the Gu Immortals of northern plains became aware of Dong Fang Chang Fan’s might! Wisdom path Gu Immortals often did not need to use their own hands to humiliate their enemies. Making schemes that connected like a spider web, one thing would lead to the other, enemies would feel like they were sinking into a swamp but unable to extricate themselves.

Gu Immortals feared Dong Fang Chang Fan and secretly reached an agreement. Banning the sale of lifespan Gu to Dong Fang Chang Fan and even secretly destroying Dong Fang tribe’s plans of searching for lifespan Gu.

Dong Fang Chang Fan schemed against others, and finally was also schemed by others.

...

The sun was high in the sky, crescent lake gleamed in the sunlight with the occasional dragonfish leaping out of the lake.

Leftover snow piled up beside the lake, this was the remnant of the once in ten years blizzard disaster.

Fang Yuan destroyed Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangement; the blizzard disaster poured into Imperial Court blessed land, thus the destruction caused by the disaster in northern plains was many times lighter than the past.

Imperial Court blessed land existed no longer while True Yang Building was also destroyed; there would be no more of the once in ten years blizzard disaster in northern plains.

The remaining snow slowly melted under the sunlight.

Grass was already poking out of the snow. There was a mixture of green and white grasses mixed together.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng moved together, seeing many water wolves and solitary tri-horned rhinos in their path. Water chestnut trees used to fill this place, but now it was a scene of barrenness, the trees already freezing to death or breaking down from the accumulated snow.

The intense change in the scenery brought Fang Yuan some trouble.

He was searching for the passage to Lang Ya blessed land — that purple stone tree left behind by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

Three days had passed since the alliance with Hei Lou Lan.

Little Hu Immortal was at Hu Immortal blessed land, paying attention to treasure yellow heaven all the time but still not seeing Lang Ya Old Immortal's divine sense.

Fang Yuan took back Fixed Immortal Travel and used this Immortal Gu to go to crescent lake.

Fang Yuan did not directly teleport to Lang Ya blessed land to prevent any unnecessary misunderstandings. He planned to use Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable's arrangement again and enter properly.

Because the surroundings had changed, he was unable to directly teleport to the purple stone tree. Being able to directly appear beside crescent lake was thanks to Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

When he was wandering over northern plains, he had once dug a cave beside crescent lake and made simple arrangements, staying for two to three months.

The cave had not collapsed, Fang Yuan first lent Fixed Immortal Travel to Tai Bai Yun Sheng, then entered his immortal aperture, arriving at this place.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 661: Seeing Swamp Crab again

“Found it.” Fang Yuan's eyes shone, he had arrived before a purple stone pillar.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked in the direction of his voice, merely to see that this crucial pillar was very ordinary. Just that at the base of the stone pillar, there was a rock, flat and smooth like a bench, it looked slightly special.

“This is it.” Fang Yuan stretched out a large monstrous arm, sweeping the snow off the stone bench, confirming it.

After Tai Bai Yun Sheng went into his immortal aperture, Fang Yuan sat down on the bench, using a Gu worm to cut his arm and letting the blood drip onto this purple stone pillar.

His blood was not red like normal people, it was a jade green color and had no warmth, it was ice cold.

The purple stone pillar had once been modified by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable with the use of his mysterious Gu worm, the jade green zombie blood was quickly absorbed.

Ma Hong Yun’s figure swiftly flashed across Fang Yuan’s mind.

This opportunity originally belonged to Ma Hong Yun, Fang Yuan could be said to be a thief.

After Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun were sent out of the wind veil of assimilation by the luck path true inheritance, they were snatched by northern plains’ righteous and demonic Gu Immortals, it was a scene of chaos.

Right now, there was no news on the two of them, one could confirm that they were captured by a Gu Immortal. Whether they could escape or what ordeals they were going through, no one knew.

Compared to his previous life, Ma Hong Yun was much more pitiful in this life.

One could see that even with fortune that rivals heaven, it is not omnipotent.

Luck only provides opportunities, whether one could use them well, that depends on the Gu Master’s strength and abilities.

Right now, everyone was still looking for Ma Hong Yun, but no one knew which Gu Immortal had hidden them. The allure of the luck path true inheritance was too great, especially for northern plains’ Gu Immortals.

“My Spring Autumn Cicada has the weakness of impairing my own luck, if I can use the luck path true inheritance to fix this flaw, it would be the best method. Since rebirth, I have already suffered many difficulties from bad luck.” Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

Not only was Ma Hong Yun a good target as a valuable treasure, most importantly — during this northern plains trip, Ma Hong Yun was an eyewitness, he was an insider and would likely expose Fang Yuan and the others.

Thus, Ma Hong Yun also posed a death threat to Hei Lou Lan.

Killing Ma Hong Yun was one of the agreements in the Snowy Mountain Alliance.

Entering Lang Ya blessed land again, Fang Yuan did not enter the cloud building’s room like last time.

Lang Ya blessed land’s unique terrain was that it was situated on vast white cloud soil.

Twelve buildings, at equal lengths apart, were situated on the cloud soil, they were the twelve cloud buildings.

But what Fang Yuan saw was a messy sight.

The fertile cloud soil was full of holes. There was ice forming in some holes, while black smoke was rising in some holes.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng came out of Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture, upon seeing this, he said: “A battle had occurred here not long ago. It seems that Lang Ya land spirit was really in trouble.”

Fang Yuan did not speak, he only looked at the twelve cloud buildings far away.

These twelve buildings had their respective features, some had immortal cranes flying around them, some had feathermen living in them, some had beautiful auroras, while some had the smell of incense.

But right now, only eight of these twelve buildings were intact, the remaining three were in bad shape, walls were collapsed and structures were crumbling.

“What happened? We are already in Lang Ya blessed land, yet the land spirit has yet to appear?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng frowned, feeling very alert in his heart.

“Let’s go in and see first.” Fang Yuan pondered.

The two flew over, slowly getting close to the twelve cloud buildings.

“Quickly look, there is a desolate beast corpse there!” After moving for some time, Tai Bai Yun Sheng suddenly pointed at one direction, saying.

Only to see that a huge fish was lying on the cloud soil, not moving.

It had the size of a normal whale, but it looked like a carp. There were bones protruding out of its back, along the spine, extending outwards.

Its scales were blue in color, its eyes were as large as a horse carriage, with some starry radiance in them.

“This is the desolate beast, spinefin star dragonfish.” Fang Yuan said.

He knew that Lang Ya land spirit had a beast enslavement Immortal Gu and enslaved twelve desolate beasts, each kept in one of the twelve cloud buildings.

Was this spinefin star dragonfish one of the twelve?

“Oh? Someone came in.” In a dark secret room, Lang Ya land spirit opened his eyes, sensing Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

In front of him, there was a Gu Immortal. He was middle aged and had a mighty disposition, his appearance was not that of a normal man, he had black skin and white hair, he was an inkman Gu Immortal.

“What? Another strong foe?” The inkman Gu Immortal heard the land spirit and became nervous.

“Oh, it is that rascal! Pfft, he scared me. No worry, I know this person. Half a year ago, he came here before.” After Lang Ya land spirit focused his mind to detect them, he breathed out deeply.

The inkman Gu Immortal raised his brows in surprise, he did not think that there would be other guests coming to Lang Ya blessed land besides himself.

“Since they are friends and not foes, then all is well. It has been three days and three nights since we entered the secret room, in just a moment, we can release one layer of the seals on you. At this time, we cannot be disturbed.” The inkman Gu Immortal’s heart settled.

“But we cannot let them near the cloud building. Old friend, you might not know this, but that kid is crafty and scheming, he is Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritor, I suffered a loss from him in the past. Let me mobilize the desolate beast and stop him from coming temporarily.” Lang Ya land spirit gritted his teeth and said.

“We’ve been in here for so long, yet Lang Ya land spirit has not appeared yet, it seems something huge happened here! The attack on Lang Ya blessed land was definitely not done by one person. Such a force is not to be trifled with, we should search the battlefield and retreat for now.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was speaking, when suddenly, a large ‘golden metallic mountain rock’ drilled out of the cloud soil.

The ‘cubic rock’ moved quickly, blocking the way of the two.

“Desolate beast!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng readied himself to face this enemy.

The desolate beast had no eyes, a large pair of pincers were right in front of it. No one dared to doubt the power of these fearsome weapons.

Furthermore, it had nine pairs of legs, coming out of the cubic rock as they extended.

The crab legs stabbed into the cloud soil, propping the desolate beast’s large body up.

At this point, Tai Bai Yun Sheng recognised the origins of this desolate beast: “This is the lord of swamps — swamp crab!”

Fang Yuan snorted, he was very familiar with the swamp crab. After all, when he had just obtained Hu Immortal blessed land, he faced a swamp crab in his tribulation.

Most importantly, that swamp crab had the gruel mud Immortal Gu, causing great destruction to Dang Hun mountain.

In order to save Dang Hun mountain, Fang Yuan had to enter northern plains and attempt to take Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s landscape as before Immortal Gu. Now, after braving many dangers, not only did he succeed in saving Dang Hun mountain, he even recruited Tai Bai Yun Sheng to join him, one could say he obtained both the Gu and the Gu Master.

The swamp crab blocked their path, Tai Bai Yun Sheng stopped in his tracks and asked Fang Yuan: “What do we do now?”

Fang Yuan’s gaze was locked on the desolate beast, he said one word: “Fight.”

“Be careful.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded, swiftly retreating, pulling some distance from Fang Yuan. He was a healing Gu Immortal, in most situations, he would not charge forward and take a risk, this was also in line with his usual personality.

Fang Yuan floated in the air, looking at the swamp crab silently. Next, he breathed in deeply, straightened his back and stretched his eight arms.

The muscles on his body bulged, resembling an iron monster. His eyes were blood red, his green face and sharp fangs gave off a ruthless and terrifying aura.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan moved, his body was like a meteor crashing towards the swamp crab.

The swamp crab was huge, but it was unbelievably agile, nine pairs of legs moved quickly, as it dodged sideways.

But Fang Yuan was a flying master, even though it seemed like he would miss, with just a turn, he crashed into the swamp crab’s back.

Bam!

With a thunderous sound, the swamp crab was pushed into the ground by Fang Yuan’s forceful impact.

His over six meters tall body stood in a crater. This was the damage caused by his attack.

“Tough enough!” Fang Yuan grinned, pulling back four of his right arms.

His fists, without exception, were torn open and showed the white bones inside.

But Fang Yuan had lost his sense of pain, even though his fists were injured, they was healing at an insane speed, in just a few breaths’ time, his four right fists recovered completely.

Puff puff!

Two waves of fierce winds approached to assault him.

Fang Yuan’s wings opened, as he tread into and flew in the air like lightning, dodging the fierce winds.

Hearing two sharp sounds, Fang Yuan turned around to look, only to see that the swamp crab’s huge pincers were bending at an unbelievable angle, towards his back and snapping together.

If Fang Yuan dodged slower, he would’ve been hit already.

The battle strength of a desolate beast was comparable to a rank six Gu Immortal. Even with the absurd defense of Fang Yuan’s heavenly zombie body, he did not want to endure the attack.

“The swamp crab’s armor is extraordinarily hard, there is almost no flaws in its defense. I do not have cutting or drilling abilities, I can only break through with pure strength, using power to force my way through is the best method.” Fang Yuan’s thoughts collided intensely in his mind.

His body continued to rise, as he looked down. In just a few breaths of time, the swamp crab’s body was full of crabs.

These crabs were as large as tigers, they were fearless. Some has sharp crab legs, resembling needles. Some had claw like limbs, and were very fast.

This was the special ability of the swamp crab — it could reproduce at any time and place, summoning a crab army that would move according to its will.

“Very good.” Fang Yuan’s gaze was cold and dark, he breathed in deeply and activated the killer move, myriad self!

With the expenditure of one bead of green grape immortal essence, he activated the core Immortal Gu.

Thereafter, large numbers of Gu worms started activating in a certain pattern.

Fang Yuan’s eight fists pounded at the swamp crab below him.

Bam bam bam...

Each fist exploded with a formless fist qi, the shadows of the fists were flying as his punches rained down like a torrential storm!

The swamp crab cried out pitifully, it was being pressed into the ground by the unceasing fist qi.

Thousands of fist qi slammed on the swamp crab’s back, causing its hard shell to become deformed. The fist qi that dispersed formed and gathered, becoming one of Fang Yuan’s strength path phantoms.

Ten breaths later, an army of strength path phantoms formed on the swamp crab’s back.

“This is...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was shocked, this was the first time he had seen this killer move.

The strength path phantom army surrounded the swamp crab, and the crab army collapsed at once, the swamp crab was unable to endure the attacks and cried out, trying to put up resistance, but it could not prevent its imminent defeat.

No matter how many strength path phantoms it killed, Fang Yuan continued to attack, and more strength path phantoms were produced every moment.

“Ahhhh, my desolate beast! What killer move did this rascal use, I have never seen it, it is actually so strong! This killer move has definitely got to be an immortal killer move!” In the secret room, Lang Ya land spirit could see all that was going on, he lost his cool as he started shouting.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 662: Inkman King

Lang Ya land spirit felt heartache when he looked at his swamp crab.

The swamp crab was lying down flat on the ground, unable to stand up. Its nine pairs of legs were almost entirely torn to pieces, and even one of the enormous steel pincers at the front was shattered.

Such a battle outcome caused the inkman Gu Immortal and Tai Bai Yun Sheng to feel a chill from the depths of their hearts.

Fang Yuan struck with over ten thousand strength path phantoms, of which over three thousand still remained. He calmly stored the remaining phantoms into his immortal aperture.

These phantoms could only exist for a period of time and beyond that limit, the fist qi would dissipate and the phantoms would disappear along with it. But as long as they could be used, Fang Yuan would not waste even one of them.

Ever since he returned to Hu Immortal blessed land from northern plains, he had been penniless; he did not even have one immortal essence stone, thus he was not able to replenish large numbers of mortal Gu.

From the battle just now, he had already probed: With just the eight armed immortal zombie body, it was hard for him to pose much threat to the heavy armored swamp crab.

The only option thus was to use his killer move, myriad self.

The core of this killer move was a soul path Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan possessed, and so it required green grape immortal essence to be activated.

The situation earlier was not clear, thus Fang Yuan decisively gave up a bead of green grape immortal essence to take control of the situation.

The killer move myriad self was indeed created from the convergence of enslavement and strength path, its might was extraordinary. The swamp crab, which had brought huge trouble to Fang Yuan once before, causing him to use all his strength in order to barely deal with it, could not even raise its head from the beatings of myriad self, it continued to be in a disadvantage with no hopes of freeing itself.

“You rascal, entering my home without a word and also injuring my desolate beast, how will you compensate me?!” Lang Ya land spirit furiously chided Fang Yuan.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was engrossed in looking at this land spirit from behind Fang Yuan.

Lang Ya land spirit was thin with white hair, having a beard that reached his chest and a ruddy face like that of a baby’s. He was wearing a loose robe over his whole body and the two sleeves were fluttering in the air. If not for him seething with anger and staring at Fang Yuan with his eyes wide open, his demeanour would no doubt look elegant and sagely.

Fang Yuan was already familiar with Lang Ya land spirit, he stared at the shackles around Lang Ya land spirit, frowning: “You have been sealed, no wonder I could not hear any news of your divine sense in treasure yellow heaven. According to northern plains’ time, we have not met for merely more than half a year, how could you end up like this?”

Lang Ya land spirit’s eyes opened even wider as he snarkily retorted: “Talk about yourself, how did you become like this? Neither human nor ghost! Advancing to a Gu Immortal and yet degenerating into a zombie, hehe, you should still have plenty of lifespan though.”

“Hmph, Lang Ya land spirit, you have lived for so many years yet you don’t even know the simplest logic of give and take? Only by giving up one thing can you gain another, if I didn’t turn into a zombie, how could I be in front of you again and hold such powerful strength? But you, the longer you lived, the more you regress, now you can’t even refine Gu. You are really making your main body lose face.” Fang Yuan sneered, intentionally provoking the land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit’s sore spots were prodded and he immediately stamped his foot in anger.

Not long ago, Lang Ya blessed land had suffered an attack from a mysterious force; Lang Ya land spirit was able to repel the invaders but he ended up sealed by a qi path killer move.

Thus, he ended up having to invite his best friend to remove the seals.

Lang Ya land spirit started cursing at Fang Yuan: “You shitty kid, you still have the nerve to talk about me? True Yang Building’s fall was definitely caused by you, right?! Hehe, so many people died, two super forces lost their tribe leaders, the whole of northern plains’ Gu Immortals are searching for you, the main culprit. You are now everyone’s target, your life must be pretty hard now, right!”

The inkman Gu Immortal and Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expressions changed.

The inkman Gu Immortal’s pupils shrunk slightly, feeling an intense urge to cover the land spirit’s mouth.

But the land spirit had already said everything, it was too late.

‘How could you blurt out such a matter? Are you not afraid those two will attack to silence us?!’ The inkman Gu Immortal’s heart could not help but tremble with fear; these two were actually the people who had turned northern plains on its head and even wrecked Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangements! Too dangerous! The situation was going south!

The next moment, both Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng gazed coldly at the inkman Gu Immortal.

Even if the inkman Gu Immortal had high position and authority normally and had extraordinary strength himself, right now he could feel his heart going cold under the gaze of these two ruthless monsters.

“Lang Ya land spirit, why are you not introducing us to this person?” Fang Yuan chuckled, his voice was so hoarse that it was borderline uncomfortable to hear.

‘I can’t let Lang Ya land spirit reply, who knows what this loose-lipped guy will say?’

Thus, the inkman Gu Immortal summoned his courage and stood up, greeting: “My name is Mo Tan Sang, I live in inkman city and am the king of northern plains’ inkmen.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng raised his brows, he had not expected this person to have such an origin and immediately looked at the Inkman King in another color.

Currently, the five regions were dominated by humans. Variant humans were living while pressured on all sides; many were sold as slaves or raised as pets, their livelihood was rather difficult.

But in northern plains, inkmen had the most favorable status among the variant humans.

Many variant humans had no fixed residence and would have to wander around like vagabonds. But inkmen had established a city in northern plains, which possessed three inkman Gu Immortals.

Mo Tan Sang was the inkman city’s king. Under his leadership, the inkmen were able to resist pressure from various forces and withstand the covetous gazes of countless Gu Immortals. It was not easy to maintain the inkmen’s survival, it served to show how talented and skilled the Inkman King was.

“Inkman King Mo Tan Sang...” Fang Yuan muttered inwardly.

He had an impression of this name.

In the chaotic war of the five regions during his previous life, the Inkman King took advantage of the lack of attention paid to him due to the human tribes being too busy in their internal conflicts, to grab the opportunity and develop rapidly, greatly expanding the inkman forces.

When northern plains’ human forces wanted to suppress him, he actually disregarded his dignity as the king and threw himself to Liu tribe. He took a servant’s rite to Liu tribe’s supreme elder and became a servant to him.

Liu tribe was one of the super forces, thus the inkman forces were protected. The inkman forces grew stably under this layer of protection.

Later, when Liu tribe weakened, the Inkman King immediately gave up on Liu tribe to collaborate with Ma Hong Yun on equal terms.

Before Fang Yuan self-detonated, the inkmen had hundreds of cities and occupied one-third of northern plains’ lands.

From this one could see how talented and insightful the Inkman King Mo Tan Sang was. Not only did he have unique foresight and courage to take resolute actions, he could also bow and submit when necessary; he was not someone who could be belittled.

Fang Yuan lightly praised: “So it is the Inkman King, sure enough, you have a majestic aura beyond that of ordinary people.”

“I am not worthy of such high praise.” Inkman King quickly replied modestly.

The person before him was the main criminal in destroying Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he had to be extremely vigilant against such a dangerous person.

He took the initiative to explain: “Lang Ya land spirit and I have been very good friends for many years. In truth, inkman city has always had close relations with Lang Ya blessed land. We in inkman city have some attainment in qi path, and it turns out Lang Ya land spirit was sealed using a qi path method. Thus I hurried over to help. Sir is a dragon who roams the sky, stirring up a storm and causing the whole of northern plains to be in a state of unrest. I cannot help but admire such grandeur. All along, our inkman city has been jointly suppressed by the Huang Jin tribes. Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was even more overboard, demanding inkman cities to offer tribute in terms of countless female inkmen. In a way, you have helped us inkmen take revenge by destroying Imperial Court blessed land. You are also the land spirit’s friends, so you are my, Mo Tan Sang’s, friends as well. If you have any plans in the future, feel free to visit inkman city.”

He was indeed the Inkman King, such outstanding eloquence that completely expressed his goodwill in just one conversation, especially speaking in neither a servile nor overbearing tone, it was extremely hard to come by.

“Who is friends with this rascal?” Lang Ya land spirit shouted in dissatisfaction.

However, he felt happy in the depths of his heart when he heard Fang Yuan praising his friend, and the anger he felt previously had reduced.

Fang Yuan nodded to the Inkman King, replying with deep intent: “If there is an opportunity, I will definitely come to experience life in inkman city.”

He then looked at Lang Ya land spirit and continued provoking him without concern: “Land spirit, even if I am not your friend, you should still welcome me and refine a Gu for me. Did you forget I still have one chance left to make you refine Gu! If I want you to refine Gu, you will do it even if you don’t want to!”

Lang Ya land spirit could not put up a facade at all, his temper flaring up immediately.

Normally, Gu Immortals would be polite and even flatter him to request him to refine Gu.

When had he ever received heard disrespectful words like Fang Yuan’s?

But Fang Yuan was speaking the truth, he still had the final chance to request for Gu refinement. Lang Ya land spirit was Long Hair Ancestor’s obsession, and he must abide by the agreement his main body had agreed to back then.

“You damned scoundrel, I am so angry, my anger is going to explode!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted, his face completely red with fury.

But suddenly, he grinned with happiness: “Ahahaha, I am trapped, this qi path seal is too troublesome, there are a total of seventeen or eighteen layers of seals. Just now, Inkman King only unsealed the first layer! Hahaha, I really can’t help you refine Gu right now, my hands are tied, this is wonderful!”

He had been bored to death since he was sealed, not being able to do refinement meant his greatest hobby had been taken away.

But right now, he was feeling quite happy about it.

It was all Fang Yuan’s fault.

Seeing this weirdo Lang Ya land spirit shouting and laughing like a buffoon, Tai Bai Yun Sheng felt this trip was worth it, his horizons were broadened!

Inkman King was silent, he was the leader of a large force and was not willing to easily offend Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan coughed before speaking solemnly: “Alright, let’s talk about serious affairs. Since you can’t refine Gu, forget about it. I have another matter for coming over this time, I want to make a transaction with you.”

“Transaction, what transaction?” Lang Ya land spirit asked.

Inkman King immediately turned vigilant, Lang Ya land spirit might have high intelligence but his nature was frank, it was hard to say that he wouldn’t be cheated. Inkman King was the land spirit’s good friend, if Fang Yuan truly was conspiring, he would stand up and expose Fang Yuan’s scheme.

“The transaction is simple, you should remember the thing about me being a wisdom path Gu Master, right? I will deduce Immortal Gu recipes for you while you will pay immortal essence stones as remuneration. This is a win-win deal.” Fang Yuan replied.

“Deduce Gu recipes?” Lang Ya land spirit opened his eyes wide as he became dazed, but at the next moment he started laughing loudly.

He was swaying back and forth in his laughter, if his hands were not bound, he might have been slapping his thighs together in laughter.

Lang Ya land spirit ridiculed: “Fang Yuan, oh Fang Yuan, you are now a zombie and still think you can deduce Gu recipes? Moreover, Immortal Gu recipes? This old man advises you to get rid of this thought!”

Inkman King, however, said: “An Immortal Gu recipe, even if it is a remnant recipe, has a high price. If we give it to sir to deduce it, but you fail in the process, then wouldn’t we be handing you the contents of the Immortal Gu recipe for nothing?”

Lang Ya land spirit was startled to awareness, immediately yelling in rage: “Great, you actually wanted to swindle me of Immortal Gu recipes!”

Fang Yuan had already prepared for this and laughed, opening his monstrous palm to reveal an Immortal Gu: “Look, what is this?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 663: Recognising Immortal Gu

At once, everyone’s attention was attracted to the Gu worm in Fang Yuan’s palm.

The immortal aura of the Gu worm was radiating with the laws of the world, without doubt, it was an Immortal Gu. But no one knew which Immortal Gu it was.

Only Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s heart shook, as he remembered what Fang Yuan had revealed to him in the past.

“This Gu, this Gu...” Lang Ya land spirit watched with shining eyes: “I have never seen this Gu before, this is a new Gu.”

He jumped in front of Fang Yuan, his nose was only two inches away from the Gu, next he sniffed like smelling a flower.

He screamed: “Ah, this is the aura of luck path, this is a luck path Gu worm. Good lad, you destroyed True Yang Building, but it seems you had many gains.”

Fang Yuan immediately mocked: “To think that the grand Lang Ya land spirit would have such shallow knowledge. This is not a new Gu, it had appeared ten thousand years ago. Let me teach you, this Gu’s name is Calamity Beckoning, it was invented by a certain generation’s fairy of central continent’s Spirit Affinity House, Mo Yao.”

“Mo Yao?” Inkman King heard this and his eyes shone: “If I remember correctly, this woman is a rare legend in inkman history. She cultivated to rank seven, and had overwhelming charm, even the grand Sword Immortal Bo Qing was attracted to her!”

Inkman King talked with a fanatical expression, like he was speaking of a treasure: “I apologise about my demeanor, but I have been looking up to senior Mo Yao as my role model since youth, thus I am very familiar with her stories.”

Fang Yuan found this a little humorous, to think that this Inkman King was a fan of Fairy Mo Yao.

But now was not the time to chit chat with the Inkman King. Fang Yuan used this chance to mock Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit was so ashamed from his words that his face turned red, he wanted to find a hole to hide himself in.

He grumbled under his breath, but he did not rebuke Fang Yuan. After all, he really did not know this Immortal Gu.

After Fang Yuan made some snide remarks in a mystifying tone for a while, he saw that the time was right and took back calamity beckoning Immortal Gu, fishing out another Immortal Gu.

“Lang Ya land spirit, didn’t you say you were well learnt and knowledgeable? I will give you another chance, see what Gu worm this is?’

Lang Ya land spirit stared with wide open eyes, he moved forward to take a closer look.

After a few breaths’ time, he took a deep breath, his nervous expression became smug: “Of course I know this Immortal Gu, its name is Cleanse Soul, it is a cultivation assistance type Gu for soul path Gu Immortals. The cultivation of soul path includes strengthening the soul, refining the soul, and pacifying the soul. The best way to strengthen the soul is Dang Hun mountain’s guts Gu, the best way to refine the soul is Luo Po valley’s bewilderment fog and Luo Po wind, as for pacifying the soul, it would be the pacifying soul soup in Bewitching Lake. This cleanse soul Immortal Gu can refine a Gu Immortal’s soul, getting rid of all the impurities. But if it was used excessively, it would get rid of even the essence of their soul.”

“Oh? You actually recognise this Gu!” Fang Yuan pretended to be shocked, thinking in his heart: “So this Immortal Gu is called Cleanse Soul, I called it Split Soul in the past, I guess I was wrong.”

This cleanse soul Immortal Gu was the core Gu of the killer move myriad self.

The killer move, myriad self, could form strength path phantoms of Fang Yuan, these strength path phantoms had a trace of his soul, thus Fang Yuan could manipulate them freely like an extension of his own body, it was agile and flexible.

But precisely due to this, the killer move myriad self expended Fang Yuan’s soul foundation.

Lang Ya land spirit saw Fang Yuan’s shock and his smugness intensified on his face.

But Fang Yuan quickly said: “Count yourself lucky, you coincidentally recognised this Immortal Gu.”

“Hey, what do you mean luck, this is my strength.”

“If you really have strength, how could you not recognise calamity beckoning Immortal Gu?”

“You!”

“Never mind, take a look at this Gu, I’m sure you cannot recognise it.”

“Show me, I will definitely know what it is!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted.

Fang Yuan took out another Gu.

Lang Ya land spirit concentrated his attention on analyzing, he laughed a few breaths later: “Haha, this is the cloud path Immortal Gu, Rising Azure Cloud.”

“Rising Azure Cloud?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng interjected.

“That’s right.” Lang Ya land spirit said proudly, shaking his head: “This Gu is a movement type Immortal Gu, it has a long history. Gu Immortals can use it to easily travel through mountains and cross water bodies. But what is most valuable, is that this Gu’s ascending and descending speed is extremely fast, it far exceeds most other Gu of the same rank.”

“So this Immortal Gu is called Rising Azure Cloud.” Fang Yuan thought about it, appearing as if he was not satisfied, he took out another Immortal Gu.

“Land spirit, it seems you might possibly have some skill. Look at this Gu.” Fang Yuan said.

“What do you mean might possibly, of course I have skill!” Lang Ya land spirit rebuked, his eyes were shining as he looked at Fang Yuan’s palm.

After a few breaths, his expression changed: “Oh, it’s you.”

“What Gu is this?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng asked again at an appropriate time. At this point, he had already understood Fang Yuan’s intention.

Although Fang Yuan had captured these Gu in True Yang Building, he did not know their origins, he had been guessing.

There was no doubt that familiarizing oneself with unknown Immortal Gu was very troublesome.

The most direct method was to consume immortal essence and activate the Immortal Gu, to directly see their effects. But this had some flaws.

Firstly, immortal essence was precious. Secondly, Immortal Gu had huge power, it might cause harm to oneself if used wrongly. For example, calamity beckoning Gu and Spring Autumn Cicada could not be used blindly. Thirdly, some Immortal Gu have very peculiar uses, even if they were activated, they would not show any effect if the target or environment was inappropriate.

Even though wisdom Gu could help Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan could only make deductions based on the information he already had.

Lang Ya land spirit did not suspect a thing, he flaunted his knowledge: “This Immortal Gu is peculiar and vile, it is a one time consumable Gu. Although I have never seen it personally, I have heard about it in historical records, back then I paid close attention due to having a special impression of it. This Gu’s name is Woman’s Heart. It is different from ordinary Immortal Gu, its refinement and nurturing occur together.”

Fang Yuan was immediately intrigued.

Gu worms were classified into nurture, use, and refinement, these three aspects. Generally with the three aspects, although they affected each other, each still stood alone.

An Immortal Gu with nurturing and refinement combined into one, Fang Yuan had never seen any. But Fang Yuan was very familiar with a type of Gu worm that combined use and nurturing, this was the rank five blood guillotine Gu that had a vile reputation.

Then, what exactly was this woman’s heart Gu that combined refinement and nurturing?

Fang Yuan was curious, but he could not ask directly. At this point, Tai Bai Yun Sheng cooperated and asked: “It can actually combine nurturing and refinement, this is the first time I’ve heard of this despite my long life.”

Lang Ya land spirit gave Tai Bai Yun Sheng a look: “Lad, you are still young, you have not lived for long enough. The variety of Gu worms is as wide as the sea. The three aspects of nurturing, use, and refinement are extremely vast and profound. As the saying goes: A woman’s heart is the deadliest poison. This Immortal Gu, Woman’s Heart, is a poison path Immortal Gu, with a lethal poison. To nurture it, you will need the hearts of women. The process of feeding would also be the process of continually refining and promoting the Gu. The more hearts fed to it, the more powerful its poison.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression changed: “It needs the hearts of women? Such evil and cruelty, this is a demonic Gu!”

“Mm, actually, you can use the hearts of female variant humans to replace it, but the effect would be worse than human hearts. To achieve the same toxicity, you will need many more hearts.” Lang Ya land spirit recalled.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression was solemn: “Even variant humans are people, they have parents, they have flesh and blood, love and hatred, how can they be sacrificed so easily? Just to feed a demonic Gu?”

Saying this, Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked at Fang Yuan in worry.

Fang Yuan was expressionless, he put away the Immortal Gu Woman’s Heart, and took out another Immortal Gu: “Lang Ya land spirit, I admit you have a degree of skill. But this level is still slightly inferior to me. Hahaha, the Immortal Gu in my hand now, there is no way you can guess it!”

Fang Yuan seemed to have complete confidence, Lang Ya land spirit’s gaze was immediately attracted to the new Immortal Gu.

“This is also a luck path Immortal Gu.” He sniffed with his nose, turning nervous.

But a few breaths later, his nervousness vanished, he breathed out deeply: “I know this Immortal Gu, haha, back then, my main body had seen this Immortal Gu during a discussion about cultivation with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.”

“Oh? Such a coincidence?” Fang Yuan showed a look of disbelief.

“Of course!” Lang Ya land spirit’s eyes were burning with fire, Fang Yuan’s disbelief made him extremely upset.

To prove himself, he spilled all that he knew: “This Immortal Gu is called Connect Luck. It has a very special use, it can allow a Gu Master’s luck to be connected to other people’s luck. If one has good luck, it will be shared to the other person. Similarly, if one has bad luck, it will also affect the other party.”

“If you have luck inspection Gu, you can inspect the formless luck of other people. If you see a person with good luck, you can use this connect luck Immortal Gu. But this is not the best method to use it, because luck is like a tide, its rises and falls are uncertain. If you do this, you still would want to use another Immortal Gu, Break Luck, in tandem.”

“Another better method is to coordinate this with other luck path Immortal Gu, to connect your own luck to the luck of mountains and valleys, to the luck of a long river, or the luck of a blessed land or grotto-heaven, or even the luck of an immemorial desolate beast.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng immediately understood the reasoning behind this, he stated praise: “That’s right, famous mountains and valleys have been around for ages, blessed lands and grotto-heavens are unlikely to be destroyed, and immemorial desolate beasts are on par with rank eight Gu Immortals. The luck of these things is much more reliable than humans.”

Lang Ya land spirit sighed: “Luck path takes a peculiar direction, while also piercing deeply into the Great Dao of heaven and earth. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, who first created it, had amazing talent, he was extraordinary. Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable discussed about Dao with my main body for seven days and seven nights, even my main body was full of admiration for him.”

Inkman King continued: “In history, the ten venerables were all supreme existences. Even as an inkman, I am full of admiration for them.”

He had understood Fang Yuan's intentions since long ago, it was to obtain knowledge about the Immortal Gu from Lang Ya land spirit.

But he did not expose this.

Fang Yuan did not harm Lang Ya land spirit, Inkman King had no need to ruin his tenuous relationship with Fang Yuan for no reason.

Fang Yuan nodded at the Inkman King, before turning to Lang Ya land spirit and saying: “Let's go back to the deal, I am full of sincerity, I had never thought of taking your Immortal Gu recipes for myself. Land spirit, when I deduce the Immortal Gu recipe for you, I will place an Immortal Gu with you as collateral. By then, if I fail to analyze it, but had already seen the Immortal Gu recipe, you can take this Immortal Gu. You will feel assured in this case, right?”

The value of an Immortal Gu far exceeded any Immortal Gu recipe.

Lang Ya land spirit exchanged eye contact with the Inkman King, before shouting: “Rascal, it seems you are very confident in yourself. Okay, this deal is not risky for me at all, in fact, I profit from it. I will say this first, I will give you only three Immortal Gu recipes. It doesn't matter which one it is, but you need to completely deduce an Immortal Gu recipe to count as a success. If you succeed in deducing the recipe of an Immortal Gu, hand it to me and I will pay you the immortal essence stones, as well as another remnant recipe.”

“Okay.” Fang Yuan did not hesitate, he immediately agreed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 664: Bountiful Harvest

After successfully coming to an agreement with Lang Ya land spirit, Fang Yuan breathed out a sigh of relief.

This transaction was simply too crucial, the profits would be the key for Fang Yuan to break free of his current problematic situation.

Although he knew of many ways to earn immortal essence stones from his previous life's memories, these methods needed time and planning, or involved great risk.

The deal with Lang Ya land spirit was the only one with little risk, coupled with high rewards.

After thinking about it for a while, Fang Yuan left the cloud path Immortal Gu, Rising Azure Cloud, in Lang Ya blessed land as the collateral of the deal.

Rising Azure Cloud was a movement type Gu, Fang Yuan did not lack a movement Immortal Gu, he already had Worldly Wave Trace. The latter was suited for water path Gu Immortals, its effect was greater when used in an environment that had rivers, lakes, or the sea. Meanwhile, Rising Azure Cloud's strong point was in ascending and descending, its normal movement speed across places was slower than Worldly Wave Trace.

Fang Yuan only cared about practical use, to him, Worldly Wave Trace was much more useful.

That night in northern plains, Fang Yuan returned to Hu Immortal blessed land alone, while Tai Bai Yun Sheng stayed in Lang Ya blessed land.

Fang Yuan was very satisfied with this trip.

Although he consumed one bead of green grape immortal essence, under that situation, without knowing the real circumstances inside Lang Ya blessed land, he needed to quickly defeat the swamp crab and gain the initiative of the situation.

Immortal essence was indeed precious, but it should be used when needed. Immortal essence that was not used had zero value!

Not mentioning one bead of green grape immortal essence, even if he had to use eight or ten, Fang Yuan would use them without hesitation if needed.

He concluded that this time, he put in little investment, but made huge gains.

Firstly, he took back Fixed Immortal Travel.

The return of Fixed Immortal Travel was an extremely pleasant surprise. With Fixed Immortal Travel, Fang Yuan could cross the regional barriers, he could step into all five regions. Using the advantage of his rebirth, he could set up schemes everywhere, obtaining the biggest benefits.

Even at worst, if Immortal Crane Sect breaks into Hu Immortal blessed land and destroys it, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng could retreat while bringing along Dang Hun mountain and wisdom Gu.

They could attack if they progressed, and defend if they retreated.

Although Fixed Immortal Travel was a rank six movement Immortal Gu, it gave Fang Yuan the greatest advantage in this situation.

Rising Azure Cloud and Worldly Wave Trace added together could not achieve something like this.

At this point, Fang Yuan felt his pressure reducing.

Secondly, he had formed the Snowy Mountain alliance with Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan.

Hei Lou Lan had the Great Strength True Martial Physique, one of the ten extremes, she had huge potential and once she advances into an immortal, her battle strength would be terrifying.

Fairy Li Shan was a famous character in northern plains, on one hand, she was the third leader of Snowy Mountain blessed land, but on the other hand, she had a wide range of friendly relationships, and had dealings with many of northern plains’ righteous path Gu Immortals.

There were scumbags and weirdos among righteous path Gu Immortals, and the demonic path even more so had its outliers. Every conflict originates from benefits, the righteous and demonic paths were not just enemies out to kill each other. They also cooperated, made transactions, and even worked together secretly.

Fairy Li Shan had the mountain pledge Immortal Gu, this Gu was the reason why she was so popular with everyone.

Dong Fang Chang Fan had created an alliance with the righteous forces, he needed mountain pledge Gu. Demonic path Gu Immortals were even more suspicious of each other, such a huge organisation like Snowy Mountain blessed land could be built all because of the foundation of mountain pledge Gu.

Because the alliance created using mountain pledge Gu could not be broken, this was the key to gaining the trust of demonic path Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan allied with them because on one hand, he could gain powerful assistance, while on the other hand, he could settle his biggest problem of not getting timely updates about information in the world.

Fairy Li Shan had wide connections, it was much easier for her to gain information compared to Fang Yuan.

And thirdly, Fang Yuan obtained the information of four Immortal Gu.

He had snatched them when destroying the formless fists, they were Cleanse Soul, Rising Azure Cloud, Woman’s Heart, and Connect Luck.

In terms of value, starting from the lowest, the first would be Rising Azure Cloud. To Fang Yuan, this Gu had the least value, he was exerting its greatest use by leaving with Lang Ya land spirit as collateral.

Poison path Immortal Gu Woman’s Heart, a one time expenditure Gu that combined refinement and nurturing, it had slightly greater value. Generally speaking, these one time use Gu had powerful effects, like the Immortal Gu Gruel Mud.

Above Woman’s Heart was Immortal Gu Cleanse Soul. Cleanse Soul could refine the soul, its effect was far greater than Fang Yuan’s wolf soul Gu. Fang Yuan had guts Gu, it was easy to strengthen his soul. Before he enters Luo Po valley, Immortal Gu Cleanse Soul would be the best replacement..

In addition, Cleanse Soul was the core Gu of the killer move myriad self. This had even greater value.

Fang Yuan made an evaluation, if he did not use the killer move myriad self, his battle strength was lower than ordinary rank six Gu Immortals. But once he used this killer move, his battle strength surged, he would be equivalent to a first rate rank six Gu Immortal.

Of course, compared to Fang Yuan’s blood path battle strength in his previous life, he was still weaker.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, he was a demonic path overlord, at the peak of rank six, and was only a step away from rank seven. His battle strength was truly fearsome, he was at the top of rank six, he even had the shocking battle result of winning twice against ordinary rank seven Gu Immortals.

Last was connect luck Immortal Gu.

This luck path Immortal Gu was unexpectedly Fang Yuan’s greatest gain! Its value even surpassed Cleanse Soul.

Even though Cleanse Soul was myriad self’s core, it was not irreplaceable.

But the importance of connect luck Immortal Gu, to Fang Yuan, was simply unique!

Fang Yuan’s first vital Gu was Spring Autumn Cicada. This Immortal Gu was the cause of his rise, without this mystical Gu, he would not have reached this stage. But at the same time, this Gu had always been dragging him down.

Be it the pressure towards his aperture, or Spring Autumn Cicada’s weakness —

the constantly low luck of the user, it gave huge problems to Fang Yuan, and even resulted in many fatal crises.

If not for Fang Yuan’s ability and ruthless personality, coupled with his many methods, ordinary people in his place would have died long ago.

Spring Autumn Cicada was Fang Yuan’s trump card, but it was also his greatest flaw.

With connect luck Immortal Gu now, it could resolve Spring Autumn Cicada’s luck flaw.

Lang Ya land spirit had provided many uses for the connect luck Immortal Gu, the best way was to use other luck path Immortal Gu along with it, using them together to link the Gu Master’s luck to a famous mountain or river, an immemorial desolate beast, or even blessed lands and grotto-heaven. These existences have boundless and long lived luck, they were not easy to destroy.

But Fang Yuan was not going to use this method.

Because he could not, he only had one luck path Immortal Gu, he could not use it with other luck path Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan’s method was: To use connect luck Immortal Gu to link his luck with other people’s luck.

Lang Ya land spirit had earlier said: A person’s luck was like a tide, its rises and falls were uncertain. In connecting your luck to others, you had to be careful, otherwise the user would be dragged down at times. If this was used with break luck Gu, it would expend precious immortal essence, and it would also force the user to be on constant alert.

But this weakness was non-existent to Fang Yuan.

Why?

Because he was someone who was reborn using Spring Autumn Cicada!

He knew who the lucky, famous, or extremely successful people were of this generation, he even knew what their achievements would be, and when their downfalls would occur.

“I can totally use my previous life’s memories to find these future important people, and use connect luck Gu to link my luck with them. Since I have Spring Autumn Cicada, my luck will always be abysmal, after connecting our lucks, the one taking advantage will always be me.”

Fang Yuan thought about this and recognised the great advantage that Fixed Immortal Travel gave him even more clearly.

If not for Fixed Immortal Travel, he would not be able to freely move between the five regions, where would he have time to travel far and wide to look for those people who were currently still nobodies.

The final gain from this trip were the three Immortal Gu remnant recipes he brought back from Lang Ya blessed land.

These Immortal Gu recipes had very high completion rates, they were ninety percent and above, there was even one piece with ninety-nine percent completion rate!

After resting for a while, Fang Yuan arrived at the underground cave.

Deducing an Immortal Gu recipe had too many elements to consider, the wills created by mortal Gu were definitely insufficient, Fang Yuan had no hesitation, he activated delight in water and mountain Gu.

He decided to do the easy one first, to settle the remnant recipe with ninety-nine percent!

At the same time, in Lang Ya blessed land.

“Lang Ya land spirit, what do you think of my restoration?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s hands were behind his back, he stood before Lang Ya land spirit and the Inkman King.

Inkman King saw the restored cloud soil as amazement shone in his eyes uncontrollably.

Earlier, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had taken the initiative to stay behind, when he had suggested to heal Lang Ya blessed land, he did not see much hope. But to think that Tai Bai Yun Sheng did such a great job, the effect was out of his expectations!

Lang Ya land spirit assessed Tai Bai Yun Sheng for a while, saying: “To think that at such a young age, you are quite impressive. How did you do it?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng laughed bitterly, he was old and had white hair, to hear someone call him young was a really peculiar and weird experience.

He took out landscape as before Immortal Gu, displaying it before the two of them, and introducing it clearly.

Inkman King praised loudly: “To think that there is such an amazing Immortal Gu. With this Immortal Gu, we can restore the blessed land’s terrain and river flow, it can greatly reduce the losses caused by heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities! This Immortal Gu’s value is immense!”

Lang Ya land spirit was also interested: “I have heard of this Immortal Gu, it once belonged to Immortal Jiu Hui. Immortal Jiu Hui had inherited a certain true inheritance from Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, not only did he have Landscape as Before, he also had Man as Before. I have not seen this Gu of yours personally! Let me research it, it is bound to give me new inspiration, I will give you five immortal essence stones as compensation.”

Lang Ya land spirit had many businesses, he was very rich and did not lack immortal essence stones.

“Five immortal essence stones...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng hesitated before rejecting and shaking his head.

Immortal Gu were one’s personal secrets, they should not be exposed easily.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng, for the sake of his future, learned from Fairy Li Shan and had no choice but to expose landscape as before Immortal Gu. How could he hand this to Lang Ya land spirit? He said he would research, but what if he ruins it during the process?

Seeing that Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not agree, Lang Ya land spirit was very disappointed, but he still footed the bill: “You restored all the cloud soil for me, according to our deal, this is three immortal essence stones.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng waved his hand and rejected: “I will not accept these three immortal essence stones. When Fang Yuan comes to hand in the recipe, give it to him along with his compensation.”

Lang Ya land spirit was stunned, before laughing wildly: “What? Don’t tell me you believe that the rascal can really succeed and complete the recipe? Hahaha, do you know how many years these recipes have troubled me? Especially that recipe at ninety-nine percent completion rate, even my main body could not finish it!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 665: Three 100% Immortal Gu recipes!

“Lang Ya land spirit, isn’t this a little inappropriate?” Inkman King glanced at Tai Bai Yun Sheng, as he said this with worry. The other party included the fierce people who wrecked Imperial Court blessed land and toppled Eighty-Eight True Yang Building! Inkman King was very worried Lang Ya blessed land would be harmed if Fang and Tai were angered.

Lang Ya land spirit was extremely frank and as if he had not heard Inkman King’s words, he satisfiedly said: “Hmph! That brat is too crafty, he dared to treat this old man in such a vile manner, so I did it on purpose! I am teaching him a lesson to let him understand the principle of respecting the old. Hahaha, what Gu recipe can he deduce? What foundation does he have? He is clearly a strength path immortal zombie, did he think this old man could not see it? Hmph, little Tai Bai has blind confidence in him. If he can deduce the Immortal Gu recipe, this old man will personally crush his medicine grinder and eat it!”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not respond, instead looking at the arrogantly laughing Lang Ya land spirit with pity. He really wanted to say: It is not Fang Yuan whom I have confidence in, but the wisdom Gu.

...

Fang Yuan quietly stood within the wisdom light halo.

After a while, he slowly opened his eyes, they were shining with joy.

“Success.” He was deeply moved. In a few moments worth of time, he had deduced the first remnant recipe to one hundred percent.

This perfected Gu recipe was the ninety-nine percent remnant recipe.

Fang Yuan gasped in surprise when he looked at this Gu recipe again: “This last step was simply mystical, to think this was a Gu recipe I perfected.”

He himself found it incredulous.

Deducing Gu recipes depended on one’s foundations and inspirations. If one did not have enough foundation in refinement path, it would be very difficult to deduce Gu recipes. But even Gu Masters with deep foundations would often encounter problems when deducing Gu recipes. They would be stopped at these steps, not able to progress even an inch for years, there were even cases where Gu Masters would not make any progress for decades or even a century.

To break through these barriers would require inspiration.

But inspiration was extremely hard to obtain, it could appear continuously over a short period of time or not even appear once in many years.

Even if they had inspiration, that was only a possibility and it would have to be tested and verified.

If it was successful, that would be true inspiration. If it failed, that would only be an idea, a failed attempt.

“Wisdom Gu’s might lies in being able to provide unlimited inspiration to Gu Masters. I am a refinement path master, my foundation is enough and I only lack inspiration.” Fang Yuan once again sensed the power of a rank nine Gu.

This was still the case in which he had only stepped inside the wisdom light halo, if there came a day when he truly activated wisdom Gu, who knows what the results would be.

Fang Yuan suppressed the flood of thoughts and examined his mind.

There were still large amounts of joyful will in his mind.

The remnant Gu recipe had been extremely close to completion and had only lacked the final push. Thus, Fang Yuan did not use much joyful will.

He concentrated and began deducing another Gu recipe.

The second Gu recipe was the Immortal Gu remnant recipe with ninety-seven percent completion.

Fang Yuan did not have to consume much joyful will this time around either, only expending one third to cross the barriers that were blocking the completion of the Immortal Gu recipe.

Crossing these barriers meant resolving the greatest troubles, the thinking process could then smoothly progress with everything else being obvious. Fang Yuan could deduce them completely even if he relied only on his own ability.

But at the third Immortal Gu recipe, Fang Yuan encountered slight trouble.

He had to use up three beads of green grape immortal essence in a row before he was able to perfect this Immortal Gu recipe.

The difficulty of this Immortal Gu recipe was quite high; when one problem was solved, another would appear. Thus, even though its completion rate was already as high as ninety-six percent, the amount of green grape immortal essence expended to deduce it was two to three times as much as than the previous two.

But even so, when considering the deal, Fang Yuan profited hugely!

Fang Yuan hurriedly connected to treasure yellow heaven and contacted Lang Ya land spirit with divine sense Gu.

Lang Ya land spirit laughed wildly and was thinking Fang Yuan had made contact to admit defeat. So when Fang Yuan handed him a one hundred percent complete Immortal Gu recipe, he was stunned for a while.

After a few breaths of time, all his attention was absorbed into the contents of the Immortal Gu recipe.

“Amazing, amazing! This barrier could actually be broken in such way. Why didn’t I think of it, how could I not have thought about it!” He shouted. Were it not for both his hands being trapped in the qi path seal, he would probably be slapping his thigh fiercely.

The praise suddenly stopped, and an embarrassed expression showed on Lang Ya land spirit’s face.

He had not forgotten that a short while ago he had been extremely pessimistic of Fang Yuan’s ability. How could he have expected Fang Yuan would hand over a completed Immortal Gu recipe to him not long after?

Lang Ya land spirit felt embarrassed, muttering: “Brat, who could have thought that your line of thought is so weird, you actually hit the target while blindfolded, and wildly deduced this Immortal Gu recipe. Consider it your luck this time, according to our contract, perfecting a rank six Immortal Gu remnant recipe of a ninety percent or over completion rate will be paid with ten immortal essence stones! Should I hand them to you using treasure yellow heaven or will you come personally to take them?”

Transactions in treasure yellow heaven naturally required a fixed service charge. But Fang Yuan would have to use Fixed Immortal Travel if he went to personally receive the payment.

And every activation of Fixed Immortal Travel required one bead of green grape immortal essence, it was a considerable price.

Fang Yuan thought it over, using treasure yellow heaven would mean a cheaper cost, but it was hard to avoid leaving behind some traces which might be deduced by some wisdom path Gu Immortals with harmful intentions.

But personally going to take them would mean too high of a cost, Fang Yuan was somewhat troubled.

Lang Ya blessed land was in northern plains while Hu Immortal blessed land was in central continent. The two were not in the same region so using hole earth Gu was not possible. Only stargate Gu could be used.

“Land spirit, with your personality, you should have stargate Gu there, right?” Fang Yuan asked.

“Hehe, brat, you really understand me.” Lang Ya land spirit frankly admitted.

He had obtained stargate Gu’s recipe from Fang Yuan. He first refined a set of stargate Gu and gave them to Fang Yuan, refining another set afterwards for his own collection.

Fang Yuan nodded and transmitted his thoughts: “Treasure yellow heaven is not safe, our transaction will be sensed by many and once the frequency of this increases, it will bring us great trouble. Fixed Immortal Travel is convenient but the price to use it is too high. It is better for us to link our two blessed lands and establish a stargate.”

“Build a stargate?” Lang Ya land spirit shook his head and refused Fang Yuan’s suggestion without consideration, “Brat, I have been deceived many times by you. Building a stargate is not a small thing, any calamity over your side will immediately afterwards be directed here as well. If Lang Ya blessed land is discovered by someone, my life will be difficult!”

Fang Yuan laughed loudly and did not attempt to persuade him, instead handing over the second Immortal Gu recipe.

“You actually completed another one?!” Lang Ya land spirit received a huge shock.

This speed, wasn’t it simply too fast?

“This method of resolving the problem is simply marvelous! You actually thought of using this Gu and there is also refinement Gu material like intimate grass, how did you think of them?” Lang Ya land spirit chattered on and exclaimed as he appreciated the wonders of this one hundred percent completed Immortal Gu recipe.

“Hahaha, old man, the new generation replaces the old! You are already old and stay all day in Lang Ya blessed land without knowing the developments in the outside world. Even if you have your best friend, Inkman King, he is an inkman, how could he come across the key aspects of human cultivation? Moreover, who am I?! I am a peerless genius of wisdom path! One day, I will surpass Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.” Fang Yuan laughed arrogantly while spouting nonsense.

Lang Ya land spirit was dumbfounded.

He really wanted to retort, but the truth was right in front of his eyes. The two Immortal Gu remnant recipes which had troubled him for countless years were solved so easily by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan suddenly heaved a sigh: “Sigh, do you know the loneliness of a genius? Since my birth, I knew I was extraordinary, there was no one around who could have an equal conversation with me. Some people even believed I was a monster, they were afraid of my wisdom and envied my talent! I could only hide myself and appear to be like a normal person, it was to the extent that no one could see that I was overflowing with heaven defying talent. Wisdom path seemed to be the path the heaven arranged for me, but from a twist of fate, I ended up becoming a strength path immortal zombie. Tell me, isn’t my life full of setbacks, even heaven was envious of my talents!”

Lang Ya land spirit could no longer bear to listen to this, stamping his foot: “Hey brat, don’t be so self-important! What is amazing about deducing two Immortal Gu recipes! If you are really a genius, then deduce the final Immortal Gu recipe, only then will this old man admire you.”

Fang Yuan was silent.

Lang Ya land spirit raised his head: “Hmph, kid, this old man admits you have some talent. But so what? Even my main body was stumped by that final Immortal Gu recipe. Ponder over it properly for seven to eight years, maybe you will know how profound this world is and how many stars there are in the sky. You will then learn to be humble, ahahaha...”

“You mean, this Immortal Gu recipe?” The corners of Fang Yuan’s lips pulled back as he tossed out the third Immortal Gu recipe.

This was simply the final blow!

Lang Ya land spirit’s laughter came to an abrupt stop, shortly afterwards, he shouted in shock: “This, what is this? What, what in the world is this?!”

His voice contained a trace of panic.

Fang Yuan heaved a long sigh and said with a slow, sad voice: “I said it earlier, my talents often provokes fear and envy. Sigh, nothing can be done, I am such a genius, I was born this way...”

Lang Ya land spirit’s panic this time was no small thing.

He was only formed from an obsession and was not shrewd.

This final Immortal Gu recipe was a huge impact to him.

“You really succeeded in deducing it? Incredible! Incredible! This Immortal Gu recipe can actually be solved like this, your train of thought went in a completely different direction! No wonder even my main body could not deduce it... This old saying has come true: The mountain road twists around every new peak; a glimmer of hope shines at one’s darkest hour! The mountain road twists around every new peak; a glimmer of hope shines at one’s darkest hour!”

Lang Ya land spirit kept on mumbling to himself, he was at first completely shocked before becoming ecstatic, finally he calmed down, his heart filled with frustration.

This Immortal Gu recipe had been perplexing him all along and even his main body was stumped, unable to take the final crucial step.

Sometimes Lang Ya land spirit even thought that this Immortal Gu recipe was a complete dead end and there was no way for it to be resolved.

He had given it to Fang Yuan to deliberately make things difficult, and had never imagined it would truly be solved.

However, he obtained the complete recipe now.

The problem he and even his main body could not resolve, was solved by Fang Yuan.

His heart could not help but feel frustration and listlessness.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 666: Huge profit!

Chapter 666: Huge profit!

“Don’t tell me that this kid truly is a wisdom path genius, one rarely seen in a hundred years? No, such ability and wisdom is heaven defying, this talent is not just rarely seen in a hundred years, there might not be one in a thousand years or even ten thousand years!”

When he thought of this, Lang Ya land spirit immediately felt there was some sense in Fang Yuan’s repulsive character.

“Right, only a genius like this can have such a repulsive character. Like my main body...” Lang Ya land spirit started to feel Fang Yuan’s repulsive character was no longer so disagreeable, and even felt a sense of appreciation for similar talents.

At Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan was calm and unruffled. He might have become a zombie and his thoughts might have slowed down, but it was still more than enough to bully a land spirit.

If it were possible, Fang Yuan did not want to take such risks. He would rather hand over the Immortal Gu recipes one by one over long intervals, and not directly provide the three Immortal Gu recipes like he was doing now.

This action was too eye-catching, it was sure to attract doubts and suspicions from others.

Lang Ya land spirit was frank and open but he still had a good friend called Inkman King, this variant human was a genuinely formidable character.

But Fang Yuan could do nothing about it, as the situation was forcing him.

He must earn a large number of immortal essence stones in a short period of time and increase his strength, both to break through the current perils he was facing, and also to delay the time before he was exposed.

If he worries over this and that, holding back on releasing the Immortal Gu recipes, who would Fang Yuan cry to if this led to his defeat and death?

Fang Yuan smiled, Lang Ya land spirit had not responded but he knew: these three Immortal Gu recipes were tossed out one by one like three bombs, they had already shaken Lang Ya land spirit’s mind. This was a good time to talk about conditions!

Therefore, he spoke: “Lang Ya land spirit, I will speak frankly with you, I need immortal essence stones and you need Immortal Gu recipes, we will be collaborating a lot in the future. Building a stargate will be beneficial to both of us.”

“Stargate...” This time, Lang Ya land spirit hesitated and did not immediately refuse.

Fang Yuan displayed his exceptional talent in wisdom path which caused Lang Ya land spirit to have a newfound respect for Fang Yuan. Thus, the land spirit began to pay serious attention to Fang Yuan’s suggestion.

Fang Yuan persuaded again: “Land spirit, do you think your Lang Ya blessed land will be safe just because we don’t build a stargate? Don’t forget, you have already suffered from three waves of attacks, every wave stronger than the previous. No doubt, Lang Ya blessed land’s location has already been discovered, you are already being observed by some great force. After we build a stargate, we can even take this collaboration to the next step; at crucial times, I could come to protect you through the stargate.”

“Protect me...” Lang Ya land spirit was finally moved.

He thought of the impressive battle scene when Fang Yuan beat down the swamp crab, it was truly a formidable display.

Moreover, these three waves of attacks had completely disrupted Lang Ya blessed land’s peaceful environment, creating an enormous sense of danger in Lang Ya land spirit.

Fang Yuan asked at this time: “You haven’t sold stargate Gu at treasure yellow heaven, right?”

“Not yet, I have no lack of immortal essence stones.” Lang Ya land spirit replied.

Fang Yuan laughed brightly: “This is even better. Stargate Gu is a new innovation, it is not like hole earth Gu which has to be planted on the ground and therefore discovered easily. You would need to activate stargate Gu every time you want to open a stargate, thus it is very hidden. Even if you feel something wrong, you can destroy the stargate Gu in your hands at the crucial moment, won’t that work? There is simply no threat in building a stargate.”

Fang Yuan talked gliby, his words impacting on the depths of Lang Ya land spirit’s heart. Lang Ya land spirit finally agreed: “Alright, we will build a stargate. But let’s put the collaboration aside for now, and first handle the transaction of deducing Immortal Gu recipes.”

The land spirit added another sentence: “I will be in charge of refining the stargate Gu, I will lend it to you.”

With this, he would be in greater control of the situation, after all he still felt a little uneasy.

Over at Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan exposed the smile of a winner and clenched his eight fists in joy.

Success!

With this, he had attained initial approval of collaboration with Lang Ya land spirit, connecting to Lang Ya blessed land would make future transactions much profitable. Not only could it save some money, it would also give an additional retreat path.

Besides this, Fang Yuan was able to prevent the supply of stargate Gu to treasure yellow heaven’s market which could have given huge advantages to other Gu Immortals.

Lang Ya land spirit provided the stargate Gu which also saved Fang Yuan some trouble.

If Lang Ya land spirit could feel safe with this, Fang Yuan was happy to comply.

“I must form a good relationship with Lang Ya land spirit. I won’t be cheated by doing transactions with him, and can also earn large amounts of immortal essence stones. As long as I handle this relationship properly and continue to deepen it, who knows, one day Lang Ya land spirit might lend me some Immortal Gu to use.” Fang Yuan calculated inwardly.

Lang Ya blessed land contained many Immortal Gu, among them were beast enslavement Immortal Gu and Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.

By borrowing Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan would be able to save a large expense in nurturing them.

How cost effective was it!

Fang Yuan was taking one step but had already planned the next ten steps. Lang Ya land spirit was also very happy, feeling his luck was truly good for finding a wisdom path genius rarely seen in ten thousand years. All the Immortal Gu remnant recipes in his possession had hopes of being perfected!

Fang Yuan had intended to receive stargate Gu through treasure yellow heaven, but the cautious Lang Ya land spirit refused.

Fang Yuan could only use green grape immortal essence and make a trip to Lang Ya blessed land to take the stargate Gu.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng still remained there as there were still several rivers in the blessed land that he needed to restore.

The round trip, as a result, cost Fang Yuan two green grape immortal essence.

But with this journey, he brought back one stargate Gu, three new Immortal Gu remnant recipes and also thirty immortal essence stones.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng wanted Fang Yuan to take the three immortal essence stones he was being paid, but Fang Yuan refused and left it to Tai Bai Yun Sheng. After all, Tai Bai Yun Sheng also required cultivation resources, the stronger he became, the more help he would be to Fang Yuan compared to three immortal essence stones.

The stargate could not be immediately built – Fang Yuan did not have any more starlight firefly Gu.

Without the starlight from starlight firefly Gu, the two stargates were unable to be activated.

Fang Yuan summarized the transaction this time.

He used a total of five beads of green grape immortal essence to deduce Immortal Gu recipes. When he returned alone from Lang Ya blessed land earlier, he used up one bead of green grape immortal essence. To take one stargate Gu, he had to go to Lang Ya blessed land and return back to Hu Immortal blessed land, consuming two green grape immortal essence beads. He had invested altogether eight beads of green grape immortal essence.

And his gains were a whole thirty immortal essence stones.

“I have only nine green grape immortal essence remaining now.” Fang Yuan had formed a middle grade blessed land and the few green grape immortal essence he had obtained were heavily used up in this back and forth trip from northern plains.

However, Fang Yuan was not anxious.

He had become a zombie and his immortal aperture was dead, no longer able to produce green grape immortal essence by itself. But he could extract immortal essence from immortal essence stones and turn them into his own green grape immortal essence.

Back then, First Gen Gu Yue, who had turned into a blood wight, also used primeval stones to recover his primeval essence. The logic between the two was the same, it was only a difference of ranks.

That is to say, Fang Yuan could use up all these thirty immortal essence stones to turn into his own green grape immortal essence. One immortal essence stone could be treated as one bead of green grape immortal essence which meant the amount of his green grape immortal essence had increased to thirty-nine beads!

“But immortal essence stones are worth more than green grape immortal essence, the former is used as currency while the latter can only be used by an individual. Unless necessary, I should not rashly refine these immortal essence stones to green grape immortal essence. Anyway, as long as I can continue transacting with Lang Ya land spirit, I will have more and more immortal essence stones. Now, let’s connect to treasure yellow heaven and check.”

Fang Yuan was full of confidence when connecting to treasure yellow heaven this time.

The purchasing power of immortal essence stones was extremely strong. Back then, Fang Yuan used one immortal essence stone to buy a myriad wolf king and a wolf group with over thirty thousand wolves.

Thirty immortal essence stones were sufficient to be called a large sum.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan had established the Blood Wing Demon Sect and as a demonic path overlord, the greatest amount of immortal essence stones he had at one time was also no more than sixty-four. Naturally, he spent a lot in his previous life. This number was the result of his expenditure and profits constantly offsetting each other.

Fang Yuan sat down and closed his eyes, sending his consciousness towards his immortal aperture.

The immortal aperture was a scene of deathly stillness, the sky was grey and the ground was black, and the air was filled with a putrid odor.

Mo Yao’s will was still imprisoned inside, monitored from time to time by Fang Yuan. The mirror willow planted earlier had already died, becoming a collapsed pile of rotten wood on the ground.

With a shift of Fang Yuan’s mind, a new connecting heaven Gu fluttered up to the air in his immortal aperture and formed a passage to treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan then activated divine sense Gu, forming a continuous stream of divine sense which followed the passage created by connecting heaven Gu and entered treasure yellow heaven.

He was now an immortal zombie, no longer needing the help of Little Hu Immortal, and could make transactions himself.

Treasure yellow heaven was still the same, the vast space rippling with lemon-like yellow light. There were no mountains, rivers or forests, and also no birds, beasts, insects or fish, there was not even a sky or ground, the only things here were was all sorts of treasures and goods.

Gu worms, Gu recipes, killer moves, beast groups, variant humans, vegetation, ore veins, soil, water, fine wine and all sorts of goods. Each of them quietly floated in air, releasing all sorts of colors, giving off large or small treasure light.

The brighter and larger the treasure light was, the more the good was worth. But treasure light was only an initial estimation, one might not be able to infer from the treasure light if the item was tampered by the Gu Immortals or not.

This was the largest exchange market among the five regions’ Gu Immortals, it allowed for bargaining, while taking a fixed service charge. This also tested the Gu Immortal’s discernment skills; if they bought counterfeit goods, they could only blame their bad luck as treasure yellow heaven would not be liable for any loss.

Fang Yuan wanted to buy starlight firefly Gu first.

This type of Gu worm emitted pure azure starlight, it was a prerequisite for activating a stargate.

His divine sense searched around and soon found a large group of starlight firefly Gu, there were over one thousand.

Fang Yuan was familiar with the seller, it was Star Lord Wan Xiang.

Star Lord Wan Xiang seemed to be star path Gu Immortal; he not only sold starlight firefly Gu, but also star dart Gu, stellar fire Gu, falling meteor Gu, star river Gu and so on.

It was obvious that Star Lord Wan Xiang’s blessed land produced star path mortal Gu and he sold these Gu worms to generate revenue.

Even Gu Immortals who did not cultivate star path would often buy some star path

Gu worms for refining, researching killer moves or other purposes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 667: Eight Arm Immortal, Spring Star Rain

“How much are you selling this group of starlight firefly Gu for?” Fang Yuan’s divine sense sent over.

“How may I address you, sir, and how many starlight firefly Gu do you need?” Although Star Lord Wan Xiang was not around, he left behind a will near his goods.

But this will could be seen to have a great appearance, it was dazzling like the stars, extremely appealing to the eyes. Fang Yuan’s wisdom path attainment was low, he did not recognize its origins.

“You can call me Eight Arm Immortal, I want to buy this entire group of starlight firefly Gu.” Fang Yuan transmitted.

Fang Yuan was using his own blessed land to connect to treasure yellow heaven, and he had also changed his divine sense Gu and connecting heaven Gu, thus Star Lord Wan Xiang did not realise that Fang Yuan was the former ‘Fox Immortal’, he thought Fang Yuan was a stranger.

But listening to Fang Yuan’s tone, he seemed like a big spending customer, thus Star Lord Wan Xiang’s will immediately became enthusiastic: “Starlight firefly Gu is an olden antiquity Gu worm, now it is almost extinct. My starlight firefly Gu are in excellent condition, and I have over a thousand and two hundred of them. How about this, I will sell them to you at a price of four immortal essence stones.”

Fang Yuan laughed: “You’re trying to scam me, don’t think I am unaware of the normal selling price. I was introduced to you by someone, thus I came here. You are not the only one selling starlight firefly Gu, there is still Fairy Yao Guang and Di Yuan, I can get the starlight firefly Gu from them as well.”

Fang Yuan had once instructed Little Hu Immortal to deal with all three of these Gu Immortals. Not only did he buy over a hundred thousand starlight fireflies, as well as their food, star fragment grass, he also bought the experiences of the three of them in planting star fragment grass, he spent a lot.

Star Lord Wan Xiang’s will was slightly startled, he now knew Fang Yuan was well aware of the market rate, his words changed: “Hehehe, I was kidding earlier, don’t take it seriously Sir Eight Arm Immortal.”

Fang Yuan interrupted him, saying: “I will pay two immortal essence stones to buy a thousand and five hundred starlight firefly Gu.”

Star Lord Wan Xiang immediately rejected this, saying: “Sir, this is simply too low, I cannot sell it at this price.”

After some bargaining, both of them took a step back, using three immortal essence stones, he obtained one thousand and two hundred starlight firefly Gu.

After buying the starlight firefly Gu, he did not leave, instead he asked: “Do you sell any star path killer moves?”

“Could it be that sir is also a star path Gu Immortal? Hehehe, of course I sell them, take a look. I have three star path killer moves here.”

Fang Yuan started browsing.

The first star path killer move was called ‘dazzling star armor’, it needed large numbers of starlight Gu, a few bane star Gu, several star shield Gu and so on to be activated. This was a defensive killer move, once used, a full body armor would form on the Gu Immortal’s body, shining like starlight.

The second killer move was called ‘spring star rain’. It needed large numbers of star rain Gu, small numbers of spring wind Gu, some star shoot Gu and others, once used, it would form a jade colored rain, drizzling non stop for three days and three nights. The rain would be rich like oil, it could provide nutrients to crops and greatly increase productivity. This killer move was used to nurture plants, and manage the blessed land.

The third was called ‘spiral drill star spear’. Like the name implied, it was an offensive killer move. It needed small numbers of spiral bone spear Gu, several star river Gu, countless star dart Gu, and large numbers of shooting star Gu.

These killer moves’ details were very interesting.

The numbers of Gu worms were usually classified into large numbers, several, some, and a few, vague terms like these without actual real numbers. At the same time, the ways to construct these killer moves were also not specified, including the sequences of activating the Gu worms, as well as the relationships between different Gu worms.

Only the general statuses of the killer moves were mentioned, like what rank five Gu were needed, and what effects the killer moves had.

Only after the killer moves were bought would their details be clearly stated.

Star Lord Wan Xiang spoke at an appropriate time: “Killer move dazzling star armor is sold at half an immortal essence stone. Spring star rain was created by my main body personally, only a few Gu Immortals have bought it now, thus the value is slightly higher at one and a half immortal essence stones. Spiral drill star spear costs one immortal essence stone.”

Killer moves were priced according to their rarity, flaws, strength and power, backlash, whether they can be easily countered, and the conditions of the Gu worms that compose the killer move. But they had one common point, they were usually not cheap.

In treasure yellow heaven, ordinary mortal killer moves were priced higher than mortal Gu recipes of the same rank. But at rank six and above, the price of immortal killer moves were far less than Immortal Gu recipes.

Dazzling star armor, Fang Yuan knew this killer move even though he was not a star path Gu Immortal, it was extremely common. Half an immortal essence stone was too expensive.

Fang Yuan had planned to buy a star path offensive killer move, he remembered a mortal killer move called icy stardust. This killer move had a wide range, the star path Gu worms that were used in it were common, and it was also very effective in dealing with enemies. The stardust had defense piercing ability, and even if it could not break the defense, it would stick to enemies and emit frost energy that would slow them down.

As for Star Lord Wan Xiang’s spiral drill star spear, Fang Yuan had not heard of it.

This meant that this offensive killer move’s value was not high.

In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, during the chaotic five regions war, the war ruined old and inefficient systems, causing the birth of many new inventions.

Fang Yuan did not remember spiral drill star spear, that meant it was not outstanding, it had been out of use since long ago back then. A killer move that was out of use definitely had many weakness.

But the spring star rain killer move made Fang Yuan’s eyes shine.

This was a surprising find.

Fang Yuan thought of the star fragment grass, it was the food of the starlight fireflies, as well as their home. The stronger and larger the starlight fireflies, the more starlight firefly Gu could emerge from them. Fang Yuan’s desire towards starlight firefly Gu was going to persist for a long time.

This, he needed this killer move.

Fang Yuan looked over this spring star rain killer move another two times.

He noticed a problem.

The Gu worms that made up this spring star rain had one star path Gu worm called star shoot Gu, it was a consumable Gu.

Fang Yuan had never heard of this Gu, this was the first time he had heard of it.

Fang Yuan thought about it and realized: This was Star Lord Wan Xiang’s ploy.

After Gu Immortals bought the killer move, spring star rain, every time they wanted to use it, they would need to expend star shoot Gu. Meanwhile, only Star Lord Wan Xiang sold this star shoot Gu.

Star Lord Wan Xiang wanted to turn this one time killer move purchase into a continuous trade.

Fang Yuan probed and asked: “I will offer two immortal essence stones for your spring star rain killer move and the star shoot Gu’s recipe.”

Star shoot Gu was only rank three, such a mortal Gu recipe was not worth half an immortal essence stone, this price was extremely high. But as expected, Star Lord Wan Xiang rejected him without hesitation. His explanation was that this star shoot Gu was naturally formed in his blessed land, there was no recipe.

This was a really good excuse.

Some blessed lands, if managed well, due to the peculiarity of the environment, would give birth to new Gu.

Not only can Gu Immortals refine and create new Gu worms, nature could do the same.

Fang Yuan knew that this was very likely to be an excuse, but he could not request to enter Star Lord Wan Xiang’s blessed land to check.

The blessed land was the Gu Immortal’s headquarters, it involved their most private matters. Only if they had a really good relationship and trusted each other deeply would they invite another Gu Immortal into the blessed land.

Fang Yuan saw that Star Lord Wan Xiang was unwilling, thus he suggested: “Alright, I will pay two immortal essence stones to buy spring star rain and dazzling star armor, these two killer moves along with some star shoot Gu. I want enough star shoot Gu to activate spring star rain ten times.”

Star Lord Wan Xiang heard this and shook his head: “The expenditure of star shoot Gu for six uses of the killer move would be worth half an immortal essence stone. Sir is only offering two immortal essence stones, yet I have to provide dazzling star armor as well. This is a loss for me, I will not do it.”

Fang Yuan snickered: “Star shoot Gu is only a rank three mortal Gu, each activation only uses about five hundred at most. Activating the killer move six times would consume three to four thousand of them, you are selling that for half an immortal essence stone?”

“Sir might not know, star shoot Gu is naturally created in my blessed land, its production is very slow. It cannot be bought outside because it is a unique product of my Myriad Star blessed land.” Star Lord Wan Xiang was very courteous, but his underlying meaning was, buy it if you want to, but if you do not buy it, you will not find it elsewhere.

He had the confidence of dominating the market of this Gu.

Fang Yuan laughed, continuing to bargain, while the other party refused to relent.

During this process, he realized that in the other party’s mind, dazzling star armor’s value was still very high.

“It seems that before the war of the five regions, dazzling star armor had not been spread by the respective forces, thus this killer move’s value is still very high.”

War was a very efficient method of interaction.

Especially in this world.

During peacetime, primeval stones, immortal essence stones, all these had great value and could not become widely used currency, the economy could not prosper.

But during times of war, battle merits, sect contribution points, all these replaced primeval stones and immortal essence stones as currency, they pushed for the development of all aspects of the economy.

After realizing this, Fang Yuan stopped being forceful. He used two immortal essence stones to buy spring star rain and enough star shoot Gu to activate the killer move ten times.

After completing this transaction, Fang Yuan continued to search in treasure yellow heaven.

He found out that in treasure yellow heaven, Gu Immortals had increased air bubble fish’s price up to at least ten times that of before.

Fang Yuan investigated for a bit and realized that the situation was the same as in his memories. During the end of last year, two Gu Immortals had fought above air bubble sea, causing intense poison to spread in the sea, turning it into a death zone.

Rare goods were more expensive, with the production of air bubble fish falling drastically, the price naturally shot up.

“The five regions have regional walls that isolate one another, this causes them to have their own independent events, and they barely influence one another. Since rebirth, I have affected southern border, northern plains and central continent. Among them, northern plains’ influence was the largest, it is now a huge mess. Second was central continent, followed by southern border, after all, what I changed in southern border were only events at the mortal level. As for western desert and eastern sea, they are still the same.”

Using Spring Autumn Cicada, Fang Yuan learnt about the inertia of the river of time as well as the butterfly effect. This sort of lack of change and change interweave together, it was evident that Fang Yuan’s understanding towards this world’s law of time was becoming deeper.

As for air bubble fish, Fang Yuan remembered that during the five regions war, this fish group would be extremely popular among Gu Immortals, the price would be even higher than now.

That was because an air bubble fish group could boost the rate of mortal Gu appearing in insect groups.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 668: Little Immortal Xing Luo

During peacetime, Gu Immortals raised Gu, their demand to purchase large quantities of mortal Gu was not high. Purchasing was a secondary option, in most cases, the primary method was the blessed land’s own production. The time flow was different in blessed lands compared to the outside world, one day in the outside world was many days inside the blessed land. One year outside would mean many years in a blessed land, while each year, there would be a certain output harvested. Gu Immortals would normally not choose air bubble fish, because the price was too high, they would rather simply wait for some time.

But during wartime, when Gu Immortals frequently fought against each other, they would avoid using their Immortal Gu trump cards often, mortal Gu would be the common method of attacking, and their expenditure would be huge. Thus, air bubble fish became a sought after commodity among all Gu Immortals during the five regions war.

In fact, Fang Yuan had once bought air bubble fish to increase the production of his starlight firefly Gu.

But unfortunately, towards the end of his northern plains trip, he lacked money, thus he had to sell almost all of his wolf group, fox group, and large numbers of air bubble fish and hairy men.

Fang Yuan had a chance to profit from air bubble fish, but life was full of unexpected changes, because he sold them too soon, he made a loss instead.

Right now in Hu Immortal blessed land, there were very few air bubble fish.

“I still have to buy air bubble fish, but not now. In a few years, air bubble sea would be repaired, and the price of air bubble fish will be lower. By then, I will invest some immortal essence stones and buy a huge group of them. Maybe I should breed these air bubble fish in large numbers, so that during the five regions war, I can make a huge profit...”

Fang Yuan had just bought over a thousand starlight firefly Gu, they could last him for a long time, he was not in need of air bubble fish to boost their production.

“Are you Little Immortal Xing Luo?” A moment later, Fang Yuan found his target.

Coincidentally, his target was also looking at yellow treasure heaven.

“That would be me. Senior, what would you like to buy? The price is negotiable.” Little Immortal Xing Luo’s divine sense transmitted, it was quite enthusiastic, even as much as having a tone of flattery.

Fang Yuan looked, the goods she was selling were not only small in quantity, they were very common, almost nobody would pay attention to her, she was evidently quite poor.

She was indeed a Gu Immortal, but not all Gu Immortals were wealthy. Battle, refining Gu, research, undergoing tribulation, all these would greatly expend the Gu Immortal’s foundation and wealth.

Fang Yuan knew from his memories: This Little Immortal Xing Luo was a lone cultivator, a newly advanced female Gu Immortal with weak foundations, she was at the toughest part of her career in starting her trading.

Little Immortal Xing Luo was a huge figure in the mortal realm, she would be revered and respected by mortals. But in treasure yellow heaven, among the many Gu Immortals, she was not outstanding at all.

“But who would know, during the five regions war, this Little Immortal Xing Luo would starting shining brightly, using her killer move icy stardust to quickly accumulate wealth from battle, becoming quite the famous figure later on.”

Fang Yuan sighed and admired the mystical powers of time and destiny.

According to the prophecy of the three venerables, the five regions war was the start of the great era, when this generation’s Great Dream Immortal Venerable would be born.

The great era where each rank nine Gu Immortal was born had a common point, that was during the chaotic battles, large numbers of new Gu Immortals would rise up.

The new replaces the old, the waves of an era would cause brilliantly shining ripples. Among paths, forces, individuals, they would collide and interact, causing the way of Gu to develop at a rapid pace, it would be an era of change.

Fang Yuan was one of them.

He started off with blood path, becoming a central continent Gu Immortal. But unfortunately, he had only experienced the first half of this new era before he had to use Spring Autumn Cicada to self-detonate.

“Do you sell killer moves?” Putting his mood aside, Fang Yuan asked Little Immortal Xing Luo.

“Mm, I have one killer move here.” Little Immortal Xing Luo was a bit embarrassed: “This is an ice path killer move that I obtained coincidentally, it is called icy yarn. Its price is half an immortal essence stone, this is the lowest price for a rank five killer move.” Her last sentence showed her fear of Fang Yuan suppressing the price.

Fang Yuan took a look at the content, humming in discontent: “This icy yarn killer move needs so many rank five Gu, and the defense is a wide range defensive effect...”

To use large numbers of rank five Gu at once, the user had to be a Gu Immortal, mortals have limited primeval essence and could not do that in most cases.

A wide area defense meant that the defensive strength would be lower than a single target defensive killer move. Meanwhile, Gu Immortals often fought alone, unless they were enslavement path Gu Immortals. But enslavement path Gu Immortals had their own enslavement path defensive methods, why would they choose an ice path killer move?

Little Immortal Xing Luo laughed bitterly in her heart, Fang Yuan hit the nail on the head, because of these reasons, the killer move icy yarn was not easy to sell.

But Little Immortal Xing Luo had no choice, she had limited goods in her possession, and she was a lone cultivator, she needed huge amounts of resources to kickstart her cultivation.

Although she became a Gu Immortal, she was left penniless after the tribulation, most of her Gu worms were destroyed. She had made an elaborate development plan, she wanted to plant a vast number of shiver trees in her blessed land. Her blessed land’s environment was very suitable to grow shiver trees, but she lacked the most crucial start up fund.

She had billions of primeval stones in her possession, but not a single immortal essence stone.

The sellers of shiver tree seeds numbered in only a few people, most of them wanted specific items for trade, or immortal essence stones. They had no need for the stuff that Little Immortal Xing Luo had.

Hearing Fang Yuan say that, Little Immortal Xing Luo’s heart lost all hope.

After the last few months, she had gotten used to disappointment.

But the next moment, Fang Yuan said: “I am researching star path killer moves recently, I am a little interested in this icy yarn killer move. But half an immortal essence stone is too expensive! If you have any innovative small killer move, add it in and I might buy this for half an immortal essence stone.”

“Innovative small killer move?” Little Immortal Xing Luo’s hopes were reignited, she thought about her own star path killer move ‘six-nine stardust’.

‘Six-nine stardust’ was her personal creation, it used six rank three Gu and nine rank four Gu, but could unleash the attack power of a rank five Gu.

She had once been extremely proud of it, but soon her horizons broadened, and she understood that there was a mountain above a mountain, a man above another man, she became more modest.

Little Immortal Xing Luo only hesitated for a moment, her desire towards immortal essence stones had won her over.

“Junior has a small killer move, but I’m afraid it might be useless to senior.”

She said carefully.

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, but his tone was still very calm: “Oh? Tell me about it.”

After seeing the six-nine stardust killer move, Fang Yuan held in his joy and evaluated: “Mm, this killer move is barely acceptable, who knows, it might bring me some inspiration. Well, since my mood is great today, I’ll take care of a newbie like you. Hahaha, this is half an immortal essence stone!”

“I finally have half a piece, I’m just half short!” Little Immortal Xing Luo was overjoyed, when they parted, her tone was full of well wishes for Fang Yuan.

Afterwards, Fang Yuan spent another two immortal essence stones, buying large amounts of Gu refinement material and mortal Gu worms.

After spending another two stones, he bought a group of elderly hairy men.

Hairy men were almost always the most expensive among slaves.

These hairy men, although they were old and would die in a few years, were very experienced in Gu refinement.

Fang Yuan had intended to refine a few sets of stargate Gu, but this Gu’s success rate was very low, back then, even though Lang Ya land spirit refined it himself, he still failed many times. If Fang Yuan tried, it would waste a huge amount of his time, he was going to let these old hairy men refine it for him.

Central Continent, Immortal Crane Sect, Fu Hu blessed land.

Fang Zheng had a solemn expression as he stepped into the tunnel.

The tunnel was huge and wide, every one hundred steps, there would be an elite rockman guard, the defense was like an iron fortress.

These rockmen were all trained by the blessed land’s owner, all of them had at least rank four battle strength and were skilled in earth path Gu worms.

Every one thousand steps, there would be a huge rockman, his size would be at least three times that of a normal rockman. Even in such a wide tunnel, they could only squat down on the ground.

But rockmen were born to dig tunnels and live underground, these rockmen did not feel any discomfort.

Every time Fang Zheng walked in this tunnel, he would feel apprehensive. Especially when he could feel the rank five Gu Master aura permeating from these huge rockmen.

“Our Immortal Crane Sect’s strength is simply too great! If these rank five rockmen were all brought outside, I’m afraid all the other sects would be shocked.” While he passed a huge rockman, Fang Zheng muttered to the spirit incubating flea.

Lord Sky Crane, who was inside the spirit incubating flea, said: “Not really. Which sect would not have their trump cards and foundation? Especially the other nine great ancient sects, they are no weaker than us. But the current owner of Fu Hu blessed land is the third supreme elder of our sect, Lord Tiger Demon. The rockman slaves that he nurtures are the best in central continent! Even in treasure yellow heaven he has huge influence, his wealth and abilities are not something us mortals can begin to imagine.”

Fang Zheng's heart had a longing feeling: "What sort of realm is Gu Immortal, they can actually rear so many rockmen, this is truly amazing!"

Lord Sky Crane replied: "Each Gu Immortal is an elite of the elites, an absolute genius, a dragon among men, they all have great opportunities and chance encounters. They have all cultivated step by step from a mortal identity, Fang Zheng, you are rank five now, maybe one day, you will become a Gu Immortal!"

Fang Zheng shook his head continuously: "Master, I know my limits. My rank five cultivation was mostly due to the sect's relic Gu. The sect is nurturing me with all its effort, using the resources on me. My rank five cultivation cannot compare to you, master, who cultivated step by step. But now, I think that rank five is not something rare, look at this tunnel, there are at least thirty huge rockmen."

"Fang Zheng, it is good that you feel indebted to Immortal Crane Sect's generosity towards nurturing you. But do not put yourself down, man is the spirit of all beings, although variant humans call themselves humans, these rockmen might look strong and brave, but in one on one battles, they are unable to compare to the rank five Gu Masters in our sect, what they specialize in are group battles." Lord Sky Crane laughed.

"Is that so?"

"Lord Sky Crane said: "These rockmen are very stupid, it was because they encountered a rich master that they could have such accomplishments. Do you think these rockmen can compare to the elders in our sect? If I was still alive, I could deal with more than ten of them at once. Alright, we are at the blood pool."

Fang Zheng heard the words 'blood pool' and his muscles contracted involuntarily.

He pushed the door in front of him, entering a cave.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 669: He Feng Yang's scheme

This cave was as large as a plaza; blood colored light filled the cave along with a dense bloody odor. In the center of the cave, a round hole had been dug out, inside of which blood gurgled and emitted hot air.

Fang Zheng took a deep breath before taking off his clothes in a familiar fashion, when naked he then entered the blood pool, immediately taking large gaping breaths due to the scalding blood.

He soon adapted to the temperature of the blood and stood still at the center of the blood pool. The blood pool reached up to his waist, revealing his chest and most of his arms.

"Begin. Do it one by one, don't be anxious. First is iron blood Gu." Lord Sky Crane reminded.

Fang Zheng slowly closed his eyes and activated iron blood Gu as instructed.

Immediately, the Gu worm’s power started transforming his blood. His red blood began to darken and become denser, the blood flow also became extremely slow.

As a result, Fang Zheng’s fair skin also darkened.

“Maintain iron blood Gu, activate blood blade Gu.” Lord Sky Crane said again.

Fang Zheng activated blood blade Gu; his body shuddered, his skin burst open forming over a hundred wounds from which large numbers of blood blades shot out – they were all pitch black iron-blood blades!

Shortly afterwards, blood like molten iron slowly flowed out of the wounds.

Fang Zheng had a cold expression, he did not feel any pain, instead, intense pleasure attacked his mind. This was the effect of iron blood Gu, it could turn pain to pleasure and help the Gu Master to adapt to battles, even a weak Gu Master could turn into a warrior addicted to battle.

This was one of the achievements of Immortal Crane Sect from years of researching blood path.

This blood slowly flowed into the bright red blood pool, dying the nearby area around Fang Zheng black.

“It is the crucial step now, use blood merge Gu.” Lord Sky Crane reminded.

Fang Zheng gritted his teeth as he activated blood merge Gu.

Immediately, under the effect of the Gu worm, the more than one hundred wounds on his body burst out with an intense suction force. The surrounding blood was being absorbed without pause.

“Ahh....” Fang Zheng groaned softly, the intense pain had turned into intense pleasure. He gritted his teeth hard, his body trembling nonstop.

As large amounts of blood were absorbed, his body inflated, turning into an abnormal fatty. His body was over three times the size of his original self. His skin burst open and the thick, snake-like veins twisted around in his body.

The elegant and handsome young master had transformed into a nauseating, ugly monster.

“Don’t forget your goal, you need to resist this pleasure. Fang Zheng, activate failed blood demon flower Gu!” Lord Sky Crane was monitoring Fang Zheng’s situation and hurriedly reminded him.

The words ‘failed blood demon flower Gu’ shook Fang Zheng’s mind and he was barely able to get past the intense pleasure, gasping as he activated failed blood demon flower Gu.

Fang Zheng tightly clenched his fists, a large amount of blood in his body was rapidly being corrupted. Under the effect of the Gu worm, vines started growing out of his blood.

These thin vines pierced Fang Zheng’s skin and soon coiled around his body.

Flower buds started growing out of the vines and quickly blossomed, turning into pretty blue flowers resembling chrysanthemums.

“Urghh—! Fang Zheng tightly gritted his teeth, groaning softly in pain. His face was pale, his whole body was like soil with many demonic flowers growing forcibly on him. This intense pain was ten times more terrifying than a woman giving birth!

Even iron blood Gu’s effect was not able to resist this kind of pain.

Fang Zheng almost shattered his white teeth from the pain. His face turned pale white and blue veins popped up on his forehead, making him look malevolent and terrifying.

“Your blood is boiling, your organs and your body will be burned by your own blood if this goes on. Use cold blood Gu quickly.” Lord Sky Crane reminded nervously.

Fang Zheng activated cold blood Gu with great difficulty.

His blood quickly cooled down till he was shivering from the cold; he was finally out of the deadly crisis.

“That will do, demon flowers will greatly increase the effects of your blood path Gu worms. You are just a step away from success, use blood sense Gu!” Lord Sky Crane said with a hurried tone.

“Blood sense...” Fang Zheng lowered his head, his gaze had turned blurry from the pain. From the many drills he had done before, he was finally able to persist and activate this blood path investigative Gu worm.

Several breaths later, Fang Zheng spoke: “I... I can sense... underground, southeast, distance is five to six thousand steps.”

“Great, you did it again! You are on the verge of success, it is the final step, use blood scar Gu to mark the position.”

“Arghhh...” Fang Zheng started to shout unconsciously at this time. His gaze was completely blurry, the weakness caused his body to be on the verge of collapse. He exerted all his strength to extract all the potential he had to activate blood scar Gu.

He was delirious, there was still enough primeval essence in his rank five aperture but he could only mobilize a small portion. The primeval essence was like a small creek flowing slowly into blood scar Gu.

However, blood scar Gu had extremely large demand for primeval essence; Fang Zheng could only persist for eight breaths of time before he finally collapsed, falling down into the blood pool, unconscious.

...

An incense burner was letting out wisps of smoke, this quiet room had no windows and was extremely dim.

He Feng Yang was wearing a white robe with a black belt, sitting on a meditation mat with wide sleeves.

He looked young and mild like jade. His dark green brows were sharp and long, reaching up to his waist. At this moment, his serene and deep eyes were staring at the spirit incubating flea in front of him.

The spirit incubating flea was floating in the air, and Lord Sky Crane’s soul was reporting the results of Fang Zheng’s training.

He Feng Yang said with a dissatisfied tone: “Sure enough, despite letting him live in Fu Hu blessed for eight years and also giving him many relic Gu to become a rank five Gu Master in a short period of time, he still can’t achieve a simple thing like simultaneously activating six to seven Gu worms.”

Lord Sky Crane considered his words before speaking: “Fang Zheng is young, he is still lacking in the basics of multitasking. But this subordinate feels he is a very hard worker and he has made large progress rapidly. Recalling the first attempt, he only lasted a breath of time after activating blood merge Gu before he fainted.”

“Therefore I added iron blood Gu, the result was that in the second try, the pleasure was too much for him, the blood flowed out wantonly till he fainted. He lasted for three breaths of time.” He Feng Yang interrupted Lord Sky Crane in displeasure.

Lord Sky Crane quickly said: “Lord Supreme Elder, truthfully speaking, even this subordinate would find it hard to multitask under such intense pain and pleasure. Fang Zheng is not far from success, he was able to persist for eight breaths of time this time. One needs to last for ten breaths of time to activate blood scar Gu successfully. And he is only lacking the last two breaths of time. As long as we can train a few more times and allow a little more time, we can...”

“Enough! How much more? You still want to train more? Time, time, just hear yourself, how much time has been wasted in your plan? How long? Years! There is still no improvement, Dang Hun mountain is still not in our hands. Don’t you know how many dissatisfied voices are there in the sect, how many disciples are requesting the higher ups to open the exchange of guts Gu?”

“Subordinate is incompetent and even implicated Lord Supreme Elder, I have committed a heinous sin!” Lord Sky Crane begged for mercy when he saw He Feng Yang become furious.

He Feng Yang took some deep breaths before waving his sleeve: “Leave now, there is only a month before the sect convention. Before I go to the sect convention, I want to hear the good news of your training succeeding, and that we can start our plan to capture Hu Immortal blessed land!”

“But lord, a month is too short, Fang Zheng will not be able to endure excessive training. We can nurse his physical health with Gu worms, but the intense pleasure and pain will injure the soul and can even cause his soul to shatter!” Lord Sky Crane inquired.

He Feng Yang chuckled: “Isn’t the collapse of his soul exactly what you want to see? Thus, you can seize his body and resurrect. Wasn’t this your initial plan?”

His smile turned gentler as he said this: “This Fang Zheng has only gone on a crash course to reach rank five Gu Master, his nature is still childish. He is insufficiently tempered, how could he compare to you, Lord Sky Crane? After we use him to seize Hu Immortal blessed land, you can return. Sigh, since Su San and Zhou Wu were killed by that demon Song Zi Xing, there are fewer and fewer capable subordinates like you at my side.”

The gentler He Feng Yang’s tone became, the colder Lord Sky Crane felt in his heart, he replied in a grateful tone: “Receiving such importance from Lord Supreme Elder, this subordinate will definitely repay lord’s kindness greatly and offer my life in sacrifice!”

“Good, take your leave now.” He Feng Yang waved for Lord Sky Crane to leave.

The quiet room now only had He Feng Yang, his smile gradually disappeared before being replaced by a grave expression, his gaze somewhat tense.

After Fang Yuan seized Hu Immortal blessed land, he had been in charge of this matter and now a year had passed, the sect’s pressure on him was growing larger day by day. Especially his enemy in the sect — Gu Immortal Lei Tan, who had publicly ridiculed his incompetence several times.

The sect convention a month later was a tough barrier. If He Feng Yang could not show any progress, it would be very difficult to cross this barrier. He could almost hear Lei Tan’s mockery echoing throughout the convention.

“But it won’t be long... as long as this plan succeeds, I can shut the mouths of all those petty people like Lei Tan. I would have the greatest contribution to the sect over these last years! In the attack against Hu Immortal blessed land, I will personally make a move. Moreover, I have invited Fairy Cang Yu and Old Lord Can Yang. Fairy Cang Yu has similar battle strength to me, and has at least three mortal killer moves. While Old Lord Can Yang is a rank seven Gu Immortal with an offensive Immortal Gu!”

“The only problem is that the land spirit can prohibit the use of all mortal Gu. I don’t have any Immortal Gu to use, so I might not be able to do much. The only method is to consume green grape immortal essence. Fortunately, Hu Immortal blessed land was originally barren and not managed properly, how much green grape immortal essence could it have accumulated? I don’t believe Fang Yuan can exhaust our three Gu Immortals’ combined strength! As long as Hu Immortal’s immortal essence is consumed, the land spirit will be powerless and won’t be able to restrict mortal Gu. At that time, hmph!”

He Feng Yang mumbled to himself, gradually calming his tensed mind.

At the same time, in an underground cave in Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fang Yuan slowly stepped out of the wisdom light halo, a satisfied smile on his face.

Just now, he had successfully deduced the killer move, icy stardust.

ChibiGeneral

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 670: Icy Drill Stardust

The starlight firefly Gu were like a swarm of bees, flying in the air, giving off blue starlight.

The starlight was being drawn in by an invisible force, gathering into a stargate.

This was a huge circular door, it was made up of starlight, it shined like an illusion, it was like a scene within a dream.

As time passed, the starlight firefly Gu continued to dwindle in numbers, as the dead starlight firefly Gu fell to the ground from midair.

One leg stepped out of the stargate into Hu Immortal blessed land, next, the entire person walked out of the stargate.

It was an old man, he had white hair and deep wrinkles, his eyes were tired but bright, it was Tai Bai Yun Sheng who had returned from Lang Ya blessed land.

“I am back again...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was covered in dust, he looked at the scenery in Hu Immortal blessed land, sighing to himself.

Although he had not lived here for a long time, he felt that this was his home.

He had a sense of belonging to this place.

At this time, Fang Yuan flew over from the sky: “Hahaha, Old Bai you came back at a good time, come, see the killer move that I just deduced.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng saw this familiar figure and laughed heartily: “Oh, is that so? I bought a cloud path defensive killer move from the Inkman King, why don’t we fellow disciples have a friendly match.”

Saying this, he flew into the air.

Fang Yuan heard this and raised his eyebrows, he stretched out one of his right arms, with his palm facing the sky, and his fingers straight.

A lump of starlight soon began to form in his palm.

“Oh? Is your killer move a star path killer move?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng saw this starlight lump and was shocked.

He flew into the sky, as a ring of white clouds appeared around him.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was at the center of these white clouds, the clouds were like a huge belt, moving around along with Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Fang Yuan slowly moved his fingers, grabbing the starlight lightly in his hands.

“Old Bai, get ready to take this.” He growled, as he flicked a finger, a speck of starlight shot out like lightning.

The starlight speck’s size was small, but extremely fast, it flew in the air, shooting towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

“Decent speed.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng evaluated, from such a long distance, with him completely focused, he had a chance to dodge it. But because they were exchanging blows, he wanted to test his own cloud path killer move, thus he stood still and took the starlight head on.

When the starlight got close to Tai Bai Yun Sheng, the white cloud ring suddenly rotated, at an extremely fast pace!

The cloud ring blocked the starlight for him.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng stopped the cloud ring, he gazed with rapt attention, only to see that at the area where the cloud ring had blocked the starlight, it had turned blue, and frost energy was oozing, creating a layer of frost.

In response, he said laughingly to Fang Yuan: “It seems this killer move that you deduced isn’t too amazing. You have to know, my killer move has not been fully activated yet.”

The corners of Fang Yuan’s mouth opened, showing his sharp, uneven teeth: “Neither has mine, take this!”

He flicked his fingers, as countless specks of starlight were shot out instantly.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was still at the same spot, but the cloud ring around him was rotating faster and faster, it was almost like a white ball had formed around him.

Fang Yuan’s specks of starlight were blocked by the cloud ring completely.

Fang Yuan did not stop attacking, he showed an interested gaze. The pure white cloud ring was gradually turning blue from the starlight, and its speed was getting slower.

“Your killer move has a great freezing effect, it can slow your enemies.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng evaluated: “My killer move also has another effect.”

Saying this, he continuing activating his killer move.

The cloud ring that had almost been frozen into a blue ice statue exploded, with a loud bang, the blue frost turned into vapor as it spread towards the surroundings.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng showed joy, praising himself: “My cloud ring can store the attacks of enemies, when it reaches its limits or when I activate the following effect of my killer move, I can make the cloud ring explode, to let my enemies face their own attacks! Junior brother, it seems my killer move is stronger than the one you deduced.”

Fang Yuan snickered: “Old Bai, it is still too early to say that.”

Saying so, he flicked his wrist, and threw the entire starlight lump towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s heart shuddered, he quickly activated his killer move, and five cloud rings formed around him. With him as the center, the cloud rings expanded out with varying sizes, the cloud rings were like five concentric circles surrounding him, protecting him in the center.

The starlight lump came attacking, but the five cloud rings rotated rapidly, their afterimages produced an illusory white ball.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng laughed loudly, he was in the middle and felt extremely safe.

But right at this moment, the starlight lump exploded.

Ding ding ding, dang dang dang...

Large amounts of starlight specks flew everywhere, colliding into one another, the explosion covered Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s entire body, as frost energy burst out.

“The force of this explosion far surpasses the force of the individual starlight specks added together.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression changed, the five cloud rings had turned blue, and their speed fell.

“Again!” Fang Yuan raised his eight arms, with his monstrous arms simultaneously grabbing at the air like claws.

The next moment, lumps of starlight formed in his palms.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng saw this and his pupils shrunk, he did not dare to be overconfident, he quickly activated his Gu worms and rapidly rotated the rings.

Fang Yuan stood on the spot, his eight arms fired shots consecutively, the starlight lumps flew like a meteor, bombing in the direction of Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Bam bam bam...

The explosions were right next to his ears, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s appearance turned pathetic, as he dodged around. The five cloud rings had reached their limits, they self-detonated one by one, while the force of the detonation allowed him to regain his momentum.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly replenished the five cloud rings, as Fang Yuan continued to unleash his explosions, but he managed to maintain his defense.

“Enough.” Fang Yuan suddenly stopped.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng breathed roughly, he slowly flew towards Fang Yuan: “What is the name of this killer move? What percent of its full power did you use?”

Fang Yuan replied without any shame: “I named this icy drill stardust, this is my unique creation. When I activate it fully, I can unleash a water vat sized starlight lump up to six times, but the bigger the lump, the slower the speed of movement. Because the more stardust there is inside, the more they collide, and the energy used up would reduce their speed.”

“That is to say, you did not even use fifty percent of the killer move’s power! How is your killer move so strong? Although it cannot compare to an immortal killer move, the power is already far superior to most mortal killer moves.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng gasped.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “When I was in Imperial Court blessed land, I found an inheritance, it came from a famous poet of northern plains, Dou Min Jun. He was creative and created a brand new star Gu. This star Gu can increase the attack power of star path Gu worms, it is like the weakened version of amplify effect Gu. When I deduced this killer move, I fused this Gu into it, thus the power was this great.”

This was the true reason why Fang Yuan chose a star path attack method.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng realized at once: “So that is it. I knew it, my defensive killer move is called nine cloud ring, when activated at full force, nine cloud rings can exist at once. Not only is the defense incredible, it can be replenished at any time, and can even return the attacks of enemies back to them. This cost me two whole immortal essence stones!”

Fang Yuan nodded: “Your killer move is definitely worth the price, in fact, this will be priced at two and a half immortal essence stones in treasure yellow heaven. Inkman King is giving you a favor.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng laughed: “I understand this clearly, he was considering my landscape as before Immortal Gu. He is also a Gu Immortal, he needs to undergo tribulations and calamities, when his blessed land suffers damage, he would need to ask me to repair it! Landscape as before Gu is my way to earn a fortune from now on.”

“Old Bai, when your business expands in the future, I am sure many Gu Immortals will come to you for help. Come, let’s talk while flying.”

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng slowly flew towards Dang Hun mountain.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked back, only to see that on the battlefield earlier, there were still dozens of blue star clouds. The insides of these clouds were still emitting a cracking noise, it came from the collision of starlight specks.

As the frost energy spread around the star clouds, their color faded with time.

“Junior brother, you are incredible. This icy drill stardust is worth at least four immortal essence stones if you sell it in treasure yellow heaven.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng sighed.

“If not for wisdom Gu, how would I have endless inspiration?” Fang Yuan replied plainly.

Actually, with just wisdom Gu, if he did not have Little Immortal Xing Luo’s ice path killer move, icy yarn, and her smaller killer move, six-nine stardust, he would not be able to deduce the killer move icy drill stardust.

When Little Immortal Xing Luo started rising up, she was extremely poor, using the opportunity of the five regions war, she used her self-created icy stardust killer move to accumulate her wealth, finally gaining prominence and becoming a relatively famous character.

Fang Yuan’s intention was to make an attempt of buying the former version of icy stardust from her.

When he saw icy yarn and six-nine stardust, he guessed that these two killer moves were the foundation of Little Immortal Xing Luo’s new self-created killer move.

After he spent half an immortal essence stone to buy it, he rushed towards wisdom Gu and used the light of wisdom to make deductions.

Wisdom Gu’s halo brought him unlimited inspiration, and Fang Yuan was a person who had been reborn, he had seen the power of icy stardust with his own eyes, this gave him the proper direction, avoiding the need to deduce blindly.

Eventually, he combined Dou Min Jun’s inheritance within, deducing the killer move icy drill stardust.

This killer move was different from icy stardust, it had a smaller range but much greater power.

One could say that using the inheritance of Dou Min Jun, he had already slightly surpassed icy stardust.

“Rank nine wisdom Gu is truly phenomenal. I simply cannot imagine the effect when it is used fully. Honestly, I am a little envious of you. After becoming a zombie, you could receive such benefits!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked at Fang Yuan with admiration.

Fang Yuan shook his head: “There are a lot of flaws by becoming a zombie. Firstly, I have to thank Red Lotus Demon Venerable, next, I could reach this step because of coincidences and lucky opportunities. If not for the peculiar situation back then, allowing me to reach an arrangement with wisdom Gu, how could I utilize the light of wisdom?”

“That’s right, if not for Red Lotus Demon Venerable breaking fate Gu, after we die, our souls would be sucked into the door of life and death, slumbering in the death domain for all eternity. How would anyone be able to remain in the world, to become a zombie!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng sighed deeply.

“Alright, before I left, I urged you to indirectly ask about the details of luck path from Lang Ya land spirit. Now that you’ve returned, what information did you obtain?” Fang Yuan asked.

Ever since he learned that Long Hair Ancestor had discussed about Dao with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable for seven days and seven nights, this idea emerged in him.

Lang Ya land spirit was far easier to deal with than Mo Yao’s will.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng shook his head, he showed a strange smile: “After I repaired a few rivers, I was chased out by Lang Ya land spirit in a hurry. He has to eat his medicine grinder chips, he is very busy.”

“Eat his medicine grinder chips?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 671: Sealing Spring Autumn Cicada

Half a month later, Fang Yuan went to Lang Ya blessed land again.

It was foggy in front of him, it was a scene of white, among the turbulent cloud sea, twelve cloud buildings were motionless. Many large rivers resembling dragons were flowing above the cloud soil.

After Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s restoration, Lang Ya blessed land had returned to its former state.

Fang Yuan was brought into a cloud building, meeting Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit still had layers of qi path seals. But there were originally eighteen layers of seals, under the Inkman King’s help, three layers were removed, only fifteen were left.

Inkman King stood beside Lang Ya land spirit, he did not dare to act arrogantly in front of Fang Yuan, he greeted first: “Sir Fang Yuan, how have you been?”

Fang Yuan smiled at him, his protruding fangs made his smile look very scary.

He turned to look at Lang Ya land spirit, tossing a rank four east window Gu towards him: “Look.”

East window Gu was floating silently before Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit could not stretch out his arms, but Fang Yuan lent him the east window Gu so his consciousness could enter it.

After checking the contents, he nodded in satisfaction, priasing: “Not bad, quite impressive! You completely deduced these three Immortal Gu recipes! Incredible, this thought process is spectacular!!”

“Land spirit, I did not come here personally to listen to your rubbish.” Fang Yuan interrupted Lang Ya land spirit rudely, pointing out his intention.

Lang Ya land spirit was not stupid, he willed and summoned thirty immortal essence stones: “This is your remuneration!”

Fang Yuan took these immortal essence stones and placed it in his immortal aperture.

His earnings this time was not as much as previously. That was because deducing these Immortal Gu recipes cost him six green grape immortal essence beads. If not for the stargate which was already built, he would have to waste another two green grape immortal essence beads, raising his cost to eight.

Even though these Immortal Gu recipes were also remnant recipes with at least ninety percent completion rate, each of them needed in-depth analysis. Some Immortal Gu recipes were very hard to deduce, there were hurdles one after another, when he thought with his brain, he would expend more wills.

But even so, the profits were still immense.

Inkman King used an envious gaze and watched the two finish their transaction, before smiling: “Sir Fang Yuan, actually, each transaction need not be done using immortal essence stones right? Over here in Lang Ya blessed land, there are lots of good stuff that cannot be found in treasure yellow heaven. We can do trading. To speak the truth, my inkman city has some precious goods that sir might be interested in. Not long ago, your senior brother Tai Bai Yun Sheng had bought a killer move from me.”

Inkman King saw that Fang Yuan had ample funds and wanted to do business with him.

Fang Yuan heard this and smiled: “Inkman king’s suggestion is great, I lack three small swamp Gu, and six pine island Gu, I wonder if you have them?”

This problem stumped Inkman King. He showed an awkward expression: “I am ashamed, this is the first time i’ve heard of small swamp and pine island.”

“These are all olden antiquity Gu worms, little swamp Gu can change the terrain, forming a small swamp. Pine island is the same, it can create a floating island on top of the sea. There is a huge tree in the middle of the island, the tree roots would extend and hold the soil together.” Lang Ya land spirit explained.

Next, he asked Fang Yuan curiously: “These Gu worms have all been eliminated from use, right now, Gu Immortals have better and cheaper ways to change the terrain of the blessed land. Why do you want these Gu worms?”

“You don’t need to ask about my intention, from your tone, I assume you have these Gu worms in Lang Ya blessed land?” Fang Yuan asked mysteriously.

“Of course!” Lang Ya land spirit raised his head, saying arrogantly: “Every time I obtain a new Gu recipe, I will refine a few Gu worms to keep them as collection. I have up to a hundred little swamp Gu and pine island Gu as collection, I can sell them to you. But the materials to refine these Gu worms are now all extinct. You will need to pay an immortal essence stone.”

Goods were more expensive when they were rare, little swamp Gu and pine island Gu were not even sold in treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan had no hesitation, he tossed an immortal essence stone to Lang Ya land spirit and obtained three little swamp Gu and six pine island Gu.

Next, he looked at Lang Ya land spirit curiously: “Strange, you collect so many Gu worms, how do you settle the issue of feeding them?”

Fang Yuan had been troubled these days over the feeding of Gu worms, especially the Immortal Gu that he had.

Lang Ya land spirit gave him the answer: “The problem of feeding mortal Gu is easy, just create a special environment and let them hibernate. But you can’t do this for Immortal Gu, even if they hibernate, you need to feed them, but the food that you feed them will be halved compared to normal times.”

This answer was a little disappointing to Fang Yuan.

“Can you go into detail?” He asked.

“I believe you have gone to Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s true inheritance secluded domain right? true inheritance secluded domain is a special environment, it can cause Gu worms to hibernate, mortal Gu will not need to be fed, and Immortal Gu’s feeding cost would be greatly reduced.”

Fang Yuan frowned: “Even so, true inheritance secluded domain has so many Immortal Gu, I do not believe that Eighty-Eight True Yang Building can obtain so much resources every ten years to feed these Immortal Gu.”

“That is because Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used food path methods. Food path is a very secretive path, it is solely for the research on how to feed Gu worms, variant humans, wild beasts, and even humans, these very tough questions. Don’t ask me questions about food path, I have no idea. The Immortal Gu that I have area all fed in the most traditional way.”

Fang Yuan did not give up: “Back then, your main body and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable refined Eighty-Eight True Yang Building together, would you not know the food path methods that he used?”

Lang Ya land spirit rolled his eyes: “The main body had once made an oath with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to not reveal any information regaining the food path methods. This is a huge secret, actually, I want to know about it too. But in the memories that I inherited, there is no such information.”

Fang Yuan nodded, he knew that land spirits were upright and would never lie, he was only asking casually.

Although he had completed the transaction, Fang Yuan did not leave yet, he had another objective in coming here.

He took out a star shoot Gu, placing it before Lang Ya land spirit: “Can you reverse refine the recipe of this Gu?”

Lang Ya land spirit could not stretch out his hands, he could only sniff this star shoot Gu, saying: “This Gu had obviously been tampered with, the Gu recipe is very hard to recreate, at the very least, a refinement grandmaster is needed. With just this rank three star path gu, it is impossible to reverse refine its recipe! Because this is a new Gu, it will need to be researched and that would result in some costs...”

Fang Yuan smiled, stretching out his right palm, showing five fingers: “I have over five thousand star shoot Gu.”

Star shoot Gu was a necessary Gu worm in formulating the killer move spring star rain, Fang Yuan tried using it once and found that the killer move was very effective.

He had bought so many star shoot Gu at once, he had the intention to reverse refine it. But right now, his intention was even stronger.

“Five thousand... of course I can reverse refine the recipe. What a pity, I am currently sealed, I can’t do anything.” Lang Ya land spirit sighed.

Fang Yuan frowned: “This qi path seal still has fifteen layers, how long would it take to remove them all?”

“At least a year.” Inkman King said.

“So long?”

“No choice, this seal is definitely an immortal killer move, the more it is unsealed, the more difficult it becomes.” Inkman King showed a bitter laughter.

Long Hair Ancestor was one of the three supreme grandmasters in refinement path history, their names were contained in legends. Lang Ya land spirit’s current refinement path realm was at least refinement grandmaster level. Meanwhile, Fang Yuan was only a refinement path master.

If he could get Lang Ya land spirit to help, that would be the best. But now that Lang Ya land spirit was sealed, he could not refine Gu, and would not be able to reverse refine the recipe.

“Actually, it is not impossible to reverse refine the recipe.” Inkman king suggested: “Lang Ya blessed land has many old hairy men right? These old hairy men all have refinement master attainment. By then, let them work for the land spirit while Lang Ya land spirit directs them personally, wouldn’t that work?”

Lang Ya land spirit rolled his eyes at Inkman King: “An outsider’s silly words! Refinement path is profound and deep, many methods and killer moves require the relevant wisdom, cultivation, and talent, as well as huge amounts of practice. Do you think that many refinement masters would add up to one refinement grandmaster? Bullshit!”

Inkman king was scolded till he was stunned, but he only laughed and did not dare to rebuke.

“In that case, forget it. When you are unsealed, we’ll talk about it.” Fang Yuan said his goodbye, turning around and leaving.

This matter was not urgent at the moment.

“Lad, even if I am unsealed, I will not reverse refine it for you for free. Prepare three immortal essence stones!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted towards Fang Yuan who was leaving.

Fang Yuan did not turn around, he waved his hand as he stepped into the stargate, vanishing.

“Hmph, rascal kid.” Lang Ya land spirit watched him disappeared as he muttered.

After Fang Yuan returned to Hu Immortal blessed land, he entered Dang Hun palace, starting on the matter of sealing Spring Autumn Cicada.

He had already obtained small swamp Gu and pine island Gu, these were the final missing pieces.

Seven days and seven nights later, Fang Yuan planted large numbers of Gu worms on his first aperture as well as the area around his stomach.

These Gu worms’ effects were interlinked, they amplified each other and formed a strong seal. On one hand, they helped the first aperture to alleviate Spring Autumn Cicada’s pressure. On the other hand, they expelled Spring Autumn Cicada’s partial aura towards the outside of his body after some modifications.

Thirdly, and most importantly, the seal would not affect the activation of Spring Autumn Cicada.

“This seal can last for four years. This way, I have resolved the problem of Spring Autumn Cicada bursting the first aperture for the time being.” Fang Yuan checked that there was no problem and sighed in relief.

This tough problem was finally settled, he felt a pressure lifting off his shoulders.

The process of sealing Spring Autumn Cicada was not easy. After all, he was using mortal Gu to seal an Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan’s soul was so exhausted it faded slightly.

After succeeding in the sealing, Fang Yuan fell asleep, not wanting to get out of bed for three days.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 672: Difficult problem of feeding Immortal Gu

Three days later, Fang Yuan slowly woke up.

His heart was in serenity, he did not feel tired or restless anymore.

“It seems that the zombie body cannot compare to a live physical body in one more aspect, that is, not only does my soul gets weakened more easily, it also is more prone to agitation.” Fang Yuan found another drawback of the zombie body.

If the soul was weak, it could be easily resolved by using guts Gu to strengthen his soul. There were many guts Gu on Dang Hun mountain, these were all items of the highest quality for strengthening his soul.

But the irritation of the soul required pacifying the soul. The best way to pacify the soul was to use the Bewitching Lake’s water, found in Obsession Death Domain. This water was recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, it was praised by Verdant Great Sun as an excellent wine.

Fang Yuan did not have the waters of Bewitching Lake, but even if he did, he would not dare to drink it. He used the ancient method, the most effective one — sleeping.

“If I had a normal person’s body, I would just need to rest for a while in order to pacify the irritation in my soul. But after becoming a zombie, I would need to sleep for three days straight. Soul path involves strengthening the soul, refining the soul, and pacifying the soul, these three aspects, but most soul path Gu Masters focus on the first two. Now that I think about it, that should be because sleeping is an excellent way to pacify the soul, thus they did not need to invest in this aspect.”

After sealing Spring Autumn Cicada, Fang Yuan gained a deeper understanding of soul path.

Next, he calculated this month’s balance.

After dealing with Lang Ya land spirit twice, he earned sixty immortal essence stones. But he also spent a lot.

In treasure yellow heaven, he bought more than a thousand starlight firefly Gu, the killer moves spring star rain, icy yarn and six-nine stardust, large amounts of Gu refinement materials, large numbers of mortal Gu, as well as a group of old hairy men. And finally, to seal Spring Autumn Cicada, he bought small swamp Gu and pine island Gu, he spent a total of twenty immortal essence stones.

Right now, Fang Yuan had thirty and a half immortal essence stones left.

Do not think that this was a lot of immortal essence stones, Fang Yuan also spent much of his green grape immortal essence.

When deducing Immortal Gu recipes, he could only do it by himself, the first time he traded with Lang Ya land spirit, he only had nine green grape immortal essence beads left. After the second deduction, he spent six immortal essence beads, and improving the sealing method on Spring Autumn Cicada consumed one bead, right now he had two beads left.

It was necessary to improve Spring Autumn Cicada’s seal. Earlier, his estimated cost was twenty-three immortal essence stones. After the improvement, it fell to twenty. This way, he saved two immortal essence stones.

Only having two beads of green grape immortal essence left was very dangerous. If he met with a mishap, Fang Yuan would only be able to use myriad self twice before he would be unable to deal with the situation, especially now, when Immortal Crane Sect was close to attacking.

Fang Yuan used fifteen immortal essence stones, converting them into his own green grape immortal essence.

This way, his green grape immortal essence rose to seventeen beads, while his immortal essence stones fell to fifteen and a half pieces.

Right now, the crisis with Spring Autumn Cicada’s aperture had been temporarily resolved. And his predicament was also relieved after allying with Hei Lou Lan. Dealing with Lang Ya land spirit earned him huge amounts of immortal essence stones, it was the source of the strength to resolve Fang Yuan’s problems.

The absolutely terrible situation was alleviated slightly. It was like a land of darkness with dark clouds looming, after Fang Yuan’s immense efforts, he managed to create an opening, allowing sunlight to pierce into the land of darkness.

Right now in front of him, was another problem, and this problem had to be resolved quickly.

That was the feeding of Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan was not worried about feeding mortal Gu. But feeding Immortal Gu was becoming a huge issue.

All in all, Fang Yuan had too many Immortal Gu, he had Spring Autumn Cicada, Fixed Immortal Travel, Calamity Beckoning, Delight in Water and Mountain, Worldly Wave Trace, Rising Azure Cloud, Cleanse Soul, Connect Luck, and Woman’s Heart.

Ordinary Gu Immortals did not even have a single Immortal Gu. Fang Yuan had nine.

This was a great boon, as well as a huge burden.

Spring Autumn Cicada was fine, it consumed the water in the river of time, it did not need feeding.

Fixed Immortal Travel was once fed with one bead of green grape immortal essence a year ago in central continent time, that could last for six years. But one year in central continent was not one year of time passing by for Fixed Immortal Travel. During this time it was in Imperial Court blessed land, Fang Yuan’s aperture, and Hu Immortal blessed land, all of these had faster time flow than central continent.

And this six years was a theoretical number, the more Fang Yuan activated Fixed Immortal Travel, the more this time would shrink.

Right now, although Fixed Immortal Travel could still hold on for a while, it was close to needing to be fed again.

The remaining Immortal Gu were troublesome.

These recent days, Fang Yuan had been investigating and finally obtained crucial information.

Calamity beckoning Immortal Gu’s food was the black blood of the desolate beast, six headed snake.

Delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu needed large amounts of earth qi, water qi, and some laughter stones.

Worldly wave trace Gu needed tens of thousands of underworld jellyfish, as well as thousands of deepsea lightning eels.

Rising azure cloud Gu needed the dragon scale of the desolate beast, cloud dragon, as well as tens of thousands of eyeballs from wind scythe birds.

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu needed the flesh and blood of over ten thousand white lotus giant silkworm Gu.

Connect luck Immortal Gu needed five thousand kilograms of sand from the resting area of the ancient desolate beast, worldly sand gull.

As for the poison path Immortal Gu, Woman’s Heart, Lang Ya land spirit had earlier said that it fed on women’s hearts. This Gu combined nurturing and refinement, the more hearts used to feed it, the stronger the poison.

“Among these Gu worms, calamity beckoning Gu was just refined, it already needs feeding and is very weak now. The Immortal Gu, Delight in Water and Mountain and Worldly Wave Trace, are components of the Immortal Gu House Water Pavilion, they had been inside Imperial Court blessed land all these years and have been fed well. Cleanse Soul, Connect Luck, Woman’s Heart and Rising Azure Cloud were all hibernating inside true inheritance secluded domain, during these many years, Giant Sun’s will had only fed them half of the resources they needed. Now that they are out of the true inheritance secluded domain, they have woken up fully and are extremely hungry, they need food.”

“Thankfully, I passed Rising Azure Cloud to Lang Ya land spirit, with him feeding it, it will not die of hunger. I have also left two Immortal Gu, Landscape as Before and Man as Before, with Tai Bai Yun Sheng, that’s his problem to deal with.” Fang Yuan analyzed.

Even so, the pressure on him was quite intense.

Feeding Immortal Gu was not merely a question of immortal essence stones.

This world was not like Earth, Earth was a highly commercialized society, as long as one had money, they could buy nearly anything.

But in the Gu world, the economy was not developed, there were monopolies in many markets, and countless precious and rare resources. Immortal essence stones were a hard currency, but they could not serve all purposes.

For example, looking at the food he needed, the desolate beasts six headed snake and cloud dragon, as well as the ancient desolate beast worldly sand gull, they were hard to come by and had great strength equivalent to Gu Immortals.

Although treasure yellow heaven occasionally sold the flesh, bones and other parts of desolate beasts, they showed up infrequently and would be purchased within moments when they were available in the market.

Even earth qi and water qi were not easy to extract.

White lotus giant silkworm Gu and laughter stones were very rare goods, they were hardly seen in treasure yellow heaven.

In contrast, Woman’s Heart was much easier to feed, although it was slightly troublesome, the difficulty was lower.

There was another crucial point, that was time.

Fang Yuan did not have ample time to slowly prepare these foods.

Thus, he had no choice but to purchase these rare resources in treasure yellow heaven, even though this would make the price higher, and wisdom path Gu Immortals would be left with huge amounts of traces to make their deductions.

But Fang Yuan was now known as Eight Arm Immortal, for the time being, no one would connect it to Hu Immortal blessed land.

Even if they would, he had to do this.

After all, the survival of the Immortal Gu was much more important than being suspected!

Of course, he had asked Lang Ya land spirit long ago, as well as Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan, unfortunately he did not get ideal results from them.

Lang Ya land spirit had once owned laughter stones, but he had used them up when refining Gu.

And several years ago, there was a Gu Immortal who returned from eastern sea, sending Fairy Li Shan a batch of deepsea lightning eels. But there were only a hundred of them, and they were merely used as ornamental attractions. Later, because Fairy Li Shan did not take good care of them, all of these eels died.

But this gave Fang Yuan a reminder.

Eastern sea...

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, when he was a mortal, he traveled over the five regions, he went everywhere and had once stayed in eastern sea for a while.

Eastern sea had abundant resources, the most in the five regions, even central continent could not compare to it.

Moreover, over these recent years, eastern sea had been in turmoil, there were many opportunities available there, and the benefits would be huge too.

If Fang Yuan had not been stuck with Dang Hun mountain’s problem, and due to Tai Bai Yun Sheng being the easiest path to resolving it, his first choice would have been eastern sea.

Thinking about Lan Xu blessed land, blue dragon whale, rainbow island and so on, Fang Yuan made his decision.

He summoned Tai Bai Yun Sheng: “Old Bai, how has your cultivation been?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng laughed heartily, he could not stop talking: “Its great, my progress is very smooth. I helped Lang Ya land spirit repair his cloud soil and earned three immortal essence stones. Next, I restored several rivers and earned another two immortal essence stones. I then bought the defensive killer move nine cloud ring, spending two immortal essence stones. Finally, I bought seeds of float ball tea in treasure yellow heaven, spending another stone.”

“Float ball tea seeds are very common, you actually spent an entire immortal essence stone, it seems you bought a huge quantity. But your choice is correct, I have seen your blessed land, there are far more time path resources than space path resources. Float ball tea grows slowly and floats in the air. You can maximize your advantages and minimize your weaknesses. In a few years, when the float ball tea plants mature, you will be able to reap the harvest and sell them.” Fang Yuan evaluated.

“That is exactly the case.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng patted his leg: “After the float ball tea plants reach a certain scale, I will bring in a group of jade hummingbirds, developing my blessed land with that as the base.”

Fang Yuan looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng, saying: “Jade hummingbirds are mutated beasts, the price of a jade hummingbird group will not be cheap.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng replied calmly: “I have already thought about it, from now on I will use Landscape as Before to earn immortal essence stones, and learn from Fairy Li Shan’s example. I believe my Landscape as Before is not inferior to Fairy Li Shan’s mountain pledge Gu.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “You have landscape as before Gu, wherever you go, you will be extremely popular.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng sighed: “It is a pity that showing myself in public is inconvenient now, we are the only survivors after Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed. Right now, we are already considered the top suspects by northern plains’ Gu Immortals. If we are exposed, the consequences would be unthinkable. Also, the most crucial witness, Ma Hong Yun, has vanished, it seems a certain Gu Immortal is holding him captive, it is possible that we might have already been targeted by some Gu Immortals.”

“That is why I think that eastern sea would be a good place for you to go.” At this point, Fang Yuan finally stated his true intentions.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 673: Thousand Wish Tree

“Eastern sea?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was surprised.

“Right. There are many sea areas in eastern sea, the culture and style there are greatly different from northern plains. You will certainly have great benefits when you go there. Especially in one of the sea areas, air bubble sea. This sea produces abundant air bubble fish but due to a fight between Gu Immortals recently, it has been poisoned. The owners of this sea area, Ni clan, Qiu clan and Ba clan are having headaches because of this.” Fang Yuan explained.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng immediately became excited: “This feels like a major business opportunity. Junior brother, you are right, we can’t move in northern plains but we can go to eastern sea. There are regional walls between the five regions, and the higher one’s cultivation, the more difficult it is to cross these barriers. But we have Fixed Immortal Travel and can thus ignore the regional walls.”

“However, Old Bai, you need to be careful. Gu Immortals might not be able to casually travel between regions, but the disturbance in northern plains is too large and is already known by the other four regions, too. Central continent’s ten great sects have deep foundations and even their own pawns in all the other regions. I had planned to seize Immortal Gu Dark Limit before going to eastern sea, but there has not been much progress at Hei Lou Lan’s side. Danger will lurk everywhere in this trip, you need to be extremely careful.” Fang Yuan sincerely reminded.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was deeply moved: “I understand, but junior brother, you don’t need to worry. I have been wandering around in northern plains for most of my life, I might not be too skilled in a head-on confrontation but I still have more than enough ability to protect myself.”

Fang Yuan nodded. He also acknowledged this point, otherwise he would not have arranged for Tai Bai Yun Sheng to go to eastern sea.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was experienced and knowledgeable along with being a flying master, thus his escaping ability was top-notch. Moreover, he now possessed a formidable cloud path defensive killer move, nine cloud ring.

“When you enter eastern sea, don’t immediately make dealings with Ni, Qiu and Bai clans, instead proceed to Hai Shi blessed land. Among the five great trading markets in the world, treasure yellow heaven is first and Hai Shi blessed land is second. Hai Shi blessed land should have missions for saving air bubble sea, you can then use this pretext to get in contact with the three clans and save a lot of trouble.” Fang Yuan reminded.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng agreed: “I will definitely go make a trip to Hai Shi blessed land.”

Fang Yuan continued: “I need some specific food to feed my Immortal Gu: tens of thousands of underworld jellyfish and thousands of deepsea lightning eels. These two are specialities of eastern sea. Also, see if there are any laughter stones in Hai Shi blessed land, the blood of the desolate beast, six headed snake, and cloud dragon scales. This is the list of items I require, here.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng accepted the list and revealed a serious expression: “Junior brother, your matters are my matters as well. I will be sure to settle this with all my effort.”

Fang Yuan gave a bright smile: “Old Bai, just do your best. Before departing, I hope you can make a trip to Dang Hun mountain and consume some guts Gu. This Gu is among the highest quality Gu around for strengthening one’s soul, it is always best to be prepared just in case.”

“Junior brother, here we go again! I have said it many times, these guts Gu are your property, how can I covet your wealth as a senior brother!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng immediately refused. This was already his sixth time refusing such an offer.

Fang Yuan was already his benefactor, he, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, placed this favor deep in his heart, never to be forgotten, so how could he covet Fang Yuan’s guts Gu?

Fang Yuan mumbled before conceding: “Strengthening the soul is extremely beneficial for you, how about this, I will sell these guts Gu to you for one immortal essence stone. It just so happens that I lack immortal essence stones to buy food for my Immortal Gu.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng wanted to say something but Fang Yuan waved his hand and continued: “Senior brother, danger will be lurking on all sides during this trip to eastern sea, I hope you will arm and prepare yourself properly, otherwise, if some accident occurs to you, I will feel guilty. I try to pay attention to all details when I do something, I hope you can understand.”

His words contained sincerity and genuine friendship.

Especially when Fang Yuan called him ‘senior brother’ which he rarely said, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s eyes reddened, he rapidly blinked his eyes and breathed out: “Alright, I understand your intent, junior brother, we will make this transaction.”

A day later, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had made all the preparations and left Hu Immortal blessed land together with Fang Yuan, arriving at eastern sea.

“I will hand over both moving perspective cup Gu and stargate Gu to you. We will maintain contact frequently, if there is any significant matter, please inform me beforehand.” Fang Yuan reminded.

“Junior brother, go back without any worries. If Immortal Crane Sect attacks, don’t forget to call me!”

Fang Yuan nodded and without saying anymore, he activated Fixed Immortal Travel, disappearing from the spot.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng stored the stargate Gu and looked at the surrounding sea, after identifying the direction, he rapidly began flying.

When he appeared again, Fang Yuan had arrived at western desert.

He was standing on an exceedingly tall sand dune, all around him was a boundless desert with countless sand dunes extending everywhere.

The scorching sun shone down, there was no wind and the temperature was so high it made one have the feeling of being broiled. But Fang Yuan had an immortal zombie body and did not feel even a trace of warmth.

The coarse and fine sand granules shone like gold under the sunlight.

Fang Yuan looked at the sand dune under him. This sand dune was several times taller than other sand dunes. It shone with golden light and its contours were soft and smooth; the whole sand dune was a scene of nothingness except for a short tree on the peak.

This tree was not even eight feet tall, the branches were short, thin and twisted like monstrous claws, making it look extremely ugly. But the strange thing was, it had an enormous shadow of light.

This shadow of light was extremely large, reaching five or six hundred feet. The shadow of light was like a flourishing tree with many branches and leaves. The tree branches were white as snow, the flowers were pink like cherries. There were clusters of small fruits among the floral leaves that had yet to ripen, with all sorts of colors.

This tree's origin was huge; it was an ancient desolate tree, named thousand wish.

It would finish growing in three hundred years, flower at its six hundredth year and bear fruit at the nine hundredth year.

The number of fruits it produced was always precisely one thousand.

Right when the fruits completely ripened, people could bring Gu recipes and make a wish under the tree. If the wish succeeded, the fruits would open and the corresponding Gu worms would fly out.

These Gu worms could be mortal Gu and also could be Immortal Gu!

But if a wish for Immortal Gu succeeded, the amount of fruits would decrease accordingly.

In Fang Yuan's previous life, this desolate tree had caused a huge battle among western desert's Gu Immortals. Finally, several super forces came to an agreement and tried to partition this tree between themselves.

But on the day the fruits ripened and fell down, all sizes of forces, big and small, allied and burst through the blockade created by the super forces, causing chaos throughout the place.

A lone cultivator rank five Gu Master, with the surname Han and name Li, unexpectedly became the first to arrive under the thousand wish tree, his wish gave him a space path Immortal Gu named Phantom Heaven.

Fang Yuan was a rank four Gu Master back then who sought to obtain profits in the chaos. After experiencing great dangers and difficulties, he arrived before the ancient desolate tree, and was also able to obtain a Gu worm.

But this Gu worm was only a rare rank four Gu.

Even so, this rare rank four Gu gave a tremendous boost to Fang Yuan's battle strength.

"Back then, I had to fight through such a tight siege defense to arrive in front of this tree, and the fruits were already sparse by then, only fifty or sixty were left. I have now arrived here in this life, but it's too early. The fruits still require over two hundred years to completely mature."

Fang Yuan's heart was deeply moved and he smacked this ancient desolate tree, but the thousand wish tree did not even budge.

This desolate tree had astonishing defense and could continue to stand tall against the attacks of Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan had a deep impression of it.

The regretful thing was that not long after that chaotic battle, Xi clan's rank eight ancestor, Xi Jian Ping, exited his seclusion and suppressed all the experts forcefully, his might awing the entirety of the great desert; the thousand wish tree was taken away by Xi clan and planted at Xi clan’s blessed land. Since then, Fang Yuan had not been able to see the thousand wish tree again.

Fang Yuan did not have methods to transplant the thousand wish tree, even if he had, he did not have any place to plant it in.

Hu Immortal blessed land had a terrain of grassland and not desert terrain.

The thousand wish tree required this kind of extreme environment to survive. Moreover, if the thousand wish tree was moved impulsively now, the floral leaves along with the thousand wish fruits would wither and fall, wasting the previous millennium of effort.

Fang Yuan walked down the sand dune and left this place.

Only after walking for a whole half a day and countless li, he had truly left the range of the thousand wish tree.

Fang Yuan glanced back; there was only flat desert with no signs of sand dunes let alone the gorgeous shadow of light of the five to six hundred feet tall tree.

He was not surprised.

This thousand wish tree had an ability of shrouding a radius of a huge distance in illusion. When leaving this illusion, one must leave on foot. And approaching it was extremely troublesome; the illusion would emerge repeatedly and could even make people move around the same spot without realizing.

“It was because of this that I and others could fish for benefits.” Fang Yuan smiled. He had Fixed Immortal Travel so he could ignore this illusion.

However, the goal of this trip was not this ancient desolate tree.

It was instead the person who had gained enormous benefits from a thousand wish fruit and became a Gu Immortal expert later.

This person’s name was Han Li.

“Han Li was a mortal. But after repeated fortuitous encounters, his nature became steadfast and courageous. His starting point was much lower than mine, when he had just started his cultivation, I was already a rank three Gu Master in southern border. But at the time of my self-detonation, he had already become a Gu Immortal at the peak of rank seven, a famous powerhouse of western desert. Many influential figures of central continent’s ten great sects suffered losses from him. But right now, he is only just a child. According to the <Biography of Han Li>, he should be living in a mortal hamlet near Huang clan.”

Fang Yuan’s target was Han Li.

Ever since Fang Yuan understood the effect of connect luck Immortal Gu, he had intended to use his rebirth advantage to get rid of the weakness of Spring Autumn Cicada wearing down his luck.

He planned meticulously and ruled out many people, leaving behind only a few targets.

Han Li was one of them.

These targets were people who would attain great success in the future, having large potential, as well as huge luck.

People like Hunting King Sun Gan of southern border, who would only be at rank five all their lives, were simply ignored by Fang Yuan.

Little Immortal Xing Luo was a Gu Immortal but her luck was not good and she would at most reach a small scale of fame, Fang Yuan ignored her too.

There was Shi Chao Yu, who would be able to become a rank seven Gu Immortal, but his journey was filled with ups and down, his luck was definitely not good and he was also excluded.

Only people like Han Li and Ma Hong Yun, who had smooth journeys with repeated fortuitous encounters, were Fang Yuan’s targets.

However, Ma Hong Yun’s whereabouts were unknown at present and Fairy Li Shan was exerting her full efforts to investigate it; Fang Yuan’s first target thus became Han Li.

After leaving the thousand wish tree, Fang Yuan used mortal Gu to disguise as a man with a yellowish face and a robust body. Then he directly flew towards Huang clan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 674: Monolith Luck

The entirety of western desert was a vast desert. Oases were like stars in the sky, shining among this sea of sand.

Humans lived here by relying on the oases.

Western desert, Sha Jing oasis.

Huang clan as an upper tier force had hundreds of years of history here, they occupied the most important resources at the center of this oasis.

At the outer parts of the oasis, there were small sized forces that submitted to this Huang clan.

At the even further outer areas, near the fringe of Sha Jing oasis, there were mortal villages. These mortals had a tough life, they had huge numbers and were all under the control of Huang clan and other forces of Gu Masters.

In these villages, there was a Han village, near Han village, there was a small natural grassland.

Although it was called a grassland, it was much more desolate than northern plains, there was sand everywhere and blades of red dagger grass were sharp as swords, stabbing into the deep parts of the sand, trying to absorb the meager water content.

A group of children were bending their backs, holding sickles as they laboriously cut down these grasses.

These children were not even ten years old, but they had to come out and work, to make money for the family, this was common in mortal families.

The dagger grass had sharp edges, these children were all wearing leather gloves, but there was one without gloves.

This bare handed child sniffed his mucus as he held the sickle, cutting the dagger grass and placed them into the basket on his back.

The radiance of the setting sun was still very hot, these children were all breathing roughly as it shined on them, sweat pouring on their backs.

Finally, the sky turned darker, as the sun was at the horizon, only half of it could be seen now, as the children stopped their work.

“Quickly leave, it is night time, the small ghost jackals are coming out to hunt for food.” The child with the largest body frame spoke, like he was their leader.

“How much did you gather? Wow, that’s a lot!” As usual, they started comparing with each other.

“I ate until I was full today, that’s why I have strength, hehe.”

“But the grass that you cut is still less than Han Li.”

“Hey, Han Li, you are amazing, you can cut the grass without wearing gloves, yet there are no injuries on your hands, how did you do it?” A small lass with a ponytail asked.

Han Li giggled.

The children returned to the village together, they were talking excitedly along the way, when they returned to the village, they split up, returning to their homes.

Han Li returned home too, he pushed the broken wooden door and realized that his parents were not back yet.

His father was a farmer, he was planting wire cotton at the west part of the village, he had been plowing the fields these days, going out early and returning home late.

His mother had a job that everyone in the village admired. Every day she would enter the outer area of the oasis, doing odd jobs and cleaning for a small sized Gu Master clan.

Han Li stood beside one quern-stone, he poured the dagger grass in his basket inside, then he picked up a wooden pole and ground the grass down.

He put in a lot of effort, before long, he was full of sweat.

After the grass was turned into paste, he took out a bag and poured a portion of the rice husks inside into the quern-stone as well.

He mixed them together, creating a paste-like food ingredient.

He poured the food into a wooden basin.

Next, he brought the wooden basin to the side of the house.

There was a flimsy looking stable beside the house, inside were three fat sand scorpions.

These sand scorpions were fat like pigs, they were no threat at all. Upon hearing Han Li’s footsteps, the three fat sand scorpions rushed out from the shadows of the stable.

“Go ahead and eat, these were all cut down by me painstakingly.” Han Li flipped over the wooden basin, pouring the paste-like food on the ground.

The three fat sand scorpions surrounded the food and ate, they chewed loudly and made a humming noise.

“Eat, eat, eat more and grow faster...” Han Li’s small body was sprawled on the stable, he looked at these sand scorpions as he muttered.

These fat sand scorpions were not Gu, they were ordinary creatures.

But the meat of the scorpion was plump and delicious, the money obtained after selling the meat would be a huge sum for the entire mortal family.

To Han Li’s family, these three fat sand scorpions were their most important assets. Thus, even if Han Li did not get to eat dinner himself, he had to feed these three fat sand scorpions.

Gulp, gulp, gulp...

At this time, Han Li’s stomach started growling.

Han Li jumped down from the fence, he rubbed his tummy and returned home, starting to cook dinner.

He had to cook dinner for his family every day.

The rice they ate was the most common sand rice in western desert, the texture of this rice was very bad, it was hard to swallow. But it was easy to cultivate, it was the main crop that mortals ate.

As Han Li worked next to the stove, he did not know that someone had been watching him for half the day.

As night descended, at the graveyard that was several li away from Han village, Fang Yuan was sitting still like a statue.

The reason he chose this place was because of how deserted it was.

At night, Fang Yuan came here and activated up to a thousand investigative Gu, he put the whole of Han village under his supervision.

The primeval essence of Gu Immortals was unlimited, as long as they had enough Gu worms, they could do things at the efficiency of thousands of mortals or more.

In the darkness, Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes, he assessed: “The age fits, it should be this kid.”

As he thought about it, he activated the rank five luck inspection Gu.

Looking from afar, he saw that above Han village there was a lump of a luck cloud. This luck cloud’s size was not big, it was grey-white and looked very thin.

This was a collection of luck, these villagers had a sense of belonging, thus they felt that they were a collective body, resulting in their luck gathering together.

Fang Yuan looked below the luck cloud.

Smoky traces of luck were rising from the villagers, after rising for two hundred meters, they merged into the luck cloud.

And among the traces of luck in the luck cloud, there was one especially eye-catching portion of luck.

This luck was like a huge stone, it was floating in the air above Han Li’s family, a hundred steps away from the ground. There was a crack on the surface of the stone, and a trace of luck was leaking from that crack, it had a golden color and was rising up, fusing into the collective luck cloud.

“What luck is this?” Fang Yuan looked in amazement.

He did not obtain the luck path true inheritance, he was quite unfamiliar with the meaning of the different forms of luck.

For the time being, he decided to name this form of luck, calling it monolith luck.

Only Han Li was at his home right now, seeing this, Fang Yuan could confirm that Han Li was the future rank seven Gu Immortal, the guy with countless fortuitous encounters.

Fang Yuan then tried to look above him, but saw nothing.

“What a pity, after becoming an immortal zombie, I cannot detect my own luck anymore, unless I get the rank six luck inspection Gu. But who knows how my luck is now? Is it still the black coffin luck?” Fang Yuan muttered to himself, he had always been very curious towards luck.

But just as he was about to take out connect luck Gu, he heard someone shouting: “Little thief Ling Hu, you are hiding here, do you think I, Plump Lady, can’t find you! I chased you for countless miles, quickly return my immortal essence stones!”

Fang Yuan was secretly shocked, he turned around and looked, only to see a human figure made of moving sand, shouting at him from far away.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank, he shouted: “Plump Lady? You got the wrong person, I am not the person you are chasing.”

“Bullshit! Little thief Ling Hu, everyone knows you are an expert in disguise, do you think that I would not recognize you when you disguise your appearance like this! You have some guts, stealing from me, I will beat you till your intestines are blown out!!”

Not only was the human shaped moving sand figure shouting, at the same time, there was a furious growl in the air as well.

The voice was like thunder, it pierced heaven and earth. The entire oasis was shocked by this and went into chaos!

Fang Yuan frowned deeply, he did not think that by disguising as a normal human and hiding his zombie appearance, he would unexpectedly be treated as a thief by someone else.

He stood up and turned around to look.

Only to see that at the north-east area, yellow sand was flying in the air and intense winds were blowing, the sound of the wind was like the roaring of beasts, continuous and loud.

The yellow sand on the formerly peaceful ground was whipped up like tidal waves in the sea.

The sand waves attacked one after another.

Fang Yuan took a deep look at the monolith luck, before moving his body and charging towards the attacker head on.

Soon after, he saw the culprit.

This was an extremely fat female Gu Immortal, she had a thick waist and broad shoulders, she was like a water tank. She stood on the yellow sand waves as she arrogantly and furiously looked at Fang Yuan.

She stretched out a finger, scolding: “Little thief Ling Hu, you...”

Just as she spoke, Fang Yuan attacked!

“Heavenly zombie transformation!” Fang Yuan purposely shouted, before removing his disguise, showing his immortal zombie appearance.

At once, a six meter tall monster with a green face and sharp fangs, blood red eyes, eight monstrous arms and bulging muscles appeared before the female Gu Immortal, Plump Lady.

He looked ruthless and terrifying, radiating killing intent.

Plump Lady was shocked, she said: “You...”

Fang Yuan stepped on the ground, causing a loud sound, the ground was cracking under his pressure, as he flew towards Plump Lady like a cannonball.

Plump Lady saw Fang Yuan’s ruthless charge and her heart shook, she quickly raised her arms.

Swish swish swish!

Three huge sand waves immediately rose into the air, reaching hundreds of meters in height.

The huge waves came crashing, Fang Yuan snickered as he raised his speed, crashing towards them.

Bam bam bam!

In the blink of an eye, he scattered the three huge sand waves and appeared before Plump Lady.

Plump Lady’s heart was pounding, she finally realized she had found the wrong person. But she was someone with a fiery temper, Fang Yuan’s fierce and ferocious actions aroused her anger.

“I’ll let you taste my killer move — martial sand armor!” She shouted loudly, as two traces of yellow sand gushed out from her ears, the sand quickly gathered and enveloped her entire body.

In a few breaths of time, she had turned into a sand giant that was about the size of Fang Yuan, but she had a thicker body.

Fang Yuan charged forward, as the sand giant roared, slamming with both its arms, displaying unrivalled fearlessness.

Boom boom!

With two loud bangs, the eight armed immortal zombie’s fists met with the sand giant’s.

The sand giant’s fist scattered into yellow sand, while Fang Yuan’s fists were fractured.

Plump Lady took a step back, as the scattered yellow sand merged to create the sand giant’s fists again. Fang Yuan, however, took a huge step forward, while his fractured fists were recovering rapidly, his remaining six fists slammed at the sand giant.

Crash crash crash...

At once, the two engaged in fierce combat, yellow sand was flying in the air as the sound of bones breaking could be heard continuously.

Plump Lady was more shocked as she fought on: “Who is this person? Why is he so insane like a demon, he is even more ruthless and fearless than me!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 675: Dead

Fang Yuan laughed wickedly, his eight arms turned into fists and slammed, they opened into palms, slashing and smacking, they also became claws or piercing fingers, he showed his immense attainment in close combat.

Plump Lady relied on martial sand armor’s thick defense normally to engage in her relentless assaults, she was used to bullying other Gu Immortals. But in front of Fang Yuan, she was at the losing end.

Fang Yuan’s fist shadows were flying, he moved nimbly as Plump Lady desperately dealt with his attacks, she could only parry his attacks but not retaliate.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan saw an opening and got close to her, his eight arms were like pythons coiling around her, as his two monstrous claws destroyed the sand giant’s two arms like a drill.

The sand giant roared, knocking its fat tummy towards him.

Fang Yuan snickered in his heart, he had been expecting this, his figure moved quickly as he flew to the sky above the sand giant.

His left knee slammed towards it, and with a bang, the sand giant’s head was scattered.

Before the yellow sand regenerated, Fang Yuan’s right leg chopped at it like a battle axe.

Bam!

The yellow sand scattered, as the defensive killer move was broken, Plump Lady vomited a mouthful of blood, collapsing to the ground like a falling meteor.

Fang Yuan tore the yellow sand open, like an eagle scavenging for food, he flew down from the sky, bringing the intense winds with him, he was bent on killing Plump Lady.

Plump Lady who was falling saw Fang Yuan chasing her and showed an expression of fear.

She attempted to pull some distance from him, but Fang Yuan’s speed was faster.

Bam!!

With a loud explosion, Fang Yuan charged down from a high altitude, directly slamming Plump Lady into a deep part of the desert.

Large amounts of yellow sand was sent flying, the huge impact created a large circular crater, it was a thousand steps wide and about thirty meters deep.

“Oh?” Fang Yuan stood at the pit of the crater, he had a surprised look as Plump Lady’s ‘corpse’ suddenly disintegrated into a pile of sand.

At the same time, he heard her shrill laughter from the air: “Oaf, I will let you taste my attacking killer move — Burial Dragon Sand Coffin!”

As she said this, the yellow sand around the crater gushed down like tidal waves, filling up the entire round crater.

Fang Yuan could not dodge in time, he was buried within.

The surface of the desert was as flat as a mirror, Plump Lady’s mouth was oozing with blood as she sat on a lump of yellow sand, her palms were placed together as her eyes were staring wide open, activating her killer move maniacally.

On the surface of the mirror-like desert, the sand statue of a certain horned dragon appeared.

This horned dragon statue coiled around, the dragon’s head bit its tail, gathering the surrounding sand and forming a great force to suppress Fang Yuan who was under the sand.

The intense battlefield had turned peaceful once more.

“Huff!” Plump Lady let out a breath of turbid air, she wiped her sweat as she finally relaxed: “It is over. My burial dragon sand coffin can form an incomparable pressure, emitted on my enemy in all directions. Once my enemy is trapped, they cannot move until they are turned into meat paste. In the past, I forcefully suppressed a desolate beast, evil dragon, not to mention restraining a lone zombie?”

Plump Lady muttered to herself, her words had great effect as she quickly calmed herself down.

But right at this moment, there was a loud explosion from beneath the ground —

Bang!

“What sound is that?” Plump Lady’s body shook, she became nervous again.

Bang!

The loud bang could be heard again, it was like there was a giant underground beating a drum.

“Damn it, it is my burial dragon sand coffin!” Plump Lady became alert, she stood up abruptly, but her vision turned dark, her body was swaying as she almost fell onto the yellow sand on the ground.

She was indeed injured.

When Fang Yuan tore the martial sand armor, his strong punch had heavily injured her.

At the crucial moment, she used her killer move as a body double, attracting Fang Yuan’s attention as she hid inside the yellow sand that was flying all over the place.

After that, she used her killer move burial dragon sand coffin and trapped Fang Yuan underneath the sand.

“Impossible! Even a desolate beast, evil dragon met its end under my killer move’s power. This killer move is worth at least three immortal essence stones in treasure yellow heaven!” Plump Lady spoke to herself.

Bang!

Right at this moment, there was another explosion.

The originally fearsome and powerful evil dragon statue shook, it was covered in cracks as sand fell off the statue.

Plump Lady’s heart shuddered along with it, she stared with her eyes wide open, her gaze was fixed on the desert below her feet.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The loud sound descended again, it became more and more frequent, the ground was shaking along with it.

Plump Lady’s mouth was dry, her heart was pounding from shock as she felt that her killer move was not trapping a person, she was trapping a fearsome monster that was even fiercer than the desolate beast evil dragon!

Bam!

The huge dragon statue could suppress him no longer, it completely disintegrated.

The surface of the desert swelled up like a tumor, sand burst out and rained down, as a huge figure appeared before Plump Lady once again.

It was a moonless night, winds were blowing intensely, giving off an eerie and scary feeling.

An eight armed monster that was six meters in height, Fang Yuan who had a green face and sharp fangs was like a demon god incarnate, he bought fear and nightmares to this world.

Different from before, he was covered in a black armor, the armor was spiky and looked very fearsome. It was extremely thick and could make Fang Yuan’s tall and mighty heavenly zombie body become even more imposing, his demonic aura was oozing everywhere.

This was Fang Yuan’s defensive killer move!

If Plump Lady lived for another four hundred years, she would recognize this: During the chaotic five regions war, this was the most common defensive killer move, ‘hair armor’. It had the rank five indestructible steel mane Gu as its core, with several hundred Gu worms as assistance, it allowed a Gu Immortal to grow an absurd amount of hair all over their body, to form body armor. Not only was this cheap and efficient, it had great defense and the Gu worms used were easy to replenish if they were damaged.

After Fang Yuan became an immortal zombie, his hair had become tough as steel, when he used hair armor, the effect was greater than most ordinary bodies of Gu Immortals.

Using hair armor and his immortal zombie body, he took on burial dragon sand coffin directly without taking any injury!

This killer move had appeared four hundred years in advance, Plump Lady could not recognize it, but it did not hinder her from evaluating this killer move’s value.

“This defensive killer move is stronger than my martial sand armor. If it is sold in treasure yellow heaven, it would be sold at two and a half immortal essence stones!”

Thinking of this, Plump Lady’s battle intent fell again: “Sir, I am Mo clan’s Gu Immortal, I am chasing a thief, I mistook you for him. I believe that you are not Ling Hu Xu now, this is a misunderstanding! It is said that friends are often made after a fight, we should...”

Fang Yuan laughed coldly: “Hehehe, interesting. Mo clan’s Gu Immortal, if I kill you, it will surely be very enjoyable.”

This was the first time Fang Yuan had spoken in this battle. His voice was hoarse and terrible to listen to, Plump Lady shuddered when she listened to him.

Mo clan was a super force in western desert, an overlord that dominated a territory.

But Fang Yuan was fearless, he had no consideration for Mo clan at all.

Plump Lady’s heart sank to rock bottom: “Where did this demonic cultivator come from? Such incredible battle strength, high quality among rank six Gu Immortals, yet he is so arrogant and ruthless!”

Next, Plump Lady saw a pair of wings growing on Fang Yuan’s back, his wings were black that of a bat’s, black and huge, they flapped!

The bat wings vanished like an illusion, but it caused Fang Yuan’s body to shoot forward at lightning speed.

“So fast! This is a killer move especially for movement!!” Plump Lady’s pupils shrunk, she had made up her mind to run.

She screamed shrilly, her plump face could not conceal the immense fear and shock she felt.

Seeing that Fang Yuan was getting close, Plump Lady’s body burst out with a dazzling yellow light. The yellow light caused her body to move back rapidly, she escaped in the opposite direction at lightning speed.

Fang Yuan activated the movement killer move ‘light illusion bat wings’ again, but could not catch up to her.

A few breaths later, Plump Lady vanished into the horizons.

“Plump Lady suffered a huge loss, she even used her killer move light sand escape, her foundation will definitely be affected. This guy is so absurd, he actually fought till Plump Lady escaped!” Far away, Ling Hu Xu hid deeply within a sand dune as he suppressed his aura, not daring to show any flaws in his concealment.

“She escaped quickly.” Fang Yuan snorted, he stopped at the battlefield and used investigative Gu to search.

Ling Hu Xu did not dare to breathe loudly, he felt that the investigative Gu’s aura had been sweeping the area where he was hiding in.

Fang Yuan searched for a long time, but seeing that there was no effect, he left.

“He’s finally gone, eh, weird! Why is my heart in so much unrest!” Ling Hu Xu had just wanted to come out, when suddenly his heart shook and he changed his mind.

Time had slowly passed and it was already late at night.

A figure moved like a phantom, descending from a high altitude, it was Fang Yuan.

He had purposely left, turning around and flying into the clouds, secretly inspecting the ground. He had waited for a long time but did not see anyone.

He snorted coldly, giving up on his search and returning to Sha Jing oasis.

“So close, so close! This demon is really scheming and cunning, thankfully I was careful, otherwise, I would’ve fallen for his trap.” Ling Hu Xu curled up in the sand nearby, breaking out in cold sweat from fear.

In the darkness, his eyes were moving randomly: “What is the origin of this demon? Where did he come from? What unspeakable secrets does he have?”

Ling Hu Xu was extremely curious: “But this demon’s investigation methods cannot discover me, should I trail him and see what he is up to?”

But when he thought about Fang Yuan pretending to leave and returning, his thoughts were extinguished like a candle.

“This demon is not only ruthless and cruel, he is also very crafty and cunning, I should forget about it. Anyway, the immortal essence stones are already mine...”

Ling Hu Xu discarded this thought, he did not dare to come out of the desert’s surface, he drilled underground.

He did not have much battle strength, but he had many movement killer moves, his speed underground was unexpectedly not slower than an ordinary Gu Immortal’s flight.

He chose the opposite direction as Fang Yuan and left.

Fang Yuan returned to Sha Jing oasis once again.

Lights lit up the oasis, as loud noises resounded everywhere.

Even though Fang Yuan had purposely gone far away, the battle of the Gu Immortals still caused quite the commotion, the mortals were all panic-stricken.

Fang Yuan ignored them, he used luck inspection Gu and found Han Li again.

He was extremely alert, he concealed his traces as he used connect luck Gu secretly. This time, it was smooth sailing and there were no more accidents.

The two had their luck connected, Fang Yuan could see that Han Li’s monolith luck was shrinking at an shocking pace.

Soon after, the monolith luck was filled with cracks, it crumbled.

A few breaths later, Han Li’s luck fell to an ordinary mortal’s smoke trace level.

Next, his faint gray-white smoke turned black.

“Oh no.” Fang Yuan saw this and his heart sank.

At the same time, Han Li was eating with his parents who had returned.

He was extremely hungry, he gobbled up the food.

“Eat slowly, son.” His mother laughed dotingly, she was very concerned about her son.

“Guh, guh!” Suddenly, Han Li grabbed his throat, his eyes were wide open, he choked!

“Son, quickly spit it out!” His parents were shocked, they moved frantically.

But they did not manage to save Han Li.

He was dead.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 676: Human Medicine Gu

Han Li woke up in his bed, he slowly regained consciousness and opened his eyes.

Beside his bed, his parents were kneeling on the ground, kowtowing to an elderly Gu Master non-stop, they were expressing their gratitude.

“Doctor Mo, thank you for saving our son!”

“Doctor Mo, we will remember your kindness for the rest of our lives!”

“Father, mother...” Han Li spoke with much difficulty, he muttered softly.

“My son, my precious son! You are finally awake!” Han Li’s mother heard his voice and jumped onto the bed, crying from joy.

“Little rascal, you are finally awake! Quickly thank Doctor Mo, if he was not here by chance, you would have died.” Han Li’s father was overjoyed, he quickly reminded him.

“Doctor, Doctor Mo, thank you for saving my life.” Han Li saw Doctor Mo and fear flashed across his eyes.

“Mm, I am the Gu Master that is stationed in Han village, it was natural for me to save you. You were lucky today, you met me when I was patrolling the village.” Doctor Mo laughed.

Next, he left quietly while Han Li’s parents were thanking him with all their hearts.

“Oh? This is interesting.” Fang Yuan did not leave, he was lurking nearby, watching this scene.

After he succeeding in connecting their luck, Han Li’s luck fell drastically, it rapidly turned into a thin layer of deathly black luck.

If Han Li was a Gu Master with ample strength, he could ignore this luck. But he was a mortal, and a weak child among mortals, he was immediately killed by the backlash of this deathly black luck, choking on his food.

Fang Yuan wanted to save him immediately.

He had large numbers of mortal healing Gu, a matter like choking could be easily resolved, he could be saved as long as a long time had not passed.

As long as a person is not dead, their luck would not stop. If Han Li died like this, Fang Yuan’s disastrous luck would only be alleviated for the moment, but it would continue getting worse, the root of the problem would not be solved.

If Han Li was alive, then by connecting his luck to Fang Yuan’s all the time, Fang Yuan’s horrible luck would slowly improve.

But the moment he was about to make a move, a figure jumped out of a large house in the village, rushing towards Han Li’s house.

Seeing the movement Gu he was using, this was evidently a rank two Gu Master.

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes, he silently got closer to the village, deciding to watch the event unfold.

When this rank two Gu Master arrived at Han Li’s house, he straightened his clothes and pretended to be carefree, next he ‘accidentally’ discovered Han Li choking.

Because of the pleas of Han Li’s parents, he saved Han Li and revived him.

“From their conversation, this Doctor Mo should be a healing Gu Master that is stationed in the village. But it seems that Han Li and this Doctor Mo have some secret connection.” Fang Yuan thought.

In order to control mortals, Gu Master forces would send one or two Gu Masters to look after the respective villages in turns.

Like Gu Yue Jiang Ya on Qing Mao mountain, he was this kind of stationed Gu Master.

When Han Li and his family fell asleep, Fang Yuan sneaked into the house. He went to Han Li and used a mortal Gu, causing him to fall into deeper sleep.

Fang Yuan stretched out his eight huge arms, he searched all over Han Li’s body and soon, he found something amiss.

There were quite a few Gu worms on Han Li’s body, his entire body’s flesh and blood seemed to be influenced by Gu worms.

These arrangements felt very familiar to Fang Yuan.

A weakness of a zombie was that their cognition would slow. Fang Yuan could not find the key point and had to use the wills he stored in his mind to assist in thinking.

He looked through his memories and soon found the truth: “It turns out this so called Doctor Mo is refining human medicine Gu.”

This human medicine Gu is a rank three Gu. It uses a human child as the main refinement material, taking years to slowly nurture and grow.

Once the human medicine Gu was refined, it could only be used once to increase a person’s lifespan, but it had huge drawbacks.

“That Doctor Mo is no longer young, it seems he wants to use human medicine Gu to increase his lifespan, thus he placed his sights on Han Li. No wonder Han Li could grab the leaves of the dagger grass without any gloves, that was because his body had already been modified secretly. This is also why Doctor Mo came over quickly when Han Li choked, that was because he had placed a Gu worm in Han Li’s body that could monitor him. And finally, even though Han Li choked to death, he could still be revived easily, that was because the human medicine Gu’s refinement process caused his vitality to increase greatly.” Fang Yuan realized at once.

Even though he found out Doctor Mo’s scheme, he did not do anything to stop him.

“If Doctor Mo mysteriously dies, Han village would definitely be investigated. If he does not die, in order to refine human medicine Gu, he would need to take good care of Han Li. There are still three to four years until human medicine Gu finishes refining, while I just need Han Li to be alive.”

Fang Yuan activated luck inspection Gu again, checking Han Li’s luck.

Ever since the luck connection had succeeded, Han Li’s luck had fallen drastically, his special luck was gone, becoming like that of a normal mortal, a thin layer of luck resembling faint smoke.

Fang Yuan observed for a while, noticing that the black color in Han Li’s luck had vanished, turning into a grey-white color.

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh of relief.

He summed up his experiences this time to reach a conclusion: Black color represents death, without the black color in his luck, Han Li was in no danger of dying for the moment.

As the saying goes, every cloud has a silver lining, there could be great fortune after surviving a near death experience, after Han Li’s crisis just now, his luck had been improving.

“Thinking about it, I narrowly survived a disaster in northern plains by relying on my own strength and schemes. Ever since I escaped from the wind veil of assimilation, half of my black coffin luck has most likely dissipated. But even so, Han Li was nearly killed by my luck. It seems I have to find a few more targets and connect our luck together.

Fang Yuan’s gaze shined for a bit, in the end, he secretly placed some Gu worms on Han Li’s body before leaving.

Using his superior methods, there was no way the rank two Doctor Mo could find them.

One day, if Doctor Mo tries to harm Han Li, he will definitely suffer severe consequences.

“Lad, I gave you three lifelines. From now on, you will have to rely on yourself. Hehe...”

Fang Yuan arrived silently, and left unnoticed, not leaving behind a single trace.

He first went far away from Sha Jing oasis, before activating Fixed Immortal Travel at an empty location.

At the next moment, he appeared in central continent.

A huge heavenly river flowed down from the sky, it flowed through the entirety of central continent, towards the eastern side of central continent, into eastern sea.

At the downstream parts of the heavenly river, because of the impact caused by the water, it formed a huge fertile plain.

There were abundant resources in the plain, people and nature flourished in abundance, countless small and middle sized sects were established here.

Among these sects, there was one small sect that was inconspicuous, but had quite the grand name, it was called Universal Life Academy.

Fang Yuan hid in a forest, observing them from afar.

The academy was in a mountain valley, there were only a few rooms here with only one square. It seems that they were currently holding a sect competition, as there were two stages in this square, with hundreds of Gu Masters watching below the stages.

This battle between mortal Gu Masters was extremely short, there was nothing too outstanding. But in the eyes of the spectators, it was extremely exciting.

Especially for the youngster, Hong Yi, who was standing among the crowd, this competition had great meaning.

“I have bull strength, tiger strength, and even obtained the Gu worm ‘rewind’ by chance, my battle strength is first-rate among rank two Gu Masters. During this competition, I must shock everyone with my skill and obtain the number one spot in the academy. This way, I can force my father to relent and place my mother’s memorial tablet in the ancestral hall!” Hong Yi clenched his fists, deciding in his mind.

At the same time, Fang Yuan who was far away muttered with bright shining eyes: “Found you, Hong Yi.”

This Hong Yi’s luck was not worse than Han Li, he was also a rank seven legend that appeared during the five regions chaotic war. He cultivated strength and soul path, he had exemplary talent and was extremely skilled in self-creating killer moves.

He had many fortuitous encounters, he obtained the body of an ancient rockman king, he deciphered an inheritance left behind by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, and even through a lucky coincidence managed to subdue an ancient desolate beast, white horn qilin, as his steed.

Even though he found his target, Fang Yuan did not strike immediately.

“Right now, this scene is in the middle of broad daylight, I will cause quite a commotion when I use Connect Luck, I might be discovered.”

This was not Han village.

In Han village, there was only one rank two Gu Master stationed, but here, it was an entire sect full of Gu Masters.

Not only this, there were three to four other small to mid sized forces in the valley.

In this entire plain at the downstream of the heavenly river, there were countless sects. Among these mortals, there were even some lone cultivator Gu Immortals. These Gu Immortals were all creators of the sects, if Fang Yuan used connect luck Immortal Gu here, he might be discovered by them.

“I can only wait until night when everyone is asleep. I will arrange many mortal Gu and try to conceal the area, it is worth a try...”

Fang Yuan was very experienced and cunning, he would never be lacking in patience.

When it was night time, Universal Life Academy became silent, as Fang Yuan opened his eyes: “Very good, I have arranged over ten thousand Gu worms in the vicinity of the valley, my preparations are complete. To conceal the aura of the Immortal Gu, I will need to use Connect Luck for half the night... hmm?”

Right at this moment, there was the sound of a spatial disturbance in his aperture.

A moving perspective cup Gu appeared out of nowhere in his immortal aperture.

There was a letter in the moving perspective cup Gu.

“Is Tai Bai Yun Sheng in trouble?” Fang Yuan’s consciousness entered the Gu, he soon found out that the letter did not come from Tai Bai Yun Sheng, but from Fairy Li Shan.

After the Snowy Mountain Alliance, Fang Yuan passed Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan a moving perspective cup Gu each, while he kept the other half of their respective moving perspective cup Gu.

The contents of the letter made Fang Yuan frown deeply.

This was a letter asking for help by Fairy Li Shan on Hei Lou Lan’s behalf.

Hei Lou Lan was being chased down by her father, she was in great danger.

“How can this be? Damn it!” Fang Yuan sighed deeply, because of their oath, he had to put aside his own matters and swiftly return to northern plains to assist Hei Lou Lan.

In any case, for the time being, Hong Yi was going to stay here, it would be easy for Fang Yuan to find him.

“I’ll let you off for now.” Fang Yuan hurriedly retrieved most of his Gu worms, avoiding leaving behind traces as much as possible, before he sneaked into a cave and used Fixed Immortal Travel.

At the next moment, he arrived in a secret room at the third peak of Snowy Mountain blessed land.

In the secret room, Fairy Li Shan was pacing back and forth worriedly, upon seeing Fang Yuan, she got close to him: “You are finally back! I am extremely anxious, the situation is terrible, Little Lan is being pursued by that evil scoundrel.”

“Why aren’t you helping her?” Fang Yuan frowned.

“I was going to act, but Little Lan urged me to continue hiding our connection, she did not want our relationship to be disclosed. You came alone? Where is Tai Bai Yun Sheng?”

“He has other matters now.” Fang Yuan asked again: “How many Gu Immortals are pursuing her?”

“Only two, one is Hei Cheng while the other is Xue Song Zi. I placed an investigative Gu on Hei Lou Lan, her situation is very dangerous now. Quick, I will use my thoughts to transmit the scenery to you, quickly go save her!”

Fang Yuan inspected the thoughts and used Fixed Immortal Travel. At the next moment, he appeared beside Hei Lou Lan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 677: First Battle with Hei Cheng

“Lou Lan, stop running. You are my daughter, why would I harm you? Don’t listen to other people’s defamation. We as father and daughter have a huge misunderstanding. I admit, it is true that I have the yin-yang life extension method, but this method cannot harm lives. Your mother really passed away because of the earthly calamity.” Hei Cheng floated in the air, using a tone like one who felt unjustly treated, trying to persuade Hei Lou Lan.

He wore a black robe and had fair skin, his eyes were dark and his face was like jade. He had beautiful facial features and gave off a vibrant aura, he was truly a famously handsome man among northern plains’ Gu Immortals.

When he urged Hei Lou Lan, his tone was sincere, it was overflowing with emotions, coupled with his good looks, outsiders who did not know the details might have truly believed him.

But Hei Lou Lan already had clearly seen this man’s true colors, she gritted her teeth: “Evil scum, who would believe your hypocritical lies? If the yin-yang life extension method really cannot harm lives, why don’t you let me see it? Hehe, I believe that Xue Song Zi at your side will also be very interested.”

Xue Song Zi was tall and thin, he wore blue clothes and his snowy-white hair extended to his feet, he stood beside Hei Cheng without saying a word.

He was a demonic path Gu Immortal, he controlled the seventh peak of Snowy

Mountain blessed land. Earlier, he had sponsored Ma tribe and Ma tribe lost in the Imperial Court contest, thus he was heavily suppressed by Hei tribe.

Next, in order to obtain the strength path Immortal Gu, Hei Lou Lan exposed the secret of Hei Cheng causing harm to Su Xian Er to him.

Xue Song Zi thus had a secret weapon to restrain Hei Cheng.

Hei Lou Lan had wanted to use Xue Song Zi to ruin Hei Cheng's reputation, but to think that the two of them had actually ganged up.

Upon hearing this from Hei Lou Lan, Xue Song Zi's eyes moved about as he turned around towards Hei Cheng with much interest: "Maybe I can help your daughter evaluate it?"

Hei Cheng snorted, ignoring Xue Song Zi's words. He changed his attitude, his eyes shining with cold light as he spoke to Hei Lou Lan calmly: "Daughter, you do not know what is good for you."

Hei Lou Lan spat in response to his words, but what came out was blood.

She was in her true form now, she was bathed in blood as her armor was broken, she was in a pathetic state. Her gaze however, turned more ruthless as her killing intent boiled.

She showed a mocking expression on her face: "Father? Hehe, the grand righteous path rank seven Gu Immortal, Lord Hei Cheng, actually brought along a demonic path Gu Immortal with him to coerce his daughter. If this scene was shown to the world, I wonder what would happen?"

Hei Cheng was indifferent towards such mocking words, he smiled lightly and showed his deep and unfathomable shrewdness: "Lou Lan, you have nowhere to run. You have the Great Strength True Martial Physique, it is ten times as hard for you to become a Gu Immortal compared to normal people. Without my help, you cannot become a strength path Gu Immortal."

"Hmph, kill me if you have the guts!" Hei Lou Lan showed her fierce nature, her expression turned ruthless as her aura surged: "If you force my hand, I will self-detonate! I will let all your efforts go down the drain, when your plans fail, I wonder what you can do!"

Hei Cheng laughed: "If you die, how will you avenge your mother? You've endured this and lurked for so many years, painstakingly developing, wasn't it all for revenge? Unfortunately, mortal and immortals are worlds apart, even if you have one of the ten extreme physiques and are able to bully some bottom-tier rank six Gu Immortals. For you to kill me, a rank seven Gu Immortal, hmph, delusional!"

Although he said that, Hei Cheng still felt some agitation in his heart.

Hei Lou Lan pointed out Hei Cheng's concerns, although he had the Immortal Gu Dark Arrow, this Immortal Gu could only be used to attack.

Hei Cheng did not have capturing methods, if he forced her hand, and Hei Lou Lan self-detonates, he could not stop her.

Most importantly, such acts of harming his daughter could not be known to the public, he could only work in secret.

Otherwise, with Hei Cheng's reputation and influence in northern plains' righteous path, he could bring at least five to six Gu Immortals with him.

But now, he only brought Xue Song Zi.

And Xue Song Zi was a demonic path Gu Immortal of Snowy Mountain. He only would care about benefits and could not be trusted. Although he seemed to be an ally, Hei Cheng from the beginning was guarding against him.

Earlier, Hei Lou Lan had exposed his secret, after Xue Song Zi obtained this weakness, he did not expose it to the public.

Destroying Hei Cheng’s reputation could decrease Hei tribe Gu Immortals’ pressure on Xue Song Zi. But if he used it to threaten Hei Cheng, he would be able to gain more benefits.

Thus, before the wind veil of assimilation appeared, Xue Song Zi found Hei Cheng in person and threatened him with this secret.

Hei Cheng was stunned at that moment, his secret that had been hidden for so many years was known by an outsider, he almost lost his bearings.

But he was an old and shrewd person, he quickly calmed down and used his glib tongue to accede to a portion of Xue Song Zi’s requests.

Next, Hei Cheng even urged Xue Song Zi to cooperate, as long as he assisted in the plan and it succeeded, he would gain more benefits.

Xue Song Zi gave an overbearing request, he was interested in the yin-yang life extension method.

Although Xue Song Zi was middle aged and also had lifespan Gu, who among Gu Immortals would not be interested in a life extension method?

Hei Cheng was furious and helpless, he could only agree for now.

Thus, Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi’s seemingly united but internally divided alliance was formed.

Just as Hei Lou Lan, Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi were at a stalemate, a bright jade green light burst out beside Hei Lou Lan.

The jade light dissipated, revealing Fang Yuan’s huge body.

He was six meters tall and had eight arms, he had a green face and red eyes, his entire body was covered in a black shiny armor which had many spikes on it.

Facing strong foes, Fang Yuan did not dare to be careless, he first used the defensive killer move, hair armor, before using Fixed Immortal Travel to come here.

Although Fixed Immortal Travel could only transport humans, when Gu Masters use Gu worms, they can form clothes and armor, and would not have to teleport naked every time.

Back when Fang Yuan teleported from Three Kings blessed land to Hu Immortal blessed land, because he was short on time and did not have the relevant Gu worms, he had to teleport naked, and gave Feng Jin Huang an unforgettable experience.

“You are finally here.” Hei Lou Lan saw that her reinforcement had arrived, her expression brightened.

“Which Gu Immortal is this? Who are you?!” Xue Song Zi quickly asked in shock.

Fang Yuan rapidly looked at the two in the air, his voice was hoarse as his surging killing intent was displayed: “The person who will kill you.”

As he spoke nonsense with them, he transmitted to Hei Lou Lan: “Quick! We cannot stay here for long, enter my immortal aperture and I’ll bring you away.”

Hearing that Fang Yuan was trying to kill him, Xue Song Zi flew into a rage: “Such words.”

Next to him, the Gu Immortal Hei Cheng reacted more quickly: “Attack! That Immortal Gu is Fixed Immortal Travel, he only needs three breaths of time to escape. We cannot give them any opportunities!”

As they spoke, Hei Lou Lan had already entered Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

Xue Song Zi’s expression turned severe, he waved his sleeves and created a curved moon blade wheel that was the size of a horse carriage.

The blade wheel spun in the air, slashing at Fang Yuan.

Killer move — Icy Wind Blade Wheel!

The blade wheel made of ice was extremely sharp, it was oozing with frost energy and was extremely fast when pushed by the wind.

Before the blade wheel had reached him, Fang Yuan could feel the icy winds blowing on him.

“This killer move is very fierce, it has the essence of both ice and wind path, its value is at least three immortal essence stones!” Fang Yuan squinted, he logically chose to evade it.

Killer move — Light Illusion Bat Wings!

Two large phantom black bat wings appeared behind him, after the phantom wings flapped, they vanished.

Fang Yuan gained a huge boost in speed, he moved like lightning and flew sideways, dodging the icy wind blade wheel.

The blade wheel hit the ground, making a loud sound as it dug deep into the ground like cutting tofu.

On the grassland, the blade wheel carved out a huge trench, and ice that was tough as rocks formed on the sides of the trench.

Although Fang Yuan dodged the icy wind blade wheel, Hei Cheng’s attack was right in front of him.

This was a very inconspicuous small black arrow.

The body of the arrow was short, it was about half a person’s arm length, it was black and did not give out any aura of danger.

But precisely because of this, Fang Yuan was on extreme alert.

This was the attack of the Immortal Gu Dark Arrow.

Hei Cheng was experienced in battles, he was ruthless and used his trump card from the start!

Fang Yuan quickly activated his killer move, light illusion bat wings, but the black arrow was like a magnet attracted to him, it changed directions agilely and was fixed on Fang Yuan, he could not shrug it off at all.

Immortal Gu Dark Arrow’s attack could home in on enemies and turn in different directions, its speed was fast. Even though Fang Yuan was a flying master, he could not shake it off. As the distance between him and the dark arrow shortened, he fell under greater threat!

Fang Yuan’s defensive killer move, hair armor, although it had a high price to performance ratio, and was widely spread during the five regions chaotic war, it was only a mortal killer move, Dark Arrow could pierce it in one hit.

Even though Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body was strong, it could not resist the might of Dark Arrow.

Especially when this dark arrow ignored Fang Yuan’s body, heart and other areas, only aiming for his sole weakness — his brain.

After becoming an immortal zombie, Fang Yuan’s heart, throat, anus, and all other areas were no longer weak points in his body, even if they were destroyed, he would still function fine and would not take too much damage.

But his brain was different.

If his brain was destroyed, his mind would also perish. Fang Yuan would be unable to think, unable to act, and would be at his enemy’s mercy.

Activating Fixed Immortal Travel required three breaths of time, but the dark arrow chased relentlessly, Fang Yuan did not have the time for it.

Fang Yuan moved around rapidly, the many mortal Gu that made up his killer move, light illusion bat wings, were starting to be worn down.

“It is over.” Hei Cheng laughed coldly, waving his sleeves and shooting out another dark arrow.

“My dark arrow Immortal Gu is merely rank six and can only shoot out up to three dark arrows at the same time. No matter who you are, making me use two dark arrows to deal with you, it should be your honor.” Hei Cheng looked at Fang Yuan struggling at the brink of death as he evaluated arrogantly.

“Hmph, what are you so proud of, I was just toying with you.” Fang Yuan spoke in a hoarse voice and laughed suddenly.

Two dark arrows attacked him at once, he knew he could no longer avoid using green grape immortal essence, activating the Immortal Gu Worldly Wave Trace.

Swoosh!

A huge wave appeared below Fang Yuan’s feet.

The waves moved quickly, Fang Yuan stepped on them as he quickly created some distance from the dark arrows.

The power of an Immortal Gu was truly extraordinary.

Earlier, Fang Yuan had used light illusion bat wings no less than a hundred times, but he could not escape from the dark arrows. But right now, he had just used Worldly Wave Trace once and immediately moved far away from it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 678: Number Four in the List of Mystical Gu

“Another Immortal Gu!” Xue Song Zi’s expression changed, his gaze was heated, looking extremely jealous and envious.

To think that in order to obtain wooden chicken Immortal Gu, he spent so much effort in scheming, yet his plans still failed him.

The immortal zombie in front of him actually had Immortal Gu, which most ordinary Gu Immortals did not have, and he even had two!

“Hehehe, Hei Cheng, Xue Song Zi, that will be all for today. Enjoy your life from now on, because you do not have much time left.” Fang Yuan’s tone was chilling.

He stepped on the flying wave, at the same time, a jade green light flashed on his body.

Three breaths of time later, Fixed Immortal Travel carried him across space, leaving this battlefield.

Two dark arrows arrived at his former location, only hitting the last trace of jade light remaining.

“Oh no, they ran away!” Xue Song Zi’s expression was extremely ugly, he questioned Hei Cheng: “Aren’t you a rank seven Gu Immortal? Why couldn’t you stop them!”

“Xue Song Zi, mind your tone.” Hei Cheng was expressionless, he gave Xue Song Zi a cold glance.

Xue Song Zi was pressured by Hei Cheng’s grand aura, his expression became less overbearing.

Hei Cheng spoke calmly: “The other party has two movement Immortal Gu, unless we have an Immortal Gu that can seal the environment, we can only watch them escape. However, the tracing method I used on Hei Lou Lan is extremely secretive, it is a killer move at the peak of the mortal level. As long as she shows up in northern plains again, I will detect her.”

“Also, this was not a fruitless trip, we have already found out that Hei Lou Lan has a force backing her. Without help, there is no way she could’ve reached this stage. I just did not expect an immortal zombie with two movement Immortal Gu to show up. It seems the force behind Hei Lou Lan is not simple at all. Hehe, the situation is getting interesting.”

Saying this, Hei Cheng showed a faint smile, he felt no dejection after this loss.

He did not strike against Hei Lou Lan, on one hand, he was wary of her self-detonation, on the other hand, he wanted to draw out her mysterious backer.

“What are you saying?” Xue Song Zi’s gaze focused.

“Immortal zombies are often the result of Gu Immortals who are forced by circumstances when they have no way of extending their lifespan. Do you think this immortal zombie is truly the person supporting Hei Lou Lan behind the scenes?” Hei Cheng asked with deep meaning.

Fang Yuan did not fight against them, he only displayed his flying master attainment when he dodged the dark arrows.

But this attainment was nothing special for Gu Immortals who had lived for hundreds of years.

At this moment, Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi did not know Fang Yuan’s true battle strength, and Fang Yuan did not receive much of their attention, they thought he was a normal immortal zombie.

Xue Song Zi’s gaze flickered: “I understand what you mean. This immortal zombie is not the crucial person, his two movement Immortal Gu are most likely loaned to him by others.”

Hei Cheng nodded: “That’s right, this mysterious person is likely to be someone we know. They sent an unfamiliar immortal zombie over here to help, that means it was not convenient for them to appear.”

“This mysterious person is leaving no clues for us, how will we investigate?” Xue Song Zi felt a headache, an enemy hiding in the dark was the most troublesome kind, not only did he feel restrained, he did not know who to trust and who to target.

“They have already shown a flaw.” Hei Cheng laughed loudly: “Be it Fixed Immortal Travel or Worldly Wave Trace, they are both related to central continent. Such an obvious clue is enough for us to discover many things. As long as I can uncover the true identity of that person, I will be able to take them down all at once!”

Saying this, Hei Cheng showed a ruthless expression on his face.

Fixed Immortal Travel brought Fang Yuan back to Fairy Li Shan’s residence.

“Little Lan, how are your injuries?” Seeing that Hei Lou Lan was leaving Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture while covered in blood, Fairy Li Shan was very nervous, she quickly went over and checked.

“Little aunt, it is not a problem. That scoundrel did not attack me seriously, he was only putting on a show.” Hei Lou Lan laughed, as if she was not the one injured.

Fairy Li Shan’s heart was eased, she let out a breath of turbid air: “It seems that your guess is right, Little Lan, that scoundrel really planted some tracking method on your body. This method is extremely well hidden, we could not find it even after searching intensely several times.”

Fang Yuan heard this and his gaze turned cold, he looked at Hei Lou Lan closely: “That is to say, you were discovered by Hei Cheng on purpose?”

“I would not say it was on purpose.” Hei Lou Lan looked into Fang Yuan’s eyes without any fear: “Earlier, little aunt found some crucial information, it was regarding the whereabouts of Ma Hong Yun. Ma Hong Yun was taken away by a northern plains Gu Immortal, Qin Bai Sheng, his blessed land is situated in crimson reed marsh. I went there intending to sneak into the blessed land and see if the information was true. I didn’t expect that Hei Cheng was also nearby, the moment I stepped into crimson reed marsh, he detected me.”

Fang Yuan nodded, he believed what Hei Lou Lan said.

Of course, this was not because he trusted Hei Lou Lan, but because this was part of the Snowy Mountain Alliance — allies could have personal secrets, but they could not lie. If you did not say it, then that is fine. But if you spoke, it had to be the truth, otherwise the oath would kill you.

“Ma Hong Yun, as his name suggests, has fortune that rivals heaven. If I connect my luck to him, it would be far more effective than Hong Yi and Han Li.” Thinking of this, Fang Yuan asked: “How reliable is the information that Ma Hong Yun has been captured by Qin Bai Sheng?”

Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan looked at each other, as Fairy Li Shan said: “According to our analysis, there is a seventy percent chance that we can believe it. During the battle inside the wind veil of assimilation, dozens of Gu Immortals from the righteous and demonic path were involved. I was there at the time, it was a chaotic scene. After the battle, everyone had their own guesses on who captured Ma Hong Yun, and that resulted in dozens of small conflicts, but they were all proven to be wrong.”

“This time, our information is different from the rumors, we have reason and evidence. Evidently, an insider had purposely leaked the information, Qin Bai Sheng is a rank seven lone cultivator Gu Immortal, he is a famous expert in the metal path, and also has his blessed land to defend himself. But Ma Hong Yun’s matter involves Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path true inheritance, this has too much of an attraction to northern plains’ Gu Immortals. Especially when Qin Bai Sheng does not have the Huang Jin bloodline, everyone is jealous of him.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “That is to say, this is a troublesome matter, if Ma Hong Yun was really captured by Qin Bai Sheng, then soon, a band of Gu Immortals are going to attack crimson reed marsh.”

“That is exactly so!” Hei Lou Lan laughed heartily, her beautiful black pupils radiating with light: “The way I see it, this information should be true to a huge extent. Luckily, little aunt did not expose her identity this time, when the righteous and demonic Gu Immortals team up, they will need little aunt’s mountain pledge Gu. At that time, we will be able to find a chance and intervene in this matter. If there is a chance for us to obtain the luck path true inheritance, we will strike. If not, we will take a step back, using the time in which that old scoundrel Hei Cheng is engaging in battle, I will have a chance to ascend to immortal!”

Hei Lou Lan was a formidable person, like Fang Yuan, she was very skilled in scheming.

Fang Yuan asked coldly: “Although this was the first time I met Hei Cheng, I can confirm that he is no simple character, if he refuses to join this, what will you do?”

To Hei Cheng, although the luck path true inheritance was important, it could not compare to his lifespan. There are so many people fighting for the luck path true inheritance, it is like a battle of tigers and wolves, he might as well stay uninvolved and settle the issue of Hei Lou Lan instead.

Fang Yuan’s words directly addressed the problem, Hei Lou Lan’s brows rose, she replied enthusiastically: “I do not have much time left, it has been fortunate I have had little aunt’s help these recent days. In half a month, I will have to ascend regardless of the situation! If Hei Cheng comes to find trouble then, it will be a perfect time to deal with him once and for all!”

In her words, she had already disregarded the possibility of death, her fearless and resolute disposition was fully displayed.

“That means, there is a possibility I have to fight Hei Cheng? By then, we cannot escape, in order to protect you, I will to fight him head on?” Fang Yuan’s gaze was uncertain.

Fairy Li Shan said: “Fang Yuan, don’t forget, when a Gu Master ascends to the realm of immortal, there will be a huge influx of heaven and earth qi. Under that special environment, Hei Cheng’s battle strength would be heavily suppressed. Little Lan’s ascension is extremely important, I will be there personally. Together with Tai Bai Yun Sheng, we have three Gu Immortals on our side.”

Hei Lou Lan replied graciously and understandingly: “Fang Yuan, in order to save me this time, you used Fixed Immortal Travel three times, and lost three green grape immortal essence beads. You also used one bead to activate worldly wave trace Gu, according to our alliance, you will be compensated twice the amount, that is eight immortal essence stones.”

“That’s right.” Fang Yuan looked at Hei Lou Lan, it was so easy for intelligent people to communicate.

Fairy Li Shan spoke suddenly: “Eight immortal essence stones, I can give that to you right now. But I also have other things, Fang Yuan, perhaps you should take a look, you might be interested in them.”

Saying this, she took out two killer moves and one Gu recipe.

Fang Yuan looked through them and was very interested.

Of the two killer moves, one was called ‘poison breath’, a poison path killer move. It could turn a Gu Immortal’s breathing into a poisonous gas. The killer move had little strength, but its advantage was sustainability. If a long time passes, the Gu Immortal’s surroundings would be covered in a layer of poisonous gas, it would unceasingly poison all the surrounding people and things.

But this killer move had a flaw, it was easy to hurt oneself. Especially an ordinary Gu Immortal’s body, they needed to protect and heal their nostrils, throat, and lungs.

This weakness was non-existent to an immortal zombie like Fang Yuan.

The other killer move was called ‘Kong Sheng Tian’. Kong Sheng Tian was the name of a person, he was the Gu Immortal who created this killer move. He was quite famous within Gu Master history, he controlled the number four Gu in the list of Top Ten Mystical Gu, qi escape Gu.

Spring Autumn Cicada was only ranked at seventh, while qi escape Gu was fourth, it was reverse refined from the legendary reputation Gu. In terms of flying speed in a straight line, it was the number one Gu in the world, no Gu was its match!

And this killer move was also a movement killer move. Back then, Kong Sheng Tian referred to qi escape Gu to create it. It could open the small pores on the Gu Immortal’s body and blow out small air currents, causing the Gu Immortal to fly forward quickly. Not only was it fast, it could change directions very agilely.

The killer move Kong Sheng Tian was very suitable to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had a zombie’s body, his body’s pores were tough and durable, even if they were destroyed, his terrifying recovery speed would heal them quickly.

As for the Gu recipe, it was an ancient strength path Gu recipe, it could refine the rank five group strength Gu.

Undeniably, these three items had been collected by Fairy Li Shan for some time, they were specially prepared for Fang Yuan.

They were allies who had made an oath under Snowy Mountain, it was a good thing for Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan for Fang Yuan to be strong.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 679: Immortal Gu is hungry

Fang Yuan thought a moment and said to Fairy Li Shan: “I will take this poison breath killer move and the ancient Gu recipe. How many immortal essence stones for them?”

Fairy Li Shan replied: “Poison breath is two immortal essence stones and the group strength Gu’s recipe is two immortal essence stones as well, so altogether it is four immortal essence stones.”

Fang Yuan nodded, agreeing with Fairy Li Shan’s quotation.

Poison breath was not an ordinary killer move and was indeed worth two immortal essence stones.

Group strength Gu might only be a rank five mortal Gu, but it was already extinct and as such its high price of two immortal essence stones was normal.

Fairy Li Shan took out three things, but this group strength Gu recipe which was the most unremarkable among them had the greatest attraction to Fang Yuan.

However, although the offer was fair, Fang Yuan was low in cash and wanted to haggle to save as many immortal essence stones as possible.

Thereupon, he said: “This group strength Gu recipe might be rare but it is an ancient Gu recipe; the refinement materials are very ancient and are now hard to find.”

Fairy Li Shan smiled: “Fang Yuan, I have already considered this. I had originally planned to give this group strength Gu to Little Lan, the reason I am selling it to you now is because the main material in refining this Gu, stone monkey fur, has recently appeared in the market.”

Hei Lou Lan added: “Right, in treasure yellow heaven, a Gu Immortal by the name of Shi Lei who calls himself Immortal Monkey King has managed to research and produce stone monkey fur in his blessed land. This Gu refinement material that had been extinct for countless years has now actually reappeared in his hands, causing quite a big commotion in treasure yellow heaven.”

“In group strength Gu’s recipe, the rarest material is stone monkey fur, while the others might be rare but as long as you look for them, you will be able to buy them, search for them or find substitutes using your own refinement path foundation.”

The implied meaning of this was that no haggling would be accepted.

Fang Yuan was not discouraged: “Stone monkey fur? This ancient material might have reappeared now but it is entirely monopolized by Immortal Monkey King Shi

Lei, the price will definitely not be cheap, right?”

“There is an old saying, ‘good things are not cheap’. Fang Yuan, I have personally witnessed your immortal killer move, myriad self, and I still remember its astonishing might. There is no need for us to continue probing each other, group strength Gu is worth much more to you than to normal Gu Immortals. Two immortal essence stones is already quite cheap.” Hei Lou Lan refused to yield any benefits.

If the other party understands you clearly, the situation would be rather troublesome to deal with.

However, Hei Lou Lan was right as well, four immortal essence stones in total was a fair price.

Fairy Li Shan did not cheat Fang Yuan of immortal essence stones, but she would not incur losses as well.

“Alright.” Fang Yuan observed the situation and did not persist. Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan were not Lang Ya land spirit, excessive haggling would only be insulting their intelligence.

Both sides completed the transaction shortly afterwards.

Fang Yuan obtained the poison breath killer move and the ancient group strength Gu’s recipe, as well as four immortal essence stones.

As for the movement killer move, Kong Sheng Tian, it was not suitable for Fang Yuan.

Kong Sheng Tian opened all the pores in one’s body from which air would shoot out and propel the body. This killer move had extreme speed and could also give great flexibility in changing direction.

However, the opening of the pores in the whole body would greatly reduce Fang Yuan’s defense.

Moreover, Fang Yuan’s defensive killer move, hair armor, covered the whole body without leaving behind any gaps. If Kong Sheng Tian was used, he would not be able to use hair armor. If he used hair armor, Kong Sheng Tian could not be used.

These two were not compatible.

Fang Yuan thus gave up on the killer move Kong Sheng Tian.

His quantity of immortal essence stones increased to nineteen and a half, but he had huge pressure in converting them to green grape immortal essence and feeding his Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan was still lacking in cash and could not casually buy the relatively useless killer move.

When leaving, Fang Yuan did not extravagantly use Fixed Immortal Travel, instead opting to use a stargate.

Before leaving, he checked Hei Lou Lan’s luck.

Hei Lou Lan was at rank five peak stage, her luck could be perceived by the rank five luck inspection Gu.

Hei Lou Lan’s luck had already recovered from the extremely low state when she went against Ma Hong Yun. Her luck was like a giant pillar with the color of an azure sky, giving a feeling of being long lasting.

“Hei Lou Lan’s luck clearly is at the level of Han Li’s and Hong Yi’s. From this, it seems her Gu Immortal advancement has a high probability of succeeding. But one can’t just look at luck in everything, otherwise why would Hei Lou Lan die so suddenly in my previous life? One’s luck might be good, but it depends on whether they can grasp it. Now it seems, Hei Cheng might be involved in Hei Lou Lan’s unexpected death?”

Although Hei Lou Lan’s luck was strong, it was written in detail in the Snowy Mountain Alliance that allies could not intentionally inflict harm to each other.

Fang Yuan was plagued with bad luck, and connecting his luck with her’s would mean having an intent to harm.

Moreover, according to his previous life’s memories, Fang Yuan was not too optimistic of Hei Lou Lan’s future. Fang Yuan did not have break luck Gu, thus he could not carelessly connect luck and must choose his targets carefully.

Back in Hu Immortal Blessed Land, Fang Yuan took out eight immortal essence stones and converted them to his own green grape immortal essence.

He had used Fixed Immortal Travel many times, going back and forth from western desert, central continent, eastern sea and northern plains. He also used worldly wave trace Gu in the fight against Hei Cheng, using up a total of six green grape immortal essence.

He originally had seventeen green grape immortal essence beads, but only eleven remained now.

In consideration of the frequent battles recently, Fang Yuan refined eight immortal essence stones and increased his green grape immortal essence to nineteen beads.

With this, the amount of immortal essence stones on Fang Yuan was eleven and a half.

Fang Yuan reviewed his battle with Hei Cheng and felt satisfied about it.

Whether the result was victory or defeat was of no concern to Fang Yuan. He would not become angry or feel humiliated just because of failure. He would also not feel overjoyed and arrogant because of victory.

What he prioritized were the gains and losses.

He used up four beads of green grape immortal essence in this battle, but was able to obtain even more trust from Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan. At the same time, he also obtained four immortal essence stones, the poison breath killer move and group strength Gu’s recipe.

He had clearly made a good profit.

“But if I were to speak of a loss, it would be worldly wave trace Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan took out the Immortal Gu Worldly Wave Trace.

Right now, the Immortal Gu’s aura was no longer as stable as before and revealed a trace of weakness.

The Gu worm did not have a healthy luster, instead appearing dark and gloomy.

Fang Yuan was aware of why: “Worldly wave trace Gu was not fed properly back at Imperial Court blessed land. When the wind veil of assimilation appeared, Mo Yao’s will activated Water Pavilion to battle, and after I obtained her Gu worms, I activated this Immortal Gu several times. It has already reached a certain limit and need to be fed. If it is still not fed and I activate it excessively, it might die from hunger.”

Worldly wave trace Gu was the first Immortal Gu in Fang Yuan’s possession that was ‘crying of hunger’.

It could be foreseen that as time passed, many more Immortal Gu would cry out in hunger and would need to be fed.

However, worldly wave trace Gu’s food was tens of thousands of underworld jellyfish and thousands of deepsea lightning eels.

Fang Yuan inquired Little Hu Immortal land spirit. After Tai Bai Yun Sheng left, the land spirit took over Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s work of paying attention to movements in treasure yellow heaven.

However, although Fang Yuan had taken the initiative to post requests for the goods in treasure yellow heaven, there were few who responded.

This was not a highly commercialized society like that on Earth, the economy here was not developed and one could not buy whatever they wanted to buy.

Fang Yuan used moving perspective cup Gu to send a letter to Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng gave him a piece of good news. He had already arrived at Hai Shi blessed land and smoothly got into contact with some Gu Immortals, moreover, he also saw someone selling underworld jellyfishes in Hai Shi blessed land.

Only deepsea lightning eels were rarely seen as Gu Immortals had to enter the deep sea to capture them, which was not only dangerous, the sea areas where they were abundant were already controlled by Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance.

Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance housed the headquarters of Zombie Alliance within all five regions. They were very powerful, a level stronger than even the super forces of eastern sea.

Thus, Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance was domineering and rampant in their actions. They blockaded several large sea regions and controlled the large numbers of resources within themselves.

This maintained and fostered their strength, making them become even more domineering to others.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng suggested Fang Yuan to join Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance and then purchase the deepsea lightning eels internally. This was not only convenient, the price within Zombie Alliance would also be cheaper than outside.

Fang Yuan was moved but he had ascended to Gu Immortal in northern plains, his immortal aperture had northern plains’ heaven and earth qi.

There were differences between the heaven and earth qi of the five regions. With just a simple test, one’s origins would be clear.

It was not impossible for Fang Yuan to join Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance with the status of a northern plains immortal zombie status. But he had to join Northern Plains Zombie Alliance for his major plan.

This major plan had huge prospective yield, and Fang Yuan had been thinking of risking an act of disguise even if he was not an immortal zombie to join Northern Plains Zombie Alliance.

However, as an immortal zombie now, it was no doubt much more convenient to join Northern Plains Zombie Alliance.

“Joining Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance might make it convenient to purchase lightning eels, but if Tai Bai Yun Sheng is given some time to make connections, he would be able to purchase them, just that the price might be a bit higher. Although I won’t be able to activate worldly wave trace Gu as much as I wish, it should hold on for some time.” Fang Yuan was not willing to give up on his major plan, thus he refused Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s suggestion in the end.

After resting and reorganizing for a while in Hu Immortal Blessed Land, Fang Yuan activated Fixed Immortal Travel to arrive at central continent again.

Universal Life Academy was located in mountain valley, and under the curtain of night, lights were lit up, making it appear quiet and tranquil.

Hong Yi was sitting cross-legged on the bed, finishing his daily routine of nourishing his aperture. He opened his eyes, his pupils shining brightly, revealing a look of expectation and excitement.

“I have placed in the top ten in today’s competition without even having to reveal my true strength. Heaven is helping me, letting me coincidentally get a bye in the competition. People are treating me as just a lucky fellow. Tomorrow is the competition of the ten strongest, they will underestimate me and won’t expect my true strength. The day after tomorrow is the decisive battle, as long as I use this Gu to break the opponent’s defense, there is no need to mention what will happen next.”

As he thought of this, Hong Yi took out a rank two Gu worm, Rewind. This was an extremely rare time path Gu worm which could be used to both attack and defend, its ability was to rewind an enemy’s Gu worm to its state before the activation.

For instance, the enemy condensed a fire ball, but under rewind Gu’s power, the Gu worm would return back to before activation and the fire ball would disappear.

However, rewind Gu had extremely huge demand on primeval essence; even Hong Yi with his A-grade aperture and over ninety percent primeval essence could only activate it once.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 680: Zhi Forest, Earth Horse

Hong Yi had decided long ago, he was going to use rewind Gu to deal with his opponent’s defensive Gu.

As long as the other party did not use two defensive Gu at the same time, Hong Yi would just need to hit the opponent’s body with one strike to heavily injure him, obtaining victory.

But if the opponent had two defensive Gu activated at the same time, Hong Yi would not go on the offensive immediately, he would start a drawn out battle. The enemy would definitely expend primeval essence faster than him if he uses two defensive Gu.

One could say, with this Gu in Hong Yi’s hands, he had a great advantage, he was most likely the winner of this competition.

“If I get first, mother’s memorial tablet would be placed in the ancestral hall, she would be given a proper status. Hmm?”

Suddenly, Hong Yi frowned, for one instant, he felt like his heart was empty, like something precious had been stolen from him.

“Don’t tell me, because my wish is finally going to be fulfilled, I am starting to feel apprehensive? There is nothing valuable on me besides rewind Gu, what could be worth stealing?”

Hong Yi shook his head, he laughed bitterly, forgetting that weird sensation he felt earlier.

Far away in the valley, Fang Yuan breathed out deeply: “Connect Luck succeeded.”

For the luck connection this time, he purposely made the best use of his time, rushing here immediately after resting in Hu Immortal blessed land for a while, thus, he did not come across any surprising disturbances.

Fang Yuan used luck inspection Gu to check Hong Yi’s luck.

His luck was previously milky white color, it was very special, giving people a feeling of vigor and vitality. His luck was gathered into a lump, forming the tall image of a scholar sitting and reading. The scholar’s image was rather similar to Hong Yi, he had a lively expression.

But after connecting with Fang Yuan, this white scholar luck shrunk, it was not even thirty percent of the original.

The scholar’s clean and smooth robe became a tattered shirt with random patches sewed onto it everywhere to maintain it. It was like a rich young master had turned into a poor man’s child, a pitiful student. His expression was not so lively anymore, his face was thinner and his expression was darker, like he had experienced a terrible encounter.

“It seems that connecting my luck to these targets had its use. When I connected my luck to Han Li, I almost killed him. But this time, the connection to Hong Yi did not cause his luck to become deathly luck. It seems my own luck has improved greatly.” Fang Yuan was gratified in his mind.

Just when he was about to leave, he suddenly felt a tug in his heart. He found two hidden Gu Masters lurking in this valley.

In order to undergo the luck connection, Fang Yuan had set up many Gu worms near Universal Life Academy’s valley. On one hand, he wanted to conceal the aura of the Immortal Gu, but it was also to surveil the surroundings and provide early warnings to him.

One could say that the entire valley was under Fang Yuan’s supervision.

Fang Yuan closed his eyes and concentrated.

These two hidden Gu Masters were not weak, they were rank five Gu Masters.

They were at the other end of the valley, secretly moving while talking softly.

“Sect Leader Fan Yi, are you sure that there is a zhi forest and earth horses underneath the surface of this valley?”

“Valley Lord Yuan Bai, there is no mistake, I saw it personally! Don’t be anxious, follow me into the cavern, when you see it for yourself, won’t you believe me?”

“Hmph, this is the territory of Universal Life Academy, if the principal of Universal Life Academy, Hong Xuan Ji, discovers us, we will be forced to bear the consequences of failure.”

“Although Hong Xuan Ji is strong, he is lacking in investigative methods, otherwise, he would’ve found the great resources lying here already. We are intentionally hiding ourselves while he is unaware, how can he discover us?”

“Sigh, if we are discovered, our reputations would be ruined, the leaders of two sects venturing into Universal Life Academy late at night.”

...

Fang Yuan heard the entirety of their conversation.

“Zhi forest, earth horses?” He thought.

Zhi forests grew underground, usually for dozens of li. The lingzhi inside were as large as trees, their meat was plump and juicy, they could be fed to Gu worms, used as Gu refinement materials or sold.

Earth horses were mutated beasts native to zhi forests. There were usually two or three in a single portion of zhi forest, they lived as a family. The hoof of the earth horse was the main ingredient of the rank five earth escape Gu. The eyes of the earth horse could refine the x-ray vision Gu, the tail hair of the earth horse could refine the smoke dust Gu.

The earth horse’s body was full of treasures, it was no wonder the two rank five Gu Masters, Valley Lord Yuan Bai and Sect Leader Fan Yi, were interested.

But to Fang Yuan, the earth horses and zhi forest did not have any appeal.

An earth horse was a mutated beast that could be on par with a myriad beast king. But a family of earth horses was only two to three myriad beast kings. There were many people selling zhi forests in treasure yellow heaven, it was a common good and did not even require immortal essence stones to purchase.

“But for Universal Life Academy, the underground zhi forest is a huge benefit and an important stockpile of resources. Unfortunately, they are still kept in the dark now.”

Fang Yuan thought about it, he followed behind the two rank five Gu Masters from afar, successfully entering the underground zhi forest.

As he estimated, this was an ordinary zhi forest, it was about ten li in size, and there were three earth horses. They were a family living in the zhi forest.

“What a huge zhi forest!” Sect Leader Fan Yi exclaimed as he walked in the forest.

“This is a land of treasures, why did it not appear in my valley? Sigh!” Valley Lord Yuan Bai touched the branches of the lingzhi, saying in jealousy.

Fang Yuan took a detour around them and got to the center of the zhi forest.

There was the largest lingzhi here, it was six meters tall, reaching the ceiling of the cave. The flesh of the lingzhi was like a huge umbrella, spreading out in a circular manner.

This was the lingzhi king.

Fang Yuan lowered his head and came to the lingzhi king.

Next to the lingzhi king, there were three earth horses guarding it, along with some metal consuming ant groups. Among the ant groups, there were some wild metal path Gu, and the lingzhi king also had some wild wood path Gu worms.

But these were all mortal, Fang Yuan did not conceal his immortal zombie aura, he came here without any obstruction.

Fang Yuan stretched out one monstrous claw, grabbing the stalk of the lingzhi king.

The lingzhi king trembled intensely, causing the ceiling of the cave to shake and debris to fall. The earth horses were suppressed by Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie aura, they did not dare to get close, and only made cries from afar.

After Fang Yuan searched for a while, he pulled back his zombie claw.

In his monstrous claw, there was a heart.

This was the lingzhi king’s heart, it was soft and hot, the surface was milky white, this was completely made of lingzhi flesh and gave off a meaty fragrance.

“As long as I plant this lingzhi king’s heart, soon, a new forest will form.” Fang Yuan took the treasure from right under their noses.

The soil of Hu Immortal blessed land was not suited to plant large areas of zhi forests. But to sustain a small area of it, there were no issues, of course, there were also not much benefits in doing so.

Fang Yuan was doing this purely for fun.

As for this huge zhi forest and the earth horses, Fang Yuan had no need for them. It was troublesome and time consuming to move them into Hu Immortal blessed land, he would rather purchase them directly in treasure yellow heaven if needed, it was more convenient.

After losing the heart, the lingzhi king would not die, but the zhi forest would stop growing, it would have to recuperate for over a decade.

“What sound is that?” Far away, Yuan Bai and Fan Yi glanced at each other, Fang Yuan taking away the lingzhi king’s heart caused quite a commotion, along with the wailing horses.

But when Yuan Bai and Fan Yi got to the lingzhi king, Fang Yuan had vanished without a trace, he had left.

The remaining earth horse family exerted their anger and furious emotions on the two of them instead.

The intense battle quickly attracted the attention of Universal Life Academy.

Hong Xuan Ji lead a band of Gu Masters and rushed here, in shock and joy.

Yuan Bai and Fan Yi sighed in their hearts, feeling extremely unlucky.

After an intense battle, Hong Xuan Ji chased away Yuan Bai and Fan Yi, he gave orders to the elders of the academy who were in ecstasy: “The matter of the zhi forest is extremely important, from today onwards, we will halt the sect competition, and call back the disciples and elders who are out on missions. From now on, there will certainly be difficulties, Yuan Bai and Fan Yi are sure to gather other sects to exert pressure on us. We have to defend this zhi forest, it is our foundation to rise up!”

“”Yes, lord principal!” The Gu Masters responded.

On the other hand, Hong Yi, who was sound asleep, had no idea that the sect competition that he was looking forward to had been canceled.

His desire to give his mother a proper status, that dream was going to have to be delayed for a long time.

Swish swish swish...

Waves were crashing on Fang Yuan’s face, but such mild force could not make him feel anything.

This place was not in central continent, it was in southern border.

The river before him was the number two river of southern border — Jade Dragon River.

Southern border had three great rivers, the first was red dragon river, the second was jade dragon river, and the third was yellow dragon river.

Red dragon river had water red as blood, jade dragon river had green waves in it, while yellow dragon river was something Fang Yuan had traveled on in this life, it was yellow in color and had the most sediments.

Fang Yuan toyed with the lingzhi king’s heart in his hands, after taking this heart, he did not leave immediately using Fixed Immortal Travel, he went to a corner of the valley and left behind many Gu worms before activating Fixed Immortal Travel.

These Gu worms all self-detonated as he was leaving, eliminating the aura of Fixed Immortal Travel, by doing this he could avoid anyone tracing him.

Right now, he was waiting for a person.

This person was another one of his targets, he had amazing luck and many fortuitous encounters, rising to a legend from a nobody. During the five regions chaotic war, he was a rank seven Gu Immortal, a famous person on the same level as Hong Yi and Han Li.

But different from Han Li who joined a clan later, and Hong Yi who was a member of a sect, this person was a lone cultivator from start to finish, he had several good friends and family, but he did not join a particular force.

When Fang Yuan was about to self-detonate in his previous life, there were rumors that central continent’s Heavenly Court was about to recruit him.

As for whether this information was true or not, Fang Yuan had no way to verify it.

But now that Fang Yuan had been reborn, that was not important.

“In my memories, this person had been ostracized his entire life after his clan banished him. By this riverside, he obtained the inheritance of a rank four Gu Master, it was just enough for him to use. Using this inheritance, he earned a living while repelling the dangers of the wild. He grew stronger step by step, grabbing onto a huge opportunity and obtaining the black yellow mother qi Gu, the inheritance of a daoist master, he won nine out of ten times when rock gambling, and dominated all of the southern border gambling dens.”

Fang Yuan recalled.

He knew this place due to the ‘Biography of Ye Fan’. Every important person’s history was usually recorded down in words and pictures.

Ye Fan was Fang Yuan’s target this time.

And here was the start of Ye Fan’s rise. Tonight, he would have his first fortuitous encounter.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 681: Nine Dragons Coffin Protection Luck

The stars were like diamonds brightening the night sky.

River winds blew softly, the howling of beasts and cries of birds could be heard, contrasting with the otherwise quiet environment.

Fang Yuan waited patiently, but he did not see Ye Fan’s arrival over the entire night.

As time passed, after the second and third day, Ye Fan did not appear at any point.

“Don’t tell me, ‘Biography of Ye Fan’ was wrong?” Fang Yuan could not help but think, but he quickly rejected this thought: “No, the Gu Master inheritance near the riverside is still around, Ye Fan has not taken it. I’ll wait...”

What Fang Yuan did not know was that, a thousand li away, Ye Fan had met with trouble.

Huff huff huff...

Ye Fan breathed roughly, he looked at the huge shadow of a sprawling beast near the cave entrance with much fear.

“Damn it, why am I so unlucky? I was just banished from the clan, I hid in a cave to stay for the night, but I woke up to find out that the cave entrance was sealed!” Ye Fan cursed in his heart, he was nervous but helpless.

This cave only had one entrance, but this fierce beast was blocking it.

Ye Fan did not have any method to dig holes, his strength was very low but this beast’s body was huge, it was a beast emperor.

“Why did this beast emperor come here alone without a single beast as its guard? Don’t tell me it is an old emperor that was chased out by the new emperor?” Ye Fan looked at the beast in front of him, analyzing nervously in his heart.

As he continued observing, he quickly found out that this beast emperor was a paper tiger.

This dog shaped beast emperor was covered in wounds, its body was not too big, but it was sprawled on the ground, its eyelids were drooping weakly.

On its snow-white fur, there was multi-colored markings resembling flower petals on a snowy field.

“Haa... haa... haa...” Ye Fan listened closely, hearing the dog emperor’s extremely weak, whimpering cries.

Watching its dry belly that was so thin its bones could be seen, Ye Fan finally understood: “Although this is a beast emperor, it is extremely hungry, it has little to no battle strength.”

Reaching this conclusion, Ye Fan let out a breath of turbid air, at the same time, he felt a bit of pity in his heart.

They were in similar situations, this beast emperor’s fate was very much like his own.

Ye Fan slowly got close to the dog shaped beast emperor, the beast emperor had no reaction, it allowed him to get closer.

Ye Fan did not dare to breathe loudly, he squatted by the beast emperor’s side and stretched out his arm, placing it on its forehead.

The soft fur was extremely comfortable to Ye Fan, it was a little warm and wet.

This beast emperor had a fever, it was covered in sweat that made its fur wet, its bodily functions were barely functional.

“Beast emperor, oh beast emperor, you are about to die, maybe one day, I will be just like you. But meeting me is your good luck, after all, I was the village’s most famous beast doctor.” Ye Fan muttered to himself, he felt great pity for this beast emperor and started to heal it.

He activated his Gu, healing the beast emperor’s injuries, and also alleviating its illness. Next, he took out some precious food and water, feeding them to the beast emperor slowly, letting it recover its strength.

Ye Fan was in no hurry, he stayed in this cave for seven days, as this dog shaped beast emperor finally recovered.

Although it was still weak and did not have a single wild Gu, not even capable of defeating a thousand beast king. But it was out of danger now, its fever subsided and it could run freely, it was running around Ye Fan excitedly.

Ye Fan saved it, it treated him as its closest person. Every time Ye Fan returned to the cave bringing food and water, it would run over and wag its tail happy around him.

Later, when it recovered some battle strength, it went out to hunt with Ye Fan, helping him to find food.

The human and dog quickly established a deep relationship.

When Ye Fan decided to leave the cave and venture far away, the dog shaped beast emperor followed suit.

“This is the eighth day, why has Ye Fan not appeared yet?” At jade dragon river, Fang Yuan was anxious.

In about five to six days, Hei Lou Lan would be undergoing tribulation.

By then, Fang Yuan needed to defend her, not only to help her survive the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, but also to deal with the combined attacks of the rank seven Gu Immortal Hei Cheng, and the rank six Gu Immortal Xue Song Zi.

To estimate a Gu Immortal’s battle strength, there were many elements to consider, but the most crucial four were — immortal essence, killer moves, Immortal Gu, and the Gu Immortal’s personal attainment in fighting.

During his northern plains trip, Tai Bai Yun Sheng who had newly advanced to a Gu Immortal was at the bottom of all rank six Gu Immortals in terms of battle strength.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had immortal essence and healing Immortal Gu, but he did not have killer moves or sufficient mortal Gu. Most importantly, his personal attainment in fighting was terrible.

Thus, he was heavily suppressed by Hei Lou Lan who had the Great Strength True Martial Physique.

Right now, Fang Yuan had little immortal essence, although he had many Immortal Gu, they were all waiting to be fed and it would be difficult for them to bear immediate use. Even though he had the killer moves icy drill stardust, light illusion bat wings, and hair armor, during his normal form, his battle strength was only at the upper-tier of rank six. But if he used the immortal killer move myriad self, his battle strength would reach the peak of rank six.

Fang Yuan defeated the western desert Gu Immortal Plump Lady, her battle strength was also at the upper-tier of rank six. She had three powerful mortal killer moves, especially in the end when she used the movement killer move to escape, Fang Yuan could not even catch up to her.

But Fang Yuan had the immortal zombie body, together with light illusion bat wings and hair armor cooperating together, the most important part was his ruthless and rich battle talent, that resulted in Plump Lady’s battle intent dissipating, and she could only run.

Xue Song Zi’s battle strength was also at the upper-tier of rank six.

He was a rich person among Gu Immortals, even though he lost a huge sum in funding Ma tribe, he still had thick foundations, he did not lack immortal essence. According to Fairy Li Shan’s information, he had collected a lot of killer moves long ago, as someone from the demonic path, he had always focused on battle strength, his attainment in fighting was also not ordinary.

Xue Song Zi, all in all, was an experienced Gu Immortal, if Fang Yuan did not use myriad self and Immortal Gu to fight with him, the result would be unclear.

Meanwhile, Hei Cheng’s battle strength was at the middle-tier of rank seven!

Compared to Xue Song Zi and Hei Bai, Hei Cheng’s rank seven blessed land had greater qualifications, it produced red date immortal essence that was one rank higher than green grape immortal essence.

He was a Gu Immortal of a Huang Jin tribe, he did not lack killer moves. He had the Immortal Gu Dark Arrow since a long time ago. According to Fairy Li Shan’s information, Hei Cheng had fought and obtained an Immortal Gu in northern plains several months ago, as to what Gu it was, Hei Cheng did not expose it.

Speaking of Hei Cheng's battle records, they was not ordinary, he had fought against several righteous path Gu Immortals, and even fought to the death with demonic path Gu Immortals, he had killed several demonic path Gu Immortals.

Hei Cheng did not lack immortal essence and killer moves, he had uncommon fighting attainment, and only lacked Immortal Gu, if he had one or two more Immortal Gu to use in battle, his battle strength would rise to the upper-tier of rank seven.

Although Fang Yuan had fought with Hei Cheng once before, it was for an extremely short time and Fang Yuan did not fight him directly, his goal was to retreat with Hei Lou Lan.

Honestly speaking, although Fang Yuan had many Immortal Gu, there was not a single one that was used for attack or defense. When the dark arrows were shot out, Fang Yuan could only dodge and not take them directly. Thankfully, with cleanse soul Immortal Gu as the core Gu of the killer move myriad self, Fang Yuan had his own immortal killer move.

Precisely because of this trump card, Fang Yuan had the qualifications to fight one on one with Hei Cheng

Fang Yuan compared the battle strength of both sides, he was clear in his heart. Hei Lou Lan's impending tribulation would bring great pressure to Fang Yuan.

"Ye Fan has not arrived here yet, I have less time to prepare for when Hei Lou Lan undergoes tribulation now. Maybe I should give up on waiting and return to Hu Immortal blessed land to make preparations, and try to raise my battle strength to the limit."

After waiting for so many days, Fang Yuan's heart was wavering.

Especially when he recalled that the last two times he attempted a luck connection, accidents occurred, causing them to fail. During Han Li's attempt, Plump Lady appeared and fought with Fang Yuan, only after he showed off his ruthlessness did she run away. When he did it with Hong Yi, Hei Lou Lan was being assaulted and Fang Yuan had no choice but to save her instead.

"Don't tell me that this time, when I attempted to connect my luck to Ye Fan, an accident occurred again? But this time, it did not happen to me but Ye Fan instead?"

Fang Yuan's guess hit the nail on the head.

Luck was ever changing, it was like tides, rising and falling at times.

There could be great fortune after surviving a near death experience, after Fang Yuan escaped with his life from the wind veil of assimilation, his black coffin luck had dissipated by half.

And after that, he connected his luck to Han Li and Hong Yi, they were all chosen due to their strong luck, only inferior to Ma Hong Yun. Fang Yuan's luck thus improved drastically.

This time, when he tried to connect to Ye Fan's luck, the contest of luck between the two no longer resulted in Fang Yuan encountering trouble, but instead, Ye Fan's luck was induced to avoid him, and give Ye Fan an opportunity to dodge this crisis.

Ye Fan made good use of this opportunity, dragging on time for seven days and seven nights, and subduing a beast emperor.

But it was a pity, when he got close to jade dragon river, Fang Yuan’s heart had only wavered, he had not left.

“Oh? This dog emperor beside Ye Fan, isn’t it that Ying Ming inside Three Kings blessed land? It actually survived, and is following Ye Fan now?” Fang Yuan recognized the dog emperor, he felt a little surprised.

This was something not recorded in ‘Biography of Ye Fan’.

The luck connection to Ye Fan was very successful, there were no accidents, or rather, Ye Fan’s lateness was already the accident.

Ye Fan was much weaker in strength, from start to finish he did not discover Fang Yuan or his scheme against him. This proved once again: Good and bad luck are not decisive elements, as long as one’s strength was sufficient, they could resist bad luck and grab onto opportunities.

Ye Fan’s luck was rather special as well.

His luck had a coffin.

But this coffin was not like Fang Yuan’s black coffin. It was bronze and ancient, mysterious with nine dragons of luck guarding the surroundings of the coffin.

After connecting to Fang Yuan’s luck, the nine dragons shrunk to four, and the bronze coffin was half as big as before.

Fang Yuan was satisfied with this result.

Ye Fan’s luck had shrunk in half, but a large portion still remained.

“Hong Yi, Han Li, and Ye Fan’s luck have been connected to mine, the four portions of luck are equally distributed. Ye Fan’s current luck is at the same intensity as mine, Han Li and Hong Yi.”

After going through so much, Fang Yuan had finally settled the second weakness of Spring Autumn Cicada.

Not only was his absolutely terrible luck gone, it was even better than ordinary people, he could be said to be a person with strong luck.

“It is a pity that such candidates are hard to find. Although there are still a few in my memories, they have not been born yet.” Fang Yuan sighed out in pity, targets with thick and sustainable luck were very rare, at this point in time, Fang Yuan could find only these three.

At this moment, the matter regarding luck connection had come to an end, Fang Yuan looked at Ye Fan getting close to the river inheritance as he smiled lightly.

With a flash of jade light, he vanished.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 682: Refining Group Strength Gu

Fang Yuan could faintly sense Hei Lou Lan’s tribulation would result in a huge battle.

Hei Cheng was an experienced rank seven Gu Immortal, his battle strength surpassing Fang Yuan’s. Xue Song Zi was the owner of the seventh peak of Snowy Mountain blessed land and was also not an easy opponent.

Even if Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi did not create trouble, a tribulation of the Great Strength True Martial Physique would far surpass the severity of those of normal people.

Fang Yuan immediately started making preparations after he returned to Hu Immortal blessed land.

He needed to raise his battle strength in a short period of time. Battle strength usually depended on four aspects: immortal essence, killer moves, Immortal Gu and battle attainments.

Fang Yuan was already very strong in his individual fighting attainment and it would be difficult to raise in a short period of time.

He could only concentrate on the other three aspects to raise his battle strength.

Fang Yuan first looked at his funds.

To connect luck with Ye Fan, Fang Yuan made a trip to southern border and returned, costing him two beads of green grape immortal essence, which meant he had seventeen remaining.

It was clear this amount was far from enough in a huge battle. According to Fang Yuan’s previous life’s memories, it was normal to spend dozens of beads of immortal essence in a huge battle, and sometimes it could even surpass a hundred.

Fang Yuan also possessed a lot of Immortal Gu, thus he urgently needed to replenish his green grape immortal essence.

And to replenish his green grape immortal essence, Fang Yuan only had one way and that was to refine immortal essence stones.

However, Fang Yuan only had eleven and half immortal essence stones on him.

Fang Yuan entered the underground cave and appeared before wisdom Gu again.

“Wisdom Gu, I brought you some rather interesting stuff.” He greeted.

In <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, wisdom Gu communicated with Ren Zu frequently, but legends were not exempt from exaggeration.

Fang Yuan was also probing in regards to this.

No matter what he said, wisdom Gu would remain silent, instead, the wisdom light halo flickered a few times.

Fang Yuan laughed.

According to his previous experiences with wisdom Gu, the flickering of the light of wisdom represented wisdom Gu’s agreement.

Upon this, he smoothly took out the lingzhi king’s heart and planted it on the spot.

Within a few breaths of time, the soil ruptured and stems of small lingzhi mushrooms sprang out, which then rapidly grew and hardened, reaching the heights of tables and chairs.

Hu Immortal blessed land’s soil quality was different from the soil quality in Universal Life Academy’s land, and was not suitable for the growth of mushrooms.

This was the limit that the mushrooms could grow here.

Fang Yuan did not feel any regrets as it was just a passing thought from him. He then casually sat down on a lingzhi mushroom.

The lingzhi trembled violently, but unexpectedly was able to bear the heavy weight of Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body.

This cave had been empty before, but now it was no longer dull; wisdom Gu was like a curious baby, flying and fluttering around the shorter mushrooms. At first, its speed was slow and careful, but soon its flying tracks revealed its cheerful state, like a baby finding an interesting toy.

“Wisdom Gu, let’s get back to the main matter.” Fang Yuan looked on for a while before speaking.

Wisdom Gu stopped on top of a lingzhi and emitted the light of wisdom again, which shrouded Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan silently activated delight in water and mountain Gu and began to deduce an Immortal Gu remnant recipe.

Seven days later, he had succeeded in perfecting three Immortal Gu remnant recipes. Using a stargate, he completed the transaction with Lang Ya land spirit, gaining forty immortal essence stones.

According to the price agreed upon beforehand, perfecting an over ninety percent complete Immortal Gu remnant recipe would pay off ten immortal essence stones, while perfecting an eighty percent or more completed Immortal Gu remnant recipe would pay off twenty immortal essence stones.

Among the Immortal Gu remnant recipes Fang Yuan perfected this time, two were ninety percent completed remnant recipes while one was an eighty-nine percent completed remnant recipe.

Not all Immortal Gu remnant recipes with Lang Ya land spirit were ninety percent or over completed remnant recipes, there were many with lower completion rates.

Fang Yuan obtained many immortal essence stones in every transaction but he also had to spend a lot of immortal essence stones to completely deduce the Immortal Gu remnant recipes. Normally, his net profits were around twenty-six immortal essence stones in every transaction with Lang Ya land spirit.

He got a piece of good news from Little Hu Immortal land spirit when he returned to Hu Immortal blessed land: A Gu Immortal seemed to have found the dead body of a six headed snake and its parts and organs were being separately sold in treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan immediately activated divine sense Gu and connected to treasure yellow heaven using his Eight Arm Immortal identity to contact the seller.

His calamity beckoning Gu fed on the black blood of the desolate beast six headed snake.

However, when Fang Yuan saw the store, there was skin, flesh, bones, eyes and snake tendons, but there was no blood for sale.

“When I found this desolate beast carcass by accident, the six headed snake had already been dead for close to a hundred years. Thus, the black blood had completely seeped out. I am truly sorry.” The seller replied.

Fang Yuan discerned the corpse of the six headed snake and saw that the Gu Immortal was indeed telling the truth.

Fang Yuan was not discouraged, however. And still decided to buy the bones of this six headed snake.

The six headed snake was a desolate beast with strength comparable to rank six Gu Immortals. Its whole body was a treasure and every part could be used in the process of Gu refinement.

Fang Yuan had a lot of money on hand, directly buying off the whole skeleton, spending three immortal essence stones.

The bone marrow in the bones could produce blood. In his previous life, Fang Yuan in his previous life was a blood path expert and excelled in extracting blood. With this skeleton, calamity beckoning Gu’s food was taken care of.

After buying the skeleton, Fang Yuan then went to the store of Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei.

As expected, divine senses were moving around frequently here and the business was thriving, all because of the Gu refinement material – stone monkey fur.

Shi Lei did not personally stay in treasure yellow heaven, instead leaving behind a proud will to look over the store.

Wisdom path inheritances were rare, but wisdom path Gu were not rare in treasure yellow heaven. Almost all Gu Immortals had some for the convenience in trading in treasure yellow heaven. If not, Fang Yuan would not have bought so many wisdom path Gu back then.

“How much are you selling this stone monkey fur for?” Fang Yuan inquired Shi Lei’s will.

Shi Lei’s will stiffly said: “One immortal essence stone for one hundred pieces of fur!”

Even Fang Yuan who was very experienced was shocked by this price: “How is it so expensive?”

Shi Lei’s proud will raised his head: “Expensive? You can go buy in other places then.”

Fang Yuan snorted inwardly, this stone monkey fur was researched by Shi Lei, how could other places sell it? This was the benefit of monopolizing the market, the price could be casually set. On the contrary, even though the price was so high, many Gu Immortals were buying it.

Which Gu Immortal did not have Gu recipes and Immortal Gu remnant recipes! Maybe one or two them might happen to require this stone monkey fur as a refinement material.

There were also a portion of Gu Immortals who had other intentions.

They bought stone monkey fur to attempt to research the secret of its production. If their blessed lands could also produce it, they could get a share of these exorbitant profits.

“Don’t say I didn’t tell you later, if you want to research the production of this stone monkey fur, you need at least a thousand strands of fur. If it is any less, you won’t be able to research anything.” Shi Lei’s proud will also knew of the Gu Immortals’ intention and instead used this to peddle the goods, not in the least worried of the secret of stone monkey fur’s production being researched by others.

Fang Yuan attempted to haggle but Shi Lei’s proud will did not yield, impatiently saying: “Go away, go away, don’t make a disturbance if you are not buying! There are plenty of other buyers! A poor wretch, and still wishing to buy ancient Gu refinement material!”

Fang Yuan snorted.

Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei was a rank seven Gu Immortal with a fiery and arrogant temper. Not only was he good at managing his blessed land, he also had outstanding battle strength.

He was conceited but it was true he had the capital to be conceited.

During the five regions chaotic war, he had dominated a territory. Later when Feng Jiu Ge perished while invading Lang Ya blessed land, there was no one that could suppress Shi Lei and his battle strength grew to the extent that even central continent’s ten great sects could not restrain him.

He was unruly and untamed, not willing to be under anyone, creating chaos in central continent and even publicly announcing he would attack leading immortals!

A great battle was imminent and Fang Yuan urgently required stone monkey fur to refine group strength Gu, thus regardless of how haughty Shi Lei’s proud will was, he could only suffer this grievance silently and buy stone monkey fur.

He used five immortal essence stones to buy five hundred stone monkey fur.

With stone monkey fur on hand, Fang Yuan started refining group strength Gu.

Group strength Gu was an extinct Gu classified under strength path; its ability was to converge the strength of a group into one. If it was matched with the killer move myriad self, it would greatly raise Fang Yuan’s strength.

Fang Yuan did not want to refine just one rank five group strength Gu, the more he had the better. At this moment, the old hairy men he had purchased before could finally display their worth.

These old hairy men did not have long to live but each of them was a refinement path expert. Fang Yuan divided the group strength Gu recipe into different parts, leaving the unimportant, high success rate and repetitive procedures for the hairy men to work on. And he, as a refinement path master, concentrated on the crucial procedures.

They worked for three days and three nights without any rest, refining a total of forty-five rank five group strength Gu.

Gu refinement had its own difficulty, the higher the rank, the easier it was to fail. If every Gu refinement had succeeded, the five hundred stone monkey fur would have turned into five hundred group strength Gu.

However, after spending large numbers of refinement materials and all the stone monkey fur, Fang Yuan only obtained forty-five in the end.

This success rate was the result of the group strength Gu recipe already being easy to refine and having a high success rate.

Fang Yuan could also naturally use the light of wisdom to improve group strength Gu’s recipe or find substitute materials for stone monkey fur.

However, Fang Yuan did not have the time to slowly deduce these.

Even if he had time, he might not have the necessary refinement path foundation. After all, this was an ancient Gu recipe and was vastly different to the current systems of refinement path.

Even if had the foundation and time, he had to calculate his expenses and benefits. The deduction process would cost him green grape immortal essence. And he was unable to estimate this amount of green grape immortal essence.

After refining group strength Gu, Fang Yuan did not rest, instead he used the light of wisdom to ponder upon his killer move, myriad self. He spent a day of time before he was finally able to perfectly merge the forty five group strength Gu with myriad self.

While Fang Yuan was refining, Little Hu Immortal finally completed her assignment, finishing the construction of the blood pool in the western part of Hu Immortal blessed land.

The blood pool was extremely large, like a lake. In the center of the pool, the six headed snake’s skeleton was bobbing up and down; the intense odor of blood pervaded over a huge surrounding area. There were large numbers of Gu worms in the pool, creating a formation which continually consumed the skeleton to create black blood.

The core of the Gu formation was the rank five Battle Bone Wheel which Fang Yuan had obtained from northern plains.

Hu Immortal blessed land’s time flow was five times faster than the outside world of central continent. Because of this, Fang Yuan was able to make as much preparation as he could when there were only five to six days remaining till the appointed time in northern plains.

Time passed and the day of Hei Lou Lan’s tribulation approached closer and closer.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng returned to Hu Immortal Blessed Land through a stargate.

He brought a pleasant surprise with him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 683: Hei Lou Lan’s Immortal Ascension (1/3)

“Underworld jellyfish... deepsea lightning eels... you actually managed to gather these ingredients.” Fang Yuan inspected the goods as he looked at Tai Bai

Yun Sheng in surprise.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had singlehandedly obtained the food to feed worldly wave trace Gu without any issue!

This was out of Fang Yuan’s expectations.

“When I displayed landscape as before Immortal Gu, I was greatly welcomed by many Gu Immortals. They took the initiative to interact with me, at the moment, there are already Gu Immortals who have invited me to join Hai Shi blessed land. However, this matter can only be approved after half of the elders in Hai Shi blessed land agree.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng said.

Fang Yuan nodded, Hai Shi blessed land was the biggest lone cultivator force in eastern sea.

Gu cultivators that joined Hai Shi blessed land were mostly lone cultivators, but this was different from northern plains’ Snowy Mountain blessed land.

Snowy Mountain blessed land was the base camp of demonic path cultivators, they were at odds with the righteous path forces. But Hai Shi blessed land mixed both demonic and righteous path members, there were even more Gu Immortals here than in Snowy Mountain, and there were many different factions which together controlled the largest market in eastern sea. Precisely because of this, Hai Shi blessed land became the most popular spot for Gu Immortals to sell their loot.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a lone cultivator, his landscape as before Immortal Gu was much needed by many Gu Immortals.

But Gu worms were hard to snatch, one thought from Tai Bai Yun Sheng would destroy Landscape as Before. It was completely understandable that the Gu Immortals wanted to make Tai Bai Yun Sheng one of their own.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng continued: “I bought sufficient underworld jellyfish in Hai Shi blessed land. After getting your letter, I left Hai Shi blessed land, searching for a secluded island to use stargate Gu. But by coincidence, I met an immortal zombie who called himself Shark Demon, he was a member of Zombie Alliance, and was bringing large amounts of goods to Hai Shi blessed land to sell.”

“He had many deepsea lightning eels with him, if these eels were sold in Hai Shi blessed land, there would certainly be many buyers. I approached him and asked if I could purchase them. Shark Demon was unwilling at first and had a terrible attitude. But after knowing I was Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he changed his mind. He was willing to sell the deepsea lightning eels to me, but I had to help him repair a secret blessed land. I agreed to his request, and obtained the deepsea lightning eels without spending any immortal essence stones.”

“This Shark Demon actually trusted you this much?” Fang Yuan heard this and frowned deeply.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng laughed, replying nonchalantly: “Oh, he had a rule path Immortal Gu called Death Sentence Awaits. I cooperated with him and accepted the use of Death Sentence Awaits, obtaining his trust.”

“Death Sentence Awaits is a rank seven Immortal Gu that belongs to the rule path, it can set a person’s time of death. Once the time was up, even a Gu Immortal would die.” Fang Yuan’s frown intensified.

“That is right, this Shark Demon is a rank seven immortal zombie.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng chuckled.

“Old Bai, you are handing him your weakness. Actually, even without food to feed the Immortal Gu, it would have been fine for the moment.” Fang Yuan looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng, sighing.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng laughed, patting Fang Yuan’s leg, his height was obviously not enough to reach Fang Yuan’s shoulders.

He purposely explained: “Do you think I did it for you? No. That secret blessed land is not owned by Shark Demon, it is Yu Lu blessed land. Fairy Yu Lu was the second disciple of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. It is a pity that Yu Lu blessed land’s entrance had already been destroyed. Shark Demon needs my Landscape as Before to restore the entrance. I used this opportunity to gain his trust and also a chance to explore Yu Lu blessed land.”

Fang Yuan looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng deeply in the eye, not continuing this conversation.

Two days later, the six headed snake’s large skeleton had completed melted in the blood pool, Fang Yuan obtained a great amount of black blood.

He fed calamity beckoning Immortal Gu this black blood, before using Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s jellyfish and eels to feed worldly wave trace Immortal Gu.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had indeed helped Fang Yuan greatly.

In an intense battle, worldly wave trace Immortal Gu would definitely be needed, after feeding this Gu, Fang Yuan could use it without worries.

Checking his assets, Fang Yuan still had twenty-nine and a half immortal essence stones, as well as seventeen green grape immortal essence beads.

Without hesitation, he used almost all his immortal essence stones and converted them into his green grape immortal essence. He now had forty-six green grape immortal essence beads and half an immortal essence stone.

“Forty-six beads... it’s not enough.” Fang Yuan went to borrow from Fairy Li Shan and Lang Ya land spirit.

Fairy Li Shan lent him thirty immortal essence stones straight away without saying anything.

As for Lang Ya land spirit, after urging him for so long, he only lent fifteen.

These three deals with Lang Ya land spirit did not establish too deep of a relationship. Fang Yuan had wanted to borrow Immortal Gu from him, but seeing this, he did not engage in fantasy.

He converted the forty-five immortal essence stones into green grape immortal essence. At this point, he had an unprecedented amount of green grape immortal essence, ninety-one beads.

The grand powers of the river of time was unstoppable by men.

As time continued to pass, the day when Hei Lou Lan went through the immortal ascension tribulation had finally arrived.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng used a stargate to reach northern plains as per the agreement.

Looking left and right, it was a field of snow with absolute silence. In the snowy field, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan had long since arrived.

“This place is...” Fang Yuan’s gaze was hesitant.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng answered: “This is the absolute ice battlefield at the north-most part of northern plains, legend says that Reckless Savage Demon Venerable had once fought strong enemies in here and destroyed the place, creating an area of void. After the battle ended, he turned into the immemorial desolate beast ice phoenix, breathing out absolute profound ice to freeze and restore this place.”

“That’s right.” Fairy Li Shan nodded: “Because this place has little vitality, the heaven and earth qi here are not very thick.”

Fang Yuan looked at Hei Lou Lan, smiling: “You purposely chose this place to undergo the tribulation, are you afraid that the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity would be too fierce? But without sufficient heaven and earth qi, the foundation of your immortal aperture would be affected, as well as your future potential as a Gu Immortal.”

Fairy Li Shan opened her palm, as a Gu worm appeared: “If heaven and earth qi are insufficient, we will use these Gu.”

Fang Yuan looked over and his heart jumped: “Oh? The ancient qi path rank five Gu worm — small family qi Gu? This is the first time I’ve seen it. Rumors say that this Gu can absorb all sorts of qi from heaven and earth, storing them. It can advance to become the Immortal Gu Big Family Qi!”

Qi path appeared before strength path, but it also declined earlier.

Fairy Li Shan was prepared to explain, but seeing that Fang Yuan recognized it, she praised: “Fang Yuan, you are truly knowledgeable, not bad, not bad at all.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng heard this and his eyes shone: “This Gu worm is great! Heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities form when heaven and earth qi are too thick and accumulate. With this Gu worm, can we indirectly control the heaven and earth qi, to reduce the force of the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity?”

“The immortal ascension of one of the ten extreme physiques has a terrifying heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity. Oh, if I did not obtain this small family qi Gu, I would have no confidence towards Little Lan ascending to Gu Immortal realm.” Fairy Li Shan sighed, staring at Hei Lou Lan with much concern and worry.

Next, her gaze flickered and she turned to Fang Yuan: “Fang Yuan, if Hei Lou Lan’s ascension succeeds, you will only need to return me half the immortal essence stones you borrowed. At the same time, I will give you the recipe of small family qi Gu.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s gaze shone with joy, while Fang Yuan nodded emotionlessly.

“Other than the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, what I am worried about now is that old scoundrel Hei Cheng. When I entered northern plains last time, he discovered me immediately, evidently, he has placed a tracking method on me, but I could not find it at all.”

After pausing for a while, Hei Lou Lan continued: “We have to make plans for the worst possible outcome, Hei Cheng’s tracking method is definitely not simple. If he comes and attacks at the crucial moment, there is little possibility of me dealing with him. But if I can endure past the taking in of qi, my body would be washed by the three qi, it would be reinforced by the dao marks and cleansed completely, achieving a qualitative transformation, even if Hei Cheng used an Immortal Gu tracking method, it would be wiped clean. As long as we make it to the second step, we can leave.”

“I understand, you can start.” Fang Yuan said.

Hei Lou Lan nodded, closing her eyes.

The first step in advancing to Gu Immortal was breaking the aperture.

Apertures of the ten extremes were different from ordinary apertures, the latter required the Gu Master to charge at the aperture walls to break them, but the former’s aperture walls had long been over burdened.

The moment Hei Lou Lan released the seal formed by Gu worms on her aperture, the ten extreme aperture shattered on its own.

Her originally intact body immediately had a hole, as a huge attraction force towards the heaven and earth qi burst out.

The deep blue sky started to form clouds. As the icy fields shook slightly, cracks appeared on the thick surface of the ice.

Hei Lou Lan relaxed her body, she allowed the formless force created in heaven and earth to lift her body into the air.

Her skin was white and pale like snow, her black hair was let down as she wore tight fitting black clothing, showing off the curves of her body.

The wind started blowing.

In a dozen breaths of time, the winds were blowing wildly as the small wind became an intense storm.

Clouds merged and covered the sky, looming above Hei Lou Lan. From the shattered surface of the ice, traces of smoke started rising up — this was the sign that earth qi had been drawn up above the ice ground.

Soon, it started snowing in the sky.

The clouds became thicker, and the color turned from grey-white to deep black.

Within the entirety of the surroundings, it was completely dark.

The winds blew and icy cold frost that could chill bones filled the entire area. At the same time, earth qi burst out, cracking noises erupted, earth qi gushed out into the world like a fountain.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Fairy Li Shan retreated, hiding their figures.

Only Fang Yuan remained, looking at the sky. His tall body was like an immovable rock statue, the intense winds and snow could not move him at all.

These were all mortal level winds and snow, no matter how big they were, they could not threaten this immortal zombie.

As snow covered the lands, and intense winds blew, they became louder and louder, like the cries of demons and ghosts.

“As expected of a tribulation of the ten extreme physique, the heaven and earth qi here are so thin, yet so much was still drawn. If this was any other region in northern plains, it would simply be unthinkable!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng hid far away, not showing his figure. Looking at this scene, his heart was shocked.

From the winds and snow, heaven and earth qi slowly became thicker.

Hei Lou Lan started to sprinkle the small family qi Gu.

These rank five Gu flew into the sky or landed on the ground, they started to absorb heaven and earth qi and store them. They greatly reduced the speed of the accumulation of heaven and earth qi.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 684: Hei Lou Lan’s Immortal Ascension (2/3)

“With small family qi Gu, there would be a way to influence the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity.” Fang Yuan watched silently by the side.

The intense winds were howling, snow was descending along with sharp icicles, crashing on Fang Yuan’s body. Fang Yuan did not move at all, the immortal zombie body was unharmed.

Bam bam bam...

Hei Lou Lan continued to sprinkle the small family qi Gu, when these ancient qi path Gu worms had reached the limit of their capacity, she retrieved them. During this process, many small family qi Gu had self-detonated and the absorbed heaven and earth qi were returned to the world.

When a Gu Immortal ascends, because of the turbulence of heaven and earth qi, both mortal Gu and Immortal Gu would receive backlash.

Even though Hei Lou Lan prepared the small family qi Gu, she could only influence the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity slightly, she could not control it.

As time continued to pass, unavoidably, the heaven and earth qi became thicker, and were at the point of creating the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity.

As the howling of the winds continued, Hei Lou Lan’s black hair danced in the air, the snow and ice hitting her face. Clothes made using Gu worms were much more durable than ordinary clothes. Thus, her clothes were fluttering in the air, not tearing even under the pull of the intense winds.

Fang Yuan found it slightly weird: “It has already been so long, where is the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity?”

His eyes shone with radiance, by activating Gu worms to investigate carefully, the wind and snow could not block his vision.

Fang Yuan went into high alert, heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities had many variations, some were powerful and had strong auras, some were mysterious and scary, he could not predict it, Gu Masters could only test their luck and be as prepared as they could to deal with it.

Howl, howl, howl!

The sound of the wind was becoming sharper, it hurt the eardrums as Fang Yuan felt some frustration in his heart.

Suddenly, he jolted to awareness, he activated his investigative Gu forcefully and looked into the clouds. He immediately saw that a purple chime had formed, it was moving slowly and emitting a sound.

It turns out the heavenly tribulation had formed already!

As the noise became louder and sharper, it fused with the wind, spreading over a hundred li!

Even if Fang Yuan covered his ears, he could not block this noise. Although he had prepared some sound path mortal Gu, his sound path attainment was too low, he could not defend against it.

He felt more and more frustrated, his heart was beating faster, following the sound of the chime, and his blood was starting to flow backwards.

Hei Lou Lan was groaning, blood was oozing from her mouth and nose, her state was worse than Fang Yuan’s.

Fang Yuan squinted, cold light flashing in his eyes: “This is the heart shocking noise tribulation, when Gu Masters hear it, their blood would flow backwards, and their hearts would beat faster. If a long time passes, their blood will flow towards the seven orifices, and their heart would explode. I have the body of an immortal zombie, my zombie blood is ice cold, it is almost stagnant, thus I am affected the least. But Hei Lou Lan is the Great Strength True Martial Physique, her blood is the most active among us, she is countered by the heart shocking noise calamity! We must destroy the source of it, the purple chime!”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan stopped hesitating, he activated light illusion bat wings and flew into the sky.

He flew rapidly, but the closer he got to the purple chime, the more his heart was shocked. When he was three hundred steps away from it, his heart was beating so quickly even his muscles and tendons were vibrating.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s body froze, he opened his mouth and vomited a mouthful of green zombie blood.

A moment ago, his heart was unable to take the pressure and burst.

But Fang Yuan was an immortal zombie, his heart was not a weak point, such an injury awakened his fierce nature.

He laughed freakishly, spreading all eight arms and using his killer move.

Icy Drill Stardust!

Eight starlight lumps formed and crashed towards the tribulation cloud.

They drilled into the tribulation cloud, slamming into the purple chime. The chime was not strong, it broke immediately. The heart shocking demonic sound stopped, and Fang Yuan’s pressure was lifted.

But at the next moment, the tribulation cloud rumbled, as heaven qi gathered, a new purple chime was about to be formed.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with cold light, how could the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity be defeated so easily in one strike? This was not unexpected.

Icy Drill Stardust!

His eight arms gathered, using the killer move again, creating a huge icy drill stardust lump.

Within the dark blue starlight lump, stardust fragments were shining brightly, colliding into each other at a chaotic pace.

Fang Yuan shouted lightly, his eights arms pushed forward, sending the starlight lump towards the tribulation cloud.

The larger the starlight lump, the slower its speed. But after colliding into the purple chime again, a large amount of starlight specks remained, they were emitting a crackling sound as they self-detonated.

Heaven qi gathered, forming more purple chimes, but were instantly destroyed by the starlight lump.

The starlight lump could be seen shrinking with the naked eye, but the enchanting heart shocking noise did not enter Fang Yuan’s ears again.

Fang Yuan succeeded in suppressing the heavenly tribulation, but he did not let down his guard. The immortal ascension of the ten extreme physiques, how could it be so simple?

He continued to unleash icy drill stardust, although this killer move was a mortal killer move, it had amazing power, after fusing Dou Min Jun’s inheritance into it, this killer move was worth four immortal essence stones.

Icy drill stardust continued to be replenished, as the purple chime continued to form and break down.

Fang Yuan looked down at Hei Lou Lan below him.

The latter’s breathing had soothed, her eyes were shut tight. Her expression was determined, she sat cross-legged in the air, unmoving. On her beautiful pale face, there were dried blood traces.

But the recovery of the Great Strength True Martial Physique was the best of the ten extreme physiques, Hei Lou Lan’s injuries had already recovered.

Her hands did not stop moving, she scattered small family qi Gu while retrieving the ones that were full. She had changed her battle strategy, she scattered the small family qi Gu on the ground and rarely in the sky.

One could deduce from this that she did not have many small family qi Gu, after all, this was an ancient qi path Gu worm. Even if they had the Gu recipe, it was very difficult to find refinement materials.

Even if Hei Lou Lan had ample time to prepare, she did not have many of this Gu with her.

Fang Yuan retracted his gaze, at this time, he could hear some weeping noises.

The voice was desolate and pitiful, it sounded like the crying of a begrudged wife, or the sleepy talk of a young maiden in love, it was a whisper that was very affectionate and caring, but at times it also had the tone of hatred and grudge.

Fang Yuan heard this and even his immortal zombie body felt a sense of weakness. His entire body could not exert strength, he was like a hero out of breath, together with an endless longing for his homeland, his bravery fell short and his ambitions could not be fulfilled. His firm fists and legs felt like they were hitting on cotton, it was like he had just recovered from a terrible illness, he had no strength in him.

Fang Yuan shouted out in dismay, using his investigative Gu and looking up, he saw that near the purple chime, a pink chime had appeared.

The chime continued to vibrate, creating a weeping noise.

This was the decadent noise tribulation!

Before Fang Yuan used his killer move to shatter the pink chime, enchanting noise assaulted him again.

Bang... bang... bang!

The sound was like thunder, it was like the pounding of a giant, every sound was hitting on the deepest parts of Fang Yuan’s mind, in his mind, his thoughts could not move, they were all shattered by this thunderous noise.

Tremor thought noise tribulation!

Immortal zombies have slow cognition, this heavenly tribulation directly countered Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan felt an intense dizziness, he could not think and his body was wavering, he almost fell from this high altitude.

At the moment of crisis, he used his remaining bit of clarity to activate delight in water and mountain Gu.

Three green grape immortal essence beads entered delight in water and mountain Gu, as joyful will burst out and spread in Fang Yuan’s entire mind.

Fang Yuan had just stabilized his body when, swoosh!

Suddenly, there was a sharp noise near his ears, approaching rapidly.

Fang Yuan subconsciously tried to block it, but at the next moment, his five fingers were all sliced off, the five fingers were covered by the wind and snow, vanishing without a trace.

Swish swish swish...

The sharp noise continued to emit, getting closer to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, he focused his gaze and used three investigative methods consecutively. He could faintly see that there were very thin invisible lines in the wind and snow, it was sharp and formed a huge web, moving towards Fang Yuan without giving him any place to dodge.

These invisible lines were not of material nature, they were all formed using sounds.

Fang Yuan watched with his hair on end: “This is the flying blade noise tribulation! Hair armor! Light illusion bat wings!”

He activated his defensive killer move and his movement killer move.

Fang Yuan moved continually, his black armor broke apart and after leaving his body, the fragments turned into black zombie hair.

Fang Yuan twisted left and right, he finally found a rather loose gap and broke through the sound web.

But the invisible sound lines still came for him. The hair armor lasted for another three breaths before reaching its limit and breaking.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, he used his defensive killer move again, forming a new layer of hair armor that barely covered his body.

He dodged left and right, his body moving like a phantom, as lumps of icy drill stardust were shot up.

The stardust touched the sound web and were blocked, cut into pieces of fragments.

At the same time, Fang Yuan’s fingers grew rapidly, his shattered heart formed once again.

Howl howl howl...

Without the starlight lump’s restraint, the first purple chime formed again.

The ghostly cries resounded again, Fang Yuan’s blood flowed in reverse again, his newly formed heart started beating rapidly as it went on the path of self-detonation.

Fang Yuan’s gaze concentrated.

Be it the icy drill stardust, light illusion bat wings, or hair armor, they had been used to their limits, yet the dangerous situation could not be alleviated!

This was only Hei Lou Lan’s heavenly tribulation, the earthly calamity had not formed yet due to the small family qi Gu’s suppression.

In Fang Yuan’s mind, huge amounts of joyful will were expended, in a short period, ten percent were used up.

“My current battle strength is upper-tier of rank six, but I cannot do anything to this heavenly tribulation. The ascension of the ten extreme physiques, the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity is truly terrifying, this is several times the power compared to an ordinary Gu Immortal! Hmm?”

Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s expression changed, his heart sank.

He found out that in this tribulation cloud, another four chimes of varying colors were forming.

Earlier, with just four chimes, Fang Yuan was already near his limits. Now that four new ones appeared, Fang Yuan could only use the immortal killer move myriad self.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng watched at a hidden location with much fear: “It seems the immortal ascension of the ten extreme physique is not just several times as dangerous as an ordinary Gu Master, it is at least a dozen times as terrifying.”

He had thought that his own tribulation was tough. But to think that Hei Lou Lan’s tribulation was far more dangerous than his!

“Oh no, this is not an ordinary heavenly tribulation, it is one of the ten catastrophes, eight layer enchanting noise tribulation, when all eight noises are emitted, it would have a range of eight hundred and eighty li, heaven and earth would shake and immortals would be exterminated!” Far away, Fairy Li Shan who had been hiding recognized the eight chimes and almost wanted to help out.

“Eight layer enchanting noise tribulation... if all eight noises are emitted at once, the strength would be unstoppable, this tribulation would end in failure without a trace of hope of success.” Fang Yuan’s expression was cold, the tougher the situation, the stronger his battle intent.

Crack crack crack.

During the process, all the mortal Gu he used were getting destroyed continuously.

The backlash of heaven and earth was causing him to lose a large number of mortal Gu.

But Fang Yuan made ample preparations, he had prepared a large number of Gu worms and his killer moves had never stopped activating.

Just as he was about to use myriad self, Hei Lou Lan who was below him opened her eyes!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 685: Hei Lou Lan’s Immortal Ascension (3/3)

From Hei Lou Lan’s eyes, a dazzling light was bursting out.

The light gathered and took form, like that of a real pillar, it pierced through the tribulation cloud and shot the two chimes.

With a loud bang, the chimes broke, completely eliminated and was unable to regenerate.

The light pillar only lasted for a moment before Hei Lou Lan shut her eyes, the entire process was extremely short, only lasting a breath of time.

This was the light of divert disaster!

Hei Lou Lan used the Immortal Gu Divert Disaster!

The power of an Immortal Gu was extraordinary, it was a stark contrast to Fang Yuan’s mortal killer move icy drill stardust.

Hei Lou Lan controlled her breathing before opening her eyes again.

Two pillars of divert disaster light shot out, destroying two chimes again.

Fang Yuan was secretly shocked: “Such power, this was not a simple use of divert disaster Immortal Gu, it was used together with mortal Gu. Using her sight to unleash the attack, it is much more concentrated and precise. In other words, Hei Lou Lan had already developed an immortal killer move using the Immortal Gu Divert Disaster as the core!”

Hei Lou Lan had outstanding talent, not long after obtaining divert disaster Gu, she developed an immortal killer move?

This was very strange and unthinkable to Fang Yuan, but the truth was right before him, it was indisputable!

At this time, Hei Lou Lan opened her eyes again, eliminating two chimes again.

But at this time, she shut her eyes, two lines of fresh blood flowed down the corner of her eyes. her eyelashes were trembling and her body was shaking. On her palm, she held divert disaster Gu tightly, cracks were appearing on it and it was wailing out softly.

This frantically created immortal killer move was not complete, it had very potent weaknesses.

“Two chimes left!” Hei Lou Lan did not care about it, she gritted her teeth and opened her eyes forcefully, destroying the heavenly tribulation’s last two chimes in one shot.

Guh! Guh!

Her beautiful eyes had shattered at this moment, as two streams of blood poured out of her empty eye sockets.

With a bang, the divert disaster Immortal Gu burst in her hands, breaking into light particles, slipping from the cracks of her fingers and vanishing.

Hei Lou Lan had gone blind!

Although she had the Great Strength True Martial Physique and had terrifying recovery speed, the injury in her eyes was due to the forceful activation of the Immortal Gu Divert Disaster, dao marks of luck path were in her eye sockets, she could not heal them.

The rank six divert disaster Immortal Gu was also destroyed in this process, becoming history.

Hei Lou Lan was extremely resolute, she had the heart of a formidable character, after paying a terrible price, she destroyed the heavenly tribulation for good, now only the earthly calamity was left!

At this moment, Fang Yuan praised her in his heart: “Resolute!”

The immortal ascension of the ten extreme physiques gave birth to a terrifying heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity. What’s worse was that they still had a strong foe waiting to interfere. Under the immense pressure of life and death, Hei Lou Lan had no choice but to sacrifice divert disaster Immortal Gu, as well as a pair of her eyes.

This was a decision common people would find hard to make.

Such sacrifice, it showed Hei Lou Lan’s ambitious and ruthless disposition, she had an unrivaled spirit.

As heaven qi poured down like he stream of a waterfall, earth qi gushed up like a golden fountain. Hei Lou Lan’s foundation and deep accumulation turned into a large amount of human qi as it burst out from within her.

“This is the human qi of one of the ten extreme physiques?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng watched with a dumbfounded expression.

Hei Lou Lan’s human qi was many times more than Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng combined.

The human qi of the ten extreme physiques was usually overwhelmingly thick, this was mostly due to the ten extreme apertures.

Even with enough mental preparation, spectators were still shocked.

As the three qi converged, it formed a huge cocoon that covered up Hei Lou Lan.

At this point, she had reached the second step — taking in the qi.

Hei Lou Lan was focused on balancing the three qi, she took back all her small family qi Gu and would not be able to face her enemies for the time being.

Crack...

Frozen rivers shattered, heaven and earth shook.

At this moment, a thunderous sound could be heard, as a huge frenzied ape jumped out from deep within a frozen river.

With a loud thud, the frenzied ape landed on the ground, it created two huge holes where it stood. The ice fragments were scattered around the huge holes.

The frenzied ape beat its chest, shouting out loudly. Its voice was so loud that even the rumbling tribulation cloud froze for a second.

Its body was like snow, its eyes were red like blood, its monkey fur spiked out like icicles, piercing towards heaven. It was hundreds of meters tall, large like a hill, it has an incredible aura and was extremely fierce. Compared to it, Fang Yuan was like a bug in front of a cat.

“The earthly calamity formed! It is an ancient desolate beast calamity! This is an earthly calamity that only rank seven Gu Immortals encounter.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s heart snak.

One name was echoing in Fairy Li Shan’s heart: “Icefall Divine Ape!”

Fang Yuan’s expression was still as water, the icefall divine ape’s huge shadow was casted down, it had rank seven battle strength. If it had Immortal Gu in it, then it would be even harder to deal with, the battle situation would become much harder.

Hei Lou Lan focused on balancing the three qi, Hei Cheng did not appear, while Fairy Li Shan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were hiding elsewhere, with this extremely dangerous situation, a ruthless light flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes, he clapped his palms before him, using his killer move earlier than planned.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Self!

Fist qi burst out, grand and overwhelming, like an overflowing river, it was like a raging sea.

In just a few breaths of time, over ten thousand of Fang Yuan’s strength path phantoms appeared, surrounding his main body. They were in all directions around him, in the sky and on the ground, in the formation of a sphere.

To prevent the likelihood of him having not enough time because of a fierce battle, Fang Yuan had activated the immortal killer move myriad self several times before going to northern plains.

The strength path phantom army was stored in his own immortal aperture. The strength path phantoms could exist for a period of time, and because they were not living beings, they were not affected by the death energy in his immortal aperture.

When Fang Yuan released a portion of them, his aura finally matched the ape’s.

The icefall divine ape was ready to attack, it wanted to charge over, but seeing the grand strength path phantom army, it opened its mouth, showing its sharp fangs as its muscles contracted, it chose to wait and see.

The snow and wind blew, Fang Yuan was expressionless, his body was still like a rock as he pointed at finger at the icefall divine ape.

Immediately, the army moved and war cries filled the battlefield.

Tens of thousands of strength path phantoms moved like a tide, they whipped up a storm as they charged towards the icefall divine ape.

“Such might!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng watched with his heart pounding.

This was not the first time he had seen the killer move myriad self, back in Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan had used it once to beat up the desolate beast swamp crab.

But at that time, Fang Yuan only used one bead of green grape immortal essence to summon ten thousand phantoms.

Right now, an army several times that size was attacking, as the army’s momentum rose, they had an imposing aura that could shake the world.

The army pushed forward, towards the icefall divine ape, and then splitting into four along the way.

One went left, one went right, one went up, and the last one charge ahead.

The icefall divine ape’s wild nature was awakened, it charged ahead instead of retreating. Fang Yuan’s strength path phantom army moved according to his will fluidly, with his command, they spread out, like a huge web, encircling the icefall divine ape.

“Kill! Kill! Kill!” Strength path phantoms roared, they were like ants attacking the icefall divine ape collectively.

The icefall divine ape attacked left and right, it destroyed countless phantoms but could not break through Fang Yuan’s encirclement.

“it really is such a formidable killer move in this world! Together with his master level attainment in enslavement path, no wonder Little Lan placed so much importance on him.” Seeing this, Fairy Li Shan was overjoyed.

One after another, strength path phantoms flew out of the aperture. Fang Yuan had more than a hundred thousand troops in his immortal aperture, he only summoned eighty thousand now.

Among these strength path phantoms, the most ordinary ones had two arms, some had four arms, or even six arms. The more arms they had, the stronger their battle strength.

The icefall divine ape roared angrily, it battled fiercely, its huge body and monstrous strength, along with the icicles pointing outwards on its body, caused the strength path phantoms to suffer heavy injuries before dying.

But only a portion of the scattered fist qi was expended, the rest would gather and form into strength path phantoms once again.

Because of this, the reduction of the number of phantoms of Fang Yuan’s army was greatly slowed.

During the process, the joyful will in Fang Yuan’s mind was used up intensely. Manipulating tens of thousands of troops, the expenditure of his joyful will was immense. In just a few dozen breaths, Fang Yuan had activated delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu nearly ten times.

“Strange, this icefall divine ape has no Immortal Gu despite being an ancient desolate beast, in fact, it does not even have a single mortal Gu! Where did the earthly calamity find this oddity?”

Fang Yuan could see the truth behind the icefall divine ape, it had no Immortal Gu, or even any mortal Gu, this ancient desolate beast’s threat was greatly lowered.

“In that case, it is time to finish you off!” Fang Yuan’s lips curled up, the ruthless light in his eyes burst out as he entered the field directly, charging ahead.

The light illusion bat wings on his back flickered several times, as Fang Yuan’s speed increased like he was a shooting star. It was quite a sight, with the explosive sounds along the way, he traveled a huge distance in a few breaths of time, descending like a demon god, right above the icefall divine ape.

“Come, group strength support me!” Fang Yuan shouted excitedly in his heart.

At once, the forty-five group strength Gu in his immortal aperture were activated at once.

Group strength Gu had completely been incorporated into myriad self by Fang Yuan, once activated, it caused a new transformation in myriad self!

Hundreds of strength path phantoms dispersed, their strength had collectively gathered in Fang Yuan under the might of group strength Gu.

Fang Yuan raised one right arm, slamming down on icefall divine ape’s skull.

With a loud bang.

His entire forearm slammed on the divine ape’s skull mercilessly.

The intense recoil caused Fang Yuan’s forearm to burst open, as his bones were shattered and his flesh and blood were reduced to dust.

As for icefall divine ape’s skull, there was a huge hole in it. The crack in the hole spread at lightning speed, affecting the entire ape’s head.

At the next moment, the icefall divine ape’s skull exploded!

Seeing this, be it Fairy Li Shan or Tai Bai Yun Sheng, they were so shocked their eyeballs almost popped out.

Even Fang Yuan was shocked: “What is going on? The entire ape head was destroyed? That shouldn’t be, this is an ancient desolate beast!”

Killer move myriad self was completed by him alone, group strength Gu was added in by him as well, he was very clear of his own strength after group strength Gu was added. The most he could do was to cause the icefall divine ape’s skull to crack and bleed, but the entire head would not explode.

“Be careful!” At this moment, Tai Bai Yun Sheng could not help but show himself, shouting a warning.

Fang Yuan turned around and looked, his pupils shrinking rapidly.

Icefall divine ape’s huge fist had gotten close to Fang Yuan without him noticing anything, it slammed down at lightning speed, like a poisonous snake’s assault.

Fang Yuan could not dodge it in time, he was hit directly by the huge fist!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 686: Fang Yuan learns from Reckless Savage Demon Venerable!

Boom. Fang Yuan was sent flying like an insect, making a huge arc in the air before ruthlessly falling down on the hard ice surface.

Rumble!

Ice chunks scattered crazily, the force sent Fang Yuan flying like an artillery shell, he pierced through the ice layer and traveled for an enormous distance before finally stopping.

Fang Yuan lay amidst the broken ice, seriously injured. Even with an immortal zombie body, he could not budge a bit. His whole body was like a torn sack, the dark green zombie blood flowing out from the innumerable wounds, bones were fractured with some piercing into skin and flesh while some jutted out of the body. Only three of the eight arms were remaining. One torn off arm was lying not far away from Fang Yuan.

A long ice channel was created just now, cut open by Fang Yuan using his own body.

“Cough cough...”

Fang Yuan coughed for a while and stared with an incredulous gaze at the icefall divine ape, it was still standing upright despite losing its head.

“What the hell is this?”

According to common sense, even an ancient desolate beast would die if their head was smashed apart. But this icefall divine ape which had lost its head not only did not fall down, instead it struck Fang Yuan with a very heavy counterattack.

Fang Yuan recalled that enormous punch, common sense would have stated that such an enormous force would have already produced a sonic boom. But it was unexpectedly noiseless during the whole process!

This absolutely was not something the icefall divine ape should have been capable of accomplishing, because it did not have any Gu worms on it!

Fang Yuan tried to move his body; the immortal zombie body shuddered but still lay down on the ice, its strength failing.

However, Fang Yuan could sense his body was rapidly recovering.

Zombies used death energy as life force. As long as they were not destroyed in an instant, the abundant death energy would provide them with astonishing recovery speed.

“Fang Yuan!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly flew over and at the same time, pitch black rays of light shone out from his hand and fell on Fang Yuan’s body.

These pitch black rays of light were carefully prepared for Fang Yuan by Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and were not some ordinary healing Gu worms.

Ordinary healing Gu worms would bring vitality and stimulate life force, but this was of no use to Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body.

Fang Yuan needed to increase his death energy, the stronger the death energy, the faster his recovery speed would be. Thus, zombies were also known as ‘living dead’.

With Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s help, Fang Yuan’s recovery speed surged violently.

“Great.” Fang Yuan gave a horrifying smile. He soon recovered his movement ability and stood up from the ice surface.

Boom. An astonishing change happened to the icefall divine ape, it unexpectedly self-detonated.

After the detonation, a large group of pegasi were left in the icefall divine ape’s place.

These pegasi were anything but ordinary, different from the two winged pegasi of the current era. They were larger than two winged pegasus by two to three times. On their backs were at least two pairs of wings, while some even had three pairs.

These were ancient pegasus, the more wings they had, the stronger their battle strength. Four winged pegasi were at the level of beast emperors while six winged pegasi were desolate beasts!

In the current five regions, the ancient pegasi were already extinct.

Most of these pegasi were four winged pegasi while there were a few with six wings!

The pegasus group neighed before colliding with Fang Yuan’s strength path phantom army.

It was a massacre, Fang Yuan’s strength path phantom army was steadily losing ground, suffering heavy losses.

“This is not a beast calamity! What in the world is this?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly flew to Fang Yuan’s side and looked at this scene with his eyes wide open.

The ancient pegasi and strength path phantom army started slaughtering each other, creating a chaotic battle situation.

Fang Yuan suffered great losses.

It was because the strength path phantom had been in a loose formation to deal with the giant icefall divine ape. Now that the giant beast was changed to a united group of pegasi, the loose phantom army formation instead allowed the pegasus group to rampage unhindered. Despite the strength path phantoms’ coordination being exquisite, forming into many small battle groups, they still had more defeats than wins and suffered huge damage.

However, there were no corpses in this slaughter.

There was no need to speak of strength path phantoms which were condensed from fist qi. The crucial point was that the pegasus group had intangible bodies that turned into nothingness after they were killed.

“Could it be....” Fang Yuan’s red eyes suddenly shone. He racked his brains, searching for the answer in his memories, before a thought hit him as he considered an elusive possibility.

This possibility made him look towards Hei Lou Lan.

However, Hei Lou Lan was covered in the enormous cocoon of three qi, which was so thick that he could not even see her shadow. As long as she was able to consume this three qi cocoon, her potential after becoming a Gu Immortal would be extremely deep and her future prospects would be filled with bright radiance.

Fang Yuan turned around to look at the pegasus group. His eyes narrowed and a smile appeared on his face; he waved his hand towards the back, transmitting his voice to Tai Bai Yun Sheng who was rushing over: “Old Bai, step back and watch me.”

He then showed his sharp teeth and charged forward.

He pierced into the chaotic battle of the pegasus group and strength path phantom army.

In an instant, it was like Fang Yuan had poked a hornet’s nest as countless ancient pegasi charged towards him. He activated hair armor and raised his arms, protecting his head.

After he locked in on a target, Fang Yuan suddenly shouted and pounced towards an injured four winged Pegasus, forcibly smashing it down from the sky to the ground.

Bang. Man and horse crashed heavily into the ground, the ice surface cracked, forming a deep pit.

Fang Yuan’s whole body was filled with injuries, bones fractured in many places, skin was opened and flesh split. The recovered body was once again crushed into a miserable state.

Who knew how many pegasi attacked him when he charged into the chaotic battle and smashed into the four winged pegasus.

These pegasi naturally would not let him go. Large numbers of pegasi gathered into a white flood that fell down from the sky towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan used all his strength to suppress the intensely struggling four winged pegasus under him, while the wills in his mind surged like boiling water, dissipating intensely.

Two strength path phantom groups in the sky coordinated, and intercepted the diving pegasus group like a giant scissor.

At the same time, large numbers of strength path phantoms surged out from Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture and formed a hemispherical formation above Fang Yuan, resisting the fierce offensive of the pegasus group without any regard for the losses.

The four winged pegasus under Fang Yuan was anything but cute as it neighed and struggled with all its power. It had such high strength that even Fang Yuan, a strength path Gu Immortal with an immortal zombie body, was almost unable to contain it.

Time was pressing, the opportunity could not be lost. Fang Yuan raised his fists high and smashed down ruthlessly, immediately bursting the pegasus’s head, however the headless Pegasus was still struggling as if the loss of its head had no affect.

Fang Yuan then punched down with all his eight arms, bombarding the pegasus with heavy punches.

The thick ice surface below them could not endure this punishment and started cracking.

A normal four winged pegasus was equal to a beast emperor with rank five battle strength. Even if they had strong wild Gu worms, they would have turned into meat paste under Fang Yuan’s offensive.

This strange four winged pegasus did not have any Gu worms on it and when Fang Yuan crushed it, it dissipated into thin air without leaving any hair, bone or even blood.

The next moment, however, Fang Yuan’s narrowed eyes suddenly opened wide. Following the complete destruction of the four winged pegasus, a formless will rushed into his mind; his eyes revealed enormous shock and joy.

He kneeled on the broken ice surface and ceased all movement, resembling a statue. Despite the fierce slaughter going on above him, he did not seem to notice anything, as if he was in a dream.

“Fang Yuan!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was extremely worried when he saw this, flying towards Fang Yuan.

“Come back, don’t disturb him. This is a golden opportunity for him!” Fairy Li Shan, however, suddenly transmitted her voice.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng narrowed his eyes, immediately asking in anger: “It seems you know what this calamity is? Fairy Li Shan! We are allies, we came specially to protect Hei Lou Lan in crossing the tribulation. You actually were deceiving us! What are you up to?!”

“This is not deceit, don’t forget the Snowy Mountain Alliance, if I had deceived you, I would have already died according to the oath! This was only speculation which I am now sure of.” Fairy Li Shan quickly explained.

She had only hidden this crucial piece of information without mentioning it, it did not mean she was deceiving them.

Even if they were allied, they could not just share all their secrets. Fang Yuan also would not do that.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s breathing sped up as he flew rapidly while irritatedly asking at the same time: “Then are you still not going to tell me now what the hell is this speculation?!”

Fairy Li Shan let out a breath of turbid air and spoke quickly: “Tai Bai Yun Sheng, you also know the origins of this icy plain. Back then, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable fought a huge battle, destroying a part of northern plains, turning that area into void. To repair the void, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable turned into an immemorial ice phoenix, and breathed out extremely cold profound ice which froze this place, turning it into a large icy plain.”

“Get to the point!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted.

Fairy Li Shan understood Tai Bai Yun Sheng's feelings and did not blame him, continuing with her explanation: "Everyone knows Reckless Savage Demon Venerable was a strength path Immortal Venerable, founder of the strength path and also of transformation path. Without exception, every rank nine venerable is a child of the Great Dao, the closest to the true essence of heaven and earth. Not only did laws follow their words, every action of theirs carried true meaning and even the movement of their gazes conveyed the profundities of nature. Even if they perish, their main killer move would be imprinted in heaven and earth, forming a kind of heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity."

Tai Bai Yun Sheng involuntarily recalled the formless hands: "Yes, I know about this."

Fairy Li Shan continued: "Back then, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable turned into an ice phoenix and breathed profound ice to condense into the icy plain we are on now. Don't forget the ice phoenix transformation is a transformation path killer move. As the creator of the icy plain, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable imprinted the true meaning of strength path and transformation path in the midst of this piece of heaven and earth. A piece of speculation was circulated among a few Gu Immortals, or more precisely a rumor. As long as a strength path or transformation path Gu Master ascends to Gu Immortal in this icy plain, it will cause a resonance of dao fragments, evoking the true meaning of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's strength path and transformation path."

Tai Bai Yun Sheng shook: "Then, then this means, isn't this?!"

"Right. the icefall divine ape was only a false appearance and the ancient pegasi were also the same; they were true meanings of strength path and transformation path, taking on the form of an earthly calamity! When someone completely shatters these external forms, the small true meaning contained within would break out and enter the body of their own accord! What is true meaning? It is the comprehension towards heaven and earth, Great Dao and law fragments. Fang Yuan destroyed a pegasus and obtained the true meaning within it. In other words, Fang Yuan is receiving teachings from Reckless Savage Demon Venerable!"

Fairy Li Shan spoke shocking words and also revealed heavy envy.

How huge was an opportunity to receive the teachings of a rank nine venerable!

If one said the three qi converged to let the Gu Master comprehend heaven and earth and gain natural inspiration, then passing tribulation in this place and obtaining true meaning was to study under Reckless Savage Demon Venerable!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 687: True Meaning Infusion

Fairy Li Shan continued with a deeply moved tone: "Reportedly, the rumor of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's true meaning came from the currently rank seven Domination Immortal Chu Du of northern plains. It is said that when he became a strength path Gu Immortal three hundred years ago, it was at this icy plain that he passed his tribulation. It is just that there have been limited numbers of Gu Immortals advancing over these recent years. And among these newly advanced Gu Immortals, there are few that are of transformation path and even fewer of strength path. Thus, this piece of speculation was very hard to prove.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng snorted but no longer hurried towards Fang Yuan.

Although Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan deceived him and Fang Yuan, this was after all such an enormous benefit, thus Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s anger dissipated for the most part.

He turned around and looked deeply at Hei Lou Lan. Hei Lou Lan was covered in the three qi cocoon and she was progressing smoothly. The qi cocoon’s volume was slowly shrinking methodically.

‘This woman has truly great ambitions, she is not satisfied with being a ten extreme physique immortal, she also wants to learn from Reckless Savage Demon Venerable. She is not afraid that her strength is lacking and she would die because of her greed. Speaking of which, this style of taking risks is actually similar to Fang Yuan’s, they are both lunatics!’ Tai Bai Yun Sheng heaved a sigh inwardly.

“So it was indeed like this, they are the external forms of true meaning, ahahhaah!” Fang Yuan laughed loudly and slowly stood up from his kneeling position with his expression revealing his high spirits.

He then gazed at the ancient pegasus group again, but the way he looked at them was different this time.

His gaze was extremely heated, like a pervert that had his lust held back for several thousands of years, who then saw an absolutely beautiful woman. Or like a bandit whose greed would never be satisfied, seeing the world’s greatest treasury!

“I have advanced to a strength path Gu Immortal but my strength path foundation was shallow and I could only reach quasi-grandmaster realm in strength path! It is extremely difficult to make one’s realm progress even a little, and needs a sufficient quantity of regular accumulation in order to initiate a qualitative transformation. But now, as long as I kill these true meaning external forms, I can rapidly raise my strength path realm, elevating it to genuine grandmaster realm!”

Memories and experiences of five hundred years of bitter struggles made Fang Yuan extremely aware of the difficulty in progressing one’s realm.

Realm represented the understanding of Great Dao! One’s strength path realm was a Gu Master’s understanding of the Dao of strength. Realm was generally divided into ordinary, quasi-master, master, quasi-grandmaster, grandmaster, quasi-great grandmaster, great grandmaster, quasi-supreme grandmaster and supreme grandmaster.

Most Gu Masters would only have ordinary realm in their whole lives. Quasi-masters were geniuses or old, experienced Gu Masters.

Masters were extremely rare! For instance, in the Imperial Court contest which was an assembly of heroes of the large northern plains, only Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng had master level attainment in flying among those who reached Imperial Court blessed land. While in enslavement path, there were only Jiang Bao Ya, Yang Po Ying, Ma Zun, Chang Shan Yin (Fang Yuan) and Nu Er Tu, five masters over the entire contest!

And speaking of refinement path supreme grandmasters, even throughout human history, there had only been three: Long Hair Ancestor, Old Eccentric Tian Nan and Old Immortal Kong Jue!

Every advancement of a realm meant an astonishing upgrade in one’s battle strength!

It was because higher realm meant deeper understanding of the law fragments in heaven and earth. It allowed Gu Masters to refine new, better Gu worms, create more killer moves and display greater dominance of their paths.

Fang Yuan had the most understanding of blood path among all the major paths. In his previous life, he was an awe-inspiring blood path grandmaster!

His battle strength was outstanding and he had created many new Gu worms of blood path, and these new Gu had even surpassed Blood Sea Ancestor’s in some aspects!

He had also researched many blood path killer moves, and despite them being mortal killer moves, they had extraordinary power.

Fang Yuan now had the immortal killer move myriad self, the representation of the convergence of enslavement and strength path, a unique killer move created from squeezing out all his potential, and with the help of natural inspiration and wisdom Gu.

But even with such a killer move, when his battle strength was considered, it was not a match with his peak blood path attainment in his previous life.

Fang Yuan could suppress his immortal killer move myriad self by just using his previous life’s blood path killer moves.

He had even created, from initially nothing, some remnant recipes of completely new Immortal Gu with his grandmaster realm. Of course, the completion rates of these remnant recipes were rather low.

This was the world of Gu, and more than that, it was the world of Gu Masters.

Gu worms involved nurturing, use and refinement, and the bulk of these fundamentals relied upon Gu Masters.

Generation after generation of Gu Masters brought forth new developments, constantly using their plentiful creative prowess to research new Gu worms and open new paths, which then created the extremely wondrous way of Gu which covered all aspects! Thus, heroes were able to emerge like stars in the sky over the boundless history of humans.

Gu is the essence of heaven and earth, man is the spirit of all living things!

The famed people of the past had accomplishments as high as the mountains that the later generations would find hard to surpass. However, on the whole, the strength of the five regions was growing steadily and becoming much more profound, surpassing the eras of Immemorial, Olden Antiquity and so on.

“Gu Masters nurture, use and refine Gu, getting down to the basics, it is a process of humans probing and studying nature, the world, and the Great Dao. Be it a xianxia world, a magic-based world, or a scientific world, they are all the same, they are all the exploration and study of nature and the world itself. It is only that the difference in the world’s laws make the exploration methods different.”

Once can only learn if they explore continuously. Only by learning could they have accumulation. And only with accumulation could they transcend the world!

“And in this world, the measurement of the stage-wise accomplishments of study of heaven and earth, and the Great Dao is the realm of every paths! Great Dao is a closed book, and for a Gu Master to study and explore heaven and earth, they have to use Gu worms to approach the Great Dao with different methods, they need to constantly summarize their comprehensions, need insights and require sufficient experience. However, right now I am obtaining true meaning infusion which is as if I am observing the world while standing on the shoulder of a giant! It is making Reckless Savage Demon Venerable open the pages of the closed book to the parts which I can understand and let me read it directly. This is a shortcut, an extremely rare fortuitous encounter! This will save me a great deal of time and immense effort!”

Fang Yuan was more excited the more he thought of it.

‘Hei Lou Lan! You are a lunatic! You actually wanted to learn from Reckless Savage Demon Venerable while gaining natural inspiration, and obtaining the infusion of true meaning. Hmph, are you not afraid you can’t manage to comprehend them all and be thrown into confusion, even failing your immortal ascension! However... your greed, I like it a lot. This gift from you, I shall accept it all!’

Fang Yuan shouted inwardly; with such heavy profits ahead of him, he decided to not leave behind even a little!

Myriad self! Myriad self! Myriad self!

He activated his immortal killer move nonstop; for the first time, he disregarded the costs as he activated it frantically!

Countless strength path phantoms emerged, forming a huge army inside the immortal aperture, their scale several times larger than before.

At the same time, large numbers of mortal Gu forming the immortal killer move perished, this was the backlash from heaven and earth, and also the consequences of Fang Yuan’s extreme rate of activation.

However, Fang Yuan did not feel any heartache, everything was okay as long as the core, cleanse soul Immortal Gu, did not have any problems. He had made ample preparations for this trip and had brought large numbers of mortal Gu for replenishment and substitution.

“Come!” Fang Yuan lifted his chest as countless strength path phantoms surged out from his immortal aperture.

The strength path phantom army flooded the world, as if it could engulf mountains and rivers. The sparse battle strength just before was immediately replenished and soon surpassed the previous limit, reaching a new height.

Large numbers, no, a sea of strength path phantoms filled the whole battlefield.

“This... there are at least three hundred thousand!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng and even Fairy Li Shan was stupefied at this sight.

The ancient pegasus group was firmly surrounded in the air by the strength path phantom army.

The slaughter between the two sides had reached the climax.

Fang Yuan walked leisurely on the ice surface below the ongoing aerial battle.

Joyful will were created and rapidly expended in his mind. Under his command, the army coordinated to form different groups, and like giant hands, they pounced upon four winged pegasi without caring for losses.

Next, dozens of strength path phantoms worked together to forcefully push the four winged pegasi down to the ice surface.

Then, Fang Yuan would slowly walk over, raise his eight thick giant arms and shower down punches for the kill.

Miserable neighing sounds filled the area as pegasi were shattered apart. True meaning rushed into Fang Yuan’s mind and the profundities of the Great Dao were rapidly absorbed. His movement stiffened for several breaths of time before recovering once again.

Fang Yuan thus engaged in crazy slaughter of ancient pegasi.

“Refreshing!” After another true meaning infusion, he excitedly roared, his gaze was so blood red that it was difficult to stare at it directly!

The strength path realm which would have taken years and even dozens of years to raise, was rapidly advancing following the true meaning infusion.

Fang Yuan felt incomparable pleasure and enjoyment.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was watching with a dumbstruck expression, Fang Yuan’s madness made him feel a chill from the depths of his heart. Even Fairy Li Shan could not help but be silent.

After less than half of the pegasus group was destroyed, the earthly calamity transformed again. The pegasus group merged together to form thirty-three giant snakes.

These giant snakes were as large as a house and had extremely powerful defense, covered with black armor and shields. When they fell on the ground, they immediately occupied terrain advantage.

“Another transformation and this time to shield snake?” Fang Yuan laughed malevolently; he did not move, the strength path phantom army in the air had already shrouded over the snakes like dark clouds.

By occupying the ground, these shield snakes only needed to defend the attacks from above unlike if they were flying in the air where they could be attacked from all directions.

Fang Yuan’s slaughter immediately slowed down.

It took a good while for the huge army to handle one shield snake.

Fang Yuan laughed maniacally as he pounced down upon it.

The shield snake was filled with injuries and before it could raise its head, it was bombarded by Fang Yuan’s eight arms. The enormous strength from the overlaying of forty-five group strength Gu directly destroyed the shield snake.

An enormous true meaning that far surpassed the previous ones charged into Fang Yuan’s mind.

The snake corpse that had lost its head suddenly dissipated, transforming into small snakes; in few moments, the place was filled with a sea of ferocious and slippery snakes.

Fang Yuan was in the process of comprehending essence of Great Dao and could not budge, thus he fell in the sea of snakes.

The snake sea attacked madly, quickly covering his enormous body.

Fang Yuan’s comprehension this time was different from before. In the previous true meaning infusion, Fang Yuan felt like he had turned into a pegasus, living its life from birth to death, from young to old, running on the firm ground and soaring on the vast sky...

He sensed the unique body structure of Pegasus, the use of various strengths and the ingenuity of using power.

And now, he turned into a snake from breaking out of the egg to devouring all kinds of preys. He personally experienced the twisting snake body, the strength of its constriction, the muscle rhythm when it swallowed its food, the force application when its head moved like lightning to capture prey...

Not only was it raising the strength path realm, but transformation path and even flying master attainment were advancing.

These experiences extended and stepped on the maxim of strength path. These maxims covered extremely large information and were hard to describe using words. Because the wonders of Great Dao could not be put to words; words would be too simple, too dull, too shallow and simply not be able to portray its mysteries and wonders!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 688: Second Battle With Hei Cheng (1/2)

“Fang Yuan!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s shout could be heard loudly, Fang Yuan opened his eyes and woke up from within the sea of snakes.

All around him, from head to toe, there were snakes. Countless snakes were coiling around him, trying to kill and devour him. If not for Fang Yuan’s hair armor protecting him, these small snakes might have drilled into his stomach already.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, he was joyful instead of shocked!

He stretched out eight huge arms, grabbing with his hands as he destroyed dozens of small snakes. Tens of gushed into his mind.

His consciousness was blur for a moment, but recovered immediately.

As he slowly adapted to it, and as his attainment level increased, the speed of him absorbing the became faster and faster.

Addicted to killing, he withdrew the hair armor and opened his mouth, sucking.

Immediately, countless small snakes crawled into his mouth.

He opened his mouth to chew, his sharp fangs tearing the snake body into shreds, next he swallowed and the snake corpse vanished down his throat, disappearing from this world.

Waves of filled his heart and mind unceasingly.

Strength path , transformation path , all these turned into traces and were absorbed by him. At the same time, with trial and error, he became familiar with the new knowledge, it gave Fang Yuan a much deeper understanding in other territories. For example, his flying attainment.

After Fang Yuan killed the third huge shield snake, his strength path attainment level went from quasi-grandmaster to grandmaster realm.

Strength path grandmaster!

That is to say, if given a bit more time, Fang Yuan would reach the level of blood path in his previous life! Because his blood path attainment level was also grandmaster realm.

Right now, his mind was filled with countless thoughts and countless inspiration. His understanding of strength path had reached a whole new level, he could create many strength path Gu worms and many mortal killer moves that were related to strength path now.

But Fang Yuan was not satisfied, he continued slaughtering.

The earthly calamity failed after transforming into the icefall divine ape, the ancient pegasus, and the shield snake group. Now, there was a new transformation, it turned onto a group of rockmen.

Fang Yuan manipulated the army, killing the rockmen, he trampled on their heads and swallowed their bodies, understanding the power of thickness.

The earthly calamity turned into a bee group next, as Fang Yuan self-detonated his strength path phantoms continuously, learning the power of piercing.

The earthly calamity transformed into the rhinoceros, as Fang Yuan killed them, he learned about the power of charging.

As his strength path attainment continued to rise, after he stabilized his grandmaster realm, he started charging towards quasi-great grandmaster realm.

Right at this moment, two bright rainbows, one black and one white, pierced the air and descended.

“We finally found you!”

“You were in the icy plains indeed.”

As the rainbow faded, two people, Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi appeared.

The strong enemies had appeared!

“So many strength path phantoms, what is going on?” Xue Song Zi’s pupils shrunk, before they shone in a bright heated light: “Oh? This is... it seems the rumors were true, undergoing tribulation in the icy plains will possibly attract Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s true meaning!”

Hei Cheng’s eyes were eerily looking at the battlefield, next his gaze focused on the three colored qi cocoon.

After such a long time, Hei Lou Lan had not finished absorbing the three qi yet, her human qi was simply too huge in quantity!

“Hehehe, Hei Lou Lan, you guys have nowhere to run, why don’t you surrender.” Hei Cheng laughed heartily, he opened his right palm and revealed an Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu gave off an eerie blue light, it was a time path rank six Immortal Gu.

The aura of the Immortal Gu was surging, it resonated with the two time path Immortal Gu in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s aperture, causing them to vibrate.

Fairy Li Shan’s expression changed, she showed herself and stood in front of Hei Lou Lan, she spoke coldly: “Instant Pause?”

This was the rank six time path Immortal Gu Instant Pause, it could freeze the time of the target for six moments, with this Gu around, Hei Cheng did not have to worry about Fang Yuan running away using Fixed Immortal Travel.

Hei Cheng saw Fairy Li Shan and his gaze concentrated, he spoke with depe intent: “To think that the mastermind behind all this was Fairy Li Shan. Why are you sowing discord between us father and daughter? Oh I see, as expected, which Gu Immortal would not be interested in the yin-yang life extension method in my possession?”

Saying so, Hei Cheng laughed sarcastically, he showed a mocking expression to Fairy Li Shan as he oozed with confidence.

Fairy Li Shan’s expression was solemn, her voice became louder as it filled the skies: “Hei Cheng, you are destined to fail today. Don’t think of causing any harm to Little Lan, because the person stopping you will be me!”

Saying so, Fairy Li Shan stopped hiding it, she revealed the grand aura of a rank seven Gu Immortal.

At the same time, the surface of the ice broke, countless tree roots grew rapidly, they coiled around and moved like huge pythons.

The trees grew quickly, it soon became a forested area. After a few breaths, pear blossoms grew, the smell of the flowers was fragrant and spread for several li.

Fairy Li Shan stood under the tree, her body was shielded by the leaves and branches, vanishing.

Meanwhile, Hei Lou Lan was still balancing the three qi, she was on top of the pear tree.

Battlefield killer move — Pear Orchard!

“To think that third leader’s cultivation level had reached rank seven secretly. Be careful Hei Cheng, third leader cultivates earth and woof path, she had set up this battlefield earlier, I am also a member of Snowy Mountain blessed land, I cannot battle Fairy Li Shan due to the alliance rules.” Xue Song Zi reminded.

Usually when Fairy Li Shan showed up in northern plains, she always revealed rank six cultivation. Few knew about her true cultivation level.

Hei Cheng’s expression was calm, his gaze shifted to Fang Yuan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Fairy Li Shan for a moment, before turning back to Hei Lou Lan.

“One immortal zombie, one rank six Gu Immortal, one rank seven Gu Immortal...” Hei Cheng muttered, he snorted coldly, saying to Xue Song Zi: “Go deal with that immortal zombie and the rank six Gu Immortal, after I kill Fairy Li Shan, we will take down Hei Lou Lan.”

His tone was filled with decisiveness and confidence.

Although Fairy Li Shan was rank seven, her battle strength should be at the lower tier of rank seven, it was quite far from Hei Cheng.

“Okay!” Seeing that the toughest foe was going to be dealt with by Hei Cheng, Xue Song Zi agreed.

He flew down, straight towards the earthly calamity.

He was someone who had knowledge, he knew that the earthly calamity contained a Demon Venerable, true meaning, even if he was not a strength path or transformation path Gu Immortal, he wanted a share of it. Gu Immortals usually ventured into many paths so that they could assist their main path, who would be unhappy with a higher attainment?

“You’re courting death!” Fang Yuan saw Xue Song Zi rushing here and shouted angrily, a ruthless light flashing in his eyes.

“Merely a rank six immortal zombie, you dare to speak such words!” Xue Song Zi snorted in disdain, he rapidly got closer.

In his first battle with Hei Cheng, Fang Yuan focused on retreating, to escape from the place. Thus, he did not reveal his true battle strength.

Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi analyzed the situation, and assumed that Fang Yuan’s two movement Immortal Gu were lent to him by other Gu Immortals.

Even though Fang Yuan’s strength path phantom army was fighting against the earthly calamity intensely.

First, the earthly calamity was already half destroyed, second, wide range killer move were very common, third, most immortal zombie’s battle strength was lower than ordinary Gu Immortals, and finally, there was a rank six Gu Immortal and a rank seven Gu Immortal on Fang Yuan’s side, Xue Song Zi subconsciously underestimated Fang Yuan’s threat.

Xue Song Zi’s speed was very fast, he was right above Fang Yuan in a moment’s time.

“I’ll let you taste my power!” He growled, he pushed with his hands and used his killer moves.

Drifting Snow! Ice Mountain Awl! Snow Sparrow Crisis!

He used three killer moves at once, this showed Xue Song Zi extraordinary control over manipulating Gu worms.

These three killer moves were all attack type killer moves. In an instant, intense winds blew as snow blew in the air, countless snowflakes gathered into birds, they moved fluidly in the intense wind and snow, with much spiritualism, there were thousands of them! Twenty to thirty icicles that were the size of mountains were covered in sharp spikes as they flew towards Fang Yuan, trying to pierce through his body.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, he waved his hand and the myriad army moved!

Myriad self moved with courage, their shouts overwhelmed the heavens, everywhere the army went, ice mountains collapsed, snow sparrows cried, and the snow stopped.

“Eh?!” Xue Song Zi’s expression changed, only after fighting did he realize the truly fearsome might of myriad self!

Seeing that the myriad self army was coming for him, Xue Song Zi growled angrily as his hair stood up, traces and traces of frost energy shot out from them.

In an instant, the frost energy spread quickly and formed an ice crystal domain in the air.

Battlefield killer move — Snow Domain!

“Towering pine tree, icy hair dragon stream!” Xue Song Zi growled, using two defensive killer moves at once.

Immediately, pine trees grew in the snow domain, from nothingness, they grew, becoming large trees with high density, the branches tied the trees together, forming many thick walls of defense.

As for his long snow white hair, they extended and gave off a dragon’s cry in the air. The long hair turned into dozens of dragon shaped ice, coiling around his body and forming a castle-like defense, with Xue Song Zi protected tightly in the most center.

However, when myriad self army charged over, pine trees collapsed, and ice dragons shattered, the snow domain lasted for a moment before breaking apart.

“An immortal killer move! Who in the world is this immortal zombie?” Xue Song Zi’s expression was pale, his eyes showed panic as he retreated quickly, even faster than when he came, he was in a pathetic state!

At the same time, Hei Cheng and Fairy Li Shan had engaged in intense battle.

The battle of the two had reached the climax right from the start.

Hei Cheng used dark arrow Immortal Gu to its limits, shooting three dark arrows into the pear orchard, flying around and trying to locate Fairy Li Shan’s true hiding place.

In the pear orchard, it was dense with vegetation, an pear blossoms fell from the trees. The roots were tangled together and growing, as hundreds of sunflower king lotus appeared.

As the lotus opened, beams of burning light shot towards Hei Cheng.

Hei Cheng’s body shuddered, dark liquid oozed out of his black robe, dying the area around him black. This was also a battlefield killer move, called dark veil.

In the dark veil, black balls were shot out, pouring down like rain.

The black balls slammed into the pear orchard, forming huge pitch black spirals. This was the killer move that Hei Lou Lan used in the imperial court contest — Dark Vortex.

The dark vortex expanded, corroding the trees and flowers, causing huge holes to form in the pear orchard.

Meanwhile, the heated beams of sunlight also tore open some areas of the dark veil.

As the two continued to attack, the light beams fell in quantity while the number of dark vortexes increased, Hei Cheng quickly gained the upper hand.

As expected of a famous rank seven Gu Immortal expert in northern plains!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 689: Second Battle With Hei Cheng (2/2)

“Found it.” Hei Cheng’s eyes shone brightly, he laughed sinisterly as he used his investigative killer move, finding out Fairy Li Shan’s figure in the pear orchard.

He immediately used dark arrow Immortal Gu to its limit, as three dark arrows shot out into the air, towards its target.

The pear orchard went into action, countless tree roots stretched out, moved and coiled around like dragons, they desperately blocked these three arrows.

At the crucial moment, Fairy Li Shan was gritted her teeth, her eyes bright as a lamp.

She shouted in her heart: “Earth flower lotus burial!”

The ground exploded loudly, as a huge man eating flower appeared at lightning speed.

The man eating flower opened its mouth, swallowing a dark arrow. Next, the entire man eating flower’s size shrunk, it was less than half of its original mass, but it could trap the dark arrow temporarily.

Hei Cheng snorted, his gaze was shining as the swallowed dark arrow was trying to escape, forming a sharp pointed bulge in the man eating flower’s surface.

But next, more man eating flowers appeared from the ground. The second man eating flower ate the first man eating flower, shrinking after that. The third man eating flower ate the second man eating flower. Repeating the process, after seventeen to eighteen man eating flowers were summoned, Hei Cheng’s connection to this dark arrow fell by at least thirty percent.

Hei Cheng knew that this dark arrow could not escape in the short run, his attention was on his two remaining arrows.

Fairy Li Shan’s expression was pale, she shouted lowly: “Fading heavenly flower.”

A large number of pear blossoms flew, they were pure as white snow, they floating in the air and turned into light specks.

The dark arrow’s speed was fast, but the great number of light specks were all over the sky, during the process of the arrow’s flight, it was stained.

Hot sparks developed on the dark arrow which was covered in light specks, white spots appeared on the dark arrow, causing its speed and power to fall.

Hei Cheng snorted, he knew the other party was well prepared. He was openly being targeted by his enemies in the dark, everyone knew about this Immortal Gu Dark Arrow, thus his attack was countered.

But he was not to be trifled with, even though he did not develop an immortal killer move using dark arrow Immortal Gu as the core Gu, he had been trying and had obtained several mortal killer moves that could cause changes to the dark arrows.

Hei Cheng stared with his eyes, using a set of mortal Gu in his immortal aperture. The two dark arrows changed directions, meeting in the air and fusing, becoming one again.

After fusing, the dark arrow was darker without a single light speck, it regained its former speed and power.

The dark arrow shot like lightning, stabbing into a huge trunk in pear orchard.

In Hei Cheng’s field of vision, Fairy Li Shan was hiding in this tree trunk.

But at the next moment, Fairy Li Shan voice came from the other side: “You fell for it, Hei Cheng. Tree flower sheds tears!”

A bright flower bloomed in the tree trunk, as thick nectar oozed out from the center of the flower, it was extremely fragrant.

Dark arrow hit an wooden puppet that resembled Fairy Li Shan, the nectar spread and covered this dark arrow completely.

Thereafter, the nectar solidified, becoming like amber as it sealed the dark arrow inside.

“Hei Cheng, today, you will definitely fail!” Fairy Li Shan’s body was on top of a tree crown, although she was pale and perspiring profusely, her eyes were bright and her aura was strong.

Hei Cheng’s great strength was highly attributed to the dark arrow Immortal Gu.

This was an attack type Immortal Gu, Fairy Li Shan only had a mountain pledge Gu, she could not face it head on. She could only exert her methods and use three mortal killer moves to seal the dark arrows.

After the dark arrows were sealed, Hei Cheng lost his strongest means of attacking.

“Really? You think that’s all I have?” Hei Cheng stood in the dark veil, looking down at Fairy Li Shan as he showed a mocking smile towards Fairy Li Shan.

Under Fairy Li Shan’s supervision, he stretched out his arm, opening his palm and revealing a black pearl.

This black pearl was about the size of a rice bowl, it was black and shiny, like a black crystal. On the surface of this translucent pearl, one could see a boar shaped animal sleeping inside.

Fairy Li Shan saw this pearl and her eyes immediately enlarged, she showed a shocked and scared expression: “This is Dark Prison?”

Hei Cheng nodded slightly: “That’s right, this is my Hei tribe’s rank six Immortal Gu House — Dark Prison.”

His voice was monotone, but it contained a feeling of pride.

Hei Cheng was not Hei tribe’s supreme first elder, but to ensure that this trip had no accidents, he paid a huge price and borrow this item from Hei tribe’s supreme first elder.

“This is bad...” Fairy Li Shan’s heart sank to rock bottom. Dark prison was a beast stable, trapped inside was the ancient desolate beast sharp tusk boar. If it was summoned, Fairy Li Shan would be in deep trouble.

Be it pear orchard, earth flower lotus burial, fading heavenly flower, or tree flower sheds tears, these were all mortal killer move. In order to deal with Hei Cheng’s dark arrow Immortal Gu, Fairy Li Shan had thought through it carefully and devised three killer moves that could temporarily seal the dark arrows.

But because of this, her mind was worn out and her head was hurting. Although she had the pear orchard battlefield, she had fallen into a disadvantage against Hei Cheng’s dark veil, she could only hang on and pray that Hei Lou Lan’s tribulation would finish soon, to come over and assist her.

However, sharp tusk boar was an ancient desolate beast, destroying the pear orchard was as easy as stomping on a garden. Once pear orchard was destroyed, the three ‘flower moves’ that relied on pear orchard would weaknen greatly, the dark arrows would escape.

“If that happens, all the effort I put in earlier would go to waste!” Fairy Li Shan gritted her teeth, but right at this moment, she heard a warning from Tai Bai Yun Sheng – be careful!

Of what?

Fairy Li Shan looked back, seeing that a dark arrow had secretly flew over, it was thirty centimeters away from her.

“What? But I made arrangements around here...” Fairy Li Shan was shocked, but it was too late.

The dark arrow flew over, piercing into her forehead, through her skull, and coming out of the back of her head.

“Little aunt!” Hei Lou Lan screamed, she had finally digested all three qi and had recovered her mobility. But the moment she opened her eyes, she saw that the relative that had always taken good care of her was killed by a dark arrow piercing her skull, dying a terrible death.

“It’s over.” Hei Cheng kept the ball shaped Dark Prison.

Fairy Li Shan had only seal two dark arrows, when the two arrows combined earlier, Hei Cheng had secretly shot out a third dark arrow. Using the Dark Prison to attract Fairy Li Shan’s attention, he secretly utilized several mortal killer moves, together with dark arrow, he took down all of the defenses around Fairy Li Shan.

However, at the next moment!

A flash of light shot over, as Fairy Li Shan returned to the state a moment ago, her injuries were gone and her skull was intact.

Immortal Gu Man as Before!

Far away, Tai Bai Yun Sheng breathed roughly as he said: “So close, I almost failed to make it!”

Hei Cheng’s pupils shrunk, his anger was rising.

He was not furious that Tai Bai Yun Sheng had ruined his battle result, but he was angry at Xue Song Zi for not doing his best! They had agreed that he would kill Fairy Li Shan while Xue Song Zi would kill Tai Bai Yun Sheng and the immortal zombie who was Fang Yuan.

But the result was?

Tai Bai Yun Sheng could interfere in his battle!

“Xue Song Zi...” Hei Cheng gritted his teeth, he looked at the battlefield far away.

But what Hei Cheng saw was, Xue Song Zi’s robe was tattered, he was escaping with an expression of fear. His long hair had become much shorter, he was almost bald.

His face was bruised, a part of it was swollen and his body was covered in blood, one of his arm was hanging on his body, the bone had fractured.

Hei Cheng’s pupils could not help but contract.

Xue Song Zi had healing Gu in his possession. For Gu Immortals, a fracture was not a heavy injury.

But the point was, the opponent gave Xue Song Zi absolutely no time to heal his fracture!

This... exactly how strong was the enemy?

As if answering his question, the strength path phantom army numbering over two hundred thousand shouted and caused a tremor in heaven and earth.

They were a huge mob, even thicker than the tribulation cloud in the sky, chasing after Xue Song Zi alone.

This was simply bullying!

Even this rank seven Gu Immortal Hei Cheng frowned deeply: “What is going on? Why have these strength path phantoms not been destroyed yet, in fact, even more are appearing?”

After that, he saw that half the phantom army was charging towards him.

Hei Cheng snorted coldly, he willed and several mortal killer moves were activated together.

Thousand Demon Rampage! Dark Fire! Black Wind Break!

“Kill!” The myriad self army charged.

In several breaths of time, the demons were crying, the dark fire dimmed, and the black winds dissipated.

Hei Cheng who had always been confident and relaxed finally changed his expression: “This power... this is an immortal killer move! This immortal zombie that looks inconspicuous has the highest battle strength?”

The myriad self army pressed forth, charging into Hei Cheng’s dark veil battlefield fearlessly.

The pitch black battlefield that occupied half the sky was quickly smashed and taken down, it resembled the clothing of a beggar, extremely tattered.

Hei Cheng’s eyes twitched, he had to retreat!

He was handsome and elegant, even when he retreated, he still kept his cool, his arms were like butterflies fluttering in the sky, activating mortal killer moves one after another.

But this could not stop the advancement of the myriad self army.

Just like a humongous tide, no matter how powerful his mortal killer moves were, they were like rocks in front of a tsunami, or weak little fish, they were all swept away and devoured mercilessly!

Hei Cheng squinted his eyes, his expression turned grim.

He finally understood how Xue Song Zi felt, facing the myriad self army, he was a great rank seven Gu Immortal, a famous expert in northern plains, but now he felt a sense of helplessness and weakness.

The army had formed into an overwhelming size, it was unstoppable!

“This immortal killer move... even if I use Dark Prison and release the sharp tusk boar, I will not be its match!” Hei Cheng retreated under the pressure of the army.

Under this situation, if Hei Cheng wanted to turn the situation around, he would need to kill Fang Yuan’s main body using dark arrows. But two dark arrows were already trapped by Fairy Li Shan, the remaining one could do nothing to Fang Yuan who had Immortal Gu Worldly Wave Trace.

“This lunatic, how many beads of immortal essence did he use?!” Hei Cheng cursed in his heart, his eyes were fixed on Fang Yuan who was on the ground.

Fang Yuan absorbed another trace of the Demon Venerable intent, sensing Hei Cheng’s dangerous gaze, he looked back and gave Hei Cheng a smile of disdain.

At the same time, a large portion of the army charged towards Hei Cheng.

“This fellow!” Hei Cheng finally showed a trace of nervousness. Being pincer attacked by two armies, he could only dodge in the sky. Even after he used countless mortal killer moves, he could only halt the army’s advancement slightly.

At this moment, the situation had become — two Gu Immortals were being chased down by Fang Yuan alone.

“Good job junior brother!”

Fairy Li Shan stood on the tree crown, seeing this, her expression froze slightly. She did not expect the situation to become like this.

Over at Fang Yuan’s side, he had finally destroyed the earthly calamity and obtained all of the true meaning infusion. His strength path attainment was still grandmaster realm, it did not break through again. But his transformation path attainment rose to become a transformation master. As for his flying attainment, it also grew significantly, he broke through master level and reached quasi-grandmaster realm.

But Fang Yuan was not satisfied, he said to Hei Lou Lan: “Quickly, don’t you have small family qi Gu, release all of the collected earth qi, we might attract more earthly calamity!”

Everyone heard this and were speechless.

Hei Lou Lan rolled her eyes, after the infusion of the three qi, the essence of her life had been elevated, she had transcended mortals and became a Gu Immortal. Her body was purified in all aspects, even the heavy injury in her eye sockets had healed completely.

“I have to keep these small family qi Gu to refine Immortal Gu. Time is limited, let’s retreat!” Hei Lou Lan rejected Fang Yuan’s suggestion and shouted.

Fang Yuan licked his lips, unsatisfied. But since she did not agree, there was nothing he could do.

Everyone gathered and entered Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan looked at the icy plain battlefield longingly, using Fixed Immortal Travel at long last.

Three breaths later, he vanished, returning to Snowy Mountain blessed land.

“We’re letting him leave?” Xue Song Zi and Hei Cheng gathered.

Hei Cheng’s brows rose, he said coldly: “Even if I have Instant Pause, can you break through the defense of these strength path phantoms?”

Xue Song Zi looked at the remaining myriad self army in the battlefield and was unable to say a word.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 690: A Commotion in Northern Plains, A Wisdom Path Inheritance

In the quiet room at the third branch peak of Snowy Mountain.

It was fine weather outside. Clear blue sky, refreshing air and tall white snowy mountains combined to form a tranquil and boundless view.

The fragrance of tea filled the quiet room.

Fang Yuan was gasping as he lay down with his body full of injuries; thin streams of zombie blood flowed out from the wounds and accumulated on the ground.

However, he did not care and also did not feel any pain. Seven minutes had gone by already since he had closed his eyes to rest.

Besides him, there were three others in the quiet room.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was standing next to Fang Yuan, quickly moving his hands, emitting rays of black light that were healing Fang Yuan’s injuries.

Fairy Li Shan was sitting at her old spot beside the window, absent-mindedly brewing tea, while most of her attention was focused on Hei Lou Lan who was beside her.

Hei Lou Lan was sitting cross-legged with her eyes closed, her face looked solemn and respectful like a jade statue.

There were three steps in immortal ascension: shattering the aperture, receiving qi and releasing Gu. She had completed the first two steps when undergoing tribulation in the icy plain. And after returning to the quiet room using Fixed Immortal Travel, she had started the third step.

With her foundation, the creation of her immortal aperture was a settled matter. Right now, she was probably refining Immortal Gu in her immortal aperture and resisting the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity formed in there.

By the looks of it, she was going to complete this step alone and did not want an outsider’s help.

However, if there was any problem, Hei Lou Lan would immediately ask for help; Fang Yuan, Fairy Li Shan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng would have to quickly enter Hei Lou Lan’s immortal aperture and resist the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity.

By the time the tea was boiling and gurgling, Hei Lou Lan let out a breath of turbid air and slowly opened her eyes.

This movement immediately attracted the other three’s gazes.

Fairy Li Shan stopped brewing and placed the teapot down in a hurry, asking in concern: “Success?”

Hei Lou Lan nodded.

Fairy Li Shan took a deep breath, her eyes reddened as she spoke in a choked voice filled with excitement and relief: “Little Lan, you have the Great Strength True Martial Physique and now have succeeded in becoming an immortal, you possess a super grade blessed land and have extraordinary potential. Truly, after a dark cloud comes a clear sky, if sister knew of this in the afterlife, she would certainly be happy!”

When an ordinary Gu Master advanced to Gu Immortal, their blessed land could be classified into one of three grades: high, middle or low.

When one of the ten extreme physiques advanced to Gu Immortal, they would be taking an enormous risk and naturally would have bigger gains. If their immortal ascension succeeded, their blessed land would be a super grade blessed land!

High grade blessed lands were formed with a size of 4700km2 to 6000km2, drew in a large tributary of the river of time and created over thirty beads of immortal essence. There would be plenty of heaven and earth qi remaining which could mutually interact and refine the vital Gu and core Gu into Immortal Gu.

Super grade blessed lands were even larger with a territory of over 6700 km2. The tributary of the river of time it drew in would be gigantic and the amount of green grape immortal essence created would surpass fifty beads! If there was nothing unexpected, it could create at least two Immortal Gu.

Hei Lou Lan appeared tranquil: “I have succeeded in advancing to Gu Immortal but have yet to kill that old scumbag.”

Her indifferent tone contained a deep and piercing hatred.

“Hei Lou Lan, I hate to be blunt but the chances of killing Hei Cheng with only the four of us, even if he is alone, are rather low.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng coughed, and said.

“Right, defeating a Gu Immortal is easy but killing is another thing altogether.” Fang Yuan heaved a deep sigh as he stood up, the injuries on his body had essentially healed.

Previously, in his battle with Gu Immortal Plump Lady in western desert, he had obtained superiority but Plump Lady had still escaped.

This time, he battled Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi, his phantom army had taken the lead and were able to wreak havoc, but they couldn’t trap the two Gu Immortals and could only let them retreat safely.

Myriad self was strong but there was nothing to be done about it if the enemy did not engage you head-on.

Gu Immortals were smart and knew to avoid the enemy’s strong points. In truth, Fang Yuan’s second battle with Hei Cheng could only be considered a draw.

It was true that Fang Yuan had the upper hand, but it was hard to maintain this dominance for long; if the time was stretched on, the strength path phantoms would dissipate and it would then be Hei Cheng’s turn to counterattack.

This immortal killer move indeed could build up to a big advantage, but not to the extent of being at complete dominance against Hei Cheng.

Thus, when Hei Lou Lan said to retreat, Fang Yuan did not oppose. He stopped at the right time and activated Fixed Immortal Travel, bringing them back here.

Hei Lou Lan looked at Fang Yuan and gave a slight smile: “To be able to succeed this time in resisting the enemy and allowing me to pass the tribulation is thanks to your strength.”

“Since we are allies, we naturally need to help each other out.” A sharp light flashed through Fang Yuan’s eyes.

He helped Hei Lou Lan this time, and when Immortal Crane Sect attacks Hu Immortal blessed land later, they would also have to help Fang Yuan according to the alliance agreement.

It involved reciprocity in mutual benefits for both sides.

“According to the previous agreement, here is small family qi Gu’s recipe. Also, of the thirty immortal essence stones I lent, you only need to return half.” Fairy Li Shan spoke.

She by now had a hint of Fang Yuan’s nature, only tangible benefits matched his tastes.

Fang Yuan accepted the recipe for small family qi Gu, then sighed: “In this battle, I won and also lost, consuming over sixty green grape immortal essence. The fifteen immortal essence stones I owe you, I am afraid it might take some time for me to return them.”

Fairy Li Shan was in a good mood because of Hei Lou Lan’s success in advancing, she immediately stated: “No need to hurry, whenever your circumstances are better, you can return them to me and I also won’t collect any interest on them. Also, didn’t you ask us about wisdom path inheritances?”

“Could it be that you have some clues?” Fang Yuan was pleasantly surprised.

Fairy Li Shan slowly said: “There is a clue. You are also aware of northern plains’ number one wisdom path Gu Immortal, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s death some months ago. He left behind an intact wisdom path inheritance for his successor, Dong Fang Yu Liang, but Dong Fang Yu Liang is only a mortal and it will be hard for him to preserve a Gu Immortal inheritance, especially when this inheritance is a wisdom path inheritance.”

“According to the tip-off, Dong Fang Chang Fan has placed this wisdom path inheritance in a hidden place and even Dong Fang tribe’s other Gu Immortals don’t know about its exact position. Only Dong Fang Yu Liang holds the key clue.”

Even though just before his death, Dong Fang Chang Fan had formed a non-aggression pact with Huang Jin tribes and other super forces.

However, he had not formed an agreement with demonic path Gu Immortals. His capability had not reached the point where it could sweep through both righteous and demonic.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance had already attracted the covetous gazes of many demonic path Gu Immortals. Even Dong Fang tribe’s other Gu Immortals had some thoughts on it.

Thus, Dong Fang Chang Fan made these arrangements, completely hiding his wisdom path inheritance and leaving it to only his approved successor – Dong Fang Yu Liang.

Fang Yuan was forced to think: ‘I have the wisdom path Immortal Gu Delight in Water and Mountain, but my use of it is crude at best and I am unable to display the essence of wisdom path. Treasure yellow heaven has wisdom path Gu worms on sale, but a complete wisdom path inheritance would never be on sale. Wisdom path Gu worms are easy to obtain while wisdom path inheritances are rather hard to get. If I can obtain this complete wisdom path inheritance, I believe I will be able to use fewer wills and thoughts to deduce more items.’

Dong Fang Chang Fan was the number one Gu Immortal of wisdom path in northern plains while he was alive. His inheritance would naturally arouse Fang Yuan’s interest.

But lying in front of Fang Yuan was a super force, the colossus Dong Fang tribe.

Dong Fang tribe had lost Dong Fang Chang Fan, but it still had several Gu Immortals to maintain the situation. On the contrary, Fang Yuan had just been in an intense battle with Hei Cheng and spent most of his green grape immortal essence, it was not possible for him to display the same mighty presence of the myriad self army in a short while.

“Right now, many demonic path Gu Immortals have already allied in secret to conspire for Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance. Back when Dong Fang Chang Fan was alive, both the righteous and demonic path of northern plains suffered losses from him, many were schemed against and suffered setbacks under his hands. Reportedly, his successor Dong Fang Yu Liang has talents and aptitude as strong as Dong Fang Chang Fan’s. Most of northern plains’ Gu Immortals are not willing to see a second Dong Fang Chang Fan.” Fairy Li Shan continued.

“Several months ago, some demonic path Gu Immortals already sought me out to use my mountain pledge Gu to reach a temporary alliance in their scheme for the wisdom path inheritance. But I had already made an alliance agreement with Dong Fang Chang Fan by then and could not make any moves against Dong Fang tribe. Fang Yuan, if you want, I can act as go-between and let you join this alliance. They would have a lot more detailed information and will be of great help to you when you contend for the inheritance.”

Fang Yuan did not refuse but also did not immediately agree: “I need some time to consider.”

“There is no hurry.” Hei Lou Lan said, “Right now, the biggest news in northern plains is the matter of Qin Bai Sheng capturing Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun, holding the essence of the luck path true inheritance. This matter has already caused a commotion among most of the Gu Immortals of northern plains, even those rank eight old monsters are said to have come out of their seclusions.”

Hei Lou Lan revealed a ridiculing expression: “Hehe, Qin Bai Sheng is a rank seven Gu Immortal, an expert among lone cultivators, having overpowering metal path battle strength and even being somewhat stronger than that old scoundrel Hei Cheng, but this luck path true inheritance is a thorny matter, almost all of northern plains’ Gu Immortals are looking to deal with him. Right now, Gu Immortals from all around are rushing over, while Qin Bai Sheng is a lone force and even though he occupies a blessed land, there will be countless difficulties for him in resisting these assaults, his life will certainly be quite hard.”

A cold light vaguely flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes before he muttered: “We are the survivors of the wind veil of assimilation. Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun were also involved in the event! Although they escaped early, they know about us and are barriers for us to move freely in northern plains.”

Since the destruction of Imperial Court blessed land and the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, formless hands had carried many Immortal Gu to all parts of northern plains, causing chaos, commotion and frequent battles in the world of northern plains’ Gu Immortals.

Afterwards, when most of the escaped wild Immortal Gu had been captured, the situation had calmed somewhat.

Now, however, the news of Qin Bai Sheng capturing Ma and Zhao caused undercurrents revolving around Qin Bai Sheng to surge in northern plains and the luck path true inheritance slowly formed tiny waves. As time passed, these tiny waves would definitely evolve into a huge storm that would engulf the whole of northern plains.

Fang Yuan, compared to other Gu Immortals, had much more reason to be involved in this.

However, his current strength appeared rather weak in front of such an enormous storm.

Without speaking any further, Fang Yuan took his leave and returned to Hu Immortal blessed land alone.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng remained here to heal Hei Lou Lan. Hei Lou Lan had passed the tribulation of her Immortal Gu, her immortal aperture was in ruins and required Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s Landscape as Before.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 691: Quartet Sparrow Battle Tactic

Hei tribe, Iron Eagle blessed land.

This was Hei tribe’s base camp, the blessed land was huge and extensive, it was small at the bottom and large at the top.

Because of Hei tribe’s first generation ancestor’s unique specialties, Iron Eagle blessed land had little land, but the higher up in the air one went, the larger the space.

A sky that greatly exceeded that of ordinary blessed lands had countless circular wooden eagle nests floating in it.

These eagle nests were like small hills, innumerable iron eagles rested in them. The cries of eagles resounded endlessly, when a group of eagles flew, vast numbers of them traveled in formation, it was a spectacular view.

At the highest part of this blessed land, there was a garden.

The garden’s artificial mountain had a pavilion on it.

In the pavilion, four supreme elders of Hei tribe were sitting around a square stone table, they had differing expressions.

First supreme elder had a solemn expression, second supreme elder was shutting his eyes and resting, third supreme elder was thinking with a troubled expression, fourth supreme elder’s face was full of sweat.

The atmosphere was heavy, it was like the calm before the storm.

“My dear lord third elder, how long are you going to continue thinking?” Fourth supreme elder urged with an impatient tone.

“Rush, rush, rush, you only know how to rush me, don’t you know this is a crucial moment? At this point, if I make the wrong move, my dozens of years of hard work would go down the drain!” Third supreme elder yapped away, his emotions becoming even more agitated.

He looked at first supreme elder in front of him, before looking at second supreme elder to the left, both of them had unchanging expressions, third supreme elder could not discern anything from their faces and the pressure in his heart intensified.

Right at this time, a figure slowly rose from below, quickly approaching this pavilion.

Hei tribe’s second supreme elder opened a slit in each of his eyes, saying slowly: “Oh, Hei Cheng is back.”

Hei Cheng entered the pavilion and paid respects to the four supreme elders.

These four supreme elders had deeper foundations than him in both status and cultivation. But with regards to battle strength, it was unknown until they fought seriously.

But within the tribe, Gu Immortal would spar at most, how could they fight seriously?

Furthermore, in righteous path forces, other than central continent’s sect system, the other four regions looked at bloodline and seniority within their clans and tribes, even if Hei Cheng had higher battle strength, he would still need to respect them as a junior when he sees these four supreme elders.

“First elder, this is Dark Prison, I am returning it now.” Hei Cheng took out the rank six Immortal Gu House and returned it to first supreme elder after paying respects to them.

First supreme elder took the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison, exclaiming: “You did not use Dark Prison, it seems your operation was very successful?”

Saying this, first supreme elder’s gaze was still fixed on the stone table, he was only asking Hei Cheng casually.

Hei Cheng laughed: “It was very fortunate, this time the trip was smooth sailing, we have successfully suppressed Qiao tribe.”

Qiao tribe was a large sized tribe, because all of Hei tribe’s members inside Imperial Court blessed land had perished, Qiao tribe which was under them had become tempted to try and leave their control.

“Hmph, Qiao tribe’s Gu Immortal, Qiao Dong, became an immortal due to my guidance back then. It has only been a few decades, his loyalty has wavered?” Second supreme elder said plainly.

“Therefore, this time, I struck and taught that Qiao Dong a lesson. Within five years, there should be no issues.” Hei Cheng laughed calmly.

The suppression of Qiao tribe was an excuse HeI Cheng had prepared long ago.

Hei Cheng wanted to deal with his own daughter, Hei Lou Lan, this was not a righteous thing to do, he could only do it secretly.

He had planned to use Dark Prison to suppress Hei Lou Lan, preventing her from self-detonating. But he could not directly say this to the first supreme elder. Thus, he used Qiao tribe as an excuse, saying: In order to prevent any accidents when suppressing Qiao tribe, he borrowed Dark Prison.

“Five years?” Second supreme elder chuckled, shaking his head: “Northern plains is in a complete mess now, True Yang Building collapsed, the culprit has not been found. Wild Immortal Gu have been appearing constantly, all the different forces are fighting intensely. Especially now, Qin Bai Sheng’s incident is becoming more heated, this involves Giant Sun’s inheritance, even those rank eight old fossils are getting ready to strike.”

Fourth supreme elder sighed: “True Yang Building collapsed, Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed as well, the Imperial Court contest has lost its meaning. What do we do from now on? All of the Huang Jin tribes, what procedures will they follow, we have no idea!”

Hei Cheng understood their intentions after hearing this, he lowered his head: “Junior understands, I will be more strict in handling the tribes, especially Qiao tribe, Huo tribe, and Zhuo tribe, these three vassals.”

“That’s right, this time, the entirety of Hei tribe died inside Imperial Court blessed land. There cannot be no display of Hei tribe in northern plains, Hei Cheng, go out into the blessed land and pick carefully, bring a portion of the tribesmen out and rebuild Hei tribe in northern plains.” Third supreme elder thought about his tough problem as he gave his view on this matter.

“Yes, don’t worry third elder. I have already started preparing. In half a month, northern plains’ Hei tribe will be rebuilt.” Hei Cheng answered.

“Alright, alright, let Hei Cheng handle the matters of the mortal tribe affairs, we have no worries. Third supreme elder, if you have the time to care about this, why don’t you decide on the problem ahead. What tile are you playing?” Fourth supreme elder urged.

Third supreme elder’s gaze flickered, he was very hesitant, but he finally gritted his teeth and made up his mind, playing a tile.

At the same time, he called out: “Three tiao!”

Immediately, all the other elders had differing expressions.

First supreme elder could not stay serious anymore, he laughed loudly, flipping over his tiles: “Haha, I won!”

“Argh!” Third supreme elder patted his leg with much force, he grabbed his snow white beard as he sighed: “If I knew, I would not have played three tiao, but six wan instead!”

After hearing this, second supreme elder stared with his eyes wide open, he turned over his own tiles, saying to supreme third elder: “Then play six wan, my set could’ve won with either four wan or six wan.”

“Alright, enough, stop arguing. Quickly make the deal, I’m waiting to recoup my losses!” Fourth supreme elder said impatiently.

“Here, this is the Gu recipe that I researched after spending thirty years.” Third supreme elder admitted his loss, he slammed one east window Gu on the table in front of first supreme elder.

First supreme elder took the east window Gu: “Alright, let’s go to the next round. Same rules, we are not to use any Gu worms to cheat. We will state the wager first, I have two immortal essence stones.”

“Ancient Gu recipe of crescent moon Gu.”

“Twenty pieces of grey heart rock.”

“A group of dragon eye fish, there is a fish emperor included.”

Swish swish swish...

Eight arms swept around the stone table, shuffling the tiles.

Hei Cheng was silently standing at the side, he was very used to these four Hei tribe supreme elders’ gambling habits.

The game they were playing was called quartet sparrow battle tactic, it was invented by a mortal genius back in earlier years of Hei tribe, mainly to bootlick the first supreme elder.

After first supreme elder obtained it, he had been playing it daily with the other three supreme elders, competing and engaging in ‘battle’. Hei tribe’s external affairs were almost all handled by Hei Cheng.

“Then, elders, junior will take his leave.” Hei Cheng said.

“Go, go.” The supreme elders waved their hands, they had started assembling their hand tiles as they replied to him halfheartedly.

A group of iron eagles flew outside the pavilion, they were screeching as suddenly, the eagle group spread and three desolate eagles appeared, with battle strength equivalent to rank six. One was a dragon eagle with a powerful aura, while the other two were iron crown eagles, having great spirit.

“Shoo, shoo.” Third supreme elder waved his sleeves unhappily: “So noisy.”

“Hehehe.” First supreme elder had a kind and merciful smile, he waved his sleeves and a lot of food was sprinkled in the air.

The eagle group made happy cries, fighting for the food in the air.

Hei Cheng left Iron Eagle blessed land, flying towards the southwest direction, after flying for several minutes, he met Xue Song Zi.

Xue Song Zi had rested sufficiently, he no longer looked as pathetic as before, but he sighed when he saw Hei Cheng: “The situation has become troublesome. I just obtained some information, do you know which force has control of fixed immortal travel Immortal Gu?”

Hei Cheng replied: “You want to say, Immortal Crane Sect of central continent’s ten ancient sects?”

“You already knew? When?” Xue Song Zi was slightly unhappy.

Hei Lou Lan snorted coldly: “Not too long ago. Earlier, Dong Fang Chang Fan deduced that Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s matter was related to central continent. Now, Hei Lou Lan has a mysterious immortal zombie around her that controls Fixed Immortal Travel. They are likely the same batch of people!”

Xue Song Zi’s eyes narrowed, he fell into silence.

Honestly speaking, this information caught him off guard. He originally thought that they were dealing with a small mortal woman, to think that such a huge force like Immortal Crane Sect was involved now.

Although he had joined Snowy Mountain, this was only a loose alliance, demonic path Gu Immortals were usually selfish and only cared about self interest, they were not as united as the righteous path.

Hei Cheng’s predicament was very awkward as well.

Although he was a Hei tribe Gu Immortal, something as shameless as targeting his own daughter could not be known to everyone. Even though many righteous path Gu Immortals were two faced and usually acted differently in public, they at least appeared righteous to the world.

Hei Cheng’s matter could not be exposed, thus he could only act alone, even Dark Prison had to be borrowed using an excuse.

“Hmph, I wanted to kill a cat, but to think I messed with a tiger. Hei Cheng, I don’t care! Since your secret is in my hands, I want five hundred immortal essence stones. Give me a copy of the yin-yang life extension method as well.” Xue Song Zi broke the silence, his expression was ruthless.

He was not sincerely working with Hei Cheng in the first place, after realizing that Fang Yuan and others had deep backgrounds, he wanted to retreat now.

A cold light flashed in Hei Cheng’s eyes, he stared at Xue Song Zi as he said slowly: “You know my situation. If you force me, at most, both of us will go down, you will get nothing!”

“You! Aren’t you afraid...”

“Hmph, if I cannot catch Hei Lou Lan, I cannot gain lifespan, I am about to die, why would I care about reputation?”

Xue Song Zi was shivering in fury after hearing Hei Cheng’s unscrupulous words, his eyes were blood shot: “Who could have thought that the grand Lord Hei Cheng is actually like this.”

Hei Cheng shrugged nonchalantly: “Hehe, think what you want. Xue Song Zi, you were too naive. At this point, do you think you can keep out of this matter? Hei Lou Lan takes revenge very seriously, she has Fairy Li Shan backing her, do you think Snowy Mountain would care about you, the seventh peak’s branch head, as opposed to the third leader?”

“There is something else I want to tell you. Central continent’s Gu Immortals are ready to strike, the ten great ancient sects have created an allied force to charge into northern plains. Right now, the entirety of northern plains is in chaos, I'm sure that with Fairy Li Shan's skills, it would not be hard for her to use the central continent Gu Immortals as an excuse to indirectly kill you, that does not violate the Snowy Mountain union pact, right?"

Xue Song Zi's expression paled.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 692: The hard to deal with Hei tribe father and daughter

"Hei Cheng, you, you are actually threatening me! Rub me the wrong way and I will make sure all your dirty deeds are known by the whole world!!" Xue Song Zi was furious.

Hei Cheng sneered: "Go ahead, do it quickly. Truthfully speaking, Su Xian Er was your Snowy Mountain's pawn, intentionally arranged to get close to me and infiltrate Hei tribe's higher level. The so-called Su Xian's Night Elopement is no more than a conspiracy. Not long later, Su tribe was annihilated, did you think it was my Hei tribe that had a hand in it? Hmph! You guys from Snowy Mountain did it to conclude matters for Su Xian Er, clearing away all the traces!"

"What? This, why haven't I heard of it?" Xue Song Zi showed an incredulous look upon hearing this astonishing piece of news.

"What would you know? You are only the owner of the seventh branch peak. The higher levels of Snowy Mountain always has only had three decision makers. I know you don't believe me, but I have conclusive proof." Hei Cheng took out an east window Gu and threw it to Xue Song Zi.

Xue Song Zi took the east window Gu and cast his consciousness into it, a while later, his forehead was filled with cold sweat.

Hei Cheng gazed at the sky and heaved a long sigh, revealing a bleak look: "Back then, I was publicly recognized as a Gu Immortal seed, but it was because I was ignorant at my young age that I fell into the conspiracy. Su Xian's Night Elopement, hehe, Su Xian's Night Elopement is nothing more than a meticulously planned conspiracy for the demonic and righteous paths to infiltrate each other."

"I married Su Xian Er, we had Lou Lan, I truly thought the days would keep on passing by blissfully. However, one day, a Gu Immortal suddenly appeared before me and threw the conclusive evidence to me. And what you are looking at is only a portion of this evidence."

"How can this be? How can this be?" Xue Song Zi mumbled.

This evidence turned everything upside-down.

Even if Hei Cheng used the yin-yang life extension method to scheme against his own wife, this was actually a matter of enmity between righteous and demonic. Hei Cheng's action of taking down his family when justice demanded it would not create reproach but instead be praised and admired.

“You set me up! You set me up!!” Xue Song Zi pointed at Hei Cheng in extreme fury.

He had thought he was the one holding the initiative by having a handle on Hei Cheng, but he had never expected to be instead entrapped by Hei Cheng.

Xue Song Zi naively followed Hei Cheng to hunt Hei Lou Lan and battle Fairy Li Shan, causing his current worrying plight. Hei Lou Lan, Fairy Li Shan as well as central continent’s ancient sect force became a shadow that refused to leave Xue Song Zi’s mind.

Hei Cheng restrained his feelings and looked at Xue Song Zi: “And now, I have a new piece of evidence. Do you remember when Hei Lou Lan was transcending the tribulation, how did she address Fairy Li Shan? Fairy Li Shan and Su Xian Er are likely to have a blood relation. I have Su Xian Er’s blood with me and also Hei Lou Lan’s blood, I will have additional conclusive proof when we confront Snowy Mountain in the future.”

Xue Song Zi breathed roughly before he was able to forcibly calm down: “Good, Hei Cheng, you are truly outstanding. I had not even extorted you of a few dozens of immortal essence stones but was pulled into this messy business by you, being plunged into your trap. Right, I must acknowledge that even if you take actions against Hei Lou Lan, making every attempt to capture her, it could just be brushed off as a father educating his daughter who hopes she would be aware of her mistakes. As long as you don’t use the yin-yang life extension method on Hei Lou Lan, I won’t have any real handle on you! But, your scheme can only stop here, you are a lone force while the other has joined hands with a central continent influence. Hehe, Hei Lou Lan has already become a strength path extreme physique immortal, it is now even more difficult for you to capture her.”

Hei Cheng sank into silence.

Xue Song Zi continued explaining, his thoughts becoming keener: “My situation is worrisome but your days also won’t pass by well. You harmed Su Xian Er, Hei Lou Lan’s hatred runs extremely deeply, and who is to say central continent’s force also won’t look to trouble you!”

“Thus, you two are tied together, and you only have a hope of victory if you cooperate with my side.” A female voice suddenly interrupted Xue Song Zi and Hei Cheng’s conversation.

“Who is this?!” Xue Song Zi was truly startled.

A graceful figure slowly appeared. This was a female Gu Immortal who was wearing purple garments; she was charming and lovely, and her beautiful face showed a light smile.

Xue Song Zi was not someone with poor knowledge and after being dazed for a moment, he reacted: “So it is Fairy Jiang Yu.”

He then looked towards Hei Cheng.

All of northern plains’ Gu Immortals knew that Fairy Jiang Yu was Hei Cheng’s twenty seventh concubine who was similarly a dark path Gu Immortal, and possessed dark limit Immortal Gu, which could conceal inspirations and make it difficult for others to make deductions.

The reason why Hei Lou Lan was able to hold on for so long, and not explode because of the Great Strength True Martial Physique, was because Fairy Jiang Yu had used dark limit Immortal Gu to seal the aura of one of the ten extreme physiques on Hei Lou Lan, preventing its induction within heaven and earth.

However, who would have thought that upon seeing Fairy Jiang Yu, Hei Cheng’s attitude would turn extremely cold, he snorted: “As expected, you came.”

“Many years ago, when I first brought evidence regarding Su Xian’s Night Elopement to you, I had said — I will appear when you need me.” Fairy Jiang Yu revealed a mysterious smile, “So what do you think? Like I said before, you won’t be able to capture Hei Lou Lan by just yourself, you will instead only create a bigger commotion. You can only cooperate with my side to have hope.”

Xue Song Zi looked at Hei Cheng then at Jiang Yu, his gaze traveling back and forth between them.

He was shocked at how Hei Cheng and Jiang Yu were conversing. Fairy Jiang Yu’s identity was not ordinary, and seemed to be a representative of a mysterious force. The reason Hei Cheng could know of the deceit that was Su Xian’s Night Elopement was because of Fairy Jiang Yu’s notice.

Hei Cheng lowered his eyes. Fairy Jiang Yu was able to appear so close to him without being discovered, this caused Hei Cheng’s apprehension of Jiang Yu to deepen by a layer.

Fairy Jiang Yu was on the surface a lone cultivator of northern plains, and Hei Cheng’s beloved concubine, but in truth was shrouded in a fog of mystery.

Hei Cheng fell into deep thought.

He was not at all afraid of Fang Yuan’s myriad self army and actually had some disdain towards it inwardly. Despite not having methods to confront it head-on, Gu Immortal combat paid attention to contests in every aspect. Just based on how the myriad self army was not able to chase down Hei Cheng, its threat had heavily decreased to him.

In the previous battle, if not for Hei Lou Lan’s side taking the initiative to retreat, Hei Cheng would have no doubt occupied the upper hand when the strength path phantoms dissipated and could even turn around the situation to a victorious one.

Even Xue Song Zi who had been fleeing in disarray from the myriad self was not worried about fighting Fang Yuan again.

The reason was that myriad self was an immortal killer move, Fang Yuan’s immortal essence expenditure was too high, and in spite of this it did not have true killing power. Xue Song Zi could just activate mortal killer moves to resist it. After this was repeated a few times, how much more immortal essence could Fang Yuan, as an immortal zombie, still have? Once his immortal essence was expended, Xue Song Zi could display his might and settle affairs with Fang Yuan.

Hei Cheng’s apprehension was towards Fang Yuan’s background, to Immortal Crane Sect, and central continent’s Gu Immortals.

He also had not expected that his investigation of Fixed Immortal Travel would involve such a colossus. Dong Fang Chang Fan had already deduced that the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was due to the workings of central continent’s Gu Immortals.

Central continent’s Gu Immortals could destroy even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangements. Let alone with the insignificant Hei Cheng?

Like Hei Cheng, Xue Song Zi also had similar worries.

They were both scared by Fang Yuan’s ‘background’, if they knew Immortal Crane Sect was thinking of every possible means to deal with Fang Yuan, they absolutely would not be this nervous.

“Looking at the present situation, it seems we can only have the chance of success by collaborating with your side. But before cooperating, as a fundamental part of good faith, shouldn’t you tell me which force you are representing?” Hei Cheng asked Fairy Jiang Yu after pondering for a while.

Fairy Jiang Yu thought for a moment, she knew Hei Cheng was an uncompromising person; if she lied or refused, he would probably just turn around and abruptly leave.

She decided to tell the truth: “Well, there is no harm in telling you. The force I represent is spread throughout the five regions and its name is Shadow Sect.”

Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi glanced at each other.

Central continent, Hu Immortal blessed land.

“Twenty-eight green grape immortal essence and half an immortal essence stone.” Fang Yuan calculated the wealth he had remaining.

After going through the battle during Hei Lou Lan’s tribulation, Fang Yuan’s hard earned and accumulated funds immediately returned to their original state.

Before the battle, Fang Yuan had ninety-one beads of green grape immortal essence, but he had activated the killer move myriad self close to fifty times, to form an army of nearly five hundred thousand strength path phantoms.

During the battle, Fang Yuan repeatedly used delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, Worldly Wave Trace and other Immortal Gu, consuming over a dozen beads of green grape immortal essence.

Thus, the remaining green grape immortal essence did not even total thirty beads.

“I still owe Fairy Li Shan fifteen immortal essence stones and fifteen immortal essence stones to Lang Ya land spirit as well. I can delay the payment to Fairy Li Shan as long as necessary. But I need to return the immortal essence stones I owe to Lang Ya land spirit as soon as possible; if it is delayed, the interest will only get higher.”

Fang Yuan’s relationship with Lang Ya land spirit was still only ordinary.

When Lang Ya land spirit lent immortal essence stones to Fang Yuan, although he did not demand an exorbitant price, but he still, as per convention, took a ten percent interest.

That is to say, Fang Yuan would have to return at least sixteen and a half immortal essence stones to Lang Ya land spirit. If a month passed, another one and half immortal essence stone would have to be added.

Two months was three immortal essence stones and so on.

Even if a month did not pass, he would still have to pay one and half immortal essence stones, this was the minimum interest.

How could outsiders lend money for no reason and without any benefits?

The alliance between Fang Yuan, Fairy Li Shan and the others had an agreement.

When one side helps other, the price they paid would be doubly compensated.

This agreement had been implemented in Fang Yuan’s first battle with Hei Cheng.

However, this time, Fang Yuan did not just pay a price, he also obtained enormous benefits.

His strength path realm advanced to grandmaster level, he raised transformation path from practically nothing to master level, while his flying attainment advanced to quasi-grandmaster level.

Adding in small family qi Gu and the fifteen immortal essence stones exempted from the debt, these benefits had far surpassed the price Fang Yuan had paid, thus Fairy Li Shan did not compensate.

“Thinking back now, Hei Lou Lan might have intentionally set this situation up, attempting to use the Demon Venerable’s realm’s true meaning to make me work myself to the bone.” Now that Fang Yuan recalled the situation, he felt he had fallen in Hei Lou Lan’s scheme.

If not for the Demon Venerable’s true meaning, Fang Yuan absolutely would not have spent so much green grape immortal essence and formed such a large strength path phantom army. If the situation was not good, Fang Yuan could have even retreated. After all, the alliance agreement had no clause that said one had to fight till death.

The Snowy Mountain Alliance was quite lenient.

Fang Yuan had vaguely felt this during the battle. But this was an upright plot, even if Fang Yuan discovered Hei Lou Lan’s attempt, he would have still dived right in, because the benefits were just that great!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 693: Fighting is just a part of cultivating

In the underground cave, the air was filled with the rainbow colored light of wisdom.

A small mushroom forest was growing here. Wisdom Gu was sprawled atop the mushroom king at the center of the forest, not moving.

Fang Yuan sat close by, using the light of wisdom to make his deductions.

Afterwards, he let out a breath of foggy air: “The second Immortal Gu recipe has been completed.”

He looked at his green grape immortal essence, he did not have much originally, only twenty or so of them. After deducing two eighty percent remnant recipes, he had eleven left.

“The third Immortal Gu remnant recipe is eighty-six percent complete, eleven green grape immortal essence beads should be enough.”

Fang Yuan looked at the delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, it was glistening brightly and had no issues.

Many days had passed since Hei Lou Lan’s tribulation. Because it was used intensely in battle, cleanse soul Immortal Gu was hungry already, while delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu had been activated many times, but its condition was still good, it was not hungry.

Fang Yuan felt baffled at first, but after he asked Mo Yao’s will, who was in his immortal aperture, he understood why.

It turned out Mo Yao’s fake will needed to be replenished constantly.

Mo Yao did not have a Gu to produce fake will, she used many Gu worms to convert the joyful will into fake will.

Thus, when she fed Gu worms, the one she paid most attention to was the delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu. Delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu was fed till it was completely full by Mo Yao’s will, she did not feed it only when it was hungry. Thus, even though Fang Yuan was using it extensively, there was still some time until he needed to feed the delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu.

This was evidently a good thing.

After all, activating a hungry Immortal Gu forcefully could cause it to die.

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu was already hungry, thus, it was much more risky for Fang Yuan to use the killer move myriad self. Perhaps the next time he used this immortal killer move, cleanse soul Immortal Gu would be destroyed in the process.

Deducing Immortal Gu recipes was Fang Yuan’s most important source of income now. If delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu could not be used, Fang Yuan would fall into a difficult situation again.

Fang Yuan activated delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu again, he started deducing the third Immortal Gu remnant recipe.

This time, he had obtained the Demon Venerable true meaning infusion, it was quite a bit of help to deducing Immortal Gu remnant recipes.

That was because the true meaning infusion was the same as taking in Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s understanding towards cultivation, it directly increased Fang Yuan’s foundation, it could raise his realm of cultivation.

As for the deduction of Gu recipes, it one’s own foundation as the basis, the stronger their foundations, the higher the efficiency of the deduction.

Even though refinement path attainment level was the most important, because there were many elements to consider, strength path and transformation path would be involved as well in these thought processes.

Two days later, Fang Yuan completed his deduction, he obtained three complete Immortal Gu recipes.

He brought these Immortal Gu recipes over to Lang Ya blessed land and completed the transaction with Lang Ya land spirit.

Not only did he clear his debt and account for the expenditure of his green grape immortal essence, he still earned eleven immortal essence stones as profit.

Everything was back on track now.

Eight days later, Fang Yuan handed another three completed Immortal Gu recipes to Lang Ya land spirit and completed the fifth deal.

At this point, he had thirty-six immortal essence stones and twenty-seven green grape immortal essence beads.

Fang Yuan slightly relaxed after that.

Because of the battle with Hei Cheng, he almost went into the red and his finances threatened to collapse.

According to the economic term on Earth, he had almost caused the situation of a cash flow shortfall.

“Although the immortal killer move, myriad self, has great strength, I need to consume a bead of green grape immortal essence every time I use it. If I use it many times, the expenditure would be huge. I need to be careful when I use it in the future, otherwise, it will just drain my finances and cause me to lose out, even if I win the fight.”

Fang Yuan inwardly alerted himself in his mind.

When Gu Immortals cultivate, they had to consider many aspects, not just victory in battle.

Like the example of Liu Bang and Xiang Yu on Earth. Liu Bang could not defeat Xiang Yu, he lost in battles while Xiang Yu won in battles. But Liu Bang was adept in managing the economy and had strong backing. Even though he lost each fight, he had the capital to rise up once again, thus he was able to fight even after losing.

Xiang Yu however, although he won his fights, he had no businesses, as time passed, and they fought even more, the difference between Liu Bang and him became smaller. Eventually, Liu Bang won one battle and that turned into complete victory.

As for the cultivation of Gu Immortals, it was the same logic.

Battles were just a part of cultivation.

The victory and loss of battles was not too important, the important thing was the benefits behind them.

One had to look forward for everything, they could not be shortsighted.

Even though Fang Yuan could cause Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi to suffer greatly, he had invested too much green grape immortal essence, in contrast, Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi spent much less immortal essence compared to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan also went bankrupt after this fight, but Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi were in good condition. If Fang Yuan had to fight them again now, Fang Yuan’s battle strength would definitely be lower compared to them. If they fought for several more times, the winner would be obvious.

Hei Cheng had the rank six Immortal Gu House Dark Prison, could he not go all out with it? Of course he could, but the situation did not call for it.

Those who could become Gu Immortals were not rash boors that were hot blooded, they would calculate their gains and losses after every battle.

Of course, if not for the Demon Venerable true meaning infusion, Fang Yuan would not have expended this much green grape immortal essence.

“If I use up my green grape immortal essence, I can still replace it with immortal essence stones. But the Demon Venerable true meaning is an extremely rare opportunity. If I cultivate slow and steadily, I would need at least decades to reach this stage.” Fang Yuan was very aware in his heart.

After Fang Yuan completed another two Immortal Gu remnant recipes, Tai Bai Yun Sheng finally returned from Snowy Mountain.

“You did not see the environment of the super grade blessed land, sigh, I saw it with my own eyes. Having over 6700km2 of land, the blessed land’s time flow is thirty-eight times that of the outside world! There is much vitality and great potential in it, I could not help but feel jealous towards it. In my opinion, the biggest winner after the battle of this tribulation is Hei Lou Lan!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng returned and started talking incessantly, while sighing endlessly.

After Hei Lou Lan’s tribulation, she asked for Tai Bai Yun Sheng to repair the super grade blessed land. Thus, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was lucky enough to enter Lou Lan blessed land, it could be said to be a truly eye-opening experience.

“A super grade blessed land is precisely like that, after all one of the ten extreme physiques becoming an immortal is like skating on thin ice, it is a fight for survival in a deadly situation. Compared to this, I am more worried about how many Immortal Gu Hei Lou Lan managed to refine during the third step of this immortal ascension.” Fang Yuan asked.

“Her immortal aperture was created using the flying bear strength Immortal Gu, this strength path Immortal Gu was given to her by Giant Sun’s will. Flying bear strength Gu is now her vital Gu, but she also elevated her original core Gu, self strength Gu, to rank six. Other than these two, she also obtained a rank six strength qi Gu.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng replied.

When Tai Bai Yun Sheng ascended to an immortal, the remaining heaven and earth qi created his two Immortal Gu, Man as Before and Landscape as Before.

Whether Hei Lou Lan’s remaining heaven and earth qi had been more than Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s, nobody knew. But what Fang Yuan did know was that she had quite a number of small family qi Gu, these Gu had stored up some amount of heaven and earth qi.

Fang Yuan analyzed what Hei Lou Lan had: “In this case, Hei Lou Lan is confirmed to have four Immortal Gu. They are flying bear strength Gu, self strength Gu, strength qi Gu, and slavery Immortal Gu. Divert disaster Gu had been destroyed during the tribulation. But don’t forget, she had once destroyed the flying bear phantom and obtained flying bear phantom Gu after suppressing it. After that, I lost my connection with the flying bear phantom Immortal Gu. I am not sure if this Gu was taken away by the formless hands or if it is still with her now!”

Hei Lou Lan’s strength grew extremely quickly, she had at least four Immortal Gu and was a Gu Immortal herself now, her future was immensely bright.

Furthermore, she had a close relationship with Fairy Li Shan, after getting her help, she skipped the initial stage of being a newly advanced Gu Immortal. Fairy Li Shan did not lack immortal essence stones, with a huge amount of investment, Lou Lan blessed land would develop quickly.

“Hei Lou Lan who has a super grade blessed land will undoubtedly greatly exceed me in cultivation speed. I have a high grade blessed land, compared to other Gu Immortals, it is also a great advantage, but Hei Lou Lan is like someone who has grown wings and is soaring. Even though we formed an alliance with her, the alliance will eventually end. After the time limit, we will need to be careful, Fairy Li Shan has a huge network while Hei Lou Lan is a formidable person.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s tone was worried.

The rapid growth of the genius, Hei Lou Lan, had brought great mental pressure to an elderly man like Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

But it was worse for Fang Yuan.

His cultivation was stagnant, as long as he was still an immortal zombie, his cultivation level would not progress.

“As long as Hei Cheng is not dead, and Ma Hong Yun’s matter isn’t resolved, we will have the basis to cooperate with Hei Lou Lan. You have to be very careful when you go to eastern sea this time. Shark Demon is not easy to deal with, if you need reinforcements, use the moving perspective cup Gu to contact me.” Fang Yuan reminded Tai Bai Yun Sheng to be cautious.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng rested in Hu Immortal Blessed Land for two days before setting off to eastern sea.

He was afflicted by the death sentence awaits Immortal Gu, and had promised an immortal zombie of eastern sea, Shark Demon, to explore Yu Lu blessed land, he had no choice but to set off.

Fang Yuan stayed in Hu Immortal blessed land, he deduced Gu recipes to earn immortal essence stones, while also placing priority on settling the important matter of feeding Immortal Gu.

After he completed the sixth deal, he had more than sixty immortal essence stones.

His Woman’s Heart and Connect Luck were showing signs of weakness, they were evidently famished. Together with cleanse soul Immortal Gu, he had a total of three Immortal Gu to feed.

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu needed ten thousand white lotus giant silkworm Gu as food. Connect luck Immortal Gu needed five thousand kilograms of sand from the ancient desolate beast, worldly sand gull’s, resting area. Poison path Immortal Gu Woman’s Heart needed the hearts of women as food.

He had no idea how to get the first two, Fang Yuan decided to settle the easiest one first.

Western Desert.

Sand dunes were continually connected together, forming a huge and wide area of land.

The sun was high in the sky, the air was dry and hot, it felt like a person could be cooked in this weather.

A large sized caravan was moving forward.

The camel bells ringed, and the sounds of the vehicles could be heard constantly.

The accompanying Gu Masters used all types of Gu worms, some to reduce the temperature, some to summon winds, some to create fresh water, and some to navigate.

“Who is this?” The caravan leader shouted. There was a gruesome monster in front of the caravan.

This monster was six meters tall, it had bulging muscles and a large body. It had eight arms, a green face and sharp fangs, with eyes red as blood. With one look, people felt their hearts tighten as they felt a formless pressure.

The caravan went into a commotion.

“Two rank five, seventeen rank four, forty over rank three... This is quite a number.” A hoarse voice could be heard from the monster’s mouth.

“Sir, who might you be? I am Mo clan’s caravan leader, Mo Yan.” One of the rank five Gu Masters in the caravan cupped his fists and asked nervously.

Fang Yuan laughed ruthlessly, his eight monstrous claws opened instantly, the name of the super influence, Mo clan, could not deter him.

He was like the incarnation of a demonic god, he rushed into the caravan and whipped up a storm of blood and flesh.

Howling, screaming, crying, begging, all these noises tangled together, after a while, they went silent.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 694: A gentle gaze

After around ten minutes, the slaughter finally ended.

One’s nose would be assailed by the thick smell of blood, the yellow sand was filled with corpses.

Fang Yuan stood at the center of the corpses, he summoned woman’s heart Immortal Gu.

The Immortal Gu slowly rose up, floating into the air and emitting a reddish purple light. The light filled the entire battlefield, in a few breaths of time, all the female corpses in the entire battlefield started to tremble.

The vibrations of the corpses became more intense, as finally, with a loud pop, hearts burst out of the bodies and rose up slightly, flying towards Woman’s Heart which was in the air.

Before they even got close, these bloody hearts were swallowed by the reddish purple light in the air, turning into inky purple light lumps.

The light lumps were like young swallows returning to their nest, they entered Woman’s Heart.

Poison path Immortal Gu Woman’s Heart slightly trembled, it let out a sharp screech, as if it sounded overjoyed from being fed.

A moment later, all of the women’s hearts in the battlefield had been fed to Woman’s Heart as food.

Fang Yuan called back Woman’s Heart.

This Immortal Gu’s hunger had been alleviated by quite a bit, but it was not full yet.

Fang Yuan frowned slightly: “At this rate, to feed the woman’s heart Immortal Gu until it is full, I will need four thousand more women’s hearts. This caravan that I slaughtered already had significant strength, such a large sized caravan is uncommon in western desert.”

Fang Yuan thought about it for a while before flying into the sky.

In the air, he stretched out his palm, pushing it towards the ground.

Immediately, thousands of fireballs appeared, slamming into the battlefield. Explosions occurred as rocks and sand were sent flying, corpses were burnt as the place turned into a sea of fire.

This was not a killer move, it was simply the power of quantity, he had used numerous similar fire path mortal Gu.

Fang Yuan threw several black oil dragons.

The oil dragons flew into the sea of fire, raising its intensity and razing the battlefield to the ground, all the traces left behind were gone.

After doing this, Fang Yuan flapped his light illusion bat wings and flew away at a rapid speed.

He traveled north-east, past several large sized oases, before finding his target — a small sized oasis.

Looking down from a high altitude, the oasis was like a jewel, encased in the golden desert.

There was a lake in the oasis, its water was clear and blue, with trees growing around it. There were many people living in this place, the marketplace were lively and it was a scene of prosperity and peace.

Fang Yuan did not conceal his movements, he appeared above the cloudless sky, it was very eye-catching.

A group of Gu Masters riding sand gulls flew up from the oasis.

“What monster is this?”

“It seems like a zombie!”

These Gu Masters were mostly young people, they looked at Fang Yuan’s monstrous appearance and couldn’t help but mutter apprehensively.

They were almost all rank two, only the leader was a rank three Gu Master.

This group of people flew towards Fang Yuan, they stopped about three hundred steps away from him.

The leader was very vigilant, he cupped his fists: “This is Zhou Xi oasis, controlled by us, Lan clan. The sky above the oasis is a no-fly zone, I hope sir can land on the ground! If you wish to enter the oasis, we have Gu Masters in charge of attending to visiting Gu Masters from outside. Sir just needs to follow the procedures, as long as you meet the requirements, you will be allowed to enter the oasis.”

Fang Yuan continued to stare at the oasis, using his investigative Gu to check the area.

He was trying to find out if there were any Gu Immortals hiding in this oasis, because only Gu Immortals could pose a threat to him.

According to normal circumstances, such a small oasis would not be a strong force, there should not be Gu Immortals here. If there were, they would have expanded or modified this oasis already.

After the leader said that, he saw that Fang Yuan was unmoved, he frowned as he said coldly: “Did sir hear me? The sky above the oasis is a no-fly zone, this is general knowledge in western desert. Sir flying above Lan clan can be regarded as a provocation! I hope sir lands now, otherwise, don’t blame us for...”

Bam.

Before the leader finished his words, Fang Yuan flicked a finger and sent a rank five level attack at him.

The rank three leader could not react, he was blown to bits, his corpse scattered everywhere.

“Huh?!”

“Lord elder!”

The other rank two Gu Masters screamed shrilly after a moment of shock.

At this moment, unparalleled fear filled their hearts. The high and mighty lord elder did not even have a chance to react before he was killed in one hit.

This attack was too sudden, the rank two Gu Masters could not even clearly see what actually killed their leader.

“Lord elder is dead, he was killed in an instant!”

“Quickly retreat, this person is not someone we can deal with!”

“Enemy attack! Enemy attack!”

The rank two Gu Masters screamed, they scattered in the air, flying towards the oasis.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, he waved his hands.

Bam bam bam...

With consecutive explosions, these rank two Gu Masters were turned into pieces of flesh without exception. Even the sand gulls that they were sitting on were not spared.

A loud siren rang in the oasis.

Everything that had happened in the air was seen by the patrolling Gu Masters.

Fang Yuan looked down from above imposingly, seeing the mortals panicking and running away, the flourishing market had gone into chaos. Large numbers of mortal Gu Masters came out from the buildings, they faced up towards the sky, looking at Fang Yuan with deep animosity.

“Mortals are truly like insects.” Fang Yuan let out a deep breath, he then summoned the hair armor and flapped his light illusion bat wings, flying like a meteor towards the oasis.

"He's here! Attack him!"

"Be careful, the other party is very strong, he is at least a rank four Gu Master! He is very likely to be rank five!"

"So what if he is strong? He is just one person, attack him!"

The Lan clan Gu Masters in the oasis screamed furiously, they unleashed a flurry of colorful attacks.

But Fang Yuan's charge was not slowed, he easily broke through these obstructions and crashed into the clan head pavilion at the center of the oasis.

Bam!

The loud crash could deafen one's ears, the huge impact caused the ground to shake. The clan head pavilion had defensive Gu worms protecting it, but they were useless, the place collapsed in an instant. Rocks flew and tiles burst, air currents pushed out and carried the dust clouds with them.

As the dust and smoke settled, Fang Yuan's huge body and eight monstrous arms were displayed before the Lan clan Gu Masters.

"He, he did not die!"

"Damn it, the clan head pavilion was destroyed by him! The ancestors' tablets are all inside!"

"Kill, kill this demon!"

Everyone's emotions were stimulated, they surrounded Fang Yuan.

"All of you shut up!" Suddenly, an elderly man shouted, walking out from the crowd.

"Lord clan elder!" The surrounding people paid respects to this old man.

The old clan leader was very shocked, he deeply understood the defensive power of the clan head pavilion. It was the central and most important place in the clan, it had great defenses, even if ten people of the elderly clan leader's strength attacked it, they might not break through.

But simply one blow from Fang Yuan destroyed the entire clan head pavilion.

Just one hit!

What did this mean?!

The elderly clan leader controlled his fear, he bowed deeply towards Fang Yuan: "Our Lan clan has been neutral for many generations, we have not meddled with the outside world. I am not sure if we have offended sir, but we will definitely compensate you until you are satisfied."

The moment he said that, he immediately attracted the fierce rebuttal of the Gu Masters.

"Lord clan leader, what are you saying?"

"This monster who is neither a human nor a ghost destroyed our clan head pavilion, even elder Lan Duan died in his hands."

"Clan leader, our Lan clan has no cowards, the other party is already so overbearing, we have to slaughter him into pieces to quench the hatred in our hearts!”

“Hehehe...” Fang Yuan laughed coldly, his voice was hoarse, everyone frowned when they heard his voice: “There is actually someone who understands how to react to the situation here, hmm, that’s right, this small oasis is squeezed between many large forces. If you did not know your place, you would not be able to stay as the clan leader. Then listen to me, I want you to collect six thousand hearts within the next ten minutes. Remember, these hearts have to be intact and they need to be women’s hearts, the hearts of men and young girls have no use.”

“What?!”

“He... he actually wants six thousand women’s hearts?”

“This is a demon, he is a lawless demon! He actually wants our clan to be his lapdog, to collect hearts for him!”

The Gu Masters were in an uproar.

The elderly clan leader’s expression was also uncertain. Six thousand women’s hearts was a huge number, there were many mortal villages around this oasis, but the number of mortals was certainly not enough. That means, to reach six thousand, he would need to sacrifice the clansmen in Lan clan.

Thus, the old clan leader’s position would certainly be taken away. Nobody would allow such a person to be their leader.

“Isn’t sir’s request too overbearing. Sigh, heaven cares for all living beings, in broad daylight, how can anyone commit such heinous acts? I’m afraid Lan clan cannot help you.” The old clan leader sighed as he showed a merciful expression.

“Heh, then there’s no other way. Even though this is more troublesome, it will do.” Fang Yuan laughed ruthlessly, his killing intent surged.

Light illusion bat wings flickered on his back, and a moment later, he appeared in front of the old clan leader.

The zombie claws stretched out like lightning, grabbing the old clan leader’s neck, lifting him up easily.

“So, so fast!” The old clan leader’s expression was pale, there was no trace of blood on his face. He was completely shocked, how could he be captured by the other party in an instant?!

Could it be that, he is not a mortal, but a Gu Immortal?

A horrifying thought appeared in the old clan leader’s heart, he shouted anxiously: “Ev... everything can be discussed... please have mercy... ple... argh.”

Crack, the old clan leader’s neck was smashed into powder by Fang Yuan.

The old clan leader’s head hung to one side, he stared with his eyes wide opened, he died without solace.

It was not that he did not want to use his Gu worms to retaliate, but Fang Yuan had many mortal Gu in his immortal aperture that could seal and suppress Gu worms.

“He, he killed the clan leader!”

“No—! Lord clan leader! You cannot die!”

“Revenge for lord clan leader!”

The Gu Masters reacted and shouted angrily, like a rushing tide, they charged towards Fang Yuan, using all sorts of attacks, unleashing a beautiful display of fireworks.

Fang Yuan did not dodge, he stood on the spot, allowing the attacks to hit his body without moving at all.

Everyone’s attacks lasted for a hundred breaths before stopping.

Gu Masters had limited primeval essence, with such an intense wave of attacks, they could not keep it up for very long.

“Is he dead?”

“He was definitely beaten to a pulp already.”

“Sigh, our poor old clan leader, we did not even manage to retrieve his corpse...”

But when the smoke dispersed, the Gu Masters eyes were opened wide, they saw that Fang Yuan was still standing at the same spot arrogantly.

Even though the surroundings were a mess, his black armor was still extremely new looking, even the broken spikes were regenerating rapidly.

A few breaths of time later, Fang Yuan’s hair armor regenerated completely, there were not even any marks on it.

Hair armor was a mortal killer move, it was made of several hundred Gu worms, and dozens of rank five Gu worms. It was also used on the foundation of the immortal zombie body, the defense was not something these Gu Masters could break.

Among the people attacking Fang Yuan, the one and only rank four Gu Master, the elderly clan leader, had died. There were less than ten rank three Gu Masters remaining, the rest were rank two and one.

Their attacks were very scattered, many of the attacks had canceled each other out, it simply could pose no threat to Fang Yuan.

“This is your attack? It can’t even scratch me.” Fang Yuan chuckled, his laughter was not loud, but it was very clear in everyone’s ears.

An intense chill rose up in the hearts of the Gu Masters and spread rapidly.

Even though the weather was so hot, they felt like they were in an icy pit!

“You, what are you?” Everyone trembled, their hearts were filled with terror.

“Monster, this is a monster!” Someone screamed, he had lost his mind.

“Run, quickly run!!” Their morale had sank to rock bottom, one person running away initiated the collapse of the entire group.

Fang Yuan was not surprised, the clan leader was dead, they had nothing to rely on. At the same time, he purposely took the attacks head on, it was to destroy the morale of these mortals.

Swoosh.

Fang Yuan smiled sinisterly, he chased up to a female Gu Master.

The female Gu Master’s body froze, she stared at the monstrous claw piercing through her back and out of her chest, as the monstrous claw pulled out, her heart was taken away.

“Elder Lan Xin is dead too, run!” The surrounding Gu Masters saw this and were shocked out of their minds, they ran away even more quickly.

Fang Yuan waved a hand and large numbers of fireballs spewed out, buildings collapsed and fires were blazing. With another wave of a hand, wind blades were dancing in the air, slaughtering everything in their path, leaving behind large numbers of minced corpses.

“No, please, I’m begging you, don’t kill me.” This was an ordinary mortal woman with a delicate face and a beautiful figure, she had preserved her own body well, she should be a wife or concubine of a Gu Master.

Bam.

Fang Yuan flicked his finger, and the mortal woman’s head exploded like a watermelon, her headless corpse collapsed on the ground.

Fang Yuan walked past this corpse, as the palm of his downwards hanging hand opened, the woman’s heart burst out of the body and flew out, grabbed by Fang Yuan.

Woman’s Heart let out a joyful scream, it stopped on Fang Yuan’s shoulder, glowing in a reddish purple light.

Be it the heart in Fang Yuan’s hand or the surrounding corpses, as long as they met the conditions, the purple light would swallow them and they would be absorbed by Woman’s Heart.

Fang Yuan walked briskly, wherever he went, a slaughter occurred. It was a path filled with anguished wails, rivers of blood flowed.

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu was famished, it was too risky to use myriad self, and too much of a waste of immortal essence.

Icy drill stardust could not be used, because the starlight lump exploded continuously, it would mince the mortal corpses completely, even the hearts would not be spared.

Fang Yuan was only using mortal Gu, he did not use any killer moves, it was simply a huge quantity of Gu worms.

But even so, the efficiency of killing was not low.

Western desert was different from the other four regions, Fang Yuan chose this place purposefully. This was a huge desert, and the oases were like islands, even if a mortal escapes out of the oasis, they would not get far. Western desert was a place with unhindered vision, the desert stretched to the horizon, it was easy for Fang Yuan to chase them down.

“This time, I will let you eat till you are full, little one.” Fang Yuan walked in the pool of blood, looking at the woman’s heart Immortal Gu on his shoulder, his gaze was extremely gentle.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 695: Dead Sand Gull Egg

The light of the setting sun shone on Zhou Xi oasis.

The lively atmosphere in normal times was replaced by thick smoke and fire today.

There was nothing left of the former serenity, buildings had collapsed, turning into piles of ruins. In these ruins, on the streets, at the side of the lake, under the trees, pools of blood were connected and corpses lined the ground.

Fang Yuan went back to the clan head pavilion, standing on a pile of broken concrete, he placed the poison path Immortal Gu Woman’s Heart back into his immortal aperture.

After killing for a long time, he had finally fed Woman’s Heart until it was full.

Woman’s Heart combined refinement and nurturing, if he fed it any further, Woman’s Heart would enter the refinement stage, the more women’s hearts it ate, the stronger the poison.

But Fang Yuan had no intentions of refining the Gu at this point.

With his strength, slaying mortals was like slaughtering animals, but with so many mortals, he still spent half the day on this.

Furthermore, Woman’s Heart was a consumable Immortal Gu. No matter how strong it was, it would be gone after one use. The prospects of investing in it were not great, unless Fang Yuan had the Immortal Gu recipe of Woman’s Heart.

Standing on the rubble of the clan head pavilion, Fang Yuan activated several hundred Gu worms in his immortal aperture, undergoing a thorough search of the area.

After two breaths of time, Fang Yuan finally found an underground entrance.

He walked towards the entrance, his huge feet treaded and destroyed the ground under him, exposing the entrance.

This entrance could allow a normal person to enter, but it was too small for Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan used force to take apart this entrance, after several hundred steps, the space finally widened enough for Fang Yuan to walk while bending his waist.

A large stone door appeared in front of Fang Yuan.

On top of the door, there were words carved: “Important area of the clan treasury, people not specifically assigned are forbidden from entering.”

Fang Yuan snorted, he destroyed the stone door and hundreds of golden light blades attacked Fang Yuan. A loud alarm rang, this was evidently the method of Lan clan in defending against thieves. But it was a pity that not even a single spike on Fang Yuan’s hair armor was destroyed.

Fang Yuan entered the stone door, seeing a pile of primeval stones. Fang Yuan roughly estimated that there were at least a hundred thousand in total.

If Fang Yuan was still a mortal, these primeval stones would be a huge fortune. But now that he was an immortal with unlimited primeval essence, he had almost no need for primeval stones.

But he still kept these primeval stones in his immortal aperture, it was simply a move done in passing.

Soon, he broke through a second stone door, and entered.

He saw a huge amount of Gu refinement materials, they were classified and placed here, these were all ordinary materials. Although Fang Yuan also needed them, these materials were not in high quantity, when Fang Yuan truly wanted to refine something, he would need a vast amount of materials, he would still need to purchase in bulk from Gu Immortals.

But this was better than nothing, Fang Yuan would not leave empty handed, he sent it all into his immortal aperture.

Next, beyond the third, fourth, and fifth stone door, they all had Gu refinement materials, except that they were of different varieties and had different storage conditions. Fang Yuan took all of these as well.

At the sixth stone door, he found Gu worms.

Large numbers of mortal Gu were stored here. This was Lan clan’s Gu worm treasury, the foundation of their entire clan.

Fang Yuan took them all away, with his abundant memories and great experience, he knew all of these Gu worms, they were not necessary for him.

But to mortal Gu Masters, these were all precious Gu worms, including rank four and five Gu worms among them. Getting one could change a person’s life, their entire future might turn around.

Like the liquor worm that Fang Yuan obtained on Qing Mao mountain, the bone flesh unity Gu on Bai Gu mountain, and the all-out effort Gu in Shang clan city.

There were three Gu worm treasuries, and five primeval stone treasuries.

Other than that, there were treasuries hidden within treasuries, secret troves that did not escape Fang Yuan’s detection.

Some troves were ravaged, there were Gu Master corpses here and traces of fighting. Evidently, when Fang Yuan was slaughtering the mortals, some greedy Gu Masters knew that the clan was finished and barged in here, trying to take whatever resources they could.

They fought here and took the treasures they could find, while a portion of people died from the Gu worms defending the troves.

Fang Yuan walked past these troves, along the main path deep underground.

Along the way, he saw more and more corpses of Gu Master, and there were also sand gull corpses.

These sand gulls were like a combination of seagulls and ostriches, they had large legs with huge muscles, but they also had huge wings and could fly in the sky.

Sand gulls could run rapidly in the desert, while also flying in the sky and carrying people, they only ate grass and drank clean water, they were easy to feed. With a mild temperament, they were the most common steed among western desert Gu Masters.

The only problem was, sand gulls had very low fertility. Three to four out of ten sand gull eggs would usually hatch and grow into healthy sand gulls.

However, this Lan clan raised many sand gulls, much more than other forces of the same level. When Fang Yuan slaughtered the clan, he killed many sand gulls. He estimated that Lan clan might have some secret technique to raise the fertility of the sand gulls.

If so, that would be the only thing in this entire Lan clan that could somewhat interest Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan walked for another few thousand steps, he saw more Gu Master corpses. Finally, at one point, he saw a large number of Gu Master corpses and sand gull corpses.

“It seems that the people who came in here met with the sand gulls’ obstruction, they all perished here. They took a risk to enter here, quite evidently, there is a huge benefit attracting them.” Fang Yuan analyzed.

Squawk squawk squawk...

After another few hundred steps, Fang Yuan was attacked by a wave of sand gulls.

There were a hundred sand gulls, among them, the sand gull hundred beast king was injured, likely due to the fight with Gu Masters earlier.

But how could this trifling beast group be Fang Yuan’s match? In just a few breaths of time, Fang Yuan killed these sand gulls and continued moving forward.

The path was moving downwards, the depth was rather surprising to Fang Yuan.

After getting rid of ten waves of attacks from sand gulls, Fang Yuan walked out of the tunnel, his field of vision widened as he entered a huge underground cave.

This cave was quite big, it was like a square.

There was a huge stone table at the center of the cave. There was a huge egg on the table, it was the size of a house, it had a yellow luster but it was already quite dim.

There was a thick layer of yellow sand around the table.

The sand was extremely soft and slightly warm, it felt like cotton when one stepped on it.

Many eggs were placed on this sand, slightly buried into them. These eggs were of varying sizes, there were even some broken egg shells there.

“These eggs are all sand gull eggs. This is the breeding ground for Lan clan’s sand gulls.” Fang Yuan walked into the cave.

To protect their home and eggs, a large number of sand gulls rose up and charged towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was unmoved, he waved a hand and a large number of wind blades cut these sand gulls like harvesting crops, with another burst of frost, half of these sand gull were frozen.

There were very few sand gulls that survived, they no longer had their previous numbers, so their aura diminished and they started escaping in fear.

Fang Yuan had no interest in killing them all, the closer he got to the table, the more his gaze was attracted to the huge egg on the table, he showed some joy on his face.

“This egg, is it the egg of a worldly sand gull?”

Fang Yuan stopped atop the stone table and came in front of the huge egg. He touched the shell filled with cracks, there were several small holes on it, as transparent egg white flowed out of the cracks slowly.

The egg white fell onto the stone table, following the crevices on the table as it flowed down onto the yellow sand.

This was an egg of the ancient desolate beast worldly sand gull.

The life inside had perished in the egg. Even the egg white was leaking, this was obviously a dead egg.

Sand gulls had low fertility, worldly sand gulls which were of the same breed had even lower rates. But it was the life essence of an ancient desolate beast after all, even using the egg white so superficially could greatly raise the fertility of these sand gulls.

Fang Yuan did not obtain the fertility method he had been guessing, he actually obtained a dead egg of an ancient desolate bird instead.

This was an pleasant surprise.

“As expected, after using Connect Luck, I encountered something good? After slaughtering a small to mid sized clan, I actually obtained something useful to me.” Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

His connect luck Immortal Gu needed the sand of the resting area of the ancient desolate beast, worldly sand gull, as food.

This sand was known as sand gull soil, it was a special resource formed from ordinary soil due to the worldly sand gull’s influence.

Originally, if Fang Yuan wanted to obtain the sand, he would need to buy it from others, or find a worldly sand gull nest and take a huge risk to sneak in and steal the sand gull soil.

But now that he had a dead egg of the worldly sand gull, he could use the life essence in this egg to turn ordinary sand into sand gull soil.

“I need five thousand kilograms of sand gull soil to feed the connect luck Immortal Gu. There is ample life essence in this egg, it should be enough. Even if it is not enough, it will tide me through this tough time. I do not need to feed the connect luck Immortal Gu until it is full, as long as it is not starving, that will do. After all, for the foreseeable future, there are no suitable targets, connect luck Immortal Gu is unusable anyway.”

Feeling joyous, Fang Yuan took this dead egg.

After returning to Hu Immortal blessed land, he started his preparations. He was a blood path grandmaster in his previous life, now he had also become a strength path grandmaster, these two paths both involved life and vitality.

He quickly had an idea, using six hundred mortal Gu to create a Gu formation, extracting the life essence of this dead egg, forming a lot of vital energy.

Fang Yuan modified this method with the help of wisdom Gu, condensing the vital energy into a light yellow juice.

Ordinary sand had turned into sand gull soil after a day and a night in this juice.

Three days later, Fang Yuan obtained enough sand gull soil to feed connect luck Immortal Gu till it was full.

Therefore, the cleanse soul Immortal Gu in his hands was the only one he had an issue in feeding.

To feed cleanse soul Immortal Gu, he needed the flesh of ten thousand white lotus giant silkworm Gu, but the white lotus giant silkworm Gu was very rare. A hundred thousand years ago, during the Late Antiquity Era, soul path flourished, and this Gu worm had once been very popular.

Unfortunately, at this point, there were already very few white lotus giant silkworm Gu in treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan used the name of the Eight Arm Immortal to request for this Gu worm and its recipe, but no one had answered him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 696: Announcement of Betrayal

“Husband, Huang Er has been like this for three months. What should we do? I don’t know how to live if anything happens to her.” Fairy Bai Qing looked at Feng Jin Huang who was on the cushion, sobbing in a low voice.

She was a grand Gu Immortal of Spirit Affinity House, she had always been elegant and noble to the outside world. But now that this concerned her beloved daughter, she lost her bearings, she was no longer as calm as usual.

But in front of her, Feng Jin Huang sat on the cushion, in the posture of polishing her aperture.

She wore a phoenix coronet, she had slanted eyes and there was a small red birthmark between her eyebrows. Her appearance combined the gentle beauty of her mother, Fairy Bai Qing, with the valiance of her father, Feng Jiu Ge, she had a dignified disposition, yet also a matchless, fearless beauty.

She had incredible aptitude, her talent was overwhelming, she suppressed everyone of the same age in the ten great ancient sects. If not for Fang Yuan ruining her opportunity, Feng Jin Huang would have become the owner of Hu Immortal blessed land already.

Her skin was fair like snow, her eyes were shut, she breathed slowly like she was asleep.

About three months ago, Feng Jin Huang was meditating as usual, nurturing her aperture. But an accident occurred during this ordinary cultivation session, she fell unconscious ever since and nobody could awaken her using any method.

Ever since they found out about Feng Jin Huang's strange state, Feng Jiu Ge and Bai Qing had been thinking of ways to save their daughter, but there had been no progress.

They asked the supreme elders of Spirit Affinity House, they had tried all sorts of methods, but all of it was useless.

"Husband, do you think our Huang Er will stay asleep forever? Will she ever wake up and see us again?" Fairy Bai Qing thought about this terrible fate and couldn't refrain from welling up with sorrow.

Feng Jiu Ge sighed, he stretched out his arms to hug his beloved wife, consoling her: "Qing Er, don't worry. Didn't first supreme elder say it? Our daughter had discovered the true way to use dream wings Immortal Gu, thus she had reached a hidden region, her entire soul had entered a mystical realm unknown to us. She did not lose her life and is still alive and well. We should believe her, maybe this is a fortuitous encounter for her."

Although Feng Jiu Ge and Bai Qing did not awaken Feng Jin Huang, their attempts were not in vain, they had already found out the reason for Feng Jin Huang's coma was the dream wings Immortal Gu!

Fairy Bai Qing leaned on her husband as she relaxed on his broad and powerful chest, she felt slightly eased as she said: "When Huang Er was three years old, dream wings Immortal Gu came to her on its own, I had been feeling uneasy since then. We have never seen this Immortal Gu before, even after searching through all of Spirit Affinity House's records, there was no information about it. In our tests, the effect of this Gu expended the soul to create beautiful wings. But now it seems, dream wings Immortal Gu's true effect is not this."

Feng Jiu Ge nodded, agreeing: "Your analysis is very reasonable. When Gu Masters nurture, use, and refine Gu, if they are facing an unknown Gu worm, they would make new discoveries when using the Gu, eventually understanding everything about the Gu worm. Even for famous Gu worms, there are always new secrets hidden within them. When Gu Immortals and Gu Masters obtain valuable experience, they would treat it as an important secret to prevent others from learning about their information. When Huang Er awakens, I am sure she will have huge gains, she will learn the true way to use dream wings Immortal Gu. When I go to northern plains this time, our family will have to depend on you. Inform me immediately when Huang Er awakens."

The ten great ancient sects of central continent had plotted for countless years, they put in a lot of time and effort, expending manpower and resources, meticulously planning and making arrangements, before finally having some progress in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

But in the end, Fang Yuan used his previous life's memories and plucked the fruits of their labor, using these arrangements for himself.

In the end, Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed, and Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed. This piece of information was a huge nightmare to the ten great ancient sects of central continent, who had planned this for a long time.

The leader of this plan — Spirit Affinity House, was pressured by all the different forces, not only from the other nine sects, but also internally within Spirit Affinity House.

"The plot against Eighty-Eight True Yang Building started from the information left behind by Fairy Mo Yao. All these years, our sect has been leading the way and holding the most crucial methods. Now that such a huge change has occurred, not only must we clear the suspicions, we also have to investigate the truth! As the person with the strongest battle strength in our sect, even though I want to stay by my daughter, all of the other elders have agreed that I will go to investigate this.” Feng Jiu Ge sighed.

“Husband, you have to be careful during this northern plains journey. If anything goes wrong, make escaping your priority. After all, over there would not be like in central continent, there is no backup to assist you. Don’t trust the people from the other nine sects, back then when you challenged the ten great sects in successive battles, you won many and faced zero losses, many people’s reputations took a huge hit. All these years, you have been the publicly recognized strongest person in the ten sects, suppressing all of them. If Spirit Affinity House loses you, they might all sigh in relief instead.”

“Don’t worry, for you and our daughter, I will be careful.” Feng Jiu Ge touched Fairy Bai Qing’s cheeks as he kissed her lips gently.

When their lips separated, he took out a rank five letter sending green bird Gu.

“This is a letter from Hu Immortal blessed land, that rascal Fang Yuan accepted Huang Er’s challenge.” Feng Jiu Ge said.

“Him? Ever since Huang Er was born, she had only suffered a loss in this Fang Yuan’s hands. After Huang Er returned, she was so indignant and wanted to take revenge, I got you to send him a challenge letter earlier, but he did not reply. To think that he has replied now, what is his motive?” Fairy Bai Qing had a deep impression of Fang Yuan.

Feng Jiu Ge’s gaze concentrated: “Ever since Huang Er lost, we had investigated this lad thoroughly. He has quite the backing, there is a mysterious force behind him, he actually dared to snatch Hu Immortal blessed land under the eyes of all ten great ancient sects. But these smart alecks in Immortal Crane Sect acknowledged him as one of their own, leaving us no way to make a move.”

“This way, Immortal Crane Sect can exclude the rest of us nine sects and claim Hu Immortal blessed land for themselves. If it had been me, I would have done the same.” Fairy Bai Qing said.

“Over a year has passed according to central continent time, even northern plains’ True Yang Building has collapsed in this period, the laughable thing is that Immortal Crane Sect has not even succeeded yet, Hu Immortal blessed land is still in that rascal’s hands. What a joke.” Feng Jiu Ge laughed in disdain.

“We can’t say that. During this year, Immortal Crane Sect had first spent a lot of effort to capture the ancient desolate beast, spirit rhino, then many of the Gu Immortals in their sect were involved in the reincarnation battlefield, and now even Great Heavenly Sword Sect which is under their control is trying to gain independence, Immortal Crane Sect has too many things to deal with. Together with our nine sects exerting pressure on them covertly after we learned the truth, obstructing them from attacking Hu Immortal blessed land by force, all of these reasons resulted in Hu Immortal blessed land being yet to fall at this point.” Fairy Bai Qing said.

Feng Jiu Ge shook his head: “The force behind Fang Yuan is shrouded in mystery, we do not know much about them yet. Yesterday, Immortal Crane Sect publicly declared that Fang Yuan had turned on them after obtaining Hu Immortal blessed land, he is now a traitor of the sect. It is evident that their soft tactics had no effect. Now it seems like Immortal Crane Sect is going to deal with Hu Immortal blessed land forcefully during this period of time. Hmph, I want to see what force it is, to be able to contest with our ten great sects.”

Fairy Bai Qing's gaze flickered, she seemed to have comprehended something: "I understand this Fang Yuan's intention. He is not a member of Immortal Crane Sect, it seems he knew that Immortal Crane Sect was going to deal with him. Thus, he sent this letter, to interact with the outside world, so that he can resist Immortal Crane Sect using Spirit Affinity House."

"But now, Immortal Crane Sect has an upright reason to strike, because Fang Yuan is a traitor of Immortal Crane Sect. Immortal Crane Sect can attack Hu Immortal blessed land righteously, while we cannot interfere."

Fairy Bai Qing was unresigned: "Is there no way for us to interfere? If Immortal Crane Sect gets Dang Hun mountain, I'm afraid their sect's foundation will get much stronger."

"As righteous sects, we have rules to follow. After all, there are so many other sects in central continent observing us, if the ten great sects break established practices, will we still be able to command those on our sides? Even though Immortal Crane Sect initially deceived the other nine sects, they were indeed led into believing them for some time, because Immortal Crane Sect had Fang Zheng who could be used as a perfect excuse."

"Since Immortal Crane Sect's plan worked out, we had to acknowledge them. At least, we cannot interfere this time. But if Immortal Crane Sect fails in taking down Hu Immortal blessed land, our nine sects will have reason to strike. After all, everyone knows about this situation right now, but because of rules and reputation, we are all pretending to be ignorant. If Immortal Crane Sect fails, no one will allow them to take Hu Immortal blessed land for themselves anymore." Feng Jiu Ge continued.

He paused before continuing: "Before going to northern plains, I plan to give my one's own way Gu to Immortal Crane Sect for their use."

"Ah? What is your intention?" Fairy Bai Qing was slightly taken aback.

Feng Jiu Ge was very confident: "We do not know about the strength of Fang Yuan's force, whether he can protect Hu Immortal blessed land is an unknown factor. If he defeats Immortal Crane Sect, then the ten great sects will strike together to split up this blessed land. But if Immortal Crane Sect wins, we can use my one's own way Gu as a reason to gain some advantage from Dang Hun mountain as well."

Hu Immortal blessed land, Dang Hun palace.

"Declaring me as the sect's traitor, this means Immortal Crane Sect will attack Hu Immortal blessed land very soon." Fang Yuan looked at the report in his hands with a heavy feeling.

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu was not fed yet, under such circumstances, using the immortal killer move myriad self was extremely risky.

If he was unlucky, he might lose the cleanse soul Immortal Gu for good.

This way, without myriad self, Fang Yuan would lose his greatest trump card.

"Immortal Crane Sect announced that I was a traitor in advance, but they did not attack. They are evidently waiting now, trying to lure the force behind me to make a move, so that they can fight it out. This is truly the demeanor and confidence of one of the ten great sects."

Fang Yuan thought a little about it and knew that Immortal Crane Sect's attack would be very powerful this time!

To him, the most important thing now was to find the white lotus giant silkworm Gu, to feed cleanse soul Immortal Gu until it was full.

At the same time, he needed to accumulate funds, and prepare enough green grape immortal essence.

Most Immortal Gu required immortal essence to activate.

Without immortal essence, no matter how many Immortal Gu he had, he could not use their abilities.

What is the point of war? Money!

In this world, why do Gu Immortals fight? For immortal essence stones! It was about immortal essence stones!

“Sigh, this is quite the problem. My funds that have just recovered are going to take a huge hit again. Two consecutive battles would completely devastate my already weak finances.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 697: Immortal Crane Sect, Gu Immortal Meeting

Central Continent, Fei He mountain.

At the highest point of the mountain, in the hall of affairs.

Gu Immortals were seated in a circle, their immortal auras radiated as they discussed the important matters within Immortal Crane Sect.

“The spirit rhino’s illness is getting worse, I need to purchase large amounts of materials, to refine the healing Gu that can treat it. But to completely heal the spirit rhino, I need a lot of healing Gu recipes and to carry out research on them. I estimate that I will need three hundred and sixty immortal essence stones.” Gu Immortal Shu Zhi Ge spoke loudly.

Immediately afterwards, a Gu Immortal rebuked him: “The spirit rhino is an ancient desolate beast, it has a very strong body. But now, it has already been sick for half a year, why has it not recovered yet?”

“Shu Zhi Ge, are you trying to delay the treatment of the spirit rhino so that you can reap some gains from the process?” A Gu Immortal questioned.

Shu Zhi Ge heard this and his eyebrows rose up, he screamed: “Fan Xi Liu, don’t bullshit me! Wasn’t this all because you guys used a poison path Immortal Gu when you captured it? Back then, I urged you, don’t use it, don’t use it, but in the end, to save your efforts, you poisoned the spirit rhino. Now that there is trouble, you need me to clean up after you!”

“You are the one bullshitting! Do you know how hard it was to capture that spirit rhino alive? It is easy for you to speak like this!” Fan Xi Liu was just as fierce, shouting loudly.

Ding.

At this time, a bell rang, it was a crisp and clear sound.

The Gu Immortals' words were all swallowed by the sound of the bell, as this sound continued echoing, it became louder.

Shu Zhi Ge and Fan Xi Liu, no matter how much they spoke, their voices would only turn into bell sounds. They decided to keep quiet as everyone's gazes turned to the origin of the sound.

At the centermost seat, there was an old man, it was the person with the highest authority in Immortal Crane Sect, the rank eight first supreme elder that controlled the entire situation.

Immortal Crane Sect's first supreme elder's voice was low and slow: “Now, Shu Zhi Ge's suggestion requires three hundred and sixty immortal essence stones, to purchase Gu recipes and Gu worms to heal the spirit rhino, we will vote now.”

“I object. Three hundred and sixty immortal essence stones is too many. My budget last time was merely two hundred immortal essence stones. Is healing a spirit rhino more important than healing Gu Immortals?” Fan Xi Liu was the first to object.

A Gu Immortal beside him said: “The spirit rhino is important, but it is not crucial. The most crucial matter now is the situation in the northwest, I object to this suggestion as well.”

“We will talk about Great Heavenly Sword Sect in detail later, now we are only discussing the matter of healing the spirit rhino.” First supreme elder interjected.

“I object.” The third Gu Immortal said.

“Before expressing my decision, I would like to hear Lady Sang Xin's input. Our sect had expended much effort to capture the ancient desolate beast spirit rhino, it was to use the spirit rhino's blood to create an even more secretive information path Gu worm. I wonder what Lady Sang Xin's progress is?” The fourth Gu Immortal looked at Lady Sang Xin.

Lady Sang Xin was a rank six Gu Immortal, she smiled upon hearing this: “I am ashamed! Right now, we are making little progress, the spirit rhino's body is full of poisonous blood, the research of the information path Gu worm thus is progressing slowly.”

The fourth Gu Immortal nodded: “That means this matter has few prospects. Then, I object.”

Out of the eight Gu Immortals present, five objected. In the end, Shu Zhi Ge only got two hundred immortal essence stones.

This was evidently much less than the three hundred and sixty he requested for. Shu Zhi Ge snorted as he muttered something under his breath, expressing his unhappiness.

Ding.

With another sound of a bell, regardless of whether Shu Zhi Ge was satisfied, first supreme elder continued: “Then next, we will discuss the matter of the reincarnation battlefield.”

Lei Tan stood up from his seat, he had a muscular body, his blue hair pointed towards the sky: “I have been in charge of the reincarnation battlefield’s matters for over thirty years. I am sure everyone knows how important the reincarnation battlefield is. During the middle of this year, our sect had suffered a huge loss in the reincarnation battlefield. Even though reinforcements were swiftly provided and we regained our footing, the situation is still terrible. I need a rank six Gu Immortal’s battle strength or three desolate beasts to reinforce us, and one of the desolate beast has to be a nine palace crane.”

He Feng Yang immediately retorted: “A Gu Immortal’s battle strength? Do you know Immortal Crane Sect’s current situation? Mu Xiao Xiao is recuperating from a serious injury, Lin San Mei is in closed cultivation, we have a lack of manpower in terms of battle strength. You are making such a request at this time?”

Lei Tan snorted: “If Immortal Crane Sect is chased out of the reincarnation battlefield, can you, He Feng Yang, take responsibility?”

He Feng Yang snickered: “We have already invested a huge amount of resources into the Reincarnation Battlefield, two Gu Immortals were already involved in it, we can totally defend our side and maintain stability. Adding in forces will not solve anything, because our competitors in the reincarnation battlefield are the other nine sects. The more reinforcements we send in, the more reinforcements other sects would send, they might even send more than us!”

Shu Zhi Ge nodded: “Agreed, reincarnation battlefield’s situation is stable now, the current objective should be to defend our territory.”

Everyone looked around and started to vote.

Eventually, Lei Tan obtained the help of two desolate beasts, he looked at He Feng Yang in hatred, gritting his teeth.

Ding.

“Next, we will discuss the matter of Great Heavenly Sword Sect.” First supreme elder said.

Gui Li heard this and firmed his gaze, sitting up straight.

Facing everyone’s gazes, he spoke: “Great Heavenly Sword Sect has been under our Immortal Crane Sect for nearly a thousand years. Protected by us, after such a long time, they now have a third Gu Immortal. They want to get rid of this attachment and separate from our sect. If they succeed, our sect’s control over the northwest would decrease significantly. Immortal Crane Sect’s reputation will also take a huge hit. Even though there is not much evidence, I have gone through extensive calculations, I suspect that Myriad Dragon Dock is involved in this matter. If Great Heavenly Sword Sect detaches from us and joins Myriad Dragon Dock, the situation would be even worse. Our territory is connected to Myriad Dragon Dock’s territory, the areas surrounding Great Heavenly Sword Sect would combine into Myriad Dragon Dock’s sphere of influence if that happens.”

“We all know how severe the matter is, you do not need to explain it. I’ll ask you directly, who is the Gu Immortal that you want to recruit from Great Heavenly Sword Sect? How confident are you, is it the other party’s scheme? And most importantly, how much of a price do we need to pay to recruit that Gu Immortal?” Second supreme elder asked.

Great Heavenly Sword Sect was a large sized force, it was unable to sustain the cultivation needs of three Gu Immortals.

Central continent’s current situation was that the ten great ancient sects had control over the entirety of central continent, and eighty percent of its resources were split by the ten sects. Only the ten great ancient sects could sustain a large number of Gu Immortals.

For example, Great Heavenly Sword Sect, which was a subsidiary of Immortal Crane Sect, had to hand over a huge amount of resources every month. The Gu Immortals in Great Heavenly Sword Sect thus lack the resources they need. In this aspect, if there were enough benefits, it was possible to make a Gu Immortal betray them.

If Great Heavenly Sword Sect loses one of its three immortals, it will only have two left and its strength would fall, they could no longer stir up trouble.

Gui Li thought about his words as he said: “As the saying goes, nothing good is cheap, the one we are trying to recruit is not a mortal but a Gu Immortal. I promised them that they would be treated the same as us, after all, this is the standard for joining Immortal Crane Sect. Other than that, there are some resources as well, about seventy five immortal essence stones worth.”

Pausing for a while, Gui Li continued: “In my humble opinion, we should not resort to force for Great Heavenly Sword Sect’s matter, if we can. After all, the deadline of Great Heavenly Sword Sect’s agreement to be our subsidiary sect is coming to an end. It is perfectly fair for them to want to end this relationship and detach from us. If we interfere forcefully, we would have no proper reason. Great Heavenly Sword Sect is also near a territorial border, Myriad Dragon Dock may find an excuse to intervene.”

From start to finish, Gui Li did not mention which Gu Immortal he was thinking of recruiting.

Second supreme elder also did not pursue the matter.

All of the Gu Immortals present were supreme elders of Immortal Crane Sect, but they had internal factions and conflicts as well.

A place with people will have conflicts over benefits, and when there is conflict of interest, there are allegiances.

If Gui Li said it now, it might give rise to unnecessary conflict.

Great Heavenly Sword Sect’s matter was extremely important to Immortal Crane Sect. After voting, Gui Li’s suggestion was approved.

Ding.

With a loud sound from the bell, first supreme elder said: “Next, we will discuss the matter of taking back Hu Immortal blessed land. He Feng Yang, tell us about it.”

Lei Tan snorted coldly, throwing a glance at He Feng Yang filled with ill intentions.

He Feng Yang stood up from his seat, showing a serious attitude: “Everyone, Hu Immortal blessed land is a rank six blessed land, even though Hu Immortal did not manage it well, Dang Hun mountain is in there. As we all know, Dang Hun mountain’s guts Gu can greatly raise a sect’s foundation, it is useful even to us Gu Immortals.”

Before he finished speaking, Gu Immortal Lei Tan questioned: “He Feng Yang! It has already been more than a year, why is Hu Immortal blessed land not taken down yet? In fact, there is not even any progress. Do you know the other nine sects are looking at us like a joke now.”

He Feng Yang was prepared for this, he spoke calmly: “Any person prepared to accomplish grand feats would face much mockery from the people around him, if we cannot endure this, how can we have any achievements?”

“I came here for a meeting, not to listen to your teachings. No matter what, it is undeniable that you have not retrieved Hu Immortal blessed land yet.” Lei Tan said.

“During this last year, I have been extremely busy over this matter, I had not relaxed even a bit. A few days ago, I have already declared publicly that Fang Yuan is a traitor of the sect, and that we will take him down soon. During these recent days, I have sent informants to monitor the other nine great sects, we have not found any special reactions from any sect. The crucial person of this operation has been appropriately prepared, we just need Old Lord Can Yang and Fairy Cang Yu to assist in our move, and we will be able to take back Hu Immortal blessed land.” He Feng Yang said.

“Old Lord Can Yang is rank seven, while Fairy Cang Yu has decent strength among rank six Gu Immortals, you have the nerve to request this? You are a grand Gu Immortal yourself, but you need three Gu Immortals to deal with a mortal? You are killing a chicken with an ox cleaver, this is what you have prepared after over a year?” Lei Tan mocked and laughed loudly.

He Feng Yang’s eyes were twitching, he controlled the anger inside him as he looked around, calmly saying: “To ensure that nothing goes wrong, I have to make such a request. I’m sure everyone here knows the situation. I used Fang Zheng to lie to the nine sects, snatching Hu Immortal blessed land for ourselves in name. But ever since the nine sects found out the truth, they have been targeting Dang Hun mountain, obstructing us many times in secret. This time, we need to succeed, we cannot fail, otherwise they will intervene. By then, the situation is not something our sect can control anymore.”

Hearing this, first supreme elder sighed lightly: “They have already obstructed us. He Feng Yang, I have bad news for you, as well as good news.”

He Feng Yang’s heart shuddered: “First elder, please tell me.”

“Never mind, look at it yourself.” First elder flicked his finger, as a rank five letter sending green bird Gu flew out.

He Feng Yang received it and his consciousness entered it, seeing the start, his expression turned ashen: “What? They are requesting Old Lord Can Yang to go to northern plains?”

In He Feng Yang’s plan, Old Lord Can Yang was the greatest battle strength, he had an attacking type Immortal Gu, he was the powerhouse that could hold the fort.

But before He Feng Yang had even acted, he lost his strongest general!

Second supreme elder said: “We can’t reject them. True Yang Building collapsed for no apparent reason, the cooperation of our ten sects to take down True Yang Building has failed. All the years of hard work have gone down the drain, all of our investments were wasted. This matter is too important, we have to organize a group to go investigate the truth in northern plains. At the same time, in northern plains, all sorts of Immortal Gu have appeared all over the place, thus this northern plains journey has another major objective, that is to capture some Immortal Gu. If the Gu Immortal we send has low battle strength, not only would we fail to gain anything, we might even be sidelined and reduced into being a shield, losing out in all aspects.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 698: Attacking Hu Immortal blessed land (1/3)

“But the decision of staying or going for Lord Can Yang would affect the ownership of Dang Hun mountain and guts Gu.” He Feng Yang still wanted to fight for it.

“Feng Jiu Ge is the publicly recognized number one battle strength of the ten sects, he is also the leader of this northern plains expedition. We have no justifiable reason to reject his request. You know clearly that the sect’s manpower in terms of battle strength is very tight recently. Even if we refuse him forcefully, the other nine sects will use excuses like not needing a burden to go with them, jointly pressuring us.”

Hearing the first supreme elder say that, He Feng Yang’s expression became utterly dark.

Lei Tan smiled silently, he did not conceal his schadenfreude at all.

He Feng Yang felt he was so angry that he was going to blow up, he continued reading the letter, but his expression suddenly froze, he said with mixed emotions: “This... Feng Jiu Ge is actually lending one’s own way Immortal Gu to me? He has also raised one’s own way Immortal Gu to rank seven! Rank six one’s own way Immortal Gu is a consumable Gu that can only be used thrice. But the rank seven one’s own way Gu has no such limits, it can be used as many times as possible, but the expended immortal essence is much higher.”

“What? I remember that He Feng Yang’s one’s own way Gu only had one use left. To think that Feng Jiu Ge raised one’s own way Gu to rank seven! No wonder he requested for one’s own way Immortal Gu, he had an agenda all along.”

“But his luck is really good, Immortal Gu are hard to refine, there is a very low chance of success, one’s own way Gu was not his vital Gu, but he actually succeeded.” Gui Li said.

Shu Zhi Ge said: “Spirit Affinity House has a lot of assets, and has close relations with Heavenly Court, their foundation is even deeper than Immortal Crane Sect. It is not a strange thing that they could refine a rank seven Immortal Gu.”

“With one’s own way Gu, we will not be suppressed by the blessed land, we can use mortal Gu freely.” Lady Sang Xin looked at He Feng Yang.

“Feng Jiu Ge’s scheme is great, on one hand he lent us one’s own way Gu, if we succeed in obtaining Hu Immortal blessed land, he would be able to get a share. On the other hand, he took Old Lord Can Yang away, that was to lower our capability in the fight for Hu Immortal blessed land.” Second supreme elder analyzed.

Third supreme elder Lord Tiger Demon drank the wine in his bowl before smashing it: “Damn! This is not the first time that the other nine great ancient sects have secretly obstructed our sect in dealing with Hu Immortal blessed land! He Feng Yang! Hu Immortal blessed land has been handled by you alone all along, I hope you can succeed this time, do not leave any opportunities for the other sects. Slap their faces hard. I want them to beg us to cooperate on selling the guts Gu!”

“I understand, third elder.” He Feng Yang bowed.

The Gu Immortals discussed for a day and a night, they finally decided on what Immortal Crane Sect would do for the next few months.

Two days later, Fang Zheng opened the stone door, entering the blood pool.

“Fang Zheng, after so many hardships in training, we have finally reached this stage. Today, you will take revenge for your clansmen, you will make contributions to the sect, you will do a favor to all the people in this world. We must succeed!” In his aperture, the spirit incubating flea was vibrating, emitting Lord Sky Crane’s voice.

“Yes, master! I will succeed!!” Fang Zheng clenched his fists, his expression was extremely firm.

He walked to the center of the blood pool, letting the boiling blood submerge half of his body.

Next, he breathed in deeply, using iron blood Gu. His blood became blacker and thicker, his skin turned darker.

Immediately afterwards, Fang Zheng activated blood blade Gu while maintaining iron blood Gu.

Sizzle...

From his body, hundreds of iron-blood blades flew out, shooting everywhere.

Hundreds of cuts appeared on his body, as blood like molten iron flowed out.

An intense pleasure hit him, Fang Zheng gritted his teeth as he entered the crucial step, using blood merge Gu...

At the same time, on Tian Ti mountain, two Gu Immortals arrived.

One of them looked young and mild like jade. He wore a green robe and had a jade pendant on his waist. What was most eye-catching were his dark green eyebrows, they were sharp and long, reaching down to his waist. It was the rank six Gu Immortal of Immortal Crane Sect, the one known as Winged Crane Flying Immortal, He Feng Yang.

The other was a young and beautiful looking woman, she had a good figure and her face was like a peach, her eyes were thin and delicate, she wore a pink-blue flowery dress, as it fluttered in the wind. She was another Gu Immortal of Immortal Crane Sect — Fairy Cang Yu.

The two stepped onto Tian Ti mountain, towards the location of Hu Immortal blessed land.

What they saw before them was a large green forest, it was plain and ordinary.

Hu Immortal blessed land was a separate small world, it was distinct from the world of central continent. As long as there were no loopholes in the blessed land, or the entrance of the blessed land was not opened, from outside, one could not see any signs of its existence. If one did not know of its existence, even if Gu Immortals passed by, they would not realize that there was a blessed land here.

Fairy Cang Yu looked around, the scenery was that of a jade green mountain with chirping birds, not one person was in sight.

But she smiled to He Feng Yang: “It seems that there are indeed many people today, and quite a few familiar faces too.”

She and He Feng Yang did not conceal their traces, because their actions later would cause a commotion that could not be hidden. Thus, when He Feng Yang started to move, the other nine sects already knew about it.

Right now, Gu Immortals from the other nine ancient sects were already lurking close by, observing He Feng Yang and Cang Yu’s actions, obtaining first hand information.

He Feng Yang scattered his Gu worms as he praised: “I’ve heard that fairy has an investigative killer move, known as micro sense, it can be sold for five immortal essence stones in treasure yellow heaven, it has great effect.”

“Lord Flying Immortal is too kind, I merely obtained it from a fortuitous encounter in the reincarnation battlefield.” Fairy Cang Yu delicately laughed.

“I will need fairy’s help in this battle today.” He Feng Yang’s attitude was very gentle and kind.

“Lord Flying Immortal is too polite, my weak methods cannot compare to the grand Winged Crane Flying Immortal’s myriad crane soaring flight. It would be a great honor if I can witness it today.” Fairy Cang Yu sighed.

He Feng Yang laughed.

As he said this, he had already scattered about ten thousand mortal Gu, after five minutes, his preparations were complete.

“Next, we wait for the right time. Fairy, please.” He Feng Yang waved his sleeves, as a lump of white cloud flew out.

The cloud was only three meters from the ground, turning into the shape of a cushion.

He Feng Yang leapt onto it and sat down cross-legged.

This was a white cloud cushion Gu, it was rank five and could assist a Gu Master in cultivating, increasing the effect of nurturing their aperture. Although the effect was not great, years of accumulation would still be a significant amount.

After He Feng Yang ascended to an immortal, white cloud cushion Gu lost its primary use, and could only be used as his seat.

The white cloud cushion was huge, He Feng Yang purposely left enough space for Fairy Cang Yu.

But Fairy Cang Yu took a look and did not step onto the white cloud cushion, she flicked her finger as a wood path Gu flew out.

The Gu worm drilled into the ground, several breaths later, peach trees started growing, the branches intertwined together, forming a comfortable bed made of peach blossoms.

Fairy Cang Yu lightly chuckled as she stepped onto the bed, half lying down and relaxing herself.

At the same time, in Fu Hu blessed land, Fang Zheng was at the last step.

He activated failed blood demon flower Gu, as all of the flesh and blood in his body became the soil and nutrients for the demon flower to grow. Countless vines grew out of his skin, coiling around his body.

The beautiful and demonic blue chrysanthemums blossomed and opened brightly.

An intense pain assaulted his entire body, even iron blood Gu was having no effect, Fang Zheng gritted his teeth as his expression contorted, he forced himself to endure it.

“Quickly use cold blood Gu!” Lord Sky Crane’s soul was observing Fang Zheng’s condition, at this moment, he reminded him.

Fang Zheng endured the inhuman pain as he mobilized his primeval essence, activating cold blood Gu.

His body shuddered for a few moments, as the temperature of his boiling blood fell, preventing him from suffering the terrible fate of being cooked alive.

“Use blood sense Gu.” Lord Sky Crane gave instructions.

Fang Zheng gritted his teeth till blood was dripping out, he activated this rank five blood path investigative Gu forcefully.

This Gu could allow him to sense others with the same bloodline as him. The closer they were and the thicker their bloodline, the clearer the connection between them.

But this time, no matter how Fang Zheng tried to sense him, he could not see any images.

“How can this be? You and Fang Yuan are brothers by blood, your bloodlines are of the most close relations, meanwhile failed blood demon flower Gu can enhance the effect of blood path Gu worms, how could you not sense anything after such a long time?” Fang Zheng was in so much pain he could not talk, but Lord Sky Crane was monitoring him closely, seeing that there was no effect, he became nervous, shouting in panic.

“Fang Zheng, hang in there! You have trained for so long, enduring so much inhuman hardship, it was all for this. Our sect’s two Gu Immortals have already set off, we are waiting for you to lead the way! Do not give up, do not relax your concentration for even a minute.” Lord Sky Crane urged worriedly.

Fang Zheng’s body was shivering intensely, he could not answer his master, he could only use actions to express his obedience.

“You still can’t sense him? Strange! Too strange! Fang Zheng, you have to extend your sense towards the hole earth Gu in the blood pool. If Hu Immortal blessed land’s hole earth Gu has not been destroyed yet, then this hole earth Gu would connect to Hu Immortal blessed land. It can help you greatly in sensing Fang Yuan!” Lord Sky Crane reminded.

But Fang Zheng had already sent his sense over to the hole earth Gu, there was little effect.

To him, he felt like he was in complete darkness, searching for his target was like looking for a speck of light in complete darkness.

Be it Fang Zheng or Lord Sky Crane, they did not know about the changes in Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had become an immortal zombie!

His body’s blood had turned into a cold jade green zombie blood, from the original healthy red blood.

This, no doubt, raised the difficulty for Fang Zheng immensely.

No matter how hard Fang Zheng tried, he could not sense Fang Yuan’s existence!

“Damn it! Damn it!” Lord Sky Crane was extremely anxious, according to the experience of their previous training, Fang Zheng’s endurance had a time limit. Ninety percent of the time had passed already, he was near his limit.

“Don’t tell me, we have to use that trump card?” Lord Sky Crane was having an internal struggle.

To ensure that this succeeded, He Feng Yang had secretly placed some blood path Gu worms in Fang Zheng’s body. Together with the Gu worms in the blood pool, it formed a trump card that could prevent any accidents from happening.

But if they used this trump card, Fang Zheng would completely lose his mind, he would activate blood sense Gu without caring about his life. Fang Zheng’s soul would be consumed intensely, and his blood and flesh would shrivel quickly, there was an extremely high chance of dying!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 699: Attacking Hu Immortal blessed land (2/3)

Lord Sky Crane hesitated.

On one hand, he had instructions from He Feng Yang and was responsible for the heavy task. Reason told him he needed to sacrifice Fang Zheng, this mortal child, for the benefits of Immortal Crane Sect, and it was also the most appropriate choice.

But on the other hand, his sentiments were obstructing him.

Humans were not made of stone, how could they be devoid of emotions?

‘Being with Fang Zheng day and night, watching him grow step by step, looking at him unable to think properly sometimes, looking at him cultivate bitterly with all his effort for vengeance, he really resembles me back then...’

Lord Sky Crane could not bear to sacrifice!

“Fang Zheng, you brat, I taught you so many times, this is the most basic refinement method!”

“Sorry, master.” Fang Zheng’s hand was emitting smoke, the Gu worm in the palm of his hand had already turned into a pile of ash.

...

“Fang Zheng, practice, practice, and practice more. A disciple of mine, the grand Lord Sky Crane, can’t even arrange the cranes in an arrow formation? Where would my face go if this was spread?!” Lord Sky Crane shouted in fury.

“Sorry, master, I will definitely try harder... ugh!” Fang Zheng made more mistakes the more nervous he became.

Two groups of cranes collided against each other in the air because of his last mistake.

The miserable cries of the cranes and the sounds of bone fractures resounded like dumplings dropped into a pot, as they fell down to the ground.

The spirit incubating flea was dazed for a moment at beholding this scene before erupting like thunder, “You fool!”

...

“Master, I was wrong, sorry.” Fang Zheng faced the wall inside a room for confinement, as he apologized to Lord Sky Crane.

“Stupid kid, what are you saying sorry for? You fought well!”

“Ah? Master, doesn’t the sect prohibit internal fights?”

“Hmph, Zhang Nan’s master is Xuan Ji Zi, back then I didn’t find him pleasing to my eyes and beat him till his head was swollen. I was also confined longer than you. I might have died already, but as my disciple, how could you be bullied by others!” Lord Sky Crane snickered.

“Master....” Fang Zheng choked with sobs, his eyes reddened and tears started forming in his eyes.

“Idiot, what are you crying for. A man does not easily shed tears!” Lord Sky Crane berated.

“Yes, master. Sorry, master!”

...

This crucial moment seemed to span endlessly.

The past scenes floated by one by one in Lord Sky Crane’s mind. He seemed to hear being called master again and again.

Lord Sky Crane roared in a voice so loud that it could awaken the dead: “Fang Zheng, persevere! Have you forgotten the pain Fang Yuan inflicted upon you? Forgotten how your fellow disciples beat you black and blue when you first arrived at Immortal Crane Sect? Forgotten the grieving ghosts of your clan, forgotten how miserably your uncle and aunt had died at Fang Yuan’s hands? Your hatred, your effort, all of it need to be shown at this moment! You can’t fail, you can’t give up!”

“I will definitely sense him, definitely!” Fang Zheng’s spirit was stirred up when he heard Lord Sky Crane’s roar.

However, he still only sensed endless darkness.

No matter how much effort he exerted, no matter how he used his energy, he still could not sense any indication.

“Why?! Why!” Fang Zheng’s mind was shaken and was starting to turn chaotic when the memories of that unbearable past hidden deep within him started surfacing one after another.

The shadow which Fang Yuan had cast upon Fang Zheng since youth seemed to be the same as this darkness he was sensing, causing Fang Zheng to feel boundless pressure and not a trace of light.

Fang Zheng felt he was an extremely tiny speck in this vast darkness.

Hesitation, bewilderment, loneliness, helplessness, all sorts of feelings gushed in his heart.

“Sorry, master, I... failed.” Tears fell down Fang Zheng’s eyes as his body reached the limit and his mind was close to collapsing.

“No! You can’t fail, I don’t allow it!” Lord Sky Crane was also anxious, shouting repeatedly.

However, Fang Zheng was slowly unable to hear him, he was about to fall unconscious like in the previous drills.

“Damn it, damn it!” Lord Sky Crane shouted in his heart, he thought of his possession plan, and thought of the punishment He Feng Yang would give if he failed this task.

“Fang Zheng, you brat, all my efforts to cultivate you are in vain. In the end, you are still unable to get rid of that man’s shadow! Since that is the case, then let me give you a hand!!”

Lord Sky Crane’s thoughts flashed before he finally convinced himself. The situation also forced him into making this choice.

He used that trump card.

Instantly, the whole blood pool let out bright lights, sweeping away the previous darkness.

Gu worms concealed around the blood pool activated one after another on Fang Zheng’s body.

“Ahhh——!” Fang Zheng’s body spasmed intensely like he was electrocuted. He fiercely raised his head and spread his arms, clenching his fists so tightly that the nails pierced into the flesh.

An incomparable pain attacked his mind, causing his eyes to roll backwards and show the whites.

Almost in the next breath of time, Fang Zheng’s roar stopped abruptly; he lost his consciousness, but under the effects of Gu worms, he still continued to activate failed blood demon flower Gu, and was still using blood sense Gu to sense Fang Yuan’s existence.

The blood pool seethed and gurgled.

Squeak squeak... the failed blood demon flowers started growing rapidly, emitting bone-chilling sounds.

Fang Zheng maintained his position, with his head raised and arms spread, without budging in the slightest, like a statue.

The demonic vines had been small and thin like needles, but now these vines grew thicker, at least as thick as fingers. The largest vine grew from the depths of Fang Zheng’s throat and extended out from his mouth like a python.

Besides this, there were vines growing out from his ears and nostrils.

Soon, vines grew out from every pore on his skin; Fang Zheng had thoroughly turned into nourishment for the demon flowers, his body was cut open everywhere, there was nothing remaining of his original appearance, just like a flower statue that had been tastefully trimmed.

“Brat....” Looking at Fang Zheng transforming into this miserable appearance, Lord Sky Crane’s original anxiety and nervousness disappeared. He felt a bleak emptiness that spread to the depths of his heart, it was extremely unbearable.

This unbearable feeling soon turned into a heavy guilt that filled Lord Sky Crane’s mind.

“Brat, master... has done you an injustice!” Lord Sky Crane’s soul, which was stored in the spirit incubating flea, was unexpectedly letting out drops of soul tears!

“Hmm? He Feng Yang’s arrangements have been activated.” In the depths of Fu Hu blessed land, Immortal Crane Sect’s third supreme elder slowly opened his eyes and mumbled.

He thought of the matter that He Feng Yang had specially requested of him before he left.

The third elder, Lord Tiger Demon, used his immortal essence to activate an Immortal Gu that gracefully flew out of the hall.

This Immortal Gu was not Lord Tiger Demon’s, but had been borrowed by He Feng Yang from Lady Sang Xin. It was a rank six information path Immortal Gu – Mutual Sense.

In ten or so breaths of time, the Immortal Gu descended down to over the blood pool, above Fang Zheng.

“This is — Immortal Gu?!” Lord Sky Crane’s eyes opened wide in shock.

Mutual sense Immortal Gu let out a grey light pillar, the smoke-like light pillar covered Fang Zheng. Several breaths later, the grey light pillar was dyed red with Fang Zheng’s blood.

“Where... is this?” Fang Zheng’s remaining consciousness surveyed his surroundings.

It was darkness around him, no matter where he walked and no matter how far, the surroundings were still covered in deep and boundless darkness.

However, right at this time, a blood-red light speck appeared ahead of Fang Zheng.

“Ah? That is....” Fang Zheng tried walking towards the light; when he reached closer, he sensed a familiar aura from the blood-red light speck, “This is older brother’s, no, Fang Yuan’s aura! Master, master, do you hear me, I have succeeded! I finally sensed him!”

Fang Zheng was extremely excited and tried to speak, but no words came out.

His mouth was opened so wide that it had almost deformed, it was being held in place by the thick demon flower vines. But a joyful teardrop fell down from the corner of his eye.

This tear fiercely shook Lord Sky Crane’s soul, he sank down into deathly silence.

Fang Zheng approached the blood-red light speck, suddenly the light speck let out an extremely powerful suction force that completely caught Fang Zheng off-guard, absorbing his remaining consciousness.

At this moment, in Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan gave a sound of surprise and slowly opened his eyes.

He sensed a blood pool, sensed Fang Zheng’s body, sensed the lush, enchanting failed blood demon flowers, sensed the spirit incubating flea, sensed the information path mutual sense Immortal Gu above....

“So it is like this.” Fang Yuan sneered, “My cute little brother, you are finally going to die? No, in the words of the righteous path, you are sacrificing yourself for the group? Hahaha.”

“What happened?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng, who was sitting to the side, saw Fang Yuan suddenly speaking and immediately questioned.

At the other side from him were Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan, who similarly casted inquiring gazes at Fang Yuan.

“Such a coincidence, I had invited you guys to talk about guts Gu business, but it seems Immortal Crane Sect is making an attack.” Fang Yuan smiled. He then intentionally lowered his eyes and waved his hand, “The other side used my own little brother and used the Immortal Gu, Mutual Sense, to get my location. Everyone, first leave Dang Hun palace and lie in ambush. My senior brother will explain the details to you.”

Immortal Gu Mutual Sense could allow two parties to sense each other’s situation.

At this moment, Fang Zheng and Fang Yuan had sensed each other’s situation through blood sense Gu and mutual sense Immortal Gu.

Naturally, because of the difference in strength between the two sides, Fang Yuan was able to sense everything about Fang Zheng while Fang Zheng could only see things through Fang Yuan’s eyes. His perception was limited and he was not even able to sense the immortal aperture inside Fang Yuan.

Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan glanced at each other, and saw the heavy mood in the other’s eyes.

They were hindered by the Snowy Mountain Alliance and could not easily avoid this, they could only brace themselves to fight alongside Fang Yuan.

On Tian Ti mountain, He Feng Yang, who was sitting on a white cloud cushion Gu, suddenly opened his eyes.

“The time is ripe!” A sharp light burst out of his eyes as he took out an Immortal Gu.

“Expand space Immortal Gu.” Fairy Cang Yu softly breathed out when she saw the Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu belonged to Immortal Crane Sect’s second supreme elder, its ability was to expand the space of a blessed land. He Feng Yang had borrowed it to use it as the core of an immortal killer move.

Immortal killer move – Force Intrusion!

Over ten beads of green grape immortal essence were spent in an instant. An enormous aura rose up and formed translucent ripples in the air.

Crack...

Like the sound of glass breaking, space broke apart in front of He Feng Yang and Fairy Cang Yu, revealing the terrain of Hu Immortal blessed land.

He Feng Yang leisurely stored expand space Immortal Gu before glancing at Fairy Cang Yu and inviting in a gentlemanly voice: “Fairy, please enter.”

Fairy Cang Yu delicately laughed before stepping forward in the direction of Hu Immortal blessed land.

Suddenly, lightning struck towards her!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 700: Attacking Hu Immortal blessed land (3/3)

Fairy Cang Yu’s mind was immediately alerted.

The flash of lightning came quickly, it tore through the air and emitting a crackling sound like that of sparks.

“Even though there are many Gu Immortals present, our sect had won in our scheme earlier, according to the rules, the other nine great ancient sects can merely observe this. If they are not from the nine sects, which demonic path Gu Immortal would dare to take a risk and mess with Immortal Crane Sect?”

In an instant, Fairy Cang Yu’s mind was flashing with thoughts.

At the same time, her fingers did not slow down, her ten dainty fingers were fluttering around, about to activate a killer move to strike back.

But at the next moment, He Feng Yang stopped her: “Fairy, wait.”

Saying this, he pulled Fairy Cang Yu to one side, while opening up the hole leading to Hu Immortal blessed land.

The flash of lightning ignored the two of them, it entered Hu Immortal blessed land through this hole.

Using this time, Fairy Cang Yu saw the lightning’s true identity: “This is the earthly calamity — Blue Charm Lightning Shadow?”

He Feng Yang laughed plainly: “This is an earthly calamity targeting Hu Immortal blessed land, after Fang Yuan discarded a huge portion of Hu Immortal blessed land, he sent it out of the blessed land. To think that this blue charm lightning shadow did not vanish, instead it had been hiding on Tian Ti mountain.”

“Great. Blue charm lightning shadow has good battle strength, about the mid-tier of rank six. With it leading from the front, we would have an easier time.” Fairy Cang Yu’s brows eased, she started smiling.

“Fang Yuan has decisiveness, he really is quite impressive, directly discarding close to a quarter of the blessed land. But his strength is simply too low, no matter how much he plots, it is useless.”

He Feng Yang sighed, entering Hu Immortal blessed land along with Fairy Cang Yu.

Once they got in, a wave of heavenly power descended on them, sealing all of the mortal Gu in their hands.

But immediately after, He Feng Yang and Fairy Cang Yu’s bodies shone with an orange and yellow light.

This was the effect of the rank seven one’s own way Immortal Gu, it could prevent their mortal Gu from being suppressed, and let them be activated normally.

Fairy Cang Yu shut her eyes, after a few breaths, she opened them again: “We are at the west area of Hu Immortal blessed land, the blue charm lightning shadow has already gone to the center of the blessed land, towards Dang Hun mountain.”

He Feng Yang nodded: “As I expected, within Hu Immortal blessed land, the safest place is Dang Hun mountain. The blue charm lightning shadow’s first target is the blessed land’s owner. Back then, Hu Immortal was caught off guard and killed by the blue charm lightning shadow. Since it is heading for Dang Hun mountain, that means Fang Yuan is hiding inside Dang Hun mountain, let’s go there.”

“Okay. I’ve always wanted to see what the legendary Dang Hun mountain looks like.” Fairy Cang Yu laughed lightly.

“With the blue charm lightning shadow leading the way, we can also see what kind of ambush the enemy has prepared.” He Feng Yang said, activating expand space Immortal Gu, using another immortal killer move as the hole behind him closed in the blessed land.

“That’s the immortal killer move, force closure.”

“Immortal Crane Sect is so petty, they are not letting us watch.”

“In this battle, if Immortal Crane Sect fails, whether the door is closed or not, we will take over. If Immortal Crane Sect wins, whether the door opens or not, we will leave. Letting us watch would not affect anything.”

“Hmph, they are projecting their own shortcomings onto others. Did they really think we would act out of greed?”

Outside, on Tian Ti mountain, the Gu Immortals from central continent’s other nine great sects were conversing using their divine senses.

“Bi Weng, how high do you think Immortal Crane Sect’s chance of succeeding is?” Gu Immortal Zhang Wen Jiu asked casually.

“Relatively high. Even though we have been obstructing them in secret, causing them to only send two Gu Immortals in the end to take back Hu Immortal blessed land, they still have the battle strength of two Gu Immortals and now the blue charm lightning shadow. Fang Yuan who controls Hu Immortal blessed land is a mere mortal, how can he block Immortal Crane Sect?” Bi Weng answered.

“That’s not what I think. According to the investigation of us, Spirit Butterfly Valley, Fang Yuan had refined Fixed Immortal Travel in Three Kings blessed land, and came here alone. How is that possible? As a mortal, how could he refine an Immortal Gu, how could he have an image of Hu Immortal blessed land’s scenery? Behind him, there is definitely a mastermind. Since the other party dared to snatch Hu Immortal blessed land from the ten ancient sects, I am sure they have the battle strength to protect it. Maybe, they might be able to resist Immortal Crane Sect’s attack?” Rainbow Butterfly Immortal Concubine Han Cai Xin said.

“Immortal Concubine also does not speak without reason.” Gu Immortal Du Teng laughed: “If Immortal Crane Sect fails, do we have a competition to decide the victor or choose to have an agreement among the ten sects first before striking?”

This was a crucial problem, the Gu Immortals from the nine sects fell into silence.

“Of course we’ll discuss it in detail another day. We are the ten great ancient sects, not rabid dogs scavenging for food.” Myriad Dragon Dock’s Gu Immortal Guan Cao Ze immediately said.

Among the Gu Immortals present, Guan Cao Ze had the lowest battle strength. If they battled, he would be at the greatest disadvantage.

“This is inappropriate, this is inappropriate.” Green Canary Boy shook his head.

“We should strike while the iron is hot, this is just a blessed land, we should decide on it today and not waste more time!” Great Lord Lie Yang pretended to be unaware.

“Strange, didn’t Vicious Lightning Fiend of your Myriad Dragon Dock just end his closed cultivation? Why would you be sent here for this contest for Hu Immortal blessed land?” Poison Count Lu Xu laughed coldly as he pointed out Guan Cao Ze’s weakness.

The Gu Immortals quickly formed a consensus, if Immortal Crane Sect failed, they would have a competition to decide who the blessed land belongs to. If Immortal Crane Sect won, they would also have a competition, the sect that places first would have priority in reaching an agreement with Immortal Crane Sect for the guts Gu.

Guts Gu could raise the foundation of a sect, it was even useful to Gu Immortals. Any sect would not be able to take it solely for themselves, when the other nine sects exert pressure, they would be forced to sell it.

“You guys...” Guan Cao Ze was fuming on the outside, but he was snickering on the inside.

At the same time as the discussion between the Gu Immortals of the nine sects, within Hu Immortal blessed land, He Feng Yang and Fairy Cang Yu were slowly flying towards Dang Hun mountain.

“This is a blood pool?” Halfway there, He Feng Yang gave a curious gaze.

He found that within Hu Immortal blessed land, there was a huge blood pool, it was so huge it could be called a blood lake.

“Hmph, another blood path scoundrel!” Fairy Cang Yu frowned, saying in a despising tone.

“Blood path cultivators harm all living beings in this world, as it can allow them to raise their battle strength. This is the reason why countless Gu Masters choose this path! Every ten years, Heavenly Court would issue the Demon Judgment Board, and many blood path Gu Masters would be on it. Blood Sea Ancestor, he truly caused much harm to the world!” He Feng Yang criticized, thrusting with his palm as a jade lightning ball flew towards it.

Boom boom boom.

After a series of explosions, the blood pool was destroyed, turning into ruins.

After destroying the blood pool, the two immortals continued to fly towards Dang Hun mountain.

On the way, Fairy Cang Yu shook her head: “This Hu Immortal blessed land is managed too poorly, it is almost completely desolate. I’ve heard that this place had large groups of foxes in the past, but now, after flying for so long, we have not seen a single myriad fox group.”

“There are few fox groups, but there are surely a lot of rockmen. Fang Yuan is a mortal after all, he only knows how to use guts Gu to increase the production of rockmen. But he does not know that he is pursuing tiny gains while discarding the foundations. Hu Immortal was an enslavement path Gu Immortal, enslavement path was the main law in her blessed land, it is best for rearing fox groups.” He Feng Yang laughed in disdain.

“Hu Immortal blessed land is truly wasted in his hands. Once it is in our sect, Hu Immortal blessed land will develop greatly, but I wonder who in the sect would be its owner.” Fairy Cang Yu sighed.

Hearing that, He Feng Yang sighed: “According to the rules, after we recover it, Hu Immortal blessed land would be a public blessed land of Immortal Crane Sect, we would only have a limited time in operating it after getting it. But this managing right is also extremely lucrative. After all, the center of the blessed land is Dang Hun mountain, it is a gold mine!”

“The scariest part is that this gold mine will never run out.” Fairy Cang Yu nodded in agreement.

The two of them talked along the way, not facing any obstruction. This raised their confidence that the blessed land was in terrible shape.

They started to fly faster, and when they were in front of Dang Hun mountain, they were already talking about ‘what they would do when Dang Hun mountain belongs to them’.

In the air above Dang Hun mountain, the blue charm lightning shadow was shrieking and charging, attacking Dang Hun mountain.

But though it was formed from an earthly calamity, it had life as well, Dang Hun mountain’s vibration could attack its soul, its weakness.

“Fang Yuan, come out. You should know that Dang Hun mountain can only block the blue charm lightning shadow because it has no Gu worms. Even if you raise Dang Hun mountain’s power to its limits, you cannot block two Gu Immortals.” He Feng Yang shouted, his voice could pierce through heaven and earth.

“Fang Yuan, a wise man submits to circumstances, I am sure the land spirit is beside you now. Then you should know that Hu Immortal blessed land cannot seal our mortal Gu. Furthermore, we’ve brought an Immortal Gu!” Fairy Cang Yu followed up, pressuring Fang Yuan.

Thus, Fang Yuan walked out, standing on Dang Hun mountain’s peak.

He Feng Yang’s heart tightened, but he quickly relaxed. This was a rank six immortal zombie, immortal zombies had great weaknesses, they could not produce immortal essence and their blessed land would shrivel and break apart at set intervals, thus their battle strength was usually below ordinary Gu Immortals.

“Immortal Crane Sect has finally lost their patience? You want my blessed land, aren’t you afraid I will destroy Dang Hun mountain?” Fang Yuan said.

“You are... Fang Yuan?” He Feng Yang squinted, he found it unbelievable. Only a year had passed, how could Fang Yuan become an immortal zombie?!

While He Feng Yang was suspicious and confused, Fairy Cang Yu spoke beside him, smiling: “We came prepared, of course, how could we allow you to destroy Dang Hun mountain? If you think using Dang Hun mountain could threaten us, then you are very much mistaken. Oh, that’s right, we can even reduce Dang Hun mountain’s pressure until it is insignificant. By then, we would not need to strike, this blue charm lightning shadow alone can kill you.”

Fang Yuan looked at the blue charm lightning shadow in the air, this human shaped lightning was growling non-stop, charging towards Dang Hun mountain but was forced back each time by the intense vibrations.

Fang Yuan heaved a long sigh.

Fairy Cang Yu thought that this was a chance, and continued: “As long as you give up the ownership of the blessed land, we can forget past matters, and even accept you as a disciple of our sect!”

“But I remember, Immortal Crane Sect promised to give me the position of an elder back then?” Fang Yuan retorted.

He Feng Yang laughed coldly: “Times have changed, Fang Yuan, you are a smart man, can’t you see the circumstances now?”

Fang Yuan heard this and he smirked: “Oh? The circumstances now... oh, let me have a good look.”

Just after he said this, the aura of Immortal Gu burst out in his body.

“This, this is?!” Fairy Cang Yu’s beautiful face transformed.

“Immortal Gu, so many Immortal Gu!” He Feng Yang could not tell which Immortal Gu they were, but the aura would not lie to him, his eyes were burning with an intense light of greed.

But at the next moment, three figures appeared around Fang Yuan.

Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Fairy Li Shan!

Two rank six, one rank seven!

Not only that, each of them gave off an intense Immortal Gu aura, not concealing it at all.

Fairy Cang Yu’s complexion changed.

He Feng Yang’s greedy gaze also turned into one of uncontrollable shock!

Fang Yuan’s force was so powerful it was out of his imagination.

Next, one, two, three... six, seven, eight beast figures flew out from Dang Hun mountain and arrived in eight surrounding directions.

Ice spike divine ape, phoenix feather lava crocodile, golden sand dark stallion, azure dragon vine... eight desolate beasts formed an encirclement.

“This is a trap!” He Feng Yang growled, his body shuddering.

Fairy Cang Yu suddenly felt outnumbered, her face turned pale and she was speechless.

Even the blue charm lightning shadow in the air stopped its angry growl.

Fang Yuan’s plain voice came from Dang Hun mountain once again: “Oh, I have seen the current circumstances very clearly now, but the question is, have you?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 701: Rank Three Airsac Gu

Eight desolate beasts encircled closer to He Feng Yang and Fairy Cang Yu.

“They are all real.” Fairy Cang Yu had extremely outstanding investigative methods to check the situation, but the result caused her pretty face to blanch further.

He Feng Yang looked around him and saw —

To the east was an ice spike divine ape whose bulk was only somewhat inferior to Dang Hun mountain; a tyrannical aura spread out from it and as it moved, it left behind a pure white icy trail. The fur on its whole body were like ice cones which brought a stifling pressure upon the two Immortals. The sclera of its eyes were jade green, while its pupils had a frost blue luster. This represented the dense bloodline in this ice spike divine ape. If the eyeballs were completely frost blue in color, that would be the ancient desolate beast, icefall divine ape, whose battle strength was comparable to a rank seven Gu Immortal.

To the west floated a phoenix feather lava crocodile. This crocodile was two to three times the size of ordinary crocodiles and could not compare to the enormously huge ice spike divine ape, yet its aura surged mightily. Its every breath brought a scalding hot heat wave. Its brownish-red scale armor was thick and robust, and its slender tail was over six meters long. It did not have any scales on its back but instead had colorful phoenix feathers that resembled blazing lava.

To the north stood a proud golden sand dark stallion. This horse was huge, its size reaching the chest of the ice spike divine ape. It had six legs that looked like they were cast from metal, its muscles were bulging, its posture was proud and aloof like a dragon, and its whole body shone with a golden luster. Only the six hooves were pitch black.

The south side was entrenched by an azure dragon vine. This vine was not a wild beast, strictly speaking, but a plant. The vines had condensed into a dragon shape and when its roots were pierced into the soil, its defensive and regenerative powers were extremely terrifying, thus it specialized in battles of attrition. If it pulled out the roots, it could soar in the sky like an azure dragon.

On the southeast side was a swamp crab. It was the king of swampy terrain. Its broad, mountain-like body could reach up to a quarter of Dang Hun mountain’s height when standing. Its eyes had degenerated till they were nonexistent, and its shell was so thick that He Feng Yang felt a powerless sensation, like he was facing a tortoise shell. It had altogether nineteen pairs of legs and its front pair of pincers could easily crush boulders and cut dragons, even Fang Yuan with his immortal zombie body did not dare to test the might of this pair of pincers.

A peach wolf was crouching down on the northeast. This wolf had the smallest size, the same as that of a newborn puppy. It looked extremely good natured and cute with its round body, plump claws, pink tongue and round dark eyes. Judging from appearance, it seemed to be harmless to both man and beast, however, He Feng Yang's pupils shrunk and if he had to choose a direction to break through, he would avoid this one outright!

An iron crown eagle circled over the northwest side. This eagle gave off a valiant and imposing aura as it hovered in the air, its eyes locked onto He Feng Yang and Fairy Cang Yu. Its wings were broad and thick, and each of its feathers could be shot out like sharp arrows. Its claws were firm and savage, able to crush boulders and rip apart dragons and tigers.

Finally on the southwest side stood an earth chief desolate beast. It had a humanoid body with a snake tail, its face resembled a bat's and its nose was pointed up. It had large ears and was black all over, with armor made of flesh covering it. Around its chest were fifty to sixty fleshy whips, each over twenty meters in length. There were suction organs on the surface of the fleshy whips; it would be hard to free oneself if someone was entangled by them. At the front of each fleshy whip was a chrysanthemum-like orifice which could shoot out a white milky fluid at the crucial moment; the fluid had very high corrosiveness and contained extremely large numbers of parasitic worms, which could drill into the pores of people and wreak havoc from inside the body.

Fang Yuan had borrowed these eight desolate beasts from Lang Ya land spirit.

More accurately, it should be said that Fang Yuan borrowed Lang Ya land spirit's rank seven beast enslavement Gu. This Immortal Gu could subdue all kinds of wild beasts, including mutated beasts, myriad beast kings, beast emperors, even desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts.

Desolate beasts had the power of a rank six Gu Immortal and could be very difficult to deal with when the wild Gu residing on them were unknown.

Eight desolate beasts encircled He Feng Yang and Fairy Cang Yu, eying them with greed.

The two sank into silence with no signs of a leisurely attitude like before.

He Feng Yang turned his heavy gaze towards the peak of Dang Hun mountain. Compared to the eight desolate beasts, the true threat was still Fang Yuan and the other three immortals.

Almost no desolate beasts could use killer moves, but Gu Immortals had ample wisdom to use and research killer moves.

He Feng Yang's heart had sunken to rock bottom, he forcibly calmed down and shouted towards Fang Yuan: "Who are all of you?"

Except Fang Yuan, the other three immortals were wearing masks; Hei Lou Lan wore a black bear mask, Fairy Li Shan wore a blue bird mask, while Tai Bai Yun Sheng wore a deer mask. The three were also shrouded in a layer of light that concealed their true appearance, hiding it from the investigative methods of He Feng Yang and Fairy Cang Yu.

Fang Yuan chuckled: "Before asking us of our identities, shouldn't you two introduce yourselves first?"

He Feng Yang and Fairy Cang Yu silently glanced at each other, and saw the bitter look in each other's eyes.

They had thought this trip would be simple, and at worst, they thought the other side would possess a Gu Immortal's battle strength. However, they absolutely had not anticipated the enemy force would be this strong!

Thus, they had been arrogant and directly requested Fang Yuan to surrender without giving self-introductions.

“My name is He Feng Yang, a rank six enslavement path Gu Immortal of Immortal Crane Sect.”

“I am Cang Yu, a rank six water path Gu Immortal of Immortal Crane Sect.”

The two introduced themselves one after the other, their attitude was no longer as overbearing as earlier, they were behaving very humbly at the moment.

A wise man submits to circumstances, those who could become Gu Immortals were outstanding people. At present, Fang Yuan had an imposing force, He Feng Yang and Cang Yu decisively lowered their high heads.

It might be easy to defeat Gu Immortals but killing them was difficult. He Feng Yang could use expand space Immortal Gu to tear a hole in Hu Immortal blessed land’s space and escape. However, they did not know Fang Yuan’s abilities, if Fang Yuan had an Immortal Gu that could prevent their escape, the situation would become dangerous.

“So it is brother He and Fairy Cang Yu.” Fang Yuan’s tone was polite, “I am Fang Yuan and I welcome you two as guests in my blessed land.”

These polite words felt grating when He Feng Yang and Cang Yu heard them, it was full of sarcasm.

He Feng Yang could not help but feel stifled.

What he had asked for was clearly these people’s true identities, but Fang Yuan played dumb and gave an irrelevant answer by only replying with his name.

Right now, who in Central Continent’s ten great sects would not know of his name?

Fang Yuan intentionally avoided this topic, and He Feng Yang, as the weaker side, did not dare to pursue it.

“I wonder what both of you are here for?” Fang Yuan asked.

He Feng Yang was silent, but inwardly he was screaming insults: ‘What else could we come for? It is to take Hu Immortal blessed land and capture Dang Hun mountain. This brat, asking when he already knows!’

Fairy Cang Yu snorted: “Why is sir speaking in such a weird and sarcastic tone? Sir’s power surpassed everyone’s imagination, when did such a force appear in Central Continent? Today was our loss, sir’s planning skills are indeed excellent and have fully controlled the situation. Now what should we do? If you want to battle, then let us begin, why waste time chit-chatting? We will battle to the end if you wish to, in the worst case, our blood will splatter all over and we will perish here.”

Fang Yuan could not help but take another look at Fairy Cang Yu upon hearing these words, shortly afterwards he smiled: “Fairy, you are quite brave, I am filled with admiration. I can roughly guess your intentions in coming here, it should be for Dang Hun mountain’s guts Gu, right?”

“You are right.” He Feng Yang frankly admitted. Under the circumstances, he had no choice but to admit it, the scheme which he had painstakingly devised and prepared for over a year in order to capture Hu Immortal blessed land had already completely failed.

However, right at this time, he could not help but have some hope: ‘If Fang Yuan wanted to battle, he should have started already. But he has been talking up to this point, it seems he is afraid of Immortal Crane Sect, as long as I use this correctly, maybe we can escape without any accidents.’

Fang Yuan suddenly clapped and smiled: “You two came in at just the right time, I had already been thinking of selling guts Gu. What do you think of this Gu?”

A rank three Gu worm flew out of his hand.

The Gu worm slowly flew under the gazes of six Gu Immortals, eight desolate beasts as well as the blue charm lightning shadow, and landed in He Feng Yang’s hand.

He Feng Yang was uncertain and worried of Fang Yuan’s scheme as he carefully accepted this mortal Gu.

This rank three Gu worm resembled a ladybug. It was the size of a large bowl, its head was extremely small while its stomach was so big that it occupied ninety-nine percent of its body.

Its stomach was round like a lamp bulb and was translucent. It did not have a carapace on its back and also did not have wings.

In its translucent stomach, there was a Gu.

“A Gu within a Gu?” Fairy Cang Yu softly mumbled.

This rank three mortal Gu was clearly a storage Gu worm, particularly with the purpose of storing Gu worms. These types of storage Gu worms were extremely common, it included examples like Earth Treasury Flower.

However, the Gu worm inside the belly made He Feng Yang’s gaze fix on it as if it was glued. He then said with uncertain eyes: “This Gu inside... could it be guts Gu?”

Fang Yuan gave a bright smile: “That is exactly right!”

“What?” Fairy Cang Yu’s beautiful eyes widened in astonishment.

She might know very little about guts Gu, but she knew guts Gu could not be taken out of Dang Hun mountain; if taken out, they would dissipate.

It was because of this that Fang Yuan was not willing to trade guts Gu before. Because if others wanted to use guts Gu, they would have to personally come to Dang Hun mountain. And letting so many outsiders enter Hu Immortal blessed land would no doubt be a huge threat to Fang Yuan’s life.

This was the reason central continent’s ten great ancient sects wanted to seize Dang Hun mountain. Guts Gu could not be taken out of Dang Hun mountain, thus taking control of Dang Hun mountain meant being in control of guts Gu.

However, the fact right in front on them showed that guts Gu could actually be stored and taken out of Dang Hun mountain.

Fairy Cang Yu soon recognized how much significance this unremarkable ladybug-like Gu worm carried; for a moment, her eyes were tightly affixed to it.

“This Gu worm, what is its name?” He Feng Yang looked up at Fang Yuan and asked with a slightly trembling tone.

Fang Yuan had in truth not thought of a name, and casually named it at this moment: “Airsac Gu.”

He Feng Yang sank into silence.

In an instant, he thought of many things.

Immortal Crane Sect’s higher ups had also made these attempts. Back then, many Gu Immortals had participated but it ended up in failure.

Now, success was in He Feng Yang’s hand.

He Feng Yang’s hands shivered slightly.

‘If guts Gu could be taken out of Dang Hun mountain and exported to all places, treasure yellow heaven, Hai Shi blessed land, Central Continent, Southern Border, Northern Plains... how big of a profit would this be?’

‘Something that even our Immortal Crane Sect could not research was successfully accomplished by the force behind Fang Yuan. What are their origins? Maybe they had planned for a long time and thought of every means to capture Hu Immortal blessed land, in order to engage in the business of guts Gu!’

‘Fang Yuan did not attack, could it be that he wants to... with our Immortal Crane Sect...’

He Feng Yang was still considering when Fang Yuan spoke: “Since both guests are interested in my guts Gu, what do you think of doing this transaction?”

He Feng Yang’s heart wavered!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 702: Accident, Assault of a Mysterious Gu Immortal

Fang Yuan’s suggestion moved He Feng Yang’s heart.

When Fang Yuan launched the ambush and encircled He Feng Yang, he had thought that this operation was going to end in failure. In the best case scenario, he would use expand space Immortal Gu and break out of the encirclement forcefully after sustaining huge injuries.

Even if he consumed a lot of immortal essence during the process of escaping, he could not care about it. After all, comparing immortal essence and his life, the latter was much more important.

After returning to Immortal Crane Sect, He Feng Yang’s life would definitely go downhill.

Immortal Crane Sect placed such great expectations on him, and he had even prepared for over a year, but he ended up failing. His rival, Gu Immortal Lei Tan, would definitely seek him out to mock him personally when he hears the news!

Second supreme elder would be utterly disappointed with him, and He Feng Yang might not be able to lift his head for several years after that. This loss could be a lifelong blemish, solely with just this failure, he would be mocked by countless people in the dark forever.

If he could establish the deal with Fang Yuan for guts Gu, to He Feng Yang, that would be many times better than breaking through the encirclement.

He Feng Yang assessed in his heart: “Hu Immortal blessed land has four Gu Immortals and eight desolate beasts, together with the territorial advantage, they are as secure as a fortress! Even though any of the ten great ancient sects have the capability to take this on, that is only speaking of capability. They might not be able to gather so many Gu Immortals here. Even if they could send Gu Immortals to attack Hu Immortal blessed land, a battle between Gu Immortals will expend a great amount of immortal essence and other resources.”

“Even if they could get enough manpower and invest a lot into this battle, the other party also has Gu Immortals and can easily destroy Dang Hun mountain. By then, even if Hu Immortal blessed land was obtained, it would all be for nothing.”

In the outside world, Great Heavenly Sword Sect had three Gu Immortals, and could attempt to leave one of the ten great ancient sects, Immortal Crane Sect.

This was because to deal with three Gu Immortals, the resources and manpower needed were something Immortal Crane Sect needed to consider. If they failed, not only would they suffer a loss in their reputation, this huge loss might also cause unrest within the sect, and trigger other problems.

Gu Immortals were easy to defeat, but they were hard to kill. Why would anyone who could reach this stage not have any means or trump cards to escape?

If they failed to kill him, they would utterly offend a Gu Immortal. A Gu Immortal that is holding grudges may cause trouble to mortals, with Immortal Crane Sect’s huge size and wide range of assets, they would have to salvage the situation everywhere.

Now that Fang Yuan has displayed such a force, Immortal Crane Sect alone could no longer attack forcefully, unless the other sects cooperated with them. But if they cooperated, there would be issues in many aspects, regarding the allocation of benefits.

If He Feng Yang agrees to cooperate with Fang Yuan, they would establish trade for guts Gu, this result was not an utter failure.

That was because Immortal Crane Sect’s main objective in taking down Hu Immortal blessed land was for the guts Gu.

Using the smallest price to obtain the biggest benefits, this was the issue that all of the supreme elders in Immortal Crane Sect were concerned about.

Before this, Immortal Crane Sect had already requested for Fang Yuan to initiate the sales of guts Gu.

“If we could establish a trade with the other party, I would not need to force my way out and risk injury, I can save a lot of immortal essence and have a proper justification when I return to the sect.” He Feng Yang considered this option.

Fang Yuan observed his expression, even though He Feng Yang was a shrewd man and did not show emotions on his face, he was clearly moved due to how long he was considering this for.

Thus, Fang Yuan continued: “A hundred of my guts Gu will sell for one immortal essence stone in treasure yellow heaven. I will sell a hundred and twenty guts Gu to Immortal Crane Sect for each immortal essence stone. However, in return, I want your Immortal Crane Sect to acknowledge my Hu Immortal blessed land as your sect’s subsidiary force. Furthermore, this subsidiary can detach from you at any time.”

As long as he had this identity, the other nine great ancient sects would not be able to deal with Fang Yuan without involving Immortal Crane Sect. These were the rules of the righteous path, it was like making Immortal Crane Sect the big boss, while Hu Immortal blessed land was the lackey, you would need to ask the boss before hitting his lackeys.

He Feng Yang smiled insincerely as he spoke: “Fang Yuan, are you thinking of using my sect as your protection? With your force, you can definitely establish your own sect, right?”

“Nobody can set up a sect on Tian Ti mountain. I have no intention to leave this valuable spot.” Fang Yuan laughed.

Tian Ti mountain had directly connected to Heavenly Court, even Gu Immortals did not dare to fight on this mountain. If Immortal Crane Sect did not declare Fang Yuan as a sect traitor and hold perfect reason to take him down, they would not dare to attack Hu Immortal blessed land.

“Furthermore, Hu Immortal blessed land becoming Immortal Crane Sect’s subsidiary will also account for your sect’s reputation, right?” Fang Yuan continued.

He Feng Yang fell into silence again.

A long while later, he sighed out: “This matter is very important, I cannot be in charge of the decision, allow me to return and report to the sect.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “It would be best if brother He goes and explains it. But Fairy Cang Yu would need to remain as a guest here for a while longer.”

He Feng Yang and Cang Yu made eye contact.

Fairy Cang Yu said: “Lord Feng Yang, go ahead and return, I will wait here.”

“I will return quickly.” He Feng Yang nodded solemnly at her, before looking deeply at Fang Yuan and his gang.

He wanted to engrave these people into the depths of his heart.

“Land spirit, open the door and let brother He out.” Fang Yuan said with a concerned tone.

“Yes, master.” Little Hu Immortal quickly replied.

On Tian Ti mountain, a brilliant white gold light formed.

In the light, a bright red door appeared, it was over thirty meters tall, and there was a rainbow colored plaque. Pink clouds gathered as the aurora condensed into a flight of stairs of light.

He Feng Yang came out of the door, when he left, it was through the proper exit of the blessed land.

This action quickly attracted the attention of the Gu Immortals of the other nine great sects.

They started to converse.

“He’s out!”

“So fast? Don’t tell me there was no resistance at all?”

“When He Feng Yang entered, he used the expand space Immortal Gu, but when he came out, it was through the main entrance. This is proof that he succeeded.”

“Something’s wrong, look at his face, there is no joy of victory, he looks more calm and composed instead.”

Even though they were suspicious, none of them asked him directly.

This was a hidden contest between the ten great sects, a direct confrontation was damaging to their reputations.

He Feng Yang could not care about their feelings, he only wanted to return to Fei He mountain, to report this matter.

He flew quickly, traveling far from Tian Ti mountain in a moment’s time.

He Feng Yang’s brows were locked, he was indignant and suspicious: “Where did Fang Yuan’s force come from? Other than Fang Yuan, the other three immortals all covered their faces with masks, and used Gu worms to block investigative methods, they evidently do not want to expose their identities. Why is that?”

“Don’t tell me they are Gu Immortals from the other nine sects? They did not want our sect to obtain Dang Hun mountain, thus they secretly colluded with Fang Yuan beforehand?”

The moment he thought of this, He Feng Yang rejected this possibility.

Paper could not cover up a fire, secrets were temporary and would be outed, the nine great sects would not do such a thing, it was against the demeanor of one of the great sects.

“Then, are they Gu Immortals gathered from Central Continent’s smaller sects?” He Feng Yang thought.

Central Continent had countless sects, other than the ten great ancient sects, there were large sized sects, middle sized sects, small sized sects, and mini sects. There were untold numbers of sects, within them, there naturally were some Gu Immortals.

If it had been them, then these Gu Immortal would all have foundations in Central Continent, to prevent their home sect from being suppressed or troubled by the ancient sects, they would not want to reveal their identities, that made sense.

“That’s right, Fang Yuan has the fixed immortal travel Immortal Gu! These people might not be Central Continent Gu Immortals, they might be from other regions. The stronger the Gu Immortal, the harder it is to get past the regional walls. Every once in a while, they have to let out their aperture in the region that they became an immortal to recollect and gather heaven and earth qi to stabilize the blessed land. But with Fixed Immortal Travel, the other party can settle these problems easily!”

He Feng Yang’s thoughts moved swiftly, he quickly guessed Fang Yuan and the other Gu Immortals’ identities. But he had too little evidence, he could not confirm it.

“All in all, Hu Immortal blessed land is very mysterious and dangerous, before we find out their secrets, we cannot strike easily. This time, I suffered a huge loss, the root of the problem was that the enemy was in the dark while I was out in the open, we suffered from a lack of intel!”

He Feng Yang concluded his experience from this incident, but he suddenly stopped in the air.

“Who is this? You dare to ambush me here!” He Feng Yang quickly became alert, shouting.

“Hmm, you are very vigilant.” A voice came from somewhere, it was high and low pitched at times, with a hoarse male voice that turned into a crisp female voice. Someone had evidently modified their voice with Gu worms.

Two figures appeared, one in front and one behind, they blocked He Feng Yang’s paths.

What changed next was the sky. The bright, shiny and clear sky with no clouds turned dark and eerie, fog became thick as vengeful souls flew all over the place.

This was a battlefield killer move!

This was a battlefield environment created to amplify the effects of certain Gu worms.

This was not something ordinary Gu Immortals could have.

“I am Immortal Crane Sect’s He Feng Yang, both of you are concealing your appearances and acting so secretive, what is your intention?” He Feng Yang shouted.

The two Gu Immortals before him were masked in a layer of dark light, their appearances could not be seen.

“So what if you are from Immortal Crane Sect?” The mysterious Gu Immortal in front of him laughed coldly.

The Gu Immortal behind him said directly: “We will kill you regardless!”

Just as they said that, the Gu Immortal struck.

Five fingers spread open and thousands of grey white threads appeared from the palm.

The threads got close to He Feng Yang, as his heart jumped, this was obviously a mortal killer move designed to trap people. Once he was entangled by these threads, it would be difficult to escape.

He Feng Yang quickly summoned the crane group.

Within his immortal aperture, there were large numbers of flying cranes, he brought them with him everywhere and he never lacked any troops.

The crane groups were huge in numbers, there were iron beak flying cranes, fire pellet cranes, tailwind cranes, cloud mist cranes, stellar light cranes, and illusion lightning cranes all mixed together in perfect harmony, forming a tight formation.

A desolate beast nine palace crane flew out, crying out and causing the surrounding fog to disperse.

He Feng Yang stepped onto the nine palace crane’s back, his hair was fluttering as his gaze was like lightning, the anger within him had awakened: “Do you really think I am an easy target? Today, you will taste the fury of the Winged Crane Flying Immortal!”

As the threads flew to him, the iron beak flying crane group flew out and blocked them with their bodies.

The other mysterious Gu Immortal puffed up his cheeks and blew out huge flames. These flames were pale green, and in this battlefield, their power was amplified, causing many cranes to fall from the sky after getting burnt.

He Feng Yang was not to be outdone, he activated his enslavement path killer move.

Immediately, a group of illusion lightning cranes flew out, shooting lightning bolts that gathered and formed into a pillar, piercing the battlefield. Another group of fire pellet cranes flew out, their bodies covered in flames, burning their enemies.

Two groups of flying cranes charged towards the two mysterious Gu Immortals like a pair of giant fists.

Boom boom boom...

With an intense explosion, the two sides engaged in intense battle!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 703: Plot within plot, a fatal killer move

On the battlefield, the intense battle continued.

A large group of iron beak flying cranes, each with bodies black as steel, they had increased defense and did not fear death, they charged towards the two mysterious Gu Immortals fiercely.

One of the two mysterious Gu Immortals opened their mouth, as a loud sound came out of it, echoing everywhere.

This was a sound path killer move!

The iron beak flying crane group’s formation went into chaos under the effect of the sound, their tight formation became loose and there were many weaknesses exposed.

“Go!” The other mysterious Gu Immortal saw a chance and grabbed the other person’s limb, the two of them turning into two lumps of grey white flames, piercing the iron beak flying cranes’ formation and moving towards He Feng Yang.

Against an enslavement path Gu Immortal, one should not fight intensely with their beast group, taking down the enslavement Gu Immortal was the proper battle tactic.

He Feng Yang saw that the enemy was approaching, not only was he not anxious, he showed a cold smile: “You fell into my trap.”

He took out a five hole jade flute Gu, placing it near his mouth and started playing the flute. He looked like a green clothed young man, but he was actually the lord of myriads of beasts. His sleeves fluttered in the air despite having no wind, his eyes burst out with a lively brilliance.

Enslavement path killer move – Eight Sided Ambush!

Tens of thousands of flying cranes moved with his music, groups of invisible cranes that had hidden their figures exposed themselves, encircling the two mysterious Gu Immortals tightly.

He Feng Yang purposely left behind an empty space in the formation around himself, that was a trap to lead his enemies right into it.

Now that the other party had fallen for it, he did not let them off, as his flute continued to play, three five string zither Gu flew out of his body.

Amidst the music of the flute, the zither played a crisp tune, turning into another enslavement path killer move – Formation Like Water!

Innumerable flying cranes flew outward, while countless flying cranes flew towards the center.

The entire battlefield was like a perfect harmony of churning gears, the scale was massive but orderly, the flying cranes moved fluidly, their formation was changing like the flow of water.

The two mysterious Gu Immortals were within this formation, they saw the array of flying cranes changing their formation smoothly, they felt like beans in a stone grinder, about to be turned into pulp!

He Feng Yang continued to blow the flute, safely at the center of the beast group, standing on the back of the desolate crane, he watched the crane group engage with the two mysterious experts.

He thought in his heart: “Ever since we started fighting, these two have used countless killer moves, ranging from sound path, space path, fire path, wind path, light path, dark path, rule path and more, they were doing this on purpose, they did not want to use their real abilities and expose their identities.”

When Gu Masters become immortals, according to the foundation of their bodies, as well as the Gu worm used to create their immortal aperture, they would be classified into Gu Immortals of their respective paths. There were fire path Gu Immortals, wind path Gu Immortals, wisdom path Gu Immortals and many others, forming the immortal bodies of the respective paths.

The immortal body is obtained when a Gu Masters ascends, their body will be modified by the three qi, removing all impurities and elevating the essence of their life itself.

A wind path immortal body will have the dao marks and comprehension of wind, thus when they use wind path Gu worms, the effect would be greater. A fire path immortal body would be cleansed by the Great Dao in relation to fire, it would be closely connected to fire path, and would cause fire path killer moves to be much more powerful than normal.

For example, Fang Yuan, although he was an immortal zombie, he was still a strength path Gu Immortal, his body was the strength path immortal body, thus when he used Gu worms and killer moves of other paths, the effects were only ordinary.

The two mysterious Gu Immortals trying to kill He Feng Yang did not use their real fighting methods, therefore, they were suppressed by him despite outnumbering him two to one.

“Are you two still trying to conceal your identities? If you do not use your true abilities, you might die here.” He Feng Yang snickered continuously, his voice filled the battlefield.

The two mysterious Gu Immortals were breathing roughly, the attack of the crane groups were unceasing and furious like a tide, the two of them were tired from dealing with them.

Like what He Feng Yang said, if the two did not start using their real methods, they would truly get killed soon.

The two made eye contact as they nodded, making up their minds.

One of them sighed: “As expected of a reputed righteous sect. The might of the Winged Crane Flying Immortal, I have truly seen it today.”

The other said: “However, even if we do not use our real capabilities, we can still kill you. He Feng Yang, take a look around you.”

“Oh?” He Feng Yang’s gaze quickly swept the surroundings.

Originally, it was a foggy scene, the battlefield was full of crying and anguished screams, but now there was a change.

Within the lumps of thick fog, dark blue soul beasts were formed. In just a few breaths of time, the number of soul beasts increased greatly, they were equally numbered with He Feng Yang’s crane group.

“Is this... soul taker battlefield?” He Feng Yang’s heart jumped, he said it subconsciously.

“Hehehe, Winged Crane Flying Immortal, you are very knowledgeable.” The mysterious Gu Immortals laughed, their voices changing constantly, sounding like male or female at times.

He Feng Yang’s expression turned grim.

This soul taker battlefield killer move had a vile reputation, it was very hard to deal with. Living beings who died in this battlefield would have their souls taken and transformed into soul beasts, under the control of the killer move’s user.

Most importantly, this battlefield killer move’s origin was huge, it was created by one of the ten venerables in history when he was young, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who had the most murderous nature.

Who were these two mysterious Gu Immortals, they actually had a battlefield killer move, soul taker, that was long lost in history?!

Once the soul beasts appeared, they started fighting with the crane groups.

The battle situation changed.

He Feng Yang quickly manipulated the crane groups, changing formations to defend against the soul beasts. The two mysterious Gu Immortals felt less pressure now, and were able to rush out of the crane groups’ encirclement.

The size of the soul beasts was the same as the crane group, but they could not defeat the cranes, often, ten soul beasts were sacrificed to kill one crane.

But He Feng Yang became increasingly alert in his heart, after the soul beasts were shredded into fragments, these fragments could form into new soul beasts in this soul taker battlefield.

Meanwhile, when a flying crane dies, its soul would be taken by the battlefield, forming a soul beast, becoming part of the enemy’s troops. No matter how high He Feng Yang’s cultivation was, he could not battle with zero casualties. Once he suffered losses, over a long period, the soul beasts would have the upper hand.

As this dragged on, He Feng Yang’s advantage would dwindle, the crane groups would slowly be taken down by the soul beasts.

“He Feng Yang, just so you know, we expressed weakness earlier on purpose, to delay for time. Now that the soul taker battlefield has grown to a sizable amount, your enslavement path advantage is gone.”

“Winged Crane Flying Immortal, today, you will perish here.”

The two mysterious Gu Immortal worked together.

Wind path killer move — Tornado Dragon Whip!

With a wind whip that was hundreds of meters long, one of the Gu Immortals swung, killing countless flying cranes.

Poison path killer move — Killer Bee Stab!

Thousands of needles rained down like a torrential storm, the poison on them were very potent, any flying crane that was hit directly died on the spot, their flesh disintegrating.

The two mysterious Gu Immortals had finally showed their true abilities, one was a wind path Gu Immortal, while the other was a poison path Gu Immortal.

Large numbers of cranes were exterminated, their souls were extracted by the battlefield, forming new batches of soul beasts.

“Oh no, the enemy came prepared, they planned for this long ago, I cannot stay here.” He Feng Yang saw this and wanted to retreat.

Only a fool would want to stay in the soul taker battlefield and fight it out with the enemy.

“This soul taker battlefield is filled with fog, it is easy to lose one’s direction, it is hard to escape from. But right now, I have expand space Immortal Gu with me, it should not be hard to escape from here.”

He Feng Yang thought about this and used his divine sense to communicate with a will in his immortal aperture.

This will was in the form of a burly man, when He Feng Yang left Fei He mountain earlier, it had entered his immortal aperture and had been observing the outside situation using his Gu worms.

All of He Feng Yang’s experience this time, since he left Fei He mountain, in Hu Immortal blessed land, when he was encircled by Fang Yuan and the others, and after he left Hu Immortal blessed land and was trapped in the soul taker battlefield, attacked by two mysterious Gu Immortals. The will saw it all clearly.

He Feng Yang requested: “Lord Tiger Demon, please use your immortal killer move once again to break out of the battlefield and escape this place.”

This will belonged to Immortal Crane Sect’s third supreme elder, Lord Tiger Demon’s anger will.

He sat in the air, opening his eyes emotionlessly: “You need to know that every time I use force intrusion, my main body will need to expend two red date immortal essence beads.”

He Feng Yang quickly said: “Junior understand, I will make the appropriate compensation when we return.”

Tiger Demon’s anger will nodded, not speaking any further. He grabbed with his hand, tossing two red date immortal essence to the expand space Immortal Gu, at the same time, many mortal Gu rose up as well.

After a while of preparing, He Feng Yang opened his palm, taking out expand space Immortal Gu from his immortal aperture.

The Immortal Gu was covered in a yellow light, He Feng Yang patted it lightly.

The yellow light left his hands, breaking apart the soul taker battlefield and creating a hole.

He Feng Yang was overjoyed, he put back expand space Immortal Gu and the nine palace crane below his feet cried out, flapping its wings and bringing him out of soul taker battlefield.

Outside the battlefield, it was clear skies with no clouds.

“Oh no! He actually had expand space Immortal Gu, he’s escaping!”

“He Feng Yang, don’t run if you have the guts, let us battle for three hundred rounds!”

The shouts of the two Gu Immortals behind him had a tone of anxiety and panic.

He Feng Yang laughed heartily, his heart was filled with pride: “Even soul taker battlefield cannot contain me. No matter who you are, ambushing and attempting to kill me, I will remember this. Don’t think I will not find out just because you hid your identity, you used your own killer moves. When I return to the sect, I will investigate, I will definitely find out who you really are! Eh? Oh no!”

Suddenly, He Feng Yang sensed something amiss, his expression changed.

He had always been a vigilant person and had great self control, how could his emotions become so overjoyed the moment he left the soul taker battlefield, like he had just won a battle?

This time, he failed to take back Hu Immortal blessed land, he had let down Lord Tiger Demon’s nurturing and expectations, he should feel downcast instead.

“Oh no!” An intense warning of danger rose in his heart, He Feng Yang turned around, only to see a Gu Immortal as tiny as a little boy, his body covered in a dark light. He was holding a dagger shaped Gu worm, he was right behind He Feng Yang, less than a foot away.

A third Gu Immortal!

There was a third Gu Immortal in ambush!

This was their true killer move, a plot within a plot! While He Feng Yang's mind relaxed the moment he left the soul taker battlefield, the fatal strike was launched at him!

He Feng Yang was furious and shocked, his eyes were blood red and he was extremely angry, he did not retreat, instead, he had the urge to fight to the death with the enemy.

"Quickly dodge! The enemy is an emotion path Gu Immortal, they can interfere with your judgment by influencing your emotions!" Within his immortal aperture, Tiger Demon's anger will was shouting.

"Hehehe, it is too late." The third Gu Immortal raised their dagger, stabbing at He Feng Yang.

The dagger shaped Gu worm burst out with an intense Immortal Gu aura.

He Feng Yang was horror stricken and full of grievances.

The enemy had an attack type Immortal Gu?!

He only had an expand space Immortal Gu, it could not help him. The defensive mortal killer moves he had could not block this attack type Immortal Gu!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 704: Little Nine

The dagger shaped Immortal Gu was about to pierce into him; He Feng Yang felt anger, fear, bewilderment, unresignedness, all kinds of feelings seethed in him like lava, greatly influencing his actions.

"Am I going to die here today?" He Feng Yang involuntarily had this thought.

However, right at this dangerous moment, the desolate beast nine palace crane under his feet suddenly let out a clear cry before fiercely turning its body around.

He Feng Yang's body was thrown down while the nine palace crane blocked the ambushing Gu Immortal.

Plop.

A soft sound echoed, the dagger shaped Immortal Gu ruthlessly pierced into the nine palace crane's chest.

"Eh?" The third Gu Immortal showed a shocked expression.

He had thought disturbing He Feng Yang could influence the nine palace crane. After all, He Feng Yang was an enslavement path Gu Immortal and the nine palace crane had been enslaved by him. If he was influenced, the nine palace crane should also be nothing to worry about.

He activated several emotion path killer moves to heavily disturb He Feng Yang, but he had never expected that at the last juncture, this nine palace crane would actually move to protect its master.

“Little nine!” He Feng Yang saw the nine palace crane taking the fatal strike, tears immediately streamed down his eyes as he gave a pained roar.

He had raised this nine palace crane with great care and had never used any enslavement methods on it.

Back when he was young, he had been brutally chased when out on a mission. His life was hanging in the balance when he accidentally bumped into the similarly heavily injured nine palace crane.

After this coincidental and accidental meeting, he and the nine palace crane helped each other to escape the plight.

The nine palace crane was on the verge of death, He Feng Yang brought it back to the sect and used all of his wealth, barely managing to stabilize its life.

In the dozens of years afterwards, He Feng Yang braved many dangers to earn money to treat the nine palace crane little by little, slowly pulling it out from the brink of death.

A profound sentiment more intimate than brothers was established like this between a man and a crane.

Later an accident occurred, the rank five Gu Master He Feng Yang had failed his mission and was in a heavily injured state. The resources on him could only save one person. If he treated the nine palace crane, he would die, but if he saved himself, the nine palace crane would not be able to maintain its lingering vitality.

At the juncture of this choice, He Feng Yang thought for three days and three nights, in the end, he decided to sacrifice himself to save the nine palace crane!

This action caused third supreme elder, Lord Tiger Demon, to be moved, and with his help, both He Feng Yang and the nine palace crane were saved.

He Feng Yang lived up to his expectations and after becoming a Gu Immortal, he joined Lord Tiger Demon’s faction.

The nine palace crane let out a mournful cry. Its enormous and slender body was covered with a layer of grey light. In this grey light, its body was rapidly shrinking and becoming younger, from a mature age it continuously turned to its youth, then to its infancy.

This was the power of the Immortal Gu!

The dagger shaped Immortal Gu was actually a time path Immortal Gu that could reverse the target’s body to a younger state.

“Retreat. Don’t let down your friend’s kind intention.” In his immortal aperture, Tiger Demon’s anger will heaved a long sigh.

“Little nine!” He Feng Yang shouted furiously and went back regardless of the advice of Tiger Demon’s anger will.

The hems of his gown fluttered and moved, turning into a crane feather cloak. A blood red glint blossomed in his eyes and his slender green brows moved nimbly like a snake or dragon.

The mysterious Gu Immortal showed a surprised expression.

He had not thought He Feng Yang who could have clearly escaped in the moment just before would actually return with killing intent.

He Feng Yang was an enslavement path Gu Immortal!

He Feng Yang pushed forward his palms from which jade green lightning rays surged out.

The mysterious Gu Immortal snorted, he raised the dagger and confronted it head-on, simultaneously activating emotion path killer moves to influence He Feng Yang’s emotions.

However, He Feng Yang’s heart was filled completely with anger and was unexpectedly not influenced.

Bam!

A loud explosion erupted and the mysterious Gu Immortal was thrown back. He Feng Yang’s body trembled intensely and blood spurted out of his mouth, but he forcibly pulled himself together and pulled the infant nine palace crane into his hands.

“Little nine!” He Feng Yang held the nine palace crane in his embrace and turned around, escaping immediately with no intent to stay.

The nine palace crane had already become the size of a white goose and was softly twittering as He Feng Yang held it in his embrace.

The emotion path Gu Immortal had been sent some distance away, that gap was enough for him to be unable to chase He Feng Yang in this moment.

The other two mysterious Gu Immortals hurried over after canceling the soul taker battlefield.

“Sigh, he escaped in the end!” The wind path Gu Immortal heaved a long sigh in pity.

“This guy is clearly an enslavement path Gu Immortal but he is actually not weak in close combat. That green lightning killer move isn’t what it appears to be, it makes me think of...” The emotion path Gu Immortal said.

“Hmph, if not for lacking time to gather more people, would we be afraid of not being able to put him down? How about we chase, maybe we can....” The poison path Gu Immortal was not resigned.

“He has expand space Immortal Gu, soul taker battlefield cannot trap him. Let’s leave quickly, it is not convenient to stay here.” The wind path Gu Immortal was calm.

“Right, this ambush was nothing more than a hastily considered course of action. We absolutely cannot lose sight of the main goal for small gains and risk exposing our identities, which would affect master’s grand plan. We will retreat!” The emotion path Gu Immortal ceased his absent-mindedness, and said softly.

His position seemed to be higher than the other two Gu Immortals and his words had a tone of decisiveness.

“I shall take my leave.” The wind path Gu Immortal rapidly flew in the air and soon was no more than a small black dot in the horizon.

“Hmph!” The poison path Gu Immortal dropped into the ground and escaped.

The emotion path Gu Immortal paused for a while until the other two had completely left, his body then disappeared in the air as if he had never been there.

He Feng Yang flew at top speed to Fei He mountain, and without stopping, he directly entered Fu Hu blessed land.

Lord Tiger Demon was standing beside an enormous stone pit, looking at the tens of thousands of rockmen working inside the pit.

“Junior was incompetent and let down Lord’s expectations.” He Feng Yang bowed in greeting to Lord Tiger Demon, his body filled with injuries and his expression one of shame.

“You got injured? First go take a rest and heal yourself.” Lord Tiger Demon did not ask anything to He Feng Yang and only waved his hand, that anger will in He Feng Yang’s immortal aperture flew out and entered his mind.

In just an instant, he understood all the things He Feng Yang had experienced in this trip.

His gaze flickered, shortly afterwards, he activated anger will Gu to produce anger will.

The anger will flew through the sky, out of Fu Hu blessed land and towards the peak of Fei He mountain. When it reached the conference hall at the mountain peak, three wills that were left here came after sensing it.

These three wills were respectively from first supreme elder, second supreme elder and the third supreme elder, Lord Tiger Demon, they were in charge of monitoring the sect and also handling some small matters.

The major matters were also arranged and at every set period of time, they would gather a group of Gu Immortals to hold a joint discussion on them.

Tiger Demon’s anger will landed in the hall and fused with its previous will, then narrated the events that occurred to He Feng Yang.

The first and second supreme elders’ wills sank into silence when they heard the narration. They started to rapidly think which caused their bodies to shrink at a visible speed.

When they had shrunken to almost half the previous size, second supreme elder’s will said: “Let’s allow Lord Tiger Demon to have the final decision on the matters of Hu Immortal blessed land.”

First supreme elder’s will spoke: “He Feng Yang was ambushed and almost killed, this is much more serious than Hu Immortal blessed land. Where was he ambushed?”

A Gu worm flew out from the hall and turned into a map made of light and shadow.

“Here.” Lord Tiger Demon’s anger will pointed at the location.

First supreme elder’s will nodded and spoke heavily: “This location is a very good place to lay an ambush. There is no force situated both in front and behind, and this makes it a very good place of concealment. It seems the ambushers are very familiar with Central Continent’s terrain.”

“Investigate! When has there been anyone that had the guts to try to kill our ten great ancient sects' Gu Immortals?" Second supreme elder's will shouted in rage.

"My concern is this. Elders, where do you think these Gu Immortals came from?" Lord Tiger Demon's anger will asked.

First supreme elder's and second supreme elder's wills glanced at each other, both revealing heavy expressions.

"Third elder is worried these Gu Immortals are Central Continent Gu Immortals?" First supreme elder said quietly.

Tiger Demon's anger will spoke frankly with confidence: "Right. How long have our ten great ancient sects been in control of Central Continent? The situation has been getting increasingly harder over these recent years, why is that? Our Central Continent is different from the other four regions. Led by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, Central Continent had already been reformed during the Remote Antiquity Era, establishing the sect system. During the Remote Antiquity Era, sects had been rare. In Olden Antiquity Era, clan forces surpassed sect forces. In Medieval Antiquity Era, sects and clans clashed against each other, and advanced at an equal pace. In Late Antiquity Era, clans weakened while sects flourished. And now, sects stand in great numbers in Central Continent while there are almost no clans."

"The clan system only selects the clan's children as Gu Masters. The sect system, however, allows ordinary mortals to step on the path of Gu cultivation. Our Central Continent's history is filled with the conflicts between the two great systems. After going through over three million years of struggles, evolution and accumulation, the sect system has prevailed; the number of Central Continent Gu Immortals far surpass the other four regions and they continue to increase, and soon will leave the control of our ten great sects."

"How many Gu Immortals can our ten great sects recruit? The number of other Gu Immortals in Central Continent are several times our own! As these Gu Immortals of other sects, demonic path Gu Immortals and lone cultivator Gu Immortals continue to cultivate, they would require more cultivation resources. Conflicts are unavoidable because our ten great sects control eighty percent of cultivation resources in Central Continent."

"Have there not been cases like Great Heavenly Sword Sect before? It is just that they were secretly suppressed by our ten great ancient sects. But in these recent years, new sects are still emerging unendingly, new innovations and new schools of thought are common occurrences, uncommon geniuses and monstrous talents are constantly sprouting among the mortals while there are limited spots in our ten great ancient sects. Despite recruiting exceptional talents every year, Central Continent is truly too big."

Lord Tiger Demon's anger will sighed as he said this.

The two supreme elders were silent all along.

The ten great ancient sects held control of eighty percent of Central Continent's resources, but after the resources were split amongst everyone, how much would be left behind for individual Gu Immortals?

As a Gu Immortal's cultivation got higher, their blessed land would require more resources to manage. In particular, the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities would also continue to become stronger, and after every tribulation, the losses would be very severe, and the price to repair it would continue to become higher.

It was impossible for the ten great ancient sects' Gu Immortals to share their resources to others.

In the past, although there were many sects outside of the ten great sects, there were not many Gu Immortals. Immortal and mortal were different concepts, there was a wide gap in the strength between mortals and immortals, thus mortals could be suppressed.

But at present, the Gu Immortals outside of the ten great sects were increasing constantly in numbers. Although these Gu Immortals usually had inferior battle strength, their vast numbers were enough to bring about an impact to the ten great ancient sects.

Great Heavenly Sword Sect was a good example. This large sized sect had two Gu Immortals originally and was a vassal of Immortal Crane Sect. Now, that they had a third Gu Immortal, they immediately planned to leave Immortal Crane Sect and be independent.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 705: Immortal Slaughtering Plan, Fang Yuan distributes benefits

Lord Tiger Demon’s anger will continued: “These years, our ten great ancient sects have been in difficult circumstances, we could be said to be treading on thin ice. It is as if we are blocking the top of a volcano, the magma underneath will eventually burst out one day, causing a major impact to our ten great sects!”

“Third supreme elder is talking about the general situation in Central Continent right now. But this is the situation of the whole region, how can we change it?” Second supreme elder’s will sighed.

Lord Tiger Demon’s will continued: “Great Heavenly Sword Sect’s example is in front of us. The Gu Immortals in Hu Immortal blessed land could be from other regions, but they are most likely to be an alliance of lone cultivators in our region. The ones who ambushed He Feng Yang today might also be Gu Immortals of our own region’s forces. But if that is the case, it would be terrifying.”

Second supreme elder nodded: “It is indeed like that. The force that attacked He Feng Yang obviously does not want Hu Immortal blessed land to continue being in the hands of Fang Yuan. If He Feng Yang dies, Immortal Crane Sect will have to attack Hu Immortal blessed land forcefully to defend our reputation. Even though it is obvious that they are framed, Immortal Crane Sect has no choice but to go along with it.”

The ten great ancient sects’ pride and reputation that had been defended for innumerable years cannot be tarnished. If they could not take revenge for the death of their own Gu Immortals, then their reputation would be ruined, the hearts of the people would waver, and everyone would be emboldened to offend Immortal Crane Sect. If Immortal Crane Sect is under such problems, they would not be able to manage their resources and land within Central Continent. By then, Immortal Crane Sect would be worn out physically and mentally, their exhaustion would attract even more greedy jackals and wolves.

This would be a vicious cycle, once they fall into it, it would be hard to recover.

Immortal Crane Sect’s top three supreme elders were all experienced people, they were old monsters with bountiful life experience, they had considered this terrifying future prospect already.

Not just them, among the other nine great ancient sects of Central Continent, there were sure to be people who understood this.

Right now, Central Continent was becoming saturated with experts, but there were limited resources, it was like a powder keg that was expanding endlessly. The ten great ancient sects were sitting on top of the keg, if they were careless and ignited it, they might be blown to pieces.

“Tiger Demon, you used this topic today to start a long discussion, I’m sure you have some insights to share with us. Why not just tell us straight away.” First supreme elder said.

Tiger Demon’s anger will laughed, saying startling things: “My current idea is to agree with Fang Yuan’s conditions and acknowledge that Hu Immortal blessed land is a subsidiary of our sect. At the same time, we will find out the true identities of the culprits who attacked He Feng Yang. Once we know which lone cultivators are ganging up, we will collaborate with the other nine sects and engage in a wide scale immortal slaughtering plan!”

“Immortal slaughtering?!” Second supreme elder heard this and excitement shined in his eyes.

First supreme elder’s will shut his eyes, he slowly said: “Tiger Demon, I will not hide it from you. This suggestion of yours had been brought up by Combat Immortal Sect’s Gu Immortal Shi Lei many years ago, he had even sent a proposal to Heavenly Court, requesting for Heavenly Court to come out and organize the ten great ancient sects, in order to execute this plan.”

“Oh, that Immortal Monkey King? Even though our ten great ancient sects have had changes throughout history, the root of all these changes were righteous reasons, like the interchanging of main and side branches, these all have much to do with Heavenly Court. If the ten ancient sects engage in a slaughter of immortals, it would have huge implications and involve innumerable benefits. Only Heavenly Court can step in to convince and assemble everyone, leading us towards victory!” Tiger Demon’s anger will agreed.

“But Heavenly Court rejected this proposal. They even warned us ten great ancient sects not to specially target the respective smaller sects and lone cultivator Gu Immortals, we are not to consciously massacre them, violators would be heavily punished.” First supreme elder’s will said.

“What?” Tiger Demon’s anger will shouted in shock.

“This matter, how did I not know about it?” Second supreme elder muttered to himself.

First supreme elder sighed loudly, looking at the sky: “The will of Heavenly Court is heaven’s will. Heaven’s will cannot be defied, heaven’s will cannot be anticipated.”

...

He Feng Yang returned to Hu Immortal blessed land once again.

Fairy Cang Yu and Fang Yuan were walking on Dang Hun mountain, observing the growth of the guts Gu.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked from afar, staring at Fairy Cang Yu.

Meanwhile, that blue charm lightning shadow was encircled by the eight desolate beasts, once in a while, a different desolate beast would go up and fight it, they were taking turns to wear it down.

“Brother He was a bit slow.” Fang Yuan saw He Feng Yang and smiled while saying plainly.

He Feng Yang and Fairy Cang Yu first looked at each other, seeing her nod and hint that she was unharmed, he turned to Fang Yuan: “My sect has already agreed to acknowledge your side as our sect’s subsidiary. The relationship would have no time limit, and you can leave at any time. At the same time, we will engage in the trading of guts Gu, the price will be one immortal essence stone for a hundred and twenty guts Gu. This is the rank six Immortal Gu, Promise.”

Immortal Gu Promise was an information path Gu worm, its use was similar to mountain pledge Gu and sea oath Gu.

Immediately, He Feng Yang activated the Immortal Gu to make a promise.

When it was Fang Yuan’s turn, he received the Immortal Gu and checked that there were no issues, he consumed his green grape immortal essence and made a promise as well.

Their promises created material forms that resembled lumps of gold, the two sides exchanged with each other to keep a copy each.

Fairy Cang Yu finally breathed out a sigh of relief, now that the transaction had been established, she was finally safe.

Fang Yuan breathed out in relief too, the situation that he had been trying to resolve had finally reached this stage. Fighting to the death with Immortal Crane Sect was definitely impossible. Immortal Crane Sect was a huge organization, if he angered them, Hu Immortal blessed land would certainly be lost. With Fang Yuan’s finances, he could not sustain a huge battle against Gu Immortal level opponents.

But He Feng Yang’s words quickly earned his attention: “On the way back, I was ambushed by three Gu Immortals and my life was almost lost. The other party evidently wants to frame you, our sect is investigating it now, I wonder if your force had offended anyone?”

“What? In Central Continent, there were actually Gu Immortals who dared to kill a Gu Immortal from the ten great sects?” Fang Yuan did not conceal his shock.

He remembered clearly that such situations would only happen a while after the five regions chaotic war started.

By then, the five regions would be in chaos, mortals would face difficulties living and battles would be unceasing.

Even the authority of Heavenly Court was useless, the ten great sects’ Gu Immortals all faced assassinations, there were those who were taking revenge from the other four regions, but also Central Continent’s own lone cultivator Gu Immortals who were trying to fish for benefits.

As the situation became more and more chaotic, Fang Yuan could even bring a band of demonic path Gu Immortals to attack Hu Immortal blessed land on Tian Ti mountain, killing Feng Jin Huang eventually.

Unknowingly, Fang Yuan thought about the mysterious force that plotted against him secretly in treasure yellow heaven over a year ago.

But he did not even know what this force was called, even if he knew, he would not expose such information to He Feng Yang.

Thus, he shook his head: “I have been in Hu Immortal blessed land for this period of time, how could I offend other forces? I have no intentions to offend brother He, but thinking about it, Immortal Crane Sect probably attracts more enemies than me, was it a force trying to plot against your sect, but wanting to use me as a diversion instead?”

He Feng Yang did not get the information he wanted, he was a little disappointed but he could not force Fang Yuan.

Immortal Crane Sect had their own worries, even though Fang Yuan was only an immortal zombie, the force behind him allowed the two sides to speak on equal terms.

He Feng Yang and Fairy Cang Yu did not stay any longer, Fang Yuan opened Hu Immortal blessed land’s door and sent them out.

Fang Yuan stood at the door, saying goodbye to them.

The other nine sects who saw this immediately realized that something had occurred in Hu Immortal blessed land.

“What is going on? Why is there an immortal zombie?”

“He Feng Yang and Fairy Cang Yu came with great confidence, but now their expression are not quite right, it seems a problem occurred!”

“Did they fail to take it down? That’s impossible, right.”

The Gu Immortals were confused, they were guessing randomly.

The ten great ancient sects were in cahoots, they were the overlords of Central Continent, over these last years there was unavoidably no lack of hidden competition among themselves. The contest of Hu Immortal blessed land was at first an open competition, using disciples from each sect to decide the eventual owner, but the result was that Fang Yuan actually took advantage. Now, it was a hidden contest, they could not question Immortal Crane Sect in public, that would break the unspoken rules.

The Gu Immortals did not know what happened to Hu Immortal blessed land, they were hesitant to return.

Fang Yuan closed the door, as Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan came to congratulate him with smiles on their faces.

“Fang Yuan, you have caused me to look at you in a different light. This time, the collaboration between you and Immortal Crane Sect succeeded without any battle, it was truly a great victory.” Fairy Li Shan was full of praise.

This was the type of victory that Gu Immortals loved the most.

Without any battles, without any huge investments, but the rewards were simply incredible.

“Senior is not entirely correct.” Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “It is not me who is collaborating with Immortal Crane Sect, it is us. After all, to refine the airsac Gu, we will need Hei Lou Lan’s strength qi Gu to muster the strength qi. As for the profits of the guts Gu, your side will take forty percent, my side will take sixty.”

Fairy Li Shan heard this and the smile on her face intensified. As long as one was not a fool, they could see the prospects of the transaction of guts Gu.

She understood clearly that Fang Yuan’s action was to stabilize their alliance completely, to bind them to Dang Hun mountain itself. In the future, when Hu Immortal blessed land is attacked, they would need to come and defend it too.

But with such great benefits, Fairy Li Shan could not help but be moved.

Hei Lou Lan looked at Fang Yuan deeply: “To think that you had this method, Fang Yuan, conceptualizing the airsac Gu. To refine the rank three airsac Gu, you need to use the rank six strength qi Gu. This Gu is truly very special.”

A part of this was definitely due to wisdom Gu’s credit.

After obtaining wisdom Gu, Fang Yuan had been conceptualizing, to see if there was a way to extract guts Gu under the help of unlimited inspiration.

The success this time was also because he had unexpectedly heard from Tai Bai Yun Sheng that Hei Lou Lan had the strength qi Immortal Gu.

Only an immortal class strength could envelop the guts Gu, allowing it to leave Dang Hun mountain unscathed.

Fang Yuan changed the topic: “To produce guts Gu, we will need huge amounts of souls, I will have to trouble the two of you.”

“Northern Plains is a land of battles, chaotic wars happen all the time, and beast groups and tribes relocate constantly. There are surely many souls that can be collected there. We will go and settle this now.” Hei Lou Lan wanted to act immediately.

After she ascended to an immortal, her need for resources had become much greater, especially in terms of immortal essence stones, she could not always rely on Fairy Li Shan.

Relying on others was not Hei Lou Lan’s style.

Fairy Li Shan agreed: “That’s right, Dang Hun mountain does not have any requirements for the type of soul. We can even buy them from Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, it will be more expensive than collecting the souls ourselves, but the price would be acceptable and we can save lots of trouble.”

“Hehehe.” Fang Yuan waved a hand: “Please hold on for a moment, don’t be too anxious now. Now, come with me to suppress a Gu Immortal. This Gu Immortal is inside Hu Immortal blessed land right now.”

“Oh? Who?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng questioned.

“There are other Gu Immortals hiding in the blessed land now? Is it an ambush by Immortal Crane Sect, having ulterior motives?” Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan looked at each other with confused and shocked expressions.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 706: Extorting an Immortal Gu Remnant Recipe

Fang Yuan smiled mysteriously: “This immortal is right under our noses, please follow me.”

Under Fang Yuan’s lead, everyone came before the blue charm lightning shadow.

The blue charm lightning shadow right now was fighting in the air with the iron crown eagle, its small blue figure was colliding with the desolate beast iron crown eagle’s huge body, fighting evenly back and forth.

Hei Lou Lan was even more uncertain now: “The Gu Immortal you are talking about is the blue charm lightning shadow?”

Fang Yuan smiled and did not respond.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s eyes shone with brilliance: “Now that you’ve mentioned it, this blue charm lightning shadow is acting really strangely.”

“That’s right.” Fairy Li Shan showed a wary and vigilant expression: “Logically speaking, the blue charm lightning shadow was formed from an earthly calamity, its main target would be the owner of Hu Immortal blessed land, which is you, Fang Yuan. But it has been engaging with these desolate beasts all this time, it had no intentions to attack you.”

Hei Lou Lan continued: “No wonder I felt that it was strange, when the desolate beast appeared, this blue charm lightning shadow seemed to have been shocked, it stopped growling and started to conceal its presence. This blue charm lightning shadow is weird, I’m sure it is not normal!”

“Hehehe.” Fang Yuan laughed heartily, saying: “The blue charm lightning shadow in the past had no issues, but after it was sent out of the blessed land by me, it was captured by a lightning path Gu Immortal, and was refined into some sort of puppet killer move. When Immortal Crane Sect came to attack my blessed land, this Gu Immortal manipulated the blue charm lightning shadow into barging in, his objective was to fish for benefits. If Immortal Crane Sect failed, he could show up as a representative of his sect, and strike first. I wonder if my analysis is correct, Myriad Dragon Dock’s Vicious Lightning Fiend?”

“How did you know that I am Vicious Lightning Fiend?!” The blue charm lightning shadow could not put up a facade any longer, he ignored the iron crown eagle and flew to Fang Yuan.

The iron crown eagle chased it, but Fang Yuan waved a hand, the eagle screeched and flew away.

“Myriad Dragon Dock’s Vicious Lightning Fiend?” Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan looked at each other, they knew about Myriad Dragon Dock, it was one of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, just like Immortal Crane Sect. But who Vicious Lightning Fiend was, they did not have much of an idea.

Only Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s eyes shone brightly, after coming to Hu Immortal blessed land, he had collected a lot of information upon Fang Yuan’s advice, he knew a lot of intelligence about Central Continent’s Gu Immortals.

“Vicious Lightning Fiend is a rank six Gu Immortal, he has passed two heavenly tribulations and had an amazing history of ending in a draw after fighting with a rank seven Gu Immortal. But many years ago, he had entered closed cultivation. There had been no traces of him these last few years in Central Continent.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng introduced.

“A draw with a rank seven Gu Immortal?” Fairy Li Shan’s gaze shone.

Hei Lou Lan had a proud and arrogant demeanor as she snorted coldly.

The blue charm lightning shadow looked at everyone, but eventually his gaze locked onto Fang Yuan: “Who are you guys? My immortal killer move was the fruit of my many years of closed cultivation, after thinking of how to raise my battle strength. A year ago, I learned that there was a blue charm lightning shadow on Tian Ti mountain, it was lurking around there and did not want to leave, thus I struck secretly and captured the blue charm lightning shadow. A few months ago, I perfected my immortal killer move, making this blue charm lightning shadow my puppet. I have only told this secret to a few people. You guys actually know about this in detail! Tell me, who in the world are you?”

Fang Yuan snorted, he said very unkindly: “Vicious Lightning Fiend, you might have a fierce reputation, but we are not afraid of you. You made the blue charm lightning shadow into your puppet, I’m sure you paid a heavy price for that. I am in a bad mood, you should be careful, otherwise if I get angry, I will kill this blue charm lightning shadow right here, can you stop me?”

The blue charm lightning shadow shouted out angrily, he showed his irascible nature: “You dare! I am a Gu Immortal of Myriad Dragon Dock! Don’t think you can continue to be arrogant, it is only temporarily that you are occupying Hu Immortal blessed land, once your identities are exposed, we, the ten great ancient sects, will make sure all of you lone cultivators and demonic cultivators are done for.”

“Oh? Is that so...” Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with brilliance: “You saw our earlier transaction clearly, we are already a subsidiary of Immortal Crane Sect, we have both made a promise, even if Myriad Dragon Dock wants to deal with us, you will need to get past Immortal Crane Sect first. That’s right, that’s right, earlier, Immortal Crane Sect’s He Feng Yang was attacked, the mastermind was you, or rather, Myriad Dragon Dock. right?”

“Bullshit! We of the ten great ancient sects are on the same side, even if we compete with each other both openly and secretly, how could we do things without limits like you lone cultivators with demonic natures?” The blue charm lightning shadow was furious.

Fang Yuan did not speak, he glanced over at Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan was a formidable character just like him, they cooperated flawlessly, she pretended to jump to a realization, saying: “Fang Yuan, you are absolutely right. Hu Immortal blessed land, Dang Hun mountain, and guts Gu are extremely huge benefits. After assassinating He Feng Yang, Immortal Crane Sect will come to attack us. By then, when we both suffer great losses, Myriad Dragon Dock will be able to take advantage of the situation.”

“You’re bullshitting! Bullshit! How can I be such a petty person!!” The blue charm lightning shadow’s anger was through the roof, he shouted unceasingly.

Hei Lou Lan laughed sinisterly: “But the timing in which you appeared was simply too coincidental. When He Feng Yang attacked Hu Immortal blessed land, all the events that happened in here, how could the outside world know? Why did He Feng Yang encounter an assassination the moment he left Hu Immortal blessed land? Obviously, you were an insider and used some special method to inform your main body, who then organized the ambush.”

Hei Lou Lan fully expressed her twisted logic, her words shocked the blue charm lightning shadow.

But immediately after, he reacted, turning angry from shame, rebuking: “Hu Immortal blessed land is a separate piece of heaven and earth, unless I have an immortal killer move, how could I communicate with my main body? But if I use an immortal killer move, such intense immortal aura would be detected by you guys, isn’t that right?”

“But there was a moment when Hu Immortal blessed land opened its doors, that way, we were connected to the outside world. You communicated with your main body at that very point in time.” Hei Lou Lan immediately retorted.

“Scumbag! Bullshit! I am honorable and righteous, how can I be like that? No, no, I was almost tricked by you. How can He Feng Yang’s ambush have anything to do with my blue charm lightning shadow sending out information? Even if the other party did not know what happened in Hu Immortal blessed land, they can still ambush He Feng Yang. There is no relationship between the two issues!” The blue charm lightning shadow screamed.

Hei Lou Lan said eerily: “Whether a relationship exists, we do not care about that. We will tell this to Immortal Crane Sect, you can explain things to them yourself.”

“Go ahead and tell them. I have not done any of the things you’ve said, why would I be afraid of slander?” The blue charm lightning shadow tried to put up a front.

At this time, Tai Bai Yun Sheng said: “Oh! I remember now, recently in Immortal Crane Sect’s region of control, wasn’t there the matter of Great Heavenly Sword Sect trying to gain independence? There had been rumors that the matter of Great Heavenly Sword Sect was instigated by Myriad Dragon Dock. Hehe, I get it. After killing He Feng Yang, Immortal Crane Sect’s main forces will come and attack our blessed land. In that case, it will be even easier for Great Heavenly Sword Sect to detach from Immortal Crane Sect. After Great Heavenly Sword Sect joins Myriad Dragon Dock, and become your subsidiary, Immortal Crane Sect’s territory at the northwest area will be devoured by Myriad Dragon Dock. By then, even if they taken down Hu Immortal blessed land, they will suffer a huge loss in battle strength, if they return and want to settle the matter with Myriad Dragon Dock, it would be too late, and they would not have the strength to do so.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s words not only shocked the blue charm lightning shadow, even Fang Yuan was looking at him in surprise.

Although Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a good person and had been kind in his life, he was old and experienced, his words were like a dagger stabbing into the heart of the matter, he directly pointed out Vicious Lightning Fiend’s weakness.

The blue charm lightning shadow finally became quiet.

After a dozen breaths of time, he said: “Damn, you bunch of scheming scoundrels, you are simply twisting logic as you like, you’re making things up! Say it, what is the condition for letting go of my lightning shadow puppet?”

Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not speak, they looked at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan laughed lightly, saying a ridiculous condition: “Vicious Lightning Fiend, I am very interested in this immortal killer move that can turn the blue charm lightning shadow into a puppet. Why don’t you teach me.”

“Screw you! This is a trump card that I finally came up with after four years of closed cultivation! With just a few words from you, you want to take the fruits of my labor, it will only happen in your dreams! Even if this puppet is destroyed, I will not give it to you!!” The blue charm lightning shadow shouted in anger, categorically rejecting this.

But Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories, he was carrying out a plan based on them and knew about Vicious Lightning Fiend’s bottom line.

He chuckled as he said slowly: “Vicious Lightning Fiend, your immortal killer move was only created in a rush, the success rate is definitely not high. The blue charm lightning shadow has rank six battle strength, isn’t it such a waste to discard it here? How about this, I will take a step back, I do not want your immortal killer move, I want the Blood Deity remnant recipe that you have.”

The blue charm lightning shadow’s expression was grim: “How did you know that I have Blood Deity’s remnant recipe? There are only a small number of Gu Immortals in Myriad Dragon Dock that know about this secret!”

“Hmph, frog in the well, there are no impenetrable walls in this world, even if very few people know, can’t I have Gu worms to deduce it?” Fang Yuan showed a disposition of unfathomable depth.

“Good, very good. I am even more curious about your true identities now. Hmph, I will admit a loss this time!” The blue charm lightning shadow agreed as he gritted his teeth.

“Let’s trade using treasure yellow heaven.” Fang Yuan said.

“No way, treasure yellow heaven will expose the blue charm lightning shadow puppet, it will expose my immortal killer move in advance!” The blue charm lightning shadow rejected immediately.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly: “Vicious Lightning Fiend, don’t think I am unaware, after coming out of closed cultivation, you plan to imitate Sword Immortal Bo Qing, to challenge experts from all over the region, and use your power to contest for the title of the strongest. Your first target must be Bee Immortal Liao Mao.”

“You sure know a lot!” The blue charm lightning shadow’s tone was cold, but his heart was jumping.

The other party’s grasp on information was far too detailed, he was in a very passive spot.

Fang Yuan ordered Little Hu Immortal to act, using connecting heaven Gu to connect to treasure yellow heaven, before finding Vicious Lightning Fiend’s main body.

After the two negotiated, Fang Yuan sent the blue charm lightning shadow as merchandise and sent it over.

Immediately, the treasure light burst into the sky, attracting countless divine senses.

Vicious Lightning Fiend quickly took out Blood Deity’s Immortal Gu remnant recipe, who knew how many Gu Immortals cried out in alarm at this.

“Scoundrel, quickly settle the deal!” Vicious Lightning Fiend’s divine sense screamed.

“Vicious Lightning Fiend, you are not being genuine. The Blood Deity remnant recipe you have is seventy percent complete, you are trying to scam my ignorance, only taking out a forty percent remnant recipe?” Fang Yuan said slowly.

Vicious Lightning Fiend was shocked: “How can I have a seventy percent Blood Deity remnant recipe!”

“I am in no rush, the longer the blue charm lightning shadow is exposed, the more people will know.” Fang Yuan said casually.

Vicious Lightning Fiend almost spat blood from anger: “Lad, don’t think that with a wisdom path Gu Immortal behind you deducing things, you can act so arrogantly!! I will remember you, just you wait!!”

Saying this, he finally tossed out a seventy percent Blood Deity remnant recipe.

“An Immortal Gu remnant recipe with such a high completion rate appeared!”

“Since when did blue charm lightning shadow become a commodity?”

Some Gu Immortals fortunate enough to witness the transaction went into deep shock.

Fang Yuan did not make things difficult for Vicious Lightning Fiend this time, they swiftly ended the deal.

Under the gazes of Hei Lou Lan and the others, Fang Yuan took the Immortal Gu remnant recipe, exclaiming in his heart: “I obtained this so easily, something that I had been unable to get my hands on in my previous life no matter what. A seventy percent blood deity Immortal Gu remnant recipe, together with my previous life’s accumulations, and with wisdom Gu’s power, I should be able to complete the blood deity Immortal Gu recipe.”

Next, he thought about Vicious Lightning Fiend.

This person had an fierce, ruthless, and fiery personality, in his previous life, he attained rank seven and had incredible battle strength. During the five regions chaotic war, he used the immortal killer move Lightning Deity, to accumulate eight rank six battle strength beings that were similar to the blue charm lightning shadow. After Feng Jiu Ge died, he contested for the prized status of being the number one in battle strength among rank seven, he fought with Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei for three days and three nights but unfortunately lost.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan had most wanted to refine the Immortal Gu Blood Deity. He had once targeted the Immortal Gu remnant recipe in Vicious Lightning Fiend’s possession, but his plot failed and he escaped after being heavily injured.

To think that in this life, he could obtain what he had always wanted in his previous life in such a manner.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 707: Overwhelming Profits!

In central continent time, three days after extorting Vicious Lightning Fiend, Immortal Crane Sect announced to the world: They recognized Fang Yuan as the owner of Hu Immortal blessed land, Hu Immortal blessed land was now a subsidiary force of Immortal Crane Sect, and could leave at any time.

This shocking news was like a large rock being thrown into a lake, causing many surging waves and splashes.

At once, the world of Central Continent’s Gu Immortals was in a commotion!

Earlier, Immortal Crane Sect had declared publicly that Fang Yuan was a traitor of the sect, and would receive judgment soon. Such matters were common in Central Continent. Many Gu Masters, after obtaining benefits, would not want to share it with their sect, or they might be recruited by other sects, and so on, such reasons caused them to betray their original sect.

The cohesion of members under the sect system was weaker compared to the clan and tribe system that united people from the same bloodline together.

Among sects, the ten great ancient sects had the highest cohesion. But there were still traitors that appeared in these ancient sects.

In the past, First Gen Gu Yue obtained a blood path true inheritance and betrayed Immortal Crane Sect, going to Southern Border and hiding his name and identity.

These recent years, Myriad Dragon Dock’s former disciple Song Zi Xing had also betrayed his sect. After growing from battles, he was now a rank seven Gu Immortal, known as the Blood Dragon, he was a famous demonic path expert in Central Continent.

Thus, when Fang Yuan as a rank five Gu Master had betrayed Immortal Crane Sect, it was only news of mild magnitude.

But now, Immortal Crane Sect had gathered up its forces and gone to pass judgment on Fang Yuan, the result was nothing anyone could have expected.

In this time, who knew how many people thought that Fang Yuan was courting death, their eyes were popping out of their sockets when they learned about the news.

After that, even more inside information was released, from Immortal Crane Sect, Vicious Lightning Fiend, and Fang Yuan.

There were many rumors, like the strength of Dang Hun mountain and Hu Immortal blessed land, the rise of a mysterious force, Vicious Lightning Fiend’s immortal killer move, all these attracted people’s attentions. Among them, the biggest highlight was the transaction of guts Gu.

Guts Gu could leave Dang Hun mountain and be stored, thus they could be traded! There were such great profits implied by this information, all the different forces were moved.

The Gu Immortals finally understood why Immortal Crane Sect made such a declaration, it was the motivation of profits!

For guts Gu, forsaking some hollow reputation was nothing. Furthermore, Fang Yuan acknowledged that his force was a subsidiary of Immortal Crane Sect, this was giving face to the ancient sects.

The other nine great ancient sects called Immortal Crane Sect shameless on one hand, while interacting with Hu Immortal blessed land on the other.

Fang Yuan’s guts Gu had yet to begin being traded, but he had already received a large number of letter Gu, and they were still coming.

Regardless of whether it was a large or small force, Fang Yuan replied to them all. This was to establish the first contact between them.

Using this as an opportunity, Fang Yuan finally entered the limelight of Central

Continent, with the status of an immortal zombie and the owner of Hu Immortal blessed land, he entered the eyes of all the Gu Immortals and the different forces.

A few days later, Hei Lou Lan brought in the first batch of souls, there were hundreds of thousands of them.

Of course, most of them were souls of wild beasts.

Fang Yuan placed them all into Dang Hun mountain, and Hu Immortal land spirit started to release Dang Hun mountain’s power, vibrating and turning these souls into fragments, as these soul fragments were scattered on the surface of Dang Hun mountain, they gradually formed into guts Gu.

As the guts Gu grew here, Fang Yuan started to make his preparations elsewhere.

He ordered all of his hairy men to start creating the foundational Gu worms.

After seven days and seven nights, working in three shifts, they had finally produced a large number of Gu worms.

He next ordered the rockmen to start building a stone nest.

Half a month later, the first batch of souls were all used up, as a large number of guts Gu were formed on Dang Hun mountain.

Hei Lou Lan brought the second batch of souls into Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fang Yuan brought her to the stone nest near Dang Hun mountain.

Hei Lou Lan stood at the edge of the stone nest, seeing the huge structure below her, she was very shocked at Fang Yuan’s huge investment.

This stone nest was tens of acres in area, and it was hundreds of meters deep into the ground.

At the outer ring of the stone nest, it was a huge sinkhole, dug manually, vertically up and down. The circular sinkhole was one li in radius, at least three li deep, like the frame of a tall piece of glassware.

At the center of the sinkhole, there was a huge stone pillar.

The stone pillar was over three hundred meters in radius, this length was slightly more than half of one li, thus, the stone pillar and the circular sinkhole did not touch, they were at least a hundred and fifty meters apart, and there was an empty space left purposely.

The stone pillar was like an ant hill, it was complex inside but could reach anywhere as long as one knew the directions.

Be it the outer wall of the stone pillar, or the inner area of the circular sinkhole, there were countless rooms dug out. In each room, there was an elderly hairy man, and they had the basic Gu refinement materials and tools they needed.

“Fairy Lou Lan, please.” Fang Yuan brought Hei Lou Lan to the top of the stone pillar, at the center-most spot.

Hei Lou Lan used her investigative Gu non-stop, realizing that this stone pillar and the sinkhole around the stone pillar had countless Gu worms around them at set intervals.

These arrangements had many complicated smaller details, Hei Lou Lan was going dizzy from seeing them, but what she knew was that these arrangements were not randomly set up, they were linked to each other and formed a great influence as a whole, it was set up with deep intentions.

“Don’t tell me...” Hei Lou Lan was guessing in her heart, when Fang Yuan said: “Fairy, I am already done preparing, you can use the strength qi Immortal Gu now.”

“Oh? Please teach me.”

“Fairy only needs to activate strength qi Immortal Gu, and let the strength qi spread out naturally.” Fang Yuan explained.

Hei Lou Lan followed his instructions, a powerful strength qi formed air currents and spread out everywhere. As the strength qi got thicker, they formed into a fog-like state, as they slowly spread and covered the entire stone nest.

In the stone nest, countless mortal Gu were activated, shining with all sorts of dazzling lights, like the stars in the night sky.

Under the combined force of these Gu worms, the vast strength qi was slowly extracted strand by strand, in a few breaths of time, all of the strength qi was in between the stone pillar and the sinkhole.

After a dozen breaths of time, these strength qi continued to move about, forming into the shape of a tornado, spinning around the stone pillar.

“Start the Gu refinement.” Fang Yuan instructed, as the hairy men in the rooms prepared themselves, they opened their eyes and started to refine Gu.

Whenever they needed strength qi as a Gu refinement material, the turbulent strength qi outside the room would enter it automatically.

Such a scene was praised by Hei Lou Lan in amazement: “Fang Yuan, your stone nest is so grand and huge, it can accommodate thousands of hairy men refining Gu at the same time, this is truly an innovative and incredible idea.”

Fang Yuan laughed: “Didn’t I tell you I am also a refinement master?”

In truth, this stone nest was invented during the five regions chaotic war in his previous life.

Because of the unceasing battles that occurred at both large and small scale, Gu Masters would expend a lot of their Gu worms, all of the forces needed to replenish their Gu worms. Thus, they gradually researched and came up with such a stone nest that could accommodate so many Gu Masters, a structure that can allow mass refinement of Gu.

“I will name this the Fang Yuan stone nest, it is a place specially used to mass produce mortal Gu. I split the refinement process of the airsac Gu into over a dozen steps. When the hairy men at the highest level finish the first step, they will pass the partly-done product to the next floor’s rooms. After the next floor finishes their refinement, they will send the partly-done product to the next floor. This way, each of the hairy men would be specialized in one step, not only would this prevent my Gu recipe from leaking, they can also get more familiar with their own steps and increase the success rate.”

Fang Yuan shamelessly took the invention of someone in his previous life for his own.

Hei Lou Lan could not help but praise again: “This is indeed the right method to mass produce mortal Gu, in a certain aspect, it can even reduce the required proficiency of the Gu refiners themselves, because they only need to finish one step of the entire refinement process. But you, Fang Yuan, would be able to free yourself from the complication of dealing with all the many small steps, only having to control the materials.”

“There are some Gu recipes that need the Gu refiner to refine it non-stop. Thankfully, airsac Gu is not like that.” Fang Yuan said.

Hei Lou Lan nodded: “I was worried that the number of airsac Gu would be too little, and that would affect the sale of guts Gu. After all, each airsac Gu can only hold one guts Gu. But now that I’ve seen this stone nest for myself, I can feel assured. How are you intending to sell these guts Gu?”

Fang Yuan had a plan already: “Most of the sales will be towards the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent. I have already established a connection via hole earth Gu with the ten great sects. From now on, we will trade using these hole earth Gu, the remaining guts Gu will be sold in treasure yellow heaven.”

“Aren’t you going to sell some to the other sects in central continent specifically?”

“No. Right now, the ten great sects are the leaders of Central Continent, our identities and statuses are already very sensitive, we do not need to test the limits of the ancient sects. Our current peace was not obtained easily, we should quietly wait and reap our profits.”

Hei Lou Lan heard this and nodded, she was completely at ease now.

Time passed by quickly, another half a month passed in Hu Immortal blessed land.

The first batch of guts Gu had already been sold, after accounting for the costs, as well as Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan’s forty percent cut, Fang Yuan earned forty-three immortal essence stones.

A month later in Hu Immortal blessed land’s time, the second batch of guts Gu was sold, and Fang Yuan’s immortal essence stone stockpile increased by another forty-six pieces.

The third batch of guts Gu earned him forty-seven pieces.

The market reception was great, the ten great ancient sects’ demand was increasing, and sales in treasure yellow heaven were extremely heated, usually in just one to two days, they would all be sold.

Guts Gu was after all a treasure that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable recommended, the efficiency of strengthening the soul was very high, at least ten times as efficient as ordinary methods.

In truth, not only did soul path Gu Masters need it, enslavement path, refinement path and other related paths also needed a foundation in their soul.

When a Gu Master ascends to Gu Immortal, the soul was also an important element for the thickness of the human qi, nobody would resent their soul for being strong.

Fang Yuan started to feel the benefits of having a monopolized market.

He could control the market, and control the situation. He could sell to anyone he wanted to, and he could sell at any quantity he set.

But he did not raise prices randomly, because guts Gu were not the only way to strengthen souls, if the price was too high, people would just use their original methods instead. That would instead, cause Fang Yuan’s profits to fall.

After three batches of guts Gu were sold, Fang Yuan had over a hundred immortal essence stones. He started to purchase hairy men in bulk, creating more rooms in the stone nest and expanding his scale of production.

The more hairy men he had, the higher the efficiency of refining Gu, this caused the profits that Fang Yuan gained from each batch of guts Gu sold to be higher as well.

After five months in Hu Immortal blessed land’s time, his earnings finally stabilized, each batch of guts Gu would earn him forty-eight immortal essence stones in total profit.

This was genuinely an overwhelming profit!

The scariest thing was, guts Gu were consumable Gu, they were gone after one use. The market demand for them would never dwindle.

Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan started to feel that they were a burden.

Because their job was to collect souls.

But now, the quantity of the souls gathered to use for Dang Hun mountain gradually became the biggest restriction in the sale of guts Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 708: Returning the Eight Desolate Beasts

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

Boom boom boom...

The huge ice spike divine ape caused tremors with every step it took.

Walking towards the cloud building, it stopped and raised its head to growl, the sound waves traveled far,causing the clouds to shake.

Fang Yuan was standing far away with Lang Ya land spirit, they were conversing but they turned around to look after hearing the noise.

“This little monkey!” Lang Ya land spirit stretched out his left arm, stroking his mustache as he laughed.

He was sealed by a qi path killer move, the fifteen layers had been reduced to six layers, all thanks to the help of the Inkman King.

Thus, Lang Ya land spirit’s left arm was free to move now, only his right arm was left immobile.

Fang Yuan smiled, as he saw the cloud building rise up slowly, exposing a cave made of cloud soil underneath. The cloud fog was misty, covering the ice spike divine ape completely. The ice spike divine ape stepped into the hole and its tall figure gradually vanished from Fang Yuan’s vision.

Finally, the cloud building gradually descended, and resealed the cave. The Gu worms in the cave were activated, causing the ice spike divine ape to go into hibernation.

Not far away, the same sight was happening with other cloud buildings.

Except that the ones entering the caves were not the ice spike divine ape, but the phoenix feather lava crocodile, golden sand dark stallion and the other desolate beasts.

“Ice spike divine ape, phoenix feather lava crocodile, golden sand dark stallion, azure dragon vine, swamp crab, peach wolf, iron crown eagle and earth chief desolate beast, I have returned to you the eight desolate beasts that you lent me without a single scratch. Actually, letting them out to roam once in a while is a good thing. Letting them sleep all the time, although it saves food, it will affect their battle strength.” Fang Yuan said.

Lang Ya land spirit rolled his eyes: “Rascal, do you think I cannot understand what you are trying to imply? You want to borrow my desolate beasts again to fight for you, right? Hmph, these desolate beasts were captured with much difficulty, they are an important line of defense for Lang Ya blessed land. If you want to borrow them again, you cannot bring all eight at once!”

Fang Yuan laughed nonchalantly, stretching out his arm: “Alright, I returned to you your desolate beasts, according to our agreement, you should return the two great Immortal Gu, Man as Before and Landscape as Before, to me now.”

Lang Ya land spirit heard this and his aura diminished, he smiled sheepishly: “Well... Little Fang, no, brother Fang, Man as Before and Landscape as Before are two incredible Immortal Gu, I have not finished researching them yet, can you give me a few more days?”

Fang Yuan’s expression turned stiff: “Don’t even think about it, hand them over!”

“Little brother Fang, no, big brother fang, you cannot be so ruthless. You know that I am current sealed by the qi path move, I cannot display my true strength as an expert, there’s no way my research can have progress. This deal was very disadvantageous to me!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted.

“This transaction was willingly done by the two of us, I did not force you. It is your problem that you made a loss, you want to regret it now? Too late! Quickly hand it over, don’t forget that we used mountain pledge Gu to make the vow, this also involves your friend Mo Tan Sang, whoever breaks the vow would have to pay with his life.” Fang Yuan snickered continuously.

“Oh land spirit, return him the Immortal Gu.” Mo Tan Sang quickly hurried over, staring at Lang Ya land spirit worriedly.

Lang Ya land spirit looked at Mo Tan Sang, he could not stand his gaze and stomped his foot, handing over Man as Before and Landscape as Before, these two Immortal Gu, over to Fang Yuan with much reluctance.

“Damn brat, you always take advantage of me in the end. Take it, take it, you scheming fellow!” Lang Ya land spirit continued to grumble.

Fang Yuan snorted disgruntedly: “I took advantage? What advantage did I take? I fed all eight of your desolate beasts till they were full, while no battles actually took place, it was like taking a walk with them. I saved some costs for you, nor am I even asking you to settle the score.”

“Score, what score? Didn’t I feed your rising azure cloud Immortal Gu as well, in order to buy the food, I spent a lot of immortal essence stones too, if you want to calculate all of this, let’s count properly and see who paid a higher price!” Lang Ya land spirit was stomping his foot in agitation, he rebuked immediately.

The feeding of desolate beasts was naturally much simpler and cheaper than feeding Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan could not argue with Lang Ya land spirit over this, but he had control of Lang Ya land spirit’s weakness, thus he could speak in a confident tone, he laughed coldly: “Lang Ya land spirit, do you still want to research Man as Before and Landscape as Before? Do you?”

Lang Ya land spirit’s expression changed, he smiled amicably: “Yes, I want to even in my dreams.”

“Then good.” Fang Yuan patted Lang Ya land spirit’s head: “Is there a point in being calculative, it was your fault for keeping my rising azure cloud Immortal Gu as collateral, right?”

“Get lost!” Lang Ya land spirit was so angry that he shrugged off Fang Yuan’s hand: “You brat, you have no manners, I am your senior’s senior’s senior’s senior’s senior’s senior!”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan stared, while showing a flash of the two Immortal Gu in his hand.

Lang Ya land spirit’s expression changed, he laughed as he patted Fang Yuan’s leg: “Fang Yuan, there’s nothing I can do, you really suit my taste, we are old friends with much in common after all!”

Mo Tan Sang, who was at the side, witnessed this entire scene speechlessly.

Fang Yuan placed the two Immortal Gu into his own immortal aperture and took out three Immortal Gu recipes.

After five months in Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan had made six deals with Lang Ya land spirit.

The lower the completion rate of the Immortal Gu recipe, the more green grape immortal essence would be consumed during the deduction, and it would take more time as well. The three Immortal Gu recipes that Fang Yuan took out now had only sixty percent completion rate originally, he spent half a month before he completed them with difficulty.

Lang Ya land spirit received the Immortal Gu recipes and looked, sighing while shaking his head: “Lad, I have to admit, you are an unparalleled genius in deducing Gu recipes. It is such a pity that you have become an immortal zombie.”

Fang Yuan followed up and asked: “I also want to find a way to remove my immortal zombie status, do you know of any methods?”

“There are a bunch of methods, of course, but they are all old and cannot keep up with the times. Some have high risks, some have low probabilities of success, while some have extinct materials, for some, I don’t even believe the methods.” Lang Ya land spirit shook his head: “After all, I am a land spirit, I would not usually think about an immortal zombie’s problems.”

“Brother Fang might be able to get into Northern Plains’ Zombie Alliance branch. The higher ups of Zombie Alliance are mostly immortal zombies, they have been researching on how to get rid of the immortal zombie body, and regain their lives. Furthermore, several years ago, I’ve heard some rumors that Northern Plains Zombie Alliance had made some progress on this matter.” Mo Tan Sang suggested at this time.

Fang Yuan nodded: “I have such intentions, but I cannot expose myself. I destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and ruined Imperial Court blessed land, it is inconvenient to appear in public. If deductions were made against me, that would be horrible.”

“Now that Dong Fang Chang Fan is dead, there might not be any Gu Immortals who can deduce brother Fang’s identity.” Mo Tan Sang said.

“It is hard to say, some thousand year old monsters or some wisdom path Gu Immortals might exist.” Fang Yuan shook his head, sighing.

“Oh? Lad, aren’t you a wisdom path Gu Immortal? If you can deduce so many Immortal Gu recipes, your wisdom path attainment must be very high, you should use your own wisdom path methods to prevent others from deducing you. I remember that many wisdom path Gu Immortals have done that before.” Lang Ya land spirit asked.

Fang Yuan laughed bitterly in his heart.

How could he be a wisdom path Gu Immortal? He was only using the might of the rank nine wisdom Gu to impersonate as one, shamelessly claiming credit for it.

Thus, he said: “My wisdom path methods are very heavily skewed towards deducing Gu recipes, they are very poor in other aspects. Furthermore, Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun are both living eyewitnesses, they had experienced the situation in Imperial Court blessed land. I am afraid my current appearance has been found out by Qin Bai Sheng already.”

Speaking of Qin Bai Sheng, Mo Tan Sang’s eyes shone, he praised: “This person is quite impressive. I had thought that he was only strong in battle strength, but to think he was very wise as well. He captured Ma and Zhao, obtaining the core of the luck path true inheritance. Originally, Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals were going to attack and exterminate him together. But during this month’s time in Northern Plains, he recruited allies, giving up some benefits and persuading Fairy Li Shan to come out and use mountain pledge Gu, to forcefully gather and unite a bunch of lone cultivators, even Ye Lui tribe was convinced by him.”

“Originally, there was a huge battle ahead, but because of his actions, the battle flopped. He even is going to hold a huge auction in his blessed land, purposely selling the core Immortal Gu of the luck path true inheritance, he even will be placing Ma and Zhao as commodities for sale.”

After saying that, Mo Tan Sang looked at Fang Yuan deeply in the eye.

He knew that Fairy Li Shan and Fang Yuan had a deep relationship.

Back then, when Fang Yuan borrowed the desolate beasts from Lang Ya land spirit, he was present. Lang Ya land spirit rejected him outright, having a firm attitude, after all, the desolate beasts were an important defense of Lang Ya blessed land. If Fang Yuan had ill intentions, and was in cahoots with the group that attacked the blessed land, Lang Ya land spirit would be in danger.

But out of his expectations, Fang Yuan took out mountain pledge Gu.

Using this Gu to make a vow, Lang Ya land spirit’s worries were dispelled.

Later, he used Man as Before and Landscape as Before, these two Immortal Gu, to attract Lang Ya land spirit and strike at his weakness. After all, Lang Ya land spirit had offered Tai Bai Yun Sheng five immortal essence stones just to research Landscape as Before in the past.

Lang Ya land spirit was moved by the two Immortal Gu, and after being provoked by Fang Yuan’s words, he lent eight desolate beasts to him.

“Qin Bai Sheng knows how to give in at the right time, he can adapt to circumstances and has amazing methods, he is truly skilled in both brains and brawn, one can’t help but admire him.” Fang Yuan said lightly, before changing the subjecting and asking the land spirit: “Do you have any leads on the white lotus giant silkworm Gu?”

Fang Yuan’s cleanse soul Immortal Gu has not been fed, after this period of time, it became even weaker.

But to feed cleanse soul Immortal Gu, he needed the flesh of the white lotus giant silkworm Gu.

Earlier, Fang Yuan had asked Lang Ya land spirit, but Lang Ya land spirit did not have the recipe of the white lotus giant silkworm Gu, or even any remnant recipes of it.

Thus, he could only ask for a lead, not raising any talk of the Gu recipe.

Lang Ya land spirit shook his head: “Lad, this white lotus giant silkworm Gu was created by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. My main body had lived through the eras of Thieving Heaven and Giant Sun before dying. Spectral Soul Demon Venerable only rose up after Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, by that time, I was already confined inside this blessed land, how could I have any leads?”

“But, I do have an incredible transformation path killer move here. This killer move originated from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable. When he was young, he used this set of Gu worms to hide his appearance and evade his enemies when they chased him, the effect was great. With this killer move, you will be able to change your appearance and aura, to conceal your identity. Even if Gu Immortals manage to deduce your identity, you might be able to deny it in person and claim that their deduction was wrong, successfully hoodwinking them!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 709: Familiar Face

“Oh?” As it involved Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, Fang Yuan’s interest was roused: “Is it the legendary ‘familiar face’?”

In Gu Master history, there were many interesting records about the immortal killer move ‘familiar face’.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had once relied on familiar face to transform into all sorts of appearances, he had once scammed a rank eight Gu Immortal, Deng Zuo Yan, while he himself had rank six cultivation, causing Deng Zuo Yan to think that he was his best friend, Wan Che Zhen. In the end, Deng Zuo Yan allowed the thief into his house, and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable used the opportunity to steal a lot of treasures in his blessed land.

After the incident, Deng Zuo Yan was angered to the point of spitting out blood, he found Wan Che Zhen and engaged in a fierce battle, it was an extremely heated match.

Wan Che Zhen was very puzzled, he tried to explain himself but it was not working. In the end, he took a risk and stopped defending him, letting Deng Zuo Yan deal three blows to him.

After three blows, Wan Che Zhen was on the verge of death, he finally managed to convince Deng Zuo Yan of their friendship.

Deng Zuo Yan felt deep regret, he tried to heal Wan Che Zhen regardless of the consequences. After he found out the truth, he saw Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable as his most hated enemy and one that he must kill.

Wan Che Zhen's deep injuries could not heal, and seeing that Deng Zuo Yan was about to face a tribulation, he did not want to be a burden to his friend and left secretly.

But to think that Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had perfect timing, he disguised as Wan Che Zhen and lied to Deng Zuo Yan, lying in bed and pretending to be ill, extorting countless cultivation resources from him.

After that, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable escaped scot-free.

Deng Zuo Yan lost a huge amount of his foundation, he died during his heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity not long after. Wan Che Zhen heard that his friend had died and vomited blood from anger. His weak body that was heavily injured finally gave in and he died several days later.

This was the most illustrious achievement of the immortal killer move 'familiar face'.

It was not an offensive killer move, but it indirectly took the lives of two rank eight Gu Immortals.

In history, other than this incredible account, there were also countless incidents where Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable used this move to pretend to be a weakling to catch people off guard, or scammed people by pretending to be an expert. He also transformed into a snowman and caused trouble in an inkman city, resulting in a huge battle between the snowmen and the inkmen.

Lang Ya land spirit stared at Fang Yuan, shaking his head: "Familiar face? You are really daring! That is an immortal killer move, the core Gu is the legendary attitude Gu. Even if I give it to you, you will not be able to use it. But this killer move of mine has a huge relationship with familiar face, it can be said to be the former version of it, this is a mortal killer move and is suitable for you to use."

"Oh?" Bright light shined in Fang Yuan's eyes.

Seeing that he had drawn out Fang Yuan's interest, Lang Ya land spirit chuckled as he continued: "This killer move is called 'unfamiliar face'. But if you want it, you will need to do me a favor."

Fang Yuan knew that there was no free lunch in this world, he nodded: "Say it."

Lang Ya land spirit said his plan immediately: "My twelve cloud buildings all had one desolate beast inside each in the past. But because of the attacks of the Gu Immortals from the mysterious force, two of them died and one died after succumbing to injuries. Now, I only have nine left. If you can enslave a desolate beast with outstanding battle strength for me, not only will I pay you immortal essence stones based on market rates, I will also give you this mortal killer move 'unfamiliar face'."

Fang Yuan was overjoyed deep inside: After making many transactions with Lang Ya land spirit over the Immortal Gu remnant recipes, and using the mountain pledge Gu to dispel any suspicions, along with returning the desolate beasts, he had finally improved his relationship with Lang Ya land spirit.

In the past, Lang Ya land spirit would not ask Fang Yuan for such a matter.

Fang Yuan thought about it and agreed.

Next, he obtained three new Immortal Gu remnant recipes from Lang Ya land spirit, after saying goodbye, he went back to Hu Immortal blessed land.

“Junior brother, you are back, was this trip successful?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was inside Hu Immortal blessed land.

Now, with the eight desolate beasts already returned, it was impossible for Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan to stay in Hu Immortal blessed land, when Fang Yuan went to Lang Ya blessed land, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was the only Gu Immortal left to defend it.

“Mm, it was rather fruitful.” Fang Yuan said, returning landscape as before Gu and man as before Gu to Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

“Shark Demon is calling me urgently, I have to go to Eastern Sea now.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng took the two Gu and rushed over without examining them.

Fang Yuan did not obstruct him, he only told him to be careful.

Now that he was finally alone, it was time to plan what to do for the future.

“After resolving the huge crisis of Immortal Crane Sect attacking Hu Immortal blessed land, I have finally stabilized the situation, I have entered the righteous path faction using the status of a subsidiary force, now that I can sell guts Gu, I can intervene slightly in Central Continent’s matters now.”

In the past, Fang Yuan was a mortal, he did not even have the qualifications to speak to Gu Immortals as equals. Although he had Hu Immortal blessed land, he was like a child walking into a bandit’s den holding primeval stones. Once the bandits saw Fang Yuan, they would only think of how to take Hu Immortal blessed land for themselves.

Now that Fang Yuan was an immortal zombie, he finally was qualified. After gathering his strength and showing the mysterious force behind him, he had finally intimidated Immortal Crane Sect and the other forces. Using the guts Gu transaction to form an economic connection between them, the child had now grown into a young man, seeing a bandit, he scattered some primeval stones to them. The bandits want to rob him, but they are afraid of a counterattack from the young man that would cause them to suffer greater losses, thus, they took the primeval stones to temporarily satisfy themselves.

Furthermore, these bandits themselves are wary of each other and restrict themselves, their attention is placed on many other things. The young man is temporarily safe in this den.

But Fang Yuan was aware, that when the guts Gu transactions become bigger, and the benefits become larger, there would be even greater pressure on him, as more people would want to snatch it from him.

Especially during the five regions chaotic war, all of the forces would not let go of something that could raise their strength.

Although the young man gave out some primeval stones and satisfied the bandits temporarily, as his wealth grows, these bandits were bound to engage in another attempt of robbery soon.

Thus, Fang Yuan lowered his head and became a subsidiary of Immortal Crane Sect in name. This way, the young man was now a young bandit, these bandits could not rob each other, they had to follow the rules.

But rules were just formless restrictions, as time passed, as the profits grew, they would have less effect.

After all, this young bandit was not as powerful as he had displayed himself to be.

“Four Gu Immortals, eight desolate beasts, this is just a facade that I put up by borrowing the strength of others. The Snowy Mountain Alliance I have with Hei Lou Lan has a time limit. Lang Ya blessed land is facing strong enemies, it can hardly protect itself, I cannot bring out the eight desolate beasts anytime I wish. Even though we made Immortal Crane Sect retreat and have set up transactions with the ten great ancient sects, since I have now appeared in the open, they will definitely use all sorts of methods to investigate me. They have not struck yet because they are not sure of my background at this point. One they know, they will strike again.” Fang Yuan considered.

Using an analogy, when Fang Yuan first obtained Hu Immortal blessed land, the situation was like a torrential rainstorm with thunder and lightning, it was vicious weather and only by taking a fatal risk could he have a chance of survival.

After Fang Yuan’s trip to Northern Plains, he became an immortal zombie, when he returned to Hu Immortal blessed land, the situation was like a sky with dark clouds covering him, and strong winds blowing. The future was grim, only by plotting carefully, taking every step vigilantly, and grabbing onto every opportunity, could he climb out of the swamp slowly and with much difficulty.

After Fang Yuan repelled Immortal Crane Sect and started selling guts Gu, the fierce winds had disappeared, and the dark clouds had thinned, a hole was exposed and the blue sky could be seen. The future was now bright and hopeful, but the dark clouds were still looming, if he was careless, they would cover the sky again, with lightning and rain pouring. It was like a person had just escaped from a swamp, he was standing at the edge of the swamp, finally safe for the time being.

If he took a step back, Fang Yuan would fall into the swamp again, if he wanted to get out, he would need to struggle intensely, and his luck would matter greatly.

If he moved forward, Fang Yuan would become more stable, and he would finally get back onto a wide and large track. Even if there were thorns along the way, it would not be like before, when he was struggling between life and death, and every step could lead to a fatal disaster.

“The following period of time is a time of peace that I have obtained with much difficulty, I need to advance forward, accumulating my foundation and raising my cultivation, I have to become stronger, until none of the forces around me dare to have any ill intentions against me.”

Fang Yuan thought about it carefully, there were several huge problems in front of him.

The first question facing him now was the feeding of Immortal Gu.

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu was the most urgent one.

Lang Ya land spirit and Fairy Li Shan did not have any leads to the white lotus giant silkworm Gu, even though he could buy some in treasure yellow heaven for a high price, it could only sustain cleanse soul Immortal Gu's life and not let it die of hunger.

To feed it till it was full, he needed ten thousand white lotus giant silkworm Gu, this Gu was in small quantity even for Gu Immortals who collected them.

Unless Fang Yuan got the Gu recipe and refined it in bulk, he could not solve the issue completely.

Looking at his other Immortal Gu, feeding them was still a huge problem.

Although he got through it this time, the next round of feeding would be a problem again.

The six headed snake's bones had turned into black blood and were fed to calamity beckoning Immortal Gu. Delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu's feeding problem had never been resolved. It was just that Mo Yao's will had fed it earlier, thus there were no issues yet.

Worldly wave trace Gu needed tens of thousands of underworld jellyfish and thousands of deepsea lightning eels. Although the former was in huge quantity, it could be bought easily using immortal essence stones. But the latter was rare in the market, if not for Tai Bai Yun Sheng encountering Shark Demon and putting his own life at risk, he would not have gotten the required amount.

Rising Azure Cloud was in Lang Ya land spirit's hands, it need not be considered for now. Connect luck Immortal Gu needs five thousand kilograms of sand gull soil, looking at the condition of the worldly sand gull's dead egg, it could produce another fifteen thousand kilograms, which was three feeding sessions. The feeding of Woman's Heart was troublesome, after all, mass killing of mortals would attract the attack of righteous path Gu Immortals.

After all, now was not the five regions chaotic war yet.

Within the five regions, the righteous path suppressed the demonic path, order was abundant in society.

Although Fang Yuan had many immortal essence stones now, the feeding of Immortal Gu could not be resolved simply by having immortal essence stones.

Generally in most cases, the feeding of Immortal Gu was usually connected to the cultivation path of the Gu Immortal themselves, and their blessed land.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 710: Crossing the Regional Wall

For instance, a water path Gu Immortal's blessed land would be in the form of a sea. After obtaining worldly wave trace Gu, the Gu Immortal would raise underworld jellyfish, deepsea lightning eels and so on inside their blessed land. Thus, the Gu Immortal could be self-sufficient, by drawing materials from their own blessed land to feed the Immortal Gu Worldly Wave Trace.

Another example was Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s two Immortal Gu, he could obtain food for them by managing his own blessed land.

Hei Lou Lan’s blessed land contained large numbers of heavy metal ores. These heavy metals were strength qi Immortal Gu’s food.

However, Fang Yuan’s situation was different from theirs.

Their Immortal Gu were mostly obtained by refining vital Gu and core Gu when advancing to Gu Immortal, and were integrated with their path.

Fang Yuan’s Immortal Gu were mostly obtained from scheming. His vital Gu was Spring Autumn Cicada but he had no time path inheritance, and what he currently practiced was strength path.

Moreover, Fang Yuan’s Immortal Gu were extremely disordered, involving time path, space path, water path, wisdom path and other paths. The most crucial point was that Fang Yuan’s blessed land was dead.

His immortal aperture had turned into a dead aperture and whatever he placed in there would die, it could neither be managed nor developed like a normal blessed land, nor could it provide convenience in feeding Immortal Gu, and most importantly it could not produce immortal essence. Thus, there was a much heavier burden on immortal essence stones.

Fang Yuan not only had to use his immortal essence stones for transactions, but also turn a part of them into green grape immortal essence, and furthermore bear the costs for feeding Immortal Gu. The main reason for Fang Yuan almost becoming bankrupt after the battle with Hei Cheng was this.

Thus the second problem in front of Fang Yuan was his immortal aperture.

The immortal aperture was already dead, his cultivation had stagnated.

The blessed land was involved in many aspects of the Gu Immortal’s cultivation, therefore this was a great burden to Fang Yuan. The day Fang Yuan truly got rid of his immortal zombie body would be the day he can formally start his Gu Immortal cultivation.

However, getting rid of the immortal zombie body and returning to his human body meant Fang Yuan would not be able to step into the wisdom light halo, this was also a problem.

As for the final important problem, it was battle strength.

Currently, cleanse soul Immortal Gu was weak from hunger and was too risky to use. Fang Yuan’s trump card — the immortal killer move myriad self, also could not be used.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength had fallen as a result.

Whether it was confronting Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects in the days to come, dealing with the pursuit of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals, seizing Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance, helping Lang Ya land spirit to capture a desolate beast, seeking the Thieving Heaven inheritance pertaining to Luo Po Valley, taking Immortal Gu Dark Limit from Fairy Jiang Yu, all of these required powerful battle strength.

“There are mainly four aspects that influence a Gu Immortal’s battle strength. The Gu Immortal’s own battle attainment, Immortal Gu, killer moves and immortal essence. With the guts Gu business now, I don’t lack immortal essence for the moment. A Gu Immortal’s battle attainment is formed from constant accumulation of their foundation over time and cannot be raised in a short period. In the Immortal Gu aspect, the Blood Deity remnant recipe is enough to deduce the complete blood deity Immortal Gu recipe, but my wealth right now is still quite far from reaching the standard of refining Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan thought it over, even if he could refine Blood Deity, he did not want to do so.

Blood path had been affiliated with the demonic path since long ago, even the ten great ancient sects had to research blood path in secret and did not dare to publicly announce it. Heavenly Court even had the Demon Judgment Board and Fang Yuan did not want to put his name there this early.

Moreover, almost all the Immortal Gu in Fang Yuan’s hands were in a bad state from hunger. The burden of feeding was too heavy and Fang Yuan lacked confidence in managing it if a new Immortal Gu was added on top of that.

Therefore, the only method Fang Yuan could use to raise his battle strength quickly was through killer moves.

The killer move aspect involved both immortal killer moves and mortal killer moves.

“I have sufficient immortal essence stones, my disposable income is much higher than in the past, not only can I purchase a lot of good mortal killer moves, but I also can continuously experiment, deduce and reproduce some powerful killer moves from my past life.”

Having thought things through, Fang Yuan immediately started with the task.

Central Continent.

With Feng Jiu Ge as the leader, a group of Gu Immortals were standing in front of an enormous light wall.

The light wall was incomparably tall, connecting the sky and ground. The white light had condensed into a solid and formed a wall. Within it flickered golden light which was full of vigor and majesty.

This was Central Continent’s membrane, known as the saint regional wall.

The world of Gu Masters had five large regions: Central Continent, Southern Border, Eastern Sea, Western Desert and Northern Plains, each was covered with a layer of membrane forming the boundaries of heaven and earth, mutually isolating each other.

“Old Oracle, what is the result of your calculation this time?” Old Lord Can Yang asked a young looking Gu Immortal in the group.

The young looking Gu Immortal slowly opened his eyes, they were filled with clouds and mist and constantly transforming.

A long while later, the clouds and mist dispersed and he returned to having ordinary white eyes with black pupils.

The young looking Gu Immortal spoke with a slightly happy tone: “It can be done. This part of the regional wall is rather weak, it is the third weak spot we have found over these last days. But compared to the first and the second, this is more stable. I suggest we use this to cut open an entrance and cross the regional wall to Northern Plains!”

“Hahaha, good, we have searched close to a thousand areas and finally found an ideal weak spot.” Old Man Tian Long laughed loudly.

Fairy Ling Mei let out a breath of cloudy air and said with a sigh: “We have searched for so many days before finally getting a good result, it was really not easy.”

“We have already wasted a lot of time, let’s begin.” Feng Jiu Ge said briefly, “Who goes first?”

Fairy Ao Xue and Fairy Ling Mei glanced at each other, then stood up together, speaking in unison: “This time, let our Heaven’s Envy Manor take the lead.”

With that statement, the two exerted strength and activated an immortal killer move together, called peerless crescent moon slash.

This killer move’s core was the rank seven crescent moon Immortal Gu, with two rank six Immortal Gu as support. The immortal essence required to activate this immortal killer move was extremely high and it also burdened the mind significantly; just one Gu Immortal could not display its might, two Gu Immortals must activate it together.

The immortal killer move was activated, instantly forming a blue crescent moon.

The crescent moon was not large and was only the size of a water jar, but it had condensed into solid form and was sparkling like a magnificent piece of artwork. Only the terrifying aura it leaked out occasionally would let one know that it was not harmless like its appearance showed.

The surrounding Gu Immortals distanced themselves far away from Ao Xue and Ling Mei.

After accumulating enough power, the two fairies gave soft cries and released the blue crescent moon.

The crescent moon flew extremely quick and silently, shining with gentle moonlight.

The blue crescent moon slashed the saint regional wall and immediately cut open a path about seventy-six steps in length.

“Worthy of being a well-known killer move of Heaven’s Envy Manor, it directly cut open a distance of seventy-six steps, remarkable.” Gu Immortal Chen Zhen Chi exclaimed in admiration.

Feng Jiu Ge led the way with the other Gu Immortals behind him and entered the saint regional wall.

The moment they stepped into the saint regional wall, many Gu Immortals’ expressions changed slightly. Their bodies became heavier, their thoughts moved more slowly and even the immortal aperture inside them gradually started to tremor.

“Quick, we need to move faster.” Feng Jiu Ge hastened. They had walked seventy-four steps before they could not walk any further.

In this short period of time, the saint regional wall had already started to rapidly heal; the path of seventy-six steps in depth had already shortened by two steps.

Old Lord Can Yang stood up: “Next, let this old man give it a try.”

He took out an Immortal Gu, this Immortal Gu resembled a mostly burnt out candle with a small amount of candlelight burning at the top.

Old Lord Can Yang softly blew at the candlelight.

The candlelight shook and following the direction of Old Lord Can Yang’s breath, it let out countless glittering light spots.

The light spots struck the white-gold saint regional wall, the regional wall melted like snow as it rapidly dissolved and formed a sixty-three steps passage.

Everyone quickly moved ahead. At the end of the passage, Old Man Tian Long stood up and activated an Immortal Gu, opening a sixty-seven steps passage.

All the Gu Immortals took turns in using their Immortal Gu or immortal killer moves to open the passage deeper into the saint regional wall.

The deeper they went, the greater the pressure on them was, even turning into a giant force that dragged them backwards, seemingly as if this world did not want them to leave Central Continent.

The thoughts in their minds also kept on moving increasingly slowly, which caused the Gu Immortals to have extreme difficulty in activating their immortal killer moves. As a wisdom path Gu Immortal, Old Oracle had no choice but to use all sorts of methods and even immortal killer moves to reinforce the other Gu Immortals’ minds. But in spite of this, Ao Xue and Ling Mei, these two fairies could not activate peerless crescent moon slash anymore.

The most crucial point was the immortal apertures in their bodies.

The deeper they went, the greater the intensity of the tremors in their immortal apertures. The earth within their blessed lands cracked, boulders started falling down and countless life forms within died pitifully.

These Gu Immortals came from the ten great ancient sects, they were famous experts with outstanding battle strength. However, several hundred steps later, most turned pale, some with weaker cultivation even started trembling slightly.

A thousand steps later, most of the Gu Immortals were covered with sweat, some were deathly pale. Ao Xue and Ling Mei were walking while supporting each other.

Only Feng Jiu Ge alone was still walking ahead upright, his expression was normal. Every time he made a move, they were all immortal killer moves, cutting open passages longer than a hundred steps.

After walking for over three thousand steps, there was much thinner white-gold light in front, instead a trace of green was vaguely revealed.

“Old Oracle, your deduction was correct, this is indeed a weak area of saint regional wall, we reached here after only walking over three thousand steps.” Someone immediately praised.

“Beyond saint regional wall is Northern Plains’ licorice regional wall. Let’s speed up and break through it in one move!” Old Lord Can Yang attempted to raise the morale while gasping for breath.

The young looking Gu Immortal Old Oracle, however, was somewhat worried: “My ability is limited, I could only deduce saint regional wall. Hopefully this area of licorice regional wall is not too thick.”

After around eight minutes, the Gu Immortals were out of saint regional wall and entered into licorice regional wall.

This regional wall was quite different from saint regional wall. The Gu Immortals felt an enormous formless force pushing at them and constantly repelling them.

The intensity of the tremors of their immortal apertures increased further, the losses causing great heartache to many Gu Immortals.

“I hope we can subdue one or two Immortal Gu in this trip to Northern Plains, otherwise the losses would be too huge.” Old Man Tian Long said.

“Sigh, I had passed the regional wall to Northern Plains when I was younger, but back then the whole process only took about five minutes of time and was very easy.” Gu Immortal Hong Chi Ming sighed deeply.

When he had crossed the regional wall back then, he had only been a rank four Gu Master. As one’s cultivation became higher, the difficulty in traversing regional walls would become increasingly difficult.

After a long time, this group of Gu Immortals had no choice but to stop.

They were in licorice regional wall and everywhere around them was filled with green fog. Grass was growing wildly in the fog and was constantly twining and twisting like a sea of snakes or hair, blocking their paths.

Feng Jiu Ge’s body was dripping with sweat and his lips were pale: “This won’t do, this part of licorice regional wall is extremely firm, we need to change to another direction even if we have to walk more.”

Everyone nodded, approving of Feng Jiu Ge’s resoluteness.

Old Oracle began to deduce, and in this period of time, the regional wall was constantly recovering, making the Gu Immortals retreat further.

“This way.” Finally, Old Oracle calculated a direction.

The Gu Immortals changed their direction and after suffering bitterly for a day and a night, they passed the licorice regional wall and entered Northern Plains.

“Rest and reorganize for three days, we will talk after that.” Feng Jiu Ge exhaustedly said.

Among the whole group, only he was able to barely stand while the others fell down unsteadily to the ground like piles of mud, not wanting to even budge anymore.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 711: Giving Up on Possession

Cranes cried out, flying beautifully in the sky, displaying their elegant appearances.

As the wind blew gently, the trees on Fei He mountain were swaying lightly.

The sun was high in the sky, but the sunlight could not penetrate into this dark gloomy underground secret room.

The underground secret room was plain and simple, the surroundings were stone walls and other than the stone bed at the center, there was nothing.

Moist water vapor slipped into the cracks of the walls, as moss grew on them.

On the stone bed, there was a rotten and ruined body of a young rank five Gu Master, it was Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

In order to detect Fang Yuan’s location, coordinating with He Feng Yang to attack Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Zheng was plotted against by Lord Sky Crane and lost control of the failed blood demon flower Gu, causing him to lose too much blood and his soul went on the verge of collapse, as he entered a deep state of unconsciousness.

“You want to revive Fang Zheng?” He Feng Yang was right beside the stone bed, looking at the spirit incubating flea which was floating in front of him.

Fang Zheng’s master was inside the spirit incubating flea — Lord Sky Crane’s soul.

At this moment, a firm voice came from within the flea: “Yes lord, I am willing to give up this possession opportunity, please save Fang Zheng instead.”

He Feng Yang turned his gaze towards Fang Zheng who had fainted, saying softly: “The injuries to his body might seem terrifying, but it is not a big concern, even without my help, the sect has many ways to heal him. The problem is his soul. He did the blood sense forcefully this time, it caused a huge burden on his soul, his soul was only a step away from collapsing.”

“Actually, the current situation is most suitable for you to possess his body. This body has A grade aptitude and a rank five aperture, his soul is extremely weak so if you undergo possession now, you would win the contest between souls without doubt. Wasn’t possession your goal all along?”

Lord Sky Crane laughed bitterly.

Ever since he used the method to harm Fang Zheng, Lord Sky Crane had been recalling Fang Zheng’s appearance and all the memories of their experiences had been flashing through his mind.

Fang Zheng’s purity, his pursuit of justice, it reminded him of his younger self. Fang Zheng’s desire for revenge was so similar to his own experiences.

“Subordinate’s original plan was to possess Fang Zheng. But... now in my heart, I feel guilt and reluctance. According to logic, he has the bloodline of First Gen Gu Yue, yet he has been calling me master and trusts me, he had never thought I would harm him. He believes in justice, just like I did in the past. If I kill him and succeed in the possession, I would have to live within his shell in the future, how would I face myself?”

Lord Sky Crane sighed.

He Feng Yang was silent for a while, before he raised his hand and placed it on Fang Zheng’s forehead.

A green light that was gentle as water dripped down from He Feng Yang’s palm, spreading all over Fang Zheng’s body.

Everywhere the green light reached, his swollen flesh and scars healed rapidly at a visible rate.

After several breaths of time, Fang Zheng’s body fully recovered, his breathing relaxed, but he was still unconscious.

“I have already healed his physical body, and stabilized his soul. As a reward for being my subordinate, I will give you another opportunity, Sky Crane. You do not need to give up on the possession chance, I will give you some time to consider it, think it through properly.” He Feng Yang said.

“Lord...”

He Feng Yang retracted his hand: “The possession technique we have is not complete, it originated from Northern Plains. Right now, our sect’s Old Lord Can Yang has followed Feng Jiu Ge into Northern Plains, he had been assigned several missions from the sect him. One of them is to collect more information and improve the possession technique. When he returns to the sect, Sky Crane, you will have a higher chance of succeeding in the possession. By that point, you would have already reflected thoroughly on it, give me the answer then.”

“Lord...”

Without waiting for Lord Sky Crane to finish speaking, He Feng Yang waved his sleeves and his figure vanished.

Hu Immortal blessed land, in an underground cave.

The wisdom light halo that was shining in many colors shone on Fang Yuan’s face.

Fang Yuan’s brows were tightly locked, his expression was grim and uncertain.

Guh.

Suddenly, he opened his mouth, spitting a mouthful of green zombie blood. At the same time, countless joyful wills in his mind collapsed and disintegrated.

This was the first time Fang Yuan had gotten injured from using the light of wisdom.

Fang Yuan stepped out of the light of wisdom, finding a mushroom nearby and sitting on it like a bench.

He stretched out one arm to wipe the zombie blood around his mouth, as he inspected his mind while enduring the huge pain in his head.

His mind was experiencing tremors, thoughts disintegrated on their own the moment they were created. The surrounding boundaries of his mind had mild cracks on them, this was the backlash due to Fang Yuan’s forceful thinking.

At this moment, as long as Fang Yuan had a thought, intense pain would assault his mind.

He shut his eyes and stopped all his thinking, he was like a rock statue without any movement.

A while later, he slowly opened his eyes, inspecting his mind again.

The tremors had stopped in his mind, but the boundaries still had remaining cracks on them. The speed of his thought generation was slower than before, but they would not collapse upon creation.

That was to say, Fang Yuan could think again.

This injury was no doubt a valuable experience, Fang Yuan learned many things from it.

“Wisdom path deductions have a risk as well, one can get injured. Just like strength path, overexerting oneself would cause them to pull their muscles, and their tendons might even break.”

“This time, I was trying to deduce a difficult question of the star path, I used a large amount of joyful wills and the unlimited inspiration from the light of wisdom to deduce countless possibilities. It surpassed the limits and endurance level of my mind, thus I got injured.”

“I thought I could use the power of wisdom Gu to deduce the recipe of star shoot Gu. But now it seems that my star path foundation is too low, the unlimited inspiration can give me countless possibilities and directions, but I will need to deduce every single possibility. At the same time, during the process of deduction, more choices would be generated.”

Star shoot Gu was Star Lord Wan Xiang’s self-created Gu worm. Using large numbers of star rain Gu, small numbers of spring wind Gu, as well as many other Gu worms, one could assemble the killer move — Spring Star Rain.

The effect of spring star rain was to increase the growth rate of plants. Fang Yuan used it many times to nourish his star fragment grass.

But star shoot Gu was a consumable Gu, right now, he could only purchase it from Star Lord Wan Xiang, and Star Lord Wan Xiang was making a huge profit out of this Gu.

Fang Yuan had wanted to use the light of wisdom to reverse engineer the star shoot Gu’s recipe, but he did not succeed, and even got himself injured.

“Although star shoot Gu is a mortal Gu, it had been tampered with by Star Lord Wan Xiang, the recipe is very hard to reverse refine. Unless my star path realm reaches master level, if not, it will be hard to succeed.” Fang Yuan had a realization.

Star path master level realm, it represented a foundation in star path, and could greatly reduce the possibilities when undergoing deductions. It could help Fang Yuan reach the correct answer much quicker.

Fang Yuan made an estimate based on the difficulty: “If reverse refining star shoot Gu’s recipe requires star path master level attainment, then researching an entirely new Gu recipe to create the starlight firefly Gu would be even harder, most likely, star path grandmaster realm is needed. As for modifying Dou Min Jun’s star path inheritance and creating an entire new star path Gu worm, to amplify the effects of attacking, defending, movement, and healing in star path Gu worms, that would be even harder. At least quasi-great grandmaster realm attainment is required.”

Starlight firefly Gu was a necessity in activating stargate Gu, it would not hurt to have more of it.

But in Dou Min Jun’s inheritance, a bit of star Gu, brilliance of two stars Gu, three stars in the sky Gu, four stars cube Gu, five stars aligned Gu, these could amplify the offense of star path Gu worms. If this was circulated, star path Gu would definitely become much more popular, it would even have a mild effect on the current status of the different paths.

Fang Yuan’s original plan was to reverse refine the Gu recipe of star shoot Gu and starlight firefly Gu, one was to escape from his reliance on Star Lord Wan Xiang, but also to have a method to obtain even more starlight firefly Gu for his use of stargates.

In addition, raising the effects of a bit of star Gu, brilliance of two stars Gu, three stars in the sky Gu... this series of Gu worms would help in developing a whole new star path killer move that would suit Fang Yuan’s needs, and raise his battle strength.

But after making an attempt, Fang Yuan knew that this was not feasible yet.

Even if he had the light of wisdom and had unlimited inspiration, his refinement path realm was master level, his star path realm was merely ordinary, it was hard for his plans to work.

“It seems that to raise my battle strength, I have to focus on my strengths and make use of my advantages.” Fang Yuan assessed himself, he was a blood path grandmaster, strength path grandmaster, flying quasi-grandmaster, refinement path master, enslavement path master, as well as transformation path master.

He first eliminated blood path.

Blood path Gu Immortals were heavily targeted by everyone, because blood path cultivation focused on harming others to raise one’s own battle strength. The righteous and demonic paths were both unwilling to face such a huge threat like blood path Gu Immortals.

Only during the five regions chaotic war, when the law and order of the regions go into chaos, would blood path emerge again.

Although Fang Yuan had Blood Deity’s remnant recipe, he did not want to deduce the completed recipe yet, he did not have the financial capability to refine blood deity Immortal Gu now.

Furthermore, the blood path inheritance in his previous life had yet to mature, he could not retrieve it yet.

Next, Fang Yuan eliminated strength path.

Strength path had once flourished in the past, at present, it had already heavily declined. Even though there were incredible geniuses like Chu Du, it was unlikely for the past glory of strength path to reappear.

The might and prosperity of a path not only relied on genius Gu Masters and Gu Immortals, they also relied on resources.

In the present era, the resources for strength path had mostly gone extinct, or were extremely rare.

Strength path had little prospects, many Gu recipes were lost, and the future was grim. Even though Fang Yuan was a strength path immortal zombie, he did not want to walk on this path.

The reason he chose strength path was because the conditions back then were very convenient, he would use it as a springboard, to change to another path in the future. He later became a strength path immortal zombie because he was left with no choice in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Unless Fang Yuan was like Hei Lou Lan with multiple strength path Immortal Gu, who can raise her battle strength using these Immortal Gu. But such a situation was not feasible for Fang Yuan.

Blood path and strength path were dead ends, flying quasi-grandmaster was merely part of his battle proficiency, refinement path did not excel in fighting, Fang Yuan’s only options were enslavement path and transformation path.

But enslavement path needed beast groups.

At the level of Gu Immortals, ordinary beasts were of little use. Their core beast groups would be elevated from mutated beast kings and beast emperors to desolate beasts.

Fang Yuan used the light of wisdom and thought about it for a long time.

Three days later, he finally made a breakthrough in transformation path.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 712: Lion Fur Armor, Transplanting Bat Wings

Time flew by quickly and in a blink of an eye, ten days had passed in Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fang Yuan was flying in the air.

“Hair armor.” His thoughts shifted, his hair grew wildly and instantly condensed into a malevolent looking pitch black armor full of spikes.

“Icy drill stardust.” Fang Yuan pinched at the air with his five fingers, a ball of starlight formed on his hand.

The starlight constantly let out crackling sounds, looking closely inside, one could discover there were countless small specks of icy drills colliding and exploding non-stop.

Fang Yuan slowly pressed this ball of starlight into the hair armor on his chest.

The hair armor lasted for a few breaths before it began to be damaged. A dozen or so breaths later, the surroundings of the damaged area were dyed azure blue, and the blue frost was spreading everywhere.

Twenty breaths later, the hair armor completely shattered, and there was a small hole on Fang Yuan’s chest.

This was completely within Fang Yuan’s expectations.

He had merged Du Min Jun’s inheritance into icy drill stardust, this would sell for four immortal essence stones in treasure yellow heaven. And the defensive killer move hair armor would only be worth around two and a half immortal essence stones.

The starlight on his palm dissipated, Fang Yuan willed and activated hair armor again.

However, the hair armor this time was different, it was a new and improved version, having gone through many days of experimentation.

The hair armor transformed quickly. The useless malevolent spikes were removed. The black iron-like luster before also turned into bronze.

The primary cause for this was Fang Yuan perfectly merging large numbers of golden lion fur Gu into the original foundation of hair armor.

Golden lion fur Gu was a rank five mortal Gu that could let Gu Masters grow golden lion fur, increasing their defense and having an even higher increase in resistance to metal path attacks.

Several breaths later, the original black iron spiked hair armor was gone, and replacing it was a smooth bronze armor which was twice the thickness of the black armor. The helmet had turned into the shape of a lion roaring with an open mouth, revealing Fang Yuan’s face inside. The defensive ability had also increased by one hundred and fifty percent. If it was defending against metal path attacks, the defensive power would increase by a whole two hundred percent.

Fang Yuan made a lump of starlight again and pressed it towards his chest area like before.

The stardust drilled endlessly into the hair armor, but after a whole dozen or so breaths had gone by, the starlight was completely used up and merely a crack appear on the hair armor.

“Let’s call it lion fur armor.” Fang Yuan mumbled to himself before raising his eight arms and letting out eight lumps of starlight.

The starlight flew to the sky and gathered into a large lump.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, charging into the large lump of stardust with his lion fur armor.

The icy drill stardust constantly produced tiny explosions which impacted against Fang Yuan’s lion fur armor from all directions.

Fang Yuan constantly maintained the lion fur armor killer move, rapidly restoring any cracks that appeared. He maintained it till the starlight lump dissipated, and then flew down. There was not even a trace of a crack on the lion fur armor.

“Such recovery ability is about twice that of before. If placed in treasure yellow heaven, this could sell for four and a half immortal essence stones.”

Lion fur armor was one of the accomplishments Fang Yuan had made these days.

He returned to Dang Hun palace where Hu Immortal land spirit was maintaining connecting heaven Gu, paying attention to treasure yellow heaven.

“How is the situation?” Fang Yuan asked.

“Master, the other party is still insisting on four immortal essence stones and shows no signs of lowering it.” Little Hu Immortal land spirit replied.

Fang Yuan wanted to buy a pair of bat desolate beast wings.

The other party had killed this bat desolate beast and was putting its corpse on sale in treasure yellow heaven. Fang Yuan had asked for price before, but the other party had asked for four immortal essence stones just for this pair of bat wings, and their attitude was firm, not willing to lower it.

Four immortal essence stones was no doubt an expensive price. Back then, when Fang Yuan bought a six headed snake’s skeleton, he had only had to pay three immortal essence stones.

According to the normal price, it should be two and a half at most.

Fang Yuan personally activated divine sense Gu and used the identity of Eight Arm Immortal to get in touch with the seller: “I am willing to pay three immortal essence stones to buy this pair of bat wings.”

The seller’s will, however, refused: “I’m not selling, not selling, the lowest is at least four immortal essence stones.”

Fang Yuan snorted: “Sir is too greedy, look at how damaged these desolate beast wings are, they would normally only sell for two and a half immortal essence stones. If not for me wanting to research some new Gu and coincidentally happening to need this material, I would not have even asked.”

The seller’s will’s tone softened and it sighed: “I am also helpless, my losses were too severe when hunting this desolate beast. This desolate beast’s blood had already flowed out and my main body also suffered heavy injuries, if I don’t sell it for this price, my finances will collapse and it might even lead to a delay in healing my injuries.”

“Whether you live or die, is that my problem? Also, why would I believe your one-sided words? Three immortal essence stones, are you selling or not?” Fang Yuan said coldly.

“Not selling.”

Fang Yuan immediately withdrew his divine sense.

After a while, he commanded Little Hu Immortal land spirit to inquire about the price and show a stance of being impatient: “How about this, I will take out three immortal essence stones to buy your bat wings. Say it, are you selling or not?”

The seller’s will hesitated this time, but still refused in the end: “This pair of wings is the most valuable part of the whole desolate beast corpse. If sir only wants to buy the wings, it won’t be easy for me to sell the remaining parts. If you are sincerely thinking of buying, how about you take out five immortal essence stones to buy this whole desolate beast corpse?”

Little Hu Immortal talked with Fang Yuan, and replied: “I only need the wings, what will I do with the other parts? I have wasted enough time already. Three immortal essence stones are already a lot, alright I shall give you three and a half immortal essence stones, this is my final bottom line. If you are still not selling, then forget it.”

The seller’s will was clearly shaken and it replied with hesitation: “This... let me consider it.”

The land spirit hastened him: “My patience has limits, I will give you five breaths of time. Any longer and I might just take back my offer.”

Four breaths passed before the seller’s will heaved a long sigh. He also knew that although there was a high demand for desolate beast corpses but his price was indeed high. Gu Immortals were shrewd people, there were few that would spend money casually.

“Alright, I will sell...” The seller’s will was just replying when a divine sense interrupted him, “Slow down, I want this bat desolate beast’s corpse, I will give you five immortal essence stones.”

“Eh? Sir is Immortal Monkey King!” This change naturally made the seller very happy.

If he sold the bat wings to Fang Yuan for three and a half immortal essence stones, then trying to sell the remaining parts of the corpse which were extremely damaged for one immortal essence stone would be demanding a very high price.

Now, Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei cut in and was willing to pay five immortal essence stones, the seller was naturally willing to accept this transaction.

“Wait a second, we have already made the deal. Immortal Monkey King, what do you think you are doing by suddenly butting in?” Hu Immortal land spirit refused to accept this.

“What deal?” Shi Lei scoffed, “Who are you kidding? Does business in treasure yellow heaven pay attention to first come, first serve? The item will naturally go to whoever pays the higher price. Since the transaction has not been carried out, there is no deal.”

After saying that, Shi Lei then said to the seller: “Hey, this deal will earn you a great profit, why are you not quickly finishing the transaction?”

The seller’s will was just about to nod when Hu Immortal land spirit obtained Fang Yuan’s instructions and immediately prevented it: “Slow down, I will pay five and a half immortal essence stones.”

“Hmph, only adding half an immortal essence stone, aren’t you too petty? I will pay seven immortal essence stones.” Shi Lei said with a rich and overbearing attitude.

Hu Immortal land spirit’s tone immediately became gloomy: “Since it is so, I will pay eight immortal essence stones.”

“Eight?” Shi Lei laughed, “Then I will pay nine!”

“Nine and a half.” Hu Immortal land spirit immediately quoted.

That seller’s will had never expected such a change and was already overjoyed.

Shi Lei was dazed before laughing loudly: “Alright, Hu Immortal, as expected of someone doing the business of guts Gu, you have so much money. I don’t want to contend with a junior. Just a mere damaged desolate beast corpse, I hope you can be happy when you take it.”

The divine sense left directly after laughing heartily.

“Hu... Lord Hu Immortal... you meant what you said, right?” The seller’s will wore a fawning smile as he said while stammering. From the looks of it, he had not lied before, he was indeed a poor rank six Gu Immortal.

“Hmph, business needs to be done with sincerity, would my words be a lie?” Hu Immortal land spirit coldly snorted.

The two finished the transaction.

The seller received nine and a half immortal essence stones while Fang Yuan obtained a bat desolate beast’s corpse.

After this transaction, Fang Yuan checked his wealth again; he had one hundred and seventy-two immortal essence stones and seventy-seven beads of green grape immortal essence.

So far, Fang Yuan had already sold the sixth batch of guts Gu. It was an average of one batch per month and every batch gave him forty-eight immortal essence stones in profit.

Over these six months, Fang Yuan had completed one transaction of an Immortal Gu recipe with Lang Ya land spirit, earning over twenty immortal essence stones.

But he had fed the eight desolate beasts earlier and converted large numbers of immortal essence stones into green grape immortal essence. He also consumed green grape immortal essence to reverse refine star path Gu recipes, which ended in failure, and finally, to make a breakthrough using transformation path, he improved on his killer moves.

He had not only improved his defensive killer move hair armor to lion fur armor, but also upgraded light illusion bat wings by a great degree.

But to complete the new light illusion bat wings, he needed to transplant a pair of real bat wings onto his immortal zombie body.

Because of this, Fang Yuan did not hesitate on spending a large amount to buy this bat desolate beast’s corpse.

“Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei, making me spend three times the price to buy this bat corpse. I will remember this.”

Shi Lei was a higher up of Combat Immortal Sect, which was one of the ten great ancient sects. During his previous life’s five regions chaotic war, after Feng Jiu Ge died, he replaced Feng Jiu Ge as the most powerful rank seven in Central Continent. He was an earth path expert but cultivated transformation path as well, having secretly obtained several inheritances of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable.

Fang Yuan thought of raising the price of guts Gu to Combat Immortal Sect, but he dispelled this thought after pondering about it.

For the next half a month, he concentrated on handling the bat desolate beast’s corpse.

He carefully cut apart the bat wings and did more than a dozen sessions of meticulous treatment and maintenance.

He then used fire path and strength path Gu worms to constantly temper the bat wings; as a result, the extremely wide bat wings gradually became more condensed and small.

Finally, after Fang Yuan endured intense pain, he finally succeeded in transplanting the bat wings onto his back.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 713: True Solid Bat Wings

A wind wolf had its head lowered, its four limbs were stealthily moving as it traveled in the lush grassland.

The prey that it was targeting was a pink flower rabbit.

The rabbit’s two ears were standing on end, listening to every movement nearby. The rabbit’s head was buried in the flowers, eating pollen as food.

As a cool breeze blew on this mountain, flowers blossomed in this lush greenery, giving off waves of fragrant smells.

The wind wolf slowly got closer, but the pink flower rabbit had no idea.

Suddenly, a black shadow flew past the ground rapidly.

The pink flower rabbit was shocked, it raised its head. Even though Hu Immortal blessed land had no eagle groups, it sprinted away in fear, managing to survive this trial, causing the wind wolf to fail in its hunt.

Fang Yuan, who was flying in the air, observed all of this.

He could not help but start to think: “Right now, I have ample funds, and my own blessed land has turned into a dead aperture, I might as well manage this Hu Immortal blessed land first. After the journey in Northern Plains, the beast groups in Hu Immortal blessed land had fallen in numbers, becoming very sparse. Right now, I am already selling guts Gu, the rockmen transaction is simply unnecessary.”

“Hu Immortal was an enslavement path Gu Immortal, Hu Immortal blessed land has a grassland landscape, it is most suited for raising fox groups. If I raise the vitality of Hu Immortal blessed land and make it flourish with life, when I revive, I would gain much greater benefits if I fuse this Hu Immortal blessed land.”

Thinking so, Fang Yuan inspected the bat wings on his back.

This was the third time he had tested out flying with these newly transplanted bat wings on his back.

The processed bat wings, if spread fully, were not even half of Fang Yuan’s arm length. They were yellow-brown in color, and were quite petite, they seemed much less impressive than the prior light illusion bat wings.

But Fang Yuan did not care about appearance, he only looked at its value and usefulness.

The new light illusion bat wings gave Fang Yuan almost double the speed boost, at the same time, the duration of his flight had greatly increased. After all, the bat wings back then were only a phantom, the bat wings now were real physical wings.

The flesh, skin, fur, bones, and blood were all condensed and refined. There were also many Gu worms inside these wings.

The Gu worms residing in the bat wings were used to activate the newly modified movement killer move, light illusion bat wings.

“No, right now, using the name light illusion bat wings for this killer move is no longer appropriate. I should call it true solid bat wings.” Fang Yuan created a new name for this newly modified killer move.

He was more pleased with this movement killer move true solid bat wings than the lion fur armor.

If this movement killer move was sold in treasure yellow heaven, it could be sold for six immortal essence stones or more!

That was because true solid bat wings had much potential left, one pair of bat wings was not its limit. It could transplant three pairs of bat wings at most. The origin of these wings should be at least desolate beasts. Of course, ancient desolate beasts and immemorial desolate beasts would be even better.

If Fang Yuan could transplant three pairs of desolate beast bat wings on his back, his speed would be at least three times faster.

Light illusion bat wings was the most widely spread movement killer move during the five regions chaotic war due to its price to value ratio. On that basis, raising one’s speed by three times as much would be even more impressive.

Even though it could not compare to movement Immortal Gu like Worldly Wave Trace, or Rising Azure Cloud, if Fang Yuan met Plump Lady again, her light sand escape would not allow her to run from Fang Yuan’s assault.

As the winds blew intensely behind him, Fang Yuan flapped with his wings and flew up into the sky.

After flying to a high altitude in midair, Fang Yuan closed his eyes and felt the sensation of the air currents blowing on the bat wings silently.

His immortal zombie body could not feel any pain, his sense of touch was nearly non-existent. This was a strength and also a weakness.

When Fang Yuan transplanted the bat wings, he spent a lot of effort in order to retain the sense of pain and touch that the bat wings had. Only by doing this could he have a clearer and realistic feeling of the air when he flaps his wings, to feel the strength of the air currents, and to sense the state of the wings.

Losing the sense of pain numbed him and made Fang Yuan fight more fiercely.

But flying was another matter.

Flying required meticulous control, especially when Fang Yuan’s flying attainment had reached quasi-grandmaster level. Only by regaining his sense of pain and touch could he truly display his actual flying attainment.

If it was a pair of zombified wings, the feeling would be very vague, especially in intense battles, when he needed to rely on the wings, sensitive nerves would allow him to react and adapt more easily, instead of being rough and careless.

“With a boost in movement strength, I will be able to advance or retreat at will. After I get three pairs of wings, true solid bat wings will be an exceptional mortal killer move, it would only lose out to worldly wave trace Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan was a strength path Gu Immortal, he obtained a strength path immortal body. Worldly wave trace Immortal Gu had the law of water path, when Fang Yuan uses this Immortal Gu, water path and strength path do not work together perfectly, there was a problem of them restricting each other.

If a fire path Gu Immortal uses worldly wave trace Immortal Gu, his speed would be even slower than Fang Yuan.

The most suitable would be water path Gu Immortals, when they use this same Gu, by expending the same amount of immortal essence, they would achieve greater speed.

Most importantly, true solid bat wings was a mortal killer move, compared to using worldly wave trace Immortal Gu, it had a much greater value to cost ratio.

This was the intelligence of humans.

Using the combination of many mortal Gu, they could achieve an effect that was only somewhat below Immortal Gu.

Using Gu, nurturing Gu, and refining Gu, they were extremely profound and deep.

“The corpse of a desolate beast is rarely seen, even if Gu Immortals sell new beast corpses in treasure yellow heaven, they might not be bats. To collect two more pairs of bat wings, I would need to actively seek them. It seems that now, I should take some risks and go to Starry Sky grotto-heaven.”

The immortal aperture of a rank eight or nine was known as a grotto-heaven.

The owner of Starry Sky grotto-heaven was a rank eight Gu Immortal from one thousand and seven hundred years ago, Seven Star Child.

Seven Star Child had died long ago, during Fang Yuan’s previous life, one day, Starry Sky grotto-heaven fell from high up in Central Continent, it broke up into tens of immortal aperture fragments, and was scattered all over Central Continent.

Fang Yuan had already become a Gu Immortal, he could not enter these grotto-heaven fragments.

These fragment worlds of the grotto-heaven were already very fragile, Fang Yuan’s cultivation level was too high and if he tried entering one, it would destroy the extremely unstable grotto-heaven fragment.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan had a bunch of elite subordinates in Blood Wing Demon Sect.

After competing with several Gu Immortals, they split a relatively large grotto-heaven fragment world between themselves.

Fang Yuan and the other immortals sent their respective Gu Master disciples or subordinates towards the grotto-heaven fragment world to explore and find resources.

Fang Yuan left a will in each of his capable subordinates’ minds to direct and supervise them.

Thus, he was rather familiar with the scenery inside Starry Sky grotto-heaven.

“In this life, currently, Starry Sky grotto-heaven is still high up in the sky, it had not fallen or broken into pieces. The scenery of Starry Sky grotto-heaven in my mind will allow me to use Fixed Immortal Travel to enter the grotto-heaven in advance, to take the resources inside. I remember that there were a number of desolate beasts inside the grotto-heaven, there were even ancient desolate beasts and among them, there was a star demon bat desolate beast. My goal this time is to go and kill the star demon bat, and obtain the wings. At the same time, I can check the situation and see if I can capture a desolate beast and bring it to Lang Ya land spirit.” Fang Yuan planned in his mind.

There were still many places in Fang Yuan’s memories that were similar to this Starry Sky grotto-heaven.

But for some, now was not the time yet, and others were simply too dangerous.

Starry Sky grotto-heaven was the immortal aperture of a rank eight Gu Immortal, it had not reached the point of breaking down like in Fang Yuan’s previous life, it was still very strong now.

“In my previous life, I only sent people to indirectly explore the grotto-heaven fragment world. By that time, the heavenly spirit was no longer around. But in this life, if I go now, the heavenly spirit is sure to be alive, it can summon the entire defensive power of Starry Sky grotto-heaven. If I had not become an immortal zombie, I would not have the qualifications to explore it.”

Fang Yuan did not know too much about the current Starry Sky grotto-heaven, he could only deduce it based on his previous life’s experiences.

In his previous life, he was not the person who benefited the most from this opportunity. It was a rank eight immortal zombie who rose up as a result of this. The ten great ancient sects which had been extremely forceful all along suffered a loss under the hands of this immortal zombie.

Next, this immortal zombie entered the Central Continent Zombie Alliance branch, and easily defeated the branch leader, becoming the one in charge and calling himself Star Constellation immortal zombie.

He had been the cause of many incidents, during the five regions chaotic war, he was an overlord that could hold his own in his territory.

As for the real Starry Sky heavenly spirit, Fang Yuan did not see it, and did not know the conditions for the grotto-heaven to belong to a new owner.

A few days later, Hei Lou Lan brought strength qi Immortal Gu and entered Hu Immortal blessed land using a stargate. Next, in Fang Yuan’s stone nest, she and Fang Yuan, together with the thousands of hairy men, refined the eighth batch of airsac Gu.

After this, Hei Lou Lan did not leave immediately, instead she stayed in Hu Immortal blessed land and listened to Fang Yuan’s information on Starry Sky grotto-heaven.

With Fang Yuan’s current strength, it was rather dangerous to enter Starry Sky grotto-heaven.

Thus, Fang Yuan invited his allies.

But Fairy Li Shan was cooperating with Qin Bai Sheng right now, her mountain pledge Gu was having great use at this time, it allowed Qin Bai Sheng to gather his forces and eliminate the enmity of his foes, he was preparing for a Northern Plains auction that was of unprecedented scale.

Qin Bai Sheng’s compensation to Fairy Li Shan was an Immortal Gu.

With such great benefits, Fairy Li Shan obviously chose Qin Bai Sheng and gave up on working with Fang Yuan this time.

As for Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he was with Shark Demon now, entering the sea and exploring Yu Lu blessed land.

Even thought Tai Bai Yun Sheng wanted to help his ‘junior brother’ Fang Yuan, he was afflicted with death sentence awaits Immortal Gu, and could not split himself into two, there was nothing he could do to help.

Only Hei Lou Lan was free now, she agreed with Fang Yuan to explore Starry Sky grotto-heaven together.

According to the Snowy Mountain Alliance, since the two were exploring and taking the risk together, any losses to Hei Lou Lan would not require Fang Yuan to compensate her twice the amount. At the same time, their gains would be split into Fang Yuan getting sixty percent, and Hei Lou Lan getting forty percent.

After resting for a few days in Hu Immortal blessed land, Hei Lou Lan entered Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan tried to activate Fixed Immortal Travel with the image in his mind.

He tried for three or four times, but he did not succeed.

Fang Yuan was not surprised.

The image in his memories, although it was a portion of Starry Sky grotto-heaven, it had already fallen at that time, and the scenery had changed drastically.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan had many images in his memories.

After trying for a dozen times, after he spent more than ten beads of green grape immortal essence, he finally succeeded.

With a flash of jade green light, at the next moment, he appeared inside Starry Sky grotto-heaven.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 714: Fighting Star Desolate Hound

They appeared before a thick forest which was verdant and lush, the foot of the mountain was serene and fog filled the place.

Fang Yuan had already activated lion fur armor to protect him tightly. He used all his concentration to quickly scan his surroundings and discovered that he had appeared on the waist of a mountain.

Surrounding him were tall ancient trees, and even his six meter tall immortal zombie body could not reach one-third of these giant trees.

Raising his head, he gazed at the sky through the opening between the lush leaves.

The sky was a tranquil green color. There were six giant shadows of stars in the green sky, they appeared to be six round moons in the color of red, brown, yellow, blue, purple and white.

Fang Yuan opened his immortal aperture, and Hei Lou Lan shortly appeared outside, stepping on the mountain stones.

Her eyes flashed with bright light as she looked around: “This is inside Starry Sky grotto-heaven?”

“It is indeed, let’s go. The desolate beast that I want to kill, star demon bat, should be nearby.”

The two did not know the exact location of the star demon bat, thus they casually chose a direction and moved along it.

While moving forward, the two used investigative methods to scan around them all the time. After advancing to a Gu Immortal, they had unlimited primeval essence and could use mortal Gu freely.

The two had also made ample preparations before they had come here.

Although they did not have investigative killer moves, they had prepared large numbers of investigative Gu worms of all paths to not only enhance their vision and hearing, but also to sense the slight tremors when they walked, and to smell any odd odors when they breathed. At the same time, they spread out their divine senses to cover their surroundings, attaining completion in all aspects of scouting.

Time flowed little by little, but this forest did not seem to have any end.

“Five minutes have already gone by, there seems to be something wrong!” Hei Lou Lan stopped and solemnly asked Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan nodded, saying in a deep voice: “Indeed, we have already been in Starry Sky grotto-heaven for some time now but haven’t actually encountered a single wild beast. There are only trees or fog. Whether we go up the mountain or down, or move in any direction, things all look the same.”

Hei Lou Lan looked up: “Let’s fly.”

The two carefully flew up.

The green sky was completely empty; if the two flew high up, they would be very conspicuous and it would be extremely easy for them to be discovered by beast groups and get surrounded.

Thus for safety purposes, Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan had chosen to move along the ground.

Right now, the two took the risk to attempt flying, but the result was disappointing.

The higher they flew up, the thicker the fog became. Finally, the fog became so thick that they could not even see their own fingers.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan’s investigative methods were greatly restricted in this fog.

The two discussed and chose to be cautious, not willing to continue taking this risk, they descended to the ground.

“Has the Starry Sky heavenly spirit already begun to target us?” Hei Lou Lan guessed.

“The situation here, if it is not a unique law of the grotto-heaven, then it is an illusion, quietly disturbing our sense of direction and obstructing our true senses. Unfortunately, I don’t have any investigative killer moves.” Fang Yuan replied.

“Don’t you have wisdom path methods?” Wisdom path is also specialized in resolving these kinds of circumstances.” Hei Lou Lan asked while frowning.

Fang Yuan shook his head: “I indeed have some wisdom path methods, but they are rather special, they cannot deduce directions. How about you, do you have any investigative killer moves?”

Hei Lou Lan snorted lightly and raised her two delicate fists: “I don’t have any investigative killer moves, but I do have offensive killer moves! Self Strength!”

She suddenly punched out with her two fists, sending out majestic fist qi.

The fist qi surged all around and rapidly condensed into strength path phantoms.

These strength path phantoms had fat bodies like bears with triangular eyes and jagged teeth. It was the male shape Hei Lou Lan had disguised as before.

Fang Yuan took a few steps back to give Hei Lou Lan sufficient space.

These strength path phantoms pounced at Hei Lou Lan’s main body. The phantoms merged together and soon covered Hei Lou Lan, forming a giant strength path phantom.

This killer move had astonishing might, Hei Lou Lan had used it before in Northern Plains to destroy the flying bear phantom.

She again raised a fist.

The giant fist ruthlessly smashed at an ancient tree on the side.

The thick and sturdy ancient tree immediately broke into two; the lower half remained at the ground but was shaking intensely, the soil around it splattered to reveal the tree roots. The upper half was directly sent flying, cutting through the wind as it collided with another ancient tree, smashing two to three branches.

Boom boom boom...

Hei Lou Lan punched and kicked, the heavy punches and kicks shook the earth, stones flew, trees toppled down and the fog dispersed.

Fang Yuan flew into the sky, his sight was now much more clear.

He saw this forest only had the range of a hundred li, he and Hei Lou Lan had been moving in a circle.

Outside of this forest, he saw a scene abundant in nature and life; the wild beasts roaming around, the cries of birds and insects, the gurgling of streams and wild flowers swaying with the wind.

“It seems this forest itself was special, it should be an extinct tree species. Your information source is somewhat dubious, our entry was actually in this forest.” The giant strength path phantom transmitted its divine sense to communicate with Fang Yuan.

Even Fang Yuan, with his plentiful experiences from his previous life and broad vision, did not recognize the origin of this kind of tree.

He gave a bitter laugh and changed the topic: “After the trees became sparse, this forest no longer has the bewilderment effect. We should take some and plant it in our own blessed lands, maybe we can make some profits.”

There was absolutely no issue with the information source.

Because he himself was the information supplier.

In his previous life, Starry Sky grotto-heaven had shattered into many parts which then fell towards Central Continent. When Fang Yuan had sent people to explore the grotto-heaven’s fragment world, this forest was already in a different shape, much of it had been damaged and thus it did not show any special effects.

This was an warning to Fang Yuan — although he had previous life’s memories, however he had come early to Starry Sky grotto-heaven in this life, the situation was different, and he could not blindly rely on these memories.

The giant strength path phantom gazed at these ancient trees: “Even if you had not said it, I intended to do it.”

When the two had just taken four to five trees, a dog shaped desolate beast charged down from the top of the mountain.

The dog shaped desolate beast growled, not concealing the fierce glare of its eyes as it looked directly at Hei Lou Lan. Hei Lou Lan’s strength path phantom giant was not concealed by the trees and was exceptionally conspicuous.

Fang Yuan looked at the source of the growl and saw the desolate beast. Its body was as large as a small hill, and glossy azure fur covered it. Whether it was its head, stomach, back, tail or its limbs, they were all covered with star shaped stripes. These stripes were emitting faint blue radiance.

Fang Yuan recognized this beast with just one glance, immediately reminding Hei Lou Lan: “This is a star desolate hound, it should be this mountain’s overlord. Let’s check how powerful the desolate beasts in Starry Sky grotto-heaven are. If it is weak, don’t kill it, it is best if we capture it alive, I have other uses for it!”

Hei Lou Lan frowned.

She had an extreme physique strength path immortal body and possessed several great strength path Immortal Gu; it was not difficult for her to kill a desolate beast, but she still had some difference between the level of capturing a desolate beast alive.

However, Fang Yuan continued: “You take the lead, I will support. Decide it according to the situation, if we can really capture it alive, I will use immortal essence stones to pay you.”

“Alright, then let’s do it like that.” Hei Lou Lan was not an irresolute person, with a loud shout, the giant strength path phantom took large and loud steps as it charged towards the star desolate hound.

The star desolate hound fiercely charged down from above and pounced at the giant strength path phantom.

Hei Lou Lan was not to be outdone and immediately punched and kicked, clashing with the star desolate hound. The two huge figures rolled down from partway up the mountain towards the foot, like a rolling gourd.

It was like a giant compactor had steamrolled through a path, as the trees were toppled, protruding boulders were smashed and beast and birds who had not time to escape were crushed into paste.

Fang Yuan flapped his bat wings and flew down.

Eight lumps of starlight condensed separately on his eight monstrous claws, but they did not crash down yet.

Hei Lou Lan’s giant strength path phantom was rolling and turning around at times as it clashed with the star desolate hound, like a rolling wheel. The fight was fierce but the situation was still not decided, the attacks moved so quickly that even an old demon like Fang Yuan was not able to find an opportunity to interfere.

Rumble...

Dust flew up, the giant phantom and the desolate beast rolled down to the foot of the mountain before finally stopping.

The star desolate hound fiercely pounced on the giant phantom. It raised its head and opened its mouth, revealing the snow-white canines that were as sharp as swords and long as halberds, and bit down.

Fang Yuan saw the chance, his eight arms moved and the eight lumps of starlight that had accumulated enough energy slammed down.

Bam bam bam...

A series of explosions resounded, the star desolate hound furiously barked, its attack was interrupted.

The giant hound head shook in every direction, flinging off the starlight lumps.

However, Hei Lou Lan obtained the critical opportunity due to this, letting out a fierce attack.

The giant strength path phantom bent its knee and fiercely struck a crucial part between the star desolate hound’s rear legs.

Howl——!

The star desolate hound immediately let out an extremely painful cry, its giant body fiercely jumped like it had been electrocuted and bounced around in the lush forest.

Fang Yuan immediately fluttered over, not giving the star desolate hound any time to recover.

He flapped his wings in the sky, moving nimbly like a fly as he threw down lumps of starlight right at the star desolate hound’s vital areas like eyes, mouth and anus.

The star desolate hound bounced around everywhere but it was gradually not able to hide from Fang Yuan’s crafty attacks and started to whine in pain.

The star desolate hound had defensive wild Gu on it.

But facing a killer move like icy drill stardust, a defense from ordinary wild Gu would not work, instead the defensive Gu would rapidly die when facing icy drill stardust.

Hei Lou Lan controlled her giant strength path phantom and stood up.

“As expected of a desolate beast.” Hei Lou Lan sighed in her heart.

The strength path killer move that had never failed her before was actually not able to resist the tyrannical strength of the star desolate hound. Especially this giant strength path phantom, which was the pinnacle transformation of her killer move, and yet was actually not a match against the star desolate hound in terms of strength.

“Since that is the case, then let me use self strength Immortal Gu.” Hei Lou Lan gave a sinister smile and was about to attack.

Suddenly, familiar barks came down from the nearby two mountain peaks.

Shortly afterwards, two female star desolate hounds charged into Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan’s sight.

Fang Yuan’s movement slowed down, Hei Lou Lan’s pupils shrunk, and as if they had identical thoughts in mind, they transmitted the same message to each other: “Run!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 715: Diamond Soil

Three star desolate hounds chased, as Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan retreated along the way.

It was not that they could not defeat the three desolate beasts, but they would have to engage in fierce combat and expend a lot of effort to defeat them.

As Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were inside an unfamiliar environment like Starry Sky grotto-heaven, they would not want to fight with their full strength randomly, especially not against these desolate beasts which they had met by chance, only a fool would do such a thing.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were experienced schemers, this trip of exploring Starry Sky grotto-heaven needed to be handled with caution, they had to preserve their battle strength to deal with unexpected situations.

Especially when the heavenly spirit of Starry Sky grotto-heaven had not shown itself yet.

The heavenly spirit controlled all aspects of the grotto-heaven, when Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan entered, they would have been detected already.

Fang Yuan led the way, flapping his wings continuously, he was extremely fast. He did not dare to fly at high altitude, he only flew near the ground.

Hei Lou Lan was much slower than Fang Yuan, she was behind him as she deeply looked at his wings, thinking and comparing in her heart: “Fang Yuan’s current speed is not outstanding, I can reach it. But he can move and maneuver so agilely and precisely, he can swerve around the branches of the trees so freely.”

After nearly ten li of flying, the three star desolate hounds behind them stopped and gave up on Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan, no longer chasing them.

The two stopped at a tall tree and took a small rest to recover.

Fang Yuan stood on the crown of the tree, trying to decipher their direction, the surrounding mountains were not far from each other, yet they were independent and distinct.

Some mountain peaks had green pines growing on them. Some had only shrubs. Some had no trees and only had weeds and wild flowers — all these were man made arrangements, nature would not have made things so organized.

Fang Yuan could tell.

The owner of Starry Sky grotto-heaven, Seven Star Child, had categorized these mountain peaks into independent areas to nurture different vegetation. This way, he could raise the productivity of specialized products.

“It seems that the owner of this grotto-heaven had spent quite some effort on managing it.” Hei Lou Lan walked over, standing beside Fang Yuan and observing the area.

Fang Yuan instead frowned.

This landscape was simply too different from the one in his memories. Did that mean that hundreds of years later, there would be a huge change to Starry Sky grotto-heaven’s terrain, causing it to be completely different after it broke apart and collapsed?

This way, Fang Yuan’s previous life’s memories could not give him any precious help.

Hei Lou Lan directed her gaze towards the small bat wings on Fang Yuan’s back, asking with great interest: “Your killer move is not bad, where did you buy it?”

According to the Snowy Mountain Alliance, Fang Yuan could not lie to Hei Lou Lan, but he could choose to not talk about it.

However, true solid bat wings was an ordinary technique of Fang Yuan’s, he did not need to hide it.

He answered plainly: “This killer move is based on an improvement of my previous killer move, suited for my immortal zombie body. If you want to use it, you will need to transplant a pair of bat wings onto your back.”

Hei Lou Lan heard this and frowned, though not because she was concerned over destroying her image, she pursued strength: “The body of a desolate beast is also an immortal body. Just like the bodies of us Gu Immortals, their bodies contain dao marks and are closer to certain laws. Your pair of bat wings should not have the dao marks of strength path, they are closer to wind path. Transplanting them casually like this, are you not afraid that there would be a conflict between strength path and wind path, resulting in your strength path killer moves weakening?”

Fang Yuan chuckled: “You know about how Reckless Savage Demon Venerable can transform into all sorts of fierce beasts, right?”

“Of course. Reckless Savage Demon Venerable created transformation path, he was the progenitor of transformation path.” Hei Lou Lan answered.

“The essence of transformation path is to transform one’s own body into a fierce beast or plant, and obtain their strength and abilities at the same time. A transformation path Gu Master can become a wind path bird, fire path tiger, or water path fish, using just one path to project countless paths. Why do their dao marks not interfere with one another?” Fang Yuan asked.

Transformation path Gu Masters who solely transform their bodies had not truly ventured into transformation path.

A truly successful transformation was not only changing one’s appearance, but also gaining the beast’s respective dao marks.

Gu Immortals who become desolate beasts not only have the strength, defense, and speed of the desolate beast itself, they can even amplify the effect of Gu worms in their respective paths.

“That is because, every time they transform, they will turn into a single fierce beast, they would only have one type of dao mark on their bodies, it is unlike you who has two types of dao marks mixing together, like a Gu Master trying to cultivate two paths. Furthermore, after they transform, they will use their relevant Gu worms to cleanse their bodies, removing all of their current dao marks, before they can transform into a fierce beast which has another dao mark.” Hei Lou Lan said.

Fang Yuan laughed arrogantly: “No, that is because they are not good enough yet, their methods are lacking. Reckless Savage Demon Venerable was not like this, he ate immemorial desolate beasts and formed desolate beast totems on his body, encompassing countless dao marks in his body, allowing him to transform at will. When you were undergoing your tribulation, I obtained the true meaning infusions of the Demon Venerable, I have already become a transformation path master.”

Hei Lou Lan was truly shocked: “That is to say, you obtained pointers from Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, you have a method to balance different dao marks?”

Fang Yuan nodded, but shook his head soon after: “I am only at master realm, I can only balance three different dao marks. I am also limited by physical transplantation and other restrictions, true solid bat wings can only have up to three pairs of wings, that is the greatest display of my current transformation path master realm attainment.”

Hei Lou Lan heard Fang Yuan’s words and gained much interest in true solid bat wings: “Sell this movement killer move to me, I will purchase it at a high price!”

Fang Yuan shook his head, rejecting her.

He had modified this killer move after much effort, it was his unique method, how could he give it to someone else?

Unless he no longer needed it in the future, then he would consider selling the simplified version.

Hei Lou Lan was slightly disappointed that Fang Yuan rejected her, but she was not surprised. If their roles were swapped, she would have rejected him as well.

Fang Yuan did not lack immortal essence stones currently.

“I finally understand why you want to kill star demon bats now. What does your information say? A star demon bat is nearby?” Hei Lou Lan asked.

Fang Yuan nodded: “From my information, it is close by. But the terrain here is slightly different, let’s look around first.”

He had surveyed for a long time, but he could not confirm the location.

The place in his memory was a rotten swamp with poisonous air. But here, there were mountains independent of each other, how could there be a rotten swamp?

Two hours later.

Two figures were attacking a desolate beast.

This desolate beast’s body was transparent, like it was made of diamond, its figure resembled a bear, but it was as large as a mammoth, it was a diamond bear that was rarely seen in the five regions.

It was Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan fighting the diamond bear.

“Take this.” Fang Yuan flew in the air, his eight arms were moving around as they sent out lumps of starlight specks.

The diamond bear stood up, waving its paws and smashing the starlight completely.

Hei Lou Lan transformed into the strength path phantom giant again, she raised her leg and kicked at the diamond bear’s belly.

The diamond bear growled, as its diamond-like body shined, Hei Lou Lan’s giant strength path phantom’s right leg broke.

“This diamond bear’s body contains wild Gu worms that counter my strength path giant!” Hei Lou Lan was shocked, retreating immediately.

Killer moves were not invincible, they had weaknesses and could be countered.

But the diamond bear did not want to let Hei Lou Lan go, it pounced in her direction.

Fang Yuan saw this and immediately rushed over, the starlight lumps in his hands were shot out more quickly, like the pelting of raindrops.

At once, the diamond bear was unable to raise its head from the attacks.

“Here’s a big one, enjoy it.” Fang Yuan raised four of his arms up, summoning a huge icy drill stardust lump that he threw it down.

With a loud explosion, the entire diamond bear was covered by the icy drill stardust.

The diamond bear was assaulted by the stardust, it growled in pain, it had become greatly angered.

Boom!

At the next moment, it charged out of the starlight lump, flying into the sky.

“This bear could fly?” Fang Yuan was the closest to it, caught off guard, he was hit by the diamond bear’s raised paws.

Bam.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan was like a cannonball, he flew out, crashing into dozens of large trees before stopping.

His zombie blood was pouring out, with two of the arms used to block the bear paw having been cut off, and three were fractured.

Fang Yuan’s mouth twitched, accidents were bound to happen when fighting desolate beasts.

Desolate beasts were not like Gu Immortals, they did not have much intelligence, but as for which wild Gu they had in their bodies, one could not tell upon first contact.

Like earlier, the diamond bear actually dispelled Hei Lou Lan’s strength path phantom and flew into the air, causing heavy injuries to Fang Yuan.

Only after suffering some injuries did Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan learn that the diamond bear had very powerful Gu worms on it, not only were there Gu worms that countered the strength path phantom, it even had flying Gu that could raise such a heavy body into the air.

“Retreat!” Fang Yuan shouted to Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan had the intention to retreat already, she stopped her killer move and escaped with Fang Yuan.

The diamond bear did not chase after them, it picked up Fang Yuan’s two arms and placed them into its mouth, chewing.

Crack, crack...

The diamond bear’s teeth were sharp, they easily broke Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie arms. It continued to chew, turning the arms into minced meat.

The green zombie blood flowed out from the space between the diamond bear’s teeth, and an intense stench spread out.

The diamond bear swallowed the zombie meat with a weird expression, but it immediately opened its mouth and vomited the food that it had just eaten.

What a terrible taste!

The diamond bear had a constipated expression as it looked at Fang Yuan’s remaining arm with disgust, slamming it into a mountain rock before moving back to its cave that was at the mountain peak grumpily.

A moment later, Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan sneakily returned.

Fang Yuan picked up the amputated arm, after verifying it, he placed it at a wound on his body.

He used healing Gu worms, and with the recovery ability of the immortal zombie, the amputated arm quickly connected to his wound.

As for the remaining arm, it was chewed up by the diamond bear, Fang Yuan could not use it, he sighed and had to regenerate it himself.

The immortal zombie body was not a mortal body, to regrow limbs, six to eight hours were needed. This was not simply a regrowth of body parts, the relevant strength path dao marks had to be replenished.

Hei Lou Lan looked at the cave entrance at the highest point of the mountain: “In that cave, there are at least fifteen kilograms of diamond soil left.”

Diamond soil was formed from the feces of the diamond bear, it was filled with rich nutrients, and was one of the soils that could be sold for a high price in treasure yellow heaven.

Not long ago, Fang Yuan had come to this mountain peak with Hei Lou Lan. While Fang Yuan attracted the bear out of the cave, Hei Lou Lan sneaked in and took hundreds of kilograms of diamond soil, they were worth at least thirty immortal essence stones.

Fang Yuan shook his head: “Fifteen kilograms of diamond soil is not worth the risk. The first time was fine, but if we try a second time, with even more animosity, the diamond bear might not let us off. The diamond bear is sturdy and tough, we will need to pay a huge price to kill it. My goal is the star demon bat, since it is not in this direction, let’s try another direction.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 716: Star Hall

Half a day later, Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan had almost searched through this area and seen many desolate beasts, but did not come across the star demon bat.

“Your information seems to be somewhat unreliable.” Hei Lou Lan casually sat down on the ground and said while healing her wounds.

There was a long, bloody wound on her left arm which stretched from the back of her palm to her elbow.

This was the mark left behind from the encounter of Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan with a desolate beast flying sword rat.

The flying sword rat was small and extremely fast, a bit of carelessness resulted in it slashing its claws at them.

Even if Hei Lou Lan had the Great Strength True Martial Physique, having a strength path extreme immortal body, she had to struggle to heal this wound.

This was because the wound the flying sword rat caused was filled with dao marks of metal path, which were repelling the strength path dao marks of Hei Lou Lan’s immortal body, and resisting the extreme immortal body’s recovery ability.

A long while later, Hei Lou Lan was able to heal the wound and a thin layer of scab had formed on top of it.

She went up to Fang Yuan; Fang Yuan was sitting on the ground, using his iron-sharp fingernails to draw the outline of the terrain they had explored on a flat rock.

There were dozens of green mountain peaks. Most of the green peaks were the territory of a desolate beast, like the star desolate hound, flying sword rat, diamond bear and so on.

The mountain peaks with no desolate beasts had large numbers of beast groups as well as a sea of Gu worms living together.

Seven Star Child had clearly invested a great amount of effort to manage Starry Sky grotto-heaven, only then could such dense numbers of desolate beasts survive in this piece of territory.

However, the strange thing was there were no ancient desolate beasts.

Ancient desolate beasts were comparable in battle strength to a rank seven, according to common sense, there should be ancient desolate beasts in this outstandingly managed Starry Sky grotto-heaven.

This was only one of the strange aspects.

The second strange aspect was that the heavenly spirit had still not shown itself.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan had explored all around and encountered many fights, but were able to smoothly free themselves.

Strictly speaking, they were invaders, but this Starry Sky grotto-heaven was behaving as if it had no heavenly spirit to manage it, and the suppression Fang Yuan had expected did not appear.

The third strange thing was that Fang Yuan could not find the poisonous swamp no matter where he searched.

According to his previous life’s memories, the area he was in right now was the same as the small fragment world of the original grotto-heaven, which he had sent his subordinates to explore in his previous life.

Originally, the poisonous swamp should have been near that ancient tree forest, but Fang Yuan was not able to find it.

“Could it be that the poisonous swamp is part of the terrain that only appears after several hundred years? I came here this early, thus I am not able to find it? If that is the case, my plan to hunt star demon bat will end in failure.”

Fang Yuan stared at the diagram of the terrain on the rock, and was pondering everything when suddenly a bright light shot out.

He and Hei Lou Lan raised their heads at the same time and looked at the green sky; unknowingly, the sky was filled with countless star specks.

The amount of this starlight grew rapidly and continued to grow. In a blink of an eye, the starlight filled the whole world, drifting in disorderly fashion like snow.

“This is an astronomical change that occurs only in grotto-heavens.” Fang Yuan stood up with an alert gaze, activating lion fur armor.

Hei Lou Lan also activated her defensive killer move with a vigilant mind.

The bright starlight shone on all living beings; beast roars resounded from each mountain peak, some clear, some crisp, some long and some hoarse.

Wind surged, the endless specks of starlight suddenly converged on top of a mountain.

After a dazzling blue radiance was sent out, the star specks dispersed and a resplendent giant hall, exquisite and gorgeous, appeared on the mountain peak.

“This hall....” Fang Yuan’s pupils enlarged, as he felt a great sense of familiarity with the structure of the hall. It clearly resembled the ruins that had been left behind in the shattered worlds of the grotto-heaven, which had spread everywhere during his previous life.

It was only that the former ruins now showed no trace of damage.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan glanced at each other, Hei Lou Lan guessed: “Did the astronomical change occur due to some specific timing and result in the appearance of the hall?”

“Or did the heavenly spirit intentionally set up a trap to lure us in?” Fang Yuan eyes flashed with bright light.

The two only hesitated for a moment before deciding to go in the star hall.

At the same time, in another area of Starry Sky grotto-heaven.

An intense battle was nearing its climax.

“Foul beast, take this king’s fist!” A rockman that was as tall as a hill shouted as it smashed down its fist, wind surged and even the air burst.

The desolate beast flying bear could not dodge in time, its head was struck by the giant stone fist and with a loud sound, it crashed down on the ground, smashing a large crater. Stones and soil flew all around, dust surged up and the earth shook for a while.

The rocky giant did not stop, it spread open its two fists then smashed down from high up.

Bam. The two palms heavily smashed at the flying bear’s thick, snow-white body.

The flying bear tried to budge but it was not able to let out even a cry. It was already filled with injuries, the punch just before had cracked its skull and caused it to be on the brink of losing consciousness.

Immortal killer move — Earth’s Root!

From the center of his two palms, earth qi bubbled, and countless thick and sharp earth spikes protruded out from the ground like spears.

Plop...

The desolate beast flying bear was pierced through instantly by hundreds of earth spikes.

In its last burst of energy, it raised its head, opened its eyes and let out a mournful cry before its energy was completely spent, its body stiffened and its head fell back down to the ground.

Dong. A sound like that of a drum being struck resounded, with dust rising and falling.

An intense scent of hot blood erupted, as it flowed down the stone pillar and quickly dyed the ground red.

The flying bear was dead.

The rocky giant snorted, it suddenly emitted a piercing light. After the light dispersed, a Gu Immortal proudly stood in the air while crossing his arms.

He had short white hair, a pair of golden pupils, broad shoulders and a thin waist. He wore a tight fitting combat uniform and a valiant aura was emitted from him.

A ray of starlight shot over, transforming into a middle-aged man. He was wearing a long robe with wide sleeves and a high hat on his head. He clapped his hands and praised: “As expected of Lord Immortal Monkey King, killing the desolate beast flying bear in just three minutes.”

The white haired man with golden pupils was a rank seven Gu Immortal of Combat Immortal Sect, Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei.

Shi Lei looked at the middle-aged man with an indifferent gaze: “Seven star halls have already appeared, Star Lord Wan Xiang, the eighth star hall you spoke of, why has it still not opened?”

This middle-aged man was Star Lord Wan Xiang, who had traded with Fang Yuan several times.

Star Lord Wan Xiang gave a bright smile: “Immortal Monkey King, there’s no need to worry. We can only make the eighth star hall appear when we have killed enough desolate beasts and let their blood seep into the ground. We have already killed six desolate beasts but the amount of blood is still not enough.”

“How much more desolate beasts should we kill exactly?” Shi Lei asked impatiently.

Star Lord Wan Xiang revealed a thoughtful expression and said after a pause: “According to my annual explorations over the past twenty years and my own speculations, we probably only need to kill one more desolate beast.”

“Hmph! You better not deceive me.” Shi Lei replied in an overbearing manner.

Star Lord Wan Xiang lowered his head: “I am just a lone cultivator, even if I had ten times the guts, I would not dare to deceive Lord Immortal Monkey King. Based on Central Continent’s time, I can only forcibly break into this star path Grotto-Heaven during this point of the year. Moreover, the duration we can stay is only two days, after these two days, the small opening leading to the grotto-heaven will close up and we won’t be able to exit. Why would I deceive you when time is so limited? I also want to plunder more resources, but several years ago, I accidentally saw the eighth star hall, that hall was covered in a foreboding atmosphere. The guards of the star hall were all ancient desolate beasts, it definitely is the central control point of this grotto-heaven and it is very likely for the heavenly spirit to be there.”

Shi Lei nodded, he believed Star Lord Wan Xiang’s words.

He has known Star Lord Wan Xiang for some time and was familiar with the latter’s nature.

“Sigh, if not because I had a huge battle with Song Zi Xing and spent large numbers of immortal essence, and that I urgently require large amounts of immortal essence stones to covert into immortal essence due to my blessed land’s approaching tribulation, I would not have told such a huge secret to you.” Star Lord Wan Xiang sighed.

Shi Lei’s tone softened: “Don’t worry, I will abide by the agreement, eighty percent of this exploration’s battle spoils will go to you while I take twenty percent. Also, I will not tell anyone else about this secret. Later, we will come to explore this grotto-heaven every year.”

Right now, only Star Lord Wan Xiang had the special method to enter Starry Sky grotto-heaven, Shi Lei still had not grasped the method.

“Lord Shi Lei has an outstanding reputation, I can be at ease. According to my past explorations, there is a star demon bat not far away and it is rather easy to kill.”

“Alright, let’s go there. Old rules; when fighting, you stand to the side, don’t interfere.” Shi Lei was very decisive and immediately started flying rapidly towards the destination.

Star Lord Wan Xiang laughed bitterly while hurriedly following behind.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan cautiously entered the star hall.

This star hall had no defenses, there was no one inside, only six large wells in the center of the main hall.

Water was surging inside these six large wells.

The water in the wells were of different colors; red, brown, yellow, blue, purple and white. The well water was glittering and translucent, and emitted slight radiance.

Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan used investigative Gu worms to completely check them.

Their discovery was that the well water, the star hall, everything was as normal as they could be. This was naturally impossible. How could an ordinary hall appear out of thin air? How could ordinary well water be of different colors and emit light?

The only explanation was that the six well waters in this star hall were related to the grotto-heaven’s astronomical transformations. If so, the mortal investigative Gu of Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan were not of high enough level to investigate anything.

The two were unable to distinguish the mysteries of the six wells, and fell into a predicament for a while.

“This color...” Hei Lou Lan observed again and could not help mumbling.

Fang Yuan knew what she was thinking. He remembered when they had just arrived in Starry Sky grotto-heaven, he had looked at the sky. He saw the shadows of six stars in the sky, they were as large as the full moon and were easy to notice.

These six star shadows were the colors of red, brown, yellow, blue, purple and white, the same as these six waters in the wells.

“What connection do they have?” Fang Yuan mumbled and sent a mortal storage Gu inside a well to take out some of the water to study.

However, when the mortal Gu entered the well water, the tranquil and calm well water suddenly moved and formed a whirlpool, swallowing the mortal Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 717: Killing Star Demon Bat

The well water quickly settled down, there were no ripples, it was shining brightly.

But the mortal Gu that Fang Yuan tossed in had completely vanished into the water.

Fang Yuan knew that his mortal Gu had not been destroyed yet, because he could still sense its existence.

But this connection was very weak now.

The connection between a Gu Master and Gu worm had much to do with distance. The further the Gu worm is from the Gu Master, the weaker their connection. In that case, when a Gu Master uses the Gu, their mind would send orders, if they gave ten orders, nine might be missed and the Gu worm would only execute one.

Of course, this was in ordinary cases.

A small portion of Gu worms could maintain a strong connection over a huge distance, they could be easily activated even if they were far away. Some Gu worms were even more peculiar, the closer they were to the Gu Master, the weaker their connection, creating distance between them could improve their connection instead.

Fang Yuan originally had a close connection to the mortal Gu, but now the feeling was much weaker, it was like the two were very far apart.

Fang Yuan followed the connection in his mind, slowly deducing the direction and raising his head.

All he saw was the top of the walls in the star hall.

Fang Yuan activated his investigative Gu, in his field of vision, the roof of the star hall became translucent. Fang Yuan’s gaze pierced through the roof of the star hall, seeing the six huge circular star shadows in the green sky.

He felt a sensation in his mind, his gaze remained on one of the star shadows. According to the remaining connection he had, he knew that the mortal Gu was on top of that star shadow!

...

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

The star demon bat’s huge wings whipped up fierce winds as countless arrows shot out at the same time.

These arrows were all made of starlight, they flew very quickly, piercing the air. Their numbers were high, flying towards Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei like a storm.

Seeing the large scale attack, Shi Lei scoffed in disdain: “Merely rank two star arrow Gu, except the numbers are a bit high.”

Mortal killer move — Fallen Grey Cloak.

Shi Lei’s body shook, as a thin layer of yellow-white smoke and dust covered him.

He did not dodge, he allowed the arrows to land on his body.

No matter how many star arrows came, they dissipated after coming into contact with the mortal killer move fallen grey cloak, vanishing in an instant.

The star demon bat lacked intelligence, it could not use killer moves. Although the scale of the wild Gu on its body was large, it could not use Gu in great quantity.

How could such an attack compare to a killer move that a human cultivator came up with painstakingly?

“This time, look at my eagle transformation!” Shi Lei shouted, his body shining in a bright golden light.

As the light dissipated, Shi Lei had vanished, in his place was a desolate beast iron crown eagle.

The iron crown eagle spread its wings, flying in the air, its sharp claws that resembled steel gave off an imposing aura. The size of its body was not any smaller than the star demon bat.

Far away, Star Lord Wan Xiang quietly observed the battle, seeing this, he sighed helplessly.

Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei was a battle maniac, he refused to fight together in each of these battles. Up to this point, Shi Lei had already killed eleven desolate beasts. Every time he fought a desolate beast, he would use a different type of transformation path killer move, to fight using the body of different desolate beasts.

Star Lord Wan Xiang was anxious about the time, he had urged Shi Lei to use his strongest methods. But Shi Lei rejected him, saying that he wanted to use this opportunity to accumulate transformation path battle experience, he did not want to waste any chance he had. By accumulating his foundations, he would eventually trigger a qualitative change, elevating his transformation path realm.

The iron crown eagle flew for a while, before screeching and pouncing towards the star demon bat.

The star demon bat was also screeching, its ruthless nature was awakened as it did not evade, it flapped its wings and collided with the iron crown eagle.

Two huge winged figures were clashing in the sky violently. The star demon bat bit with its mouth, while the iron crown eagle attacked with its beak. The star demon bat scratched with its claws, but the iron crown eagle’s talons were just as sharp, they were evenly matched.

The two had exchanged many blows within a moment, they left many injures on each other’s body. After a while, they pulled some distance between them.

The star demon bat shrieked loudly in a self-satisfied manner.

The iron crown eagle that Shi Lei had transformed into had lost most of its feathers, it flapped its wings and after much effort, it stabilized its body.

In the battle earlier, the iron crown eagle had suffered a loss, while the star demon bat had the upper hand.

Not only were most of its feathers gone, there was an injury on its stomach, filled with star path dao marks, it bled continuously and prevented the iron crown eagle’s body from healing naturally.

Desolate beasts were different from Gu Immortals.

Gu Immortals had weak bodies, their strength rested in Gu worms. Even if strength path Gu Immortals made their bodies extremely strong, it was still from the effects of Gu worms.

Meanwhile, the strength of desolate beasts was in their own bodies. Desolate beasts have strength, defense, and other attributes from birth, this was something humans could only dream of. Especially when a desolate beast gets closer to nature during their growth, and develops more dao marks on their bodies. When they fight in battle, the injuries that desolate beasts cause will have dao marks lingering. Injuries involving dao marks were very hard to get rid of, not only did they resist the body’s self healing, they also hindered the use and effect of healing Gu.

Of course, if the desolate beast had an Immortal Gu, the situation would be completely different.

The iron crown eagle shrieked, ignoring its injures and pouncing towards the star demon bat.

The two met in the sky again, after several attacks, the star demon bat found an opening and flapped its wings quickly, slamming on the iron crown eagle’s head.

The iron crown eagle went into a daze, falling towards the ground.

The star demon bat flew in the air, flapping its wings thrice at the iron crown eagle.

The first one caused an intense wind to blow, as thousands of wind blades shot out.

The second caused a burst of starlight, over ten thousand star arrows flew out.

The third caused darkness to gather, forming a giant specter that charged towards the iron crown eagle.

The iron crown eagle first crashed onto the ground, causing rocks to fly and a crater to form. Next, after it raised its head, it was cut by the wind blades.

The iron crown eagle shrieked, it endured the attacks and did not retreat, after enduring the wind blade attacks, it had hundreds of light wounds on its body.

It wanted to flap its wings, but the star arrows flew over. These arrows had extraordinary strength, they pierced into the iron crown eagle’s body and caused many wounds, but those were not deep.

Next, that specter which had no solid body drilled into the iron crown eagle’s mind.

If it was any ordinary desolate beast, they would have been in trouble, but this iron crown eagle was Shi Lei’s transformation.

Shi Lei snorted coldly, thoughts and wills moved in his head, destroying the specter in the blink of an eye.

Although he was an earth path Gu Immortal who also cultivated transformation path, he was an established expert, he was a veteran Gu Immortal, he learned a lot about many other paths and had a set of complete defensive measures against Gu worms of other paths.

“Lord Immortal Monkey King...” At the side, Star Lord Wan Xiang shouted in concern.

The iron crown eagle spoke human words, laughing loudly: “Don’t interfere, stay at the side, this is my battle!”

Intense fire seemed to be burning in the eagle’s eyes, with much determination, Shi Lei flapped his wings and flew up, towards the star demon bat, but was sent flying.

Bang, with a loud sound, the eagle crashed on the ground again.

“Good, interesting!” Shi Lei shouted, he got more excited as he fought, ignoring his injuries, he rushed up again.

He was fighting with something he was not familiar with, in terms of close combat, how could he be the star demon bat’s match. In their fight, he quickly fell into a disadvantage.

But every time Shi Lei lost, he would battle again, the eagle’s head would rise up highly, and the eagle eyes would always stare at its opponent.

“This maniac...” Star Lord Wan Xiang watched with a grimacing expression.

Shi Lei obviously had defensive moves like fallen grey cloak, but after transforming into the iron crown eagle, he did not use any of them in battle.

This had happened many times in his previous battles as well.

Star Lord Wan Xiang had asked earlier, but Shi Lei’s answer was that he was purposely not using them, it was to experience the joy of battle with his own body, this would be the most effective way to raise his battle foundation.

Shi Lei was a battle-addict, he was a fierce man who derived pleasure from fighting.

“Again!” Shi Lei shouted, flapping his wings towards the star demon bat.

The two sides got closer rapidly, seeing that they were about to collide, the star demon bat suddenly flapped its wings, displaying an incredible flying ability, passing the iron crown eagle narrowly.

Whoosh!

The star demon bat suddenly breathed out a shooting star, hitting the iron crown eagle’s back.

The iron crown eagle spat out some blood, its body shook as it had to flap its wings to stabilize itself. Next, Star Lord Wan Xiang heard Shi Lei laughing: “Interesting, bullying my flying attainment which is only master level?”

Saying so, he flapped his wings and rushed up.

The star demon bat did not take the attack directly, it retreated while using star path, wind path, or dark path Gu worms to attack its enemy from far away.

The two had fought for a long time, unknowingly, the star demon bat’s body was filled with injuries. These injuries all had metal path dao marks, they could not heal any time soon.

Of course, the injuries on the iron crown eagle were at least twice as severe as the star demon bat.

But Shi Lei fought crazily, it struck fear in the star demon bat, this dominating desolate beast that ruled over a mountain felt some apprehension and did not dare to fight directly.

The star demon bat’s intelligence was low, what it was doing was giving on its advantage and fighting with its weakness.

It had mortal Gu on it, although they could disturb Shi Lei, they were not as dangerous to him as fighting at close range.

The iron crown eagle did not use any defensive methods as usual, but its aura was surging as it dodged left and right, finally getting close to the star demon bat.

After shrieking loudly, the eagle claw grasped downwards at it.

The star demon bat dodged agilely, but Shi Lei found an opening.

In terms of flying attainment, the star demon bat which had been flying its entire life was at least a flying grandmaster.

The star demon bat pulled some distance, using Gu worms to attack at a range, while the iron crown eagle tried to get close to engage in close combat with it. In this fashion, the two fought for a while, the star demon bat was bound to mess up at some point, finally, the iron crown eagle found a flaw and used its eagle claws to tear the bat wings.

With a hole in the bat wings, the star demon bat’s flying ability fell drastically. Before it could adapt to the injury, the iron crown eagle found even more flaws.

Shi Lei pursued it during this prime opportunity, after enduring the star demon bat’s final struggle, he killed it.

The star demon bat landed on the ground, its blood was pouring like a river.

The ground absorbed the blood, just like what Star Lord Wan Xiang said, a formless energy had been activated.

In the sky, starlight appeared again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 718: Starshine Fake Eye Gu

The specks of starlight coiled around and fluttered for a while before gathering high up in the air and forming a completely new star hall.

Different from the previous star halls, this star hall was floating in the air, its design was exquisite, giving off a majestic beauty that was far above those star halls on the mountains.

“The eighth star hall has finally appeared. My speculation was indeed correct!” Star Lord Wan Xiang spoke with excitement.

Shi Lei canceled the iron crown eagle transformation and returned to his human form. The injuries on his body were still recovering, the blood flow had yet to stop. He indifferently glanced at the sky with his golden pupils: “No wonder you guessed that this was the grotto-heaven’s central control point, looking at its appearance, it is very likely to be that.”

He grimaced in pain and sat down, healing the wounds.

His healing was in no way simple, he first used large numbers of Gu worms to eliminate the dao marks of star path, wind path, dark path and other paths that had filled the wounds, only then did he use healing Gu worms which showed visible effects.

Star Lord Wan Xiang waited for a little while and when he saw Shi Lei’s injuries were roughly treated, he finally could not endure and urged him: “Your healing is almost done right? Time is limited, Lord Immortal Monkey King. The prerequisite for the eighth star hall to appear is that the other seven star halls should be formed first. Every time the seven star halls appear, they will only exist for fifteen minutes. When the seven star halls disappear, the eighth star hall will also disappear.”

“Why are you in a hurry? If you are in such a rush, you can enter it first.” Shi Lei opened his eyes and coldly glanced at Star Lord Wan Xiang.

“Lord Shi Lei is jesting, my battle strength has fallen to the depths, I still need to rely on lord to break through the ancient desolate beasts’ defenses.” Star Lord Wan Xiang chuckled and did not speak any further.

However, his fists that were hidden inside his sleeves were tightly clenched, if not for his strength plummeting and the tribulation coming soon, why would he reveal this treasury on his own initiative? And why would he have to be forced to bottle up his frustration?

He knew Shi Lei’s scheme and intentions.

Shi Lei was a battle-addict, unreasonable and unruly, but he was in no way stupid.

Everyone who reached a high position had their own outstanding points. The outstanding and famous Shi Lei did not lack shrewdness.

Shi Lei accepted Star Lord Wan Xiang’s invitation to come to Starry Sky grotto-heaven to plunder resources. But he did not put in his full effort, he was interested in breaking through the eighth star hall, but he was not willing to see Star Lord Wan Xiang obtain large numbers of resources to pull through the difficulties and escape his grasp.

If Star Lord Wan Xiang does not obtain a fortune in this trip, he would have to request help from others when undergoing the tribulation. Shi Lei could help him then and also obtain a greater grasp on him.

When that happens, in their future visits to Starry Sky grotto-heaven, Shi Lei could obtain larger benefits which would absolutely not be in an eighty to twenty ratio like in this trip.

Every year, Starry Sky grotto-heaven would reveal a tiny gap which allowed Gu Immortals to enter it. Every time, the Gu Immortals could only stay inside for two days of Central Continent’s time.

There were abundant desolate beasts and resources in Starry Sky grotto-heaven, it was clearly a small but steady source of resources. Star Lord Wan Xiang was a prime example of this, he was obviously a lone cultivator, but with each of his visits to Starry Sky grotto-heaven, he was able to strengthen himself to the extent that his peak battle strength did not lose out to the majority of Gu Immortals of the ten great ancient sects. Even when fighting Song Zi Xing, he had even been able to make a good record of himself.

After a while, Shi Lei’s injuries healed completely with no traces of injuries anywhere on him.

Because of the previous oath, Shi Lei could not push it too far; he examined his body once then stood up: “Sorry to keep you waiting, we can now go in.”

Star Lord Wan Xiang put on a smiling expression and shook his head: “It was me who was overly anxious, I have to ask Immortal Monkey King to not blame me. More preparations quicken the speed of the work, I will still have to rely on your strength a lot more.”

Shi Lei bluntly nodded: “Naturally.”

He stamped his foot and charged straight into the sky.

Star Lord Wan Xiang followed closely behind.

The two immortals moved towards the eighth star hall in the sky together.

At the same time, Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan also jumped out of a well.

“This is another star hall.” Fang Yuan said as he scanned his surroundings.

Hei Lou Lan nodded: “We used many methods to test and we were not wrong, these six wells are passages.”

The two gazed behind them.

The center of this star hall also had six wells.

But the colors were slightly different from the previous star hall.

In the previous star hall, the six well waters were of red, brown, yellow, blue, purple and white color. However, the six well waters here emitted the colors of red, brown, yellow, blue, green and white.

Purple was gone and green was added.

Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan looked at each other. Both were clever and shrewd, and they both obtained an understanding.

“What do you think of it?” Hei Lou Lan asked.

Fang Yuan grinned, showing his sharp, jagged canines as he replied with his hoarse voice: “If I am not wrong, this Starry Sky grotto-heaven has a special terrain, there are a total of seven spaces. These seven spaces are isolated and independent of each other, outsiders can only enter or exit them through the six wells in the star halls.”

Hei Lou Lan nodded and picked up a Gu worm from the ground: “This is the mortal Gu you tossed earlier into the purple well water, it is the best proof. If my speculation is right, there is also another form of proof, that is the sky. When we go out of this star hall, this space’s sky should also have six round shadows of stars. The difference should be that there instead of a purple star shadow, there should be a green star shadow.”

Fang Yuan agreed with Hei Lou Lan’s speculation.

Normal grotto-heavens and blessed lands would have integrated spaces. But Starry Sky grotto-heaven was special, it was actually divided into seven spaces, and every space had an independent sky, earth and ecology.

In his previous life, what Fang Yuan explored was only the fragment world of Starry Sky grotto-heaven and he did not know of this layer of mystery.

He and Hei Lou Lan finished discussing and they walked out of the door of the hall, gazing at the sky.

They saw six round star shadows like six full moons floating in the air, Hei Lou Lan clapped her hands and gave a bright smile: “Just like I guessed.”

“Wait, someone is here!” Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk as he looked at the moving objects in the distance and happened to see Shi Lei and Star Lord Wan Xiang rapidly flying. Following the direction they were flying towards, Fang Yuan discovered the eighth star hall.

“This star hall seems to be of a higher standard, it is hovering in the air and is being coveted by others, it is very likely that it is the central control point of Starry Sky grotto-heaven.” Hei Lou Lan guessed, her gaze stuck on the eighth star hall.

“There are actually others who are one step ahead of us!” Fang Yuan mumbled. He was shocked internally, according to his previous estimation, Starry Sky grotto-heaven was a place with no one but the heavenly spirit existing in it.

If not for this, Starry Sky grotto-heaven should not have fallen in his previous life.

However, the current situation was that he saw no signs of the heavenly spirit and instead saw two Gu Immortals.

As for the Gu Immortals’ appearances and identities, the distance between them was very far so Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were not able to see clearly.

However, the two felt that these neither of these two Gu Immortals were the owners of this grotto-heaven. If one of them was the owner of this grotto-heaven, they would have already sensed Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan, and would have acted by now.

“What’s strange about it? You could obtain the secret intelligence about Starry Sky grotto-heaven from some source, does that mean other Gu Immortals cannot?” Hei Lou Lan was able to accept this fact much more easily than Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan laughed bitterly in his heart.

He had concealed from Hei Lou Lan that the so-called information source was, in fact, his own self.

However, it seemed that the truth and his preconceptions were vastly different.

The first possible cause for this situation would be Fang Yuan’s rebirth constantly influencing the various events in the world, causing a butterfly effect. The second possible reason was there was a lot of details behind the scenes regarding the fall of Starry Sky grotto-heaven in his previous life, it was just that he did not know about them and now in this life, he ran across one of the inside stories.

Fang Yuan’s thoughts ebbed and flowed, inclining towards the second cause.

At this moment, sounds of fighting came from the eighth star hall.

“Looks like these two Gu Immortals are of similar status to us, they are also outsiders. But, they are a step ahead of us.” Hei Lou Lan’s gaze flickered.

Fang Yuan did not reply, he just snickered, his laughter was cold.

Hei Lou Lan also silently grinned.

These two were formidable characters and were also schemers. Right now, the enemy was in the open while they were in the dark and both felt they had a had huge advantage, they could even be said to be the oriole in the saying ‘the mantis stalks the cicada, unaware of the oriole behind’.

Immediately, Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan activated large numbers of mortal Gu to hide their bodies and restrain their auras, as well as using many kinds of investigative methods to scout.

The two quietly closed the star hall’s door, got rid of all their traces and slowly moved outside.

After a while, Fang Yuan who was walking in front suddenly stopped and warned Hei Lou Lan: “Slow down, there is a rank five investigative Gu ahead.”

Hei Lou Lan carefully probed, and saw an eye-like small Gu worm quietly hovering in the air. Its eyes were slowly moving around, constantly scanning its surroundings.

The two were not surprised.

With just one look, one could see this Gu worm was not a wild Gu and was clearly left behind by the two Gu Immortals from before.

This was expected.

Previously, when Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan had explored the space relating to the green star shadow, they had also left behind similar investigative Gu to keep watch on their paths.

After becoming a Gu Immortal, one no longer lacked mortal Gu.

These mortal Gu could let the Gu Immortal constantly scan their surroundings, mark the area, warn them and many other uses.

Hei Lou Lan was young, she had just advanced into a Gu Immortal, thus was not able to recognize this Gu’s details, giving a suggestion of caution: “Let’s detour.”

Fang Yuan smiled: “No need. This Gu is starshine fake eye Gu, it has a long range sensing ability, Gu Immortals can observe the situation of the surroundings through it. Its scope is five li, it cannot detect stealth, and not only does using this Gu constantly consume primeval essence, it also burdens the soul. We can use methods to be invisible and boldly go past it.”

At the same time, Fang Yuan added in his mind: ‘This Gu worm is often used together with true sight Gu which can then detect stealth and invisibility. But that is the situation during the five regions chaotic war, the true sight Gu is still being held by some small sect right now and has not been wantonly spread.”

Hei Lou Lan glanced at Fang Yuan, still not feeling relieved: “Are you sure you are not wrong? Gu Immortals research new Gu all the time, maybe this Gu worm is a newly researched Gu that can see through invisibility?”

Fang Yuan snickered: “You think I only looked at it with my eyes and did not use other Gu worms to check it? Don’t worry, eight or nine out of ten Gu Immortals are flying masters, but having even two to three refinement path masters out of ten would be pretty good. Refinement path is considerably harder to advance compared to other paths.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 719: Small methods have profound meaning, the more one understands the more shocking it is

Fang Yuan spoke with such certainty that Hei Lou Lan chose to believe him.

The two hid their bodies and swaggered into starshine fake eye Gu’s range, and they indeed did not attract any Gu Immortal’s attention.

Along the way, the two found similar types of investigative Gu like starshine fake eye Gu.

Some of these Gu worms were buried in the ground, some were disguised as tree leaves, and some were hidden in brooks, drifting with the water.

Fang Yuan used his methods one by one, sometimes invisibility, sometimes Gu worms directed at countering them, or tunneling under the ground or swimming through water, all kinds of methods to slip past these investigative Gu worms.

The two had wanted to move until they were below the eighth star hall, and the shortest way would be a straight line to the eighth star hall. If they got a chance, they could also quickly react and use the shortest amount of time to charge to the eighth star hall, and fish benefits from the messy situation.

However, as they walked through this straight line, a bloody odor assailed their noses from ahead.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan glanced at each other, the latter revealed a doubtful look as she used her divine sense to transmit: “Strange, both the amount of investigative Gu in this path and their types are increasing more and more.”

“Let’s take a look.” Fang Yuan replied.

The two cautiously evaded or deceived the investigative Gu worms, and discovered further traces of battle.

After a while, they finally reached the area where there was the most intense odor of blood.

They saw a black leopard’s corpse lying on the shattered and disordered pile of rocks.

The black leopard was as large as an elephant. Its fur was glossy and shiny, full of wild charm. The remaining aura showed the black leopard’s identity, a genuine desolate beast.

“This desolate beast is a vanishing shadow leopard.” Fang Yuan said in a low voice.

“It is that someone killed this vanishing shadow leopard and yet left behind its corpse here?” Hei Lou Lan revealed a trace of doubt.

Fang Yuan squatted down near the ground, and used his hand to feel the gully beside his legs.

He then took out a time path Gu worm and carefully activated it.

This Gu worm had the appearance of a crystal sphere, and was an extremely rare rank five Gu. Its name was backtrack Gu, an investigative Gu under time path, which could backtrack to the past events within a specific range.

Backtrack Gu was activated; it displayed a blurry and mute battle scene.

In the scene, two giant figures were in an intense battle while a small figure was standing far away to the side.

Backtrack Gu was only a rank five mortal Gu, and whether it was Shi Lei, the vanishing shadow leopard or Star Lord Wan Xiang, they were all rank six or above, immortal bodies and desolate beast bodies had dao marks, thus backtrack Gu’s investigative ability was restrained greatly.

Hei Lou Lan came closer and watched the battle.

The mute battle scene was extremely blurry. But they could roughly guess that one of them was the vanishing shadow leopard from the approximate build.

And the one battling with the vanishing shadow leopard did not seem to be a human but a tiger desolate beast.

The one standing far away had a human shape and could be a Gu Immortal. But their appearance was blurry and they could not be sure.

Not only this, the battle scene broken off intermittently and was not coherent.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan observed the battle with all their attention, for a moment, other than the slight breeze in the mountains, there was no other sound.

After a dozen breaths of time, scorching smoke started to curl up from the backtrack Gu and the battle scene suddenly disappeared.

The backtrack Gu had died as a result of forcibly recreating the image of the Gu Immortal level battle.

Fang Yuan felt slight heartache, and put the scorched corpse of backtrack Gu back inside his immortal aperture to get rid of any traces.

He had been gathering this backtrack Gu from treasure yellow heaven recently but even then, he only had a total of fifty to sixty. This was still the case when the five regions were in peaceful times, during the chaotic war of the regions, backtrack Gu would be widely used and very hard to get, it would be a case where one would have to produce them for their own use, treasure yellow heaven would simply have none for sale.

Hei Lou Lan was very interested: “This Gu worm is quite ingenious, what is its name, did you buy it in treasure yellow heaven?”

The varieties of Gu worms in existence were as vast as the ocean. Moreover, Hei Lou Lan cultivated strength path, not time path, and her understanding of other paths was only at the basics, limited to the typically used Gu worms.

Gu worms like backtrack Gu were classified as rare Gu of another path, it was normal for her to not know of it.

Fang Yuan did not reply, instead he took out another Gu.

He had refined this Gu himself based to his memories. According to the course of history, this Gu should have only appeared three hundred years later, its name was thread trace Gu.

Its appearance was quite special, resembling a small horsewhip which children from Northern Plains played with as toys. Fang Yuan used his enormous, monstrous zombie claws to grab it, making its small size even more apparent.

Fang Yuan grabbed the handle of the horsewhip and softly whipped at the air in front of him.

Crack. The empty air suddenly showed traces of marks.

“What is this?” Hei Lou Lan gazed at the marks without blinking.

Crack crack crack.

Fang Yuan whipped the horsewhip like thread trace Gu repeatedly, the marks in the air continued to increase.

Hei Lou Lan watched the whole process and soon was able to sense that the space Fang Yuan was whipping at was the area where the fight in the battle scene had occurred, and also the area where that blurry Gu Immortal had been standing.

As various thoughts flashed past, Hei Lou Lan’s pupils slightly enlarged, blurting: “Could these marks be dao marks?”

Fang Yuan gave a contented smile at this moment: “Right, they are dao marks. Whether it be Gu Immortals or desolate beasts, they are filled with dao marks, and any area they stop at will leave behind dao marks for a short period of time. It is just that these dao marks are extremely weak, that even Gu Immortals paying close attention won’t be able to sense them, that is, unless they use this thread trace Gu that I researched. From observing these dao marks, I can infer some information on them.”

Fang Yuan once again brazenly took on someone else’s creation from his previous life as his own.

“Thread trace Gu....” Hei Lou Lan mumbled, her gaze towards Fang Yuan had changed a little.

Fang Yuan pointed towards the area where Star Lord Wan Xiang had stood previously: “Look, the dao marks have manifested and formed a human shape. The color is azure blue which means a star path Gu Immortal had been observing the battle. The greater portion of the dao marks had stayed there and although there are some dao marks in the surroundings, they are mostly tightly enclosed around the greater portion, this means that star path Gu Immortal had only been observing from the side during the whole battle. And looking at the concentration of the dao marks, it seems to be a rank six Gu Immortal.”

Hei Lou Lan looked at the direction Fang Yuan pointed towards and listened to him, paying full attention.

Fang Yuan then pointed at the area where the vanishing shadow leopard died, there were remaining dao marks of black color for dark path and red color for fire path.

He continued: “The dark path dao marks clearly belong to the vanishing shadow leopard while the red colored dao marks belong to the existence that killed the vanishing shadow leopard. As for their identity, whether they are man or beast, that is still not certain. Look at how concentrated these dao marks are and how they are intertwined with each other, this shows that the battle was very intense. The dark path dao marks are sparse while the red colored dao marks are rather dense, we can deduce that the existence that killed the vanishing shadow leopard is also at least of rank six realm.”

Hei Lou Lan’s mouth widened slightly as she listened to Fang Yuan.

Her gaze towards the thread trace Gu in Fang Yuan’s hand became slightly burning.

This thread trace Gu was only a rank five mortal Gu, but it was very useful. With just this Gu, one could infer so much useful information.

The key thing was the thoughts involved in refining it were very special, and it could even be said to have blazed an unexpected new trail that bypasses common logic.

Hei Lou Lan might have just recently advanced into a Gu Immortal, but she understood the importance of information and started to give more significance to Fang Yuan ‘invention’, thread trace Gu.

Had Shi Lei and Star Lord Wan Xiang been here, they would probably be soaked in cold sweat.

They had used mainstream investigative methods and counter-investigative methods, but thread trace Gu just happened to pierce through the gap in them. Fang Yuan’s methods were from the time of the chaotic war of the five regions after all, the materialization of the intelligence of the whole five regions, it was like they were over half an era ahead of current Gu Immortals, naturally they had huge superiority!

Crack crack crack.

Fang Yuan lashed the horsewhip several times, many more dao marks appeared but also many more disappeared.

These dao marks were very weak and were gathered together by thread trace Gu, thus greatly shortening their already limited lifespan.

Dao marks entangled mutually, getting more disorderly. Fang Yuan finally stopped lashing the horsewhip and sighed: “This is more or less the ability of this thread trace Gu, the manifestation of dao marks lasts only for a period of time and requires the observer to have plenty of experience. Moreover, activating Immortal Gu also leaves behind responding dao marks. In an intense battle, many abilities and methods are used, causing the dao marks to entangle and become extremely chaotic with no way to infer anything. However, fortunately, few methods were used in this battle, so we are able to roughly understand the situation.”

Hei Lou Lan’s eyelids twitched.

Inferring so much useful information with a mere rank five mortal Gu and still not satisfied?

Her gaze firmly locked upon the thread trace Gu until Fang Yuan stored it back in his immortal aperture. She keenly discovered that the formerly intact thread trace Gu’s whip-like body was full of cracks now. Clearly, there was a price to pay for manifesting the dao marks.

Hei Lou Lan inwardly estimated, this thread trace Gu could be used for two more times at the minimum. Immediately, her evaluation of thread trace Gu increased by another level.

It could be used for a total of three times!

A mere rank five Gu worm could be used three times to investigate into existences of rank six level and obtain so much information.

Just as Hei Lou Lan was unable to endure and was about to ask if Fang Yuan was selling thread trace Gu, Fang Yuan took out another investigative Gu worm.

This was only a qi path Gu worm which Fang Yuan used to draw in the surrounding scents.

Next, Fang Yuan stored this qi path Gu worm and took out another Gu worm.

He moved everywhere around the battlefield and activated Gu worms from time to time. Hei Lou Lan was only able to recognize a small portion of these Gu worms, but it was also not to the extent where she was certain. The remaining greater portion, Hei Lou Lan simply had no idea, unable to recognize any of them.

She subconsciously pursed her lips, as she for the first time felt that Fang Yuan had unfathomable depths.

During the journey in Northern Plains, she only felt that Fang Yuan was experienced and astute, and a major enemy. When cooperating with Fang Yuan, she had no choice but to do so, and was very aware that it was asking for favors from a tiger.

She got Fang Yuan’s help to pass through her tribulation and become a Gu Immortal, she had thought she could suppress Fang Yuan a notch. But soon, Fang Yuan used her and Fairy Li Shan to scare even Immortal Crane Sect’s Gu Immortals away. The whole thing was won before engaging in battle, which gave no chance for Hei Lou Lan to make a move. Since there was no loss in battle, Fang Yuan did not have to pay twice the compensation, it was akin to him obtaining his objective without losing anything.

In contrast, to coax Fang Yuan to make an effort, Hei Lou Lan had to give the precious true meaning infusion of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable to him. Fang Yuan was also truly ruthless, he swallowed it whole without leaving behind anything to Hei Lou Lan.

Later, Fang Yuan started the guts Gu business and took the initiative to share profits with Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan. Although he needed Hei Lou Lan’s strength qi Immortal Gu in the process, Hei Lou Lan did not feel comfortable the whole time, it seemed as if she was being controlled.

Now, Hei Lou Lan felt a shiver in her heart as she looked at Fang Yuan using these methods.

These small methods all used mortal Gu and were seemingly unremarkable, but Hei Lou Lan was a discerning person, how could she not understand the profound significance represented by these small methods!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 720: Picking them up one by one, a windfall of a great fortune

After Hei Lou Lan ascended to an immortal, she was taught by Fairy Li Shan, guided step by step, she was instructed in almost all aspects.

Thus, in terms of investigative methods, Hei Lou Lan was not inferior to ordinary Gu Immortals.

“But Fang Yuan’s foundation is so deep, he is evidently miles ahead of most Gu Immortals now. Although I have several Immortal Gu, can I be like Fang Yuan and create new Gu independently, to modify and perfect my own killer moves?”

Hei Lou Lan shook her head internally.

Her strength path killer move was given to her by her mother.

To refine new Gu, one had to create new Gu recipes. This process not only required resources and ample foundation in that path, one also needed inspiration and luck!

Hei Lou Lan was indeed a Gu Immortal, but she was too young, she was not a refinement path master, and not even skilled in refinement path. Foundation could only be attained after a long period of trial and error, of exploring and accumulating experiences slowly.

At this point, Fang Yuan walked back, he hummed: “Summing up all of the clues, I mostly know the other party’s identities already.”

“Oh?”

“One is a rank six star path Gu Immortal, he has not made a move yet and is more mysterious. The other is an earth path Gu Immortal who cultivates transformation path as well, he has a powerful aura and using Gu worms, I caught a trace of his voice, this is likely Shi Lei from Combat Immortal Sect in Central Continent.” Fang Yuan said.

“That Immortal Monkey King?” Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan had shared most of their information, she naturally knew who Shi Lei was.

She started to frown, finding it a little troublesome.

Shi Lei was a rank seven Gu Immortal, he had outstanding battle strength. Even though Hei Lou Lan had several strength path Immortal Gu, Shi Lei had earth path Immortal Gu and had even created his own unique immortal killer moves long ago. In addition, he even cultivated transformation path, his battle talent was exceedingly rare.

Hei Lou Lan had Immortal Gu Self Strength, using it to activate her former mortal killer move, forming a giant strength path phantom, that could barely be considered an immortal killer move.

Up to this point, Hei Lou Lan had been attempting to improve and modify it, but her progress was slow.

“Fang Yuan, if you use the myriad self killer move, and cooperate with me, we might be able to resist the Immortal Monkey King. But in that case, we will not be able to deal with the mysterious star path Gu Immortal.” Hei Lou Lan muttered.

Fang Yuan laughed bitterly: “I have not told you yet, but because the core Immortal Gu is starving, myriad self cannot be used anymore. All I can use are mortal killer moves.”

Hei Lou Lan looked at Fang Yuan deeply, squinting: “In other words, we should avoid fighting with the other party directly.”

Roar roar roar—!

High in the air, there was loud growling noises.

Fang Yuan raised his head and looked: “There are bound to be injuries when two sides fight, we should just go with the flow and observe the situation now. Although our battle strength is lower than them, if we find the chance, it is not necessarily the case that we can’t have them killed. In the worst case, I still have Fixed Immortal Travel, we can definitely resist them while we find the time to activate Fixed Immortal Travel.”

Hei Lou Lan nodded in agreement, Fang Yuan’s words were very similar to her own thoughts.

The two decided to devour the loot in front of them first.

The vanishing shadow leopard corpse was quite a fortune. Even though there were large numbers of investigative Gu around, they could not stop the old demon Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had methods that were ahead by half of an era, he made his moves, sealing or deceiving the investigative Gu. A moment later, they obtained the vanishing shadow leopard's corpse without alerting Star Lord Wan Xiang.

“This vanishing shadow leopard's fur can be used to make many defensive Gu. The bones can be made into shadow attachment Gu, shadow tracing Gu and others, the eyes are top tier materials for making dark vision Gu and dark fog Gu. It is a pity its blood had already been lost completely. Otherwise, it would be even more valuable.” Hei Lou Lan placed the vanishing shadow leopard corpse into her immortal aperture, her eyes shining with a joyful light.

“The other party seems to be letting it bleed on purpose, it seems that the star hall in the air is truly an important place. They even ignored the desolate beast corpse for now.” Fang Yuan showed an interested expression as he pondered.

His immortal aperture was filled with death energy, it was not good for keeping corpses fresh, thus he placed the vanishing shadow leopard in Hei Lou Lan's hands.

The two were fearless and unscrupulous people.

Even if the other party was strong, they dared to continue plotting against them.

Next, they followed their original plan and secretly advanced, trying to get close to the eighth star hall in the air.

But along the way, they quickly made a new discovery.

“The number of investigative Gu ahead have increased, does that mean...” Hei Lou Lan's gaze shone with anticipation.

After a while, the two avoided all of the investigative Gu, passing a mountain ridge and into a valley.

In the valley, there was a desolate beast corpse, resembling a small hill.

It was like a colt, it had a huge, bright red body with thick legs, dark as steel, its body was strong, muscular and bulky.

Its mane and tail were vibrant and golden in color.

Blood was dripping from the holes all over its body. The blood was scalding hot, and the heat spread to the surrounding trees and plants, causing them to wilt.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan gradually got closer, feeling a heat that was like a blisteringly hot summer day.

“This is the desolate beast blazing divine stallion, it has many fire path wild Gu on it and can walk on fire. Its blood is extremely hot and is a top tier material in refining fire path Gu worms, it is very rare even in treasure yellow heaven.”

Hei Lou Lan's heart bled as she looked at the horse blood flowing out.

The two worked for a while, getting their hands on the blazing divine stallion, while Star Lord Wan Xiang still had absolutely no idea.

After leaving this valley, the two moved stealthily, but Fang Yuan slowed his footsteps.

“Our destination is up ahead. But towards the left, there are large numbers of investigative Gu, should we go take a look?” Fang Yuan looked at Hei Lou Lan, transmitting.

“Of course.” Hei Lou Lan’s reply was very curt.

The two came to the area that was filled with investigative Gu, they found a desolate beast corpse as expected.

This was a yellow jade lion.

Its body was like an elephant, lying on the ground with its eyes mostly closed, only opened by a slit. Large amounts of yellow blood flowed along the wound on its stomach, pouring out.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan stealthily moved closer, but this yellow jade lion’s body shook, it tried to open its eyes as its bloody mouth opened slightly, emitting a barely discernible growl, as if it wanted to continue battling.

“This yellow jade lion truly has a courageous nature. To be able to hurt the yellow jade lion to this extent, this Shi Lei’s transformation path battle strength is greater than I thought.” Hei Lou Lan praised.

Fang Yuan was overjoyed.

He quickly made his move, after deceiving many of the surrounding investigative methods, he stole the yellow jade lion.

He patted with his hand, as large numbers of healing Gu flew out of his aperture, landing on the yellow jade lion, rapidly stabilizing its injuries and keeping it alive.

“You intend to save it?” Hei Lou Lan was slightly surprised.

Fang Yuan nodded: “Saving it is a hundred times easier than capturing another desolate beast alive, why shouldn’t we? You can keep this desolate beast in your immortal aperture for now, be careful and keep it safe, this will be part of my share.”

This way, as long as things progressed well, the mission that Fang Yuan agreed upon with Lang Ya land spirit would be completed.

Hei Lou Lan placed the yellow jade lion into her immortal aperture, her gaze was shining as she seemed to have made up her mind, saying: “The three desolate beasts we had encountered had their blood drained for some reason. Very likely, Shi Lei’s group is trying to complete some procedure. Maybe this was the reason why the star hall in the sky appeared. After all, when we first appeared in this place, the sky was still empty. How many desolate beast corpses do you think are around here now?”

Fang Yuan laughed upon hearing this: “Even if you did not mention this, I was going to talk about it. Indeed, looking at this situation, there are definitely many desolate beast corpses around. One desolate beast corpse can be sold for around forty immortal essence stones optimally. It is truly an effortless profit for us to pick up these desolate beast corpses. The benefits are huge, yet we are paying zero costs. A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush, moreover, we might not have the opportunity again. We should secure these profits first, that is the safest measure.”

The two had the same plot in mind, they changed their tactics and started scouring for desolate beast corpses.

They could not use investigative Gu openly, but the clues were very obvious.

Star Lord Wan Xiang’s original plan was to keep these desolate beast corpses around first, and deal with them after taking down the eighth star hall.

The aura of these desolate beasts was still around, with that to induce fear, he was not afraid of wild beasts devouring them.

Shi Lei was in charge of fighting, while Star Lord Wan Xiang was in charge of setting up investigative Gu worms. Naturally, he would place more investigative Gu around the corpses of the desolate beasts.

But he would never have guessed that putting all of these investigative Gu together was the biggest clue in itself, they were guides for Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan to find the corpses.

“This is the chestnut yak, its meat tastes like chestnut, it can be eaten raw. It has a mild nature and is a somewhat unusual desolate beast. Mm, let’s keep it, keep it.” Hei Lou Lan was laughing happily.

“Oh, there is a golden pangolin. It is a pity its armor is tattered, otherwise, it could be sold for a higher price.” Fang Yuan said with some disappointment.

“Flying bear, there is a flying bear corpse. Great, excellent, I want this corpse!” Hei Lou Lan was overjoyed.

“Hmm? Star demon bat! I knew this rotten poisonous swamp was very familiar. It is a pity that the bat wings are in bad shape, it would greatly affect my movement speed if I transplant it like this. I wonder if I can fix it first.” Fang Yuan also stole the corpse of the star demon bat.

He felt some regret, but he quickly got over it.

After all, he did not battle the bat himself, why would Shi Lei care about his plans. Obtaining the corpse without any cost, this was already a huge gain.

He had not felt such good luck in a long time.

The two obtained nearly ten desolate beast corpses, it was a windfall. After the two searched around and ensured that there was no lingering desolate beast corpses, they hurried towards the bottom of the eighth star hall.

But when they arrived, a figure like a small hill crashed onto the ground.

With a loud bang, it landed and caused the mountain rocks to shatter, dust and smoke was rising.

“This is the ancient desolate beast, astral wind flying heavenly boar!”

“It is dead! This is the corpse of an ancient desolate beast.”

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan made eye contact, after communicating through transmission, they were evidently moved!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 721: Walking Meat Tree

The corpse of the ancient desolate beast, astral wind flying heavenly boar, was right in front of them.

Although Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan were moved, they did not close in on it.

The two looked up towards the sky at the same time.

They saw that high in the air, the eighth star hall was shaking slightly. Loud explosions and the growls of fierce beasts could be heard from within the hall.

With a loud bang, the star hall shook intensely, a pillar of fire burst up from the roof of the star hall, creating a huge hole on it.

The star hall was not made of ordinary material, it was formed from the phenomenon in the grotto-heaven. At the area of the roof that was broken, starlight was emitting from it, as the hole continued to spread outwards.

A pillar of smoke flew up outwards into the sky.

“What an intense battle.” Hei Lou Lan sighed.

“Fight, fight, the more intense the better it is.” Fang Yuan muttered.

In the eighth star hall, it was a mess, the two sides were fiercely engaged in combat.

A heavily injured desolate beast flame tiger growled loudly, shooting out a fireball from its mouth.

The fireball shot a huge tree, while it was in the air, the flame tiger moved its claws and followed behind the fireball, attacking towards the huge tree.

The huge tree moved its huge branches.

Its branches were very peculiar, they were like soft and thick octopus tentacles.

With a loud thud, a tentacle-like branch destroyed a fireball.

With another whipping noise, a branch swung over, causing the flame tiger who was behind the fireball to be sent flying.

The flame tiger cried out in pain, it flew for up to a hundred steps and crashed onto the ground. With a burst of bright light, it returned to a human form — it was Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei.

Shi Lei spat out three teeth, his expression was excited and crazed: “What a great walking meat tree, as expected of something of legend, this ancient desolate plant is truly incredible.”

Star Lord Wan Xiang who was beside him continued to unleash starlight attacks while transmitting helplessly when he heard Shi Lei’s words: “Lord Immortal Monkey King, the enemy is very powerful, stop playing with it and use your earth path main battle strength.”

Shi Lei was not an ignorant person, he did not hesitate as he said: “Alright, I have already used my transformation path battle strength to kill an astral wind flying heavenly boar, I am satisfied. Next, I will use my true earth path cultivation and destroy this energetic walking meat tree.”

Star Lord Wan Xiang was overjoyed when he heard this, Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei was finally going to use his true strength.

But at the next moment, Shi Lei sat down on a rock in the hall, healing himself: “Star Lord Wan Xiang, hold on for now, when I remove the fire path dao marks on my body, I will use my earth path methods.”

Star Lord Wan Xiang heard this and almost scolded him in anger.

But he did not do so, Shi Lei’s request was reasonable, with fire path dao marks on him, it would interfere with and weaken the effects of his earth path Gu worms.

Star Lord Wan Xiang could only hold in his anger and agree, flying forward and facing off against the walking meat tree.

Although Star Lord Wan Xiang was heavily injured by Song Zi Xing and his foundation was damaged, he still had ingenious methods left.

Beams of starlight shot out like grand pillars, towards the walking meat tree.

The walking meat tree moved three branches to retaliate.

Star Lord Wan Xiang’s body suddenly shuddered, as five starlight clones split from his main body and together, they took up six positions, unleashing different star path killer moves and attacking the walking meat tree.

The walking meat tree was hit several times, it flew into a rage and moved more than ten branches to fight back.

Crack crack crack.

Star Lord Wan Xiang’s starlight clones were all smashed, Star Lord Wan Xiang evaded the branches coming from left and right, he quickly got into a disadvantage.

Facing off against the walking meat tree directly, he finally felt immense pressure.

Bang!

With a loud noise, Star Lord Wan Xiang could not defend himself and was sent flying. Along the way, he crashed through a thick pillar, but his momentum was not lost, as he directly flew out of the star hall.

Seeing that Star Lord Wan Xiang was gone, the walking meat tree moved its branches and assaulted Shi Lei who was sitting down.

“Useless!” Shi Lei opened his eyes, the battle intent in his golden pupils were surging, he shouted in anger as he stood up, attacking the walking meat tree.

Star Lord Wan Xiang flew a long way out of the star hall before stabilizing his body.

He wiped the blood on his lips, looking at the eighth star hall, he showed a cold smile as his scheme worked.

He sent himself flying on purpose, this way, he could force Shi Lei to fight.

“I exposed the secret of this Starry Sky grotto-heaven to you, regardless of the consequences, yet you do not even want to fight? Guh.” Suddenly, Star Lord Wan Xiang spit out a mouthful of blood.

An intense pain assaulted him.

He sucked in a breath of cold air, shock shining in his eyes: “When this walking meat tree hits me, it directly etches the dao marks of strength path into my body, causing my internal organs to suffer a huge blow!”

After realizing this, Star Lord Wan Xiang did not want to rush up foolishly to fight the walking meat tree.

“I’ll let Shi Lei fight, he is a battle maniac anyway. Under the pressure of the walking meat tree, he would need to use his full strength. I have already paid such a huge price, I should heal the injuries on my body first.”

Immediately after, Star Lord Wan Xiang summoned his Gu worms, which formed a star cloud bed. He sat on the bed as he floated in the air, healing his injuries.

After a while, he opened his eyes, the injuries on him had healed.

He first took a look at the eighth star hall, before looking down at the huge corpse of the ancient desolate beast, astral wind flying heavenly boar. He then looked at the other areas of the battlefield, seeing the other desolate beast corpses.

He hesitated, although he wanted to take all of the corpses first, considering Shi Lei’s feelings, he had to dispel this thought.

“Forget it, I do not need to give Shi Lei an excuse later to make things difficult. In any case, there is no one else in this grotto-heaven, I should battle now and deal with the current situation.”

Thinking of this, Star Lord Wan Xiang retrieved the star cloud bed Gu and flew away, entering the eighth star hall after traveling a short distance.

In the thick lush forest, Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan, who had concealed their auras, sighed in relief.

“Fang Yuan, the Gu worms that you left behind successfully deceived the enemy!” Hei Lou Lan said excitedly.

“My method can only create a hologram, it cannot deceive a proper investigation. Quick, let’s not talk about this anymore, we should make this part of our earnings first!” Fang Yuan did not want to indulge in self praise, he moved ahead and sneaked towards the corpse of the astral wind flying heavenly boar.

The two quickly got to the side of the astral wind flying heavenly boar corpse.

The astral wind flying heavenly boar corpse was tall like a small hill, it cast a huge shadow on the ground.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan purposely detoured, hiding under the shadow, waiting for the appropriate moment to strike.

They first inspected the wild Gu on the astral wind flying heavenly boar’s body.

There were many wild Gu originally, but after the battle with Shi Lei, more than half were destroyed. After the flying boar died, much of the remaining half escaped, very few were left.

After Fang Yuan completed his search, he started to collect the astral wind flying heavenly boar’s soul.

The desolate beast corpses they encountered earlier had no souls. Maybe because they had died for a long time, their souls had flown away from their bodies, but the more likely reason was that Shi Lei or Star Lord Wan Xiang had taken them.

This astral wind flying heavenly boar had not been looted yet because the battle had just ended, thus Fang Yuan had a chance.

But the result was very disappointing.

This astral wind flying heavenly boar’s soul was heavily injured, only a little bit was left. Evidently, during the earlier battle, it was attacked by methods directed at the soul.

“No wonder the star path Gu Immortal earlier did not fly here to collect the soul of this boar.” Fang Yuan sighed, he willed and mobilized several hundred Gu worms.

These Gu were from light path and dark path, while a small number were from strength path, blood path, bone path, and qi path.

Under Fang Yuan’s control, these Gu worms flew around the surface of the astral wind flying heavenly boar’s body, going round and round as Fang Yuan nodded to Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan was prepared since long ago, once Fang Yuan gave the signal, she used the tens of Gu worms prepared earlier.

Using these Gu worms, the astral wind flying heavenly boar corpse was quickly pushed into Hei Lou Lan’s immortal aperture in a short time.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan activated the several hundred Gu worms, remaining at the same spot as they continued to fly in the same manner as earlier.

They gave out bursts of light and shadow, forming into one figure, it was the image of the astral wind flying heavenly boar, it was very realistic! Simply looking at it, one would think this was really the astral wind flying heavenly boar in front of them.

“Your method is really good.” Hei Lou Lan praised again.

Earlier, Star Lord Wan Xiang felt nothing wrong, he was deceived by this method.

Fang Yuan shook his head: “This simple method cannot deceive proper investigation. If I can elevate it to a killer move, the effect would be better.”

“Oh no.” Hei Lou Lan suddenly froze, she pointed at one area and noted to Fang Yuan: “You have a flaw here!”

Fang Yuan looked over and indeed, on the image of the astral wind flying heavenly boar, the anus was missing.

How could the flying heavenly boar not have an anus?

This was indeed a huge flaw.

Fang Yuan quickly manipulated his Gu worms, adjusting the image and forming the anus.

But Hei Lou Lan said: “Not good, not good, now that the anus is here, the penis is gone.”

Fang Yuan looked and was embarrassed: “The astral wind flying heavenly boar is too high level of an existence and has a gigantic body, my methods cannot replicate it fully, this is the limit. To create something, it will have to lose something.”

Hei Lou Lan nodded, her tone was grand and fearless: “Then stop changing it, keep the penis and discard the anus, that is more realistic.”

Fang Yuan followed what she said and changed the image back.

“Hey, Fang Yuan, aren’t you proficient in researching killer moves? When we go back, you should raise this to the level of a killer move, that would make it easier to use.” Hei Lou Lan said in amusement.

“Do you think we will still encounter such good things later? This method is sufficient, we do not need to make it a killer move.” Fang Yuan shook his head, before raising it and looking at the sky.

The roof of the star hall only had a small hole earlier, but now holes were all around the star hall.

All of the explosion sounds were even louder than before.

As he was looking, a broken tree flew out of the star hall.

With a loud bang, the giant tree’s branches crashed onto the ground, causing the ground below Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan’s feet to tremble violently.

Next, the other half of the giant tree, the crown, also collapsed.

“This is a walking meat tree!” Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan opened their eyes which were shining brightly

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 722: Zombie Dragon

Walking meat tree was a legendary plant that was recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> Chapter Three, Section Sixteen states:

Ren Zu’s third son — Northern Dark Ice Soul was revived by unexpected Gu and was wandering outside. After encountering his sister, Desolate Ancient Moon, he gave her a new meaning in life.

Next, under the guidance of wisdom Gu, the brother and sister came to the blue sea to search for the life gem that could revive their father, Ren Zu.

In the end, Desolate Ancient Moon sensed the mysteries behind life and sacrificed herself, being turned into a damaged life gem.

Northern Dark Ice Soul carried the life gem as he attempted to return to his father, to revive Ren Zu.

But it was extremely difficult for him to enter the door of life and death.

The door of life and death had two routes, one was the road of life, the other was the road of death. No matter which path it was, there would be a lot of suffering Gu.

To overcome the interference of the suffering Gu, to enter deep into the door of life and death, he would need the help of courage Gu.

But because courage Gu had already been taken by Ren Zu and was currently with him, Northern Dark Ice Soul did not have courage and could not enter the door of life and death. He had no methods left and could only wander around and search for a method to resolve this.

He walked past tall mountains, travelled through streams, ran for his life under the assault of wild beasts, and had gone hungry during the intense cold, he had suffered a lot.

Northern Dark Ice Soul was filled with guilt and anxiety.

He was guilty because he was the one who gave Desolate Ancient Moon her meaning in life, but that caused her to sacrifice herself and become the life gem. Northern Dark Ice Soul was the murderer who indirectly caused his sister’s death.

He was anxious because even though he had the life gem, he was unable to return to his father’s side. He was afraid that if a long time passed, his father’s soul might collapse in Luo Po valley, causing Desolate Ancient Moon’s sacrifice to be in vain.

He walked and walked, until the purple sky above him faded and became black.

Originally, the immemorial nine heavens, white, red, orange, yellow, green, azure, blue, purple, black, would take turns to loom over the five regions at set intervals.

The sky of the Immemorial Antiquity Era was connected to the ground.

Heaven and earth were connected and whole, people could walk towards the sky from the ground, or walk towards the ground from the sky.

Northern Dark Ice Soul was walking aimlessly, unknowingly, he left the ground and walked towards an area deep within black heaven.

It was complete darkness inside black heaven, but it was not desolate, there were large numbers of life forms there.

Northern Dark Ice Soul was inside the darkness and could not find a way back, he was flustered, scared, and lost.

He could not tell what direction to walk, he tripped many times and fell. Suddenly, he saw a lump of fire ahead of him.

This was the only source of light in the entirety of black heaven.

Northern Dark Ice Soul was overjoyed, he quickly walked towards the fire.

When he got close to the lump of fire, he realized it was a Gu.

Northern Dark Ice Soul was very curious, he asked: “What Gu are you, you can actually give out light in black heaven. Help me, I want to leave black heaven, heading back to the ground, I have very important things to do.”

The Gu’s voice was very weak, it said to Northern Dark Ice Soul: “My name is fire, who are you?”

Northern Dark Ice Soul said: “I am a human, my name is Northern Dark Ice Soul. Can you help me? With your light, I will be able to see the way, and return to the ground.”

The Gu sighed: “So you are a human. I’ve heard of a famous human before, he is called Verdant Great Sun.”

Because Verdant Great Sun had reputation Gu, his name was spread in the entire world, there was almost nobody that did not know him.

Northern Dark Ice Soul was overjoyed: “That’s right, Verdant Great Sun is my big brother.”

Fire Gu said: “I can help you. But before I help you, you have to help me. I am too hungry, I am going to die of starvation. Go find me some food first.”

Northern Dark Ice Soul asked: “Oh, fire Gu, what do you eat? This place is completely dark, how can I find what you need to eat?”

Fire Gu said: “I am the least picky Gu worm in the entire world, I can eat almost anything. I will eat whatever you feed me.”

Northern Dark Ice Soul searched around, finding some tree branches and throwing them towards fire Gu.

After fire Gu ate, it started to shine more brightly, it was giving off a warmer light and it also grew from the size of a fist to around the size of a basin.

It was very happy: “Can you bring me more food?”

Northern Dark Ice Soul nodded and looked around, finding a pile of rocks and throwing them at fire Gu.

After eating for some time, fire Gu sighed: “Sigh, I was way too hungry, my teeth are not working well now. The things I could chew before, I can’t chew them now. Bring me some stuff that are easy to digest.”

Northern Dark Ice Soul thought about it: “How about this, fire Gu, follow me and light the way. Along the way, whatever you feel like eating, I will feed to you, is that alright?”

Fire Gu agreed and condensed into a small lump, letting Northern Dark Ice Soul hold it.

Like this, Northern Dark Ice Soul left on his return journey, along the way, he fed many things to fire Gu.

After a while, fire Gu grew larger.

On this day, Northern Dark Ice Soul was resting, fire Gu was eating branches in front of him while swaying with the wind.

Suddenly, countless footsteps could be heard, Northern Dark Ice Soul looked and saw a huge group of trees shining under the light of the fire, they were running towards him in huge numbers.

Not just trees, there were also countless wild beasts and insect groups.

Northern Dark Ice Soul was extremely scared, he quickly picked up fire Gu and ran.

Behind him, the trees, wild beasts, and insect groups were chasing. Wherever Northern Dark Ice Soul went, they followed.

The pursuers shouted: “Whoever is in front, stop running.”

“We do not want to harm you, we just want to escape into the light.”

“Dream realms are about to reach us, please help us and let us live under the light of the fire.”

Northern Dark Ice Soul was breathing roughly, he could not run any further, seeing that he was about to be caught, fire Gu said: “Oh human, don’t be afraid, these pursuers are my food, let me help you. Just toss me there.”

Northern Dark Ice Soul was forced by the circumstances, he could only listen to fire Gu and toss it towards them.

What fire Gu first encountered were a huge group of trees.

These trees were walking meat trees. The branches were made of meat, they resembled the tentacles of octopuses.

Fire Gu burned all of these trees, turning the trunks into ashes, and branches into cooked meat. The smell of fragrant meat attracted Northern Dark Ice Soul and he picked up one to eat, exclaiming that it was delicious.

...

Hei Lou Lan stared with eyes wide open, looking at the broken tree trunk as well the tentacle-like branches, speaking in disbelief: “This is a walking meat tree?”

“Absolutely.” Fang Yuan nodded, his gaze was heated as well: “Right now, only black heaven and white heaven are left from the immemorial nine heavens, walking meat tree is a life form from black heaven, it is much easier to obtain than other immemorial life forms in the other heavens, after all, black heaven is still around. Seven Star Child is a rank eight Gu Immortal, he has the ability to explore black heaven, this walking meat tree was most likely something he obtained from his explorations.”

“This walking meat tree has an amazing aura, it has rank seven battle strength at least! Even more amazingly, it is a rare strength path plant.” Hei Lou Lan licked her lips, saying excitedly.

Fang Yuan was also overjoyed.

Walking meat tree was a strength path plant, the branches, trunks and leaves were all excellent materials to refine strength path Gu worms. Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were strength path Gu Immortals, they had great use for it.

But when the two were going to sneak over and take the walking meat tree, there was a huge, thunderous explosion in the sky.

This was an unprecedentedly large explosion, it shook the sky as a formless sound wave spread out intensely.

The eighth star hall shook harshly, it also broke apart as large amounts of starlight dispersed, it was in a half ruined state.

Roar—!

The roar of a dragon could be heard, not any softer than the explosion earlier.

Next, Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan saw Shi Lei and Star Lord Wan Xiang fly out of the star hall.

A huge dragon flew out of the star hall.

This dragon was hundreds of meters long, it was eerie and ominous, the dragon horn on its head was like silver, the dragon’s eyes were half open, and the scales were like grey rocks. There were eight dragon claws that were fearsome and powerful, pale white zombie energy was coiling around its body like a mist.

“Is this... a zombie dragon?” Hei Lou Lan exposed the identity of this dragon.

Zombie dragon was not an immemorial life form.

After fate Gu was broken by Red Lotus Demon Venerable, souls in the world were no longer sucked directly into the door of life and death, thus zombies were born.

A zombie dragon was formed after a giant dragon died, if its soul did not leave the body, it would undergo a transformation and become a zombie dragon.

“This zombie dragon has eight claws, it should have been an immemorial desolate beast when it was alive, having rank eight battle strength. Now that it is dead, becoming a zombie dragon, it has battle strength at the peak of rank seven, no wonder Shi Lei was forced out of the star hall.” Fang Yuan analyzed.

In the air, the zombie dragon was growling as its body twisted, flying towards Shi Lei.

The dragon opened its mouth and shot out a stream of pale white zombie fire.

Dragon fire was a primary form of attack of the giant dragon, that was a natural ability for them, like the horns of a bull, the paws of a bear, or the stinger of a bee.

Wariness shone in Shi Lei’s eyes, he did not dare to receive the attack head on. He continued to fly to the left, after dodging the zombie fire, a huge dragon tail entered his vision.

Shi Lei opened his eyes wide as he placed both arms in front of him, defending his chest.

He could not dodge it!

In Fang Yuan, Star Lord Wan Xiang and Hei Lou Lan’s vision, they saw that the zombie dragon had elegantly moved in the air, turning its huge body and swinging its tail, directly crashing it into Shi Lei who had dodged the zombie fire.

With a loud bang, Shi Lei was sent fly harshly like a cannonball.

He crashed onto a point partway up a mountain, entering deep into the mountain rocks. The entire mountain was shaking as rocks fell from above, they quickly covered him up completely.

Star Lord Wan Xiang sucked in a breath of cold air, he retreated hurriedly. The zombie dragon was so powerful, this was the first time he had seen Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei in such a pathetic state.

But soon, he heard Shi Lei shouting under the pile of rocks: “Worm, you have truly angered me, have a taste of my immortal killer move. Shocking rock break!”

The sky burst open as a small hill was aimed towards the zombie dragon.

Hei Lou Lan’s eyelids were twitching: “This immortal killer move’s activation is so fast?”

Normally, the stronger the immortal killer move, the more time is needed to activate it. But Shi Lei’s shocking rock break defied common logic, not only was it strong, it could be used very quickly.

Even the zombie dragon could not dodge it.

But the zombie dragon did not want to dodge it, seeing the small hill that was approaching it, a hint of disdain flashed across the dragon’s eyes.

With a loud bang, the zombie dragon raised its head and rammed into the small hill.

Shi Lei’s immortal killer move had no effect.

“Good, such an opponent is what I like!” Shi Lei was shocked and excited, he shot up into the sky and crashed into the zombie dragon.

The human and dragon engaged in the sky, winds were blowing and clouds were in turbulence, heaven and earth were changing colors.

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk: “This zombie dragon is not simple, it seems that defensive immortal Gu worms had been used on its body before.”

“Then what do we do now?” Hei Lou Lan was very troubled: “Under their watchful eyes, there is no way we can get the walking meat tree.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 723: Shocking Appearance of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable

In the sky, the human and dragon were engaging in battle, with loud explosions, the battle was entering its climax.

Star Lord Wan Xiang was at the side, he could not interfere at all.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were hiding in the forest on the ground, they were observing the fighting and awaiting their chance.

The huge dragon roared, zombie energy was bursting from it as the famous expert of Central Continent, Shi Lei, was in a disadvantage.

“This zombie dragon is incredible, when it was alive, it was a wind path azure dragon, after becoming a zombie dragon, not only does it have wind path and dark path dao marks, its speed is even amplified by Immortal Gu.” After observing the battle, Hei Lou Lan gradually understood the situation.

“Starry Sky grotto-heaven’s owner, Seven Star Child, originally had a wind path Immortal Gu, called wind sprint Immortal Gu. But using this Gu required immortal essence. According to rumors, Seven Star Child had once developed a killer move that could apply the effects of the Immortal Gu on another target for a long period of time. Looking at this now, it seems the rumors were right.” Fang Yuan added.

The zombie dragon’s defense and movement were boosted by Immortal Gu, it was experienced in battle and its giant dragon body could strike with huge force. Manipulating its tail while flying, it gave off an unrestrained aura.

Most importantly, the zombie energy dragon flames were very powerful, they were on par with the highest tier of mortal killer moves.

Shi Lei continued to shout as he used near ten different battle tactics, but he could not change the situation. Often, when he took back some of the initiative, the zombie dragon would suppress him again.

The zombie dragon had no weakness in attack, defense, or movement, it had an all-around advantage.

Hei Lou Lan’s expression turned heavy as she watched, she said solemnly: “Shi Lei’s battle strength far surpasses my estimation! If it had been me, facing the attacks of the zombie dragon, I would only last for a moment before getting killed by it. If it was you, Fang Yuan, unless you could use myriad self, you would only hold on for a while longer than me, there is no way of winning.”

Fang Yuan did not rebuke her, Hei Lou Lan’s assessment was very reasonable.

Although she was a strength path extreme immortal, because of her life experiences, she was not arrogant at all, she was humble and vigilant, she understood her own strength clearly.

The reason why Fang Yuan could last longer than her was because of his flying attainment, as well the movement killer move true solid bat wings.

But even if Fang Yuan’s speed surpassed Hei Lou Lan, without the killer move myriad self, he could not pose a threat to the zombie dragon. He could only run away, as icy drill stardust could not cause damage to the zombie dragon, he had no way to win.

Although Hei Lou Lan had strength path Immortal Gu, and half an offensive immortal killer move, her offense surpassed Fang Yuan but her movement speed and defense were her weaknesses. Although she could cause damage to the zombie dragon, it would not take a beating without fighting back, once they fought, Hei Lou Lan would not last as long as Fang Yuan.

Those who were called experts not only had battle strength, they also needed great insight.

Looking at information and knowing if they could do it or not, whether they could win or not. That was the ability to assess a situation and know one’s own limits.

Without these abilities, even if one had great strength, they would not go far.

Knowing whom they could offend, know whom they could not afford to offend, knowing when to battle or retreat... retreating was not cowardly, it was treasuring one’s own life, awaiting the time where they could soar towards success!

“In this situation, we have no way of succeeding. We should leave the walking meat tree there, I suggest we retreat.” Fang Yuan said.

Hei Lou Lan nodded: “That was my intention as well, nobody can predict any accidents in battle. Even if we stay here and take a risk of getting discovered, we cannot do anything anyway, we should withdraw towards a safer location.”

The two came to an agreement and retreated stealthily.

Their advantage was that they were in the dark while their enemies were out in the open, they could afford to watch on the sidelines. Right now, the enemies were stronger than them, they had to hold onto this advantage.

After they retreated to a safe distance, Hei Lou Lan suddenly said: “Actually, I have a question — how did they get in?”

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone: “I was thinking about this question too. The area near the star hall that we came in from did not have any investigative Gu worms around, that is not the usual behavior of Gu Immortals.”

“In this case, we can deduce that they did not come from a star hall. This area is the place where they first arrived in. To enter someone else’s blessed land or grotto-heaven, the most usual method is to follow cracks and loopholes, or Gu worms like connecting heaven Gu and hole earth Gu.” Hei Lou Lan continued.

“It is unlikely for them to use hole earth Gu or connecting heaven Gu, after all, both sides need to agree for that to work. This Starry Sky grotto-heaven is quite strange, the heavenly spirit has not shown up yet, after being here for so long, we have not faced any obstacles as well. And if Shi Lei’s group was able to gain access normally, they would not be fighting so intensely.” Fang Yuan said.

“Thus, it is most likely that they used a loophole or crack.” Hei Lou Lan laughed.

A dark light shined in Fang Yuan’s eyes, he spoke what Hei Lou Lan was thinking but did not say out loud: “They are not like us who have Fixed Immortal Travel, so be it if they have other space path Gu worms. But if they really came in from a loophole, we can use this to ambush them or plot against them, we might have a huge profit from it!”

If Star Lord Wan Xiang and Shi Lei heard this, they would definitely be breaking out in cold sweat.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were demons full of evil ideas, most importantly, they could keenly analyze and would not give up on any minute clues, they even managed to guess Shi Lei’s and Star Lord Wan Xiang’s method of entering the grotto-heaven.

But just as Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were about to search for the loophole, the battle in the sky changed.

Shi Lei had been fighting for a long time, suppressed by the zombie dragon the whole time, he was growling in anger.

He quickly moved back as he pulled some distance, his body started shaking.

Immortal battlefield killer move — Rolling Rock Battlefield!

The sky was changing, turning into a grey rock battlefield. The battlefield rapidly expanded, covering the zombie dragon and Shi Lei.

From outside, it looked like a huge grey rock cloud was hanging in the sky, it completely blocked any vision from outside.

Hei Lou Lan’s and Fang Yuan’s hearts shuddered.

Hei Lou Lan thought: “An amazing method, it actually is an immortal level battlefield killer move, to form such a killer move, he needs to use at least three Immortal Gu, and these Immortal Gu need to be connected in some way.”

Fang Yuan was thinking: “Rolling rock battlefield! In my previous life, Vicious Lightning Fiend lost to this move. To think that Shi Lei has already obtained this method at this time.”

At the same time, Star Lord Wan Xiang was thinking: “Shi Lei is going to fight the zombie dragon to the end! What should I do? There are no longer any ancient desolate beast guards inside the eighth star hall, the battlefield killer move also isolates the inside and outside of the domain... I, should I explore the eighth star hall first?”

The more Star Lord Wan Xiang thought about it, the more he was moved.

After a dozen breaths of time, he could not control it anymore, he turned into a shooting star and flew into the eighth star hall.

“Huh?”

“Eh?”

Seeing Star Lord Wan Xiang move so swiftly, Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan stopped their current plans.

The two were familiar with people’s thought processes, they had keen perception, they immediately guessed the possibility that the star hall’s defenses were no longer a threat!

“Let’s bet on it.”

“Do you dare to bet on it and charge in?”

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan transmitted at the same time, they flew up and towards the eighth star hall.

The two came to the eighth star hall and found the ravaged battlefield. There were three defenses in the eighth star hall, the first was the astral wind flying heavenly boar, the second was the walking meat tree, and the third was the zombie dragon.

After the three defenses were gone, one could enter the deepest area of the star hall.

The two used their defensive killer moves at the same time, moving together deep into the star hall.

Soon, they found the inner hall.

The inner hall’s doors were opened, as Star Lord Wan Xiang was already inside.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan did not dare to waste their precious time, they hid their figures and stepped into the inner hall.

At the next moment, they saw Star Lord Wan Xiang.

Star Lord Wan Xiang was in a strange condition, his back was facing Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan as he stood on the spot, shivering as if he was filled with extreme fright.

“Immortal Venerable, please spare me!!” Suddenly, he shouted with a tone filled with fear, he directly knelt on the ground, he was begging for mercy!

Before him was deep darkness.

The lights in the inner hall were not lit, there was no light source, Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan could only see the figure of a huge throne.

“Immortal Venerable?!” Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan looked at each other.

“Hmph, acting mysterious.” Soon after, Fang Yuan snorted coldly as he walked forward.

Hei Lou Lan followed behind.

At the next moment, their pupils shrunk to pin size as their bodies froze like a rock.

A woman’s figure appeared before them.

She was wearing a dark blue robe, her hair was dazzling like the milky way, drooping down. She looked down from above as she pointed at Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan: “You two juniors are simply too daring, you dare to offend Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, quickly kneel down!”

The aura of rank nine was overwhelming, she was the real deal!

...

Central Continent, Spirit Affinity House, Bai Qing blessed land.

The sunlight pierced the window as it shone on a small building on a mountain.

In the small building, there was a warm and comfortable bed, on it was a woman sitting in a meditating position.

This woman had inborn beauty like that of a flower, she had white skin and a straightly pointed nose with red lips, she wore a phoenix coronet as she appeared elegant and grand, incapable of being profaned. She was Feng Jin Huang.

Because of dream wings Immortal Gu, she had gotten into a strange state where she had not woken up for a very long time, all of the Gu Immortals in Spirit Affinity House could do nothing to help her.

A small sparrow was chirping as it flew onto the window from a tree branch outside.

As if she had heard this, Feng Jin Huang’s eyelashes suddenly moved.

Soon after, she opened her eyes, she had woken up.

“Huang Er, my Huang Er, you have finally woken up!!” Almost at the same time, Feng Jin Huang’s mother, Fairy Bai Qing, appeared in the building. Looking at Feng Jin Huang who had woken up, she was overjoyed and in tears, she hugged Feng Jin Huang tightly.

“Mother, Huang Er was unfilial, I have worried you.” Feng Jin Huang hugged Bai Qing as she consoled her maturely.

“All is fine as long as you are alright, Huang Er, are you injured, do you feel anything wrong?” Fairy Bai Qing was worried, she touched Feng Jin Huang’s face and shoulders, checking everywhere.

“It is not a problem mother! This time, I have found the true use of dream wings Immortal Gu. It can bring me into dream realms!” Feng Jin Huang said.

“Dream realms?” Fairy Bai Qing was shocked.

At the next moment, she reacted, her pupils expanded as she showed some uncertain joy, she grabbed Feng Jin Huang’s shoulders: “Daughter, are you sure? It really is about dream realms?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 724: Pitiful Dreamer, Precarious Situation in Dream

“That’s right.” Feng Jin Huang nodded with certainty: “Using dream wings Immortal Gu, I traveled in a dream realm, I encountered many life forms. I met many people, there were Gu Masters and ordinary people. I saw many wild beasts, tigers, wolves, rabbits, rats, I even found a desolate beast iron crown eagle, I watched it grow up from birth. In the end, I came across an old man, he had a strange temperament, constantly muttering to himself, saying that he is called Kong Jue, he often killed people and dissected their corpses, it was terrifying. He even tried to block my way, I could only dodge left and right and had to escape for a long time. Otherwise, I would have woken up long ago.”

When Feng Jin Huang first spoke, she had an excited and agitated tone, but when she mentioned Kong Jue, her tone became grim and she felt some lingering fear.

Fairy Bai Qing heard this and stared straight at her daughter.

“Mother, what’s wrong?”

Only when Feng Jin Huang was starting to get worried and asked did Fairy Bai Qing breathe in deeply, her eyes showing extreme happiness: “Huang Er, your opportunity has come! It seems you truly entered a dream realm!! The Kong Jue that you mentioned is likely to be Old Immortal Kong Jue, in history, he was one of the Three Olds, along with Old Eccentric Tian Nan and Long Hair Ancestor. The so called Three Olds were the three refinement path supreme grandmasters over the long course of history!”

“No wonder I felt that Kong Jue was so familiar when I heard the name.” Feng Jin Huang realized at once, but then her beautiful face showed some confusion: “But why did I encounter Old Immortal Kong Jue? Why did he want to capture me? Why is it that after I woke up, I felt that there are a lot of refinement path methods in my mind, my recognition of certain Gu worms became clearer, and when I see a Gu worm, I would think of its refinement recipe, the materials needed, the funds necessary for the refinement and so on?”

“Great fortune! This is your great fortune...” Fairy Bai Qing raised her head and sighed, tears were almost about to fall from her eyes.

“Mother, what is this dream realm, why is it so magical?” Feng Jin Huang asked again.

Fairy Bai Qing let out a breath of cloudy air, she calmed her emotions and said gently: “Regarding dream realms, mother does not know much either, but the earliest record of a dream realm is written in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.”

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, Chapter Three, Section Sixteen states: Ren Zu’s third son, Northern Dark Ice Soul had entered a deep part of black heaven, obtaining fire Gu.

He was chased by many life forms inside black heaven, left without a choice, he tossed fire Gu towards them to protect himself.

Fire Gu lit up many of the walking meat trees, and the fire spread out to ignite many of the wild beasts’ bodies.

At once, life forms were crying out as the light of the flames burst out brightly.

“So many delicious things, so many delicious things!” Fire Gu shouted in excitement, it was no longer weak like before, it was tall and imposing, there was even a hint of ruthlessness and madness in its tone.

Northern Dark Ice Soul was shocked: “Fire, oh fire, how did you become so huge?”

“I said, I am the least picky when it comes to food, I can eat almost anything. Fire can draw out more fire, a spark can create a forest fire.” Fire Gu shouted proudly as it answered.

Suddenly, the flame rose up like a wall, moving towards Northern Dark Ice Soul.

Northern Dark Ice Soul quickly took a step back.

Fire Gu laughed loudly: “Oh human, do not be scared! You saved me, you are my benefactor, you are my friend. They are afraid of me, but they need me to deal with those dream realms, thus they imprisoned me and starved me. Only you helped me, thus you are my true friend, from now on, if you have any difficulties, you can count on me!”

Northern Dark Ice Soul’s heart was eased, he said happily: “That would be great, my friend.”

“Friend!” Fire Gu laughed loudly, it turned into a form of a human as it opened its arms, wanting to give Northern Dark Ice Soul a hug.

Northern Dark Ice Soul jumped back in fear: “Oh fire, excessive fervor is the fire of self-immolation, let’s keep a distance between us.”

Fire Gu had no choice but to stop its actions, it spun around Northern Dark Ice Soul as he said: “Oh human, you are so weak, you are not fun.”

Northern Dark Ice Soul was surrounded in flames, he quickly waved his hand: “Don’t get too close, don’t get too close. It is so hot, way too hot, leave a path open for me to walk out.”

Fire Gu had to open a path for Northern Dark Ice Soul to walk out of, after he walked for several hundred steps, he looked back at the blazing sea of fire with a sigh of relief.

But at this time, a wild beast came out from the shadows behind him, swallowing Northern Dark Ice Soul in one mouthful.

“That is a dream realm! There are so many dream realms, they are catching up!”

Many life forms shouted as they escaped.

“Quickly release my friend!” Fire Gu shouted in anger, pouncing towards the beast group of dream realms.

The dream realm beast group shrunk when shone by the light of the fire, they rapidly melted like a candle. They growled and scattered all over the place.

Fire Gu continued to eat along the way, it spread towards the dream realm that consumed Northern Dark Ice Soul.

The dream realms were escaping, but fire Gu was chasing behind them.

Among the escaping dream realms, the larger their bodies, the stronger they were, and the faster they ran away, soon, they pulled some distance from fire Gu.

As it turned out, the dream realms used the emotions and desires of their prey to strengthen themselves.

Northern Dark Ice Soul, who was swallowed by a dream realm, had a huge desire to survive, at the same time, his greatest goal was to revive his father.

In addition, he was filled with anxiety and was afraid he would not make it. He was also filled with guilt and regret, because Desolate Ancient Moon died due to him giving her a meaning in life.

One could say that Northern Dark Ice Soul was the best prey for the dream realms.

The dream realm who swallowed him grew rapidly, fire Gu growled loudly in anger, but it was getting closer to the dream realm.

Northern Dark Ice Soul was deep inside the dream realm, he had fallen asleep, in his dream, he saw Desolate Ancient Moon reviving and smiling to him, calling him a good brother and saying she forgave him, and that she knew he did not do it intentionally.

He saw that he was at the door of life and death, successfully saving his father, Ren Zu. Ren Zu praised him: You are indeed my good son, if not for you, father would not have revived.

Northern Dark Ice Soul’s face was filled with a blissful smile.

And like that, many days passed.

The sea of fire was still burning intensely, it spread all over black heaven as it finally blocked all of the dream realms which were escaping.

Under the burning of the flames, the dream realm quickly melted as Northern Dark Ice Soul fell onto the ground, waking up from his dream.

He suddenly understood that everything in his dream was fake, his happiness was not real, what he faced was a burning hot fire Gu. But his face was filled with tears, he felt an extreme cold that was piercing into his bones.

He cried out loud, questioning fire Gu: “Why, why did you wake me up? I still want to dream, I want to be eaten by the dream realm!”

Fire Gu reminded him helplessly: “Oh human, you must know, dreams are often the opposite of reality, they are fake.”

“I don’t want to listen, I don’t care.” Northern Dark Ice Soul cried out as he covered his ears and shook his head.

Fire Gu was anxious: “I am your friend, I do not want...”

Northern Dark Ice Soul interrupted it before it finished: “Since you are my friend, you should not restrict me or obstruct me!”

“Sigh...” Fire Gu let out a long sigh, it fell into silence, giving Northern Dark Ice Soul a path leading out without a better choice.

Northern Dark Ice Soul quickly ran out, wanting to find another dream realm within the darkness to have him eaten once again.

...

Central Continent, Starry Sky grotto-heaven.

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!!!” Facing this person, Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were tongue-tied, they were shocked and dazed.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, one of the ten venerables in the history of Gu Masters.

Legends regarding her had been passed down even until this day.

She was a rarely seen female rank nine Gu Immortal, the founder of wisdom path, and the creator of star path. She was the second generation reigning immortal of Heavenly Court, even after death she plotted against three Demon Venerables, protecting Heavenly Court from danger.

Now that she was standing in front of Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan, she looked down arrogantly as her grand aura of rank nine burst out towards them.

“What is going on? Star Constellation Immortal Venerable? She is still alive?!” Hei Lou Lan gritted her teeth, feeling an immense pressure. Even if she had great confidence, and was a formidable person plotting to kill her own father, at this moment her body was shaking as she faced an intense trial of her will.

After all, the other party was at the peak of Gu Masters, a rank nine Gu Immortal, the legendary Star Constellation Immortal Venerable that she had heard about since a young age.

Hei Lou Lan could not help but feel her legs go soft, while Star Lord Wan Xiang in front of her was already kneeling on the ground, kowtowing as he begged for mercy.

The aura of rank nine was undeniable. But Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, his eyes shining with ruthlessness: “This feeling? This feeling! This is actually... this is actually a piece of a dream realm?!”

He could only growl in his mind, he could not produce any sound.

He could not move at all, under the pressure of the rank nine aura, he felt like an ant that was sealed inside amber.

Under the intense threat of life and death, Fang Yuan felt a strong sense of danger in his heart.

“I have to get out of this dream realm, otherwise, all of my plans after rebirth would come to a halt. My plan for eternal life would end here! True solid bat wings, detonate now!!”

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, at the crucial moment, he decided to make a sacrifice.

The bat wings that he had transplanted after much effort detonated under Fang Yuan’s resolute decision.

An intense sense of pain assaulted him, turning into a formless energy that protected Fang Yuan’s entire body.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gasped lightly, looking at Fang Yuan deeply: “An immortal zombie, yet so fascinating.”

Just as she said that, under Fang Yuan’s perception, the entire scene changed, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable vanished, and the eighth star hall disappeared. What he could see was a blue robed Gu Immortal with his face facing Fang Yuan, looking up at the clear moon in the sky above the clouds.

He muttered: “Heaven has taken pity on me. I, Seven Star Child, have finally combined the seven star spaces into one, forming the unified Starry Sky grotto-heaven. I have passed another huge obstacle in my cultivation journey, I am one step closer to rank nine realm, one step closer! Hahaha, hahaha...”

Seven Star Child seemed to be unable to sense Fang Yuan’s existence, he continued to face Fang Yuan as he had no inclination to turn around.

He continued to laugh loudly, his laughter was filled with joy, even Fang Yuan was affected by it and started to feel happy.

Fang Yuan started to feel some joy in him, but his body was turning cold, like he was in an icy domain.

“Oh no! This is a dream within a dream! I had just left the dream of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, but now I am inside Seven Star Child’s dream.”

But this time, Fang Yuan had no bat wings left to detonate.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 725: Seven Star Child Awakens

“Not good! A person’s dream realm is filled with their desires and emotions. I am currently experiencing joy after hearing Seven Star Child’s laughter, it is a signal that I am starting to be infected by the dream’s emotions!” Being inside Seven Star Child’s dream realm, Fang Yuan knew the situation was terrible.

He had his previous life’s experiences, he knew about the dangers of a dream realm, if one was careless, a grand Gu Immortal could lose himself inside a dream realm, dying in the end.

At this moment, Fang Yuan had not fallen too deeply into it, to leave the dream realm, the most effective way was to stimulate himself with severe pain.

But as an immortal zombie, he had no sense of pain. If not for the fact that he had retained the sense of pain in his true solid bat wings earlier, he would have been stuck in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm.

The encounter earlier was extremely precarious. Thankfully, Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories and recognized that it was a dream realm, thus he could leave before he sunk further into it.

Fortunately, he had true solid bat wings, and the pain produced from the self-detonation exceeded the power of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream, thus Fang Yuan was pushed out of the rank nine venerable’s dream.

But just when Fang Yuan escaped from the tiger’s den, he entered the wolf’s cave.

Seven Star Child was a rank eight Gu Immortal, he did not have a prominent reputation but his battle strength would have been exemplary. Be it Fang Yuan during his previous life or Fang Yuan currently, he was not Seven Star Child’s match.

Fang Yuan had no more pain that he could inflict, he felt helpless at this moment, like he was quietly awaiting death!

“No, there has to be a way, there is another way...” Fang Yuan lips were dry, he was nervously clenching his fists.

“Huh?”

Sensing his clenched fists, a brilliant light shined in Fang Yuan’s red eyes, he was overjoyed: “There is a chance! Although Seven Star Child is rank eight, he is far inferior to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. In Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream, I could not move at all. But in Seven Star Child’s dream, I have not lost all of my movement ability yet.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan raised one arm with much difficulty.

It felt like a huge mountain was pressing on his hand, such a simple act of raising his arm became extremely difficult.

“Rise, rise up!” Fang Yuan’s veins were popping, he stared at this arm as he exerted all of his strength.

After fifteen minutes, he finally raised his hand to an appropriate degree.

With much difficulty, he slowly opened his five fingers, conjuring a lump of starlight in his palm.

There were countless icy shards in the starlight, a continuously soft explosion could be heard from them. The blue starlight shined the entire area blue.

Seeing this starlight lump, Fang Yuan had an intense feeling of joy and satisfaction.

“Oh no, I’m starting to feel the same joyful emotions as him, the deeper I am in this dream realm, the more mobility I lose.” Fang Yuan reacted, suppressing his emotions.

As he expected, his mobility had fallen greatly, he could raise his arm earlier, but now he could only move his fingers.

His hand spent a lot of effort to create a lump of starlight, this was his final hope.

“Hidden dream realms cannot be attacked using normal methods. But this piece of dream realm is different, it has already surfaced, since it can interfere with outside forces now, it can also be disrupted and destroyed by those outside forces.”

Although this piece of dream realm had Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Seven Star Child’s dreams, it had immense value, it was a huge waste to destroy it, but if Fang Yuan did not do this, he would lose his life.

He had no choice but to do this!

Fang Yuan exerted all of his strength, his five fingers trembled as the icy drill stardust flew out of his palm slowly.

Carrying Fang Yuan’s hope, the icy drill stardust slowly hit Seven Star Child’s back.

“Hahaha, I succeeded, I fused the seven stars into one. Hahahaha... guh!” Seven Star Child’s laughter came to a stop, he turned around but his body was shattering rapidly like a mirror.

Fang Yuan could only see his face clearly, his entire body had collapsed.

“A good chance!” Fang Yuan’s entire body relaxed, like the formless mountain pressing on his body had been lifted.

Fang Yuan regained his mobility and immediately retreated. If he did not move, when the dream realm recovers, he would not be able to any longer.

But Seven Star Child’s dream was much more fragile that what Fang Yuan had expected.

Not only did Seven Star Child’s body shatter, the surrounding clouds and the moon in the sky shattered. In the blink of an eye, this dream realm of Seven Star Child vanished completely.

“How could that be? My icy drill stardust is not strong, all it could do was shatter Seven Star Child’s image, he should recover very quickly. Wait, this situation... could it be?!”

A flash of inspiration appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind, he thought of a possibility.

As if responding to his thoughts, a sharp growl could be heard from within the eighth star hall, the voice creating strong sound waves: “Who? Who disrupted my sleep!”

At the deep, dark spot of the eighth star area, high up on the throne, there were two blue eyes shining brightly.

Soon after, a body of an immortal zombie resembling a mortal person stood up and stepped out, furiously looking around, fixing his gaze on Star Lord Wan Xiang, Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan.

At once, Fang Yuan felt extremely alert!

He moved his entire body and retreated quickly, he did not even have time to turn around, he directly charged out of the star hall.

“It turns out that Seven Star Child had not died, but transformed into an immortal zombie! No wonder the heavenly spirit did not appear. Hei Lou Lan, I can only help you to this extent.” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, before leaving, he fired icy drill stardust towards Hei Lou Lan.

“Worms, you court death!” Seven Star Child first went to Star Lord Wan Xiang.

He raised his leg and harshly stepped on Star Lord Wan Xiang’s back.

Bam!

With a loud boom, he created a hole in the eighth star hall, Star Lord Wan Xiang’s chest was almost entirely smashed. His injured body was like a shooting star, flying down and crashing into the forest.

Seven Star Child immortal zombie took large strides towards Hei Lou Lan.

But Hei Lou Lan was attacked by the icy drill stardust, under the intense feeling of pain and cold, she narrowly woke up from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm.

Seven Star Child immortal zombie snickered sinisterly, when he got to around fifty to sixty steps from Hei Lou Lan, he pushed with his left arm.

Hei Lou Lan had yet to react before her entire body moved back subconsciously, at the same time she raised her arms to block.

At the next moment, a huge starlight pillar shot out of Seven Star Child immortal zombie’s hand silently.

Immortal killer move – Star Billow Pillar!

The defense Hei Lou Lan created was thoroughly destroyed in the blink of an eye by the starlight pillar.

Luckily, Hei Lou Lan had obtained a crucial moment to rest, she quickly changed her direction.

Star billow pillar was a straight line attack, Hei Lou Lan narrowly escaped death and avoided the range of the pillar, retreating quickly.

Seven Star Child immortal zombie halted for a moment, before twisting his left arm and adjusting the direction of the pillar.

Hei Lou Lan dodged left and right, she narrowly avoided star billow pillar many times. Even if she was hit by the light pillar, it was not for more than three breaths of time.

After dozens of breaths, the huge starlight pillar in Seven Star Child’s hand vanished, and Hei Lou Lan successfully escaped from the eighth star hall, rapidly descending towards the forest.

When Hei Lou Lan got to Fang Yuan’s side, she could not believe that she actually escaped successfully, keeping her life!

She did not have strong defensive methods, even with the recovery speed of being a strength path extreme immortal, she could not stay in the light pillar for four breaths of time. During the process of her retreat, she was dancing on the edge of death, if there was an accident and she stayed in it for four breaths, she would have died.

Fang Yuan grabbed her arm and ran towards the deeper parts of the forest: “Quickly go! Seven Star Child immortal zombie had been trapped in that dream realm for too long, his condition is abnormal and there are few thoughts in his mind, his cognition is slow and he cannot think normally now.”

Hei Lou Lan was dragged by Fang Yuan, they concealed their figures and stealthily moved past trees after trees, running frantically in the forest.

She was still confused even now, she asked rapidly: “Dream realm! The Star Constellation Immortal Venerable that I saw earlier was also part of a dream realm? What is a dream realm?”

Suddenly, Hei Lou Lan’s voice came to a stop, seeing the icy drill stardust marks on her body, she shouted in anger: “Fang Yuan! You actually attacked me?”

“Shut up! I was saving you, without this icy drill stardust, would you be able to escape from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm? If you could not react in time, you would have been killed by Seven Star Child immortal zombie’s immortal killer move already!” Fang Yuan did not turn around, he replied in an displeased tone.

Hei Lou Lan was stunned, but she accepted his explanation.

Fierce and ambitious people were usually easily suspicious, Hei Lou Lan did not believe Fang Yuan, what she believed was the Snowy Mountain Alliance that they had.

The alliance stated that allies were not to harm or attack each other. When one side was in danger, the other party must attempt to save them to the best of their ability.

If Fang Yuan’s icy drill stardust was an attack trying to harm Hei Lou Lan, he would have died from the oath already.

Seeing that he was rapidly running, and causing pain to her arm, Hei Lou Lan understood and broke free from Fang Yuan’s grasp: “I can move myself!”

Pausing for a while, Hei Lou Lan followed behind Fang Yuan as she asked: “I will remember this favor of saving my life. The compensation that I give you should certainly satisfy you! However, what is that dream realm? As a strength path extreme immortal, I actually sunk into that dream realm with no way of resisting? Dream realm, dream realm... is it that dream realm in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>? Is it connected to Great Dream Immortal Venerable? Also, why are you running so rapidly? We have Fixed Immortal Travel.”

“Shut up!” Fang Yuan shouted, running at his full speed.

His true solid bat wings were already gone, his speed was much slower now.

“Worms that invade my territory deserve death!” At this point, Seven Star Child immortal zombie’s furious voice could be heard.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan ran as they looked up, seeing that Seven Star Child immortal zombie had already flown out of the eighth star hall, his attention was on the rolling rock battlefield that was in the air.

This was unavoidable, after all, the rolling rock battlefield was high in the air, it was massive and was like a huge poisonous tumor attached to the Starry Sky grotto-heaven, it attracted too much hostility.

Seven Star Child immortal zombie thought about it for a while, he stretched out his left arm and burst out with another star billow pillar.

An immortal level star path killer move, it crashed onto the rolling rock battlefield. The rolling rock battlefield shook intensely, but it did not break.

The star billow pillar was certainly an immortal killer move, but rolling rock battlefield was also an immortal killer move. In fact, it was a killer move formed by using three Immortal Gu that were related to each other!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 726: Retreat

Seeing that his attack did not destroy this despicable poisonous tumor, Seven Star Child immortal zombie was stunned, he opened his mouth and roared with even more anger, as his right arm pressed towards the rolling rock battlefield.

Following his action, a huge hand made of grand starlight formed and slapped the rolling rock battlefield with great force.

It was another immortal killer move!

After the attack of two immortal killer moves, the rolling rock battlefield cracked opened as a huge opening revealed the scene inside the battlefield, it had not broken apart yet.

Fang Yuan saw this and retracted his gaze, running without rest.

Hei Lou Lan let out a breath of foggy air, her worry was mostly lifted: “Alright, Seven Star Child immortal zombie is fighting Shi Lei now, this is the best situation. Fang Yuan, why are you running?!”

“Saving a person.” Fang Yuan’s reply was extremely brief and to the point.

Hei Lou Lan was curious: “Save who?”

At this time, Fang Yuan turned around a mountain wall and stepped onto a cliff, he pointed: “Him.”

Hei Lou Lan looked and saw that there was a Gu Immortal lying on a cracked rock after a trail of broken trees: “It is that star path Gu Immortal!”

The two came to Star Lord Wan Xiang, and saw that there was a huge hole on his chest. Not only was it completely pierced through, he had lost almost all of his chest, only some flesh by the two sides were holding him together.

Such heavy injuries made even Hei Lou Lan breathe in sharply.

“This is the power of Seven Star Child immortal zombie’s stomp.” Fang Yuan lowered his body and his eight arms searched Star Lord Wan Xiang’s body in turns.

After a while, Fang Yuan sighed in disappointment, thinking: “Although his body’s injuries are severe, it can be healed by paying a huge cost. But his soul was sucked into the dream realm, unless Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream was broken, this Gu Immortal’s soul can only wander inside that dream realm, or transform himself into another dream realm.”

Hei Lou Lan was standing at the side, using her investigative Gu to check, she said with some lingering fear: “There is no way to save him, even his soul is entirely missing now, don’t tell me it was because of that dream realm? If you did not save me, would I end up in that state as well?”

“What a pity.” Fang Yuan muttered, his movements did not stop: “If he was still alive, we could still gain important information from him. In fact, we could use your slavery Immortal Gu to make him become one of us, doing our bidding. We could even plot against Shi Lei, and might have a chance of killing Shi Lei without taking any risks, while also leaving us free from suspicion, obtaining the greatest benefits!”

“Hey, are you listening to my words!” Hei Lou Lan was stomping her feet in anger.

“If you have the time for that, why don’t you come and help me seal the immortal aperture in his body.” Fang Yuan’s words attracted all of Hei Lou Lan’s attention.

This was a complete rank six blessed land!

Hei Lou Lan quickly moved ahead and sent out her divine sense, but it could only move around the area outside the immortal aperture, unable to enter.

“He is dead, but he left behind his obsession, the blessed land now has a land spirit.” Fang Yuan’s eight arms were continuing to move, planting all sorts of Gu worms on Star Lord Wan Xiang’s corpse.

Star Lord Wan Xiang’s injuries continued to heal.

“I, what can I do to help?” Hei Lou Lan was stunned by the incredible techniques that Fang Yuan was using endlessly right now.

Fang Yuan’s brows were tightly locked, he was concentrating: “Sealing the blessed land is a troublesome matter, thankfully the land spirit has just been formed. I did not expect such a situation, I am lacking Gu worms now. You have to observe the battle situation up there, while communicating with treasure yellow heaven to buy these Gu worms. Remember, we cannot have a single one missing!”

Saying so, Fang Yuan transmitted his divine sense.

“I know.” Hei Lou Lan obtained a list and her face was serious.

She stood beside Fang Yuan, acting as a guard while using her own immortal aperture to communicate with treasure yellow heaven. Not just that, she even used the moving perspective cup Gu that Fang Yuan lent her to ask for help from Fairy Li Shan.

Boom boom boom...

High in the sky, Seven Star Child immortal zombie continued to attack endlessly, his immortal killer moves were unleashed as if they did not cost any immortal essence at all, he used them one after another.

The rolling rock battlefield could not take the pressure and was finally broken.

The battlefield broke apart, and the zombie dragon fell from the sky helplessly, like a dead snake with lots of injuries.

Shi Lei, who caused its injuries, was not in a good state either, he was covered in wounds, especially the one on his chest, it extended from his shoulder to his waist, the wound was so deep his bones could be seen.

Shi Lei was panting heavily, his face was pale. There was still a trace of grey white zombie fire burning on his body. In order to defeat the zombie dragon, he had paid a huge price and suffered heavy injuries.

But the more injured he was, the greater his fighting intent.

Seeing Seven Star Child immortal zombie, who was stronger than the zombie dragon, this Gu Immortal from Combat Immortal Sect laughed loudly, he did not have any fear, instead, his fighting intent was blazing like a forest fire.

“Intruder, die.” Seven Star Child immortal zombie shouted, expressionlessly pointing a finger at Shi Lei.

Immortal killer move — One Star Finger!

At the same time, Shi Lei snickered, flipping his palm.

Immortal killer move — Shocking Rock Break!

The two killer moves were attacking methods that had short activation time but great offensive power. Seven Star Child immortal zombie’s fingertip burst out with starlight, in the blink of an eye, it tore through space and pierced Shi Lei’s chest.

Meanwhile, a huge mountain rock pressed down on Seven Star Child immortal zombie, with a loud bang, Seven Star Child immortal zombie was sent crashing to the ground, buried under a small hill.

Shi Lei’s blood was spewing out in a line, from the front and back of his chest. His body shook in the air for a while, he almost fell but he managed to continue floating.

Shi Lei was stunned, the attack earlier was too fast, if he did not move his body in time, his heart would have been destroyed.

At the area of his wound, there were countless star path dao marks, as they were near his heart, blood was flowing out unceasingly. Ordinary mortal Gu could not help, even mortal healing killer moves could not do anything, but Shi Lei had his own healing Immortal Gu.

After the treatment of the Immortal Gu, Shi Lei’s injuries healed rapidly, the blood stopped spewing out, it flowed down his chest like a stream.

Right after he finished treating his injuries, the rock that was suppressing Seven Star Child immortal zombie broke apart, a huge starlight hand pressed hard and broke the rock into pieces, sending the shards flying.

Roar!

Seven Star Child immortal zombie shouted loudly, his body was covered in a multi-colored star cloak.

With a loud bang, he flew up, only leaving behind an illusory figure on the spot. The intense force caused the ground below the immortal zombie to crack, caving in to form a crater.

Shi Lei’s pupils shrunk, he was shocked by Seven Star Child’s burst of speed.

Shi Lei had just summoned his defensive Immortal Gu when Seven Star Child immortal zombie crashed towards him with a loud bang.

The Immortal Gu’s defense was nearly broken, Shi Lei spat out a mouthful of blood with his vision spinning, he was sent flying into the sky from the impact.

“Oh no, this is a movement immortal killer move!” Shi Lei could feel the wind brushing against his ears, he tried hard to open his eyes.

Whoosh!

Hearing something with his ears, Shi Lei turned around with much difficulty, only to see Seven Star Child immortal zombie covered in a robe of starlight, piercing the clouds and appearing before him.

Seven Star Child immortal zombie flew alongside Shi Lei, towards the sky.

At that moment, the immortal zombie opened his left palm, aiming it at Shi Lei’s head.

Immortal killer move — Star Billow Pillar!

Boom—!

The huge light pillar pierced the cloud layer from a high altitude, penetrating a mountain peak and causing a large area to collapse and fall apart, resulting in much dust and smoke.

A body descended from the sky like a broken sack.

It was Shi Lei.

He had endured the attack of the star billow pillar for fifteen breaths, but he was still alive and had some battle strength left. His entire head was charred black, his facial features were all blurry, like the melted wax of a candle.

Roar—!

Shi Lei opened his eyes, his golden pupils bursting out with an unprecedented ruthless light.

His heart was filled with rage, he finally used his greatest trump card.

Earth path, transformation path — dual immortal killer move — Rock Mountain Immortal Monkey King Transformation!

Seven Star Child immortal zombie charged over, but was repelled by a burst of golden light. When the giant pillar of golden light vanished, a sixteen meter tall giant monkey appeared.

The monkey had golden fur, like it was clad in golden armor. The muscles on its body were bulging like huge rocks. Its golden pupils were emitting an emotionless dominance, as the reflection of Seven Star Child immortal zombie could be seen in its eyes.

There were a pair of huge hands with red fingernails that were sharp as swords, when his fingers were extended, his hands looked like two fearsome claws.

Opening its mouth, fangs grew, in a moment, fangs were protruding out of its mouth, it was as if a demonic god had descended into the mortal world.

On one end, it was the huge Immortal Monkey King, on the other end there was the awakened immortal zombie clad in a starry cloak, the two were at a standstill, neither of them attacked yet.

Hei Lou Lan watched with her heart shaking, she knew that the moment the two of them attacked, it would be an overwhelming battle, she could not help but urge Fang Yuan: “Quick, the situation is becoming more troublesome.”

“Okay, okay. But without Immortal Gu, we can only last for seven minutes. Once the time is up, the immortal aperture will have to land on the ground and take root.” Fang Yuan was extremely busy, he felt dizzy as his eight arms stopped moving in that complex manner.

He heaved a deep sigh, looking at the sky, seeing the fearsome Immortal Monkey King, as well as the Seven Star Child immortal zombie who was surrounded by shiny starlight.

Immortal Monkey King moved his golden pupils, using his peripheral vision to look at Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan.

Fang Yuan’s concealment method could not deceive Shi Lei in his current state.

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk: “He found us. Quick, hide the corpse!”

Hei Lou Lan’s expression was solemn, she quickly dragged Star Lord Wan Xiang’s leg and tossed him into her immortal aperture.

At this time, Seven Star Child immortal zombie howled towards the sky.

His voice pierced heaven and earth, beams of starlight pillars shot down from the sky.

From the pillars, desolate beasts came out, diamond bear, flying sword rat, star desolate hound, golden pangolin...

After Seven Star Child immortal zombie started thinking again, he finally used the advantage of the grotto-heaven, he released the desolate beasts inside the seven spaces and displayed an overpowering position!

Seeing this, Fang Yuan said nothing more, activating Fixed Immortal Travel.

Immortal Monkey King’s expression changed.

Hei Lou Lan entered Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture, in just a few breaths of time, the two of them vanished.

“Fixed Immortal Travel, immortal zombie... Fang Yuan!” Three phrases appeared in Immortal Monkey King’s mind, but Seven Star Child immortal zombie charged over again. Shi Lei was bold but he was not stupid enough to continue fighting.

He flew down, towards the walking meat tree, and placed the two segments of the tree into his immortal aperture.

Boom!

A trace of starlight tore through the sky, piercing Immortal Monkey King’s huge body. It was Seven Star Child’s immortal killer move, one star finger!

After Shi Lei was hit, his body merely shook slightly, he continued to fly towards the flying heavenly boar corpse.

He had the intention to retreat already, he wanted to get his loot before leaving.

He endured Seven Star Child immortal zombie’s attacks as he flew towards the astral wind flying heavenly boar corpse, stretching out his arm to grab it, but he got nothing instead!

“What?!” Shi Lei was shocked, seeing the broken mortal Gu on his arm, he understood at once and flew into a rage, it had to be that Fang Yuan!

Bam!

At the next moment, a star billow pillar hit Immortal Monkey King directly on the back, causing him to fall onto the ground.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 727: Escape

Immortal Monkey King was hit directly by the star billow pillar, with a loud thud, he crashed on the ground, with his head facing the floor.

He growled angrily, spitting out the soil in his mouth, getting up quickly.

Shi Lei did not care about the Seven Star Child immortal zombie, he only wanted to get to the star demon bat corpse, towards the location in his memories.

He took huge steps as he ran, uprooting all of the trees in his way. He looked at the star demon bat corpse from afar, joyful to see that it was still intact.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Right at this moment, three golden lights flew over from the sky.

The golden lights were extremely fast and agile, they were three flying sword rat desolate beasts.

Shi Lei snorted coldly, he did not want to engage with them, he raised his arms and covered his face.

Clank clank clank…

The flying sword rats’ nails were as sharp as swords, they scratched Immortal Monkey King’s huge body, but no blood was seen as the soft golden monkey fur blocked the nails, emitting a loud metallic noise.

Shi Lei’s current form had outstanding defense.

The three flying sword rats did not let go of Shi Lei yet, they were small and agile, they followed him and continued to scratch and hack away at his body.

Bunches of monkey fur fell from Shi Lei’s body.

Wherever Shi Lei went, monkey fur would scatter on the ground.

“Damn rats!” Shi Lei shouted, whipping his tail and using it like a golden whip.

The flying sword rats were hit by the tail, but after they were sent flying, they returned and continued to disturb him.

Just as he was about to reach the star demon bat corpse, a diamond bear appeared.

“Scram!” Shi Lei was furious, he clenched his fists and swept with his arms, his fists were slamming horizontally as his brute force pushed the heavy diamond bear away.

The diamond bear flew in the air for a short distance, before crashing partway up the mountain. With a loud thud, its body which resembled diamonds had cracks on it, but it stood up like it was uninjured.

Desolate beasts generally had strong vitality, they were durable and sturdy existences.

Shi Lei did not want to tangle with the diamond bear, he only wanted to get back his loot.

He ignored the disturbance of the flying sword rats as he reached the star demon bat corpse and grabbed it with his hand.

The star demon bat corpse shattered, he had been deceived once again.

Shi Lei reacted quickly, shouting in anger: “Damn, what method is this? How can it look so real! Flying bear, right, there is still a flying bear here.”

Still having some hope in his heart, the golden fur giant monkey changed directions and continued to run.

Along the way, he was met with obstruction from desolate beasts, but with his brute strength, he forcefully carved out a path.

During this period, Seven Star Child immortal zombie who was in the air attacked non-stop, sending blows towards the golden fur giant monkey, even with the great defense of the Immortal Monkey King form, his skin was torn and flesh was exposed.

Shi Lei finally got close to the flying bear corpse, but he saw that there were five flying bears surrounding the corpse, some made mournful cries while others were licking the blood on the ground.

There was one which used its head to nudge the flying bear corpse, but the image flickered.

Shi Lei saw this and lost all hope, it was completely dashed as rage overwhelmed him: “It seems that all of the desolate beasts that I killed were stolen by that despicable thief Fang Yuan!! All of these are my loot, the fruits of my victory. He dared to steal my possessions, the Immortal Monkey King’s, how long has it been since such a thing has happened?”

Shi Lei’s huge body attracted the attention of the flying bears.

Grrr!

The five flying bears had bloodshot eyes as they charged towards the golden fur giant monkey.

Shi Lei did not have the mood to fight with them, at this point, he knew there was nothing to gain here, he wanted to escape.

Even though Star Lord Wan Xiang was killed and Shi Lei lost the method to leave Starry Sky grotto-heaven, he knew the location of that grotto-heaven loophole, as long as he can find that place, he could exert force and create a bigger hole, connecting to the outside world of Central Continent.

Shi Lei immediately changed directions, but he realized that while the five flying bears were still charging towards him from the front, on the left, there were three blazing divine stallions getting closer. On the right, there was a huge ghost face tortoise, and behind him were seven star desolate hounds.

In just a short while, he was surrounded by desolate beasts on all sides.

Shi Lei wanted to fly into the sky, but he looked up to see an iron crown eagle, a nine palace crane, and a qi grand lion, these three desolate beasts above him. Other than that, Seven Star Child immortal zombie was also ready to attack.

“Three desolate beasts are nothing much, but this immortal zombie…” The golden fur giant monkey’s golden pupils shined with wariness.

He lowered his head, looking around and deciding to break through from the right side.

On his right, there was a ghost face tortoise, it was like the size of three mountains, floating in the sky silently. It was the largest in build and had the most difficulty in turning around. If Seven Star Child immortal zombie continued to attack, he could use the ghost face tortoise’s huge body to act as a shield!

Shi Lei made up his mind and took a huge step forward, charging towards the ghost face tortoise.

He had transformed into the golden fur giant monkey, he was more than twice as large as Fang Yuan’s eight armed immortal zombie form. But in front of the ghost face tortoise, he was like a pearl in front of a wolf.

The ghost face tortoise growled, as countless soul beasts emerged from the holes on its shell.

The dark blue colored soul beasts formed into an army, huge in numbers, filling the sky and charging towards the golden monkey like a torrential wave.

Shi Lei fought against the flow and moved up, his fists sending all of the soul beasts in his way flying. His golden fur had great defense, although the soul beasts were huge in numbers, they were slaughtered mercilessly.

Shi Lei managed to use this soul beast army to avoid the entrapment of the desolate beasts. Only those three flying sword rats were still near him, causing small wounds from time to time.

“This immortal zombie seems to be unable to think, even though he has strength, his beasts are hindering each other, and cannot display their true power. If it was me, I would’ve attacked long ago. Who cares about the lives of the soul beasts.” Shi Lei had rich battle experience, after evading the ghost face tortoise, he had an idea and purposely slowed down.

Under the encirclement of the soul beast army, he continued to move forward. The other beasts could only stand far away, even Seven Star Child immortal zombie was staring blankly, as if he did not want to harm the soul beast army.

Finally, Shi Lei came to the opening of the loophole of the grotto-heaven.

He let out a breath of turbid air, he was just about to relax before he winced, as blood poured out from his back.

“These three accursed rats!” Shi Lei growled in anger, he turned around and raised his fist, sending the flying sword rats flying.

The flying sword rats earlier could not cause much damage, but when damage accumulated, a small injury would grow into a large one, his back’s injury was already filled with metal path dao marks.

The flying sword rats crashed onto the ground, but they quickly flew towards Shi

Lei again.

Shi Lei's eyes shone with a ruthless light, he activated an immortal killer move — Filthy Mud Robe.

The three flying sword rats landed on the filthy mud robe and could not free themselves, like they were stuck in a swamp.

Shi Lei used another move, earth's root!

From the thick filthy mud robe, countless spikes shot out, stabbing and piercing the flying sword rats.

The flying sword rats held on for over a dozen breaths of time before their tiny bodies were pierced through by hundreds of spikes, they died at the scene.

At this time, Seven Star Child immortal zombie finally reacted, he mobilized the soul beast army and ordered the desolate beasts to charge forward fearlessly.

"It is too late, fool." Shi Lei breathed in deeply, the sticky filthy mud robe on his body moved rapidly, detaching from his body and covering the grotto-heaven opening.

Shi Lei placed both his palms on the filthy mud robe, pouring a large amount of immortal essence into it.

Immortal killer move — Earth Disintegration!

The filthy mud robe scattered and flowed out, the grotto-heaven crack became a huge hole after this attack. Shi Lei could see another sky out of this huge hole.

He laughed heartily, taking a huge step and forcing his way out.

Because it was a forceful breakthrough and was not as meticulous as Star Lord Wan Xiang's methods, during the process of leaving, a huge invisible force squeezed at Shi Lei's body from all directions.

Thankfully, Shi Lei had become the golden fur giant monkey, his defenses rose by more than ten times. He resisted the pressure and went through the hole, his body was covered in blood, especially the wound caused by the flying sword rats, his flesh was mushy and large amounts of blood was oozing out.

Shi Lei sucked in a breath of cold air from the pain, he shouted in his heart: "Who dares to block my way, I am out of here! That accursed immortal zombie, I will definitely take you down. And for that Fang Yuan, the thief that stole my loot. A mere tiny rank six immortal zombie that doesn't know what is good for him, he dared to offend me! When I return, I will deal with you properly, and let you know the terrible fate for offending me!"

Thoughts flashed in Shi Lei's mind, but at this time, he heard the growls of flying bears near him.

Shi Lei quickly looked around, seeing that five flying bears had gotten extremely close to him from five different directions.

"What is going on?" He raised his head and looked, only to see six huge star shadows in the sky.

"Why am I still here? I had undoubtedly…" Shi Lei was extremely shocked, his mouth was wide open.

Seven Star Child immortal zombie looked at him as he laughed coldly: “Little monkey, did you think that my seven star space is so simple? I do have to thank you, if you did not awaken me, I might still be stuck in that dream realm. As thanks, I will bury your corpse below my most beloved mountain peak.”

By now, Seven Star Child had actually regained his senses, he could think normally again!

“This is bad.” Shi Lei’s heart sank.

Five flying bears raised their paws, attacking the golden fur giant monkey.

“Scram!” Shi Lei was just about to erupt, when starlight flickered around him, his body became heavier and his movement became slower — Seven Star Child immortal zombie had attacked.

This was only a mortal killer move, but its effect was amazing, it was even more effective than the offensive immortal killer move earlier.

At once, bear paws slammed down from all directions.

Shi Lei shielded himself on his left and right, but he was unable to protect himself thoroughly, when he finally got rid of his restraint, he rolled and escaped from the five bears. But at this time, he was already dizzy from the beating, his muscles were swollen, becoming green and purple, although he had no bone fractures, his body was aching intensely.

After Seven Star Child regained his senses, his danger level escalated intensely!

“I have no choice, I will have to seek help from the sect! Hmph, to think that I, the grand Immortal Monkey King, was forced to use seek help Gu at this moment! Where will my reputation go after this? Fang Yuan, this is all your fault, after I am saved, I will make sure you pay!!” Shi Lei shouted in his heart, he was going to puke blood from anger.

Fang Yuan not only stole his loot, causing his trip to be an overall loss, he even took away Star Lord Wan Xiang and trapped Shi Lei in this Starry Sky grotto-heaven.

Woof woof woof!

Two star desolate hounds traveled over, and the ghost face tortoise also floated ahead of him soundlessly.

Immortal Monkey King raised his head, shouting at Seven Star Child immortal zombie: “Fight me for three hundred more rounds if you have the guts!”

Seven Star Child immortal zombie laughed arrogantly: “Sure, come here.”

The golden fur giant monkey growled as sharp golden light burst out, forcing Seven Star Child immortal zombie to squint in response.

After the golden light faded, Shi Lei regained his human form, he charged into the forest and sped away rapidly.

The result was — he ran away!

He ran away!

The Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei famous for his bravery and ruthlessness in Central Continent had chosen to escape. If this was known to the outside world, who knows how many of Central Continent’s Gu Immortals would gasp in shock.

Seven Star Child immortal zombie was shocked for a while before reacting, responding angrily: “You dare to trick me? I thought you were a heroic champion who would rather battle to the death and would never give up! Escape, go ahead and run, I want to see where you can escape to in this grotto-heaven of mine?!”

Shi Lei did not say a word, he ran even faster.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 728: Star Form Blessed Land

“We are here.” Fang Yuan looked around him and gave a satisfied nod.

“Where is this?” Hei Lou Lan came out of Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

The two had used Fixed Immortal Travel to escape Starry Sky grotto-heaven and arrive at this place.

Hei Lou Lan looked around her and guessed this was either an underground cavern or inside a hollow mountain. The light was sparse, causing the place to be dark and gloomy, there were jagged rocks and the moisture in the air was very high, however it was quite spacious.

“This place is Earth Abyss.” Fang Yuan lightly replied.

“Earth Abyss?” Hei Lou Lan looked at Fang Yuan with an astonished gaze.

She was not unfamiliar with Central Continent, and knew that this Earth Abyss was located in the far west of Central Continent, and was an incomparably large underground world.

Earth Abyss was divided into tens of layers with every layer being at least hundreds of thousands of square kilometers in size. The space was extremely large and the underground world was deep and secluded. There were all sorts of caves and tunnels, some were like labyrinths, some had giant underground lakes while some had flat ground.

Earth Abyss was home to untold number of living organisms, it was full of vitality, the unique ecology was clearly different from the surface.

“Truly a great place, the earth qi is dense in Earth Abyss and will greatly reduce the time for the blessed land to fall.”

Hei Lou Lan nodded then changed the subject: “But the main headquarters of Ancient Soul Sect is in Earth Abyss. Ancient Soul Sect is one of the ten great ancient sects, it is like a colossal beast that has held dominance over the far west for thousands of years. They have occupied Earth Abyss and treat it as their own exclusive domain. If you want the blessed land to fall here, it is like planting flowers in another person’s backyard, aren’t you afraid of being found?”

Fang Yuan laughed: “Don’t worry, the depths of Earth Abyss are extremely secluded, Ancient Soul Sect has spent thousands of years but has only explored no more than eighteen layers fully, with some brief explorations up to the twenty-seventh layer. From the twenty-eight to thirty-sixth layers, only Ancient

Soul Sect’s Gu Immortals roam about occasionally. As long as we plant the blessed land below the fortieth layer, we do not need to be concerned about being discovered even if we make a large commotion.”

“Fortieth layer? I remember the exploration of Earth Abyss done by Ancient Soul Sect only found thirty-six layers?” Hei Lou Lan was astonished.

Fang Yuan snickered: “That is because they are incompetent, the depth of Earth Abyss surpasses people’s imaginations. How could it stop at thirty-six layers?”

As he said this, he recalled his previous life.

In his previous life, when Fang Yuan was rank five, endless beast tides emerged from Earth Abyss, attacking the surface and bringing disaster to Central Continent.

Ancient Soul Sect suffered the brunt of their attack, suffering such disastrous losses that their foundation was damaged.

After the beast tides charged out of Earth Abyss, they constantly drove out beast groups on Central Continent’s surface and gradually formed into an unprecedented, terrifying beast tide that spread over the whole of Central Continent.

In those years, there was great misery and suffering in Central Continent, countless small sects were destroyed like stones in the path of a flood.

The ten great ancient sects organized groups of experts and rushed everywhere to destroy the beast tide.

They spent several years before they were finally able to eradicate the beast tide from the surface. Afterwards, both righteous and demonic path Gu Masters moved together inside Earth Abyss.

Fang Yuan also entered Earth Abyss together with others and killed wild beasts, obtaining resources for his cultivation.

They purged layers after layers, and entered deeper and deeper. After entering the thirty-sixth layer, Gu Masters discovered a new passage.

Further down was an even larger underground world with territories of countless beast groups, desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts. It was a land filled with dangers everywhere.

Even when Fang Yuan had self-detonated, the exploration of the Earth Abyss had not finished. They had only discovered there were one hundred and seven layers.

Ancient Soul Sect currently occupied thirty-six layers, which was just the portion that was closest to the surface.

Fang Yuan naturally would not speak of these details to Hei Lou Lan, he only said: “Just follow me.”

Hei Lou Lan saw Fang Yuan’s confident appearance and followed him deeper into Earth Abyss.

The place they had appeared was the eighth layer. And as they moved down, they saw many of Ancient Soul Sect’s Gu Masters. These Gu Masters mostly were in groups, some were hunting wild beasts while some were gathering underground moss.

The deeper they went, the fewer the number of Gu Masters they saw while the cultivations of the Gu Masters increased correspondingly.

From rank two Gu Masters at the start to rank three to rank four.

How could these mortals have the ability to detect Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan’s traces? Even if they brushed past some Gu Masters in a narrow path, these mortals would not have been able to sense anything.

When they reached the thirtieth layer, they no longer saw mortal Gu Masters. It was a scene of darkness which greatly restricted vision, but fortunately, Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were Gu Immortals, they had all sorts of investigative Gu.

At the thirty-fifth layer, one of Ancient Soul Sect’s rank six Gu Immortals was being chased miserably by an ancient desolate beast and four desolate beasts.

This Gu Immortal had helped Fang Yuan, he and Hei Lou Lan were able to smoothly pass through the desolate beasts’ camps and enter the thirty-sixth layer.

Here, Fang Yuan walked to the key area according to his previous life’s memory.

After setting up six Gu formations, Fang Yuan pointed below his feet and said to Hei Lou Lan: “My attack power is not enough, it is better if you activate your Immortal Gu and attack this muddy ground.”

Hei Lou Lan followed Fang Yuan’s instruction, she transformed into a strength path phantom giant and punched heavily at the muddy ground three times.

Mud and stones spattered, but could not splash out of the Gu formations. Thunderous sounds echoed, but outside the Gu formations, it was a scene of tranquil silence.

The muddy ground was not completely smashed and only formed a crater that reached seventy to eighty feet.

“Continue, quickly!” Fang Yuan urged before jumping inside.

Hei Lou Lan took a deep breath and jumped inside, punching rapidly.

Under these continuous bombardments, the giant crater deepened further and after thousands of feet, it finally broke open completely, forming a hole.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan entered this hole to the thirty-seventh layer.

Hei Lou Lan was covered with sweat. She raised her head and saw that the hole was rapidly being restored under the effect of the Gu formations.

“That was the thinnest area in the thirty-sixth layer. Even so, it was nearly ten thousand feet thick.”‘ Fang Yuan explained.

“How did you discover this place?” Hei Lou Lan was filled with doubts.

Fang Yuan snickered. Due to the Snowy Mountain Alliance, he could not lie but could choose to not speak.

Hei Lou Lan saw Fang Yuan’s silence and snorted, but did not pursue it.

The thirty-seventh layer was filled with much more danger. After all, this place was completely in its raw state, Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan could be said to be among the first outsiders to explore it.

When the two finally reached the fortieth layer, the seal on Star Lord Wan Xiang finally reached its time limit.

“Your estimate was really accurate.” Hei Lou Lan placed Star Lord Wan Xiang’s corpse on the ground and gazed at Fang Yuan deeply.

At Fang Yuan’s will, hundreds of mortal Gu flew out from Star Lord Wan Xiang’s body like a swarm of locusts, they buzzed as they flew into Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

Without the layer of suppression, Star Lord Wan Xiang’s body gradually let out bright starlight.

The starlight became brighter and brighter, at the same time, the ground started to tremor.

Several breaths later, vast amounts of earth qi emerged like layers of dust accumulating on the ground.

The starlight stabilized, the piercing radiance was comparable to the sun during a summer afternoon.

A formless suction force suddenly erupted which started to absorb the surrounding earth qi. Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan had already retreated far away from the starlight.

“What is going on?”

“It is an earthquake, another earthquake!”

“Leave, the earthquake this time is quite strong, if we don’t leave now we might be buried alive.”

The Gu Masters in Earth Abyss scurried off like rats, shouting in panic as they ran as fast as they could out of Earth Abyss.

They did not feel this was strange.

The structure of Earth Abyss was not stable and there would occasionally be earthquakes or collapse of places within. It was because of this as well that Ancient Soul Sect did not spend a lot of energy to carry out explorations, even though they were in control of this place.

Large amounts of stones fell down from above, even more dangerous were those sharp stalactites that could pierce through rank three defensive Gu if they struck.

In fact, not only the Gu Masters, the numerous living beings in Earth Abyss were also in misery. Many were crushed to death by the falling stones, while others were buried alive.

To place the blessed land, Fang Yuan had brought about the death of at least a hundred thousand or more lives.

After five minutes of time, the starlight slowly stopped absorbing earth qi, and formed a large square door. The large door was completely constructed from starlight and was hovering in the air. There was a plaque on top of the door where four words were written – Star Form Blessed Land.

Hei Lou Lan let out a breath of cloudy air: “We finally succeeded, it seems our luck is not bad. The commotion was huge, but it did not lead to an attack from the wild beasts in this place.”

“Let’s go.” Fang Yuan took the lead and opened the starry entrance.

Hei Lou Lan followed closely behind. The two entered Star Form blessed land.

It was as if it was late at night in here, the sky was pitch black and filled with stars.

The dazzling starlight shone on the ground of the blessed land, the visibility was high and it was not dark.

The whole of Star Form blessed land’s terrain was like a giant basin. In the center were upwards sloping grounds while at the edge of the blessed land were continuous mountain ranges, as if forming a circular wall.

“So much star fragment grass!” Fang Yuan looked at the ground, the grass underneath him here actually entirely consisted of star fragment grass.

Star fragment grass clearly required to be planted on cloud soil, but this star fragment grass was directly planted on the black muddy ground, yet their growth was in a much better state than the ones Fang Yuan planted in Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fang Yuan sighed with praise: “This is the benefit of having a star path blessed land, growing the related plants is not only easier, but also guarantees harvest.”

Hei Lou Lan’s gaze was, however, attracted to the spinefin star dragonfish that were leisurely flying in the night sky.

She could only see three spinefin star dragonfish.

These giant dragon fish were about the size of a whale, but had the shape of a carp. There were bones protruding out of their backs that extended outwards.

Their scales were blue in color, their eyes were as large as carts, with some starry radiance in them.

However, under the keen observation of Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan, they quickly discovered some traces of battle. Not far away, large patches of plotted grass were in flames with black smoke rising up. The three spinefin star dragonfish had injuries on their body. At the far end of their sight, those continuous mountain ranges also showed unnatural holes, like cheese that was nibbled at by rats.

“It seems that this Gu Immortal had been in a fierce battle.” Fang Yuan said.

“Right, if not for my main body being heavily injured by Song Zi Xing, suffering hidden injuries to both the physical body and soul, how could my grand main body, Star Lord Wan Xiang, perish inside the eighth star hall?” A boy suddenly appeared before Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan.

His appearance was as if he was carved from jade. He was wearing pinkish blue clothes wrapped around his chest and stomach, his small arms and legs were tender white like lotus roots. He was hovering in the air, his small cheeks puffing in anger.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 729: Splitting Loot

“Star Lord Wan Xiang? It’s him...” Hearing the land spirit introduce himself, Fang Yuan revealed a flash of comprehension on his face.

“Land spirit, do you still remember me?” Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “I had bought star fragment grass and the killer move, spring star rain, from your main body previously.”

Star Form Child’s gaze flickered, he reassessed Fang Yuan as his expression became more gentle: “So it is you, I have some impression.”

“Just the land spirit alone cannot take care of the entire blessed land, I wonder if you would like to seek refuge with one of us?” Fang Yuan asked directly.

Hei Lou Lan stood at the side, showing some nervousness on her face, she stared intently at Star Form Child.

Star Form Child nodded his small head, showing some sadness, saying: “To protect this foundation, I will need the help of others. But I have my conditions.”

Although Star Form Child was formed from Star Lord Wan Xiang’s lingering obsession, it had assimilated with the blessed land and was the representative of the blessed land’s will.

If he did not have the help of other Gu Immortals, the blessed land would experience heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities again and again, until it perishes.

Any life form had an instinct for survival, even land spirits were no exception.

“Please speak.” Fang Yuan quickly asked.

Star Form Child frowned, pouting as he said angrily: “The reason my main body died in the eighth star hall was because of Song Zi Xing. He caused a huge injury to my main body, forcing me to expose my secret and explore the grotto-heaven with Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei. If you want to become this blessed land’s owner, you will need to bring me Song Zi Xing’s head!”

“Song Zi Xing’s head?” Hei Lou Lan heard this condition and laughed bitterly.

Even though she was not a person from Central Continent, she had heard of Song Zi Xing’s reputation.

Song Zi Xing was a former disciple of Myriad Dragon Dock, after getting the blood sea inheritance, he refused to hand it over and chose to betray them. In order to exterminate him, Myriad Dragon Dock sent eight Gu Immortals in succession.

Five rank six and three rank seven, in the end, four were killed by Song Zi Xing, three were crippled and one was forced to retreat.

Myriad Dragon Dock suffered a huge loss and from then on, they did not dare to attack Song Zi Xing without preparation again.

Song Zi Xing was now roaming around scot-free, he was one of the strongest experts among the demonic path in Central Continent, he had rank seven cultivation and used the blood path which was extremely powerful at fighting.

People in Central Continent publicly recognized that Song Zi Xing’s battle strength was about the same as Shi Lei, while being weaker than Feng Jiu Ge. That was because many years ago, Song Zi Xing had encountered Feng Jiu Ge and was forced to retreat after Feng Jiu Ge used three moves to utterly defeat him.

“Alright, I will give it a try.” Fang Yuan’s expression was unchanged, he agreed.

“You have to hurry, try your best! Star Form blessed land’s earthly calamity is coming soon, if I cannot get through it, the blessed land will be destroyed, it will be useless even if you meet the condition then.” Star Form Child urged.

Fang Yuan’s gaze shined: “If that is the case, I can help you resist the earthly calamity first.”

Star Form Child shook his head like it was a rattle: “I will not allow any external Gu Immortal to stay in Star Form blessed land for more than seven minutes. People’s hearts are hard to read, only my master can help me to pass tribulation. Not long after, I will use treasure yellow heaven to spread this information, and get more people to deal with that accursed Song Zi Xing!”

Hei Lou Lan’s heart sank, but she had a deeply scheming heart, her expression was still very calm.

She thought about her words as she said: “Then you have to be careful, land spirit. People’s hearts are hard to read, you might attract greedy wolves that would come and attack your blessed land directly!”

Star Form Child laughed: “Don’t worry, I am not stupid, I will not expose this location to them. Only those who meet my condition can enter Star Form blessed land. Leave, and remember not to tell others the location of this blessed land.”

The land spirit was sending the guests out, Fang Yuan did not stay forcefully, he bid his farewell and left with Hei Lou Lan using the blessed land’s entrance, back to Earth Abyss.

The moment the two of them stepped into Earth Abyss, the door behind them vanished, completely disappearing.

The blessed land was a small world, even though it was placed on the ground and took in earth qi, as long as the entrance was not open, it was very well hidden.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were silent, after getting rid of all their traces, they used Fixed Immortal Travel and returned to Hu Immortal blessed land.

They were in a safe environment now, the first thing they did was to split the loot.

“This journey into Starry Sky grotto-heaven was terrifying but harmless, we made a huge profit. I am regretting it slightly now, if I knew this, I would not have agreed to the forty percent and sixty percent split.” Hei Lou Lan sighed as she took the loot out of her immortal aperture.

“Why are there so many desolate beast corpses? This boar looks like an ancient desolate beast. Eh, there is a lion here, it is not dead yet.” At once, Little Hu Immortal’s attention was attracted to the desolate beasts on the ground.

Blazing divine stallion, flying bear, star demon bat, chestnut yak... a total of seven desolate beast corpses and a yellow jade lion which was barely on the verge of death.

Other than these, there was the astral wind flying heavenly boar, the corpse of an ancient desolate beast. There were also several hundred kilograms of diamond soil dug out from the diamond bear’s cave. Finally, there were around ten mysterious trees.

These trees were part of a forest, when they had first entered Starry Sky grotto-heaven, they trapped Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan. The two could not tell the origin of these trees and decided to take a few into her immortal aperture.

Afterwards, a star desolate hound charged over and interrupted their collection process.

The corpse of a desolate beast was worth approximately forty immortal essence stones. Ancient desolate beast corpses were much more expensive, they were ten times the price of desolate beasts corpses, that was four hundred immortal essence stones!

Looking at this, it seemed that the price of an ancient desolate beast was unreasonably high.

But the truth was, ancient desolate beasts were hard to kill, not only was their battle strength equivalent to rank seven Gu Immortals, their bodies were covered in dao marks, mortal killer moves were ineffective on them. Even immortal killer moves were not very effective.

Ordinary immortal killer moves used rank six Immortal Gu as the core, when dealing with ancient desolate beasts, it was like using a dagger to stab an elephant. Although it had effect, the injuries had to be accumulated over a long period of time.

Only immortal killer moves formed with rank seven Immortal Gu were an effective method to forcefully deal with ancient desolate beasts.

Therefore, when immortal killer moves were involved, immortal essence would be expended. The cost of killing an ancient desolate beast would be much higher as a result. One often needed to expend several hundred green grape immortal essence beads or tens of red date immortal essence beads.

As a result, the profit that they gained was usually only about a hundred immortal essence stones.

Although the profit of killing ancient desolate beasts was still much higher in terms of efficiency, two factors needed to be considered. First, there was great risk in fighting with ancient desolate beasts. Second, not any Gu Immortal could deal with ancient desolate beasts. Ordinary rank six Gu Immortals would choose to retreat or run away when faced with an ancient desolate beast.

Only rank seven Gu Immortals like Shi Lei, an expert even among rank seven Gu Immortals, had the confidence to kill ancient desolate beasts.

“Seven desolate beast corpses are worth around two hundred and eighty immortal essence stones. The nearly dead yellow jade lion, for now we can count that as around eighty immortal essence stones. The corpse of the astral wind flying heavenly boar is four hundred immortal essence stones. Hundreds of kilograms of diamond soil is around thirty immortal essence stones. These mysterious trees are of an unknown origin, we will exclude them for now. All in all, the profit is seven hundred and ninety immortal essence stones.”

Hei Lou Lan calculated, the result made her a little tongue tied.

Almost eight hundred immortal essence stones!

Undoubtedly, this was a huge fortune!!

Hei Lou Lan’s breathing became faster.

Ever since she became an immortal, she had been calculating her immortal essence stone expenditure piece by piece. Right now, there were almost eight hundred immortal essence stones right in front of her!

Fang Yuan was in better shape than Hei Lou Lan, using the unlimited inspiration of wisdom Gu, he made many transactions with Lang Ya land spirit and had tens of immortal essence stones on him as liquid currency.

But even so, with eight hundred immortal essence stones in front of him, Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

Even in his previous life, he had no such experience. In the five hundred years of his previous life, the highest amount of immortal essence stones he had on hand at a point in time was merely sixty or so.

According to the four-to-six ratio, Fang Yuan could get four hundred and seventy-four immortal essence stones.

“This huge profit was because we looted all of this without any battle, thus we expended no immortal essence. We merely picked them up for free.” Fang Yuan calmed his mind and said.

“Hehe, that barbarian monkey is probably fuming now. Will he attack Hu Immortal blessed land?” Hei Lou Lan asked with a bit of worry, after all, this was a huge sum.

“No.” Fang Yuan shook his head.” To us, this is a huge sum, but for a rank seven Gu Immortal like Shi Lei, he has at least several thousand immortal essence stones in his possession!”

Normally speaking, rank six Gu Immortals could have several hundred immortal essence stones on them, while ordinary rank seven Gu Immortals would have thousands.

Strength and wealth were in a reasonable ratio.

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were newly advanced Gu Immortals, they had just stepped into the world of Gu Immortals, they were working with a whole new identity, starting from scratch, thus they were extremely poor.

As for Fang Yuan lacking money in his previous life, one reason was because blood path was not good for the development of assets, it excelled in fighting. Secondly, because of the five regions chaotic war, there were many fights and he had high expenditure during that period.

Fang Yuan continued to analyze: “Furthermore, Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects are righteous sects, and even compared to super forces in the other regions, they have a long history. These great sects have to abide by order and stability, they care about their face and reputation. Shi Lei will definitely want revenge on us, but he would not do it forcefully. He will use righteous methods to suppress us, after all, we are now a part of Immortal Crane Sect.”

Hei Lou Lan nodded, she agreed with Fang Yuan’s perspective, she showed some pity on her face: “It is unfortunate that we did not obtain that walking meat tree. It is an ancient desolate plant, a thing of legend, it can be sold for a higher price than the astral wind flying heavenly boar.”

Fang Yuan said: “I do not believe so, at that time, compared to the walking meat tree, Star Form blessed land was much more important.”

“How will we split Star Form blessed land?” Hei Lou Lan looked at Fang Yuan, her expression turning serious. In front of a huge profit, she was not going to give up on it easily.

These desolate beast and ancient desolate beast corpses were easy to split because their price could be evaluated. But Star Form blessed land could not be easily assessed, immortal essence stones could not express the true value of a blessed land.

A blessed land was like a gold mine, it could produce resources endlessly. After swallowing it, it could even improve a Gu Immortal’s cultivation. It could be said that one’s blessed land or grotto-heaven was the Gu Immortal’s greatest achievement in their cultivation journey.

Fang Yuan thought about it, before saying: “Star Form blessed land is not easy to split, how about this, we will compete for it fairly. Whoever fulfils the land spirit’s condition first will obtain Star Form blessed land. The other party has to accept the result without any compensation. Star Form blessed land is the result of our hard work, only the two of us can compete in this contest, we cannot interfere with each other maliciously. Other than us, even if it was Fairy Li Shan or Tai Bai Yun Sheng who want to fight for Star Form blessed land, we will work together and stop them. What do you think?”

Hei Lou Lan’s gaze flickered as she nodded: “That will be the best!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 730: Giving You Qingpu Tea

Central Continent, Bai Qing blessed land.

Bright sunlight shined down on this small world.

The mountain stream flowed slowly, the tall ancient trees spread out their huge green leaves. Sunlight penetrated between the holes amongst the leaves, because of the breeze, beams of light would sway gently when shining down on the ground.

Feng Jin Huang was reclining on the grassy ground, her back against a tall tree. Feeling the wind, she breathed in deeply, the clear air was mixed in with the fragrance of the grass.

The book of <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> was exquisite and beautiful, in the hands of Feng Jin Huang, she had already flipped it to the last few pages.

Feng Jin Huang’s eyes were clear as water, she stared at a page of the book without blinking.

Although she had heard about the story of Ren Zu since her youth, due to her mystical experience in the dream realm, when she read <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> again with deeper insight, Feng Jin Huang felt many new emotions emerging in her.

At the end of <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, it said — Ren Zu’s ten children died one after another, even Ren Zu himself was going to die of old age, he was at the end of his life. Before dying, Ren Zu retrieved the corpses of his ten children, and sacrificed himself, sending them all into derivation Gu’s stomach, eaten by it.

Large amounts of dream realms also followed the smell of the delicious food, going into derivation Gu’s mouth along with them.

Derivation Gu’s stomach was burst open, as countless light of life shone on the lands, creating the first batch of mortals.

“Because the dream realm was involved in the derivation, the first batch of mortals would experience dreams when they slept at night. Humans often sink deep into dreams, like Northern Dark Ice Soul, and are unable to free themselves from it.” Feng Jin Huang thought as she stretched out her hand, closing the <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> book as she stood up.

“Mother, send me back to the building. I am tired.” She said softly.

“Okay.” At the next moment, Feng Jin Huang heard Fairy Bai Qing’s gentle voice echoing near her.

Feng Jin Huang vanished on the spot, she reappeared in her own room inside the small building.

In the room, Fairy Bai Qing was already waiting.

Feng Jin Huang’s eyes shone with joy: “Oh, mother, why are you free today, don’t you need to blend in the earth qi?”

When a Gu Master reaches rank six and becomes a Gu Immortal, their aperture would take in the three qi of heaven, earth, and human, elevating it into an immortal aperture, forming a small world.

Gu Immortals manage their immortal apertures and increase their cultivation level. But the more objects that enter the immortal aperture, gradually, the heaven and earth qi inside the immortal aperture would become insufficient.

Like a carefully nurtured bonsai, as the tree inside grows larger, the pot becomes too small, and the soil will seem very shallow.

At this time, Gu Immortals will place their blessed lands on the ground, taking in earth qi, or place their grotto-heavens in the sky, taking in heaven qi.

After taking in heaven and earth qi, they would stabilize their blessed land or grotto-heaven, increasing the foundation of the immortal aperture. After their cultivation level stabilizes, they would be able to continue cultivating with a more stable foundation.

Fairy Bai Qing’s current condition was that she had managed the blessed land for quite some time, it was becoming unstable. She placed the blessed land on the ground, and she herself was inside, taking in the earth qi of the large region, Central Continent, and assimilating it into her blessed land.

Fairy Bai Qing looked at her cute daughter with a doting gaze, praising: “Huang Er, it seems that after this dream realm encounter, your mental state had been greatly trained. In the past, you would have complained to me and would request for me to accompany you. But this time, I blended in the earth qi for three days and three nights without spending any time with you, yet you actually read books and refined Gu quietly, your mental state is much more mature than before, mother is very happy.”

“Of course!” Feng Jin Huang smiled happily, showing her white teeth, she raised her head as the bells rang on her phoenix coronet, she said proudly: “Who am I?

I am father and mother’s flesh and blood, how can I ruin both of your reputations!”

Her smile infected Fairy Bai Qing as she smiled as well: “Ever since the first batch of mortals were born, they could dream. Almost nobody can avoid dreaming, after all these years, countless geniuses and talented individuals, even Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables, they have their own dream realms. These dream realms gather together, forming a huge hidden realm of an unprecedented size. Huang Er, your dream wings Immortal Gu can allow you to enter dream realms at will, it is a movement Immortal Gu that prevents you from being influenced by dream realms! This is a huge opportunity for you, you need to make good use of it.”

“I understand, mother. These recent days, I have been trying to refine Gu, I found out that my refinement path realm had reached quasi-master level. The advantages of the dream realm are simply too much, I had always lacked interest in refinement path, I had never practiced it normally. But after this dream realm journey, my attainment rose so sharply, I have exceeded many people in the sect.” Feng Jin Huang sighed and said.

“You moved about in Old Immortal Kong Jue’s dream, you unknowingly obtained some of his refinement path true meaning. But that was because Old Immortal Kong Jue himself was a refinement path supreme grandmaster, thus you had much to gain. Dream realms are extremely complex, you might not be so lucky next time, to encounter the dream of someone as qualified as Old Immortal Kong Jue.” Fairy Bai Qing analyzed.

Feng Jin Huang was nonchalant, she laughed: “If I can’t encounter it, then so be it. I do not have interest in refinement path anyway, next time, all I need to do is enter the dream of an Immortal Venerable or Demon Venerable. Sigh, it is a pity, I walk on the metal path, yet none of the ten venerables cultivate this path.”

Fairy Bai Qing heart jumped when she heard this, she became serious: “Huang Er, do not let your guard down. You were safe and sound this time because you were lucky, the dream realm you were in was not dangerous or harmful. If you really enter the dream of a venerable, you have to retreat immediately, the power of a venerable is not something you can imagine.”

Feng Jin Huang’s first stuck out her tongue, before she replied obediently: “Yes mother, I understand.”

Fairy Bai Qing’s expression became more gentle, she took out a letter Gu: “This is a letter from your father, he has already broken through the regional wall, and has found a place to rest after entering Northern Plains. He has not learned of your awakening yet, but since he has already sent us a letter, we can use this letter Gu to reply to him, say a few words to him and relieve his worry, so that he can deal with the missions in this Northern Plains journey.”

“Father’s letter?” Feng Jin Huang’s eyes shined, she jumped over and took the letter Gu from Fairy Bai Qing, her consciousness entering it.

But in the end, she could not read it.

Feng Jin Huang pouted: “Oh, it is that information path Immortal Gu, Letter Sending Green Bird, I am still a mortal, I cannot read it.”

Fairy Bai Qing patted her head: “Your father is currently in Northern Plains, how can he cross the regional wall without using an information path Immortal Gu? What are you anxious for, I had just praised you for becoming more mature.”

Saying this, Fairy Bai Qing injected a will into Feng Jin Huang’s mind.

Feng Jin Huang was familiar with this, countless thoughts generated in her mind as she conversed with the will, instantly, she could ‘see’ the information in Feng Jiu Ge’s letter.

“Father...” Feng Jin Huang read Feng Jiu Ge’s letter, and saw the concern and worry he had towards her, she was so moved her eyes turned red.

“I want to see father immediately and show him my current refinement path attainment. He had always been worrying about my refinement path realm.” Feng Jin Huang muttered.

“Don’t worry, I will tell your father in the letter.”

“Don’t, don’t tell him, I want to give father a surprise.”

“Alright.” Fairy Bai Qing took out a letter Gu next, it was also a letter sending green bird Gu, but this was a rank five mortal Gu.

“This is another letter for you, it is from Fang Yuan. He had sent it long ago, take a look at it.” Fairy Bai Qing said.

“Fang Yuan!” Feng Jin Huang heard this name and gritted her teeth, her brows were sharp like swords, and her beautiful face turned red from embarrassment.

She snatched the letter Gu and checked it.

Fang Yuan had put in a lot of information in the letter, he first praised Spirit Affinity House extensively, his tone was like he wanted to join them, and he afterwards agreed with Feng Jin Huang’s challenge, and he even apologized for replying so late.

At the end of the letter, there was a line — I am currently in Hu Immortal blessed land, my doors are open to await for Fairy Feng Jin Huang’s visit. I have heard that Spirit Affinity House’s qingpu tea is extremely famous. If you intend to spar with me, I would get to experience the taste of this famous tea, that would be extremely enjoyable.

“Hmph! He truly has the leisure time and mood, he wants to drink qingpu tea? He wants to enjoy the taste of tea? Evil thief! Lecherous thief! I want to tear you into pieces and break up your bones to feed dogs!” Feng Jin Huang’s eyes were burning with fire, she exerted some strength unknowingly, and the letter sending green bird Gu was chirping in response.

Fairy Bai Qing quickly saved this letter Gu: “Huang Er, this is something mother wants to talk to you about. Undoubtedly, Fang Yuan has exceeded our expectations once again, he is no longer like before. If you spar with him now you will only lose, there is no way to win.”

“What?” Feng Jin Huang stared with her eyes wide open, looking at Fairy Bai Qing in shock.

Fairy Bai Qing told her about the details of Fang Yuan becoming an immortal zombie, and that he had a mysterious force behind him that managed to force Immortal Crane Sect to retreat after attacking Hu Immortal blessed land.

“Immortal zombie? He actually became an immortal zombie?” Feng Jin Huang muttered to herself, if it was not her mother saying this, she would not believe it herself.

“How long has it been, he actually became an immortal already? We are about the same age, how can he have such firm foundations to charge towards Gu Immortal realm?” Feng Jin Huang was very perplexed.

Fairy Bai Qing replied her: “Regarding his suddenly transformation into an immortal zombie, our ten great ancient sects have some guesses. Although raising one’s foundation is hard, it is not impossible. There is an example right in front of us, that is dream realms. Other than that, we have guessed that the mysterious force behind him might have some sort of special immortal ascension method, to allow a Gu Master to become an immortal zombie.”

“But becoming an immortal zombie means your cultivation level will stagnate, it can no longer progress.” Feng Jin Huang frowned.

“That is the cast. But think about it, a rank five mortal Gu Master compared to a rank six immortal zombie, the latter is obviously much stronger.” Fairy Bai Qing said.

Feng Jin Huang showed some disdain on her face: “I don’t care if he was greedy towards short term profits, or that he was forced to do so, he will definitely not be my match in the future. He is rushing to challenge me now, it is obvious that he knows he can only continue to bully me during this period of time, in the future, it will be my turn. This coward is timid like a rat, he is a shameless and unscrupulous person!”

“Huang Er, do not be blinded by your own hatred and anger.” Fairy Bai Qing’s expression was very solemn: “This Fang Yuan is not simple, this letter that he sent was right before Immortal Crane Sect attacked, his real intention was to build a relationship with us, Spirit Affinity House, it was a tactic to bring in a third party. He has Dang Hun mountain right now, and is making transactions with our ten great ancient sects. His name has spread far and wide in Central Continent, almost every Gu Immortal knows of his existence now.”

“Mother, I was wrong, I was too agitated.” Feng Jin Huang gritted her teeth, trying to regain her calm.

“How will you respond to this letter? Ignore it, or reply to it, I will let you decide.” Fairy Bai Qing purposely tested her.

Feng Jin Huang said immediately: “Of course we will reply! Since this challenge was set by me, and he has already responded. If I avoid battle because he is an immortal zombie, then I would be showing weakness.”

“But...” Her eyes turned as she said: “The enemy is strong while I am weak, only a fool will go head to head with him. Hmph, soon, the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention is going to begin. I will use refinement path and defeat him in public! This will soothe some of my anger. Mother, what do you think of this?”

Fairy Bai Qing nodded in satisfaction: “This is a good idea.”

Feng Jin Huang gritted her teeth, her eyes shined with bright light: “In the following days, I am going to find refinement path Gu Master dreams, and rapidly build up my foundation in refinement path. Using him as an opponent, it will urge me and promote the growth of my cultivation level.”

Fairy Bai Qing laughed, patting Feng Jin Huang’s head: “This is my good daughter.”

Feng Jin Huang squinted, as she replied, she chuckled coldly: “You want to pretend to be cultured and drink qingpu tea, sure, I will give you fifty or sixty jars of it! But if you want to compete, we cannot do so without a bet. I will make you lose in both reputation as well as substance!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 731: Four to You, Six to Me

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

“Land spirit, I brought you a live desolate beast, come and check it out.” Fang Yuan said as he opened his immortal aperture, activating a dozen Gu worms as he took out a lion and placed it on the ground.

This lion was large like a giant elephant. It was brown-yellow in color, and thick fur covered more than half of its body.

It was sleeping now, making a snoring sound. It was the yellow jade lion.

It was originally injured heavily, on the brink of death. But as long as it was still alive, with Fang Yuan’s current abilities and assets, he could heal it back to full health.

Lang Ya land spirit stroked his beard, walking around the yellow jade lion as he observed.

He could move freely now, the qi path seals on his body were all released.

“Good lion, good lion, even if you are sleeping, you look so fierce. Not bad.” Saying so, Lang Ya land spirit stretched out his arm and opened the yellow jade lion’s mouth, seeing the tightly clenched teeth.

“Good teeth.” Lang Ya land spirit praised. He continued to touch the lion along its body, until he reached the area between its hind legs.

Throughout the process, Lang Ya land spirit had been activating Gu worms silently, after inspecting it, he was pleased: “Not bad, it has vigor and vitality, it can reproduce as well. It is a pity that my blessed land is a refinement path blessed land, it is not great for raising these fierce beasts.”

Lang Ya land spirit had twelve desolate beasts, he was very experienced with them and had become quite an expert, he was not unfamiliar with desolate beasts at all.

But Lang Ya blessed land was a refinement path blessed land, refining Gu here would have higher chances of succeeding. But there was no assistance or help for raising beasts.

Meanwhile, Hu Immortal blessed land was an enslavement path blessed land, it was good for raising fox groups. The fox groups inside Hu Immortal blessed land would have greater chances of producing a desolate fox.

Blessed lands and grotto-heavens were all very different, each of them had their own specialties.

This was because blessed lands and grotto-heavens were the immortal apertures of Gu Immortals. When Gu Immortals undergo immortal ascension, they would take in heaven and earth qi, and according to their understanding towards heaven and earth, their immortal aperture world would be created relating to the path of the Gu worm that they toss into it.

Lang Ya land spirit was very pleased with this yellow jade lion, he quickly gave Fang Yuan eighty-eight immortal essence stones, at the same time, he gave the details of the killer move unfamiliar face.

Fang Yuan looked through the details of it in front of Lang Ya land spirit.

This killer move had an extraordinary origin, it came from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

“As expected of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, he had an innovative idea and went on a creative path.” Fang Yuan praised: “There are only three hundred Gu worms used here, but they involve transformation path, strength path, wisdom path, and others, for a total of six paths. Hmm... some of the Gu worms are rare, it seems that it will take a while to recreate this killer move, after I collect all of these Gu worms. Lang Ya, do you have these Gu worms?”

Lang Ya land spirit shook his head, chuckling: “What would I keep these Gu for? I cannot use this killer move. Unfamiliar face, vaguely familiar face, and familiar face, these three killer moves are a series. What you obtained is merely the mortal killer move, able to transform into someone people do not know. If they know the person, you will be exposed. The latter two are immortal killer moves, even if you transform into a familiar person, you would not be exposed. Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable seemed to have left behind an inheritance of this, if you have the opportunity, you might obtain the other two killer moves in your lifetime, who knows.”

Fang Yuan laughed bitterly: “How could I have such luck, to coincidentally find the other two immortal killer moves? The inheritances of these two might have been taken by others already.”

Although he said that, he was moved in his heart.

He thought about the time in Northern Plains, when he obtained the inheritance that involved Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s Luo Po valley inheritance.

He had already refined the key to enter the inheritance — open door Gu and close door Gu.

But he had not acted yet.

Gu Master inheritances were not easy to obtain. Especially demonic path inheritances, they were usually much harder than righteous path inheritances, and much more dangerous. Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritance was definitely an extremely dangerous place. With the situation being unclear, and myriad self being unusable, Fang Yuan would rather wait a while longer than take the risk unnecessarily.

Fang Yuan did not place much expectation on this, because he had guessed long ago — “The inheritance clue that I obtained was obviously not the only one out there. Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable did not want his inheritance to remain undiscovered, thus he spread the clues far and wide to increase the chances. This inheritance had been created such a long time ago, someone might have gone there already. Not speaking of anyone else, just look at Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he seemed to have used Dang Hun mountain and Luo Po valley to cultivate soul path. Since Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritance involves Luo Po valley, I’m afraid Spectral Soul Demon Venerable has already been involved in it. In fact, he might have taken Luo Po valley away already.”

Clearing up his mind, Fang Yuan took out three completed Immortal Gu recipes and handed them to Lang Ya land spirit: “This is the current transaction.”

Lang Ya land spirit received the Immortal Gu recipes and checked them, seeing that there were no problems, he praised Fang Yuan’s talent again: “Rascal, I rarely admire people, but your talent in deducing Immortal Gu recipes has truly made me look at you in a different light.”

“Land spirit, I was about to talk to you about this.” Fang Yuan said: “Regarding the transaction of the Immortal Gu recipes, I would like to change the details of our transactions.”

“Oh?”

“All of your Immortal Gu recipes that have a high completion rate have been deduced by me already. The remaining ones have sixty to seventy percent completion rate, or even under fifty percent. I want to deduce these Immortal Gu recipes, but it would take a long time if I want to complete them. If I have to spend a month or two on them, I would not be able to do anything else. I suggest that we change the details of our transaction...”

Before Fang Yuan finished, Lang Ya land spirit shook his head: “Not changing, not changing, why must we change? I’ve spent so many immortal essence stones, wasn’t it because you could deduce Immortal Gu recipes? You are a wisdom path Gu Immortal, and you are so skilled at deducing Immortal Gu recipes, why do you not want to continue? At most, I can increase the price and pay you a bit more compensation.”

“Lang Ya land spirit, don’t reject me yet, listen to me, I know you will be interested.” Fang Yuan laughed confidently: “My suggestion is this, from now on, you will take charge of deducing the Immortal Gu recipes, whenever you encounter a problem and cannot continue, I will help you deduce the next step and get over that hurdle, each time, I will only charge two immortal essence stones.”

“What? So it is such a deal...” Lang Ya land spirit fell into deep thought.

Fang Yuan’s suggestion had indeed moved him.

After all, he was Long Hair Ancestor’s land spirit, his refinement path attainment was quasi-great grandmaster, he had skills in deducing Immortal Gu recipes.

The reason he did not finish deducing these Immortal Gu remnant recipes was because he had met with a tough problem in each of them and could not continue until he resolved it.

If he passed this obstacle, he might be able to advance through the Immortal Gu recipe easily, and successfully complete it. Thus, Lang Ya land spirit would only need to pay Fang Yuan two immortal essence stones, it would be much cheaper than their former price.

Of course, if the Immortal Gu remnant recipe was very difficult, Fang Yuan might earn even more immortal essence stones than before.

But Lang Ya land spirit was confident, with his refinement path attainment, the first situation would be more likely.

“This way, Fang Yuan, your income will be much lower. Ah, I almost forgot, you are selling guts Gu now, your business is booming, is that why you do not want this work anymore?” Lang Ya land spirit jumped to realization.

Fang Yuan laughed: “Land spirit, this transaction benefits you too. After getting so many Immortal Gu recipes, and having regained your freedom, you can refine Immortal Gu again. When refining Immortal Gu, the vast majority of attempts fails, the success rate is simply too low, and you would expend an incredible amount of resources. I am helping you to save immortal essence stones, shouldn’t you be thanking me?”

“Hmph, I knew you would say that.” Lang Ya land spirit rolled his eyes, saying: “I can agree with this, but I have a condition.”

“What condition?”

“It is a long story, do you know about Qin Bai Sheng’s auction?” Lang Ya land spirit could not leave the blessed land, but he knew clearly about the things happening in Northern Plains.

“Of course I know.” Fang Yuan nodded.

Lang Ya land spirit continued: “You are aware that some time ago, a mysterious force attacked my Lang Ya blessed land. They all failed, and during this process I captured some Gu Immortals. I intend to sell them all, or rather, I want to sell their blessed lands.”

“Selling blessed lands?” Fang Yuan looked at Lang Ya land spirit with some shock, this was a very big move.

“Is this business practical?”

Fang Yuan’s expression was solemn: “It would be a thousand times more popular than my guts Gu business! After Gu Immortals buy these blessed lands, they can swallow them and raise their cultivation level, they can also skip heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities, why did you not keep them for yourselves?”

Lang Ya land spirit shook his head: “To swallow a rank six blessed land, one needs master level attainment in that realm. To swallow a rank seven blessed land, one needs grandmaster level. To swallow a rank eight grotto-heaven, one will need great grandmaster attainment. Although my refinement path attainment is high, I am not involved in many other paths. And the most important reason is, I do not want to devour them. My Lang Ya blessed land has already reached the limits of a blessed land, any progress would elevate it to a grotto-heaven. A grotto-heaven’s tribulations are far more dangerous. Back then, I purposely weakened Lang Ya grotto-heaven until it became a blessed land, why would I raise it up again?”

Fang Yuan understood: “That is true. Wait, your condition is to ask me to sell these blessed lands at the auction in your place?”

Lang Ya land spirit raised his thumb, saying with a tone of flattery: “You are a smart lad!”

Fang Yuan stared with wide opened eyes: “Do you want to kill me? No, this is definitely impossible! Once I sell these blessed lands, I will become the biggest target of everyone! It earns too much attention, how could have the ability to capture all these Gu Immortals? If I appear like this, that mysterious force would know and associate me with Lang Ya blessed land. Next time when they attack you, they might even attack my blessed land! Isn’t the Inkman King Mo Tan Sang your good friend, ask him to go.”

“Sigh, he is an inkman immortal, his origin is not good and has always been ostracized by humans. Furthermore, he has his family and inkman city to take care of. He is not appropriate.” Lang Ya land spirit shook his head.

“Oh! You do not want him to go die, so you want to send me to die?!”

“Don’t make it sound so terrible, don’t you have the killer move unfamiliar face? With this killer move, other Gu Immortals cannot identify your true form.” Lang Ya land spirit said in a low tone.

Fang Yuan gave an assessing look at the land spirit: “I was wondering why you were so generous, giving this precious killer move to me, so you had a plan from the start.”

Lang Ya land spirit could not take it anymore, he stared with furious eyes as he shouted: “Rascal, do you think I’m unfamiliar with you?! You have ridiculous guts, since when have you been scared? You even destroyed Imperial Court blessed land and toppled Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, as long as the benefits are high enough, you are a desperado! Afraid of this matter? Just tell me, how much do you want?”

Fang Yuan snorted coldly: “We will split the profits from selling the blessed lands, at the least, it has to be a four to six ratio.”

“Four to six ratio? You are too greedy, you are asking for forty percent?!” Lang Ya land spirit screamed.

A cold light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes, his face was grim: “You are wrong, land spirit, my intention is, I will take sixty percent, you will take forty!”

Lang Ya land spirit was stunned, even though he had lived for so long, he was shocked by Fang Yuan’s shamelessness and greed.

He breathed in deeply, staring at Fang Yuan’s face: “Such words, you have the face to say it?”

“Why wouldn’t I?” Fang Yuan’s face was thick as a city wall: “I am going to take a huge risk involving my life, without enough profits to motivate me, I will not do it. This price is already the lowest, I am considering this based on the fact that we are old friends, this is a friendly price.”

“Friendly price, I think you are trying to con a friend?”

“So no deal? Consider it more, this is the price I want, there is still some time until the auction, I am leaving first.” Fang Yuan opened a stargate.

“Get lost!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 732: Top Tier Mortal Killer Move

Hu Immortal blessed land, Dang Hun palace.

Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged on a cushion, looking at a pair of bat wings in front of him with full concentration.

A pair of large bat wings was hovering in front of him, thin and small scales of an eerie blue color with each having the size of a pinkie finger grew on the wings. As light refracted from the scales, it seemed to be giving off starlight.

After Fang Yuan returned from Lang Ya blessed land, he started repairing the star demon bat’s wings. After nine days and nine nights of effort, it had reached the current crucial moment.

“Whether I can fix these bat wings or not depends on this.” Fang Yuan willed and summoned a mortal Gu from his aperture.

He flicked his finger and threw this crucial mortal Gu in.

The mortal Gu turned into a drop of jade green liquid which created a layer of green light when it shot into the bat wings.

The radiance flowed like water, the green light spread and soon covered the entire pair of bat wings.

In the blink of an eye, the green light dispersed and was replaced by fine hair that covered the whole of the star demon bat wings.

Fang Yuan meticulously observed and probed with his ten fingers in turn, following his movement, the green haired bat wings also made constant turns in the air, letting Fang Yuan observe it from all angles.

Fang Yuan spread open his fingers, the shrunken star demon bat wings also unfolded. When he saw fine hair growing inside the bat wings, he nodded in satisfaction.

“When Shi Lei attacked and killed this star demon bat, he attacked with no restraint, causing the wings to be greatly damaged when I obtained it. Now I have invested my full effort into restoring it, but whether I can restore it or not, even I don’t have much confidence.”

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh and stood up.

He casually waved his hand, hundreds of Gu worms flew and circled around the green haired bat wings, tightly securing it inside.

Fang Yuan then passed by the bat wings and walked out of this secret room.

He closed the door of the secret room, darkness enshrouded the green haired bat wings inside the secret room.

Fang Yuan stood outside the door and lightly stamped his foot, calling: “Land spirit.”

“Master, master, you called for me!” Little Hu Immortal immediately appeared beside Fang Yuan, her eyes shining and her face carrying a joyful expression of being able to see her master.

“I asked you to pay attention to the business in treasure yellow heaven, how is it going?” Fang Yuan walked as he asked.

Little Hu Immortal closely followed behind, replying: “Master had put the desolate beast corpses in treasure yellow heaven for sale, but only one desolate beast corpse was sold over these days.”

Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei had already discovered Fang Yuan, thus, Fang Yuan might as well put these desolate beast corpses up for sale openly in treasure yellow heaven.

He had discussed matters with Hei Lou Lan, the two took what they needed first; Fang Yuan took the yellow jade lion and star demon bat wings while Hei Lou Lan took the flying bear corpse. Fang Yuan was put in charge of selling these beast corpses, no matter what the result was, he would have to give forty percent of the earnings to Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan was also not afraid he would renege on his words, after all there was the Snowy Mountain Alliance.

Under normal circumstances, these desolate beast corpses would be popular goods that were quite rare, when they were put in treasure yellow heaven, they would be sold within four to six hours and it was very easy to earn immortal essence stones.

However, Fang Yuan did not want immortal essence stones this time.

He arranged a will to express to other Gu Immortals: to buy these beast corpses, they would have to exchange with specific goods.

First of all was a method for immortal zombies to turn back to human, or any information and clues.

Second was the Gu recipe for white lotus giant silkworm Gu, the Gu worm itself, or corresponding information and clues.

Third was the wings of bat desolate beasts.

Fourth was top tier mortal killer moves, the more outstanding they were, the better.

Fifth was bone path Gu worms like Battle Bone Wheel that could be arranged to form the killer move, White Bone Chariot.

Last was wisdom path inheritances or information and clues about them.

These six conditions were arranged in descending order according to Fang Yuan’s needs, the ones listed first would be cheaper for the buyers when they purchase the beast corpses.

Fang Yuan’s guts Gu business was extremely thriving right now, he did not lack immortal essence stones for the moment, thus he wanted to exchange them with goods.

Because of this, the desolate beast corpses which were popular goods and easy to sell had become this hard to sell. Twelve days had already passed in Hu Immortal blessed land, but they only managed to sell one desolate beast corpse.

“Oh? What did that beast corpse exchange for?” Fang Yuan asked excitedly.

“One whole chestnut yak was exchanged for a pair of bat desolate beast wings and an investigative killer move called hundred li eye.” Little Hu Immortal replied.

Mortal killer moves normally would not exceed six immortal essence stones in treasure yellow heaven.

There were also detailed classifications between them.

Mortal killer moves that sold for half an immortal essence stone were classified as bottom tier goods, but they were better than nothing.

Mortal killer moves that were worth one to two immortal essence stones were mediocre, they could provide some help to Gu Immortals if used properly.

For instance, the killer move Fang Yuan looked at before but did not buy, spiral drill star spear, was valued at one immortal essence stone. Star Lord Wan Xiang’s spring star rain was sold at one and a half immortal essence stone. The poison breath killer move which Fairy Li Shan gave Fang Yuan could be sold for two immortal essence stones.

Fang Yuan’s previous defensive killer move hair armor was worth two immortal essence stones and was at the peak level of common mortal killer moves. Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s defensive killer move nine cloud ring could absorb enemy’s attacks to a certain degree before counterattacking, it was valued at two and a half immortal essence stones.

Mortal killer moves worth three immortal essence stones were middle tier, they were reliable methods.

For instance, Western Desert Gu Immortal Plump Lady’s killer move, burial dragon sand coffin, was valued at three immortal essence stones.

Mortal killer moves worth four to five immortal essence stones had outstanding might and could not be looked down upon. They were considered as powerful methods that could often change the situation to a certain extent when they were used.

Fang Yuan’s icy drill stardust had mixed in Dou Min Jun’s inheritance which raised its value to four immortal essence stones. The lion fur armor which was an improved form of hair armor was valued at four and a half immortal essence stones.

And mortal killer moves that were worth six immortal essence stones were classified as top tier, few could be bought in the market. Fang Yuan’s reinvented movement killer move, true solid bat wings, would have the effect of this tier if three pairs of bat wings were used.

Killer moves were one of the four main factors that influenced a Gu Immortal’s battle strength.

When Fang Yuan possessed icy drill stardust, hair armor and light illusion bat wings, his battle strength had already reached the upper tier of rank six Gu Immortals. In his previous life, before Fang Yuan self-detonated, he possessed more than a dozen mortal killer moves, most of them were top tier level killer moves worth six immortal essence stones. His battle strength had been at the peak of rank six.

However, when one reached rank seven, it was a different scene. The immortal killer moves that consumed green grape immortal essence became common methods. And those immortal killer moves that consumed red date immortal essence became uncommonly used, hidden trump cards.

Most Gu Immortals did not have Immortal Gu, this was referring to rank six Gu Immortals. Gu Immortals that could cultivate to rank seven were even fewer in numbers, they were the elites of elites, experts among experts of rank six who would have experienced innumerable tribulations and calamities, had excellent aptitude, temperament and accumulation. There was no way to justify them not having Immortal Gu.

With Immortal Gu, there would be immortal killer moves.

Immortal killer moves were evolved from using mortal killer moves as a foundation. Like Hei Lou Lan who was trying to modify her strength path killer move to an immortal killer move.

Often one Immortal Gu can form different immortal killer moves according to the differences in mortal Gu. Thus, many Gu Immortals would have offensive killer moves even if they did not have offensive Immortal Gu. For instance, Fang Yuan’s myriad self was an offensive killer move, but its core was cleanse soul Immortal Gu which was a support Immortal Gu that helped Gu Immortals in soul path cultivation.

“Hundred li eye...” After hearing Little Hu Immortal’s reply, Fang Yuan nodded and commented, “This mortal killer move is valued at six immortal essence stones, it allows the Gu Immortal to observe the scenery within one hundred li as clearly as the lines on one’s palm. Good, I was lacking this kind of investigative killer move. But of course, the greatest satisfaction in this transaction is that I obtained another pair of desolate beast bat wings.”

He then asked: “Did any important things happen in the blessed land these recent days?”

Little Hu Immortal shook her head and reported that everything was normal.

Such tranquil days were very rare to Fang Yuan after his rebirth.

However, Fang Yuan did not dare to slack even a little. Ever since he saw the external manifestation of a dream realm in his trip to Starry Sky grotto-heaven, he felt a sense of urgency and could vaguely tell that the waves of the new era were coming.

Over the next few days, Fang Yuan began to handle the newly obtained pair of bat wings.

At the same time, he also arranged the old hairy men in the blessed land to refine Gu. The airsac Gu which could store guts Gu were naturally the main focus of the hairy men. Besides this, Fang Yuan divided the refinement procedures of group strength Gu and small family qi Gu, he then separately taught the old hairy men and let them go through similar practice.

These two Gu recipes could not be compared to others, they were ancient Gu recipes, their materials were rare and not easy to find in the present age.

Thus, Fang Yuan first used other similar materials and Gu worms to raise the hairy men’s proficiency. When their proficiency reached the level Fang Yuan was satisfied with, only then would he truly let them refine these two Gu.

Fang Yuan’s doctrine was to not raise idlers. Since he had already purchased the hairy men, he would try to squeeze every last bit of their worth.

After three days in Hu Immortal blessed land, there was still no activity in treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan had taken care of a small part of the newly obtained bat wings. But the wings of the star demon bat was still being incubated.

Fang Yuan opened the door of the secret room and entered, standing in front of the green haired bat wings.

Right now, the green hair on the bat wings had already grown to be extremely thick and lush.

“Success or failure shall be determined at this moment.” Fang Yuan used mortal Gu and with a snapping sound, a spark immediately was sent flying out.

The spark flew to the green haired bat wings, a soft sound echoed, the spark set the green hair aflame, forming a green fire.

The fire appeared quickly and disappeared just as quickly.

In a blink of an eye, the green hair on the bat wings floating in the air was already burnt off, revealing a pair of black bat wings. There were no small blue scales on the bat wings, instead they were replaced by a layer of thick ash.

Fang Yuan showed a trace of disappointment: “Failure.”

He softly let out a breath of cloudy air, the weak breath touched the bat wings, this pair of bat wings fell down on the ground like charcoal and broke into pieces.

The bat wings were filled with heavy injuries. Shi Lei had destroyed the star demon bat's wings first to kill it. The wings had thus suffered serious damage, the star demon bat could no longer display its advantage in flying, and was finally killed by Shi Lei.

"Fortunately, I have another pair of bat wings." Fang Yuan quickly got over the disappointment, and soon he was busy in the refining process.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 733: Recognizing one's own ordinariness

With the previous refinement experience, this second attempt was much easier for Fang Yuan when refining the desolate beast bat wings.

After over half a month in Hu Immortal blessed land, he transplanted this pair of desolate beast bat wings onto his back. In accordance with his usual practice, Fang Yuan still chose to retain the sense of pain in the bat wings.

On this day, Fang Yuan was testing his killer moves on the top of Dang Hun mountain.

Hundred li eye.

He activated the killer move; his bright red pupils suddenly enlarged. He could see the grassland or debris within a hundred li of his surroundings with extreme clarity, like they were in front of him. Outside of a hundred li, his sight became blurry but was still much clearer than seeing with the naked eye.

After four hundred li, his line of sight reached the limit. it was all blurry and he could only distinguish some color and shadows.

"Hundred li eye is the base for thousand li eye, the latter is an immortal killer move and requires corresponding Immortal Gu to be used." Fang Yuan nodded in satisfaction, this killer move was valued six immortal essence stones and it indeed had outstanding effect.

It was just that the vision could not see through stealth or bypass obstacles, if any obstacles blocked the sight, the thing behind the obstacle could not be seen. This was the downside of hundred li eye.

Fang Yuan remembered both the merits and demerits, as he lightly flapped the wings on his back and flew to the sky.

He continued to maintain hundred li eye while flying, looking at the sky and ground with clear vision.

Lion fur armor.

He willed and activated the defensive killer move.

Soon, his body was covered in a layer of bronze armor with a helmet resembling a lion’s head. Even his wings were covered with a layer of thick plate, greatly raising its defense.

But the speed, however, became slower.

“Lion fur armor and true solid bat wings cannot perfectly complement each other. Once I activate lion fur armor, true solid bat wings will have its speed reduced. If I don’t use it, my speed might be fast but my defense will be lacking.” Fang Yuan frowned.

This problem surpassed the range of his capabilities.

To create a movement killer move like lion fur armor, he had to balance the dao marks of three paths and it was the limit of his master attainment realm in transformation path.

Adding true solid bat wings on top of that was too difficult for Fang Yuan.

If he had grandmaster attainment in transformation path, there was a possibility. But reaching grandmaster realm required large amounts of time and accumulation. This time was not only tens of years but could be a hundred years or even several hundreds of years.

Fang Yuan’s highest attainment realms currently were blood path and strength path.

Blood path grandmaster realm was achieved by Fang Yuan in his previous life after two to three hundred years of deep accumulation, it could be seen how difficult it was to raise one’s realm and accumulate their foundation.

His strength path attainment was also at grandmaster realm, and besides a small part of the accumulation being from his previous life, most was from obtaining Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s true meaning infusion. Otherwise, he would have required two or three hundred years of accumulation to reach grandmaster realm.

At the Gu Immortal level, one had the strength to search and obtain lifespan Gu or other methods to prolong lifespan. Ordinary mortals had lifespans of one hundred years. But as long as a Gu Immortal put some effort, they could live several hundreds of years or even a thousand years.

The long lifespans and time involved made the significance of ‘accumulation’ even more heavy.

Why were Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan not able to beat Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei?

It was because after Shi Lei became a Gu Immortal, he relied on Combat Immortal Sect and had accumulated all sorts of experiences and insights for close to three hundred years! Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan had only recently advanced to Gu Immortal, how could they compare to Shi Lei’s three hundred years of accumulation?

It was normal for them to not be able to defeat him!

If so, why did Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan have battle strength at the upper tier of rank six Gu Immortals when they advanced only recently?

Fang Yuan relied on the gains found in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, while Hei Lou Lan relied on her mother’s inheritance as well as the help of her aunt, Fairy Li Shan.

In other words, they had borrowed help from the accumulation of their predecessors!

“If I want my battle strength to improve drastically, just relying on myself to advance step by step would no doubt be a very long and inefficient process. In my previous life, when I walked on the blood path, I spent over two hundred years before I was able to comprehend a dozen or so mortal killer moves and create hundreds of new blood path Gu. I naturally need to learn from this lesson.”

“In this world, heroes emerge in large numbers and geniuses are everywhere. Stars and peaks have been shining constantly in the long history of time. If someone wants to stick out and move forward bravely, they can only take advantage of their predecessors’ inheritances and accumulations, absorbing their essences. All rivers flow into the sea, by being able to gather the different specialties together, only then can one rise above the group and become a ruler of people, achieving supreme feats.”

Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered as he flew around, sighing deeply in his heart.

People often believed they were extraordinary when they were young, feeling they were the main characters of the stage. After they undergo some experiences, they would then realize and accept: many other people had talent not inferior to themselves.

The saying goes: No matter how excellent you are, there is always someone more excellent than you.

A person’s lifespan was limited in the end, like a lone boat. Meanwhile, the mysteries and profound meanings of heaven and earth were equivalent to a vast, limitless body of water.

Since ancient times, those who were in some sense able to reach the peak of heaven and earth numbered no more than ten. But even they could not reach the peak of all fields. Thus, even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had to request for the help of Long Hair Ancestor in the Gu refinement aspect.

There was a record in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> —

Ren Zu started walking on the road of life, the surroundings were pure darkness and under his feet was dirty mud.

Ren Zu asked self Gu: “Where is this?”

Self Gu replied: “This is the ordinary marsh in the lowest level of ordinary abyss.”

Ren Zu knew of ordinary abyss, his eldest son Verdant Great Sun had once been trapped inside.

Ren Zu could not help but become excited: “Since this is the bottom of ordinary abyss, does that mean I have already left the door of life and death and returned to the living world? Does that mean I am now reborn?”

“In a way, that is true.” Self Gu said.

“But how is this possible? I have not passed Luo Po valley and have not charged through the reverse flow river.” Ren Zu said in an incredulous tone.

Self Gu said: “Oh human, you should know that you are talking about the path fate Gu traveled. And this path you have walked on is a completely new path, a path created by you. Where this path goes is all decided by your own intentions. Like I said before, as long as you want to walk, there will be a road for you to step on.”

Ren Zu suddenly came to a realization: “So it was like this.”

He then felt doubtful: “Then how did I walk to this place?”

Self Gu: “Humans are born ordinary. Although they are the spirit of all living beings, they do not have the claws of a tiger nor the ability to absorb nutrients from the earth like plants, and also cannot transform like clouds and rain. You came to the ordinary marsh, what’s strange about it? It is not only you, look at the mud under your feet carefully, you will see traces of many other footprints.”

Ren Zu lowered his head close to the ground before he was able to see clearly; like self Gu said, ordinary marsh was filled with all kinds of marks. Claws prints of wild beasts, root imprints of vegetation, traces of water flowing and also traces of stones rolling past.

“How can there be so many marks?” Ren Zu asked curiously.

Self Gu replied: “This is ordinary abyss, all living beings will enter here due to various reasons. All living beings are ordinary. But the absolute majority of them will be trapped in ordinary abyss for all their lives. Only a small portion can leave ordinary abyss through their own efforts.”

“I do not want to be trapped here for my entire life. There is nothing here, it is completely dark and the air stinks, I want to leave this place.” Ren Zu frowned.

Self Gu laughed loudly: “If you think that being ordinary is an abyss, then it is an abyss. But if you think that being ordinary is heaven, then it shall be heaven. Since you do not want to stay here, then leave, use your two legs to walk out of the ordinary marsh step by step and become extraordinary.”

Ren Zu took the first step.

Suddenly, his body bent, his front leg was deeply embedded into the marsh.

It was not easy to walk in the marsh, one step was deep, another was shallow. The path which looked almost uniform had some parts that were rather solid, while some were very loose.

Ren Zu walked several steps when his eyes suddenly brightened as he thought of a trick.

He purposely chose to walk on the spots which had the claw marks, since these spots could hold the marks, its soil texture was also much more solid.

Thus, Ren Zu was able to walk very smoothly almost like he was running when compared to his previous speed.

He said with a burst of emotion: “So it turns out that in ordinary marsh, walking in the footsteps of predecessors is much faster than finding the way on your own.”

...

After testing true solid bat wings and lion fur armor, Fang Yuan descended onto a slope.

Unfamiliar face.

Fang Yuan activated this newly obtained mortal killer move.

Almost all the Gu worms required for this killer move were essentially purchased from treasure yellow heaven by Hu Immortal land spirit, while the last remaining portions were refined by the hairy men.

Under the effect of the killer move, Fang Yuan’s bat wings retracted, his eight rough and thick arms also changed to two. His sharp teeth were greatly shortened while his scarlet red eyes also turned lighter.

Finally, Fang Yuan’s six meter tall body shrunk back to a normal person’s height with great changes to his appearance.

It was only that his immortal zombie body was still an immortal zombie body, it could not be hidden.

Despite this, Fang Yuan could not help but praise: “Wonderful! This is only a mortal killer move but it is able to change my immortal body to this extent. Indeed worthy of being an invention of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.”

Fang Yuan could imagine that if he was still a mortal, he could completely transform to any appearance, even changing to a woman perfectly.

He now had an immortal body, his body was filled with strength path dao marks. And as a mortal killer move, it was definitely not easy to alter his appearance to this extent.

The main thing was that this transformation was not an illusion but a real transformation of his physical body, even involving subtle transformation of his aura.

In short, even if Fang Yuan stood in front of Tai Bai Yun Sheng right now, the latter would not be able to recognize this immortal zombie was his own junior brother within a short period of time.

“Master, your appearance became much better looking. Ah, this letter just came in.” Right at this time, the land spirit, Little Hu Immortal, appeared while holding a letter Gu which she handed to Fang Yuan.

“Hmm? Letter sending green bird Gu... Spirit Affinity House finally responded?” Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed as he took the letter Gu and sent in his consciousness.

In a short while, he retracted his consciousness, a pondering expression flashed across his face: “Feng Jin Huang actually wants me to participate in the Refinement Path Convention to compete in refinement path? I remember she had no interest in refinement path in her early years and her accumulation in this field could be said to be like a blank sheet of paper right now. So why does she have so much confidence to compete with me in Gu refinement? Could it be that she had already discovered the true use of dream wings Immortal Gu?”

Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

“Dream Wings, dream path...” Fang Yuan’s eyes turned cloudy as he recalled the details of his previous life.

In his previous life, why did he gang up with a group of demonic path Gu Immortals to think of all sorts of ways to attack Hu Immortal blessed land? It was to kill Feng Jin Huang and seize dream wings Immortal Gu!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 734: Two Great Events

“To think that more than four hundred years before the end of my previous life, dream realms had already shown up.” Fang Yuan held the letter sending green bird Gu in his hand as he sighed in his heart.

At once, he lost the mood to test his killer moves.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, Central Continent was the first to trigger the war, suppressing the other four regions singlehandedly, and expanding rapidly. After that, the four regions collaborated, resisting Central Continent’s invasion with much difficulty.

The entire war had gone into a stalemate, and when the four regions joined hands and attempted to attack Central Continent in return, dream realms appeared in all five regions.

In this world, ever since Ren Zu produced the first batch of humans, humans began to dream. Every time they dreamed, they would expand the dream realms, providing strength to them.

After countless days, a vast amount of time and changes, many heroes and geniuses rose up among humans, constantly expanding the dream realms.

The dream realms got bigger and bigger, finally attaining a qualitative change and surfacing to the outside world.

The people soon discovered that even though the environment of a dream realm was extreme and complex, dangerous and strange, it had great benefits. In dream realms, people could obtain the foundations of ancient people, allowing their cultivation realms to surge and improve rapidly.

The rise of their attainment could be in terms of decades, a century, or even centuries of hard work.

Because of dream realms, the attainments of Gu Masters rose rapidly, this led to an increase in their strength, and produced many amazing experts.

Previously, resources were held in the hands of clans and sects, attainment levels were hard to raise, and unless one was an incredible genius, they would not be able to rise up.

After dream realms appeared, their attainment levels rose, like they were standing on the shoulders of former geniuses, Gu Masters could recreate many Gu worms and killer moves, and on this basis, they could develop new Gu, Gu recipes, and new killer moves that were tailored to their abilities.

That was the flourishing of a super level great era.

Many small forces lacking in prominence rose up, countless lone cultivators emerged.

The appearance of dream realms devastated the rigid system and structures. Social order was in upheaval, the immense benefits made the people go wild!

Originally, the four regions were collaborating to resist Central Continent, but before they even began, the plan was halted.

All the different forces, countless Gu Immortals and Gu Masters, they all placed their attentions on dream realms.

In order to compete for all of the surfaced dream realms, the five regions fought against each other, resulting in a thoroughly chaotic war.

In order to explore the dream realm more efficiently, many knowledgeable people, talents and geniuses, produced the necessary Gu worms. Soon, the newly discovered dream path was rapidly formed and developed.

The legendary rank eight wisdom path Gu Immortal — Immortal Yi Yan’s ‘Prophecy of Three Venerables’, was brought up once again.

He predicted that many years later, after three great eras, three venerables would appear, two men and one woman. The first was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, second was Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable and third was Great Dream Immortal Venerable. As for the problem regarding the space escape Gu, it would be solved by Great Dream Immortal Venerable.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had already shown up, this made everyone believe in the prophecy more deeply.

The two were linked together, forming a common theory — the dream realm was the opportunity to become Great Dream Immortal Venerable, whoever can control the entire dream realm would be able to use the accumulations of past individuals to become a historical figure that transcends sages, a king among immortal kings, a venerable above venerables, Great Dream Immortal Venerable!

“In my previous life, the reason why I could rise up and become the lord of an area was not only because of my fortuitous encounter involving blood path, but also because of the five regions chaotic war. All of the super forces had much lower control over the situation at that time, and because they were focused on exploring dream realms, they could not pay attention to the real world situation, and that gave me the time and freedom to develop and grow. Unfortunately, by the time I had control in the real world, this new area known as dream realms had already been split up by all the huge forces. Even though I could enter dream realms and explore using mortal dream path Gu, I was lagging behind everyone as a beginner. Unless I had a dream path Immortal Gu, that would be the only way to catch up.”

Precisely because of this, Fang Yuan gathered Song Zhong and other demonic path Gu Immortals to attack Hu Immortal blessed land, killing Feng Jin Huang. Unfortunately, he did not get her dream wings Immortal Gu.

Lacking an Immortal Gu and only having dream path mortal Gu, this caused Fang Yuan’s exploration of dream realms to be without any important discoveries, while he was constantly chased away and suppressed by the large forces.

Fang Yuan had obtained a blood path inheritance in his previous life, he was constantly chased after and had an arrest warrant on him. After building the Blood Wing Demon Sect, he had spent a lot of effort managing his sect, it took away a lot of his time and effort. All in all, he missed the golden era of exploring dream realms.

After rebirth, he had been reflecting upon this. This was a mistake, although mostly due to external pressure forcing him, a small part of it was due to his poor judgment.

Thus, in this life, he remembered this lesson and even though he had a foundation in blood path, he did not dare to cultivate blood path rashly before taking that crucial blood path inheritance.

Blood path Gu Masters were hunted down like rats, not only did the righteous path issue warrants to arrest them, even demonic path members were wary of them. Only during the five regions chaotic war, when law and order broke down, could blood path emerge and prosper at a time when nobody could afford to care about them.

“It turns out that dream realms surfaced more than four hundred years earlier than the end of my previous life. All of the super forces had interactions with them long ago, thus, in about three hundred years, when dream realms surfaced extensively, these forces could enter and expand their influence. They were prepared since long ago, it was not my inability that I lost to them.”

At this point of time, Fang Yuan was still a mortal during his previous life, desperately living at the bottom level of Gu Masters, restrained by his memories and experiences on Earth. Only after a long time did he break free of the limitations and shackles of such a mentality.

Sometimes, the advantage of being a transmigrator can also be a disadvantage.

This caused his information to deviate from what was happening in reality.

For example, like Starry Sky grotto-heaven.

Star Constellation immortal zombie was Seven Star Child immortal zombie. What Fang Yuan knew in his previous life was that this Star Constellation immortal zombie was a lucky person who had gained the most benefits inside the fragment worlds of Starry Sky grotto-heaven. But the truth was, he was the owner of Starry Sky grotto-heaven.

The reason why he called himself Star Constellation immortal zombie was most likely because of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm surfacing inside his grotto-heaven. This resulted in Seven Star Child obtaining some of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s accumulation.

“This matter regarding Seven Star Child is what originally happened. But Feng Jin Huang understanding the true usage of dream wings Immortal Gu was much earlier than in my previous life. Was this the effect of me snatching Hu Immortal blessed land from her?” Fang Yuan thought.

“After Feng Jin Huang learned about the true effect of dream wings Immortal Gu, Spirit Affinity House was sure to be alerted. And this in turn would affect the other nine great ancient sects as well. And from the other nine sects, the entirety of Central Continent would be affected. There is no wall in this world that can block all winds, in this way, the speed at which the people in this world learn about dream realms would be greatly pushed forward by me.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan felt a strong sense of urgency.

Dream realms were an entirely new field, they were dangerous and complex, even though there was only one type of resource in them, they were extremely profitable. Fang Yuan would not commit the same mistake from his previous life twice.

“However, in the current situation, dream realms would not surface on a large scale. Dream realms that have surfaced can be explored using dream path mortal Gu. Those dream realms that have not surfaced can only be explored by using dream path Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan was extremely aware of the value of dream path Immortal Gu.

But currently, with Fairy Bai Qing and Feng Jiu Ge around, even though dream wings Immortal Gu was in the hands of Feng Jin Huang, a mortal, nobody dared to target her.

Dream Travel was in the hands of the Northern Plains Gu Immortal, Lady Poison Scorpion, she lay dormant in Zi Du blessed land, and was the first Gu Immortal who used Dream Travel to explore dream realms, in the future, she used the identity of a lone cultivator to become the third overlord of dream realms. Lady Poison Scorpion was a rank seven Gu Immortal, her battle strength was even greater than Hei Cheng, and the defense of her blessed land was like an iron fortress. It was not easy to target her either.

As for the other dream path Immortal Gu, they were either not created yet or had not appeared yet, their origins were unknown.

Fang Yuan thought about it for a while, he used his primeval essence and wiped away the details on the letter sending green bird Gu, using his thoughts to fill it with words of his own.

He agreed to Feng Jin Huang’s challenge, to have a competition during the Refinement Path Convention.

“Feng Jin Huang has dream wings Immortal Gu, she has confidence in herself. But my refinement path attainment has advanced from master level to quasi-grandmaster level, why would I be afraid of this junior?”

Fang Yuan snorted in his heart.

Deducing Immortal Gu recipes for Lang Ya land spirit was an opportunity, it allowed his refinement path realm to reach a breakthrough recently.

“Refinement Path Convention, it concerns the Infallible inheritance, such a grand event, even if Feng Jin Huang did not challenge me, I would have gone there to get a share of the rewards. However, joining the Refinement Path Convention will need me to prepare my own Gu refinement materials. If I want to have any gains, I will need to start collecting materials now.

Fang Yuan had the experience of participating in the Refinement Path Convention from his previous life.

To get a good ranking, he would need to prepare a huge amount of materials, worth at least five hundred immortal essence stones. A clever wife cannot cook without rice, even the best Gu recipe could not proceed without the relevant materials.

“Other than this, I have to attend the huge auction that Qin Bai Sheng is organizing with Fairy Li Shan as well.” According to the newest information, this auction would have a segment for exchanging Immortal Gu.

Immortal Gu could not be bought, commonly speaking, they could only be exchanged.

When Gu Immortals obtain Immortal Gu, they might not suit their own path. At this time, they would undergo exchange with other Gu Immortals, to get an Immortal Gu that was suited for themselves, to display greater effect when used.

Just like Fang Yuan’s worldly wave trace Immortal Gu, this was a water path Immortal Gu, the effect was much weaker when Fang Yuan used it as compared to a water path Gu Immortal.

This was because worldly wave trace Immortal Gu had the law of water path, meanwhile, Fang Yuan was a strength path Gu Immortal, his body was filled with strength path dao marks, strength path and water path interfered with each other, reducing the normal capability of this Immortal Gu.

During the five regions chaotic war in Fang Yuan’s previous life, because battles were common, these Gu exchange sessions became much more frequent as well. But now was still a long time away from the war.

This grand auction in Northern Plains would probably be the only large scale Immortal Gu exchanging opportunity for the next two hundred years. Fang Yuan naturally had to make use of it.

Other than that, he was also very interested in the luck path inheritance.

“Auction and Refinement Path Convention, both of them need huge amounts of immortal essence stones. I have only two hundred immortal essence stones on me now, I can barely join in either of the grand events. It seems I can only rely on Lang Ya land spirit’s idea of selling blessed lands of Gu Immortals.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 735: Finally Obtaining a Wisdom Path Inheritance

Even with the sale of guts Gu, it had been too short of a time period, Fang Yuan had not accumulated enough immortal essence stones yet.

Furthermore, he had been refining Gu and tempering his bat wings, all these expenses caused his accumulation of wealth to be very slow.

The auction and Refinement Path Convention were two huge events, they would be held one after another. The former was already right around the corner. The only way to obtain a huge amount of immortal essence stones now would be through the Gu Immortals’ blessed lands in Lang Ya land spirit’s possession.

“It is a pity that my immortal aperture is dead, I cannot swallow other blessed lands. Otherwise, the first person to buy the blessed lands would be me!” Fang Yuan sighed in his mind.

The immortal apertures were small worlds, they could swallow each other, but there were requirements.

Firstly, dead apertures could not swallow apertures, they could only break down constantly until they vanish completely.

Secondly, a smaller immortal aperture could not swallow a bigger one.

Lastly, to swallow a rank six blessed land, one needed master attainment realm, to fuse the two different worlds together without problems. To devour a rank seven blessed land, grandmaster attainment realm is needed. To swallow a rank eight grotto-heaven, great grandmaster realm is needed.

That is to say, if Fang Yuan wanted to swallow immortal apertures, he would first need to become alive again, making his blessed land regain life force. Secondly, he could only devour strength path, refinement path, enslavement path, and transformation path blessed lands. Although strength path and blood path were at grandmaster attainment realm, he was only rank six and could only devour rank six blessed lands.

But even with such limitations, Gu Immortals were never hesitant towards blessed lands they could swallow.

The immortal aperture was the base and foundation of a Gu Immortal’s cultivation, swallowing blessed lands was like taking someone else’s foundation, it caused one’s own cultivation level to surge extremely quickly.

As long as one was a Gu Immortal, they would know the value of the blessed land. Regarding the auction of blessed lands, it was sure to whip up a huge storm during the auction.

In the following days, Fang Yuan refined group strength Gu and small family qi Gu, while using the light of wisdom to try and improve the transformation path killer move unfamiliar face.

At the same time, he was still continuing to sell desolate beast corpses in treasure yellow heaven.

Half a month had passed in Hu Immortal blessed land, the sole rank seven corpse in Fang Yuan’s possession — astral wind flying heavenly boar, was successfully sold.

Fang Yuan obtained a wisdom path inheritance that he had been wanting since a long time ago.

“Malicious thought Gu...” A few days later, Fang Yuan held a rank five mortal Gu in his hands with a complex expression.

This malicious thought Gu was refined by him using the Gu recipe in the wisdom path inheritance.

It had a huge body, around the size of a washing basin, it was like a spider but the eight legs were like needles, the tips were extremely sharp. On the body of the spider, there was tough and long prickly hairs. If not for Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body, ordinary flesh and blood would bleed upon touching this Gu.

Fang Yuan injected primeval essence, and malicious thoughts appeared in his mind one after another.

These malicious thoughts were like bubbles with sharp spikes on the surface. Fang Yuan tried to use these malicious thoughts, as they started to collide into each other instantly.

The scene of their collision was very peculiar.

The bubbles had spikes, they hooked up to one another, before getting destroyed or fusing into even bigger thoughts after that.

Soon, these malicious thoughts were consumed.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes, showing some joy in his gaze.

“Even for wisdom path Gu Immortals, their main method for deduction is to use thoughts. When using malicious thoughts to scheme or plot against others, the effect would be much greater. In that case, one malicious thought could be equivalent to tens of joyful thoughts, star thoughts, or empty thoughts.”

Fang Yuan had used delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu to create a huge amount of joyful will in the past to assist his thinking. That was a wrong move.

Although wills were made of thoughts, their real use was not for thinking, but to act independently after splitting from the main body.

Gu Immortals create many different wills, sending them into treasure yellow heaven to sell items. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s will was left behind to defend Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, this was the real use of wills.

To make a comparison, thoughts were like cleavers, while wills were like sabers. When thinking about how to cut vegetables, one would obviously use a cleaver, which chef would choose to use a saber for that?

Different professions are like separate worlds, wisdom path was the most mysterious path, Fang Yuan did not know this in the past, thus he used joyful will to think, the effect seemed reasonable, but he had, in fact, resulted in much expenditure, he was better off using joyful thoughts.

“I now have the Gu recipes of malicious thought Gu and malicious will Gu, I can mass produce these two mortal Gu. As an immortal, I have unlimited primeval essence. Activating a huge number of malicious thoughts would be the best value for me. Expending green grape immortal essence to activating delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu is simply too expensive.”

In the past, Fang Yuan only had a small number of wisdom path mortal Gu in his possession, most of them were bought in treasure yellow heaven.

The thoughts produced when using these mortal Gu were simply too few, and they varied in types, they could not sustain the expenditure when deducing Immortal Gu recipes.

Thus, he had to use delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu.

But now that Fang Yuan had the Gu recipes for wisdom path mortal Gu, his first plan was to mass produce these mortal Gu. The thoughts produced by one mortal Gu were few, but with enough quantity, the numbers of the thoughts would be very significant.

Activating delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu was not only expensive, it was a waste of a precious resource.

“It is a pity that this wisdom path inheritance appeared a little late. I have already entered the next stage in my transaction with Lang Ya land spirit. If this appeared earlier, I would have been able to save a huge amount of green grape immortal essence. After saving green grape immortal essence, my costs would fall, the profits from each deal would increase and it would definitely not be twenty-six immortal essence stones like before.”

Fang Yuan thought of this and felt a little regret.

He could not help it, life is like this.

Not everything would happen at the exact time you needed it to, life did not go so smoothly.

It was bound to include imperfection, dissatisfaction, and untimely events.

Like the wisdom path inheritance that Fang Yuan obtained, it was not complete, it was quite lacking.

All in all, it was already a very fortunate thing that Fang Yuan could obtain the mortal Gu recipes of malicious thought Gu and malicious will Gu. Other than these two Gu recipes, he also obtained a wisdom path killer move, called harboring malicious heart.

The Gu Immortal who sold the Gu recipe seemed to have a great need for the astral wind flying heavenly boar’s corpse, and it seemed that he was a bit tight on finances as well.

If not for that, even if an ancient desolate beast’s corpse was worth several hundred immortal essence stones, he would not have sold the wisdom path inheritance.

Even if this wisdom path inheritance was not complete, it was still very rare in the market.

Thus, in the following days, Fang Yuan stayed in Hu Immortal blessed land peacefully and refined malicious thought Gu non-stop.

“Even though malicious thought Gu is not a consumable Gu, it is still a mortal Gu, it has limits. Even though my primeval essence is unlimited, if I activate it too many times, after a while, these malicious thought Gu would be damaged.”

With that in mind, Fang Yuan knew that his need for malicious thought Gu would be kept at a certain level in the future.

But the refinement of Gu would always take a long time. The higher the rank of the Gu worm, the longer the time it would take. Gu Immortals often spend decades, a century, or even centuries to refine one Immortal Gu.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan decided to put in a large investment and purchase hairy men.

During this time, he had sold more batches of guts Gu, each batch earned him forty-eight immortal essence stones of profit.

He only kept fifty immortal essence stones, he spent the rest to purchase hairy men without restraint. This caused the price of hairy men in treasure yellow heaven to surge for a brief period of time.

Fang Yuan wanted the hairy men inside Lang Ya blessed land the most. These hairy men were not only well trained, they were also much better in quality than those in treasure yellow heaven, but after he asked Lang Ya land spirit, he was sternly rejected. Not only that, Lang Ya land spirit scolded him fiercely and said that Fang Yuan was not being a good friend.

Although Fang Yuan was scolded, he was happy.

Lang Ya land spirit saying he was not being a good friend meant that Lang Ya land spirit acknowledged him as a friend already, even though their friendship could not compare with Lang Ya land spirit and Inkman King Mo Tan Sang’s relationship.

However, Mo Tan Sang and Lang Ya land spirit’s friendship had not started in this generation, it began with a former city lord long ago in inkman city. After countless generations, inkman city had been maintaining this relationship with Lang Ya land spirit secretly. This friendship had accumulated to an immense amount through time.

“Lang Ya land spirit has just been released, and has obtained so many completed Immortal Gu recipes. According to his temperament, he is definitely going to refine Immortal Gu. But refining Immortal Gu requires a vast amount of resources, even the affluent and rich Lang Ya blessed land cannot sustain such costs. Gu Immortals cannot enter treasure yellow heaven physically, after this auction, he would have no chance to sell them. If he wants to sell the Gu Immortals’ blessed lands, then to him, it is an urgent matter as well.”

Fang Yuan knew that Lang Ya land spirit was already anxious deep down. When he loses his cool, he would find Fang Yuan personally.

Lang Ya land spirit’s connections were too shallow, he only had Mo Tan Sang.

But Mo Tan Sang had inkman city to take care of, and he was a variant human, he had lots of restraints, how could he appear personally to sell these Gu Immortals’ blessed lands?

The status of variant humans was lower than normal humans. The same applied to variant human Gu Immortals.

Seeing that the variant human Gu Immortal was selling human Gu Immortals, it would ignite the animosity of the human Gu Immortals against a common enemy.

That is to say, other than finding Fang Yuan, Lang Ya land spirit had no other candidates.

This was really not his fault, after all, a land spirit could not leave the blessed land. Furthermore, Lang Ya blessed land was a land of treasures, it was filled with wealth and would draw out people’s greed, since blessed lands could be swallowed, it was Lang Ya land spirit’s method of self-preservation to have minimal contact with Gu Immortals.

Lang Ya land spirit was internally anxious, this made Fang Yuan much less anxious about it.

For the next two months, Fang Yuan stayed in Hu Immortal blessed land, building another Fang Yuan stone nest, and also filling up all of the rooms in the stone nests with hairy men.

These hairy men were quite skilled in refining Gu, they were the higher quality goods in treasure yellow heaven.

High grade hairy man slaves, even though Fang Yuan could buy them, they were low in numbers. When Fang Yuan bought this group of hairy men, he not only needed to care about the quality, but also have sufficient quantity.

With the second stone nest, the production of airsac Gu would increase, which meant that the production and sales of guts Gu would also increase, each time Fang Yuan made a transaction, he would earn more immortal essence stones.

But Fang Yuan did not order all of the hairy men to refine airsac Gu for now.

The second stone nest was meant to refine malicious thought Gu!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 736: What a Huge Transaction

If malicious thought Gu were used to replace delight in water and mountain

Immortal Gu, the quantity of the former would definitely have to be enormous.

Fang Yuan needed a lot of malicious thought Gu and not just several hundreds of them. He made an initial estimation that he required at least two thousand, by simultaneously activating them, the amount of malicious thoughts they produced could barely be sufficient for use under the light of wisdom.

Most importantly, these two thousand malicious thought Gu must be rank five.

Fang Yuan had the recipes of rank one to rank five malicious thought Gu. Rank one to rank five malicious thought Gu had similar effects in producing malicious thoughts. The only differences were the amount of thoughts they could produce in one activation and the vast difference in the quantity of primeval essence they consumed.

“Gu refinement is not easy, the higher the rank, the more difficult it is to refine. Especially rank five malicious thought Gu which cannot be obtained immediately but requires the refinement to be one step at a time, from rank one to rank two, rank two to rank three and so on. This means, in addition to a low success rate, the amount of resources consumed will be extremely large.”

Fang Yuan’s initial plan was to first refine two thousand malicious thought Gu. As for malicious will Gu, he did not need it at the moment, as he still had a lot of joyful will left in his mind.

Refining two thousand rank five malicious thought Gu was no doubt an enormously time-consuming project.

If Fang Yuan had not purchased hairy men and built the second stone nest, the hairy men in the first stone nest could only take on this project when there was spare time from refining airsac Gu. This meant they would at least need ten years of time to reach the target of two thousand rank five malicious thought Gu.

Now, Fang Yuan had the second stone nest and large numbers of hairy men, this time period was greatly shortened to about sixteen months.

“If I can improve the Gu recipe within this time and think of a completely new rank five Gu recipe that can directly refine rank five malicious thought Gu, then the sixteen months will be further reduced greatly.” Fang Yuan thought inwardly.

His refinement path realm had already advanced to quasi-grandmaster, but he had almost no foundation in wisdom path.

However, he still had confidence.

The source of this confidence was none other than Wisdom Gu.

Relying on the light of wisdom, he could get endless inspiration. Even if his attainment level was lacking, it was not of much concern and he could forcibly make deductions.

“The might of rank nine Immortal Gu is indeed extremely terrifying.” Fang Yuan was becoming increasingly aware of the power of rank nine Wisdom Gu.

Using the light of wisdom, he could deduce Immortal Gu recipes. And these Immortal Gu recipes had perplexed even the quasi-great grandmaster Lang Ya land spirit, unable to make progress.

Fang Yuan could also use the light of wisdom to deduce immortal killer moves.

Vicious Lightning Fiend comprehended the immortal killer move Lightning Deity from a remnant recipe of Blood Deity, after using up several years of time in closed cultivation.

If it were Fang Yuan and he possessed the corresponding lightning path attainment, using the Wisdom Gu, he would require at most a month to accomplish this.

Hei Lou Lan was currently trying her best to advance her mortal killer move, self strength phantom, to an immortal killer move. Unfortunately, even if she had the foundation of a mortal killer move and the strength path attainment level, she would require at least years of time to reach her target.

Were it Fang Yuan, he could probably accomplish this in half a month.

In actual fact, Fang Yuan have been intermittently deducing immortal killer moves. The immortal killer move he was deducing was none other than myriad self.

Myriad self’s core was cleanse soul Immortal Gu but because it was starving, it could not be used. Fang Yuan’s main goal in deducing myriad self was to replace cleanse soul Immortal Gu with other Gu worms.

Unfortunately, once this sole Immortal Gu was gone, the power of the killer move greatly fell. Even if he used a lot more mortal Gu, it could not reach the original might.

In the long history of Gu Masters, since ancient times till now, there was only one mortal killer move that had the offensive power of an Immortal Gu.

That was white bone chariot!

This killer move came from Proud Bone Demon Lord Shen Jie Ao, it was a peerless creation standing high above in both ancient and present times.

Thus, Fang Yuan had listed as one of the exchange conditions for buying a desolate beast corpse in treasure yellow heaven, to use a desolate beast corpse to exchange for rank five bone path mortal Gu like Battle Bone Wheel.

Battle Bone Wheel was one of the mortal Gu required to form the white bone chariot killer move. Fang Yuan only had one of it, which he obtained from the battlefield where Wolf King Chang Shan Yin had hidden himself in Northern Plains.

Fang Yuan’s talent could not match Shen Jie Ao, if he got rid of cleanse soul Immortal Gu, myriad self would simply not have enough power.

Over the next half of a month, Fang Yuan tried hard to improve malicious thought Gu’s recipe and besides this, he also did not give up in improving his immortal killer move myriad self.

In this time period, he sold another two desolate beast corpses in treasure yellow heaven.

He exchanged them for the second pair of bat desolate beast wings as well as dozens of immortal essence stones.

Fang Yuan had not wanted to use desolate beast corpses to exchange for immortal essence stones. But he only had fifty immortal essence stones remaining on him as most of his wealth had been used to purchase hairy men. Now, he was refining rank five malicious thought Gu on a large scale, which required extremely great resources. Thus, he had no choice but to exchange for immortal essence stones in order to barely be able to cope with his expenses.

With this, Fang Yuan only had three desolate beast corpses remaining on sale in

treasure yellow heaven.

The immortal essence stones on him also reached a number of just over twenty. And since he was constantly making deductions, his green grape immortal essence also fell down to thirty-six beads.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan's plan of improving malicious thought Gu's recipe succeeded.

It was a completely new malicious thought Gu recipe, although it did not reach his previous expectations, it already was reduced by a number of steps. Previously, the rank five malicious thought Gu could only be refined step by step from rank one to rank two and so on. Now, the rank five malicious thought Gu only required two steps. The first step refined a half-finished malicious thought Gu while the second step completed the refinement.

Although the success rate did not improve, the procedure had shortened; the materials required decreased by a lot and time was also saved.

"According to this speed, the estimated sixteen months has been directly reduced by half. I will have two thousand rank five malicious thought Gu in just eight months. However, I am already tight on immortal essence stones. At this rate, even with the support from the transaction of guts Gu, I won't be able to make my ends meet. Do I have to slow down for the moment and let the second stone nest refine airsac Gu, raising the production of guts Gu to earn immortal essence stones?"

Just as Fang Yuan was having this thought, the good news he had been waiting a long time for had finally arrived.

"Brat, you win! I agree to your condition. We will split in a four to six ratio!" Lang Ya land spirit said furiously, his emotions in a mess.

Fang Yuan lacked money to refine mortal Gu on a large scale, while Lang Ya land spirit was refining Immortal Gu, the resources he had to expend amounted to more than hundred times what Fang Yuan required, so he lacked money even more so!

Just like Fang Yuan expected, Lang Ya land spirit did not have other channels and only had Fang Yuan to accomplish this task.

Thus, he had no choice but to accept, even though he knew this was an extremely large loss.

Fang Yuan also did not want to push his luck; such a sharing of profits was already the limit of the land spirit. If he did not accept this and angered Lang Ya land spirit, there would not only be no transaction, even the relationship he had built with much difficulty would collapse.

Northern Plains, Bai Zu grotto-heaven.

The hall was lit with bright lights, beautiful women were dancing without rest; fine wine and delicacies were presented at the table in a row.

"Eat this, I personally like this dish very much, it is made of the rank five Gu, Flying Vajra Centipedes, which are roasted over a charcoal fire, making its flesh delicious and tender." Heavenly Lord Bai Zu said with light laughter from the main seat, inviting the two Gu Immortals in the hall.

The two Gu Immortals were none other than Qin Bai Sheng and Fairy Li Shan.

Although the dishes were made by others, the two immortals had no misgivings. Qin Bai Sheng picked up a long piece of meat and threw it in his mouth.

He chewed it loudly, his lips shone with oily luster. He raised his thumb in praise: “Indeed a delicacy! Not bad, not bad.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu laughed loudly before looking at Fairy Li Shan: “I wonder how fairy finds it?”

Fairy Li Shan’s eating manner was much more elegant than Qin Bai Sheng; she took a few bites then appreciated the taste before smiling: “It is delicious, not only is there the smell of coal, there is also a nice chewy taste with a creamy and refreshing texture. It truly is a masterpiece.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu laughed heartily with extreme satisfaction: “I won’t conceal it from you two, I thought painstakingly and tested for eight days and eight nights to create this dish. This is one of my most satisfying works during this year.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was a rank eight Gu Immortal and a lone cultivator. He had a hobby which was famous throughout the world of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals; he liked to cook gourmet food and create new fine dishes.

“In this visit, we not only succeeded in inviting Heavenly Lord to participate in the auction, but also tasted such a delicacy, it is truly our honor.” Qin Bai Sheng spoke at an appropriate time.

“I shall engrave Heavenly Lord’s hospitality in my heart. Now, we have already signed an alliance treaty, please forgive Li Shan for not being able to stay longer.” Fairy Li Shan said.

“Hehehe.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu nodded while all smiles, “Good. There are only a few rank eight seniors in Northern Plains. You two have already invited me, as well as Yao Huang, Five Elements Grandmaster and Old Ancestor Xue Hu. If only Prince Feng Xian is left out, it won’t be good.”

“Heavenly Lord has penetrating insight, we were going to invite Prince Feng Xian.”

“Go, go. Organize this auction properly, this old man has great expectations.”

Qin Bai Sheng and Fairy Li Shan left Bai Zu grotto-heaven, then hurried towards the southeast direction.

Midway, Fairy Li Shan’s expression suddenly changed. In her immortal aperture, Fang Yuan’s message had arrived through moving perspective cup Gu.

Fairy Li Shan slowly came to a halt.

Qin Bai Sheng asked curiously: “Fairy, why are you stopping?”

Fairy Li Shan gave a light smile: “There is a person I want to introduce to you.”

“Eh?” Qin Bai Sheng’s interest rose.

At this moment, Fang Yuan came out of Fairy Li Shan’s immortal aperture, he quickly scanned his surroundings before looking at Qin Bai Sheng: “Lord Qin, your mighty name has long since resounded in my ears.”

Qin Bai Sheng was a rank seven Gu Immortal with outstanding battle strength at the level of Shi Lei. Right now, as he saw Fang Yuan was only an immortal zombie with the lowest cultivation of rank six, his interest that had been roused just before rapidly disappeared.

However, remembering Fang Yuan had directly come out of Fairy Li Shan’s immortal aperture, it could be seen that Fang Yuan’s relationship with Fairy Li Shan was not shallow. Qin Bai Sheng did not become arrogant, and only nodded and smiled lightly: “You flatter me, you are?”

“My name is Sha Huang, I have a large transaction that I want to discuss with Lord Qin.” Fang Yuan smiled.

“What large transaction?”

When Fang Yuan spoke of the matter of selling Gu Immortals’ blessed lands, Qin Bai Sheng and Fairy Li Shan both turned pale.

In the letter from the moving perspective cup Gu, Fang Yuan had not explained things clearly and only said he wanted to participate in the auction.

Fairy Li Shan was endlessly shocked: “Sha Huang, you really have blessed lands of Gu Immortals to sell?”

“Haha, they are not mine, I am only running an errand.” Fang Yuan smiled. He and Fairy Li Shan were under the Snowy Mountain Alliance, so he must speak the truth.

However, this indeed was the truth, just that he had only said part of it. He naturally would not say that he, this errand boy, had more of a share of the profits than the owner.

Qin Bai Sheng’s mood calmed down only then, as he deduced that Fang Yuan was a subordinate of some great person. In the open, Northern Plains had five rank eight Gu Immortals, but it was rumored there were some old monsters who were apparently still alive.

Immediately, Qin Bai Sheng reevaluated Fang Yuan; he was still smiling, but his tone had a slight change now: “It is indeed a huge transaction. Brother, since you think highly of me and have confidence in this auction, then how could I refuse?”

“Many thanks to Lord Qin for making an exception.” Fang Yuan’s smile turned even bigger.

“What exception, honestly speaking, I am just glad it was not too late. Gu Immortals’ blessed lands, tsk tsk, this will definitely heighten the climax of the auction. Haha, this auction I am holding will definitely be one of the few grand auctions over several hundred years in Northern Plains!”

Qin Bai Sheng laughed loudly and passionately patted this small rank six immortal zombie, Fang Yuan’s shoulder: “Honestly, I am a boorish person! Lord Qin is a strange way to address me, brother, if you think I am worthy, then even if I am older by some years, how about calling me brother.”

Qin Bai Sheng was already over seven hundred years old, he was indeed older than Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan directly cupped his fists with a smile: “Brother Qin.”

“Haha, Brother Sha.” Qin Bai Sheng returned the greeting.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 737: Joining Zombie Alliance

Qin Bai Sheng was quite the character.

His battle strength was on par with Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei, but he did not have any arrogant attitude. Not only that, when he conversed with Fang Yuan, he kept a cool demeanor and was very amicable, not only did he laugh grandly, he even gave people a feeling that he was very open-minded.

This time, Fang Yuan had obviously appeared under the disguise of the mortal killer move unfamiliar face.

He had to conceal himself.

Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun were in the hands of Qin Bai Sheng, if they had revealed the details or had their souls searched, Qin Bai Sheng would have known about Fang Yuan’s eight arm heavenly zombie form already.

Be it Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng or Fang Yuan’s eight arm heavenly zombie figure, they could not appear openly in Northern Plains.

Because the three of them were key surviving members of the Eighty-Eight True Yang Building incident.

Right now was a sensitive time.

Ever since Northern Plains’ number one wisdom path Gu Immortal, Dong Fang Chang Fan, deduced before his death that the culprit was not a person from Northern Plains and was an outsider, Northern Plains had formed an attitude of resisting a common enemy.

Countless forces and experts wanted to take revenge. Especially the ten or so super forces in Northern Plains, their benefits were heavily affected. They wanted to slaughter the culprit, to chop them into pieces and slice their skin and bones, to torture them for endless years to appease their hatred!

Once Fang Yuan and the others showed up, even if their crimes were not exposed, it would sure to stir great attention and Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals would immediately make their moves, wanting to use Fang Yuan and the others as the key to obtaining more inside information.

Thus, Fang Yuan came here using the fake name of Sha Huang, at the same time, his eight monstrous arms turned into ordinary zombie shoulders, his terrifying six meter tall body had turned into that of a normal person’s build, or even shorter. The fangs in his mouth were also completely retracted, he no longer looked ruthless but instead gave off a weak and powerless feeling.

Of course, Fang Yuan had informed Fairy Li Shan already regarding his disguise in his letter. When they established the Snowy Mountain Alliance earlier, they had considered such a situation, thus, this was Fairy Li Shan and Fang Yuan collaborating to deceive outsiders, he did not go against their agreement at all.

But even if Fang Yuan was so insignificant, an immortal zombie with stale cultivation and a grim future, Qin Bai Sheng did not look down on him at all, he talked with Fang Yuan on equal terms, in fact when they conversed, he spoke with an affectionate tone.

Qin Bai Sheng's attitude made Fang Yuan praise him inwardly: "This person is really quite a character, no wonder he could turn this around and forcefully change this situation of being attacked by Northern Plains' Gu Immortals to one that benefits him greatly."

Qin Bai Sheng was also thinking: "This small rank six immortal zombie has an ordinary appearance, but even after I probed him for so long, he has not slipped and exposed anything. Even now, I do not know his origin and background, while he can still talk to me, Qin Bai Sheng, calmly and normally, he is not simple, not simple,"

Fairy Li Shan was at the side, squinting as she smiled, watching Fang Yuan and Qin Bai Sheng talk.

Fairy Li Shan saw that they were talking with more enthusiasm as she laughed lightly: "The way you two are talking, it is a shame that you have only met now, you actually left me in a corner, you look like long lost brothers who had just met each other."

"I am ashamed." Fang Yuan quickly said.

Qin Bai Sheng heard this and his eyes brightened up: "Fairy said it well, that was fabulous! Brother Sha and I feel like old friends, we really hit it off, why don't we become sworn brothers. With Fairy's mountain pledge Gu, from now on, as long as I have meat to eat, I will not let little brother starve!"

Fairy Li Shan was shocked, she did not expect Qin Bai Sheng to be serious.

After the shock, she flustered: "Is Qin Bai Sheng's discernment superior to mine, he has already seen through Fang Yuan's disguise?"

Fang Yuan gasped, immediately showing an expression like that of a 'youngster with poorly concealed temptation': "I am not worthy, I am not worthy."

"Oh, what is brother saying, there is no such thing as worthiness. This is fate! Unless... even though brother is showing this on the surface, you actually look down on me, a person without a force?" Qin Bai Sheng's eyes shined brightly, he looked at Fang Yuan tightly, showing a half-smiling expression.

"Oh no, my unfamiliar face is only a mortal killer move, Qin Bai Sheng has felt something amiss already. It boils down to the excessive strength that I displayed, I actually had Gu Immortal prisoners and was going to sell Gu Immortals' blessed lands. Although Qin Bai Sheng is a lone cultivator, he is skilled at gathering allied forces and is organizing an auction, thus he wants to use me to latch onto the force behind me."

"Of course, there is a possibility that he suspects that I am the culprit who toppled Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. No matter which one it is, I can see the troublesome and powerful methods of this person."

These thoughts flashed by in Fang Yuan's head quickly, as he gave a bitter smile: "To speak the truth, I really hit it off with brother Qin, but I am a small character, I cannot decide this, I am not like brother Qin and Fairy Li Shan who are free. The matter of becoming sworn brothers, it is not that I do not want to, but I cannot."

Of course they could not, once they did, making an oath before the mountain pledge Gu, Fang Yuan would be at his mercy.

The most simple way was for Qin Bai Sheng to suggest that brothers cannot lie to each other.

What can Fang Yuan do then? How could he reject him?

“So that is the case. Brother has his difficulties, I understand. Not only do I understand, I can even help you, brother.” Qin Bai Sheng patted his chest, while speaking, he still continued to try probing Fang Yuan’s background.

Fang Yuan cupped his fists to thank him, before turning around and looking at Fairy Li Shan: “Fairy, I came here this time with another task, that is to borrow and make use of your mountain pledge Gu.”

“This...” Fairy Li Shan looked at Qin Bai Sheng, hesitatingly saying: “Sha Huang, you might not know, but we are going to find Prince Feng Xian to invite him to attend the auction. Our time is tight, I am not sure if Prince Feng Xian will be angry. After all, he is the last person we are visiting.”

Qin Bai Sheng said instead: “Prince Feng Xian is a model of the righteous path, how can he be so small-minded? Anyway, we are going to take some time in flying there, it is not a problem to lend it to brother Sha Huang.”

“It’s fine, I am not in a rush.” Fang Yuan cupped his fist: “In that case, Fairy and brother Qin should go first, we will split up here.”

“Why doesn’t brother Sha Huang come with us? It is a rare opportunity to be able to meet Prince Feng Xian.” Qin Bai Sheng invited.

How could Fang Yuan dare to go to a rank eight Gu Immortal? Especially when this Prince Feng Xian had an investigative Immortal Gu that was at least rank seven.

Even though unfamiliar face came from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, it was just a mortal killer move, in front of an investigative Immortal Gu, it was insufficient.

Fang Yuan rejected Qin Bai Sheng’s invitation and watched them fly away, as their figures vanished into the sky, his expression turned cold.

He had finally learned how troublesome Qin Bai Sheng was to deal with.

Compared to the brutish Shi Lei, this person had a exquisite mind, who knew how many thoughts were in his head, while he could appear on the surface to be grand and full of passion, as if it came from the bottom of his heart.

Just this acting ability alone was on par with Fang Yuan.

If not for Fang Yuan being a reborn old monster, he might not be able to see Qin Bai Sheng’s true colors.

“This person is a lone cultivator, yet he was able to make a network of alliances and influence the entire world of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals, his methods were truly incredible, he has some real skill. Unfortunately, his luck in my previous life was bad, just when Blood Hunter came out of seclusion, he unfortunately met with and engaged in fierce battle, succumbing to that monster’s methods.” Fang Yuan recalled as he turned around, flying towards another direction.

Not long later, he met with a group of azure ostriches.

This bird had a swollen back, like that of a camel, it had azure feathers and its body was as strong as a grown man. Often gathering in groups, they were the overlords of the sky.

This group of azure ostriches were not few in numbers, they were a myriad beast group.

Fang Yuan did not care about them, he continued to fly forwards.

The azure ostriches found the ‘prey’ Fang Yuan and were very excited, they first screeched before getting close to him, but the moment they got close to him and sensed his immortal zombie aura, they ran away in fear.

All living beings had survival instincts in them to avoid danger, even beasts and birds had this insight and would not send themselves to death.

If this had been Fang Yuan when he stepped into Northern Plains for the first time in his previous life, if he met the azure ostrich group, he would need to dig a hole and bury himself to avoid them.

But now, even without doing anything, he had chased this group of azure ostriches away.

“Even though I became an immortal zombie, compared to my previous life’s achievements, my cultivation level has greatly exceeded what I had been during this time. In my previous life, at this point, Qing Mao mountain had been destroyed by Bai Ning Bing’s self-detonation, because clans are united by bloodline, they spurn outsiders. Before I became a lone demonic cultivator, I joined a caravan and was often at the front lines, trying to earn a living like this.”

In his previous life, Fang Yuan had moved around Southern Border, Western Desert, Eastern Sea for over three hundred years before becoming a rank five Gu Master in Central Continent.

But now, only decades had passed and Fang Yuan was already an immortal, even though he was an immortal zombie, his battle strength was already upper-tier among rank six Gu Immortals.

Firstly, the rebirth advantage he had was huge. Secondly, Fang Yuan took part in many dangerous situations, the higher the risks, the greater his rewards.

“But as time passes, the influence of my rebirth would become bigger and bigger. This auction had never happened in my previous life. Hopefully, when I join Northern Plains Zombie Alliance this time, there will be fewer accidents and my plans would go smoothly.”

Having unfamiliar face, Fang Yuan decided to try joining Zombie Alliance.

Plans could not keep up with changes.

His original plan was to first take dark limit Immortal Gu. But Xue Song Zi and Hei Cheng’s incident had inadvertently served as an alert, afterwards, Fairy Jiang Yu had disappeared mysteriously, even Fairy Li Shan could not find her.

He also had another plan, to kill Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun. But now that they were captured by Qin Bai Sheng, they were watched by almost all of the Gu Immortals in Northern Plains, how could Fang Yuan kill them now?

After these two plans succeeded, his third plan was to join Zombie Alliance. But with the current situation, Fang Yuan had insufficient control of the circumstances, he had to take a risk and join Zombie Alliance, even if it was dangerous.

As he flew, Fang Yuan considered the plan for joining Zombie Alliance again.

Along the way, he met many bird groups, but they were all repelled by Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie aura. Only once, he met a desolate beast flying snake. Fang Yuan did not want to waste time and avoided it.

Although Northern Plains was huge, having five billion square kilometers of surface area, ten times that of Earth, but Fang Yuan's current location was not far from his destination. After half a day, he saw a mountain on the horizon.

It was Ku Mu mountain.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 738: Old Earth Wood, Immortal Zombie Gu Ye

Ku Mu mountain, rather than a mountain, it looked more like a giant dead wooden tree that extended into the clouds.

The name of the wood was old earth.

Old earth wood had a long lifespan, this particular pillar of old earth wood had more than a million years of history. From Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's era, to Red Lotus Demon Venerable, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, and then to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. Even after Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable died, it was still alive.

When it had lush leaves, the greenery covered the entire sky, and it produced countless fresh fruits. On its strong branches, unique tree farms could be created.

During its golden years, it was usually owned by the strongest Gu Immortals or the most powerful forces in Northern Plains.

But as the river of time continued to flow, the lush green leaves wilted, its strong trunk decayed, its glorious days were over, and it became a gloomy and silent structure.

Long ago, countless forces had fought over it, fighting with their lives or even dying due to the old earth wood, but eventually, its late years were lonely. The barren tree branches could only create a shade over a small area, attempting to pitiful recreate its former glory.

Right now, the old earth wood tree's main trunk was mostly dead, only a small portion still had a little bit of life left.

From a mystical treasure that everyone was after, to a monument that nobody visits, it was like an aged giant, bending its back and sitting on the ground calmly, awaiting the end of its life.

Fang Yuan did not come here to admire the old earth wood tree, he was here for the immortal zombie who was living on top of the old earth wood.

This immortal zombie was a wood path Gu Immortal during his life, his name was Gu Ye. If Fang Yuan wanted to join Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, he would need an immortal zombie's recommendation.

Fang Yuan had already gotten the details of Northern Plains Zombie Alliance from Fairy Li Shan. The reason why he chose Gu Ye was not because this person was special, but because he was the closest.

As he got close to the old earth wood tree, Fang Yuan slowed his speed, but he did not see Gu Ye appearing.

He frowned slightly, this Gu Ye’s alertness was simply too terrible.

Finally, when he arrived at the old earth wood tree, Fang Yuan shouted: “Is Old Earth City Lord around? My name is Sha Huang and I am here to visit.”

His voice echoed through the old earth wood tree, causing the wilted leaves to scatter onto the ground. From a deep part of the old earth wood, a figure came out: “Why are there more people?! Do you really think I, Gu Ye, am easy to bully?”

His tone was filled with anger and helplessness.

Gu Ye appeared before Fang Yuan.

He was yellowish in color, tall and skinny, resembling the old earth wood. There were wooden markings on his skin, it was an immortal zombie body that resembled dead wood.

Seeing Fang Yuan, Gu Ye was stunned, the anger vanished on his face as he said hesitantly: “Sir is?”

“I am Sha Huang, I have turned into an immortal zombie recently without much choice. I wanted to join Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, I wonder if Old Earth City Lord may give me a recommendation?” Fang Yuan cupped his fists as he expressed his intention directly.

“Oh, you are a newcomer who wants to join Zombie Alliance. A pleasure to meet you.” Gu Ye’s expression changed, he quickly greeted back while smiling: “I thought it was... forget it, let’s not talk about it. We are all in the same boat, please come in.”

Fang Yuan slowly flew up, under Gu Ye’s lead, they traveled past many rotten leaves and branches, arriving at a deep part of the branches of the old earth wood tree.

This was a city.

It was completely built on the old earth wood branches, it resembled a carved wooden city, it was quite unique.

Countless wooden houses were lined up, some were tall while some were short, not only were there common squares, there were towers and city walls, all sorts of streets and paths were interconnected like blood vessels, moving along the countless branches.

There were also all sorts of vine ladders, either drooping or hanging from one branch to another.

It was a pity that this wooden city was half destroyed, large numbers of houses had collapsed. The yellow vine ladders were no longer green, they could not sustain any weight. When the cold winds blew, the vines might break, landing on the branches and causing a loud sound.

“This is Old Earth City. Although it is like this, the atmosphere still remains. Back in the day, this was a popular area and countless famous characters gathered here. This was once the heart of Northern Plains.” Fang Yuan looked around as he sighed casually.

“The city is dead, there is nothing left. Brother Sha is calling me Old Earth City Lord, but that title is very hollow now.” Gu Ye laughed bitterly at the side: “To speak the truth, if not for this place still producing a wood path resource called wilted essence, who would care about it?”

Fang Yuan nodded, agreeing: “That is indeed the case.”

Gu Ye sighed deeply: “Sigh, if I knew that this place was so barren, I would not have accepted this mission from Zombie Alliance. But the duration of my mission is almost over, I can leave this painful place already. Brother, look at my pathetic state and learn from it. When you enter Zombie Alliance, do not choose the mission of guarding old earth wood.”

Fang Yuan had already guessed that Gu Ye was injured, seeing him say this, he placed his gaze naturally on his face.

Gu Ye’s face was swollen, it looked like a pink peach was growing on one side of his cheeks. The other side of his face was caved in, filled with many cracks. Looking at him, his entire head was in a strange shape, like a deformed melon.

Not only that, there was a long scar on his chest.

Although the scar was shallow, the injury was big. There was poisonous gas that were dark purple in color spiralling it.

“Even if brother Gu didn’t mention it, I was going to ask. Where did you get your injuries from?” Fang Yuan asked.

“Sigh, brother. Seeing that you have just turned into an immortal zombie, you still do not know the pain of immortal zombies...” Gu Ye sighed pitifully, he was about to start his story when there was a loud sound outside, the entire old earth wood tree shook intensely as wilted leaves flew, even the rotting branches that seemed like tall pillars collapsed, they came crashing down.

Gu Ye’s expression changed.

Next, Fang Yuan heard someone shouting from outside: “Gu Ye, come out now, this Divine Lord is here to make a transaction with you!”

Gu Ye’s expression became uglier, his eyes were spewing fire as he gritted his teeth: “Divine Lord Tian Du again!”

Bam!

Another loud bang.

Old earth wood shook again, leaves fell from the branches like a huge rain. The beautiful wooden houses collapsed, causing dust and smoke to rise.

Outside, there was another Gu Immortal shouting: “Gu Ye right? Come out now, I am Shi Hou, come out, I have a matter to discuss with you.”

Saying so, there was another loud bang, causing a distressing noise in the old earth wood.

Looking at their actions, they were not going to give up until Gu Ye showed up.

Gu Ye’s expression was very ugly, he clenched his fists as he took a few deep breaths, smiling forcibly at Fang Yuan: “Brother Sha, take a seat first, I will be back shortly.”

“No worry, I will go with you.” Fang Yuan said.

Gu Ye showed a touched expression as he cupped his fists, thanking sincerely: “Then I will thank brother in advance.”

The two walked out of the old earth wood tree, seeing the two rank six Gu Immortals in the sky.

One had a strong muscular body, his skin was bronze in color as lightning coiled around his body, his name was Divine Lord Tian Du.

The other had messy hair, he looked like a brute carrying a skull, it was Shi Hou.

Seeing Fang Yuan, Divine Lord Tian Du was stunned before laughing: “To think that Gu Ye found a helper. But it is a pity, you found an immortal zombie.”

In his speech, he did not hide the disdain towards immortal zombies.

“You!” Gu Ye flew into a rage, about to speak.

Divine Lord Tian Du waved his hand, saying impatiently: “I will not talk trash with you, I know that you have some wilted essence with you, my friend has an immortal essence stone, he will buy a hundred and fifty kilograms of wilted essence from you.”

“One immortal essence stone for one hundred and fifty kilograms of wilted essence, why don’t you just rob us instead?!” Gu Ye was stomping his feet in anger, shouting.

“Robbing is possible too, but seeing that you are Divine Lord’s friend, I wanted to do him a favor.” Shi Hou snickered, his attitude was very arrogant, as if Gu Ye was helpless against him.

“You two are shameless, you are basically bandits!” Gu Ye stared with wide opened eyes, his lungs were about to explode.

He did not attack in the end.

He was furious, but also extremely helpless.

The other party were two rank six Gu Immortals, but he was only a rank six immortal zombie, his blessed land was dead and he only had over a dozen immortal essence stones. Even though he would fight with them, what would he do after that?

Ignoring the question of whether he could win, even if he won, he would expend a lot of green grape immortal essence, without the blessed land’s replenishment, he could only use immortal essence stones to replenish it.

After one battle, he would go bankrupt.

Gu Ye was full of worries, he looked at Fang Yuan beside him.

Actually, Divine Lord Tian Du and Shi Hou were also looking at Fang Yuan. Divine Lord Tian Du had extorted Gu Ye many times already, he knew about Gu Ye’s background, but he did not know anything about Fang Yuan.

Furthermore, it seemed like Fang Yuan was Gu Ye’s helper.

But why would Fang Yuan help Gu Ye for no good reason?

His gaze flickered, he showed a hesitant expression as he asked Gu Ye in a weak tone: “Brother Gu, what is going on? Who is the other party, such absurd demands, why isn’t the Zombie Alliance interfering?”

Seeing Fang Yuan’s hesitation, Gu Ye lost all hope, he sighed deeply: “The Zombie Alliance can interfere, but I cannot afford it. It was better when leader was around, but now... sigh! Forget it, after you join the Zombie Alliance, you will learn about it, brother.”

“Is that so...” Fang Yuan’s face showed a perfect mix of shock, disappointment, and even worry towards the future.

Hearing their conversation, Divine Lord Tian Du and Shi Hou could see the joy in each other’s faces.

“So this newly emerged immortal zombie wants to join the Zombie Alliance.”

“We are going to successful extort him again!”

The two transmitted.

As they expected, Gu Ye was helpless but to accept their demands. Eventually, he sold one hundred and fifty kilograms of wilted essence for one immortal essence stone.

“Hahaha, this was a pleasant business deal!”

“Gu Ye, when you ask for help next time, at least invite a living person.”

The two left while laughing loudly.

“Sigh, this rotten place, I do not want to stay here for even one more second.” Gu Ye showed disappointment, his head was sinking even lower now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 739: Dark Flow Giant City

Fang Yuan watched as Divine Lord Tian Du and Shi Hou disappeared into the horizon, before retracting his gaze, looking at the immortal zombie Gu Ye beside him with a slightly flickering gaze.

With a trembling and hesitant voice, he said: “Brother Gu... may I ask... how many times has this happened?”

Gu Ye restrained his grieving expression, and patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder, comforting him on the contrary: “Not too many. It is just that with the nearing of Qin Bai Sheng’s auction, some shameless scumbags are trying everything they can to get the capital to participate in this level of grand event.”

Fang Yuan had not helped him, but Gu Ye did not blame him. He did not have any hope, thus his disappointment and grief had no relation to Fang Yuan.

With this, even though they had just met each other, Gu Ye was even more certain that Fang Yuan’s situation was similar to his and even slightly worse, as a fallen Gu Immortal who had helplessly turned to becoming an immortal zombie.

“But this behavior is too ugly.” Fang Yuan pretended to be indignant.

This expression looked like his true feelings in Gu Ye’s eyes.

“At least there is something to cover the humiliation.” Gu Ye looked at the immortal essence stone on his hand with irony.

This immortal essence stone was the ‘price’ Shi Hou and Divine Lord Tian Du had paid for one hundred and fifty kilograms of wilted essence.

He shook the immortal essence stone: “Look, Divine Lord Tian Du and Shi Hou might be strong, but they still are apprehensive of Zombie Alliance behind us and had to give us face in this way.”

“Could it be... could it be that Zombie Alliance’s face is only worth one immortal essence stone?” Fang Yuan expression was aghast, as he made an inquiry.

Gu Ye laughed.

His laughter was bitter, mixed with helplessness, sadness and grief.

He looked at Fang Yuan, and felt he was looking at himself back when he had just joined Zombie Alliance.

He patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder again: “Brother Sha, you have reached this point and also know the hardships and disadvantages of immortal zombie. Blessed lands of us immortal zombies are already dead and cannot be operated, and cannot produce immortal essence. If I have to say it bluntly, we are on our dying breaths. Thus, we have to rely on external resources even more than those living Gu Immortals.”

“You also might have already heard about it, Zombie Alliance indeed has many immortal zombies like you. But if you want to rely on these people as support and to help maintain your face, you have to pay the price.” Gu Ye’s words had deep implications.

“Price?” Fang Yuan pretended to not understand.

“Yes. If you want to request a rank six immortal zombie to help you, you need two immortal essence stones, and this is only the initial price, the concrete amount will depend on how intense the fight is. If you want to request a rank seven immortal zombie, you need twenty immortal essence stones. Similarly, this price is only the initial price. If you have sufficient immortal essence stones, you can even request the whole of Zombie Alliance to support you. But if you don’t have money or don’t want to pay the price, then your face can only be worth this much.”

When Gu Ye said this, he slightly raised that immortal essence stone and intentionally shook it.

Blessed lands of immortal zombies were already dead, it was hard to engage in business to generate income and they had to rely on more external resources; this made immortal zombies have to meticulously plan and often choose to endure as opposed to fight. Only like this could they barely maintain their livelihoods.

Like with Fang Yuan previously, he could not produce green grape immortal essence by himself and could only use immortal essence stones to substitute. The pressure was too high; in that intense battle with Hei Cheng, his finances almost collapsed and fell into a plight again.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan had Hu Immortal blessed land, which reduced the significance of his immortal aperture being dead.

What was even more fortunate was that he had wisdom Gu’s help. And there were extremely large benefits to using the light of wisdom with an immortal zombie body.

First was the Immortal Gu recipe transactions with Lang Ya land spirit, which allowed Fang Yuan to get out of the mire. Then with the help of the light of wisdom, he was able to innovate airsac Gu and engage in the guts Gu business, making Immortal Crane Sect compromise, and greatly improving his entire living environment.

‘If I didn’t have these, my situation might be extremely dismal just like Gu Ye’s.’ Fang Yuan sighed inwardly, while on the surface he showed a look of realization and took a step back, bowing and cupping his fists: “Brother Gu Ye, I have received your teachings.”

Gu Ye shook his head: “Even without me speaking of these truths, you would understand it for yourself after some time. No need for thanks. Come, I will bring you to Zombie Alliance.”

Fang Yuan followed Gu Ye to the depths of the old earth wood branches at that exquisite wood city again.

Gu Ye flew ahead to a large plaza in the center of the wood city.

The plaza was in ruins, from the damaged floor tiles to the surrounding destroyed flower beds and dried up fountain; one might be able to only get a glimpse of its past prosperity.

Gu Ye and Fang Yuan stood in the center of the plaza.

“Rise.” Gu Ye mobilized his primeval essence, the plaza’s surface instantly brightened.

The thick and solid floor became translucent like a giant jade.

The green jade light circulated around, shadows of countless Gu worms fluttered within the light.

At the same time, large numbers of mortal Gu flew out of Gu Ye’s body, mostly being rank five space path Gu and rank four wood path Gu. These Gu worms flew above Fang Yuan and started to rapidly revolve like a hurricane, in the dusky surroundings, rays of brilliant light gradually appeared.

Gu Ye continued to mobilize his primeval essence unceasingly, these flowing lights rapidly increased in number and soon created a vast bluish-green patch.

Untold numbers of mortal Gu, under some wondrous rhythm, converged their powers, overlaying on top of one another and mutually amplifying themselves, finally forming a might display.

“This is a top tier mortal killer move our Zombie Alliance researched, green crystal hero’s path. It can span across hundreds of thousands of li, directly connecting the old earth wood and Zombie Alliance’s garrison. You know us immortal zombies are Gu Immortals as well, our bodies are filled with dao marks, thus normal methods are unable to transport us.” Gu Ye explained at the appropriate moment.

Fang Yuan nodded.

Immortal zombies might have weaker battle strength causing their status to lower, and their thoughts to slow down, but their accumulations and foundations still remained for the most part.

Especially when immortal zombies are in a similar situation, they could cast aside prejudices unlike normal Gu Immortals and cooperate with each other. Thus, being able to research a peak tier mortal killer move was not strange.

Gu Ye continued: “I looked after the myriad poison date tree in Zombie Alliance for two years before I was able to get enough contribution points to exchange for this Green Crystal Hero’s Path. Ah, right, you might be confused. Brother Sha, if you choose tasks which needs you to go outside, Zombie Alliance’s prerequisite is that you have to grasp the killer move Green Crystal Hero’s Path. Only with this can you reach Zombie Alliance at any time.”

They did not have Fixed Immortal Travel, did not have Stargate and also did not have moving perspective cup Gu.

Normal Gu Immortals could use connecting heaven Gu and hole earth Gu; but immortal zombies could not because of their dead apertures.

Connecting heaven Gu and hole earth Gu were only mortal Gu, the reason they could connect between blessed lands or grotto-heavens was because the two small worlds involved would silently consume heavenly power. And an immortal zombie’s blessed land or grotto-heaven was already dead, and was unable to expend heavenly power.

To set up connecting heaven Gu and hole earth Gu required the consent of both sides. Only with this, the immortal apertures could use heavenly power. If they were secretly set up, they would not be able to connect because of the absence of heavenly power.

Connecting heaven Gu and hole earth Gu also could not be used if they were set up outside in the five regions.

“Ah, so green crystal hero’s path was this important!” Hearing Gu Ye explain again, Fang Yuan showed an appropriately admiring and envious look.

Gu Ye caught Fang Yuan’s expression and felt refreshed, the grief from the forceful transaction earlier eased up by a lot.

Happiness often comes from comparison.

Instantly, Gu Ye felt Fang Yuan was much more pleasing to the eyes.

A thick green light soared to the skies from the dense dried yellow old earth branches and leaves.

After a while, in Dark Flow City, over a hundred thousand li away, on the plaza in the southeast section, a dark green light suddenly fell down.

The light engulfed the plaza, dying the surroundings green. Wind surged, and the hanging iron lanterns in the plaza constantly shook and squeaked.

The light quickly disappeared, in the originally empty plaza appeared Gu Ye and Fang Yuan.

“Let’s go, we should not stay here for long.” Gu Ye composed himself and walked forward, with Fang Yuan closely following behind.

This giant city was named Dark Flow; it was pitch black, resembling a giant beast sprawled on the ground.

The sun was setting to the west and there was still a source of light.

However, every tile and brick of the giant Dark Flow City emitted a dense darkness that dyed the surroundings black.

Especially, the closer one got to the center of Dark Flow Giant City, the denser this darkness became.

Fang Yuan and Gu Ye walked ahead, but saw no humans in their path. The long path had street lamps erected every few hundred steps. But these street lamps let out weak dusky yellow light which only lit some dozens of steps, leaving behind long stretches of darkness in between the gaps of the street lamps, making the darkness of the giant city even more conspicuous.

The large Dark Flow City felt like an abandoned city.

However, there were still some faint clamoring noises coming from below the giant city.

“This is the main headquarters of our Zombie Alliance in Northern Plains, and it is almost as large as a mountain. It is divided into seven floors; the lower five floors are the residences of mortal Gu Masters and are very bustling and clamorous. One floor above is where immortal zombies and people with some relation to us reside. The highest floor has the conference hall where three rank seven immortal zombies are stationed throughout the year.” Gu Ye gave an appropriate explanation.

Fang Yuan nodded without being surprised.

Zombie Alliance was not an organization that was only formed from immortal level members, but also covered mortal Gu Masters.

These Gu Masters, for the most part, made use of dark path; raising zombies, commanding zombies and even transforming into zombies.

The two walked for a while, arriving in front of a large hall without seeing anyone in the way.

Tall stone statues stood on either side of the large hall, they were taller and bulkier than even Fang Yuan’s eight arm immortal zombie physique.

Fang Yuan carefully observed them. His eyes narrowed slightly as he discovered these stone statues were not as simple as they looked.

“You find it strange too? This is Yin Liu Gong’s immortal killer move Stone Casket, inside them are not ordinary zombies but immortal zombies.” Gu Ye said this, then said in a lower voice, “Yin Liu Gong is one of the experts of our Zombie Alliance. When the city lord left Northern Plains, they assigned three deputy city lords; he is one them and can command immortal zombies to fight for him.”

“Yin Liu Gong...” Fang Yuan silently engraved this name to his mind.

This name was not in his previous life’s memories. But just based on the fact Yin Liu Gong could command immortal zombies to fight, he needed to be attached importance.

“In my previous life, my rise was a matter that occurred three to four hundred years later. And in this period of time, it was not that no outstanding characters emerged, but due to all sorts of reasons, they were washed away by the river of time.” Fang Yuan was cautious, with no hint of carelessness.

“Come and push the door.” Gu Ye suddenly moved to the side, “So long as you can open this large door, you will have the qualifications to join Zombie Alliance.”

Fang Yuan quietly put his two arms on the door and softly pushed, opening the door by a sliver.

Instantly, over twenty sharp, gloomy or dull gazes followed the crack and shot towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan intentionally changed his expression slightly, then he took a deep breath and fiercely pushed open the door completely.

Gu Ye laughed heartily while patting Fang Yuan’s shoulder: “Being able to push open this large door means you are a person of Northern Plains. Come, your timing is really exquisite, our Zombie Alliance’s meeting is held today!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 740: Nine Heavens Fragment

Central Continent.

White egrets flew in the sky, the weather was pleasant today.

Three rank seven Gu Immortals who came from Combat Immortal Sect had gathered within this sky.

“According to Immortal Monkey King’s request for help, it should be this place.” Qian Zhu Xian looked around as he said.

He was dressed in a green robe, he had a slim figure and his eyes were dark like an abyss, as if incapable of being alarmed.

“Although this place looks ordinary, it is evident that the grotto-heaven opening that was stated in the letter has closed up. But to check if it is really this place, we will need Divine Mother’s help.” Valley Lord Ming He, who was dressed in a white robe, looked over.

Beside him was a female Gu Immortal.

Beautiful and elegant, she was dressed in a golden robe and radiated majesty and dignity. She was a space path Gu Immortal, known as Divine Mother Jue Kong. Among these three, she was the oldest Gu Immortal, being over nine hundred years old.

Divine Mother Jue Kong closed her eyes, using her mysterious method, her aura remained calm and there was not even any trace of fluctuation.

In a short while, she opened her eyes, letting out a breath of foggy air: “It is here indeed, Starry Sky grotto-heaven is located at this place.”

The other two immortals heard this and their spirits lifted.

“Seven Star Child did not have much reputation back then, he actually cultivated to this extent without making a sound. In fact, his grotto-heaven even absorbed a fragment of blue heaven. Precisely because of this, Starry Sky grotto-heaven could still exist now. It is incredible.” Qian Zhu Xian sighed.

During the Immemorial Antiquity Era, the world of Gu Masters had nine heavens in the sky.

Red, orange, yellow, green, azure, blue, purple, white, black, they formed the immemorial nine heavens.

But seven of the nine heavens were destroyed by Ren Zu’s children, right now, only black and white heaven were left alternating in the sky.

Seven Star Child had a fortuitous encounter in the past, he secretly absorbed a fragment of blue heaven, this allowed his grotto-heaven to exist to this day, and not become a dead aperture due to his state.

The immemorial nine heavens were nine different worlds.

The immortal apertures of Gu Immortals were also worlds, worlds could swallow one another, the most famous example was treasure yellow heaven.

Back then, treasure yellow heaven’s owner — rank eight Gu Immortal, Daoist Countless Treasures, unexpectedly obtained a fragment world of yellow heaven. Thus, after he fused it into his grotto-heaven, it formed treasure yellow heaven.

After treasure yellow heaven was formed, it became extraordinary, and continued existing even until today.

“Once a grotto-heaven absorbs a nine heavens fragment, the benefits are really great. Not only will they gain some unpredictable mystical power, the immortal aperture’s heavenly power would become unlimited. Furthermore, calamities and tribulations would weaken greatly, or completely vanish. If I can obtain such a fragment world, I might even wake up laughing in my sleep.” Valley Lord Ming He was full of envy.

“Dream on, Ming He. Get your cultivation level to rank eight first. Only a grotto-heaven of a rank eight Gu Immortal can absorb a nine heavens fragment world.” Qian Zhu Xian laughed.

Valley Lord Ming He heard this and laughed bitterly: “I want to get to rank eight too, but I have no confidence in surviving the second grand tribulation. Thinking about how rank eight Gu Immortals have to undergo a grand tribulation every fifty years, I shudder at that thought. As for the myriad tribulation that is even more terrifying than grand tribulations, I simply cannot imagine them! Maybe, only someone like Shi Lei has no fear...”

Blessed lands had fortune, but heaven and earth was balanced, thus, once in a while, calamities and tribulations would befall.

Rank six Gu Immortals experience an earthly calamity every ten years, and a heavenly tribulation every one hundred years. Thus, when assessing a Gu Immortal’s cultivation level, they often used the heavenly tribulation as the standard. Fang Yuan was a two heavenly tribulations expert in his previous life.

After a rank six Gu Immortal goes through three heavenly tribulations, their blessed land would expand to another level, and they would become a rank seven Gu Immortal.

Rank seven Gu Immortals face an earthly calamity every ten years, a heavenly tribulation every fifty years, and a grand tribulation every one hundred years. Qian Zhu Xian and Valley Lord Ming He were one grand tribulation Gu Immortals, while Divine Mother Jue Kong was a level higher than them, being at two grand tribulations cultivation level.

As for rank eight Gu Immortals, they no longer experienced any earthly calamities, but they faced a heavenly tribulation every ten years, a grand tribulation every fifty years, and a myriad tribulation every one hundred years.

Myriad tribulations were far more scary than heavenly tribulations, they were known as ‘hopeless myriad tribulations’ among Gu Immortals, the difficulty was extremely high.

Thus, nine heavens fragments were much more precious.

Because the immemorial nine heavens were a part of the large world of Gu Masters. Calamities and tribulations would only descend upon blessed lands and grotto-heavens as they were immortal aperture worlds, this did not happen in the five regions or the immemorial nine heavens.

After the grotto-heaven devours the nine heavens fragment, in a way, they become a part of the large world of Gu Masters. This could greatly reduce the size and power of the calamities and tribulations, and the grotto-heaven would not die if the Gu Immortal dies. For example, Starry Sky grotto-heaven was still intact despite Seven Star Child already becoming an immortal zombie.

If the nine heavens fragment that was absorbed was big, calamities and tribulations could vanish for good. For example, treasure yellow heaven had never experienced any calamities or tribulations, it was now the biggest trading area in the Gu Immortal world.

“The benefits of absorbing a nine heavens fragment are huge. But don’t forget, this method has a weakness too. Even if you absorb just a bit of the nine heavens fragment, you will take in the aura of the greater world. Once the grotto-heaven is rooted into it, it can never be placed into your body again.” Divine Mother Jue Kong reminded them.

Qian Zhu Xian nodded, agreeing: “Simply put, by absorbing the nine heavens fragment, the Gu Immortal loses their freedom. They can only stay inside their immortal aperture world and cannot move about in the outside world. This is truly a huge loss. But if a nine heavens fragment appears before me, I would choose it without hesitation!”

“That’s right.” Valley Lord Ming He agreed: “Calamities and tribulations are too hard to survive, sometimes, I would want to become an immortal zombie, at least their dead lands would not experience any calamities or tribulations.”

“Alright, handling the task is the most important matter. We purposely wasted so many days, I’m sure that Monkey King has learned his lesson.” Divine Mother Jue Kong slowly closed her eyes.

Valley Lord Ming He fell into silence.

Qian Zhu Xian laughed: “Heh, after we save Shi Lei, I want to see if he can still act arrogant again?”

Divine Mother Jue Kong could no longer keep a calm aura, her golden robe fluttered as the aura of Immortal Gu burst out from her.

“Open.” Suddenly, she opened her eyes, her gaze was sharp as it pierced a hole into the void before her.

The hole was about the size of a man, through this hole, the three Gu Immortals could directly see the scenery inside Starry Sky grotto-heaven.

The three immortals did not speak, Qian Zhu Xian charged ahead and entered it. Next, Valley Lord Ming He entered, followed by Divine Mother Jue Kong.

But at the next moment, the three Gu Immortals appeared in the sky again.

“What is going on?” Qian Zhu Xian and Valley Lord Ming He showed some shock on their faces.

Divine Mother Jue Kong’s expression was solemn, her relaxed appearance was gone as she muttered: “In is not in, out is not out, space is interchanging, swapping around... this is the mystical ability Starry Sky grotto-heaven obtained after absorbing the blue heaven fragment?”

“Yes. Shi Lei mentioned this in his request for help as well.” Valley Lord Ming He recalled.

“It is not strange, why would it be simple if it could trap this monkey?” Qian Zhu Xian said.

Divine Mother Jue Kong snorted coldly: “This is only a minor problem.”

At the same time, in Northern Plains, Zombie Alliance branch, inside Dark Flow Giant City.

This place had densely accumulated darkness, even the clear skies could not shine any sunlight into here.

Fang Yuan pushed open the door and was inspected by more than twenty gazes.

He purposely showed a scared and hesitant expression as he stepped into the discussion hall.

He paid his respects, shouting: “I am Sha Huang, greetings to my fellow brethren.”

“Fellow brethren... you used a good phrase. We members of Zombie Alliance are in the same situation, we should help each other.” On the main seat of the discussion hall, there was an immortal zombie smiling as he said.

He was a fatty, he was over six meters tall, just like Fang Yuan’s eight arm immortal zombie form, but he was at least three times fatter than Fang Yuan. His skin was like bronze, his stomach was like a wine vat, big and round. Not just his stomach, his face, arms, fingers, they were all extremely round.

Fang Yuan saw him and thought of the information he had: “Flesh bronze zombie body, Yin Liu Gong...”

Before Fang Yuan came to the Zombie Alliance, he had gotten the relevant information from Fairy Li Shan.

Immortal zombie Gu Ye beside him thought that Fang Yuan was a newbie, he quickly paid respects: “Gu Yu pays respects to Lord Yin Liu Gong, Lord Dragon Commander Ye Cha, and Lord Huang Quan Weng.”

Fang Yuan followed after him: “I greet Lord Yin Liu Gong, Lord Dragon Commander Ye Cha, and Lord Huang Quan Weng.”

Saying so, he gave Gu Ye a look of gratitude.

Gu Ye smiled at him.

Yin Liu Gong was seated at the center seat, on his left was Dragon Commander Ye Cha, he was sitting up straight with a ruthless expression, his fangs were pale and sharp, on the right was Huang Quan Weng, he looked old and had a hunched back.

Even though they had overflowing death energy, their rank seven aura could not be concealed.

These three immortal zombies had true rank seven cultivation level, they were stationed in Dark Flow Giant City.

“Sha Huang... is this your real name?” Dragon Commander Ye Cha asked, his words were like steel, once he spoke, a strong wave of killing intent burst out, making one feel as if they were in the middle of a terrifying battlefield.

This was due to his experiences.

Dragon Commander Ye Cha was a lone cultivator, he had joined the Imperial Court contest and had used some of the opportunities inside Imperial Court blessed land to accumulate his foundation and become a Gu Immortal.

In other words, he had very rich battle experience, nobody dared to look down on him.

He opened his mouth, and his tone showed his imposing nature, it made people feel like he was pressuring them heavily.

“Of course not.” Fang Yuan laughed bitterly: “Sha Huang was the name I gave myself on the second day after I became an immortal zombie. It signified a new beginning, for me to temporarily forget my past glory. I had once sworn to heaven, only when I regain my real body and get rid of my immortal zombie status would I use my former name again.”

Once he said that, all of the immortals in the discussion showed varying expressions.

There was disdain, sneers, silence, sadness, but mostly, understanding.

Fang Yuan’s current performance and his mental state was just like theirs in the past. But after so many years, their grand ambitions were gone, their hopes and desires were almost completely burnt out. They were still immortal zombies now, life had not changed for the better.

“Alright, since Sha Huang opened the door, then he is a Northern Plains Gu Immortal. We in Zombie Alliance would be stronger with one more member. He has already proven himself. One has to know, previously, even Yao Huang did not manage to push open this door. Guh, guh guh guh...” Huang Quan Weng said as he started coughing, showing his old and weak state.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 741: Immortal Zombie Discussion

Speaking of the door of the discussion hall, it had quite the origin, it was created by the founder of Northern Plains Zombie Alliance.

This predecessor’s name was already lost in history, but his methods were simply divine.

The door was filled with all sorts of dao marks, some people had guessed that consumable Immortal Gu were used on it.

Only immortal zombies in Northern Plains could be acknowledged by the door, and would be able to push it open. If it was not someone who ascended to a Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, their immortal aperture world would have the heaven and earth qi of other regions. Once their hand is placed on it, they would be repelled. If one was a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, but not an immortal zombie, this door would heavier than a mountain, they would not be able to push it at all.

Although Fang Yuan was not born in Northern Plains, after reaching Northern Plains, he had adapted to the environment and had ascended to an immortal in Northern Plains, thus this door did not hinder him at all.

Dark Flow Giant City had expanded many times throughout history, but this door had been preserved intentionally.

The members of Northern Plains Zombie Alliance were very confident in this door. When they heard Huang Quan Weng’s words, their gazes towards Fang Yuan became milder.

Yin Liu Gong nodded: “Huang Quan Weng is right, you two, take a seat, you are just in time for the meeting. In addition, give Gu Ye some credit, he recommended a new member, according to the rules, he should be given three hundred contribution points.”

Fang Yuan knew that recommending a new member had benefits, but after hearing this, he immediately turned his gaze towards Gu Ye beside him.

Gu Ye felt ashamed when he was stared at, like he had taken major advantage.

He pulled Fang Yuan’s arm: “Come, brother Sha, sit beside me.”

Everyone saw this and felt a deeper impression of Fang Yuan’s ignorance.

In the discussion hall, the immortal zombies sat nearly in a circular manner.

Only the direction that led to the discussion hall’s door was left empty, forming a path for them to walk in and out, the other directions were filled with seats.

These seats were not in one row, from high to low, there were three rows.

The lowest row was for rank six immortal zombies, there were the most number of people on this row.

The center row was for rank seven immortal zombies, only a few were present.

The highest row was empty, it was for rank eight immortal zombies.

Gu Ye dragged Fang Yuan with much enthusiasm towards his seat. His seat was not empty, there was a will there, the appearance of the will greatly resembled Gu Ye.

Gu Ye waved his hand and the will entered his mind, he immediately asked Fang Yuan to sit down.

“The meeting is not always attended in person, if we are busy, we will use a will to participate instead of our main bodies. Brother Sha, do you have wisdom path Gu worms? If you do not, I will give you one.” Gu Ye said in a low voice.

“Of course I do.” Fang Yuan replied. He expressed ignorance in relation to Zombie Alliance, but he did not want everyone to think that he was a complete newbie.

The effect of wisdom path Gu worms was common knowledge among Gu Immortals, he had to know them.

Fang Yuan answered as he sat to the left of Gu Ye.

The two seats beside Gu Ye were empty.

There were so many seats, most of the immortal zombies were seated far from each other. Although there were more than twenty of them, most were wills, only a small number attended in person.

Seeing that Fang Yuan and Gu Ye had sat down, Yin Liu Gong coughed: “Alright, now we will start the meeting. First, we will talk about the important affairs.”

Saying this, he pointed at the table.

An image was shown, a spherical figure rose up from the center, turning into a volcano.

This volcano was quite strange, it was short like a gourd. It shook intensely, spewing lava out at times. Above the volcano, thick smoke was rumbling, almost forming a dark cloud and blocking out the sunlight.

“The flame furnace has erupted, I’m sure everyone knows this. This is a troublesome affair, we have to settle this by suppressing it as soon as possible. The longer it is dragged out, the harder it is to deal with. Our initial assessment is, if anyone can successfully suppress the flame furnace, they will get a thousand Zombie Alliance contribution points.” Yin Liu Gong said.

The immortal zombie began to converse with each other softly.

Gu Ye introduced for Fang Yuan: “This flame furnace is a great place for Gu refinement, it is especially good for refining fire path Gu worms. In the history of Zombie Alliance, there was once a refinement path immortal zombie who refined Immortal Gu in the flame furnace. But for the last few hundred years, we have not seen any refinement path grandmaster in Zombie Alliance. The flame furnace was left forgotten, at most the leader only used it several times, because it was unused, it was also not maintained, thus it is erupting more regularly.”

Fang Yuan nodded.

Gu Ye continued: “The flame furnace is extremely hot, especially the inner core area, it is like a sea of fire. Often when the issues happen, fire path immortal zombies would go. But the fire path immortal zombie has to have some refinement path background. They have to preserve or even fix the Gu formation that was set up, otherwise, forceful suppression would destroy it, they might as well not do anything. If the mission fails, not only would they earn nothing, they might even lose out.”

Fang Yuan mentally understood this clearly.

They had to be of fire path cultivation and have refinement path attainment, this resulted in very few eligible people. No wonder those in the hall only discussed it for a while before keeping quiet, turning their gaze towards a certain will in the hall.

Yin Liu Gong broke the silence, he looked at the will, saying: “In the past, leader went to suppress it personally, but now that leader is in Eastern Sea, within our Zombie Alliance, you are the most suitable person, Craftsman Huo De. Huo De, what do you think?”

This red will thought about it before saying: “My cultivation level is too low, it is very hard to suppress the flame furnace. But if everyone agrees, I will not reject it. Except that a thousand contribution points is simply too low.”

Yin Liu Gong nodded: “A thousand contribution points is only an initial estimation, in that case, we will raise it to one thousand and two hundred, are you willing to accept that?”

“I am willing.” Huo De’s will said.

“Good, now, onto the second matter.” Yin Liu Gong did not drag on, he changed the topic: “A yaksha octopus has appeared in Earth Trench, it is wrecking havoc. It is seriously affecting our extraction of the black oil. A while ago, Doctor Yin Xuan and Landlord Lei Yu were injured by this ancient desolate beast, if you can chase this beast away, you will get a thousand contribution points. If you can kill this beast, you will be given two thousand contribution points.”

Fang Yuan heard this and his heart jumped.

The treasure that he wanted to take was deep within Earth Trench, and was guarded by a group of yaksha octopuses.

This treasure was the reason why he joined Northern Plains Zombie Alliance now.

In the circular area, the image of the volcano changed, it became an octopus monster, roaming around in Earth Trench. Large numbers of tentacles were moving around, causing waves in the thick black oil.

Seeing this, the discussion hall became much quieter.

It was not easy to deal with an ancient desolate beast.

Not only did ancient desolate beasts have rank seven Gu Immortal battle strength, the immortal zombie themselves were inferior to ordinary Gu Immortals, they had much to worry about. An intense battle carried great risks. If they could not gain something, they would return with a huge loss. Even if they won, they would need to weigh it with their condition before battling.

Winning the battle, but losing out in terms of profits, they might as well not fight.

All of the immortal zombies here were astute.

Seeing no answers, Yin Liu Gong turned his head towards Dragon Commander Ye Cha beside him: “Dragon Commander, this yaksha octopus is compatible with your business, why don’t you take on this task?”

But Dragon Commander Ye Cha shook his head, rejecting on the spot: “I’ll not hide it from you, I received Qin Bai Sheng’s invitation and have planned to attend the auction. There are some items in the auction that I have been searching for years. Now is a crucial time, I cannot take the risk. But I am willing to hand out an additional six hundred contribution points to this mission.”

Once he said that, many of the rank six immortal zombies’ eyes flashed.

Killing this yaksha octopus was not easy for rank six immortal zombies. But to force it to retreat, it would not be difficult for several rank six immortal zombies teaming up.

But this mission only awarded a thousand contribution points earlier, when split among them, it was too little. Now that Dragon Commander Ye Cha took out six hundred contribution points on his own, some people were moved.

Battling with an ancient desolate beast was risky undoubtedly, but as long as the benefits were enough, risks were not an obstacle.

Immediately, three groups of people stated that they could accept this mission. The first two groups were alliances of rank six immortal zombies. The third was a single rank seven immortal zombie.

After some negotiations, this mission was taken by the rank seven immortal zombie.

Seeing that this troublesome mission was taken by someone, Yin Liu Gong sighed in relief mentally: “Next is the last mission, it involves the Red Fiend Divine Boat.”

“Red Fiend Divine Boat?” Fang Yuan’s gaze shined, he quickly thought of that glorious and huge flying boat that charged freely in the battlefield during the five regions chaotic war.

Gu Ye beside him explained softly: “You just joined Zombie Alliance, it is normal that you do not know. Red Fiend Divine Boat is a famous Immortal Gu House in history, it is very powerful. Earlier, a Northern Plains lone cultivator coincidentally obtained the entire recipe for the Red Fiend Divine Boat, but because he did not have the ability to refine it, he tried selling it everywhere. Leader tried to buy this boat’s recipe, paying a huge price and buying about half of this recipe.”

Fang Yuan thought: This Northern Plains Zombie Alliance leader had quite the ambition.

Immortal Gu Houses were more complete than immortal killer moves, they were the symbol of super forces.

Basically, every super force owned an Immortal Gu House.

Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s leader wanted to obtain an Immortal Gu House, that was obviously an intention to elevate this branch to the level of a super force.

“We encountered some problems.” Yin Liu Gong said in a low tone: “The Gu Immortal who sold the Divine Boat’s recipe broke the agreement and did not want to deal with us anymore. He wants to sell the Red Fiend Divine Boat’s recipe and the core Immortal Gu’s recipe in the auction for a good price. How will Zombie Alliance deal with this problem?”

The immortal zombies started discussing again.

“The auction again! These recent days, I have been extorted many times, all because of this auction.” An immortal zombie was full of grievance, but it was not Gu Ye.

“This Gu Immortal has quite the guts, merely a lone cultivator but actually breaking the agreement with our Zombie Alliance.”

“Kill him, we have to kill him, otherwise if news spread, all of our Zombie Alliance’s face will be lost!”

“Although Zombie Alliance is weaker than a super force, lone cultivators have no place to bully us.”

The immortal zombies shouted, most wanted to battle.

Fang Yuan nodded secretly, although immortal zombies had much to worry about, when huge benefits were involved, they would still dare to fight it out. But he did not favor Zombie Alliance’s chances, because in his previous life, the force who controlled the Red Fiend Divine Boat was not them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 742: Earth Trench Black Oil

The lone cultivator who sold the complete recipe for the Red Fiend Divine Boat was only rank six without any background.

Eventually, the Zombie Alliance decided to send a rank seven immortal zombie and two rank six immortal zombies to search for this person, in order to maintain Zombie Alliance’s reputation. Of course, the most important reason was to obtain the complete recipe of the Red Fiend Divine Boat.

But in truth, Zombie Alliance had already gotten most of it, only the few remaining core Immortal Gu recipes and the secret methods on how to coordinate the Gu worms were left.

Flame furnace, Earth Trench, Red Fiend Divine Boat, after these three matters were settled, the atmosphere in the discussion hall was relaxed.

Yin Liu Gong continued, pointing at the table: “Next, we will talk about other matters.”

His finger tapped the table, emitting a buzzing noise.

The immortal zombies looked at the formerly empty space, as the image changed again, turning into four huge pillars. On each of the pillars, there were lines of words moving around.

“Are there still any missions that have not been reported by everyone?” Yin Liu Gong said.

Everyone looked around, no one stood up.

Missions could be turned in at any time, they did not need to wait until a meeting.

Gu Ye did not want to do the mission of guarding old earth wood, but the time limit was not up yet, handing in the mission early would cause some of his contribution points to be deducted.

“Very well, now you can put up your own requests.” Yin Liu Gong said.

Once he said that, the entire discussion hall became heated. Voices overlapped each other, they were talking about Gu recipes for Gu refinement, collecting certain materials, appraising a certain Gu worm, getting information on certain matters, all sorts of requests were put up, with varying content.

Fang Yuan spoke too, he wanted to ask for a method to get rid of his immortal zombie status, a method that could revive him.

This caused much laughter around him.

“Brother Sha, you have not made an oath yet, you do not have a Zombie Alliance token yet, without contribution points, how can you put up a mission?” Gu Ye reminded him.

“So that’s it.” Fang Yuan frowned.

“Don’t be anxious, after the meeting ends, I will bring you to get your new identity token. This token can record all of the contributions you have done for the alliance. Furthermore, your request is the request of all of us immortal zombies, you do not need to purchase it specially. Look at the few missions at the top.” Gu Ye pointed at the ever-changing image.

Fang Yuan’s gaze turned around, and he saw that at the top of the mission board, there were several missions. One of them had much larger font than the rest.

“Selling the research results of how to get rid of the zombie status and regain life through generations of work in Zombie Alliance.” Fang Yuan read it.

“There are prices stated there, but even the smallest research results need twenty contribution points.” Gu Ye was very familiar with this information.

In truth, every immortal zombie was very familiar with the details of this mission.

What was the reason most immortal zombies joined Zombie Alliance?

Was it not to find a method to get rid of their immortal zombie status and revive themselves?

The reason for creating Zombie Alliance was also to research on how to revive immortal zombies.

“Brother Gu, are there any immortal zombies in Zombie Alliance who have revived due to these research findings?” Fang Yuan asked again.

“According to rumors, there seems to be cases of it.” Gu Ye said in an uncertain tone.

“Seems to be?” Fang Yuan frowned.

“You have to know, a lot of the research findings here are priced at a thousand contribution points or more to exchange them. After you join the alliance, you have to sign an agreement and will not be allowed to sell these research findings on your own.” Gu Ye laughed bitterly as he said.

He saw Fang Yuan frowning even more deeply, stating: “You do not need to worry too much, at least I can guarantee that these findings are not fake. I had exchanged for one of them previously, it had great use. If you can obtain these findings, you will be able to step on the foundation of these predecessors, you will save much effort.”

Fang Yuan nodded.

Zombie Alliance was an organization that responded to the mentality of the members. By using the research findings as the bait to keep the members working, almost no immortal zombies could stay away.

Even if the immortal zombie exchanges for many findings, as long as they have not revived, they would still need to work for Zombie Alliance.

The most amazing thing was that Zombie Alliance preserved some hope for the immortal zombies — even if this research finding did not work, maybe the next one could help them to revive?

Fang Yuan did not need to ponder upon it to know that the prices would be extremely high, they had to use an immense amount of contribution points to exchange for most of the research findings.

“But thankfully, the inheritance in Earth Trench was left behind by a great expert immortal zombie. There are research findings inside for the rebirth of immortal zombies as well. In my previous life, because Northern Plains’ immortal zombies obtained this, their battle strength surged rapidly. In fact, for a period of time, Northern Plains Zombie Alliance closed themselves away from the rest of the regions, it was even more powerful than the main branch, Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance.”

The reason why Fang Yuan entered Northern Plains Zombie Alliance was to obtain that inheritance.

Fang Yuan had little interest in working hard normally and accumulating contribution points slowly in order to exchange for the research findings in Zombie Alliance.

After all, the time and effort expended was too much.

After a while, the discussion hall became silent again.

All the immortal zombies had put up their missions and stated the contribution points for them. Everyone’s gazes were fixed on the image in front of them, some were looking around while others were thinking.

Yin Liu Gong continued to direct the meeting: “We will now issue missions. Do it one by one, do not be noisy. First, it will be the mission of feeding the ancient desolate beast half moon qilin in Zombie Alliance.”

“I’ll do it!”

“I’ll take this mission.”

“Mm, I want to compete for this mission.”

The moment Yin Liu Gong spoke, several immortal zombies responded, fighting for this mission.

Gu Ye explained to Fang Yuan softly: “The half moon qilin is an ancient desolate beast, it is not easy to feed. But its pregnancy period is about to end, it is going to give birth to a half moon qilin soon. These young qilin are born as desolate beasts. As they grow up, they would develop into ancient desolate beast half moon qilin. Many members in Zombie Alliance are trying to take advantage of this. They want to be close to the young qilin to gain an advantage, making it their own, and establish a strong relationship between them before paying the contribution points.”

“So that is it.” Fang Yuan understood, so this was the reason. No wonder so many people were fighting over the mission, after all, the half moon qilin would grow into an ancient desolate beast after maturing, it had battle strength equivalent to rank seven Gu Immortals.

Even Fang Yuan was slightly moved.

But he was only moved, he had just arrived and had a secret motive. Blindly contesting now would attract unnecessary animosity and attention, it was not good for him.

Regarding the half moon qilin’s feeding, everyone fought over it intensely. Eventually, Yin Liu Gong lowered the contribution points of this mission to three hundred, before some people gave up and the sole winner emerged.

Feeding the half moon qilin was not an easy task. Sometimes, when the qilin has a bad temper, ordinary rank six immortal zombies could not handle it, they might even get injured.

Most importantly, when the qilin is pregnant, it would feel great pain, it would damage the surroundings to divert its attention. This was a dangerous process, just three hundred contribution points made many immortal zombies back out.

And even if the half moon qilin was born, the immortal zombie feeding it would only be the first to establish a relationship. This was only a head start, when they truly competed for it later, they would still need to bid a high price.

After the mission of feeding the half moon qilin, was a mission to gather ruyi fungus.

“Ruyi fungus’ collection area is between Zombie Alliance and Liu tribe. Every year, when the ruyi fungus ripes, the two forces would split them. But because Liu tribe’s power is bigger, they would take advantage of us. The difficulty of this mission is on that point, an immortal zombie with high cultivation level is needed to hold the ground, but they cannot be too overbearing.” Gu Ye explained.

With Gu Ye beside him, it was much more convenient for Fang Yuan.

This mission was also quite popular, it fell into the hands of Granny Yuan.

This immortal zombie old lady not only had rank seven cultivation level, she was also closely related to Liu tribe. With her presence, Liu tribe would not go overboard.

“Next is a request from the super force Yao tribe, they want us to provide another immortal zombie for Yao Huang to do research, to improve his healing Immortal Gu. The remuneration for this request is quite a sum.” Yin Liu Gong said.

Seeing this mission, most of the immortal zombies showed an indescribable expression on their faces.

Letting someone else do research on them, it was quite hurtful to one’s pride, they would lose face. But on the other hand, the researcher was Yao Huang, one of the five great rank eight Gu Immortals in Northern Plains. Furthermore, the reward for this mission was truly profitable.

Everyone looked around, they did not speak.

Yin Liu Gong expected this scene, he smiled lightly as he looked at Fang Yuan: “I wonder if Sha Huang is interested in this mission?”

Fang Yuan immediately shook his head, giving a forced smile: “I have no interest.”

He had too many secrets on him, simply the two apertures alone could not be easily exposed.

Yin Liu Gong nodded, no longer urging him. But his intention, other than to probe Fang Yuan’s personality and foundation, was to induce some of the other immortal zombies to make a move.

As he expected, soon, several immortal zombies spoke up, wanting to accept this mission.

These few people competed, but their voices were not loud, they spoke softly with expressionless faces, after all, being used as research material was very damaging to one’s reputation.

Gu Ye was beside Fang Yuan, explaining this to him.

Fang Yuan knew the situation of these immortal zombies, they were those bottom-tier immortal zombies, because they were stuck between reputation and benefits, they chose the latter.

The following missions were of all different aspects, there was a huge number of different missions.

There was a mission requesting the super force Yuan tribe to return an Immortal Gu, back then, Zombie Alliance’s leader had loaned an Immortal Gu to Yuan tribe. Before the leader went to Eastern Sea, she instructed them to urge Yuan tribe to return the Immortal Gu.

But Yuan tribe had long exceeded the loan period, yet they refused to return it. Zombie Alliance would send members there every year to request for it, but they had always ended in failure. Not only did Yuan tribe find excuses for themselves, they even chased away Zombie Alliance members using force when the situation escalated.

Initially, no immortal zombie wanted to take this mission, Yin Liu Gong had to raise the contribution points and it was finally accepted by someone.

There were also requests for purchasing glass soil and diamond soil, missions to capture beast groups or collect souls. The final mission was related to Fang Yuan, it came from Fairy Li Shan who was looking for souls everywhere for the production of guts Gu, she even went to Zombie Alliance.

The most popular mission was to enter deep into Earth Trench and collect black oil.

Black oil was extremely helpful to immortal zombies. Spreading the black oil in the dead aperture could slow the speed of the disintegration of the blessed land. In the outside world, or to other Gu Immortals, it was a very useful Gu refinement material that was widely used, it had a huge market.

Black oil from Earth Trench was the most important trading item in Zombie Alliance, it was akin to the sale of guts Gu for Fang Yuan.

But the scale of the black oil trade was much larger than the guts Gu trade.

Every time immortal zombies went deep into the Earth Trench to extract black oil, other than handing up the amount required by the mission, they would keep the rest for themselves. Thus, the profit of this mission was publicly recognized as among the best for immortal zombies.

As a result, almost everyone fought for this mission.

Fang Yuan wanted to compete for it as well, if he could enter Earth Trench through this and secretly take that inheritance, it would be ideal.

But it was a pity that he had just arrived, he did not have the Zombie Alliance token yet, it was not wise or realistic to fight for it blindly. Furthermore, this mission had a time limit too, Fang Yuan was busy with the auction and Refinement Path Convention, he did not have time to deal with this mission.

Eventually, this mission was taken by three immortal zombies.

In winning the three spots on this mission, not only would these three victors not have any contribution points as rewards, they even had to pay several hundred contribution points to Zombie Alliance.

From this, one could see how profitable the extraction of black oil was.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 743: Harboring Malicious Heart

“Black oil is valuable in itself, but as it can delay the shrinking of blessed lands, its value is a level higher to immortal zombies.” Fang Yuan pondered inwardly, he was also coveting the black oil.

His blessed land was constantly disintegrating and a lot of space inside had already dissipated. Black oil was similarly useful to him.

However, he needed to go through Zombie Alliance to get this black oil.

Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s main headquarters, Dark Flow Giant City, was located above the entrance of Earth Trench and they used much of the alliance’s strength to guard this entrance.

Zombie Alliance sent large amounts of black oil out every year, but they had fixed quantities sold for this. There were few goods but the demands were high, it was completely a seller’s market like the business of guts Gu, thus Fang Yuan could not meddle in this aspect.

He had allied with Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan, but their force was too small and could not match with super forces.

“So I need to make my move from inside Zombie Alliance, accepting this task is one way.” Fang Yuan engraved the mission of gathering black oil in his mind.

The conference continued. The conference hall had dim lighting, even if most of the over twenty immortal zombies had participated with their wills, it still seemed dark and gloomy.

The whole conference continued for close to a day and a night; Fang Yuan participated in the whole process, roughly understanding the position of Zombie Alliance in Northern Plains.

Roughly speaking, Zombie Alliance’s position in Northern Plains was only slightly lower than super forces. But from the missions, one could see the righteous path super forces were clearly in tacit agreement to suppress Zombie

Alliance. Zombie Alliance had a much more cooperative relationship with demonic path Gu Immortals, especially with Snowy Mountain blessed land, a demonic path headquarters in Northern Plains.

Zombie Alliance could be considered both a righteous and a demonic force.

This position was related to the higher ups. Zombie Alliance’s higher ups were all immortal zombies. There were almost no immortal zombies that did not want to regain their living states. These immortal zombies came from all walks of life with all sorts of identities when they were alive, and after death, they gathered for similar purposes.

As long as it was related to the goal of revival, Zombie Alliance would be interested and do everything possible to get it. This infringed upon many of the righteous path’s interests, and many methods that could not be exposed openly in the righteous path, Zombie Alliance also frequently used.

This led to another characteristic of Zombie Alliance, they had a lot of members but they also had a loose structure.

There were over twenty immortal zombie level members in Zombie Alliance, even Snowy Mountain blessed land could not compare to this amount. Even if immortal zombies were weaker than living Gu Immortals, over twenty of them was a great power, and if they were to truly be united, they would have already been a super level force.

However, Zombie Alliance’s barrier for entry was low, this could be seen from Fang Yuan’s admission to the alliance. The immortal zombies had varying origins and it was very difficult for them to be united.

This was the reason there were many cases of immortal zombies being extorted by Gu Immortals recently.

After the conference ended, Fang Yuan left behind a malicious will in the conference hall. He then followed Gu Ye to another hall, where he received his Zombie Alliance token.

This token not only represented his identity, it also recorded Fang Yuan’s contributions to Zombie Alliance.

Besides the token, there was also a set of information path mortal Gu used to transmit information of tasks from Zombie Alliance, information about new members or members leaving the alliance, or important information like the death of the members.

Gu Ye wanted to take his leave, and suggested for Fang Yuan to stroll around Dark Flow Giant City. Now that Fang Yuan had the token, he could freely move around Dark Flow Giant City.

However, Fang Yuan did not let go of him and dragged him around, walking and chatting, probing out some information from him.

Fang Yuan focused on inquiring about the leader of Northern Plains Zombie Alliance.

She was a female immortal zombie called Blazing Heaven Demoness, her cultivation was rank eight and her behavior was tyrannical and rampant. Her battle strength was especially prominent.

Fang Yuan asked how it was prominent and Gu Ye replied one sentence which allowed Fang Yuan to understand — “Her lifespan had not reached its end, but she intentionally turned into an immortal zombie just to break through.”

Most immortal zombies were Gu Immortals that were on their last breaths and had no other choice.

Naturally, there was many other methods other than to turn into immortal zombie for Gu Immortals on their last breaths. Like wood path Gu Immortals turning into treemen.

However, these methods often had limitations. For instance, strength path Gu Immortals and fire path Gu Immortals could not turn into treemen.

Turning into an immortal zombie was the most common method which could be done by Gu Immortals of every path.

This Blazing Heaven Demoness was not someone who had no choice but to turn into an immortal zombie, instead she had done it intentionally. It was to make a breakthrough and increase her battle strength.

If one thought just a bit: What was the extent of the increase in battle strength, the extent of the breakthrough, that made Blazing Heaven Demoness not hesitate to turn into an immortal zombie?

Clearly, the extent of this breakthrough was sure to be extremely high and shocking.

“There is a rumor going around Zombie Alliance, it is said that the leader already has a method to revive.” In the midst of the conversation, Gu Ye lowered his voice and carefully told Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled.

This rumor was not groundless, since she turned into an immortal zombie of her own accord, who is to say she did not have a method to revive herself.

Fang Yuan was able to extract much useful information from Gu Ye. Combined with the information Fairy Li Shan gave him and his own experiences, Fang Yuan was able to quickly gain a rough idea of Zombie Alliance.

Gu Ye still had the mission of guarding old earth wood, and finally bade farewell to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan also left soon after, before leaving, he climbed high and looked at the giant gully being guarded below Dark Flow Giant City.

The giant gully was like the bloody mouth of a vicious beast, quietly opening up in the dense darkness. This was the entrance of Earth Trench which was strictly guarded by Zombie Alliance; Yin Liu Gong, Dragon Commander Ye Cha and Huang Quan Weng, three rank seven immortal zombies took turns in watching over it.

Fang Yuan was using hundred li eye to observe this clearly.

He knew that following deep into this entrance, the gully would expand by tens of times and even hundreds of times. Earth Trench was extremely grand, with such large space that it would not be a problem to contain innumerable Dark Flow Giant Cities. It was also extremely deep and dark, Zombie Alliance still had not explored its true depths.

“One day, I will explore deep inside and take the inheritance, adding it to my foundation for a much brighter future. But now is not the time.” Fang Yuan inwardly said.

Even if he had not transformed into an immortal zombie, he would have tried all sorts of methods to get this inheritance.

Fang Yuan retracted his gaze, his body rapidly rose higher and left Dark Flow Giant City like a large bird.

After flying a huge distance, Fang Yuan finally left the darkness covering Dark Flow Giant City and saw the bright sunlight again.

He changed his direction and flew high up in the sky before he finally confirmed there were no pursuers. Only then did he land down in an inconspicuous forest, arranged mortal Gu and activated Fixed Immortal Travel.

Jade green light flashed and he disappeared from the spot.

The mortal Gu left behind moved about, removing as many traces of the Immortal Gu aura as possible.

Fang Yuan returned to Hu Immortal blessed land. While waiting for news from Fairy Li Shan’s end, he started researching the wisdom path killer move — Harboring Malicious Heart.

This mortal killer move was not meant for attacking. Instead, it used wisdom path methods to transform a Gu Immortal’s heart, causing the heart to be filled with wisdom path dao marks inside and out, turning into a ‘malicious heart’.

If it succeeded, not only could it use one’s blood essence to automatically create large numbers of malicious wills, it could also reduce the amount of malicious wills consumed by a large extent when Fang Yuan used them to ponder.

Unfortunately, this mortal killer move might be good but it fit a normal Gu Immortal. Fang Yuan was a strength path immortal zombie, his heart was already filled with strength path dao marks and he was not a wisdom path Gu Immortal. The crucial point was his physical body was already dead, and was unable to nourish malicious will with his blood essence, even transforming his heart into a malicious heart was an enormous barrier.

Although Fang Yuan could not use the killer move harboring malicious heart, he was able to gain much inspiration from its workings. In particular, the inner contents of the killer move had several similarities to a killer move Fang Yuan obtained previously.

This killer move was poison breath, which he obtained from Fairy Li Shan.

Poison breath killer move could let poisonous breath be emitted each time one breathed, and as it accumulated, it could injure enemies. And harboring malicious heart could let every heartbeat transform blood essence into malicious will. There were indeed similarities between the two.

“I am not a poison path Gu Immortal, and I am lacking in a wisdom path foundation, but since there is a common point, I might as well use wisdom Gu to test it.”

Northern Plains, Feng Xian grotto-heaven.

In the guest hall, the rank eight Gu Immortal, Prince Feng Xian, was sitting upright, while Fairy Li Shan and Qin Bai Sheng bowed, requesting to leave.

“Go. I have many Immortal Gu that do not suit my path and need to be exchanged in the auction. You both are holding a good event for Northern Plains, preventing many fights and massacres, very good.” Prince Feng Xian allowed them to leave, his tone full of encouragement.

“Lord Prince being unable to be present at the auction is truly a matter of regret for all of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals.” Fairy Li Shan flattered.

Prince Feng Xian shook his head: “There is nothing to be done about it. I was mediating the heaven and earth qi in my immortal aperture when I was forced to come out because of the Immortal Gu. Now, it is the crucial time to manage my immortal aperture world, I cannot go out. But when the time comes, I will send someone to represent me. You Lan, send them off.”

Two attendants were standing beside Prince Feng Xian, these two were actually rank six female Gu Immortals.

One was cool and refined like ice and snow, the other was delicate and beautiful, like a yellow flower in a lush valley.

At Prince Feng Xian’s command, that cool and aloof female Gu Immortal stood up and first bowed to Prince Feng Xian, before saying to Qin Bai Sheng and Fairy Li Shan: “Guests, please follow.”

“We have troubled Swordmaster You Lan.” Qin Bai Sheng and Fairy Li Shan did not dare to be conceited, and quickly replied.

This Swordmaster You Lan was famous in Northern Plains. She cultivated sword path, and though her cultivation was only at rank six, her battle strength was very strong and moreover, she had grandmaster attainment in sword path.

Swordmaster You Lan led the two in silence. The three walked along a long corridor and through several doors before they finally stepped out of the entrance of the grotto-heaven and returned to the world of Northern Plains.

“Swordmaster You Lan, please stay, you don’t need to send us off any longer.” Qin Bai Sheng politely said. His cultivation level and battle strength were higher than Swordmaster You Lan, but the latter had one of the few rank eight Gu Immortals of Northern Plains behind her, he naturally would not be arrogant.

Swordmaster You Lan nodded and closed the entrance of the grotto-heaven.

Once the entrance was closed, there was no strangeness in the sky and there was no difference between the sky and the surroundings.

Fairy Li Shan let out a breath of cloudy air: “We have paid visit to five rank eight powers and also came to an agreement with all of them using mountain pledge Gu, and have successfully invited them. Now, the situation is set, the auction is a certain event.”

“It is all thanks to fairy’s mountain pledge Gu.” Qin Bai Sheng with a smiling expression.

Saying this, he took out an Immortal Gu and handed it to Fairy Li Shan.

“As per the agreement, this is the remuneration to fairy.” Qin Bai Sheng said with sincerity and gratitude.

Fairy Li Shan was moved, the auction had yet to start, but Qin Bai Sheng already gave the remuneration to her in advance. Even though Fairy Li Shan had seen a lot and had done dealings with all sorts of Gu Immortals, right now, she could not help but inwardly praise Qin Bai Sheng’s social conduct.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 744: Vaguely Familiar Face

“Then I shall not stand on ceremony.” Fairy Li Shan laughed, receiving the Immortal Gu.

She inspected it and placed the Immortal Gu into her immortal aperture: “This matter has been settled, we should split up and meet half a month later.”

Half a month later was the agreed date to hold the auction. The location was in Qin Bai Sheng’s Bai Sheng blessed land, it was situated inside Crimson Reed Marsh.

The two immortals went their separate ways on the spot, choosing different directions as they flew.

Not mentioning Fairy Li Shan, who was using moving perspective cup Gu to contact Fang Yuan while she traveled right now. After Fairy Li Shan and Qin Bai Sheng left, someone appeared in the entrance hall of Feng Xian grotto-heaven.

This person was dressed in a red and white robe, standing straight like a spear or sword. His eyebrows were sharp like swords, a divine light was flashing in his eyes, under his amicable appearance, he was unbelievably self-confident, he had the disposition of a roaming, fierce dragon.

His lips were curled up into a gentle smile, he was very gentlemanly but also domineering. His arms were behind his back, he faced the rank eight Prince Feng Xian with no pressure on his face, as if they were of equal status.

But from his unconcealed aura, he was merely a rank seven Gu Immortal. Even Qin Bai Sheng could not help but lower his head when facing Prince Feng Xian.

Prince Feng Xian looked at this person as his attitude also changed, he was no longer mildly arrogant like when he faced Qin Bai Sheng and Fairy Li Shan, he really acted as if the two were of the same level.

This rank eight Gu Immortal spoke: “Feng Jiu Ge, have you really decided to take my place and join this auction?”

The rank seven Gu Immortal dressed in a red and white robe smiled as he nodded: “That is exactly the case.”

Prince Feng Xian frowned: “You became an immortal in Central Continent, the heaven and earth qi of your immortal aperture world come from Central Continent, it is different from Northern Plains. There are powerful experts going to the auction, even rank eight Gu Immortals will be present. If you are discovered, it would be terrible. You have to know, all of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals are furious right now, they are trying to find the culprit who caused the downfall of Imperial Court blessed land. Before Dong Fang Chang Fan died, he deduced that the culprit is not from Northern Plains, but from the other regions. If your identity as a Central Continent Gu Immortal is discovered at this time, it will have huge implications.”

When Prince Feng Xian said this, he did not hide it from the two Gu Immortal attendants. The two female Gu Immortals, including Swordmaster You Lan, had no change in expression when they heard this.

Feng Jiu Ge laughed brightly: “Prince, don’t be anxious, look at my method.”

Saying so, a bright light flashed on his body, as his appearance changed.

Prince Feng Xian gasped lightly, while Swordmaster You Lan, who had a cold attitude, stared with wide opened eyes. The other female Gu Immortal, named Le Yao, opened her mouth as she looked repeatedly between her female companion and Feng Jiu Ge.

It turns out, Feng Jiu Ge transformed into an exact copy of Swordmaster You Lan, he resembled her perfectly, as if they were twins.

“What method is this?” Prince Feng Xian smiled, praising: “Not only is the outer appearance flawless, you even disguised your dao marks, they really resemble sword path dao marks. Your aura is also no different from any Northern Plains Gu Immortal.”

“This is vaguely familiar face.” Feng Jiu Ge said the answer.

“So that’s it, no wonder, no wonder.” Prince Feng Xian realized, he then exclaimed: “Only Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable could produce something so mystical and breathtaking.”

Feng Jiu Ge nodded: “Unfamiliar face, vaguely familiar face, and familiar face, this series of killer moves originated from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable. The former is a mortal killer move, it is nothing much. Vaguely familiar face is an immortal killer move with three Immortal Gu as the core, among them are two transformation path Immortal Gu, when used, deception will truly be hard to tell.”

“I obtained this killer move long ago in a chance encounter, but it has a flaw, that is, I need acting skills. If I act poorly, my tone could expose flaws in my transformation.”

“As for familiar face killer move, there is no such flaw. Even if the acting is not precise, others will not feel sudden strangeness, it can even affect other people’s perceptions and mentalities. Even if you transform into a non-existent person, others will still feel like you are their friend or acquaintance.”

Feng Jiu Ge explained.

The immortals realized now why Feng Jiu Ge transformed into Swordmaster You Lan out of everyone here. That was because this woman barely spoke normally, there was not much acting skill needed to disguise as her.

Prince Feng Xian nodded over and over: “Rank nine venerables are all incredible geniuses, their methods are out of this world. With this move, I will not be afraid of you getting exposed.”

Feng Jiu Ge laughed arrogantly: “Even if I get exposed, who can stop me from leaving?”

Prince Feng Xian thought about a few days ago when he sparred with Feng Jiu Ge, he could not help but smile, praising: “That is true, your immortal killer move has incredible power, even I, a rank eight Gu Immortal, would not want to take the hit directly. Feng Jiu Ge, your reputation is well deserved, you really have the power to roam freely in this world.”

Feng Jiu Ge cupped his fists, speaking with sincerity: “It is nothing compared to senior brother and junior sisters, you chose to ascend to immortal in Northern Plains for the sake of Spirit Affinity House’s major task, staying hidden here for hundreds of years, I am truly full of admiration towards you.”

Prince Feng Xian’s expression turned dark, he clenched his fist as he said: “It is a pity that someone used our methods before I activated our plans, taking the fruits of our labor. This is definitely the doing of someone in the ten ancient sects, don’t let me find out who it is, otherwise... hmph.”

The truth was, the great Prince Feng Xian, one of the few rank eight experts in Northern Plains, was actually a spy sent by Spirit Affinity House!

Spirit Affinity House made a huge move.

In order to set up Prince Feng Xian, Spirit Affinity House undoubtedly gave up a lot of benefits in Central Continent, if Spirit Affinity House had one more rank eight Gu Immortal stationed in Central Continent, they would be able to fight for more benefits when contesting with the other nine sects.

But Spirit Affinity House was the leader of the plan to topple Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, to complete this plan, they had to send Prince Feng Xian to Northern Plains.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, Prince Feng Xian might have made many contributions and provided much help for the Central Continent Gu Immortals to destroy Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. But in this life, Prince Feng Xian had not done anything yet and the plan was already ruined.

The culprit of this matter, the immortal zombie Fang Yuan, was already in Lang Ya blessed land.

He borrowed mountain pledge Immortal Gu.

Of course, he borrowed it for a fee.

Fang Yuan paid Fairy Li Shan three immortal essence stones for this.

Three was an extremely good deal due to their relationship, if it were another person, Fairy Li Shan would not casually lend it even if they paid ten immortal essence stones.

Lending Immortal Gu carried risk.

There was an example right here, Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s leader, Blazing Heaven Demoness, lent Yuan tribe an Immortal Gu. Blazing Heaven Demoness was out in Eastern Sea, thus Yuan tribe had been holding onto this Immortal Gu, refusing to return it to Zombie Alliance, who had been asking every year.

After using mountain pledge Gu to make an agreement with Lang Ya land spirit, more than ten coffins emerged from the cloud soil with a cry from Lang Ya land spirit.

These coffins were oozing with immortal auras, they were pure white as clouds, on the surface there were clouds forming and breaking down, it was the manifestation of a certain immortal killer move.

After opening the coffin, the sleeping Gu Immortal could be seen inside.

In each coffin, there was a Gu Immortal captive. A total of thirteen coffins, that was thirteen Gu Immortals!

Even though Fang Yuan was mentally prepared, after seeing this number, he was still shocked.

“So many captives?” Fang Yuan opened his eyes wide, he displayed a somewhat exaggerated expression.

Lang Ya land spirit laughed smugly, he loved to see Fang Yuan shocked, he shook his head as he said: “Who am I? Think about it! These Gu Immortals were simply courting death, they dared to attack my blessed land. Selling them is the punishment they deserve.”

Fang Yuan looked at Lang Ya land spirit deeply.

On the surface, there were only twelve desolate beasts in Lang Ya blessed land. To defend against the three waves of attacks from a mysterious force, the group of desolate beasts was insufficient. Lang Ya land spirit’s true methods were likely to be his prized Immortal Gu collection.

“I have some ideas, the number of Immortal Gu in Lang Ya blessed land definitely exceeds the number of Immortal Gu I have. Also, it seems that among his Immortal Gu, or among the immortal killer moves that Lang Ya land spirit owns, at least one of them has the ability to capture Gu Immortals.” Fang Yuan thought.

Such a number of captives was not normal.

Most of the Gu Immortals who attacked were captured, only a small number died from battle.

Fang Yuan looked at the coffins one by one.

He saw some familiar faces, like the three Hua Hai immortals, Loner Hong Yu, and Gui Wang. As for the others, Lang Ya land spirit introduced them to him, there was the metal path Gu Immortal Tie Jia Zi, enslavement path Gu Immortal Great Immortal Xue Xiong, wood path Gu Immortal Mu Dian Cang, a famous lone cultivator in Northern Plains, Carefree Four Sages, and a rank seven Gu Immortal, Wu Hao, known as Rushing Thunder Hand, he had rank seven middle-tier battle strength.

Fang Yuan’s horizons were broadened, be it his previous life or this life, this was the first time he had seen so many captives of such strength gathered together.

It was as if the Gu Immortals were not worth anything, they were like cabbage sold in the market.

Fang Yuan’s joy gradually faded, and he showed some worry and solemness.

To be able to gather such power and attack Lang Ya blessed land multiple times, this mysterious force hidden behind the scenes made Fang Yuan’s heart shudder.

“The moment I sell them, I will become a thorn in that mysterious force’s sight.” Fang Yuan touched the coffin as he sighed.

But before such huge profits, no matter how strong the mysterious force was, Fang Yuan had decided to do it.

He was not someone afraid of trouble, someone afraid to take risks.

He was a person in the demonic path, he was a risk taker.

If he chose to not take the risk, that meant that the benefits related to that risk were not enough to move him.

Fang Yuan asked Lang Ya land spirit: “You had interrogated them intensely, using many methods, did you have no gains from it?”

Lang Ya land spirit waved his hand: “None. These Gu Immortals were gathered due to various reasons. There were three crucial people who contacted them and organized the attack, while also providing information on Lang Ya blessed land. But these three Gu Immortals have already died in battle, even though I controlled my attacks, I could not stop their deaths. After they died, the situation became a little strange, their souls perished completely, I could not even find a fragment of their souls.”

Towards the end, Lang Ya land spirit gradually frowned.

Fang Yuan frowned as well, looking at the Gu Immortal captives sleeping in the coffins, he was silent.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 745: Incomplete Immortal Move

Fang Yuan planned to bring all thirteen cloud coffins back to Hu Immortal blessed land.

Because they had made the mountain pledge, not only did Lang Ya land spirit not stop him, he even gave Fang Yuan eight mortal killer moves.

“These killer moves are the ‘key’ to unsealing the immortal killer move sleeping cloud coffin. Remember the order that I told you, that is the only way to unlock the coffins, otherwise, it will be destroyed along with the Gu Immortals inside.” Before Fang Yuan left, Lang Ya land spirit instructed him.

Fang Yuan nodded, memorizing all of the mortal killer moves. These mortal killer moves had no names, their only use was to act as the key to opening the coffins.

But towards cloud path Gu Immortals, it had some reference value.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had cultivated cloud path on the side, Fang Yuan planned to give these mortal killer moves to Tai Bai Yun Sheng for reference.

Fang Yuan brought the thirteen Gu Immortal captives back to Hu Immortal blessed land successfully.

He first summoned Hu Immortal land spirit and asked for the latest news.

Hu Immortal blessed land was doing well, Hu Immortal land spirit had been steadily doing what Fang Yuan had instructed her. She was progressively selling the rockmen in the blessed land and buying some fox groups.

Hu Immortal herself was an enslavement path Gu Immortal skilled at manipulating fox groups to fight. Her immortal aperture, Hu Immortal blessed land, was most suited to raise fox groups. By following this route, eventually, desolate beast level fox groups would appear, it was a huge benefit. The profit was even higher than three transactions of Fang Yuan’s guts Gu.

But this method took a long time to see effect, it needed a long, sustained effort.

Hu Immortal was a lone cultivator, she was in a terrible state back then, after several earthly calamities, her finances collapsed, her losses could not be recouped and her battle strength fell, eventually dying in the hands of the blue charm lightning shadow.

The Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture would experience calamities and tribulations at certain intervals, it was like rounds of challenges that strongly limited the number of Gu Immortals in the five regions.

There was another huge obstacle, that was the limitation of lifespan.

Back then, Hu Immortal had Dang Hun mountain, she wanted to use this unique resource to generate great income for herself.

Her method was a wise choice. Even though raising fox groups was in line with the proper management of Hu Immortal blessed land, the effect took too long to nurture. The longer it took, the more accidents could occur. Especially when Hu Immortal’s circumstances were getting worse by the day, she could not afford to develop slowly.

However, she did not have wisdom Gu, she could not think of a method like using airsac Gu, she could only use the guts Gu to raise the number of rockmen and sell the rockmen.

Fang Yuan had used this method before, there was not much benefit and it was very troublesome. The rockman market was saturated, why would it be as profitable as directly selling guts Gu?

Eventually, Hu Immortal failed and died in the earthly calamity. The fortune she left behind assisted Fang Yuan. At the crucial moment, it provided him with immeasurable help.

Hu Immortal blessed land could be said to be Fang Yuan’s initial start-up fortune, the foundation of his rise. In his past life, Fang Yuan destroyed Hu Immortal blessed land in order to kill Feng Jin Huang, in this life, he became the owner of Hu Immortal blessed land. This was a wondrous contrast.

Right now, since Fang Yuan could sell guts Gu directly and had enough money, he could start to develop Hu Immortal blessed land again, going on the ‘proper path’ that even the previous owner, Hu Immortal, could not accomplish, slowly accumulating fox groups and raising desolate beast foxes.

This business was a long term plan. Fang Yuan was in no rush, and he was not looking for short term profits in this aspect either.

After looking over the situation of Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan placed his attention on Immortal Crane Sect and Combat Immortal Sect.

Hu Immortal blessed land was Immortal Crane Sect’s subsidiary force in name, he had to pay some attention to Immortal Crane Sect.

As for his younger brother, Gu Yue Fang Zheng, who was inside Immortal Crane Sect, Fang Yuan had stopped paying attention to him long ago.

A mere mortal Gu Master, even if he was rank five, what could he do? Just like back then on Qing Mao mountain, as long as he did not hinder Fang Yuan’s path, he would not even bother to stomp on him.

He was too busy.

Mortals were like ants, there was no need to waste time and effort to stomp on them.

“That dear brother of mine is probably dead now?” Fang Yuan had a guess.

Earlier, Fang Zheng had used mutual sense Immortal Gu to connect with Fang Yuan. This allowed Fang Yuan to gain much information, learning about Fang Zheng’s predicament and ‘seeing’ that he was in a blood pool, and the sad sight of demon flowers growing on his body.

During this period of time, Immortal Crane Sect’s situation was quite calm. They successfully resolved the problem of Great Heavenly Sword Sect.

Great Heavenly Sword Sect had a newly emerged third Gu Immortal and was ready to get rid of their status as a subsidiary force of Immortal Crane Sect. Immortal Crane Sect was a righteous sect, even though their strength greatly exceeded Great Heavenly Sword Sect, because of the rules of the righteous path, they could not attack forcefully, they could only recruit the Gu Immortal in Great Heavenly Sword Sect.

Eventually, they succeeded in recruiting a Gu Immortal in Great Heavenly Sword Sect, it was that new third Gu Immortal.

Great Heavenly Sword Sect controlled limited resources, it was tough enough to provide for two Gu Immortals, a third was too much for them.

The newly advanced Gu Immortal was given alluring conditions by Immortal Crane Sect, joining them in the end.

Great Heavenly Sword Sect lost the crucial person and their strength fell, they no longer had the foundation to detach from Immortal Crane Sect, they could only sign the subsidiary contract once again.

However, even though Immortal Crane Sect stabilized the situation in the northwest area, they were heavily suppressed in the reincarnation battlefield. Lei Tan, who was the Gu Immortal stationed there, was heavily injured, he had no choice but to return to the sect to recuperate.

Reincarnation battlefield was the publicly recognized number one battlefield killer move in the world, it was set up by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable himself. The ten great ancient sects had taken control of this area for many years, engaging in fierce competition.

Immortal Crane Sect’s attention went back to the reincarnation battlefield again, for the time being, they had no energy to think of new ideas to deal with Hu Immortal blessed land.

He Feng Yang, who was in charge of taking down, Hu Immortal blessed land had been busy recently in trying to find a way to heal his beloved nine palace crane, Little Nine.

This was undoubtedly good news to Fang Yuan, he could attend the auction in peace without caring too much about Central Continent.

Fang Yuan paid attention to Combat Immortal Sect next.

From some unimportant looking news from Combat Immortal Sect, Fang Yuan sensed something strange.

This news could deceive the other nine great ancient sects for the time being, but to Fang Yuan, who was aware of the inside story, he could tell what was going on.

“It seems that Combat Immortal Sect has indeed deployed the battle strength of Gu Immortals to attack Starry Sky grotto-heaven.” Fang Yuan thought.

What he did not know was, after he left, Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei was trapped inside Starry Sky grotto-heaven. Combat Immortal Sect sent three Gu Immortals to reinforce him, but after they entered Starry Sky grotto-heaven, they met with some obstacles as well.

“In this case, the dream realm in Starry Sky grotto-heaven has been exposed to Combat Immortal Sect. The dream realm of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has a connection to the predictions of Great Dream Immortal Venerable, Combat Immortal Sect will definitely attack the grotto-heaven in secret. I have to make good use of my time, the advantages of my rebirth are shrinking rapidly.”

Fang Yuan felt a sense of urgency again.

Ever since he started selling guts Gu and had made contact with all the large and small forces in Central Continent, it had become much easier for him to gather information compared to before.

But this information was very general, there were no secrets involved. It could not compare to Fairy Li Shan’s intelligence, those that came from Northern Plains.

Fang Yuan did not mind this at all.

Many Gu Immortals placed importance on collecting information, every year, they would invest a huge amount of funds to search for critical information or to sustain the avenue of their source of information.

But Fang Yuan did not need it.

He saved a huge sum from this, because with his rebirth advantage, he had a lot of intelligence about his previous life, compared to the information that these Gu Immortals obtained through hard work and resources, it was much more comprehensive and important.

After confirming the situation around Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan was at ease. He looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s letter as well as Hei Lou Lan’s situation.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was currently exploring Yu Lu blessed land with Shark Demon and some others. Immortal Gu Landscape as Before had completely restored Yu Lu blessed land’s entrance, it made Tai Bai Yun Sheng gain the favor of the others, and he successfully mixed in with the exploration group.

As for Hei Lou Lan, she had recently undergone tribulation.

Gu Immortals faced calamities and tribulations once in a while. Rank six Gu Immortals faced one earthly calamity every ten years.

Ten years was not in terms of the time of the five regions, it was the time in the Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture.

Because the branch of the river of time was different in every immortal aperture, the time flow was also different when compared to the outside world.

Hei Lou Lan went through immortal ascension with the Great Strength True Martial Physique, she obtained a super grade blessed land, the flow of time in her blessed land was extremely fast, even faster than Tai Bai Yun Sheng who was a time path Gu Immortal, it was at one to thirty-eight.

That was to say, one year in the five regions would be thirty-eight years in Hei Lou Lan’s blessed land. During this time, she would need to undergo three earthly calamities, with only two years left until the fourth.

More than half a year had passed in five regions time since the destruction of Imperial Court blessed land.

Hei Lou Lan’s blessed land had already undergone two earthly calamities, this was the third.

Each tribulation was a trial, but Hei Lou Lan had Fairy Li Shan’s help, and with several Immortal Gu in her possession, if she met with any real difficulties, she could ask Fang Yuan for help. No news from her currently meant good news.

After confirming the situation of the people around him, Fang Yuan had no more reservations, he fully committed to his plans.

He calculated, only half a month was left until the auction. In Hu Immortal blessed land, because the flow of time was five times as fast, that was approximately slightly less than two and a half months.

The transaction of guts Gu had to continue.

At the same time, Fang Yuan planned to use the light of wisdom to try to follow up on that burst of inspiration that had emerged earlier.

Time passed quickly, two months went by in Hu Immortal blessed land’s time.

Fang Yuan came out from the underground cave with a satisfied look.

He had made great achievements in using the light of wisdom for deductions this time. He successfully fused the details of poison breath and harboring malicious heart to form a new, incomplete immortal move, Fang Yuan named it poison spit.

Using Immortal Gu Woman’s Heart as the core, it was called ‘immortal’, but this was not complete yet, because each time it was activated, large amounts of poison would remain in the body, causing backlashes due to the toxicity. Thus, this was only an ‘incomplete move’.

“With my immortal zombie body, I can activate poison spit three times. More than that, and the remaining poison would be able to kill even my soul. The two killer moves are the crystallization of my wisdom path and poison path attainment, it is a solid foundation. With the unlimited inspiration brought about by the light of wisdom, I could use this foundation to create something new.”

Fang Yuan had already used the light of wisdom many times.

The more he used it, the more he felt the benefits and convenience of the light of wisdom, he could tell that wisdom Gu had immense value and an even more incredible effect.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 746: Joyful News, A Way To Escape The Zombie Body

A few days later, Tai Bai Yun Sheng returned to Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fang Yuan met with him and saw the joy in his eyes, saying: “Old Bai, it seems that you have obtained something great in this journey to Eastern Sea.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng laughed heartily: “Junior brother is sharp as ever, that is right. Guess what gains I made this time?”

Fang Yuan said in curiosity: “Fairy Yu Lu was a female attendant of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, she cultivated earth path and water path, she was skilled in defense and healing. I know about the group that you went with to attack the blessed land, did you unexpectedly succeed in one try, and manage to take down Yu Lu blessed land?”

In truth, Fang Yuan did not think well of the prospects of Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s trip.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression turned stiff, he sighed: “So junior brother did not expect us to succeed, you were right after all. In this attempt, we attacked the blessed land for seven days and seven nights, but we were defeated by the land spirit, and suffered huge losses. A Gu Immortal nearly died, but I used man as before Immortal Gu to save this person.”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan raised his eyebrows. He knew about the value of man as before Immortal Gu, once Tai Bai Yun Sheng exposed this Gu, his value would greatly rise among this group of people.

As expected, Tai Bai Yun Sheng continued: “After my man as before Immortal Gu was exposed, I gained a lot of attention and respect. Next, Shark Demon invited me enthusiastically to go to Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance as a guest. Why would I dare to go to other people’s base all alone? Thus, I rejected him. In the end, Shark Demon and two other immortal zombies hosted me in Hai Shi blessed land, and during the banquet I heard an important piece of news.”

Saying so, Tai Bai Yun Sheng paused, halting his words as he looked at Fang Yuan with shining eyes.

Fang Yuan laughed mentally, he followed his intention and asked: “Hehehe, what important news is it? For you to leave me hanging like this?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression was solemn, he said: “It is a method that can revive you, junior brother, it is a method to break free of your immortal zombie body!”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan’s eyebrows rose.

He had made no progress after joining Northern Plains Zombie Alliance. To think that Tai Bai Yun Sheng would make more progress before Fang Yuan even gained anything.

“What method is it?” Fang Yuan asked.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng said: “Shark Demon has a wife called Su Bai Man, she is also an immortal zombie. A long time ago, she obtained a time path Immortal Gu from an opportunity after defeating strong foes, its name is Time Anchor. This Gu can leave a mark in the river of time, even though that is useless on its own, when paired with other time path Immortal Gu, the effect is incredible.”

Fang Yuan heard this and understood what Tai Bai Yun Sheng was going to say.

His eyes shined, but they quickly dimmed: “Old Bai, I understand what you mean. I’ve heard of time anchor Immortal Gu long ago, if paired with your Landscape as Before, it can indeed make a mountain or river be restored to a certain period in time. If used with Man as Before, it can theoretically send a target back to their body condition at a certain time period as well. But the requirement for this is, time anchor Immortal Gu has to leave a marking in advance.”

“That is correct, my man as before Immortal Gu can only go back by an instant in time, but with time anchor Immortal Gu, we can exceed that limit of a single instant. Junior brother, with this method, you might be able to get rid of your immortal zombie status.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was excited.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s words were not wrong.

Gu are the essence of heaven and earth, they each have one effect, all being different. Immortal Gu are unique, although they are powerful, they have weaknesses and limitations.

Man is the spirit of all beings, they were most skilled in wisdom and creation. Using a combination of different Gu worms, they could raise the overall effect and make up for the respective Gu’s weaknesses.

“With time anchor Immortal Gu’s assistance, man as before Immortal Gu can break free of the single instant limitation, but...” Fang Yuan shook his head, continuing: “The coordinated usage of two Immortal Gu is not as simple as just using them, many mortal Gu are needed at the same time. In fact, other Immortal Gu might also be needed, in order to form an immortal killer move. Time Anchor and Man as Before can indeed coordinate theoretically. But you do not have a corresponding immortal killer move, I think Shark Demon is providing you such hospitality because he wants you to help them, to contribute Man as Before so that they can research the immortal killer move, right?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded continuously, praising: “Junior brother is smart, you guessed accurately, that was indeed the case.”

“It is a pity, it is a pity.” Fang Yuan shook his head again.

“A pity what? I think this method has high hopes.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked at Fang Yuan uncertainly.

“Old Bai, you should know, the fact that I have become an immortal zombie has long since been set in stone. Maybe Shark Demon and others had used time anchor Immortal Gu before becoming immortal zombies, and left a marking in the river of time, but I did not. Thus, even if you research this killer move successfully, it is useless for me.” Fang Yuan sighed.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng laughed: “Junior brother, your concern is right. But I have good news for you, that is, Su Bai Man and Shark Demon had not used time anchor Immortal Gu to leave a marking.”

“Oh?”

“Back then, Su Bai Man forced back her enemies and obtained time anchor Immortal Gu, but she did not know its usage. Su Bai Man was heavily injured at that time, she had no choice but to become an immortal zombie. After Shark Demon learned about this, in order to accompany his wife, he became an immortal zombie even though he had ample lifespan. Years after the two became immortal zombies, they finally learned about the origin and usage of time anchor Immortal Gu.”

“So that’s it.” Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

Getting a mysterious Immortal Gu and spending a few years or even over ten years to learn about the origin and use of it, this was quite common.

Previously in Imperial Court blessed land, Fang Yuan obtained many Immortal Gu as well, but he did not dare to test them recklessly.

Thankfully, there was Lang Ya land spirit to clear up the information regarding those Gu.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng continued: “When they found out about the use of time anchor Gu, they were in deep regret, but it was too late. I had the same concerns as you, junior brother, and asked them during the banquet. Shark Demon and the other immortal zombies mentioned another method, that was Spring Autumn Cicada.”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan had a curious but suspicious expression: “Spring Autumn Cicada is that mystical Gu? Legends say that it can travel up the river of time, and return to the past. But that has never been confirmed.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not suspect anything: “Spring Autumn Cicada is not reliable, mentioning Spring Autumn Cicada was only as an example. Shark Demon was trying to say that even though they missed the timing to use time anchor Immortal Gu, if they could use Immortal Gu like Spring Autumn Cicada, they could bring the Gu Immortal in front of the river of time. By then, using time anchor Immortal Gu to leave a marking upstream, one could use man as before Immortal Gu successfully. I think that this method has a high chance of success.”

Fang Yuan shut his eyes slightly, he fell into deep thought and did not speak.

What Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not know was, Fang Yuan in front of him was the owner of Spring Autumn Cicada. Be it Shark Demon or Tai Bai Yun Sheng, they were not familiar with Spring Autumn Cicada, they only knew about it from rumors.

Fang Yuan thought: “If I could directly use Spring Autumn Cicada, I would have used it. Why would I need to use an additional step with time anchor Immortal Gu? But this method, in theory, is possible.”

Fang Yuan had an agreement with wisdom Gu, in a way, he controlled wisdom Gu.

He could rise up quickly despite being an immortal zombie, charge forward in over half a year, rapidly changing his situation and finances, half of the reason was due to wisdom Gu.

If Fang Yuan wanted to use Spring Autumn Cicada to be reborn and get rid of the immortal zombie trouble, he would have used it long ago. That is, leaving aside for now the failure chance of Spring Autumn Cicada.

But during the Northern Plains journey, Fang Yuan was too weak, even if he was reborn and did it again, there were too many variables. Fang Yuan did not even have a five percent confidence of getting greater benefits from it.

The agreement with wisdom Gu was truly due to the perfect time and place, that moment was simply too unique! The rank nine wisdom Gu was Fang Yuan’s greatest profit. If he did not obtain wisdom Gu, there would be no better benefits in comparison.

“Other than Spring Autumn Cicada, there are other time path Immortal Gu. Like looking back Immortal Gu and vivid recollection Immortal Gu, they can allow a Gu Immortal to stand in the present and observe the past, except that the two have differences. Using Looking Back in the area of the old earth wood would allow one to see the former glorious scenery. Using vivid recollection Immortal Gu would allow one to inspect their own past. By refining the two Immortal Gu together, one could obtain the rank eight Immortal Gu Extreme Past, the Gu Immortal’s will can be drawn out and observe all that has happened in the past through the river of time.”

Fang Yuan deduced in his mind: “If I had the time path investigative Immortal Gu Extreme Past, using it with the time anchor Immortal Gu, I might be able to form a time path immortal killer move, standing in the present and marking the past. Next, I can use man as before Immortal Gu to return to my human body and restore my living state, without losing wisdom Gu. Of course, extreme past Immortal Gu is just an example. There might be other time path Immortal Gu that are more compatible with Time Anchor.”

Fang Yuan thought over it before opening his eyes.

“Old Bai, thank you.” He thanked Tai Bai Yun Sheng sincerely: “Although this method is innovative, it would expend a lot of time, effort, and resources, it is at least a hundred year project. But it is a form of hope at least.”

“We are like family, there is not need to say thanks.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng responded immediately.

However, Old Tai Bai understood what Fang Yuan was saying, he sighed as he continued: “Exactly, it is at least some hope. Even though it will take a long time, during this period, junior brother, you can use the black oil in Zombie Alliance to slow the destruction of your blessed land. Even though black oil is hard to get, with my cooperative relationship with Shark Demon, I will be able to get enough.”

Fang Yuan laughed: “During the period when you were gone, I had already used a fake identity, called Sha Huang, and made my way into Northern Plains Zombie Alliance.”

“So junior brother had such a plan.”

Fang Yuan continued: “I want to attend the auction in Northern Plains, come along with me. This is the mortal killer move unfamiliar face, it came from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable. I have a few cloud path killer moves, you can take a look, aren’t you cultivating cloud path now as well?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng received these killer move as a warm feeling emerged in his heart: “When I was thinking about my junior brother’s problems, he was also looking out for my benefits!”

Fang Yuan showed him the Gu Immortal captives and the deal he had with Lang Ya land spirit.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was shocked, he said with worry and excitement: “It seems that this auction will be a great show! I will go with you, it would be best if Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan also are there.”

“They will definitely go. But although our alliance was exposed to Hei Cheng, now is not the time to openly travel with them.” Fang Yuan said.

“Junior brother makes sense.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 747: Auction (1)

The mountain stood high above the clouds, on the peak, there was a mirror-like pond, reflecting the traces of clouds in the sky.

This was Zhen Wu blessed land, the headquarters of Northern Plains’ Yuan tribe.

The surname Yuan was not rare, it was very ordinary, in Southern Border, Eastern Sea, Western Desert, it existed in all five regions. But in Northern Plains, the surname Yuan was much more significant, it represented a super force, a supreme authority.

In the sky above the water, a white robed old man was waving his spear, his aura was grand as he whipped up wind currents that moved the clouds.

The old man was white haired but greatly spirited, his body was moving around, sometimes fast as lightning, sometimes slow like a rock. With the spear in his hand, he extended it like a dragon’s movement, it was very surreal.

But regardless of how much commotion he caused, the lake on this mountain peak did not even have any ripples, it was calm like a mirror.

The lake water had much life, the seaweed was moving without any currents in it. A large group of carps watched the white robed old man wave his spear under the water, they were opening their mouths continuously as they spoke one by one.

“Old man Yuan, you danced pretty well, it was a good sight.”

“These spear skills are not bad, you had a trace of Daoist Spear’s shadow.”

“Mm, the spear was swept too greatly though, the angle was a little off.”

Hearing the carp’s words, the old man stopped his movements, landing beside the pond.

The long spear in his hands was still giving off a bright white light, it turned into a Gu and went into his robe. Next, he paid respects to the carp in the pond as he inquired: “May I ask, the horizontal sweep earlier, why was the angle off?”

“You used too much strength!”

“Too brutish, you lost your grace.”

“Old man, you are too old and yet feisty, you should eat some seaweed to lower it.”

The carps spoke incessantly, criticizing with no restraint.

These carps were not ordinary, their skin was white as snow, while their scales were black like ink. The black and white formed a clear contrast, there was no other color. People called them true martial carp, they were born from heaven and earth, each of them was a mutated beast king.

The old man thought about it before raising his finger, using his arm instead of a spear, and practicing his moves: “Is this okay?”

“No.”

‘Wrong.”

“Old man, you are so stupid!”

The carps spoke one after another, scolding the old man.

At this time, a Yuan tribe Gu Immortal, Yuan Chi, came running, hearing the true martial carps’ criticism, he did not feel anything strange. He paid respects to the old man as he said dutifully: “Greetings to first supreme elder.”

The white robed old man was Yuan tribe’s first supreme elder, having rank seven cultivation level with peak battle strength. Seeing someone come, he frowned unhappily: “Junior Yuan Chi, why are you here? Didn’t I say that when I am practicing my martial arts, I do not want anyone to disturb me.”

“Lord, you instructed me earlier, so I am here to remind you not to miss the auction.” Yuan Chi was extremely respectful.

“Oh? There was such a thing, I nearly forgot... that means the auction is happening soon?” Yuan tribe’s first supreme elder patted his forehead.

Yuan Chi laughed bitterly: “Lord, today is the day of the auction.”

“Ah? Time flies so quickly! Lad, thank you for reminding me, when I return, I will reward you. Off I go.” Saying so, Yuan tribe first supreme elder waved his sleeves and an Immortal Gu flew out of the pond.

This Gu was called Human Language, it could turn the words of beasts into human words.

Human language Immortal Gu left, and the discussions of the true martial carps came to an end. One could only hear the slight bubbling when they opened their mouths.

Yuan tribe first elder collected the human language Immortal Gu and flew away, turning into light.

The carp group swam around one another, after some discussion, they felt bored and swam away.

Yuan Chi looked at first elder’s figure as he vanished into the horizon.

“First elder is still the same.” He sighed, waving his sleeves at the pond.

Winds blew and clouds moved, a thick white cloud covered and concealed this important place in Yuan tribe’s territory.

...

“Magnolia pulp boat returns to the homeland of the lotus flower, singing in the hall lasts till late into the night.”

“The lake reflects the willows surrounded by light fog, mountains far away resemble the contours of a beard that curls beautifully like a yellow moon.”

A scholar moved his head around as he held his scroll, sitting in a pavilion with lotus flowers in the water, he recited in this calm night, as wind blew and a fragrance spread.

A female attendant was beside the scholar. Her facial features were picturesque, her skin was white like snow, she was holding a small vessel as she poured wine into the wine cup.

After the scholar finished reciting his poem, he held his scroll as he looked at it while grabbing the wine cup on the table. He drank the wine without even looking at it, after gulping it down, he said: “Although the wine is good, there is not much left. During this auction, we should request for a few more jars from that person. Hong Xiu, you will go with me on this trip, let Tian Xiang stay here and guard the blessed land.”

“Yes, young master.” The female attendant was overjoyed as she replied quickly.

...

Ding ding ding...

Immortal Gu Heavenly Gong’s sound resonated in the mind of Gu Immortal He Lang Zi.

He sat on the ground, opening his eyes as blood flowed out of his seven orifices.

“This Immortal Gu Heavenly Gong is very powerful. I had only activated five percent of its power, but my five intestines shifted and my blood flowed backwards, even though I had also been activating a top tier defensive mortal killer move.”

He Lang Zi laughed sinisterly, his blood flow went back to normal, in a few breaths of time, it was like he had never been injured.

“Such power, I do not need to worry about the Immortal Gu not being traded by anyone.” He stood up and flew towards crimson reed marsh.

...

“This is crimson reed marsh? The scenery is great here.” A rank eight Gu Immortal wearing a tall hat and with a common face was looking down at the crimson reed marsh below him.

But all he saw were reeds growing, with water pathways that were complex and interweaved, resembling a maze.

What was most eye catching here were not the water ducks, the gulls, or the fish, it was the crimson red reed.

Countless reeds surfaced from the water vigorously, seemingly carrying grandness and boldness, they were imposing and expanded without restraint, with the attitude of a king, they subdued all of the living beings here and took them for themselves.

The rank eight Gu Immortal observed before saying with some amazement: “This scenery has both delicateness and grandness, the outstanding nature is hidden deeply. Based on such a sight, this Qin Bai Sheng clearly is a meticulous person despite his grandness, he is unrestrained but also has a scheming mind. No wonder he could cause such a commotion and hold this grand auction.”

“Esteemed guest has brilliant judgment.” A rank seven Gu Immortal beside him nodded in agreement: “Qin Bai Sheng’s actions were truly the source of a huge commotion, it was a great method to protect himself. I, Murong Jin Xiao, admire his actions greatly.”

“I am looking forward to it, this auction that involves almost all of Northern Plains’ heroes!” The rank eight Gu Immortal greeted as the esteemed guest retracted his gaze, his tone becoming excited.

“Hahaha, Eastern Sea is rich in resources, countless heroes emerge from there. Esteemed guest is an overlord of a region, controlling the entire glass sea, although Northern Plains has many talents, there are few that are worthy of receiving your compliment.” Murong Jin Xiao said respectfully.

From his words, it seemed that this mysterious guest was not a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, he came from Eastern Sea!

...

“Brother Qin, we meet again.” Fang Yuan cupped his fists, greeting Qin Bai Sheng.

“Hahaha, brother Sha, I have been waiting for you. But I did not expect you to come directly from Fairy Li Shan’s side.” Qin Bai Sheng was very enthusiastic, he grabbed Fang Yuan’s arms, like he really regarded him as a brother.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng went together, they did not travel in Northern Plains, instead, they entered Fairy Li Shan’s blessed land and used hole earth Gu to reach Bai Sheng blessed land.

With their earlier agreement and the mountain pledge Gu, Fairy Li Shan’s and Qin Bai Sheng’s blessed lands had been set up with a pair of hole earth Gu, allowing them to connect.

Fang Yuan brought the thirteen sleeping cloud coffins and arrived in the blessed land through this path, meeting Qin Bai Sheng once again.

“There’s no choice. I have such valuable treasures with me, with my low cultivation level, I can only come here through this method to reduce the risk.” Fang Yuan purposely laughed bitterly.

“Don’t be humble brother, you are so well hidden, your depth is unfathomable. With just you and Fairy Li Shan’s relationship, who would dare to target you?” Qin Bai Sheng said respectfully.

“No matter how good you are, there is always someone better than you. But if I have brother’s battle strength, I would have no fear.” Fang Yuan quickly replied, in terms of interpersonal skills, he was not inferior to Qin Bai Sheng.

“I wonder who this is?” Qin Bai Sheng turned around, looking at Tai Bai Yun Sheng who was next to Fang Yuan.

Right now, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had used unfamiliar face and turned into an ordinary old man, his appearance was very different from before.

“This is my good friend, Gu Immortal Bai Sheng.” Fang Yuan introduced fearlessly.

“Bai Sheng... forgive my ignorance, I did not know that a person of your caliber was hidden in our Northern Plains.” Qin Bai Sheng took the initiative to greet.

“No, no, I am flattered.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly responded.

Qin Bai Sheng brought Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng to the auction hall.

“For this auction, I purposely altered my blessed land to form this huge auction hall.” Qin Bai Sheng introduced.

“It is quite extraordinary, there is a very magnificent aura, as expected of brother Qin’s setup.” Fang Yuan smiled as he praised.

Qin Bai Sheng showed a hint of worry and doubt, saying: “I have no choice, many huge forces and countless experts in Northern Plains were all invited to this auction. As the person in charge, if the auction is too run-down, I will be offending them. Honestly speaking, there had been a huge pressure on me these recent days, I could barely sleep. Thankfully, with brother Sha, the blessed lands will definitely be a popular item when up for auction, I can’t wait to see that commotion. I wonder if you have many?”

Fang Yuan did not say a number, only smiling as he said: “Brother Qin, you can be at ease about it, no need to worry.”

“Haha, of course I’m not worried.” Qin Bai Sheng’s gaze flashed, since he could not probe the answer, he changed the topic: “In this auction, I have the main hall, single rooms, and secret rooms. The main hall can allow free interaction, the single rooms are for those Gu Immortals with strange temperaments or who enjoy being alone. The secret rooms will hide everything about the Gu Immortal’s identity. These three arrangements have been written in the alliance content long ago, brother Sha does not need to worry that I have done some tricks behind the scenes. I wonder which location brother Sha would choose?”

“These three locations, can they be swapped at will during the process of the auction?” Fang Yuan asked first.

“Of course. But if a secret room is already occupied, unless the owner agrees, nobody can get in.” Qin Bai Sheng answered.

“Then I will choose a secret room.” Fang Yuan said.

“I will choose a secret room too.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng followed behind.

Qin Bai Sheng nodded: “The first nine secret rooms have been booked already. I’ll give you the tenth and eleventh rooms respectively, how about that?”

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng had no reason to say no. After they entered their secret rooms, Bai Sheng blessed land opened its entrance and invited many Gu Immortals in.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 748: Auction (2)

In the secret room, Fang Yuan was playing with the Gu worms in his hands.

These mortal Gu were owned by Qin Bai Sheng, but currently they were lended to the secret room’s owner, thus Fang Yuan could activate them.

He activated his primeval essence and tried to inject it, as the environment in the secret room changed at once.

“It seems that Qin Bai Sheng really put in some effort. Even though it is a secret room, it is like a small world in here, it is larger than a garden. These mortal Gu can be used to change the environment, it can become a mountainous or river-like area, or even become an ocean or lake, a pavilion or a terrace.”

As Fang Yuan continued to use the Gu, the environment in the secret room continued to change. At times, it was a lush mountain and he was at the peak of the mountain in a pavilion. At times, there were huge rivers and he was in a boat docked at the side of the river.

Of course, these changes were just illusions, they were not real. If they were real, such terrain changing abilities would definitely come from Immortal Gu, he would need to spend a lot of immortal essence.

Fang Yuan retrieved the Gu worms and browsed one with his mind.

This east window Gu had many of the auction items listed in it, they were all precious treasures. Fang Yuan was dazed upon seeing the huge catalog.

Some of the auction items had the conditions written in the description, other than using immortal essence stones to bid for them, one could also trade for them using resources.

Evidently, these resources were what the owner of the auction item were looking for.

Fang Yuan swept through the content of the list and focused on the latter portion.

This portion's information listed a variety of Immortal Gu, they had all sorts of effects and were from all kinds of different paths. The information on how to trade these Gu were all written on the back.

Unlike the previous content, Immortal Gu were unique, they could not be bought using immortal essence stones. This rule was practically set in stone, even during the five regions chaotic war it was still in place.

Thus, to buy an Immortal Gu, one needed to use another Immortal Gu as the price.

Fang Yuan's focused his mind and quickly saw that his Immortal Gu were also listed there.

There were four Immortal Gu, Rising Azure Cloud, Worldly Wave Trace, Calamity Beckoning, and Delight in Water and Mountain.

The former two were movement Immortal Gu, one was cloud path and the other was water path, they were incompatible with Fang Yuan's strength path. Although Tai Bai Yun Sheng cultivated cloud path as well, he was a time path Gu Immortal, Rising Azure Cloud was also not suitable for him.

As for calamity beckoning Immortal Gu, it was rank seven, but the effect could be said to be harming oneself, it was practically a luck path suicidal weapon. Even though Fang Yuan had conceived some uses for it, if he could exchange it for other Immortal Gu, that would be more worthwhile.

The final one was delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, it could produce huge amounts of joyful will. But Fang Yuan was already prepared to mass produce malicious thought Gu, in that case, it could replace the use of joyful will. He might as well put it up for auction and see what Immortal Gu he can get from it. If there is no suitable trade, he could just take it back.

After the four Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan naturally listed the conditions for exchanging them.

What was worth mentioning was that these four Immortal Gu were all put up using Fairy Li Shan's channel, he was not associated with them.

Even though calamity beckoning Immortal Gu was quite troublesome to sell and might even attract trouble, if it could be traded for a useful Immortal Gu, the benefits exceeded the cost.

If he missed this golden opportunity, he might not have an equivalent one for several hundred years, until the five regions chaotic war.

Fang Yuan was a vigilant person, but he was also resolute, when he needed to take risks, he would not cower in fear and doubt.

"Other than these four Immortal Gu, I still have Spring Autumn Cicada, Cleanse Soul, Connect Luck, Woman's Heart, and in a way wisdom Gu." Fang Yuan counted, he needed these remaining five Immortal Gu, he would not put them up at the auction, or even give any chances of exposing them if possible.

Spring Autumn Cicada’s actual effect would only be known by the user, even though there was a chance of failure, Fang Yuan obtained a lot of benefit from it and gained much experience, he could not do without it. Even with wisdom Gu in Hu Immortal blessed land, Spring Autumn Cicada was still his biggest trump card.

Fang Yuan had already decided that Spring Autumn Cicada would remain as his vital Gu in his first aperture. In the future, if he had a chance, he would choose time path in undergoing immortal ascension.

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu was the core of the immortal killer move myriad self, although it was hungry and could not be used, he would not sell it.

Connect luck Immortal Gu could make up for Spring Autumn Cicada’s weakness, Fang Yuan had already experienced the power of luck path, he would not let go of this Immortal Gu.

Wisdom Gu was out of the question, if he took it out, it would cause a huge commotion and make countless people go after his life.

As for woman’s heart Immortal Gu, it was originally something Fang Yuan wanted to get rid of. But due to a coincidence, Fang Yuan deduced the poison spit killer move, this woman’s heart Immortal Gu was its core, and was now placed at the right part of Fang Yuan’s chest.

It was like a heart, beating continuously. It was small like a baby’s fist, it looked purple-black and was surrounded in poisonous energy, it was already connected to Fang Yuan’s bloodstream. Every time he breathed, the zombie blood would flow slowly, carrying the poison and circulating in Fang Yuan’s body.

From this point, one could see traces of the wisdom path killer move ‘harboring malicious heart’.

But the mortal Gu assisting Woman’s Heart were like a Gu formation for reverse refinement. Through reverse refinement, they were extracting Woman’s Heart’s strength.

This was due to Immortal Gu Woman’s Heart’s special property — refinement and nurturing in one.

This Gu needed the hearts of women to feed it, after it is full, the more it is fed, the stronger the poison. Right now, Fang Yuan was using a reverse refinement process to draw out that poison.

Man is the spirit of all living beings.

Although Woman’s Heart is a consumable Immortal Gu, and would be expended in one use normally, through his own method, and combining it with other Gu worms, it could be used repeatedly by extracting its power slowly and continuously.

“Poison spit is only an incomplete immortal move, it needs to be improved later. With wisdom Gu, it should not be a problem.” Fang Yuan gathered his thoughts as he put down the east window Gu, he willed and the view in front of him became clear, Fang Yuan could see the auction hall.

The auction was split into the main hall, single rooms, and secret rooms.

Fang Yuan could not see the latter two, he could only see the main hall.

Right now, on the seats in the main hall were more than twenty Gu Immortals, they were talking openly without fear of eavesdroppers.

“Old Lu, it has been a while, I trust that you have been well.”

“Oh, Qing Xuan Zi, you have gone through the second heavenly tribulation already, right.”

“I am ashamed, my foundation is too weak, I was scared and have placed my blessed land in the outside world of Northern Plains these recent years. After spending a lot of resources and borrowing a time path Immortal Gu, I have slowed the flow of time in my blessed land, right now, I still have one heavenly tribulation cultivation.”

“The earthly calamities are hard to survive, the heavenly tribulations are even harder obstacles. You are very stable and careful, not taking huge risks, this is a very safe method.”

...

“Shi You Yan, you are here too?”

“Your words are too funny! If you, Wu Rong, can come, why can’t I?”

“Hmph! The grudge of you snatching my Gu back then, I will take revenge. Just you wait.”

“Hehehe, I know this Immortal Gu is suitable for your use, but I am going to auction it, let’s see if you have the ability to bid for it!”

...

Some Gu Immortals were catching up on old times, some were building relationships, but there were others with great animosity, they were like barrels of gunpowder.

At this moment, a white robed old man walked into the main hall.

“Haha, there are quite a number of people.” The white robed old man was Yuan tribe’s first supreme elder, he looked around and laughed heartily.

His laughter soon attracted the attention of the people in the hall, as talks became softer.

Fang Yuan directed his gaze as well, this first supreme elder of Yuan tribe was a rank seven Gu Immortal, the leader of the super force, Yuan tribe, of Northern Plains, he had exemplary battle strength and financial power, he was a strong contender in this auction.

Qin Bai Sheng was standing at the entrance inviting guests inside, he went up and paid his respects: “It is truly my Bai Sheng blessed land’s great fortune that Lord Yuan is here to grace our auction with his presence.”

“Don’t call me lord, call me by my name, Yuan Rang Zun!” Yuan tribe’s first supreme elder saw Qin Bai Sheng and his eyes shined, he patted Qin Bai Sheng’s back with much enthusiasm.

Long ago, he had fought with Qin Bai Sheng, the latter’s strength had gained his acknowledgment.

“But, I had some gains after practicing my spear skills recently, is there any time we can spar once again?” Yuan Rang Zun’s changed the topic and he showed his true nature as a martial arts fanatic.

“Senior Yuan’s dao mark spear arts are still vivid in my memories. I wonder if senior Yuan would like to sit in the main hall, or get a single room or a secret room?” Qin Bai Sheng laughed, he did not reply to the invitation.

“Give me a single room.” Yuan Rang Zun knew that now was not the time for this, he thought about it and gave his response.

Just as Yuan Rang Zun stepped into his single room, a handsome scholar walked into the auction with a female Gu Immortal following behind him.

“Unfettered Scholar came too?” The gazes of the Gu Immortals in the main hall were attracted again.

“I had heard that Unfettered Scholar has great luck with women, having two Gu Immortal attendants, named Tian Xiang and Hong Xiu. I wonder who came with him?” Many male Gu Immortals turned around to look at the female Gu Immortal.

“She wears a red dress that looks like fire, it should be Fairy Hong Xiu. If it was Fairy Tian Xiang, who was born with a certain fragrance, the main hall would have already been filled with fragrance if she was here.” A certain Gu Immortal who knew a lot about them said with much enthusiasm.

Fang Yuan’s mind rapidly went through the information.

This Unfettered Scholar was a lone cultivator, he had quite a few obstacles in life. His ancestors were not from Northern Plains, he came from a clan in Central Continent that had gone downhill.

Central Continent was full of sects, it was tough for clans to survive. If they could, they would cross the regional walls and live in the other four regions.

Alone in another region, Unfettered Scholar’s clan was ostracized and lost a lot of their strength, they were barely surviving in Northern Plains, their situation was turning worse. After several generations, they had finally mixed into Northern Plains, but at that time, they were on their deathbed, like a dying old man.

By Unfettered Scholar’s generation, the clan had already been thoroughly destroyed. Unfettered Scholar brought along his two attendants and they escaped for their lives, living a tough life. In their most difficult moments, even though they were in danger of dying, Unfettered Scholar had never abandoned his two attendants, eventually, he obtained an opportunity and became a Gu Immortal.

After becoming an immortal, he spent a lot of money and effort to make his attendants immortals as well. This was quite a story in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

Be it Yuan Rang Zun, Unfettered Scholar, or the other Gu Immortals, they each had their own exciting stories, they were the main characters of their own legendary tales.

Gu Masters who were able to become immortals naturally were exemplary characters. Before this auction had even begun, before all of the Gu Immortals had entered, brilliant heroes and geniuses had already appeared like shining stars in the sky.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 749: Auction (3)

“Brother Qin, go ahead with your work, we can choose a room for ourselves.” Unfettered Scholar waved to Qin Bai Sheng as he spoke in a tone that revealed his close relationship with Qin Bai Sheng.

Next, Unfettered Scholar walked away slowly, into a room with Fairy Hong Xiu.

After he left, more Gu Immortals arrived, some chose single rooms, but most chose the main hall. As for those who chose the secret rooms, they entered through secret channels, into their respective rooms. This could not be seen from the main hall.

“Although Qin Bai Sheng is a lone cultivator, he has great strength and yet shows great respect for people, he has a wide network and relationships with many experts.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng transmitted from the eleventh secret room.

This was the first time he had met Qin Bai Sheng, yet he had a high evaluation of the man.

Fang Yuan looked at the hall as he analyzed: “It is not entirely Qin Bai Sheng’s credit. Earlier, when Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed, Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals obtained many Immortal Gu, they need to trade them and satisfy their own requirements. There is also the essence of the luck path true inheritance. In addition, with Imperial Court blessed land’s destruction, Northern Plains’ situation has rapidly changed, all the super forces need to establish new rules. Because of this specific timing and situation, the auction could become so huge. Qin Bai Sheng and Fairy Li Shan were able to invite rank eight Gu Immortals not only as a result of their own reputations.”

As time passed, more and more Gu Immortals arrived.

In the hall, Gu Immortals were talking and created lots of noise.

Although Gu Immortals were powerful and had unlimited primeval essence, capable of crushing mortals, they were busy with managing their immortal apertures and had to make lots of preparations for the calamities and tribulations, they had very limited time.

Furthermore, the world was huge and Gu Immortals were small in numbers, it was rare for them to interact with each other. Especially an opportunity like this which gathered so many Gu Immortals, it was very rare.

Gu Immortals needed to interact, they placed great emphasis on their social network.

Immortal Gu were unique. Often, Gu Immortals needed to borrow Immortal Gu to settle their problems. Furthermore, the economy of this world was not developed, many precious resources could not be bought using immortal essence stones, they could only be traded with rare goods at times.

This auction gathered almost all of the Gu Immortals in Northern Plains. Such an opportunity to interact was extremely rare. In the main hall, Gu Immortals talked and exchanged information. Even several enemies had their grudges temporarily mediated and resolved.

Gu Immortals were so rare, their social network was only so big. If one was not a friend, they would be an enemy, even if they were a stranger, they would still be connected somehow in this social network as long as they talked about their friends.

After Unfettered Scholar, an old man carrying a walking cane walked into the auction hall slowly.

Qin Bai Sheng saw this and his expression brightened, he quickly walked forward and paid respects: “Qin Bai Sheng pays respects to Lord Yao Huang!”

Yao Huang — one of the five rank eight Gu Immortals in Northern Plains.

The hall was silent, many Gu Immortals could not sit any longer, they stood up and greeted.

“Lord Yao Huang, you are my benefactor, please accept my respects.”

“If not for Lord Yao Huang, I would still be injured now.”

“Lord Yao Huang, do you remember me? I am Xiao Si, who searched for the bean sprout worm for you back then.”

...

Even the Gu Immortals who were in the single rooms walked out and greeted Yao Huang.

“Hello everyone, good day, good day.” Yao Huang had an amicable expression as he nodded, he did not put on airs and was not acting arrogantly.

Like Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Yao Huang was a healing Gu Immortal and was famous in the righteous path, he had a pure Huang Jin bloodline, being the first supreme elder of the super force, Yao tribe, he had a lofty reputation in Northern Plains, it could be said to be the highest of the five rank eight Gu Immortals of Northern Plains.

Stories regarding Yao Huang was numerous, they would take more than three days and three nights to read.

The following story was closely connected to Fang Yuan, it happened decades ago.

Yao Huang created a new healing Immortal Gu, for the last one hundred years, he had been asking for immortal zombies in Zombie Alliance to do experiments on them.

As his research got deeper, Yao Huang had some results and actually managed to turn himself into an immortal zombie. Many Gu Immortal experts were unable to learn about the truth. They were deceived and thought that Yao Huang’s lifespan was almost used up, forcing him to become an immortal zombie.

Yao Huang thus proclaimed that he wanted to join Zombie Alliance. At the same time, Zombie Alliance’s leader, Blazing Heaven Demoness, already had left and entered Eastern Sea. Without the leader, Zombie Alliance only had Yin Liu Gong and the other two rank sevens to guard the headquarters.

No one in Zombie Alliance could expose Yao Huang’s methods, but at the final moment, he lost to the entrance of the discussion hall. No matter how Yao Huang pushed it, he could not open the door, this made the immortal zombies only able to look at each other in dismay.

Eventually, Yao Huang could not get in and could only laugh loudly, removing his disguise and explaining the truth.

Even though he had lied to everyone, he had a great reputation and high cultivation level, none of the immortal zombies dared to offend him. In the end, they even sent him back courteously.

Just as Yao Huang walked in, Yin Liu Gong arrived as well.

“Oh, Little Liu.” Yao Huang looked back and greeted.

“Junior pays respects to Lord Yao Huang.” Yin Liu Gong had a flattering expression as he went up and greeted.

“Right now, Zombie Alliance took up the mission just in time, that immortal zombie came to Yao tribe and my research was not held up. Speaking of which, it is all thanks to the cooperation of your Zombie Alliance.” Yao Huang thanked while smiling.

“I am flattered, it is our honor to work with Lord Yao Huang. In the future, when Lord Yao Huang succeeds in the new healing Immortal Gu, it would benefit the Gu Immortals in Northern Plains as well.” Yin Liu Gong was skilled at social relations, he spoke appropriate words.

Yao Huang stretched out his wrinkled arm, grabbing Yin Liu Gong: “Come Little Liu, sit together with me.”

Before Yin Liu Gong could reject him, he said to Qin Bai Sheng: “Little Qin, give us a single room.”

Thus, under everyone’s envious gazes, the two entered the single room.

Yao Huang was the first rank eight Gu Immortal to enter, next, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, Five Elements Grandmaster, and Old Ancestor Xue Hu appeared.

Each of their appearances unavoidably caused a huge commotion.

Before the appearance of Great Dream Immortal Venerable, rank eight was the peak of the Gu Immortal world’s battle strength.

The five rank eight Gu Immortals in Northern Plains were noble existences that earned much reverence from people. Among them, Old Ancestor Xue Hu was the number one person in the demonic path, he was the leader of Snowy Mountain blessed land. Yao Huang was the first supreme elder of Yao tribe, he was a rank eight of the righteous path. Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Five Elements Grandmaster were lone cultivators, they were neither righteous nor demonic, they were in the neutral faction.

Lastly, there was Prince Feng Xian, he was also a righteous path Gu Immortal. But he was only an external supreme elder of the super force Gong tribe. He did not have the Huang Jin bloodline in him, his status was rather awkward. Because he had some grievances with Gong tribe, he had been living outside for many years. He did not work for Gong tribe, only when Gong tribe encounters a huge crisis would he help out.

Among the five rank eights, two were righteous, one was demonic, and two were neutral. Such a relationship was also the current balance of power in Northern Plains.

The next three rank eight experts all chose single rooms.

In the hall, there were already forty to fifty people.

“Among the five rank eights, four have already appeared. Only Prince Feng Xian is left.”

“This is really a rare event that is hard to witness in hundreds of years, it is an eye-opening experience! To be able to leave an impression on these experts, this trip was worth it.”

“Rank eight great experts are all glorious and have naturally imposing auras. I wonder what Prince Feng Xian’s demeanor would be like?”

As everyone waited in anticipation, a cold-looking female Gu Immortal walked in silently.

It was Feng Jiu Ge, who had disguised himself as Fairy You Lan.

Many people knew about Fairy You Lan and Prince Feng Xian’s relationship, their attention was quickly drawn over.

Qin Bai Sheng quickly attended to him.

“Master is blending his grotto-heaven’s qi, I will be representing him for this auction.” Feng Jiu Ge said, without laughing or smiling. He had huge guts, as an outside region’s Gu Immortal, he dared to attend the Northern Plains auction at this sensitive time.

The moment he appeared, he announced this loudly, it was to deter the others, by using Prince Feng Xian as a shield, it would help him during the process of the auction.

Hearing that Prince Feng Xian was not coming, a wave of disappointment came over the main hall.

Feng Jiu Ge had a calm expression, vaguely familiar face was really an amazing killer move, none of the Gu Immortals in the hall could see any flaws in his disguise. Of course, this also was because the Gu Immortals were respecting each other and did not use investigative Gu to peek at one other for no reason.

Especially when Fairy You Lan, who Feng Jiu Ge was disguised as, had a rank eight great expert behind her. In addition, nobody would expect him to be so daring.

Under everyone’s shining gazes, ‘Fairy You Lan’ walked into a single room.

Like Fang Yuan, he toyed around with the mortal Gu and changed the environment in the room. Next, he grabbed the east window Gu and looked inside.

“Oh?” The moment he looked at it, Feng Jiu Ge’s heart jumped.

“Worldly wave trace Immortal Gu, delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu... aren’t these the core Gu worms for an Immortal Gu House, Water Pavilion, of my sect? They actually appeared here!”

Shock flashed across Feng Jiu Ge’s eyes, but it quickly calmed and disappeared, this showed his supreme control over his own mental state.

“It seems that the supreme elders in the sect guessed correctly. Back then, our sect’s saintess, Mo Yao, had brought Water Pavilion into Imperial Court blessed land. Without Water Pavilion’s help, she would not have been able to enter Imperial Court blessed land. Now that Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed and Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed, it seems that Water Pavilion also broke apart and the core Gu were taken by Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals.”

“Oh? There is calamity beckoning Immortal Gu! According to the sect records, saintess Mo Yao had once obtained the essence of luck path in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, refining calamity beckoning Immortal Gu to help her husband, Bo

Qing. But Bo Qing’s tribulation was too great, even though calamity beckoning Immortal Gu drew away part of the tribulation, they could not survive, both of them perished. Calamity beckoning Immortal Gu was also destroyed in the process, to think that there is a new calamity beckoning Immortal Gu!”

This discovery gave Feng Jiu Ge further suspicions.

How did calamity beckoning Immortal Gu come about? Who refined it? The person auctioning it? Or did it scatter into the outside world after Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed, thus being taken by someone? What did this have to do with Mo Yao? According to rumors, Mo Yao left behind an inheritance, would this inheritance contain the way to refine calamity beckoning Immortal Gu?

At once, Feng Jiu Ge fell into deep thought, many ideas appeared in his mind.

“Hehe.” He suddenly laughed: “This auction was really worth coming to, the moment I entered, I obtained so many clues. In any case, I have to take back Delight in Water and Mountain and Worldly Wave Trace, Spirit Affinity House has lost Water Pavilion for too long! As for calamity beckoning Immortal Gu, it is rank seven, the price for exchanging for it is very high, I’ll see how things go first.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 750: Auction (4)

Things progressed stably with the passage of time. The Gu Immortals entering became fewer and fewer. After a while longer, Qin Bai Sheng closed the entrance of his blessed land.

He walked to the raised platform in front of the main hall, proclaiming briefly and to the point: “Ladies and gentlemen, the time has arrived, the auction will officially start!”

“Strange, why have Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan not arrived?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng transmitted a message to Fang Yuan.

“Yes, I am also puzzled. According to Fairy Li Shan’s nature, she should be sitting in the main hall after she arrives. However, there is not even a trace of her.” Fang Yuan replied.

“The auction currently has three spaces for participants; the main hall, single rooms and secret rooms. If they had chosen a secret room, they would have entered directly through secret pathways and not made a public appearance. But even if Fairy Li Shan entered a secret room, she would not have done so without even greeting us. Have you noticed this, there are no Gu Immortals of Hei tribe present.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng pointed it out.

Fang Yuan mumbled: “We should first send a letter inquiring about the situation. Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan are bound to us by the Snowy Mountain Alliance, the possibility of them betraying us is not likely. If they encountered an ambush from Hei Cheng and others, with the strength of those two, they should have been able to send a message to request for support.”

While the two were secretly discussing, the first auction item was already displayed on the platform.

“Everyone should know, these are sky chief clouds. When they are spread out, they can stretch out for over a thousand and three hundred square kilometres. Such a large amount of sky chief clouds are rare even in treasure yellow heaven! The starting bid is twenty immortal essence stones, every bid should be an increase of at least five immortal essence stones. Please start!” Qin Bai Sheng announced.

“Sky chief clouds, this is useful for my Tai Bai blessed land.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s attention was immediately attracted, and he subconsciously utilized the prepared mortal Gu in the secret room to make his bid.

Qin Bai Sheng sensed the bid and immediately announced: “The eleventh secret room bids thirty immortal essence stones.”

The next moment, a cloud path Gu Immortal in the main hall shouted: “Thirty-five immortal essence stones.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng chuckled as he activated the mortal Gu to bid again. He directly raised the price by ten, to forty-five immortal essence stones.

Forty-five immortal essence stones were enough to buy a desolate beast corpse.

The cloud path Gu Immortal who had made the bid gritted his teeth, hesitating for a while but not making another bid.

On the ground, there was the earth chief beast, in the sky, there was the sky chief beast. Within the immemorial nine heavens, sky chief beast groups more or less lived in each of the heavens.

The so-called sky chief clouds were formed from the breath of the sky chief beast; condensing slowly over long periods of time.

These clouds could construct an environment in the immortal aperture that could greatly increase the production of cloud path Gu worms. If a group of sky chief beasts live in this cloudy environment, the effect would be even more wondrous, and if it was managed properly, there would be a never-ending flow of sky chief clouds.

However, the intact parts of the immemorial nine heavens could only be explored by powerful rank seven or rank eight Gu Immortals.

Every sky chief beast was at least a mutated beast king, comparable to an ordinary beast emperor. And the king of every group of sky chief beasts was essentially at desolate beast level.

“Forty-five immortal essence stones, going once.” Qin Bai Sheng spoke, seeing that there were no more bids.

“There are already large numbers of float ball tea in my blessed land. I will have the first batch of harvest at the end of this month. I intend to bring in jade hummingbirds later on. If I can add sky chief clouds, I will have the building blocks to smoothly bring in sky flowers and floating sparrowhawks. Junior brother, you advanced to Gu Immortal later than me, but you already have experience in managing blessed lands through Hu Immortal blessed land. Can you tell me what you think of my plan?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng chuckled as he transmitted his voice to Fang Yuan.

On the platform, Qin Bai Sheng shouted again: “Forty-five immortal essence stones, going twice.”

Fang Yuan pondered for a moment and replied to Tai Bai Yun Sheng: “Sky flowers indeed grow on clouds, and floating sparrowhawks often are the host for cloud path Gu worms. Old Bai, are you thinking of cultivating both time path and cloud path?”

“Yes. My time path abilities are specialized in healing, if I can add in cloud path, it can make up for the other shortcomings.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng said without reservation.

He was originally skilled with cloud path in movement ability, his attainment reaching flying master realm using it. Later, he had dealings with Northern Plains’ Inkman King, Mo Tan Sang, who sold him the killer move nine cloud ring for a low price, this deepened Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s interest in cloud path. Fang Yuan did not feel this choice was abrupt.

At this moment, Qin Bai Sheng shouted for the third time: “Forty-five immortal essence stones for over one thousand three hundred square kilometres of sky chief clouds, going thri...”

“Hold on, fifty-five immortal essence stones.” The bid was just about to be decided, when suddenly a Gu Immortal spoke up.

His voice came from the seventeenth single room.

“Eh.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng had not expected such a change as he hurriedly made a bid, “Sixty immortal essence stones.”

This price finally dispelled any thoughts of buying from everyone present, allowing Tai Bai Yun Sheng to get his wish.

“The second item for auction is a group of rare black spirit antelopes. The beast group’s size reaches three hundred and twenty thousand, and has five beast emperors. The lowest price is ten immortal essence stones, every bid should be at least four immortal essence stones higher. The price can be lowered if you use vertical rainbow ointment to trade.” Qin Bai Sheng announced.

Black spirit antelopes were already hard to find in Northern Plains, this beast group’s size was so large, it should have been reared in some Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture. The Gu worms residing in black spirit antelopes were mainly soul path Gu worms, thus this especially attracted the attention of soul path Gu Immortals.

The Gu Immortal putting this group of black spirit antelopes up for sale required a Gu refinement material, vertical rainbow ointment. Thus the bidding could be done using immortal essence stones or vertical rainbow ointment.

A round of bidding passed, and this black spirit antelope group was purchased by a Gu Immortal for twenty-eight immortal essence stones.

“The third item is a set of Gu recipes that came from the Medieval Antiquity Era, its name is inch of time. It contains all the recipes from rank one to rank five, and the crucial point is that these Gu recipes have already been improved. All of the refinement materials can be found commonly. The lowest price is twenty-two immortal essence stones and you can also use the desolate beast, six headed snake’s skin to reduce the price.” Qin Bai Sheng announced.

“Twenty-three immortal essence stones.”

“Isn’t it disgraceful to add only one immortal essence stone? Thirty immortal essence stones!”

“I bid thirty-two.”

This time, there were clearly more Gu Immortals bidding than the previous two times.

Inch of time was a time path Gu worm which could not be used on humans but could be used on other targets, and was extensively used in Gu refinement. For instance, if a Gu worm required three days and three nights to be refined, and the inch of time Gu was used, it would quickly reach the state that required three days and three nights of time, by accelerating the growth and transformation of the Gu worm. And the amount of time the Gu Master would have to spend probably would only be few short moments.

Fang Yuan had obtained the Gu recipe for the Olden Antiquity Era’s group strength Gu, the market price of which was only two immortal essence stones. Inch of time was only a Gu recipe from the Medieval Antiquity Era, but it was a complete set, from the rank one Gu, one inch of time, to the rank five Gu, five inches of time.

The most important point was that this Gu recipe had already been improved by the Gu Immortal! All the Gu refinement materials required also conformed to the present situation and were not difficult to obtain. It was not like the original Gu recipe, in which many refinement materials would be extremely scarce, expensive or extinct.

This point determined the explosive increase in the price, reaching the base price of twenty-two immortal essence stones. Soon, the bidding reached forty-eight immortal essence stones.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng also made his bid at this time: “Fifty-eight immortal essence stones.”

He increased the price by ten immortal essence stones at once, attempting to scare off the competitors.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was rich, even more so than Fang Yuan.

He had Landscape as Before and Man as Before, two great time path healing Immortal Gu, and therefore was very much sought after in Eastern Sea. Especially in the exploration of Yu Lu blessed land, they might have failed, but he had used Man as Before to save a Gu Immortal. This Gu Immortal gave him a hundred or so immortal essence stones as remuneration, and also said he owed Tai Bai Yun Sheng a favor which he would pay in the future.

Most crucially, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s blessed land was healthy and produced green grape immortal essence at every fixed interval of time. His green grape immortal essence was accumulating day by day, to the extent that he could not use them all up.

His Tai Bai blessed land’s time flow was thirty-three times faster than the outside world, nearly the same as Hei Lou Lan’s super grade blessed land.

This was because his was a high grade blessed land and he was also a time path Gu Immortal. Thus, in the aspect of time path resources, it was rather outstanding.

One day in the outside world would be a month in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s blessed land. In theory, blessed lands would produce green grape immortal essence every month. In the same given time for the outside world, the amount of green grape immortal essence Tai Bai Yun Sheng obtained was several times or even ten times higher than ordinary rank six Gu Immortals!

On the contrary, Fang Yuan might have guts Gu business, but he had to handle all sorts of expenses, especially the constant converting of immortal essence stones to green grape immortal essence.

His immortal aperture was dead and could no longer produce immortal essence, moreover it would crumble and shrink every set interval of time, which was an extremely large setback to him.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s bid indeed scared off most of the competing Gu Immortals. But there was still some who persisted.

As the bid increased with two additional offers, the price had slowly risen to sixty-six immortal essence stones.

“Sixty-six immortal essence stones to purchase a set of mortal Gu recipes!” Some of the low-level Gu Immortals in the main hall were tongue-tied.

“It can’t be considered expensive. Inch of time cannot be used on oneself, but it can be used to save time and has wide range of applications like reducing the duration of Gu refinement. If you consider it in the long-term, especially for those Gu Immortals who also cultivate refinement path, they can use inch of time to slowly accumulate savings worth sixty-six immortal essence stones.” A Gu Immortal calmly analyzed.

“This price is already at the peak. It would be unwise to raise the price further. Unless you have a special requirement for it.” Another Gu Immortal added his analysis.

“Sixty-six immortal essence stones, going once.” Qin Bai Sheng started to close the bids.

At this moment, Fang Yuan transmitted his voice to Tai Bai Yun Sheng: “Old Bai, let’s split the immortal essence stones and make the bid together?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was happy: “Junior brother, you also have the intent to get it, that is good.”

He thus raised the price directly to sixty-eight. Only one other Gu Immortal continued to bid, adding one immortal essence stone.

Finally, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng paid an expensive price of seventy immortal essence stones to finish the purchase of Inch of Time.

Time passed by, one after another, treasures continued to be auctioned off.

The competition in the main hall was getting more fierce and the atmosphere had also turned fiery. Many Gu Immortals lost their bearings and started arguing. Although they had sense and calmness, with large profits in front, they could not help being flushed with agitation.

After dozens of items were auctioned off, some low leveled Gu Immortals already became powerless to continue fighting, some were perspiring, some were pale, while many were exhausted.

The bidding did not only compare wealth but also involved psychological battles.

Gradually, rank six Gu Immortal bidders became sparser.

Rank six Gu Immortals usually had several hundreds of immortal essence stones of savings, while rank seven would have several thousands or over ten thousand directly in their hands. At rank eight, having several tens of thousands available was a certainty. And those who had accumulated over the years would have hundreds of thousands of immortal essence stones in hand.

The stronger the cultivation, the more resources they owned. Ordinary rank sixes had too weak of a foundation, fortunately, they could lower the price with other goods, otherwise most of them would have already been completely out of the game.

Fang Yuan also only had few hundred immortal essence stones. He had made bids, but there were very few successes while most failed, and he was still waiting patiently for the main show.

Finally, he heard Qin Bai Sheng announce: “Next, we shall begin the auction of Immortal Gu.”

“The most important part is here!” Fang Yuan’s eyes brightened.

Not only him, other Gu Immortals were also invigorated.

The previous auction could only be considered the prelude, the true event had just taken stage!

Immortal Gu trade!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 751: Auction (5)

Qin Bai Sheng stood on the stage and took out several mortal Gu, passing them around the hall.

A few Gu Immortals received these mortal Gu, showing doubt on their faces.

Qin Bai Sheng spoke slowly: “The auction of Immortal Gu is extremely important. The ones that are auctioned first have a greater advantage, they can be exchanged for more varieties of Immortal Gu. Thus, for fairness, this auction will not go according to the listed order, I have specially prepared these mortal Gu, once you activate them, they will point to one of the Immortal Gu up for auction. As for which one, it is completely random, nobody can manipulate them, go ahead and inspect these mortal Gu.”

These words attracted quite a pleased response.

The Gu Immortals inspected the mortal Gu in turn as they discussed softly.

“This method is great, I was worried that my Immortal Gu would be auctioned later and be at a disadvantage.”

“Qin Bai Sheng is not simple, he considered everything carefully for this auction.”

“If he really did something secretly, I cannot complain. My inspections say that there are no problems at all.”

These mortal Gu were inspected by the Gu Immortals and were sent to the secret rooms.

Soon, it was Fang Yuan’s turn, he personally inspected them and discovered nothing wrong with them.

After the Gu Immortals in the secret rooms inspected the Gu, the mortal Gu went to the single rooms again. The rank eight Gu Immortals were almost all in single rooms. After inspecting, the mortal Gu were passed back to Qin Bai Sheng.

Qin Bai Sheng did not continue the auction, he asked: “Is there anyone else who is still uncertain, would you like to go ahead and inspect it again?”

As expected, there were Gu Immortals who said that they needed to inspect it again.

Among them, some had already inspected the Gu before.

This set of mortal Gu had no problems earlier, but it was passed around. What if someone did something to them while they were passed around?

Gu Immortals were wary and meticulous, thus they wanted to take another look.

After inspecting it again, they found nothing wrong. At this point, the true purpose of this auction was about to begin.

Qin Bai Sheng activated this set of mortal Gu in front of everyone, they shined in a bright light as smoke rose, the smoke gathered in the air and formed into the two words ‘conceal luck’.

“It has been chosen, the first Immortal Gu is conceal luck Immortal Gu.” Qin Bai Sheng shouted.

“Conceal luck Immortal Gu was originally numbered at the end of the auction, to think that it became the first now.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng grabbed the east window Gu as he muttered after checking.

At the same time, many other Gu Immortals were doing the same thing.

The sequence in the east window Gu was not the real order. Their own Immortal Gu could possibly be the next one up for auction. If they happened to be at the end, they could only blame their luck.

This was a fair rule, none of the immortals had any disagreements, even the rank eight Gu Immortal great experts agreed with this.

On the stage, the screen was changing as it turned into the appearance of the conceal luck Immortal Gu.

Qin Bai Sheng introduced when the time was right: “As everyone can see, this Gu looks like a white skinned beetle, it is half the size of a palm and is a rank six luck path Immortal Gu, it can conceal one’s own luck. The seller wants a metal path defensive Immortal Gu. Whoever has a metal path defensive Immortal Gu can bid for it. There is no lower limit for this.”

“Conceal luck Immortal Gu, concealing one’s own luck...”

“Luck path has luck inspection Gu, it can inspect another person’s luck. There is also conceal luck Gu, it can hide one’s own luck and prevent others from seeing it.”

“This conceal luck Immortal Gu is rank six, it can defend from rank six luck inspection Gu. Although the effect is good, its use is too narrow.”

In the main hall, Gu Immortals were discussing softly, but no one bid for it.

If luck path was flourishing and widely used, so be it. But since Giant Sun

Immortal Venerable created luck path, he had been secretive and hidden it for himself, this caused the number of luck path mortal Gu to be very low.

Especially conceal luck Immortal Gu, it could only have value against someone who had luck inspection Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu’s use was too narrow, it had little value. Gu Immortals were not stupid, why would they bid randomly?

“Damn it...” The person who had conceal luck Immortal Gu was a female Gu Immortal, she sat in a single room as she bit her lips, she helplessly watched her conceal luck Immortal Gu go without bidding, nobody wanted it.

The first Immortal Gu was not successfully sold, this was out of everyone’s expectations, Qin Bai Sheng’s face was a little dark as he used the mortal Gu in his hands to start the bidding for the second item.

The image changed, and showed a cicada-like Immortal Gu.

This cicada was not as exquisite as Spring Autumn Cicada, it had a big head and was shining in silver light.

“This is heavenly gong Immortal Gu, a sound path rank six Immortal Gu, to be traded with a transformation path related Immortal Gu.” Qin Bai Sheng said.

In the main hall, a Gu Immortal saw this Gu and flew into a rage, shouting: “Heavenly gong Immortal Gu! Hmph, this Gu was mine, but He Lang Zi snatched it. He Lang Zi, come out now!”

“I’ll come out, do you think I’m afraid of you?” From a secret room, He Lang Zi walked out with a ruthless smile.

“It is He Lang Zi indeed, a famous loner of the demonic path in Northern Plains!”

“Rumors say that he had obtained an inheritance of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, thus he can snatch other people’s Immortal Gu.”

“This person was raised by a female wolf since he was young, his nature is like that of a wild animal, he is cruel and insidious, and is a loner, being very different from normal people. Old Ancestor Xue Hu had once attempted to recruit him, but he rejected him.”

The Gu Immortals discussed enthusiastically.

He Lang Zi crossed his arms as he walked towards the main hall, sitting in front of the shouting Gu Immortal.

The Gu Immortals around him quickly moved away, choosing other seats.

“You, you!” The shouting Gu Immortal pointed at He Lang Zi as his face turned red, he was trembling from anger.

“Me what?” He Lang Zi licked his lips, he had a cruel and mocking gaze: “Old man Xiong Yuan, you are a sound path Gu Immortal, if you do not bid now, when will you?”

“Transformation path Immortal Gu, I have one here, it is called demon ferret skin. After using it, one’s skin can turn into the skin of the heart demon ferret.” Unfettered Scholar’s voice came from a single room.

A heart demon ferret was a desolate beast, there were normally wisdom path Gu worms in its body. The demon ferret skin could provide resistance against wisdom path attacking methods.

After Unfettered Scholar killed a heart demon ferret, he used it to refine this Gu. But he already had methods to defend against wisdom path, thus this Gu was redundant to him, therefore he took it out.

“Demon ferret skin... if one can gather demon ferret bone, demon ferret blood, and other related Immortal Gu, one can unleash the immortal killer move, heart demon ferret transformation.” He Lang Zi’s gaze shined as he thought.

Transformation path was different from other paths, their killer moves were easy to form. As long as one gathered a set of Immortal Gu, they could form an immortal killer move.

Thus, there was much to consider when trading for transformation path Immortal Gu compared to other paths.

He Lang Zi had three immortal wolf transformation killer moves, it could allow him to transform into three different desolate wolves, they had great battle strength. If he transformed into the heart demon ferret, even though it was similar to the form of a wolf, what He Lang Zi wanted was to develop his fighting ability in water.

Thus, He Lang Zi slightly shook his head, not speaking.

Qin Bai Sheng had been observing silently, he said: “Any other Gu Immortals want to bid?”

“I have a moon demon bat claw Immortal Gu, it can transform your hands into the bat claws of a moon demon bat.” Feng Jiu Ge said loudly.

“This is Fairy You Lan who is representing Prince Feng Xian.”

“Isn’t Fairy You Lan a sword path Gu Immortal, why does she want the sound path heavenly gong Immortal Gu?”

“She is representing the rank eight great expert, Prince Feng Xian, this bid is likely to be Prince Feng Xian’s intention.”

The Gu Immortals started guessing.

Nobody knew that the so-called Swordmaster You Lan was actually Feng Jiu Ge. He was a sound path Gu Immortal, thus he desired the heavenly gong Immortal Gu.

He Lang Zi did not speak, he shook his head.

Moon demon bat claw Immortal Gu could bring about a future possibility — immortal killer move, moon demon bat transformation.

But He Lang Zi was not good at aerial combat, he even hated the sky. This was because he had lived in a wolf’s den in his youth, he learned to move on all fours from his wolf mother, and was skilled in using his teeth to bite objects.

Most wolves were land based creatures, they could not fly.

Qin Bai Sheng obtained a transmission, afterwards he said: “The Gu Immortal in the first secret room has bid a grand smoke sea turtle shell Immortal Gu, together with verified information regarding Ascending Heaven Plain.”

He Lang Zi’s gaze shined, he raised his head. Grand smoke sea turtle was a desolate beast of the sea, it suited his needs. But this turtle was skilled in using illusions to conceal itself, it did not have high speed or strong defenses, this was quite different from He Lang Zi’s battle style.

“Ascending Heaven Plain, what is that?” He Lang Zi asked. Although he had high battle strength, he was a loner and did not trust any human Gu Immortals, thus he was lacking in information.

“Hmph, a frog in a well!” Gu Immortal Xiong Yuan laughed as he refused to give up any chance of mocking He Lang Zi.

“Ascending Heaven Plain is a place, anyone who passes it, even if it is a mortal, can enter the immemorial nine heavens. In the legends, Northern Dark Ice Soul, who was able to enter black heaven, went through Ascending Heaven Plain to reach it.” Qin Bai Sheng explained patiently.

“So that’s it.” He Lang Zi was moved.

He was a rank seven lone cultivator, he needed to fight for every piece of resources personally. But Northern Plains had limited resources, and the super forces were holding onto them.

Meanwhile, the immemorial nine heavens had the heavenly wind qi wall, only very strong Gu Immortals could force their way in and explore the nine heavens.

Even though in the immemorial nine heavens, only white and black heaven were left intact, while the other heavens were utterly broken, or even completely destroyed, be it the intact heavens or the nine heavens fragment worlds, they had abundant resources.

“My battle strength is enough to break through the heavenly wind qi wall, but I cannot fly. If I can get the information regarding the Ascending Heaven Plain...” He Lang Zi was increasingly moved.

As he thought about it, two more Gu Immortals took out their transformation path Immortal Gu and entered the bidding.

One was the shouting Gu Immortal who wanted to tear He Lang Zi into pieces, Gu Immortal Xiong Yuan.

A total of five Gu Immortals bid for one Immortal Gu.

They continued to increase their bids, or added in immortal essence stones, even providing rare resources, lost Gu recipes, or a large group of beasts.

Eventually, He Lang Zi chose the offer of the first secret room, obtaining grand smoke sea turtle shell Immortal Gu, as well as a large group of water wolves.

The two sides made the transaction in public. Because the Gu Immortal in the secret room could not show up, Qin Bai Sheng was the middleman for this.

After He Lang Zi got the intelligence about Ascending Heaven Plain, he looked at it in anticipation, but when he saw it, he stared with furious eyes as he started to shout in anger.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 752: Auction (6)

“Why, is there an issue with the Ascending Heaven Plain information?” Qin Bai Sheng’s expression changed as he asked. This was his auction, according to the oath, neither buyer nor seller were allowed to lie. Verified information was given, which meant that there was a true location.

“No.” He Lang Zi’s expression turned grim, he refused to speak, but it looked like he had suffered a huge loss.

“That batch of water wolves?” He asked.

“It is already in the blessed land.” Qin Bai Sheng said.

“Bring me there.” He Lang Zi said stiffly.

Qin Bai Sheng waved his hand and teleported He Lang Zi away. After the latter checked the goods and found no mistake, he collected the wolves and left the auction in advance, without returning to the auction hall.

“Hahaha, seeing this wolf rascal suffer a loss, it is truly quite gratifying.” In the first secret room, Murong Jin Xiao laughed.

Next to him, the rank eight Gu Immortal from Eastern Sea was playing with the heavenly gong Immortal Gu.

“Thanks to esteemed guest’s help, even though He Lang Zi saw the location of Ascending Heaven Plain, it was in Eastern Sea and he could not go there, one could only imagine his anger.” Murong Jin Xiao thanked.

“No need to thank me, my daughter is skilled in music, she cultivates sound path, I bought it for her. I was not targeting He Lang Zi personally.” The Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortal waved his hand.

...

“Ascending Heaven Plain is in Eastern Sea, I know the location of it. How did the Gu Immortal in the first secret room learn about it?” Fang Yuan was suspicious.

“I vaguely remember that there is a super force in Northern Plains that has connections with Eastern Sea, it was Murong tribe, right?”

Soon, Fang Yuan set aside his suspicions.

Because Qin Bai Sheng had chosen the third Immortal Gu that was up for auction, it was Fang Yuan’s rising azure cloud Gu.

Qin Bai Sheng announced clearly: “Immortal Gu Rising Azure Cloud, rank six cloud path, specialized in ascending and descending in the air, the seller wants a strength path Immortal Gu. Anyone interested can start bidding!”

Fang Yuan was now a strength path Gu Immortal, this was a fact that could not be changed. Even though strength path was declining now, he could only push on in this direction.

Because of Spring Autumn Cicada, ever since rebirth, his plan had been to become a time path Gu Immortal using his first aperture.

In regards to this, he was quite helpless.

In the earlier stages of this life, Fang Yuan simply chose strength path as a transitory measure. In the end, because he was forced by circumstances, he ascended to an immortal using strength path. And because of Reckless Savage’s true meaning, his strength path attainment rose to grandmaster level, becoming equal with Fang Yuan’s blood path. This was unexpected.

Fang Yuan would rather give up blood path than Spring Autumn Cicada. He was undoubtedly a blood path grandmaster, but there was more than one blood path grandmaster other than him. On the other hand, there was only one Spring Autumn Cicada in this world, and it was Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s vital Gu.

Looking at the two, the choice was clear! But if Fang Yuan wanted to walk on time path, he would need to walk on a long journey. He lacked a time path foundation, and he was not a time path Gu Immortal either.

The current situation was: Fang Yuan was an immortal zombie, he did not know when he could regain his living status, in a short time, if he wanted to gain more battle strength, he could only choose strength path Immortal Gu.

“This is the star desolate hound strength Gu, it can grant you the strength of a star desolate hound!”

“I have the iron crown eagle strength Gu, I’ll throw in another one hundred and fifty kilograms of great lake soil.”

“A qi grand lion strength Gu, and five drops of rule eye blood!”

As the bidding continued, a Gu Immortal’s bid made the hall go into a commotion.

“Rule eye blood! Did I hear wrongly?”

“One of the ten great catastrophes, rule eye tribulation, only by piercing the rule eye can one obtain this blood.”

“This blood is genuine immortal material, it can be the main material to make a rank six Immortal Gu, or a supplementary material for a rank seven Immortal Gu!”

Fang Yuan shook his head, although rule eye blood was precious, five drops was too little.

He sighed, although strength path was declining, the number of strength path Immortal Gu was not few. But if not for this auction, he would not have seen so many strength path Immortal Gu.

Northern Plains Gu Immortals, compared to the other four regions, had the lowest financial power. But even so, after many years of accumulation, they still had quite the sum. Gu Immortals had many precious goods, but they usually kept it to themselves, hiding their wealth from others. Especially Immortal Gu, once these were exposed, they might get targeted, thus, they hid Immortal Gu even more deeply.

Only during this auction would Gu Immortals expose these Gu voluntarily.

Otherwise, why would he say that the auction was a rare chance and a precious opportunity that he could not miss?

A total of five Gu Immortals bid for rising azure cloud Immortal Gu. After a few rounds, two Gu Immortals backed out, not long after, the third stopped. Only two were left.

But before they decided on the victor, Fang Yuan had sent a message to Qin Bai Sheng: “Enough, I’ll choose the third person. the one with iron crown eagle strength Gu.”

This auction involving Immortal Gu was different from normal auctions. Firstly, Immortal Gu were unique, secondly, there was no developed economy, they did not have a common currency, thirdly, Gu Immortal’s resources were all different, most of the precious immortal materials were hard to evaluate.

Thus, during the auction, the seller could choose any buyer. Even though buyers competed with each other, it was only to attract the seller and move them. The winner who outbids the rest might not necessarily get the auction item.

To simplify it, this was a seller’s market. Immortal Gu were unique, if I did not sell it, where could you buy it?

A moment later, Fang Yuan and that Gu Immortal completed the transaction, the latter obtained the rising azure cloud Immortal Gu, while Fang Yuan obtained the iron crown eagle strength Gu, as well as a batch of immortal materials that were listed on Lang Ya land spirit’s list.

The reason why he chose iron crown eagle strength Gu was because this was the only one which was a flying beast, the rest were all land based creatures.

Fang Yuan had true solid bat wings now, it was compatible with the strength of a flying beast. If he could unleash the iron crown eagle strength Gu while flying, it would have an effect on par with immortal movement killer moves.

After Rising Azure Cloud was the fourth auction item, it was a fire path Immortal Gu.

Once this Gu appeared, a small surge erupted in the auction, even the rank eight Gu Immortal, Five Elements Grandmaster, joined the bidding.

In terms of wealth, how could rank six Gu Immortals and ordinary rank seven Gu Immortals compare to a rank eight Gu Immortal? But in the end, Five Elements Grandmaster returned empty handed.

The seller did not choose him, even though he was the eventual winner of the bidding.

He would rather risk offending a rank eight great expert, that was because the immortal materials offered by the buyer were too valuable to him. Immortal materials all varied greatly, the different types available were like the numbers of stars in the sky, not even Five Elements Grandmaster could possess all of them.

But that was exactly why the auction was so interesting, because everyone had a chance.

The fifth and sixth items were both metal path Immortal Gu.

The auction hall became much more heated now, metal, wood, water, fire, earth, these were the five most mainstream paths, they were even more popular than cloud path and sound path. Strength path and qi path were much less so.

Eventually, Five Elements Grandmaster obtained one of the metal path Gu worms, the last one was won by Qin Bai Sheng. Not only was he the organizer of the auction, he was also a participant.

As time passed, Immortal Gu after Immortal Gu were bought and sold. This was a rare scene that had not happened in a few hundred years of time in Northern Plains. There were records in history regarding such auctions, but they were smaller in scale.

The most important thing was that the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang

Building caused all the Gu Immortals to have some form of profit, this caused the auction to be at such a scale.

Rarely seen Immortal Gu appeared one after another, Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals were trying to take advantage of this rare situation.

“Next is the twenty-third auction item, Worldly Wave Trace, this Gu is rank six and is used for movement...” Qin Bai Sheng was still introducing it when two Gu Immortals already began staring with shining eyes.

“Finally! Worldly Wave Trace, one of the core Immortal Gu of Water Pavilion. I have to get it no matter what!” Feng Jiu Ge clenched his fists.

Meanwhile, in the first secret room.

“Worldly Wave Trace, very good, I did not waste my efforts after all. I already have the relevant Immortal Gu recipe in my hands, once I get it, I have a high chance of refining worldly horizon Immortal Gu. World horizon Immortal Gu can allow me to enter the immemorial nine heavens freely, it can reduce the cost of breaking through the heavenly wind qi wall.” The Gu Immortal from Eastern Sea was already excited and in anticipation.

The use and value of an Immortal Gu varied from one person to another.

To Feng Jiu Ge, this was one of the cores to construct the rank seven Immortal Gu House, Water Pavilion.

To the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, it was a path towards the immemorial nine heavens, the way to immense benefits.

These two choices had their own advantages, it was hard to say which was a better way.

“I have a star desolate hound strength Gu.”

“A peach wolf strength Gu.”

“A wailing whale strength Gu.”

The Gu Immortals bid rapidly.

Feng Jiu Ge waited patiently, seeing that the rank six Gu Immortals in the main hall were bidding, he could not help but smile. Using Swordmaster You Lan’s voice, he said: “I have a strength path Immortal Gu here, called Pulling Mountain. It will allow your strength to pull up a mountain, I will also add in a hundred and fifty kilograms of heaven metal.”

“Heaven metal? Incredible, this is an immortal material that is on par with the rule eye blood. It is only produced in the immemorial nine heavens.”

“A hundred and fifty kilograms from the start, this is much more than five drops of rule eye blood, did I hear wrongly?”

There was a commotion in the main hall.

Feng Jiu Ge took out a huge sum to bid, with one move, he scared off most of his competitors. A hundred and fifty kilograms of heaven metal was not a small sum, it was extremely valuable!

But he only scared off ‘most’ of them.

In the first secret room, Eastern Sea Gu Immortal snorted unhappily, using his mortal Gu to bid again.

A strength path Immortal Gu, Overturn River, as well as two hundred and fifty kilograms of crack divine water!

“Is he crazy, two hundred and fifty kilograms of crack divine water? This is possible supplementary material for rank seven Immortal Gu.”

“Crack divine water is on par with heaven metal, it can only be extracted from the deepest part of a great lake, in a hundred years, there might only be about ten to fifteen kilograms.

“Oh?” Feng Jiu Ge was slightly shocked, he did not expect such a fierce competitor to appear.

He gave an arrogant laugh, using Swordmaster You Lan’s identity, he had less reservations, he said: “Whatever the seller needs, be it materials, Gu recipes, beast groups or variant human slaves, just tell me.”

The instance these words came out, the whole hall went in an uproar.

Most Gu Immortals immediately thought of Prince Feng Xian who was backing Fairy You Lan.

“It seems that Prince Feng Xian wants this Immortal Gu.” Even that Eastern Sea Gu Immortal could not help but guess.

But he quickly laughed, his fighting spirit had been triggered: “Prince Feng Xian is rank eight, but am I not rank eight too?”

Soon after, in the auction hall, his voice could be heard: “My request is the same as Fairy You Lan’s. Can the seller give us an indication?”

The hall went into an uproar again, they were trying to guess who was in the first secret room, by directly competing with Swordmaster You Lan, they were trying to contest with Prince Feng Xian.

“Oh?” In the tenth secret room, Fang Yuan showed an expression of shock as well.

His eyes turned as he laughed lightly: “It seems that both sides are not ordinary, they really desire this Gu. In that case, if I do not accede to their request, it would not be fitting.”

He directly took out Lang Ya land spirit’s list, after multiplying the base amounts on it by several times, he handed it to Qin Bai Sheng.

Qin Bai Sheng received it and showed a strange expression, before displaying it to everyone.

The hall went into a third uproar.

“Isn’t this list of items way too absurd?”

“Three thousand kilograms of heaven metal and crack divine water, who is this seller, does he think these materials are grass growing on the ground?”

“This is an exorbitant amount, he is really asking for an absurd price!”

At once, even Feng Jiu Ge and the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal were stunned.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 753: Second Immortal Gu!

“Oh? Interesting.” Seeing the list of immortal materials given by Fang Yuan, Feng Jiu Ge’s gaze shined as he restored his calm.

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortal’s expression was like it had never changed, he sat on the chair with a disposition of being in control, he asked Murong Jin Xiao beside him: “How many refinement path grandmasters are there in Northern Plains?”

On the list, most of them were refinement path immortal materials, the varieties were huge, and the types of materials were chaotic, one could become dizzy from looking at it. Fang Yuan could take it out in an instant, he had evidently prepared it long ago.

Only refinement path Gu Immortals would bother to prepare such a list, to try and gain something from the auction.

Murong Jin Xiao replied without thinking: “There are four major refinement path grandmasters in Northern Plains. The greatest one is Yao tribe’s rank eight Gu Immortal, Yao Huang, rumors say that his refinement path attainment has exceeded grandmaster and perhaps even quasi-great grandmaster level. The second is a Gu Immortal of my Murong tribe, Murong Xue Xiang, she had once refined a snow path Immortal Gu successfully. The third is the second leader of Snowy Mountain, Lady Wan Shou, she has refined Gu for many demonic path Gu Immortals. The fourth is a lone cultivator, she is called Lady Miao Li, she is skilled at refining enslavement path Gu worms.”

The Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortal heard this and nodded, not saying anything further.

“The Gu Immortal in the tenth secret room is not simple.”

“By asking for so many Gu refinement materials, even if this is an exorbitant amount, one can see his ambition and unique characteristics!”

In the main hall, after the Gu Immortals regained their senses, they realized this.

“Right now, this situation has become interesting. Both buyers are quite the characters, they have ample purchasing power. The seller is not to be underestimated either, he has a mysterious background, he is simply unfathomable.” Qin Bai Sheng watched with anticipation as he thought about this.

He was the organizer of this auction, he knew that the rank eight Gu Immortal in the first secret room came from Eastern Sea.

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, even if he was rank eight, had to restrain himself in Northern Plains. Especially in a place like the auction, outsiders were likely to get targeted.

Thus, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal and Murong Jin Xiao chose to hide their identities, choosing this secret room.

Since they wanted to join the auction, they had to interact with Qin Bai Sheng, who helped them to hide their identities and gave them the first secret room, this was a form of respect.

“Immortal zombie Sha Huang, he might look ordinary but he may possibly have a rank eight monster backing him up. And this rank eight great expert is skilled in refining Gu. I’m afraid Fairy Li Shan knows this as well. Otherwise, why would he, a mere rank six immortal zombie, be so close to the third leader of Snowy Mountain?”

Qin Bai Sheng was making a guess.

In a way, he was correct.

Because it was Lang Ya land spirit who was behind Fang Yuan, in the past, Long Hair Ancestor was certainly a rank eight Gu Immortal.

“In that case, I will add in a hundred and fifty pieces of thunder sound leaves.” After a bit of silence, Feng Jiu Ge was the first to speak.

In the hall, gasping noises could be heard.

Thunder sound leaves were not common, they did not exist in the outside world, they could only be created from strong lightning tribulations. It was the essence formed from thunder and lightning.

But thunder sound leaves were very rare, they were hard to obtain.

This was because ordinary Gu Immortal already found it hard to undergo their immortal aperture tribulations, they would not have the ability to pick the thunder sound leaves during their tribulations.

Even if they had the ability, they needed a specific method to pick the thunder sound leaves.

Thus, even in treasure yellow heaven, thunder sound leaves were very rare. But now, Feng Jiu Ge was offering a hundred and fifty of them.

“Hehehe.” The Eastern Sea Gu Immortal laughed: “Is Prince Feng Xian so petty? This list clearly states that the seller wants two hundred and eighty thunder sound leaves.”

After pausing for a while, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal shouted: “I have three hundred and sixty heaven flying jades!”

“Heaven flying jade, this is a type of jade that can allow a person to fly in azure heaven, of the immemorial nine heavens.”

“This jade has some mystical senses, it is like a bird or beast, it can avoid capture on its own.”

“Who is the person in the first secret room? He offered three hundred and sixty heaven flying jades at once, it directly fulfills the amount on the list.”

In the hall, murmurs could be heard again.

Actually, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal was also feeling heartache. He had once had an opportunity and entered a large azure heaven fragment world for exploration, obtaining more than four hundred heaven flying jades in the process, while getting injured.

Right now, to compete for worldly wave trace Immortal Gu, he offered the majority of them, to deal a huge blow towards his contender.

In the single room, Feng Jiu Ge snorted, his expression turned solemn.

The other party’s actions made him realize, they were just like him, they were determined to get worldly wave trace Immortal Gu.

Offering three hundred and sixty heaven flying jades at once, this showed their immense wealth, they were a powerful foe!

But who was Feng Jiu Ge?

He was the person publicly recognized to have the highest battle strength in Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects. Even though he was rank seven, he could withstand rank eight Gu Immortals, with Spirit Affinity House backing him, and the many years of accumulation, his foundation was immensely abundant.

If there were any rank six or seven Gu Immortals in this auction who could contest with rank eight great experts, then Feng Jiu Ge would definitely be number one amongst them!

Adding more!

Feng Jiu Ge did not hesitate, he continued: “I’ll add ten thousand pieces of star pupils.”

Star pupils, a rare material of the immemorial nine heavens, not able to be found in the five regions.

It was an immortal material that originated from blue heaven.

In blue heaven, stars flew around in carefree fashion, raining down endless stardust. Among these uncountable stardust fragments, some were eight-sided, some were five-sided, seven-sided, sixteen-sided...

There were also stardust fragments with no edges, they were round. These edgeless fragments were like round jewels, the starlight gathered into the shape of an iris, thus, they were known as star pupils.

Feng Jiu Ge’s offer was shocking to the Gu Immortals.

“When this list first appeared, I had thought that there would not be a buyer so foolish as to pay such a huge price for an Immortal Gu. I was wrong!”

“The list only needs eight thousand edgeless stardust fragments, but Swordmaster You Lan is offering ten thousand! This is evidently a counterattack against the competitor.”

“Too wealthy, they are too wealthy. Is this the accumulation of a rank eight?”

“Compared to these people, I am like a pauper. Such a feeling is really not good.”

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortal heard Feng Jiu Ge’s offer and his breathing stopped for a moment. Honestly speaking, he did not expect that he would attract a fiercer counterattack, an even stronger backlash.

“Although there are a lot of star pupils, I must remind the seller. Star pupils, after all, vary in quality, a fragmented star pupil and an intact star pupil have very different value.” The Eastern Sea Gu Immortal said.

Fang Yuan heard this and thought about it, the voice from the first secret room was correct, this was true.

But on Lang Ya land spirit’s immortal material list, he did not mention this.

The reason was, Lang Ya land spirit did not expect such a situation to occur. He thought: It was hard enough to collect star pupils. It was good if they could find any, the quality was not an issue, that was a secondary concern.

“You’ve said so much, but can you actually make a new offer. If not, I have a lot more here.” Feng Jiu Ge smiled coldly, he continued his attack, mentioning region sand, sun salt, star galaxy wind, plain fire, and three other immortal materials, although the amount did not fill up the list, the variety was enough to be shocking.

A Gu Immortal immediately sighed: “Fairy You Lan is cold and arrogant, she is going all in. Before the opponent made an offer, she raised it once again.”

A Gu Immortal beside him analyzed: “This is a bidding tactic. In my opinion, the mysterious Gu Immortal in the first secret room is a formidable person as well, he will not give up easily.”

Feng Jiu Ge’s offer gave the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal in the first secret room a reminder.

“That’s right, the seller can take out such a list, they definitely cultivate refinement path. Refining Gu requires a large variety of materials, a large quantity of one material is not enough. The other party is making such an offer to attract them, I need to change my tactics as well.” The Eastern Sea Gu Immortal thought about it before shouting again.

He competed with Feng Jiu Ge, offering huge amounts of immortal materials, this made the Gu Immortals present listen with dazed expressions, like they were dreaming.

After a few rounds, be it Feng Jiu Ge or the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, they started breathing roughly.

In the secret room, Gu Immortal Murong Jin Xiao, who was at the side, could not say anything further.

“These two lunatics.” In a single room, the rank eight Gu Immortal, Five Elements Grandmaster, shook his head, sighing helplessly.

He cultivation included metal, wood, water, fire, and earth, he needed Gu worms from all the five paths. He wanted to participate in the water path Immortal Gu Worldly Wave Trace’s auction, but looking at this competition, his desire dwindled.

Fang Yuan was quite surprised.

If he added Feng Jiu Ge and the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal’s bids together, then half of the materials listed would be collected already!

Of course, Fang Yuan could only choose one of them. There cannot be two victors in this bid.

Fang Yuan was not overly happy, his gaze was shining uncertainly.

The other parties were not idiots, they were going after worldly wave trace Immortal Gu so fiercely, that proved that for them, they could derive much greater benefits from this Immortal Gu.

“I’ll offer five kilograms of drunk immortal qi!” At one side, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal had made another offer.

The auction hall started whirring, as if a small explosion had happened.

“What is drunk immortal qi?”

“It is also an immortal material, but its use is quite obscure. It can make even Gu Immortals drunk, it can only be created in a special environment.”

“This drunk immortal qi is usually sold in traces. Even in treasure yellow heaven, condensed drunk immortal qi that are in liquid form are sold in grams. Since when are they sold in kilograms?”

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortal was really wealthy, with this heavy blow, even Feng Jiu Ge’s expression became solemn.

Feng Jiu Ge knew the value of this drunk immortal qi, five kilograms of it was simply extraordinary!

Feng Jiu Ge was hesitant, if he made an offer again, he would need to provide value equivalent to five kilograms of drunk immortal qi.

He calmed down and thought about it, asking himself: “For solely worldly wave trace Immortal Gu, is such a price worth it or not?”

Of course it was worth it!

Rebuilding Water Pavilion had been a wish of Spirit Affinity House for ages. Although Spirit Affinity House had the complete recipe of Water Pavilion, they could refine only the mortal Gu, the Immortal Gu were unique.

For Water Pavilion, Spirit Affinity House had put up detailed missions, recovering each of the core Immortal Gu would have an immense reward!

“In that case, so be it!” Feng Jiu Ge thought about it rapidly, after making up his mind, he took out another Immortal Gu while gritting his teeth.

“This is the strength path Immor

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 754: Domination Immortal Chu Du

The silence did not last for long, the auction hall exploded into a commotion soon afterwards.

The Gu Immortals talked among themselves, as many of the Gu Immortals in the hall directed their gaze towards a single room.

This single room was the place where ‘Fairy You Lan’ was inside.

Everyone subconsciously wanted to see what expression ‘Swordmaster You Lan’ had when she made such a shocking decision.

Even the organizer, Qin Bai Sheng, was a bit stunned, he asked: “Exchanging two for one, is that what you mean, Fairy You Lan?”

"That is the case." Feng Jiu Ge made the decision already, he had no more hesitations.

Hearing Feng Jiu Ge's confirmation, the discussions in the hall became softer.

Feng Jiu Ge was a sound path Gu Immortal, why did he have two strength path Immortal Gu in his possession?

In truth, he had many more Immortal Gu than just these two.

Feng Jiu Ge led the ten Gu Immortals into Northern Plains secretly, he had important missions assigned to him. The first was to find the culprit behind the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the person who activated Central Continent's arrangements in advance. The second one was to collect as many Immortal Gu as he could. To achieve this target, the Central Continent Gu Immortals prepared many methods.

One of the ways was to exchange Gu, thus they brought along many Immortal Gu from their sects.

After all, Gu worms were hard to snatch. A Gu Master can destroy their own Gu worms in an instant with just a thought. The same applied to Immortal Gu.

The Immortal Gu that they brought over were mostly from unpopular paths, like strength path, qi path, and others.

Intelligence on Northern Plains was always in the grasps of the ten great ancient sects. Qin Bai Sheng had not concealed the matter of him holding the auction, he even promoted it greatly. Thus, Feng Jiu Ge and the others had heard about this even when they were in Central Continent.

It could be said that Feng Jiu Ge's appearance in the auction was not a last minute decision, he had planned for it long ago.

In the current world, strength path was not doing well, it had been weakening, those with enough wealth and ambition would certainly not choose to cultivate in strength path.

Using these Gu worms to exchange for Gu worms of other paths, to the ten sects, this was a form of victory.

Although the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal was a rank eight great expert, when they truly competed, he still lost to Feng Jiu Ge.

After all, Feng Jiu Ge was backed by the ten great ancient sects. Meanwhile, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal entered Northern Plains secretly and attended this auction, it was his personal matter.

Feng Jiu Ge had the resolution to do a two for one exchange, but he did not.

But he was not resigned.

He made a final effort, bidding: "I will add... a sandalwood sacred elephant egg!"

A small commotion occurred in the hall again.

"A sandalwood sacred elephant is an ancient desolate beast, after it grows to adulthood, it can rival rank seven Gu Immortals."

"The most important thing is to raise it from a young age, establishing a deep relationship, there would be a low chance of betrayal."

“A living ancient desolate beast’s value is very high. If managed well, it is like a treasure trove with endless value. The blood of the sacred elephant is a good immortal material, the tusks of the sacred elephant will grow back even if they are removed.”

“The Gu Immortal in the first secret room is using another approach. This is quite impressive, an Immortal Gu versus an ancient desolate beast, comparing the two, they each have their advantages and disadvantages, it is hard to decide.”

“Immortal Gu are indeed unique, but ancient desolate beasts are useful too. Especially when the seller seems to have interest in refinement path, he might be moved and choose the ancient desolate beast.”

The people discussed.

At this point, Feng Jiu Ge and the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal stopped bidding.

The situation was uncertain now.

Feng Jiu Ge was exchanging two for one, he had great resolution and had a better chance. But the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal’s offer was similarly enticing, he had a chance of victory too.

As the auction hall turned silent, everyone was waiting for Fang Yuan’s decision.

This was an unexpected climactic moment of the auction, how would it end, who would be the winner that obtains worldly wave trace Immortal Gu?

Everyone was waiting in anticipation.

Fang Yuan thought about it before making his decision, informing Qin Bai Sheng secretly.

Qin Bai Sheng nodded, announcing publicly: “The seller has decided, they will sell worldly wave trace Immortal Gu to Fairy You Lan!”

Once he said that, everyone breathed out in relief, starting their discussions.

“It was logical that Fairy You Lan won.”

“It was a two for one trade after all.”

“If it was me, I would choose the ancient desolate beast. After all, the immortal essence expenditure of using two Immortal Gu is high.”

“Which lucky person does this worldly wave trace Immortal Gu belong to? He actually sold it for such a good price, one Immortal Gu in exchange for two!”

“Indeed, if I had not witnessed this personally, I would never believe it.”

“Fairy You Lan, or rather, Prince Feng Xian definitely has other objectives. They are not fools, since they are offering such a high price, then the benefits they can gain must also be higher!”

“As long as there is demand, there is a market, and profits can be gained. The greater the demand, the greater the profit.”

Not just them, even Fang Yuan was trying to decipher the reason why ‘Swordmaster You Lan’ was buying worldly wave trace Immortal Gu at such a high price.

“Prince Feng Xian...” The Eastern Sea Gu Immortal muttered this name as his expression turned slightly dark.

As the auction continued, an earth path Immortal Gu appeared next.

But the atmosphere was far beneath that of earlier, most of the Gu Immortals were still thinking about the earlier situation, they were still discussing it.

What was the meaning of affluence and wealth, they had finally seen it clearly.

Even though many people were suspicious, why would Prince Feng Xian, a fire path cultivator, be interested in a water path Immortal Gu?

But the mind of a rank eight great expert was hard to decipher, it was not something an outsider could guess so easily.

A mainstream path Immortal Gu was rapidly sold after several rounds of bidding, the quick deal gave people a relatively boring feeling.

Towards this, Qin Bai Sheng was helpless, he could only smile bitterly.

After the climax, it would be the downturn. After all, Feng Jiu Ge and the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal’s bids were too imposing, it weakened a lot of the Gu Immortals’ desires to bid.

Fang Yuan sat in a secret room, playing with the two strength path Immortal Gu as he paid attention to the auction.

Transactions involving Immortal Gu were done on the spot.

Fang Yuan looked through those immortal materials, he checked that there was no issue with the quantity.

Through Feng Jiu Ge’s cooperation, the two strength path Immortal Gu were completely refined by Fang Yuan, they were now his.

At the same time, worldly wave trace Immortal Gu was in Feng Jiu Ge’s hands.

“This is worldly wave trace Immortal Gu... after so many years, it is finally back in Spirit Affinity House’s hands.” Feng Jiu Ge sighed softly, he felt some emotions.

As Immortal Gu were auctioned off one by one, as time passed, the atmosphere of the auction hall became heated once again.

“Next is the thirty-fourth auction item, strength path Immortal Gu — Cauldron Strength, this is a rare strength path defensive Immortal Gu. Once activated, it can create a strength cauldron, protecting oneself. The seller wants a wisdom path Immortal Gu.” Qin Bai Sheng said.

Most of the Gu Immortals in the hall had little interest.

Strength path was declining, few people cultivated it, thus its demand in the market was small.

Just as the owner of cauldron strength Immortal Gu was anxious, a hoarse and unique voice came from a single room: “Wisdom path Immortal Gu Loving Affection.”

“This voice, it’s Domination Immortal Chu Du!” Immediately, someone in the hall shouted.

“That’s right, it should be him, his voice is hoarse like this.”

“To think that Domination Immortal came.”

“What is so strange about it, Lord Chu Du is a famous strength path expert, why would Qin Bai Sheng not invite him?”

“Domination Immortal Chu Du...” In a single room, Feng Jiu Ge drank his tea as his eyes shined.

Before he came to Northern Plains, he had obtained some information. The information regarding Domination Immortal Chu Du was rich and had a lot of details, Feng Jiu Ge placed great emphasis on him.

Chu Du was a rare strength path Gu Immortal, not only did he have great battle strength, he even had overflowing talent, creating a side branch of strength path personally.

Strength path was a huge path, it had once flourished. Right now, strength path was split into beast strength phantom branch, atmospheric heaven and earth branch, as well as human strength jun strength branch.

The beast strength phantom branch included bull strength, tiger strength and others, the strength path Immortal Gu, iron crown eagle strength Gu, that Fang Yuan had obtained some time ago was in this branch.

Atmospheric heaven and earth branch was the strength of nature, like wind strength, water strength, fire strength and others. Or for example, Pulling Mountain and Pulling Water that Fang Yuan obtained from selling worldly wave trace Immortal Gu, both belonged to this branch.

Human strength jun strength branch referred to the jin strength Gu, strength of ten jin Gu, jun strength Gu, strength of ten jun Gu, strength of hundred jun Gu and others.

This small branch was created solely by Chu Du, he brought strength path onto another track and revitalized this dying path using his own methods.

Right now, the human strength jun strength branch was already the mainstream strength path cultivation in Northern Plains. All the Gu Masters in Northern Plains had a strength path foundation, they had all used jin strength Gu, strength of ten jin Gu, jun strength Gu, strength of ten jun Gu and others.

One could say that Domination Immortal Chu Du had singlehandedly turned around the situation of strength path, affecting all of the Gu cultivator paths in the world.

Feng Jiu Ge naturally had to pay a lot of attention to such a person, in fact, it was particularly great emphasis.

“Northern Plains is constantly engaged in battles, it is also a place where heroes emerge. If there is a chance, I have to meet this Domination Immortal.” Feng Jiu Ge’s mouth curled into an excited smile.

Meeting all of the heroes in this world, that was the ambition of a true man!

At this time, a voice echoed: ” Delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, and five thousand kilograms of cloud soil.”

Guh.

Feng Jiu Ge spat out the tea in his mouth, his eyes stared widely as he lost his calm.

“Delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu!” He shouted: “Damn it, my worry came true.”

Immortal Gu could be placed up for auction, they could naturally be used to trade for other Immortal Gu as well. If not for this, all of the registered Immortal Gu would be held up and not available for trade, this would greatly affect the auction’s success.

Feng Jiu Ge understood this rule, and thus he was worried about it.

Whatever you worried about was bound to happen.

Fang Yuan wanted strength path Immortal Gu, he had been paying attention to this strength path Immortal Gu since long ago. Right now, he offered delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, this was part of his original plan.

“One heaven pillar wind.” Facing Fang Yuan’s competition, Domination Immortal Chu Du raised his offer.

Heaven pillar wind was quite special, it originated from green heaven. It was like a tall pillar, extremely tall and long. When it blows, it will not cause movement, only blowing on the spot, from outside, it resembled a giant pillar that extended into the sky.

One heaven pillar wind had high value, it did not lose to Feng Jiu Ge’s earlier bid of a hundred and fifty thunder sound leaves.

“Domination Immortal Chu Du...” Fang Yuan muttered, immediately understanding: “It seems that you are my biggest competitor this time!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 755: Fang Yuan vs Chu Du

“The tenth secret room bids an intact skeleton of a sky dragon, along with one thousand five hundred grams of fury powder.” Qin Bai Sheng stood on the platform and shouted loudly.

Chu Du frowned.

He had just bid a heaven pillar wind, and the Gu Immortal in the tenth secret room immediately marked up the price with no hesitation.

“This is a strong foe.” Chu Du sighed inwardly.

In the previous bidding war of Feng Jiu Ge and the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, the price was settled by exchanging two Immortal Gu for one, from which the tenth secret room had profited greatly. Everyone in the auction knew of this.

Chu Du could not help but feel pressure.

He was also a veteran Gu Immortal with rank seven cultivation and a deep foundation. In his peak period, the immortal essence stones he had on hand to spend greatly surpassed several tens of thousands!

But the situation now was different from the past.

Chu Du recently succeeded in undergoing a tribulation of his immortal aperture, but as a result, his foundation had thinned. Thus, he broke through the heavenly wind qi wall and entered deep within white heaven to explore and replenish resources.

He did make some profits, but he suffered injuries, and to heal these injuries he had to borrow Immortal Gu from others which cost him a lot, overall, he still ended up at a loss.

The immemorial nine heavens had plentiful resources, but were also danger zones. The benefits there were accompanied with risks.

Thus, at this moment, Chu Du was quite short on money available to spend.

“But strength path defensive Immortal Gu are rare. I have been a strength path Gu Immortal for so long, but only today have I come across one. If I don’t try my best to obtain it, I might regret it in the future.”

Chu Du thought of this, and gritted his teeth as he continued to bid.

However, no matter how much he added, Fang Yuan also kept on adding.

Several rounds later, Chu Du finally could not persist with this and sent a message to Qin Bai Sheng secretly, wanting to communicate with the tenth secret room.

Qin Bai Sheng was surprised, but without any change in expression, he sent the message to Fang Yuan.

With Fang Yuan’s permission, Chu Du was able to send a letter to the tenth secret room.

In the letter, Chu Du wrote, if Fang Yuan to retreat from the bidding war, he would owe Fang Yuan a favor and would do a task of equivalent value for Fang Yuan in accordance to the future circumstances. If Fang Yuan did not believe him, they could use an Immortal Gu to create a vow. Not only this, Chu Du also said he would provide Fang Yuan precious information regarding Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s true meaning.

Fang Yuan was surprised and also happy as he read this letter.

There was no doubt Chu Du wrote this letter because he wanted to obtain cauldron strength Immortal Gu, and because of his insufficient financial condition, he wanted to talk things over with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan certainly would not agree!

He was a strength path Gu Immortal as well, and naturally wanted to obtain this rare cauldron strength Immortal Gu. As for Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s true meaning, Fang Yuan already had a rough understanding of it, he even obtained benefits personally.

“I had originally thought Domination Immortal Chu Du had deep pockets, but who could have thought he would make a fool of himself this quickly. It seems his fortune is at rock bottom. Hehehe.” Fang Yuan snickered while making another high bid.

Chu Du gritted his teeth as he proceeded with the bidding, but the items he used to bid were a mish-mash of different goods.

Fang Yuan increased his bid again, adding on rank seven immortal materials, which could act as the main refinement material to refine a rank seven Immortal Gu, their value was very high.

Chu Du sighed but still was not resigned to giving up, as he again added bits and pieces from here and there, bidding many rank six immortal materials. The overall price was similar to Fang Yuan’s rank seven immortal materials.

The Gu Immortals in the hall began to notice the clues now.

“Strange, Lord Chu Du seems to be in a strained situation.”

“I had vaguely heard that Domination Immortal had undergone a tribulation few months ago, it seems the injuries from the tribulation were quite heavy.”

“Chu Du had borrowed healing Immortal Gu from Yao Huang, and reportedly had to pay a considerable price.”

The Gu Immortals quietly spoke to one another while sighing.

Chu Du was feeling anxious, but there was someone else who was more anxious – Feng Jiu Ge.

“This Domination Immortal also cannot handle the situation!” Feng Jiu Ge felt disappointment. He had been hoping Chu Du could pressure the tenth secret room with his might and overwhelm them to achieve victory.

But despite Chu Du’s reputation, currently his poor financial capacity was making a scene that Feng Jiu Ge could not bear to continue witnessing, he had no choice but to think of a way to stop Fang Yuan from winning.

“Worldly Wave Trace and Delight in Water and Mountain, these two Immortal Gu both belong to the Gu Immortal in the tenth secret room. This person is mysterious and seems to have a major origin, it is even possible that they are the main culprit of the Imperial Court case. I know them, but they don’t know about me, the enemy is in the open while I am in the dark right now. It won’t be appropriate if I directly buy Delight in Water and Mountain from him or her. Not to mention the chance of inadvertently alerting them, if they infer some clues and decide to not sell the Immortal Gu, that would be anything but good.”

Feng Jiu Ge kept on thinking.

He also had a strategic mind, he had both brains and brawn. If not for this, Spirit Affinity House would not entrust him with such an important task and send him as the leader of the group infiltrating Northern Plains.

“If I directly interfere and participate in the bidding, that would be inappropriate as well! I am under the identity of Swordmaster You Lan, but I have already bought Worldly Wave Trace, if I openly buy Delight in Water and Mountain again, in the case that the person in the tenth secret room knows of the secret of Water Pavilion, the possibility of exposing myself increases greatly.”

Feng Jiu Ge had secretly infiltrated into Northern Plains and also disguised his identity, even if he was very powerful, he would be fighting in foreign territory, so he had some misgivings.

“The most troublesome thing is even if someone outbids others in this auction, if the seller does not choose them, it would still be a failure. Even if I interfere and suppress others, there won’t be much significance.”

Moreover, there was another point as well, even if Feng Jiu Ge succeeded in the bidding and bought cauldron strength Immortal Gu, what would he use it for?

He did not want a strength path Immortal Gu, instead, he wanted to sell strength path Immortal Gu in exchange for other, more suitable Immortal Gu.

Feng Jiu Ge’s mouth dried, he took a sip of tea while having a regretful feeling in his heart: “If I was not alone and had someone to help me, it would be much simpler to deal with this problem.”

However, on one hand, his move, vaguely familiar face, was an immortal killer move and it could not be easily passed on to others. On the other hand, he also could not use the Gu Immortals at Prince Feng Xian’s side. The logic here was simple: If, by any chance, Feng Jiu Ge’s identity was exposed, Prince Feng Xian would not be greatly implicated.

Prince Feng Xian could proclaim he knew nothing of it, and keep on lurking undercover.

With these thoughts in mind, Feng Jiu Ge made the decision and quietly got in contact with Domination Immortal Chu Du.

The Gu Immortals in single rooms and the main hall could directly contact each other, unlike the secret rooms, where Chu Du could only contact Fang Yuan with Qin Bai Sheng as the middle man. As long as either party within a secret room did not want to make contact, there could be no way to send a message.

Chu Du felt strange as he received Swordmaster You Lan’s letter. He was fairly close to Yao Huang, but he had only met Prince Feng Xian once.

In the letter, Feng Jiu Ge said he was willing to fund Chu Du to help him win cauldron strength Immortal Gu. However, he made a request, saying that he hoped Chu Du could sell the immortal material, true heaven silver.

“It seems that there is some value for the injuries I had in the exploration of white heaven. I obtained three hundred kilograms of true heaven silver, which is extremely rare even in treasure yellow heaven! With Swordmaster You Lan’s help, I can still compete!” Chu Du naturally was somewhat doubtful of Feng Jiu Ge’s true intentions. But he was feeling urgency in obtaining cauldron strength Immortal Gu.

Chu Du immediately replied to Feng Jiu Ge, thanking the other party for the help and also stating that after this event, he would give detailed information on the exact location of true heaven silver.

With Feng Jiu Ge’s help, Chu Du gained confidence and made a bid again.

Changes occur in matters within the world, producing mysterious and interesting results. In Fang Yuan’s previous life, Chu Du died in battle and the killer had been Feng Jiu Ge. Now, because of Fang Yuan, these two people joined hands by a stroke of fate!

The collaboration between the two was mutually beneficial.

To Chu Du, he needed cauldron strength Immortal Gu, and Feng Jiu Ge’s help was opportune assistance.

To Feng Jiu Ge, the financial aid he provided Chu Du with would be returned to him in the future. He could pay a low price to obstruct Fang Yuan’s target.

The bidding price continued to increase higher and higher.

Chu Du seemed to have been revitalized, having increased confidence as he made bids with no hesitation.

Fang Yuan was surprised at this. After using up the immortal materials from Lang Ya blessed land, he had no choice but to start bidding with the immortal materials he had obtained earlier.

Feng Jiu Ge could not help but feel vexed.

These immortal materials had been his previously. He had not thought that after taking them out, they would be used against him so quickly.

However, Feng Jiu Ge had no choice but to continue, while also calculating the situation.

“It seems the situation of worldly wave trace Immortal Gu is going to be repeated!”

“Domination Immortal Chu Du seems to be bent on getting this strength Immortal Gu!”

“The tenth secret room has been requesting strength path Immortal Gu since the beginning, and is now competing with Chu Du, with neither side having the slightest intent to retreat. It seems there is going to be another surge in the auction.”

The Gu Immortals discussed with one another in the main hall.

Fang Yuan finally could not keep being seated, he left his seat and paced around in the secret room.

“Chu Du clearly had no hope and thus sent the letter, but how, in that case, did he get such a boost in his wealth? Could it be that he was pretending to be weak? Impossible! There would need to be a hole in his brain for him to use such a clumsy plan. That means, someone is helping him.”

Fang Yuan frowned, he had a hunch, but he could not precisely grasp it.

Who was this person helping Chu Du?

Why was this person helping him?

On the surface, it was a competition between two people, but Fang Yuan felt that there was someone meddling in the dark.

Fang Yuan tapped at his immortal zombie head, as he sat down on his seat again and started to use the wills in his mind to help him in thinking.

While he thought, he continued bidding.

After two more bids, he suddenly opened his eyes.

A sharp light flashed in his eyes, the thinking just now had given him some results, as he formed some conjectures.

“I must have this cauldron strength Immortal Gu!” Fang Yuan suddenly shouted, making an empty show of power, “Whatever the seller wants, speak, I will do my best to satisfy it.”

“The same goes for me, whatever the seller wants, please speak.” Chu Du was silent for a moment before he followed suit, showing no weakness.

The hall was in a commotion.

“The person in the tenth secret room is not simple, directly challenging Chu

Du.”

“Sure enough, it has started again, the second climactic moment of the auction.”

“The auction of Worldly Wave Trace was also like this. Now, let’s see what the seller wants.”

The seller did not think for long, immediately speaking of a new requirement — a wisdom path inheritance.

Chu Du gave a bitter smile when he heard this request, where would he find a wisdom path inheritance.

Wisdom path has been around for a long time, but it had always been passed down from generation to generation in a single line, and was extremely mysterious and rare. The seller saw the heated bidding war and got greedy, making such an excessive request.

Feng Jiu Ge also gave a bitter smile, he had many Immortal Gu with him, but the seller’s request of a wisdom path inheritance caused things to be awkward for him.

Wisdom path was rare, even among the ten great ancient sects, only a few wisdom path inheritances were possessed by them.

Fang Yuan had asked for a wisdom path inheritance in treasure yellow heaven for a high price, but this had not been fulfilled! Finally, when fortune arrived for him, he only received an incomplete inheritance, that was also because the other party had an urgent need for the ancient desolate beast corpse.

There were many wisdom path Gu worms, but wisdom path inheritances were rare.

For a while, Fang Yuan and Chu Du went silent.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 756: Fang Yuan vs Feng Jiu Ge

The seller was requesting for a wisdom path inheritance, this was really an excessive demand. Previously, in the immortal material list that Fang Yuan threw out earlier, at least Gu Immortals would more or less have something within it, but wisdom path inheritances were extremely rare.

Even if it was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, they would not sell their own inheritance, something that is of utmost importance to themselves.

Chu Du did not have a wisdom path inheritance, and neither did Feng Jiu Ge.

Fang Yuan only had an incomplete wisdom path inheritance, it was extremely incomplete, it could not meet the requirements.

He sat on the seat, licking his dry lips as he kept quiet, but his heart was growing with anticipation.

At once, be it the tenth secret room or Domination Immortal Chu Du, they did not speak, the hall fell into a peculiar silence.

Eventually, discussions arose in the hall again.

“Requesting for a wisdom path inheritance, this condition is too much.”

“A wisdom path Immortal Gu is good enough, they were still greedy for a wisdom path inheritance? Hehe.”

“This is simply being blinded by greed, such a condition, the tenth secret room and Domination Immortal are unable to satisfy it. The heated bidding earlier was ruined. This cauldron strength Immortal Gu might end up going unsold!”

“But this is nothing much, unsold Immortal Gu will be in the second round of the auction according to the sequence.”

This seller of the cauldron strength Immortal Gu also found something amiss, he was anxious and quickly added.

Qin Bai Sheng received his transmission and announced again: “The wisdom path inheritance does not need to be complete, an incomplete wisdom path inheritance is fine too. Of course, the more complete it is, the better it would be.”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, he had a rather incomplete wisdom path inheritance.

His bid came from within the tenth secret room: “I have an incomplete wisdom path inheritance.”

Chu Du heard Fang Yuan’s bid and his heart jumped, he did not even have an incomplete inheritance. But he still had hope in his heart, he placed his hopes on Swordmaster You Lan. In his perspective, Swordmaster You Lan was backed by Prince Feng Xian, they had incredible foundation and would likely have a wisdom path incomplete inheritance.

Feng Jiu Ge laughed bitterly.

Spirit Affinity House indeed had collected incomplete wisdom path inheritances. But he did not have any currently. He quickly used the hole earth Gu in his immortal aperture and communicated to the other nine Central Continent Gu Immortals.

The nine Central Continent Gu Immortals knew about Feng Jiu Ge’s actions. In truth, they were secretly lurking near crimson reed marsh, waiting to reinforce Feng Jiu Ge.

After receiving Feng Jiu Ge’s message, two of them had an incomplete inheritance. One was from Old Oracle, he came from Ancient Soul Sect and was a wisdom path Gu Immortal. The other was Chen Zhen Chi from Myriad Dragon Dock, he was a flying grandmaster and had once explored an inheritance ground, obtaining one by chance.

Feng Jiu Ge received their message and was overjoyed, quickly interacting with them.

Wisdom path inheritances, even if incomplete, were quite valuable. Old Oracle and Chen Zhen Chi were not from the same sect as Feng Jiu Ge, even if they were, they still had to properly balance the books.

In a moment, Feng Jiu Ge finished discussing with Chen Zhen Chi and paid some price to buy the incomplete wisdom path inheritance from him.

But after getting it, Feng Jiu Ge became hesitant.

He could naturally provide the incomplete wisdom path inheritance to Chu Du. But doing it in this way was too obvious.

He had lied to Chu Du earlier, saying that he wanted Chu Du’s immortal materials, the true heaven silver. But now, just for the true heaven silver, he was providing him the valuable incomplete wisdom path inheritance, this was like giving up gold for silver, it did not make sense.

Feng Jiu Ge could imagine, once he showed this inheritance, Chu Du would begin to suspect his true motives!

“Oh, if I had a companion that understood the situation alongside me, they would be able to bid now.” Feng Jiu Ge sighed again: “In this situation, there is an eighty percent chance that the seller would choose the tenth secret room! Unfortunately, in regards to the seller who is auctioning the Immortal Gu, I cannot contact them.”

Just as Feng Jiu Ge was about to risk Chu Du’s suspicions and take out the incomplete wisdom path inheritance, Chu Du spoke: “I do not have an inheritance, I’ll back out from this bid.”

Feng Jiu Ge was stunned.

The truth was, after waiting for a while, the tiny hope in Chu Du’s heart vanished.

He thought over it, his relationship with Swordmaster You Lan and Prince Feng Xian was not deep, the other party was only helping him because of the true heaven silver. Even if they had a wisdom path inheritance, why would they make such a huge sacrifice to help him? Just for that three hundred kilograms of true heaven silver?

It was evidently impossible.

Chu Du was a smart person, even though he was a lone cultivator, he needed his face. Fang Yuan had made his offer long ago, so many people were watching, Chu Du could not stall this by keeping silent.

Thus, he announced his intention to back out from the current bid.

Feng Jiu Ge’s expression sunk, when Chu Du announced that he was backing out, he understood the reason behind it.

At once, Fang Yuan’s victory was imminent, Feng Jiu Ge did not know what to say.

Should he blame Chu Du for being too smart, thus making deductions in advance? Feng Jiu Ge himself had hesitated, because he lacked a companion, his hands were tied and it was tough for him to manipulate anything.

“But, even if delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu is handed over, there is still hope. After the open auction, there is still the free transaction period.” Feng Jiu Ge consoled himself, his mental state quickly returned to normal. He had braved through many storms and difficulties in life that had improved him, they were on par with Fang Yuan’s. If not for them, he would not be the Feng Jiu Ge he was today.

Feng Jiu Ge was a type of person with much in common with Fang Yuan, they never gave up and would not mind temporary failure or loss, and they could lower their statuses if needed.

The result of the competition for cauldron strength Immortal Gu had become quite clear.

Domination Immortal Chu Du conceded while Fang Yuan provided an incomplete wisdom path inheritance.

But just as Qin Bai Sheng was about to announce the bid going to Fang Yuan, a third competitor appeared.

“Eleventh secret room is bidding as well, they are taking out a wisdom path Immortal Gu, an incomplete wisdom path inheritance, as well as immortal materials that are on par with those of tenth secret room!” Qin Bai Sheng suddenly announced.

This was an unexpected situation, the Gu Immortals in the main hall were very interested.

“Another mysterious Gu Immortal has entered the bidding competition.”

“Eleventh secret room... they are able to make such a high bid, the auction has invited some formidable characters indeed.”

“Since when were strength path Immortal Gu so popular, everyone is fighting for this?”

Qin Bai Sheng felt more confusion than the others, he knew that Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Fang Yuan arrived together, they should be allies. Why were they competing with each other now?

Not only him, even the bidder, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, was confused.

He had just received Fang Yuan’s transmission earlier, asking him to do this bid.

Since the seller could only choose one person to deal with, whether they chose Fang Yuan or Tai Bai Yun Sheng, they would only receive one of the bids. From start to finish, Fang Yuan did not violate the auction’s rules.

Fang Yuan sat in the tenth secret room, his finger was tapping on the armrest of his seat. His eyes were closed until only a slit remained, he continued bidding and competing with Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

After several rounds, Tai Bai Yun Sheng pieced random materials together, showing his limited finances.

Next, he purposely hesitated before bidding, displaying a changing mind.

After several more rounds of bidding, Tai Bai Yun Sheng obtained a notification from Qin Bai Sheng, after approving of it, he received a letter from another person.

This letter’s content was similar to the one written to Domination Immortal. Using one of the immortal materials that Tai Bai Yun Sheng had as an excuse, he saw that Tai Bai Yun Sheng could not afford to continue bidding and was willing to fund him in exchange for the immortal material.

“Junior brother, just as you had expected, someone is willing to fund me.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng reported this to Fang Yuan in secret.

“Oh?” Fang Yuan opened his eyes, straightening his back subconsciously: “Who?”

“Swordmaster You Lan.”

“Swordmaster You Lan?” Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with brilliance.

“Swordmaster You Lan... Prince Feng Xian...” He could not sit any longer, he started pacing around in the room.

Fang Yuan’s plan earlier was only to ascertain a guess in his mind. Now that he saw a result from his test, Fang Yuan was a little surprised.

“Domination Immortal Chu Du obtained funding, thus he could continue competing with me. This person is likely to be Swordmaster You Lan.”

“If it is her, then why did she fund Chu Du and Tai Bai Yun Sheng? It is definitely not for the immortal materials, but to prevent my delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu from falling into other people’s hands.”

“Delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu has no use in my hands, thus I am selling it. But if it falls into the hands of the seller of cauldron strength Immortal Gu, then he would not sell the delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu again because he wants to have it.”

“Swordmaster You Lan spent a huge sum earlier and used two strength path Immortal Gu to obtain worldly wave trace Gu. Now, she is trying all sorts of methods to prevent me from selling delight in water and mountain Gu, why is that?”

The answer had already been flickering in his mind, that was the rank seven Immortal Gu House — Water Pavilion.

Fang Yuan paced in the room as he thought about it.

After a while, he stopped in his tracks, raising his head.

The scene in the secret room was like a painting, but Fang Yuan’s gaze was like the abyss, it was as if it pierced through the layers of illusions and saw the Gu Immortals in the main hall, he saw Swordmaster You Lan who was in the single room, he even saw the region outside of Northern Plains, it was Central Continent!

Fang Yuan’s gaze was like ice, he laughed coldly in his heart: “Impressive, a great move! In my previous life, during the five regions chaotic war, a certain supreme elder of Spirit Affinity House managed to sway Prince Feng Xian’s heart and recruit him. Prince Feng Xian suddenly joined Spirit Affinity House, it caught people off guard, it almost killed Ma Hong Yun who had become a rank seven Gu Immortal, causing Northern Plains’ situation to become dramatically worse. Northern Plains sacrificed large numbers of Gu Immortals, countless territories were lost, and Spirit Affinity House was in the forefront, at number one among the ten great ancient sects. To think that Prince Feng Xian all along had been a tool of Spirit Affinity House.”

Feng Jiu Ge had used vaguely familiar face, Fang Yuan could not decipher the truth. The ten great ancient sects of Central Continent had ordered Feng Jiu Ge and the other Gu Immortals to enter Northern Plains, it was a top secret mission, several wisdom path Gu Immortals had worked together to eliminate all evidence of their actions. In accordance with Fang Yuan’s intelligence gathering methods, he naturally would not be able to find out anything.

Fang Yuan did not know these matters, but Feng Jiu Ge was using Fairy You Lan’s identity, it instead helped Fang Yuan figure out the important secret that Spirit Affinity House had been hiding!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 757: Resurrection From The Dead

“This Swordmaster You Lan has quite impressive methods, if Chu Du did not send me a letter earlier, I might not have found out the flaw. If I did not have my previous life’s memories, I would not have connected it either.” Fang Yuan sighed in his mind.

Feng Jiu Ge’s scheming ability was not inferior to Fang Yuan’s.

Thus, when he struck, it was like a natural process, there was no traces.

But in this contest of wits, Fang Yuan had come out marginally ahead.

Firstly, Chu Du was the cause of Feng Jiu Ge’s flaw.

Feng Jiu Ge did not know that Domination Immortal had sent a letter to Fang Yuan. If he knew, he would not have acted this way.

But Chu Du would not tell the other party for no reason. After all, this matter would cause a loss in reputation, at the same time, Chu Du had thought that Feng Jiu Ge really wanted his true heaven silver.

Feng Jiu Ge’s second weakness was that he did not have accomplices. He was also using a fake identity, he had a lot of worries and restrictions binding him. He was not like Fang Yuan, who had Tai Bai Yun Sheng assisting him, it could save a lot of trouble.

Feng Jiu Ge’s third misfortune was that his opponent, Fang Yuan was not normal, he was a reborn person. With his previous life’s memories, even if he did not know the truth, he could deduce some secrets based on the huge events that had happened.

Fang Yuan sat down and continued to think while bidding against Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

The situation had changed again.

Earlier, Fang Yuan was in the dark, but now he had a grasp of the situation, he found out Swordmaster You Lan’s motive.

Even though he did not know about the true identity of ‘Swordmaster You Lan’, Fang Yuan had the initiative now, Feng Jiu Ge did not know that Fang Yuan had seen through his motives, this was a great opportunity where the enemy was exposed while he was hidden.

Right now, Fang Yuan was pondering over an issue. Should he keep Delight in Water and Mountain, causing Spirit Affinity House’s plans to fail, or trade it for the cauldron strength Immortal Gu, or directly sell the delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu to Swordmaster You Lan?

Fang Yuan was open-minded, he was not against others gaining advantages. If he could satisfy Spirit Affinity House and gain a huge amount of benefits, Fang Yuan would do it.

But on the other hand, Fang Yuan did not want to give up cauldron strength

Immortal Gu.

Such a strength path defensive Immortal Gu was very rare, once he missed it, he might not find another again.

Just as Fang Yuan was hesitating, a voice came from a single room.

“A wisdom path Immortal Gu, kindness thought Gu, an incomplete wisdom path inheritance, and twice the immortal materials for this cauldron strength Immortal Gu.”

The entirety of the hall gasped.

The Gu Immortal who had entered the bidding competition was not a normal person, it was one of the five rank eight experts in Northern Plains, refinement path Gu Immortal Yao Huang!

“Yao Huang is bidding too?”

“He is a refinement path Gu Immortal, why does he have needs for strength path too?”

“Maybe this cauldron strength Immortal Gu involves some immense benefits that we do not know about.”

In a single room, next to Yao Huang, one of the current leaders of the Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, Yin Liu Gong, was seated.

Yin Liu Gong said: “Senior Yao Huang, are you really buying this cauldron strength Immortal Gu?”

Yao Huang chuckled: “Indeed, I want to refine an Immortal Gu, Resurrection From The Dead, there is an important stage where I need a formless vessel to act as the container during refinement. This vessel needs to be formless and ethereal, and cannot have any trace of the five elements, light or darkness. Thus, fire, ice, wood, metal, qi and other paths would not work. The best path for this is phantom path, followed by strength path, space path, and finally, rule path.”

Yin Liu Gong realized: “Phantom path Immortal Gu are extremely rare, they are like wisdom path inheritances. Phantom path Immortal Gu that can act as a formless vessel are even rarer. This cauldron strength Immortal Gu, even though it uses strength to create a cauldron, it does not have the five elements or light or darkness in it, it is formless and ethereal, but it can defend against attacks. It is really a top tier vessel for Gu refinement.”

Yao Huang nodded: “Nurture, use, refinement, they all depend on the person. Immortal Gu are a tool, their use varies from person to person. Little Liu, you should believe my sincerity now, right?”

Yin Liu Gong smiled bitterly.

Earlier, when Yao Huang invited him and pulled his hand when entering a single room, it showed that their relationship was close and many Gu Immortals were very envious.

But the outsiders did not know the details, Yao Huang had his own motives.

These recent years, Yao Huang had been conducting research on an entirely new Immortal Gu, it was called Resurrection From The Dead.

Like the name suggested, this Gu could allow a dead person to regain their life.

Yao Huang walked on the refinement path, he was also most skilled at refining healing Gu worms. Right now, resurrection from the dead Immortal Gu was a new innovation, it would consume a lot of his effort and wealth.

“In the past, I had been collaborating with your alliance, using immortal zombies as the test subjects to research on the law of life and death. These years, following my accumulations, I’ve made great gains. I have thirty percent confidence of refining the Immortal Gu, Resurrection From The Dead, successfully.” Yao Huang said with much pride.

“Thirty percent!” Yin Liu Gong showed admiration on his face, a thirty percent chance, this was extremely high for refining Immortal Gu.

“Once I refine the Immortal Gu, the biggest beneficiary is not me, but your Zombie Alliance instead.” Yao Huang made a bid as he said this to Yin Liu Gong.

Yin Liu Gong’s heart jumped: “Senior means?”

“That’s right.” Yao Huang admitted: “This Gu involves the law of life and death, turning from dead to alive, it is suitable for you immortal zombies to regain life, and get rid of your statuses as immortal zombies!”

“There is actually such an incredible use... as expected of Lord Yao Huang.” Yin Liu Gong was stunned, but he quickly concealed his shock: “But if Lord has this Immortal Gu, not only would the benefits be immense, you could also use it on yourself to extend your lifespan, correct?”

“Hahaha, Little Liu, you are so smart. Your thinking is right, lifespan Gu are hard to find, I do not have too much life remaining, I have to find other ways to extend my lifespan. How about it, collaborate with me.” Yao Huang smiled as he spoke, admitting openly.

Yin Liu Gong smiled bitterly: “Lord Yao Huang has seen that I was moved, but to collaborate with senior, junior will have to provide at least ten immortal zombies. Although I am one of the leaders of Zombie Alliance, there are still two others. Even the three of us together are only left to administer the Northern Plains Zombie Alliance branch. This matter is very important, I need to inform Leader Blazing Heaven.”

“Ten immortal zombies are the least required. To refine resurrection from the dead Immortal Gu, I will need something that can interact with the life and death dao marks, that is why immortal zombies are the most optimal Gu refinement material. I know that in Earth Trench, your Zombie Alliance has a graveyard. Past generations of immortal zombies are all buried there.” Yao Huang frowned.

Yin Liu Gong rapidly waved his hands: “Lord Yao Huang, that is not possible. The dead should rest in peace, because we in Zombie Alliance are in this physical state, we place great importance on that. If I dig up their corpses, I will attract the rage of the entirety of Zombie Alliance, Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s reputation would be ruined. After all, if we make use of even our own members’ bodies, who would join such a callous organization? I have two immortal zombie bodies in my possession, they are traitors of Zombie Alliance. But even so, I used my killer move, stone casket, to seal them up and place them as defenses for the discussion hall’s doors, they will not be mobilized under normal circumstances!”

“Hmph, you immortal zombies are so stubborn. If I can refine resurrection from the dead Immortal Gu, it will greatly benefit all of you as well.” Yao Huang showed an unhappy expression, he exerted pressure on Yin Liu Gong.

Precisely because Zombie Alliance was stubborn regarding this, Yao Huang had once disguised himself and attempted to enter Zombie Alliance in order to steal some immortal zombie bodies.

Unfortunately, his plans were ruined by the door of the discussion hall.

Yin Liu Gong was enduring the huge pressure but he did not dare to relent on this matter, he thought over his words and said: “How about this, senior, this matter is too serious, I cannot make the decision alone. In fact, even us three leaders cannot decide this ourselves. We need to inform Leader Blazing Heaven, she will decide! In a few months, I will definitely give you a reply.”

Yao Huang was unhappy: “You three leaders are really loyal to Blazing Heaven.”

Yin Liu Gong felt as if cold sweat was pouring from him, listening to Yao Huang’s words, it seemed like he had talked to the other two leaders as well?

Meanwhile, he said to Yao Huang: “To speak of loyalty, I am ashamed. Honestly speaking, we immortal zombies agree with Zombie Alliance’s rules. After all, most Gu Immortals ostracize us immortal zombies, they look down on us. Zombie Alliance is our home.”

Yao Huang snorted coldly, he made an offer in the auction again, directing his unhappiness towards the auction itself.

“I’ll back out.” In the tenth secret room, Fang Yuan spoke.

Soon after, Tai Bai Yun Sheng in the eleventh secret room also said: “I would not dare to compete with senior Yao Huang, I admit defeat.”

Yao Huang was after cauldron strength Immortal Gu, this was not his only goal, he also wanted to show Yin Liu Gong his resolution.

To obtain cauldron strength Immortal Gu, he exposed a portion of his own wisdom path inheritance, and even took out an Immortal Gu to bid.

The transaction was quickly completed.

Yao Huang held the cauldron strength Immortal Gu in his hand and sighed: “This is still rank six, it seems I will need to spend some effort to get it to rank seven. That will increase the chances of success when I refine resurrection from the dead Immortal Gu.

Yin Liu Gong’s heart jumped, he knew that these words were for him. After entering the single room, Yao Huang had been urging him and showing his resolution

This was the will of a rank eight great expert!

If he did not settle this properly, he might attract the rage of Yao Huang, the attack of a rank eight great expert would cause an all out war between Yao tribe and Zombie Alliance!

The Gu Immortals did not expect that this cauldron strength Immortal Gu’s auction would end up with Yao Huang as the winner.

Fang Yuan backed out when he understood the tough situation, Feng Jiu Ge sighed in relief secretly.

This situation was good for Feng Jiu Ge’s benefits as well.

If Fang Yuan succeeded and the seller obtained delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, Feng Jiu Ge would have much greater difficulty in obtaining it.

The seller wanted the wisdom path Immortal Gu, they would not sell it, and most importantly, Feng Jiu Ge could not find the seller! From start to finish, this person did not expose their location or identity, they had been asking Qin Bai Sheng to represent him.

With this, one could deduce that the seller was likely a bottom tier Gu Immortal and had weak strength, otherwise, they would not act so timidly and carefully.

Cauldron strength Immortal Gu's auction ended, everyone's attention was drawn to the next Immortal Gu.

"This is the third luck path Immortal Gu." A Gu Immortal said.

The mysterious luck path Immortal Gu were very famous outside. Because of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Northern Plains' Gu Immortals had a unique attachment to luck path Immortal Gu.

The second luck path Immortal Gu was called Peach Blossom Luck, it was sold at a high price. The luck path Immortal Gu currently up was called Good Luck. It was a storage Immortal Gu that could gather and store all of the ownerless good luck that dissipated from heaven and earth.

The seller wanted a fire path Immortal Gu.

The Gu Immortals fought over it, eventually reaching a deal at a high price.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 758: Eat Strength

The following auction was like it had been set up in advance, several luck path Immortal Gu showed up consecutively.

Leave luck Gu which could rapidly expend luck, seal luck Gu which could seal luck, transfer luck Gu which could transfer luck, as well as the break luck Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan was after!

Unfortunately, the sellers of all these Immortal Gu had their own desires, they requested for metal, wood, water, fire, earth and other Immortal Gu of mainstream paths. This was a weak point of Fang Yuan, if he could not fulfill this basic requirement, he could not even join in the bidding.

Fang Yuan had suffered at the hands of luck path previously, but he had also obtained great benefits from luck path. He wanted to observe the situation and see if he could obtain a few luck path Immortal Gu, but now it seemed that he had no chance at all.

The most regrettable thing was that he missed break luck Immortal Gu by a hair's breadth.

Fang Yuan had already obtained connect luck Immortal Gu, it could work in conjunction with break luck Immortal Gu. But unfortunately, his opportunity to obtain it went by unsuccessfully.

This auction was not set up specifically for him, Fang Yuan had gains, and naturally missed opportunities as well.

“The next Immortal Gu is a rank seven luck path Immortal Gu, it is called Calamity Beckoning...” It was finally time for calamity beckoning Immortal Gu to be auctioned, Qin Bai Sheng spoke slowly as he introduced it.

Rank seven Immortal Gu were quite rare. Most of the Immortal Gu in the auction were rank six Immortal Gu.

Although it was a difference of just one rank, there was a great disparity in value. This was because the chance of raising a rank six Immortal Gu to rank seven was very low, and the cost of refinement was very high.

As for rank eight Immortal Gu, they did not appear in this auction.

The Gu Immortals in the hall heard that it was a rank seven Immortal Gu and showed some interest, they looked over with gazes of anticipation.

But after learning about calamity beckoning Immortal Gu’s use, they all shook their heads.

Calamity beckoning Immortal Gu’s use was to help others by harming oneself, helping another person undergo tribulation, and attract the calamity or tribulation to oneself.

Giving up oneself to save others, this was not impossible, but often benefits and exchanges were involved.

Calamity beckoning Immortal Gu did not have zero demand, some large forces needed it to help their own members. Furthermore, some Gu Immortals were moved, they could use this Gu to help others and earn some profits from it.

But Fang Yuan wanted a rank seven strength path Immortal Gu, in the entirety of the auction hall, nobody made an offer.

Fang Yuan saw that the situation was not going well, he quickly informed Qin Bai Sheng that they could also use rank seven time path Immortal Gu to trade for it, but there were no responses.

“It really is calamity beckoning Immortal Gu, I wonder if this Immortal Gu came from the Gu Immortal in the tenth secret room?” Feng Jiu Ge thought over it before communicating with Qin Bai Sheng, requesting to talk to the owner of calamity beckoning Immortal Gu.

“Fairy You Lan, you finally lost your patience...” Fang Yuan snorted, he rejected this request unhesitatingly.

Eventually, because nobody bid for it, calamity beckoning Immortal Gu was not sold.

Fang Yuan was mentally prepared for this result. After all, he was asking for a rank seven Immortal Gu,and he wanted a strength path Immortal Gu at that, there were few of such Immortal Gu. Most importantly, compared to other Immortal Gu, calamity beckoning Immortal Gu was not as attractive, thus nobody bid for it.

Fang Yuan’s calamity beckoning Immortal Gu was not the only Immortal Gu that went unsold.

At the start, there was the conceal luck Immortal Gu that went unsold, after that, several other Gu suffered the same fate.

There was still a chance left for these unsold Immortal Gu.

After the auction, there was still an event, the open transaction.

During the open transaction, they could still sell these Immortal Gu.

As time continued to pass, more and more Immortal Gu were showcased and bought. The anticipation of the Gu Immortals also accumulated gradually.

There were few Immortal Gu left on the list, they soon would all be presented. The most important item in the auction was about to be showcased, it was the essence of the luck path true inheritance that Qin Bai Sheng obtained!

“The following Immortal Gu is called delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, it is of wisdom path and rank six. The seller is requesting for a rank six strength path Immortal Gu, it would be best if it is a defensive Immortal Gu.” Qin Bai Sheng announced.

When there were only a few Immortal Gu left, it was finally time for Fang Yuan’s delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu to be auctioned.

This time, he still asked for strength path Immortal Gu.

He did not say a word about the immortal zombie body or the method to regain new life. In fact, he did not even mention the white lotus giant silkworm Gu.

Once these two matters were mentioned, combined with the strength path Immortal Gu, the clues would be too obvious.

Fang Yuan had Fixed Immortal Travel, this was known by everyone.

Even if Fang Yuan did not know about the relationship between Prince Feng Xian and Spirit Affinity House, he would not be brainless enough to make such a request.

Rank six delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu in exchange for a rank six strength path Immortal Gu, the requirement for this auction was much lower than calamity beckoning Immortal Gu previously.

Once Qin Bai Sheng spoke, several Gu Immortals started bidding.

Strength path was declining, but wisdom path was mysterious and unfailingly stable over the ages. In the eyes of many Gu Immortals, a rank six wisdom path Immortal Gu was much more attractive than a rank six strength path Immortal Gu.

At once, regarding the delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, the auction hall’s atmosphere became incredibly heated.

Fang Yuan carefully listened to the bids as he remained unmoved, he was waiting for Swordmaster You Lan to bid.

Before long, ‘Swordmaster You Lan’ indeed entered the bid: “I have an eat strength Immortal Gu with me. This Gu is not only of strength path, but also of food path, it is a strength path cultivation type Immortal Gu, one may consume beast meat or vegetation related to strength path, in order to allow strength path dao marks to grow naturally on the Gu Immortal’s body, they would fully fit with one’s own body.”

Once he said that, almost all of the Gu Immortals’ attentions were drawn over.

“This is a good Immortal Gu.”

“For a strength path Gu Immortal, this is really hard to come by!”

“Food path has long since vanished, its condition is worse than strength path.

At least strength path had flourished once before, but food path did not, it has almost completely disappeared now. All that I've heard of it is that it is very useful for nurturing Gu."

Hearing the discussions of the Gu Immortals in the main hall, Feng Jiu Ge smiled lightly.

This Immortal Gu did not come from the ten great sects of Central Continent, Feng Jiu Ge had requested it from Prince Feng Xian not long ago because he knew that Fang Yuan would make such a requirement.

Although he had many Immortal Gu, regarding strength path, he only had Pulling Mountain and Pulling Water.

Meanwhile, Prince Feng Xian happened to have this.

It turned out that after Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed, a formless hand flew out and landed near Prince Feng Xian's grotto-heaven. After Prince Feng Xian broke the formless hand personally, he captured the eat strength Immortal Gu.

This Gu was very useful to strength path Gu Immortals, but to Prince Feng Xian, it had little use. After receiving Feng Jiu Ge's letter regarding requesting assistance, as people from the same sect, Prince Feng Xian used his method to secretly send this Immortal Gu into Feng Jiu Ge's blessed land.

"Fairy You Lan, I wonder if you can sell this Gu to me? I am willing to use another strength path Immortal Gu to exchange for it, I will provide valuable immortal materials as well, and I will not interfere with you in the bid for delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu." Soon, Chu Du sent a message.

"Domination Immortal was moved, but that is natural. However, how can the Gu that he wants to exchange with it be more attractive than eat strength Gu, even if they are both of strength path?" Feng Jiu Ge replied, rejecting Chu Du's request.

He smiled more confidently now, since the tenth secret room's mysterious Gu Immortal wanted a strength path Immortal Gu, he was likely to be a strength path Gu Immortal. Even if he was not, the allure of eat strength Immortal Gu would definitely be very high to this person.

Everything went as Feng Jiu Ge had expected, after Fang Yuan heard the description for eat strength Immortal Gu, he was surprised and overjoyed.

This eat strength Immortal Gu was too suitable for him!

Regarding a Gu Immortal's cultivation, it mainly involved undergoing tribulations in their immortal aperture. With each successful tribulation, the Gu Immortal's body would have an increase in dao marks of their own path.

The more dao marks on a Gu Immortal's body, the closer they would be to heaven and earth, and the closer to the laws of the Great Dao. The stronger the tribulation, the more dao marks would be etched on them after completing it.

Thus, when assessing a Gu Immortal's cultivation level, they would usually use standards like one heavenly tribulation, or two heavenly tribulations.

The more numerous their dao marks, the greater resonance they could cause when using the corresponding Immortal Gu, and the greater effect that Immortal Gu could unleash.

When Fang Yuan used worldly wave trace Immortal Gu, the strength path dao marks on his body were unrelated to Worldly Wave Trace’s water path dao marks, there even was conflict. Thus, the result was not great, he could only use about sixty to seventy percent of its power.

But if Fang Yuan used a strength path Immortal Gu like Pulling Mountain or Pulling Water, his own body and the Immortal Gu would resonate, not only would he be able to amplify the effect of the Immortal Gu, he could even unleash a hundred and thirty percent of its power! Furthermore, the more they resonated, the more Fang Yuan would be able to comprehend the laws of strength path personally when he used the Immortal Gu. The more his understanding grew, the more his strength path attainment will deepen, and his foundation would accumulate gradually. One day, he would achieve a qualitative breakthrough.

But despite that!

Fang Yuan’s greatest problem was that he was an immortal zombie, his immortal aperture was dead. Every once in a while, a portion of his blessed land would disintegrate, but he would also face no tribulations.

The way of heaven was to be balanced and fair, calamities and tribulations would only be unleashed on small worlds that had blessings. The greater the fortune, the stronger the calamities and tribulations.

Immortal zombies did not need to face tribulations, that was a good thing. After all, with a dead aperture, if they had to undergo calamities and tribulations as well, there was no way to survive.

But to Fang Yuan, without any calamities and tribulations, he would not have any growth of dao marks, and his cultivation level would stagnate.

“Of course, to increase my dao marks, I can use Immortal Gu like iron crown eagle strength Gu to form dao marks on my body. But such beast strength Immortal Gu are not suited for the human body, and the number of dao marks is very sparse, there is little effect. The dao marks generated by two or three beast strength Immortal Gu are less than the amount gained from undergoing one earthly calamity.”

Fang Yuan had the experience of using beast strength Gu worms.

Beast strength did not suit the human body, they were not easy to use. Beast phantoms could only be unleashed sometimes, but not always.

Like the iron crown eagle strength Gu, it could carve a portion of the iron crown eagle’s strength path dao marks onto his body. But these dao marks did not suit Fang Yuan’s physical body, because the structure of the human body was different from an eagle.

When the dao marks of the iron crown eagle resonated with Fang Yuan, only then would he be able to unleash the strength of an iron crown eagle, along with summoning an iron crown eagle strength path phantom.

Unless he had all-out effort Immortal Gu.

All-out effort’s true effect was to allow complete resonance of the strength path dao marks carved on a person’s body.

But Fang Yuan’s all-out effort Gu was only rank four. Although it was a vital Gu, he had no idea how to refine it into an Immortal Gu. The Immortal Gu recipe of all-out effort Gu had been lost over the course of the long river of time.

In this regard, Fang Yuan’s greatest hope was Lang Ya land spirit. There were several thousand Immortal Gu recipes in Lang Ya blessed land, there was hope that one of them was the Immortal Gu recipe of all-out effort Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 759: Successful Extortion

But at the moment, Fang Yuan and Lang Ya land spirit's relationship had not deepened to the point of trading Immortal Gu recipes between them. Even when it came to mortal Gu recipes, Lang Ya land spirit treasured them greatly and refused to sell them.

When it was related to matters involving the refinement of Gu, Lang Ya land spirit was always very stingy. Earlier, Fang Yuan was willing to pay a high price to buy his hairy men. However, these hairy man slaves were involved with the refinement of Gu, Lang Ya land spirit treated them like treasures and would not sell them, not to mention Gu recipes.

But if Fang Yuan obtained eat strength Immortal Gu, the situation would improve drastically for him.

Eat strength Immortal Gu could allow a Gu Immortal to grow strength path dao marks. Because of that, the dao marks that they gained would definitely be perfectly suited for their own body. Fang Yuan's cultivation level had stagnated, he could certainly rely on this Immortal Gu to make some form of compensation in that regard.

Fang Yuan was moved now.

One could say that as long as one was a strength path Gu Immortal, they would definitely be moved when they saw the eat strength Immortal Gu!

“With this strength path Immortal Gu, I am not afraid that the other party will remain unmoved.” Feng Jiu Ge sat down calmly, feeling very confident in his heart.

Once this Gu appeared, almost all of the bids of the competitors for the Immortal Gu seemed much inferior. As long as one was not an idiot, they would be able to see the benefits of eat strength Immortal Gu.

“If I did not find out the flaw, I might have traded for this Gu already. What a pity for you...” Fang Yuan was laughing coldly to himself internally.

At this time, from the twenty-third secret room, someone reported a price: “One iron crown eagle strength Immortal Gu, as well as fifteen drops of the immortal material rule eye blood.”

Hearing this voice, Fang Yuan's smile became wider.

Earlier, he had used rising azure cloud Immortal Gu to exchange for an iron crown eagle strength Immortal Gu. But during that process, he did not expose his identity. He had confirmed the buyer through informing Qin Bai Sheng.

Thus, other than Qin Bai Sheng himself, none of the other Gu Immortals present knew who the iron crown eagle strength Immortal Gu ended up with.

Qin Bai Sheng had signed an agreement, he would naturally not leak any information on this.

Thus, Fang Yuan could use it to bid freely.

As for the person inside the twenty-third secret room, it was none other than Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

In order to obtain delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, Feng Jiu Ge had made many preparations earlier, asking Prince Feng Xian for help. How could Fang Yuan not make some prior arrangements himself?

He had already asked Qin Bai Sheng and secretly changed Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s room to another secret room.

Even though Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not expose his or Fang Yuan’s identity when he was in the eleventh secret room, it was undoubtedly much safer for him to change his room now.

After Tai Bai Yun Sheng made the bid, Fang Yuan did not make any response for a long time.

As time passed slowly, Feng Jiu Ge started to inwardly frown. Domination Immortal Chu Du had also started bidding. He offered another beast strength Immortal Gu, while also adding some immortal material in the bid.

Chu Du did not want delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, but he had a use for it. He was a strength path Gu Immortal, the reason why he was giving up a strength path Immortal Gu was because he wanted the eat strength Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan chuckled lightly, he immediately understood Chu Du’s intentions.

It was Chu Du’s own fault for exposing his identity, it forced him into a passive situation.

Regarding Chu Du’s sudden interference, Fang Yuan was happy to see such a situation, he remained silent as he allowed the auction to continue proceeding.

Under his request, Tai Bai Yun Sheng continued to raise his bid again.

Feng Jiu Ge frowned even more deeply, he had no choice but to start raising his bid as well.

The moment he spoke, Tai Bai Yun Sheng would follow up and make a bid, his attitude was imposing, as if he definitely had to obtain this Immortal Gu no matter what.

Feng Jiu Ge could not help but become suspicious: Was this eat strength Gu too unattractive to the person inside the tenth secret room? Or was he just trying to be greedy and was waiting for the bid to rise?

Feng Jiu Ge did not fall into the trap easily, he was the shining exemplar of a generation after all, he decided to pause now. That way, he could analyze the situation more clearly from the outside, he would also be able to probe Fang Yuan’s true intentions.

Swordmaster You Lan stopped bidding, it was as if she did not want to lose eat strength Immortal Gu, thus she had backed out of the competition.

Such a situation quickly attracted the attention of all the Gu Immortals.

The happiest one was obviously Chu Du, he sent a message again and urged Feng Jiu Ge to sell the eat strength Immortal Gu to him.

Feng Jiu Ge laughed lightly, rejecting him once again.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan instructed Tai Bai Yun Sheng to continue raising his bid.

As the price increased steadily, it became very expensive, most of the Gu Immortals started backing out of this, they were stating that this price was too high.

Eventually, only Chu Du and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were left bidding.

Chu Du was currently having a tough time. His real motive was to obtain eat strength Immortal Gu, but Feng Jiu Ge refused to sell it to him, it seemed like he still wanted to bid for the delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu.

Chu Du did not dare to be complacent, he quickly followed along with the bidding. On one hand, he wanted to prevent the eat strength Immortal Gu from falling into someone else’s possession, and on the other hand, if he obtained delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, he would have a huge chance of using it to trade Gu with Swordmaster You Lan.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s intentions were very simple and pure. He just did whatever his junior brother asked him to do. Even if he won the delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, that was fine! After all, whatever price he paid would still return to his own pockets.

Feng Jiu Ge’s strategy was also very simple. That was to sit this out for now and reap the spoils later, by the time the competition was almost over, he would jump in and raise the price by a huge margin, winning all at once.

These three people, because of their own goals and intentions, created a stalemate by pure chance.

As the situation continued to stall, after a few more rounds, someone among the Gu Immortals in the main hall came to a sudden realization, he shouted subconsciously: “Why is this delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu so popular now? There are so many immortal materials listed, the bid has reached such a high price!”

The others quickly became aware of this fact as well.

“That’s right, it is so high now.”

“A wisdom path Immortal Gu that can only produce joyful will is actually reaching such a high price, this is a rare sight.”

“In my opinion, the only reason why this is reaching such a high price is due to the involvement of Lord Chu Du. He is willing to give up a strength path Immortal Gu in order to obtain Delight in Water and Mountain, I am sure he has his motives.”

Chu Du, who had just been mentioned, was not in a good state currently.

His face was full of worries, his financial power right now was truly lacking.

“Sigh, if I had known this, I would have stalled my tribulation.” The intense pressure coming from Tai Bai Yun Sheng made Chu Du feel very uncomfortable.

“Since when did I, the great Domination Immortal, get into such a pathetic state?” Chu Du had incredible battle strength, but in this huge auction, battle strength was not the key, it was one’s financial power.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng got instructions from Fang Yuan and continued to raise his bid.

Chu Du gritted his teeth and hung on.

After severals rounds like this, delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu's price continued to rise under the eyes of all the Gu Immortals present.

Qin Bai Sheng had been observing quietly, by this point, he could not help but praise inwardly: "This Sha Huang is really a brilliant person despite being an immortal zombie, he is not simple! But Chu Du's financial limits are already clear now, he is hesitating when bidding. If it were me, I would take the opportunity and sell it now."

Qin Bai Sheng knew: Although Fang Yuan's plan seemed simple, executing it was no easy feat. Having to plan matters out while simultaneously executing them, it required a lot of foresight and the ability to read people's minds. If he went overboard even a little, his profits would vanish like a puff of smoke.

However, it seemed like Fang Yuan did not know what 'going overboard' meant, he continued getting Tai Bai Yun Sheng to raise the bid, acting imposingly.

Chu Du was finally unable to continue, his forehead was full of sweat.

His gaze pierced into the single room, looking at the direction of the twenty-third secret room, he was thinking about the person inside, he probably had a special need for delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, otherwise he would not bid at such a high price with an attitude of an unrelenting, fierce tiger.

"So be it." Chu Du sighed deeply, keeping quiet as he stopped bidding.

At this point, only Tai Bai Yun Sheng was left.

But even so, Tai Bai Yun Sheng continued to report a bid, raising the price by another margin.

Meanwhile, Swordmaster You Lan did not make a single sound, it was as if she had already backed out of the current bid.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, transmitting his decision to Qin Bai Sheng.

Qin Bai Sheng heard this news and was first stunned, why was he selling it to his ally? But he quickly understood that perhaps Sha Huang and Bai Sheng were not as intimate as they appeared to be.

He thought about this and his mind cleared up. But deep down, he still felt that there was something weird going on.

Qin Bai Sheng shook his head mentally, he was on the stage and had no time to waste, he announced: "Twenty-third secret room, going once."

After pausing for a short while, he continued: "Twenty-third secret room, going twice."

The Gu Immortals in the main hall talked to themselves softly.

"It seems that the victor of this round is the twenty-third secret room."

"That's right, they seem to have great interest in Delight in Water and Mountain, even after Domination Immortal backed out, he still continued to raise the bid alone, his motive was to pull some distance and prevent the seller from having any intentions to sell the Immortal Gu at the last moment to Domination Immortal."

"This price is truly very high, many of the immortal materials are making me drool. To think that towards the end of the auction, there is still such a high price being sold, this can squeeze into the top ten most expensive auction rounds.”

The situation was now set, Fang Yuan started to get nervous.

He squinted his eyes as his heart wavered slightly: “Maybe... my analysis earlier was wrong?”

“Twenty-third secret room, going thri...” Qin Bai Sheng shouted until here, before someone interrupted him.

Feng Jiu Ge spoke: “Eat strength Immortal Gu, and on top of what the twenty-third secret room is bidding, I will add in another four hundred kilograms of red refinement metal!”

Four hundred kilograms of red refinement metal, this elevated the price again. This was a huge bid that exceeded what Tai Bai Yun Sheng had done earlier in his individual bids.

Everyone gasped sharply, they did not think that at the last moment, there would be such a huge change.

Qin Bai Sheng was also stunned for a while.

Chu Du’s expression turned pale, but he soon sighed to himself gloomily.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Great, Swordmaster You Lan, you were truly very patient!”

From the twenty-third secret room, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s voice could be heard, he sounded like he was extremely annoyed at his plan being thwarted, he continued to bid in an angry tone.

Feng Jiu Ge laughed bitterly to himself, after observing for so long, he had already believed that the person inside the twenty-third secret room was serious about bidding.

“My luck this time was truly horrible. The two Immortal Gu that I wanted to buy were both met with tough competitors. The most important thing was, these two competitors were very affluent and wealthy.”

“No, the auction did not disallow the exchanging of secret rooms. There is also another possibility, that the secret rooms all belong to one person. Maybe he knows about the matter of Water Pavilion? After all, Mo Yao did leave behind an inheritance... or maybe, it is the other nine sects of Central Continent that do not want to see my Spirit Affinity House regain...”

Feng Jiu Ge was a very intelligent person, but intelligent people tended to overthink matters.

“Regardless of the situation, for the sake of Water Pavilion, I need to obtain this delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu no matter what!” Feng Jiu Ge quickly made up his mind, bidding again.

He and Tai Bai Yun Sheng bid back and forth, both refusing to relent.

Under the shocked gazes of the Gu Immortals, delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu’s price continued to soar higher. It soon went into the top five prices.

Soon after, it climbed to the second spot at an alarming rate.

The highest price was naturally Feng Jiu Ge’s two for one exchange to buy Fang Yuan’s worldly wave trace Immortal Gu.

“Don’t tell me I have to do a two for one exchange again?” Feng Jiu Ge’s expression was cold and solemn, he finally experienced what Chu Du was feeling earlier, this was an overbearing pressure that was exerted on him constantly.

No matter what price he bid, the person in the twenty-third secret room would immediately bid at a higher price.

Feng Jiu Ge could not sit anymore, he started to pace around in his secret room.

If a two for one exchange would guarantee him victory, he would do it even if he had to grit his teeth. But he felt something amiss deep within himself, yet he could not state clearly where the problem was.

“If I do a two for one exchange again, someone who is paying attention might find out my true motive. That will be a huge hindrance when I try to find water harmony Gu in the future.”

Feng Jiu Ge’s target was Water Pavilion, but only two of the three core Immortal Gu appeared in the auction. He naturally wanted to obtain water harmony Gu as well.

The weird feeling in Feng Jiu Ge’s heart was making him feel a hint of unrest as well.

He sat back in his seat, deciding to go on the offensive. He shouted his bid again, this time, he requested for the seller to state what he needed, and he would try to fulfill those demands.

Fang Yuan purposely paused for a moment, to give a false impression that he was in deep thought.

Next, he gave Qin Bai Sheng a new requirement: a complete wisdom path inheritance.

Everyone gasped loudly, this price was too high, to think that this person had the guts to say it!

Feng Jiu Ge was dumbfounded, he indeed had a wisdom path inheritance, but it was incomplete. The seller was acting like this, were they trying to prevent the Immortal Gu from being sold?

Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly shouted: “I have an incomplete wisdom path inheritance in my hands.”

Feng Jiu Ge rapidly followed up: “An incomplete wisdom path inheritance, I have that too.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng snorted coldly, he continued: “May the seller list another request, please!”

The Gu Immortal looked around at each other, did they hear wrongly, the price was still going to increase further?!

Qin Bai Sheng was silent for a moment before replying for Fang Yuan: “The seller is requesting a killer move that can disguise one’s identity, the one which is superior will win.”

Feng Jiu Ge’s heart tightened, the seller said that, they were obviously putting more emphasis on the disguising killer move.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly said: “I have a complete killer move, although it is a mortal killer move, it originated from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, it is called unfamiliar face!”

Unfamiliar face? Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable!

The main hall went into a huge commotion.

Feng Jiu Ge’s forehead was sweating, his arms were tightly grabbing the handle of his seat as his gaze shined anxiously, he hesitated for a moment before shouting as well: “I have a killer move, it is an incomplete immortal move, originating from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, called vaguely familiar face!”

Everyone cried out in shock.

Fang Yuan stood up from his seat excitedly, his eyes shining with brilliance: “It seems that the rumors in my previous life were not baseless, Spirit Affinity House does indeed have the immortal killer move vaguely familiar face!”

Spirit Affinity House had many good things, but most of their signature collection could not be extorted. Once he did, the other party would understand matters at once. Furthermore, this killer move was the most useful one to Fang Yuan himself.

Even in his previous life, Spirit Affinity House had the killer move vaguely familiar face, but they did not spread any information about it. During the five regions chaotic war, when spies were abundant, they entered enemy territories and obtained many gains.

After many times, Gu Immortals among both enemies and allied parties continued to analyze, and confirmed that this was the killer move, vaguely familiar face.

But Spirit Affinity House refused to admit it.

After all, as one of the ten great ancient sects, a leader of the righteous path, using a Demon Venerable’s killer move was damaging to their reputation.

What Fang Yuan did not know was, this immortal killer move belonged to Feng Jiu Ge. In his previous life, Feng Jiu Ge had contributed this killer move to his sect, thus, the rumors from his previous life were started.

Fang Yuan did not know this fact, and he did not guess that the person bidding was Feng Jiu Ge. But that did not stop him from extorting this killer move.

Of course, Feng Jiu Ge would not hand over the entire complete immortal killer move to Fang Yuan.

But an incomplete immortal killer move was already much better than the mortal killer move unfamiliar face.

Fang Yuan confirmed it on the spot, selling delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu to Swordmaster You Lan!

In this way, not only would he receive a huge amount of immortal materials, filling up half of his list, he even obtained eat strength Immortal Gu, an incomplete wisdom path inheritance, as well as the incomplete immortal killer move vaguely familiar face.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 760: Essence of the Luck Path True Inheritance

Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge quickly connected and completed the transaction, Qin Bai Sheng had already started the auction of the next Immortal Gu.

Feng Jiu Ge was expressionless as he looked at the delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu in his hands, his gaze flickering slightly.

The strange feeling he had was still lingering around.

“After repeated twists and turns, I finally obtained this Immortal Gu. Even if I had to spend quite a lot, but considering the rewards for the sect’s missions, they should be enough to cover for it and even more.”

Eat strength Immortal Gu might be precious, but it only has use to strength path Gu Immortals.

“Even though I had to sacrifice vaguely familiar face, it was only a portion of it. Even if I had to give the complete version, the core Immortal Gu are still with me, so I don’t have to fear the other side using it.”

Feng Jiu Ge thought it over for a while, his expression gradually easing up.

In the main hall, many Gu Immortals were bidding for the Immortal Gu. While Fang Yuan, similar to Feng Jiu Ge, did not have his attention on the platform, but on the goods he obtained.

Feng Jiu Ge had let go of eat strength Immortal Gu of his own accord, thus Fang Yuan was able to easily refine it and store it into his immortal aperture.

This incomplete wisdom path inheritance was slightly more intact than Fang Yuan’s malicious thought inheritance. It had the Gu recipes from rank one to rank five of memory thought Gu, and an Immortal Gu recipe for reminiscence Immortal Gu, as well as several mortal killer moves.

“This memory thought Gu is rather suitable for me. I can only recall my previous life’s memories roughly, with the help of this Gu, I should be able to recall more clearly. If I can refine the reminiscence Immortal Gu, it would be even better.”

Fang Yuan checked them and stored this wisdom path inheritance with satisfaction.

For the time being, he was not planning to try and refine Immortal Gu. There were extremely large costs involved in refining Immortal Gu and the risks were also very high, moreover, Fang Yuan already had many Immortal Gu with him, reminiscence Immortal Gu was not necessary and would only be an additional bonus.

The most urgent matter at hand for Fang Yuan was to get rid of the immortal zombie body and restore his living status.

Even though he obtained eat strength Immortal Gu, which could increase dao marks, it was only a slight offset and could not compare to passing tribulations.

Undergoing tribulation was dangerous but the increase in dao marks from doing so were extremely high. Were it not for this, Hei Lou Lan would not risk her life to pass tribulations.

Fang Yuan carefully inspected vaguely familiar face.

This was an incomplete immortal killer move, his initial estimation was that this was only fifty percent complete.

However, Fang Yuan was already satisfied.

He knew the other party would not take out the complete immortal killer move and sell it wholly to him. Obtaining this much was already good enough.

Especially since the contents within did not conceal the crucial core Immortal Gu.

“The core Immortal Gu are the foundation of the killer move. They are in Spirit Affinity House’s possession, although I can’t obtain it, I can remodel the killer move.”

Fang Yuan’s intention was this.

He had attainment in transformation path, and wisdom Gu’s help along with the foundation of vaguely familiar face — the entirety of unfamiliar face.

With the addition of fifty percent of vaguely familiar face’s contents, he had high confidence.

“The three stages of familiar face are famous methods of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, but I can take references from them. We are all humans in the end, if others can do it, why can’t I? So there is no need to copy other’s thoughts directly.” Fang Yuan was optimistic about this.

After a while, Qin Bai Sheng had already auctioned the final few Immortal Gu. Among them, the second last Immortal Gu unfortunately went unsold.

The anticipation of the Gu Immortals were already pouring out of their gazes.

Everyone was aware the next would be the main highlight of the auction — auctioning the essence of the luck path true inheritance!

After secretly getting in contact with Qin Bai Sheng, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng changed their secret rooms.

Not only them, many Gu Immortals also did the same.

After all, the essence of the luck path true inheritance had enormous value, many Gu Immortals hoped others would not know what Immortal Gu they obtained.

Truthfully, the Gu Immortals were allowed to casually change their secret rooms, and it could be said to be one of the loopholes of the auction rules.

This auction was held in a hurry because of the situation, the loopholes were numerous, nowhere near as watertight as during the time of the five regions chaotic war in Fang Yuan’s previous life.

Regarding this point, Qin Bai Sheng was actually aware of it, but he was helpless.

He held this auction to protect himself. If he put in too many rules, he would be offending many forces and many people.

To him, holding the auction was enough. He naturally would not go offend others for this.

“Now it is time for the auction of the first item of the essence of the luck path true inheritance, it is a set of Gu recipes for luck inspection Gu.” Qin Bai Sheng had just spoken and already attracted the intense attention of many Gu Immortals.

“Luck inspection Gu!”

As the name implied, it was an investigative Gu worm that could detect luck.

Luck was formless and could not be detected by naked eyes or ordinary methods. It could only be done by using this luck inspection Gu.

It could be said that luck inspection Gu was one of the main foundations of the luck path true inheritance.

This luck inspection Gu was even more useful to those Gu Immortals who had bought some luck path Immortal Gu beforehand, like leave luck Gu, seal luck Gu, transfer luck Gu, break luck Gu and so on.

Qin Bai Sheng intentionally placed this set of Gu recipes for luck inspection Gu towards the end because he had thought it through.

Looking at the restless Gu Immortals, Qin Bai Sheng continued: “This set of luck inspection Gu recipes does not only include the Gu recipes of the mortal Gu from rank one to rank five, it also has a remnant Immortal Gu recipe for rank seven luck inspection Immortal Gu.”

“Hmm, is there not any luck inspection Immortal Gu?” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu asked.

Qin Bai Sheng smiled: “There is indeed a luck inspection Immortal Gu which is rank six and is with me, but I don’t want to sell it. But I can guarantee that apart from this Immortal Gu, everything related to luck inspection Gu is being auctioned off.”

Because of the previous agreement, Qin Bai Sheng’s words were convincing.

“Not selling luck inspection Immortal Gu?” Immediately, a Gu Immortal in the main hall frowned and showed his dissatisfaction openly.

Qin Bai Sheng snorted as he gave the speaker a deadly stare: “This is merely a rank six luck inspection Immortal Gu, I am confident of having the ability to protect it. Guo Rong, do you have an opinion? If you buy this Immortal Gu, can you keep it safe?”

Gu Immortal Guo Rong’s expression changed, and he kept quiet.

He was only a rank six Gu Immortal while Qin Bai Sheng was a rank seven expert, the two could not be mentioned to be at the same level.

Guo Rong looked around, and broke into cold sweat, inwardly cursing his mistake! He wanted to borrow everyone’s power to force Qin Bai Sheng. But the other Gu Immortals were just observing like spectators.

Qin Bai Sheng was indeed forced into holding the auction, but he still had the ability to keep a rank six luck inspection Immortal Gu safe.

His strength allowed him to do so.

After this small interlude, Qin Bai Sheng listed the requirements for trade: “Because this does not involve Immortal Gu, you can use any resource to trade for it. Be it immortal essence stones or the immortal materials in the list.”

Saying so, he took out a list.

There were a dozen or so immortal materials mentioned on the list, and the requirements for their quantities was not high like the shocking list that Fang Yuan brought out earlier.

Qin Bai Sheng did not specialize in Gu refinement, Gu refinement consumed extremely large amounts of resources, very few lone cultivators would go down this path, unless they had extremely high talent.

Fang Yuan guessed that these immortal materials were very likely to be food for Immortal Gu.

The auction began with an extremely intense atmosphere.

Because it did not involve Immortal Gu, the threshold for the bidding was low and for a while, most of the Gu Immortals made bids one after the other.

In the main hall, the sounds of the bids being called out rose and fell, the speed of the bids being called out could be said to be at the peak since the auction began.

The price quickly soared in the intense atmosphere.

Qin Bai Sheng looked at all this with a smile on his face. Since he held this auction, he naturally made arrangements that were more profitable to himself.

Fang Yuan also made bids a few times but was quickly surpassed by others.

“I have one luck inspection Gu, unfortunately, mortal Gu are not effective against Immortals. This set of mortal Gu recipes has no benefits to me. Qin Bai Sheng has admitted he has the luck inspection Immortal Gu. So, even if I obtain the rank seven remnant recipe and perfect it, Immortal Gu are unique, I won’t be able to refine the rank seven luck inspection Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan sensibly chose to stop bidding.

He was merely one of those who retreated.

The intense bidding soon eliminated a large group of people.

Finally, only some experts like Yao Huang, the Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortal, Feng Jiu Ge and Yuan Rang Zun were left.

These people all had a common point — they were all members of large forces.

To them, mortal luck inspection Gu were much more attractive than the rank seven remnant recipe.

Mortal luck inspection Gu could be used to observe the luck of mortals. With them, these forces would have a completely new standard of detecting talents.

For a long time, the Gu Master world had used aptitude as the standard for inspection.

Besides the aptitude, there were also individual talents, disposition and fortuitous encounters.

Talents consisted of battle talent, comprehension, refinement talent and so on, it would gradually be revealed as one continued to cultivate.

Disposition could be observed through interaction.

Only fortuitous encounters were hard to measure. Many times, Gu Masters with poor aptitude and talents would soar to the sky, or have an unexpected rise due to fortuitous encounters. This was a common event. Especially in this world, where Gu Masters left behind their inheritances.

If these forces had this Gu, there was no doubt they could make a more comprehensive inspection of talents and raise more geniuses.

The individual lone cultivators retreated from the bidding war. But to large forces, the luck inspection Gu had extremely strong attraction, and each of them made fierce bids without conceding.

Finally, this mortal Gu recipe had reached a high price, and leaders of several forces were almost going to exchange with Immortal Gu.

It was then that Yao Huang said: “I will guarantee on my name, if I purchase it first, I will put this Gu recipe for sale in the open transaction later.”

Yao Huang was one of the five great rank eights of Northern Plains with extremely high reputation. He was also a leader of the righteous path, and with his assurance, everyone retreated. Qin Bai Sheng felt very dissatisfied with this, but showed a smile on the surface, not daring to offend Yao Huang.

“Next, is the second item. A rank seven Immortal Gu of luck path called Reverse Misfortune! As the name implies, this Gu can change a person’s bad luck to good luck!” Qin Bai Sheng introduced loudly.

This Immortal Gu was similar to Calamity Beckoning Gu. Both were of luck path and both were rank seven, but comparing the responses, they were as distinct as heaven and earth.

Many rank seven Gu Immortals as well as rank eight great experts made their bids.

This Immortal Gu was extremely practical and there was no need to use luck inspection Gu with it. It was indeed worthy of being an essence of the luck path true inheritance.

A fierce competition resulted for Reverse Misfortune, the intense competition was no inferior to a bloodbath in a battlefield.

Because the starting bid for Reverse Misfortune was a metal path rank seven Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan could only watch from the sidelines.

Finally, the price kept on soaring till it surpassed the high price records of Worldly Wave Trace and Delight in Water and Mountain, and took the first position.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 761: Auctioning Ma and Zhao

The intense bidding had finally ended.

In the end, the rank eight Gu Immortal, Five Elements Grandmaster, used a rank seven metal path and a rank six metal path Immortal Gu, along with countless immortal materials to become the eventual winner.

Five Elements Grandmaster’s cultivation included the five paths of metal, wood, water, fire, earth. Thus, he had some metal path Immortal Gu as well.

But this time, he was discarding a portion of his prized collection, it was like he was throwing away a meat filled bun for a less tasty plain bread.

Fang Yuan found it regrettable, but he had no way to compete in the bidding. Even if he had Gu Immortal captives, in terms of value, they could not compare to this extremely unique Immortal Gu.

In fact, reverse misfortune Immortal Gu was very suitable with Spring Autumn Cicada.

The weakness of Spring Autumn Cicada was that it gave the user bad luck. But after using this Immortal Gu, not only could this weakness be solved, the user’s luck could even be improved, turning into good luck.

Undeniably, the effect of reverse misfortune Immortal Gu was much more convenient than connect luck Immortal Gu.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan’s financial power was at a completely disadvantage compared to people like Five Elements Grandmaster and Yao Huang.

Fang Yuan had only been an immortal for such a short time, from the point he obtained Hu Immortal blessed land, only two years had passed according to the time of the five regions. Looking at Southern Border, the great battles at Yi Tian mountain had not even begun yet!

Honestly speaking, Fang Yuan was able to become an immortal zombie in such a short time, developing himself to this point was already very difficult.

As for Five Elements Grandmaster, Yao Huang, and Feng Jiu Ge, they had already accumulated their wealth for countless years. They had hundreds of thousands of immortal essence stones, in addition to precious immortal materials. The amount of resources their immortal aperture worlds created each year could pile up into a mountain! The resources that they provided could even heavily affect the market in treasure yellow heaven.

These were all powerhouses, be it their battle strength, financial power, connections, or status, Fang Yuan could not compare with them at this moment.

After Reverse Misfortune, it was another rank seven Immortal Gu, called Blessing in Disguise.

This Gu’s ability was quite mystical, it targeted the immortal aperture’s calamities and tribulations.

After a Gu Immortal undergoes tribulation, the dao marks on their bodies would increase in numbers, causing their cultivation level to progress. This was common knowledge in Gu Immortal cultivation.

Blessing in disguise Immortal Gu targeted this point. After using it, when a Gu Immortal completes a tribulation, the increase in the number of dao marks on them would be twice that of the original amount!

This was a terrifying number.

The reward of one tribulation would be equal to the amount normal people get from two tribulations.

But this Gu had a flaw, it had to be activated before the calamities and tribulations. It could only stop after the calamities and tribulations had ended. Through the effect of this Gu, the calamities and tribulations would have a thirty to forty percent increase in strength, based on their original power.

This weakness dampened the enthusiasm in the Gu Immortals slightly. But they could still not resist the temptation.

Up to forty percent more power in the tribulation in exchange for twice the amount of dao marks, the benefit outweighed the cost.

For those experts confident in surviving a tribulation, this Immortal Gu had much greater attraction to them.

A terrifying auction thus unfolded.

As a metal path Gu Immortal, Qin Bai Sheng naturally requested for a rank seven metal path Immortal Gu as the base bid.

Eventually, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had sweat on his forehead as he defeated his competitors, obtaining this Gu.

The following auction items caused surges in turn.

Fortuitous encounter Immortal Gu that could allow opportunities to arrive for the Gu Immortal themselves.

Immortal Gu from the five mainstream paths, metal, wood, water, fire, and earth, that were helpful to Gu Immortals.

An Immortal Gu that operated in both luck path and wisdom path — luck deduction Immortal Gu, it could consume one’s own luck to make deductions on dangers or opportunities in the future.

Luck suppression Immortal Gu that could suppress the loss of one’s own luck from other Immortal Gu.

These Immortal Gu were indeed the essence of the luck path true inheritance, not only were they incredible, they had useful effects that broadened everyone’s horizons.

But these Gu fell into the hands of Yao Huang, Feng Jiu Ge, and the other powerhouses.

This was an expected situation.

Fang Yuan wanted to interfere, but he did not have any metal path Immortal Gu.

This was a helpless matter.

The other rank six Gu Immortals and most rank seven Gu Immortals were like Fang Yuan, only able to watch these powerhouses compete for Immortal Gu.

The prices of the auction items created new records, Fang Yuan’s records from the two Immortal Gu he sold were already pushed out of the top ten.

“The next item is the final, and most important item in this auction.” Qin Bai Sheng introduced it as such.

His way of speaking immediately attracted the attention of the Gu Immortals.

Just as everyone was guessing to themselves what Immortal Gu it was, Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun, who were unconscious, appeared on the stage.

Qin Bai Sheng spoke at an appropriate time: “Please do not be alarmed, I am sure a lot of Gu Immortals have guessed it already. That is right, these two are the crucial people who were protected by the luck path true inheritance previously. This girl is called Zhao Lian Yun, she was very intelligent since a young age, and had experienced the crucial battle in Imperial Court blessed land. Although she was not the true inheritor, she had obtained a lot of benefits inside the luck path true inheritance light lump, she had obtained a portion of the luck path inheritance. As for this young man, he is Ma Hong Yun, the one and only recognized inheritor of the luck path true inheritance! Not only did he experience the battle in Imperial Court blessed land, he even has had the fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu used on him.”

Once he said that, the commotion was like a huge wave.

Countless heated gazes were tightly fixed on Ma Hong Yun.

“Did I hear wrongly? It is really fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu?”

“Fortune Rivalling Heaven! This is the trump card Gu of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. Although it was not recorded in history, there were many rumors that praised this Immortal Gu endlessly!”

“But this fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu seems to be a consumable Gu, it can only be used once.”

“Since it is the rank eight Fortune Rivalling Heaven, could brother Qin use the rank six luck inspection Immortal Gu to check it?” In the main hall, a Gu Immortal suddenly questioned.

Qin Bai Sheng smiled as he replied: “According to the information that I obtained in the true inheritance, unless it is the rank eight luck inspection Immortal Gu, one cannot see the true appearance of Fortune Rivalling Heaven. Luck inspection Immortal Gu below rank eight can only see a portion of it. And that is only because the other party did not use any concealment method. Honestly speaking, I have already used the rank six luck inspection Immortal Gu to find out some traces of Fortune Rivalling Heaven. As for why I am so certain that Fortune Rivalling Heaven was used on Ma Hong Yun, that is because I have searched their souls.”

“If you buy one of them and conduct soul searching, you will be able to see what happened inside Imperial Court blessed land. By then, you will know that my words are true. At the same time, these two inherited a huge portion of the luck path true inheritance. During the process of soul searching, you will be able to learn what they had learned in the inheritance.”

Saying this, Qin Bai Sheng paused and said in an enticing tone: “I have bad news to share with everyone first. The luck path true inheritance is undoubtedly incomplete, the details do not contain the Immortal Gu recipe of fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu. But there is good news, in the inheritance details, there is a method to take back Fortune Rivalling Heaven. It is possible to reverse refine the used fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu and obtain the original Immortal Gu. Of course, during the process of refinement, the main material would be this young man, Ma Hong Yun.”

Hearing these words, most of the Gu Immortals had eyes shining like they were going to burst out in fire, some even gulped, as everyone was filled with anticipation and desire!

Qin Bai Sheng’s lips curled, he showed a confident smile: “I feel that these two youngsters can best represent the essence of the luck path true inheritance. I will not be setting a base price for them, because they are not Immortal Gu. You can bid for one of them, or both of them at the same time. We will start now!”

“No base price? I will offer three hundred immortal essence stones!” One person shouted within the hall of enthusiastic Gu Immortals.

“Thirty thousand immortal essence stones.” Feng Jiu Ge said coldly, multiplying the bid by a hundred times!

But this price could not stop the enthusiasm of the other experts, it could only deny most of the bottom tier Gu Immortals.

Yao Huang, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, Five Elements Grandmaster, Old Ancestor Xue Hu, and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, they were still bidding, and the representatives of the super forces were not showing weakness either.

The price skyrocketed at an extremely fast pace!

Fang Yuan sighed to himself.

His financial power was like an ant compared to these giants. Unless he put all of his Gu Immortal captives on the line, he could not contest with them.

But Fang Yuan would not do this.

He was already on the strength path, and was planning to go into time path, he was not going to develop his luck path attainment. And he was also the main culprit of the Imperial Court blessed land incident, he had experienced more of that series of events than Ma and Zhao, he knew most of the inner details.

Regarding the information of the luck path true inheritance as well as the reverse refinement of fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, they were very tempting indeed.

But fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu was rank eight, Fang Yuan was only rank six, how could he refine it? His finances would definitely be unable to support it. Furthermore, even if he succeeded, he did not have the ability to keep it.

The bidding of Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun lasted for much of the hour.

Eventually, two unthinkable prices stood at the top two spots, at the record highest prices in this auction.

The second spot was Feng Jiu Ge, he had bought Zhao Lian Yun.

The one who obtained Ma Hong Yun was the rank eight great expert Old Ancestor Xue Hu. The leader of Snowy Mountain blessed land, the number one person in the demonic path, had shown his incredible wealth at the end of the auction.

Before this, he had always concealed himself, barely buying anything. Towards the end, he dealt a heavy blow and swept his enemies away.

Many Gu Immortals, especially the representatives from the super forces who had the Huang Jin bloodline, had no choice but to watch as Ma Hong Yun fell into the hands of the demonic path.

Yao Huang sighed, he had bought many things already and expended a large amount of wealth, at the final moment, he lost to Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

“But thankfully, Zhao Lian Yun is still in the hands of our Northern Plains’ righteous path.” The Gu Immortals that had the Huang Jin bloodline consoled themselves.

What they did not know was, Swordmaster You Lan, who was representing Prince Feng Xian, was an imposter called Feng Jiu Ge.

Speaking of which, this was really ironic.

During his life, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had kept the luck path true inheritance as a deep secret, setting up layers of protection and thinking of passing the complete version down to his descendants. In the end, the luck path true inheritance became incomplete and was split up by everyone, circulating into the entire world. The most important inheritors were even held in the hands of people who were not part of the Huang Jin bloodline.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 762: Red Fiend Divine Boat

“The main auction has ended. Next, there will be a two hour break for everyone to move around in the auction hall. Two hours later, we will have the open transaction.”

After Qin Bai Sheng said that, he left the stage.

He was tired, as the host the entire time, especially when he auctioned the essence of the luck path true inheritance, because his own benefits were at stake, he made many schemes during the process.

Even though there were many traces and most of the Gu Immortals present could tell, the profits were too immense, Qin Bai Sheng could not care less.

“After this auction is over, I will escape and hide from the world. After managing and processing my gains for most of a century, I will roam the world after that.” Qin Bai Sheng decided in his head.

He was the biggest winner of this auction. The immortal materials he obtained could pile into a mountain, he also obtained many metal path Immortal Gu that were compatible with him.

The saying goes: Humans die for wealth and birds die for food. Profits could move the human heart, even if Gu Immortals ordinarily appeared to be unconcerned with worldly matters, that was only because mortal materials cannot satisfy their desires.

Auctioning the essence of the luck path true inheritance was extremely profitable, it was greatly heated. Even the rank seven expert, Qin Bai Sheng, had felt uneasy.

In the main hall, discussions soon commenced. Many Gu Immortals came out of the single rooms and mixed into the group, engaging in conversations together.

Qin Bai Sheng left a two hour break for everyone, he had his own intentions.

It was not really a time to rest, but it was for the Gu Immortals to communicate with each other and interact.

From the auction earlier, everyone had gained a certain level of understanding towards each other’s resources. Now, to exchange for the things they wanted, they would naturally need to interact first.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng sat in the secret rooms and did not move.

Unfamiliar face was a mortal killer move, it had limited effect and the two had to be careful, they could not expose themselves.

Fang Yuan felt some regret that he was unable to obtain anything in the luck path true inheritance. Especially Ma and Zhao, the people who knew the truth of the Imperial Court incident, Fang Yuan wanted to deal with them. But he did not have enough strength, he could only watch and could not interfere, there was nothing he could do.

Thankfully, he had not sold the Gu Immortal captives in his hands yet, there was the open trading later, he could still look forward to that.

Two hours later, Qin Bai Sheng stepped onto the stage again, announcing the start of the open transactions.

For the sake of fairness, he did the same thing again, using Gu worms to choose a lucky person to enter the stage first.

This first Gu Immortal took out a large amount of an immortal material, broken wave flowers, his request was — prosperity soil.

Broken wave flowers grew in large rivers, they were magical flowers born during the moments where waves appeared and vanished. Because they had a short lifespan, they were hard to gather.

As for prosperity soil, diamond soil, green fist soil... these soils were highly sought after items by Gu Immortals.

Gu Immortals develop their immortal apertures, they use the resources produced in their immortal apertures to cultivate, the fertility of their soil played a huge role in this. Prosperity soil could grow all sorts of flowers, diamond soil could grow minerals, while green fist soil could accumulate and gather the fertility to prevent it from vanishing, it was suited for immortal apertures with terrain resembling barren lands, like deserts.

Gu Immortals who owned prosperity soil were not few. Immediately, they started speaking, asking how much was needed for the trade.

The seller on the stage actually had large numbers of broken wave flowers. After trading for one thousand and five hundred kilograms of prosperity soil, he waved his hand and left the stage.

The difference between the auction and the open transaction was very obvious.

The auction was for valuable items, they had a huge prerequisite for bidders. The open transaction often involved scattered trades, the entry level was low.

But this was not universal.

After several Gu Immortals, a Gu Immortal who did not want to expose themselves showed an Immortal Gu and asked Qin Bai Sheng to sell it for them.

This Immortal Gu was one that did not get sold earlier, the seller had lowered their requirements greatly.

But even so, the request was still an Immortal Gu. There were a few people who responded, they wanted the price to be lower. The seller refused and eventually, the trade failed and this Immortal Gu returned to the seller’s hands.

When it was Fang Yuan’s turn, more than thirty rounds had passed.

“The thirty-seventh secret room is selling a Gu Immortal captive.” Qin Bai Sheng said as he displayed the sleeping Gu Immortal inside the sleeping cloud coffin.

Immediately, the auction hall went into a commotion.

The slave trade industry was well known by every immortal. But to sell Gu Immortals like they were slaves, this was an extremely rare event! For many Gu Immortals, this was the first time they had seen it.

At once, Gu Immortals discussed as their expressions varied.

When Qin Bai Sheng announced it again, the scattered conversations in the hall became softer.

Someone asked for the details.

Qin Bai Sheng introduced: “This Gu Immortal captive might be familiar to some of you, he is Loner Hong Yu, a rank six fire path Gu Immortal. His cultivation is at one heavenly tribulation. This is the situation inside his blessed land, you can all take a look.”

Saying so, the image on the stage changed, reflecting the situation of Loner Hong Yu’s immortal aperture.

“This blessed land is a little barren.”

“Yes, managing his blessed land so poorly, no wonder he was captured alive.”

“Don’t forget, the Gu Immortal who captured him must have already looted his blessed land already.”

“To us fire path Gu Immortals, isn’t it better if this Loner Hong Yu’s cultivation is lower?”

The Gu Immortals were moved.

Fire path Gu Immortals had great demand for Loner Hong Yu’s immortal aperture. Once they swallowed his blessed land, they could skip one heavenly tribulation, many earthly calamities, and gain cultivation levels out of nowhere, the foundation of their blessed land would surge by a huge amount!

Even if one was not a fire path Gu Immortal, most of the Gu Immortals also wanted the blessed land.

Even if their paths were different and they could not swallow the blessed land, they could still occupy this owner-less blessed land after killing him, and obtain a good territory to manage.

If they managed it well, the blessed land would be like a source of treasures, producing resources endlessly, sustaining the Gu Immortal’s cultivation needs.

Just as Qin Bai Sheng had expected, Loner Hong Yu became a sought after commodity.

Fang Yuan listed a broad range of requests. First, he listed a large amount of immortal materials, next was killer moves from strength path, poison path, time path and wisdom path. Next was all sorts of Gu recipes, the rarer they were the better. After that, he asked for desolate beast corpses, food path inheritances or clues for them, wisdom path inheritances or clues, time path inheritances or clues. Finally, he asked for battle bone wheel Gu, the recipes for white bone chariot, lifespan Gu and others.

Eventually, Loner Hong Yu went into Five Elements Grandmaster’s hands.

Five Elements Grandmaster cultivated metal, wood, water, fire, earth, all five paths, Loner Hong Yu’s immortal aperture was useful to him.

After selling Loner Hong Yu, the next person was up.

According to the rules of the open transaction, each Gu Immortal could only sell one thing in each round.

This was for fairness.

Fang Yuan was not anxious, he patiently waited. After some rounds, he had sold more than half of his Gu Immortal captives. Not only did he finish Lang Ya land spirit’s checklist, he even had extra. Not only this, Fang Yuan also obtained the corpse of a desolate beast bat.

During this period of time, he noticed that he was not the only one selling Gu Immortal captives.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu sold them openly. The Eastern Sea Gu Immortal sold three immortal zombie bodies, causing the displeasure of Yin Liu Gong and Dragon Commander Ye Cha. But in the end, Yao Huang joyfully bought these three immortal zombie bodies.

After seeing this, Fang Yuan relaxed a bit.

Lang Ya land spirit was not the only one capable of capturing Gu Immortals. No matter how excellent you are, there is always someone more excellent than you, there were more capable people among other Gu Immortals.

During this period of time, Fang Yuan had changed his room continuously, obscuring his traces and preventing others from finding out that he was the person who was selling most of the Gu Immortal captives.

Gradually, more and more Gu Immortals stopped trading, they chose to watch on the sidelines.

They had basically accomplished their respective goals.

The remaining Gu Immortals, even though they were few in number, the goods they were selling were getting more precious and valuable.

By the ninth round, Gu Immortals were starting to leave. Just as Fang Yuan thought that the last of his Gu Immortal captives would be sold routinely, Qin Bai Sheng’s expression changed, as he received a major request from a lone cultivator.

He raised his voice as he said: “Next, we will be selling the complete Gu recipe of the Immortal Gu House, Red Fiend Divine Boat, as well as the method to use it. The seller is requesting for anything that can assist them in cultivating wood path.”

“What? Red Fiend Divine Boat?!”

“They are selling this Immortal Gu House?”

“Why are they selling it now? The auction is nearing its end!”

“Haha, the people who left earlier must be dying of regret.”

In two single rooms, Yin Liu Gong and Dragon Commander Ye Cha had very ugly expressions.

Zombie Alliance was trying to eliminate the Gu Immortal who was selling the Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe, but this lone cultivator was very good at hiding, they could not find a chance to strike. At the auction, Zombie Alliance could not make a move on him, they could only urge him and offer a high price.

But this lone cultivator was swayed by the atmosphere of the auction, he became greedy and demanded even higher prices, extorting and threatening Zombie Alliance.

Finally, just earlier, their discussions had ended in failure, with the lone cultivator immediately putting up the Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe for sale.

“I will pay six thousand immortal essence stones and one thousand five hundred kilograms of red refinement metal to buy it all!”

“Immortal farmer soil! I have four thousand kilograms of immortal farmer soil, I will use it all to exchange for the Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe.”

“You bunch of fools, didn’t you hear brother Qin’s words? The seller wants wood path resources, I have jade fallen grass here!”

“So what if it is jade fallen grass, I have instinct roots!!”

At once, everyone’s moods were riled up, as the representatives of the super forces and the rank eight great experts joined in.

The two leaders of Zombie Alliance were furious, but they had to join in the competition.

At once, the calm open transaction had turned into a battlefield, like they were back in the auction rounds. The allure of the Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe was obvious from this.

“I am willing to pay with a wood path Immortal Gu, in exchange for the Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe.” Soon, the representative of a super force, Meng tribe, shouted.

“My Yuan tribe also has a wood path Immortal Gu, we will also add in three hundred true martial carps!” Yuan Rang Zun shouted, the Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe was too alluring, he even used his precious true martial carps as part of the bid.

“If you let my Zombie Alliance purchase this, I, Yin Liu Gong, will vow this on my reputation, I will definitely resell this recipe.” Yin Liu Gong said coldly.

“I, Yao Huang, can attest for that.” Soon after, Yao Huang spoke, adding weight to these words.

“Hmph, I have a wisdom path Immortal Gu, Unravel Mystery, it can deduce all traces of any inheritance. I will add in three vats of lingzhi liquid!” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu shouted.

At once, shouting could be heard everywhere, it was a chaotic scene.

Fang Yuan’s heart was moved, his eyes burst with brilliant light!

If he did not hear wrongly, that was the unravel mystery Immortal Gu, correct?!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 763: Three Parties Mutually Win

“Unravel mystery Immortal Gu... unravel mystery Immortal Gu...” Fang Yuan muttered, his finger was tapping on the handle of his seat as it made soft noises.

Bidding could be heard all over the auction hall. At the end of the auction, such a huge treasure like the Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe appeared, this was an unexpected surprise.

Ordinary lone cultivators did not need to consider it, only the rank seven Gu Immortals in super forces or rank eight great experts could have any chance in competing for it.

Especially the super forces, the allure of the Immortal Gu House was extremely great for the super forces.

The price rose at an absurd speed, climbing rapidly. Even though this was the open transaction, everyone was fighting for the good, they subconsciously returned to the auction format that was used previously.

Qin Bai Sheng laughed bitterly.

The regulations were set by him, but seeing these experts screaming their lungs out, he chose to watch on the sidelines. At this point, talking about regulations would just offend all of these powerhouses.

“Do you see, this is the attraction of the Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe, your Zombie Alliance was simply too stingy!” The seller acted arrogantly upon seeing this, sending a message to the two leaders of Zombie Alliance.

Dragon Commander Ye Cha’s face darkened.

Yin Liu Gong was sighing helplessly, looking at this price, it was already higher than what the Zombie Alliance was planning to pay. And this was not the end, the price was still climbing.

Yin Liu Gong was a sensible person, he knew that at this point, the Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe could not belong to Zombie Alliance. When leader returns, who knew would she criticize him, for being so incapable in handling this matter.

As Fang Yuan listened to the bids, he assessed quietly in his mind.

“I have four Gu Immortal captives left. One of them is Wu Hao, known as Rushing Thunder Hand, he is the only rank seven captive I have. There are three others, they are the three Hua Hai immortals, they cultivate wood path.”

Evidently, there was little chance of success if he wanted to use these four Gu Immortal captives to trade for Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s unravel mystery Immortal Gu.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was an enslavement path Gu Immortal, with a different path, the allure of these four Gu Immortal captives was greatly lowered.

The other point was, Immortal Gu were unique, and unravel mystery Immortal Gu was very useful, if not for the attraction of the Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu would not have exposed such a good Gu.

“If I try to trade it directly, it would not work. The strength path Immortal Gu that I just obtained have no use to Heavenly Lord Bai Zu. If I use calamity beckoning Immortal Gu, I will be exchanging a rank seven for a rank six, that exchange would be at a loss. As for Fixed Immortal Travel and Connect Luck, they are indispensable to me, I cannot trade them away.”

But Fang Yuan did not want to give up on unravel mystery Immortal Gu.

If he missed this chance, if he missed this situation, even if he had the resources in the future, it would be hard to trade for it.

Unravel mystery Immortal Gu was not a necessity to Fang Yuan. But in his memories, he had to way to use this Gu as the core, in combination with other rare supplementary Gu worms, he could conjure a dream path killer move!

A dream path immortal killer move!

At this time, the prophecy of the three venerables had spread throughout the five regions, because of Great Dream Immortal Venerable, almost all of the super forces and rank eight powerhouses were researching dream path.

Although their research results were shallow, dream realms were already starting to manifest.

There were already two dream path Immortal Gu he knew of in this life.

One was in Feng Jin Huang’s hands, the other was in Lady Poison Scorpion’s possession. To speak of it, the latter was more problematic. Feng Jin Huang was still a mortal lass, but Lady Poison Scorpion was in her blessed land, slumbering as she explored a dream realm.

Everyone knew that dream path was the trend of the future. Thus, they treasured anything relating to this path greatly, many dream path mortal Gu that they refined were not shown to the world, they were the greatest mysteries of each force.

Those who were able to become Gu Immortals were dragons among men, they had good foresight and were very shrewd individuals.

Even in an auction of such scale, there had been no dream path related treasures sold.

Fang Yuan knew about the Gu recipes of many dream path mortal Gu. But mortal Gu were not helpful towards the exploration of dream realms. Otherwise, the major forces would have started exploring dream realms en masse already.

The truly useful ones were dream path Immortal Gu.

But the amazing thing was, be it the two that appeared now, or the dream path Immortal Gu that appeared in the future according to Fang Yuan’s memories, they were all in the hands of women.

Perhaps this was explained by the Prophecy of Three Venerables, stating two male Venerables and one female Venerable. With this, one could deduce that Great Dream Immortal Venerable would be a female Immortal Venerable.

Within a short time, Fang Yuan would not be able to obtain a dream path Immortal Gu. But if he had a dream path immortal killer move, then that could substitute for the effect of a dream path Immortal Gu!

Gu are the essence of heaven and earth, man is the spirit of all living beings.

One could say — the use of Gu depended on the user. There was no strongest Gu worm, only a strongest Gu Master. Genius Gu Masters could often match different Gu worms together, unleashing a greater effect from that.

For example, Fang Yuan did not have a strength path Immortal Gu previously, but he used the soul path cleanse soul Immortal Gu, combined with other mortal Gu, to form the immortal killer move myriad self, creating a starting point of the path formed from the convergence of enslavement and strength.

This dream path immortal killer move was the same case, the core Immortal Gu was of wisdom path, Unravel Mystery, but it was a dream path killer move.

“If I can obtain this Gu, I will be able to collect dream realm Gu materials and refine the various mortal Gu. Even though it would spend some time, but once I succeed in forming my killer move, the rewards will be immensely more profitable! I will be able to make up for the regret during my previous life, becoming a pioneer in the exploration of dream realms, being ahead of all the forces in this world, being ahead of the superpowers!”

Fang Yuan’s mouth turned dry as he thought about it.

He estimated, the potential value coming from this dream path killer move was in no way lower than wisdom Gu. It was only beneath what had come from Spring Autumn Cicada and Hu Immortal blessed land, but higher than all-out effort Gu.

Among the countless opportunities in Fang Yuan’s previous life, the most valuable one was Spring Autumn Cicada. Even though it was rank six, far inferior to wisdom Gu’s rank nine, it could allow Fang Yuan to be reborn and start again. Even if there was a chance of failure, didn’t he succeed every time until now? If he failed the first time, it would have been the worst opportunity he ever had. But it had succeeded, it was deserving of being his greatest fortune.

Next was Hu Immortal blessed land. It had allowed Fang Yuan to have the foundation of a Gu Immortal despite being a mortal, standing on the shoulder of a former Gu Immortal. After becoming an immortal zombie, it made up for his weakness in his aspect. It was because of this blessed land that Fang Yuan had ample foundation. The cultivation of Gu Immortals was not just about fighting and killing, economic management was the biggest foundation base.

Third was wisdom Gu, using the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan gained unlimited inspiration, it rapidly pulled him out of his slump. But that was built on the blessed land and his own foundation. In the future, if he truly controlled it, it might bring Fang Yuan a pleasant surprise. But for now, it was third.

The fourth was all-out effort Gu, even though this mortal Gu was only rank four, he obtained it at a very crucial moment. It was the first springboard since Fang Yuan’s rebirth. Without all-out effort Gu, Fang Yuan would not have had such incredible battle strength. Without his battle strength, he would not have been able to participate in the three kings inheritance.

As for the dream path killer move, if he obtained it, Fang Yuan would be able to use it well and the value would be equal to the current use of wisdom Gu.

After this time period, the value of dream path killer moves would fall drastically. When dream realms undergo complete external manifestation, and dream path would be thriving all over, this killer move’s value would fall beyond belief.

The value of opportunities depended on the timing.

Spring Autumn Cicada was very valuable, but if Fang Yuan became a Demon Venerable and was invincible in the world, why would he need it?

This was also the case for Hu Immortal blessed land, if Fang Yuan obtained it after becoming a Gu Immortal and had his own healthy blessed land, the value he received from it would be far lower.

The same logic applied to wisdom Gu, all-out effort Gu, and this dream path killer move.

“But I definitely need the core Immortal Gu, Unravel Mystery, to use this dream path killer move, otherwise, all of this is empty talk.” Fang Yuan looked at the auction again.

At this moment, there were few competitors left.

Feng Jiu Ge and Old Ancestor Xue Hu were out of the competition. These two had spent a great amount to buy Ma and Zhao, their foundations were shaken and they no longer were able to compete.

Yao Huang had backed out regrettably as well. He had purchased some refinement path Immortal Gu, as well as many Gu Immortal captives. With the huge resource consumption of refinement path, all sorts of restrictions forced him to back out.

Five Elements Grandmaster had stopped long ago, he had bought many Immortal Gu of the mainstream paths, and he was also a lone cultivator.

The last ones remaining were Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, the Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortal, and three super forces, they were: Yuan tribe, Murong tribe, and Chanyu tribe.

Soon, Chanyu tribe left the competition as well. Even though Yuan tribe’s Yuan Rang Zun was screaming that he wanted to sell all of the true martial carps away, he could not make up his mind. After all, Yuan tribe already had their own Immortal Gu House.

Thus, only Murong tribe, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu were left.

“Murong Jin Xiao, my force has no Immortal Gu House to defend it, this is very dangerous. If you can let go today, I will definitely compensate you well.” In the secret room, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal urged.

Murong Jin Xiao shook his head, paying respects as he smiled: “Lord, my Murong tribe’s Immortal Gu House is lacking a core Immortal Gu, everyone in Northern Plains know that. This matter involves huge benefits for my tribe, please forgive me for my insolence, I want to fight for it, whether it ends in success or failure, I do not want to be resigned.”

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortal sighed faintly, he no longer said anything apart from raising the bid.

“It seems that I still have some hope!” The price was already at two Immortal Gu, it had far exceeded the value of four Gu Immortal captives, but Fang Yuan’s gaze was becoming more excited.

“Even though the Red Fiend Divine Boat is good, no core Immortal Gu are being sold. The Immortal Gu that the three of them are offering are rank six, they have little use. Two Immortal Gu are the limit, those three are already thinking hard, their bids are increasing very slowly. After all, even if they obtained this Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe, it only involves the entirety of the Immortal Gu recipes, they still needed to spend a huge sum refining the Gu."

"The seller is a wood path cultivator, he wants resources useful to his cultivation. Among these six Immortal Gu, only one is wood path, it comes from Murong tribe, but it is an investigative Immortal Gu. Hehe, this is great. Forget about the last Gu Immortal, Rushing Thunder Hand Wu Hao, that I still have, but the three Hua Hai immortals are wood path Gu Immortals, I can make good use of this situation in a plan."

Fang Yuan moved quickly, he immediately informed Qin Bai Sheng and contacted Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

"The three parties are in a stalemate now, I do not have a wood path Immortal Gu, and Murong tribe has the greatest chance now, maybe I can use this to break the stalemate?"

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was moved, he changed his bid, he first took down unravel mystery Immortal Gu and put up the three Hua Hai immortals.

The seller's eyes brightened, he hesitated for a bit before choosing Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

He was an astute person.

To him, even though the other two sides had an additional Immortal Gu, only one of them had a wood path Immortal Gu. But in Heavenly Lord Bai Zu's bid, there was a movement Immortal Gu and three wood path immortal apertures, he could swallow them and gain a huge boost in cultivation level!

He sold the Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe, he had already offended Zombie Alliance, his current concerns were to protect his life and develop in secret.

What suited himself had the greatest value.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu did not have any interest in the three Hua Hai immortals, but the seller needed them urgently.

As for Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, he did not make any losses, he still paid a price of two Immortal Gu. Since he had already decided to give up unravel mystery Immortal Gu, did it matter who it ended up with? Selling it to Fang Yuan, he broke the stalemate and obtained the Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe.

As for Fang Yuan, he finally obtained unravel mystery Immortal Gu.

"This is a mutual win for three parties. Hahaha." He laughed heartily.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 764: Actions of All Parties

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu became the final winner of the intense bidding war, obtaining the complete recipe for Red Fiend Divine Boat. And the beneficiary of the back-door deal, Fang Yuan, also successfully obtained unravel mystery Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan was very satisfied with this transaction.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu became the focal point of everyone’s attention, and apart from a few related people, no one knew unravel mystery Immortal Gu had landed in Fang Yuan’s hands.

Red Fiend Divine Boat’s recipe could be considered as an unexpected final climactic moment of the auction.

Time passed, four hours later, this auction which included various outstanding people finally ended.

“There is still no reply from Fairy Li Shan’s end?” Fang Yuan secretly asked Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly sent his message: “Nothing until now. Fairy Li Shan actually missed such a grand event, it seems there is definitely some issue on her end. Do we return through the previous route?”

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng came to Qin Bai Sheng’s blessed land through the hole earth Gu established between Qin Bai Sheng and Fairy Li Shan.

Now, the situation on Fairy Li Shan’s end was unclear, and rashly using hole earth Gu to return was undoubtedly an unwise move.

“No, we will first leave along with the others, then use Fixed Immortal Travel. We need to be careful, though, there will definitely be turmoil soon.” Fang Yuan reminded.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded with a serious expression.

The auction might have ended, but there were sure to be many who were not satisfied with the results. With the end of the auction, the previous agreement signed by all parties would expire.

Without the restriction, people’s hearts and minds would be moved by wealth; robbery, extortion and ambushes would be the next event.

Most of the Gu Immortals had the same thoughts as Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng. Thus, they left the blessed land in a hurry and full of caution.

“We must get that guy! He actually dared to sell the Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe openly, our Zombie Alliance’s face had been lost completely!”

“We could let go if it was only our face, but the key thing is that the leader had repeatedly reminded us of the importance of this task before she left. But now, we have screwed up. When the leader comes back and hears the news, who knows how she will punish us!”

Yin Liu Gong and Dragon Commander Ye Cha discussed as they looked at their target hurriedly leaving.

In the sky above crimson reed marsh.

“Heavenly Lord, I wonder if you are interested in selling the Red Fiend Divine Boat recipe to my Yao tribe?” Yao Huang stayed behind and persuaded Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu chuckled: “Lord Yao Huang is jesting, how can such a treasure be sold easily? I won’t conceal it from you, I have a lot of descendants and they are filling up my grotto-heaven. Recently, I have been planning to establish a tribe, perhaps we can have many opportunities to collaborate with Yao tribe.”

The leaders of various forces in the surroundings had changes in their expressions as they heard this.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was a rank eight powerhouse. A tribe he established, with his support, was certain to thrive.

Not only this, with the support of a rank eight Gu Immortal, even if the new tribe’s foundation was lacking, it would still be a super force!

Northern Plains was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s homeland, the place where he rose up and established a hereditary monarchy. For a long time up to now, the super forces in Northern Plains were almost all of Huang Jin bloodline.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was trying to poke his nose into this by establishing a super force, which no doubt was going to create an enormous impact on those Huang Jin descendants.

At the same time, with the lone cultivator, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, becoming the first supreme elder of a righteous path force, it would have huge impacts on both the demonic path and lone cultivator camps.

Yao Huang’s smile became even brighter: “Since Heavenly Lord has such an intention, who could stop you in this huge world? It is very difficult for us old fellows to gather together, no time is better than the present, how about we have a chat today?”

“Haha, this is also what I wanted to say.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu laughed heartily.

Yao Huang opened up his Immortal Gu House, Medicine Cottage, and invited all the Gu Immortals present to join.

Most of the super forces entered in the end, including Five Elements Grandmaster, who represented the benefits of lone cultivators.

However, Old Ancestor Xue Hu refused.

In this auction, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had invested a lot to buy Ma Hong Yun, as well as precious contents of the essence of the luck path true inheritance.

What he most wanted to do now was to use Ma Hong Yun as the primary material in refining Fortune Rivalling Heaven and use its effects on himself.

The person representing Prince Feng Xian’s will — Feng Jiu Ge, who had disguised himself as Swordmaster You Lan, also refused this gathering and left on his own.

In a hidden area among the reeds, he quietly met with the Central Continent Gu Immortals.

“I have sent you the message regarding the auction.” Feng Jiu Ge looked at everyone with a smile.

“Lord Jiu Ge made a really good move, such courage, I am in admiration.”

“With Zhao Lian Yun, we can search her soul and find many precious clues regarding the main culprit of the Imperial Court incident!”

“I still have to thank lord for trading a suitable Immortal Gu for me.”

“What should our actions be next?”

The Central Continent Gu Immortals talked one after the other, clearly treating Feng Jiu Ge as their leader.

Feng Jiu Ge smiled. In this trip, he first used his tyrannical strength to subdue everyone, and now he had taken the risk to enter the tiger’s den and trade Immortal Gu for them. Through Feng Jiu Ge’s methods and charisma, a stick in one hand and a carrot in the other, he was finally able to lead this group of experts!

Of course, Feng Jiu Ge knew that behind this harmonious atmosphere, everyone still had their own thoughts.

It was only that all the experts were astute, now that they were in Northern Plains with a heavy mission on their shoulders, even if they had any hidden thoughts, they suppressed it deep within themselves for the time being, choosing to sincerely cooperate.

To Feng Jiu Ge, this was enough.

“Everyone, although we obtained Zhao Lian Yun, the clues available to verify the true culprit are probably not enough. If there were enough clues, Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals would have already discovered the truth and the perpetrator would have nowhere to hide. However, I found someone who is suspicious.” Feng Jiu Ge said.

Everyone’s spirits rose at hearing this information.

Feng Jiu Ge continued: “But this person has hidden themselves too deeply, I never was able to find out their true identity, to find this person, we must start from the host of this auction.”

“Lord is talking about Qin Bai Sheng?”

“He is a famous expert of Northern Plains, a rank seven metal path Gu Immortal.”

“I also know of this person, he is a lone cultivator. Creating such an achievement today with just his own strength is truly rarely seen.”

“Qin Bai Sheng not only has outstanding strength, he also has many favorable social connections. If we are going against him, we need to use all our strength to strike as quickly as possible. If we let him escape and ask for assistance from his allies, the situation will turn for the worse.”

Everyone was discussing vigorously.

They were the representatives of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, powerful and with lot of methods, but they were fighting in enemy territory. Once their identities were exposed, it was likely that Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals would band together to attack them.

Fortunately, they still had Prince Feng Xian to aid them secretly.

In another area, a fight had already started.

“He Lang Zi, you really have guts, you actually dared to attack our Chanyu tribe!” The Gu Immortal who was ambushed shouted in fury.

“Hmph, what is there to not dare? So what if you are from Chanyu tribe? No matter how powerful the immortal killer move winged blade is, can it save you now? Just be obedient and hand over that sandalwood sacred elephant egg, and I shall let you go.” A giant wolf, the size of a small hill, spoke with an eerie gaze, in a human voice.

This egg came from the mysterious rank eight Gu Immortal of Eastern Sea. It had fallen into the hands of Chanyu tribe’s representative at a certain point of the auction.

He Lang Zi had left previously, but actually had other intentions. He carefully set up an ambush outside and waited for someone to fall into it, capturing this unlucky fellow.

“He Lang Zi, you have hidden your cards well. You actually have an informant in the auction! Didn’t you call yourself a lone wolf, moving alone and disdaining interaction with other Gu Immortals? Hmph, if you have the guts, then place a stake against me in battle. If you win, I will immediately hand over this sandalwood sacred elephant egg to you. If you lose, then join our Chanyu tribe and serve for a hundred years!” The Chanyu tribe Gu Immortal shouted.

He had just spoken, when he heard the sound of a woman’s laugh coming from nearby.

A black light flashed, and three Gu Immortals appeared.

The Chanyu tribe Gu Immortal was startled; the other party had approached this closely, but he did not notice in the slightest until they intentionally revealed themselves.

“You are Hei Cheng?” The Chanyu tribe Gu Immortal carefully observed and quickly recognized their identities, “Also Fairy Jiang Yu, hmm? Why is Xue Song Zi of the demonic path with you?”

“Chanyu Zhong Er, I know you have the immortal killer move, immemorial flame axe. But thinking of using this move to battle He Lang Zi and recruit a rank seven as a goon for your tribe is too naive.” Fairy Jiang Yu continued to smile.

Chanyu Zhong Er’s expression sank, as the other party had spoken accurately.

It was because of this immortal killer move, immemorial flame axe, that he had the confidence to participate in this auction as Chanyu tribe’s representative.

But who could have thought that he had still greatly underestimated human desire, and also overestimated Chanyu tribe’s stature.

“Hei Cheng, you are a Hei tribe Gu Immortal and are of Huang Jin bloodline, like my Chanyu tribe. But you are actually colluding with demonic path outsiders to harm us righteous path Gu Immortals! Don’t make such a huge mistake, it is still not too late to turn back.” Chanyu Zhong Er thought rapidly and tried to persuade Hei Cheng.

Xue Song Zi laughed loudly: “If it was your big brother here, Chanyu Shang Yi, we would have a headache. If it was your younger brother, Chanyu Xia San, we would have dispelled any intention of ambush. Unfortunately, you don’t have the defensive prowess of your big brother, neither do you have the speed of your younger brother, today your defeat is certain!”

Chanyu Zhong Er’s expression became more unsightly, he stared fixedly at Hei Cheng and shouted: “Hei Cheng, you are a righteous path Gu Immortal, you built your reputation over so many years, do you not want it? If this matter were to be exposed or just a rumor of it is spread, you will be condemned by the public and hunted down like a rat!”

Hei Cheng’s eyes flickered with hesitation, but Fairy Jiang Yu transmitted him a message, making him firmly resolute.

Without saying anything, he waved an arm, from which a dark arrow flew out, straight towards Chanyu Zhong Er. He used action to show his resolution!

Snowy Mountain blessed land.

Third branch peak.

Jade green light shined and extinguished, Tai Bai Yun Sheng appeared in the room.

At almost the same instant which he appeared, he activated his defensive killer move, nine cloud ring.

One of the disadvantages of Fixed Immortal Travel was that other Gu worms could not be used during the process. Another disadvantage was that the amount of immortal essence consumed would depend on the strength of the target. Previously, Fang Yuan was still a mortal with few dao marks on his body, thus the immortal essence consumed was much lower. However, when transporting a Gu Immortal, the minimum consumption was at least one bead of green grape immortal essence.

After finding no dangers, Fang Yuan came out of Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture.

This room was the place where Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan had met with them previously.

“There has been no response from either Fairy Li Shan or Hei Lou Lan, in accordance with the alliance, we must look into this.”

“The most probable place is here!”

Shortly, the two found Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan in a bedroom.

“They are lying on the bed... sleeping?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was dazed.

He was about to walk closer but was stopped by Fang Yuan: “Don’t approach them, it is dangerous!”

“What danger?”

Fang Yuan’s eyes let out a sharp light: “They are in a dream realm. If we approach them, we will also be ensnared.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 765: Qin Bai Sheng vs Feng Jiu Ge

“Dream realm?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng heard Fang Yuan’s words and his gaze flickered, he showed a grim expression.

Earlier, when Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan collaborated to explore Starry Sky grotto-heaven, he had met with danger in a dream realm of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. Fang Yuan had explained this matter briefly to Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Thus, when Tai Bai Yun Sheng heard the term dream realm, he knew the severity of the situation.

He sighed: “No wonder Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan did not attend the auction, they were trapped in a dream realm. I had been guessing earlier if Hei Lou Lan’s tribulation was causing them trouble.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “Old Bai, you guessed correctly. Most likely, the tribulation caused them to be stuck in a dream realm, unable to free themselves.”

“When Gu Immortals undergo tribulation, there can be dream realm calamities?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng asked in suspicion.

Fang Yuan sighed: “Not in the past, but now that dream realms have manifested, such calamities and tribulations have appeared gradually.”

Especially in the five hundred years of his previous life, towards the second half of the five regions chaotic war, dream realms manifested on a large scale, showing up in all corners of the five regions. The phenomenon of dream realms becoming tribulations also became more frequent, countless Gu Immortals were harmed in the process.

“What do we do now? According to the Snowy Mountain Alliance, we cannot abandon them.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was helpless, he asked Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was silent, his eyes were shining with a murky light.

At this moment, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan had little to no defenses, it was not hard to kill them now.

But because of the alliance agreement, Fang Yuan could not attack them, he even had to save them.

“The Snowy Mountain Alliance was made using mountain pledge Gu, if I want to break it, I will need to destroy Snowy Mountain. Unfortunately, I do not have enough strength now, it will be hard to do so. Even if I could destroy it, Tai Bai Yun Sheng is too kind, he might be an obstacle if I try to attack them.” Fang Yuan felt some regret.

This indeed was a golden opportunity.

By killing Hei Lou Lan, he would obtain strength qi Immortal Gu, self strength Immortal Gu, flying bear strength Gu, and slavery Immortal Gu. The first three were strength path Immortal Gu, while the last one was enslavement path. They all suited Fang Yuan very well.

Especially self strength Immortal Gu, if he obtained it, he could use it as the core and elevate the power of the immortal killer move myriad self by several levels!

As for Fairy Li Shan’s mountain pledge Gu, with it, Fang Yuan would have the same advantage as Fairy Li Shan. Helping other Gu Immortals make agreements, this was an extremely popular service, the benefits could surpass the guts Gu trade.

That was because using mountain pledge Gu to make agreements for others not only was highly profitable, he could also establish connections.

Fairy Li Shan was able to mingle in both the righteous and demonic paths, a lot of that was due to this Immortal Gu.

Mountain pledge Gu was not an attack type Immortal Gu, it could not provide defense or movement abilities to the Gu Immortal. But whoever held it will gain a huge advantage.

It was only an assistance type Immortal Gu, but Gu Immortals were not only concerned about fighting and killing.

Gu Immortals placed emphasis cultivation, management were their biggest priority.

Realistically, fighting was just a small portion of a Gu Immortal’s life. Only with the five regions chaotic war would fighting become the general focus.

Just as Fang Yuan was pondering, Snowy Mountain blessed land shook.

A rank eight Gu Immortal’s immense aura emanated and filled the surroundings.

“We welcome Old Ancestor’s arrival.” Soon, several demonic path Gu Immortals spoke from their respective mountain peaks.

“It is Old Ancestor Xue Hu! He has his own grotto-heaven, he almost never comes here, why is he here now?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression changed.

The moment he said that, he heard Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s voice, resonating through the blessed land: “All of you, come to the main hall and see me now, I have an important matter to discuss with everyone.”

“As you command, Old Ancestor.” The demonic path Gu Immortals shouted in unison.

Figures of Gu Immortals rapidly flew out from the mountain peaks.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression paled, he said: “Oh no, Fairy Li Shan is still in a dream! If she does not appear or say anything, Old Ancestor Xue Hu will definitely get suspicious and come here to check. We can escape with Fixed Immortal Travel, and Fairy Li Shan would not be attacked. But Hei Lou Lan is the problem, she is not a member of Snowy Mountain and is a key character who has experienced the True Yang Building incident. Once she is captured and has her soul searched, we are all doomed!”

...

Bam bam bam!

While an intense explosion sounded out, a pathetic figure was fleeing rapidly.

Behind him, there was a huge wolf sprinting out of the smoke, opening its bloodthirsty mouth and speaking a human language: “Chanyu Zhong Er, where are you trying to escape to?”

The pathetic figure was Chanyu Zhong Er, he continued to escape as he yelled with a panicked expression: “He Lang Zi, Hei Cheng, don’t go too far, otherwise, I will drag you guys down with me! Immemorial flame axe!”

His body shuddered, his put his palms together as he turned around, exerting a chopping motion with them.

Immediately, fire rose as they gathered to form an axe in midair, attacking the huge wolf.

Before the attack even landed, the scorching flames already burned some of the wolf’s fur.

The huge fiery axe caused the surrounding sky to glow red, it was powerful and carried an aura of destruction with it, as if it could rampage to kill innumerable beings.

This was an immortal killer move, it had incredible offensive power.

But facing such a powerful attack, He Lang Zi’s gaze shined with disdain and mockery.

Swoosh.

The huge wolf vanished, evading the immemorial flame axe and blocking Chanyu Zhong Er’s escape route.

“No matter how fierce the attack, what good is it if you cannot hit?” Fairy Jiang Yu appeared, floating in the air. She had taken action just now, teleporting He Lang Zi away using an immortal movement killer move

“Damn!” Chanyu Zhong Er gritted his teeth, his heart sank as his angry and helpless face showed a hint of despair.

“You are distracted.” Suddenly, a black robed Gu Immortal appeared behind him.

Chanyu Zhong Er was shocked, quickly retreating as he created some distance.

The mysterious Gu Immortal remained on the spot, stretching out his right arm while his palm was aimed at Chanyu Zhong Er: “This distance is enough, now, have a taste of my soul suction Immortal Gu’s power.”

Chanyu Zhong Er’s movements froze, his body turned stiff as his soul shook, it was like there was a huge force trying to pull his soul out of his body.

“Oh no!” Chanyu Zhong Er was shocked, ordinary defensive measures could not defend against such soul path methods.

He tried to stabilize his soul, momentarily going into a deadlock with the mysterious black robed Gu Immortal.

“Quickly assist me.” The black robed Gu Immortal said.

The moment he said that, Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi flew towards him, placing their arms on his shoulders. By surreptitiously using some Gu worms, all three of their souls worked together and formed an even greater force.

Soul suction Immortal Gu was used in this way, it was like drawing in a river, disregarding all other aspects, it was a direct contest between souls.

At this moment, the black robed Gu Immortal, Hei Cheng, Xue Song Zi collaborated, they had a huge advantage against Chanyu Zhong Er.

“I am unresigned! I am full of hatred, ah, let me go...” Chanyu Zhong Er was unable to resist them, his soul was pulled out eventually.

Without his soul to control it, his body fell downwards from the air rapidly, like a puppet with its strings cut.

But soon after, Fairy Jiang Yu caught it.

She searched it and laughed: “As expected, this fire path Immortal Gu is in

Chanyu Zhong Er’s blessed land.”

“So your real motive was my fire path Immortal Gu! What do you guys actually want?!” Chanyu Zhong Er’s soul was held by the black robe Gu Immortal, he continued to shout furiously.

“No, we did not lie to you. The sandalwood sacred elephant egg was also our target. But compared to the Immortal Gu, it is like the icing on the cake.” Fairy Jiang Yu smiled.

Their scheme had succeeded, her mood was great, but just as she was about to continue speaking, her expression changed.

Not only her, at the same time, even the black robed Gu Immortal’s hands shook.

He was wearing a black robe, his head was covered by a huge hood, his face was shrouded in darkness, he said with a hoarse voice: “Qin Bai Sheng was ambushed, hmph! So this Swordmaster You Lan is an imposter, a Gu Immortal from Central Continent.”

“Qin Bai Sheng cannot be lost, quickly go and save him!” Fairy Jiang Yu said anxiously, soaring away without any hesitation or pause.

The black robed Gu Immortal and He Lang Zi followed suit.

Only Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi were left.

“Lord Hei Cheng, do we follow?” Xue Song Zi was hesitant.

Hei Cheng looked at the black robed Gu Immortal and felt a lot of wariness. Not long ago, this person had appeared, showcasing many different methods, he had great power and had an extraordinary relation to Fairy Jiang Yu!

Xue Song Zi was hesitant, but was he, Hei Cheng, any different?

“It seems that this black robed Gu Immortal is also a member of Shadow Sect. He Lang Zi might be the same as us, being a collaborator. Shadow Sect, and Central Continent’s Gu Immortals...” Hei Cheng’s gaze flickered, his body flew up in pursuit of Fairy Jiang Yu and the others.

Xue Song Zi snorted coldly, he quickly followed them.

“Huff huff huff...” Qin Bai Sheng breathed roughly, there were dozens of wounds on him, some were bleeding, some were so deep one could see bones, some of his skin had turned black, emitting a foul odor.

“As expected of a famous expert of Northern Plains, we attacked together and ambushed you, but you still managed to heavily injure three of us.” Feng Jiu Ge crossed his arms as he watched, praising with a gaze of admiration.

“Northern Plains Gu Immortals truly have excellent battle strength. Your methods and ours seem to have little discrepancy, yet you managed to make such great battle results.”

“Qin Bai Sheng, you are an outstanding person, give up and surrender.”

“Our words earlier were truthful. As long as you tell us some people’s identities, we will let you leave.”

There were Central Continent Gu Immortals all around Qin Bai Sheng.

They opened their mouths as they urged him.

Among them, Fairy Ling Mei and Fairy Ao Xue of Heaven’s Envy Manor, as well as a young-looking Gu Immortal, Old Oracle from Ancient Soul Sect, were quite heavily injured.

“You want me to surrender?” Qin Bai Sheng raised his eyebrows, spitting out a mouthful of bloody saliva: “Bah! Outsiders from another region infiltrating us in Northern Plains. Intruders! I’m tell you, we of Northern Plains are not cowards! Come at me if you have the guts, don’t worry, before I die, I will certainly drag one of you down with me!”

Feng Jiu Ge sighed helplessly: “In that case, the rest of you can stand down, I will handle it myself.”

Qin Bai Sheng’s gaze was heavy as he stared at Feng Jiu Ge.

He did not know who Feng Jiu Ge was, but he knew that he was the leader, during the battle earlier, he did not participate, he stood aloof.

“I will only use one move, if you can take it, I will let you leave.” Feng Jiu Ge flew towards Qin Bai Sheng slowly, his expression was calm as he spoke lightly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 766: Immortal Gu Compensation

“One move?” Hearing Feng Jiu Ge’s words, Qin Bai Sheng laughed with a provoked tone: “I have roamed the region freely for hundreds of years, I defeated Liu Hao, Chanyu Xiong, Nu Er Du, killed Bai Chan Zi, Jade Fire Farmer, Mountain Lord Tian Qing, had a draw with Yuan Rang Zun, and managed to escape with my life from Five Elements Grandmaster. In the entirety of Northern Plains, only the five rank eight Gu Immortals can defeat me easily. But to kill me, even they would not find it easy. There are very few rank seven Gu Immortals that can rival me. You are also a rank seven Gu Immortal, you want to defeat me in one move? Hahaha!”

Qin Bai Sheng laughed loudly, his laughter was filled with great confidence towards himself.

Feng Jiu Ge’s words indeed were greatly arrogant. At once, even the Central Continent Gu Immortals around him were starting to get worried.

Feng Jiu Ge smiled lightly, he slowly narrated: “When I was young, I loved music, when I started cultivating, I had a grand aspiration, that was to create a total of nine songs, to express myself, to express all living beings, and to express heaven and earth. Up to this point, I have created six songs in total. If you can finish listening to this song of mine, then I will admit defeat and let you leave.”

Qin Bai Sheng’s laughter gradually came to an end, he had a serious gaze as he stared at Feng Jiu Ge unblinkingly.

Looking at Feng Jiu Ge, who had a earnest tone and a smiling face, Qin Bai Sheng felt an immense threat deep within himself.

He thought for a moment and greeted Feng Jiu Ge solemnly: “I have not asked for your name yet.”

Feng Jiu Ge greeted back: “I am Feng Jiu Ge.”

Qin Bai Sheng’s expression changed: “So you are the number one person of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, no wonder. Hahaha, in that case, let me see what you can do.”

Feng Jiu Ge’s fighting prowess had long since been famous, even to a Northern Plains Gu Immortal like Qin Bai Sheng, the name and reputation were instantly recognizable.

But after learning about Feng Jiu Ge’s identity, Qin Bai Sheng instead felt an immeasurable surge of battle intent within himself — We are both rank seven Gu Immortal, what qualifications do you have to defeat the other Gu Immortals in the ten great ancient sects and become known as the strongest? I will see how strong you truly are!

Feng Jiu Ge breathed in deeply, bowing slightly: “This song, is known as Green Jade Song, please enjoy it.”

The rest of the Central Continent Gu Immortals backed off and created a wide open space for them.

“Come.” Qin Bai Sheng shouted, his gaze was like lightning as his battle intent rushed out, he was oozing with grandeur.

...

Snowy Mountain blessed land.

Third branch peak.

“Just now, this lucky escape was truly thanks to you. If Old Ancestor Xue Hu found out, even I would not be able to preserve Little Lan’s life.” In the secret room, Fairy Li Shan spoke to Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, expressing her gratitude.

Hei Lou Lan was a crucial person in the collapse of True Yang Building, she was more important than Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun. Once she was discovered, the entire world of Gu Immortals would hunt her down.

“The situation was really dangerous, we were trying to guess why you missed the auction.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng said while sighing.

If Hei Lou Lan was discovered, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng would be involved as well, the three of them were tied together on a string.

“Oh!” Fairy Li Shan sighed: “I did not think that a dream realm could become a calamity. Do you have any ways to save Little Lan?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng shook his head, looking at Fang Yuan who was beside him.

Fang Yuan said solemnly: “It’s difficult! The dream calamity’s target is Hei Lou Lan, Fairy Li Shan, you were only pulled in because you touched her. Thus, I just had to hurt you and make you feel pain. But Hei Lou Lan is deep inside the dream realm, even if you kill her, she will not awaken.”

Fairy Li Shan’s eyes shined with hope: “It’s only ‘difficult’, that does not mean it is impossible, Fang Yuan, it seems you have a plan!”

Fang Yuan chuckled: “Hei Lou Lan is fortunate, I obtained a Gu in the auction that can form a dream path killer move to resolve this problem. But to form the killer move, the core Immortal Gu is not enough, I need the assistance of many mortal Gu.”

Fairy Li Shan was overjoyed, saying: “I can help with that, what refinement materials do you need to refine Gu, just tell me, I can satisfy that request!”

But Fang Yuan shook his head: “These dream path mortal Gu refinement materials can only be found in dream realms. Refining dream path Gu is different from other paths, the entire process needs me to execute it personally.”

“So dream path has such specifications.” Fairy Li Shan blinked, this was the first time she had heard such news.

Dream path Gu worms were different from Gu worms in other paths.

One of the points was the refinement material, they were not material objects, they were obtained from inside dream realms.

And the dream realm could only be of one’s own dream, not others.

Only the materials from one’s own dream realm could refine these dream path Gu worms.

Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories, even though he developed slowly in dream path and had limited achievement, he still knew common knowledge like this.

Currently, what was his common knowledge was now the most top tier research results, the few forces treated them as their own treasures, sealing all the knowledge deeply.

Because of the Snowy Mountain Alliance, Fairy Li Shan did not doubt Fang Yuan’s words. But deep inside, she saw Fang Yuan in a different light again.

She knew some parts of Fang Yuan’s experiences and circumstances, especially the guts Gu trade, she obtained part of the profits.

“Fang Yuan is truly an impressive junior, it is almost as if he has a method to solve any problem. Earlier, he developed the airsac Gu to hold the guts Gu. Now, he even has such research in dream path. This is not something a lone cultivator can come up with, it seems his background is not simple after all.”

Fairy Li Shan was thinking over it when Fang Yuan spoke again: “Fairy, you know that my nature is straightforward, I like to talk openly and not beat about the bush. If I can save you both, what compensation will I get?”

Fairy Li Shan’s eyes rolled, she was long since familiar with Fang Yuan’s personality, she was not surprised, she smiled: “The favor of saving a life is as heavy as a mountain. Fang Yuan, how many immortal essence stones or Immortal Gu recipes do you want, or even immortal materials, just tell me.”

Her tone was very courteous, after all, she was requesting his help.

Fang Yuan raised his head: “I do not want anything else, what I have in mind is Hei Lou Lan’s self strength Gu and strength qi Gu. Two lives for two Gu.”

Fairy Li Shan’s smile vanished without a trace: “These two Immortal Gu are Little Lan’s core Gu worms. A gentleman would not take what others love, Fang Yuan, this condition is a little too harsh.”

Fang Yuan raised his eyebrows: “Are both of your lives not even as valuable as two Gu worms?”

“That is not accurate.” Fairy Li Shan shook her head: “Even if we were discovered, only Little Lan would be in danger, I would be fine. In fact, when Little Lan gets into trouble, you two would be implicated too. We are on the same boat now, helping us is also the same as helping yourselves.”

Fang Yuan smiled, nodding in agreement: “Fairy makes perfect sense, I am full of admiration. Forget my previous condition, I will go prepare now. I promise you, within three to five years, I can surely save Hei Lou Lan! I have to go now.”

Saying this, Fang Yuan stood up and was ready to leave.

Although the two had an agreement, and he could not leave her in the lurch, they also made rules such that one side could not force the other to save them using the agreement, they had to come up with an appropriate arrangement regarding compensation.

Fang Yuan was not abandoning her, he was just taking a bit of time, thus, his actions were not against the alliance agreement.

Fairy Li Shan felt a huge headache, she stood up and urged him: “Wait, Fang Yuan, we can discuss this.”

“What does fairy have to enlighten me with? I am all ears!” Fang Yuan’s attitude was very modest, he spoke very humbly.

“Oh, Fang Yuan, don’t act like this. These two strength path Immortal Gu do not belong to me, I cannot promise you anything.” Fairy Li Shan sighed deeply as she said this.

Fang Yuan showed an understanding expression: “That’s right, I find this condition overboard too, pretend I never said it. Fairy is right, Self Strength and Strength Qi are very important Immortal Gu to Hei Lou Lan, how can you decide for her? Never mind, we are allies, I will definitely help her. But you need to know, refining dream path Gu worms is very troublesome because it takes a long time and I need to do a lot of preparation. During this period of time, fairy can try to find other ways to save Hei Lou Lan. Although my method will definitely succeed, it will take a long time. In this time period, if Hei Lou Lan is discovered by others, that would be bad. But thankfully, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and I are in Central Continent, even if anything happens to Hei Lou Lan, we will act as good allies and avenge her.”

These words made Fairy Li Shan roll her eyes in anger.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was laughing madly deep in his mind, he did not forget to add in: “Speaking of the alliance, we have about two years left. Once the time is up, and Hei Lou Lan is still unconscious, how would we continue the agreement? Oh, this is a troublesome matter.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a kind person, but when it came to key benefits, he had a firm attitude, he was not a pushover.

“You two!” Fairy Li Shan was furious.

Hei Lou Lan’s identity was a secret, even though Hei Cheng knew, he had his own motives and would not dare to expose Hei Lou Lan’s identity. But because of this, Fairy Li Shan could not find helpers easily.

Regarding dream path, most of the super forces had done their research and obtained some results, but they would not give it to Fairy Li Shan to save Hei Lou Lan.

Thus, for the problem Fairy Li Shan was facing, the most likely possibility with an effective method was to rely on Fang Yuan.

Regarding all of this, Fairy Li Shan was deeply aware. Seeing that Fang Yuan was unwilling to relent, she had no better option but to take a step back, breathing in deeply before saying: “Never mind, maybe we simply had bad luck. I will do it your way, two Immortal Gu. But you can only pick either one of Self Strength and Strength Qi, I can take responsibility for this much in regards to Little Lan. The other Immortal Gu will be provided by me. I’ll speak the truth, this is my limit, don’t force me any further.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was moved, gasping: “Hei Lou Lan is truly blessed to have fairy as her aunt.”

Fairy Li Shan smiled bitterly, looking at Fang Yuan. She knew that although Tai Bai Yun Sheng was Fang Yuan’s senior brother, Fang Yuan was the leader between them.

To save Hei Lou Lan, she needed Fang Yuan to help.

Fang Yuan thought about it, he knew that although he could continue forcing her, that would cause their relationship to be greatly damaged. The amicable atmosphere that he had created earlier by splitting the profits with them would be completely ruined.

Although Self Strength and Strength Qi were two excellent Gu, Fang Yuan had obtained several strength path Immortal Gu, he no longer had such an urgent need for them.

“Alright, I will listen to fairy. I have always been interested in fairy’s mountain pledge Gu.” Fang Yuan spoke with a smile.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 767: Immortal Gu Time Luck

“What, you want mountain pledge Gu?” Fairy Li Shan stared with wide opened eyes, her expression was furious.

Mountain pledge Immortal Gu was extremely important, it was Fairy Li Shan’s source of revenue. The saying goes, ruining a person’s wealth is akin to killing their parents, it would mean deep hatred!

Not only this, mountain pledge Immortal Gu was the reason why Fairy Li Shan could make connections everywhere and work with Gu Immortals from the righteous and demonic paths in Northern Plains without much trouble.

Once she lost mountain pledge Gu, Fairy Li Shan’s advantage would disappear.

Fang Yuan laughed, waving his hand, “It is a joke, a joke, don’t mind it.”

Of course he knew of the importance of mountain pledge Immortal Gu, he was only probing her just now, he did not think he would succeed.

Fairy Li Shan gritted her teeth, her tone turning cold: “Fang Yuan, that joke was not funny at all. I have several Immortal Gu here, pick one of them as the compensation. As for the other half, Little Lan will pass it to you when she wakes up.”

Fang Yuan was originally thinking about Hei Lou Lan’s slavery Immortal Gu. But after seeing Fairy Li Shan’s Immortal Gu, his eyes shined as he changed his mind.

“This Immortal Gu is not bad, I will choose it.”

Fairy Li Shan saw the Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan picked and she sighed in her mind, filled with a bitter feeling deep inside.

She had just obtained this Immortal Gu, she had not even used it yet and Fang Yuan was already taking it away.

This Gu’s name was Time Luck, it was a luck path and time path Immortal Gu, it consumed immortal essence and time to gain a boost in one’s luck.

Fairy Li Shan was very reluctant, she tried to explain to him: “Fang Yuan, if you really want to choose this Gu, I have some words for you. I obtained this time luck Immortal Gu as the payment from Qin Bai Sheng. If ordinary Gu Immortals use this Gu, they will need to expend their own lifespan. But you are a zombie, in a half-dead state, you cannot use this Gu. You might as well choose another Gu.”

“Oh? So that’s it...” Fang Yuan’s showed some interest in his gaze.

When Gu Immortals cultivate, they gained no lifespan during the process.

In this world, ordinary people had approximately a hundred years of lifespan. They would die of old age when they exceeded that.

When Gu Masters became immortals, this time limit would not change. Only by using lifespan Gu could they increase their lifespan without leaving behind any backlash. Other than that, there were methods like turning into a zombie, treeman, or the yin-yang life extension method, possession, or to sleep for most of the time to reduce their expenditure, but these were all suboptimal methods that went against nature to extend their lifespan.

Because of this, Gu Immortals treasured their lifespan more than Gu Masters.

When Qin Bai Sheng held this auction, almost all of the heroes and experts in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world showed up. But even so, no lifespan Gu were sold.

In contrast, in auctions held by mortal Gu Masters, there were lifespan Gu sold occasionally.

This was understandable.

When Gu Masters become immortals, they naturally would understand the difficulty of cultivating, it was not easy to become a Gu Immortal, they would even more treasure this feeling of being above mortal concerns, having such a high status and standard of living. As a result, they treasured their lives, often roaming the five regions. Unless there was a need, they likely would not live inside their grotto-heaven or blessed land.

Because the time flow in the grotto-heaven or blessed land was faster, a Gu Immortal’s limited lifespan would be expended even more quickly than if they were in the five regions.

Mortal Gu Masters did not know how precious lifespan was, they would often use some forbidden techniques that expended their lifespan, to raise their battle strength. The higher the rank one reaches, the broader their horizons, the more they treasured their life, and they would try all sorts of ways to extend their lifespan. For example, like First Gen Gu Yue, and Century Boy.

Such situations, in regards to Gu Immortals, were much more severe. This was like the contrast of rich and poor people. Ordinary people were busy trying to earn a living, they disregarded their health. Rich people however, treasured their lives and paid great attention to sustaining their health.

At the end of the day, it was not that rich people were superior to poor people, it was because of their circumstances and statuses that they could act and think differently.

Fairy Li Shan was obviously a Gu Immortal. Time luck Immortal Gu expended immortal essence and lifespan to boost the user’s luck. Since she took it, she naturally had a way to make up for this flaw.

Fang Yuan was a shrewd person, he immediately guessed that Fairy Li Shan had such a crucial method.

Fairy Li Shan saw that Fang Yuan was looking at her with shining eyes, she knew that she could not hide it and said helplessly: “I will not hide it from you, I have a method to use time luck Immortal Gu as the core, to form an immortal killer move. It can draw upon another person’s lifespan, expending it and amplify one’s own luck.”

Fang Yuan had suffered at the hands of luck path before, but he had also benefited greatly from luck path, he immediately asked: “I wonder if fairy may sell this immortal killer move to me?”

“Don’t even think about it.” Fairy Li Shan replied extremely quickly.

Fang Yuan knew this would happen, he was not upset, he laughed instead: “That being the case, I still want this Immortal Gu.”

Fairy Li Shan’s expression turned cold: “Fang Yuan, are you trying to ruin my plans?”

“I would not dare to.” Fang Yuan’s expression turned solemn, he said with sincerity, explaining: “Even if you did not have this killer move, I would still choose this Immortal Gu. The reason is solely because I obtained an improved mortal Gu recipe of inch of time. Time luck Immortal Gu needs an immortal killer move and time to activate, if I use inch of time, I might be able to replace it as the expenditure and prevent my lifespan from being affected.”

“Is that so...” Fairy Li Shan was stunned, she did not know this.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng chuckled, explaining for Fang Yuan: “When we bought this Gu recipe, we did not think that fairy would have time luck Immortal Gu. It seems that we can fortunately coordinate them together.”

Regarding this matter, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had the right to speak.

He was a time path Gu Immortal, time luck immortal gu and inch of time were both time path Gu worms, since he had the feeling and predicted that these two Gu worms could coordinate, then that was probably going to work.

Fairy Li Shan’s expression relaxed, but her tone was still stiff: “Even in that case, to think of a brand new immortal killer move using time luck Immortal Gu and inch of time as the foundation will be a huge project. Why don’t you leave the time luck Immortal Gu with me first, and I will use the immortal killer move to improve your luck, isn’t that a better result?”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, immediately replying: “Precisely because you have the immortal killer move, we thought about the method to use Time Luck and inch of time. We can also lend the time luck Immortal Gu to you, fairy. At that point, you can activate the immortal killer move and improve our luck, that works the same.”

Fairy Li Shan’s expression froze, she thought: ‘Immortal Gu are unique, if time luck Immortal Gu is in your hands, you hold the initiative. Who knows what will happen in the future? The Snowy Mountain Alliance has a time limit, whether we continue it or not is unknown. If we become enemies, would you lend the time luck Immortal Gu to me?’

As Fairy Li Shan thought of this, she understood.

Wasn’t her worry exactly what Fang Yuan was concerned about?

If time luck Immortal Gu was in her hands, and she had the immortal killer move, she would hold the initiative. In the future, if the alliance expired, even if she helped Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng improve their luck, wouldn’t she be the one deciding on the price?

“Fang Yuan, this lad is tough to deal with.” Fairy Li Shan gritted her teeth secretly, regretting her decision to take out time luck Immortal Gu.

Her plan was to use time luck Immortal Gu and this immortal killer move to create a new source of revenue. Improving the luck of other Gu Immortals would definitely be a popular service.

But Hei Lou Lan was stuck in the dream realm, and Fairy Li Shan needed their help. Since she was unwilling to allow both strength path Immortal Gu to fall into Fang Yuan’s hands, she was in a passive spot.

Even though Fairy Li Shan had a huge network, Hei Lou Lan’s identity could not be exposed, she could only rely on Fang Yuan’s help, thus he had her firmly in his grasp.

Fang Yuan saw the chance and extorted her. This was a ruthless blow, he struck at the crucial part and bit off a huge chunk of flesh.

“Forget about it. With Fang Yuan’s craftiness, if I did not take out time luck Immortal Gu, he might not want the other Immortal Gu. Even if he wanted both strength path Immortal Gu, what could I do? Can I let Little Lan remain in the dream realm forever? Little sister left behind a familial emotion along with a large amount of green grape immortal essence, they are still in Little Lan’s immortal aperture. That was the reason why Little Lan was able to use Immortal Gu when she was a mortal. However, with this dream realm calamity, the familial emotion has instead made it even stronger. With such a close relationship, the dream realm cannot be broken, it is grasping Little Lan tightly and preventing her from escaping. As time passes, her soul might disappear.” Fairy Li Shan sighed, Fang Yuan was her only hope now.

She was an astute person, she had her own plans and did not expose Hei Lou Lan’s secret of having Su Xian Er’s familial emotion.

She did not lie, she just hid it from them.

In the future, even if Fang Yuan could not save Hei Lou Lan, because of the agreement, he had to find a new method.

One could say, no matter the results, Fairy Li Shan had Fang Yuan on their side. At least, when it came to saving Hei Lou Lan, they were in agreement.

Thinking of this, Fairy Li Shan had to let go despite her reluctance, she allowed Fang Yuan to take time luck Immortal Gu.

This transaction ended with both sides fulfilling their own needs.

Fang Yuan used the chance to extort two Immortal Gu, because it happened to suit his new plans, it could be said that he greatly profited. But he had not found out Fairy Li Shan’s true bottom line.

In truth, even if Fang Yuan wanted the two strength path Immortal Gu, it was not impossible. But Fairy Li Shan’s acting was impeccable, Fang Yuan could not probe her true bottom line.

Meanwhile, Fairy Li Shan paid two Immortal Gu to break free of the dream realm and save their lives. Their lives were naturally more valuable than the Immortal Gu.

Thus, they formed a new agreement and completed this transaction.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng immediately returned to Hu Immortal blessed land, trying to refine the various dream path mortal Gu, to form the immortal killer move and save Hei Lou Lan.

Meanwhile, Fairy Li Shan rushed to the first peak of Snowy Mountain.

There, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had already gathered most of the demonic path Gu Immortals, and had urged Fairy Li Shan multiple times already.

Before going, Fairy Li Shan said with a look of concern, urging Fang Yuan: “I am only leaving Little Lan here temporarily, the third peak is not safe, Fang Yuan, I hope you can do your best, the longer this drags on, the more dangerous it gets. If Little Lan is in trouble, you will not be safe either!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 768: Identity Exposed

Fang Yuan activated Fixed Immortal Travel, returning to Hu Immortal blessed land, but at the same time, at a certain battlefield in Northern Plains, a fight was coming to an end, the victor had been decided.

More than ten Gu Immortals surrounded the two people at the center.

Qin Bai Sheng landed on the ground, bending his back as he pushed his knees upwards, preventing himself from kneeling down.

He was no longer in the previous bold and heroic state. Even his intense battle intent earlier had dissipated, it had completely transformed into shock and dejection.

“This, this immortal killer move is called green jade song?” Qin Bai Sheng raised his head and looked at Feng Jiu Ge, speaking as he spat out blood.

His blood was no longer red, it had turned into an eerie green.

As the green blood was spat out, it solidified rapidly, turning into beads of jade pearls while falling to the ground.

These jade pearls collided with the ground and emitted a crisp sound.

The surroundings within a huge area had completely been turned into a domain of jade. The soil on the ground used to be extremely ordinary, but now it had been turned entirely into green jade.

Not just that, the reeds on the ground had also become jade-like objects. As the wind blew, the jade stems swayed with the wind, as the reed leaves shook slightly.

Meanwhile, there was a jade will emitting from Qin Bai Sheng’s body. Not only were his clothes turned into jade, half of his hair had turned jade too. Even most of his skin had frozen into jade. The blood in his body could not flow smoothly, there was the contaminated jade blood in his body. Qin Bai Sheng was now trying to get them out of his body. Thankfully, his organs and intestines were protected by his defensive immortal killer move, they managed to resist the green jade song.

After personally witnessing the process of Qin Bai Sheng losing to one attack, the remaining Central Continent Gu Immortals had a grim expression, their gazes towards Feng Jiu Ge were full of wariness.

Feng Jiu Ge floated in the air, looking at Qin Bai Sheng as he said with a tone of admiration: “That’s right, this is my own creation, green jade song, it can convert everything into jade. You were able to resist it for fifteen minutes, that is very rare. Alright, you are truly strong and courageous, it is too much of a pity if you die here, searching your soul is too disrespectful too. How about this, I will ask you a few questions, just answer me truthfully.”

The Central Continent Gu Immortals heard Feng Jiu Ge’s words and felt some surprise. This was not in line with their earlier plans.

“Lord Feng Jiu Ge.”

“Qin Bai Sheng is a Northern Plains expert, if you let him go so easily, you might be leaving behind a future danger.”

“This person could resist green jade song for fifteen minutes, he is a strong adversary and a lone cultivator, why don’t we...”

Everyone spoke out, hoping that Feng Jiu Ge would kill Qin Bai Sheng. On one hand, they were wary of his battle strength, but on the other hand, they were coveting Qin Bai Sheng’s great wealth.

Qin Bai Sheng was one of the biggest winners in the auction. To make a comparison, the total amount of immortal materials that Fang Yuan obtained after selling all of the Gu Immortal captives was less than one percent of his earnings.

But Feng Jiu Ge waved his hand: “I have already made up my mind, there is no need to say anything else. Old Oracle, I will need you to use the killer move, gentleman’s bamboo.”

Facing Feng Jiu Ge’s firm attitude and insistence, the Central Continent Gu Immortals were silent.

The green jade battlefield in front of them was the greatest deterrence. They were all experts of the ten great ancient sects, but they had all found out now that they could not even take one attack from Feng Jiu Ge. If they swapped places with Qin Bai Sheng, they would end up in an even poorer state!

Feng Jiu Ge's strength was so great that all the Gu Immortals here lost their vigor. Qin Bai Sheng had lost his battle intent, while the Central Continent Gu Immortals were thinking: No wonder Feng Jiu Ge was acknowledged to be at first place in Central Continent! Six songs meant six immortal killer moves, green jade song was only one of them. With such battle strength, he was simply terrifying, even against a rank eight Gu Immortal, he might not be inferior.

The young-looking wisdom path Gu Immortal that was called by Feng Jiu Ge was from Ancient Soul Sect of Central Continent.

He breathed in deeply, walking out towards the center of the battlefield.

He stretched out his fist from his wide sleeve, opening his five fingers as a colorless crystal bamboo grew out of his palm.

"My immortal killer move, gentleman's bamboo, uses the rank six Immortal Gu Bamboo Gentleman as the core, with six hundred and sixty mortal Gu complementing it, it is used specially for detecting lies. Even though the core Immortal Gu is rank six, this killer move can work against rank seven Gu Immortals. But against rank eight, it will not be effective."

Old Oracle's explanation sounded modest, but it was actually a threat to Qin Bai Sheng to not play any tricks.

Qin Bai Sheng's expression was very ugly, he understood what Old Oracle was trying to say.

"I lost to one move, Feng Jiu Ge, you are really amazing. My skill was inferior, I admit my defeat, ask away. But you can only ask three questions." Qin Bai Sheng said.

"You!" A few Central Continent Gu Immortals were unhappy, they frowned as they emitted killing intent.

Feng Jiu Ge smiled: "No problem, three questions are enough."

"Ask quickly, I have no time to waste." Qin Bai Sheng spat out the last mouthful of jade blood, regaining a bit of his grandeur.

"The first question, who is the person who sold these Immortal Gu, Delight in Water and Mountain and Worldly Wave Trace?"

Qin Bai Sheng was stunned, he imagined Fang Yuan's appearance, feeling sour and bitter within: Sha Huang, oh Sha Huang, you were the one who brought harm to your brother!

Thoughts flashed across his mind as Qin Bai Sheng replied plainly without hesitating: "This seller is called Sha Huang, he is an immortal zombie."

"Sha Huang... immortal zombie..." Feng Jiu Ge muttered: "Continue speaking."

Qin Bai Sheng continued: "I only met this person recently, because I used my rank six luck inspection Immortal Gu and saw that this person's luck was greater than normal, I befriended him. This person has a mysterious origin, it seems he has a backer. In this auction, he sold thirteen Gu Immortal captives. Among them, there was a rank seven Gu Immortal, Rushing Thunder Hand Wu Hao.

Furthermore, he has a close relationship with Fairy Li Shan, that is all I know.”

Once he said that, Qin Bai Sheng’s body shook as his skin burst open, blood poured out like a fountain with no sign of stopping!

Qin Bai Sheng growled in pain, concentrating as he activated his healing Immortal Gu.

After a dozen breaths, he stabilized his injuries, but the pain was too unbearable, his body was still shivering slightly.

This was due to the previous alliance agreement. Now that he leaked the information, he had broken the agreement and was facing an intense backlash, his life was in danger.

Feng Jiu Ge looked at Qin Bai Sheng, then turning around to look at Old Oracle.

The colorless bamboo in Old Oracle’s hands was swaying without a trace of a change in color. This proved that Qin Bai Sheng’s words were all truthful.

Thus, Feng Jiu Ge continued to ask: “The second question is regarding the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, tell me all that you know.”

Qin Bai Sheng heard this and his expression became very ugly.

An hour later, the Central Continent Gu Immortals watched as Qin Bai Sheng flew into the sky, becoming a small black dot as he vanished from their vision.

One of them was not satisfied: “Lord Feng Jiu Ge, are we really letting him off? He has so many Immortal Gu with him, he even has almost half of the immortal materials traded in the auction!”

Feng Jiu Ge shook his head: “It is not that I do not want to strike, but I found out that he has a method to detonate his soul, just the aura of it alone is terrifying. If we force him, he will probably drag a few of you down with him. By then, our plan to get information would fail.”

“It’s actually like this?!” The Gu Immortals were uncertain.

Feng Jiu Ge said with deep meaning: “Look at this colorless crystal bamboo, you can tell if I lied.”

Everyone kept quiet.

Old Oracle smiled sheepishly, retracting his immortal killer move.

He changed the subject: “Thanks to Lord Feng Jiu Ge, we obtained these clues, it will really help in deducing the true culprit.”

Feng Jiu Ge nodded: “We will split into two groups now, one will protect Old Oracle and let him deduce in peace. The other will follow me and go to Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, finding out news about Sha Huang. If Sha Huang is a member inside Zombie Alliance, we will capture him on the spot, that would be the best outcome.”

The Central Continent Gu Immortals listened to him, they split into two groups and retreated rapidly.

Fifteen minutes later, several blurry silhouettes landed here.

“This... how can this be?” Looking at the green jade field in front of them, He

Lang Zi could still sense the power of this killer move, wariness flashed in his eyes.

“Oh no, Qin Bai Sheng was ambushed, they have already fought.” Hei Cheng had rich experience, his expression sank when he saw this.

Fairy Jiang Yu quickly took out a set of investigative Gu, after checking, she let out a breath of turbid air: “Thankfully, even though they fought, Qin Bai Sheng was not captured, he has already escaped in that direction.”

Fairy Jiang Yu’s investigative method made Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi gasp in shock in their minds.

When the Central Continent Gu Immortals left, they had erased all of their traces, but when Fairy Jiang Yu used her method, she managed to expose more than ten Gu Immortal auras.

These auras all differed, they were in all kinds of sizes, among them, the aura that Feng Jiu Ge left behind was the largest, far greater than the rest.

“Qin Bai Sheng managed to escape from the ambush of more than ten Gu Immortals?” Xue Song Zi was surprised: “We are only five people, how can we trap Qin Bai Sheng?”

“Don’t worry, I have a method.” The mysterious black robed Gu Immortal said in a hoarse voice.

Fairy Jiang Yu retrieved her Gu worms, she showed an anxious expression: “Go, in that direction, let’s chase him!”

Lang Ya blessed land.

“What a huge piece of spiky metal! Wow, a thousand and five hundred kilograms of death water! This, these are actually jade wood eggs, wow... so many! Fang Yuan, you are so crafty and scheming, you did not disappoint me at all.” Lang Ya land spirit looked at the mountain of immortal materials, while having a joyous expression mixed with pain.

Not only were the quality of the immortal materials in front of him good, they were huge in quantity, the land spirit was pleased. But when he thought about the four to six split between him and Fang Yuan, he felt bitter deep inside.

Those thirteen Gu Immortal captives were all from Lang Ya land spirit’s work. But now, Fang Yuan was gaining a huge profit from them, he felt very uncomfortable.

“Actually, if you want the immortal materials, it is not impossible.” Fang Yuan said.

Lang Ya land spirit stared with his eyes wide open, he was not happy, instead, he showed intense alertness: “Rascal, what scheme are you up to now?”

He was scared of falling into Fang Yuan’s trap.

“You have a lot of hairy men in your blessed land, they are raised well and are good at refining Gu. But mine are quite inferior. I have a lot of mortal Gu to refine, help me refine these Gu and I’ll pay for it using immortal materials. Don’t be afraid, this is a fair trade.” Fang Yuan said warmly.

Lang Ya land spirit’s eyes rolled, without thinking for too long, he agreed: “Alright, since I often help that inkman lad anyway, I’ll take your business too.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 769: Testing Immortal Gu

Hu Immortal blessed land.

A crystal mountain stood high at the center of Hu Immortal blessed land; it was recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> — Dang Hun mountain.

Fang Yuan was hovering above Dang Hun mountain in his original form, with a height of six meters, a green face with sharp fangs, imposing build and eight monstrous arms.

However, when compared to Dang Hun mountain, he was minuscule like an ant.

Fang Yuan’s eyes let out bright light as he looked at Dang Hun mountain below him, and suddenly gave a shout: “Pulling Mountain!”

Next moment, a formless, majestic force erupted from within him and moved towards Dang Hun mountain.

Fang Yuan opened up his eight arms in an embracing pose, as if he was hugging a giant object. He gritted his teeth and exerted all his strength, like he was lifting a very heavy item.

Rumble...

At first, the sound was only a slight noise. But soon, the sound kept on increasing till the surroundings started to tremor slightly.

The object that was causing the sound was Dang Hun mountain.

Under the activation of Fang Yuan’s Immortal Gu, this large crystal mountain began to slowly rise, leaving the ground.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, the muscles in his eight arms bulged up like lumps of rocks.

Not only his arms, the muscles in his entire body were being exerted. Creaking noises started echoing from his body, with his bones being under extremely heavy pressure.

With his great efforts, Dang Hun mountain was lifted higher, gradually rising five to six inches from the ground.

Hu Immortal land spirit was watching this with a shocked expression, with her mouth slightly agape.

“Rise.” Fang Yuan wanted to properly test the Immortal Gu, and did not stop even at this stage.

Rays of light started to gradually shine from his body.

These rays were all over his whole body, but were not close together and looked extremely sparse.

The rays of light started getting brighter; at the same time, the speed at which Fang Yuan raised Dang Hun mountain was also becoming faster.

At first, the mountain was only raised by inches, now it was ascending foot by foot.

While activating the Immortal Gu Pulling Mountain, Fang Yuan observed his body as well.

These shiny rays of light on his body were strength path dao marks.

Strength path dao marks covered his whole body without any particular order; some got entangled and gathered into one ray, while some occupied certain parts of his skin by themselves.

“I activated the Immortal Gu, Pulling Mountain, with all my strength, and the strength path dao marks on me resonated with the Immortal Gu. The power of the Immortal Gu did not change, but I could bring out close to twenty percent more strength from this resonance!”

Fang Yuan persisted for a while longer, until all the bones on his body started cracking; Dang Hun mountain was lifted to a height of two to three hundred feet, before he slowly placed it back down.

The enormous and heavy mountain landed on the ground, producing a reverberating noise, like that of muffled thunder, and raising a billowing wave of dust.

Fang Yuan breathed roughly, his whole body was worn out and limp, there were many injuries to his muscles as well.

However, a few breaths later, with an immortal zombie’s powerful regenerative ability, all his injuries, whether they were in bones or muscles, recovered rapidly.

Fang Yuan’s breathing stabilized. He slowly closed his eyes, meticulously recalling the sensation from just earlier, while still hovering in the air.

Before using the strength path Immortal Gu, Pulling Mountain, Fang Yuan had gone through many kinds of deductions. Now that he was using it, his understanding was deepened, after all, true knowledge was derived from practice.

“Ever since I became a strength path Gu Immortal, there has been no increase in the strength path dao marks on my body. Thus, even after using all my effort and under the resonance of strength path dao marks, I could only increase my power by close to twenty percent.”

“Activating pulling mountain Immortal Gu will continuously consume immortal essence. Just this period of time already used up three beads of my green grape immortal essence.”

“The consumption seems very high, but considering that the target was Dang Hun mountain, it is not much.”

Dang Hun mountain was a wondrous place that could produce guts Gu, it was unique in the entire nine heavens and five regions. Not even Snowy Mountain could match the value of such a precious treasure.

Based on this, Fang Yuan speculated that it would be much easier for him if he pulled other ordinary mountain ranges compared to Dang Hun mountain.

“Pulling Mountain is good.” After a while, Fang Yuan opened his eyes and softly praised, extremely satisfied deep inside.

No mountains were easy to pull or move.

Trees had tree roots, while mountains had mountain roots. If they were casually moved, the roots could be broken and result in their destruction.

According to theory involving qi path, the whole world constituted of heaven and earth qi. The two qi converged, freely and unceasingly, forming all kinds of natural landscapes.

For instance, wind, rain, thunder and lightning were caused by abundant heaven qi mixed with occasional earth qi.

Mountains and hills were the condensation of earth qi with a bit of heaven qi blended in.

Destruction was always much easier than construction.

Mountains and rivers were easy to destroy, but could not be easily shifted. Mountain roots were connected to the earth, interlinked by earth qi. The earth qi was like the foundation of a tall building, if the mountain was forcibly pulled, it could directly break the earth qi and destroy the mountain.

However, Pulling Mountain had a mysterious ability of directly breaking the connection with the earth qi without damaging the body of the mountain. After the mountain was placed down, it could connect with the earth qi again, this was not something achievable through ordinary methods.

“Pulling Mountain, Pulling Water... let’s try this strength path Immortal Gu next.”

Fang Yuan left Dang Hun mountain and with Little Hu Immortal’s help, he instantly arrived at the blessed land’s eastern area, hovering in front of a lake.

The eastern part of Hu Immortal blessed land was covered in lakes of all sizes. It was the result of Fang Yuan linking the east and the north, using water to extinguish fire in the past. At that time, countless rockmen had been sacrificed.

Now, the lakes here were supporting the habitats of large amounts of blue jade carps, many air bubble fishes and a few water wolf groups.

Above the lakes, there were many dark clouds linked continuously.

Large numbers of star fragment grass were planted on the dark clouds, forming grasslands in the sky. In the grasslands, groups of starlight fireflies were fluttering about. Among the ordinary firefly groups, there was a higher than average proportion of starlight firefly Gu mixed in them.

Thus, although there were thick dark clouds over the eastern part of the Hu Immortal blessed land, starlight shined brightly all over the area. In the sky was a grassland of starry clouds, while on the ground were lakes spread all over, sparkling and reflecting the starlight.

Fang Yuan flew above the largest lake, activating pulling water Immortal Gu.

A similar formless force penetrated into the lake.

Fang Yuan slowly raised two hands and immediately with a splashing sound, large amounts of lake water were lifted into the air.

Compared with pulling Dang Hun mountain, Fang Yuan felt that pulling the lake water here was as easy as picking up paper. There was an enormous difference between the two.

The lake water's state was still the same as before with no change. Large numbers of fish, shrimps, eels and turtles were freely moving around inside.

It was only that they were not able to swim beyond the periphery — a formless force held up the lake water in place of the lake shore.

Underneath the floating lake, the bottom of the lake had completely dried up, without a trace of water left behind. Large amounts of water plants were piled up on the lake bed, along with stones, shells, and so on.

Fang Yuan moved his ten fingers in different ways, causing the formless force to change. The giant lake water was like a piece of muddy clay that allowed Fang Yuan to mold it according to his will; occasionally, it took a form of a long strip of dough, round like a ball another time, and the next moment it was finely molded into a hexahedron.

After transforming it for a while, Fang Yuan stopped moving his fingers, before exerting the thoughts in his mind.

The lake water shook nonstop, displaying all sorts of weird and strange shapes, like a deer flying, a cloud moving... but regardless of the changes, the fish groups and other living beings inside were covered by the formless force, unable to get out.

"Nice, nice!" Little Hu Immortal, who was watching from the side, laughed joyfully with bright eyes.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was also watching, and heaved a sigh: "Moving mountains and overturning rivers, it truly is the sight of an immortal's power."

Fang Yuan's thoughts moved again, and the enormous lake water slowly and gently landed back into the lake. Fang Yuan retrieved the formless force, stopping pulling water Immortal Gu. This lake was restored to its previous state, but there were waves churning on the surface of the lake, lasting for a long while.

"These two strength path Immortal Gu have specific forces. One is targeted at mountain ranges, while the other is for water. If used with kind intentions, one can bring in rain, and move mountains to open a path. If used with malicious intention, mountains can capsize and giant waves could rise up to the sky." Fang Yuan inwardly praised.

This was the battle strength of Gu Immortals.

They could directly steamroll through mortal Gu Masters like crushing ants.

"I obtained two Gu and my battle strength immediately rose explosively. But to integrate them in my immortal killer move, myriad self, won't be an easy matter. I will definitely need time and effort. Unlike the Immortal Gu, Self Strength and Strength Qi, which can almost directly merge with myriad self because myriad self's concept matches with them."

Designing a killer move was not simple.

The lightning path Gu Immortal, Vicious Lightning Fiend, had gone into secluded cultivation for several years before he was able to draw references from the blood deity Immortal Gu recipe to create the killer move, lightning deity.

Hei Lou Lan already had the mortal killer move, self strength phantom, even with this foundation, making it an immortal killer move was difficult. She had been trying so hard at it, but still had little success.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan had created blood path killer moves, and it was a result from racking his brains, spending long periods of time and making painstaking efforts.

Fang Yuan still did not have any clue on how to merge these two strength path Immortal Gu into myriad self.

But he was not worried and was even confident.

One part of this confidence came from his strength path attainment. More of it came from his incomparable confidence in rank nine wisdom Gu.

The light of wisdom could produce unlimited inspiration. This was a supreme tool in deducing Gu recipes, Immortal Gu recipes, mortal killer moves, immortal killer moves and many other things!

Looking back at this auction, Fang Yuan lost Worldly Wave Trace, Rising Azure Cloud, Delight in Water and Mountain, and gained Iron Crown Eagle Strength, Pulling Mountain, Pulling Water, Eat Strength and Unravel Mystery.

Every Gu was good, the main matter was whether they suited oneself.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength had increased by a very large scale with this auction.

“Junior brother, you gained a lot in this auction. When you completely process them, your battle strength will surely increase by several times!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng slowly flew over, praising Fang Yuan happily.

Fang Yuan nodded: “Right, I now have a desolate beast bat corpse and can add in the third pair of bat wings. Eat strength Immortal Gu and iron crown eagle strength Gu can be used to cultivate, increasing the strength path dao marks in my body. The more dao marks there are, the more power I can bring out when I use strength path Immortal Gu. There is also inch of time, memory thought Gu, malicious thought Gu and others which I need to urgently produce in large numbers. I have to combine the complete unfamiliar face and the incomplete vaguely familiar face to design an entirely new method of disguise. There is much work to be done and they all need to be carried out.”

In the coming days, Fang Yuan was definitely going to be extremely busy.

But this was a good thing.

The auction was an excellent opportunity which Fang Yuan tightly grabbed onto and made the best use of, bringing progress in more or less every aspect.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng reminded: “Don’t forget your agreement with Fairy Li Shan, the main task is to refine dream path mortal Gu to form the immortal killer move which can awaken Hei Lou Lan.”

“I understand this, you should go to Eastern Sea.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng smiled: “Shark Demon has already urged me several times over these last days. Junior brother, if there is anything, just notify me and I will immediately return.”

Fang Yuan frowned: “Be careful. We have revealed many things in this auction, also, Ma and Zhao have fallen into the hands of others, this is not good for us!”

At this moment, he was still not aware that his immortal zombie Sha Huang identity was already exposed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 770: Refining Dream Path Mortal Gu

Amidst the light drizzle, Qing Mao mountain appeared even greener than usual.

Fang Yuan sat in his room, facing his younger brother Fang Zheng.

“Brother, why are you still so stubborn? Uncle and aunt had raised us with great difficulty these last years, yet you reported them to the elders, this is really an ungrateful act!” Fang Zheng puffed up his chest, standing in front of Fang Yuan as he scolded with a righteous tone.

Fang Yuan’s expression was calm, his gaze was cold as ice as he looked around, thinking: “This dream realm is very realistic.”

Soon after, he inspected his body, seeing that in his rank three aperture, he had liquor worm, all-out effort Gu and others.

Fang Yuan’s mind settled, he thought: “This body’s cultivation level is the same as before the Three Kings blessed land time period.”

At this time, Fang Zheng said with agitation: “Right now, there is still some time before the elders’ trial, it is still possible for brother to withdraw your case. If you really put up a case against them, your reputation will be ruined, everyone will look down on you, I will not acknowledge you as my brother!”

Fang Yuan chuckled, he stood up and walked towards Fang Zheng.

Fang Zheng took a step back: “Brother, what are you trying to do?”

Seeing him like this, Fang Yuan felt a strong sense of disgust in his heart.

“This is the dream realm’s entanglement.” Fang Yuan knew this in his heart, he held in his disgust as he walked past Fang Zheng, walking out of the door.

“Brother!” Fang Zheng turned around, grabbing Fang Yuan’s arm.

Fang Yuan could not enter or leave, he turned around and looked at his brother, the sense of disgust deep inside was growing. He had an urge to give Fang Zheng a slap before moving away.

But Fang Yuan became calmer, he grabbed Fang Zheng’s arm as he exerted strength, attempting to free himself.

But soon after, Fang Zheng’s other arm grabbed Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan sighed helplessly, a sharp light flashed in his eyes as he raised his leg, kicking Fang Zheng onto the ground.

Fang Zheng was sent crashing onto the ground, he could not get up for the time being.

Fang Yuan was freed and turned around, taking large steps and walking out of the door.

The moment he left, the scene in front of him changed.

He was in the Gu Yue clan’s discussion hall.

The elders were all seated on the two rows at the sides. The clan leader was at the center, looking down at Fang Zheng and Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan inspected himself, finding that he was kneeling on the ground along with Fang Zheng beside him.

Fang Yuan’s was fully aware, he knew that when he kicked Fang Zheng earlier, his emotions had been moved and it caused the dream realm’s entanglement to become stronger.

Previously it was the first scene, it was just a room with two people. But now in the discussion hall, it was larger than the room, and there were around ten people. Most of their faces were blurry, only Fang Zheng’s face was clearly visible.

Fang Yuan looked around, he only gazed at the clan leader for a short period of time before his face suddenly became clearer.

Fang Yuan quickly looked away, not daring to keep gazing.

The longer he looked, the more his memories would be pulled out, and the more realistic the dream realm would be. The bigger problem was getting his emotions involved, the moment emotions he invested, he would fall further into the dream realm’s entanglement.

Fang Yuan did not have any dream path Immortal Gu to help him, if he lost himself in the snare, it would be hard for him to free himself.

“Where is the Gu refinement material in the dream? Don’t tell me it is not in this second scene, but the third?” Fang Yuan looked around as he searched, but there was no result. Just as he was thinking, the clan leader spoke.

Soon afterwards, a clan elder stood out and announced to everyone that Fang Yuan was suing his aunt and uncle for trying to embezzle his parents’ inheritance.

Fang Zheng was the witness, speaking for his uncle and aunt.

As Fang Yuan listened to them, the disgust and hatred deep inside him grew, even a sense of anger was hidden within.

As the elders spoke, they were all siding with Fang Zheng, they did not treat Fang Yuan well at all.

Fang Yuan’s situation was getting more dangerous, but he still remained extremely calm. He paid careful attention to these emotions, deep within himself, he was sneering in disdain at them from beginning to end.

“The accused may enter now.” At this moment, the clan leader spoke.

Uncle and aunt appeared, they had an angry expression. The moment they spoke, they chided Fang Yuan, saying that he had an unfilial attitude. They said that this was completely a baseless accusation, there was no such thing, but all of the elders believed their words, smiling coldly at Fang Yuan.

“We will give you one last chance, do you have anything else to say?” At the end, the clan leader opened his mouth, asking Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan coldly smiled, this was the trap of the dream realm, once he spoke and triggered his emotions, he would be in danger.

Thus, he kept quiet and shook his head.

The clan leader's expression changed, he sneered as he pointed: "You are truly guilty, you have no words to rebuke us. I will now declare, you will return the nine leaf vitality grass Gu back to your uncle and aunt."

The nine leaf vitality grass appeared very fresh and lifelike, it was taken out of his aperture and handed to his uncle and aunt.

Fang Zheng kowtowed continuously, thanking: "Thank you lord clan leader, thank you elders for your clear judgment, you protected my innocent uncle and aunt's reputation."

Fang Yuan felt faint anger and sadness in his heart, but he controlled them.

His gaze was shining, he stared at the nine leaf vitality grass.

The Gu refinement material had appeared in the dream, it was this 'nine leaf vitality grass'.

"That really was full of hidden danger, the key item is involved in all sorts of ways to trigger my emotions. The more I focus on this dream material, the more my emotions would be drawn out, I would sink into the dream realm's entanglement."

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan made a move, using his primeval essence and injecting them into his Gu.

Several strength path phantoms appeared, attacking his uncle and aunt.

He took the 'nine leaf vitality grass' immediately, not staying afterwards, charging out of the door without hesitation.

"Scoundrel!" The clan leader smiled in spite of his anger, he charged out as well.

"You dare to offend your seniors, you are too audacious, you deserve death!" The elders shouted angrily, following the leader and chasing after Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had just stepped out of the door when the scene in front of him changed.

He was in a cave with countless pale white bones around him, this reminded Fang Yuan of Southern Border's Bai Gu mountain.

Because of Grey Bone Scholar's inheritance, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing worked together, eventually escaping Bai Gu mountain and hiding from the assault of Bai clan. This was a vivid memory etched in the depths of his heart.

The moment he had this recollection, the surroundings of the cave became clearer, they even changed and became exactly like Bai Gu mountain back then.

Fang Yuan was alerted, he stopped recalling his memories.

At this moment, Gu Yue clan leader brought close to ten clan elders, entering Fang Yuan's vision and chasing him.

Fang Yuan quickly retreated.

Once he died in the dream realm, his soul would take great damage, or he might even die because of the dream. In the five hundred years of his previous life, who knows how many Gu Masters fell into a dream realm’s entanglement and lost their lives inside dream realms.

According to Fang Yuan’s soul foundation, death was not possible, but his soul could get heavily injured.

Fang Yuan was not afraid of soul injuries, because he was in control of the exclusive guts Gu transaction. The problem was, if he left the dream realm due to injuries, the dream material that he had searched for with much difficulty would vanish. His work would be wasted, Fang Yuan did not want that.

As Fang Yuan escaped, he checked the nine leaf vitality grass Gu in his pocket.

The grass Gu was realistic and lifelike, Fang Yuan had a sensation deep within himself, reminding him that this was a high tier ingredient for refining dream Gu.

Fang Yuan moved about left and right, escaping into a small cave. He released a few Gu worms as a danger detection method, before sitting on the ground and refining Gu using the Gu recipe in his memories.

Halfway through the refinement, Fang Yuan was discovered by some pursuers, they blocked the only exit of the cave.

Fang Yuan sighed helplessly, he activated several strength path beast phantoms and forced his way out.

During the intense battle, he restrained his emotions and only forced them out, not killing them.

A moment later, he found a second cave and entered it to refine Gu again.

This time, the refinement was even shorter, he only finished thirty percent before he was discovered by Fang Zheng.

“He is here!” Fang Zheng shouted loudly.

Fang Yuan snorted, kicking and sending Fang Zheng flying.

At this time, an elder had arrived already, assaulting Fang Yuan from behind.

Every time he got injured in the dream, it was a huge hit to his soul.

Fang Yuan was in a dangerous situation, he turned around and summoned several beast strength phantoms, turning this elder who attacked him into meat paste.

“Fang Yuan, you will die terribly!” Before dying, this elder cursed as he shouted. His blurred face turned clearer, turning into the academy elder’s appearance.

Fang Yuan sighed deeply to himself.

During the dangerous moment earlier, he was distracted and his control over his emotions weakened, it caused him to fall deeper into the dream.

This was also the reason why he did not kill the pursuers all along.

The dream scenario could go on endlessly, it could be said to be infinite. Even if Fang Yuan killed the pursuers, new ones would appear, even if they did not appear, there would be new disturbances.

Especially when he engaged in life and death brawls, he had to concentrate, his emotions were more likely to influence his actions. There were all sorts of dreams, they involved drawing out a person’s emotions, so that they could not distinguish reality and illusions, eventually sinking into the dream realm’s entanglement, unable to wake up.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan had his previous life’s experiences, even though his achievement in the field of dream realms was pitiful, it was enough to deal with this.

After getting rid of the pursuers, Fang Yuan came to a hall, it was exactly the same as the area where he refined bone flesh unity Gu.

Here, Fang Yuan finally refined his dream path Gu worm.

As the pursuers came, Fang Yuan laughed as he muttered to himself: “Time to wake up.”

As he said this, the scene in front of him vanished and turned into pure darkness.

Fang Yuan gradually opened his eyes, the darkness faded and turned into the scenery of Dang Hun palace, just like before he entered the dream. Meanwhile, Fang Yuan was sitting on the bed, his arms grabbing at a space, it was the same as the motions of his arms in the dream.

In the dream, he was grabbing the newly refined dream path mortal Gu. Now that he was back in the real world, the dream path mortal Gu vanished.

Fang Yuan was not shocked, he checked inside his mind.

In his mind, a dream path mortal Gu was floating, the thoughts around it were like bubbles, popping and vanishing.

“The first dream path mortal Gu is finally done.” Fang Yuan smiled in satisfaction.

Dream path was different from other paths, the mortal Gu did not have physical forms, they only existed in the mind. Only dream path Immortal Gu could turn from immaterial to solid.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 771: Lord Vice Envoy

“Scoundrel, where are you trying to run to?” Dragon Commander Ye Cha led three immortal zombies as he flew in the air, they were very fast, as if like lightning.

The person they were chasing was none other than Feng Jiu Ge.

He disguised himself as an immortal zombie and tried to mix into Northern Plains

Zombie Alliance, but at the last moment, he was blocked by the dao mark door at the discussion hall entrance.

Because of this, the secret that he was not a Northern Plains immortal zombie was exposed, and Dragon Commander Ye Cha, one of the three leaders of Dark Flow Giant City, personally went after him.

Suddenly, Feng Jiu Ge stopped his movements, he turned around and looked at the pursuers, smiling as he said: “Are you having a hard time chasing me? Why don’t you stop, I just have a few questions, if you answer me truthfully, I might spare your lives.”

“What?” The immortal zombies flew into a rage.

“Scoundrel, you will not be able to escape, you dared to scheme against us, worm!” A brawny male immortal zombie said in an malicious tone.

“There might be a trap.” A female immortal zombie immediately used her investigative method, scanning the surroundings.

Almost at the same time, the female immortal zombie’s expression became stupefied, she screamed in shock.

Three Central Continent Gu Immortals appeared, together with Feng Jiu Ge, they surrounded the immortal zombies in a circle.

Feng Jiu Ge laughed lightly, he got rid of his disguise and restored his original appearance, his rank seven Gu Immortal aura emanated with no room for doubt.

The immortal zombies were all stirring anxiously.

“Rank seven Gu Immortals!” Dragon Commander Ye Cha’s face was grim, he tried to raise the morale: “So what if it is an ambush? We both have four people, the numbers are the same. You are a rank seven Gu Immortal, but I am also rank seven. Do not think that immortal zombies have low battle strength, we just refuse to do unnecessary battles normally. You Gu Immortals from another region are really daring, you dare to target Northern Plains Zombie Alliance? Hmph!”

“That’s right, don’t think I’m afraid of you!”

“A battle it will be.”

“You are all challenging our Zombie Alliance, have you thought of the consequences?”

The immortal zombies spoke, they were united as one.

Feng Jiu Ge clapped as he smiled: “By now, your letter to request support should have reached Dark Flow Giant City through your blessed land, right?”

As he said that, the other three immortal zombies’ facial expressions changed, even Dragon Commander Ye Cha’s gaze flickered.

Immortal zombies were in an awkward state, if they could avoid battle, they would try to do so. This place was not far away from Dark Flow Giant City, thus, the moment the Central Continent Gu Immortals appeared, the four immortal zombies sent the information back. This was not because they were afraid of dying, but rather, why would they not ask for reinforcements if they could?

The more people there were, the greater their advantage, even if they battled intensely, they would suffer fewer losses, and the benefits after the battle would be higher.

Those who could become Gu Immortals were astute people.

Even a battle maniac would not fight brainlessly. If that was really the case, even if they became a Gu Immortal, they would not live long.

Feng Jiu Ge looked at their expressions and cupped his fist as he praised: ” Your esteemed alliance’s dao mark door is truly impressive, I am full of admiration. Even though I have heard rumors about it, I wanted to try it for myself. But the dao mark door was left behind by a predecessor, now that I am here, I have the confidence of taking all your lives before your reinforcements arrive. I am sure that you have already noticed, even though this area seems normal, it is a battlefield killer move, isolating us from the outside world. I’m afraid your letter will not reach the alliance after all.”

The four immortal zombies’ expressions changed again.

Feng Jiu Ge sighed, his tone became more gentle, he spoke with a sense of sincerity that could move people: “I have a soul searching method, but I do not have the intention to kill you. If you cooperate with me and speak the truth, I will let you off intact.”

“Hmph, those are big words. Let’s see your methods first.” Dragon Commander Ye Cha interjected during Feng Jiu Ge’s words, if he continued speaking, the morale that he had built up might fall apart.

Other immortal zombies might give up, but Dragon Commander Ye Cha had a high status, he had his concerns – if he gave in without even trying to fight, his reputation would be ruined. How would he command his subordinates in the future? How would he remain as one of the three leaders of Dark Flow Giant City?

Dragon Commander Ye Cha charged out first, the three immortal zombies behind him split up, towards his left, behind him, and to the right, instantly forming a simple diamond formation.

Feng Jiu Ge’s smile was unchanged, nevertheless he retreated in relaxed fashion.

His opponents were too weak, he did not have the desire to fight!

From his left and right, two Central Continent Gu Immortals laughed and attacked from either side.

An intense battle of two against four unfolded, the Central Continent Gu Immortals were having the upper hand, expanding their advantage as time passed. Even though Dragon Commander Ye Cha furiously roared all the while and fought back bravely, he could not reverse the situation.

But from start to finish, the two battling Central Continent Gu Immortals did not lose control over the situation.

After fifteen minutes, Dragon Commander Ye Cha’s face turned dark, he stopped the fighting. The other three immortal zombies had little battle intent remaining, they showed a faint expression of fear.

“What questions do you have, as long as they do not infringe on the core benefits of my Zombie Alliance, ask away.” Dragon Commander Ye Cha said coldly.

“A wise man submits to circumstances, it is good that you have such an understanding.” Feng Jiu Ge’s smile became wider, he asked: “I need to know about immortal zombie Sha Huang.”

“Sha Huang?” Dragon Commander Ye Cha was stunned.

“That immortal zombie who just joined.” The female immortal zombie behind him said.

“Oh?” Feng Jiu Ge’s eyes flashed with joy, he asked earnestly: “I would like to hear more.”

At almost the same time, another intense battle was coming to an end.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh....

Fairy Jiang Yu and the others had injuries as they breathed heavily, in a rough state.

“Hmph! It was due to my inferior skills you captured me today, you are free to kill me at your own convenience! But if you want my Immortal Gu or immortal materials, you can keep dreaming.” Trapped in the middle, Qin Bai Sheng, who failed to escape, was bathed in blood as he maintained his final stance.

Fairy Jiang Yu smiled bitterly as she shook her head: “Lord Vice Envoy, we would not dare to take your life. We have said it already, you are our leader.”

“Hmph!” Qin Bai Sheng’s face was cold as ice, he was very alert: “Nonsense! In order to obtain my Immortal Gu and immortal materials, you are making up such a terrible lie. Do you think I am a child?”

“Lord Vice Envoy, you are a member of Shadow Sect. The reason why you cannot remember things is because your soul was modified.” Fairy Jiang Yu explained patiently.

“Bullshit!” Qin Bai Sheng rebuked angrily: “Even if something was done to my soul, it is precisely my own soul, how can I not detect anything wrong? When you make a lie, try to ensure it’s convincing.”

Fairy Jiang Yu’s smile became even more bitter, the black robed Gu Immortal said: “Lord Vice Envoy, think of this from another angle. We are not stupid, why would we use this lie out of all excuses? The reason why your soul looks like it’s unmodified is because we used our sect’s supreme methods. Even a rank nine Gu Immortal cannot find any issues with it. But there is a problem, because the person himself cannot detect it due to the perfection of the modification. As time passes, he would become another person entirely.”

“Lord, you had personally designed this plan from the beginning. I had warned you that this was dangerous. After all, Lord Envoy himself was a great example. But lord was insistent on this, you said that to deceive the enemy, you need to deceive yourself. Inside this soul path Immortal Gu, your remnant soul is inside. As long as you fuse it into yourself, you will learn about the truth.” Fairy Jiang Yu said, taking out a soul path Immortal Gu.

Qin Bai Sheng looked at this Immortal Gu silently.

Fairy Jiang Yu continued: “Actually, Lord Vice Envoy, you must have noticed. In the battle earlier, we did not use any fatal methods, even when you injured us heavily, we did not have any intention to kill you. I’ll give this Immortal Gu to you, you can inspect it yourself.”

The soul path Immortal Gu flew slowly, landing in front of Qin Bai Sheng.

“She really gave it to him.” Xue Song Zi, who was at the side, watched in shock.

Hei Cheng was expressionless, he healed his injuries as he watched.

Qin Bai Sheng was extremely alert, he used many methods to inspect it, after confirming that the Immortal Gu had no issues, he placed it in his hands and looked into it mentally.

Soon, he realized that there really was a lump of soul inside this Immortal Gu.

Furthermore, this lump of soul vaguely seemed to have a close relationship with him.

Qin Bai Sheng hesitated for a moment before chuckling, he squeezed with his fingers and broke the Immortal Gu: “Scoundrels! This method was your trump card, right? Even using all my knowledge and experience, I could not see any flaws, but your attempt to trap me, even with your glib tongues, will end in failure!”

“This!” Xue Song Zi shouted reflexively, he felt heartache. This was an Immortal Gu, he actually destroyed it.

Hei Cheng was a little surprised, towards Qin Bai Sheng’s action, he couldn’t help but feel a sense of admiration.

This was absolute self-confidence that could allow this action of his.

Even in a desperate situation, Qin Bai Sheng’s confidence towards himself had never wavered.

Hei Cheng thought to himself: If it were him, facing such words from his enemies, what would he choose to do?

“Lord Vice Envoy, you!” The black robed Gu Immortal shouted, he became anxious: “How will we salvage this now?”

“No worry.” Fairy Jiang Yu’s lips curled up: “As expected, Lord Vice Envoy understands yourself best. If this was any other place, when the Immortal Gu was destroyed, the soul would dissipate. But thankfully, we spent a lot of effort and moved you here.”

“Hmph, where are we now?” Qin Bai Sheng shouted as he asked.

The surrounding fog was thick, as Fairy Jiang Yu waved her sleeves, wind blew as they scattered, revealing a mountain wall.

Qin Bai Sheng, Hei Cheng, and Xue Song Zi realized that they were in a valley now.

“Luo Po valley?!” Qin Bai Sheng took a few glances and his heart jumped.

“As expected of Lord Vice Envoy.” Fairy Jiang Yu waved her sleeves, countless Gu worms flew up from the valley, using an immense number of white lotus giant silkworm Gu as the foundation, they formed a super Gu formation.

The Gu formation activated, the force in it shocked He Lang Zi, Hei Cheng, and Xue Song Zi.

“Ah—!” Qin Bai Sheng shouted in pain.

After a dozen breaths of time, everything ended.

Tens of Gu worms, including a good number of Immortal Gu, flew up from the valley, returning to Qin Bai Sheng’s immortal aperture like birds returning to their nest.

Qin Bai Sheng regained his full strength!

“Finally, I am back...” Qin Bai Sheng looked at his hands, he said in a low voice, his expression was cold.

“Subordinate pays respects to Lord Vice Envoy, congratulations to lord for returning safely.” Fairy Jiang Yu and the black robed Gu Immortal knelt on the ground, while Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi bowed slightly. Only He Lang Zi was still acting rebellious, crossing his arms and watching coldly.

Qin Bai Sheng recalled everything that happened, snorting coldly: “Feng Jiu Ge... I will remember this, sooner or later, I will settle the score with you. Jiang Yu, you only found these people? Just them alone will not be able to take down Lang Ya blessed land.”

“I have performed poorly in this task.” Fairy Jiang Yu rapidly lowered her head and admitted error.

Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi’s expressions changed, but He Lang Zi opened his mouth and showed his sharp teeth, growling: “Qin Bai Sheng, never mind that you are acting so mysteriously, you actually dare to look down on me?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 772: Silence and Sigh

BOOM!

Amidst an intense explosion, He Lang Zi was like a pile of mush as he collapsed in the huge pit.

He tried to get up, but it was like there was a huge formless mountain pressing down on his body, the immense weight prevented him from moving at all.

He Lang Zi’s eyes were blood red, his expression was distorted, he growled unceasingly.

Qin Bai Sheng’s arms were lowered, he looked at the pit expressionlessly, at the struggling He Lang Zi.

“One move, just one move, he completely immobilized He Lang Zi!” Xue Song Zi’s eyes were full of shock.

Hei Cheng squinted, he hid the intense shock in his mind as he thought: “What immortal killer move is this? Once he used it, He Lang Zi was unable to use a single killer move! He Lang Zi was completely immobilized, but his body is unharmed, this should be a soul path killer move...”

As for Fairy Jiang Yu, she showed no sign of surprise.

Meanwhile, the mysterious black robed Gu Immortal’s face was covered by his hood, his expression could not be seen.

“If, if you have the guts, let me use my killer moves! Sneak attacking me from the start, how strong can you be? I refuse to accept this!” He Lang Zi almost cracked his teeth, he was sprawled in the pit as he looked at Qin Bai Sheng, speaking with much difficulty and anger.

Qin Bai Sheng snorted in disdain, he looked down at He Lang Zi as he smiled slightly: “Striking first gives you the advantage, does a demonic path Gu Immortal like you not know that? It seems that I overestimated you, in a real battle, who would care if you accept it or not? As long as the enemy is defeated, that is true ability!”

As he said this, Qin Bai Sheng paused, his expression turned cold: “Right now, you are meat on the chopping block, you are at my mercy. You are to accept this whether you like it or not. I will give you three breaths of time, submit to me, or I will kill you right here.”

He Lang Zi did not hesitate: “I submit!”

Qin Bai Sheng laughed, releasing the restraint.

He Lang Zi felt the pressure lifting, he laughed fiendishly as he used his immortal killer move.

At once, a piercing bright light shone out. The light came as quickly as it faded, soon after, a huge and menacing wolf appeared.

The huge wolf opened its mouth, pouncing on Qin Bai Sheng.

Qin Bai Sheng stood at the edge of the pit, his size was a huge contrast to the huge wolf.

Before the huge wolf reached him, a strong burst of wind blew, causing several of the Gu Immortals’ robes to flutter in the wind.

He Lang Zi turned into a huge wolf, he attacked with rage, he had an imposing aura. Xue Song Zi and Hei Cheng retreated, afraid of getting caught up in it.

Qin Bai Sheng was very close to him, seeing the huge wolf approaching, he did not move, he showed a cold smile on his face, evidently, He Lang Zi’s attack was not out of his expectations.

BOOM!

Another loud bang entered everyone’s ears.

The huge wolf cried out, falling from the sky, its four paws were on the ground, a huge force was pressing down on the wolf’s body.

He Lang Zi was now just like earlier, completely immobilized again.

In his huge wolf eyes, he showed unbelieving shock, he looked at Qin Bai Sheng as he shouted: “This move again! What is this move called?”

“It is not a big deal to tell you.” Qin Bai Sheng laughed: “This immortal killer move is called soul suppression. It uses the foundation of my soul to suppress your soul. Even though your body is strong, this move directly targets your soul. Without any immortal transformations that can resist soul path techniques, whatever beast you turn into cannot defeat me. He Lang Zi, I give you one final chance now, submit to me... or die.”

Facing Qin Bai Sheng’s immense power, He Lang Zi turned silent.

Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi looked at each other, they sensed this series of events was anything but reassuring.

...

“Sha Huang...” Feng Jiu Ge looked at Dragon Commander Ye Cha and the others who were leaving, his mouth muttering unendingly.

“The information we obtained this time has no practical use.” Around Feng Jiu Ge, the Central Continent Gu Immortals were mumbling in unhappiness.

“No, we obtained a lot of information.” Feng Jiu Ge chuckled: “Firstly, this immortal zombie, Sha Huang, was able to enter the Zombie Alliance, it proves that he is a Northern Plains Gu Immortal. Even if he is not born here, he definitely ascended into an immortal here. Since he disguised himself, that means that his true identity cannot be known to others. Finally, he has a huge force or some great expert backing him up. This force might be the one which caused the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!”

“Lord Jiu Ge makes much sense.” Towards Feng Jiu Ge’s deduction, the other three immortals nodded in agreement.

“What should our actions be next?”

Feng Jiu Ge thought for a while before saying: “We will meet up with Old Oracle’s group and tell the new information to them, allowing them to do further deductions.”

...

Snowy Mountain blessed land, first peak.

“What? Soft jade sand hasn’t been fully collected yet?” Old Ancestor Xue Hu looked at the list as he questioned unhappily.

The person he was questioning was the owner of the fourth peak of Snowy Mountain, Li Peng Wang.

Li Peng Wang, who had a fierce reputation and rebellious nature, lowered his head, saying politely: “Old Ancestor, please appease your anger, I met with a group of sky chief beasts, I had to stop my collection. If I go to white heaven again, I will definitely succeed.”

“Mm, go ahead and prepare. I am not targeting you, but this is the first round of immortal material collection, and you already had such a problem. How will you prove yourself and remain as the fourth peak’s owner? I raised you to this spot personally, with this poor performance, what will the other peak heads think of me?” Old Ancestor Xue Hu said a few more sentences before waving his sleeves, asking Li Peng Wang who was apologizing to leave.

“Li Peng Wang had bad luck, he was attacked by a sky chief beast group. He was heavily injured, but he still brought back a portion of the soft jade sand, it was already not easy.” After Li Peng Wang left, a female immortal walked out from the hall behind.

In the entirety of Snowy Mountain blessed land, only this female immortal could speak to Old Ancestor Xue Hu with such a tone.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu looked over at the female immortal, his expression became more gentle: “Wife, you do not know the crucial information in this, thus you think I am overly harsh on the peak heads. I searched Ma Hong Yun’s soul, I know all of this lad’s history. Fortune rivalling heaven Gu’s power is truly fearsome. Do you think Li Peng Wang’s encounter was coincidental? That is not the case. Not just him, the other peak heads also faced difficulty when collecting the materials. All this is due to Fortune Rivalling Heaven affecting us secretly. Any acts that would harm its owner would cause a backlash from

Fortune Rivalling Heaven, suppressing our luck.”

“There is such a thing?” The female immortal, Lady Wan Shou, asked.

“According to the theory of luck, us Gu Immortals have extraordinary luck that protects us. But Fortune Rivalling Heaven is the emperor of luck, thus, we are still affected by it. The longer this drags on, the more uncertainties would occur. In the end, not only would the Gu refinement fail, we might even attract a huge disaster.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu explained slowly.

As the owner of the second peak, Lady Wan Shou understood now, she thought about it before frowning: “If that is the case, wouldn’t it be a huge obstacle when I refine Gu?”

Lady Wan Shou was one of the four most famous refinement path Gu Immortals in Northern Plains, according to Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s plan, she was supposed to use Ma Hong Yun as the main material and refine fortune rivalling heaven Gu at the end.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu nodded: “That is why this time, not only do we need to prepare several sets of Gu refinement immortal materials, we also need to use other luck path Immortal Gu to protect our luck. Thankfully, Ma Hong Yun is the main material, we saved a lot of immortal materials compared to refining Fortune Rivalling Heaven from scratch.”

“Even so, we prepared way too many immortal materials, we are almost going to exceed Snowy Mountain’s capability. This refinement is way too important, we almost used up all of our life savings.” Lady Wan Shou frowned as she said.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu laughed, holding her waist, he consoled: “Wife, you’re afraid that the refinement will fail?”

Lady Wan Shou nodded, looking at her husband: “Even a refinement path great grandmaster could fail, let alone me?”

“Hahaha, just go ahead and refine it, wife, whether it succeeds or fails, I will accept the result without any hatred or anger. I have already used up all of my potential to reach this level, I have no confidence in my future calamities and tribulations. Fortune rivalling heaven Gu is my hope of breaking this situation, oh, hopefully, it will succeed in time.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu said as he sighed.

...

“Fang Yuan, go and carry that box of goods.” The caravan steward pointed at a box, shouting loudly.

“Yes.” Fang Yuan replied, climbing onto a black skin fat beetle as he moved that wooden box from the very top.

“This lad actually has strength path cultivation, I totally missed it.” Seeing Fang Yuan completing his mission easily, the caravan steward’s eyes shined with a cold light: “No, I already promised second young master, I cannot fail!”

Thinking so, the caravan steward raised his whip and lashed at Fang Yuan’s back.

With a loud cracking sound.

Fang Yuan’s shirt was torn open, a deep whip scar was imprinted on Fang Yuan’s back.

The intense pain assaulted his heart, Fang Yuan fell on the ground and shivered as blood quickly oozed out of his wound.

In his previous life, in the caravan, because he rejected a certain young master’s recruitment, he was heavily suppressed and humiliated, the memories were surfacing again.

A sense of rage rose deep within Fang Yuan, but he quickly suppressed it.

“Why are you wasting time, move quickly!” The caravan steward was simply finding trouble with him, he scolded Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had rank three cultivation level, but he did not use it.

After all, with enough power, he would have killing intent, that was the dream realm’s trap, luring him to attack so that his rage could be drawn out.

After enduring for a day, facing difficulties from the steward, Fang Yuan went into the tent and refined his dream path mortal Gu.

“Five scenes had passed in this dream realm, I am going to succeed.” Fang Yuan looked at the Gu worm that was forming, feeling pleased.

But during the night, just as he was refining the Gu, a group of beasts charged into the caravan’s camp, even with Fang Yuan’s defensive methods, he could not defend himself from the assault of the beast group, he ended in failure.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes, leaving the dream realm, he was still in Dang Hun palace.

Checking his immortal aperture, he found a message from Fairy Li Shan.

It explained her current circumstances, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had ordered all of the peak heads to collect immortal materials. Fairy Li Shan had left Snowy Mountain blessed land and it was not safe to leave Hei Lou Lan alone. Thus, Fairy Li Shan urged Fang Yuan to hurry up, and she also told him about the situation in Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, someone was investigating Sha Huang’s identity.

“They have investigated to this extent already?” In the dim room, Fang Yuan frowned and sighed faintly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 773: Saving Hei Lou Lan

Originally, when Fang Yuan joined the auction, he had expected that there would be many clues left behind, it would give others many important clues to investigate.

But the other party’s investigation was faster than Fang Yuan’s expectations.

But compared to his gains, this was an inconsequential cost.

Fang Yuan quickly focused his mind, using the dream realm mortal Gu in his mind to enter the dream realm again.

Ever since he refined the first dream realm mortal Gu, because he had an advantage of using dream path Gu, his dream realm exploration became easier, and his efficiency became higher.

Dream realms were deep, traps were everywhere. Because of Fang Yuan's experience from his previous life, he avoided most of the dangers, in his first ten dream realm trips, he could refine three dream realm mortal Gu.

But as the number of dream path mortal Gu increased, his success rate rose from thirty percent to fifty percent.

Fifty percent success rate was one of the highest in the present-day five regions. Because dream realms had just started manifesting, although most of the forces had some gains, they were starting from scratch, exploring step by step.

Like this, he refined Gu endlessly without any rest, half a month later in Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan finally succeeded in refining enough dream path mortal Gu. Using these dream path mortal Gu, he used unravel mystery Immortal Gu as the core, managing to form an immortal killer move — Unravel Dream!

With this trump card, Fang Yuan immediately informed Fairy Li Shan.

Fairy Li Shan was out for the moment, collecting immortal materials for Old Ancestor Xue Hu. When she heard Fang Yuan's news, she stopped her work, disregarding Old Ancestor Xue Hu's chastisement, and returned to the third peak.

After seeing Fang Yuan, Fairy Li Shan did not continue to hide that secret, she told him about it.

Before Su Xian Er died, she had left behind a familial emotion with her daughter, Hei Lou Lan. Precisely because of this familial emotion, Hei Lou Lan could use Su Xian Er's green grape immortal essence. This allowed Hei Lou Lan to use Immortal Gu in Imperial Court blessed land when she was a mortal.

When Fang Yuan heard this secret, he was not surprised.

In truth, he had made many guesses towards the cause of Hei Lou Lan's ability to use Immortal Gu as a mortal.

Right now, his guess was confirmed, it was not out of Fang Yuan's expectations.

Even so, Fang Yuan still frowned: "This is bad! One should not be influenced by their emotions in a dream realm, otherwise they will sink deeper into it. With this familial emotion's influence, my immortal killer move's power will be greatly reduced!"

"What do we do?" Fairy Li Shan's expression changed, her worry was oozing on her face.

She was not worried about Fang Yuan lying to her, because of the Snowy Mountain Alliance, both sides could not lie to each other.

Fang Yuan did not lie, the killer move unravel dream had limited power. Right now, with her being deeper in dream realm, unravel dream killer move's power became more limited.

Fang Yuan's expression was grim: "Right now, we can only give it a try. Sigh, I had seventy to eighty percent confidence earlier, but now I only have twenty to thirty percent. All in all, this was too short of a time period, I have limited dream path mortal Gu."

"Twenty to thirty percent... what if you fail?" Fairy Li Shan immediately asked.

“If I fail, my soul will take major damage. But Hei Lou Lan is the owner of the dream, she will still be deep in her dream without any damage. But there is a benefit, once I use unravel dream, the dream realm will weaken, towards Hei Lou Lan, this is a good thing without a drawback.” Fang Yuan spoke the truth.

“That’s good...” Fairy Li Shan let out a breath of cloudy air, relieved. But suddenly, she realized her words were inappropriate, she turned to look at Fang Yuan apologetically, lost for words.

Fang Yuan waved his hand, stopping Fairy Li Shan from speaking: “Say no more, fairy, I am not a petty person. The situation is urgent now, our identities are being searched. To prevent any issues from arising further, saving Hei Lou Lan is a top priority. Even if I fail, once I weaken the dream realm, it will help for the next time I enter it. Alright, enough talk, will you guard my surroundings?”

“That is only natural.” Fairy Li Shan thanked him courteously.

Next, Fang Yuan sat beside Hei Lou Lan who was lying in her bed, activating the dream path mortal Gu in his mind.

These mortal Gu were in his mind, arranging themselves into a mystical Gu formation.

As they activated one by one, the Gu formation started.

At the last step, Fang Yuan used his green grape immortal essence and activated unravel mystery Immortal Gu.

Unravel mystery Immortal Gu gave off a bright light in his immortal aperture.

The light rushed up into his brain, after being converted by the dream path Gu formation, it turned into a green-purple light.

Fang Yuan opened his blood red eyes, as a green-purple light flickered in his pupils.

Immortal killer move — Unravel Dream!

A loud sound rang out in Fang Yuan’s mind.

The scenery in front of him changed drastically, Fang Yuan was still sitting on the ground, but he was not in Fairy Li Shan’s secret room, but in a hall instead.

“I am inside Hei Lou Lan’s dream realm.” Fang Yuan’s body shook slightly, he had an understanding deep within himself, he diverted his gaze and looked around.

A banquet was being held in the hall.

The higher-ups of Su tribe were hosting a young Gu Master enthusiastically.

Su tribe leader raised his cup, laughing loudly: “Young master Hei Cheng, a toast to you.”

Hei Cheng was sitting at the front of the left row, he raised his cup with both hands: “Thank you, Su tribe leader.”

Saying this, he raised his head and gulped the drink in one mouthful.

The rank three elders around him were cheering at Hei Cheng for having such a candid attitude.

Hei Cheng cupped his fists, his tone carried the aura of pride that a young genius was meant to have.

Fang Yuan saw this and had a thought in his mind.

Looking at himself, he was an elder of Su tribe in this dream realm. His aperture was full of wood path mortal Gu, there was quite a number. Fang Yuan just need one look to know that he was a rank three wood path healing Gu Master.

Fang Yuan frowned, wood path was not his specialty, even more so a healing Gu Master.

He sighed mentally, consoling himself: “This is not my own dream realm, as an outsider, having rank three cultivation level is already quite good. But I wonder where Hei Lou Lan is?”

Just as he was thinking that, a female came out of the back of the hall, wearing an attendant’s attire, she resembled Hei Lou Lan and had an incredibly beautiful appearance. But she was less dominating and more gentle, her aura was quite different from Hei Lou Lan.

“It is Su Xian Er.” Fang Yuan thought, recognizing this woman.

Su tribe leader’s cup was empty, Su Xian Er carried the wine and was about to pour it, but Su tribe leader chided her instead: “You must be blind, go pour wine for our Su tribe’s esteemed guest!”

Su Xian Er replied meekly, walking over to Hei Cheng’s table.

Hei Cheng’s gaze was shining, he looked at Su Xian Er’s face, only until she finished pouring the wine did he jolt to awareness.

Looking at Su Xian Er’s retreating back, he stood up and asked: “May I know your name miss?”

Su Xian Er turned around, bowing as he lowered her head, replying softly: “My name is Su Xian Er.”

“Su Xian Er... Xian Er...” Hei Cheng muttered, he only sat down after Su Xian Er entered the hall and left his vision.

“Hahaha.” Su tribe leader saw all of this, he laughed: “Xian Er is a girl I brought back from the battlefield many years ago. My wife had been raising her all these years, watching her grow up, even though she has the status of an attendant, we treat her like our own daughter.”

“Is that so.” Hei Cheng muttered, he continued feasting, but the food felt flavorless.

After the banquet ended, Hei Cheng was given a high class guest room to stay in.

Su tribe leader gathered the elders, discussing about the plan to kill Hei Cheng in the secret room.

“Tribe leader, are we really striking? They are Hei tribe, a super force that has Gu Immortals.” An elder was worried.

Su tribe leader’s expression turned sharp: “So what if they are Hei tribe? Once this deal is done, our entire tribe will move to Snowy Mountain blessed land to live. By then, there will not be the Imperial Court contest or the ten year blizzard. Hei tribe is a super force, but Snowy Mountain blessed land is the headquarters of the demonic path!”

The elders were all fantasizing from these words, Su tribe leader looked around and saw everyone’s hesitant expressions, he said harshly: “At this final moment, why are you hesitating? Even if we do nothing, or even snitch to Hei tribe, what can we do? If we offend Snowy Mountain, they will not let us off! Do not forget that our entire Su tribe’s lives were saved by that fairy. If that fairy could save us so easily, she could also slaughter us all without difficulty!”

Being shocked by these words, the secret room became chilly, the elders saw this fact and finally faced reality.

“Tribe leader is right! We had already made that Hei Cheng lad drunk, I will strike now and take his head!” The battle hall elder shouted.

“It will not be easy to kill Hei Cheng, don’t think that he is alone, there are hidden experts in the background protecting him. Hei tribe is a super force, while Hei Cheng has great talent, he will have no less than five people guarding him.” Su tribe leader spoke about the information he had.

Fang Yuan was among them, he understood what to say when he heard this: “Then we will execute the orders of lord tribe leader!”

“Yes, lord tribe leader, go ahead and give the orders!” The elders were enthusiastic.

“Alright!” The tribe leader was overjoyed, giving out orders straight away. He had obviously thought this over, he almost said them out of reflex immediately.

Because Fang Yuan was the medicine hall elder and was a healing Gu Master, he had weak offense and defense, he was ordered to deal with the strongest enemies by supporting two other Gu Masters.

The moment he left the secret room, the dream realm changed again, entering the second scene.

The night had a bright moon and strong, howling winds.

A rank three Hei tribe Gu Master stood arrogantly, looking at the surrounding people with much anger: “Your Su tribe is really daring, you dare to attack young master Hei Cheng of our tribe!”

“Don’t waste time speaking with him!”

“Kill him first, then go and help the others.”

The two Su tribe elders were acting as offense and defense respectively, charging towards the Hei tribe Gu Master, only Fang Yuan was left behind to back them up.

“I have not discovered Hei Lou Lan yet, it seems she is not here. Judging by this scene, I can only enter the third scene after killing the Gu Master here.” Fang Yuan thought about it as he activated his wood path Gu worms, healing the Gu Masters on his side.

Initially, the Hei tribe Gu Master was strong and had the upper hand. But after an intense battle, because of Fang Yuan’s healing, the two sides mutually sustained injuries and entered a deadlock.

Suddenly, the Hei tribe Gu Master shouted angrily, charging out while injured and attacking Fang Yuan.

“Oh no, stop him!”

“Medicine hall elder, dodge!”

The two Su tribe Gu Masters were shocked and furious, they lost their bearings.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 774: Unravel Dream Succeeds

Dream realms were dangerous.

In dream realms, every time one got injured, their soul would suffer great damage.

If their soul injuries were severe, they would feel sluggish, they would feel irritation within themselves, their emotions would be drawn out more easily, thus sinking deeper into the dream and be unable to free themselves.

Seeing that the Hei tribe Gu Master was attacking, Su tribe’s two Gu Masters’ hearts sank.

The Hei tribe Gu Master had strong fighting strength, even with them joining forces, they could only fight with him evenly. As the medicine hall elder, Fang Yuan’s strength was not high. The two Su tribe Gu Masters could only hope that Fang Yuan could last long enough until they could reinforce him.

But the Hei tribe Gu Master had been plotting this for a while, even if he had to risk an injury, he wanted to kill the healing Gu Master, he certainly had a strong offensive method left.

“Quickly dodge it!”

“Persevere for a few breaths, we are coming!”

The Hei tribe Gu Master quickly shortened the distance between him and Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan remained unmoved, causing the two Su tribe Gu Masters to feel anxious.

Fang Yuan was not scared at all, he laughed coldly.

He dared to enter Hei Lou Lan’s dream realm not because he was rash, but because he had prepared his trump card.

This trump card was the immortal killer move — Unravel Dream!

“Unravel.” Fang Yuan stretched out his right hand, his palm facing the Hei tribe Gu Master.

At the same time, his eyes flashed with a green-purple light.

Hei tribe Gu Master’s eyes shined with intense despair, amidst his anger and shock, his body faded and his speed became slower, when he was a few steps away from Fang Yuan, he vanished into thin air.

“What, what method is this?” The two Su tribe Gu Masters behind him were staring with shocked expressions.

“A killer move that I thought of, it is nothing important.” Fang Yuan lowered his right arm, making a random excuse.

“Nothing important!” One of the two Gu Masters stared with wide opened eyes, Fang Yuan seemed like a desolate beast in his eyes.

“Killing him in one move, had we known this, why would we fight to the death?” Another Gu Master sighed, he had a complex tone, it was a joyful yet begrudged tone.

“Alright, let’s move quickly, go and reinforce the others. The most important matter now is to kill Hei Cheng.” Fang Yuan reminded.

Su tribe’s two Gu Masters nodded, now was not the time to talk about Fang Yuan’s killer move, the three quickly moved and went to the deeper parts of the grassland.

Fang Yuan followed the two Gu Masters of Su tribe, sprinting as the scene changed again.

The night was dark, the sky had no moon, only several stars were shining.

Fang Yuan and Su tribe leader, all four people, charged towards the direction of Hei Cheng.

“I see him, after flipping over that mountain, we can reach Hei Cheng.” In their rush, an elder used his investigative Gu worm as he spoke.

“I said long ago, he was hit by my tracking Gu, no matter where he does, he will not be able to run away.” Battle hall elder said proudly.

“Academy elder died in battle, we must take revenge for her.”

“Since it is a battle, there will be wins, losses, life and death. Academy elder sacrificed herself for us, she will definitely be praised. On the other hand, Su Xian Er betrayed our tribe, helping that Hei Cheng lad escape, this is an unforgivable crime!”

Saying this, Su tribe leader’s expression was dark: “Even though Su Xian Er is my goddaughter, in the name of justice, I cannot be selfish. When we capture her, we will punish her according to the tribe rules!”

Hearing this, the other elders let out a sigh of relief, they said: “Tribe leader is wise.”

“Wise? Hehehe.” A cold laugh came from the mound behind everyone.

“Who is it?” Everyone stopped in their tracks.

A figure slowly appeared on the mound.

Su tribe leader and the others’ hearts sank, it was an enemy. With just this hiding ability, it was incredible, if they did not show up intentionally, with just their investigative methods, they would not discover them.

The question was, did they use a Gu worm or a killer move?

“To think that there was still an expert like you protecting Hei Cheng!” Su tribe leader tried to stall for time, as several elders moved out, ascending up the mound in an encircling formation.

The mysterious Gu Master looked around, but did not move, remaining at the same spot.

Suddenly, the battle on the mound erupted.

Two other mysterious Gu Masters ambushed Su tribe’s Gu Masters, striking ruthlessly and viciously. In one move, they heavily injured one, while lightly injuring the other.

The Su tribe Gu Master who was heavily injured retreated quickly, while the lightly injured one was still fighting partway up the mound.

“There was a helper!” Su tribe leader’s heart jumped when he saw this, having a bad feeling in his heart.

The three Gu Masters who suddenly appeared were experts, they had above average battle strength. They probably made many arrangements when they ambushed at this location, it would be difficult to break through their obstruction and catch up to Hei Cheng!

“Hei Lou Lan!” Fang Yuan, as the healing Gu Master, was behind Su tribe leader, his eyes shined when he saw the Gu Master partway up the mound.

The appearance of Hei Lou Lan’s body was the one she had when she was Hei tribe leader, she had broad shoulders and a thick waist, she was rough and fierce.

At this moment, she was fighting with the lightly injured Su tribe leader, they were engaged in fierce battle, her great battle strength was beating the opponent back.

She was not like Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was an outsider in this dream realm. There was no identity allocated to him in the dream originally, thus, when he entered the dream, he needed to take the place of another character.

But Hei Lou Lan was the owner of the dream, as the dream owner, she was part of the dream realm’s creation. As for her appearance, this was how Hei Lou Lan saw herself in the depths of her heart.

“Hei Lou Lan, it’s me, Fang Yuan!” Fang Yuan did not hesitate, he shouted and went past Su tribe leader, running towards Hei Lou Lan.

“Medicine hall elder!” Su tribe leader shouted in shock.

Fang Yuan did not care about him, he rapidly ascended the mound.

“Scoundrel, so you are an imposter. No wonder you had such a strong killer move!” A Su tribe Gu Master who was in the second scene with Fang Yuan exposed his identity.

“Fang Yuan?” Hei Lou Lan heard this name and her expression was dazed, but ruthless light shined in her eyes soon afterwards: “All of you, scram!”

Saying this, she waved her hand and shot a dark vortex killer move at Fang Yuan.

At the same time, the other two mysterious Gu Masters also charged at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, saying: “Unravel dream!”

Green-purple light shined in his body, be it the dark vortex or the two Gu

Masters, they vanished into thin air within a few breaths of time.

“What killer move is this?!” Seeing this, all of the remaining Gu Masters stared with wide opened eyes.

Hei Lou Lan’s gaze shined, she was very wary of Fang Yuan.

She suddenly retreated, leaving this small mound.

“Hei Lou Lan!” Fang Yuan shouted helplessly, chasing after her.

Hei Lou Lan was the dream owner, since she was dreaming now, unravel dream could not affect her.

“Chase! We must kill Hei Cheng!!” Su tribe leader and the others gritted their teeth, they had no other way now, they had to follow.

Hei Cheng seemed to be injured, he was moving slowly not far away. Beside him, Su Xian Er was holding onto him, limping forward at a slow speed.

Fang Yuan saw this and his heart jumped — this seemed like a trap!

Hei Lou Lan quickly met up with Hei Cheng and Su Xian Er.

“Strong warrior, please leave with young master, I will hold them off.” Su Xian Er did not recognize Hei Lou Lan, she shouted anxiously.

“You are a mere mortal woman, you have no Gu Master cultivation, how can you block these Gu Masters? Now that you have betrayed your tribe, you are dead meat!” Hei Lou Lan had a complex expression when she looked at Su Xian Er.

“It is too late, strong warrior, quickly leave!” As Fang Yuan got closer, Su Xian Er shouted as she turned back.

Hei Lou Lan sighed, she stretched out her palm and slammed at Hei Cheng’s head.

With a loud smash, Hei Cheng’s head broke apart like a watermelon, the brain matter flew everywhere.

Seeing this, everyone was shocked.

Hei Lou Lan raised her head, shouting: “Hei Cheng, I finally killed you with my own hands! Nobody can stop me from taking your life! Hahahaha!”

“Oh no!” Hearing Hei Lou Lan’s shout, Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

At once, the dream realm’s scene changed.

In the hall, among the toasting of wine cups, Su tribe leader and Hei Cheng were drinking together, it was a lively atmosphere.

Su tribe leader raised his cup, laughing loudly: “Young master Hei Cheng, a toast to you.”

Hei Cheng was sitting at the front of the left row, he raised his cup with both hands: “Thank you, Su tribe leader.”

“This is a recurring dream, the three scenes are looping non-stop.” Fang Yuan looked around, and inspected himself again.

He found that he was no longer that medicine hall elder, he was a rank two metal path Gu Master guard. He was standing at the door of the hall, guarding the door.

“As expected, from rank three to rank two peak stage, my strength fell.” Fang Yuan’s was bitter inside: “This is bad, Hei Lou Lan has sunk into the dream, she had no reaction even after hearing my name. The more dream realm cycles that occur, the deeper we will sink into the dream. This dream had already pulled out Hei Lou Lan’s killing intent and hatred towards her father. The more Hei Lou Lan wants to take revenge, the deeper she will sink into the dream realm. How can I wake her up?”

For a while, even Fang Yuan had no idea.

Seven days and seven nights later, in Snowy Mountain blessed land time.

Hei Lou Lan, who was lying on the bed, opened her eyes with a shift in her aura. Her lost gaze became clearer, looking at the eight armed immortal beside her bed, she understood in her heart: “So it was a dream realm, I was saved by Fang Yuan.”

Fang Yuan opened his eyes forcefully, his aura was weak and his soul had suffered a huge blow, his mind was extremely drained.

After dozens of rounds in Hei Lou Lan’s dream realm, using the killer move unravel dream, he accumulated experience and failed repeatedly. After many attempts, Fang Yuan killed Hei Cheng before Hei Lou Lan could, ruining her goal.

But the dream realm did not dissipate, Hei Lou Lan’s hatred was not resolved, the dream realm changed again.

Only until the seventeenth change, Fang Yuan roused Hei Lou Lan’s consciousness, and she realized she was dreaming.

When Hei Lou Lan understood this, Fang Yuan gained the initiative.

After eight more rounds, the two finally overcame the difficulties, breaking the dream realm and escaping.

“I am going back now, as for the compensation, Fairy Li Shan will explain it to you.” Fang Yuan’s soul was heavily injured, he did not dare to stay for long, even when he used Fixed Immortal Travel, it was with much difficulty.

“Compensation?” Hei Lou Lan was about to thank him, but when she heard these words, an ominous feeling rose in her heart.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 775: Dream Path Pioneer

Western Desert.

“Guh—!” Gu Immortal Tang Miao’s body shook, she opened her eyes and spat out a mouthful of blood.

“Another failure.” Tang Miao’s expression was pale as paper, compared to the injuries on her body, she felt even more despair towards the failure in exploring the dream realm.

Tang Miao’s soul was heavily injured, her head was spinning as her body felt heavy, she sighed in her heart: “Brother, I was useless and could not save you! Even after exploring the dream realm deeply, I could not find you.”

She shut her eyes, bitter tears flowed down her cheeks, forming two streams of tears.

A moment later, the anxious Tang clan Gu Immortals rushed over, coming to the secret room and standing in front of Tang Miao.

Tang clan’s first supreme elder, Tang Yang, frowned, he looked at Tang Miao who was sitting on the bed as he said heavily: “I did not think that after spending so much effort to borrow the rank seven emotion Gu from Xiao tribe, the dream realm exploration still suffered a heavy loss.”

“Sigh, dream realms in themselves are mystical and strange, moreover, this is Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s dream realm.” Gu Immortal Tang Lan sighed.

The Prophecy of Three Venerables had spread throughout the world, the information regarding Great Dream Immortal Venerable was known to not just Central Continent, but the super forces of the other four regions as well, most of them were exploring dream realms, accumulating experience and developing new Gu worms.

As a super force of Western Desert, Tang clan had accidentally discovered Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s dream realm many years ago.

This discovery triggered the enthusiasm of Tang clan in researching dream path.

In order to explore this dream realm, Tang clan’s number one genius Gu Immortal, Tang Fang Ming, had taken this important mission from the clan, but he suffered a great loss and was still lost in the dream realm now.

His sister, Tang Miao, in order to save her brother, had tried many times but failed repeatedly.

This loss was even more severe.

In order to explore the dream realm this time, Tang clan spent a huge sum to borrow the emotion path Immortal Gu and entrusted hope in her. The result was ice cold disappointment.

“Although the Immortal Gu was useful and could suppress my emotions, preventing the dream realm from drawing them out, this also made me an outsider. I was always in the outskirts of the dream’s core, this time, I did not even manage to discover brother’s identity.” As she sat on the bed, Tang Miao tended to her injuries as she said solemnly.

“Sigh, it seems that dream path Gu worms are needed to explore dream realms. But our Tang clan has already explored the dream realm for sixty years, we have only created over a dozen dream realm mortal Gu, they are all rank three and below. More than half of them have extremely limited use. More specifically, only four or five are suited for dream realm exploration.”

The hardest part was the start, especially at this initial stage, it was extremely difficult. The pioneers were moving forward without certainty, every small step was a huge success.

Regarding dream path, nobody had any experience, their knowledge was like sheets of blank paper. Once they passed this difficult initial step, and accumulated enough experience, their advantage would become larger, like a rolling snowball.

Towards the middle to late stage, their advantage would be clear, the difficulty of researching dream path would be greatly reduced. In Fang Yuan’s memories, there was a time when a new dream path Gu worm was created every day, the varieties were as numerous as the stars in the sky. That was a time when dream path was flourishing like flowers in spring.

In human history, each of these grand eras would lead to the birth of a supreme expert.

According to the Prophecy of Three Venerables, this grand expert should be Great Dream Immortal Venerable. But Fang Yuan did not live until Great Dream Immortal Venerable appeared.

Speaking of which, at this initial stage, Tang clan was already at the lead of the era. Even when compared to the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, their progress was among the highest.

But the limitations of this era greatly restricted them. It was like a blind man walking down a path, without any clues, they could only explore step by step, after endless effort was spent, they only had a small result — over a dozen dream path mortal Gu.

And among these results, the truly useful dream path mortal Gu were extremely few.

For example, on Earth, a newly created experimental product would be very far from military usage, and even further from civilian use.

Moreover, this innovation and exploration was not possible for every Gu Immortal — one needed talent and aptitude.

In this aspect, Gu Immortals who only followed certain rules were useless, without a creative mind, they were inferior to even mortal Gu Masters.

Tang clan had many Gu Immortals, but only Tang Fang Ming was suited for this. These dozen or so dream path mortal Gu were mostly his creation. One could say that he was the main force behind Tang clan’s dream realm exploration.

The regretful thing was, Tang Fang Ming was trapped in the dream realm now. Because of this, Tang clan’s progress had come to a halt.

Tang Fang Ming’s body was intact, the clan’s Gu Immortals were protecting it. But his soul that was in the dream realm had already left his body, it had vanished. Once one was trapped in the dream realm, their soul would weaken continuously, weakening until they died.

The Tang clan Gu Immortals, especially Tang Miao, were extremely anxious, but there was nothing they could do.

“How is my brother now?” After stabilizing her injuries, Tang Miao asked.

The supreme elders looked at each other, one of them spoke with much difficulty: “We can protect his body, but there are almost no guts Gu in the market. We... can’t buy them any longer.”

Tang Miao frowned, asking anxiously: “What is going on?”

The Gu Immortal from earlier replied: “You know that there is only one person selling guts Gu, it is a monopoly. But not long ago, this seller stopped releasing the product into the market for an unknown reason. Even though there are still guts Gu in the market, without the source supplier, it is drying out. Right now, the market cannot satisfy our demands.”

Guts Gu was among the best methods to strengthen the soul, and had no drawbacks, and most importantly it took effectiveness quickly.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had once commented, this was the number one soul strengthening method in the world, he was absolutely right.

For Tang Fang Ming, guts Gu was the method to save his life.

“Without guts Gu, brother will...” Tang Miao was anxious, her tone was flustered as she said with a shred of hope, asking: “Why are they not selling it? Is there so little circulation in the market?”

This time, Tang clan first supreme elder spoke: “We had contacted the seller and promised huge profits, but there was no response. These last days, the guts Gu that are preserving Tang Fang Ming’s life are the remaining guts Gu in the market that our tribe is purchasing with a huge sum. By now, the guts Gu supply has dried out, barely any is left.”

Tang Miao heard this and her heart sank to rock bottom, her breathing became rough.

Tang clan had ordinary soul strengthening methods. Earlier, before guts Gu were sold in treasure yellow heaven, they used these methods to preserve Tang Fang Ming’s life.

But now, Tang Fang Ming was too deep in the dream, his soul was weakening too quickly, these methods were becoming useless, the recovery could not keep up with his weakening.

Without guts Gu, Tang Fang Ming would die in his dream.

What could they do?

Tang Miao gritted her teeth, she frowned as she stared at these Gu Immortals deeply: “I don’t care! If you guys didn’t give brother that mission back then, he would not be like this. Now that he is this state, are you going to just watch?”

“You can’t say that, what do you mean just watch? These years, we in Tang clan had spent so much effort and finances to preserve Tang Fang Ming’s life, you are also one of us, you saw everything for yourself...” Third supreme elder retorted. He listed many examples, they were not false, he had the evidence and proof of their actions.

“I don’t care!” Tang Miao’s eyebrows were in a frown, her indigo color eyes were gathering rage, even though the surface was calm, it was deep like an abyss.

“Third supreme elder, say no more.” First supreme elder stretched out his hand and stopped him.

Third supreme elder stopped speaking, as first supreme elder sighed deeply while gazing at Tang Miao, who was extremely furious and stubborn.

Tang Fang Ming and Tang Miao had a close sibling relationship, all of the Tang clan Gu Immortals knew this.

This pair of siblings were once stripped of their statuses and mercilessly abandoned when they were young. The siblings went through much hardship and survived, due to a fortuitous encounter, the brother, Tang Fang Ming, became a

Gu Immortal, while his sister, Tang Miao, became a rank five peak stage Gu Master.

The two charged back to Tang clan to take revenge.

The Tang clan Gu Immortals appeared and mediated with Tang Fang Ming. Eventually, they sacrificed a band of mortal higher-ups and managed to obtain the return of Tang Fang Ming.

Compared to a Gu Immortal, even if the sacrifice was a huge number of mortals, what was that worth?

Tang Fang Ming understood the situation, he joined Tang clan and used the clan’s help to make his sister, Tang Miao, a Gu Immortal.

But Tang Miao was not as big hearted as her brother, she still had negative preconceptions against Tang clan, she had hidden resentment and indignation.

Right now, when her brother’s life was at stake, any sort of explanation was useless to her.

Thus, first supreme elder said to Tang Miao with a sorrowful expression: “I discussed this with the elders for three days and three nights, there are only three ways to help Fang Ming now.”

“What three ways?” Tang Miao’s expression softened, she immediately asked.

“The best method is to find an ancient soul beast and kill it. By fusing its soul into Fang Ming’s body, we can use killer moves to nourish his soul with that soul, allowing Fang Ming to survive this ordeal.”

“The second best method is to use the blood path Immortal Gu in the clan to use a method of sensing, forcibly retrieving Fang Ming’s soul.”

“As for the worst method, it is to find that lone cultivator, White Sea Shatuo, for help.”

After first supreme elder finished his words, the bitter expression on his face intensified.

Tang Miao listened and fell into deep silence.

After a while, she laughed grimly, raising her head and sending them out: “I need to think about this, elders, please go back first.”

As the Gu Immortals left one by one, only Tang Miao was left.

She laughed again, tears falling from her eyes, they were showing a cold, mocking expression.

“What best method? Once we use it, even if we succeed, the souls would fuse and you will be neither man nor beast. As for the second method, the chances of success are less than thirty percent, even if we do not fail, the soul called back would be greatly damaged, you might not even recognize me, your own sister. As for the last solution, there is some hope in that! Although that White Sea Shatuo is a lone cultivator, he has incredible dream path proficiency, even brother praised him many times in private. But to ask him for help, we will have to pay a huge price. These old fogies are saying that only because they are concerned about the Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable inheritance that us siblings have in our hands! Indeed, only this inheritance can move White Sea Shatuo.”

Thinking of this, Tang Miao wiped the tears on her face.

“Brother, I will not give up, even if I have to sacrifice this inheritance, I will save you.”

Tang Miao sat on her bed, even in the dim lighting, she still had the beauty of a flower.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 776: Current Situation

Central Continent, Hu Immortal blessed land, Dang Hun palace.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes slowly, his red eyes shining with a ruthless light.

Inspecting his own body, Fang Yuan nodded in satisfaction, he could not help but praise: “I’ve used it so many times already, these guts Gu are truly the best in strengthening the soul. In Hei Lou Lan’s dream, I suffered such heavy soul injuries, yet I have already recovered in such a short time.”

He breathed in deeply, his mind was refreshed, his head was no longer as dizzy as the time when he was heavily injured.

“Land spirit, where are you?” Fang Yuan called out.

“Master, master, have you recovered from your injuries already?” At the next moment, the lively Little Hu Immortal asked as she appeared before Fang Yuan, her crystal-like eyes were overflowing with intense concern.

“Mm.” Fang Yuan, who had a green face and sharp fangs, nodded: “Tell me what happened when I was healing my injuries during this time period.”

Little Hu Immortal shook her head: “There were many things that happened, but none were major matters.”

A moment later, after Little Hu Immortal reported everything, Fang Yuan remained seated in his bed, not speaking.

His mind was working intensely as he tried to process the information.

In Central Continent, Immortal Crane Sect was busy trying to salvage the situation in the reincarnation battlefield, He Feng Yang was still busy trying to save his desolate beast flying crane, Little Nine, moving about all over the region.

The ten great ancient sects each had their restrictions, they mutually restrained and balanced each other.

The person currently in the limelight was Myriad Dragon Dock’s Vicious Lightning Fiend. After coming out of his closed cultivation, he used the immortal killer move Lightning Deity and challenged a lot of people. Right now, he had battled more than twenty Gu Immortals, he only had one draw and one loss, with such amazing results, his reputation was soaring. Many meddlesome Gu Immortals were already comparing him with Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei.

These people did not have good intentions, because in accordance with Shi Lei’s nature as a battle maniac, he would find Vicious Lightning Fiend and engage in a huge battle with him.

But Shi Lei gave no response.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals were troubled, why did Immortal Monkey King’s behavior change? Even Combat Immortal Sect had become much quieter recently.

The other nine sects found something wrong, they tried to investigate secretly.

Fang Yuan knew long ago — Shi Lei discovered Starry Sky grotto-heaven, and inside the grotto-heaven, there was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm. Right now, they must be attacking the grotto-heaven at full force.

Thinking of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm, Fang Yuan was moved.

Earlier, he had no methods against it, he could only escape pitifully from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm. But now that he had the immortal killer move unravel dream, this was the supreme weapon to deal with the dream realm!

“During this period of time, dream path exploration is still in its initial stages. Any super force is still stuck at the stage of starting up, every step is extremely difficult, it is a path filled with thorns. The best methods are naturally dream path Immortal Gu, but the number of these dream path Immortal Gu could probably be counted on one’s hands. Meanwhile, I have a dream path immortal killer move, even without a dream path Immortal Gu, I am far ahead of these forces.”

Fang Yuan was getting excited.

Unravel dream was effective in dealing with dream realms. Each time he used it, Fang Yuan gained a huge advantage.

For example, just earlier, Fang Yuan saved Hei Lou Lan, after unraveling her dream realm, he obtained a lot of Hei Lou Lan’s understanding towards strength path. This added to his strength path foundation, causing it to become more abundant.

There is always something to learn from someone else, especially when Hei Lou Lan had the Great Strength True Martial Physique, she was a naturally formed strength path immortal seed, her natural talent in strength path was beyond Fang Yuan’s reach.

A portion of her strength path understanding was fully assimilated by Fang Yuan, allowing him to have great gains.

“If I can unravel Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm, my wisdom path attainment will improve greatly. Even without a complete wisdom path inheritance, I might be able to create my own one.” Fang Yuan thought.

Hei Lou Lan was only a newly advanced strength path Gu Immortal, but Fang Yuan had great gains after unraveling her dream.

If he could unravel Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm, Fang Yuan’s wisdom path attainment would shoot up like a rocket!

“However, to snatch the Immortal Venerable’s dream realm from Combat Immortal Sect is too dangerous, it is nearly impossible.” Fang Yuan shook his head.

To unravel a dream, he had to be in Starry Sky grotto-heaven, and get close to that Star Constellation dream realm.

If he did that, he would certainly be discovered.

Based on his current battle strength, even if it increased, he would not be Shi Lei’s match. Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan, compared to the rest of Combat Immortal Sect, were an even greater mismatch.

“Unless I have Tang clan of Western Desert’s immortal killer move — Steal Dream. I would be able to steal the dream realm directly from the grotto-heaven, moving it elsewhere and slowly dealing with it, devouring it at my own pace.”

In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, Western Desert’s Tang clan was the super force with the deepest foundation in dream path among the five regions. Originally, Tang clan was not outstanding among the dozen or so super forces in Western Desert, it was at a middle to lower tier.

But based on the rise of dream path, during the five regions chaotic war, Tang clan became Western Desert’s strongest force, even among the five regions, it was a power that could stand tall, creating what Western Desert people called the ‘Great Era of Tang’.

Central Continent’s current situation, even though there was slight turbulence, was still peaceful.

Even though Fang Yuan really desired Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm, his battle strength was still much lower than Combat Immortal Sect, he could only watch covetously for now.

Fortunately, at the moment, dream path was still in its initial stages of exploration, even if Combat Immortal Sect captured Starry Sky grotto-heaven, they would not be able to do anything to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm.

To make a comparison, this was like a juicy piece of meat, but it was submerged in boiling hot oil, even though Combat Immortal Sect knew that it was delicious, they could only watch for now, they could not eat it yet.

Compared to Central Continent, Fang Yuan was more concerned about Northern Plains’ situation.

He had committed a huge crime, it was still being investigated. The other party had great strength and plenty of methods, soon after the auction ended, they discovered Fang Yuan’s identity of Sha Huang, they were not simple, it was giving Fang Yuan huge mental pressure.

But when hearing Little Hu Immortal’s report, he learned that Northern Plains’ situation was much more calm than Central Continent.

Almost all of the Gu Immortals who attended the auction were trying to assimilate their gains from it, converting them into their own strength.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu mobilized the number one demonic force in Northern Plains, the full power of Snowy Mountain blessed land, to join in the plan to refine rank eight fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, it was well known in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world already.

As the number one righteous refinement path Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, Yao Huang had deepened his collaboration with Zombie Alliance. This collaboration caused Zombie Alliance’s status in Northern Plains to rise up rapidly.

Qin Bai Sheng vanished without a trace, and Prince Feng Xian, who Fang Yuan was most concerned about, also made no movements.

This calm situation did not lower Fang Yuan’s unease, he was getting increasingly worried.

The other party would certainly not let him go, once his identity was exposed, be it Central Continent or Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world, they would want to kill Fang Yuan, Hei Lou Lan and the others.

Since it involved the huge benefits of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s inheritance, even if Fang Yuan escaped to Eastern Sea or Western Desert, they would definitely pursue him, he would have no peace.

“The other party is in the dark, I wonder if it is Central Continent or Northern Plains investigating me.” Fang Yuan sighed mentally, in this period of time, he had no solutions, he could only deal with the situation by continuing with his former plans.

The only consolation was that he had made the right move by allying with Fairy Li Shan.

With Fairy Li Shan’s information network, Fang Yuan could learn about any changes in Northern Plains’ situation rapidly. With an advantage in information, he could deal with anything that happens.

“Ultimately, the issue is that I am too weak. If I was a rank eight Gu Immortal, I would be able to protect myself. Even if Giant Sun’s true inheritance was exposed to the world, so what? Oh... that is not right.”

Fang Yuan thought about the rank nine wisdom Gu and frowned.

If news that he had wisdom Gu leaked out, even if he was a rank eight, he might have rank eight Gu Immortals attacking him from all sides.

“No matter what, the urgent matter now is to absorb my gains from the auction, rapidly raising my strength, that is how I can deal with future situations.”

A few days later, Fang Yuan left the secret room in an unkempt state, but he had a joyous expression.

He expanded his wings and flew into the sky.

The large bat wings on his back had reached three pairs. It gave him a strong flying ability, his speed rose rapidly.

During the auction, he obtained a bat desolate beast’s corpse. Fang Yuan’s killer move, true solid bat wings, had finally been completed.

Iron Crown Eagle Strength!

While flying, he suddenly unleashed the iron crown eagle strength.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s speed rose drastically, earlier, he was like a stream of black smoke, but now he was like a flash of lightning. At once, Fang Yuan’s vision became blurry, the intense winds blew at him, like they were sharp daggers.

The iron crown eagle strength lasted for a short time before his speed fell back to the original level.

Fang Yuan’s vision cleared, looking back, he had moved three li from his original spot.

Flying three li in a flash!

Fang Yuan was pleased, but yet not pleased.

He was pleased because this speed was really fast, it was on par with some movement immortal killer moves. He was not pleased because the iron crown eagle strength was not controlled at will, he did not know when he could summon it.

“Unless my second core Gu – all-out effort Gu, is refined all the way up to Immortal Gu level, at that point, I will be able to unleash the iron crown eagle strength at will.” Fang Yuan thought about this and sighed.

His all-out effort Gu was still at rank four. Fang Yuan had solid finances now, but he did not have the corresponding Gu recipe.

Not long ago, he had asked Lang Ya land spirit, the answer was partly good and partly worrisome.

Lang Ya land spirit indeed had all-out effort Gu’s recipes, from rank one to five, he had them all. But Lang Ya land spirit refused to sell Gu recipes.

Even if Fang Yuan tried his best to convince him, there was no result.

Fang Yuan intended to use a dream path mortal Gu recipe to trade for it. But Lang Ya land spirit had become more astute, he did not want to trade it for any Gu recipe, he gave Fang Yuan a mission.

This mission required Fang Yuan to go into immemorial purple heaven, to search for a rank six immortal material, poisonous flowers, and collect their petals.

Fang Yuan was so busy currently, he had no time for that, with strong foes pressuring him, if he exposed his identity accidentally, he would become a fugitive, the entire world would hunt him down. Fang Yuan did not dare to relax, he was trying his best to raise his battle strength, how could he go search for poisonous flowers?

Furthermore, immemorial purple heaven was already destroyed. Even the fragment worlds was hard to find. Even if he found one, it was extremely dangerous, desolate beasts and desolate plants were very common. Fang Yuan’s current battle strength was insufficient. If he forced himself into conducting an exploration, it would simply be a difficult and unrewarding task.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 777: Deadlock

This matter gave Fang Yuan a reminder.

Even in regards to land spirits, they were not to be underestimated, they could grow with time, gaining wisdom or experience.

Ever since Lang Ya land spirit met Fang Yuan, he had suffered minor disadvantages many times, especially in this auction, the four to six profit ratio was a huge loss to Lang Ya land spirit.

As the saying goes, suffering a loss is a blessing, this was shown in Lang Ya land spirit, he had become more intelligent.

Lang Ya land spirit thought about it hard, analyzing his relationship with Fang Yuan, he finally recognized their individual strengths and weaknesses, by using Fang Yuan’s weakness in Gu recipes, he could regain the upper hand when working together with Fang Yuan.

He was, after all, the obsession of Long Hair Ancestor after he died, this time, Fang Yuan’s neck was grasped by Lang Ya land spirit, it was a terrible feeling.

But Fang Yuan could do nothing to Lang Ya blessed land.

Small advantages came at a price, Fang Yuan obtained such a profit from selling the Gu Immortal captives in the auction, the backlash was showing up now, his mouth was filled with a bitter taste.

Landing on the peak of Dang Hun mountain, Fang Yuan retracted his three pairs of bat wings as he stood on the spot, looking into the distance as he thought.

“All-out effort Gu is just a small setback, it is not an Immortal Gu recipe anyway, even if I cannot get it, with my strength path attainment and wisdom Gu’s help, I will be able to deduce the mortal Gu recipe. The problem is that it would use a lot of time and energy, at this crucial time, I cannot deduce Gu recipes if I want to raise my battle strength.”

Actually, even if Fang Yuan had a complete all-out effort Immortal Gu recipe, he had no time to refine it.

The real problem was regarding Hei Lou Lan.

The compensation that Fang Yuan asked for after saving her was self strength Immortal Gu.

After Hei Lou Lan heard about it from Fairy Li Shan, she was so angry she jumped up from her bed. Self strength Immortal Gu was her vital Immortal Gu, it was the most important core in her self strength phantom killer move!

Fang Yuan asking for this Gu was simply crippling her foundation. Without self strength Immortal Gu, Hei Lou Lan’s battle strength would fall drastically. Not only this, self strength Immortal Gu was the memento that her mother, Su Xian Er, left behind for her, to Hei Lou Lan, it was also a sentimental item that she could not give up.

But she, Fang Yuan and Fairy Li Shan had the Snowy Mountain Alliance, in order to save Hei Lou Lan earlier, Fairy Li Shan had represented her and signed an agreement with Fang Yuan, she could not go back on it.

Unless Hei Lou Lan had a heart of stone and ignored Fairy Li Shan’s life, forcefully keeping self strength Immortal Gu. In that situation, there was nothing Fang Yuan could do, after all, the agreement was not signed by Hei Lou Lan herself.

But how could Hei Lou Lan force herself to endanger Fairy Li Shan?

Fairy Li Shan was the blood related sister of her mother, Su Xian Er, when Hei Lou Lan was still a mortal, Fairy Li Shan took great care of her. After she became an immortal, Fairy Li Shan nurtured Hei Lou Lan without regard for the cost, treating her like her own child.

Hei Lou Lan was determined to exact revenge, but at the same time, she felt great gratitude, love, and admiration for this aunt.

Fang Yuan was using this key point when he formed the agreement with Fairy Li Shan, he was not afraid that she would go back on this.

Regarding her vital Immortal Gu, Hei Lou Lan did not give up easily.

Ever since she learned about it, she had tried negotiating with Fang Yuan over ten times, she threatened and screamed, begged and gave softly spoken requests, talked about the benefits and drawbacks, and tried coercing him with the bigger picture, all sorts of methods were used to try and keep her self strength Immortal Gu.

But would Fang Yuan give in?

Self strength Immortal Gu was Hei Lou Lan’s most important core, but to Fang Yuan, it was a similar situation.

Fang Yuan’s trump card was the immortal killer move, myriad self. Self strength Immortal Gu was extremely compatible with it, it was not like Pulling Mountain or Pulling Water, in which they needed him to deduce and modify the killer move.

Hei Lou Lan refined self strength Immortal Gu during her ascension, when Fang Yuan heard of this, he felt immense regret and pity.

Immortal Gu were unique, since Hei Lou Lan had this Gu, as her ally, there was no way Fang Yuan could obtain it.

But the tides of fortune were unpredictable, heaven worked in mysterious ways, Hei Lou Lan wanted to take revenge and did her best to raise her cultivation level, in the end, she fell into a dream realm and gave Fang Yuan a chance.

Fang Yuan was devious and heartless, he was like a shark that smelled blood, he bit down hard.

Even if they were allies, so what? His own strength was the most important matter. Others were unreliable, only one’s own self was to be considered the most reliable.

Fang Yuan had a firm attitude, Hei Lou Lan made many attempts but failed in all of them. In her anger, she purposely stalled the handing over of self strength Immortal Gu and refused to use strength qi Immortal Gu to create the airsac Gu for Fang Yuan.

Hei Lou Lan’s action was very ruthless, this act gave Fang Yuan huge pressure.

If Hei Lou Lan did not use strength qi Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan would have no airsac Gu. Without airsac Gu, he could not sell guts Gu.

Earlier, in order to heal himself, Fang Yuan stopped the guts Gu trade, using it for himself. Without this revenue, and with the two stone nests refining Gu continuously, his funds had dried up, he had less than a hundred immortal essence stones left.

To break through Hei Lou Lan’s restrictions, Fang Yuan could use wisdom Gu to deduce a new airsac Gu recipe.

But this had problems too.

Fang Yuan had already sold delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu in the auction, he was using malicious thought Gu as a substitute, the quantity was still low. Even if he had an entire stone nest of hairy men, refining malicious thought Gu unendingly, under the light of wisdom, the expenditure of thoughts was too high.

Fang Yuan had some early expectations of this kind of situation, his original solution was to raise the scale of production.

But to raise the production and build the third or even fourth stone nest, he would need funds. Hairy men, especially those slaves skilled in refining Gu, were priced even higher.

Fang Yuan had insufficient funds, he could not raise his production. The problem went back all the way to the first issue, it seemed to be a deadlock.

Fang Yuan went to find Lang Ya land spirit and tried to use immortal materials to lure him into refining malicious thought Gu using the hairy men in his blessed land.

But Lang Ya land spirit rejected him.

His request remained the same, for Fang Yuan to go into immemorial purple heaven, to search for the rank six immortal material, poisonous flowers, and collect their petals.

It seemed that this immortal material was very important to Lang Ya land spirit.

Thus, Fang Yuan could not resolve the situation through this.

With airsac Gu restricted, there was no guts Gu trade. The sale of guts Gu was Fang Yuan’s top source of revenue. Without funds, there was no malicious thought Gu, so Fang Yuan could not use the light of wisdom.

This greatly affected Fang Yuan in the assimilation of his loot, slowing the plan to raise his battle strength.

Fang Yuan was fully aware that Hei Lou Lan was attempting to compel him — forcing him into giving up self strength Immortal Gu and choosing strength qi Immortal Gu.

“Hmph, Hei Lou Lan... I’d like to see who can outlast the other?” Fang Yuan snickered, focusing his mind. He summoned Hu Immortal land spirit and went to Dang Hun palace again.

Sitting on the bed, he shut his eyes and went into the dream realm.

Earlier, to save Hei Lou Lan, Fang Yuan used the immortal killer move unravel dream, it expended a lot of dream path mortal Gu. In order to activate unravel dream killer move again, he had to go into a dream to refine dream path mortal Gu.

At the same time, at a secret hideout in Northern Plains.

The wisdom path Gu Immortal, Old Oracle from Ancient Soul Sect, one of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, walked out of the secret room slowly.

He looked exhausted, trying to deduce the culprit behind the collapse of True Yang Building had left him in deep fatigue. His sideburns had turned white, his young face had become much older and wrinkled.

“How was it?” Hong Chi Ming and the other immortals saw that he was outside and quickly approach him with concerned expressions.

Old Oracle knew that they were not concerned about him, but the results of his deduction.

There were many crucial pieces of evidence deduced this time, especially when Zhao Lian Yun’s soul was searched and they witnessed the scenes that happened in Imperial Court blessed land, it was of great help for his deduction.

But Old Oracle shook his head, having a gloomy expression: “My attainment were insufficient, I have disappointed all of you.”

“How could this be?”

“You could not deduce anything even at this stage, the culprit is not simple, they are hiding too deeply...”

“It seems we still need to collect information.”

The immortals were all elites of their sects, after slight disappointment, they quickly accepted the results and started to discuss their future plans.

After some discussion, Feng Jiu Ge spoke: “Right now, we have no clear target, we should split up and do our own missions. It was not easy to come to Northern Plains from Central Continent. I am sure you all have private matters aside from investigating the truth. For the time being, while you settle your private affairs, try to collect more information.”

Feng Jiu Ge’s reputation was the highest, nobody dared to question him.

Right now, with no clear target, everyone had to settle their own matters, they quickly split up and left, in order to resolve the missions from their respective sects.

Old Oracle and Feng Jiu Ge stayed behind.

“Lord Jiu Ge.” Old Oracle was hesitant.

In truth, he had made a huge breakthrough this time in his deduction, but after telling Feng Jiu Ge, the latter ordered that the information was to be concealed. That was why Old Oracle lied to everyone earlier, telling them that his deduction failed.

Feng Jiu Ge looked at him and smiled with deep meaning: “The culprit who caused the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was already most likely to be from the ten great sects of Central Continent. Now that you obtained the deduction that ‘the culprit is a member of the ten sects of Central Continent’, I allowed the rest to act freely, in the case that a mistake is made in concealing it, we would be able to find the culprit.”

“But the result of my deduction could be wrong from the start.” Old Oracle lowered his head.

“Don’t worry, if it is really a traitor in the ten sects, after causing such a huge incident, no matter how they try to conceal it, there are bound to be clues left behind.” Feng Jiu Ge consoled him, while also seemingly giving a warning.

Old Oracle raised his head, his gaze was clear as he stared at Feng Jiu Ge: “Lord Jiu Ge is hiding this from the other Gu Immortals, do you not suspect my sect?”

Feng Jiu Ge laughed heartily, he frankly admitted: “Honestly speaking, I naturally was suspicious since long ago. You can go now, I am sure Ancient Soul Sect gave you secret missions as well.”

Feng Jiu Ge’s tone was that of one who had confidence in grasping the entire situation.

Old Oracle’s heart shook, he lowered his head: “That is indeed the case, I will leave now.”

Saying this, his body was like lightning as he vanished into the sky.

Only Feng Jiu Ge was left in his original spot, his gaze was dark and eerie, and his expression was calm, it was impossible to tell what he was thinking.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 778: Immortal Gu Changes Owner

More than ten days later, in Hu Immortal blessed land.

Time luck Immortal Gu was silently floating above Fang Yuan’s head, it was moving from side to side.

Time luck Immortal Gu was like a jade centipede, it was pale green and was swimming about in the area above Fang Yuan’s head, coiling around and giving off a watery sheen.

Fang Yuan was injecting green grape immortal essence into it, while inspecting the inch of time Gu worms in his immortal aperture.

Earlier, he had made an agreement with Lang Ya land spirit, asking him to refine inch of time in bulk using the hairy men. The time flow in Lang Ya blessed land was faster than Hu Immortal blessed land, the quality of the hairy men was much higher, it could be considered of the highest grade.

Thus, after Fang Yuan paid with immortal materials, a large number of inch of time Gu, like a small golden mountain, accumulated in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

As the saying went, time was money, an inch of time was an inch of gold.

Although inch of time Gu was a mortal Gu, it had an appearance like that of a gold bar. The higher the rank of inch of time Gu, the longer and thicker the gold bar.

But at this moment, when Fang Yuan activated time luck Immortal Gu, inch of time Gu was used up rapidly. The gold mountain had vanished completely in just a few breaths of time.

Without inch of time’s support, the time luck Immortal Gu above his head stopped activating.

Fang Yuan sighed in regret: “It seems that it is quite tough to use inch of time to activate time luck Immortal Gu in the place of lifespan. I only activated it for such a short period of time, I gained almost no additional luck.”

Like what Fairy Li Shan said earlier, activating time luck Immortal Gu involved expending immortal essence and the Gu Immortal’s lifespan to gain a boost in luck.

But Fang Yuan had barely any lifespan left, how could he waste it so easily?

During the final moments of Imperial Court blessed land’s battle, when he was forced to become an immortal zombie, he was already extremely old. He had not used any lifespan Gu before, thus he only had a hundred years of lifespan. Right now, he had only around ten years or less remaining.

If one day, he could get rid of his immortal zombie body and become a living person again, his lifespan would not change.

“That is to say, even if I recover, my body would be extremely old, that is a problem. Before that, I need to find lifespan Gu and use it on myself.”

Fang Yuan thought about this and couldn’t help but frown.

Lifespan Gu were hard to find, they were extremely precious.

Ordinary Gu Immortals would not sell them when they were obtained. In the Northern Plains auction earlier, not a single lifespan Gu was sold.

Lifespan Gu were only mortal Gu, the conditions for their production were greatly variable, for Gu Immortals to find lifespan Gu almost meant relying on luck. In many situations, lifespan Gu were often obtained by mortal Gu Masters, Gu Immortals could not control where they appeared.

Fang Yuan being able to find lifespan Gu and extend his lifespan by several hundred years in his previous life was due to this.

“Up to this point, the best way to search for lifespan Gu would have been through using Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. Unfortunately, I only obtained one lifespan Gu in this Immortal Gu House, and Tai Bai Yun Sheng already used it. It is basically impossible to rebuild Eighty-Eight True Yang Building now.”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts moved, time luck Immortal Gu turned into a flash of light, entering his immortal aperture.

Even though his immortal aperture had turned into a dead land, once in a while, a small amount would break off, but for Gu worms, there was still a lot of space.

Time luck Immortal Gu eventually floated onto another ‘gold mountain’.

This second ‘gold mountain’ was naturally made up of inch of time Gu.

Fang Yuan had obtained a huge amount of inch of time Gu from Lang Ya land spirit, they had piled into two mountains. One had already been expended earlier.

The last remaining one was here.

Even though the test result previously was not satisfactory, it gave Fang Yuan a lot of precious and useful inspiration.

“Earlier, I was only using inch of time and time luck Immortal Gu alone, if I add in other Gu worms, or even turn it into an immortal killer move, the expenditure of inch of time Gu might be greatly reduced, allowing it to become more feasible and desirable. Unfortunately, even though the light of wisdom gives me unlimited inspiration, this deduction involves time path, I have no attainment in it.”

With such a restriction, Fang Yuan could only keep his thoughts in mind for now rather than making an attempt.

He still lacked dream path mortal Gu, Fang Yuan was not going to waste any more time. After regulating his breathing for a few moments, he remained seated on his bed and closed his eyes, entering his dream realm.

After going through three dream realms, he refined two dream path mortal Gu, storing them in his mind.

Such a success rate was much higher compared to when he initially started. But during the third refinement, Fang Yuan failed and his soul was injured.

Dream realms themselves were risky, not to mention refining Gu in a dream.

“If I lose my focus, I will fall into the dream’s trap. Thankfully, guts Gu can strengthen my soul.” Fang Yuan felt relieved, he opened his eyes and walked out of Dang Hun palace.

On Dang Hun mountain, there were guts Gu everywhere.

Fang Yuan used a few and healed the injuries to his soul.

Just as he was about to return and continue refining dream path mortal Gu, his expression changed, as a letter was sent into his immortal aperture using moving perspective cup Gu.

Fang Yuan looked at it and his face flashed with joy.

He immediately stopped the plan of refining Gu, he chose a scenic location on Dang Hun mountain and sat down, taking out an elephant’s leg and using fire Gu to roast it.

A moment later, a figure flew over from the southeast direction.

It was a female immortal, with black hair and black pupils, she had a divine beauty and a dominating aura, it was Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan flew in the air, landing before Fang Yuan with a cold expression. She looked at the elephant leg on Fang Yuan’s hand, recognizing that it was the flesh and bones of a desolate beast, drought elephant, she said sarcastically: “So the immortal materials in your hands can be wasted to this degree already?”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, he looked at Hei Lou Lan before his gaze landed back onto the elephant leg.

After a short while, because of the high heat, the elephant leg was half cooked already, it was oozing with fragrance.

“It has been a while, Fairy Lou Lan, please take a seat.” Fang Yuan said politely.

Hei Lou Lan snorted, remaining standing, unmoving as she emitted a faint anger.

Fang Yuan found it funny: Although she was a formidable character, she was still a young woman. But if he was in her place, if someone wanted his Spring Autumn Cicada, would he give it up? Perhaps he might have already fallen out with the person and fought already?

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan mentally alerted himself.

Hei Lou Lan’s mistake was right in front of him, he could not ignore it.

Hei Lou Lan desperately wanted to take revenge, she took risks in undergoing tribulations, in the end, she was careless and almost died. Right now, she could not stall any longer, she had to hand self strength Immortal Gu over.

By this stage, one could not advance prematurely and underestimate risks. A Gu Immortal’s calamities and tribulations, are they so easy to pass? Even if one was overflowing with talent, and had an arrogant nature, they had to admit the facts. Hei Lou Lan was a youngster who was not afraid of death, by charging forward blindly, she had suffered a loss, now she would start becoming careful.

“But it was thanks to her that I could obtain self strength Immortal Gu, right?” Fang Yuan thought about this and laughed in his heart, putting the elephant leg in front of his mouth as he bit off a huge chunk, eating it with pleasure.

Hei Lou Lan saw this and snickered: “You are already an immortal zombie, you have no sense of taste. Now that there is no hope of restoring your body again, you are doing this to reminisce your past?”

Fang Yuan said slowly and calmly: “Fairy Lou Lan, you did not come here to see me eat meat, right?”

Hei Lou Lan’s expression was still as water, there was anger in her tone as she said with deep meaning: “You are so gluttonous, are you not afraid of bursting your stomach?”

“Don’t worry, my appetite is good, dying of overeating is better than dying of starvation.”

“Hmph!” Hei Lou Lan was gritting her teeth in rage, she suppressed her anger as she said with a calmer tone: “Actually, what’s wrong with changing what you eat? That way, we can all have meat to eat. Fate is unpredictable, who would not have downturns in life?”

Fang Yuan understood her words.

Hei Lou Lan wanted to use strength qi Immortal Gu to replace Self Strength as the compensation to Fang Yuan. But Fang Yuan would not agree.

He swallowed the food in his mouth as he sighed deeply, exclaiming: “Precisely because fate is unpredictable, I try all sorts of ways to become stronger, so that I can deal with any desperate situation in the future. Hei Lou Lan, you understand me, once I make up my mind, I won’t change it.”

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes squinted, Fang Yuan was such a person, she was of a similar kind. Just as she was about to speak, her pupils shrunk.

Only seeing that on Fang Yuan’s body, a bright light had appeared in a flash.

This light was horizontal across his chest, it was a faint shadow at first, but it soon became brighter and more solid, carving itself onto Fang Yuan’s body.

“A strength path dao mark?!” Hei Lou Lan’s expression changed.

Just earlier, she witnessed with her own eyes that Fang Yuan gained a strength path dao mark.

She quickly calmed down, thinking of the answer, her eyes twitched as she said dryly: “So the eat strength Immortal Gu that appeared in Northern Plains’ auction is in your hands. How do all the good things end up in your hands?”

Eat strength Immortal Gu had low value to other Gu Immortals, they even would not dare to use it much.

But to strength path Gu Immortals, it was undeniably a treasure.

Especially in Hei Lou Lan’s case, her cultivation had met with an obstacle, she could not raise it by undergoing tribulation. At this time, eat strength Immortal Gu, which carried zero risks, became very important.

Fang Yuan did not speak, he bit down at the bones.

He had already eaten the meat on the elephant leg, but the bones also contained natural strength path dao marks. Even though the elephant leg bones were tough, his sharp teeth chewed them up and he swallowed.

Soon afterwards, Fang Yuan gained a new strength path dao mark.

He was not afraid of Hei Lou Lan going back on her words.

Because the agreement for saving her had already reached the time limit. Hei Lou Lan came at the last moment to give it one last try.

But in this matter, from start to finish, Fang Yuan had no way to lose.

Once they went back on the contract, Fairy Li Shan would die. How could Hei Lou Lan watch that happen?

“Come, sit, I’ll treat you to some meat.” Fang Yuan took out another strength path desolate beast’s leg from his immortal aperture.

After cooking it, he gave the leg to Hei Lou Lan, at the same time, he willed and eat strength Immortal Gu flew into Hei Lou Lan’s hands.

Hei Lou Lan received it without hesitation, after swallowing the flesh and bone, she activated eat strength Immortal Gu to digest them.

A moment later, a strength path dao mark appeared in her body.

Even though the gains were barely one-tenth of a percent compared to a tribulation, this method had no risks, it could be accumulated continually.

After eating half of it, Hei Lou Lan sighed deeply and gave self strength Immortal Gu to Fang Yuan.

The two traded on the spot, self strength Immortal Gu changed owners!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 779: Chains of Benefits

Fang Yuan put away self strength Immortal Gu, his expression did not change, he turned to Hei Lou Lan and said: “From now on, Fairy Lou Lan, if you want to borrow eat strength Immortal Gu for cultivation, you just need to pass me a certain sum of immortal materials as payment.”

Hei Lou Lan nodded.

This was his response, Hei Lou Lan was a formidable person, the moment she saw

Fang Yuan display his eat strength Immortal Gu purposely, she knew his intentions.

He did not want to sever their relationship, he chose to deepen their cooperation!

Fang Yuan forcefully asked for self strength Immortal Gu, it bit open a huge, bloody wound on their alliance, blood was oozing and the bones could be seen.

However, in contrast to the precious self strength Immortal Gu in sole possession, Fang Yuan was lending eat strength Immortal Gu, this was giving Hei Lou Lan a way out.

Hei Lou Lan ate the leg that she had, letting out a heavy sigh as she looked at Fang Yuan without a trace of anger on her face.

“Let’s go to a stone nest.” Hei Lou Lan set out, taking the initiative to help Fang Yuan refine the airsac Gu.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, it seemed like Hei Lou Lan was having a hard time. Just now, she underwent tribulation and went into great danger, after being saved by Fang Yuan, her blessed land was sure to have suffered heavy damage.

Fairy Li Shan had always been helping Hei Lou Lan with her cultivation, regardless of costs. But now, she was in trouble too. She had to help Old Ancestor Xue Hu refine fortune rivalling heaven Gu, all of the demonic path Gu Immortals of Snowy Mountain were kept extremely busy in collecting immortal materials. This was an important and burdensome task, Fairy Li Shan had no choice but to spend all her efforts on it.

Fang Yuan wanted to continue selling guts Gu, didn’t Hei Lou Lan have the same desire?

Fang Yuan’s earlier action of splitting profits with Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan was an extremely wise decision. At this point, it had taken effect. Profits were a form of restraint, even if Hei Lou Lan was furious internally, because of the big picture and her own circumstances, she had to cooperate with Fang Yuan.

On this day, Hei Lou Lan summoned large amounts of strength qi, allowing the refinement of airsac Gu to restart.

Before leaving, she gave Fang Yuan another idea for cooperation.

Right now, Fang Yuan did not have the funds to increase his production, but Hei Lou Lan was willing to invest in this, building a third stone nest and obtaining ample hairy men. Her condition was that Fang Yuan must give her a higher profit ratio.

Fang Yuan agreed immediately.

The transaction of guts Gu had restarted, it was like a fresh current of water flowing into a drying river.

The management of the blessed land was almost stale, now it was operating again. Like a horse carriage, the huge wheels were rolling and moving it forward.

Several days later, the third stone nest was built in Fang Yuan’s Hu Immortal blessed land.

Right now, Fang Yuan had several Gu worms to mass refine: airsac Gu, malicious thought Gu, memory thought Gu, and inch of time.

Three stone nests were insufficient to meet his needs.

This invited a key question, how could he most effectively make use of his limited resources.

Eventually, Fang Yuan ordered the first and third stone nest to refine airsac Gu. The second stone nest would refine malicious thought Gu.

He had a large number of deductions to do, thus, he had to refine either memory thought Gu or malicious thought Gu. Malicious thought Gu was good for plotting against others, while memory thought Gu was useful for extracting information from his memories. But in terms of deduction, the two had no clear difference.

As for why he was mainly refining airsac Gu, that was because Fang Yuan realized that he could sell a lot of guts Gu without any issues.

Times had changed.

The market for guts Gu had been steadily growing.

Especially when Fang Yuan had stopped the trade of guts Gu not long ago, he had used it solely for healing himself. This act had cut off the supply to the market, causing a shortage to occur, thus the price of guts Gu had been skyrocketing.

This phenomenon made Fang Yuan realize that the market for guts Gu had truly expanded, he could totally raise the prices.

He thought about this, thus he did it.

The guts Gu trade earlier was done monthly, his profit was forty-eight immortal essence stones.

After raising the price, and excluding the profits given to Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan, Fang Yuan earned a total of ninety-two immortal essence stones. This was almost double his previous earnings.

“A monopoly is truly useful for earning profits.” Fang Yuan’s circumstances became much easier because of this, he sighed to himself, also being deeply alerted.

Because the greater the profits of the guts Gu trade, the greater the prospects, the more Immortal Crane Sect and the other forces would inevitably become restless.

Maybe because Fang Yuan displayed a huge amount of strength earlier, and because Immortal Crane Sect was restricted in other aspects, they could not find the time or effort to deal with Fang Yuan.

Right now, the profits of guts Gu transactions were going up, one day, Immortal Crane Sect would make up their mind and put in more strength to try and ‘regain’ Hu Immortal blessed land.

A man’s wealth is his own ruin by stirring another’s greed.

Be it the righteous path or demonic path, they pursued profit. The difference was, the righteous path had nicer looking methods on the surface.

As for the cultivation of Gu Masters, or rather, the core of it — it was about a person’s survival, it was always to defend one’s own interests while devouring other’s interests.

Fang Yuan knew this clearly, he did not deny that there was no difference between him, any other person, or any force. In the face of profits, they were all wolves.

“To deter Immortal Crane Sect, there is only one method. That is to increase my strength unceasingly, to cause their actions to fail, to make them feel threat.”

With such urgency and drive, Fang Yuan successfully integrated self strength Immortal Gu into the immortal killer move, myriad self, a few days later.

Although self strength Immortal Gu was very compatible with myriad self, Fang Yuan still spent several days to adjust the complementary mortal Gu. After testing it, he received an almost perfect result.

“I cannot use Cleanse Soul, but I added in Self Strength, with this, my battle strength is back to first rate within rank six. In fact, the killer move myriad self is even stronger than before. Maybe it is time to explore that Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable inheritance.”

Fang Yuan was thinking carefully.

He had assimilated much of the gains from the auction.

Myriad self returned to having an immortal killer move’s strength, true solid bat wings paired with iron crown eagle strength Immortal Gu was on par with a movement immortal killer move. To deduce vaguely familiar face and the others, he needed a huge amount of malicious thought Gu. In Hu Immortal blessed land, there was only one stone nest fully refining it, it would still take a long time before the quantity was accumulated to a sufficient degree.

As for how to solve the immortal zombie problem, even though Tai Bai Yun Sheng was making some progress in Eastern Sea, Shark Demon’s method was too costly and took too long.

In terms of Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, because Feng Jiu Ge forcefully asked them for information, his Sha Huang identity could not be used anymore, that plan was halted.

“Speaking of it, I have already obtained this Thieving Heaven inheritance for quite some time. If I can get Luo Po valley, together with Dang Hun mountain, my soul foundation would rapidly grow. That is a good method to raise my battle strength as well. In the future, I can even undergo the transaction of bewilderment fog and Luo Po wind, increasing my revenue.”

At the same time, in Luo Po valley.

A negotiation had reached its most crucial moment.

Qin Bai Sheng had a light smile as he looked at Hui Feng Zi.

Hui Feng Zi was dressed in a green robe, he lowered his head and thought about it, suddenly laughing as he looked up: “Qin Bai Sheng, to think that I treated you as my best friend, you actually lured me into this trap to harm me. With your strength, you cannot take down Lang Ya blessed land, you want me to be cannon fodder?”

Qin Bai Sheng’s gaze shined, he said lightly: “With your wind escape move, you can retreat as you wish, you are famous in Northern Plains, how could you end up as cannon fodder?”

“Even if wind escape is an immortal killer move, the best in movement within Northern Plains, it cannot penetrate blessed lands or grotto-heavens. Qin Bai Sheng, I cannot accept your invitation.” Hui Feng Zi rejected as he shook his head.

He was a rank seven wind path Gu Immortal, he was a famous and established character. Even if he had a superb skill, he was still very vigilant. Perhaps that was the reason he could live up to this point and have such an achievement.

Qin Bai Sheng nodded, Hui Feng Zi’s reply was not unexpected: “In that case, I will be forced to make you come.”

“You want to stop me?” Hui Feng Zi’s expression tensed, his eyes shined with a sharp light: “Very well, let us spar, it will dispel some unrealistic thoughts in your mind. I, Hui Feng Zi, am not someone who can be ordered around easily.”

As he said that, he struck.

Boom!

Hui Feng Zi opened his mouth, he flicked with his tongue as a huge wind blade shot towards Qin Bai Sheng.

Immortal killer move – Death Wind Flying Blade!

“Good timing.” Qin Bai Sheng did not move, he only laughed.

The wind blade hit Qin Bai Sheng who did not move at all, at once, golden light burst out.

As the golden light faded, Qin Bai Sheng remained unharmed.

“What defensive killer move is this?” Hui Feng Zi was shocked, he asked in astonishment: “My death wind flying blade did not even cut a single strand of your hair?”

Qin Bai Sheng smiled without speaking.

“How can I fight him like this?” Hui Feng Zi’s eyes twitched, his battle intent fell, he wanted to retreat.

Immortal killer move – Wind Escape!

He used his signature method, famous within Northern Plains, at once, Hui Feng Zi turned into a gust of wind as he flew towards the sky of Luo Po valley.

This movement killer move had helped Hui Feng Zi escape danger countless times, it made his enemies sigh in helplessness. The most memorable occasion was when Hui Feng Zi used this move to escape from the rank eight Gu Immortal, Yao Huang, who was pursuing him.

But Qin Bai Sheng did not move as he looked at Hui Feng Zi escape, he was expressionless.

Rumble...

On top of Luo Po valley, thunder was booming as clouds rumbled.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

The intense wind blew, countless ghostly figures, at a quantity of millions, flew around below the clouds.

Hui Feng Zi spit out a mouthful of blood, it was like he rammed into an iron wall, he was forced out of his wind state.

“What Gu formation is this?” He was uncertain, his wind escape could not break out of this area.

Qin Bai Sheng smiled without answering Hui Feng Zi’s question, he asked: “Does sir want to consider joining us and attacking Lang Ya blessed land?”

This time, Hui Feng Zi only thought about it for a few breaths before landing: “Qin Bai Sheng, you were superior after all. Never mind, I will join you in this.”

Qin Bai Sheng laughed, he was not surprised.

Hui Feng Zi was famous for knowing his place, he was a wise man who submitted to circumstances.

Since he could not escape, Hui Feng Zi’s greatest advantage was gone. Furthermore, Qin Bai Sheng’s alliance conditions were not too harsh, even though he was slightly unhappy, he still joined in helplessly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 780: Fate Immortal Gu

Central Continent, Heavenly Court!

The silver-white sky shined with a bright and pure luster.

Countless exquisite halls made of white jade could be seen everywhere, empty and tranquil.

Amongst the halls, there was an old white tower covered in blemishes, standing tall and conspicuous like a crane in a flock of chickens.

The tower’s name was Heaven Overseeing, it originated from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, as the name suggested, one could observe the whole world from this tower!

However, winds never stop blowing, the events of the world were turbulent and changeable. Even though Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s talent and wisdom could rival that of the heavens, she still could not escape the fate of dying from the end of her lifespan. Later, Heavenly Court experienced the attacks of three Demon Venerables, and when Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable ruled the world, they also had the intention of taking possession of Heavenly Court, but for some reason, they dispelled that thought.

Over three million years!

Countless marks of history had deeply been imprinted onto Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Splendid brilliance or deep gloominess, the vicissitudes of all kinds of experiences had merged into Heaven Overseeing Tower, turning it into an imposing structure, resembling an ancient tree that has lived since ancient times. Or like a bronze cauldron that had stood witness to the changes of the world, and still stood tall without collapsing.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord walked up the stairs holding a walking cane, his back was bent.

He was a rank eight Gu Immortal, but his majestic aura revealed an intense aura of old age.

His hair had turned white, wrinkles covered his body like an old tree’s bark. His eyes were blurry and his gaze cloudy.

He slowly lifted his foot, or rather, dragged. He was like an old insect, tottering up the endless stairs with difficult steps.

He walked forward step by step.

Every step he walked, the white jade stairs under his feet would shine with a slight light and let out a beautiful sound, like that of a xylophone.

The next change was to the walls beside the old man.

Images changed constantly on the walls, sometimes there was a lump of vague, foggy figures, sometimes there were innumerable colorful lines, and rarely, there would appear clear pictures.

The old man paid close attention to the pictures on the walls.

Whenever he went up a step, a bead of the immortal essence inside him would be consumed, and changes would occur to the pictures on the walls.

The old man’s movement paused.

A picture on a wall vividly portrayed a valley.

“Luo Po valley.” The old man softly muttered, a flash of brilliance appeared and disappeared in his blurry eyes.

Two Gu Immortals were fighting at the center of the picture. A wind path Gu Immortal and a metal path Gu Immortal.

At the periphery of the picture, several Gu Immortals were standing, looking at the battle in the center.

The picture continue to change.

The battle of the two Gu Immortals was not intense, they stopped after exchanging one or two moves.

Finally, the picture froze at this scene — the wind path Gu Immortal slowly lowered his head at the metal path Gu Immortal.

The old man inwardly engraved this scene in his mind.

In the innumerable steps that led to the top of the tower, those that could show such clear pictures would only number a dozen or so.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord continued to move up the tower.

He saw a deep sea, in which a group of Gu Immortals, consisting mostly of immortal zombies, were attacking a blessed land.

A female immortal was kneeling on sandy ground, pleading for assistance from an elderly male Gu Immortal.

A young Gu Master was unconscious in a bed. A spirit incubating flea was lying on his forehead, slightly shaking.

He saw a Gu Immortal with white clothing and blue pupils, quietly moving through a forest in Southern Border.

He also saw an eerie dark swamp, huge rays of blood-colored light were enshrouding it, within which a blood path Gu Immortal was cultivating.

The more the old man saw, the more chilly his face became, and the more fury accumulated in his blurry eyes.

“These people, they have all escaped the judgment of fate!”

Finally, he walked to the top of the stairs and stepped onto the peak of the tower, where an Immortal Gu appeared in front of him.

Rank nine Immortal Gu — Fate!

It looked like a spider, colored in black and white. Its aura was weak, there was a scarlet wound on its body that almost cut it in two.

The old man gazed at this Gu for a long while before he heaved a sigh.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was a rank nine Immortal Gu House, unfortunately, its most important core, Fate, had suffered a fatal injury and was close to destruction.

“Red Lotus Demon Venerable!” The old man gritted his teeth, his gaze revealing deep enmity.

The person who inflicted such an injury onto Immortal Gu Fate was none other than a famed character in history, Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable broke Fate, destroying the chains of fate and allowing all living beings in the world to grasp their own destiny. But Immortal Gu Fate was not completely destroyed.

However, despite the care and protection from all immortals in Heavenly Court, the injuries Fate had suffered had yet to recover even after a million years.

This situation was caused by the attack of Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

The injuries on fate Immortal Gu were not only represented in its physical wounds, it was also reflected on all the living beings who had escaped the judgment of fate.

The existence of these people in themselves signified the breaking of fate.

Thus, healing the Immortal Gu Fate had to be done in two aspects. One was to deal with the wound on the Gu. The other was to clear the obstacles for Immortal Gu Fate by eliminating all those who had escaped the judgment of fate.

No matter which aspect, both were troublesome issues.

Especially the second aspect, the five regions were extremely vast, every moment, there would be someone who escaped their fate. It was extremely difficult for Heavenly Court to eliminate these existences.

Even if Heavenly Court was the most powerful Gu Immortal organization, it only controlled Central Continent. The remaining four regions were linked to Central Continent through regional walls, the higher the cultivation of the expert, the more difficult it would be for them to pass the regional wall.

The regional walls of each of the regions were like protective layers that isolated the five regions from each other and made them independent territories.

In the beginning, when fate Immortal Gu had just been injured, Heavenly Court was still seeing some efficiency in eliminating escapees of fate. But merely some years later, there were countless escapees like waves formed in a sea, appearing repeatedly, to the extent that they could not be fully attended to.

More than ten years later, this situation spread like a wildfire throughout the five regions.

Dozens of years later, immortal zombies appeared, humans that were supposed to be dead but were still living, this was the classic example of escaping fate’s judgment. Back then, this situation had shocked, angered and shaken the whole of Heavenly Court.

As such a practice grew more popular to this day, a branch of immortal zombies appeared even in Central Continent. Survival was a basic human instinct, even Heavenly Court could not resist such a trend.

The goal of restoring fate Gu seemed to be getting more distant day by day, and there seemed to be no hope.

However, Heavenly Court had never given up.

Because every generation of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals firmly remembered the dignity of Heavenly Court during the Olden Antiquity Era, and its glory during the Remote Antiquity Era.

And the greatest cornerstone in building this was fate Gu.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s arrangements used fate Gu as the core. Therefore, allowing resistance against three Demon Venerables and ensuring Heavenly Court did not fall.

Completely healing fate Gu was akin to grasping the paths in life for all living beings. This also meant that Heavenly Court would once again be paramount, becoming the supreme immortals among immortals, rulers among countless rulers!

All their efforts had provided some results.

Under generations after generations of efforts from Gu Immortals of Heavenly Court, and enormous prices paid over the course of history, fate Gu was recovering bit by bit until the current state, where although it was dying, it could be barely used.

It was because of this that pictures appeared on Heaven Overseeing Tower’s walls.

Fate escapees and fate Gu were irreconcilably opposed. However, those that had escaped the judgment of fate were truly too many in numbers. The ones that appeared in Heaven Overseeing Tower were only the strongest ones, while also not being inside blessed lands or grotto-heavens, in addition to not using wisdom path methods to conceal themselves, therefore they were easy to deduce.

“Soon, soon. Using the latest Refinement Path Convention to heal fate Gu’s injury will result in a qualitative breakthrough. All the investments we made will be worth it. Countless years of accumulation will be brought about to fruition from this. After the Refinement Path Convention, fate Gu should be able to display fifty percent of its might!”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord mumbled while caressing fate Gu.

His expression gradually eased up, the anger in his heart temporarily pacified.

“But before this, we still need to eliminate these main sinners who had escaped the judgment of fate! All lives have their trajectory and destiny predetermined since they are born. This is the law of heaven and earth, the rule of nature, how can we allow you to leisurely escape? This is life that does not belong to any of you.”

While thinking of this, the old man recalled the clear pictures which he had engraved in his mind when he moved up the stairs.

“Before Fate recovers, I will act in the capacity of heaven and eliminate the tallest of these weeds!”

Central Continent, Hu Immortal blessed land.

The light of wisdom filled the underground cave.

Fang Yuan was inside the light with his eyes tightly closed. behind him was the biggest lingzhi in the cave, it was the king of the zhi forest and had already grown to the size of a fat, mature small tree with lush mushroom heads.

Bright colored lights shined on Fang Yuan’s face.

His breathing was deep and slow, malicious thoughts rose up and down in his mind like waves, constantly crashing against each other.

After a while, Fang Yuan opened his eyes.

“I took such a long time in accumulating malicious thought Gu, but they were used up like this.” He frowned, unsatisfied with this result.

He had first attempted to deduce how to add Pulling Mountain and Pulling Water into the killer move myriad self. The result was that he used up half of the stock of malicious thought Gu, but only made less than ten percent progress.

This progress was too slow, Fang Yuan then tried to deduce immortal killer move vaguely familiar face.

He used up all malicious thought Gu, but the progress was only a little over ten percent.

“In the end, it was because my transformation path attainment is too low.” Fang Yuan sighed.

At this moment, he suddenly felt something, a moving perspective cup Gu came out of his immortal aperture.

The Gu brought a letter.

Fang Yuan opened it; there were only four words on it — the time has arrived.

Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed as he stood up.

The sender was Fairy Li Shan.

Fang Yuan had originally intended to follow Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritance clues to find Luo Po valley. But not long ago, Fairy Li Shan had suddenly sent news which caused Fang Yuan to dispel the plan of Luo Po valley.

This news was regarding Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance.

After Dong Fang Chang Fan died, Dong Fang Yu Liang was his legacy successor. But the latter was only a mortal Gu Master, thus to stop the intention of other Gu Immortals, Dong Fang Chang Fan did not directly hand over the wisdom path inheritance to Dong Fang Yu Liang, instead arranged it at a hidden place.

Fairy Li Shan had vast connections and specialized in getting intel.

This time, the intel was that Dong Fang Yu Liang had secretly headed off to an unknown location, attempting to inherit the wisdom path inheritance!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 781: Tai Qiu is not an Inheritance Ground

Northern Plains, Tai Qiu.

An intense battle was reaching its climax.

On one side, there were three Gu Masters, on the other side, it was a myriad beast sized goat group.

Two Gu Masters were in front, retreating under the fierce attacks of the goat group. Behind, one person had a robe filled with bloodstains, even though his face was like jade, he had a tired expression, he was breathing roughly as his eyes were drooping.

Suddenly, with a loud call, the myriad beast coiling mountain goat king led its group of elite goats as they attacked the three Gu Masters.

The assault became faster and faster, the goat group attacked from both sides, resembling ripples from a sea’s waves, splitting up and leaving a path in the middle.

In a few breaths of time, the goat king was right in front of them.

“Young master, quickly retreat!”

“The situation is dangerous, we will stay here, young master, think of the future.”

The two Gu Masters saw this desperate situation, their eyes were wide open as they shouted.

But the person behind them was in bad shape, it was as if he did not hear them.

One of the Gu Masters had a resolute expression as he made a decision, speaking: “Dong Po Kong, you are a flying master, quickly escape with young master. I will stall them!”

The other Gu Master, Dong Po Kong’s body shook, looking at his ally, he hesitated: “Tan Wu Feng...”

The Gu Master who wanted to stay behind was Tan Wu Feng.

Previously, he was a demonic path Gu Master, he, together with Hao Ji Liu, were known as the Wind and Water Demons, they were very famous.

Hao Ji Liu went to Hei Lou Lan, in the end, he died in there, along with everyone else later due to Fang Yuan destroying Imperial Court blessed land. On the contrary, Wind Demon Tan Wu Feng went to Dong Fang Yu Liang, even though they lost in the Imperial Court contest, his life was preserved. He converted from demonic to righteous, becoming a subordinate of Dong Fang tribe’s previous leader, Dong Fang Yu Liang.

But right now, Tan Wu Feng wanted to stay behind and singlehandedly resist the myriad beast goat group. He was using his life to gain precious time for his allies, for them to escape!

There was no hope of surviving, this was truly a suicide mission.

Dong Po Kong’s heart shook, he felt moved.

Even though Tan Wu Feng was strong, as a righteous path member, he felt suspicious towards Tan Wu Feng’s motives and intentions for converting. Other than that, he also felt disdain and contempt.

But right now, in Dong Po Kong’s heart, these suspicions, disdain, all vanished, turning into an emotion of tragic guilt.

Under the influence of his genuine emotions, he spoke: “Good brother, I will bring young master away now!”

Tan Wu Feng was staring with wide opened eyes, seeing the approaching goat group, he was anxious, shouting loudly: “Why aren’t you scramming?!”

Dong Po Kong turned around and left, two streaks of tears falling from his eyes.

He knew that he had to fight against time, if they wanted to escape, Tan Wu Feng’s sacrifice was not enough, they needed his flying master attainment to be fully displayed along the way.

Even then, they had less than a thirty percent chance of success.

However, at this moment.

The blood bathed white robed Gu Master opened his eyes, raising his head as he shouted: “Seven star light!”

Saying this, his entire body shot upwards, seven lumps of light of all colors were floating around him, rapidly circling around his body.

Swoosh!

A huge lump of star thoughts, under the support of the seven star light, burst out.

In an instant, the surroundings were dyed in blue, starlight shined brightly and hit the surprised goat group.

The coiling mountain goat group’s myriad beast king shouted loudly, but their momentum was too great, the goat group rammed into the countless star thoughts.

“Young master!”

“Lord Yu Liang!”

Tan Wu Feng and Dong Po Kong saw this and were excited and joyful.

An immense amount of star thoughts formed a star cloud as it rumbled endlessly. A moment later, half of the star thoughts were destroyed, but as they dispersed, the myriad beast goat king had died, along with dozens of elite goat beasts.

The goat group lost their goat king and broke apart. Splitting into multiple smaller groups let by thousand beast goat kings, the huge goat group had turned into numerous smaller groups that scattered everywhere.

The blood bathed white robed Gu Master descended slowly to the surface, his body shuddered as he almost fell on the ground.

Even though he dealt a fatal blow and overturned the situation, he was barely hanging on now.

“Young master!” Tan Wu Feng and Dong Po Kong came up, holding this Gu Master’s arms.

This Gu Master was Dong Fang Yu Liang, after Northern Plains’ number one wisdom path Gu Immortal, Dong Fang Chang Fan, died, he was his chosen inheritor!

His face was extremely pale, he controlled his dizziness as he forced a laugh: “Alright, we finally beat this myriad beast goat group, we have time to rest now.”

“Young master...” Tan Wu Feng and Dong Po Kong looked at each other, they were moved and in admiration.

Dong Po Kong was holding Dong Fang Yu Liang as he sat down slowly, he could not help but urge: “Young master, Tai Qiu is one of the ten great fierce areas, after entering this place for three days, we had already encountered more than ten waves of beast groups. Originally, we had more than ten people, now only us three are left. It is not a big deal if I die here, but young master is precious, if something happens to you, what will we do? Looking at this situation, why don’t we retreat first before coming here again?”

Dong Fang Yu Liang sat on the ground, smiling bitterly to himself, shaking his head: “You do not know the situation, this is my last, and only chance. I had already put everything into this attempt, it is like an arrow that has been shot, we cannot turn back any longer. We need to make use of our time now and rest, trying to recover our battle strength.”

Saying so, he shut his eyes, grabbing two primeval stones as he entered a state of rest.

Dong Po Kong and Tan Wu Feng looked at each other, seeing the determination in each other’s eyes, they nodded as they sat around Dong Fang Yu Liang, taking out their primeval stones and meditating.

At the outskirts of Tai Qiu, Gu Immortal Lu Qing Ming retracted his gaze as he praised: “To think that as a mortal, Dong Fang Yu Liang could advance so deeply into Tai Qiu. This time, he expressed weakness and lured his enemies in, causing the coiling mountain myriad beast goat king to charge up and letting him kill the leader, he actually managed to survive this difficulty.”

Standing beside him, Gu Immortal Han Dong snorted coldly: “This Tai Qiu is one of the ten great fierce areas, there are desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts living here, even us Gu Immortals do not dare to charge in recklessly. Dong Fang Chang Fan placed his inheritance ground here, he was guarding against us."

Gu Immortal Su Guang added: "That is right, Dong Fang Yu Liang and the others are all mortal Gu Masters, they have weak auras and do not attract the attentions of the desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts. With the route that Dong Fang Chang Fan planned for them, they would only meet some ordinary beast groups while entering the deep parts of Tai Qiu. If we go, our Gu Immortal auras would leak and cause the resistance of desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts. Hmm? More Gu Immortals are coming to the outskirts."

The other two Gu Immortals heard this and sensed something, they looked towards the southeast direction.

Only to see that three Gu Immortals had just approached towards them, they were wearing black robes and had masks on, only showing their eyes.

"Heh, more people that want to have a share of the profits." Han Dong's eyes shined ominously, his tone was eerie.

The three black robed Gu Immortals descended.

They were none other than Fairy Li Shan, Fang Yuan, and Hei Lou Lan.

Fairy Li Shan was a famous Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, previously, she had agreed to an alliance with Dong Fang Chang Fan, she could not covet his possessions openly, thus she had to hide her appearance.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were involved in the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, they had to conceal their appearances.

The three slowly descended, floating in the air outside of Tai Qiu, they were not planning to go inside. They first glanced at Dong Fang Yu Liang and the others before looking around.

Hei Lou Lan chuckled, "Dong Fang Chang Fan's wisdom path inheritance is truly attractive. The outskirts of Tai Qiu had so many Gu Immortals hiding around. Just with my methods, I found more than twenty."

Fairy Li Shan continued: "I found twenty-six, most of them are demonic path Gu Immortals, but there are also Gu Immortals from Dong Fang tribe."

Fang Yuan took a look, but he only found nineteen.

Although his battle strength had been raised, his investigative methods could not compare to an established veteran Gu Immortal like Fairy Li Shan. As for Hei Lou Lan, her investigative methods exceeded his, this made him internally alert.

"No wonder Dong Fang Yu Liang is rushing to obtain the wisdom path inheritance. It seems that Dong Fang tribe's Gu Immortals are also after this inheritance. After all, with this inheritance, one has a chance of becoming Northern Plains' number one wisdom path Gu Immortal. Even their own Gu Immortals cannot resist this temptation." Fairy Li Shan sighed.

"Did Dong Fang Chang Fan make any mistakes? He signed an agreement with the righteous path super forces, so that they would not come after this, but he missed his own tribe's Gu Immortals." Hei Lou Lan said, she frowned slightly, she felt that Dong Fang Chang Fan would not be so careless.

"Dong Fang Chang Fan is the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, he left the inheritance clues in Dong Fang Yu Liang's mind. Such wisdom path techniques cannot be broken easily. Right now, the Gu Immortals are all waiting here, it seems that they are biding their time until Dong Fang Yu Liang opens the inheritance, before they start robbing it.” Fang Yuan said.

His motive in this journey was to get a complete wisdom path inheritance.

Wisdom path inheritances had greater value the more complete they were.

But currently, it seemed like his goal was going to fail. There were so many Gu Immortals after the inheritance, when they obtained it, they might form a situation where the inheritance gets split up.

“Thankfully, my battle strength rose a lot just now, I have a chance at competing. Later, when we snatch it, I should avoid being the center of attention, so that the crowd would not attack me together, I need to strategize.”

Fang Yuan made his tactics.

Although he had high battle strength, there were many Gu Immortals, he could not fight them together. Of course, he was not stupid enough to attempt doing that anyway.

However, a change occurred right at this moment!

A blinding flash appeared, as the light faded, Dong Fang Yu Liang, Tan Wu Feng, and Dong Po Kong vanished from their original spots.

“This is a teleportation Gu formation?”

“It was hidden underground, we didn’t discover it.”

“Dong Fang Chang Fan’s arrangements are indeed not simple, this Tai Qiu was not the true inheritance ground, it was just a place to hinder us.”

“Quick, while the Gu formation still has some aura remaining, quickly search for clues before it dissipates!”

The Gu Immortal realized at once, showing up and charging towards the deep parts of Tai Qiu.

Grrr!

Desolate beasts, and even ancient desolate beasts were stirred, they rushed out from all areas of Tai Qiu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 782: Myriad Self First Style, Giant Hand

Seeing a large number of desolate beasts appearing in their sights, with several ancient desolate beasts among them, the Gu Immortals flying in the sky slowed down, their expressions turning dark.

They were indeed worthy of being Dong Fang Chang Fan’s arrangements, meticulously set out and interlinked, he had completely deduced today’s situation, even after he died, he created huge problems for these Gu Immortals.

The desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts that were alerted felt that the Gu Immortals were intruders.

Originally, they were resting in Tai Qiu, peacefully in their respective territories.

Dong Fang Yu Liang and the others’ intrusion was like a few butterflies flying into their garden, the beasts were not disturbed.

But the Gu Immortals were like bandits entering their homes, they were alerted and went all out, even working together to protect their territory, Tai Qiu.

To humans, Tai Qiu was one of Northern Plains’ ten great fierce areas. But to these desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts, the ten great fierce areas were their sanctuaries, they were places where humans could not take over.

Seeing so many desolate beasts charging over at once, the Gu Immortals were apprehensive.

Although there was a good number of them, they were not united, instead, they were wary of each other due to the wisdom path inheritance, it was hard to work together sincerely.

They could not battle with the desolate beasts either.

Once they fought, the chaotic battle would cause damage to Tai Qiu, if they destroy the traces left behind by the teleportation Gu formation, the Gu Immortals would have even greater trouble tracking them.

Those who could become Gu Immortals were not fools.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s plot was very obvious, they all understood it clearly in an instant.

“These desolate beasts and even ancient desolate beasts are not the point.”

“We cannot spend too much time with these beasts and lose our clues.”

“Get past them and find the traces, following the clues to the inheritance ground...”

The Gu Immortals were still flying towards the area where the teleportation Gu formation was, but they had to slow down.

Desolate beasts were a huge problem, but the surrounding Gu Immortals were worse. If it was convenient, these demonic path Gu Immortals would certainly not mind exterminating some of the competitors around them.

Howl! A desolate beast flying at high speed engaged with a female Gu Immortal.

This rank six female Gu Immortal’s name was He Ruo, also known as Peacock Flying Immortal, she was skilled in transformation path. She shouted a curse, she felt sullen inside, but she could not blame anyone, she could only blame herself for being unlucky and placed in a bad position.

Seeing that the desolate beast was charging over, she did not fight it, she turned into a blurry green-grey bird, spreading her wings and flying away, towards the crucial location.

The desolate beast was unable to catch up to her, it turned around and targeted another unlucky person.

The green-grey bird flew past the other Gu Immortals, becoming the Gu Immortal closest to the crucial location.

Other Gu Immortals did not watch this without doing anything.

“A mere mortal killer move, you dare to stand out?” Waves were crashing as a rank seven Gu Immortal rode on a huge wave and blocked the green-grey bird.

This Gu Immortal had a strong aura, but he was so thin his bones could be seen, his skin was wrinkled and dry, sticking close to his bones. Veins could be seen on his skin, they were everywhere.

Seeing this person, most of the surrounding Gu Immortals showed a wary expression on their faces.

This was a rank seven Gu Immortal, Pi Shui Han, he was a member of the demonic path and cultivated ice path and water path, he was a famous expert.

Peacock Flying Immortal He Ruo saw that Pi Shui Han was obstructing her, she did not evade him, instead, she snorted lightly and an Immortal Gu aura burst out from her.

He Ruo activated her Immortal Gu, the green-grey bird she had transformed into turned from blurry to clear.

In an instant, the green bird’s body expanded by thirty percent, three golden peacock tails grew on her back, her speed rose sharply as she flew past the waves, towards the Gu formation.

Pi Shui Han’s actions failed, he laughed instead of getting angry, saying in a mocking tone: “Indeed after attending the Northern Plains auction, you think you have some ability now, hehe.”

Saying this, he raised both his arms.

Gurgle gurgle, with two loud sounds, the water waves surged up, emerging from nowhere, blocking the green bird like two huge walls.

Meanwhile, Pi Shui Han’s speed did not decrease, he rode on the currents and charged towards He Ruo.

He Ruo did not dare to fight with Pi Shui Han, she raised her head and spread her wings, rising into the sky. But no matter how high she flew, the waves grew alongside her.

Pi Shui Han smiled coldly, he rapidly got close to her.

But He Ruo did not want to battle, she put all her efforts into escaping, Pi Shui Han could do nothing to her within a short period of time.

Just as the two were fighting, one figure emerged from another side, like a flash of lightning.

This person was brawny and muscular, his skin was bronze in color, lightning was coiling around his body, his speed was faster than He Ruo. Fang Yuan felt some familiarity upon seeing him saw, he thought over it for a moment and realized that this person was Divine Lord Tian Du.

This immortal cultivated lightning path, he alongside Shi Hou had once coerced an immortal zombie of Zombie Alliance, buying a hundred and fifty kilograms of wilted essence with one immortal essence stone.

Divine Lord Tian Du saw Pi Shui Han and He Ruo chasing and fleeing, he found a chance and activated his movement killer move, gaining a huge boost in speed.

Soon, he surpassed everyone and quickly became the person closest to the Gu formation.

“Hahaha!” Divine Lord Tian Du saw that he was getting closer to the Gu formation and was overjoyed, laughing loudly.

“Divine Lord, hold up.” Accompanying a calm and slow voice, one white robed scholar appeared before Tian Du.

“Ah, Unfettered Scholar!” Divine Lord Tian Du saw this person and his expression changed, his speed fell drastically.

He knew that he was not the rank seven Gu Immortal, Unfettered Scholar’s match, he shouted quickly: “Shi Hou, quickly lend me a hand.”

Shi Hou’s eyes twitched, he had no choice but to show up beside Divine Lord Tian Du. He was a muscular man, looking very rugged and brutish, his hair was in a mess and he held a skull in his hands.

Divine Lord Tian Du cried out, pushing with his hands as a lightning dragon was unleashed.

At the same time, Shi Hou activated his mortal killer move, attacking Unfettered Scholar.

The two were not weak in battle strength among rank six Gu Immortals, otherwise, they would not dare to extort a Zombie Alliance member. At this moment, they joined forces and had an impressive attack, it attracted much attention.

“Come then.” Unfettered Scholar smiled lightly, he moved his hand as two Immortal Gu flew out.

Boom!

In an intense explosion, Shi Hou and Divine Lord Tian Du flew back after spitting blood, but Unfettered Scholar stood on the spot, having a calm demeanor.

He was fighting two against one, beating back Shi Hou and Divine Lord Tian Du, the Immortal Gu he used had great power, but they were already placed back inside his immortal aperture, nobody had seen them clearly.

“Let’s go!” At this moment, from another direction, Gu Immortal Lu Qing Ming shouted, as the Gu Immortals Su Guang and Han Dong followed after him.

Their advance caused gasps among the crowd.

“It is the Traveling Three Elites!”

“Block them!”

“Be careful, when they join forces, their battle strength can match rank seven.”

The three elites gave off bright lights each, it was a dazzling scene, forming an image of a chariot. This was a killer move that could only be unleashed when all three Gu Immortals worked together!

The killer move had great power, the three elites could charge forward fearlessly, nobody could stop them for the moment, they got close to the Gu formation.

There were five publicly well known rank eight Gu Immortals in Northern Plains. There were more rank seven Gu Immortals, but they were not in large numbers. People like Qin Bai Sheng, Fairy Li Shan, and others, they were famous people who had been around for a long time.

In the Gu Immortal world, most Gu Immortals were rank six.

When the three elites joined up, they had rank seven battle strength, this made people wary. Furthermore, they had chosen their specific direction and had no strong foes of rank seven. Whether it was by coincidence or not, the three of them managed to become the ones closest to the Gu formation.

They were extremely fast, Pi Shui Han, Unfettered Scholar and the others could not stop them, they could only watch as the three elites landed on the Gu formation that was set up earlier.

However, a change occurred right at this moment!

The figures of the three elites vanished, while a huge bat desolate beast flapped its wings and flew away.

“This is a ruin bat!”

“Ruin bat is a space path desolate beast, there were actually concealment type Gu on this beast, the three elites were engulfed by it.”

“Hahaha, although they are not in mortal danger, they lost precious time and the valuable opportunity.”

Some Gu Immortals were shocked, some were taking pleasure from their misfortune.

Ruin bat was not an exception, at this moment, the desolate beasts in Tai Qiu had surrounded the Gu Immortals, ready for a huge battle.

The peach wolf, which was pink, cute and had a tiny body, moved extremely quickly like light, the white hoof ink horse was stalwart like a mountain, the blood tongue tree had bloody and long tongues. And also, the qi path ancient desolate beast, primeval return peacock, that could absorb the primeval energy of a huge surrounding area, three desolate beast coiling mountain goats, and a lawless antelope that could give even a rank seven Gu Immortal a headache.

The scene became chaotic at once, desolate beasts and Gu Immortals fought in intense battles, while the Gu Immortals were wary of each other. But no matter how chaotic it was, the Gu Immortals were protecting one crucial location, they tried to preserve all traces of the teleportation Gu formation.

“Follow me.” With Fairy Li Shan at the lead, Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were in the chaotic battle, fighting carefully and moving around agilely, they stealthily had gotten close to the Gu formation.

Grr!

A bull shaped desolate beast blocked Fang Yuan and the other’s path.

“You dare rob me?!” Gu Immortal Zhuo Zhan carried a huge hammer and wore a red bronze suit of armor, he rode on a fat boar as he charged towards Fang Yuan and the others.

At the same time, Divine Lord Tian Du, who was far away laughed coldly, an Immortal Gu flew out, turning into lightning as it shot over, it was known as Thunder Shuttle.

Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan were about to strike, when Fang Yuan stopped them: “Please don’t worry, let me use my method.”

As he said this, countless Gu worms flew up in his immortal aperture.

Rank four all-out effort Gu, bitter strength Gu, borrow strength Gu, self-reliance Gu, refine essence spirit Gu, earth strength Gu, water strength Gu, wind strength Gu, lightning strength Gu, fire strength Gu, lurking soul coat Gu, breath concealment Gu...

Countless mortal Gu flew up like butterflies, circling around one spot.

An Immortal Gu was proudly at the center, it was the strength path Immortal Gu — Self Strength!

From the mesmerizing flying, the mortal Gu created traces of light in the air. Self strength Immortal Gu burst out with a blinding light, connecting all of the traces of light into one, forming a light lump resembling a small sun.

The light shined on the ground in the immortal aperture.

On the ground, there were hundreds of thousands of Fang Yuan’s strength path phantoms standing and waiting silently!

Before coming here, Fang Yuan made his preparations, he summon his strength path phantom army prior to this trip.

“Immortal killer move, Myriad Self — First Style — Giant Hand!” Fang Yuan mentally called out.

Tens of thousands of phantoms of Fang Yuan stretched out their right hands, raising them up high, palms facing the huge light lump in the sky.

Around the light lump, there were a hundred group strength Gu entering it.

At the same time, Fang Yuan in the outside world stretched out his right hand.

Boom—!

A strength path giant hand appeared out of nowhere.

The air within dozens of meters around him was pulled.

The giant hand pushed, the bull shaped desolate beast was pushed away and into the air.

The giant hand gripped, thunder shuttle Immortal Gu was trapped inside.

The giant hand closed into a fist, it punched at Gu Immortal Zhuo Zhan.

Zhuo Zhan was stunned, his eyes were wide open and staring, after shouting in shock, he escaped in panic!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 783: One Real Among a Hundred Fakes

Once Fang Yuan’s giant hand was unleashed, the effect was shocking, countless Gu Immortals looked over with surprised gazes.

In truth, such a method of accumulating quantity and unleashing it all at once was a very common way of designing killer moves.

Like the very common fire pellet Gu, it can summon one fireball. How could one increase its strength? Normal people would think like this: By accumulating fireballs, during battle, they would unleash it all at once.

This way, by raising quantity, the power of their move will increase.

This was the most common and simply train of thought.

But most things were easy to plan, yet the execution was not easy at all.

If they formed the fireball beforehand, how could they store it? Even if they stored many fireballs, how can they shoot these fireballs at the same time? Even if they fire it, how can they ensure that the aim is accurate, and that the fireballs are not shot in random directions?

Only after resolving all of these questions would the Gu Master truly own what was known as — a killer move.

That was why the nurture, use, and refinement of Gu worms were deep fields. Especially in terms of using Gu, one needed creativity. Even if killer moves were created, because people were all different, each killer move would naturally have their own strengths and weaknesses.

When Fang Yuan conceived the immortal killer move myriad self, it could be said that he had broken traditional confinements and fused enslavement path and strength path, making a great and rare achievement.

He had a strength path foundation originally, and when he underwent immortal ascension using his second aperture, he queried heaven and earth, gaining a deeper foundation.

Next, he made a huge sacrifice, taking a near death risk, eventually using the rank nine wisdom Gu, gaining unlimited inspiration and creating the immortal killer move myriad self.

Throughout the process, Fang Yuan played the most crucial role. But his environment, wisdom Gu, immortal ascension, destruction of Imperial Court blessed land, they were all unique stimuli.

The immortal killer move, myriad self, which successfully fused enslavement path and strength path, due to the nature of its design, had surpassed most immortal killer moves!

With this starting point, if Fang Yuan explored it in the future and developed it, he might be able to create a completely new path.

Thus, even though the killer move, myriad self, was still in its initial stages, its potential was shocking.

Enslavement path was the pinnacle of attrition battling, commanding an army and using the tactic of cannon fodder to drown the enemies in sheer numbers.

Strength path created an individual champion, by adding great strength to oneself, one can kill whoever stands in their path, if they rage, the battlefield would be bathed in blood, in this aspect, a single person was a huge force!

The two extremes fused into one, creating the killer move, myriad self.

Fang Yuan could use his own strength to create innumerable strength path phantoms that he could manipulate at will. When he battled with Hei Cheng, the strength path phantom army forced back Hei Cheng and Xue Song Zi, there was nothing they could do.

In the killer move myriad self, this was the manifestation of strength path supporting enslavement path.

Right now, was the opposite, it was enslavement path supporting strength path.

What caused this crucial effect was group strength Gu. This ancient Gu worm was sent into the light lump for the killer move at the end, transferring the strength path army's strength, and adding it all to Fang Yuan's own body.

There was also one key point, that was self strength Immortal Gu.

If it was cleanse soul Immortal Gu, he would not be able to summon the giant hand.

The so-called giant hand was only a giant strength path phantom's hand.

Hei Lou Lan had once controlled self strength Immortal Gu, her killer move's strongest transformation was a giant strength path phantom.

Fang Yuan used the immortal killer move, unravel dream, and saved Hei Lou Lan, obtaining her strength path true meaning afterwards. This true meaning became the final catalyst to create the giant hand.

With all these causes, the move 'giant hand' was formed.

Self strength Immortal Gu was indeed the best suited core for the immortal killer move myriad self. With it, myriad self developed a step further, it could finally interchange between the main and support roles for either path.

Fang Yuan used this move instead of unleashing the strength path phantom army in his immortal aperture, he had his reasons.

These strength path phantoms had his appearance, now that he was the culprit of a huge crime, he needed to hide his traces.

Especially after the auction, his identity was exposed to a degree, and he had not deduced the killer move, vaguely familiar face, yet.

Giant hand was the move most suitable for Fang Yuan currently — it had incredible power and would not expose his identity.

The huge fist continued to punch at Zhuo Zhan.

Zhuo Zhan was breaking out in cold sweat, he retreated more quickly as he created some distance from the giant hand.

Swoosh, the Immortal Gu Thunder Shuttle, which was immobilized, broke free from the giant hand, flying towards its owner, Divine Lord Tian Du.

Fang Yuan was not surprised.

The design of the giant hand was indeed influenced by the formless hands.

But the two were very different.

Giant hand was a strength path killer move, but formless hand was the essence of theft path. Formless hand could capture Immortal Gu, but giant hand could only immobilize them for a short period of time, that already could be considered very good.

After attacking once, Fang Yuan stopped his offense, in a few breaths of time, the giant hand vanished into thin air.

During the entire process of the attack, his right arm was making cracking noises. Even with his immortal zombie body, it was hard for him to sustain the attack.

Now that he stopped the move, his strong arm drooped down weakly. The tendons and muscles under his skin were almost all torn. His bones were full of cracks, and his arteries burst, mushing together with his muscles.

Giant hand extracted strength from all of the strength path phantoms, gathering it into Fang Yuan.

Because the strength was too great, and Fang Yuan was like the foundation holding it together.

“This time, I activated giant hand using twenty thousand strength path phantoms. But the giant hand’s power can only be at this level temporarily. Even though it has room for improvement, my body had reached its limits.”

Fang Yuan sighed to himself mentally.

His arm was slowly drooping down, but concealed by his wide black robe.

In a short time, using the recovery ability of the immortal zombie body, his arm completely recovered.

Even so, giant hand’s power was too shocking, Zhuo Zhan was covered in cold sweat as he retreated a great distance, his gaze towards Fang Yuan carried immense fear.

The surrounding Gu Immortals subconsciously created some distance from Fang Yuan.

Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan’s faces were hidden under their black hoods, they both showed complex and surprised expressions.

The power of giant hand had made them inwardly apprehensive and alert.

But currently, Fang Yuan was their ally, they were on the same side, the two felt glad.

These two emotions mixed together, it was a strange feeling, their states of mind were complex.

Especially Hei Lou Lan, after sensing that giant hand had a hint of her own killer move’s design, she felt a slight sense of dejection.

Far away, Unfettered Scholar pushed Divine Lord Tian Du back as he grabbed at thunder shuttle Immortal Gu.

Divine Lord Tian Du was anxious, he used his method and successfully took back thunder shuttle Immortal Gu.

Unfettered Scholar did not achieve his goal, he was not upset, he smiled serenely as he turned his gaze towards Fang Yuan: “An impressive immortal killer move.”

Deep within his gaze, there was a solemn feeling.

“This is truly battle strength reaching rank seven!” Lu Qing Ming and the others killed the ruin bat and returned to the outskirts of Tai Qiu, seeing this, they had wary expressions.

“Who is this?” Pi Shui Han was guessing. This was the first time giant hand was used, it was obviously not a well known immortal killer move.

“This is a strength path immortal killer move, is the person Domination Immortal Chu Du?” Many Gu Immortals could not help but guess.

A strength path Gu Immortal with such battle strength, there was only one well known in Northern Plains.

But soon, everyone shook their heads, with Chu Du’s demeanor, he would not conceal his identity like this.

After Divine Lord Tian Du took back thunder shuttle Immortal Gu, he looked around.

He did not want to fight Unfettered Scholar anymore. Now, even Fang Yuan was a tough opponent, and the Traveling Three Elites were back as well.

He knew that with his strength, he could not take advantage of the situation, his expression turned ugly.

Even though there was much going on, this all happened in a short period of time.

After Fang Yuan used giant hand, he had retracted his hand and his arm drooped by his side, under everyone’s gaze, he went back to beside Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan.

He purposely kept his head low, not making any noise, it was like he did something insignificant.

Fairy Li Shan was in front, he was walking behind her, together with Hei Lou Lan.

Seeing this, everyone was shocked and suspicious.

Fang Yuan and the others were dressed in black robes, they wore the same clothes and were very mysterious. Seeing Fang Yuan’s attitude, everyone guessed — Hei Lou Lan, who was beside him, could have the same battle strength as him. As for the one walking in front, Fairy Li Shan, who was acting like the leader, might have even greater strength than Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was very familiar with people’s minds, this small action by him was much more terrifying to other Gu Immortals compared to his giant hand!

Even though the other immortals knew that he might be bluffing, but as Fang Yuan and the others landed on the ground and reached the Gu formation, as they were searching for clues to capture Dong Fang Yu Liang, nobody stopped them.

Everyone acknowledged the strength of Fang Yuan’s group.

Of course, the bigger reason was that the wisdom path inheritance was nowhere to be seen. The immortals were shrewd people, they did not want to truly fight now. They fought earlier with probing as their intention, they did not use their real trump cards, or any all out attacks.

Fang Yuan and the others were searching for clues together.

A few breaths' later, they all gasped.

"What a teleportation Gu formation!" Fairy Li Shan's voice was very hoarse.

"Truly worthy of Dong Fang Chang Fan, he purposely left behind a Gu formation and misled us..." Hei Lou Lan said.

"The clues here can help point out the correct direction, but to find Dong Fang Yu Liang, we need to rely on luck." Fang Yuan continued.

"What do you mean?" A Gu Immortal did not understand, he asked loudly.

Fang Yuan and the others did not answer, they rose into the sky suddenly. They left Tai Qiu, moving in three different directions and rapidly vanishing from everyone's eyes.

A moment later, Unfettered Scholar landed as well.

He inspected it and realized Fang Yuan and the other's words were not lies.

As it turned out, Dong Fang Chang Fan did something to the Gu formation. He did not make arrangements to destroy the Gu formation, since this formation could only teleport mortal Gu Masters, it could not transport immortals.

If he destroyed the Gu formation, there would be Gu Immortal experts who could capture all sorts of clues and traces, following them and finding Dong Fang Yu Liang. After all, Dong Fang Chang Fan was skilled at plotting and deductions, he was not an expert in teleportation Gu formations.

Thus, he intentionally left behind many trails, while concealing the real route within them, making it hard for people to decipher what was real amongst the fake.

This way, the Gu Immortals would have to split up to find him, even if someone found Dong Fang Yu Liang, his pressure would be much lower.

Earlier, Fang Yuan and the others chose the three most probable directions.

Unfettered Scholar thought over it before choosing a fourth direction, rapidly leaving Tai Qiu.

After he left, the immortals landed one by one, getting their own clues and leaving in the directions they chose.

In the end, only Dong Fang tribe's Gu Immortals were left.

"These Gu Immortals are so crafty, no one destroyed the teleportation Gu formation."

"Even if they destroyed it, clues would still remain. These demonic path Gu Immortals have survived until today, they are not people who would do such strenuous and unrewarding tasks."

"That's right, they are hoping that even if they went the wrong direction, someone would find the real route. By then, if there is any commotion, they would rush over immediately."

"Alright, let's go down and see what clues there are."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 784: Ordinary Desolate Beasts Are Not My Match

“Alright, let us go down as well and see what clues there are.” Dong Fang Wan Xiu dispelled his concealment methods and moved to the spot where Dong Fang Yu Liang disappeared.

“Wasn’t first supreme elder given special care by Lord Dong Fang Chang Fan before death?” A Dong Fang tribe Gu Immortal asked with some doubts.

“Yes, first supreme elder specially convened us to come together, there are none of us Gu Immortals currently with the tribe.”

“I was still thinking first elder would already have some clues.”

The Gu Immortals expressed their worries.

Dong Fang Wan Xiu heaved a long sigh, speaking in a bleak tone: “Don’t call me first supreme elder, in my heart, only Lord Dong Fang Chang Fan can be our tribe’s first supreme elder.”

“We all know Lord Wan Xiu was nurtured by Lord Chang Fan. But now, Lord Chang Fan has already passed away, who can avoid dying in this world? In my opinion, we should focus on the present.”

“Right. Now, Lord Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance has attracted so many demonic path Gu Immortals. Our tribe might be one of the super forces, but any carelessness could result in a catastrophic danger. We need to handle this prudently and safely.”

“If not for Lord Wan Xiu honestly explaining that these are Lord Chang Fan’s arrangements before death, we would have left behind at least one Gu Immortal to guard against any accidents and protect our tribe’s seeds. Unlike now, where we have all gathered here.”

The Gu Immortals followed closely behind Dong Fang Wan Xiu, speaking one after another.

Dong Fang Wan Xiu waved his hand: “There is no need to worry, I might not have the correct clues, but I know the method to get those clues.”

He then closed his eyes and probed clues from the aura left behind by the teleportation Gu formation.

The Gu formation’s aura kept on changing, Dong Fang Wan Xiu got different results every time he checked.

Dong Fang Wan Xiu followed the instructions Dong Fang Chang Fan gave him before death, engraving these aura clues in memory, comparing and examining them.

After a while, he slowly opened his eyes and flew to the sky, saying to the rest: “Follow me.”

...

“Where is this?” Dong Fang Yu Liang slowly woke up from his state of unconsciousness, his gaze turned from blurry to clear.

He had a terrible headache, and in fact, not only did his head hurt, his entire body was covered in wounds of all sizes, blood flowed from his internal organs and bones were fractured in many areas.

“According to the map left by Lord Chang Fan, we have only traveled half the path, how did we suddenly arrive here?” Dong Fang Yu Liang was puzzled, pondering on this while treating the wounds.

With his rank five peak stage cultivation and methods, the injuries on his body were soon being healed.

“I remember that when we meditated to absorb primeval energy from primeval stones, the teleportation Gu formation suddenly activated and sent us here. Could it be that the map Lord Dong Fang Chang Fan gave me is actually fake? Maybe the latter half is fake and the true final point is midway through it.”

Dong Fang Yu Liang felt his guess could be correct.

From his understanding of Dong Fang Chang Fan, the latter indeed had such a way of doing things.

These arrangements were set up to block the methods of other wisdom path Gu Immortals.

Gu Immortals of other paths would be afraid of causing inadvertent damage, afraid that the clues with Dong Fang Yu Liang would be ruined as well as being wary of each other, thus they chose to stay behind and wait for the chance to move.

Wisdom path Gu Immortals, however, could search thoughts and extract the true clues of the map.

“Tan Wu Feng and Dong Po Kong were teleported along with me, but I see no traces of them right now. Maybe they are nearby, who knows. I should first look for them before exploring this hall.”

After a while, Dong Fang Yu Liang healed the injuries on his body, then started searching around.

He had found that this place was like a group of large halls, and he was inside a hall.

The halls were beautiful but ruined, and could be considered to be a giant site of ruins.

Dong Fang Yu Liang moved with caution, but there was no one in the hall, not to mention enemies.

“Tan Wu Feng!”

“Young master!”

After walking a while, Dong Fang Yu Liang met Tan Wu Feng, who also had been looking for him.

Not long after the two met, they found Dong Po Kong at the exit of the hall.

Dong Po Kong was lying on the ground, still unconscious.

Dong Fang Yu Liang and Tan Wu Feng used some methods to awaken him, the three were happy at having reunited.

Naturally, Dong Fang Yu Liang was still the leader, he thought for a while and decided: “If I am not wrong, this should be where Lord Chang Fan set the inheritance. We have already searched the first hall but did not discover any clues, let’s take a look at the second hall.”

Sure enough like he expected, when the three entered the second hall, they met with a test at the center of the hall.

This was a complicated puzzle, involving a complex mystery.

There were clues and evidence given, of which both truths and falsehoods were included. There was also a time limit, under which Dong Fang Yu Liang had to use wisdom path methods to not only search through the false clues, he also had to deduce the truth of the case.

Dong Fang Yu Liang was indeed worthy of being the successor Dong Fang Chang Fan chose, in less than one-third of the time limit, he passed the test and was richly rewarded with a set of rank five wisdom path Gu worms.

With greatly increased strength, Dong Fang Yu Liang entered the third hall.

This test was a remnant Gu recipe. It required Dong Fang Yu Liang to deduce the recipe within fifteen minutes.

...

Boom!

A giant strength path hand smashed down like a mountain.

“Baaa!”

The giant horned sheep let out miserable bleats, filled with injuries and completely suppressed by the giant hand.

This desolate beast struggled hard several times but the giant hand still pressed down on it firmly, finally, the giant horned sheep’s energy was used up and it gave up on resisting, not moving any more.

Fang Yuan let out a breath of cloudy air, a pleased look flashing past his eyes.

He had followed the clues in his search, but the clues turned out to be false. And when he followed the fifth clue, he came across this desolate beast, giant horned sheep.

Fang Yuan was interested in it and started a huge battle with the giant horned sheep.

Ever since he connected luck with Ye Fan, Hong Yi and Han Li, Fang Yuan did not have a deficit in luck. This giant horned sheep he fought did not have any difficult to handle Gu worms.

Giant hand was extremely useful, he repeatedly used it to subdue the giant horned sheep and soon restrained it.

There were no twists and turns during the entire battle.

Fang Yuan's superiority kept on accumulating until it turned into complete victory, capturing the giant horned sheep alive.

"Giant horned sheep is purely a strength path desolate beast, I will raise it in the blessed land. At every set interval of time, I can cut off some of its flesh and use eat strength Immortal Gu to increase the strength path dao marks on my body. Who would have expected that I would be able to capture a giant horned sheep alive in this place, it is truly a surprise blessing."

Fang Yuan relaxed his breathing, the injuries on his immortal zombie body had already healed.

He willed and the giant hand grabbed the giant horned sheep and transported it to his immortal aperture.

Ever since Fang Yuan obtained eat strength Immortal Gu, he had frequently purchased strength path related food in treasure yellow heaven which came out to be a significant expense. Once or twice was okay, but as it continued on, even Fang Yuan was feeling the effect of the huge expenses.

He had already planned to raise some strength path desolate beasts as long term investment. But the transactions of desolate beasts were rare even in treasure yellow heaven, not to mention that Fang Yuan only wanted pure strength path desolate beasts.

"I truly made a good move by extorting self strength Immortal Gu. My battle strength has reached rank seven and the giant hand is somewhat more practical than the strength path phantom army. Ordinary desolate beasts like giant horned sheep are no longer my match. Even regarding the swamp crab which once damaged Dang Hun mountain, I should be able to face it head-on. Even if it had gruel mud Immortal Gu, I could ensure the safety of Dang Hun mountain!"

Fang Yuan clenched his monstrous claws, enjoying the pleasure of having the situation in his grasp.

He rested and reorganized himself leisurely with no hurry.

He was aware of the situation: there were many wolves but only one prey. Only relying on his strength, the chances of devouring Dong Fang Chang Fan's wisdom path inheritance were too low.

"If nothing unexpected happens, even if this wisdom path inheritance lands in my hands, it will only be an incomplete part. Sigh, I wonder when I would be able to obtain a truly intact wisdom path inheritance?"

As Fang Yuan thought over this, Fairy Li Shan's message appeared in his immortal aperture.

Fairy Li Shan's information gathering ability was indeed superior to Fang Yuan's. There were already some people who had discovered the true location of Dong Fang Chang Fan's inheritance ground, and an intense battle was already underway at that area!

Because of this loud commotion, more and more Gu Immortals were heading there.

Fang Yuan met with Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan, when they arrived at the place, a dozen or so Gu Immortals were pacing around the outer perimeter.

"Ah, it is them."

"Careful, these three are extremely mysterious."

“I just returned from the area to the southeast, and saw that person using a giant hand to capture a desolate beast giant horned sheep alive!”

Demonic path Gu Immortals prioritized strength.

The strength Fang Yuan displayed made them apprehensive.

Thus, when they slowly flew over, these Gu Immortals subconsciously parted to make way for them in the air.

“This is the inheritance ground? Dong Fang Chang Fan indeed put much thought into this.” Fang Yuan observed from above, and soon said in a moved tone.

Below him was the corpse of a ruin bat.

This ruin bat was not simple, while alive, it was an immemorial desolate beast with the battle strength of a rank eight Gu Immortal.

It was a space path desolate beast with countless space path dao marks on its body. These dao marks were influencing this space, constructing a land of illusory large halls.

As long as someone stepped into its range, they would be dragged into the halls. Only if they were rank eight Gu Immortal, would they be able to resist this huge force.

This ruin bat died in the depths of Tai Qiu, its presence caused there to be no desolate beasts around a huge surrounding range.

This was a forbidden place within a forbidden place, a fierce area among fierce areas.

Dong Fang Chang Fan was also only a rank seven Gu Immortal, but he was actually able to arrange his wisdom path inheritance at this place, this was indeed another clear indication that he was worthy of being called the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal of Northern Plains, it was truly extraordinary!

Right as the Gu Immortals were hesitating above the ruin bat’s corpse, Dong Fang Yu Liang had already been smoothly succeeding and was charging into the eighth hall.

“My chosen inheritor, you have finally arrived.” A lump of star will condensed into Dong Fang Chang Fan’s appearance, in front of Dong Fang Yu Liang and the others.

“Master!” Dong Fang Yu Liang prostrated with tears in his eyes.

The star will slowly nodded and looked at Dong Fang Yu Liang: “Being able to come here shows your superior talent. This is not the final hall but it is the end of the inheritance. As long as you are able to perfect this Gu formation and successfully activate it, you can be said to have completely obtained this wisdom path inheritance and receive my wisdom path Immortal Gu!”

“Master, I will definitely do my best.” Dong Fang Yu Liang showed an intense fighting spirit.

“You need to be quick, there is not much time left.” The star will raised its head, gazing at the sky.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 785: Phantom Beasts Obstruct The Way, Immortals Are Troubled

Bam bam bam!

Intense explosions continued to occur.

In the sky, Gu Immortals were fighting everywhere.

Since they had now found the true inheritance ground, the demonic path Gu Immortals were all practical and straightforward, without much hesitation, someone flew down.

Since Dong Fang Chang Fan chose the corpse of an immemorial ruin bat as his wisdom path inheritance ground, he naturally had his own reasons.

The huge phantom beast army was stirred, like a giant black cloud, they rose from beneath the feet of the demonic path Gu Immortals.

These phantom beasts were all of strange appearances, they attacked fearlessly. They were skilled at dodging, and there were several desolate beast level phantom beasts blocking the demonic path Gu Immortals.

“Phantom beasts are normally rare, they only appear in places with numerous space path dao marks. There are so many here?” Hei Lou Lan was fighting fiercely as she cursed.

She lost self strength Immortal Gu, her battle strength plummeted. Even though she could use strength qi Immortal Gu to replace it, and still summon the giant strength path phantom killer move, she could not show her appearance now, thus, when fighting, she was very restricted.

“Stay calm.” Fairy Li Shan consoled: “Phantom beasts have the natural ability to turn into phantoms and avoid attacks. Inspiration for the phantom path of Gu Masters was obtained from phantom beasts by Gu Immortal Xu Wu Xie. As long as an ancient desolate beast level phantom beast doesn’t appear, we will be able to enter the corpse of the immemorial ruin bat eventually.”

As she said this, a large group of phantom beast birds flew over.

Fang Yuan snorted, keeping them away from the other two as he used myriad self first style, giant hand.

A strength path giant hand appeared, stretching its fingers and grabbing.

The strength path hand had great power, but when it grabbed, it caused little damage. In this thousand phantom beast group, only some dozens had died.

Most of the phantom beasts had turned vague, they became nearly invisible, as they remained in their places.

When Fang Yuan retracted his strength path hand, these phantom beasts appeared again, they became solid and had real bodies, charging towards Fang Yuan and the others again.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, next to him, Fairy Li Shan waved a hand as a sea of fire spread out.

The fire burned in the air, over the entire surroundings, they formed a large barrier.

The phantom beasts charged into the sea of fire, using the same ability again and avoiding the flames by turning into phantoms, their advancement did not slow down.

But the moment they ran out of the fire, Fang Yuan had been waiting for them, he grasped with his strength path giant hand.

Splat!

This time, Fang Yuan grabbed onto them.

Hundreds of phantom beasts were turned into meat paste, they lost their lives.

The hand slowly opened up, as flesh and blood rained down from the gaps between his fingers, blood was pouring like a drizzle of rain. This group of phantom beasts had around a thousand in number, with this grasp from Fang Yuan, most of them died, the remaining ones lost their fighting spirit when faced against the imposing Fang Yuan, they scattered and escaped.

Fang Yuan killed this group of phantom beasts so easily, but he was not smug, he had a grim expression: “The ordinary phantom beasts are still fine, they can only turn into phantoms for a short while, we can eradicate them with some cooperation. But the problem lies in the desolate beast level phantom beasts.”

Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan nodded.

They were observing the surroundings and paying attention to the battles elsewhere.

Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han, the two rank seven Gu Immortals were fighting with two desolate level phantom beasts each. Desolate level phantom beasts were truly special, they could turn into phantoms for a long time. Thus, even though they were rank six, they were hard to deal with, Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han could not take them down even though they hurried to do so.

But the two had rich experience, after fighting for a while, they recognized the situation and became less rash, they started to deal with the situation calmly.

In contrast, Lu Qing Ming’s side was in a dangerous situation.

One desolate level phantom beast turned phantom, its speed rose quickly as it charged towards Gu Immortal Han Dong, who was beside Lu Qing Ming.

Han Dong was caught off guard, he was inside the phantom beast’s body.

After turning phantom, Han Dong could not touch the phantom beast, but the phantom beast also could not touch Han Dong.

But at the next moment, the phantom beast became solid.

Han Dong was inside the phantom beast’s body, once this happened, he entered the phantom beast’s stomach.

The phantom beast growled proudly, it flew away and left with Han Dong, leaving Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang behind.

Lu Qing Ming, Han Dong, and Su Guang were the Traveling Three Elites, when they joined forces, they could match a rank seven Gu Immortal. But they were cooperating when doing that, they were not as powerful individually.

Once Han Dong was gone, the remaining two Gu Immortals' battle strength fell drastically, they were no longer as imposing as before.

The two were anxious, they chased and attempted to save Han Dong.

The phantom beast that engulfed Han Dong flew down rapidly, it endured Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang's attacks without turning phantom again.

Han Dong was attacking it from within its stomach as well, this phantom beast was attacked from both inside and outside, along the way, it was clearly troubled, it was spitting blood.

"Why is this phantom beast so stubborn? Earlier when we fought, they would all turn phantom the moment any attacks got close. Quickly turn phantom now!" Su Guang shouted anxiously.

Lu Qing Ming's face was grim: "Can you still not tell? There is a mastermind behind this. Dong Fang Chang Fan, I underestimated you..."

In a hall within the ruins, Dong Fang Chang Fan's star will watched the sky with his hands behind his back.

His body was shining in starlight, his thick and condensed body was shrinking rapidly, becoming more dispersed.

This was the ability of the number one wisdom path immortal in Northern Plains.

Even though he had died, the methods he left behind could still be used, controlling this phantom beast army, to fight for precious time for his inheritor.

"Quick, faster! Just a bit faster!" Behind him, Dong Fang Yu Liang was full of sweat as he squeezed out all of his potential, trying to finish this Gu formation.

This Gu formation was the final test.

After he passed it, he would obtain Dong Fang Chang Fan's Immortal Gu, the core essence of the wisdom path inheritance!

In the air, seeing that the desolate level phantom beast was bringing Han Dong back to its home, Su Guang, who could not catch up, showed a look of despair: "To think that Dong Fang Chang Fan had such incredible enslavement path methods, he really concealed them deeply. Brother Han Dong will be in deep trouble if he can't escape, what shall we do?!"

"Enslavement path, wisdom path, and soul path are all very similar, they almost have the same origins, that is not strange." Lu Qing Ming's eyes shined with a determined light: "But Dong Fang Chang Fan, we feared you when you were alive, avoiding you and your deductions. Now that you are dead, you are still causing trouble for us, but do you think such methods are enough to take us down, you are looking down on the talents of this world!"

Saying so, his body shook as his arms spread open, resembling a bird spreading its wings.

At the next moment, his arms swung in front of his chest, without bending at all, as his hands clapped in front of him.

With a loud, crisp sound, an intense wind blew from the force of his clap.

The wind danced in the air, forming tens of thousands of wind blades in the air!

The wind blades spun around each other, forming a ball shaped mass resembling dark green vines, they intertwined together as they were sent attacking at the desolate level phantom beast.

“It’s here! Brother Lu’s immortal killer move — Entangled Wind!” Su Guang’s expression lightened.

He knew the power of this immortal killer move, if used on the phantom beast, it would definitely suffer a huge blow, Han Dong would be saved.

Furthermore, this move, entangled wind, was strong and incredible, it was a famed move of Lu Qing Ming, it could be manipulated at will, the wind blades could gather and separate with just his thoughts.

That was why, even if the phantom beast turned phantom the moment it was hit, causing entangled wind to hit Han Dong, Lu Qing Ming could still separate entangled wind in time using his own strength.

Once entangled wind was split up, even though the attack range would increase, its power would reduce, Han Dong would survive it.

But just when he was about to succeed, a vine dragon flew over, targeting the entangled wind.

“Unfettered Scholar, don’t even think about it!” Su Guang saw this and stared with a furious expression, he hurriedly used his killer move to block the vine dragon.

A water lotus appeared below the entangled wind all of a sudden.

This was the action of the rank seven Gu Immortal, Pi Shui Han, who freed himself for a moment.

Lu Qing Ming snorted coldly as the entangled wind split up, a small portion of it could not dodge and entered the water lotus. But most of the wind blades dodged the water lotus and gathered together again, forming a smaller entangled wind, and charging towards the desolate level phantom beast.

But right at this moment, a strength path giant hand came out of the clouds and grabbed the entangled wind.

With a loud bang, the strength path giant hand and the entangle wind both dissipated.

The desolate level phantom beast found an opening and landed on the palace below. With a ripple in space, it vanished.

“Ah!” Success had been just around the corner, Su Guang growled loudly in anger, turning towards Fang Yuan with a furious expression: “I will kill you!”

Fang Yuan snickered coldly, he waved his finger at Su Guang.

Su Guang was about to attack, but Lu Qing Ming flew over and stopped him in time.

“Stay calm, Su Guang!” Lu Qing Ming’s eyes were blood red: “We will definitely take revenge for this later, but now, the urgent matter is to save Han Dong.”

Thinking of Han Dong, Su Guang controlled his anger and clenched his fist, veins could be seen on his forehead: “Brother Lu is right, only after finding Han Dong, we would have rank seven battle strength by combining our strength!”

Before this, only the two of them were left. Finding trouble with a rank seven battle strength expert like Fang Yuan was just asking for humiliation.

The two talked at a low volume for a while, before turning around and attacking the palace below.

The palace was unmoving from start to end, it was only a mirage. As space rippled again, three new desolate level phantom beasts flew out, blocking Su Guang and Lu Qing Ming.

But this time, Su Guang and Lu Qing Ming wanted to save someone, they went all out and stopped preserving their strength, the three desolate level phantom beasts were pushed back.

Pi Shui Han saw this and laughed coldly, this was the result he wanted to see.

Demonic path Gu Immortals were wary of each other, until the last moment, nobody would go all out. With Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang leading the way, everything would be much easier.

“Most importantly, they lost their rank seven battle strength. I have one less true competitor now.” At another side, Unfettered Scholar smiled, as he dealt with the desolate level phantom beast, he looked at Pi Shui Han and Fang Yuan.

Especially when he saw that Fang Yuan and the others were still standing in a spot without a desolate level phantom beast fighting them, a solemn gaze flashed across his eyes.

“These three are having it easy, this is not a good thing.” Unfettered Scholar moved as he thought, luring the desolate level phantom beast towards Fang Yuan and the others.

Fang Yuan had already been paying attention to the surroundings, seeing this, his gaze was cold.

He retreated as he stretched out both hands.

Two giant hands flew out, charging towards Unfettered Scholar without any restraints.

At the same time, a third giant hand appeared behind him, protecting him from his surroundings.

“He can actually use three hands at once?” Unfettered Scholar’s movements paused, the wariness in his mind intensified.

Just as they were all harrying and plotting against each other, an elderly Gu Immortal appeared silently behind Dong Fang Yu Liang, who was in the large hall.

His eyes were shining with divine brilliance, his gaze swept across Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will, as well as Dong Fang Yu Liang who was working hard, he stared at the walls of the hall and the huge Gu formation on the ground.

“Good formation, good formation. Even I, Old Lord Can Yang, am seeing this for the first time in my life.” He praised continuously.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 786: One Against Two Rank Sevens

“Who are you?” Dong Fang Yu Liang saw Old Lord Can Yang and was shocked.

Tan Wu Feng and Dong Po Kong were vigilant, the aura Old Lord Can Yang naturally sent out made them feel a strong sense of fear.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will slowly turned around, saying to Old Lord Can Yang calmly: “You are also here to inherit my wisdom path inheritance?”

Old Lord Can Yang was slightly stunned, after assessing the star will, he said with a tone of surprise: “Oh, I am also qualified?”

“You could pass the test, you are a capable person. Since you appeared at this moment, you have an affinity with the inheritance. The wisdom path inheritance that I, Dong Fang Chang Fan, left behind cannot be passed down to those cowardly and useless people, that would just be ruining my reputation, and letting our descendants laugh at the great wisdom path Gu Immortal who can’t even arrange his posthumous matters properly, isn’t that right?”

The star will paused for a moment before continuing: “Since you have shown your outstanding skill, you naturally have the qualifications to inherit my wisdom path inheritance. But this lad was picked by my main body, now that he is in the test, you cannot obstruct him. If he succeeds, you will not be able to get it. But if he fails, you are allowed to try.”

“Dong Fang Chang Fan, you are indeed peerless within Northern Plains, you had such a disposition.” Old Lord Can Yang looked at Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will, sighing as he spoke matter-of-factly: “I was going to snatch it forcefully, but since this is the case, I do not mind waiting.”

Old Lord Can Yang was indeed powerful, but this place was arranged by Dong Fang Chang Fan, even if he snatched it, he would only get an incomplete wisdom path inheritance.

For wisdom path inheritances, the more complete they are, the more valuable they will be.

Since there was a possibility of obtaining a complete wisdom path inheritance, Old Lord Can Yang did not want to lose it.

His gaze went from Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will to Dong Fang Yu Liang, after looking at him for a while, he turned to Tan Wu Feng and Dong Po Kong.

Tan Wu Feng and Dong Po Kong had been completely on alert since he appeared.

Old Lord Can Yang’s gaze was very calm, but for Tan Wu Feng and Dong Po Kong, they felt as if a fire alarm was blaring. An immense sense of danger was filling them.

“What are you thinking of doing?” Dong Fang Yu Liang sensed something amiss, he shouted loudly.

Old Lord Can Yang snickered, he did not move, but Tan Wu Feng and Dong Po Kong’s bodies had ignited on the spot!

“Ah—!” The two screamed out shrilly, they collapsed on the floor and struggled intensely. But the yellow-green flames continued to burn, it roasted these two rank five Gu Masters and made them feel pain that could make one wish for death.

Old Lord Can Yang’s face showed a cold and cruel smile.

His intention was to deal with Dong Fang Yu Liang. If he failed, the opportunity would come.

But if he wanted to exterminate Dong Fang Yu Liang, the star will at the side would not allow it, this would cause Old Lord Can Yang to lose his opportunity. Thus, Old Lord Can Yang targeted Dong Po Kong and Tan Wu Feng.

To Dong Fang Yu Liang, these two people were loyal subordinates, they were his right-hand men.

He was naturally affected greatly, he was also an astute person, he knelt down and begged Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will for help: “Master, without these two, I would not have made it here, please save them!”

Star will waved its sleeves, it said coldly: “Mercy does not suit an army commander, kindness does not suit scheming. Dong Fang Yu Liang, you are the disciple of my main body, but my main body is dead, I am only a star will left behind, my main purpose is to find a suitable inheritor for this inheritance. The help I gave you has already reached its limit, there is no use even if you beg me. Rather than wasting time here, I would rather you use your time well and complete the Gu formation, passing the test.”

The star will said that out loud, but at the same time, a voice was transmitted into Dong Fang Yu Liang’s mind: “Yu Liang, oh Yu Liang, the situation is extremely dangerous, this Gu Immortal is a huge threat, he has great battle strength, even my main body would be wary of him. Furthermore, I am only a will now, I deceived and managed to stall him, you have to quickly complete this Gu formation. This formation is both an inheritance and also a way to deter enemies. If you can complete it in time, you will be able to use it to challenge Gu Immortals! By then, you might be able to save your two subordinates’ lives!”

Land spirits were pure, they never lied, their actions and words were all truthful. But the star will was a will, it could lie.

Dong Fang Yu Liang heard the star will’s transmission and his heart shook, he finally understood the star will’s difficulty, he shouted loudly as he stood up, he screamed at Tan Wu Feng and Dong Po Kong: “Brothers, you have to hang in there! I will definitely save your lives!”

Saying this, he turned back with tears in his eyes, continuing to complete the Gu formation.

Old Lord Can Yang frowned, he willed and the fire became larger, Tan Wu Feng and Dong Po Kong’s faces contorted from pain, their painful cries became twice as loud.

Even though they cried out in grievous pain, they could not die. Rank five Gu Masters were at the peak of the mortal world, but in front of a person like Old Lord Can Yang, they were like wooden puppets, they were completely controlled, they could not die even if they wanted to!

As Dong Fang Yu Liang heard the cries, his mind became clearer, his gaze became more firm, he was not overrun by anger and hatred, instead, his eyes started bleeding, this was the result of him deducing intensely and expending his mental strength.

Old Lord Can Yang tortured the two and saw no effect, instead it made Dong Fang Yu Liang try even harder. The incomplete Gu formation was being constructed at a faster pace.

Old Lord Can Yang’s face showed some worry.

At this rate, if Dong Fang Yu Liang succeeds, his plans would be ruined.

Dong Fang Yu Liang had quite a chance to succeed, not only because he was doing well now, but because he was the person chosen by Dong Fang Chang Fan, he had to have potential.

If Dong Fang Yu Liang obtained the inheritance, with Old Lord Can Yang’s battle strength, there was a possibility that he could snatch it.

But the problem was his Central Continent identity, he was a Central Continent Gu Immortal, coming to Northern Plains was risky in itself.

The five regions in this world, no matter which one, were hostile to foreigners.

Especially in Northern Plains, now that Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had collapsed, there was a huge wave of commotion, if his Central Continent Gu Immortal identity was exposed, there would be huge trouble.

Thus, Old Lord Can Yang would rather move secretly, trying to save time and keep himself concealed, he would want to avoid any battle.

Old Lord Can Yang took a look at Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will, his gaze flickering with uncertainty.

He felt an urge to attack Dong Fang Yu Liang secretly! But he was afraid that he would lose the opportunity because of this, if he lost this chance, in the end he would only obtain an incomplete inheritance, it had little value.

But he was afraid of the star will lying.

With Old Lord Can Yang’s experience, he knew the difference between wills and land spirits.

Dong Fang Chang Fan was a wisdom path Gu Immortal after all, even the star will that he left behind after dying could influence a strong foe like Old Lord Can Yang and make him uncertain with just a few words.

Outside in the sky, Gu Immortals and phantom beasts were fighting chaotically.

Unfettered Scholar saw Fang Yuan’s three hands, his wariness increased. He only froze momentarily, soon, he raised his speed and charged towards Fang Yuan.

Even though he was facing two strength path hands, he did not have any intention of retreating, he wanted to force Fang Yuan and the others into trouble, to probe their true abilities.

Fang Yuan saw that he did not manage to deter Unfettered Scholar, he was not upset, he manipulated the two hands and without any scruples, attacked Unfettered Scholar.

“He dared to attack?”

“He really attacked, hehe, between two rank seven battle strengths, this will be a good show!”

“I have to hide far away, to not get dragged in.”

The surrounding Gu Immortals retreated, leaving a huge space for Fang Yuan and Unfettered Scholar to fight.

Unfettered Scholar was agile, even though Fang Yuan’s two hands grabbed, they could not touch even his clothes.

Unfettered Scholar was dressed in a white robe, he wore a tall hat and had black hair, he flew like an agile crane, free and unrestricted.

Seeing the two hands fail in getting him, Fang Yuan’s body shook as two more hands showed up.

Along with the strength path giant hand protecting his body, he summoned a total of five giant hands!

Each of his strength path giant hands took the strength of twenty thousand strength path phantoms in Fang Yuan’s aperture, gathering and focusing on one of Fang Yuan’s arms.

This was his current limit.

In accordance with Fang Yuan’s current body toughness, he could only take the strength of twenty thousand phantoms each. Any more and his arms would break apart even before attacking.

But do not forget, Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body was an eight armed zombie!

He had eight arms, if he used all of them, he would be able to summon eight strength path giant hands!

Five was not his limit yet!

Four of the strength path giant hands flew in the air, attacking Unfettered Scholar.

The latter was still safe and sound even though it was harder now, he laughed loudly, shouting at Fang Yuan: “Sir, is that all you can do?”

He called himself unfettered, he was naturally skilled at movement. Fang Yuan’s strength path giant hands were powerful, but they were not fast, they could do nothing to Unfettered Scholar.

Unless Unfettered Scholar made a mistake, there was no chance of Fang Yuan capturing him.

This was the limitation of giant hand.

Giant hand was powerful, but it had weaknesses.

Every immortal killer move had their own strengths and weaknesses.

Although Unfettered Scholar was leading in the battle, he was shocked inside.

The battle strength that Fang Yuan displayed made him feel heavy. Especially with Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan standing behind Fang Yuan, fighting with minimal force, could those two be even more powerful?

“Even if Unfettered Scholar himself fought, he could not force out the true strength of these three people?” At another side, Pi Shui Han was also suspicious: “This can’t continue!”

His gaze was determined, the waves below his feet split, a wave that was more than a hundred feet tall crashed at Fang Yuan and the others.

Actually, Pi Shui Han and Unfettered Scholar were not on good terms, they even had fought with each other previously, they had old grudges. But right now, after seeing Fang Yuan's strength, Pi Shui Han was not an ordinary character either, he put down his grudge and turned his firepower towards Fang Yuan, assisting Unfettered Scholar.

The two rank seven Gu Immortals attacked Fang Yuan, the other Gu Immortals quickly retreated.

"Come then!" Fang Yuan laughed loudly, he had no fear, three more hands flew out.

A total of eight strength path giant hands, three were blocking Unfettered Scholar, three were flying at Pi Shui Han, the last two were floating around him, prepared and ready to strike, it gave others a huge sense of threat.

Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan's bodies also gave off Immortal Gu auras.

These Immortal Gu auras were not just one each. They each had at least two auras, they oozed out, unconcealed.

But just this could not scare off Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han.

The two looked at each other before one of them shouted: "Having so many Immortal Gu, you three must be famous experts, you are hiding your identities so deeply, don't tell me you are righteous path Gu Immortals?"

The other person, Unfettered Scholar, shouted: "I am familiar with many Northern Plains Gu Immortals. I wonder which old friend could be playing a joke on me? Or perhaps none of you are Northern Plains Gu Immortals!"

Both of their words were deadly, one was slandering them to be righteous path Gu Immortals, they were trying to set them apart from the demonic path cultivators. The other was more ruthless, he said that Fang Yuan and the others were not people from Northern Plains, he was trying to stir up the feeling of a common enemy in these demonic path Gu Immortals.

Gu Immortals were all calculating and scheming people, when they fought, it was not just using swords and blades, they fought using words, they competed in terms of wisdom and strategy.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 787: Plotting For The Tribe Even After Death

Ever since Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed, and Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed, the entirety of Northern Plains' Gu Immortal world had stirred up in shock, they were trying to find the culprit behind this.

Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han had malicious intentions, not only did they join up and attack Fang Yuan together, they even slandered and tried to isolate him.

By now, Fang Yuan had to speak: "Are you two trying to slander me into doing something foolish? Hehe, you are looking down on me, you are looking down on all our fellow immortals here. I am a true Northern Plains Gu Immortal, my Northern

Plains aura is clear for everyone to see. If you want to defame me, you should at least make a credible lie.”

The other demonic path Gu Immortals retreated even further now.

Hei Lou Lan’s mouth twitched.

Fang Yuan obviously was the culprit behind it all, but he was speaking now like he was innocent, with such confidence.

Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han did not know that although they were deliberately making slander, they actually hit the truth. The one who caused Imperial Court blessed land’s destruction, who else could it be but Fang Yuan?

The contest of words was countered by Fang Yuan, Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han did not speak, they attacked even more fiercely.

Being attacked at once by two rank sevens, Fang Yuan’s forehead became covered in sweat quickly, he defended himself from all directions, he was barely holding on.

After all, he was only a rank six immortal zombie, while his opponents were true rank seven Gu Immortals.

In terms of cultivation level, there was a huge difference.

Fang Yuan relied on the immortal killer move myriad self to display rank seven battle strength, but the longer the strength path giant hands were used, the more Fang Yuan’s arms would be unable to sustain the burden, they would gradually reach the point of exploding into meat paste.

“I have a wood path killer move, but it is a trump card of mine, I barely use it normally. It can be used on one of the enemies, and possibly gravely injure them. But I will need you to restrict them and move the location elsewhere.” Fairy Li Shan saw that Fang Yuan was at a disadvantage, she was anxious and transmitted this to him.

Fang Yuan shook his head as he smiled bitterly, replying: “The strength path giant hands have incredible power, but they are slow, it is extremely difficult to trap any one of them, there is little hope. Fairy, you can wait for a moment, I still have a plan. If this fails, it will not be too late for you to strike.”

“Oh?” Fairy Li Shan heard this and held in her anxiety.

After several rounds, Pi Shui Han and Unfettered Scholar were closing in, Fang Yuan’s disadvantage was getting higher.

“Now is the time.” A bright flash shined across Fang Yuan’s eyes, he manipulated six strength path giant hands as he slammed down.

Pi Shui Han and Unfettered Scholar were both below the giant hands, they felt a strong pressure coming down from above, slamming towards them.

At once, the air seemed to have frozen.

The giant hands whipped up strong winds, causing Unfettered Scholar’s clothes to flutter, as Pi Shui Han’s expression tensed.

The strength path giant hands slammed down together, they were so fierce that the onlookers’ hearts jumped.

But Pi Shui Han and Unfettered Scholar were already familiar with the strength path giant hands, the former scoffed while the latter smiled lightly, they used their movement killer moves and avoided the hands.

But Fang Yuan acted differently from before, he did not stop his attack, he continued exerting force, slamming the six giant hands down on the ground.

This change caught everyone off guard, even Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will below became stunned.

“Oh no.” The star will’s expression changed, he wanted to stop it but it was too late.

Boom!

Six strength path giant hands slammed down in the air, causing ripples to appear in the space, the loud sound was like the boom of thunder.

Countless space path dao marks embedded in the air were smashed by the strength path giant hands.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s arrangements were destroyed, the concealment illusion was gone, the immemorial desolate beast level ruin bat corpse’s true appearance was exposed.

What a huge ruin bat!

Its body was sprawled flat on the ground, but it was still hundreds of meters in size. Its wings were thick and huge, covering a few li of sand.

The bat wings were slightly lower, while the head was the highest, looking upon it from a high altitude, it resembled a small mountain.

On the ruin bat’s back, there was a huge wound.

The wound was extremely deep, Fang Yuan looked at it and knew that it was the ruin bat’s fatal injury, but he did not know which existence caused it.

At the periphery of the injury, the flesh and fur of the ruin bat was corroded, showing its white bones. On the skeleton, there were extremely thick space path dao marks, interweaved together to conjure a small space.

Inside this space, there was a hall that was so run-down it looked like ruins.

Fang Yuan’s six strength path giant hands had already broken into this small space, it was connected to the outside world now.

“Dong Fang Chang Fan’s arrangements were broken!”

“His inheritance is inside, whoever snatches it first gets it!”

“Fight, fight our way in.”

Wealth moved people’s hearts, the inheritance of Northern Plains’ number one wisdom path Gu Immortal in this generation, to the demonic path Gu Immortals, it was extremely attractive.

Fang Yuan opened a pathway directly, it triggered the greed in all of the demonic path Gu Immortals.

The first demonic path Gu Immortal flew down, causing the other demonic path Gu Immortals to feel an intense sense of urgency, they rushed down one after another.

Unfettered Scholar was hesitant, while Pi Shui Han had already given up on Fang Yuan, he flew into the tunnel below.

Unfettered Scholar sighed lightly, looking at Fang Yuan deeply, he turned into a white light and fought his way into the tunnel.

But at the next moment, six brand new desolate level phantom beasts, as well as an ancient desolate level phantom beast flew out of the small space, colliding with all of the demonic path Gu Immortals.

The two sides fought in a chaotic mess again.

“There is definitely someone manipulating this.” Fang Yuan saw this and squinted, slightly shocked inside.

Old Lord Can Yang was also shocked, the situation was getting more urgent, seemingly thoroughly sobering him.

Snorting coldly, a cruel smile appeared on his face, as a huge flame turned Tan Wu Feng and Dong Po Kong into charcoal.

These two poor rank fives, at the peak of the mortal world, they had a tough journey in following Dong Fang Yu Liang, reaching this stage. In the end, they were killed by Old Lord Can Yang in an instant, burnt to death.

At the same time, as Old Lord Can Yang snorted coldly, Dong Fang Yu Liang, who was working hard, spat out blood like he was struck by lightning, he knelt on the ground.

“Old scoundrel, you killed my subordinates, and still dare to attack me!” Dong Fang Yu Liang struggled to get up, he was shouting in anger and hatred.

Old Lord Can Yang’s eyes darted around, he sneered: “Don’t frame me, I did nothing.”

In saying this, the corners of his eyes were locked on Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will.

This was Old Lord Can Yang’s probe, to see if this star will’s methods were real or not.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will saw this and heaved a long sigh, saying: “It has gotten to this point, so be it, everyone come out.”

Once he said that, a change occurred.

In the hall, a mysterious light burst out.

When the light faded, eight Dong Fang tribe Gu Immortals appeared together, they were surrounding Old Lord Can Yang in the middle as they shouted:

“Old scoundrel, you dare to target our tribe’s inheritance, your death date will be today.”

“Although this old scoundrel is despicable, the traitor in our tribe is even more deplorable!”

“Quickly tell us, who was the one who informed you in secret?”

Old Lord Can Yang was no longer calm, panic flashed across his eyes as he looked at the star will with much rage and shock: “So this was a plot against me!”

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will nodded: “Indeed. Before my main body died, I had instructed Dong Fang Wan Xiu and taught him the correct method. Using this, he obtained the secret passageway from the teleportation Gu formation. He told the seven Gu Immortals around him this secret passageway. After that, on the way here, they met with my arrangements and were attacked by the desolate beasts, keeping them busy.”

“Meanwhile, the traitor in my tribe is evidently among these eight. The traitor was stalled by the desolate beasts and could not come here. Afraid that the wisdom path inheritance would end up in the hands of others, he sent this secret information using a certain method to you. After receiving the information, you surpassed the other demonic path Gu Immortals and arrived here first.”

Old Lord Can Yang’s expression was grim, he stared at the star will as he said eerily: “So that is it. Even though you knew that Dong Fang tribe had a traitor, you did not know who it was.”

“That is correct.” Star will nodded: “But now it seems, the traitor is among these eight.”

“Who was it, who betrayed our bloodline, who betrayed our tribe!” Dong Fang Wan Xiu screamed.

“At this point, you have already exposed some clues, it will only take some effort to find you, why are you not owning up?” Dong Fang Yi Kong clenched his fists in anger.

The other Gu Immortals looked at each other, some had solemn expressions while the others had a furious look.

The situation was in a deadlock.

Dong Fang tribe had eight Gu Immortals, but they were all rank six. Old Lord Can Yang was a true rank seven, and an expert even among rank sevens.

Even though Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortals were greater in numbers, they knew that one of them was a traitor, that caused them to be wary of each other, they did not attack directly.

Old Lord Can Yang frowned slowly, looking at the star will: “Wait, since you saw through the plot and were targeting me from the start, you could have triggered the arrangements before I entered, why did you wait until now?”

The star will stood on the spot, refusing to answer him.

Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortals also did not speak.

The hall fell into silence, noises of the intense battles from above could be heard.

Old Lord Can Yang twitched in sudden understanding: “I get it, you want to borrow my strength to deal with these demonic path Gu Immortals. All you need to do is to intentionally make Dong Fang Yu Liang fail, and I would think that I could compete for this inheritance. By then, all of the demonic path Gu Immortals outside would be my enemies. Of course, with your wisdom, you can certainly think of another, better method to make me your pawn. When these demonic path Gu Immortals and I fight it out and become weakened, your Gu Immortals would be able to reap more profits. It is a good plan, what a great scheme...”

“Unfortunately, any sort of arrangement is not safe from accidents.” The star will said, acknowledging Old Lord Can Yang’s guess.

This accident was Fang Yuan’s six strength path giant hands.

“Teacher...” Dong Fang Yu Liang was standing stunned on the spot, the scene in front of him made him feel helpless, he was both joyful and sorrowful.

He was joyful because the enemy was restricted, the tribe was prepared for it. He was sorrowful because he was just bait, he was a pawn meant to attract the enemy. His hard work, Tan Wu Feng and Dong Po Kong’s sacrifice, they seemed like foolish, laughable jokes.

As if he sensed Dong Fang Yu Liang’s thoughts, the star will turned around and looked at the inheritor that he chose: “Yu Liang, you do not need to think too deeply about it, I was using the wisdom path inheritance to trap our strong foes and exterminate the traitor in our tribe. But the arrangement here is real, the wisdom path inheritance is also real. This enemy has a huge background, he is from Immortal Crane Sect, one of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent. They also have their wisdom path Gu Immortals. It is only when I place the true wisdom path inheritance here, that I would not leave behind any flaws that would allow the enemy’s wisdom path Gu Immortals to find out.”

“So that’s it!” Dong Fang Yu Liang’s heart shook, he felt ashamed but also deep admiration.

He was ashamed about his own foolish thoughts, he was also admiring his teacher Dong Fang Chang Fan. The latter taught him painstakingly, even after death, he plotted and attempted to protect Dong Fang tribe, eliminating their traitor.

The enemy was so strong, Dong Fang Chang Fan made such an arrangement due to his wisdom, but also because he was helpless against such a strong foe.

After experiencing the difficulty that his teacher was feeling, Dong Fang Yu Liang felt even more deeply ashamed of himself.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 788: Cards Revealed, The True Traitor’s Identity

“Alright, Yu Liang, go and complete the Gu formation, as long as you go through this last round, you will be able to obtain my main body’s true inheritance. As for you, Old Lord Can Yang, you will die here today.” Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will said slowly.

Old Lord Can Yang took a step back, he spoke arrogantly: “Hmph, although I am alone, you are only a group of rank six along with a mere will, you want to take my life? Don’t forget that my ally is among you. There are also demonic path Gu Immortals outside, they are like hungry wolves, your phantom beasts can’t hold them off for long.”

Although he said that, his face showed a vigilant and alert expression.

To live to his age, and obtain such accomplishments, a vigilant nature was a necessary trait.

Old Lord Can Yang’s words were true, he attacked Dong Fang tribe’s weakness.

That was also why Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortals did not attack rashly despite having an advantage in numbers.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will laughed: “During the Remote Antiquity Era, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the creator of wisdom path, died, but she deduced matters over a million years after her death. It caused three future Demon Venerables to return empty handed, protecting Heavenly Court. Although I, Dong Fang Chang Fan, am far inferior to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, I can still somewhat deduce matters within a hundred years after my demise. Since I made such an arrangement, I have my trump cards.”

Saying so, an illusory Gu formation appeared in the hall.

Countless Gu worms flew around, they were like the threads of countless spiders, weaved in the large hall.

Compared to this new formation, the Gu formation that Dong Fang Yu Liang was completing resembled a baby in front of an adult.

Old Lord Can Yang saw this and his expression turned ugly: “This is a phantom formation! To think that you, Dong Fang Chang Fan, had such deep attainment in phantom path, you can actually set up a phantom formation!”

Ordinary Gu formations, once exposed, were easy to target and destroy.

That was because the Gu worms that made up the Gu formation were of solid form.

The Gu worms themselves were very fragile, even the immortal level Spring Autumn Cicada could be destroyed by Fang Yuan if he squeezed it between his fingers lightly.

But this phantom formation was a high level method involving phantom path, it made all of the Gu worms in the Gu formation turn phantom, while not obstructing the effect of the Gu formation itself.

The phantom beasts could hold off Fang Yuan and the other demonic path Gu Immortals for so long because of their ability to turn phantom. Once they turned phantom, no moves would have any effect on them.

The star will displayed the Gu formation outright, not afraid of Old Lord Can Yang destroying it, that was because the Gu formation had turned phantom, Old Lord Can Yang could only watch it activate, there was nothing he could do.

As the Gu formation started to activate, a blinding light filled the hall.

“Hahaha.” Old Lord Can Yang laughed loudly: “Since I cannot do anything to the phantom formation, I will kill all of you instead!”

“Everyone, be careful!”

“He is attacking!”

“Beware of the traitor, do not be too careless. This is a life-and-death moment for our tribe!”

“That’s right, as long as we survive this, all will be smooth sailing.”

The Dong Fang tribe Gu Immortals were all waiting in seriousness, they were deeply focused.

“Everyone, don’t be anxious, for the time being, he can’t get here.” Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will was very calm.

At the next moment, Old Lord Can Yang charged over, but his movements were very slow.

The fire that he shot out was originally very fast, but now it was slow like a snail.

“This is?” Old Lord Can Yang quickly realized that he did not become slower, instead, a mystical change had occurred to the space in front of him that could not be observed with the naked eye.

The distance seemed short, but the space was condensed.

“I spent decades and immense effort to design this. Although this hall looks ordinary and is no different from the other halls, I had shifted most of the space path dao marks on the corpse here. Although we and Old Lord Can Yang are only tens of steps apart, our true distance is gigantic.” The star will said slowly.

“As expected of Lord Dong Fang Chang Fan!” Dong Fang tribe Gu Immortals were relieved, their eyes were shining as they looked at the star will with much admiration.

The star will nodded: “Now is the crucial moment, I will tell you the truth. This formation is a large formation. With my wisdom path Immortal Gu as the core, and blood path Immortal Gu as support, once activated, the power will be overwhelming, it can shake heaven and earth. Furthermore, because of the blood path Immortal Gu, it has an amazing effect against Gu Immortals. As long as the Gu formation is activated, not only can it kill Old Lord Can Yang, it can even slaughter all of the demonic path Gu Immortals in the sky. After this battle, my Dong Fang tribe will be renowned in Northern Plains, both the righteous and demonic paths, and the other major forces would be greatly wary of us. After this battle ends, your can move this formation back to our blessed land. If Yu Liang can obtain my inheritance, he will be the person in charge of controlling this formation.”

Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortals heard this and became excited.

In contrast, Old Lord Can Yang’s expression was unable to conceal his suspicion and wariness.

The star will continued: “My main body had formed an agreement with the righteous path super forces before dying, creating an alliance, but in this world, only power that one has in their own hands can best ensure safety. You must remember, do not unnecessarily place hope in other’s hands.”

Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortals nodded, they expressed that they had learned a lesson.

Dong Fang Yi Kong shouted: “Lord Chang Fan, our tribe still has that traitor. No matter how vigilant we are, we can’t defend against an internal threat!”

“Don’t be anxious.” The star will laughed: “I’m not finished yet. Everything has its advantages and disadvantages, gains and losses. This Gu formation is very powerful, but it has a severe drawback. To activate this Gu formation, it will need to use the immortal aperture origin core of Gu Immortals.”

“What?” Many of Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortals shouted in shock.

The immortal aperture origin core was the foundation of the immortal aperture, the base of it all.

Once it was drawn out, the painstakingly developed immortal aperture would reverse its progression, the space would shrink and the primeval energy would dwindle, lifeforms within would die en masse.

The Gu Immortal themselves would weaken instead of progressing, once the time comes, heavenly tribulations or earthly calamities in the immortal aperture would be devastating.

The shrinking of the immortal aperture would mean the weakening of the Gu Immortal, they would die from disasters if they were not vigilant.

Since their lives were at stake, Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortals lost their bearings.

But soon, one Gu Immortal stood up.

It was Dong Fang Wan Xiu.

The people in the hall heard him speak: “There cannot be benefits without losses, Lord Chang Fan had planned this with much difficulty, creating this situation now. For Dong Fang tribe, what reasons do I have not to make such a sacrifice?”

“That’s right! Truly worthy of Lord Wan Xiu. I, Dong Fang Yi Kong, will accompany you!” Soon after, Dong Fang Yi Kong also stood up.

The star will smiled, he was silent as he looked at the others.

The other Gu Immortals looked at each other, nodding quickly, they decided to eliminate the tribe’s strong foes by sacrificing themselves.

“No need to rush.” The star will waved his hand, he said slowly: “I have something else to tell all of you. Once you enter the Gu formation, the immortal aperture origin core would start being extracted, by then, none of you would not be able to move or leave forcefully. Your lives and deaths will be in my control. Are you still willing? If you are not, you can step out now.”

The Gu Immortals’ expressions changed again.

Dong Fang Wan Xiu’s eyes were shining with a lively light, he looked around and smiled coldly: “Traitor, you should reveal yourself now, if not, it will be too late.”

Star will’s words were naturally for the traitor.

As long as one thought about it, they would realize: If there was really a traitor, after hearing this, they would feel great mental pressure. Once they entered the formation, their life would not be in their own hands. If they were exposed when attacking Old Lord Can Yang later due to panic, then they would not be able to fight back at all!

If there really was a traitor, they would have other goals and would not want to attack Old Lord Can Yang. They would not want their lives to be in the star will’s hands.

After that, a few breaths later, none of Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortals in the hall stood out.

“Alright, at this point, I, Wan Xiu, have to admire you. No wonder you could conceal yourself in the tribe for so long, and so deeply.” Dong Fang Wan Xiu said with much hatred.

The star will laughed lightly: “In that case, enter the formation.”

The phantom Gu formation had eight core points, the Dong Fang tribe Gu Immortals entered and occupied one each.

The Gu formation activated slowly, the Gu Immortals' expressions changed as they felt their immortal apertures tremble, a strong suction force was emitting from the formation.

“Relax your mind, cooperate with the formation, let it run fully.” The star will was solemn.

The Gu Immortals were hesitant, but they eventually opened their immortal apertures and allowed traces of their immortal aperture origin cores to be drawn out, flowing out from the eight core points of the formation.

In the phantom formation, a faint blood-colored light quickly surfaced.

Under the effect of the blood-colored light, these eight different immortal aperture origin cores converged in the Gu formation, they were actually fusing into one.

“This formation is really mystical!” A Gu Immortal saw this and could not help but praise.

“This is because all of you have Dong Fang tribe's bloodline in you. Your bloodlines are close, your origins are the same. Therefore, your bloodlines can mix, and your immortal aperture origin can could fuse. Only by fusing could they accumulate in quantity, and summon a huge force!” Dong Fang Chang Fan's star will slowly explained.

The eight Gu Immortals in the formation nodded, Dong Fang Wan Xiu's eyes were shining with brilliance, he looked around but could not find out any flaws that could expose the traitor.

“No matter.” The star will laughed lightly: “In this situation, regardless of who the traitor is, they are already under my control, they are putting in strength for our tribe. Everyone, relax, I am going to extract more of your immortal aperture origin cores.”

“Go ahead!”

“Right, we will kill all of these accursed demonic path Gu Immortals! They dare to target our Dong Fang tribe!!”

The phantom formation burst out in a bright light, the Gu Immortals snorted as their expressions turned dark, some of them were frowning while others were feeling discomfort and pain.

The immortal aperture origin cores were like lumps of water as they fused in the phantom formation, converging into a huge force, they resembled a slumbering fierce beast. No matter who it was, anyone could feel that this force was huge, even the surrounding air had ripples it in, as if it could not hold such power.

The Gu Immortals in Dong Fang tribe had red faces, some of their bodies were trembling, some of them had ruthless expressions, they were all looking forward to this rampaging power.

But this power was not unleashed yet under the control of the star will, it was prepared for release but remained in place.

“No need to rush.” The star will looked into the sky, at the chaotic battle.

The phantom beasts that obstructed the demonic path Gu Immortals were all slaughtered, almost none were left.

The star will was like a flood dragon, hiding in the river, waiting for the best time to strike.

Once the time was right, the flood dragon would soar into the sky, overturning rivers and seas. By then, the unfortunate people would be the one charging at its front.

Right at this time, Dong Fang Yu Liang stood up, shouting loudly: “Master, I did it, I succeeded in completing this Gu formation, I completed your request!”

The star will’s gaze swept towards him, he showed a pleased smile: “Very good. Yu Liang, you did not disappoint me. Enter the formation too, stand at the center. Although you are a mortal, you will need to ascend to immortal eventually. When the battle begins, you will experience the power of a Gu Immortal, it will be of great help for your future.”

“Yes, master. I will listen to you!” Dong Fang Yu Liang’s eyes were red, he was so moved he was choking back tears.

He leaped, jumping into the air, with the power of the phantom formation, he stood in the formation’s central core as he floated in the air.

In the sky, despite Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han’s heavy disturbances, Fang Yuan finally found a chance.

The sky in front of him was clear, there was nothing stopping him, the chance was only momentary, he latched onto it and flew down with minimal attention to his safety!

Seven strength path giant hands slammed down, only one was left protecting his body.

“It is time.” The star will saw this and sighed lightly.

Dong Fang tribe Gu Immortals were all looking into the sky with much blood lust.

At the next moment, they saw Old Lord Can Yang flying up, blocking Fang Yuan’s attack as he force the latter back into the sky.

“Eh?!” This turn of events made all of the Dong Fang tribe Gu Immortals look on with stunned expressions.

“All of my efforts were not in vain, in forming this plot to regain my life through possession, now is the moment!” The star will laughed loudly, he was extremely excited.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul suddenly appeared, charging into the phantom formation’s center as he entered Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body.

“Hahaha, you bunch of fools! I will tell you the truth, the true traitor in Dong Fang tribe is that beloved Lord Chang Fan of yours, hahahaha.” Old Lord Can Yang was laughing maniacally.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 789: Blood Veil Obstruct Immortals

“What?” Dong Fang Wan Xiu stared with wide open eyes.

“This is not possible!” Dong Fang Yi Kong firmly denied.

“How could it be Lord Dong Fang Chang Fan? Everyone, be careful, this is likely to be an illusion! The enemy cannot break the formation, so he is trying to confuse us!!”

All the Gu Immortals of Dong Fang tribe had incredulous expressions, unable to accept this shocking fact.

Old Lord Can Yang scoffed: “Confuse you guys? Laughable, all of you are incapable of moving, you aren’t even worth confusing. You have already become meat on the chopping board, unable to free yourselves, it is funny how you still cannot see the truth. Hehehe.”

These words were like shocking strikes of lightning that ruthlessly assaulted the Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortals.

Everyone looked at Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will.

Dong Fang Wan Xiu shouted: “Lord Chang Fan, this is not real!”

Dong Fang Yi Kong asked: “Lord Chang Fan, please speak up!”

“Lord Chang Fan, Dong Fang Chang Fan! What are your intentions?!”

Countless questions and shouts echoed in this hall.

The star will chuckled, seemingly at leisure. He was only a will, but had condensed into the image of his body back when he was alive, his frame was upright, his face like that of jade, his eyes full of splendor and a graceful aura of a great commander was revealed.

However, right now, this sight, this attitude and demeanor, caused a chill to emerge in the hearts of Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortals.

The phantom formation transformed again; the enormous power which it had condensed was finally being released at this moment.

It was like a surge of waves; blood-colored light shot out everywhere, forming a thick bloody veil that covered the main location in the ruin bat’s corpse.

At this sight, Dong Fang Wan Xiu and the rest finally had a huge change in their expressions.

They had thought this formation was used for attacking the enemies, but its true use was to defend.

This chilling fact was displayed in front of everyone’s eyes, tearing apart the lies told by the star will.

“Dong Fang Chang Fan, why are you doing this? Why are you harming us!?” Dong Fang Wan Xiu looked malevolent, his expression filled with pain and grief.

“What could it be for? Being alive is the foundation for everything, who would want to die? Who doesn’t want to live? As long as there is a sliver of a hope to survive, who can resist the temptation?” Old Lord Can Yang sneered, staring at the phantom formation intently without blinking.

Looking at the phantom formation operating normally, Old Lord Can Yang could not help but take a deep breath: “This possession technique really has an extremely high price. It needs the sacrifice of Gu Immortals every time it is activated?”

If it was true, this possession technique could not be used widely as the activation conditions were too costly.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will slowly shook its head: “Old Lord, you don’t need to worry. I previously obtained this possession technique in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. The contents inside allow one to possess mortals and even Gu Immortals. But to possess Gu Immortals, one’s cultivation must be higher than the target. Moreover, after possession, the immortal aperture would be the target’s immortal aperture. This is akin to a raven taking over a seagull’s nest, it is unfitting and has great disadvantages. While alive, I was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, but I did not have a suitable wisdom path Gu Immortal as the possession target. Thus, I exerted effort to think and plan for so many years before I finally obtained this formation.”

“This formation was created with the possession technique as the foundation. It can let me possess a mortal and at the same time, it can mobilize the origin cores of Gu Immortals of the same bloodline and create a completely new wisdom path immortal aperture, allowing me to immediately become an immortal after possession and avoid the dangerous stage of having weaker cultivation initially.”

Hearing the star will’s explanation, Old Lord Can Yang sized up the star will while also being inwardly shocked: ‘This Dong Fang Chang Fan concealed his abilities really well, not only is his wisdom path attainment enough to be known as the best in Northern Plains, he also can use space path dao marks and manipulate the phantom beast army. Now, it seems his blood path attainment is also not low!’

The star will did not know of the churning of Old Lord Can Yang’s inner thoughts, still continuing its explanation: “Don’t underestimate this formation. With these eight Gu Immortals sacrificing themselves, they will be supplying me with abundant resources! My newly formed immortal aperture will absolutely be the best within high grade! There is also another key point – the immortal aperture will automatically produce resources like flowers, birds, fish, insects and so on. It would be as if I had managed the blessed land for many years, this would save hundreds of years of hard work. Thus, after I complete possession, not only would my cultivation be restored, I will also have enough resources, much more than when I was alive! Old Lord Can Yang, feel free to observe and ask questions as you desire. I will explain the key content of every step.”

A heated expression flashed across Old Lord Can Yang’s face.

He laughed heartily, looking deeply at Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will: “You truly made a good plan, wanting me to keep you safe from danger. My presence here was to help you resist these demonic path Gu Immortals. And when you succeed in advancing to Gu Immortal, there will definitely be a heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, at that time, I will be by your side, forced to take action even if I don’t want to.”

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will smiled without any shame from having his scheme exposed. He looked at Old Lord Can Yang and said with a quiet and deep voice: “If you want to gain something in this world, you need to be prepared to pay the price. How can there be free things? In particular, the more you want to obtain, the higher the risk will be. What is Old Lord’s decision, please confirm it quickly.”

Old Lord Can Yang snickered, but inwardly, he deeply admired Dong Fang Chang Fan for being decisive in what to give up.

Back then, when Dong Fang Chang Fan obtained the possession technique from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s true inheritance secluded domain, he had also discovered the arrangements of Central Continent’s ten great sects.

Meanwhile, Immortal Crane Sect had been infiltrating Dong Fang tribe. After Dong Fang Chang Fan became a Gu Immortal and joined the higher ups of the tribe, he secretly discovered this fact.

But he did not expose this, instead following this clue to covertly engage in cooperation with Immortal Crane Sect.

He used the possession technique to make a transaction with Immortal Crane Sect.

Lifespan Gu were hard to find, any Gu Immortal would scramble for any methods for life extension. Let alone when this possession technique came from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!

Immortal Crane Sect was one of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent and had long history with deep foundations, but even it could not resist the temptation of the possession technique.

The two sides had their own needs, Dong Fang Chang Fan slowly released the contents of the possession technique while obtaining resources from Immortal Crane Sect.

He used these resources to quickly advance and successfully passed many tribulations. He also supported the next generations of the tribe and formed schemes directed everywhere, bringing the declining Dong Fang tribe to glory!

In cooperating with a person like Dong Fang Chang Fan, Old Lord Can Yang was very cautious, not relaxing his guard, even though he was stronger.

He did not think for long, nodding and accepting.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will gave a laugh: “Good, I will explain the first step...”

Old Lord Can Yang listened, paying full attention.

It was clear to him that Dong Fang Chang Fan was using him, but Old Lord Can Yang had come as a representative of Immortal Crane Sect’s will, thus he also had no other choice.

Old Lord Can Yang thought of the heavy reward from the sect for completing this mission, and that was his motivation to continue.

Dong Fang tribe’s eight Gu Immortals were already cursing loudly.

Dong Fang Yu Liang was unconscious and motionless, his eyes closed.

Meanwhile, in the outside world, Fang Yuan looked down at another sight.

He saw an incomparably large blood veil which covered the ruin bat’s corpse like a mountain. The blood veil was extremely thick, with greatly plentiful quantities of blood colored light, and the terrifying might it showcased could make one’s heart palpitate.

The demonic path Gu Immortals turned their attentions to the blood veil, and stopped their internal conflicts.

Some among them tried using their methods in attacking the blood veil, but it was like pebbles being thrown into a large lake, there were only slight ripples on the blood veil, and it stood unmoved, stable like a mountain.

“Such a strong defense!”

“What Gu formation is this? I have neither seen it nor even heard of it before.”

“Dong Fang Chang Fan truly left behind an endless number of arrangements.”

The demonic path Gu Immortals were making guesses.

Fang Yuan also frowned. Even though he was an expert in blood path and had his previous life’s memories, he had never seen nor heard of this Gu formation.

“Who cares what Gu formation this is, it will break with one smash from my hammer!” Gu Immortal Zhuo Zhan shouted and charged forward.

He was riding a flying boar desolate beast, his body was covered in armor and he was holding a giant hammer. He had a burly build and was easily irritable, but he bullied the weak while fearing the strong.

Everyone’s gazes gathered on him.

Zhuo Zhan felt very proud for being in the limelight, his expression turning even more fierce.

But several breaths later, his fierce expression was gone completely, replaced by shock and fear.

As he approached the blood veil, the blood in his body went out of his control, and started flowing out of his body.

Gu Immortals were called immortals, but their bodies, for the most part, still retained the normal workings and functions of the human body. Blood supported the movement of the body and was a crucial part.

Zhuo Zhan was still a far distance from the blood veil, but half the blood in his body had sprayed out.

If he continued, before he even reached the blood veil, his blood would completely seep out and he would turn into a dried out corpse.

“Such an odd formation!”

“This is the effect of menses blood Gu, it can draw out blood.”

“Menses blood Gu is one of the blood path inheritances of Blood Sea Ancestor, who could have thought that the rumor of Dong Fang Chang Fan obtaining it was not only true, he also raised this menses blood Gu to Immortal Gu level!”

The demonic path Gu Immortals showed moved expressions.

Several Gu Immortals tried all kinds of methods, but everyone failed.

Everyone was aware that unless they used methods that targeted defensive abilities, they would not be able to break this blood veil.

Fang Yuan frowned tensely. He, himself, was an expert in blood path during his previous life, but he currently did not have any blood path Immortal Gu and he cultivated strength path. Without the necessary starting components, one couldn’t get anywhere, he was unable to do anything to this formation.

The situation was troublesome and everyone was feeling anxious. Dong Fang Yu Liang had been inside for so long, he might have already completely obtained the inheritance.

“The current plan should be to use long range killer moves! Everyone, attack together, let’s destroy Dong Fang Chang Fan’s arrangements first before we fight for the spoils. Otherwise, under the eyes of numerous immortals, a mortal would seize the inheritance. If that really happens, I, Unfettered Scholar, would have no face left to continue living in Northern Plains!” Unfettered Scholar suddenly shouted.

He immediately made his move after shouting.

The demonic path Gu Immortals agreed.

For a while, water and fire converged, lightning and wind struck, colorful lights sparkled, and countless explosions struck the blood veil, reducing its mass.

Everyone had joyful expressions before they soon turned grave.

The blood veil continuously shrunk but also unceasingly regenerated. Especially for the parts further inside, the demonic path Gu Immortals’ attacks clearly showed insufficient damage.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 790: Contest of Offense and Defense

The blood veil firmly covered the ruin bat’s corpse, resisting the wanton attacks of the demonic path Gu Immortals.

Having not expected such resistance from the blood veil and under the urgent situation, Pi Shui Han shouted: “Make way!”

He was a rank seven Gu Immortal and had already formed a reputation within the demonic path. Everyone parted ways and opened up a space for him.

Water path and ice path killer move — Flood Glacier!

Inside Pi Shui Han’s immortal aperture, over ten thousand Gu worms were activated, while his rank seven red date immortal essence was being consumed bead by bead.

Rumble!

Endless waves started surging out of thin air from the space within hundreds of steps of Pi Shui Han.

Surging waves, like innumerable raging dragons, roared and crashed down with a catastrophic momentum!

The giant wave was still crashing down when it underwent another transformation.

Crackle... The giant wave started condensing into ice from inside to outside.

Within several breaths, the monstrous giant wave turned into an enormous glacier and pressed down like a giant whale, or a pillar falling from the heavens.

The ice-cold chilly air could make one tremble.

The terrifying attack made people hold their breaths subconsciously.

In the hall, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will no longer had the leisurely attitude from before, and all his focus was on raising the defensive power to the maximum.

The previous demonic path Gu Immortals’ attacks were fierce, but they lacked coordination, and although they were numerous in quantity, they had limited qualitative increase in power. Now that Pi Shui Han used this trump card, his strength was united as it was his own power, and was stronger than the earlier chaotic attacks by at least ten times.

Rumble...

The glacier heavily smashed at the blood veil.

The blood veil deformed from the enormous weight, but was still able to rigidly resist the pressure of the glacier and the corrosion of the cold aura.

Immortal killer move flood glacier was powerful, but Dong Fang Chang Fan’s blood veil was arranged from the origin cores of eight Gu Immortals’ immortal apertures and also was aided by the arrangements prepared at this location. Pi Shui Han, alone, could not break through the blood veil.

But this killer move was still astonishing.

The demonic path Gu Immortals looked down from above, and saw that with the ruin bat at the center, the entire surroundings had turned into a glacier.

The dead immemorial ruin bat was huge, like a mountain, and now that it was covered by the glacier, it was as if it wore a heavy suit of ice armor, looking even more gigantic.

Inside the translucent glacier was a giant red blood veil.

The bone-chilling cold air was still spreading everywhere, frost had covered the vegetation on the periphery and was expanding.

For a while, everyone looked at Pi Shui Han with astonished gazes.

Although the killer move had not broken the blood veil, its power still left a deep impression on everyone.

“Even if I used all eight strength path giant hands together, I wouldn’t be able to resist this killer move head-on.” Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered.

This was the true strength of an veteran rank seven Gu Immortal.

Compared to this, Fang Yuan was still lacking greatly.

Previously, Fang Yuan had been able to fight against two, blocking Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han, because the two had not used their trump cards.

Gu Immortals were rational; they all came for the wisdom path inheritance, and had no deep hatred against each other, they would have to be mentally handicapped to fight each other to the death.

But now, the Gu Immortals realized something was wrong, only then did Pi Shui Han use a trump card and put out his full strength!

“Although I have rank seven battle strength with my immortal killer move myriad self, it is only barely at that level. If I had to truly fight an expert like Pi Shui Han to the death, the one who is likely to lose is me. But if I had to confront this move, I would not face it head-on, but attempt to evade and detour around to battle.”

The power of the immortal killer move, flood glacier, made Fang Yuan aware of some of Pi Shui Han’s strength and also made him aware of the gap between him and Pi Shui Han.

Immediately, Fang Yuan felt a slight sense of urgency.

The cultivation of Gu Immortals was a major factor in influencing battle strength. A part of Pi Shui Han’s power was because he had used rank seven red date immortal essence. Fang Yuan already had made extremely superior progress in this life, but the thing hindering him was his immortal zombie body. His true cultivation was only at the bottom of rank six with not even one tribulation passed.

“Cultivation is the base, the foundation. My immortal zombie body might be strong, but there is no room to greatly improve. I still have to search for the method to regain my living body.”

“Brother Pi really is mighty! Let me also test my hand.” At this moment, Unfettered Scholar laughed brightly and flew towards Pi Shui Han.

Pi Shui Han coldly snorted, with a ugly expression on his face. He had made such an effort in front of everyone, but had still not been able to break the blood veil. Seeing Unfettered Scholar coming over, he slowly gave way for the central position.

Under everyone’s gazes, Unfettered Scholar flew right above the ruin bat’s corpse.

He had already been preparing earlier, he suddenly opened his eyes, his pupils were completely white and shot out two thin rays of faint white light.

This move looked very inconspicuous, purely based on how imposing it appeared, it could never be compared to the glacier earlier.

The Gu Immortals who were unaware were rather baffled at this.

However, Pi Shui Han’s complexion changed.

When the two faint white light rays shined down, the glacier instantly melted and the blood veil intensely shook, unexpectedly displaying immense power.

“Hmm? This is Unfettered Scholar? What an amazing move, thousand disintegrations!” In the hall, Old Lord Can Yang, however, recognized this move.

Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects had infiltrated into Northern Plains for many years over Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. Since Old Lord Can Yang took the risk to come, he naturally had a lot of information on Northern Plains.

Unfettered Scholar originated from Central Continent’s Chen clan.

Central Continent’s Chen clan specialized in rule path, but Central Continent was ruled by a sect system and did not leave room for clans to prosper. After being pushed aside, Chen clan moved to Northern Plains.

Unfortunately, Northern Plains' righteous path was ruled by the Huang Jin bloodline. Chen clan might be a super force with Gu Immortal level strength, but under secret repulsion from Huang Jin bloodline forces, it finally weakened.

By Unfettered Scholar's time, he was the only outstanding talent remaining and the clan already did not exist anymore. He was left to fight alone and fend for himself.

"Chen clan specialized in rule path and among its Gu Immortals, rank six could use the killer move hundred disintegrations, rank seven could use thousand disintegrations, and rank eight could use myriad disintegrations. This killer move is extremely powerful and can attack as well as defend, disintegrating almost any mysterious elements. In Central Continent's past, many Gu Immortals from sects suffered crushing defeats under the might of myriad disintegrations!" Old Lord Can Yang sighed as he recalled.

"You have spoken so much nonsense, are you still not going to strike? The blood veil is being consumed greatly because of Unfettered Scholar, these are all precious immortal aperture origin cores that are being used up!" Dong Fang Chang Fan's star will urged.

"Haha." Old Lord Can Yang stood with his hands clasped behind his back and did not seem like he was going to fight, "Unfettered Scholar is only one person while you have the collaboration of eight people. He also doesn't know the situation here, watch me use my method."

He then let out his rank seven aura.

The aura immediately shocked the demonic path Gu Immortals in the sky.

"They actually have a rank seven Gu Immortal?"

"Aren't all the Gu Immortals of Dong Fang tribe rank six? Could it be that someone advanced to rank seven but kept it a secret all along?"

"Or maybe Dong Fang tribe invited reinforcements? Don't forget they are of Huang Jin bloodline, a super force of the righteous path!"

The Gu Immortals were startled and puzzled.

Unfettered Scholar looked indifferent, but he was inwardly shaken.

His killer move was powerful and had a huge origin, but its consumption of red date immortal essence was extremely intense.

The other side had a rank seven Gu Immortal, thus they could clearly fight toe-to-toe with him. His side has numerous people, but everyone had their own intentions. Unfettered Scholar could not help but consider: He could not brainlessly charge ahead and waste his immortal essence. Otherwise, during the time when they fought for real, he would lack the necessary immortal essence to continue, and all of his efforts would have gone to waste and to the advantage of others.

Unfettered Scholar stopped his killer move when he thought of this.

"See, didn't it stop?" Old Lord Can Yang laughed heartily, a pleased expression on his face.

He only leaked his aura, and was able to make Unfettered Scholar stop. Just based on scheming and deceiving, Old Lord Can Yang might not be a match to Dong Fang Chang Fan, but his plentiful life experiences were enough for him to know people’s mindsets and use the situation to make schemes.

“The longer the time prolongs, the more favorable it is to that Dong Fang Yu Liang. This blood veil is extremely thick, we need to use our trump cards to attack it if we want to break it.” Unfettered Scholar spoke, his gaze cast towards Fang Yuan.

Traveling Three Elites lost Han Dong, Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang were only at rank six. Besides Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han, there was only Fang Yuan who had shown rank seven battle strength.

Pi Shui Han also looked at Fang Yuan.

These demonic path Gu Immortal experts naturally would not let Fang Yuan take easy benefits.

“Fairies, please guard me while I exert all my strength.” Fang Yuan secretly transmitted his voice and after obtaining affirmation, he sat cross-legged in the air.

Eight strength path giant hands flew towards the blood veil.

The periphery of the blood veil was covered with a layer of glacier, looking like a stuffed large iceberg.

Fang Yuan paid no attention to it, moving his eight strength path giant hands in eight directions. The giant hands opened up and the palms tightly stuck to the surface of the iceberg. The five fingers then started to dig into the iceberg.

“Rise!” Fang Yuan called out, immediately, a rumbling noise resounded in everyone’s ears.

At first, this noise was only slight.

But soon, the sound got louder and louder, until the rumbling resounded like bursts of endless thunder.

Earth shook and giant cracks started to appear on the ground surrounding the iceberg.

In everyone’s astonished gazes, the iceberg that covered the blood veil was actually slowly rising, like it was going to leave the ground!

The hall was trembling and swaying. Old Lord Can Yang blurted out: “This is?”

The star will also changed expression: “Not good. I have already remodeled this immemorial ruin bat’s corpse, and to make it stable, I connected it to the ground to form a mountain based on the corpse. The other party seems to have the ability to pull mountain roots, which happens to counter my arrangements! Can Yang, you need to make a move!”

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will was so anxious that his figure almost collapsed.

His main body could indeed make great calculations, but human minds had their limits. The arrangements were set long ago, and even the most extensive calculations could have mishaps.

Fang Yuan’s pulling mountain Immortal Gu was one such mishap.

Pulling mountain Immortal Gu could target any mountainous body, when Dong Fang Chang Fan was alive, he had linked the immemorial ruin bat’s corpse to the surrounding landscape, forming what could truly be called a corpse mountain.

This arrangement instead became a flaw which happened to be used by pulling mountain Immortal Gu!

“This mountain with roots connected to the ground can be pulled up?” Pi Shui Han stared with wide open eyes, his gaze constantly flickering.

“Who could this person be?!” Unfettered Scholar was startled and puzzled, while he used his killer move, thousand disintegrations, at the blood veil again.

Being attacked from two ends, the situation did not seem to bode well for Dong Fang Chang Fan’s side.

Old Lord Can Yang laughed before finally making his move: “Look at my life chasing fire.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 791: Unstoppable Life Chasing Fire

Immortal killer move — Life Chasing Fire!

Old Lord Can Yang looked solemn as he slowly opened up his hand, revealing a weak flame.

The faint yellow flame swayed, appearing dim and weak, as if it would extinguish at any moment.

Old Lord Can Yang’s pupils, however, let out a sharp and bright radiance, and as he gazed at this flame in his hand, a proud expression appeared on his face.

This was the supreme technique which he had used to make his name and shake Central Continent!

“Life chasing fire, go.” Old Lord Can Yang lightly shook his palm; the life chasing fire made a whooshing sound as it shot out rapidly.

The star will quickly opened up a path.

The unremarkable-looking life chasing fire moved out of the blood veil and pierced into the cold iceberg.

Boom!

Almost at the same instant, there was a large yellow flame that blazed to the sky and burned the whole iceberg.

Almost all the demonic path Gu Immortals in the air were taken aback at this change.

Soon, they revealed odd expressions.

The reason was, although the fire was fierce, it had no heat; the iceberg covered in the fire was completely undamaged with no signs of melting down.

Some demonic path Gu Immortals were just about to ridicule it, when the rank seven demonic path Gu Immortal, Pi Shui Han, suddenly let out a miserable scream.

Everyone followed the voice and saw a sight that gave them a great shock.

Pi Shui Han was covered in fire, of such intensity that his whole face twisted in pain. Great amounts of cold air were being let off from his body and a river of water started flowing around him, like a dragon coiling around his body. The faint yellow fire, however, did not weaken, instead looking like it was growing even fiercer.

“What move is this?”

“How did Pi Shui Han get attacked, why didn’t I see it?”

“Such a strange fire, everyone evade it!”

The demonic path Gu Immortals retreated one after the other, while looking with lingering fear at Pi Shui Han exerting all his efforts to extinguish the fire.

“This fire, could it be... life chasing fire? Not good!” Fang Yuan’s mind was shaken as he realized something amiss, and quickly withdrew the eight strength path giant hands.

But it was already too late.

The fire burned the iceberg and quickly had spread to the eight strength path giant hands.

The strength path giant hands were completely unharmed, but a faint flame had emerged out of thin air in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture, quietly burning his one hundred and sixty thousand strength path phantoms!

These strength path phantoms had their arms raised, they had been providing the strength to form the eight strength path giant hands in the outside world.

They were bathed in the fire, but were completely safe.

Fang Yuan’s heart shivered at this sight.

“This is truly that killer move, life chasing fire!” Fang Yuan was aware of the terrifying power of this move, he quickly made a decision and willed, the one hundred and sixty thousand strength path phantoms collapsed.

Without these strength path phantoms, the eight strength path giant hands pulling the iceberg also crumbled apart.

Boom, the ruin bat’s corpse mountain heavily fell down, producing a huge tremor, the surrounding ground cracked and countless stones were splattered, leaving dust swirling everywhere.

Fang Yuan suffered an intense backlash from forcibly halting use of Pulling Mountain! He felt intense dizziness and nausea, his body shook and he almost fell down from the air.

Hei Lou Lan saw this and quickly moved to support him.

Fang Yuan, however, evaded and shouted: “Don’t approach me!”

He quickly retreated backwards, a faint yellow flame started to burn his body like Pi Shui Han.

At the same time, Unfettered Scholar turned pale. He was also struck by this move and his body was similarly burning in fire.

“This fire path immortal killer move can actually detect auras and follow our attacks back to the source, directly reaching our immortal apertures!” Unfettered Scholar was greatly shocked.

Unfettered Scholar realized at this moment why Pi Shui Han was in a panic.

Not only were their bodies burning, the fire was spreading in their immortal apertures as well. The former was okay, but the latter was a Gu Immortal’s headquarters, their foundation that had been managed meticulously for countless years, and also where innumerable cultivation resources had been stored inside.

Now that this foundation was being burned, it was like the fire was burning directly at the Gu Immortal’s heart, make them bleed from the heartache.

Pi Shui Han not only was extinguishing the fire on his body, he was even more importantly putting out the fire in his immortal aperture. But the strange thing was, this fire could not be extinguished by water or ice.

The surrounding demonic path Gu Immortals started to move away from Fang Yuan, Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han, fearing this strange fire would spread to them as well.

“Why are the flames on Fang Yuan weaker than the other two?” Hei Lou Lan was bewildered.

The remaining Gu Immortals soon discovered this difference. Immediately, Fang Yuan looked even more unfathomable to everyone.

Unfettered Scholar’s gaze also paused on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s situation was much better than the other two. There was only a thin layer of flames on him, as if they were the fires of an oil lamp, while the flames on Pi Shui Han and Unfettered Scholar were blazing like a torch.

In just a few breaths of time, Unfettered Scholar’s body was already mostly burnt and started to emit the smell of burning meat.

Unfettered Scholar himself was calm and not particularly panicked, the reason was that he still had a trump card!

Immortal killer move — Thousand Disintegrations!

He wildly activated the killer move, the light in his white pupils turned even more vigorous.

But this time, the light did not shine on the iceberg and the blood veil, instead it shined on himself, on his immortal aperture.

The faint yellow flame started to disintegrate continuously under the white light, weakening rapidly.

Soon, the flames on his body completely dispersed and the fire in his immortal aperture was also suppressed.

Thousand disintegrations was very useful, it could not only be used to attack enemies, but could also be used for defense. Offense and defense in one move, and its power was also extraordinary.

In a short while, Fang Yuan also stood up, the fire on his body completely dissipated.

Only Pi Shui Han was still trying out all sorts of methods, but the flames on him were instead burning even more. His whole body was darkened from burns, the intense odor of burnt meat was spreading everywhere. He had no choice but to activate healing Gu to heal his injuries and also endure the burning of the fire.

He shouted furiously, he felt pain not only physically, but also heartache mentally.

The fire was spreading in his immortal aperture, large amounts of resources were being burnt to nothingness, but he still had no way to put out this fire.

“What to do? What to do!” Pi Shui Han thought rapidly in extreme anxiety.

Fang Yuan and Unfettered Scholar just watched on coldly and silently. The remaining demonic path Gu Immortals stood further away, some gazes were flickering, eager to make some trouble.

If Pi Shui Han were to be seriously injured and weakened, these demonic path Gu Immortals would absolutely be moved and interested in attacking Pi Shui Han, adding on to his misfortune.

Suddenly, Pi Shui Han gave a loud shout before soaring high, and with his whole body in flames, he shot far away like a meteor.

This fire was giving him enormous trouble, and there were many demonic path Gu Immortals present, he could not stick around. Pi Shui Han’s retreat was a wise choice.

Seeing him rapidly disappear into the horizon, several demonic path Gu Immortals at the periphery also stealthily left, following the trail of Pi Shui Han.

In the hall, Old Lord Can Yang laughed heartily, saying to Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will: “How was that?”

“Truly worthy of being called life chasing fire.” The star will nodded, “This fire has the ability to trace auras back to their source. Gu Immortals normally place Gu worms in their immortal apertures, thus this fire would burn their immortal apertures. This fire also uses life as the fuel, as long as life has not been extinguished, it will keep on burning. Thus, special methods must be used to extinguish this fire, like the technique of thousand disintegrations. If one doesn’t have such methods, then they have to be resolute in cutting off the burning part, restraining it from burning sources of life force within their body as much as possible. As long as the life force is used up, this fire will disperse. Unfortunately, this Pi Shui Han did not think of this point and continuously healed himself which increased his life force, increasing the intensity of the fire.”

The star will chuckled as it said this, and praised: “Old Lord Can Yang, your move is a truly unique and innovative method. As long as this fire strikes the enemy, they will fall into chaos. If it is allowed to keep on burning, even the wealthier Gu Immortals will have their foundations greatly damaged and have no battle intent.”

Listening to the star will praise his method so much, Old Lord Can Yang’s pleased expression instead disappeared and was replaced by a gloomy look.

The reason for Old Lord Can Yang’s fame was the killer move life chasing fire.

Once this fire burned, even if it was eliminated, the enemy would be low in spirits. If they attacked, the fire could follow the attack and burn their

immortal aperture.

Immortal apertures were the foundations of Gu Immortals, and it would be greatly damaged if it was burned a few times. Even if the fire did not burn the enemy to death, it could ruin them.

Thus, Old Lord Can Yang had already been able to roam unhindered around Central Continent in his early years, and was very well known. Gu Immortals fighting him would have a headache.

After becoming rank seven, Old Lord Can Yang did not wander around much, but just based on his battle strength, he was in the top five of Immortal Crane Sect! The matter of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s collapse was simply too important, so Immortal Crane Sect had sent him to Northern Plains to investigate the culprit.

Once life chasing fire was used, it restrained Fang Yuan and Unfettered Scholar, and caused Pi Shui Han to retreat in a miserable state. Old Lord Can Yang was repelling the enemies on the surface, but was covertly also trying to intimidate Dong Fang Chang Fan.

However, Dong Fang Chang Fan was aware of the details of life chasing fire, his words were appreciative, but in truth were a counterattack against Old Lord Can Yang.

If Old Lord Can Yang could still show a good expression, that would be strange.

“Life chasing fire... Old Lord Can Yang... why is he here?” Fang Yuan hovered in the air, looking at the blood veil below in uncertainty and doubt.

He might have his previous life’s memories, but there was an extremely large difference between having them and being all-knowing and omnipotent, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s possession scheme was kept in extreme secrecy and Fang Yuan was not aware of it.

Now that he saw a Central Continent Gu Immortal mixed up with Dong Fang Chang Fan’s inheritance, he naturally felt surprised and bewildered.

When Old Lord Can Yang repelled him, he had done so evasively, and had not revealed his identity at all.

Old Lord Can Yang had methods to conceal his aura and with them being used, his aura was the same as a Northern Plains Gu Immortal’s. The other demonic path Gu Immortals did not discover anything wrong, which showed how ingenious Old Lord Can Yang’s methods were.

‘Not good.’ Fang Yuan inwardly shouted, thoughts of retreating rose up inside him..

He knew Central Continent’s forces had secretly infiltrated into Northern Plains to search for him, the culprit. He also knew someone had gone to Northern Plains Zombie Alliance with suspicions about his Sha Huang identity.

“The reason I could resolve life chasing fire was because I knew the details of this move and made the decision quickly. And as an immortal zombie, I am among the living dead, my immortal aperture is a dead land with sparse life force, thus it could not be burned. Old Lord Can Yang has plenty of experience, he might have already discerned that I am an immortal zombie. Hiding myself like this, perhaps he might become suspicious!” The more Fang Yuan thought, the heavier his state of mind.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 792: Lightning of Heaven and Earth, Risky Attempt

As far as Fang Yuan was concerned, a wisdom path inheritance was indeed precious and rare. But even if he gained a complete inheritance, risking his true identity and the pursuit of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals was absolutely not worth it!

Old Lord Can Yang had restrained the group of demons with one burst of fire, and even sent Pi Shui Han retreating far away.

Fang Yuan had realized the bad situation and also was considering retreating, thus he naturally stopped his attacks.

The rank seven Unfettered Scholar also did not risk attacking. He thought higher of Fang Yuan from the way he dealt with the life chasing fire. He himself had to rely on thousand disintegrations to get through that danger, which made him feel Fang Yuan was even more mysterious.

And besides Fang Yuan, there was still the two black robed Gu Immortals, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan, thus Unfettered Scholar restrained his desire to make a move and only observed Fang Yuan’s side.

His thoughts were obvious – he was waiting for Fang Yuan’s side to make a move.

For a while, the surroundings above the ruin bat’s corpse became silent, while inside the ruined hall, curses were still being endlessly hurled out.

Dong Fang tribe’s eight Gu Immortals could not budge even a bit but had retained the ability to speak.

Since the moment Dong Fang Chang Fan’s possession had begun, they had been throwing curses and shouting at Dong Fang Chang Fan.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will turned a deaf ear to this.

He saw the situation outside had quietened down, the group of demons would be restrained for a while. He smiled: “Finally, the time is ripe, my possession and rebirth will start at this moment. Old Lord Can Yang, I have explained the previous main steps to you. The crucial time has arrived, I will have to trouble you to guard me.”

Being indecisive when a decision was needed would instead worsen the situation; the star will made the decision and did not hesitate any longer!

A change occurred, a large vortex suddenly formed on the surface of the blood veil.

Blood energy started fermenting in the vortex. It condensed into form before suddenly bursting out, it turned into a giant blood pillar that directly shot straight down to the center of the phantom formation, covering Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body.

Old Lord Can Yang’s eyes opened wide, and he shouted: “Damn it!”

Old Lord Can Yang understood after seeing this change: This blood veil was not used just to defend, but was also involved in a purification process. The extracted eight immortal aperture origin cores were like eight metals melting together. It then used the demonic path Gu Immortals’ attacks to temper the melted origin cores, eliminating the wills and auras of the eight Gu Immortals, before pouring the fused product into the possession target.

Dong Fang Chang Fan had arranged the situation exquisitely, calculating the demonic path Gu Immortals within his plan. Even Fang Yuan was in the dark, used by Dong Fang Chang Fan into unknowingly becoming a blacksmith.

Now, the blood energy flowed backwards, filling Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body, naturally, the blood veil would weaken. With the weakening of the blood veil, the defense immediately fell. Old Lord Can Yang had a heavy duty from the sect and with enormous benefits in front of him, how could he stay still and not share the burden?

Seeing the blood veil weakening, the demonic path Gu Immortals indeed were moved.

“It seems the previous attacks were effective!”

“There is hope in breaking the blood veil, everyone attack together!”

The Gu Immortals attacked one after the other, countless attacks rained down like a violent storm.

The blood veil was sending the blood energy inside, while also having to endure the attacks, immediately, it was strained and started to sway unstably.

Old Lord Can Yang had no choice but to take action, using an immortal killer move — Final Afterglow!

A light barrier emerged outside of the blood veil, it looked to be condensed from the afterglow of the setting sun, and was so thin and faint that it was almost like there was nothing. Countless attacks passed through this light barrier and landed on the blood veil, however, their power was reduced to less than half the original.

This was the use of ‘final afterglow’, it was not a complete defense, instead it weakened the power of most attacks.

Even immortal killer moves on the level of ‘flood glacier’ would be weakened by thirty percent. And what the demonic path Gu Immortals were using right now were mostly all mortal killer moves, after being weakened by final afterglow, they only appeared strong but had little threat.

Dong Fang Chang Fan showed a joyous expression.

The situation was extremely beneficial to him in this way.

The phantom formation was constantly extracting the eight immortal aperture origin cores and fusing them to create the blood veil.

When the blood veil suffered the attacks, the foreign wills and auras hidden inside the origin cores were gradually being removed. Afterwards, the purified blood energy would then pour into Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body.

Dong Fang Yu Liang was a Gu Master with a rank five peak stage aperture. Right now, his soul was already eliminated by Dong Fang Chang Fan, leaving him in control of his young body. Dong Fang Chang Fan’s attention was fully focused on the aperture.

The aperture burst with a loud sound as it was filled with blood energy.

Dong Fang Yu Liang’s aura rose higher instead of shrinking.

An astonishing transformation was occurring — surpassing mortal, charging to Gu Immortal!

Crack!

In the clear sky outside, a lightning bolt flashed.

Within several breaths later, dark clouds surged and spread over the entire surroundings in the clear sky.

Earth tremored and rumbled, and vast amounts of dusts surged, as if countless bulls were running on the ground.

Heaven and earth qi were stirred, a heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity were forming!

“Someone is actually ascending to immortal inside?!”

“What is going on?”

The Gu Immortals quickly stopped their attacks, feeling baffled.

Crack crack crack!

Rays of lightning struck down together from above. The power they contained shocked the demonic path Gu Immortals into hurriedly retreating.

“Amazing! This is the heavenly star lightning tribulation.”

“How unlucky is the mortal to not receive the favor of heaven and earth. He is just ascending to immortal, and is met with such a powerful heavenly tribulation!”

“What earthly calamity is this?”

The Gu Immortals retreated to the edges and observed.

Countless round craters appeared in the surroundings of the ruin bat’s corpse. The craters were pitch-black and unfathomably deep.

Bang bang bang!

Balls of pitch black lightning shot out from the craters and impacted on the ruin bat’s corpse mountain, creating loud explosions.

The lightning strikes flashed and in just a few breaths of time, the iceberg was struck by countless lightning balls, the iceberg was smashed into pieces and spattered everywhere.

Even Unfettered Scholar was moved at this, inwardly exclaiming: ‘The heavenly tribulation is heavenly star lightning, tyrannical and sharp. The earthly calamity is the earth ghost lightning, underhanded and explosive. These two great lightning tribulations are called the twin lightnings of heaven and earth, their power is increased further when they combine. Even I have to worry if I face them!”

The twin lightning of heaven and earth combined, one fell from above while the other exploded from below. The lightning was dazzling, forming a purgatory filled with the sound of thunder.

Countless bolts of lightning, densely packed together, combined into a huge lightning forest!

The shattered ice pieces were completely destroyed, even the remaining traces of frost energy were extinguished.

The scene, as if part of the world was ending, caused the observing demonic path Gu Immortals to hold their breaths in and feel stifled.

Inside the ruin bat's corpse mountain, Old Lord Can Yang looked serious as he put all his effort in maintaining the immortal killer move, final afterglow.

This ingenious defensive killer move was being used to its utmost to weaken the strength of the twin lightnings of heaven and earth.

However, all of Old Lord Can Yang's effort only weakened the lightning by fifteen percent.

His red date immortal essence was being consumed extremely quickly, and soon, his forehead was covered in a thin layer of sweat.

“How could there be such a strong lightning tribulation!” Dong Fang Chang Fan's star will muttered with a worried expression. This was almost the worst case scenario in his plan.

He had not thought he would be faced with them at this moment.

His luck really was extremely bad.

The blood veil was being badly destroyed by the lightning strikes and explosions of thunder, the losses caused Dong Fang Chang Fan to feel extreme heartache.

These losses would greatly influence the foundation of Dong Fang Yu Liang's immortal aperture.

Fifteen minutes, thirty minutes, one hour, two hours... time continued to pass, but the lightning tribulations from heaven and earth did not show any signs of weakening, instead they were constantly increasing in strength.

The immemorial ruin bat's corpse was wrecked until it was beyond recognition.

There were previously countless numbers of densely packed space path dao marks covering the surroundings of the ruin bat, but now they were almost completely cleared up by the lightning tribulations.

Old Lord Can Yang was already unable to support the situation, and the severe loss of immortal essence caused him to feel heavy.

“Right! The power of the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity is beyond normal, it is all because of you, Dong Fang Chang Fan.” Old Lord Can Yang suddenly spoke, “You are already dead, and according to the arrangement of fate, your soul should be returning to the door of life and death, how could you still remain here alive and kicking? Right now, you are not only trying to revive, you are even thinking of ascending to immortal, this is truly an act in defiance of heaven! No wonder heaven and earth are so enraged!!”

When Dong Fang Chang Fan's star will heard this, his grave expression changed, he raised his eyebrows and laughed: “Ever since Red Lotus Demon Venerable broke fate, the destiny of all living beings in this world has been in their own hands. So what if it is in defiance to heaven? My fate is in my own hands, I have planned for so long, I made so many preparations, I will definitely succeed!”

He had just spoken when they heard a rumbling sound.

The lightning strikes were already as dense as rain and the thunder was already resounding non-stop.

The thunder at this moment was beyond that of the previous ones, its sound resounded through the skies and caused everyone’s ears to buzz.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will shook and dispersed at once!

A dazzling white light filled the world! Fang Yuan, Unfettered Scholar and the remaining demonic path Gu Immortals all retreated in alarm, and even Old Lord Can Yang had to tightly close his eyes.

From the white light, a ray of divine lightning struck down.

This divine lightning was incomparably fierce, sweeping past all obstacles, in an instant, it blew up final afterglow, broke the blood veil and directly struck at Dong Fang Yu Liang.

The divine lightning was extremely fast, in almost the blink of an eye, it had broken through all the barriers like they were rotten wood and appeared in front of Dong Fang Yu Liang.

Dong Fang Yu Liang only had a mortal body and would definitely be shattered to pieces if he really was struck by this lightning, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s possession plan would come to an end, resulting in complete failure!

At the moment between life and death, ‘Dong Fang Yu Liang’, whose eyes were tightly closed the whole time, suddenly opened his eyes!

In the dazzling white light, he barely managed to see that ray of thunder and lightning.

Intense startled anger rose up inside him: ‘Fluctuating light! Falling star lightning! Tribulations hidden inside my original tribulation, accursed heaven, you want me to die so badly?! Then I refuse to die!’

Dong Fang Chang Fan roared in his mind.

The phantom formation started to give off bright radiance.

Boom!!!

A piercing explosion resounded. Endless rays of white light shot out from the ruin bat’s corpse.

The light rays swept through some unlucky demonic path Gu Immortals, immediately, their minds and souls shook, and some even directly crashed down from the sky.

The terrifying explosion created a huge shock wave that lifted all the vegetation in the surroundings.

The sky seemed to be collapsing while the earth quaked.

The demonic path Gu Immortals retreated in panic.

They retreated several kilometers, before the while light rays gradually dispersed, only then did the Gu Immortals calm down, returning.

There was nothing left of the enormous, lofty ruin bat’s corpse mountain.

In the air above, a young figure appeared, standing proudly as he looked at Fang Yuan and the others.

Dong Fang Yu Liang!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 793: Myriad Star Fireflies versus Band of Experts

“Dong Fang Yu Liang? Am I seeing wrongly?”

“How did he become a Gu Immortal? It seems that this heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity was caused by him.”

“Becoming an immortal on the spot, was that Dong Fang Chang Fan’s inheritance? Sigh, a mortal actually snatched it!”

The demonic path Gu Immortals saw Dong Fang Chang Fan and were very shocked, they felt some dejection and sadness.

‘Dong Fang Yu Liang’ was expressionless, there was no pupils or whites in his eyes, they were completely shining with many different colored crystalline lights, flickering continuously.

He had this gaze while observing the demonic path Gu Immortals around him, saying softly: “You are the people who want to snatch my master’s inheritance? What gives you the guts to attack a righteous path super force?”

After Dong Fang Chang Fan succeeded in his possession, but he did not expose the truth, he still spoke as if he was Dong Fang Yu Liang, with his voice.

The demonic path Gu Immortals were in a dejected state, filled with great grievance, now that they heard Dong Fang Yu Liang’s arrogant words, their faces turned ugly, some scoffed while others shouted: “You mere junior, you have just become an immortal, after ascending in one step, you are arrogant! Here, take my hammer!”

As he said so, a figure flew out from among the crowd.

This demonic path Gu Immortal had broad shoulders and a thick waist, there was a flying heavenly boar underneath him, its fat legs were running quickly, as it carried its owner towards Dong Fang Yu Liang in an imposing manner.

It was Zhuo Zhan.

The immortals jolted, reacting to what had happened.

“This Zhuo Zhan is so crafty, he is trying to pick up a bargain!”

“We were almost deterred by the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, but even if Dong Fang Yu Liang became an immortal, he is a newbie. What is there to be afraid of?”

“Capture Dong Fang Yu Liang alive, and interrogate the wisdom path inheritance from him!!”

The demonic path Gu Immortals moved quickly, charging towards ‘Dong Fang Yu Liang’, fearing that they would be left behind.

Unfettered Scholar was among them.

Only Fang Yuan and a few other people did not move, they remained in their places.

He did not know that Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body was already possessed by Dong Fang Chang Fan, but he was wary of Old Lord Can Yang.

“Dong Fang Yu Liang appeared, but where is Old Lord Can Yang?”

Old Lord Can Yang was actually standing behind ‘Dong Fang Yu Liang’, but he used an immortal technique and concealed himself. His method was superb, none of the demonic path immortals sensed him.

But he was quite injured, seeing the immortals charging over, he transmitted to ‘Dong Fang Yu Liang’: “Do you need my help?”

‘Dong Fang Yu Liang’ quickly rejected him: “You do not need to do anything, let me deal with them!”

Once Old Lord Can Yang attacked, if he was exposed, Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals would realize that ‘Dong Fang Yu Liang’ was colluding with Central Continent’s forces. By then, not only would ‘Dong Fang Yu Liang’ get ostracized by the righteous path, even the demonic path would not welcome him.

In addition, ‘Dong Fang Yu Liang’ wanted to single-handedly showcase a heavy crippling of his enemies. That was the only way he could rise up after the death of eight Dong Fang tribe Gu Immortals, to allow Dong Fang tribe to once again become a force to be reckoned with!

Zhuo Zhan led the way, he was getting closer, Dong Fang Yu Liang could see the sinister smile on his face.

Behind him, more than ten demonic path Gu Immortals were charging with killing intent.

Dong Fang Yu Liang was all alone, his cultivation level was only at the bottom of rank six, but he was neither flustered nor scared.

His lips curled up, he showed a mild smile as if he was in complete control of the situation.

Old Lord Can Yang who was behind him looked on with much curiosity, he wanted to see how he could repel his foes with his current cultivation level.

Only to see that Dong Fang Yu Liang raised his right arm, his white sleeves were pulled back as his right index finger pointed at the sky, he spoke loudly and leisurely, word by word: “Myriad. Star. Fireflies.”

The immortals heard this and their advancement halted, their expressions changed.

Myriad star fireflies was well known in the world of Northern Plains Gu Immortals, it was Dong Fang Chang Fan’s strongest killer move.

Dong Fang Chang Fan was known as the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, that was not just because of his deductions alone, there was also his battle strength!

Without stunning battle strength, how could he stand firm in the turbulent Northern Plains? Without immense power, how could he lead Dong Fang tribe on the road to success?

Thus, in terms of battle strength, Dong Fang Chang Fan easily surpassed Pi Shui Han and Unfettered Scholar during his life. After all, he was the first supreme elder of a righteous path super force!

The wisdom path killer move, myriad star fireflies, was the greatest display of Dong Fang Chang Fan’s battle strength. This move was extremely famous, it was ingrained into the hearts of Northern Plains Gu Immortals.

“Don’t listen to his bluff! Myriad star fireflies involves tens of thousands of Gu worms, can it be activated so easily?” Zhuo Zhan shouted.

“He is just a newbie Gu Immortal, he has just ascended and gone beyond the mortal stage, how can he manipulate so many Gu worms immediately?” Lu Qing Ming snickered.

“Wishful thinking!” Divine Lord Tian Du held his Immortal Gu as he prepared to strike.

“Hmph, myriad star fireflies, I lost to that move back then. I wonder how much of its power you can use?” Unfettered Scholar’s expression flashed with rage.

“Are we really doing nothing?” Hei Lou Lan’s heart was pounding in excitement, but Fang Yuan was a great strength amongst them, after Hei Lou Lan lost self strength Immortal Gu, her battle strength was weaker than before.

“Wait a while longer, the situation is not right.” Fang Yuan wanted to speak of what he had found out earlier, but the sky suddenly changed.

Earlier, the clouds had dispersed, the surroundings were entirely clear skies. But now, darkness descended as the world turned dim.

Darkness surrounded the surroundings, countless firefly-like spots of light appeared in the sky, dancing as they moved around.

Starlight burst out, it was a brilliant and dazzling sight!

“Myriad star fireflies!!” The demonic path Gu Immortals’ expressions changed, they shouted as they were fell into the midst of the star fireflies.

Starlight was glowing and reflected on their faces.

Unfettered Scholar’s expression was pale, this was truly myriad star fireflies, it seemed even stronger than in his memories!

But how could this be possible?

Dong Fang Yu Liang had just became an immortal, right? Even if he had Dong Fang Chang Fan’s star will, and could use rank seven red date immortal essence left behind by Dong Fang Chang Fan, this was the first time he was activating myriad star fireflies, how could he be so familiar with it, like he had practiced it a thousand times?

Unfettered Scholar could not understand it.

The Gu Immortals around him were in a more pathetic state.

The surrounding specks of starlight were attacking them from all directions.

One starlight speck was not powerful, but with tens of thousands of starlight specks? Hundreds of thousands, millions, tens of millions of starlight spots?

Especially when each of the starlight specks had a star thought in them.

Even if the Gu Immortals destroyed the starlight specks, the star thoughts would come out and force their way into the Gu Immortals’ minds.

Even if the Gu Immortals had defensive methods, the starlight specks were endless and nearly unlimited in numbers, they were bound to fail eventually. Once star thoughts find an opportunity and enter their minds, that would be dangerous.

The least they could do was to disrupt one’s thoughts, the worst they could do was to destroy the person’s thoughts, causing them to become slow-witted, or if all the thoughts in their mind were star thoughts, they would be subdued completely. The star thoughts would replace their cognition, and the Gu Immortal would become Dong Fang Yu Liang’s puppet, manipulated at will!

“What are you doing?!” Beside Zhuo Zhan, a demonic path Gu Immortal shouted angrily.

Zhuo Zhan’s face was turning purplish-red: “Sorry, my attack changed directions all of a sudden!”

“Hmph! With your ability, you want to snatch the wisdom path inheritance? In such a short time, you already got invaded by the star thoughts. You are really more of a trouble than help!” The demonic path Gu Immortal was nearly hit, he was extremely angry.

“What did you say? Do you dare to say it again?!” Zhuo Zhan was furious too, he shouted at the demonic path Gu Immortal.

“Enough, are you still fighting amongst yourselves? The important thing now is to escape. This is myriad star fireflies, the longer we stay here, the more dangerous it is.” A Gu Immortal said anxiously.

Another Gu Immortal immediately rebuked: “Escape? What are you afraid of? He is only a bottom tier rank six Gu Immortal, we have so many people, and Lord Unfettered Scholar, why are you afraid to this extent? In my opinion, we should just attack!”

Everyone was hesitant on whether to retreat or advance, they subconsciously looked towards Unfettered Scholar.

Pi Shui Han had already escaped, Fang Yuan was far away, Unfettered Scholar was the only rank seven battle strength here, he was their shepherd.

It was not that everyone acknowledged Unfettered Scholar as the leader, but in times of difficulty, the strong would handle the greater dangers.

Unfettered Scholar was their ‘strong’ person, by moving alongside an expert, they would have a greater chance of surviving.

Unfettered Scholar himself was hesitant.

He and Dong Fang Chang Fan had fought before, back then, he lost to this move, myriad star fireflies.

After losing in battle, he learned from his painful lesson, focusing more attention on information regarding Dong Fang Chang Fan, thus his understanding of myriad star fireflies was much deeper than that of other people.

He knew that myriad star fireflies was a wisdom path killer move, it had immense power, and was created by Dong Fang Chang Fan singlehandedly.

The weakness of this move was hard to discover.

At the moment, Unfettered Scholar only knew this: Once a person enters the range of this move, they would be plotted against. Each of the Gu Immortal’s thoughts could produce star thoughts.

These star thoughts were formed by myriad star fireflies to turn into starlight specks, attacking the Gu Immortal.

During an intense battle, Gu Immortals would have to consider many things, as their minds worked rapidly, they would create more star thoughts.

The more star thoughts produced, the stronger the killer move becomes, especially when there are more Gu Immortals in the range, the star thoughts produced would be even greater. When the star thoughts completely took over the Gu Immortals’ minds, they would turn into Dong Fang Yu Liang’s puppets, fighting for him.

Even if it could not reach that stage, being influenced by the star thoughts, mistakes would occur. Like earlier, when Zhuo Zhan almost injured an ally.

Thus, myriad star fireflies was a move well suited to deal with multiple enemies, it was weaker when fighting one enemy. Against more people, they would be used to restrain each other, the battle might instead be easier to win.

The reason Dong Fang Chang Fan created this move was because he had tried to develop Dong Fang tribe singlehandedly. Without many Gu Immortals in his tribe to help him, he often had to fight many enemies alone.

But after Dong Fang Chang Fan created this move, he no longer feared group fights.

“The current scenario is what Dong Fang Yu Liang most wants to see. We have many people and are not united, everyone is wary of each other, and we have barely any elites, I am the only rank seven. In a fight, we will become hindrances to each other. Not only that, from the battle earlier, there also seems to be a fire path Gu Immortal hiding here.”

Unfettered Scholar thought rapidly in his mind, starlight specks appeared around him, he had much more of them compared to other people.

Given such concerns, Unfettered Scholar did not feel like retreating, instead, his battle intent was roused!

“I lost to Dong Fang Chang Fan, that was the greatest humiliation in my life. Now that I am facing his successor, if I retreat, how will I face myself afterwards? Even if they have a hidden Gu Immortal, we also have many people. If I retreat instead of fighting, which Gu Immortal in Northern Plains would look up to me in the future?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 794: Internal Threat, Chaotic Battle, Advance or Retreat

After making his decision, Unfettered Scholar's vigor rose, and he shouted: "Fight! The enemy is merely one person, anyone who is afraid can leave."

"Alright, we will follow lord!"

"Truly worthy of Lord Unfettered Scholar, with you here, who would fear Dong Fang Yu Liang?"

The group of demons shouted.

Unfettered Scholar flicked his sleeve and used his killer move, clearing up the lingering starlight around him as he charged towards Dong Fang Yu Liang.

"Come." Dong Fang Yu Liang was not in the least afraid of Unfettered Scholar's rank seven power, he did not retreat but advanced, submerged in starlight.

For a while, the starlight churned as if it were a sea of stars, surging and rolling unendingly.

Dong Fang Yu Liang was like the master of stars as he maneuvered the endless starlight, raising majestic waves of stars to fight against a group by himself!

Stars swayed and light fragments flew everywhere.

Dong Fang Yu Liang was hopelessly outnumbered at first and the situation was dangerous. But as time passed, the starlight continued to increase rapidly, almost filling the whole space.

The starlight obscured vision and made cooperation difficult, while the star thoughts invaded minds causing the demonic path Gu Immortals to make repeated mistakes. As the situation turned more chaotic, Dong Fang Yu Liang's advantage was getting bigger.

Many Gu Immortals were accidentally injured several times, gradually, they did not dare to team up, choosing to fight alone, which further reduced the pressure on Dong Fang Yu Liang.

Only Unfettered Scholar was able to maneuver skilfully around the obstacles, and was the strongest opponent of Dong Fang Yu Liang. Dong Fang Yu Liang had been evading him since the start, not daring to fight head-on with Unfettered Scholar.

Unfettered Scholar's fury surged as he got repeatedly obstructed by other demonic path Gu Immortals: "This Dong Fang Yu Liang is too slippery, he is so young but he is as cunning as Dong Fang Chang Fan back then! He is showing no flaws, as if he has been manipulating this killer move since birth! Is Dong Fang Chang Fan's inheritance so magical?"

Not far away, Old Lord Can Yang was also inwardly shocked by the might of myriad star fireflies. He remained hidden the whole time, quietly healing himself. Occasionally, he would gaze eerily at Fang Yuan and the group at the edge of the battlefield.

He had vague speculations about Fang Yuan's identity and had been waiting for Fang Yuan to jump into the battlefield.

He did not excel in pursuing enemies, but with the help of myriad star fireflies, he would have a greatly increased chance of capturing Fang Yuan.

However, since the beginning, Fang Yuan only stood by, looking on without lifting a finger, which caused Old Lord Can Yang to feel anxious and forced him to endure waiting patiently.

Immortal killer move — Thousand Disintegrations!

Unfettered Scholar could not fight a prolonged battle, finally using his trump card killer move.

Dong Fang Yu Liang chuckled, already on guard against this move, his body swayed nimbly like a butterfly, dodging the rays coming from the gaze.

But right at this moment, Dong Fang Yu Liang suddenly stopped, Dong Fang Wan Xiu’s furious roar resounded within him: ‘Old scoundrel, I will take you down with me!’

‘Dong Fang Yu Liang’ suddenly changed directions and charged straight towards the killer move thousand disintegrations.

This change was beyond anyone’s expectations.

The power of thousand disintegrations was deeply imprinted in everyone’s minds, ‘Dong Fang Yu Liang’ charging straight at it was simply suicidal!

For a while, everyone was startled and could not react.

Even Unfettered Scholar was stupefied as he looked at ‘Dong Fang Yu Liang’ charging at his killer move.

The light of thousand disintegrations shined on Dong Fang Yu Liang’s head, in an instant, Dong Fang Yu Liang’s hair was destroyed, then his skull was melting, with the rays about to hit his brain.

On this boundary between life and death, Old Lord Can Yang shouted and with no time to continue healing, he showed himself to save Dong Fang Yu Liang.

He attacked while also defending.

Flame surged, a blazing inferno rose and charged towards Unfettered Scholar. Confronted with a rank seven expert, Unfettered Scholar had no choice but to divide his attention.

As this happened, Old Lord Can Yang was able to pull back Dong Fang Yu Liang.

Dong Fang Yu Liang’s skull was penetrated through and his brain almost suffered extremely severe damage. At this moment, countless star thoughts surged like a fountain towards the outside through the hole in the skull.

After being saved by Old Lord Can Yang, Dong Fang Yu Liang’s expression turned calm, representing that Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul had regained control of the body.

Lingering fear unavoidably showed up on his face.

If there had been just a slight delay, Dong Fang Yu Liang’s brain would have been entirely disintegrated.

Dong Fang Chang Fan could be said to have walked around the gates of hell, barely holding onto life. And without Old Lord Can Yang, he might have died again.

“What happened?!” Old Lord Can Yang retreated while pulling Dong Fang Chang Fan and shouted at the latter, his heart still palpitating.

Dong Fang Chang Fan had explained most of the possession technique to him, but a few crucial final steps were still kept undisclosed by Dong Fang Chang Fan.

Thus, Old Lord Can Yang was absolutely not willing to see Dong Fang Chang Fan’s death.

Dong Fang Chang Fan intentionally held these back as a failsafe against Old Lord Can Yang, the effects were shown now.

However, he might have had his life preserved, but Dong Fang Chang Fan looked pale and had an unsightly expression.

This series of events was because he had hurriedly ascended to immortal and were the side effects of the struggle against the lightning tribulation.

Originally, Dong Fang Chang Fan had deceived Dong Fang tribe’s eight Gu Immortals and used the phantom formation to extract their immortal aperture origin cores.

But these cores contained the wills and auras of the eight Gu Immortals, and could not be directly transferred to Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body.

Thus, Dong Fang Chang Fan used menses blood Immortal Gu to turn these origin cores into a blood veil. Then he used the attacks from the demonic path Gu Immortals to temper and remove the impurities that were the wills and auras of the eight Gu Immortals.

Dong Fang Chang Fan then would transfer the purified immortal aperture origin cores into Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body, which should have resulted in no side effects.

However, the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity had been too terrifying, far surpassing Dong Fang Chang Fan’s estimation. It resulted in a dangerous situation and at the crucial moment between life and death, Dong Fang Chang Fan had no choice but to skip some of the blood veil’s tempering steps and directly transfer the extracted origin cores into Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body.

He passed the tribulation and advanced to Gu Immortal. But the new immortal aperture had the eight Gu Immortals’ wills and was filled with their auras.

These eight Gu Immortals’ bodies and souls were already turned to nothingness prior to the heaven-shaking tribulation. But they were betrayed, creating hatred towards Dong Fang Chang Fan which was retained in their wills and auras.

Dong Fang Chang Fan had to pay full attention to the battle when fighting Unfettered Scholar. A moment of negligence caused the internal danger to erupt, resulting in a strong backlash.

Dong Fang Chang Fan had expected it but during the backlash, he discovered his previous estimations had been too optimistic. The power of the accumulated wills in his immortal aperture was beyond his expectations.

Thus, the backlash had almost sent him to his own death under thousand disintegrations.

Dong Fang Chang Fan heaved a sigh and was just about to explain matters to Old Lord Can Yang, when suddenly his face twisted into a ferocious expression.

Old Lord Can Yang’s mind rang with warning sirens and he quickly released his grip as he retreated.

The next moment, Dong Fang Yu Liang used a powerful killer move against his benefactor, Old Lord Can Yang.

Fortunately, Old Lord Can Yang had been vigilant, Dong Fang Yu Liang’s attack struck empty air.

“Old bastard Chang Fan, you shameless scoundrel, scheming against your own tribe’s Gu Immortals for your rebirth!” Dong Fang Yu Liang furiously shouted, but it was not with his previous voice, rather, it was the voice of Dong Fang Yi Kong.

Such a strange change confused everyone.

Unfettered Scholar’s eyes shined with a bright light, and moved in for the kill again. He reacted promptly and used the killer move thousand disintegrations, again directed at Dong Fang Yu Liang.

However, Dong Fang Chang Fan regained control again and narrowly evaded thousand disintegrations.

The good scenario did not last for long as soon, the will of another of Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortals forcibly took control of the body, shouting and seeking death of their own accord.

Old Lord Can Yang had no choice but to save Dong Fang Chang Fan from danger again.

The battle situation had changed.

The orderly myriad star fireflies which attacked and defended in turn were now flying around chaotically. The pressure on the demonic path Gu Immortals had greatly decreased, and they charged towards Dong Fang Yu Liang one after the other.

Among them, the threat from Unfettered Scholar was the largest, as he moved unhindered around the sea of starlight, his thousand disintegrations breaking through all obstacles.

Dong Fang Chang Fan, however, had the help of Old Lord Can Yang. Old Lord Can Yang was an expert of Central Continent’s ancient sects and had deep foundations. His immortal killer move, life chasing fire, was also rather troublesome, obstructing Unfettered Scholar.

Dong Fang Yu Liang would occasionally suffer the backlash from a certain Dong Fang tribe Gu Immortal, at times causing him to attack Old Lord Can Yang or even seek death, but at other times Dong Fang Chang Fan was able to regain control and fight the demonic path Gu Immortals, attempting to remedy the situation.

However, all things considered, such a battle situation could not avoid being chaotic.

The source of the chaos was Dong Fang Yu Liang.

“What is going on?” Fairy Li Shan and the others were standing at the edge of the battlefield, not knowing what to think about this chaotic fight.

The strange and confusing situation was beyond their expectations.

“It seems Dong Fang Chang Fan sacrificed his tribe’s Gu Immortals and possessed Dong Fang Yu Liang, but his plan did not completely succeed. This old bastard really can scheme!” Hei Lou Lan sneered.

“No matter who Dong Fang Yu Liang is, that fire path Gu Immortal beside him is not of Northern Plains, but an expert of Central Continent’s Immortal Crane Sect, named Old Lord Can Yang. After the battle earlier, he is probably suspicious of me.” Fang Yuan secretly transmitted his voice, exposing the identity of Old Lord Can Yang.

“What? This is troublesome.” Hei Lou Lan frowned. She and Fang Yuan were tied to the same boat, their gains and losses were linked together. If Fang Yuan was exposed, she would also be in jeopardy.

“What should we do now? Perhaps we could kill him?” Fairy Li Shan was ready to attack.

“No! He only has some doubts, as long as I don’t expose myself, he won’t be able to guess my identity in Central Continent. The battle is extremely chaotic now, it will be hard for us to withdraw if we meddle in. Moreover, Dong Fang Chang Fan is a deep schemer, myriad star fireflies is also powerful, while we will have to restrain our full power to hide our identities. What’s more, Old Lord Can Yang is an expert among rank sevens and won’t be easily defeated.” Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered, as he sent this message to the two women.

He already had the intention to retreat. The situation might be in disorder now, but their circumstances did not allow them to do as they pleased. Even if they could use their full strengths, the combined strength of the three was not enough to dominate the whole battlefield and control the lives and deaths of everyone present.

“You mean that we should retreat?” Hei Lou Lan, however, was reluctant. As far as she was concerned, the chaotic situation in front of them was still an opportunity.

She had sworn to get revenge, but Hei Cheng was powerful and her battle strength had decreased after she had also lost self strength Immortal Gu. If she did not use these opportunities to quickly progress ahead, when would she be able to take her revenge?

Fang Yuan smiled: “I mean that we should retreat as well as advance. Haven’t the two of you discovered that Dong Fang Yu Liang has already lost control over a dozen times in just this short period of time, all in all, it should be due to the wills of the eight Gu Immortals causing trouble.”

“You mean?” Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan’s gazes shined brightly as they understood the meaning behind these words.

“Right. How many Gu Immortals does Dong Fang tribe has? Even if there is some hidden force left behind, Dong Fang tribe’s headquarters would still be at its weakest state in all time. Just think about it, the accumulations of a region’s super force...” Fang Yuan spoke leisurely, however his words ignited the fires in the hearts of Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan.

“Then what are we waiting for, let’s go! Let’s rob Dong Fang Chang Fan’s base!” Hei Lou Lan did not hesitate as she flew straight towards Dong Fang tribe’s headquarters with excitement.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 795: Arriving First, But Without Success

Jade Pool blessed land, Dong Fang tribe’s main headquarters, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s home. It had a long history of thousands of years.

This type of blessed land was different from ordinary blessed lands.

Ordinary blessed lands were a Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture, they belonged to one person. Once their cultivation level reaches rank eight, the immortal aperture would become a grotto-heaven.

Meanwhile, Jade Pool blessed land did not belong to one Gu Immortal. It was formed from a group of Gu Immortals cutting off a part of their own blessed lands, and was pieced together after that.

Blessed lands could swallow each other. Earlier, on Tian Ti mountain, Fang Yuan was undergoing the earthly calamity of the desolate beast swamp crab, he had to discard a portion of his blessed land. In the end, this part was taken away by the demonic path Gu Immortals on Tian Ti mountain, fusing it into their own blessed lands.

The swallowing of blessed lands had very strict requirements. But the requirements of piecing blessed lands together were much lower.

Most of the super forces in the five regions had a main camp that was formed by piecing together the contributions of various Gu Immortals.

Dong Fang tribe’s Jade Pool blessed land, Murong tribe’s Yin-Yang blessed land, Guan tribe’s Shi Huang blessed land, and Hei tribe’s Iron Eagle blessed land all were like this.

Even Northern Plains’ number one demonic path force, Snowy Mountain blessed land, was the same.

The demonic path Gu Immortals contributed a portion of their blessed lands, creating Snowy Mountain blessed land. They then lived in it, the mountain peaks that they each occupied was the region that they took out from their own immortal apertures.

The owner of the first peak, Old Ancestor Xue Hu, had his own rank eight grotto-heaven. Fairy Li Shan, who was the owner of the third peak, also had her own immortal aperture.

The Gu Immortal’s personal immortal aperture was extremely important, there were countless treasures placed in them, it was a private area. In most situations, outsiders would not be allowed in. If there was any damage done, the losses were severe.

Regarding this, there was also a rather peculiar example, it was Zombie Alliance. The members of Zombie Alliance were immortal zombies.

Since the immortal zombies’ immortal apertures were dead, a portion of the aperture would break apart once in a while, and they furthermore could not be fused together. Therefore, in each of the five regions, the headquarters of Zombie Alliance did not form from immortal apertures, for example, Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s headquarters was Dark Flow Giant City.

Such a headquarters was naturally inferior to a blessed land. This was another reason why Zombie Alliance’s branches were weaker than super forces.

Thus, to Fang Yuan and the others, Jade Pool blessed land was not hard to find.

Blessed lands that were pieced together like this were usually placed on the ground, taking in earth qi to stabilize the space inside. At the same time, they could slow time flow and postpone the arrival of heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities.

“I know the location of this Jade Pool blessed land clearly. If it was not moved away, it should be to the northeast. Let’s fly over there, at this speed, it would only take an hour.” Fairy Li Shan led the way.

“It should still be at the original place. The main camp of such a super force is very important, it is the central point used between super forces when splitting up their respective territories. It would not be moved under normal circumstances.” Hei Lou Lan was excited: “Dong Fang Chang Fan miscalculated this time, he actually removed his own manpower, sacrificing Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortals to revive himself!”

Fang Yuan followed behind the two women without speaking.

As they flew rapidly, huge winds were blowing, causing buzzing noises around the ears.

Fang Yuan’s memories of his previous life began to surface in his mind.

In his previous life, he knew very little about Dong Fang Chang Fan. He had no idea whether Dong Fang Chang Fan succeeded in possessing Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body in his previous life.

But he knew at least that Dong Fang Yu Liang was only a rank five Gu Master for a long time. At that time, Imperial Court blessed land was not destroyed, after Hei Lou Lan won and came out from Imperial Court blessed land, she tried to overturn and change the current rules, dying suddenly one day.

Eventually, Ma Hong Yun stepped up on the stage. After that, he led his army and became the Lord of the Imperial Court for many rounds. During the third Imperial Court contest, he was suppressed by three hearts combination soul and was captured by Dong Fang tribe alive. In the end, Ma Hong Yun’s luck was overwhelming, he actually got Dong Fang Yu Liang’s sister, Dong Fang Qing Yu, on his side, not only did she free him, she also gave him the secret of three hearts combination soul, allowing Ma Hong Yun to emerge victorious, and Dong Fang tribe lost terribly.

Fang Yuan thought about this and he inwardly came to a realization, he had a different view now: “If, in my previous life, Dong Fang Chang Fan managed to possess Dong Fang Yu Liang, then Dong Fang Qing Yu was doing this not because of Ma Hong Yun, but because she found out something and wanted to avenge her brother.”

After all, Dong Fang Yu Liang and Dong Fang Qing Yu were siblings that had mutually supported and stuck close by each other since they were young. No matter how Dong Fang Chang Fan acted, after a long time, he would definitely mess up in front of such a close relation.

“Or maybe Dong Fang Chang Fan failed in his possession. Or maybe he succeeded, but the effect was not great, Dong Fang Yu Liang was still a mortal Gu Master.” Fang Yuan guessed.

Ever since he destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, along with Imperial Court blessed land, the events in Northern Plains had changed hugely.

Just at minimum, in his previous life, Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortals like Dong Fang Yi Kong and Dong Fang Wan Xiu were still alive, but now they were sacrificed.

Such huge changes had also affected Central Continent’s events, they were changing rapidly.

Central Continent was the center of the five regions, one could predict that in future developments, the other three regions would also be affected to an extent.

“The advantage of my rebirth is becoming smaller.” Fang Yuan sighed inwardly.

As he got stronger, the influence that he was creating also increased. It was called the butterfly effect, but Fang Yuan was already no longer a butterfly, he was an eagle.

An hour later, they arrived at Jade Pool blessed land.

The situation in front of them was slightly out of their expectations.

Jade Pool blessed land was an independent small world, when its entrance was closed, it could not be seen with the naked eye.

But now, there was a huge hole in it, one could see the situation inside the blessed land from outside.

At the same time, there were loud explosions, sounds of fighting could be heard.

“There was someone who got here first?” Hei Lou Lan’s gaze focused.

“Judging by this, they have just created a hole and entered. I had made an agreement with Dong Fang Chang Fan, I cannot attack Dong Fang tribe.” Fairy Li Shan said.

Fang Yuan would thus be the core battle strength amongst the three, he walked in front and shouted: “Let’s go in and see!”

The three entered the hole and got into Jade Pool blessed land.

Only to see that there was a huge battle in the blessed land, several demonic path Gu Immortals were fighting with the desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts that were guarding the blessed land, it was an intense fight.

“It seems that our timing is just right.” Hei Lou Lan’s mood relaxed, but her tone sank immediately after: “It is Pi Shui Han!”

As it turned out, after Pi Shui Han was hit by Old Lord Can Yang’s life chasing fire, he could not dispel it. Afraid that others would attack him, he had no choice but to escape.

As he escaped, he gradually calmed down. He found out in surprise that his clothes were still intact even with the fire burning.

Pi Shui Han had an idea, after thinking about it, he realized: This life chasing fire could only burn something with life force, his clothes were not alive, thus they were not harmed. Meanwhile, he had been using healing killer moves, they made his life force even greater, causing the fire to burn more intensely.

After finding this out, Pi Shui Han changed his tactics. He restrained most of the life force in his body, finally extinguishing the life chasing fire.

After getting rid of this threat, he turned around and wanted to go back to Tai Qiu battlefield.

On the way back, he met a few rank six demonic path Gu Immortals who had left stealthily and were trying to take advantage of his situation.

Pi Shui Han was an astute person, seeing that these few people were tailing him secretly, he understood their intentions, anger surged in him as he taught them a lesson.

The demonic path Gu Immortals worked together, but they were not the rank seven Pi Shui Han's match.

When Pi Shui Han had been venting, the sound of the battle drew in two rank six peak Gu Immortals. They were Qie Shi Min of the enslavement path and Half Moon Brutemaster of the moon path.

These two had pretty good relationships with a certain demonic path Gu Immortal, they intervened and mediated the situation. They also convinced Pi Shui Han to not go back to Tai Qiu, that he should instead go to Dong Fang tribe's main camp.

Pi Shui Han was wary of the life chasing fire already, next, he heard that Half Moon Brutemaster had an Immortal Gu that could easily pierce space and could enter Jade Pool blessed land.

Pi Shui Han thought about Unfettered Scholar, and Fang Yuan's group with their mysterious depths, he also thought about the wisdom path inheritance, even if he got it, it would be incomplete and have low value, it would be of little use to him. Thus, he decided to change his plans, to attack Jade Pool blessed land with the other demonic path Gu Immortals.

At Jade Pool blessed land, Half Moon Brutemaster used his method and truly formed a pathway to enter.

Everyone charged in, thinking of simply reaping some profits before leaving. But they found out that there were no Gu Immortals obstructing them, and just as they were fighting with the desolate beasts protecting the blessed land, Fang Yuan and the others appeared.

Seeing that the three black robed Gu Immortals were also here to loot the place, the nearby enslavement path Gu Immortal Qie Shi Min made a move.

He willed and three huge desolate beast birds flew out from his immortal aperture, encircling them.

“Who are you? I spent so much effort in creating this hole, are you here to simply take advantage of this?!” Half Moon Brutemaster shouted, he waved his arm and his killer move was unleashed.

Pi Shui Han saw Fang Yuan and his pupils shrunk, he felt a faint headache, it's the three of them, why did they come here too?”

He knew Fang Yuan's strength, but he still found some time to attack him.

These people had made an agreement earlier before entering, if anyone else enters after them, they would attack together and defend their interests.

But Pi Shui Han's attacks were slightly slower, even though his attacks looked powerful, he had reserved most of his strength, if the situation turned bad, he could retreat at any time.

As for the other demonic path Gu Immortals, the moment they saw Fang Yuan, they sucked in breaths of cold air. Pi Shui Han had confidence from his cultivation level, but why would these people dare to attack and implicate themselves? Thus, they disregarded the earlier agreement, they acted like they were obstructed by the desolate beasts and could not find time or energy to attack.

“Hehe, come.” Fang Yuan laughed sinisterly, five strength path giant hands flew out.

Three strength path giant hands suddenly grabbed the desolate beast birds, the birds cried out in pain from their force.

As for the other two, they destroyed Half Moon Brutemaster and Pi Shui Han’s attacks effortlessly.

Qie Shi Min and Half Moon Brutemaster did not know about him, they saw this and were extremely shocked.

“Rank seven battle strength!”

“Where is this expert from?”

Fang Yuan forced them back, he laughed even more wildly, two more giant hands flew out, along with two others formed earlier, a total of four hands flew towards Pi Shui Han.

At the same time, he shouted: “Pi Shui Han, to think that you came here as well. It seems that the lesson earlier was not enough for you!”

Saying this, he demonstrated an extremely arrogant and proud attitude, like he had already fought with Pi Shui Han and taught him a lesson.

Qie Shi Min and Half Moon Brutemaster heard this and their hearts shook, their fighting spirit immediately fell.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 796: Everyone With Different Intentions, Going After Precious Treasures

Pi Shui Han snorted coldly, he was inwardly extremely angered.

He was a famous expert, Fang Yuan’s loud taunting was something that had not happened to him for a very long time.

Pi Shui Han did not want to show a weak demeanor, just as he was about to attack and fight back against Fang Yuan, Fairy Li Shan flew out and exposed her rank seven aura, meanwhile at another side, Hei Lou Lan did not conceal her activation of multiple Immortal Gu.

This was obviously a situation of the three of them fighting him at once.

Pi Shui Han’s eyes twitched, he gritted his teeth and stopped his attack.

He had no choice but to stop.

Because right now, there was no one with the strength of Unfettered Scholar around him.

He was alone against many strong foes.

Pi Shui Han could not regain the face he lost, as he fought with the desolate beast, he snorted, saying to Fang Yuan: “Didn’t you guys run here too? Don’t be too arrogant, do you really think I am a pushover? I am thinking about the big picture, I have greater objectives, I do not want to waste time with a brute like you over small matters. With such huge benefits in front of us, if I waste time in being pestered by you, it would be a huge regret to miss this opportunity.”

Although the desolate beast was fierce, Pi Shui Han was much stronger, he could speak as he fought, interacting with Fang Yuan and the others.

In comparison, Qie Shi Min and Half Moon Brutemaster appeared much inferior.

“Hehe.” Fairy Li Shan laughed, she stood in the air as she said in a hoarse voice: “He is right, now is indeed not the time to fight among ourselves.”

“Why don’t we force them back and take Jade Pool blessed land for ourselves?” Fang Yuan growled unhappily on purpose.

Hei Lou Lan coordinated with him, she immediately rebuked: “There is not enough time, do you think we haven’t considered this? Since we can come here, others are not fools, there will be others coming here soon. Moreover, Dong Fang Chang Fan is a scheming old fox, why would he not set up defenses around his base camp?”

Fairy Li Shan also said: “We’ll handle it like that, how many times have I told you, number seven, you need to control your quick temper.”

Fairy Li Shan purposely spoke like she was scolding Fang Yuan, he snorted and acted as if he was obeying orders from her.

These three had already cooperated many times, they had chemistry in coordinating between themselves, with their current performance, there was no flaw.

Pi Shui Han felt even more wary now.

Qie Shi Min and Half Moon Brutemaster looked at each other, thinking that this situation was troublesome.

At the same time, they felt some suspicion and uncertainty: “Where did this mysterious force come from?”

“Such a person is only number seven, and not the leader?”

“Brother Pi, Jade Pool blessed land is so big, it is not something we can take for ourselves alone, why don’t we work together for now, time is limited, the longer we drag on, the more unexpected problems could occur.” Fairy Li Shan said solemnly.

Pi Shui Han did not want to fight them, he saw a way out that could save some face for him, on the outside he showed a reluctant expression as he spoke: “Fine, you can join in too. But we had an agreement earlier, we cannot fight among ourselves, there are certainly many valuable things so whoever finds them will get to own them. If there is a dispute, you can undergo transactions privately. If that is insufficient, strength will decide the rest!”

Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan looked at each other, seeing the smile in each other’s eyes.

What rules were these?

This was no different from saying there were no rules!

Among demonic path Gu Masters, they often lacked trust. Such rules were compatible with the style of the demonic path, there were no restraints at all.

“Of course, earlier, Pi Shui Han, Qie Shi Min and the others probably had more rules than this. There was probably a part about using cultivation level to decide who gets more resources.” Fang Yuan muttered in his thoughts.

Pi Shui Han was a rank seven Gu Immortal, he had the greatest battle strength, he naturally had to protect his own interests.

But the situation was different now, Fang Yuan’s side was even stronger, Pi Shui Han was at a disadvantage, he would not blindly list out such a condition.

Qie Shi Min and Half Moon Brutemaster were extremely regretful.

Why did they attack so quickly? They did not observe the situation clearly!

The enslavement path Gu Immortal Qie Shi Min saw that they were negotiating, he had to take a risk and say: “Would sir return my three desolate birds?”

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, saying arrogantly: “These birds may look impressive but are worthless, you can have them back.”

Saying this, he tossed these three desolate beast birds without a second thought, like they were worth nothing.

Qie Shi Min felt anger inwardly, he was extremely stifled.

These three desolate beast birds were indeed low in battle strength, but they were easy to raise and control.

There was only one beast enslavement Immortal Gu in the world, but there were many ways other than that to control desolate beasts. Wisdom path, water path, fire path, and others, they all could do so.

There were other techniques that Qie Shi Min did not use, once he did, he could raise the desolate beast birds’ battle strength by fifty percent.

But Fang Yuan and the others were too ruthless, if they had fought, he might have done that. However, they went directly to Pi Shui Han to find trouble, they did not even give him a second glance.

These two demonic path Gu Immortals did not know the background of Fang Yuan and the others, but they knew Pi Shui Han’s power.

Even Pi Shui Han was suppressed, having the disadvantage, why would they dare to attack?

Thus, Qie Shi Min was deterred, he had cowered before even fighting, he did not dare to use his real offensive techniques.

He did not reply to Fang Yuan’s taunting, he kept quiet as he endured it, not daring to say a word.

In truth, Fairy Li Shan was a rank seven information path Gu Immortal with ordinary battle strength. After Hei Lou Lan lost Self Strength, she did not have a true immortal killer move, her battle strength fell and was around rank six middle tier.

If Fang Yuan and Pi Shui Han fought, as time passed, he would inevitably fall into a disadvantage.

Comparing their collective strengths, Fang Yuan's side was weaker.

But in war, destroying the enemy's plan was the best tactic. The second best way was to destroy their connections, then the best after that was attacking their troops, and finally, attacking their cities. Fang Yuan and the others used the best tactic, they won before even fighting.

Although the power levels in different worlds were somewhat different, or they could even be very different, but regarding such philosophy, it could be applied everywhere.

Whichever world it was, the logic of ruining the enemy's plans was an astute move.

Only an imbecile would want to fight and kill all day.

Anyone who had slight knowledge of politics would know that war was only a method, it was an extension of political strife. And the core of politics was the economy.

Economy meant profits, in other words, all fighting was done for the sake of profits.

To Fang Yuan, coldness, arrogance, humility, conceit, all of these were masks, they were tools for him to obtain profits.

The two sides came to an agreement and decided to collaborate. The desolate beasts in Jade Pool blessed land were originally at a disadvantage, with no commander. Now that there were new members to the group of demonic path Gu Immortals, the beasts quickly lost. Some died, some got injured, and some escaped.

"Hahaha, let's charge in." Fang Yuan purposely laughed wildly, taking the lead as he flew into a deep part of Jade Pool blessed land.

From a bird's eye view in the air, the blessed land's huge landmass had pools of all sizes that could be seen all over the place.

There were deep pools and small lakes connected with each other, in untold numbers. They were like the stars in the night sky, indescribably beautiful.

The terrain of the blessed land was somewhat chaotically ordered, it was organized in accordance to being centered upon each jade pool, spreading out in a circular fashion. There were some grasslands, some green trees that formed shade for the pools. There were some pools in mountains, and there were some in swamps.

"This is a good blessed land!" Fang Yuan could not help but praise.

Soon after, Hei Lou Lan arrived behind him, she did not speak but her eyes were shining.

Fairy Li Shan also arrived soon afterwards, she smiled as she introduced: "Each of the jade pools here are unique, they have different types of waters and nurture countless species of creatures, or Gu worm groups. Some were used to create a specific environment, to store all their resources. Dong Fang Chang Fan had his own unique concept of management, when he was around, he brought in resources from Eastern Sea, growing them in Jade Pool blessed land until they bore fruit, which he then sold to Northern Plains Gu Immortals. Be it righteous path or demonic path, they were all popular goods. Even in treasure yellow heaven, Dong Fang tribe’s fish groups and aquatic plants were famous. Even though they could not match Eastern Sea’s super forces in this aspect, it was quite a unique specialty.”

Hearing this, Hei Lou Lan understood, she was ready to move: “This means that in each of these pools, there is a stockpile of resources.”

“Hahaha, there are so many crystal marrow aquatic plants, it is suitable for my blessed land, I can save a huge amount of expenses now!” Not far away, a demonic path Gu Immortal had already taken over a pool as he laughed loudly.

“We have to split up, if we stay together, others might be suspicious.” Fang Yuan transmitted.

“Alright, let’s act separately, we can gain more that way. But keep in touch and take care of each other, not only are we dealing with Pi Shui Han and the others, there might also be Dong Fang Chang Fan’s traps. I will go first!” Hei Lou Lan changed her direction and flew away from Fang Yuan and Fairy Li Shan, she flew towards a deep pool below.

“This child...” Fairy Li Shan looked at Hei Lou Lan’s figure as she sighed, saying to Fang Yuan: “I had previously agreed to not attack Dong Fang tribe. I cannot touch these resources, but I can skirt around the restrictions. I will investigate this place, if I find a precious resource, I will inform you two.”

“Alright.” Fang Yuan replied curtly.

He suddenly looked towards a deep pool, it was shining brightly, like there was a layer of oil on top. The surface area of the pool’s top layer was also larger than the other pools.

“I am going too!” Fang Yuan moved and flew down at lightning speed.

Fairy Li Shan flew towards the sky, hiding into the clouds.

Far away, Pi Shui Han saw that the three of them had split up, a dark light flashed in his eyes as he snorted coldly, turning towards a jade pool.

Fairy Li Shan flew into the clouds so that she could use hole earth Gu, she transmitted only to Hei Lou Lan secretly: “Quick! There are two great treasures in Jade Pool blessed land, one is Thatched Hut, the other is Miniscule Mountain. The former is a rank six Immortal Gu House, it can both attack and defend, specializing in storage. The latter is a legendary place recorded <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, one of the variant humans, the miniman race lives in it. No matter which one we obtain, it will be of huge help to our cultivation in the future.”

Hei Lou Lan immediately responded: “I have also heard of these two treasures. But little aunt, how did you confirm that these two are in Jade Pool blessed land?”

Fairy Li Shan smiled as she replied: “I have cooperated with Dong Fang tribe so many times, I know some matters about their internal affairs. Thatched Hut stores most of Dong Fang tribe’s public wealth, even Dong Fang Chang Fan cannot take them for his personal use inappropriately. As for Miniscule Mountain, despite being small, it is a real mountain, it needs to take in earth qi to stabilize its form, it cannot be brought out easily. Furthermore, Dong Fang Chang Fan had the agreement with the righteous path forces created using it, with Miniscule Mountain guarding this place, that would form the greatest restraints on the alliance!”

“Of course, these two treasures could have been moved away secretly, but the possibility of that is small. Regardless, we have to give it a try. There are countless jade pools, Thatched Hut might still be at its former location, follow my instructions and go there stealthily.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 797: Flick, Flick, Flick, Subduing a Shark Fin Wolf

Hei Lou Lan was even more excited, quickly replying: “Little aunt, rest assured, I am already deep into the pool and am drilling a hole underground!”

In the air, Fairy Li Shan suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood, this was the backlash from the alliance agreement, but she could endure this much.

She casually wiped away the blood and continued to transmit information to Hei Lou Lan secretly: “Alright, I will scout for you from up here, move stealthily and make sure other Gu Immortals don’t discover you. Especially Fang Yuan, he is extremely shrewd and calculating, even Pi Shui Han is dancing to his tune. We are in the Snowy Mountain Alliance with him, but its time limit is approaching, you need to make sure to be on guard against him.”

“That goes without saying!” Hei Lou Lan quickly replied.

Fang Yuan moved rapidly to above a jade pool, causing gusts of wind that raised waves on the surface of the pool.

Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories and although he did not have investigative Immortal Gu, his mortal investigative methods were ahead by a generation in comparison to the surrounding Gu Immortals. He looked around for a while before immediately ascertaining that there was nothing in this pool apart from water.

“So it is oil water.” He frowned slightly as he examined.

Oil water was naturally not regular water, but a resource found in the depths of deep seas. It was a Gu refinement material and was extremely common in Eastern Sea. In Northern Plains and Western Desert, however, it was rather rare.

There were almost no transactions of small amounts of oil water in treasure yellow heaven. It was because the profits were too low and the fee of treasure yellow heaven was too high, making the loss more than the gains.

When oil water transactions appeared in treasure yellow heaven, they were essentially in very large amounts, but even then it was hard to earn significant profits. Also, because the oil water Eastern Sea produced was basically used by their own cultivators, the frequency of such large transactions was extremely low.

Dong Fang tribe was not only storing oil water, but also had an ingenious use for it, this pool’s water was extremely deep, connecting to deep underground and extracting traces of earth qi.

Oil water was basically a resource that was produced in deep water and large trenches.

“Dong Fang tribe set up this pool to use oil water to produce more oil water.

Once in a while, they will put in clear water and with the continuous mixing of earth qi and oil water, the oil water in the pool would gradually restore to its original concentration.” Fang Yuan was very experienced and with just a moment of thinking, he was aware of the operation method of Dong Fang tribe.

Oil water was not easy to extract and required specific Gu worms.

Fang Yuan’s slight frown was because of this.

He knew there was a small, specially designated group of Gu Masters who went to the depths of seas to extract oil water. Gu worm recipes that were handed down from generation to generation were arranged in a set to draw and extract this oil water.

These people made a living from this, and their Gu worm set were meant to extract oil water. They did not have high battle strength, but their social status were high and they were welcomed by all the forces of Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan had been to Eastern Sea in his previous life and had come across an old oil water extraction specialist.

This Gu Master was rather old, and he only had a granddaughter, to whom he wanted Fang Yuan to wed and also adopt her surname. Unfortunately, Fang Yuan refused in the end.

Fang Yuan’s eyebrows soon relaxed.

He pointed his index finger at the surface of the pool and lightly bent it; immediately, the pool water rose like a dragon, obediently moving into Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

There would have been nothing Fang Yuan could do if this was before the auction, but after the auction, he had the strength path Immortal Gu, Pulling Water, its effect was specialized for dealing with water, wasn’t this a trivial matter?

“It is just that oil water is precious, but it is not immortal material. Using Immortal Gu Pulling Water to collect it is simply overkill, but I plan to attend Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention and oil water is suitable to be used at earlier stages. Otherwise, I would not have gathered it.”

Using Immortal Gu meant spending green grape immortal essence. And the value of green grape immortal essence was much higher than oil water.

If it were not for the Refinement Path Convention, Fang Yuan might have simply ignored it and left.

Right now, Fang Yuan was standing in the air with his hands clasped behind his back, the oil water constantly moving towards his immortal aperture.

He slightly leaned to the side and looked in Hei Lou Lan’s direction.

There was no news from Hei Lou Lan’s end, as if she had gone to another pool.

A dark gaze flashed past Fang Yuan’s eyes; he had some guesses about Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan’s secret plans, but was not worried.

With the advantage of rebirth, how could he not know of Thatched Hut and Miniscule Mountain? In truth, he probably knew of them even more clearly than Fairy Li Shan.

In the five regions chaotic war during Fang Yuan’s previous life, all sorts of Immortal Gu Houses were brought into fights, creating many large scale battles.

Immortal killer moves could be easily targeted and subdued, but Immortal Gu Houses combined defense and offense, even if they had different specialties, they fundamentally did not have shortcomings on other aspects.

In particular, the more Gu Immortals an Immortal Gu House stored, the stronger their might. It was almost like an unstoppable fortress in the battlefield.

“Thatched Hut would not be Thatched Hut if it could be easily found.” Fang Yuan stored all of the oil water before flying towards another pool.

After storing several resources like oil water, Fang Yuan finally came across a pool where a beast group, that made his eyes brighten, was dwelling.

Sensing Fang Yuan’s mighty presence encroaching upon their territory, wolf howls resounded, several tens of thousands of shark fin wolves rushed out. The wolves formed a large wave, glaring fiercely at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had used shark fin wolves when he had disguised himself as Wolf King Chang Shan Yin.

They were extremely useful.

They had the size of an elephant and could live in both land and water, and were one of the few wolf species that could fight underwater.

They had powerful defense, their bodies were covered with smooth crocodile-like armor, while there were sharp, deep blue fins on the sides. On their backs, there was a row of shark-like fins, which formed a line extending from the wolf’s head to its tail.

They were not fast and were often used by Fang Yuan as shields in his wolf formations.

Naturally, these mortal beasts were not of much interest to Fang Yuan currently.

Fang Yuan’s burning gaze was on the leader of the wolf group.

This was an enormous shark fin wolf that was over ten meters tall. With a smooth and graceful build, its physique was a perfect combination of strength and beauty.

This shark fin wolf was crouched low, with its dense sharp canines exposed. Its lantern sized eyes were fixed upon Fang Yuan, as if it was going to pounce at him the very next moment.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, having an intention to subdue it.

He did not have beast enslavement Immortal Gu, but he could somewhat control this level of desolate beast with other methods.

There was only one beast enslavement Immortal Gu, which was in Lang Ya blessed land. This Gu showed instantaneous effect when enslaving a desolate beast. The desolate beast could be controlled in accordance with one’s thoughts; this allowed a supreme showcase of enslavement path.

Fang Yuan did not have beast enslavement Immortal Gu, and naturally other enslavement path Gu Immortals also did not have it. However, the use of Gu depended on the Gu Immortal’s creativity, there were all sorts of methods and killer moves that could substitute for beast enslavement Immortal Gu.

For instance, flying bear phantom Gu was a unique method of phantom path in enslaving a desolate beast. Water path, fire path, light path and other paths also had their own respective methods. Otherwise, how could Dong Fang Chang Fan control so many phantom beasts in the battle at Tai Qiu?

Every path was independent of each other, but yet interlinked with each other. Taking references, interacting and competing with other paths created the current Gu Master structure that had all sorts of styles.

Even without the enslavement methods, a desolate beast could be raised from youth to nurture emotional connection and intimacy, and could be made to protect oneself or attack enemies. Immortal Crane Sect’s He Feng Yang and the nine palace crane, Little Nine, were a classic example of man and beast developing a close relationship.

Naturally, these methods absolutely could not compare to the effect of beast enslavement Immortal Gu.

Enslavement path was able to be classified as a path, so its enslavement methods were definitely superior to that of other paths.

Fang Yuan and the wolf were locked in a stand-off for a while, the desolate beast shark fin wolf was still restraining itself, not daring to recklessly move because it could sense a threat from the aura Fang Yuan gave off.

Since that was the case, Fang Yuan took the initiative to attack. Two strength path giant hands pressed down upon the shark fin wolf from the left and right.

The desolate beast shark fin wolf howled before taking a slight step back, a layer of glass-like watery armor immediately appeared on its body.

The next moment, it fiercely jumped above Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan could detect a foul odor assailing his nostrils from the wolf’s opened mouth.

Following the odor were countless water bullets that were rapidly being shot out of the shark fin wolf’s mouth.

Fang Yuan did not dodge or evade, as he sent out another two strength path giant hands at the shark fin wolf.

The storm of water bullets smashed at the strength path giant hands, but only served to slightly slow them. These water bullets could not even be considered mortal killer moves, naturally they would not be able to compare to an immortal killer move.

At the same time, the previous two strength path giant hands rose up and grabbed the two rear legs of the shark fin wolf before dragging it down.

The pitiful shark fin wolf had just jumped to the air but was dragged down before it could reach Fang Yuan.

Boom. The desolate beast shark fin wolf crashed hard at the ground, and some unlucky ordinary shark fin wolves that could not dodge in time were turned to meat paste by their leader.

The desolate beast shark fin wolf roared in anger and struggled to get up, to pounce at Fang Yuan again, but the next moment, it saw a strength path giant hand getting closer.

The strength path giant hand was powerful, and before it even reached the shark fin wolf, the latter felt difficulty breathing as its heart trembled.

The shark fin wolf wanted to dodge, but its rear legs were firmly grasped by two strength path giant hands. It twisted and turned its body but still could not evade, the strength path giant hand fiercely slammed at its face.

The shark fin wolf howled miserably, its head was slammed to the ground so forcefully that it formed a large crater.

Only after a few long moments, it was able to barely raise its head from the crater.

However, the attack had caused its sight to become blurry, tears and snot flowing down its face.

It shook its head, still not giving up on resisting, but the second strength path giant hand slammed it at this moment.

The shark fin wolf howled miserably again as another large crater formed on the ground. It felt extreme grief and indignation, the enemy was powerful and also shameless, not giving it any time to react.

Fang Yuan sent out another strength path giant hand, a total of five flew around, pressing and beating the desolate beast shark fin wolf to the ground, a cloud of dust rose and the ground cracked.

The wolf group beside the desolate beast shark fin wolf darted around everywhere, howling miserably and shooting out water bullets, but the quantity was so large that the bullets collided against each other partway and destroyed each other. Fang Yuan’s build was not big and the number of water bullets that landed on him were very few, they were like light drizzle that could be neglected.

“What sound is this?” Not far away, Half Moon Brutemaster gazed over at the commotion.

His pupils shrunk when he saw how Fang Yuan was mauling the desolate beast shark fin wolf.

He already knew Fang Yuan had rank seven battle strength, but when he personally saw Fang Yuan leisurely beating up a desolate beast, his heart could not help but tremble intensely.

There was simply no suspense, as the desolate beast shark fin wolf did not even have the energy to retaliate.

If Fang Yuan only had rank six battle strength, maybe it could struggle for some time. But with battle strength of a realm higher, the desolate beast shark fin wolf could only take the beating passively.

Especially given that the desolate beasts raised in this blessed land carried no Immortal Gu.

Any Immortal Gu would be taken away by Gu Immortals. Immortal Gu were so precious, how could they let a desolate beast have it?

However, even though the shark fin wolf was beaten until it could not even raise its head, its attitude was still stubborn.

Fang Yuan snorted, deciding to increase the force.

With a shift of his mind, four strength path giant hands separately grabbed the shark fin wolf’s front legs and hind legs, then lifted it into the air.

The desolate beast shark fin wolf had been beaten into a horrid sight, its whole body was spread out in an ungainly way, while its four limbs were constantly emitting sounds of fractures from the ruthless grasps of the four strength path giant hands.

The remaining strength path giant hand started to rain slaps on the shark fin wolf’s cheeks.

Crack crack crack!

The wolf’s large head swung to the left and right from the repeated slaps of the hand.

The wolf group below howled more miserably and loudly. Most of the wolf group had already collapsed while some at the periphery were already starting to flee.

“This is truly hanging it up and beating to a pulp!” Cold sweat was already seeping out of Half Moon Brutemaster’s shiny forehead at this sight.

Fang Yuan’s viciousness and strength terrified him.

The desolate beast shark fin wolf was almost pounded into a slurry, even the sounds of its wails changed. However, it still opened its eyes with difficulty, and its gaze still carried extreme stubbornness and bone-deep hatred.

Wolves were beasts that deeply bore grudges.

“Still not submitting?” Fang Yuan also felt somewhat of a headache, submitting to the strong was a wild beast’s survival instinct. According to conventional reasoning, the desolate beast shark fin wolf should have already submitted in front of such a massive difference in strength.

Fang Yuan carefully observed and made a discovery.

“So this shark fin wolf has gone into heat and this time period is when its alpha male characteristics are at its strongest, no wonder it is stubborn.”

He suddenly had an eccentric idea.

Under Fang Yuan’s control, the strength path giant hand changed again.

The middle finger of the giant hand bent and touched the thumb.

From afar, Half Moon Brutemaster looked on as this strength path giant hand slowly moved down to between the shark fin wolf’s two rear legs.

Suddenly, the thumb slightly relaxed and the middle finger flicked.

It very accurately struck this male wolf’s penis!

“Awoooo—!” The desolate beast shark fin wolf shook fiercely, like it had been electrocuted. Its eyes seemed to be opened until almost falling out, as it howled to the sky, its voice filled with boundless pain.

Flick flick flick!

“Wooo, woooo, awoooo——!” The shark fin wolf howled in an increasingly loud voice.

Half Moon Brutemaster watched this with his mouth and eyes wide open.

“Thi..thi..this...” He stammered, unable to say a word.

He understood Fang Yuan was trying to force the desolate beast shark fin wolf to submit, but this method was simply unheard of!

In that instant, Fang Yuan’s image underwent a huge change in Half Moon Brutemaster’s mind.

Fang Yuan’s entire body was clothed in a black robe, with his appearance hidden. But outsiders could naturally try to make guesses on his appearance.

Half Moon Brutemaster had imagined Fang Yuan to have a fierce and cruel appearance, with a burly and thickly built body, his protruding eyes shooting out a fierce gaze that seemed to want to find people to devour.

Now, however, this figure underwent a transformation.

The image of a robust warrior was no more, the burly build had turned into one with broad shoulders and a thin waist, the gaze was sinister, the teeth were dense and sharp, and there was a trace of perversion.

The desolate beast shark fin wolf’s mental defenses were finally broken, and it fully submitted.

The strength path giant hands loosened their grasp, and it collapsed to the ground, motionless. Its enormous, aesthetically beautiful body was now bent like a large shrimp, its two front claws were grabbing between its two rear legs as it whimpered weakly, like a weak little flower that could be in dire straits from slight wind and rain.

Fang Yuan mumbled while chuckling: “This is a good method.”

He then turned to look at the distant Half Moon Brutemaster.

He had naturally already discovered the latter’s stealthy glances.

Half Moon Brutemaster could not see Fang Yuan’s true appearance, but he felt Fang Yuan’s gaze was firm, like a giant snake that was coiling around his body. The dark, cold and slippery snake scales tightly held on to his warm body.

Half Moon Brutemaster shivered as he felt an ominous chill emerging from the depths of his heart. In particular, the region between his legs seemed to feel a bit more cold.

“This person is exceedingly savage and absolutely not someone I can deal with. I have to avoid him when I see him in the future! Sigh, the world is difficult, life is not easy.” Half Moon Brutemaster swallowed his saliva and rapidly flew away, going as far as to resemble someone fleeing.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 798: Extorting Regretful Spiders

After Fang Yuan subdued the desolate beast shark fin wolf, he placed it in his immortal aperture.

This shark fin wolf’s mental defenses had already collapsed and it had fallen unconscious soon afterwards, unable to keep its shark fin wolf subordinates under control anymore.

Fang Yuan could do nothing other than to let these ordinary shark fin wolves flee in all directions.

He did not feel it was much of a pity, capturing a desolate beast shark fin wolf alive was already a plentiful harvest.

He continued to search pools but he only found common resources and although the quantities were huge, there was nothing noteworthy.

Dong Fang tribe’s base camp was sure to have many good things. But there were innumerable pools while Fang Yuan’s scouting range was not very far, add in the other competing demonic path Gu Immortals, the amount of resources he could plunder would depend on luck.

Not long later, good luck arrived once again for him.

He was looking at a deep pool.

What this very deep pool accumulated was not water, but fire.

The fire was raging wildly inside. This was a special fire pool.

Fang Yuan used several investigative methods in succession and discovered a group of python beasts living in this pool.

Fang Yuan found out their identities and discovered they were eerie fire dragon pythons.

A mature eerie fire dragon python was enormous, reaching close to a hundred meters long and with a body as thick as a tower.

The eerie fire dragon python had scarlet scales, a sharp horn on its head and a pair of blood-red eyes. Its tongue was a strange purple, and when it flicked its tongue, one could see an eerie blue fire coiling around its tongue.

This was a snake nest.

Although there was no desolate beast level eerie fire dragon python inside, the quantity of the normal eerie fire dragon pythons was extremely high. The pythons were piled up on top of each other, squirming and moving around, creating a horrifying spectacle.

Fang Yuan, however, felt excitement, all parts of the eerie fire dragon python had value. For instance, its blood was the best food for some blood path Gu worms, its skin, tendons and other parts were top-class materials for refining a lot of Gu worms. In particular, the eerie fire dragon python’s gallbladder was extremely precious, and there was a market for it in treasure yellow heaven.

“Eerie fire dragon pythons normally live in the form of small families. I wonder what method Dong Fang tribe used to make so many eerie fire dragon pythons live together. This method might not be too complicated, but is quite effective and gives an extreme increase to the reproductive rate of eerie fire dragon pythons.”

Fang Yuan was able to discern some details of the method.

Speaking of which, he had obtained a few eerie fire dragon python eggs back at Imperial Court blessed land. Now, the eggs had already successfully hatched, the young eerie fire dragon pythons were living in Hu Immortal blessed land, but Fang Yuan had been neglecting them as their quantity was extremely few.

If he could obtain this large group of eerie fire dragon pythons and raise them in Hu Immortal blessed land, he would have a continuous supply of eerie fire dragon python gallbladders in the future, which could be sold in treasure yellow heaven and be a small source of income.

Though Fang Yuan was involved in the large business of guts Gu, but a quick calculation told him the profits from selling eerie fire dragon python gallbladders was also somewhat lucrative.

Taking action was better than thinking, Fang Yuan immediately grabbed with his strength path giant hands.

He could not control his strength properly, squeezing many eerie fire dragon pythons to death. After all, changes in this move’s form specialized in forceful grabbing, and were rather lacking in the aspect of fine control.

He grabbed dozens, but there were still many eerie fire dragon python in the pool. He gradually started to become impatient.

He lacked effective methods to gather the pythons, thus could only act rashly. However, he had limited time now. Fang Yuan grabbed a large portion in the end, reaching up to a number of ten thousand before he resolutely stopped and left this fire pool.

He continued to plunder resources as he traveled, and occasionally saw many mortal Gu Masters.

Some of these Gu Masters were fleeing in panic along the areas between the pools, while some concealed themselves, hiding under the ground, under boulders and so on.

As Fang Yuan grandly soared away, these Gu Masters regained their senses from the horror.

Some hiding Gu Masters were still thinking they were able to hide, but were actually already discovered by Fang Yuan, it was just that he had no intention to attack them.

When Pi Shui Han and the others attacked the blessed land, they had created a huge commotion which had already startled the Dong Fang tribe members in Jade Pool blessed land.

In the five regions, the vast majority of mortals would not have a chance to come across Gu Immortals in their entire lives.

In comparison to this enormous population, the number of Gu Immortals was extremely few, only a fraction of a fraction.

At the same time, Gu Immortals also were concerned with their own survival pressures, busy handling such matters day in and day out, generally without the time to be make themselves carefree and at leisure.

In regards to most people, Gu Immortals were simply vague figures of legend. But the mortals in Jade Pool blessed land were Dong Fang tribe’s core, they knew many inside details.

Thus, they were even more aware of the difference between immortal and mortals, the gap that was like a chasm between heaven and earth.

They did not think of putting up any meaningless resistance and ran for their lives, while urgently contacting the Gu Immortals of Dong Fang tribe.

This was undoubtedly a wise move.

Fang Yuan and these demonic path Gu Immortals were people who heavily prioritized benefits, and were disinclined to attack these mortals. Thus, these mortals were actually more fortunate than the desolate beasts, they were able to survive during this disaster.

Fang Yuan flew past pools after pools.

As time passed, he started to feel increasing urgency, and started abandoning some common resources.

These resources were not precious and were readily available.

At the same time, Fang Yuan maintained his vigilance, in accordance with Dong Fang Chang Fan’s farsighted nature, it was impossible for him to not make some arrangements in Jade Pool blessed land.

As he gradually flew into the distance, Fang Yuan suddenly saw deep pools without any water.

These pools were completely dried up. There were a lot of them, about fifty to sixty, closely connected, and covering a range in tens of li.

Fang Yuan was inwardly moved as he took a sharp turn, rapidly approaching these pools.

“I discovered these pools first, the regretful spiders inside are mine!”

“Aren’t you a bit too greedy? You have already gathered so many regretful spiders, and the regretful spiders here have bred over such a huge range, and you want to take it all for yourself?!”

As Fang Yuan flew closer, he discovered two demonic path Gu Immortals, at the edge of a pool, arguing about who the pools should belong to. The atmosphere was tense and serious.

When they saw Fang Yuan fly over, the two Gu Immortals paled and quickly stopped their argument, instead standing side by side.

“Senior, please excuse us but the regretful spiders here were discovered by us brothers. According to the rules, hehe...” One Gu Immortal started speaking with a nervous and vigilant expression.

“I’ve heard some news saying there was a pool to the northwest where many large groups of air bubble fish are living inside. Several Gu Immortals were fighting to get it.” The other Gu Immortal attempted to redirect this disaster.

Fang Yuan laughed sinisterly: “Do you mean that I should leave?”

The moment he finished speaking, two strength path giant hands flew out and hovered on either side of him.

A stance that showed he was eager to make some trouble.

The two demonic path Gu Immortals paled upon seeing this, while inwardly complaining incessantly at their misfortune.

They had personally seen Fang Yuan’s might not long ago, even Pi Shui Han was not able to gain the upper hand.

Moreover, these two were only at the bottom tier of rank six, the consequences would be extremely bad if a conflict occurred with a powerful expert like Fang Yuan.

But the resources around them were truly at a large scale.

As the saying goes, ‘humans die for wealth and birds die for food!’

One demonic path Gu Immortal finally summoned up courage: “Senior, we discovered these resources first, this is an indisputable fact. When you set the rules with Lord Pi Shui Han, we were also present.”

“Hmph, our demonic path has always been about running and rampaging freely, what rules?! Talking about rules for everything, why don’t you just join the righteous path? What’s more, what status do you have? Only Pi Shui Han has the qualifications to speak about some rules with me.” Fang Yuan had a fierce demeanor, the two strength path giant hands continued to slowly advance as he openly flaunted his prowess.

The two demonic path Gu Immortals no longer dared to speak, but were still reluctant to leave.

The other demonic path Gu Immortal seemed to have firmed his resolve, as he suddenly spoke: “Senior, these regretful spiders have great use to me and I had been searching for them painstakingly. How about I use information of equal value in exchange for them?”

“Hmm? What information?” Fang Yuan stopped moving the strength path giant hands.

“This information concerns Miniscule Mountain.” The demonic path Gu Immortal spoke directly.

“Miniscule Mountain, hahaha!” Fang Yuan raised his head and laughed heartily before speaking in a threatening tone, “Good, I will exchange it with you, but I really hope your information is true, otherwise....”

“True, it is definitely true. I came from that direction but with my cultivation, I am unable to break through, thus I retreated. But to senior, it would be like it was simply meant for you.” As he said this, the demonic path Gu Immortal secretly transmitted information containing the precise details to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s eyes squinted to a crack as he heard the information, and said leisurely: “Good, I will keep this information in mind for now, but whether it is true still needs to be checked. Hand over the regretful spiders you’ve just gathered.”

“Senior, you!” The demonic path Gu Immortal’s eyes widened, his face flushed red with anger.

Fang Yuan smiled malevolently, speaking as if this was how things should be: “How do I know whether your information is true or false, what if it is false? These regretful spiders are a guarantee. Don’t worry, I only want this much, you can take the rest.”

“Senior, you are asking for twenty percent of the total regretful spiders!” The demonic path Gu Immortal gritted his teeth in anger, but did not dare to fight.

The other demonic path Gu Immortal was standing at the side, laughing inwardly.

He would definitely work together with the extorted demonic path Gu Immortal and resist Fang Yuan if Fang Yuan asked for the regretful spiders in the pool. But what Fang Yuan wanted was the portion that had already been gathered, which was a different matter.

The group of regretful spiders stored in the immortal aperture were like crops that had been harvested, it was difficult to return them and they belonged to the Gu Immortal themselves.

The spectating demonic path Gu Immortal’s benefits were not encroached by Fang Yuan, and was thus feeling pleasure at the other Gu Immortal’s misfortune.

The extorted demonic path Gu Immortal felt his heart sinking and turning cold when the Gu Immortal beside him showed no signs of moving.

How painful was it to hand over the crops that had already been harvested.

“Alright, hand them over quickly. I still need to hurry along, time is pressing.” Fang Yuan impatiently urged.

“Senior, if you renege on your promise, then wouldn’t I be....” The extorted demonic path Gu Immortal squeezed out words from clenched teeth.

“What?! Do you actually think I am such a shameless person? I am your senior, why would I cheat you juniors?!” Fang Yuan replied with an extremely displeased tone, and at the same time, sent out another two strength path giant hands.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 799: Knowing When to Retreat and Advance, A True Champion

A total of four strength path giant hands hovered in the air.

The two demonic path Gu Immortals involuntarily stepped back, the mental pressure Fang Yuan gave them was too huge.

They were the weaker party, what else could they do?

The extorted demonic path Gu Immortal’s expression kept fluctuating before finally turning into one of subservience, as he handed over the regretful spiders he gathered to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not linger around after he received them, and quickly left.

The two demonic path Gu Immortals immediately let out breaths of relief.

The extorted Gu Immortal showed an indignant look as he cursed while gazing at the gradually receding figure of Fang Yuan: “Old demon, I hope you die there!”

“Stop shouting, how can you be sure he doesn’t have methods to hear us? Be careful of him coming back to find trouble with us.” The other demonic path Gu Immortal quickly attempted to stop the extorted Gu Immortal.

The two glanced at each other, both were stupefied for a moment before they suddenly reacted, creating some distance between each other.

The next moment, an intense competition started, the two used all their strength and silently plundered the regretful spiders in the pool.

“Miniscule Mountain, captivating sea...?” Fang Yuan rapidly approached the location in the information.

He had originally not planned to gather regretful spiders, because he lacked methods to gather them.

Regretful spiders were not of great value to him and he had already planned to let them go. Who would have thought that with some extortion, he could not only save time in obtaining a large batch of regretful spiders immediately, but also obtain important information.

Fang Yuan pondered and felt this information was rather reliable.

Miniman was a type of variant human.

Miniscule Mountain was the paradise of minimen, it was their foundation. This was recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

Minimen usually were the size of a finger, and had thin and transparent wings behind them. They survived on nectar from flowers or sap from vegetation.

Every variant human had a special ability that was stronger than humans. For instance, hairy men were proficient in Gu refinement, rockmen lived underground, skilled in mining, and all sorts of ores grew on their body. snowmen were cold-resistant, inkmen had rich knowledge....

Minimen were proficient in growing plants and trees, in the areas they lived in, vegetation was extremely lush, and flowers bloomed throughout the year.

“More importantly, Miniscule Mountain might be small but it is a genuine mountain and needs large amounts of earth qi to stabilize its mountainous form. It is an extremely huge burden to put such a legendary mountain within one’s immortal aperture. Gu Immortals cannot casually take them, moreover this Miniscule Mountain is not the private possession of any Gu Immortal of Dong Fang tribe.”

A Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture, hidden in their body, had limited amounts of heaven and earth qi. If Miniscule Mountain was placed for a long time in such an immortal aperture, a lot of earth qi would be absorbed to maintain this legendary mountain, causing an imbalance in heaven and earth qi within the immortal aperture.

Thus, Miniscule Mountain was placed in Jade Pool blessed land most of the time.

The reason?

It was because Jade Pool blessed land was placed on the ground outside in Northern Plains. It would constantly absorb the endless heaven and earth qi of the outside world, so there was no need to fear the burden of Miniscule Mountain.

Fang Yuan’s Dang Hun mountain was also in a similar situation.

Dang Hun mountain needed to absorb earth qi, otherwise it would collapse. Fortunately, Hu Immortal blessed land was placed on Tian Ti mountain from where it constantly absorbed heaven and earth qi, thus there was no need to fear the consumption of Dang Hun mountain.

If it was placed in Fairy Li Shan or Hei Lou Lan’s immortal apertures, if they moved around for a long time, they would not be able to bear the consumption even if they were rank eight Gu Immortals, and would need to place their immortal apertures in the outside world to absorb heaven and earth qi, and stabilize their immortal aperture world.

Next to a seemingly ordinary deep pool.

“Fang Yuan?”

“Why is he here?”

Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan, who were concealed, detected Fang Yuan’s presence.

Both of them had secretly agreed to look for Thatched Hut. Thatched Hut was no longer at its original position, but the two still had a great harvest — at that location, they found a group of underworld eels!

Afterwards, they looked around everywhere and finally found traces of Miniscule Mountain.

However, when they arrived at this place, they were obstructed and thereby in a dilemma. The two were discussing what to do when Fang Yuan appeared in their detection range.

Fairy Li Shan still had some hope as she said to Hei Lou Lan: “Fang Yuan does not have strong investigative methods, our concealment methods are immortal killer moves, as long as we don’t show ourselves, he certainly won’t be able to detect us. Maybe he is only passing by.”

Hei Lou Lan had suffered great losses from Fang Yuan, frowning as she had a bad premonition: “Sigh, we absolutely cannot underestimate this guy.”

Sure enough, the next moment, Fang Yuan slowly landed from the air and quickly neared them, his target was the pool they were in.

Fairy Li Shan’s expression sank as her wishful thinking did not materialize.

Fang Yuan had arrived at the place provided in the information.

This deep pool in front of him looked extremely ordinary and unremarkable.

But Fang Yuan still had some expectations.

According to that demonic path Gu Immortal’s words, this was an illusory land. Inside were illusory peach trees which could add up to be of similar strength to desolate beasts, and could create illusions to protect themselves.

A Gu Immortal could only infer some clues when they walked inside.

Fang Yuan raised his defenses, and was just about to step in when two figures suddenly appeared not far away.

“Fang Yuan, wait a moment.” Fairy Li Shan transmitted her voice.

Hei Lou Lan stood silently at the side.

“Oh, it’s you two!” Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed, as he spoke with a slight smile.

His tone carried a touch of ridicule; as an ally, they had not informed him of such a huge clue, clearly they had thought of hogging the benefits for themselves.

In the end, he came across them unintentionally.

Hei Lou Lan was a formidable person and spoke with no awkwardness or embarrassment: “Fang Yuan, you came at the right time, we were just worrying over how to break into this place.”

Fairy Li Shan was a veteran Gu Immortal and was also unabashed, continuing: “Right. This place is called captivating sea and is a restricted region of Jade Pool blessed land. It mainly consists of a forest of illusory peach trees, there are many peach trees, and the illusion is extremely powerful. Under the trees are a sea of grasses and flowers. The large patches of groundmat grass are like endless green carpets. The sea of colorful flowers gives off a deep fragrance, and tens of thousands of poisonous purple heart flowers are close to blooming.”

“Hmm?” Fang Yuan’s gaze slightly focused.

That demonic path Gu Immortal had malicious intentions, he had only said that there were illusory peach trees but did not mention their numbers. As for groundmat grass, and purple poisonous heart flowers, he did not even bring them up.

Groundmat grass was ordinary, but with such numbers, there was bound to be groundmat grass Gu. This wood path Gu only had one effect which was to instantly send living beings into sleep.

Poisonous purple heart flowers often created a poison heart Gu. This Gu was formless and colorless, and gave a wisp of fragrance that could make one feel drunk, but corroded their heart.

However, these were only minor inconveniences as far as Fang Yuan was concerned.

Fang Yuan did not cultivate poison path and also did not have strength path methods that could defend against poison, but he had an immortal zombie body, which was extremely resistant to poison. He also had a poison path Immortal Gu, Woman’s Heart.

Fairy Li Shan saw Fang Yuan was listening carefully but completely indifferent, and continued: “The things I have mentioned might be in high numbers, but they are only small problems to us Gu Immortals. In fact, a group of peach wolves dwell in the illusory peach tree forest, with numbers close to thirty. Moreover, this captivating sea is actually a Gu formation and in the depths of it lies Miniscule Mountain. Miniscule Mountain has Gu Immortals guarding it, their auras are uncertain and the numbers are also not clear.”

Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

Peach wolves were a desolate beast, comparable to rank six Gu Immortals. A group of peach wolves was like a group of Gu Immortals in strength.

Miniscule Mountain was the home of minimen, the Gu Immortals in it were probably miniman Gu Immortals, and regardless of how many there were, even one would be troublesome to deal with.

Desolate beasts had low wisdom, but variant human Gu Immortals had wisdom that could reach a similar level to human Gu Immortals.

Having wisdom and lacking it were two completely different levels of threats.

Fang Yuan suddenly realized why these two were hiding at the periphery.

He sized the two up again, and with his experience, he immediately discovered signs of bitter fights on Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan’s bodies, although they had tried to treat them as much as possible.

“Fairy Li Shan is a wood path Gu Immortal, there is no doubt that Miniscule

Mountain and minimen are extremely attractive to her. In an environment like captivating sea, Fairy Li Shan’s battle strength should surpass her normal state. They broke through to the depths of the sea of flowers, but were still forced back. Captivating sea’s defense greatly surpasses what were my most hopeful estimations.”

Fang Yuan did not speak but his shrewd mind was thinking rapidly and inferring many facts from their behaviors.

“Fang Yuan, if you move alone, your gains will be extremely low. We took advantage of the other party’s carelessness and quietly sneaked in through the gaps in the peach wolf group. Now that Miniscule Mountain has been alerted, the defenses are sure to be tight. As long as we cooperate sincerely, we might be able to swallow this juicy meat.” Hei Lou Lan persuaded.

Fairy Li Shan also added: “Fang Yuan, I know you have the strength path Immortal Gu, Pulling Mountain. We can cooperate, but I must have Miniscule Mountain, you don’t need to worry, though, I will be sure to give you a satisfying reward.”

Fang Yuan did not immediately reply, instead lowering his head to think it over.

Several breaths of time later, he slowly shook his head and broke the silence, smiling bitterly: “Under this juicy meat is a very hard bone. Miniscule Mountain is excellent, but time is limited, I don’t want to spend it all here. I advise you two to dispel unrealistic thoughts, there are still many resources outside which are much easier to take, why make an unnecessary risk?”

“What? Fang Yuan, you are actually thinking of backing out?” Fairy Li Shan could not believe her ears.

Hei Lou Lan frowned, persuading: “Fang Yuan, we have discovered Miniscule Mountain, it could be said to be a rare chance. If you miss this opportunity, you might regret it later on.”

Fang Yuan’s stance was firm: “The defense is tight, the key thing is that there are Gu Immortals guarding it, as well as a group of peach wolves. Even if all the demonic path Gu Immortals in this blessed land gather together, it would take time to break through this place. Would Dong Fang Chang Fan give us this time? Even if Dong Fang Chang Fan is hindered, what about the other demonic path Gu Immortals?”

Fairy Li Shan took a step forward: “Fang Yuan, I admit that what you say is reasonable, but this is Miniscule Mountain we are talking of, its value might even be higher than the rest of Jade Pool blessed land!”

“Hahaha, fairy, you don’t need to persuade me. I will take my leave!” Fang Yuan laughed loudly before flying away directly.

The two fairies still did not dare to believe what they were seeing and were even hesitating: “Fang Yuan should not be messing around and deceiving us in order to wait for an opportune moment to meddle in and get benefits cheaply, right?”

“That’s not possible. We have formed the Snowy Mountain Alliance, he has to either remain silent or speak the truth.”

For a moment, as they gazed at Fang Yuan’s figure receding into the horizon, the two women had strange expressions.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 800: Three Fish Groups, Great Harvest

Plop!

The desolate beast dragonfish crashed into the water, creating a huge wave that was several meters tall.

Fang Yuan was cloaked in a black robe, he had his face hidden as he stood in the air, there were six strength path giant hands circling around his body.

The desolate beast dragonfish screamed, entering the water, and did not want to fight Fang Yuan anymore, it swam into the deeper parts of the water.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Do you think that by hiding underwater, I can do nothing to you? Immortal Gu Pulling Water!”

Fang Yuan’s body shuddered, he stretched out his left and right hands as he slowly grabbed at the deep pool, that was as wide as a lake, from afar.

A formless power held up the lake water, it was as if a thick cloth under the water was being pulled up.

Thick columns of flowing water had countless ordinary dragonfish in them, as they poured into Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

After Fang Yuan said goodbye to Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan, he did not spend much time before he found this deep pool.

This deep pool was the one with the most water that he had seen so far, it was like a large lake. Dong Fang tribe had specially created it and raised nine hundred thousand dragonfish inside it, among them was a desolate beast dragonfish.

Fang Yuan was in an eager mood, he went ahead and took them for himself. The desolate beast dragonfish went ahead and fought him, in the end, Fang Yuan used several strength path giant hands and easily defeated it.

Even though the dragonfish had ‘dragon’ in its name, it was very mediocre in fighting. Moreover, this dragonfish may have been a desolate beast, but it had no Immortal Gu, it was almost at the bottom tier of desolate beasts.

But the meat of the dragonfish was a food ingredient with a wide range of applications. Not only could wild beasts and variant humans eat them, they could also be used as supplementary ingredients and fed to Gu worms.

In treasure yellow heaven, the business of dragonfish meat had long since been flourishing, each transaction was a huge sum of profits.

“So many dragonfish, this pool of dragonfish was probably accumulated over a hundred years by Dong Fang tribe. But now, this is all mine, hahaha.” Fang Yuan felt joyful, he continued to activate pulling water Immortal Gu without pausing.

Thankfully, he had pulling water Immortal Gu, otherwise, he would have no way to collect such a valuable and huge amount of resources.

Boom boom boom...

Far away, the fighting of Gu Immortals could be heard.

Fang Yuan collected the dragonfish as he looked around, his gaze was deep as he thought: “It seems that over at Hei Lou Lan’s side, they are starting to attack captivating sea already.”

He did not regret the decision to give up on Miniscule Mountain.

In this world, things were easier said than done. Theories were easy to understand, but when it came to execution, how many people could succeed?

Thus, in front of huge profits, it was hard to decide what to give up and what to pursue.

Especially when Miniscule Mountain had huge value to Fairy Li Shan personally!

Although Fairy Li Shan’s vital Gu was mountain pledge Gu and she was an information path Gu Immortal, when she fought, most of her methods were wood path techniques. Since she also cultivated wood path, her immortal aperture probably mostly involved growing flowers and plants as her revenue.

> had recorded the details, it made Miniscule Mountain even more attractive.

But how could it be so easy to take away Miniscule Mountain? It was simply too difficult, there was little hope.

Since that demonic path Gu Immortal gave this information to Fang Yuan so easily, he was likely to also tell others. Or perhaps, there were already Gu Immortals who knew long ago.

Attacking the restricted area, captivating sea, would create a huge commotion, how could they hide it from people like Pi Shui Han?

Even though more people meant a greater force to strike with, the demonic path Gu Immortals handled matters individually, Fang Yuan was well aware of their natures. Earlier, during the battle at Tai Qiu, if not for the demonic path Gu Immortals fighting among themselves, how could Dong Fang Chang Fan have succeeded in his possession so easily?

Thus, there was essentially very little hope in obtaining Miniscule Mountain. Did Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan not know that the chances were slim?

It was because this profit was too huge, the Gu Immortals were extremely moved, even if there was just a trace of hope, they would desperately latch onto it!

A loud dragon roar interrupted Fang Yuan’s thoughts.

The huge dragonfish jumped out of the water, its eyes were blood-red as it charged towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had expected this, he slammed down with four strength path giant hands.

The method in which he was extracting the deep pool water was extremely efficient, he just needed a small amount of time to drain the pool dry. Thus, the dragonfish was already a cornered animal, if it did not attack now, it would be too late.

But facing Fang Yuan, who had rank seven battle strength, the dragonfish’s final struggle quickly met with a huge setback, it ended up heavily injured.

More than ten breaths of time later, the heavily injured desolate beast dragonfish was sent into Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture using the strength path giant hands.

After spending some more effort, this huge and deep pool was nearly dried out, all of the dragonfish inside were collected into his aperture.

In order to take these dragonfish, he spent a total of four green grape immortal essences beads, but Fang Yuan had great joy in his eyes.

Ever since he entered Jade Pool blessed land, he obtained the oil water, desolate beast shark fin wolf, eerie fire dragon python, some ordinary resources, and a batch of regretful spiders.

In terms of value, this newly obtained dragonfish group was at the top, it was more valuable than the desolate beast shark fin wolf, which was second place by a small margin.

This batch of dragonfish was too large, there was almost a million of them.

With such a deep foundation, as long as he spent some effort in nurturing them, it would be a source of endless revenue.

Over on Hei Lou Lan’s end, intense battles were still ongoing, Fang Yuan did not turn around, he flew towards an area even further away.

Not long after, he stopped in his tracks and was overjoyed to see the dense forest below him.

The forest spanned an enormous range, at the center of the forest, there was a pool of water that covered an area of the size of a house.

The entire forest was planted for the sake of this pool.

Or more accurately speaking, it was because this pool was raising a group of peculiar fish — literature carps.

“Literature carps and true martial carps are known as the literature and martial twin carps, to think that in Dong Fang tribe, they had over ten literature carps!” Fang Yuan quickly went down with great excitement.

Literature carps were very hard to catch, they were low in numbers, even in Eastern Sea, they were very uncommon.

Literature carps usually remained still in water, moving along with the flow of water. Once they moved their tails, and swam slowly, their entire bodies would turn into text qi, even Gu Immortals, without specific methods, could not capture them, they could only watch in vain.

When Fang Yuan came here, the literature carps were alarmed, they turned into text qi as they moved around, pervading the water.

Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a confident smile, his pulling water Immortal Gu could control the flow of water. As long as the literature carps did not leave the pool, to him, they were as good as caught.

But when he was about to make his move, a demonic path Gu Immortal appeared, rising into the air.

“Senior, please wait, this resource point has already been occupied by me.” This demonic path Gu Immortal was thin, he smiled as he said that, he was only rank six, but he had no fear when facing Fang Yuan.

“Who are you?” Fang Yuan’s expression did not change.

“This junior is Zhou Ping.” The demonic path Gu Immortal cupped his fists.

Fang Yuan laughed sinisterly, threatening: “Junior Zhou Ping, you have guts, daring to get in my way. With your cultivation level, you are not fit to talk about rules with me.”

The demonic path Gu Immortal, Zhou Ping, instead smiled: “No, no, I am naturally unable to defeat senior. But I have some insights in flying, I have two immortal killer moves. Even Unfettered Scholar, Hei Cheng, and Fairy Le Yao cannot catch me. If senior wants the literature carps, you can trade with me. Otherwise, even though I cannot defeat senior, I can destroy this pool in an instant.”

Fang Yuan was silent, his eyes shined with a ruthless light as he observed Zhou Ping.

Zhou Ping was unmoved, he was calm and composed due to his trump card.

This was the advantage of a Gu Immortal skilled in movement, they are often in a situation where they cannot lose, they can talk to opponents with higher cultivation level or battle strength with ease.

Even though Fang Yuan had the killer move myriad self, he was lacking in the aspect of movement. Even with iron crown eagle strength Immortal Gu, together with true solid bat wings, that was not an immortal killer move, it was inferior to Zhou Ping’s methods.

“Very good, Zhou Ping, I will remember you. I wish you well in constantly guarding this place, and to not fall into my hands from now on.” Fang Yuan left behind a threat as he left.

Zhou Ping heard this and his smile disappeared, he changed his tone: “Senior, is this necessary? This junior only wants a transaction. My request is not much either...”

But Fang Yuan did not listen to Zhou Ping, his body was like lightning as he quickly traveled elsewhere.

Zhou Ping frowned, he felt a little distraught, pointlessly offending a strong and mysterious Gu Immortal, he felt very uneasy.

Most importantly, Fang Yuan’s words were attacking Zhou Ping’s weakness —

He could not stay here forever to look after the literature carps.

“Damn it, I do not have a method to collect this group of literature carps!” Zhou Ping looked at the deep pool as he stamped his foot, extremely downcast.

Fang Yuan left Zhou Ping behind and flew rapidly towards his next destination.

After flying a huge distance, he landed, looking at the deep pool below him, he had a joyous expression.

This deep pool was neither large nor small, there was a fish group inside.

This type of fish was similar to goldfish, it had a round belly, a small pointed head, and a tail. However, it was not brightly colored like goldfish and was mostly milky white. It also did not have a wavy tail and fins, its tail was small and exquisite.

When the fish moved, they did not go left, right, forwards or backwards, they only floated upwards and downwards, they resembled balloons moving in the water.

This type of fish was something Fang Yuan had raised before, it was air bubble fish.

But because Fang Yuan ran into difficulties, and was lacking in funds, he had to sell the air bubble fish group that he was raising for a while, to get the funds he desperately needed.

Air bubble fish could eat ordinary worms, insects, grubs and so on, digesting a portion of them while storing the rest as reserves in their stomach.

These life forms in the stomach were nourished and had an increased chance to become a Gu.

Thus, air bubble fish could increase the production of Gu worms. During the five regions chaotic war, it was a heavily sought after good among Gu Immortals.

“This air bubble fish group has quite a large size, in terms of the price in treasure yellow heaven, it is half of the desolate beast shark fin wolf!” Fang Yuan inspected, when he saw that there was no Gu Immortal like Zhou Ping appearing, he immediately made his move and used pulling water Immortal Gu to take all of the air bubble fish.

This air bubble fish group was the third in value among Fang Yuan’s profits.

“You band of thieves! Brazenly robbing my Dong Fang tribe’s headquarters!!” At this time, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s furious screams could be heard over the entirety of Jade Pool blessed land.

Unfettered Scholar burst out and shouted, immediately screaming: “Old thief Dong Fang, get ready to lose your dog life!!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 801: Big to Small, Suppressing the Demonic Cultivators

As it turned out, in the Tai Qiu battlefield, after Fang Yuan and the others left, Dong Fang Chang Fan gradually controlled his internal danger, the situation was turning around for him.

He was an old schemer, after Fang Yuan left, he realized this problem. He immediately guessed that the three mysterious black robed Gu Immortals were going to attack his base.

But he had made arrangements in Jade Pool blessed land, he was not worried, instead, he was glad that these demonic path Gu Immortals were splitting up, he could deal with Unfettered Scholar more easily this way!

But soon, he was shocked to find out that he had lost his connection with Thatched Hut!

This shock was no small matter.

Thatched Hut was Dong Fang Chang Fan’s biggest treasure, it was heavily guarded by Dong Fang Chang Fan’s arrangements, even against a rank eight Gu Immortal, it could hold on for a while. How could it lose its connection to him in such a short time without any warning?

Dong Fang Chang Fan immediately changed his plans, he gave up on the Tai Qiu battlefield, flying towards his base to salvage the situation.

Unfettered Scholar saw that Dong Fang Chang Fan was escaping, he had to chase after him relentlessly.

Dong Fang Chang Fan had not told Old Lord Can Yang the final critical steps yet, thus the latter also followed him, fighting as they traveled.

The two sides flew as they engaged in a huge aerial battle, the battlefield quickly shifted, after spending a lot of time, they reached Jade Pool blessed land.

Thatched Hut was missing, Jade Pool blessed land was broken open, as a hole appeared connecting to the outside world.

Seeing the demonic path Gu Immortals scavenging for resources openly, Dong Fang Chang Fan was extremely furious. He next saw the enslavement path Gu Immortal, Qie Shi Min, using his unique method to capture Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Masters.

Dong Fang Chang Fan was so angry, countless star thoughts were flying out of his head, causing the hat on his head to fall off.

He was truly fuming.

“You demonic path scoundrels are truly unforgivable!” Dong Fang Chang Fan pointed his finger, disregarding the huge amount of immortal essence expenditure, he used his trump card killer move — Myriad Star Fireflies.

Hei Lou Lan and the others were still attacking captivating sea, they saw the countless starlight specks, starlight filling the sky like snow, it was extremely beautiful.

Such a beautiful sight instead made everyone on alert, they quickly stopped their previous actions as they changed their attacks, flying into the sky and attacking Dong Fang Chang Fan.

The current situation was very different from the circumstances in Tai Qiu.

In the Tai Qiu battlefield, the band of demonic path Gu Immortals were competing intensely for a wisdom path inheritance. But Dong Fang Chang Fan had used possession, the wisdom path inheritance would only be in his mind, there was little hope of them taking the inheritance.

But now, the huge Jade Pool blessed land had countless resources that were openly available to everyone, they could seize anything they wanted.

With such huge profits here, as long as they killed Dong Fang Chang Fan, they could continue looting the place, the band of demonic path Gu Immortals stopped fighting amongst themselves and worked together, they were extremely excited, and acted like a united group.

The demonic path Gu Immortals attacked together, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s expression became very ugly, he felt his pressure intensifying as he shielded himself from all directions, he was at a disadvantage.

“Kill him and the entirety of Jade Pool blessed land would be ours!” Half Moon Brutemaster shouted.

“Other than this Jade Pool blessed land, there is still old scoundrel Dong Fang’s wisdom path inheritance, that is the number one wisdom path inheritance in Northern Plains!” Peacock Flying Immortal He Ruo said with shining eyes.

“I can give up even the wisdom path inheritance, what I want is his possession method!” Pi Shui Han’s expression was cold as he attacked unceasingly.

After Dong Fang Chang Fan retreated several times, he finally stabilized his situation after getting help from Old Lord Can Yang.

Being suppressed like this, the anger in him was reaching an extreme. After getting some time to rest, he smiled in spite of his anger: “I will make sure all of you die here!”

Saying so, an intense tremor occurred in Jade Pool blessed land.

The heavens shook and the earth trembled!

The demonic path Gu Immortals realized that all of their mortal killer moves lost much of their effectiveness.

Dong Fang Chang Fan was Dong Fang tribe’s first supreme elder for so many years, he held a large amount of control over Jade Pool blessed land. Even though the blessed land was publicly owned by the tribe, and he could not manipulate it entirely, he had enough authority to use Jade Pool blessed land to repel these demonic path Gu Immortals.

Jade Pool blessed land was Dong Fang tribe’s headquarters, Dong Fang Chang Fan had an advantage when he fought here.

It was only that the thieves came in when the owner was not around.

The demonic path Gu Immortals’ attacks weakened, but Dong Fang Chang Fan did not continue to engage them, he flew down towards a certain gap in space.

He directly flew down into captivating sea, breaking the illusion and seeing that the sea of peach trees was in a pathetic state, the peach wolf group had mostly been killed until two or three were left, some wolf corpses had yet to be taken away, they were lying down near the peach trees, it was a miserable sight.

Dong Fang Chang Fan looked upon this, feeling his heart bleeding, many years of exhausting efforts had gone down the drain!

He suppressed his pain as he shouted: “Brother Fang, I protected your tribe for hundreds of years, we have an agreement to look after one another, I have never oppressed or harmed you. Now that my tribe is at a point of crisis, I need your help.”

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s voice reverberated in the air.

A few breaths later, a sharp voice resounded in the air, answering: “That is only natural.”

After this was said, everyone saw a jade green light emerging from captivating sea, landing in Dong Fang Yu Liang’s hands.

The jade green light faded, and a small mountain could be seen.

It was Miniscule Mountain!

“This is Miniscule Mountain!” Many demons were extremely excited.

Pi Shui Han, Hei Lou Lan, and some others had tense expressions.

Listening to the words exchanged between Dong Fang Chang Fan and the miniman Gu Immortal, it appeared that Miniscule Mountain was not actually owned by Dong Fang tribe, instead, the miniman tribe and Dong Fang tribe had come to an agreement, they were allies.

To be able to become Dong Fang tribe’s ally, the miniman tribe should have corresponding foundation and power.

With Miniscule Mountain in his hands, Dong Fang Chang Fan laughed, his sharp gaze swept through the band of demonic cultivators.

He had no hesitation, his inner fury was urging him to take revenge!

“Today is the day you all die!” Dong Fang Chang Fan held Miniscule Mountain as he moved his fingers, manipulating myriad star fireflies to attack the demonic path immortals.

Countless starlight specks moved, it was like a huge blue wave, his sleeves were fluttering in the air, as if he was a transcendent being among men, his aura surged as it made the demonic cultivators feel fear.

Fading Heavenly Flower!

Thousand Disintegrations!

Ice Dragon Lock!

Strength Path Giant Hand!

The rank seven battle strength experts attacked at once, four immortal killer moves were aimed at Dong Fang Chang Fan.

Mortal killer moves were unusable already, only immortal killer moves had any useful effect.

‘Final afterglow’, Old Lord Can Yang muttered inwardly, he reinforced both him and Dong Fang Chang Fan, before waving his sleeve and shooting out the life chasing fire.

The life chasing fire went after Unfettered Scholar, who was the biggest threat, he was forced to retreat as he lost his attacking position.

Unfettered Scholar bellowed angrily, this had already happened many times, life chasing fire always forced him to use thousand disintegrations on himself to cancel out the attack. Dong Fang Chang Fan had been struggling at death’s doors many times already, but he refused to die!

After thousand disintegrations was diverted, the remaining ice dragon, strength path giant hand, and heavenly flower was still going after Dong Fang Chang Fan.

Dong Fang Chang Fan raised Miniscule Mountain up high, the closer the demonic path Gu Immortals’ killer moves approached Miniscule Mountain, the weaker they became.

In the end, the ice dragon turned into an ice snake, the strength path giant hand shrank to less than one percent of its original size, and the heavenly flower faded and wilted.

When these attacks finally reached Dong Fang Chang Fan, he waved his sleeves and blocked them easily.

“Immortal killer move — Big to Small!” Pi Shui Han’s expression was cold, he found out the enemy’s method immediately.

It turned out that the miniman race Gu Immortal with the surname Fang in Miniscule Mountain was a rule path Gu Immortal, he had the rule path Immortal Gu ‘Small’!

He led the miniman tribe and made an alliance with Dong Fang tribe, to obtain space for his tribe to live. At this point, when he made his move, he used an extraordinary method and suppressed the demons’ surge of power.

All of the demons frowned.

Hei Lou Lan was already feeling regret, if she knew that Miniscule Mountain would be so strong, she would not have gone all in. Many demons attacked captivating sea forcefully, even though they defeated the peach wolf group, that was not enough for Miniscule Mountain to use that killer move.

“This is somewhat troublesome, to solve this problem, we will have to rely on you, Unfettered Scholar.” Pi Shui Han turned back, talking to Unfettered Scholar.

Unfettered Scholar snorted coldly: “At this crucial moment, who else can be relied upon but me?”

Pi Shui Han’s eyelids trembled, but he did not rebuke him.

Unfettered Scholar was also a rule path Gu Immortal, he had the rule path Immortal Gu ‘Disintegrate’, he similarly had the immortal killer move ‘thousand disintegrations’.

To counter rule path with rule path was the most effective option.

At once, the demons battled Dong Fang Chang Fan, Old Lord Can Yang, and the miniman Gu Immortal with Unfettered Scholar at the lead.

The demons attacked one by one, trying to provide an opportunity for Unfettered Scholar.

Unfettered Scholar grabbed onto the opportunity and used thousand disintegrations on Miniscule Mountain.

Thousand disintegrations was used against big to small, but it was countered by the latter.

“Your rule path Immortal Gu is only rank six, my ‘small’ Gu is rank seven, how can you beat me?” The miniman Gu Immortal’s laughter could be heard coming from Miniscule Mountain, it was smug and arrogant.

Unfettered Scholar’s expression was grim, he could not refute it. His foundation was weaker compared to the miniman tribe.

The situation was becoming worse for the demonic path’s side.

Dong Fang Chang Fan had Miniscule Mountain, he also had Old Lord Can Yang watching out for him, he was in an impregnable position. As the killer move, myriad star fireflies, became stronger, his battle strength would surge with it. Eventually, it would end in a victory for him, he would defeat the band of demons and return to the world of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals with a domineering display.

The demons thought hard, but they had no way to counter big to small.

The only tactic left for them was to attack forcefully, using their advantage in numbers to drain all of the enemy’s immortal essence.

But demonic path Gu Immortals were loners, they usually only considered their own interests, they did not want to expend too much of their own resources, it was not worth it.

Just as they were worrying, the demonic path Gu Immortal Zhou Ping shouted angrily: “Damn it, my literature carps were taken away!”

The demons looked over following the voice and saw that at the periphery of the battlefield, Fang Yuan, who was above a deep pool, was drawing the water into his own immortal aperture.

Seeing this, even Hei Lou Lan transmitted a message to Fang Yuan in fury: “Fang Yuan, what are you doing!”

The demons were fighting a tough battle, in the end, they realized that someone was stealing resources while they were occupied.

This was like a situation where everyone was in a boat, paddling and moving forward. In the end, one of their companions decided to start fishing and even caught a big fat fish, keeping it for himself!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 802: Looting Persistently, Internal Strife

“You, how can you be so selfish?” Unfettered Scholar pointed at Fang Yuan, chiding.

“My literature carps, my fish group!” Zhou Ping screamed angrily.

“We are here fighting desperately, but you are taking benefits in the background? Taking advantage of us?” Pi Shui Han’s eyes were flashing with a cold light, his tone was chilly.

“My group of literature carps, return them to me!” Zhou Ping roared, mixed with a tone of sobbing.

“The urgent matter now is to kill Dong Fang Chang Fan. By then, won’t we have everything?!” Fairy Li Shan’s transmitted, her tone also had a hint of accusation in it.

“Damn it, return my fish group, I demand justice!” Zhou Ping was so regretful his eyes turned red. If he knew this, he might as well have destroyed the fish group. He spent so much precious time trying to get this resource, yet now it landed in someone else’s hands, and it felt like he was only safekeeping it.

“Shut up! Otherwise, I am going to thrash some people!” Fang Yuan was very ruthless, his tone was arrogant and he did not make any form of explanation or denial.

“You!!!” Zhou Ping was so angry his eyes were opened wide and staring, he almost spat out blood.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, he had to act ruthless, to not allow these demonic path Gu Immortals to take an inch and demand a mile, this could protect his interests.

Pi Shui Han, Unfettered Scholar, and the others were gritting their teeth in anger, but they could not attack.

Fang Yuan had rank seven battle strength, if they really fought, he still had two companions.

“It’s nothing much if it’s only that rank six black robed Gu Immortal, but this rank seven is likely to be Fairy Li Shan from Snowy Mountain!”

“Fairy Li Shan had once made an agreement with Dong Fang tribe, she could not harm them. Now that she is involving herself in this matter, it’s no wonder her appearance and identity are concealed.”

Once she attacked, there would be many flaws.

Fairy Li Shan’s identity was already revealed to Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han.

Even though they found out, Pi Shui Han and Unfettered Scholar did not dare to attack her, because Fairy Li Shan was a member of Snowy Mountain, she was a subordinate of the rank eight Gu Immortal, Old Ancestor Xue Hu!

Old Ancestor Xue Hu wanted to refine fortune rivalling heaven Gu, this was known to everyone. But to refine a rank eight Immortal Gu, the investment was massive. Perhaps right now, Fairy Li Shan was here due to orders from Old Ancestor Xue Hu, to loot Dong Fang tribe’s resources, this would be the will of a rank eight expert!

Fang Yuan naturally knew Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han’s mindsets, he was using Fairy Li Shan’s reputation now to deter the demons, so that he could take the literature carps for himself.

But just as he was about to continue saying arrogant words and deepen everyone’s impression, Dong Fang Chang Fan suddenly lost control again.

Dong Fang Yi Kong’s face turned ruthless, he looked at Fang Yuan with eyes that could shoot out fire, his voice turned into Dong Fang Yi Kong’s.

He screamed at Fang Yuan: “Scoundrel, you dare to take my literature carps away. I was only storing them here temporarily! You dare to take them, do you know how much effort I had put in to obtain this group of literature carps?! I want you to die like a dog!”

While he roared, he flew towards Fang Yuan.

Everyone stared blankly at this.

Earlier, Dong Fang Chang Fan had appeared normal for a very long time, everyone thought that he had regained control and succeeded in his possession. Nobody expected this to happen!

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with brilliance, he quickly reacted, his six strength path giant hands flew over while his body retreated backwards.

He grabbed onto the opportunity, but he was vigilant — what if the enemy was only acting and was purposely exposing a weakness, what if this was a trap?

But the truth was, this was no trap.

Dong Fang Chang Fan regained control of the body very quickly.

His expression turned dark, to think that he had lost control again.

Man proposes, God disposes!

He had made ample preparations, these demonic path Gu Immortals were not his match, even Old Lord Can Yang was his helpless tool that was being made use of all along, but the strength of the heavenly tribulation was beyond his expectations.

Earlier, he was only suppressing the wills of the eight Gu Immortals forcefully, he had not gotten rid of them yet.

Now that the literature carps were taken by Fang Yuan, an intense external stimulus awakened the rage in Dong Fang Yi Kong’s will, he burst through the suppression and emerged.

The wills of these eight Gu Immortals were not the biggest issue. The problem was that due to their support, the original will of this body had been gathering strength, it was becoming quite formidable.

Although Dong Fang Yu Liang’s soul was destroyed, the fragments of his soul was scattered in his body, turning into will.

Thought, will, emotion, within these divisions there weren’t individual qualitative differences, differences were shown from quantity. Dong Fang Yu Liang’s will had already accumulated to become similar to the other eight Gu Immortals.

The most key danger was that this body was originally his. If his will burst out, the threat was many times that of the other Gu Immortals of Dong Fang tribe!

Dong Fang Chang Fan sighed deeply, he raised Miniscule Mountain up and used the big to small immortal killer move to weaken the six strength path giant hands, before breaking them apart.

Fang Yuan shouted from afar: “What are you waiting for, the enemy is already separated, why aren’t you killing them now?”

The other demonic path Gu Immortals all had rich battle experience, how could they miss such an opportunity?

Right as Fang Yuan was still shouting, Pi Shui Han, Unfettered Scholar and the others had already attacked, while Divine Lord Tian Du, Shi Hou, Lu Qing Ming, and He Ruo came over and encircled the area, sealing any escape routes that Dong Fang Chang Fan could take.

At this point, the demons already had some basic teamwork, they could cooperate to execute simple tactics.

Even though these were just basics, it gave Dong Fang Chang Fan huge pressure.

Old Lord Can Yang was angered to a boiling point.

He did not expect Dong Fang Chang Fan to lose control again. Originally, he was fighting together with Dong Fang Chang Fan, they were close together and could take care of each other. Now that Dong Fang Chang Fan had charged out alone, he was surrounded by the demonic path immortals, while Can Yang himself was blocked outside.

“Dong Fang Chang Fan, what is going on with you?” At the same time, Miniscule Mountain was shaking, the questioning of the miniman Gu Immortal could be heard.

The alarming change earlier had scared him.

“Don’t worry.” Dong Fang Chang Fan fought against the enemies around him as he answered plainly.

“You sure are calm! Don’t you see how many people are encircling you?” The miniman Gu Immortal was going crazy.

“Hang in there!” Old Lord Can Yang was anxious, he fought his way in as he attempted to join up with Dong Fang Chang Fan again.

“I will stop him.” Fairy Li Shan emerged, obstructing Old Lord Can Yang.

Fairy Li Shan had once made an agreement with Dong Fang Chang Fan, she was using a special technique now to suppress the agreement’s backlash. Despite this, during the battle earlier, she was focusing essentially all of her attacks on Old Lord Can Yang.

The battle intensified all of a sudden.

The demonic path party wanted to take advantage of the mistake to eliminate Dong Fang Chang Fan. As long as Dong Fang Chang Fan was dead, the blessed land would have no one controlling it, the demonic path Gu Immortals would not be restricted, even if Old Lord Can Yang and Miniscule Mountain were around, they could not change the result.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s side was trying their best, as long as he joined up with Old Lord Can Yang, they would regain their former advantage.

During such an intense battle, Fang Yuan was at the periphery of the battlefield, looting the resources of the deep pools.

Fang Yuan’s actions made all of the demonic path Gu Immortals furious, they accused him while shouting loudly.

Fang Yuan however, gave his reasoning: “What do you guys know! This is a battle tactic, I am trying to trigger the Gu Immortal wills that were suppressed in his body, to make old scoundrel Dong Fang commit a mistake. Wasn’t the current advantage that we gained due to me? Quickly coordinate with me, do not judge the heart of a gentleman with the heart of a small man!”

After Unfettered Scholar heard this, his handsome face distorted with anger.

Pi Shui Han’s heart was filled with the flames of rage, he felt that at this moment, he was not an ice and water path Gu Immortal, instead, he was cultivating fire path.

But what Fang Yuan said was true, they had no way to rebuke him.

Divine Lord Tian Du expressed everyone’s thoughts: “Why is it that we are all fighting here while you are out there gaining profits?”

The miniman Gu Immortal from Miniscule Mountain also yelled: “What do you mean ‘judge the heart of a gentleman with the heart of a small man’, this is discrimination against our miniman race, I will make you pay the price!”

Zhou Ping’s eyes turned, he said: “This battle tactic makes sense, let me coordinate!”

Saying this, he left his position in the battlefield and flew down towards a deep pool.

Pi Shui Han roared in anger: “Get the hell back!”

Unfettered Scholar was breathing roughly, he activated thousand disintegrations, aiming it at Zhou Ping.

Zhou Ping shouted in pain, he suffered a heavy blow, he almost fell to the ground.

This could not be allowed!

Defeat and victory were thinly separated, if everyone went to get profits, who would be left to kill Dong Fang Chang Fan?

Unfettered Scholar shouted coldly: “Now is a crucial moment, if anyone tries to leave without reason, even if the enemy is in front of us, I will kill you!”

He no longer had the gentlemanly air from earlier, he started using abusive language.

“Zhou Ping, why aren’t you back in battle yet, do you want me to send you off?” Pi Shui Han said coldly, threatening.

Zhou Ping lowered his head, he had an expression of anger and hatred, but he had no choice but to return.

Fang Yuan could not kill him, but that did not mean other rank seven battle strength Gu Immortals could not.

The other demonic path Gu Immortals saw this and suppressed their greed. They felt glad, and also indignant.

Why was it that Fang Yuan could scavenge resources while they could not?

Because of battle strength!

Fang Yuan had rank seven battle strength, Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han, even if they wanted to, had neither the capability nor time to punish him.

But for the other rank six Gu Immortals, if they dared to mess around so openly?! Did they think these rank sevens could be toyed with?

Gu Immortals who made it this far were all astute figures.

But to mess around with others, one had to see if they had the ability to do so!

But even Fairy Li Shan could not stand to let this continue, she loudly spoke at Fang Yuan with a cold snort: “Number seven, come back now, we’ll fight together.”

Fang Yuan was slightly stunned, he could not help but let out a laugh.

Earlier, he was scheming against the others, but at the next moment, his ally actually slightly schemed against him.

Even though he, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan had signed the Snowy Mountain Alliance, in which nobody had command over others in the alliance, but right now, they had to act in front of everyone.

Earlier, to show that they had a deep background, they put up a show and deterred the demons.

Right now, he could not ruin that background they created, he had to continue acting.

Over at Fairy Li Shan’s side, her circumstances were quite bad. She fought using wood path, but Old Lord Can Yang was a fire path Gu Immortal, be it fighting techniques or methods, Fairy Li Shan was heavily countered.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 803: Band of Demons Repels Righteous Immortals

Fang Yuan came to help, he worked together with Fairy Li Shan, obstructing Old Lord Can Yang.

Fang Yuan was an immortal zombie, he was not afraid of life chasing fire, but even so, the strength path phantom army in his immortal aperture was taking serious damage from the fire.

After fighting for a while, Fang Yuan felt heartache inwardly.

When he used the strength path giant hands, they did not use much immortal essence. That was because the strength path giant hands were formed using countless group strength Gu along with the strength path phantoms, it was the manifestation of their strength.

In essence, each strength path giant hand was made from tens of thousands of strength path phantoms.

The strength path phantoms were created using his immortal essence a while ago, they were stored in his immortal aperture.

But now the life chasing fire went after their origin, burning the strength path phantoms directly, by now, the strength path phantom army that Fang Yuan had accumulated had been mostly destroyed. If he summoned more now, he would need to expend huge amounts of green grape immortal essence.

“If this goes on, the expenditure is too great, this will not do! Fairy, block him for now, I have a plan!” After fighting for some time, Fang Yuan suddenly transmitted while retreating.

Fairy Li Shan heard this and felt a strong urge to curse at him.

At this point in the battle, he was still thinking about immortal essence expenditure? She had already gone all out regarding that. She did not even dare to think about the amount of immortal essence she had expended.

When they attacked captivating sea, in order to fight against time, she used several immortal killer moves, now that she was fighting with Old Lord Can Yang, her expenditure was even greater.

Fang Yuan was still thinking about immortal essence expenditure now? It was obvious he had obtained the most profits!

Seeing that Fang Yuan was retreating, the demons had varying expressions, they were stirred.

“Why is he flying down again?” Unfettered Scholar asked Fairy Li Shan, he could confirm Fairy Li Shan’s true identity already, Fang Yuan did not respond to him at all, it was much more effective to ask Fairy Li Shan.

Fairy Li Shan was inwardly angry, she fought intensely as she replied coldly: “He said the immortal essence expenditure is too great if this goes on, he has a plan to execute.”

Still caring about immortal essence? How much did we spend already!

The band of demons were furious, some had bloodshot eyes, some were breathing roughly.

Unfettered Scholar’s body was trembling.

In truth, even Fairy Li Shan and others had plundered some resources. In the entire demonic path gang, Unfettered Scholar was the one who put in the most work while obtaining the least. He did not even loot a single resource point!

Dong Fang Chang Fan felt his pressure intensifying, it was a vicious cycle.

Fang Yuan’s words angered the band of demons, they were venting their rage on him.

At once, Dong Fang Chang Fan raised Miniscule Mountain to defend himself, he was injured in many areas, he was in a pathetic state, the situation was getting worse.

What Fang Yuan had said earlier was not a lie.

He flew towards a deep pool directly.

In fact, while the two sides fought intensely, they had shifted locations unintentionally. Fang Yuan realized that a deep pool below them was full of Dong Fang tribesmen who were hiding, evidently, this was an assembly point.

“Dong Fang Chang Fan, I want you to see it for yourself, the pitiful death of your tribesmen! Hahaha!”

Fang Yuan’s wild laughter was mixed with the slamming of his strength path giant hand.

How could the methods of mortals block an immortal killer move?

The barrier of light that was erected with many layers was instantly destroyed, without even holding on for a second the moment the strength path giant hand made contact with it.

The strength path giant hand slammed down, with a loud bang, the ground collapsed on itself.

Many unlucky mortal Gu Masters were smashed into meat paste.

The mortal Gu Masters at the periphery felt the intense wind caused by the hand, they scattered everywhere and screamed for help, they had no fighting spirit.

The strength path giant hand rose into the air, a large crevice in the shape of a bloody handprint was left on the ground.

“My tribesmen! My kin! I will protect them!!” Dong Fang Chang Fan saw this and lost control again, his voice became high pitched.

Dong Fang Chang Fan saw this and knew a problem was arising, but he could not stop it.

This was Dong Fang Yu Liang’s will!

The biggest internal threat!!

The eyes of the demons were shining, they attacked furiously, Dong Fang Yu Liang disregarded them, he flew down urgently to save everyone.

“Damn it! Damn it!” As the danger of death approached, the miniman Gu Immortal surnamed Fang shouted out, he had to manipulate Miniscule Mountain, flying to the top of Dong Fang Yu Liang’s head, blocking attacks for him due to the agreement.

Miniscule Mountain shook intensely from the attack of the demons, countless small rocks fell apart and crumbled.

“Dong Fang Chang Fan, you’ve caused me great harm!” The miniman Gu Immortal shouted in anger and regret.

Fang Yuan saw that this method was effective, he laughed loudly as he intentionally slowed down, chasing and killing the escaping Dong Fang tribesmen as he attracted Dong Fang Yu Liang’s attention.

But while Dong Fang Yu Liang was flying in the air, he was suppressed and Dong Fang Chang Fan regained control once more.

Dong Fang Chang Fan realized that although he was injured, his surroundings were clear now, only a few Gu Immortals were right behind after him, there was a high chance he could break past the encirclement and join up with Old Lord Can Yang!

Because Dong Fang Yu Liang had charged out without caring about life or death, Miniscule Mountain paid a huge price and took the damage in his place.

Such a desperate and dangerous act had been out of everyone’s expectations, it gave him a chance instead.

“You fools, I gave you a chance but you’re letting him escape?” Fang Yuan pointed at the demons and scolded.

Unfettered Scholar and the others were furious and anxious, they had no time to care about Fang Yuan, they shouted: “Chase him!”

“Don’t let him escape!!”

At once, the intense combat had become a battle of pursuit.

Dong Fang Chang Fan was escaping and breaking out of his encirclement, success was in front of him, but the band of demons was doggedly on his tail, they threatened to surround him again.

On another side, Old Lord Can Yang was trying to reach Dong Fang Chang Fan, but Fairy Li Shan remained in his way, blocking his paths.

At once, the two sides were like headless chickens, they were flying around chaotically in the air.

Their flying route was completely messy, but this showed the strong foundations of the Gu Immortals in flying. These Gu Immortals were all at least flying masters!

Mortal Gu Masters did not have the time or effort to learn flying, but Gu Immortals did.

Flying was a very useful method for advancing or retreating, almost all Gu Immortals spent a lot of time on it, having a good grasp of this ability.

“Quick, kill some more Dong Fang Gu Masters, make him lose control!” Unfettered Scholar shouted.

Fang Yuan was on it already, he used the strength path giant hands to grab a few Dong Fang Gu Masters, before squeezing them to death, his methods were ruthless and savage, it had made Dong Fang Chang Fan lose control many times.

But there were limited numbers of Dong Fang Gu Masters, and Dong Fang Chang Fan refused to go down.

At this moment, someone shouted: “Qie Shi Min, Qie Shi Min captured many Dong Fang tribesmen earlier, he wanted to sell them as slaves!”

Qie Shi Min was furious, these were resources that he had spent a lot of time to gather.

“Qie Shi Min!!” Unfettered Scholar shouted while pursuing.

“Make a sacrifice now, we will compensate you double after the battle!” Pi Shui Han said grimly.

Qie Shi Min wanted to reject them, but seeing that Pi Shui Han was oozing with killing intent, he shuddered: “Okay!”

He took out many Dong Fang Gu Masters from his immortal aperture, killing them in front of Dong Fang Chang Fan. This made the remaining wills extremely furious, they came out one by one.

Forget the other Dong Fang Gu Immortals’ wills, the most crucial one was Dong Fang Yu Liang’s will.

He was still a mortal at rank five, he had a deeper bond with the tribesmen, every time his will took control, it gave Dong Fang Chang Fan, Miniscule Mountain, and Old Lord Can Yang huge problems.

As time continued to pass, Fairy Li Shan could not obstruct Old Lord Can Yang anymore, they successfully joined up.

But the band of demons had gathered a huge advantage already from Dong Fang Chang Fan’s loss of control.

Their victory was assured!

Miniscule Mountain was full of cracks, even while it flew in the air, rocks were falling off from it. Old Lord Can Yang had suffered many attacks in order to take care of Dong Fang Chang Fan, his body was heavily injured, even his beard was dyed red from blood.

This was the most dispiriting battle he had ever had.

During the battle, he had asked Dong Fang Chang Fan the final portions of the possession method, but would Dong Fang Chang Fan dare to tell him?

Once he told him, Old Lord Can Yang would flee!

Dong Fang tribe was only cooperating with Immortal Crane Sect, the possession method was the biggest bargaining chip.

“Retreat, we cannot stay here!” Old Lord Can Yang sighed, he transmitted this to Dong Fang Chang Fan.

“As long as we live, there will always be more opportunities in the future...” The miniman Gu Immortal was afraid that Dong Fang Chang Fan would continue fighting, he quickly added this.

Dong Fang Chang Fan smiled bitterly: “Do you think I am someone who cannot understand the situation? We’ll retreat!”

He gave Jade Pool blessed land another longing, he was inwardly filled with anger and hatred, but he had made up his mind!

Temporary losses were nothing, a true champion could give things up and retreat.

But right at this moment, Fang Yuan laughed: “Another Dong Fang tribe assembly point, Dong Fang Chang Fan, watch closely, I am going to slaughter them!!”

“Shameless scoundrel, you dare to bully me to this extent!” Dong Fang Chang Fan was furious, he attacked with myriad star fireflies.

Fang Yuan saw the imposing attack and smiled, he did not stay any longer, he evaded the attack.

But this myriad star fireflies attack did not chase after him, it curved and flew down, slamming into the Dong Fang tribe assembly point.

The Dong Fang tribesmen who were hiding inside were all slaughtered in an instant, not a single person was left alive.

“This—!” At once, even the demonic path Gu Immortals were shocked by Dong Fang Chang Fan’s ruthlessness.

“Rather than let you threaten me, I would rather destroy this weakness while I am in control of this body. Brave souls of Dong Fang tribe, listen to me, I, Dong Fang Chang Fan, will exact revenge for you. The hatred and grudge of today’s events, I will return them a thousand fold to you demonic scoundrels!” Dong Fang Chang Fan’s tears flowed down his cheeks, he spoke in deep pain.

Hearing his anguished voice, even the daring and lawless demonic path immortals felt a chill in their hearts.

“If the number one person in wisdom path escapes, and plots against me in the future...” The band of demons were feeling wary, fierce lights emerged in their eyes, they had overflowing killing intent.

At this point, both sides were almost running dry, they had expended a huge amount of resources.

Initially, it was just a battle for benefits, but now, they could not stop anymore, such a deep seated hatred was established, there was no way else to resolve this.

“Go!” Dong Fang Chang Fan suddenly flew into the air, opening Jade Pool blessed land’s doors and flying out.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 804: Old Schemer Vanishes Without a Trace

“Chase after him!” The band of demons were relentless.

But Jade Pool blessed land’s entrance closed, only a few Gu Immortals had followed outside from behind, the rest had to change their directions and fly out from the hole that was made earlier.

When they flew out of Jade Pool blessed land, even though they could still see Dong Fang Chang Fan’s figure, he was already far away in the sky.

Everyone was like a meteor, flying through the sky, shrill sounds could be heard.

The intense winds brushed against them, everyone used their own movement techniques, but the distance was huge, they were already behind from the start, eventually, their distance started widening.

Fang Yuan was wearing a black robe and had six wings, his speed raised from time to time, it was due to the activation of iron crown eagle strength Gu.

But even so, there was quite a difference compared to the others, he gradually fell behind, becoming the second wave of immortals.

The first wave included Dong Fang Chang Fan, Old Lord Can Yang, Miniscule Mountain, Unfettered Scholar, Zhou Ping, Fairy Li Shan, and Peacock Flying Immortal He Ruo.

The second wave included Pi Shui Han, Hei Lou Lan, Fang Yuan, Lu Qing Ming, Qie Shi Min, and Divine Lord Tian Du.

As for Half Moon Brutemaster, Zhuo Zhan, Shi Hou and the others, they had been left in the dust, their figures could not even be seen, there was no third wave at all.

After flying for fifteen minutes, Old Lord Can Yang sighed deeply, he transmitted to Dong Fang Chang Fan solemnly: “I will block Unfettered Scholar and two other people for you at most, you will give me the final part of the method. Don’t mess around, my patience is running out. You also know that my sect has wisdom path Gu Immortals, with the information I already have, I can deduce the final steps. Except that I will need to spend a lot of time, effort, and funds, that is all.”

Dong Fang Chang Fan was quiet for a moment, he did not dare to anger Old Lord Can Yang, otherwise, he might turn on him, he had to give him the possession method.

Old Lord Can Yang got what he wanted, but he did not go back on his words, he went back to the huge battle and blocked Unfettered Scholar, Lu Qing Ming and Peacock Flying Immortal He Ruo.

Meanwhile, the other demonic path immortals chased Dong Fang Chang Fan relentlessly.

After a while, Zhou Ping stopped.

“I am unresigned! I have two immortal level movement killer moves, but at this crucial time, my immortal essence is not enough!!” He screamed, he felt deeply regretful, he could only watch as the immortals flew away.

A while later, Divine Lord Tian Du also started to slow down, he sighed: “Everyone, please fight valiantly, I am unable to go any further.”

If they did not kill Dong Fang Chang Fan, there would be huge problems later.

Divine Lord Tian Du landed while deeply frowning.

“Brother Fang, I am not in a good position. Thank you for saving me even though your life was in danger, at this point, you should leave quickly, I will draw them away!” A while later, Dong Fang Chang Fan showed an exhausted expression as he secretly transmitted to the miniman Gu Immortal.

The miniman Gu Immortal was overjoyed, but he hesitated: “Are you really letting me go? But our agreement is not over yet...”

Dong Fang Chang Fan interrupted him, throwing Miniscule Mountain out as he said: “Brother Fang, say no more, all the best!”

“Miniscule Mountain!!” Fairy Li Shan immediately changed her direction and tried to grab at Miniscule Mountain.

Miniscule Mountain shook, turning into a jade light as it flew towards the left.

At the same time, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s tired expression vanished, his speed raised by thirty percent as he continued to escape.

The two split up, the demonic cultivators behind hesitated.

But Fairy Li Shan had no hesitation, she pursued Miniscule Mountain. Compared to the tough Dong Fang Chang Fan, the miniman Gu Immortal on Miniscule Mountain was weaker, and Miniscule Mountain was more beneficial to her.

Before leaving, she had sent a transmission to Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan for help.

After all, it was hard for one person to catch Miniscule Mountain, if there was help, it would be far easier.

Hei Lou Lan did not hesitate, she immediately followed after Fairy Li Shan. But Fang Yuan rejected her outright, he did not stop chasing Dong Fang Chang Fan.

Thus, Fang Yuan, Pi Shui Han, and Qie Shi Min chased after Dong Fang Chang Fan, while Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan went after Miniscule Mountain.

Disregarding Fairy Li Shan’s side, Dong Fang Chang Fan had successfully used Miniscule Mountain to lure two strong foes away, his speed was even faster now as he quickly widened the gap between him and his pursuers.

Pi Shui Han was anxious, he shouted to Qie Shi Min: “Why aren’t you taking out the captives?”

Qie Shi Min’s movement killer move was a chariot, it gave off the aura of Immortal Gu. He was sitting on the chariot, his expression grim. He had kept many of the Dong Fang tribe captives in his immortal aperture, his motive was to leave them for the end, to deal a fatal blow to Dong Fang Chang Fan.

But now, he had no choice but to use them in advance.

“Old scoundrel Dong Fang, your tribesmen are in my hands, fight us directly, you cannot escape.” Qie Shi Min said this as he killed one Gu Master in his hand, taking out another one after that.

Dong Fang Chang Fan sneered and chuckled coldly, he continued to fly forward.

After Qie Shi Min killed the thirteenth captive, he finally managed to get Dong Fang Chang Fan to make a mistake, the distance between him and Fang Yuan’s group shortened again.

But Dong Fang Chang Fan quickly suppressed the threat, after regaining control of the body, he flew again and moved ahead.

The two sides were in a deadlock, their distance shrunk at times and lengthened at other times.

Along the way, they met several Gu Immortals, they were either in the righteous path or demonic path, some obstructed them, some chased them, some left immediately and did not want to get involved in this messy situation.

An hour later, only Dong Fang Chang Fan, Fang Yuan, Pi Shui Han, and Qie Shi Min were left.

“If I do not die from this, I will definitely reward all of you well!” Dong Fang Chang Fan was already quite far ahead, laughing loudly as he escaped.

Fang Yuan and the others had grim expressions.

These three pursuers were originally from the second wave, with their speed, they could not catch up to Dong Fang Chang Fan after he raised his speed.

The longer this dragged on, the greater Dong Fang Chang Fan’s advantage, he was gradually suppressing the internal threats in his body, even though Qie Shi Min was killing more Dong Fang tribesmen now, Dong Fang Chang Fan was losing control less often than before.

“What do we do?” Pi Shui Han, Fang Yuan, and Qie Shi Min looked at each other, they saw anxiety but also anticipation in each other’s eyes.

“Both of you, if you have any methods, please use them, otherwise, it will be too late.” Qie Shi Min said.

Fang Yuan and Pi Shui Han shook their heads.

These three were at their wits end already, they had to treasure their precious immortal essence beads. If they had any methods left, they would have used it already.

Seeing that Dong Fang Chang Fan was going to get away from them, the three pursuers showed intense looks of disappointment.

But at this moment, Dong Fang Chang Fan lost control again, Dong Fang Yu Liang’s voice was screaming, his speed fell drastically.

Fang Yuan and the others were overjoyed, Qie Shi Min shouted: “As expected, killing the captives had an effect! Quick, kill him, we can still search his soul later.”

Fang Yuan and the others quickly got ahead, but at this time, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s expression changed, he showed a smile, as if his plot had succeeded.

“Oh no, it’s a trap!” Fang Yuan quickly retreated, but it was too late to escape!

He only saw a ray of starlight, it moved extremely quickly, it grazed Fang Yuan’s shoulder and pierced into Qie Shi Min’s forehead.

Qie Shi Min expression was frozen into a look of utter disbelief.

At the next moment, his head exploded, the chariot disassembled as he fell to the ground weakly.

Be it Fang Yuan or Pi Shui Han, they were shocked and nervous. It was already so late into the battle, to think that Dong Fang Chang Fan still had such a powerful trump card!

He had truly unfathomable depths!!

“If you pursue me any further, Qie Shi Min can serve as an example!” Dong Fang Chang Fan laughed loudly, escaping again.

Earlier, he lost control, that was only him acting, a trap!

Qie Shi Min was an enslavement path Gu Immortal, he had a weaker body than normal immortals, because he was chasing fervently, he was slightly careless, but he actually got killed in one move.

“Chase him! He is bluffing!” Pi Shui Han was stunned for a moment before reacting.

Fang Yuan was also pursuing closely: “After this attack, he really has nothing left.”

Although his tone was certain, Fang Yuan did not believe it completely inwardly.

If it were other Gu Immortals, that would definitely be the case. But it was Dong Fang Chang Fan, this old scoundrel, this was not a certainty.

After Qie Shi Min died, there were no captives left to lure Dong Fang Chang Fan to lose control.

This was terrible news.

If they stayed and looted Qie Shi Min’s immortal aperture and Immortal Gu, then they would not make it in time, Dong Fang Chang Fan would manage to escape.

Honestly speaking, even though they were still chasing him, Fang Yuan and Pi Shui Han did not have much hope within themselves.

But quickly, there was another change.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s speed became slower.

His speed fell by thirty percent compared to earlier!

With this, Fang Yuan and Pi Shui Han saw hope.

“As expected, his burst speed has its limits.”

“Think about it, that is an immortal killer move, if he could use it for extended periods of time, he would have used it long ago.”

“Maybe his immortal essence was used up.”

Fang Yuan and Pi Shui Han interacted, they decided to work together for now, to leave Dong Fang Chang Fan no room to escape.

They were also worried that if they fought between themselves, at the crucial moment, they might end in failure.

But just as they were getting closer to Dong Fang Chang Fan, his body flickered as another figure appeared, turning into a second Dong Fang Chang Fan.

“This?!” Fang Yuan was shocked.

Pi Shui Han gasped: “Oh no, I’ve heard long ago that Dong Fang Chang Fan had a split shadow Immortal Gu in his hands, to think that it was true!”

The two bodies had the same aura, they were identical, there was nothing that could differentiate them, they flew off in two different directions.

Even though the pursuers were using investigative methods, they could not find any flaws.

There was no choice, Fang Yuan and Pi Shui Han could only split up.

In the end, not long after Fang Yuan went on his chase, Dong Fang Chang Fan split out another figure and flew towards the left.

Fang Yuan was joyful and also worried.

This indicated that he had been chasing the right figure, but he did not expect that this old scoundrel Dong Fang could create another split shadow.

Fang Yuan quickly took out some Dong Fang tribe Gu Master captives in his immortal aperture, shouting in the same manner again: “Dong Fang Chang Fan, I will kill your tribesmen again!”

Fang Yuan had used his strength path giant hands earlier to attack the assembly points, he killed large numbers of Dong Fang tribesmen. But in this process, he had left a backup plan, he secretly kept a good number of the captives in his immortal aperture.

But the two Dong Fang Chang Fans did not pay heed to him, Fang Yuan’s plan did not succeed.

He could not differentiate them, he could only grit his teeth as he chose the left one randomly, pursuing it.

Along the way, in just a short while, Dong Fang Chang Fan created another clone and flew in two directions.

Fang Yuan felt anything but reassured in his mind, what should he do now?

His immortal essence was almost used up completely, the strength path giant hands could only move slowly, and ordinary mortal killer moves could not even damage Dong Fang Chang Fan’s clothes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 805: A Short Break, Another Battle

Unable to determine the fake, Fang Yuan could only guess and make some baseless choices.

Eventually, when it was night, he watched as Dong Fang Chang Fang’s body gradually faded and vanished, in its place was a lump of Gu worms.

Fang Yuan collected this lump of Gu worms, the split shadow Immortal Gu was not inside, instead, there were only some rank five Gu worms that were mixed with a heavy Immortal Gu aura.

“I lost him! Only Pi Shui Han’s end is left, but the chances are low, most likely, Dong Fang Chang Fan escaped. Sigh, as expected of a legendary character, the leader of a super force, he has so many trump cards! The most pressing matter now is to return to Jade Pool blessed land and plunder the final portion of the resources.”

Fang Yuan swept away his emotions, he immediately flew back.

Along the way, he contacted Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan, but they were still chasing after Miniscule Mountain, they promised him a large amount of compensation if he went to help them out.

Fang Yuan fell into a difficult situation with two choices in front of him.

One was Jade Pool blessed land, it was rich in resources, but such a long time had passed, the other demonic path Gu Immortals might have looted it entirely already. The other was Miniscule Mountain, if he could obtain Miniscule Mountain...

He inwardly felt moved.

As night descended, the temperature became lower, the night sky was filled with dark clouds, the air was stuffy.

A moment later, intense winds blew, it rained while accompanied by thunder and lightning.

Dong Fang Chang Fan sat on the ground, his expression was white as chalk, he looked extremely pale. The body that he had just possessed was heavily injured, some injuries were so severe that bones could be seen, his flesh and blood were exposed to the air openly.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s aura was weak, he frowned deeply: “To think that the possession I underwent caused such a huge and unexpected accident. Indeed, an act of defying heaven incurs the wrath of heaven and earth. Thankfully, towards the end, I gave up Miniscule Mountain and drew some of the enemies away. I also gave up split shadow Immortal Gu to escape successfully.”

At once, Dong Fang Chang Fan felt lingering fear, relief, joy, solemness, sadness, and hatred.

All of these complex emotions were mixing together.

“The injuries on my body are just a small matter, they are not fatal. The important thing is to get rid of the internal threat. The immortal essence I accumulated was mostly used on possession. After this battle, they have been consumed entirely, the battle of wills is my only chance at defeating these nine wills...”

Dong Fang Chang Fan thought over it, he shut his eyes and entered a state of meditation.

In truth, with his current terrible situation, he had no other options.

He was at his wits end, he was like a long river that had dried up until the riverbed was exposed.

To be able to escape from the pursuers in this state and survive, it was truly nothing short of a miracle.

Right now, if he hesitated slightly, or refused to undergo the battle of wills, his control over this body would be completely lost.

He might as well engage in the battle of wills now while he still had some foundation and mental energy, by converting all of his remaining mental energy into his own will army.

The battle of wills was vicious, it did not concern one’s cultivation level, only the wills in themselves.

But Dong Fang Chang Fan had no other method now, he had to do this.

His will rose from his mind, it instantly converted all of his foundation into a huge stream.

The huge stream flew out of his mind, it was like a waterfall from the nine heavens, pouring down from above. With an immense force, it charged towards all of the other wills in the body.

“Fight!”

“Let’s fight together, that old scoundrel’s will is stronger than any of ours.”

“We have to cooperate, that is the only chance we have at winning!”

The wills of Dong Fang tribe’s eight Gu Immortals, as well as Dong Fang Yu Liang’s will, joined forces, they resisted Dong Fang Chang Fan’s will.

A total of ten wills mixed together, fighting chaotically.

Both sides had no alternatives now, if they took a step back, they would fall into the abyss of failure, their existence would be wiped out.

This, from the start, was a battle to the death!

Both sides were equally matched, but a moment later, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s will was at a disadvantage.

While fighting with the band of demons, Dong Fang Chang Fan had only been suppressing the wills forcefully, he did not find out how troublesome they were to deal with. Only now when they fought, he realized that these wills were tough as iron, they were as firm as steel.

All of them bore deep hatred towards Dong Fang Chang Fan!

“Dong Fang Chang Fan, you deceived us, you betrayed us!”

“For your own selfish desire, you killed all of us, just for your own sake!!”

“Old and scheming, we were all wrong about you, you only treated us as your pawns...”

“If you want to kill us, don’t think of surviving either!!”

“Die together, we will die together!”

“It was you, you harmed us, you harmed the entirety of Dong Fang tribe.”

“Right now, Jade Pool blessed land is being looted by the band of demons, nothing is left of thousands of years of management from our tribe!”

...

These wills shouted, with great anguish, they formed into a tide and attacked from everywhere in the body.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s will was forced back, he quickly squeezed back into the mind.

The mind was Dong Fang Chang Fan’s final base, once these wills broke through it, even if Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul was intact, he would have no way of winning, defeat was imminent.

“Impressive, impressive! These wills have the resolve to die, they are overwhelmed with rage due to betrayal, and most importantly, due to the heavenly tribulation’s influence, they were strengthened in an unspeakable way...”

At this moment, Dong Fang Chang Fan could feel deep animosity from heaven and earth.

He walked on a path that defied heaven, he tried to revive himself, the terrifying backlash caused him to be at death’s doors again, if he took a step back, it would be the abyss of failure.

But Dong Fang Chang Fan was not flustered under such crisis.

In fact, the more dangerous this situation became, the more his fighting spirit was stirred.

In his life, he had always gone against the norm, ever since he started his cultivation and led his tribe to prosperity, he had overcome countless difficulties, he had endured immense pressure, and defeated numerous foes.

“This time, my enemy is this world itself, even if my body dies of old age, and my soul shrivels, my will is never going to submit!”

Dong Fang Chang Fan understood: In a battle of wills, he could not feel discouraged or relaxed, he could not waver in the slightest.

Not only did he not waver, he was more determined now, his fighting spirit soared as his battle strength surged in this battle of wills.

This was the spirit that he had nurtured after countless trials and obstacles, he would never yield. The fighting spirit to resist until the very end was engraved into his bones.

At once, the counter attack of his will began, it swept down from the mind, pushing down forcefully.

The two sides were fighting using Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body as the battlefield.

Dong Fang Yu Liang’s head was Dong Fang Chang Fan’s headquarters. Even though he was almost forced back in by the nine wills, right now, his will was charging down from his headquarters, down the neck, all the way to his chest.

The Gu Immortals’ wills became even more furious, they defended together, like a tortoise shell, they had a strong defense at the chest, refusing to move backwards.

The battle of wills went into a stalemate.

The eight Gu Immortal wills were defending Dong Fang Yu Liang’s will, they were like eight thick shields protecting him.

Dong Fang Yu Liang’s will was growing in quantity.

Out of the ten wills, only Dong Fang Chang Fan and Dong Fang Yu Liang’s wills could recover and grow.

This was because the former had undergone possession, his soul was in this body and he occupied the mind, he could replenish his will from this source. The latter was the original owner of the body, the body was most compatible with him. The entire body was Dong Fang Yu Liang’s base, as long as his body was not destroyed, his will could recover.

The key to victory in this intense and dangerous battle of wills was in Dong Fang Yu Liang and Dong Fang Chang Fan, the wills of this pair of master and disciple.

Compared to them, even though the eight Gu Immortals’ wills were strong and abundant, they had no source to replenish themselves.

They knew this clearly, thus they chose to sacrifice themselves and protect Dong Fang Yu Liang’s will, to allow him to grow stronger.

“Oh no, I purposely left the injuries on my body and did not heal them, I wanted to slow down Dong Fang Yu Liang’s recovery speed. But if we continue this, my will is going to be expended continuously, while Dong Fang Yu Liang’s will is recovering and growing.”

Thinking of this, Dong Fang Chang Fan became calmer and even colder.

He knew that at this rate, he would definitely die.

By now, he had to bet with his life, to use his will to influence the other wills, and destroy them from the inside.

This method was the fiercest, and also the most dangerous one.

“But I have no choice... then let’s do it!” Dong Fang Chang Fan shouted, all of his will that had been gathered together broke apart, it flowed like a river as it swallowed the other nine wills, engulfing them.

The contest of the mind, a battle of willpower, everyone’s perseverance had led to the final clash at this moment.

“The hatred of murder is irreconcilable!” The Gu Immortals’ wills shouted.

“My Dong Fang tribe was destroyed in your hands...” Dong Fang Yu Liang was extremely furious.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s will was calm: “As long as I am alive, I can lead Dong Fang tribe back to its glorious days. Do you think I am not anguished... do you remember the story in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>... in order to walk out of ordinary abyss, Ren Zu abandoned even his own daughter!”

“How can you say he abandoned her, it was self Gu which caused trouble!” Dong

Fang Yu Liang’s will rebuked.

Dong Fang Chang Fan sneered coldly: “Whose self Gu is that? That is Ren Zu’s self Gu! Those were Ren Zu’s deepest thoughts! In order to stop being ordinary, it was not a problem if one sacrificed their wives or children, let alone merely the tribe?”

“As a dirty and despicable person, whatever you see is dirty and despicable!” The Gu Immortals’ wills shouted back angrily.

“Enough! Without me, Dong Fang Chang Fan, Dong Fang tribe would have perished or been annexed long ago, would you have been able to reach this point? Would Dong Fang tribe be as glorious and prosperous without me? I nurtured you all, I taught you, I gave you your achievements! I planted this tree, this was my achievement, and you! You were just sitting in the shade of my tree, eating the fruits of my labor!”

Such words were like thunder, dealing a huge blow to the nine wills.

The Gu Immortals’ wills were in a torrential wave, they could only be swept along.

All of the scenes in his life were playing in reverse, they quickly filled Dong Fang Chang Fan’s mind.

In Jade Pool blessed land, while engaging with the band of demons, the battle that was perilous and fatal...

The heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, his stubborn resistance, all to undergo possession...

At the moment of life and death, his ambition that did not waver, his vision of the sky that turned dark...

Deducing the location of Immortal Gu for all of the righteous path Gu Immortals, establishing the alliance agreement...

In a dark and gloomy hall, he sat alone as he made up his mind to defy heaven, he sneered: “Even if you prevent me from obtaining lifespan Gu, so what? If heaven wants me to die, then I will defy heaven!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 806: Outcome Concluded, Turning Around and Leaving!

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s recollection continued.

...

The heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity slowly ended.

He was covered in injuries.

Dong Fang tribe’s newly advanced Gu Immortal was paying respects to him in the air: “Thank you for your assistance, first supreme elder!”

He himself was stroking his beard: “Hehehe, that you can advance to Gu Immortal is my greatest wish, now, our Dong Fang tribe has strengthened again!”

...

The battle ended in defeat, the righteous path Gu Immortals were sighing to themselves.

“Oh, Dong Fang tribe cannot be suppressed.”

“Fighting alone against five, he really did it!”

“This wisdom path killer move will definitely become renowned in Northern Plains, what is this move?”

Starlight filled the sky, it was shining in brilliance, he stood in the air proudly as he laughed: “This move is called myriad star fireflies.”

...

“Oh? You killed a disciple of my sect, Immortal Crane Sect, but you want to cooperate with us?”

“Hehehe, in this world, there are only eternal benefits, there are no eternal enemies or friends. I have found out a thing or two about the arrangements that you in Central Continent have been planning in Northern Plains. Dong Fang tribe is being ostracized by the righteous path, to turn this situation around, how can a single Gu Immortal like me succeed? My aspiration is to promote my tribe and bring glory to our name. I am certain that you can sense my sincerity.” He said calmly.

“Hmph, you are just a poor Gu Immortal, on what basis can you cooperate with Immortal Crane Sect?”

“I have a lifespan extension method for Gu Immortals, it is named possession, and it was created by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.”

“What? Is that true?”

...

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, true inheritance secluded domain.

He was coughing blood, escaping pathetically among the array of flying true inheritance meteors, it was like a web of death.

But in the end, even after all his scheming, he did not get what he wanted, he smiled bitterly: “Forget it, I cannot force this anymore, I will choose you.”

...

When he was young.

“Spare me!” The opponent who brought him shame was kneeling on the ground, begging for mercy.

“You should not be like this.” He shook his head slowly, sighing.

“I was blind, I was too daring, please spare me, please spare me, young master Dong Fang!” His opponent sprawled on the ground, begging pitifully.

“If your attitude was more firm, and you were unmoved in the face of death, I would definitely have spared your dog life. But now!” He attacked abruptly, dealing a fatal blow!

The head flew up and landed on the ground, it rolled for a short distance.

Dying with a lingering grievance.

He turned around and left: “Too disappointing, why did I lose to a person like you back then?”

...

And also, that fortuitous encounter.

“Young man, what is your name?” The old beggar asked warmly, his hair was purple and messy, it was like uncut grass.

“Dong Fang Chang Fan.” He said.

“Chang Fan... this name is very incompatible with you.” The purple haired beggar’s eyes were dark like the abyss, he could see his own shadow from within them.

The beggar looked at him for a while before saying: “You are a good child, I will pass my most important inheritance to you. I believe that without any unexpected surprises, you will definitely make a name for yourself.”

...

Dong Fang tribe, Meng tribe, and Gong tribe, these three super forces had gathered for a fighting competition.

He was kneeling on the ground, in utter defeat.

His opponent mocked him: “Hahaha, Dong Fang Guang Yao, you want to bring honor to your tribe? Your Dong Fang tribe is going to be history! You only have one dying old Gu Immortal left. In some years, your Dong Fang tribe will be kicked out from the ranks of super forces. This is good too, as someone who shares the same bloodline of Giant Sun as you, I feel deeply ashamed for all of you.”

“You!!” He was staring with wide opened eyes, he struggled to get up.

Under everyone’s gazes, his opponent walked up and stepped on his head in the arena.

“Hahaha, Dong Fang Guang Yao, according to the rules of our battle, you have to promise me one thing! Hmm... I really hate your name, it does not suit you. I’ll give you a new name, for the rest of your life, you will use this name. Let’s go with Dong Fang Chang Fan! Hehehe, this suits you better.” His opponent said in a mocking tone.

He clenched his fists, his eyes were bright red, anger was exploding in his body, almost bursting his blood vessels.

But he was too weak.

“Okay... from today onwards, I will change my name to Dong Fang Chang Fan.” He squeezed these words out reluctantly.

“Hahaha, obedient, good! Did everyone hear that? From now on, he will be called Dong Fang Chang Fan!” His opponent raised his feet and walked away.

He was sprawled on the ground, his injuries were severe, he could not move.

But in his heart, he screamed — “I!”

“Even if I change my name to Dong Fang Chang Fan!!”

“I will become extraordinary, I will be able to move freely and unhindered over the world, I will manipulate the masses!!!”

“I swear, I will definitely take revenge for this with my own hands, in this life, I will lead Dong Fang tribe back to its glorious days. This is my aspiration, the aspiration of Dong Fang Chang Fan, heaven and earth can bear witness to it!!!!”

...

The nine wills that were engulfed experienced Dong Fang Chang Fan’s entire life in this instant. At once, they understood Dong Fang Chang Fan, they understood that deep within his heart, he was greatly anguished by the death of his tribesmen, from the loss of Jade Pool blessed land.

“This man...”

“Dong Fang Chang Fan!”

“Even if we are enemies, I must say this — incredible!”

“Fine, to lose to a person like this, it is not a dishonor.”

“Dong Fang tribe, in your hands, maybe it would rise up again!”

“Master...”

The nine wills conceded, some faded, even if some still resisted, they were engulfed by Dong Fang Chang Fan’s will.

“My name may be Dong Fang Chang Fan, but in this life, I refuse to be ordinary!”

“If a tree collapses, I will plant a new one.”

“Everyone, give me time.”

“I swear, I will definitely take revenge for this with my own hands, in this life, I will lead Dong Fang tribe back to its glorious days. This is my aspiration, the aspiration of Dong Fang Chang Fan, heaven and earth can bear witness to it!!!!”

This will’s voice sounded like a clap of thunder from the outside world.

Under this will, the nine wills collapsed, they no longer resisted him, they vanished into nothingness.

The battle of wills was extremely perilous, but he won in the end!

Dong Fang Chang Fan opened his eyes slowly, they were flickering with countless crystal lights.

“Eh?” His eyes opened wide, he realized that out of nowhere, a black robed Gu Immortal was in front of him!

It was Fang Yuan.

“How did you find me?” Dong Fang Chang Fan calmed down, although he seemed exhausted, he was extremely calm, it was as if he still had some sort of trump card.

Fang Yuan chuckled: “I guessed it, I chased after your split shadow and lost you. Just when I was about to leave, I had a thought, earlier when you killed Qie Shi Min, the situation was too strange. After checking the traces, I realized that you had dug an underground cavern not far away and hid here. It was all luck.”

“This is not luck.” Dong Fang Chang Fan shook his head slowly: “My immortal killer move could create thirty split shadows, but they did not waste much of your time. I purposely left Qie Shi Min’s corpse alone and intentionally let his Immortal Gu fly away, the traces were obvious but you did not go after them. The most dangerous place is the safest place. Above this cavern, there is an ordinary pink flower rabbit den, but that did not deceive you. Your intelligence is far scarier than your strength. It is really strange, why did you cultivate strength path instead of wisdom path?”

Fang Yuan’s lips twitched: “Heh, are these the final words of praise from a dying person?”

Dong Fang Chang Fan shook his head again, he smiled faintly: “It is a pity, a pity that you came slightly late. If you were earlier, even by a few breaths’ time, I would still be in the battle of wills, it would be extremely dangerous and I would not have time to resist you. But now...”

Dong Fang Chang Fan dragged out his words, he showed immense confidence in his expression.

“As expected of the number one wisdom path immortal in Northern Plains!” Fang Yuan saw this and praised.

His tone was calm, there was no killing intent as he said warmly, like he was talking to a good friend: “Man proposes, heaven disposes, if this method fails, I will leave immediately and acknowledge your superior strength, retreating from you in the future should we meet again.”

Saying so, he took out a person from his immortal aperture.

This was a young girl.

Having a delicate body and watery eyes, she wore a light yellow dress, she looked extremely gentle.

This was Dong Fang Qing Yu.

When Fang Yuan used the strength path giant hands to capture Dong Fang tribesmen, he unexpectedly found her, secretly keeping her in his immortal aperture.

Seeing this girl, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s expression changed.

In an instant, even this body started reacting!

The will in the body that was nearly dispersed became firm as ever, it rose up and instantly regained control.

“Sister!” He shouted.

But soon, even though it was just a breath’s time, Dong Fang Yu Liang’s will was suppressed again, Dong Fang Chang Fan regained control, his eyes were spewing fire as he looked at Fang Yuan with much anger.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, he assessed the situation as he said: “Dong Fang Yu Liang, your sister is in my hands, watch closely.”

Saying so, he stretched out his monstrous zombie hand and grabbed at the young girl’s left shoulder, pulling.

Crack!

Dong Fang Qing Yu’s body shook, before she let out a shrill scream.

Her entire left arm was ripped off, the huge wound was spewing blood.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s pupils shrunk until they were pin sized, he shouted angrily: “Damn it...”

Before he finished his words, he lost control again, Dong Fang Yu Liang emerged.

“Sister!! I will kill you, you dare to harm her, you actually dare to harm her!!!” Dong Fang Yu Liang screamed intensely, he had gone into madness, tears were bursting out from his eyes.

“Good, this is how it should be.” Fang Yuan laughed sinisterly, the strength path giant hand flew out.

The giant hand was about to grab Dong Fang Yu Liang, when a light pillar burst out from his body.

The light pillar stopped the strength path giant hand, Dong Fang Chang Fan screamed with much fear and anger: “A grand Gu Immortal going as far as to do this to a mortal, you are so despicable...”

Fang Yuan raised his head and laughed, his monstrous claw impacted.

With a loud sound, he pressed Dong Fang Qing Yu’s head into her chest completely!

“Sister!!!” Dong Fang Yu Liang screamed at the top of his lungs, this was the most cruel blow he had ever suffered in his life.

Dong Fang Chang Fan lost control, the defensive light pillar scattered.

Boom!

Fang Yuan grabbed with his hand, and Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body was smashed into meat paste.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul wanted to escape, but he had just gone through an intense battle, his soul was severely weakened, how could he escape?

Fang Yuan easily caught him.

The inheritance of the number one wisdom path immortal in Northern Plains was obtained!

An intense shock wave burst out, once the Gu Immortal died, the immortal aperture would land on the ground, forming an ownerless blessed land.

Fang Yuan had expected this, he used his methods and concealed this shock wave to the best of his ability.

He squinted as he watched the blessed land form, he did not intrude it forcefully.

When the blessed land was placed down completely, Fang Yuan let out a breath of turbid air, as he gave it a deep glance before turning around and leaving.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 807: People Who Refuse to be Ordinary

>, Chapter Three, Section Eighteen states:

Ren Zu stepped on his own road of life, he left the door of life and death, but ended up in ordinary abyss.

He walked around in the bottom of the abyss, moving forward aimlessly, after a long time, even though he wanted to get out of ordinary abyss, he could not find the exit.

In his anguish, cognition Gu gave him pointers: “Human, oh human, you walked in the footsteps of other existences, although this road is simple and safe, if you want to become extraordinary, and walk out of ordinary abyss, there is little hope if you follow other people’s trails. Since you walked on your own road of life, all the difficulties need to be challenged by you personally, you need to innovate and carve out your own footprints.”

After Ren Zu received this advice, he came to a realization, he was overjoyed as he followed cognition Gu’s instructions.

He walked out of the footsteps that already existed, he started to step on the ground that was not too firm.

The ground of ordinary abyss was not easy to walk on.

Some places were swampy, it was easy to get stuck in the mud, and the stench was foul. Some places were full of thorns, sharp pointy tips were everywhere, Ren Zu was full of injuries. In some parts of the ground, there were also blade Gu. When Ren Zu stepped on the ground, his soles were injured by the sharp blades, his injuries became larger as blood flowed, when he walked, the pain could be felt striking deep within himself.

The injuries on his feet caused huge pain, Ren Zu decided to walk softly.

But as he walked, Ren Zu lost his way in ordinary abyss, many times, he would end up on the same route, and waste extra effort traversing the same path.

Ren Zu gradually found out this problem, he was perplexed.

How could he not lose his way in the abyss?

Cognition Gu told him: “Ren Zu, if you do not want to lose your way, that is entirely up to you. You were afraid of pain, thus you walked softly, the footprints you created were too shallow. When ordinary winds blow in this ordinary abyss, mortal dust will be blown out, and when the dust settles, your footprints will be covered up. If you do not want to lose your way, you have to leave behind deep footprints, do you understand what I am saying?”

Ren Zu nodded, he understood.

Thus, he started to walk using heavy steps, each time, he stepped hard onto the ground, creating a deep footprint.

This way, every step he walked would have a deep and clear marking left by him. As long as Ren Zu saw these markings, he would know that these routes were already explored, and that there was no exit to ordinary abyss there.

But good things did not last, after a while, even the deepest footprints would be covered up by the dust.

Ren Zu was extremely troubled, he asked cognition Gu.

Cognition Gu gave him another suggestion: “Oh human, even though you left deep footprints, you purposely avoided those thorns and blades. Every time you saw them, you would take a detour, this will not do. You cannot ask to be extraordinary while leading a comfortable life.”

Ren Zu got the hint and gritted his teeth, he purposely walked on the paths filled with thorns and blades.

Every time he took a step, he would leave a deep footprint behind, no matter how painful it was, no matter how deep the scar was.

His sweat and blood seeped into the ordinary soil as he stepped heavily into it.

When he left his foot and moved forward, on his footprint, there would be a small stem of grass.

The name of this grass was – accomplishment.

In each of his footprints, there would be a small stem of grass.

The stems of grass did not fall when the wind blew, they could not be buried under dust, they grow stubbornly and could be preserved for much longer than the footprints.

“This way, I would not need to be afraid of losing my way.” Ren Zu was overjoyed, he gritted his teeth and endured the pain, he tenaciously walked on a road filled with thorns and blades, he was not afraid of bleed or perspiring.

He walked further and further, he no longer lost his way, he no longer walked in circles, he went into uncharted territories.

He used his blood and sweat to nourish the grass under him, they started growing with more vitality and became taller.

Gradually, it was no longer grass that grew from his footprints, they had turned into accomplishment trees.

As time passed, the small trees grew into larger trees, the leaves were lush and green, they were even bearing fruits.

Ren Zu was tired from walking, he leaned on a tree for rest, he ate the sweet and juicy fruits to recover his stamina.

As time passed, he had almost walked in every corner of ordinary abyss, he created a huge forest spanning everywhere he had traveled.

Ren Zu looked at the forest behind him and felt bliss and joy, but even when the forest covered the entirety of ordinary abyss, he did not find the way out of it.

He felt anxious and disappointed.

He plucked one fruit and put it in his mouth, the fruit no longer tasted sweet, instead, it was bitter and hard to swallow.

Ren Zu felt strange, he tried to find the reason and realized: Unknowingly, there had been a second heart growing in his body.

This heart was called discontent.

With this, anything that he ate would not taste sweet.

Ren Zu ate the bitter fruit as he looked at the boundless forest, he no longer felt joy or bliss.

At this time, his original heart, the heart of loneliness, spoke in self Gu’s voice: “Oh human, I have thought about a way to leave the abyss. You can plant a tall and grand accomplishment tree, as long as this tree is taller than ordinary abyss, you will be able to leave this place by climbing onto this tree.”

Ren Zu thought about it and his eyes shined: “That’s right, that is a good idea.”

But he was troubled again: “But how can I plant a tree that is so grand, taller than ordinary abyss?”

Self Gu said: “You used the blood from your feet to plant this forest, these are all ordinary trees. If you use the blood from your heart, you should be able to plant a great accomplishment tree. Buried under the ground of ordinary abyss are many blades, why don’t you use these blades to stab into your heart, the heart blood that flows out can be used to water the trees.”

Ren Zu tried the method that self Gu said.

The blade stabbed into his heart, it caused an immense pain.

This pain was hundreds and thousands of times greater than the ones in his body.

Eventually, the trees that were watered grew tall and large, they were much larger than the original trees.

Ren Zu felt pain but also joy, he continued to stab more blades into his heart, causing more heart blood to flow out.

The more blades he stabbed, the more heart blood flowed out, and the larger the trees he planted.

But even the tallest accomplishment tree was only half the height of ordinary abyss.

Ren Zu continued to persevere, as hope Gu accompanied him.

When the crown of the tree he planted reach the same height as ordinary abyss, the trunk of the tree cracked open, inside, a girl came out.

“Father, father!” The girl went into Ren Zu’s embrace, she was very adorable.

This was Ren Zu’s fourth child, called Boundless Forest Samsara.

Ren Zu was also overjoyed, he played around with his daughter. When Boundless Forest Samsara was hungry, he would get her fruits to eat.

“So sweet, so sweet.” Boundless Forest Samsara loved to eat fruits, she became healthy and well-fed.

She played in the forest every day, feeling immense joy.

Ren Zu still wanted to walk out of the ordinary abyss, Boundless Forest Samsara urged him many times: “Father, why must you exhaust yourself? Isn’t staying here great, there are trees to shelter us, fruits to feed us, we can play here forever, life will be peaceful until we die of old age.”

Ren Zu shook his head, his attitude was firm, he planted an even greater tree and the branches of the trees left ordinary abyss completely.

Boundless Forest Samsara cried, she held onto Ren Zu’s hands as she pleaded: “Father, don’t abandon me. I cannot climb trees, if you go, I will be left here alone, I do not know how to plant trees, there are limited fruits, one day, I will die of hunger.”

Ren Zu said: “Why would I abandon you? You are my daughter, I will carry you and leave this place.”

Thus, the father and daughter climbed the tree.

The higher they went, the more exhausted Ren Zu felt. Boundless Forest Samsara was a heavy burden, even without her, climbing the tree alone was very dangerous, not to mention carrying a person who could not climb the tree at all.

The bigger problem was, the tree started wavering and making cracking noises.

Cognition Gu told Ren Zu: “Oh no, Ren Zu, you are carrying your daughter, it is impossible to get out of ordinary abyss. This is your accomplishment tree, it cannot help others become extraordinary, even your daughter is no exception.”

Ren Zu shook his head: “I do not want to give up.”

Hope Gu also urged him: “Put her down, otherwise, you cannot leave this place. Even though you have the hearts of loneliness and discontent, after planting so many trees, your heart blood is already dry. This is your last hope! Look, the tree is about to collapse!”

Ren Zu waved his hand: “I still want to try.”

Self Gu saw that Ren Zu was stubborn from his actions, and seeing that the other Gu worms failed to convince him, it flew out.

“Ah, this is killing me!” Self Gu did not discuss with Ren Zu, it bit on Boundless Forest Samsara’s hand.

Boundless Forest Samsara shouted in pain, she was furious, she wanted to kill self Gu.

But this way, she let go of her hands, with the shaking tree, she fell off Ren Zu’s back, crashing and tumbling, after breaking her fall from many branches, she landed on the ground, she was in great pain as she started crying.

“Daughter!” Ren Zu shouted, wanting to go down.

“It’s too late, the tree is going to fall!” Self Gu pushed Ren Zu, he took a huge step forward subconsciously, he left ordinary abyss!

The tree fell.

Ren Zu was at the edge of the cliff, he lost the way back, he shouted helplessly: “Daughter, I will return to save you.”

Boundless Forest Samsara cried, she said with much sadness and helplessness: “Father, how could you be so cruel to leave me behind to live here alone, I am so scared!”

Ren Zu heard her cries and felt extremely anguished, he checked around ordinary abyss, but could not find a way in.

“It is no use.” Self Gu said: “Your accomplishment tree, even if it has fallen, is proof of your grandeur. A grand person is extraordinary, how can a person who is not ordinary enter ordinary abyss?”

...

Hu Immortal blessed land, Dang Hun palace.

Fang Yuan closed > in his hands, he sighed as he had a complex expression.

Water flowed downwards, while humans moved towards higher ground. Discontented with being ordinary, this was a normal human trait. Dong Fang Chang Fan was like this, Fang Yuan was also like this.

“In this aspect, you and I are the same type of people.” Fang Yuan said plainly.

In front of him, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul was restrained, he was smiling coldly now as he tried to speak — but because he lost his body, he could not make a sound. However, the resonance caused by his soul was captured by Fang Yuan.

He heard the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal in Northern Plains say: “If you want to search my soul, go ahead! But to receive my inheritance, hehe, it is harder than you think.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 808: Unyielding Spirit, More Soul Searching

“Oh? You are so confident...” Fang Yuan smiled.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul had already become his captive and his life or death was held in Fang Yuan’s hands, but he still had such confidence.

Fang Yuan, however, was unconcerned and started soul searching.

For a moment, Dang Hun palace was shrouded in darkness, cold wind blew and ghostly cries could be heard lingering in one’s ears.

In the bleak and strange wind, Fang Yuan revealed his original appearance, a towering immortal zombie body in a greenish-black color. A malevolent appearance, sharp fangs, blood-red eyes, eight arms that stretched out with their sharp and large monstrous claws – one slowly moving towards Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul involuntarily wavered for a moment at Fang Yuan’s vicious appearance, but it shortly calmed down and let Fang Yuan’s claw grab it.

A soul was not corporeal, but Fang Yuan’s claws firmly grabbed on to Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul.

Afterwards, he activated certain Gu worms in his immortal aperture.

Soul search!

A formless force emitted from the monstrous claw to Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul immediately started trembling from the bursts of pain that were assaulting it.

The soul search ended after a while. Fang Yuan pulled back his claw and let go of Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul.

He was able to plunder much information, but his brows furrowed slightly.

There was a lot of information obtained by him, but none of it was of importance.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul turned dull and looser, no longer having the firm compactness and luster from before. However, it revealed a satisfied expression as it resonated, sending its message.

In Fang Yuan’s ears, he ‘heard’ Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul’s snickering: “Do you realize now? I might be a wisdom path Gu Immortal, but soul path and wisdom path are closely connected to each other, I have also delved into soul path, modifying my immortal soul. Your soul searching method is only a mortal technique. That said, even if you had soul path Immortal Gu, I can conceal the information you want.”

After a brief pause, Dong Fang Chang Fan continued: “Right now, I don’t have a physical body; my soul would not receive nourishment. The more you soul search, the more my soul will be consumed. I have plenty of experiences, I can conceal the information up to the moment my soul completely disappears, you simply won’t be able to plunder my wisdom path inheritance or my possession technique.”

He then changed the topic: “But we can make a deal. I will give you my wisdom path inheritance, possession technique and other information. You would assist in my rebirth by finding a physical body for me. Don’t worry, I only need a mortal Gu Master. Since I lost to you, I have to admit my defeat. We can set up an oath, Fairy Li Shan fought together with you, if you don’t believe me, you should believe in mountain pledge Gu, right?”

Fang Yuan smiled: “Truly worthy of Dong Fang Chang Fan, even in this state, you still haven’t given up and want to make a comeback. It’s a pity that I have soul strengthening method and can take all the time I need to slowly search your soul. Sooner or later, I will get what I want.”

“Soul strengthening method? Hehehe.” Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul chuckled, “It seems that you don’t have a great amount of understanding regarding soul path. I intentionally remodeled my soul for the possession. It increased my chances of succeeding in possession, but also led to normal methods being useless in nourishing and healing my soul, unless you use immortal healing methods. What I am saying is not a lie, you can try as much as you want.”

“Oh? Is that so...” The faint smile on Fang Yuan’s face faded as he took out airsac Gu.

As far as Dong Fang Chang Fan was concerned, since Fang Yuan’s soul searching method was only at mortal level, his soul healing methods should also be ordinary.

He was even more sure of his estimation when he saw Fang Yuan pull out a mortal Gu.

However, when Fang Yuan broke the airsac Gu and also crumbled the guts Gu contained within, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul immediately received nourishment, his soul regained part of its compactness and luster.

“Thi... what is this Gu? It is only a mortal Gu, but it can heal my soul?” For a moment, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul intensely shook, showing an astonished look.

Fang Yuan relaxed when he saw this, and smiled: “Guess.”

Dong Fang Chang Fan was an extraordinary character, even if only his soul remained, his intelligence was still there.

The soul calmed down before resonating shortly after: “At the mortal level, there is only one thing that can influence my immortal soul – Dang Hun mountain’s guts Gu. What you crushed just now should be airsac Gu bought from treasure yellow heaven?”

“Astute. But you only got it half right. Airsac Gu is my creation and the guts Gu business is also mine.”

“What? It’s you!” Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul blurted out, the cruel reality striking at it fiercely.

The soul did not resonate anymore, sinking into deathly silence.

Dong Fang Chang Fan was filled with despair, he knew he was truly done for this time by landing in the hands of someone like Fang Yuan.

He was like meat on the chopping block, Fang Yuan could butcher him whenever he wanted. And Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul would not be able to change the situation even if he resisted!

After using guts Gu to heal Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul completely, Fang Yuan continued to soul search.

Dong Fang Chang Fan resisted extremely hard, thus the information Fang Yuan obtained was useless for the most part.

However, no matter how strong the resistance was, it could not withstand the increasing numbers of soul searching attempts.

Finally, valuable information was obtained by Fang Yuan bit by bit.

After spending a long while, Fang Yuan put an end to the soul searching, and pieced together the valuable information among them, forming into detailed information about the resources in Jade Pool blessed land.

“Jade Pool blessed land contains three large Gu breeding grounds. Regretful spiders are ranked at the second while the one with the largest scale are large cave toads! Their numbers are three times that of the regretful spiders with extremely large numbers of rank five large cave toad Gu, but Dong Fang tribe left them behind in order to induce the creation of an immortal level large cave toad Gu? Truly a big ambition.”

“In the far east of Jade Pool blessed land, there is a pool which looks ordinary but connects to deep underground. Inside lives a desolate beast horse – a rarely seen ten thousand li zhi horse. This horse has vigorous life force and is extremely useful. Not only is every part of it Immortal Gu refinement material, if it is raised underground for a long time, its sweat after dropping on the ground will gradually grow into a zhi forest. One ten thousand li zhi horse can mean the endless creation of zhi forests.”

“Oh? There is this kind of salt bed as well. Amazing, using the ancient desolate beast grey life jellyfish to guard and condense the salinity, forming into a giant salt bed that can produce an immortal material, profound grey salt. A salt bed that specifically produces profound grey salt, truly a great move!”

“Jade Pool blessed land also changes between day and night. After three days of a bright sky, there is a day of dark night. After the night descends, some areas of Jade Pool blessed land will crack and split, revealing two deep pools that were underground. One is a jade pool which, although not big, is filled with an immortal material, desolate jade! Another is canine pool, in which the walls and bottom are formed from the polished teeth of an immemorial desolate beast qilin. Under moonlight, it will create moon fangs. This immortal material is like teeth but is as soft as water, moonlight shines from its surface constantly and it is extremely precious.”

“Besides this, there is also an ancient desolate beast flying frost antelope, an immortal material hidden underground called hidden dragon beard, the immortal material wind whistling bronze inside bronze pool...”

Dong Fang Chang Fan was Dong Fang tribe’s first supreme elder, and naturally was extremely aware of the distribution of resources in Jade Pool blessed land.

Fang Yuan was greatly moved as he browsed through these pieces of information, and had the impulse to make a trip to Jade Pool blessed land to plunder the goods.

But he restrained this impulse.

During this evening in Northern Plains, he had killed Dong Fang Chang Fan and captured his soul before moving towards Jade Pool blessed land to plunder it again. However, when he reached the blessed land, he discovered the fires of combat raging, intense battles were everywhere around him.

Dozens of righteous and demonic path Gu Immortals were plundering and fighting like they had gone mad, the situation was extremely heated.

Fang Yuan had used up a lot of his immortal essence and also had to conceal himself, add in that he was alone, with Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan chasing after Miniscule Mountain, and also had attracted Old Lord Can Yang’s suspicion, he sensibly chose to leave.

A sharp light flashed past Fang Yuan’s eyes: “Jade Pool blessed land is like a piece of large juicy meat right now, which is stirring all the Gu Immortals up, luring them towards it. Forget it, I might have rank seven battle strength, but my movement and defense aspects are rather inferior, and the situation is also not that good... heh, Dong Fang Chang Fan is still plotting against me. Intentionally exposing this information to me to make me tread into the muddy water that is Jade Pool blessed land!”

Fang Yuan’s situation was quite bad, it seemed that he was safe, but there were dangers lurking everywhere.

He was the main culprit for the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, and was being actively searched for by all forces.

Sha Huang was a false identity of his, but it was exposed shortly after the auction. Dragon Commander Ye Cha had suffered losses from Feng Jiu Ge’s group, and had started to investigate Sha Huang, Fang Yuan currently did not dare to go to Zombie Alliance.

In this trip to seize the wisdom path inheritance, Fang Yuan had further exposed many things, giving more clues for his enemies to deduce.

“But this risk was necessary! If I just sit by passively, I will be exposed sooner or later. The only correct path is to fight vigorously and make every second count in order to strengthen myself. I was able to obtain a complete wisdom path inheritance in this trip. Ever since I connected luck, my luck has been rather good, I only need to seize the opportunities that come. When I grasp this wisdom path inheritance, I should be able to take precautions against wisdom path deductions. With this, I will be able to try to find a way out by arranging plans, and greatly delay the time before I am exposed while continuing to hide.”

Fang Yuan resisted the temptation of Jade Pool blessed land, and rested for a while.

Soul searching could injure the target’s soul and the soul would need to be healed. But even to the user, soul searching could make their soul become extremely agitated, and this could not be healed by guts Gu, but rather required rest and sleep to pacify the soul.

After resting, Fang Yuan continued soul searching.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul felt an icy chill when he saw Fang Yuan was still here and was not tempted by Jade Pool blessed land.

Fang Yuan’s soul searching lasted for a long while this time.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s resisted even more intensely, while Fang Yuan’s soul search was only a mortal method, increasing the difficulty sharply.

However, Fang Yuan was very patient; if one time did not work, he would try ten times, a hundred times.

After a long time spent soul searching, Fang Yuan obtained the memory of Dong Fang Chang Fan remodeling the immemorial ruin bat’s corpse, not only did he obtain the method of enslaving phantom beasts, but also the secret of turning a normal Gu formation into a phantom formation.

No matter which piece of information, they all had enormous value!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 809: Arranging Three Treasures, Earthly Calamity Descends Soon

Fang Yuan did not conceal the joy on his face.

“Making a Gu formation turn phantom is something that Dong Fang Chang Fan himself deduced and polished from some ancient texts. His phantom path attainment should be at master level. He was able to remodel the immemorial ruin bat’s corpse into a corpse mountain, which means his space path attainment was also at master level. He truly was not a simple character!”

Fang Yuan was especially interested in the method of controlling the phantom beast army.

Several desolate level phantom beasts, although they might only be at rank six, but relying on their ability to turn into phantom, they could pester a rank seven Gu Immortal.

Fang Yuan could not help but think that if he had a group of phantom beasts, his battle strength was sure to rise by a large degree.

After careful consideration, he discovered the method of controlling the phantom beast army did not have a wide range of applications.

The main condition was to remodel the immemorial ruin bat’s corpse into a corpse mountain. Afterwards, with the corpse mountain as the base, it needed to use the immemorial ruin bat’s power to control this phantom beast army.

Fang Yuan coldly snorted: “This is Dong Fang Chang Fan’s attempt at trying to harm me again! He knows I can uproot mountains, thus he wanted to use the ruin bat corpse mountain to lure me to take a risk. The ruin bat corpse mountain was mostly destroyed by the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, with its aura gone, it would no longer deter beasts, that area should already be filled with many desolate and ancient desolate beasts feasting on the ruin bat’s corpse. It would be a stupid move to use Pulling Mountain to snatch food from these desolate and ancient desolate beasts!”

Fang Yuan rested for a while before soul searching Dong Fang Chang Fan for the third time.

Dong Fang Chang Fan was filled with fury and hatred for Fang Yuan, it was this man that made all his schemes turn into nothing, destroying his grand plan of dominance and turning all his efforts into naught, as if they were a dream.

Despite his foresight and wisdom, he had fallen so far that he had nothing to rely on now. The disparity between the two sides was too big. These two attempts he made were actually very crude, aiming at using the greed in human nature and luring Fang Yuan to make a mistake.

Compared to the arrangements he made while alive, it was a difference like that of heaven and earth.

However, Dong Fang Chang Fan only had his soul remaining, it was understandable that his abilities had dropped greatly.

Fang Yuan was not tricked and after resting appropriately, his third soul search finally yielded him the thing he wanted the most — Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance.

What Fang Yuan had not imagined was that Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance was actually somewhat connected to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Naturally, it was not an inheritance left behind by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable herself.

If it was left behind by an Immortal Venerable, Dong Fang Chang Fan would not have fallen into such a state.

Originally, this inheritance was left behind in ancient times by a rank eight star path Gu Immortal of Heavenly Court. He was adept in exploring secrets, and after obtaining some secrets of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, he tried to analyze her abilities, thus creating this imitation.

This Gu Immortal was a star path Gu Immortal, but his creation was of wisdom path. This wisdom path inheritance used star thought Gu as its foundation, and was related very close to star path, as it entered into wisdom path via star path. Even the refinement of star thought Gu used starlight Gu as the main material.

The more Fang Yuan comprehended, the greater his joy, as he felt this journey was truly worth it!

This wisdom path inheritance did not have any specific strong points, other than being particularly good in making deductions.

Dong Fang Chang Fan relied on this to deduce the phantom formation, methods of controlling the phantom beast army and so on.

“This wisdom path inheritance is so comprehensive that I have an urge to switch to wisdom path.” Fang Yuan sighed.

This harvest was truly extremely bountiful.

A complete inheritance, regardless of which path, covered all aspects like attack, defense, healing, movement, investigation and others.

All of these aspects might not be too outstanding, but there was no shortcomings either, and would not be easily countered by others.

Since Fang Yuan’s rebirth, his cultivation in strength path was formed together from bits and pieces, or was modified by himself, and was not an inheritance of a predecessor.

This wisdom path inheritance’s true value was the same as the blood path true inheritance Fang Yuan obtained in his previous life.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, it was because of this blood path true inheritance that he had a platform to make his rise.

One can well imagine the value of this wisdom path inheritance from this.

Blood Sea Ancestor was not even a rank eight Gu Immortal and also had divided his true inheritances into seven parts, thus this wisdom path inheritance Fang Yuan obtained was even more valuable.

“A pity that I obtained this inheritance a bit late. I am already walking on strength path, even though I still have the first aperture, it died after I turned into an immortal zombie and cannot be cultivated.”

However, Fang Yuan reconsidered.

If he had truly cultivated this wisdom path inheritance earlier, he might not have necessarily created the immortal killer move myriad self.

The future prospects in strength provided by the immortal killer move myriad self was certainly greater than the future prospects in strength provided by this wisdom path inheritance.

“It is also because I cultivate strength path, that I could kill Dong Fang Chang Fan and seize this wisdom path inheritance. How could there be effect without cause?”

Fang Yuan shook his head, clearing up his disorganized thoughts.

Regardless, this wisdom path inheritance came at an opportune time and was extremely suitable for Fang Yuan.

Why was that?

There was only one reason, that was — rank nine wisdom Gu.

Hu Immortal blessed land was holding wisdom Gu. Fang Yuan would get unlimited inspiration under the light of wisdom, deducing many immortal Gu recipes, immortal killer moves and so on.

But this had one large disadvantage, the thoughts in his mind were consumed extremely quickly!

Previously, when he had delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, he had to spend precious green grape immortal essence for large amounts of joyful will to support this consumption. He sold delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu in the auction and although he earned good profits, malicious thought Gu and memory thought Gu both could not bear the intense consumption.

Even though Fang Yuan created a stone nest particularly for large numbers of hairy men to refine Gu with almost no rest, having them supplied with the greatest speed, it still could not match a session of consumption under the light of wisdom.

This was the largest obstacle restricting Fang Yuan from making deductions.

But it was alright now. With this wisdom path inheritance, Fang Yuan could use a smaller price and have higher efficiency in deducing all kinds of things.

“Land spirit, where are you?” Fang Yuan lightly tapped his foot.

“Master, I am here.” Little Hu Immortal appeared in front of Fang Yuan, instantly.

Her small face was flushed red, tender and plump. Her snow white furry tail was wagging happily at Fang Yuan’s summon.

Fang Yuan spoke: “Immediately stop the second stone nest’s refinement of malicious thought Gu and change it to refining star thought Gu. This is the Gu recipe, go make the arrangement.”

“Understood, master.”

“Have you already made appropriate arrangements for the resources I brought?” Fang Yuan asked.

The moment he returned to Hu Immortal blessed land, he had taken out all the resources from his immortal aperture and had them arranged in Hu Immortal blessed land, the concrete work was handed to Little Hu Immortal.

His immortal aperture was filled with death energy. It was okay for temporarily storing these resources, but if they were stored for a long time, they would be pervaded by death energy, which could cause the value of most of the resources to drop by a large extent.

“Everything has been arranged, master. The air bubble fish group has been placed in the east of the blessed land, together with the previous air bubble fish.

There are a lot of air bubble fish and the starlight firefly Gu are above them, in the future, the production of starlight firefly Gu will definitely increase greatly!”

“As for that group of close to a million dragonfish, they are temporarily placed in other small lakes. After some time, we can send rockmen to dig a large lake and put the dragonfish group together, their reproduction will increase even more this way.”

“For literature carps, I specially dug a small pool to store them away from plain sight.”

“Other than those that died, there are over a thousand living eerie fire dragon pythons which have already been joined together with the few we had before. They have occupied a large territory in the southern part of the blessed land.”

“Oh, there is also oil water and some other common resources which have been temporarily placed in Dang Hun palace’s storage rooms. The regretful spider group has been placed in the northern part of the blessed land, which has a long and narrow terrain. I spent a great deal of effort to make the proper arrangements.”

Little Hu Immortal eagerly raised her head, with an expression that said she wanted to be praised for her work.

Fang Yuan smiled, and praised: “Ah, our Little Hu Immortal is the most capable.”

Little Hu Immortal smiled, her large and round eyes curved into a crescent moon-like shape, and her snow-white tail rapidly wagged. For a moment, she was carried away with happiness, lightly hopping to Fang Yuan’s foot and hugging his thick calf.

She pressed her tender face on Fang Yuan’s calf, before raising her head and looking at Fang Yuan with her large watery eyes, her face flushed red with excitement as she spoke adoringly: “Master, you are amazing, you brought so many good things this time. We can earn a lot, Hu Immortal blessed land has never been so wealthy!”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily and picked Little Hu Immortal like picking a kitten, and placed her on his broad shoulder: “Don’t worry, good times are still ahead.”

Little Hu Immortal nodded multiple times, having complete faith in Fang Yuan’s ability. But with somewhat of a worried tone, she reminded: “Master, master, I have something to report, that desolate beast shark fin wolf you brought just now is not in such a good state. It is always hiding inside the pool and doesn’t hunt actively, and it even starts sobbing sometimes.”

Fang Yuan coughed, and said in an indifferent tone: “Don’t worry, this is because it suffered quite a big setback. I have experience in raising wolf groups, it will gradually recover with time.”

“Master, there is still another matter I need to remind you of. You should not forget that the blessed land’s earthly calamity will arrive soon.” Little Hu Immortal said.

Fang Yuan slightly frowned: “You can relax, I have always been keeping it in mind, how can I dare to forget such a thing?”

The time difference between Hu Immortal blessed land and the outside world was five to one. Earthly calamities happened once every ten years, in the outside world of Central Continent and Northern Plains, over a year had already passed.

Two years in the outside world was ten years in Hu Immortal blessed land.

The previous earthly calamity was the desolate beast swamp crab, which carried the Immortal Gu, Gruel Mud. What would this earthly calamity be?

“Last time, I was only a mortal Gu Master. Now, I am already a rank six Gu Immortal with many Immortal Gu, immortal killer moves, and allies, as well as the newly obtained wisdom path inheritance. I have great assurance in passing the earthly calamity.” Fang Yuan was not worried, he had many trump cards and resources, a vast difference from when he faced the previous earthly calamity, thus he was confident.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 810: Chang Fan Requests To Cooperate

Fang Yuan inquired the land spirit about the arrangements of the Dong Fang tribe Gu Master captives.

Fang Yuan had killed Dong Fang Qing Yu and many others, but he still had about one to two hundred Dong Fang tribe survivors.

The land spirit replied that she had temporarily set up a prison underground, nearby a rockman tribe. She then asked if these captives were to be sold?

These people were not easy to control and make use of. They would not obediently listen and forcing them to refine Gu like hairy men would be careless, it could instead result in those that were seeking death to sabotage the refinement and cause problems.

Fang Yuan shook his head and instructed: “First take away all the mortal Gu on them and keep them in confinement. Give them a little food every day, as if they are pets being raised. I have other uses for these captives, but there is no hurry.”

“Yes, master.”

“How many immortal essence stones do I have left?” Fang Yuan asked.

“One hundred and thirty seven.” The land spirit immediately replied.

Fang Yuan nodded. Unknowingly, the quantity of his immortal essence stones had once again passed one hundred.

The biggest reason was because of the increase in price and quantity of the guts Gu traded, every month, after removing the shared profits, Fang Yuan earned ninety-two immortal essence stones in pure profit.

Thus, going above one hundred had become easy.

Fang Yuan had also instructed the land spirit to pay attention to treasure yellow heaven, buying any cheaply sold fox groups in order to raise them in Hu Immortal blessed land, in this way, he would be making use of the specialty of Hu Immortal blessed land and increasing its foundation.

Little Hu Immortal had taken action a few times and bought two to three fox groups, and if not for that, the amount of immortal essence stones would be even higher.

Having a monopoly on the business of guts Gu, where there was a lot more demand than supply, it was easy to earn immortal essence stones.

Fang Yuan thought for a while before putting aside twenty immortal essence stones in preparation for unexpected situations, and seventy immortal essence stones to turn into green grape immortal essence. In the series of battle to seize the wisdom path inheritance, he had completely used his previous seventy-seven beads of green grape immortal essence, it needed to be urgently replenished.

He gave all the remaining immortal essence stones to Little Hu Immortal to purchase large amounts of Gu refinement materials, and also asked her to particularly focus on the refinement of star thought Gu.

“I can’t sell oil water, I plan to use it in the earlier stages of the Refinement Path Convention. Nor can I sell air bubble fish, they are needed to raise the production of starlight firefly Gu. Literature carps are precious, but their quantity is rather few, I need to wait for the proper buyer. But eerie fire dragon pythons, regretful spiders and dragonfish are in in huge quantities, they can be turned into business projects. Especially dragonfish, they can be directly sold.” Fang Yuan thought inwardly.

These three resources had appeared at a good time.

Up to this point, Fang Yuan only had one source of revenue, that was the guts Gu trade.

Owning a monopoly business was simply like owning a goose that laid golden eggs.

But it was only one business, after all, and the production of guts Gu was limited, Fang Yuan had to be very careful in how he used his immortal essence stones. Although he gotten past the initial dangerous state from when he had just become Gu Immortal, and now had established his foothold, balancing his income and expenditure. However, he did not have additional capacity to progress further. Currently, Fang Yuan simply did not dare to refine Immortal Gu, he had insufficient foundation.

Fang Yuan needed to be constantly ahead, he had to get rid of his immortal zombie body and revive, deduce all kinds of Gu recipes, killer moves, deal with all sorts of enemies, and multi-cultivating wisdom path, ensuring no shortcomings in all aspects, just a single source of revenue could not satisfy his ever increasing needs.

“If I can operate these three businesses, it would be like I have extra support, the earnings of immortal essence stones would satisfy my current needs, as well as greatly speed up my progress in all aspects! Dong Fang tribe was, after all, a super force with a strong foundation, after plundering it, my future prospects have immediately broadened.”

Fang Yuan sighed and had the thought of soul searching Dong Fang Chang Fan again.

These economic projects were Dong Fang tribe’s business secrets. For instance, how to group up eerie fire dragon pythons and greatly increase their reproduction, how to raise dragonfish, what to feed them, which environment is most suitable, what to do if they got sick.

To form a source of revenue was very difficult. It involved many aspects and everyone would have their own tricks of the trade and secrets. Back then, to cultivate star fragment grass, Fang Yuan had to purchase the insights and experience of a few star path Gu Immortals, and also pay some immortal essence stones.

As Dong Fang tribe’s first supreme elder, Dong Fang Chang Fan surely knew the business secrets of Dong Fang tribe.

His soul was an enormous treasury and its value was certainly not limited to the wisdom path inheritance.

Thereafter, Fang Yuan attempted to get these business secrets in his fourth soul search.

However, what he obtained this time was Dong Fang Chang Fan’s possession technique, not only the original version Dong Fang Chang Fan obtained in true inheritance secluded domain when he was young, but also the method he had modified, as well as the method of extracting origin cores of Gu Immortals of the same bloodline to immediately advance to Gu Immortal.

“I can revive using this method. It requires people of the same bloodline... hmm, is that little brother of mine still alive? He is a ready-made possession target. But even if he is dead, it doesn’t matter, I can still use blood path methods on a woman to give birth to the next generation. But this possession method will anger heaven and earth, the resulting heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity will be terrifying. The main reason for Dong Fang Chang Fan’s fall was due to this. Moreover, if I possess someone, even if I advance to Gu Immortal, my new body won’t have the second aperture.”

The second aperture’s value was enormous, Fang Yuan did not want to give it up for the time being.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul saw Fang Yuan was moved, and suddenly broke its previous silence, resonating once again as it ‘spoke’: “You are an immortal zombie, it will be difficult beyond belief for you to regain life. Your cultivation has stopped and it will forever be at this level. The possession technique is extremely suitable for you! Of course, I now know this method provokes the envy of heaven and anger of earth, and is extremely dangerous. But I can improve the method to hide from heaven, and you can also possess a mortal to reduce the anger of heaven and earth, thereby reducing the might of the calamities and tribulations.”

“You are seeking death if you directly use this possession technique, I am the best example of it. But I now have the most precious experience to improve the method, and I can definitely succeed. In fact, if not for you, I would have already succeeded! How is it, we can cooperate.”

Dong Fang Chang Fan proposed cooperation to Fang Yuan.

He could sense Fang Yuan wanted to revive, and in fact, there was no immortal zombie that did not want to regain life.

Not waiting for Fang Yuan to speak, he continued: “It will benefit both of us if we cooperate, while it will result in harm if we are divided. What are you still worried about? I am merely a soul, do you think I can still harm you?”

While speaking, Dong Fang Chang Fan was constantly agitating Fang Yuan, there was a vague hint of goading him into action.

Fang Yuan smiled: “As expected of Dong Fang Chang Fan, I thought your silence meant that you had completely admitted your defeat. I hadn’t thought that the moment you saw hope and an opportunity, you’d immediately latch on to it. I should learn from this.”

“Oh? I have already said that you and I are the same kind of people, we both have lofty ambitions and aspirations.” The soul resonated.

However, Fang Yuan changed the topic: “Precisely because we are of the same kind, I cannot let you live. Don’t worry, once I extract everything of value out of you, I will destroy your soul and make sure it completely disappears from the world. People like us, the fewer there are, the better.”

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul was stupefied, he had not expected Fang Yuan’s killing intent towards him would be so deep and firm. He resonated intensely, not giving up as he forced a laugh: “Hahaha, you cannot fool me, you are already interested!”

Fang Yuan agreed: “I am interested. I believe you definitely have the ability to improve this possession technique because you have master level attainment in blood path and phantom path, grandmaster level in wisdom path and also the most precious experience of using the possession. There is an extremely large gap between my attainment and yours, and I am sure it is impossible for me to improve this technique even if I have your wisdom path inheritance.”

The attainment levels of using Gu were divided into five main levels.

Ordinary, master, grandmaster, great grandmaster and supreme grandmaster.

Master was the level when one’s use of Gu worm advances to the level of an art. This level could only be reached if one had abundant talent or constantly trained and increased their accumulation.

Grandmaster level was when one had a very profound grasp of their path. With their deep foundation, they could use inductive reasoning to utilize their own path’s methods to make use of the specialty traits and advantages of other paths.

Dong Fang Chang Fan had attainment of wisdom path grandmaster, flying quasi-grandmaster, space path master, soul path master, enslavement path master and blood path master.

Fang Yuan had attainment of blood path grandmaster, strength path grandmaster, refinement path quasi-grandmaster, flying quasi-grandmaster, enslavement path master and transformation path master. As for soul path, space path, time path, dream path and others, he was only at ordinary level, and for phantom path, he had not even touched upon it.

Generally speaking, all Gu Immortals had at least master level attainment in flying. Because flying was extremely important and even if they had not grasped it while they were mortals, after becoming Gu Immortals, they would definitely spend a lot of time to study and master flying ability.

Fang Yuan had grandmaster attainment in two paths, but one was from his previous life’s five hundred years of accumulation, while the other was gained from using the superiority of his rebirth, taking constant risks and having fortuitous encounters.

Everyone had their own specialties, Fang Yuan’s attainment levels were not enough to deduce and improve the possession technique, but Dong Fang Chang Fan was a specialist in it.

It was due to this that Fang Yuan could not do it while Dong Fang Chang Fan could achieve it. Thus, he had confidence in persuading Fang Yuan and requesting cooperation.

Soul search could only give memories, secrets and so on, but it could not provide attainment levels.

Attainment levels were a person’s unique thinking, their emotional experiences, their insights and experiences of using Gu and so on, summed up and condensed. They were their comprehension of the Great Dao of heaven and earth.

Currently, there was only one method to acquire the attainment levels of others, by successfully exploring their dream realm.

Fang Yuan knew he could gain extraordinary benefits if he cooperated with Dong Fang Chang Fan, but he had an even greater fear of the consequences of working with this person, Dong Fang Chang Fan. If he cooperated with this wisdom path Gu Immortal, who knew how he would be plotted against and betrayed.

This was especially the case because Fang Yuan was the true culprit of the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. The external situation was extremely bad, and if Dong Fang Chang Fan learned of this and made use of it, he certainly could cause Fang Yuan to die a terrible death.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 811: Shocking Secret, Giving Up Cleanse Soul

Fang Yuan’s expression was solemn, he continued to search Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul, no matter how much he persuaded him.

This session was the longest so far, Fang Yuan searched Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul until all of his secrets were exposed.

He learned about Dong Fang Chang Fan’s life, the countless experiences he had.

“Gu Immortal Han Dong is long since dead, after the phantom beast dragged him into the corpse mountain, he was supposed to be a captive, but he died in the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity.”

“So it turns out that Dong Fang Chang Fan had made arrangements in Jade Pool blessed land, using the rank six Immortal Gu House Thatched Hut as the core. But at the crucial moment, Thatched Hut went missing! This allowed us, the demonic path cultivators, to invade Jade Pool blessed land.”

“As expected... the moment I destroyed Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body, and Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul left it, he self-detonated all of the Immortal Gu in his aperture!”

“White lotus giant silkworm Gu! To think that Dong Fang Chang Fan used large amounts of white lotus giant silkworm Gu to improve his immortal soul... within his immortal aperture, there is still a batch of white lotus giant silkworm Gu left.”

“Dong Fang Chang Fan, looking at his whole life, he was unresigned to being ordinary, he was first a hero, then a champion.”

“Eh? This is — Purple Mountain True Monarch! Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s time path inheritance was from this person. To think that Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance was also from this mysterious old man!!!”

The stream of secrets assaulted Fang Yuan one after another.

After a long time, Fang Yuan finally reacted, he had completely taken in this huge amount of information.

Purple Mountain True Monarch, this was just the name that Fang Yuan gave to the mysterious purple haired beggar. This mysterious old man seemed to have countless precious inheritances, his background must be very profound, his motives were unknown, it could be said that he played an extremely important role in Dong Fang Chang Fan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s achievements today.

For now, he shall be called Purple Mountain True Monarch.

In Fang Yuan’s memories of his previous life, he had no recollection of this Purple Mountain True Monarch, even during the five regions chaotic war, he did not appear, did he hide himself, did he have another identity, or did he die of old age? According to Dong Fang Chang Fan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s situations, it seemed that this man was extremely old.

“Forget Purple Mountain True Monarch for now, my cleanse soul Immortal Gu needs food, the amount of white lotus giant silkworm Gu is not enough, but it can alleviate my current problem. I did not want to bother with that blessed land for now, but it seems that I have no choice.”

Fang Yuan destroyed Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body, causing his immortal aperture to fall on the ground and become an ownerless blessed land.

Unlike public blessed lands, these individual blessed lands would have land spirits, they were easy to defend and hard to take down.

When Dong Fang Chang Fan lost, in order to prevent Fang Yuan from profiting, he destroyed all of his Immortal Gu, to prevent his enemy from getting stronger. But there were still a lot of mortal Gu in his immortal aperture, perhaps because they were cheap, or he did not place much value in them, or maybe he lost control of them too quickly. In any case, they were all preserved in his blessed land and were not destroyed.

Not speaking of the other mortal Gu, but white lotus giant silkworm Gu was something Fang Yuan needed as food for Cleanse Soul.

Fang Yuan paced in the room as he thought about it.

The Northern Plains Gu Immortal world was originally quite tranquil, but ever since Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed, it had produced huge consequences, it was like a giant tsunami. Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals were furious, they wanted to find the culprit. But the Immortal Gu that escaped from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building caused Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals to fight over them intensely, it created chaos in the Northern Plains Gu Immortal world.

After the auction, with the rank eight Gu Immortals at the lead, the super forces discussed matters and the Northern Plains Gu Immortal world was no longer as chaotic, there were new rules in place. But because of Shadow Sect, and the Central Continent Gu Immortals, there were still turbulent undercurrents.

Right now, with Fang Yuan’s interference, a super force, Dong Fang tribe, was exterminated, the tranquility of the world of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals was ruined once again, turbulence swept the region.

Currently, countless Gu Immortals from the righteous and demonic paths were fighting to seize resources in Jade Pool blessed land, it was a mess.

Northern Plains’ situation, it could be said to truly be in shambles!

In fact, ever since Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed, Northern Plains had not had a day of peace, it had thoroughly deviated from its original path.

Compared with his previous life’s memories, Fang Yuan had a feeling: He seemed to have accidentally broken Northern Plains.

Fang Yuan took a risk just now, with some luck, he obtained the wisdom path inheritance, originally, he wanted to develop himself for some time, while helping Hu Immortal blessed land to survive the earthly calamity. Using the wisdom path inheritance, he would deduce the immortal killer move, vaguely familiar face.

Based on the news he had, the current situation was quite tense, it would be best if he stayed away.

But the allure of white lotus giant silkworm Gu was too great, Fang Yuan knew that even though he had some methods to keep it alive, cleanse soul Immortal Gu was reaching its limits from hunger, he needed to feed it white lotus giant silkworm Gu.

“Immortal Gu are unique, but even though they are precious, cleanse soul Immortal Gu is not something I cannot live without. I have self strength Immortal Gu as the core now, even if cleanse soul Immortal Gu was destroyed, I would not be too greatly affected. Of course, if I could use it along with self strength Immortal Gu, the killer move myriad self might be able to become twice as powerful as now. Furthermore, it can even promote the growth of my soul foundation.”

Fang Yuan was hesitant.

Although Cleanse Soul was good, it was not enough for him to risk his life.

Immortal Gu were only tools, his life was most important. Fang Yuan was fully aware of this point from beginning to end, he would never be blinded by greed.

A few days later.

Northern Plains, at the place where Gu Immortal Qie Shi Min died.

From time to time, there would be Gu Immortals appearing, both righteous and demonic. After staying here for some time, they would leave, trying to find the aura of the Immortal Gu in the air. Some tried to enter the blessed land that formed from Qie Shi Min’s immortal aperture, but they left after failing.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals were hiding far away, observing the situation, while using their divine senses to communicate.

“The target has not appeared yet?”

“Since they could kill Dong Fang Chang Fan and made many arrangements here to conceal Dong Fang Chang Fan’s blessed land, they obviously want to keep it a secret. Very likely, they want to take down this blessed land, they also know that accidents can occur over time, they will definitely return.”

“That is not very likely by now. We have secretly stayed here for so many days, the other party might have discovered us already. With this opportunity, we might as well go to Jade Pool blessed land.” Fairy Ling Mei said.

“Hmph, are you saying that my Black Heaven Temple’s signature immortal killer move, defending day and night, cannot conceal our presence and would be seen through easily?” Old Man Tian Long was immediately unhappy, retorting.

Fairy Ling Mei went silent, she knew that her earlier words were slightly impudent. Black Heaven Temple was one of the ten great ancient sects, they needed to defend their reputation, their names could not be sullied.

Fairy Ao Xue who was beside Fairy Ling Mei said: “I’ve heard that in Jade Pool blessed land, a ten thousand li zhi horse ran out.”

The meaning hidden in her words was very obvious, she was in agreement with Fairy Ling Mei’s earlier suggestion, she also wanted to go to Jade Pool blessed land for its abundant resources.

“Hmph, this trifling level of wealth can entice all of you? Don’t forget why we are here. This immortal zombie is very suspicious, he has quite powerful battle strength in strength path, he is very likely to be immortal zombie Sha Huang!” Old Lord Can Yang was hidden to the side, interjecting in this.

“Trifling level of wealth? You speak as if it’s insignificant, even though Dong Fang tribe is inferior to our sects, it is also a super force. Their foundation, compared to individuals like us, is much deeper. Oh, Can Yang, your harvest just now was great, the reward from Immortal Crane Sect for the mission must be very profitable. You are benefiting greatly from this yourself, but you want the rest of us to suffer losses? Isn’t this too much?” Chen Zhen Chi spoke resentfully.

He had not completed his sect’s missions yet, because Feng Jiu Ge called him over before he had finished.

The others were in similar situations.

Others might be afraid of Old Lord Can Yang’s life chasing fire, but he was not. He was a flying grandmaster, and had the immortal killer move approaching body, even if life chasing fire was used on him, he could escape from it.

In the Central Continent Gu Immortal world, there was a saying: ‘Zhen Chi of the nine heavens, followed by Fei Yan’. ‘Zhen Chi of the nine heavens’ referred to Chen Zhen Chi, he could spread his wings and fly into the immemorial nine heavens, heaven and earth could not restrict him.

The latter, ‘followed by Fei Yan’, referred to a Gu Immortal of Heavenly Lotus Sect, Bu Fei Yan, she was a female Gu Immortal who could move agilely in the sky, she was like a wisp of smoke that could dance in the air.

Right now, the female Gu Immortal, Bu Fei Yan, had also come to Northern Plains, she represented Heavenly Lotus Sect of the ten great ancient sects, she was joining in the investigation of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s collapse.

At this moment, two flying grandmasters of the current generation were present.

Chen Zhen Chi spoke, but Bu Fei Yan remained silent, not saying a word.

Old Oracle, however, added: “Jade Pool blessed land was so easily taken down mainly because the rank six Immortal Gu House, Modest Thatched Hut, went missing mysteriously. I am not after those resources, but I have made a deduction, I deduced that clues about the culprit are in Jade Pool blessed land.”

“Modest Thatched Hut... heh, I would rather call it by its original name — Thatched Hut! Speaking of it, this Gu House was created by the Late Antiquity Era’s Three Thatch Demon Immortal, it used up almost all of his wealth. During his later years, he roamed Northern Plains, becoming a grand overlord for a while. Three Thatch Demon Immortal had a daughter, he doted on her. At that time, Dong Fang tribe’s Gu Immortal, Dong Fang Yu, and this woman were in love with each other, thus, he left the righteous path and went into the demonic path. After Three Thatch Demon Immortal died, he inherited this Thatched Hut, killing his wife and going back to the righteous path, returning to his tribe. To get rid of his past, Dong Fang Yu added in some other Gu into Thatched Hut, calling it Modest Thatched Hut. Its effect did not change at all, it was just for his own reputation.” Wind Cloud Manor’s Gu Immortal, Hong Chi Ming, spoke.

Before he became an immortal, he explored Northern Plains while his cultivation level was that of a mortal, he lived there for some time. Thus, he knew about these details clearly.

At this time, he mentioned this, his intention was also to go to Jade Pool blessed land to plunder for resources. But he did not say it, he was subtly hinting them.

“Alright, how much longer are we going to stay here like this? Should we go to Jade Pool blessed land and search for clues? Or look for that Fairy Li Shan, since she fought together with that immortal zombie, they must have a close relationship, she certainly knows many secrets.” A Gu Immortal was impatient.

“No, Fairy Li Shan paid a heavy price and left this place after obtaining Miniscule Mountain. Right now, she is hiding inside Snowy Mountain blessed land. That is a den of Northern Plains’ demonic path, if it was like in the past, it would be fine. But now, Old Ancestor Xue Hu is trying to refine fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, he is overseeing matters there.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 812: Battle of Rank Eights, Huge Commotion

Once Old Ancestor Xue Hu was mentioned, Central Continent’s immortals went silent.

These people had rank seven cultivation level, they had outstanding battle strength, near the top in their respective sects. But against a rank eight Gu Immortal, they would only lose.

Even though Feng Jiu Ge had the ability to fight rank eight Gu Immortals, he was still rank seven after all.

Meanwhile, Old Ancestor Xue Hu of the demonic path had terrifying battle strength, according to the intelligence that Central Continent collected, it faintly indicated that he could be the strongest rank eight expert in Northern Plains!

Just as the Central Continent Gu Immortals went silent, three demonic path Gu Immortals had concealed their appearances and stealthily entered the trap of the Central Continent Gu Immortals.

They went underground, going to the place where Dong Fang Chang Fan was killed, before revealing themselves.

Of these three Gu Immortals, the one at the lead was tall, giving off a fierce aura. He had a pair of long eyebrows, he had an aquiline nose, his eyes were shining with a sharp light. His ears were not human ears, they looked like wings, shining in golden light.

He was the owner of the fourth peak of Northern Plains’ Snowy Mountain blessed land – Li Peng Wang.

On his left was a person shorter than him, but with a more robust and stocky body. He radiated with dominance as he gave off an icy dragon’s prestige, it was the owner of the fifth peak, Demon Lord Long Dan, who was in control of ice lake palace.

The final Gu Immortal walked on Li Peng Wang’s right side. His eyes were dark, he wore a white robe and had a lean body, he resembled a scholar but was less polished looking than Unfettered Scholar, yet he still had a grand aura. It was the owner of the sixth peak – Gong Zi Mo.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals were laying in ambush, they had outstanding methods, the three demonic path Gu Immortals did not discover them.

Their attentions were focused on what was in front of them.

There was nothing in front of their eyes, but they sensed that they had found a hidden blessed land.

“This is the blessed land that Dong Fang Chang Fan left behind after dying?”

“Begin, the longer we drag things on, the more problems will occur. The blessed land that Qie Shi Min left behind is near this place.”w

“Since they are Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s orders, we will definitely do our best and take down this blessed land, let’s begin!”

The three moved rapidly, because they had made sufficient preparations, after making some arrangements in the outside world, they tore through space and entered the blessed land.

After watching the three of them entered, the Central Continent Gu Immortals continued to use their divine senses to communicate.

“Amazing! Snowy Mountain blessed land’s fourth, fifth, and sixth peak owners have all moved out.”

“Snowy Mountain’s first three peaks have immovable statuses, but the rest of them can compete for a higher position. These three are scheming against each other while moving together, to have them working together like this, only Old Ancestor Xue Hu can control them.”

“The immortal zombie did not come after all, but Snowy Mountain blessed land’s members came. Should we take them down?”

“No. These three immortals have extraordinary battle strength, they would combine to be higher than people like Unfettered Scholar, at least equivalent to any of us. Although we have more people, we lack coordination. It is easy to defeat the three of them, but it would be hard to kill them, and even harder to capture them.”

Old Lord Can Yang agreed with this as he sighed: “That’s right, Northern Plains is a place of constant battles, it has the highest battle strength for individuals out of the five regions. Each of their Gu Immortals have rich battle experience, they have many unique methods, and their methods of self-preservation far surpass Central Continent, they are very sly. Earlier in Tai Qiu and Jade Pool blessed land, the number of dead Gu Immortals was very few. But if this was in the other four regions, the casualties would be two to three times as high.”

“It is not impossible to capture them, hehe, but we will need Lord Feng Jiu Ge to attack personally.” A Gu Immortal said.

In this Northern Plains expedition, Feng Jiu Ge’s superior battle strength left a deep impression in the Central Continent Gu Immortals’ hearts.

But Feng Jiu Ge said: “We will retreat.”

Saying this, without giving the immortals a chance to ask him questions, he left in an extremely secretive manner, not leaving any traces behind.

The immortals looked at each other for a moment, before following his lead quietly.

The group gathered somewhere far away, as the immortals asked Feng Jiu Ge in confusion.

Earlier, the ambush was Feng Jiu Ge’s idea. Now that three demonic path Gu Immortals appeared, Feng Jiu Ge was the first to leave.

“We have such a strong united force, are we afraid of just three people?”

“Retreating without fighting, this tarnishes the reputation of our ten great sects of Central Continent!”

“Going to and fro, what is the meaning of it all?”

The Gu Immortals went further and further away from Jade Pool blessed land, as their tones also got more unhappy, but because of Feng Jiu Ge’s power, they did not flare up.

Feng Jiu Ge looked around as he said some shocking news: “Fairy Li Shan obtained Miniscule Mountain and had returned to Snowy Mountain blessed land to recuperate. I have already gotten news, a rank eight righteous path Gu Immortal of Northern Plains, Yao Huang, has already traveled to Snowy Mountain blessed land, to ask for Miniscule Mountain from Old Ancestor Xue Hu.”

“What? There is such a matter!”

“Are the two rank eights going to fight?”

“Northern Plains is really... rank eight Gu Immortals would always only act as deterrence in Central Continent, but just for Miniscule Mountain, they are really being so active. They are truly battle maniacs. Back then, during the competition for Dang Hun mountain, our ten great ancient sects of Central Continent only sent disciples to compete for it.”

The immortals talked among themselves as their expressions changed, they were trying to absorb this shocking news.

At this moment, Feng Jiu Ge smiled lightly, he said: “That strength path immortal zombie is very vigilant. The three demonic path immortals of Snowy Mountain blessed land might be pawns to probe us, or might be the force behind him attempting to probe us. If we go after this bait, it would then be falling into a trap. We should head to Snowy Mountain blessed land and see if there is a chance to enter it and capture Fairy Li Shan instead.”

The immortals were all speechless.

Snowy Mountain blessed land, the strongest base of Northern Plains’ demonic path, it would be on a similar level compared to one of the main bases of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent.

Feng Jiu Ge’s boldness was overwhelming, he was actually targeting Snowy Mountain!

...

Snowy Mountain blessed land, first peak.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was seated on a large chair, he was holding a small mountain in his hand as he rotated it while observing it closely.

This small mountain was full of cracks, it was a terrible sight. Corpses were all over the mountain, they were of minimen, blood flowed everywhere, the survivors were weeping in anguish, it was a scene of misery.

This was none other than Miniscule Mountain.

Fairy Li Shan chased after Miniscule Mountain and fought against the miniman Gu Immortal, they attracted other Gu Immortals who attacked, from both the righteous and demonic paths.

After a chaotic battle, the miniman Gu Immortal was almost dead, he traveled with Miniscule Mountain and moved randomly, in the end, it was captured by Hei Lou Lan who was at the periphery of the battlefield.

Hei Lou Lan killed the miniman Gu Immortal and defended this treasure with Fairy Li Shan, they fought their way out and went through immense danger to return to Snowy Mountain blessed land.

This caused Miniscule Mountain to be in its current state of near destruction, the miniman tribe on the mountain also faced heavy casualties.

“This is Miniscule Mountain?” At this time, a female immortal walked out from behind.

She was called Lady Wan Shou, the wife of Old Ancestor Xue Hu, she had rank seven cultivation level, and was one of the four most famous refinement path Gu Immortals in Northern Plains.

Once she appeared, her gaze was affixed to Miniscule Mountain, she was very interested in this legendary mountain.

“My wife, did you have any gains this time?” Old Ancestor Xue Hu turned around, asking warmly as he passed Miniscule Mountain over to her.

Lady Wan Shou nodded: “I have already understood all the procedures to refine fortune rivalling heaven Gu, but to familiarize myself with those steps, I still have some way to go.”

As she said that, she received Miniscule Mountain and observed it closely.

On Miniscule Mountain, because the miniman Gu Immortal had died, there was no leader left, the surviving minimen were shivering in fear as they squeezed together.

“Monster!”

“So scary, so scary...”

“Don’t eat me, I have too little meat, you won’t be satisfied.”

Lady Wan Shou was beautiful and elegant, she had dazzling eyes, but in the eyes of the minimen, she was like a huge monster, she looked terrifying.

Lady Wan Shou looked at it for a while before moving her gaze away from Miniscule Mountain, she smiled lightly: “Sister Li Shan is very lucky. She was a wood path Gu Immortal who also cultivated earth path. Afterwards, because she obtained mountain pledge Immortal Gu, she changed it into her core Immortal Gu and became an information path Gu Immortal without a solid foundation. In fact, her blessed land was still a wood path blessed land, it managed flowers and grass. Now that she has the miniman to help her, it would be a huge advantage for her. Sister Li Shan is a member of Snowy Mountain blessed land, now that Miniscule Mountain is in our hands, it proves that our luck is growing, we are becoming more prosperous.”

“My wife, that is not correct.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu shook his head: “It’s the opposite, this shows that our luck is declining. I want to refine fortune rivalling heaven Gu, I need to use Ma Hong Yun as the main refinement material. Thus, Fortune Rivalling Heaven is targeting me, causing me to encounter obstacles. Look at this Miniscule Mountain, it is on the verge of collapsing, to fix it, I will need to pay a huge price. These are the gains of our third leader, it naturally cannot be given up, she will definitely expend a huge amount of resources on it. This will indirectly affect my plan to collect immortal materials. A man’s wealth is his own ruin by stirring another’s greed, right now, she obtained Miniscule Mountain but it created a commotion and attracted enmity. A huge problem has arisen, the righteous path is taking action. Look, this is Yao Huang’s letter.”

Yao Huang’s letter?

Lady Wan Shou was shocked, she quickly looked through the contents.

In the letter, Yao Huang said: Miniscule Mountain was in Jade Pool blessed land, it is the possession of Dong Fang tribe. Now that Dong Fang tribe is exterminated, the world has been shaken. As people with the same bloodline, as descendants of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Yao Huang was requesting on behalf of all the righteous path forces, to negotiate with Old Ancestor Xue Hu and return Miniscule Mountain to the righteous path.

In the letter, Yao Huang was very courteous, but Lady Wan Shou knew that this was the righteous path’s demeanor — they were always like this, even if they had huge hatred or grudges, they would act politely on the surface and keep a gentlemanly tone in their speech.

Lady Wan Shou could feel Yao Huang’s overbearing attitude from the letter, she looked at Old Ancestor Xue Hu worriedly: “Husband, you only have ten or so years until the next myriad tribulation, you cannot fight easily! If anything happens during the fight and you hurt your origin core, your will lose your foundation and even if you succeed in refining fortune rivalling heaven Gu, the losses will be greater than the gains. By the time your myriad tribulation arrives, if these losses cause you to fail...”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu laughed heartily: “My wife, you are still the same. Yao Huang’s letter is one of my trials, but it is also a chance, I have to make use of it and face it head on.”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu said that as he paused, his expression changed as he said resolutely: “Oh? He is here, it is great that he’s here!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 813: Grand Snow Power, Defeating Strong Foes

Lady Wan Shou looked up, her gaze piercing through Snowy Mountain blessed land towards the clear outside sky of Northern Plains.

The sky had been clear, blue and cloudless above Snowy Mountain blessed land, but after Yao Huang arrived, his aura was so grand that winds and clouds swept through the sky, dying the sky orange and yellow.

Yao Huang’s voice arrived before his figure could even be seen: “Old friend Xue Hu, I seek your understanding for visiting without prior notice.”

His voice resounded throughout the area, piercing into Snowy Mountain blessed land, causing countless snowy peaks to tremble and accumulated snow to roll down. Some snowy peaks even had small avalanches.

“Hahaha.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu laughed heartily as he flew out of Snowy Mountain blessed land to the sky, the air behind him was filled with frost energy.

The sky changed, one half shined with orange radiance while the other half repelled with frost energy.

However, right at this moment, a wave of pitch-black ink clouds flew over from the west.

The ink clouds seethed violently, quickly spreading throughout the sky, it did not lose out to Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Yao Huang, forcefully spreading its territory in the sky.

Lady Wan Shou’s expression changed and her heart sank, crying out: “Why did Heavenly Lord Bai Zu come as well!”

Ink clouds, frost energy and orange radiance seethed with irresistible force as they divided the surrounding sky into three sections.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu sneered: “Heavenly Lord, why are you here to join in the commotion rather than managing your force properly?”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu coughed as he laughed dryly: “Old friend Xue Hu, it is merely Miniscule Mountain, how can it be of interest to you? It would be better if you return it to the righteous path and prevent some trouble.”

Lady Wan Shou’s expression turned dark, and the demonic path Gu Immortals who had stayed behind in Snowy Mountain blessed land looked at the sky with stifled breaths.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was part of the lone cultivator faction, but after the auction, he had been preparing to establish a righteous path force. Right now, he was working together with Yao Huang, and the situation did not look good for Old Ancestor Xue Hu who was alone!

However, at the next moment, Old Ancestor Xue Hu raised his head and laughed loudly, his valiant spirit burst out: “In that case, both of you can attack together, let’s have a round of combat before any further talk!”

Saying so, he flew to the sky with a loud sound and directly tore open the heavenly wind qi wall, entering white heaven.

Rank eight Gu Immortals had such immense and terrifying power that it was hard for the surroundings to endure their wrath. Normally, when they fought, they would tacitly agree to enter the immemorial nine heavens to avoid causing a catastrophe to the living beings on the surface.

“My friend, since you have such an interest, then I shall keep you company.” Yao Huang’s gaze flashed as he followed Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was dazed for a moment before giving a bitter smile: “Since old friend Xue Hu is insistent, please forgive me for my following actions.”

The three rank eight Gu Immortals entered white heaven, shortly afterwards, explosions resounded out from the sky.

“The three have started the fight in white heaven!” Someone exclaimed this among the Central Continent Gu Immortals.

They had still not reached Snowy Mountain blessed land and were an immense distance afar. Right now, as they looked at the sky, they could see space churning over a vast range, ink clouds seethed, white frost energy blew out and orange light filled the sky.

The explosions were like lightning in the sky, they were never ending and could make a listener’s heart tremble.

“Quick, take advantage of their fight to enter Snowy Mountain blessed land!” Feng Jiu Ge looked on with a firm gaze before rapidly withdrawing it, a sharp light flashing past his eyes.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals took deep breaths, these people were skillful and daring, after hearing Feng Jiu Ge’s commands, they felt a long awaited excitement and nervousness, they all increased their speed.

Howl!

Halfway along their route, they suddenly heard an ancient desolate beast’s cry coming from the sky.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals quickly evaded it.

“This is a remnant heavenly dog!” The immortals stared blankly, recognizing this ancient desolate beast.

Boom. The remnant heavenly dog crashed to the ground like a meteor, smashing open a huge crater, it struggled for a while before it turned motionless.

“Even this remnant heavenly dog was beaten out of white heaven.”

“How can the power of rank eights be so fierce?!”

“Just the repercussions of the battle could cause this remnant heavenly dog to die such a miserable death...”

“Careful!”

The warning was just called out when hailstones started to fall down the sky.

These hailstones were like the peaks of small mountains, raining down over the surroundings, their frost energy was piercing to the bone, countless living beings froze to death, and the Central Continent Gu Immortals also could do nothing other than to make a detour.

Crack!

Suddenly, a thunderbolt struck down from the sky, brushing past the corner of Old Oracle’s clothes.

Old Oracle gave a miserable scream as he quickly pulled away from the dazzling lightning. Almost half of his body was gone, and he was instantly seriously injured, close to death.

After a while, as the Central Continent Gu Immortals got closer to Snowy Mountain blessed land, a cold wind blew, almost as if it was blowing their souls out of their physical body.

The higher the cultivation of Gu Immortals, the greater the gap between each rank. There was simply a world of difference between rank eight and rank seven, since ancient times, characters that could fight against rank eights with rank seven cultivation were very rare. Over these recent years, the huge Central Continent had one such character – Feng Jiu Ge.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals were blown from side to side, and were just barely able to maintain their concealment, but their expressions did not look good.

All these signs suggested Northern Plains’ rank eight Gu Immortals had battle strength that might slightly surpass that of rank eights within Central Continent!

Central Continent had many more rank eight Gu Immortals than Northern Plains. In the five regions, Northern Plains had the fewest rank eight Gu Immortals. This was because of the frequent battles in Northern Plains, among the five regions, Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals had the highest death rates.

In Northern Plains, those that could carve out a path of blood through obstacles, standing at the peak and establishing their foothold at rank eight, were naturally not ordinary people. All of them were champions, it was impossible to merely achieve it through luck.

Just the collateral damage of the battle in white heaven could throw the Central Continent Gu Immortals in an awkward predicament.

Old Oracle had restored his body after narrowly escaping death, but his expression still carried disbelieving shock as he muttered: “How is this possible? I actually was not able to predict this thunderbolt?”

Bu Fei Yan’s gaze wavered as she wondered, if she was in Old Oracle’s place, could she escape that thunderbolt with her movement ability. She could not help speaking: “Are we still continuing?”

Chen Zhen Chi looked up at the sky, which had now become like a tattered rag which had been patched up with a sew countless times. Techniques entangled with each other as they covered areas of all sizes, some had seething dark clouds, some had cold winds, some had thunderbolts, and some had hailstones.

It was truly a scene like the end of the world.

These Central Continent Gu Immortals were not ordinary experts and had outstanding insight. They could see that these small areas were completely transformed by dao marks, some were filled with ice path dao marks, some with lightning path dao marks, some were of wind path, and some were of soul path.

They were less than a thousand li away from Snowy Mountain blessed land, but this distance was extremely dangerous, it was filled with sinister and fatal traps.

“This is the gap between rank seven and rank eight?”

“The dao marks in each of these single areas are more than what we have after bitter cultivation!”

“Life-and-death is beyond one’s control, how long has it been since I had such a feeling!”

“Too dangerous, too dangerous, it’s not worth throwing away our lives just to capture someone.”

The Central Continent Gu Immortals started to announce their intentions to retreat.

Only Feng Jiu Ge remained unmoved as he kept moving ahead, his gaze calm as if he could not see the dangers around him.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals felt their hearts shaking when they saw Feng Jiu Ge in this state.

“This guy is truly monstrous, being able to battle rank eights with rank seven cultivation...”

“I could not normally sense it, but now that I think of it, Feng Jiu Ge is truly terrifying.”

“No, even if he can battle rank eights, it is only for a short while. Once our identities are exposed and the three rank eight Gu Immortals attack us, our deaths are certain. This guy, Feng Jiu Ge, is facing death with indifference, moving ahead boldly. I had almost forgotten his origin as a person of the demonic path, he only converted to righteous path later on!”

The Central Continent Gu Immortals followed behind Feng Jiu Ge, communicating the intent to retreat with their gazes, but due to their reputations and their sect’s names, they could not say it out loud and wanted others to say it first.

It became harder to bear with every passing minute and second. Right as they were feeling awkward, Feng Jiu Ge, who was at the lead, suddenly stopped and held up his hand behind him: “Stop!”

The Gu Immortals quickly stopped and saw Feng Jiu Ge looking up with a serious expression.

They followed his gaze towards the sky, where all sorts of powers were still entangling and repelling each other. The Gu Immortals who had the capability to do so activated immortal killer moves to look beyond these barriers, into the scenery inside white heaven.

These Gu Immortals immediately cried out in shock.

Inside white heaven, where three rank eights had been fighting, there was no longer a stalemate, instead, Old Ancestor Xue Hu occupied the upper hand. The grand frost energy suppressed Yao Huang’s orange radiance till it was tightly withdrawn, and made Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s ink clouds retreat.

“I had not expected Old Ancestor Xue Hu to have such powerful battle strength, fighting alone against two, yet he has already grasped victory in such a short time.” Feng Jiu Ge heaved a sigh, his expression one of admiration and regret.

“Retreat.” The chance was lost, he immediately flew away without hesitation.

The other Gu Immortals were already anxious to retreat, at this moment, they quickly retreated from this dangerous area without speaking.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu could finally endure no longer, saying: “Old friend Xue Hu has exquisite methods, I have learned a lot. We have lost.”

Yao Huang also said shortly afterwards: “The current state of Northern Plains is in turbulence, old friend Xue Hu, now is not the time to determine the winner and the loser. Since you have your sights on Miniscule Mountain, we can forget my previous suggestion. Until we meet again.”

Yao Huang was still bent on defending his reputation, Old Ancestor Xue Hu laughed loudly and said with an unforgiving tone: “The two of you want to come and go as you please, what do you take me for?”

When he finished speaking, heaven and earth started to tremor, the ground quaked and mountains shook.

Endless frost energy descended, sweeping away all obstacles, the sky became clear with no more cold wind and thunderstorms.

In a huge surrounding range, the ground was instantly covered with a layer of ice and snow.

The temperature rapidly descended, the ground was frozen as if Northern Plains had returned to the cold winter from the warm spring.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Three explosions resounded from the sky.

Echoes rumbled throughout the world, deafening like a lord of thunder shouting beside one’s ears.

The concealment of the Central Continent Gu Immortals lifted from this attack and their bodies staggered. Besides Feng Jiu Ge, everyone’s ears were bleeding, their eardrums had broken!

“Leave, leave quickly!” All color drained away from the Gu Immortals’ faces, the battle intent inside them fell to the abyss as they only concentrated on flying away.

There was also a large earthquake in Snowy Mountain blessed land. Primeval energy fluctuated rapidly, and the Gu Immortals inside shivered as both their bodies and minds suffered intense shocks.

After a long while, the ground gradually stabilized. Six mountain peaks of Snowy Mountain blessed land were half-destroyed, there were enormous fissures in the ground, and countless resources planted and stored in the blessed land were destroyed.

However, Snowy Mountain blessed land’s Gu Immortals were flushed red with excitement, their eyes shining brightly.

They looked far away where a tall male figure descended slowly from the sky.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu!

From above him, pure white crystal clear powder was spreading with the wind.

Feng Jiu Ge looked back at this sight, his pupils dilated as he muttered: “Split heaven powder, even white heaven was split...”

Snowy Mountain blessed land’s Gu Immortals, however, were ecstatic as they flew out of the blessed land and made greetings.

“This subordinate welcomes old ancestor!”

“Now, the debate of who the strongest rank eight of Northern Plains is, has been settled!”

“Old ancestor has endless power, the greatest in Northern Plains! Yao Huang and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had to retreat with their tails tucked between their legs!”

The demonic path Gu Immortals stopped one after the other in the air, and only Lady Wan Shou moved closer.

“Dear.” She spoke warmly with a proud expression which also contained worry.

“Rest assured, I have my reservations, but Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang also have their own concerns. These two were coveting Fortune Rivalling Heaven and did not want me to successfully refine it. I defeated both of them, now let’s see who in Northern Plains has the guts to disturb my work.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu chuckled and continued, “It is just that I tore open the sky to white heaven above, and have to trouble you to repair it. Otherwise, desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts will descend from the crack. Although they are of no threat, they will be a persistent bother.”

Lady Wan Shou relaxed after confirming her husband was alright. She poked at Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s broad chest and said with a helpless tone: “Oh you.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 814: Clarifying the Situation, New Transaction

Old Ancestor Xue Hu fought two enemies by himself, defeating the collaboration of Yao Huang and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

This battle shook Northern Plains! Information spread like the wind, the entire Northern Plains Gu Immortal world went into chaos because of it.

Furthermore, because the Central Continent Gu Immortals saw this firsthand, information entered Central Continent, alerting many leaders of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, they quickly engraved Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s name deeply in their minds.

A few days later.

Central Continent, Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan visited, bringing firsthand information with them.

Fang Yuan held this information path mortal Gu as he shut his eyes, it was as if he was in Snowy Mountain blessed land, he was viewing from Fairy Li Shan’s perspective.

In the sky, the sight of the three rank eight great experts fighting could be seen.

From start to finish, their moves were grand and majestic, his mind was in a daze as he watched.

Even though the distance was great, and the three were fighting far away in white heaven, but just from the naked eye, one could feel the imposing power of the rank eights.

Among Gu Immortals, the higher the cultivation, the greater the difference. Between rank six and seven, there are some elites that can fight rank sevens occasionally.

Between rank seven and eight, the difference is immense, like the distance between the sky and earth. To fight rank eights with rank seven cultivation level, in the entirety of human history, it was extremely rare!

By rank nine, one's own strength could dominate the world, there are no opponents left, one is invincible, the strongest in heaven and earth! Rank eight Gu Immortals are not a rank nine's match, they would always lose terribly, there had never been an exception.

Looking over this scenery three times, Fang Yuan returned the Gu worm to Fairy Li Shan, his eyes became clear when he opened them.

Fang Yuan had already anticipated Old Ancestor Xue Hu's great power, in his previous life's memories, Central Continent had lost several huge battles because of him, he even killed some rank eights from Central Continent.

This time, by observing the battle personally, Fang Yuan had gained a deeper understanding of Northern Plains' situation.

"Northern Plains' righteous path has two rank eight Gu Immortals, they are Yao Huang and Prince Feng Xian. In terms of reputation, Yao Huang has the highest in the righteous path, while Prince Feng Xian is related to Central Continent, he is the biggest spy that Central Continent has hidden in Northern Plains."

"Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed, Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed, Northern Plains is in turbulence, the arrangements that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had made painstakingly were destroyed. With the breakdown of established customs and the competition for Immortal Gu, the righteous and demonic paths went into intense battles, new hatred overlapped on old grudges one after another. Even though Qin Bai Sheng held the auction, the immortals are only busy processing their gains currently, after a short while, their conflicts are only going to escalate."

"From Imperial Court blessed land destruction, Northern Plains' righteous path suffered the most, while the demonic path actually had great benefits. All along, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's arrangements had been to establish his goal of a hereditary monarchy. The righteous path of Northern Plains is also the Huang Jin bloodline, they suppress the demonic path and lone cultivators greatly. Now that Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed, the demonic path and lone cultivators have lost a large amount of pressure on them. Be it in my previous life or this current life, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu only created his super force after Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed. He is a rank eight Gu Immortal but he does not have the Huang Jin bloodline, even he is afraid of the combined pressure from all of the Huang Jin bloodline super forces."

"Heavenly Lord Bai Zu wants to establish a righteous force, he needs a good relationship with Yao Huang and the others, while steering clear of the demonic path, he needs to show proof of where he stands. Thus, when Yao Huang demanded Miniscule Mountain, he had to go with him. But he did not expect that Old Ancestor Xue Hu would be so fierce, actually defeating the combination of him and Yao Huang.”

“To Old Ancestor Xue Hu, refining the rank eight fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu is extremely eye-catching, countless people are coveting it. None of the righteous path forces want him to succeed. Especially after the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the righteous forces are even more suspicious and wary of the demonic path, they are afraid of them rising up.”

“But Old Ancestor Xue Hu needs a lot of resources to refine fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu. He sent his demonic path Gu Immortals all over the place to collect immortal materials, this caused many conflicts to occur, and it would only continue to escalate, creating more animosity and obstacles. Old Ancestor Xue Hu decided to fight just now, his greatest motive was to send a wave of deterrence over the Northern Plains Gu Immortal world, to clear the obstacles for refining fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu.”

“Northern Plains’ situation was originally gloomy with many undercurrents, it was like a volcano ready to explode. Now that Old Ancestor Xue Hu had defeated both Yao Huang and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu at the same time, it would have a huge impact. He simply swept away the obstacles ahead of him, skipping past the point of a large scale battle between the righteous path and demonic path, bringing the demonic path into a position of great strength, pressuring the righteous path. In the following days, the demonic path in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world will be overbearing, while the righteous path will be lowering their heads. This is the aftermath of this battle, it affected the entire region!”

Fang Yuan was old and wise, he could see the situation clearly.

Rank sixes, although they had surpassed the mortal realm, they are only the bottom tier of Gu Immortals.

Rank sevens are the main pillars of strength.

Rank eights usually did not move rashly, each of their actions, even if unintended, would cause huge repercussions and influence.

For any series of events, each rank eight Gu Immortal was a trendsetter.

“Rank six and rank seven can only follow the main flow of events. When can I also become such an important character? A person who can dictate the flow?” Fang Yuan could not help but think of this.

“Alright, Fang Yuan, we are here this time to bring what you needed to complete the transaction. Now, I am passing it all to you.” Fairy Li Shan spoke.

She brought Fang Yuan a group of white lotus giant silkworm Gu and a large number of star thought Gu.

As it turned out, Snowy Mountain blessed land knew about the location of Dong Fang Chang Fan’s blessed land after he died because Fang Yuan provided them the details.

Dong Fang Chang Fan had undergone possession and been restored to life, since he had just become an immortal, no matter how high grade his immortal aperture was, there would be few resources inside. After Dong Fang Chang Fan died, the blessed land was formed as a whole entity. In terms of defense, it was far superior to a public blessed land.

If a land spirit was formed, it might be filled with hatred towards Fang Yuan, or have an obsession of taking revenge on Fang Yuan. In addition, considering the force that was investigating Fang Yuan’s background, he did not want to risk his own life just for cleanse soul Immortal Gu.

Thus, through Fairy Li Shan, he borrowed Snowy Mountain’s forces to achieve his goals.

The value of a blessed land was immense, Fairy Li Shan and Fang Yuan had an agreement, Fang Yuan would provide the information and tell her the location of the blessed land, basically giving this blessed land to Fairy Li Shan. In return, he wanted the white lotus giant silkworm Gu inside, as well as the ordinary star thought mortal Gu.

As for the Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan had already learned from Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul that they had all self-detonated.

Fang Yuan obtained the white lotus giant silkworm Gu and controlled his joy. After seeing the huge amount of star thought Gu, over fifty thousand of them, he could not conceal the joy inside him any longer, it showed in his eyes.

These fifty thousand star thought Gu simply came at such an appropriate time!

It was truly timely assistance.

Fairy Li Shan observed his expression and coughed, saying: “Congratulations Fang Yuan, right now, you gained the most from Dong Fang tribe’s destruction. After all, you obtained Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul, this is not just a complete wisdom path inheritance. Dong Fang Chang Fan’s secrets in managing blessed lands have immense value. Moreover, you had obtained many resources inside Jade Pool blessed land as well!”

As Fairy Li Shan said this, she did not conceal her envy.

Because the Snowy Mountain Alliance was not over yet, members of the alliance had to speak the truth, Fang Yuan did not conceal anything of the matter of obtaining Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul.

He could not hide it anyway.

There were many traces and clues left that could deduce the truth, Fang Yuan decided to simply inform Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan without hiding anything.

At this moment, he said: “Fairy, you obtained Miniscule Mountain, that is an item recorded inside <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, its value is not inferior to what I obtained.”

“You do not need to speak such flattery, you have Dang Hun mountain, you do not need Miniscule Mountain. Hehe, we all know inside ourselves that you are the biggest winner of this. Moreover, about Miniscule Mountain...” Fairy Li Shan smiled bitterly: “I am here to ask you a favor, I am here to ask for help.”

Fang Yuan’s expression turned solemn: “I am listening.”

It turned out that Fairy Li Shan and Dong Fang tribe had made an agreement, as allies, they could not attack each other. But to fight for Miniscule Mountain, Fairy Li Shan went back on this agreement during the process.

Although Fairy Li Shan only went into information path a while after becoming a Gu Immortal, she had made preparations in case she had no choice but to go against the agreement, she had asked someone to use a time path immortal killer move on her.

The effect of this time path killer move was to allow Fairy Li Shan to break the alliance agreement, the backlash and damage from it would be stalled for a period of time before activating.

Miniscule Mountain’s miniman tribe were only allies with Dong Fang Chang Fan, they did not belong to Dong Fang tribe. Despite this, the backlash of breaking the agreement was still very severe, Fairy Li Shan was originally heavily injured, she was not confident of enduring this backlash.

Thus, Hei Lou Lan thought of a good idea for Fairy Li Shan.

Initially, Fairy Li Shan and Dong Fang Chang Fan made the agreement using mountain pledge Gu, they had used Miniscule Mountain for it.

If Miniscule Mountain was destroyed, the agreement would fail, there would be no backlash.

But if Miniscule Mountain was destroyed, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan’s risk would have been for nothing, that was not an acceptable solution.

Hei Lou Lan’s idea was: After Miniscule Mountain was destroyed, when the time path killer move’s effect wears off, after the backlash is over, they would ask Tai Bai Yun Sheng to use Landscape as Before to heal the mountain.

By then, Miniscule Mountain would be back to its original state, even though Fairy Li Shan still would have the agreement with Dong Fang tribe, as long as she did not break it again, it would be fine.

Fairy Li Shan would be able to avoid the backlash of the agreement while fixing Miniscule Mountain. As to why they had to ask Fang Yuan, that was because Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan knew that between Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Fang Yuan was the leader.

Fang Yuan smiled, he agreed: “This is a great idea, I am willing to help. As for the payment, we can discuss it in detail.”

Fairy Li Shan saw Fang Yuan’s smile and her heart sank, she thought: “Here it comes.”

She knew how ruthless Fang Yuan was, she was definitely going to suffer a huge loss here, she smiled bitterly as she nodded.

Hei Lou Lan who was beside her seemed prepared, she spoke now: “Fang Yuan, if I am not wrong, your Hu Immortal blessed land is about to undergo its earthly calamity, right? How about this, I will stay here to defend Hu Immortal blessed land and resist the calamity. It can be the payment for asking Tai Bai Yun Sheng to heal Miniscule Mountain, how about that?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 815: Time Assist Luck, Delay, Zhou Ye Zi

Fang Yuan was a shrewd person, he immediately shook his head: “The value of these two services is not equivalent at all. For you two, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s Landscape as Before is a necessity. In my case, I can fully undergo the earthly calamity alone. Furthermore, Old Ancestor Xue Hu is currently staying in Snowy Mountain blessed land now, and you, Hei Lou Lan, are not a member of Snowy Mountain blessed land, you are an outsider, you cannot stay there anymore. Using the excuse of the earthly calamity, you can hide inside my Hu Immortal blessed land, I have not even asked you for rent yet, but you actually want to use this as the payment for Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s help!”

Fang Yuan exposed Hei Lou Lan’s awkward position, Hei Lou Lan was unabashed, she laughed, continuing to argue with Fang Yuan.

The two sparred verbally, until a while later, they came to an agreement: Hei Lou Lan would stay in Fang Yuan’s place for the time being, contributing strength qi without any compensation. The guts Gu produced during this period would not have Hei Lou Lan’s share. At the same time, when Hu Immortal blessed land faces the earthly calamity, Hei Lou Lan would need to help and defend it alongside Fang Yuan.

After this transaction was completed, Fairy Li Shan was not anxious to leave, she talked to Fang Yuan regarding immortal materials.

Fang Yuan obtained countless immortal materials in the auction, Fairy Li Shan wanted to buy them to deal with Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s mission of obtaining immortal materials.

After Fairy Li Shan obtained Miniscule Mountain, Old Ancestor Xue Hu only borrowed it to have a look, he did not take it from her.

After Old Ancestor Xue Hu defeated the two rank eights, Snowy Mountain blessed land’s status rose rapidly, its reputation had soared to an unprecedented peak.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu summoned Fairy Li Shan, using the reason that he had acted to protect Miniscule Mountain from Yao Huang, he requested for her to increase her contributions, he gave her many missions to collect immortal materials.

Fairy Li Shan’s current state was very awkward, she had just obtained Miniscule Mountain, even though she asked Tai Bai Yun Sheng for help to heal Miniscule Mountain and saved a huge cost, she was still very heavily injured.

Originally, she had a lot of savings due to mountain pledge Gu, she was quite affluent. But by funding Hei Lou Lan intensively, her savings were slowly depleted, and at this point, she was running dry.

The cultivation of one person expended countless resources, it was not easy. Many Gu Immortals did not have a steady source of revenue, their income did not match their expenses, they could only offer their services and travel everywhere.

Even if they had a source of revenue, there were often earnings and losses in trading. Things like mountain pledge Gu and the guts Gu trade were very rare and unique, how could theirs be so widely demanded?

Most importantly, there were heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities, each time they occurred, a lot of resources and hard work would be destroyed. Even if the Gu Immortals survive the heavenly tribulation or earthly calamity, when they see their immortal aperture in bad shape, they would feel a strong sense of dejection.

Fairy Li Shan was very bold, other than supporting herself, she even helped Hei Lou Lan. Hei Lou Lan did not have a source of revenue, the two of them had huge needs for cultivation, she was providing for them both. But no matter how great her resolve was, her finances were starting to dwindle.

Other than material objects like immortal essence stones and immortal materials, Fairy Li Shan still had a lot of other things.

Many precious pieces of information were very valuable.

Fairy Li Shan had a huge network, she was a top tier information collector.

Fang Yuan’s immortal materials were meant to be used in the Refinement Path Convention, but he had a huge quantity of them, it was fine to sell some to her.

Fang Yuan nodded, but he requested for an immortal killer move from Fairy Li Shan. He had been wanting this immortal killer move for ages, right now was the chance to extort it, Fang Yuan had to make good use of the chance.

Fairy Li Shan heard Fang Yuan’s request and knew it was coming, she felt extremely bitter.

But circumstances were stronger than people, even if Fairy Li Shan did not want to, what could she do?

Time assist luck.

This was the name of the immortal killer move that Fang Yuan requested from Fairy Li Shan.

This immortal killer move used time luck Immortal Gu as the core, to steal other people’s lifespan and boost the luck of oneself temporarily.

Fang Yuan had obtained time luck Immortal Gu from Fairy Li Shan earlier. He had wanted to use inch of time Gu in place of lifespan to activate time luck Immortal Gu, but the result was failure.

Inch of time and time luck Immortal Gu, although they could be used together, the former was expended too intensively. Later, Fang Yuan wanted to deduce an immortal killer move to reduce the expenditure of inch of time Gu.

But he still failed.

Although he could use the light of wisdom and gain unlimited inspiration, he had too few thoughts in his mind, it was not enough. Memory thought Gu and malicious thought Gu were still being refined, but the expenditure was greater than the production, he had little in storage.

Even if he had enough thoughts, Fang Yuan’s time path attainment level was too low, there was little hope of getting any success.

But Fang Yuan knew that Fairy Li Shan had such an immortal killer move from the start, it used time luck Immortal Gu as the core. If he could use it well, it was a source of revenue not inferior to mountain pledge Gu.

Thus, Fang Yuan used this extremely rare opportunity to ask for this immortal killer move.

After obtaining it, he checked it and felt some curiosity, he asked Fairy Li Shan: “Where did you get this killer move from?”

“I am unable to answer that.” Fairy Li Shan’s expression was cold, her mood was terrible. Fang Yuan was taking advantage of the situation, but she had to ask him for help, she could only give in.

‘The concept of this killer move is very familiar, is it from a lone cultivator of Northern Plains, Zhou Ye Zi? This person was very famous during the five regions chaotic war. He was originally a secluded cultivator that did not bother with worldly affairs, but when Northern Plains and Central Continent Gu Immortals fought a huge battle, the battle went to the area he was staying in, causing him to rage and instantly capture three Gu Immortals on the spot. Northern Plains asked him to fight, he refused, but because they were on the same side, he used a time path killer move on the Northern Plains' Gu Immortals, to protect their lives.'

This killer move had a weird name, it was very short, only one word. Not long after, it spread across the five regions, and Fang Yuan had heard of its famed name in his previous life, it was called — Delay.

The effect of the killer move was to delay damage, leaving some time for the Gu Immortals to find ways to heal themselves.

For example, a Gu Immortal who had 'delay' used on him would not die from a fatal blow, the damage would be delayed for a time period before taking effect.

Thus, the Gu Immortal would have a chance to seek help. During this period, the Gu Immortal can escape to get some time to recuperate and save himself. He can also fly to his ally and seek help. If it was a certain death situation, he could pass his cultivation resources to his descendants in the tribe, and place his blessed land in a secluded spot to not give his enemies any advantage.

Even though Northern Plains Gu Immortals had great battle strength, their numbers were fewer than those of Central Continent. Central Continent made the first moves, they formed arrangements and killed a batch of Northern Plains Gu Immortals first, causing Northern Plains to be at a disadvantage, facing defeat time after time.

But the appearance of 'delay' reduced Northern Plains' casualties greatly, it affected the battle situation to a large extent. In the end, Northern Plains and Central Continent were in a deadlock, Central Continent's plan of attacking and taking down Northern Plains rapidly was destroyed.

"If it really is Zhou Ye Zi, then Fairy Li Shan's ability to delay the damage of the alliance agreement would be the killer move delay. I really cannot ignore Fairy Li Shan's connections, she could actually get this lone cultivator to help, I wonder what price she paid?" Fang Yuan felt that this guess was quite probable.

Among Gu Immortals, there were many who hid their presence, they did not travel around, battle, or attend gatherings, they usually stayed in seclusion and cultivated.

Many people would be unknown to the world after their deaths, even if they had astonishing achievements. For example, the owner of Starry Sky grotto-heaven, when he was alive, he concealed himself very deeply and did not have much of a reputation, only until Starry Sky grotto-heaven was exposed, did his high cultivation level get revealed.

There were quite a number of such Gu Immortals. They were present among rank six, rank seven, and even rank eight. At least, Fang Yuan knew that there were more than five rank eight Gu Immortals in Northern Plains, only that they were hiding themselves.

Fang Yuan also thought about Purple Mountain True Monarch, this mysterious Gu Immortal did not show himself even once during the five regions chaotic war.

He could not but be moved, thinking to himself: "Countless streams flow into rivers, there is simply no end to the number of heroes and champions in this world!"

From start to finish, Fairy Li Shan did not expose any information regarding Zhou Ye Zi. This transaction, even though she paid a high price, was still successful, she had reached her goal.

Fairy Li Shan brought the immortal materials back to Snowy Mountain blessed land. For the following period of time, she was going to recuperate from her injuries, and resolve the issue of the alliance agreement. She also had to find out about methods to raise minimen, to gain the most benefits in the shortest possible time.

Meanwhile, Hei Lou Lan stayed behind.

Fang Yuan brought her along as they flew, in a short while, they reached their destination.

The two looked down from above, they saw that on the ground that was lush and green with vegetation, there were three humongous black-grey structures.

These were the three stone nests in Hu Immortal blessed land.

The stone nests had countless rooms inside, each room had at least one hairy man, they were refining Gu constantly, in an orderly fashion. This was the idea of a production line that was borrowed from Earth, resulting in a huge Gu refinement base that was created.

Splitting the refinement procedure of a Gu worm into dozens of steps, or even hundreds, and making each hairy man in charge of each step. Not only could the Gu recipe be kept as a secret, the familiarity of the hairy man will be higher, the success rate and quantity of the Gu refinement would be higher.

In the stone nests, airsac Gu were being produced.

Of course, there were explosions in the stone nests, they could be both mild or serious, fire could even break out, as the hairy men were engulfed in flames, crying in pain.

But the screams and cries would not travel to other rooms and interfere with the refinement from the other hairy men.

Each room had perfect soundproofing methods, not only were disturbances minimized, the hairy men were also prevented from communicating, this made them easier to control, they had no choice but to refine Gu.

Gu refinement carried risks, in fact, it was of similar danger to fighting.

Once explosions occurred due to accidents, the room would be filled with Gu worms that spat out water to eliminate the fire, or to heal the injuries.

When Gu refinement failed, the hairy men which suffered backlashes would be lucky if they survived.

The price for failure in some cases was death. In other cases, their brains might wither, they might go crazy, they might become handicapped, unable to refine Gu anymore.

Fang Yuan would heal mild injuries. But if they were heavily injured and became vegetables, the price for treating them would be too great, Fang Yuan would abandon and euthanize them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 816: Hairy Men, White Silkworm, Two Tough Questions

Gu were the essence of heaven and earth, mortal Gu contained a trace of law fragments of the Great Dao, while Immortal Gu were fragments of the Great Dao.

Gu refinement involved the fusion and interaction of the laws of the Great Dao, it was even more mystical than chemistry, and even more dangerous than processing gunpowder.

Fang Yuan was in the air, he observed for a while, more than ten hairy men had failed Gu refinement, they suffered injuries, a few of them died on the spot.

He could not help but sigh inwardly: “As my production expands, the loss of hairy men is becoming a bigger issue.”

Hairy man slaves were most expensive among slaves, they were even more expensive than human Gu Masters!

This might be quite shocking, how could the price of humans be lower than mere hairy men?

The answer was simple — humans were the spirit of living beings, the human mind was fickle, they were not easy to control. Variant humans were comparatively more simple minded, Fang Yuan could control so many hairy men, making them refine Gu all day along, only giving them time to eat and sleep, with none allocated to leisure.

If these hairy men were human Gu Masters, this life would be impossible.

If human Gu Masters engaged in such strenuous activities for an extended period without rest or entertainment, they would feel extremely angry and hateful, they would attempt to resist.

The arrangement of the stone nest was very simple, it could not block the intelligence of humans. They would definitely cause destruction secretly, and communicate with each other. When the time was ripe, they would resist by protesting, or directly revolt using their own strength.

Thus, Fang Yuan chose to buy hairy men slaves which were most expensive, rather than placing his attention on human Gu Masters.

This was also one of the reasons why Fairy Li Shan desperately wanted Miniscule Mountain. It was not just because of the Gu refinement materials in Miniscule Mountain, but also because it was the base of a miniman tribe. Controlling this tribe would grant her great benefits. Otherwise, the old and sly Dong Fang Chang Fan would not have signed an agreement with the miniman tribe.

“In the past, I could not feel the loss of hairy men, that was because the scale was still small. Now that I have three stone nests, and with the Gu refinement processes becoming tougher, the effect is becoming evident. If this goes on, a problem will arise if I do not create a solution.” Fang Yuan was trying to think of a way.

At this moment, Hei Lou Lan also advised: “Fang Yuan, your loss of hairy men is a bit high. In a month, you lose at least a hundred hairy men. It is quite costly if we think about it, if you can reduce this number, our cost would lower, and the profit of guts Gu would be higher.”

If she was not roped into the guts Gu trade, she would not have said it.

But now that the guts Gu trade also involved Hei Lou Lan’s interests, she had to mention it when she saw a problem.

Fang Yuan nodded: “There are two ways to solve this problem. One is to modify the Gu recipe and reduce the risk, by further splitting up and simplifying the steps, I can make every step safer, and have a higher chance of success. The second method is to raise my own hairy man tribe, I would not need to purchase them at a high price.”

Hei Lou Lan shook her head: “The first method is too difficult, Gu recipes are usually the result of countless improvements, to diversify the steps on this basis and modify the recipe, it is too difficult! The effort and resources needed to undergo experiments will be a huge sum.”

She did not think well of modifying the Gu recipe.

What she did not know was, Fang Yuan had wisdom Gu, even though he could not activate it, the light of wisdom could give him unlimited inspiration. To Fang Yuan, the difficulty in modifying the recipe was about whether he had enough thoughts in his mind to expend.

Fang Yuan would obviously not say this out loud, he spoke without changing his expression: “The second method is just as hard. I do not have any methods of raising hairy men. The ones sold in the market are usually male hairy men, very few females and children are sold, this is also to prevent other Gu Immortals from raising them.”

Raising hairy men, a variant human, was much more difficult than raising wild beasts and plants.

Countries were hard to manage, that was because the citizens had wisdom. Even though this was on a larger scale, the logic remained the same.

The more wisdom they had, the harder they were to control. The hairy men would know how to rebel, they would find loopholes and create problems on a large scale.

Fang Yuan knew clearly: With his current foundation, he would definitely lose everything he invested if he raised hairy men. His previous life’s memories could not help him here.

He vaguely remembered, from his life back on Earth. He raised goldfish, he did not change the water or give them oxygen, he only knew how to feed them food, in three days, one died, and in half a month, all his goldfish died.

Raising hairy men was obviously harder than goldfish, the nature of hairy men, their living habitats, all these needed to be considered, it was a huge field to study.

Fang Yuan had raised rockmen before, in fact, the rockman tribe in Hu Immortal blessed land was still quite large.

But that was because of guts Gu, it could raise the soul foundation of the rockmen and cause them to rapidly reproduce, providing future generations.

This was clearly a cheat method, if Fang Yuan had to raise these rockmen normally...

Hehe.

In two to three years, no matter how many rockmen he started with, they would go extinct!

Of course, he could buy knowledge in raising hairy men from other Gu Immortals. Back then, when Fang Yuan wanted to grow the star fragment grass, he bought some planting insights.

But the difference in value between the two was immense. To buy the knowledge of raising hairy men, the price to pay would be extremely heavy.

Like on Earth, acquisition of an enterprise in the top one hundred would involve a huge amount of funds. Even if Fang Yuan stored up all of his profits starting from now, with his speed of profit generation, he would need to accumulate them for many years to get enough.

“Right now, I have about twenty to thirty immortal essence stones in my storage. Even though I obtained the dragonfish, regretful spiders, and eerie fire dragon pythons, and I even obtained the method to raise them from Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul, but I need to invest and build the structures. Even if I finish building them, I cannot sell these resources directly into treasure yellow heaven, I need to find other avenues. After all, I cannot stand in the limelight now.” Fang Yuan smiled bitterly inwardly.

All in all, his future prospects were bright, but his current circumstances were in an awkward place.

Fang Yuan shrugged off the random thoughts in his mind, he said to Hei Lou Lan: “Alright, I have already told Little Hu Immortal and made the arrangements, I won’t be sending you off. For the following period of time, you can stay in the stone nest. I have already given orders, right now the three stone nests are refining airsac Gu, do assist them. When the earthly calamity arrives, I will call you if I need your help.”

Hei Lou Lan felt something amiss when she heard that. From Fang Yuan’s tone, he was treating her as a laborer.

Fang Yuan saw her ugly expression and did not react, he pretended not to see it.

If he did not squeeze out all of Hei Lou Lan’s value, would that be his style?

After settling Hei Lou Lan’s matters, Fang Yuan returned to Dang Hun palace.

Opening the hidden door, he entered the secret room. He saw Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul again.

His soul was extremely weak, being sealed here, even though he saw Fang Yuan, he could not move.

Fang Yuan intentionally weakened him, resulting in Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul being very weak. Fang Yuan did not dare to be careless, to an old fox like this, he was very vigilant.

But to search his soul again, he needed to replenish it first.

Thus, Fang Yuan broke some airsac Gu, using guts Gu on Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul.

His soul rapidly recovered, in the blink of an eye, it was half healed.

Fang Yuan stretched out his monstrous claw, grabbing the soul and searching it. Dong Fang Chang Fan did not resist it at all, Fang Yuan had already searched his soul thoroughly, he had no secrets left in front of Fang Yuan.

It was as if he resigned himself to fate, he had lost his heart.

A legendary character, falling into such a state, it was quite pitiful.

Fang Yuan was vigilant regardless, after searching the soul, he inspected all of the Gu worms he set up in this room to prevent any accidents from occurring. Dong Fang Chang Fan's soul did not even have a tiny bit of hope left.

All these movements were observed by Dong Fang Chang Fan's soul, he inwardly felt a freezing chill.

Why did he end up in the hands of such a person? There was no way out, this was a dead end, he had no methods left.

As he despaired, he felt a peculiar sense of admiration.

In Fang Yuan, Dong Fang Chang Fan could almost see himself!

Fang Yuan left the secret room, closing the hidden door, he inspected the door again and ensured that there were no issues before returning to the main hall.

He sat on the bed, star thoughts were moving in his mind as he fell into deep thought.

Dong Fang Chang Fan no longer had any secrets, he was squeezed dry. But Fang Yuan kept him around, it was a possible card for use in a future scheme to obtain Miniscule Mountain.

Right now, Miniscule Mountain was owned by Fairy Li Shan, but because of the Snowy Mountain Alliance, Fang Yuan could not snatch it. But the alliance agreement was not impossible to circumvent, like Fairy Li Shan's time path killer move that could delay the damage of breaking the agreement.

In addition, the Snowy Mountain Alliance had a time limit.

Dong Fang Chang Fan and Miniscule Mountain had an agreement. From Dong Fang Chang Fan, Fang Yuan learned that the agreement was made with mountain pledge Gu using Miniscule Mountain.

The agreement was not just between Dong Fang Chang Fan and the miniman Gu Immortal, but was made with Dong Fang tribe and the miniman tribe.

Fairy Li Shan was definitely going to raise the miniman tribe, and make use of them. With this, Dong Fang Chang Fan's soul still had some use, it was an effective weapon.

But this effective weapon could not be used at this point, and he might perhaps not get a chance to use it in the future. But Fang Yuan kept this as a secret, it was a casual move, he would rather keep it prepared it just in case.

He was thinking about the white lotus giant silkworm Gu now.

This time, he searched Dong Fang Chang Fan's soul for information about white lotus giant silkworm Gu.

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu needed the flesh of more than ten thousand white lotus giant silkworm Gu each time it was fed. What Fang Yuan obtained was less than this amount.

He had inspected and confirmed once again that Dong Fang Chang Fan's white lotus giant silkworm Gu were only an unexpected benefit. That place was a natural cave and was created in a mystical way by nature, it was an environment that was suitable for white lotus giant silkworm Gu to live.

Furthermore, Dong Fang Chang Fan captured all of these Gu worms, he did not leave any behind. A large portion of them were used in the phantom formation, they played a critical role.

The remaining portion that was not used was now in Fang Yuan’s hands.

Right now, Fang Yuan had two choices.

One was to use the limited white lotus giant silkworm Gu and undergo experimentation, reverse refining its recipe or even trying to obtain the method to raise white lotus giant silkworm Gu.

If this method worked, he would have an unceasing source of white lotus giant silkworm Gu. But if this fails, and all of the white lotus giant silkworm Gu were consumed in the experiments, cleanse soul Immortal Gu would die of hunger, there would definitely be not enough white lotus giant silkworm Gu left to feed it.

The other method was to feed it now. To leave aside the experiments or the long term advantages. In this case, the white lotus giant silkworm Gu were still insufficient, but it would allow cleanse soul Immortal Gu to become less hungry, no longer under the threat of dying for now.

Fang Yuan still had some hope that Dong Fang Chang Fan might have a place to obtain white lotus giant silkworm Gu, so that he could get a number of them.

But this soul search ruined his wishful thoughts.

After thinking about it for a while, Fang Yuan opened his eyes, making up his mind.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 817: Great Tool for Deduction, Star Thoughts

“Never mind! I should play it safe and use these for feeding. Cleanse soul Immortal Gu is already starving to its limits, it is very weak now, if I do not feed it and drag this on, it will die. As for the next feeding session, I can only place hope in the future.”

Fang Yuan was of the demonic path, he liked to take risks, but he did not take them blindly.

He always assessed the benefits and risks.

Having a mentality of leaving things to chance and thinking one’s own luck is good, to put up stakes on chances that are low, the cruelty of reality would teach them a lesson until they suffer greatly and end up full of bruises.

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu was in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

It was the size of a grown up’s fist, it was like a tadpole, its body was grey-white and dry, it was sprawled on the ground, not moving at all.

Fang Yuan willed and used his Gu to dissect the white lotus giant silkworm Gu, retrieving the meat and placing it in front of cleanse soul Immortal Gu.

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu’s body shook, but it did not have any strength to crawl to the food!

Fang Yuan could only place cleanse soul Immortal Gu on the meat.

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu moved about before calming down, slowly sucking the blood in the meat quietly.

After a while, the blood entered its stomach and it regained a bit of strength, it opened its mouth and started to eat the white lotus giant silkworm Gu’s tender flesh.

The more it ate, the more its dry body inflated like a balloon, it became chubbier once again.

Its grey-white body also showed a faint luster.

When all of the white lotus giant silkworm Gu were killed, and the meat given to cleanse soul Immortal Gu were all eaten, cleanse soul Immortal Gu was no longer as weak as before, it could fly in the sky.

It was like a grey-white tadpole, its round head was like a small balloon, its tail was wriggling around behind it as it swam slowly like an old man without much strength.

It opened its mouth occasionally, its mouth was half the size of its head, right now, it could open it and make some soft noises.

Fang Yuan knew that it was trying to express that it still wanted more food. But all of the white lotus giant silkworm Gu were used up, not a single one was left.

Even though cleanse soul Immortal Gu was not satisfied, Fang Yuan sighed in relief.

For now, cleanse soul Immortal Gu had escaped the awkward fate of dying from hunger, after all, Fang Yuan had been ready to give up on it.

Now that it was still alive, this was a good ending.

Most importantly, he managed to get precious time for it. One could not be certain about the future, anything is possible.

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu was not full, thus Fang Yuan kept it while trying not to use it.

After temporarily solving cleanse soul Immortal Gu’s feeding problem, Fang Yuan could relax, but he did not take a break, instead, he made use of his time and rushed into an underground cave again.

In the underground cave, there was a zhi forest.

The tallest lingzhi king was six meters tall, reaching the ceiling of the cave. The flesh of the lingzhi was like a huge umbrella, spreading out in a circular manner.

When Fang Yuan reached here, he saw that the rank nine wisdom Gu was flying around this lingzhi king, it was like a child playing around, flapping its wings and bobbing up and down. At times, it bumped into the lingzhi king and was bounced back by the rubbery flesh.

Fang Yuan’s was inwardly moved, he had many Immortal Gu, but compared to them, the rank nine wisdom Gu had much more intelligence, it was quite extraordinary.

Thinking about <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, wisdom Gu, strength Gu, and the others could speak to Ren Zu!

Of course, this might have been exaggeration from the story.

But Fang Yuan knew that wisdom Gu could be communicated with. Precisely because of this, Fang Yuan could bring wisdom Gu away during the final moments before Imperial Court blessed land’s destruction, and be able to use its light of wisdom now.

After seeing Fang Yuan, wisdom Gu stopped flying, it stopped on the thick stem of the lingzhi king.

After Fang Yuan sat down on a shorter lingzhi like it was a chair, wisdom Gu started to give off the halo of the light of wisdom, covering Fang Yuan in it.

Fang Yuan activated star thought Gu.

Star thought Gu was a one time consumable Gu, with the expenditure of each star thought Gu, the thoughts in Fang Yuan’s mind moved rapidly and generated endlessly.

At once, in his mind, starlight specks were created, a moment later, it was like the night sky, countless stars were shining brightly, it was a beautiful sight.

Fang Yuan tried to make deductions.

Instantly, star thoughts in his mind burst into action, it was like water poured into a hot pan.

Star specks moved like meteors, starlight spun around, they collided into one another or repelled each other.

His inspiration was unlimited, there were many aspects of deduction, he obtained many answers from the complex procedure, it was completed in a moment!

Fang Yuan stopped at once, he opened his eyes, showing immense joy in his expression.

Earlier, he was just giving it a try, this wisdom path inheritance really did not disappoint him, it was even better than his expectations.

“Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance is truly suited for deductions. Star thoughts are so durable, my initial estimation is that one star thought can substitute for three to four malicious thoughts and memory thoughts.” Fang Yuan assessed in his mind.

In wisdom path there were three aspects, thoughts, wills and emotions.

But thoughts varied greatly, there were all sorts of thoughts, it could be said that there were countless kinds of them!

Thoughts were all different, they had their own advantages and weaknesses.

For example, malicious thoughts were good for plotting against others, memory thoughts were good for digging up information in memories. But these two were just average when used for deductions. Star thoughts were not good at plotting or digging up memories, but they were extremely useful for deductions!

One star thought was equivalent to three to four other thoughts, this might seem rather insignificant. But looking at it, how many thoughts were expended to deduce one immortal killer move or Immortal Gu recipe?

When this amount becomes huge, the difference would be great. When hundreds, thousands, tens of thousands, hundreds of thousands or even millions of thoughts are consumed, the advantage of using star thoughts to do deductions would be immense!

One could say that this star thought wisdom path inheritance was most suited for Fang Yuan.

All along, he had been restricted by the number of thoughts he had!

The light of wisdom had intense expenditure, it could use up any number of thoughts quickly.

Fang Yuan had many things to deduce in accordance with his plans.

The first was the immortal killer move vaguely familiar face, previously, he did not succeed, he only finished a portion of it.

The second was to complete the Immortal Gu recipe of Blood Deity. He did not succeed either with that, he only gave it a small attempt.

The third was to deduce an immortal killer move to allow time luck Immortal Gu and inch of time to work together, to reduce the consumption of inch of time while amplifying one’s own luck temporarily. Fang Yuan had tried this earlier, but he failed because his time path attainment level was too low. Now, he did not have to deduce it anymore, because Fang Yuan had obtained an even better immortal killer move from Fairy Li Shan, time assist luck.

Fourth was to fuse Pulling Mountain and Pulling Water, these two strength path Immortal Gu, into the immortal killer move myriad self, and make myriad self even stronger.

The fifth was to modify airsac Gu and the other Gu refinement recipes, to subdivide the steps even further, to lower the risk of Gu refinement and reduce the death rate of the hairy men.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, calming his mind.

Vaguely familiar face was the one that he needed to place most importance in deducing, because the situation in the outside world was getting more tense, if Fang Yuan wanted to move around, he needed an immortal level disguise to prevent his identity from being exposed.

Airsac Gu and the other Gu recipes were not an urgent matter. Moreover, this plan involved too many details, in the future when Fang Yuan expanded his Gu refinement scale, he would not be refining just airsac Gu, memory thought Gu, malicious thought Gu and star thought Gu.

As for Blood Deity, it was only a long term plan, it was not even necessary to him. After all, Fang Yuan was cultivating strength path now, and was planning to cultivate time path or wisdom path, he did not want to develop blood path.

If it was in the past, Fang Yuan would naturally deduce the immortal killer move vaguely familiar face first, but now that Hu Immortal blessed land was facing its earthly calamity soon, Fang Yuan’s first priority was to fuse pulling mountain Immortal Gu into myriad self killer move.

Fang Yuan shut his eyes and settled his mind, he deduced with all his concentration.

Starlight reacted in his mind, as countless star thoughts rumbled.

Time passed, an hour, four hours, half a day, one day, two days later...

On the afternoon of the third day, Fang Yuan opened his eyes, even with his immortal zombie physique, exhaustion was written all over his face, he was very tired.

“I finally fused pulling mountain Immortal Gu into my killer move, myriad self. Myriad self’s power has risen by ten percent. If I am dealing with earth path Gu Immortals, or any mountains or rocks, the effect would be even greater, at least twenty percent higher!”

Fang Yuan inspected his star thought Gu.

There were about forty thousand star thought Gu left in his immortal aperture.

He originally had fifty thousand star thought Gu, in other words, this deduction used up ten thousand star thought Gu.

Star thought Gu were really durable!

“Of course, this durability is only for deductions. If I used star thought Gu to plot against others or think about harmful schemes, malicious thought Gu would be better. In terms of recollection, star thought Gu is inferior to memory thought Gu.”

Be it star thought Gu, memory thought Gu, or malicious thought Gu, he still had to refine them and keep a huge stock.

This was a huge project, it was a long term goal.

Looking at the time, it was still not the point of Hu Immortal blessed land’s calamity. But if he used the remaining time to deduce the immortal killer move vaguely familiar face, it was insufficient, he could not get anything done.

Fang Yuan thus returned to Dang Hun palace, continuing to research on the wisdom path inheritance.

This immortal level wisdom path inheritance had a lot of information, there were hundreds of mortal Gu recipes, more than ten Immortal Gu recipes, dozens of mortal killer moves, and close to ten immortal killer moves, they comprised offense, defense, movement, storage, healing, and others.

Other than that, there were many wisdom path techniques and methods. For example, secret arts that could expand the size of the mind, or the modification of the heart into a space for additional thinking, unique methods like that.

There was even knowledge about astronomy and geography, the map of the five regions’ resources, the analysis of Northern Plains’ forces, an introduction to all sorts of dangers one can face when cultivating, and how to resolve them. Most importantly, there were details on how a Gu Master can undergo immortal ascension, an introduction to all sorts of heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities and how to deal with them.

Of course, there were details about other paths, like fire path, metal path, space path and time path, the strengths and weaknesses of these paths, what needs do they have and how to deal with them in combat.

There were even some insights on how to handle management, especially in a Gu

Immortal’s blessed land, to allow one to survive and progress further.

One could say that this was a Gu Master’s encyclopedia to become a Gu Immortal, it allowed one to be realistic and decipher what was easy and hard, to gain methods of dealing with enemies and grow stronger.

This inheritance was not just the credit of the creator — the Heavenly Court star path Gu Immortal. Each of the Gu Immortals who cultivated after receiving this inheritance had added in more details and modified the information. After generations and generations of effort and hard work, this cultivation encyclopedia was created.

Fang Yuan could see much of the ancient history of Central Continent and Northern Plains in it. And at the end of the information on immortal killer moves, Fang Yuan saw that the last, newest addition was the previous owner’s, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s, immortal killer move — Myriad Star Fireflies.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 818: Vanishing Immortal Essence Dissipation, Profound Ice House

This inheritance’s value could not be expressed in words, it was even more huge than the blood path inheritance that Fang Yuan obtained in his previous life.

Even Fang Yuan was sighing: “If I had obtained this inheritance earlier, be it this life or my previous life, I would have become a Gu Immortal long ago!”

Fang Yuan had spent so many years staggering along his cultivation journey, crossing rivers carefully by stepping on every rock, finally reaching his achievements today. In contrast, when Dong Fang Chang Fan was still a mortal, he received this inheritance, his luck was truly something to be envious about!

Eastern Sea, Yu Lu blessed land.

It was drizzling with a thin fog in the air.

The Gu Immortals from Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance were trapped inside, they were looking for an exit vigilantly.

“Damn it, don’t let the rain touch you, it has the ability to consume your immortal essence!” The expression of the leading immortal zombie, Shark Demon, changed as he shouted at the immortals behind him.

Shark Demon had rich experience, he reacted rapidly, the moment he saw the ability of this seemingly harmless drizzle, he knew this was an attack.

Hearing his warning, the immortals used all sorts of methods and put up their defenses, blocking the drizzle.

But it was no use.

“This drizzle penetrates everything! Is this the immortal killer move that Fairy Yu Lu was famous for — Vanishing Immortal Essence Dissipation Rain?” An immortal zombie thought of a crucial piece of information, as his expression turned very ugly.

“Even the great vanishing immortal essence dissipation rain cannot have such incredible ability, our defenses have literally no effect!” Another immortal zombie shouted, showing an extremely shocked expression.

“I got it! In the previous round, we were hit by the immortal killer move, raindrop equity. Thus, in this round, our defenses have no use against the vanishing immortal essence dissipation rain, we can only let it touch us.” Immortal zombie Su Bai Man’s eyes shined with brilliance as she said.

The immortals communicated rapidly, the moment they got the answer, their hearts sank.

This was not the first time they were attacking Yu Lu blessed land, there were many rounds in Yu Lu blessed land, each round was interconnected with others and was very difficult to deal with.

Immortal zombies consisted of most of this group of Gu Immortals. There were a total of seven people, five were immortal zombies.

Immortal zombies have dead immortal apertures, they cannot manage their blessed lands that are filled with death energy, they could not produce immortal essence naturally. Thus, if immortal zombies wanted to have immortal essence, they would need to convert it using immortal essence stones.

Immortal essence of immortal zombies was much more precious compared to ordinary Gu Immortals, they were not easy to obtain.

Now that the immortals were in this round, before they had even fought, the vanishing immortal essence dissipation rain was already vaporizing their immortal essence, it was hitting at their weakness.

Seeing the immortal essence that they had painstakingly saved up vanish bead by bead, the immortal zombies felt a strong sense of loss.

They discussed among themselves and quickly came to an agreement — they had to get through this round quickly and find a way out, otherwise they would be in danger!

The immortals used all sorts of methods, but an hour later, they made no progress.

“Oh no, this battlefield killer move is so hard to resolve, more than thirty beads of my immortal essence have melted!”

“Fairy Yu Lu was the second disciple of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, she was a rank eight great expert! Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was most skilled in battlefield killer moves, Fairy Yu Lu was Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s disciple, she had learned the core of this ability, not only did she know many battlefield killer moves, she even innovated and created her own versions. This battlefield killer move was her personal creation, it was not recorded in history.”

“This battlefield killer move has no attacking power, but it has a huge range, when used with vanishing immortal essence dissipation rain, it is being used to drain us to nothing! What shall we do?”

Almost all of their methods were used up, the Gu Immortals were starting to panic.

Shark Demon, the leader, had a grim expression, he looked at the wisdom path Gu Immortal in the group as he shouted: “Bo Dan, what are you doing? It’s been so long, haven’t you deduced the flaw in this battlefield killer move?!”

Bo Dan had his forehead covered in sweat from the scolding, he replied in anxiety and worry: “I’m unable to! This battlefield killer move is simply too profound, it surpasses the previous battlefield killer move by a huge margin. The wisdom path inheritance I have is incomplete, I cannot think of a way to break through this.”

This Bo Dan was a living person and a wisdom path Gu Immortal, but he was scolded by the immortal zombie Shark Demon fiercely, he cowered like a helpless puppy.

Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance was the headquarters of Zombie Alliance, it was different from the other four regions, it had a huge force and surpassed ordinary super forces by a margin. The Zombie Alliance headquarters not only had many immortal zombie experts, it also had living Gu Immortals. These living Gu Immortals had lower statuses than immortal zombies in most cases.

Shark Demon’s anger resided slightly after he shouted, he said with some regret: “Bo Dan is powerless! Our only choice is to use Profound Ice House and forcefully attack, to see if a path can be created!”

The other Gu Immortals were overjoyed, their eyes shined: “To think that Lord Shark Demon borrowed Profound Ice House for this trip.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s eyes were also shining.

In Eastern Sea, Zombie Alliance was very powerful, it was a ruler of the region, it was a senior among the super forces. For instance, it had three Immortal Gu Houses!

Of course, only one was complete, the other two were extremely incomplete.

But even an incomplete Immortal Gu House could be forcibly activated, it had great power.

Shark Demon was a rank seven expert, ever since he took the mission from Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance’s main base to attack Yu Lu blessed land, he had entered the blessed land multiple times and passed many rounds.

The more rounds they passed, the more emphasis he placed on Yu Lu blessed land.

This time, when exploring the blessed land, he had borrowed Profound Ice House from Zombie Alliance after paying a huge price, due to the urging of his wife, Su Bai Man.

Shark Demon took out Profound Ice House, this house was not big, it was like a ball that resembled a block of ice. Once it was taken out, the air turned cold, many Gu Immortals felt a chill.

Shark Demon did not speak, he opened the door of the house, entering it. Next, his beloved wife Su Bai Man went in, followed by the other five.

Inside the house, there was a huge ball shaped space with no furniture. The immortals were floating inside, and they were surrounded by a cold white light.

Within the white light, there were traces of golden light, in several breaths’ time, the golden light stabilized, they were like golden threads weaving together into a formation chart.

Shark Demon ordered the immortals to stand on the formation core, he said: “Everyone, expend your immortal essence and activate this Immortal Gu House.

This Immortal Gu House will record how much immortal essence you put in.”

Everyone knew that activating this Immortal Gu House would expend immortal essence extensively. This activation was probably going to be higher than the amount they had lost in the vanishing immortal essence dissipation rain.

If not for this weakness, Shark Demon would have used the Immortal Gu House long ago.

This time, they charged into Yu Lu blessed land without killing any strong enemies or encountering any battles, but they had made such a loss, they consumed a lot of immortal essence, everyone was feeling gloomy.

But hearing this, they restrained their gloomy thoughts and put in all their effort.

Several minutes later, on the calm surface of Eastern Sea, a huge icy meteor flew out.

The meteor charged out at a high speed, penetrating the water surface and reaching tens of meters into the sky in the blink of an eye.

The ‘meteor’ stopped suddenly in the air, it went from high speed to stillness, showing its true form, it was the rank six Immortal Gu House — incomplete Profound Ice House.

“Come out.” In the house, Shark Demon said with a look of dejection.

Immediately, the doors opened and the immortals flew out, floating in the air.

In the air, the immortals looked down.

The sea had turbulent waves, it was no longer calm like before, this was caused by Profound Ice House emerging to the surface.

But the immortals’ mind were all on Yu Lu blessed land, which had been placed deep underwater.

The immortals had attacked Yu Lu blessed land more than once, there were victories and losses. Now was not their first loss, but it was the most dispiriting one.

Attacking Yu Lu blessed land was not about attacking it forcefully, it was about balancing the gains and losses.

This Yu Lu blessed land was firmly controlled by Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance, there were no other forces trying to compete for it, thus, they could explore it at their own pace and progress slowly.

Facing such a mystical battlefield killer move, even if they used Profound Ice House, they could only leave the blessed land, they could not break through it.

In that case, what should they do to pass this round?

Shark Demon was the last to walk out, he retrieved Profound Ice House and thought to himself with a hint of dejection: “I made a huge loss this time, not only did I gain nothing from attacking Yu Lu blessed land, I even used Profound Ice House, when we get back to Zombie Alliance, I will have to pay a huge amount of contribution points!”

“Thankfully, we had Profound Ice House, otherwise we would still be trapped inside.” Gu Immortal Bo Dan said with some lingering fear.

Shark Demon gave him a harsh glance, he quickly shut up.

The other Gu Immortals nodded slightly, they felt glad that Shark Demon brought Profound Ice House along with him on this trip.

“This vanishing immortal essence dissipation rain is too powerful. Even the Immortal Gu House could not defend against it, we were still hit by it.” At another side, Tai Bai Yun Sheng suddenly spoke.

Seeing Tai Bai Yun Sheng speak, Shark Demon’s expression became milder as he said: “That is because this Profound Ice House’s greatest purpose is to help ice path Gu Immortals cultivate. Don’t be deceived by its ordinary looking appearance, inside it is extremely damaged, it was fixed to the extent of barely being usable. If this was a complete Immortal Gu House, we could use it to defend even if we were inside.”

“So that is it.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded, not saying anything else.

“Alright, this trip of exploring Yu Lu blessed land has ended, we can split up here.” Shark Demon waved his hand, declaring this.

The immortals left one by one rapidly.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng was in no hurry to leave.

“Sir Tai Bai, are there any issues?” Su Bai Man asked.

This immortal zombie couple were extremely courteous to Tai Bai Yun Sheng, the reason was the man as before Immortal Gu in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s possession.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng smiled: “Both of you know I am a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, I’ve been in Eastern Sea for some time already.”

Su Bai Man and Shark Demon gave each other a glance before nodding together.

They knew this.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng could not conceal his aura as he did not have a method like Old Lord Can Yang. Thus, his Northern Plains Gu Immortal identity was exposed long ago.

But this was not strange.

Because Eastern Sea had the earth tide.

Once in a while, from the bottom of the sea, there would be a boundless force from the earth, it was grand and imposing, the might of nature, it was a fearsome power that far exceeded the limits of rank eight Gu Immortals.

The force from the earth would move up, stirring the seawater, causing the earth tide.

The power of the earth tide was great, it could easily whip up giant tsunamis.

The earth tide would collide on the regional walls, causing them to weaken.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 819: Returning To The Blessed Land, Putting Up A Show

It was already an extremely difficult thing for Gu Immortals to pass a regional wall.

However, at this time every year, because of the earth tide, Eastern Sea’s regional wall would become weaker and thinner, and Gu Immortals of Central Continent, Northern Plains and Southern Border could take this chance to enter Eastern Sea.

Naturally, there were also a few Eastern Sea Gu Immortals that took this chance to enter Central Continent, Northern Plains or Southern Border.

Thus, it was not a strange thing for Gu Immortals of these three regions to come to Eastern Sea.

However, it was rare for Western Desert Gu Immortals to be in Eastern Sea. Western Desert and Eastern Sea were separated by the other regions in the middle. It would definitely be eye-catching if a Western Desert Gu Immortal appeared in Eastern Sea.

There were five regions – Central Continent, Northern Plains, Southern Border, Western Desert and Eastern Sea. Among them, Central Continent had the highest all-around strength, with countless Gu Master sects. Southern Border was covered with hundreds of thousands of mountains. Northern Plains’ terrain was flat and boundless, the tribes moved around the most and they were the most battle-hardened.

And Eastern Sea was the most abundant in resources. In the vast sea areas and deep seas, countless water creatures, sea beasts, minerals and precious stones were hidden.

The Gu Immortals of Central Continent, Northern Plains and Southern Border came to Eastern Sea mostly for these resources, and this situation was common. Especially Northern Plains, where battles occurred the most and resources were few, their Gu Immortals came to Eastern Sea to seek opportunities to grow, and there were also many who came to stay away from trouble.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng continued: “With your support, I have been able to make good progress in Eastern Sea, and now my immortal aperture is showing signs of instability. The earth tide is arriving, I want to take this chance to return to Northern Plains and place my blessed land down, to stabilize my immortal aperture for the earthly calamity.”

“So it is like that.” Shark Demon nodded.

“We should have thought of that. Sir Tai Bai should pay attention to safety when you leave. Maybe you can let us drop you there?” Su Bai Man suggested while smiling.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng waved his hand: “No need, no need.”

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man did not insist when they saw Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s refusal.

The regional wall would become weaker because of the earth tide, but endless tidal forces would be present at the weak area, they were like countless reefs and vortexes, and it could get very dangerous. To pass through these, one must have an accurate map of the route.

This kind of map was extremely precious, it was better if the map was deduced by a wisdom path Gu Immortal, but if one did not have wisdom path methods, they could only rely on themselves to map the route through trial and error.

If Tai Bai Yun Sheng let the two escort him, then wouldn’t his route be revealed?

Thus, Shark Demon and his wife did not insist.

“After dealing with my matters in Northern Plains, I will return in the next earth tide. Maybe I can even persuade a few friends to come with me.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng spoke this, as a way of preparing for Fang Yuan’s appearance.

“Good! Brother Tai Bai’s friends are our friends, we will definitely welcome them properly!” Shark Demon laughed and said with great enthusiasm.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng bade his farewell.

When Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s receding figure had shrunk to the size of an ant, Su Bai Man frowned as she sent a transmission to Shark Demon: “Although the regional wall will be weakened, the earth tide is terrifying, if one is just the slightest bit careless and struck by the formless tidal forces, fractured bones would be the least of their problems, it is very possible for them to die a violent death on the spot. Did you see how relaxed Tai Bai Yun Sheng appeared, he definitely has complete confidence in his route, are we really not going to follow him? If we had this route, we could also enter Northern Plains, and even if we don’t have any use for it, we can turn it over to Zombie Alliance for large amounts of contribution points and reduce the losses of this attempt.”

Shark Demon firmly refused: “No need. The routes are not fixed in place, after some earth tides, the formless tidal forces would change greatly, and the old routes will lose their value. Our main goal is to cooperate with him to use Man as Before for our revival. This is a long term plan and we cannot harm the good relation between us and him for small profits in the short term.”

“Alright, I will listen to you.” Su Bai Man dispelled her thoughts, looking at her husband with a warm gaze, her zombie face, however, was somewhat terrifying.

Shark Demon did not care in the slightest as he affectionately took Su Bai Man in his arms, letting her lean on his chest while he consoled her gently: “I know what you are worried about. We hold the task of attacking Yu Lu blessed land, and by using Profound Ice House, our losses have become large. But it doesn’t matter, who doesn’t suffer setbacks and failures as they live in this world? We still have the foundation to sustain the losses. Now we have the hope of revival, don’t be afraid, no matter what the future is like, how many difficulties we face, I will always guard you by your side.”

“Dear...”

The vast Eastern Sea and the clear sky merged into one at the horizon, and seagulls could be seen occasionally flying in the sky.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng flew through the sky without stopping.

White fog lingered around his body, increasing his speed without producing any noise. Naturally, this was only a mortal killer move, and it could not compare to Fang Yuan’s three pairs of true solid bat wings. And once Fang Yuan’s iron crown eagle strength activated, the disparity between them would become even greater.

However, this killer move had its own advantages, as the clouds covered one’s body, mortals would not be able to see him.

This was not yet the time of five regions chaotic war, there was a chasm between Gu Immortals and mortals. Most mortal Gu Masters had only heard of immortals and had no personal experiences with them. Many even only thought of immortals in a similar way to wispy legends.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was, after all, a Northern Plains Gu Immortal and was an outsider in Eastern Sea, thus he tried to keep a low profile.

At the beginning, as per Fang Yuan’s instructions, he received tasks of restoring sea areas in Hai Shi blessed land, and after making a name, he was able to get connected to Shark Demon and others. All the attempts at attacking Yu Lu blessed land essentially included him as well. Shark Demon and his wife treated him very well, which was naturally because of his Man as Before. Shark Demon possessed time anchor Immortal Gu, which, when used with Man as Before, produced a hope of revival.

However, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man had no thoughts of seizing man as before Immortal Gu.

Unless one had methods like those of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, it was almost impossible to forcibly take Immortal Gu.

Dong Fang Chang Fan was so weak and Fang Yuan held such huge dominance, but at the end, Dong Fang Chang Fan self-detonated with just a thought, not giving Fang Yuan even one Immortal Gu as the spoils for battle. The difficulty of seizing Immortal Gu was evident.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng flew for a long while before he finally saw a ‘grey streak’ on the surface of the sea.

As he approached closer, the ‘grey streak’ in his sight gradually enlarged. It was a small island.

This island did not have a spirit spring and it was scarce in vegetation; it was basically a bare, greyish-brown rock, even sea birds rarely visited it. In a region with bountiful resources like Eastern Sea, it was a barren place.

However, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a Gu Immortal, he did not care about this, only treating it as a temporary residence.

An isolated island with a barren landscape would naturally not be coveted by anyone, reducing potential attention and trouble.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng slowly landed on the island.

He first inspected the Gu formation he had set to see if there had been any changes.

These Gu formations were all coarsely arranged by him. One use was for simple monitoring, and another use was that if some other Gu Immortals came here, the Gu formation would indicate that this island was not ownerless.

After inspecting it, Tai Bai Yun Sheng found close to ten additional Gu worms.

These were all information path Gu worms, carrying messages.

Originally, although Tai Bai Yun Sheng had been low-key in his conduct, but as a time path healing Gu Immortal with extremely useful Immortal Gu on him, he earned quite a bit of attention and could not be hidden for long.

These information path Gu came from all sorts of parties, some were from super forces, some from the demonic path, some from immortal zombies and some from righteous path lone cultivators. Most of them were requests for Tai Bai Yun Sheng to remedy certain things.

A smaller portion did not request Tai Bai Yun Sheng to immediately help, but wanted to establish friendly relations. If by chance, a mishap happened in the future, would this relationship not be of use?

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a benign nature, and also possessed two time path Immortal Gu, thus he was greatly welcomed in Eastern Sea.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng collected these information path Gu worms and entered a cavern.

He had only made this cavern for temporary use and had not spent any efforts on it, thus it looked very crude and simple.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng first replied to these information path Gu worms, excusing himself from the invitations one by one, before sinking into deep thought.

“I can open a stargate to conveniently return to Hu Immortal blessed land. But if I directly open a stargate now, it can ruin the situation.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng could now be considered to have some fame, his actions would be secretly observed by many people.

Thus, his return to Hu Immortal blessed land this time was more troublesome than previous times. He would really have to put on a false show of approaching the regional wall, using a stargate after there was nobody paying attention.

Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fang Yuan had been studying the wisdom path inheritance for three days and three nights.

He did not know how many thoughts were expended in his mind, in producing many insights.

“Dong Fang Chang Fan was brimming with talent, this wisdom path inheritance in itself primarily gave priority to deductions, and is not specialized for battles, but he conceived the immortal killer move myriad star fireflies, which is a unique concept that almost perfectly transforms the superiority in deduction of the inheritance into offensive power. In this entire inheritance, myriad star fireflies is truly worthy of being the strongest offensive killer move!”

This was why Fang Yuan was sighing inwardly.

His nature was different from Tai Bai Yun Sheng, his was a nature filled with heavy aggressiveness.

The first thing he paid attention to was the offensive methods of the inheritance.

How did myriad star fireflies cause Fang Yuan to sigh inwardly?

The foundation of this move was still star thought Gu. Every starlight firefly was encased in a star thought.

The consumption of using this move was terrifying.

Not only immortal essence, it also expended the wisdom path dao marks in the Gu

Immortal’s body.

Gu Immortals contained dao marks in their bodies, Fang Yuan had strength path dao marks, fire path Gu Immortals had fire path dao marks. Dong Fang Chang Fan’s body naturally had wisdom path dao marks, every time he used this move, it would consume at least sixteen wisdom path dao marks.

Dao marks were very hard to obtain.

To obtain dao marks, besides rare and unique methods, the most common and orthodox method was to pass heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities. Every tribulation and calamity passed could add dao marks to the Gu Immortal’s body.

The amount of dao marks received was determined by the strength of the heavenly tribulation or earthly calamity. The stronger the heavenly tribulation or earthly calamity, the more dao marks would be obtained.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 820: Insufficient Wealth To Refine Immortal Gu

Myriad star fireflies was a move that expended at least sixteen dao marks when used, there was no upper limit. The greater the range of myriad star fireflies, or the higher its power, the more dao marks would be consumed when using it.

But that was precisely why this move was extremely strong.

The dao marks enter space, forming a peculiar battlefield, it was hard to destroy. When Gu Immortals entered the range, their thoughts would turn into star thoughts, forming the attack for myriad star fireflies. As time passes, myriad star fireflies would grow stronger, this was converting the enemy’s strength into one’s own strength, and attacking them with it.

To enemy Gu Immortals, this was an obscene feeling. It was like they were dropping a rock onto their own feet, or taking a dagger and stabbing themselves.

After understanding the secret of myriad star fireflies’ usage, Fang Yuan understood something else.

No wonder that in the past, Dong Fang Chang Fan usually used plots and schemes to deal with matters. Only until he had no choice would he take action by using myriad star fireflies.

Because even though Dong Fang Chang Fan was the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal of the current generation in Northern Plains, he could not use myriad star fireflies frequently — its cost was too high.

Once dao marks were expended, they could not be recovered. Dao marks were hard to obtain, most Gu Immortals could only get a large number of dao marks after going through a tribulation.

“This myriad star fireflies is on par with my current killer move, myriad self. Of course, my killer move, myriad self, still has a lot of room for improvements, myriad star fireflies cannot compete with it in this regard. I do not have any wisdom path dao marks, unless I enter into wisdom path, I might never be able to use this killer move in my lifetime.”

Of course, there was also another important point to consider.

That was, this killer move, myriad star fireflies, needed a core of three wisdom path Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan did not have a single one.

When Dong Fang Chang Fan lost, he self-detonated all of his Immortal Gu, he did not leave any to Fang Yuan.

Among these three wisdom path Immortal Gu, the one Fang Yuan wanted the most was star thought Immortal Gu.

There were more than ten Immortal Gu recipes in this wisdom path inheritance, among them was the recipe for star thought Immortal Gu, there was even the refinement experiences of all the past inheritors, and all of their findings after failures!

Once he had star thought Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan would not need to waste so much effort in slowly accumulating the mortal star thought Gu.

The inheritance said: One bead of green grape immortal essence could produce a hundred thousand star thoughts from the use of star thought Immortal Gu.

Of course, if Fang Yuan used star thought Immortal Gu, the number he would obtain would be less than a hundred thousand.

That was because each of the wisdom path Gu Immortal inheritors had wisdom path dao marks in them, that amplified the effect of star thought Immortal Gu. It was the same as how Fang Yuan could increase giant hand’s power by twenty percent with his strength path dao marks.

Twenty percent was very low, ordinary Gu Immortal experts had dao marks that could increase the power of their Immortal Gu, and their immortal killer moves would grow in power accordingly. Twice, thrice, four or five times, ten times, or even a hundred times!

One of the main reasons why the difference between rank seven and eight was so great was due to this.

The higher the cultivation level, the more terrifying the tribulations, once they passed them, they would obtain a greater number of dao marks.

Fortune and disaster appeared in turn, from another perspective, the stronger the heavenly tribulation or earthly calamity, the more benefits one would obtain, it was a good thing.

Once Fang Yuan had star thought Immortal Gu, in terms of deductions, he would have fewer obstacles. He would not need to plan their consumption so painstakingly, maintaining such minimal and cautious consumption of star thought Gu.

In addition, with his current wealth, he could sustain the expenditure of it.

But the problem was, though Fang Yuan could sustain the cost of using the Immortal Gu, he could not afford to refine the Immortal Gu itself.

Even though he made some profits, he was still a long way from refining Immortal Gu.

Immortal Gu were unique, they were fragments of the Great Dao, the immortal essence stones and immortal materials expended when refining Immortal Gu were extremely great.

Most importantly, when refining Immortal Gu, one could not prepare just one set of materials, they had to prepare many portions because the success rate of refining Immortal Gu was too low!

Dong Fang Chang Fan was a formidable person in his time, the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, he was in control of a super force for many years, he had also secretly worked with Immortal Crane Sect, obtaining a fair sum of funds. But even so, at his peak, he only had eight Immortal Gu in his possession.

Among these eight, there was menses blood Immortal Gu and split shadow Immortal Gu, these Immortal Gu were not of wisdom path. There were more than ten Immortal Gu recipes in his wisdom path inheritance, among them, he only refined less than half.

For example, looking at Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Lady Wan Shou, the former had the highest battle strength among the rank eights in Northern Plains, while the latter was one of the four most famous refinement path Gu Immortals in Northern Plains. They had deep foundations and were very affluent.

But to refine the rank eight fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, even though they had Ma Hong Yun and could save a lot of resources, the rest of the resources needed still used up almost all of their savings, it could be said that they were going all in on this!

With Fang Yuan’s current situation, wanting to refine Immortal Gu was simply wishful thinking.

Other than star thought Immortal Gu, there was an immortal killer move that Fang Yuan thought highly of, it was called star fog concealment.

This move was used to enshroud a Gu Immortal in a layer of foggy starlight for extended periods of time, it could conceal their appearance and prevent others from seeing it.

This was just the surface level effect.

Its true effect was to conceal the Gu Immortal from appearing as among the secrets of heaven, when other Gu Immortals tried to deduce matters about this Gu Immortal, the information would be concealed in fog, they would obtain unclear answers.

This was almost like the effect of dark limit Immortal Gu.

Dark limit Immortal Gu’s effect was to make the Gu Immortal be overlooked and for others to fail in the deduction. Star fog concealment obscured the information and make deductions harder, getting unclear answers.

This wisdom path immortal killer move was one of the more unorthodox ones in the wisdom path inheritance, many of the inheritors did not use it in their lifetimes, thus the recorded experiences on this move were very few in number.

Because wisdom path Gu Immortals were rare to begin with, wisdom path Gu Immortals rarely plotted against or attempted to make each other’s schemes fail. Under most situations, even if they used it, they could not know what their enemies sensed when deducing information on them.

But to Fang Yuan, this was very useful to him.

Wasn’t his motive for getting the wisdom path inheritance to defend against other wisdom path Gu Immortals, to greatly delay the information of him being the culprit from being exposed to everyone?

But unfortunately, this immortal killer move needed two wisdom path Immortal Gu as the core.

But the problem was this — Fang Yuan did not have the wealth to refine Immortal Gu!

Eventually, after Fang Yuan browsed through the entire wisdom path inheritance, he realized that what he could learn and make use of currently, while also being suitable for himself, was only one particular part.

It was how to deal with enemy wills.

There was a lot of content on this, how to defend against enemy wills, how to differentiate wills, how to control enemy wills, what to do when under the control of enemy wills and how to control them instead, how to use wills to attack, important matters when engaging in a battle of wills, how to detect wills, how to heal wills, how to amplify the power of wills, how to weaken wills, and much more.

Why did Fang Yuan want to learn this?

Because in his hands, he had Mo Yao’s will!

Mo Yao had incredible refinement path attainment in her life, she was also an inkman with a lot of secrets of inkmen, she was even the lover of Bo Qing, and was a certain generation’s fairy of Spirit Affinity House, she knew many historical events that were extremely valuable. What moved Fang Yuan the most was the Red Lotus Demon Venerable inheritance clues that she had.

The vital Gu of Fang Yuan’s first aperture, Spring Autumn Cicada, was Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s vital Gu in the past!

Thus, he placed much importance on the details of this inheritance, he needed to learn this — how to search wills.

Searching souls and searching wills were different matters with completely different difficulties.

The former was easier, it was like eating, everyone had a mouth, even though Fang Yuan was not in soul path, he could still search Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s soul. Outsiders could try it.

But searching wills was like a chef taste testing a dish, attempting to decipher the main ingredients, supplementary ingredients, condiments, and even the steps involved in producing the dish. This was much more difficult, in other words, this was a specialized technique, only wisdom path experts could try it.

Thus, when Tai Bai Yun Sheng returned to Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan was in Dang Hun palace, diligently practicing the methods to search wills.

He had just started learning, he had no experience in this, he was still some way from using it feasibly.

“Junior brother, have you been well?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng smiled lightly, he faced a lot of pressure in Eastern Sea, he could only relax now after seeing Fang Yuan.

True friendships were forged in difficulties, to him, Fang Yuan's Hu Immortal blessed land was like his home.

Fang Yuan invited him to sit down, asking with surprise when he saw the tattered clothing: "You got injured?"

Tai Bai Yun Sheng smiled bitterly, he said with slight lingering fear: "Now is different from the time I first entered Eastern Sea, some people are placing attention on me, I could not come back using a stargate directly, I had to go to the regional wall and put up a show. To think that someone actually followed me, resulting in me seeing for myself the terrifying might of the earth tide. Even though the regional wall was weakened from the earth tide, near the earth tide, the formless tides were unstoppable. Even though I was at the periphery, I suffered greatly from it. Only defensive immortal killer moves have any effect, my nine cloud ring was like paper in front of it. Ah, let's not talk about this, junior brother, did you have many gains?"

"Hahaha." Fang Yuan started laughing.

He would obviously not tell Tai Bai Yun Sheng that he, the fake 'junior brother', had killed his real 'senior brother'.

But Fang Yuan only hid some parts, he told most of the truth to Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

After Tai Bai Yun Sheng heard that, he was quite in awe towards a person like Dong Fang Chang Fan.

He talked to Fang Yuan about his own situation.

The situation was such that Tai Bai Yun Sheng was quite popular in Eastern Sea. With his development, at this rate, he could almost become a second Fairy Li Shan.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng spoke about Yu Lu blessed land.

Shark Demon had attacked it many times and faced endless difficulties, but he did not enter Yu Lu blessed land, he was stuck at the rounds in the outer periphery.

Fang Yuan sighed: "Fairy Yu Lu was a rank eight Gu Immortal, a disciple of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. Yu Lu grotto-heaven dropped to become Yu Lu blessed land, but it still has that foundation, it might be that Yu Lu blessed land is one of the hardest kinds of blessed lands to take down. There are many aspects that influence defense, the first is if the blessed land is whole, the second is whether there is a land spirit, the third is the abundance of immortal essence, the fourth is the presence of guards like desolate beasts, the fifth is Immortal Gu, the sixth is immortal killer moves, the seventh is Immortal Gu Houses, and the eighth is Gu Immortals protecting it. But from what I see, the offense and defense of a blessed land only depends on one thing overall, that is the quantity of dao marks."

Tai Bai Yun Sheng heard Fang Yuan's words and was nodding, these were all common sense. But when he heard Fang Yuan's last sentence, it was like a burst of enlightenment, he was inwardly moved as he said with much interest: "Please enlighten me."

Fang Yuan did not answer, he asked Tai Bai Yun Sheng: "Old Bai, do you know about the phrase, 'man is the spirit of all livings beings, Gu are the essence of heaven and earth'?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 821: Strategy To Attack Blessed Land, Conversation About Dao

Tai Bai Yun Sheng sat on the chair, he was stunned before laughing and scolding: “Junior brother, you’re making fun of me! I’ve heard this phrase countless times, ever since I started my cultivation journey, its been ringing in my head. Even mortals are familiar with the phrase.”

Fang Yuan nodded, there was a hint of arrogance in his tone, he spoke: “The origin of this phrase is the first rank nine Gu Immortal in human history, it was said by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable. He was the creator of Central Continent’s Heavenly Court, it has remained standing up until now, through many eras, never falling to the corrosion of time. This phrase is extremely brilliant, it is the golden rule of Gu Master cultivation, having being passed down since long ago, it is even more popular than <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>. But in my opinion, this phrase is not brilliant enough, I summarized it into one word, that is — Dao.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng heard this and straightened his body, he looked at Fang Yuan with shining eyes as he said again: “Please enlighten me.”

Fang Yuan said slowly: “Man is the spirit of all livings beings, among all living beings, humans have the highest intelligence and comprehension ability, we can understand heaven and earth and experience the Great Dao. Gu are the essence of heaven and earth, they are very unique among living beings, Gu worms contain meager traces of the Great Dao in their bodies, while Immortal Gu contain fragments of the Great Dao. Thus, they are the essence of heaven and earth.”

“What is dao? Water flows downwards, humans die from hunger, trees grow because of rain and fertilizers, these are all dao. Gu Masters use Gu worms, they can light up fire, make rivers flow upwards, shoot out lightning, heal injuries, these are also dao.”

“Humans nurture, use, and refine Gu, they are making use of the Gu worms to display the might of heaven and earth. By living and procreating, they eventually understand the laws of the world. After becoming a Gu Immortal, the aperture becomes an immortal aperture, and dao marks are carved on the body. One could say that Gu Masters are nurturing ‘dao’ when they nurture Gu worms, they are using ‘dao’ when they use Gu worms, and they are refining ‘dao’ when they refine Gu worms. There are Gu Masters of all sorts of paths, strength path, fire path, time path, poison path, these are all created by our predecessors who walked on an unknown path, a cultivation path that they created step by step.”

Saying so, Fang Yuan paused before saying: “So in other words, when Gu Masters cultivate, they are basically cultivating dao.”

“When Gu Masters cultivate, they are basically cultivating Dao...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng sat on the chair, he frowned as he thought over Fang Yuan’s words.

The more he muttered it, the more he felt the extreme brilliance of Fang Yuan’s conclusion.

This was truly directed at the core of the issue, to him, it was as if he felt clouds parting, he could see the clear skies!

At this point, Fang Yuan continued: “Let’s talk about the foundation of a Gu Immortal’s cultivation — the immortal aperture. The immortal aperture is the blessed land or grotto-heaven, it is a small world that contains dao in it. This kind of dao cannot compare to the world of the five regions, it is only expressed in dao marks.”

“Take my Hu Immortal blessed land as an example, it has the basic time path dao marks, thus it can draw in a tributary of the river of time, allowing the concept of time to exist in the blessed land, and for time to flow. It also has a rather large number of space path dao marks, thus the blessed land is large, even after losing the north area, it still is very large. Hu Immortal land spirit can even teleport freely. In blessed lands with few space path dao marks, they have a smaller area and the land spirit cannot teleport. It is most abundant in enslavement path dao marks, precisely because of these dao marks, Hu Immortal blessed land is helpful for raising foxes, in addition, it can help in enslaving beast groups that are similar in body structure to foxes, and can even promote the growth of desolate beasts.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded and said in agreement: “That is absolutely correct! In my Tai Bai blessed land, it is most numerous in time path dao marks, thus my time based resources are very abundant. One day in the outside world is thirty-three days in my blessed land. It has the least earth path dao marks, thus there are no mountains in my blessed land, and the soil is infertile as well. In terms of space path dao marks, it is only ordinary, in total, the area is not large, but the sky is very high.”

He said this as his eyes shined brightly, he gained some understanding.

“That is why I said the offense and defense of a blessed land only is based at one thing, that is, the composition of dao marks in the blessed land.” Fang Yuan continued.

“Blessed lands are a small world, why can they restrict enemies and seal their Gu worms? The reason is because of the large number of dao marks in the blessed land, it is like a pond. Mortal Gu contain traces of dao, they are like drops of water, sparks of fire. One drop of water entering the pond would be fused into it easily. One spark of fire entering the pond will get extinguished easily. Thus, once the dao marks in the blessed land are activated, the heavenly power would be enforced and mortal Gu would lose effect.”

“Why are Immortal Gu unrestricted by blessed lands? Because Immortal Gu are the law fragments, they are unique entities, just like a rock. When a rock is tossed into a pond, no matter how the surface ripples, the entry of the rock cannot be stopped. But although it cannot be sealed, it can be suppressed. When an Immortal Gu is used in blessed lands to battle, its power would be weakened or strengthened by the blessed land’s dao marks.”

“As for Gu Immortals, when they invade blessed lands, they would be suppressed by the dao marks as well. But Gu Immortals have an immortal body, they are fundamentally different from mortals. What are immortal bodies, to put it simply, they are bodies that have dao marks carved on them! When Gu Immortals invade blessed land, the more dao marks in the blessed land, the more suppression the Gu Immortal would feel. In contrast, the more dao marks on the Gu Immortal’s body, the less suppression they would experience.”

In his past life, Fang Yuan was a blood path Gu Immortal. He could not enter many of the fragment worlds of the immemorial nine heavens. That was because these fragment worlds had sparse dao marks, they were far fewer than the dao marks in his body. If Fang Yuan entered them, it would be like a tiger entering a rabbit’s cage, the only result would be that the fragment world would burst, causing the fragment world’s dao marks to be destroyed, the winds of assimilation would blow and destroy all of the resources in the fragment world.

Or looking at another example, the demons and Dong Fang Chang Fan had been fighting in Jade Pool blessed land.

Dong Fang Chang Fan used his territorial advantage and caused the Gu Immortals to be unable to use their mortal Gu, but he could not seal their immortal killer moves.

This was because Jade Pool blessed land was a public blessed land, even though it had a lot of dao marks, it was very mixed. Dong Fang Chang Fan could not mobilize all of the dao marks, he could only control the part of the blessed land that he contributed. Thus, its power was limited. He could not even cause the flying Gu Immortals to land on the ground.

Not all Gu Immortals possessed immortal killer moves for flying.

But Gu Immortals have dao marks in their bodies, they can resist the suppression of the blessed land’s dao marks. The demonic path Gu Immortals’ mortal killer moves had no effect against Dong Fang Chang Fan, but the mortal killer moves used on their own bodies still had effect.

“Truly insightful, truly insightful!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was struck by realization, he sighed: “I understand. Public blessed lands have weak defenses, why is that? That is because they are formed by numerous Gu Immortals sacrificing a portion of their blessed lands, they were pieced together. These types of blessed lands are very mixed in dao mark varieties, they cancel out each other and cannot form a cohesive strength, it is like having a finger each from five people, they can only act individually, they cannot form into a fist.”

“Blessed land that have a sole origin also have dao marks that are pure. If there are land spirits, they can expend immortal essence and mobilize the dao marks to use the heavenly power. Immortal Gu are the law fragments, there are dao marks on the desolate beasts’ bodies, Gu Immortals have been mentioned already, Immortal Gu Houses are formed by combining Immortal Gu, while immortal killer moves are the fusion of many types of dao marks, they are an effect or great power formed from varying sources.”

“Thus, be it the blessed land or grotto-heaven, the purer the dao marks, the harder it is to take down. Land spirit, immortal essence, they are all to assist the use of dao marks. Looking at Imperial Court blessed land, if not for the land spirit and Eighty-Eight True Yang Building contesting against each other, if it was fully protected, how could it be destroyed?”

Saying this, Tai Bai Yun Sheng left his seat, he straightened his back and faced Fang Yuan, bowing: “After hearing your words, Fang Yuan, I have truly felt enlightened, my questions are answered, I have gained much from it. From today onwards, I would not dare to call you junior brother, a skilled person is a teacher, on the road of cultivation, you have already surpassed me.”

“Hehehe, Old Bai, today, we are just having a casual conversation. You do not need to be humble, you know this reasoning deep within yourself, you were just not as clear on it as me.” Fang Yuan waved his hand, he was very calm and collected.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s face was austere: “No, although the reasoning is simple, it is extremely brilliant. The word ‘dao’ is indeed more brilliant than the phrase ‘man is the spirit of all livings beings, Gu are the essence of heaven and earth’. I was quite ignorant in the past, only now have I seen the essence of Gu Master cultivation. This reasoning, I am afraid ordinary Gu Immortals have not comprehended it yet.”

Fang Yuan showed a slight smile.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s words were not exaggerated.

In truth, the reason he could understand this was because he had the advantage of being a transmigrator.

In the previous life of his previous life, Earth was greatly developed in the field of science. Laws of mechanics, trigonometry, acceleration, density, specific heat capacity and others, weren’t all these the laws of nature?

From this aspect, science is also a form of cultivation. ‘Give me a fulcrum and I shall move the Earth.’ This classic sentence, when used in the Gu world, would be ‘Give me a Gu worm, and I can give off light and heat. Give me all the Gu worms, and I will be omnipotent!’

Because he had experiences from two worlds, Fang Yuan could observe this world from another angle, he could understand logic that others could not sense or comprehend.

But in the Gu Master world, was there nobody who can understand this reasoning?

How could that be!

There were lots of people who understood, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was one of them. ‘Man is the spirit of all livings beings, Gu are the essence of heaven and earth’, this was a more detailed and easily understood explanation of ‘Dao’, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable said it to aid in educating people of the future, it led to the development of inheritances of various paths, he had a different objective.

Anyone who could understand this was someone of high position, a Gu Immortal that stood up high, after looking at their cultivation journey over their entire life, they could conclude this.

Ordinary Gu Masters were living in the mortal world, ordinary Gu Immortals were busy dealing with their calamities and tribulations, why would they have time to think about such ‘useless’ things? Whether they could understand this reasoning or not, their lives would not be affected.

In the end, it was only a way of thinking.

But one could not look down on this way of thinking.

Gunpowder was first used to refine pills in ancient China. When exposed to other civilizations, it had been developed into use for guns and cannons. The ingenuity of Chinese civilization was unquestionable, but modern Earth was on the path of science, and the western world’s contribution was the greatest.

Different streams of thought would prevail in separate societies when viewing the world, and two different civilizations would be created.

Between civilizations, one could not say which was superior or inferior, they were specialized in different things.

Thus, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, who was part of the Gu Master civilization, heard Fang Yuan’s words and was deeply enlightened. From his perspective, he could feel that Fang Yuan’s understanding was much higher than him, he did not dare to call him junior brother anymore.

A skilled person is a teacher.

If he continued to call Fang Yuan ‘junior brother’, Tai Bai Yun Sheng would feel extremely embarrassed inwardly.

There was a type of feeling called humiliation of being inferior, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was currently in such a state.

The two talked for some more time before Tai Bai Yun Sheng said his goodbyes to Fang Yuan.

Even though they had always communicated with each other using Gu, after a face-to-face conversation, any distance between them had vanished.

Fang Yuan had lived in two worlds, his manipulation techniques were extremely amazing. After a simple ‘conversation about dao’, he left a deep impression in Tai Bai Yun Sheng, making the latter have a feeling of inferiority.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 822: Discussion about Huge Plan, Rejection

After learning that Tai Bai Yun Sheng had returned to Hu Immortal blessed land, Fairy Li Shan rushed to Hu Immortal blessed land as quickly as possible.

Right now in Snowy Mountain, Old Ancestor Xue Hu was present all the time, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was an outsider and had a sensitive identity, he could not go there anymore.

Thus, the best location was still Hu Immortal blessed land.

Because Tai Bai Yun Sheng had the experience of saving Dang Hun mountain, this process did not have any issues, it was completed uneventfully.

Fairy Li Shan’s pale face let out a sigh, after getting past this difficulty, a weight on her mind had finally been lifted.

But she still had severe injuries on her, she needed to recuperate.

“Wait a moment.” Fairy Li Shan was about to return to Snowy Mountain blessed land, but Fang Yuan stopped her.

“I have a huge transaction, I wonder if you are interested?” Fang Yuan talked about his plan.

He did not have the wealth to refine Immortal Gu.

But that did not mean that the combination of Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Fairy Li Shan, Hei Lou Lan, and Fang Yuan could not afford it.

“Right now, Fairy Jiang Yu’s whereabouts are unknown, and to take dark limit Immortal Gu, we do not have a technique like that of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, it would be very difficult. I obtained an immortal killer move from Dong Fang Chang Fan’s inheritance, it is called star fog concealment, it can conceal one from heavenly secrets and is suitable for us.”

Fairy Li Shan’s words immediately interested Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan, who was beside her.

But after hearing that star fog concealment needed two Immortal Gu as the core to activate it, Fairy Li Shan smiled bitterly as she shook her head: “Refining an Immortal Gu is already beyond our capabilities, two Immortal Gu are an impossible task.”

Now, although restoring Miniscule Mountain saved Fairy Li Shan a huge amount of expenses, the injuries on her body still needed to be healed by other Gu Immortals, there was also Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s missions that had been given to her, and the fact that she was sponsoring Hei Lou Lan to cultivate all along, her deep financial power was at its limits.

She was in difficult circumstances with funds, just like Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had no choice, he could only come up with another investment plan.

He suggested: By gathering the wealth of all four of them, they could purchase knowledge and experiences of raising hairy men, and buy hairy man slaves in bulk. They could also raise the scale of the stone nests, increasing the production of airsac Gu, to increase the amount of guts Gu traded. The four can split the profits after that.

This plan was much cheaper than refining Immortal Gu.

But he was rejected by Fairy Li Shan: “Fang Yuan, have you thought about Immortal Crane Sect’s reaction? Your guts Gu trade is a monopoly, it is extremely profitable and has attracted much attention. If you increase the scale of production, Immortal Crane Sect is bound to become even more jealous, if the balance in their mindsets change, they might target Hu Immortal blessed land again, what will you do then? We have enough trouble already, the less complications, the better.”

Fang Yuan was silently before replying: “You are right, forget about it.”

After Fairy Li Shan returned to Snowy Mountain blessed land, Hei Lou Lan stayed in a stone nest to refine airsac Gu for Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s two suggestions did not succeed. He was unresigned, after returning to Dang Hun palace, he contacted Lang Ya land spirit.

The hairy men in Lang Ya blessed land were the best quality he had ever seen. Even in a high end market like treasure yellow heaven, none of the hairy men were as skilful as the ones in Lang Ya blessed land.

From this, one could easily guess that Lang Ya land spirit had the best methods to raise hairy men as well as rich experience in doing so.

Fang Yuan did not have immortal essence stones, but he had the wisdom path inheritance, many Immortal Gu recipes, and he had a huge amount of immortal materials, they were all things that Lang Ya land spirit desired.

Could he use these to make a transaction with Lang Ya land spirit?

Fang Yuan started with hope, but he ended with disappointment. Lang Ya land spirit’s attitude was firm, it was like an iron wall with no way of getting through.

“You’re targeting the hairy men? Don’t even think about it! If you want to trade with me, there is only one way, by completing the task!” Lang Ya land spirit repeated the task again, he wanted that rank six immortal material, poisonous flower petals.

Fang Yuan was slightly interested, he thought about it as he asked: “If I can get this immortal material for you, can you sell me some hairy man slaves, or a portion of your experience in raising them?”

Lang Ya land spirit waved his sleeves in rejection: “Impossible, anything involving hairy men is not for sale, you should forget about this idea! But if you can find the immortal material I want, I can give you the Gu recipes of all-out effort Gu. In fact, I not only have the rank one to five Gu recipes of all-out effort Gu, I also have the rank six all-out effort Immortal Gu recipe! Isn’t this something you need?”

Lang Ya land spirit tossed out this bait, it indeed enticed Fang Yuan, but he was also a little angry internally.

Lang Ya land spirit was trying to make use of Fang Yuan, but could it be so easy to get this immortal material?

The danger was too great, Fang Yuan would have to risk his life.

As the saying goes, a fall in a pit, a gain in one’s wit. How many times had Fang Yuan taken advantage of Lang Ya land spirit?

The Northern Plains auction was simply too much of a loss for the land spirit, the pain was so great that the land spirit had come to a realization.

That was why Lang Ya land spirit became so hard to deal with, the reason was Fang Yuan.

Investment or effort leads to reward, the reverse is also true, any reward would have its price.

Fang Yuan obtained so much in immortal materials for essentially no cost, the price was that his relationship with Lang Ya land spirit became ice cold.

Land spirits were formed by the fusion of obsession and heavenly power, they were very stubborn. Even though they could not lie, once they made up their minds, they would not easily change it.

Thus, suddenly, Fang Yuan could not do anything. Lang Ya blessed land could not provide him any more help, there was no need to ask Lang Ya land spirit for any investments.

His plan failed, Fang Yuan sighed as he placed his attention on the blessed land’s calamity.

Two days later.

“Myriad self giant hand, rise!”

Fang Yuan activated his immortal killer move, four of the eight strength path hands grabbed on four sides of Dang Hun mountain as it lifted, while the other four lifted the base of it into the air.

Dang Hun mountain rose up rapidly, it was tens of meters away from the ground in no time.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was floating in the air, seeing this, he was stunned.

At a stone nest, Hei Lou Lan looked from far away at the huge Dang Hun mountain floating in the air, she muttered to herself: “In such a short time, he got stronger again...”

It was much easier now for Fang Yuan to lift Dang Hun mountain. Not only because he was using eight strength path hands, but because he had already completely fused pulling mountain Immortal Gu into the killer move myriad self, making it part of its core.

Originally, myriad self’s core was cleanse soul Immortal Gu. After cleanse soul Immortal Gu was starving, it could not be used anymore, so he used Self Strength instead. But now, the core of myriad self killer move became two Gu, one was Self Strength, the other was Pulling Mountain.

“Don’t just stare, take it.” Fang Yuan shouted.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly opened up his immortal aperture, as the eight strength path giant hands brought Dang Hun mountain into his blessed land slowly.

“Alright, next, the land spirit will lead you to collect several resources in the blessed land.” Fang Yuan said.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded, under Little Hu Immortal’s control, he vanished in front of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan landed on the ground.

Without Dang Hun mountain, the center of the blessed land was very empty.

He sat there and closed his eyes, mobilizing time luck Immortal Gu as countless mortal Gu flew up from within his immortal aperture, his dead land.

As beads of green grape immortal essence were consumed, with time luck Immortal Gu as the core, and the surrounding mortal Gu acting as support, a huge white-gold mist of light was formed.

The mist of light entered the air, flying across the grey sky for several li, towards a group of Gu Master captives.

These captives were from Dong Fang tribe.

Earlier, they were imprisoned by Fang Yuan in an underground cell, now, they were taken out and placed in his immortal aperture.

As the mist of light covered them, these captives screamed in shock: “What is this thing?”

They had an ominous feeling within themselves, they wanted to dodge but they were restrained and could not move.

The white-gold mist of light circulated around them, initially slowly but growing faster, it soon spun quickly as it form a spiral of white-gold light.

The white-gold light spiral circulated for a while before exploding into a white-gold colored light pillar.

Immortal killer move —Time Assist Luck!

The light pillar penetrated out of Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture, it went all the way up along Fang Yuan’s spine, until it shot out of Fang Yuan’s head, into the sky.

After several breaths of time, the light pillar vanished.

At the same time, the white-gold spiral in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture was consumed. On the rotting ground, there were corpses of all the Dong Fang tribe captives.

These corpses were all dried-out and old, they were originally young people, but they were now extremely aged.

Time assist luck had such an effect. It snatched the lifespan of others to give the Gu Immortal a temporary boost in his own luck.

“I won’t give in!”

“You killed us, you murderer, we will haunt you even as ghosts!”

“For your own selfish reasons, you murdered us innocent souls, you are a sinner, you are a murderer!”

“Ahhhhh, eat him, eat him.”

Suddenly, a large number of vengeful remnant spirits came out of Fang Yuan’s body, they twisted around his soul and were attacking him fiercely.

Fang Yuan snickered, his tall immortal zombie body was unmoving like a mountain.

The soul in his body had already counterattacked, colliding with these souls.

These souls were very tattered and were originally were mortal souls, it was reasonable to say that they were not worth mentioning, but at this point, Fang Yuan’s soul was being suppressed by them!

Thankfully, they did not have intelligence, they could not cooperate.

Fang Yuan moved his soul and killed them one by one, he paid a huge price but he exterminated these souls.

After the battle, Fang Yuan’s soul was thirty percent of its original size, it was dim and resembled a flickering candle, it was barely alight, its injuries could be said to be severe.

But thankfully, he had guts Gu.

He crushed airsac Gu one after another, the guts Gu inside broke as well, turning into the purest form of nourishment for his soul to strengthen and recover.

A moment later, Fang Yuan’s soul completely recovered, it was back at its peak condition.

Compared to before, his soul was more refined, it was like forged steel, becoming more compact and durable.

“The backlash of remnant souls is time assist luck killer move’s greatest weakness, but after the soul battle ends, when my soul recovers, there is some advantage of refining the soul.” Fang Yuan could clearly discern the benefits and weaknesses of this move.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 823: Advantages Outweigh Disadvantages, Time Assist Luck

Time assist luck increased one’s luck without expending one’s own lifespan, but it had two big disadvantages.

First was the backlash of the remnant souls. Because of the immortal killer move, the remnant souls become extremely fierce, and in the dangerous battle of souls, one could not use any soul path methods and had to rely on their own soul to battle. Thus, even soul path Gu Immortals often suffered severe damage to their soul after the battle of souls.

Second was that time assist luck could only be used once a month, and this related to the amount of time experienced by the immortal body.

What was meant by the time experienced by the immortal body?

Blessed lands and grotto-heavens had different rates of time flow compared to the outside world. For instance, one day in the outside world could be over fifteen days in the blessed land. If the Gu Immortal was in the outside world, the time experienced by their immortal body was one day. If they were in the blessed land, the same time in the outside world experienced by the immortal body would be fifteen days.

The length of a Gu Immortal’s lifespan was the total amount of time their immortal body experienced.

Fang Yuan took back time luck Immortal Gu as well as the other mortal Gu, and subconsciously gazed upwards.

“It’s a pity that I don’t have luck inspection Immortal Gu and cannot inspect the change in my luck. I also can’t tell how effective the killer move, time assist luck is. Oh? Right, I can’t inspect myself, but I can inspect others.” Fang Yuan suddenly thought of a way.

He had luck inspection mortal Gu, although it could not be used to see his own luck, he had connected his luck with Ye Fan, Han Li and Hong Yi.

The series of luck connections made the luck of the four of them the same, like four bowls of water with the same volume.

The water in Fang Yuan’s bowl had suddenly increased, this rise would immediately be divided into four portions, one portion would be left in his bowl while the other three portions would flow to the other three people.

Fang Yuan could not inspect his own luck, but he could inspect the other three. After all, these three were still mortals at present!

Southern Border.

In a lush forest on a mountain, Ye Fan was quickly moving along the ground like an ape.

He occasionally jumped over boulders, and at times climbed and grabbed long green vines flying between the tall trees.

He was extremely fast, as if he was truly possessed by an ape.

In fact, fine ape hair grew on his nose, cheeks, arms and other areas.

Ye Fan’s eyes were also not white and black, instead they had turned golden. He was staring at a blue speck of light in front of him with a slightly anxious look.

“This blue face Gu is truly slippery, it is so hard to catch. No, I must catch it, it is rank three Gu of transformation path and can change a male Gu Master’s appearance. I am currently under an arrest warrant, this Gu worm is even more important to me!”

Suddenly, a strange itch was felt at the bottom of Ye Fan’s heart.

Ye Fan glanced quickly at his body and saw his arms were already covered in thick ape hair, his heart sank: “Damn it! I forcibly activated the killer move ape transformation, the longer I maintain this killer move, the more ape hair there will be, and once it goes beyond the limit, I might turn into a half-man and half-ape monster. But if I stop this killer move, my speed will definitely fall and I will only be able to watch this wild blue face Gu leave...”

Right as Ye Fan was in a dilemma, the sky rapidly changed, as dark clouds covered the sky, and soon, bean-sized rain drops started to fall. In a dozen breaths of time, the drops of rain had turned into torrential rain.

The rainstorm obstructed his vision, Ye Fan had completely lost the blue light he had barely been able to chase.

“Damn it, I spent several days and nights, and now all my effort has failed. Sigh, without a Gu worm specially meant to capture wild Gu, it is really difficult to capture them with just bare hands!”

Ye Fan was soon soaked thoroughly, inwardly in great disappointment.

Crackle... Right at this time, a bolt of lightning struck a large tree on the mountain.

The tree fell down, fire burned and soon spread, unable to be extinguished by the rainstorm.

“On this tung oil mountain, there are tung trees everywhere and they are very combustible. I need to quickly leave this place, otherwise it will be too late once there is a wildfire.”

Ye Fan quickly left.

After fifteen minutes, he was standing at the base of the mountain looking at the wildfire spreading wildly over the mountain, the rainstorm unable to extinguish it.

He sighed and was about to leave when suddenly a blue light swayed into his vision.

When Ye Fan saw it clearly, his eyes opened wide.

It was that blue face Gu!

But this blue face Gu had dense soot over its body and was clearly heavily injured.

Ye Fan quickly hurried over and grabbed it. Normally, a Gu Master would face stubborn resistance from a Gu worm’s will when they refined wild Gu, but as the blue face Gu was too weak, Ye Fan was able to refine it within a few breaths of time.

“I had never imagined I would obtain blue face Gu like this.” Ye Fan sighed inwardly at the mysteriousness of fate.

He was fully satisfied with this pleasant surprise and was about to leave, when suddenly his body stiffened like a stone statue.

After the blue face Gu, there were still three wild Gu worms that had escaped the fire and were flying in his direction in heavily injured states...

Western Desert.

On a rocky beach, all sizes of rocks were piled up and spread over the surroundings, forming a natural rock field.

Han Li was breathing heavily as he ran over the broken rocks, his legs hurt badly but he endured it.

“Brat, put down those three nodding stones!” A rank three Gu Master shouted in fury from behind while in fierce pursuit of Han Li.

Han Li ran even faster when he heard the voice.

In his vision, a tall pile of rocks was getting bigger and bigger.

Han Li involuntarily showed a happy expression.

These rocks were extremely large and firm, with gaps of all sorts of sizes in between the rocks, this was a very good hiding place.

The rank three Gu Master who was chasing Han Li, however, was exceptionally anxious.

Han Li was only a young man with a weak and thin physique, he would be able to leave the Gu Master’s vision soon if he entered the gaps. The previous intense battle had consumed the primeval essence of the rank three Gu Master, he was not able to even activate rank three movement Gu and had no choice but to chase him by simply running.

“Damn it, do I let him slip away like this? No, I am a grand rank three Gu Master elder, while he is only a mortal, if I let him escape and word of this matter spreads, how am I going to hold my reputation up in the future? Those three nodding stones are materials to refine rank five Gu, they are very valuable! If they were sold...”

The rank three Gu Master was extremely unwilling, he gritted his teeth fiercely and finally used his trump card.

His mind blanked out briefly, as his lifespan decreased by two years in exchange for twenty percent rank three primeval essence.

He used ten percent to activate a movement Gu worm; his speed increased sharply and in several breaths, he was right behind Han Li.

He used the other ten percent primeval essence to punch out a stone fist.

The stone fist could definitely kill Han Li if it struck.

However, a bright light flashed past the Gu Master’s eyes as he dispelled this thought. On one hand, he was afraid of shattering the nodding stones with Han Li, and on other hand, he really hated Han Li and wanted to properly torture him to death to vent his anger.

Therefore, this stone fist brushed past Han Li’s right leg and crashed into the tall and sturdy rock pile, a series of muffled sounds echoed, dust swirled and shattered rocks splattered everywhere.

Han Li received a heavy injury, his right leg was directly fractured.

However, he had a firm disposition and knew his life was hanging by a thread right now. He screamed before using all his strength to jump forward.

His thin and small body allowed him to land right into a crevice.

The rank three Gu Master was startled, he had used up all his primeval essence and had no more ways now. Was he really going to let this brat escape alive?

But soon, the Gu Master relaxed.

Han Li had jumped into a crevice, but his head had hit a wall and was bleeding, and with the serious fracture of his right leg, he was dizzy and could not even climb up.

“Brat, you really can run! Run, run more!” The rank three Gu Master slowly walked closer to Han Li with a vicious expression.

Han Li was filled with despair, he subconsciously stepped back, but his speed was extremely slow.

The rank three Gu Master thought of countless cruel methods to torture Han Li as he entered the crevice with a sinister smile.

Boom!

Suddenly, the many large rocks forming the crevice collapsed above the rank three Gu Master.

The rank three Gu Master’s sternum broke and his lungs were pierced, he struggled for a while before dying.

Han Li was left stupefied on the spot.

Central Continent.

Universal Life Academy.

The Gu refinement competition had already entered its final round.

Sixteen young Gu Masters were sitting cross-legged on the plaza, and under everyone’s gazes, started refining Gu simultaneously.

The Refinement Path Convention of Central Continent was already approaching. Universal Life Academy might only be a small sect, but every sect of Central Continent had a quota for participating in the Refinement Path Convention.

Universal Life Academy only had three places reserved, and one each was given to a disciple, elder and external elder of the sect.

Now, sixteen Gu Master disciples were fighting for the sole reservation.

“This competition will soon reach the crucial moment.”

“Right, there is one final barrier in refining red face Gu, which tests the Gu Master’s subtle control of their senses, their hands and mind must be coordinated to maintain control over the fire.”

“Look, Cao Yu has already reached this barrier. He is intentionally slowing down the speed of Gu refinement to have sufficient time to react.”

Spectating disciples discussed and analyzed the situation in soft voices.

After a while, two others entered this final barrier.

“As expected, they are Xie Lan and Lu Wen.”

“These two along with Cao Yu are publicly recognized as the three ultimately most talented elite disciples in refinement path of our academy.”

“The final winner of this competition should be from among these three!”

“Maybe there is a dark horse?”

“Hehe, this is not possible. Cultivating refinement path requires large amounts of practice and is not a matter of instant success. Even if someone secretly practices, this process would also waste enormous amounts of resources, and the records of buying Gu refinement materials cannot be concealed.”

On the raised platform, the academy principal was sitting at the front with six elders beside him, watching the competition to prevent any cheating from occurring.

Time flowed by, there was a fourth young Gu Master, then a fifth and a sixth who stepped into this final crucial step one after the other.

“We can basically confirm it now, the winner will be from among Cao Yu, Xie Lan and Lu Wen.”

“As long as they don’t make a mistake, they are the top three. Other Gu Masters have also reached the final step, but it is already too late.”

While the spectators discussed outside the plaza, the elders were also secretly communicating.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 824: Blood Poison Kerria Flowers, Seventh Calamity

“The refinement hall elder spent all his effort to nurture the three of them, they are at the upper level even in Central Continent, they are truly prized students of a brilliant master.” An elder praised.

“Hehehe, I am flattered, I am flattered. These three children have talent, but it was mostly because of Lord Principal’s support, otherwise, they would not have become so familiar with the refinement steps.” The refinement hall elder was very modest.

The academy principal did not speak.

The refinement hall elder shifted the topic as he spoke about Hong Yi: “Speaking of which, your son, Hong Yi has such talent as well, he is in the finals now. Most notably, he is not a disciple of the refinement hall, it is very impressive that he managed to attain such results despite having little practice.”

All of the elders looked at each other, they were secretly despising the refinement hall elder for boot-licking the principal so smoothly, but they all voiced out their agreement with him.

“Indeed, indeed.”

“With Lord Principal’s bloodline in him, how can he be weak?”

“When he first entered the academy, he was still inconspicuous. But now, Hong Yi is already the leader of the disciples, in the future, he is sure to be a leader somewhere.”

The principal snorted: “You are praising him because he is my son, do you think I cannot tell? He could get into the finals because of his dogshit luck. He tries out everything without putting hard work into any of them. By learning everything, he is also being unskilled at every aspect, after this competition, send him into seven days of seclusion, so that he can reflect on himself.”

The elders were silent.

Lord Principal had several sons, Hong Yi was the most capable one, but he was the son of a concubine and did not have a good relationship with his father, he had a rebellious nature and was thus often suppressed by the principal.

This time, Hong Yi signed up for the refinement path competition behind his father’s back.

At the moment, Hong Yi’s forehead was covered in sweat as he looked at the lump of fire in his hands.

In the fire, the Gu worm was gradually taking form.

“I am finally at the last step, it is a pity that I wasted too much time!” Hong Yi observed the others while in the midst of his refinement.

He saw that Cao Yu, Xie Lan and Lu Wen’s flames had shrunken to the size of wicks, Hong Yi knew that he had no hope of winning.

In truth, he had refinement path talent greater than Cao Yu and the other two. But he practiced very little, one reason was because this was not his main path, he could not divert too much attention to it as he lacked in the time he could invest. Secondly, he had no financial support, even though he had some fortuitous encounters, his father did not support him, he could only cultivate his main path.

“Damn it! Father has already noticed my intention, I want my mother’s memorial tablet to be placed in the ancestral hall, but father follows the ancestral rules strictly, why would he allow it? He wants me to be like my other siblings, obeying him without question, and not challenging his prestige. But Hong clan had been really unfair to my mother, this is injustice! If I do not seek justice for my mother, I am not a filial son!”

“Forget it, at this point, I can only take a risk and make a shot in the dark. The refinement of this red face Gu is usually completed in an instant in a refinement path master’s hands. But the fire is hard to control, thus the others are slowing down at this step. I cannot complete it instantly, of course, but if I can surpass their speed, I will have a chance of winning.”

Hong Yi made up his mind, he immediately acted on it.

Be it the disciples around him or the elders on the stage, they quickly noticed Hong Yi’s actions.

Everyone shook their heads.

“He is so naive.”

“Hong Yi is taking a risk, but how can he turn this around? Unless he is a refinement path master!”

“He is obviously not a refinement path master, he is seeking his own doom, look, his fire has gone out of control already.”

“Oh no!” Hong Yi cried out in dismay, the flame in his hands was flickering, it was making cracking sounds as it burned, it was going to explode.

The force of the explosion would not be scary, after all this was a test from the academy, they were concerned about the disciples’ safety.

“I failed!!” Hong Yi’s heart sank, the flame in his hand had completely lost control, it even flew away from his hand.

At once, Hong Yi felt extremely bitter.

“I still failed in the end... achoo!”

He had been practicing Gu refinement for the last few nights, he had been putting in last minute effort but had gotten a cold in the process, because he relaxed himself now, and his body was full of sweat, he could not help but sneeze.

His sneeze blew at the fire and the flames extinguished at once.

A refined red face Gu fell onto the concrete floor of the stage with a loud sound.

“I... I refined it successfully?!” Hong Yi was stunned.

Everyone stopped their movements on the spot.

“Guh!” An elder who was drinking tea spat out all of the tea in his mouth.

Even the academy principal, Hong Yi’s father, stood up subconsciously, he had a strange expression, he was stunned: “This, this sneeze actually worked like the method of a refinement path master, causing the refinement’s final step to be completed in an instant, creating the red face Gu! Hong Yi, this lad... just what kind of dogshit luck is this...”

Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fang Yuan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Hu Immortal land spirit and Hei Lou Lan were floating in the air, awaiting the start of the earthly calamity.

“What earthly calamity would it be this time?” Little Hu Immortal looked at her master.

Fang Yuan touched her little head: “Don’t worry, this time, the situation is different from last time. We have three Gu Immortals here, and Dang Hun mountain along with lots of our resources were moved out, the blessed land’s foundation is greatly depleted. Furthermore, I raised my own luck, I have an eighty percent confidence of getting through this calamity.”

The way of heaven was to take away surpluses while replenishing deficits, it emphasized on balance.

The deeper the foundation of the blessed land, the stronger the heavenly tribulation or earthly calamity. Thus, Fang Yuan moved Dang Hun mountain and all the other precious resources into Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture.

This way, with less fortune in the blessed land, the heavenly tribulation or earthly calamity would be much weaker.

In Imperial Court blessed land, he learned about the power of luck path. He knew that the stronger his own luck was, the weaker the heavenly tribulation or earthly calamity would be.

One could say that Fang Yuan had done all the preparation possible.

But even so, there was still a twenty percent chance that he would fail in resisting the earthly calamity!

The reason was that there were an immense variety of earthly calamities, it was unknown which one was coming. Earthly calamities have all sorts of strange effects, even those rare and unheard of abilities were possible, even those that had never been seen before could appear, the difficulty of resisting them would be much greater.

As they waited, earth qi started to rumble as the earthly calamity began.

Stalks upon stalks of flowers pierced the ground of Hu Immortal blessed land as they grew rapidly, in a few breaths’ time, bright red stalks of flowers grew all around Hu Immortal blessed land.

“This is...” The immortals hesitated, the flowers were blooming in all directions.

These flowers were huge, they had the size of a person’s face. The petals were soft and delicate like silk, they were layered on top of each other, each flower had at least six layers of petals, and around a hundred petals in total.

“This is the blood poison kerria.” Fang Yuan said in a quiet tone.

He recognized this flower, he felt very helpless.

To think that this earthly calamity was a type of blood calamity. These blood poison kerria flowers only took ten breaths of time from budding to wilting. When they wilt, their petals and roots would turn into a pool of poison. The poisonous blood would pollute the blessed land, causing widespread damage to life, leading to great losses.

Only wood path techniques were specialized at dealing with these blood poison kerria flowers. Other than that, any blood poison kerria that was destroyed would also turn into a pool of poisonous blood.

But in fact, even if Fang Yuan had wood path techniques, it was too late.

There were so many blood poison kerria flowers all over Hu Immortal blessed land, what could he do to stop them?

Thus, even though there were three Gu Immortals on his side, facing the vast sea of blood poison kerria flowers, they were helpless!

The blood poison kerria flowers quickly wilted, as poisonous blood covered the surface of the ground like a layer of water. The water surface was not deep, about the height of a person’s ankles, but it was all over Hu Immortal blessed land.

The lake at the eastern part of the blessed land had been completely polluted.

The fox groups and wolf groups at the western part of the blessed land faced countless deaths, corpses were lying in the pool of blood, their blood flowed out and added to the pool of poisonous blood.

The rockman slaves in the southern part were rudely awakened. Many of the rockmen had blood poison kerria flowers growing on their bodies. After the flower wilted, poisonous blood flowed out as the rockmen cried out in pain, but few of them died.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng felt a chill as he looked at the sky, sighing: “Heaven really wouldn’t give us an easy time!”

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly.

Hei Lou Lan consoled him: “Tribulations are hard to endure, the current situation is quite good already. Looking at the poisonous blood all over the blessed land, even though most of the land is polluted and your losses are severe, the earth qi has already settled down, this earthly calamity is over already.”

Little Hu Immortal’s eyes were watery: “Master, we have to clear up the poisonous blood. The soil is polluted, it will not produce anything for the next few years. Our pink flower rabbits, wolf groups, and fox groups suffered great losses in numbers!”

Fang Yuan made a move immediately.

He used pulling water Immortal Gu to siphon the poisonous blood into his own immortal aperture.

His immortal aperture was a dead land, it was full of death energy and had no life, the poisonous blood could not pollute anything.

But the poisonous blood was all over the blessed land, the range was too huge, even if Fang Yuan used pulling water Immortal Gu, the efficiency was too low.

He felt some regret inwardly: “If I knew this, I would not have fused pulling mountain Immortal Gu into the killer move, myriad self, I would have fused pulling water Immortal Gu first. That way, my efficiency would be higher, and my immortal essence expenditure would be lower!”

Man proposes, heaven disposes, this saying fit the current situation.

After spending a day and a night, Fang Yuan finally extracted all of the poisonous blood in this blessed land and moved it into his immortal aperture.

During this period, he worked without a break, he did not rest or sleep. He spent quite a sum of green grape immortal essence during the process.

Removing the pollution of the poisonous blood could not be dragged on. The longer he took, the deeper the pollution, and the greater the aftereffects.

Even though the poisonous blood was removed, the soil on the surface of the blessed land was entirely poisonous, squeezing it with one’s hand would produce some bloody red mush. If it was not settled, in several days, this layer of soil would completely rot, turning into poisonous blood and polluting soil in other areas.

Fang Yuan immediately made up his mind, removing this layer of soil.

Even though Tai Bai Yun Sheng had Landscape as Before to restore the land back to its original state, Fang Yuan did not adopt that method.

Thus, Fang Yuan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and Hei Lou Lan worked together, spending several days and finally getting rid of the soil layer. Fang Yuan moved all of the poisonous soil into his immortal aperture, even with his immortal zombie body, he was extremely exhausted.

There was a lot of work to do, looking at it from another perspective, it was a good thing that Fang Yuan removed the north area of the blessed land previously.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 825: Developing the Blessed Land, Lou Lan Comes to a Realization

Hu Immortal blessed land’s seventh earthly calamity was finally over.

Afterwards, looking back at this earthly calamity.

There was really nothing dangerous. But this earthly calamity targeted Fang Yuan’s weakness, it was quite unpleasant.

Fang Yuan and the other two Gu Immortals could only watch the earthly calamity develop, making as much compensation as possible afterwards.

After the earthly calamity ended, Hei Lou Lan continued to stay in Hu Immortal blessed land, this place was the safest to stay in for her right now.

Under Fang Yuan’s arrangement, she continued to use strength qi Immortal Gu, assisting the hairy man slaves in the stone nests, refining large numbers of airsac Gu.

Right now, there was a mountain of airsac Gu in the storage.

Airsac Gu was a one time consumable Gu, it was paired with guts Gu and sold together.

Before the tribulation, Fang Yuan had made full use of Hei Lou Lan, the three stone nests were refining Gu crazily, creating large numbers of airsac Gu.

Right now, there was a high number of airsac Gu, the production of guts Gu could not keep up.

Fang Yuan changed his refinement plan, he made one stone nest refine airsac Gu, while the other two refined mortal star thought Gu.

This made Hei Lou Lan grit her teeth in anger.

Because their earlier deal was: Before the tribulation, Hei Lou Lan would help the hairy men with the refinement of airsac Gu. After these airsac Gu were used to store guts Gu and sold for profit, all of it would go to Fang Yuan.

Now that Hu Immortal blessed land had gone through the tribulation, from now on, the sale of guts Gu would include Hei Lou Lan’s share of the profit.

Hei Lou Lan lacked money too.

Or more accurately speaking, any Gu Immortal who had just ascended into an immortal like her would lack money.

Especially now, when Fairy Li Shan’s wealth was dwindling, she could not support Hei Lou Lan’s cultivation anymore, Hei Lou Lan’s desire towards immortal essence stones was at an all time high.

But just when she wanted to start building and accumulating her foundation, Fang Yuan shrunk the production of airsac Gu.

Hei Lou Lan was helpless.

The three stone nests were Fang Yuan’s possession, he could refine whatever he wanted to, he did not need to get her input.

But was Hei Lou Lan someone who gave up easily? She found Fang Yuan and talked to him, hoping that he would allocate at least two stone nests to refining airsac Gu, so as to increase the sale of guts Gu.

Fang Yuan attended to her enthusiastically, telling her about his difficulties with much emotion: “Fairy Lou Lan, I also want to increase production. I have a huge headache right now, you’ve also seen how many hairy men I’ve lost in the production of airsac Gu. If I want to replenish the number of hairy men, the cost will go up. Meanwhile, refining star thought Gu is much milder and would cause fewer deaths in the hairy men. At this point, I’ve lost about thirty percent of my hairy men, if this goes on, I’ll need to buy hairy man slaves. But you’ve just witnessed Hu Immortal blessed land undergoing tribulation, the losses were very great, now it’s necessary to be more sparing.”

Hei Lou Lan heard this and frowned, she felt vexed inwardly, she almost lost control and shouted ‘you’re bullshitting me’.

Even if Hei Lou Lan did not know about Fang Yuan’s total assets, she knew this: Before the tribulation, Fang Yuan had already transferred all of his precious resources into Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture, he had no great losses.

Meanwhile, in Jade Pool blessed land, he seized so many resources and even obtained Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul, it could be said that he was one of the biggest winners out of the people in Tai Qiu.

The sale of guts Gu was very much in demand, most of the profits went to Fang Yuan.

No matter how poor Fang Yuan was, he could definitely afford to buy a group of hairy man slaves.

Fang Yuan was lamenting about poverty to Hei Lou Lan, seeing that she was unhappy, he continued smiling, saying: “Actually, in my opinion, my earlier suggestion is quite appropriate. We can pool a huge fund and buy experiences and knowledge of raising hairy men, before buying the slaves and raising them ourselves. This is a long term investment, it is extremely worth it in the long run.”

Fang Yuan mentioned his suggestion again as Hei Lou Lan sighed in her mind.

Fang Yuan’s plan was advantageous to all four of them. But the first time he mentioned it, why did Fairy Li Shan object immediately?

Because once this plan worked out, Fang Yuan was the biggest winner! This provided him too much help.

Among the four of them, Fang Yuan needed hairy man slaves the most, he had the stone nests and could use them to their greatest value. Fang Yuan’s cultivation plan involved the refinement of large numbers of mortal Gu. But Hei Lou Lan, Fairy Li Shan. and Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not have such a need.

If this plan succeeded, Hei Lou Lan and the others would need to invest time and money into raising hairy men. The best use of this was to sell hairy man slaves. But their immortal apertures were not suitable for raising hairy men, meanwhile, Hu Immortal blessed land was a much better location.

Not only could Fang Yuan sell hairy men slaves and have the greatest advantage in raising them, he could even use them to refine Gu and sell large numbers of mortal Gu.

Precisely because of this, Fairy Li Shan rejected him.

Fang Yuan was developing too quickly, an experienced Gu Immortal like Fairy Li Shan could not allow it any further. Even though they were allies, the Snowy Mountain Alliance would expire eventually.

After cooperating with Fang Yuan so many times, would Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan be unclear about how unscrupulous and ruthless this demonic schemer was?

Hei Lou Lan sighed, her brows were tightly knitted, she did not continue the conversation, she turned around and left.

Fang Yuan smiled as he sent her off and watched her leave, he shouted: “This is not an urgent matter, fairy, do give it some thought.”

Hei Lou Lan was flying in the air as she inwardly scoffed at these words: “Consider what? I don’t believe that you can keep this up! You are only using one stone nest to refine airsac Gu, the sale of guts Gu will fall by half. This way, your monthly revenue will also shrink greatly. You spend much more money than me each month, I don’t believe that you can endure it!”

“Oh? Wait, no!” After a few breaths, Hei Lou Lan’s flying speed slowed down: “Even though he is refining less airsac Gu, Fang Yuan has a huge batch in his inventory. He can totally use this batch to keep up with the sale of guts Gu, or even sell multiple times the current amount!”

Hei Lou Lan flew slower and slower, her heart was turning colder: “This is a deep scheme from Fang Yuan, he was aiming this at me! His monthly revenue would not fall, it could even go up. What about me? All of the airsac Gu in the inventory are refined by me, but according to our earlier transaction, I cannot profit from them. Meanwhile, little aunt has a lot of problems to deal with now. Fang Yuan is using this timing and taking advantage of me! Oh, how can I cause more problems to little aunt now? She has already helped me enough!”

Hei Lou Lan’s heart felt chilly, she returned to the stone nests, seeing the three majestic buildings, she jolted to awareness!

“Compared to Fang Yuan, I have many flaws, there are many things that I am worse in.”

“I have the Great Strength True Martial physique, Fang Yuan is only an immortal zombie, but unknowingly, he has already gone far ahead of me.”

“I thought that my scheming and plotting ability was good, but Fang Yuan has fathomless depths, he is much shrewder!”

“I pride myself in having outstanding battle strength, but Fang Yuan’s myriad self can fight rank seven!”

“My greatest weakness is that I do not have economic support. Gu Immortal cultivation is not just about fighting, management is the foundation. In this aspect, I am way behind Fang Yuan.”

Thinking of this, Hei Lou Lan stretched out her arm and gave herself a few slaps.

“It is time to wake up!” Hei Lou Lan’s face was burning from pain, but her eyes were sharp like lightning, her expression was firm as steel: “From a young age, I was nurtured as the successor to the tribe leader. As a mortal Gu Master, I had no lack of resources, I did not have to manage resources, thus I lacked awareness in this aspect. Fang Yuan, I have to thank him for awakening my perception of this. Indeed, the best teacher is often your strongest enemy! I have decided, my first step currently is to become truly independent!”

Hei Lou Lan was truly a capable genius, she realized her own shortcomings and had the courage to acknowledge them, attempting to make changes.

After she gained awareness, she did not approach Fang Yuan anymore. She placed her focus on herself, finding businesses that were suitable for her immortal aperture to develop, those that could gain the most profits.

This way, even if only one stone nest was refining airsac Gu, it was not a problem. Because now, she had much more time to learn and accumulate her foundation, to think about how she could earn a living for herself.

Fang Yuan was extremely busy.

He first took Dang Hun mountain out of Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture, and returned it to the center of Hu Immortal blessed land.

Next, he started creating new homes for the dragonfish and air bubble fish.

Even though the poisonous blood was drained out and the surface of the corrupted soil was removed, the remaining soil was still light red in color. If one gripped it hard, blood would flow out of it.

Fang Yuan decided to reorganize the entire place, this was a huge project, first he dug around the original lakes and ponds. Next, he started setting up Gu worms and forming Gu formations at the center of the soil.

From the base of each Gu formation, he purchased large amounts of fertile soils and filled the ground with it.

The new soils were classified into different types.

In the lake that raised dragonfish, Fang Yuan used dragon scale soil. This type of soil was grainy and tough, viewed from afar, it resembled layers of dragon scales. In fact, it was the soil that dragon type desolate beasts, ancient desolate dragons, or even immemorial desolate dragons lived on, it was injected with the aura of dragons.

Dragonfish living in the lake made with dragon scale soil would have greater urge to procreate.

The lake that raised the air bubble fish was made with jade root soil. This soil was icy cold when held, and if it was squeezed tightly, it would turn into jade. Ordinary jade root soil would form qi veins that resembled the blood vessels of humans, they also looked like the roots of ginseng. That was also a reason for its name.

When air bubble fish lived in such an environment, their lifespan would be increased greatly, and they would be much more vigorous.

Because of the soil, the areas that the dragonfish and air bubble fish lived in were called the dragon scale lake and the jade root lake.

These two lakes were in the eastern part of Hu Immortal blessed land, they were the largest and second largest lakes.

Dragon scale lake was the largest, there was a large number of dragonfish inside, there was even a desolate beast dragonfish.

On top of jade root lake, there was a thick layer of clouds, there was star fragment grass growing on the clouds, forming a plain of clouds. Groups of starlight fireflies ate star fragment grass, they danced in the air on the plain, forming the scene of a sky with beautiful specks of starlight.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 826: New Dao Marks, Deeper Foundation

Fang Yuan had also placed starlight fireflies in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture. He had also moved a portion of the star fragment grass in, now that they had been merged together once again, they recovered their original scale.

The poisonous blood from the blood poison kerria flowers had only contaminated the ground, it had not caused the slightest harm to the star fragment grass in the sky.

Dragon scale lake and jade root lake were placed opposite each other at a distance, many small lakes were dug up between the two large lakes, as well as in the surroundings, like they were stars in the sky surrounding a moon each.

These small lakes and pools did not use any special soils.

Dragon scale soil and jade root soil were Gu refinement materials. Although they were not immortal materials, but with such great quantity, enough to construct two large lakes, Fang Yuan had spent quite a sum.

Some remaining water wolves and shark fin wolves lived in these small lakes. The shark fin wolf desolate beast that Fang Yuan had subdued also moved around here, eating the fish in these small lakes when it was hungry.

There were large numbers of blue jade carps in the pools and lakes. These blue jade carps could remain alive stubbornly in harsh conditions, even the poisonous blood could not kill them, instead it caused a portion of them to undergo a mutation, becoming blood jade carps. The price of these blood jade carps was several times that of blue jade carps.

In the western part of Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan had followed a set pattern; digging soil, arranging Gu formations, and using charcoal stones to construct a large lake.

However, this lake did not have even a drop of water. On the contrary, hot air rose with the charcoal stones covering the lake bed, when wind blew, the black-grey charcoal stones shone with a red light.

Fang Yuan named this lake charcoal lake, it was the second-best breeding ground for eerie fire dragon pythons. The optimal method was used in Dong Fang tribe’s headquarters — the arrangement in Jade Pool blessed land.

Fang Yuan knew this optimal method from Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul, it could be said that he was extremely clear of the arrangement.

But it was a pity that Fang Yuan’s wealth could not support it. In particular, the amount of money required at the earlier stages was too high, Fang Yuan considered it carefully and chose to use the second-best method of charcoal stones to construct the nest for the eerie fire dragon pythons.

He placed all the eerie fire dragon pythons inside and let them develop. Fang Yuan moved away, and at every set distance, he dug a small lake, he did not use any special soils and after setting up simple Gu formations, he poured all the poisonous blood taken into his immortal aperture into them.

Under the effect of isolation from the Gu formations, these lakes of poisonous blood would only seep out a little every year, contaminating the surrounding soil.

In the entire western part of Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan dug hundreds of small blood lakes.

Why did Fang Yuan do so?

This related to the connection between heavenly tribulations or earthly calamities and the blessed land.

Good fortune is hidden within bad, bad fortune lurks within good.

The deeper the blessed land’s foundation, the greater the fortune, and the stronger the heavenly tribulation or earthly calamity, and the more they would target such fortune.

For instance, the previous earthly calamity of Hu Immortal blessed land, a desolate beast swamp crab carrying gruel mud Immortal Gu, was targeted at the most valuable part of Hu Immortal blessed land – Dang Hun mountain. The result was that Dang Hun mountain gradually started turning into a pile of gruel mud, it was barely rescued by Fang Yuan from its death.

Heaven was fair and paid attention to balance. If you had a special superiority in one aspect and attracted heaven’s envy, the heavenly tribulation or earthly calamity would weaken you. Naturally, there were too many types of tribulations and calamities, this rule was not absolute and one could only say that the probability was high.

This was the embodiment of ‘bad fortune lurks within good’.

After the swamp crab earthly calamity, Hu Immortal blessed land had, in fact, gained large amounts of enslavement path dao marks as well as small amounts of earth path dao marks.

The higher the enslavement path dao marks, the easier it was to control the living beings raised in the blessed land and the higher their reproduction. Rockmen, hairy men, fox groups, wolf groups, fish groups and so on were among this list.

This was the most superior aspect of Hu Immortal blessed land, after all, the original owner, Hu Immortal, was an enslavement path Gu Immortal. Among the dao marks increased after every tribulation and calamity, the highest quantity would be in enslavement path dao marks.

Besides enslavement path, there were a small number of earth path dao marks. These dao marks could increase the fertility of the soil in Hu Immortal blessed land, the ground would become more firm and could absorb even more earth qi, and support Dang Hun mountain.

These dao marks could not be inspected with ordinary methods. They merged into Hu Immortal blessed land and comprehensively were built into this small world, making it more outstanding.

And this was the embodiment of ‘good fortune lies within bad’.

Heaven and earth targeted Dang Hun mountain, creating the swamp crab earthly calamity. But after the tribulation, Hu Immortal blessed land had obtained benefits, the earth path dao marks increased, which instead caused the mountain to be better suited for the blessed land.

And this earthly calamity was blood poison kerria flowers. Fang Yuan inwardly guessed that this was probably sent by heaven and earth in relation to his blood path grandmaster attainment level.

After getting past this calamity, Hu Immortal blessed land once again gained a large amount of dao marks. Enslavement path dao marks were still the highest in quantity, further enhancing Hu Immortal blessed land’s specialty. At the same time, there was also many blood path dao marks.

The appearance of the blood path dao marks undoubtedly changed Hu Immortal blessed land.

The mutation of blue jade carps into blood jade carps was only one manifestation of this. After Fang Yuan spent a lot of effort and energy to remove the top layer of soil in Hu Immortal blessed land, the layer of soil exposed below already had large quantities of tender grass and exquisite flower buds growing.

The grass was called blood sickle grass and after completely maturing, the stalks would be bent like sickles, broad and with edges as sharp as a knife.

And the flowers were called red axe flowers. The petals were like axe blades, they were white but gave off a hint of red light.

Regarding both blood sickle grass and red axe flowers, they were excellent Gu refinement materials, although not immortal materials, they could be used to refine rank three mortal Gu.

Once the blood sickle grass and red axe flowers that were all over Hu Immortal blessed land matured, they would be in astonishing quantity and act as a good source of wealth.

And this wealth was actually given by the last earthly calamity to Hu Immortal blessed land.

In fact, there were many kinds of grass and flowers grown in Hu Immortal blessed land previously, like blue degree grass which was both blue and poisonous, water chestnut grass which were shaped like chestnuts, six divine grass which looked like six thin leaves with the feeling of jade. And also the seven treasure flower which was in seven colors, and the cup-shaped milk tea flower, filled with nectar that was like milk tea.

However, these flowers and grasses could at most be used to refine rank one and rank two mortal Gu. Their value was far lower than blood sickle grass and red axe flowers.

The poisonous blood had seeped into the soil, changing a portion of the root systems and seeds of these flowers and grasses into the seeds of blood sickle grass and red axe flowers. The key point was that the addition of blood path dao marks remodeled Hu Immortal blessed land’s environment, which created the foundation for blood sickle grass and red axe flowers to grow.

Rank six Gu Immortals experience an earthly calamity every ten years, and a heavenly tribulation every one hundred years. After three hundred years, facing a total of thirty earthly calamities and three heavenly tribulations, they could advance to a rank seven Gu Immortal.

Earthly calamities were weaker than heavenly tribulations, every calamity and tribulation was a difficult test from heaven, they were filled with dangers but also filled with opportunities.

The newly added dao marks would reform the world of the blessed land to produce even more valuable resources. These resources provided the supplies required for the Gu Immortals to cultivate.

In the beginning, Hu Immortal could only plant large numbers of ordinary grasses and flowers in the blessed land. At that time, the soil was weak, there was no water and no wind, blue degree grass and chestnut grass would not be able to survive in this environment.

After several earthly calamities, the flowers and grasses withered and died out several times. Hu Immortal suffered great losses, but got new additions of wood path dao marks and earth path dao marks.

Because of the fire calamity, the blessed land gained fire path dao marks. Through the water calamity, there were water path dao marks.

With these dao marks, Hu Immortal blessed land’s environment was remodeled, Hu Immortal could then plant blue degree grass, chestnut grass, six divine grass, milk tea flowers and so on.

Although blessed lands were able to improve greatly with these opportunities, every earthly calamity would cause losses which would test the Gu Immortal’s management ability.

Hu Immortal weakened time and time again, her strength constantly fell, and while facing the fifth earthly calamity, she died at the hands of the blue charm lightning shadow.

After Fang Yuan inherited the blessed land, he was barely able to pass the sixth calamity, the desolate beast swamp crab calamity. Now, Hu Immortal blessed land had already passed seven earthly calamities.

With this last earthly calamity, Hu Immortal blessed land gained blood path dao marks, producing a living environment for blood sickle grass and red axe flowers.

Experienced farmers knew what to plant in particular kinds of soil to get the best harvest. Fang Yuan managed the blessed land in accordance with the conditions, developing the strong points and avoiding the weak points. He did not let Tai Bai Yun Sheng use Landscape as Before, instead digging the poisonous blood lakes for this reason.

“In fact, it is not only these flowers and grass, with these blood path dao marks, I can raise blood stripe foxes. The blood stripe fox’s reproduction rate is higher than any of the fox groups raised in Hu Immortal blessed land earlier. The annual yield would be even greater and if I buy some knowledge and experiences in raising blood stripe foxes, with some good luck, I might be able to turn them into a small source of income.”

However, blood stripe foxes were partway up the food chain, Fang Yuan would have to bring in some blood stripe rabbits to feed them.

Then what would blood stripe rabbits eat? It would be blood sickle grass.

Thus, Fang Yuan put in great effort to dig so many poisonous blood lakes, it was to use this poisonous blood as nutrition. Under the control of the Gu formations, they would seep into the soil and constantly nourish the growth of blood sickle grass and red axe flowers.

To provide beneficial competition for the blood stripe foxes, Fang Yuan also planned to buy some poison beard wolves. Previously, Hu Immortal blessed land was not suitable for the growth of these poison beard wolves. But with the contamination of poisonous blood now, Fang Yuan could raise some poison beard wolves.

There was no need for a lot of poison beard wolves, he only required a small number of them to form a catfish effect with the blood stripe foxes.

Fang Yuan was very busy, it was as if he was running around to and fro.

Time flies quickly when one was busy.

Almost in an instant, over half a month had passed by in Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fang Yuan’s project of remodeling Hu Immortal blessed land finally came to an end.

Hu Immortal blessed land was changed beyond recognition.

In the eastern part, dragon scale lake and jade root lake mutually enhanced each other’s beauty, with many small lakes and pools in the surroundings. The lakes contained dragonfish, air bubble fish, blood jade carps and blue jade carps. Beside the lakes were some numbers of shark fin wolves, water wolves and earth skin pigs.

In the western part, the number of lakes had increased sharply, surpassing the eastern part. The center of the western part was fully occupied by the charcoal lake.

Every set interval of distance was a small poisonous blood lake. Hundreds of blood lakes were evenly spread over the western part, looking from a bird’s eye view, it was a magnificent spectacle. Not long later, there would be fields of blood sickle grass and seas of red axe flowers here. There were small quantities of blood stripe rabbits, poison beard wolves and blood stripe foxes living here. But blood stripe foxes were being constantly drawn in from the outside world, and their numbers were increasing day by day.

Something that was worth mentioning was the desolate beast giant horned sheep, it was also placed here to prevent the desolate beast shark fin wolf in the eastern part from hunting it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 827: Fang Zheng Wakes Up

In the southern part of Hu Immortal blessed land, a small portion of rockmen were still hibernating underground. Because large numbers of blood poison kerria flowers had spawned and died in their tunnels, the underground homes of these rockmen would produce bloodstone ores after tens of years. The underground cave that hid wisdom Gu was, however, restored with Landscape as Before. The zhi forest was looking weak, but it did not need to be cured and could dispel the poison on its own, there was even a certain chance of producing a blood zhi forest.

The northern part of the blessed land, where the terrain was narrow and the area smaller, was set up as a breeding ground for regretful spiders.

In the center of the blessed land was Dang Hun mountain. Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul was locked up in Dang Hun palace, along with the remaining dozens of Dong Fang tribesmen. Large numbers of immortal materials were placed in storerooms. Five thousand kilograms of oil water, the giant dead egg of the worldly sand gull and large numbers of airsac Gu were also kept in stock. Near Dang Hun mountain were the three Fang Yuan stone nests, where many hairy man slaves lived and refined Gu without stopping. As for the small batch of mirror willows, they were already dead. The beggar moths which ate mirror willow leaves as food no longer had any use, and were sold off.

By now, the three large scale resource points — eerie fire dragon pythons, regretful spiders and dragonfish — were truly established. Instead of just storing them like before, this development ensured that the three resource points could grow and multiply in numbers, and be sold for profit.

However, at present, these three resources points were still being built up in scale and could not be put into the market immediately.

There were also large numbers of airsac Gu in Dang Hun palace’s storage. But Fang Yuan could not put them in the market all at once and make huge profits, with Immortal Crane Sect still eyeing Hu Immortal blessed land. The less attention it received, the better. Selling them slowly could decrease the risks and allow the profits to come steadily.

The second day after Hu Immortal blessed land was restored, Tai Bai Yun Sheng bade his farewell to Fang Yuan.

He had put in a lot of effort during this time period. Without his help, Fang Yuan would require half a month longer to complete such a large project.

He had not only spent a lot of effort, but also lent some immortal essence stones to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not have much immortal essence stones and he lacked capital during the initial investment of the renovation. Tai Bai Yun Sheng gave him some immortal essence stones to make up for this shortage.

Speaking of which, among the four who signed the Snowy Mountain Alliance, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was the richest at present.

He had made good progress in Eastern Sea, importing large numbers of resources into his immortal aperture, which caused his immortal aperture’s foundation to be unable to keep up, the earth qi became lacking in quantity and there was instability. Just now, Tai Bai Yun Sheng returned to Hu Immortal blessed land not only to help Fang Yuan, but also for another purpose, to return to Northern Plains, place his blessed land down, absorb earth qi and also face the earthly calamity.

However, it was not yet the time for the earthly calamity to appear and absorbing earth qi also required some time. When the earthly calamity struck, Fang Yuan would also have to help Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng left Hu Immortal blessed land, Hei Lou Lan, however, remained behind.

Soon, Fang Yuan also left Hu Immortal blessed land to go to Central Continent.

It was because Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention was about to start!

Central Continent, Fei He mountain, Immortal Crane Sect.

Clouds and fog lingered around this floating mountain, with cranes flying in between the pine forests.

In an underground secret room in Immortal Crane Sect, it was damp and dark, and the walls were covered in moss. Besides a stone bed in the room, there was no other furniture.

On the stone bed, a young Gu Master was lying down, his face was pale as paper but there were no injuries on his body, as if he was in a coma.

It was Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

A Gu worm lied motionless on Fang Zheng’s chest.

Suddenly, a faint light flashed in the stone room, before a Gu Immortal appeared.

His wide sleeves were swaying, he looked like a young man with a handsome appearance. Most eye-catching of all were his eyebrows, they were green and long, reaching down to his waist. Under the eyebrows, his gaze was dark and eerie.

“Lord He Feng Yang!” The Gu worm lying on Fang Zheng’s chest immediately moved its wings and flew up, excitedly greeting the newcomer.

This Gu worm was the spirit incubating flea that contained Lord Sky Crane’s soul.

“Lord, please heal Fang Zheng’s soul, please awaken my disciple.” Lord Sky Crane implored.

“Sky Crane, is your decision still this...” He Feng Yang sighed, feeling somewhat disappointed. Why did he want Lord Sky Crane to revive using possession?

It was because Lord Sky Crane was originally his subordinate and had handled many matters for him. His background and origin was clear, and he was quite capable himself. On the contrary, Gu Yue Fang Zheng was too young, and had been forced to sacrifice himself, if he happened to hold a grievance against Immortal Crane Sect, that would not be a pleasing scenario.

“Sky Crane, do you know that the possession technique our Immortal Crane Sect obtained now can be considered perfect and is extremely outstanding? If you had done possession previously, perhaps the body and soul would not match and leave behind side-effects. But with this possession technique, it will be like you were born that way, the body and soul would blend together and match each other. There is not even a slight amount of shortcomings. This is your luck, you can be reborn and regain the glory you once had. Heaven is bestowing you with this opportunity, why do you not want to take it?” He Feng Yang persuaded.

“Lord...” The spirit incubating flea flapped its wings, and said in a quiet voice, “Please forgive me for being obstinate. Fang Zheng, he is my disciple. He resembles my past self, and this future belongs to him. If I possess him, I won’t be able to face myself, to face my inner feelings. Please think of the many years of my servitude to you, and help me, lord.”

“You!” He Feng Yang was starting to get angry.

Nothing was going like he wanted recently. To save the nine palace crane, Little Jiu, he had requested help from various people and spent large amounts of wealth, but it still was not showing much effect.

Now, even his former subordinate was acting willfully and disregarding his persuasion, everything was going wrong!

This possession technique was powerful but it had a condition. It could not be used rashly and it was best to let the soul be in contact with the possession target’s body for a long period of time before this technique was used.

Lord Sky Crane had intended to possess Fang Zheng, thus had placed the spirit incubating flea in Fang Zheng’s aperture. So much time had passed already, the condition for possession was already fulfilled, but Lord Sky Crane had now changed his decision.

This also meant that if Lord Sky Crane wanted to possess others, he would not be able to do so in a short period of time. His soul would need to be in contact with the body of the possession target for a long time.

As for Dong Fang Chang Fan possessing Dong Fang Yu Liang, he had secretly stored a part of his soul in Dong Fang Yu Liang’s body. His methods were so ingenious that Dong Fang Yu Liang had not sensed anything wrong.

He Feng Yang was not feeling good these days, he was feeling frustrated and agitated, and wanted to berate Lord Sky Crane.

But in the end, he did not speak out the words in his thoughts, because he could not help but associate his own situation with Lord Sky Crane’s.

Wasn’t he also like Lord Sky Crane earlier?

To save Little Jiu, he was determined to follow his own way and was even willing to sacrifice himself. Back then, when he was facing the hopeless situation, if not for Immortal Crane Sect’s third supreme elder, Lord Tiger Demon helping him, there would not be He Feng Yang in the present.

He Feng Yang heaved a deep sigh: “Alright, alright. Since you are determined to do this, I, He Feng Yang, shall help you. This is the compensation for all the work you have done me. If later, you want to undergo possession and request me to help, it won’t be free.”

He Feng Yang then waved his large sleeve, brushing it past Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s face.

After this movement finished, He Feng Yang disappeared from the spot.

Several breaths of time later, Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s soul became as firm as before, and he woke up from his coma.

“You are awake!” The spirit incubating flea fluttered towards his eyes.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was dazed: “Mas... Master, where are we?”

“Of course we’re in Immortal Crane Sect, foolish disciple.” Lord Sky Crane laughed heartily.

“Why am I here?” Gu Yue Fang Zheng was still in confusion, mumbling. Suddenly, he shivered, a terrified expression appearing on his face.

He thought of that blood pool, the terrifying memory of blood vines growing over his body when he looked into Hu Immortal blessed land.

“Aaaahh!” Gu Yue Fang Zheng screamed and subconsciously leaped back.

The back of his head struck the firm stone wall, his raised head lowered down as he fell unconscious.

Lord Sky Crane: “...”

Three days later.

Immortal Crane Sect officially announced the news of Gu Yue Fang Zheng waking up.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng appeared in front of the disciples again, outrageously having rank five cultivation.

In the morning class, Immortal Crane Sect’s leader publicly announced Gu Yue Fang Zheng as an elder of Immortal Crane Sect.

For a while, the whole sect was in shock!

The former rivals of Fang Zheng, like Sun Yuan Hua and others, were dumbstruck, disciples and elite disciples were in a clamor, and elders also discussed this with each other.

To assist in capturing Hu Immortal blessed land, Immortal Crane Sect’s Gu Immortals forcibly raised Fang Zheng’s cultivation to rank five. The identity of a disciple was no longer suitable for Fang Zheng.

Fang Zheng was just adapting to his new status, and was at a loss on what to do.

When he walked around the sect, every disciple he met would bow to him in greeting, among them were many elite disciples older than him.

Sometimes he would see his past rivals like Sun Yuan Hua, they would also pay respects to him. Many beautiful female disciples frequently flocked around Fang Zheng, some looked at him with watery eyes, while some sweetly called him Elder Fang Zheng.

Compared to other elders, Fang Yuan was extremely young, it could be said that he was unique. Like stories of legends, he attracted the attention of many female disciples, some even forming crushes on him.

Even Fang Zheng himself forgot his identity sometimes when he saw other elders, and would bow to these elders like a disciple. And each time this happened, the situation would turn awkward.

Fortunately, Fang Zheng had Lord Sky Crane with him. Immortal Crane Sect’s leader also occasionally called him over to ask about his well-being and if he was facing any problems, making him feel overwhelmed from the attention and favor.

What made Gu Yue Fang Zheng even more happy was that the sect’s benefits to elders were tens of times greater than the treatment received by disciples.

Lord Sky Crane could faintly see the intention behind this.

Previously, the sect’s higher-ups intentionally sacrificed Fang Zheng, using his life to increase the possibility of capturing Hu Immortal blessed land. Right now, they were showering him with status and perks, to restore his loyalty to the sect.

In the end, Fang Zheng was not Fang Yuan, he was too young and had scant life experience, not having even the slightest sensation of this intention.

In fact, he had no complaints towards Immortal Crane Sect, and after becoming an elder, he had even more of a sense of belonging to Immortal Crane Sect.

As for the terrifying memory of looking into Hu Immortal blessed land, he was subconsciously evading it, not wanting to recall it. It was only that sometimes, deep into nights, he would dream of the scene in the blood pool, recall the pain and suffering, and wake up with his body filled with cold sweat.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 828: Five Virtues Mountain, Five Virtues Sect

On this day, Fang Zheng was returning after listening to another elder’s public lecture, when he was obstructed by a disciple called Shi Hong.

“Elder Fang Zheng.” Shi Hong bowed in greeting.

Fang Zheng returned the greeting, but felt somewhat awkward inwardly. This elite disciple, Shi Hong, was older than Fang Zheng, and had originally been a senior disciple several generations above Fang Zheng.

“I would like to receive guidance from Elder Fang Zheng. One of the four entry tasks for the current Refinement Path Convention pertains to refining earth treasury flower Gu. The third last step of refining this Gu requires the use of upstream grass, matched with zen lion’s mane, supplemented by the Gu refinement method. But this disciple has always failed in this step, I would like to know what the correct Gu refinement method for this is?”

“This.....” Fang Zheng was stupefied, and hesitated. His main cultivation path was enslavement path, and his battle strength when controlling cranes were at an outstanding level among mortal Gu Masters. But he had entirely no understanding of refinement path.

Fortunately, he had the spirit incubating flea, from which Lord Sky Crane transmitted the answer.

Fang Zheng replied: “This Gu refinement technique is called ‘one after another’. Its purpose is to entwine every stalk of the upstream grass with every strand of the zen lion’s mane. To refine earth treasury flower Gu, you must weave together a hundred stalks and strands within thirty breaths of time. If you go beyond this time, the fire from the Gu refinement will burn these stalks and strands to ashes. Thus, if you are not familiar with this method, you will easily fail in this refinement.”

Fang Zheng repeated the words of Lord Sky Crane, and the more he spoke, the calmer he became. After explaining this, he then went to explain on how to practice the ‘one after another’ Gu refinement technique.

Shi Hong’s expression slightly changed, showing astonishment before hurriedly bowing in thanks: “Many thanks for Elder Fang Zheng’s guidance, I have learned a lot.”

“Do you still have anything you don’t understand?” Fang Zheng smiled, getting addicted to this feeling of teaching.

“There is no more, no more. This disciple shall take his leave!” Shi Hong bowed, and left.

After the two parted ways, Fang Zheng walked for a while before suddenly starting to slow down.

He frowned and came to a realization: “This Shi Hong did not come to truly ask for advice, it feels like the other way around, like he was intentionally trying to create difficulties for me.”

“Hehe, you noticed it? Good, good.” Lord Sky Crane smiled.

Fang Zheng inwardly shouted: “Master, you already knew!”

“Nonsense, your background is extremely easy to probe, your age is also openly on display. Everyone knows you don’t cultivate refinement path, Shi Hong, however, intentionally asked such a question, what could it be if not about trying to give you trouble?”

Lord Sky Crane paused here, before asking Fang Zheng: “Do you know why he was trying to create difficulties for you?”

“Why?” Fang Zheng did not understand.

Lord Sky Crane smiled brightly as he explained the reason: “Because Shi Hong likes a female disciple called Yi Yue. And this Yi Yue is Elder Yan Tang’s daughter. Elder Yan Tang is weak, he is sidelined in Immortal Crane Sect, and has had difficulties. He plans to betroth his daughter to you to form a connection, an alliance of benefits with you, the youngest elder in the history of Immortal Crane Sect. Otherwise, why would he repeatedly invite you for drinking? Moreover, intentionally arrange his daughter to sit together with you every time?”

“Ahh.” Fang Zheng exclaimed as he realized only at this point. He could not help but recall the beautiful appearance of Yi Yue sitting beside him, and warmly serving him dishes. Also how she frequently proposed a toast to Fang Zheng, and how after few sips of alcohol, her face would flush red, which made her even more attractive.

“Do you remember now? Hahaha, foolish boy!” Lord Sky Crane was happy to see Fang Zheng looking dazed. Clearly, the spirit of gossip was commonly held between men and woman, the old and young, and even the living and dead.

Fang Zheng helplessly sighed, shaking his head and saying in a weary voice: “Schemes and benefits again, I really don’t like them. From now on, I shall refuse Elder Yan Tang’s invitation. I am also an elder like him anyway, refusing shouldn’t be considered rude.”

“Foolish boy, which organization in this world is not held together by benefits? True feelings of warmth do exist, but they are rare, which makes them even more valuable.” Lord Sky Crane sighed with emotions, “Don’t avoid these, and especially don’t refuse Elder Yan Tang’s invitation. Even if you don’t marry his daughter, there is also no need to ruin the relation with him. Because currently, you are even more weak than Elder Yan Tang.”

“Let’s not talk about this. Master, just now the Refinement Path Convention was mentioned, and recently everyone, both disciples and elders, are talking about it. What is this Refinement Path Convention?” Fang Zheng intentionally changed the topic.

“It is good that you asked me this and not others. Otherwise, they would look at you as if you were stupid. I will explain it to you properly. This Refinement Path Convention is not a normal event, but a grand occasion that occurs only every one hundred years in Central Continent. That means, without special lifespan prolonging methods, most Gu Masters can only participate once in their lifetimes.” Lord Sky Crane explained.

“Refinement Path Convention, is it an event of refinement path Gu Masters?”

“Not exactly. The cultivation of Gu Masters involves three aspects – nurture, use, and refinement. The Refinement Path Convention is not an event where only refinement path Gu Masters can participate, as long as you have skill in the Gu refinement aspect, or experience and insight, you can participate.”

Lord Sky Crane continued: “The scale of this grand event is unprecedented, it is the biggest refinement path event in the world. Hundreds of thousands of Gu Masters participate in every Refinement Path Convention, they come from all sizes of sects in Central Continent. Even Gu Masters from Eastern Sea, Western Desert, Southern Border and Northern Plains will appear.”

“Southern Border...” A wisp of emotion rose up in Fang Zheng and he could not help but recall Qing Mao Mountain.

He asked, after a moment: “Then what are the four entry tasks Shi Hong mentioned?”

Lord Sky Crane spoke everything he knew without reservation: “The so-called four entry tasks can be said to be qualifications for entering. Any Gu Master, no matter who they are, will refine Gu sometimes in their cultivation journey. The Refinement Path Convention has generous rewards which attract countless Gu Masters to participate. If there were not some tests set up, then there would be way too many incompetent people wanting to try their luck. Thus, the four entry tasks were created, to distinguish the truly skilled ones and those with refinement path attainment.”

“That is to say, one must finish the four entry tasks if they want to participate in the Refinement Path Convention.” Fang Zheng came to a realization.

“Hehehe.” Lord Sky Crane chuckled, “Actually, these four entry tasks test the basic skills of Gu refinement. Usually, any Gu Master with certain experience can pass it.”

Fang Zheng was startled: “Master, I can’t pass it.”

“No problem, with my guidance, if you train crazily in this period of time, you can also succeed.”

“Truly? My vision will be expanded!” Fang Zheng was joyous.

Central Continent, Five Virtues Mountain.

Streams of people were busily moving around Five Virtues Mountain.

Five Virtues Mountain was not tall. It was located in the eastern part of Central Continent and was the base of a middle sized sect – Five Virtues Sect.

Five Virtues Sect was considered a large influence within the surroundings. Its background was profound, in the past, the leader of Five Virtues Sect had been an elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect. Heavenly Lotus Sect was one of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, a super force. Thus, although Five Virtues Sect had not been established for long, it was able to develop smoothly, and the established forces in the surroundings did not dare to sideline or suppress it.

Fang Yuan, disguised as a mortal Gu Master, was mixed in the stream of people, slowly moving up Five Virtues Mountain.

He was covered in a black robe, his physique was average, not tall, not short, not fat, not thin. He covered his face with a mask and his head with a rain hat, the brim of the hat was low and its shade under the sunlight covered even Fang Yuan’s shoulders.

But this disguise was not conspicuous in the stream of people. A lot of people’s disguises were even more excessive than his.

Following the slow stream of people, Fang Yuan arrived in front of Five Virtues Sect’s entrance.

This tall entrance had an archway of sixteen huge columns, was about ten meters wide and taller than a five storey building. On a plaque atop the entrance were three giant words shining with golden light – Five Virtues Sect. Under the archway of the entrance were six magnificent stone lion statues.

Behind the entrance was a wide staircase paved using the finest blue jade stones, it was like a blue river leisurely moving up Five Virtues Mountain.

The stairs were under the shade of green and verdant trees beside them. Winds of the mountain occasionally blew over, bringing cool sensations with them.

People of all walks of life jostled with each other, pushing and squeezing as they moved up the stairs.

Fang Yuan gazed around, in front of him and towards the left was a group of female Gu Masters with long wavy hair, wearing identical striped dresses, indicating they were probably from the same sect. To his right was a white clothed young master fanning a folding fan, seated on a leopard, and constantly glancing at that group of female Gu Masters.

To his left, a pair of master and disciple, clothed in shabby clothes, were in the midst of a discussion.

“Master, there are so many people!” The disciple said with excitement.

The master chuckled: “There are many people, don’t wander off. My good disciple, you have great talent in refinement path, this is an opportunity for you to make a meteoric rise. You can pass the four entry tests with no difficulty, but you must make sure to get a good position. Only in that way will others change the way they look at you, and fight over each other to recruit you.”

The disciple proudly smiled: “Master, you can rest assured. I will definitely take first place. With the Gu worm reward of first place, I will treat your illness!”

The master was about to speak, when suddenly an enormous force pushed him from behind.

The master was sent rolling on the ground, and the disciple cried out as he hurriedly moved to support his master by the arm.

“Step aside! Step aside!” A group of five burly men walked over arrogantly.

Behind them was an old Gu Master, whose gaze shined with a dangerous light, he was sitting comfortably on a chair which was carried by four men in front and behind.

“The esteemed lord first elder of Flying Frost Sect is here, are you still not making way!” The burly men who were clearing a path shouted.

“Let’s move, people of Flying Frost Sect are here, we can’t afford to provoke them.”

“Flying Frost Sect sent their first elder, and are coming with such aggression, they are probably thinking of restoring their face from Five Virtues Sect.”

“Right, last time, Five Virtues Sect and Flying Frost Sect fought for the mouth of the spring, in the end, Five Virtues Sect barely won, while Flying Frost Sect suffered severe losses.”

The crowd discussed amongst themselves, and all made way, not wanting to provoke Flying Frost Sect.

“Damn it, this is going too far!” The disciple supported his master in standing up, and was about to confront them with words.

“Don’t.” The master was an experienced person, and quickly stopped the young disciple.

“What kind of force is Flying Frost Sect?” Ahead of Fang Yuan, a male Gu Master asked his companion.

After he received the answer, the Gu Master snorted disdainfully: “Hmph, the whole sect has only three rank five Gu Masters, this is a joke.”

His companion quickly advised: “This is Central Continent, it is not Eastern Sea, we are outsiders here, it is better to avoid trouble whenever possible. Alright, enough now.”

The male Gu Master thought for a moment before finally giving a snort, and without waiting for the Flying Frost Sect’s people, he squeezed into the crowd to the right.

“What is with you, are you deaf? Make way, I said make way!” The burly men shouted furiously behind Fang Yuan, and tried to drive him away.

Fang Yuan did not turn around, as if he had heard nothing.

“Hmm?” The burly men were furious, but their expressions changed immediately, “Rank five cultivation?”

Fang Yuan was disguised as a rank five Gu Master, and right now, he intentionally leaked out a trace of his aura.

The burly men were bewildered, but drew back in the end.

On the bamboo chair, the first elder of Flying Frost Sect, An Han, straightened up and stared at Fang Yuan’s back.

“Rank five aura... it’s real! Such a disguise is not that of a lone cultivator... demonic Gu Master...” An Han narrowed his eyes, and moved his hand, sending the command, “Are you still not moving around?”

The burly men immediately changed direction, moving around Fang Yuan towards the front.

Among mortals, rank five was an existence at the peak, a leader of a force. Even the sect leader of Immortal Crane Sect only had rank five cultivation.

“This group of cowardly bullies!” The disciple and master converged into the crowd again, the young disciple furiously staring at the receding figures of Flying Frost Sect’s people.

Shortly afterwards, he looked at Fang Yuan with curiosity, probing and with a slight hint of reverence.

The white clothed young master on the right folded his fan and got off the leopard, the group of female Gu Masters ahead intentionally stopped, many other Gu Masters stopped as well, and took the initiative to approach Fang Yuan, trying to leave a good impression.

Rank five Gu Master... if they could build a relationship with such a character...

Beside the stairs were the Five Virtues Sect disciples in charge of maintaining order, they were hurriedly transmitting messages: “Send the report, there is a rank five Gu Master.”

Facing these people, Fang Yuan only said one word — “Scram.”

His tone was calm but his voice carried coldness and ruthlessness.

The crowd changed expressions, a chill emerging from the bottom of their hearts, why would they still dare to trouble Fang Yuan?

The young disciple also retracted his gaze in a hurry.

Fang Yuan restrained his aura again. In a range of three steps around him, there was no one else.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 829: First Round of Gu Refinement

As one walked along the path on the mountain, they would arrive at a point part way up it. There was a huge platform here, on the mountain wall, there were the huge words of ‘Disciple Selection Stage’ engraved. Every year, the aptitude of the disciples who had just entered the sect would be tested, and the elders would choose their disciples here.

But here, the place had been modified roughly.

There was a simple Gu formation on the ground, it separated the locations into small areas, and on each of them, there was a number.

Once in a while, the people ahead would move forward by a bit. At the sides of the path, Five Virtues Sect disciples were passing out tokens with numbers on them.

Fang Yuan took his token, the number on it was sixty-three.

Walking into the Disciple Selection Stage, after finding the spot numbered sixty-three, he sat down on the ground.

A while later, when people had finished sitting in the square, an elder of Five Virtues Sect declared: “This Refinement Path Convention has four entry tasks, the test begins now!”

At the next moment, the hundreds of Gu Masters on the Disciple Selection Stage started showing off their skills.

Some of their hands were burning with flames, this was a fire refinement method. Some breathed out smoke, it was a smoke refinement method. Some released several ice snakes, the snakes worked together and breathed out cold air, this was an ice refinement method.

And in Fang Yuan’s hands, dozens of starlight specks were dancing, they were like blue fireflies, flying around him.

In accordance with the sequence, Fang Yuan placed the Gu refinement materials in, one by one. Fifteen minutes later, he finished all of the tasks and stood up.

“Such quick speed!” The Five Virtues Sect elder in charge of the event knew about Fang Yuan’s rank five Gu Master identity, he had been paying close attention.

Even so, when Fang Yuan stood up, this elder showed shock on his face.

Fang Yuan’s speed was simply too fast. He made no mistakes at all, his technique was extremely skilful and experienced.

“What, someone already completed it?!” Fang Yuan’s movements attracted the attentions of many Gu Masters who were refining Gu.

“It is that mysterious rank five Gu Master...” The old master stood outside the stage, seeing Fang Yuan, his pupils shrunk as he looked at his disciple in worry, he prayed inwardly: “Good disciple, please do not get distracted from this and lose your focus.”

Thankfully, his disciple had been concentrating on refining Gu, he was focused and did not notice the commotion around Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan walked onto the highest platform, as the elder from Five Virtues Sect left his seat and inspected Fang Yuan’s four Gu worms.

“No negative conditions, the Gu worms look like they are well fed and in good shape.” The Five Virtues Sect elder was secretly shocked, after inspecting them, he cupped his fists at Fang Yuan, saying warmly: “Lord, please come this way into the mountain.”

Fang Yuan nodded, slowly walking and leaving the Disciple Selection Stage.

“No way, is this possible?”

“Someone actually got through using less than one third of the time...”

“Such high refinement path attainment!”

The people outside were talking among themselves, among the Gu Masters who were refining Gu, some were so shocked that their minds wavered, causing their Gu refinement to fail.

Fang Yuan was here to join the Refinement Path Convention, he did not need to hide his skill. He was a Gu Immortal, after all, he did not need to conceal his ability.

He walked up the mountain and after a while, an elder from Five Virtues Sect welcomed him: “Sir, please hold on...”

The elder was about to speak but Fang Yuan waved his hand, interrupting him: “I know your intention. I have no interest. Just this mere Five Virtues Sect cannot accommodate me.”

The elder was stunned before rage flashed on his face.

He came here with the sect leader’s orders to try and recruit Fang Yuan, to invite him to be an external elder in the sect.

In truth, Five Virtues Sect became one of the signing up locations for the Refinement Path Convention in order to recruit some talents.

With Fang Yuan’s rank five cultivation level, Five Virtues Sect was paying great attention to him. With the refinement path attainment that he displayed, even the Five Virtues Sect Leader was shocked, how could he let such a talented person go? Thus, he ordered this elder to come and negotiate.

But before this elder even spoke about his intentions, Fang Yuan rejected him.

Being mercilessly rejected like this made the elder embarrassed.

“What else do you want?” Fang Yuan looked at him coldly.

The elder’s face turned purple, he snorted coldly: “Sir, you actually are looking down on our Five Virtues Sect, aren’t you being too arrogant?”

“You want to duel me?” Fang Yuan’s voice was cold.

The elder’s anger subsided, he looked at Fang Yuan deeply: “Good, good, good, sir, you think highly of yourself, I am sure you can obtain a good position in the Refinement Path Convention. My Five Virtues Sect will be waiting to watch it!”

Saying so, he waved his sleeves and left.

Fang Yuan felt indifferent, he continued moving forward, he came to a cliff and arrived at the wood virtue hall.

This hall was hidden in the woods, it was green and mixed in with the grass and trees in the surroundings.

Fang Yuan walked into the hall, there were many tables and chairs inside, elite disciples of Five Virtues Sect were managing the place. Seeing Fang Yuan’s arrival, a disciple went up: “Senior, may I ask for your name, sect, and main Gu Master cultivation path.”

Fang Yuan replied: “My name is Fang Yuan, my sect will be kept as a secret, my main path will be kept as a secret.”

“Oh... okay, senior, please pay a hundred primeval stones as the sign up fee. This fee will be used in...”

Before the disciple finished his words, Fang Yuan tossed him the primeval stones that he had prepared.

The disciple caught it flurriedly, before saying politely: “Please wait a moment.”

A short while later, Fang Yuan obtained a token.

On the token, the words ‘Fang Yuan’ were written, at the back, there was a line of words: Sect hidden, path hidden, signed up at Five Virtues Sect. At the end, there was the time of signing up.

“Senior, please take good care of this token. If you lose it, you should get a replacement as soon as possible, otherwise you will not be able to join the Refinement Path Convention. Please continue on your way up the mountain, the fire virtue hall has the first round of the refinement competition. Only after senior passes this round can you join the second round.” The disciple explained patiently.

Fang Yuan took the token and left the wood virtue hall.

By now, the sign up process was over.

Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention was created by the ten great ancient sects, but secretly, Heavenly Court was supporting it.

The Refinement Path Convention was of a huge scale, there were hundreds of sign up locations all over Central Continent. Most of them were sects similar to Five Virtues Sect, having abundant strength and being closely linked to the ten great ancient sects, or simply one of their representatives.

Fang Yuan wanted to join the Refinement Path Convention, he had to sign up at one of these locations. By refining Gu on the spot, and completing the four tasks, he would have the qualifications to sign up and receive the token.

Because there were many demonic path Gu Masters signing up for the Refinement Path Convention, and even Gu Masters from the other four regions, the details for signing up were very flexible. Names could be made up, sects and paths did not need to be stated, the only important thing was the token itself.

There was also a group of special Gu Masters.

These people were either in sects or they themselves had obtained a good position in the previous Refinement Path Convention, thus they could join the Refinement Path Convention automatically.

For example, Hong Yi was such a case.

He was in Universal Life Academy, which had obtained a placing near the end of the list a hundred years ago in the Refinement Path Convention. This gave them three spots to join the Refinement Path Convention automatically.

What was worth noting was that this treatment was only for Central Continent Gu Masters, as well as Central Continent sects.

After all, this Refinement Path Convention was held by the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, they would favor their own region.

Of course, Immortal Crane Sect had a larger number of spots, but Fang Yuan was only in a subsidiary force of Immortal Crane Sect, if he really went for it, it would be troublesome. Fang Zheng however, was different.

A portion of the spots that the sects had were distributed to disciples and elite disciples, while the other portion went to elders.

Fang Zheng was now an elder of Immortal Crane Sect, he could not compete with the disciples for the spot. His refinement path attainment was very low as well, he could not beat other elders.

Immortal Crane Sect naturally gave the free spots to those with deep foundation in Gu refinement, those Gu Masters that could defend Immortal Crane Sect’s prestige in the Refinement Path Convention.

Thus, be it Fang Zheng or Fang Yuan, they had to sign up themselves.

Fang Yuan held the token and walked up the mountain, entering the fire virtue hall.

This was the first round of the competition in the Refinement Path Convention.

If his results were bad, he would not be able to join the second round.

Fang Yuan went in and was informed of the Gu refinement details.

“In thirty minutes, I have to refine the rank one water light Gu, at least a hundred of them to pass and enter the second round. Refining a hundred and fifty would reward me with five kilograms of phantom shadow petals, a hundred and eighty would get me six basins of rootless water, two hundred would get me ten pieces of thunder strike wood... two hundred and forty is third place, two hundred and sixty is second place, and two hundred and seventy-six is first place, I would get the rank four healing Gu worm that is good at relieving heat toxins, green shine Gu.”

Fang Yuan thought in his mind.

This first round’s difficulty was higher than the first four entry tasks.

But it should not trouble most of the Gu Masters.

Because they only had to refine a hundred water light Gu to pass and move on to the second round. The rewards for refining a larger number, though, was quite tempting to these Gu Masters.

First place would obtain a rank four Gu worm, green shine Gu.

Rank four Gu were often something that only the elder of a large force, or the leader of a small force would have.

Regarding Fang Yuan, he could buy green shine Gu in treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan’s status was too high, these rewards had no attraction to him. But what he found interesting was the challenge of these tasks.

“The materials for Gu refinement are provided beforehand, I can use them for free. They also gave the recipe for water light Gu, and I can follow it casually. But even if I go all out and use the water refinement technique, I can only refine two hundred and fifty of them. This result is only third place. But here in Five Virtues Sect, the third place position has already been taken.”

In regards to this, it was first come, first served.

Once the conditions for the first three positions had been fulfilled, no matter how well someone who came later performed, it was useless.

In other words, if Fang Yuan wanted to leave his name on the board, he would have to get first or second.

“Actually, it is not impossible to get first place. I can add in expensive materials and increase the production of Gu worms. Water light Gu is only a rank one Gu, if I use rank two or rank three materials, the production would be higher. But I will have to bear the expenses myself. I can also modify the Gu recipe, with my wisdom path inheritance, I can easily modify this Gu recipe without wisdom Gu’s help. But that way, wouldn’t I lose the fun of a challenge? Hmm... maybe I can try a water-fire refinement technique. Since water light Gu is a water path Gu, people usually use water refinement or ice refinement for it. I can do the opposite and use fire refinement, there might be an unexpected result!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 830: Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s Inheritance Clues

Fang Yuan had a sudden inspiration, he thought of a great method.

The Gu recipe was given, but Gu Masters could refine the Gu using their own techniques. For example, to fuse two materials, they can use fire to melt them into one, but they could also use water to fuse them together as another method.

Two different methods would be able to achieve the same results.

Thirty minutes later, Fang Yuan’s name was on the first place spot, and he obtained green shine Gu.

Fang Yuan did not practice this water-fire refinement method much, but the difficulty of refining water light Gu was too low, even with his rusty technique, he refined two hundred and seventy-seven. He was one Gu above the criteria for first place.

Fang Yuan’s exemplary performance made the sect leader of Five Virtues Sect come personally and greet him, apologizing for the poor attitude of that elder. Next, the sect leader vaguely hinted that he wanted to recruit Fang Yuan in a very tactful tone.

Fang Yuan rejected him directly, but this sect leader was not upset, he became even more polite as he sent Fang Yuan out, causing everyone around them to look on with much surprise.

To be able to get first place, this proved that his refinement path attainment was not low.

Regardless of his cultivation level, he would be welcomed and recruited by many forces. With just his refinement path attainment, Fang Yuan had the foundation to go anywhere in the mortal world and live in the lap of luxury.

Furthermore, didn’t Fang Yuan have rank five cultivation level?

Thus, the leader of Five Virtues Sect did not dare to offend Fang Yuan, he was very polite. Evidently, not only did this sect leader have a strong background, he even had good foresight, he could adapt to circumstances and place himself lowly, it was no wonder he could create a force like Five Virtues Sect.

But he would never guess that Fang Yuan was an immortal!

Compared to the endless number of mortals, immortals were too rare.

The leader of Five Virtues Sect had been overly worried, with Fang Yuan’s personality, even if that elder said worse things, Fang Yuan would be unmoved.

As long as they did not obstruct his path to eternal life, whether they scolded or praised him, Fang Yuan would not care about it at all, these were all just pointless talk.

There was still some time until the second round.

Fang Yuan left Five Virtues Sect and returned to Hu Immortal blessed land.

He stayed in Central Continent for one day, while three days and two nights had passed in Hu Immortal blessed land.

“Master, master, the thing you wanted earlier, I’ve prepared it already.” The moment Fang Yuan returned, Little Hu Immortal appeared, bringing him good news with an expression of ‘please praise me’ written on her face.

“Very good.” Fang Yuan patted Little Hu Immortal’s head, she was very happy, her eyes closed and relaxed.

Fang Yuan told the land spirit to prepare some mortal Gu worms, some were bought from treasure yellow heaven, while the others were refined by the hairy men in the stone nests.

Taking these mortal Gu, Fang Yuan mobilized a small amount of star will, they flew out of his mind, into his immortal aperture.

In his immortal aperture, Mo Yao’s fake will was imprisoned.

“Fang Yuan? What will is this?” Seeing Fang Yuan’s arrival, Mo Yao’s fake will felt something amiss.

Fang Yuan’s star will laughed, he did not speak but pounced at her.

Mo Yao’s will could not dodge in time, bang, the two wills collided, entangling with each other.

Mo Yao shouted in shock, she wanted to break free, she tried retreating.

“Where are you going?” Fang Yuan sneered, at his direction, several Gu worms flew out, forming a mortal killer move as they froze Mo Yao’s fake will in her place.

“Fang Yuan, you have to think it through! Ordinary wisdom path methods cannot control me!! If you force me to my limits, both of us will suffer!” Mo Yao’s fake will was immobilized, but she could still speak while under the attack of Fang Yuan’s star will.

Not only that, Mo Yao’s fake will was escaping like liquid water, she got the edge over Fang Yuan’s star will as she tried to form into a human shape again.

One could see that in this battle of wills, Mo Yao’s will had the advantage, her experience far surpassed Fang Yuan’s.

But Fang Yuan was not anxious upon seeing this, he willed and some more Gu worms flew out and formed a mortal killer move.

This killer move turned into a five-edged diamond, it attacked and scattered Mo Yao’s fake will.

Fang Yuan’s star will counterattacked.

Mo Yao’s fake will did not speak, she engaged in battle and tried to defend herself.

But at this time, Fang Yuan’s third killer move was used, it formed into a starlight spiral as it hit Mo Yao’s fake will.

Mo Yao’s fake will had lost control of the situation, she had no choice but to fight with Fang Yuan’s star will inside the starlight spiral.

As they merged, the two wills interacted rapidly.

Mo Yao’s fake will had countless memory fragments, Fang Yuan’s star will learned about them now. At the same time, the memories in Fang Yuan’s star will were read by Mo Yao’s fake will.

Amidst their interaction, Mo Yao screamed: “Fang Yuan, you are too foolish! You are too arrogant! In that case, so be it.”

Saying this, Mo Yao’s fake will shrunk rapidly, she was trying to suicide and destroy herself.

Fang Yuan chuckled, he had predicted this, he willed and a starlight pillar descended from the sky, onto the starlight spiral.

In the spiral, Mo Yao’s fake will tried to suicide as the fake will shrunk. But under the starlight’s radiance, fake will was continuously produced.

In fact, a portion of Fang Yuan’s star will was converting into fake will, replenishing her. This forced Mo Yao’s fake will to be at a certain size, she could not suicide even if she wanted to.

“Mo Yao, you are too naive. If you had accepted your fate and suicided earlier, I would have no way of stopping you at all. But now, you will die if I want you to, and if I want you to live, you have no way of dying. Be obedient and tell me everything that you know!” Fang Yuan laughed heartily.

Mo Yao’s fake will was in despair, Fang Yuan had obtained a method to suppress her so quickly. This was out of her expectations. By now, Mo Yao’s fake will knew that she would have no value to him soon, she knew that she could not escape her fate.

Just as Fang Yuan had said, if she had suicided earlier, Fang Yuan would not obtain anything.

But all living beings in this world had their survival instincts. Anyone would want to live, as long as there was hope, even Mo Yao’s will did not want to suicide.

A moment later, the battle ended in the immortal aperture, Fang Yuan’s star will returned with many benefits.

The remainder of Mo Yao’s will had lost her fighting spirit, she could not even form into a human shape. Fang Yuan had many arrangements and replenished her fake will, so that he could search her will again. The vigilant Fang Yuan also left behind many mortal Gu worms to immobilize Mo Yao’s will, so that she could not suicide.

Fang Yuan’s star will, which was fighting with Mo Yao, had less than thirty percent of its original mass after coming out. Seventy percent was expended earlier.

Fang Yuan’s star will flew into the sky, leaving the immortal aperture and flying up into Fang Yuan’s mind.

Fang Yuan shut his eyes, checking the details in the star will.

Searching souls and searching wills were different.

Searching souls was directly searching the soul, reading everything in their memories. Searching wills was using one’s own will to forcefully interact with another will. In this process, one had to use many methods to force the other party to comply.

Those who were not skilled at dealing with wills would have no gains in the end. Against different wills, the methods required were different. Thankfully, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance was very complete, after Fang Yuan studied it, Mo Yao’s will, which he had difficulty dealing with earlier, was meat on the chopping board.

Each time he searched a will, it needed to recuperate for a while, after all, wills were more fragile than souls.

What was worth mentioning was, there was less capacity for storing memories in wills than in souls, most of the memories were fragments.

But what Fang Yuan wanted the most were Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s inheritance clues. In this last search, Fang Yuan reached his goal.

“Red Lotus Demon Venerable, time path inheritance...” A while later, Fang Yuan opened his eyes, mumbling.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s inheritance was set in the river of time, Mo Yao did not know what the treasure in the inheritance was. She only knew that to inherit this unrivaled Demon Venerable inheritance, the first condition was to have Spring Autumn Cicada.

Not only this, the Gu Immortal had to self-detonate and use Spring Autumn Cicada to carry their will into the river of time. In the river of time, they had to search for a stone lotus island.

Only after they reach a stone lotus island would they see the will of Red Lotus left there.

“Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s inheritance, it is truly hard to obtain!” Fang Yuan sighed.

This was too difficult.

The rank six Spring Autumn Cicada, once activated, would self-detonate the Gu Master with a certain chance of success. To find Red Lotus’ will, one had to risk the chance of suicide.

Even if the Gu Master successfully enters the river of time, where would they go to find a stone lotus island?

Fang Yuan had entered the river of time before, even though he had three precious experiences, he did not find any stone lotus islands.

In other words, not only did the Gu Master need to self-detonate and use Spring Autumn Cicada to carry their will into the river of time, they had to manipulate Spring Autumn Cicada and swim in the river, searching for some stone lotus island.

Fang Yuan could not do that!

He currently was using Spring Autumn Cicada only as a passenger, he could not control the direction or route.

“To control Spring Autumn Cicada and reach this level, I need other methods for assistance. But I don’t have any.”

These methods would be time path methods, in this aspect, Fang Yuan was at a loss, he had nearly no knowledge in it.

Currently, if Fang Yuan wanted to obtain Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s inheritance, there was a long road to travel. He needed to make ample preparations.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s inheritance was in the river of time, it was extremely dangerous for him to try to obtain it.

Fang Yuan could only put Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s inheritance aside, for the time being, he was going to stay in Hu Immortal blessed land while waiting for the Refinement Path Convention’s second round. At the same time, he would use the light of wisdom to deduce the immortal killer move vaguely familiar face.

He had obtained vaguely familiar face in the Northern Plains auction, it was fifty percent complete. As for what the three core Immortal Gu were, the information was not concealed.

The problem was that Fang Yuan did not have these three core Immortal Gu, they were in another person’s possession. Immortal Gu were unique, if Fang Yuan wanted to use the killer move, vaguely familiar face, he would need to modify the move and change the core Immortal Gu to something else. The best situation would be an Immortal Gu he already owned.

This was very difficult, because in regards to transformation path and wisdom path, Fang Yuan’s attainment level was not very high.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 831: Still First Place

Central Continent, east coast.

Waves were rumbling, crashing into one another, frost energy oozed, creating white fog that covered hundreds of li.

Hundreds of years ago, a piece of profound ice floated over from somewhere, into Central Continent’s east coast. This profound ice was huge, it was like an island, it was overflowing with frost energy, many ice path wild Gu were gathered on it, the frost energy even got absorbed into nearby trees.

After the profound ice was found, it attracted a lot of commotion.

The Gu Masters living in the east coast tried to guess the origin of this profound ice.

There were two theories, one was that the profound ice came from far away in the east, it could have originated from Eastern Sea’s icy sea region. This sea region had low temperatures all year round, it was icy cold, streams of icy water flowed like dragons or snakes, coiling around deep in the sea. Once they reached close to the surface, they formed into huge pieces of ice.

The second theory was that white heaven had a crack and a piece of ice fell from it. The size of it should have been immensely larger at first. But as it fell, it melted due to the friction against the air, after it ended up in the sea, it cooled down and formed this profound ice island. The edges of this island were smooth and shiny, there were no rough edges, it resembled melted candles, attesting to the credibility of this theory.

This profound ice was beached on the sandy shore, it did not move.

At first, a large number of mortal Gu Masters were attracted and came to scour the place. These Gu Masters who enjoyed the benefits of being the closest and earliest to arrive all made great fortunes. The wild Gu and icy trees on the profound ice were all looted.

Over the next handful of years, more Gu Masters came to the profound ice, staying here permanently with no intention of leaving.

It turned out that although the profound ice island was lacking in resources, the profound ice was hard to melt, the frost energy it gave off made it the perfect place for ice path cultivators to stay in.

Central Continent’s east coast was tropical, it was warm all year round, it was hard for ice path Gu Masters to support cultivation. Thus, regarding this profound ice island, many ice path and water path Gu Masters were attracted here.

Places with humans have conflict, the island had limited capacity, as more people came, in order to defend their own interests, the Gu Masters on the island gathered into an alliance, creating a tight boundary around the ice island and preventing outsiders from coming in.

Thus, a moderately sized force was created.

After several hundred years of development, this loose lone cultivator alliance, due to several generations of ambitious leaders, slowly became more firmly structured, they formed a sect. As they developed, the sect grew larger, it was a large force now, there was no force in the surroundings that could match them.

This sect’s name was Flying Frost Sect. It hinted that the profound ice island that was the foundation of this sect came from far away, long ago in history.

The second round of competition of Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention was being held, one of the places was Flying Frost Sect.

Fang Yuan held the token as he came to Flying Frost Sect.

The task here was to refine the rank two ghost fire Gu. The rules had changed, it was no longer deciding the winner by quantity, but using time instead.

It asked the Gu Master to refine ten ghost fire Gu at once, Gu Masters using less time would get better positions. The specifications were listed, using fifteen minutes or less would be first place. Since this operated on a first come, first served basis, if someone gets first, then another person who beat the fifteen minute requirement would only get second. If second place was taken, they would only place third. If all three positions were taken, they would get no rewards.

This time, the reward for first place was five rank three ice path Gu worm recipes. For refinement path Gu Masters, ice path Gu Masters, or even large forces, this had a lot of attraction.

When Fang Yuan stepped into the hall to refine Gu, the first three positions were still open.

“The difficulty of the second round is much harder than the first round. It is not hard to refine ten ghost fire Gu one by one, I can easily use less than fifteen minutes. But the challenge is in refining ten ghost fire Gu at once. Ghost fire Gu is both a fire path and soul path Gu, the steps are quite tricky and complicated, they would expend a lot of mental energy, if I keep on refining them, over time, my soul will turn weak very easily. This is one of the special traits of soul path Gu worms.”

Fang Yuan considered it, he decided to use soul path and fire path techniques together to burn ghostly souls and create fake ghost fires, then using them to refine true ghost fires.

Flying Frost Sect was a righteous sect, Fang Yuan had to prepare the ghostly souls himself if he wanted to burn them. Flying Frost Sect would not provide such a Gu refinement material.

“Evil and unorthodox methods!” Seeing Fang Yuan’s technique, An Han, who was outside snorted.

The leader of Flying Frost Sect, who was managing the event on the stage, watched as his pupils shrunk, he thought: “Five Virtues Sect’s leader tried to gather this person but was rejected. This person is burning souls now in public, this is clearly a demonic act, he is an unscrupulous individual. Even if Flying Frost Sect recruits this person, we will only invite trouble, forget about it.”

Other than abiding by no fighting or killing, any Gu Master could join the Refinement Path Convention, be they righteous or demonic, there were no limitations that barred demonic path Gu Masters.

They could only use refinement path techniques to interact and compete. Precisely because of such freedom, the Refinement Path Convention was such a popular event.

People who did not know the true details would think that this was the magnanimity of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, but only people like Fang Yuan knew this was because of the Infallible inheritance. The Infallible inheritance had hidden requirements, the more Gu Masters that participated, the better.

But the righteous path and demonic path were different, Fang Yuan used souls to refine Gu, this was an evil and cruel act that would be despised by the righteous path.

The observing Gu Masters were mostly from the righteous path, seeing a demon like Fang Yuan, they felt a strong sense of distaste inside them, they did not want to see Fang Yuan’s Gu refinement succeed.

Maybe it was because of their collective wishes, at the crucial moment, the soul fire in front of Fang Yuan exploded, out of the ten ghost fire Gu that were about to form, one of them had turned into ash, falling from the fire and piling on the floor.

Everyone saw this and their eyes shined brightly, some indiscreet righteous path Gu Masters even made joyful exclamations. But immediately recalling Fang Yuan’s rank five cultivation level, they shut up, although the delight in their eyes could not be concealed.

An Han showed joy on his face as well.

Fang Yuan gave him huge pressure, according to his earlier progress, he was already on the last few steps before succeeding. Fang Yuan’s refinement speed was very fast, the souls were burning very effectively, if he passed the next few steps, he would be able to complete the refinement in less than fifteen minutes, the position of first place would go to Fang Yuan.

Of course, Fang Yuan had no interest regarding the reward and position.

An Han was different, he was the first elder of Flying Frost Sect, as the host, if he lost, he would lose face in front of his peers. Furthermore, getting first place in one of the rounds of the Refinement Path Convention was an extremely great glory for refinement path Gu Masters. Finally, the first place reward also enticed An Han greatly.

“Alright, this way, he would need to refine Gu again. If he refines nine ghost fire Gu, missing one would mean he would not pass. He can only restart from scratch and make ten more. He has to make them at the same time to pass.” An Han controlled his expression from changing, feeling great joy inwardly.

“Indeed, evil deeds lead to bad outcomes, even if he is using souls to refine Gu, he is still going to fail.”

“He reached first place in the first round at Five Virtues Sect, so be it. But here in Flying Frost Sect, first place has to go to Lord An Han!”

“Evil and unorthodox methods leading to Gu refinement failure, this is truly heartening.”

The surrounding people talked among themselves, the stage itself had a Gu formation that isolated sound, preventing the Gu Masters from being distracted.

But just when they were all rejoicing, the ghost fire in Fang Yuan’s hands split into two lumps.

Two lumps, one big and one small, inside the large lump were nine incomplete ghost fire Gu, while the small lump had nothing.

Fang Yuan’s expression did not change, he breathed in deeply as he finally became more serious.

Earlier, that ghost fire Gu had exploded not due to his own mistake, but because refining Gu had a chance of failure. Even though the failure rate of rank two Gu was not high, and he had already performed as well as possible, when a minor stroke of bad luck like that hit him, there was nothing he could do.

Now, he was holding the large lump of ghost fire and keeping it burning, while his other hand was throwing three souls into the small lump of ghost fire, a boar soul, a goat soul, and a human soul.

The three souls burned together, the small lump of ghost fire burst into life, there were pitiful cries of pain coming from within.

“He is using a human soul!”

“In broad daylight, he is publicly burning a human soul... this... this... this!”

“Hehehe, worthy of a demonic path rank five expert, being so rampant.”

Flying Frost Sect’s members had ugly expressions.

They were a righteous sect, Fang Yuan was burning a human soul to refine Gu here openly, he was totally disregarding Flying Frost Sect. But now was the Refinement Path Convention, even though Flying Frost Sect was unhappy, they could not stop Fang Yuan from refining Gu. Unless they wanted to offend the ten great ancient sects and cause the downfall of their own sect.

Fang Yuan’s expression was calm, he was focused on the small lump of ghost fire.

He continued to toss in Gu refinement materials, the ghost fire was turning between big and small from time to time, interchangeably between strong and weak. When he got to a crucial step in the middle, he tossed in a fire pellet Gu at lightning speed, as well as a soul ball Gu.

The two Gu worms fused in the fire, they combined into one and created an incomplete ghost fire Gu.

Some knowledgeable Gu Masters saw this and gasped loudly.

“Tossing in two Gu worms consecutively, this is the refinement path technique — consecutive toss.”

“Even though consecutive toss is one of the basic refinement path techniques, this person is using it so well with much experience, it is almost like this is as easy as breathing to him. This is not something that talent alone can achieve, countless sessions of practice and hard work are needed to reach such a stage.”

“Does this person cultivate refinement path as his main path?”

“Hard to say! When he signed up, he kept his sect and path a secret. He is a true demonic cultivator, he should not have a sect, his path is quite possibly refinement path.”

Everyone made guesses.

Of course, they were completely off.

Fang Yuan’s main path was strength path, it had nothing to do with refinement path. He also had a proper status in a sect, being in a subsidiary force of Immortal Crane Sect, one of the ten great ancient sects.

If everyone knew that the ruthless demon in front of them was a member of Immortal Crane Sect, who knew what expressions they would show.

A short while later, Fang Yuan succeeded in saving his refinement attempt, the two lumps of ghost fires fused into one.

The last few steps were done smoothly without any additional mishaps.

Eventually, the ghost fire burst out and scattered, ten ghost fire Gu flew out together.

Outside the stage, not a person spoke.

The expression of the elder of Flying Frost Sect was dark, he announced helplessly: “Refinement succeeded, using less than fifteen minutes, the first place of this round of the competition goes to — Fang Yuan.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 832: Senior Fang Yuan, I want to duel you!

Fang Yuan quietly stood up under everyone’s gazes, slowly walking out of the stage.

“Such deep foundation in refinement path! He can actually do two tasks at once, he slowed down the refinement speed of the nine incomplete ghost fire Gu while restarting the refinement of the final ghost fire Gu with extremely high speed. Refining ghost fire Gu consumes a lot of mental energy, but he still seems energetic even now, could it be that he has cultivated soul path or wisdom path as well?” An Han was shocked and uncertain.

“First elder, first elder?” A disciple beside An Han reminded him in a soft voice.

“What is it?” An Han came back to his senses, he could not help but feel embarrassed. Unknowingly, he had stood up from his seat, such a loss of composure was really damaging to his reputation.

At this moment, Flying Frost Sect’s leader looked at An Han.

This was the Refinement Path Convention, they naturally had to use refinement path to restore their reputation.

An Han’s heart skipped a beat as he realized the sect leader’s intention, he had no choice but to comply.

Seeing their first elder taking action, the spectating Flying Frost Sect disciples applauded loudly, they no longer had the earlier listless expressions.

Even outsiders could not help but cast optimistic gazes when they saw the famous An Han exiting the stage.

Among the crowd, however, were some people with discerning eyes.

An old Gu Master sighed softly: “This An Han’s situation doesn’t look good.”

“Why is that the case, master?” A youth, standing beside the old Gu Master, asked with confusion.

This master and disciple pair was the same pair of lone cultivators who had been walking beside Fang Yuan during the registration at Five Virtues Sect, and had been pushed to the side by the burly men making way for An Han.

“That demonic path Gu Master, Fang Yuan, is extremely terrifying. He has a high refinement path attainment level, his method just now involved far more than just doing two tasks at once. To do what he did, even I could only accomplish it back when I was in my peak condition. Outsiders cannot see the difficulty in this, the more proficient the refinement path Gu Master is, the more they would be aware of it. This An Han also has extraordinary skills, but because of this, he understands even more that he cannot win against this demonic cultivator, Fang Yuan. Did you see how unsettled he looked when he stood up, it was because in his mind, he has already been intimidated by Fang Yuan.”

The old Gu Master spoke with assurance, but with a soft voice: “In this state, if he tries to refine Gu, he might not be able to even show half of his true skills. Most crucially, Fang Yuan has already taken the first spot, even if An Han tries harder, this won’t change. That is, unless he can use a new method to finish the task in far less time than Fang Yuan, then he can earn back the reputation that Flying Frost Sect lost. But if he had such talent, he would not have remained in Flying Frost Sect for so many years.”

The young Gu Master nodded his head repeatedly in praise: “Master, you are right. The sect leader of Flying Frost Sect is not an expert in Gu refinement, the move he is making now is a mistake due to his thirst for success. It is like what master taught me, one cannot rush for quick results and be anxious when refining Gu. It seems that managing a sect also has the same logic.”

The old Gu Master’s eyes brightened and looked at his only disciple with satisfaction: “Not bad, disciple, you are truly talented, you have great ability in comprehension. The fact is, all paths lead to the Great Dao. You were able to use the logic of Gu refinement and look at other aspects, it looks like your refinement path attainment has already reached a certain mastery level, you can definitely achieve success in this second competition.”

The young Gu Master smiled: “This is all because of master teaching me unreservedly. If I was not picked out by master, I would have already starved to death. My accomplishments today are all because of master nurturing me. Disciple had a well-thought out plan and could have captured first place by using just thirteen Gu refinement techniques. But now, first place is already taken by that demonic path Gu Master. Master, let disciple seize that green shine Gu for you.”

“What?” The old master was greatly startled, quickly blocking him: “Disciple, don’t!”

But it was already too late.

Youth knows no fear, the young Gu Master shouted loudly: “Senior Fang Yuan, may I be so bold as to request a duel with you!”

The entire conversation between the master and disciple seemed to have taken a long time, but only a few moments had passed.

Fang Yuan had just left the stage and had not gone far because he still needed to receive the first place reward from Flying Frost Sect. At the other end, An Han had stood up and was about to step onto the stage.

The young Gu Master’s words caused a huge commotion that immediately attracted everyone’s attention.

“There’s a duel, they’re going to duel!”

“Who is that young man, he actually dares to duel with that rank five demon?”

“I know him, he was second place at Five Virtues Sect, he is a genuine refinement path genius.”

“A young tiger does not fear an old lion’s might, this will be a good show to watch!”

The old master had a pale expression, he could no longer stop this and could do nothing, he was feeling extremely worried and regretful deep inside: ‘I only made efforts to impart refinement path knowledge to my disciple and forgot to teach him the dangers of worldly affairs. This is my mistake, I should not have neglected it!”

Meanwhile, the young Gu Master, under everyone’s gazes, walked slowly with his head held high, leaving the crowd and appearing in front of Fang Yuan with a shining gaze and firm expression.

The first elder, An Han, had just stepped into the spotlight, when such a situation occurred. All of the determination that he had just built up left him like a leaking balloon.

He normally was a famous person, his every move would attract attention. But today was really difficult for him, he had made a fool of himself and was now ignored by the crowd, he was furious and hateful.

“Duel? Who wants to duel me?” Fang Yuan smiled slightly and turned around to look at the challenger.

Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention was held once every hundred years, it was a grand event in all the five regions. Competitions were divided into large-scale and small-scale.

Fang Yuan was currently participating in the large-scale competition of the five regions, which was the competition of the largest scale. First, the registration spots everywhere in Central Continent would eliminate large numbers of Gu Master through various rounds, finally, only a handful of participants could participate in the final contest.

Small-scale competitions were often held in each region, according to past conventions, they were divided into Central Continent small-scale competitions, Southern Border small-scale competitions, Northern Plains, Eastern Sea, and Western Desert. These competitions were divided according to the geographical origins, and were rather official.

There were also many other small-scale competitions, for instance at the east coast which would be jointly held by Flying Frost Sect, Five Virtues Sect and others. The eliminated Gu Masters from the large-scale competition could participate in these small-scale competitions of east coast.

The largest number of small-scale competitions were held by small circles of people. For instance, three to five friends would set a time, put out wagers or simply have a friendly contest with no rewards.

The competitions could be further divided into open and private. Open battles could naturally be observed by others. But most of them sent invitations in advance, inviting limited number of distinguished guests to enjoy or evaluate. Private battles did not allow spectators and the results were also not publicized.

Large-scale competitions were the most open battles, they did not restrict anyone from viewing but forbid the spectators from using any Gu worms.

Every time Central Continent held the Refinement Path Convention, it would create a trend of Gu refinement flourishing everywhere in Central Continent. It was similar to the Earth’s world cup, the grand event of football that was held every four years. Often, at this time, even those who did not play football would try to play a bit of it. Those who did not pay attention to football, would also give some attention to the matches.

In this world, Gu refinement was one of the three great aspects of Gu Master cultivation, it was much more significant than the sport for entertainment, football. Thus, the Gu refinement trend it created was even larger and lasted longer. In this time, experiences and insights related to Gu refinement were greatly interchanged, largely pushing forward the growth of refinement path, thus, almost every participating Gu Master would reap some benefits.

According to the different formats, the Refinement Path Convention could be divided into sect contests, duels, task contests, arena contests and so on.

Sect contests were contests where two or more sects sent similar numbers of refinement path Gu Masters to compete in Gu refinement. Generally speaking, sect contests were used to solve conflicts of interests.

In task contests, one side would give a difficult problem while the other side had to solve it.

In arena contests, the Gu Masters who were very skilled at certain areas of Gu refinement would set the arena and invite refinement path experts from all parties to compete. The arena organizer would put forward a wager, and each challenger also had to put up a wager. These arena contests often had plentiful amounts of rewards.

As for duels? They were what Fang Yuan was encountering right now.

“It is this junior who wants to duel.” The young Gu Master walked towards Fang Yuan, his expression was neither haughty nor humble.

Fang Yuan sized him up, and felt some interest when he saw the youth in high spirits: “Lad, since you want to duel, then bet something that can interest me. Otherwise, I won’t duel.”

Fang Yuan naturally had the right to refuse the duel, the Refinement Path Convention allowed duels but did not have an unreasonable rule that said one had to accept duels no matter what.

The young Gu Master gave a serious nod: “I have a rank five Gu worm’s recipe with me. Senior, you are a rank five expert, this Gu recipe will suit you. This junior wants to bet against the rank four green shine Gu you won.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “Green shine Gu is a rare rank four Gu, its value is equal to normal rank five Gu. But lad, do you know what my path is? Are you certain the Gu recipe you are betting suits my path?”

The young Gu Master was stunned: “Senior, aren’t you in refinement path?” Judging from his words, the Gu recipe he was betting was a refinement path Gu recipe.

Fang Yuan chuckled: “My main cultivation path is naturally not refinement path. Lad, you are actually using only one Gu recipe to bet against my rare rank four Gu. Do you not know that if the refinement of a rank five Gu fails, even people at my level can be injured. You are trying to harm me like this but still think I am stupid enough to agree to your conditions?”

The young Gu Master gulped a few times, but he could not say anything. For a while, he stood motionless on the spot.

His master quickly hurried over and gave a deep bow to Fang Yuan: “Since sir is refusing the duel, then we won’t duel.”

“What, no duel?” The spectators jeered, as they were going to miss a good show.

“The first place position holder of Five Virtues Sect competition, the mysterious demonic cultivator, Fang Yuan, and the second place position holder, the young Gu Master Zheng Shan Chuan, the battle between dragon and tiger is not going to be held because of insufficient betting capital? Come, come, let us all lend a hand, a pile of rocks can build a mountain.” A nosy individual suggested.

“There is no need, it was my disciple’s rashness. Thank you everyone, thank you.” The old master was frightened and quickly bowed to everyone, cupping his hands to salvage this situation.

An Han’s eyes flashed ominously, he immediately sent out his instructions in a quiet voice. Soon, someone among the crowd put forward some resources, many others responded and started to contribute one after another, urging this duel to continue.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 833: Shan Chuan Hall Creator

The atmosphere on the stage was getting more intense, Fang Yuan and the young Gu Master, Zheng Shan Chuan, could no longer avoid this issue.

The elderly master also noticed that most of the Gu Masters encouraging this came from Flying Frost Sect, his wrinkles became deeper, as he showed a bitter expression.

Fang Yuan thought about the name ‘Zheng Shan Chuan’, he felt that it was familiar. But as an immortal zombie, his mind was not as sharp as if he was a living person, he could not remember it instantly.

He stopped the star thoughts in his mind and activated memory thoughts to excavate his memories.

He finally remembered.

As it turns out, in Central Continent’s east coast, hundreds of years later, there was a super force called Shan Chuan Hall. Its creator was named Zheng Shan Chuan. Shan Chuan Hall was skilled in refinement path, when dream realms manifested and dream path was flourishing, Shan Chuan Hall’s leader benefited alongside the trends of that age and became a Gu Immortal.

But during that great era, mortals becoming Gu Immortals was nothing special. Especially after dream realms appeared, there were countless opportunities given to ordinary Gu Masters. Dragons and snakes were hiding in bushes, most of them only lacked an opportunity.

The manifestation of dream realms gave people their fortuitous encounters. During the five regions chaotic war, large numbers of Gu Masters at the bottom of the hierarchy were given a chance to rise up.

In the midst of the five regions chaotic war, all sorts of people emerged, they were numerous like the stars in the sky, they all had their stories. The ten great ancient sects gradually lost control, with the rise of many forces, including ten outstanding ones who called themselves the ten new great sects, they opposed the ten ancient sects openly, it was quite the spectacle.

Unlike now, where the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent had control over the situation in Central Continent, even if super forces which had Gu Immortals wanted to separate from the ten ancient sects, and free themselves from the status of a subsidiary, it was difficult.

“In accordance with this time period, don’t tell me that this Zheng Shan Chuan in front of me is the creator of Shan Chuan Hall? Since he could reach second place in Five Virtues Sect, he definitely has master level attainment in refinement path. Being a refinement path master at such a young age, he truly is a genius. This fits the description of Zheng Shan Chuan as well, a great teacher produces great students, this old man must be Old Man Qi Shan.”

“Old Man Qi Shan was secretly poisoned by someone, it had been causing him great torment, Zheng Shan Chuan was filial, he tried all ways to heal his master. That’s right, green shine Gu is among the best healing Gu for treating heat toxins. Unfortunately even Old Man Qi Shan did not know that the poison in him was a transforming poison. On the surface, it was a heat toxin, but after using green shine Gu, it would become a cold poison, the toxicity would intensify, becoming at least twice as severe. But eventually, Zheng Shan Chuan succeeded in treating his master’s poison, he gathered green shine Gu, blue shine Gu, red shine Gu, and others up to a total of nine types of shine Gu, forming the killer move nine shine, it could subdue all sorts of poisons. Later, his bloodline descendant became a Gu Immortal, being Shan Chuan Hall’s leader, promoting this killer move and changing it into the immortal killer move profound light nine shine, he became a light path healing expert, becoming quite famous during the five regions chaotic war.”

Fang Yuan used memory thoughts to excavate his memories, he quickly remembered these minute details that were deep in his memories.

He understood everything going on around him, including An Han’s schemes, after observing for a while, he felt that these two people were Old Man Qi Shan and Zheng Shan Chuan.

He used luck inspection Gu on the two of them.

Flying Frost Sect was a test location for the Refinement Path Convention, there were Gu worms set up to prevent Gu Masters from using their Gu worms casually.

But Fang Yuan had an immortal zombie body, he had strength path dao marks on his body, and his immortal aperture was part of his body, when he used luck inspection Gu, these mortals were defenseless.

Immediately, Fang Yuan saw the luck of these two. Above his head, Zheng Shan Chuan’s luck was like a seven colored rainbow, bright and imposing, it was out of the norm. Meanwhile, Old Man Qi Shan’s luck was like a broken jade bowl, traces of grey luck were leaking out of the bowl.

Old Man Qi Shan’s luck was terrible, but Zheng Shan Chuan was intimately linked with him, the luck of the two were joined together.

The seven colored rainbow luck split out a portion of itself into Old Man Qi Shan’s jade bowl luck, causing his grey luck to be moderated to a large extent.

Fang Yuan felt interested, musing: “To think that I would encounter the creator of Shan Chuan Hall here, if I kill him, in several hundred years, the east coast would not have a super force called Shan Chuan Hall.”

The moment Fang Yuan had killing intent, the luck of the both of them wavered, it was like a huge wind was blowing, causing the rainbow light to fade and be on the verge of destruction.

“But what benefit would I get if I do that? Northern Plains is already in chaos thanks to me, but that was not my intention, it was all because of Mo Yao’s fake will. But who am I going to explain that to? I will leave Zheng Shan Chuan alive, these people should continue on their original paths so that my rebirth advantage can be maintained.” Fang Yuan thought again.

When Fang Yuan was in Northern Plains, he knew about Ma Hong Yun, but he did not kill him.

This was not fear, this was the ambition of a demonic overlord.

In his previous life, he was a rank six Gu Immortal, only a step from rank seven, but it was mostly due to his fortuitous encounters, he had actually wasted a lot of time during his life.

Fang Yuan had self-confidence, even if these people grow up or even achieve greater accomplishments than in his memories, Fang Yuan could still contest with them and gain profits! He could even stomp on these people, carving out a path of blood as he sprints towards eternal life.

As to whether eternal life really existed or not, did that matter?

Even if he died along the way, would there be regret?

This was the life that Fang Yuan wanted to live, it was full of challenge, fun, and bitterness. Other than that, beauty, wealth, and authority were all nothing more than tools that he could make use of.

Fang Yuan thought about this and his killing intent towards this pair of master and disciple dissipated.

Immediately, he saw that the luck of Zheng Shan Chuan and Old Man Qi Shan recovered back to their original points, it was even vaguely greater than before.

“Luck path is truly mystical.” Fang Yuan saw this and sighed inwardly.

Recently, he had a greater understanding of luck path — luck was not omnipotent, it largely depended on one’s strength and cultivation level.

A thought from Fang Yuan could change the luck of the two of them. This was because he was an immortal zombie, killing the two of them was as easy as killing ants.

Back then, Ma Hong Yun had many people going after him, but he instead turned danger into blessings. But now that he was in Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s hands, he could not turn the situation around. The rank eight Fortune Rivaling Heaven could not make up for the huge difference in their strength. Or rather, Old Ancestor Xue Hu, as a rank eight great expert, had the power to suppress it.

There was also Hu Immortal blessed land’s calamity, Fang Yuan used time assist luck, in the end, because of Connect Luck, the increase in luck was split into four and Fang Yuan only kept one portion. The three of them had their gains and fortuitous opportunities, while Fang Yuan barely had any. That was because Fang Yuan was too strong, he was already an immortal, he needed much more good luck to obtain the same benefits as them, it was much more difficult to influence him than mortals!

On the stage, more and more clamoring could be heard, the urging of the crowd drew more and more people to join in, those in Flying Frost Sect no longer had to steer this matter.

Fang Yuan waved his hand: “We can duel, but I have no interest in these things. If I lose, I will give you green shine Gu. But if you lose, I want you to be my slave, and be under my command for life.”

“Ah! Disciple, you cannot agree.” Old Man Qi Shan’s face paled as he shouted.

Everyone looked at each other, this was a great plan by Fang Yuan, the other party was a refinement path genius, he had a bright future. If he won, he would obtain a refinement path master level slave!

“Senior, isn’t this request too much?” Zheng Shan Chuan was young, but he would not agree so easily. After all, his future was at stake, this would affect his whole life.

“Of course you can reject me, but I will tell you now, if you do not use yourself as the wager, I will not duel.” Fang Yuan sneered, saying: “Do you think there are a lots of green shine Gu around? This is the perfect Gu for treating heat toxins. Lad, the tree may wish to be yet the wind continues to blow, the son wants to fulfil his duty but his parents are no longer around. Time waits for no man, often, the opportunity is right in front of you, if you miss it, you will regret it for life.”

“Does this person know that my master is afflicted with heat toxins?” Zheng Shan Chuan was shocked, these words from Fang Yuan like ‘the son wants to fulfil his duty but his parents are no longer around,’ and ‘if you miss it, you will regret it for life,’ were affecting him greatly.

“Disciple, you must not agree to the duel! We can think of another way!!” Old Man Qi Shan’s expression was grim, he was an experienced person, Fang Yuan’s words were like bait, he had evil intentions, he was trying to trick a young and inexperienced person like Zheng Shan Chuan.

“The duel is their matter, outsiders are not to interfere.” A Flying Frost Sect elder came over, his face was austere as he spoke to Fang Yuan and Zheng Shan Chuan: “Both of you have disrupted the competition, are you going to duel? If you are duelling, our sect’s first elder is magnanimous and is willing to give you an area to compete in. Please decide quickly.”

Old Man Qi Shan felt an alarm blaring inside him, he was about to speak but Fang Yuan said: “Lad, I am giving you this opportunity because I am touched by your filial piety. If you miss it, in the future, I will not agree to any duels even if you ask me. I will not bully a kid like you, I will give you a chance, you can propose the duel task.”

“What, senior, you are letting me choose?!” Zheng Shan Chuan was moved.

Originally, the duel would be initiated by one party, and both sides would put up a wager. But the content of the duel would need to be agreed upon by both sides. If they refined a Gu that one party was familiar with, while the other has not refined it before, that would not be fair.

Now, Fang Yuan was letting Zheng Shan Chuan choose, that was to say, Zheng Shan Chuan could use his forte and trouble Fang Yuan, he could only accept it with no way to change the task.

Once he said that, the surrounding Gu Masters gasped, they were thinking that Fang Yuan was too arrogant, their money was on the young Gu Master, Zheng Shan Chuan, now.

“Disciple, do not duel, our real business is on the competition...” Old Man Qi Shan continued to urge him. Even though Zheng Shan Chuan had a huge advantage, this old man was still worrying, he did not want any mishaps to happen to his disciple.

But Zheng Shan Chuan was a young man, he was hot-blooded.

“Master’s heat toxins are very severe, it will be too late if we do not treat it soon. The other party is so arrogant, he is looking down on my age! The Gu I am most familiar with is careful Gu. This Gu is a specialty of ours, it is rank three and has many complex steps, the techniques needed for it are numerous, I spent three years, putting in so much hard work, only now having an eighty percent chance of success. I will duel him with this!”

Thinking of this, Zheng Shan Chuan made up his mind, saying to Fang Yuan: “I will duel!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 834: Refinement Path Killer Move, Spinning Golden Bell

“Disciple!!” Old Man Qi Shan was extremely anxious.

Zheng Shan Chuan turned around and faced Old Man Qi Shan, on his young face, his eyes were bright and clear: “Master, I am unfilial, I will have to go against your wishes. Master, he is letting me pose the problem, this is a huge advantage, I have no reason not to duel! If under such conditions, I refuse to duel, this will become a scar in my heart, would I have any courage to progress further in refinement path?”

Old Man Qi Shan heard his words and fell into silence.

He sighed inwardly: ‘Oh, disciple, you have little experience of the world, you do not know the deviousness of men. Since the other party is relenting to this extent, he is definitely confident of winning, he has his trump cards. You have been fooled! It is a pity, it is regretful, I am old and weak now, the situation has already been set, I cannot do anything to stop it.’

On the surface, Old Man Qi Shan stretched out his hand, grabbing Zheng Shan Chuan’s shoulder: “Disciple, I understand your filial intentions. Alright, you can make your own decision, I will support you on this. Use careful Gu as the duel task, we will not bet on the success of the Gu refinement, but the time! Whoever refines careful Gu first will win!”

“Master!” Zheng Shan Chuan was so touched his eyes turned red.

Careful Gu was the sole secret inheritance of Old Man Qi Shan, it was not circulated to the outside world. To support his disciple, Old Man Qi Shan took out this precious Gu recipe, allowing his opponent, Fang Yuan, to see it.

He even suggested that they competed in terms of time. This was Fang Yuan’s first time refining careful Gu, he would not be familiar with it, if they competed using time, he would face more pressure than just needing success. As expected, the old were the wisest.

Fang Yuan allowed his opponent to choose the Gu, he gave a huge advantage to him, he was in a passive situation.

Zheng Shan Chuan hesitated for a moment, he felt that his master’s suggestion was taking advantage of his opponent, even if he won, it was not a glorious win.

But he immediately thought about the fact that this matter involved his master’s safety. Even if he won unfairly, he needed to win the green shine Gu!

Thus, he turned around and gave his decision to the Flying Frost Sect elder.

Flying Frost Sect quickly arranged it, first elder An Han was overjoyed, he took the initiative to leave, giving them the venue in his place.

Fang Yuan and Zheng Shan Chuan went onto the stage, engaging in their duel.

The surroundings went quiet.

Both parties were dozens of steps away from each other, sitting on the ground.

Zheng Shan Chuan first took out the Gu recipe of careful Gu and gave it to Fang Yuan.

Soon, Flying Frost Sect announced the commencement of this duel.

Below the stage, discussions could be heard.

“I’ve never heard of careful Gu, it is a definitely their specialty Gu recipe. That Fang Yuan only has had a short time to look at it before the duel started, isn’t this going overboard?”

“Hehe, this is Fang Yuan’s fault for being too arrogant, he allowed the opponent to choose the Gu, he made a really stupid decision!”

“The young Gu Master is not simple, he was second place in the previous round, but his score was good enough to hit first place. Many people are guessing that he is a refinement path master.”

Hearing this, many people scoffed: “How is this possible? How old is he, at this age, he is already a refinement path master? In that case, with my age, have I been living like a dog all this time?”

But as the competition progressed, under everyone’s watchful gazes, Zheng Shan Chuan used nearly ten Gu refinement techniques with extremely skilful manipulation, it was a dazzling sight.

Among the spectators, those who guessed that Zheng Shan Chuan had master level refinement path attainment soared in numbers.

But Fang Yuan was still researching the Gu recipe, he had not started the Gu refinement.

Looking at this, the crowd did not think well of Fang Yuan.

“Oh no.” Old Man Qi Shan frowned: “This person has such a calm nature, he is trying to decipher each step before refining the Gu. This is the demeanor of an expert, calm under any situation! Thankfully, I used time as the factor, whoever refines the Gu first wins. The process of refining careful Gu is complex, he cannot win unless he is familiar with the Gu recipe, and has practiced with it more than Little Chuan.”

That was impossible, of course.

This was the first time Fang Yuan had seen this careful Gu recipe.

Careful Gu was, strictly speaking, a wisdom path Gu worm, but it had a huge use in refinement path. Fang Yuan guessed that this was the core Gu in Zheng Shan Chuan’s inheritance.

History had recorded that Shan Chuan Hall’s Gu Masters were most skilled at refining those Gu worms which had crucial steps that directly affected the success rate of the refinement.

Careful Gu was best in assisting the refinement path Gu Master to settle these problems.

After Fang Yuan looked at the recipe several times, he understood it deeply and could use it properly. He was a refinement path quasi-grandmaster, it was not hard to understand a rank three Gu recipe.

In truth, not only did he read the Gu recipe, he also observed Zheng Shan Chuan’s techniques.

Zheng Shan Chuan was already at the middle part of the Gu refinement, Fang Yuan had watched the first part closely.

Even Fang Yuan had to nod his head in acknowledgement, with Zheng Shan Chuan’s age, it was very hard to get to his level. But as a refinement path quasi-grandmaster, Fang Yuan could see that his techniques were not skilled enough, there were still flaws when he dealt with the materials.

Fang Yuan stretched out his hands and started to refine the Gu.

“He is finally refining the Gu.” Outside the stage, quiet mocking voices could be heard.

“He is not anxious at all.” Someone evaluated impartially.

Fang Yuan started to refine the Gu, it attracted Zheng Shan Chuan’s gaze. But he only took one look before concentrating on his own task again.

Fang Yuan started Gu refinement, he went through it step by step, all of the bystanders were staring in disdain, these were Zheng Shan Chuan’s techniques.

But soon, Fang Yuan made some modifications, he used a different technique, and his Gu refinement speed got faster.

The mocking sounds in the crowd vanished, everyone watching his hands moving at lightning speed in shock.

“He has already used more than ten Gu refinement techniques!”

“Such experienced Gu refinement techniques with deep foundation, he is unfathomable.”

“He is getting faster, he is chasing up to Zheng Shan Chuan...”

Old Man Qi Shan frowned tightly, he was shocked inwardly: “This person’s speed is not scary, the problem is, he is fast without any anxiety, his techniques are so calm and collected. Impressive, very impressive, this person’s refinement path attainment is probably not just master level! Little Chuan is going to feel pressure, he cannot lose control of himself and become anxious. Careful Gu gets harder as the refinement proceeds, Little Chuan has the advantage, he needs to maintain it. The enemy is strong, if he loses his bearings, he is bound to lose!”

Zheng Shan Chuan’s pressure was high indeed.

This was very normal, in running competitions, the person at the very front has the greatest mental pressure. Thus, many strategies revolved around conserving energy, only attempting to go all out at the end.

The greater the mental pressure, the greater the burden on the body. Especially when Zheng Shan Chuan was seeing Fang Yuan refining Gu rapidly and catching up to him, he could not help but be flustered.

“Such ability! He used more than ten refinement techniques, and he is still continuing. His mind is too strong, I cannot compete with him on this. Oh no, he is catching up...” Zheng Shan Chuan was a youngster, Fang Yuan’s rapid speed was making his mouth dry, his heart was pounding.

His gaze was firm: “Forget it, I’ll use my trump card and leave you in the dust!”

Zheng Shan Chuan made up his mind, his refinement speed slowed, his mind entered his aperture as he activated his Gu worms.

“Is Little Chuan going to...” The master and disciple had great mutual understanding, after seeing his actions, Old Man Qi Shan understood Zheng Shan Chuan’s plan, he became nervous.

“Zheng Shan Chuan’s Gu refinement speed is slowing.” Soon, the spectators noticed this change.

“Are the steps ahead going to be very difficult, he needs to recompose himself?” Many people were making guesses, they did not know the recipe of careful Gu, they were inaccurate in their conjectures.

At this time, Zheng Shan Chuan breathed in deeply, his eyes shined with a golden light as his body was covered in a golden glow.

He stretched out his right hand rapidly, his open palm was facing down and pressing heavily.

In an instant, all of the golden light in his eyes and body gathered on his right hand.

The golden light condensed and formed into a small golden bell.

The golden bell spun slowly, covering all of the fire in which the refinement was occurring, it became faster and faster as it emitted a suction force.

The Gu refinement materials that were gathered on the floor were all sucked into the golden bell.

The golden bell only lasted for six breaths of time before it faded.

But at the next moment, before everyone’s eyes, an incomplete careful Gu was formed.

The crowd was in a commotion.

“This is a refinement path killer move!”

“Refinement path killer moves can be considered rarer than killer moves of other paths, Zheng Shan Chuan is still so young, yet he already knows a refinement path killer move.”

“What is most precious is that he actually succeeded in using it. This lad’s talent is incredible, his future is unpredictable.”

“Fang Yuan is in danger, he has the ability, but he was too careless.”

“Hmph, Zheng Shan Chuan already had such a huge advantage, but he still used a killer move, it was all for victory, he is really stopping at nothing. In my opinion, even if Fang Yuan loses this, it was not disgraceful.”

Zheng Shan Chuan let out a breath of turbid air, his expression was spirited: “I am definitely winning! I used my killer move and instantly grinded six Gu refinement materials, I completed the longest step in this Gu refinement already, I am way ahead of Fang Yuan now!”

Old Man Qi Shan’s heart settled: “Even if Fang Yuan has a similar refinement path killer move, this is his first time refining careful Gu, he has zero experience. The usual procedure for this is to refine the six materials one by one while controlling the fire meticulously. If he uses a killer move to rush it, he would be causing his own doom. Even though Little Chuan took a risk, it was a good decision, he is definitely going to win.”

The other Gu Masters were not familiar with careful Gu, they did not understand the situation. But Fang Yuan was in dire straits, any person could tell.

By completing this step in advance, he really did solidify his victory. Zheng Shan Chuan stabilized his emotions and continued to refine Gu. His technique was fast and stable, he did not give Fang Yuan a chance.

Fang Yuan was unmoved, he started to slowly refine the six materials, slowly boiling them as he refined the materials.

This step was not hard at all, it was just time consuming.

But Fang Yuan was not anxious in the least.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 835: Promise of Three Matters

Time passed, Zheng Shan Chuan was finally at the last few steps of the refinement, the incomplete Gu worm in the fire was becoming more clear.

To play safe, he looked at Fang Yuan again, he saw that Fang Yuan had just finished the previous step, he had fused the six materials together.

By this point, Zheng Shan Chuan has to admire Fang Yuan’s calmness: “It is a pity, I am the victor of this duel. I will definitely get this green shine Gu!!”

Zheng Shan Chuan was oozing with confidence, but when he retracted his gaze, Fang Yuan suddenly laughed loudly: “Hahaha, Zheng Shan Chuan, you lost, look at my refinement path killer move!”

“What?” Zheng Shan Chuan’s heart shuddered, he immediately turned to look at Fang Yuan.

Only to see that Fang Yuan took out a Gu worm and squashed it.

Instantly, Zheng Shan Chuan’s pupils shrunk to the size of pins, as he was about to jump.

He screamed at Fang Yuan angrily: “You! You actually destroyed green shine Gu!!”

As he said this, the fire in his hands became unstable, it went out of control and exploded.

The explosion was not intense, but after it occurred, Zheng Shan Chuan’s clean face was covered in soot, he was like charcoal, it was a sad sight.

Zheng Shan Chuan was stunned on the spot, he froze like a statue.

Such a huge change had occurred in mere moments!

Everyone outside was silent for a few breaths before reacting, they were all shocked, their voices overlapped and caused a huge wave of chattering.

“What a ruthless demonic path Gu Master!!”

“He directly destroyed green shine Gu, causing Zheng Shan Chuan to lose control and fail the Gu refinement, all his hard work was wasted!”

“This Fang Yuan is too good at scheming, he flipped the situation around instantly. Zheng Shan Chuan failed and has to restart the refinement now. Fang Yuan’s advantage is too great now, even if Zheng Shan Chuan repeats the process, he cannot catch up to Fang Yuan.”

“Most importantly, he only destroyed his own Gu, this cannot be determined as him maliciously interfering with his opponent!”

“Oh no, oh no! He actually did this, this actually happened!” Old Man Qi Shan was flustered.

Zheng Shan Chuan suffered a huge blow, he took a long while before recovering.

When he regained control of his mental state and restarted the Gu refinement, Fang Yuan was at the last step already.

This duel no longer had any surprises, Fang Yuan was the eventual winner.

“Exciting, this was too exciting.” The spectators were commenting with much enthusiasm.

“Zheng Shan Chuan was too young and naive, he lost his bright future now. Sigh...” Some people felt pity.

Of course, some people were happy, for example, An Han, but he was the first elder of a righteous sect, he could only be happy in secret, he had to express his sympathy towards Zheng Shan Chuan’s fate on the outside.

The duel was over, Fang Yuan stood up as Zheng Shan Chuan stared at the flame in his hands blankly.

He lost!

He lost his life, his bright future to a mysterious demonic path Gu Master in a duel.

How could this be? What should he do?

Zheng Shan Chuan felt that his future was bleak, there was no hope.

“Senior, please spare him! Both of us had eyes but failed to recognize Mount Tai, we offended senior. Please be magnanimous, my disciple is still young and innocent, please let him go. I am willing to replace him and contribute all of my savings in exchange for his freedom. Please have mercy on us, please spare us!”

Old Man Qi Shan knelt on the ground, kowtowing to Fang Yuan non stop.

The old man’s head hit the floor, causing a wave of loud thudding sounds, his face was covered in blood.

“Master, master!” Zheng Shan Chuan was jolted to awareness, he hurried over and tried to help Old Man Qi Shan get up.

But Old Man Qi Shan was insistent, he pushed his disciple away as he continued to kowtow, begging for mercy.

“Master...” Zheng Shan Chuan’s face was full of tears, with a splat, he knelt down facing Old Man Qi Shan.

Everyone looked at this with varying expressions.

Flying Frost Sect’s leader showed a look of regret and sympathy.

An Han was coldly sneering internally.

But the duel was over, how could the terms be changed under everyone’s watchful gazes? Unless Fang Yuan was willing to let them go, but he was a ruthless demonic cultivator, Zheng Shan Chuan was a refinement path master at such a young age, how could Fang Yuan let him go?

Even if it were the righteous path Gu Masters in his position, they would not let Zheng Shan Chuan go.

The cruel and harsh side of the Refinement Path Convention was displayed in front of everyone.

But at the next moment, Fang Yuan said to Old Man Qi Shan: “It is not impossible to let him go.”

An Han’s mental sneer froze, the place went silent.

“What?” Zheng Shan Chuan was stunned.

Old Man Qi Shan was the first to react, he was overjoyed: “Thank you senior for your magnanimity, thank you senior for your kindness!”

Fang Yuan smiled, his tone was warm and kind: “People should be kind to one another, that is also being kind to oneself.”

Everyone heard this and showed looks of disbelief.

Weren’t his words too fake? Who was it who destroyed the green shine Gu earlier and made a young lad lose?

An Han’s expression changed, he screamed inwardly: “Hey, are you still a demonic path Gu Master? Quickly act ruthless! What are you saying, are you not cold at all, are you trying to make the entire demonic path lose face?!”

Fang Yuan’s words changed: “But, since you offended me, you need to be punished.”

Everyone immediately restored their composure.

An Han calmed down, he was overjoyed: “Oh, so this is it, he is trying to toy with their relationship. Hahaha, that is right, this is the demeanor of the demonic path!”

Zheng Shan Chuan’s expression tightened.

Old Man Qi Shan started to kowtow again, he shouted: “Lord, please have mercy!”

“Forget it, I will not make you my slave for life, I want you to do three things. But now, you are not qualified yet, to do things for me. As for what these three matters are, hehe, I have not decided yet. Maybe I will not make you do any in your entire life. Maybe in the next moment, I will ask you to do three matters, it will all depend on my mood.” Fang Yuan said slowly.

His voice was not loud, but the people were quiet, listening to him.

Old Man Qi Shan sighed out in relief, he shouted while holding back his tears: “Thank you, lord, for your mercy!”

Zheng Shan Chuan lowered his head: “Junior thanks senior.”

Three matters compared to being a slave for life, the former was much easier to accept. Central Continent was dominated by the righteous path, if Zheng Shan Chuan had the identity of a demonic path Gu Master’s slave, even if he had refinement path talent, he would be unable to be successful and make a name for himself.

But handling these three matters was just an agreement. Having an agreement between righteous path and demonic path Gu Masters was nothing much. Zheng Shan Chuan’s future was still very bright.

Looking at the master and disciple who were extremely grateful to him, Fang Yuan laughed, ordering: “Both of you, bite your tongues and give me a drop of blood from the tips of your tongues.”

Old Man Qi Shan and Zheng Shan Chuan looked at each other, they bit their tongues and gave the blood to Fang Yuan with much fear.

Fang Yuan stretched out his right arm and his five fingers closed up, grasping the two drops of blood in his hand.

Next, he moved his hand, grinding with his fingers as black smoke emerged from the spaces between his fingertips.

When the black smoke faded, Fang Yuan opened his hand, showing two Gu worms.

Old Man Qi Shan and Zheng Shan Chuan were staring with wide opened eyes, these two Gu were a pair of rank four Gu.

Everyone gasped.

Fang Yuan was actually so formidable, he refined a pair of rank four Gu in a few breaths’ time.

“This is the technique of blood path! He actually has such astounding blood path Gu refinement techniques!” Flying Frost Sect’s higher-ups were showing dark expressions.

Even the demonic path Gu Masters outside showed looks of wariness.

Blood path was notorious, it was even more vile than using soul path techniques to burn human souls! Righteous path members would hunt it down, even the demonic path often excluded it.

“This pair of rank four Gu can sense each other. You two will take one, I will take the other. If I have anything to request of you, I will send someone over carrying this blood path Gu worm as the symbol. These two blood path Gu worms can sense each other and tell if they are real. Even if you die in the future, these three matters will extend to your children, descendants, disciples and other later generations. Are you willing? If not, be my slave.” Fang Yuan said.

“Willing, we are willing.” Old Man Qi Shan replied hurriedly.

Fang Yuan’s hand moved, and one of the blood path Gu worms was tossed to Old Man Qi Shan.

He tossed Zheng Shan Chuan another Gu.

When Zheng Shan Chuan received this Gu, he was stunned, he stammered: “This... this is green shine Gu?”

Fang Yuan stored the other blood path Gu worm away as he said slowly, laughing: “Did you really think I destroyed green shine Gu?”

As he laughed, he left the dumbfounded Gu Masters behind, turning around and leaving.

Zheng Shan Chuan looked blankly at Fang Yuan leaving, as Old Man Qi Shan stored the blood path Gu worm carefully. He did not dare to violate this agreement, their witnesses were not just Flying Frost Sect, but the entire Refinement Path Convention itself.

All of the competitions, including this duel, were recorded. Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects and all of the forces that joined the Refinement Path Convention had the evidence, he could not deny it.

“Master, you need to heal the injury on your head.” Zheng Shan Chuan quickly got up, helping Old Man Qi Shan up.

“Go, quickly leave, we cannot stay here anymore!” Old Man Qi Shan was intimidated by Fang Yuan’s methods, he was truly shell-shocked now, he urged his disciple to leave this terrifying place.

With this, Zheng Shan Chuan backed out of the competition, no longer joining the rest of the rounds.

But he had obtained green shine Gu, his original goal.

After this matter, Old Man Qi Shan gave Zheng Shan Chuan a good lesson using this as an example, telling him how vicious Fang Yuan’s methods were, he truly had a grasp on the nature of people, he next told Zheng Shan Chuan about the jealousy of Flying Frost Sect’s first elder, An Han, towards the talents of others, he was the person surreptitiously encouraging this duel.

Zheng Shan Chuan matured greatly from this matter, he finally understood his own shortfalls, as well as the vicious nature of the world. For most of his life, he tried all sorts of ways to treat Old Man Qi Shan while raising his refinement path attainment, keeping a low profile. When he was fifty-three years old, he healed Old Man Qi Shan’s poison, when he was eighty-eight years old, he became a refinement path grandmaster without causing much of a disturbance. In his final years, he returned to Central Continent’s east coast, creating a sect that he named after himself, it was called Shan Chuan Hall.

His life ended at a hundred and fifty years old, he did not join the Refinement Path Convention ever again.

As for the agreement of those three matters, that was another story.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 836: Preliminary Success of Vaguely Familiar Face

After the second round of the Refinement Path Convention ended, Fang Yuan returned to Hu Immortal blessed land.

Some time had passed in the blessed land already, Mo Yao’s will had recovered from Fang Yuan’s arrangements, he could search again.

Fang Yuan had no pity for her, he conducted will searching on Mo Yao’s will.

This time, he obtained quite a few Gu refinement techniques that Mo Yao knew, including a refinement path killer move.

In these memories of Mo Yao’s fake will, many were related to details of Gu refinement.

In this aspect, Mo Yao was a refinement path grandmaster, while Fang Yuan was only a quasi-grandmaster, Mo Yao was also a certain generation’s fairy of Spirit Affinity House, the refinement path techniques that she had expanded his vision quite a bit.

After Fang Yuan learned them, he felt that he benefited greatly.

Usually, when masters teach their disciples, they might keep some secrets to themselves or hide their trump cards, as the saying goes: a teacher dies of starvation after teaching his student.

Mo Yao’s will was now Fang Yuan’s ‘master’, but she was teaching him without reserving anything.

Fang Yuan had many benefits, on one hand, he learned all sorts of new Gu refinement techniques from Mo Yao’s fake will, on the other hand, he was revising the things he had learned.

He intended to show his skills in the Refinement Path Convention, using all his ability to get the best result he could obtain.

Because this concerned the Infallible inheritance.

Looking over the current situation, Fang Yuan estimated that it was still safe for him to join the Refinement Path Convention. But as time passes, the risk of undertaking such actions would be uncertain.

The toppling of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was too huge of a matter, Fang

Yuan was a lone force, he could only stall them, it was impossible to completely hide the truth from the investigative forces of Northern Plains and Central Continent.

If the five regions chaotic war was soon to occur, the five regions would be busy fending for themselves, Fang Yuan would be able to conceal the truth.

But unfortunately, the five regions chaotic war was still hundreds of years away.

Central Continent did not have much chaos under the control of the ten great ancient sects. Northern Plains’ situation had improved in stability after the battle between Old Ancestor Xue Hu against Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang.

“One day, the truth that I caused True Yang Building’s collapse will be exposed. By then, I will have arrest warrants from Central Continent and Northern Plains, the other three regions might also come after me due to Giant Sun’s true inheritance. Hu Immortal blessed land would no longer be unaffected by the outside world, it would be attacked immediately. Thus, before the truth is exposed, I have to develop myself during this period of time.”

Fang Yuan could clearly discern his future circumstances.

Once the truth was exposed, Fang Yuan would have to start a life as a fugitive.

Thus, he has to increase his strength as much as he could, using all opportunities that came, or even create them if they didn’t come.

Right now, the Refinement Path Convention was a huge opportunity.

This was only the second round of the Refinement Path Convention, towards the middle and late stages, the first place rewards would be immortal essence stones, immortal materials, Immortal Gu recipes, or immortal killer moves.

If one obtained a good position during the final competition, they would be qualified to obtain the reward from the Infallible inheritance.

Thus, even if he attracted the attentions of people and was high profile, Fang Yuan could not care less.

Also, his duel with Feng Jin Huang was well known by everyone already, almost all of the higher-ups in the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent knew about it. Fang Yuan could not lay low even if he wanted to.

One day, when news that he was the culprit behind True Yang Building’s collapse gets exposed, his name would spread over the five regions, he would be extremely famous!

By then, he would face a difficult and dangerous challenge.

The entire world would be his enemy, countless Gu Immortals would chase down Fang Yuan, in their opinions, Fang Yuan certainly would have obtained countless benefits from Giant Sun’s true inheritance.

“I have to use this last stretch of time to develop, accumulating immortal essence stones, immortal materials, and raising my battle strength to the limit, most importantly, I need to get rid of my immortal zombie body, and regain a living body!”

Immortal zombies could not produce immortal essence, even his usual cultivation expenses were dragging Fang Yuan down. Looking at most of the immortal zombies in Zombie Alliance, they had to be careful and calculative in every battle.

If Fang Yuan was still an immortal zombie when he was a fugitive, he would face immense danger, it might even be the cause of his demise.

Thus, in the following days, Fang Yuan had to join the Refinement Path Convention and practice his Gu refinement techniques, but he also had to deduce and use large numbers of star thought Gu to modify the immortal killer move, vaguely familiar face.

This killer move was an urgent matter, it was his best way to change the situation for the better. Other matters could not compare to it, they were put aside by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan got through the third, fourth, and fifth rounds.

He had outstanding capability, his quasi-grandmaster refinement path attainment was uncommon even among Gu Immortals. He got first place in all five competitions, with such a record, his reputation was surging.

Fang Yuan’s name started to circulate everywhere. Everyone who heard of it knew that he was a demonic path Gu cultivator, he was skilled in refinement path and had many Gu refinement techniques, he had a deep foundation.

The day before the sixth round, Fang Yuan finally reached preliminary success in the deduction of the immortal killer move vaguely familiar face.

“It was not easy at all!” Fang Yuan walked out of the underground cave, he was really excited, almost to the point of tears.

The process of deducing and modifying this immortal killer move was very difficult. Fang Yuan’s wisdom path and transformation path attainment levels were entirely too low, he was like a child pushing a stone mill, going one step at a time.

To get his current results, Fang Yuan had expended all of the star thought Gu he had obtained from Dong Fang Chang Fan by the fourth round of the competition. Thankfully, he had the stone nests and large numbers of hairy men, he had been continuously refining and accumulating star thought Gu.

That gave Fang Yuan enough resources in order to obtain a ‘vaguely familiar face’ that he could utilize.

As has been mentioned previously, Immortal Gu were unique, Fang Yuan did not have a single one of vaguely familiar face’s three core Immortal Gu (They were in Feng Jiu Ge’s hands).

If Fang Yuan wanted to use vaguely familiar face, he could only change the core Gu and modify the killer move. Furthermore, it would be best if this Immortal Gu was one that Fang Yuan currently had.

Right now, Fang Yuan achieved this aim.

The modified vaguely familiar face that he deduced was greatly simplified in comparison to the original, it only had one core Immortal Gu — eat strength Immortal Gu.

His other Immortal Gu, like Fixed Immortal Travel, Self Strength, iron crown eagle strength Immortal Gu and so on were incompatible. Or rather, Fang Yuan’s attainment level was too low, he could not make use of these Gu in this regard.

Fang Yuan could use eat strength Immortal Gu as the core to activate vaguely familiar face, this was mostly due to his rich foundation as a strength path grandmaster.

Using ‘eat strength’ Immortal Gu as the core to use vaguely familiar face, the effect was very limited.

Once the killer move was used, it could not change Fang Yuan’s appearance, but it could change his aura.

Fang Yuan was a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, once he had to exert himself seriously, his aura would leak out and be exposed, along with his identity. But if he used this version of vaguely familiar face activated by eat strength Immortal Gu, he could change his aura and turn his Northern Plains Gu Immortal aura into that of Central Continent, Southern Border, Eastern Sea, or Western Desert. If the other party was not a Gu Immortal skilled in investigation, they would not be able to expose him.

In fact, Old Lord Can Yang had such a method.

When Old Lord Can Yang helped Dong Fang Chang Fan, he fought with the band of demonic path immortals in an intense battle. But from start to finish, he was showing a Northern Plains aura, he did not display any relationship with Central Continent. This was evidently an immortal killer move, this was an indication of Immortal Crane Sect’s plentiful foundation.

But Fang Yuan created vaguely familiar face in a rush, the effect was weaker than Old Lord Can Yang’s move.

Old Lord Can Yang could fight intensely against a large number of Northern Plains Gu Immortals without exposing his true Central Continent aura. Fang Yuan knew clearly that his version of vaguely familiar face could not do that.

Furthermore, the use of this killer had a huge weakness, the price was very high.

Each time he used it, he would need to consume several strength path dao marks!

Eat strength Immortal Gu’s effect was to allow the Gu Immortal to eat immortal materials that were full of pure strength path dao marks, and extract the natural strength path dao marks from them, adding them to the Gu Immortal’s body.

Fang Yuan faced many failures in his deductions, he eventually racked his brains and placed his target on himself.

As a strength path immortal zombie, his body purely consisted of strength path dao marks. As for the time path and space path dao marks in his immortal aperture, they were not related to his body. Looking at another example, Hu Immortal blessed land had earth path, space path, time path, and enslavement path dao marks, but Hu Immortal’s body when she was alive only had enslavement path dao marks. After she died, the enslavement path dao marks on her body were all transferred into her blessed land.

Thus, Fang Yuan decided to ‘eat’ his own body. He used eat strength Immortal Gu as the core, by supplementing large numbers of mortal Gu, he expended strength path dao marks in order to disguise his aura.

Even though this immortal killer move effect was not great, it could not meet Fang Yuan’s requirements, and also had a huge drawback, but it was at least usable.

It was already very fortunate that he obtained such a result. He had thought that his deduction would end in utter failure. Having a preliminary success was already very satisfactory to him.

The highest credit had to go to wisdom Gu, under the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan had unlimited inspiration, he could forcefully make the strength path Immortal Gu into the core of vaguely familiar face.

With the joy of success, Fang Yuan entered the sixth round of the competition and got first place.

Returning to Hu Immortal blessed land, he rested for a short while before using Fixed Immortal Travel to go to Western Desert.

Western Desert, impassable dunes.

Winds were blowing as sand was scattered in the air.

The Gu Masters of Xiao clan were all in a battle formation, they were fighting intensely with the hidden sand spiders.

These hidden sand spiders were all the size of elephants, their bodies were covered in a layer of glazed exoskeleton, they were skilled at moving in the sand.

Hidden sand spiders emerged from the sand, their mouths were sharp and dangerous, they attacked the Xiao clan Gu Masters. Fang Yuan watched them from the sky, he estimated that there were at least thirty thousand of these hidden sand spiders!

But Xiao clan was a super force of Western Desert, the Xiao clan Gu Masters had exemplary skill in battle, they also had rich experience in dealing with hidden sand spiders. Thus, the situation was tilted in favor of the humans.

Fang Yuan only took a look before moving his gaze to behind the hidden sand spider group.

This was a huge area of sand dunes.

Within this area, fierce winds were moving about as the sky turned dark, countless beasts were growling.

If one looked closely, they would realize that these sand dunes were moving slowly!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 837: Doing Business in Western Desert

This was one of the seven most famous natural wonders of Western Desert – the movement of hundreds of thousands of sand dunes. It was like heaven was using a brush to sweep past most of the Western Desert, drawing a curved line. In this fixed curved path of moving sand dunes, there were no oases, no beasts and no rocks, there was only yellow sand. No one could stop it, even rank eight Gu Immortals were powerless.

For these enormous moving sand dunes, Western Desert’s people named them impassable dunes, revealing their helplessness and confusion towards nature’s might.

“Impassable dunes...” Fang Yuan, however, narrowed his eyes, and flew straight towards the sand dunes.

He had concealed his figure, and flew right above the battlefield on the ground, but no one detected him.

Several of Xiao clan’s Gu Immortals were fighting on the impassable dunes, but they were at the periphery, even these Gu Immortals could not explore the inner areas.

Their opponents were three enormous hidden sand spider queens, each was a desolate beast.

These hidden sand spider queens were like fish in water amidst the sandstorm, their hill-like colossal bodies were constantly letting out hidden sand spider groups.

However, Xiao clan’s Gu Immortals were well arranged and in good order.

Xiao Hu Chi led the charge as the leader, shouting and roaring as he immersed himself in the thrill of battle.

The deputy leader, Xiao Shi Rang, sighed, transmitting: “Leader, it is almost time, we have already achieved our objective of training them, we should order our Gu Masters to retreat now.”

“If you had not said this, I would have forgotten it! Handle this by yourself, hahaha, these three hidden sand spider queens have weakened greatly, it is time to capture them.” Xiao Hu Chi laughed wildly and was just about to attack, when his gaze suddenly focused in front of him and towards his left. He shouted: “Who’s there?!”

Boom!

The reply was a giant hand that passed through the sandstorm with an imposing air, directly grabbing a hidden sand spider queen.

Xiao Hu Chi stared with a furious expression, but this giant hand’s timing was perfect, that hidden sand spider queen had just been forced back by Xiao clan’s Gu Immortals when the giant hand smoothly grabbed it from behind, as if this hidden sand spider queen had gone straight into a trap.

“Such guts! You dare to challenge Xiao clan in our territory!!”

“Thief, you want to reap the fruits of our labor, you are unforgivable!”

“Everyone, attack and capture this person, I, Xiao Hu Chi, must see who is so daring!”

Xiao clan’s Gu Immortals were furiously about to attack when suddenly, seven strength path giant hands emerged from the sandstorm.

Bam bam bam!

Intense banging sounded out, five rank six Gu Immortals of Xiao clan were routed in panic.

Only Xiao Hu Chi and Xiao Shi Rang, the two rank sevens, were able to fight equally with two giant hands.

“This is rank seven battle strength!”

“The enemy is extremely powerful, the two leaders have used their signature killer moves, but they actually haven’t made progress!!”

“The other party still doesn’t seem to have used all their strength. This is the first time I have seen this strength path killer move, who in the world is this person?”

Immediately, Xiao clan’s Gu Immortals revealed heavy expressions.

“No need to be nervous, I have no malicious intentions. Look.” Fang Yuan slowly flew out and revealed his appearance, his expression having a slight smile.

Everyone’s gazes turned towards that hidden sand spider queen, which was already clenched firmly in the grasp of the strength path giant hand, screeching in pain and struggling desperately.

“Captured just like that...”

“This immortal killer move is really strong!”

Xiao Hu Chi and Xiao Shi Rang glanced at each other, seeing the vigilance in each other’s eyes.

If it were them, they could not accomplish this so easily. Otherwise, Xiao clan would not have sent so many Gu Immortals to capture the hidden sand spider queens.

Fang Yuan was able to accomplish this easily, one reason was because he had grasped the correct timing, when the hidden sand spider queen was greatly weakened, another reason was that after the merging of a second Immortal Gu, Pulling Mountain, into myriad self giant hand, its might had greatly increased and had even more power against earth path desolate beasts like hidden sand spider queens.

After grabbing the hidden sand spider queen, Fang Yuan appeared in front of Xiao clan’s Gu Immortals of his own accord.

“Sir, who might you be? What is your intention?” Sensing Fang Yuan’s good intention, Xiao Hu Chi asked in a low voice.

Fang Yuan chuckled: “I am nothing more than a nameless lone cultivator of Western Desert, living in seclusion over my life. Not long ago, I had no choice but to become an immortal zombie, only then did I come out into the open. I am here because I want to do a long term trade with your esteemed clan. I wonder if you are interested in regretful spider groups?”

“Oh? Regretful spiders?” Xiao clan’s Gu Immortals felt joyous.

Xiao clan possessed an Immortal Gu House, Ten Thousand Li Silk Corridor, ‘ten thousand li’ was only a general name, the entire Immortal Gu House was far longer than ten thousand li.

This Immortal Gu House had a very special function, as long as there were enough mortal spider Gu, it could be spread out and built everywhere. If looked on from a bird’s eye point of view, it would resemble a giant spider web spread over Western Desert.

And the surface of the floor of this Ten Thousand Li Silk Corridor was smooth like silk. Anything placed on it could be transported at an extremely fast speed.

Xiao clan was one of the richest among Western Desert’s super forces. The most important reason was because Xiao clan possessed this Ten Thousand Li Silk Corridor.

Any Immortal Gu House was a unified construct involving defense, attack, movement, healing, investigative and other aspects.

Be it Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Water Pavilion, Heaven Overseeing Tower, Red Fiend Divine Boat, Profound Ice House or any other Immortal Gu House, they all were like this, they could be considered war fortresses.

Xiao clan spread Ten Thousand Li Silk Corridor everywhere, transporting goods and earning a fortune. However, Ten Thousand Li Silk Corridor’s usage consumed large numbers of mortal spider Gu.

Ten Thousand Li Silk Corridor was Xiao clan’s economic lifeline, thus Xiao clan had to gather a very large quantity of mortal spider Gu every year to maintain Ten Thousand Li Silk Corridor.

This time, Xiao Hu Chi and Xiao Shi Rang led the group to capture hidden sand spider queens, it was to raise them in the clan’s headquarters. Every set interval of time, the blood of the hidden sand spider queen would be drawn and their flesh would be cut, then the clan’s Gu Masters would gather to refine large amounts of mortal spider Gu.

Despite Xiao clan’s own management fulfilling a portion of the requirement, there was still a shortfall left, which would have to be filled by purchasing large numbers of mortal spider Gu from the market.

Moreover, the larger the number of mortal spider Gu and the greater the variety of them, the more beneficial it would be in the operation of Ten Thousand Li Silk Corridor.

Xiao clan’s Gu Immortal group was naturally excited, Xiao Hu Chi asked immediately: “How many regretful spiders do you have, sir, and how will we make the transaction?”

Fang Yuan laughed, reporting a number, the joyous light in Xiao Hu Chi’s eyes faded in an instant.

Fang Yuan then spoke: “I can supply your esteemed clan with this number of mortal spider Gu every month.”

Xiao Hu Chi beamed with delight.

“As for how to trade them...” Fang Yuan said slowly: “Isn’t your Ten Thousand Li Silk Corridor the best way? Give me a token for a nearby node of Ten Thousand Li Silk Corridor, every month on the thirtieth, I will arrive at this node, place the goods and take the payment.”

“Then what is the price of sir’s goods?” Xiao Shi Rang chipped in.

“No rush.” Fang Yuan waved his hand, “Let’s discuss the price after you look at the quality of the goods.”

Fang Yuan took out a sample, Xiao clan’s Gu Immortals were greatly pleased at the quality.

These regretful spiders came from a super force of Northern Plains, Dong Fang tribe, it would be strange if Xiao clan’s Gu Immortals were not satisfied.

Fang Yuan quoted a price.

After a round of bargaining, the two sides settled on a price and completed the first transaction on the spot. Xiao Hu Chi made the payment on behalf of Xiao clan, and Fang Yuan also obtained a node token.

After the completion of the transaction, he turned around and left.

Xiao Hu Chi and the rest of the group returned to Xiao clan’s headquarters, and immediately reported this to Xiao clan’s first supreme elder.

The first supreme elder slowly nodded his head after learning of the details: “Little Hu, you did well, the contribution points for this task will be doubled.”

Xiao Hu Chi said in a heavy voice: “Lord, it is just that this person appeared too suddenly. A rank six immortal zombie with rank seven battle strength! Does lord know of his origins?”

The first supreme elder smiled indifferently: “Western Desert is vast, there are naturally many Gu Immortals who remain in seclusion, this is not something I can know completely. Immortal zombies cannot produce immortal essence by themselves, it is not strange for them to be forced to come out of seclusion. Since this person wants to do business sincerely, we will cooperate with them for now. Our clan has an unceasing demand for mortal spider Gu. If the cooperation is pleasant, there is no problem with handing out one of Xiao clan’s transaction tokens to him.”

“Lord, are we not going to investigate him?”

The first supreme elder thought for a moment before saying: “I know what you mean, since the other party can supply goods for a long time, he must have other blessed lands. Okay... investigate him a little for a while, we cannot treat him like a normal immortal zombie. The most important thing right now is the contest with Dong clan to occupy the market in the northwest side. We need to spread Ten Thousand Li Silk Corridor as fast as possible.”

“I understand, lord first supreme elder.” Xiao Hu Chi saw the first supreme elder shutting his eyes to rest, he understood the message and gave a respectful bow before quietly leaving.

A few days later.

Central Continent, Floating Flower Riverbank, Hearing Wave Pavilion.

The large force, Hearing Wave Pavilion, was generally a secluded sect, but it was now bustling like a market.

This was the one of the test locations for the seventh round of the Refinement Path Convention.

A round of the competition had just ended.

Everyone in the audience was discussing and exclaiming, with countless gazes gathered on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was clothed in a black robe, he wore a mask on his face, just like previously. Silently and unhurriedly, he walked out of the stage.

Many gazes moved followed his slow movement, while another portion of people stared at the rankings on the wall with shock.

Right now, Fang Yuan’s name was imprinted on first place!

“Demonic cultivator Fang Yuan has seized first place seven times in a row!

Amazing, truly amazing, this performance means he has master level attainment at least!”

“With such talents and ability, there is a high chance that he can pass the famous nightmarish eighth round of the Refinement Path Convention.”

“When can I have such ability?” Among the crowd, Hong Yi gazed at Fang Yuan’s receding figure, his heart filled with yearning. For some reason, while others disliked Fang Yuan’s style as a demonic cultivator, Hong Yi, as a disciple of the righteous path’s Universal Life Academy, did not feel any dislike towards Fang Yuan.

Hong Yi had great luck and huge potential, but his skills were too thinly spread out and he was eliminated pitifully at the second round.

“Do you guys think Fang Yuan can fight his way into the finals just like this?”

“Youngster, you are thinking about the finals now? Hehehe, it is too early, too early!”

“That’s right, who knows how many dragons and snakes are in Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention, the water here is too deep. The previous seven rounds were no more than the initial portion of the competition. The true essence and brilliance of the Refinement Path Convention lies in the later parts of the competition.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 838: Origin of the Refinement Path Convention

Under everyone’s discussions, Fang Yuan slowly started walking out of Hearing Wave Pavilion.

Everywhere he went, the crowds of people opened up a path for him.

Even though Fang Yuan was a demonic path Gu cultivator, those of the righteous path felt distaste and repulsion regarding it, but they had no choice but to admire his refinement path attainment. Especially in such a special environment like the Refinement Path Convention, this was a special time where demonic cultivators could enter the righteous path forces openly, the mentality of Gu Masters was slightly different now, they were focusing on champions of refinement path.

At the outer gate of Hearing Wave Pavilion, several Gu Masters from their respective forces were shouting loudly and selling information, it was a booming business.

“Attention, attention, the newest information has been updated, there is the most comprehensive results list in this Refinement Path Convention, we even have the results of the seventh round.”

“Do you want to know the top one hundred Gu refinement geniuses most favored in this competition? Then come take a look! One shadow image Gu for a minimum price of fifty primeval stones. We will sell it for the highest prices offered, until we run out of stock!”

“A famous wisdom path Gu Master’s conjecture towards the ranking of the participants in this small competition of Central Continent sects, there are also the grudges of the ten great ancient sects! A set of information for only ten primeval stones! It is a steal!”

“To think that the results of the seventh round are already out.” Fang Yuan heard this and he was inwardly moved.

But when he saw the attire of the Gu Master selling the information, he understood why.

This Gu Master selling the information of the seventh round was wearing the clothes of ‘Lightning Information Sect’.

Lightning Information Sect was a super force created by a Gu Immortal, it was obviously far inferior to the ten great ancient sects. Lightning Information Sect’s creator, Mi Lan Guang, was originally a lightning path Gu Immortal from Wind Cloud Manor. Because he broke the sect rules, he was crippled in his cultivation and expelled from the sect.

In order to sustain a living, he was forced to cultivate information path, combined with his lightning path cultivation experience, he created a set of unique information path Gu worms. In the end, he developed at a much faster pace than before.

He created Lightning Information Sect, after more than a hundred years of development, it was already a first-rate sect that was skilled in information path among the forces of Central Continent. Even the ten great ancient sects bought information from them at times.

Fang Yuan walked to this Gu Master and threw him ten primeval stones: “Give me a copy.”

The Lightning Information Sect Gu Master received the primeval stones in a hurry, he took a look at Fang Yuan and was shocked: “Oh, sir, is sir Lord Fang Yuan?! It is my greatest honor to be able to provide this information to you, how could I accept any primeval stones? Sir, please take it back, this information will be given to you for free.”

Saying so, he passed the ten primeval stones back to Fang Yuan with both hands.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “It is your reward.”

The Gu Master smiled in a fawning manner: “Then I will thank lord for the reward! Lord, this is the information you want, I thank you for purchasing this on behalf of Lightning Information Sect. If you could spare us a moment of your time and accept the interview of our sect, we will give you immortal materials as compensation!”

Fang Yuan waved his hand, receiving the Gu Master’s information path Gu worm as he walked away.

“Lord, take care.” The Gu Master saw that Fang Yuan rejected him and did not say anything else, after all, Fang Yuan was a rank five demonic cultivator, he stood on the spot and sent Fang Yuan off, gazing after him, only until Fang Yuan was gone did he continue to shout loudly and promote his information.

Fang Yuan walked as he diverted a portion of his thoughts into the new information path Gu worm..

This information path Gu was only rank one, it was simple to refine, it was not worth mentioning.

But the point was the information inside, that was the thing that was valued at ten primeval stones.

Fang Yuan inspected it and found out that there were over eight thousand people that got through all seven rounds of the Refinement Path Convention.

These people were able to get through the seven rounds, they would essentially be quasi-masters at least, of course, among them, there were some lucky ones with lower attainment levels.

But here, speaking of those with lower capability was only relative to the experts, they were not at Hong Yi’s level. People like him were already completely eliminated by the third round.

Initially, there were hundreds of thousands of people who signed up. Most of these people were Central Continent Gu Masters, there were also people from Southern Border and the other regions. After seven rounds, only eight thousand were left, it was not even ten thousand, one could see how intense the elimination rate was.

And among them, only four hundred or so were people who had gotten the top three places in all seven rounds of the competition.

These were talented people who were at least refinement path masters.

This number of four hundred might appear high, but in a huge region like Central Continent, they were truly a small fraction, these people were at the top of the pyramid.

In any path, people of master level were rare. Compared to other paths, refinement path could be considered much deeper and harder, the proportion of masters was even lower.

Among these four hundred, only eighty or so had gotten first place in all seven rounds.

Undeniably, these eighty were the focal group of the focal group, they were the pivotal characters.

Fang Yuan was among them.

According to the experts’ evaluation, his name was only at the middle-upper position.

This was the result when Fang Yuan did not bother concealing his ability, one could see how intense the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was, talented people were emerging everywhere, it was not easy to defeat these refinement path geniuses and stand at the top.

Of course, this ranking was only an estimate, it did not represent their true level.

The tests in the seven rounds could not evaluate Fang Yuan’s limits, at the same time, he had a mysterious background, even if they wanted to make a guess, they had no way to do so. These reasons caused his ranking to be at the thirtieth position or so.

Fang Yuan looked at this ranking and found many familiar names.

Firesmith Dragon Chief, Fang Huai, Tian Min Mie, Feng Jin Huang, Yu Mu Chun, Lui

Pin Tian, Dou Ping Tan, Qu Wen... all these people had high statuses in Fang Yuan’s previous life.

Undeniably, they were all outstanding people, shining stars lined up one after another, Fang Yuan felt a strong, piercing light coming from them.

“Among these people, some were superstars during the five regions chaotic war. Even though some of their rankings might be low now, they were immortals in the future. Some even were refinement path grandmasters during their lifetimes.”

Fang Yuan felt pressure inwardly.

Fang Yuan was a refinement path quasi-grandmaster, he was one step away from grandmaster level. But this one step was very far away, it required great accumulation to make the breakthrough.

Actually, in terms of refinement path talent, Fang Yuan was very ordinary.

If his talent was insufficient, he could only make up for it with hard work.

Fang Yuan’s accumulations from his previous life, along with his current life, forcefully elevated his refinement path attainment from master level to quasi-grandmaster level.

Five hundred years of cultivation but only becoming a quasi-grandmaster, wasn’t he really useless?

Look at Zheng Shan Chuan, he is so young but already a refinement path master!

Talent was undeniably important.

But there was another factor.

Zheng Shan Chuan was a Gu Master that cultivated refinement path mainly, all of his efforts were placed in it. Meanwhile, Fang Yuan in both lives only cultivated refinement path on the side, during his previous life, he lived three hundred years at first, only cultivating blood path for the last two hundred years, and in this life he cultivated strength path.

Being one’s main cultivation as opposed to being cultivated on the side, the amount of effort put into them was vastly different.

If Fang Yuan did not cultivate blood path and strength path mainly, he might not have lived up to now. He was not fortunate like Zheng Shan Chuan, having a master to protect and nurture him along the way.

Furthermore, attainment levels of paths were hard to raise, the higher one went, the more difficult it was. Before dream realms changed the five regions, to raise one’s attainment level, one could only work hard and accumulate their foundation while having ample talent.

One could say that it was not easy for Fang Yuan to reach his current quasi-grandmaster attainment level!

“With my ability, it will be difficult to even reach the top ten of the Refinement Path Convention. Meanwhile, to benefit from the Infallible inheritance, I need to be at least top six!”

The Infallible inheritance was a refinement path inheritance. Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention had expanded over the years, initially, it was only a way for the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent to fight over the Infallible inheritance and split its benefits — using refinement path to hold a competition and determine the winner, to gain the most benefits for one’s own sect.

But later, because the Infallible inheritance’s benefits were too great, it could even help in the recovery of fate Gu, therefore Heavenly Court took over it.

Strictly speaking, the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent were representatives under Heavenly Court to manage affairs. Heavenly Court was the boss behind the scenes of the ten great ancient sects, since the boss wanted to take over, the ten great ancient sects could only accept it and cooperate to the best of their efforts.

With Heavenly Court controlling it, Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention became famous throughout the region, and even expanded its influence over the world. Right now, each Refinement Path Convention would attract many people from the other four regions to participate.

“Based on records from previous competitions, those who can reach the top three are refinement path grandmasters, or even quasi-great grandmaster level occasionally!”

The quality of each competition’s Gu Masters vary, but the top ten were usually mostly refinement path grandmasters, sometimes, the seventh to tenth positions were refinement path quasi-grandmasters.

When there were few people joining, and there were only three to four refinement path grandmasters, there would be refinement path quasi-grandmasters in the top six. But when there were many people, there would be seven to eight refinement path grandmasters in the top ten, then there would be few quasi-grandmasters who could reach a top ten position.

This time, the standard was neither high nor low, there were five refinement path grandmasters.

“I am best at blood path Gu refinement techniques. But right now, I do not have many blood path Gu worms, and if I use those blood path refinement techniques openly, I would be giving Immortal Crane Sect an excuse to attack Hu Immortal blessed land. To get top six, I need to scheme!” Fang Yuan thought about it and made up his mind.

Sixteen days later, Central Continent.

An Zu Earth Trench, Demon Expelling Sect.

Demon Expelling Sect was a super force, there were three Gu Immortals in it. Its sphere of influence spread over an enormous range, it covered dozens of large forces, hundreds of middle sized forces, and countless small forces, including the insignificant Gu Master families.

To be a test location of the eighth round was something Demon Expelling Sect’s main headquarters definitely had the qualifications for.

Tens of thousands of Gu Masters rushed in on this day, to watch the exciting competitions of Gu refinement. Of course, the actual location was limited in space and could only hold a thousand people, but these one thousand people were not ordinary Gu Masters.

Demon Expelling Sect had already made appropriate arrangements for the huge squares that could hold many ordinary spectators, once the eighth round started, the real-time broadcast of the competition would play in the air.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 839: Fang Zheng’s Inner Thoughts

Fang Zheng and another Immortal Crane Sect elder led over ten disciples into the competition venue.

It was a hubbub of sound outside the stage. Over a thousand Gu Masters were sitting in the surroundings, discussing in murmurs while waiting for the eighth round to start.

However, because there were too many people, even the softest whispers converged together to become an extremely clamorous scene.

“Immortal Crane Sect’s elders and disciples.” Once they saw Fang Zheng’s group, the surrounding Gu Masters could not help but stare at them, the sounds of their discussions became softer.

Compared to large and small forces, members of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sect members gave the feeling of royalty walking among common people.

“That young man is actually wearing the attire of an Immortal Crane Sect elder, I am not hallucinating, right?”

“Quiet down, can’t you sense his aura, he is a genuine rank five Gu Master!”

“Making a fuss over nothing, it’s not like there aren’t Gu worms to maintain a youthful appearance...”

“Look over there, they are Myriad Dragon Dock’s disciples and elders.”

At the next moment, everyone’s gazes were attracted towards another group of people.

The number of this group of Gu Masters was twice that of Immortal Crane Sect’s, with four elders leading the way and many elite disciples among the disciples.

“Myriad Dragon Dock...” An elder of Immortal Crane Sect couldn’t help but focus his gaze.

Of the ten great ancient sects, Myriad Dragon Dock could be said to have been in the limelight recently. And the reason was because of Vicious Lightning Fiend.

Vicious Lightning Fiend was only a rank six Gu Immortal, but his battle strength was extremely outstanding.

During his two years of closed cultivation, he created the immortal killer move lightning deity. After coming out of seclusion, he roamed around Central Continent, challenging countless Gu Immortals in his journey, most ended in his victory, there were few draws and very rarely did he lose.

The more Vicious Lightning Fiend won, the greater his reputation soared, because he gained a lot of resources from the spars and duels, the amount of lightning deities that he owned increased instead of decreasing, there were a total of three now!

Even before he had lightning deity, Vicious Lightning Fiend already had an impressive achievement of battling a rank seven Gu Immortal to a draw.

Now with three lightning deities, his battle strength had increased explosively, even surpassing normal rank seven Gu Immortals. In his challenges, he had achievements of defeating many rank seven Gu Immortals.

With rank six cultivation, winning against rank seven Gu Immortal was extremely rare. Especially praiseworthy was that Vicious Lightning Fiend had repeatedly challenged and won against rank seven Gu Immortals, he was at the peak of fame now, and the reputation of Myriad Dragon Dock, his affiliated sect, was also soaring with him.

This was to the extent that the whole of Central Continent’s Gu Immortal world was starting to recognize Vicious Lightning Fiend as the strongest among rank six Gu Immortals of the current generation in Central Continent. Some battle hungry elders of Myriad Dragon Dock were so encouraged that they even proclaimed that Vicious Lightning Fiend was the next Shi Lei, the next Feng Jiu Ge.

Vicious Lightning Fiend had immediately reprimanded them when he heard news of it: “Leave Shi Lei aside, but Lord Feng Jiu Ge is not someone I am qualified to compare with. Speak less of such things from now on!”

The implication of his words was that he was able to match Shi Lei.

Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei was a rank seven Gu Immortal of Combat Immortal Sect with outstanding battle strength, but he had firmly been pushed down by Feng Jiu Ge, unable to turn the situation around.

It was rare to see a monster like Feng Jiu Ge even once in thousands of years, Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects had been forced to accept it, respecting and fearing him.

A series of victory fostered Vicious Lightning Fiend’s swagger, till he began to publicly challenge Shi Lei.

Combat Immortal Sect’s people were naturally extremely indignant, but strangely, the violent natured Shi Lei was maintaining silence.

This instead boosted Myriad Dragon Dock’s confidence, as they felt Shi Lei did not have certainty in dealing with Vicious Lightning Fiend, and was hiding like a coward.

Of course, people who knew some of the inside story were aware that Vicious Lightning Fiend’s challenge was nothing more than Myriad Dragon Dock probing at Combat Immortal Sect. Combat Immortal Sect discovered Starry Sky grotto-heaven and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm within it, they had already covertly started attacking the grotto-heaven. And because they had withdrawn their Gu Immortal level battle strength from everywhere, the other nine sects were already starting to sense something amiss.

However, such secrets were generally only known by Gu Immortal level higher-ups and characters.

Thus, when Myriad Dragon Dock’s elders and disciples saw Fang Zheng’s group, they were clearly filled with arrogance.

“Ah, it is Immortal Crane Sect’s people.”

“Hehehe, what are you here for? To see how your elders fail?”

“It’s useless, our Myriad Dragon Dock’s Lord Dragon Chief will definitely be the final winner, no doubt of it!”

Myriad Dragon Dock’s Gu Masters immediately taunted and jeered.

The competition between Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects was extremely intense, there was much rivalry between either side.

Especially when Immortal Crane Sect had been showing weakness for a long time now, Myriad Dragon Dock’s members, with their increasing reputation, further looked down on Immortal Crane Sect.

Immortal Crane Sect’s disciples felt suffocated by anger, but they could not retort to them, maintaining their silence as Myriad Dragon Dock’s group brushed past them, before they sat at their arranged seats.

“A bunch of cowards.” Someone said in disdain.

Someone else ridiculed: “Hahaha, this is indeed the style of Immortal Crane Sect.”

Immortal Crane Sect’s group looked even more unsightly.

Some spectators were surprised at this and asked: “Immortal Crane Sect and Myriad Dragon Dock are both of the ten great ancient sects, why is Myriad Dragon Dock being so rampant?”

Someone immediately replied: “There are stronger and weaker sects even among the ten great ancient sects. Immortal Crane Sect is weaker than Myriad Dragon Dock, this is known by everyone. Besides this, the participating Gu Master of Myriad Dragon Dock in this test is truly strong, it is that refinement path Gu Master who is called Firesmith Dragon Chief!”

“What? Firesmith Dragon Chief is actually a Gu Master of Myriad Dragon Dock, isn’t he a lone cultivator?”

“Hehe, didn’t you read the information from Lightning Information Sect? This Firesmith Dragon Chief had violated sect rules in his early years and was thrown out of Myriad Dragon Dock. He is participating in this Refinement Path Convention to get a good placing and return to Myriad Dragon Dock!”

“So it was like that. It is said this Firesmith Dragon Chief has grandmaster attainment in refinement path! Even a person like this is begging to return to Myriad Dragon Dock, the appeal of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects is really enormous...”

Over at Immortal Crane Sect, Fang Zheng and the other elder were quietly discussing.

Fang Zheng asked: “I wonder, what is the possibility of our sect’s Elder Yan Tang succeeding in this round?”

Fang Zheng did not have much skill in Gu refinement, he had trained hard and barely passed the four entry tasks, registering his name. However, he was miserably eliminated in the first round.

Fortunately, large-scale competitions were all open contests and did not prohibit anyone from spectating.

Fang Zheng’s status was also high, as an elder of Immortal Crane Sect. Elder Yan Tang, who had invited him to many banquets and drinks, was participating this time, be it privately or publicly, he had to come in support of Elder Yan Tang.

The Immortal Crane Sect elder, sitting beside Fang Zheng, frowned at his question and sighed: “Elder Fang Zheng, you are also aware that Elder Yan Tang’s main cultivation is fire path, and he only cultivates refinement path on the side. Meanwhile Firesmith Dragon Chief’s main cultivation is refinement path and he cultivates fire path on the side. The gap is too large.”

Fang Zheng still did not understand completely: “Even so, with Elder Yan Tang’s refinement path attainment, he should be able to place in the top three.”

“Sigh!” The Immortal Crane Sect elder shook his head while smiling bitterly, “Elder Fang Zheng, you are not aware, after the seventh round of the Refinement Path Convention, it uses a cruel system of a single winner. In this huge Demon Expelling Sect test venue, only one Gu Master will be able to win and advance.”

“What? It is actually like that!” Fang Zheng was shocked and was only able to react after a few breaths. He had experienced many setbacks, as such, the way he thought had changed, “Since the opponent is so strong, then why didn’t Elder Yan Tang go to another test venue? The Refinement Path Convention doesn’t restrict the participants from choosing the venue.”

“Elder Fang Zheng, you are right in thinking of that. After all, retreating to progress forward is also a tactical victory. But unfortunately, other test venues have already been occupied by refinement path experts. Moreover... it was the higher ups’ decision to arrange Elder Yan Tang in this venue.” The final words were spoken quietly by the Immortal Crane Sect elder.

Fang Zheng was alarmed and startled, if he still did not understand now, he would be an idiot!

“So the higher ups had already made the decision to sacrifice Elder Yan Tang to probe Firesmith Dragon Chief?”

He suddenly recalled his master, Lord Sky Crane’s words — Elder Yan Tang was isolated in Immortal Crane Sect, so he is inviting you to drinks to form a political alliance with you.

‘Because he is alone, he was chosen to be a sacrifice... Elder Yan Tang is probably filled with discontent. What if I was treated as a sacrifice one day?’

The moment he thought of this, Fang Zheng suddenly remembered the miserable scene of him in the blood pool, with blood vines growing all over him.

Ugh!

The nightmarish memory surfaced again, Fang Zheng shuddered and gasped.

“What’s wrong?” The elder beside him asked with concern.

“Nothing.” Fang Zheng wiped his forehead, his palm swiping away a layer of cold sweat.

He did not dare to think more, he was filled with panic and hesitation inside.

Right at this time, the elder’s voice resounded in his ears: “All the participants have entered the venue, this round of the competition is about to begin.”

Fang Zheng quickly raised his head, and saw over a hundred Gu Masters slowly stepping onto the stage.

Fang Zheng saw Immortal Crane Sect’s Elder Yan Tang, who was expressionless, but his gaze was filled with discontent and helplessness.

At another side, the red robed Firesmith Dragon Chief, however, had an arrogant expression as he gazed around, not concealing his disdain and contempt towards the surrounding participants.

“A group of weaklings, it is my win for sure. Start already.” Firesmith Dragon Chief indifferently laughed loudly, openly urging Demon Expelling Sect’s hosting elder.

The surrounding refinement path Gu Masters did not dare to refute this because of Firesmith Dragon Chief’s strength. Immortal Crane Sect’s Elder Yan Tang clenched his fists tightly and looked furious, but he unexpectedly remained silent.

“Victory to Myriad Dragon Dock! Victory!!”

“Firesmith Dragon Chief will win!”

Myriad Dragon Dock’s group was cheering loudly, as if injected with morale. They were rampant, the surrounding spectators, however, could only sit quietly and watch all this happening.

‘Repulsive, truly repulsive!’ Fang Zheng still had the nature of a young man, he was clenching his teeth and shouting furiously inwardly, ‘Damn it, if only I had enough strength. I really hope someone will beat down this Firesmith Dragon Chief right now, and destroy this Myriad Dragon Dock group’s arrogance.’

Seemingly responding to his wish, a figure quietly appeared. At first, no one paid attention, but when he stepped on the stage, countless gazes turned towards him.

Black robe.

Mask.

Rank five demonic cultivator...

Fang Yuan!

Why is he here?

The whole venue was silent before being sent into an uproar!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 840: Fang Zheng’s Nightmare

Nobody expected that Fang Yuan would show up here. According to the competition rules of Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention, from the eighth round onwards, there can only be one winner from each test venue.

Thus, gradually, the whole of Central Continent’s test venues became domains to be dominated by skilled refinement path Gu Masters, like fierce beasts ruling over a territory..

Unless they were forced to have no other choice, no beast would move out of their territory to challenge another beast.

This was not sensible.

The further they advanced, the higher the glory and rewards they could obtain. Having a decisive showdown early on would only let someone else reap the benefits.

Thus, when they saw Fang Yuan, many Gu Masters guessed: “Does Fang Yuan have some enmity with Firesmith Dragon Chief?”

The Demon Expelling Sect elder hosting this round of the competition also felt baffled, but showed no expression on his face.

Fang Yuan’s entry was in accordance to the competition’s rules. As long as someone entered any test venue within the set time, their results would be recorded.

Thus, even if there were people who wanted to obstruct someone, they could not do so under everyone’s gazes.

“This person is Fang Yuan? Is he that famous owner of Hu Immortal blessed land in our sect?” Immortal Crane Sect’s disciples also began to guess.

“Truthfully speaking, our sect’s Lord Fang Yuan is truly mysterious. I have yet to see his true appearance.”

“This is Fang Yuan? Impossible. Central Continent is so large, there are also Gu Masters with the same name.”

“Fang Yuan and Feng Jin Huang’s agreement has already been widely spread. Our Immortal Crane Sect has many exemption quotas, Fang Yuan could have simply conserved his energy and participated from the tenth round onwards.”

Immortal Crane Sect’s disciples discussed, many of them stealthily glancing at Fang Zheng’s face.

Fang Zheng’s lips were pursed tight, his face looked pale-white and his hands were clenched tightly within his large sleeves. They were brothers by blood, the moment Fang Yuan appeared, Fang Zheng could intuitively tell that it was his big brother!

Fang Zheng was caught unprepared.

The shadow during his childhood years suddenly fell and shrouded over him again at this moment, seemingly like a pair of black hands were tightly clenching his neck.

Fang Zheng felt suffocated.

The nightmare, that he had done his best to evade from since he woke up from his coma, attacked his mind once again!

The arrogant exclamations and cheers of Myriad Dragon Dock group gradually turned quieter.

Fang Yuan had displayed high refinement path attainment, seizing first place in all the past seven rounds, the same as Firesmith Dragon Chief.

Myriad Dragon Dock’s elders and disciples had to admit Fang Yuan was a powerful opponent!

“I heard this Fang Yuan’s achievement is the same as that of our Firesmith Dragon Chief, seizing first place in all seven rounds.”

“Is he that person who is duelling Feng Jin Huang?”

“If it is truly him, then that is the owner of Hu Immortal blessed land, he should be very affluent.”

“So what? Hmph, haven’t you seen the rankings. Firesmith Dragon Chief is ranked at seventh, but where is Fang Yuan placed at? It is beyond thirtieth place!”

“Right, he is simply looking for humiliation by coming here. I believe Lord Firesmith Dragon Chief will definitely defeat him.”

Although Myriad Dragon Dock’s group said this, other spectators did not have the same thoughts.

Fang Yuan entered on his own accord, showing an extremely aggressive stance. Fang Yuan was clearly not a fool, he surely had confidence and trump cards to move out of his territory and attack.

Fang Yuan’s unorthodox behavior made Firesmith Dragon Chief startled, furious and doubtful.

Thereupon, Firesmith Dragon Chief probed: “Fang Yuan of Immortal Crane Sect! Are you coming to lose in advance?”

What Firesmith Dragon Chief truly wanted to ask was: Why are you coming here to compete? Couldn’t you have just stayed in your territory and advanced safely? You must be smoking something!

At the same time as he asked this, he felt gloomy inwardly — We don’t have any grudges, what are you trying to do by disturbing me? Don’t you still have the duel with Feng Jin Huang? Do I look that easy to bully?

The moment he spoke, the uproar turned even louder.

“What, this Fang Yuan is actually a member of Immortal Crane Sect?”

“Isn’t he a demonic cultivator?”

“It should be true, Firesmith Dragon Chief has personally confirmed it, can it still be false?”

“This is big news, who could have thought he was actually a disciple of one of the ten great ancient sects... But why did he come here? Did Immortal Crane Sect have a fight with Myriad Dragon Dock? I haven’t heard rumors about any disputes.”

Even the hosting elder was looking with eyes wide open, staring at Fang Yuan blankly.

At once, Fang Yuan became the focal point of everyone’s gazes.

“Big brother...” Fang Zheng gritted his teeth, his face pale as paper and his body filled with cold sweat unknowingly. He was feeling difficulty in breathing, and also physical weakness, as if he had collapsed after doing intense exercise.

Fortunately, everyone was gazing at Fang Yuan and no one noticed his miserable state.

Lord Sky Crane consoled him from his aperture, but there was almost no effect.

Other Immortal Crane Sect members were excitedly gazing at Fang Yuan, some even stood up unconsciously.

Fang Yuan had never officially appeared in Immortal Crane Sect's headquarters. However, his legends were spread widely in Immortal Crane Sect. Mysterious and powerful, with countless rumors regarding him.

It was said that he had outstanding talents, such that he was taken in as a legacy disciple by a Gu Immortal the moment he stepped into Immortal Crane Sect.

This was of course a rumor, purely speculative and completely unreliable.

However, Immortal Crane Sect's higher ups could not refute them, once they spoke the truth, where would their reputation as one of the ten great ancient sects remain?

Moreover, Immortal Crane Sect's disciples were more willing to believe the proof in front of them.

The greatest proof was Fang Zheng!

Fang Zheng had A grade aptitude and already had rank five cultivation now, becoming a sect elder. They could only imagine, as his big brother, how outstanding Fang Yuan's aptitude must be. Otherwise, how could he have won against Feng Jin Huang and seized Hu Immortal blessed land?

Right now, Immortal Crane Sect's members was stretching their necks, firmly fixing their gazes upon Fang Yuan like glue.

Uncertainty and curiosity was overflowing from within their hearts.

“I really want to see Lord Fang Yuan's true appearance.”

“It should be similar to Elder Fang Zheng's.”

“Sigh, why did he have to wear a mask. This is a test venue, if we carelessly use investigative Gu, we will be thrown out.”

The disciples communicated excitedly.

The other Immortal Crane Sect elder finally discovered Fang Zheng's state and asked with concern: “Elder Fang Zheng, what's wrong? Are you feeling unwell?”

“Nothing, nothing...” Fang Zheng's heart skipped a beat, hurriedly replying.

‘Why does Elder Fang Zheng seem to be afraid of Fang Yuan, is the relationship between these brothers not good?’ A strange look flashed past the elder's eyes.

Fang Yuan's eyes were hidden behind the mask. He first slowly glanced around, pausing a moment on Fang Zheng before slowly landing on Firesmith Dragon Chief.

He chuckled, breaking the long silence, his voice somewhat hoarse as he proudly proclaimed to everyone present: “Right, I am Immortal Crane Sect's Fang Yuan.”

“Haha, it was true!”

“Elder Fang Yuan, best of luck!”

“Elder Fang Yuan and Elder Fang Zheng are our sect's heroes.”

The most intense response was from Immortal Crane Sect's group. Some disciples almost jumped in excitement, they felt pride and a strong sense of honor in their sect, after being suppressed by Myriad Dragon Dock, right now, with Fang Yuan’s words, they felt really relieved and avenged.

“What are you so happy about?”

“Right! What is there to be pleased about...”

Myriad Dragon Dock’s group retorted.

Hatred flashed past Fang Zheng’s eyes, as he said with clenched teeth: “Don’t compare my brother with me!”

These words, however, had another meaning when heard by others.

“Did you hear it, even Elder Fang Zheng, with his aptitude, admits he is inferior to Lord Fang Yuan!”

“That’s right, reportedly Fang Yuan is a Gu Immortal seed and the higher ups are nurturing him with all their strength.”

Immortal Crane Sect’s disciples talked in a ‘soft’ volume, but the sound was not soft at all.

“You guys...” Fang Zheng’s expression turned ashen and he felt an intense dizziness.

The expressions of Myriad Dragon Dock’s group turned even more unsightly.

The atmosphere of conflict intensified.

One elder of Myriad Dragon Dock sneered and cursed in a quiet voice: “Let’s see what kind of downcast expressions you guys will have when he loses.”

The bustle outside the stage already made the other participants on the stage into props to be ignored. Fang Yuan continued to gaze at Firesmith Dragon Chief, and intentionally raised his voice: “Firesmith Dragon Chief, I came here to defeat you. It is way too boring to defeat those incompetents. You are a slightly decent opponent, you will add some radiance to my path of advancement. So use your true strength, don’t hold back, I remember your strongest method is, what was it... mad deity’s blazing flames? Use it and fight me, this way when I defeat you, I can feel a little satisfaction.”

Hearing such provocative words from Fang Yuan, whether it was on the stage or outside the stage, all the Gu Masters had the same feeling — arrogant, too arrogant!

Everyone had already felt that Firesmith Dragon Chief was arrogant, but now that they saw Fang Yuan, they realized the saying ‘no matter how good you are, there is always someone better than you’ was completely true. Look at Fang Yuan, this was the true master of arrogance!

Firesmith Dragon Chief was startled: ‘He actually knows about my hidden trump card?! This is impossible, I have never exposed this technique. How did he find out?’

After the astonishment, anger rose in him as he countered: “Alright, since you, junior, are boasting so shamelessly, let me teach you a thorough lesson. I will make you understand what true pain is!”

At the same time, he furiously shouted inwardly: ‘Will I, a grand rank six Gu Immortal who has undergone two heavenly tribulations and is only one away from rank seven, be afraid of you, a bottom tier immortal zombie? Kid, you think too highly of yourself, I will step on you and make you lose all your face! Blindly challenging me will be the greatest regret of your life!!’

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 841: Fang Yuan’s Public Provocation

Seemingly hearing Firesmith Dragon Chief’s inner voice, Fang Yuan continued to ridicule with even more intensity: “Good, this gaze, this mood, this rage, only like this can you bring out all your strength to fight me. Only such an opponent can make me feel some interest. Remember, you must use all your strength, otherwise you will be Myriad Dragon Dock’s disgrace! Hahaha.”

Fang Yuan spoke with such arrogance while pointing at Firesmith Dragon Chief.

At once, all the Gu Masters were speechless.

Wasn’t this way too arrogant?!

Myriad Dragon Dock’s members gritted their teeth. They were arrogant, but Fang Yuan was even more arrogant.

Firesmith Dragon Chief trembled in anger, staring at Fang Yuan with such fury that flames seemed to spout out.

Unlike the imagination of outsiders, Fang Yuan had a bold demeanor on the surface, but inwardly, he was extremely vigilant.

“Differing from the information in the outside world, this Firesmith Dragon Chief’s main cultivation is actually not refinement path but fire path. Back when he was at Myriad Dragon Dock, he was a refinement path Gu Master. And he was also indeed thrown out of the sect, but because of a fortuitous encounter, he obtained a certain fire path Gu Immortal’s inheritance. After he became a fire path Gu Immortal, he tried to enter Myriad Dragon Dock again. Myriad Dragon Dock naturally would not let go of a Gu Immortal and had actually already secretly taken him in. It was just that it happened to be time for the Refinement Path Convention, and seeing his refinement path attainment was grandmaster level, they hurriedly made him join the competition to try to seize the top spot and get more benefits for the sect!”

“This Firesmith Dragon Chief’s refinement path attainment level is above mine, in my previous life, he was ranked at second of this convention, a refinement path grandmaster cannot be taken lightly. Especially during the Gu refinement in the tenth round, he impressively suppressed three quasi-grandmasters on the spot. Such an enemy must be beaten down early. If I let go of this chance, according to my previous life’s memories, there will be almost no chance of suppressing him.”

Firesmith Dragon Chief was a Gu Immortal, but he did not disclose it, instead disguising himself as a mortal.

He naturally could not conceal his Gu Immortal cultivation from other Gu Immortals, but it was okay for them to know it, no one would expose this.

Maintaining their mysteriousness helped Gu Immortals to maintain their dominion.

There was also another reason: By any chance, if they lost to a mortal in the Refinement Path Convention, that would be too disgraceful.

Why would Gu Immortals lose to mortals?

There were actually many cases of mortals defeating Gu Immortals in the Refinement Path Convention.

Gu refinement was not like fighting or killing, it was purely technical. The most important reason was that Immortal Gu were unique and were extremely difficult to successfully refine.

Without Immortal Gu as a benchmark, the competition between Gu Immortals and mortals depended on refining mortal Gu.

Everyone could refine mortal Gu, and to a great extent, it could not embody the gap between immortal and mortal.

Thus, normally speaking, all Gu Immortals would hide their identities when participating in the Refinement Path Convention.

“Start.” Fang Yuan urged the Demon Expelling Sect’s elder.

“Begin quickly!” Firesmith Dragon Chief shouted, he was already impatient to crush this rampant Fang Yuan.

Demon Expelling Sect’s elder endured the pressure from the two, and said firmly with gritted teeth: “It is not yet time, the competition cannot be started. There are still three breaths of time left... three, two, one, okay, activate the isolation Gu formation, close the entrance of the venue, release the task!”

In the previous seven rounds of the Refinement Path Convention, because of too many participants, they could only let the participants take the test in turns.

Now, at the eighth round, the number of participants had greatly reduced. Each test venue only held the competition once, the Gu Masters who missed this chance would be regarded as voluntarily giving up.

The Gu worms that contained the tasks were also very specific. This information path rank five mortal Gu was a method of Heavenly Court, and had extraordinary ability in preserving secrets.

The tasks were not stored inside, but controlled by Heavenly Court. The instant the competition was about to begin, the true tasks would be transmitted.

Everyone, inside and outside the stage, went quiet when the task was released. They were holding their breaths as they fixed their gazes on the task, it was so quiet that even a pin dropping could be heard.

The eighth task: Refine a keep silent Gu, a rank five sound path Gu worm. The participant who successfully refines it first will be the winner and can advance to the next round. The remaining Gu Masters will be eliminated.

The materials provided were: Immortal soul grass, worry stones, a rank four apathy Gu, six rank three muted mouth Gu, two rank four sinking Gu... and the test did not allow the use of other materials.

The Gu recipes provided were: Six different keep silent Gu recipes, three different apathy Gu recipes and one collusion Gu recipe.

Everyone was frowning.

The difficulty of this task could be considered about ten times higher than the seventh round!

Not only were there ten different Gu recipes, it also demanded a discerning eye, so the Gu Master could choose those most suitable for themselves. Moreover, the supplied materials were limited and did not allow the Gu Master to use materials they brought, in addition, these materials could not satisfy the requirements of any one Gu recipe.

This meant that the Gu Masters would need to reverse-refine apathy Gu, muted mouth Gu or sinking Gu to obtain more refinement materials. They would have to make use of these materials to finally refine the rank five sound path keep silent Gu.

Another method was for the participating Gu Masters to use wisdom path methods to sum up these Gu recipes and improve them, deducing a Gu recipe that met the conditions using the supplied materials as the base.

However, between these two methods, the first one was naturally the most worthwhile and effective. The second method required extremely high wisdom path attainment, and by this stage, it was rare to see Gu Masters who also had deep wisdom path attainment.

More importantly, this test took time into consideration.

Only the first one to refine the Gu successfully could be the winner, while the rest were eliminated.

The mental pressure was high. And during the final steps, it was likely for there to be those who could not endure the mental pressure, making a mistake and failing.

Firesmith Dragon Chief almost coughed out blood when he saw the task.

What kind of shitty task was this?

Firesmith Dragon Chief almost cursed out loud!

He was actually a fire path Gu Immortal, and was most proficient in refining fire path Gu worms. This sound path Gu worm clearly did not fall within his proficiency range, moreover, several of the crucial refinement materials could not be handled with fire refinement techniques!

This was awkward.

Fang Yuan had rampantly asked Firesmith Dragon Chief to use his strongest Gu refinement killer move, mad deity’s blazing flames.

Firesmith Dragon Chief was furious and had also planned to use this killer move to completely humiliate Fang Yuan.

However with such a task, what would Firesmith Dragon Chief use mad deity’s blazing flames for? Using the fire to burn air?

This task was extremely at odds with Firesmith Dragon Chief.

Relatively speaking, out of his entire Gu refinement attainment, he could only display eighty percent. Even if he was a Gu Immortal, they also had areas where they were proficient in and those that they were not.

This task just happened to be an aspect which Firesmith Dragon Chief was most unskilled in.

Naturally, refinement path grandmaster attainment was not just for show, Firesmith Dragon Chief could absolutely succeed in refining the Gu.

However, the key thing was the appearance of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s true skills were enough to threaten Firesmith Dragon Chief. Among experts of similar levels, just a slight decrease in capability could determine the winner and the loser, let alone when Firesmith Dragon Chief was weakened by a whole twenty percent!

‘This guy chose such great timing, his luck is seriously too good! No, I must defeat him!’ Firesmith Dragon Chief swore to himself, and glanced at Fang Yuan.

However, at the next moment, his eyeballs almost popped out!

Fang Yuan had already started refining!

How was it possible?

How could he start so fast?

The supplied Gu recipes and materials could not be matched together. Gu Masters had to reverse-refine Gu worms to create materials, or sum up the Gu recipes and deduce a new one. In short, refining rank five keep silent Gu at the end.

Thus, this required the Gu Master to think deeply, making deductions constantly in their mind, and consider the probabilities of orthodox refining and reverse-refining, from there, combining many ideas to make the most concise Gu refinement plan.

This thought process was extremely important.

The ideas from the thoughts needed to have low risks. If the risks were high, there could be many failures, resulting in materials being wasted and not leaving enough for the Gu refinement, and with the condition of not being able to use one’s own materials, they could only admit defeat.

While seeking low risk, they also needed to consume the least amount of time. If you consumed too much time, someone else might have already finished, and even if you succeeded in refining, you would be eliminated.

Demanding low risk and also low time consumption, this was quite difficult.

They would require meticulous thinking, constant comparisons and arrangements, and then choosing the best plan out of them all.

Even though Firesmith Dragon Chief was a grandmaster in refinement path, he estimated he would also need about eight minutes of time.

However, this, this, this Fang Yuan, how could he start refining Gu at the very start?

“Is there a mistake?”

“He really has such confidence?!”

“Foolish, a workman must sharpen his tools if he is to work well. The correct way is to calm down and think.”

The participating Gu Masters glanced at Fang Yuan a few times before concentrating on thinking.

Fang Yuan had the lead and was progressing extremely quickly.

Other Gu Masters had not even begun refining, only he had started, this naturally led to most of the spectators gazing at him.

Exclamations of praise sounded out repeatedly.

“Such dazzling methods.”

“Skilled, too skilled! It is simply like an instinct that has seeped into his bones!”

“But is this okay? Haste makes waste.”

Fang Yuan naturally knew the logic of haste makes waste, but he knew the contents of this task.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, after he became a blood path Gu Immortal, he had once planned to participate in the Refinement Path Convention.

The reason?

Because even the demonic path could participate in the Refinement Path Convention, even wanted criminals could register their names overtly, and the righteous path would not arrest them.

During that time, Fang Yuan did not have a single Immortal Gu and was putting his efforts in gathering immortal materials to refine Immortal Gu, the whole process was extremely arduous.

In comparison, although he was an immortal zombie in this life, his financial circumstances were many times better.

Fang Yuan had considered almost any possible method to gather immortal materials. He realized that the Refinement Path Convention was an opportunity to obtain large amounts of immortal materials.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 842: Capturing Fang Zheng in Public

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, by the time he placed his attention on the Refinement Path Convention, only a time period of over a decade had passed since the previous competition.

To join the Refinement Path Convention, Fang Yuan had started preparing for it over eighty years in advance during his previous life.

Every day, he spent some time practising both day and night.

During this process of practising, Fang Yuan had the mindset of a youngster on Earth facing a mountain of exam practice. He collected all of the different tasks throughout the years of competitions and practised them laboriously, trying to discern the intention of the set task.

He easily obtained all of the questions. There were people in Central Continent specialized in selling such information, these were easy to buy and sell. People seeking intelligence were simply everywhere.

Thinking back to the times when he buried himself in practice, they were truly terrifying memories. But in actuality, Fang Yuan's refinement path foundation was built during that time. Without that period, he would not reach his current refinement path quasi-grandmaster level.

Thus, Fang Yuan not only remembered this competition's contents, he even knew the contents of many previous competitions, and even future competitions!

With such a huge advantage, even if his refinement path attainment was inferior to Firesmith Dragon Chief, so what?

Of course, this had a drawback.

That was the butterfly effect.

Since rebirth, Fang Yuan had altered the developments of many events. By burning a tree, it could cause a forest fire.

Those skilled in swimming could drown, those skilled in riding could fall. By relying solely on his advantage, would Fang Yuan cause his own demise due to a change in the questions this time?

This was entirely possible.

But this was only a possibility.

According to Fang Yuan's deductions, there was a very small probability of this happening.

Fang Yuan decided to take a risk.

And he succeeded, the contents did not change at all!

Time continued to pass

The state of the intense Gu refinement competition was starting to become clear.

Fang Yuan was in the lead, he was ahead of the second place Firesmith Dragon Chief by a large margin. He was radiating with confidence, he refined Gu calmly, maintaining his huge lead and gradually fermenting despair in all of the competitors who were trying to catch up to him.

Some Gu Masters outside the stage started to see some deeper things, they praised: “Fang Yuan has such quick wits. He did not think about it excessively, he designed this Gu refinement plan straight away. Incredible, his plan can not only keep a stable refinement speed, there are also fewer steps, allowing some mistakes. Even if he fails several times, the amount of materials are enough for him to try again.”

This was natural.

The plan Fang Yuan used was the finalized perfect plan that countless Gu Masters had come up with after many attempts in his previous life.

There were more people gasping at Fang Yuan's Gu refinement techniques: “Fang Yuan's Gu refinement techniques are truly incredible. He has so many of them, they are like his inborn skills. This is truly the result of immense practice and hard work! Now, he is refining keep silent Gu, involving many techniques that are not used normally, but he could actually use them so skillfully, it is hard to imagine his proficiency with normal techniques.”

This was natural.

For this eighth round, Fang Yuan had made many preparations.

In Hu Immortal blessed land, he had specially trained and refined keep silent Gu. He did the entire procedure over and over again, he practiced at least two hundred times!

“Most notably, he is radiating with confidence from inside to outside. He believes in his success, as if the failure rate of the Gu refinement does not exist. This is the demeanor of a refinement path expert, the Three Olds of refinement path in history were just like this.”

“That’s right, looking at him refine Gu is like watching a dazzling performance!”

“How great is his confidence, it is almost as if victory is kept in his pocket.”

“His advantage is too great, even if Fang Yuan fails the Gu refinement once or twice, he can still fight for first place with Firesmith Dragon Chief who is currently second.”

Under the gazes of countless people, Fang Yuan won this competition with a huge lead, without any surprises.

Throughout the process, Fang Yuan unquestionably suppressed his competitors. Even Firesmith Dragon Chief lost to him by a great margin.

“Lord Firesmith Dragon Chief lost...”

“He was eliminated like this?”

Spectators from Myriad Dragon Dock could not believe their eyes, they muttered dazedly.

“Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan!” The people from Immortal Crane Sect shouted, they cheered loudly!

Only Fang Zheng was still sitting, he looked at his brother on the stage, he felt as if the black robe was shrouded over his heart.

“Perhaps in my lifetime, I’ll never get a chance to take revenge!” At this moment, Fang Zheng was extremely discouraged, he had no fighting spirit left in him.

Even though he had deep hatred, Fang Zheng felt extremely weak in front of Fang Yuan, there was nothing he could do!

Firesmith Dragon Chief was staring with wide opened eyes, he gazed at Fang Yuan fixedly.

He was unwilling to accept this!

He did not even use his strongest killer move, this damned question restricted him.

But he had to admit that Fang Yuan’s mind was very sharp and fast.

“He actually designed such a flawless Gu refinement plan in such a short time. Is this Fang Yuan guy really an immortal zombie? Is there an error with the information?”

Immortal zombies were worse in thinking, the plan that Fang Yuan ‘thought of’ made this Gu Immortal, Firesmith Dragon Chief, feel extremely ashamed. At once, Firesmith Dragon Chief was suspicious of Fang Yuan’s status as an immortal zombie.

This round of the competition was over, Fang Yuan walked down slowly as he left the stage.

He did not mock or humiliate Firesmith Dragon Chief, the latter couldn’t help but relax slightly.

Since he had won, there was no point in humiliating the other party. If he provoked Firesmith Dragon Chief and caused him to issue a challenge for a duel, Fang Yuan would only be inviting trouble for himself.

Eventually, Firesmith Dragon Chief brought the people from Myriad Dragon Dock away, leaving with regret.

Fang Yuan obtained the victor’s reward from Demon Expelling Sect, it was a number of immortal materials, there was a huge variety of them, but each of them had little quantity.

Starting from the eighth round, the rewards were far more valuable than the first seven rounds, there were immortal materials as well as Immortal Gu recipes and others.

If this was not the case, why would Fang Yuan treat the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention as a method to gather immortal materials in his previous life?

Fang Yuan kept the immortal materials, he rejected Demon Expelling Sect’s invitation to stay as a guest, he walked all the way to the exit.

At the mountain gate, Immortal Crane Sect’s group was waiting already.

“Lord Fang Yuan!” Seeing Fang Yuan’s arrival, Elder Yan Tang and another elder greeted him together.

Fang Zheng was helpless, he was also an elder that had come along, but he was standing behind the two of them with an expressionless face, he did not even make any greetings.

“Fellow sect members, a good day to you all.” Under the mask, Fang Yuan’s warm voice could be heard.

Immortal Crane Sect’s group was very excited.

From Fang Yuan’s earlier arrogance, they felt that he would be hard to talk to. But now, he spoke with a kind and warm tone, they felt that Fang Yuan was truly different when facing his fellow sect members, compared to dealing with outsiders.

Fang Yuan first looked at elder Yan Tang.

In the competition earlier, this elder had participated as well.

Fang Yuan gave pointers casually: “Mm, your refinement path attainment is not low, but your plan had several flaws... this is how you should deal with them, for example, at the first step...”

Elder Yan Tang heard this and felt great admiration towards Fang Yuan, he thanked him profusely.

The disciples behind him had shining eyes, filled with admiration and praise.

Fang Yuan directed his gaze at Fang Zheng now, his voice turned cold as he said with a tone filled with disappointment: “My brother, what expression are you showing? Are you afraid I will scold you? Your performance is just as disappointing as always. You did not even pass the first round of the Refinement Path Convention, you simply make us lose face!”

The atmosphere turned heavy, the disciples were grimacing as they thought: Fang Yuan is such a fierce brother!

Immortal Crane Sect’s elders were stunned, it seemed that these two brothers had a rather cold relationship.

Fang Zheng showed a look of hatred as he snorted, about to speak.

Fang Yuan waved his hand, he was going to attack him in public!

Fang Zheng was a rank five Gu Master, at the peak of the mortal world. But he was an enslavement path Gu Master, most of his battle strength relied on crane groups, and he also did not expect Fang Yuan to attack him in public under everyone’s sight without caring for the consequences!

Fang Yuan’s attack was premeditated.

He not only used several mortal killer moves, among them was a wisdom path killer move from Dong Fang Chang Fan.

While Immortal Crane Sect was staring blankly, Fang Yuan struck, immediately immobilizing Fang Zheng while at a distance.

“Fang Zheng, you are too disappointing. At this stage, you are still moving around outside, why are you not settling down and cultivating! With such strength, you still want to attract attention outside, what is the point? Our parents are gone, as your brother, I hold the duty of a father to educate you! Since you are interested in refinement path, from today onwards, you will stay by my side, and I will impart to you my refinement path experience. You have to cultivate with all your heart, until I am satisfied.” Fang Yuan chided.

“I don’t want you to take care of me! I am an elder of Immortal Crane Sect, I have grown up already!” Fang Zheng screamed, he resembled a rebellious youth, refusing to accept discipline.

But in fact, he was feeling an icy chill inside.

He could not control himself, the words that he shouted were not words that he wanted to say!

This was a wisdom path killer move from Dong Fang Chang Fan, it directly controlled Fang Zheng’s mind and created fake thoughts that infiltrated Fang Zheng, causing him to act in accordance with these thoughts.

This was similar to the way enslavement path Gu Masters controlled beasts. But the difference was, enslavement path Gu Masters usually only control beasts, they had simple thoughts. Controlling humans was much harder, they had complex minds.

Fang Yuan was a rank six immortal zombie, against Fang Zheng, a rank five Gu Master, he had to use and coordinate several killer moves at once to smoothly capture Fang Zheng.

“No! Save me, will anyone save me! Master, master!” Fang Zheng screamed inwardly.

But there was no response from the spirit incubating flea.

Fang Yuan had cut off Fang Zheng’s connection to his aperture.

Fang Zheng stared at Fang Yuan with a furious expression. He did not think that Fang Yuan would be so crazy, attacking him here. He was simply a lunatic, he had no reservations towards offending Immortal Crane Sect!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 843: Immortal Gu Change Form

Fang Yuan was in an alliance with Immortal Crane Sect, how could he dare to attack a member of Immortal Crane Sect?

Fang Zheng knew more inside information than the other elders and disciples here, earlier, when He Feng Yang and Cang Yu attacked Hu Immortal blessed land and failed, because of the benefits of guts Gu, they reached an agreement.

One of the clauses in the agreement was that members from both sides were not to attack each other. This was why Fang Zheng felt he was safe.

Fang Yuan retracted his hand, Fang Zheng was immobilized, nor could he shout, he could not resist as a formless force pulled him up and sent him into Fang Yuan’s hands.

Immortal Crane Sect’s group was looking on with dumbfounded expressions.

“Such terrifying strength!”

“Elder Fang Zheng has rank five cultivation level, but he was captured without putting up any resistance.”

“Even though Fang Zheng is an enslavement path Gu Master, isn’t that too absurd?”

Fang Yuan’s unbelievable abilities struck fear in these people.

Fang Zheng screamed internally: “Are you people watching a show? Quickly save me, he is no longer my brother, he killed our aunt and uncle, he killed all the clansmen in our clan, he is a demon, he is a great demon!”

At the same time, Fang Zheng opened his mouth and shouted: “I will not go to your place, why should I listen to you? You want to lecture me again? I can decide my own life! I have my own goals, how can you understand my dreams? I can work hard myself, I can surpass you!”

It was just like he was a completely rebellious and out of control youth.

Fang Zheng heard his own yells and lost all hope!

Fang Yuan sighed, he said to the people in Immortal Crane Sect: “During this period of time, my good-for-nothing brother has caused you trouble.”

“No trouble, no trouble at all.” Immortal Crane Sect’s members waved their hands in dismissal quickly.

Fang Yuan nodded, he said: “I will bring Fang Zheng with me and educate him personally. I have talked to your sect leader regarding this matter already, you just need to go back and inform him.”

Fang Yuan was spouting nonsense, he did not even know what the sect leader looked like.

The two elders let go of their last bits of hesitation.

In order for Immortal Crane Sect to maintain its reputation, Fang Yuan’s matter had always been covered in lies. Right now, Fang Yuan was using these lies to trick the members of Immortal Crane Sect.

Fang Yuan carried Fang Zheng and left.

The surrounding Gu Masters felt a peculiar feeling when they saw this, but since Immortal Crane Sect was saying nothing, why would they interfere? Furthermore, the target was the renowned refinement path expert Fang Yuan.

There were Gu Masters of Demon Expelling Sect who were worried, they went over to ask.

Elder Yan Tang smiled as he said: “There’s no issue, Lord Fang Yuan and Elder Fang Zheng are brothers, right now, the elder brother is teaching his younger brother.”

Demon Expelling Sect was convinced and left.

Immortal Crane Sect’s gang watched as Fang Yuan left, many disciples gazed towards Fang Zheng with a look of envy.

Someone sighed: “Even though Lord Fang Yuan speaks in a cold tone, he is really concerned about his one and only precious brother.”

“That’s right, it is such a rare opportunity to receive the teachings of a refinement path grandmaster.”

“You know, after Fang Zheng accepted the sect mission last time, he came back and became a rank five elder. Now that he is brought away by his brother, would he come back as a refinement path grandmaster?”

“No way...”

“That is too exaggerated!”

“Even so, the guidance of such an expert is incredible precious, he has lots to gain from it.”

“Sigh, why don’t I have a brother like this?” A disciple said the sentence that everyone was thinking about.

If at this moment, they knew that Fang Yuan had captured Fang Zheng as a backup plan for his possession, what wondrous expressions would they show?

PIop.

Fang Yuan threw Fang Zheng on the ground.

Fang Zheng struggled to get up, he screamed internally: “Fang Yuan, you vile demon, what do you want with me?! You and Immortal Crane Sect had made an agreement, you cannot kill me, an elder of Immortal Crane Sect.”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “I am not going to kill you, why are you so agitated, oh dear brother, just wait here obediently and quietly.”

Fang Zheng showed fear on his face, he cried out from within: “Fang Yuan is not my master, Lord Sky Crane, how can he hear my inner thoughts?”

Fang Yuan smiled arrogantly, looking at Fang Zheng who was at his feet, he said: “Your so-called master is only a soul now. Even if he were to be alive, he was only a rank five Gu Master in his prime.”

Saying this, Fang Yuan grabbed with a hand and plundered all of the mortal Gu on Fang Zheng’s body.

The spirit incubating flea trembled weakly, this was the fierce resistance of Lord Sky Crane.

But how could he succeed?

If this was back on Qing Mao mountain, a hundred Fang Yuans would not be Lord Sky Crane’s match. But now, Fang Yuan was completely different, he was a rank six Gu Immortal. Lord Sky Crane had even become merely a soul.

“Fang Yuan, even if you do not kill us, capturing us violates the alliance agreement, you will face fierce backlash from breaking it! I urge you to let us go, as a grand Gu Immortal, how can you take interest in us mortals? Are you not afraid that doing this would ruin your relationship with Immortal Crane Sect? Don’t think Immortal Crane Sect cannot subdue you! The foundation of the ten great ancient sects is beyond your imagination.” Lord Sky Crane screamed in the spirit incubating flea, he knew that Fang Yuan could hear him.

Fang Yuan raised his head and laughed: “Hahaha, Lord Sky Crane, I need to thank you. If you did not attack Qing Mao mountain, I would not have gotten to this level today through various opportunities. What can Immortal Crane Sect do even if I capture you two? Since you know many secrets, you should know that the ten great ancient sects are restraining each other, everything is based on benefits and self-interest. What do you think is more important, the one and only guts Gu, or the two of you?”

Lord Sky Crane was speechless.

A cold light shined in Fang Yuan’s eyes, he mobilized countless Gu worms as he formed a soul path killer move at once: “Give me information about everything you know, soul search!”

Two hours later, Fang Yuan walked out of this underground prison. Behind him, the entrance shut tightly.

Fang Yuan’s red eyes were shining with light as he muttered: “Lord Sky Crane, First Gen Gu Yue, blood path true inheritance...”

Through soul searching, he had learned all about Lord Sky Crane and First Gen Gu Yue’s enmity. He even learned many of Immortal Crane Sect’s secrets.

“This Lord Sky Crane is a capable subordinate of He Feng Yang, if I capture him, will He Feng Yang come and ask for him? This is slightly troublesome.”

“Hehe, he actually did not want to use possession and wanted to protect Fang Zheng. This Lord Sky Crane holds onto his beliefs resolutely.” Towards this, Fang Yuan praised without holding back.

Even though he was a demonic overlord, he could appreciate and admire such an act of sacrificing oneself for another person, looking at it from a neutral perspective.

The same kind of rice raises many different people. People in their lives all have their own goals and motivations.

Towards these kinds of people with different value systems, Fang Yuan could accept and appreciate their existence.

If he was not so open-minded, he would not have his current achievements.

“Judging from this, Old Lord Can Yang must have gotten the possession technique from Dong Fang Chang Fan and brought it back to Immortal Crane Sect.”

Lord Sky Crane’s memories were not very helpful to Fang Yuan.

He was only a mortal Gu Master, he did not know any deep secrets of Immortal Crane Sect, Fang Yuan could make little use of them.

As for Fang Zheng, Fang Yuan did not let him off, he searched his soul too.

Fang Yuan intended to keep his brother in captivity for a long time. If one day, he had no other choice, Fang Yuan would have to use this last resort and possess Fang Zheng, regaining his living status.

But this way, he would lose his second aperture, all of the strength path dao marks on him would be gone, he would need to undergo immortal ascension again.

The loss was huge.

Second aperture Immortal Gu was created using countless precious immortal materials, among which was lifespan Gu!

One could say that in the short term, Fang Yuan could not refine second aperture Immortal Gu.

Lifespan Gu were hard to find, even if Fang Yuan could find them, with his current situation, he might use it directly to raise his lifespan.

“If possible, I would rather not possess Fang Zheng. But if my identity gets exposed and I do not manage to revive, I would need to use possession. My current target is the Refinement Path Convention, if I get into the top six, I would be able to benefit from the Infallible inheritance and get a chance to refine Gu with assured success!”

The Infallible inheritance was a refinement path inheritance, what did being named infallible mean? It meant no failure in Gu refinement!

Once he got into the top six places, he would be transported into a hidden blessed land, Fang Yuan planned to refine the Immortal Gu Change Form after this!

This was a rank six transformation path Immortal Gu. Once he had it, Fang Yuan’s vaguely familiar face would be elevated to another level, it would not be such a weak version of only concealing his regional aura.

As for the Immortal Gu recipe of change form Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan already had it.

This was all thanks to Lang Ya land spirit.

Long ago, when Fang Yuan first obtained wisdom Gu, he had made a deal with Lang Ya land spirit to complete Immortal Gu recipes for him.

Fang Yuan profited from this and not only got out of his financial troubles, he even obtained a large number of Immortal Gu recipes.

And this change form Immortal Gu recipe was one of them.

As for the immortal materials to refine change form Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan was almost finished in preparing them.

He bought half of the immortal materials from Northern Plains’ auction. For the other half, Fang Yuan asked Hei Lou Lan to connect to treasure yellow heaven using her blessed land. Fang Yuan used his remaining immortal materials to sell or trade and after many transactions, he obtained most of the ones he needed.

The last remaining portion was filled by the immortal material rewards from winning the eighth round by Fang Yuan.

In the subsequent rounds, Fang Yuan went on the offensive and used his rebirth advantage to defeat all of the tough foes in advance.

At once, Fang Yuan’s reputation was soaring, forces of all sizes, and countless Gu Immortals were focusing their gazes on him.

Other people were progressing normally, staying in their own territories and advancing safely.

Only Fang Yuan was an exception, moving about and challenging different people, but he won every single round!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 844: Contest Between Two Fangs

Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, twelfth round.

The competition was at its most crucial moment, the entire stage’s focus was on two people.

One was wearing a black robe, his body was strong and muscular, he wore a mask as he manipulated the flame in front of him, it was Fang Yuan.

The other was wearing a plain white robe, his hair was white as snow and he had a tattoo on his forehead, it was Fang Huai.

“This is a contest between two Fangs!”

“Fang Huai is amazing, he used three refinement path killer moves and reduced the lead.”

“Even so, Fang Yuan still has the advantage. Sigh, he is too amazing, he probably is the best in quick thinking in this competition! This time, the moment the Gu refinement started, he took the lead by a huge margin.”

“There are still uncertainties. Both Fang Huai and Fang Yuan have one chance left in their hands. If they use it, they can remove a portion of immortal materials from the other party!”

Be it on the stage or below it, audiences were discussing among themselves enthusiastically.

By now, all of the other Gu Masters in this round had been eliminated, only Fang Huai and Fang Yuan were left.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was calm as he focused on controlling the fire in front of him.

“Fang Huai...” He even had the time to turn around and look at Fang Huai on his left, observing his opponent.

Fang Huai was a Gu Immortal as well, he placed third in Fang Yuan’s previous life. He was a wood path Gu Immortal, in the entire competition, this round’s task was the most unfavorable for him.

Fang Yuan used this opportunity to challenge and attempt to get rid of him in advance.

But Fang Huai had gone all out in the middle to later stage, using three refinement path killer moves, among them was a refinement path immortal killer move, he pulled his distance closer to Fang Yuan in an instant. It caused the result of this Gu refinement to become uncertain again.

“Worthy of someone who achieved third place in my previous life, he is so hard to deal with... eh!” Fang Yuan’s expression changed suddenly.

The flame in front of him flickered, the blue peacock’s head that had halfway been melted suddenly turned into ash and fell onto the ground.

“This?!” Fang Yuan’s expression did not change, but his heart sank.

“Oh no, I happened to hit the chance of failure!” He reacted quickly, turning around and grabbing at his right side, towards the final blue peacock there.

But just as he killed the blue peacock and was about to throw its head towards the fire, Fang Huai spoke: “I am using my chance to remove the Gu refinement material, blue peacock, from Fang Yuan!”

The elder hosting the competition immediately responded: “Approved.”

The moment he said that, the blue peacock beside Fang Yuan vanished and was taken away.

The crowd gasped!

“Each person was given two live blue peacocks, Fang Yuan wanted to use a peacock’s head to refine Gu and failed once. Right now, his only remaining blue peacock was taken away!”

“Beautiful, a beautiful choice. Fang Huai picked his timing really well, Fang Yuan is in trouble.”

“Indeed, Fang Yuan was at the last few steps, but after losing the crucial materials, he can only change the Gu recipe and take a huge detour towards the finish line. Looking at Fang Huai, he was not far behind Fang Yuan originally, right now, he should be able to catch up and eliminate Fang Yuan!”

“Fang Yuan is going to be eliminated?!”

Noticing this point, the crowd was in a commotion.

Recently, Fang Yuan went ahead and challenged many Gu refinement experts, his power was ingrained in them.

The outside world had greatly raised their evaluation towards his strength, most people thought that Fang Yuan had reached the attainment of a refinement path grandmaster.

A small number of people even felt that the ability Fang Yuan displayed had exceeded the level of a refinement path grandmaster, they thought he had reached refinement path quasi-great grandmaster attainment.

Not mentioning refinement path grandmaster, the evaluation of him being at quasi-great grandmaster in refinement path was too absurdly high!

Out of the refinement path attainment levels of ordinary, master, grandmaster, great grandmaster, and supreme grandmaster, only three people had reached the highest level in history, they were the Three Olds of refinement path, their names were Old Eccentric Tian Nan, Old Immortal Kong Jue, and Long Hair Ancestor. But even quasi-great grandmasters were very rare, among the refinement path Gu Masters publicly known in Northern Plains, there were only four at that level or higher, they were Yao Huang, Murong Xue Xiang, Lady Wan Shou, and Lady Miao Li, these were the four highest experts of refinement path in Northern Plains.

In terms of refinement path attainment, it was impossible for Fang Yuan to be on the same level as them.

But it was not strange that people had such thoughts.

The capability that Fang Yuan displayed was simply too great, he knew all of the questions in advance, this allowed him to stay far ahead of those at second place in every round.

“When one walks along a river’s banks, how can they not wet their shoes?. This time, Fang Yuan struck and wanted to eliminate Fang Huai, but he caused harm to himself instead, hahaha.” Some people were gloating.

“That’s right, he is too arrogant, I couldn’t stand him since long ago, well done Fang Huai!”

“This Fang Huai is too despicable, Lord Fang Yuan, you have to hang on.” Immortal Crane Sect disciples, who were watching, shouted to cheer on Fang Yuan.

After Fang Yuan captured Fang Zheng, Immortal Crane Sect did not make a response, it seemed like they acknowledged this matter.

“Fang Yuan, I win.” Fang Huai spoke with a clear smile, he was very confident, it was as if he had already grasped victory in his hands.

“Is that so?” Fang Yuan sneered, he grabbed with his hand and the headless peacock corpse flew towards him.

There were two live blue peacocks among the Gu refinement materials, Fang Yuan killed one of them and took the head. In the end, he failed and the second peacock got taken away.

Right now, the corpse that he had was left behind from the first.

Fang Yuan opened his fist as a gush of thick blood colored fog burst out from his hand. In a few breaths’ time, the fog covered the headless corpse entirely, bystanders could not see what was going on.

“This is an evil blood refinement art again!”

“Hmph, this is not the first time Fang Yuan has used blood refinement techniques, why is such a person an elder of Immortal Crane Sect?!”

“One of the ten great ancient sects, Immortal Crane Sect, is also starting to fall from grace?”

Many Gu Masters exclaimed after seeing this.

Some people even shouted: “Why is such a person not on the Demon Judgment Board?”

Fang Yuan used blood refinement techniques time and time again in public, Immortal Crane Sect was facing strong public criticism.

“What do you know? Blood refinement is just blood refinement, it is only a technique. If used in the hands of righteousness, it is righteous, when used in the hands of evil, it is evil! It all depends on oneself!” An Immortal Crane Sect disciple was indignant, he rebuked loudly.

But the elder that brought them scolded him loudly: “Quiet, do not spout nonsense!”

This disciple could only lower his head and sit down quietly and resentfully.

In just a while, the blood colored fog faded, and the headless peacock corpse shrunk by twenty percent. But a blue peacock head had appeared instead.

“This is a blood path Gu refinement killer move, it is so amazing, able to collect corpses and transform the material.”

“This kind of material conversion can be done in other paths too, but isn’t his rate of conversion too fast?”

Everyone’s gazes were fixed on this.

Fang Yuan tossed this peacock head into the fire, as the fire burned, the peacock head started to melt, the molten head fusing into the incomplete Gu that was in the fire.

A moment later, the bird head melted and fused into the incomplete Gu fully, Fang Yuan went to the next step.

“It is as good as over.” Seeing this, some people sighed.

“That’s right, the last few steps have no risks, without any mishaps, Fang Yuan will be the winner.”

“The failure earlier was just an unexpected surprise, it had a low probability and will likely never happen again.”

“Sigh, to think that Fang Huai could not stop Fang Yuan either.”

Just as everyone was sighing, Fang Huai laughed loudly inwardly: “This is the way, this is the way, you think you’ve won, huh. I took away your blue peacock, the objective to waste your time has been achieved. With my final refinement path killer move, I can surpass you and become the winner of this round. Fang Yuan, I need to thank you, you approached me personally, once I defeat you, it would be like I defeated everyone that you defeated. Hahaha, this is great!”

But just at this moment, Fang Yuan spoke: “I want to use a chance and remove one of my opponent’s materials.”

The hosting elder immediately replied: “Please speak.”

Fang Huai was slightly shocked but he soon smiled coldly to himself, thinking: “Remove it, remove whatever you want!”

Fang Yuan took a look at Fang Huai as his gaze was calm as water: “I will remove the Gu refinement material, wild bull eyeball.”

Fang Huai’s cold smile froze!

The hosting elder was stunned too.

The audience was confused, didn’t Fang Huai already use the crucial material, wild bull eyeball, and fuse it into his incomplete Gu?

Fang Yuan wanted to take away a Gu refinement material that had already been used, this was not allowed by the rules.

But Fang Yuan was insistent on it, he said to Fang Huai: “Fang Huai, are you not handing over the wild bull eyeball that you are secretly hiding? Are you trying to break the rules of the competition?”

Fang Huai’s face showed extreme disbelief.

He hid the wild bull eyeball using his unique technique, Fang Yuan actually sensed it? Wild bull eyeball was an important Gu refinement material, Fang Huai had long ago during the refinement made preparations for it and the refinement path killer move that would bring him victory relied on it.

Without the wild bull eyeball, Fang Huai would not have the necessary components, how could he defeat Fang Yuan?

But if he did not take it out, he could not hide it from anyone else anyway.

Even if he could, if Fang Yuan raised an objection, the Refinement Path Convention would undergo a thorough search, Fang Huai’s reputation would be ruined!

Thus, Fang Huai had to take it out regardless of his intentions!

Under everyone’s shocked gazes, he gritted his teeth as he took out the wild bull eyeball from the fire.

“Here!” He smashed the wild bull eyeball on the ground in rage, he scattered the Gu refinement flame as he walked away.

This was the same as admitting his defeat.

The crowd was silent before bursting into a commotion.

Fang Yuan ignored these voices, he refined the Gu worms in his hands unhurriedly until he obtained success.

“I finally won, this way, there should be no problem in getting top six.” Fang

Yuan was bathed in everyone’s shock, admiration, praise, and envy, but he had no expression as he let out a breath of cloudy air: “Thankfully, I had my previous life’s memories, I knew about Fang Huai’s trump card, otherwise, he might have won!”

He looked like he had an easy time, but he actually faced great pressure internally.

He was only a refinement path quasi-grandmaster, even with the advantage of rebirth, it was very difficult to eliminate these competitors.

The case of Firesmith Dragon Chief was only an exception.

Though Fang Yuan managed to beat these people, it was not like what the outside world was saying, that he ‘had an easy time’, or he ‘had huge superiority’.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 845: Failure Has Value

Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

The sky was clear and bright. Countless exquisite halls made of white jade emitted translucent light.

A rank eight Gu Immortal, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, slowly pushed open the large door of the discussion hall.

He walked into the hall while leaning on a walking cane.

In an instant, the wills of over twenty Gu Immortals inside the hall turned towards him.

“Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, you have worked hard for the last hundred years...”

“After completing this segment of fixing fate Gu, please take a good rest. Heavenly Court needs a senior expert like you.”

“There aren’t any unexpected situations in this Refinement Path Convention, right?”

The Gu Immortals’ wills started talking, breaking the silence.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord opened his cloudy eyes and looked around, before fixing his gaze on a will seated at a high position.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord spoke: “Lian Jiu Sheng, you should awaken. The current Refinement Path Convention is reaching its end, we still need some preparations for the recovery of Fate.”

Lian Jiu Sheng’s will nodded as he slowly stood up.

He then spoke: “To restore Fate, it won’t be possible with just myself and Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, we still need the power of two rank eights. I wonder which friends will lend a hand?”

“My main body is suppressing the immemorial desolate beast group in Falling Heavenly River, I am unable to help.”

“My physical body has rested for long enough, but my soul is researching a rank nine Immortal Gu recipe and is at the crucial moment...”

“Let me help, maybe this time, I can find several portions of profound eerie wind in the underground depths.”

The wills communicated for a while, finally two wills decided to wake up.

“It’s decided then.” Lian Jiu Sheng’s will nodded towards Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, before soaring to the sky.

Following him were other two wills.

These three wills flew into the sky, towards the entrance leading outside, before vanishing from everyone’s sight.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord turned around to leave, the door to the discussion hall slowly closed behind him.

Three days later.

Central Continent, Hairy Foot Mountain.

Four figures suddenly appeared in the air above Hairy Foot Mountain.

They completely concealed their rank eight auras as they looked down at the mountain below.

It was the four Gu Immortals from Heavenly Court!

“Hairy Foot Mountain...” The white haired man with a young appearance, Lian Jiu Sheng, sighed: “Unknowingly, another hundred years have passed in Central Continent.”

“Let’s start quickly. I am pressed for time during this period of awakening, I still have many things to do.” Bi Chen Tian who had red eyebrows and green pupils, urged.

“Alright, let me start this off.” Bai Cang Shui was the only female immortal among the four. She stretched out her hands, instantly, white fog started rising slowly in the surroundings.

Immediately afterwards, Bi Chen Tian opened his eyes, emitting two bright pillars of light that shot straight at Hairy Foot Mountain.

Hairy Foot Mountain looked ordinary, it was small and lacked resources, even the surrounding small to middle sized forces did not want to occupy it. However, right now, it looked mystical as it shined under the immortal killer move of Bi Chen Tian.

Space fluctuated intensely, creating countless ripples.

The entirety of Hairy Foot Mountain shook slightly.

Bi Chen Tian’s attacking immortal killer move had terrifying might, but was not the least bit effective right now.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was the third to make a move, after which was Lian Jiu Sheng at the end.

Four rank eight Gu Immortals were working together, but it was still far from enough. The Gu Immortals already had an estimate, thus they continued to undertake a second round of attacks, a third round.

Finally, at the sixth round, Lian Jiu Sheng cried out and dealt the crucial blow, he triggered a qualitative change, producing an effect.

Hairy Foot Mountain disappeared from its spot, and a blessed land opened up in front of the four Gu Immortals.

“This is Infallible blessed land, which holds the Infallible inheritance!” Lian Jiu Sheng sighed as he spoke.

Bi Chen Tian looked several times, speaking with a smile: “There are more mortal failure Gu than the previous time, it seems the scale of the Refinement Path Convention is becoming bigger and bigger.”

Bai Cang Shui took out a handkerchief and wiped the sweat on her forehead: “Every time, we have to spend so much energy to open this place. Lian Jiu Sheng, can’t you completely take down this blessed land?”

“It is difficult, you are also aware that the owner of this blessed land is a refinement path great expert who made things difficult for Ren Zu.” Lian Jiu Sheng sighed.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord nodded: “Heavenly Court has made moves against this blessed land for thousands of years but even until now, we could only take out thirty success dao marks. Every time the infallible inheritance accumulates to the limit, it will have thirty-six success dao marks. We have taken away thirty, which leaves behind six dao marks for those participants of the Refinement Path Convention, and even if we want to seize these, we can’t.”

Lian Jiu Sheng added: “This blessed land is extremely special, it is perfectly enclosed and has no entrances at all. It is not that we cannot break open this blessed land, but if we forcibly cause mayhem, it will be hard to reproduce the wonders of this blessed land. Under this restraint, we can only proceed this way. To capture this blessed land, we not only need refinement path Gu Immortals but also rule path great experts. Unfortunately, whether it be refinement path or rule path, there are extremely few who can cultivate to rank eight.”

The four were silent for a while, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord spoke: “Fortunately, after restoring fate Gu this time, it will be able to display fifty percent of its might. This is a qualitative change compared to before! From now on, we can search for even more fate escapees, and restore the Immortal Gu even faster.”

“Speaking of which, how many escapees did you discover this time? Have you already dealt with them?” Bi Chen Tian asked.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord replied: “I discovered several, I cannot do anything against those in Southern Border and Northern Plains, but the two over here in Central Continent are already being dealt with.”

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> states, after Ren Zu climbed the giant tree and walked out of ordinary abyss, he left behind his daughter, Boundless Forest Samsara.

Ren Zu wanted to save her, but there was nothing he could do.

He had become extraordinary, no longer able to enter ordinary abyss.

Ren Zu saw that pacing around this place was not going to help. He decided to set out again to find a way to rescue his eldest child, Verdant Great Sun, and his fourth child, Boundless Forest Samsara.

He started a new journey, beginning his road of life.

On this day, he came across a hairy man.

The hairy man stopped him, and was clearly happy: “Ren Zu, I had a tough time looking for you.”

Ren Zu felt strange: “I don’t recognize you, why are you searching for me?”

The hairy man explained: “It is like this, Ren Zu. I am the leader of all the hairy men in the world, no hairy man can match my Gu refinement attainment. But I have recently encountered a problem when refining Gu. I want to refine success Gu, but I am unable to confirm if it is success or failure.”

Ren Zu had wanted to continue traveling, but he had a thought well up in his mind, if the hairy man leader could truly refine success Gu and he borrowed this Gu, couldn’t he rescue his eldest child or his fourth child?

Therefore, Ren Zu stopped and talked with the hairy man: “But what do you need from me?”

The hairy man cautiously took out a Gu.

This Gu resembled an ordinary rock and was covered with a thick layer of hair, the hairy man spoke: “I do not dare to break it. If it is success Gu, that is fine. But if it is failure Gu, the moment I break it, I will completely lose my sense of self. But Ren Zu, you are different. You are walking on a path that solely belongs to you, this means you have self Gu. Since you have self Gu, even if you break the failure Gu, you will not lose your self. So I want to request you to appraise it.”

Ren Zu was happy: “So it is like that. I can help you, but if it is success Gu, please give it to me. I have an urgent need for it.”

The hairy man said: “Alright! That is no problem.”

Ren Zu touched the Gu worm in front of him. He made a wish upon this Gu: “Please return my fourth child, Boundless Forest Samsara, to my side.”

At the next moment, the Gu worm crumbled.

“Failure.” The hairy man was dejected: “It seems I refined a failure Gu.”

Courage Gu on Ren Zu flew out: “Ren Zu, you are a failure. I am leaving you.”

Courage Gu left Ren Zu and flew away.

The hairy man, however, was invigorated: “It doesn’t matter, I can improve the Gu recipe. Ren Zu, wait a moment, I will refine it again.”

Ren Zu wanted to chase after courage Gu and take it back, but he had an even greater desire for success Gu to rescue his children.

He thought for a moment, and decided to wait for the hairy man leader to refine the Gu.

The hairy man refined the second Gu and gave it to Ren Zu for inspection.

Ren Zu touched the Gu and made a wish, the Gu worm crumbled again.

“Another failure Gu.” The hairy man sighed in dejection.

Faith Gu on Ren Zu flew out: “Ren Zu, you are a failure, you are not worthy of me.”

Faith Gu also left Ren Zu.

Ren Zu stamped his foot, and wanted to chase after it, but the hairy man tugged him: “Don’t be in a hurry, I have thought it through, this time I can definitely refine success Gu!”

Faith Gu had already flown far away, Ren Zu realized he could not catch up to it, and said with a sigh: “Hairy man, refine it quickly, this is the last time I am trusting you.”

The hairy man’s third Gu worm was still the failure Gu.

Strength Gu also flew out: “Ren Zu, you are a failure, you are unworthy of possessing me.”

Strength Gu flew away, Ren Zu felt bitter as he knew chasing after it would not give any result, so he could only gaze as strength Gu flew far away.

However, right at this time, self Gu in his heart suddenly flew out and bit strength Gu.

Strength Gu shrieked and flew even faster as a piece of it was bitten away. It soon disappeared like a streak of smoke.

Ren Zu and the hairy man watched with stupefied expressions.

Self Gu leisurely flew back, and said proudly to Ren Zu: “Any failure has its value. Ren Zu, I went through repeated failures and absorbed them to become stronger. Just now, I took a bite of strength Gu; from now on, you will have your own strength! I can still become stronger, I can devour any Gu worms to possess all their strength!”

Ren Zu was shocked.

The hairy man leader slapped his thigh, shouting: “I know how to refine success Gu, it is through failures. The more failures there are, the closer I will be to success! I understand, I understand now.”

He shouted happily as he rushed away, leaving Ren Zu behind.

...

According to the research of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, this Infallible blessed land was the possession of the hairy man leader. Hairy Foot Mountain was the place where the hairy man leader had once resided.

After his death, the hairy man leader left behind an inheritance.

It was to gather other people’s failures and refine them into mortal failure Gu. As the mortal Gu increased in numbers, they would then condense into success dao marks.

After Heavenly Court discovered this, they captured the blessed land and used it as the foundation to develop and urge the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention to help the Infallible inheritance quickly accumulate mortal failure Gu. They will then use the gathered success dao marks to restore fate Gu.

This was the origin of it all.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 846: Persuading Fang Zheng

Central Continent, Hu Immortal blessed land.

In Dang Hun palace, Fang Yuan showed his true form, his eight armed immortal zombie body seated on his bed, and his eyes shut.

In his immortal aperture, there was an intense battle of wills.

“Fang Yuan, you will die a terrible death!” Mo Yao’s will screamed in anger, but the next moment, Fang Yuan’s star will pounced at her.

Two wills mixed together, they went into dangerous combat.

Soon, Fang Yuan’s star will shrunk at a visible pace, even though Mo Yao’s fake will also suffered losses, her losses were much lower than those of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not mind it, he only observed the battle. He did not use many wisdom path killer moves, like previously, to help his star will fight.

When Fang Yuan’s star will was about to lose, Fang Yuan smiled as he sent a lump of star will into the battle of wills.

Soon, Fang Yuan’s star will suffered great losses again, and he sent in a third batch.

Mo Yao’s will did not have a source to draw replenishment from, but Fang Yuan did, he sent in batches of star will until he finally got Mo Yao’s will to an extremely weak state.

Fang Yuan withdrew his star will from the battlefield, he activated multiple killer moves and immobilized Mo Yao’s fake will again, he next nourished it and let her recover slowly so that he could search again next time.

Mo Yao’s fake will was scattered into a lump by Fang Yuan, she did not even have the energy to curse at him or maintain a human shaped form.

The information of greatest value in this fake will of Mo Yao’s was Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s inheritance clues, he had already obtained them. The only things left were memories of her Gu refinement experiences.

During the time he participated in the Refinement Path Convention, Fang Yuan did not forget to search the Gu refinement memories that Mo Yao’s will had, in addition, he wanted to train himself in how to engage in battles of wills.

Initially, without using wisdom path methods, Fang Yuan’s star will would be losing and was not the match of Mo Yao’s fake will at all.

Mo Yao was indeed a former fairy of Spirit Affinity House, with the identity of a female inkman, she was loved by Sword Immortal Bo Qing, becoming his only wife. Even among all the different generations of fairies in Spirit Affinity House, Mo Yao was one of the most accomplished ones.

Even though this old hag mainly cultivated refinement path, her wisdom path attainment surpassed Fang Yuan greatly.

In order to train himself, Fang Yuan purposely engaged in pure battles of wills with Mo Yao’s will. His losses in battle were at an astounding rate of one to a hundred. Fang Yuan would lose a hundred portions in exchange for one portion lost by Mo Yao’s will.

But later, the more they fought, the more experience Fang Yuan gained, most importantly, he had the guidance of Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance, he grew rapidly as he engaged in the battles more frequently.

From an almost blank state, he grew to a level that could fight Mo Yao’s fake will head on, his improvements were huge.

From one to a hundred, his loss ratio went to one to four.

That was to say, four portions of Fang Yuan’s star will could defeat Mo Yao’s fake will.

Mo Yao’s fake will was extremely indignant in regards to Fang Yuan stealing her experiences and using her as a practice dummy, treating her like a stepping stone, but because she was restricted, she could not do anything despite her anger.

Star will entered his mind, and Fang Yuan inspected the memories of Mo Yao that the star will stole.

Soon after, he opened his eyes, a smile appeared on his face: “Interesting.”

This memory was not related to Gu refinement experiences. Instead, the information was from back when Mo Yao and Sword Immortal Bo Qing had been traveling together, in Central Continent’s True Yang mountain range, they killed a group of desolate beasts and were about to take their loot when they found a hibiscus stalactite in the cave.

Hibiscus stalactites were a rare rank seven immortal material, this stalactite produced a drop of stone heart liquid every year, this liquid was even more precious, it was a rank eight immortal material!

Bo Qing was going to cut the stalactite, but Mo Yao stopped him.

If he cut the stalactite, he would only get a rank seven immortal material, but if he left it alone, many years later, there would be a large amount of stone heart liquid. The value of a rank eight immortal material was much greater than a rank seven immortal material.

Bo Qing listened to Mo Yao’s suggestion and set up many exquisite Gu formation arrangements, to perfectly conceal this cave.

“So many years have passed, if this cave is still not found, the amount of rank eight immortal material, stone heart liquid, inside would be huge. Even if I cannot use it, I can collect it. In the future, I can sell it inside treasure yellow heaven, or trade it to obtain immortal materials that I want! A rank eight immortal material is something coveted by many Gu Immortals.”

Fang Yuan was overjoyed, but also gained an even deeper understanding about Mo

Yao’s fake will.

“This fake will of Mo Yao’s has many techniques. She purposely concealed this precious memory. I only found out after searching most of her memories. Such a technique is not recorded even in Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance, I have to get it from her!”

Fang Yuan urged himself internally.

But for now, he could not continue ravaging Mo Yao.

Her fake will needed to recover, otherwise, she would not be able to take further damage.

Fang Yuan did not go to True Yang mountain range to take the stone heart liquid. He got up and opened the prison entrance, arriving in front of his little brother, Fang Zheng.

Fang Zheng was in a strange state.

He had his eyes shut, lying on the ground, interchanging between ruthless and relaxed expressions from time to time, he would scream and even move his limbs around randomly, it was like he was in a nightmare.

This was obviously the work of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan waved his hand and the method was ended.

Fang Zheng was breathing roughly and covered in sweat, after a while, he got up and asked: “What did you do to me?”

He looked at Fang Yuan with a gaze filled with hatred.

Fang Yuan chuckled, he said plainly: “My good brother, what I showed you were the true events that happened. This is the combination of my memories and Lord Sky Crane’s memories. You should know now that the disaster on Qing Mao mountain was not caused by me, it was because of your so-called master, Lord Sky Crane. If he did not come and try to take the blood path true inheritance, we might still be living happily on Qing Mao mountain as a family.”

Fang Zheng was stunned, at this moment, he forgot how to speak, or rather, he did not know what to say!

Fang Yuan spoke the truth, even though the clansmen were killed by Fang Yuan, he was forced to do so in order to survive. If not for Lord Sky Crane’s attempt to take the blood sea true inheritance, Qing Mao mountain’s three tribes would not have been destroyed.

Of course, Lord Sky Crane did not hide the origin of this matter from Fang Zheng, he only explained it in a more pleasant manner that was in his favor.

Fang Zheng had considered this problem before, but every time he thought about it, he would subconsciously avoid the issue.

But now, Fang Yuan had searched Lord Sky Crane’s soul and played his memories directly in Fang Zheng’s mind.

This was simply placing the cruel truth and facts in front of Fang Zheng, he could not avoid them even if he wanted to!

“Hehehe.” Fang Yuan’s laughter could be heard in the air: “My beloved brother, don’t tell me you had never considered that your master, Lord Sky Crane, had unquestionable responsibility towards the destruction of Qing Mao mountain? You even acknowledged him as your master, you are truly a traitor.”

Fang Yuan’s words were very sharp, they pierced into Fang Zheng’s inner depths.

“Shut up!” Fang Zheng screamed, he had never felt so angry in his life!

“Shut up, stop talking. You demon, you were the one who murdered the clan, you killed uncle and aunt, it was you, it was you, you murderer! Without master’s help, I would have died long ago, I will not allow you to slander my master...”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan’s smiled curled up mockingly, he chuckled: “Didn’t Lord Sky Crane save you in order to make use of you and find me? Hehehe, earlier, Immortal Crane Sect tried to use you to attack my Hu Immortal blessed land, didn’t you almost die then? My stupid brother, they are taking advantage of you, and you are actually a willing party?”

“Stop talking, shut up, shut up!” Fang Zheng covered his ears, he shut his eyes, his face was flashing with rage and panic.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned cold, his tone was icy: “My weak-willed brother, you do not even have the courage to face the truth. Even if you have the power of a rank five Gu Master right now, deep inside, you are still just a child who has not matured. But you are my blood kin, as your elder brother, I will give you a chance. Join me, I will train you and make you strong, you will grow up and mature.”

“No... no!” Fang Zheng opened his eyes, they were bloodshot as he stared at Fang Yuan with rage: “You murderer! You want me to work myself to death for you? Forget about it! Even, even if Immortal Crane Sect is making use of me, I do not hate them. Because they were the ones who nurtured me. And you! You are the one who killed uncle and aunt, you killed our entire clan. I hate you, I will never forgive you! If given a chance, I will kill you personally and take revenge!!!”

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes as he looked at Fang Zheng quietly.

He laughed instead of being angry: “Hehehe, it seems you’ve learned a lot in Immortal Crane Sect. Seeing your desire to kill me, I am looking forward to it.”

Saying this, Fang Yuan turned around and left the cell.

These days, Fang Yuan had placed most of his effort on the Refinement Path Convention. But he did not forget to use wisdom Gu and star thought Gu to undergo deductions.

Deducing vaguely familiar face to this point had expended all of Fang Yuan’s capabilities. Thus, Fang Yuan went to deduce the killer move, myriad self, and successfully fused pulling water Immortal Gu into it, at this point, myriad self had three strength path cores.

After that, Fang Yuan modified the recipe of airsac Gu, the mass production of the Gu now had more steps that were simpler to complete, the danger of the refinement had been reduced by thirty percent.

When he modified memory thought Gu, star thought Gu, and malicious thought Gu, he encountered a wall. Fang Yuan’s wisdom path cultivation had just started, his wisdom path attainment level was too low, it greatly slowed down his deduction speed of these recipes.

These last few days, Fang Yuan placed his attention on the Immortal Gu recipe of Blood Deity.

He slowly completed the Blood Deity recipe, finding out some details. Even if he refined Blood Deity, he would need a blood relation to use it. Killing a blood relation would allow him to obtain a blood deity from the power of blood deity Immortal Gu.

If this relative did not resist and contributed their life willingly, then the blood deity produced would be closely connected to the Gu Immortal, it could be manipulated with ease. In contrast, if the relative carried hatred and anger, the blood deity might cause a backlash to the owner.

This was the reason why Fang Yuan was trying to persuade Fang Zheng.

If he had any other way to remove his immortal zombie status, he would use Fang Zheng for this instead. All in all, Fang Zheng had caused much trouble to Fang Yuan in the past, Fang Yuan was not going to let him off.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 847: Blood Path Demon’s Might

This matter was troublesome.

There were actually many unconventional methods to make someone loyal. The Gu Master world never lacked such methods. For instance, enslavement path was especially proficient in dealing with this issue.

But to turn Fang Zheng into a blood deity, these methods could not be used. A blood deity was equivalent to another life form, during the moment the transformation succeeds, all the methods used on Fang Zheng previously would lose their effects. Fang Zheng’s original thoughts and intentions would influence the blood deity.

The power of a blood deity could certainly be foreseen.

Because the lightning deities derived from blood deities were extremely powerful. Vicious Lightning Fiend was only a rank six Gu Immortal, but by relying on three lightning deities, he made challenges everywhere, and his reputation kept on rising as even rank seven Gu Immortals lost to him.

A blood deity was similar, it had battle strength on the level of a Gu Immortal. Adding one would mean a battle of two against one. Adding two would mean three against one. If the number increased further, it would become a group fighting on one side.

Fang Yuan was only an immortal zombie right now, his cultivation could not advance, using numbers to make up for it was also only a temporary solution.

All dreams, desires and ambitions were built on the premise of survival.

Once one died, all would turn to dust.

Blood deities could greatly raise Fang Yuan’s battle strength, and Fang Yuan was also a blood path grandmaster. If one day, something went wrong, where Fang Yuan was hunted down and the situation turned dire, he could only choose to once again cultivate blood path, his old specialty.

Time path, wisdom path, blood path... Fang Yuan was cautious and prepared for everything. He would never look down on making excessive preparations.

However, the current situation was still not too bad.

“Converting Fang Zheng to my side cannot be done quickly, I need to take it slowly. No matter how much Immortal Crane Sect has brainwashed him, with my methods, as long as I put in effort, I will definitely reach my goal one day.”

“At present, the trade of both guts Gu and regretful spiders has been established, now I only have to wait for the transaction token to use Western Desert’s Xiao clan as a starting point, to openly enter Western Desert’s market in the businesses of dragonfish and eerie fire dragon pythons. When that happens, I will be earning large amounts of wealth every day!”

“My main priority for now is still refining change form Immortal Gu. I have already eliminated most of the tough opponents, my placement in the top six is basically guaranteed. The only variable is Feng Jin Huang.”

Fang Yuan thought of the current situation and his plan.

Because of her defeat to Fang Yuan, Feng Jin Huang learned the true usage of dream wings Immortal Gu in advance. By exploring dream realms, her refinement path attainment had already reached quasi-grandmaster level.

Exploring dream realms was truly the best shortcut to raise one’s attainment level.

Feng Jin Huang had Immortal Gu with her, and also had her mother, Fairy Bai Qing, who took care of her wholeheartedly, the speed at which her refinement path attainment increased was simply absurd!

Fang Yuan had to make accumulations over five hundred years to become a quasi-grandmaster in refinement path. Meanwhile, Feng Jin Huang had caught up to him in such a short time period.

During the five regions chaotic war in Fang Yuan’s previous life, battle raged everywhere fiercely, forming an extraordinary era where countless champions emerged from the lower levels.

In regards to this era, other than the five regions chaotic war and the turbulence in social order, dream realms were one of the main causes of it.

Dream realms might be filled with dangers, but if one could explore them successfully, their foundation would be raised directly. This was an extremely great fortuitous encounter, allowing many minor characters to make astounding accomplishments.

Often, what champions lacked was only an opportunity to develop.

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated, Fang Yuan had been secretly gathering much information on Feng Jin Huang’s participation in the Refinement Path Convention.

At first, her methods were rather clumsy but after gaining some experience, she rapidly grew up into a strong opponent for Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was familiar with the tests in the competition, thus his ability was overrated by the outside world. However, the duel with Feng Jin Huang was an unknown variable, it had not occurred in his previous life and thus his rebirth advantage could not be shown.

“I must pay attention to Feng Jin Huang, if I don’t deal with this properly, I might even lose out on the Infallible inheritance. But after passing this hurdle, I can use this precious opportunity to refine change form Immortal Gu!”

Fang Yuan knew many inside details regarding the Infallible inheritance.

The top six winners would be rewarded with six success dao marks, which would be imprinted on the Gu Master’s body on the spot, outsiders had no chance to seize them.

However, even though it was named infallible, it was not a ‘definite success’.

The success dao mark could only eliminate the natural probability of failure during the process of refining Gu.

There was always a possibility of failure while refining Gu. Even if there was no error from the person during the whole process, the refinement could still fail randomly.

This was the failure probability.

For instance, during the second round of the Refinement Path Convention at Flying Frost Sect, Fang Yuan refined ten ghost fire Gu, he did not make any mistake, but a ghost fire Gu had exploded for no reason.

There was also the time during the battle with Fang Huai when the blue peacock’s head had inexplicably turned into ash when merging with the incomplete Gu. During the whole process, there was no error with Fang Yuan’s control over the fire. Later, when he succeeded in refining the Gu, he had used the same method, without any changes.

There were various opinions regarding this failure probability.

The most popular reasoning was that it was because of laws.

Gu were the essence of heaven and earth, why is it that they possess all sorts of mysterious powers? It was because they contained the natural laws of heaven and earth. Mortal Gu contained meager traces of laws, while Immortal Gu contained fragments.

Gu refinement was a process of combining these traces of laws into one, forming larger law traces. It was also reverse-refining a larger law trace into smaller ones.

Because it involved laws, there would always be situations where these laws would have subtle differences, and during the refinement, instead of merging together like the person wished, they would collide and conflict, ending up with the result of failure.

Fang Yuan also accepted this reasoning and acknowledged it was sensible.

The smaller the law traces, the fewer the characteristics, the more easy it was to combine them. This was why the lower the rank of the mortal Gu, the easier they were to refine.

The bigger the traces, the more differences in characteristics they would have from other traces, which made them more difficult to combine. At the level of Immortal Gu, the law fragments had individual characteristics that were unique to themselves. So, all Immortal Gu was unique, thus refining Immortal Gu was extremely difficult to succeed.

The success dao marks in the Infallible inheritance could remove the failure probability. One success dao mark could at most be used in rank six Immortal Gu.

To succeed in refining rank seven and rank eight, the success dao marks required would not be just one.

However, during the refinement process, if Fang Yuan made a major mistake in his technique, the Immortal Gu refinement could fail.

Even if there no errors in the methods, and the failure probability was completely eliminated by the success dao mark, but if the Immortal Gu being refined already existed, then at the final juncture, the Gu refinement would still fail.

Immortal Gu were unique, since the Immortal Gu already existed, it signified the unique characteristic law fragment had already condensed. Thinking of forming another of the same law fragment was impossible.

As for the change form Immortal Gu Fang Yuan was thinking of refining, he had not yet heard of any Gu Immortal possessing it.

Naturally, Fang Yuan based this on his previous life’s memories, the information he gathered in this life, as well as using wisdom path methods to make deductions, based on all this, the probability for change form Immortal Gu to already be in existence was very low.

If it truly existed and the Gu refinement failed in the end, Fang Yuan could not do anything other than to admit his own bad luck.

This was the harshness of Gu refinement, and at the same time, the beauty of it.

Central Continent, True Yang mountain range.

Vicious Lightning Fiend slowly landed down on top of a mountain peak and gazed at the opposite mountain peak, where there was already a rank seven demonic path Gu Immortal.

“Vicious Lightning Fiend, you have challenged me, but if you can’t put up a decent wager, I won’t accept it.” The demonic path rank seven Gu Immortal spoke.

He looked middle-aged and vigorous, he was wearing tight-fitting martial arts attire with a red cape draping behind. His surname was Dan and his given name was Qiao, he was known as Blazing Demonic Immortal, his main cultivation was fire path and his vicious reputation had spread far and wide.

“Hahaha.” Vicious Lightning Fiend laughed heartily, “Blazing Demonic Immortal, you indeed belong to the demonic path, speaking of benefits in all things. You are a strong opponent, so I specially prepared one thousand five hundred kilograms of hibiscus branches.”

“What? One thousand five hundred kilograms of hibiscus branches...” Dan Qiao was moved, the wager Vicious Lightning Fiend put forward directly spoke to his deepest desires.

Blazing Demonic Immortal Dan Qiao snorted: “It seems you made many preparations for this, even finding out my urgent need for hibiscus branches to refine Immortal Gu. Alright, if I lose, I will give you six hundred strands of two-nine thunder heavenly qi. The agreement is set!”

Both were people who came straight to point and were resolute.

After setting the challenge agreement, they began the fight straight away!

World decimating fire crows!

Blazing Demonic Immortal Dan Qiao waved his hand, untold numbers of fire crows flew, shrouding the sky and earth as they raised a boundless inferno.

Lightning dragon purgatory!

Vicious Lightning Fiend laughed strangely as he pushed forward with his hands open, emitting endless lightning bolts. Thunderbolts and lightning gathered into hundreds of lightning dragons that charged forward madly. Everywhere they passed, the landscape collapsed, displaying their terrifying might.

Lightning dragons and fire crows clashed, causing the entirety of their surroundings to be filled with the red blaze of fire and the deep blue radiance of lightning.

Boom boom boom...

The explosions were unceasing. Blazing Demonic Immortal and Vicious Lightning Fiend appeared like mirages, as they moved extremely fast, clashing viciously several times in the midst of the hell of fire and lightning.

They did not make any probing moves, they just used powerful skills in succession.

Since Vicious Lightning Fiend challenged Blazing Demonic Immortal to increase his reputation, he had already gathered the necessary information.

And since Dan Qiao had agreed to Vicious Lightning Fiend’s challenge, he also had made sufficient preparations and had enough understanding of Vicious Lightning Fiend, and also the confidence of attaining victory.

After a while, Blazing Demonic Immortal used three different immortal killer moves in a row, leaving Vicious Lightning Fiend unable to make ground.

Dan Qiao could be said to be the strongest opponent Vicious Lightning Fiend had challenged since he exited seclusion. Regardless of cultivation level, immortal essence or the dao marks on their bodies, Dan Qiao surpassed Vicious Lightning Fiend.

Vicious Lightning Fiend was losing but he was not panicking.

This situation was within his expectations. In fact, he had also been at a disadvantage when challenging those rank seven Gu Immortals previously.

After all, his cultivation was only rank six, this was a common situation when challenging higher ranked experts.

“Hahaha, this fire is truly interesting!” Vicious Lightning Fiend suddenly raised his head and shouted, his eyes flashing sharply. His body shook and three lightning figures slowly flew out of his immortal aperture, attacking Blazing Demonic Immortal.

Lightning deities!

Lightning deities that contained lightning path dao marks!

The battle strength of three Gu Immortals!

Blazing Demonic Immortal quickly retreated, while Vicious Lightning Fiend took advantage of this to counterattack and turn the situation around.

The battle raged on heatedly for an hour. It concerned enormous wagers and reputation, neither of them were willing to back down easily.

The intense immortal essence consumption made both sides feel great loss. Dan

Qiao did not continue enduring this, and suddenly attacked ruthlessly!

He had been planning this attack well in advance, Vicious Lightning Fiend could not dodge and had to face it head-on.

Boom!

A huge explosion occurred, Vicious Lightning Fiend was sent flying while spitting out blood.

“Admit your defeat, great fire demon true body!” Dan Qiao suddenly turned into a giant blazing demon and chased with extreme speed.

In a flash, the fire demon had closed in upon Vicious Lightning Fiend.

“No, I won’t lose! Lightning deity, detonate!!” In the moment of crisis, Vicious Lightning Fiend’s ferocious nature was stimulated as he boldly self-detonated a lightning deity!

Rumble...!!

The lightning deity’s self-detonation created a boundless clamor that could shake mountains.

Vicious Lightning Fiend and Blazing Demonic Immortal Dan Qiao were both in a heavily injured state, they were exhausted and their battle strengths had greatly reduced.

“Interesting, hand over both of your lives!” Suddenly, a blood colored light flew over, forming a battlefield killer move that enveloped both the wounded parties.

“Song Zi Xing?!” Dan Qiao shouted in fear, recognizing this killer move.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 848 Ambushing Song Zi Xing

Blood, blood, blood!

The sky had blood colored clouds, the ground was now beneath a sea of blood, all around in the air, there was blood colored light.

This was Song Zi Xing’s personal creation, his signature battlefield killer move — Blood Tu Su, it was uniquely distinctive in Central Continent.

Song Zi Xing had a strongly vengeful mindset. Previously, during an exploration, many gains were seized away by Gu Immortals from Tu Su City. Thus, after creating the battlefield killer move, he set out to take revenge. He turned the entire city into dust, and killed the two Gu Immortals in the city.

His revenge succeeded, Song Zi Xing felt gratified, he wrote some words with blood in the sky above the rubble of Tu Su city: It took a while, but revenge came after a year, today I arrived and used Blood Tu Su. The name of the perpetrator is — Song Zi Xing.

From that day onwards, his battlefield killer move was named ‘Blood Tu Su’.

Thus, seeing this scene, Blazing Demonic Immortal recognized that it was Song Zi Xing's attack.

As expected, a moment later, a figure descended from the sky.

Song Zi Xing was clothed in a blood red robe, his body was long and sharp like a spear. His face was pale and he had a sharp nose, his gaze was ruthless like that of an eagle or vulture.

As he descended, the blood sea went into turbulence as the blood colored clouds rumbled like dragons or pythons.

The surrounding blood colored light flew into the sky, it was a dazzling sight, Song Zi Xing seemed like the ruler of the world, a demonic god of the sun and moon.

“Song, Song Zi Xing, why are you here?” Blazing Demonic Immortal Dan Qiao looked at Song Zi Xing as his face went pale, his expression was that of shock and anger, but also immense fear.

“Why can't I be here?” Song Zi Xing turned around slightly to look at Dan Qiao, he smiled lightly as his gaze was filled with killing intent: “Dan Qiao, back then when I lost to Feng Jiu Ge, you attempted to take advantage of the situation and ambushed me, attacking me with an immortal killer move. I've intentionally left behind the scar that you inflicted on me all this time. I have been waiting to take revenge on you, but you hid inside True Yang mountain range, causing me to be unable to find you. But you dared to accept Vicious Lightning Fiend's challenge, hehehe, thus I came today to settle the score with you.”

A wise man knows better than to fight when the odds are against him, Dan Qiao sighed as he decided to give in: “Lord Song Zi Xing, I am willing to apologize to you!”

He was a grand rank seven Gu Immortal, but he lowered his head instead of fighting.

Song Zi Xing had a vast and mighty demonic reputation, he was on par with Shi Lei and had incredible battle results. Back when he was in Myriad Dragon Dock, he was renowned in Central Continent. After that, he betrayed them and escaped, even though Myriad Dragon Dock pursued him and sent eight Gu Immortals in successive waves, he killed four of them, crippled three of them, and forced one to retreat.

This result caused a commotion in Central Continent, Song Zi Xing left scot-free. Myriad Dragon Dock went into a downturn, its reputation was even lower than that of Immortal Crane Sect. It became the worst among the ten great ancient sects. Only until now, when Vicious Lightning Fiend came out of closed cultivation, did they start to regain their status.

Of course, Song Zi Xing had experienced defeat as well.

His most famous loss was against Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge only used three moves and Song Zi Xing was defeated completely, escaping frantically.

But this loss did not tarnish Song Zi Xing's reputation. Because his opponent was Feng Jiu Ge, and he could escape and live, this was something no one could look down on.

In fact, practically all demonic path Gu Immortals were skilled in escaping. Song Zi Xing was particularly skilled in this aspect.

“Hahaha, apologize?” Hearing Blazing Demonic Immortal’s words, Song Zi Xing showed a mocking expression: “If you had been like this and understood your position earlier, I would not have chased you until you hid inside True Yang mountain range.”

“Lord, please speak, as long as I can obtain your forgiveness, I am willing to pay the price.” Dan Qiao said melancholically.

“If you want to obtain my forgiveness, it is very simple, hand your life over to me.” Song Zi Xing said nonchalantly.

Dan Qiao lifted his head, his expression was pale as he spoke with grief and indignation: “Song Zi Xing, are you really not letting me off?”

“Let you off? Hehe, hehehe!” This demonic path overlord raised his head and laughed: “I, Song Zi Xing, will always take revenge, when Tu Su City’s Gu Immortals took what was mine, I murdered the entire city and people inside. Back then, you ambushed me, it is already my greatest kindness that I am not torturing you before killing you. Are you still not satisfied? Today, you are doomed to die!”

Saying this, he turned around and looked at Vicious Lightning Fiend: “Oh right, you are still here. Didn’t you claim to want to challenge me? I am here now.”

He spoke mockingly, like a cat playing with its food.

Vicious Lightning Fiend was trying to heal himself now, the explosion earlier had given him a wound that was not small, he was still using his methods, but he raised his head and said: “Song Zi Xing, you were a Gu Immortal from Myriad Dragon Dock, in terms of seniority, you are my senior! A challenge is definitely needed. But today, since you are here to seek revenge, I will not interfere. Let me go or I will self detonate my lightning deities and force my way out!”

“Hahaha, your immortal killer move, lightning deity, is indeed impressive and can create a strong enough force to break open my Blood Tu Su. But so what? Can you escape? Think about it, can your escaping methods surpass my blood rainbow flash in terms of speed?”

Song Zi Xing laughed arrogantly.

It sounded like he was trash talking, but his words were actually attempting to decrease their fighting spirits.

But at the next moment, Song Zi Xing’s expression changed, his gaze towards Vicious Lightning Fiend turned grim as he shouted: “Something’s wrong! With your personality, how can you back off at this moment?”

In terms of acting, Vicious Lightning Fiend was inferior to the demonic path Gu Immortal Dan Qiao.

In Song Zi Xing’s view, a flaw was found immediately.

At once, Song Zi Xing’s heart was pounding, the blood in his heart was surging and crashing into his blood vessels, attacking the inner walls of his heart.

This was his immortal killer move — Heart Blood Premonition!

Even though it was a blood path technique, it could mimic wisdom path and deduce dangerous or favorable circumstances for Song Zi Xing.

An intense feeling of danger assaulted Song Zi Xing’s heart.

“This is a trap!!” Song Zi Xing growled, he wanted to leave.

Lightning Lock!

Lava Chain!

At this moment, Vicious Lightning Fiend and Blazing Demonic Immortal Dan Qiao, who were fighting, joined forces and attacked Song Zi Xing together.

Song Zi Xing sneered, the blood sea beneath his feet rose up, creating huge red waves that were imposing and grand.

The huge blood waves blocked the lightning and lava.

Meanwhile, Song Zi Xing turned into a bloody rainbow and vanished on the spot.

This was an immortal killer move, blood rainbow flash, it was extremely fast, he flew out of the battlefield killer move, Blood Tu Su, immediately. Song Zi Xing was very resolute, he discarded even the blood path Immortal Gu that he used to construct the battlefield killer move, he flew out and tried to retreat.

A few breaths later, the bloody rainbow had already flown an enormous distance.

The bloody rainbow vanished, Song Zi Xing’s figure appeared in the air, he looked down at the unchanging mountain below him as his expression turned ugly: “Oh no, I’m in an illusion.”

His mind worked quickly, as the sense of danger intensified, he realized that this was a trap from his enemies.

He quickly flew back and tried to regain control of the battlefield killer move, Blood Tu Su.

But at this time, a total of sixteen Gu Immortals appeared, with incredible auras surging in the air.

They attacked together, sixteen immortal killer moves landed on Song Zi Xing.

Boom boom boom...

Dazzling light shined on the cruel or emotionless faces of every Gu Immortal.

After the light faded, Song Zi Xing could be seen to be in a pitiful state.

His face was covered in soot, as his black robe was tattered.

A layer of blood red armor was around his body, as he looked around him in anger: “This is Heavenly Lotus Sect’s Illusion Garden! What great handiwork, you even brought your Immortal Gu House to deal with me. And the rest of you, did the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent join up?”

Song Zi Xing was furious but also perplexed.

He was a demonic path Gu Immortal, but he had been moving around and hiding without being too rampant. Recently, he did not commit any great crimes, why were there so many people teaming up against him?

But soon, Song Zi Xing understood: “To be able to force all ten great sects of Central Continent to work together, this must be an order from Heavenly Court.”

“That’s right, Song Zi Xing, you understand it yourself. Junior brother Vicious Lightning went around challenging people, it was the arrangement of a wisdom path Gu Immortal, in order to lure you. Junior brother’s lightning deity was derived from Blood Deity, you have been wanting this Immortal Gu recipe, and with Blazing Demonic Immortal being your enemy, you were finally attracted to this place.”

“But you were too vigilant, you had been following behind Vicious Lightning Fiend and watched him go through more than ten different challenges previously without striking. Only after Vicious Lightning Fiend self detonated a lightning deity did you get baited successfully.”

“Hehehe, you are so hard to catch. To make you show up, we in Ancient Soul Sect, Heaven’s Envy Manor, and Spirit Butterfly Valley had three wisdom path Gu Immortals collaborating to interfere with your immortal killer move, heart blood premonition. This prevented you from sensing the danger in advance.”

The three rank seven Gu Immortals who were leading the group spoke slowly one by one.

The other thirteen Gu Immortals were all rank six.

At this point, some people could not control themselves anymore, they charged up: “Song Zi Xing, you killed my elder brother and raped my sister-in-law, I will tear your skin and bones apart, ahhhhhh!”

“Song Zi Xing, you will definitely die today, I will take revenge for Sun clan’s seven hundred and thirty people today!”

Song Zi Xing was an evildoer, he caused many tragedies. But those who had the strength to take revenge on him were few. Many Gu Immortals who offended Song Zi Xing lived in fear, they were afraid that he might take revenge on them one day.

Blood Dragon Song Zi Xing had a strong thirst for revenge, that was well known to everyone.

Blazing Demonic Immortal was one of them, he was chased down by Song Zi Xing, he had to hide inside True Yang mountain range. But because Song Zi Xing was forcing him to his limits, this demonic path Gu Immortal was willing to undergo such a realistic show with Vicious Lightning Fiend and the others.

Eight rank six Gu Immortals attacked Song Zi Xing.

The Gu Immortals from the ten ancient sects of Central Continent remained in the air, they formed a tight encirclement.

The Gu Immortals who were currently fighting Song Zi Xing were lone cultivators. These people were contacted by the ten ancient sects, they had deep hatred towards Song Zi Xing.

Song Zi Xing’s crimes were all targeted at small forces, he tried not to cause trouble with the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent. But he was a person who had successfully escaped fate, killing him would help the healing of fate Gu greatly. With Heavenly Court’s orders, the ten great ancient sects had to stop fighting between themselves and work together to kill Song Zi Xing.

Song Zi Xing was attacked from all sides, he was in a disadvantage. Without any way to fight back, he could only choose to escape.

His speed was very fast, the name of blood rainbow flash was famous in Central Continent, his speed rose at once, the Central Continent lone cultivators were left in the dust behind him!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 849: Successful Escape

“Song Zi Xing, the day has come where you get what you deserve!”

“Aren’t you called the Blood Dragon? Don’t run if you have guts.”

Blood rainbow flash was extremely fast and very nimble, the pursuing Gu Immortals used killer moves to obstruct him but there was little effect, the distance between them was growing.

But the Immortal Gu House, Illusion Garden, was set up already, they were not afraid that Song Zi Xing would escape.

The scene became quite strange, a group of people were chasing after Song Zi Xing with immense hatred, their killing intent was overflowing like fire, but they could not reach him.

“He is as slippery as an eel.” The Gu Immortals from Central Continent’s ten ancient sects did not chase him, they observed the situation and used some immortal killer moves from time to time.

Song Zi Xing was still quite dangerous, his battle result in fighting the pursuers from Myriad Dragon Dock made people feel apprehension.

That was why Central Continent’s ten ancient sects invited many lone cultivators, in their plan, these lone cultivators were cannon fodder, they were meant to probe Song Zi Xing’s methods and waste immortal essence he had stored up.

Without immortal essence, even if Song Zi Xing was a blood path Gu Immortal, his battle strength would fall.

“This cannot go on, Song Zi Xing is only wholeheartedly escaping, we are unable to force out his trump cards.” A while later, a Central Continent Gu Immortal spoke.

Many other people frowned: “Don’t you find it strange? Song Zi Xing is called the Blood Dragon, his violent blood dragon bat has rank seven battle strength, but he has not used it yet. All along until now, he has been escaping without truly attacking.”

“Hehehe, what are you afraid of? Song Zi Xing is already trapped by the Immortal Gu House, Illusion Garden, the biggest flaw of our ambush was the duration needed to set up Illusion Garden, now that Song Zi Xing is already trapped, his demise is only a matter of time.”

“We cannot be careless. Blood path Gu Immortals cannot be judged with common sense, maybe he is searching around everywhere for a flaw?”

“Maybe he has powerful reinforcements? Therefore, stalling for time?”

While they were guessing, the voices of the two rank seven Gu Immortals from Heavenly Lotus Sect resounded: “Everyone, it is time to strike, mobilizing the

Immortal Gu House is very taxing, we cannot drag this on for long.”

In truth, along with Vicious Lightning Fiend and Blazing Demonic Immortal Dan Qiao, a total of twenty Gu Immortals had ambushed Song Zi Xing.

Vicious Lightning Fiend and Blazing Demonic Immortal Dan Qiao were bait, the two rank seven Gu Immortals from Heavenly Lotus Sect did not show up, they were controlling the Immortal Gu House secretly. The remaining sixteen Gu Immortals showed up to fight Song Zi Xing.

Mobilizing the Immortal Gu House caused great expenditure to their immortal essence. Especially a complete Immortal Gu House like Illusion Garden, it was far more taxing than using an incomplete Immortal Gu House like Profound Ice House. Even rank seven Gu Immortals could not sustain it for long.

The Gu Immortals of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent were rushed, most of them entered the battle, only three rank seven Gu Immortals were overlooking the situation in case of any accidents.

Song Zi Xing was still escaping, he did not fight back.

“I’ve heard of how fast blood rainbow flash was long ago, now that I see it, it truly is amazing.”

“It is even faster than my cloud shock sail, it is also as fast as purple heaven lightning wings, a movement killer move that is in the top ten even in Central Continent.”

“Not only is it fast, it is agile, it can twist and turn around easily, it has all-around capability in terms of mobility. What a pity.”

The three rank seven Gu Immortals were evaluating.

They felt some regret, an outstanding movement immortal killer move like blood rainbow flash could not be obtained easily. If they could get it, they would be able to retreat at will, they would be able to save their own lives when escaping!

But this was a blood path killer move, even if righteous path Gu Immortals get it, they could not use it, unless they betrayed the righteous path and went into the demonic path.

Back then, Song Zi Xing betrayed his sect and went to the demonic path, other than conflicts with his sect, the main reason was that he could not resist the allure of blood path’s strength.

As the Gu Immortals from Central Continent’s ten sects joined in, Song Zi Xing’s situation got worse.

Their encirclement became tighter, everyone joined forces, even though blood rainbow flash was fast, it had its limits. Eventually, he was trapped.

“Demons are meant to be slain, die!”

“Kill, kill Song Zi Xing!!”

Eventually, they trapped Song Zi Xing in the center, many lone cultivator Gu Immortals struck and attacked Song Zi Xing.

They did not get close, they attacked with long range methods, Song Zi Xing was making them feel wary by not fighting back.

These lone cultivator Gu Immortals were not idiots, they knew the reason why Central Continent’s ten great sects invited them to ambush Song Zi Xing. But they were willing to be cannon fodder, because they had intense hatred with Song Zi Xing, irreconcilable to the point that only one side could live.

Gu Immortals were still humans, they were afraid of dying.

If not for Song Zi Xing’s overbearing attitude, causing them to live in fear daily, they would not attempt this.

From this, the advantage of Vicious Lightning Fiend’s lightning deities could be seen. Having the battle strength of Gu Immortals and not fearing death, they could be produced in batches, this was terrifying. Thankfully, each lightning deity was formed by paying a huge price, and they needed a huge sum to be maintained.

The Gu Immortals were prepared, their attacks landed on Song Zi Xing. He tried to dodge, but there was little space, he took a heavy beating.

At once, he was blown to pieces, blood splattered everywhere.

“Oh no! This is not Song Zi Xing’s real body!!” Seeing this, the immortals were stunned, they realized the truth.

“Be careful of Song Zi Xing’s sneak attack!”

“How did he conceal himself? My investigative killer move could not find him?”

“Stay calm, we are inside the Immortal Gu House Illusion Garden, he cannot escape! Search carefully!!”

Gu Immortals were all experienced people, they quickly calmed down. Even if Song Zi Xing wanted to attack them by surprise, he could not find a chance.

The immortals displayed their abilities, they searched quickly but they made no progress.

Their gazes quickly focused on Blood Tu Su, someone realized: “Oh no! Song Zi Xing never came out, his real body has always been inside the battlefield killer move, Vicious Lightning Fiend and Blazing Demonic Immortal Dan Qiao are in danger!!”

Since the beginning, Song Zi Xing’s battlefield killer move, Blood Tu Su, had been encased like a red egg, floating in the air.

The immortals did not destroy this battlefield killer move, firstly because their attentions were attracted to ‘Song Zi Xing’. They were also unwilling to help Vicious Lightning Fiend. He had been challenging people everywhere, gaining huge reputation, as a person who was quite unreasonable, all of the ten sects of Central Continent, including Myriad Dragon Dock, wanted to suppress him for a bit. In addition, destroying Blood Tu Su would also expend a lot of immortal essence.

Thus, Blood Tu Su was ‘accidentally forgotten’ by the immortals.

The fundamental problem now was that because they were strong, they underestimated the enemy.

The immortals realized they were fooled by Song Zi Xing, overcome with rage and embarrassment, they charged towards Blood Tu Su.

Blood Tu Su was not an Immortal Gu House, it was only a battlefield killer move, under the intense attacks, it trembled intensely. Three breaths later, Song Zi Xing removed the battlefield killer move.

Blood Tu Su collapsed, Song Zi Xing laughed loudly as he flew out in a bloody rainbow.

Blazing Demonic Immortal Dan Qiao was dead, his corpse was held in Song Zi Xing’s hands, meanwhile, Vicious Lightning Fiend was heavily injured, falling into a coma. Only one lightning deity was left, it was very weak and was guarding around Vicious Lightning Fiend.

If they were slightly later, Vicious Lightning Fiend might have been killed by Song Zi Xing.

But Song Zi Xing was also heavily injured, his left arm was completely amputated up to his shoulder.

The battlefield killer move, Blood Tu Su, isolated itself from the world, becoming an independent area. Furthermore, Song Zi Xing had special methods and prevented Vicious Lightning Fiend or Dan Qiao from seeking help from the outside world.

Song Zi Xing was able to kill Blazing Demonic Immortal Dan Qiao and send Vicious Lightning Fiend into a coma when surrounded by everyone.

This was a huge humiliation!

The Gu Immortals were furious, anger was rising in them.

If news spread, how would they face anyone?

“Kill, kill Song Zi Xing!!”

“Blood Dragon deserves death, he should not live in this world.”

“Removing evil for the people of the world, upholding justice!”

At once, Gu Immortals attacked, all sorts of immortal killer moves and battlefield killer moves were sent towards Song Zi Xing.

Song Zi Xing laughed arrogantly, blood rainbow flash was used again and he evaded most of the immortal killer moves. Next, he raised Blazing Demonic Immortal’s corpse and said: “Thanks for the gift, now, I’ll return it to you. Detonate!”

Blood red light burst into the sky, as a shocking explosion occurred.

The immortals were sent flying, but Song Zi Xing was completely unharmed at the center of the explosion, the blood path dao marks in his body were shining brightly, protecting him.

Illusion Garden shook heavily, a crack opened from his intense attack.

Blood rainbow flash!

In the blink of an eye, Song Zi Xing vanished, he escaped the Immortal Gu House and flew beyond the vision of the Gu Immortals!

“Chase him, he was hit by my immortal killer move, I can sense him.”

“How can a grand Immortal Gu House become damaged to the point of cracking?!”

The immortals growled as they chased him.

The two rank seven Gu Immortals from Heavenly Lotus Sect retrieved their Immortal Gu House and joined in. Their expressions were ugly: “It is that violent blood dragon bat! Song Zi Xing arranged for it to be outside, it crashed into Illusion Garden and self-detonated, together with Song Zi Xing’s internal attack, a crack was formed!”

The violent blood dragon bat was an ancient desolate beast, its battle strength was equivalent to a rank seven Gu Immortal. The force of its self-detonation was quite extraordinary. Furthermore, Illusion Garden was only maintained by two Gu Immortals, they could not react to the explosion in time, allowing Song Zi Xing to forcefully create hope during that desperate situation!

The immortals would not give up like this, they chased him with gritted teeth.

A battle of pursuit appeared on True Yang mountain range.

The pursuers had huge numbers, a total of seventeen Gu Immortals (One Gu Immortal from Myriad Dragon Dock was staying behind to take care of Vicious Lightning Fiend).

But now at this point, the battle was no longer controlled by the righteous path Gu Immortals, they had fallen into Song Zi Xing’s tempo.

Song Zi Xing was a demonic cultivator, and was most skilled in escaping.

“I cannot go outside immediately, this True Yang mountain range is the best hiding spot! I lost my violent blood dragon bat, after I escape, I will definitely settle the score!” Song Zi Xing’s expression was twisted, this loss was making him feel loss.

He swore inwardly, as he used blood rainbow flash to turn and land on a mountain.

Inside True Yang mountain range, there were countless fierce beasts.

In the chase, large numbers of desolate beasts and even ancient desolate beasts were disturbed, they created a lot of problems for the pursuers behind Song Zi Xing.

Song Zi Xing was well aware: The more chaotic the situation, the easier he could find a chance to slip away to freedom!

Three days later, late at night.

The moon was hanging in the sky, a dim blood red light moved along the ground as it flew out of True Yang mountain range.

Clank!

Suddenly, a metallic sound was heard, as a golden bell phantom covered the blood red light.

An injured Gu Immortal appeared, he shouted: “Song Zi Xing, where do you think you are going?”

Just as he said that, Song Zi Xing, who was inside the golden bell, vanished, in his place was a palm and a small section of his forearm.

“Oh no, this is a fake, the true body is there!” The Gu Immortal’s expression changed, he turned around and flew towards another direction.

Long afterwards, a figure appeared quietly from afar.

It was Fang Yuan, he was wearing a mask, his body was covered in a thin layer of smoke as he walked towards the golden bell phantom silently.

Looking at the arm in the bell, he showed an expression of joy.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 850: Blood Demon Body Separation, Breaking the Bell for the Arm

“Immortal killer move blood demon body separation...” Fang Yuan looked at the severed arm in the golden bell phantom as he muttered.

According to the >, after he betrayed Myriad Dragon Dock and defeated the pursuers, he hid his tracks and cultivated with all his effort, developing rapidly.

He had great foresight, he understood his own situation, thus he devised this killer move.

During the current Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, the ten great sects ambushed and attempted to kill Song Zi Xing, but he escaped in the end.

This was also the first time blood demon body separation was displayed, shocking the entirety of Central Continent. The reason why Song Zi Xing could escape was attributed to this.

This immortal killer move could create a clone in a short period of time. The clone had great speed that could rival blood rainbow flash. Furthermore, it was very realistic and deceptive. Even investigative immortal killer moves could not see a flaw in it.

However, this method had a huge price.

It needed a body part of the person to create the clone. They also had to expend a huge amount of immortal essence as the energy source to maintain the existence of the clone. The more immortal essence consumed, the longer it could exist.

There were many methods for Gu Immortals to regrow their limbs, but blood demon body separation’s cost was not only superficially losing the limb. In truth, it expended the body’s blood path dao marks.

Precisely because of these blood path dao marks, blood demon body separation could achieve such a wondrous effect.

If it did not pay a price in blood path dao marks, the clone body from blood demon body separation would not be able to pass off as the real person.

When ordinary Gu Immortals were hurt, for example, if Fang Yuan lost half his body, the strength path dao marks on him would be taken in by his immortal aperture. When his body recovered, the strength path dao marks would go back to his body.

When a Gu Immortal dies, all of the dao marks on them would go to the immortal aperture, for example, Hu Immortal blessed land.

If Song Zi Xing successfully used blood demon body separation, even if he regrew his limb later, the new arm would be blank, all of the blood path dao marks on it would have been used up.

Undeniably, the loss of dao marks was an incredible cost to Gu Immortals.

Because dao marks were hard to obtain, they could often only be accumulated after going through heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities. Each heavenly tribulation or earthly calamity would require the Gu Immortal to risk their lives, once their immortal aperture was damaged, all of the resources that they own would be destroyed.

Thus, the cost of obtaining dao marks was very high for Gu Immortals.

This also showed the value of eat strength Immortal Gu.

But Fang Yuan could be certain that Song Zi Xing did not have an Immortal Gu like Eat Strength. The blood path dao marks that he lost would have to be regained from calamities and tribulations.

The dao marks on a Gu Immortal could amplify the power of Immortal Gu and immortal killer moves. This amplification was quite terrifying, rank eights could have an amplification with a multiplier of hundreds or even thousands, that was also why rank seven Gu Immortals could rarely beat rank eight Gu Immortals.

The > had said that Song Zi Xing escaped and survived. Eventually, he was only left with a head and half a chest, the rest of his body was discarded to use blood demon body separation.

After this battle, the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent lost face, not only did they not reach their goal, they were toyed with by Song Zi Xing and suffered casualties.

Song Zi Xing also suffered huge losses, he lost an ancient desolate beast violent blood dragon bat, and most of the blood path dao marks on his body were destroyed. After this battle, he did not publicly appear for two hundred years. For a period of time, there was no information on him, people suspected that he was dead.

But when he reappeared in the world, not only did his battle strength recover fully, he even nurtured three violent blood dragon bats!

Fang Yuan had a clear understanding of the ambush of Song Zi Xing.

He looked at the severed arm with a heated gaze.

This severed arm came from Song Zi Xing, it was a part of his body. If Fang Yuan obtained it, he could use his Gu refinement techniques to create Song Zi Xing’s head.

And Song Zi Xing’s head was the only requirement to be acknowledged as Star Form blessed land’s owner!

Land spirits were straightforward existences, as long as Fang Yuan could hand over Song Zi Xing’s head to it, he would become the owner of Star Form blessed land. Star Form land spirit would not care if Song Zi Xing was alive.

It was just an obsession formed by fusing with the blessed land’s heavenly power.

Fang Yuan could become its owner in this way. Even if one day, Song Zi Xing were to appear alive and well in front of the land spirit, the land spirit would not betray Fang Yuan.

Because Fang Yuan had already met the requirements that the land spirit had.

But at this time, it was troublesome for Fang Yuan to collect this arm. Breaking the bell was not hard, but once the golden bell phantom was broken, the arm would explode and turn into a mist of blood.

Fang Yuan needed to use other methods to deal with the severed arm, otherwise his plan would fail.

In fact, Fang Yuan had quite a deep impression of this arm.

His current location was at the periphery of True Yang mountain range, near Yuan Yang City.

Song Zi Xing's severed arm was contained by an immortal killer move, the Gu Immortal who used the move was busy chasing Song Zi Xing and left this severed arm behind. As time passed, this golden bell would disappear after one night, and the severed arm would explode into blood mist.

By then, the blood mist would cover up to a few hundred li of area, causing huge issues to the surrounding living beings and creating disasters.

Hundreds of years later, Yuan Yang City would send out missions to recruit geniuses and explore the blood mist, killing the blood beasts that grew inside, preventing the blood beasts from forming into a beast tide and attacking Yuan Yang City.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan lived in Yuan Yang City for a period in time after reaching Central Continent, in order to survive, he accepted the missions to kill blood beasts.

From this perspective, Fang Yuan was doing a good deed by taking Song Zi Xing's severed arm in advance.

Fang Yuan observed it for a while before carefully using some mortal killer moves to probe it.

The golden bell phantom did not move, it was indeed an immortal killer move.

Fang Yuan surrounded the golden bell phantom and continued to circle around it, observing it from all angles, he tried to find an appropriate method.

The golden bell was not still, it was rotating slowly, the severed arm was floating inside, blood colored light could be seen flickering inside.

Fang Yuan went around it over a dozen times, before having a plan.

He was about to strike when his ears twitched, he heard some noises.

“Explosion... did you guys hear it?”

“... Yes... saw a mystical light...”

“Treasure... maybe it is...”

Random voices could be heard at intervals, they were getting closer to him.

Fang Yuan immediately realized that surrounding Gu Masters were drawn over by the commotion.

This location was at the periphery of True Yang mountain range, desolate beasts did not normally come here, and because this was near Yuan Yang City, many Gu Masters were active here.

The immortal killer move from the Gu Immortal earlier caused golden light to fly into the sky, it earned a lot of attention and the Gu Masters came here to investigate it.

“A bunch of insects.” Fang Yuan sneered, a cruel light flashed in his eyes.

At his will, strength path phantoms flew out of his immortal aperture.

Soon, there were thousands of strength path phantoms surrounding Fang Yuan.

Each time Fang Yuan went out, he would store a large number of strength path phantom in his immortal aperture. That was because using myriad self to create the strength path phantom army required some time.

“Kill.” Fang Yuan instructed, as thousands of strength path phantoms attacked, rushing down and blending into the dark night.

“What are those things?”

“Ahhh!”

“Gather into a formation, quickly gather into a formation!”

“Run...”

Cries, screams, and furious shouts were heard, a battle of life and death ensued, in just a few breaths’ time, the Gu Masters were routed.

Fang Yuan’s phantom army attacked mercilessly, countless Gu Masters died, the bloody smell spread to Fang Yuan’s location very quickly.

Fang Yuan’s arms were behind his back, he looked at the golden bell phantom, his expression calm under his mask.

Even though he had a method already, he did not strike yet.

Haste makes waste.

Even though the strength path phantoms were powerful, they could not use investigative methods, they also could not boost their speed. Some Gu Masters might not give up, and try to conceal themselves and sneak in.

But these people would all die without an intact corpse.

Because Fang Yuan was here, he used dozens of investigative killer moves without pause, putting layers and layers of arrangements here.

No movements could evade his search.

Unlimited primeval essence had an advantage, that was the casual use of mortal killer moves, one could use mortal killer moves almost endlessly.

And because of the accumulations of Fang Yuan’s previous life, he knew better mortal killer moves that surpassed this era.

Fang Yuan waited for a while, as expected, three or four Gu Masters sneaked in.

Fang Yuan manipulated the strength path phantoms and according to his manipulation, charged over to kill these Gu Masters who were courting death.

“Impossible, how did they find me?”

“Spare, please spare me!”

“Ahhhhhh!”

The Gu Masters had nowhere to hide, they were all killed.

After a while, the surroundings became quiet, the smell of blood became thicker as birds could no longer be heard near the trees, the place was completely silent and dead.

Fang Yuan started to make his move.

Myriad Self First Style — Giant Hand!

A strength path giant hand appeared out of nowhere, grabbing the golden bell.

The golden bell phantom restrained was what held inside, it had little defense on the outside.

After adding in Pulling Mountain and Pulling Water, Fang Yuan’s strength path giant hand had grown rapidly in strength. It only needed to grasp hard and the bell would break.

But the thing was, how could he prevent the severed arm from exploding into a mist of blood after the bell was broken!

Thankfully, Fang Yuan was not only a strength path grandmaster, but also a blood path grandmaster. Like Song Zi Xing, he knew many blood path methods!

He had planned for this over a long time, he made ample preparations.

Immediately, he started his arrangements and focused. Over a hundred blood path killer moves were used in sequence, coordinating with each other. An even greater number of Gu formations were used on the outside, there were layers upon layers of them.

After the arrangements were done, he observed again to make sure there were no flaws in his set up.

He found that there were two errors and changed them, he then did a third, fourth, and fifth check.

This was an important matter, Fang Yuan had a lot of patience.

In the end, when he struck, everything was under his control.

The golden bell phantom broke, and the arm was going to detonate, but it was restrained and had layers of seals placed on it.

Song Zi Xing was already extremely weak when he used this arm to activate blood demon body separation, he used less than ten beads of immortal essence on it.

That was also the reason why Fang Yuan could obtain this severed arm.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 851: Land Spirit’s Master, Second Blessed Land

After obtaining the severed arm, Fang Yuan carefully kept it in his immortal aperture.

Soon after, he cleaned up the area and removed all his traces.

Returning to Hu Immortal blessed land, he did not rest, he started working on the severed arm, spending four days and three nights to turn it into Song Zi Xing’s head.

Next, he used Fixed Immortal Travel and went to Earth Abyss.

“Star Form land spirit, I brought Song Zi Xing’s head!” In the eerie and dark underground world, he shouted.

A speck of starlight first appeared, before light burst out like water from a fountain.

A breath of time later, a huge squarish door made of starlight appeared. The half transparent door was floating in the air, at the top, there were four words written on the plaque — Star Form blessed land!

Fang Yuan squinted as he looked at it.

Ordinary blessed lands and grotto-heavens had entrances. Because the entrance represented interaction, and with interaction, they could take in heaven and earth qi to strengthen the small world.

Thus, Infallible blessed land was very unique, because it did not have entrances, it was a very strange exception.

As Fang Yuan waited, a small slit opened in the starlight door.

“It’s you? You really brought Song Zi Xing’s head?” A voice came from behind the slit, Star Form land spirit did not appear, he was quite wary.

Fang Yuan chuckled as he tossed the head over.

Actions speak louder than words!

The slit opened a bit more, a suction force moved the head over to it.

“It really is Song Zi Xing’s head!” A joyful and surprised voice came from behind the door.

Boom!

The door opened completely, starlight opened up a path for Fang Yuan, as Star Form land spirit stood at the door, saying to Fang Yuan with cheerful submission: “Star Form land spirit greets master.”

“Mm.” Fang Yuan nodded, his expression was calm, he took huge steps and walked onto the starlight path, entering into Star Form blessed land.

The moment he stepped in, starlight overwhelmed Fang Yuan’s vision.

But in the blink of an eye, the starlight faded, and Star Form blessed land’s unique terrain appeared before him.

The whole of Star Form blessed land resembled a giant bowl.

Like a bowl, the edges were interconnected mountain ranges, they formed a tight circle that resembled city walls.

And within the bowl, they were slanted slopes that converged towards the center.

Darkness enshrouded this world, Fang Yuan raised his head and looked at the sky, there was nearly complete darkness, only a few starlight specks were shining weakly in the sky.

Like how Hu Immortal blessed land only had days without nights, Star Form blessed land only had nights without days. Normally, blessed lands would not have changes between day and night. Only after becoming a grotto-heaven or becoming close to a grotto-heaven would they start having such transformations between night and day.

This was not the first time Fang Yuan was here.

In fact, he was the one who placed down this blessed land.

Last time, the stars were shining in the sky, it was very bright and dazzling, the ground was very bright due to all of the starlight. But now, it was quite dim, it showed that Star Form land spirit was not having an easy time managing the place.

This was to be expected.

Without a Gu Immortal, the blessed land could not produce immortal essence, the land spirit and the blessed land were interlinked, it had to protect itself and manage the blessed land.

But how could land spirits have the strength and wisdom of Gu Immortals?

Thus, most land spirits would find a master to help themselves. Survival was the most basic instinct in all living beings, the only difference was the difficulty in getting the land spirit to acknowledge a new master.

Fang Yuan’s gaze swept across the area, before it landed on Star Form land spirit.

“Bring me around to inspect the blessed land.” Fang Yuan ordered.

Star Form land spirit looked like a little boy, he was floating in the air. He was wearing pinkish blue clothes wrapped around his chest and stomach, his small arms and legs were tender white like lotus roots, looking delicate like jade, he appeared very cute.

After acknowledging Fang Yuan, Star Form land spirit looked towards Fang Yuan with a clear gaze filled with admiration and warmth.

Hearing Fang Yuan’s words, Star Form land spirit nodded: “Master, follow me.”

This attitude was completely the opposite of previously.

A lump of starlight gathered on Fang Yuan, as his body flew up rapidly.

This speed was extremely fast, even Song Zi Xing’s blood rainbow flash could not match it.

Fang Yuan felt his vision blurring, all he saw was starlight around him, he could only catch occasional fuzzy images from the quickly moving scenery.

The starlight stopped moving, and the scene in his vision had already changed.

“Master, you are at the southeast side of the blessed land now. This is the arrow bamboo forest. The biggest plantation area in the entire blessed land.” Star Form land spirit introduced.

Fang Yuan looked over, only to see that this arrow bamboo forest was huge, it extended beyond Fang Yuan’s field of vision.

The arrow bamboos were straight, they resembled green spear bamboo from Qing Mao Mountain, but they were not jade in color, instead, the bamboo shoots were black and did not have any leaves growing on them, only branches. At each segment of the arrow bamboo, there would be around three branches growing on it. These branches were sharp and long, resembling arrows.

Below the arrow bamboo forest were large numbers of star cave rocks, countless dark fragrance mushrooms and a field of white shadow grass.

Fang Yuan nodded his head internally, the arrangement of this habitat could not be done any better.

“If I am not wrong, this should be the production area of star dart Gu?” Fang Yuan asked.

“Master is correct.” Star Form land spirit answered immediately.

Star dart Gu was a rank one mortal Gu, it was transformed from ordinary insects. This was different from the production of starlight firefly Gu.

Starlight firefly Gu were a part of the starlight firefly group, produced after they transformed and mutated.

Star dart Gu could be produced from any type of insect which entered deep sleep inside a star cave rock that was filled with holes on the surface. After a total of forty-nine days, a portion of the slumbering insects would undergo a change and become star dart Gu.

The food of star dart Gu was the bamboo juice of the arrow bamboo forest.

The arrow bamboo forest was hot and humid, the bamboos themselves would produce bamboo juice that dripped out.

“In the past, the bamboo juices produced would form into a thick blue fog, it was a top quality place to raise star dart Gu. Unfortunately, I have not obtained any good watering liquids, thus it became like this.” Star Form land spirit said with a longing tone.

“It seems I have to buy moon well water in batches.” Fang Yuan muttered, he was very knowledgeable, he knew what water the arrow bamboo forest needed.

“Master is knowledgeable.” Star Form land spirit added, his expression becoming excited.

Even though Star Lord Wan Xiang left behind quite a bit of immortal essence, there were few immortal essence stones. And because Star Form land spirit was worrying over his finances, he could not buy goods from treasure yellow heaven casually.

Compared to watering the arrow bamboo forest, there were other areas which needed the financial support more urgently.

Afterwards, under the guidance of the land spirit, Fang Yuan went to the north area of the blessed land, inspecting the meteorite pits, this was the place to raise stellar fire Gu and produce falling meteor Gu.

Next, he went to the center of the blessed land, this was a lake with ripples and reflecting light, it was huge and was called broken star lake. This was also the place to rear Gu worms, it produced star river Gu.

Next, he went to several grassy fields, they were all full of star fragment grass, a vast number of them. They were planted on black soil, the blades of grass were plump and shiny, they were much higher in quality compared to the ones that were planted in Hu Immortal blessed land!

“Arrow bamboo forest, meteorite pit, broken star lake, star fragment grass field.” Fang Yuan floated in the air, looking at the lake, he showed a satisfied expression.

The four areas mentioned were Star Lord Wan Xiang’s four main sources of revenue.

Star Lord Wan Xiang was quite decent in his development, he mainly sold star dart Gu, stellar fire Gu, falling meteor Gu, star river Gu, and starlight firefly Gu.

While Fang Yuan was still searching desperately for four sources of revenue, he already had them. At the moment, Fang Yuan only had guts Gu and regretful spider trades. The other two, eerie fire dragon pythons and dragonfish, were still not sold in the market yet.

Star Lord Wan Xiang had rank six cultivation level with one heavenly tribulation passed. He was also a lone cultivator, but he was higher in cultivation level than Hu Immortal.

According to his status and foundation, it would normally be impossible for him to develop his blessed land to this extent.

But he had his fortuitous encounter.

That was Starry Sky grotto-heaven. The owner of Starry Sky grotto-heaven, Seven Star Child, became an immortal zombie in order to prolong his life, while exploring Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm, he fell into deep slumber.

Star Lord Wan Xiang had by chance discovered that Starry Sky grotto-heaven connected to a spatial crack in the outside world of Central Continent. Every year, at a certain time, this crack would open.

Thus, Star Lord Wan Xiang would go in every year to scavenge for resources to strengthen himself. Even though he had limited time on each occasion, he entered many times.

Star Lord Wan Xiang thus had decent development, his immortal aperture was smoothly growing in value with each passing day, he surpassed most lone cultivator Gu Immortals. Even Shi Lei praised his blessed land inwardly when he saw it, this Star Lord Wan Xiang’s foundation was already on par with typical rank six Gu Immortals in the ten great ancient sects.

But it was a pity that Star Lord Wan Xiang was heavily injured by Song Zi Xing, and because his tribulation was impending, he had to take a risk. He invited

Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei to explore Starry Sky grotto-heaven. In the end, at the eighth star hall, he fell into Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm, his soul was destroyed and only his body was left.

Fang Yuan took the body and placed the blessed land in Earth Abyss.

This led to the development of future events, like Star Form land spirit’s requirement for becoming the new owner.

“With these four sources of revenue, my financial power will double! I will be swimming in profits, I will really be drowning in immortal essence stones!” Fang Yuan was overjoyed.

Star Lord Wan Xiang had operated his blessed land for a long time, he had already slotted himself into the market and had his own share of the economy in treasure yellow heaven. Fang Yuan inherited his blessed land, he had also gotten over the difficult initial stage of entering the market, he took over Star Lord Wan Xiang’s businesses directly, it saved him lots of trouble!

Ordinary resources like star dart Gu and stellar fire Gu were usually sold in bulk quantities, they were very competitive in the market. It was not easy to carve out a share for oneself in the market, they would be collaborated against, facing price wars, or some Gu Immortals might even threaten to kill them.

As the saying goes, ruining a person’s wealth is akin to killing their parents.

The Gu Immortal world was very cruel, if you want to do business, you need to show your strength. Without strength, no matter how flourishing your business was, you would get killed and plundered!

Thus, Fang Yuan was always very careful with the dragonfish and eerie fire dragon pythons that he had. He wanted to make use of Xiao clan’s transaction token to enter Western Desert’s market. That could avoid much trouble, and allow him to earn more profits.

Of course, for monopoly businesses like guts Gu, you could sell them as you wish. Others could not even compete in this, they could only watch in envy.

After inspecting the blessed land, Fang Yuan was very pleased, but there was still something that he was highly anticipating.

“Land spirit, bring me to see those Immortal Gu in the blessed land!” At the next moment, he instructed the land spirit.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 852: Three Immortal Gu, All Are Useful

The whole of Star Form blessed land was like a giant bowl, and its center was also the location which was at the bottom of the terrain.

There was a lake here that spanned as far as the eye could see, its name was broken star lake. And the place where Star Lord Wan Xiang normally cultivated was also set at the bottom of broken star lake.

Reaching the bottom of the lake, Fang Yuan discovered a crystal palace, it was not large, and only had one main hall along with two normal halls.

Star Lord Wan Xiang’s Immortal Gu were kept in the main hall.

Under the guidance of Star Form land spirit, Fang Yuan smoothly entered the main hall.

The moment he entered the main hall, he saw an Immortal Gu flying around.

This Immortal Gu resembled a centipede, it was thin and long, like an arm, and black like iron. It was flying around in a zigzag fashion inside the main hall, the short horizontal segments on its body lit up like blue fireflies every now and then.

“This is a rank six Immortal Gu, Star Mark, it can temporarily add six hundred star path dao marks onto master’s body.” Star Form land spirit aptly introduced.

“Six hundred dao marks?” Fang Yuan was startled.

Even the strength path dao marks on his body numbered no more than two hundred. This was the case after he had been using eat strength Immortal Gu recently to add over forty.

However, this star mark Immortal Gu could actually cause an increase of six hundred star dao marks at once, it could be said to be an outstanding ability.

“Two hundred dao marks can increase power by twenty percent. Six hundred would mean a sixty percent increase. Unfortunately, they are star path dao marks, and I am not a star path Gu Immortal.”

There was no doubt this star mark Immortal Gu was a high quality support type Immortal Gu!

Fang Yuan was a strength path Gu Immortal and his body carried strength path dao marks, but once he activated star mark Immortal Gu, his body would be temporarily covered in a layer of star path dao marks, letting him disguise himself as a star path Gu Immortal!

Besides Star Mark, there were two other Immortal Gu in the main hall.

One was like a prismatic crystal, the size of a fist. It was quietly lying on a desk, without any movement.

Another was like a tender white bean sprout, filled with an air of vitality.

Through Star Form land spirit’s introductions, Fang Yuan knew the crystal-like Immortal Gu was starlight Immortal Gu, while the bean sprout-like Immortal Gu was known as Star Shoot.

Fang Yuan could not help feeling joyous.

Fortune had arrived!

These two Immortal Gu had much more use to Fang Yuan than star mark Immortal Gu.

Because starlight mortal Gu was a necessary Gu material for the production of the wisdom path star thought Gu.

Now that he had starlight Immortal Gu, he could completely imitate the use of strength qi Immortal Gu in refining airsac Gu, to refine star thought Gu much faster and on a much larger scale.

The starlight Immortal Gu removed the troublesome step of purchasing starlight mortal Gu.

At the same time, with Immortal Gu as the foundation, there would be a much lower failure probability in refining mortal star thought Gu. The risk involved would also be greatly mitigated, reducing the deaths of hairy men by a large degree.

There were two issues created by this, however.

The first problem was, to use starlight Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan would have to modify the recipe of star thought Gu.

The second issue was that using starlight Immortal Gu would consume immortal essence.

With wisdom Gu and the complete star thought Gu recipe, Fang Yuan would have no problems in modifying the Gu recipe, it was just a matter of time.

As for the second issue, it would have indeed been a problem for Fang Yuan in the past. But now, Fang Yuan was Star Form blessed land’s owner, he had six sources of revenue and it would even increase to eight in the future, his immortal essence stone earnings would quadruple! Such an amount of immortal essence stones made Fang Yuan have the confidence to spend immortal essence constantly in activating starlight Immortal Gu.

Starlight Immortal Gu increased the accumulation of star thought Gu by a large extent, which was of enormous assistance. And star shoot Immortal Gu was also very useful.

Fang Yuan had once purchased a mortal killer move from Star Lord Wan Xiang, called spring star rain.

This move irrigated the land, providing nutrition to vegetation and increasing their productivity. Ever since he got this move, Fang Yuan had been using it again and again.

The grassland in the sky of Hu Immortal blessed land was able to maintain its current scale, it largely could be attributed to this mortal killer move.

Frequent activation of Spring Star Rain consumed large numbers of star shoot mortal Gu.

Star shoot Gu were only sold by Star Lord Wan Xiang.

Fang Yuan had once thought of freeing himself from Star Lord Wan Xiang’s control by researching the refinement recipe of star shoot Gu. But even with wisdom Gu’s help, as Fang Yuan’s star path attainment was only ordinary, he could not get what he wished.

At this point, Fang Yuan had star shoot Immortal Gu, and from now on, he would be able to use spring star rain to his heart’s desire. He could also raise spring star rain to the level of an immortal killer move and use star shoot Immortal Gu as the core to further increase the yield of star fragment grass.

But Fang Yuan learned from Star Form land spirit: Star Lord Wan Xiang did possess the immortal killer move spring star rain.

In fact, the mortal killer move, spring star rain, which Star Lord Wan Xiang sold was a simplified version of his original spring star rain. The star shoot Gu that Star Lord Wan Xiang sold were also refined by using star shoot Immortal Gu.

This was the reason why Fang Yuan found it difficult to reverse-deduce the Gu recipe from star shoot Gu.

The reason was that Star Lord Wan Xiang’s Gu refinement method was done from top to bottom.

Star Mark, Starlight and Star Shoot; these three Immortal Gu were all the Immortal Gu left in the blessed land.

Star Lord Wan Xiang had a total of four Immortal Gu. Unfortunately, the fourth Immortal Gu was destroyed in his battle with Song Zi Xing.

Fang Yuan was thus able to obtain only three.

And he was already very satisfied with this.

Generally speaking, in the entirety of the five regions, there were few rank six Gu Immortals in possession of Immortal Gu. Most of them were still using mortal Gu and mortal killer moves.

Only the elites among rank six would be in possession of rank six Immortal Gu. For instance, rank six Gu Immortals of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, and another example would be lone cultivators like Star Lord Wan Xiang who had fortuitous encounters.

Northern Plains’ situation, however, was special. Because of the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the rate of Gu Immortals possessing Immortal Gu far surpassed the other four regions.

In fact, Central Continent was actually in last place among the five regions in regards to the ownership rate of Immortal Gu. It couldn’t be helped, they had the most Gu Immortals after all.

Fang Yuan’s situation was even more special.

Not counting these three Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan already had fourteen Immortal Gu. No one would believe it if such a number was told to them. Not to mention, among these was rank nine wisdom Gu!

Generally, even if one killed an enemy Gu Immortal, it was hard for them to get Immortal Gu as spoils of battle.

When Fang Yuan attacked Dong Fang Chang Fan, he had a huge advantage and had captured even Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul alive. But Dong Fang Chang Fan had made all the Immortal Gu self-detonate with a thought, and Fang Yuan could not even grasp even one of them.

Star Lord Wan Xiang was an exception.

Because he strayed into Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm, he died unexpectedly without making any reactions. Thus his Immortal Gu were left behind and benefited Fang Yuan in the end.

These three Immortal Gu still had Star Lord Wan Xiang’s will, but with Star Form land spirit’s assistance, it would not be a big problem to subdue them.

“Master, this is the immortal inheritance held in the blessed land, please have a look.” The land spirit handed an inheritance to Fang Yuan.

It turned out that this was Star Lord Wan Xiang’s first fortuitous encounter.

A Gu Immortal inheritance regarding star path.

It was this inheritance that guided the lone cultivator, Star Lord Wan Xiang, on his path of cultivation to become a rank six Gu Immortal.

Star Lord Wan Xiang’s second fortuitous encounter was discovering the entrance of Starry Sky grotto-heaven from where he plundered many resources.

His luck was actually quite good.

Star Lord Wan Xiang’s main cultivation was star path and Starry Sky grotto-heaven was also a star path grotto-heaven, thus, they were both very compatible in terms of resources.

Unlike Fang Yuan, who was a strength path Gu Immortal, while Hu Immortal blessed land was of enslavement path and the guts Gu produced by Dang Hun mountain were of soul path, these multiple aspects were not too compatible with each other.

Unfortunately, Star Lord Wan Xiang still died in the end, and everything he had was now Fang Yuan’s.

Fang Yuan stayed for a whole day in Star Form blessed land. He inspected a small tribe of rockmen in the blessed land as well as the three desolate beast level spinefin star dragonfish.

While he was alive, Star Lord Wan Xiang had used every possible effort to bring in this small group of rockmen. He did not have guts Gu and Star Form blessed land was also not a suitable environment for the survival of rockmen, as a result, many rockmen had died. It was not easy for him to maintain this small group.

The three spinefin star dragonfishes were captured from Starry Sky grotto-heaven, there was no shortage of desolate beasts inside there.

The reason he spent such large amounts of effort and capital was because star mark Immortal Gu’s food was the fresh meat of spinefin star dragonfish.

And starlight Immortal Gu fed upon the bodies of rockmen.

As for star shoot Immortal Gu, its food was large quantities of dark star kelps. This type of kelp grew in great amounts in broken star lake.

This was the orthodox situation of Gu Immortals.

Whatever path they cultivated, their Immortal Gu would be of that path and their immortal aperture would mostly have dao marks of that path. In this way, they could bear the burden of feeding Immortal Gu by raising the required food themselves.

Unlike Fang Yuan, whose strength path immortal aperture was dead, Hu Immortal blessed land was an enslavement path immortal aperture, and the Immortal Gu on him were of strength path, wisdom path, soul path, luck path and other various paths. He had to get help from the outside world to feed these Immortal Gu. Every time, he had to rack his brains and the situation was unstable. In fact, cleanse soul Immortal Gu had yet to be fed properly to this day. Whether it was Hu Immortal blessed land or his strength path immortal aperture, they both had sparse soul path dao marks and thus even if he wanted to, it was not possible for Fang Yuan to raise white lotus giant silkworm Gu.

By becoming the owner of Star Form blessed land, Fang Yuan’s strength had doubled!

Three star path Immortal Gu, four economic pillars, a complete star path inheritance, Fang Yuan would need a lot of time to absorb them fully.

He also made Star Form land spirit keep up the request of recognizing the blessed land's owner in treasure yellow heaven, to fabricate an image of Star Form blessed land still not having an owner.

And he also did not plan on telling the truth to Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng for a while.

The longer he could conceal it, the longer he would conceal it.

Hu Immortal blessed land was already exposed, Star Form blessed land was also in a partially exposed state, but only Hei Lou Lan knew this location. If, in the future, he became a fugitive, this base would be extremely important.

Regarding Dang Hun Mountain and the resources inside Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan did not plan to move them away for the moment.

The resources had been arranged just recently and large amounts of capital were invested, if he moved them to Star Form blessed land, with how astute Hei Lou Lan was, wouldn't she realize it?

The following day, Fang Yuan went to participate in the Refinement Path Convention.

With the huge influence from the large-scale competition, Central Continent was facing a surge of popularity in Gu refinement among all the people.

The news of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent collaborating to ambush Song Zi Xing and failing had yet to be spread, knowledge of this was limited to Gu Immortal level higher ups.

The ten great ancient sects had lost much face, there was still no news about Song Zi Xing, making it appear to be a joke to other sects or lone cultivator Gu Immortals. Many Gu Immortals moved one after another, searching for any traces left behind by Song Zi Xing in True Yang mountain range.

But how could they find anything?

In Fang Yuan's previous life, Central Continent's ten great ancient sects searched for over a hundred years to maintain their reputation, but were still not able to find him. Song Zi Xing's hiding ability was simply divine, even Fang Yuan could not match him in this.

Thus, Fang Yuan had no thoughts of chasing after Song Zi Xing from the very beginning.

Finally, the agreed upon date arrived, the day of the duel between Fang Yuan and Feng Jin Huang.

Although it was not a competition, it attracted quite a large audience.

"Feng Jin Huang, you want to duel, but first let me see the wager, if the wager is too low, this duel will not begin." Fang Yuan spoke in full view of everyone.

Whether they duelled or not, what Fang Yuan wanted was only to be in the top six places for the Infallible inheritance.

Moreover, losing in the duel would not eliminate either side or influence their rankings.

Feng Jin Huang had already made preparations, secretly transmitting her voice: "My wager will definitely interest you deeply. Fang Yuan, you are an immortal zombie and certainly know the pain of immortal zombies. What I have with me is a method which can let you revive!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 853: Dueling Feng Jin Huang (1/4)

“A revival method?” Fang Yuan’s eyes narrowed, a clear change appeared in his expression.

Spirit Affinity House was truly worthy of being one of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, its foundation was deep beyond imagination.

Fang Yuan had painstakingly searched for a way to get rid of his immortal zombie status and revive, and Spirit Affinity House actually had a way.

At this moment, when Feng Jin Huang placed this method as the wager, it directly touched upon Fang Yuan’s core interests, making him unable to refuse!

“Hehehe.” Fang Yuan laughed, restraining his agitated mood as he looked at Feng Jin Huang, “Tell me, this method would not be Immortal Crane Sect’s possession technique, right?”

“Of course not.” Feng Jin Huang smiled indifferently.

“I am indeed interested in your wager. But this wager is still far from matching my Hu Immortal blessed land.”

“The value of all things vary. Fang Yuan, if you were given the choice of either Hu Immortal blessed land or revival, which would you choose?”

‘Of course it would be reviving!’ Fang Yuan chose with no hesitation inwardly, while also speaking with no hesitation: “Of course it would be Hu Immortal blessed land. This is my biggest foundation, even though I have become an immortal zombie, I can maintain a good living by relying on it.”

Feng Jin Huang’s lips twitched as she shook her head, softening her tone: “Fang Yuan, you are not likely to be such a short-sighted person. But, I know you won’t put Hu Immortal blessed land as your wager, and I also cannot forcibly demand you to do so. Let’s talk about something more practical. If I lose, I will tell you the method of revival. You can rest assured that this method already has a successful precedent. But if you lose, we can undergo transactions.”

Fang Yuan looked at Feng Jin Huang’s slight smile and confident appearance, he narrowed his eyes and asked: “Hmm? What transactions?”

Feng Jin Huang replied: “If you lose, you need to make a deal with Spirit Affinity House to supply guts Gu for the long term. The price can be discussed as long as it doesn’t overstep the limit. But you must deliver them in time and in adequate quantity! If you lack souls, Spirit Affinity House will sell them to you, and the price will even be thirty percent lower than the market price. These transactions must take precedence, even over those of Immortal Crane Sect. No matter how many guts Gu you have, you must first supply them to Spirit Affinity House before selling to other places.”

Hearing this, Fang Yuan could not help but look at Feng Jin Huang in a different light again, having a completely new opinion in regards to this young girl in front of him.

He had not expected her to mature to this degree in just this period of time.

As expected of a genius.

No, rather than that, it should be said that she has capable people behind her and was educated well.

Feng Jin Huang’s demand, as far as Fang Yuan was concerned, was truly lenient and could even be said to be too generous.

But guts Gu, to Feng Jin Huang, was an urgent need.

The reason?

Feng Jin Huang could explore dream realms with dream wings Immortal Gu. Even with the help of the Immortal Gu, her soul would still feel weakened and could be injured. Guts Gu was among the highest quality soul strengthening method in the whole world, even Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had praised it.

Feng Jin Huang had originally challenged Fang Yuan out of juvenile temperament, it was an action taken in a fit of anger.

But right now, the discussion about wagers with Fang Yuan was based on the present situation, it was practical and also concerned benefits. This was a mature action.

If Feng Jin Huang had asked Fang Yuan to put Hu Immortal blessed land or Dang Hun mountain as the wager, Fang Yuan definitely would not agree.

And although Fang Yuan was using Immortal Crane Sect’s name, the relation between him and Immortal Crane Sect was well-known by all the ten great ancient sects.

Fang Yuan absolutely had no qualms in regards to Immortal Crane Sect’s reputation and would definitely agree to Feng Jin Huang’s duel with this.

Thus, Feng Jin Huang made this request.

To Fang Yuan, selling guts Gu to Spirit Affinity House naturally had its benefits.

The first benefit was he could increase the sales volume, earning much more immortal essence stones. Who would not like having more immortal essence stones?

The second benefit was that Fang Yuan would have a connection to Spirit Affinity House. If one day, he fell out with Immortal Crane Sect, he would have an alternative path.

In fact, Fang Yuan’s original intention in accepting Feng Jin Huang’s challenge had been to cooperate with Spirit Affinity House.

As Feng Jin Huang explored the dream realm multiple times, she realized the value of guts Gu and wanted to obtain some of the benefits from Immortal Crane Sect. And Fang Yuan was also willing to do this, if he truly reached a deal with Spirit Affinity House, it would also be extremely helpful to him in managing his relationship with Immortal Crane Sect.

‘Regardless of victory or loss, this duel is beneficial to me. Anyway, the result of the duel has nothing to do with the competition. Eh? Something is wrong, her request is also to lower my will to fight.”

Fang Yuan suddenly had a realization and understood another layer of intention behind this move from Feng Jin Huang.

“Let’s start then, the final winner of this contest will be me!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly as he laughed heartily.

Feng Jin Huang’s gaze flashed: “That is not for certain.”

The wagers were set, both sides began to discuss of the contents of this duel.

Feng Jin Huang suggested refining river wave trace Gu as the task. River wave trace Gu was a rank five water path Gu worm, and formed a series with rank three water trace Gu, rank four wave trace Gu and rank six worldly wave trace Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan immediately refused.

Spirit Affinity House specialized in cultivating and using water path Gu worms, this could be seen from the Immortal Gu House, Water Pavilion.

If the task was set to refine river wave trace Gu, Feng Jin Huang’s advantage would be too big.

Fang Yuan suggested refining blood steps Gu.

This was a rank three blood path movement type Gu worm.

Feng Jin Huang also refused outright. What a joke, who did not know Fang Yuan was proficient in blood path refinement techniques, and Feng Jin Huang did not have confidence in refining blood path Gu.

The two discussed for a while before finally settling on a rank five fire path Gu worm, five orifices fire pagoda Gu, and it would be done in a martial duel.

The duel would not be private, but be a completely open contest like the Refinement Path Convention.

Soon, similar materials appeared in front of the two sides. To maintain fairness, both sides were provided with the same Gu recipe.

The winner would be the side that could successfully refine five orifices fire pagoda Gu first.

Unlike the previous contests, because it was in the martial duel format, whenever they reached a specific stage, both refiners would have a chance to attack each other once.

Under everyone’s gaze, Fang Yuan and Feng Jin Huang sat opposite each other, each occupying an end of the stage with a gap of around two hundred and sixty steps between them.

The duel began, Fang Yuan immediately inspected the refinement materials.

He needed to have a complete understanding of every material. If some materials were defective, it would greatly influence the Gu refinement.

Fang Yuan checked very carefully, sometimes the task organizers would intentionally supply some defective materials and even tamper with them so the defects are hidden, causing the Gu Master to not be able to easily detect them.

If they were truly deceived, it would cause quite a problem when refining the Gu.

This arrangement had practical significance.

Usually, when refining Gu, Gu Masters would not always be able to gather perfect refinement materials. Sometimes, there would be some damage because the materials might have been stored for too long, or perhaps damaged when being transported or seized in battles. Or there might be substandard refinement materials sold in the market, which would have to be distinguished by the Gu Master themselves.

Thus, inspecting Gu refinement materials was a part of refinement path attainment.

In this duel of refining five orifices fire pagoda Gu, the convention supplied as many as a thousand types of materials. There was not a single Gu worm, they were all grass, flowers, stones, bones and so on.

Fang Yuan inspected all the materials, using an entire hour.

Afterwards, he inspected the Gu recipe provided by the convention.

There were altogether five Gu recipes, rank one – single aperture charcoal Gu, rank two – double orifice stove Gu, rank three – three orifices fire hut Gu, rank four – four orifices fire tower Gu, as well as rank five – five orifices fire pagoda Gu.

These five Gu worms were a series, sharing the same origin.

The first step in refining five orifices fire pagoda Gu was to refine large numbers of rank one single orifice charcoal Gu. Then, using the single orifice charcoal Gu as the main materials to refine double orifice stove Gu. From rank one to rank two, rank two to rank three, rank three to rank four, and then from rank four to rank five, finally refining five orifices fire pagoda Gu.

It was because there were many steps and the process was cumbersome, both sides were provided with a thousand types of Gu refinement materials.

With Fang Yuan’s wisdom path methods, he could modify the Gu recipe and cut down on some steps of the Gu refinement process. He could even directly refine five orifices fire pagoda Gu with the materials provided.

However, after some thought, Fang Yuan gave up on the idea and decided to move step by step.

There were many reasons. First, he was unable to rely on wisdom Gu here. Second, modifying Gu recipes took a lot of time, and there would only be more losses than gains. Moreover, this was a martial duel, both sides could attack five times in total to disturb the Gu refinement. If a Gu recipe to refine it directly was used, once the process was disturbed, the previous efforts would be wasted. It was more stable to move step by step.

While Fang Yuan was inspecting the Gu refinement materials, Feng Jin Huang was checking the Gu recipes. While Fang Yuan was inspecting the Gu recipes, Feng Jin Huang meticulously checked the refinement materials.

The order was different, but when they started the Gu refinement, it was almost at the same time.

“They have finally begun.”

"They used up over an hour to inspect the materials and the Gu recipes, they are really patient."

"This contest concerns the face of Immortal Crane Sect and Spirit Affinity House, it is a battle of reputation of two of the ancient sects!"

The spectators started talking.

Some were in favor of Feng Jin Huang while some thought highly of Fang Yuan.

There were also two factions that had formed in the audience, the numerically greater disciples of Spirit Affinity House were in a mutual showdown of glaring with Immortal Crane Sect's disciples. The elders leading Immortal Crane Sect's group had ugly expressions. Fang Yuan had placed guts Gu as the wager without reporting to the higher ups of Immortal Crane Sect, and they were not feeling good about this.

At first, Fang Yuan and Feng Jin Huang's refinement techniques were the same.

During this process, Fang Yuan used his skilled refinement techniques to gradually surpass Feng Jin Huang, progressing faster and slowly obtaining a slight lead.

After all, Fang Yuan had the practical experience of his previous life, while even though Feng Jin Huang used Immortal Gu to explore the dream realm and improve her refinement path attainment quickly, she still lacked tempering in putting them to practice.

To catch up to Fang Yuan, Feng Jin Huang used a refinement path killer move.

Double action!

Her hands trembled, and the lump of fire she was maintaining, suddenly split into two, forming two fire lumps.

Refinement path killer move – small wishful hand!

Two small and compact hands flew out of Feng Jin Huang's mind, completely formed from will, emitting a jade luster.

Feng Jin Huang's two hands constantly regulated and controlled the intensity and the temperature of the two fire lumps, while the two small wishful hands grabbed materials and threw them into the fire.

"Wonderful!"

"Using two killer moves consecutively."

"Feng Jin Huang is well prepared, now her speed is much faster than that of Fang Yuan."

Clamorous discussions were being exchanged between the spectators.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

“Using two immortal killer moves consecutively...”

Under the mask, Fang Yuan’s gaze was sharp as a knife.

But he immediately turned his gaze towards the fire in his hands.

“Phew, that was close!” Outside the stage, a female disciple of Spirit Affinity House breathed out a sigh of relief.

“Senior sister Qin Juan, what was close? I clearly saw first senior sister Jin Huang use two refinement path killer moves in a row, catching up immediately.” Another female disciple of Spirit Affinity House was sitting beside Qin Juan, she had a chubby face, her name was Sun Yao and she asked this curiously.

“Junior sister Sun Yao, you need to understand that this duel is different from what we’ve seen before, this is a martial duel! In martial duels, the refiners can attack to disturb the other side’s refinement.” Qin Juan explained patiently.

“Ah, they can do that? It is already so hard for me to refine Gu normally, but if I were to be disturbed on top of that. Heavens...” Sun Yao pursed her lips, revealing an expression showing that she did not even dare to imagine such a thing: “This martial duel format is clearly meant to make one suffer, whoever thought of this is really strict.”

“No.” Qin Juan, however, had an expression of approval, “Being able to resist disturbances is one of the most important aspects of refinement path. In our cultivation journeys, perhaps one day we would suffer a sneak attack when we are refining Gu. In fact, many times when we leave the sect to complete the sect missions outside, because of all sorts of damage that may occur to Gu worms, we often have to refine new Gu in the wild.”

“Using the same logic, when we are facing a strong enemy and discover the enemy refining Gu, we would also choose to sneak attack and take the enemy by surprise, turning the situation in battle in our favor. This is the practical significance of the martial duel format. Junior sister Sun Yao, you also know Gu Masters have to use all their concentration during the refinement process, because slight carelessness can result in failure and backlash. But, when you refine Gu outside, you also need to pay some attention to your surroundings.”

“First senior sister Jin Huang used two refinement path killer moves in a row just earlier, that was a risky move. Because the moment she activated the killer move, the entirety of her attention was naturally focused on the Gu worms forming the killer move. If it were an ordinary Gu Master, they might have already lost control over the flames and failed in Gu refinement if they had to divert their attention in activating the killer move. If at this moment, Fang Yuan, that demon, had attacked first senior sister Jin Huang, it might have caused significant trouble to her.”

Hearing Qin Juan’s explanation, Sun Yao came to a realization: “So it was like that, then that truly was dangerous. Fortunately, that demon Fang Yuan did not attack.”

Because Fang Yuan had, time and time again, used blood path refinement techniques at crucial moments, disciples of Spirit Affinity House who disliked him privately called him a demon.

However, there were, in fact, many demons in the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent.

For instance, the third supreme elder of Immortal Crane Sect, Lord Tiger Demon, was a demonic path Gu Immortal in his early years before he was recruited by Immortal Crane Sect.

The sect that exhibited this the most was actually Spirit Affinity House itself.

The late Sword Immortal Bo Qing was a person of the demonic path with an extremely murderous nature, but was reformed through love with Spirit Affinity House’s Fairy Mo Yao, in the end, Bo Qing was recruited into Spirit Affinity House.

At present, the story of Fairy Bai Qing and Feng Jiu Ge was widely spread, and Feng Jiu Ge was formerly of the demonic path as well.

Central Continent was so large and was famous for producing outstanding champions. Once in a while, there would be some astonishing demonic cultivators and lone cultivators that would shake the world.

To maintain control of the overall situation and to protect their interests, the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent would recruit these people, it was the best method to effectively retain their authority.

‘He did not attack? That’s a pity...’ Feng Jin Huang inwardly sighed, out of the two lumps of fire burning in front of her, one suddenly extinguished.

“What’s going on?” People in the audience involuntarily exclaimed.

“Don’t tell me that demon, Fang Yuan, had already attacked and disturbed first senior sister, causing half the Gu refinement to fail? This demon is too cunning, what attack did he use, we did not even see it.” Sun Yao anxiously cried out, her tone filled with loathing towards Fang Yuan.

“No, that’s not right. The elder hosting this duel did not say anything, this means that demon, Fang Yuan, did not attack. So it was like that!” Qin Juan’s eyes brightened as she suddenly came to a realization, “Originally, first senior sister had put up a facade of using two killer moves, it was a trap meant to entice Fang Yuan to attack her. If Fang Yuan attacked, his mind would be focused on his attack at that instant, which would expose a weak point. First senior sister would then have a higher chance of successfully counter attacking.”

“My goodness, was that actually the case?” Sun Yao’s small, chubby mouth opened wide in shock at the battle of wits behind this contest.

Qin Juan had a serious expression: “I was also deceived just now. The truth of the matter is first senior sister set up a trap, but that demon Fang Yuan saw through it and was not fooled... junior sister Sun Yao, watch closely, this contest is going to be extremely splendid. The contest between these two is absolutely the best of this generation.”

“Okay!” Sun Yao nodded, her eyes staring at the stage without blinking.

The ten great ancient sects of Central Continent had always fiercely competed, not only did their Gu Immortals compete, the disciples also had a similar type of competition.

There was no doubt that Feng Jin Huang was the best of this generation within the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent.

However, in the contest for Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan suddenly appeared and kicked Feng Jin Huang down the mountain. As for the events behind the scenes, they were not explained to disciples like Sun Yao and Qin Juan, and even Immortal Crane Sect’s own disciples and most of their elders thought Fang Yuan was a genius disciple, secretly nurtured by the sect.

In the previous round, Feng Jin Huang was defeated, and this duel, in which Feng Jin Huang wanted to reclaim her prestige, involved a contest between the best disciples of the ten great ancient sects. It was a hidden clash between Spirit Affinity House and Immortal Crane Sect.

Thus, almost all of the audience was asking a question — who was the best Gu Master among the younger generation?

What they did not know was: Fang Yuan had already become a Gu Immortal, although he was only an immortal zombie, he was already someone they could no longer decipher. Meanwhile, Feng Jin Huang possessed dream wings Immortal Gu, and had already activated it, gaining enormous benefits.

Bystanders could only see such surface details, but both competitors did not see much importance in the reputation aspect. Feng Jin Huang had already matured a lot and realized what benefits meant, while Fang Yuan was way beyond her maturity.

The competition continued.

Fang Yuan had seen through Feng Jin Huang’s trap, but between Feng Jin Huang’s two killer moves, small wishful hand was real. It was unlike ‘double action’, that had only been a facade.

With the help of the two small hands made of will, Feng Jin Huang’s refinement speed was slightly above that of Fang Yuan. And as time passed, the gap between the two gradually increased.

However, this gap was not obvious.

Fang Yuan maintained his rhythm, and using solely Gu refinement techniques without any killer moves, he maintained the fire and was now almost finished processing the materials.

He used Gu refinement techniques and not refinement path killer moves. Techniques were the summation of purely skills and experience. They were the foundation of Gu refinement.

“Very skilled! Even though he is the enemy, I cannot help but admit this demon, Fang Yuan, has a very solid foundation in Gu refinement. Even some elders from our sect do not have as solid of a foundation as him.” Qin Juan suddenly sighed, after having watched fixedly for a long while.

“He has a grasp of so many Gu refinement techniques, he has used at least thirty types by now. But I feel our first senior sister is still the more amazing one. She fell back a little at the start, but quickly caught up later. Now, no matter how that demon Fang Yuan pursues, he won’t be able to catch up. This small wishful hand killer move is truly convenient!” Sun Yao said, admiringly.

“No.” Qin Juan shook her head: “First senior sister’s lead might not necessarily be a good thing. Maintaining a killer move requires primeval essence and also is taxing upon the mind. On the contrary, that demon Fang Yuan has only been using basic Gu refinement techniques, which do not have as much of a burden on the mind. As this continues over time, his mind will be less taxed than first senior sister’s, which will be of great help in the later stages of Gu refinement.”

“Ah, it is like this! Then, isn’t first senior sister in danger? Senior sister Qin Juan, you are saying first senior sister gained a lead from using a refinement path killer move, but is instead in a disadvantage? Although your words sound reasonable, how could it be like that?” Sun Yao felt a headache.

“Hehe, junior sister Sun Yao, this is the brilliance of the Refinement Path Convention. You have just begun your cultivation journey and have yet to come in contact with many things, you will slowly understand them in future.” Qin Juan smiled, but she was feeling heavy internally.

‘This demon, Fang Yuan, is too skilled. He is keeping pace with first senior sister just by repeatedly using Gu refinement techniques. Even though first senior sister used a refinement path killer move, she is not able to create a large lead! It can’t go on like this...’

Feng Jin Huang was feeling some mental exhaustion.

It had not been long since the competition began, and both sides were still at the stage of refining rank one single orifice charcoal Gu.

According to logic, Feng Jin Huang’s should still have plentiful mental energy, and not be in a state of exhaustion.

However, estimates was one thing, the actual competition could be completely different.

Feng Jin Huang could disregard the gazes from outside the stage, her talents were outstanding and with Gu Immortals as parents, she had been the center of attention since she was young, she was already used to it.

The pressure on Feng Jin Huang mainly came from Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan displayed an incomparably solid foundation, and was relying on just Gu refinement techniques to maintain pace with Feng Jin Huang, while even though she had used a refinement path killer move, she was not able to surpass him greatly in progress.

Fang Yuan’s extraordinary performance and formidable achievements made the world overrate his attainment level, Feng Jin Huang had already been feeling pressure before the duel.

After the duel started, Fang Yuan was in pursuit with a stable speed, which further increased the pressure on Feng Jin Huang.

This pressure was greatly wearing down on Feng Jin Huang’s mind. She was slowly starting to feel exhausted and uneasy internally.

“It seems my refinement path quasi-grandmaster attainment cannot match Fang Yuan’s refinement path attainment. What should I do?” Feng Jin Huang began to think and plan quickly, while refining the Gu.

“I have used a refinement path killer move, my mind is also being worn down rapidly. The duel has only just begun, and as time goes on, Fang Yuan’s advantage will become even more clear. But if I stop using the killer move and compete with just Gu refinement techniques, I still cannot match Fang Yuan. My greatest advantage is the large numbers of refinement path killer moves that I carefully prepared!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 855: Dueling Feng Jin Huang (3/4)

The duel stipulated they could only use the materials provided by the convention. Although they could launch attacks and use refinement path killer moves, any methods affecting the soul or mind, like refreshing the mind or strengthening the soul, were completely prohibited.

Feng Jin Huang was the one who set this rule, it was to prevent Fang Yuan from using guts Gu to strengthen his soul during the duel.

The soul and mind were closely connected. Feng Jin Huang made this move to limit Fang Yuan’s advantage in this aspect, but she had not expected she would be the first to suffer a drawback from this rule.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, Feng Jin Huang flicked her pinky finger, shooting out a speck of golden light.

The golden light was extremely fast, reaching Fang Yuan in the blink of an eye, targeting the refinement flames in Fang Yuan’s hands.

If the golden light hit the fire, even with Fang Yuan’s ability, the refinement would fail, he would have to bear the backlash and start over.

However.

How could a person as cautious as Fang Yuan not pay attention to the defense of such an important area?

Ding!

A crisp sound echoed, the golden light was three inches from the fire when it clashed into a formless barrier and was blocked.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was calm, the fire in his hands was not affected in the slightest.

Feng Jin Huang’s attack was blocked by Fang Yuan without batting an eyelid.

Only after this attack had been defended did the Gu Masters outside the stage react.

“Spirit Affinity House’s Feng Jin Huang was the first to initiate an attack!”

“But the attack was blocked by Immortal Crane Sect’s Fang Yuan.”

“What was that attack just now, it was so fast!!”

“Feng Jin Huang made an error in her choice, how could Fang Yuan not defend such an important area? It might have been better to attack Fang Yuan directly instead and injure him.”

“Hmm? Look, Feng Jin Huang is using a refinement path killer move again!!”

There was a clamor outside the stage, but in the stage, the scene was quiet, isolated from all the sounds outside.

‘Attacking the enemy’s vital points, then using this moment of relative safety to use another refinement path killer move?’ Fang Yuan glanced at Feng Jin

Huang, coldly smiling inwardly, ‘It seems you are using all your strength. Worthy of being Feng Jin Huang, even in your youth, you are deeply aware of your own strengths and weaknesses. I have to say this is a sensible choice.’

Fang Yuan praised her in his mind, but he continued to be unmoved, still refining Gu in the same way as before.

Feng Jin Huang used up a precious chance to make a move to attack Fang Yuan’s refinement flames, and also took this opportunity to use a second refinement path killer move.

With the help of two killer moves, her refinement speed increased sharply, and gradually Fang Yuan was thrown behind.

Without the pressure from Fang Yuan, Feng Jin Huang immediately felt slightly relaxed, a layer of tension inside her loosened, and her refinement speed further increased a little.

In this duel, Fang Yuan and Feng Jin Huang each had five chances to attack.

Because it was only a duel, not a life and death battle, the power they could use every time they attacked was limited to a certain level.

The first time, they were only allowed to use rank one Gu. The second time, they could use rank two Gu. And so on, until the fifth time, where they could use rank five Gu.

It was the same with defense, they could only use Gu worms of corresponding rank.

This was another limitation to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was an immortal zombie after all, with an immortal killer move. If she was attacked by giant hand, it would be difficult for Feng Jin Huang to resist it. Of course, Feng Jin Huang had Gu Immortal parents, so she would naturally have immortal essence in her body along with Immortal Gu and the will or emotion of Gu Immortals. There was not a high likelihood of Fang Yuan truly killing her.

“This time, she is using two refinement path killer moves at once to gain a lead!” Outside the stage, Sun Yao excitedly shouted.

“Yes, it is a pity she used one of the five chances to attack. But this is also a classic tactic, we still have to see the result of the refinement to determine the outcome.” Qin Juan pondered as she gazed at the stage.

Time continued to pass. Fang Yuan fell further and further behind Feng Jin Huang, but the strange part was that he was not the least bit hurried, seemingly having no intention to overtake Feng Jin Huang.

Fang Yuan was still using Gu refinement techniques, refining single orifice charcoal Gu step by step.

While Feng Jin Huang had already begun refining the rank two double orifice stove Gu.

Soon, praises and sighs could be heard outside the stage.

Feng Jin Huang had used a third refinement path killer move, increasing her speed once again.

A hour later, Feng Jin Huang attacked Fang Yuan and took the chance when Fang Yuan defended, she used a fourth refinement path killer move.

Four killer moves were used together, there were six lumps of fire floating in front of Feng Jin Huang, each lump was accompanied by a small wishful hand that constantly grabbed materials and threw them into the fire.

With the help of the small wishful hands, the exact amount of the Gu refinement materials thrown into the flames was extremely precise.

From the help of four killer moves, Feng Jin Huang’s refinement speed had long since surpassed that of Fang Yuan, and soon she started on three orifices fire hut Gu.

While Fang Yuan had just now begun refining double orifice stove Gu.

Looking at Feng Jin Huang advancing triumphantly, throwing Fang Yuan far behind, many were having doubts: What was Fang Yuan playing at?

Sun Yao grinned: “First senior sister’s victory is guaranteed!”

Qin Juan was also a refinement path genius whom Spirit Affinity House paid great attention to, it was just that she had yet to mature. She was also in support of Sun Yao’s words: “If the situation continues like this, first senior sister has a high chance of victory.”

“With my ability, my maximum limit is maintaining five refinement path killer moves. But this is the martial duel format, I must leave some energy behind to deal with Fang Yuan’s attacks. Of the five chances to attack, I have already used two, while Fang Yuan has only been defending. Could it be my conditions were too alluring that he is forfeiting?”

Feng Jin Huang could not understand Fang Yuan’s behavior and felt some doubts for a moment.

Fifteen minutes passed, Feng Jin Huang had made good progress in refining three orifices fire hut Gu, she was past the halfway mark.

Right now, Feng Jin Huang’s dominance was extremely obvious, leading Fang Yuan by a huge distance!

‘Mm... it is time to attack.’ Fang Yuan’s gaze was clear, and as he sensed that the time was ripe, he sent out a Gu worm from his immortal aperture.

“I am attacking.” He suddenly spoke softly.

“Uh.” Feng Jin Huang’s attention was immediately attracted, her bright and beautiful eyes gazed at Fang Yuan, while continuing with her Gu refinement.

‘Finally attacking? But what is the reason for warning me beforehand?’ Feng Jin Huang was extremely cautious.

Fang Yuan chuckled: “Feng Jin Huang, be careful. This Gu is the rank one ghost fire Gu.”

Feng Jin Huang narrowed her eyes, a vigilant look flashed past her eyes as she began to think rapidly: ‘It is certain to be rank one Gu, this is Fang Yuan’s first attack, so he can only use rank one methods. But it might not necessarily be ghost fire Gu, maybe he showed that Gu to mislead me? After all, a Gu worm’s external appearance can be disguised. I need to be extremely careful!’

While she was thinking, Fang Yuan activated the Gu worm in his hand.

The moment this Gu activated, it transformed into a small lump of eerie ghost fire, which then slowly moved towards Feng Jin Huang.

‘It is really ghost fire Gu?’ Feng Jin Huang was slightly stunned.

Right at this time, the ghost fire Gu suddenly sped up and shot towards Feng Jin Huang!

‘Come! Just a mere rank one ghost fire Gu...’ Feng Jin Huang’s eyes shined sharply with confidence. She had already prepared sufficiently and could easily block a rank one ghost fire Gu.

When the ghost fire Gu charged over, she even had the time to think of the possibility of Fang Yuan making continuous attacks!

However, the ghost fire suddenly came to a halt, stopping near Feng Jin Huang.

Afterwards, the ghost fire slowly circled Feng Jin Huang, swaying around either side of her.

‘What?’ Feng Jin Huang was startled internally: ‘Fang Yuan, what is the meaning of this?!’

The next moment, her expression sank as realization dawned upon her.

In this duel, the Gu Master could only defend in the range of a meter. The ghost fire Gu did not encroach the range of a meter around Feng Jin Huang, making her unable to defend. The ghost fire floating around could only be considered as part of the process of Fang Yuan’s attack.

‘He is using rank one ghost fire to pressure me, to divert my attention!’ Feng Jin Huang was astute and was soon able to understand the intent behind this move.

“So sinister!” Many people, outside the stage, exclaimed as they realized his plan.

Sun Yao was filled with righteous indignation: “That demon Fang Yuan is using a loophole in the rules. With a ghost fire floating in front of you, who can concentrate on refining Gu? Does nobody care about this? He is too shameless.”

Qin Juan shook her head, saying solemnly: “The rules of the duel were set by both sides. This pending offensive is also a classic battle tactic in the martial duel format, it can’t be considered shameless.”

‘Damn it!’ Cold sweat began to seep out of Feng Jin Huang’s forehead, ‘Ghost fires can injure the soul. I have used up a lot of my mental energy, if I am really affected by it, I will definitely slip up. But if I just blindly defend, my mind will be tied down in observing the movement of the ghost fire, and my Gu refinement speed will decrease.’

There was still a way, Feng Jin Huang could initiate an attack and destroy this ghost fire.

But this was not worthwhile.

Because this would be her third attack, which meant a rank three method. Using a rank three method to cancel Fang Yuan’s rank one ghost fire Gu, no matter what, it would be her loss!

‘Maybe this is his intention, he wants to lure me into using up a precious chance of attacking!’ Feng Jin Huang gritted her teeth as she looked at Fang Yuan.

Controlling a ghost fire also expended one’s mental energy. But Fang Yuan had only been using Gu refinement techniques and not refinement path killer moves, it could be said his mental energy was at full capacity, it was more than sufficient to control a ghost fire.

“Oh? Not destroying my ghost fire? Hehehe, you are really patient.” Fang Yuan suddenly laughed, “Then, how about another ghost fire?”

Under everyone’s gazes, Fang Yuan took out a second ghost fire Gu.

“Feng Jin Huang, look closely, this is rank two ghost fire Gu.” Fang Yuan calmly spoke, unlike Feng Jin Huang’s sneak attacks, he openly announced his methods.

The style of Fang Yuan’s attacks was the completely opposite of Feng Jin Huang.

Feng Jin Huang’s two attacks were quick, accurate and relentless, attacking the enemy’s vital points and forcing Fang Yuan into defense, while she took the chance to use refinement path killer moves.

However, Fang Yuan’s methods could be described with one word — slow.

The second ghost fire floated slowly towards Feng Jin Huang, stopping a meter in front of her.

This ghost fire was created from rank two ghost fire Gu, it was double the size of the first ghost fire.

The two ghost fires circled around Feng Jin Huang, the pressure on Feng Jin Huang swiftly doubled!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 856: Dueling Feng Jin Huang (4/4)

Gu Zhen Ren

The two ghost fires moved about here and there, they went far and near, with no set pattern, Feng Jin Huang had to be vigilant of these two flames, while also paying attention to refining Gu.

Feng Jin Huang was soon unable to bear it.

Bang.

A soft explosion resounded as one of the Gu refinement fires she controlled was extinguished, the Gu worm inside the flame had already been refined to an incomplete form, but it was a pity, everything was lost!

“First, first senior sister slipped up. So unfortunate, that Gu worm only had the final three steps remaining!” Sun Yao stamped her foot in anger.

Qin Juan also had a heavy expression: “This is the first mistake since the duel began, although first senior sister has a deep foundation, surely enough, dividing her attention to handle so many things was too forceful.”

“What should she do now?” Sun Yao gazed over, seemingly asking for advice.

Qin Juan mumbled: “If it were me, I would dispel a refinement path killer move right now. Because the lead is great, as long as I can maintain this lead and make no more mistakes, the one in a hurry would be the other side. But dispelling a killer move is similar to activating it, because in order to produce a change in the situation, one needs to focus their attention, which can generate a moment of weakness.”

At this moment, on the stage, Feng Jin Huang also had a similar thought: ‘Should I dispel a refinement path killer move? Is this Fang Yuan’s intention?’

‘No, I still have a way. I can use my third chance to send out a sonic wave, and destroy these two ghost fires at once!’ Geniuses like Feng Jin Huang had pride carved in their very bones, and would not be willing to admit defeat.

Feng Jin Huang’s eyes brightened at this thought, but when she cast her gaze towards Fang Yuan, her heart instantly chilled.

Fang Yuan was wearing a malevolent mask, his piercingly cold eyes protruded from behind the holes of the mask, behind it, there seemed to be a smiling expression with a hint of ridicule.

‘No!’ Feng Jin Huang’s mind trembled at this gaze, ‘This is Fang Yuan’s trap. He is already waiting for it! The moment I use my third attack, Fang Yuan will grasp this chance to immediately attack. At that time, my mind would be taxed to the limit and it will be very difficult for me to deal with the attack, I might not even be able to defend and be struck by his attack!’

‘Damn...’ Feng Jin Huang gritted her teeth, a drop of cold sweat slid down from her forehead to her eyebrow and down her cheek.

‘It can’t go on like this, I need to find a way, what should I do? Think carefully, think quickly!’

Bang.

While she was in the process of thinking, another lump of fire she was controlling exploded.

This explosion was much more severe than the first one.

Other lumps of fire were also affected, Feng Jin Huang quickly dispelled her disorganized thoughts and did her best to stabilize the other fire lumps.

“Ahh! First senior sister made a mistake again, how could this be? Not good, first senior sister is injured!!” Sun Yao cried out with her head in her hands.

“The demon Fang Yuan brought her too much pressure, first senior sister should have been trying to think of an urgent countermeasure, and this decreased her attention towards the Gu refinement, causing a slip up. A failure in Gu refinement means there will be backlash, fortunately her injuries are not severe.” Qin Juan’s tone revealed her nervousness, she let out a breath of cloudy air and continued: “But, this is also a good thing.”

Sun Yao did not understand, and grumbled in anger: “Senior sister Qin Juan, what are you saying? First senior sister failed in Gu refinement, and also suffered injuries, why is this a good thing?”

“She has lost two lumps of fire, but her mind is instead partially freed up. She now has the spare energy to cope with the present situation.” Qin Juan analyzed.

Sun Yao patted her chest as she suddenly realized this: “Right!”

“Hehehe.” Fang Yuan laughed again.

Feng Jin Huang’s heart immediately sank when she heard Fang Yuan’s laughter.

She raised her head and sure enough, Fang Yuan took out a third Gu worm. Fang Yuan spoke just like earlier: “Look closely, this is a rank three ghost fire Gu.”

The next moment, three ghost fires were flying around Feng Jin Huang.

“Damn it, damn it!” Sun Yao stamped her foot in anger, “This demon is too shameless, first senior sister has just been able to catch a breather, and now he sends another ghost fire. He is still thinking of forcing first senior sister to make a mistake!”

“That’s right.” Qin Juan had a grave expression, “Like this, the pressure on first senior sister has increased sharply. She probably has to use all her remaining attention on defending.”

Sun Yao clenched her teeth, subconsciously waving her fist: “This demon is not concentrating on refining his Gu, instead he is spending his mental energy on the ghost fires, this is a classic case of neglecting the proper task! He is truly terrible, I really want to give him a few punches!!”

“Damn it, how can this be...” Feng Jin Huang fell into a great predicament, she was clearly in the lead, but when Fang Yuan made a move, she was forced into a passive state.

Feng Jin Huang knew the situation was far from good, the tempo of the duel had already fallen into Fang Yuan’s grasp. She wanted to counterattack, but she did not have enough ability.

The three ghost fires floated around her, sometimes they would even breach the one meter distance before retreating immediately, they were clearly being manipulated to tease Feng Jin Huang.

Feng Jin Huang was only a young girl after all, she was filled with fury towards Fang Yuan’s teasing, but was not able to vent them.

She would have to take a risk if she wanted to get rid of the three hateful ghost fires!

But reason told Feng Jin Huang that she might not necessarily need to take the risk.

Because even after she slipped up twice, she still had a large lead over Fang Yuan.

As long as she maintained this dominance, victory would be hers.

However, when Feng Jin Huang began refining four orifices fire tower Gu, a short while later, Fang Yuan also began refining four orifices fire tower Gu.

This discovery immediately startled Feng Jin Huang: “When was it that he actually closed in the gap between us? Impossible, he has clearly not used even one refinement path killer move yet!”

But the fact was that Fang Yuan had relied on just Gu refinement techniques, using purely basic skills to close the gap bit by bit, and unknowingly, he had caught up to Feng Jin Huang!

The Gu Masters outside the stage also discovered this.

“Unbelievable, this demon actually caught up!” Spirit Affinity House’s female disciples cried out in shock.

“Actually relying on just Gu refinement techniques to overcome refinement path killer moves... Fang Yuan’s ability far surpasses Feng Jin Huang.” The people who overrated Fang Yuan, continued to overrate him.

“How is this possible? Fang Yuan definitely cheated, everyone knows the power of refinement path killer moves, he did not use a single killer move but caught up? Impossible!” Sun Yao was dissatisfied: “What kind of eyes does the hosting elder have, why is he not stopping the duel and investigating this demon Fang Yuan?”

Qin Juan, however, heaved a deep sigh: “Keep quiet, junior sister! Gu refinement techniques naturally cannot match refinement path killer moves, but in this duel, they can overcome killer moves.”

“Ah, senior sister, what do you mean?”

“Because the crucial factor for victory is not the means, but the two Gu Masters themselves. At the moment, the refinement has already reached the middle to later stages. Fang Yuan’s mind is still fresh, while first senior sister has been exerting her mind since the start, the moment she could relax, Fang Yuan used the threat of ghost fire Gu to overwhelm her. First senior sister is already tired, without ample energy in her mind, any powerful refinement path killer moves will only play a secondary role, thus her Gu refinement speed will naturally slow down.”

Qin Juan sighed, before continuing: “This is all Fang Yuan’s plan. When first senior sister mentioned refining five orifices fire pagoda Gu as the task, he agreed directly. But the Gu recipes and the refinement materials were all put forward by him. The moment this battle of attrition began, he let himself fall behind, preserving his mental energy. At the middle stages, he finally attacked, and although he was behind, he was able to grasp the initiative. Because of her dominance, first senior sister did not want to take a risk, thus she kept delaying dealing with them. However, she did not know that this was Fang Yuan’s sinister plan. Now at the later stages, first senior sister is too tired, her speed is getting slower and will soon be overtaken by Fang Yuan.”

“What?!” Sun Yao worriedly gazed towards the stage.

Soon, her worry turned into reality.

Fang Yuan slowly progressed to being level with Feng Jin Huang, and slowly overtook her.

“Is... is first senior sister going to lose?” Sun Yao’s eyes reddened and tears streamed out, “First senior sister clearly put in so much effort to arrive at the end, she even got injured, but this despicable demon is going to win? I am not willing to accept this!”

“I also feel discontent.” Qin Juan sighed, “But first senior sister still has a chance.”

“There is still a chance?” Sun Yao turned her head and looked happily at her senior sister Qin Juan.

Qin Juan nodded: “Right, don’t forget first senior sister still has three chances to attack. One rank three attack, one rank four attack and one rank five attack. Every attack will be stronger than the previous one, this is the way to make a comeback! This contest has yet to end, there is still hope.”

“Right, we still have hope! First senior sister, you can do it!!” Sun Yao’s eyes brightened as she suddenly shouted loudly.

Her voice attracted the gazes of the people nearby.

The intense sense of honor to the sect and feeling of belonging made the hundreds of disciples of Spirit Affinity House shout together to boost Feng Jin Huang’s morale.

Although their voices could not transmit to the stage, Feng Jin Huang was able to sense it.

“These guys... I cannot lose, I will win! It is time to use my trump card. Refinement path killer move — Ink Transformation!”

Feng Jin Huang shouted in her mind, and simultaneously made three attacks in a row towards Fang Yuan.

Feng Jin Huang staked everything on this, using all her remaining chances to attack!

“Paltry trick.” Fang Yuan blocked all these attacks, while sending out the three ghost fires to interfere with her as much as possible.

The interference did not bring much result, Feng Jin Huang destroyed these three ghost fires. Her refinement path killer move was already close to completion.

“Hmph, revealing light Gu, go.” Fang Yuan sneered inwardly as he flicked out a rank four Gu worm.

At the same time, he also used a rank five attack which arrived in front of Feng Jin Huang first.

Feng Jin Huang was already prepared, blocking the rank five attack, but revealing light Gu, which had neared her, suddenly self-detonated.

The explosion was not intense, but the radiance was extremely dazzling.

‘How? How does he know the weakness of ink transformation?!’ Under Feng Jin Huang’s incredulous gaze, the killer move, ink transformation, was interrupted and forcefully stopped.

The killer move did not successfully activate, the severe backlash from it immediately caused Feng Jin Huang’s organs to be damaged, causing large amounts of blood to flow out of her body!

Her body trembled from the intense pain, and she was no longer able to maintain her control over the lumps of fire. The whole Gu refinement failed, and bursts of enormous backlash assaulted her.

Feng Jin Huang spat out fresh blood as she opened her mouth widely, before falling down to the ground shortly, losing consciousness.

Chaos erupted outside the stage.

Spirit Affinity House’s disciples wanted to go up the stage, but were blocked by the Gu formation.

“Don’t make disturbances, all violators will be punished!” The hosting elder shouted. After stabilizing the situation, he gazed towards Fang Yuan.

For a moment, almost everyone outside the stage looked towards Fang Yuan.

Feng Jin Huang was already unconscious, even if she woke up and tried to refine the Gu again, the materials were far from enough.

Right now, Fang Yuan could not lose, as long as he slowly refined five orifices fire pagoda Gu, he would be the victor.

However, right when Fang Yuan was about to succeed, the incomplete form of the Gu worm in his hand suddenly detonated.

Fang Yuan was startled: “This?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 857: Fang Zheng’s Death

Gu Zhen Ren

Fang Yuan and Feng Jin Huang’s duel attracted the attentions of countless people, but the result was one that nobody anticipated.

The process of the duel was very splendid, it was full of ups and downs.

Eventually, even though Fang Yuan had absolute advantage, he met with the failure rate of a rank five Gu refinement, and his efforts went down the drain.

He did not have enough Gu refinement materials for a second attempt, while Feng Jin Huang already had fainted and also did not have enough materials.

Thus, this duel ended in a draw.

Feng Jin Huang was sent for treatment immediately after the duel ended.

After learning about the results, Feng Jin Huang looked at Fang Yuan with deep meaning.

Since it was a draw, according to the duel rules, both parties had two options. One was to take back their wagers, the other was to trade the wagers that they had put in.

As Fang Yuan had expected, Feng Jin Huang chose the second option.

Fang Yuan thought about it for a moment before agreeing.

Feng Jin Huang first passed one information path Gu worm over to Fang Yuan personally. The method of an immortal zombie reviving was recorded inside the Gu.

After that, both parties created an agreement, in the capacity of a subsidiary force of Immortal Crane Sect, the owner of Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan, agreed to undergo guts Gu transactions with Spirit Affinity House. In the future, Fang Yuan would give priority to Spirit Affinity House when selling guts Gu, even Immortal Crane Sect was behind them in the priority list.

“Lord Fang Yuan, our sect’s Lord He Feng Yang would like to speak with you.” After the duel ended, an Immortal Crane Sect elder came to Fang Yuan, he spoke in a humble manner.

“Oh?” Fang Yuan said with surprise: “Lead the way.”

On a mountain peak with no one else around, he met He Feng Yang again.

He Feng Yang still had the appearance of a youth, he wore a white robe with a black belt, the winds were blowing his sleeves as they fluttered in the air, his green eyebrows extended to his waist as they swayed with the wind as well.

“It was not easy to get a draw in this duel, was it?” He Feng Yang’s gaze was profound, he looked at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled: “It can’t be helped, I encountered the natural rate of failure, there was nothing I could do.”

His words carried no flaws.

He Feng Yang sized up Fang Yuan as he said in a serious tone: “It is a pity that you became a zombie despite such talent in refinement path. Actually, if you want to find a way to revive, you do not need to approach others. Immortal Crane Sect has an excellent method that can ensure that you will get rid of your zombie status.”

Fang Yuan heard this and felt a bit strange, why did he feel like He Feng Yang was showing an intention of recruiting him?

But thinking about it, even if Fang Yuan and Immortal Crane Sect had been on opposing sides, or he had a mysterious background, or some other reasons, ignoring all these, just Fang Yuan’s current display of his Gu refinement attainment was enough to move Immortal Crane Sect.

Fang Yuan naturally knew the excellent method that He Feng Yang was talking about.

What else could it be?

It was obviously the possession technique.

He Feng Yang would not be able to guess that Fang Yuan had already made preparations in this aspect.

“If I would lose my freedom, I would rather remain as a zombie.” Fang Yuan said.

He Feng Yang shook his head: “I invited you here not to discuss the matter of freedom. Let’s talk about important matters, you captured your brother, you have to hand him over, otherwise, the consequences are not something you can endure.”

“Oh? Is this a threat?” Fang Yuan’s tone became deeper.

Fang Zheng was a secondary option to regain life, even if he did not need him for this, Fang Zheng was still the best choice to create a blood deity. How could Fang Yuan hand him over?

He Feng Yang nodded: “You can think of this as a threat, but I would rather explain it as a warning. I’ll speak the truth, eliminating Fang Zheng is Heavenly Court’s orders. You might not know the extent of Heavenly Court’s authority, but you just need to know one thing, there is no force in Central Continent that can defy Heavenly Court.”

How could Fang Yuan not know the power of Heavenly Court?

He had his previous life’s memories, he was even more aware of Heavenly Court’s strength and power than He Feng Yang.

“Of course I know about Heavenly Court. But why would they have any interest in Fang Zheng? They are actually so serious about eliminating a mortal? Isn’t your excuse too unrealistic? He Feng Yang, how can you convince me?” Fang Yuan spread his arms out.

He Feng Yang sighed: “I do not need to convince you. As long as you keep Fang Zheng’s life, in the end, Hu Immortal blessed land will be taken down and absorbed by Heavenly Court. That is not something Immortal Crane Sect wants to see. You can consider this freely, but there is little time. If you can accept it, three days from now, give Fang Zheng to me.”

Fang Yuan frowned deeply, this unexpected news caught him off guard, he did not know about the matter involving fate Gu, it was hard for him to link Heavenly Court and Fang Zheng together.

He placed his gaze on He Feng Yang’s face, he tried to find a flaw from his expression: “Do you take me for a fool? Handing Fang Zheng to you is like placing the key to Hu Immortal blessed land into your hands!”

“Hehehe.” He Feng Yang raised his head and laughed: “Fang Yuan, despite being an immortal zombie, you are truly scheming! No need to test me, the truth is, you have already started believing me. I am actually more curious than you about this! But we should curb our own curiosity regarding matters relating to Heavenly Court. Three days later, I will execute Fang Zheng in front of you, but in exchange, you have to bring me Lord Sky Crane’s soul intact. You should know that he is one of my subordinates, and is a rather capable one.”

Fang Yuan became silent.

He Feng Yang did not stay, a light flashed and he vanished on the spot.

Since He Feng Yang left, Fang Yuan had no reason to stay, he decided to use Fixed Immortal Travel to return to Hu Immortal blessed land.

He had temporarily set aside the matter regarding Fang Zheng.

Fang Yuan’s first priority now was to research the method that Feng Jin Huang gave him.

“Fairy Lian Xiang?” What was unexpected to Fang Yuan was that this method to revive was connected to a fairy of Spirit Affinity House from a previous generation.

Fairy Lian Xiang was a past generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House, her status was similar to Mo Yao.

According to Feng Jin Huang: When Fairy Lian Xiang was rank five, she was ambushed by an enemy and became a zombie. But she had one of the ten extreme physiques, the Desolate Ancient Moon physique. Through a fortunate opportunity, she succeeded in her immortal ascension. Her zombie body was purified by the heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity, it was as though she was reborn.

The last bit of content was deduced by many of Spirit Affinity House’s Gu Immortals — to get rid of the zombie body, a way to revive was to undergo immortal ascension as one of the ten extreme physiques!

“Immortal ascension of the ten extreme physiques?” Fang Yuan was a little disappointed.

This method was not impossible to him.

He had blood skull Gu, he could raise a Gu Master’s aptitude. First gen Gu Yue was an example which Fang Yuan could learn from.

But blood skull Gu was only a mortal Gu, even if Fang Yuan had many descendants and killed them, it could not raise the aptitude of an immortal zombie like Fang Yuan.

“However, if I can advance blood skull Gu to an Immortal Gu, it will work on me. I can use blood skull Immortal Gu to elevate my first aperture into the Desolate Ancient Moon aperture, if I undergo immortal ascension after that, I would likely revive. But to raise blood skull Gu into an Immortal Gu, I would need blood skull Gu’s Immortal Gu recipe, it would expend a lot of time and effort to attempt this. Even if I can raise my aptitude to the level of the ten extreme physiques, the tribulation would likely be extremely dangerous.”

According to Feng Jin Huang’s information, when Fairy Lian Xiang underwent immortal ascension, it was a terrifying event. It was almost equivalent to the grand tribulation of a rank seven Gu Immortal!

Most likely, the immortal ascension of a zombie was too heaven defying, it attracted the rage of heaven.

Back then, if not for the help of several Gu Immortals from Spirit Affinity House, Fairy Lian Xiang would have been reduced to ashes by the grand tribulation.

The immortal ascension of one of the ten extreme physiques was already very terrifying. Fang Yuan had witnessed Hei Lou Lan’s ascension, she even lost an Immortal Gu due to it.

After a person of the ten extreme physiques becomes a zombie, and attempts to become an immortal, the tribulation would be even fiercer, its intensity would rise by over a dozen times!

Fang Yuan concluded that this method not only required huge amounts of preparation, it would also expend a lot of time and energy, as well as carry great risks. Without help from others, with Fang Yuan’s strength, even if he included the assistance of Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Hei Lou Lan, and Fairy Li Shan, it would not succeed.

Weighing the costs and benefits, Fang Yuan could only place this method aside.

He entered the prison cell of Dang Hun palace, he saw Fang Zheng who was locked inside.

“Fang Yuan, what are you trying to do?” Seeing his brother, Fang Zheng screamed, his gaze filled with hatred.

Fang Yuan said: “Why, are you still denying it?”

Fang Zheng shouted: “Even if Immortal Crane Sect and master are responsible, you are still the biggest culprit, you are the person who slaughtered uncle and aunt! I will never forgive you, I will never let you off! Kill me, or else we will always be enemies.”

“Oh? My beloved brother, you are really stubborn. In that case...” Fang Yuan’s gaze shined, he stretched out his arm towards Fang Zheng.

Soul search!

Fang Zheng’s body shook, he could not move anymore, he wanted to shout, but he felt like his throat was stuck, he showed an anguished expression on his face.

Fang Yuan searched Fang Zheng’s soul multiple times, but he did not find anything of value.

“Fang Zheng is such an ordinary Gu Master, why is Heavenly Court sending orders to eliminate him specifically?” Fang Yuan fell into deep thought. Even though there was no evidence, he felt inclined to believe that He Feng Yang was speaking the truth.

Fang Yuan did not know that Heavenly Court had fate Immortal Gu. Even though he had his previous life’s memories, he was restricted by his status, he could not know everything. Especially when the strongest organization in the five regions, Heavenly Court, was involved.

“Did someone do something to Fang Zheng’s soul?”

Fang Yuan shook his head immediately after.

That was very unlikely, but he could not deny the slim possibility of it.

“Should I hand over Fang Zheng or not?” This was the question.

Fang Yuan was not afraid of He Feng Yang, but he was wary of Immortal Crane Sect, and was worried about Heavenly Court. If any of the rank eight Gu Immortals in Heavenly Court attacked, killing him would be as easy as killing an ant.

Of course, that was if they battled.

Fang Yuan was not so foolish to get into one, he could escape and run away beforehand. Fixed Immortal Travel was an excellent method to do so.

Three days later, Fang Yuan handed over Fang Zheng and the spirit incubating flea, within it was Lord Sky Crane’s soul.

Fang Zheng had evidently been tortured, he went through lots of terrifying punishment, not only was his skin torn and flesh exposed, he even had many deep wounds that revealed his bones.

In fact, one of his arms was cut off and replaced with a dog’s limb. Even so, Fang Zheng could feel the dog limb and even manipulate it to move.

Such cruel treatment could make someone collapse mentally!

But He Feng Yang only took a glance without saying anything, he said to Fang Yuan: “You made a wise choice.”

“Now, hold up your end of the agreement.” Fang Yuan’s gaze was shining.

“Watch closely!” He Feng Yang struck, under Fang Yuan’s supervision, he killed Fang Zheng on the spot, fire burned until not a single trace of him was left.

“Lord He Feng Yang, why? You promised me!” Lord Sky Crane’s voice came from the spirit incubating flea.

“This is an order from Heavenly Court. Immortal Crane Sect needs Fang Zheng’s sacrifice! Sky Crane, this is your destiny. You wanted to possess Fang Zheng at first, but you relented and were willing to accompany him and teach him how to cultivate. Now, he is dead, not a trace of his soul is left. As compensation for going back on my words, I will find a good body for you to revive.” He Feng Yang said slowly.

“Lord...” Lord Sky Crane’s crying voice could be heard.

He Feng Yang waved his sleeves, he sucked the spirit incubating flea into his sleeve, as he took a look at Fang Yuan before leaving: “When you are free, you can come to Fei He mountain and have a look.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 858: Second Place

“Right now, I can confirm that He Feng Yang is expressing goodwill to me.” Fang Yuan had a realization.

He Feng Yang invited Fang Yuan personally to take a look at Fei He mountain.

What was Fei He mountain?

It was the base of Immortal Crane Sect, even though it was somewhat symbolic, the meaning he was trying to express was clear.

After returning to Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan thought about He Feng Yang’s change in attitude and smiled silently.

The duel with Feng Jin Huang allowed Fang Yuan and Spirit Affinity House to establish contact for trade. The transactions of guts Gu with Spirit Affinity House were higher in priority than Immortal Crane Sect.

But because it took advantage of the setup of Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention everyone bore witness to it, Immortal Crane Sect could not make up any excuses or complaints to stop these important transactions.

Hu Immortal blessed land and Spirit Affinity House had made contact, this made Immortal Crane Sect feel a strong sense of threat.

In history, among the ten sects, Spirit Affinity House had the highest rate of recruiting demonic path Gu Immortals. Bo Qing and Feng Jiu Ge were examples that were etched into people’s hearts.

Not long ago, they had failed to take back Hu Immortal blessed land, now that Fang Yuan was showing strong attainment in refinement path, Immortal Crane Sect finally decided to persuade Fang Yuan in a more gentle way.

Thus, He Feng Yang’s attitude towards Fang Yuan changed drastically.

The matter of Fang Zheng should be real. He Feng Yang’s action was a sign of goodwill to Fang Yuan. He even tried to entice Fang Yuan using the possession technique.

To him, if Fang Yuan continued to keep Fang Zheng in captivity, Heavenly Court would take down Hu Immortal blessed land. Dang Hun mountain would definitely be taken by them in that case if Fang Yuan did not destroy it in advance. Hu Immortal blessed land could not be moved, and Heavenly Court was not interested in it anyway, one of the ten great ancient sects might get to inherit it.

But it would depend on internal competition between the sects under Heavenly

Court to determine which one obtained it.

Evidently, the Gu Immortals from Immortal Crane Sect that were in Heavenly Court were weaker in power compared to the others, it was unlikely that they could take back Hu Immortal blessed land.

Even if they took it back, without Dang Hun mountain, Hu Immortal blessed land’s value would be greatly diminished.

No matter how they looked at it, this went against He Feng Yang and Immortal Crane Sect’s benefits.

Thus, He Feng Yang informed Fang Yuan of this matter, it was a way to defend his own benefits.

“Right now, I am a subsidiary force of Immortal Crane Sect on paper, but I am actually placing myself between Spirit Affinity House and Immortal Crane Sect. This has allowed my external pressure to reduce by more than half.”

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh to himself.

In truth, Fang Yuan had been planning for such a situation.

He ignored Feng Jin Huang’s challenge earlier, but he later sent a message and agreed to the duel, why was that?

It was because he wanted to make use of Spirit Affinity House to resist the pressure from Immortal Crane Sect.

Fang Yuan had achieved his intended outcome, but the crucial factor was not him. It was the allure of guts Gu itself!

Fang Yuan seized Hu Immortal blessed land, it greatly incited Feng Jin Huang and caused her to find out dream wings Immortal Gu’s true ability in advance. Because Feng Jin Huang used Dream Wings, she obtained many benefits and placed greater importance on guts Gu. If not for that, why would Spirit Affinity House allow Fang Yuan to make use of them?

They were not fools!

Indeed, Fang Yuan purposely made the duel a draw. He wanted to show an agreeable attitude to Spirit Affinity House.

To Fang Yuan, this duel changed his circumstances in Central Continent, it greatly reduced his pressure and gave him more time and energy to make bigger plans.

Of course, once the secret that Fang Yuan was the culprit of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s collapse gets exposed, Central Continent would definitely be stirred up, Fang Yuan would be wanted by everyone, he would need to escape for his life.

From Feng Jin Huang’s perspective, even though she was injured and did not win in the duel, she was the biggest winner.

With guts Gu’s help from now on, she would be able to use dream wings Immortal Gu and improve drastically, her speed would surpass practically all Gu Immortals, she would grow rapidly.

“In my previous life, I killed Feng Jin Huang, but now, it seems that I am aiding her.” Towards this, Fang Yuan felt deeply moved, but there was no point expressing this to others.

“Fang Yuan, the matter has been settled, if there is nothing else, I will leave first.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng came to say his goodbyes.

These last days, he had been moving around Northern Plains, finding a suitable location to place his blessed land.

He had found a location already, and was about to place it down, but at the crucial moment, Fang Yuan asked him to return.

“Thank you for your help just now, you chose a good location, go ahead and blend your heaven and earth qi. When the calamity comes, I will lend you a hand.” Fang Yuan said to Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded, he went to Northern Plains using a stargate.

After obtaining Star Form blessed land, Fang Yuan received a huge stock of starlight firefly Gu, he no longer had to save up on the number of times stargates were used.

Fang Yuan came to the prison cell and saw Gu Yue Fang Zheng again.

Wasn’t Gu Yue Fang Zheng killed by He Feng Yang already? Why was he alive here?

As it turns out, this was just a show by Fang Yuan.

He purposely cut off an arm from Gu Yue Fang Zheng, fitting a dog limb onto it, he was trying to create a false appearance of abuse and humiliation.

In truth, he kept the severed limb here, when He Feng Yang killed Fang Zheng, Fang Yuan asked Tai Bai Yun Sheng to use man as before Immortal Gu, expending a considerable amount of immortal essence on the severed arm, reviving Fang Zheng.

He Feng Yang did not suspect anything, he had limited knowledge, he did not know that an Immortal Gu like Man as Before existed.

From his perspective, Fang Zheng’s body and soul were destroyed in front of him, thus Fang Zheng was definitely dead.

Any other Gu Immortal would think the same.

This was common sense.

But the world was huge, there were bound to be rare and strange Immortal Gu, or immortal killer moves, like Man as Before. Nobody could know them all, because humans had limited knowledge, even immortals were no exception.

Omnipotence and omniscience, even rank nine Gu Immortals or Ren Zu could not achieve that. To reach that stage, maybe only one grand existence could achieve it, that was the world!

Fang Yuan tossed an information path Gu worm to Fang Zheng, he showed a mocking expression as he said: “Take a good look, this is the Immortal Crane Sect that you are so grateful towards, and that kind hearted master of yours, if it were not for me, you would be dead already.”

“Impossible! I won’t believe your lies!!” Fang Zheng screamed, but he still held this information path Gu worm in his hands.

In this Gu worm, the video of He Feng Yang killing Fang Zheng as well as his conversation with Lord Sky Crane’s soul were recorded.

After looking at it, Fang Zheng broke the information path Gu worm into pieces, he fell into immeasurable rage. He raised his head and screamed, his expression contorted as he pointed at Fang Yuan, shouting: “Impossible! This is all fake, you made this up. I will not believe it, I will never believe it! You lied to me, you are lying!! Unless I see it for myself, hear it for myself, and get master’s reply!”

“You will witness it all. But... now is not the time yet.” Fang Yuan turned around, leaving the room.

He shut the cell as the room went into complete darkness, Fang Zheng was still screaming in the darkness, he ran around in the tiny room and punched and kicked the walls, venting his emotions.

After settling the matter regarding Fang Zheng, Fang Yuan progressed smoothly in the Refinement Path Convention without any problems.

Since he eliminated some of the truly skilled Gu refinement experts early, it made the later rounds much easier for him.

Eventually, Feng Jin Huang got sixth place, while Fang Yuan reached the finals.

He faced the strongest competitor in this competition — Yu Mu Chun.

In this battle, Fang Yuan lost completely.

Even though the task was still the same as his previous life, and Fang Yuan had a huge advantage of knowing it in advance.

But his opponent — Yu Mu Chun — was a true refinement path quasi-great grandmaster.

This level was terrifying.

Even though Feng Jin Huang had dream wings Immortal Gu, she could not reach this stage easily. The higher the level of attainment went in each path, the more difficulty one would face in trying to raise it.

In history, only the Three Olds of refinement path could reach the highest point.

Right now in Northern Plains, there were only four people who were publicly known to match or surpass him, they were the four refinement path experts of Northern Plains.

Fang Yuan knew deeply, even if he had the advantage of knowing the task, he could not defeat Yu Mu Chun. This was the difference in level.

Speaking of which, Yu Mu Chun wore nearly the same thing as Fang Yuan, he wore a black robe that covered his entire body, as well as a mask on his face.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, he got first place. There were no surprises, his ability was truly unfathomable.

Fang Yuan forfeited without competing, many people were unhappy and blamed him. After all, refinement path attainment level was hard to assess, even though Yu Mu Chun was very strong, Fang Yuan was also an extremely favored contestant.

Forfeiting without a fight, the spectators who were looking forward to the final round felt unhappy, they were complaining and claiming that Fang Yuan’s forfeiture was rigged!

But no matter what, Fang Yuan, who reached second place, obtained his original goal, he obtained a success dao mark.

After that, the representatives from Immortal Crane Sect and the other nine great ancient sects came to Fang Yuan, attempting to buy his dao mark.

This success dao mark could not be traded or given away. Even though Heavenly Court tried many times, they had never succeeded. The ten great ancient sects naturally did not have any intention to seize it, they only tried to make a deal with him.

After all, with Fang Yuan’s incredible Gu refinement techniques (an over-evaluation on everyone’s part), asking him to refine a rank six Immortal Gu would use up this success dao mark, in exchange for no failure rate.

No matter how high of a price the ten sects of Central Continent offered, Fang Yuan rejected them all.

Returning to Hu Immortal blessed land, he started preparing for the refinement of change form Immortal Gu.

Ever since Fang Yuan started the plan of refining change form Immortal Gu, he had been gathering the materials for it.

Because he had the success dao mark, he only needed one set of Gu refinement materials, this greatly reduced the cost that he had to bear.

Even so, after Fang Yuan collected all of the ingredients, he had already sold or traded most of the immortal materials that he had obtained from the Northern Plains auction. If not for the Refinement Path Convention filling up the gap in materials, he would still be lacking in some of them.

The difficulty of refining an Immortal Gu could be easily seen.

Fang Yuan only had to prepare one set of materials, but it expended almost all of his current accumulated resources.

If not for the guts Gu trade and success dao mark, Fang Yuan would not take a risk and undergo such a gamble.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 859: Refining Immortal Gu

Central Continent, True Yang mountain range.

The setting sun was like blood, shining down on the uneven mountain range.

On a dangerous mountain peak here, a hairy man was climbing enthusiastically.

“Master, master! Wait for me!” The hairy man climbed as he shouted.

Unlike most other hairy men, this hairy man had a different sort of intelligence in his eyes, he spoke just like ordinary humans.

He was chasing after Yu Mu Chun along the mountain range, during the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, this young hairy man had been taking notice of Yu Mu Chun.

When the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention ended, Yu Mu Chun got first place and the hairy man had been following after him, all along to this place.

This hairy man was strong and muscular, but he could not catch up to Yu Mu Chun.

Yu Mu Chun had entered True Yang mountain range after the Convention ended. The hairy man followed behind him, shouting and chasing. Along the way, he suffered a lot and was covered in dust and injuries.

“Master, wait for me!” The hairy man climbed onto the mountain peak, but he stared blankly: “How can this be? Master was still at the mountain peak earlier, how could he be at the base of the mountain so quickly? What Gu worm did he use?”

Seeing that the distance he had desperately shrunken had extended, the hairy man was anxious, he quickly went down the mountain, but he missed a step and lost his footing, rolling down the mountain slope.

Thankfully, there were thick branches that broke his fall.

Even so, he was crying and screaming as he rolled down until partway down the mountain, his body was bleeding and he suffered fractures everywhere.

The pain in his body was far less than the pain in his heart.

“If I miss this opportunity, it will be hard to find master again...”

The hairy man was crying, he struggled to get up, but he could not.

He raised his head in desperation: “Master, please take pity on this junior and come back! Boo hoo hoo...”

His voice was very weak, after his soft pleas, he starting sobbing profusely.

But when his tears flowed out, his body shook.

He saw that out of nowhere, a pair of legs were in front of him.

He looked up along the legs, joyfully seeing that Yu Mu Chun had turned back and was standing in front of him, observing him.

The hairy man quickly knelt down: “Master, master, you finally meet me!”

Yu Mu Chun sighed, his voice was deep and grave as he said: “Ben Duo Yi. Years ago, I only gave you a few pointers casually, you and I are not fated to be master and disciple.”

The hairy man, Ben Duo Yi, heard this and cried out. He gathered strength from nowhere and jumped, hugging Yu Mu Chun’s leg: “Master, oh master! Even if you are unwilling to admit you are my master, but from your instructions, I was enlightened, escaping from ignorance, I broke through my limits and my refinement attainment reached an unforeseen level. Even though you only said a few words, this gratitude is deeper than the sea, you changed my fate, thus in my heart, you are forever my master!”

Yu Mu Chun stretched out his arm, he rubbed the hairy man named Ben Duo Yi’s head: “Hehehe, back then, i only gave you pointers because I saw that you were wiser than normal hairy men, you had greater cognitive abilities. But it is for your sake that I am not making you my disciple. I am a person who has escaped from fate, being associated with me will only bring you harm. From now on, you are not allowed to tell others that I had once given you pointers, otherwise, you will definitely die a terrible death. Remember this, you have to remember this.”

“Disciple understands!” Ben Duo Yi nodded his head quickly.

Yu Mu Chun snorted: “Eh?”

Ben Duo Yi quickly changed his words: “I remember it, I remember it. Master Yu Mu Chun, please take me in. I am not qualified to be your disciple, but I can be your follower or slave. I am very diligent and witty, you praised me before. I will be very loyal, and serve you with all my heart.”

Yu Mu Chun shook his head and smiled bitterly: “Oh you, oh you.”

“Forget it, you have traveled through thirty mountains and encountered much hardship in pursuing me, it is very rare to see such determination and perseverance. Ben Duo Yi, remember this, your most outstanding merit is that you have unique intelligence. Man is the spirit of all beings, but even as a hairy man, your intelligence is not inferior to humans. But you cannot rely on this excessively, after all, a swimmer can always drown if he is careless, you must remember your own sincerity and perseverance, get up.”

“Master, if you do not agree, I will not get up!” Ben Duo Yi shouted: “Ah!”

Suddenly, his arms grabbed air, even though they were holding onto Yu Mu Chun’s legs earlier, a formless force was repelling him, he could only watch as Yu Mu Chun floated into the air, moving up towards the sky.

“Ben Duo Yi, our relationship, formed by fortuitous chance, ends here, today is the last day we will ever meet. Now, I will give you your final lesson, it is a parting gift, watch closely.”

In the air, Yu Mu Chun’s voice could be heard.

Ben Duo Yi looked up quickly, he watched with anticipation...

Central Continent, Earth Abyss, inside Star Form blessed land.

The night sky was gentle, a cool wind was blowing, Fang Yuan looked at the stars in the sky of the blessed land, they were giving off dim starlight.

It was complete silence.

Fang Yuan looked down slowly, retracting his gaze from the vast sky, onto the huge turtle shell in front of him.

This was not an ordinary turtle shell, it was the shell of a desolate beast turtle.

At this moment, the shell was upside down, like a bowl, with the shell being full of poisonous blood.

The poisonous blood was collected from Hu Immortal blessed land’s earthly calamity. Now, in order to refine change form Immortal Gu, they could be used.

“I can finally start refining change form Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan let out a breath of foggy air.

The matter of refining change form Immortal Gu was top secret, Fang Yuan did not tell a single person. Even Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Hei Lou Lan, and Fairy Li Shan were kept in the dark, they had no idea.

As for Star Form blessed land, it had been closed long ago, because the blessed land was inside Earth Abyss, during this time period, nobody came here, it was a safe place.

Safety was very important.

Refining Immortal Gu was not easy to begin with, it could be said to be filled with difficulties. There were too many external influences that could affect the Immortal Gu refinement process, if he made even a single mistake, the extremely valuable immortal materials would be wasted, along with all his hard work.

Thus, he needed a quiet and safe environment to refine Immortal Gu!

Even though Fang Yuan had a success dao mark and could reduce the natural rate of failure when refining a rank six Immortal Gu to zero.

What if during the process of refinement, Fang Yuan made a technical error?

It was incredible important to find an environment like Star Form blessed land which could be relied upon to be undisturbed.

Otherwise, if Fang Yuan failed the refinement, he would have no one else to blame but himself!

Even though he was going to start, Fang Yuan still took half a day to condition his mind and body before starting.

When he felt his soul was replenished and at its peak condition, unable to become any better, he finally started.

His eyes shined with a brilliant light, countless ghost fires burned under the turtle shell.

At once, the surroundings burned with eerie fire, the temperature of an enormous area around him fell rapidly.

Inside the turtle shell, the poisonous blood had no reactions.

Central Continent, True Yang mountain range.

Ben Duo Yi was just raising his head to look, but he got stunned.

At this moment, his eyes widened to a ridiculous size.

He had thought that Yu Mu Chun’s final lesson was to impart him some unique Gu refinement techniques or some strong refinement path killer moves.

But he did not think that Yu Mu Chun would stand in the air, waving his hand as he scattered some dazzling specks of light.

These specks of light were pure and bright, Ben Duo Yi’s eyes were tearing up.

Just as he felt dizzy, he heard Yu Mu Chun’s words: “Ben Duo Yi, this is the final lesson, open your eyes and watch, learn as much as you can. Alright, I am going to refine an Immortal Gu now!”

Immortal Gu!!

Ben Duo Yi’s heart shuddered, he opened his mouth, his jaws were opened so wide they almost dislocated.

“Refine, refine Immortal Gu?” He stammered, he could not understand what was going on, he was uncertain.

Why was Master Yu Mu Chun taking such a huge risk?

Even though Ben Duo Yi was not a Gu refinement expert, he knew that it was hard to refine Immortal Gu. Before refining the Immortal Gu, one needed to condition their body and mind, to get themselves into peak condition, while clearing their mind and being extremely aware of the Gu refinement procedures.

But Yu Mu Chun did not do that.

After the Refinement Path Convention ended, he entered True Yang mountain range, moving along the area and did not rest once.

And he was refining Gu in this place?!

True Yang mountain range was a very dangerous place.

The environment that you refined Gu in was very important, even a three year old knew that.

Right now, Ben Duo Yi was very worried: If they attracted desolate beasts during the Gu refinement, or even ancient desolate beasts, what would they do?

And this was not the most troublesome part.

In comparison to desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts, Gu Immortals were the biggest threats.

Because of Song Zi Xing, True Yang mountain range had many Gu Immortals now, they were searching and trying to locate Song Zi Xing. On one hand, they could beat him while he was down, while also completing the secret missions of their respective sects for great rewards.

Yu Mu Chun did not pay attention to Ben Duo Yi’s thoughts, how worried or nervous he was.

He had a composed and grand attitude, he moved his hands gracefully.

At once, light shone up to a few hundred meters in height, clouds were gathering and forming layers in the sky.

Winds blew, the grass on the mountain swayed, beautiful flowers gave off the fragrant scents of nature.

...

Central Continent, Star Form blessed land.

An hour passed.

In the huge turtle shell, the poisonous blood was boiling, it gave off bubbling noises.

In the sky above the poisonous blood, a huge wave of poisonous gas was moving around, forming a thick and black poisonous fog.

As Fang Yuan increased the heat, the poisonous fog started to spread, it corroded the surrounding grass and flowers, causing them to die.

Fang Yuan did not care about this.

He had prepared meticulously, there were layers of Gu formations in the surroundings, the poisonous gas could not spread far, they were limited to this area.

“A thousand year bitter shell.” Fang Yuan looked at the boiling poisonous blood as he stretched out a monstrous arm in request.

“Here, master!” At the next moment, Star Form land spirit appeared with the thousand year bitter shell, handing it to Fang Yuan.

In order to refine change form Immortal Gu, Star Form land spirit had turned into free labor for Fang Yuan.

During the entire process, he was Fang Yuan’s assistant.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 860: Nature Gu Refinement Technique

Bitter shells lived in deep waters.

Taking in the sand and rocks in the water, they could melt the sediments and turn them into bitter water. If someone opened the shell and obtained this bitter water, using it to brew wine, they would get bitter shell wine. Its taste is very unique, bitter and fragrant.

Fang Yuan had once obtained a bitter shell, he opened it and used the bitter water to create bitter wine, before using that to refine the liquor worm.

Bitter shells were quite rare already, but thousand year bitter shells were even rarer, it was a good material to refine Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan’s bitter shell was a thousand year bitter shell, it was black and had circular loops of white markings, like tree rings. The alternating black and white color was very eye-catching.

Fang Yuan looked at the fire below the turtle shell, as for the thousand year bitter shell in his hand, he threw it in without looking.

Refining Immortal Gu was very important, all of the immortal materials had to be checked.

Fang Yuan had already checked them many times, the ingredients had no problems.

Thus, when Fang Yuan was refining Gu, he did not need to distract himself and inspect the immortal materials, he only needed to check the flame’s intensity.

After tossing in the thousand year bitter shell, the poisonous blood no longer boiled, but the poisonous gas was still rumbling, like there was a black python coiling around inside.

An intense, foul odor was created.

Fang Yuan did not move, he was engulfed in the foul odor, sniffing it attentively.

Although he was an immortal zombie and did not have any sense of smell, he had investigative killer moves to help him smell things.

This odor was hard to describe, it was absolutely disgusting, Fang Yuan wanted to vomit, his head was dizzy from smelling it.

But Fang Yuan had to persevere, because this odor was one of the signs of whether the Gu refinement was successful, whether the thousand year bitter shell melted perfectly into it.

Soon, the thousand year bitter shell that Fang Yuan tossed in completely melted, the black poisonous fog stopped rumbling, while the poisonous blood boiled again.

Fang Yuan tossed in a second, then a third thousand year bitter shell one by one...

After a total of twelve bitter shells were melted, the poisonous fog was extremely thick, the intense foul odor started to smell fragrant.

Fang Yuan’s expression became more serious and stern.

...

“Twin ice heart!!”A hairy man, Ben Duo Yi, shouted.

Even though he was only a rank five Gu Master, he had an extraordinary refinement path attainment level. Thus, he had broad vision and could recognize the immortal material that Yu Mu Chun took out.

Ben Duo Yi had an expression of shock.

A thumb sized ice heart was already an immortal material, but the ice heart that Yu Mu Chun took out was as large as a basin!

Not only was it big, the crucial thing was that this ice heart had a special appearance, within it were two conjoined pieces of heart shaped ice.

This was a twin ice heart, it was a hundred times rarer than ordinary ice hearts!

Ordinary ice hearts were rank six immortal materials, they could create rank six Immortal Gu. Meanwhile, twin ice hearts were immortal materials that could refine rank seven Immortal Gu.

‘Such a valuable immortal material, he actually took it out first. Evidently, the twin ice heart is not the main material for this Gu, it is only a supplementary material. Master is really amazing, I have no idea what Gu he is trying to refine.’ Ben Duo Yi had a look of admiration and adoration.

At the same time, he finally relaxed.

Such a precious material was used, it seemed that Master Yu Mu Chun was prepared, he was not casually refining this Gu.

But Ben Duo Yi thought: Yu Mu Chun was here in the middle of nowhere refining a precious Immortal Gu in the open. Was this because Yu Mu Chun was stupid? Or was he extremely daring and fearless from his skill?

Ben Duo Yi could not come to a conclusion.

The surrounding winds were getting stronger, soon, the winds gathered into a tornado.

The tornadoes were separated by a certain distance, they did not crash into one another, it resembled a scene of a forest of tornadoes.

Yu Mu Chun floated in the air, in between the tornado forest, the winds were wild, as his bronze mask was blown away, revealing an aged face which was full of hair.

Yu Mu Chun laughed loudly, his body shook as the black robe on him tore, the pieces of fabric flew away, showing Yu Mu Chun’s muscular body, his entire body was covered in brown hair.

It turned out that his real identity was like that of Ben Duo Yi, he was a hairy man.

No wonder he gave Ben Duo Yi pointers.

Hairy men were variant humans, they were different from humans. More specifically, they were two different races.

Not even Fang Yuan knew about Yu Mu Chun’s true identity.

As if he understood Ben Duo Yi’s worries, Yu Mu Chun, while paying close attention to his work, said: “You fool! Why do we hairy men have talent for Gu refinement? It is because hairy men are born with refinement path dao marks on our bodies. In fact, refinement path originated from hairy men. In terms of the history of Gu refinement, we have been doing it for eons, our accumulated foundations dozens of times deeper than that of humans! But humans have achieved superiority, they wiped out many hairy men, causing countless pieces of precious refinement path knowledge to be lost. Right now, the Gu refinement techniques of humans are influencing hairy men, this is a huge error.”

Yu Mu Chun continued: “For example, when humans refine Gu, they need a quiet environment that is isolated from the outside world. This allows them to refine Gu safely, they have a higher chance of succeeding. But this is only focusing on short term gains, they are not planning ahead for the future.”

“Gu Masters nurture, use, and refine, nurturing Gu is being familiar with materials and their connection to Gu worms, why do we feed certain kinds of food to a particular Gu worm? Looking at the Gu worm and its food, countless Gu recipes can be discovered. Using Gu is using and understanding the dao marks on the Gu worm. Refining Gu is even more crucial, it is the handling of dao marks. When refining Gu, one should be surrounded by nature! Because the world itself has an endless number of dao marks. It is like a baby in a mother’s womb, the world itself is the best place to refine Gu. If we can make use of the dao marks of the world, in a way, the world itself is helping us refine Gu!”

“Borrowing the power of the world to refine Gu?!” Ben Duo Yi stared with wide opened eyes, he was tongue-tied.

Yu Mu Chun’s words were shocking, this was the first time Ben Duo Yi had heard this theory, it was a huge inspiration and expanded his vision.

Yu Mu Chun laughed heartily, his eyes shined with brilliance: “Ben Duo Yi, you have learned the Gu refinement techniques of humans, even though they are effective, you have taken the wrong path. Learning from others can improve oneself, but the ways of humans is not suited for us. If you want to improve further and become a refinement path great grandmaster, you will need to go back to your origins, and use the Gu refinement methods of us hairy men.”

“I am willing! I am willing! Master Yu Mu Chun, please be magnanimous and teach me the Gu refinement techniques of us hairy men!” Ben Duo Yi shouted excitedly, he kowtowed non stop.

Yu Mu Chun laughed heartily: “Don’t be eager to make a decision, there is a huge risk in this, you might not improve, it could potentially harm you instead. I started feeding Gu worms at three years old, I touched and was in close contact with Gu worms at ten years old, without any instructors, I knew what food foreign Gu worms needed to eat, and how to feed them. At sixteen, I used human Gu refinement techniques to refine rank five Gu with a ninety percent success rate. But this was a wrong path, when I was twenty-two, I realized this point, I decided to start all over again, refining Gu in nature. When I was a hundred and thirty-eight years old, my nature Gu refinement techniques had finally reached a state of minor success. Now that I am two hundred and forty-six years old, my nature Gu refinement techniques has reached great success. I can comprehend nature and learn about astrology and earth veins, I can choose the most suitable area, making use of hidden dao marks in heaven and earth to assist me in my Gu refinement. Right now, I have a forty percent success rate in refining rank six Immortal Gu, and a five percent success rate in refining rank seven Immortal Gu. As for rank eight Immortal Gu, limited by my cultivation level, I have not tried them yet.”

Such words shook Ben Duo Yi.

Yu Mu Chun’s success rate in refining Gu was too high.

Ordinarily, the success rate of refining rank six Immortal Gu was less than one percent.

For rank seven, the success rate was one-tenth of a percent, and for rank eight, it was one-hundredth of a percent.

As for Yu Mu Chun, he could refine rank six Immortal Gu with a forty percent success rate. That was four in ten attempts. And for rank seven Immortal Gu, he could succeed once in every twenty attempts.

Such a success rate would shock the world if it was exposed!

This was the brilliance of nature Gu refinement techniques.

And Ben Duo Yi also realized.

To learn these incredible technique, one needed ample talent and aptitude. Yu Mu Chun had incredible talent, he fed Gu worms at three years old, he was in close contact with Gu worms at ten, learning what they ate. By that age, he had already learned that Gu worms carried the traces of dao marks, they were connected to all beings in this world.

When Yu Mu Chun was sixteen, he could refine rank five Gu using human techniques. When he was twenty-two, he realized this was not the way for him, and he gave up his achievements, restarting from scratch.

From this point, one could see that Yu Mu Chun not only had talent, he also had ambition and aspiration.

Furthermore, to learn nature Gu refinement techniques, one needed huge amounts of time and resources.

When Yu Mu Chun was a hundred and thirty-eight years old, he achieved minor success. When he was two hundred and forty-six years old, he attained great success.

Along the way, he must have spent an immense amount of wealth and time to practice, it was unthinkable.

Aside from his talent, just the point about expending resources was unrealistic for Ben Duo Yi because he was a lone cultivator.

When Gu Immortals cultivate, they needed resources. This was even more the case for refinement path Gu Masters. Without lots of practice, without enough resources, even Gu Immortals could learn nothing.

Most Gu Immortals were flying masters, but only a small number were refinement path masters.

Fang Yuan did not have higher achievements in refinement path, he only had become a refinement path quasi-grandmaster. Other than his limited talent and that his efforts were not focused on this path, it was also because he was limited by resources.

Yu Mu Chun saw that the tornadoes were calming down, he started to refine Gu.

He stood in the air, his hair was swaying as he took out immortal materials one after another from his immortal aperture.

He tossed these immortal materials into each of the tornadoes after careful selection.

The tornadoes were like sharp blades, the immortal materials were grinded into powder quickly.

Ben Duo Yi was dumbfounded.

Ordinarily speaking, when refining Gu, the sets of immortal materials had to be measured properly, the timing in which they were used was precise, and the heat used to handle the immortal materials had to be managed.

But Yu Mu Chun was very casual, leaving aside the forest of tornadoes, his technique in handling the immortal materials was very crude, he did not pay attention to the quantity of each material. He was like a terrible chef, randomly tossing in oil and other condiments into the dish according to his urges.

If anyone else tried this method, Ben Duo Yi would scoff in disdain.

But when Yu Mu Chun did it, there was an unspeakably smooth flow and natural feeling.

His every moment was very ordinary, but there was an indescribable beauty, as if perfectly suited to nature, deep and profound meaning was hidden in his actions.

At once, Ben Duo Yi had frozen in place, his eyes were staring without blinking.

He was completely dazed!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 861: Successful Refinement

Star Form blessed land.

Poisonous fog was spreading, poisonous blood was boiling, three layers of Gu formations were already destroyed by corrosion, the surrounding land turned into a thin layer of poisonous swampland.

Fang Yuan’s face was stern.

“Next is the most troublesome and difficult to process immortal material, earthly limit astral qi.”

He took out an immortal material and held it in his hands.

This Gu refinement material was very peculiar, it was made up of soil and qi. They gathered into a lump.

At the top was light azure colored astral qi, below was black soil.

Astral qi was the heaven qi found up in the nine heavens. Outside the immemorial nine heavens was a thick wall of astral qi. If a Gu Immortal wants to explore the nine heavens, he would need to break through the astral qi wall.

Meanwhile, the black soil was made up of the essence of earth qi condensed from the ten depths.

Heaven and earth qi could not coexist, but at this moment, this earthly limit astral qi was joined together in harmony. Not only were they existing peacefully, they were converting into one another constantly. Black soil turned into astral qi while astral qi turned into black soil.

Fang Yuan’s shook it by moving his hands rapidly, as this lump of earthly limit astral qi melted, fusing with the black soil and becoming a lump of fog.

But after shaking, after a dozen breaths, the black soil sank while the astral qi stayed on top. Black and white was separated again, the two were rotating, it was a mystical sight.

“Processing such an immortal material is most troublesome. Ordinary refinement path killer moves cannot deal with it perfectly. Only the four publicly recognized strongest immortal killer moves to deal with immortal materials — slumbering lightning python, reflect snow, muffled thunder stone drum, and wind grind, could complete this step instantly. Unfortunately, I do not have any of these four immortal killer moves, to process the earthly limit astral qi, I can only put in much time and effort.”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts flashed as he moved his feet, his huge body shot into the air, he leaped and jumped into the turtle shell, into the poisonous blood.

Boom!

Fang Yuan flashed his sharp nails, causing injuries on his six monstrous arms, he next slashed at his chest, back, and other areas, creating openings on his skin.

Blood refinement killer move — Blood Trace Travel.

From these injuries, traces of blood appeared.

The blood traces quickly fused into the dark purple poisonous blood, the poisonous blood in the turtle shell was drawn away, it moved into Fang Yuan’s wounds.

Intense pain assaulted him, Fang Yuan snorted.

Immortal zombies did not have a sense of pain, Fang Yuan could feel pain because he used Gu worm methods. He needed to feel pain so that he could know what step the immortal materials were at.

Fang Yuan’s blood and the poisonous blood in the turtle shell acting as a pot continued to fuse and circulate, they were entering and exiting Fang Yuan’s body.

After this process stabilized, Fang Yuan took out the earthly limit astral qi and swallowed it.

Gulp, the earthly limit astral qi entered his stomach.

This was his own original method, created in his previous life, an abnormal technique using blood path to refine Gu. He called this the flesh body blood refinement technique.

The earthly limit astral qi entered his body, it was engulfed by the blood and slowly melted into the blood.

Blood flowed out of Fang Yuan’s body through the wounds, into the turtle shell pot, and sank to the bottom.

At the same time, the other poisonous blood in the pot flowed into Fang Yuan’s body through the wounds, engulfing the earthly limit astral qi again.

Such circulation made the earthly limit astral qi melt at an extremely slow speed.

At a mountain peak on True Yang mountain range, winds were blowing wildly.

The hairy man Gu Immortal, Yu Mu Chun, stretched out a finger.

Where his finger pointed, five or six tornadoes slowly approached. When they got close to a certain extent, they gathered into one, forming a huge tornado that howled loudly.

Yu Mu Chun’s hand turned, a pearl-like immortal material was flicked out by his finger, entering the huge tornado.

Although this pearl was small and inconspicuous, after it entered the tornado, it emitted a shrill noise.

The winds of the tornado became weaker, it spin slower. It was like a strong man who was stuffed from eating.

But as time passed, the tornado became faster and faster, it was rapidly ‘digesting’ the pearl.

Fifteen minutes later, the tornado completely absorbed the pearl, the entire ‘pillar’ was dyed in black and white, interchanging between the two colors.

“Earthly limit astral qi pearl?” Ben Duo Yi saw this and had a thought, he cried out.

Yu Mu Chun was a bit surprised, he praised: “Mm, you have quite some knowledge, lad. To process the earthly limit astral qi pearl, a small tornado would not work, only a large tornado could do it.”

Ben Duo Yi suppressed the shaking of his heart.

Earthly limit astral qi was a very hard to process immortal material. Ben Duo Yi knew deeply that even if he exerted himself, he would need to spend several years to melt a lump of earthly limit astral qi, so that it could be used in Gu refinement.

He was a mortal Gu Master, to process immortal materials, he would usually need to spend years on it.

As for the earthly limit astral qi pearl?

It was made from a huge amount of earthly limit astral qi, squeezed together and gathered into a pure pearl. One pearl was equivalent to a hundred portions of earthly limit astral qi.

Earthly limit astral qi pearls were extremely firm, they were hard to process. Even Gu Immortals needed to spend months or even years to melt one pearl.

But Master Yu Mu Chun spent such a short time to process an earthly limit astral qi pearl?

Ben Duo Yi thought of something, his voice trembled as he asked: “Don’t tell me... Master Yu Mu Chun, the refinement path killer move that you used is the legendary wind grind? That has to be it, only one of the four legendary refinement path immortal killer moves can process immortal materials at such a speed!”

“That’s right, it is wind grind.” Yu Mu Chun replied.

Ben Duo Yi’s eyes were shining brightly, this was one of the best methods to process immortal materials. Even if he was not a Gu Immortal, and could not use an immortal killer move, but right now, he was filled with admiration, he dreamed that one day, he would be able to use wind grind to perfectly process immortal materials, that would be incredible!

After dealing with the earthly limit astral qi pearl, Yu Mu Chun started to throw immortal essence stones into the tornadoes.

One after another, immortal essence stones were tossed into the tornadoes, these stones were not as tough as the earthly limit astral qi pearl, they were grinded to dust in an instant by blades of wind, they gave off a dazzling light.

Right now, heaven and earth was resonating, the surrounding mountains were shaking, the sky was filled with dark clouds, thunder was booming.

“What is going on?” Ben Duo Yi was scared and shocked, he looked around and realized that the mound of the mountain that he was on had lights floating around him.

These lights were dao marks.

There were some red fire path dao marks, some blue water path dao marks, these two dao marks were quite fragmented. There were also earth path and wood path dao marks, they were slightly more intact. But mostly, there was a type of silver light dao mark flickering.

Rule path dao marks!

These dao marks were very high in numbers, but they were not arranged in an orderly way. Some were entangled together, densely compacted, while others were scattered around randomly.

Ben Duo Yi realized that the place where Yu Mu Chun chose to refine Gu had the highest number of rule path dao marks.

“This mound seems ordinary, but it is very extraordinary, no wonder Master Yu chose to refine Gu here! Strange, ordinary mounds would not have so many dao marks.” The more Ben Duo Yi observed, the more questions popped up in his head.

He felt pressure internally, because the shaking of the mountain was getting stronger, the clouds in the sky were getting darker.

A thunderstorm was approaching, a calamity was striking!

Even those tornadoes were weakening, they shrunk in size.

Yu Mu Chun raised his head in the sky, laughing loudly as his voice was filled with confidence and grandness.

At this moment, his Immortal Gu refinement had reached its most crucial step.

“Come.” He pointed one finger at the sky, and another finger at the ground.

In the sky, lightning bolts flashed as they gathered together, forming a huge dragon-like lightning python.

Lightning was yang, python was yin, the lightning python contained yin and yang, not only was the wild nature of the lightning curbed, it even showed some gentleness.

This was slumbering lightning python!

One of the four refinement path immortal killer moves!

Meanwhile, on the ground, countless tornadoes were gathering, forming into a gigantic tornado wind pillar.

The wind pillar was tall, almost connecting the sky and ground. The slumbering lightning python slowly moved, descending slowly and coiling around the wind pillar.

The lightning was not dazzling, but the scene of the huge python coiling around the pillar had an indescribable beauty that shook the soul.

At this moment, heaven and earth qi burst out.

An intense sense of danger assaulted Ben Duo Yi’s heart.

“Master Yu, what, what is going on, why is this situation resembling the tribulation of a Gu Immortal?” Ben Duo Yi shouted.

“Ah, you guessed right. This is a small problem.” Yu Mu Chun said casually.

“A small problem?!” Ben Duo Yi’s eyes were wide open, his mouth was dry.

Star Form blessed land.

Fang Yuan was covered in wounds, the pain made his face distorted, his eight monstrous arms were inserted into the poisonous blood, his fangs were exposed and his eyes were red, he was breathing heavily like an ox.

After spending a total of three days and three nights, he had finally processed all of the earthly limit astral qi, fusing them into the poisonous blood.

The poisonous blood filled the entire pot earlier, but now less than half was left.

“The most difficult step is over, land spirit, bring those captives here.” Fang Yuan shouted.

Star Form land spirit quickly responded.

At once, large numbers of living beings, like horses, bulls, dogs, or boars were all tossed into the poisonous blood.

Screaming, growling, and crying could be heard, they blended together.

The poisonous blood was extremely thick, like a swamp. After these living beings were tossed in, their intense struggle only made them sink faster.

Their blood, flesh, and bones were all being dissolved.

Soon, the poisonous blood in the turtle shell was slowly rising in depth.

“Not enough, not enough.” Fang Yuan urged, his red eyes flashed with excitement and cruelty.

Land spirits did not care for kindness or evil, they only had obsession and loyalty.

Star Form land spirit started to toss in large numbers of variant humans. These included hairy men, rockmen, snowmen, inkmen, eggmen, feathermen, and mermen...

The poisonous blood rose in level, but Fang Yuan was not satisfied, he calculated the time as he shouted again: “More, add more of them.”

At this point, the human captives that he had specially prepared were also tossed into the pot.

“Ah, spare my life!”

“So painful, the pain is killing me!”

“I will not let you off even as a ghost!!”

Fang Yuan was unmoved, he only focused on the Gu refinement progress. An elderly Gu Master was coincidentally tossed to the side of him, he struggled to survive.

Fang Yuan raised his leg and kicked this elderly man into a deep part of the poisonous blood, the old man struggled intensely for a few moments, but eventually, only his hand was left on the surface of the poisonous blood, his fingers were like hooks grabbing at the sky, it was like the protest of the weak against heaven and earth, against destiny, carrying intense curses and grudges towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, during this period, the poisonous blood had regained its original volume, it was at the rim of the turtle shell.

He began to throw in large numbers of immortal essence stones into the poisonous blood.

One hundred, two hundred pieces... he threw them in without hesitation.

Countless vengeful spirits were flying on top of the poisonous blood, the poisonous fog was rumbling as the level of poisonous blood declined again.

Seven days later, the poisonous blood was almost completely dried up, there was only a small puddle left in the shell, it could not even reach Fang Yuan’s ankle.

Fang Yuan lowered his body and picked up a Gu from this poisonous blood.

Change form Immortal Gu, completed!

Central Continent, True Yang mountain range.

Ben Duo Yi sat on the ground, muttering: “The tribulation is finally over...”

The mountain range was partly destroyed, it was like a ravaged battlefield.

Be it the tornado wind pillar or the slumbering lightning python, they had disappeared.

Rain poured as Ben Duo Yi was drenched completely.

Yu Mu Chun collected the refined Immortal Gu as he threw an information path Gu worm to Ben Duo Yi.

“Lad, this is my refinement path inheritance, I am leaving it to you. You can learn about nature Gu refinement techniques, but if you do not become a Gu Immortal, you cannot use this method to refine Gu. Because this method attracts heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities.”

Saying so, Yu Mu Chun stepped on the air and flew into the sky.

Ben Duo Yi’s body shuddered, he knelt down as his eyes shined with a brilliant light, he shouted: “Master, don’t worry, I will not waste this inheritance!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 862: After Refining Gu

Central Continent, Hu Immortal blessed land.

Starlight Immortal Gu!

Fang Yuan stood on top of a Fang Yuan stone nest, at his will, he activated starlight Immortal Gu.

Immediately, a starlight pillar burst out, shooting into the stone nest.

Under Fang Yuan’s control, the starlight did not harm anyone, it was very mild.

Inside this stone nest, there were many arrangements of Gu formations. Once the starlight pillar shot in, it was dissolved into traces of blue starlight rays, drawn into the first room of every level.

The hairy man in the first room activated his Gu worm skillfully, absorbing the starlight trace and processing it.

The partly-done product was sent into the second room, for the second step.

Going through a total of seven rooms, star thought Gu were refined one after another.

These star thought Gu moved along the tunnels, sliding towards the deepest storage area of the stone nest.

Each time Fang Yuan activated starlight Immortal Gu, the amount produced was enough for these hairy men to work for eight to nine days without any rest!

After using starlight Immortal Gu, there would be a huge quantity of starlight, Fang Yuan did not need to purchase starlight Gu like before and refine star thought Gu using the mortal starlight Gu as material. This saved a lot of trouble, and his costs reduced slightly as well.

Even though using starlight Immortal Gu required immortal essence, if he purchased a vast number of mortal starlight Gu, he would still need to pay quite a sum, the cost of acquiring them was high.

The modified star thought Gu recipe was safer as well. Refining Gu was a risky thing to do, it was like battling, that was why a lot of hairy men got injured in the process, or even died.

After producing the starlight, Fang Yuan did not leave, he observed them for a while.

A while later, he nodded slightly, feeling pleased internally.

The current star thought Gu recipe was already modified by him, the number of hairy man deaths had greatly reduced in comparison to before. Most importantly, the production of star thought Gu did not fall in numbers.

‘But the modification has reached its limits, unless my star path attainment level rises, or if I find a better star thought Gu recipe.’

Fang Yuan knew clearly that he was not a star path cultivator. His star path attainment level might stay at this level forever. Or perhaps, when he explores a dream realm in the future, his star path attainment level might rise.

But who could be certain of events in the future?

“It is a pity, sixty percent of rooms in this stone nest are empty. If I have enough hairy men, the production of star thought Gu can double!”

Fang Yuan felt it was a pity.

Just now, to refine change form Immortal Gu, he not only used up the success dao mark from the Infallible inheritance, he even used up almost all of his immortal materials and immortal essence stones.

The result was that Fang Yuan was currently broke.

Thus, the problem of a hairy man shortage could not be solved now.

Even if he caught and captured wild hairy men, he would need to spend lots of effort and time to train them, until they were proper slaves that could be useful in refining Gu.

Fang Yuan did not know how to train wild hairy men into proper slaves.

The fastest way was to buy hairy man slaves from other Gu Immortals. Regrettably, Fang Yuan did not have the spare cash for that.

Even his immortal essence storage was very low now, he had around ten beads, he needed to use them wisely.

One could say that Fang Yuan was in an extremely weak condition now. Even though he had the killer move myriad self, three new star path Immortal Gu, and multiple star path immortal killer moves of Star Lord Wan Xiang, without enough immortal essence, he could not use any of the killer moves.

As the saying goes, there is no need for worry if one has ample resources.

To Gu Immortals, resources referred to immortal essence stones and immortal essence mainly.

Thus, the most important thing for Fang Yuan was to accumulate immortal essence now.

After leaving this stone nest, Fang Yuan went to inspect the other two stone nests.

During this period, these two stone nests were handled by Hei Lou Lan.

She activated strength qi Immortal Gu, providing the Gu refinement materials for countless hairy men, large numbers of airsac Gu were created, they contained guts Gu as they were sold to the different forces of Central Continent, or in treasure yellow heaven.

In these two stone nests, each room had a hairy man.

The risk of refining airsac Gu was much higher than refining star thought Gu. Why was the stone nest still at full capacity, that was because Fang Yuan reassigned the hairy men in the third stone nest to fill up these two stone nests.

Fang Yuan’s current focus was on expanding the guts Gu trade.

During the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, Fang Yuan dueled Feng Jin Huang and made an agreement in public. From now on, he was going to sell a large number of guts Gu to Spirit Affinity House.

Thus, the demand for guts Gu increased, Fang Yuan had to increase its production.

Inside a stone nest, Fang Yuan met up with Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan was browsing the information about Central Continent.

“Central Continent’s ten great sects are secretly trying to capture Song Zi Xing, have you heard about it?” Once they met, Hei Lou Lan asked this to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “Of course I did. This matter can be kept from mortals, but it cannot be hidden from Gu Immortals. Even though Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects are concealing their tracks, the other Gu Immortals in Central Continent would not want to keep this a secret, right now, they are looking forward to seeing some drama in the ten great ancient sects.”

“Sigh!” Hei Lou Lan sighed deeply: “Such a prime opportunity, but we missed it. If we could kill Song Zi Xing during this period, we might be able to obtain Star Form blessed land.”

Fang Yuan was silent briefly, before saying: “Hei Lou Lan, you’re simplifying the matter too much. Central Continent is not Northern Plains, we are both Northern Plains Gu Immortals, if our aura leaks, others will find out. The consequences of exposing our identities are too severe, we cannot handle it. Song Zi Xing is also very crafty, he is skilled at escaping, while we have mediocre investigative methods. Even the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent cannot find him in True Yang mountain range, how can we find him?”

“You are right.” Hei Lou Lan sighed, she replied gloomily.

Ever since she was ‘awakened’ by Fang Yuan, she realized her own shortcomings.

These last days, she had been thinking daily about how to manage her blessed land, how could she earn resources and sustain her own cultivation, how could she become more independent.

But reality was cruel, it was not easy to start a business.

Hei Lou Lan was starting from scratch, she needed to spend a huge amount of time and face many setbacks to set up her revenue sources.

Even if her plan worked, she would face fierce competition in the market, how much profit she would get would depend entirely on the situation.

Hei Lou Lan thought about it for a while, she went to Fairy Li Shan for advice, she learned that to start a business from scratch, she would make great losses initially, the process would be filled with difficulty, and in the end, whether she earned much or not was uncertain, she might be slowing her own progress.

There was no helping it, she had a ten extreme immortal aperture, the flow of time in it was extremely fast, her heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities were also much stronger.

Hei Lou Lan investigated and realized: What was best suitable were unique businesses like guts Gu, a monopoly market that could be solely hers. Or she could be like Fang Yuan, taking several sources of revenue from Dong Fang tribe. For example, the eerie fire dragon pythons, regretful spiders, dragonfish and others, these were originally taken good care of by Dong Fang tribe, Fang Yuan was only taking over and changing where he sold them.

After discovering this, Hei Lou Lan was even more attracted to Star Form blessed land.

As long as she obtained it, Hei Lou Lan would have a stable foundation! Inheriting Star Lord Wan Xiang’s businesses, she would be self sufficient, it would be enough to aid her in her cultivation.

Fang Yuan did not tell Hei Lou Lan that he was the owner of Star Form blessed land.

He liked to keep his cards hidden.

The Snowy Mountain Alliance would expire eventually, it was uncertain if Hei Lou Lan would remain an ally or become a foe.

Of course, if Hei Lou Lan noticed something and asked Fang Yuan, because of the alliance, he could not lie, even though he could remain silent, that would just act as simple confirmation for Hei Lou Lan.

He would hide this for as long as he could.

That was Fang Yuan’s plan.

...

After Yu Mu Chun refined the Immortal Gu, he traveled deep into True Yang mountain range.

Ever since he separated from Ben Duo Yi, he had used an immortal killer move to conceal his tracks.

On this afternoon, he stopped in front of a small, ordinary looking valley.

He took out an information path Gu worm and tossed it in front of him.

The Gu worm vanished, like a rock entering water, there were ripples in the air, they expanded and an opening appeared, filled with blood red light inside.

Yu Mu Chun did not hesitate, he took a large step forward and entered the spatial crack.

At the next moment, he was inside a strange area.

The crack behind him closed tightly, Yu Mu Chun’s vision was filled with blood red light, there was a dark and eerie poisonous swamp, large numbers of skeletons were inside the mud.

An intense bloody smell assaulted him, Yu Mu Chun frowned unconsciously as he said: “Using so many blood sacrifices, it seems your injuries were severe, Song Zi Xing.”

“Cough cough, I had no choice, it was quite fortunate that I escaped with my life. Come in.” At a deep part of the swamp, Song Zi Xing’s voice could be heard.

Looking at this situation, the hairy man Gu Immortal, Yu Mu Chun, was actually acquainted with a top tier demonic path Gu Immortal of Central Continent, Song Zi Xing, they seemed to be quite familiar with each other, they had a close relationship!

Yu Mu Chun moved in familiar fashion towards a deep part of the swamp. This was not the first time he was in this place, he was familiar with the terrain.

Eventually, in the blood pool at the center of the swamp, he saw Song Zi Xing.

Song Zi Xing only had a head and over half his chest left, the entirety of his body was submerged in the blood pool for healing, only after Yu Mu Chun came did his head emerge from the pool.

Seeing Song Zi Xing, Yu Mu Chun’s expression turned grave: “With your injuries, it will be hard to take part in the upcoming crucial plan.”

“Hehe, I will just be giving up my life and cultivation, that’s all.” Song Zi Xing’s expression was calm, he spoke in a carefree manner, he changed the subject afterwards: “Did you refine that rule path Immortal Gu?”

“Mm, using the success dao mark from the Infallible inheritance, combined with my nature Gu refinement techniques, success was certain. But it is a pity, if given more time, I would be able to learn some useful things from this success dao mark. The success dao marks in the Infallible inheritance are different from ordinary success dao marks, they are very closely related to refinement path. If I could research upon it, I would be able to create my own Infallible inheritance!”

Yu Mu Chun shook his head as he sighed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 863: Elevating All-Out Effort Gu

Hearing Yu Mu Chun’s sigh, Song Zi Xing sighed as well: “The crucial thing is time. If I have time, I can heal and recover my battle strength as well. Unfortunately, time is too tight, it was estimated that we had ten years left, to think that we need to start now!”

“We have made many preparations these last years, but plans cannot keep up with changes, and fate Immortal Gu was not completely destroyed, isn’t it normal to have such accidents occurring?” Yu Mu Chun asked.

Even Fang Yuan, who had been reborn from five hundred years in the future, did not know about the existence of Fate. In contrast, Yu Mu Chun actually knew, and Song Zi Xing’s expression also showed no surprise.

“Oh right.” Yu Mu Chun thought about something and said: “Earlier, before coming here, I met with a talented hairy man junior and passed him my refinement path inheritance already.”

Inheritances were a cultural symbol of the Gu Master world.

Like how during ancient times in China, there was a need to acknowledge one’s roots and ancestors. Grand heroes would want to leave their name in history. After people died, huge amounts of jewelry and gold would be buried with them, even servants or wives were buried alongside. During Japan’s Sengoku Period, warriors would wear glorious armor into battle, they did not care about the dangers of attracting the enemy’s attention.

As for Rome and Egypt, since ancient times until the present, they also had such cultural developments, even though they were all different, there was one common point among them — that was to prove that one existed.

Proving to the world, proving to others, I had once existed and lived. Even if I died, in the world, this person had once lived!

As such, biographies were not hard to understand. Some people wrote their biographies when they were alive, some allowed their descendants to write them after they died. There were some who did not have descendants, their enemies wrote it for them! Biographies written in such situations could often be more factual, they could contain much more detailed descriptions. As the saying goes, often, an enemy knows you better than your family. Biographies written by your enemies would not contain flattery, they could become classics.

Inheritances were the same.

Biographies detailed a person’s life experiences. But inheritances contained the foundation of the strength that a person in order to live in this world. It was their understanding towards nature, their thoughts about the world, and their conclusion of the truth.

Like in ancient China, every craftsman would not want to leave behind regrets before dying, they will try all ways to find a successor, they would not want the skills that had been passed down for generations to be lost.

Skills, inheritances, these were acknowledgements of one’s value, they were the records of one’s success in life. After leaving behind an inheritance, even if one died, they can leave behind a mark in the world.

Yu Mu Chun left behind his inheritance, there was an ominous sensation of him being prepared to die.

Who would leave behind inheritances?

Nobody who was living a great life and had good future prospects would leave behind an inheritance.

Under normal circumstances, who would leave an inheritance behind? Teaching everything to a pupil would result in a starving master, it was hard to know the intentions of others, if one was careless, they would gain a competitor.

Usually, only when one was at the end of their life, when they knew that death was coming, would they leave an inheritance.

For example, Flower Wine Monk, Blood Sea Ancestor, and Dong Fang Chang Fan.

Yu Mu Chun left behind an inheritance, it was evident that in the crucial plan he was taking part in, he had no confidence in surviving it.

What grand plan would make this unfathomable refinement path Gu Immortal expert feel that he could not survive? What kind of motivation was driving him, making him willing to sacrifice himself?

Even Song Zi Xing, he had just escaped and survived, top tier in Central Continent’s demonic path, for this grand plan, he was willing to sacrifice himself!

Furthermore, Yu Mu Chun actually told Song Zi Xing personally that he had chosen an inheritor for his inheritance. This was abnormal!

If Song Zi Xing had any ill intentions and secretly went to find the inheritor, he could easily obtain Yu Mu Chun’s inheritance and strengthen himself.

As for Yu Mu Chun, if his foundation was exposed, he would be easily dealt with and suppressed by Song Zi Xing.

Yu Mu Chun actually told Song Zi Xing about this precious information regarding his inheritance, it was obvious that he trusted him.

Such a level of trust was truly unparalleled!

Song Zi Xing betrayed Myriad Dragon Dock, he had a vile reputation, but he could obtain Yu Mu Chun’s trust to this degree? Was it because of his charisma, or were there other reasons?

“Yes, we should make some preparations.” Hearing that Yu Mu Chun had left an inheritance, Song Zi Xing was emotionless, he did not have any intentions to seize it.

“I’ll show you something too.” Song Zi Xing smiled mysteriously.

At the next moment, there was a commotion in the blood pool as a blood fetus floated up from under the blood.

The blood fetus was the size of a foal, within the fetus, one could see a human shaped figure, curled up like a baby, sleeping.

Yu Mu Chun saw this blood fetus and his pupils shrunk, he said with some disbelief: “This, this... you actually developed blood demon body separation to this extent?”

Song Zi Xing smiled, he showed a proud expression: “Even though I did not obtain a complete blood deity Immortal Gu recipe, I had collected some Blood Deity remnant recipes, I made this blood fetus according to the Blood Deity remnant recipes, with the blood path technique from Northern Plains along with my immortal killer move, blood demon body separation, this was formed.”

“The fake body created by blood demon body separation expends immortal essence to maintain, it has a time limit. But the body that this blood fetus makes does not consume immortal essence, it can be sustained for at least two to three hundred years. It can cultivate independently and has its own consciousness, it can get stronger by cultivating and become an immortal. In terms of appearance, it will look exactly like me.”

“You are planning to?” Yu Mu Chun showed a look of understanding.

“That’s right, it is not a problem if I die, as long as the plan succeeds. But if the plan fails, there will need a countermeasure for it. Song Zi Xing needs to live. Even if I am sacrificed, the blood fetus will produce a second Song Zi Xing.”

Yu Mu Chun looked at the blood fetus as he showed an expression of interest: “Can I conduct research on this blood fetus? I have just gotten a new inspiration!”

“Of course, go ahead and research. But be careful, the blood fetus cannot leave this blood pool, not even for a moment.”

“Mm, I understand, don’t worry.”

Central Continent, Hu Immortal blessed land.

Looking at the hole earth Gu in front of him, Fang Yuan let out a breath of turbid air.

This was the second hole earth Gu in Hu Immortal blessed land, the first one was connected to Immortal Crane Sect, while this one was connected to Spirit Affinity House.

Just earlier, he had done the first transaction with Spirit Affinity House. Large numbers of airsac Gu carrying guts Gu were sent over to Spirit Affinity House. Fang Yuan obtained a hundred and eighty immortal essence stones, it solved his immediate problem for now.

Speaking of which, after Fang Yuan and Feng Jin Huang’s duel, the truly valuable thing was not the zombie revival technique that Feng Jin Huang gave him, it was the cooperation with Spirit Affinity House.

The reason why Feng Jin Huang took out this method as the wager was because although Fang Yuan was an immortal zombie, he could not make use of this technique.

But she did not know that Fang Yuan still had his first mortal aperture. She did not manage to complete stump Fang Yuan.

With these one hundred and eighty immortal essence stones, Fang Yuan did not hesitate in converting half of them over to green grape immortal essence. Like this, he was out of his weak state, he regained his battle strength.

A day later, he transacted with Immortal Crane Sect again, gained a favorable sum of immortal essence stones.

Immortal Crane Sect attitude was much gentler than before.

Evidently, they had understood: If they were too overbearing towards Fang Yuan, he might lean towards Spirit Affinity House instead.

At the same time, Immortal Crane Sect wanted to buy the success dao mark from Fang Yuan, they offered a huge price, asking him to refine a rank six Immortal Gu. They would provide the Immortal Gu recipe to Fang Yuan for free, and the immortal materials would all be provided by them.

Even the ten great ancient sects in Central Continent had an unceasing demand regarding Immortal Gu.

Towards this request, Fang Yuan evaded it as much as possible, he did not say that he had already used it, he only said that he needed more time for consideration.

Immortal Crane Sect was asking something from Fang Yuan, thus their attitude was obviously nicer than usual.

After making these two deals, Fang Yuan used the immortal essence stones in his possession to buy some hairy man slaves from treasure yellow heaven, replenishing the ones that had died from refining Gu.

The price of hairy man slaves was not cheap.

Fang Yuan’s immortal essence stones had just been replenished, but after this, they were all gone again.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan had quite a bit of green grape immortal essence now, he was much safer than before.

Even though he bought the hairy man slaves, Fang Yuan was only replenishing his earlier losses, he could not expand the scale of the stone nests.

Because of the deal with Spirit Affinity House, the guts Gu trade had increased in quantity.

Using two stone nests, Fang Yuan could not accommodate the demand of the market. He planned to accumulate a portion of immortal essence stones and build a fourth stone nest, as well as getting enough hairy man slaves to fill them up.

The lack of funds was quite serious, Fang Yuan’s third stone nest was built using the funds that Hei Lou Lan provided.

But with Star Form blessed land’s assistance, and Star Lord Wan Xiang’s many businesses of Gu insect transactions, Fang Yuan managed to save quite a sum of immortal essence stones.

This caused the time that Fang Yuan needed to accumulate funds to shrink.

Fang Yuan accumulated immortal essence stones as he used the light of wisdom to undergo deductions.

A month later in Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan successfully fused change form Immortal Gu into vaguely familiar face. Using the attainment level of a strength path grandmaster, Fang Yuan successfully deduced the rank five recipe of all-out effort Gu.

Unlike an ancient Gu recipe, Fang Yuan’s deduction made use of Gu refinement materials that could be easily found in the world at present.

All-out effort Gu was the vital Gu of Fang Yuan’s immortal second aperture, all along it had been rank four, its rank was much lower than Fang Yuan himself.

With this Gu recipe, Fang Yuan had a new task, that was to refine all-out effort Gu.

After failing once, all-out effort Gu reached rank five.

“If I can raise all-out effort Gu into rank six, then the boost to myriad self’s power would be huge, it would only be inferior to that of self strength Immortal Gu. Unfortunately, such a thing is beyond my capabilities.”

After this successful attempt, Fang Yuan tried to deduce the Gu recipe of small family qi Gu.

The result was utter failure!

Fang Yuan’s qi path attainment was only at ordinary level, he was not even a quasi-master, this was a very understandable result.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 864: Sacred Feather City’s Shocking Change

The sky was slightly green, the wind that would not stop in all four seasons was blowing gently.

In this small world, a huge city was floating in the sky.

This was a home for feathermen, it was known as the city in the sky to others, but these feathermen called it Sacred Feather City.

At this moment, rainbow flags were hanging in Sacred Feather City, cheers and shouts could be heard everywhere.

Most of the feathermen in the city had gathered around the battle arena in the city, they were watching an important match.

The featherman king had passed away, according to their customs, it was time to select the new featherman king through battles.

Of course, to be a candidate in fighting for the position, one needed to be acknowledged by most of the feathermen in the city.

The feathermen did not want a fierce or tyrannical ruler, they wanted a compassionate hero.

Thus, the feathermen who were fighting for the position of king had great reputation, they were people who had done good deeds or made immense contributions to Sacred Feather City.

In most cases, the evaluation of the citizens was accurate. In the history of

Sacred Feather City, very few evil and cruel feathermen were chosen to be king.

Even if they were cruel and ruthless, there were three featherman supreme elders in Sacred Feather City, they were Gu Immortals who could control the situation.

In the huge battle arena, tens of thousands of spectators were watching.

The cheering was extremely loud, at the center of the arena, two youngsters were battling it out.

“Yu Fei, give up. I am the prince of Sacred Feather City, I will inherit the throne and defend the honor of our Dan surname!” A tall and burly featherman youngster with golden hair sent his opponent flying time after time.

This was the final match.

The victor would become the new king of the feathermen.

From the current situation, one could see that the handsome featherman prince had the advantage. He was flying in the sky, with rank five cultivation level, he used his Gu worms and attacked from a long range.

His opponent was a young featherman with short black hair, he was thin and sprinted on the ground, he rolled around at times to evade the featherman prince’s attacks.

“Dan Yu! Dan Yu!” The spectators were shouting the featherman prince’s name, their cheers were in unison as they became louder and louder.

The situation was very obvious now.

Prince Dan Yu had a huge advantage, while his opponent, the poor lad Yu Fei, was taking a beating without any way to fight back.

Yu Fei’s body was covered in dirt, he looked pathetic, like a rat jumping around on the arena.

Meanwhile, Dan Yu was high and mighty, his attacks were very tactical and grand, it was more in line with the expectations of the people towards their king.

“You want me to admit defeat, that is impossible! I, Yu Fei, am the man destined to become king!!” Suddenly, Yu Fei shouted, he burst forth with strength. His legs launched from the ground as he flew up like an arrow, towards Dan Yu.

“What? You still had strength left!” Dan Yu retreated anxiously.

Yu Fei jumped into the air, seeing that he was about to get close to Dan Yu, he had no choice but to descend as Dan Yu quickly flew back in vigilance.

“Yu Fei, your wings were broken by me, you still want to resist?” Dan Yu looked at Yu Fei who was falling down, he laughed coldly and mocked with some lingering fear.

But Yu Fei raised his head, his eyes were shining brightly: “It is not over yet, look at my killer move — Inflated Balloon!”

At the next instant, Yu Fei opened his mouth, sucking in a huge amount of air.

Almost instantly, lots of air was sucked into his stomach, his body inflated and became a fat balloon.

Yu Fei started to float up like a balloon.

The audience was silent for a few breaths of time, before bursting into laughter.

Yu Fei’s balloon mode was simply too funny.

Even Dan Yu was stunned before relaxing: “This is truly your style, Yu Fei. But being a clown will not allow you to become the featherman king! It is time to lose, killer move — Blade Wind Strong Slash!”

Dan Yu’s eyes were sharp, his arms were raised up as he made a cutting motion with them in the sky, two translucent blades that resembled wind blades flew towards Yu Fei at an extremely fast speed.

Yu Fei was still slowly ascending.

Much of the audience shouted in surprise, they knew the power of blade wind strong slash after watching the battle for so long, if this hit landed, Yu Fei would definitely be heavily injured or dead, his stomach would be sliced apart.

But at this moment, Yu Fei, who was in danger, had a brilliant light shining in his eyes, he had found a chance to overturn the situation!

He suddenly opened his mouth, a strong current blew out of his mouth as he gained some thrust.

Yu Fei’s speed rose rapidly, he shot towards Dan Yu.

“This is?” Dan Yu was shocked.

Yu Fei’s body quickly shrunk, he narrowly dodged the two blades from blade wind strong slash agilely.

Dan Yu wanted to retreat, but his speed was inferior.

“Where are you trying to go? If you are a man, fight me with your fists, we will engage in a physical fight!” Yu Fei shouted, his body spun around in the air, eventually, his legs grabbed onto Dan Yu.

Killer move — Coiling Tree Vines!

Yu Fei shouted internally, his legs turned soft, like old tree vines, he coiled around Dan Yu’s waist.

Dan Yu could not break free, he activated his defensive Gu worm out of reflex.

Killer move — Crane Crossing Neck!

Yu Fei’s head suddenly turned into a crane’s head, his long neck coiled around Dan Yu’s neck like a long chain, he gripped tightly as his beak stabbed at Dan Yu.

Ding!

The bird beak hit Dan Yu’s head, there was some sparks like he had hit strong steel.

Although Dan Yu was not injured, this heavy blow was hard to endure, he was feeling dizzy.

Killer move — Six-nine Great Windmill!

Yu Fei saw a chance and his head turned back to normal, making use of this, he leaned back exaggeratedly and his head was buried in between Dan Yu’s two legs, the two bodies spun around in the sky.

The two bodies were tangled together, like a windmill, they rapidly approached the ground.

The feathermen spectators shouted in shock.

But the victim, Dan Yu, was hit with the killer move, he felt the world spinning as his mind was in chaos, he felt very dizzy and disoriented, he could not react.

As they approached the ground, Yu Fei suddenly retreated.

Only Dan Yu was left, crashing onto the ground.

With a loud bang, he hit the ground head first, the brick floor broke and shards flew as his head was inserted into the ground, he lost consciousness.

The entire arena was silent.

They were all shocked by this unexpected result, nobody could say anything.

There was only Yu Fei’s panting that could be heard.

After a while, the hosting featherman elder gulped, he announced loudly: “The winner is Yu Fei, he is the new king of our clan!”

“Yes! I am finally the featherman king, I succeeded!!” Yu Fei raised his arms in the air, shouting excitedly.

The audience finally reacted, they cheered loudly and applauded, someone shouted: “Yu Fei! Yu Fei!”

The shouting of Yu Fei’s name became louder and louder, more and more people joined in.

Soon, in the entire arena, no, in the entirety of Sacred Feather City, chants of “Yu Fei, Yu Fei” could be heard.

“Hahahaha, hahahahahaha...” The young Yu Fei placed his arms on his waist as he laughed with his head held high, he was very happy.

But suddenly, he grimaced as he touched his wings with the back of his hand: “So painful, so painful.”

At the other end, Dan Yu, who had fainted, was dug up from the ground by the healing Gu Masters, he was given medical swiftly.

Deep within Sacred Feather City, three featherman Gu Immortals were half-asleep, they communicated with their drowsy divine senses.

“This generation’s featherman king is quite unique, he is quite different from the other kings.”

“Hehehe, he is an interesting fellow.”

“It seems that he has quite the ambition, he wants to expand the territory of us feathermen. But after he becomes the featherman king, he should become more mature.”

The three Gu Immortals conversed casually.

According to past situations, after the new featherman king was chosen, he would bring much life and innovation to the peaceful Sacred Feather City.

If there were no mishaps, Yu Fei would rule the feathermen in Sacred Feather City for hundreds of years.

But at the next moment, before any of the feathermen could react, a huge mishap occurred.

Boom!!!

An astonishing explosive sound shook the entirety of Sacred Feather City.

The feathermen in the city screamed, they quickly flew up.

“Painful, painful, painful!” Yu Fei was caught off guard, he lost his balance and crashed onto the ground, rolling around in the process.

“Quickly look, this, this is?!” The feathermen at the front saw something amiss, they pointed at the sky and stammered in fear, they could not speak.

Immediately after, most of the feathermen raised their heads, they were shocked to find out that above them, in the green sky, there was a huge crack!

From the crack, several figures descended like demonic gods.

The three featherman Gu Immortals in Sacred Feather City had already reacted, they were startled to awareness as they flew towards the sky.

They appeared to face the invading enemies while shouting to their feathermen citizens.

“Be careful, there is a strong enemy attacking!!”

“Quick, sound the alarms, defend our homeland!”

“Gu Masters assemble, go to the formation cores and activate the defenses of Sacred Feather City!”

The entire city was in chaos, fear was spreading.

Sacred Feather City had been peaceful for too long, they had no competition with the outside world, it was like life inside a utopia. This caused their defenses to be very lax, and with the crowning of a new king, the non-militarized feathermen could not respond properly.

“All of you, why are you here without any invitations?”

“Please leave.”

“We feathermen love peace and do not like conflict, but we are not powerless!”

The three featherman Gu Immortals had solemn expressions as they warned the strong invading foes.

The invaders did not speak, most of their attentions were focused on their leader.

This leading Gu Immortal was an old and skinny man, he was barefooted in the sky. There was a white cloth on his head, there were also white bandages on his forearms and legs.

The elderly Gu Immortal's gaze was deep as he stared at the three featherman Gu Immortals, he next sent his gaze behind them, towards Sacred Feather City.

"Attack now." The elderly Gu Immortal said plainly.

"Yes, Lord White Sea Shatuo!" The other Gu Immortals responded together.

Battle erupted.

There were three featherman Gu Immortals, one rank seven, and two rank sixes, even though they were strong, they could not match up against their enemies.

The intense battle lasted for three days and two nights, one of the featherman Gu Immortals died while two were injured, they could only use Sacred Feather City to defend themselves.

Sacred Feather City was a huge Immortal Gu House!

Using the power of the Immortal Gu House, they could resist the attacks of White Sea Shatuo and the others.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 865: Heavenly Wish

Rumble...

The explosions had been ongoing for three days and two nights.

White Sea Shatuo's group did not stop attacking for even a moment.

Countless mortal killer moves, mixed in with some immortal killer moves, slammed onto the Immortal Gu House, Sacred Feather City.

Sacred Feather City shook intensely, more than half of its troops had already died, despair was spreading.

"Our loss is imminent, we should try and break out of their siege!" A Featherman Gu Immortal, Zhou Zhong, suggested.

"Sacred Feather City has already been immobilized by their methods, without this Immortal Gu House, how can we break out?" The other featherman Gu Immortal, Zheng Ling, asked in return.

There were three Gu Immortals in Sacred Feather City, one had already died, only the rank seven Gu Immortal, Zheng Ling, and the rank six Zhou Zhong were left.

"Lord Zheng Ling, the situation is critical, I will be frank." Zhou Zhong's expression was solemn: "Earlier, Sacred Feather City became encircled because you were not willing to give up this area, that was why the enemy had time to set up their arrangements. Now, if lord still refuses to cut our losses short and be decisive, we might lose our lives here! I am not afraid of dying, but there are countless innocent citizens in the city, they will perish too. Even if these enemies spare them, they will train them to become slaves, and they will have to serve those humans for life!"

Zheng Ling heard these words and finally had a realization.

He looked at Zhou Zhong, tears shined in his eyes as he said: “You are right, I was muddleheaded!”

Zhou Zhong urged him: “Lord, I can understand your decision. Right now, the world is ruled by humans, we variant humans have no place to live in. This world is a fragment world of green heaven among the immemorial nine heavens, it is isolated from the outside world and is a paradise, we should not give up on it easily. But right now, we have no choice but to abandon it.”

Zheng Ling frowned: “Right now, Sacred Feather City is being restricted, if we want to escape with our citizens, there is only one way.”

Zhou Zhong agreed immediately: “That is right, we have to use the immortal killer move, heavenly wish!”

Thus, an hour later, the remaining feathermen were summoned, gathering around the arena.

“I wish — my clan’s feathermen, survive!”

“I wish — my clan’s feathermen, gain freedom!”

“I wish — my clan’s feathermen, have a place to live in the world!”

Tens of thousands of feathermen shouted, under the guidance of Zhou Zhong and Zheng Ling, the entirety of Sacred Feather City started to shine in a pure white light.

The light was a few meters tall initially, but it soon grew and reached dozens of meters.

“Lord White Sea Shatuo, the other party is making a move, aren’t we doing anything to disrupt them?” A female Gu Immortal, Tang Yang Ran, asked.

“No need to worry, I had predicted this situation already. What I want is this Immortal Gu House, they cannot take it away.” White Sea Shatuo explained as he ordered the rest of them: “Don’t stop attacking, just maintain the status quo, don’t interrupt them, let them escape.”

Northern Plains, Tai Bai blessed land.

The sky was clear like crystal, the ground was desolate.

Accompanied by Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Fang Yuan went on a tour of this high grade blessed land.

This was not the first time Fang Yuan had come to Tai Bai blessed land, but this was the first time he came alongside Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Only after a Gu Immortal placed their immortal apertures down, would they be able to enter it themselves and manipulate it personally.

Ordinarily, the immortal aperture was hidden within the Gu Immortal’s body. But when they placed the immortal aperture outside in the main world, the Gu Immortal would be inside the immortal aperture instead.

Gu Immortals and their immortal apertures were a single entity. When the immortal aperture is placed outside, the Gu Immortal cannot leave the immortal aperture and move outside.

Tai Bai blessed land was a high grade blessed land, it has a huge landmass of about four thousand seven hundred square kilometers. It had a lot of time path resources, one day in the outside world was thirty-three days inside.

Of course, after Tai Bai blessed land was placed to absorb the heaven and earth qi of the outside world, it was connected to Northern Plains. The time flow had slowed down to twelve days.

Tai Bai blessed land was well managed by Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Disregarding the float ball tea in the sky, or the jade peak bird group, there were large numbers of sky chief clouds that had flowers growing on them in the sky, sparrowhawks were flying around them.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had already started building his third source of revenue.

His first source of revenue was Landscape as Before. Repairing blessed lands for Gu Immortals, and repairing the landscape of the five regions, this was Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s greatest source of income, not only could it raise his wealth, he could also build relationships. It was essentially comparable with Fairy Li Shan’s mountain pledge Gu.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s second source of revenue was the float ball tea. Each season, Tai Bai blessed land would produce a huge quantity of float ball tea grass.

This tea grass could be sold to the market in Eastern Sea. With the help of Zombie Alliance’s Shark Demon immortal zombie, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had already entered their market. But this business had a competitive market, there was little profit. Each season’s gains was less than what Tai Bai Yun Sheng earned from helping other Gu Immortals repair their immortal apertures.

“I plan to use luck path mortal Gu as my third income source. There are more than a hundred thousand sparrowhawks that migrated here, they have wild insects on them, and large numbers of cloud path mortal Gu would be produced from these insects. But all this will depend on my upcoming earthly calamity, if I pass it successfully, and my blessed land gains cloud path dao marks, that would be best.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng described his goals and expectations to Fang Yuan.

Precisely because of this, he did not move the resources in his blessed land outside.

It was to ‘draw out’ the corresponding earthly calamity, so that after the earthly calamity, Tai Bai blessed land could gain a number of cloud path dao marks.

Fortune and disaster coexist.

Earlier, when Fang Yuan helped Hu Immortal blessed land undergo the tribulation, he moved out almost all of the precious resources. In the end, he faced a blood path earthly calamity, and Hu Immortal blessed land gained blood path dao marks.

If Fang Yuan did not move these resources away, there might have been a change, and other earthly calamities might have showed up. For example, fire path dao marks that suited the eerie fire dragon pythons, wisdom path dao marks that suited the regretful spiders, or water path dao marks that suited the dragonfish.

The addition of these dao marks was very helpful for resources related to them.

But there was a flaw in this.

When the earthly calamity strikes, these precious resources would suffer great losses.

In other words, loss now was for the benefit of the future, they were trying to gain long term profits.

Of course, heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities did not always go as one wished. This was only a possibility. There was a chance that even if Fang Yuan kept these resources, the blood poison kerria flower earthly calamity would still come, in that case, his losses would be huge.

After all, heaven’s will was unfathomable.

Right now, Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not move the resources away, he was trying to lure out the cloud path earthly calamity.

Whether he could succeed or not was unknown, Fang Yuan was unsure as well, but he consoled him: “I had already used the killer move, time assist luck, on you before the earthly calamity, who knows, you might get what you wished for.”

Speaking of which, the immortal killer move time assist luck had been modified during this period by Fang Yuan using the light of wisdom.

Right now, Fang Yuan was gradually understanding what great use wisdom Gu truly had.

Even though he could only use the light of wisdom, just that alone could push his cultivation journey ahead greatly.

“Eh?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng felt something, his expression changed: “The earthly calamity is here.”

The entirety of Tai Bai blessed land started to shake, large amounts of earth qi burst out from the ground, while small quantities of heaven qi drooped down from the sky.

There was a burst of mystical light, as from within the profound light, the wishes and prayers of countless living beings could be heard.

“I wish — my clan’s feathermen, survive!”

“I wish — my clan’s feathermen, gain freedom!”

“I wish — my clan’s feathermen, have a place to live in the world!”

The mystical light disappeared, at the western part of the blessed land, there were tens of thousands of feathermen.

“What earthly calamity is this?” Immediately, even Fang Yuan was shocked, he had never seen such a peculiar earthly calamity!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng fell into deep contemplation.

“What place is this?” A featherman Gu Immortal, Zhou Zhong, looked around with an expression of vigilance.

After using the immortal killer move heavenly wish, a strong force teleported all of the feathermen in Sacred Feather City away.

An empty Sacred Feather City was left, White Sea Shatuo had great foresight, he obtained this Immortal Gu House without wasting much effort.

Seeing that Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were flying over, the featherman Gu Immortal Zheng Ling's expression changed: "Oh no! This is a certain human Gu Immortal's blessed land! We were treated as an earthly calamity and were teleported here."

Zhou Zhong showed an expression of shock: "How can this be? Wouldn't our enemies still be Gu Immortals?"

"We are facing two rank six Gu Immortals, and one is an immortal zombie with bottom tier cultivation level. What are you afraid of?" Zheng Ling laughed loudly: "Kill them and we can obtain this small world. Just like what we wished, even though this place is inferior to the green heaven fragment world, it is enough for our tribe to live. Strike!"

Zheng Ling said this as he flew out, when he was thousands of steps away from Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Fang Yuan, he pushed with his hands.

Whoosh!

Wind blew, a solid wind wall was formed, it pushed towards Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng with an imposing aura.

This was an immortal killer move that Zheng Ling poured all his frustrations into. He was unable to do anything to White Sea Shatuo, he vented all of his frustrations towards Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Seeing the wind wall pressing at them, Fang Yuan pulled Tai Bai Yun Sheng behind him and snorted with disdain: "A pitiful trick."

Myriad Self First Style — Giant Hand!

Rumble!

The strength path giant hand pushed forth and destroyed the wind wall, then, with its remaining force, it slammed towards Zheng Ling.

Zhou Zhong and Zheng Ling's expressions changed, they looked at Fang Yuan's giant hand like they were seeing a ghost.

"What?"

"Merely a bottom tier rank six immortal zombie, he actually has rank seven battle strength!"

The two featherman Gu Immortals knew that they were facing a tough foe, Zheng Ling's expression was very bitter. If this were to be normal times, he would not be afraid of Fang Yuan.

But after an intense battle with White Sea Shatuo and the others, his battle strength had decreased by a lot.

The rank six Zhou Zhong was in an even worse condition.

"Hold on, we can talk this out. I was rash earlier and attacked, please forgive me for offending you!" Zheng Ling shouted: "We have our difficulties, we had no choice but to enter your blessed land."

He asked them to hold on, but Fang Yuan responded at lightning speed.

Not only this, he summoned five strength path giant hands and encircled them.

“Since you are here, don’t think of leaving.” Fang Yuan raised his head and laughed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 866: Scheming Against The Feathermen, Yu Fei’s Helplessness

Featherman Gu Immortal Zheng Ling had an ugly expression: “Sir, do you think we are fish on the chopping block? Why must you force us like this. It must have been tough for you to develop this blessed land, if we destroy all of these resources in battle, would it not be a waste?”

“Are you threatening us?” Fang Yuan’s red eyes shined with a ruthless light.

“Of course it is not a threat, but what we are saying is the truth, no?” Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong said.

Fang Yuan laughed internally.

If other Gu Immortals were threatened like this, they might be wary and fearful, these two featherman Gu Immortals might get their way, but they met Tai Bai Yun Sheng of all people.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s Immortal Gu, Landscape as Before, was the perfect solution against their threat.

The two featherman Gu Immortals did not know about the existence of landscape as before Immortal Gu, thus they said such words.

According to Fang Yuan’s intentions, they should kill these two featherman Gu Immortals. But this was Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s tribulation, Fang Yuan alone could not make the decision. And Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a kind old man, his nature was quite gentle and merciful.

Thus, Fang Yuan did not speak, he looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

The two featherman Gu Immortals also looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng, waiting for the person in question to respond.

The mortal feathermen gazed at the sky with looks of awe, towards the four figures in the sky.

Earlier, these mortal feathermen had heard the conversation between Fang Yuan and the featherman Gu Immortals clearly.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s decision was going to influence the fate of these tens of thousands of feathermen.

Some feathermen were already praying internally, some were gritting their teeth, some were grimacing in pain.

Yu Fei, who had just become the featherman king, clenched his fists, he stared at the sky fixedly. He was originally a commoner, he was not like Prince Dan Yu who knew a lot of secrets, this was the first time he had seen a Gu Immortal, he felt shock and at the same time, a deep sense of helplessness.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had been deep in consideration since the feathermen appeared.

A featherman calamity was something Tai Bai Yun Sheng had not expected.

These were intelligent living beings that could talk. If Tai Bai Yun Sheng let these feathermen go, this earthly calamity would be over. If he did not, they would fight inside his immortal aperture, he might be able to recruit these feathermen, but there was a huge risk of losing resources if they fought, he could not weigh the pros and cons easily.

But no matter what he chose, it was a huge decision.

Just as Fang Yuan expected, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was quite wishy-washy, even though this was a critical moment, he could not decide.

Seeing Fang Yuan gaze over, he also turned his head, seeking Fang Yuan’s opinion with his inquiring gaze.

“Of course we will battle!” Fang Yuan immediately transmitted, replying firmly.

“You have Immortal Gu Landscape as Before, you do not need to fear your immortal aperture suffering damage. The only losses are your float ball tea, sky chief clouds and other resources, these things cannot be restored using landscape as before Immortal Gu.”

“But for this tribulation, you did not move these resources out, you were prepared to suffer losses anyway.”

“Your main source of revenue is landscape as before Immortal Gu, these resources earn little profit, even if you lose them, you can start over again.”

“These feathermen number in tens of thousands, they can be turned into slaves. Feathermen are born with cloud path dao marks, they are skilled at flying, all of the feathermen elites are flying masters! But these two featherman Gu Immortals cannot be allowed to live. Even if they do not primarily cultivate cloud path, killing them would get you a good number of cloud path dao marks, they can be added to your blessed land. Isn’t that what you want?”

This was an extremely rare opportunity!

The two featherman Gu Immortals were injured, they had no ways to escape from this place.

As long as Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not open the doors, these feathermen were birds trapped in a cage.

Once he killed the two featherman Gu Immortals, their immortal apertures would fall into Tai Bai blessed land. This was an extremely rare situation.

When a Gu Immortal dies and leaves behind their immortal aperture, the immortal aperture would become an isolated blessed land and absorb heaven and earth qi from the world.

Just like earlier, after Fang Yuan took Star Lord Wan Xiang’s corpse, he purposely went into a deep part of Earth Abyss to place it down. The result was, after placing it down, the blessed land took in a huge amount of earth qi, but very little heaven qi, because of the drawing in of earth qi, it resulted in an intense tremor in Earth Abyss.

If the featherman Gu Immortals died, their immortal apertures would fall into Tai Bai blessed land, they would take in heaven and earth qi.

But Tai Bai blessed land was different from the five regions, this place was completely under Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s control, the heaven and earth qi could not be extracted without his permission.

If the immortal aperture could not turn into a separate blessed land, what would happen?

There were records of this, in such situations, the immortal aperture would be destroyed, all of the resources inside the immortal aperture would be decimated with it.

But all of the dao marks inside the immortal aperture would be left behind, fusing into the outside world.

And this outside world was Tai Bai blessed land.

As has been mentioned before, dao marks were extremely precious, because there was a huge cost to obtain them.

Even if the entire blessed land was wrecked, if Tai Bai Yun Sheng could obtain all of the dao marks of the two featherman Gu Immortals, this would definitely be a huge profit for him no matter what!

Fang Yuan secretly transmitted, adding another sentence: “Old Bai, is your kindness acting up again, you want to pass up on such a great opportunity?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression became firmer, he made up his mind, he transmitted: “Don’t worry! Feathermen are variant humans, they are not humans like us. Since that is the case, and we’re on opposing sides, let’s battle and kill them! As for these featherman captives, I will treat them kindly.”

After making up his mind, he was about to strike, but Fang Yuan secretly told him to stop: “Hold on, this is a great opportunity, how can we fight just like this? Let’s probe them first.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng knew about Fang Yuan’s craftiness, he replied: “Then I will have to trouble you.”

The conversation between these two only lasted for a moment in the real world.

Fang Yuan looked at the featherman Gu Immortals, he started his deception: “It is not that we cannot let you go, but you have to leave behind these mortal feathermen, they will become our slaves!”

The two sides spoke openly without concealing anything, Fang Yuan’s words immediately attracted an intense commotion from the tens of thousands of feathermen.

“What? He wants us to become their slaves?”

“Losing freedom is like losing our wings!”

“No, even if I die, I will not become a slave of humans!”

“Don’t worry, we have our Gu Immortal ancestors, they will not give up on us.”

“That is impossible!” The two featherman Gu Immortals had a determined expression, they immediately denied it.

Fang Yuan was not surprised.

Groups of variant humans were more united than humans. Dong Fang Chang Fan schemed against his own tribesmen for his own sake, this would be much more unlikely with variant humans.

Man is the spirit of all livings beings, they have the highest intelligence, as well as complex thoughts. Variant humans however, have lower intelligence and purer minds, they were not as wicked and scheming as humans.

Of course, this had much to do with the situation of the different races now.

Right now, humans ruled the five regions, they were the strongest. It was hard for variant humans to survive, they were ostracized and suppressed by humans, there were few variant human groups that had precious resources.

No matter which region it was, variant human slaves were sold in the market.

Among the races, humans held absolute dominance, while variant humans were definitely the weaker side.

As the weaker side, if they wanted to survive, they needed to stay united and help each other, that was the only way to withstand external pressure.

Thus, the two Gu Immortals were unwilling to give up the mortal feathermen, they had a firm attitude, this was within Fang Yuan's expectations, he could tell that they were very determined!

Fang Yuan quickly made a transmission, Tai Bai Yun Sheng showed an expression of feeling angered and offended, he repeated the words Fang Yuan transmitted to him: “Hmph! You feathermen barged into my blessed land for no reason, this is an invasion! Not only did you invade my blessed land, you attacked us and threatened us, now you want to leave? How can you not pay a price for this? Of course, you can fight your way out with these feathermen. If you are strong enough, I will treat this as my bad luck! But if that is not the case, I will make sure to take good care of you all!”

How could the two featherman Gu Immortals have such strength left?

If they did, why would they bother using words to converse with Fang Yuan?

Even though they could still use the immortal killer move heavenly wish.

But without the protection of the Immortal Gu House, Sacred Feather City, not only did heavenly wish need a huge amount of immortal essence, it also needed a lot of time to activate.

Under such a situation, it was basically impossible to replicate their act of escaping earlier.

Seeing that Fang Yuan was unwilling to relent, Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong had no choice but to emphasize on the importance of the immortal aperture again. If they really fought, both sides would lose out.

“If we avoid direct combat and focus on dealing damage to your blessed land, at some point, the blessed land would face destruction and attract the winds of assimilation, that would be a bad ending for all of us.” Zhou Zhong said with a threatening tone.

They did not know about the existence of Landscape as Before.

With Landscape as Before, wherever the blessed land got damaged, it could be fixed. It would never reach a point where the winds of assimilation are summoned.

Under Fang Yuan’s guidance, Tai Bai Yun Sheng flew into a rage: “You dare threaten me? Battle it shall be! What am I afraid of? You think I am a coward? I can take you down anytime!” He showed the demeanor of a battle maniac that could not keep his cool.

Fang Yuan showed a wary expression, but refused to relent, he wanted to negotiate more.

His actions gave the two featherman Gu Immortals hope that they could leave peacefully.

After the two sides negotiated for a long time, Zheng Ling was the first to relent, he suggested that Fang Yuan’s side could be compensated with a huge sum of immortal essence stones.

Among the two of them, Zhou Zhong was acting as the aggressive party, while Zheng Ling was acting as the peaceful party, they cooperated with much coordination.

Fang Yuan looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng, as Tai Bai Yun Sheng got the hint and rolled his eyes: How could this amount of immortal essence stones compare to tens of thousands of feathermen? Fight, fight, they could win at any time!

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng had coordination that was not inferior to the other two.

On the ground, the feathermen were in a chaotic state. They were angered and yet helpless and anguished, this was a cruel world, this was the misery of the weak.

Yu Fei shouted at the sky: “Enough! Even if we die, we will not become lowly slaves!”

The feeling of being treated as livestock while they were used as bargaining chips in a negotiation was horrible.

“Shut up! Don’t go and antagonize existences like Gu Immortals. You are the new featherman king, you have to think of the clan first. By taunting the Gu Immortals like this, are you trying to drive our clan into the abyss?” Dan Yu scolded.

“Damn it, damn it!” Yu Fei gritted his teeth, his fists were clenched as his veins surfaced, he listened to Dan Yu’s words and fell into silence.

To Yu Fei, the change in circumstances happened too quickly, and too suddenly.

He who aspired to become the featherman king had achieved his goal. But this high and mighty position that he had dreamed of, was so tiny and weak at this moment.

Gu Immortals were really too powerful compared to mortals.

No matter how hot-blooded he was, no matter how he risked his life, that gap in battle strength could not be breached.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 867: Squashing a Rank Seven Gu Immortal

Zheng Ling suggested compensating with immortal essence stones, though Tai Bai Yun Sheng rejected him, Fang Yuan pretended to think about it: “We want featherman slaves, but you are only offering immortal essence stones. This conflict cannot be resolved. How about this, let’s take a step back and decide with our strength.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s attitude was firm, he showed the attitude of a battle maniac. During the conversation, he had been taunting them by saying ‘I can take you down at any time’ several times.

If Shark Demon and the others who were familiar with Tai Bai Yun Sheng were here, they would think that this Tai Bai Yun Sheng was an imposter.

Zhou Zhong and Zheng Ling exchanged glances.

It was hard to talk to the battle maniac Tai Bai Yun Sheng, but it seemed like the immortal zombie, Fang Yuan, was in charge of the decision making.

This was not strange to the featherman Gu Immortals, after all, Fang Yuan showed rank seven battle strength earlier.

The two communicated secretly, they both felt that: Fang Yuan was much easier to talk to than Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he was more reasonable.

“The other party is an immortal zombie, his immortal aperture cannot produce immortal essence, that’s why he has a careful nature. We have to make use of this trait. But this blessed land belongs that that damned old man.”

“This old man has quite a fiery temper at this age, it seems his battle strength cannot be underestimated, be vigilant!”

“Forget it, the situation is in their favor now, let’s listen to what the immortal zombie has to suggest.”

The two featherman Gu Immortals analyzed this situation, it seemed to them that it was a reasonable understanding of it.

But what they did not know was that they had fallen into the trap that Fang Yuan had specially made for them.

“Please speak.” After discussing, Zhou Zhong said to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan spoke: “In the world of Gu Immortals, benefits are the most important thing, it is decided by battle strength. We will hold ten duels, for every duel we win, you will split ten percent of the feathermen to us, but for each that we lose, we will accept only a sum of immortal essence stones as compensation.”

Zhou Zhong was unwilling, he shouted: “Be it winning or losing, you are benefiting from it!”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly and did not reply.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng started howling: “Why are you complaining? If you don’t want this, let’s fight! My fists are itching to hit something, I can take you down at any time! If you dare to destroy my immortal aperture, I will slaughter these mortal feathermen first, in the worst case, we go down together, who is afraid of who?”

He showed the perfect example of a brainless battle maniac.

Zhou Zhong and Zheng Ling ignored him completely, showing an expression of not wanting to stoop to his level of intelligence.

The two started to discuss their decisions using transmissions.

Fang Yuan pressured them at the right timing: “If you do not agree to this, we will have to battle.”

These words made the the hearts of these two feathermen immortals jump.

They understood clearly that in the current situation, sacrifice was unavoidable, the most logical decision was to minimize their losses.

Eventually, Zheng Ling nodded, agreeing to the duels. But he had a precondition, they had to use the information path immortal killer move that they had to form an agreement, similar to mountain pledge Gu, as the restriction on both parties.

Regardless of the result, after ten duels, Fang Yuan’s side was not to cause problems for the feathermen, they had to open the door and let everyone else leave, without any form of obstruction.

The feathermen actually had such an information path killer move, their foundation was quite deep, Fang Yuan was fairly surprised.

To start things off, the Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong entered the stage for the first duel.

On Fang Yuan’s side, Tai Bai Yun Sheng went to battle, he was oozing with battle intent as he showed a bloodthirsty expression, he shouted: “Come, I will take you down in just a moment!”

Zhou Zhong really was fooled by his demeanor, after all, he was only a variant human, their intelligence was inferior to humans.

Most importantly, Zhou Zhong had his reservations, he did not want to sacrifice his clansmen.

He did not want any feathermen to lose their freedom and become the slaves of humans. Thus, he chose his specialty for the duel.

“What, you want to compete in flying speed alone?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was shocked.

“According to the agreement, we are the first to decide what type of duel it is, are you going back on your words?”

“Hmph, I will let you decide this time!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng showed an upset and irritated expression.

The result of this duel was obvious.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng only had a mortal killer move for flying. The other party not only had wings, they even had an immortal killer move specially used for movement.

After seeing the results, the feathermen on the ground erupted into loud cheers.

After all, their freedom was at stake, they could have became slaves, they were very nervous when they watched the duel.

“Here are your immortal essence stones.” Zhou Zhong laughed loudly, he handed the dozen immortal essence stones to Tai Bai Yun Sheng in a proud manner.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng received them with a gloomy expression, but he was filled with admiration towards Fang Yuan: “Fang Yuan is truly good at scheming. The other party paid immortal essence stones but they are acting like this was a huge victory for them. I am inferior to him!”

In the first duel, Fang Yuan lost.

Fang Yuan went for the second duel, because he had rank seven battle strength, the featherman Gu Immortals did not dare to be careless, they sent the stronger Gu Immortal Zheng Ling to duel him.

Fang Yuan suggested: “We will compete using speed.”

Zheng Ling’s expression froze for a second before he agreed.

Fang Yuan lost this duel very quickly as well.

Zheng Ling also had an immortal killer move, his speed was twice as fast as that of Zhou Zhong.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan had three pairs of true solid bat wings, they were all desolate beast wings. But in this duel, he did not manage to activate the iron crown eagle strength Immortal Gu at all, thus he had no hopes of winning.

Third duel, fourth duel, fifth duel...

Duels after duels, Fang Yuan’s side had no victories, while the featherman Gu Immortals were winning with zero losses, the results were one-sided.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression became uglier in the process.

The two featherman Gu Immortals had confident and lax expressions. They were starting to realize that their enemies were all bark and no bite, they were just putting up a front.

For example, the immortal zombie Fang Yuan was only rank seven in terms of attack. He only had mortal killer moves for defense, along with his immortal zombie body’s defense. In terms of healing, he only had the basic recovery ability of an immortal zombie. As for movement and investigative methods, he did not have immortal killer moves.

Meanwhile, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was very rash and haughty, but in terms of battle strength, he was a mess. He only used mortal killer moves.

The two featherman Gu Immortals felt like they had been scammed!

“It turns out that these two are so weak, if we had known this, we would’ve fought from the start.”

“Sigh, humans are the most skilled at scheming. We have already used the information path immortal killer move and restricted ourselves, we can only leave this place and cannot attack.”

“Thinking about it, we were too stunned by the earlier human Gu Immortal invaders. Due to the foundation of our Sacred Feather City, we are superior to most human Gu Immortals. The two of them are quite impressive, but they are not our match at all.”

Like this, the two featherman Gu Immortals won nine rounds, only the last duel was left.

No matter what happened in this duel, after it ended, Fang Yuan's side would not be able to obstruct the feathermen due to the agreement, he had to let them leave.

On the ground, cheers of victory were already resounding.

The new featherman king, Yu Fei, had a better expression now. His eyes were shining brightly as he looked at the two Gu Immortals of the featherman clan, he had another grand ambition now.

“I've decided! As long as I become a Gu Immortal, I would become a true man. I must become a Gu Immortal, even if I need to give up being king, I will become a Gu Immortal!!”

Fang Yuan took a step forward as his voice turned very cold: “This is the final duel, all four of us will fight in a battle of attack and defense. I will attack and you will defend for the first round, and you will attack while I defend for the following round. Our partner can only use healing methods, when one side is unable to continue, they will lose.”

Zhou Zhong and Zheng Ling exchanged glances, they frowned as they realized something amiss.

Fang Yuan was making the dueling rules to complete display their advantage. Meanwhile, Zheng Ling and Zhou Zhong could not object to this duel request, they could only accept it.

“In this case, the tenth duel is the hardest one of all.”

“This is the final round, after we win, we will be able to protect all of the feathermen and leave safely!”

The two Gu Immortal conversed mentally as they went forth to battle.

“Sir, please attack.” Zheng Ling took a step forward, saying.

Fang Yuan did not speak, he was a thousand steps away from Zheng Ling, he grabbed towards the other party.

Rumble!

A strength path giant hand tore through space and grabbed at Zheng Ling fiercely.

Zheng Ling suppressed his instinct to dodge, he activated his defensive killer move as a suit of armor made of light appeared on his body.

The armor looked very real, it blocked the strength path giant hand.

Fang Yuan's expression did not change, he had already seen this armor made of light in the fourth duel, it was a light path defensive immortal killer move.

“Blocked!” Zhou Zhong shouted happily: “It is time for us to strike!”

Fang Yuan scoffed: “Sir, are you forming a conclusion so quickly? My attack is not an instantaneous type, but a sustained attack, I have not ended my attack yet.”

“It is okay, sir can continue attacking.” Zheng Ling said in a low voice. In the duels earlier, Fang Yuan had attacked as well, Zheng Ling felt that he could block myriad self giant hand completely.

But at the next moment, Fang Yuan showed a ruthless smile as Zheng Ling's expression changed.

Earlier, Fang Yuan had been hiding his strength, only using one core Immortal Gu. Now, he used all of his core Immortal Gu at once.

The strength path giant hand was breaking the light path defensive method, as creaking sounds could be heard.

“Oh no, at this rate, Lord Zheng Ling will become meat paste.” Zhou Zhong was shocked.

“Zheng Ling, consider it well, my giant hand is only an attack, it cannot restrict your movement. But if you break out of it now, you will be breaking our agreement. In that case, you will be violating our earlier agreement, and the duels will be voided.” Fang Yuan scoffed.

“Damn it! I’ll go all out!!” Zheng Ling shouted angrily, he activated another defensive killer move, it was an immortal killer move!

Two immortal killer moves stacked together, blocking the strength path giant hand.

At this point, both parties fell into a deadlock again.

“Indeed, he is just a rank six immortal zombie, how can he fight a drawn out battle with Lord Zheng Ling?” Zhou Zhong calmed down.

But a moment later, Fang Yuan was still full of vigor, while Zheng Ling was starting to get anxious, he was unable to hold on.

“Oh no! The other party must be using our immortal essence stones and converting it into immortal essence! In contrast, we have lost a lot of our foundation after an intense battle, so we are the first to run out of immortal essence!”

Realizing the reason, Zhou Zhong felt an immense anger and melancholy, it was hard to describe with words.

At the same time, he started to fluster: “What shall we do now? If I want to help him, I can only use healing methods, otherwise, we would be violating the duel agreement, and the earlier duels would be voided!”

He was there physically, but he felt like he was miles away, Zhou Zhong was helpless. The trap that Fang Yuan had created painstakingly was taking effect.

At times, your former achievements would be the greatest obstacle for you to achieve greater success!

If they won this round, they would obtain complete victory!

They would save all of the feathermen and bring them to safety!

They were one duel away, just one duel. If they violated the rules, all of it would be nullified.

This mentality made Zheng Ling choose to continue holding on, and Zhou Zhong was full of sweat and worried, but he could not interfere.

“It is over.” Fang Yuan laughed loudly, seven other strength path giant hands flew out.

The strength path giant hands slammed at the feathermen on the ground with overwhelming force.

“What are you doing?!” Zhou Zhong howled, he was like a furious dragon whose scales were plucked.

“Don’t fall into his trap, he is trying to lure you into attacking so that you will break the rules. The other part is at his wits’ end, we need to continue enduring.” Zheng Ling shouted.

Zhou Zhong was stunned, his gaze towards Fang Yuan changed: “Aren’t immortal zombie slow in cognition? Why is this guy so scheming!”

While he was stunned, Fang Yuan approached Zheng Ling and spat at him.

Immortal killer move — Poison Spit!

This was a modified immortal killer move that originated from harboring malicious heart, using woman’s heart Immortal Gu as the core. Since Fang Yuan had obtained it, he had been keeping it secret, this was the first time he was using it.

Zheng Ling was caught off guard, he was poisoned by this immediately.

He had a method to heal himself, of course, but at this moment, his mind was distracted and he reacted a moment more slowly, by the time he was going to detoxify himself, the poison was already very deep.

The moment of life and death was often decided in an instant.

“Unscrupulous...” Zheng Ling stared at Fang Yuan fixedly, this was his last word.

With a loud thud, he lost control and was squashed into meat paste by the strength path giant hands.

“Lord Zheng Ling!!!” Zhou Zhong screamed in fury.

Everything happened too quickly, by the time Zhou Zhong reacted, it was too late. He did not have an Immortal Gu like Man as Before.

Fang Yuan attacked Zhou Zhong with his other strength path giant hands.

“You cannot defend, attack or dodge. Don’t forget, according to this duel’s rules, you can only use healing methods.” Fang Yuan shouted.

Zhou Zhong heard this and his eyes almost popped out, he was going to spit out blood from anger!

How would he fight like that?!

He would have to retaliate, dodge, or defend himself, but all those violated the rules, it would nullify all of their past wins!

On his side, the one in charge of attacking and defending, Zheng Ling, was dead, he could only use healing methods now.

But once the strength path giant hands grabbed him, he would be killed on the spot, no healing techniques were going to save him.

Even if Fang Yuan could not kill him and he could heal himself, he could not retaliate, that was against the rules, Fang Yuan was assured to win!

This was truly bullying the feathermen!!

At this moment, looking at Zhou Zhong’s dazed expression, even Tai Bai Yun Sheng showed a look of pity and sympathy.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 868: Gu Immortal Slave

At the moment between life and death, the remaining Gu Immortal, Zhou Zhong, had a burst of inspiration, he realized the most direct way to change the current situation.

“I admit defeat!” He shouted.

Fang Yuan’s attacks came to a stop.

Zhou Zhong was breathing roughly, in just a moment, he was drenched in sweat.

The tens of thousands of feathermen on the ground reacted after a while, they shouted in shock.

In just moments, the rank seven Gu Immortal of the feathermen died, and Zhou Zhong had no choice but to admit defeat!

Fang Yuan’s meticulous plotting showed its ruthless effect, the feathermen paired a heavy price, they lost terribly.

This was a completely different situation from earlier, the difference was like of heaven and earth, it was no wonder that the feathermen were shocked.

Zhou Zhong’s expression was pale, he felt some trepidation internally as he spoke: “I lost, according to the agreement, the ten duels are over, we are going to leave this place.”

His gaze towards Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng was filled with deep hatred and anger.

The other party killed the featherman Gu Immortal Zheng Ling, but now, Zhou Zhong had insufficient strength, he could not exact revenge.

How could he take revenge?

If Zheng Ling was still alive, if he collaborated with Zhou Zhong, they would definitely suppress Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

This was the truth.

Zheng Ling and Zhou Zhong had very deep foundations, out of Fang Yuan’s expectations. They might not have many Immortal Gu, but they had deduced many immortal killer moves. These immortal killer moves encompassed attack, defense, movement, healing, and investigation, they did not have any apparent shortfalls.

In contrast, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng used mostly mortal killer moves. If they really fought, it would be hard for them to gain any advantage as they would be inferior in these aspects.

Of course, this was Tai Bai blessed land, Fang Yuan’s side had the territorial advantage.

But do not forget, blessed lands could not restrict Immortal Gu and immortal killer moves.

Thus, Zhou Zhong could only suppress his anger as well as the desire to take revenge, he decided to not settle the score with Fang Yuan for now, the urgent matter now was to escape and find a new place to live with his clansmen.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng could not stop him from making that request.

The reason was simple.

They had used the information path immortal killer move earlier.

Once Fang Yuan’s side did something that violates the agreement, they would face a harsh backlash, they would die on the spot.

Fang Yuan was not like Fairy Li Shan, he did not have a time path killer move like ‘delay’ with him.

Thus, he could not break the agreement.

In fact, Zhou Zhong was very conscious of this, he was hoping that Fang Yuan would violate the agreement.

If that happens, the enemies would be wiped out, and this blessed land would become the feathermen’s property. Regarding the condition for ownership from Tai Bai land spirit, that would be something to think about later.

Of course, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng could not attack, they also could not summon outsiders like Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan to interfere.

Even though the feathermen did not have the intelligence of humans, such an obvious loophole would still be handled.

If Fang Yuan summoned reinforcements, he would be violating the agreement, he would die.

“Indeed, the ten duels have ended, according to our earlier agreement, we have to open the doors and let the remaining feathermen leave.” Fang Yuan nodded, saying to Zhou Zhong: “Don’t worry, we won’t go back on our words.”

“Good.” Zhou Zhong let out a breath of cloudy air, he felt much regret towards Fang Yuan’s act of keeping his word.

“But...” Fang Yuan’s words shifted.

“But what?” Zhou Zhong looked at him nervously.

Fang Yuan laughed lightly: “We won the tenth duel, according to the rules, I can choose slaves from among the feathermen on the ground, and the rest will be allowed to leave.”

Zhou Zhong sighed, he looked at the clansmen on the ground, feeling very complicated, his fingers were stabbing into his flesh.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng descended as they started picking slaves from among these feathermen.

The feathermen were flustered, they were afraid of getting chosen.

“Don’t move, let me choose properly.” Fang Yuan purposely shouted.

The feathermen were even more fearful now, they were like chicks in front of an eagle.

“Mm, this girl is not bad.” Fang Yuan pretended to think about it, he beckoned with his finger as a young girl was restrained by a formless force, pulled towards him from the featherman group.

“No, I don’t want to!” The featherman girl’s eyes oozed with tears of helplessness.

“Let go of my fiancée!!” A young featherman charged up before any of the feathermen could stop him.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with a ruthless light, he snorted: “Courting death.”

He did not make any evident movements, but the featherman youngster, who was merely a rank two Gu Master, froze in the air as he was flying, his face distorted as his body went into spasms.

At the next moment, he fell onto the ground.

Even though he was caught by the surrounding feathermen, blood was running rampant in his entire body, his seven orifices were bursting with blood, he was going to die.

“What did you do?!” Zhou Zhong was furious, he landed on the ground and pressed on the featherman youngster’s chest, healing him personally.

The featherman youngster was hit by Fang Yuan’s blood path methods, his blood ran wild and spurt outside.

But with Zhou Zhong’s suppression, the attack was resolved and the featherman youngster’s life was saved.

Zhou Zhong raised his head and looked at Fang Yuan, his expression was dark: “Sir, you attacked a mortal, that is insulting to the status of a Gu Immortal. And I remember that in the agreement, you are not to freely attack or kill our feathermen!”

Fang Yuan shrugged: “Gu Immortals have their status, but even more than that, their authority is not to be offended. I did not violate the agreement, he was the one who had intentions to attack me. It is stated in the agreement clearly that if the mortal feathermen attempt to attack me, I have the rights to kill them. Isn’t that right?”

Zhou Zhong could not reply to this.

In terms of playing around rules, Fang Yuan was much stronger than him.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Don’t worry, I will not violate the agreement.”

Zhou Zhong gritted his teeth, his eyes were spewing fire.

“Then I will choose you as my next slave, Zhou Zhong.” Suddenly, Fang Yuan pointed at Zhou Zhong, he showed a smile, like his scheme had succeeded.

“What, what did you say?!” At this moment, Zhou Zhong almost thought that he was hearing things.

He wanted a Gu Immortal to become his slave?

How could this be possible?!

Zhou Zhong looked at Fang Yuan in disbelief, did the other party go crazy?

Fang Yuan said with a smile: “Zhou Zhong, did you forget? Our agreement was, as long as my side wins, I can choose a portion of these feathermen on the ground and make them into my slaves.”

Fang Yuan placed an emphasis on the words ‘on the ground’.

Zhou Zhong felt like a thunderbolt had struck him, he was stunned on the spot, not moving at all.

The surrounding feathermen were no longer flustered and jumping around, they were frozen like statues, staring at their Gu Immortal, staring at his feet.

Zhou Zhong was stepping on the ground!

At this moment, Zhou Zhong’s expression was very interesting, it turned from pale as paper to dark and solemn.

His wings fluttered subconsciously, he wanted to raise his legs as if the floor was lava, it was burning his legs.

“Hehehe.” Fang Yuan laughed in a monstrous manner, a crafty light was shining in his red eyes: “The moment you stepped on the ground, you became my slave. Zhou Zhong, even if you fly now, it is too late!”

Zhou Zhong shouted at Fang Yuan: “This is a trap! This is an evil plot!!”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, he showed a look of smugness and shamelessness: “That is right, this is a trap, this is an evil plot. Unfortunately, you fell for it.”

Beside him, Tai Bai Yun Sheng sighed: “You can only blame yourselves for neglecting your own bodies. Indeed, the authority of Gu Immortals cannot be offended, it is rare for slaves to be Gu Immortals. When we set the agreement, you were both flying in the air, away from the ground, thus you did not notice this trap. Of course, if you realized it and did not step on the ground, there was also nothing we could do. But you had a guilty conscience, you wanted to sacrifice a portion of the feathermen and let them become slaves so as to obtain freedom for you and the rest of the feathermen.”

“Cough, cough.” Fang Yuan coughed: “Old Bai, even if he did not land on the ground, I still have my ways. We can pick our slaves slowly, we can take a year or two and directly cripple the feathermen. They need food and water to survive, but Tai Bai blessed land is yours, due to the agreement, they cannot inflict any damage on the blessed land, as long as we do not pick our slaves, they will be prisoners inside the blessed land.”

This time, even Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked at Fang Yuan with shock.

Zhou Zhong opened his mouth wide, at this moment, he felt that he was simply too foolish and naive!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 869: Freedom of the Feathermen

The whole area was covered in deathly silence.

Sorrow, fear and loss shrouded the hearts of all the feathermen.

Zhou Zhong was the only Gu Immortal remaining among the feathermen. If even he was no longer there, and became a slave of humans, how would these remaining feathermen survive?

The current five regions, or rather, the whole world, could be said to belong to humans.

The space for variant humans to survive was very small, and this already small space continued to shrink.

Zhou Zhong’s mouth, wide open from shock, slowly closed. He looked up at Fang Yuan, as if he was looking at a monster, and asked: “Is your immortal zombie appearance fake? How can an immortal zombie scheme all this?”

Fang Yuan was slightly dazed, not having expected Zhou Zhong to suddenly calm down.

He immediately had a bad feeling.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng who was beside him, spoke with compassion: “Give up, Zhou Zhong. Even if you become a slave, I can promise that you will never be treated unfairly, I will also not limit your freedom during normal times. I will only ask for your service during critical times. Let these feathermen behind you live in my blessed land from now on. Rest assured, I will not be harsh on them or maltreat them. I will also pay corresponding rewards for their work. Sigh...”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng heaved a sigh, his benevolent nature had emerged again.

However, Zhou Zhong shook his head slightly three times.

The smile on the corners of Fang Yuan’s lips disappeared as his expression turned grave.

Afterwards, he saw that the Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong suddenly turned around towards the large group of feathermen, and gave a deep bow.

“Everyone.” Zhou Zhong’s tone was extremely calm, but it revealed a decisive intent. His voice was not loud, but it resounded in everyone’s ears.

“I have done all of you a disservice, this world only has the Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong, the featherman Zhou Zhong, but there will absolutely not be a slave Zhou Zhong. It was truly a shame that I could not protect you all. Goodbye!”

He then suddenly spread his wings.

The wings of feathermen were not wide like eagle wings or thick like vulture wings, but were slender and exquisite.

“Zhou Zhong, what is the point of this? Stop quickly!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was shocked, and wanted to stop him.

But how could he stop a Gu Immortal who was seeking death of his own accord?

Zhou Zhong suddenly flapped his wings and flew towards the sky!

While flying towards the sky, he shouted: “I, Zhou Zhong!”

“Am a featherman!!”

“I will not become a slave!!!”

At this moment, everyone’s gazes were gathered on him.

He violated the agreement.

He stepped on the ground and was successfully trapped by Fang Yuan, becoming a slave.

However, Zhou Zhong was not willing and went against the agreement on his own initiative.

The information path immortal killer move on him erupted, the intense backlash that he could not endure assaulted Zhou Zhong’s entire body.

The more Zhou Zhong flew, the slower he became, his two wings were also becoming difficult to move.

Right now, his appearance of flying in the sky was like that of an old man who was approaching death and stumbling on his legs but still kept on climbing towards a precipitous peak.

His whole body started crystallizing rapidly, and soon he turned into a transparent glass crystal statue.

His two wings turned into crystal glass like objects, moving no longer.

However, his eyes were still gazing at the blue sky, not even sparing a glance at Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, the gaze carrying endless bravery and decisiveness.

He then started to slowly fall down to the ground.

His whole body started to crumble apart while falling.

First his head, then his chest, his wings, stomach, then his legs.

Before landing on the ground, he had already turned into a sheet of broken glass, and crystal fragments.

There was no wind in Tai Bai blessed land.

These crystal glass fragments, however, seemed to flutter, the more they fluttered, the more they crumbled, they continued to break apart until they disintegrated in the air.

“Zhou Zhong...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng mumbled in a daze.

“Indeed... this guy.” Fang Yuan’s expression was dark.

He did not make Tai Bai Yun Sheng revive Zhou Zhong. One who was not afraid of even death and was not willing to be a slave, simply had no value.

Moreover, Zhou Zhong was a Gu Immortal, the immortal essence needed to revive him would not be low.

Even if he was revived, his Immortal Gu were already gone, and Tai Bai Yun Sheng also would not be able to absorb his immortal aperture. On the contrary, it was better to let him die. His immortal aperture would be unable to absorb heaven and earth qi, the blessed land would break apart. After breaking up, all the dao marks of Zhou Zhong in the immortal aperture would be added to Tai Bai blessed land.

Zhou Zhong’s death caused all the feathermen to fall into silence.

The silence only lasted for a while, before the new featherman king, Yu Fei, shouted loudly: “I, Yu Fei, also am not willing to be a slave. Everybody, have you still not realized it? These two human Gu Immortals are demons, they had already planned to catch us all. They absolutely won’t let us go. All of you, choose a new featherman king. I will follow old ancestor Zhou Zhong and take my leave first! ”

After saying that, he suicided on the spot!

“Our king!” The feathermen roused, shouting in such fury that their voices shook the surrounding areas.

“Right, there are no slave feathermen in this world, there are only free feathermen.”

“Even if I die, I am free.”

“As long as our hearts beat for freedom, there will not be any slave feathermen.”

“Take our corpses as your slaves.”

The feathermen shouted, howled, muttered or ridiculed. Zhou Zhong and Yu Fei’s actions inspired the feathermen, unexpectedly, they all chose to suicide!

“Damn it, are you still not stopping them? A bunch of mortals, hmph! Tai Bai Yun Sheng, quickly use Man as Before, we cannot forgo this wealth. We will make them unable to die even if they want to.” Fang Yuan snorted.

However, Tai Bai Yun Sheng showed no signs of movement.

“Tai Bai Yun Sheng, what are you doing?” Fang Yuan turned around, and was immediately shocked.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s face was filled with struggle and hesitation, he said to Fang Yuan with difficulty: “Fang Yuan, there are two voices shouting in my head right now. One voice tells me to be logical and raise these feathermen as slaves. The other voice, however, is shouting loudly for me to give up, these feathermen are true feathermen, they cannot be disgraced, even feeling sympathy for them is a humiliation towards them!”

As he said this, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s eyes were unexpectedly glistening with tears!

“Damn it!” An eerie light imperceptibly flashed past Fang Yuan’s eyes without anyone noticing.

If these feathermen were raised as slaves, it would be a great help to Fang Yuan’s plans in Western Desert as well. But at this crucial moment, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s heart actually softened.

Fang Yuan could not help but shout furiously in his mind: ‘This fool, I can’t scheme with him!!’

As he said this internally, he suddenly grabbed Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s shoulder with his monstrous arm.

The words that came from his mouth, however, were very different: “Let it be, Old Bai, you are correct. These feathermen are the true feathermen from <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, you don’t need to hesitate, you can let them die for freedom.”

“Fang Yuan...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression immediately relaxed as he looked gratefully at the immortal zombie before him, and said with some shame: “It was not easy for you to think of this plan, but in the end, because of me...”

Fang Yuan interrupted him: “Don’t mention it. Everyone has their own principles. Although I don’t approve of it, I can understand it. I will support you.”

“Fang Yuan!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s voice was choked with emotions, and he almost teared up.

Fang Yuan spoke in a profound voice: “Do you know why those two featherman Gu Immortals fell to my scheme? Hehe, do you remember that I obtained the wisdom path inheritance from Dong Fang Chang Fan?”

“You mean?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng stared blankly.

Fang Yuan sighed: “Wisdom path methods are indeed incredibly hard to defend against effectively. Fortunately, there have always been very few wisdom path Gu Immortals. I now have a complete wisdom path inheritance, we must not fail to take measures against such methods. Old Bai, although you passed the earthly calamity, don’t be in a hurry to go to Eastern Sea. I will use some wisdom path methods on you to deal with other wisdom path Gu Immortals.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was extremely moved, bowing at Fang Yuan: “Then I shall trouble you!”

“Haha, we are family, there is no need for thanks.” Fang Yuan dismissed it indifferently, his gaze once again landing on the ground.

In just a few moments, all the feathermen on the ground had suicided, there was not even one who wanted to remain alive!

Fang Yuan momentarily showed a slightly moved expression.

The feathermen seeking death of their own accord made him recall a person in the depths of his memories.

In fact, this person was also a featherman.

When Fang Yuan was still a mortal Gu Master in his previous life, this featherman, who was an assassin, tried to kill Fang Yuan multiple times.

One who understands you even more than friends is often your enemy.

Fang Yuan remembered that one time during a difficult battle, he had discovered the secret of this strong assassin who repeatedly tried to kill him. This assassin was not a human, but a featherman!

“You are a featherman? Your wings have been cut off? That is so sad.” Fang Yuan used a verbal attack.

“Hehehe, I myself cut off this pair of wings.” The featherman assassin laughed sinisterly: “Do you want to know why?”

Fang Yuan’s expression slightly changed: “Why?”

“Hmm, because the featherman village’s chief always praised me, saying I am a featherman genius that came by once in a hundred years, the pillar of the featherman village, a flying quasi-grandmaster and what not. It was truly annoying! The chief always warned me that I am a featherman and I am part of the village. I wanted to leave the village to see the world, not only did the chief dissuade me, even all the feathermen in the village stopped me. Hmph, I know they were afraid I would reveal the location of the village and attract human slave hunters. So, one day, I could not withstand it any longer and cut off my wings. Then on that very day, I killed all the feathermen in the village.” As he said this, this featherman assassin’s expression was one of pride, he smiled lightly.

“What?!” Fang Yuan was shocked.

The featherman assassin shrugged indifferently: “You have read <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, right? Feathermen believe in freedom. My heart for freedom only happened to be dozens of times more vigorous than ordinary feathermen. My featherman identity bound me, so I cut off my wings. The village I grew up in and the villagers constrained me, so I killed them. Because in this world, no one can restrict my freedom.”

Fang Yuan’s expression immediately turned heavy and he was on full alert. Back then, he had yet to tread on the demonic path, immediately he shouted: “You lunatic!”

“Hahaha.” The featherman assassin laughed loudly: “Thanks for the compliment!”

He added: “Actually, you and I are of the same kind.”

“Who the hell is the same kind as you?!” Fang Yuan’s young face showed a furious expression, as he shouted and pounced forward to fight.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 870: Freedom Gu

> states, Ren Zu walked on his own road of life. After separating with the hairy man leader, he encountered feathermen in green heaven.

Ren Zu was extremely happy when he saw these feathermen.

Because feathermen had wings on their back, and since the feathermen could understand Ren Zu’s words, both sides could communicate.

Ren Zu requested the feathermen: “Feathermen, please help me. My daughter is in ordinary abyss and cannot come out. Please fly down and rescue my daughter, let us father and daughter reunite.”

The feathermen laughed loudly: “Human, how can you order us. Us feathermen are the most free living beings in the world, no one can order us or bind us. You want us to listen to your request and follow your wish, that is impossible.”

Ren Zu kept on persuading, and even pleaded with them, but the feathermen simply kept on flying in the air, enjoying the pleasure of freedom.

Ren Zu’s mouth had already dried, but the feathermen only treated him as a clown, ridiculing Ren Zu as if they were looking at a joke.

“Oh look, such a pitiful human.”

“So what if he is the life form with the most intelligence in the world?”

“He doesn’t have wings and can only walk on the ground, he is so pitiful. Fortunately, I am not a human, but a featherman. See how vigorously I can fly.”

...

In Ren Zu’s heart of loneliness, self Gu started getting angrier as it heard these words, finally it could not hold the anger back and jumped out.

“All of you, come down.” Self Gu displayed its might, capturing all the feathermen in the sky at once.

Ren Zu could not help but become greatly startled at this: “Self Gu, when did you become so strong?”

Self Gu said proudly: “It is only natural. I took a bite out of strength Gu, now that I have my own strength, I possess immense might. Moreover, there is no need to pay any price to use this strength. Human, you need to know: what is most reliable is your own strength. And without strength, freedom is just an illusion.”

The feathermen were captured and could no longer fly to the sky, pressed onto the ground without being able to move.

They began to throw curses at Ren Zu and self Gu in anger.

Ren Zu heaved a sigh: “Feathermen, I did not mean to offend you. Please forgive my rudeness. I only want to ask you to save my daughter. When I reunite with her, I will definitely reward you.”

“Impossible! We feathermen are the most free!”

“Even if our bodies lose freedom, our hearts are still free.”

“Right, right!”

“Cruel human, you can’t impose your will on any featherman.”

The feathermen kept on shouting without any intention to compromise.

Ren Zu persuaded them for three days and three nights, but it was in vain. Helpless, he could only let go of these feathermen.

Self Gu spoke bitterly: “Human, how could you release them so easily? Don’t you want to rescue your fourth child?”

Ren Zu, however, replied confidently: “I have already understood that these feathermen cannot be forced. After these days of contact with the feathermen, I have found these feathermen might be free but they don’t have dens to shelter themselves from wind and rain, and they also don’t have enough food to fill their stomachs. To make them help, I have to make them do it willingly!”

Thereupon, Ren Zu built a house near the feathermen. Every day, he relied on self Gu to gather a lot of wild fruits and hunt many beasts.

The feathermen soon discovered the safety and warmth of the house. Especially during the days of storms, the feathermen could only hide in groves of trees, shivering and starving. While Ren Zu stayed within his house, enjoying the warmth of a fireplace and sumptuous food.

On one cold night, some feathermen quietly moved under the roof of Ren Zu’s house, to evade the wind and snow, while also greedily absorbing the warmth leaking out from the crack in the door.

Ren Zu wore the mask of attitude Gu and opened the door, using an extremely warm attitude to invite these feathermen into the house, and to enjoy the warmth and food with him.

As this repeated several times, more and more feathermen came into Ren Zu’s house.

Ren Zu was very hospitable and would entertain the feathermen every day, even giving the area near the fireplace to the feathermen. No matter how much the feathermen ate, he let them eat without restraint.

The feathermen gradually became accustomed to living this way, until one day, Ren Zu saw the timing was ripe and took off attitude Gu, revealing his true, cold expression.

He shut the door of the house and stored all the food as well, no longer supplying them to the feathermen for free.

The feathermen were caught off-guard and were frantic.

They were already used to the safety and warmth of the house, they were used to plentiful food, they rarely flew now and hunted even less. Their stockpile of food was extremely small. Many feathermen were fat to the extent they could not fly.

The feathermen had no way to deal with Ren Zu’s behavior. They could not beat Ren Zu, who possessed self Gu.

Soon, all the feathermen reached a situation where they would die from hunger or the cold.

Several days later, many feathermen died.

Ren Zu waited and waited until he became extremely anxious, as the feathermen showed no signs of coming to terms with him.

In the end, when most of the feathermen died, Ren Zu could not help but mention the old matter again: “Feathermen, as long as you move your wings to fly to ordinary abyss and rescue my daughter, I will give you enough food and also warm houses.”

However, the remaining feathermen still shook their heads.

Eventually, they all died.

From these feathermen’s corpses, many small creatures flew out. They looked like tiny specks of light, shining with all kinds of colors. Ren Zu tried to grab them, but was not able to.

“It is no use.” Cognition Gu informed him at this moment: “Wild freedom Gu cannot be caught. These feathermen chased after freedom since their birth, but it is a pity that only after their death could they find freedom.”

Central Continent, Hu Immortal blessed land, Dang Hun palace.

Fang Yuan slowly withdrew his monstrous arm, the featherman Gu Immortal Zheng Ling’s soul, however, was extremely listless as it weakly floated in the air.

Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong had violated the agreement, thus his soul was already extinguished.

As for Zheng Ling, who had died first, because he had only been attacked by Fang Yuan with poison path and strength path killer moves, only his body had perished and his soul had been preserved.

Fang Yuan had secretly stored his soul into his immortal aperture on the spot.

Since ancient times, soul path, wisdom path and enslavement path were closely related. Since Fang Yuan had obtained Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance, he also gained some comprehension of the other paths, as such his attainment in soul path and enslavement path had also increased by a bit.

Most of all, Fang Yuan had used the light of wisdom to repeatedly improve the immortal killer move myriad self, not only adding a few core Immortal Gu one after another, but also adding many soul path mortal Gu.

This coordination made it so that when the giant hand killed the enemy, the injured soul would be captured by Fang Yuan.

If others did not pay attention, they would think Fang Yuan had destroyed the soul as well.

But in fact, Fang Yuan secretly captured the soul.

Even Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not sense this as he did not have an immortal level investigative killer move.

Fang Yuan also did not inform him.

The value of a Gu Immortal’s soul was far higher than a Gu Immortal’s will or mortal souls.

Fang Yuan had just ended his first soul search.

From this soul search, he learned the origin of this group of feathermen.

“They are a featherman clan in Western Desert, living for generations in a fragment world of green heaven. No wonder they have such ancient customs, even suiciding rather than lowering their heads to become slaves. A life of peace with plentiful resources, a united clan without any powerful external enemies, this instead corroded the minds of these feathermen.”

“White Sea Shatuo... who is this person?”

“He was able to gather so many people to siege Sacred Feather City. Moreover, he was using such superior means that are beyond imagination. They could actually restrict an Immortal Gu House, causing the feathermen to flee in desperation!”

Fang Yuan rummaged through his mind, but could not find any information about White Sea Shatuo.

In the end, Fang Yuan could only sigh: “Western Desert is also a place hiding dragons and tigers.”

In conclusion, the benefits from this tribulation in Tai Bai blessed land were huge.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng received all the dao marks of the two featherman Gu Immortals, a rank six and a rank seven, he was the biggest winner.

Fang Yuan’s harvests were also not small.

The origin of this group of feathermen was a big deal, and there was also Sacred Feather City, the origins could be traced back to the Late Antiquity Era, the era of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

As the leader of Sacred Feather City, the rank seven Gu Immortal, Zheng Ling, held plenty of secrets, immortal killer moves, immortal Gu recipes and so on. It was likely he even had a complete Gu Immortal inheritance.

The green heaven fragment world was isolated from the outside world for this long, Sacred Feather City could be said to be a paradise for feathermen, this was a huge settlement of feathermen among those remaining in the world.

Because they had very few interactions with the outside world, and the green heaven fragment world had plenty of resources, these featherman Gu Immortals’ methods were quaint, having distinctive characteristics of the Late Antiquity Era.

Fang Yuan even had an expectation — if his luck was good, maybe he could get a strength path inheritance from Zheng Ling’s soul.

The only pity was those mortal feathermen.

Fang Yuan had been planning to raise those feathermen as slaves to help him penetrate the market in Western Desert, or even establish a caravan.

Feathermen were high quality slaves in Western Desert. Super forces and large forces, all of them had featherman-based caravans.

It was impossible for Fang Yuan to only do business with Xiao clan, in the early stage, he indeed had to rely on Xiao clan as a springboard to stably enter Western Desert’s market. But Fang Yuan would suffer losses if he only engaged with Xiao clan on the long term.

But these mortal feathermen were dead already. From their temperament, they were too well pampered and it would be an arduous process to tame them. Instead, it was much more convenient to directly purchase featherman slaves.

Fang Yuan was not someone who dwelled on the past, and soon threw this matter to the back of his mind.

He already possessed change form Immortal Gu and had fused it into the immortal killer move, vaguely familiar face. Fang Yuan originally intended to change into another appearance to go to Northern Plains Zombie Alliance and continue his previous foiled plan.

But after contacting Fairy Li Shan, Fang Yuan analyzed and deduced that the situation was not good.

Ever since Feng Jiu Ge had investigated the identity of Sha Huang, Northern Plains Zombie Alliance was much more strict in examining any unknown immortal zombie that wanted to join the alliance. It was no longer as easy as before for Fang Yuan to infiltrate into Northern Plains Zombie Alliance.

And Feng Jiu Ge, Old Lord Can Yang, and the rest of the group had gone into hiding, which made Fang Yuan feel that a storm was brewing.

Fang Yuan hesitated, was he still going to follow the plan to make his way into Northern Plains Zombie Alliance under this situation?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 871: Rock Dragon Eye

Northern Plains, Snowy Mountain blessed land.

The sky was covered in clouds, the white snow was like dust. All of the peaks were standing in the snow, as the forests were covered in layers of snow, they were like a vast number of clouds.

A rainbow shot out from the first peak, it flew into the air like a meteor.

The peak owners of Snowy Mountain turned their gazes towards it.

“Old Ancestor has sent an order again.”

“I wonder who will receive the order to collect immortal materials this time...”

“Hopefully it isn’t me.”

The rainbow drew a beautiful arc in the sky, it flew directly into the third peak.

The other peak owners sighed in relief secretly.

Inside the third peak, Fairy Li Shan was dressed in a bright leather dress, it was silver at the bottom, with the images of the grassland in the night sky with the moon on it.

This was clothing in the style of Northern Plains.

Fairy Li Shan wore her precious pearl headband as she shut her eyes, her mind was looking inside her immortal aperture.

In her immortal aperture, there were birds chirping and flowers growing, it was warm like spring, completely the opposite of the icy nature of Snowy Mountain blessed land.

In the lush forests, mountains and greenery were like paintings, there were large numbers of precious materials, a small number of desolate plants, as well as ancient desolate plants.

At the center of the immortal aperture, along a line of waist deep grass, there was a small mountain.

This tiny mountain was more inconspicuous than a small mound at first glance.

But it was Miniscule Mountain, one of the few secluded domains in this world recorded in >.

In this Miniscule Mountain, large numbers of minimen were flying in and out.

They were flying in the lush grass, due to their tiny bodies, these blades of grass were like tall trees.

The minimen were working laboriously in the grass like bee groups.

Fairy Li Shan was paying close attention to them, after watching them for a while, she was satisfied.

When she had obtained Miniscule Mountain, the minimen were unwilling to cooperate with her initially, they were wary of her.

But Fairy Li Shan was not an incompetent person, she used the carrot and the stick tactic, she helped a miniman puppet to become their leader, and killed all of the resistance without mercy.

The minimen were not as stubborn as the feathermen, but there were also loyal members.

After Fairy Li Shan killed forty percent of the minimen, she finally subdued the miniman tribe in Miniscule Mountain.

Thereafter, Fairy Li Shan moved Miniscule Mountain into her immortal aperture. With the help of the minimen, the wood path resources in her immortal aperture were produced at a rapid speed!

Hairy men were born with refinement path dao marks, they had Gu refinement talent. Feathermen were born with cloud path dao marks and had wings, they could fly freely in the sky. Minimen were born with wood path dao marks, the places where they lived in would have vegetation growing rapidly. They even had inheritances passed down from many generations before, they were the race that was most skilled at growing plants and flowers.

“Minimen are quite extraordinary! My jade yin grass is a rank seven immortal material. It had been wilting all along, but after these minimen lived here for half a year, this field expanded into a miniature grass field. All the jade yin grass have a lot of vitality, unfortunately, the number of minimen is very small now. The earlier battle caused half of them to die. If I had the previous number of minimen, my pressure would be halved now. Eh? Two letter Gu at the same time?”

Fairy Li Shan willed and sensed two information path Gu worms, one came from the outside world, flying through space, while the other came out of her blessed land using the moving perspective cup Gu.

Fairy Li Shan opened her eyes, she first grabbed one of the letters, holding the rainbow from the sky in her hands.

She glanced at it as she directed her consciousness into the Gu.

As she had expected, it was Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s orders for her to collect immortal materials.

“Concealing heaven dust, rock dragon eye, elephant tusk flame... this time, he wants me to gather three immortal materials.” Fairy Li Shan frowned deeply.

Among these three immortal materials, rock dragon eye and elephant tusk flame were rank seven immortal materials, while concealing heaven dust was a rank eight immortal material that was very precious.

Elephant tusk flame was a tiny lump of flame that burned in the elephant’s tusk after an ancient desolate beast elephant died. This lump of fire was about the size of a pea, once it finished burning the tusk, it would be extinguished upon contact with the outside air.

An ancient desolate beast elephant was an existence equal to rank seven Gu Immortals. After the elephant died, its tusk would not generate the flame every time.

With so many conditions to fulfill, one could see how precious the elephant tusk flame was. Even in the market of the five regions, treasure yellow heaven, it was a rare immortal material.

And compared to the elephant tusk flame, rock dragon eye and concealing heaven dust were much harder to get.

Concealing heaven dust was only found in yellow heaven of the immemorial nine heavens. But because yellow heaven was already destroyed by Ren Zu’s children, Fairy Li Shan had to first find a yellow heaven fragment world.

And this fragment world had to be big enough with enough dao marks to allow her to enter and explore it.

After entering the yellow heaven fragment world, Fairy Li Shan would have to prepare special methods to collect the concealing heaven dust. During the process of collecting it, she would face a lot of trouble.

Fairy Li Shan would rather pay a huge price to buy the concealing heaven dust in treasure yellow heaven.

As for the rock dragon eye, it referred to the eyes of the ancient desolate beast rock dragon.

This rock dragon was not an ordinary fierce beast.

In the graveyards of rockman tribes, there would be a lot of buried rockman corpses. As they accumulated over time, one day, they would attract lightning to strike them.

As the thunderbolt strikes the graveyard, a rock dragon would be born.

Similarly to the rockmen, the rock dragon’s body was made of rocks.

During the Immemorial Antiquity Era and the Remote Antiquity Era, variant humans were in control of most of the world. Only super forces of rockman tribes or large sized rockman tribes with a long history would have rock dragons in them. Even though there was Ren Zu, his ten children, and even Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, there were very few humans in the world.

The rock dragon was the guardian beast of the rockmen tribe, the rockmen all believe that the rock dragon is the revival of their ancestors. During the wars of the variant humans, the rock dragon had once been in the spotlight, they were among the best beasts of war in the world.

Rock dragons did not have any sense of pain, they had sturdy defenses and were extremely bold. Even if they were hurt, if there were any rockmen willing to sacrifice themselves and go to the rock dragon’s area of injury, they would be able to convert themselves into a part of the rock dragon, allowing its wounds to heal instantly.

This was an absurd battle tactic, the other races had a huge headache dealing with it.

But times were different now.

It was extremely hard for Fairy Li Shan to find a rock dragon.

Because rockman tribes were very rare now, most rockmen were the slaves of Gu

Immortals.

Even if Fairy Li Shan found a rock dragon, with her battle strength, she would not be able to defeat a rock dragon, a top tier war beast of the Remote Antiquity Era that had extremely high defenses.

Thus, even though the rock dragon eye was a rank seven immortal material, it was harder to obtain than the rank eight immortal material, concealing heaven dust.

“Old Ancestor Xue Hu is giving us peak owners tougher and tougher missions. Out of these three immortal materials, only the elephant tusk flame is slightly simple. Not only is strength a concern in obtaining concealing heaven dust and rock dragon eye, it is extremely dependent on luck. Sigh, if I have good luck, I would be able to just buy it from treasure yellow heaven.”

Fairy Li Shan sighed deeply.

Her earlier investment in the miniman and Miniscule Mountain had already started to see effect, she was going to reap the benefits now.

With Hei Lou Lan’s determination to become independent, she had rejected any additional funding. Thus, during this period, Fairy Li Shan was accumulating wealth rapidly.

This accumulation was twice as fast as before.

It took too much time and effort to obtain the concealing heaven dust and rock dragon eye. Fairy Li Shan would rather expend her wealth instead of expending time and energy.

After receiving the letter from Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Fairy Li Shan checked the second letter Gu.

There were only a few people who could make the letter appear directly in her immortal aperture.

Fairy Li Shan checked it and saw that the sender of the letter Gu was Fang Yuan.

In this letter, Fang Yuan promised much benefits, as he asked Fairy Li Shan to assist him in killing an immortal zombie from Northern Plains Zombie Alliance.

“Fang Yuan...” Fairy Li Shan muttered, she left her bed and walked around.

She lowered her head and was in deep thought as she slowly paced.

When she got to the window and saw the snowflakes outside, she sneered while staring at the silent peaks.

“This Fang Yuan, earlier he disguised himself as Sha Huang, joining Zombie Alliance. Now, he wants me to help him kill an immortal zombie, he definitely has some motive!”

“Promising me great benefits, he is really affluent. After all, he obtained a lot of resources from Dong Fang tribe, as well as getting Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance. During this period, he must have been developing smoothly and rapidly.”

“Right now, the situation in Northern Plains is full of turbulence. The investigation team of Central Continent Gu Immortals is still hiding somewhere. In this situation, Fang Yuan still wants to strike, it seems that the benefit of Zombie Alliance is extremely important to him. Does he want to claim another immortal zombie’s contribution points, and obtain the research results of Zombie

Alliance in the ways to revive and get rid of the zombie status?”

Thinking of this, Fairy Li Shan squinted her eyes.

Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

White Jade Palace was very bright.

Four Gu Immortals, standing at the north, south, east, and west, were surrounding the rank nine Immortal Gu House, Heaven Overseeing Tower, in the middle.

The old Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord stood at the east, he held his walking stick as a brilliant light flashed in his aged eyes: “Recovery of Fate, begins now!”

The walking stick in his hand was raised in the air, as if it hit a steel rock, it gave off a clear sound.

Immediately, light burst out, countless Gu worms flew about and formed a gigantic Gu formation.

Traces and traces of lights and rainbows merged together, forming a huge formation array that filled the surroundings.

The female Gu Immortal, Bai Cang Shui, who was here for the first time, shouted in shock: “This refinement path Gu formation is a step away from becoming a rank eight Immortal Gu House!”

Immortal Gu Houses were in themselves related to a Gu cultivation path — the utmost materialization of formation path.

“Hehehe, this refinement path Gu formation is quite extraordinary. Fairy Cang Shui, please look down.” At the west area, the person with the appearance of a young man in white clothing, Lian Jiu Sheng spoke as he smiled.

Next, he grabbed at the air and threw a huge amount of rock dragon eyes in front of him.

The rock dragon eyes entered the refinement path Gu formation, in just a few breaths of time, they were completely broken up and fused into the wondrous refinement path Gu formation.

“So many rock dragon eyes! And such a speed of processing immortal materials...” Bai Cang Shui was lost for words.

Hu Immortal blessed land, Dang Hun palace.

“Hmph!” Fang Yuan crushed the information path Gu worm in his hand.

He was rejected.

“Still wanting to restrict my development huh... these narrow-minded and petty women.” Fang Yuan’s expression was gloomy: “Oh?”

At this time, an information path Gu worm appeared in his immortal aperture.

“Did Fairy Li Shan change her mind?” Fang Yuan stared slightly before checking it, he was very surprised afterwards: “This is Lang Ya land spirit’s request for reinforcements?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 872: Joining Lang Ya’s Defensive Battle

After Fang Yuan obtained change form Immortal Gu and merged it into immortal killer move vaguely familiar face, he could now take a much greater variety of appearances.

Thus, he wanted to blend into Northern Plains Zombie Alliance again, but the situation was far from good.

Because his Sha Huang identity was exposed, Northern Plains Zombie Alliance was now extremely vigilant, and it was not possible for him to smoothly join Zombie Alliance by repeating his previous method.

Therefore, Fang Yuan got the idea of using other Zombie Alliance members.

As long as he secretly killed one of them and changed into the appearance of this unfortunate fellow, he could infiltrate Northern Plains Zombie Alliance.

Fang Yuan had become an immortal in Northern Plains, his body was filled with Northern Plains’ aura. Zombie Alliance’s large door could stop Feng Jiu Ge, but it could not obstruct him.

However, this secret assassination would be filled with difficulties and danger.

First of all, the entire process of killing a Zombie Alliance member had to be carried out in secret, without letting any trace of it leak out.

It was difficult to accomplish this.

Fang Yuan currently had rank seven battle strength, it was easy for him to defeat an ordinary immortal zombie, and killing them was also possible.

But to secretly kill them was exceptionally difficult.

Because the commotion during the battle would be huge and could not be controlled. If the immortal zombie wanted to flee, Fang Yuan would have to give chase, but true solid bat wings was not very reliable. If the immortal zombie used information path Gu worms to request for reinforcements, then in the midst of the battle, Fang Yuan would need to have sufficient and accurate means to exterminate these Gu worms.

In summary, Fang Yuan had outstanding power in offense, but was still lacking a lot in other aspects. Most of all, he lacked a battlefield killer move.

Battlefield killer moves could create an independent battlefield environment that was isolated from the world.

Within a battlefield killer move, Gu Immortals were usually unable to use information path Gu worms to request reinforcements. Naturally, this was not absolute, there was no such thing as absolute in this world.

Also, superior battlefield killer moves could limit the space, thus could prevent the enemy from running everywhere.

Immortal battlefield killer moves had another name, they were known as ‘quasi blessed lands’. Once they were used, they could temporarily replicate countless dao marks, creating a temporary unique battlefield.

Most Gu Immortals, in fact, did not have immortal battlefield killer moves, only relatively few Gu Immortals were in possession of them.

Fang Yuan did not have an immortal battlefield killer move, it would be very difficult for him to secretly kill a Northern Plains Zombie Alliance member by himself.

Even in his previous life he did not have one, because when he had just obtained his first Immortal Gu, he was besieged and had no choice but to self-detonate.

Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng also did not have one.

They had only recently advanced into Gu Immortals, even if their immortal apertures were of superior grades, they needed to accumulate their foundations for a long time.

However, Fairy Li Shan had one.

Pear orchard was her battlefield killer move.

If they could lure an immortal zombie into pear orchard, then it was very likely they could secretly kill them.

Naturally, even if they succeeded, there were risks.

Fang Yuan did not forget Old Lord Can Yang and rest of the group, they were sure to have wisdom path Gu Immortals amongst them. And the possibility of them deducing Fang Yuan re-entering Zombie Alliance was very likely.

Once the truth was exposed or even a slight trace of it was leaked out, Fang Yuan entering Northern Plains Zombie Alliance would be like entering a tiger’s den.

Thus, Fairy Li Shan’s help was highly necessary.

However, Fairy Li Shan rejected Fang Yuan’s request, and just as Fang Yuan was thinking of other strategies, a request for reinforcements appeared in his immortal aperture.

Ever since Northern Plains’ grand auction event ended, Fang Yuan had stopped contacting Lang Ya land spirit frequently.

This time, however, Lang Ya land spirit had taken the initiative to contact Fang Yuan, it was to ask for reinforcements.

This greatly differed from Fang Yuan’s expectations.

In Fang Yuan’s mind, Lang Ya blessed land had an extremely deep foundation.

In his previous life, Lang Ya blessed land, this ownerless blessed land, had resisted seven entire waves of invading Gu Immortals. Moreover, at the seventh wave, even Feng Jiu Ge had died in Lang Ya blessed land.

Although Lang Ya blessed land only had twelve cloud buildings on the surface, under each cloud building was a desolate beast, that meant twelve desolate beasts.

And as long as one was not an idiot, they would understand these twelve desolate beasts were only the outermost defensive measures, one should not forget Lang Ya blessed land’s original owner was Long Hair Ancestor.

He was known as possibly the number one refinement path immortal, he had refined thirty-eight Immortal Gu throughout his life, not lacking rank seven and rank eight among them. This was only the officially recorded number. If his unofficial records were noted, if rumors and so on were taken into consideration, the amount surpassed a hundred!

Thus, Fang Yuan had already surmised that Lang Ya blessed land's true defenses were the vast number of Immortal Gu left behind by Long Hair Ancestor.

It was not the desolate beasts.

Lang Ya blessed land was vastly different from other blessed lands. Even without an owner, Lang Ya land spirit had an unending supply of immortal essence which he could use.

It was because Lang Ya blessed land had the Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus that could produce immortal essence.

And due to the support of Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, Lang Ya land spirit could boldly activate Immortal Gu, displaying their unique powers.

“Now, Lang Ya land spirit is actually taking the initiative to ask me for reinforcements? In my previous life, he could resist until the seventh wave, and this should only be the fourth wave of attacks. Is it because of me that the structure of Northern Plains' situation has changed to such a large extent? Has it caused Lang Ya blessed land to face a much fiercer attack?”

Fang Yuan's brain worked rapidly.

For Lang Ya land spirit to ask for reinforcements, it could certainly be imagined that the strength of the invaders absolutely surpassed Fang Yuan's individual ability.

But often, precious opportunities were hidden in dangerous situations.

Lang Ya blessed land had a deep accumulation of wealth, and was so rich that even Heavenly Court's greed was incited in Fang Yuan's previous life, forcibly taking down this blessed land. Heavenly Court might have suffered huge losses, but they also benefited a lot even after calculating the loss of Feng Jiu Ge.

Cooperating with Lang Ya land spirit had many benefits.

This was already clear from the past dealings.

Fang Yuan had bluffed and deceived to seize many benefits from Lang Ya land spirit. Lang Ya land spirit had a huge hand in his rapid progress after becoming a Gu Immortal. Especially in transitioning between the early to middle stages, which was a difficult point to make progress.

It was a pity, after the auction in Northern Plains, Fang Yuan's greed and excessive demands led to the land spirit's aversion towards him, which caused the relation between both sides to worsen and reduce to a freezing point.

Fang Yuan had tried to cooperate with the land spirit several times, but was answered with an unyielding attitude by the land spirit, asking Fang Yuan to search for a poisonous flower type immortal material.

“If I can help the land spirit now, our tensed relations will definitely ease up.”

“What's more, I have Fixed Immortal Travel and only need three breaths of time to return to Hu Immortal blessed land. Even if the enemies are very strong, I should be able to buy three breaths of time, right?”

Fang Yuan pondered, although Lang Ya land spirit had asked for reinforcements, the situation might not be so bad.

He had always felt that Lang Ya blessed land’s foundation was very abundant. In his previous life, it could resist seven waves of attack, even a powerhouse of this generation like Feng Jiu Ge was sacrificed here. This was only the fourth wave of attacks.

As he considered it thoroughly, Fang Yuan decided to help Lang Ya land spirit.

He was not a rash, hot-blooded child like Yu Fei who, when his friends suffered harm, would stand up regardless of gains or losses.

He was Fang Yuan, a demonic path Gu Immortal.

He emphasized profits, coldly calculating gains and losses; allies were used to bring benefits, what was the point of making friends with each other?

As far as Fang Yuan was concerned, allies were only special tools to gain benefits.

Coincidentally, Tai Bai Yun Sheng also came to inquire about the letter.

Lang Ya land spirit had also sent him a letter for reinforcements.

In fact, since Tai Bai Yun Sheng had restored Lang Ya blessed land for the land spirit, his relationship with the land spirit was much better than that of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan informed Tai Bai Yun Sheng of his decision, which Tai Bai Yun Sheng approved of.

Fang Yuan immediately used a stargate to go to Lang Ya blessed land.

Even though Tai Bai Yun Sheng had passed the earthly calamity, he still required some time before he could take back his immortal aperture and move around.

“You’re here, Fang Yuan.” Lang Ya land spirit appeared in front of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan noticed Lang Ya land spirit did not appear tired and had no injuries on his body, and felt even more certain of his previous guess, he laughed: “This is your attitude to your life saving benefactor?”

“Hmph! You think I am not aware? Rascal, you wouldn’t have even thought of helping me without benefits involved! If not for this situation being urgent, I would not have requested help from you.” Lang Ya land spirit rolled his eyes.

Although he said this, Lang Ya land spirit’s attitude was already much warmer than before.

“I will give you the rank six Immortal Gu recipe for all-out effort Gu as a reward for repelling the enemies!” Lang Ya land spirit continued.

Fang Yuan snickered, shaking his head: “Let’s talk about the reward later, after we repel the invading Gu Immortals.”

Fang Yuan did not talk about reward and was worried about the invading enemies, not taking advantage to blackmail, this immediately made Lang Ya land spirit very pleased and feel his opinion of Fang Yuan becoming much more pleasant.

“Follow me.” Lang Ya land spirit grabbed Fang Yuan’s arm, and instantly, they arrived at the highest floor of a cloud building.

It could be seen from this that there were large numbers of space path dao marks in Lang Ya blessed land.

If it were like Star Form blessed land where there were not many space path dao marks, Star Form land spirit could only fly rapidly with no ability to teleport.

Fang Yuan observed the surroundings that had already changed greatly.

Previously, Lang Ya blessed land had a vast area of cloud soil with clear skies, twelve cloud buildings standing adjacent to each other among them. But right now, Fang Yuan’s sight was filled with boundless fog, which was so dense one could not even see their hands.

The sky could not be seen above, the ground could not be seen below.

Lang Ya land spirit explained with a serious voice: “This is the Gu formation activated after the blessed land was attacked — Twelve Wave Cloud Confusion Formation. The twelve cloud buildings are all mortal Gu Houses and serve as formation cores of this formation. Look! Those are the invaders.”

The land spirit waved his sleeve, several mirrors appeared in front of Fang Yuan.

Each mirror showed a Gu Immortal moving slowly in the vast fog, or charging forward.

‘They are!’ Fang Yuan’s pupils could not help but shrink when he saw these Gu Immortals.

Qin Bai Sheng, Jiang Yu, Hei Cheng, Xue Song Zi and He Lang Zi!

There were also two others, one was a green robed wind path Gu Immortal who was moving forward rapidly, another was a black robed Gu Immortal who was wearing a mask and was very mysterious.

“You recognize them?” Lang Ya land spirit sensed the strange expression on Fang Yuan’s face.

Fang Yuan nodded, saying with a serious expression: “These people have extraordinary strength, especially the leader, Qin Bai Sheng, he is a famous rank seven expert in Northern Plains.”

“I know. If not for this, most of my twelve wave cloud confusion formation would not have been broken down. Now only five buildings are left, two are already guarded by two of Inkman City’s Gu Immortals. You will guard this one, while I will personally guard another one. The remaining one is left for Tai Bai Yun Sheng.” Lang Ya land spirit distribution the workload.

Fang Yuan frowned: “The enemies are too strong, the cloud buildings are only mortal Gu Houses, it will be quite difficult to obstruct these people while also protecting the cloud buildings!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 873: Quietly Awaiting Foes

Fang Yuan frowned, he showed a troubled expression.

Qin Bai Sheng, Jiang Yu, He Lang Zi, Xue Song Zi, He Lang Zi, and two mysterious Gu Immortals that he did not know. Among them, only Xue Song Zi and Jiang Yu were rank six Gu Immortals, the rest were rank seven Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan did not have any idea of who the two mysterious Gu Immortals were.

But among the remaining ones, Qin Bai Sheng, He Lang Zi, and Hei Cheng were all experienced rank sevens.

Hei Cheng was a Gu Immortal of the super force, Hei tribe, although he had a hidden injury and could not use immortal killer moves, causing his battle strength to decline sharply. He was not at his peak condition, but the Immortal Gu Dark Arrow was not to be underestimated.

He Lang Zi was a famous transformation path demonic immortal in Northern Plains, he had a strange upbringing and was ruthless and savage, he had three immortal level desolate wolf transformations, he had high battle strength. He was once offered recruitment by Old Ancestor Xue Hu, but he turned down the offer.

The strongest one was Qin Bai Sheng.

This person had roamed Northern Plains for hundreds of years, as a lone cultivator, he had defeated Liu Hao, Chanyu Xiong, Nu Er Du, killed Bai Chan Zi, Jade Fire Farmer, Mountain Lord Tian Qing, had a draw with Yuan Rang Zun, and managed to escape with his life from Five Elements Grandmaster.

He was a rank seven Gu Immortal, his status in Northern Plains was like Shi Lei’s status in Central Continent.

In most people’s perspective, he was at the peak of rank seven battle strength, only rank eight Gu Immortals could suppress him. He was considerably stronger than the level of Old Lord Can Yang.

The scarier thing was, not only did he have outstanding battle strength, he was also very capable in planning. He held the Northern Plains auction and was the biggest winner out of it.

Trying to protect the cloud buildings in front of such a person, it was not a strange thing for Fang Yuan to feel very troubled.

But Lang Ya land spirit patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder, saying: “I am not asking you to defend the cloud building, you just need to hold him back. I am trying to stall for time. Hmph, these people are too daring, they actually attacked Lang Ya blessed land! As long as you can hold on for thirty minutes, I will be able to make these people suffer the severe consequences!”

Lang Ya land spirit spoke with immense confidence.

Like what Fang Yuan had guessed, Lang Ya land spirit definitely had a trump card that could turn the situation around.

In the earlier three waves of attacks, Lang Ya land spirit had amazing battle results, these twelve desolate beasts would not have been able to accomplish it.

“Then, what is the thing that Lang Ya land spirit is relying on?” Fang Yuan felt a strong sense of curiosity internally.

He did not had any intention to conceal this thought, he asked directly.

But Lang Ya land spirit did not tell him, he only smiled mysteriously.

Afterwards, the land spirit gave Fang Yuan some instructions and gave him a letter Gu before teleporting away.

The letter Gu recorded the technique to manipulate the cloud buildings.

This cloud building was lent to Fang Yuan by Lang Ya land spirit, he could manipulate it freely.

Fang Yuan looked at it two or three times, he memorized the manipulation technique to heart. Next, he practiced it a little and got the hang of it.

The cloud buildings were the formation cores of the twelve wave cloud confusion formation, star thoughts moved in Fang Yuan’s mind as he gained much understanding of the twelve wave cloud confusion formation after learning about the cloud buildings.

In other words, this was a fog formation that resembled a maze.

Even though it was not elevated to the level of a battlefield killer move, it was only one step away.

It was not that Lang Ya land spirit did not have battlefield killer moves, but to set up a battlefield killer move, dao marks needed to be carved.

The newly added dao marks would not be perfectly compatible with the dao marks of this world, there would be conflicts and unsuitability. This would cause damage to Lang Ya blessed land itself.

Thus, the land spirit did not do that.

To just stall for time, twelve wave cloud confusion formation was already reaching the limits of a Gu formation.

When a Gu Immortal is inside the formation, their five senses would be messed up and they would not be able to tell the direction, between left or right, or even end up just walking in circles on the spot. Only an investigative immortal killer move would allow the Gu Immortal to navigate their way through the Gu formation.

Only by destroying all twelve cloud buildings would this formation be entirely destroyed.

If they did not have an investigative immortal killer move, then the Gu Immortal could only move about randomly, hoping to see if they could find a cloud building, this was purely up to luck.

Fortunately for them, once the Gu formation was set up, the twelve cloud buildings could not be moved, otherwise, Gu Immortals without an investigative immortal killer move would never be able to find it, not even luck could help.

Fang Yuan sat on the cloud bed as he opened many observation mirrors, checking the surroundings of this cloud building.

His authority was only limited to this cloud building, he could only check the surroundings of this cloud building to an extent.

There was only vast fog in the mirror, not a single Gu Immortal showed up.

Fang Yuan did not lack patience, he waited silently.

A moment later, a Gu Immortal appeared in the mirror.

She was wearing a purple dress, she had a high nose and deep beautiful eyes, her eyebrows were thick and long, her skin was slightly dark as her entire body oozed with an alluring aura.

It was Fairy Jiang Yu!

Fang Yuan was shocked, he immediately thought about her dark limit Immortal Gu.

Hei Lou Lan had the Great Strength True Martial Physique, before becoming an immortal, she had used dark limit Immortal Gu, it had entered Hei Lou Lan’s body and circulated through it, concealing the aura of the Great Strength True Martial Physique.

Initially, Hei Lou Lan’s plan was to seize her dark limit Immortal Gu, before they were exposed.

But unfortunately, Fairy Jiang Yu’s traces were hard to find, before this plan was even put into play, it had failed.

Later, when Hei Lou Lan was chasing after Hei Cheng, this plan was even more impossible.

“Dark limit Immortal Gu, if I can obtain it...” Fang Yuan’s gaze shined, he felt somewhat of a pity inside: “Unfortunately, in this current situation, even if I can capture Fairy Jiang Yu alive, I would not obtain dark limit Immortal Gu.”

It was very hard to take Immortal Gu, hope was usually very slim.

After all, only a thought was needed to make the Immortal Gu self-detonate.

Just as Fang Yuan thought about this, Fairy Jiang Yu actually turned this way and that, going on a detour around Fang Yuan’s territory, heading towards another direction and leaving this place.

Once she was out of Fang Yuan’s territory, Fairy Jiang Yu vanished from the mirror.

A while later, a second Gu Immortal entered Fang Yuan’s territory.

The mirror clearly showed his image.

It was Qin Bai Sheng!

Fang Yuan’s gaze was grave, he watched as Qin Bai Sheng got closer and closer.

Undoubtedly, out of all the Gu Immortal experts here, the one Fang Yuan most wanted to not face was Qin Bai Sheng.

Fang Yuan has not found out that after Qin Bai Sheng fought Feng Jiu Ge, he had already recovered his original strength. But with just Qin Bai Sheng’s previous performance, he was already at the level of Central Continent’s Shi Lei.

This type of opponent was far too strong. If he really discovered this cloud building, Fang Yuan immediately decided that he would only match a few blows with him before retreating.

Even though he was reinforcing Lang Ya land spirit, this support was only situational.

Fang Yuan had never thought of sacrificing his life for Lang Ya land spirit. In addition, Lang Ya land spirit also had his trump cards, it was not time for Fang Yuan to take a risk.

Qin Bai Sheng got closer and closer to the cloud building, he had an investigative immortal killer move, he walked straight ahead. Fang Yuan controlled this cloud building, he was right beside Qin Bai Sheng’s path of advancement, they were about three hundred steps away from each other linearly.

The range of the investigative immortal killer move was definitely more than three hundred steps, but it was hindered by the twelve wave cloud confusion formation.

Once Qin Bai Sheng got to a certain proximity, the cloud building would appear in his investigative range.

That way, Qin Bai Sheng would charge directly to the cloud building, Fang Yuan’s first defensive battle would end up as a failure.

But this type of failure was not scary, Fang Yuan had no psychological burden if he failed. To Fang Yuan, no matter how many losses he has, his fighting spirit would not dwindle, it would not change his plans and his mind would not be disrupted.

But soon, a change occurred.

Qin Bai Sheng’s expression suddenly changed, he turned towards the north-east direction and flew rapidly.

“Not only is their information path technique immortal level, it is extremely useful against the Gu formation, they can actually transmit information inside the Gu formation.” Almost at the same time, Fang Yuan heard Lang Ya land spirit’s surprised voice.

Fang Yuan nodded lightly, replying: “Since they attacked us, they definitely came prepared. But from your words, did they not expose this technique last time?”

The land spirit was silent for a moment before answering: “No. Earlier, the cloud buildings were defended by desolate beasts, they were fighting alone and killing the desolate beasts to destroy the cloud buildings. But this time, Mo Tan Sang and the desolate beasts are defending the cloud buildings together, they must have changed their tactics after seeing that there was a defending Gu Immortal, and went to reinforce each other.”

Fang Yuan’s expression turned grim: “Not good, Mo Tan Sang is the leader of Inkman City, it is already quite generous of him to come and reinforce us, but he would have to conceal his appearance in battle. Once his relationship with you is exposed, Northern Plains’ Inkman City would face a huge crisis. If Mo Tan Sang fights under such restraints, against a powerful foe that has the superiority in numbers, he would not be able to protect the cloud building.”

The land spirit responded immediately: “This twelve wave cloud confusion formation uses Lang Ya blessed land’s own dao marks to divert the enemies and split them up, forcing them to fight individually. In theory, it can isolate rank seven and rank six information path immortal killer moves, preventing enemies from communicating. Even if they have hole earth Gu set up, it is useless. But these people are able to communicate with each other now, it is likely related to the previous few waves!”

“Sigh! I should not have been greedy over the profits of selling Gu Immortal slaves, I should have killed them. Among these people, there should be someone who has quite an impressive wisdom path technique. I had already cleansed all of the memories of the Gu Immortal slaves from their souls.”

Lang Ya land spirit analyzed it thoroughly, he felt much regret.

Fang Yuan agreed with Lang Ya land spirit’s analysis.

Gu Immortals battle with their wits, they were all brilliant characters. Qin Bai Sheng only did one action of assisting his ally, and he exposed so many details.

Similarly, since the last few waves were related to his intelligence, Lang Ya blessed land also leaked out many secrets as well.

“Can I see the battle scene over there?” Fang Yuan requested.

On the mirror, the scene of the battle was displayed.

Mo Tan Sang was riding on a desolate beast, fighting with Gu Immortal Hei Cheng.

Mo Tan Sang was a rank six Gu Immortal, he was at a disadvantage. He mainly cultivated qi path, but now he was using other methods to fight.

Hei Cheng had a hidden injury, but he was still rank seven, he did not use dark arrow Immortal Gu, but he still had control over the battle.

Most importantly, the reason was that Mo Tan Sang was afraid of exposing his identity, he had his Inkman City to defend, he could not allow it to face danger. Thus, he only rode on the desolate beast, letting it fight primarily, while he used healing and defensive techniques.

The desolate beast was peerless in bravery, but it lacked the wisdom to inspect the battle situation. But with Mo Tan Sang’s attentive assistance, even though the desolate beast was at a disadvantage, it was still full of energy, it could hold on for a long time.

But Fang Yuan knew that Qin Bai Sheng was coming soon, the desolate beast would definitely die at that time.

While Fang Yuan was concerned with Mo Tan Sang’s situation, a third figure entered close proximity with Fang Yuan.

“Xue Song Zi, he didn’t receive any orders to go to that battlefield?” Fang Yuan was perplexed, he had some guesses internally.

A moment later, Xue Song Zi found Fang Yuan’s cloud building.

His movement paused for a moment before shooting towards the cloud building at lightning speed.

Fang Yuan stood up too, he had a stern expression.

Battle erupted at once!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 874: Killed By One Slap!

Among the seven Gu Immortals who were invading Lang Ya blessed land, the one Fang Yuan wanted to face the most was Xue Song Zi.

Because Xue Song Zi was the one with the lowest cultivation level among them, his battle strength was also likely to be the lowest.

At the same time, Fang Yuan had fought Xue Song Zi before, during their previous battle, Xue Song Zi was beaten back by the strength path phantom army, he left in a pitiful state.

In other words, Xue Song Zi had once lost to Fang Yuan, with Fang Yuan’s experience, he knew about Xue Song Zi’s foundation.

“But I cannot be careless in this battle.” Fang Yuan’s expression was serious, looking at Xue Song Zi in the mirror, getting closer to the cloud building that he was in, he did not have disdain or arrogance inside.

A lion uses its full strength even when hunting rabbits, Fang Yuan had a vigilant nature.

Furthermore, in this battle, Fang Yuan had many concerns.

His first concern was that this was not a solo battle, it was a huge fight between the invaders and Lang Ya blessed land. If Fang Yuan and Xue Song Zi fought, would the other side send reinforcements? That was very likely to happen!

His second concern was Xue Song Zi’s increase in battle strength.

In Lang Ya blessed land, the invaders could not use any mortal Gu, the fact that Xue Song Zi could get this far meant that he had at least one Immortal Gu.

This secret was easily exposed.

Because Xue Song Zi’s speed in reaching Fang Yuan was extremely fast, he was using a true immortal killer move.

“It seems that in this battle, I have to plot and sneak attack him, ensuring my advantage. Even if someone reinforces him later, my pressure would be much lower.” Malicious thoughts were moving rapidly in Fang Yuan’s mind.

When plotting against others, malicious thoughts were most effective. Fang Yuan was very experienced with this.

Xue Song Zi progressed rapidly.

The scene before him was stagnant, all he saw was white fog that filled his entire vision.

As he flew rapidly, the cold winds were blowing on him, but he felt extremely excited.

“This is the difference between Immortal Gu and mortal Gu, it truly is spectacular.” Xue Song Zi experienced the joy of flying using an immortal killer move, a portion of his mind was concentrating on his own immortal aperture.

In his immortal aperture, there was an ice path Immortal Gu, it was quite massive. It was around the size of an average horse, the entire Immortal Gu looked like a heart, it was an icy statue that looked very vivid, frost energy was emanating from it.

This was ice heart Immortal Gu.

Ice heart Immortal Gu was not Xue Song Zi’s possession, it was lent to him by Shadow Sect’s Qin Bai Sheng, in order to boost his strength when invading Lang Ya blessed land.

Not only did Qin Bai Sheng give Xue Song Zi this rank six Immortal Gu, he even gave him several immortal killer moves that used ice heart Immortal Gu as the core, encompassing attack, defense, movement, healing, and others.

Xue Song Zi was originally a snow path Gu Immortal, but snow path and ice path were twins, they were almost indistinguishable and closely related. This ice path Immortal Gu and its killer moves were very suitable for Xue Song Zi.

Ice heart Immortal Gu emitted bone chilling frost energy, but Xue Song Zi’s heart was burning with passion!

Qin Bai Sheng has promised Xue Song Zi before moving off for this mission, if they achieved their goal this time, he would give that ice path Immortal Gu to Xue Song Zi as his reward.

Thus, Xue Song Zi was full of motivation, ever since they entered the blessed land, he was working very enthusiastically.

After all, back then he was searching for wooden chicken Immortal Gu, he did not stint on subsidizing Ma tribe in the struggle for the Imperial Court.

Right now there was such a good chance, and ice heart Immortal Gu was much more compatible with him than wooden chicken Immortal Gu, he was definitely moved.

“Cloud building!” Xue Song Zi’s figure halted, he shouted in surprise.

In the endless white fog before him, a tall building appeared.

Xue Song Zi soon became overjoyed: “To think that my luck is so good, I actually found a cloud building!”

The mission Qin Bai Sheng gave him was to find the formation cores of the twelve cloud buildings inside the twelve wave cloud confusion formation and destroy them.

“If I can destroy a cloud building alone, that would be a huge merit. According to our earlier agreement for rewards, I will obtain quite a sum. But each cloud building is defended by a desolate beast, I should be careful.” Soon after, Xue Song Zi calmed down.

As if it had heard his thoughts, a desolate beast descended from the cloud building, jumping towards him.

This desolate beast was huge like an elephant. It was yellow-brown in color, and thick fur covered more than half of its body.

It was the yellow jade lion desolate beast that Fang Yuan had picked up in Starry Sky grotto-heaven, and had given to Lang Ya land spirit.

The yellow jade lion did not make a sound, it moved like lightning as it charged towards Xue Song Zi.

“Just in time.” Xue Song Zi showed an excited expression with much battle intent, but his body retreated backwards instead, he was very vigilant.

The yellow jade lion’s attack did not hit, instead, Xue Song Zi increased the distance between them.

The latter waved his sleeve and a huge blizzard blew out.

The blizzard howled as lumps of snow as large as eggs flew towards the yellow jade lion.

This was not a mortal killer move, it was the immortal killer move ‘cold condensed snow’. Only an immortal killer move could be used in this situation, mortal killer moves could not even be used in this place.

The yellow jade lion could not open its eyes, cold frost energy was spreading, forming a thick layer of frost on its body.

The yellow jade lion’s body shook itself, most of the frost was shrugged off, it continued running towards Xue Song Zi.

Xue Song Zi’s gaze was focused on the yellow jade lion’s fur, he snorted in disdain.

His immortal killer move had insufficient attacking power, but the frost energy would invade the body and affect the enemy’s speed and movement.

The yellow jade lion did not have a large size among desolate beasts, but it had great strength and agility.

Xue Song Zi used this move to weaken the yellow jade lion’s speed advantage. But the yellow jade lion was a desolate beast, and it had very thick fur.

If it were another desolate beast, its flesh and blood might have been frozen by the frost energy. But the yellow jade lion had the traits of its species, it resisted this move and only its fur was frozen.

Xue Song Zi was not adept at close combat, he liked to fight at long range.

After seeing the yellow jade lion closing in, he retreated again.

Immortal killer move – Ice Trace!

He faced the yellow jade lion as he flew backwards and retreated. Along the path that he retreated, frost gathered as the ground became an icy path.

The yellow jade lion’s frontal assault was slowed greatly when it stepped onto this icy trail.

Xue Song Zi retreated rapidly, after making sure there was a huge distance between them, he laughed: “Beast, take my penetrating ice blade!”

He raised his hand and slashed at the yellow jade lion, which was far away.

Crack.

A huge ice blade formed in the air instantly, the ice blade flew down from above, it was fast and sharp, hitting the yellow jade lion’s back harshly.

The yellow jade lion growled in pain, blood splattered, but was quickly frozen and became solid.

The penetrating ice blade shattered like glass, but the frost energy inside directly spread into the yellow jade lion’s body, its offensive power came in multiple forms, overwhelming the opponent, it was hard to defend against, this was a vicious and ruthless move.

The yellow jade lion growled at the sky, the sound waves causing ripples in the clouds. Its four claws were glowing with fire, its speed increased and it could dodge with greater flexibility.

The yellow jade lion had large numbers of mortal Gu worms in its body, this was intentionally produced by Lang Ya land spirit.

Because they were on the side defending the blessed land, the yellow jade lion could use all of its mortal Gu worms.

But the frost energy was inside its body, the yellow jade lion’s speed fell greatly.

Xue Song Zi had the advantage, he continued to use immortal killer moves to attack the yellow jade lion.

The situation was getting worse for the yellow jade lion, wounds were piling up on its body, it was getting slower. When it coughed blood, what came out was not warm blood, but cold frozen blood.

“Hahaha, great, this feels great!” Xue Song Zi laughed loudly in a carefree manner.

He had used all of the immortal killer moves that Qin Bai Sheng gave to him, he could feel the power of having immortal killer moves. In the past, desolate beasts greatly troubled him, but after getting bombarded by his immortal killer moves, this one could only run around and growl pitifully.

“Next is the final move, ice heart lock... I have to test its power as well!” Xue Song Zi stopped running, he advanced and charged towards the yellow jade lion.

He was extremely fast, like an eagle trying to capture food in the sky.

Before the yellow jade lion reacted, its Gu worms had already felt Xue Song Zi’s immense aura and had activated an armor made of light on the yellow jade lion’s body.

“Hmph! Child’s play!” Xue Song Zi’s eyes shined with cruelty, he waved his hand as he used an immortal killer move, penetrating ice blade, again.

Bam!

The ice blade hit the yellow jade lion’s back, breaking into pieces.

The armor of light made by mortal Gu did not even last for a moment before it was destroyed by the ice blade effortlessly.

A deep wound that revealed the bone was made on the yellow jade lion’s back.

The yellow jade lion cried out in pain, it could not hold on anymore, it sprawled on the ground.

Xue Song Zi stepped on the yellow jade lion’s back, he suddenly lied down and placed both hands on the yellow jade lion’s body.

Crack crack.

Soft sounds of ice forming could be heard.

First, it was a thin layer of ice growing on the yellow jade lion’s back, with

Xue Song Zi at the center, the ice rapidly extended over the yellow jade lion’s body.

Soon, this thin layer of ice thickened at a rapid speed.

Not only that, on the yellow jade lion’s body, a similarly powerful frost energy was gathering and freezing its blood, flesh, bones, and even its intestines.

Xue Song Zi’s expression was pale, he thought to himself inwardly: “This ice heart lock is really powerful, it can forcefully freeze even desolate beasts. But this immortal killer move expends way too much immortal essence.”

After Xue Song Zi noticed this, he wanted to stop.

But soon, greed grew inside him: “Why don’t I capture this yellow jade lion alive. I can freeze it first, and thaw it later when I sell it to someone. A living desolate beast is of huge value even in treasure yellow heaven! Hehehe.”

Just as he was dreaming about this beautiful future, there was an explosion from the yellow jade lion below him.

With a loud bang, a strength path giant hand grabbed onto Xue Song Zi, who was unable to escape in time.

Xue Song Zi was flustered: “What is this? Ice armor!”

A thick ice armor appeared on his body, the strength path giant hand grabbed onto the ice armor, as cracks appeared on the armor.

Xue Song Zi’s lips curled up, he showed a ruthless smile: “With this, I can test my defensive killer move’s other ability. Ice armor, detonate!”

With a loud bang, the ice armor exploded, and huge amounts of frost energy filled the surroundings.

Fang Yuan’s strength path giant hand was pushed back by the huge force.

Xue Song Zi used the chance and flew out, but at the next moment, his sinister smile froze.

Above his head, a strength path giant hand was prepared and ready to strike. Xue Song Zi flew into the sky, his ice armor had just broken, he could not activate it immediately again.

This strength path giant hand slapped him like swatting a fly, as it landed on him, Xue Song Zi was beaten into a lump of meat paste!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 875: One Versus Two

“You killed an enemy Gu Immortal? Good, good, good!” Fang Yuan had just gotten out of the yellow jade lion’s body, when Lang Ya land spirit’s voice was heard.

Fang Yuan’s first thought was: It seems that this Lang Ya blessed land has lots of sound path dao marks.

Lang Ya land spirit could transmit his voice so easily, Hu Immortal land spirit and Star Form land spirit did not have such an ability. This showed that there were large numbers of sound path dao marks in Lang Ya blessed land.

The land spirit was very surprised that Fang Yuan could kill Xue Song Zi, he said ‘good’ three times.

This was the first time the other party had lost a member since the start of this attack!

“Fang Yuan, to think that you have such battle strength even though you are already so good at deducing Immortal Gu recipes.” At this juncture, Lang Ya land spirit praised as he sighed.

“Hehehe.” Fang Yuan laughed too, when he laughed, Xue Song Zi’s meat paste had just landed on the floor.

Fang Yuan was satisfied with this battle result.

The yellow jade lion below him was near death, it was used as a pawn by Fang Yuan to deal with Xue Song Zi, it worked really well.

In this battle, Fang Yuan had only used vaguely familiar face and strength path giant hand, he used very few resources to kill Xue Song Zi, while obtaining a huge effect.

By this point, Fang Yuan deeply knew that all kinds of fights were just an extension of economic conflicts.

In other words, wars, battles, they were like business, whatever you put in and gain will all be in the financial aspect.

Why was Fang Yuan quite satisfied? Because he put in a minimal amount of resources into this battle, but had created a huge impact. In the terminology of business, he put in a small sum of capital and earned a huge amount of profits in return!

Xue Song Zi had Immortal Gu with him and a complete set of immortal killer moves, if Fang Yuan fought him head on, he might not have been able to defeat him even after a dozen rounds of moves.

Although Xue Song Zi could only use immortal killer moves here, even though Fang Yuan could use mortal Gu, against the power of immortal killer moves, he had to use immortal killer moves to counter them, right?

Thus, his green grape immortal essence expenditure would be huge.

Expending a huge amount of immortal essence when Xue Song Zi might not even lose, what’s more, if he managed to summon more Gu Immortals to help him, Fang Yuan would have to retreat.

Battles between Gu Immortals were not rigid duels where each person exchanged one move at a time, they were filled with schemes and plots.

Fang Yuan had deduced that Xue Song Zi had low battle strength, and as a member of Snowy Mountain blessed land, he was an outsider among the invading Gu Immortals.

He also deduced that Xue Song Zi had Immortal Gu.

Most importantly, Fang Yuan knew what Xue Song Zi had done in the previous Imperial Court contest, Xue Song Zi had a huge desire for Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan knew that. Thus, he easily deduced the reason why Xue Song Zi had an Immortal Gu, as well as his current state of mind.

As the saying goes, know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated.

Xue Song Zi knew nothing about Fang Yuan, and he was also an outsider, it seemed that he did not receive Qin Bai Sheng’s warning.

If Qin Bai Sheng had told Xue Song Zi that the cloud buildings had Gu Immortals defending them, Xue Song Zi would not have been so careless.

What was more fatal was that earlier, the invaders had attacked ruthlessly, destroying many cloud building formation cores, while killing many desolate beasts. After every battle, Qin Bai Sheng would send out the information and inform everyone.

Qin Bai Sheng’s actions were understandable. Because when Gu Immortals were split up and searching for the formation cores aimlessly, they might feel very uncertain from detecting nothing and experience a drop in morale.

When Xue Song Zi heard the notifications, he felt that his side was having a landslide victory, his morale was high. His loss to Fang Yuan was also because of the same reason that an arrogant army was bound to lose.

In contrast, Fang Yuan was scheming and devious, he had a huge advantage as the hidden party.

Of course, his guesses could have been wrong, after all, they were all estimations.

But in fact, he had a complete understanding of Xue Song Zi’s mental state. He even hid inside the yellow jade lion’s body deviously.

Xue Song Zi has an investigative immortal killer move, he had scanned the yellow jade lion’s body at least three times. But he was afraid that the yellow jade lion might have a wild Immortal Gu on it, if it attacked while he was distracted, he would be in trouble.

Because Xue Song Zi did not find any Immortal Gu, he became even more careless.

Fang Yuan’s vaguely familiar face had great importance during this process. If he did not use this killer move to conceal himself, even if he hid inside the yellow jade lion’s body, Xue Song Zi would have found him.

Because of all these reasons, such a shocking result occurred.

Gu Immortals were all dragons among men, if Xue Song Zi was not careless, with his current strength, he could totally fight Fang Yuan head on, even if he was slightly weaker, he could definitely drag out the battle for some time.

But it was a pity that his opponent was Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories, in nice words, they could be called wisdom, but bluntly speaking, they allowed him to scheme deviously, he could use a portion of his strength and unleash it with multiple times the effect.

“Lang Ya land spirit, I killed Xue Song Zi, how will you reward me? Xue Song Zi’s immortal aperture was destroyed, everything inside it was destroyed as well, but his dao marks have all gone to this blessed land.” Fang Yuan smiled as he asked.

“Hahaha, don’t worry, you will be heavily rewarded after the battle. I hope you can defend this cloud building well, Mo Tan Sang is already heavily injured, he barely escaped, his cloud building was destroyed. You have Xue Song Zi’s soul, we need to search it and find out these people’s details.” The land spirit replied.

Fang Yuan’s gaze became slightly firmer.

This was not the first time he had captured a Gu Immortal’s soul, back then in Tai Bai blessed land, Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not notice it, but here in Lang Ya blessed land, all of it was exposed to Lang Ya land spirit.

As for Mo Tan Sang losing his building, it was very normal, this did not differ from Fang Yuan’s expectations.

“Xue Song Zi died.” Qin Bai Sheng stood on the rubble of a cloud building, suddenly, his body shook and he spoke.

“What? He has the Immortal Gu you lent him, as well as a complete set of immortal killer moves, how did he die suddenly?” Hei Cheng, who was beside him, felt a great shock.

After Xue Song Zi died, Hei Cheng’s pressure amplified.

Among the people in Shadow Sect, even though Hei Cheng was rank seven, his battle strength was quite weak. He was a natural ally of Xue Song Zi.

Hei Cheng’s constant worry was not the blessed land, but the mysterious ‘allies’ around him.

“He fell into their trap.” Qin Bai Sheng thought about it for a few moments, his eyes shined brilliantly: “In a frontal fight, unless a rank eight Gu Immortal attacked, Xue Song Zi would have lasted for some time. In Lang Ya blessed land, there are definitely no rank eight Gu Immortals. Thus, the most likely possibility is that Xue Song Zi found a cloud building or something important, in order to get the reward that was promised to him, he did not inform anyone else, and because he got new Immortal Gu, he wanted to test them, this mentality was used by the enemy and they planted a trap. At the appropriate opportunity, they killed Xue Song Zi.”

Hei Cheng drew in a breath of cold air: “Then his opponent is not simple, they actually plotted Xue Song Zi’s death.”

Even though he said that, Hei Cheng was even more wary of Qin Bai Sheng.

This Qin Bai Sheng had both brains and brawn, not only did he have immense battle strength, he could make such a deduction in such a short time with just this much information. In terms of plotting and scheming, they were above his fighting power.

“Perhaps it was because I was too reluctant to waste our limited communication method. A lesson to be learned.” Qin Bai Sheng sighed eerily, but he soon smiled: “But we have already dismantled eight cloud buildings, I have understood the formation cores of these cloud buildings, and made a mortal killer move that can allow us to find the remaining cloud buildings. But in here, to use this mortal killer move, we will need to use immortal killer moves to protect it.”

“He made a mortal killer move just like this? What attainment level does he have?” Hei Cheng’s heart jumped.

Qin Bai Sheng started to transmit to the others, he called the mysterious black robed Gu Immortal to his side, in order to protect him while he used the mortal and immortal killer moves. This showed that Qin Bai Sheng did not trust Hei Cheng at all.

He even ordered Hui Feng Zi and He Lang Zi to rush to the place where Xue Song Zi died.

Qin Bai Sheng lent Xue Song Zi Immortal Gu, but he also took the chance to use his immortal level technique on Xue Song Zi, allowing him to track him.

This matter was not concealed from Xue Song Zi.

When Qin Bai Sheng lent him the Immortal Gu, he said: “If I do not use tracking methods on you, if you run away after borrowing my Immortal Gu, what will I do?”

Based on the promise of giving him the Immortal Gu after the battle, Xue Song Zi relented.

Thus, back then, Xue Song Zi smiled and flattered, willingly allowing Qin Bai Sheng to use the tracking method on him.

With the proper direction, He Lang Zi and Hui Feng Zi quickly got to Xue Song Zi’s place of demise.

Seeing the lump of meat paste on the ground, He Lang Zi snorted in disdain: “What a useless fool.”

Hui Feng Zi flew down and scouted the place, after seeing no traps, he carefully observed Xue Song Zi’s mushed corpse.

Soon, his gaze firmed, he had a discovery: “This is troublesome, the other party has a strength path killer move, Xue Song Zi died from this move, this is a powerful move that has great force!”

Hui Feng Zi’s analysis was correct.

Fang Yuan’s immortal killer move, myriad self, was no longer like before.

Even though he could not use cleanse soul Immortal Gu, he had self strength Immortal Gu, pulling mountain Immortal Gu, and pulling water Immortal Gu, these three strength path core Gu.

It was uncommon for three strength path Immortal Gu to be perfectly fused into one immortal killer move.

He Lang Zi had some doubts regarding Hui Feng Zi’s words, in fact, he had deep wariness towards all human Gu Immortals.

He descended as well, standing beside Xue Song Zi’s corpse, his head turned into a wolf’s head, as his wolf pupils shined eerily, they shined with a green light as he looked around. At the same time, he sniffed, trying to find some important information.

Soon, He Lang Zi’s expression turned ugly, he said solemnly: “Rank seven strength path, it is truly rare, is this Domination Immortal?”

But he continued: “No matter what, let’s destroy this cloud building first.”

He Lang Zi was like a wild beast, he acted very directly.

Hui Feng Zi nodded, he looked around vigilantly, he was afraid of the rank seven strength path expert, he might be lurking around.

“Hello brothers, you came really quickly. My name is Xing Xiang Zi, I am guarding this cloud building. May I know who both of you are?” Fang Yuan flew out of the cloud building.

“Be careful, this is a star path rank six Gu Immortal.” Hui Feng Zi transmitted to He Lang Zi.

He Lang Zi nodded silently.

He understood Hui Feng Zi’s words, the other party might have two Gu Immortals with one hiding somewhere. Xue Song Zi might have been schemed into death by them!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 876: Star Cloud Grindstone, Star Snake Rope

Hui Feng Zi and He Lang Zi stared at Fang Yuan vigilantly.

Currently, Fang Yuan was wearing a blue robe, traces of starlight was flowing out of his large sleeves at times.

He was no longer burly and brawny, he was thin and tall.

His skin was not green like his zombie appearance, it was tender and white like a baby, radiating with a faintly red hue. His features also became very refined, together with his long and smooth white hair, he looked like an unfettered expert with an immortal’s flair.

After obtaining change form Immortal Gu, vaguely familiar face’s effect rose greatly, it allowed Fang Yuan to hugely change his appearance.

‘Xing Xiang Zi? Never heard of him.’ He Lang Zi frowned, ruthless light flickered in his eyes, from the moment he got here, he felt something strange.

“You are a Northern Plains Gu Immortal?” Hui Feng Zi’s expression changed, he looked very calm but was secretly on alert that there might be a rank seven strength path Gu Immortal hiding nearby.

Fang Yuan waved his sleeves, laughing heartily: “I am a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, I am an insignificant lone cultivator. Both of you are famous characters in Northern Plains, we cannot be compared.”

He knew about He Lang Zi, although he did not recognize Hui Feng Zi, but viewing this situation, He Lang Zi and Hui Feng Zi were moving side by side. According to He Lang Zi’s wild nature, he could deduce that Hui Feng Zi had strength that was not inferior to He Lang Zi!

“Since you know about our fame, why are you not retreating? If we really fight, it would be unwise for you to die in my hands.” Hui Feng Zi sneered, his gaze was like a dagger piercing towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly and helplessly: “A promise is a promise, even though I am not good at fighting, I will have to challenge both of you. Please!”

He spoke nonsense with his mouth, but he was quite overjoyed internally.

Vaguely familiar face’s effect was quite good.

Both of them were rank seven, the moment Fang Yuan appeared, they must have used their investigative killer moves.

But now it seemed that neither of them had any suspicion towards Fang Yuan’s identity.

If they found out about Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie status, He Lang Zi would have attacked already. Star path rank six was already lower than his cultivation level, an immortal zombie would be even lower.

Of course, there was a possibility that they had found out, but were just trying to probe the situation.

Hui Feng Zi and He Lang Zi looked at Xing Xiang Zi in front of them, even though he was rank six and had lower cultivation level, he was inviting them to battle. Unconsciously, they thought about the hidden strength path Gu Immortal.

The two demonic path immortals looked at each other, Hui Feng Zi said to He Lang Zi: “Why don’t you attack, I will assist you by the side.”

He Lang Zi was also very wary of the rank seven strength path Gu Immortal that killed Xue Song Zi.

“Since Hui Feng Zi is keeping watch, if the mysterious rank seven strength path Gu Immortal attacks during battle, there is not much to worry about. I have a really strong feeling that something is amiss, but I don’t know what.”

He Lang Zi frowned slightly, nodding at Hui Feng Zi.

At the next moment, he growled as he pounced at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan saw that the famous demon of Northern Plains, He Lang Zi, was charging at him, he smiled lightly.

“Let’s start.” Fang Yuan pushed forward with both hands, using an immortal killer move.

At that instant, starlight shone as a spiral of starlight clouds gathered and formed. In a few breaths of time, it was the size of two or three elephants.

This spiral of star clouds spun rapidly, emitting an suction force towards the outside.

Star path immortal killer move — Star Cloud Grindstone!

This was Star Lord Wan Xiang’s defensive killer move, all long range attacks could be sucked in and grinded into pieces by the star cloud grindstone.

In regards to a close range fighter like He Lang Zi, once he enters the star cloud grindstone, he would be restricted in movement and would be crushed slowly by the grindstone.

In other words, this was a defensive killer move with very strong offensive power.

Howl!

He Lang Zi’s body shined with a bright light, the light was dazzling and even

Fang Yuan had to shut his eyes momentarily.

At the next moment, the light faded and a wolf appeared.

This wolf was not large, it was even smaller than usual wolves. But it emitted a dangerous aura, Fang Yuan’s eyelids jumped.

It had no fur on its body, it was like an oiled brown wooden statue, emitting an eerie aura.

On the wolf’s head, there was a naturally growing mushroom-like bone, it resembled a black triangular hat.

Below the hat, in the wolf’s eyes, there were no shiny pupils, instead, two lumps of green flames were burning quietly.

A rank seven desolate beast that ate soul beasts as food.

Fragrant Sorcerer Yin Statue Wolf!

After He Lang Zi transformed into the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf, his speed was three times that of before! He was like a lump of shadow, flickering before Fang Yuan’s eyes.

“Such great speed! My investigative killer move could not capture it!” Fang Yuan’s heart jumped.

No matter what fight Gu Immortals were in, speed was always a crucial factor.

Whoever was faster would have the initiative, advancing or retreating could be easily achieved.

The slower one would not be able to hit the other party if they attacked, if they wanted to retreat, they would be obstructed.

He Lang Zi was indeed a famous transformation path demonic immortal of Northern Plains, in his human form, his battle strength could be considered to possibly only be at the level of rank six peak stage.

But the moment he transformed into a fierce beast, his battle strength surged, it proved that he had undeniable strength living up to his reputation!

At this moment, Fang Yuan was at a disadvantage, he lost the initiative but he was not flustered.

Even though he had an incomplete strength path immortal killer move — three pairs of true solid bat wings, he could activate them but he showed no signs of using them at all.

True solid bat wings was a top tier mortal killer move, once the chance of activating iron crown eagle strength Immortal Gu along with it occurred, he would be able to unleash speed equal to an immortal killer move. Thus, it was an incomplete immortal killer move.

But this effect of this movement killer move was too unstable. Moreover, even if he could activate the iron crown eagle strength Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan’s speed would still be slower than the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf.

This ancient desolate beast wolf could fight on par with rank seven Gu Immortals, it was well known for speed and agility.

Furthermore, if Fang Yuan used true solid bat wings now, he would be exposing his identity as a strength path Gu Immortal.

This was not a good idea.

Fang Yuan purposely transformed into the appearance of a star path Gu Immortal now, he was using the two strong foes to test his star path techniques, to assess his gains in Hu Immortal blessed land these last days while trying to absorb this new battle style!

The fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf howled intensely, its speed was so fast that Fang Yuan could not sense it, it was faster than lightning, in the blink of an eye, it was right in front of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s expression did not change, he made a move that was out of He Lang Zi’s expectations.

He jumped and went into the star cloud grindstone that was activated earlier.

He Lang Zi had wanted to avoid the star cloud grindstone and directly attack Fang Yuan. Thus, both mentally and physically, he was seeking to avoid this star cloud grindstone.

Fang Yuan jumping inside was really out of He Lang Zi’s expectations.

Shhh!

With a soft sound, the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf’s claws scratched Fang Yuan’s back.

The fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf was simply too fast. Even though Fang Yuan wanted to dodge it and escape into the star cloud grindstone, he was still scratched on his back by He Lang Zi.

But this scratch was only a graze, it did not cause much damage to Fang Yuan.

The immortal zombie body in itself had great defense.

Fang Yuan’s blue robe was torn, but the injury on his back was only on the surface, his spine and bones were untouched. When blood spewed, the flesh moved as the injury mended quickly, in a few breaths of time, his injury was gone.

But the blood was still in the air, it gradually changed color and revealed its true form — several drops of immortal zombie blood.

“Oh? This is a flaw in vaguely familiar face.” Fang Yuan saw the drops of immortal zombie blood, he took note of this mentally.

At the next moment, he waved his sleeves as he drew the immortal zombie blood inside them, he stood in the middle of the star cloud grindstone as he looked at the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf which was outside, he smiled and invited: “Sir He Lang Zi has incredible agility, would you like to fight me inside here?”

Why was star cloud grindstone a defensive killer move and not an offensive killer move, this was the reason!

Fang Yuan was fighting inside now, star cloud grindstone would crush the enemy at all times, while Fang Yuan would be unharmed and unobstructed.

Fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf stared at the star cloud grindstone intently, in its huge empty eyes, a pair of eerie flames were burning, it made Fang Yuan feel a surge of battle intent from He Lang Zi.

He Lang Zi was ready to pounce, as Fang Yuan focused his attention.

But at the next moment, the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf turned around and gave up on the enemy, it pounced at the cloud building.

‘Why should I fight with you?’

‘My target is to dismantle as many cloud buildings as possible! To destroy this damned twelve wave cloud confusion Gu formation!’

At this moment, He Lang Zi was laughing to himself internally.

He Lang Zi’s move was directly targeting Fang Yuan’s weakness, he had to make a tough decision now.

The reason why Fang Yuan was here was to defend the cloud building, and try to stall for time.

But now, He Lang Zi was attacking the cloud building and ignoring Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan was forced to make a different move!

If Fang Yuan stood on the spot and did not move, allowing He Lang Zi to destroy the cloud building, they would reach their goal and triumph. if Fang Yuan chased after him, he might get into physical danger. But the problem was, he could not match He Lang Zi’s speed after he transformed into the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf.

Passive, Fang Yuan was in a very passive spot now.

Gu Immortals were still Gu Immortals after all, in battle, they were much tougher to deal with than desolate beasts or ancient desolate beasts.

He Lang Zi attacked twice, the first time he got around the star cloud grindstone and attacked Fang Yuan, this time, he ignored Fang Yuan and went for the cloud building, he was truly displaying the spirit of ‘Besiege Wei to Rescue Zhao 1 ‘.

‘Besiege Wei to Rescue Zhao’, this was something Fang Yuan had read about in his previous life on Earth, but this Gu Master world was also quite extraordinary, there was a similar type of wisdom here.

Battles between Gu Immortals were full of such wisdom. Not only was there frontal assault based on their strength, there was also the element of planning and scheming against one another.

Seeing that the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf was charging for the cloud building, Fang Yuan, who was inside the star cloud grindstone, was not anxious, instead he smiled lightly.

Immortal killer move — Star Snake Rope!

At the edge of the star cloud grindstone, six ropes flew out. The ropes were thin, they were formed from condensed starlight, the ends of the ropes were shining in blue starlight, forming into the appearances of snake heads.

Six ropes that were like six agile snakes flew forth, they sinuously moved along and coiled around the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf’s body.

“Sir He Lang Zi, where are you going? Please come in here and fight.” Fang Yuan laughed as he moved the star cloud grindstone, together with the ropes, he dragged the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf into the star cloud grindstone.

“Oh? These two immortal killer moves can coordinate with each other. This is a good battle tactic.” At once, even Hui Feng Zi praised as a sharp light flashed in his eyes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 877: Six Illusion Star Bodies, Position Star Swap

When star snake rope was coordinated with star cloud grindstone, their power would amplify. Even though the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf was an ancient desolate beast, it did not have great strength, and because He Lang Zi was not perfectly transformed into it, he was pulled by the star snake ropes helplessly, his struggles were futile as he was dragged back by Fang Yuan.

He Lang Zi was trapped inside the star cloud grindstone, countless starlight specks assaulted him, grinding against his wolf body, his muscles were tense as he felt increasing pressure.

At the same time, the six star snake ropes were coiling around the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf’s body, they tightened and quickly created evident marks on the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf’s body.

He Lang Zi could not open his mouth, he only felt an increasing force on him, his bones were starting to creak.

He Lang Zi was not flustered, thoughts flashed in his head rapidly: “This transformation only obtains the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf’s speed, I lack defense and strength. This person has a deep foundation in his soul, earlier I used the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf to scratch him, but it was as if nothing happened! Clearly the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf’s soul injuring attacks have little effect on him.”

In an instant, He Lang Zi had thought it through.

Even though the wolf’s mouth was tied up, this did not impede He Lang Zi from using Gu worms, he growled angrily: “Since you are courting death, I will grant it to you!”

As he said that, lightning burst out.

Large amounts of lightning shot out in all directions.

Rumble!

Balls of lightning exploded fiercely.

Fang Yuan’s six star snake ropes were drowned in the lightning blast, they first broke apart one by one before becoming decimated.

He Lang Zi regained freedom, his body was bathed in lightning as he growled loudly.

Howl—!

Several breaths of time later, the lightning vanished, and the wolf howl stopped.

What appeared was no longer a fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf, it was a lightning flash giant wolf!

This was also an ancient desolate beast, having rank seven battle strength.

The giant wolf was as large as an elephant, it was covered in blue fur, the tips of the furs were all covered in mysterious blue crystals, they gave off a weak spark.

The fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf was physically weaker, while lightning flash giant wolf was strong and mighty.

“He actually turned his dao marks into lightning path so quickly! Earlier, the flash of lightning must have been some sort of immortal killer move, it actually has such an amazing effect.”

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, he mentally took note of this precious information.

If he fought He Lang Zi in the future, Fang Yuan would attempt to thwart the immortal killer move earlier and prevent He Lang Zi from transforming successfully.

He missed his chance this time.

He Lang Zi would not give Fang Yuan this opportunity.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan knew that this battle was going to be a loss, he only needed to stall for as long as he could.

He was facing two rank seven Gu Immortals, they were both famous experts. They were also from Northern Plains, having superior battle strength as compared to the other four regions.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan only had rank six star path cultivation now, this time, he was trying to test out vaguely familiar face, as well as the star path killer moves in battle.

A moment later.

Boom!

With a loud bang, a lightning pillar burst into the sky, the star cloud grindstone was on the verge of destruction and could not be maintained anymore.

Fang Yuan’s blue robe had many tatters and tears, his body was covered in countless injuries.

Thankfully, this lightning caused the injuries to be charred, no blood spewed out, so Fang Yuan could continue concealing his identity.

The lightning flash giant wolf howled smugly, speaking human words: “Not a battlefield killer move, yet trying to trap me? Hmph, you are too naive, now die!”

Saying this, he opened his mouth and shot out a beam of lightning.

The lightning pillar approached Fang Yuan with incredible might, Fang Yuan’s face was reflecting the blue light as his eyes shined with slight brilliance, he still maintained his composure: “Hehe, if you want me dead, that will not be easy.”

Saying this, Fang Yuan’s body shook, as he turned into six figures and flew out, causing the lightning beam to hit nothing.

Star path immortal killer move – Six Illusion Star Bodies!

“He split into six, which one is the real body?” Hui Feng Zi was observing the battle, as he was wary of the strength path Gu Immortal that was lurking, he did not join the fight.

The six bodies drew an trail of blue starlight behind them in the air as they encircled the lightning flash giant wolf, attacking together.

At once, starlight flew out as countless mortal killer moves were used on the lightning flash giant wolf.

He Lang Zi activated his defenses, enduring the attacks from Fang Yuan as he counterattacked fiercely.

But after he spent a lot of effort to kill one of Fang Yuan’s illusion bodies, another one would be created in its place.

He Lang Zi attacked left and right, killing a total of eight illusion bodies of Fang Yuan, this could be said to be easily defeating them, but the illusion bodies regenerated after dying, they were endless!

There were still six Fang Yuans encircling the lightning flash giant wolf as they attacked relentlessly.

He Lang Zi felt a huge headache.

Here, he could only use immortal killer moves to defend himself, he was expending rank seven immortal essence. But his opponent was only using mortal killer moves, he was expending primeval essence.

In this exchange of moves, he was making a huge loss!

But he had to defend himself, his body could not endure such constant attacks.

He displayed his attacking methods, but Fang Yuan’s six illusion star bodies were unending, at once, Fang Yuan obtained the initiative for the first time, he gained some control of the situation.

At this time, He Lang Zi’s investigative methods were put to test.

“Damn it, this lightning flash giant wolf has great attacking power, but it is not suited for investigation. It has low speed as well, even if I want to attack the cloud building, I would be obstructed by the enemy. Do I need to transform back into the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf?”

He Lang Zi gritted his teeth secretly.

Transformation path Gu cultivators could only transform a certain number of times in a period of time.

This was because their dao marks changed after transforming successfully. When they change into other life forms, the dao marks of the previous transformation would remain, the transformation path Gu Immortal would need to use appropriate Gu worms to cleanse their own body and get rid of those remaining dao marks completely, otherwise, there would be huge harm to themselves.

He Lang Zi was able to transform into the lightning flash giant wolf from the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf earlier so quickly because he had used a lightning path immortal killer move.

This move not only attacked the star snake ropes that restricted him, it also destroyed the soul path dao marks on He Lang Zi’s body.

Thus, He Lang Zi was able to transform into the lightning flash giant wolf rapidly.

But if He Lang Zi wanted to transform into the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf from his current lightning flash giant wolf form, he would need a soul path immortal killer move that he did not have.

Immortal killer moves were extremely precious, they were very difficult to deduce.

He Lang Zi was a person with fortuitous encounters, otherwise with just his lone cultivator status, he would not have his current achievements. Unfortunately, the inheritances that he obtained were all incomplete, they were lacking to a huge degree.

He was not like Xue Song Zi who had just died, having obtained a complete snow path inheritance from Qin Bai Sheng, and having a set of immortal killer moves to use in succession.

He was not like Fang Yuan either, having obtained a complete star path inheritance from Star Lord Wan Xiang, star cloud grindstone, star snake rope, six illusion star bodies were all created by using Star Mark, Star Shoot, and Starlight, these three Immortal Gu as the cores, they also smoothly complemented each other.

Hei Lou Lan tried all ways possible to turn the mortal killer move, self strength giant phantom, into an immortal killer move. She had a good foundation already, but she still faced great difficulty.

Even though Fang Yuan had grandmaster attainment in strength path, and the help of the light of wisdom, he did not dare to deduce other strength path immortal killer moves casually. It was not that he was incapable of doing so, but because the time and effort needed was too much.

He Lang Zi did not have any wisdom path foundation, to deduce a suitable immortal killer move for himself, that was immensely more difficult!

Of course, with He Lang Zi’s strength, if he wanted to endure Fang Yuan’s attacks while getting rid of his lightning path dao marks, it was not impossible. He had a higher cultivation level, Fang Yuan’s strength was inferior to his.

But that way, he would drag it out for too long.

While He Lang Zi was hesitant, Hui Feng Zi struck.

Fang Yuan’s attacks came to a halt, he was surprised to find out that on his head, there was a green feather.

“When was I hit? What immortal killer move is this, it can actually expose my true body?” Fang Yuan was shocked.

Hui Feng Zi had been using his investigative immortal killer move the moment Fang Yuan used six illusion star bodies, after exposing Fang Yuan’s true body, he immediately used another immortal killer move to mark him.

Even though Hui Feng Zi was not engaged in the battle, wary of a lurking strength path Gu Immortal, it did not mean that he could not do anything.

Fang Yuan was fighting two strong enemies alone, and they were both rank seven Gu Immortals, his disadvantage was great.

Once Fang Yuan’s true body was exposed, he was attacked by the lightning flash giant wolf with precision.

Left without a choice, Fang Yuan activated star cloud grindstone and placed it in front of him.

But the lightning flash giant wolf was an ancient desolate beast, it shot out fierce lightning and several star cloud grindstones were destroyed one after another.

Fang Yuan quickly moved his other five star bodies to disrupt He Lang Zi.

If He Lang Zi was an ancient desolate beast, he might have gotten distracted. But he had the intelligence and wisdom of a human, he ignored these star bodies and only attacked Fang Yuan’s main body.

Fang Yuan was getting into a passive position, in front of him, the star cloud grindstone was being destroyed by the lightning pillar, and behind the lightning pillar, the lightning flash giant wolf was charging at him.

Immortal killer move — Position Star Swap!

Fang Yuan’s body shined with starlight, he vanished on the spot and appeared somewhere else, he directly replaced one of the six illusion star bodies.

This was a movement killer move that was recorded in Star Lord Wan Xiang’s inheritance, it could allow Fang Yuan to vanish and take the place of one of the star bodies at any point in time.

After replacing it, the original illusion body would disappear, and on the battlefield, other than Fang Yuan’s main body, only four illusion bodies would be left.

But soon, Fang Yuan willed and another illusion star body appeared, standing beside him. The number of illusion star bodies on the field reached the maximum capacity again.

At once, the lightning flash giant wolf that He Lang Zi transformed into opened its mouth wide, unable to close it.

He’s gaze also froze for a breath’s time.

Position star swap and six illusion star bodies were two immortal killer moves that worked together really well, this was a shameless tactic that caused the two experts, Hui Feng Zi and He Lang Zi to become speechless.

Unless they had a method to counter it, or if they could resolve one of the two star path killer moves, Fang Yuan was a very troublesome character to deal with now.

Unfortunately, neither Hui Feng Zi or He Lang Zi had any way to counter this. To unravel an unknown immortal killer move, they would need a strong wisdom path foundation, it could not be done quickly.

However, just as Fang Yuan and He Lang Zi went into a deadlock, Hui Feng Zi made up his mind and struck.

Immortal killer move — Wind Escape!

He turned into a gust of wind, vanishing on the spot.

At the next moment, he appeared outside the cloud building, opening his mouth wide.

Immortal killer move — Death Wind Flying Blade!

A wind blade flew out of Hui Feng Zi’s mouth, slashing at the cloud building’s top floor.

The cloud building only lasted for a breath’s time before it was cut into two by this sharp wind blade!

“Wind escape? A top tier movement killer move in Northern Plains! He is Hui Feng Zi!” At that instant, Fang Yuan realized Hui Feng Zi’s identity, he shouted for Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit appeared immediately, grabbing Fang Yuan’s arm as they vanished on the spot with a swoosh.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 878: Moment of Crisis

When Fang Yuan was able to see again, he was already in another cloud building.

Fang Yuan let out a breath of turbid air, it might have been difficult to withdraw without Lang Ya land spirit’s help.

After all, one of the enemies was Hui Feng Zi.

This person was known as among the best in movement speed currently in Northern Plains, he could even outrun rank eight Gu Immortals. He had a shocking achievement of having escaped from Yao Huang.

But difficult did not mean impossible.

Fang Yuan had Fixed Immortal Travel and only needed three breaths of time to escape. Even if Hui Feng Zi was very fast, it would be of no help should he have enough time.

“There were only five cloud buildings remaining in the first place, now we have lost two in a row, and we only delayed the enemies for a short time. The enemies are already attacking, this time, the three of us will move together!” Lang Ya land spirit instructed with a serious expression.

When Lang Ya land spirit spoke, Fang Yuan discovered that besides him and the land spirit, there was an inkman Gu Immortal in the cloud building.

Fang Yuan assessed this inkman Gu Immortal.

The inkman Gu Immortal possessed distinct inkman characteristics — black skin and white hair. He also seemed to be rather old judging by the wrinkles all over his face.

‘Wasn’t it said Inkman City only had one Gu Immortal, the Inkman King Mo Tan

Sang? It seems this inkman Gu Immortal is one of the trump cards of Inkman City, kept hidden ordinarily. My intelligence from Fairy Li Shan had no mention of him. He only made his appearance due to the crisis in Lang Ya blessed land.’

Fang Yuan speculated inwardly.

‘Inkmen are variant humans, there are very few Gu Immortals among variant human tribes. Inkman City being able to conceal a Gu Immortal should already be their limit. But then again, for Inkman City to send out their two Gu Immortals for Lang Ya blessed land, it could be said to be taking a big risk. This means Mo Tan Sang has a lot of trust in Lang Ya land spirit.’

Fang Yuan was able to understand the wider situation with a small clue, he had only just seen this inkman Gu Immortal, but was able to connect this to many things.

This inkman Gu Immortal nodded at Fang Yuan but did not say anything, as if he did not want to have much interaction with Fang Yuan.

This was expected.

Even if Fang Yuan had changed his appearance greatly, he was still a human Gu Immortal.

Currently in the five regions, or even the entire world, variant humans were suppressed, captured and trained as slaves to be sold.

Almost all variant humans were barely staying alive.

This Inkman City in Northern Plains was already an extremely rare and valuable settlement of variant humans.

This was also because the leaders of Inkman City, from generation to generation, were all Gu Immortals.

How could Inkman City exist without the protection of Gu Immortals? Forces both large and small would have already allied to capture the inkmen as slaves.

It could be said that without a Gu Immortal, the lives of variant humans was similar to that of small and tiny tribes, scattered in nooks and crannies over the world.

It was not that variant humans did not want to group together to form middle scale and large scale tribes, but that if their numbers were large, it would be summoning disaster, attracting countless forces to hunt them down and make them slaves.

This aged inkman Gu Immortal seemed to be very much on alert in regards to humans, he only nodded at Fang Yuan and remained at his spot without any intention to communicate.

Fang Yuan also nodded in reply.

Lang Ya land spirit, who was at the side, was frowning as he anxiously looked outside the window, he suddenly spoke: “They arrived so quickly! They are directly charging towards this cloud building, the situation does not look good, they seem to hold some investigative method that targets my twelve wave cloud confusion formation.”

Fang Yuan quickly looked outside, but only saw the vast fog.

He knew his investigative killer moves were not much good, but Lang Ya land spirit’s words should be true.

Sure enough, several breaths of time later, wind surged, dispelling the thick fog and revealing a clear space.

Two enemy Gu Immortals were proudly standing in the air.

One was wearing a black robe and was very good looking, but because of some injuries, his expression appeared pale, making one feel that although this person was unfettered and elegant, he did not seem to have much longer to live.

He was Hei Cheng.

The other Gu Immortal was wearing martial attire, he had broad shoulders and a thin waist, and his eyes were emitting sharp light, Fang Yuan was familiar with this person — rank seven Gu Immortal, Qin Bai Sheng!

Fang Yuan immediately put most of his attention on Qin Bai Sheng.

In Fang Yuan’s knowledge: This Qin Bai Sheng was extremely strong, an expert at the level of Central Continent’s Shi Lei. If they were to openly fight, Fang Yuan knew he was not Qin Bai Sheng’s match.

One needed to know their limitations.

One of the reasons Fang Yuan could live so long was because he knew himself well enough.

Even though he had the strength path killer move myriad self, and did not lack immortal essence stones for the moment, and also possessed a set of star path immortal killer moves which made up for a lot of his shortcomings, but if they were to truly battle, he could at best only force a draw with difficulty against experts at the level of Old Lord Can Yang, He Lang Zi, Hui Feng Zi and Unfettered Scholar.

He was able to kill Xue Song Zi before, because his luck was good and his plan had succeeded.

He used star path battle strength to deal with He Lang Zi and was able to turn the situation into a stalemate, but He Lang Zi’s third immortal transformation was not forced out. In other words, He Lang Zi still had strength left.

Clearly, the land spirit also knew Qin Bai Sheng’s strength, thus was frowning deeply, mumbling: “Damn it, I am so close. If only I had some time, all these tigers would turn into sick cats!”

He seemed to have some powerful method, but it required time to be put to use.

Unfortunately, the enemies did not intend to give any time to Lang Ya land spirit.

The enemies were already closing in on the cloud building, Lang Ya land spirit had no choice but to brace himself to resist.

The next moment, the land spirit turned towards the inkman Gu Immortal in the corner: “Old Mo, you can go first to fight them, try to stall for as much time as possible.”

“Yes, Lord Lang Ya.’ The inkman Gu Immortal slightly bowed before flying out of the cloud building.

“Fang Yuan, be prepared to move out.” Lang Ya land spirit instructed Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan nodded, while thinking inwardly: ‘With just my star path methods, I can only deal with one or two enemies at the level of Hui Feng Zi and He Lang Zi. It is impossible to think of victory, but I can still delay for time. However, in facing Qin Bai Sheng, I must use all my strength, it is absolutely out of question to try to make do with just star path cultivation.’

Just as he was thinking, an extremely intense suppression force spread from ahead.

“What is this?!” The terrifying pressure caused Fang Yuan and Lang Ya land spirit to turn pale.

They quickly looked over, brilliant golden light filled their sight.

After the golden light dispersed, they saw Qin Bai Sheng standing proudly in the air, while Hei Cheng was looking at him from behind as if he was a monster.

And in Qin Bai Sheng’s hands, was a head.

It was the head of that inkman Gu Immortal!

As for this Gu Immortal’s body, it had fallen to the ground.

Qin Bai Sheng had actually killed a rank six Gu Immortal in this breath of time!

What was this speed!

What level of power was this!!

This power which could directly kill an extremely vigilant Gu Immortal, even if it was a variant human, was too terrifying!

Even the experienced and knowledgeable Hei Cheng was dumbstruck. Even though he had personally seen Qin Bai Sheng overpowering He Lang Zi in one move.

But overpowering and killing a Gu Immortal were two different concepts.

The inkman Gu Immortal had just flown over and was just about to say something.

Qin Bai Sheng had immediately attacked.

He did not even give a chance for the enemy to speak.

What was that move?

The Gu Immortals present on the scene, as well as the land spirit, did not have any clues.

“Terrifying! This Qin Bai Sheng’s battle strength has already surpassed Shi Lei, and is fully at the level of Feng Jiu Ge. Let’s retreat!” Fang Yuan bellowed at Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit also came to his senses, and just as Fang Yuan shouted, he grabbed Fang Yuan’s arm and swiftly disappeared from the spot.

“What’s going on?” In another cloud building, Mo Tan Sang was standing guard, and was surprised to see Fang Yuan and Lang Ya land spirit appear so suddenly.

Fang Yuan’s expression was extremely unsightly, he did not know the secrets of Qin Bai Sheng’s background, but that decapitation just now left an extremely deep impression on him.

Lang Ya land spirit was filled with panic as he looked all around: “What should we do?”

His body suddenly shook and he looked towards the northwest direction, his gaze seemingly passing through the cloud building. He was terrified: “They are coming directly towards us. This, what can we do?!”

Mo Tan Sang took a step forward.

He glanced at the ‘stranger’ Fang Yuan, clearly not recognizing Fang Yuan’s appearance.

Mo Tan Sang also did not inquire about Fang Yuan’s identity, and instead asked Lang Ya land spirit a question in concern.

Lang Ya land spirit did not reply to him, he was extremely anxious, this was the first time Mo Tan Sang had seen this.

It was instead Fang Yuan who answered Mo Tan Sang, his voice heavy and filled with apprehension: “That inkman Gu Immortal is dead, he could not last even one move... he was decapitated by Qin Bai Sheng! This battle strength is already comparable to rank eight, only with a large gap in strength can there be this kind of crushing battle result!”

“What? Elder Mo is dead?! Killed in one move by Qin Bai Sheng?” Mo Tan Sang’s whole body shook, revealing a disbelieving and shocked expression.

Soon, the shock on his face disappeared and his gaze became blank.

The death of the old inkman Gu Immortal was a heavy strike to Mo Tan Sang.

Inkman City had two Gu Immortals altogether, now only Mo Tan Sang was left. The disastrous loss was evident.

“How could Qin Bai Sheng be so strong?” Mo Tan Sang’s face was filled with cold sweat as he reacted short after, he was a person of great talent and vision after all, and immediately understood they could only rely on Lang Ya land spirit’s unfathomable depths.

He took another step forward and asked Lang Ya land spirit: “Lord Lang Ya land spirit, what should we do? We cannot stall for time! Can’t you use your rank eight Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron early to forcibly refine the Immortal Gu of these Gu Immortals?”

Rank eight Immortal Gu House... Refinement Cauldron?

‘This is Lang Ya land spirit’s hidden trump card? It seems this Immortal Gu House can actually forcibly refine the Immortal Gu of others?’ Fang Yuan’s heart shook as he heard this secret.

Everything became clear!

It was no wonder that Lang Ya land spirit could resist the invasion of so many Gu Immortals. No wonder Feng Jiu Ge perished here.

With this rank eight Immortal Gu House, Refinement Cauldron, as long as a period of time was given, the Immortal Gu of Gu Immortals would be refined by the land spirit. Moreover, the Gu Immortals could only use Immortal Gu and immortal killer moves here.

If their Immortal Gu were refined by others, then the Gu Immortals could only let others trample upon them.

No wonder Lang Ya land spirit could capture so many Gu Immortals alive.

This rank eight Immortal Gu House could refine the Immortal Gu of other Gu Immortals, isolating them from immortal apertures, this power was inconceivably strong!

However, when Fang Yuan thought of it, it was also not strange.

Long Hair Ancestor was the creator of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, it was justifiable for him to be able to create another rank eight Immortal Gu House in Refinement Cauldron.

“If I could forcibly refine the Gu, I would have already done so. What to do? What to do? There is not enough time!!” Lang Ya land spirit raved as he paced around the room in panic.

Mo Tan Sang had helped resist two waves of attacks, but he had never seen Lang Ya land spirit in such panic, his heart could not help but sink.

‘Don’t tell me, not only did I mess up Northern Plains, I even affected Lang Ya blessed land and am causing it to be destroyed earlier?’ Fang Yuan’s mood was also heavy.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 879: Long Hair Ancestor’s Secret

Heavenly Court.

Countless halls radiated with dazzling lights.

Inside Heaven Overseeing Tower, there were four rank eight Gu Immortals: Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, Bai Cang Shui, Lian Jiu Sheng, and Bi Chen Tian, they were at the east, south, west, and north directions respectively.

The huge Gu formation was showing a grand image in the sky.

Countless precious immortal materials were tossed in like they were cheap vegetables found in the market.

In the image formed by the refinement path Gu formation, these immortal materials were processed at a rapid speed.

At this point, they had already expended half of the success dao marks that they had obtained from the Infallible inheritance.

The female Gu Immortal, Bai Cang Shui’s eyes shined brightly as she stared at the refinement path Gu formation. This was the first time she was involved in the recovery of fate Gu, this was also the first time she had come across such an incredible refinement path Gu formation.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord held his walking stick as he captured all of Bai Cang Shui’s expressions with his eyes, he spoke: “Fairy Cang Shui, if you want this refinement path Gu formation, you only need to pay thirty thousand contribution points to get it.”

Bai Cang Shui's expression changed, she understood Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord's meaning, he was reminding her: Now is the crucial period for repairing fate Immortal Gu, stop staring at the refinement path Gu formation and causing yourself to be distracted.

"I am ashamed." Bai Cang Shui bowed at Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, sighing: "This Gu formation is really incredible, it has such power. Even if I am not a refinement path Gu Immortal, I can tell that this Gu formation has already touched upon the fundamental meaning of refinement path. But it is like a poem that is only half written, this Gu formation also gives me a sense of being incomplete. It seems that it could be improved further, to become an Immortal Gu House!"

"Hehehe, Fairy Cang Shui is very insightful. But it is impossible to elevate this Gu formation into an Immortal Gu House." Lian Jiu Sheng, who had the appearance of a white haired teenager, laughed as he replied.

"Oh? Why is that the case?" Bai Cang Shui's gaze flickered, she showed curiosity on her face.

"The main reason is that we are lacking the most crucial core Immortal Gu. Fairy Cang Shui, you may not know that this refinement path Gu formation is only a mimicry of Long Hair Ancestor's rank eight Immortal Gu House, Refinement Cauldron, by a predecessor of Heavenly Court through countless past records." Lian Jiu Sheng spoke slowly, exposing some secrets: "And this Refinement Cauldron is still inside Lang Ya blessed land, it has all of its core Immortal Gu."

"So that's it." Bai Cang Shui's expression dimmed.

Immortal Gu were unique, Refinement Cauldron was still around now. Thus, it was almost impossible to elevate Heavenly Court's Gu formation.

"Of course, we can make a redesign of Refinement Cauldron and modify this Gu formation, using other Immortal Gu as the core, to achieve a similar effect. But this is very difficult, back then when Long Hair Ancestor created the Immortal Gu Houses, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and Refinement Cauldron, other than the fact that he was a refinement path supreme grandmaster, there was another reason, he had a wisdom path great grandmaster friend — Immortal Yi Yan." Lian Jiu Sheng sighed deeply.

Immortal Yi Yan, he was the creator of the Prophecy of Three Venerables.

He was an actual wisdom path great grandmaster, his predictions were very accurate.

"Immortal Yi Yan, Long Hair Ancestor..." Bai Cang Shui muttered, she suddenly thought of something, she asked: "That's right. Back then, why didn't we recruit Long Hair Ancestor into Heavenly Court? He is a refinement path supreme grandmaster, but he only had rank eight cultivation level, he was not an invincible rank nine Gu Immortal. Even if he was a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, we in Heavenly Court have our methods, we can change his aura from Northern Plains to Central Continent."

"Indeed, there were only three people who were at Long Hair Ancestor's level. Why did Heavenly Court not recruit them?" Lian Jiu Sheng was also uncertain.

Bi Chen Tian was silent.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord laughed, he said with an arrogant tone: "That is because Long Hair Ancestor was not a human, he was a hairy man! No matter how strong he was, or how great his refinement path attainment was, he could not enter Heavenly Court. Heavenly Court is the sanctuary of us humans, how can we let these lowly variant humans in?”

“Oh? It is actually like this... Long Hair Ancestor was a hairy man?” The other three Gu Immortals looked at each other, this was the first time they had heard of such a secret.

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

Out of the original five cloud buildings, three were destroyed, only two were left.

On Qin Bai Sheng’s side, Xue Song Zi died.

On Lang Ya land spirit’s side, an inkman Gu Immortal died as well.

Qin Bai Sheng showed terrifying battle strength, he was unstoppable, he directly charged towards the cloud building that Lang Ya land spirit, Fang Yuan, and Mo Tan Sang were guarding, Lang Ya land spirit was pacing around in anxiety now.

“What will we do? What will we do!”

“The enemy is too strong, we cannot hold on much longer.”

“Even though we have two cloud buildings left, it is already a fact that we are going to lose...”

“Damn it, this is so frustrating!”

“Do I have to let him out?”

“No, if I let him out, I will be locked in. Who knows when I will be able to come out again.”

“I arranged this Lang Ya blessed land painstakingly, who knows if that maniac would raise it into a grotto-heaven...”

“That maniac’s ambition is too great, he will definitely cause Lang Ya blessed land to be destroyed!”

Lang Ya land spirit was in a panicked state, his muttering was turning into a nonsensical grumble, it was making Fang Yuan and Mo Tan Sang feel a sense of anxiety and frustration.

Fang Yuan was still fine, he had Fixed Immortal Travel.

But Mo Tan Sang was really uneasy now.

The other inkman Gu Immortal was already dead, if he also died here, all of the hundreds of thousands of inkmen in Inkman City would face great danger.

Without a Gu Immortal’s protection, with so many inkmen in Inkman City, they would definitely be a huge target, countless hungry and greedy jackals would come and compete to enslave them.

The inkmen citizens would face a terrible fate, they would become slaves and live in danger and suffering.

“Lord land spirit, you have to stay calm! We are all depending on you!! Long Hair Ancestor was an esteemed person who could talk on equal terms with a Demon Venerable, think about it carefully, there has to be a way to deal with the enemy!” Mo Tan Sang got closer to Lang Ya land spirit as he urged.

“Don’t force me, don’t force me!” Lang Ya land spirit was gripping his hair, he shook his head incessantly.

Mo Tan Sang’s anxiety became worse, he grabbed the land spirit’s arm as he shook the land spirit: “Lang Ya land spirit, you have to regain your clear-mindedness!!”

Ah——!

Lang Ya land spirit seemed to have reached his limits, he raised his head and screamed.

Boom!

A huge force burst out from Lang Ya land spirit’s body.

Mo Tan Sang was caught off guard, he spat out blood as he was pushed away like a tattered doll. He crashed onto the wall and slowly fell onto the ground.

“You, you are not Lang Ya land spirit?” Mo Tan Sang stared with wide opened eyes, shouting at Lang Ya land spirit in disbelief.

The land spirit originally had white hair and had a sagely demeanor, but now he was different! He was muscular and strong, about the same height as Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body. He had large shoulders and a thick waist, the muscles on his body were bursting with energy, giving off terrifying signals.

Most conspicuously, his entire body was growing with thick hair, the brown hair was almost covering his entire body.

His eyes were bloodshot, fangs were exposed in his mouth as his lips curled up, showing a sinister smile.

In an instant, Lang Ya land spirit had turned from an old human man into a muscular hairy man!

Fang Yuan was also very surprised by Lang Ya land spirit’s transformation.

Immediately, he took a few steps back as he looked at Lang Ya land spirit warily.

Lang Ya land spirit slowly raised his head, he looked at Mo Tan Sang who was sitting on the ground, sighing deeply: “How can I not be Lang Ya land spirit? Hehehe, how many years has it been, ever since that myriad tribulation... hmph, because I was weakened severely, that weak fellow took over control.”

Lang Ya land spirit said that and shouted loudly, raising his head: “How many years has it been!”

He sucked in a deep breath, he showed an excited and ruthless expression, he clenched his fists, his bulging muscles were thicker than Mo Tan Sang’s legs: “I am finally back!”

Fang Yuan was frowning, he had a few questions internally as he retreated again by a few steps.

“Hehehe, you two do not need to be suspicious, I am Lang Ya land spirit, the real deal!” Lang Ya land spirit raised his head, his gaze was like a dagger as he stared right at Fang Yuan and Mo Tan Sang.

“My main body was a hairy man, but after I died, I had two obsessions. There was only one land spirit position, but the two obsessions were equally matched, neither could suppress the other. In the end, we could only combine together and become Lang Ya land spirit. The one you two are familiar with is merely the obsession over space escape Immortal Gu.” Lang Ya land spirit snorted, explaining.

“Two obsessions...” Mo Tan Sang’s expression froze.

Fang Yuan reacted much quicker than him, he asked: “Then, land spirit, what is your condition for acknowledging a new master?”

The earlier Lang Ya land spirit’s condition was to solve the issue of why space escape Immortal Gu could not enter the Space Cave.

Fang Yuan definitely could not fulfill it.

But now, Lang Ya land spirit had changed greatly, according to his words, he had a different obsession. In that case, his condition would definitely be different as well!

“Hmph! To get me to acknowledge a new master, you are not qualified!” The hairy man Lang Ya land spirit stared at Fang Yuan, he had a more arrogant and strong tone than his human form.

“How am I not qualified?” Fang Yuan did not lose his temper, he asked calmly.

Lang Ya land spirit crossed his arms, he laughed arrogantly: “My ambition is to make all of the hairy men in the world become the ones in charge! Any variant human, including you humans, has to cower at the feet of us hairy men. You will all become the slaves of hairy men, begging for survival at our feet, as tiny insignificant ants. Whichever hairy man can achieve this target would become the new master of Lang Ya land spirit. Hahaha...”

Mo Tan Sang was stunned.

Fang Yuan was speechless.

No wonder he was not qualified, because Fang Yuan was not a hairy man! He could not even attempt this.

‘Having two obsessions is not impossible in theory.’

‘No wonder Long Hair Ancestor was called long hair, his real identity was a hairy man!’

‘So this is why Long Hair Ancestor had incredible talent, but in history, there were no records of him ever being recruited by Heavenly Court.’

‘No wonder... When I asked Lang Ya land spirit to sell me hairy man slaves in the past, he rejected me directly with a firm stance.’

Fang Yuan started to believe Lang Ya land spirit’s words.

After all, from start to finish, he was watching the entire scene. He had confirmed this using dozens of investigative killer moves.

“This means that after Long Hair Ancestor died, he had two obsessions. One was his refinement path obsession, it was concerning space escape Immortal Gu and Great Dream Immortal Venerable. The other obsession was his species obsession, because Long Hair Ancestor was a hairy man, and because hairy men were suppressed by humans, such a strong obsession formed in him!”

Fang Yuan’s expression turned grave.

The Lang Ya land spirit in front of him not only had a change in appearance, his personality also changed completely.

Their earlier relationship was useless now. At this moment, what attitude would this Lang Ya land spirit have towards the human Fang Yuan?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 880: Fearsome! Lang Ya Land Spirit versus Qin Bai Sheng!

“Don’t be nervous lad, I will not attack you.” Lang Ya land spirit stared at Fang Yuan with the eyes of a tiger, he said with a playful tone: “Although you, lad, have taken advantage of me many times.”

“All of those deals earlier were fair transactions!” Fang Yuan had a plain expression as he denied the accusations.

“Hmph, you were able to develop to this extent, one reason was that you had obtained quite a lot of resources from that weak fellow. But I do not mind it, we can still cooperate.” Lang Ya land spirit said coldly.

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes, he said with seeming disbelief: “Aren’t you thinking of toppling humans, and establishing the rulership of hairy men?”

“Of course I am!” Lang Ya land spirit replied without hesitation: “But success is a slow process, we have to walk one step at a time. To fulfill my ambitions, I need to understand reality. Even my main body had to disguise as a human when he was alive. To achieve the hegemony of hairy men, it is a necessity to cooperate with humans.”

Surprise flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

The new Lang Ya land spirit in front of him, even though his obsession was unrealistic, he acted quite logically, he had a deep and clear understanding towards his environment and the situation around him.

Mo Tan Sang got up slowly while the two of them were talking, he healed his injuries.

“My plan is flawless!” Lang Ya land spirit’s eyes shined with brilliance, he said in a profound tone: “First, I will use benefits to rope in a bunch of human Gu Immortals, I will use humans to deal with humans, destroying them from the inside. I will recruit all these human Gu Immortals and make them into the hunting dogs of us hairy men. You are one of my targets, ahaha!”

As he said that, towards the end, he pointed at Fang Yuan and laughed with his head raised up.

Fang Yuan: “...”

Mo Tan Sang: “...”

Land spirit indeed could not lie, he completely exposed all of his schemes and plans!

At the next moment, the land spirit also felt something amiss, he stopped laughing as he stroked his chin, regret flashed across his face as he said: “Ahhh! I got excited and said all of my plans out loud!”

Fang Yuan: “...”

Mo Tan Sang: “...”

“As for you, the inkman Gu Immortal.” At this time, Lang Ya land spirit’s gaze turned from Fang Yuan to Mo Tan Sang: “I am not that weak fellow, because he was afraid of getting exposed, he rejected many opportunities for cooperation with you. I am very interested in all those proposals you gave me. Especially those that involve toppling human tribes and plotting against human tribes! Speaking of which, the humans are too powerful now, against them, we variant humans are natural allies! Work with us hairy men, your Inkman City will develop even faster, it will grow even stronger!”

Mo Tan Sang’s injury was not heavy, he healed quickly.

Hearing Lang Ya land spirit’s words, Mo Tan Sang felt a sense of having good times ahead.

He gave Fang Yuan a subtle glance, at this point, he still did not know that this star path Gu Immortal was the Fang Yuan he knew.

“Hahaha.” Lang Ya land spirit thought of something brilliant, he laughed again: “These stupid inkmen! That’s right, if I want my hairy man race to become the rulers, we will need to make use of these inkmen, feathermen and others. On the day I succeed, I will make all of them slaves, and squeeze out their value. These inkmen in Inkman City could be preferentially treated, of course. After all, they are Immortal Yi Yan’s descendants. Mm... I can make their king into a puppet, haha, this plan is too brilliant.”

Fang Yuan: “...”

Mo Tan Sang: “...”

Lang Ya land spirit saw their speechless expressions and was slightly stunned, he showed a serious expression as he rubbed his chin: “I accidentally said my thoughts out loud again, huh...”

Fang Yuan finally was relieved, such a person like Lang Ya land spirit, how could he possibly achieve the rulership of hairy men?!

Mo Tan Sang covered his face with his hands, even though he was an inkman and not a hairy man, he felt ashamed for Lang Ya land spirit.

As Qin Bai Sheng got closer, the cloud building was already in his attacking range.

“The land spirit and two Gu Immortals are inside the building.” Qin Bai Sheng had quite an impressive investigative immortal killer move, he could see many details of Fang Yuan’s side.

Qin Bai Sheng’s eyes squinted as he flew slower, his right hand waved in front of him.

Bam!

Golden light burst out, the figure of a huge golden hammer formed instantly and shot out, slamming at the cloud building.

The air currents were fierce as the golden hammer figure had a threatening aura, it was even larger than the cloud building! The relatively large cloud building was shrouded under the golden hammer, it became very weak looking.

Metal path immortal killer move — City Crushing Hammer!

“What audacity!” At the next moment, a figure came out of the cloud building, shouting fiercely.

It was Lang Ya land spirit!

The land spirit did not dodge, he directly faced the giant hammer.

The moment his thick and strong arms interacted with the city crushing hammer, dozens of Gu worms flew out and circled around the land spirit.

Rule path immortal killer move — Cleanse Sky!

In an instant, the giant golden hammer vanished without a trace, like it had never existed previously.

Only the air currents that were created by the hammer were left, they caused strong winds to blow unceasingly.

“Lang Ya land spirit?” Seeing the Lang Ya land spirit that had undergone a transformation, even the mysterious Shadow Sect Vice Envoy, Qin Bai Sheng, showed a peculiar expression, he asked uncertainly.

“It is me, your grandfather!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted, after destroying the hammer, he did not fall back, he charged towards Qin Bai Sheng.

He was indeed different from the previous Lang Ya land spirit, their personalities were two different extremes, this one was bold and filled with battle intent.

Fang Yuan and Mo Tan Sang watched from behind with much apprehension.

The land spirit represented the world, it was the most crucial factor when Gu Immortals attacked a blessed land.

Normally speaking, the land spirit would conceal themselves and use the entire blessed land to deal with the invaders. After all, the land spirit could manipulate the blessed land, if it was caught or destroyed, it would be way easier to take down the blessed land!

But Lang Ya land spirit after transforming into a hairy man’s appearance was different, he charged ahead.

Even though Qin Bai Sheng displayed fearsome strength, his terrifying battle strength did not deter Lang Ya land spirit at all!

“Heh.” Hei Cheng who was at the side laughed.

He felt that with Qin Bai Sheng’s strength, Lang Ya land spirit was simply courting his own doom.

But as the target, Qin Bai Sheng had a serious expression.

Since he had invaded Lang Ya blessed land, this was the first time he stepped back and retreated, unexpectedly.

He mainly cultivated soul path and secondarily metal path, a common technique of his was to use the immortal killer move soul suppression, but it was useless on Lang Ya land spirit.

Soul suppression had a huge advantage because Qin Bai Sheng used his own soul’s foundation to suppress his enemies. The difference in soul foundation made the immortal killer move, soul suppression, have an immense effect.

Earlier in Luo Po valley, Qin Bai Sheng used soul suppression and defeated He Lang Zi, who had transformed into a giant wolf, in one move.

Just earlier, Qin Bai Sheng used the soul suppression killer move and immobilized the inkman Gu Immortal, before using a metal path killer move to behead the inkman Gu Immortal!

But against Lang Ya land spirit, soul suppression had no effect.

The reason?

Because Lang Ya land spirit was a special existence, he had no soul!

He was an obsession formed together with heavenly power, a sort of spirit that was neither real nor fake, he did not have a physical body, and did not have a soul.

To make a comparison, it was just like scolding someone.

Qin Bai Sheng had the soul suppression killer move, it was as if he could directly scold someone to death with his words. But Lang Ya land spirit could not understand a word he was saying, no matter what curses he uttered, to Lang Ya land spirit, it was like random noise, because the land spirit could not understand it at all.

Qin Bai Sheng was aware of this, furthermore, Lang Ya land spirit was acting strange, thus he decided to retreat and see what this land spirit was up to!

With Qin Bai Sheng stepping back, Lang Ya land spirit’s vigor rose, he did not relent at all.

Immortal killer move — Great Thousand Spears!

Immortal killer move — Triple Desolation!

Immortal killer move — Lightning Chaotic Starfire!

Countless golden spears shot out, they were like a dense forest that shot towards Qin Bai Sheng from all directions.

Qin Bai Sheng quickly defended himself, a huge pillar appeared around him, and around the pillar, there was a five clawed golden dragon coiling around it.

The golden dragon pillar was able to stop the great thousand spears temporarily, but white hair started to appear on Qin Bai Sheng’s hair, his lifespan was shortening.

This was the power of the time path killer move triple desolation!

Great thousand spears rained down like a storm, it was powerful and grand. Triple desolation was mysterious and hard to defend against. Mixed in with that were lighting starfires, they were able to sneak into the golden dragon pillar and burn Qin Bai Sheng’s flesh as they came into contact.

The land spirit raised his head, the countless Gu worms around his body vanished, and appeared again. After using them, they vanished again.

One after another, Immortal Gu and countless mortal Gu showcased themselves.

Immortal killer move — Yellow Wood Rustling!

Immortal killer move — Ruined Blood Flying Dust!

Immortal killer move — Slaughtering Immortal Guillotine!

The wood path killer move made the leaves in the area fly around. The blade path killer move slashed forward without obstacles, it was a beautiful move. There was also a blood path killer move mixed in, a light smoke that was blood red in color coiled around Qin Bai Sheng’s waist.

Qin Bai Sheng was too busy defending himself, he had to retreat again.

The land spirit shouted again, chasing after him.

On his body, countless mortal Gu and Immortal Gu swapped out again like a change of clothes.

Immortal killer move — Shattered Ice Armor!

Immortal killer move — Mixed Hole Drill!

Immortal killer move — Wishful Shadow Sword!

Ice path, space path, and dark path killer moves were used in succession, Qin Bai Sheng defended himself as he retreated once more.

Lang Ya land spirit advanced more and more, his aura was surging as his immortal killer moves struck like a flash flood, Qin Bai Sheng could not do anything but retreat.

The more Qin Bai Sheng moved back, the more passive he was, and the more Lang Ya land spirit fought like a maniac.

The two sides retreated and advanced respectively, until they were tens of li away.

The spectating Hei Cheng, Fang Yuan, and Mo Tan Sang were dumbfounded.

Lang Ya blessed land’s foundation was very abundant, it had many Immortal Gu stored up, Long Hair Ancestor did not lack immortal killer moves, and it even had the Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, it had accumulated an untold amount of immortal essence.

With such a huge foundation, Lang Ya land spirit could attack in such a frenzied manner, he could totally withstand the expenditure.

Even Fang Yuan was starting to suspect that Lang Ya land spirit could keep up such an insane fighting style for three days and three nights unceasingly.

In fact, this was the first time Fang Yuan had seen a land spirit that had such great battle strength and had such a ruthless nature!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 881: Five Finger Fist Heart Sword

Bam bam bam!

Countless immortal killer moves were showcased by Lang Ya land spirit.

Wood path, fire path, water path, ice path, time path, space path, all sorts of attacks resembled fireworks in the sky, they were fatal yet extremely beautiful.

Even the strong Qin Bai Sheng could only defend himself, he could not fight back at the moment.

“Is this still a land spirit? He is simply too fierce!” Hei Cheng saw that Qin Bai Sheng was being pushed back as Lang Ya land spirit chased after him relentlessly, feeling dry in his throat.

“Are you done fooling around?!” A moment later, Qin Bai Sheng shouted loudly.

In the air, golden light resembling a sun burst out.

The golden light was simply too bright, everyone could not look at it directly.

A vast amount of radiation accompanied the golden light and burst out, filling the entire world! Temperature rose rapidly, as if the world was getting roasted.

Soul path and metal path — dual immortal killer move — burning soul supreme gold!

Lang Ya land spirit was very unique, he was not afraid of the effect of soul burning, but burning soul supreme gold was an extremely rare immortal killer move that combined both offense and defense.

Once he used this move, Qin Bai Sheng turned into a miniature sun, he shined brightly in this world, it was almost as if he became the ruler of the world!

Lang Ya land spirit’s attacks were all disrupted or resisted.

If it were an ordinary opponent, facing the land spirit’s insane outburst, there was a possibility of him killing the opponent through mere brute force.

But his opponent was not an ordinary Gu Immortal, he was the Vice Envoy of Shadow Sect, Qin Bai Sheng!

Qin Bai Sheng resisted countless killer moves, he managed to catch a breather as he found a chance to attack.

Once he attacked, Lang Ya land spirit’s wave of attacks faltered, as he received an intense counter attack immediately.

Compared to him, even though Lang Ya land spirit had many advantages and a deep foundation, he was not a Gu Immortal, his wisdom in fighting was very low.

For example, when he used these immortal killer moves, even though it was a magnificent sight, none of the moves worked together, they even disrupted each other and caused much of the strength to be wasted.

In this regard, Fang Yuan was much better than him. Be it the coordination between star cloud grindstone and star snake ropes, or six illusion star bodies and position star swap, Lang Ya land spirit had much to learn.

The land spirit was only an obsession left behind after a Gu Immortal died, after all, a special existence formed by fusing obsession with heavenly power.

If the land spirit had Fang Yuan's intelligence, once he had the advantage like earlier, Qin Bai Sheng would not be able to fight back.

But the land spirit was not Fang Yuan, Qin Bai Sheng managed to find a chance to counter attack.

Burning soul supreme gold became the turning point of the battle.

Lang Ya land spirit's attacks were obstructed, as Qin Bai Sheng regained the initiative and did not hand over that initiative again.

The battle situation turned around at this moment.

Lang Ya land spirit was forced to retreat, suppressed by Qin Bai Sheng's attacks.

Qin Bai Sheng attacked with one-tenth of the frequency of Lang Ya land spirit, but each of his attacks, each immortal killer move he used had great coordination with each other, he set layers of traps and caused Lang Ya land spirit to feel deeply restrained, the more he sank, the harder it was for him to turn this around, he had no chances left.

Qin Bai Sheng had rich battle experience, his methods were ruthless and steady, Fang Yuan, Hei Cheng, and Mo Tan Sang were staring with trembling eyelids.

"What do we do? It is guaranteed that the land spirit loses!" Mo Tan Sang looked towards Fang Yuan with an anxious expression.

Fang Yuan did not answer, he was hesitant.

Lang Ya land spirit charged out without saying a word, putting himself in danger, he was simply being stupid!

Land spirits were not afraid of Qin Bai Sheng's soul suppression, but Fang Yuan and Mo Tan Sang were susceptible to this attack.

Unless they had a way to overcome it, or a method that could resist this soul path killer move.

At once, Fang Yuan fell into another situation where he was powerless, when he used six illusion star bodies and position star swap to stall for time with Hui Feng Zi and He Lang Zi.

Mo Tan Sang looked at Fang Yuan, seeing that this unknown Gu Immortal had no intentions of joining the fight, he started to feel anxious.

Even though Lang Ya land spirit was not quite reasonable and had absurd ambitions, wanting to enslave all the inkmen.

But Mo Tan Sang was a formidable person, in Fang Yuan's previous life, he made use of Ma Hong Yun's rise to power and ensured that his inkman tribe grew.

So what if Lang Ya land spirit's intentions were a hundred times as absurd?

To Mo Tan Sang, the new Lang Ya land spirit was much more useful for the benefits of the inkman tribe than the previous land spirit. Working with him had much greater prospects.

Mo Tan Sang was moved.

But Qin Bai Sheng was overly powerful, Mo Tan Sang did not want to die here, but he was wary of Qin Bai Sheng, he wanted to drag Fang Yuan into this.

Fang Yuan was unmoved.

Lang Ya land spirit changed so drastically, for Fang Yuan, this was also an opportunity.

But Fang Yuan was used to being vigilant, he did not want to take an excessive risk.

In the past, he took risks because he had no choice, and the rewards were also too immense. But now, it was an opportunity to save the land spirit, but the risks were too great.

He was different from Mo Tan Sang.

Once the land spirit died, Mo Tan Sang would be trapped here, he had no choice but to fight.

But Fang Yuan had Fixed Immortal Travel, he could leave at any time, thus he decided to sit on the fence and observe the situation!

Boom!

Lang Ya land spirit was hit directly by Qin Bai Sheng’s attack, he was like a rubber ball that was tossed away, rapidly crashing into the cloud soil on the thick ground.

The cloud soil was very soft, Lang Ya land spirit sank deep into the soil, creating a huge pit.

He wanted to teleport away, but he found that there was a golden chain coiling around his body.

The land spirit struggled intensely, but he could not move.

“It is over.” Qin Bai Sheng’s expression was stern, he slowly flew towards the sky above the land spirit, looking down with a cold expression.

Qin Bai Sheng retracted his entire aura, his arms gathered at his chest, his palms placed together, he was like a mediating old monk, at the same time, he slowly shut his eyes and lowered his head.

“He is trying to do something... now is the best time to save the land spirit!” Mo Tan Sang felt something amiss, he shouted loudly.

Fang Yuan ignored him completely, he stared fixedly at Qin Bai Sheng, feeling shock inwardly: “This posture, is this the legendary... that move?”

Earlier during battle, Qin Bai Sheng was as fierce as a tiger out of the mountain, a heavenly dragon ravaging the seas, he was unstoppable as he charged forward.

But right now, his palms were placed together as he lowered his head and shut his eyes, he was like a piece of dead wood, without any life in him.

These two conditions of his formed a clear contrast.

Slowly, Qin Bai Sheng’s right hand, which was in contact with his left hand, moved, it was like he was trying to pull out something precious, as his right hand slowly clenched into a fist.

Afterwards, his left hand was still at the original position, but his tightly clenched right fist was lifted, above his chest and shoulder, above his head, until it was fixed right above his head.

Qin Bai Sheng’s eyes were shut, there were no emotions on his face, his head was lowered as his aura was completely retracted into his body.

His left hand was open, at the center of his chest, his right hand was clenched into a fist, raised high up in the sky.

Mo Tan Sang did not know why this was happening, but he understood that Qin Bai Sheng would not make such an action unnecessarily, once he attacked, it would be a devastating blow, it would shake the earth!

Lang Ya land spirit could feel an immense sense of danger, he struggled intensely, the golden chains around him started breaking as numerous cracks appeared on them.

But it was too late.

“That’s right, it is that move! Sword Immortal Bo Qing’s legendary move, widely renowned in Central Continent. Qin Bai Sheng is a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, how can he possess this move?” Fang Yuan gulped as he felt a heavy feeling, he did not dare to save the land spirit.

Sword path immortal killer move – Five Finger Fist Heart Sword!

First finger!

Qin Bai Sheng raised the thumb of his right hand.

From the right fist that he held high in the air, a sword light shot out.

Fast! Fast! Fast!

The speed of the sword light was beyond belief.

The moment it was shot out, it pierced Lang Ya land spirit’s forehead.

Lang Ya land spirit, who was struggling intensely, had his skull penetrated by this sword light in an instant.

His movements came to a halt, he was still like a statue as he stared blankly at Qin Bai Sheng, who was in the sky.

At the next moment, Lang Ya land spirit struggled even more intensely like he was jolted by lightning.

If it were Fang Yuan who suffered this blow, even if he was an immortal zombie, he would have died. But Lang Ya land spirit was a special existence, there were no weakness or fatal points on his body.

But this blow did deal severe damage to him. His head, which was originally clear and compact, started to become blurry.

Second finger!

Qin Bai Sheng raised his index finger.

The second sword light shot out from his hand, it was just as fast as before.

The sword light pierced Lang Ya land spirit’s right arm, the land spirit shouted in pain as his right arm became blurry and unclear.

Third finger!

The third sword light pierced Lang Ya land spirit’s left arm, he cried out in agony as his left arm also started to fade.

“Save him, quick, once the land spirit dies, we are all finished!” Mo Tan Sang saw this situation and shouted in anxiety.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was heavy, but his body was still as a mountain, he did not make any attempt to save him.

A lump of star cloud grindstone appeared in front of Fang Yuan.

If the situation did not turn around, Fang Yuan had decided to use Fixed Immortal Travel to escape from Lang Ya blessed land.

Fourth finger!

At this moment, Qin Bai Sheng raised the ring finger of his right hand.

“Save me!!” Lang Ya land spirit could not stay calm, he shouted in panic.

“Let’s risk it!” Mo Tan Sang shouted at Fang Yuan, charging out and using his killer move, attacking from afar.

But the fourth sword light had already shot out.

Clang!

A sharp noise of collision could be heard from within the pit.

A figure appeared in front of Lang Ya land spirit, blocking the fourth sword light.

“This aura, it is a rank seven Gu Immortal.” Fang Yuan was still inside the cloud building, sensing that an unknown aura had appeared, brilliance flashed across his eyes.

This was the change.

As he had expected, Lang Ya blessed land still had trump cards left.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Soon, eight more figures appeared out of nowhere, piercing the air and landing around the pit, protecting Lang Ya land spirit.

Mo Tan Sang quickly stopped in his tracks, he focused and looked, shouting in surprise: “So many hairy man Gu Immortals?!”

The reinforcements were here!

The nine Gu Immortals that came were all hairy men.

The hairy man Gu Immortal that saved Lang Ya land spirit was the only rank seven, the rest of them were all rank six.

Hei Cheng’s expression changed, he said in disbelief: “How can this be?”

There were so many hairy man Gu Immortals, the numbers had completely flipped around.

Mo Tan Sang showed joy in his face.

But Fang Yuan frowned.

“To receive the protection of so many hairy man Gu Immortals, it seems this really is Lang Ya land spirit. But he is completely different from the previous land spirit.” Qin Bai Sheng slowly opened his eyes, he lowered his arms as he dispelled the five finger fist heart sword. His lips curled into a smile as he showed a confident smile of victory.

From the start, he had no intentions of killing Lang Ya land spirit. What he wanted was for these hairy man Gu Immortals to appear.

“Something’s wrong!” Fang Yuan’s forehead was wrinkled from his frown.

“The two land spirits are completely different in personality, but the former would not leave such immense battle strength aside and yet request for help from an outsider like me no matter how stupid he was.”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with inspiration, he realized Qin Bai Sheng’s motive: “Unless, the enemy’s true goal was not Lang Ya blessed land in the first place?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 882: The Real Lang Ya Blessed Land

Lang Ya blessed land was concealing so many hairy man Gu Immortals, but why did the previous Lang Ya land spirit not take them out even in such a dangerous situation?

Fang Yuan guessed the reason for this was the rank eight Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron!

The Lang Ya land spirit in the form of an elderly human had probably arranged all the hairy man Gu Immortals to be in Refinement Cauldron.

Long Hair Ancestor’s true identity was a hairy man, Lang Ya land spirit loved hairy men like they were his own children. In accordance with these thoughts, he did not want to let hairy man Gu Immortals die, thus he arranged them in Refinement Cauldron.

More importantly, the Immortal Gu House also required Gu Immortals to control it, and the more Gu Immortals there were, the more power the Immortal Gu House could unleash.

When Tai Bai Yun Sheng had attacked Yu Lu blessed land and met a predicament, all the Gu Immortals had combined their strengths to activate an Immortal Gu House, Profound Ice House.

This amplified the strength of Profound Ice House, to the extent that it was enough to break through the battlefield killer move and move all the Gu

Immortals to safety.

The more hairy man Gu Immortals in Refinement Cauldron, the more powerful it would be and the faster it could refine the Immortal Gu of others.

Fang Yuan was almost certain that in the previous three invading waves, Lang Ya land spirit had arranged the hairy men in there and refined the invading Gu Immortals’ Immortal Gu, thus being able to capture them alive.

This was the fourth wave of attack and the enemies were strong beyond expectation, the human form Lang Ya land spirit could not resolve this problem, and had no choice but to let the other obsession take control over the body to resolve the issue.

‘However, this hairy man land spirit also has a defect in his mind. Going personally to battle and only at the crucial moment between life and death, he summoned the hairy man Gu Immortals.’ Fang Yuan inwardly shook his head before paying attention to the battlefield.

Qin Bai Sheng, Hei Cheng and the hairy man Gu Immortals fell into a stalemate.

Plop.

Suddenly, that rank seven hairy man Gu Immortal who blocked a strike from five finger fist heart sword for Lang Ya land spirit fell to the ground.

“First Hair?”

“First Hair?”

The hairy man Gu Immortals were in a commotion, as they cast concerned gazes while exclaiming in shock.

“First Hair, First Hair, what’s wrong with you? First Hair?!” A female hairy man Gu Immortal knelt down beside First Hair, hugging his chest, but she found his body was already filled with sword energy and could not be any more dead.

“First Hair, First Hair, you can’t die, First Hair!” The female hairy man Gu Immortal started crying, her mind completely collapsed.

“Second Hair, don’t cry.”

“Maybe lord land spirit has a way!”

“Second Hair, if you cry, we will also want to cry. Boo hoo hoo...”

Many hairy man Gu Immortals unexpectedly turned away from Qin Bai Sheng, and approached Gu Immortal Second Hair, consoling her in a soft voice.

Some hairy man Gu Immortals also started crying or choked while sobbing.

Fang Yuan and Mo Tan Sang were dazed.

At this moment, they finally understood why Lang Ya land spirit did not send these hairy men to the battle and arranged them in Refinement Cauldron!

Because the ability of these hairy men in battle was simply at the dregs.

Ah, no, calling them dregs would be too flattering!

Faced with mortal enemies, they actually were weakening themselves, crying and letting their minds collapse.

It seemed like these hairy man Gu Immortals were raised as purely refinement assistants by Lang Ya land spirit. It was certain they were experts in refining Gu, and even more certain that they were not specialized in battle!

Lang Ya land spirit's face was ashen, he got rid of the restraint and approached and inspected the dead hairy man Gu Immortal, he heaved a bitter sigh before closing the aggrieved eyelids of the rank seven hairy man Gu Immortal.

“Ahhh, no...!” The female hairy man Gu Immortal, Second Hair, was completely broken. She gave a scream and fell down on First Hair's corpse, her eyes turned as she fainted.

Other hairy man Gu Immortals rushed to treat her.

Even more of them looked at Qin Bai Sheng with innocent tears in their eyes, accusing: “Heavens, why are there cruel and savage Gu Immortals like you? We had no animosity between us, why would you attack us, why would you take an innocent Gu Immortal's life? Isn't peaceful coexistence a good thing?”

Hearing these words, Mo Tan Sang and Fang Yuan completely lost all hope in these hairy men.

These hairy man Gu Immortals seemed to have been raised very protectively by Lang Ya land spirit, like greenhouse flowers, they had not experienced the baptism of the cruelty of the outside world, they had fully been invested into cultivating refinement path while there was a giant hole in their fighting aspects.

“Hand over the Immortal Gu House, Refinement Cauldron, and I won't harm you.” Qin Bai Sheng sneered.

“Impossible! Don't even think of it!!” Lang Ya land spirit furiously stared at Qin Bai Sheng, refusing directly. His attitude was firm with no signs of hesitation.

“Hmph, you want to rely on Refinement Cauldron to forcibly refine our Immortal Gu. Don't expect such naive thoughts to work on me, I simply won't give you the time to use it.”

Qin Bai Sheng scoffed before pausing for a moment, as if he sensed something.

He mumbled to himself, then continued: “Oh, did you already prepare, then let's begin! This hindrance, I shall break it first!”

He raised his voice, his gaze directed at the cloud building.

Immortal killer move — City Crushing Hammer!

A giant hammer came crashing down on to the building, Fang Yuan's mind moved rapidly, deciding to move away and not stand out at this moment.

However, Lang Ya land spirit's situation was still not at its extremes, so Fang Yuan did not plan to escape.

Rumble!

The cloud building behind him was crumbled apart, like a translucent screen, by the city crushing hammer.

Fang Yuan flew out in a miserable state, and when he appeared in front of everyone, his appearance had already changed once more.

He had transformed into a hairy man.

Qin Bai Sheng snorted, giving a meaningful look at Fang Yuan before looking elsewhere.

The cloud building was destroyed, the boundless fog immediately dispersed.

This had been the last cloud building, the other one had been found by Hui Feng Zi and was already destroyed.

By now, all the five buildings that had remained when Fang Yuan came as support were already destroyed.

Twelve wave cloud confusion formation was broken!

There was white sky and white ground.

The sky was pure white and the ground was white cloud soil.

Qin Bai Sheng looked around, disdainfully smiling: “A laughable disguise.”

The next moment, he looked at the sky with a look of exultation.

He suddenly grabbed at the sky and shouted with a longing tone: “Come, Refinement Cauldron!”

At the same time, in another two locations, the mysterious black robed Gu Immortal and Fairy Jiang Yu also followed the suit, however, they grabbed at the cloud soil on the ground.

Crackle!

The sky erupted with thunder, lightning flashed, clouds surged, and space broke apart.

A loud sound reverberated as if a formless colossal monster was using its sharp claws to tear the cloud soil!

A giant crack appeared on the thick cloud soil like it was cotton.

The crack ran through from east to west, extending to the end of all the immortals’ vision.

“This is?!” Mo Tan Sang’s pupils contracted.

“So this is the true Lang Ya blessed land... this is a really extravagant set up, everything that I had seen so far was only the surface?” Right now, even Fang Yuan was greatly startled.

The immortals gazed down the giant crack and saw a boundless ocean below the cloud soil.

The ocean actually had three enormous continents!

On these three continents, there were dense forests, steep mountains, vast prairies, foggy swamps...

Countless beings were living on the continents. The sky had birds and giant dragons, the ocean had sea monsters and fish, the earth had ants, tiger-elephants... There were all kinds of living beings forming an unusual food chain on the three continents!

In these three continents, the hairy men were the only rulers, occupying the dominant position.

Countless villages and cities were spread in the mountains, prairies and river banks of the three continents... There were even many hairy men exploring the ocean, their traces all over the many islands in the ocean.

Here, the hairy men got up and worked when the day began and rested when night fell. They refined Gu and competed with each other fairly, living a life where they were the top position in the food chain.

“So the place I had been standing on until now, was no more than the clouds in the sky of the blessed land?” Mo Tan Sang’s whole body shook.

“How is this possible? With such a large space, this is still a blessed land? Even ordinary grotto-heavens don’t have such a huge space! This Lang Ya blessed land has already surpassed the majority of grotto-heavens!!” Hei Cheng was thoroughly shocked.

“How did he achieve this? Lang Ya blessed land... this is simply another world! This far surpasses blessed lands and ordinary grotto-heavens.” Fang Yuan was full of doubts.

At this moment, the countless hairy men on the lands below, raised their heads and looked at the cloud layer where Fang Yuan and others were at.

“The cloud covering the continents are changing!”

“This rumored continent in the air seems to have been ripped in half?”

“Quick, report this situation to the elders!!”

Millions upon millions of hairy men fell into panic.

When immortals fight, mortals panic.

“This population...” Fang Yuan’s eyes opened wide, licking his lips as he shouted inwardly, “How huge of a fortune is this! Breathtaking, truly breathtaking. No wonder Lang Ya land spirit has an ambition to make hairy men dominate the world! This is simply a hairy man empire! No wonder there are so many hairy man Gu Immortals, they should have been chosen from these endless hairy men!”

Rumble!

The thunder in the sky became louder and louder. Countless lightning bolts cut through the sky, forming a net that quickly spread.

Amidst the strong wind, Qin Bai Sheng stood straight and proud like a spear. His clothes fluttered in the wind like a battle flag.

The space ruptured, and Gu worms showed up in the rupture.

They were the constituent parts of Refinement Cauldron.

At this sight, Lang Ya land spirit knew he could not delay any longer and shouted decisively: “Want to seize Refinement Cauldron? Dream on! Assemble the battle formation!”

“Yes, lord land spirit!” The hairy man Gu Immortals replied together.

At the same time, Lang Ya land spirit secretly transmitted his voice: “Mo Tan Sang, Fang Yuan, you guys also enter the formation quickly! Don’t count on these hairy man Gu Immortals. The main forces will be us three. As long as we can hold on for a while, these invaders will all die!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 883: Ancient Battle Formation, Heavenly Giant Solor

Hearing Lang Ya land spirit’s call, Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered, he hesitated inwardly.

But in the end, he still approached the land spirit and the hairy man Gu Immortals.

Mo Tan Sang made the same decision as him.

“Assemble the battle formation — Heavenly Giant Solor!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted, countless Gu worms flickered as they were teleported over by him, all of the hairy man Gu Immortals and the land spirit were covered by the Gu worms entirely.

Soon after, these tens of thousands of Gu worms that suddenly appeared burst out with bright silver light.

The silver light was dazzling, no one could look into it directly.

Mo Tan Sang had a firmer attitude as he went to the land spirit. Seeing this small hill-like silver light, he did not hesitate, he went inside immediately.

Fang Yuan went in after him.

Once they entered the silver light, Fang Yuan was directed by Lang Ya land spirit, towards the centermost area together with Mo Tan Sang.

The land spirit’s expression was grim, he nodded at Fang Yuan and Mo Tan Sang.

Mo Tan Sang quickly expressed his loyalty: “Lord land spirit, don’t worry, I, Mo Tan Sang, will represent the Northern Plains Inkman City in this battle, I will fight with all my ability, I will stay by your side no matter what!”

Fang Yuan was silent, he only nodded back at Lang Ya land spirit to express his intent.

The other hairy man Gu Immortals were surrounding them.

They did not put much attention on Mo Tan Sang, instead, they were assessing Fang Yuan who was also a ‘hairy man Gu Immortal’, they sent him curious, kind, and perplexed gazes.

At the crucial moment, Lang Ya land spirit did not criticise Fang Yuan for turning into a hairy man Gu Immortal.

In fact, he felt a bit of joy in his heart.

After all, this meant that Fang Yuan was showing a proactive and positive stance regarding the hairy men.

“There is no time to chit chat, the three of us will be the main fighting force in the battle ahead.” Lang Ya land spirit said.

Before his words finished, the silver light around everyone had condensed to its limits, it turned into silvery metal liquid.

Lang Ya land spirit suddenly jumped and danced around, shouting loudly: “Heavenly Giant Solor... Heavenly Giant Solor... Heavenly Giant Solor!”

When he finished shouting it three times, the surrounding silver liquid burst out and created a space with the size of a courtyard.

In the air, straight lines of light of all sizes gathered and formed into a three dimensional giant Gu formation.

All the Gu Immortals were allocated to their positions by Lang Ya land spirit, they were separated at their respective formation cores, each having their own spot in the Gu formation.

At the same time, a faint silvery light glow appeared on Fang Yuan, Mo Tan Sang, the land spirit, and the hairy man Gu Immortals’ bodies.

Outside, the Gu Immortal Hei Cheng could only see that Lang Ya land spirit set up the formation extremely quickly, first the silver light shot out, next the silver liquid spouted upwards, moving rapidly on the outside.

Eventually, this silver liquid stopped circulating, becoming solid in an instant, as a metal giant that was tens of meters tall with three heads and six arms appeared with a silvery shiny body.

The giant opened its eyes, it was like the awakening of a demonic god, a formless aura burst out, enveloping the surrounding sky.

“This... is actually an ancient battle formation!” Fang Yuan was in the space created by the silver giant, his vision was synchronized with the giant.

He first saw Hei Cheng’s shocked expression, followed by Qin Bai Sheng’s slightly surprised face.

Lang Ya land spirit who was at the central formation core laughed smugly, he said proudly: “My Heavenly Giant Solor battle formation was the second strongest battle formation in the world even during the Olden Antiquity Era! It was merely second to Golden Heavenly Saint. Within this formation, all of our strengths are combined, we are one entity. The foundations of our souls are added up, and our immortal essence can be used interchangeably, we can communicate freely with thoughts, everyone else can instantly sense them.”

This way, they would not fear Qin Bai Sheng’s immortal killer move, soul suppression!

Qin Bai Sheng’s soul suppression killer move used his own soul foundation to suppress others.

But now, Fang Yuan and the others were controlling the Heavenly Giant Solor, their souls were all added together. Even if Qin Bai Sheng’s soul suppression was still usable, it would no longer have such a decisive effect.

“Interesting, Heavenly Giant Solor, to think that it was in Long Hair Ancestor’s hands.” Qin Bai Sheng looked at the giant forming and did not strike. His reaction was strange, he stared at the giant as he showed some appreciation in his gaze.

"This is an ancient battle formation, among the pinnacle of formation path, it can allow Gu Immortals to work together and add up their battle strength. But because of historical reasons, these types of battle formations have already been buried within the River of Time! To think that today, I would be able to see it personally." Hei Cheng sighed: "But it is not strange, Long Hair Ancestor was a famous person throughout history, he had the power to collect such an ancient battle formation."

"Stop sighing, go and deal with it." Qin Bai Sheng ordered him after letting out a deep breath.

Hei Cheng's expression froze, he stared at Qin Bai Sheng in disbelief: "You, you want me to block this giant alone? We all know that there are more than ten Gu Immortals working together, creating this giant with their collective power!"

Qin Bai Sheng snorted: "You know this, I am trying to obtain the Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron now, I cannot strike. Now is the time you show your worth. I am not asking you to defeat the giant, just stall it for a while. You have an Immortal Gu House, Dark Prison, with you, this should not be difficult. If we succeed, not only will I heal all your injuries, I will also alleviate your current lifespan crisis, you will regain a huge amount of lifespan!"

Qin Bai Sheng's tone was filled with pressure and threat. At the same time, there was a benefit that Hei Cheng could not resist!

Hei Cheng squinted as his breathing became rougher.

He was very brilliant, he had a deep shrewdness, he knew that Qin Bai Sheng was using him like a pawn.

Towards this, Hei Cheng felt extremely angry, and also helpless.

Because his weakness was currently grasped by Qin Bai Sheng. With such immense benefits, Hei Cheng had to obey him.

"Send your immortal essence into the battle formation." Lang Ya land spirit instructed as he shouted: "Heavenly Giant Solor, attack!"

The huge silver giant moved soundlessly, directly crashing towards Qin Bai Sheng.

Qin Bai Sheng seemed to be unable to move easily, because he was trying to take the rank eight Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron, he stood on the spot.

Seeing that the silver giant was about to hit him, at this time, Hei Cheng appeared in front of Qin Bai Sheng.

Hei Cheng looked at the silver giant with a heavy expression, he waved his hand.

In his hand, there was a black pearl, it was about the size of the base of a rice bowl, black and shiny, like a black crystal. On the surface of this translucent pearl, one could see a boar shaped animal sleeping inside.

The boar was the ancient desolate beast sharp tusk boar, it had the battle strength of a rank seven Gu Immortal. In addition, this black pearl was the rank six Immortal Gu House of Hei tribe – Dark Prison!

Hei Cheng first let out the sharp tusk boar and then entered the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison himself.

Boom!

With a loud bang, the silver giant collided with the sharp tusk boar, the immense force generated caused the air to explode, as a strong air current spread out around the place.

The ancient desolate beast sharp tusk boar cried out, its boar head was full of blood, one of its sharp tusks was broken.

In contrast, the silver giant took a few steps back, there was a dent in its chest. But soon, with the appearance of some fluctuating silver light, the dent was fixed, there were no injuries on it.

Fang Yuan and the other immortals manipulating the silver giant could feel that several beads of immortal essence were expended in the process.

“This damned previous version of myself, he turned all these proper Gu Immortals into idiots. Damn it!” Lang Ya land spirit was unhappy, he scolded ‘himself’ unhappily.

He was very unhappy with this hit.

Even though the silver giant had the advantage, the consumed immortal essence was too much.

The impact earlier did not display the true power of the silver giant, primarily because these hairy man Gu Immortals were holding them back.

“Mo Tan Sang, you will be the main attacker this time!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted angrily, he instructed in a ruthless tone: “Use your signature killer move!”

“Understood.” Mo Tan Sang replied as his expression turned serious, after three breaths of time, he used his attacking method in the formation.

Qi path immortal killer move — Blasting Qi Roar!

In Hei Cheng’s vision, he saw the silver giant’s neck turning at an angle as one of its heads was aimed at the sharp tusk boar.

The silver giant had three heads and six arms, silvery fluctuations appeared on the right head, in the blink of an eye, it transformed into a black head that was as dark as ink.

On the head, crystals that were sharp as spears grew, frost energy was oozing.

The head’s expression also changed. Its brows were standing up as its eyes popped out, it stared at the sharp tusk boar angrily.

Seeing this head, Hei Cheng felt a strong sense of danger rising inside him.

Hei Cheng wanted to recall the sharp tusk boar back to his side, when the black head opened its mouth.

Roar—!!!

A thunderous sound burst out, the sound reverberated over part of the world.

Air was pushed out as sound waves spread to the surroundings wildly, most of the force was focused on the sharp tusk boar.

Bam.

Blood and flesh flew into the air, broken bones and organs splattered everywhere.

The sharp tusk boar, an ancient desolate beast, having rank seven Gu Immortal battle strength, only lasted three breaths of time under the attack of the sound wave, before exploding and dying a terrible death.

“Such power!” Hei Cheng’s expression changed.

Fang Yuan was moved: “An incredible ancient battle formation! It can amplify the power of an immortal killer move to such an extent.”

Mo Tan Sang and the hairy man Gu Immortals went into intense joy after the initial shock.

They saw hopes of victory.

Even though this attack used up several beads of their immortal essence again, the result of the attack was very much worth it!

Hei Cheng’s heart turned cold, facing this silver giant, even if he used dark arrow Immortal Gu, there would be little effect.

But soon, hatred and determination appeared on his face.

“Even though the sharp tusk boar is dead, I still have the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison!” Hei Cheng growled, he controlled Dark Prison, it flew like a meteor, bursting the air as it crashed towards the silver giant.

An Immortal Gu House had both offense and defense, it was a war fortress, it could not be underestimated.

Immortal killer move — Star Cloud Grindstone.

Immortal killer move — Forceful Mountain Shield.

Immortal killer move — Heavenly Stem Earth Veil.

Inside the silver giant, three Gu Immortals used three defensive immortal killer moves together.

At once, three arms of the silver giant transformed at the same time!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 884: Fatal Undercover Agents

Shortly, the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison would be crashing upon the silver giant like a meteor.

At this time, on three arms of the silver giant, a change occurred.

On one of the arms, the hand opened up as a lump of a star cloud spiral appeared on the palm, the spiral became larger and larger, it soon grew to five or six times the size of an ordinary star cloud grindstone, it spun fifty to sixty percent faster than usual.

Another arm was folded in front of its chest, as the forearm changed, conjuring a huge navy blue shield.

This shield was so huge that even with the silver giant’s height of several tens of meters, half of it was covered.

The final arm was hanging by its side, it seemed to be grasping onto a translucent light yellow veil, it was less eye-catching than the other two moves.

Immortal Gu House Dark Prison tore through the air, it was right in front of the giant.

The silver giant pushed forward with the star cloud grindstone.

A loud bang erupted from Dark Prison, as it was sucked into the star cloud grindstone.

The star cloud grindstone started to grind and emitted a loud sound, its shape expanded and shrunk at times, after several rounds of movement, it exploded.

The star cloud was destroyed, within the fragments of blue light, Immortal Gu House Dark Prison charged out like a wild bull.

The silver giant used its navy blue shield to block it.

Dark Prison crashed into the shield, after several breaths of time, huge amounts of cracks appeared on the shield at the area where it was in contact with Dark Prison, the shield broke soon after.

But after these two defenses, Dark Prison only had less than thirty percent of its original power.

Eventually, when Dark Prison crashed into the heavenly stem earth veil, it was weak and powerless, it was like an arrow that had used up its energy, it hit the silver giant’s chest and only caused inconsequential damage to the latter.

Even though Dark Prison was an Immortal Gu House, Hei Cheng was the only Gu Immortal activating it.

In this aspect, the ancient battle formation, Heavenly Giant Solor, was quite similar to an Immortal Gu House.

The more Gu Immortals were involved in activating them, the more power they could unleash.

But there was a difference between the two.

Immortal Gu Houses did not have any requirements towards the Gu Immortals’ paths and cultivation levels. In contrast, a battle formation did.

For example, Heavenly Giant Solor battle formation would work best if all the Gu Immortals inside were from the same path. That would make the silver giant stronger, and it would be more agile when manipulated.

Looking at the battle now, Fang Yuan was star path, Mo Tan Sang was qi path, Lang Ya land spirit was a unique existence, while the remaining hairy man Gu Immortals were refinement path Gu Immortals.

This caused Heavenly Giant Solor to not reach its maximum power. Thankfully, there were a lot of hairy men to set the foundation, otherwise, with so many different paths, the silver giant would not be able to form.

This was only the requirement of Heavenly Giant Solor.

Heavenly Giant Solor was the second most acclaimed battle formation among ancient battle formations, it did not have very strict requirements.

According to historical records, many other battle formations had very strict or strange requirements. Normally speaking, it was hard to fulfill those conditions and create the battle formation.

This weakness of battle formations was also a reason why they had vanished over history.

As a similar pinnacle achievement of formation path, Immortal Gu Houses were much more convenient than battle formations, this was a display of improvements over generations of time.

Throughout history, from ancient times to the present, each era had countless heroes and conquerors, talents and geniuses. The accumulations and wisdom of these people superimposed on one another, forming the current Gu cultivation era of numerous flourishing paths.

Even though many natural materials, treasures, fierce beasts and plants from the Olden Antiquity Era and Remote Antiquity Era were extinct already, generally speaking, the current era surpassed the ancient times, there was continuous progress.

Materials and Gu worms were only the foundation, the wisdom of Gu cultivators was the crucial point.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Qin Bai Sheng placed almost all of his attention on the sky.

His gaze was heated, he raised both hands as he grabbed at the sky time and time again.

Following his actions, thunder resounded in the sky, pieces of the space broke like a mirror, one after another, Gu worms were exposed. Then, under a mysterious and profound force, these Gu worms were pulled down, landing in Qin Bai Sheng’s hands.

Qin Bai Sheng showed imposing might, he snatched these Gu worms like they were there for him to take.

At this moment, his demeanor was overwhelming, he looked like a heavenly deity, he was grabbing at the stars and the moon, he gave off a feeling of being invincible and unmatched.

There were two other people collecting Gu worms along with him at different locations, they were the mysterious black robed Gu Immortal and Fairy Jiang Yu.

“They are trying to take my Immortal Gu House, Refinement Cauldron, we cannot let them succeed. Otherwise, a huge amount of land in Lang Ya blessed land would collapse!” At the center of the battle formation, Lang Ya land spirit was screaming anxiously.

But it was no use.

Even though the silver giant blocked the charge of the Immortal Gu House Dark

Prison, it could not stop Dark Prison from interrupting it.

Many times, the silver giant, under the land spirit’s control, tried to get close to Qin Bai Sheng, but Hei Cheng blocked it desperately.

Boom—!

At this time, with a loud bang, lightning flashed in the sky as an Immortal Gu appeared in the broken space for the first time.

“Good!” Qin Bai Sheng saw this and cried out unconsciously, his expression was full of joy.

He stretched his hand to grab it, although in fact, this Immortal Gu belonged to Lang Ya land spirit, but it could not resist as Qin Bai Sheng ‘easily’ captured it, keeping it in his storage.

Evidently, Qin Bai Sheng possessed some special method to take Immortal Gu from others.

Once this Immortal Gu was lost, a huge impact occurred.

Lang Ya blessed land shook intensely as huge waves appeared on the vast sea, crashing into the three continents.

Far away, at a corner of the world, an intense collapse occurred. Space shrunk as the sea water and living beings in this area were forced towards the center of the sea area.

“Qin Bai Sheng obtained only one Immortal Gu but it caused such a huge change in the blessed land?” Fang Yuan saw this and felt shock, he immediately had a vague guess over this.

“Stop, quickly stop!!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted anxiously.

The other hairy man Gu Immortals were also very worried, with the Immortal Gu taken away, there were huge repercussions to Lang Ya blessed land, the lives of the endless hairy men in the three continents were severely threatened!

But Dark Prison blocked the silver giant, Qin Bai Sheng had set up defensive measures around himself and could not be easily disrupted.

As Immortal Gu were taken away by Qin Bai Sheng one after another, Lang Ya blessed land started collapsing everywhere, tsunamis, hurricanes, floods, all these natural disasters formed, countless hairy men in the continents died.

This was a classic case of mortals suffering from a fight between immortals.

Fang Yuan saw this and affirmed his guess even more.

Lang Ya blessed land’s true space had far exceeded that of a conventional blessed land, it could match an outstanding grotto-heaven. But Lang Ya blessed land was merely a blessed land.

So how did Lang Ya land spirit achieve that?

Fang Yuan already knew that the environment inside an immortal aperture was greatly affected by the dao marks contained in the immortal aperture.

Thus, he naturally thought: “Lang Ya land spirit seems to have a unique method to fuse Immortal Gu into the world of this immortal aperture. This way, the dao mark fragments in the Immortal Gu would become the immortal aperture’s, and that would allow the immortal aperture to expand greatly.”

“But now that Qin Bai Sheng is forcefully taking the rank eight Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron, when the Immortal Gu were lost, Lang Ya blessed land lost a large amount of dao marks, this caused the environment to change, and the space inside to shrink.”

Fang Yuan guessed correctly.

It was due to this Immortal Gu House, Refinement Cauldron, being embedded into the world that Lang Ya blessed land could use the ample dao marks inside the Immortal Gu to create a huge space and generate countless resources, having an immensely abundant foundation.

Much credit was to be given to the previous Lang Ya land spirit.

After Refinement Cauldron was fused into the immortal aperture world, it was as if the entire immortal aperture was the inside of Refinement Cauldron, all of the living beings inside the immortal aperture were inside the refinement range of Refinement Cauldron.

It was because of Refinement Cauldron’s help that the previous Lang Ya land spirit could nurture a large number of hairy man Gu Immortals.

But doing that had a huge drawback.

Firstly, Refinement Cauldron could not be moved, it was stuck inside the blessed land.

Once it was moved, the environment inside the immortal aperture would shrink drastically, great amounts of losses and deaths were sure to occur.

This was also the reason why Lang Ya land spirit would rather use the ancient battle formation than summon the Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron to battle.

“Get lost!” The silver giant raised its hand and slapped Dark Prison away.

Taking huge strides, the silver giant charged towards Qin Bai Sheng.

But at the next moment, Dark Prison flew back again, crashing into the silver giant’s shoulder and making it lose its balance.

Such a thing had already happened more than a dozen times.

Hei Cheng was dragged into this, he could not stay out of this mess anymore, he had to risk it all!

Even though Dark Prison suffered huge losses in the battle and was badly damaged, Hei Cheng had to grit his teeth and endure it.

“It is useless! I can still hold on for a long time! An Immortal Gu House is made from a small number of Immortal Gu and countless mortal Gu, as long as the Immortal Gu remain intact, no matter how many mortal Gu are consumed, I can replenish them! If an Immortal Gu House can be destroyed so easily, can it still be called an Immortal Gu House?” Hei Cheng’s screams from inside the Immortal Gu House could be heard.

“You are correct!” Lang Ya land spirit spoke, agreeing with Hei Cheng’s words.

Hei Cheng stared blankly, before his expression changed.

He found that in Dark Prison, many Gu worms had been forcefully refined by Lang Ya land spirit, including two Immortal Gu.

Hei Cheng was right — if an Immortal Gu House could be destroyed so easily, could they still be called an Immortal Gu House?

Thus, even though the rank eight Immortal Gu House, Refinement Cauldron, lost many Gu worms, and even lost a number of Immortal Gu, as long as the core remained intact, it would only become weaker, the ability to refine Gu worms of others could still be used.

“Hahaha, fifteen minutes is up. You have all lost, you have lost pathetically! My Refinement Cauldron still has two hairy man Gu Immortals, with them standing guard, how can you steal my Immortal Gu House?” Lang Ya land spirit shouted, declaring his victory.

Lang Ya blessed land had a truly deep foundation, after fighting to this extent, there were still hairy man Gu Immortals that had not shown up yet.

But it was reasonable, Refinement Cauldron had great importance, there had to be strength remaining to defend it.

But at this moment, Qin Bai Sheng smiled coldly: “Are you sure about that?”

Before his words were finished, two hairy man Gu Immortals descended from the sky, they paid their respects to Qin Bai Sheng: “Greetings to Lord Vice Envoy.”

These two hairy man Gu Immortals that were left behind to guard Refinement Cauldron were actually undercover agents left in Lang Ya blessed land by Shadow Sect!

With their cooperation, attacking from both the inside and outside, it was a foregone conclusion that the rank eight Immortal Gu House, Refinement Cauldron, would be lost!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 885: Anti-climatic Battle of Offense and Defense

Lang Ya land spirit’s expression changed, he stared at this scene in disbelief.

“Twelfth Hair, Thirteenth Hair, what are you doing?” The hairy man Gu Immortals were shocked and furious, one of them shouted loudly.

“As hairy men, you are actually helping the enemy and betraying your kin! This is unforgivable!!”

“Impossible. Twelfth Hair and Thirteenth Hair are hairy men that grew up in the blessed land, how could they betray us? This has to be an illusion, everyone, don’t be fooled by this!”

Some of the hairy man Gu Immortals refused to believe this.

The attentions of everyone were on those two hairy man Gu Immortals, they had an arrogant attitude as they surrounded Qin Bai Sheng protectively, they showed looks of pride and had no intentions to explain themselves.

Their betrayal was a fatal blow towards Lang Ya land spirit’s side.

Especially those hairy man Gu Immortals, their hearts were in chaos, they could not manipulate the battle formation easily.

Hei Cheng obtained a precious chance to catch a breather.

Qin Bai Sheng’s speed of gathering the Gu worms became quicker with the cooperation of the hairy man traitors.

Lang Ya land spirit’s face was as dark as the bottom of a pan.

He spoke, squeezing his words from between gritted teeth: “Kill, kill them all! Kill these two hairy man traitors! Even if they betrayed us and caused trouble, Refinement Cauldron still has my will, it has not stopped working yet. It can still function! Everyone, Lang Ya blessed land is at a moment between life and death, it will depend on all of you, we have no other way but to fight now, kill!”

Lang Ya land spirit tried his best to spur on morale.

No matter how naive the hairy man Gu Immortals were, they noticed the current desperate situation, and hardened their determination to resist with their full strengths one after another.

The silver giant had an imposing aura as it moved forward again, fighting the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison.

After a few rounds, Dark Prison was defeated repeatedly.

Inside Dark Prison, Hei Cheng’s hair was messy and his eyes were bloodshot, he felt dizzy as he had already used Dark Prison to its limits.

In fact, this ancient battle formation had another drawback.

That was, in order to unleash the full power of the battle formation, the Gu Immortals inside needed to have a lot of practice beforehand. However, this was the first time Fang Yuan and the others were working together.

Inside the ancient battle formation Heavenly Giant Solor, even though there were many Gu Immortals, the real attackers were only Fang Yuan, Mo Tan Sang, and Lang Ya land spirit. This was like a person having two fists and yet only using three fingers to fight. The hairy man Gu Immortals were not skilled at fighting, they were holding Fang Yuan and the others back, causing the silver giant to look very clumsy, even though there were many opportunities, it could not use them.

But during the intense fight, the immortals had gotten more familiar with controlling it, they had gained a trace of coordination between themselves.

With this coordination, the silver giant managed to find two opportunities to send Dark Prison flying.

Hei Cheng had to retreat.

The two hairy man Gu Immortals went to guard Qin Bai Sheng.

But the silver giant charged forward, it only stopped for a moment before its gigantic body approached Qin Bai Sheng to slam at him.

Qin Bai Sheng spat out a mouthful of blood as the collection process was interrupted, he had to dodge, his body flew into the air.

“Chase!” Lang Ya land spirit ordered.

The silver giant chased after Qin Bai Sheng, but Dark Prison came again at a quick speed and peculiar angle. The defending hairy man Gu Immortals were caught off guard, they could not react in time and the silver giant was knocked away.

The silver giant attacked fiercely and sent Dark Prison flying again.

But this time, from afar, two figures came to help, they were Hui Feng Zi and He Lang Zi.

And at this moment, the two hairy man Gu Immortals surrounded the massive silver giant like flies, moving quickly and attacking, doing their best to disturb it.

Four Gu Immortals and a rank six Immortal Gu House engaged in fierce battle with the ancient battle formation, Heavenly Giant Solor.

As time passed, the immortals on the land spirit’s side became more and more well coordinated. The silver giant’s battle strength rose, even though the enemy was attacking it desperately, they could not stop the giant’s movement.

Some of the true power of an ancient battle formation was finally released.

Qin Bai Sheng was forced to stop the collection process three times, as he moved away and dodged the silver giant’s assaults, his expression was becoming more pale.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Self Giant Hand!

In the fierce battle, Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with brilliance, he attacked suddenly.

He had kept a low profile for a while, at this moment, he bared his fangs, using his trump card!

Four arms of the silver giant rose up, slamming down fiercely.

Bam bam bam bam!

A loud sound of an intense explosion occurred, the air burst as four strength path hands slammed at the ground with an immense force.

At this moment, the Gu Immortals in the battle formation expended a hundred beads of immortal essence!

Amplified by the ancient battle formation, strength path giant hand’s power reached an unprecedented level.

“Oh no!” Hui Feng Zi immediately used wind escape, desperately fleeing for his life.

He Lang Zi turned into a giant wolf, quickly retreating. The strength path giant hands barely grazed him, but the giant wolf let out a pained growl, the bones in the part of its body that had been in contact with the hand broke completely, the flesh there turned into meat paste.

Hei Cheng hesitated slightly.

Two strength path giant hands clapped together, as if hitting a fly from either side, but instead, it was Dark Prison that was squashed by the palms.

Rumble!

With a loud sound, two strength path giant hands disintegrated.

Immortal Gu House Dark Prison, which resembled a black meteor, swayed and shook as it flew away.

The Immortal Gu House was not a fly, it would not collapse from that. But Dark Prison’s current condition made all of the Gu Immortals present suck in a deep breath of cold air.

This Immortal Gu House’s appearance changed drastically, the round ball was squeezed from both sides, a huge crack formed around Dark Prison.

Thick smoke emerged from this crack, as lumps of sparks erupted in the black smoke.

“It is that rank seven Gu Immortal who killed Xue Song Zi!” Hui Feng Zi was indeed among the fastest in Northern Plains, after he escaped, he looked back at the battlefield, feeling lingering fear towards the giant hands.

Inside the silver giant, the hairy man Gu Immortals were stunned before erupting into a cheer.

Lang Ya land spirit was at first joyful, but soon, his gaze flashed as he thought of something, looking at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s expression was pale, sweat gathered on his forehead. He was almost unable to stand, his body was shaking and swaying, he showed an expression of facing a fierce backlash after over-exerting himself.

Lang Ya land spirit’s suspicions were lifted, he turned his attention towards the main enemy, Qin Bai Sheng.

Qin Bai Sheng was no longer at his original spot, because a strength path giant hand was coming after him, he had to interrupt the Gu collection process and dodge.

Now, his expression did not look good, it seemed like his past injuries had accumulated and achieved a qualitative change.

In Fang Yuan and the others’ opinions, Qin Bai Sheng no longer had his previous domineering aura, he was extremely weak now.

“I will stop here today, next time I come, it will not end like this. Hmph!” Qin Bai Sheng spoke a sentence before flying away. He seemed to be heavily injured, he gave up on the remaining parts of Refinement Cauldron as he left the battlefield.

Lang Ya land spirit growled angrily as he chased.

Qin Bai Sheng and the others were adequately prepared, after they gathered together, they tore through space and escaped from Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya land spirit could not fly out of the blessed land, he could only watch with anger and hatred as Qin Bai Sheng and the others flew away with half of Refinement Cauldron.

“Why are we retreating? We have not obtained Refinement Cauldron entirely, this is different from our plans.” The group flew rapidly in the sky as Fairy Jiang Yu transmitted to Qin Bai Sheng.

Qin Bai Sheng’s expression was grave: “The situation has changed, Luo Po valley is currently under attack. We have to return! That Immortal Gu is still being nurtured, it is soon to be completely formed. If we lose it, there will be huge repercussions in our crucial plan!"

Fairy Jiang Yu's heart shook, she asked: "Then what about Lang Ya blessed land?"

"I would advise that we leave it alone for now, the hairy men inside have huge value." At this time, the two hairy man Gu Immortals joined in the discussions.

"As long as we have the immortal killer move soul replacement, we can go in to undergo possession and lurk, it is not a problem to create a few more undercover agents."

"Unfortunately, there is not enough time, we only managed to accumulate three hairy man Gu Immortal moles. Now that two of us are exposed, if we want to accumulate more undercover agents, we will need at least three hundred years!"

"Even though we did not expose anything, the previous Lang Ya land spirit might have sensed something. He generally only let us Gu Immortals refine Gu, he did not give us the freedom to move about or opportunities to raise our battle strength by duelling."

The two hairy man Gu Immortals spoke one after another.

Qin Bai Sheng thought about it before speaking: "Forget it, even though we still have one mole left, the important matter now is to protect Luo Po valley until that Immortal Gu is formed. This Immortal Gu is crucial to our plans, it cannot be lost! As for the Immortal Gu House, Refinement Cauldron, we took over half of it, it can be considered an incomplete Immortal Gu House. Even though we did not reach our goal, we can use Dark Prison to make up for it."

"Alright!"

"When there is a good chance, we will make our move together."

The people from Shadow Sect gave subtle glances towards Hei Cheng, no longer transmitting their thoughts.

"Move, we have to relocate!" At this moment, inside Lang Ya blessed land, Lang Ya land spirit muttered as he made up his mind.

Long Hair Ancestor had died long ago, Lang Ya blessed land was an ownerless blessed land, yet it could actually be moved?

This went against conventional reasoning.

"I have my ways to relocate the entire blessed land. But during the process of movement, heaven and earth qi would be very unstable, the price to pay is huge." Lang Ya land spirit explained to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan sighed inwardly, Long Hair Ancestor's foundation was so deep, he gained a new understanding regarding it.

"This time, we could repel the enemy, the two of you put in much effort, especially you, Fang Yuan!" Lang Ya land spirit said.

Mo Tan Sang stared with wide opened eyes, looking at Fang Yuan in shock, by now, he finally learned that this person in front of him was the Fang Yuan that he was familiar with.

Fang Yuan felt no awkwardness regarding his identity being exposed, he smiled lightly at Mo Tan Sang.

"Oh." Lang Ya land spirit sighed: "It seems that it will be very hard for us hairy men to rise up. The road is filled with difficulties, twists and turns, but the future is bright. If you follow me, it will definitely be the right choice! This time, I am very pleased with your performance, I will reward you greatly!!”

Immediately afterwards, he said: “Without proper grass, no horse would move for you. Even a dog needs to be given a bone for it to be enthusiastic. Oh no, why did I say my thoughts out loud again...”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 886: Crying Miniman

Northern Plains, in a certain secluded area, Luo Po valley.

Souls were wailing, thunder roared and lightning struck down. The light of fire shined everywhere, and explosions rang out continuously.

A huge, intense battle was ongoing.

The defending side was Shadow Sect, whose members had resolutely abandoned Lang Ya blessed land and came back, Qin Bai Sheng, Fairy Jiang Yu, Hui Feng Zi, He Lang Zi and others.

Immortal killer move — Soul Suppression!

Qin Bai Sheng grunted, stepping forward in the endless light and fire.

Bam bam bam!

Three intense explosions sounded out, Qin Bai Sheng had forced back three invading Gu Immortals with an overwhelming momentum, giving a feeling of an impenetrable fortress.

‘I, the grand Chen Zhen Chi, actually lost three times in a row against a single Gu Immortal, and in one move each time?!’ The Gu Immortal from Myriad Dragon Dock, Chen Zhen Chi, stabilized himself with difficulty and looked at Qin Bai Sheng with shock and fury.

‘Damn it... it was not easy to organize a wave of offense, and it was actually broken by him so easily.’ Bu Fei Yan gritted her teeth as blood seeped out of her lips.

‘This soul path killer move is really too strong, who could have expected Qin Bai Sheng’s true strength to be so strong! Old Oracle’s deduction was really correct, this guy is very likely to be the culprit of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s destruction!’ Old Man Tian Long thought.

The group that was attacking Luo Po valley was none other than the group of Gu Immortals from Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects.

When their objectives could not be achieved in Snowy Mountain blessed land, Feng Jiu Ge was not discouraged and directed them appropriately, finding many secrets and clues.

After going through Old Oracle’s deduction, the group of immortals found the location of Luo Po valley and hurried over.

However, Luo Po valley had already been in Shadow Sect’s possession for a long time, and had a powerful defensive Gu formation. While Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were being delayed by this, Qin Bai Sheng and the others had retreated from Lang Ya blessed land, coming to reinforce immediately.

Thus, the current situation was formed.

Both sides were in a deadlock.

Central Continent’s group wanted to invade Luo Po valley, while Shadow Sect’s group was defending their base tightly.

Transformation path killer move — Fragrant Sorcerer Yin Statue Wolf Transformation!

Wind path killer move — Death Wind Flying Blade!

He Lang Zi and Hui Feng Zi saw the Central Continent Gu Immortals suffering setbacks, immediately grasping the opportunity to counterattack incisively.

Fairy Ling Mei and Fairy Ao Xue from Heaven’s Envy Manor were no match against the intense attacks, and could only retreat without any power to fight back.

Immortal killer move — Green Jade Song!

At the crucial moment, Feng Jiu Ge took action, using an extraordinary sound path killer move.

He Lang Zi and Hui Feng Zi suffered intense damage and fell back.

Hui Feng Zi retreated back to the defensive Gu formation, spitting out over ten mouthfuls of blood in succession. This blood had changed into a deep green jade color.

He Lang Zi’s injuries were even more severe, the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf he had transformed into had mostly changed into jade stones, he was extremely shocked: “What immortal killer move is this? It seems to restrain transformation path! I am actually not able to change back to human form. It looks like I have to resolve this injury before I can transform again.”

“Feng Jiu Ge!” Qin Bai Sheng shouted furiously, his voice spreading over the whole battlefield.

“Qin Bai Sheng, I underestimated you. Previously I was actually deceived by you, I am far beneath you in terms of acting skills. Fortunately, my side has a wisdom path Gu Immortal and without stinting on the expenditure of lifespan, he was able to successfully deduce the location of this Luo Po valley.” Feng Jiu Ge was still dressed in a red and white robe.

His posture was straight, like a spear or sword. Right now, he was speaking with a slight smile, his tone was articulate and extremely graceful.

“Successful deduction, my ass! I have no relation with the destruction of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. But since you came, your life will end here.” Qin Bai Sheng slowly closed his eyes and lowered his head.

He placed his hands together in front of his chest, then he grabbed his left palm with his right hand and formed a fist, which he raised high above his head.

When they saw this stance, the expressions of the Central Continent Gu Immortals started changing to that of shock and bewilderment, and they started retreating.

Only Feng Jiu Ge stood on the spot, like he was nailed between heaven and earth, and would not move even if a storm battered him.

He looked at Qin Bai Sheng’s stance with bright eyes: “This move, could it be Sword Immortal Bo Qing’s five finger fist heart sword?”

“Correct.” Qin Bai Sheng replied: “Are you prepared to die?”

Feng Jiu Ge laughed heartily, his expression was one of excitement: “Good, good, wonderful. Sword Immortal Bo Qing is my senior in Spirit Affinity House, he failed in his tribulation and his killer move inheritance also mysteriously disappeared. Spirit Affinity House did not obtain it, but it instead landed in a Northern Plains Gu Immortal’s hands. But I have read relevant records in the sect, this five finger fist heart sword is extremely powerful and sharp. It is rumored that back then, Lord Sword Immortal Bo Qing felt the majesty of Heaven and Earth, and the difficulty of ascension, thus he created this move to show his courage and pride of resisting heaven and earth by himself.”

“So this move’s stance is quite peculiar, the person who uses it must confront heaven and earth, lowering their head and closing their eyes. It seems like an admission of defeat, but they are in truth using all their physical and mental strength to produce and unleash the sharpest attack. The fist above their head shows how incomparably bold Sword Immortal Bo Qing was. As the saying goes, I decide my own fate, not heaven, with a sword at my heart, I advance in sword path.”

Feng Jiu Ge was not the least bit nervous in facing the legendary killer move, instead he was speaking with confidence.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals behind him were influenced by this, and the fear in their minds gradually dissipated. This made them have even more admiration of Feng Jiu Ge’s temperament.

“Hmph, you know quite a lot, it seems you have a premonition of your defeat and death.” Qin Bai Sheng sneered.

Feng Jiu Ge shook his head and smiled brightly: “By fortunate coincidence, I have created a sound path killer move, inspired during a certain time period. During my cultivation journey, I’ve discovered heaven and earth, faced heaven and earth, and revered heaven and earth, I felt the vastness of nature, felt how minute and weak I was. I named this song ‘heaven and earth song’! Heaven and earth is so vast, while humans are so insignificant. This song borrows the strength of heaven and earth, using an incomparable might to suppress all resistance!”

On one side was the vast might of heaven and earth, in accordance with the course of nature and with boundless force, while the other side was about defying heaven’s will by oneself, with the will of sword path, pressing forward indomitably.

These two moves were complete opposites of each other.

In the end, would it be heaven and earth song or five finger fist heart sword that emerges victorious?

The tempo of the whole battlefield slowed down for a moment.

Everyone’s gazes were on Feng Jiu Ge and Qin Bai Sheng.

Even Qin Bai Sheng showed a peculiar look, and while still having his eyes closed, he spoke: “Oh? Then this fight is going to be truly interesting. Take this, first finger!”

...

Light illuminated Heavenly Court.

Eternal and indestructible.

The giant image in the air, formed by the refinement path Gu formation, was no longer dazzling, its radiance was completely restrained.

“Good, the first stage is finished, all the materials have been processed. The second stage is to draw in heaven’s will!” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord said after he inspected it once.

“Draw in heaven’s will...” Fairy Cang Shui mumbled.

Lian Jiu Sheng and Bi Chen Tian also bore serious expressions.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord continued to explain: “Heaven’s will is also known as the will of heaven and earth! Humans have will, heaven and earth also has will. Compared to heaven and earth, humans are tiny like ants, lowly like sand, they are basically not worthy of being mentioned. Heaven’s will is the most important immortal material to restore fate Gu. Now, it will be an extremely long and arduous process of managing this refinement path Gu formation. Because we need to resist heaven’s will, heaven’s will is boundless, we cannot let it ruin our minds, otherwise we will suffer extremely severe injuries or even die! Heavenly Court has lost quite a few rank eight Gu Immortals in this process. More preparation may quicken the speed of work, now we will take turns to rest and recover.”

“Alright!”

...

Central Continent, Hu Immortal blessed land.

A piece of lamb that was as large as cattle was laid out in front of Fang Yuan, dripping in blood.

Fang Yuan sat on the ground and tore a portion of the meat, and put it in his mouth.

His basin-sized mouth chewed continuously for a moment before swallowing it.

Trickles of blood flowed out from the gaps between his sharp teeth, and seeped out of his lips. Fang Yuan’s face, however, showed a satisfied and happy expression.

This lamb was not ordinary meat, but was the meat of a giant horned sheep.

Fang Yuan had captured a live strength path desolate beast, giant horned sheep, previously in Northern Plains, right now he was using eat strength Immortal Gu to devour the meat and increase the strength path dao marks on his body.

“I am a strength path Gu Immortal after all, strength path dao marks are my foundation.”

Fang Yuan kept eating while looking back mentally over the defensive battle of Lang Ya blessed land.

In this battle, Fang Yuan had first tested vaguely familiar face, deceiving almost everyone, the effect satisfied him.

Secondly, he used star path killer moves in actual battle.

Star cloud grindstone, star snake rope, six illusion star bodies and position star swap.

Actual battle was vastly different from normal practice. Fang Yuan was able to comprehend an additional layer of understanding regarding these four immortal killer moves through the battle.

Naturally, Star Lord Wan Xiang’s star path inheritance did not have just these four killer moves.

However, Fang Yuan could only use these four currently.

Because he only had three star path Immortal Gu – Star Mark, Starlight and Star Shoot. These three Immortal Gu were used in turns as the cores of the four star path killer moves.

Star Lord Wan Xiang had four Immortal Gu but one was destroyed in battle. Thus, only three ended up in Fang Yuan’s hands.

“I had thought of using the light of wisdom to deduce some strength path immortal killer moves to make up for my weak points. But these star path killer moves are quite good and can be of use for now, there is no need for me to waste my time and energy.”

Through this battle of defense in Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan was able to gain an even more clear understanding of his own battle strength.

“When considering star path killer moves, my battle strength is already firmly at the peak of rank six. Just based on the offensive aspect, with myriad self, my battle strength can match rank seven. But I am still quite far away from being able to fight with veteran rank seven Gu Immortals, and can only try my best to pester and stall them. As for Qin Bai Sheng, I have no hope of matching him, he is a quasi rank eight, an expert like Feng Jiu Ge!”

This battle made Fang Yuan truly recognize the power of Qin Bai Sheng.

Due to this, in the entire battle, Fang Yuan generally did not use his full strength and was basically going with the flow. Only at the last juncture did he display myriad self giant hand.

Under such a situation, being high profile was seeking death.

From start to finish, Fang Yuan had placed some of his attention to controlling Fixed Immortal Travel constantly. Once something went wrong, he was ready to immediately retreat.

“Who is this Qin Bai Sheng? His true strength is actually so great! Hei Cheng, Jiang Yu, Hui Feng Zi, and the others, why are they together? Qin Bai Sheng seems to be their leader, and with Hei Cheng in their group, Hei Lou Lan’s revenge is probably hopeless. Now that I think about it, the hidden details regarding Lang Ya blessed land run very deep, there is more than meets the eye.”

In the memories of Fang Yuan’s previous life, Lang Ya blessed land had resisted seven waves of attacks.

But now, just in this fourth wave, there were signs of not being able to resist.

What was the truth in history? Was it because of influence from Fang Yuan that

Lang Ya blessed land’s situation had changed?

A thick fog had appeared in front of Fang Yuan.

“Even if I was in perfect condition, when facing Qin Bai Sheng, especially that immortal killer move soul suppression, I simply wouldn’t have any strength to strike back. Truly powerless.”

Fang Yuan gazed down at his hand, his hand was stained with blood.

Compared to Qin Bai Sheng, Fang Yuan seemed like this giant horned sheep which could only allow itself to be slaughtered by another.

Heaven and earth was vast, nature was boundless. The more one knew, the more they would find out how ignorant they are. The stronger one became, the more they would find how weak they are.

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> had an interesting account.

Boundless Forest Samsara was separated from her father, Ren Zu, and could only stay in ordinary abyss.

She was heartbroken, and did not feel happy eating the fruits anymore.

Every day, she would shed tears and weep incessantly, until she got tired and gradually fell asleep.

In a dream of hers, she vaguely heard some extremely soft voices, and felt something small, like an ant was climbing her body.

Immediately, she woke up and sat up, and saw a miniman was climbing on her body.

Because of Boundless Forest Samsara’s movement, this miniman’s foothold became unstable and it fell to the ground.

“Who are you? There is actually such a small person like you in the world?” Boundless Forest Samsara saw the miniman that was not even the size of her finger, and felt extremely curious, forgetting to cry for a moment.

The miniman looked at the giant Boundless Forest Samsara with a stupefied look, and after the shock, he raised his head and started crying loudly.

“Hey hey hey, little person, I am not crying, what are you crying for?” Boundless Forest Samsara was puzzled.

The miniman spoke while crying: “I am the tallest in my tribe, and I was brave, arrogant and proud because of this. Today, I intended to climb a mountain, but to think that this mountain was really a person. There are actually such giant people like you in the world, this is the first time I’ve seen someone like you, so I burst into tears!”

Almost every person who explored and grew up, would have such a mental journey.

The more they saw, the more they realized their weaknesses. Sometimes they would sigh at the vastness of the world, and sometimes they would find how far their goal was and to reach their goal, they had to go through an endless journey which they had not considered before. They would feel loss, bewilderment, discouragement, panic, even hopelessness.

Thus, one could understand the miniman crying when it saw Boundless Forest Samsara.

“Thinking back to my previous life, I also was once perplexed and had ‘cried’. There are mountains beyond mountains, and experts beyond experts. There are always stronger existences than me, eternal life is too far away, how could my insignificant self achieve it?”

Fang Yuan gazed at his bloody palm and was lost in thought for a while.

After a long time, he suddenly smiled, revealing his sharp fangs.

“Still too weak. Whether it was my previous life or this life, I am like that miniman that wanted to climb the mountain.”

“But... my insignificance won’t be an excuse to stop chasing after the grandness.”

“Only the cowardly and defeated will look for excuses.”

“Even if tears are shed and snot flows out, I will continue to climb the mountain, this is the pleasure of life.”

As he thought of this, Fang Yuan ripped apart another portion of bloody meat and bit it.

The sharp teeth ruthlessly chewed at the meat, trickles of fresh blood seeped out of his lips.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 887: Short Break

Half a month later.

In Fang Yuan’s dead immortal aperture, two wills were in a fierce struggle.

One will was like specks of starlight, flickering brightly. The other will was illusory, suddenly going in and retreating just as suddenly.

They were a star will and a fake will.

These two wills had already fought for seven minutes. The star will was slowly unable to keep up with the fake will, and was showing signs of losing.

However, with a shift of Fang Yuan’s mind, a new portion of will descended from the sky and joined the battle like reinforcements, immediately changing the battle situation.

In the end, the fake will was defeated miserably with only a few fragments of it remaining.

“Fang, Fang Yuan, you... will die... a terrible death...” The fake will could not condense into any form, and used all its strength to curse in a stammering voice.

A curse from such a weak being was simply of no importance.

The star will won, it condensed into Fang Yuan’s image and sneered while glancing at Mo Yao’s fake will, before it flew to the sky and left the dead

immortal aperture.

“I have already made large progress in battles of wills. Now, in a one versus one, although I cannot defeat Mo Yao and am defeated every time, Mo Yao’s will also doesn’t have an easy time, and recently all her victories are achieved with difficulty.”

While Fang Yuan was evaluating himself inwardly, the star will entered his mind and the information received this time appeared in his mind.

Fang Yuan originally had no expectations, but the information this time gave him a slight surprise.

“Spring dream fruit tree?” Fang Yuan’s mind jolted.

During her travels in the outside world, Mo Yao had once unexpectedly found a spring dream fruit tree near a nameless hamlet.

At that time, the conceptualization of dream path was very minimal and there were no external manifestation of dream realms, even Heavenly Court’s exploration of dream realms was extremely shallow.

Mo Yao only felt the tree was somewhat strange, she did not recognize it, so she engraved it in her mind.

She left this spring dream fruit tree in its place and did not move it.

Spring dream fruit tree was not a desolate plant and looked ordinary, normal Gu Immortals would not be able to find anything wrong. It was only because Mo Yao’s investigative killer move was rather unique that she discovered some strange points about the spring dream fruit tree.

But she was only slightly curious, it was not an immortal material after all. Later, because of other matters, she did not visit that hamlet again.

That spring dream fruit tree all along had been left there.

Time brings great changes, so many years had gone by, who knew what had happened to that tree.

Perhaps it was already cut down by mortals, maybe it was destroyed by fire or maybe it was still there.

The possibilities were too many, it was anyone’s guess.

“This old hag, Mo Yao, is still hard to deal with! She suppressed this memory in the deepest layers, until she could no longer hide it and I found it. But according to this state, almost all the things she knew have been squeezed out by me.”

Fang Yuan suppressed the thought to go and take the spring dream fruit tree.

In fact, he had also obtained another valuable clue earlier.

It was in regards to hibiscus stalactites, this was a genuine immortal material.

However, when he had secretly gone to that place, he discovered the main area was already secretly occupied by Spirit Affinity House.

Fang Yuan thought for a while before deciding not to go.

Therefore, Fang Yuan did not hold much hope in regards to the spring dream fruit tree. Moreover, to retrieve the spring dream fruits, he had to use special dream path methods and also make other preparations.

“If there truly are spring dream fruits, they will be of huge help to me in refining dream path mortal Gu. After all, the materials used in refining dream path Gu worms are truly scarce.”

Ever since he got the immortal killer move unravel dream, no matter how busy he was, Fang Yuan would spend some time almost every day to refine dream path mortal Gu.

If he had spring dream fruits, it would be of great help in refining these dream path mortal Gu. Even with a conservative estimation, the efficiency of refining the Gu would multiply by at least times!

The extremely weak Mo Yao’s will was left in the dead immortal aperture to slowly recover.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes and left his bed, moving to Dang Hun palace’s prison.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was held captive here, he was lying on a stone bed, his eyes vacantly gazing at the ceiling without moving.

Immortal Crane Sect had abandoned him, and this to him was an extremely heavy impact.

After the initial hysterical shouting and wailing, Fang Zheng had turned into this state.

Fang Yuan began to speak.

Even if his voice was filled with ridicule, or belittling and cursing Immortal Crane Sect as well as Lord Sky Crane, Fang Zheng did not respond.

Fang Yuan did not mind and continued to speak for a while before leaving.

Reeducating his little brother required time and could not be done in one step. Fang Yuan had already expected this and also did not lack patience.

Every set interval of time, he would take the initiative to visit Fang Zheng.

In Dang Hun palace, he could completely monitor Fang Zheng’s every action from far away. The true intention behind Fang Yuan personally arriving was to let Fang Zheng know he had visited.

Fang Yuan left the area and entered another prison.

Up to this point, Fang Yuan’s prisons had already held many prisoners.

Other than Mo Yao’s fake will and Gu Yue Fang Zheng, there was Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul, the rank seven featherman Gu Immortal Zheng Ling’s soul, and finally, Xue Song Zi’s soul, which he had captured in the battle of Lang Ya blessed land.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul was already completely searched by Fang Yuan and the only value it had left was the soul itself.

Meanwhile, the souls of Zheng Ling and Xue Song Zi still had great value.

Over these last days after returning from Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan had been constantly soul searching these two.

The gains were considerable, large numbers of mortal Gu recipes, many mortal killer moves, some immortal killer moves, a few Immortal Gu recipes, as well as secret knowledge, many treasure-troves and clues to inheritances.

However, because Zheng Ling was a wind path Gu Immortal and Xue Song Zi was a snow path Gu Immortal, these were not suitable for Fang Yuan’s strength path or star path.

Before Fang Yuan got hold of wind path Immortal Gu or snow path Immortal Gu, these things could only increase his accumulation and strengthen his foundation.

One thing worth noting was that Xue Song Zi’s soul had been tampered with, and his most recent memories were erased. Thus, Fang Yuan did not know why Xue Song Zi and Hei Cheng were in cahoots with Qin Bai Sheng.

Such a soul path method was extremely profound, making Fang Yuan lost in wonder and unable to do anything.

Naturally, the souls of Zheng Ling and Xue Song Zi were still not completely searched, the future gains were still unknown variables.

As for Lang Ya land spirit’s reward, it was indeed extremely bountiful.

Fang Yuan not only received the previously agreed upon rank six Immortal Gu recipe of all-out effort Gu, moreover under Fang Yuan’s persistence, Lang Ya land spirit fully imparted the method to relocate a blessed land to Fang Yuan.

These were only two rewards, but they had extremely huge value to Fang Yuan.

There was no need to mention the value of all-out effort Gu’s Immortal Gu recipe, speaking instead of the method of relocating a blessed land.

Whether it be Hu Immortal blessed land or Star Form blessed land, both needed to be moved urgently.

But the cost of this method was extraordinary and would inflict huge damage to the blessed land itself, and it required using twelve Immortal Gu at the same time. Lang Ya land spirit had already prepared to relocate Lang Ya blessed land.

After the relocation, he would lend these Immortal Gu to Fang Yuan for Fang Yuan to relocate his blessed lands.

Naturally, the price of borrowing these Gu was very high.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 888: Entering Eastern Sea

Two months later.

At a certain place in Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng stood quietly on a cloud, waiting for Shark

Demon and others.

The sun was setting now, causing a huge area of clouds with a burning red appearance to the west, even the sea underneath them was dyed red.

Waves after waves appeared in the sea, under such elegant turbulence, the last rays of light shone brightly onto these water droplets, they were bright and red. Together with the burning red looking clouds, a beautiful scene was formed.

“Every time I see such a beautiful sight, I will stop and immerse myself in this atmosphere, sighing at the marvels of nature.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a deep gaze as he sighed: “Right now, I am someone who has succeeded in immortal ascension, but I can feel that this world is still so grand and majestic, it makes one feel like they are an insignificant insect, having a great sense of inferiority. Comparing mankind to heaven, we are really insignificant. Maybe only rank nine Gu Venerables would have the qualifications to contest with heaven and earth, I have no such hope.”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Brother Tai Bai, don’t think too lowly of yourself. Do you remember from <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, that story of the miniman, when we recognize that we are tiny and insignificant, we have to try and get even stronger. We are tiny, but to stop being ignorant and become wise, you will feel pain, because that shows you are growing.”

“Xing Xiang Zi, you still have such grand ambitions. Hahaha...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was stunned for a moment before he laughed as well.

The two were still conversing, when a Gu Immortal emerged from the sea below them.

“Who is this?” Fang Yuan shouted.

“Lords, please calm down, my name is Sha Nan Jiang, I was sent by Lord Shark Demon to invite both of you over.” The person smiled as he introduced himself.

Sha Nan Jiang’s body rose up, in a few breaths of time, he arrived at Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s location.

He was a rank six immortal zombie.

His body was strong and muscular, he had a bald head with a copper band on it, he had icy blue eyes and his skin was like old tree bark, his arms and legs were exposed on the outside, his fingers were webbed, his ears looked like fish fins, they were sharp and extended towards the back of his head.

Fang Yuan twiddled his fingers, suddenly asking: “Scenic blue travel immortal zombie body?”

Sha Nan Jiang’s mild smile froze, he stared at Fang Yuan as he cupped his fists: “Sir must be the wisdom path Gu Immortal Xing Xiang Zi? Impressive, my scenic blue travel immortal zombie body was self-created, I have just come out of closed cultivation, I have not told anybody. Sir only made a small deduction and actually found out its name.”

“Hehehe.” Fang Yuan chuckled: “I am not a wisdom path Gu Immortal, I mainly cultivate star path, I only secondarily cultivate wisdom path. Earlier, I was just guessing randomly, I was lucky to have been correct.”

Fang Yuan was very humble.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng watched at the side, laughing to himself inwardly.

This was the first time Tai Bai Yun Sheng met this Sha Nan Jiang. Thus, the scene earlier occurred.

Sha Nan Jiang used an immortal killer move to sneak over here, when he reached the sea beneath Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, his traces were exposed by Fang Yuan.

This was the probing of Sha Nan Jiang.

But soon, Fang Yuan retaliated and deduced the name of Sha Nan Jiang's immortal zombie body.

When Gu Immortals interact, their strength was the most important thing. After some mutual probing, they could win each other's respect.

Sha Nan Jiang no longer dared to be careless, he showed a serious expression.

He nodded to Fang Yuan, having a respectful expression, before turning his gaze to Tai Bai Yun Sheng: "Please follow me, Lord Shark Demon and the others are already attacking Yu Lu blessed land."

A moment later, the three of them dived into the seawater and saw a door at the bottom of the sea.

This door was circular and had a light color, it looked like porcelain or jade. Chains of water crystal pearls lined the top of the door as they hung, forming a veil and blocking the entrance.

Fang Yuan's eyes showed a look of curiosity.

He would definitely not think that this door that had suddenly appeared was made of jade.

This was the entrance of Yu Lu blessed land, it only showed its outer appearance, but its true purpose was to act as the connection between Yu Lu blessed land and the outside world.

The entrance was extremely significant to small worlds like blessed lands and grotto-heavens.

Once the entrance was closed, the immortal aperture world would become an enclosed small world, isolated from the outside world. If Gu Immortals from outside the immortal aperture wanted to enter, it would be extremely difficult.

One could say, the entrance was the first difficulty to tackle when invading a blessed land.

Back then, Immortal Crane Sect's He Feng Yang and Fairy Cang Yu worked together to attack Fang Yuan's Hu Immortal blessed land. In order to solve the problem of the entrance, they used Fang Zheng and a blood path method to locate it. Only after locating the blessed land did they enter Hu Immortal blessed land.

Qin Bai Sheng and the others invaded Lang Ya blessed land, they also made use of the souls of the hairy man Gu Immortal undercover agents to locate it and enter Lang Ya blessed land.

Thus, even if Fang Yuan did not capture Fang Zheng to use Blood Deity, he would still need to be concerned about the safety of Hu Immortal blessed land and deal with Fang Zheng. In that case, there would be no way of tracking him. Even if they knew the location of Hu Immortal blessed land precisely, even if they could break the space between the two worlds, they could not connect to the inside of the blessed land.

As the three arrived in front of the light jade door, Sha Nan Jiang activated his Gu worms as the crystal veil of the entrance lifted, and the door opened.

“Sirs, please enter.” Sha Nan Jiang invited.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng saw this and smiled: “Your alliance has formidable methods, you can already control the entrance.”

Sha Nan Jiang smiled lightly: “Sir Tai Bai might not know, ever since the failure two months ago, Lord Shark Demon returned to the Zombie Alliance headquarters and spend a huge sum of contribution points to request for the help of a rank seven wisdom path immortal zombie. Right now, we have already gotten through the round of vanishing immortal essence dissipation rain, and entered deeper within. This entrance was also completely under our alliance’s control since a month ago.”

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded, they stepped into Yu Lu blessed land.

After entering the blessed land, they did not see Yu Lu blessed land’s true appearance, instead they were inside a frozen world that was completely white.

“This is the third round after vanishing immortal essence dissipation rain, it is a battlefield killer move called freezing rain frozen earth. Every hour, there would be intense freezing rain, as well as attacks from snow monsters. Lord Shark Demon and the rest are just up ahead.” Sha Nan Jiang introduced.

“Freezing rain frozen earth...” Fang Yuan muttered lightly, he gazed around, showcasing huge interest regarding this battlefield killer move.

He had already eliminated his earlier weakness after gaining several star path techniques.

Be it attack, defense, movement, investigation, or healing, he had no apparent gaps.

Even in terms of investigation, Fang Yuan had an immortal killer move. Not long ago, Sha Nan Jiang was exposed by Fang Yuan, that was because of a star path investigative immortal killer move.

His current battle strength was firmly at the peak of rank six. If he used myriad self, he would reach rank seven battle strength.

What Fang Yuan lacked now was a battlefield killer move.

If he had a battlefield killer move, he could kill a Northern Plains Zombie Alliance immortal zombie secretly, taking over their identity and infiltrating the place.

For this goal, Fang Yuan sought Fairy Li Shan for help, but she rejected him.

Fang Yuan racked his brains over it, he was an astute person, he found another method to take a step back and make an alternative goal, he decided to get into Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance’s headquarters.

Thus, he used the appearance and identity of an ordinary star path Gu Immortal, Xing Xiang Zi, and came to Eastern Sea with Tai Bai Yun Sheng, intentionally getting close to Shark Demon and the others.

“Brother Tai Bai, we meet again. Hahaha!” A moment later, when everyone met, Shark Demon was extremely enthusiastic.

He patted Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s shoulder and directed his gaze towards Fang Yuan: “Sir must be brother Tai Bai’s best friend, Xing Xiang Zi? Since you are brother

Tai Bai’s friend, you are also my friend.”

“I am but a wandering lone cultivator, I would not dare to.” Fang Yuan smiled humbly.

He wore a large blue robe, his hair was white like snow, but his skin was tender like a baby’s skin, he had a poised and sagely appearance. In fact, he looked more appealing than Tai Bai Yun Sheng, one could not help but feel some fondness upon seeing him.

Shark Demon’s wife, Su Bai Man, asked: “Don’t be so humble, Xing Xiang Zi, I heard that sir has quite an impressive wisdom path attainment level, can we have a demonstration?”

Fang Yuan looked towards her.

Su Bai Man was an immortal zombie, but he could see her former beauty and elegance.

As the saying goes, a beautiful woman leads to a hero’s grave. It was no wonder that Shark Demon turned himself into a zombie, sacrificing his immense cultivation prospects to accompany Su Bai Man.

Immediately, Fang Yuan replied to her without hesitation: “Then I will give it a try, please do forgive me if I mess up.”

“Just go for it, Sir Xing Xiang Zi. Even if you fail, nobody will blame you.” Shark Demon replied.

He had a ruthless and fierce nature, he usually looked at people coldly, but this was the first time he was meeting Fang Yuan, yet he was so warm and enthusiastic. Evidently, he was giving Tai Bai Yun Sheng face.

Or rather, he was giving face towards the man as before Immortal Gu that Tai Bai Yun Sheng had.

Fang Yuan raised his head and observed the surroundings.

This world before him was a land of snow and ice. It was completely white, it indeed was a battlefield killer move, they were often known as quasi-blessed lands.

Fang Yuan activated many wisdom path Gu worms within his immortal aperture, he used several wisdom path investigative killer moves in front of everyone.

But he saw no flaws, the entire battlefield was completely unchanged and intact, he could not finding a point of weakness.

But Fang Yuan was not anxious, even though he had studied very hard over the last two months, becoming proficient with many wisdom path techniques, the battlefield killer move in front of him was not simple, it was created by Fairy Yu Lu.

Fairy Yu Lu was a remarkable person.

She had an impressive origin, being a disciple of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. He was the one who left behind the number one battlefield killer move inheritance in the entire history of humanity!

Fairy Yu Lu’s battlefield killer move was certain to be extraordinary.

“Impressive! This battlefield killer move is completely fused with Yu Lu blessed land, it seems that it was created using the dao marks in the blessed land. Such methods are much more advanced than Lang Ya blessed land."

Fang Yuan observed for a long time, he gradually found some interesting points.

Lang Ya land spirit did not dare to setup a battlefield killer move in his blessed land to deal with Qin Bai Sheng, he only used the twelve wave cloud confusion Gu formation to deal with them. Lang Ya land spirit was afraid that the temporary dao marks created in setting up a battlefield killer move would harm the blessed land greatly.

In fact, in the current cultivation world, most Gu Immortals would not dare to use a battlefield killer move in their blessed lands or grotto-heavens.

Once the temporary dao marks made by the battlefield killer move clashed with the dao marks in the immortal aperture small world, the battlefield killer move would fail, and the Gu Immortal would face a backlash. In the worst case scenario, the dao marks will conflict with each other, unleashing terrifying strength that could destroy the blessed land and kill the Gu Immortal on the spot.

This had the same principle with the backlash of refining Gu.

But Fairy Yu Lu was indeed a great expert in battlefield killer moves, she directly countered this weakness by using incredible techniques that were out of Fang Yuan's imagination. She even greatly surpassed a fossil like Lang Ya land spirit in this regard.

Fang Yuan was secretly in admiration and anticipation: "It would be great if I can obtain Fairy Yu Lu's inheritance. Even if I get only one battlefield killer move that suits me, it would be a wonderful thing!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 889: Freezing Rain Frozen Earth

Within the battlefield killer move freezing rain frozen earth, Fang Yuan used wisdom path techniques one after another, making continuous deductions.

Freezing rain frozen earth was made using the dao marks inside Yu Lu blessed land, they were not temporary dao marks, this made it very troublesome to deal with.

Shark Demon and the others could not break this battlefield killer move forcefully. If they destroyed it, they would be destroying the dao marks inside Yu Lu blessed land, this would cause irreparable damage to Yu Lu blessed land.

This was the same as saying: Qin Bai Sheng snatched away a portion of the Immortal Gu House, Refinement Cauldron, this cased Lang Ya blessed land to lose a large number of dao marks, it was a devastating loss.

Shark Demon and the others attacked Yu Lu blessed land for the inheritance and resources inside. Furthermore, violently destroying a battlefield killer move required a powerful offensive immortal killer move, that in turn meant that they would expend a huge amount of immortal essence.

Thinking about the costs and benefits, Shark Demon and the others could only try to properly unravel the battlefield killer move freezing rain frozen earth.

Thankfully, this Yu Lu blessed land was ownerless, and it was unknown if there was a land spirit. Fang Yuan had many Gu Immortal guards around him, they gave him a lot of freedom to research and decipher the environment.

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes as starlight shot out of his pupils.

At this moment, in his mind, countless star thoughts were moving about, clashing into each other as he deduced rapidly.

Fang Yuan was putting in all his effort now in deducing freezing rain frozen earth!

Firstly, deducing such a high quality battlefield killer move could give Fang Yuan a lot of new knowledge and inspiration.

Even if Fang Yuan could not obtain a battlefield killer move that suited him, with this knowledge and inspiration, he had a firm foundation to create his own battlefield killer move.

Secondly, the plan for Fang Yuan after entering Eastern Sea was to enter the headquarters of Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance.

This was the first time he was meeting Shark Demon, he had to display his worth so that Shark Demon would think highly of him, helping to recommend him into Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance's headquarters.

As he deduced at a rapid rate, time passed quickly as well.

"Time is almost up, the freezing rain is going to start soon, the snow monsters will form and attack us. How much longer does Sir Xing Xiang Zi need?" A Gu Immortal that came along with Shark Demon asked impatiently.

His name was Bo Dan, a Gu Immortal member of Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance.

He was not an immortal zombie, but a living person. But he was in difficult straits, and did not have a high status after joining Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance.

Because he had some wisdom path attainment, he was brought into Yu Lu blessed land by Shark Demon, to join in this invasion.

Before Fang Yuan appeared, Bo Dan was the only pseudo-wisdom path Gu Immortal in the group.

The appearance of Xing Xiang Zi threatened his status and benefits.

If Fang Yuan made a successful deduction, would that not show that Bo Dan was useless?

Seeing that Fang Yuan was not making progress, Bo Dan could not hold it in anymore, he vaguely exerted pressure on Fang Yuan.

The other Gu Immortals were also paying attention to Fang Yuan's performance.

Bo Dan asked the question they had internally.

Fang Yuan laughed lightly, he did not try to protect his face, he said directly: "I am ashamed! This battlefield killer move is very profound, after deducing it for so long, I have only made some minor progress.”

This battlefield killer move, freezing rain frozen earth, was indeed worthy of the work of the rank eight great expert, Fairy Yu Lu.

Fang Yuan used many wisdom path techniques in turn, but he made no progress! It was like he was facing a giant barrier, he did not even know where to start.

“Is that so.” Su Bai Man sighed, feeling disappointed.

Fang Yuan was unwilling to give up this chance: “Give me a bit more time, I will continue to deduce.”

Shark Demon nodded, he said: “Xing Xiang Zi, go ahead and make your deductions, we will block this attack for you.”

At the same time, Shark Demon was considering other thoughts internally: “Xing Xiang Zi was highly recommended by Tai Bai Yun Sheng, but now it seems that he is not as amazing as he was said to be. Sigh, last time the battlefield killer move already made me pay a huge price in asking a wisdom path immortal zombie in Zombie Alliance to help. I have already invested a huge sum into Yu Lu blessed land, I need to be thrifty. If this Xing Xiang Zi can really unravel this battlefield killer move, that would be the best outcome.”

But now, the other Gu Immortals looked at Fang Yuan with much less expectations.

Bo Dan watched at the side, he laughed to himself internally: “In the previous battlefield killer moves, I could at least find the Gu worms lurking behind it. But this time, I could not even find any clues. I’m curious, how will you find a breakthrough?”

As expected, a moment later, in the sky above this battlefield, a small drizzle of freezing rain started.

These raindrops were like tiny ice needles.

Rather than raining, this was more like the falling of ice needles, piercing the air and shooting towards Fang Yuan and the others.

The Gu Immortals used their defensive techniques.

Bo Dan did not have an Immortal Gu, he was protected by Shark Demon’s defensive immortal killer move.

Fang Yuan was also shielded by Shark Demon.

Countless ice needles shot down, but they were blocked by the light barrier, because the needles were moving extremely quickly, they caused sparks to appear on the light barrier.

Fang Yuan willed, using star cloud grindstone and entering it.

He was not going to place his safety in the hands of others.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s defensive immortal killer move, the other Gu Immortals’ gazes shined, their attitudes changed slightly.

Fang Yuan could use an immortal killer move, he definitely had an Immortal Gu.

A Gu Immortal with Immortal Gu was not to be underestimated in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.

Not all Gu Immortals had Immortal Gu. In fact, most rank six Gu Immortals could only use mortal killer moves, they were unable to obtain an Immortal Gu even after much difficulty.

The intensity of the rain increased, as the ice needles slowly turned into stronger ice darts.

The ice darts tore through space, creating shrill and loud sounds.

The Gu Immortals defended together, they placed all their efforts on defense, they were also inwardly counting the expenditure of their immortal essence.

“Eh? This battlefield changed a little after using a new attack, a tiny flaw has appeared and I can make use of it. It is no longer like before when I had no clue at all.” Fang Yuan’s heart shook, he felt a sense of joy.

He moved quickly, three times as fast as earlier.

At the same time as using mortal killer moves, he also used wisdom path mortal Gu.

These killer moves and mortal Gu hit the air, causing smoke to rise, thunderous explosions, or jade green acid to splatter.

Fang Yuan used all sorts of methods to test this flaw.

But the effect was quite lackluster.

The ice dart rain had turned into an icicle storm.

The Gu Immortals’ immortal essence expenditure rose at a rapid speed.

Roar!

With a loud sound, a huge snow monster charged over from the icy rain that filled everyone’s vision.

Snow monsters were the prey of snowmen, by eating the flesh and blood of snow monsters, snowmen could breed more rapidly and even gain lifespan.

A thirty feet tall snow monster could battle a rank three Gu Master. Forty feet tall had the strength of a rank four Gu Master. And fifty feet tall had the terrifying power of a rank five Gu Master.

But the snow monster right now was about sixty feet tall.

This was a desolate beast level snow monster, it was not to be underestimated.

“Try not to kill them, even if these snow monsters die in battle, they will revive, they are very persistent.” Su Bai Man quickly reminded.

Fang Yuan’s heart shook.

“Endlessly reviving snow monsters? How can we fight them like this?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng also had a change in expression.

“Don’t worry, once the time is up, these snow monsters will vanish on their own. They will only reappear during the next time the freezing rain appears.” Shark Demon explained.

A Gu Immortal to the left of Shark Demon sighed in a worried tone: “This freezing rain frozen earth battlefield killer move already had a hint of resemblance to Reincarnation Battlefield. Fairy Yu Lu was a disciple of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, she might have obtained some insight regarding reincarnation and rebirth.”

Grrr!

One after another, snow monsters appeared, they made it very hard for Shark Demon and the others to defend themselves.

The attacks of the snow monsters were very powerful, and they did not lack mobility.

The Gu Immortals did not want to face them directly, they attacked unceasingly, using immortal killer moves to disrupt the charging snow monsters, slowing their speeds and preventing them from getting close.

Fang Yuan’s joy intensified.

When the snow monsters appeared, he found out that this battlefield killer move had even more flaws.

“There’s hope!” Fang Yuan cheered on himself.

He had only received the wisdom path inheritance for a short amount of time, his wisdom path attainment level was at ordinary level, even though he worked hard without relaxing or slacking off, attainment levels needed accumulation over time.

Calling Fang Yuan a half-baked user was a huge compliment already. He was more like a wisdom path newbie.

But now, this wisdom path newbie was trying to unravel the killer move, freezing rain frozen earth. Using an analogy from Earth, this was like asking an elementary school student to do a senior high school mathematics problem.

Fang Yuan grabbed onto this flaw he found, his hands were moving faster and faster.

Eventually, under his deductions, he found a Gu worm.

This was a mortal Gu, it was coordinated with countless mortal Gu and Immortal Gu to form the battlefield killer move freezing rain frozen earth.

“Go!” Fang Yuan willed and a star snake rope flew out, coiling around this mortal Gu rapidly.

But when Fang Yuan was about to drag this mortal Gu back for research, this mortal Gu self-detonated.

The star snake rope missed its target, it could only return to Fang Yuan’s side.

Such movements attracted the attentions of the other Gu Immortals.

Because this mortal Gu was destroyed, the freezing rain became significantly weaker.

“He actually found a flaw?” Bo Dan was shocked, he had once tried to look for flaws during the period of attacking, but he had no gains.

Bo Dan’s wisdom path inheritance was too incomplete, it was of low quality and had limited methods.

In contrast, Fang Yuan’s inheritance was extremely impressive, it had extraordinary origins. It led to the creation of many powerful wisdom path Gu

Immortals, and its last owner was the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, Dong Fang Chang Fan.

Even with Fang Yuan’s ability, he could find a flaw in the freezing rain frozen earth, this showed how impressive this inheritance truly was.

“Good!” Shark Demon praised.

But just as he said that, the storm above them became three times as fierce!

Swish swish swish!

Rain poured down like a storm, the icicles were sharp and emitted immense pressure on the Gu Immortals who were defending against the attack.

“Xing Xiang Zi, what in the world did you do?” Bo Dan grabbed onto this great opportunity and chided.

Fang Yuan’s heart also jumped, he knew that he was too rash. Even if he found a Gu worm that formed the battlefield killer move, he should not have destroyed it at will, otherwise, it would lead to an even stronger resistance and attack.

But soon, Fang Yuan felt joyful again.

After this mortal Gu was destroyed, the battlefield killer move freezing rain frozen earth had two more flaws.

This way, there was more hope in unraveling the battlefield killer move!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 890: Framing

Soon, using the star thoughts in his mind to make deductions, Fang Yuan found the location of a few more Gu worms.

Their locations could not be found with investigative methods, of course.

“One, two, three, four, a total of four spots. There are Gu worms hiding there, but they are all mortal Gu. They are really hiding well, even with my star path investigative immortal killer move, I could not find them.”

With his earlier experience, Fang Yuan did not try and destroy these mortal Gu again.

He remained unmoved, continuing to observe and deduce.

“So close!” Soon, he sighed internally, finding a point of danger.

The mortal Gu that was hiding at that place formed a crucial spot in the battlefield killer move.

In his initial estimations, Fang Yuan found out that by killing this Gu, he would reduce the power of the freezing rain and snow monsters by fifty to sixty percent.

But after further deductions, Fang Yuan obtained new findings: If he really eliminated the Gu, that would result in problems. Even though the current attack would be weaker, the next attack would happen more quickly, and its power will be three times as great!

The current attacks were already very difficult for Shark Demon and the others to defend against.

The freezing rain continued, it expended quite a lot of immortal essence, the immortal zombies were feeling a big headache.

The sixty feet tall snow monsters came one after another, the Gu Immortals did not dare to be careless.

“If the attack becomes thrice as strong, ancient desolate beast level snow monsters might show up!” Fang Yuan was internally shocked, the risk of unraveling this battlefield killer move was too high, if he lost his concentration even once, he would suffer severe consequences.

And this was only against mortal Gu, the mortal Gu that made up the outer layer. If he was dealing with Gu worms inside the inner layer, if Fang Yuan’s methods were incorrect, he would face an even fiercer backlash!

Fang Yuan got past the flaws and continued probing the other areas.

Time passed quickly, but Fang Yuan made no progress.

“This is the fourth wave already. Sigh... how much longer do we have to endure?” An immortal zombie sighed, since joining this invasion, the amount of immortal essence that he had already spent was causing him to feel loss.

“In this current situation, no matter how much immortal essence we use, what would be the point if we don’t see any results?” Bo Dan provoked.

Shark Demon and the others were feeling frustrated, their attentions were directed towards Fang Yuan.

This was the first time they had met Xing Xiang Zi, they did not know what ability Fang Yuan had in wisdom path. Bo Dan was already useless, now the heavy burden of dismantling the battlefield killer move fell onto this stranger’s hands, could they rely on him or not?

“Lord Xing Xiang Zi, since the start, you have been using mortal techniques to probe it. Look at this, even though the circumstances are not critical yet, it is already a tough situation. Why don’t you use immortal level wisdom path techniques? Don’t worry, according to the rules, the amount of immortal essence that you consume will be compensated to you later, you do not need to worry about the expenditure.” Bo Dan said again.

Fang Yuan frowned.

This Bo Dan had ill intentions, he had tried to sow discord time and time again.

Fang Yuan was well aware of the troubles of being an immortal zombie, immortal essence was hard to obtain, he treasured his supply greatly.

But now, there were huge losses but little progress, even if Shark Demon stayed silent and Su Bai Man remained impassive, he could guess the other immortal zombies’ frustrations.

Fang Yuan could understand why Bo Dan was targeting him. But understanding was one thing, his provocative acts were akin to stabbing a dagger into Fang Yuan’s back.

Immediately, Fang Yuan gave Bo Dan a deep look as he manipulated moving perspective cup Gu, transmitting to Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng cooperated with him, speaking: “Bo Dan, why are you so anxious? Lord Shark Demon has already said it, we will endure this wave of attacks and fight for time for Xing Xiang Zi. Now that were are only halfway through this wave, you want to run away already? Or do you think that you have made immense contributions already?”

Bo Dan’s expression changed, he said in a tone of one who was wronged: “Why would I dare to, Lord Tai Bai Yun Sheng, you have misunderstood me!”

He knew deeply that Tai Bai Yun Sheng was Shark Demon’s ‘hot favorite’, everyone knew of the warm attitude that Shark Demon had towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Furthermore, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had an extraordinarily precious Immortal Gu, it was an impressive healing method, he could not be offended.

“Alright, stop arguing.” Shark Demon tried to control the situation as he looked at Fang Yuan: “We have already gone through the first three waves, we can afford to keep going through this fourth wave.”

Fang Yuan felt Shark Demon’s gaze as his heart sank.

It seems that Shark Demon and the others were not confident in him at all.

How could he allow that to happen?

Fang Yuan knew the importance of a first impression, he wanted to join Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance with Shark Demon’s recommendation. If he failed the first time he tried, Shark Demon’s poor impression of him would make things hard in the future. Even if he showed his worth later, the effect would be far worse than now. In contrast, if he succeeded now, even if he failed in the future, in Shark Demon’s perspective, it would be reasonable, after all, who would not fail sometimes?

“Based on Shark Demon’s tone, it seems that he will not stay for the fifth wave. After all, the issue of cost is important in attacking a blessed land. Forget it!”

Fang Yuan evaluated inwardly, he made up his mind.

He struck suddenly, attacking the Gu worm from earlier.

With a light sound, a Gu worm broke.

“Another Gu worm! Haha.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng cooperated as he laughed loudly.

Shark Demon and the others’ expressions turned to joy, their morale rose slightly.

Bo Dan kept quiet.

Following Fang Yuan’s instructions, Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not let go of him: “How about that, Bo Dan? Regardless of whether a technique is mortal level or immortal level, the only importance is that it works.”

Bo Dan nodded, showing a smile: “Lord Tai Bai Yun Sheng is right, I was too rash earlier.”

He understood the reasoning of backing down, he did not retort, he had given in.

Evidently, it was very hard to deal with people like him who could hold in a grudge.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng continued: “The rest of you may not know, but I have known brother Xing Xiang Zi for a long time, I know how impressive his wisdom path techniques are.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s actions were like a friend trying to speak up for his good friend.

At this time, Fang Yuan pretended to have made huge advancements, he continued: “Hehehe, I finally took down one important area. With this discovery, I have a greater confidence in unraveling this battlefield killer move now!”

“Is that so?” Su Bai Man’s eyes shone, she believed a portion of his words.

But soon, the truth spoke for itself.

A immortal zombie shouted: “Quickly look, the freezing rain has weakened, many desolate beast snow monsters are disintegrating on their own!”

The immortals were overjoyed, their gaze towards Fang Yuan changed a lot.

They had only taken Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s words with a grain of salt, but after seeing and sensing it for themselves, the immortals’ attitudes changed drastically.

“Maybe this Xing Xiang Zi can really unravel the battlefield killer move?”

“Earlier, Bo Dan could do nothing, but once he came, he destroyed two Gu and reduced the power of the battlefield killer move by half.”

“It seems that his wisdom path attainment is much higher than Bo Dan. I have to admit, this Northern Plains barbarian has quite the skill.”

Everyone’s hearts became filled with hope.

Bo Dan smiled on his face, but he was feeling very dark and gloomy inside.

The better Fang Yuan performed, the more it pointed out his inability.

Bo Dan was very discontent, he used his wisdom path techniques and observed the battlefield.

Once he observed it, his heart shook, he felt endless joy.

It turned out that after Fang Yuan destroyed two mortal Gu, and after such a long time, with Bo Dan’s skill, he could find two flaws as well.

He deduced in secret, this was his intelligence, he did not want to do anything until he had concrete results, he was biding his time for a counterattack.

Fang Yuan retracted his gaze that was observing Bo Dan, he looked at the battlefield killer move again.

After destroying that mortal Gu, it was as if a veil was lifted, six to seven flaws were exposed in the freezing rain frozen earth battlefield killer move.

But Fang Yuan was not happy at all, he felt very gloomy.

The price of obtain these six to seven flaws was simply too high.

For the time being, Shark Demon and the others were still kept in the dark, but when the next wave of attack comes, they would feel the pain.

Fang Yuan continued to deduce, he had used over ten thousand star thoughts already.

The offense of the battlefield became weaker, Shark Demon and the others let out a breath of turbid air, the pressure of defending was very great, now that they were almost through with the fourth wave of attacks, they felt much less pressure, but they did not relax their alertness.

Fang Yuan had good progress, but he did not act.

He did not even use his probing methods from earlier. He sat in the air as he closed his eyes, showing others the impression that he was deducing with all his effort.

In fact, he was thinking: “This battlefield killer move is used to defend the blessed land, there are benefits and demerits. The biggest drawback is that the battlefield killer move forms a temporary world, it is a pseudo-blessed land. In here, all mortal Gu and mortal killer moves can be used, they are not restricted like in a blessed land. But in total, the benefits outweigh the demerits. These battlefield killer moves can slow down the speed of invaders, up until now, Shark Demon and the others still have yet to even see Yu Lu blessed land’s true appearance. Even if they could use mortal killer moves, the invading Gu Immortals still have to expend a lot of immortal essence. Because once this battlefield killer move is activated, its power forces the Gu Immortals to defend themselves, or advance and attack using immortal methods.”

“If I can obtain some battlefield killer moves in Yu Lu blessed land and use my own blessed land’s dao marks to set up layers and layers of battlefield killer moves, that would be most favorable. When I relocate Star Form blessed land, I can use this method to form layers of defense. Hu Immortal blessed land can also make use of this, in case one day, Hu Immortal blessed land gets attacked, these defensive battlefield killer moves can help me stall for time as I relocate the resources within.”

Because they were afraid of interrupting Fang Yuan’s deductions, Shark Demon and the others remained silent.

Because of Fang Yuan’s earlier performance, they gained some patience now.

What they did not know was, Fang Yuan was actually thinking about other things instead of deducing.

In this place, the most anxious person was not Fang Yuan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng who was worried about Fang Yuan, or even Shark Demon, it was Bo Dan.

Bo Dan was anxious.

He was not resigned to being suppressed by Xing Xiang Zi, earlier, because there were no flaws, so be it, he was helpless. Now that he found some flaws, there was hope, he tried his best to undergo deductions.

Time continued to pass, but Fang Yuan did not do anything, Bo Dan instead found an area with hidden mortal Gu. If he got rid of this mortal Gu, there would be little harm, and there would be progress in breaking the battlefield killer move.

Bo Dan had some ability after all, if not for that, Shark Demon would not have brought him to attack Yu Lu blessed land.

Having this discovery, Bo Dan was overjoyed, he thought to himself: “Bo Dan, you are really amazing!”

He was quite steady, he did not strike yet, instead he was observing Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was still shutting his eyes, he did not make a move.

Bo Dan waited as he lost his patience, his eyes were darting around.

He had wanted to wait for Fang Yuan to be helpless before he struck, giving a hard slap to Fang Yuan’s face. But soon, he thought: What if Xing Xiang Zi also finds this flaw, what would I do?

Thus, he decided to act.

“Lord Shark Demon, I have made progress! Look!!” Bo Dan suddenly spoke, he said this as he moved his hands, destroying the mortal Gu that was hidden.

Shark Demon nodded at him, Bo Dan was a member of Zombie Alliance after all, compared to an outsider like Xing Xiang Zi, Shark Demon was more willing to see Bo Dan’s improvement.

Su Bai Man smiled lightly: “With both of their help, it won’t be long before we break the battlefield killer move.”

But at this time, Fang Yuan opened his eyes, his expression turned very ugly: “Oh no!”

“What is it?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng asked cooperatively.

Fang Yuan said: “This mortal Gu cannot be destroyed, it is like a trap, after destroying it, the battlefield’s offensive power will rise!!”

Fang Yuan thumped his chest and stomped his feet, he showed a look of anger and regret, as if he was very upset at the moment.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 891: Distorting The Truth

“What?” All the immortal zombies heard Fang Yuan’s words and were shocked.

“You, you, you, bullshit!” Bo Dan felt a strong sense of humiliation as he burst into anger.

Shark Demon squinted, he looked at Bo Dan and Fang Yuan, his expression turned dark: “What is going on?”

Bo Dan was gritting his teeth from anger, he said: “Lord Shark Demon, I am willing to use my years of reputation as a guarantee, there are no issues with my action just now.”

“This Xing Xiang Zi might look like a gentleman!” Bo Dan pointed at Fang Yuan: “But he is a small-minded scoundrel that is jealous of other people’s capabilities. He must have seen my superior performance and decided to slander me. Lord Shark Demon and everyone else, please see the truth.”

“I am most clear about brother Xing Xiang’s abilities! In my opinion, you are the scoundrel!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was extremely angry, he retorted immediately.

“All of you, shut up!” Seeing that the situation was going out of control, Shark Demon shouted, he turned to Fang Yuan: “Xing Xiang Zi, what do you have to say?”

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly: “I have nothing to say.”

Seeing this attitude, Su Bai Man’s eyebrows raised.

But Fang Yuan continued: “I have a question however, for Sir Bo Dan.”

Fang Yuan was not angry, he had a gentlemanly demeanor, when compared to Bo Dan’s hysteric and frenzied state, there was a clear contrast.

Bo Dan saw Fang Yuan’s demeanor and felt even more jealousy and hatred, he snorted: “What question do you have?”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, he stared at Bo Dan as he tried to incite him: “If I ask you, would you dare to answer the truth?”

Bo Dan gritted his teeth, he knew that this was Fang Yuan’s trap, but he could no longer back down now, he forced the words out of his throat: “Go ahead and ask!”

Fang Yuan sighed, he showed a look of ‘I do not want to have conflict with people, yet people come and find trouble with me’, he said: “I will ask you, how many hidden Gu worms are there now in this freezing rain frozen earth battlefield killer move?”

Shark Demon and the others looked tightly at Bo Dan.

Bo Dan’s heart jumped, he opened his mouth and wanted to speak, but he only managed to stretch out his tongue and lick his lips.

Fang Yuan’s question was like a dagger stabbing directly into Bo Dan’s heart!

Bo Dan had only found one spot where there were hidden Gu worms, after deducing, he found that there were no issues and acted to destroy the Gu worm.

Now that this Gu worm was removed, there would definitely be new flaws that were not there before forming.

But if Bo Dan wanted to deduce the location of more hidden Gu worms, he would need time.

Bo Dan had thought of lying, but at the next moment, he denied this stupid idea.

Because this was very easy to verify.

If he said that an area had hidden Gu worms, he could be told to simply attack it to show everyone.

Actions speak louder than words.

Bo Dan was speechless, he clenched his fists subconsciously.

But soon, he understood that he could not lie, he loudly responded: “If you want to seek help from me, I will satisfy you. Give me some time, I will advise you after I finish deducing.”

Gu Immortals all had their own shrewdness, after hearing these words, they remained emotionless in appearance, but they were shaking their heads internally.

Bo Dan’s pathetic state was imprinted in everyone’s minds.

These Gu Immortals were not idiots of course, they understood that Bo Dan spoke without enough confidence. Xing Xiang Zi had exposed Bo Dan simply through a question.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked at Bo Dan with some pity, he sighed internally: “With just your ability, you want to compete with Fang Yuan?

Fang Yuan knew that Bo Dan would reply like this, he laughed heartily: “Sir Bo Dan must have deduced only one flaw. But this hidden Gu worm is only a trap. If you continue your deduction and have more patience, you will find more flaws and hidden Gu worms. That way, you might begin to understand how rash your actions were.”

“Oh?” Bo Dan’s lips twitched, he had thought of a reply, he tried to trouble Fang Yuan: “Then tell everyone how inappropriate my actions were? How did I cause more trouble? What kind of trap was this flaw? Haha, you should answer properly, Lady Su Bai Man has a lie detection method.”

This flaw was naturally not a trap.

Fang Yuan could not answer him.

But Fang Yuan had prepared his response as well, he laughed: “My wisdom path inheritance is unique, how can I leak it here? Bo Dan, you made a good scheme, you want to stealthily learn my wisdom path techniques?”

“Utter bullshit!” Bo Dan flew into rage.

Bo Dan spoke rudely, but Fang Yuan was not unhappy, he looked at Shark Demon.

Shark Demon was frowning deeply, he was an observer, watching Fang Yuan and Bo Dan argue their way out.

Fang Yuan understood that Shark Demon was still biased towards Bo Dan from this one glance.

This was nothing strange.

Shark Demon and Bo Dan were members of Zombie Alliance. They had worked together many times and had spent much time together.

As the saying goes, an acquaintance may not sow discord among friends. This was only the first time Fang Yuan had met Shark Demon, he was a stranger. Bo Dan and Shark Demon had a much closer relationship.

Fang Yuan laughed, his expression changed as he looked at Bo Dan with contempt, he said disdainfully: “Foolish clown, I will give you a lesson today. Watch closely!”

Saying so, Fang Yuan’s fingers moved like swords, drawing lines in the air.

Starlight flew out of his fingertips, they stopped in the air, being either close or far away from him.

“Here, here, here, and all these other places, they have hidden mortal Gu. If you do not believe me, you can try to attack them yourselves. For example, this point needs a fire path attack to destroy the Gu worm. That point needs an ice path technique to be exposed, before using lightning to destroy the Gu worm. And for this point, if you want to destroy the mortal Gu, you have to wait until the next wave to destroy it.”

Fang Yuan spoke quickly as the starlight specks floated in the air, there were eight or nine of them.

The Gu Immortals were all astute, Fang Yuan told them the locations of the hidden Gu worms and the methods to destroy them in detail. He was obviously not afraid of them giving it a try.

Such intense confidence made them believe him without any doubts.

Bo Dan stared with wide opened eyes, he did not know how to rebuke him. He got agitated, he wanted to take action: “I want to see if your words are true.”

“Wait!” Fang Yuan held out his hand, stopping Bo Dan.

Bo Dan could not longer back out of this, he showed intense surprise and joy upon hearing that, he showed a cold smile: “Why, Xing Xiang Zi, are you afraid?”

Fang Yuan sighed, giving Bo Dan a glance, he was like an adult looking at a mischievous child, Bo Dan almost jumped in anger.

Fang Yuan spoke: “There are hidden Gu worms here indeed, I am not afraid of anyone probing it. But these areas cannot be damaged. Just like what you did earlier, these are traps that are interconnected, if they are destroyed, it would affect the entire battlefield killer move, not only would my wisdom path deductions become completely obsolete, I would even have to restart from scratch. All these areas that I pointed out have troublesome connections, I am unable to deduce which points are safe and which are not.”

After saying that, Fang Yuan turned to the immortal zombie Shark Demon, bowing: “Lord Shark Demon, I am truly sorry, this is because I am not good enough.”

Seeing Fang Yuan’s humble attitude, it was like a subtle mockery. Bo Dan’s eyelids were twitching, he wanted to jump and pull out all of Fang Yuan’s white beard, tear his blue robe apart, step on him and grind Fang Yuan’s clean, pinkish face into the dirty soil.

But he could not do that, because Shark Demon was returning the bow to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had just spoken and bowed to Shark Demon.

From Shark Demon’s perspective, he was the leader of them, he had to have manners.

Furthermore, Xing Xiang Zi was Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s good friend, he had introduced the former. Now that Xing Xiang Zi was bowing to Shark Demon, how could Shark Demon not bow back?

Zombie Alliance was in the righteous path, even though the members came from everywhere and a large portion were from the demonic path, once they entered Zombie Alliance, they would have to act like proper members of the righteous path and follow the rules.

Also, after hearing their conversation, Shark Demon had a grasp of the situation.

In his opinion, Xing Xiang Zi's wisdom path attainment was higher than Bo Dan. Such a talent was needed in his future attempts to take down Yu Lu blessed land, he had to bow in return as courtesy.

After that, Shark Demon spoke in a very polite tone: "I am deeply enlightened by Brother Xing Xiang's words, I wonder how we should proceed from here?"

Shark Demon was at rank seven, even though he was an immortal zombie, he was a famous expert in Eastern Sea. He took the initiative to call Xing Xiang Zi 'brother', in everyone's opinion, Shark Demon's attitude was truly very gentle.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly: "It is all because of my low ability, earlier I had a hint of inspiration and did not want to destroy that Gu worm as it would cause my hard work to go to waste. I was anxious and spoke without consideration. Sigh, the saying goes, a strong dragon cannot suppress a local snake, I am just a weak snake, while everyone here are expert dragons."

Bo Dan was so angry he was breathing roughly, his eyes were bloodshot.

Fang Yuan's words were humble, all of his words were 'in consideration' of Bo Dan's face, but he actually slapped Bo Dan loudly countless times.

This time however, Bo Dan did not retort.

He was extremely angry, but he was also feeling uncertain.

His wisdom path inheritance was very incomplete, it was far inferior to Fang Yuan's. Since Fang Yuan could expose so many flaws here, Bo Dan also knew that he could not match Fang Yuan, he just refused to admit the truth.

"Don't tell me, did I really make a mistake? This mortal Gu was really a trap just like what that damned Xing Xiang Zi said?"

Poor Bo Dan, he was framed by Fang Yuan, but even he himself had fallen into self doubt.

Fang Yuan's peripheral vision was on Bo Dan, he observed all his expressions and reactions.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly and humbly on the outside, but he was laughing coldly internally.

He had wanted to retreat long ago.

The next wave of attacks would be extremely powerful. If they are careless, some of these Gu Immortals might die. Even if they could endure it, their immortal essence expenditure would definitely be severe.

Such severe loss would make the Gu Immortals feel severe distress, but Fang Yuan had no way of dismantling this battlefield killer move.

By then, the Gu Immortals would have wasted so many resources, yet Fang Yuan, who was their hope, would make no progress, it was easy to imagine how unhappy they would be with him.

Thus, Fang Yuan's humbleness was not just to mock Bo Dan on purpose, he was trying to plant a seed in these immortals' minds.

"We have to retreat for sure, but the way we retreat is the question." Fang Yuan, after thinking up to this moment, glanced at Bo Dan, before speaking to Shark Demon: "There is little time until the next wave of attacks, with this change, my earlier efforts have gone to waste. I can only restart and try again, but I will not lie, there is little hope of success, I need even more time than before. Most importantly, this wave of attacks will be extremely powerful, in my opinion, we should retreat now.”

The immortals were not willing to give up now, they had already reached this step.

Shark Demon said: “I hope brother Xing Xiang will give it a try.”

Thus, Fang Yuan pretended to sit in the air as he shut his eyes.

Soon, the fifth wave of attacks came, the ice needle storm rained down as dozens of snow monsters charged towards the Gu Immortals.

“The wave is much stronger as expected!”

“Let’s go! This is just the start, and it is already so tough.”

“Bo Dan, I don’t know what to say to you.”

Bo Dan’s expression was dark, he gritted his teeth, his gaze was cold. He could feel the Gu Immortals looking at him, it hurt him more than the ice rain. The Gu Immortals’ words were like whips lashing on his soul.

“Xing Xiang Zi! Xing Xiang Zi!!” He shouted internally, chanting this name, it was a pity that this was merely a fake name.

After enduring for a while, Shark Demon saw that Fang Yuan was not making progress, his evaluation of the gains and losses this time had completely turned over, he could only squeeze out the word: “Retreat!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 892: Alcohol and Food, Fishing for Sharks

The banquet’s atmosphere was very cohesive.

Even though this attack on Yu Lu blessed land caused everyone to end up suffering losses, after they left, Shark Demon still kindly invited Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Fang Yuan to his home as guests.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s man as before Immortal Gu was something Shark Demon needed. Fang Yuan, who was under the identity of Xing Xiang Zi, had deep wisdom path attainment, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man saw his value, especially in their attempt to take down Yu Lu blessed land.

Thus, Shark Demon invited Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, it was not a surprise.

Shark Demon stayed in a place called Shark Sea.

This was a huge sea area, being over three million square kilometers, this Shark Sea was of similar size to the South China Sea on Earth.

That was to say, it was as if the entire South China Sea belonged to Shark Demon alone.

Everything inside the sea area, countless types of sharks, seaweed and aquatic plants, the rocks on the seabed, the huge amount of sea water, all of them were Shark Demon’s possession.

Like in Northern Plains, where fertile grasslands were split up between people, in Eastern Sea, sea areas that were rich with resources were also distributed among people.

Even though Shark Demon was an immortal zombie, he had immense strength, he had the ability to control this sea area.

His palace was at the bottom of the sea, at the center of this Shark Sea area.

During the banquet, there were all sorts of food from Eastern Sea, they were delicious and filled with the local flavors.

No matter what the intentions of both sides were, on the surface, this was a very effective banquet, there was a harmonious atmosphere.

Shark Demon enjoyed his delicious wine, even though he was an immortal zombie, with the help of Gu worms, he could temporarily regain his sense of taste.

Soon after, he put down his wine cup, at his will, the top of his majestic and beautiful palace turned transparent.

“Everyone, take a look, these are divine spear sharks, these are shattering teeth golden sharks, and over there are silver scale great treasure sharks... these are all pets that I had nurtured with much effort.” Shark Demon pointed, not concealing his proud feelings at all.

Fang Yuan raised his head and looked, only to see that the seawater was dark and dim, the palace lights could only shine for ten meters of distance ahead.

The underwater palace was shining in bright lights, if seen from the outside, it was like a huge oddly shaped jewel that was emitting a warm light.

Fang Yuan had his investigative killer moves, the dark seawater could not obstruct him.

He soon saw the sharks that Shark Demon was referring to.

The divine spear sharks moved around alone, they had a peculiar appearance, the tip of their heads were sharp, they were in the shape of long spears. Their bodies were not covered in smooth shark skin, but had a bony texture.

The divine spear sharks swam around in the sea, charging around with no fear. The spear on their heads was very sharp, while not inhibiting their advancement. Everywhere they went, underwater rocks were smashed as pathways was created by them.

As for the shattering teeth golden sharks, they were the most numerous, two to three hundred formed into one group.

These sharks had very small and sharp teeth, when the shattering teeth golden sharks opened their mouths, Fang Yuan could see that in their mouths, both upper and lower jaws, they had six rows of sharp teeth.

Even though these golden sharks were carnivores, they did not prey on large fish, instead they were like whales, they only ate small fish and prawns. The six rows of teeth formed six tight defenses, separating the sand from fish and prawns. No matter how small the fish were, they could not escape from the golden sharks.

Silver scale great treasure sharks were the largest, they would be around the sizes of small whales from Earth.

This type of treasure shark lived in a family of three or four. Usually, they would move about casually, when food appeared, they would move quickly and hunt.

Even though the silver scale great treasure shark had a huge body, its body did not match the incredible speed it could display.

Once it moved, its speed was extremely fast, it would be like a flash of silver lightning in the depths of the sea!

Silver scale great treasure sharks had the most rogue nature, instead of hunting other fish, they ate other sharks as food.

Of course, if it were the stronger sharks like the divine spear sharks or shattering teeth golden sharks, the treasure sharks would not go after them if they had sufficient food.

“How is it, the fish that I am raising, are they alright?” Shark Demon looked at how Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were dazed, he felt incredibly pleased.

“More than alright. These sharks are all lively and energetic, they were raised well. This sea area has all sorts of creatures living in a well balanced habitat, these sharks all have a lot of Gu worms in them, I even saw one or two desolate beast sharks earlier.” Fang Yuan said.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng also sighed, he nodded: “No wonder Eastern Sea is the region with the most abundant resources, this sea area already showcases a lot to me.”

Shark Demon raised his head slightly as he laughed.

Su Bai Man was beside him, she smiled: “Please do not praise him so much. My husband’s hobby is to raise these sharks in his free time, he particularly enjoys hearing the praise of others towards these sharks.”

During the banquet, be it Shark Demon or Su Bai Man, they were much more amicable than in Yu Lu blessed land.

These two could differentiate work from social life, during public occasions, they had to control the situation, thus they were stern and serious, without any hint of carelessness. Privately, they were hospitable and warm, by making jokes at times, they could make other people feel much closer to them.

This couple not only had great battle strength, they also had a lot of experience in human interaction. It was no wonder they could obtain such an important mission like attacking Yu Lu blessed land from Zombie Alliance after much competition.

Even though Shark Demon and Su Bai Man had invested a lot into Yu Lu blessed land, having made a huge loss already, losing a lot of their wealth, if Yu Lu blessed land were to be successfully taken down, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man would receive ten times or even dozens of times as much profits!

Most immortal zombies would not undertake such important missions.

Only Su Bai Man and Shark Demon, these veteran experts, had the foundation to support an immense expenditure in the early stages.

Hearing the praise from Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Shark Demon smiled:

“You flatter me, hahaha. Actually, this sea area is only ranked forty-sixth among the list of Eastern Sea’s sea areas. Above my sea area, there is the elegant splendorous sea area, the flourishing bumpy sea area, and a Song clan Gu Immortal’s, Song Yi Shi’s poetic emotion sea area.”

“Both of you have not been in Eastern Sea for long, you might not have seen the ten great sea areas in Eastern Sea. These ten sea areas are all incredible. Rainbow Island’s rainbow sea area, the seawater is beautiful and in all colors, and yet the colors do not smudge. Boundless forest sea area has trees that are thousands of meters tall growing under the sea, the tree crowns can penetrate the water surface, and the huge number of trees form a huge underwater forest. For the mermen sea area, female mermen 1 are extremely amorous, there are countless mermen living there, they have incredible strength, being one of Eastern Sea’s top ten super forces.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng heard all these as his expression froze, he sighed again: “The world is vast, nature is also vast, Eastern Sea has so many precious resources, and countless talents, we can truly feel how insignificant each of us are.”

“Mermen...” Fang Yuan’s heart moved, he thought of a certain memory in his previous life.

After eating the food, the banquet was reaching its end, Shark Demon said: “Since this is the first time that both of you are here, I have prepared some small gifts, please do accept them.”

This was an obvious way to improve their relationship.

Fang Yuan did not reject him, he wanted to get closer to Shark Demon anyway, he showed a look of joy as he cupped his fists: “Then I will thank Lord Shark Demon in advance.”

Shark Demon laughed heartily, he clapped: “Good, I like the forthright nature of Northern Plains Gu Immortals. But for the gifts I prepared, you will have to collect them yourselves.”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked at each other with a sense of confusion.

Su Bai Man explained while concealing her smile: “Both of you might not know, my husband does not invite guests here very often. But when he does, he would gift them some sharks. The guest would need to catch the sharks themselves, as for how many and what type of sharks they get, that would be decided by the guest’s ability.”

“So that’s it.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Fang Yuan realized.

“Please start moving. You only have seven minutes, during this period, you need to stay inside the palace, it will be against the rules if you go out.” Shark Demon said.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was very interested, these sharks were in top-notch condition, they were very valuable. Even if he could not use them, he could sell them for a huge sum of immortal essence stones.

Moreover, there were sharks that suited him here.

Fang Yuan’s was moved, he thought of something: “Isn’t this the famous shark fishing banquet from my previous life?”

In his previous life, by the time Fang Yuan came to Eastern Sea, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man had already died, the cause was unknown.

This shark sea became someone else’s possession.

The Gu Immortal who occupied this place, Zhu Xing Bo, was very hospitable and had a wide network of friendships. While holding a banquet, he also played this game, allowing his guests to fish for sharks in the palace.

It turned out that the origin of this was Shark Demon, Gu Immortal Zhu Xing Bo was only imitating him.

The fishing had started, they had limited time, Fang Yuan resisted his urge to enter the sea to take a look.

There were many groups of sharks swimming around freely near the underwater palace.

“Among these sharks, the ones with the highest value are those that Shark Demon pointed out earlier: Divine spear shark, shattering teeth golden shark, and silver scale great treasure shark. But these sharks do not suit me.”

Fang Yuan thought in his mind.

The ones which suited him were blood fiend sharks and star mark sharks. The former was suitable for Hu Immortal blessed land after the blood calamity, the latter suited Star Form blessed land, they could be raised in the most central lake.

However, the quantity of these two types of sharks was far less than the divine spear shark, shattering teeth golden shark, and silver scale great treasure shark.

It was because the ferocity of the blood fiend shark and star mark shark was inferior to the divine spear shark, shattering teeth golden shark, and silver scale great treasure shark.

This underwater palace was Shark Demon’s place of residence. During normal times, when Shark Demon had the time, he would toss fresh food and cause the sharks to fight for them. As time passed, this place became the sanctuary of the sharks, the strongest shark groups would stay here.

It was difficult for Fang Yuan to obtain blood fiend sharks and star mark sharks.

He was inside the underwater palace, he could not travel around and capture sharks in the water.

This was only a game, Shark Demon was not generous enough to let others capture sharks in his sea area casually.

Fang Yuan felt some regret, but he had to give up on the blood fiend sharks and star mark sharks.

As for the divine spear sharks, shattering teeth golden sharks, and silver scale great treasure sharks, he did not want them. After two months of accumulation, he already had five to six hundred immortal essence stones, with such wealth, he did not need such a small amount.

How many divine spear sharks, shattering teeth golden sharks, and silver scale great treasure sharks could be obtained in seven minutes?

Fang Yuan was not skilled in capturing beasts, using an immortal killer move to capture beasts was too wasteful, unless he was trying to capture desolate beasts.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 893: Song Clan’s Song Yi Shi

Fang Yuan quickly thought, and decided to help Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng wanted to capture cloud line sharks which had a small and exquisite bodies, not only could they move in the sea, they could also fly and survive for a long time, they were suitable for Tai Bai blessed land.

However, cloud line sharks were proficient at hiding, were it not for this, they could not have survived near the sea palace between the three shark groups.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s shark fishing ran into a problem at the very start.

His target was cloud line sharks, but divine spear sharks, shattering teeth golden sharks and silver scale great treasure sharks would not just look on from the side.

Like smoke spreading in the sea, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s methods stirred up these three shark groups.

As far as they were concerned, this sanctuary was their joint territory, and now an anomaly appeared. Like beasts whose territories were invaded, they naturally had to teach these audacious invaders a lesson.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was specialized in healing and was not proficient in fishing, these three shark groups caused great disturbance to him.

After Fang Yuan helped, the disturbances were mostly eliminated. Tai Bai Yun Sheng felt his pressure lifting and immediately sent him a grateful look.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly and nodded to Tai Bai Yun Sheng, not saying anything.

Finally, with Fang Yuan’s cooperation, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was able to capture an ideal quantity of cloud line sharks.

“I thank both Lord Shark Demon and Lord Su Bai Man.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng had profited, thus he stood up and bowed solemnly to the two.

“You two indeed have a deep relationship.” Shark Demon sighed softly.

After chatting for a while, this banquet reached the end, both guests and hosts enjoyed it to the fullest. Shark Demon personally accompanied Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng out of the sea area.

They looked on until the two had shrunk to the size of ants in the horizons. Su Bai Man’s gaze flashed as she suddenly spoke: “Dear, what do you think of this Xing Xiang Zi?”

Shark Demon’s smile disappeared completely and his gaze turned aloof: “This person seems humble but in fact is arrogant and also has lot of hidden thoughts, he is different from Tai Bai Yun Sheng and is not someone easy to deal with.”

He paused for a moment before continuing: “Bo Dan is too useless, he was led around by Xing Xiang Zi from start to finish. Bo Dan is a person on our side, but was embarrassed like that by Xing Xiang Zi. Bo Dan’s embarrassment caused me to lose face as well. This Xing Xiang Zi did whatever he wanted since the moment he came, there is ruthlessness behind his gentle appearance, he is no kind person. If I had my previous temperament, I would have already given him a few hard slaps and taught him to be obedient. He would learn that this is Eastern Sea and not Northern Plains!”

Su Bai Man hurriedly consoled: “Dear, calm your anger, this type of person with skill will naturally have arrogance. As for Bo Dan’s loss of composure this time, it is also justifiable. Think of it, his private sea area has already been occupied for many years by Blazing Heaven Demoness and she still doesn’t have the intention to return it. Bo Dan recently went to beg for it but was instead beaten badly by Blazing Heaven Demoness. Blazing Heaven Demoness is a Northern Plains immortal zombie, thus Bo Dan naturally looks upon Northern Plains Gu Immortals with anger.”

“Moreover, he lost his private sea area and is without other means of income, he is in extremely strained circumstances. The reward from attacking Yu Lu blessed land is plentiful and it is his best chance to save himself from poverty. However, Xing Xiang Zi arrived with wisdom path methods better than his, it is unavoidable for Bo Dan to be furious for having his source of income stolen. This is a matter of great importance to him, thus it was also unavoidable for him to lose his usual state of mind.”

As he heard this, Shark Demon’s eyes brightened, and he looked at Su Bai Man with a smiling expression: “Why are you suddenly speaking about Bo Dan so favorably? Ah... it must be that Bo Dan secretly sent a big gift to you, right?”

Su Bai Man covered her mouth as she laughed: “I cannot hide anything from you. It is not a big gift, just a palm sized medicine ice.”

Shark Demon, however, was very surprised: “Although the quantity of this medicine ice is small, it is a genuine rank eight immortal material, where did Bo Dan find this? Heh, he is really spending a lot to protect his role.”

Su Bai Man lightly shook her head: “Bo Dan doesn’t seem to be eye-catching, but to be able to have this success, he isn’t a simple character.”

Shark Demon said with a profound voice: “It seems Bo Dan really wants to grasp this opportunity. He might not have much experience in this situation, but even if he is incompetent, he also has some use. Xing Xiang Zi has great capability, but he is an outsider. I definitely want to bring Bo Dan, just to keep this Xing Xiang Zi in check and stop him from being solely dominant in the future. If we let him be proud and insolent because of his talent, what will happen in the future? What if when we are attacking the blessed land, we are trapped by him, what will we do then? We don’t understand wisdom path methods, but with Bo Dan, we can make Xing Xiang Zi restrain himself and prevent him from making mischief.”

Su Bai Man put her mind at ease, gazing dreamily at this man whom she loved deeply: “My husband really is most capable, Bo Dan and Xing Xiang Zi are playing in your hands, and won’t be able to create any trouble.”

“Hahaha, dear, don’t praise me so much.”

Fang Yuan followed Tai Bai Yun Sheng to a nameless island.

This nameless island was the home of Tai Bai Yun Sheng previously.

It was extremely crude, but because of Tai Bai Yun Sheng, it gradually started becoming slightly famous in the circles of Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

In this invasion of Yu Lu blessed land, Shark Demon had to return in defeat after the difficult round.

To carry out another invasion, they needed time to prepare.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng wanted to use this free time to meet the many requests he had received in the past.

One had to say that Landscape as Before, this time path Immortal Gu, was very much sought after.

Something unexpected could happen any time, there would always be some issues appearing from time to time in the sea areas the Gu Immortals managed. Landscape as Before had outstanding effects in this aspect and showed instant results.

“Fang Yuan, how about coming together with me, we can take care of each other on one hand and I can also introduce you to others. With this trip, you can also get familiar with the nearby Gu Immortals.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng suggested.

This suggestion was very appropriate, but Fang Yuan already had a plan, as he said to Tai Bai Yun Sheng with a wry smile: “Old Bai, it is better if you don’t let others know our relation as much as possible. Because the thing I am about to do might very well implicate you.”

“Ah? Wasn’t this trip to get a share of Yu Lu blessed land, then join Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng felt something wrong from Fang Yuan’s tone, it seemed like he was going to create trouble.

With regards to Fang Yuan’s ability to create trouble, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a deep impression of it.

The set up in Imperial Court blessed land and Eighty-Eight True Yang Building by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was destroyed because of Fang Yuan.

Moreover, this was accomplished when Fang Yuan had still been a mortal. Now, he was an immortal zombie, this ability to create trouble had definitely increased sharply.

“Fang Yuan, you shouldn’t act recklessly. What are you planning?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng worriedly looked at Fang Yuan.

“My good senior brother, don’t worry, I am doing this to join Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance.” Fang Yuan consoled.

“Don’t, don’t call me senior brother, a skilled person is a teacher, I still don’t have enough qualifications to be your senior brother.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng hurriedly shook his hand, worriedly inquiring about the details.

Fang Yuan revealed a little: “Old Bai, have you thought about how inappropriate it is for me to join Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng blinked: “Although you are under the identity of a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, Eastern Sea has had cases of Gu Immortals of other regions joining their local forces. Moreover, this Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance is the main headquarters of the Zombie Alliances over all five regions, it is an enormous force. Other Zombie Alliance branches don’t recruit living Gu Immortals, but Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance recruits them. Your identity won’t pose a problem.”

Fang Yuan shook his head: “Those like Bo Dan who have joined Zombie Alliance are those who are living a miserable life and can barely scrape by. These type of people are at the bottom layer among Gu Immortals. Their positions in Zombie Alliance are even lower than immortal zombies. But I, Xing Xiang Zi, am different. Not mentioning my Immortal Gu, I have strong wisdom path methods which can deduce the battlefield killer move in Yu Lu blessed land. People like me, no matter how we live, we are not likely to join Zombie Alliance. As long as I reveal just a slight intent to do so, I believe other righteous path forces would welcome me warmly.”

“Hmm, it is reasonable.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded: “Joining these forces means losing freedom. Especially to foreign Gu Immortals like us, the monitoring and restrictions are much more strict. Otherwise, why would there be so many lone cultivators?”

“So, for a Gu Immortal like me to join Zombie Alliance, not only should it be my own wish, but it also requires a strong external pressure.” Fang Yuan nodded.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s eyes shined brightly, as he asked: “What pressure?”

Fang Yuan smiled before lightly asking a question that made Tai Bai Yun Sheng pale: “Which is the closest super force from here?”

Song clan was a colossus that had occupied Eastern Sea for hundreds of years.

This clan was an existence that was in the top ten even among the many super forces in Eastern Sea.

The official, publicly known number of Gu Immortals in the clan was eighteen. Song clan’s first supreme elder, Song Qi Yuan, had already been rank eight for many years, his battle strength was unfathomable.

Song Qi Yuan’s son, Song Diao Ling, was a rank seven Gu Immortal with outstanding talent, he was cultured and elegant, and had been publicly recognized as the successor for Song clan’s leadership.

But unfortunately, over ten years ago, Song Diao Ling was schemed against and died, leaving behind a daughter.

The daughter’s surname was naturally Song and her given name was Yi Shi. She was the only descendant left of Song Qi Yuan’s bloodline.

Since a young age, Song Yi Shi was pampered by her grandfather Song Qi Yuan. In any world, some people are naturally born with a silver spoon in their mouths.

In the world where most people were struggling to survive, and most Gu Immortals constantly on their guard, preparing to undergo their next tribulations and calamities, rushing around everywhere to raise their strength and cultivation, Song Yi Shi was just sitting back and enjoying life, all her cultivation resources provided by Song Qi Yuan. She only needed to say the word and her grandfather, Song Qi Yuan, would make sure they were fulfilled.

When Song Yi Shi underwent immortal ascension, Song Qi Yuan personally protected her.

After advancing to a rank six Gu Immortal, Song Qi Yuan sent his granddaughter a big gift — a sea area with an area of four million square kilometers. It was slightly larger than the South China Sea on Earth.

Not only this, this sea area was also extremely rich in resources and was named the poetic emotion sea area. In the rankings of Eastern Sea, it was ranked above Shark Demon’s shark sea.

Fang Yuan explored and, in combination with his previous life’s memories, made his plan center around this Song Yi Shi.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 894: Purposely Getting Discovered

After plotting in secret for half a month, Fang Yuan arrived on a small island.

Eastern Sea had many small islands, there were millions or even tens of millions of the islands that Fang Yuan had arrived at.

Most small islands were uninhabited islands, but this small island actually had humans.

There were three fishing villages on the island, the strongest cultivator was only rank three.

Fang Yuan hid his figure, under the blazing sun, he strolled into a nearby fishing village like it was a normal thing to do.

The surrounding people were mostly ordinary mortals. There was occasionally a Gu Master or two on the scene, they were either rank one or two, and were very well respected by the mortals around them.

Fang Yuan’s current methods were much stronger than the time when he was in Southern Border.

He moved through the entire village two or three times, but no one could discover him.

“This should be Li clan village.” Fang Yuan observed it for a while, combined with his previous life’s memories, he verified that this was the place.

This small fishing village was obviously not Li clan village.

But in his previous life, there was a mystical and interesting Gu Immortal who emerged from this place, he was called Li Xiao Yao.

This fishing village was renamed by him, to Li clan village.

Of course, right now, Li Xiao Yao was yet to be born. According to his previous life’s memories, Li Xiao Yao would be born in around two hundred years.

After confirming the status of this fishing village, Fang Yuan left and arrived at a cliff beside the sea.

There were countless nests in the cliff, there were hundreds, thousands of birds resting here, they had a strong territorial awareness. Once a Gu Master, or a large life form comes and makes the birds feel threatened, they would assault the invaders together.

Thus, few people in the village came to this place. Occasionally, there were Gu Masters who came to harvest some medicinal herbs or steal some bird eggs.

These birds were very diverse, they were a congregation of over ten different hundred beast groups, they were not the same types of birds.

On this tiny island, there were human Gu Masters, but they were not at the dominant position in this environment.

“According to the <<Biography of Li Xiao Yao>>, when Li Xiao Yao was still a child, he was often bullied by children who were older than him, he had to hide here out of necessity. Here, he found a hidden cave by accident, he treated this cave as his secret base.”

This cliff had all sorts of holes and caves, there was a large number of them.

It was obviously very difficult to locate the cave that Li Xiao Yao found.

“However, since there are bird groups here, Li Xiao Yao could not have gone deep inside. His cave should be at the outer periphery.”

Fang Yuan was prepared amply, he searched for a while and chose a hundred targets initially.

By the time it was noon, and the sun started to descend towards the west, Fang Yuan found his true target.

This hole was not big, but even with Xing Xiang Zi’s current size, he could not enter. Not to mention Fang Yuan’s original eight arm immortal zombie body.

Thankfully, he had change form Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan shrunk his body and squeezed inside.

The cave was moist, by the evening, there was weak lingering sunlight penetrating into it. After moving in the cave for a short while, Fang Yuan came to the deepest part of this cave. The space here was extremely wide.

The sea winds outside the cliff blew into the small holes of the cave, they created a whistling sound of moving wind.

Fang Yuan could not help but think of the <<Biography of Li Xiao Yao>>, inside, it wrote about Li Xiao Yao’s childhood, when he was often bullied, he would hide inside this cave and sob quietly, as he listened to the whistling sound of the wind.

This situation continued for a long time, until one day, fate changed for him as Li Xiao Yao’s legendary tale began.

This change in fate was the small hole in a corner of the cave.

Once when Li Xiao Yao was hiding here, he leaned on a corner as he rested. Suddenly, the cave collapsed as he fell, directly into a deep part of the cliff, and he got swept away by the currents in the sea.

This trip, Fang Yuan was trying to replicate Li Xiao Yao’s fortuitous encounter in his previous life.

This cliff was like an ant’s den, the inside had numerous tunnels and different caves, as if there was a drill that moved in it.

Six hours later, Fang Yuan found the actual route.

He broke the hole in the cave as he moved into it.

When he entered the interior of the cliff, he fell rapidly.

It was pure darkness and moisture, there were all sorts of small life forms like snakes, the largest animal here was a type of lizard, having the size of a normal cat.

All these could not obstruct Fang Yuan.

He quickly got to the bottom of the cliff, as the sound of waves got louder.

At the bottom of the cliff, there was a huge spiral of seawater.

This was the unique undercurrent phenomenon of Eastern Sea.

The seawater in the spiral moved rapidly, there were abundant water vapor and it resembled a giant monster’s mouth.

Fang Yuan willed and several Gu worms flew out, stopping here and leaving a marking.

Next, he dived into the spiral with a loud sound.

Once he was in the spiral, a formless force surrounded his body. Even with Fang Yuan’s incredible strength, he felt a sense of helplessness as he was ‘captured’ by the seawater.

Fang Yuan did not struggle, instead he allowed this undercurrent to carry him elsewhere.

This undercurrent was like a formless dragon or python, it created a tunnel of water at the bottom of the sea. The fish groups at the bottom of the sea would swim away from it. Even seaweed and aquatic plants did not grow in their path.

Because they could not grow, they could not endure the long term dragging force of the undercurrents.

Fang Yuan followed this undercurrent as he moved quickly, his current speed was incredible fast, even ordinary movement immortal killer moves could not match his speed!

This was a specialty of the sea’s undercurrents.

In Eastern Sea, there was a type of precious map.

The map did not record the islands, nor the surface of the sea, it included the undercurrents in the sea.

Gushes of undercurrents interweaved under the sea, they formed into a natural route for transportation of goods.

In Eastern Sea, some super forces had underwater caravans. These caravans made use of Gu worms to go deep into the sea and use the undercurrents to move rapidly, in a short time, they could travel for ten thousand li, or even a hundred thousand li, to engage in trade.

After about fifteen minutes, Fang Yuan emerged from the other end of this undercurrent.

The endpoint was just like the starting point, it was also a huge seawater spiral.

Fang Yuan jumped out of the spiral, what he saw was a sea of red.

The intense hot air assaulted him.

This was an underwater volcano.

Fang Yuan was currently partway up this underwater volcano.

In the middle of the volcano, there was no seawater entering it.

At the bottom of the volcano, molten magma gushed out from the deep parts of the sea trench, causing countless lives to perish.

And at the top of the volcano, there was a natural underwater hot spring.

Fang Yuan’s objective was the underwater hot spring at the top of the volcano.

But Fang Yuan made an estimation, it was not time yet, he decided to explore the place to spend the time.

The lower he went, the hotter it was.

It was pure red in front of him, a type of fire lizard entered Fang Yuan’s detection range.

This lizard had shiny smooth scales, it extended its tongue as it ate flying bugs as food.

This type of flying insect originated from the bottom of the volcano, inside the moving molten magma river.

In the magma river, there were bubbles bursting at times as small insects flew out from within.

The fire lizard sprawled on the side of the magma river, seeing that the flying insects had flown out, its tongue shot out at lightning speed as it captured these bugs, it retracted its tongue and swallowed its food.

Fang Yuan observed such a unique habitat for a long time.

Nature was really mysterious, it was displayed in front of Fang Yuan right now.

Fang Yuan observed the fire lizards for a while before paying his attention to the flying insects.

This type of insect was very unique, it was hatched in the magma river, it could endure extremely high temperatures.

After a long time, Fang Yuan had a new discovery: The fire lizard did not succeed in getting its food every time, it would fail consecutively at times.

A portion of the flying insects seemed to have developed some sort of latent talent from the pressure created by the fire lizard.

These flying insects turned into Gu worms during the process of being captured as food. Their speed increased and they managed to evade the lizard’s tongue.

This was a form of advancement.

Like a carp jumping through the dragon’s gate, turning from a fish into a dragon, its life had been elevated in the most fundamental sense.

After these flying insects became Gu worms, a portion of them took the initiative to land on the lizard and become its accompanying Gu, living together with the lizard.

But these were all fire path mortal Gu, they did not have much value to Fang Yuan.

For the current Fang Yuan, the only interesting thing was this underwater volcano. With it, he had a source to produce Gu worms, he could produce large numbers of fire path and water path Gu worms for a long time.

Mortal Gu only had value to Gu Immortals when they were large enough in quantity.

And finally, Fang Yuan observed this magma river.

This magma river had other life forms, they were a type of fish.

Fang Yuan did not intend to explore further, he did not want to get into trouble by jumping into the magma river either.

The magma river had a high temperature, if Fang Yuan wanted to enter it, he would need to use a defensive immortal killer move. That meant that he would need to consume precious immortal essence.

Nature was mighty, many places had such dangerous environments that even Gu Immortals could not enter for long.

Fang Yuan had been counting the time, when he felt that it was almost time, he traveled up along the volcano, past the point he was at and towards the peak.

By now, he started becoming careful, concealing his traces on purpose.

The young and beautiful Song Yi Shi was one of the six great beauties among Eastern Sea Gu Immortals Today, Song Yi Shi was in a bad mood.

She was being harassed again.

All these male Gu Immortals who came from everywhere were like annoying flies, they were all around Song Yi Shi, chattering non-stop, they could not even be chased away.

After shrugging off these irritating pursuers, Song Yi Shi came to her personal sea area.

This sea area was called poetic emotion sea, it produced a type of rank four wisdom path Gu worm, emotion poetry Gu. This Gu worm could store emotions and was extremely precious in the minds of mortal Gu Masters.

Song Yi Shi came to the bottom of the sea, going into her underwater volcano palace.

This underwater volcano was inside poetic emotion sea, it was naturally Song Yi Shi’s property.

Song Yi Shi was at the peak of the volcano, she had built a beautiful small palace there. She loved the hot spring inside the palace, once in a while, she would go there and take a bath.

She took off her clothes and revealed her peerless body. Her skin was tender and pale, like a freshly peeled egg, her limbs were slender and long, her lips were red and her eyes were sharp, and she had long hair that extended to her waist.

She entered the hot spring and enjoyed herself after shutting her eyes.

Soon, her mood became better, she started to hum a song.

But she did not know that Fang Yuan was lurking close by, observing her every movement.

“It is almost time.” Fang Yuan’s gaze was eerie as he calculated, he purposely leaked a trace of his aura.

“Who is there?!” Song Yi Shi’s expression turned pale, she shouted as her eyes stared at Fang Yuan’s hiding spot with much anger.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 895: Happy About Being Chased Down

“Misunderstanding, this is a misunderstanding!!” Fang Yuan appeared like he was ‘forced to’.

Seeing an old man like Xing Xiang Zi appearing in front of her suddenly, Song Yi Shi immediately shrieked. Right now, she was relaxing in the hot spring, completely naked, it was naturally her most vulnerable moment.

If the one that appeared was a female, so be it, but it happened to be a male Gu Immortal.

There should be prudence between sexes!

Song Yi Shi fell into panic.

“I can explain. All this is a big misunderstanding. Please, you must listen to my explanation.” Fang Yuan waved his hand, speaking without stop.

At this moment, Song Yi Shi’s panic was already surpassed by an intense anger.

“Perverted thief, die!”

Song Yi Shi hid her body in the hot spring, and pointed a finger at Fang Yuan.

Immortal killer move — Stream Veil!

There was an increase of water vapor in the air, two streams of water that were like long sleeves of dancing women, or like thin veils worn by beauties to cover their face, coiled around Fang Yuan from both sides.

Fang Yuan’s heart shook.

Song Yi Shi was a water path Gu Immortal, this stream veil was an immortal killer move and it was an exceptional method to capture enemies.

If Fang Yuan was struck by this move, it would be difficult for him to get free.

Not daring to let this stream veil near him, Fang Yuan quickly retreated, starlight shone around him and star snakes moved in the air, facing the stream veil.

Immortal killer move – Star Snake Rope.

Star snakes entangled the stream veil, but stream veil was like water, drowning the star snakes. In just few breaths of time, the star snakes vanished into nothingness.

The stream veil moved towards Fang Yuan again.

“Star snake rope and stream veil are both capturing methods, I didn’t think the gap between them would be so huge.” Fang Yuan’s heart sank. Fortunately, with this small delay, starlight Immortal Gu in his immortal aperture was completely activated, bright light shot out from the Immortal Gu like a rising sun.

Surrounding the starlight Immortal Gu were countless fire path mortal Gu, like tens of thousands of fireflies.

Star path immortal killer move – Star Fire Escape!

Whoosh.

Fang Yuan’s whole body burned with deep blue flames, and he soared to the sky like lightning.

“Where are you going?!” Song Yi Shi yelled in a charming voice, as she used the killer move to obstruct Fang Yuan.

Bam!!

A huge explosion erupted at top of underwater volcano.

The seabed shook, torrents rose. The underwater volcano’s top part was destroyed for the most part, the natural protective structure was broken, causing endless amounts of seawater to flow inside.

Song Yi Shi was very busy for a while dealing with the flying rocks and the flowing seawater.

She put up a defensive barrier, and quickly wore her clothes, her mind slightly calmed down.

Then without caring about the destruction of the volcano by the seawater, she started flying towards the direction Fang Yuan left in.

“You cannot escape!” Song Yi Shi shouted with clenched teeth.

Fang Yuan’s speed, with star fire escape’s help, was extremely fast, but because the water was extremely deep, it took a good while to fly out of the sea surface.

In his previous life, the <<Biography of Li Xiao Yao>> recorded that Li Xiao Yao fell to the bottom of the cliff and entered the undercurrent which took him to the underwater volcano. The bottom of the volcano was too hot, Li Xiao Yao tried to get away from it by moving to the peak of the volcano where he unexpectedly saw Song Yi Shi who was bathing. Song Yi Shi immediately captured him, but after interrogating him, she was instead very pleased.

She had not known there was an extremely hidden undercurrent in the underwater volcano. At this moment, the sea was besieged by strong enemies, Li Xiao Yao’s appearance instead gave Song Yi Shi a hope to escape.

Song Yi Shi used this undercurrent to be free from the predicament. While Li Xiao Yao’s life had a great turn from here on, Song Yi Shi took him under her wing and guided him on Gu Master cultivation.

The treatment Fang Yuan received was completely different from Li Xiao Yao's.

"Li Xiao Yao was a handsome young boy. Although I am an immortal and also have taken a good appearance, it is one where I am already in my seventies and eighties. Song Yi Shi is young and Song clan is also a colossal force, it would be strange if she did not get angry and chase me down."

Fang Yuan sighed while secretly observing behind him.

When he found Song Yi Shi was chasing him, he gave a light smile, before charging out of the sea surface.

Gu Immortal Yao Ge Pi was one of Song Yi Shi's pursuers, and right now, he was lurking around the poetic emotion sea area.

He looked young, was handsome and charming, and had rank six cultivation. He was a lone cultivator of Eastern Sea.

"Fairy Yi Shi will go bathe in the hot spring of the underwater volcano every once in a while. None of them know this secret, only I am aware of it at present. I will take this chance to have more contact with Fairy Yi Shi. If I can marry her, would I still have to fear not having enough cultivation resources? Hmm? What is going on?!"

Yao Ge Pi gazed at the source of the sound and saw Fang Yuan flying out of the sea with a miserable appearance; a giant wave rose up in the calm sea.

"Looking at his appearance, he seems to be a thief. Do I chase him?" Yao Ge Pi hesitated.

Right at this time, Song Yi Shi also flew out of the sea surface and looked at Fang Yuan's receding figure in the air, shouting in anger: "Perverted thief, don't run, die!!"

"What, perverted thief?!" Yao Ge Pi felt like he had been struck by a lightning, his eyes protruded out till they almost fell off!

"Pervert, perverted thief?"

"What happened to Fairy Yi Shi? That old bastard is actually a daring lecher!! Damn it, kill him!"

Yao Ge Pi roared inwardly, killing intent filling his heart.

"Fairy Yi Shi, don't worry, I, Yao Ge Pi, am here!" The next moment, Yao Ge Pi shouted loudly, stepping forward.

Song Yi Shi was dazed, her original provoked and aggressive air also stilled.

She had just attacked with anger and had not thought much when she shouted furiously, but with Yao Ge Pi's appearance, she could not help but feel panic.

Oh heavens, have mercy!

She was still a young lady, and this was the first time she had experienced a situation like this.

Regarding this matter, she naturally wanted to cover it tightly, it was best if she resolved everything herself, kill Fang Yuan and no one else would know of this matter.

If this matter were to be spread, how would she face others in future?

However, another Gu Immortal appeared now.

She recognized this person, he was one those hateful pursuers, his surname seemed to be Yao?

Song Yi Shi was not too sure.

Yao Ge Pi was even more distressed and anguished the moment he saw Song Yi Shi’s panicked expression. He then observed Song Yi Shi’s flushed face, red like she had just gone through intercourse, the killing intent inside him increased by dozens of times in an instant!

Actually, nothing had happened, but the imagination of humans was endless, moreover, Yao Ge Pi was a man and a crazed pursuer, he easily interpreted the expression in an entirely dark manner.

Right now, Yao Ge Pi was thinking: This old pervert that is escaping with all his strength has definitely taken huge advantage of her! He might have used some dirty tricks to drug Fairy Yi Shi. He must have approached her, no, he likely kissed her and touched her. Who knows how much Fairy Yi Shi was encroached upon, how much humiliation she suffered!

With such thoughts, the fury in Yao Ge Pi’s heart burned so high that it seemed to ignite his whole body, he chased furiously while screaming: “You damned old bastard, old lecher, don’t run! You dare to desecrate our Fairy Yi Shi, I am going to skin you alive! I will make you regret everything you did to Fairy Yi Shi!!”

When Song Yi Shi heard this furious scream, her whole body shook and she almost fell down from the air.

Don’t scream so loudly, are you trying to let the whole world know? Isn’t it best if we quietly, quickly and secretly kill this damned geezer?

Unfortunately, the furious Yao Ge Pi could not hear Song Yi Shi’s thoughts.

And this was the first time Song Yi Shi had encountered such a situation, so she lost her composure, she wanted to transmit her voice to say this to Yao Ge Pi, but she was too young and could not speak up no matter what.

How embarrassing was it if she said it outright!

Among these three, the happiest was instead Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had already calculated Song Yi Shi’s reaction. Yao Ge Pi’s appearance, however, was an unexpected surprise.

‘Good, that’s good, scream loudly, yes, a bit louder.’ Fang Yuan inwardly cheered Yao Ge Pi.

The two Gu Immortals chasing absolutely would not be imagining the strange thoughts in Fang Yuan’s mind at this moment.

Fang Yuan wanted to blow the situation up into a huge matter.

Song Yi Shi was a Gu Immortal of a super force, Song clan, she was the apple of Song Qi Yuan’s eye, with many pursuers. After this matter blows up, Fang Yuan would have an external pressure to join Zombie Alliance.

However, this conflict was not from swindling money, murdering someone’s parents, or a life and death battle.

At most, Fang Yuan had only taken a glance unintentionally.

Song Yi Shi was a young girl with very few experiences, her thoughts were still conservative, naturally, she would feel wronged and furious at having someone see her body for the first time.

This was the natural mentality of young people.

As they got older and more experienced, no matter who they were, they would gain at least some knowledge on sexual life.

So what if he took a glance? Didn’t some women wish others would just keep on looking at them? From a certain perspective, did this not prove one’s charm?

Two to three hundred years later, Li Xiao Yao also peeked at but nothing happened to him, instead he was protected and hidden.

One big reason was that Song Yi Shi’s mentality had already changed.

Later, Li Xiao Yao would have another fortuitous encounter and become a sword path Gu Immortal, and finally, he and Song Yi Shi would become an immortal couple.

Wasn’t Song Yi Shi older than Li Xiao Yao by two to three hundred years, she could be said to be a cradle-robber.

“Of course, there is another reason. Two to three hundred years later, Song Qi Yuan’s lifespan had been used up and he died. The rank eight Gu Immortal’s fall created an enormous change in Eastern Sea’s structure. Song clan began to weaken and the enormous wealth Song Yi Shi had was coveted by others. Not only was there pressure from external sources, there was internal strife in the clan as well. Li Xiao Yao, who was taught by Song Yi Shi and accompanied her throughout his mortal Gu Master stage and shared her sufferings, became the most reassuring individual to Song Yi Shi. Later, Li Xiao Yao inherited Sword Immortal Drunken Green Bull’s inheritance, and developed methods bringing in new advancements, and became a powerful sword path Gu Immortal, this caused Song Yi Shi to fall for him. The two became an immortal couple, moving around without a set destination, secretively and freely. In the five regions chaotic war, they appeared and worked together to resist rank eight Gu Immortals, becoming a great pillar in blocking Central Continent’s offensive.”

Fang Yuan fled while thinking leisurely about all sorts of things.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 896: Freely Leaving After Killing

In the sky, a battle of pursuit was unfolding.

Bam bam bam!

Intense explosions occurred one after another.

Song Yi Shi and Yao Ge Pi attacked non-stop, but because of the distance, and because Fang Yuan was slippery like an eel, he could not be caught, he was displaying an incredible flying attainment.

Even though he was ahead, Fang Yuan, who was pretending to be escaping, was actually slowing his speed, allowing the two pursuers to follow him.

He was a demonic path overlord, in his previous life, even though he did not have particularly great achievements, he had rich life experience, he had undergone many battles, it was something that these two young Gu Immortals behind him could not imagine.

Especially Song Yi Shi, she was too young and had little battle experience. Even though she was using an immortal killer move to chase him, she could not catch up no matter what.

Fang Yuan changed directions often, sometimes he went into the water, sometimes he went into the clouds, he was extremely crafty. Song Yi Shi was extremely angry, she felt like she was not chasing him down, but being played with instead.

As for Yao Ge Pi, he was a lone cultivator, even though he had more experience, he did not have a single Immortal Gu, not to mention any immortal killer moves.

He, who could only use mortal killer moves, was doomed in this battle of pursuit from the start.

He was lagging behind, he could only shout loudly, if Fang Yuan was not purposely slowing down for him, he would have been left in the dust already.

The three traveled quickly through the air, they soon left the poetic emotion sea area.

“What is going on? There are Gu Immortals fighting?”

The noise from their travels earned the attentions of two lone cultivator Gu Immortals from a nearby island.

These two were playing chess, they were quite relaxed.

Hearing the commotion, they raised their heads as they used investigative methods.

“It seems to be Song clan’s Fairy Yi Shi, and a young male lone cultivator, they are pursuing someone. This person’s aura is not that of Eastern Sea, they are a Northern Plains Gu Immortal.”

“Less trouble is better than more trouble, Song Yi Shi is the prized gem of Song Qi Yuan, let’s not interfere in this.”

“You are right, come, let’s continue playing chess.”

Fang Yuan looked at this island, he frowned slightly as he turned to another direction, continuing to fly.

Not long later, at web eye sea area.

“What? There is such a lecherous and shameless old bastard in this world! Fairy Yi Shi, I, Chen Zhong Yong, will lend you a hand!”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, he dodged Chen Zhong Yong’s attack as he continued escaping.

Thus, there were three people chasing after him now.

After a certain amount of time, at rumbling thunder sea channel.

“Fairy Yi Shi is pure as jade, she was actually tainted! He deserves death, he deserves death!!” Bi Qing Tian was anguished, he joined in the chase resolutely.

Fifteen minutes later, the commotion caused by them attracted a battle maniac Gu Immortal.

“You are a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, you dare to lay your lecherous hands on our Eastern Sea Goddess? Do you think that we of Eastern Sea can be bullied?” Lei Hong was furious, he spoke without restraint.

Song Yi Shi was getting more and more furious, seeing that Fang Yuan was still escaping, her mood was getting worse.

He had only taken a glance at her, why were these people spouting more and more ridiculous nonsense, like she had lost her virginity to him?

“Stop shouting! Kill him in secret, I will reward you greatly!” Song Yi Shi could not hold it in anymore, she transmitted to them.

These Gu Immortals were not idiots, after hearing this, they went silent.

“Why are they not shouting anymore?” Fang Yuan did not want that to happen, he wanted this matter to blow up, the bigger the commotion the better.

“Since you are shutting up, I will have to do it myself.”

Thus, Fang Yuan shouted, defending himself: “Everyone, this is a misunderstanding, I will clarify this matter. I had accidentally entered the depths of poetic emotion sea area’s underwater volcano, everyone can investigate this matter, I am speaking the truth.”

“Old lecher, you are bullshitting!” Immediately, a Gu Immortal screamed back.

But Fang Yuan ignored him, he yelled: “I am a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, I have just arrived here and wanted to choose an unknown island to reside in. I picked a small island after looking for a long time. Before setting up some arrangements, I wanted to look around the area, I discovered a hidden undercurrent and moved along it, getting into the underwater volcano.”

“Lies, you’re continuing to lie to us!”

“You did something so shameless, but you are actually defending yourself, trying to pretend to be a gentleman?! Do you think we are so easy to fool?”

The Gu Immortals screamed.

Fang Yuan called out: “Even if I am lying, I would need to make a better excuse, why would I mention the undercurrent? You can go verify this, I will tell you the location of the island. Before I entered the undercurrent, I did not know it would connect to the underwater volcano, either, after I entered the volcano, I found out...”

“Shut up!” Song Yi Shi shouted, she was worried that Fang Yuan might expose some secretive information, she interrupted him: “If you are innocent, stop running, obediently submit and let us investigate. If you are speaking the truth, I, Song Yi Shi, will not kill an innocent person!”

Song Yi Shi had learned something quickly and grew a little, she actually understood that she needed to coax him.

But her tone was too stiff, anyone could tell that she was full of anger and killing intent.

Song Yi Shi was still too pitiful in her acting skills.

Fang Yuan continued to escape, he shouted continuously: “Do you think I am a fool? If I surrender, I will die. I am innocent, I did not even touch a single hair of yours, after I reached the volcano...”

“Shut the hell up!!” Song Yi Shi flew into a rage, her voice was even louder now.

The other male Gu Immortals had furious expressions on the surface, but they were secretly concentrating and were afraid of missing a single word from Fang Yuan’s mouth!

Seeing that Fang Yuan was interrupted by Song Yi Shi again, they felt mild regret internally.

But Fang Yuan quickly continued: “The more you do not want me to say it, the more I will say. How can you be so overbearing, I am just a Northern Plains Gu Immortal trying to make a living in Eastern Sea, is it easy for me?! I did not do anything, I only saw a glimpse of you bathing, it was all a misunderstanding!”

Song Yi Shi saw darkness in front of her, she was so angered her heart was going to burst into flames.

She could make the people on her side shut up, but she could not stop Fang Yuan from shouting.

“Hehehe, something so interested has happened.” At this time, a lovely laugh could be heard, a female Gu Immortal was approaching.

“It is Seven Seas Snake Woman!” The Gu Immortals that were chasing after Fang Yuan saw this female Gu Immortal and became alert.

Yao Ge Pi was bemoaning internally, everyone else directed their gazes towards Song Yi Shi.

Song Yi Shi’s expression was dark, she looked like an ice statue that was emitting immense cold air.

As it turned out, Seven Seas Snake Woman and Song Yi Shi were both publicly known as among the six great beauties among Eastern Sea Gu Immortals. Seven Seas Snake Woman had rank seven cultivation level, she was a demonic path Gu Immortal who had some conflicts with Song Yi Shi, but because of Song Qi Yuan’s power, she did not dare to attack Song Yi Shi.

At this moment, she heard such interesting news, she was sure to add in more false details and spread this rumor around!

Song Yi Shi felt like the sky was collapsing.

What was she going to do now? Seven Seas Snake Woman was definitely going to ruin her reputation.

Song Yi Shi felt even more hatred towards Fang Yuan now: “You old lecher, how are you so good at running, even running into Seven Seas Snake Woman?”

What a joke!

This route was specially chosen by Fang Yuan after careful investigation.

The Gu Immortals that they would meet along the way were all found out by Fang Yuan prior to this. Seven Seas Snake Woman was very important in Fang Yuan’s current plan.

Even though Seven Seas Snake Woman was a demonic path Gu Immortal, she owned seven sea areas, right now, this sea area was at a crucial moment when a large number of red tide fish were reproducing, she had to stay here to guard it.

Fang Yuan easily obtained this information.

Seven Seas Snake Woman was a beautiful but dangerous woman, she was very ruthless in her actions. The righteous path would often leak details of such people, so that others could be prepared if they were to meet them.

Boom!

With a loud sound, Seven Seas Snake Woman suddenly struck, attacking the pursuers of Fang Yuan.

“Seven Seas Snake Woman, what are you doing?” Lei Hong shouted.

Song Yi Shi and the others were severely interrupted.

“Hehehe, this is such an interesting matter, I definitely have to interfere.” Seven Seas Snake Woman had an alluring body, she had a coquettish gaze as she answered.

Lei Hong said solemnly: “I will block Seven Seas Snake Woman, the rest of you continue chasing him.”

He had rank seven cultivation level, he was not afraid of Seven Seas Snake Woman, even though his battle strength was lower, he could still stall her for a short time and escape from her.

Seven Seas Snake Woman did not know who Fang Yuan was, she would not exert too much effort. Seeing that Lei Hong was stepping up, she showed a look of disgust as she stopped on the spot: “You again, meddlesome fool, you really like to interfere in people’s affairs.”

Thus, the other Gu Immortals detoured around Seven Seas Snake Woman, chasing after Fang Yuan again.

Time continued to pass, after a very long time, there were a few more people chasing Fang Yuan, even though he was quite injured, he did not fall into their hands, he was still escaping.

“Damn it!!” Song Yi Shi gritted her teeth, she felt fatigue looking at Fang Yuan’s energetic body.

Everything had happened too quickly, and too suddenly.

How did it become like this? Song Yi Shi felt a sense of absurdity within her.

A moment ago, she was still enjoying a carefree life, bathing inside her hot spring as she relaxed herself. But now, she was chasing an enemy endlessly with no way of catching up.

And now, almost all the immortals nearby knew about it.

Song Yi Shi felt tired physically, but even more so mentally.

“It is about time.” Fang Yuan looked at the pursuers, he smiled faintly. The execution of this plan was much more effective than he had originally planned.

“Now, it is time to leave.”

Thinking of this, a ruthless light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

His body shook as he turned into six figures, flying towards six different directions.

Immortal killer move – Six Illusion Star Bodies!

The pursuers shouted out in dismay, they were stunned before splitting up to chase him.

Immortal killer move – Position Star Swap!

Fang Yuan changed his position, appearing in front of Yao Ge Pi.

“Don’t think I am afraid of killing!” Fang Yuan called out, using star cloud grindstone.

He had been escaping all this time, why would Yao Ge Pi think that Fang Yuan would act differently and counterattack?

Caught off guard, he was sucked into the star cloud grindstone.

He only had mortal killer moves, how could he defend against the power of Immortal Gu?

When everyone else came to reinforce him and destroyed the star cloud grindstone, Fang Yuan was already holding onto Yao Ge Pi’s head!

“Hmph, don’t go overboard!” Fang Yuan’s ruthlessness was shown, he faced the band of immortals.

The pursuers were only rank six. It was not easy to encounter rank sevens like Lei Hong.

“Yao Ge Pi when all is said and done is a Gu Immortal, he was actually killed in such a short amount of time!”

“Northern Plains barbarians are really exemplary in battle strength.”

The immortals were all stunned, they felt a strong sense of wariness internally.

Meanwhile, one of the six illusion star bodies had already flown far away, Fang Yuan used position star swap and changed his true body’s position, abruptly and freely leaving!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 897: Difficult To Own Ge Pi Blessed Land

Three days later, in the world of Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, there was a rumor that spread widely.

This involved one of the six great beauties of Eastern Sea, Fairy Yi Shi. When she was bathing, she was defiled by an old lecher who shamelessly planned everything.

Song Yi Shi was Song Qi Yuan’s precious gem, she had quite a reputation and many suitors. This matter involved Song clan’s reputation as well, once information got out, many Gu Immortals’ attentions were attracted.

Soon, Xing Xiang Zi’s Northern Plains Gu Immortal identity was found out by other Gu Immortals.

Before Song clan even expressed their attitude, Song Yi Shi’s suitors were already hunting down Fang Yuan on a large scale with furious emotions.

At a nameless and ownerless sea area with little resources, the sea was deep and dark, there were few fish.

A wooden door that looked like a blessed land’s entrance appeared, and opened with a creak.

A figure walked out from within.

It was Fang Yuan, having Xing Xiang Zi’s appearance.

Fang Yuan killed Yao Ge Pi on the spot, after that, he carried Yao Ge Pi’s corpse away and escaped.

There were two uses for bodies of Gu Immortals. One was to place them down and form a blessed land, the other was to put them into one’s own immortal aperture and obtain their dao marks.

Fang Yuan did not have to think it over, he chose the former.

His immortal aperture was dead, if corpses were put inside his dead aperture, not only would he not get any dao marks, it would cause massive destruction to the land, his body would burst and explode.

Such a situation had been experimented with by immortal zombies, but there had never been any cases of success.

Fang Yuan used his wisdom path methods to contain the immortal aperture and stall for some time, after escaping from the pursuers, he used a stargate to return to Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture, before using Fixed Immortal Travel to teleport himself towards the north-eastern extremity of Eastern Sea.

Finally, he dived into the sea, without anyone’s notice, he placed Yao Ge Pi’s immortal aperture down at the bottom of the sea.

After the immortal aperture formed into a blessed land, it naturally created disturbances in heaven qi and earth qi.

Two whale desolate beasts were drawn over, but Fang Yuan chased them away.

Fang Yuan first turned into another appearance, before entering Yao Ge Pi’s blessed land and meeting with the land spirit.

Yao Ge Pi was a wood path Gu Immortal, he owned Ge Pi blessed land, his land spirit was quite peculiar, it was in the form of a tree, planted at the center of the blessed land with no movement ability.

The tree land spirit told Fang Yuan the ownership condition — a hundred thousand immortal essence stones, large amounts of immortal materials, including many rank seven and rank eight materials, it even wanted the fresh blood of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable!

The condition was too immensely difficult, Fang Yuan, of course, could not satisfy it, he could only leave regrettably.

“Yao Ge Pi is a lone cultivator, he had the weakest background among the pursuers, and had no backers, that was why I killed him, to act as deterrence against the others. Indeed, I deterred Song Yi Shi’s group and escaped easily.”

“Yao Ge Pi’s immortal aperture formed into a separate blessed land, but the land spirit’s ownership condition has nothing to do with me, the killer. Instead, it is requesting for lots of cultivation resources, it shows that Yao Ge Pi’s greatest obsession is towards wealth. But his desire is simply too insatiable.”

Fang Yuan had just left, the blessed land’s doors closed.

He looked back and saw that the door was completely shut, he frowned slightly.

“If Yao Ge Pi’s obsession had to do with me, with my blood path methods, I could easily handle it. But its ownership condition is simply harder than ascending to heaven.”

Not mentioning the hundred thousand immortal essence stones, simply the precious immortal materials were hard to gather. Unless Fang Yuan robbed the ten great ancient sects, or stole that huge amount from Heavenly Court’s treasury, simply based on his current state, it would take a lot of good luck for him to gather them all, two to three hundred years would be the minimum amount of time he needed.

But most importantly, it was the final condition that the tree land spirit had — Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s fresh blood!

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable was a wood path rank nine Gu Venerable, Yao Ge Pi also cultivated wood path, it was not strange that he desired Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s blood.

But who was Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable? Even if his fresh blood was preserved by Heavenly Lotus Sect, that was a true rank nine immortal material!

This was a precious material that could refine rank nine Immortal Gu, it was definitely heavily guarded, how could Fang Yuan obtain it?

“This Yao Ge Pi must have gone crazy from poverty, his obsession towards wealth is so intense. In this way, to obtain this blessed land, it seems normal methods will not work, I can only attack forcefully!”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with cold light.

If this land spirit refused to accept a master, he would destroy it and forcefully take over the blessed land!

Not all blessed lands had land spirits. Some Gu Immortals were killed extremely thoroughly and did not leave behind any obsession, after they died, their blessed land would be without a land spirit.

Yao Ge Pi’s blessed land had a land spirit, but the conditions were too absurd, Fang Yuan could only find an alternative and attack forcefully. It was like Shark Demon’s group invading Yu Lu blessed land.

“If I can obtain this blessed land, I would have a base in Eastern Sea. But now is not the time to settle this blessed land, I should go and regroup with Shark Demon first.”

Fang Yuan scattered some mortal Gu, setting up a Gu formation around him.

Next, he activated Fixed Immortal Travel, leaving this place and going to Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture.

Originally, Fixed Immortal Travel’s aura was in the sea, but after Fang Yuan’s Gu formation activated, it dissipated.

After the work was done, this set of mortal Gu disintegrated on its own.

Unless a very powerful investigation method was used, no one would be able to find out that there was a blessed land in such an ordinary area.

Fang Yuan came out of Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture, the latter had already started moving, he was flying above the vast sea.

The ‘senior and junior’ brothers conversed along the way, after a few minutes, they arrived at the sky above Yu Lu blessed land.

Here, there was nobody.

The two waited for a while, soon, Shark Demon led a band of Gu Immortals from Zombie Alliance and flew over.

“Brother Xing Xiang, you are quite famous nowadays.” Once he saw Fang Yuan, Shark Demon made a joke.

The other Gu Immortals looked at Fang Yuan with curious glances.

These few days, Fang Yuan had become very famous in the world of Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, he had gained quite a reputation.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly, he replied: “Very unlucky, I was very unlucky, please don’t laugh at me. I wanted to find an island to rest in, but I found an undercurrent and wanted to explore it, to think I would encounter such a troublesome affair.”

“This is not a troublesome affair, it is quite appropriate to call this a romantic affair.” Bo Dan laughed loudly, sarcastically saying.

Earlier, Fang Yuan had humiliated him.

But after that, Bo Dan paid a huge price and gave Su Bai Man an expensive gift, thus he joined the invasion of the blessed land again, and he had a fearless attitude.

Fang Yuan gave him a glance, smiling, he did not bother responding to such a person.

He glanced around and saw that other than Shark Demon, Su Bai Man, and Bo Dan, there was only one familiar immortal zombie, Sha Nan Jiang, there were three less people than before.

But Shark Demon was very confident, it seemed that he had made ample preparations before coming.

Everyone went deep into the sea, opening the entrance of Yu Lu blessed land, entering the battlefield killer move freezing rain frozen earth again.

“This time, Xing Xiang Zi, we will mainly be relying on your deductions, Bo Dan will support you.” Shark Demon announced politely.

Last time, Fang Yuan performed well, Shark Demon and the others thought that Xing Xiang Zi had a deeper wisdom path attainment level.

“Lord Shark Demon, please rest assured, I will do my best.” Fang Yuan expressed his firm attitude.

Bo Dan snorted internally, even though he was displeased, he knew his own abilities, he crossed his arms and watched with a dark gaze.

Facing freezing rain frozen earth again, Fang Yuan’s expression became serious as he deduced.

The battlefield killer move, freezing rain frozen earth, had completely recovered, the damage caused by Fang Yuan and the others had been fixed already.

Fang Yuan was not surprised.

Earlier, when Shark Demon and the others attacked the blessed land, the battlefield killer move could also repair itself.

It was unknown whether this was due to Yu Lu blessed land’s land spirit, or the arrangements of Fairy Yu Lu.

Speaking of which, Shark Demon and the others had attacked the blessed land for such a long time, but they had not found the land spirit of Yu Lu blessed land yet. Whether the land spirit existed, this was still a mystery.

With his prior experience, Fang Yuan’s progress was fast.

He naturally did not destroy the crucial mortal Gu, thus the battlefield did not become stronger compared to the last time.

The ice needle storm rained down, as Shark Demon stepped forward and used his Immortal Gu.

The Immortal Gu’s name was Melt Ice, it was an ice path Immortal Gu and could melt even the firmest ice. This Gu was borrowed by Shark Demon specially to deal with freezing rain frozen earth, he paid a huge amount to a certain member of Zombie Alliance.

With this melt ice Immortal Gu, they greatly resisted the freezing rain frozen earth’s power, even the desolate beast level snow monsters were obstructed.

Shark Demon and the others felt less pressure, they even expended far less immortal essence than last time.

There was a counter to everything, the strong freezing rain frozen earth was greatly weakened after encountering the melt ice Immortal Gu.

The Gu Master world was like this.

Everything was in balance, strong and weak was relative. There were no invincible Gu worms, there were only invincible Gu Masters.

With melt ice Immortal Gu, Shark Demon could move freely as well.

Fang Yuan also progressed stably.

Even though he was a wisdom path newbie, he had precious experience from last time, after returning, he had revised his methods and improved a lot, he designed many new methods.

This time, Fang Yuan came prepared.

He had to say, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance was simply brilliant, using it, Fang Yuan could forcefully find a solution.

The start was the hardest, after Fang Yuan found the first flaw, his progress became faster, he deduced more and more hidden Gu worms.

But during this process, Fang Yuan could feel his lack of experience.

But he was an experienced schemer, he immediately ordered Bo Dan to help.

Even though Bo Dan’s wisdom path methods were shallow and few, after Fang Yuan started the deduction, he could also see a portion of the details inside the battlefield killer move, he also had very familiar methods and precise techniques.

Fang Yuan pretended to deduce but he was secretly observing Bo Dan’s techniques, he learned a lot of things and his wisdom path attainment was rising.

Eventually, with both of their efforts, freezing rain frozen earth was finally unraveled.

By now, the freezing rain battlefield has unleashed a total of thirty-three attacks, Shark Demon’s melt ice Immortal Gu was singlehandedly holding them back.

The huge immortal essence expenditure reduced his joy of passing the difficult round to a great extent.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 898: Fighting Soul Battlefield

Freezing rain frozen earth disappeared, the world changed.

The original icy world turned into a dark environment, it was like evening, there were dark clouds looming and the poor weather seemed to be indicating a thunderstorm.

Evidently, this was another battlefield killer move.

“Welcome to fighting soul battlefield.” A faint female voice resounded in the battlefield

Everyone who was inside the battlefield heard the voice.

Shark Demon’s expression changed, he said: “Oh no, this is the infamous fighting soul battlefield! This is troublesome.”

Even before he finished his sentence, a sandstorm started blowing as sand and dust were scattered in the sky, soul beasts appeared one after another, from all directions, encircling the Gu Immortals.

Su Bai Man quickly reminded: “Xing Xiang Zi, Bo Dan, you have to act quickly! The number of soul beasts here are endless, the longer we take, the stronger they become. This fighting soul battlefield was a battlefield killer move created by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable after he used one of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s inheritances as a reference. Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s other creations had some mercy in them, they would always leave behind a way to survive. But this battlefield killer move is very different, it contains Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s killing nature, it is the most deadly battlefield killer move among Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s creations!”

Fang Yuan and Bo Dan did not dare to take their time, they used their respective methods and tried to unravel the killer move.

Fang Yuan soon discovered: This fighting soul battlefield was very different from freezing rain frozen earth. The latter had no flaws at all when activated, it was very well balanced, giving others a feeling of not knowing where to start. But this fighting soul battlefield exposed several hiding spots of mortal Gu to Fang Yuan from the start easily.

As time passed, Fang Yuan found more and more hidden spots, they were growing into a huge number, there were thousands or even tens of thousands of them!

The number of Gu worms that formed this battlefield killer move was much higher than Fang Yuan’s expectations.

Fang Yuan soon found out, there were no traps like the ones that were in the freezing rain frozen earth battlefield killer move. No matter which hidden spot they destroyed, there was no backlash, and Fang Yuan did not need to restart his deductions.

Thus, very soon, Fang Yuan and Bo Dan started to dismantle these hidden spots rapidly.

However, this fighting soul battlefield’s offensive power was several times greater than freezing rain frozen earth.

Freezing rain frozen earth attacked in waves, there was a moment of peace in between each wave of attacks, the Gu Immortals could rest for a while each time.

But this fighting soul battlefield did not stop for a moment after activation, the number of soul beasts continued to increase, soon, desolate beast level soul beasts were formed.

A while later, there were more than ten desolate soul beasts, even ancient desolate soul beasts started appearing.

They did not even last for seven minutes before Shark Demon and the others had to use the incomplete Profound Ice House to escape from the place.

“There are simply too many Gu worms used to create the battlefield killer move, I am ashamed, my methods are too simple, I could only dismantle them one by one.” Once they got out of the sea, Bo Dan spoke to Shark Demon without concealing any information, he spoke the truth.

Fang Yuan frowned too: “My methods could only dismantle at most five to six hidden spots each time. I suspect that this fighting soul battlefield’s difficulty lies here. The faster we can dismantle it, or the longer we can last under the attacks of the soul beasts, the more likely it is that we can unravel this killer move. To unravel it in itself is not the problematic part.”

“In that case, Xing Xiang Zi, according to your deduction, how long do both of you need to dismantle this killer move at your current speed?” Shark Demon asked.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly and shook his head: “I am not sure. I did not manage to see the entire battlefield killer move. There are too many hidden spots, they are numerous like the stars in the sky. And even if I manage to find the tens of thousands of hidden spots, to get rid of them, I will need at least thirty minutes.”

Sha Nan Jiang was lost for words: “Thirty minutes? We lasted for seven minutes and there were already ancient desolate soul beasts appearing. Thirty minutes... surely, immemorial desolate soul beasts will appear, and there might be more than one!”

Everyone became quiet.

Su Bai Man spoke heavily: “In that case, we can only ask more people to help out next time. These Gu Immortals will need to have enough wisdom path attainment to dismantle the hidden spots.”

Saying so, Su Bai Man and Shark Demon looked at each other, they could see the bitterness in each other’s eyes.

There were not many Gu Immortals with wisdom path attainment. Asking them to help would incur a huge cost.

Shark Demon thought for a while, he spoke: “Then we will retreat for now. The next time we are attacking is in thirty days, we will decide on the time at a later date, I will inform you all. Xing Xiang Zi, this is my command token, you can use it to stay in Zombie Alliance’s headquarters and avoid the trouble you are facing for now.”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “Thank you for your goodwill, Lord Shark Demon, but I am not willing to waste any time. Merely Song Yi Shi cannot do anything to me. Even though Song clan is a huge force, they cannot control the entirety of Eastern Sea. If I hide and shrink away because of this, I, Xing Xiang Zi, would have cultivated for nothing. Everyone, until next time we meet.”

Seeing Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng fly far away, Bo Dan stepped forward and stood beside Shark Demon, he slandered: “This Xing Xiang Zi really does not know what is good for him, he actually refused to accept Lord’s goodwill!”

Shark Demon glanced at him, he snorted, saying unhappily: “If you were any more capable, why would I need to treat him like this?”

Bo Dan had a bitter expression: “Oh lord, it was not that I did not put in effort, but my inheritance is too incomplete, there is a limit to what I can do.”

Shark Demon waved his hand impatiently.

Bo Dan quickly shut up and lowered his head, leaving.

Su Bai Man got close to Shark Demon, she smiled: “If husband is afraid that Xing Xiang Zi would get into trouble and delay the next invasion, you do not need to worry. Northern Plains Gu Immortals often have higher battle strength than the other four regions, Xing Xiang Zi also has Immortal Gu with him, his battle strength was high enough to kill Yao Ge Pi on the spot, nothing would happen to him.”

“Even though he offended Song Yi Shi, the precious gem of Song Qi Yuan, it is precisely because Song clan is a righteous path super force, a large organization with many matters to take care of, that they would not create a huge commotion over such a small matter. But Song clan’s reputation was affected, they would definitely want an answer. In a while, Xing Xiang Zi would feel increasing pressure, by then, wouldn’t he come to ask us for help?”

“Mm, that is indeed the case, your analysis is very accurate.” Shark Demon’s expression became calmer, he gently held Su Bai Man’s hand.

...

Northern Plains, Luo Po valley.

The battle surrounding Luo Po valley had already been ongoing for over half a month.

Qin Bai Sheng’s side had the territorial advantage, Feng Jiu Ge’s side was unable to take them down. But Feng Jiu Ge and the others were very determined, they besieged the area without retreating, Qin Bai Sheng’s side could only hide inside Luo Po valley for the time being.

“Jiang Yu, how are your injuries?” Qin Bai Sheng went to visit Fairy Jiang Yu.

“In half a day, I will fully recover.” Fairy Jiang Yu sat on the bed, shutting her eyes as she healed herself, she replied while multitasking.

Joy flashed across Qin Bai Sheng’s face: “That is good. After you recover, we will protect you as you charge out of the encirclement, and go to Northern Plains Zombie Alliance to activate our hidden arrangement.”

“What? We are going to use our arrangement in Northern Plains Zombie Alliance? Will it not have a huge impact on the entire crucial plan?” Fairy Jiang Yu was shocked, she asked this.

Qin Bai Sheng said heavily: “It won’t. I have already communicated with Old Man Yan Shi, in Shadow Sect’s Southern Border headquarters. Sigh... Feng Jiu Ge is really quite the character, his self-created heaven and earth song could match my five finger fist heart sword. My personal reputation is nothing important, but the Immortal Gu that is still being nurtured inside Luo Po valley is important to our crucial plan, it cannot be lost. But now that Luo Po valley is being encircled by these people from Central Continent, we are at a disadvantage in terms of numbers, we can only rely on the ancient soul beasts to defend ourselves. We will eventually fall if this keeps up, we need to regain the initiative!”

These last days, he had fought with Feng Jiu Ge for over dozens of rounds, after exchanging blows countless times, even if they put in all their efforts, they had been unable to determine a winner.

Qin Bai Sheng was concerned about the big picture, he wanted to find a way to get out of this predicament.

But at this time, Feng Jiu Ge’s voice came from outside.

Qin Bai Sheng heard it and sneered internally: “After remaining silent for three days, he’s finally returned to taunt us again?”

Qin Bai Sheng flew into the air, facing Feng Jiu Ge: “Brother Feng, we have undergone innumerable rounds of battles, we know each other’s abilities quite well now. You are an astute person, can’t you see that in this current situation, as long as I defend this Luo Po valley, you cannot break in by force!”

Feng Jiu Ge smiled brightly, an intense light of confidence shined in his eyes: “Brother Qin, this time is different. After our countless rounds of battles, I had gained much inspiration. These last three days, I have been in closed cultivation, I used the inspiration to complete an incomplete move that I had created in the past.”

“Oh?” Qin Bai Sheng’s expression turned serious.

Feng Jiu Ge raised his head slightly, he said loudly: “This time, I would like to ask Brother Qin to critique my submission song!”

Green Jade Song.

Heaven and Earth Song.

Submission Song.

When Feng Jiu Ge sang green jade song, his voice was crisp and sharp, like beads of flawless jade. When he sang heaven and earth song, his voice was grand and magnificent, it made others feel their own insignificance.

But now, Feng Jiu Ge sang submission song, his mouth was closed.

The entire place was silent.

Qin Bai Sheng’s expression was both serious and grim, because he ‘heard’ Feng Jiu Ge’s singing voice.

His singing voice was directly resounding in Qin Bai Sheng’s mind.

It turns out that this submission song was not heard with one’s ears, but in one’s mind.

Qin Bai Sheng’s heart sank: “This sound path killer move encompasses wisdom path, enslavement path, sound path, and soul path, these four paths, it affects a person’s mind. From the moment he closed his mouth, there is already a trace of five finger fist heart sword in it. This Feng Jiu Ge actually obtained this inspiration from me. But it is only at this level, it is not enough to affect my fighting spirit. Eh? Oh no!”

Qin Bai Sheng’s reaction was fast, but submission song’s effect was even faster.

In Luo Po valley, there were many ancient soul beasts that were guarding the place, under the influence of Feng Jiu Ge’s song, they submitted to him, they betrayed Qin Bai Sheng on the spot, becoming the lackeys of the Central Continent Gu Immortals.

Submission song could temporarily cause desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts to change sides, becoming subordinates of the singer!

“Damn it!” He Lang Zi cursed.

They had few people, they needed the ancient soul beasts to bolster their defenses.

But now, most of the ancient soul beasts changed sides, they started attacking Luo Po valley instead, Shadow Sect’s side was falling into great danger.

But Qin Bai Sheng was not easy to deal with.

He quickly thought of this and displayed a battlefield killer move.

Feng Jiu Ge and the others, including the ancient soul beasts, were dragged into this battlefield.

There was thick fog in this battlefield, countless souls were flying around.

Dark blue soul beasts gathered and took form, most of them were ordinary soul beasts, but soon, desolate soul beasts appeared, and seemingly before long, ancient soul beasts would appear as well.

The soul beasts that were created in this battlefield fought against the ancient soul beasts that were under Feng Jiu Ge’s control.

“Good countermeasure.” Feng Jiu Ge stopped singing, he praised: “Using this battlefield killer move to increase your control of the soul beasts and eliminate the advantage of submission song. But your soul taker battlefield is too outdated, even though it was created by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he made it when he was young. Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had once used this killer move to create the even more superior fighting soul battlefield. This soul taker battlefield can only convert the souls of living beings into soul beasts, but fighting soul battlefield can actually produce endless soul beasts.”

Feng Jiu Ge was inside the battlefield killer move, but he was not worried, he spoke casually as he critiqued the killer move.

Qin Bai Sheng, however, spoke with a smile: “Future generations enjoy the benefits from the hard work of predecessors. Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable could create the superior fighting soul battlefield because he used the foundation created by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, it is only to be expected. But he was too kind of a person, he weakened Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s killing intent, even though it seems superior, it lost all hope of going a step further.”

Saying this, the battlefield changed again.

Feng Jiu Ge’s expression changed: “So this is not soul taker battlefield, it is a battlefield killer move that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable created in his later years – Hundred Million Slaughterfield!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 899: Twin Polar Sea Strait, Song Jia Dan

Eastern Sea, Song clan’s headquarters, Heavy Water blessed land.

“Grandpa, you have to avenge me!” Song Yi Shi charged into the study room, stomping her feet and throwing a tantrum to the rank eight Gu Immortal Song Qi Yuan.

Song Qi Yuan and some rank seven Gu Immortal elders were discussing matters of the clan.

But Song Yi Shi barged in directly like this.

Song Qi Yuan turned around slowly, he showed no anger on his face as he smiled kindly: “My sweet granddaughter, how do you want grandpa to avenge you?”

Song Yi Shi did not find it strange that her grandfather knew about this, in fact, if Song Qi Yuan did not know about it, that would be the strange thing.

Before this young female Gu Immortal came, she had already thought of an answer, she gritted her teeth: “Grandpa, strike directly and capture him alive, I will deal with him after that.”

At the same time, she thought inwardly: “I will dig out this old lecher’s eyes out first, then I will pull out his tendons and his skin, I will carve out his bones and make his flesh rot, he will be in so much pain, I will make him regret everything that he has done!”

Song Qi Yuan nodded, he did not hesitation, he agreed: “That is a good method, but...”

He dragged his words out, Song Qi Yuan changed the course of the conversation as he showed a difficult expression: “Grandpa has something important to do now, I cannot leave, why don’t I get your uncle, Song Xia Qi, to help you?”

Song Yi Shi’s eyes shined, she forget her own situation, she thought of something as she asked excitedly: “Grandpa, is it regarding Ascending Heaven Plain?”

Song Qi Yuan did not hide it from her, he admitted: “That’s right! Ascending Heaven Plain’s exact location has already become an open secret among most Eastern Sea Gu Immortals. In Ascending Heaven Plain, there is Old Eccentric Tian Nan’s inheritance. This time, grandpa will lead the clan’s Gu Immortals to compete against Cai clan and Ruo Lai clan, to try to obtain Old Eccentric Tian Nan’s inheritance.”

Old Eccentric Tian Nan, a refinement path supreme grandmaster from the Remote Antiquity Era, he was on par with Old Immortal Kong Jue and Long Hair Ancestor over the course of history.

According to historical records, Old Eccentric Tian Nan had a strange personality, he attempted to refine the immemorial nine heavens and ended up dying after failing.

Even though Song Yi Shi was spoiled since she was young, she understood the bigger picture, she quickly replied: “Go and deal with that, grandpa, make sure you utterly defeat them both! You do not need to worry about my matter, but just uncle Song Xia Qi isn’t enough, I want uncle Song Jia Dan to help me once, to deduce the location of that old lecher.”

“Haha, my dear granddaughter. Alright, take this token and go to twin polar sea strait, and find your uncle Song Jia Dan.” Saying so, Song Qi Yuan tossed a token to her.

Song Yi Shi quickly caught it and showed a joyful expression, she turned around and left, not even saying a word of goodbye.

Twin polar sea strait was covered in a thick layer of fog all year round.

In the air, Song Yi Shi stopped, seeing the fog in front of her, she felt a little troubled, she turned to the middle aged Gu Immortal beside her: “Uncle Xia Qi, how do we get in?”

Song Xia Qi’s body was filled with a vigorous aura, he smiled lightly and said: “Didn’t your grandfather give you a token? Little Yi Shi, you just need to take out the token and your uncle Jia Dan will sense it.”

Song Yi Shi held the token high up in the air.

A moment later, the fog in front of her started to disperse, a small tunnel appeared, it directly connected to the inside of twin polar sea strait.

Song Yi Shi and Song Xia Qi entered the tunnel and stepped into twin polar sea strait, meeting Song Jia Dan.

Song Jia Dan was a wisdom path Gu Immortal that Song clan had specially nurtured.

He stayed on the cliff of twin polar sea strait normally, his upper body was already old and weak, his lower body had been petrified, his legs seemed to have fused with twin polar sea strait.

“Uncle Jia Dan!” Song Yi Shi called out.

Since birth, she had only met the Gu Immortal Song Jia Dan a handful of times, but that did not affect her admiration towards Song Jia Dan.

Song Jia Dan had sacrificed his own freedom for the clan. Ever since he became a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he had sat here, using his special wisdom path inheritance to fuse with the world. Because of this, Song Jia Dan’s deductions and schemes were very brilliant. Every time Song clan had important matters, they would ask him to help and deduce their upcoming fortunes.

Right now in the world of Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals, he was publicly recognized as one of the three most capable wisdom path Gu Immortals.

The saying goes: Jia Dan sits in twin polar, Hua An hides in Nan Gong, there is also Dragon Head Tortoise, living inside adversity sea.

Song Jia Dan had already opened his eyes, he looked at Song Yi Shi and Song Xia Qi expressionlessly.

He wanted to smile, but his face was hard like a statue, his muscles were stiff and could show no expression, even if he opened his mouth, he could only speak very slowly and with much difficulty: “Little Shi, cousin Xia Qi, it has been a long time.”

“Uncle Jia Dan, I am here to ask you to deduce the location of an enemy. This is his appearance, and the aura that I collected.” Song Yi Shi passed two Gu worms to him.

“Let me look at the command token first.” Song Jia Dan spoke slowly. Even though he was familiar with Song Yi Shi and Song Xia Qi, he was to be impartial, to make a deduction, he needed to see Song Qi Yuan’s command token first.

After checking that the token was authentic, Song Jia Dan opened his mouth, a suction force made both of the Gu worms from Song Yi Shi go into his mouth.

He shut his eyes and started deducing.

A long while later, he opened his eyes, perplexion shined in his eyes: “I could not deduce anything.”

“What?” At once, not only Song Xia Qi who was in anticipation, but even Song Yi Shi, who was very confident, showed immense shock.

“Uncle, you are one of the three best wisdom path Gu Immortals in Eastern Sea, how can you fail the deduction?” Song Yi Shi asked.

“Little Shi, don’t be anxious.” Song Xia Qi’s expression turned heavy: “Elder cousin Jia Dan, the other party is only a rank six lone cultivator that came from Northern Plains, with your wisdom path attainment, you could not deduce anything?”

Song Jia Dan was still expressionless, he spoke slowly: “Is it strange that I could not deduce anything? I am merely rank seven, even though I have some fame, that is all flattery by nosy people. In the end, I am but a tiny worm in this vast world, all I can do is to predict some premonitions of impending storms. Compared to the world, I am insignificant like an ant, compared to the grand heroes in this world, I merely control a tiny domain.”

Song Xia Qi smiled bitterly: “Cousin, you are still so humble.”

Song Jia Dan said: “I am not humble, but as I continue to fuse with this world unceasingly, every time I advance in wisdom path, I can see the glorious view ahead more clearly. The more I learn about the secrets of this world, the more I am aware of my own insignificance. Thus, I am not being humble, I am just being truthful, I am aware of my own status.”

Song Yi Shi was discontent: “Even if uncle Jia Dan cannot deduce it, you are still the smartest person, you can surely give a good suggestion.”

Song Jia Dan was silent for a while, he said: “There are two possible reasons why I could not deduce it. The first is that the other party is not in Eastern Sea. The second, they have wisdom path techniques that can conceal them from my deductions. Or maybe they could find other wisdom path Gu Immortals to help them evade my deductions.”

Song Yi Shi and Song Xia Qi looked at each other.

These two reasons were very far-fetched.

The first reason, if this old lecher Xing Xiang Zi was not in Eastern Sea, where could he be? Right now, the earth tide was over, how could he return to Northern Plains?

The second reason, how could Xing Xiang Zi resist Song Jia Dan’s wisdom path attainment? If he had help, this person would need to be at least at Song Jia Dan’s level? Was it Nan Gong clan’s Gu Immortal Hua An, or Dragon Head Tortoise Immortal in adversity sea who helped him?

“Uncle Jia Dan, deduce it again. Maybe you just happened to fail!” Song Yi Shi requested as she pouted.

Song Jia Dan directly rejected this: “No, the clan has an important mission, we have to obtain Old Eccentric Tian Nan’s inheritance. I need to preserve my strength, and prepare my methods, to deduce for this in a few days time.”

“Uncle Jia Dan, you did not originally put in all your effort!” Song Yi Shi heard this and said unhappily.

“Alright, you can leave now.” Song Jia Dan shut his eyes slowly.

Song Yi Shi was ignored, she gritted her teeth and stomped her feet, helplessly turning around and leaving.

To fight for Ascending Heaven Plain’s control, to fight for Old Eccentric Tian Nan’s inheritance, it was a project that the clan had been planning for a hundred years. Pursuing Xing Xiang Zi was just her own personal business.

Even though Song Yi Shi was pampered and spoiled, she could see the big picture and cared for the clan’s progress, she was not an ignorant fool.

Central Continent, Hu Immortal blessed land, an underground cave.

Fang Yuan was bathed in the light of wisdom, he shut his eyes as the star thoughts in his mind shined, he quietly deduced some important things.

Last time, he used the light of wisdom to deduce the immortal killer moves, star fire escape and projected star thought.

Thus, Fang Yuan currently controlled six star path immortal killer moves in total.

Star cloud grindstone, star snake rope, six illusion star bodies, position star swap, star fire escape and projected star thought.

Among them, star fire escape was a movement killer move, it was used extensively in escaping the chase from Song Yi Shi. As for projected star thought, it was the investigative immortal killer move that Fang Yuan used to expose the immortal zombie Sha Nan Jiang’s traces.

These two killer moves were originally incomplete. They were concepts that predecessors of Star Lord Wan Xiang had left behind in the star path inheritance, they had encountered difficulties during the deductions and could not progress to complete the killer moves.

Fang Yuan’s star path attainment was only ordinary, normally under such a situation, these incomplete moves would only be useful as reference to him.

But since he had the rank nine wisdom Immortal Gu, he could use the light of wisdom and gain unlimited inspiration, he got over the difficulty of a low star path attainment level, he forcefully completed the killer moves.

“It is a pity, in the short time I had, completing star fire escape and projected star thought was my limit. After all, I have only three star path Immortal Gu now. Of course, most importantly, my star path attainment level is too low. Eh?”

At this time, a moving perspective cup Gu appeared in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

The information in the Gu came from Lang Ya land spirit.

“Lang Ya land spirit has finally completed the relocation of Lang Ya blessed land, he can lend that set of Immortal Gu to me now!”

Fang Yuan was overjoyed.

This time, he purposely returned to Central Continent from Eastern Sea, it was to wait for Lang Ya land spirit’s news and to relocate Star Form blessed land.

In Fang Yuan’s plans, Star Form blessed land was very important.

Once the truth that he was the culprit of the incident in Northern Plains becomes exposed, he would have to escape for his life.

By then, Hu Immortal blessed land would face disaster. If he was still an immortal zombie and could not produce immortal essence, then Star Form blessed land would be his sole secret base.

However, Hei Lou Lan knew about Star Form blessed land’s location. If Hei Lou Lan knew, Fairy Li Shan also knew.

Fang Yuan was a vigilant person, now that he was Star Form blessed land’s owner, he naturally had to relocate Star Form blessed land to a place that only he knew.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 900: Borrowing Gu from Lang Ya Land Spirit

Fang Yuan did not hesitate, he immediately used Fixed Immortal Travel to go to Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya blessed land had already undergone a huge change.

In the vast sea, three continents were facing each other. In the air, there was a fourth continent made from cloud soil.

Because there was an intense battle that destroyed much of the blessed land, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had helped and restored most of it to its original state.

Even though Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not participate in the battle, he helped repair the blessed land after the battle, he earned quite a sum as well.

Of course, because some Immortal Gu that made up Refinement Cauldron were gone, the space in the blessed land shrank. Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not have the power to restore the missing space and everything that was in them.

The twelve cloud buildings had been rebuilt by Lang Ya land spirit, split up across the cloud soil continent. In addition, there were many hairy man Gu Masters surrounding the twelve cloud buildings, reconstructing even more buildings.

“I intend to create twelve cloud cities centered upon the twelve cloud buildings. This cloud soil continent in the sky will become the new living area for elite hairy men.” After Lang Ya land spirit saw Fang Yuan, he explained this.

Fang Yuan nodded in agreement.

Because Lang Ya blessed land lost a number of Immortal Gu, the space inside shrunk by a lot. And because there were many hairy men living in the blessed land, they were reaching the limit of the three continents. Thus, in this situation, a new area to allow the hairy men to live and propagate was needed.

But Lang Ya land spirit’s next words shocked Fang Yuan.

“Other than this, I have also established Lang Ya Sect! This sect system will use Central Continent as a reference, I will be the sect’s first supreme elder, and the hairy man Gu Immortals will be the other supreme elders. My previous self was too foolish, he used these precious Gu Immortals for Gu refinement. Hmph! To fulfill the dominance of hairy men, bloodshed is necessary.”

“Next, I will start training these hairy man Gu Immortals, nurturing their battle talents. Once they have sufficient strength to protect themselves, I will send them out of the blessed land, and let them complete all kinds of sect missions.”

“Also, under my influence, the three continents in the sea will erupt in war! From among them, three kings will be chosen, and they will create three kingdoms on their respective continents. The kingdoms will fight against each other, and each year, my Lang Ya Sect will pick the most elite hairy men from these three kingdoms, and send the elite hairy men to the continent in the clouds, they will become the foundation of Lang Ya Sect. Furthermore, I will choose a rank five peak stage hairy man Gu Master as the sect leader of Lang Ya Sect!”

The new Lang Ya land spirit was completely different from the previous one, maybe he was affected by the attack of Qin Bai Sheng, but Lang Ya land spirit had decided to undertake a complete reform of Lang Ya blessed land, he used hard-handed methods and had the disposition of a conquering grand emperor.

Different emperors employ different styles of rulership, because of Lang Ya land spirit’s change, the hairy men that were living in the lower tiers were undergoing turmoil and difficulties from war, their peaceful and serene lifestyles were not to return.

“Lang Ya land spirit used such a cruel method to choose the most outstanding hairy men. But this method is simply too wasteful.”

Fang Yuan felt some pity, there were bound to be large numbers of sacrifices during war.

He felt quite a loss inwardly, he might as well use these hairy men for Gu refinement.

But Fang Yuan would not say these words openly, he could only mutter in his mind.

From Lang Ya land spirit’s perspective, hairy men were the most outstanding creatures of all, humans and all other variant humans were underneath them.

Fang Yuan raised hairy men and used them as slaves for Gu refinement. If Lang Ya land spirit knew this, he would not accept it, he might even fall out with Fang Yuan.

Thus, even though Fang Yuan lacked knowledge and experience of raising hairy men, in the previous discussions regarding the compensation of defending Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan did not attempt to request this even though he knew that Lang Ya land spirit had extremely precious knowledge of how to nurture hairy men.

“But at this rate, Lang Ya blessed land would undergo a huge reform, the hairy men would start working hard and their battle strengths will rise drastically. Maybe this happened in my previous life, after such a transformation in Lang Ya blessed land, it managed to endure seven waves of attacks.”

“But this Lang Ya blessed land has hidden undercurrents deep beneath the surface, even though two hairy man Gu Immortal traitors were exposed, we can’t be sure that there will not be a third or fourth traitor among the rest. The methods of Qin Bai Sheng that can develop traitors to this extent in here are really unimaginable.”

Fang Yuan thought about this as he told Lang Ya land spirit his intentions.

Lang Ya land spirit was slightly shocked, he asked again: “Oh? You want to borrow my set of Immortal Gu now and relocate your blessed land? I remember I told you this set of Immortal Gu will not be cheap. Even on the basis that you fought against strong enemies for us, I told you that you will still need to pay two thousand immortal essence stones?”

Fang Yuan took out two thousand immortal essence stones, handing them to the land spirit: “Look, I’ve prepared them already.”

Lang Ya land spirit was greatly shocked, he received the immortal essence stones as he inspected Fang Yuan, his gaze slightly changing.

He knew Fang Yuan’s foundation and was very surprised: “This lad only ascended recently, he already has so many immortal essence stones?”

“Back then when he made transactions with my previous self, he had to earn immortal essence stones by deducing Immortal Gu recipes, it showed how poor he was. It seems that these immortal essence stones were mostly borrowed. That is bad if he owes people a huge sum, or even worse, favors.”

Lang Ya land spirit shook his head, he did not approve of Fang Yuan’s actions.

But he understood why.

He knew that Fang Yuan’s crime was simply too absurd. Once it was exposed, he would be in a doomed situation, he would be chased to the ends of the world.

Thus, Fang Yuan had to relocate the blessed land.

But this point was also the main reason why Lang Ya land spirit wanted to gradually take in Fang Yuan and turn him into a lackey.

It was because Fang Yuan was under such a situation, he was faced with enemies everywhere, when he is left without a choice, he would have to join the hairy men, and become a traitor of the humans.

But what Lang Ya land spirit did not know was — he was completely wrong!

These two thousand immortal essence stones were actually Fang Yuan’s own savings.

Fang Yuan was rich now, very rich!

He earned one hundred and eighty immortal essence stones from his first transaction of guts Gu with Spirit Affinity House.

After the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, Fang Yuan displayed formidable Gu refinement talent, He Feng Yang personally invited him to go to Immortal Crane Sect and take a look, this was a change in attitude of Immortal Crane Sect towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan owned Hu Immortal blessed land now, he had room to maneuver between Immortal Crane Sect and Spirit Affinity House.

As his situation became much easier, and as he considered the dangers of being chased down, Fang Yuan decided to increase the production of guts Gu.

Once he made this decision, the profits that he earned from guts Gu each month reached a total of three hundred immortal essence stones!

And don’t forget, after Fang Yuan took over Star Form blessed land, he even obtained Star Lord Wan Xiang’s four sources of revenue. He even went ahead and established the trade of regretful spiders with Western Desert’s Xiao clan.

With a total of six sources of revenue, he earned over a thousand immortal essence stones each month!

There were still the dragonfish and eerie fire dragon pythons that had not entered the market yet. If he included these two, Fang Yuan's initial estimation was that his monthly profit would reach a total of one thousand and five hundred!

Two months had already passed since Fang Yuan became the owner of Star Form blessed land.

He naturally had more than two thousand immortal essence stones in his current possession.

Thinking of back then, when he had just become an immortal, he had to calculate every single stone, looking at prices carefully, he even had to think of how to efficiently use half an immortal essence stone. But now he had over a thousand immortal essence stones of profit a month, he had truly progressed greatly and taken a huge step forward.

He took a really huge step, but Lang Ya land spirit did not know about it, even though he was already thinking highly of Fang Yuan, he was still very wrong.

Even though Fang Yuan was an immortal zombie with the lowest cultivation level, his immortal essence stone profits approached the level of rank seven Gu Immortals.

After paying two thousand immortal essence stones, Fang Yuan and Lang Ya land spirit used an information path immortal killer move to form an agreement.

Eventually, Fang Yuan gave the land spirit two Immortal Gu as collateral before he successfully borrowed a set of Immortal Gu used to relocate blessed lands, there were sixteen of them.

Fang Yuan moved without resting, he used Fixed Immortal Travel and returned to Star Form blessed land.

Star Form blessed land had three desolate beast spinefin star dragonfish, Fang Yuan had already seen them before, he did not hesitate, he chose the strongest one.

He first moved around the spinefin star dragonfish, using methods to inspect the dragonfish's size, bone structure, flesh, blood, and other aspects.

After confirming that the spinefin star dragonfish was in a good state, Fang Yuan sat in the air as he shut his eyes while facing the desolate beast.

The spinefin star dragonfish had been tamed since long ago, it obediently floated in the air without moving. Its fish-like eyes that were large as horse carriages shined with some starlight, showing Fang Yuan's reflection from within.

Fang Yuan's was calm, but he gradually started getting excited in his mind.

Countless star thoughts moved like fireflies filling the endless sky, dancing around in the small area of his mind.

These star thoughts split into two portions.

One portion occupied the right part of his mind, forming a three dimensional image of the spinefin star dragonfish.

The other portion was at the left side, forming the image of Star Form blessed land.

After completing this step, Fang Yuan breathed in deeply as he activated his immortal essence, injecting them into the wisdom path Immortal Gu that he had borrowed, and according to the method that the land spirit gave him, he started deducing.

Two lumps of star thoughts flew rapidly, they collided intensely and created a star cloud storm in his mind.

In the storm, countless star thoughts flashed continuously, some joined together while others disintegrated.

One day, two days, three days... in Star Form blessed land, after a total of seven days and six nights, Fang Yuan, who was extremely exhausted, opened his eyes slowly.

One hundred and sixty thousand star thoughts had been used up in his mind. He even spent sixty-six beads of immortal essence to activate the wisdom path Immortal Gu.

After paying such a huge price, Fang Yuan obtained two sets of Gu formation charts.

Among these two Gu formation charts, one was big and one was small.

The bigger Gu formation chart reflected Star Form blessed land, it had eight formation cores. The smaller Gu formation chart reflected the spinefin star dragonfish, there were four formation cores. Each of the formation cores needed a specific Immortal Gu, in total, both Gu formation charts needed twelve Immortal Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 901: Transplanting Immortal Aperture, Relocating Blessed Land

Fang Yuan started to set up the formation.

In accordance with locations indicated on the Gu formation chart, he found the eight formation cores in Star Form blessed land through Star Form land spirit’s guidance, he placed the corresponding Immortal Gu there one by one.

Star Form blessed land had few space path dao marks, the land spirit could not teleport. The eight formation cores were very varied in distance, they were either close by or far away, Fang Yuan spent a lot of time due to this, by the time he finished, he had already spent half a day.

After this step, Fang Yuan, who was vigilant and cautious, inspected these eight formation cores carefully again.

After confirming that there were no issues, Fang Yuan returned to his original spot and placed the chosen spinefin star dragonfish into his own immortal aperture.

Under his orders, Star Form land spirit opened the blessed land’s entrance.

Fang Yuan walked out into Earth Abyss.

The blessed land doors were shining with light, but it could only radiate over a small range of land. The inside of Earth Abyss was very dark and silent.

This was a deep part of Earth Abyss, even Ancient Soul Sect, one of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, had not explored this deeply yet.

But even though there were no humans here, there were countless hidden desolate beasts, and even ancient desolate beasts, it was very dangerous.

There was no time to waste, Fang Yuan let out the spinefin star dragonfish.

The spinefin star dragonfish had the size of an ordinary whale, but it looked like a carp, its body was covered in blue fish scales. There were bones protruding out of its back, along the spine, extending outwards.

Fang Yuan placed the four Immortal Gu on the body of the spinefin star dragonfish in accordance with the smaller Gu formation chart.

One was in its mouth, one was in a particular bone on its back, one was in the left eye, and the last one was in its stomach.

Even though the spinefin star dragonfish was big, it could not compare to Star Form blessed land.

Fang Yuan only took a short while before his arrangements were completed.

He inspected it carefully again, before Fang Yuan confirmed it: The twelve Immortal Gu had been put in place properly.

He started to scatter countless mortal Gu around the area, there were even one or two Immortal Gu that he tossed out, creating a powerful Gu formation.

Next, he was finally at the most crucial moment of relocating the blessed land.

Fang Yuan followed the method closely, he activated the remaining four Immortal Gu.

Star Form blessed land’s doors slowly closed, vanishing into thin air.

Fang Yuan’s entire body started to glow in a bright yellow light.

Even though the yellow light was bright, it was not painful to look at, it was a very warm color.

After seventeen breaths of time, the light started to fade, they gathered into Fang Yuan’s two eyes.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, he willed.

At the next moment, a faint yellow light beam shot out of his right eye, hitting the whale-sized spinefin star dragonfish.

The spinefin star dragonfish’s body shook, the small Gu formation that was on its body activated, it shined with a red light.

Under this red light, the spinefin star dragonfish seemed to be wearing red armor.

The entire spinefin star dragonfish was tough like a rock, and did not move, as if it was a statue.

Fang Yuan breathed roughly for some time, next, a yellow light beam shot out of his left eye, directly piercing Star Form blessed land’s hidden location.

Under the influence of the light pillar, Star Form blessed land was drawn out, turning into a blue light lump.

The blue light lump was only the size of a large bean, a sharp contrast to the enormous, whale-like spinefin star dragonfish.

The moment that Star Form blessed land was absorbed by this, the green grape immortal essence in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture started to be consumed at a terrifying speed!

Fang Yuan’s left eye turned with difficulty, moving the yellow light pillar with it. The yellow light pillar began to slowly move while pulling the blue light lump.

And that spinefin star dragonfish that was now like a stone statue, also moved along with Fang Yuan’s right eye, slowly approaching the blessed land.

Rumble, the ground tremored and earth shook.

Roar roar roar, countless ferocious beasts in the darkness roared in panic and fury.

A blessed land’s relocation naturally caused intense turbulence in heaven and earth qi. A powerful earthquake was already forming in the depths of the abyss.

Fang Yuan did not care about these trifling details, and poured all his concentration into the spinefin star dragonfish and Star Form blessed land.

An enormous boulder crashed down on his head, but was blocked by his pre-arranged methods.

Fang Yuan was confident he could hold on for some time even if desolate beasts attacked!

He had created an environment that would not allow any disturbance to him for a while.

As if he was moving two large mountains, the two pupils in Fang Yuan’s eyes moved slowly. At this moment, both his body and soul were exerting all their strength.

Not much time had passed from when the two lights touched each other.

However, to Fang Yuan, it was like a year had gone by!

The moment when Star Form blessed land and the spinefin star dragonfish touched, Fang Yuan suddenly relaxed, as if he had unloaded an extremely heavy burden.

Fang Yuan’s carefully arranged Immortal Gu formations played a crucial role at this moment.

Star Form blessed land was like a wanderer returning home, or a swallow returning to its nest, settling down in the spinefin star dragonfish’s body, turning into an immortal aperture inside it!

This was the method Lang Ya land spirit used to relocate blessed lands.

There must be a desolate beast or ancient desolate beast in which the blessed land would be transplanted as an aperture within it.

Afterwards, the desolate beast or ancient desolate beast could bring the immortal aperture wherever they were moved.

However, time was very limited in this transferral process. The desolate beast or ancient desolate beast that held the immortal aperture could not take in any other immortal aperture, and also could not use any Immortal Gu, otherwise it would influence the workings of the Immortal Gu formation on their body.

The specific circumstances were: Fang Yuan could not store this spinefin star dragonfish into his immortal aperture to quickly move it.

At the same time, he also could not use any other Immortal Gu or immortal killer moves to help it.

He could only rely on the spinefin star dragonfish’s own physical strength to float and move to another place.

After all, although an immortal aperture was residing inside the spinefin star dragonfish, it was only barely done with the help of the larger and smaller Immortal Gu formations. Even a slight outside influence could cause the Gu formation to collapse, and not only would the relocation of the blessed land fail instantly, the Immortal Gu used could also be destroyed.

But even such a large disadvantage could not conceal the enormous value of this method.

The person who created this relocation method was not Long Hair Ancestor, but was equally famous as Long Hair Ancestor in history.

His name was Old Immortal Kong Jue.

In the long history of Gu Immortals, he was one of the three refinement path supreme grandmasters, a legend of the Remote Antiquity Era.

His research and understanding of apertures and immortal apertures surpassed his time. It was his efforts that allowed those of the ten extreme physiques to advance and become Gu Immortals, forming super grade blessed lands.

Old Immortal Kong Jue named the immortal killer move of relocating blessed lands as the immortal aperture transplantation method.

Up to this point, this was the immortal killer move with the highest number of core Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan had seen.

Nevertheless, this immortal killer move with up to sixteen core Immortal Gu was only an incomplete immortal killer move. Old Immortal Kong Jue’s initial thoughts had been to perfectly transplant a Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture into a desolate beast or ancient desolate beast’s body, unlike the current situation, where they could only rely on the two Gu formations and consume a lot of immortal essence to join the two together with difficulty, and just for a while on top of that.

After Long Hair Ancestor obtained this inheritance of Old Immortal Kong Jue, he also made many attempts to complete it with Old Immortal Kong Jue’s research results, but they all ended up in failure.

Under the inspection of the inkman wisdom path Gu Immortal Yi Yan, Long Hair Ancestor discovered this incomplete immortal killer move already had shocking value!

Gu Immortals could use it to relocate the immortal apertures of dead Gu Immortals.

Time passed by, bringing great changes to the world.

Now, countless years later, Fang Yuan was benefiting from this.

“Move, go there.” Fang Yuan commanded the spinefin star dragonfish to move.

Because of the disadvantages of the immortal aperture transplantation method, the spinefin star dragonfish’s speed was less than half the original speed, and the pressure on the body was huge, as if it was moving with a mountain on its back.

This made the distance the blessed land could be relocated every time limited.

Lang Ya land spirit had moved Lang Ya blessed land, but it should not be far away from the previous location.

This was also one of the reasons Fang Yuan did not move Hu Immortal blessed land.

“Fortunately, Earth Abyss is an extremely good hidden area, it will be a long while in the future before this layer gets exposed and developed. I can use Star Form blessed land as a reliable camp to replenish and recuperate.”

“Moreover, I know the disadvantages of the immortal aperture transplantation method, but others don’t know. When Hei Lou Lan does not see Star Form blessed land, she might think the blessed land was destroyed. After all, the concept of relocating blessed lands has already surpassed the common knowledge of Gu Immortals!”

Like this, Fang Yuan led the spinefin star dragonfish to move in Earth Abyss.

The path he moved on was naturally according to a elaborately drawn map, which had already gone through large numbers of tests and probing.

He continued to move deep into Earth Abyss, while avoiding many desolate beasts. In the gaps between the territories of desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts, Fang Yuan slowly moved with the spinefin star dragonfish.

Fang Yuan’s destination was three layers down from the original location of Star Form blessed land.

However, after going down two layers, Fang Yuan’s luck was used up as he ran into a desolate beast one-eyed giant ape.

The one-eyed ape was extremely vigorous and would often wander around in Earth Abyss. When it discovered the spinefin star dragonfish, it excitedly started a chase.

Fang Yuan began a fierce fight with this one-eyed giant ape, strenuously maintaining the safety of the spinefin star dragonfish.

But in the end, Fang Yuan suffered from having no battlefield killer move, and was unable to effectively restrict the one-eyed giant ape’s movement, eventually, partway to their location, the one-eyed giant ape heavily injured the spinefin star dragonfish.

The spinefin star dragonfish was extremely weak while carrying the immortal aperture, it was already using all its strength to move and thus did not have any spare energy to strike back.

Fang Yuan finally drove away this damned one-eyed giant ape, but the spinefin star dragonfish had already been injured heavily and could no longer move.

“Fortunately, the Immortal Gu are unharmed, if anything happened to them, wouldn’t I have to compensate Lang Ya until I’m bankrupt?!” After Fang Yuan inspected the condition, his heavy mood eased up.

This was good fortune within misfortune.

Since the situation had already turned this way, Fang Yuan could only choose the second-best option, and place Star Form blessed land nearby.

The moment the immortal aperture was removed, the spinefin star dragonfish completely crumbled, turning into a pool of meat and blood, even its beast soul had dispersed.

This was the necessary sacrifice of the immortal aperture transplantation method, and Fang Yuan had already known this.

Even if the spinefin star dragonfish was not injured, when it reached the destination, it would still die from exhaustion.

Star Form blessed land was successfully relocated, hidden in a completely new area.

Everything was worth it!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 902: Heavily Developing Star Form Blessed Land

Fang Yuan entered Star Form blessed land.

Star Form blessed land’s heaven and earth qi were greatly affected by the relocation, intense earthquakes occurred in Star Form blessed land.

Only until Star Form blessed land was placed down and started to absorb the endless amount of earth qi did it stabilize, as the earthquakes ceased.

At this moment, Fang Yuan looked over it, the vast landscape was filled with cracks and crevices, dark smoke rose up from burning flames.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank slightly, he sighed deeply.

This was something he had no other way to deal with.

Because to transplant the immortal aperture, he could not interrupt the activation of the two Immortal Gu formations. Thus, even if Fang Yuan had methods involving Immortal Gu, he could not use defensive or protection methods on Star Form blessed land.

Lang Ya land spirit had once told Fang Yuan about this, Lang Ya blessed land’s losses were far greater than Fang Yuan’s Star Form blessed land.

Thus, ordinarily, the blessed land would not be relocated.

“Where is the land spirit?”

Fang Yuan called out.

Star Form land spirit’s eyes were red, he did not understand why his master wanted to move.

Under Star Form land spirit’s guidance, Fang Yuan started inspecting Star Form blessed land.

He first had to inspect Star Form blessed land’s four sources of revenue, the arrow bamboo forest, broken star lake, meteorite pit, and the star fragment grass fields.

Broken star lake’s water was flowing along a huge crack, there were piles of seaweed at the bottom of the lake, there was still some water left inside, it had not dried up completely yet.

Landscape as Before!

Fang Yuan took out the Immortal Gu and poured his immortal essence into it.

Landscape as before Immortal Gu gave off a white light, sweeping over the broken star lake.

Immediately, the ground below broken star lake mended, the lake water filled up and returned to its original state. But the loss of seaweed was still going to affect the production of star river Gu for a period of time in the future.

There was nothing inside the water, only seaweed and aquatic plants were floating around. The original palace below the lake was completely destroyed. Landscape as Before could not restore things like man made buildings.

But the fish groups, insect groups, and Gu groups that were inside this lake did not die from the earthquakes. Fang Yuan had moved them into Hu Immortal blessed land long ago.

Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture was a dead land, living beings could not live inside for long.

Afterwards, Fang Yuan went to arrow bamboo forest, meteorite pit, and star fragment grass fields to inspect them.

Out of his expectations, arrow bamboo forest was unharmed. Beside the arrow bamboo forest, there were two long cracks, they narrowly grazed the edge of the forest, it was truly a close call.

The arrow bamboo forest was the biggest plantation in Star Form blessed land, Fang Yuan had already collected most of the resources there and kept them in Hu Immortal blessed land.

To think that arrow bamboo forest dodged this crisis, it was truly a stroke of good luck.

But the meteorite pit and the star fragment grass fields were not so lucky. The meteorite pit suffered huge damage, it was nearly unrecognizable. As for the star fragment grass fields, because of the fire, some had been burned into ashes, at first glance, it was a barren land.

Under the effect of Landscape as Before, the meteorite pit was restored to normal, and even the terrain of the star fragment grass field had been restored.

“Landscape as before Immortal Gu is truly useful, with it, my losses shrunk by at least eighty percent! And since I already moved out most of my resources beforehand, Star Form blessed land only suffered a minor loss in the end, even though there was huge destruction that occurred.”

Fang Yuan thought as he looked around, he used Landscape as Before to restore the landscape of Star Form blessed land, but that expended a lot of green grape immortal essence.

He did not repair everything, he left some cracks in the ground as they had been.

He had a stroke of inspiration: “Maybe I can use this chance and turn the cracks in the ground into river channels, creating a network that can spread throughout the entirety of Star Form blessed land. But Star Form blessed land has a unique terrain, as for how I can make this a reality, I will need to use the light of wisdom and think over it.”

Next, Fang Yuan used Fixed Immortal Travel and went to Lang Ya land spirit, returning the Immortal Gu back to Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit returned the Immortal Gu that had been held as collateral to Fang Yuan as he said: “If you need to relocate anything else, you can find me again.”

After all, he had earned a huge sum just now, in a short time, he earned more than two thousand immortal essence stones.

Lang Ya land spirit continued: “If you join my Lang Ya sect, and become a supreme elder, in the future when you relocate your blessed land, I can give you a huge discount when borrowing Immortal Gu!”

“I will think about it.” Fang Yuan replied half-heartedly.

He had only wanted to obtain benefits from Lang Ya land spirit, he did not want to be tied together with these hairy men.

Once he joined, he would be unable to go away, he would lose his freedom. He would not make such a stupid decision.

Next, Fang Yuan used Fixed Immortal Travel and entered Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture, returning Landscape as Before to him.

In the immortal aperture, Fang Yuan asked about Eastern Sea’s information from Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng told him that Song Yi Shi and the others were searching for him all over the place, some people had approached Tai Bai Yun Sheng as a result.

“Looking at the situation, our relationship would be exposed in a short while.” Fang Yuan muttered.

“I suggest that you contact Shark Demon and join Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance. Relying on Zombie Alliance, you will be able to resolve this.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng said.

Fang Yuan was not anxious, his plan was unaffected by external pressure, he shook his head: “It is still not time yet, there are still more than ten days from the next attack on Yu Lu blessed land, let’s wait and see.”

Hu Immortal blessed land, tens of days later.

Underground cave.

Bathed in the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan opened his eyes, letting out a breath of turbid air.

“I still failed after all.” He muttered, standing up slowly.

He was sitting down on a small mushroom stump, he used it as a stool.

But such short stumps were very rare now.

Right now, the underground cave was a huge zhi forest, these lingzhi were very different from before, not only were they tall and thick, they were red in color. This was because of Hu Immortal blessed land’s seventh earthly calamity, the blood poison kerria flowers, because of that opportunity, the ordinary zhi forest became a blood zhi forest.

Hu Immortal blessed land’s soil was originally not suited for the growth of zhi forests, but now it has become a blood zhi forest, it could grow very well.

But this zhi forest would need one or two hundred years to expand and growing into a true forest, by creating more space and pushing aside the soil and rocks.

Fang Yuan did not have much expectations towards this blood zhi forest, he was not going to invest into it.

These last days, Fang Yuan had neither slept nor rested, he was putting in all his effort into developing Star Form blessed land.

Once his identity was exposed, everyone would know that he was the culprit behind the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. Hu Immortal blessed land would have to be given up, Star Form blessed land would become his only base by then.

By that point, if Fang Yuan was still an immortal zombie and had not revived, Star Form blessed land would have an even more important role to Fang Yuan, having immense value and use.

Thus, Fang Yuan’s focus had already shifted from Hu Immortal blessed land to Star Form blessed land.

As for the plan of developing Star Form blessed land, Fang Yuan had already thought about it dozens of days ago using the light of wisdom.

According to his earlier inspiration, he would build a huge river system in Star Form blessed land, the actual plan after deducing it properly was grander. The entire water river system would not only be on the ground, he would even encompass the sky into it, he was going to create a huge three dimensional river system.

This made use of Star Form blessed land’s unique terrain.

Star Form blessed land had a depression at the center, while having high altitude around the sides, it resembled the shape of a bowl.

If he only built a river system on the ground, all of the water would flow towards the center. But if this was three dimensional, the water from the center would be drawn into the sky, it would flow towards the edges of the blessed land, and form a grand system for water to flow.

As for the way to create rivers in the sky, Fang Yuan had deduced the cheapest and easiest method, that was cloud soil.

Cloud soil was also used by Lang Ya land spirit to forcefully create a cloud continent in the sky of Lang Ya blessed land.

Fang Yuan intended to use the cloud soil to create many river channels, along these rivers, the fertile cloud soil would have countless star fragment grass growing on them.

The soil that the star fragment grass grew in was the cloud soil. Star Lord Wan Xiang had no choice but to plant them in black soil., as he did not have enough financial ability to bulk purchase cloud soil. But Star Form blessed land’s environment was very suited for star fragment grass to grow. This caused the growth rates of star fragment grass to be higher in Star Form blessed land than Hu Immortal blessed land!

Fang Yuan’s plan was beautiful, but reality was cruel.

Fang Yuan lacked a huge amount of funds, he had just accumulated two thousand immortal essence stones but he had passed them to Lang Ya land spirit. Thus, these days, he could only repair the four sources of revenue in Star Form blessed land.

Arrow bamboo forest had grown to its best condition, emitting a light fog under the use of large amounts of moon well water.

Meteorite pit and broken star lake had been fully restored.

The star fragment grass fields were more troublesome, but after Fang Yuan used the killer move spring star rain several times, they were growing quickly as well.

Ever since he obtained the star path inheritance and gained star shoot Immortal Gu, spring star rain had turned into an immortal killer move, its effect was dozens of times better than before!

As for the dragonfish, eerie fire dragon pythons, regretful spiders, and Dang Hun Mountain inside Hu Immortal blessed land, they were not moved over yet.

Firstly, he needed to develop the place for now, and finalize a proper water flow system before relocating the dragonfish.

Secondly, Star Form blessed land was facing its heavenly tribulation soon!

Why was Star Lord Wan Xiang so anxious to explore Starry Sky grotto-heaven?

It was because the heavenly tribulation was approaching.

He was a rank six Gu Immortal with one heavenly tribulation passed, he was facing the second one soon.

Because he battled with Song Zi Xing and was gravely injured, he lost confidence in surviving the tribulation, he had to expose the secret of Starry Sky grotto-heaven and drag Shi Lei in to explore Starry Sky grotto-heaven together.

Fang Yuan was still hesitating over if he should move all these resources away before the heavenly tribulation struck.

Leaving the underground cave, Fang Yuan returned to Dang Hun palace.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng, who was held captive all along, seemed to have resigned himself to fate, his eyes were hollow as he sat in the prison cell without moving.

Evidently, the truth of Immortal Crane Sect attempting to kill him, and his master Lord Sky Crane trying to possess him were very impactful news towards him.

According to his usual habits, Fang Yuan stood before him and said some words.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng did not move at all, his expression was numb, as if he did not hear a word.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 903: Joining Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance

Fang Yuan was not anxious, as long as Gu Yue Fang Zheng was eating food, it meant that he had the will to live. As for how to change his mindset, and alter his perspective, so that Fang Zheng would view Fang Yuan more favorably, it was a long process, there was no need to rush.

Afterwards, Fang Yuan came to another secret room and inspected Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul.

He had many souls of immortals now, there was Dong Fang Chang Fan, featherman Gu Immortal Zheng Ling, Snowy Mountain’s Xue Song Zi, as well as the Eastern Sea lone cultivator Yao Ge Pi.

These last days, other than developing Star Form blessed land, he had been searching these souls. Currently, he had searched all of their souls already, he gained a lot of benefits.

But what truly made Fang Yuan ‘crave for more’ was Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul.

Once in a while, Fang Yuan would search his soul.

It was no exception this time.

After the soul search, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul suddenly spoke: “My memories have been read by you countless times, but recently, when you conduct soul searches, you will always check the memories regarding the dismantling of battlefield killer moves in my soul. It seems that you have encountered an inheritance, or have faced a strong foe that requires you to unravel a battlefield killer move.”

Towards Dong Fang Chang Fan’s words, Fang Yuan was slightly taken aback, he replied frankly: “That’s right. These last days, I have been studying your wisdom path inheritance, especially the details about resolving battlefield killer moves. Combined with my experiences and your memories, I will gain a lot of insight each time.”

Soul searching was like reading a book, but one was reading the memories in the soul instead. But like reading a book, there was no way to memorize every single small detail accurately. One thorough soul search was like reading a book from start to finish, you would learn about the contents of the book only. With constant revision, one would learn in-depth about the information, and would obtain more knowledge from it.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul smiled: “Have you thought about it, I can actually help you. You re just a wisdom path newbie, no matter how much you revise and read through, the gains that you can have are limited. Meanwhile, my wisdom path attainment is much higher, as long as you give me a body, I will be able to make deductions for you and help you think of solutions. Isn’t this a good idea? You can use information path methods to restrict me, I will be your most capable assistant.”

“That is a good idea indeed.” Fang Yuan nodded, he smiled faintly: “But I will not do that, forget about it. Even after being left with a soul, you are still not giving up, it seems that I have not given you a thorough lesson yet.”

Fang Yuan’s smile turned into a sinister sneer.

Dozens of Gu worms moved with his will, activating.

“Ah—!” Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul shook intensely, the cell was full of his anguished cries.

This punishment lasted for two hours, the pain in the soul was much more intense than in the body, Dong Fang Chang Fan was definitely taught a good lesson.

Fang Yuan obviously did not waste time there, he left long ago and went to two other secret rooms.

In one room, there was the rank seven featherman Gu Immortal Zheng Ling’s soul, in the other room, there was Xue Song Zi’s soul.

Even though these two Gu Immortals were not wisdom path Gu Immortals during their lives, they had memories regarding battlefield killer moves as well.

Even though they did not have wisdom path techniques, one was wind path and the other was snow path, they had their own unique methods to deal with battlefield killer moves. These memories were useful as references for Fang Yuan.

What was worth noting was, both their souls had been searched multiple times by Fang Yuan already.

From Xue Song Zi’s soul, Fang Yuan learned that he had kept a fortune in Snowy Mountain blessed land. In his mountain peak, there were a number of snowmen, as well as plants related to snow pines there.

But Fang Yuan did not dare to take them.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s capabilities were unfathomable, Fang Yuan did not have much confidence in vaguely familiar face. He could not tell Fairy Li Shan about Xue Song Zi’s death either.

Why?

Because Fairy Li Shan and Xue Song Zi were both members of Snowy Mountain, they were allies. After learning that Fang Yuan killed Xue Song Zi, even if Fairy Li Shan did not deal with Fang Yuan, she would have to inform Old Ancestor Xue Hu due to the alliance agreement.

Meanwhile, from Zheng Ling’s soul, Fang Yuan also made some gains. He obtained a complete wind path inheritance from Zheng Ling, as well as the immortal killer move heavenly wish, along with precious information regarding the Immortal Gu House, Sacred Feather City, and the green heaven fragment world that the feathermen lived in.

This world was huge, there was a lot of resources inside, after Fang Yuan learned about it, he almost drooled.

Even though he knew about the scenery in the green heaven fragment world, such that Fang Yuan could use Fixed Immortal Travel to get there, but since that place was currently occupied by White Sea Shatuo and other Gu Immortals, it was like a lion’s den. Fang Yuan would not take the risk easily.

After coming out from the secret room, Fang Yuan received Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s transmission, he said: I have already met up with Shark Demon and the others.

Fang Yuan used Fixed Immortal Travel and teleported into Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture before coming out of it.

At the next moment, Xing Xiang Zi appeared before Shark Demon and the others.

“Come, let me introduce you, this is the ‘world famous’ Xing Xiang Zi.” Shark Demon laughed as he introduced enthusiastically.

Fang Yuan showed a bitter smile: “Lord Shark Demon, please don’t make fun of me... sigh.”

Saying so, tiny explosions occurred over Fang Yuan’s body, it was as if firecrackers had been ignited on his body.

Fang Yuan’s expression did not change, his body shook as hundreds of mortal Gu on his body fell out.

None of these mortal Gu survived, some were torn to shreds from this explosion.

“Hehehe, Xing Xiang Zi, you offended Song clan, this wisdom path mortal killer move cannot conceal your traces.” Behind Shark Demon, an elderly Gu Immortal spoke.

Another skinny middle aged female Gu Immortal had an arrogant expression as she said with disdain: “That’s right. Right now, among the three most capable wisdom path Gu Immortals in Eastern Sea, one of them is Song clan’s Song Jia Dan. If you only have these methods, you will be exposed soon.”

The last person was unfamiliar, he wore a golden robe and had a fat body, he looked like a rich person as he smiled and expressed goodwill towards Fang Yuan: “Jia Dan sits in twin polar, Hua An hides in Nan Gong, there is also Dragon Head Tortoise, living inside adversity sea. This refers to the three best wisdom path experts in Eastern Sea. Among them, Song Jia Dan ranks the highest, he sacrificed himself for his clan and fused himself into the world of Eastern Sea itself. As long as it is within Eastern Sea, he can deduce it accurately, this is very scary. Even if sir hides in someone’s immortal aperture, you will only delay the timing, you will be found eventually.”

Xing Xiang Zi nodded, he cupped his fists towards the three Gu Immortals: “I have been enlightened, thank you for the information.”

The mortal Gu that died were his defensive wisdom path methods, to protect him against others’ deductions.

But the moment Fang Yuan stepped into Eastern Sea, these defensive measures self-detonated, one could see how skilled Song Jia Dan was from this.

“Alright, brother Xing Xiang, let me introduce you.” Shark Demon referred to the elderly Gu Immortal with his hand: “This is the demonic path Gu Immortal Ninth Ghost Finger, he cultivates soul path mainly and wisdom path on the side.”

Shark Demon shifted to the arrogant middle aged female Gu Immortal: “This is the wisdom path Gu Immortal Xie Shu Fang, Master Xie.”

Finally, he talked about the smiling fat Gu Immortal: “This is ‘Big Bag’ Lu Tan Xin, he mainly cultivates space path, but he has wisdom path attainment as well.”

“It is my honor to meet all three of you.” Fang Yuan cupped his fists again, having a humble attitude.

The middle aged female Gu Immortal Xie Shu Fang said coldly: “Meeting you is my misfortune. You offended Song clan, don’t think you can escape. Right now, you are still scot-free, that is because Song clan did not go all out to find you, as they are busy fighting for Ascending Heaven Plain and have no time for you. I would advise you to surrender to Song clan, burdening me is one thing, but if you burden everyone and cause our Yu Lu blessed land invasion to be obstructed, you will be doing everyone a disservice.”

Her words were very rude, many Gu Immortals heard it and had a change of expression. They were not worried about Xie Shu Fang’s words, instead, they were worried that Xing Xiang Zi might feel insulted and create a conflict among themselves, creating internal strife.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s expression turned grim, while Bo Dan felt secretly joyful seeing that Fang Yuan was insulted.

Fang Yuan gave Xie Shu Fang a look, he thought that this Gu Immortal was probably in the righteous path, resulting in such a poor attitude towards himself.

Fang Yuan was joyful instead of angry, he continued from her words: “Master Xie is right, Song clan is a super force, they have such great influence, how could I defend against them? Thus, I have decided, Lord Shark Demon, I would like your help in joining Zombie Alliance, do you think I can avoid this trouble if I join?”

Xie Shu Fang was stunned, in her impression, Northern Plains Gu Immortals were very rash and arrogant, why was he being so mild?

Shark Demon was the first to react, he laughed loudly: “Of course you can. Brother Xing Xiang is a great talent, joining Zombie Alliance is a good idea. I can assure you, you will join Zombie Alliance smoothly. As long as you did not defile Song Yi Shi, we can back you up in this matter, and support you as we negotiate with Song clan.”

“Then I will thank Lord Shark Demon first.” Fang Yuan’s face was full of helplessness and bitterness: “Don’t worry Lord Shark Demon, I had accidentally entered the bottom of the volcano and saw that Fairy Yi Shi bathing, that was the cause of this crisis, sigh...”

Fang Yuan sighed deeply, he showed a look of feeling upset over a great misfortune that he did not intend for.

Bo Dan’s expression became very dark.

Shark Demon laughed loudly: “I believe brother Xing Xiang Zi, come, let’s go and break that fighting soul battlefield!”

After entering Yu Lu blessed land, everyone entered fighting soul battlefield again.

In a dark and gloomy area, dark clouds were looming as a thunderstorm approached, intense winds blew and a sandstorm was blowing. Soul beasts formed in the sandstorm, they grew in numbers and charged towards Fang Yuan and the others without stopping.

Fang Yuan, Bo Dan, and the others had started deducing the battlefield the moment they entered, they displayed all their methods and techniques.

Because of their earlier probing, they had found out, the key to this round was not traps or difficulty, it was the immense time needed to find all the Gu worms.

Seven minutes later, ancient soul beasts would start to form, it would be best if they dismantled this fighting soul battlefield before seven minutes!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 904: Star Thought Immortal Gu

This was a race against time!

If Shark Demon and the others could not hold off the soul beasts, then this invasion would end in failure again.

If the Gu Immortals could unravel the battlefield killer move before that, they would obtain victory.

Boom!

Fang Yuan waved his sleeves, a wisdom path mortal killer move was used, he destroyed seven to eight hidden Gu worms.

Earlier, when he targeted this fighting soul battlefield killer move, he could only destroy five to six hidden Gu worms at once. But now, he could destroy seven to eight. This showed that during this time, he had been hiding in Hu Immortal blessed land, practicing and learning to improve his wisdom path techniques.

But Fang Yuan was not satisfied: “This kind of self-directed learning is too limited in terms of improvement. To increase my rate of deducing this battlefield killer move, I need Immortal Gu. It is a pity, even though I have a wisdom path Immortal Gu, Unravel Mystery, I cannot use it to deal with battlefield killer moves.”

Unravel mystery Immortal Gu’s effect was to help a Gu Immortal think and solve puzzles and mysteries. If the battlefield killer move was treated as a puzzle, then unravel mystery Immortal Gu would be very helpful in unraveling battlefield killer moves.

But simply unravel mystery Immortal Gu alone could not do anything to battlefield killer moves.

Fang Yuan used the light of wisdom and intended to use unravel mystery Immortal Gu as the core to deduce a simple immortal killer move that could unravel battlefield killer moves.

But unfortunately, even though Fang Yuan had been trying hard, up until the point when he had to come to Eastern Sea, he did not succeed.

Deducing an immortal killer move was very difficult.

Normally speaking, even if rank eight Gu Immortals wanted to deduce a brand new immortal killer move, they would need to spend years.

And every so often, their foundations would be insufficient, until their deaths, they would not be able to complete the immortal killer move.

Thus, Fang Yuan also had many incomplete immortal killer moves in the inheritances that he had obtained.

Even though Fang Yuan's star path attainment level was ordinary, relying on wisdom Gu, he could completely deduce some incomplete immortal killer moves, that resulted in star fire escape and projected star thought.

But now, he wanted to deduce a brand new wisdom path killer move without any foundation, this was out of Fang Yuan's abilities.

Even with the light of wisdom, his wisdom path attainment level was ordinary, this was his greatest drawback, it was holding him back.

"Actually, unravel mystery Immortal Gu and the unraveling of battlefield killer moves are very closely related. As long as my wisdom path attainment level reaches master level, I will be able to design a new wisdom path immortal killer move specially used to unravel battlefield killer moves."

Fang Yuan had estimated this inwardly long ago.

But now, even though he felt some regret, he was not anxious at all.

Since Shark Demon had promised him publicly to recommend him to Zombie Alliance, there was little chance that he would go back on his words.

Even if this attempt to unravel fighting soul battlefield fails, Fang Yuan would not be implicated.

Fang Yuan would had achieved his goal, that was to join Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance.

"In fact, from another perspective, to express my value to Shark Demon, so that it would benefit me, battlefield killer moves like fighting soul battlefield should take as long to deduce as possible."

If he completely deduced these battlefield killer moves, and Yu Lu blessed land was taken down, Fang Yuan would receive little benefits from it. He might as well drag the time out and wait for himself to get stronger, he might get a bigger share of the profits then.

Fang Yuan continued to move his hands, he was calm as he observed the situation secretly with his peripheral vision.

He did not need to observe Bo Dan, he was doing the same, trying his best to deduce, but he could only destroy one hidden Gu worm at once, he made barely any progress towards this situation.

Fang Yuan's focus was on the three new Gu Immortals. They had wisdom path techniques in one way or another, they were invited by Shark Demon for this purpose.

The one closest to Fang Yuan was the elderly Gu Immortal, demonic path Gu Immortal Ninth Ghost Finger.

Right now, he was lowering his head and looking at his hands. His ten fingers were intact, but when he moved his fingers rapidly, only nine fingers could be seen in the silhouettes.

His wisdom path inheritance was very unique, the missing finger represented the ‘one in the Great Dao’ that fled, it was the most profound heavenly secret.

Ninth Ghost Finger moved his fingers, they danced in the air like phantom spirits, he chanted in an unknown language that no one could understand.

At the same time, all sorts of mortal Gu flew out of his immortal aperture.

These mortal Gu flew into the air and self-detonated, revealing the hidden locations of Gu around the area.

Some mortal Gu only destroyed one spot, while some mortal Gu destroyed seven to eight hidden Gu worms. On average, his speed was slightly slower than Fang Yuan, but his wisdom path attainment level was definitely higher.

Fang Yuan looked at Big Bag Lu Tan Xin.

The title of Big Bag was very interesting, Fang Yuan guessed that since he was a space path Gu Immortal, did Big Bag mean that he had incredibly skilled storage techniques?

But normally speaking, Gu Immortals who mainly cultivate space path have a lot of space path dao marks, their immortal aperture would also be much larger than ordinary Gu Immortals’ immortal apertures.

Right now, Lu Tan Xin’s eyes had turned into vertical pupils, they were like cat’s eyes as he investigated continuously.

His fat hands turned golden and oily, the aura that leaked from it displayed to others that this was a top tier mortal killer move.

Lu Tan Xin first observed for a few breaths of time before striking.

He stretched out a golden hand and aimed at one point, pointing a finger.

This movement seemed to have expended a lot of his energy, soon, he was breathing roughly and panting.

But after each time he pointed, at the corresponding direction, large numbers of hidden Gu worms would be destroyed, turning into golden dust that scattered.

Every strike of Lu Tan Xin’s destroyed eight hidden Gu worms.

But his speed was very slow.

His attacks needed investigation beforehand, and he had to take several breaths of time to prepare it, it was very exhausting. The more tired he got, the slower his attacks became.

Thus, in conclusion, Lu Tan Xin was slower than Ninth Ghost Finger.

It could be seen that Shark Demon’s evaluation was on point. When Shark Demon introduced Lu Tan Xin, he said that he had wisdom path attainment. When he introduced Ninth Ghost Finger, he said that he cultivated wisdom path on the side. Meanwhile, Shark Demon also placed much focus on Gu Immortal Xie Shu Fang, as a person mainly cultivating wisdom path, she was undoubtedly the most capable among the three.

Fang Yuan looked at Xie Shu Fang next.

As expected!

Xie Shu Fang stood in the air arrogantly, two streams of yellow and white vapor were blowing out of her nose continuously.

The yellow and white streams of vapor moved extremely quickly, they moved a round in the air, destroying up to a hundred hidden mortal Gu.

After destroying these Gu worms, the yellow and white streams became thinner, but when they returned to Xie Shu Fang’s nostrils and were breathed out again, they regained their power and become unstoppable again.

Heaviness flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes secretly.

These two streams of yellow and white vapor had incredible power, this was surely an immortal killer move.

The power of an immortal killer move was much greater than the mortal killer moves that Fang Yuan had.

Fang Yuan sighed to himself internally: “My wisdom path attainment level is insufficient, I cannot use unravel mystery Immortal Gu properly, so be it, attainment levels can only normally be accumulated through long periods of time. But if I have star thought Immortal Gu, according to Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance, I will be able to use at least three wisdom path immortal killer moves to destroy battlefield killer moves. Among them, two are even stronger than this yellow and white vapor, by at least five to six times!”

The wisdom path inheritance from Dong Fang Chang Fan was more refined than the one Xie Shu Fang had.

Fang Yuan wanted to obtain star thought Immortal Gu the most now.

On one hand, he had a huge need for star thoughts. One Fang Yuan stone nest in Hu Immortal blessed land was refining star thought Gu all the time now. If he had star thought Immortal Gu, he would be able to use this stone nest for the production of airsac Gu, increasing its scale and earning more immortal essence stones for Fang Yuan.

On the other hand, star thought Immortal Gu was one of the two cores of the immortal killer move star fog concealment.

Star fog concealment had a similar effect to dark limit Immortal Gu.

It could defend against other people’s deductions, making their deductions unclear and inaccurate regarding the truth.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance had many top tier mortal killer moves, Fang Yuan had used them, but facing people like Song Jia Dan, there was no way to defend against his deductions using them.

Once Fang Yuan stepped into Eastern Sea, the mortal Gu that he had used instantly self-detonated, the defensive mortal killer moves collapsed in no time.

Evidently, if Fang Yuan really became a fugitive in the future and was hunted down by everyone, countless people would be deducing his whereabouts. Then, he would need an immortal killer move to protect himself against others’ deductions.

It could be seen that mortal killer moves, even if they were top tier, would have no use no matter how many there were.

There was a qualitative difference between immortal and mortal.

“But to refine star thought Immortal Gu, there are many difficulties. Firstly, the issue of funding, I have just spent two thousand immortal essence stones, the money I have on hand currently is limited. Even if I have enough, to purchase all of the immortal materials, I will need enough time and luck. Also, my success dao mark was used up already to refine change form Immortal Gu. Even if I prepare adequately, if I am unlucky, and encounter the failure rate, I would fail to refine star thought Immortal Gu.”

“As for other people refining star thought Immortal Gu, the possibility is very small, after all, Dong Fang Chang Fan only self-detonated star thought Immortal Gu not too long ago.”

Time passed, seven minutes had gone by already.

In fighting soul battlefield, ancient soul beasts appeared again.

A continuous stream of soul beasts encircled Fang Yuan and the others from all directions.

Compared to the dark swamp of soul beasts, Fang Yuan and the others were like sesame seeds on a pancake!

However, Shark Demon and the others were not desperate, they had intent to fight and anticipation.

That was because Fang Yuan and the others were close to succeeding in dismantling the battlefield killer move.

“All or nothing!” Shark Demon gritted his teeth, he knew that he had to stake it all now, he activated the incomplete Profound Ice House without hesitation.

The incomplete Profound Ice House took in everyone as it rushed out of the soul beast army by charging forward.

It charged unhindered, tearing countless soul beasts to shreds, even the desolate beast level soul beasts could not stop the rampaging Profound Ice House.

Bam bam bam!

Ancient soul beasts had enough strength, they surrounded Profound Ice House and attacked ruthlessly.

Immortal essence was expended intensely, Shark Demon, Su Bai Man and the others’ expressions turned pale!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 905: Pitiful Victory

“Endure, endure it!”

“Success depends on this, we will win if we endure for just a bit more!”

In the incomplete Profound Ice House, everyone was screaming loudly, they lost their composure.

Outside the incomplete Profound Ice House, there were an uncountable number of soul beasts, they were like swamps of ants encircling Profound Ice House in the middle.

“How many hidden spots left?” Shark Demon shouted.

“A hundred and seventy-eight!” Bo Dan immediately reported. Even though he could not destroy the mortal Gu efficiently, at this point, fighting soul battlefield was close to collapsing, soul beasts were no longer being produced, Bo Dan’s investigative methods could cover the entire battlefield.

“A hundred and seventy-eight...” Su Bai Man muttered, her expression was ugly, but the light of hope in her eyes shined brightly.

This number of hidden locations seemed easy to deal with.

But in fact, it was very difficult.

Firstly, the core Immortal Gu left were the hardest to deduce and take down.

Secondly, the immortals were now inside Profound Ice House, their methods were restricted, they could not use their methods as freely as before.

The Immortal Gu House had both offense and defense, as well as movement, it was a war fortress with capabilities in all areas, without any apparent weaknesses. The more Gu Immortals inside the Immortal Gu House, and the higher their cultivation levels, the more immortal essence they could provide to the Immortal Gu House, and the more power the Immortal Gu House could unleash!

But there was a flaw in this.

That was that the Gu Immortals could only provide fuel for the Immortal Gu House. The Immortal Gu House’s offense, defense, movement, healing, investigation, and others, were decided based on the Immortal Gu House’s own Immortal Gu and mortal Gu.

Thus, Fang Yuan, Xie Shu Fang, and the others’ methods were obstructed by the Immortal Gu House, they could not be used.

From this perspective, ancient battle formations were much better than Immortal Gu Houses. Even though ancient battle formations had been deemed outdated in history after the emergence of countless Immortal Gu Houses, facts showed that ancient battle formations still had many advantages.

For example, the fighting methods of ancient battle formations were much more flexible than Immortal Gu Houses.

An Immortal Gu House’s offense, defense, movement, healing, and investigation abilities were all decided by the Immortal Gu, they could not be changed, their power only depended on how much immortal essence was used, they were inflexible.

But ancient battle formations were different, even though ancient battle formations were also made of Gu formations, the core was the Gu Immortals inside.

The Gu Immortals could use their personal immortal killer moves inside the ancient battle formation.

Just like during the defensive battle of Lang Ya blessed land when Fang Yuan and the hairy man Gu Immortals used the second best ancient battle formation, Heavenly Giant Solor. This silver giant would change its form depending on what killer moves the Gu Immortal used, and the killer move's power would be amplified greatly as well.

In all, if it was an ancient battle formation, the immortals might have already destroyed all of the hidden Gu worms and obtained victory. But because this was an Immortal Gu House, they were restricted.

It was like climbing a mountain, they only had a small flight of stairs in front before they could reach the mountain peak. But just this small distance was an incredible obstacle to them.

In the immortals' perception, time seemed to have slowed down, every second felt like years.

"Are we going to fail again?" Su Bai Man muttered in disappointment, she showed a dark and defeated expression.

But at this time, Xie Shu Fang stood up, she said heavily to Shark Demon: "I can settle all of the remaining hidden Gu worms, but I would need to pay a huge price for my method. If you can give the Immortal Gu inside to me as compensation, I will help."

Shark Demon's expression was ugly, he snorted coldly. Su Bai Man also showed a ruthless and unfriendly gaze.

Xie Shu Fang's actions were likely to be extortion, but at this moment, they had no other ways left, to complete this difficult task, they could only rely on Xie Shu Fang.

But Xie Shu Fang asked for an Immortal Gu as compensation, Immortal Gu were extremely valuable, she was really asking for an exorbitant price.

But after Shark Demon thought about it for a while, he agreed without waiting for too long: "You can only take one Immortal Gu, that is my limit!"

He had undergone an intense competition in Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance to seize the mission for attacking Yu Lu blessed land.

Other than a portion of the benefits that had to be given to Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance, the rest would go to Shark Demon and Su Bai Man.

This immortal zombie couple had already invested a huge sum, their foundations were shaken. The Immortal Gu inside Yu Lu blessed land were their property, right now, Xie Shu Fang's request was simply digging away at their fortune!

But one had to say, Shark Demon really had a grand disposition, he knew how to assess the situation and give up some benefits when necessary.

He could actually hold in his anger and agree to Xie Shu Fang's request.

This made Fang Yuan praise him secretly.

Xie Shu Fang saw Shark Demon giving in and did not hesitate, she nodded, smiling: "Sir Shark Demon, I am not a greedy person. But one of the Immortal Gu in the battlefield killer move suits me a lot. I will not dare to ask for more Immortal Gu, I owe you a favor this time."

“Go ahead, Master Xie Shu Fang.” Su Bai Man crossed her arms, saying in a cold tone.

This Immortal Gu was not easy to obtain.

Everyone watched with anticipation as Xie Shu Fang’s expression turned serious, her aura was growing. At the same time, black and white lights appeared on her body.

The black and white light swirled around, forming into a big ball.

The ball was made of black, white, and grey, it resembled a map and was showing a life-like scene of the battlefield.

In the map, the incomplete Profound Ice House was a white dot in the center, surrounded by darkness, they were all soul beasts. The hidden Gu worms were around the countless soul beasts, they were shining like stars, having very clear locations.

Wisdom path immortal killer move — Distinct Map!

Xie Shu Fang breathed in deeply, she stretched out her finger and pointed at the map.

She used her index finger and thumb to grab onto a hidden spot, by exerting some strength, she squeezed.

The immortals only heard a soft cracking sound, like something had shattered.

Immediately after, Xie Shu Fang’s fingers grinded, when she took out her hand, the Gu worms at the hidden spot were destroyed.

At once, the immortals gasped.

Xie Shu Fang’s wisdom path killer move could bypass Profound Ice House and attack the outside world, with such precision. The soul beasts outside could do nothing to stop it, it was incredible!

Even Fang Yuan found it eye-opening.

This female immortal, Xie Shu Fang, might have a terrible attitude towards Fang Yuan, but she was called Master Xie by Shark Demon, she truly had some abilities.

Even though Fang Yuan had the advantage in terms of a good wisdom path inheritance and could surpass Bo Dan, Lu Tan Xin and Ninth Ghost Finger, against a wisdom path Gu Immortal like Xie Shu Fang, he was lacking by a lot.

Eventually, Xie Shu Fang used this distinct map killer move and destroyed most of the hidden Gu worms, capturing an Immortal Gu in the process.

When she took out this Immortal Gu from distinct map, the other Gu Immortals were all shocked.

After losing one Immortal Gu, fighting soul battlefield broke down rapidly, the remaining Immortal Gu and mortal Gu disappeared quickly, retreating on their own.

Countless soul beasts growled, as they growled, they attacked relentlessly for the final time.

Profound Ice House was after all an Immortal Gu House, it resisted the soul beasts’ frenzied attacks until the end.

Eventually, the soul beast army disintegrated along with the battlefield killer move, Shark Demon and the others finally obtained victory.

But soon, they fell into another battlefield killer move.

“Heavens, how many battlefield killer moves are there in this Yu Lu blessed land?” Bo Dan held his head in desperation.

After the fighting soul battlefield, the immortals went into another new battlefield killer move — Eight Doors Labyrinth.

In this battlefield killer move, the sky and ground were all orange, other than eight huge doors around them, there was nothing else.

But even the best wisdom path Gu Immortal, Xie Shu Fang, showed a difficult expression, she reminded them: “Be careful. This eight doors labyrinth is used specially to trap enemies, even though it does not have the killing nature of fighting soul battlefield, it is harder to deal with.”

Nobody had any rebuttal.

Eight doors labyrinth was very famous in history, when Gu Immortals were trapped inside, they would lose their sense of direction to a huge extent.

Furthermore, each of these eight doors would only allow one life form inside.

After entering, the door would disappear.

That was to say, the eight doors before Shark Demon and gang meant that they only had eight chances to explore it.

After entering the door, the Gu Immortals would need to fight alone with any help, there were no other Gu Immortals to help them.

“Rumors says that after entering the door, Gu Immortals will end up in a second area, and make another choice out of eight doors. In the eight doors labyrinth, there are eight areas, each area has eight doors. There is only one correct path however, choosing the wrong path would just be going in circles. This is a classic labyrinth battlefield, it is very powerful at trapping people. Without a wisdom path Gu Immortal skilled at deductions, there is no way to unravel it. Gu Immortals skilled at fighting cannot progress through this, they might even be trapped inside until they die.” Xie Shu Fang sighed.

Even though she was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, she was not skilled in deductions.

The immortal killer move distinct map earlier had already exposed her foundation, she was a wisdom path Gu Immortal skilled at investigation and long ranged attacks, she was more of a battle type.

Fang Yuan’s wisdom path inheritance was good at deductions, but he did not even have the most basic star thought Immortal Gu. One couldn’t cook a meal without the ingredients, this was a very awkward state.

“This is only the first area, we can still retreat.” Xie Shu Fang reminded.

In the earlier battlefield killer move, they could probe it. But against eight doors labyrinth, Gu Immortals would be risking their lives to investigate it, they could not even probe it from outside.

“Yu Lu blessed land’s battlefield killer moves are getting harder to deal with.

We should be close to completely taking it down?” Shark Demon sighed, he wisely chose to retreat.

Using Profound Ice House, the immortals charged out and left Yu Lu blessed land.

This time, even though Shark Demon and the others unraveled fighting soul battlefield, they paid a huge price, it was a pitiful victory.

The one that benefited the most was Xie Shu Fang.

She obtained an Immortal Gu as compensation, she was overjoyed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 906: Yellow Spring Sea Area, Undying Kingdom

They had unraveled fighting soul battlefield, but because of the battlefield killer move eight doors labyrinth, Shark Demon and the group had no choice but to temporarily retreat from Yu Lu blessed land.

After parting with the other wisdom path Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng followed Shark Demon and Su Bai Man to shark sea where they were hosted to a banquet.

“Brother Xing Xiang, I wonder how much assurance you have in deciphering eight doors labyrinth?” In the banquet, Shark Demon asked.

Fang Yuan’s expression slightly changed as he heavily shook his head: “I am ashamed, I don’t have the least bit of assurance.”

“Even you don’t have any assurance?” Su Bai Man said with disappointment.

Fang Yuan mumbled: “If I could refine a certain wisdom path Immortal Gu, I would have thirty percent assurance. Unfortunately, although I have been trying with all my efforts to gather the immortal materials, I am still far away from the standard to refine Immortal Gu. Refining Immortal Gu is... really hard!”

Shark Demon’s eyes slightly brightened at Fang Yuan’s words, but soon dimmed.

He had cooperated with Xing Xiang Zi not only once, and knew ins and outs of Fang Yuan; Fang Yuan indeed lacked wisdom path immortal killer moves.

While unraveling the battlefield killer move this time, Shark Demon also learned several things.

Big Bag Lu Tan Xin and the demonic path Gu Immortal Ninth Ghost Finger could not match Fang Yuan in wisdom path methods. There was no need to even mention Bo Dan. Xie Shu Fang, on the contrary, was truly skilled, far surpassing Fang Yuan, but she was a righteous path Gu Immortal and not to mention that she could not fit in with Shark Demon’s group, her appetite was too big.

In this trip, Shark Demon and the group did not even get anything, but Xie Shu Fang obtained an Immortal Gu, gaining the biggest profit.

No matter how open-minded Shark Demon was, he felt extreme loss from losing an

Immortal Gu.

Although they unraveled fighting soul battlefield, they held a poor impression of Xie Shu Fang, it was only that they suppressed it and did not mention it. With Shark Demon’s personality, he would get back at her for this, sooner or later.

Fang Yuan was observing Shark Demon’s expression, seeing the latter’s eyes brighten before dimming, he sighed and said gently: “I won’t hide it from the two of you, my wisdom path inheritance is complete, if I have that wisdom path Immortal Gu, I can use several powerful immortal killer moves and my strength will definitely rise greatly. Even if I can’t match Xie Shu Fang, the gap won’t be too big.”

Shark Demon nodded and talked about other things, not continuing this topic.

Fang Yuan had not fully expressed himself before he was interrupted, but how could Shark Demon not understand Fang Yuan’s meaning?

‘The hidden implication of Xing Xiang Zi’s words is to make me sponsor him in refining that wisdom path Immortal Gu. But I will suffer greatly in this transaction, it is okay if the refinement succeeds, but if it fails, all the investment would be gone to waste, that will just be adding to my misfortunes.’

Shark Demon pondered, and denied the thought of helping Fang Yuan refine Immortal Gu.

In fact, the pressure on him recently was huge.

To invade Yu Lu blessed land, he and Su Bai Man had invested large amounts of energy and wealth, but up to this point, there were few results. On this attempt too, they had paid quite a lot to invite three wisdom path assistants.

Even if Shark Demon and Su Bai Man were veteran experts with deep foundations, their accumulation was showing signs of being exhausted right now.

Refining Immortal Gu might just be sending themselves into a bottomless pit. Unless it was the only choice left, Shark Demon absolutely would not choose this option.

Fang Yuan felt slight regret about Shark Demon’s stance, but he had already predicted it and did not feel any disappointment.

He had used up most of his immortal essence stones to relocate the blessed land. With his current financial ability, he required a long time before he could gather enough immortal materials for refining star thought Immortal Gu.

“It doesn’t matter that Shark Demon did not take the bait, the main thing is still to join Zombie Alliance.” Fang Yuan did not forget his current main goal.

Shark Demon also wanted Fang Yuan to join Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance.

The reason?

Because once Fang Yuan joined Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance, he would be on Shark Demon and Su Bai Man’s side. Like this, with Zombie Alliance’s alliance restrictions, Shark Demon could more conveniently and more assuredly use Fang Yuan the next time they attacked Yu Lu blessed land.

This would be of great help to Shark Demon’s present development plan.

Helping Xing Xiang Zi was helping himself, so after the shark fishing banquet, Shark Demon brought Fang Yuan to Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance’s headquarters.

Two days later.

Shark Demon and Fang Yuan were flying quickly.

“This is yellow spring sea area.” Shark Demon pointed at the sea below, and introduced.

In fact, there was no need for his indication, as Fang Yuan was already looking at the special sea below him.

The seawater of the yellow spring sea area was yellow in color, like the sea was mixed with dirt and sand. Waves billowed, moving up and down the sea.

But in fact, there was no sand floating on the yellow spring sea area, the seawater by itself had a light yellow color.

“Yellow spring sea area is an extremely special sea area. As you get closer to the center of the sea area, you will find there are no living creatures, this is the largest zombie farming area in the five regions.” Shark Demon introduced.

Fang Yuan nodded and used investigative methods, his vision increased sharply, penetrating the sea surface towards the depths.

He saw countless skeletons floating inside the sea, large numbers of zombie fish groups, zombie cuttlefish, jellyfish, sea turtles, and so on, moving in the sea, and constantly fighting each other.

In the seabed lived grayish white decomposed corals which gave off intense stenches that pervaded the surrounding seawater. Strands of seaweed, drifting with the water flow, were deathly pale, like nooses used to hang people.

“Over these two days, we used four undercurrents, and flew for a day and half, going past ten sea areas before we reached this yellow spring sea area where Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance’s headquarters lies. Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance is indeed the main headquarters of the zombie alliances over the five regions, to be able to grasp such a large territory in Eastern Sea.” Fang Yuan sincerely exclaimed.

Shark Demon laughed heartily: “The Zombie Alliance branches in the other four regions are weaker, but this here in Eastern Sea is the headquarters of Zombie Alliance, it is powerful and prosperous, and can surpass other super forces. Brother Xing Xiang, joining this powerful force is a sensible decision!”

Different from Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s Dark Flow Giant City, Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance possessed a public blessed land which they used as their headquarters.

This public blessed land, located in the center of the yellow spring sea area, was known as the ‘Undying Kingdom’ in the world of Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

Under Shark Demon’s guidance, Fang Yuan smoothly entered Undying Kingdom blessed land.

Unlike Fang Yuan’s estimation, Undying Kingdom blessed land was a scene full of life, filled with the twittering of birds and fragrance of flowers.

This formed a stark contrast with the death energy and putrefaction of immortal zombies.

“Since immortal zombies are already among the living dead, their immortal apertures turns into dead lands, how could you raise such a large public blessed land? Could it be from the blessed lands of living Gu Immortals members of Zombie Alliance?” Fang Yuan was puzzled.

Shark Demon laughed: “Xing Xiang Zi, you can be at ease. Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance has never forcibly demanded any living Gu Immortal, that wants to join Zombie Alliance, to offer a part of their immortal aperture. Naturally, Zombie Alliance encourages you to offer part of your blessed land by providing large amounts of rewards. You will see this once you look at the assignments in the inner hall.”

“Most of the Undying Kingdom blessed land still came from immortal zombies. Or to put it more accurately, it came from those old Gu Immortals whose lifespan is ending and are planning to turn into immortal zombies to prolong their lives, or for various other reasons. Do you know why this blessed land is called Undying Kingdom? It is because Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance has unique methods to merge pieces of blessed lands to preserve and maintain their vitality.”

Fang Yuan’s eyes brightened, showing an extremely interested expression.

Shark Demon was observing his expression, and laughed: “Xing Xiang Zi, are you also interested in this method? Hehehe, that’s right. Our Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance has already gained some success from countless predecessors’ studies and accumulations — on how to maintain the vitality of the immortal aperture while not causing any change to the immortal zombie body.”

Fang Yuan’s heart thumped loudly, he had always been thinking of how to revive and get rid of his immortal zombie body.

Why?

It was because an immortal zombie’s immortal aperture was a dead land and had no potential to progress in cultivation.

However, now, as Fang Yuan heard Shark Demon’s words, his thoughts towards reviving had another change.

‘The reason I am trying to be free of an immortal zombie body and revive is for my immortal aperture to be full of life and to progress in cultivation. But if I could truly maintain the vitality of the immortal aperture as an immortal zombie, and have the possibility to improve, then wouldn’t it be making the best of both worlds?’

To be an immortal zombie was to be among the living dead with no limit to lifespan, and could be considered as another form of longevity.

Fang Yuan was using this advantage to continuously step into the wisdom light halo, greatly improving his capabilities.

But if Fang Yuan revived into a living person, his lifespan would sharply reduce under the light of wisdom and he would only be able to use wisdom Gu for a number of times.

The immortal zombie body had advantages and disadvantages.

But even if Fang Yuan had wisdom Gu, the disadvantages still outweighed the advantages.

Thus, Fang Yuan had been looking for a way to revive all along.

‘If I can truly maintain my immortal zombie body and still revive my immortal aperture to advance my cultivation, this would be the best option for me. But right now, it seems that although Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance has made remarkable achievements in this aspect, they are still a great distance from perfecting it. If they truly had this method, Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance would already have been dominating Eastern Sea. The five regions would also not have the current structure.’

After Fang Yuan calmed down, he speculated the truths of Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance.

“All humans are mortal, they will have a day where their lifespan ends. Brother Xing Xiang, after you join Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance, you can contribute to the alliance and use these contributions to exchange for this research result.” Shark Demon smiled as he patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder.

Fang Yuan nodded with a fervent expression on his face, but his mind was calm and knew Shark Demon was simply trying to entice him.

Fang Yuan had joined Northern Plains Zombie Alliance and already understood that to exchange for such a level of research results, the contribution to the alliance must be extremely big.

Shark Demon brought Fang Yuan to the center of the Undying Kingdom.

Over there existed a mountain range carved from skeletons, and on the tens of mountains lay tens of palaces or halls.

Shark Demon led Fang Yuan to a hall.

After a long while, Fang Yuan and Shark Demon walked out of the hall. Fang Yuan now had an identity token and also information path mortal Gu used to transmit all sorts of information to and from Zombie Alliance.

With Shark Demon’s guidance, Fang Yuan smoothly became a member of Zombie Alliance.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 907: Interacting with Song clan

Compared to the first time when Fang Yuan joined Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, it was much easier this time to join Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance.

Originally, Fang Yuan was afraid that his identity would get exposed, after all, there were several rank eight immortal zombies guarding Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance.

Because of this, Fang Yuan had used the light of wisdom in Hu Immortal blessed land and expended a large number of star thoughts to fuse star mark Immortal Gu into the killer move vaguely familiar face.

With Eat Strength, Change Form, and Star Mark, three Immortal Gu as the cores, it was much more realistic when Fang Yuan transformed into a star path Gu Immortal or a star path desolate beast.

But this time, when he joined Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance, Fang Yuan did not see a single rank eight Gu Immortal, even the inspection towards his Xing Xiang Zi identity was only a formality.

“The reason for this, other than the busy schedule of rank eight Gu Immortals, should be that Shark Demon has a high status in Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance. Living Gu Immortals cannot become higher-ups of Zombie Alliance, the reason should be because Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance has a huge force, it has enough confidence and foundation.” Fang Yuan analyzed secretly.

Seven days later.

Bee sea.

Countless bee groups emerged from the water, landing on the boat flowers floating on the sea.

During May in Eastern Sea, the surface of bee sea would have ripples that carried countless boat flowers that floated over.

These flowers were in vibrant colors, they were as large as small boats, they were like scrolls that spread out in the sea of flowers.

Bee sea was a sea area that was connected to flower sea.

There were large numbers of water bees living in bee sea, this special type of bee could only fly temporarily, they were more skilled at swimming in the sea freely.

During May each year, countless boat flowers would flow along with the waves, arriving at bee sea area, it was the only opportunity for the water bees to collect nectar.

In the air of this sea, Fang Yuan, Shark Demon and the others got into a formation, as they underwent an intense negotiation with Song clan’s Gu Immortals.

Eventually, after thirty minutes, the two sides came to an agreement after coming to terms.

Song Yi Shi and the others no longer pursued Xing Xiang Zi’s wrongdoings. Even though Xing Xiang Zi did not do it on purpose, it was still a mistake, not only did he have to apologize, he even had to compensate Song Yi Shi six hundred immortal essence stones. Xing Xiang Zi could not pay everything in one go, so he could have six installments for it. He could pay a hundred immortal essence stones first, followed by a hundred and twenty on the second installment, and a hundred and forty immortal essence stones on the third...

According to the agreement, if he were to pay in batches, Fang Yuan would definitely make greater losses.

Thus, after they came to an agreement, Fang Yuan borrowed a sum of immortal essence stones from Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Shark Demon, getting a total of six hundred and passing it to Song Yi Shi.

Song Yi Shi’s expression was dark, she received these immortal essence stones as she stared at Fang Yuan angrily, she said coldly: “Apologize!”

Fang Yuan was a person who could give in if needed to, he smiled bitterly and apologized earnestly: “I did not intend to offend Fairy Yi Shi, to have angered a beauty, I truly deserve death, please forgive me!”

“Then why don’t you go and die?” Song Yi Shi interjected.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly: “If I had seen Fairy Yi Shi’s body fully, I would deserve to die a thousand deaths. But fairy should know, the mist in the hot spring is thick, you also used an isolation immortal killer move, how could I see anything?”

Song Yi Shi snorted, she was extremely clear of the situation then, she had no defenses set up at the bottom of the volcano, how could she have any immortal killer move. Even if there was mist, Song Yi Shi had gotten rid of them in advance, she did not like to have her vision obstructed.

But Song Yi Shi did not argue against Fang Yuan’s bullshit.

Even if this ‘lecherous and shameless’ old man had seen her entire body, Song Yi Shi had to deny it and refuse to acknowledge it.

The two Gu Immortals from Song clan had a dazed expression, they even secretly pitied this Xing Xiang Zi. Fang Yuan had explained it clearly, the truth was, after this matter was exposed, Song clan had inspected Li clan village thoroughly.

This undercurrent had only been formed in the last few years. And because Song Yi Shi did not inspect the bottom of her volcano clearly, such a loophole was formed.

Xing Xiang Zi only took a look, and because of the thick mist, he could not see anything, but he had to compensate six hundred immortal essence stones, this was simply too much of a price to pay.

In the end, it was all because Song clan was a super force with a large foundation. If Xing Xiang Zi offended anyone else, it would have been fine, but he actually looked at Song Yi Shi, even though she herself was not an issue, she was backed by the first supreme elder of Song clan, Song Qi Yuan!

If not for Shark Demon negotiating in this matter on behalf of Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance, if not for Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance being stronger than Song clan, Fang Yuan would not have been able to pay merely six hundred immortal essence stones to settle this matter.

“Xing Xiang Zi, even though this matter is over, I don’t want to see you appear in front of me ever again!” Song Yi Shi said harshly before flying away.

The other two Gu Immortals from Song clan had a milder attitude, they cupped their fists politely: “Lord Shark Demon, Lady Su Bai Man, farewell.”

“Take care.” Shark Demon replied.

At this point, the incident was resolved.

Shark Demon invited Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng to Shark Sea again as guests.

But Fang Yuan rejected him, he told Shark Demon that he wanted to see if there were any lucrative missions in Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance that could make use of his expertise, in order to earn immortal essence stones and settle his debt.

Shark Demon sensed Fang Yuan’s ‘dejection’ and consoled him, saying that Zombie Alliance had a loose structure and would not restrict his freedom.

Fang Yuan’s acting was on point, he made Shark Demon believe that he was really a lone cultivator that was very bent on having freedom.

Since Fang Yuan rejected them, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man did not force him. This couple also needed time to prepare for the next invasion of Yu Lu blessed land.

After parting with Shark Demon, Fang Yuan actually took some deduction missions from Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance. He was a vigilant person, he had to finish the act, he would not leave flaws in such details.

Fang Yuan had a mission token, and an information path mortal Gu for communication, it was easy to accept missions, he did not need to head to Undying Kingdom blessed land personally.

In fact, Fang Yuan did not intend to enter Undying Kingdom blessed land personally ever again. After all, there were rank eight immortal zombies staying on guard there, against such great experts, even though Fang Yuan had the killer move vaguely familiar face, he was not confident in it.

“Even though I spent six hundred immortal essence stones, as long as I can get into Northern Plains Zombie Alliance successfully, it will be worth it. Now, I have to wait for Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance to release some missions regarding Northern Plains. For example, information collecting in Northern Plains, or a mission to inspect the Northern Plains branch of Zombie Alliance.” Fang Yuan planned.

Fang Yuan’s plan was going very smoothly, at this point, he just needed to wait.

Next, Fang Yuan used Fixed Immortal Travel and returned to Hu Immortal blessed land. He and Tai Bai Yun Sheng parted ways, he used Landscape as Before to pave the way and make friends in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.

Using the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan spent a short amount of time to finish all of the deduction missions that he had taken from Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance.

If it was in the past, these deduction missions would have taken him much of the month, but now Fang Yuan only used several days.

Fang Yuan was gradually feeling his wisdom path attainment increasing.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, he had undergone turmoil, torture, glory, falling from grace, all of these had turned him into a strategist, he was adept at plotting against people, this made Fang Yuan very compatible with the cultivation of wisdom path.

Furthermore, with a high quality wisdom path inheritance, and the rank nine wisdom Gu, could Fang Yuan’s wisdom path not improve drastically?

After completing these missions, Fang Yuan did not turn them in. This speed was too shocking, it was not on the level of attainment that he had revealed to them.

As for the immortal essence stones that Fang Yuan owed Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Shark Demon, he was not worried.

Fang Yuan could choose not to pay back the debt to Tai Bai Yun Sheng, as for Shark Demon, he could return it in a few days time.

Guts Gu had greater demand than supply, it was still selling like hot cakes, his other businesses were also progressing smoothly.

Even though he had caused the four sources of revenue in Star Form blessed land to be damaged when he relocated it, Fang Yuan’s monthly profits still reached a thousand immortal essence stones!

But in spite of this, Fang Yuan still lacked money.

Be it the reform in Star Form blessed land, or the refinement of star thought Immortal Gu, they needed funds, huge amounts of funds!

Other than that, there was also the feeding of Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan needed to feed the large number of Immortal Gu that he had. If they died from hunger, his loss would be too great.

Finding lifespan Gu, reeducating Fang Zheng, interrogating the captives, building the fourth Fang Yuan stone nest, improving his immortal killer moves, learning new wisdom path techniques for the next invasion of Yu Lu blessed land, buying Gu worms, buying strength path desolate beasts and desolate plants, buying the experience and knowledge of nurturing hairy men, investigating the spring dream fruit tree... all of these matters were complicated, Fang Yuan needed to settle them.

Even though the immortal zombie body did not require the rest ordinary humans needed, Fang Yuan still felt that he had insufficient time.

Fang Yuan understood his own predicament clearly. One day, the fact that he was the culprit behind the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would be exposed.

He had to use this period of time to grow as much as he could, to get rid of the weaknesses that he had.

Fang Yuan would love to split up his time, or even split himself into two and work. While he was busy with his tasks, Fang Yuan also observed the situation in the outside world.

He put less focus on Western Desert and Southern Border.

Central Continent was still being affected by the Refinement Path Convention’s lingering effect.

As for Northern Plains, after Old Ancestor Xue Hu defeated Yao Huang and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, there appeared to be peace and quiet. But Fang Yuan had joined the battle to defend Lang Ya, he knew that Old Lord Can Yang and the other Central Continent investigators were here, thus, even though Northern Plains seemed calm, Fang Yuan could feel the intense undercurrents stirring in the dark.

As for Eastern Sea, the current most popular news was about Song clan and other super forces fighting for the control of Ascending Heaven Plain.

A few days later.

Western Desert.

Fang Yuan changed his appearance and did a transaction with Xiao clan’s Gu Immortal.

“These are the goods this time, check them.” Fang Yuan took out the regretful spiders.

This time, the Xiao clan Gu Immortal was Xiao Shi Rang, he had a stable personality and was quite wise, he was known as Xiao clan’s brains and brawn duo along with Xiao Hu Chi.

Xiao Shi Rang inspected it and nodded in satisfaction: “There are no issues, take this!”

He tossed a sum of immortal essence stones towards Fang Yuan.

But now was different, other than immortal essence stones, there was also a token, and an information path mortal Gu!

This was Xiao clan’s transaction token!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 908: Opportunity After Causing Chaos

“It has been a very good experience doing business with you. Our Xiao clan hopes to continue the transactions of regretful spiders for as long as possible. The token in your hand is Xiao clan’s transaction token. Sir, with this token, you are now Xiao clan’s trading partner and can enjoy a lot of preferential policies. The details are recorded in the information path mortal Gu. Naturally, you can refuse this token as well.” Xiao Shi Rang said.

Fang Yuan accepted this token rather happily.

In fact, he was trading with Xiao clan not only to earn immortal essence stones from selling regretful spiders to Xiao clan, but also for this transaction token.

Among the five regions, Western Desert was the most developed in commerce.

Every super force would issue their respective transaction token. But Xiao clan’s transaction token was the one with the most value.

The reason was Xiao clan and Tian clan engaged in business the most among all the super forces in Western Desert, with the highest numbers of trading partners. Fang Yuan wanted to enter Western Desert’s market, and it could be easily done with Xiao clan’s transaction token, and he could also get along well with other trading partners of Xiao clan.

Naturally, this had its demerits as well.

Xiao clan and Tian clan were the biggest competitors, accepting Xiao clan’s transaction token meant being close to Xiao clan, as such, it would be difficult for Fang Yuan to do business with Tian clan and Gu Immortals who possessed Tian clan’s transaction token.

“With this transaction token, I can officially engage in the trade of dragonfish and eerie fire dragon pythons. My profit every month will pass one thousand immortal essence stones. When I restore other resources, my earnings every month will be close to two thousand!”

Fang Yuan did not conceal his joy, accepting this token with a smile.

Xiao Shi Rang also smiled.

As far as Xiao Shi Rang was concerned, Fang Yuan was extremely mysterious, ever since Fang Yuan appeared, Xiao clan had repeatedly undertaken investigations, but could not find out Fang Yuan’s identity. However, Fang Yuan did not hesitate at all when accepting Xiao clan’s transaction token, this action meant being closer to Xiao clan, and Xiao Shi Rang naturally expressed more goodwill.

With the transaction token, Fang Yuan started roaming around Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world for the next few days.

The path was clear with the help of transaction token, even if it was the first meeting, Fang Yuan was able to smoothly make several deals involving dragonfish and eerie fire dragon pythons. Most of these deals were short term transactions, and only one or two were long term deals.

But Fang Yuan believed that as time went on and the number of transactions increased, these long term deals would keep on increasing in number and become more stable.

With a joyous mood, Fang Yuan left Western Desert. But when he stepped into Hu Immortal blessed land, he received shocking information.

“What? Song Yi Shi actually flattened that island where Li clan village lived, in a fit of anger?!”

Originally, the competition for Ascending Heaven Plain had gotten more intense, at first, it was only three clans fighting for dominance, but when the situation turned into a stalemate, many other forces and Gu Immortals joined in, looking to get some benefits.

During this course of events, Song Yi Shi ran into a female demonic path Gu Immortal, Seven Seas Snake Woman, who ridiculed and slandered her, saying how her body was only worth six hundred immortal essence stones.

Song Yi Shi’s mood sank to the depths, and after returning, in a fit of anger, she went to that nameless island and massacred all the mortals and beasts on the island. She then caused a tsunami and submerged the whole island repeatedly five or six times. Naturally, no one on this nameless island survived.

To others, this was not a matter worth mentioning, thus Fang Yuan’s shock would be strange from most people’s perspective.

“Now what happens to Li Xiao Yao? Originally, Song Yi Shi and Li Xiao Yao were a famous couple, but now because of me, Song Yi Shi massacred all of Li Xiao Yao’s ancestors, isn’t that like killing Li Xiao Yao?”

The prominent and powerful Li Xiao Yao from his previous life had no chance to take the limelight in history now.

“Such a pity, I had intended to connect luck with Li Xiao Yao in the future. He was also a rather lucky person.” Fang Yuan sighed inwardly, Eastern Sea’s future structure had changed considerably because of him.

And how far this change would spread to affect other matters, Fang Yuan also did not know.

Several days later, an event occurred that shocked Fang Yuan even more!

“What, Starry Sky grotto-heaven shattered and countless grotto-heaven fragments are falling down like meteors, causing forces of all sizes and countless Gu Immortals to fight for them?!”

Fang Yuan was speechless.

According to his previous life’s memories, the event of Starry Sky grotto-heaven shattering and falling down was supposed to happen hundreds of years later!

How could it have happened so early in this life?

“Is it because of me? I picked up benefits from Star Lord Wan Xiang and Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei, and led to immortal zombie Seven Star Child to awaken from the dream realm, causing Shi Lei to be trapped in the grotto-heaven and having no choice but to request support from Combat Immortal Sect. Seven Star Child had to fight against Combat Immortal Sect, but despite having the territorial advantage, Combat Immortal Sect is a colossal force which made Seven Star Child feel the situation was far from good, deciding to detonate Starry Sky grotto-heaven and drag them down with him?”

Fang Yuan’s speculation was completely right.

In fact, it had happened like that.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, Seven Star Child was trapped in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm for a long time without waking up. Although Star Lord Wan Xiang died, Shi Lei inherited this fortune, he did not report to the sect and secretly sneaked in every time the crack opened, and plundered the resources wantonly.

However, in this life, after Fang Yuan awakened Seven Star Child, Shi Lei was faced with disaster, having to run around miserably from Seven Star Child, he had no choice but to give up on maintaining his face, seeking help from Combat Immortal Sect.

In the end, Combat Immortal Sect could not forcibly suppress Seven Star Child.

“Since I cannot have it, you can forget about obtaining it!” With this thought in mind, Seven Star Child detonated Starry Sky grotto-heaven and decisively stopped contesting with Combat Immortal Sect’s immortals.

Thus, the grotto-heaven’s fragments fell down early to Central Continent’s land by two to three hundred years.

Fang Yuan was left lost for words after he heard this news.

“Northern Plains has already been turned into a mess by me, with the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and the destruction of Imperial Court blessed land. Eastern Sea has also changed, Li Xiao Yao is no more. Now, Central Continent is also experiencing a drastic change, Starry Sky grotto-heaven has collapsed before its time. According to this trend, Central Continent and Eastern Sea are going to change beyond all recognition!”

Right now, the whole of Central Continent was shaken because of this event.

Countless Gu Immortals, Gu Masters, super forces and other forces of all sizes were flocking towards the grotto-heaven’s fragment worlds.

What Central Continent Refinement Path Convention? It was all thrown to the back of their minds.

Fang Yuan could not help but smile bitterly at this.

Starry Sky grotto-heaven had broken up at a very bad time, if it had collapsed two or three hundred years later, Fang Yuan could have gained considerable benefits.

Because that time was when the five regions chaotic war began and dream realms manifested externally. Champions and warriors emerged endlessly, the old super forces would be busy with their own affairs, it was most beneficial to lone cultivators like Fang Yuan.

However, at present, the five regions chaotic war was yet to start. Central Continent was dominated by Heavenly Court, and the ten great ancient sects firmly controlled the whole of Central Continent.

Fang Yuan could foresee that this initial chaos would only last for a short period of time before the ten great ancient sects took control of the whole situation. The true beneficiaries would no doubt be them and Heavenly Court behind them.

The development of the events went according to Fang Yuan’s prediction.

The change in the situation was even quicker than Fang Yuan’s estimation! Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects stabilized the situation, quickly making an internal agreement and expelling all the other forces and Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan got a deep impression of the colossal forces that were the ten great ancient sects.

“It is quite the pity regarding Starry Sky grotto-heaven, Seven Star Child, and that dream realm.” Fang Yuan sighed with regret.

Starry Sky grotto-heaven was one of his long term plans, but now with this unforeseen event, this enormous benefit was missed by him.

However, the next change in events was beyond Fang Yuan’s expectations.

A letter from He Feng Yang came to Fang Yuan through hole earth Gu.

In the letter, He Feng Yang, on behalf of Immortal Crane Sect, invited Fang Yuan to explore a fragment world of Starry Sky grotto-heaven!

“Could it be?!” Fang Yuan’s gaze brightened sharply, the thought in his mind made him stand up in excitement, and laugh loudly.

After laughing, Fang Yuan mumbled to himself: “I cannot be careless, although the likelihood of it being a trap is rather small, it is better to first investigate before replying...”

Two days later, Fang Yuan came to a mountain valley in Central Continent.

This nameless valley was extremely lacking in supplies and in no way was remarkable, but because a large fragment of Starry Sky grotto-heaven had fallen here, this valley was already surrounded by the allied forces of the ten great ancient sects, making a thousand li around it a forbidden zone.

If other Gu Immortals stepped within this range, they would be killed without mercy!

Fang Yuan also did not dare to move around recklessly. He Feng Yang personally came out to welcome him and led him inside the valley.

There were over ten Gu Immortals, from the ten great ancient sects, guarding inside the valley.

“Kid, don’t do anything stupid inside.”

“Think about long term consequences, young man.”

Seeing He Feng Yang lead Fang Yuan in, other Gu Immortals did not have nice expressions, they either threatened or advised.

“Sir is Fang Yuan?” A white clothed female immortal came out of the group of

immortals.

“You are Fairy Bai Qing.” Fang Yuan’s focused his gaze slightly, as he bowed without changing his expression.

Fairy Bai Qing nodded at Fang Yuan, speaking in a warm tone: “You are the person who my daughter often mentioned. In this contest now over the ownership of the grotto-heaven fragment, I hope you can be merciful, we will definitely repay you in the future.”

Fang Yuan had traded guts Gu with Spirit Affinity House many times, but had not seen Fairy Bai Qing once.

But now, as it concerned the safety of her daughter, Feng Jin Huang, Fairy Bai Qing had no choice but to appear personally and request Fang Yuan to give her some face.

Fang Yuan had his own plan, and accepted without any hesitation: “Collaborating with your side has been a pleasant experience, Lady Bai Qing can be at ease.”

Fairy Bai Qing nodded in satisfaction.

Many other Gu Immortals snorted coldly.

A cold gaze flashed past He Feng Yang’s eyes.

“Go in. The others have already entered, your cultivation is the highest so you are the last one.” He Feng Yang said heavily.

Fang Yuan nodded and moved forward.

The scenery inside the valley was peculiar like a mirage, what looked like bushes were waves blue like the sea. The scene did not have boundaries in common with each other, resembling a broken picture that was abruptly put together.

This was naturally not a mirage, but a grotto-heaven fragment world, the entrance was open, allowing it to be explored.

Looking at Fang Yuan moving step by step inside, He Feng Yang could not put his heart at ease and reminded again: “Don’t forget that place I told you about, you must occupy it!”

“No worries.” Fang Yuan waved his hand without turning back. Under everyone’s gazes, his body completely entered the grotto-heaven fragment.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 909: Advantage of Having Lower Cultivation Level

Fang Yuan looked over, seeing that the lake was shining in reflected light, the lake had a wide surface and was colored in many shades of blue.

Once he entered Starry Sky grotto-heaven fragment world, he had landed in this blue lake.

The lake had a huge surface area, there were several small islands near the center of the lake, growing with vegetation.

Looking even further, beyond the blue lake, there were layers of mountain ridges, they were colored in indigo, gently mixing with the sky.

Fang Yuan stood on the surface of the water like he was standing on the ground.

From the perspective of a mortal Gu Master, this ability to stand on water was very impressive. But it was already as simple as breathing to Fang Yuan now.

Before entering deep into the grotto-heaven fragment, Fang Yuan gave a final look below him.

Only to see that below him, the blue lake cracked suddenly, like a cracked mirror, the surface of this lake was completely broken.

Fang Yuan could see the outside world through this mirror, he saw that nameless valley in Central Continent, as well as the Gu Immortals’ figures, they were looking at Fang Yuan with complex gazes.

Fang Yuan sneered internally, he turned around and leaped away from the lake, flying away.

The Gu Immortals from the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent did not know that this was not the first time Fang Yuan had been inside Starry Sky grotto-heaven.

Starry Sky grotto-heaven was very unique, it had seven areas that were isolated, it was not like a normal grotto-heaven.

Evidently, Starry Sky grotto-heaven had many space path dao marks, and they were all very special as well.

There were many desolate beasts in Starry Sky grotto-heaven, there were even ancient desolate beasts, the zombie dragon guarding the eighth star hall, the walking meat tree, they left a deep impression on Fang Yuan.

“But after such intense combat, coupled with Combat Immortal Sect’s looting, and Starry Sky grotto-heaven’s shattering, there must be very few desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts left in the fragment worlds. Right now, there are two desolate beasts and one desolate plant in this grotto-heaven fragment world.”

Fang Yuan flew through the sky as he recalled the information that He Feng Yang had told him.

These two desolate beasts and one desolate plant were a desolate beast dragonfish, hidden essence turtle and nether grass respectively.

As long as one was a Gu Immortal, they knew of dragonfish, they were very commonly used as food for Immortal Gu. The overwhelming majority of mortal Gu could be fed with dragonfish meat if their specific food was of insufficient quantity, and a portion of the food for an Immortal Gu could be substituted with it. Of course, Immortal Gu were unique, their feeding requirements could be very bizarre, the effect of dragonfish was much lower. Furthermore, only desolate beast level dragonfish meat could be used for their food.

“Among desolate beasts, the one with the lowest battle strength has to be the desolate beast dragonfish. According to rumors, dragonfish is not a species that originated normally from the world, it was a species artificially created via food path.”

The hidden essence turtle was a rare wisdom path desolate beast. It had weird habits, when it matures, it would stay at one place and stop moving. As time passes, after countless years, moss would grow on its body, it would turn to stone and become a giant false hill. Because it could conceal its aura and could hide itself well, it was hard to find.

Only when it senses a huge danger would it relocate, it would not stop until it finds a resting place in which it is satisfied. After that, it would stop and hide in its shell, enduring the weather, be it wind, rain, snow or so on, once again.

If he could capture this desolate beast, it was much better than killing it.

Hidden essence turtle was a wisdom path desolate beast, it had an inborn connection to wisdom path, it was a spirit beast of wisdom path. It had the natural ability to find a safe place to live in.

Many wisdom path Gu Immortals would use the hidden essence turtle to help them when they encounter difficulties in deductions.

Fang Yuan inherited Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance, there was also a way to use a freshly killed hidden essence turtle shell to help in deductions.

Evidently, capturing this hidden essence turtle was useful for Gu Immortals. Since it did not move and had strong defenses, Combat Immortal Sect did not attack it hastily.

The nether grass was similar, it was rooted to the ground and could not move, it had little threat as long as one did not get close to it.

A stalk of nether grass was very useful to a soul path Gu Immortal. And because nether grass contained large numbers of soul path dao marks, as time passed, it would influence the surroundings, a wide range surrounding the nether grass would become a breeding ground for soul path Gu worms.

Nether grass had an immense effect to modify the environment of a blessed land or grotto-heaven.

So for the same reason, Combat Immortal Sect did not take this nether grass, keeping it until now. But they did not expect Seven Star Child to be so resolute, he would rather drag everyone down with him, causing Starry Sky grotto-heaven to shatter and fall.

This situation was already out of Combat Immortal Sect’s control, the fragment worlds of this Starry Sky grotto-heaven became the point of negotiation for the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, they decided on certain timings and entered to harvest the resources within.

He Feng Yang represented Immortal Crane Sect and before entering the grotto-heaven fragment world, he gave Fang Yuan several missions.

Three of them were regarding the dragonfish, nether grass, and hidden essence turtle.

“If you can capture all three of them alive, that would be best. According to the agreement, you can get one-third of the value of what you obtain.” He Feng Yang told Fang Yuan.

Even though Fang Yuan was a subordinate of Immortal Crane Sect on paper, this was not the case, as a person directly involved, He Feng Yang was very aware of this.

Thus, he knew that in order to get him to work hard, he could only arouse Fang Yuan’s interest through benefits.

Even though Fang Yuan was only a rank six bottom tier immortal zombie, he had a huge advantage against these three desolate beasts or plants.

Because Fang Yuan not only had his own Immortal Gu, he also had the Immortal Gu that Immortal Crane Sect had specially lent to him.

Having Immortal Gu was a completely different level of battle strength compared to not having Immortal Gu.

Even though the dragonfish, hidden essence turtle, and nether grass were very strong beings, they did not have Immortal Gu.

If they did, they would be walking treasure troves, Gu Immortals would have attacked already, be it Seven Star Child immortal zombie, or Combat Immortal Sect, how could they not strike?

Normally speaking, inside grotto-heavens and blessed lands, there were no wild Immortal Gu.

Because once a wild Immortal Gu was formed, the Gu Immortal would take them away for their own use.

After all, leaving a wild Immortal Gu behind had no benefits to the blessed land, it would instead cause the Gu Immortal’s control of the blessed land or grotto-heaven to fall. If the desolate beast rampages, that would be problematic.

Furthermore, Starry Sky grotto-heaven’s owner, Seven Star Child, had awoken long ago, as the owner, how could he not know if there were wild Immortal Gu?

Even if Seven Star Child was kept busy and had no time, Starry Sky grotto-heaven was attacked by Combat Immortal Sect, they had searched thoroughly. Unless it was a very special Immortal Gu and could conceal itself well, it would not be there up until this point.

“According to the map, the dragonfish is here in this blue lake, near the small island at the center of the lake.”

Fang Yuan flew in the sky, his gaze shined, his greatest interest among the three was in the desolate beast dragonfish.

Of course, dragonfish lived together in large numbers.

Around the desolate beast dragonfish, there were many mortal dragonfish.

These were all an enticing fortune to Fang Yuan.

“To think that I would have my second desolate beast dragonfish so quickly. Hmm, since I can take one third of the gains, I will choose the dragonfish.” Fang Yuan thought of this and felt a bit of joy internally.

Meanwhile, on a small island on the blue lake, a group of Gu Masters from Heaven’s Envy Manor were looking at the lake in front of them with much annoyance.

There were five people in this group, almost all of them had rank five cultivation, except one young Gu Master who was at rank four peak stage.

This youngster was called Wei Wu Shang, he was the head of the elite disciples that represented Heaven’s Envy Manor.

He was infatuated with Fairy Bi Xia and had once fought with Fang Zheng, but lost. Fang Zheng gave him some face and admitted it was a draw. Since he kept his reputation, he had a sense of gratitude towards Fang Zheng, feeling like he owed the latter a favor.

He was originally rank four middle stage, but in this contest for resources, Heaven’s Envy Manor took action to specially raise his cultivation level to rank four peak stage.

On one hand, they were training the next generation of disciples, they were the hopes of the future, on the other hand, they were lacking in manpower.

Just now, to explore all the fragments of Starry Sky grotto-heaven, the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent had engaged in fierce competition.

Seven Star Child was very ruthless, he self-detonated Starry Sky grotto-heaven, but he controlled the explosion very well. Almost no Gu Immortals could enter the fragment worlds, only their disciples could enter and explore it.

As has been mentioned before, these grotto-heaven fragment worlds had sparse dao marks, they were torn and broken, like houses that were going to collapse, they could only exist for a period of time.

Meanwhile, Gu Immortals had dao marks, they were like giants. Forcefully entering the fragment worlds was like giants entering a small house, the only result would be the house breaking and all the resources inside being destroyed.

In his past life, Fang Yuan became a blood path Gu Immortal and created the Blood Wing Demon Sect. When Starry Sky grotto-heaven was destroyed, he also directed mortal Gu Masters in the demonic sect to enter the fragment worlds in place of him and search for resources.

But now, why could Fang Yuan enter it?

Speaking of this, he somewhat did not know whether to laugh or cry at the reason.

It was because Fang Yuan had bottom tier cultivation level among Gu Immortals, he had few strength path dao marks in his body, and because of vaguely familiar face, he continued to lose strength path dao marks.

One of the core Immortal Gu of vaguely familiar face was eat strength Immortal Gu. Changing the Gu Immortal’s regional aura involved using eat strength in reverse, to expend strength path dao marks.

Even though he had the giant horned sheep and other strength path desolate beasts to increase his number of strength path dao marks, he had been disguising himself a lot recently, after summing up his gains and losses, there was a limit to how many strength path dao marks he could gain.

Thus, Fang Yuan could enter while other Gu Immortals could not.

He had just reached the upper limits of what the fragment world could stand, there were very few people who could be so pitiful in their cultivation level after becoming a Gu Immortal.

Most importantly, because of his identity, Immortal Crane Sect could make use of him.

This was a competition among the ten great ancient sects, if Fang Yuan was not a subsidiary force of Immortal Crane Sect, he would be an outsider Gu Immortal, he would not be allowed to enter by the other sects.

This was the righteous path.

They paid close attention to rules.

They were not like the demonic path, who looked at who had the bigger fist, by competing with force against force, or seeing who was more ruthless and despicable.

The first rule of the demonic path was the absence of rules.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 910: Grabbing the Dragonfish

“Damn this Ancient Soul Sect, they actually caused a commotion with the desolate beast dragonfish to obstruct us!”

At this moment, on the small island at the center of the lake, the group from Heaven’s Envy Manor’s was trapped, they could not advance.

In front of them, waves were rumbling, tides were rising, the water was grand and treacherous.

The five Gu Masters from Heaven’s Envy Manor frowned tightly, looking at the lake, they felt anger and helplessness.

Through the lake water, they could see vaguely that there was a huge monster swimming around in the depths of the lake.

Each time the tail moved, currents would be created as huge tides surfaced.

In fact, sometimes, its tough fish head would ram into the bottom of the small island.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Each time the dragonfish attacked, there would be a loud sound, followed by tremors below everyone’s feet.

The people from Heaven’s Envy Manor were trapped on this small island, looking at the waves in front of them, their faces were pale, they were helpless, there was nothing they could do.

Desolate beast dragonfish were usually peaceful and rarely went into a frenzy.

But earlier, the Gu Masters from Ancient Soul Sect had used some method to make this desolate beast dragonfish go into madness, it was in a berserk and rampaging state, it had lost its mind and natural disposition.

The Gu Masters from Heaven’s Envy Manor had the ability to climb mountains and move across bodies of water, but they were only mortals with limited primeval essence. Under the current situation, they could not move at all, it was too dangerous.

“Ancient Soul Sect could actually influence the desolate beast dragonfish, they must have used an immortal technique from the sect! We of Heaven’s Envy Manor are also from one of the ten great ancient sects, we cannot lose to Ancient Soul Sect. Elder Zhu Ning, let’s use our immortal method as well!”

While they were helpless, a Gu Master from Heaven’s Envy Manor couldn’t help but suggest this.

Hearing that there was an immortal method, the other Gu Masters showed inspired expressions, light shining in their eyes.

Elder Zhu Ning, who had the method frowned, he sighed bitterly: “If I could use it, I would have done so already, why would I wait until now?”

He told everyone his difficulties.

As it turned out, before this trip, Zhu Ning was called by a supreme elder and was entrusted with an Immortal Gu and some immortal essence.

But this Immortal Gu was used for defense, it would not help in this situation to get rid of the dragonfish.

“The sect gave you an Immortal Gu?”

“What does the Immortal Gu look like, I have never seen one before!”

“Quick, let us see it and broaden our visions.”

Zhu Ning’s frank admission made everyone intensely curious. At once, they forget about the problem in front of them, they wanted to see the brilliance of the Immortal Gu.

Zhu Ning smiled bitterly again: “I will speak honestly, I only took a hurried glance at this Immortal Gu before lord supreme elder placed it in my body. Right now, I don’t even know where the Immortal Gu is in my body, not to mention attempting to retrieve it.”

Everyone was very disappointed, they sighed in unison.

Only Wei Wu Shang’s eyes shined brightly, he said in admiration: “It would be great if I could obtain an Immortal Gu that belongs to me one day!”

The other four old Gu Masters looked at Wei Wu Shang and either smiled bitterly or shook their heads.

Wei Wu Shang was too young.

Young people liked to dream, this was natural.

But only after many experiences would they understand that dreams and reality were different, like these four old Gu Masters.

Who would not want to have their own Immortal Gu, who would not want to become a high and mighty immortal?

But immortal and mortal were worlds apart. Reality was cruel, countless people lost their youthfulness, countless people’s dreams were broken.

How many people could really become immortals?

The leader, Zhu Ning, sighed: “For now, we have no better way, we can only wait. When the dragonfish calms down, we will set off.”

“But this way, the other nine sects will get all the good stuff. We will only have leftovers!” A Gu Master asked worriedly.

“What else can we do?” Zhu Ning sighed, but he did not forget to raise the morale: “This is not entirely a bad thing. Let them go and compete first, we can take the chance for now to gather our strength. Even though Immortal Gu are incredibly powerful, they need corresponding immortal essence to activate. Their immortal essence will be limited, let them exhaust their resources in competing with each other, during the later stages, we will have more strength than them.”

Once he said that, everyone’s expressions changed, their dejected moods recovered slightly.

“However, I have something very important to remind you of.” Zhu Ning’s had a serious expression: “No matter how much strength we preserve, there are two people we cannot offend. One is Spirit Affinity House’s Feng Jin Huang, the other is Immortal Crane Sect’s Fang Yuan.”

“Why? Feng Jin Huang and Fang Yuan are two geniuses of my generation, but each of them are only single individuals. Right now, us ten sects all have five members each, we all have mysterious immortal methods, why should we be afraid of those two?” Wei Wu Shang was unclear of the truth, he asked somewhat skeptically.

“That is because you do not know the hidden details.” Zhu Ning’s gaze was heavy, he looked at the surrounding Gu Masters and said: “I learned about this shocking news from the sect before we came. Feng Jin Huang has a noble upbringing, her parents are both Gu Immortals, moreover, they are immensely powerful beings even among Gu Immortals. What shocking immortal methods do you think that such a person would have?”

“So that’s it!” Wei Wu Shang was startled.

The others also showed shocked expressions.

Zhu Ning continued: “But compared to Feng Jin Huang, that Fang Yuan is even scarier!”

“Don’t tell me his background is even greater than that of Feng Jin Huang?” Someone asked in suspicion.

Zhu Ning frowned: “I am also not sure of the specific details, but the sect had specially told this to me, that Fang Yuan is far scarier than Feng Jin Huang, we should avoid him at all costs, we should not contest with him.”

“Even though Fang Yuan is the number one genius of my generation, he’s not that scary, right?” Wei Wu Shang was suspicious.

“Don’t tell me the immortal method that Immortal Crane Sect gave to him is the strongest among the ten sects?” The other Gu Masters tried to analyze.

Zhu Ning shook his head: “I only know that Immortal Crane Sect sent Fang Yuan here alone, think about it, what does this mean?”

“It seems that Immortal Crane Sect is very confident in Fang Yuan, they believe that with his strength alone, he can deal with all of us!”

“Arrogant! They are looking down on us...”

“Immortal Crane Sect are not fools, the sect also told us to avoid Fang Yuan, there seems to be reasons behind this. We should act according to the sect’s warnings.”

“That is not necessarily the case, as the saying goes, two fists cannot rival four palms, even if Fang Yuan is the strongest, he would inevitably cause the other sects to collaborate in resistance. The result is still unknown.”

The Gu Masters discussed.

They talked one after another.

Some were stable and conservative, some were indignant, some wanted to collaborate with other sects.

Right at this moment, a shrill sound came from the sky.

Everyone frowned, Wei Wu Shang even covered his ears.

The five Gu Masters looked over and saw that in the sky, there was a figure tearing across space.

This person was extremely fast, sonic booms could be heard as they traveled.

In just a breath’s time, he flew over from a distance away.

When he was above the small island, he stopped. He went from quick movement to extreme stillness, the five Gu Masters from Heaven’s Envy Manor felt this was very abrupt and sudden.

“Who is it? He can fly at such a high altitude!”

“So fast, is this a human or a monster?”

“Looking at the person, it seems to be... Fang Yuan?”

Everyone was shocked and subconsciously had their mouths open.

The gusts of wind blew and entered their mouths, even forcing them to shut their eyes.

This wind was created when Fang Yuan flew over, it was very strong.

Fang Yuan stood in the air as he looked around.

Huge waves, a small island, dragonfish, Gu Masters, he understood everything that was happening in an instant.

He placed his attention on the dragonfish.

There were five Gu Masters on the small island, they were not worth his attention at all.

The wind was only a gust, it came and left swiftly.

The five Gu Masters quickly opened their eyes, looking at Fang Yuan who was in the air, they were very nervous.

“It seems that this dragonfish is rampaging due to the effects of a certain soul path or wisdom path technique.” Fang Yuan guessed as he stretched out his hand and made a grabbing motion in front of him.

Boom!

Under everyone’s shocked gazes, a strength path giant hand flew out and entered the water grandly.

But the thing was, when the strength path giant hand entered the water, there were no waves that were created.

Instead, the water split apart when the giant hand descended, it was as if the water in the lake was cooperating with Fang Yuan.

This was the strength path Immortal Gu Pulling Water, it had taken effect after being fused into strength path giant hand.

The water in the lake did not obstruct Fang Yuan in capturing the dragonfish, it became an aid instead.

With the dragonfish rampaging and losing its senses, it did not try to escape, it made Fang Yuan’s attempting at capturing it easier.

Roar!

The dragonfish opened its mouth, emitting a dragon’s roar.

On the two sides of the fish’s mouth, there were two long dragon whiskers, they were lashing around like whips.

The entire fish body struggled intensely, but the strength path giant hand was stable like Mount Tai, it did not budge at all, like an iron structure.

Under Fang Yuan’s control, the strength path giant hand grabbed and captured the dragonfish, pulling it out of the water.

The five Gu Masters from Heaven’s Envy Manor were all dumbfounded, they were shocked and in despair at seeing the process of Fang Yuan capturing the dragonfish and putting it into his own immortal aperture.

After capturing this desolate beast dragonfish, Fang Yuan was not satisfied, he turned towards the ordinary dragonfish.

Dragonfish lived in groups, there were dragonfish all over this lake.

This time, Fang Yuan activated pulling water Immortal Gu, lumps of water was pulled up, countless dragonfish that were inside the water were thrown into his immortal aperture.

The group from Heaven’s Envy Manor were staring, still as statues.

They would surely never forget this scene in their lives.

Only until Fang Yuan finished his collection and flew away did these Gu Masters jolt to awareness.

They were all covered in sweat, Wei Wu Shang was sprawled on the ground, sitting with his body limp and in shock.

They had finally understood what their sect meant, and the helplessness they were feeling.

“Dealing with such a person is beyond our abilities.”

“Oh heavens, I was trying to collaborate with others to deal with Fang Yuan earlier?!”

“Such overwhelming might, did he become an immortal already?!”

Everyone was scared to pieces.

The dragonfish was gone, they could continue on their journey now.

But the scene earlier was simply too shocking for them, even though they did not move at all and were only looking, the Gu Masters from Heaven’s Envy Manor were breathing roughly, they felt extremely fatigued in both body and mind.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 911: Contest of Dream Realm

“About six hundred thousand ordinary dragonfish, and a desolate beast dragonfish.”

Fang Yuan flew rapidly while calculating the profits in his immortal aperture.

The first move he made after coming in this Starry Sky grotto-heaven fragment world gave him a huge harvest.

The only blemish was a lot of ordinary dragonfish had died. Because of the desolate beast dragonfish’s rampage, many ordinary dragonfish that normally surrounded the desolate beast dragonfish died miserably.

Otherwise, Fang Yuan’s gains would be even greater.

Regardless, Fang Yuan was satisfied.

Back then at Dong Fang tribe’s headquarters, he only gained around nine hundred thousand ordinary dragonfish and a desolate beast dragonfish. His current gains already were over half of this. If these were to be added to Hu Immortal blessed land’s dragon scale lake, its size would not be enough to contain these dragonfish.

“When the truth of the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building comes to light, I must abandon Hu Immortal blessed land, so there is no need to expand the dragon scale lake. It seems when I return after this, I must remodel Star Form blessed land to raise these dragonfish.”

Fang Yuan was looking around his surroundings as he pondered.

He had unlimited primeval essence and also had countless investigative mortal killer moves, there was even a recently obtained investigative immortal killer move — Star Premonition.

Thus, he was not worried that he would miss any good things on his way.

However, Fang Yuan did not find many opportunities to take action.

When Starry Sky grotto-heaven was intact, it was already looted repeatedly by Combat Immortal Sect. Now, among the remaining resources, those that could interest Fang Yuan were already very few. Moreover, he had to hand over two-thirds of all the gains he made in this trip to Immortal Crane Sect, while he himself could only obtain one-third. This greatly impacted Fang Yuan’s enthusiasm.

“The ten ancient sects sent the disciples to compete for various resources inside within a limited time – seven days and seven nights. After this time passes, the resources occupied inside will be divided up, next would be time for the ten ancient sects to plunder and develop the resources by themselves. This has nothing to do with me. So now, I only need to get the desolate beast dragonfish, hidden essence turtle and that nether grass. Most of my energy and time should be used to search for that dream realm in the central region!”

When he thought of the dream realm, Fang Yuan’s gaze shined and a fire burned inside him.

Before leaving, He Feng Yang had reminded Fang Yuan to occupy the central region as early as possible.

In the center of this fragment world was an external manifestation of a dream realm.

As it involved the prophecy of Great Dream Immortal Venerable, the ten great ancient sects had already begun researching. Moreover, Feng Jin Huang possessed dream wings Immortal Gu, which allowed Spirit Affinity House to firmly occupy the leading position.

More importantly, this dream realm had a huge origin.

It was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm!

Immortal Crane Sect’s research of dream realms might be completely behind Spirit Affinity House, but as long as they were able to seize this dream realm, they could contain Spirit Affinity House’s momentum, and could rely on this dream realm to make terms and exchange benefits with Spirit Affinity House.

In the entire fragment world, the most precious resource was not desolate beasts or desolate plants, instead it was this small external manifestation of a dream realm!

Thus, before they parted, He Feng Yang specially reminded Fang Yuan of this matter.

But how could he know the excitement inside Fang Yuan?

Fang Yuan might not be like Feng Jin Huang with dream path Immortal Gu, but he had a wisdom path Immortal Gu, Unravel Mystery, and the dream path killer move formed with it as the basis — Unravel Dream!

He Feng Yang inviting Fang Yuan to represent Immortal Crane Sect was simply like opening the door to a thief or bringing a weasel to a chicken coop.

“Immortal Crane Sect does not have enough strength, they had decided to send me now, but this was met with strong resistance from the other nine sects. In the end, although Immortal Crane Sect got what they wished, my entry time was far later than the other nine sects. I must hurry and occupy the central region, after all, undue delay may bring trouble.”

Capturing the dragonfish was only done casually on his way, the most important matter was still the external manifestation of the dream realm in the central region.

However, when Fang Yuan reached his destination, someone was already there.

“Fang Yuan, I have been waiting for quite a while.” Feng Jin Huang led four other Gu Masters of Spirit Affinity House to protect the magnificent dream realm behind them.

She looked at this trip’s strongest competitor. Her skin was snow white, her appearance as pretty as a painting, her smile was beautiful and she looked extremely confident.

Fang Yuan was not anxious, as he replied with a smile as well: “According to the rules set by the ten great sects, for your Spirit Affinity House to completely occupy this area, you need to face the challenges from other sects. Only after winning two out of three challenges can you strip away the opponent’s right to occupy this area.”

The ten great ancient sects were famous righteous sects of Central Continent, but they also had the same origin — Heavenly Court.

Thus, although they were competing, it was not a cruel slaughter like that of the demonic path, and was much gentler.

Feng Jin Huang shook her head: “Although I have Immortal Gu and immortal essence that mother placed on me, I cannot defeat you. I waited for you to do a transaction.”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan’s brows raised as he said, coldly, “You want to do a transaction with me again? Last time, you scammed me quite heavily at the Refinement Path Convention. The method you gave me for getting rid of the immortal zombie status was actually an ascension of the ten extreme physiques! You still want to do another transaction?”

Feng Jin Huang quickly replied: “This transaction will be mutually beneficial, Fang Yuan, you have also taken quite a lot of benefits from my Spirit Affinity House. You can rest assured that I won’t let you suffer losses in this transaction.”

“Alright, then speak.” Fang Yuan nodded.

Feng Jin Huang immediately gave a suggestion of what to trade, it was actually another method to get rid of the immortal zombie status!

She had completely seen through Fang Yuan’s weak point, and did not let go of it.

After confirming that Feng Jin Huang’s method was not what he already had, Fang Yuan agreed to this transaction.

Like Feng Jin Huang said, this transaction was mutually beneficial, having benefits to both sides. And if there were benefits, Fang Yuan would naturally take it.

Shortly afterwards, Fang Yuan obtained a completely new method of getting rid of the immortal zombie state and reviving.

This was a transformation path method.

According to Feng Jin Huang’s words, Fang Yuan would have to cultivate transformation path and use a transformation path killer move to transform himself into a normal Gu Immortal. Then, he could use everlasting Immortal Gu to make this transformation fixed and unchangeable.

Like this, he could get rid of the immortal zombie status.

This was indeed a practical thought.

Because a lot of Gu Masters or Gu Immortals in their cultivation journeys would face an awkward and tragic situation of not being able to go back to their original shape after transforming too many times.

And this method was the exact opposite, it thoroughly finalized the transformation.

As for this dream realm, it would be occupied by Fang Yuan.

But Feng Jin Huang had three days to explore this external manifestation of a dream realm. Three days later, she had to leave this area.

“This is a dream realm’s external manifestation?” Fang Yuan mumbled as he looked ahead of him, as if this was the first time he had seen it, his expression was serious, curious and his gaze revealing some greed and fervent passion.

Every external manifestation of dream realm had a wonderfully beautiful appearance.

This dream realm that was displayed in front of them was like a condensed star cloud, with dark purple light shining in the periphery and countless stars inside.

The whole dream realm gave off a profound, mysterious aura, and also gave indications of danger.

Feng Jin Huang looked on at Fang Yuan’s eager expression, coldly snorting inwardly with satisfaction.

She had seen this kind of expression many times.

“Dream realms are good, but it is a pity you don’t have dream wings Immortal Gu. This enormous benefit is placed right beside your mouth, but you can’t eat it. Maybe in your whole life, you won’t understand that feeling of exploring a dream realm. Ah, there is also the huge advancement after a smooth exploration.”

Feng Jin Huang did not remind Fang Yuan, if Fang Yuan died in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm, it would be much more beneficial for her.

However, she knew that it was not likely to happen.

Since Immortal Crane Sect sent Fang Yuan, they would have reminded him of the dangers of the dream realm.

Sure enough, Feng Jin Huang waited for a while but only saw Fang Yuan standing on the spot without moving forward, although he had a longing look on his face, he did not take a step beyond the limit.

Feng Jin Huang snorted inwardly before turning towards the other four Gu Masters: “Three days is a limited span of time, I need to explore this dream realm immediately. All of you, protect my physical body, don’t make any mistakes.”

The Gu Masters quickly replied: “We will use up all our strength and even if we die, we will protect you to the end!”

“Lady Feng Jin Huang, you can enter at ease, if the situation is urgent, we will immediately awaken you.”

Feng Jin Huang nodded, and stepped towards the dream realm.

When she was still twenty or so steps away from the dream realm, she had reached her limit. With her current ability, she still could not completely throw herself into the dream realm.

She gave a last look at the distant Fang Yuan, before slowly sitting down cross-legged on the ground, she closed her eyes and activated dream wings Immortal Gu, falling into a deep sleep.

As far as Feng Jin Huang was concerned, the greatest threat to her was the immortal zombie Fang Yuan.

Were Fang Yuan to act against her, those rank five Gu Masters of Spirit Affinity House would simply be incapable of resisting him.

Thus, Feng Jin Huang did not completely rely on these four Gu Masters, what she placed confidence in was the Immortal Gu and abundant immortal essence her mother, Fairy Bai Qing, had placed with her.

“Dream wings Immortal Gu....” Fang Yuan looked at Feng Jin Huang with envy.

Dream wings Immortal Gu could let the user fall into a deep sleep at any time, and attach dream wings to their soul, letting them roam freely in dream realms, allowing them to advance or retreat freely, guaranteeing their safety.

Compared to dream travel Immortal Gu, dream wings Immortal Gu had an advantage, it did not require immortal essence to be activated, thus it was the most suitable for cultivators like Feng Jin Huang who had yet to become Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan already had thoughts of taking action.

But killing Feng Jin Huang and seizing dream wings Immortal Gu was not a practical idea.

Seizing Immortal Gu by itself was an extremely difficult matter. And killing Feng Jin Huang was also not easy, even an idiot would know Feng Jin Huang certainly had large numbers of life protection methods on her.

Most importantly, the current situation had yet to turn to a critical state, there was still space to scheme. Fang Yuan was not a retard, he would not make such a huge mistake.

“This Feng Jin Huang is maturing rapidly. First was the transaction, she handed over all the control of this dream realm to me of her own accord, turning me into a shield, to block other competitors in her place, while she uses dream wings Immortal Gu to wantonly explore the dream realm and plunder benefits. Next, when she saw me have a desire to explore, she did not give me any reminders, waiting to see me make a fool of myself. However, regardless of how talented you are, you would not think that I possess the killer move unravel dream.”

Fang Yuan sneered as he let out the desolate beast shark fin wolf from his immortal aperture.

This desolate beast wolf had been violently subdued by him through flicking its penis.

For this exploration of the fragment world, Fang Yuan had already taken it out from Hu Immortal blessed land and brought it with him.

The moment they saw the desolate beast, Spirit Affinity House’s four Gu Masters were tongue-tied with shock, they were even about to awaken Feng Jin Huang.

It was Fang Yuan who reminded them: “No need to be anxious, this desolate beast will look after this place. Three days later, if all of you have not left, it will eat you alive.”

With this warning, Fang Yuan flew to the sky, quickly leaving the vision of the Gu Masters of Spirit Affinity House.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 912: Beastman

Fang Yuan landed after flying far away.

He took out a large batch of rockmen from his immortal aperture.

Be it in Hu Immortal blessed land or Star Form blessed land, he raised batches of rockmen.

Fang Yuan took half of them and brought them along, right now, he let them out to be used as helpers.

“We greet lord immortal.” The rockmen saw Fang Yuan and paid respects.

Fang Yuan responded with a grunt, his expression was cold and he appeared high and mighty, above the masses.

He gave these rockmen instructions to collect resources before leaving, concealing his figure and returning to the dream realm.

These rockmen were elites, there were many Gu worms on their bodies.

These were all specially arranged by Fang Yuan.

These rockmen were all armed by Fang Yuan, their battle strength were greatly raised, because they moved in groups of ten, even if they encountered groups from other sects, Fang Yuan was not worried that the rockmen would lose.

Or rather, even if the rockmen lost, Fang Yuan would not feel loss.

This was only a facade.

The manifested dream realm was like a small hill’s size.

Fang Yuan concealed his figure and carefully went to the back, entering the dream realm.

Last time, Fang Yuan was inside the eighth star hall of Starry Sky grotto-heaven, he was at the border of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm and almost died. After detonating his bat wings, he managed to struggle his way out.

This time, he went in purposely, because he had the killer move unravel dream, his power was much higher, times were different now.

His vision changed.

Fang Yuan entered Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm!

It was night.

Fire was burning, rising to the sky.

Countless brawny beastmen were surrounding a huge fire, dancing around it.

Growl growl growl...

Roar roar roar...

Among these beastmen, some had faces of tigers and human bodies, they opened their mouths and growled angrily. Some had eagle beaks, they shrieked loudly. Some had a leopard’s tail growing from their backs, they danced around and moved alongside the lingering shadows.

“This is... the beastman race that got wiped out from existence during the Olden Antiquity Era?” Fang Yuan came back to awareness, he understood the origins of these beastmen.

Beastmen were a type of variant human.

During the Remote Antiquity Era, as well as the Immemorial Antiquity Era, they were one of the strongest variant human races in the world.

Beastmen had incredible battle strength, they worshipped fierce beasts, and adopted their ferocity and ruthlessness.

Especially when they could attract wild transformation path Gu worms to live in them, allowing them to transform into a half-man half-beast state, they would gain a part of the fierce beasts’ abilities and strength.

As time passed, humans began to rise up. During the Remote Antiquity Era, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable appeared, leading humans to resist the rule of variant humans, establishing the authority of humans. By the Olden Antiquity Era, three human Demon Venerables appeared, creating wars and exterminating the beastmen race, stabilizing the status of humans as the rulers.

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was a rank nine Gu Immortal from the Remote Antiquity Era, at that time, humans were fighting with various variant humans, and were fighting to control the world. This is indeed Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm!”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan was slightly excited.

He looked around, and found that he was a human boy in this dream.

He was tied up by a rope, the other end of the rope was tightly tied to a tree trunk.

There were over a dozen humans who were tied up like Fang Yuan, they were all young children.

“Oh no! Beastmen are bloodthirsty by nature, they were also known as the man-eating race. History states that the favorite food of beastmen are the flesh and blood of human children. Beastmen tribes all treat surrounding humans as food, they would go out to hunt occasionally. When they succeed in their hunts, they would hold a huge celebration by a bonfire.”

Fang Yuan sensed the dangerous situation, he struggled intensely, but the rope was getting tighter.

His body had bloodstains because of the friction with the ropes, intense pain was assaulting his body.

“It is no use, the more you struggle, the more painful it gets.”

“We are doomed, we are dead meat!”

“Wuwuwu... I don’t want to be eaten.”

The surrounding human children saw that Fang Yuan was struggling, some advised him indifferently, while others cried in despair.

Just as the bonfire celebration reached its climax, the beastman leader shouted: “Come, bring up our most delectable food!”

Growl growl growl!

The beastmen raised their heads, shouting.

An elephantman who was six meters tall stood up from his sitting position.

He stretched out his long and powerful trunk as he pulled up the entire tree that held the ropes that tied the children.

The tree trunk was raised high in the air.

The children who were tied up resembled tiny pearls as they screamed in fear, hanging in the air.

The beastmen shouted again, the elephantman who had shown off his might laughed loudly, his trunk loosened and the tree trunk was slammed onto the ground.

The children could not free themselves, they fell as well. Some unlucky children were crushed to death by the tree.

An intense smell of blood spread out.

Some beastmen could not control their bloodthirsty desire, they jumped in and grabbed the children’s corpses, putting them into their mouths.

“Delicious!”

“Human children taste tender and delicious, hahaha.”

As they spoke, the beastmen showed a sense of wildness and ruthlessness.

The blazing bonfire crackled, the surrounding beastmen stared excitedly with red, wide open eyes, towards these lucky children who survived.

Some were growling, some had uneven fangs, some stretched out their bright red tongues, they licked their lips as they drooled, the amber light of the fire was reflecting in their eyes.

The children screamed out in fright, some had fainted on the spot.

But Fang Yuan found that one girl was expressionless. Even though her body was shivering, and her expression was pale as paper, she bit her lips, she did not make a sound.

“Is it possible that she...” Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, he had a flash of inspiration.

Before this inspiration was processed, the beastman leader walked towards Fang Yuan and the others with an intensely ferocious aura, he looked down arrogantly at these weak children.

As the light flickered, lots of children watched with fearful gazes, the beastman leader had a black face and sharp fangs, he spoke slowly: “According to the traditions of our tribe, those that can untie the wind knot grass are people blessed by heaven, they can be spared from death. Those who fail to untie it, hehehe, they can be honored to become the food of us noble beastmen!”

The moment he said that, the beastman leader waved his tail.

From the flickering light, a bright flash occurred.

The ropes were cut, the human children obtained temporary freedom in movement.

Wind knot grass?

Seeing the pile of dried grass that the beastmen brought over, Fang Yuan was curious.

The wind knot grass was like a lantern, a round ball-shaped grass lantern, it was very rare to see in modern times.

There was no wind knot grass in the five regions, this was a type of grass only found in green heaven of the immemorial nine heavens.

Ren Zu’s ten children destroyed the immemorial nine heavens, causing fragments of immemorial green heaven to fall into the five regions.

During Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s era, many fragment worlds of the immemorial nine heavens fell into different areas of the five regions.

The beastmen worshipped the heavenly deities, their tribal belief was that whoever could untie the wind knot grass was blessed by the heavens, they were precious beings that could not be harmed.

“That means, as long as I can untie the wind knot grass, I can be spared from death?” Fang Yuan’s thoughts moved rapidly.

He had turned into a child after entering this dream realm, he was not even thirteen years old yet, his aperture was not awakened yet, he had no power. To free himself from this predicament, he could only follow the beastman rules and untie wind knot grass alone.

Even though he knew it was a dream realm, it was not favorable to die inside the dream.

This meant he would be consumed by the dream realm.

Each time he got consumed, even though he would not die, his soul would suffer a huge injury.

If his soul got injured too often, it would get weak, when he reached his limits, his soul would break down and dissipate, even if his body was still around, he would die.

This was the danger of exploring dream realms!

Soon, each child received their wind knot grass.

Knowing that this was their only chance at survival, the children opened their eyes wide and used every second they had to try and untie the wind knot grass.

The surrounding beastmen were laughing coldly or grinding their teeth, some were licking their lips or polishing their claws, they surrounded Fang Yuan's group and watched sinisterly.

The human children were in the center, surrounded by countless savage beastmen.

Using the light of the bonfire, the children gathered their concentration and placed their efforts on the grass lanterns.

Fang Yuan observed carefully.

This type of grass lantern was made from all sorts of roots, leaves, and stems, they were intertwined together and formed into a mysterious ball.

“Only in immemorial green heaven would there be winds blowing all year around, at strange directions and angles. Countless plants would be uprooted or shaved until they were bare, these twigs would intertwine in the wind and slowly form into this ball shaped grass lantern.”

Because time was limited, the surrounding children were trying to untie their wind knot grass.

Only Fang Yuan did not start immediately, this was the first time he was seeing the wind knot grass, he was assessing it.

His unique demeanor attracted the attention of the beastmen, he even attracted the attention of Feng Jin Huang as well.

Feng Jin Huang was also inside the dream realm, similar to Fang Yuan, she was also a child.

Fang Yuan looked very calm and radiated with confidence, his body was covered in dirt and dust, his gender could not be discerned, Feng Jin Huang had a misunderstanding: “What's going on with this child? Is she Star Constellation Immortal Venerable?”

Roar!

Right at this moment, a tiger headed beastman roared loudly with excitement.

He grabbed a human boy rapidly and threw him into his mouth.

Crack, crack...

He opened his mouth and chewed, eating half of the boy in an instant.

“What are you looking at! He ruined a wind knot grass, he had already failed. It is only natural for me to eat him!” Looking at the surrounding unfriendly gazes, the tiger headed beastman growled, there was the blood and flesh of the boy stuck in the middle of his teeth.

With this stimulation, the surrounding beastmen were stirred up, their eyes shined with ruthlessness as they looked at the remaining children.

“Daddy, daddy, where are you? Quickly come and save me!” A girl broke down, she held the wind knot grass as she cried loudly.

“Damn it, why is my wind knot grass so hard to untie?”

“No, I must succeed. I can do it! I have played with this wind knot grass a lot in the past.”

The surrounding beastmen did not want the children to succeed, they got closer and closer.

They had ill intentions, they purposely growled and threatened, or breathed roughly to interrupt the children.

“Scoundrel, get away from me, you stink!” Feng Jin Huang flew into a rage, she shouted at a crocodile tail beastman.

The crocodile tailed beastman growled angrily, it stared at Feng Jin Huang with its bloodshot eyes, it did not expect this food to be so arrogant.

Feng Jin Huang had no fear: “What are you growling for, so annoying, you bastard!”

Bam.

The crocodile tailed beastman erupted, its tail which was tough as iron swept and directly destroyed Feng Jin Huang’s skull!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 913: Dream Wings, Unravel Dream

Once Feng Jin Huang died, her soul flew into the night sky, giggling tenderly.

On the back of her soul, a pair of rainbow colored feather wings unfolded.

It was the manifestation of dream wings Immortal Gu!

“I have dream wings Immortal Gu, I can freely enter and exit the dream realm. Even if I failed this time, I can just wait for the next attempt at the dream realm, and try again.” Feng Jin Huang snorted smugly internally.

She had tried earlier, the wind knot grass in her hands had already been ruined by her, the knot was even worse than at the beginning.

But when Feng Jin Huang was about to escape by flapping her wings, an eagle bodied beastman pounced down from the sky.

Feng Jin Huang shrieked in fear, she wanted to dodge.

But the wings that could flap rapidly ordinarily were extremely slow when they tried to move in this dream realm.

Feng Jin Huang had underestimated Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm, it was much more hard to deal with, her soul was crushed by the eagle bodied beastman before she could escape!

With just one hit, Feng Jin Huang’s soul was heavily injured.

At the next moment, Feng Jin Huang left the dream realm, her soul returned to her body.

Puff!

She opened her eyes and spat out a mouthful of blood.

The Gu Masters from Spirit Affinity House were shocked, they quickly came over to assist her.

“What a formidable dream realm! If I were to take another hit like that one earlier, I would definitely die inside the dream for real.” Feng Jin Huang’s eyes were flashing with lingering fear, cold sweat was pouring down her back.

“I was careless! Even though I have dream wings Immortal Gu, against the dream realm of an Immortal Venerable, I am not safe at all. Thankfully, I had prepared a large number of guts Gu and brought it with me. With guts Gu, my soul will recover rapidly. In half a day, I will heal completely.” Feng Jin Huang wiped the cold sweat off her forehead as she stopped wasting time, she quickly started healing herself.

In the dream realm, Fang Yuan directed his gaze towards the wind knot grass again.

Feng Jin Huang’s earlier performance gave Fang Yuan quite a bit of information.

“This dream realm is not large in scale, this current scene is only the outer layer of the dream realm, this is an Immortal Venerable’s dream after all, even with the rank six dream wings Immortal Gu, she could not escape immediately. Now it seems, the crux of this dream realm is the wind knot grass in my hands.”

Fang Yuan had a realization.

After he finished his observations, he started to untie the wind knot grass.

He first tried to untie it from the outermost layer.

He felt like he was facing a complex and tangled ball of string. He needed to find the outer tip of the string and pull it out slowly strand by strand.

At the third layer, Fang Yuan could not continue further.

It was a complete mess in front of him, the stalks were intertwined together, he could not untie it manually.

“To untie the wind knot grass without using brute strength, not only would I need confidence and good perception, I need to deduce it with my brain, I also need patience and ample time most importantly, along with some luck.”

Fang Yuan sighed to himself inwardly.

He had opened a path in this wind knot grass, but this path was stuck at the third layer.

There was a way out for him now, that was to retreat by two layers and try to untie this from another end.

Other people could only do this as well.

But there was an exception.

Fang Yuan looked around and noticed that the girl he suspected was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had already untied the seventh layer.

The wind knot grass had shrunken in half in her hands.

“Without using any wisdom path Gu worms, using purely her brain power, she reached this stage?” Fang Yuan was shocked.

Even though he had been late at starting to unite the wind knot grass, the difference between them was still too great.

Fang Yuan squinted, he concealed the brilliance shining in his eyes.

In terms of untying ability, Fang Yuan was only at the middle to upper tier among the children.

In terms of progress, he was at the middle to lower tier.

More than half the time had passed already.

Looking at the speed of the children, the only one with any hopes of escaping was the girl who he thought was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

But Fang Yuan had ample confidence, he believed that not only could he succeed, he would even surpass everyone and become the first.

What gave him confidence was none other than the dream path immortal killer move — Unravel Dream!

Unravel dream activated.

The intertwined strands in front of him slowly melted, they untied themselves.

The surrounding beastmen were watching this, especially a snake beastman behind Fang Yuan, it was observing the entire process.

But they did not say anything, or take any action.

This was the mystical power of unravel dream.

It was not an offensive killer move purely, its effect varied according to the dream he was in.

For example, if Fang Yuan was fighting inside a dream realm, unravel dream would be his strongest attacking method. If the dream realm was weak, he could directly disintegrate his enemies.

Right now, the dream realm’s rules were for Fang Yuan to untie the wind knot grass. Then, unravel dream’s current effect was to help Fang Yuan and untie the wind knot grass.

This untying was according to the set rules, it was not unraveled through brute force.

In the eyes of the surrounding children and the observing beastmen, Fang Yuan was not cheating at all, he was using his brain and successfully untying the third layer of the wind knot grass.

Thus, they did not do anything, even the snake person that wanted to eat Fang Yuan only watched with a slightly surprised expression, it felt that it was somewhat unexpected that Fang Yuan could untie three layers.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Fang Yuan continued his momentum and did not stop. The wind knot grass in his hands was quickly untied, he reached the center.

At the core of the wind knot grass, there was a seed.

This was the self-defense mechanism of the plants in immemorial green heaven, as well as a way to use the wind for dispersal.

Fang Yuan took out the seed, standing up and raising it high.

“He, he succeeded!”

“This speed is too fast!!”

“I am begging you, help me, okay?”

The surrounding people were stirred up, even the girl who he suspected to be Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gave him a surprised gaze.

“You are free, little thing, I will give you three days to escape for your life, scram now.” The leader of the beastman tribe snorted, kicking Fang Yuan and sending him flying.

Fang Yuan’s tiny body flew in the air for a distance of more than ten steps before crashing on the ground.

What made Fang Yuan surprised was, even though he felt a little short of breath from getting kicked, he was uninjured.

The beastman leader was strong and powerful, but in terms of physical movements, it had reached the stage of perfect self control.

Since Fang Yuan had untied the wind knot grass, the beastman tribe had to let him go.

Fang Yuan gaze a glance at the little girl, the latter had already gathered her attention to the wind knot grass in her hands.

Fang Yuan hesitated slightly, before turning around and leaving.

He left the bonfire, walking towards the darkness in the forest.

He only took a dozen steps before there was a bright light shining in the darkness.

The more he walked forward, the brighter the light, eventually, all of the darkness in front of him turned into light.

The light faded slowly, and the scene of reality showed itself in front of him.

Fang Yuan realized that not only did he open his eyes, his body had walked for over a dozen steps, away from the manifested dream realm.

Looking back at the dream realm, Fang Yuan frowned deeply, he was very confused: “What is going on? I left the dream realm just like that?”

He thought it over.

This exploration of the dream realm did not fail.

His wisdom path attainment level had risen slightly.

“This should not be! According to the scale of this dream realm, there should be three scenes. I got through the first round, why did I not enter the second round successfully?”

Fang Yuan stood on the spot as he pondered.

The light emitted by the manifested dream realm shined on his face.

He left the dream realm and returned on the same route from which he entered. On the other side of the dream realm, Spirit Affinity House’s group was still trying to heal Feng Jin Huang urgently.

Thus, Fang Yuan was not exposed.

But if he could not understand why he left the dream realm, there was a possibility that he might walk towards Spirit Affinity House’s direction the next time he left it.

If others found out that Fang Yuan could explore the dream realm, it would be somewhat troublesome.

After a long time, Fang Yuan’s tight frown gradually eased.

He walked forwards and let the dream realm engulf him.

His vision changed, Fang Yuan had entered Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm again.

Dark night, bonfire, beastmen, children, wind knot grass, the same scene was unfolding again.

Using unravel dream, Fang Yuan cheated all the way, becoming the first to untie the wind knot grass.

But this time, he did not leave, he walked towards the girl who he thought was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and tried to help her untie her wind knot grass.

The beastman leader did not object, he said: “Little rascal, you still want to help others? Hehe, you can help her, but if you fail, you will lose your life!”

“It seems my guess is correct.” Fang Yuan was overjoyed, he untied the wind knot grass within the time limit and successfully escaped with the girl.

“What? I still left?” Fang Yuan looked back in surprise.

His second attempt still failed. Fang Yuan did not enter the second scene, he was thrown out of the dream realm like the first time.

Dream realms were unpredictable and strange, their rules varied. Because each dream realm was unique, it was hard to accumulate experience in exploring the dream realm. Even though Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories, his advantage was still very small.

“This time, after saving the girl, my wisdom path attainment went up more than last time...” Fang Yuan muttered.

He went into deep contemplation.

According to this situation, there were two possibilities.

One, the girl that he saved was not the real Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Two, he had to save more children, after he hit a certain number, he would enter the second scene.

Before he entered the dream realm for a third time, Fang Yuan rested slightly first.

He took out guts Gu and healed his weakened soul back to its prime.

Even though he had successfully escaped the dream realm and did a successful exploration, his soul was not unharmed, he still expended a lot of it in the dream realm.

Of course, Fang Yuan's soul was far less injured than Feng Jin Huang's.

The former had succeeded, while the latter's exploration failed, this was incomparable.

“Third time!” Fang Yuan spurring himself on inwardly, he entered the dream realm again.

Everything restarted again in the dream.

The moment the wind knot grass was distributed, Fang Yuan used the killer move unravel dream several times and in a few breaths' time, he untied the wind knot grass in his hand.

Fang Yuan grabbed onto the seed as he raised up his right hand, shouting: “I succeeded!”

At once, be it the beastmen or children, they stared with wide open eyes as they looked at Fang Yuan in shock.

The noisy scene turned into creepy silence.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 914: Huge Growth in Attainment Level

“I will help you!” After Fang Yuan untied his wind knot grass, he went to the child closest to him.

“Hehe, rascal, you still want to help others? Sure! But you…” The beastman leader snickered.

Before he finished his words, he was interrupted by Fang Yuan.

“I know, if I can't save them, I will not leave, you can eat me!” Fang Yuan waved his hand, speaking casually.

“Guh…” The beastman leader choked up on his words, he could not say anything else.

The surrounding children looked at Fang Yuan with hopeful and admiring gazes, as if they were looking at a hero.

“Lad, if you can save them all, I will step down as the leader!” The beastman leader smiled sinisterly.

But soon, he could not smile anymore.

Fang Yuan did not follow the script, he used unravel dream continuously at an incredible pace!

All of the captured children were saved one after another.

If he were to untie the wind knot grass through his own efforts, he would not even be able to save himself.

But after using unravel dream, the difficulty fell immensely.

To make a comparison, this was like playing mahjong, where everyone else was drawing random tiles, while Fang Yuan was changing the tiles to whatever he wanted.

From everyone else’s perspective, this sort of cheating behavior looked like Fang Yuan moving his fingers rapidly, no matter which wind knot grass he held, after turning it a few times over, it would be untied rapidly, until the seed was taken out from its centermost position.

So simple.

Simply too easy.

This was the power of the dream path killer move unravel dream!

The children’s eyes were shining with tears, they looked at Fang Yuan as their gazes was filled with unparalleled gratitude and adoration.

The beastmen opened their mouths wide, they were dumbfounded, unable to believe this.

“I saved them all, I succeeded.” Fang Yuan spoke calmly at the beastman leader.

A moment later, the children understand the situation and erupted into a deafening cheer, some were sobbing out of joy, some were jumping around excitedly.

The beastman leader was speechless, he stared at Fang Yuan with bloodshot eyes. The surrounding beastmen were growling or baring their fangs, they were tempted to strike.

Fang Yuan was not afraid that the beastmen would go back on their words.

In most cases, these tribal beliefs were extremely strict, due to the culture and traditions of the tribe, they had to obey it.

Of course, nothing was certain.

In reality, there was the possibility that the beastman tribe would go back on their words.

But here, it was special, it was a dream realm.

This was not reality!

Indeed, like Fang Yuan had expected, the beastmen were furious and discontent, but they could only watch the food that was in front of them leave.

Passing through the dark forest, Fang Yuan led the group of children away from the beastman tribe, they got far away from the bonfire.

The children gathered around Fang Yuan, they walked together as they fell into silence.

In the darkness, a speck of light expanded, until light filled his vision.

Fang Yuan’s soul returned to his body, he opened his eyes.

Taking a look, Fang Yuan showed a surprised expression.

He turned to the manifested dream realm behind him, he was filled with questions: “How can this be? I have already saved all the children, I did this to the limits. How can I still be thrown out of the dream realm, and not enter the second scene?”

Fang Yuan frowned deeply.

“Don’t tell me, my guess was wrong? Untying the wind knot grass and saving the children is not the correct method to pass the first scene?”

“What clues did I neglect?”

Fang Yuan thought intensely, he worked his mind to its limits.

Explorations of dream realms were difficult. Even if Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories, and was at the forefront of this generation, but when exploring the dream realm, he had no confidence in succeeding.

Every dream realm was unique.

The method to explore dream realms varied each time, it was hard to accumulate helpful experiences.

Fang Yuan could only guess right now and try every idea he had. He could only persevere and not get frustrated to have a chance of passing the dream realm.

Of course, in Fang Yuan’s previous life, there were many instances where people explored dream realms and failed to make any progress for decades.

Fang Yuan felt his head hurting, he had little confidence in his new guesses.

“In that case, I should go elsewhere and subdue the hidden essence turtle.”

Fang Yuan had run into a barrier in this dream realm, he would not stubbornly stay in place.

Even though Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm was his main objective, he still definitely was going to obtain the dragonfish, hidden essence turtle, and the desolate plant.

Changing his train of thought, Fang Yuan left this place, heading to another location.

Two hours later, Feng Jin Huang’s pale face regained a bit of her rosiness.

She opened her eyes.

In her clear eyes, brilliance radiated.

“Guts Gu is truly helpful towards the healing and recovery of souls, it takes effect so quickly.” She was joyful.

Seeing that she was safe, the other four Spirit Affinity House Gu Masters heaved sighs of relief.

They were here as bodyguards, if anything happened to Feng Jin Huang, they would not have a good time when they returned to the sect.

Feng Jin Huang saw the desolate beast shark fin wolf that Fang Yuan left behind, her gaze focused as she asked the Gu Masters around her, after hearing that during her healing period, no other Gu Masters had gotten close, she relaxed slightly.

Finally, she inspected her body and confirmed that she had healed completely, she stood up and faced the dream realm again.

“Earlier, I used dream wings Immortal Gu and it displayed great capabilities while I was obtaining a boost in my refinement path attainment level. But this time, I am facing an Immortal Venerable’s dream realm, the difficulty is worlds’ apart, I cannot commit my earlier mistake again. Eh? Why does the dream realm look slightly smaller?”

Feng Jin Huang’s gaze concentrated, she showed a suspicious look.

Once the dream realm was successfully explored, it would vanish.

Even though Fang Yuan did not succeed, he had gained quite a harvest, his wisdom path attainment level rose.

As the saying goes: Where there are gains, there are losses.

Fang Yuan gained something, the dream realm naturally lost something.

It showed on the surface as the dream realm’s size shrinking.

“It did shrink, how did this happen?” Feng Jin Huang confirmed it repeatedly and felt more suspicious: “Is this Immortal Venerable dream realm special? It will shrink as time passes?”

Feng Jin Huang did not suspect anything else.

In this era, people’s understanding towards dream realms was still at a primitive and ignorant level.

Furthermore, in Feng Jin Huang’s heart, she believed that her unique dream wings Immortal Gu provided superiority and advantages to her in dream path.

Although she was suspicious, she could not verify anything.

Eventually, she shook her head, ignoring the sense of suspicion inside her, she entered the dream realm again.

Just as Feng Jin Huang entered the dream realm, Fang Yuan went to the location of the hidden essence turtle in accordance with He Feng Yang’s information.

This wisdom path desolate beast was huge, it was like a mound.

At this moment, the hidden essence turtle’s four limbs and head were hidden in its shell, its body was covered and hidden under rocks.

Fang Yuan laughed lightly, he swooped down like an eagle ferociously.

Boom boom boom…

Intense explosions occurred, causing thunderous sounds.

Fang Yuan and the hidden essence turtle fought.

At once, rocks flew, smoke was rising up.

The hidden essence turtle tried to resist at first, but it had no Immortal Gu and was only a desolate beast, not an ancient desolate beast, how could it be the match of Fang Yuan who had rank seven battle strength?

After several rounds, the hidden essence turtle could only hide inside its shell and take a beating.

“This turtle shell is really thick…” Fang Yuan attacked against the hidden essence turtle and felt a little surprised momentarily, he laughed in a helpless tone.

He did not exert his full strength, in fact, he rarely used his Immortal Gu.

He had used myriad self giant hand in many situations already, it would be best if he did not expose it. Who knew if other sects had preparations involving some investigative Immortal Gu?

Fang Yuan needed to conceal his strength as much as possible.

Thus, after the hidden essence turtle hid itself, Fang Yuan did not rush.

He split his focus onto two tasks at once, he made the battle grand and loud while savoring his gains from the dream realm.

As he thought over it, he had countless inspirations that emerged in him.

It was like a door had been opened in front of him, he could see the view outside of the house.

This feeling was incredible amazing, Fang Yuan was drowning in euphoria.

“Earlier, my wisdom path attainment level was extremely ordinary, after all, I only started my wisdom path cultivation recently. But now, my wisdom path attainment level has reached quasi-master level. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm is simply incredible!”

Such progress, if it was according to normal cultivation, would take him decades of accumulation.

Even though the dream realm was dangerous, each time he succeeded, he would have great gains, it was truly a great leap forward, Fang Yuan saved a lot of time.

“Why is there such thunderous noise?”

Fang Yuan was fighting intensely with the hidden essence turtle, groups of Gu Masters were drawn over to investigate the situation.

“Fang Yuan? How can he be so strong?!”

“No wonder the elders in the sect told us to avoid this monster Fang Yuan!”

“He is simply cheating, this is so unfair to us, how can we compete with this monster?”

Eventually, Fang Yuan spend a day and a night to subdue the hidden essence turtle and send it into his immortal aperture. During this period, many Gu Masters were drawn over, but after doing some investigations, they retreated in fear.

“Thirty-sixth failure…”

Feng Jin Huang opened her eyes in fatigue.

Ever since she was heavily injured, she had become careful, unfortunately, she did not have unravel dream, and had never interacted with wind knot grass previously. She failed a total of thirty-six times, not even untying it correctly once.

Being able to survive in the dream was the most basic requirement for successfully exploring a dream realm.

Failing to untie the wind knot grass meant she could not survive, the explorations failed.

Thus, each time Feng Jin Huang explored the dream realm, the injuries to her soul after failing far surpassed that of Fang Yuan.

She had to spend a lot of time to rest and recover.

Thus, after two days and one night, she only explored it thirty-six times.

“The Immortal Venerable’s dream realm is so tough, I have dream wings Immortal Gu but it is still so difficult for me, not to mention others!” Feng Jin Huang looked at the dream realm in front of her with a bitter expression.

She was filled with dejection and frustration, right now, as long as she thought about the appearance of the wind knot grass, this proud young genius would feel like vomiting!

At this moment, Fang Yuan secretly got close to the dream realm.

He had already captured the hidden essence turtle and nether grass, he was going to put his remaining time into the Immortal Venerable’s dream realm.

After going through some intense deductions, Fang Yuan had a new idea.

Just as Feng Jin Huang was anguished and dejected, Fang Yuan smiled confidently as he secretly entered the dream realm again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 915: The Biggest Winner

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm was displayed in front of Fang Yuan once again.

It was night, a huge fire was burning.

Dancing around the fire were beastmen making beastly shouts and growls one after another.

This was a celebration.

A bloody celebration after hunting.

Fang Yuan calmly looked around him.

He was once again a human child bound tightly. Around him were many other boys and girls in the same situation.

“We are doomed, we are dead meat!”

“Wuwuwu… I don’t want to be eaten.”

The kids cried, desperate and pale.

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with a sharp light as he suddenly stood up and shouted: “I want wind knot grass!”

The beastman tribe’s celebration had just entered a heated stage.

And right at this time, Fang Yuan’s voice suddenly pierced into this celebration.

For a moment, the bestial calls paused and all the beastmen looked at Fang Yuan with blood-red eyes.

An enormous pressure was formed, the human children became as silent as cicadas during winter, shivering, some even peed their pants.

Fang Yuan was without any expression, as he shouted once more.

The beastman leader grunted furiously before instructing with surging killing intent: “Give it to him!”

“Little rascal, I will be watching you. As long as you ruin even a small strand, I will use my trunk to roll your tender little body into meat paste.” An elephant beastman walked over and handed a ball of wind knot grass to Fang Yuan while threatening him.

Fang Yuan chuckled and glanced at the wind knot grass on his hand before raising his head: “One? How is this enough? Give me one ball of wind knot grass for every human captive there is here. I will untie all the wind knot grass, and save all of them!”

Instantly, shocked sounds came from all around.

Be it the beastmen or the children beside Fang Yuan, they all stared at Fang Yuan with different expressions.

After the momentary shock, the beastmen started laughing loudly.

And the children who had felt hopeful, felt dispirited again, worried and desperate.

Soon, all the wind knot grass were laid in front of Fang Yuan.

The height of the whole wind knot grass pile was several times Fang Yuan’s current size.

Were he to use his own strength, it would be impossible to untie all this wind knot grass in the extremely limited time.

Besides Fang Yuan, no one else believed he could succeed.

Under everyone’s gazes, Fang Yuan let out a breath of turbid air and began to disassemble the wind knot grass.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

…

This special immortal killer move was created with a wisdom path Immortal Gu, Unravel Mystery, as the core and several supplementary dream path mortal Gu.

Right now, it produced extremely great effects.

However, although unravel mystery Immortal Gu could be used repeatedly, other dream path mortal Gu would be expended after continuous use.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan had never slacked off.

He would take out some time every day to explore his own dream realm and refine dream path mortal Gu.

Little by little, these dream path mortal Gu accumulated and were used at this moment. It was as the saying goes: Opportunities favor those who are prepared.

“I have finally entered the second round of the dream realm!” Fang Yuan felt satisfied inwardly.

This time, he was not thrown out by the dream realm, and succeeded in his hopes of entering the second round of the dream realm.

As it turned out, to pass through the first round of the dream realm, one had to save all the children.

Fang Yuan had tried it before but was actually late by a step.

In the original route of the dream realm, a portion of the children were already killed by the elephantman.

The elephantman brought these children under the beastman leader’s instruction, but he intentionally slipped up, smashing the tree trunk to the ground.

The tree trunk easily crushed many bound children, their flesh was fought over by the beastmen and devoured.

Although this did conform to the beastman tribe’s traditions, it could be considered to be skirting around them.

The elephantman was a famous warrior of the beastman tribe, the beastman leader and others also put up with this action.

When Fang Yuan was subduing the hidden essence turtle and nether grass, he realized this key point and saved all the human children, finally succeeding and entering the second round.

“After passing the first round, my wisdom path attainment has probably reached master level!”

“A lot of dream path mortal Gu have been expended by repeatedly using the killer move unravel dream, I will need to be more sparing.”

“It is a pity that when I followed the information obtained from Mo Yao’s will to look for that spring dream fruit tree, it was already cut down by some ignorant mortals half a year ago. Otherwise, with this tree, the amount of dream path mortal Gu with me would be at least ten times the number!”

“The first round should be derived from the memory of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s childhood. Maybe it was a regret of hers. I saved all the children which could be considered as making up for her regret, thus succeeding in passing the first round.”

“Now, what will the second round be like?”

Fang Yuan suppressed his churning thoughts and observed his surroundings.

It was a mountain.

In the lonely night sky, few stars shone.

Just like in summer, warm wind blew gently, bringing with it the fragrance of the lush mountain forest.

The gurgling of the brook, the rustling of the leaves and the song of the nightingales mixed together to form sounds of nature that needed no words to adorn them.

Compared the bloody, cruel and vicious first round, this second round was mild as a drizzle and gentle as a breeze.

“Move quickly, what are you being dazed for?”

“As long as we can take six steps over the astrolabe chessboard, we can obtain the legacy of Lord Immortal Venerable!”

“If we can become Lord Immortal Venerable’s disciples, we can learn abilities and become experts! At that time, we will avenge our families and kill those damned beastmen.”

The surrounding children urged Fang Yuan to move, when they saw him stop.

Fang Yuan immediately understood some conditions to pass the second round.

“There are records of this in history. The first rank nine Gu Immortal in human history is known as Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable. He was very aware of the drawbacks of the clan system, and to initiate a sect system, he set an example himself, setting up astrolabes in many places. As long as someone was able to walk six steps on the astrolabe chessboard, they could become his personal disciple.”

Fang Yuan recalled as he followed the surrounding companions towards the peak.

There, he saw the famous astrolabe chessboard.

The astrolabe chessboard was carved on a giant rock with a flat surface.

On the rock were lines that were either horizontal cuts, vertical cuts or diagonal cuts.

Every time the breeze blew, these lines would flash with deep blue starry radiance.

When Fang Yuan approached closer, these starry lines directly passed through his eyes and appeared in his mind.

At the same time, his soul was suddenly being consumed at dozens of times the previous rate!

Many of the children who came with him stopped, unable to go forward, some even fainted on the spot.

Fang Yuan concentrated and walked forward till he reached the giant rock, he then slowly put his palm on the rock surface.

Boom.

His ears buzzed as he hallucinated.

Those thin starry lines suddenly expanded into paths he was walking on. And Fang Yuan's whole body blossomed with starry radiance, becoming a star chess piece, stopping in this web of these starry paths.

Astrolabe chessboard!

Fang Yuan observed, cold sweat filling his head.

He thought for a long while before taking a step hesitatingly.

The next moment, his soul was thrown out of the dream realm and returned to his physical body.

His soul was heavily injured!

One wrong step and everything failed.

Fang Yuan's body swayed, almost falling down to the ground. The injury to his soul was much more severe than Feng Jin Huang's, almost costing him half his life!

"The second round of the dream realm is immensely more dangerous than the first round!"

Fang Yuan revealed a shocked expression before immediately calming down.

"But, I have already passed the first round and received great gains. My wisdom path attainment has indeed already reached master level."

"There is still time, no need to hurry. I will use guts Gu to recuperate first, then slowly explore."

While Fang Yuan was healing his injuries, opposite him, obstructed by the external manifestation of the dream realm, Feng Jin Huang had just finished recovering, she opened her eyes and stood up, intending to try again.

"Eh, why has the dream realm shrunk again?"

"Moreover, it has shrunken much more this time, almost by a third!"

Feng Jin Huang stared with wide open eyes.

Fang Yuan had passed the first round and received huge gains, thus the first round of the dream realm’s external manifestation had disappeared.

This portion of the dream realm had already turned into nourishment for Fang Yuan.

“Could it be that someone else has succeeded in exploring the dream realm?” Feng Jin Huang thought of this before laughing lightly to herself, “That is not possible. Mother used the sect’s help and already deduced that I possess the only dream path Immortal Gu in Central Continent. It seems this dream realm is truly special, it will gradually shrink with time.”

“I need to hurry up!” Feng Jin Huang squinted her eyes as she activated dream wings Immortal Gu.

Her dream wings flapped, bringing her soul into the dream realm.

The moment she entered, Feng Jin Huang felt great joy.

“This is clearly a deeper layer of the dream realm, this is great, I finally don’t have to face that damned wind knot grass!” Right now, Feng Jin Huang was jumping with joy in the dream realm.

However, after a while, Feng Jin Huang returned, utterly defeated.

Her injured soul returned to its body, her face extremely pale.

“There is no more wind knot grass, but now there is this even more complex astrolabe chessboard…” She bitterly looked at this dream realm in front of her, the external manifestation releasing all kinds of colors, gorgeous and mysterious.

Grievance and anger filled her, but she had nowhere to vent it.

Feng Jin Huang had gained many benefits from dream realms before, and with the dream wings Immortal Gu in her hands, she had gotten the thought that ‘dream realms are just so-so’, having a low opinion of the obstacles inside.

Over her life, she had never failed so miserably like this.

She had already spent the last few days facing this dream realm, she had received all sorts of injuries dozens of times, but had not made even the smallest gain!

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, I will remember you…” Feng Jin Huang gritted her teeth, her eyes rolled backwards and she fainted, she finally could not endure the injuries.

Time passed quickly, it was already the last day of the agreement.

All the Gu Masters who had entered the fragment world came out and returned to the sides of their respective sect’s Gu Immortals, reporting on their findings.

Soon, all the immortals’ gazes gathered on Fang Yuan and He Feng Yang.

In this contest, Immortal Crane Sect without doubt monopolized the lead, not only eating meat, they did not even leave behind soup for others.

In such a situation, Fang Yuan naturally did not want to stay for long.

He completed the handover to He Feng Yang on the spot, and left this valley while keeping his dragonfish.

Fang Yuan remained silent about his gains, he was fully aware that he was the biggest winner in this contest!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 916: Dual Grandmaster!

Hu Immortal blessed land.

The underground cave was shining with blood red light.

The faint blood red light originated from stalks of blood colored lingzhi in the cave. These blood colored lingzhi grew freely, they were mutated from ordinary lingzhi.

The original zhi forest was not suitable for Hu Immortal blessed land.

But after the blood poison kerria earthly calamity, Hu Immortal blessed land gained some blood path dao marks, the environment of the entire area changed drastically, it was suitable for the growth of some blood path life forms.

Thus, the originally dwindling zhi forest turned into a blood zhi forest, it grew rapidly and became extremely lush.

And earlier, Hu Immortal blessed land had chestnut flowers, poisonous blue degree grass, water chestnut grass, six divine grass, seven colored seven treasure flowers, and milk tea flowers and more growing all over it, but they were all wiped out.

When comparing the two, one could see how merciless heaven was, there was a feeling of great changes over time, there was some profound meaning behind it.

Fang Yuan sat on a giant blood lingzhi.

At this moment, he was slowly opening his eyes, letting out a breath of cloudy air.

Earlier, when he moved about, he used the identity of Xing Xiang Zi, as well as vaguely familiar face to disguise his appearance.

Right now, in Hu Immortal blessed land, he was in his base camp, he did not need to use immortal essence to maintain the transformation path killer move, Fang Yuan was in his original zombie form now.

He had eight arms, his face was green and his eyes were bright red, he was six meters tall with protruding fangs, he was shining with a cold glint among the blood red light.

But at this moment, his eyes were shining with a deep light of wisdom.

This light was the accumulation of time, the crystallization of time and space, it was moving and formed a stark contrast to his evil and ruthless appearance.

Recalling his earlier thoughts, Fang Yuan let out a breath of foggy air, he sighed softly: “The gains this time are simply too much.”

He had to admit this point.

Because from this exploration of the dream realm, Fang Yuan’s star path and wisdom path attainment reached grandmaster level!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm not only made Fang Yuan’s wisdom path attainment level increase, it also raised his star path attainment level.

Fang Yuan was very shocked regarding this.

Grandmaster attainment level!

What did this mean?

After accumulating foundation in both his previous life and current life, Fang Yuan only became a grandmaster in blood path and strength path.

Among them, blood path grandmaster was because Fang Yuan cultivated blood path mainly in his previous life, it was accumulated through time.

As for strength path grandmaster, he had cultivated it on the side in his previous life, while mainly cultivating it this time. Because he had a foundation in his previous life, when he cultivated it this time, with the help of the immortal ascension tribulation, he obtained a chance to learn from heaven and earth. Furthermore, there was Hei Lou Lan’s dream realm.

With all these reasons, he managed to accumulate sufficient foundation.

After exerting so much effort in both lives, using more than five hundred years, he only became a grandmaster in two paths.

But this time, he only explored a dream realm of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, and spent less than half a month, yet he was already a wisdom path and star path grandmaster!

It was impossible to see his grandmaster attainment level physically, but Fang Yuan knew: His gains were immeasurable! He could even say it was more valuable than Hu Immortal blessed land.

“My gains this time will allow me to grow immensely for this period of time, I can even break out of my predicament!”

Generally speaking, development was the result of accumulation and gradual progress, by growing slowly and steadily, one would achieve success in the end.

But fortuitous encounters and windfalls would allow one to experience explosive growth, jumping out of a stale state and saving huge amounts of time, overturning the situation and obtaining an extraordinary achievement.

Since rebirth, Fang Yuan had been resolving difficulties, he advanced bravely and had many gains, they were extremely helpful to him, allowing him to find solutions.

Liquor worm, Spring Autumn Cicada, blood skull Gu, bone flesh unity Gu, all-out effort Gu, Three Kings blessed land, Hu Immortal blessed land, second aperture Gu, becoming a strength path Gu Immortal and gaining inspiration from nature, as well as wisdom Gu.

Other than these, there were other areas in which he grew and progressed, but they did not overturn his situations.

However, after this trip to Starry Sky grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan had gained a new shocking harvest, that was his dual grandmaster attainment level!

Among which, wisdom Gu was a rank nine Immortal Gu, it had reached an agreement with Fang Yuan, but it was not his, the degree to which he could make use of it was not high.

However, attainment levels were something that belonged entirely to the Gu Immortal themselves.

In Fang Yuan’s opinion, dual grandmaster attainment level was more valuable than wisdom Gu itself!

“Since rebirth, this can be considered another situation where I made immense and shocking gains, yet this time the process was very easy, it was unthinkably simple.”

Fang Yuan could feel the mysteries of the twists and turns over life in opportunities from this.

He naturally had some guesses, perhaps this was related to Connect Luck?

Speaking of which, ever since he used Connect Luck, Fang Yuan’s cultivation journey had become much smoother.

The rise of his attainment levels, especially when they rose to grandmaster attainment level, gave an incredible feeling, he could not describe it!

It was as if Fang Yuan had previously been looking out of the window and seeing a large rock formation, filled with crevices and weeds.

Now, he took a few steps up and could see further and higher.

He could now observe part of the rock formation by looking down, he felt that this part of the formation was as tiny as a pebble beneath his feet now!

When he looked further ahead, he could see more, and understand deeper.

Attainment level, this was something very hard to describe.

What was attainment level?

Even for the developed Gu Master cultivation world, everyone had their own explanations for it, there was no unified description.

Fang Yuan’s soul came from Earth.

This difference made him possess a different understanding regarding the phrase attainment level.

“So-called attainment levels are like mathematics problems. By answering many mathematics questions, one can accumulate experience when they get the correct answer, they will eventually understand the crux of them, gaining enlightenment and raising their attainment level. With this level of understanding, they can solve other related mathematics questions easily, and get the right answer. When they encounter very unfamiliar questions, they can also use their existing knowledge to answer a portion of them.”

Thus, when Fang Yuan encounters questions in cultivation, because his attainment level rose, he could solve the question to varying degrees.

For example, Fang Yuan’s use of wisdom Gu earlier was just superficial, it was a brutish and forced method. Now that he had wisdom path grandmaster attainment level, he gained many inspirations and ideas, he could try to use some supplementary Gu worms to make use of wisdom Gu more efficiently.

Another example was modifying Gu recipes.

Back then, Fang Yuan had tried to modify recipes of memory thought Gu, star thought Gu and malicious thought Gu, but because his wisdom path attainment level was low, he kept failing, he encountered impasses and could not advance.

Afterwards, he successfully modified star thought Gu's recipe, but he was making use of starlight Immortal Gu, it was not because of his own abilities.

Now, Fang Yuan could feel that he could modify these Gu recipes, and they would be even better than before.

Going beyond this, Fang Yuan was even confident that he could perfect incomplete inheritances. Like earlier, Fang Yuan had obtained an incomplete wisdom path inheritance, memory thought Gu, reminiscence Immortal Gu, and multiple mortal killer moves were included. With his grandmaster attainment level now, Fang Yuan could deduce this inheritance to a degree, and even restore it.

Gu recipes could be modified, he could modify killer moves as well. The killer moves myriad self, vaguely familiar face, they were within the range of possible applications.

Also battlefield killer moves, Fang Yuan could not find one after so long, but now he had the foundation needed to create one himself!

Or for example, the construction of Star Form blessed land, earlier, Fang Yuan's plans needed huge amounts of funds. Now, with his wisdom path and star path attainment levels, he could improve this plan and save an immensely large number of immortal essence stones in construction fees! Furthermore, this new plan would be even more ideal and useful than the previous one!

The raising of hairy men, his eight sources of revenue, the use of Gu Immortal souls, the claiming of Ge Pi blessed land, there were many things he could do.

The rise of attainment levels was quite special.

In conclusion, when attainment levels rise, the person experiences growth in all aspects. The Gu Master's cultivation journey would be refreshed, there would be great prospects, their strength would rise up as well!

Time passed quickly.

In terms of the five regions' time, half a month passed.

Two wills were intertwined, battling intensely.

Fang Yuan's will had the complete advantage, he was suppressing Mo Yao's will.

Fang Yuan's will's advantage continued to grow, he could almost toy with Mo Yao's will easily now.

“How can this be, how can your capabilities rise by so much?!” Mo Yao's will screamed in shocked anger.

Before this, Fang Yuan had been using a similar amount of will to fight with Mo Yao's will, they were at best evenly matched, he was even at a disadvantage.

But now, Fang Yuan's wisdom path attainment level had reached grandmaster level, he only used one third of the will to defeat Mo Yao's will till she screamed in fear.

From the start of the battle, Fang Yuan was implacably in the lead, suppressing Mo Yao’s will and preventing her from doing anything.

“Earlier, I used Mo Yao’s will as a training dummy, I learned many techniques by fighting with her will. Now, I am far beyond Mo Yao’s will, I can use many techniques naturally and smoothly. Mo Yao’s will has lost her value as a training dummy.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan drew back his will.

He placed all his attention on the battlefield killer move in front of him, eight doors labyrinth.

Ten days ago, Fang Yuan left Hu Immortal blessed land, he came to Eastern Sea and joined up with Shark Demon and the rest, exploring Yu Lu blessed land.

The tough barrier back then — Eight Doors Labyrinth, was now resolvable by Fang Yuan, who was a wisdom path grandmaster.

Back then, Fang Yuan had thought that he would need the wisdom path Immortal Gu, Star Thought, to have a chance of dismantling eight doors labyrinth.

But now, he could multitask, deducing the battlefield killer move while secretly sparring with Mo Yao’s will.

Most importantly, after tens of days had passed in the blessed land’s time, under Fang Yuan’s lead, Shark Demon and the others were finally close to unraveling eight doors labyrinth.

“We are about to pass eight doors labyrinth, to think that this Xing Xiang Zi would suddenly become so fierce!”

“Eight doors labyrinth, is this battlefield killer move the final obstacle in Yu Lu blessed land?”

The immortals were secretly excited.

Boom!

With a thunderous sound, eight doors labyrinth was thoroughly unraveled by Fang Yuan.

Yu Lu blessed land’s true appearance appeared before all the immortals!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 917: Unmoving Troops

After dismantling the battlefield killer move eight doors labyrinth, everyone field of vision widened, seeing Yu Lu blessed land’s true appearance.

Only to see that there were flashing lights in the sky, they were like traces of silk or streams of water, some were moving slowly, while others were creating dazzling ripples.

Red, orange, yellow, green, azure, blue, purple… each light had a bright color. Dazzling light shined on everyone’s faces.

Fang Yuan, Shark Demon, and the others did not speak. They looked at this amazing sight as they showed some excitement and amazement.

This Yu Lu blessed land was very different from normal blessed lands!

Ordinary blessed lands had the sky, ground, vegetation, flowers, birds, worms, and fish.

But here, there was nothing.

Yu Lu blessed land was very unique, it was merely a broad space without any concept of sky or ground, there was no living beings, and there were also no resources that Gu Immortals usually accumulated.

“Maybe this uniqueness is the reason why Yu Lu blessed land can set up battlefield killer moves of countless paths.” Fang Yuan had a realization.

Normally speaking, there were huge conflicts between battlefield killer moves and blessed lands or grotto-heavens. Few Gu Immortals were capable of setting up battlefield killer moves in their blessed lands or grotto-heavens.

Because battlefield killer moves used Gu worms to engrave dao marks and temporarily create a battlefield.

Meanwhile, grotto-heavens and blessed lands were made of dao marks.

Because the dao marks varied, they conflicted. When Lang Ya blessed land was attacked by Qin Bai Sheng and the others, Lang Ya land spirit did not use a battlefield killer move to resist them. That was because within the blessed land, establishing a battlefield killer move was detrimental to oneself.

But Yu Lu blessed land went against this common sense of the cultivation world.

In Fang Yuan’s case, when he attacked Yu Lu blessed land, he had encountered three battlefield killer moves, freezing rain frozen earth, fighting soul battlefield, and eight doors labyrinth.

These three were evidently immortal killer moves from different paths, they would not normally gather in the hands of a single Gu Immortal and become used in their immortal aperture.

But within Yu Lu blessed land, not only were these three used, they did not clash with the blessed land at all, in fact, they seemed to complement each other in a way.

“Fairy Yu Lu was a disciple of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. It is not strange that her immortal aperture blessed land is like this.” Su Bai Man looked as she let out a deep breath, saying this.

“Even though there are fewer resources here, if we can learn Fairy Yu Lu’s methods and use it in our own immortal apertures, we would be able to use battlefield killer moves in it, that would be a huge gain!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s eyes flashed with brilliance.

At this time, a Gu Immortal who went with them pointed at a direction as he shouted: “Quickly look, Immortal Gu!”

Everyone quickly looked towards the direction the Gu Immortal was pointing.

As expected, they saw a Gu worm that had a special appearance. It was long and slim, like a twig. It had numerous thin golden colored wings, fluttering in the sky.

The entire Gu worm looked like a branch of a long golden willow.

This Gu worm quickly drilled into a nearby flashing light and vanished.

But during this moment it was seen, its Immortal Gu aura was undeniably exposed.

Everyone’s gazes became heated, their breathing became rough, but they were not surprised.

There were naturally Immortal Gu in Yu Lu blessed land.

If there were no Immortal Gu, how could those battlefield killer moves earlier be constructed?

Even though Yu Lu blessed land did not have an accumulation of resources, with so many battlefield killer moves, it had to have a good number of Immortal Gu!

Shark Demon raised his head and laughed, breaking the silence.

He was overjoyed.

Even though the main gains had to be given to Zombie Alliance, he was the person who took down the blessed land, he would gain the biggest reward of at least one or two Immortal Gu.

Other than that, by succeeding in taking down Yu Lu blessed land, he would also receive a huge sum of contribution points from Zombie Alliance.

If Shark Demon could find an Immortal Gu that suited him, he would definitely take it for himself.

This was the benefit of being the person in charge.

If he found any mystical Immortal Gu that could help him and his wife revive and get rid of the zombie status, that would be best.

Reviving from being a zombie and becoming human, not only was Fang Yuan working towards it, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man were doing the same.

Seeing Shark Demon laugh, everyone started congratulating him.

Su Bai Man smiled more subtly.

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man had put in huge investment into the mission of invading Yu Lu blessed land, they had almost used up their savings.

On the surface, it could not be noticed, but Shark Demon and Su Bai Man were facing immense pressure.

Right now, their investment was finally bearing fruit.

As long as they obtained a rank seven Immortal Gu, all of their investments would be essentially paid off.

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man were joyous, the weights on their minds had been removed.

“Once Yu Lu blessed land is captured, everyone here will be compensated according to the contributions you have made, you will not be shortchanged.” Shark Demon smiled as he spoke seriously.

Everyone nodded, they stepped back and asked Shark Demon and Su Bai Man to go ahead.

With immense benefits in front of them, some Gu Immortals might become rash. Shark Demon’s words were both an assurance and threat.

Everyone could understand his underlying meaning.

“Alright, everyone can wait and see.” Shark Demon did not refuse, he struck.

He willed and turned into a flash of light, with a swooshing sound, he tore through space and shot out, the direction was towards the golden willow branch-like Immortal Gu earlier.

Everyone saw Shark Demon rapidly approaching the Immortal Gu, but suddenly, there were ripples in space as Shark Demon vanished.

At the next moment, he appeared beside everyone with a shocked expression.

“What happened?” Su Bai Man asked in suspicion.

Shark Demon shook his head, he said in an uncertain tone: “It seems to be another battlefield killer move?”

Next, everyone tried but they could not move out, it attested to Shark Demon’s guess.

“This is a space path battlefield killer move, even though it has no offensive power, it is definitely more profound than the previous battlefield killer moves.”

“Did all of you notice, every time we get transported back, we would be in our original spots. Our positions would not change at all.”

“Such an ability, this has to be the legendary unmoving troops.”

The Gu Immortals discussed and eventually came to a consensus.

Battlefield killer move — Unmoving Troops. This was the final battlefield killer move, it obstructed everyone.

This battlefield killer move had a huge origin, it was created by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable personally.

The work of an Immortal Venerable was truly profound.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had a mild and kind temperament, he was vast different from the other nine Gu Immortal Venerables.

He was merciful, he did not like killing since he was young, he often subdued people with kindness, taking down enemies without fighting.

Battlefield killer move unmoving troops, once someone entered this formation with any intent to battle, malicious thoughts, or lust, they would be unable to progress at all, unable to move.

In the past, before Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable became a rank nine Gu Immortal, he used this move to subdue a famous rank seven sound path Gu Immortal, Gao Ming. In that battle, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable did not move, he only used the battlefield immortal killer move unmoving troops, no matter what methods Gao Ming used, he exerted all of his strength and did not even managed to get one step closer to Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

This battle made the arrogant Gao Ming lose his temper. He then followed Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, becoming his guard henceforth.

“Since this has to do with wills and thoughts, why don’t we shut our minds and temporarily stop thinking.” Fang Yuan said.

It was not hard to achieve this.

Gu Immortals mostly had some wisdom path techniques, Fang Yuan was currently disguised as Xing Xiang Zi, he was also partly a wisdom path Gu Immortal.

But everyone’s attempts ended in failure.

Some Gu Immortals did not have outstanding wisdom path techniques. During this process of moving forward, their desires and thoughts were stirred up, breaking their thoughtless state.

Only certain Gu Immortals, including Fang Yuan, could achieve a state of having no thoughts.

But the problem came after that!

Without any thoughts, how could one capture any Gu worms?

The body’s movement was decided by the thoughts that were generated in the mind.

Without these thoughts, the body would stay still on the ground. In this situation, there was no need for the battlefield killer move, the Gu Immortals themselves could not move.

“Sigh! No wonder back then, Gu Immortal Gao Ming became dejected and willingly submitted to the rank seven Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, becoming his guard.”

“To get through this round, it is hard, hard, hard!”

“The worst part is, Yu Lu blessed land is right in front of us, undeniably, this is the final obstacle, but we can only watch here and look on, unable to gain anything!”

“Maybe this arrangement was the intention of Fairy Yu Lu. She purposely let us see hope, luring out our thoughts and desires, it increases the difficulty of taking down this battlefield killer move.”

“If we really cannot succeed, we will have to retreat and seek reinforcements.” Su Bai Man suggested as she frowned.

Shark Demon looked ahead, becoming silent.

Earlier, he had invited a wisdom path Gu Immortal over, but he lost an Immortal Gu to her, thus he did not at all like this idea.

At the crucial moment, only a person on their own side could be trusted.

Shark Demon looked at Fang Yuan, now that Fang Yuan was part of Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance, he was one of them.

Shark Demon asked: “Xing Xiang Zi, do you have any means? If you do, use them, don’t worry, your compensation will not be small.”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “To unravel this battlefield killer move, it can be said to be both easy and difficult.”

“Oh? What do you mean?”

Fang Yuan looked around, seeing that he had attracted all of their attentions, he said slowly: “Everyone, do not be scared due to the reputation of unmoving troops. Back then, Gao Ming lost because the battlefield killer move was controlled by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. Right now, we are facing an unmanned battlefield killer move. It is far easier to deal with this one.”

“That makes sense.”

“Indeed, with a Gu Immortal controlling the battlefield killer move, it could transform and replenish continuously. But a battlefield killer move without any Gu Immortals controlling it is very inflexible.”

Everyone saw hope and felt joy after hearing Fang Yuan’s words.

But next, Fang Yuan’s words threw them into dejection again: “Attacking an unmanned battlefield killer move is relatively simpler. But to me, it is extremely difficult to unravel this current one, there is almost no hope of success.”

Everyone’s expressions crumbled, they cast somewhat unkind gazes towards Fang Yuan.

One of the Gu Immortals said agitatedly: “Xing Xiang Zi, you talked a lot of crap, just tell us if you’re useless. Speaking like this, are you trying to toy with us?”

Fang Yuan laughed as he looked at Shark Demon.

Shark Demon showed no expression on his face, but it was obvious that his mood was currently terrible.

Fang Yuan suddenly stopped his smiling expression, he bowed to Shark Demon as he said solemnly: “Why would I dare to toy with everyone? I am truly restricted by a lack of resources, if I can refine a wisdom path Immortal Gu, I would have great confidence in unraveling the battlefield killer move unmoving troops for sure.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 918: Blazing Heaven Demoness

Shark sea, underwater palace.

Delicious delicacies filled the table, the aroma of wine pervaded the air, and the lantern lights shined brightly.

In the banquet, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man sat on the main seats, treating two Gu Immortals in the hall with utmost cordiality.

These two Gu Immortals were none other than Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

After they ran into a barrier in Yu Lu blessed land, and knew that staying longer would be of no use, Shark Demon and the group sensibly retreated.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng had originally intended to leave, but were invited over by Shark Demon and Su Bai Man.

This was already the third time Fang Yuan had participated in Shark Demon’s shark fishing banquet.

Gulping down the fine wine, Shark Demon put down the wine cup and looked at Fang Yuan, suddenly asking: “Xing Xiang Zi, how much assurance do you truly have in unraveling unmoving troops?”

Fang Yuan thought inwardly: ‘The time has come.’

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man had been talking about all sorts of irrelevant matters, but he just kept quiet and did not speak about the matter first. Shark Demon finally could not hold it in and spoke about the subject.

Fang Yuan immediately replied: “Lord Shark Demon, you are also aware of how things stand for me. The wisdom path inheritance I inherited is complete. Moreover, recently, I have comprehended many mysteries, thus I could unravel the battlefield killer move eight doors labyrinth. But up until now, I have been suffering from having no relevant wisdom path Immortal Gu, thus my methods are limited and my capabilities insufficient. If I could refine this wisdom path Immortal Gu, I can definitely unravel unmanned unmoving troops.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng, who was beside him, also backed him up: “I have known Brother Xing Xiang for many years, I know he is not someone who exaggerates or speaks empty words. Since he says he has confidence, then he definitely has confidence. I can guarantee this.”

Su Bai Man, however, was not satisfied with Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s guarantee, as she looked at the person in concern, Fang Yuan, and pursued: “If you have the wisdom path Immortal Gu, can you guarantee you can unravel that battlefield killer move?”

Fang Yuan did not answer directly, instead taking a step back in order to advance further, intentionally giving a bitter smile: “How can I have complete certainty? This matter concerns Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, one of the ten supreme experts in history! If something unexpected happens, it would be normal. But for now at least, based on the part that is shown, I am quite confident of unraveling it if I can have the help of the wisdom path Immortal Gu.”

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man glanced at each other, although they were angry at Fang Yuan’s slippery words, they were moved as well.

There was no other way.

They had suffered much hardship beforehand.

Previously, they had spent a considerable price to invite other wisdom path Gu Immortals to help, but the outcome was emphatically not ideal, they even lost an Immortal Gu in the end.

As for Xing Xiang Zi....

They had cooperated with him many times now, and knew many details about him.

More importantly, Fang Yuan had joined Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance, and could be considered a person on the same side.

Thus, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man’s first choice was Fang Yuan.

However, financing Fang Yuan to refine Immortal Gu was difficult as well.

The cost of refining Immortal Gu was rather high, while the success rate was too low, and depended on luck.

If luck was good, one could refine successfully in the first attempt. Then everything would be a joyous matter. But this situation was very rare.

If luck was not good, there was a possibility of always failing. At that time, even if there was a huge pile of immortal essence stones, they would just be wasted with no gains.

This was also the reason most Gu Immortals would rather capture wild Immortal Gu than to think of refining Immortal Gu themselves.

Refining Immortal Gu was difficult.

In the present cultivation world, many rank six Gu Immortals did not have even one Immortal Gu on them, and could only use mortal Gu to hold their own.

Fang Yuan was a special case. He had a lot of Immortal Gu, so many that were they to be exposed, perhaps people would not believe it!

However, he had reborn, had fortuitous encounters, taken deadly risks, and faced all sorts of harsh conditions to obtain these Immortal Gu.

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man did not know these details, but they were aware of Fang Yuan’s intention.

Fang Yuan wanted to rely on them to lend him a hand in refining wisdom path Immortal Gu.

As far as they were concerned, Fang Yuan could not afford this expenditure and had no accumulations to refine Immortal Gu, thus he was making them help him.

If it were any other time, Shark Demon would definitely have scoffed and not even given a thought.

What a joke!

How silly would he be to help others refine Immortal Gu?

However, in the current situation, Shark Demon had to request Fang Yuan’s help in unraveling the battlefield killer move.

Right now, Shark Demon had one question on his mind — was Xing Xiang Zi fooling them? Was he using this chance to blackmail them, when even without Immortal Gu, he had the ability to unravel this battlefield killer move?

Fang Yuan saw Shark Demon’s hesitation, but did not speak and only drank the wine.

This moment and time was just perfect, Fang Yuan had confidence.

Previously, the timing was wrong, now Yu Lu blessed land was laid out in front of them like a juicy piece of meat dangling in the air, tempting Shark Demon. This had indeed done a great favor to Fang Yuan.

As long as they completely dismantled unmoving troops, Shark Demon and Su Bai

Man would gain lots of benefits, obtaining hundreds of times what they had invested!

Naturally, with Fang Yuan’s personality, he had already thought of devouring these alone, and backstabbing them.

However, his strength was not enough to beat even just Shark Demon!

Shark Demon was a veteran rank seven immortal zombie, although Fang Yuan had rank seven battle strength, it was not outstanding among rank seven Gu Immortals.

But this was already quite good, after all, Fang Yuan’s cultivation was only at the bottom tier of rank six.

Fang Yuan could not defeat even Shark Demon, let alone when there were Su Bai Man and other Gu Immortals as well. As for Zombie Alliance behind Shark Demon, there was even less need to mention them.

For a colossal force like Zombie Alliance, Fang Yuan was just a rat running across the street.

Fang Yuan was rational and calm, and knew his own limits. He had observed and evaluated the situation before he joined this expedition, in order to get a share of the profits and extract the greatest benefits for himself.

When Fang Yuan drank the third cup of wine, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man had already finished their secret discussion.

They quickly reached a consensus.

They decided to aid Fang Yuan financially and help him refine wisdom path Immortal Gu.

Even if it was Fang Yuan blackmailing them, they had no choice but to settle for it!

They did not even force Fang Yuan to make an oath or use Gu worms to probe out his true thoughts.

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man were, naturally, not foolish.

Besides urgently needing Fang Yuan’s help for this final important hurdle, they also had another intention.

That was to improve their relationship with Fang Yuan.

After all, the wisdom path potential Fang Yuan showed was already worth it for them to make an investment.

Wisdom path Gu Immortals were rare, having a friendship with a wisdom path Gu Immortal was very precious.

However, just as Shark Demon was about to reply, there was suddenly a change.

The immense sea shook intensely, thunder crackled, and countless chaotic sea currents pressed on towards the underwater palace.

Immediately, a piercing fire pillar shot down from outside the sea, directly striking at Shark Demon’s underwater palace with shocking might.

Rumble!

A loud sound reverberated through the area, and the magnificent underwater palace shined with the radiance of a defensive Gu formation.

However, the light could not last for even a breath of time before it was torn apart by the fire pillar.

In an instant, stones and bricks broke and flew in all directions, the palace turned into ruins, the fire kept on burning and was actually not extinguished by the sea.

The extremely pleasant banquet had now thoroughly ended, as the endless sea water surged in, sweeping away all the furnishings and the delicacies of the banquet, and soon submerged Fang Yuan and the group.

However, the four were all Gu Immortals, and had no problems staying in this depth of the sea.

Shark Demon was an immortal zombie, and did not need to breathe in the sea.

He was dazed for a moment before suddenly standing up and looked at the sky above the sea, shouting in fury: “Such audacity! Who dares to attack my sea area?”

Su Bai Man also stood beside Shark Demon, similarly gazing up, her expression pale.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng glanced at each other, puzzled.

Shark Demon had outstanding strength, and with Su Bai Man accompanying him everywhere, they could advance or retreat easily. Such a duo was already extremely dangerous to provoke, more importantly, there was also Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance behind them.

Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance was the main headquarters of the Zombie Alliances over the five regions. They were a colossal force, a level stronger than even super forces, and could even be called an overlord of the Eastern Sea cultivation world.

Who is it that came to attack Zombie Alliance’s Shark Demon?

“Hahaha.” Shark Demon had just shouted, when a voice resounded in everyone’s ears, “This is only a small appetizer, I am not only going to destroy your palace, I will also beat you lowlife lovers till you can’t even stand up!”

The voice was extremely arrogant and domineering, moreover from the voice, it was a female immortal?

“It’s her?!” Su Bai Man said, her eyes widened, showing a clearly surprised and grave look.

A bright red figure descended from the sky, pressing down into the sea and towards the four on the seabed.

Fang Yuan gazed above at this female immortal and saw she was descending extremely fast. Her whole body was blazing with fire which swayed in the water. As for her true appearance, it was hidden in the flames and could not be seen clearly.

“This surging aura... a rank eight Gu Immortal!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng blurted.

Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes, adding a sentence inwardly: ‘More precisely, this is a rank eight female immortal zombie.’

Immediately, Shark Demon shouted out the female immortal’s identity.

“Blazing Heaven Demoness, have you gone crazy? You dare to attack a person belonging to Zombie Alliance like you? You are challenging Zombie Alliance’s authority, and will definitely be severely punished.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness!

Fang Yuan’s eyes brightened, as he recalled that he had heard this name before.

This name was a famous one.

Blazing Heaven Demoness, a rank eight Gu Immortal. She was from Northern Plains, the leader of the Northern Plains Zombie Alliance branch!

After Fang Yuan had infiltrated into Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, he had heard other members mention and talk of her many times, praising and revering Blazing Heaven Demoness’ formidable strength and domineering style.

Fang Yuan had not expected to see such a person in this way.

Blazing Heaven Demoness, who was covered in fire, laughed loudly: “Shark Demon, don’t talk nonsense. The matter between us is an internal conflict between Zombie Alliance members. Speak! What are you trying to do by stealing my immortal material?”

Su Bai Man was just about to question Blazing Heaven Demoness, but had not expected Blazing Heaven Demoness to blame them first.

Shark Demon shouted: “Nonsense! When did I steal your immortal material? If you want to frame me, go find a better reason! These last days, I have only been paying attention to doing the assignment of Zombie Alliance, invading Yu Lu blessed land, when would I have the time to steal your immortal material? You are just trying to start a quarrel!”

Blazing Heaven Demoness, however, was not flustered, instead confidently laughing: “Hahaha, I came here with a witness. Shark Demon, you won’t be able to deny it!”

Shark Demon was so furious that he laughed: “Good, good, let me see what witness you have.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 919: Angry Bird

In the sea and under the water, the two sides were in a stalemate, it was a tense atmosphere.

A moment ago, Fang Yuan was still enjoying a banquet with Shark Demon and his wife, having a joyous time. But at the next moment, they were attacked, the entire underwater palace of Shark Demon was turned into rubble.

As the saying goes: While a person stays in their house, calamity descends from the sky.

Fang Yuan looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng as the latter transmitted: “Blazing Heaven Demoness is a rank eight great expert, she is not someone we can fight.”

Fang Yuan nodded inconspicuously, he understood Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s intention, that was to sit and watch.

At Gu Immortal level, the higher the rank, the greater the difference between them.

Even if Fang Yuan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Shark Demon, and Su Bai Man collaborated and worked together sincerely, they might not be able to hold off Blazing Heaven Demoness over multiple rounds even if they disregarded the cost.

This was an absolutely powerful foe.

Normally, only rank eight Gu Immortals could fight other rank eights.

Shark Demon also knew this, thus, even though his house was destroyed, he did not dare to fight Blazing Heaven Demoness head on.

With Shark Demon’s temper, if his house was destroyed, he would burst into anger and attack. But because it was Blazing Heaven Demoness, a rank eight Gu Immortal, he had to control himself even if he was angry.

He knew he was not a match for the rank eight Gu Immortal, the best way to solve this problem now was to use Zombie Alliance’s rules and negotiate with her.

Blazing Heaven Demoness had gone against the rules of Zombie Alliance, she was finding problems with an ally, how could that be allowed? Such blatant attacks are simply giving no regard to Zombie Alliance!

But Blazing Heaven Demoness smiled confidently, like she had already won: “Shark Demon, isn’t it simple to justify my actions?”

“Bo Dan, come out!” Blazing Heaven Demoness called.

Gu Immortal Bo Dan stood out from behind Blazing Heaven Demoness.

He lowered his head, his expression was bitter as he bowed deeply: “Lord Shark Demon, Lady Su Bai Man, I was forced against my will!”

Seeing Bo Dan, Shark Demon’s expression turned dark.

His wife Su Bai Man also snorted coldly, she had an idea of what Blazing Heaven Demoness’ plan was.

As expected, at the next moment, everyone heard Blazing Heaven Demoness scream: “Shark Demon, Su Bai Man, the two of you instructed Bo Dan to steal my rank eight immortal material, medicine ice. I was in closed cultivation and was careless, the two of you actually succeeded. Today, I am here to seek justice!”

As it turned out, Bo Dan was quite pitiful, even though he was alive, he had no choice but to join Zombie Alliance.

Just earlier, his private sea area was taken over by Blazing Heaven Demoness using brute force.

Fang Yuan entered Eastern Sea using Xing Xiang Zi’s identity and joined Shark Demon in the invasion of Yu Lu blessed land.

Bo Dan was a half-baked wisdom path Gu Immortal, his skill was lacking, he was schemed against by Fang Yuan.

To protect his status, he had to bribe Su Bai Man and give her the rank eight immortal material medicine ice, so that Su Bai Man would defend him.

But Bo Dan was still too incapable, he and Shark Demon slowly became estranged.

Bo Dan was left with no choice, he attempted to use Zombie Alliance to exert pressure on Blazing Heaven Demoness, so that she would return him his private sea area.

However, he was only rank six, while Blazing Heaven Demoness was a rank eight great expert. As the leader of Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, she was a higher-up. Even though Zombie Alliance received Bo Dan’s plea and complaint, they dragged out his request and tried to stall for time. How could they offend the powerful Blazing Heaven Demoness for this mere Bo Dan?

Thus, Bo Dan’s situation became increasingly pathetic, until Fang Yuan unraveled the battlefield killer move eight doors labyrinth and obtained a huge breakthrough in the invasion of Yu Lu blessed land.

Ever since Shark Demon invaded Yu Lu blessed land, he had been receiving heavy attention.

Seeing that Yu Lu blessed land was about to be taken down, with such great benefits, Blazing Heaven Demoness’ greed was stirred.

Even though Blazing Heaven Demoness had incredible cultivation level, she was superior to them and had great strength, but she could not forcefully take over the fruits of the labor of Yu Lu blessed land.

After all, this was Eastern Sea, not Northern Plains.

This was the Zombie Alliance headquarters, not her Northern Plains branch.

Since she was a member of Zombie Alliance, she could not break the rules.

Thus, she sent Bo Dan a message, lying that she would return him his private sea area and would compensate him.

Bo Dan had no long term accommodation, as he was wandering about, he received this news and was overjoyed.

In the end, when he returned, he was forced by Blazing Heaven Demoness to frame Shark Demon and Su Bai Man.

Bo Dan did not dare to offend Blazing Heaven Demoness, but he also did not dare to offend Shark Demon and Su Bai Man. He realized that he had fallen into a trap and was in deep regret, but now that he was in Blazing Heaven Demoness’ hands, he had no choice left.

In the end, he was captured by Blazing Heaven Demoness and was brought to attack Shark Demon’s underwater palace.

Shark Demon’s gaze moved from Bo Dan to Blazing Heaven Demoness.

He knew that Bo Dan was just a minor character, he was not crucial.

This accusation would not hold up against any investigations.

Shark Demon held in the anger inside him as he sneered at Blazing Heaven Demoness: “Blazing Heaven Demoness, just say it if you want to pick the fruits, why must you implicate an innocent person?”

Su Bai Man followed: “Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness, you are a rank eight great expert, aren’t your current actions too ugly?”

Blazing Heaven Demoness laughed loudly.

She naturally knew that this excuse was weak.

But that did not matter.

She just needed a cover, just an excuse would do.

This excuse was only used to respond to Zombie Alliance’s headquarters, it could not force Shark Demon and his wife to obey her.

To force Shark Demon and his wife, what was needed was not an excuse, but strength.

Thus, she came here personally with overflowing battle intent, she was here to find trouble with them!

“Hahaha...” Blazing Heaven Demoness’ laughter stopped, her eyes shined with brilliance as she looked at the sea, suddenly saying: “Three moves.”

“What?” Su Bai Man was shocked.

“I will finish you off in three moves. If you can block three moves of mine, I will pretend I was never here.” Blazing Heaven Demoness said sternly.

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man looked at each other, the former let out a breath of turbid air and agreed: “Alright! Let the four of us experience your power!”

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ three moves agreement made Shark Demon see some hope.

Of course, the most important reason was that they were helpless in this situation. He had to agree regardless of his wishes!

Weaklings had no choices in the first place.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng frowned slightly, he did not want to take action, but Shark Demon was crafty, with a few words he directly included Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng on his side, against Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Fang Yuan was calm, showing no change of expression.

Su Bai Man transmitted to them: “If we can survive this ordeal, both of us will owe you a favor, as for compensation, we will pay you a sum that is sure to satisfy you. We hope that both of you can support us!”

“Don’t worry, we will do our best.” Fang Yuan transmitted in return.

In his mind, he had made his decision, he would just pretend to exert effort, only an idiot would help in such a dangerous and pointless request!

Su Bai Man nodded at Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, showing a hint of gratitude in her gaze.

“I am a wisdom path Gu Immortal, while Tai Bai Yun Sheng is skilled at healing, even if we perform badly later, we have sufficient reasons to justify ourselves.” Fang Yuan stood out, standing with Shark Demon and Su Bai Man, facing Blazing Heaven Demoness who was at the surface of the sea.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng sighed internally, standing beside Fang Yuan.

Blazing Heaven Demoness laughed lightly, with a look of nonchalance.

She stretched out her hand, opening her five fingers.

Suddenly.

With a soft sound, an orange-yellow flame appeared in her hand.

Blazing Heaven Demoness moved her fingers, rubbing the orange-yellow flame. This lump of flame was extraordinary, it was very elastic. Blazing Heaven Demoness squeezed it as if she was squeezing a meatball.

After a few breaths of time, the orange-yellow flame gradually formed into the appearance of a bird.

Blazing Heaven Demoness opened her hand as the fire bird jumped up from her palm, flapping its wings and chirping, happily fluttering around Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Blazing Heaven Demoness toyed around with the fire bird, not attacking, as if she had forgotten the agreement of three moves.

But be it Shark Demon, Su Bai Man, Fang Yuan or Tai Bai Yun Sheng, they showed extremely ugly expressions!

This fire bird had a cute appearance, but it was terrifyingly powerful in the eyes of the four Gu Immortals. Once released, it would unleash shocking might. Not just this underwater palace, the rest of this shark sea, countless living beings in a huge surrounding area of water might be exterminated by a single blow.

A rank eight Gu Immortal cannot be blocked by rank six or rank seven Gu Immortals.

The agreement of three moves was just a joke.

Just this one attack, Shark Demon and the rest could not defend against it.

“Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness, may I know what is the name of this move?” Shark Demon asked after a while, he spoke in a dispirited tone with a hint of hoarseness in his voice.

Blazing Heaven Demoness smiled lightly: “Hundreds of years ago, I was careless when cultivating and flames of anger were burning my heart, I almost lost my life. When I was recovering, I had an inspiration and created this rank eight level killer move. I named it — Angry Bird.”

“Angry bird?” This joke-like name made Shark Demon feel some shock and also bitterness.

Undeniably, Blazing Heaven Demoness was doing this on purpose.

She wanted to display overwhelming strength to force Shark Demon to surrender.

This was a very crude method, but Blazing Heaven Demoness was too overbearing, she was straightforward and had incredible cultivation level, with her battle strength, it was an effective plan.

With just one move, Fang Yuan and the others had given up.

Only Shark Demon was still hanging on.

He said to the rest of them: “You three, retreat first, I will handle this move.”

Before Fang Yuan and the others replied, Shark Demon took one step forward and said: “Angry bird, it is a good move, Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness, please attack!”

Blazing Heaven Demoness was shocked, she squinted as she asked in suspicion: “Are you sure you want to face this move?”

“Let’s retreat.” Su Bai Man’s eyes shined with brilliance, she spoke to Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were surprised.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ move was incredibly powerful, there was no hope even if the four of them collaborated. Right now, Shark Demon was facing her alone, not only did he not want other people’s help, even his wife Su Bai Man had such confidence in him!

What was he relying on?

“Alright, I want to see what is giving you courage!” Blazing Heaven Demoness no longer hesitated, at her will, the angry bird tore through the water, shooting towards Shark Demon.

But when it got to the bottom of the sea, a strong aura burst out, contesting Blazing Heaven Demoness equally!

Shark Demon showed a smiling expression, like his plan had succeeded.

Far away, Su Bai Man let out a sigh of relief, she explained to Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng: “Back then, we chose this location to build our underwater palace, we naturally had our reasons.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 920: Immemorial Desolate Beast, One Finger Flow Shark

A surging, vast aura!

Everyone’s gazes were attracted to it.

The sea became turbulent and tides started to rise.

Countless undercurrents formed in the seabed and moved rapidly while intertwined together, like countless giant dragons or pythons.

Undercurrent vortex started forming and continued to increase in numbers sharply!

Soon, the dangerous vortexes numbered to thousands, filling this sea area.

“This is?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was startled.

“Immemorial desolate beast!” Fang Yuan’s eyes brightened.

Ordinary wild beasts, hundred beast kings, thousand beast kings, myriad beast kings, beast emperors, desolate beasts, ancient desolate beasts, immemorial desolate beasts...

Among them, immemorial desolate beasts were powerful existences comparable to rank eight Gu Immortals!

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man stared fixedly at the center of this aura — there, the form of the immemorial desolate beast was gradually revealed.

The state of the enemy was unknown, Blazing Heaven Demoness also had no choice but to stop her attacks for the moment, recalling the small fire bird to her side.

The sea tides rose and fell along with the rough waves.

The surface of the sea became dangerous while the undercurrents flowed chaotically inside the sea.

Several breaths later, the mysterious immemorial desolate beast’s true appearance was completely revealed.

This formidable immemorial desolate beast was unimaginably small and dainty looking.

It was so small that it was actually the size of an adult’s finger.

This was a shark.

An extremely exquisite and cute shark.

The size of an adult’s index finger.

Its whole body was shining with silver light. This light was not dazzling but mild, like a silk cloth that gently covered the small shark.

“Such a formidable aura, yet its body is like this...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng sighed, having a strange expression at this sight.

Blazing Heaven Demoness, however, showed a trace of seriousness.

The small shark ignored Fang Yuan, Shark Demon and the rest behind it, from the start, its two eyes had been gazing at Blazing Heaven Demoness, revealing intense enmity.

Shark Demon let out a breath, and transmitted his voice to Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng: “My plan has fortunately succeeded... don’t underestimate this small shark. It is a one finger flow shark.”

“This is a one finger flow shark?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked surprised and shocked.

Ordinary Gu Immortals would not know of the one finger flow shark, but as a time path Gu Immortal, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had long since heard of its name.

In fact, almost all time path Gu Immortals knew a mnemonic — one finger flow shark, an instance of brilliance. Flowing water and clear voice, heaven is impartial.

It was no exaggeration to say that the one finger flow shark was known widely because of the mnemonic.

It was a rank eight time path desolate beast, bearing extremely large amounts of time path dao marks, thus it could swim in the river of time with its physical body!

“The one finger flow shark normally hides in the river of time and does not reveal itself. The two of us also found its tracks by chance. Later, we intentionally requested for this sea area from Zombie Alliance, and built this shark sea.” Shark Demon continued to explain to Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Blazing Heaven Demoness suddenly chuckled: “So it was like that, no wonder you two stopped at no expense to exchange for an immortal killer move of the enslavement path grandmaster, Hundred and Eighty Slaves, from Zombie Alliance — Lower Controls Higher. It was to use this enslavement path killer move to subdue this one finger flow shark, right?”

Enslavement path had always been about enslaving higher beasts to control lower.

For instance, back when Fang Yuan was in Northern Plains, using Wolf King Chang Shan Yin’s identity to participate in the contest of the imperial court, he had used myriad beast kings, thousand beast kings and so on to indirectly control the whole wolf army.

After all, one had a limited soul foundation, enslavement path Gu Masters could not directly control all the wild beasts.

The larger the scale of the beast group, the weaker the controlling power of the enslavement path Gu Master would be, the more their soul would have to endure and the less capable they would be in displaying skillful control.

But this was not absolute.

Gu are the essence of heaven and earth, man is the spirit of all living beings.

The wisdom of humans was undoubtedly at the top of all living beings.

In the long history of Gu cultivation, there once appeared an enslavement path grandmaster. He had a rough childhood, being born as a slave, and thus had very meager status. He used all the opportunities he obtained and took risks, continuously maturing and finally climbing to the pinnacle.

He was Hundred and Eighty Slaves.

A generation’s genius.

Normal enslavement path methods were to use those of higher status to rule over lower status. But he did the opposite, using beasts of lower status to rule over those of a higher status.

This was not without reason.

For instance, an emperor was the ruler, welding absolute power, sitting high above. But sometimes, when the people are united and of one mind, the emperor would also be trapped by the people’s will, and would be forced to do things against their own will.

Facing Blazing Heaven Demoness’ speculation, Shark Demon nodded and frankly admitted: “You guessed right, that is the case. I have been constantly managing the shark groups in this sea area, it is to use these shark groups to subdue the one finger flow shark. Unfortunately, my enslavement path attainment is insufficient and I also don’t have the Immortal Gu forming the killer move lower controls higher, thus, I haven’t succeeded until now.”

Hearing this, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng could not help but glance at each other.

Shark Demon had a huge target, his ambition truly was not small.

He was only a rank seven immortal zombie, but wanted to subdue an immemorial desolate beast.

Those able to advance to Gu Immortals indeed were not simple.

If he truly succeeded and had such an aid, Shark Demon could be considered half a rank eight Gu Immortal. His status would immediately rise, with fame and benefits flowing in rapidly.

Currently, he might not have succeeded, but he had made some achievements.

At the least, after this one finger flow shark appeared, it had not cared about Shark Demon’s side, and instead directed all its hatred and anger to Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Shark Demon continued: “Moreover, this one finger flow shark is not only an immemorial desolate beast, it also contains several time path Immortal Gu!”

The intention of his words was to make Blazing Heaven Demoness aware of what she was dealing with and make her retreat.

This was not revealing information.

The one finger flow shark’s body was overflowing with the aura of Immortal Gu without being concealed. Even Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng could clearly feel it, let alone the rank eight immortal zombie Blazing Heaven Demoness.

“It is rumored that the river of time is home to countless time path Gu worms. The one finger flow shark can freely move around in the river of time, thus having Immortal Gu is not strange.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng whispered to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan thought of Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s inheritance.

He had to move deep into the river of time to obtain Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s inheritance. Maybe he could rely on the one finger flow shark’s ability?

The one finger flow shark was extremely rare, and there were probably not many even in the river of time.

To put it in other words, this was a major opportunity that could not be sought out and only found through chance.

No wonder Shark Demon and Su Bai Man stopped at no expense, spending endless time and energy to obtain the one finger flow shark.

“Hahaha!” Shark Demon’s words made Blazing Heaven Demoness laugh loudly, “Listening to what you say makes my urge to strike even stronger. Shark Demon! You want to rely on an outside force to make me retreat? To win without fighting? Hehe, wishful thinking!”

The moment she finished speaking, Blazing Heaven Demoness pointed with her finger.

The small fire bird perched on her shoulder suddenly moved, flying straight towards Shark Demon’s direction.

“It’s coming!” Shark Demon, Fang Yuan and the rest felt their hearts chill, their whole body turned tense as they became extremely vigilant.

The fire bird seemed harmless but in truth, its power was vast and extraordinary.

However, at this moment!

The one finger flow shark suddenly moved, resembling a silver firefly as it pounced at the fire bird.

The two were extremely fast, and in the blink of an eye, had already collided in the sea!

There was no sound and there was no explosion. The instant they collided, a strange thing occurred.

Both sides, which were extremely fast, suddenly stilled. Turning from extreme speed to extreme stillness, at that instant, the one finger flow shark and the small fire bird seemed to have transformed into a painting.

Such a transformation gave the spectators a feeling of being too abrupt.

Shortly, Fang Yuan and the rest saw the one finger flow shark slowly move, using its exquisite nose to lightly poke the small fire bird.

Afterwards, the one finger flow shark made an extremely elegant motion, its whole body leaped over the small fire bird and continued to swiftly move ahead.

In the blink of an eye, the stillness ended.

The speeds of the one finger flow shark and the small fire bird were restored.

However, the former had already moved past the small fire bird and was charging towards Blazing Heaven Demoness.

While the small fire bird was moving towards Shark Demon and the rest of the group.

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man were already extremely alert and when they saw the small bird nearing them, they held their breaths, preparing to contend with it.

Fang Yuan was almost about to pull away and retreat, but right at this moment, the small fire bird suddenly flapped its wings and drew an arc as it turned around, chasing after the one finger flow shark.

“Such nimbleness!” Shark Demon was able to avoid this confrontation, but he was instead pale from shock.

‘This small fire bird can move smoothly according to the controller’s thoughts, it seems it is not a simple fire path killer move, there are definitely wisdom path methods mixed in it.’ Fang Yuan analyzed rapidly.

“That scene just now should be because a certain time path Immortal Gu in the one finger flow shark activated. This Immortal Gu can cause the flow of time in a certain range to become extremely slow. It seemed like the two turned from extreme speed to almost complete stillness, but their speed had actually not changed.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly said.

Su Bai Man nodded and added: “Not only that. When the one finger flow shark poked the fire bird’s body, the Immortal Gu’s aura had changed again, it should be the activation of the second time path Immortal Gu, it is just that its effect is unclear.”

The moment she finished speaking, the effect showed up.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ expression suddenly changed, because the small fire bird chasing the one finger flow shark, had suddenly detonated.

Boom!

Like a crack of thunder resounded over the area.

Flames accompanied the surging blast, as it ferociously spread everywhere.

In an instant, an immense quantity of sea water evaporated and countless lives were lost.

A hemispherical crater formed over the whole sea.

When the fire bird had detonated, it had already flown out of the sea, but the bottom of the crater had unexpectedly touched the soil of the seabed.

Next, the surrounding seawater surged in to fill the gap.

Swoosh!

Tides surged, and huge waves stirred up in the sea. The soil on the seabed rolled and mixed in with the water, making visibility extremely poor.

Fang Yuan and the rest were in a rather miserable state, they had no choice but to fly out of the sea and float in the sky as they continued to watch the battle.

They saw the one finger flow shark shoot directly towards Blazing Heaven Demoness’ face like a silver arrow.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ expression became more focused, how would she dare to take it head-on?

Man is the spirit of all livings beings, this phrase was not false, but when strength, recovery, speed and so on were compared, humans were not outstanding among the endless living beings.

Even after becoming Gu Immortals, they usually could not compare to desolate beasts.

The one finger flow shark was small, but it was an immemorial desolate beast, its small body concealed incomparably frightening brute strength!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 921: Big Fish Eat Small Fish

The one finger flow shark shot forward.

Blazing Heaven Demoness cultivated fire path, not strength path, she knew it would be hard to resist it head on.

However, she had extremely rich experience, and the sacrifice of the small fire bird had huge value, Fang Yuan and the rest had been able to get some information from it, Blazing Heaven Demoness naturally was not an exception.

Fire path killer move — Five Fingers Blazing Chains!

At that instant, Blazing Heaven Demoness had already made the most sensible decision.

She quickly retreated, while spreading open her right hand, her five fingers turned into five thin flames, they were like whips or chains as they moved to tie up the one finger flow shark.

The five fire chains were just about to coil around the one finger flow shark, when the previous scene occurred.

The time in the area around the one finger flow shark suddenly slowed down to an extreme.

However, as a time path desolate beast, this had lesser restriction on the one finger flow shark with its adapted traits and huge numbers of time path dao marks.

The five fire chains coiled around, but one finger flow shark swayed nimbly, moving through the tiny gaps in an inconceivable way before successfully getting past them.

It then charged towards Blazing Heaven Demoness, directly piercing through her forehead.

The exquisite shark was like a silver arrow as it pierced out of the back of Blazing Heaven Demoness’ head!

“Success?” Su Bai Man was shocked as well as happy.

Shark Demon’s eyes shined with a ferocious and restless light.

An immortal zombie’s body did not have fatal points like normal Gu Immortals, but the head was one of them.

The thought processes of immortal zombies was slow, so they had to rely on wisdom path Gu worms to create thoughts and help them in their thinking.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ head was pierced, although not fatal, it was a serious injury.

‘If the four of us can take this chance to attack...’ The moment this thought appeared in Shark Demon’s mind, the one finger flow shark changed its direction, shooting backwards as it pierced through Blazing Heaven Demoness’ chest.

A dark fire burned and in the blink of an eye, the holes in Blazing Heaven Demoness’ head and chest had been restored to their former states.

Even Fang Yuan was left speechless at this sight: “Such a formidable killer move, it can actually make the recovery so fast!”

Blazing Heaven Demoness covered her chest as she stared fixedly at the one finger flow shark, in spite of having been heavily injured, she was smiling: “Hehehe, interesting! This has three time path Immortal Gu, one can slow down time, one can speed up time and the last can change the perception of time.”

Although she did not know what time path Immortal Gu they were and what were the limits of their power, Blazing Heaven Demoness was able to make some rough conjectures.

When the one finger flow shark collided with the small fire bird and dodged the five fire chains, it had used the first time path Immortal Gu to slow down time.

As for accelerating time, it used it when it poked the fire bird.

The fire bird could not be maintained for long, and a part of it had reached its limits after the one finger flow shark had hit it. The explosion of this part subsequently caused the explosions of the other parts, finally destroying the stable structure of the fire bird, causing the fire bird to explode, which almost dried up the surrounding parts of the sea area.

Finally, when the one finger flow shark pierced through Blazing Heaven Demoness’ forehead and chest, it used the last time path Immortal Gu to influence Blazing Heaven Demoness’ perception of time, causing her to not be able to dodge and take the attack directly.

Shark Demon’s frown not only became deeper, he also felt the situation had turned bad.

The one finger flow shark indeed clearly had the auras of three Immortal Gu.

In just a few moves, Blazing Heaven Demoness had already probed the details of the one finger flow shark.

This was a clear display of this rank eight Gu Immortal’s extremely formidable proficiency in fighting.

At the same time, it also showed the superiority of immortal killer moves to Immortal Gu.

Gu worms had one ability, others could often find the details of the Immortal Gu after it was used just once.

However, immortal killer moves were different. They were a combination of countless Gu worms, not only did this conceal the core Immortal Gu, enemies would also find it harder to counter the effect.

Just like Shark Demon expected, as the fight continued, Blazing Heaven Demoness changed her battle tactics.

She split into five or six clones, each was lifelike, the one finger flow shark was tired out rushing this way and that, its offensive was seemingly impressive but it was actually being played by these clones to move around in circles.

“Wild beast are wild beasts in the end, they don’t have enough wisdom.”

“If it had an investigative Immortal Gu, maybe it could see through these clones, a pity....”

“It looks like the battle situation is set, Blazing Heaven Demoness has already obtained the advantage.”

Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng secretly conversed, analyzing the battle situation.

It could be said that at this stage, the battle had already lost any suspense.

Regarding the one finger flow shark, its real chance had been during the initial stages. If it could have used this opportunity when Blazing Heaven Demoness was still unaware of its trump cards, it perhaps could have killed her.

But now that Blazing Heaven Demoness had probed out its cards, she had changed her tactics and immediately took over the battle situation.

Unless there was an outside interference, this battle would have only one possible outcome.

‘The only outside forces at present are Shark Demon and Su Bai Man. But do they truly have the courage to go against a rank eight expert?’ Fang Yuan glanced at the immortal zombie couple and inwardly shook his head as he saw their hesitant looks.

The true chance had been the instant Blazing Heaven Demoness’ head was pierced.

But Shark Demon already lost this chance.

Although his name included the word ‘demon’, he lacked the mentality of taking risk in spite of danger. It could be because he had been part of Zombie Alliance for too long and lost the enthusiasm to fight by himself. It could also be that he had misgivings about dragging down Su Bai Man.

Even Shark Demon and Su Bai Man, as the people involved, were like this. Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, who were just external aid, would be even more unlikely to take this risk.

After secretly communicating for a while, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng made the decision to act according to the circumstances and look to retreat when there was a chance.

“Sirs, please make your moves! We are unable to distinguish the clones of Blazing Heaven Demoness. Sirs, if you have a method, please break this deception for the one finger flow shark and point out the location of the true body of Blazing Heaven Demoness. This will make the situation turn for the better.” At this moment, Su Bai Man suddenly transmitted her voice, requesting earnestly.

At the same time, Shark Demon also added: “If you can succeed, we will reward you heavily, you won’t regret it!”

Without any consideration, Fang Yuan refused with a bitter smile: “Lady Su Bai Man overestimates us, you two have been rank seven Gu Immortals for many years with plenty of methods and deep foundation, we are unable to match you. Even you two don’t have a way to solve this, how can the two of us be of any help?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng, similarly, shook his head: “I only specialize in healing, this matter regarding investigation is beyond my ability.”

Su Bai Man did not say anything more while Shark Demon gave a gloomy look at Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, his expression clearly not pleased.

Fang Yuan snorted inwardly, feeling disdain towards Shark Demon and Su Bai Man.

Honestly speaking, it was not that Blazing Heaven Demoness’ method could not be resolved.

But Shark Demon and Su Bai Man did not make a move.

It was because the other party was a rank eight great expert, once they moved to help the one finger flow shark, it definitely meant they would attract Blazing Heaven Demoness’ fury and her counterattack.

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man feared Blazing Heaven Demoness and did not want to make a move, wanting to preserve some leeway, thus they wanted to make Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng cannon fodder.

How could Fang Yuan be stupid enough to be used by others like this?

Thus, his reply had deep intentions.

Both sides were astute, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man realized Fang Yuan had seen through their plot, so they did not attempt to persuade any further.

“Now it seems the truly terrifying one is still Blazing Heaven Demoness!” Fang Yuan gazed at the distant battlefield, not concealing his fearful expression.

It was rumored that Blazing Heaven Demoness had a great killer move called blazing heaven.

In the past, she had fought with the rank eight Heavenly Lord Bai Zu in Northern Plains over possession of a certain fragment world of the immemorial nine heavens, but in the end she failed, despite being on the verge of success.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was so furious, she used the killer move blazing heaven to directly burn down the whole fragment world, annihilating countless living beings.

If I can’t have it, you can also stop dreaming about it!

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s hard work and plans all turned to dust at the last moment.

Northern Plains Zombie Alliance belonged to the righteous path, Blazing Heaven Demoness, however, blatantly had taken a demonic path action. Thus, after burning down the fragment world, she incited public outrage.

Blazing Heaven Demoness withstood the pressure without any fear, even proclaiming that if anyone continued to make a fuss, she would burn down that person’s blessed land.

Since she could even burn down a fragment world of the immemorial nine heavens, burning down a blessed land was clearly a simple matter.

The righteous path choked on their words, as they unexpectedly discovered they could do nothing to this brazen Blazing Heaven Demoness!

At rank eight, one could be an overlord. If they truly shed off all pretenses and started sneak attacking and harassing, any force would feel an incomparable headache.

Helpless.

Even if the other party was an immortal zombie, she was a rank eight great expert after all. Although her battle strength could not match a normal rank eight, it could not be looked down upon and was not someone they could force.

If they went beyond the limit, and Blazing Heaven Demoness decided to attack, these righteous path forces with many assets to take care of would be the ones to suffer.

Those with a bottom line are afraid of those with no bottom line, those who follow the rules are afraid of those who don’t.

After this matter, Blazing Heaven Demoness’ name spread throughout Northern Plains, Northern Plains Zombie Alliance was able to hold their heads high and no one could bully them. It was only after Blazing Heaven Demoness left Northern Plains to look for fortuitous encounters in Eastern Sea that Northern Plains Zombie Alliance fell back into a predicament.

It could be said that Blazing Heaven Demoness had single-handedly brought Northern Plains Zombie Alliance to power and glory.

Now, Blazing Heaven Demoness was fighting against the one finger flow shark without even using her signature killer moves. She clearly had a lot of spare strength left.

Fang Yuan even had a slight suspicion that Blazing Heaven Demoness had intentionally used the clone technique to try to lure Shark Demon and the rest to attack, thus finding another excuse to make trouble.

Although Shark Demon was not duped, Blazing Heaven Demoness' move had created a rift between Fang Yuan and Shark Demon.

The one finger flow shark, an immemorial desolate beast with three time path Immortal Gu, Blazing Heaven Demoness was not only dealing with it easily, but she had successfully plotted against Shark Demon, Fang Yuan and the rest who were observing the battle.

It was clear that Blazing Heaven Demoness had outstanding battle strength along with skill in strategy.

This type of enemy was extremely hard to deal with.

To put it in other words, Gu Immortals who could slowly climb up from rank one to rank eight were certain to not be idiots, each of them were true experts rich in both wisdom and battle strength.

As the battle progressed, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man's expressions became even more gloomy.

They had already secretly sent requests for reinforcements to Zombie Alliance's headquarters at the start of the battle.

The battle had lasted for so long that those who should have come would have already arrived, but no reinforcements had arrived.

Blazing Heaven Demoness had not arrived rashly, she had already bribed those in charge and made sufficient preparations, which was why Shark Demon and Su Bai Man's requests for reinforcements were ineffective.

Shark Demon even guessed that Blazing Heaven Demoness had already reached an agreement of sharing profits with the highest ranking members of Zombie Alliance.

In an instant, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man's hearts sank to rock bottom, their intent to battle kept lowering and the anger in them gradually dissipated, leaving behind extreme bleakness.

Big fish eat small fish, small fish eat shrimps, this was the normal course of behavior in this world of Gu.

This couple, who had been big fish since the beginning, now became small fish in front of Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Rank eight!

How could they match her?

Let alone when Blazing Heaven Demoness not only had such strength, she also had matching intelligence!

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man simply did not have any hope no matter how hard they struggled.

Sigh...

Shark Demon heaved a long sigh before he suddenly lowered his head: “Enough, Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness, please stop. We are not capable enough, in consideration of Zombie Alliance’s situation, it would be better if you lead us to take down Yu Lu blessed land.”

“Hehehe, Shark Demon, you know when to advance or retreat, very good.” Blazing Heaven Demoness’ laughter came from above the battlefield.

Her laughter stopped, and the fake bodies in the battlefield burned until there was nothing remaining.

Without a target to attack, the one finger flow shark stayed dazedly in place, seemingly at a loss on what to do.

Shark Demon heaved another sigh, as he pursed his lips and let out hooting sounds.

The one finger flow shark was pacified, it lightly swung its tail as it dived into the sea again and soon disappeared.

Clearly, it had gone back to the river of time.

Shark Demon’s method gave a shock to outsiders like Fang Yuan.

Shark Demon’s influence over the one finger flow shark was already quite remarkable. Given some time, he might truly be able to control this immemorial desolate beast.

At that time, the three time path Immortal Gu on the one finger flow shark would naturally fall into Shark Demon’s hands.

Blazing Heaven Demoness revealed her true body, she gave a deep look at Shark Demon before turning her gaze towards Fang Yuan.

“You are Xing Xiang Zi?”

“I am.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness announced with a forceful tone that allowed no refusal: “From now onwards, I have enlisted you. In the following invasion of Yu Lu blessed land, you must use your full capabilities, I won’t allow any slacking!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 922: Conclusion of the Hundred Days Battle

Hearing Blazing Heaven Demoness command him so overbearingly, Fang Yuan was not angry at all.

On the contrary, he was somewhat pleased.

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man, this couple had put in a lot of effort to attack Yu Lu blessed land. In the end, right before they obtained the fruits of their labor, Blazing Heaven Demoness forcefully took them for herself, they were really pitiful.

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man had put in so much, almost all of their life savings had been invested into it.

After getting robbed by Blazing Heaven Demoness, they were heavily crippled, they lost a great deal.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man died while shark sea was invaded by others, was this part of the cause?

But Fang Yuan did not feel distaste for Blazing Heaven Demoness’ actions, he also did not feel pity towards the predicament of Shark Demon and Su Bai Man.

If he had Blazing Heaven Demoness’ cultivation level, he might have been more overbearing in his actions.

Big fish eat small fish, this was the rule of the cultivation world, it was bloodthirsty and cruel.

But any person who was older and had more experience would understand — this was the norm, it extended to all parts of nature.

Even before Fang Yuan transmigrated, the human society on Earth was the same.

When benefits were involved, friends would betray each other, brothers would become enemies, this was all too common.

The only difference was, they used excuses to make their actions seem grand and righteous. The truth was, there were people who, on the surface, were virtuous, but in the dark, they were dirty and despicable.

But this was not wrong.

To survive and reproduce was the nature of all living beings.

But Blazing Heaven Demoness’ interference created a huge impact that would influence Fang Yuan’s plans.

“Blazing Heaven Demoness has high cultivation level, she is also astute and calculative, more difficult to deal with than Shark Demon and Su Bai Man by a hundredfold. But she has quite a lot of wealth, maybe she can subsidize me in refining star thought Immortal Gu? There is also another advantage: Getting close to her would give me a greater chance of returning to Northern Plains Zombie Alliance and entering Earth Trench, in order to get that treasure.”

In a breath of time, Fang Yuan had already thought matters through.

The moment Blazing Heaven Demoness finished her words, Fang Yuan cupped his fists, smiling bitterly: “I would not dare to defy Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness’ orders. But I have my difficulties. I had just mentioned this to Lord Shark Demon earlier, in order to unravel the final battlefield killer move, I will need to refine a rank six wisdom path Immortal Gu first.”

Shark Demon snorted coldly.

Fang Yuan had changed sides rather too quickly.

Su Bai Man thought to herself: This Xing Xiang Zi seemed to be a gentleman ordinarily, but to think that he was without a backbone, he could fawn and bend over to others to curry favor, he had no integrity at all!

Fang Yuan did not care about their thoughts. They were already out of this game. Meanwhile, Fang Yuan, who joined partway, managed to stay.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s straightforward gaze, Blazing Heaven Demoness rubbed her chin, she smiled with deep meaning: “You want to refine Immortal Gu... hehehe, this is easy, I will fund you!”

Northern Plains, Luo Po valley.

Another earth-shaking intense battle had just reached its end.

As the battlefield, Luo Po valley was in bad shape, crushed rocks were everywhere, it was as if this was the aftermath of both an earthquake and a hurricane.

The Gu Immortals from Central Continent had various injuries, they were focusing their attentions on Feng Jiu Ge right now.

Admiration, trepidation, confusion, heaviness, fear, complexity, they had a number of different emotions.

“Feng Jiu Ge won again!”

“His opponent is Qin Bai Sheng, but even with his strength, he could not resist Feng Jiu Ge’s powerful attacks.”

“He has already won seven battles in a row, Qin Bai Sheng is completely at a disadvantage against Feng Jiu Ge.”

“The hundred days battle, only after a hundred days did we see its results.”

“Honestly speaking, Qin Bai Sheng is immensely strong, but he actually faced off against an even stronger opponent, Feng Jiu Ge!”

Looking at the time, Central Continent’s gang had reached Luo Po valley and attacked it for over three months, met with the stubborn resistance of Shadow Sect’s Qin Bai Sheng and others.

Hundred days battle!

This was a true hundred days battle.

Under normal circumstances, Gu Immortals would not fight for such a long time.

In terms of scale, there were more than ten Gu Immortals from Central Continent and Northern Plains involved, they were all shining experts. One could say, for the last thousand years in the five regions, there had not been a battle of such scale.

If this was announced, the world would be shaken, commotions would arise, the attentions of innumerable observers would gather on them.

But it was a pity, be it the Central Continent Gu Immortals who were investigating secretly, or the hidden Shadow Sect which sought to remain in the dark, they did not want this battle to be exposed.

Thus, this battle that should have shaken the whole of the five regions remained a secret from start to finish.

Regarding this, the two sides had a sort of tacit understanding.

Ever since the hundred days battle started, the crucial members had always been Feng Jiu Ge and Qin Bai Sheng.

Initially, they were equally matched, it was a stalemate. Qin Bai Sheng, who had the territorial advantage and the battlefield killer move hundred million slaughterfield, showed a slight edge.

But after that, Feng Jiu Ge got stronger as he fought, he displayed his immense talent and ability.

The two sides gradually became even, then Feng Jiu Ge expanded his advantage little by little.

Eventually, in the last few days, Feng Jiu Ge’s battle strength had risen after a long period of intense fighting, and finally defeated Qin Bai Sheng.

One or two wins was nothing. But winning seven fights consecutively, it proved that Feng Jiu Ge firmly had obtained the advantage.

The Shadow Sect members slowly retreated to the deepest part of Luo Po valley.

“A desperate foe should not be pursued.” Feng Jiu Ge stood proudly at the front, seeing that their enemies had hidden into the valley, he spoke calmly.

His expression was pale, he had over a dozen injuries on him, blood was dripping from the corners of his mouth and his eyebrows.

His originally brimming Gu Immortal aura had weakened to an all time low.

But all these could not obscure the brilliance in his eyes.

Every time he fought Qin Bai Sheng, it was a difficult and dangerous fight. But it was because of these tough fights that Feng Jiu Ge could be polished, like a rock polishing a jade and turning it brighter.

Ever since Feng Jiu Ge joined Spirit Affinity House, he rarely had the chance to engage in such intense fights.

Spirit Affinity House was one of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, Feng Jiu Ge had a high status and reputation, nobody wanted to find trouble with him.

This battle that went on for a hundred days would make other Gu Immortals feel pain and anguish, but Feng Jiu Ge felt a nostalgic euphoria.

This made him think about the splendid times when he was still in the demonic path.

But, there was a slight regret in his heart.

“Demonic path... using all of my strength to fight... it is a pity, I can no longer return to such an exciting time.”

Right now, Feng Jiu Ge had a family, he could not take risks easily. Furthermore, these Gu Immortals behind him were from the other nine sects, their intentions were hard to decipher. If Feng Jiu Ge really got heavily injured after fighting, who knew what actions they would take.

Feng Jiu Ge remembered what his wife, Bai Qing, had instructed him.

After all, back then, Feng Jiu Ge had challenged all ten sects and made them lose their faces. After joining Spirit Affinity House, he had been suppressing the other nine sects without giving them any chance to overturn the situation.

Whenever Feng Jiu Ge spoke, the other immortals had to listen.

After the hundred days battle, Feng Jiu Ge's reputation was already deeply ingrained into everyone's hearts.

Cough cough cough...

After Qin Bai Sheng retreated into the valley, he started to cough uncontrollably.

His expression was pale as paper, each time he coughed, there was blood.

“Your injuries are getting more severe!” Fairy Jiang Yu, who was holding him, said in worry, she was frowning tightly.

“Feng Jiu Ge is too despicable!” He Lang Zi, who had lost an arm, growled angrily: “Even though he is fighting you alone on the surface, he is actually getting his people to act like they are charging ahead, threatening our defenses and forcing you to be distracted. If not for that, why would you lose consecutively?”

Qin Bai Sheng said grimly: “Say no more. Winner takes all, a loss is a loss, there is no need for excuses.”

“This Feng Jiu Ge truly has immense talent, using his own understanding, he created his personal sound path killer move and got to this stage. Even as an enemy, I am truly in admiration. Using his own advantages to scheme, plot, and gather superiority, that is the way of fighting, if he did not use these methods, I would have looked down on him.”

Saying this, Qin Bai Sheng coughed again, spitting out a huge pool of warm blood.

He gasped weakly, looking around him.

After the hundred days battle, only five were left, Hui Feng Zi, Hei Cheng, Jiang Yu, He Lang Zi, and the mysterious black robed Gu Immortal.

Originally, they had Xue Song Zi, but when they attacked Lang Ya blessed land, he was killed by Fang Yuan.

After leaving Lang Ya blessed land, two hairy man Gu Immortals joined them, but both of them were killed by the Central Continent Gu Immortals in the hundred days battle.

However, the Central Continent Gu Immortals suffered greater losses.

Old Oracle from Ancient Soul Sect, as well as two Gu Immortals from Spirit Butterfly Valley and Combat Immortal Sect had died.

Trying to take advantage of Qin Bai Sheng, how could that be possible?

Even Central Continent's ten great ancient sects had suffered heavy losses.

But at this point, the most crucial member, the pillar of support, Qin Bai

Sheng, was heavily injured, Luo Po valley’s territorial advantage had been overcome, the remaining five Gu Immortals knew — the hundred days battle had ended, they were the losers!

Qin Bai Sheng tried to improve their mindsets: “Even though we lost the battle, it is not over yet. Feng Jiu Ge’s group is not united, they cannot fight us wholeheartedly, I successfully stalled for enough time. We just need to wait for one more night, when that Immortal Gu matures in the valley, we would have achieved our goal. Tomorrow, all five of you will charge out, I will stall these people from Central Continent.”

“Lord Qin Bai Sheng!” Everyone was shocked.

Qin Bai Sheng’s decision was simply courting death.

This was hard to understand.

From their perspectives, if it was Hui Feng Zi, Hei Cheng or He Lang Zi, they would definitely only care about their own lives when they were in this state. Why would they care about others?

Or, was this a trap?

Hui Feng Zi, Hei Cheng, and He Lang Zi kept their thoughts to themselves, they looked at the three people from Shadow Sect secretly

Qin Bai Sheng, Jiang Yu, and the mysterious black robed Gu Immortal, they were the core of Shadow Sect, the others were just outside reinforcements.

Silence ensued.

Everyone walked to their resting places.

“This will be it. Use this time to rest, tomorrow, your performances will decide whether you succeed in breaking out or not.” Qin Bai Sheng waved his hand weakly, dismissing them.

Hei Cheng, Hui Feng Zi, and He Lang Zi, felt very heavy, their gazes was uncertain.

The three wordlessly decided to rest together, they were guarding against the possible betrayal of Shadow Sect.

But late into the night, the three were summoned by Qin Bai Sheng.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 923: Breaking Out

Late at night, in Luo Po valley.

Qin Bai Sheng and the other five immortals gathered.

Qin Bai Sheng handed an Immortal Gu to the mysterious black robed Gu Immortal openly: “This Immortal Gu is very important, I am entrusting it to you now!”

The black robed Gu Immortal nodded.

He was wrapped in a shroud of obscurity, even up until this point, none of the Gu Immortals outside of Shadow Sect had seen his appearance. They only knew that he had outstanding battle strength, around the upper tier of rank seven.

Qin Bai Sheng turned around, instructing Jiang Yu seriously: “I can die, you can also die. But he is needed for the plan, we cannot lose him!”

Fairy Jiang Yu nodded solemnly in return: “I can only guarantee that before I die, he will not perish!”

Hei Cheng and the others listened in astonishment.

What sort of organization was Shadow Sect? It could make these Gu Immortal disregard losses to themselves, even if they had to sacrifice their lives, they had to complete the mission!

To make Gu Immortals so loyal, it was difficult for even super forces to achieve.

This was an unimaginable matter!

A moment later, the silent Luo Po valley erupted into thunderous explosions.

An intensely loud sound filled the whole valley.

At the same time, there was a shrill warning — “Enemy attack!”

Fairy Ling Mei, who was warning them, retreated continuously.

In front of her, Jiang Yu, Hui Feng Zi, He Lang Zi, Hei Cheng, and the mysterious black robed Gu Immortal attacked jointly!

The enemy was attacking with such force, how could Fairy Ling Mei defend against them, she only had one thought, that was to escape!

Fairy Ling Mei came from Heaven’s Envy Manor, she and Fairy Ao Xue had control over the rank seven crescent moon Gu, they could unleash the killer move peerless crescent moon slash if they cooperated.

Peerless crescent moon slash was extremely powerful, it was one of the signature famous killer moves of Heaven’s Envy Manor.

Fairy Ao Xue and Fairy Ling Mei had always been together constantly, they were hardly ever separated.

But now, because there were limited people in Central Continent’s group, they had to encircle the huge area of Luo Po valley, thus, Ling Mei and Ao Xue had no choice but to split up.

Once Shadow Sect’s group burst out, Fairy Ling Mei was caught off guard, she fought alone and fell into an extremely dangerous situation.

“Kill her!” Fairy Jiang Yu who was at the lead of the five Gu Immortals, was bursting with killing intent, her eyes were red and her attacks were fierce.

Even though Fairy Ling Mei was a peerless beauty with grand elegance, none of the five Gu Immortals showed her any mercy because of it.

Their killer moves were used in succession, they would only stop after Fairy

Ling Mei was dead.

At the moment between life and death, Fairy Ling Mei resolutely chose to destroy an Immortal Gu, stalling three breaths of time for her.

During this period, Fairy Ling Mei activated a Gu formation, her body vanished amidst the wind and rain, at the next moment, she appeared far away.

“Huff! Huff! Huff!”

Fairy Ling Mei breathed roughly, her face was pale.

She had escaped with her life, her face showed lingering fear, her back was covered in cold sweat.

“So close, so close. I was at the moment between life and death, it is all thanks to this Gu formation!” Fairy Ling Mei felt gratitude inside.

This Gu formation was set up by Gu Immortal Hong Chi Ming after putting in a lot of effort.

Hong Chi Ming came from Wind Cloud Manor, one of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, he was skilled in Gu formations and was famous in Central Continent.

Gu formations had a point of inferiority to killer moves in that they could not be activated instantly. They took a long time to activate, and were not flexible enough to be used for a wide range of applications in intense battles. However, once they were activated, they would provide a huge advantage, they were often faster than immortal killer moves and expended less resources.

Precisely because of this, Fairy Ling Mei survived.

Seeing that Fairy Ling Mei had escaped, Fairy Jiang Yu sighed internally.

The other four Gu Immortals also showed regretful looks.

Earlier, during the hundred days battle, Ling Mei and Ao Xue had collaborated to unleash peerless crescent moon slash, they were a huge threat to Shadow Sect, almost all the Gu Immortals were injured by this move to varying degrees.

Unfortunately, Shadow Sect initially had the territorial advantage. However, Central Continent took down their Gu formations one by one, and now, the Central Continent Gu Immortals created their own Gu formations, the outer area of Luo Po valley was now their territory.

“Since we can’t kill her, we will continue charging out!” Fairy Jiang Yu shouted.

She moved with determination and resolution.

Ling Mei retreated, Central Continent’s side immediately had a gap in their defenses.

They needed to break out of this encirclement quickly, the chance was slipping!

“Ling Mei, are you alright?!” Fairy Ao Xue wore a white blouse, she came over quickly, showing shock and anger on her face.

“We won’t let you go, die here!” Chen Zhen Chi shouted.

“Isn’t it too late now to want to leave?” Bu Fei Yan sneered.

Even though Fairy Ao Xue and Fairy Ling Mei were separated, they were situated quite closely, thus, she could arrive first.

As for Chen Zhen Chi and Bu Fei Yan, they could reach at the same time as Fairy Ao Xue because they had incredible speed.

“Zhen Chi of the nine heavens, followed by Fei Yan... damn it!” Hei Cheng gritted his teeth, feeling great pressure.

Chen Zhen Chi and Bu Fei Yan were two famous flying grandmasters in the current Central Continent Gu Immortal world. ‘Zhen Chi of the nine heavens’ referred to Myriad Dragon Dock’s Chen Zhen Chi, while ‘followed by Fei Yan’ was speaking about Heavenly Lotus Sect’s Bu Fei Yan.

Jiang Yu and the other immortals wanted to break out of this place, their biggest concern were the pursuers excelling in speed like these two.

Seeing the three of them get close, the five immortals on Shadow Sect’s side did not even say a thing, they only focused on breaking out.

At this moment, a wall of light appeared, blocking the five immortals.

It was the activation of a Gu formation.

This was the work of Wind Cloud Manor’s Hong Chi Ming!

Although Hong Chi Ming was not inside, his voice was heard from within the Gu formation: “Lord Feng Jiu Ge had already predicted that you would break out. Surrender now and we might spare your lives!”

Once he said this, an immensely powerful aura got closer to them like a rushing dragon.

This aura was so grand and magnificent, Shadow Sect’s members were familiar with it, it was Feng Jiu Ge, they felt cold sweat breaking out as they showed panic on their faces.

After the hundred days battle, the five immortals knew clearly, even if they worked together, they were not Feng Jiu Ge’s match.

Was their attempt at escaping going to fail?

When the five immortals were close to despair, a golden arrow shot over, piercing the wall of light that obstructed them.

Far away, Hong Chi Ming’s body shook and jolted, as if he was shocked by electricity, he spat out a mouthful of blood, suffering a heavy injury.

The one who shot the golden arrow was Qin Bai Sheng.

How could he watch as the five immortals failed? Thus, he forcefully moved his wounded body, blocking Ling Mei, Ao Xue, Chen Zhen Chi, and Bu Fei Yan.

The four Central Continent Gu Immortals arrived quickly but also lost quickly.

They did not just lose, they failed completely.

Like Feng Jiu Ge, Qin Bai Sheng was not someone the other Central Continent Gu Immortals could stop.

Qin Bai Sheng did not kill the four immortals from Central Continent, he allowed them to retreat. His attention was primarily focused on Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge’s gaze was shining, he had already understood Qin Bai Sheng’s injury.

He smiled with much elegance, saying: “You are all rushing about, it is inappropriate to leave without saying goodbye. If you want to leave, you should at least listen to my parting song, right?”

Immortal killer move — Green Jade Song!

The five immortals on Shadow Sect’s side retreated, someone cried out in pain while another grunted.

Green jade song’s mysterious power affected the five immortals to an extent. After being hit, their bodies slowly turned into jade, and the area was spreading continuously.

The five immortals were resolute figures, they knew this was a problem and immediately shattered or dug out their contaminated flesh.

At once, blood flowed like a river.

Immortal killer move — Soul Suppression!

At the next moment, Qin Bai Sheng struck, his powerful soul path technique was aimed at Feng Jiu Ge’s face, pressuring him.

Feng Jiu Ge’s expression changed, he quickly defended himself.

Qin Bai Sheng had two major trump cards, one was the soul path killer move soul suppression, the other was the sword path killer move five finger fist heart sword. Once used, ordinary Gu Immortals could not even endure one hit from him.

Feng Jiu Ge had three trump cards, the first was heaven and earth song, second was green jade song, and third was submission song. Not only were they powerful and grand, they were also profound and mystical.

Feng Jiu Ge’s attention was drawn, green jade song halted as the five immortals felt their pressure decreasing, they quickly rushed away for a distance.

Qin Bai Sheng used a metal path killer move again.

Golden chains coiled around Feng Jiu Ge’s limbs, tying him up tightly.

Feng Jiu Ge was not frightened.

During the hundred days battle, the two had learned a lot about each other. Qin Bai Sheng’s metal path killer move had little effect on Feng Jiu Ge.

The golden chains were much more effective against Chen Zhen Chi and others. Against Feng Jiu Ge, he only needed a breath of time before shattering them.

But at this moment, Qin Bai Sheng showed a wry smile on his face: “I’ll let you see the true secret within Luo Po valley now.”

Saying this, he used his method and activated something.

Countless mystical lights shot out from the valley, one of them hit Feng Jiu Ge.

“This is?!” Feng Jiu Ge shattered the golden chains, but because this used up his time, he could not dodge the mystical light and was immobilized.

“The power of space path!”

“How can this be so strong?”

Not far away, the two fairies, Ling Mei and Ao Xue, were also hit by the mystical light, their expressions changed as they gasped.

As for Chen Zhen Chi and Bu Fei Yan, they were extremely fast, they dodged the mystical light.

Qin Bai Sheng did not care about them, his main goal was to restrict Feng Jiu Ge. Right now, half of his goal had been achieved.

“Don’t struggle. This light is harmless!” Feng Jiu Ge understood at once, he shouted as he reminded them.

Ao Xue and Ling Mei were uncertain, but at the next moment, they saw that Feng Jiu Ge stopped resisting and was dragged into a deep part of Luo Po valley by the mystical light.

Qin Bai Sheng’s smile became wider, he approached a mystical light and was dragged into the valley as well.

Ao Xue and Ling Mei looked at each other, they gritted their teeth, deciding to believe Feng Jiu Ge, they stopped resisting as they entered the valley as well.

This change of events was out of everyone’s expectations.

They were only stunned for a moment before Chen Zhen Chi reacted and shouted at the Shadow Sect immortals: “Take them down first!”

This was a wise decision.

Seeing that they were about to break out, the five Shadow Sect immortals were held back by Chen Zhen Chi and Bu Fei Yan.

Next, Hong Chi Ming, Old Lord Can Yang, and Old Man Tian Long arrived, engaging in fierce combat.

One side fought desperately to leave, while the other side desperately prevented their escape.

“Ah, someone save me!” Hei Cheng shouted, he was the weakest here, he was hit by a move and had been detached from the main party.

“Ignore him, protect our main target, continue to break out!” Fairy Jiang Yu shouted, she heartlessly abandoned Hei Cheng, protecting the mysterious black robed Gu Immortal with all her effort.

At the same time.

Deep within Luo Po valley, in a mysterious place.

“Where is this?” Ao Xue and Ling Mei looked around in shock and suspicion.

“So this was it.” Feng Jiu Ge who had entered before them had already retracted his gaze: “This is actually a hidden Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable true inheritance!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 924: Discarding this Ruined Body to Exchange for a Clear Breeze

In the mystical area, light shined warmly, there were no mountains or rivers, neither wind nor land, it was completely blank.

“That is true.” Once Feng Jiu Ge spoke, Qin Bai Sheng appeared in front of him, looking at the three immortals from Central Continent, he smiled deeply: “If not for Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s arrangement, how could I lure brother Feng here?”

Indeed.

Even though Qin Bai Sheng was very powerful, he was still at a loss against a one in a thousand years monster like Feng Jiu Ge.

Especially when Qin Bai Sheng’s two trump cards were not for trapping enemies, they were for killing.

To temporarily trap Feng Jiu Ge, he had to activate the arrangements that Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had personally set up in the past.

“This really is Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritance?” Fairy Ling Mei asked in a heated tone.

Since ancient times, in the long history of Gu cultivators, there were countless geniuses and heroes. But if these people were akin to shining stars in the sky, then the ten rank nine Gu Immortals were each like the sun, they were bright and dazzling, spreading their radiance over the whole world.

Every generation’s venerable, be it an Immortal Venerable or a Demon Venerable, was at the peak of that era, they dominated the world and were invincible, unparalleled in their time.

Among them, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was also a legend. He excelled in space path and had unparalleled stealing abilities. He even cultivated transformation path simultaneously and was skilled at disguises, before he was rank nine, he could transform into all sorts of people and use their identities to achieve his unspeakable motives, he even caused huge commotions over the world, sending it into chaos.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable also had a close relationship with Long Hair Ancestor. The failure to refine space escape Gu became Long Hair Ancestor’s obsession after death, it had become a legend.

Such a person, his inheritance, was actually before them!

Be it Ling Mei or Ao Xue, these two fairies who had icy hearts felt excited, their hearts were burning with ambition.

But Feng Jiu Ge quickly discouraged them: “Don’t even think about it. Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritance is not something you can obtain.”

Ling Mei and Ao Xue’s expressions changed.

That’s right, there was still Feng Jiu Ge and Qin Bai Sheng here, with these two experts around, how could Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritance become theirs?

At once, Ling Mei and Ao Xue felt great disappointment.

Feng Jiu Ge’s back was facing them, he stood in front of them but understood their emotions, he continued: “You misunderstand my words. Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritance has a strict requirement, both of you do not fulfill it, I do not fulfill it, and even brother Qin also has no chance of inheriting it.”

Ling Mei and Ao Xue were shocked, one of them asked: “There is such a thing?”

Qin Bai Sheng laughed loudly: “Brother Feng really knows a lot about Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance. It seems the rumors are true, Spirit Affinity House indeed possesses one of the true inheritances of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable. They have been researching it for a long time, a pity there have been no gains.”

Feng Jiu Ge’s eyes shined with brilliance, he stared at Qin Bai Sheng, admitting: “To think that brother Qin knows so much about Central Continent’s details despite living in Northern Plains. That is true, my sect controls a true inheritance of Thieving Heaven and have been researching it for many years, we have learned some things after these years.”

Ling Mei and Ao Xue looked at each other, they were unwilling to give up, Fairy Ling Mei asked: “May I ask Lord Feng Jiu Ge, what is the criteria to inherit it, maybe we can achieve it, who knows.”

Feng Jiu Ge’s gaze had been fixed on Qin Bai Sheng, he did not dare to be careless.

He said: “Do you know Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s origin? He is not a person of the five regions, he is from the outside world, an otherworldly demon. Thus, the inheritances that he left behind only have one requirement towards the inheritor, they have to be an otherworldly demon! I am obviously not one, brother Qin cannot be one, otherwise he would have inherited it long ago, why would he wait until now? Are you two otherworldly demons?”

Before Ling Mei and Ao Xue replied, Qin Bai Sheng flicked his sleeves and laughed, he denied the possibility: “Impossible! All the Gu Immortals in the hundred days battle are not otherworldly demons. If not, why would I let any of you in here?”

“Otherworldly demons? They really exist? Since the start of my life, I have never seen one.”

“Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was actually an otherworldly demon?”

Ling Mei and Ao Xue were taken aback.

Feng Jiu Ge nodded: “Even though otherworldly demons are rare, they exist. Since they come from beyond our world, then outside of the five regions and nine heavens, there are bound to be other worlds. Unfortunately, no one has ever ventured out of the Gu world.”

Ling Mei and Ao Xue looked at each other, they asked again:

“Other than the five regions, there are really other worlds outside?”

“Even if we cannot achieve this condition, the inheritance is fixed in place, while we humans are alive, don’t tell me that even with Lord Feng Jiu Ge’s power, you cannot take it forcefully?”

They were unwilling to give up.

This was a Thieving Heaven true inheritance!

The experts could take the meat while they could have some soup, the two female immortals were not greedy for more, they just wanted to have a share of the loot.

Qin Bai Sheng sneered: “Wishful thinking! Back then, even after Giant Sun Immortal Venerable became rank nine, he still returned empty-handed after encountering a Thieving Heaven true inheritance. Not only did he get nothing, he even suffered a loss and ended up in a pathetic state. Hehehe... if not for that, why would Giant Sun Immortal Venerable hate otherworldly demons to this extent. The two of you think you can obtain this true inheritance?”

“There was such a thing?”

“This is too absurd. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable is also a rank nine Gu Immortal, he could not even take one of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s true inheritances even after he died?”

Ling Mei and Ao Xue stared with their beautiful eyes wide open, they half-believed and half-doubted this.

Feng Jiu Ge did not refute it, he said solemnly: “Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s space path attainment was unfathomably deep, it surpasses the imagination of people. There is a theory: Because he was an otherworldly demon, when he became a space path Gu Immortal, a special type of space path dao mark was produced. These dao marks originate from another world, they are foreign to the five regions and nine heavens. The space we are in now, it seems ordinary, but it had already transcended the Gu world, it is not within the five regions and nine heavens. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable wanted to obtain the true inheritance, but he was afraid of the implications, thus he failed and suffered a loss, unable to do anything about it.”

Ling Mei and Ao Xue gasped in shock.

The two of them were too inexperienced compared to Feng Jiu Ge and Qin Bai Sheng, this was the first time they had heard about such secrets regarding the venerables.

At once, Ling Mei and Ao Xue felt their horizons expanding.

But soon, they became worried and anxious.

“Not even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could do anything to this mystical space, how can we get out?”

“Don’t worry, as long as we do not move, in fifteen minutes, we will be teleported out.” Feng Jiu Ge replied confidently.

If it were other Gu Immortals who landed here, they would use their methods to investigate. In that case, they would be in trouble. The time that they were trapped would be extended.

But Spirit Affinity House possessed one of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritances, and Feng Jiu Ge was a higher-up in Spirit Affinity House, he knew the proper way to leave this true inheritance.

But at this moment, Qin Bai Sheng raised his head and laughed: “Feng Jiu Ge! Since I took great pains to lure you in here, how can I let you leave? Stay here for good.”

Saying this, Qin Bai Sheng struck.

His powerful aura burst into the air.

Ling Mei and Ao Xue acted like they were facing a strong foe.

Feng Jiu Ge quickly said: “Don’t move! In this place, it might seem like we are close to each other, but we are actually very far away from each other. He is trying to lure you to attack, once you do, this place will change and target whoever attacks. The stronger the attack, the greater the backlash from this place, and the longer you will be trapped. Do not fall into his trap!”

Feng Jiu Ge was very aware regarding this Thieving Heaven true inheritance.

He was clear about the terrifying power of this mystical space. Even though he was proud and powerful, he did not dare to act rashly.

Ling Mei and Ao Xue chose to believe Feng Jiu Ge, they held in their impulse and did not attack.

But Qin Bai Sheng showed a weird smile: “Brother Feng is very confident, but it is a pity that your sect has not researched deeply enough into Thieving Heaven’s true inheritances. I wonder what you will do against my next action?”

He spoke calmly as he activated the Gu worms in his body, his aura burst out and reached its peak.

“What is he trying to do?” Feng Jiu Ge felt something amiss, he focused himself, his gaze was like lightning, looking at Qin Bai Sheng fixedly.

But at the next moment, Qin Bai Sheng’s action was something out of the Central Continent immortals’ expectations.

They only heard Qin Bai Sheng recite —

Even after experiencing fifty-four tribulations, the sky is still filled with tribulation clouds.

The soul light in my chest pressures everyone, the sword qi in my fist dominates Northern Plains.

Four hundred years passed rapidly, how can there be life without death?

Discarding this ruined body to exchange for a clear breeze, I will sweep the heavens for countless light years!

His voice was clear and loud, he spoke with a calm expression, his gaze showed a sign of expectation towards the future.

After finishing this poem, he smiled lightly at Feng Jiu Ge.

Next, he shut his eyes, all signs of life leaving his body!

Feng Jiu Ge frowned tightly, even during the hundred days battle, he did not show such an expression.

At this moment, Qin Bai Sheng had actually ended his own life!!

At the next moment, a clear breeze started from within Qin Bai Sheng’s body.

Behind Feng Jiu Ge, Ling Mei and Ao Xue’s expressions changed, their voices were trembling from fear, they screamed: “Winds of assimilation!”

As it turned out, in order to stop Feng Jiu Ge, Qin Bai Sheng had given up his own life, making the ultimate sacrifice.

His method was ruthless, he directly destroyed his own immortal aperture.

Once the immortal aperture was destroyed, without other immortal apertures to hold it, winds of assimilation started blowing.

Winds of assimilation were extraordinary, they assimilated everything, even rank eight Gu Immortals had to avoid them at all costs.

And in this mystical true inheritance space, if five finger fist heart sword or heaven and earth song were used, it would only be like a pebble tossed into a lake.

At this moment, winds of assimilation blew, even though it was a clear breeze, the entire mystical space started shaking, it was as if water on a lake was boiled, there were ripples forming in the space unceasingly.

Feng Jiu Ge had a solemn expression.

Against Qin Bai Sheng’s resolute attack, he had to face it with all of his ability, if he was careless, he would die.

Behind him, Ling Mei and Ao Xue had activated their Gu worms, protecting their bodies.

Even Feng Jiu Ge had to activate his Immortal Gu, of course they had to do the same.

Leaving the mystical space was another issue now. They had to survive this crisis first.

Otherwise, it would be a pointless thing to worry about!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 925: Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance

Two flowers blossomed, each branching in different directions.

Ignoring the situation of Qin Bai Sheng sacrificing himself to create the winds of assimilation and trap Feng Jiu Ge, Ling Mei, and Ao Xue in a dangerous situation for now.

Looking instead at Jiang Yu and the other immortals breaking out.

They were about to escape, but Hei Cheng was hit by a killer move and fell.

His face was pale as he shouted for help.

However, they were all escaping for their lives, every second was important, at the crucial moment, any hesitation would mean the difference between life and death.

The immortals ignored him, they only raised their own speeds to the limits.

Fairy Jiang Yu was even more heartless, she directly told them to abandon him, disregarding Hei Cheng’s life or death.

They were so close to escaping, freedom was right in front of them. Hei Cheng was lagging behind, couldn’t he be useful in stalling the Central Continent Gu Immortals? However, he controlled the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison, after Hei Cheng died, it might end up in the Central Continent Gu Immortals’ hands.

That was a slight pity to Jiang Yu and the others.

But it was only slightly regretful, compared to the Immortal Gu House, their own lives were more important.

“Hehehe, you can all continue playing around. I’m out of here.” While they were breaking out, Hui Feng Zi laughed loudly.

Immortal killer move — Wind Escape!

His speed rose sharply, in a few breaths of time, he was way ahead of Jiang Yu and the others.

Seeing Jiang Yu and the others’ fiery gazes, Hui Feng Zi flew even faster.

“Cooperate with me!” Hong Chi Ming shouted.

Gu formations at the outer area activated, giving off bright light.

After the hundred days battle, the Central Continent Gu Immortals had gained some coordination.

“Where are you going?” Chen Zhen Chi and Bu Fei Yan moved out, using a Gu formation at the periphery to chase and block Hui Feng Zi.

Hui Feng Zi was known as the fastest in Northern Plains, he came and went like the wind, Central Continent Gu Immortals had to admit that.

Just Chen Zhen Chi or Bu Fei Yan alone could not stop Hui Feng Zi. But now, they were cooperating with much coordination.

At once, no matter how Hui Feng Zi maneuvered, he could not shake off Chen and Bu, his speed gradually fell as he failed his escape.

“He deserves it!” Jiang Yu and the others felt gratified, they turned towards another direction and tried to escape from the side.

“Go down.” Old Lord Can Yang snorted in anger, using his signature life chasing fire.

Hong Chi Ming followed up with another attack, beating the dog while it was down.

Hei Cheng’s body was burning in flames, he screamed in pain as he fell from the sky.

With a loud crash, he landed on the ground, he spat out a mouthful of blood as countless vines grew from the ground, tying him up firmly.

At once, Hei Cheng was trapped, while Hui Feng Zi was obstructed, Hong Chi Ming left Hei Cheng as he chased He Lang Zi.

He activated his killer move, mercilessly attacking He Lang Zi.

He Lang Zi had to use his transformation path killer move, turning into the lightning flash giant wolf to resist it.

Fairy Jiang Yu and the mysterious black robed Gu Immortal were not far away, they were obstructed by Old Man Tian Long and Old Lord Can Yang.

They did not waste time in trash talking, the four immortals engaged in fierce combat.

At once, winds surged and thunderous explosions occurred.

The four immortals displayed their might, they shook the surroundings as intense air currents were created, mountains rocks crumbled and broke.

Old Lord Can Yang was a famous rank seven Gu Immortal, when Dong Fang Chang Fan had been pretending to be dead, he had fought Unfettered Scholar, Fang Yuan, Pi Shui Han alone, he had excellent battle strength.

Old Man Tian Long’s strength was similar to Old Lord Can Yang. The former was a supreme elder of Black Heaven Temple. He was sent here by Black Heaven Temple for the secret purpose of countering the sound path Gu Immortal Feng Jiu Ge.

Looking at Shadow Sect, the mysterious black robed Gu Immortal was indeed powerful, but Fairy Jiang Yu was weaker.

After more than ten rounds of fighting, Old Man Tian Long and Old Lord Can Yang had the upper hand, they obtained a good chance to strike.

Immortal killer move — Life Chasing Fire!

“Oh no!” Fairy Jiang Yu was shocked, she wanted to dodge but it was too late.

“Stand back, let me deal with it.” At the crucial moment, the mysterious black robed Gu Immortal used his method, replacing Fairy Jiang Yu and using his body to block the life chasing fire.

“Oh? Strange!” Old Lord Can Yang was slightly shocked.

The mysterious black robed Gu Immortal was hit by the life chasing fire, but he was completely intact it was as if nothing had happened.

“Sneaky fellow, show us your true appearance!” Old Man Tian Long shouted, his hands clapped together as blades flew out from the sky.

The mysterious black robed Gu Immortal blocked them as his robe was torn, his appearance was exposed to everyone.

Old Lord Can Yang was stunned: “You have the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance physique!”

One of the ten extreme physiques — Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance!

“Why are you afraid, he is merely an immortal zombie.” Old Man Tian Long howled repeatedly, his attacks becoming fiercer.

The mysterious black robed Gu Immortal’s true identity was a rank seven immortal zombie. Different from other immortal zombies, he had a special identity, he had one of the ten extreme physiques, Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance, and had turned into an immortal zombie.

“Hmph! Since you found out, there is no point in hiding this anymore.” The mysterious black robed Gu Immortal tore off his black robe, pouncing at Old Lord Can Yang.

Old Lord Can Yang was a fire path Gu Immortal, he was countered by the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance physique, he had the disadvantage.

Old Man Tian Long wanted to help, but Fairy Jiang Yu risked her life to block him.

“Quickly go!” Fairy Jiang Yu screamed.

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie angrily snorted, forcing back Old Lord Can Yang, he did not look back, he flew out of Luo Po valley, successfully escaping.

“Where are you going?” Old Lord Can Yang roared, wanting to chase him, but Fairy Jiang Yu, who was bathed in blood, managed to block him miraculously.

“It seems that you have given up on living! Is this immortal zombie your lover, is he worth your sacrifice?” Old Man Tian Long’s expression was cold, he descended from the sky and his hand hit Fairy Jiang Yu’s back firmly.

Boom!

Fairy Jiang Yu was at her wits’ end, she could not defend herself, her chest was shattered as a huge hole appeared, one could see through it.

Her beautiful eyes turned hollow, her purple dress fluttered in the sky, like a butterfly slowly landing on the ground.

Ten breaths of time later, Fairy Jiang Yu’s corpse landed on the ground, her bones and tendons were broken, her flesh turned into pulp.

Fairy Jiang Yu died!

At this point, Shadow Sect no longer had a chance.

Old Lord Can Yang and Old Man Tian Long were free now, they could deal with He Lang Zi and Hui Feng Zi.

Hong Chi Ming’s focus was on restricting Hei Cheng.

A moment later, He Lang Zi screamed in a deafening tone, the giant wolf that he had turned into was cut into two. His corpse turned into a human body, blood flowed as his internal organs were torn, he died a terrible death.

Hei Cheng was left without a choice, he reluctantly activated the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison.

Even though the Immortal Gu House was powerful, it needed to expend a huge amount of immortal essence. After the hundred days battle, Hei Cheng was already bankrupt, he did not have much immortal essence left.

There was insufficient immortal essence to activate the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison, it had less than one percent of its full power, Hong Chi Ming used his Gu formation to trap it.

Fifteen minutes later, Hui Feng Zi lost as well.

He was extremely fast and slippery, but after the hundred days battle, everyone knew each other’s abilities, he did not have any special techniques left, and the Central Continent Gu Immortals had an extremely tight defensive ring, like an impenetrable net. Hui Feng Zi was like a fish that was caught in a net, even though he struggled intensely, he was bound to lose.

“Don’t kill me, I surrender.” At the moment before death, Hui Feng Zi surrendered with a pale expression.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals looked at each other, expressing their joy.

Death was truly a terrifying thing.

A wise man submits to circumstances, the Central Continent Gu Immortals understood why Hui Feng Zi surrendered.

“Don’t play tricks!”

“Hand over your Immortal Gu!”

The Central Continent Gu Immortals did not relax, they surrounded Hui Feng Zi tightly.

Hui Feng Zi did not have any chances left, he sighed deeply as he handed over his Immortal Gu.

Without his Immortal Gu, he was like a tiger without its claws and teeth, his threat level dropped.

Only until he was completely under control and his life and death was at their whim did the Central Continent Gu Immortals breathe out deeply in relief.

Focusing their minds, they started to deal with the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison.

Hui Feng Zi’s surrender gave the Central Continent Gu Immortals hope.

The hundred days battle expended a huge amount of their immortal essence, the Central Continent Gu Immortals suffered great losses, their pressure was immense. After capturing Hui Feng Zi, the Immortal Gu they obtained were enough to recoup their losses. If they could obtain the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison as well, they would earn a huge profit from this.

Seven minutes later, Dark Prison was taken down by the Central Continent immortals.

But unexpectedly...

“Where is Hei Cheng?”

“So decisive! He abandoned this Immortal Gu House immediately and escaped.”

“While we were capturing Hui Feng Zi, he secretly dug underground and escaped, he really managed to deceive us!”

“Hmph, a coward who is afraid of death, a person who is barely surviving, he is not worth considering.”

At this point, the escape attempt of Shadow Sect’s side had ended, the battle was over and the dust had settled.

Qin Bai Sheng, Fairy Jiang Yu were sacrificed, He Lang Zi died, Hui Feng Zi surrendered, the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie had escaped with the crucial Immortal Gu, Hei Cheng, who had the lowest battle strength, abandoned the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison and escaped.

A few months ago, these people attacked Lang Ya blessed land with overwhelming might. Over a hundred days later, they were either dead, injured, had surrendered, or escaped. Even the powerful Qin Bai Sheng was sacrificed inside Luo Po valley.

This showed the cruelty of the Gu cultivation world. Even at Gu Immortal level, they were not free from danger, one could still die easily.

More than ten days later, a figure emerged in Earth Trench.

Earth Trench was under the control of Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, it was guarded by Dark Flow Giant City.

But this mysterious figure could enter and leave easily, he did not attract any suspicion.

After entering Earth Trench, the mysterious figure was familiar with Earth Trench's terrain as he moved rapidly, taking a shortcut and entering deep into it.

A few days later, a giant graveyard appeared before the mysterious figure's vision.

"I am finally here." The mysterious figure finally showed his appearance.

It was the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie who had escaped from Luo Po valley!

As it turned out, Shadow Sect's backup plan was hidden here. Back then when Central Continent's group attacked Luo Po valley, Qin Bai Sheng and Jiang Yu had thought of breaking out and coming here to use their trump card and resolve the crisis in Luo Po valley.

But this trump card was extremely important, if it was used abruptly, it could disrupt Shadow Sect's plan, Qin Bai Sheng and the others were hesitant.

When they had resolved to use it, the battle had already become very intense, they had no chance to do it anymore. They tried it forcefully, but only sacrificed the hairy man Gu Immortals in vain.

Now, Luo Po valley was taken over by Central Continent's group, the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie did not come here thinking of revenge, and activating Shadow Sect's backup plan. He wanted to hide himself, and place the crucial Immortal Gu here for safekeeping.

This Immortal Gu was related to Shadow Sect's crucial plan, it could not be lost. For this, Qin Bai Sheng and Jiang Yu had sacrificed their lives.

"Just a bit more time, we just need a bit more time..." The Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie felt anger and melancholy, he carried the Immortal Gu and entered deep into the graveyard.

This was the graveyard of immortal zombies. He was an immortal zombie, it was too easy to disguise as a member.

However, just when the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie thought that his ordeal was over, and that he was safe, a figure appeared.

"Interesting... to think that I would meet a ten extreme physique immortal zombie here." The person looked at the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie, evaluating with an interested tone, his rank eight aura was emanating.

At this moment, the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie felt like he had fallen into an icy abyss, his heart was filled with despair.

“Old Ancestor Xue Hu? Why is he here!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 926: Refining Star Thought Immortal Gu

Hu Immortal blessed land, underground cave.

The blood zhi forest had already spread out to an area of over thirty thousand square meters.

At the center of the blood zhi forest, the blood lingzhi shined with a dark red light, but currently the light of wisdom had already overpowered it.

At this moment, Fang Yuan was bathed in the wisdom light halo as he sat and concentrated.

His expression was calm, he was like a statue, but his mind was working rapidly, countless thoughts were created and destroyed, they crashed into one another like a meteor shower, or the eruption of a volcano.

He grunted.

Fang Yuan’s body shook, he slowly opened his eyes.

His mind which was undergoing a storm made of thoughts had returned to a peaceful state.

He frowned, thinking deeply.

Two streams of blood slowly flowed down from his nose.

The immortal zombie body’s blood was pale green, there was no warmth at all, it was icy cold.

Fang Yuan indifferently cleaned up his nosebleed, he evaluated: “It seems that the Gu formation that I newly created still has many flaws.”

Ever since he had become a wisdom path grandmaster, he had obtained countless inspirations. As for how to use wisdom Gu more efficiently, he had many new ideas.

This Gu formation was created by him not too long ago.

Not long ago, he had a low wisdom path attainment level and could only use the light of wisdom directly. Now, with this Gu formation, he could intensify the rate at which his thoughts collided.

Even though it could not raise the effect of his deductions, it could save him a lot of time.

Wisdom Gu was rank nine, while Fang Yuan was merely a rank six immortal zombie, it was already very difficult for him to use the light of wisdom. This Gu formation could be considered a significant breakthrough.

Furthermore, this Gu formation was not in its original state, it had been modified several times.

The first few versions had all sorts of flaws, once, the Gu formation even exploded inside Fang Yuan’s body.

When he used it this time, Fang Yuan withstood the backlash of the Gu formation and suffered a minor injury.

“The Gu formation still needs to be modified... but, that is not key. Now, the difficult problem is the modification of the star thought Immortal Gu recipe.”

Fang Yuan frowned even deeper.

A few days ago, Blazing Heaven Demoness had recruited Fang Yuan, he used this chance to request the refinement of star thought Immortal Gu to her.

Both sides came to an agreement, Blazing Heaven Demoness was very generous about funding Fang Yuan. She provided the materials to refine star thought Immortal Gu for him, dispatching Bo Dan to send them over.

These immortal materials were very precious. Not only were they expensive, if Fang Yuan had to collect them himself, he would need to expend a lot of time.

Only Blazing Heaven Demoness, using her rank eight cultivation level, her Zombie Alliance status, and her deep foundations could gather three sets of these immortal materials in such a small amount of time.

Fang Yuan was well prepared, he naturally got to refining Gu.

But he had tried three times consecutively and failed them all.

Fang Yuan was mentally prepared in regards to failing.

After all, he did not have the success dao mark from the Refinement Path Convention this time, he could only rely on his own skills and luck.

Relying on skill was easily understood, but why did he have to rely on luck?

Looking at the example of star thought Immortal Gu, during the refinement process, there was a step that needed two immortal materials. He needed a portion of pale flame white bones, and a portion of green beetle water lotuses.

The former was a fire path immortal material, the latter was a water path immortal material.

At this step, the two immortal materials have to be processed at the same time, fusing water and fire, to create a clear liquid.

But this step was very difficult.

There were fire path dao marks on the pale flame white bone, and water path dao marks on the green beetle water lotus. To process them and form the clear liquid, the fire path dao marks and the water path dao marks have to be equal in number. Even if they were not equal, the difference had to be very small. That was the only way the fire and water could cancel out each other, if one side was higher, more than the range allowed, the liquid would be extremely murky.

This sort of murky liquid could not be used.

But the liquid could not be stored for long, it needed to be refined right before use. Fang Yuan did not have a time path Immortal Gu to seal the state of the liquid. Thus, Fang Yuan had to create the liquid while refining Immortal Gu.

And the difference in dao marks was extremely subtle. Even if Fang Yuan focused all his attention and used his best methods, he could not inspect all of them, he could only estimate.

Fang Yuan was not a fire path or water path Gu Immortal, he was already reaching the limits of his investigative abilities.

Thus, the Immortal Gu recipe strictly stated the age of the green beetle water lotuses, as well as the amount of pale flame white bones.

But even so, even among green beetle water lotuses of the same age, they would have different water path dao marks on them due to the environment that they were in. If the pale flame white bones were damaged, there would also be fewer dao marks on them.

All of the Gu refinement materials met the Immortal Gu recipe’s requirements after Fang Yuan checked them meticulously.

But when they were used in practice, there was bound to be failure.

To refine the clear liquid, there was luck involved in it.

The entire Immortal Gu refinement process had many such examples like the fusing of water and fire.

Succeeding once or twice was not difficult. The difficult thing was to succeed every single time.

Thus, the success rate of refining Immortal Gu was extremely low.

Many Gu Immortal went bankrupt trying to refine an Immortal Gu without success.

Immortal Gu were a huge boost to the Gu Immortal in all aspects.

Because of the existence of heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities, Gu Immortals had an even more intense desire in regards to Immortal Gu.

But in the history of Gu cultivation, there were countless instances of Immortal Gu refinement failing, these painful experiences landed countless people in terrible straits.

At present, many rank six Gu Immortals did not even have a single Immortal Gu.

Gu Immortals would rather attempt to capture wild Immortal Gu than take a risk and refine Immortal Gu themselves.

Of course, there was another reason, refinement path attainment levels differed between Gu Immortals. Many Gu Immortals did not have the confidence to refine Immortal Gu themselves.

Especially when it came to Immortal Gu with higher ranks, Gu Immortals would have even less confidence in refining them.

In the past, even two venerables, Giant Sun and Thieving Heaven, had to ask Long Hair Ancestor to help them refine Immortal Gu and Immortal Gu Houses.

Fang Yuan was modifying the Immortal Gu recipe in this aspect.

When he became a wisdom path grandmaster, his star path attainment also rose to grandmaster level. This gave him the ability to modify the Immortal Gu recipe of Star Thought.

Including this current deduction, he had already modified many aspects of the original Immortal Gu recipe.

Eleven processes that were similar to this water and fire fusion had been taken out, they were replaced with more stable steps with higher success rates.

“Looking at the time, Blazing Heaven Demoness is about to send me the fourth set of Gu refinement immortal materials.”

With Blazing Heaven Demoness’ funding, Fang Yuan’s financial difficulties had been alleviated. Blazing Heaven Demoness had been wanting to attack Yu Lu blessed land, she was generous in allowing Fang Yuan to refine star thought Immortal Gu, she would not stop until he succeeded.

But she was not easy to fool.

If Fang Yuan wanted to use the excuse of failure to cheat Blazing Heaven Demoness and get the Gu refinement immortal materials, he would not succeed.

Even though Blazing Heaven Demoness agreed to fund Fang Yuan, they had made an agreement: All of the funded immortal materials would become Fang Yuan’s debt towards her. Whether he succeeded or not in refining the Immortal Gu, he would need to pay her back later. The longer he dragged this on, the more interest Blazing Heaven Demoness would receive. If Fang Yuan successfully refines the Immortal Gu but fails to return her the sum in a hundred years, then Blazing Heaven Demoness would be allowed to take an Immortal Gu from Fang Yuan as compensation.

If it were Shark Demon who gave this condition, Fang Yuan would not agree to it, he would propose one that suited his interests more.

But this was the demanding and domineering Blazing Heaven Demoness, Fang Yuan also needed to refine star thought Immortal Gu as soon as possible, he could only agree to it.

Thus, it was in no way suitable to cheat Blazing Heaven Demoness’ funding.

Fang Yuan failed three times, the losses were all on him, he already owed Blazing Heaven Demoness a huge debt.

Fang Yuan could clearly discern some of Blazing Heaven Demoness’ plans.

Even if Fang Yuan could not repay his debt, with the wisdom path attainment that he displayed, Blazing Heaven Demoness could make use of it and force Fang Yuan to work for her.

After all, wisdom path Gu Immortals were very rare. Those with Fang Yuan’s level of attainment were extremely useful subordinates.

If Fang Yuan succeeded in refining star thought Immortal Gu, Blazing Heaven Demoness would be even happier. Because this would allow her to take down Yu Lu blessed land.

The conclusion was that Blazing Heaven Demoness would only earn from this regardless of what happens.

After failing three times, the pressure was all on Fang Yuan.

“According to my current situation, I can only do seven refinement attempts.

Now, I have already failed three times, I have four chances left. In terms of refining Gu, I have already reached the limits. I can only work harder in terms of luck.”

Fang Yuan thought it over.

He had connect luck Immortal Gu, he could forcefully link to other people’s luck and boost his own luck.

But there was a drawback with this.

Even though Fang Yuan had Connect Luck, he did not have Break Luck along with it.

He could only connect, but not break.

If the target of his luck connection became unlucky, Fang Yuan would be implicated.

Thus, Fang Yuan had chosen several targets earlier, these people had extremely powerful luck, they were moreover unceasing and would not fade or become bad over time.

But these people were very rare, in the entirety of the five regions, looking over his previous life, there were only so many of them.

Fang Yuan calculated: “The remaining ones have not been born yet. Among them, Song Yi Shi had already killed the ancestor of Li Xiao Yao on the nameless island, there is no way he can be born now. The soonest and best target can only be Fairy Black Moon.”

Fairy Black Moon was very incredible.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, she was the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House. She was one of the most outstanding characters in Spirit Affinity House.

Her status was similar to Mo Yao in the past, or even higher.

This was because in the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, there was a great era of turmoil. The five regions were in unprecedented chaos, the appearance of dream realms broke the balance of the different forces, a new Gu cultivation path, dream path, was produced, everything hinted towards the emergence of Great Dream Immortal Venerable.

In this great era, heroes emerged, conquerors surfaced, capable people were everywhere, dragons and snakes rampaged all while Fairy Black Moon remained as the representative of Spirit Affinity House, one of the ten great ancient sects, she had incredible talent, it was surely first-rate in the five regions.

Furthermore, Fairy Black Moon led the Central Continent Gu Immortals to attack Imperial Court blessed land, she had outstanding achievements and incredible battle strength, her methods were also profound.

Ever since Fairy Black Moon emerged, she grew stronger with each battle, turning disaster into fortune, her luck had been very strong.

She was indeed an ideal target for Fang Yuan’s luck connection.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 927: Fang Yuan’s Opportunity

“Unfortunately, Fairy Black Moon wore a mask and had a mysterious status, I do not know her true identity. In my previous life, she was like a rising sun, she was dazzling and bright, there was no biography on her. Maybe she is still an ordinary disciple in Spirit Affinity House, or maybe she is the descendant of a Gu Immortal. In short, I have too little information, there is nothing I can search for about her.”

Since he could not find Fairy Black Moon, he could only look for other, inferior targets.

These people were also very famous characters.

But they only had strong luck for a period of time, it was not long lasting. Several of them had large fluctuations, some even had great misfortune after a period of good luck, dying in the process.

“If I use Connect Luck on them, my luck can become very strong in the short run, I can surely refine star thought Immortal Gu successfully. But I do not have Break Luck, when they become unlucky, so will I. Sacrificing the long term prospects for such small temporary gains, is it really worth it?” Fang Yuan was hesitant.

If he had break luck Immortal Gu, this was not a problem for him.

But whether he could obtain Break Luck in the future, Fang Yuan had no confidence in that.

He was never a person who would do something in which he had no assurance of the outcome.

Placing his hopes of success on pure chance, Fang Yuan would not do that.

He was indeed willing to gamble and take risks, but he was actually very careful and meticulous at the same time. If not for that, he would not have gotten so far.

Several days later, Blazing Heaven Demoness sent over sufficient immortal materials for him to refine Gu again.

But Fang Yuan was no longer in the mood to refine Gu.

He had just heard some shocking news.

Not long ago, Northern Plains Zombie Alliance was infiltrated by Old Ancestor Xue Hu. The latter went deep into Earth Trench and secretly ransacked many precious Immortal Gu and immortal materials.

If Old Ancestor Xue Hu was not exposed, Zombie Alliance could only let this matter go.

But the problem was, an intense battle caused Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s tracks to be exposed, Zombie Alliance had to make a response to this.

Zombie Alliance was huge, it spanned across five regions, their territory had just been infiltrated and looted casually, how could they allow it?

If they did not punish such wrongdoers, Zombie Alliance’s reputation would suffer, their authority would be undermined and many forces would look down on them, how could they hold their ground in the Gu Immortal world and compete with other forces?

Any organization’s face represented a certain extent of benefits.

Moreover, just now, Old Ancestor Xue Hu was found in the immortal zombie graveyard.

This greatly provoked all the Zombie Alliance immortal zombies, they burst into anger.

Immortal zombies had a lot of dao marks in their bodies, they were excellent Gu refinement materials. But an immortal zombie’s immortal aperture was dead, thus, they held their own bodies in high regard, this was the last bit of pride they had.

Therefore, immortal zombies placed much more importance on their bodies than ordinary Gu Immortals.

The immortal zombie graveyard was a place in Zombie Alliance that could not be defiled.

But their sanctuary was ravaged by Old Ancestor Xue Hu, could they ignore this?

“Old Ancestor Xue Hu went overboard. This violates the bottom line of Zombie Alliance, it seems that he is taking a risk to refine Immortal Gu Fortune Rivalling Heaven. He actually became a thief and personally stole immortal zombie bodies.” Fang Yuan assessed.

He thought about his previous life.

In those five hundred years, this did not happen.

“In my past life, Ma Hong Yun was alive and well, Old Ancestor Xue Hu did not obtain him, of course he could not refine Immortal Gu Fortune Rivalling Heaven. It seems that now, because of my rebirth, everything is changing as my influence grows, Old Ancestor Xue Hu was implicated by me.”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s plight was a good thing to Fang Yuan.

In Dark Flow Giant City, Yin Liu Gong, Dragon Commander Ye Cha, and Huang Quan Weng, these three rank seven immortal zombies were standing guard. How could they be Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s match, after it happened, they could only watch as he flew away.

This matter could not be ignored, the three immortal zombies could only seek help from Zombie Alliance’s headquarters.

Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance flew into a rage, they sent three rank eight immortal zombies, along with ten rank seven immortal zombies out to punish Old Ancestor Xue Hu and protect their reputation.

Among these three immortal zombies, one was Blazing Heaven Demoness, it was necessary for her to go.

Why?

Because Blazing Heaven Demoness was the leader of the Northern Plains Zombie Alliance branch.

She was supposed to be guarding Dark Flow Giant City.

Once this happened, Blazing Heaven Demoness who was in Eastern Sea had to bear responsibility. When a mishap happened to Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, she had to return and fulfill her duty.

Once Blazing Heaven Demoness leaves, the mission of taking down Yu Lu blessed land returns to Shark Demon and Su Bai Man.

Fate worked in mysterious ways, it really caught people off guard and went beyond anyone’s expectations.

Originally, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man had no more hope, but because of Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Zombie Alliance had to focus on protecting its reputation. Thus, Blazing Heaven Demoness had to return to Northern Plains, and the ones left that were most suited to invade Yu Lu blessed land were Shark Demon and Su Bai Man.

Ever since Blazing Heaven Demoness forcefully took over the mission of Yu Lu blessed land, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man had been having a hard time, everyone avoided them like the plague. But now, the situation was reversed, after all, there was only one final round in Yu Lu blessed land, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man would prosper soon. With this change in circumstances, many Gu Immortals came over to befriend them, to repair the cracks in their relationships that was created earlier. Shark Demon and Su Bai Man were sighing over the mysterious twists and turns in life.

Fang Yuan had no time to care about their feelings.

Shark Demon was angry at Fang Yuan for turning to Blazing Heaven Demoness so quickly, in this invasion, he did not even invite Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Fang Yuan did not give a hoot.

Invading Yu Lu blessed land would give him only a small portion of the rewards, it was far less important than refining star thought Immortal Gu.

And refining star thought Immortal Gu was only the icing on the cake, it was less important than getting into Northern Plains Zombie Alliance.

After all, since long ago, Fang Yuan had been wanting the inheritance in Northern Plains Zombie Alliance. That was the inheritance of an immortal zombie great expert, it would be extremely helpful to Fang Yuan in reviving from his zombie state. In his previous life, Northern Plains Zombie Alliance obtained this inheritance and gained a huge boost in strength, surpassing Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance for a period of time!

Fang Yuan tried to disguise as immortal zombie Sha Huang, in an attempt to make his way into Earth Trench and obtain the inheritance.

It was a pity he failed.

Feng Jiu Ge and the others ruined his plans.

Left with no choice, Fang Yuan had to give up on it. There were many twists and turns along the way, he joined the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, he invaded Yu Lu blessed land, and even obtained two or three ways to revive from his immortal zombie body. However, his initial goal was still not achieved.

Now, it was the best chance for him to make his way into Northern Plains Zombie Alliance.

Before Fang Yuan had even made any request, Blazing Heaven Demoness had already requested Fang Yuan to go back to Northern Plains with her.

In the letter, Blazing Heaven Demoness’ attitude was still domineering as ever, and the reason she gave was also valid and enticing.

Northern Plains Zombie Alliance was the base of Blazing Heaven Demoness, she had many immortal materials kept there, she could give Fang Yuan more attempts at refining star thought Immortal Gu over there.

Or perhaps she was worried about letting Fang Yuan stay in Eastern Sea.

After all, the five regions’ regional walls were hard to pass.

The higher the cultivation level, the harder it is to pass, the difficulty multiplied by several times!

A hundred years ago, Blazing Heaven Demoness came to Eastern Sea from Northern Plains, most of her wealth was expended as she even got heavily injured, she only recovered after recuperating for eight years.

Now, facing a strong foe like Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Blazing Heaven Demoness was uncertain of how much time it would take to settle.

Keeping Fang Yuan by her side was more assuring.

At the same time, the wisdom path Gu Immortal Xing Xiang Zi might provide Blazing Heaven Demoness some help when dealing with Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

All in all, the chance that Fang Yuan had been trying to create and was waiting for had arrived.

It was all thanks to Old Ancestor Xue Hu getting discovered!

Towards Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Fang Yuan even felt a hint of gratitude.

Several days later.

Northern Plains, in the deepest parts of Luo Po valley.

The atmosphere was tense.

The five Gu Immortals from Central Continent had solemn expressions as they looked at this inconspicuous place.

After the battle had ended, only two people from Shadow Sect escaped.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals who had come to Northern Plains in secret and were very confident had suffered heavy losses, only five were left now.

“To think that a Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable true inheritance was hidden deep within Luo Po valley!” Bu Fei Yan sighed.

These last days, they had taken control of Luo Po valley and while being vigilant, they made every attempt to save Feng Jiu Ge, Ling Mei, and Ao Xue.

In the end, they confirmed the existence of the Thieving Heaven true inheritance, but they could not enter.

“It is a pity that my sect has no understanding regarding the Thieving Heaven true inheritances. It is too difficult to enter, we cannot break in for at least two to three years.” Hong Chi Ming said.

He was the most skilled in Gu formations among the five here.

Now that Ancient Soul Sect's Old Oracle had died, Hong Chi Ming was most suited to speak in this situation.

Not mentioning three years, the Central Continent immortals could not even wait for three months. In fact, it had been very risky to stay in Luo Po valley these last days.

After all, two Gu Immortals had escaped, what if they lured over other people, and attacked again.

“Actually, even if we know how to get in, we might not be able to save them. This is the arrangement of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable after all.”

“Lord Feng Jiu Ge is so strong, yet he is still trapped inside without any commotion. It seems that it is very dangerous inside, if we go in, we might not survive.”

“Qin Bai Sheng had planned meticulously to trap Feng Jiu Ge in there. If we go to save him rashly, perhaps...”

The Central Continent Gu Immortals spoke, their words contained deep meaning, their gazes were flickering uncertainly.

The ten great ancient sects of Central Continent were all under Heavenly Court, but they did not coexist in harmony, they had incessant conflicts.

If Feng Jiu Ge, a one in a thousand years genius, were to die here, the other nine sects would heave sighs of relief.

As for Ao Xue and Ling Mei, they had Immortal Gu, if they died here, Heaven's Envy Manor would lose its signature killer move — Peerless Crescent Moon Slash. This was no small loss even to Heaven's Envy Manor which had a deep foundation.

The enemy had left, the age-old inner conflicts between the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent had finally started to vaguely show themselves in these five immortals.

“We infiltrated Northern Plains to investigate the truth behind the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. Even though we took down Luo Po valley, Old Oracle has died and Feng Jiu Ge is trapped, we can only stop here now.”

“That's right, after this battle, we have all suffered huge losses, we need to rest and recuperate now.”

“In my opinion, we should hand over the information of what happened, and the fruits of our investigation over to our sects, that is the most important thing.”

“That makes sense, don't forget, we have captured Hui Feng Zi and the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison. These gains are all extremely valuable, we need to handle them appropriately.”

As they conversed, the Central Continent five immortals silently smiled internally.

Why would they save Feng Jiu Ge?

Save him so that he could suppress them? Save him so that he could get a share of the loot?

But they were in the righteous path, they needed to act on the surface, and not give others excuses to target them.

Now that they had made enough excuses for themselves, the five Central Continent immortals agreed on one thing — to return to Central Continent as soon as possible!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 928: Luck Path Backlash

After passing the regional wall, the group from Eastern Sea finally reached Northern Plains.

“I am finally back.” Fang Yuan sighed. He was disguised as Xing Xiang Zi, as he stepped on the grassland, his wistful sigh was not just an act.

In front of him, Blazing Heaven Demoness’ gaze flickered as she muttered softly: “Yes, I’m finally back.”

She was more deeply moved than Fang Yuan.

Even though Fang Yuan was a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, he only became an immortal in Northern Plains, he was born in Southern Border.

But Blazing Heaven Demoness was born and bred a person of Northern Plains, after a hundred years, she was finally back.

The five regions had varying terrains. Eastern Sea had endless mystical sea areas, Northern Plains was mostly flat and had countless grasslands, plains, and mounds.

Right now, Blazing Heaven Demoness had stepped into an infertile grassland, the yellow-brown soil only had a trace of greenery.

But Blazing Heaven Demoness felt a strong sense of familiarity inside her.

Apart from Fang Yuan and Blazing Heaven Demoness, the other Gu Immortals frowned slightly. They were Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, they felt curiosity yet unfamiliarity towards Northern Plains. Going from their homeland to another region, they felt a sense of ostracism inside them, they felt out of place from the environment that they were in.

Among them, there were two immortal zombies with the strongest auras, they were both rank eight.

These Gu Immortals from Eastern Sea were almost all immortal zombies, there were barely any living Gu Immortals. Including Fang Yuan and Blazing Heaven Demoness, there was a total of three rank eights, six rank sevens, and four rank sixes.

They were a powerful group, they had strength in numbers!

Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s actions had truly angered Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance, it sent out such a huge group to Northern Plains just to take revenge.

However, all of the Gu Immortals were injured now. The rank six Gu Immortals were lightly injured, the rank sevens had more severe injuries and were in pathetic states, while the three rank eight Gu Immortals were weak and had damaged bodies, some were missing arms while others were missing legs. Their bodies were swaying in the breeze, as if about to fall over at any time.

The edges of the five regions had regional walls. The one surrounding Northern Plains was the licorice regional wall, and the one around Eastern Sea was the blue water regional wall.

Because of the existence of regional walls, the five regions were isolated.

Furthermore, the regional walls were bigger obstructions against stronger life forms.

The difficulty of a rank eight Gu Immortal passing a regional wall was innumerable times as hard as a rank six Gu Immortal!

The Eastern Sea immortal zombies had to go from Eastern Sea to Northern Plains, they had to pass two regional walls, the three rank eights were heavily injured, while four of the rank seven immortal zombies died in the regional walls. In contrast, the rank six Gu Immortals faced less pressure.

Among all of them, Fang Yuan had the easiest time.

He had the lowest cultivation level, at the bottom of rank six, at the same time, he was also a Northern Plains Gu Immortal.

When he entered Northern Plains from Eastern Sea, the Eastern Sea regional wall rejected him and pushed him out, while the Northern Plains regional wall welcomed him and drew him in.

Using the same logic, among the three rank eight immortal zombies, Blazing Heaven Demoness had the lightest injuries.

Like travelers from afar returning home, Fang Yuan and Blazing Heaven Demoness received the warm welcome of Northern Plains.

“If not for the giant Gu formation in Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance’s headquarters, we would have to sacrifice at least one rank eight immortal zombie, and half of the rank sevens.”

Fang Yuan observed silently, at the same time, he inwardly praised Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance’s deep foundations.

Before they left, dozens of immortal zombies in the Zombie Alliance headquarters activated a Gu formation, causing an earth tide.

Once in a while, an earth tide would generate in Eastern Sea.

Drawing the force of the earth from deep within the sea trenches, a grand force would move the seawater and create an earth tide.

An earth tide was extremely powerful, it could easily whip up giant tsunamis. When an earth tide rushes at the regional wall, the regional wall would become thinner as a result, thus, every year during the earth tides, many Gu Immortals from other regions would enter Eastern Sea.

When Fang Yuan and the others set off, the earth tides were over already.

To think that in Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance’s headquarters, there was a method to create an artificial earth tide, weakening a portion of the Eastern Sea regional wall for a short period of time.

If not for this, Fang Yuan and the others would have suffered greater injuries.

“What do we do now?” After resting for a while, a rank eight immortal zombie broke the silence.

The other Gu Immortals were focusing their gazes on Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was the leader of Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, among the three rank eight immortal zombies, she was the strongest in terms of battle strength, thus, she was primarily directing the group in this mission.

Blazing Heaven Demoness did not hesitate, she smiled: “According to a reliable source, Old Ancestor Xue Hu has already returned to Snowy Mountain blessed land. We should not rush there, we should rest and recuperate, and recover our battle strength, that is the best course of action.”

The immortal zombies nodded in agreement, there were no objections.

They had just passed the regional walls, their battle strength had dropped to the lowest point, they needed to recover now.

Blazing Heaven Demoness did not even go back to Dark Flow Giant City, she chose a hidden and secluded spot.

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortals went into hiding as they recuperated.

This was the same course of action as taken by the Central Continent Gu Immortals when they came.

There was no other choice, the cost of passing the regional walls was too high.

In Snowy Mountain blessed land, snow was falling.

Three main peaks with countless branch peaks were situated, like a colossal frost giant that was standing straight.

Among them, the first main peak was tall and big, it was the residence of Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

Right now, in a certain room on the first main peak, a giant Gu formation was flickering with golden lights.

Outside the Gu formation, there was an old man.

It was Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

But at this moment, it was not him controlling the Gu formation, it was a female immortal.

This female immortal looked like she was in her late twenties, she had a beautiful appearance and elegant disposition, it was the second leader of Snowy Mountain, Lady Wan Shou.

Lady Wan Shou was Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s wife, she looked much younger than Old Ancestor Xue Hu, but she was in fact much older than him.

Lady Wan Shou once had a fortuitous encounter and obtained the inheritance of Gu Immortal Wang Jiu, not only did she obtain a few lifespan Gu, she also obtained many lifespan extension methods.

These lifespan extension methods all had drawbacks compared to lifespan Gu.

But lifespan Gu were extremely hard to find, Lady Wan Shou's lifespan extension methods were very popular with other Gu Immortals.

During Lady Wan Shou's early days, many Gu Immortals had approached her, paying a huge price for her to extend their lifespans.

In time, Lady Wan Shou helped more and more Gu Immortals, she had extended more than a thousand years worth of lifespan. Not only did she receive countless cultivation resources, her strength also rose drastically, she built a strong network and was very popular.

Many Gu Immortals needed her services, they naturally did not dare to offend her, they promoted her as her reputation soared far and wide.

Lady Wan Shou was not only skilled at extending lifespan, she was also a refinement path quasi-great grandmaster, she was known in Northern Plains' Gu Immortal world as one of the 'four refinement path experts'.

Quasi-great grandmaster, she was only a step away from great grandmaster level.

In terms of refinement path, Fang Yuan could not compare to Lady Wan Shou at all. As for Old Ancestor Xue Hu, he was an ice and snow path expert, he was also inferior in refinement path.

Thus, whenever Old Ancestor Xue Hu wanted to refine Gu, he would ask Lady Wan Shou to do it.

But now, Lady Wan Shou was using this refinement path Gu formation not to refine Gu, but to temper an immortal material.

This immortal material was dug out by Old Ancestor Xue Hu from deep in Earth Trench, inside the deepest part of the Zombie Alliance immortal zombie graveyard.

It was palm sized and was shining in purple-gold light, it was like a rock.

The refinement path Gu formation shined brightly and made great rumbling noises.

A while later, the Gu formation settled down, and the light also dissipated. The mysterious purple-gold rock that had turned completely red now cooled down quickly, it went back to its previous state.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu looked at Lady Wan Shou with an expectant gaze, he was asking her wordlessly.

Lady Wan Shou frowned slightly, she shook her head.

"Even you cannot tell what this mysterious purple-gold rock is?" Old Ancestor Xue Hu was surprised.

"This immortal material is truly extraordinary, I have already used my Gu formation to its limits, but I could not refine it. This is the first time I've seen such a situation, I need to research it carefully."

After saying this, Lady Wan Shou changed the topic: "Dear, you were too careless. It would have been fine if you were not exposed when stealing immortal zombies. But now that you have exceeded Zombie Alliance's bottom line, they are sure to take revenge, you need to be careful."

Old Ancestor Xue Hu nodded, he said heavily: "This time, I was overconfident. My original plan was progressing smoothly, I almost looted the entire immortal zombie graveyard, but suddenly, a Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie appeared. This is a superb immortal material for refining fortune rivalling heaven Gu, I got too excited and tried to capture him. To think he had already set up a Gu formation in the graveyard, I was careless and could not conceal the sound of the battle, thus Northern Plains Zombie Alliance was alerted.”

“Oh...” Old Ancestor Xue Hu sighed deeply: “Now that I think about it, it was likely the interference of fortune rivalling heaven Immortal.”

Lady Wan Shou said in a heavy tone: “Fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu is rank eight, it is to be expected that you were influenced. This is the core Immortal Gu of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. When I was refining Gu recently, I have been failing a lot too, it is likely the effect of fortune rivalling heaven Gu. But dear, just now, you have obtained a large number of immortal zombie bodies, the rate of immortal material collection was raised drastically. As long as we can refine fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, all of this would be worth it.”

Ever since Old Ancestor Xue Hu bought Ma Hong Yun, he had been using the latter as the main material to refine the rank eight fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu.

This matter was not advantageous to Ma Hong Yun, thus, Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Lady Wan Shou faced the backlash of fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu.

Not only them, many Gu Immortals of Snowy Mountain blessed land had received Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s orders to collect immortal materials, but they constantly faced bad luck and many mishaps happened to them.

Actually, previously, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had already experienced a backlash from luck path.

That was when Fairy Li Shan had just obtained Miniscule Mountain, it attracted the attack of Yao Huang and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu. But fighting both of them alone, Old Ancestor Xue Hu forced them to retreat.

Luck path was not invincible by any means, Old Ancestor Xue Hu used his immense strength to resist the backlash of luck path.

Just now, it was a near guaranteed success that he would steal the immortal zombie bodies, but due to the luck path backlash, he became careless, and the matter was blown up.

“The more difficulties we face in refining fortune rivalling heaven Gu, the more we can see the power of this Immortal Gu, and the more determined I am to refine it! Don’t worry, I have already placed Dark Flow Giant City under close supervision, if anything happens, I will know immediately. We will resist whoever comes here, I want to see if Zombie Alliance can really invest so much into this.”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu laughed, he displayed the dominance and ambition of a demonic path overlord.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 929: Plotting Against Old Ancestor Xue Hu

The huge Dark Flow Giant City was situation in a desolate land.

Darkness loomed over it, the giant city was like a slumbering beast, quietly lurking.

Ever since Old Ancestor Xue Hu had ransacked the immortal zombie graveyard, Dragon Commander Ye Cha and the other two leaders had closed the entirety of Dark Flow Giant City, showing a defensive stance.

Dark Flow Giant City was focusing on defense, no matter how other forces tried to probe it, they could only obtain a bit of information.

When night came, Blazing Heaven Demoness led the other Eastern Sea immortal zombies and secretly returned to Dark Flow Giant City.

“Subordinates Yin Liu Gong, Dragon Commander Ye Cha and Huang Quan Weng welcome leader and both lords, greetings to everyone.” The three currently in charge of Northern Plains Zombie Alliance paid respects, they could not conceal the uneasiness and agitation in their expressions.

“Get up. You were facing Old Ancestor Xue Hu, it was not your fault.” Blazing Heaven Demoness said first.

Yin Liu Gong and the others sighed in relief, their worries were eased.

Their lives had been very difficult these last few days.

On one hand, they were waiting for the reinforcements from Zombie Alliance’s headquarters, but at the same time, they were worried about their responsibility towards this matter in terms of negligence.

“Old Ancestor Xue Hu was too arrogant, he has to pay the price, we of Zombie Alliance are not to be trifled with.” Another rank eight immortal zombie said.

The surrounding immortal zombies looked at him in admiration, they quickly voiced out their agreement.

This rank eight immortal zombie was known as Corpse Detonation King, he was most skilled at using the smallest cost to ignite immortal zombie bodies and cause terrifying explosions.

He had a bad temper and was ruthless, when he passed the regional wall, he wantonly attacked allies who disagreed with him and killed them. Among the four rank seven immortal zombies that died, three were dead because of him. Their corpses were blown to bits, completely shattered, they created a huge explosion in the regional wall which allowed Corpse Detonation King to advance forward.

“Leader, when are we counterattacking?”

“When we attack, please let me be the vanguard!”

Yin Liu Gong and Huang Quan Weng saw the reinforcements from Eastern Sea and felt a strong sense of enthusiasm, they requested to help.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was not anxious, she said leisurely: “This matter is very important, let’s go look at the crime scene first, we need to collect evidence there.”

“That’s right, looking at these traces, we might be able to estimate some of Old

Ancestor Xue Hu’s methods.” Another rank eight immortal zombie, Pu Wan Dao, nodded in agreement.

Even though they were greater in numbers, they were all immortal zombies, compared to living Gu Immortals, they had many drawbacks.

Most importantly, the other party was not an ordinary person, they could not pressure him easily.

This was someone who could fight both Yao Huang and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu alone and force them back, he was a fearsome character, the publicly recognized number one demonic path Gu Immortal in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world!

Next, the immortal zombies moved without pause, secretly going to Earth Trench and analyzing the battlefield.

The battlefield was well preserved by Yin Liu Gong and the others.

The immortal zombie graveyard was a mess, the surface was covered in large amounts of frost, some crevices even had some fire burning in them.

Everyone displayed their abilities as they investigated.

Fang Yuan was among them, but his mind was wandering.

He gazed around, but his mind was elsewhere. He was looking for the treasure, but this treasure was not inside the immortal zombie graveyard, it was far deeper in Earth Trench.

“How can I obtain this treasure without anyone else knowing? I have a feeling this inheritance will surely be of huge help to me. Perhaps I will have to rely on it to get rid of my immortal zombie body and revive.”

Fang Yuan was becoming more excited about it.

But currently it was a pity that he was unable to leave the group, he could only follow them as they left Earth Trench, returning to Dark Flow Giant City.

After observing the battlefield, the immortal zombies’ expressions turned very ugly.

Even Corpse Detonation King and Pu Wan Dao had grim expressions.

Even though they did not engage in battle personally, just looking at the traces left behind, they could estimate Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s immense power.

But this made everyone feel that there was something strange, it was the person who could fight Old Ancestor Xue Hu to this extent.

“Who is this person? With rank seven cultivation level, he had outstanding battle strength, even already having set up a Gu formation in the graveyard itself. They seem to be an immortal zombie as well, but why do I not have their details in my list of names?” Blazing Heaven Demoness frowned deeply, she asked Yin Liu Gong and the others.

Yin Liu Gong, Dragon Commander Ye Cha, and Huang Quan Weng smiled bitterly, they admitted blame in unison: “We have failed our duties, we were kept in the dark and did not know that there was such a person hiding in Earth Trench.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness snorted coldly, her expression turned cold: “Investigate, investigate thoroughly. I feel that this is not so simple! Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s appearance here can be explained. He needs to refine fortune rivalling heaven Gu but is lacking in immortal materials. But why did that mysterious immortal zombie appear in our Northern Plains Zombie Alliance graveyard? Looking at this situation, he had been here for a long time already!”

“No need to investigate.” At this time, the rank eight Gu Immortal Corpse Detonation King interjected: “This person is a member of Zombie Alliance. We are here now to rescue him.”

Beside him, Pu Wan Dao added: “Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness, and everyone from Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, do forgive us. This person is not ordinary, he is a ten extreme immortal zombie with outstanding battle strength. Because he is on a secret mission from Zombie Alliance, for his safety, he was kept hidden. Zombie Alliance’s headquarters has sent down a top priority order, we have to work together to rescue this Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie.”

“It was like this?” The immortal zombies showed looks of shock.

Yin Liu Gong and the other two were slightly taken aback before their expressions turned grim.

Dragon Commander Ye Cha cupped his fists at the people from Eastern Sea: “I wonder what secret mission this Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie was on, that he had to come to the highly important immortal zombie graveyard in our Northern Plains Zombie Alliance.”

Corpse Detonation King replied coldly: “This is not something you are qualified to know.”

“Alright.” Blazing Heaven Demoness stood up, she tried to ease the situation: “Our enemy now is Old Ancestor Xue Hu. Since that immortal zombie is one of us, we will save him as well.”

Yin Liu Gong and the others nodded in agreement.

Fang Yuan watched coldly from the side.

This secret was kept from even Blazing Heaven Demoness. She was, after all, a Northern Plains immortal zombie, even though she had been in Eastern Sea for a long time, she was still isolated from the true core of Zombie Alliance.

At the same time, Fang Yuan realized something.

Zombie Alliance sent out so many people not only to teach Old Ancestor Xue Hu a lesson, but they most importantly wanted to save this Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie.

Fang Yuan saw this interesting situation as he laughed internally: “Hehe, if this Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie was sent by Zombie Alliance’s headquarters secretly as a spy to check on the Northern Plains branch, that would be amusing! Earlier, Dragon Commander Ye Cha was probably trying to ask about this.”

“Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness, you are indeed a valuable member of our Zombie Alliance. If everyone else had your awareness and understanding, why would we have to worry about Zombie Alliance’s goal of becoming the overlord of the five regions? Hahaha!” Corpse Detonation King laughed loudly.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was kept in the dark, she only learned about the true mission now.

But she was a shrewd person, she did not show any displeasure, instead she said:

“Next, let us talk about how we will teach Old Ancestor Xue Hu a lesson and also save the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie.”

Corpse Detonation King immediately said: “The Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie’s body has an abundance of fire path and lightning path dao marks, he is extremely suited to be used to refine Gu. We should not waste time, we should just approach him directly.”

“Going right at him is just an act of a boor.” Blazing Heaven Demoness rebuked, not giving Corpse Detonation King any face.

Corpse Detonation King stared as he was about to say something, but Pu Wan Dao also supported Blazing Heaven Demoness: “That is right, the other party captured the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie, he has a hostage. If we go there openly, even if we suppress Old Ancestor Xue Hu, he will use the hostage to threaten us, we will be restricted and all our advantages would be lost.”

“Then we will sneak into Snowy Mountain blessed land and save the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie!” Corpse Detonation King said again.

Blazing Heaven Demoness snorted: “Outside Dark Flow Giant City, there are countless hidden investigators, some must come from Snowy Mountain blessed land. With just this, we can see how alert Old Ancestor Xue Hu is, Snowy Mountain blessed land is sure to be heavily guarded. It is not realistic to sneak in, it is like surrendering ourselves to them. Of course! Corpse Detonation King, you are incredibly powerful and have amazing skills, if you want to, you can go yourself. I am sure that with your strength, you will succeed.”

“You!” Corpse Detonation King was lost for words, he showed an ashamed and angry expression.

“Then, in your opinion, what shall we do?” Pu Wan Dao placed his hand on Corpse Detonation King’s shoulder as he asked Blazing Heaven Demoness with a sharp gaze.

Blazing Heaven Demoness smiled proudly: “Even though Old Ancestor Xue Hu is strong, and Snowy Mountain blessed land is heavily guarded, it cannot conceal his greatest weakness.”

Someone asked: “Oh? What weakness?”

Blazing Heaven Demoness looked around as she said: “Fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan had no interest in dealing with Old Ancestor Xue Hu, when the immortal zombies were discussing about schemes excitedly, he was thinking about how to get to the treasure deep inside Earth Trench.

After an exchange of words, Blazing Heaven Demoness regained control as the first in command.

The immortal zombies planned and arranged their roles. Blazing Heaven Demoness did not let Fang Yuan go with them, she gave him one mission only, that was to continue refining star thought Immortal Gu.

She even gave Fang Yuan a token, it provided him the highest representation of her authority.

With this token, Fang Yuan could freely enter or exit Dark Flow Giant City, as well as the resource points that were controlled by Northern Plains Zombie Alliance. He could even enter the storage and use the precious immortal materials that were accumulated inside.

As long as they were used to refine Immortal Gu, he just had to register what he took.

The terms were relaxed and in his favor, Fang Yuan could not help but be surprised by this.

“Does Blazing Heaven Demoness still want to take down Yu Lu blessed land? That is not possible. Not mentioning how long it would take to solve this issue with Old Ancestor Xue Hu, now that Shark Demon and Su Bai Man have started invading it again, they are sure to make use of their time and invite wisdom path Gu Immortals to help regardless of the cost.”

“But once I have star thought Immortal Gu, together with my wisdom path attainment level, I can deduce many things. Maybe Blazing Heaven Demoness wants to make use of my ability in this regard to deal with Old Ancestor Xue Hu?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 930: Creating a Chance to Enter Earth Trench

Boom!

There was a loud sound, but the power of the explosion, on the contrary, was not big.

The endless starlight flickered leisurely in the secret room, like fluttering butterflies.

Looking at such a beautiful scene, Fang Yuan’s expression was very unsightly.

“Failed again. This time, the refinement of star thought Immortal Gu did not even progress to one-third...” Fang Yuan exhaled and waved his sleeve, immediately, everything was cleared, the starlight disappeared without a trace and the large secret room once again recovered its tranquility.

This was a secret room in Northern Plains Zombie Alliance.

Fang Yuan had obtained enough immortal materials here, thus, he made another attempt at refinement, but tasted the bitterness of failure once again.

“Despite using immortal killer move time assist luck before refining every time, the effect is not much. In terms of Connect Luck, there are no suitable targets. Forget it, I have already showed enough efforts on the surface, now I should try to enter deep into Earth Trench and get that inheritance.”

Fang Yuan naturally wanted to get the inheritance as soon as possible, but in many matters, haste was waste.

If he did not refine star thought Immortal Gu and just tried to go into Earth Trench hurriedly, it would no doubt be exposing his intentions.

It would be easily seen through, this naturally could not be allowed.

Although Fang Yuan entered Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, the current problem was he did not have freedom and was strictly guarded by two immortal zombies.

Fang Yuan understood that he was being monitored.

After all, he had failed many times in refining the Immortal Gu and owed Blazing Heaven Demoness a huge amount.

If he was not monitored and ran away, what would she do?

Even though when they had set the agreement, Blazing Heaven Demoness had used information path methods and both sides were restricted by immortal killer moves.

But at Blazing Heaven Demoness' level, as the saying goes, 'the more aged and experienced a person is, the less recklessness they have, the more knowledge they have, the more careful they are.' Who could be certain if Fang Yuan did not have a way to break the restrictions?

And Fang Yuan indeed did!

His previous life's memories gave him knowledge of many methods that could break immortal level restrictions of information path. But he did not have relevant Immortal Gu, so at present, he did not have the ability to break the restrictions.

Moreover, he sincerely wanted to refine star thought Immortal Gu, thus he was cooperating with Blazing Heaven Demoness.

But now, his even more wanted to secretly take that inheritance.

During these last days in Dark Flow Giant City, Fang Yuan tried refining star thought Immortal Gu to make Blazing Heaven Demoness feel at ease, while secretly gathering information and making preparations for when he made a move.

Compared to previously, Dark Flow Giant City had already opened its city gates, resuming its dealings with the outside world. The immortal zombies' morale gradually started rising and they were in high spirits.

Blazing Heaven Demoness led the experts to deal with Old Ancestor Xue Hu, using a rather intelligent strategy.

She did not attack directly, instead exploiting Old Ancestor Xue Hu's greatest weakness.

What was Old Ancestor Xue Hu's greatest weakness?

Almost all Northern Plains Gu Immortals knew.

That was fortune rivalling heaven Gu!

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was wholeheartedly trying to refine fortune rivalling heaven Gu, but he severely lacked immortal materials, even though he already had Ma Hong Yun, the main material, this concerned rank eight Immortal Gu, he needed to prepare many sets of materials and do everything to maximize the possibility of success. Thus, his requirements towards immortal materials were extremely huge.

Those demonic path Gu Immortals of Snowy Mountain blessed land were already endlessly at work from Old Ancestor Xue Hu, they were in constant torment in order to find the materials.

Even Old Ancestor Xue Hu let go of his status, and personally sneaked into the immortal zombie graveyard in Earth Trench, like a two-bit thief.

This showed Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s extreme desire towards immortal materials.

Blazing Heaven Demoness used this point to actively deploy and transfer experts to deal with those demonic path Gu Immortals of Snowy Mountain blessed land in particular, using ambushes, plots, wrecking plans and various other strategies.

These demonic path Gu Immortals already had enough pain as it was when gathering immortal materials, now that they suffered the backlash of luck path, the immortal zombies had a high success rate every time they moved against them.

As these attempts continued to succeed many times, Snowy Mountain blessed land’s morale unavoidably fell, while Zombie Alliance’s morale gradually rose, sweeping away the previous dejectedness.

Fang Yuan opened the door to the secret room with an ashen expression.

Two rank six immortal zombies were standing guard at the entrance.

Seeing Fang Yuan, an immortal zombie called Doctor Yin Xuan immediately bowed: “Sir, you have come out. I wonder if this refinement....”

Fang Yuan gave a grunt, waving his hand in irritation: “Don’t bother me!”

Saying this, he walked away.

“Hmph, who does he thinks he is, to be so arrogant in our base!” The other immortal zombie, Landlord Lei Yu’s eyes flickered with ominous light as he looked at Fang Yuan’s receding figure.

However, Doctor Yin Xuan did not care about being ignored, brightly smiling as he followed closely behind Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan walked ahead, taking a left turn and then a right, arriving in front of a hall.

This was the biggest immortal material warehouse in Dark Flow Giant City, and was personally watched by an immortal zombie.

Seeing Fang Yuan as well as Doctor Yin Xuan and Landlord Lei Yu, the immortal zombie in charge familiarly nodded towards them, knowing Fang Yuan was here to get immortal materials; he handed an information path Gu worm to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan held the Gu worm, and pretended to inspect the immortal material list inside, while plotting inwardly.

‘Blazing Heaven Demoness, Corpse Detonation King and Pu Wan Dao have already left Dark Flow Giant City two days ago to target the demonic path Gu Immortals of Snowy Mountain blessed land, and have not returned until now. This is an opportunity, I need to take advantage of it...’

Right at this time, the immortal zombie managing the warehouse enthusiastically spoke: “Sir Xing Xiang Zi, you can take any immortal materials you want. Leader has already informed us, and you only need to register the items. You don’t need to have any worries.”

Who knew that right as he finished speaking, Fang Yuan stared at him with a fierce look: “What worries would I have? Why would I have any worries? I am good!”

Fang Yuan looked like a mess with his hair and clothes in disorder, and also very agitated.

One look at this appearance, and the managing immortal zombie knew Fang Yuan must have failed the refinement.

This immortal zombie was dazed for a moment before thinking: ‘Serves me right, why do I have to shoot my mouth off. Whether his refinement succeeds or fails, what has it got to do with me?’

At once, he kept quiet to prevent any further issues.

However, Fang Yuan was not willing to let go.

He crushed the information path Gu worm, and walked away with his head low and hands behind his back.

He was grumbling: “Damn it, why is it still not working, why is it always a failure! I have already failed four times, why is it like this, why...”

Doctor Yin Xuan and Landlord Lei Yu looked at each other, and both sensibly stayed away from Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan, however, became more restless and started swearing while clenching his fists, his words were extremely vulgar and occasionally, he mumbled incomprehensible words.

Doctor Yin Xuan tried his best to differentiate them but he could only make out some fragmented contents.

“Do I really have to use that method?”

“No, the price is too high...”

“Damn it, this damned Immortal Gu, why am I not succeeding?!”

Fang Yuan revealed hesitation, seemingly having to make an extremely difficult decision.

His eyes were very red, giving the impression of a gambler who had already lost most of his assets but decided to go all in to win back the losses.

“Screw it, I will stake it all!”

“This time, it will definitely succeed, definitely.”

“Right, it will succeed!”

The three immortal zombies watched on indifferently, and as they looked on at Fang Yuan’s restlessness, the disdain and hate in their heart disappeared slightly, replaced by a trace of pity.

Many Gu Immortals had faced such a situation.

To refine an Immortal Gu, they paid a huge price, but they end up making no gains and might even lose all their wealth.

It was like stepping on a road of no return, looking at the dozens of years of accumulation and even hundreds of years of resources go to waste, it was unavoidable for them to become irrational and chase after success, unable to turn back, walking further and further on the road of failure.

Fang Yuan suddenly stopped and turned around, looking at Doctor Yin Xuan and Landlord Lei Yu.

“I have decided, you two pack up and follow me into Earth Trench!”

Fang Yuan’s words gave a huge shock to the three immortal zombies.

“Entering Earth Trench?” Doctor Yin Xuan’s expression changed.

Earth Trench was a dangerous place with ferocious beasts roaming around and perilous terrain, who knew how many lives have been buried there.

Blazing Heaven Demoness had ordered them to monitor Fang Yuan, naturally it also meant they had to guard him. Hearing Fang Yuan suddenly speak of entering Earth Trench, how could Doctor Yin Xuan agree?

Landlord Lei Yu also did not agree, saying firmly: “We will gather any immortal materials you require, sir, you don’t need to take the risk.”

“What do you understand, huh?” Fang Yuan raised his voice, his gaze revealing an arrogant look.

“Both of us have received leader’s command to ensure your safety, sir. Sir, if you enter Earth Trench and something happens, how can we explain it to leader? Please don’t make it difficult for us.” Doctor Yin Xuan gave a bitter smile, requesting earnestly.

Why would Fang Yuan care about his sincerity, he raised his arm and roared: “What does your difficulty have to do with me? I only care about refining Gu, I only know I need earth shell snail star night mucus!”

“Earth shell snail star night mucus? Sir, please hold on, I will check.” Doctor Yin Xuan immediately said.

He also had information path Gu worms on him which contained the records of most of the immortal materials in Zombie Alliance.

Soon, Doctor Yin Xuan showed a joyous look as he retracted his consciousness: “Earth shell snail mucus is the fluid left behind by the desolate beast earth shell snail as it slowly crawls on the ground. We have it, we have it. Currently, in warehouse number six, there are two to three in stock, will they be enough? If they are not, we will immediately issue a task and summon immortal zombies to gather them.”

Fang Yuan bellowed furiously, scolding while pointing at Doctor Yin Xuan’s nose: “Have you become deaf or is there a hole in your brain? Didn’t you hear what I said?! Earth shell snail star night mucus. Star. Night. Mucus! Not ordinary mucus, do you understand?!”

He then hurriedly continued: “Earth shell snail mucus needs to be sealed and stored within ten breaths of time, otherwise the fluid will dry up and lose its effect. Star night mucus is produced by using my special methods to process the ordinary mucus on the spot! The processing requires seven breaths of time, and even if the processing is complete and star night mucus is produced, its sealing process is complicated and needs to be finished within three breaths. So I need to enter Earth Trench, can you do it without me? If you can do it, I will eat my hat!”

“Uh...” For a moment, Doctor Yin Xuan and the others choked on their words, unable to retort to Fang Yuan’s scolding.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 931: Finally Entering Earth Trench

Earth shell snails lived in the depths of Earth Trench, or rather, they could only live there.

According to what Fang Yuan said, to collect the star night mucus, he would need to enter deep into Earth Trench and find an earth shell snail, trailing behind it as the snail moves, processing the mucus on the spot.

After processing it, he had to collect the star night mucus in a very short amount of time.

There was great difficulty in this, and it was very dangerous.

Earth shell snails had mild temperaments, it was not hard to get near them, one could even stand on their backs and attack them lightly, this desolate beast would not get angry.

The danger came from the fact that Earth Trench did not only contain earth shell snails.

The deeper one went into Earth Trench, the more fierce beasts, mysterious plants and wild Gu worms would show up.

Earth Trench was unfathomably deep, the place where the earth shell snails lived was a huge distance from the surface. Around the earth shell snail, there were many powerful beasts that formed into groups of desolate beasts, even ancient desolate beasts were not rare.

These fierce beasts and plants were the biggest threat.

“I definitely have to go into Earth Trench. Since Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness wants you two to protect me, then I will rely on you. Even if you die, I must live, do you understand?” Fang Yuan ordered them in a matter-of-fact tone.

Landlord Lei Yu and Doctor Yin Xuan gritted their teeth in anger, but they could do nothing to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan used Blazing Heaven Demoness’ name, these two immortal zombies had no choice.

The two discussed for a while before Doctor Yin Xuan said with a gloomy face to Fang Yuan: “This is very important, I have to report to Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness first, we cannot decide this ourselves!”

In the end, the key obstacle was still Blazing Heaven Demoness.

But this was something Fang Yuan had expected.

Thus, he waved his sleeves, urging them: “Then go!”

He was not afraid of Blazing Heaven Demoness’ investigation.

The truth was, star night mucus was a real thing.

This was one of the gains that Fang Yuan had recently when modifying the star thought Immortal Gu recipe.

Star night mucus was a personal innovation by Fang Yuan, it had a lot of potential and had a variety of uses. Not only could it be used for star thought Immortal Gu, it could also be used for the refinement of other star path Immortal Gu, it was an easy to gather rank six immortal material that also had a lot of use.

“If I can find a suitable habitat for earth shell snails, I can make use of it to produce star night mucus continuously. This immortal material would be a monopoly if I sold it in treasure yellow heaven, I can definitely sell it for a good price. In the short run, its value and profit would rival guts Gu.”

Fang Yuan evaluated.

But in the long run, the star night mucus’ method of production would be deciphered by others, they would even mimic him.

After all, processing immortal materials was not like producing guts Gu, in the hands of refinement path and wisdom path Gu Immortals, it could be easily deciphered. He could not keep a monopoly for long.

Doctor Yin Xuan stayed and accompanied Fang Yuan. The unlucky fellow, Landlord Lei Yu, carried a sense of heaviness and uneasiness as he went to a certain Gu formation in Dark Flow Giant City, using an information path Gu formation to transmit the information to Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Fang Yuan was not worried that Blazing Heaven Demoness would stop him.

In fact, Fang Yuan was rather confident that she would agree to it.

After all, refining star thought Immortal Gu would be of great help to Blazing Heaven Demoness as well. Fang Yuan still owed her a huge debt, if she did not want him to die, she might even send other immortal zombies to protect him.

Of course, there would not be many immortal zombies protecting him.

Right now, Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s attention was on the demonic path Gu Immortals of Snowy Mountain blessed land, to assault them and prevent them from obtaining Gu refinement immortal materials, so that Old Ancestor Xue Hu would suffer.

“If Blazing Heaven Demoness really did that, it would be in my favor. Entering deep into Earth Trench, the more people there are, the safer it is. By the time I get to the inheritance, I can shrug them off. If there are few people, I can shrug them off more easily.”

As Fang Yuan had expected, in the end, Blazing Heaven Demoness agreed with his idea and arranged for five immortal zombies to accompany him.

Among them, two were rank seven, and three were rank six. This was slightly beyond Fang Yuan’s expectations, he could see Blazing Heaven Demoness’ sincerity from this.

Three days later, the five immortal zombies gathered.

They waited for two more days, as the immortal zombies borrowed some Immortal Gu for this mission.

As the locals, no one was more familiar with Earth Trench than them.

After making ample preparations, the group set off.

What was worth noting was, not only did Northern Plains have an Earth Trench, in fact, the five regions all had an Earth Trench.

The ground was split open into giant ravines, some Earth Trenches stretched on for millions of li, some were tens of thousand of kilometers deep, some were immeasurably deep, in the Gu Master world, it was one of the most magnificent wonders of nature.

The Earth Trench in Zombie Alliance was closely guarded by them. When Blazing Heaven Demoness was not in Northern Plains, Yin Liu Gong, Dragon Commander Ye Cha, and Huang Quan Weng, the three rank seven immortal zombies, would send at least one person to guard the entrance of Earth Trench.

Earth Trench was full of resources, there were many desolate beasts, in the past, when Dark Flow Giant City was built here, it was to occupy this rich resource point.

Everyone knew that Northern Plains has the least amount of cultivation resources compared to the other four regions. But in Earth Trench, there was a huge area of rich resources. The only drawback was, there were powerful desolate plants and desolate beasts inside, they were numerous.

Normally, only super forces could occupy the Earth Trench resource point.

Northern Plains Zombie Alliance was like this, the Demon Expelling Sect in Central Continent was the same. Demon Expelling Sect was a super force, having three Gu Immortals standing guard in it, it controlled the Earth Trench known as An Zu Earth Trench, it was very famous in Central Continent.

By night time, Fang Yuan and the others went through the entrance of Earth Trench.

Fang Yuan had planned for a long time, he was not going to sneak in stealthily. He was surrounded by five immortal zombies, he was going in boldly and openly.

The giant trench was like a giant beast with a bloodthirsty mouth, it slowly opened its mouth in the deep darkness.

Fang Yuan and the others went inside, as their view of the trench gradually enlarged, dozens of times, hundreds of times.

After they flew down for several minutes, the interior of the Earth Trench was already wide enough to fit seventy or eighty Dark Flow Giant Cities.

The eerie darkness shined with twinkling glimmers of light.

The cliffs on the two sides were smooth and bare, there was only a sparse amount of needle shaped plants that were stuck there like sesame seeds.

Nobody knew how deep this Earth Trench was.

Even the immortal zombies who were in control of this place for many years had never explored to the bottom of the Earth Trench.

Even though the Earth Trench was full of resources, there was also an unbelievable number of desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts. Northern Plains Zombie Alliance did not have the strength, even though they exerted all their efforts, they only controlled the territory up to about one hundred and sixty kilometers from the surface.

In this current world, even though humans had been the overlords for a long time, they were not able to gain control over every area in nature.

Compared to the majesty of nature, humans were very insignificant and small.

The profound mysteries of heaven and earth were endless, they were deeply hidden. Even Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables were merely at the peaks of one or two paths, being able to observe the rules of the world.

Humans were far from understanding the mysteries of heaven and earth, there was a long road ahead of them.

As the group moved deeper, Earth Trench became wider and it showed just how small Fang Yuan and the rest were.

Here, they were already around a hundred kilometers from the surface. Mountains could not fill up this Earth Trench, it was shrouded in boundless darkness, devouring everything.

Everyone was very quiet.

Fang Yuan looked around without making a sound, he observed the immortal zombies secretly using his peripheral vision.

Five immortal zombie guards, two rank seven, three rank six.

Among them, the rank seven immortal zombies were Dragon Commander Ye Cha and Granny Yuan.

Among the three rank sixes, there was Doctor Yin Xuan and Landlord Lei Yu, as well as an enslavement path immortal zombie, called Lin Da Niao.

In the last five days, Fang Yuan had obtained some of their information, he was not clueless about them.

Among the two rank seven immortal zombies, the leader was Dragon Commander Ye Cha.

He was one of the three vice-leaders of Dark Flow Giant City, and also the strongest person in this trip. What was worth mentioning was that he used his own immortal aperture to raise large numbers of yaksha octopuses, gaining a reputation because of them.

Immortal zombies had dead apertures, but Dragon Commander Ye Cha was able to raise large amounts of yaksha octopuses, this was something others found puzzling, and many immortal zombies were curious.

The other rank seven immortal zombie was Granny Yuan, skilled in defense.

Doctor Yin Xuan, as his title suggested, was a healing Gu Immortal. He could not compare to Tai Bai Yun Sheng, but in regards to healing immortal zombies, he had quite the skill.

Landlord Lei Yu was skilled in attacking, his attacks were grand and powerful.

The final person, the immortal zombie Lin Da Niao, he was skilled in controlling birds, he was an enslavement path immortal zombie.

From this, one could see that Blazing Heaven Demoness had put in some effort in arranging these people to protect Fang Yuan.

Granny Yuan could provide him defense, while Doctor Yin Xuan could help Fang Yuan recover from injuries at a crucial moment, saving his life. If they were attacked by desolate beasts and were unable to win, Lin Da Niao could sacrifice the bird groups that he had, providing enough time to allow the immortals to make an escape.

The deeper they went, the wider Earth Trench became.

There was a lot of space between the two cliffs on the sides, birds could move very freely here.

At this moment, birds were flying out of Lin Da Niao’s immortal aperture, flying around the place.

Enslavement path had its conveniences, ever since they entered Earth Trench, Lin Da Niao was in charge of the investigation aspect.

“The inheritance is that way, but I cannot go there directly, it would seem like I have an objective and they would be suspicious.” Fang Yuan did not do anything suspicious, he was very patient.

After some traveling, Lin Da Niao suddenly said: “There is a yaksha octopus in front and towards the left, it is injured.”

Dragon Commander Ye Cha’s expression did not change: “Ignore it, we will detour around it.”

Fang Yuan’s group of six was very powerful, a rank six yaksha octopus was surely inferior to them.

But this trip was to find earth shell snails and gather immortal materials, that was their objective.

By that point, they were sure to go through many battles, they should save their immortal essence for now.

Earth shell snails lived deep in Earth Trench, they moved very slowly and did not have fixed locations, they were very hard to trace.

The stronger the beast, the more they would have a sense of territory.

In an extremely deep part of Earth Trench, all sorts of fierce beasts and plants owned their respective territories.

But earth shell snails were a rare species that could move between territories without attracting the animosity of the desolate beasts.

Maybe it was because of the earth shell snail’s gentle nature, it let the other strong living beings know that it was harmless.

But Fang Yuan and the others would not receive treatment like the earth shell snail.

Thus, there were bound to be battles.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 932: Yaksha Octopuses, Mouth Earthworm

Without speaking, Fang Yuan and the other immortal zombies had already traveled more than a hundred and thirty kilometers down into Earth Trench.

Even though they avoided battles, they still engaged in sixteen fights, both big and small.

The immortal zombies were more or less injured to an extent.

“We can’t go any deeper.” Dragon Commander Ye Cha said: “At this depth, we are already at the range of the earth shell snail’s habitat, let’s look around.”

Northern Plains Zombie Alliance only managed to explore one hundred and sixty kilometers into Earth Trench.

Right now, they were still around thirty kilometers from that limit, but the lower they went, the more dangerous it became, desolate beasts were everywhere, and Fang Yuan’s group would face even more difficulties than now.

No immortal zombie objected to Dragon Commander Ye Cha’s suggestion.

After choosing a direction, everyone flew quietly.

Maybe it was because Fang Yuan had used time assist luck before this trip and raised his luck for a period of time. But in any case, not long after, he encountered an earth shell snail.

“Great.” Fang Yuan showed an overjoyed expression.

“Don’t be anxious, check the surroundings first, make sure there are no dangers lurking around.” Dragon Commander Ye Cha was very patient.

The immortals used their methods to thoroughly investigate, in this area, there was a sizable group of yaksha octopuses guarding their territory.

“To process the snail mucus, I will need to use starlight, it will definitely alert these yaksha octopuses.” Fang Yuan showed a difficult expression as he looked at Dragon Commander Ye Cha.

Everyone’s expressions sank.

“Why didn’t you say that earlier?” Landlord Lei Yu asked unhappily.

“Maybe there is a way to conceal this disturbance...” Doctor Yin Xuan said.

Fang Yuan shook his head: “That is not possible, I also want to conceal our disturbance, but that is beyond my ability. I cannot reveal my actual method, but in short, we should get rid of these yaksha octopuses first.”

Fang Yuan’s attitude was firm and his reason was valid.

The other immortal zombies looked at each other, in the end, Dragon Commander Ye Cha relented: “Then we will fight this group of yaksha octopuses before Xing Xiang Zi starts.”

This time, Dragon Commander Ye Cha did the scouting personally.

There were eight desolate beast octopuses in this group, among them was an octopus king, having rank seven Gu Immortal battle strength.

“Lin Da Niao will be in charge of the surroundings, mobilizing the bird groups to encircle the octopus group.”

“Granny Yuan will draw their attention and distract them.”

“Landlord Lei Yu and I will attack these octopuses.”

“As for Doctor Yin Xuan, you will stand guard outside in case of emergencies.”

Dragon Commander Ye Cha quickly arranged matters, Fang Yuan did not have to do anything.

The yaksha octopuses were truly unfortunate, the immortal zombies stealthily approached them, scheming against this unknowing group. Thus, once they fought, the yaksha octopus group suffered a huge blow and fell into panic.

The immortal zombies quickly gained an advantage as they built upon their superiority.

Soon, the battle reached its end as the octopuses were killed, only two were left.

At this time, Dragon Commander Ye Cha said to Fang Yuan: “Xing Xiang Zi, go ahead and attack.”

Fang Yuan’s gaze shone, he slowly went into battle.

Immortal killer move — Star Snake Rope.

He first trapped the yaksha octopus that was in better condition, before using six illusion star bodies to encircle the other one.

Swish swish swish...

Starlight shone brightly, Fang Yuan attacked non-stop, he quickly killed this yaksha octopus which was already close to dying.

Next, he turned around and targeted the final one remaining.

The yaksha octopus was half man and half beast. Its upper body was a muscular man with bulging muscles and dark skin that was tough as steel. Its lower body was made of dozens of tentacles, in place of legs.

This final yaksha octopus was in a good condition, it fought valiantly, engaging in a fierce battle with Fang Yuan, as it slowly fell into a deadlock with him.

Fang Yuan used star cloud grindstone to defend himself while waiting for a chance to attack time and time again, until he finally cut off all of the yaksha octopus’ tentacles.

When he was fighting, the other immortal zombies watched without doing anything.

At most, Lin Da Niao manipulated the bird groups to prevent the yaksha octopus which was trying to escape from leaving, allowing Fang Yuan to catch up and continue fighting it.

Fang Yuan had a lot of patience, he slowly injured the yaksha octopus, dark and cold blood flowed out from its injuries.

“Alright, you can stop.” Eventually, Dragon Commander Ye Cha did not want to wait anymore, he personally struck and captured this yaksha octopus himself.

The first few were all killed because they could not afford to go easy on the group initially.

This octopus was captured by Dragon Commander Ye Cha, he was preparing to raise it inside his immortal aperture.

Now, all the immortal zombies understood Fang Yuan’s battle strength.

Fang Yuan only showed his star path battle strength, but even so, he was an expert among rank sixes. Landlord Lei Yu, who was unhappy towards Fang Yuan became silent.

He estimated that if he fought Fang Yuan alone, he might not be able to win.

In the Gu Immortal world, strength ruled above all, even if Landlord Lei Yu was unhappy, he could not show it on the surface.

Next, Fang Yuan started collecting star night mucus.

He requested the immortal zombies to stay back and not use any investigative methods to steal his personal technique.

The immortal zombies were naturally unhappy, they scolded Fang Yuan internally for being so small-minded, but they had to agree to his request.

When processing the mucus, the starlight caused quite a disturbance.

Soon, the earth shell snail stopped moving, its entire body curled into its shell.

The moment it sensed danger, the earth shell snail would react like this.

Its shell was very thick, even though it was only a desolate beast, most rank six Gu Immortals could do nothing to it. Even rank seven Gu Immortals would need to exert a lot of effort to break its shell.

Furthermore, the earth shell snail was large like a whale, and heavy like a mountain, once it entered its shell, it could be for a year or two. If there was a huge commotion outside, it would stay inside for even longer.

If it was moved away from the habitat of earth shell snails, even if it was still in Earth Trench, even if it was outside of it by a few kilometers, the earth shell snail would die immediately.

Thus, the immortal zombies could only give up on this one and find others.

In Earth Trench, there were more than yaksha octopuses.

There were bat desolate beasts, wall climbing demon apes, and desolate plants like earth milk grass.

On their later journey, they met with three earth shell snails.

Among which, Fang Yuan made good use of two of them and collected a lot of star night mucus. The final one however, moved towards the territory of an ancient desolate beast red flame snake.

This monster had dark path, fire path, and earth path dao marks on it, it was hard to deal with and was an expert in digging holes, it could move quickly between the walls of Earth Trench.

Once they fought, the commotion would be unconcealable, thus, Fang Yuan and the others had to give up.

Under Fang Yuan’s intentional guidance, the immortal zombies got closer to his destination.

“We’ve discovered a large number of yaksha octopuses ahead! Stop moving forward, there are a lot of them, the initial estimation is thirty!” Lin Da Niao suddenly reported anxiously.

“Then we will leave this place and go in another direction.” Dragon Commander Ye Cha immediately ordered.

Thirty desolate beasts, that was the battle strength of thirty rank six Gu Immortals. Such a massive group would surely have at least three ancient desolate beast yaksha octopuses commanding it.

Even though Fang Yuan was unwilling, he could not object to it publicly, he could only memorize this place for now.

The immortal zombies took a detour towards the south-east direction.

Soon, they found a fourth earth shell snail.

This snail looked quite old, it was carrying a yellow shell, its white body moved slowly on the walls of Earth Trench, at an extremely slow pace.

“We’re finally lucky.” After investigating, Lin Da Niao laughed: “This area has little danger, Sir Xing Xiang Zi can go ahead and collect the mucus.”

Fang Yuan nodded without speaking, observing intently.

Suddenly, his eyes shined, he saw the danger in this place.

This place seemed safe, but it was full of earth path dao marks, once someone got close, they would be pulled towards the wall.

The heavier the body, the stronger the force of attraction.

“Desolate beasts have huge bodies and incredible mass. Once they come here, they would be unable to move and would starve to death. The earth shell snail is heavy like a mountain, but this earth shell snail can still move slowly. It seems that this snail is not old, it is an ancient desolate beast earth shell snail!”

Realizing this, Fang Yuan had an idea.

He flew over, purposely acting like he was sucked over, as he screamed.

“Oh no, it is the gravity soil zone!”

“This should only appear after a hundred and sixty kilometers in depth, it is actually here as well.”

“Be careful! This gravity soil zone often has mouth earthworms hidden in ambush!”

At once, the immortal zombies shouted in shock.

The closer he was to the gravity soil zone, the more Fang Yuan felt the suction force getting stronger and his speed increased.’

With a loud thud, Fang Yuan crashed into the wall, his legs were deeply stuck in the wall as he showed a terrified expression.

Immortal killer move — Star Fire Escape!

Fang Yuan used his movement killer move.

Immediately, his body was covered in star fire as he flew.

“Don’t fly!” Dragon Commander Ye Cha roared.

But it was too late.

With a loud bang, a huge mouth earthworm emerged from the soil.

The earth shell snail immediately shrunk into its shell, turning motionless.

Huge amounts of rocks were pushed away, the mouth earthworm opened its mouth, it could swallow four or five earth shell snails at once.

Fang Yuan screamed: “Someone save me!”

Once he said that, the mouth earthworm swallowed him.

“Be careful! The mouth earthworm is full of sharp teeth, they are incomparably sharp!”

“Hang in there, we will definitely rescue you!!”

The immortal zombies were panicking, they moved at once.

If anything happened to Fang Yuan, how would they explain themselves to Blazing Heaven Demoness?

They attacked fiercely, forcing the mouth earthworm back into the gravity soil zone immediately.

This mystical ancient desolate beast had a huge body when hunting for food. Once it ate, its body would shrink rapidly like a leaking balloon. The teeth inside it would rotate endlessly, grinding its prey into meat paste and blood.

But once Fang Yuan went inside, he used a star path killer move and stopped the body from shrinking.

Next, he activated Fixed Immortal Travel.

He had memorized the place nearby earlier, in three breaths of time, Fixed Immortal Travel teleported him away and he escaped from this dangerous spot.

But Dragon Commander Ye Cha and the others still thought that Fang Yuan was inside the mouth earthworm, they were attacking it furiously.

Even though Fang Yuan got away from the immortal zombies, the disturbance from Fixed Immortal Travel had attracted the huge group of yaksha octopuses.

Fang Yuan smiled, turning into a yaksha octopus and attacking furiously.

A moment later, he successfully lured the angry yaksha octopuses towards Dragon Commander Ye Cha and the others.

Dragon Commander Ye Cha and the others were unable to discern Fang Yuan’s transformation, they thought the yaksha octopuses were fighting among themselves and were chasing away the weakest members.

They sighed over their bad luck but because Xing Xiang Zi was still inside the mouth earthworm, they could not leave.

Thus, the yaksha octopuses, the Northern Plains immortal zombies, and the mouth earthworm engaged in a chaotic battle.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 933: Wild Immortal Gu, Traces of Gu Formation

In the chaotic battle, Fang Yuan managed to escape.

When he returned to the place where the yaksha octopuses were, about half of them were still left.

He tried the same thing again, luring the remaining yaksha octopuses away.

“Oh no! Another ancient yaksha octopus, and ten desolate beast octopuses. They seemed to have moved out together!” Dragon Commander Ye Cha was stuck in the chaotic battle, seeing the octopus reinforcements, he cried out in bitterness.

What grudges did they have, what vengeance was it?

The other immortal zombies also bemoaned their terrible luck, what was going on?!

But they had other choice than to save Xing Xiang Zi first.

“Hold on!” Dragon Commander Ye Cha shouted, he did not stint on his immortal essence, he used them extensively.

Blazing Heaven Demoness had immense authority, the immortal zombies did not dare to defy her orders, they could only endure in the chaotic battle.

Thankfully, this mouth earthworm did not hide in the gravity soil zone, it was in a frenzy and its huge body lashed around, creating powerful sonic booms.

The immortal zombie did not dare to take the hits, they could only attack from afar, the damage accumulated slowly as the mouth earthworm’s skin was damaged.

Originally, the situation was quite simple.

Even though the mouth earthworm was an ancient desolate beast, it was not the match of Dragon Commander Ye Cha and the others.

But with the yaksha octopus group, it became a three way battle.

They restricted each other and fought randomly, the scene became very chaotic.

The yaksha octopuses were the greatest in number, they encircled the immortal zombies and the mouth earthworm, forming a tight layer.

“Xing Xiang Zi, you must survive!” Landlord Lei Yu shouted.

Even though he was unhappy with Fang Yuan, the moment he thought that Fang Yuan could die from this, he burst out in cold sweat.

Fang Yuan’s safety was a huge issue weighing on the immortal zombies.

During this period, the perpetrator, Fang Yuan was secretly sneaking into the territory of the yaksha octopuses.

Groups of yaksha octopuses lived in the two sides of the cliff walls.

The cliff wall in front of him had a huge protrusion. This yaksha octopus group made a hole in this protrusion and made it their home.

Fang Yuan sneaked inside, drilling into a bigger entrance.

The entrance of the hole was very big, it was for the yaksha octopuses to enter and exit. Desolate beast level yaksha octopuses were very big, not to mention the ancient desolate beast yaksha octopus kings.

Fang Yuan entered the hole and a thick smell of oil assailed him.

The hole extended in front of him, he looked ahead and only saw darkness.

But Fang Yuan’s investigative methods were very rich, this darkness could not obstruct him.

He stretched out his hand and touched the walls.

The surface of the hole’s walls were full of black oil, they were thick and sticky.

Why would the dry cave have black oil?

This was due to the yaksha octopus’ habits.

Yaksha octopuses were a type of fierce beast that liked to hunt for prey in the black oil of Earth Trench. Therefore, their bodies would often have sticky black oil stuck to them.

When they enter or exit the caves, the black oil would spread from their bodies to the walls of the caves.

The oily smell that Fang Yuan smelt was due to this black oil.

In the black oil, there were lots of weeds and needle wood, they were rooted into the walls and the black oil provided them sufficient nutrients.

Guru guru...

When Fang Yuan touched the black oil and wiped along it, bubbles started appearing on the sticky black oil surface on the wall.

Next, dozens of tiny worms that were smaller than fingers flew out from the bubbles.

They were alerted by Fang Yuan’s actions and flew out, but they quickly went back into the black oil.

The black oil was like glue, it was very sticky and stuck to the walls tightly. Inside, there was rotting vegetation as well as large numbers of insects.

The insects were of such a massive scale, there were bound to be wild Gu worms in them.

Fang Yuan only gave them a glance and realized that there were at least four wild Gu worms around him. Two were earth path Gu worms, one was dark path, and one was water path.

Of course, these were mortal Gu, Fang Yuan had no interest in taking them.

“Dragon Commander Ye Cha is able to raise large numbers of yaksha octopuses, is his immortal aperture mimicking this environment?” Fang Yuan’s mind wandered as he thought about this.

Fang Yuan was also very curious about Dragon Commander Ye Cha’s cultivation secret.

Since an immortal zombie’s immortal aperture was dead and filled with death energy, it could not be used to support living beings.

How did Dragon Commander Ye Cha do it?

Perhaps it was possible to learn the secrets of Dragon Commander Ye Cha by researching this environment, but now was not the time, Fang Yuan discarded these thoughts and moved on.

Several minutes later.

Howl——!

This was the final growl before the fierce beast died.

But this growl was only heard in a small area before it vanished.

The killer was Fang Yuan.

He used his Gu worms to prevent the sound from spreading.

This was deep into the yaksha octopus’ cave, not only was the black oil seven to eight inches thick, some fierce beasts were even living here in the crevices.

These wild beasts mostly consisted of black stomach hounds.

Black stomach hounds ate rotting meat and bones. The yaksha octopus only consumed the fresh blood and meat of their prey, they did not eat the bones and rotting meat.

These black stomach hounds would eat the leftovers from the yaksha octopuses, the yaksha octopuses were happy with this, they had a free cleaner to tidy up the cave.

This was one of the wonders of nature, living beings could coexist in harmony.

When Fang Yuan found out the relationship between the black stomach hounds and the yaksha octopuses, he turned into a black stomach hound and ventured in.

It was a pity that these black stomach hounds divided their own territories and had a stronger territorial awareness than the yaksha octopuses.

Fang Yuan was fiercely attacked by the black stomach hounds, it would have been easier to just fight in his human form.

If this cave was divided into two, the upper half and the lower half, then Fang Yuan’s current position was already in the lower half, past the upper half.

Even so, the clues to the inheritance had not appeared yet.

At every interval, there would be a fork in the path. All of the yaksha octopuses went to their homes through these paths, they were interconnected. In the ground, these countless holes formed widely connected and accessible paths.

Fang Yuan continued moving forward.

He found some yaksha octopuses that were guarding the cave.

These octopuses were only desolate beasts, Fang Yuan could take them down if he used his real battle strength.

But Fang Yuan got past them, he did not want to waste time in fighting with them.

He could use mortal Gu to conceal the traces when killing the black stomach hounds. But when dealing with desolate beasts, he needed a battlefield killer move to conceal the traces and commotion.

He lured most of the yaksha octopuses out.

But there was still an ancient yaksha octopus king, and numerous desolate beast yaksha octopuses.

If the yaksha octopus king was alerted, it would be terrible.

Time continued to pass, but he still found no clues, Fang Yuan was getting more anxious.

If he missed this chance, he would have to plan a lot for the next visit.

Even though he had Fixed Immortal Travel, he could not use it in Dark Flow Giant City blatantly. The activation of Fixed Immortal Travel caused quite a disturbance after all.

Within the investigative range of Gu Immortals, it was not just some light effects, the aura of Immortal Gu was like a fire burning in the night sky.

And at this time, Fang Yuan had to refine Gu in Dark Flow Giant City, Blazing Heaven Demoness would not let him leave her sights.

Fixed Immortal Travel could not be exposed.

Once it was exposed, many secrets would be exposed, the whole world would know that Fang Yuan was the person who toppled Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Fang Yuan did not know that the Central Continent Gu Immortals had already left by now.

“If there is no other way, I can only give up. Time is limited, once the battle ends and the mouth earthworm is dissected, if Dragon Commander Ye Cha and the others do not find me inside, I will not be able to explain it.”

Fang Yuan evaluated.

Time was limited. He had about fifteen minutes.

Now, most of the time was already wasted, but he had no gains.

Fang Yuan had to use his time well, he raised his speed.

Eventually, he came to the deepest part of the cave.

Here, there was a yaksha octopus king resting.

Its snores were loud as thunder — evidently, it was sleeping.

“Immortal Gu aura!” Fang Yuan’s heart jumped.

He felt the aura of a wild Immortal Gu in this yaksha octopus king.

As it turned out, this cave had existed for a long time, and this yaksha octopus king was the oldest. As a long time passed, among the Gu worms living in its body, one had emerged as a wild Immortal Gu.

The joy in his heart vanished as Fang Yuan felt glad.

Thankfully, he had not lured out this yaksha octopus king earlier.

If this yaksha octopus king appeared, the immortal zombies would definitely go crazy and try to capture the wild Immortal Gu, they would enter a frenzy.

But after finding this Immortal Gu, whether they succeeded or not, they would come to the cave and investigate.

“Perhaps this is how the Northern Plains Zombie Alliance found this inheritance in my previous life?” Fang Yuan had a flash of inspiration.

After hesitating, Fang Yuan decided to take a gamble.

He turned into a black stomach hound and carefully got close to the yaksha octopus king.

If this yaksha octopus king’s wild Immortal Gu could expose Fang Yuan’s identity, that would be trouble.

But this possibility was not big.

Fang Yuan decided to risk it.

“The cave is huge with many tunnels, but this is the deepest part of the cave, it is most likely to be here.”

At this time, the yaksha octopus king’s tentacles which were wrapped up loosened, it opened its eyes as its topaz-like pupils looked at Fang Yuan who has transformed into the black stomach hound.

Fang Yuan did not sense anything, he got past the yaksha octopus king and went behind it as if it was normal.

Behind the yaksha octopus king, there was a pile of white bones, there were some rotting meat left in them.

The octopus king shut its eyes, continuing to sleep.

Fang Yuan’s mind was energized: “It is here! There are dao marks exposed here, these are traces of a Gu formation...”

Countless Gu worms in his immortal aperture were activated, immortal essence was expended rapidly as this Gu formation was unraveled.

Soon, Fang Yuan found that this space path giant Gu formation only showed a trace of a flaw because it had not been repaired for a long time.

“Very possibly, the treasure that I have been looking for is in this giant Gu formation. But to unravel this Gu formation, I have to activate Gu worms, the disturbance is huge. I can only take a risk...”

Fang Yuan made up his mind, he picked up a piece of bone and left the yaksha octopus king.

He quickly returned and when he reached a certain place, he used his Immortal Gu and directly attacked a close by desolate beast yaksha octopus.

The intense battle erupted as the yaksha octopuses that were defending their homes charged over.

Fang Yuan fought as he retreated, when he reached the exit, he activated Fixed Immortal Travel.

In three breaths of time, he teleported to the deepest area of the cave.

At this time, the yaksha octopus king was still at the exit of the cave, Fang Yuan fought against time as he unraveled this space path Gu formation.

After the yaksha octopuses fought for some time, they did not see any enemies and gradually calmed down, returning to the cave.

They moved quickly in the cave, Fang Yuan’s time was limited.

The worse thing was, when he started unraveling it, Fang Yuan could feel the profoundness and complexity of this huge Gu formation.

To completely deduce it, he would need months to do so!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 934: Sea of Immortal Material Remains

Such an enormous Gu formation required at least several months to be unraveled.

It would require about a month just to pry an opening.

Fang Yuan’s hands moved very fast, countless Gu worms fluttered all around, unraveling the Gu formation. At the same time, his ears quivered frequently as he activated his investigative methods to the limit, the yaksha octopus king was already on its way.

Time waits for no man.

Strive for every second!

“This is it.” Fang Yuan’s eyes suddenly brightened as the air in front of him started emitting a hazy glow.

Beyond the hazy glow, he saw a trace of the enormous Gu formation.

Although his sight was blurry, he could vaguely see the scenery inside the formation.

The yaksha octopus king had already returned.

Time was up, he had to retreat.

In this short amount of time, being able to peep into the scenery inside the Gu formation was already the limits of Fang Yuan’s ability.

If Fang Yuan did not reach grandmaster level in wisdom path, he would not have been able to do this.

This was enough.

Fang Yuan relaxed, and immediately retreated.

The ancient desolate beast yaksha octopus king was moving like an underground subway train in the cave. The surrounding slippery black oil from Earth Trench allowed it to move like a fish in water.

Fang Yuan had almost bumped into it.

This yaksha octopus king returned to its place, and gazed around first of all.

It felt there was something off.

When Fang Yuan analyzed the Gu formation, many different kinds of auras were left behind, the wild beast's intuition made the yaksha octopus king feel something wrong.

It frowned deeply, and more than ten of its enormous and tough tentacles carried it nimbly as it patrolled around the nest.

However, it could not discover anything missing even after a while, while the previous unknown auras already had begun dissipating. The yaksha octopus king only then slowly calmed down, lying down on its nest again.

It was just that it did not sleep, its eyes were slightly closed but a small crack was opened.

From time to time, its ears would quiver from the slightest breeze in the cave as it tried to listen to any unknown sounds.

Fang Yuan's worries finally dissipated, he cautiously retreated, even retreating to the upper half of the octopus nest.

This yaksha octopus king seemed to have the highest status as it had stayed behind to guard the nest. If it felt any strong danger, who is to say it might not call back the other yaksha octopuses fighting outside.

At that time, not to mention whether the Northern Plains immortal zombies would feel suspicious and be attracted to the disturbance, Fang Yuan's movements in the octopus nest would be extremely restricted.

“This place should be okay.” After a while, Fang Yuan carefully selected an inconspicuous corner among the several underground burrows.

He hesitated for a moment, but still decided to activate Fixed Immortal Travel.

Although that enormous Gu formation was arranged by some predecessor, when Fang Yuan deciphered it earlier, he found out that it had become an unmanned formation and had been unmanaged for many years. The risk of rashly going in was not high.

To find a method of reviving from the immortal zombie state, this was a risk he needed to take.

After all, as time passed, Fang Yuan's predicament would become more dangerous.

Who could say if the matter of him wrecking Eighty-Eight True Yang Building would be exposed at the next moment? At that time, the whole world would hunt him down. He would definitely not be able to protect Hu Immortal blessed land, and Star Form blessed land would be his only base.

In such a situation, the earlier he got rid of his immortal zombie body, the more beneficial it would be. After all, a living immortal aperture world could be brought with him, more safe and convenient than Hu Immortal blessed land or Star Form blessed land.

Moreover, living Gu Immortal immortal apertures could produce immortal essence in set intervals of time, which was extremely helpful to Fang Yuan's financial situation and battle strength!

The Immortal Gu was activated, green light blossomed.

The next moment, Fang Yuan disappeared from his place, appearing inside the giant Gu formation.

Just outside the Gu formation was the yaksha octopus king. But because of the isolation effect of the Gu formation, it was unaware of anything.

“I am finally in here.” Fang Yuan was extremely vigilant, he quickly looked around him, this was indeed the place which he had inspected earlier.

Rashly charging into a Gu formation was very dangerous, and it was normal to be attacked by the Gu formation.

However, Fang Yuan did not suffer any attacks, this further proved that the Gu formation was not managed by anyone.

He exhaled a breath of relief, but was still extremely vigilant.

Unmanned Gu formations could still function. Perhaps the core of the Gu formation had the will left behind by the Gu Immortal.

It could be like Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, where Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had left behind his will.

This was an giant formation using mainly space path methods, thus creating a special space.

This huge space had a yellow sky and a ground paved with purple sand.

The purple sand seemed to be extremely fertile, as dense amounts of vegetation covered Fang Yuan's sight, like a tropical rainforest.

“Scribe grass, nutrient peaches, immortal beans, blood tide flowers...” With just a brief glance, Fang Yuan could make out dozens of immortal materials.

Even a person as stoic as him was shocked.

Although most of these immortal materials were rank six level, along with a few of rank seven, their quantity was truly shocking.

“These immortal materials come from five regions, and are not limited to Earth Trench and Northern Plains. What background did the great expert immortal zombie that created this place have?”

To gather such an enormous scale of immortal materials, how much manpower and material resources would it require?

Moreover, immortal materials were not grass growing along the sides of a road, the gathering of immortal materials often resulted in bloodshed and was tied together with fighting. If the gatherer’s strength was not up to par, they simply would not be able to get the materials.

There was also the five regions’ regional walls.

The stronger one was, the higher the cultivation of the Gu Immortal, the more difficult it would be for them to pass through a regional wall.

“Could it be...” Fang Yuan’s thoughts churned as he made a guess.

He had thought this was a great expert immortal zombie inheritance, but now it seemed such huge handiwork could not be possibly achieved by one person, it would at least require an organization.

And this organization must be huge.

Because a small sized organization with two or three Gu Immortals simply could not have such large assets and energy to spare!

Looking over it again, there were countless immortal materials everywhere he looked, such a sight caused Fang Yuan’s heart to thump in excitement.

“Such enormous wealth is simply unimaginable! It is enough for me to attempt refining Immortal Gu dozens of times, even hundreds of times! Maybe in my previous life, Northern Plains Zombie Alliance was able to rise up because of these enormous cultivation resources, even suppressing Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance.”

This was almost like a warehouse, with so much immortal materials piled up.

The total value was hard to estimate, Fang Yuan only knew this value was enormous, very enormous.

If he had to accumulate this much with his current two thousand immortal essence stones per month earnings, he might not be able to succeed even in a thousand years.

After all, he also had to calculate cultivation expenditures.

As Gu Immortal’s cultivation became higher, the calamities and tribulations would become more terrifying.

“But compared to these countless immortal materials, this enormous Gu formation has even higher value!” Fang Yuan’s eyes twinkled.

He had a huge ambition and was very experienced, as he came back to awareness, he realized the preciousness of this enormous Gu formation!

In this Gu formation, the countless immortal materials from the five regions were able to exist mutually without interfering with each other.

“Fortunately, I did not rashly take down this Gu formation, otherwise it would be too late for regret. With this Gu formation, I could plant countless types of immortal materials, it is easier to use than an immortal aperture!”

Fang Yuan could not help but praise the great expert immortal zombie that arranged this.

An Immortal zombie’s immortal aperture was already dead, this predecessor was able to arrange such a Gu formation which replaced the use of immortal apertures to a certain extent.

“However, this Gu formation has low defense and also can’t be moved, it is far from being convenient and safe like immortal apertures. Hmm... this purple sand seems to be rather strange.”

Fang Yuan bent down and grabbed a large amount of purple sand.

The sand was extremely fine. Some flowed down the gaps in Fang Yuan’s fingers and sprinkled down like fine grains of crystal. While falling down, they drifted haphazardly while emitting fluorescent light.

“But what I want to find is the method of reviving, where is it?” Fang Yuan threw away the purple sand as he thought of his main objective.

He was not in a hurry to gather the immortal materials, and started to gently fly around, searching the area.

Time gradually passed, the joyous look on Fang Yuan’s face slowly disappeared as his feeling of unease intensified.

“Something is not right!” He suddenly stopped and looked down at the endless immortal materials.

After inspecting once more, he found what was wrong.

“It is too peaceful. There is not a trace of wind or sound, it is more quiet than even my dead aperture.”

“There are also many other areas that feels fishy. Like the immortal beans, they grow in spring water, but are actually growing on the purple sand here. There are also the nutrient peaches, which are usually accompanied by snake-tail monkey groups. Every type of immortal material has a harsh living environment. But here, there are only these immortal material plants, and there is not even an insect.”

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with cold light.

He landed on the ground and tried to pick up a strand of scribe grass.

The next moment, Fang Yuan’s body shook.

When the scribe grass was on the purple sand, it was safe and sound, but the moment Fang Yuan picked it up, it withered and turned into fine purple sand.

And the sand was the same as the purple sand below Fang Yuan’s feet!

“What is going on?” Fang Yuan narrowed his eyes, and tried to pick other immortal materials.

The result was the same, the moment the immortal materials left the sand, they turned into purple sand.

All of these immortal materials had a problem, they were unusable!

“Strange! Strange!! The reason immortal materials are called immortal materials is because they contain plenty of dao marks on them. When these immortal materials wither and turn into purple sand, their dao marks should have been destroyed, but there is not even a slight disturbance from this...”

A chill emerged from the depths of Fang Yuan’s heart.

The immortal materials were in such a state, as for an immortal zombie body which contained dao marks, could it be regarded as a type of immortal material, would it also be absorbed into this enormous field of purple sand?

Looking at this vast amount of immortal materials, flowers and trees, Fang Yuan felt like he was looking at the remains of corpses!

From another perspective, this was a sea of immortal material remains!

The unease inside him kept on intensifying.

Fang Yuan immediately flew to the sky, maintaining some distance with the purple sand.

He gazed at the sky.

“There is definitely something strange about this Gu formation, it is probably not enough to just maintain distance from the purple sand. This change in immortal materials should definitely be related to the whole Gu formation. Before I know of what’s going on, it is better to quickly find the method to revive from the immortal zombie state and leave as soon as possible!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 935: Surprising Gains

Swoosh—!

Fang Yuan was like an arrow as he flew in the air, creating huge air currents.

Below him, there were countless immortal materials, but he did not even look at them. These ‘dead’ immortal materials were worthless.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s gaze focused.

On the flat ground below, he saw a desolate beast.

This desolate beast was large like a small hill, it was sprawled on the ground and did not move, it was a hidden essence turtle.

Fang Yuan was not unfamiliar with this desolate beast, not long ago, he had captured one inside a fragment world of Central Continent’s Starry Sky grotto-heaven.

Lowering his flying speed, Fang Yuan’s body turned as he flew towards the hidden essence turtle.

When he got close, he realized this this was a hidden essence turtle that had died long ago.

It was sprawled on the ground, its head lowered, half of it was buried into the soft purple sand.

The hidden essence turtle’s state was as if the spine below its neck was broken, its four limbs were extremely relaxed and loose.

But before it died, it had a calm expression, or rather, a peaceful expression, Fang Yuan felt some suspicion.

“Among the countless ‘dead’ immortal materials, there is a desolate beast corpse huh...”

Fang Yuan tried to collect the hidden essence turtle’s body.

A moment later, his heart sank, he saw that a fragment of the hard turtle shell had turned into purple sand in his hands, scattering with the wind.

Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered, after a few breaths’ time, he left this place, exploring in the sky again.

Soon, he saw a second desolate beast.

This was an earth chief.

It had a humanoid body and a snake tail, its face resembled a bat, and its nose was pointed up. It had large ears and a black body covered in fleshy armor.

Around its chest were fifty to sixty fleshy whips, each over twenty meters in length. There were suction organs on the surface of the fleshy whips, covering them entirely.

At the front of each fleshy whip was a chrysanthemum-like orifice which could shoot out a white milky fluid at the crucial moment, the fluid had very high corrosiveness and contained extremely large numbers of parasitic worms, which could drill into the pores of victims and wreak havoc from inside the body.

The earth chief corpse was well preserved.

But when Fang Yuan tried to collect the corpse, the same thing happened again.

Fang Yuan no longer felt surprised, he muttered: “Hidden essence turtles are a desolate beast from Central Continent, and earth chiefs mostly appear in Northern Plains...”

Leaving this place, he continued exploring.

Fang Yuan quickly made a new discovery.

“Sandalwood sacred elephants, and three of them!” Fang Yuan gasped.

Sandalwood sacred elephants were much more valuable than hidden essence turtles and desolate beast earth chiefs.

Because it was an ancient desolate beast, a mature sandalwood sacred elephant had rank seven Gu Immortal battle strength.

Long ago, during the auction held by Qin Bai Sheng that involved the whole of Northern Plains, someone bid a sandalwood sacred elephant egg and attracted a huge commotion.

in the current five regions, sandalwood sacred elephants were very rare, they were barely seen.

But now, in front of Fang Yuan, were three sandalwood sacred elephant corpses.

Next, Fang Yuan found even more desolate beast and ancient desolate beast corpses. They were all lying on the ground, surrounded by red, purple, or green plant immortal materials.

Moon howling heavenly wolf, star desolate hound, golden sand dark stallion, ice spike divine ape, white hoof ink horse, nine palace crane, iron crown eagle,

dragonfish, sharp tusk boar... Those that flew, those that ran, those that swam, all of them were present, it was like a creepy display of specimens.

The more he flew towards the center, the more corpses he found, the numbers were stunning!

Northern Plains’ coiling mountain goat king, Southern Border’s phoenix feather lava crocodile, Central Continent’s diamond bear, Eastern Sea’s grand smoke sea turtle, desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts from all five regions were all over the place.

“Eh? This is a ruin bat.” Fang Yuan slowed his speed unknowingly.

This ruin bat was a rare space path desolate beast, it was inferior to the immemorial desolate beast ruin bat that Fang Yuan had seen back in Tai Qiu.

“Half moon qilin!” Fang Yuan’s body froze.

Right now in Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, there was a living half moon qilin, it was raised like a treasure by the entire alliance.

“This ancient desolate beast, it seems to be... remnant heavenly dog?” Fang Yuan checked it over and over and obtained an answer.

He had never seen a remnant heavenly dog personally, he had only read about its descriptions in records. This ancient desolate beast only existed in white heaven.

The more he saw, the more Fang Yuan became desensitized.

His knowledge was very vast, but he did not recognize many of the ancient desolate plants and desolate beasts here.

“The space here is so vast, I’ve already flown for so long, yet even with my speed, I have not seen the edge of the Gu formation.”

This was out of Fang Yuan’s expectations.

He had tried to deduce this huge Gu formation earlier, and realized that it was a giant space path Gu formation.

Fang Yuan had estimated the size of this place, but now it seems, his initial estimation far underestimated the power of the Gu formation.

“It seems that my deductions and estimations did not reach the core of this Gu formation.”

“Who is the person who made this? This is unheard of! So many immortal materials, this is truly an uncountable sum! Is it the work of an Immortal Venerable or Demon Venerable?”

Fang Yuan guessed internally.

Even rank eight Gu Immortals did not have such power to create this singlehandedly.

Because the five regions’ regional walls prevented most rank eight Gu Immortals from traveling to other regions.

This was also why, even with the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects only sent rank six and seven Gu Immortals over.

Of course, once a person is rank nine and invincible in the world, the five region’s regional walls can no longer obstruct them.

“If it is not a rank nine venerable, then this must be the work of a super organization. This organization spans across all five regions, that is the only way they can collect the immortal materials.”

Even though there was treasure yellow heaven and Gu Immortals could use it to trade, at this scale, treasure yellow heaven could not possibly be the site of transaction.

Because such transactions would have unprecedented scale, it would definitely be recorded down in history.

But Fang Yuan knew that there were no such records.

Even though he was deep into the Gu formation and had explored it for a long time, the longer he stayed, the more the mysteriousness around him thickened.

Fang Yuan did not know much about this place.

In his previous life, he had invaded Hu Immortal blessed land, but he did not step into this place.

This was only something he had heard of in his previous life.

Northern Plains Zombie Alliance suddenly became strong, even surpassing the headquarters in Eastern Sea. The explanation that they gave was that there was an inheritance here in Earth Trench.

They said that an immortal zombie great expert had left behind a revival method for immortal zombies. Because of this, many of Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s members turned back into humans, and countless lone cultivator immortal zombies came to join them, allowing Northern Plains Zombie Alliance to develop in size.

But soon after, the good prospects did not last, Northern Plains Zombie Alliance was destroyed by Ma Hong Yun forcefully.

Fang Yuan was unfamiliar with this place, but everything he saw made him extremely curious.

“The direction that I am going should be correct, because the immortal materials that I am seeing are getting rarer. Who is the person who arranged this? It is simply terrifying, perhaps even Heavenly Court would not be able to achieve this?”

Heavenly Court was an organization in Central Continent, it held control over Central Continent and had less power and forces in the other four regions.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, all sorts of monsters showed up, Fang Yuan was aware of this.

Or rather, every super force had its own way to develop. Heavenly Court’s method was to grasp Central Continent and openly be the supreme force.

“If the one who arranged this is an organization, then this organization has to span across all five regions, while being hidden and mysterious. Eh? That place is...”

Fang Yuan saw a shade of purple in front of him.

This was a desolate land.

Soft purple sand was all around him, the sea of immortal materials was nowhere to be seen.

This desolate landscape of sand was a giant circle, it was at least two square kilometers in area!

There was no wind or sound, it was deathly silent.

Fang Yuan was shocked internally: “This is the central part of the Gu formation, it seems that a terrifying explosion had occurred here!”

It was this explosion that created the two square kilometers of desolate land. There should have been a sea of immortal materials here originally, but now there was nothing left.

As he gradually got close to the edge of the desolate land, a bright light in the sand attracted Fang Yuan’s attention.

Fang Yuan landed and saw that there were thin wings piercing into the sand.

These were not the wings of birds, there were no feathers, they were half transparent, they should be the wings of cicadas or dragonflies.

And these cicada-like wings emitted an aura that made Fang Yuan gulp.

An immemorial desolate beast aura!

Even though it was just the remains, it was the real deal, this was shocking!

These cicada wings were extremely tattered, but they shone like a gem under light. From time to time, under sufficient lighting, they gave off a dark golden glow.

“This light is that of dao marks of metal path, these cicada wings should have belonged to something that had a terrifying foundation in dao marks! Only with a dao mark foundation that was at quasi-rank nine would there be visible dao marks that could be seen with the naked eyes. That is the light of dao marks!”

“Wait, maybe this is... the wings of the tiger-striped honey bee!”

Fang Yuan had a flash of inspiration, he made a guess.

This guess made his heart shudder.

Tiger-striped honey bees were a living being recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

Each of these honey bees was the size of a leopard with patterns on their body resembling tiger stripes, golden with black stripes on top. They were extremely powerful, Verdant Great Sun could not even beat one of them. The honey wine that they create is sweet and delectable, it is extremely delicious and among the highest quality in the world.”

“If the bees are at the size of leopards, the wings are at just the right size.” Fang Yuan thought about this and smiled bitterly.

He was uncertain.

His past experiences and knowledge were very shallow when compared to what appeared in this place, he knew little.

He tried to take out these bee wings.

But something shocking happened!

The bee wings left the purple sand and were undamaged, they did not turn into purple sand like the other immortal materials.

At once, Fang Yuan was overjoyed and surprised!

This was from the body of an immemorial desolate beast, a rank eight Gu refinement immortal material!

It could even give out dao mark light.

Thus, more accurately speaking, this was quasi-rank nine immortal material!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 936: Multi-layered Gu Formation

Fang Yuan held in his excitement.

The immortal material in his hands was of very high quality, even in his previous life, he had never owned such a specimen.

Quasi-rank nine immortal material, it had so many dao marks that it shined with bright light, observable with the naked eye.

Fang Yuan was not a grandmaster in refinement path, but he knew something, the reason why immortal materials could be used to refine Immortal Gu was because the immortal materials themselves contain a lot of dao marks.

Man is the spirit of all beings, Gu are the essence of heaven and earth.

Gu worms were the vessels of the Great Dao, why did they contain power? That was because the tiny Gu worm contained dao marks.

Dao marks were the traces of the Great Dao of heaven and earth, precisely because of this, activating Gu worms would result in many magical effects.

The more dao marks in a Gu worm, the higher their rank would be, and the more powerful and profound their abilities would be.

Refining an Immortal Gu was to gather the dao marks in countless mortal Gu and immortal materials, using the ones needed for the refinement.

Now, Fang Yuan’s immortal material had many dao marks, in theory, it could be used to refine a rank eight Immortal Gu!

In fact, he only needed to use a tiny fragment of it to refine a rank six Immortal Gu.

The dao marks in a rank eight Immortal Gu were tens of thousands of times that of a rank six Immortal Gu.

“Of course, this bee wing that resembles a tiger-striped honey bee mainly contains metal path dao marks. If I am trying to refine a metal path Immortal Gu, this would be very useful. Unfortunately, this has no use if I want to refine star thought Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan collected this precious immortal material properly.

He could not use it now, but he might need it in the future.

Even if he did not, this was such a precious immortal material, it would create a huge commotion in treasure yellow heaven, there was no need to worry that it would not be sold.

“I’ve finally had some gains after entering this Gu formation.”

Fang Yuan’s mind started to think deeply.

He was not rushing towards the center, he was starting to explore this desolate land of purple sand.

As expected, a moment later, he had another discovery while flying!

In the purple sand, there was a white veil that resembled a handkerchief that attracted his gaze.

He quickly descended, feeling joy after inspecting it.

The aura could not be fake, this was another rank eight immortal material!

But the quality was slightly lower than the bee wing earlier, there was no light from dao marks.

Fang Yuan held it in his hands, the immortal material did not disintegrate after leaving the purple sand.

“It seems that immortal materials of this level are no longer affected by the power of the purple sand.”

Fang Yuan squeezed it, this immortal material was very soft, it could be molded into different forms.

“So this is not a veil, but a piece of... cloud?”

Fang Yuan observed carefully, feeling surprised.

This was like a fragment of a cloud, but it contained a huge amount of cloud path dao marks.

“Is this...” Fang Yuan’s felt excitement, he activated his Gu worms and spat out a mouthful of water vapor.

When this immortal material was covered in water vapor, it became lighter and floated out of Fang Yuan’s hands, it rose into the sky and turned into a tiny cloud in the form of a phoenix. The phoenix’s wings moved slowly, as the cloud danced in the air.

Fang Yuan’s body shook, he was overjoyed: “As expected! This is a fragment of the immemorial desolate beast cloud phoenix’s body!!”

Fang Yuan’s heart was pounding.

This cloud phoenix was not a lifeform from the five regions, it was a mystical creature that only existed in white heaven of the immemorial nine heavens.

It was not born with a phoenix bloodline, instead it was an ancient cloud that would not face destruction even after ten thousand years in white heaven. After having a phoenix's aura or blood transmitted and spread through it, the cloud would slowly turn into a living being.

Thus, its body was very special, it was neither made of flesh and blood nor clouds.

The cloud phoenix fragment that Fang Yuan obtained was less than a fraction of a fraction of the cloud phoenix's true body, but the cloud path dao marks inside could be used to refine a rank six Immortal Gu at least ten times as the main material!

The discovery of the cloud phoenix affirmed Fang Yuan's earlier guess.

He continued exploring, not long after, he circulated entirely around the purple desert, he had huge gains.

Counting his gains, he had a total of eighteen of such immortal materials, the dao mark varieties covered the majority of Gu paths. Among which, three materials had a lot of star path or wisdom path dao marks, they were very helpful in refining star thought Immortal Gu.

One could say that with these three immortal materials, Fang Yuan could forget about Blazing Heaven Demoness and refine the Gu himself.

Of course, because of the change in immortal materials, the recipe of star thought Immortal Gu would have to change as well. But Fang Yuan was not afraid of this, he could use the light of wisdom to easily do it, he was also a wisdom path grandmaster now, it was not difficult to deduce!

“Even though the immortal materials that I collected are incredibly precious, they are only a small part of the corpses' bodies. The Gu Immortal who created this place, they actually used so many precious immortal materials, are they trying to refine a rank nine Immortal Gu?”

Fang Yuan could not help but guess.

In the process of collecting immortal materials, he started to realize something.

This desolate land of purple sand once had an incredibly profound refinement path Gu formation.

Combined with these fragmented immortal materials, it was likely that the Gu Immortal had a grand ambition, they were trying to refine an immensely powerful Immortal Gu.

But it was a pity, the Gu refinement failed and a huge explosion occurred.

Not only was the refinement path Gu formation destroyed, with only debris left, most of the Gu refinement immortal materials were destroyed, only these fragments remained.

“Regardless of who it is, or what organization it is, they are most likely dead from the explosion. If not for that, this Gu formation would not be left unmaintained for such a long time. The immortal material fragments here would not be scattered everywhere without anyone taking them.”

Even though the immortal materials were just remnants after the explosion, they were very valuable.

With rank eight and quasi-rank nine immortal materials involved, even rank eight Gu Immortals would be moved.

If Old Ancestor Xue Hu knew that Fang Yuan had such a large number of precious immortal materials, he would forget about his face and come to find trouble with Fang Yuan in a hurry.

In order to refine the rank eight fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, Old Ancestor Xue Hu was already going bankrupt trying to find the supplementary immortal materials, even though he had Ma Hong Yun as the main material.

If not for that, he would not thrown away his face as a rank eight great expert and have gone to Zombie Alliance’s graveyard to steal immortal zombie corpses in place of the materials.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan’s worry eased slightly.

Since this mysterious and powerful Gu Immortal, or Gu Immortal organization, was gone, this trip was much less dangerous now.

Fang Yuan looked around, he saw that there was something new in the desolate land of purple sand.

“Sigh... in the endless depths of history, who knows how many truths of the past has been buried, how many incredible people died inconspicuously without anyone knowing.”

The commotion stirred up by them fades eventually, legends disappear.

Getting rid of these thoughts, Fang Yuan came to the center of the desolate land of purple sand.

This was the only area he had not explored yet in this entire desolate land.

Even though he obtained many immortal materials, Fang Yuan was still slightly disappointed — in his previous life, rumors said that there was a way to get rid of his immortal zombie body and revive, but why has he not found it yet?

Fang Yuan’s intuition was: At the central area of this desolate land, it should be the center of the Gu formation as well, if it was not here, then Fang Yuan would never find it elsewhere.

Looking around, at the center of the desolate land, there was only small fragmented purple sand.

This was the center of the explosion, the purple sand was much finer than outside.

There were no immortal materials.

He looked around, there were nothing.

But under Fang Yuan’s investigative methods, he made a discovery of some remnants of the Gu formation deep under the purple sand.

“This is indeed the central control area of the entire place!”

“What an amazing person, this is actually a multi-layered Gu formation, having such an incredible design, this must be the work of a formation path great grandmaster!”

Fang Yuan inspected as he felt shock internally.

It turned out that the entire space was mainly focused on using the refinement path Gu formation, but what originally built this space, including the space path formation, was only a supplementary formation outside the refinement path Gu formation.

Other than the space path Gu formation, Fang Yuan also found many defensive Gu formations, some food path Gu formations, and some phantom path Gu formations.

Food path throughout history had never been widely spread, it was even rarer today.

Fang Yuan did not understand much about it, but he had heard that food path was specialized in feeding Gu worms.

“The food path supplementary Gu formation here should be used to feed these Gu worms. After all, a Gu formation needs countless Gu worms to work together in combination.”

“There are still two or three food path Gu formations in use here. It is hard to imagine that after the great explosion, the Gu formation here is still working.”

“Maybe that is the reason why the outermost space path Gu formation is still functioning.”

This discovered unraveled one mystery for Fang Yuan.

“Eh? This is... a phantom path Gu formation?” As he continued to observe, Fang Yuan made a new discovery.

This phantom path Gu formation was already destroyed, but there were two or three mortal Gu left, buried deep in the purple sand, they are not moving and were barely alive, using the food path Gu formation to maintain their lives.

Fang Yuan had even less knowledge regarding phantom path.

But during the battle of Tai Qiu, Dong Fang Chang Fan had once used a ruin bat corpse to set up a huge phantom formation.

If not for that, Fang Yuan would not have recognized this Gu formation immediately.

“The phantom formation turns the entire Gu formation into a phantom and prevents outside attacks from destroying the Gu formation. Maybe this is the reason why the Gu formation survived the great explosion.”

“Refinement path Gu Immortals with such attainment levels have their own refinement path Gu formations, and also many supplementary Gu formations on top of the refinement path Gu formation. Using these Gu formations, the refinement path Gu worms will be twice as effective for half the effort, they would save a lot of time and energy. For example, Snowy Mountain blessed land has an exquisite refinement path Gu formation, it is known as the best formation for refinement path in Northern Plains’ demonic path. It is said that this Gu formation is also a multi-layered Gu formation, using a total of twelve different Gu formations.” Fang Yuan’s thoughts churned.

He could set up some refinement path Gu formations as well.

But these Gu formations were very superficial, after all, they had to do with his formation path attainment.

Fang Yuan’s formation path attainment level was very low.

A person has limited energy, and even more limited time, Fang Yuan had some accomplishments in certain aspects, he naturally had areas where he was inferior to other people.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 937: Life-and-death Immortal Aperture!

The Gu formation in Snowy Mountain blessed land was not set up by Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

He was a rank eight great expert, but he could not set up such a Gu formation.

To set up this Gu formation, Old Ancestor Xue Hu personally went to ask the number one formation path Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, Sun Ming Lu, for help. Sun Ming Lu was a righteous path Gu Immortal, he had a firm personality and refused to cooperate, Old Ancestor Xue Hu knew that he could not be forceful, he put down his status and asked him for help numerous times.

After seven invitations, in which Old Ancestor Xue Hu talked about Lady Wan Shou at the final time, Sun Ming Lu finally was convinced.

Even though Sun Ming Lu was someone with extremely firm will, he treasured love and loyalty. Old Ancestor Xue Hu was setting up the refinement path Gu formation for his beloved wife, their love touched him, therefore he helped.

This matter caused a huge commotion in the Northern Plains Gu Immortal world back then.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, Sun Ming Lu fought intensely with the Central Continent Gu Immortals, he set up a Gu formation that prevented the Central Continent Gu Immortals from advancing. Eventually, the Gu formation was broken, and Sun Ming Lu died.

After he died, someone made a biography of him. Inside <<Biography of Sun Ming Lu>>, the matter about Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s invitation was recorded clearly.

“According to my deduction using this Gu formation’s remains, it has at least thirty layers! The twelve layered Gu formation that Sun Ming Lu made caused him to become the publicly recognized number one formation path Gu Immortal in Northern Plains. Then the Gu Immortal who made this arrangement here must be a great grandmaster. Or rather, they could even be a supreme grandmaster!”

Supreme grandmaster!

The attainment level above great grandmaster, a transcendent realm.

For example, the three supreme grandmasters in refinement path: Long Hair Ancestor, Old Eccentric Tian Nan, and Old Immortal Kong Jue. All three of them were unprecedented and unique, they had achievements that could not be surpassed.

“Food path Gu formation, phantom path Gu formation, metal path Gu formation, strength path Gu formation...” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly, his gaze pierced past the purple sand and looked into all the traces of the Gu formations.

His heart gradually sank.

He had not forgotten his original goal.

Looking at the situation, there was little hope of obtaining a revival method.

These Gu formations were all near the brink of destruction, mortal Gu inside were barely alive, there were zero Immortal Gu left. Maybe because the strong received the greatest burden, the explosion destroyed all of the Immortal Gu. Or maybe it was because the two or three food path Gu formations could not feed the Immortal Gu, and as time passed, they all starved to death.

Eventually, Fang Yuan found a wisdom path Gu formation that was extremely tattered at the deepest level.

This was the seventh wisdom path Gu formation that he had discovered.

The Gu formation was so fragmented that Fang Yuan bore no hope.

But he took a glance and realized that there was an unexpected gain in this Gu formation!

There were some thoughts left behind in this tattered Gu formation.

These thoughts were in a state of complete rest, it was probably the effect of this wisdom path Gu formation.

Since there were thoughts, they could interact.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, he mustered his strength and started to deduce this wisdom path Gu formation.

He was very careful, this wisdom path Gu formation was like a building that was going to collapse, Fang Yuan needed to act very meticulously.

Thankfully, he was a wisdom path grandmaster already, he had a high attainment level.

A moment later, he deciphered this relatively simple wisdom path Gu formation, and successfully invaded it, controlling this delicate Gu formation.

Next, he sent out thoughts into the Gu formation and started to interact with the thoughts that were at rest.

...

“After using up more than eighty years, this Gu formation is finally complete! In the next few hundred years, or even thousands of years, I will be refining Gu here. Heh, I became an immortal zombie, even though I am not restricted by lifespan, my mind is no longer as agile. Thus, I asked ‘Yellow’ to add in this small Gu formation and store my thoughts so that they can help me think.”

...

“This Gu formation is too useful, not only can it help me refine Gu, it can also conceal us from the perception of heaven’s will. Using only two hundred years, I successfully refined eight soul path Immortal Gu, among which six are rank seven, and two are rank eight.”

...

“Every year, they send me lots of immortal materials. I would never have imagined this day where I would not be able to use up my immortal materials! I have countless immortal materials, this is so blissful. I should start to attempt those incomplete Immortal Gu recipes.”

...

“An unexpected surprise occurred today when refining Gu! I tried to complete the Immortal Gu recipe of devour soul Immortal Gu, but in the end I refined an Immortal Gu with an unknown effect. Even though it is also a soul path Immortal Gu, I will let the others do the work of testing its effect.”

...

“My Gu refinement failed! Three of my defensive Gu formations were destroyed, even my main refinement path Gu formation was damaged. That liar in treasure yellow heaven, that unscrupulous merchant! He dared to use a tampered immortal material to deceive me!! I will tear out his tendons and pull out his skin to vent my hatred!”

...

“That unscrupulous merchant was already punished, ‘Azure’ is really amazing. These days, ‘Yellow’ arrived and repaired all of the Gu formations. I can refine Gu again.”

...

“‘Purple’ came to inform me to be careful. ‘Azure’ has met with trouble. It turns out that the unscrupulous merchant Gu Immortal who deceived me was a pawn of Heavenly Court. Fate! It still exists, Red Lotus Demon Venerable did not manage to destroy it thoroughly. It is the assistant of accursed heaven! It will be destroyed one day!”

...

“‘Azure’s’ problem is getting more and more serious. Sacrificing any one of us seven is a huge loss to all of us. Sigh, I harmed him, but he has already made up his mind. Maybe I can try that now... before leaving, he took that soul path Immortal Gu, so that Immortal Gu’s effect is like this... I hope it can help him out.”

...

“‘Azure’ failed, his state is so pitiful, he is only one step from complete annihilation. ‘Yellow’ barely managed to preserve his life, but his injuries cannot be healed, it can only be fixed through time. This would take at least hundreds or thousands of years. Our greatest battle strength has been lost!”

...

“‘Azure’s’ failure made me realize something fully, our previous methods will not work. We are all born with flaws, heaven and earth will not tolerate our existence. As ‘Green’, I must comprehend the profound meaning of life and death, nobody is more suited for this mission than me. We can only restart if I can find a way to truly revive and obtain an immortal aperture that is full of vitality.”

...

At this point, Fang Yuan’s heart shook, he showed some excitement on his face.

“Currently, it seems that this is a strong and mysterious organization. The members refer to each other with codenames, among which are Yellow, Green, Purple, Azure... if they have a total of seven members, they probably use the colors of the rainbow – red, orange, yellow, green, azure, blue, purple? Hmm... I will call this organization ‘Seven Rainbows’ for now.”

Fang Yuan paused in his speculations, he continued to send his thoughts into the Gu formation, interacting with the motionless thoughts inside the Gu formation.

The following thoughts were missing a huge chunk, they were no longer as closely connected as the previous ones, it seems that each thought was made after a long period of time.

...

“My attempt succeeded, today, I found another revival method, but to me, what significance does such an ordinary revival method have? I do not need it.”

...

“‘Blue’ obtained a Gu Immortal inheritance, it was left behind by Old Immortal Kong Jue in Central Continent. He had researched deeply into the ten extreme physiques, I have great gains from this, no, I have immense gains!”

...

“‘Yellow’ and ‘Purple’ worked together and obtained an inheritance of Limitless Demon Venerable. Hahaha, truly worthy of Limitless Demon Venerable, his achievements in rule path are unprecedented and might never be surpassed, even I am vastly inferior!”

...

“Limitless Demon Venerable is correct, there is life in death, and death in life, life and death can be interchanged! Except that under normal circumstances, turning from life to death is a natural process, it flows smoothly. But to turn from death to life, it would be extremely difficult, like traveling upstream. Meanwhile, immortal zombies are stuck between life and death, they are the manifestation of the profound mysteries of life and death.”

“Life has its advantages, death has its uses. An immortal zombie’s immortal aperture might be a dead aperture, but it is safe from calamities and tribulations. This is a huge advantage of death!”

“Limitless Demon Venerable’s direction is correct, I should move forward in this aspect. I am sure to make shocking achievements!”

...

“I succeeded! This is an unimaginable result!!”

“Limitless Demon Venerable was incredibly talented, actually, he was only some steps away from success. An immortal zombie’s dead aperture is extremely precious, it has many uses. Hehehe, if this result is exposed, the entire Gu Immortal world would be shaken! Even I myself was shocked immensely...”

Next, Fang Yuan got more and more stunned as his eyes burst with shining light, his expression visibly changed.

According to these thoughts, when a Gu Immortal cultivates, they should first turn into an immortal zombie and obtain a dead immortal aperture! Next, they would revive, obtaining a life-and-death immortal aperture.

This immortal aperture has two layers, one layer is of life, and the other layer is of death, life and death are able to coexist with each other and are interchangeable. It would be an immense help to the Gu Immortal in terms of cultivating or undergoing tribulations!

Ordinary Gu Immortal who are alive were filled with vitality and cannot control death.

Ordinary immortal zombies have death energy emanating in their dead apertures, they have death without life, they could only contain the mysteries of death.

The former had too much vitality, with such immense fortune, heaven would seek balance. Thus, every once in a while, there would be heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities, to create losses to the Gu Immortal.

The latter was full of death energy and had no calamities or tribulations, but would slowly disintegrate and could not contain cultivation resources.

The immortal aperture that Fang Yuan obtained when ascending had already disintegrated by more than half.

In time, it would completely disappear, the entire immortal aperture would vanish. By then, Fang Yuan would only have his mortal dead aperture left.

“But according to this cultivation method contained in the thoughts, I can use the dead aperture as the core and fuse life and death during the process of revival, condensing them into one aperture, and form the life-and-death immortal aperture, to control life and death to a certain degree!”

“With this life-and-death immortal aperture, the power of the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities I face from now on would be halved! Most importantly, the dao marks I obtain would not be reduced at all.”

Fang Yuan was greatly moved.

Any Gu Immortal would be moved.

“If this method really works, then it would truly shock the entire Gu Immortal world, it would not be an exaggeration to say that the entire world would go into chaos!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 938: Successfully Returning to the City

With a whooshing sound.

At a nook of the yaksha octopuses’ cave, a green light shined brightly as the surrounding darkness was repelled.

As the jade green light faded, a figure appeared at the place which was previously empty.

It was Fang Yuan, having just come out of the space created by the Gu formation.

He had used fixed immortal travel Immortal Gu.

And this place had been specially arranged earlier, when he explored the yaksha octopuses' underground cave.

He had set up many mortal Gu here, forming a simple and crude Gu formation.

There was nothing that could be done about it, Fang Yuan's formation path attainment was very low, he could only use Gu formations of this level.

The Gu formation could only conceal most of the disturbance, but Fixed Immortal Travel was, after all, an Immortal Gu, when Fang Yuan appeared, this mortal Gu formation immediately broke apart, some aura leaked out.

Fang Yuan quickly used his methods to get rid of these traces.

But soon, he heard the growling of desolate beasts as well as the movement of the yaksha octopuses in the cave.

"The surrounding yaksha octopuses are back already?"

Fang Yuan's eyes shined with bright light.

He took action rapidly, eliminating the Immortal Gu aura before the yaksha octopuses returned, and quickly left.

The yaksha octopuses felt the aura of the Immortal Gu and were stirred up, but when they arrived, there were no traces remaining. The octopuses searched around and saw nothing, their uncertainty gradually vanished, they turned around and left.

If they were Gu Immortals, they would not be so easy to fool.

Desolate beasts lacked intelligence, thus Fang Yuan could easily deal with them.

Before long, he returned to the battlefield with the mouth earthworm, it was a messy scene.

Most of the yaksha octopuses had retreated, while the Northern Plains immortal zombies were nowhere to be found.

A huge gorge, like a long scar along the Earth Trench, was displayed in front of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan's lips curled up, he smiled silently.

He knew that this gorge was dug by the mouth earthworm.

Mouth earthworms were creatures that primarily lived under the surface.

They stayed there most of the time, only coming to the surface when hunting for food. After devouring the prey rapidly, they would dig back under the soil and stop moving.

At the same time, their bodies would shrink at a shocking rate, turning from gigantic fat masses to being like bamboo poles.

At this time, the thick meat in their bodies would squeeze together tightly. The unique apparatus in their flesh — countless sharp bony teeth, would rotate and grind the prey into flesh and blood.

"This mouth earthworm swallowed me, but I used Fixed Immortal Travel inside its body to escape. It failed to hunt its prey, it would definitely rage and fight with the Northern Plains immortal zombies. The mouth earthworm is not their match, it does not have wisdom, it is bound to lose. But this wild beast has the instincts to escape, and it is very good at it. Once it is injured to an extent, it would dig into the soil and escape from the battle."

Fang Yuan's eyes shined with eerie light.

If not for this, he would not have chosen to use the mouth earthworm to escape from the immortal zombies' sights.

Previously in Dark Flow Giant City, he had obtained information about Dragon Commander Ye Cha and the others, he knew that they did not have an effective way to deal with the underground mouth earthworm.

Their investigative methods could not bypass the abundant earth path dao marks on the mouth earthworm, thus Fang Yuan dared to use fixed immortal travel Immortal Gu inside its body.

Thus, even though there were many individuals among the Northern Plains immortal zombies, and they had great battle strength, they could not do anything to this mouth earthworm for a period of time.

Especially when the mouth earthworm did not want to fight, and was using all its efforts to escape.

Battle strength did not mean everything.

For example, Old Ancestor Xue Hu with rank eight cultivation level could fight against both Yao Huang and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and force them to retreat, he had incredible battle strength. But to create the Gu formation, he still needed to ask Sun Ming Lu seven times.

Even rank nine venerables were like this.

In the history of Gu Immortals, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had asked Long Hair Ancestor to refine Gu for them.

There were all sorts of paths in Gu cultivation, that meant that specialists tackled their own fields, even if a person cultivates a path to rank nine, they would still be lacking proficiency in other areas.

After all, there was a limit to their energy.

Unless they had a lot of time, or a certain degree of fortuitous encounters.

The mouth earthworm escaped, while the Northern Plains immortal zombies chased, the traces of battle extended along the way.

During this journey, many things could be seen: pits created from explosions, blood inside the gorges, most likely the mouth earthworm's blood. Other than that, there were also many pieces of the corpses of Earth Trench's creatures that were drawn into the chaos.

In order to live, the mouth earthworm was going all out, this helped Fang Yuan conceal his traces to a large extent.

One side chased, while the other escaped, this extended battlefield had been formed.

Seeing the intense fighting along the way, Fang Yuan smiled lightly.

“In order to escape, the mouth earthworm must have panicked and led the Northern Plains immortal zombies to the territories of other fierce beasts. Good, the more chaotic this scene is, the more advantageous for me. This is just like what I had calculated earlier.”

Next, Fang Yuan followed along the traces of battle and flew rapidly, his body submerging into the darkness.

The Northern Plains immortal zombies were flying dejectedly.

Their injuries were not light, they were in pathetic states, with ashen expressions.

“What can we do? Xing Xiang Zi died, how can we explain this to Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness?”

“Sigh, we did our best. Assaulting the mouth earthworm along the way, we went through the territories of five fierce beasts, among which three are ancient desolate beasts! Keep in mind, this is the Earth Trench! I have never acted so crazy before.”

“Unfortunately, our efforts were in vain, this mouth earthworm fell into the acid bog, it had completely dissolved. Xing Xiang Zi was not spared, there’s no way we can sacrifice our lives for him, right.”

“In my opinion, Xing Xiang Zi was too careless. Acting so careless in Earth Trench, he was simply courting death!”

The immortal zombies spoke quietly, only the leader, Dragon Commander Ye Cha, was silent.

He had the highest status among these people, he was the leader, he held the biggest responsibility towards Xing Xiang Zi’s demise.

Thinking about Blazing Heaven Demoness, Dragon Commander Ye Cha’s heart felt extremely heavy.

“Everyone, we finally meet again.” Fang Yuan turned into Xing Xiang Zi, appearing in front of the immortal zombies.

“Eh?” At once, the Northern Plains immortal zombies were stunned.

“Xing Xiang Zi?!” Doctor Yin Xuan called out, his gaze was full of joy.

The other immortal zombies were the same, even Landlord Lei Yu looked at Fang Yuan feeling that it was very pleasing to see this old man!

“How did you escape?” An immortal zombie asked.

This question was in everyone’s minds.

Several gazes were all focused on Fang Yuan’s face.

Fang Yuan was prepared for this, he gave his explanation: “Alas! When I was trapped inside the mouth earthworm’s stomach, the surrounding flesh squeezed me, and numerous teeth started rotating. In that dangerous state, I used my Immortal Gu for an immortal killer move, sealing myself into star ice. This is my strongest defensive move, it was able to block the teeth. But there was a drawback, I could not move at all, not just my body, but my thoughts as well, therefore I could not think. The star ice would only exist for a short period of time, but I believed that everyone would save me. All I had to do was to wait until the star ice melted, and when I regained my freedom, I found that I was buried under some rubble!”

“So that’s it!” Doctor Yin Xuan realized.

“Xing Xiang Zi must have fell out when we were chasing the mouth earthworm and fighting in the chaotic battle, creating wounds that tore its flesh open.”

“So close, so close!”

“Xing Xiang Zi, you were really lucky.”

The immortal zombies did not have any suspicions.

Dragon Commander Ye Cha heaved a sigh of relief: “That is good, do you still need to collect star night mucus?”

Fang Yuan’s face changed, he showed a hesitant expression, saying: “Forget it! I was unlucky now, let’s go back and rest first, we will talk about it later.”

The immortal zombies glanced at each other, secretly laughing inside about Xing Xiang Zi’s timidness.

But after such an intense battle, their bodies were in bad shape as well, thus everyone agreed to return to Dark Flow Giant City and rest.

As for the remaining star night mucus, that was a problem for later.

A few days later.

Dark Flow Giant City.

In the secret room, the refinement path Gu formation was shining with a dazzling light.

The light shined on Fang Yuan’s face, but now, his mind was elsewhere.

“Possible, this is totally possible!” Fang Yuan said internally.

He was using the Gu formation to process the Gu refinement materials on the surface, but he was actually inside his dead aperture, controlling Gu worms to do an experiment.

He was very vigilant, even though he obtained a revival method in Earth Trench, it had a dubious origin, Fang Yuan had to experiment on it and test if it was usable.

The results all proved that this revival method was usable!

Fang Yuan was excited and deeply moved.

Looking back over the past, Fang Yuan had been collecting revival methods ever since Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed, facing many difficulties.

The first revival method he collected, of time path — that was to use man as before Immortal Gu with time anchor Immortal Gu to revive himself.

But though this method might have great potential, it was only a conjecture, to complete it, he needed to cooperate with Shark Demon and invest an immense amount of time and resources into it.

Next, Fang Yuan found the possession method from Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul, using this, he could achieve the target of getting rid of his immortal zombie state.

But if he used this method, not only would there be questions on whether the body would suit his soul, and the aptitude of the body, but the second aperture that Fang Yuan had put in so much effort to obtain would be gone for good.

Following that, Fang Yuan obtained a method of using a ten extreme physique immortal ascension to get rid of the immortal zombie state from Feng Jin Huang at the Refinement Path Convention.

This method was even less plausible, it was suited for mortal Gu Masters. Fang Yuan was already an immortal zombie, he would need to use his first mortal aperture to undergo immortal ascension, he did not have one of the ten extreme physiques either, he had insufficient aptitude. Even though he had blood skull Gu, he already had dao marks in his body, he could not use mortal Gu to raise his aptitude.

Finally, in the Starry Sky grotto-heaven fragment world, Feng Jin Huang told Fang Yuan another revival method.

Using theory involving transformation path, in combination with everlasting Gu, he could achieve a permanent transformation, that was the same as revival.

But what was the way to refine everlasting Gu? Fang Yuan did not know.

If someone else had everlasting Immortal Gu, the situation would be even worse.

Fang Yuan did not excel greatly in transformation path either.

These methods, even though they could succeed, they all had drawbacks and could not be achieved easily.

But as the saying goes, one determined to work hard would not be disappointed, after so much turmoil and difficulties, Fang Yuan finally found the best and most suitable method for himself inside Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s Earth Trench!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 939: Dual Ten Extreme Physique Rank Nine Demon Venerable?

Since the creator had yet to name the method, Fang Yuan gave it a tentative name: life-and-death immortal aperture revival method.

The true value of this method was absolutely priceless!

If it were to be leaked out to the public, the whole cultivation world would be shaken and the current situation of the world would change. Countless Gu Immortals, even the secluded rank eights, would start researching it immediately with their full efforts and attempt to use the method.

Once a large portion of Gu Immortals obtain this method, from then on, the number of Gu Immortals in all the five regions would start to increase explosively and in unprecedented fashion.

Because the life-and-death immortal aperture contained the mysteries of both life and death, it could reduce the might of heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities. And the extent of that reduction was as high as an entire fifty percent!

What did that imply?

The cultivation journeys of Gu Immortals had two difficulties that they had to pass.

One was that of limited lifespan and the other was the presence of calamities and tribulations.

Increasing cultivation level could not increase lifespan, thus Gu Immortals could only seek out other methods to prolong their lifespans by all means possible.

Ignoring that for the time being.

Right now, calamities and tribulations were to be emphasised.

Gu Immortal would face calamities and tribulations once in a while. Heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities were like blades of an executioner hanging over the heads of Gu Immortals.

During times of peace, most Gu Immortals would die as a result of calamities and tribulations. Countless records within history and practical examples and experiences in real life served to remind Gu Immortals time and time again about how terrifying and fatal these threats were!

Calamities and tribulations were unpredictable and their power was not equal, instead the difficulty increased gradually.

Gu Immortals needed to work hard in their cultivation and raise their strength continuously to have a chance of passing the tribulations.

And cultivation was not simply a theoretical matter, resources for cultivation were required, like immortal materials, Immortal Gu, immortal killer moves, Immortal Gu Houses and so on.

An immortal aperture was the best place to cultivate and harvest immortal materials.

Because the environment of the immortal aperture was special, it had many dao marks and could grow relevant immortal materials that were suitable for the Gu Immortal, in accordance with their situation. Moreover, time flowed much faster in the immortal aperture when compared to the five regions, thus the immortal materials could be harvested more frequently and provide higher gains overall.

There was another reason as well, nurturing cultivation resources in the immortal aperture could be done much more safely and they could be carried around with the person conveniently.

It was quite dangerous to place immortal materials outside.

Not only could they be easily seized by others, there could also be overbearing experts like Blazing Heaven Demoness who would even attempt to destroy them if they were unable to obtain them.

However, the problem was that every heavenly tribulation and earthly calamity would result in heavy negative repercussions on the immortal aperture.

It was already not a simple matter for Gu Immortals to pass calamities and tribulations. To prevent damage to the entirety of their immortal aperture was nearly impossible.

The cultivation resources that were stored in the immortal aperture would often be destroyed to a large extent.

Gu Immortals would have to once again accumulate the cultivation resources to continue their cultivation, there were even some who might have to start all over from scratch.

If that happened, a vicious cycle would be formed.

Accumulating cultivation resources, cultivating, increasing in strength, passing tribulations... re-accumulating resources, cultivating, increasing in strength slowly, passing even tougher tribulations...

The calamities and tribulations would become stronger and stronger, while their resources would need to be accumulated all over again each time, greatly delaying the growth of the strength of the Gu Immortal. The strength of many Gu Immortals might be insufficient for keeping up with the required speed, their growth might even sometimes be stagnant, so how could they cope with the even more terrifying calamities and tribulations?

Thus, since ancient times, countless Gu Immortals had lost everything to heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities and perished.

Hu Immortal was a typical example.

She had passed four earthly calamities, but at the fifth calamity, she encountered a blue charm lightning shadow and died due to it. Her obsession turned into the land spirit of Hu Immortal blessed land, which was finally obtained by Fang Yuan.

Of course, there was a method to reduce the threat, that was to move out the cultivation resources in advance.

Previously, Fang Yuan had done this.

But in fact, very few Gu Immortals would do such a thing.

They were obviously not foolish, so what was the reason?

The reason was because of the targeting natures of heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities. For instance, a wood path Gu Immortal who moved out all their wood path resources before facing a calamity or tribulation may instead end up attracting a fire path calamity or tribulation.

After passing the tribulation, the immortal aperture would be greatly affected, gaining many fire path dao marks, which would cause changes in the environment and temperature.

When the wood path Gu Immortal brings back all the previously moved out cultivation resources, many of those resources would not be suitable to be cultivated in this completely new environment.

On the contrary, if the wood path resources were kept in the blessed land and attracted a wood path tribulation, the immortal aperture’s wood path dao marks would increase, although there would be losses, the environment of the immortal aperture would become even more ideal.

Countless examples of success and failure, countless summaries of the experiences of predecessors proved one thing clearly — keeping the resources when facing a tribulation was wiser than moving them away, and was even more beneficial for the Gu Immortal’s cultivation journey.

Fang Yuan had previously moved out his resources, which led to a blood path calamity that was essentially unsuitable for the growth of the previous resources.

However, Hu Immortal blessed land was not compatible with his path, so this was not a big problem.

Later on, when Tai Bai Yun Sheng faced the calamity in his immortal aperture, he chose to keep his resources even when aware of how severe the loss could be. It was because the immortal aperture that was undergoing an earthly calamity was his most essential foundation.

Only after understanding this kind of information could one truly realize the terrifying value of the life-and-death immortal aperture method!

Although Gu Immortals were high and mighty above the masses, calamities and tribulations hung above their head, they had to cultivate endlessly, and make huge progress at every phase of their cultivation, and had to keep on making more progress, only then could they continue to survive.

But if they had a life-and-death immortal aperture, everything would be different.

It directly reduced the power of calamities and tribulations by fifty percent!

With the sharp decrease in the power of calamities and tribulations, the loss of their cultivation resources would be less, while there would be no drop in the number of dao marks gained, this was enough to benefit the cycle for the Gu Immortal’s cultivation.

Accumulating cultivation resources, cultivating, increasing in strength, passing tribulations... on top the original foundation, one can continue to accumulate resources, cultivating even quicker, experiencing a greater increase in strength, and passing a slightly stronger tribulation...

With just a living immortal aperture, the calamities and tribulations would keep on growing stronger; Gu Immortals could barely endure them as it was, and as their cultivation increased, it would be even more difficult for them to advance.

And if they only had a dead immortal aperture, the immortal aperture would continue to crumble, resources could not be accumulated quickly and there was no hope of progress, it was simply a doomed ending.

However, a life-and-death immortal aperture created a cycle that allowed the Gu Immortal’s strength to snowball and accumulate, and have increasingly greater assurance in passing future tribulations!

Undoubtedly, this was an accomplishment that surpassed the current era!

It could change the whole Gu Immortal world, the entire world would be revolutionized, the history of Gu Masters would be changed henceforth.

It might seem to be simply a revival method, but it contained such monstrous power!

More accurately speaking, it was no longer just a simple revival method, it was a method of cultivation.

This technique that had improved upon the foundation of Limitless Demon

Venerable’s concept was, without doubt, much more superior than the methods of cultivation that had been passed down for countless years!

Such a grand feat, in the context of Earth’s history, was like the invention of steam engine, electricity and calculator, they had incredibly significant importance!

The traditional Gu Master cultivation methods were passed down from Ren Zu’s era, and there were almost no changes done to it since.

If the life-and-death immortal aperture method was publicized, it would be akin to the theory of general relativity of Einstein which ‘overthrew’ Newton’s first law!

If it were other Gu Immortals, they might find it hard to accept this for a period of time, even thinking that this was an unrealistic fantasy, it might even be considered sacrilegious!

After all, immortal zombies had low status, while this method placed much importance on their dead immortal apertures and instead held them in high regard.

But Fang Yuan’s own soul was from Earth, he had an open mind, the authority of the traditional way of Gu cultivation had not been deeply ingrained into his mind.

At this moment, his mind was filled with exclamations of praise!

“The methods of humans continue to progress over time, history continues to be written. Gu cultivation can fully be regarded as another form of science, it continues to advance and develop with time.”

“In the past, in ancient times, there were indeed countless wise and capable geniuses who had glorious and brilliant accomplishments. But those of future generations stand on these shoulders of their predecessors, using their foundations, they are able to have even more brilliant and splendid accomplishments.”

Like this mysterious great expert immortal zombie who invented the life-and-death immortal aperture revival method, they had stood on Old Immortal Kong Jue’s shoulders, they used Limitless Demon Venerable’s accomplishments in rule path and combined them with their own talents before they were finally able to create this improved cultivation method.

Fang Yuan continued to ponder.

The more he thought about it, the more he realized the profundity and brilliance of this revival method.

During this short period of time, Fang Yuan could only scratch the surface of this brilliant technique, but he could not comprehend the essence and origin of this brilliance.

He knew that following this method was the right course and the result would also be ideal for him.

But he did not know what principles were involved in this method.

The explanation for the life-and-death immortal aperture could be said to be simple, but the principles involved in it were something Fang Yuan could still not understand.

The contents of the life-and-death immortal aperture revival method were not simple, they were very complex.

Because it subdivided every Gu cultivation path into different revival methods, different Gu worms needed to be refined accordingly.

For instance, Fang Yuan cultivated strength path, he needed a large amount of exert strength Gu, countless disappointment Gu, and many other types of supplementary Gu worms to finally create a multi-layered Gu formation.

Fang Yuan carefully thought over these ideas, feeling that they were rather interesting.

When mortals started cultivating, hope Gu was needed to awaken their aperture. This method, however, required disappointment Gu and exert strength Gu.

Without hope, how could there be disappointment?

Without disappointment, where would hope come from?

Disappointment and hope, these two concepts stood as opposites to each other but they coexisted together.

It was just like the concept of life and death. If one was gone, the other also lacked the significance for a concept of it to be formed.

Fang Yuan planned inwardly: “Disappointment Gu and exert strength Gu are merely mortal Gu, so they are not difficult to gather. There are also corresponding Gu recipes here, I can order the hairy men to refine them day in and day out. Even if the amount required is large, I can complete it within three months. Once completed, I can immediately start my revival and obtain a life-and-death immortal aperture! Except that...”

Except that the life-and-death immortal aperture that would be obtained in this way was somewhat unsatisfactory.

Because Fang Yuan’s strength path immortal aperture was already mostly disintegrated. Using just the remaining dead immortal aperture as the base, the newly formed life-and-death immortal aperture would naturally be inferior. Be it the size, the environment or its foundation, they would all be lacking.

When Fang Yuan had been forced to ascend in Northern Plains, the foundation for his immortal aperture was not high in the first place, its size was three and a half thousand square kilometers and the rate of time was sixteen times that of the outside world.

A low grade blessed land has a size of two thousand square kilometers at the maximum, it can draw in a small tributary of the river of time and create over ten beads of immortal essence, while being a land of few resources.

A medium grade blessed land can have a size of two thousand and seven hundred square kilometers to four thousand square kilometers, draw in a slightly bigger tributary of the river of time, create over twenty beads of immortal essence and have plentiful resources.

Fang Yuan’s previous strength path immortal aperture was only a medium grade blessed land. Now, if he used his currently shrunken blessed land to revive, it will definitely be a low grade blessed land, and it was very likely for it to be low grade even among low grades.

Without doubt, this would be unfavorable to Fang Yuan’s future cultivation.

However, there was a segment of content about the life-and-death immortal aperture revival method which excited Fang Yuan greatly.

During the refinement process, he could use other strength path immortal zombies’ corpses as immortal materials and refine them in a Gu formation. This would increase the grade of the life-and-death immortal aperture created, his low grade blessed land could return to medium grade, and as long as there were sufficient strength path immortal zombies, he might even be able to raise his blessed land to high grade!

When immortal zombies die, their aperture would completely dissipate and the dao marks in the aperture would stay in the immortal zombie body. Thus, immortal zombie bodies were rich with dao marks and were special kinds of immortal materials. If not for this, Old Ancestor Xue Hu would not have shamelessly sneaked into the immortal zombie graveyard to steal the corpses.

At the final part of this segment, it was clearly recorded —

If one could obtain a Great Strength True Martial Physique immortal zombie body and used it during the revival process, the life-and-death immortal aperture created would surpass that of a high grade blessed land and become a super grade blessed land!

And after the immortal zombie revives, they would possess the Great Strength True Martial Physique!!

Because Hei Lou Lan had advanced into an immortal with the Great Strength True Martial Physique and possessed a super grade blessed land, Fang Yuan understood many things regarding it.

“A super grade blessed lands has a vast space of over six thousand seven hundred square kilometers. Every year, the amount of immortal essence it produces would surpass fifty beads! The rate of time is even faster, thus precious resources can be obtained in extremely short intervals! Furthermore, the Great Strength True Martial Physique can increase my battle strength by several times!” Fang Yuan’s heart thumped with excitement.

From this point, one could also discern that the life-and-death immortal aperture method was an excellent method to raise a Gu Immortal’s aptitude!

The ten extreme physiques...

They had extremely great power, but their flaws were even bigger!

Because time flowed faster, calamities and tribulations came quicker and more frequently, their might becoming increasingly terrifying! For the cultivation of Gu Immortals, this was a big taboo!

One could find out from history that none of the ten supreme venerables had one of the ten extreme physiques. Even among rank eight Gu Immortals, it was extremely rare for someone to possess one of the ten extreme physiques.

In short, a person with one of the ten extreme physiques could be unrivaled among those of the same rank and could even fight against those that exceeded their rank, but they did not have the potential to grow and simply could not live for long under the barrage of calamities and tribulations.

However, this huge flaw did not exist to Fang Yuan!

There was only one reason for that — he possessed the life-and-death immortal aperture revival method.

And a life-and-death immortal aperture reduced the might of calamities and tribulations by half!

This lowered the danger to a completely acceptable level and formed a much more beneficial cycle.

“I can at most obtain a high grade blessed land by gathering ordinary strength path immortal zombie bodies. But if I can gather the body of an immortal zombie of one of the ten extreme physiques, I can possess the Great Strength True Martial Physique and own a super grade blessed land, moreover the calamities and tribulations would have their might reduced by half. As long as I have enough time to cultivate, my strength will continue to grow, and I would have a chance at vying for that supreme throne of rank nine!”

Fang Yuan’s eyes burned with the flames of passion.

Rank nine venerables were invincible in the world, this was a publicly recognized fact. If since ancient times, there has been not been a ten extreme physique venerable, did that imply that they would be the strongest even among the rank nine venerables?

In this world, the greatest in strength in all of history?

“I also have my first mortal aperture. If my revival goes smoothly, I can use this method again to cultivate time path and change my first mortal aperture to a super grade blessed land. At that time, not only will I have the Great Strength True Martial Physique, I will also have the Desolate Ancient Moon Physique!”

Dual Ten Extreme Physique!

And with time, a dual ten extreme physique venerable?

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan almost shed tears.

In the five hundred years of his previous life and in this life, he had wandered from place to place, enduring many hardships and taking risks amidst life and death. Finally, now, at this moment, he found a hopeful path that could lead him to the grand ambition of immortality!

Eternal life seemed to be an illusory goal, but if one did not have sufficient strength, then it was a target that was impossible to pursue to begin with.

“Strength path immortal zombies are already few in numbers, since I have joined Zombie Alliance, I am unable to target the alliance members. Great Strength True Martial Physique immortal zombie, where can I find one? Hmph. Right now, there is only one optimal target — Hei Lou Lan!!”

At that instant, Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with a ferocious light.

“Although I cooperated with you to escape from Imperial Court blessed land and have obtained many benefits later on, having a rather pleasant experience, for the ambition that I seek, you have to be sacrificed.”

A faint smile appeared on Fang Yuan’s face.

Ruthless.

Callous!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 940: Fang Yuan’s Plans

Since he obtained the life-and-death immortal aperture revival method, Fang Yuan naturally wanted to make as much use of it as he could.

Regardless of whether it was in his previous life or now, cultivation aptitude was always a big regret for Fang Yuan. Now that he could fix this, Fang Yuan was extremely happy to do so.

Most importantly, the life-and-death immortal aperture revival method for the ten extreme physiques was too enticing, the advantage it gave towards cultivating was too great.

However, it was extremely difficult to obtain a Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie.

Firstly, the ten extreme physiques were very rarely seen. Even if they appeared, they could not cultivate easily.

There were even fewer of those with the Great Strength True Martial physique that cultivated to Gu Immortal level.

And on this basis, those who turned into immortal zombies and still had their bodies intact might simply be nonexistent!

Fang Yuan checked historical records and his memories, but there were no clues.

Thus, Hei Lou Lan was his easiest target, and also the most appropriate and realistic one.

Or rather, she was his only target.

But the problems in front of Fang Yuan were not few.

Firstly, Hei Lou Lan herself was a formidable person, she had both brains and brawn, in his previous life, she left her own mark in history. Such a person was not easy to deal with, she could risk her fight and battle all out while also scheming deeply, she could not be messed with casually.

Secondly, Hei Lou Lan was not alone, she had the rank seven Fairy Li Shan supporting her. They had a close relationship, they would not turn on each other. To deal with Hei Lou Lan, Fang Yuan would also have to deal with Fairy Li Shan.

Thirdly, Fairy Li Shan, Hei Lou Lan, and Fang Yuan had an alliance agreement.

Finally, and what was also Fang Yuan’s biggest problem, Hei Lou Lan knew the truth of Imperial Court blessed land. If he did not handle it appropriately, she would tell this truth to the world. By then, Fang Yuan would be hunted down by all the Gu Immortals in the world. The allure of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s inheritance would be so great that countless greedy Gu Immortals would charge at him like a tsunami, completely drowning him.

All in all, Hei Lou Lan was like a porcupine, if he was rash in dealing with her, not only might she be left unharmed, but he would also end up suffering major backlash.

“Hei Lou Lan, oh Hei Lou Lan, if not for the fact that you have the Great Strength True Martial physique which helps my cultivation, I would not want to target you.” Fang Yuan sighed internally.

In the following days, Fang Yuan started his preparations on two aspects.

On one hand, he needed to think about an appropriate way to harm Hei Lou Lan.

On the other hand, he was refining star thought Immortal Gu while using letters to communicate with Fairy Li Shan on how to breach a contract.

But days went by, he was making very slow progress in all of them.

Ever since Hei Lou Lan realized her flaws, she made up her mind and focused on managing her blessed land. Since she could not hide inside Snowy Mountain blessed land anymore, she hid outside and went missing.

After Fang Yuan returned to Dark Flow Giant City, he took action to one again go to Earth Trench and collect star night mucus. After that, he used the star night mucus to refine star thought Immortal Gu, but he failed again.

Fairy Li Shan had cultivated earth path in the past, she later cultivated information path mainly alongside wood path, she had mountain pledge Immortal Gu, her information path attainment was definitely higher than that of Fang Yuan. Earlier, she had gone against the agreement to deal with Dong Fang tribe, but she was still alive and well now, this showed that not only was she skilled at making agreements, she was also able to break them.

Information path specialized in agreements. To make a comparison, they were like locks that restricted both parties.

Fairy Li Shan was like a locksmith, she was skilled at making locks, she was certain to be good at opening them.

Fang Yuan, Fairy Li Shan, and Hei Lou Lan, even though they had an agreement, the deadline was approaching, thus this agreement was not trouble.

The reason Fang Yuan gave Fairy Li Shan was — he needed to deal with the agreement for joining Zombie Alliance.

Fang Yuan had joined Zombie Alliance in Eastern Sea, he was restricted by the Zombie Alliance agreement.

“If I cannot get Hei Lou Lan, I can only lower my expectations and collect a large number of strength path immortal zombies. If that happens, I will need to break the Zombie Alliance agreement so that I can steal bodies inside the Zombie Alliance graveyard.”

The careful Fang Yuan would naturally not put all of his eggs in one basket, he would make all kinds of preparations.

Therefore, these last days, Fang Yuan had been asking for information path methods from Fairy Li Shan often.

The results were minimal.

On one hand, Fairy Li Shan was guarding against Fang Yuan. He had developed too rapidly, it already made this third leader of Snowy Mountain blessed land feel threatened. Even though Fang Yuan offered a high price, she used the excuse of having to find immortal materials to reject him.

Secondly, Fang Yuan had little understanding in regards to information path, with such low attainment, it was hard for him to learn something in this short period of time.

Thirdly, was Zombie Alliance’s agreement so easily broken? It was wishful thinking to expect Fang Yuan to be able to break it in such a short time!

Even though he did not make any progress in information path, after interacting with Fairy Li Shan, Fang Yuan had a clear understanding of the fight between Zombie Alliance and Snowy Mountain blessed land using his own knowledge from being inside Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s base.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ tactic was very smart.

These last days, she led the immortal zombies to attack the demonic path Gu Immortals of Snowy Mountain blessed land continuously.

Many of the demonic path Gu Immortals had low luck to begin with, it was hard to collect immortal materials, but now with the immortal zombies wreaking havoc, they faced even more problems, their gains were affected.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was helpless.

The reason was simple, even though he was a rank eight great expert, he was just one person.

Blazing Heaven Demoness had three rank eight immortal zombies.

If Blazing Heaven Demoness forcefully attacked Snowy Mountain blessed land, with Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s battle strength, it was uncertain who would win.

But Blazing Heaven Demoness avoided that, she made use of Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s weakness, this made Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s life much more difficult.

If he attacked, he would not be around to guard Snowy Mountain blessed land.

The defending Gu Immortals only had rank seven cultivation level at the highest. Second leader Lady Wan Shou was skilled in refinement path, while third leader Fairy Li Shan cultivated information path, they both did not have high battle strength.

If Old Ancestor Xue Hu went out to attack and was held up by an expert of the same rank, and Snowy Mountain blessed land was ransacked by the other rank eight immortal zombies, then that would turn him into the biggest laughing stock in Northern Plains!

Especially that Blazing Heaven Demoness.

She did not have limits to her conduct, back then, she even burned a nine heavens fragment world, making it a lose-lose situation for everyone.

Snowy Mountain blessed land was only a blessed land that was pieced together, it had lower defense than normal blessed lands, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had to guard against her.

Thus, even though Old Ancestor Xue Hu had incredible battle strength, against Zombie Alliance, he was at a disadvantage, he could not turn the situation around.

Battle strength did not mean everything.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ experienced scheming made Old Ancestor Xue Hu suffer heavy losses, but he could not fight back effectively.

Fang Yuan had no other choice but to be patient and focus his attention on refining exert strength Gu and disappointment Gu.

The Fang Yuan stone nests that he built were already at quite the sizes.

Large numbers of hairy man slaves were working non-stop, the number of exert strength Gu and disappointment Gu grew, but they were still far from the desired quantity.

Even though Fang Yuan obtained those precious rank eight immortal materials, he did not sell them yet, he kept them for now.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was funding him in refining star thought Immortal Gu. Every month, Fang Yuan's profits were used for refining Gu worms, feeding Immortal Gu, as well as developing Star Form blessed land.

He purchased large amounts of cloud soil, ordering Star Form land spirit to arrange them.

He wanted to build a giant three dimensional river system, using the ample space to cultivate star fragment grass.

This had huge prospects.

If it succeeded, the profits would not be lower than guts Gu.

But the initial investment was huge, Fang Yuan could only develop it one step at a time.

He wanted to deal with Hei Lou Lan, but that might expose his crimes. It was too easy for Hei Lou Lan to expose the truth, even though there was an alliance, she had Fairy Li Shan's help if she wanted to breach the contract, she had a greater advantage than Fang Yuan.

All along, Fang Yuan had been feeling anxious.

The investigation of the Central Continent Gu Immortals could not be making zero progress.

Perhaps tomorrow, Central Continent Gu Immortals would come and attack Hu Immortal blessed land.

There was no way he could defend Hu Immortal blessed land, once it was lost, Star Form blessed land would be Fang Yuan's only place to retreat to.

As the saying goes, a sly rabbit makes three dens, not to mention the old demon Fang Yuan.

On this day, Fang Yuan was activating the refinement path Gu formation, processing a certain immortal material.

Inside his dead aperture, moving perspective cup Gu activated, bringing a letter from Fairy Li Shan.

Fang Yuan felt this was strange, this letter was actually Fairy Li Shan approaching him.

Opening it, it was a letter requesting for help.

As it turned out, Fairy Li Shan found traces of Hei Cheng.

Hei Cheng was the father of Hei Lou Lan, she wanted to take revenge for her mother, he was someone she had to kill.

Fairy Li Shan's letter asked Fang Yuan to come along and kill Hei Cheng!

Hei Cheng’s circumstances were not good.

As a person who held power in the super force, Hei tribe, he went missing for a long time (the hundred days battle), and by the time he reappeared, he was in a pathetic state, being hunted down secretly by Hei tribe itself.

In fact, in order to save his life, Hei Cheng sacrificed the rank six Immortal Gu House Dark Prison.

This was the symbol of strength in Hei tribe, it was also their trump card, he actually lost it.

Even though Hei Cheng had great authority, in this situation, he would still be punished according to the rules of the tribe!

The Immortal Gu House Dark Prison was not his, the core Immortal Gu that made up the Immortal Gu House came from the four supreme elders of Hei tribe. After the Central Continent Gu Immortals divided up Dark Prison, they brought the Immortal Gu back to their sects, one of the Immortal Gu had already been forcefully refined by a Central Continent Gu Immortal.

Thus, the Hei tribe supreme elders learned about it, Hei Cheng had committed a huge mistake, he needed to be punished!

Hei Cheng did not want to hand himself over.

Before he participated in Shadow Sect’s activities, he had made an agreement with them, he could not expose any details regarding Shadow Sect.

This alliance agreement had a strong restriction!

Hei Cheng could not explain the matter to his tribe, he could only escape.

Hei tribe was unwilling to let him go, the Immortal Gu House was extremely important, it affected their deterrence capability and strength, it had to be taken back.

And Hei Cheng was the clue.

Thus, Hei tribe sent Gu Immortals to capture Hei Cheng.

After both sides fought several times, Hei Cheng narrowly escaped. As the commotion got larger, Fairy Li Shan learned about it. She and Hei Lou Lan discussed it, they felt that now was the best time to take revenge, after Hei Cheng had been abandoned by his tribe.

They needed to have greater numbers as assurance in killing a Gu Immortal.

Thus, Fairy Li Shan immediately contacted Fang Yuan, before the alliance expired, they now had an excellent chance to make use of him!

While it was true that the compensation that Fairy Li Shan gave was very profitable, Fang Yuan also had his own motives, this was a good opportunity.

Hei Lou Lan had been staying hidden all this time, only during a chaotic battle could Fang Yuan find a chance to take action.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 941: Third Battle With Hei Cheng

Escape! Escape! Escape!

A shadowy figure moved rapidly in the tall grass, like a flying snake.

A moment later, the shadow vanished with a soft sound, and the flying stopped. Hei Cheng crashed into the grass nearby.

A clear stream was flowing, right beside him.

Hei Cheng breathed roughly, he was sprawled on the ground, not even having the strength to turn his body over.

His current condition was terrible.

His entire body was covered in wounds, some were deep until bones could be seen, some were still bleeding. Intense pain was assaulting him, but Hei Cheng was already used to it.

These injuries were all created when he fought intensely with the pursuers from Hei tribe.

If Hei tribe was not trying to capture Hei Cheng alive, with his current ability, there was no way he could have escaped so many times.

“I am already at my limits, huh...” Hei Cheng felt grim internally, he gritted his teeth and tried to get up, seeing his reflection in the water, he smiled bitterly at himself.

Originally, he was handsome and charming, having a gentlemanly disposition, but now his face was pale and his lips were green, his body was covered in blood while he escaped for his life.

Suddenly, Hei Cheng’s pupils shrunk to pinpricks in size as he curled up his body, like a venomous snake that felt threatened.

“Who is it?!” Hei Cheng’s eyes shined with a sharp light, he shouted at a nearby bush.

At the next moment, with a loud bang, air currents burst out as the grass was uprooted, a large pathway was created.

Hei Lou Lan wore a mask as she stepped forward.

Her eerie and dark eyes were burning with flames of hatred that had been etched into her.

“It is you!” Hei Cheng was shocked, he tried to stand up but his head was dizzy, his body shook intensely as he fell down helplessly.

Thankfully, he did not collapse entirely, he managed to regain his balance but he was half squatting with tightened muscles, his expression was ruthless but he could not conceal the anxiety inside him.

If he was captured by the Hei tribe Gu Immortals, he might still be able to live, even though that was unlikely.

But if he ended up in the hands of Hei Lou Lan, Hei Cheng would be dead meat, his fate would be unthinkably miserable!

“Hei Cheng, to think that you would end up like this!” Hei Lou Lan walked towards him, her body was straight like a spear, across a small river, she looked down at him arrogantly.

Fate was unpredictable.

Who would have thought that Hei Cheng would end up in such a state?

Hei Lou Lan had never expected this!

Thus, when the perfect opportunity for revenge was right in front of her, other than hatred and anger deep inside her, she also felt a trace of pity.

The father and daughter stared at each other.

Hatred, grudges, all of their emotions were present.

For a moment, time seemed to have stopped.

“Don’t look at me with that gaze!!!” Hei Cheng screamed, he struggled to get up.

He could accept Hei Lou Lan’s anger and hatred, but he could not stand that trace of pity in her eyes.

I, the great Hei Cheng, do not need anyone’s pity!

Whoosh!

A strong wind blew, the dark clouds in the sky moved as the surrounding grass swayed.

Ripples appeared in the stream, as Fairy Li Shan’s voice was heard in the wind: “Nice wind, nice scenery, this nameless location is a good place for you to die, Hei Cheng.”

Hei Cheng sneered, he could feel the hatred and killing intent in Fairy Li Shan’s words.

He turned his head around with difficulty, looking at the surroundings: “A tiger without power gets bullied by dogs, isn’t there someone else? Why are you not coming out?”

Fang Yuan quietly concealed himself nearby, he did not move and leaked no aura, as if he could not hear Hei Cheng’s words.

“You, a tiger? You are just a dog who is struggling to survive on the verge of death. Thieving dog, prepare to lose your life!” Hei Lou Lan no longer concealed the anger inside her, she took a big step and sent out a punch.

In an instant, there was an explosion in the air as the air currents created from her punch burst out.

Fang Yuan’s mood was stirred, he felt a strong desire: “This is only a mortal killer move, but with the amplification of the Great Strength True Martial Physique’s strength path dao marks, its power could actually reach such a level.”

Before this punch landed on Hei Cheng, the latter already felt an intense feeling of stiflement.

An immeasurable sense of danger filled him.

If this punch landed, Hei Cheng would die on the spot!

Escape!

Hei Cheng gritted his teeth, activating countless Gu worms.

With a swoosh, he turned into a dark shadowy snake again, escaping towards the left side.

Hei Lou Lan’s punch missed, she quickly chased him.

But Hei Cheng was very fast, in a few breaths of time, Hei Lou Lan was already dozens of meters behind.

In fact, even though Hei Cheng lost the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison, he still had Immortal Gu Dark Arrow.

During the hundred days battle, in order to raise Hei Cheng’s strength, Shadow Sect designed a set of immortal killer moves for him.

This set of immortal killer moves used dark arrow Immortal Gu as the core, right now, the dark snake that Hei Cheng had transformed into to escape was one of these immortal killer moves.

“Hei Cheng, stay here.” Fairy Li Shan took action, the surrounding grass grew wildly as flowers grew out of nowhere.

Battlefield killer move — Pear Orchard!

Hei Cheng’s body froze, but he immediately broke out of the pear orchard and moved west to escape.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Countless strength path phantoms emerged from the tall grass, blocking Hei Cheng.

Fang Yuan had not exposed the identity of Xing Xiang Zi to Hei Lou Lan or Fairy Li Shan, right now he was using his strength path battle strength.

Fang Yuan secretly used his wisdom path techniques and deduced three possible escape paths, he quietly assigned his strength path phantoms to those areas in order to ambush him.

While escaping, Hei Cheng accidentally went towards one of them, and was stalled by Fang Yuan’s strength path phantoms.

Even so, Hei Lou Lan was still a distance from Hei Cheng.

Seeing that Hei Cheng was about to escape, Fairy Li Shan transmitted to Fang Yuan anxiously: “Quickly stop him!”

Fang Yuan immediately showed his true form, using the true solid bat wings on his back to fly towards Hei Cheng.

Fairy Li Shan frowned deeply, she could tell, with Fang Yuan’s speed, he could not obstruct Hei Cheng.

In truth, Fang Yuan was not planning to stop Hei Cheng either.

Earlier, he had fought with Hei Cheng, but times were different now.

Hei Cheng was Hei Lou Lan’s weakness, as long as he was alive, he would be able to use Hei Cheng in order to scheme against Hei Lou Lan.

Fang Yuan had originally wanted to use this chance to see if he could capture Hei Lou Lan.

But after seeing Hei Cheng’s severe injuries, he knew the chances were close to zero.

If it were possible, Fang Yuan would rather let Hei Cheng go and let him escape.

But because of the alliance agreement, he could not go overboard.

Hei Cheng got rid of the obstacles, he gave Fang Yuan a look as he sneered: “You finally came out? It is a pity you cannot catch me!”

Saying so, he was about to use his immortal killer move to escape from this place.

But right at this moment, the cry of an eagle resounded and almost tore his eardrums.

A giant iron crown eagle phantom appeared behind Fang Yuan!

His iron crown eagle strength activated, as Fang Yuan’s speed rose, he flew at lightning speed, closing the gap between him and Hei Cheng.

Hei Cheng was shocked, he did not dare to slow down, he quickly escaped.

Fang Yuan sighed internally.

Even though he had the rank six Immortal Gu recipe of all-out effort Gu, it was still a rank five mortal Gu now. Fang Yuan’s iron crown eagle strength was obtained from an Immortal Gu, it could only be triggered with certain probabilities.

In the previous battles, it had never been triggered, but today, when he did not want it to activate, it did.

“It seems that it was inappropriate to use time assist luck right before this to raise my luck! If I had known that Hei Cheng would be in such a condition, I would have realized that it was impossible to execute my plan.”

Fang Yuan sighed, his body was like an eagle, pouncing at Hei Cheng.

Hei Cheng was slippery as a snake, he moved around in the grass as a dark snake, changing many directions, even though Fang Yuan attacked many times, he narrowly escaped each time.

But Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan were no longer anxious, they were excited.

With Fang Yuan’s interference, Hei Cheng could no longer escape. In a few breaths of time, Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan got close to them.

Eventually, the three of them encircled Hei Cheng.

Hei Cheng’s expression was dark and ominous, he screamed with messy hair all over his face: “You want me dead? Don’t think you will leave unscathed!”

An intense battle erupted.

Rumble...

Thunderous sounds exploded, darkness shot out, flowers were flying, strength qi rampaged, the soil on the ground was sent flying.

Without any doubt, Hei Cheng was heavily suppressed, Fang Yuan’s group held the advantage.

“It is a pity that I can only hold back on ten to twenty percent of my strength, that is the limit. If I hold back any more, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan would realize it, they would be suspicious towards me and lose trust.”

Seeing that this excellent pawn in Hei Cheng was about to die, Fang Yuan felt some regret.

Including this time, Fang Yuan had already fought against Hei Cheng three times.

Fang Yuan and the others did not have much of an increase in battle strength compared to the previous time.

But Hei Cheng’s condition was too terrible, he had experienced the hundred days battle and the immortal essence that he accumulated over all his life was expended. These last days, he had been escaping and fighting intensely with Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals.

Thus at this moment, under the attacks of Fang Yuan and the rest, Hei Cheng suffered another severe injury, he spat out blood and was about to lose.

“Stop!”

Suddenly, an angry shout could be heard in the sky.

A blinding green light filled the entire battlefield.

Space tore open as a green hand grabbed at Hei Cheng imposingly.

Fang Yuan and the others reacted quickly, but the green hand could affect time, it grabbed Hei Cheng before anyone could react.

“Green City Rampage!” Hei Cheng could not move, he screamed while being captured.

Hei Lou Lan and the others rapidly retreated.

Green City Rampage was a powerful battle formation of the Olden Antiquity Era, at that time it was ranked at third in the world, only lower than Golden Heavenly Saint and Heavenly Giant Solor.

The fact that Hei tribe was in control of Green City Rampage was known to everyone in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

At this moment, with the appearance of Green City Rampage, it meant that the four strongest supreme elders of the super force Hei tribe had arrived together.

“We of Hei tribe will deal with our own Hei tribe members, how can we allow you to kill him casually?”

“Hei Lou Lan, the tribe nurtured you, but you betrayed us and went to the demonic path, you are guilty of the most heinous crimes, surrender now!”

At the next moment, a green giant tore through space, standing on the ground.

A mysterious light shot out of its forehead, towards Hei Lou Lan.

At that moment, Hei Lou Lan was unable to move!

Strength path giant hand!

Fang Yuan rapidly retreated as he used his rank seven battle strength.

Boom!

With an intense collision, strength path giant hand collided with the green hand, and the strength path giant hand disintegrated immediately.

“Pitiful trick!” The green giant laughed coldly.

But at the next moment, a fire bird crashed into the green giant’s chest out of nowhere.

Boom!

With an intense explosion, the green giant was sent back, almost falling onto the ground.

“Blazing Heaven Demoness?!” The four supreme elders of Hei tribe shouted with shock and anger on their faces inside the green giant.

Angry bird, this was a signature killer move of Blazing Heaven Demoness, it was widely known among Gu Immortals of Northern Plains.

At this time and place, why was Blazing Heaven Demoness here?

Be it the Hei tribe Gu Immortals or Fang Yuan, they were asking the same question.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 942: Little Aunt, Elder Aunt

Her rank eight aura was unconcealed, emanating freely.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was bathed in flames, she crossed her arms and stood arrogantly in the air.

Blazing Heaven Demoness shouted loudly: “Hei tribe elders, this ancient battle formation Green City Rampage of yours is so incomplete, you have the face to use it? A hundred years ago, in order to use this battle formation, you were forced to stay together at a distance of no more than three meters between each other. This time, you came here together, who is guarding the blessed land that is your main camp?”

The green giant gazed at Blazing Heaven Demoness.

An elderly voice came out of the green giant’s body: “Blazing Heaven Demoness! Since you know that this is the ancient battle formation Green City Rampage, you should know that its power rivals that of rank eights. Hei Lou Lan and Hei Cheng are members of Hei tribe, this is an internal family matter of ours, as an outsider, you should not interfere. Don’t forget that Zombie Alliance is in the righteous path. As the leader of Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, you have significant responsibilities, do be careful.”

Immediately after, another voice said: “Blazing Heaven Demoness, aren’t you going to deal with Old Ancestor Xue Hu? Why are you here to join in the chaos?”

“Join in the chaos? Hahahahaha...” Blazing Heaven Demoness raised her head and laughed.

Fairy Li Shan spoke at this moment, she continued: “Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s matter is none of your concern, elders of Hei tribe. Furthermore... you said this is your family matter, don’t tell me it isn’t our own family matter?”

“What do you mean?” Inside the green giant’s body, the four elders of Hei tribe asked with shocked voices.

At this moment, Fang Yuan felt an intense feeling that something was not right.

“Big sister!” Fairy Li Shan called out.

There was tacit understanding between siblings, there was no need to communicate too much in words.

Blazing Heaven Demoness stopped laughed, her gaze was like lightning as she flew towards the green giant.

On the green giant’s body, a lump of fire burned out of nowhere, in an instant, it turned into a blazing flame and engulfed the entire green giant.

Soon, the hill-like green giant became an orange pillar of fire.

Immortal killer move — Fire Prison!

In the burning flames, the green giant could barely move, it was as if it had fallen into a puddle of sticky black oil.

The four elders who assembled the green giant were shocked.

“When did we get hit by it?”

“This killer move’s power is so immense! Even our Green City Rampage cannot break free for the time being.”

“Most importantly, there were no hints of it being used, we cannot defend against it!”

But the four elders had rich battle experience, they were only shocked for a few breaths of time before they understood.

They remembered the attack earlier — angry bird had crashed into the green giant’s chest.

Meanwhile, fire prison started burning at the green giant’s chest.

This was a combo immortal killer move!

So-called combo immortal killer moves were the usage of two or more immortal killer moves one after another, they would have stronger power, having synergy between them.

Angry bird, fire prison, these two immortal killer moves formed a combo immortal killer move.

Blazing Heaven Demoness first used angry bird to attack the green giant, she next used fire prison to trap Green City Rampage with an incredibly powerful effect.

If a long time had passed, or if she had activated fire prison first, Blazing Heaven Demoness would have to spend time in activating the move, during that period, the four elders of Hei tribe would be able to dodge, fire prison’s power would not be as great as now.

The reason was very simple.

It was due to dao marks.

Immortal killer moves used Immortal Gu as the core to activate powerful methods.

The power was great because they formed temporary dao marks.

When angry bird crashed into the green giant’s chest, temporary fire path dao marks were left behind. Blazing Heaven Demoness used these fire path dao marks as the basis to unleash fire prison, elevating its power and temporarily trapping the green giant.

“To be able to design a combo immortal killer move, her attainment level must be great grandmaster! So Blazing Heaven Demoness’ fire path attainment level has already reached such a level.” Fang Yuan’s heart was shaking.

Fire path great grandmaster!

This attainment level was not something ordinary Gu Immortals could reach.

Roar—!

The green giant roared loudly, large amounts of green fog spewed out of its body.

Wherever the green fog went, fire was put out.

Evidently, this mysterious green fog was a powerful immortal killer move.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ combo immortal killer move did not even last for ten breaths of time before it completely disintegrated.

But they still lost some precious time.

During this period, Fairy Li Shan had already finished preparing, she used her trump card.

Battlefield immortal killer move — Orchard Garden in Mountain!

The earth rumbled intensely.

Rumble...

In the blink of an eye, waves of terrifying tremors erupted deep underground.

The surface started to rise, the terrain changed swiftly.

The flat grassland had turned into a mound.

Soon, this mound rose rapidly, becoming taller. On the two sides of the mountain, there were evident ridges forming.

Eventually, the mountain stopped rising, a chain of mountains encircled the green giant in all directions.

The tremors of the earth finally stopped.

The terrain of over a thousand li had completely changed because of Fairy Li Shan’s battlefield immortal killer move.

Achieving such incredible effects, it was truly breathtaking!

A chain of mountains surrounded the green giant in the center, it was like a giant bowl or a prison, blocking their escape route.

At this moment, the green giant was like trapped prey.

Fang Yuan’s heart pounded, even though he knew that Fairy Li Shan had such a trump card, seeing this effect, he still felt some surprise.

In his previous life, when Fairy Li Shan used this move, the power was not as great. Why did it become so powerful now?

“Don’t tell me, it is because of Miniscule Mountain?” Fang Yuan had a guess.

“That should be it. Fairy Li Shan’s orchard garden in mountain is like myriad star fireflies, it has incredible power when used, but the price should be equally big. Each time it is used, dao marks in the Gu Immortal will be expended permanently. Thus, in records of history, Fairy Li Shan did not use this battlefield immortal killer move very often.”

Or in other words, this was a last resort technique.

A forbidden move.

If it was used frequently, one’s own foundation and cultivation level would fall drastically.

Miniscule Mountain was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, it was recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, the mountain itself had a large number of dao marks. Fairy Li Shan placed it inside her own immortal aperture, the dao marks of Miniscule Mountain became her own foundation, she could use and expend them.

Thus, orchard garden in mountain’s power became so terrifying, far beyond Fang Yuan’s knowledge based on his previous life.

The four elders of Hei tribe were rank seven Gu Immortals, the ancient battle formation Green City Rampage that they created was ranked at third in the world. But using Miniscule Mountain, Fairy Li Shan used orchard garden in mountain and temporarily trapped the rank eight level green giant, controlling the situation.

Fang Yuan and the others were floating in the air, looking down.

The green giant was huge, but the mountains surrounding it were taller.

Fairy Li Shan had stopped her activation, she no longer controlled it.

But the transformation of orchard garden in mountain still continued.

In the valley of the mountains, vegetation grew rapidly, countless pear trees grew, the branches were like vines entangling with each other, extending rapidly.

At the same time, pear blossoms bloomed, they floated in the air, slowly descending like snow.

Behind the green giant, a pair of thick and huge green wings appeared.

One of the four Hei tribe elders was skilled in transformation path, thus, the green giant could have such a transformation.

This was the specialty of an ancient battle formation.

Once an Immortal Gu House was created, the methods would be fixed. But ancient battle formations had different abilities according to the Gu Immortals using it, as well as their various methods in fighting.

The four elders of Hei tribe wanted to fly out of the cage, but countless vines were coiled onto the legs of the green giant.

“Hmph!” The green giant snorted, the color of its body changed.

It was as if fire was burning deep inside its body. Its green color, like that of moss, had turned into a dark red color.

Dark path and fire path — dual immortal killer move — Dark Ember!

Boom!

An intense explosion resounded, it could cause eardrums to vibrate.

A dark red translucent shock wave burst out of the green giant’s body, spreading rapidly.

Everywhere the shock wave went, the entangled vines burned like paper, becoming ash.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

With three shock waves emitted by the green giant, obstacles were swept away.

At once, dust rose like clouds, the earth trembled, countless rocks fell.

The powerful and terrifying aura made Fairy Li Shan take a small step back in reflex.

Hei Lou Lan was seemingly unaware of this, her eyes were staring at one of the green giant’s hands. Inside this hand, her father, Hei Cheng, was held inside.

Fang Yuan’s expression did not change, but his heart sank.

He was starting to understand the situation.

Evidently, Fairy Li Shan, Hei Lou Lan, and Blazing Heaven Demoness were in cahoots.

Today, this situation was created by them to kill Hei Cheng, but at the same time, they were targeting Fang Yuan.

“I was scheming against Hei Lou Lan, but to think they would move against me first!” Fang Yuan looked towards Blazing Heaven Demoness, before today, he had not expected the leader of Northern Plains Zombie Alliance to be so closely related to Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan.

Blazing Heaven Demoness sensed Fang Yuan’s gaze and gave him a look that was seemingly smiling.

Fang Yuan snorted internally, he turned his gaze away.

He was in grave danger now!

If he wanted to escape, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan would only bring him disturbance, but Blazing Heaven Demoness was a barrier that he could not pass!

Fang Yuan had Fixed Immortal Travel, Blazing Heaven Demoness surely knew about it.

“But now is not the time to act rashly. Since they have not attacked me yet, we can still talk it out. Even if I escape, it is pointless. I have joined Zombie Alliance, and Blazing Heaven Demoness is the leader of the Northern Plains Zombie Alliance branch. Furthermore, Fairy Li Shan is an information path Gu Immortal...”

It was laughable that previously, Fang Yuan was asking Fairy Li Shan for the method to leave Zombie Alliance.

“This means that my identity as Xing Xiang Zi has already been exposed. Hei Lou Lan is astute, since she knows I have star path cultivation, she would also know that I have already obtained Star Form blessed land!”

“Hei Lou Lan called Fairy Li Shan little aunt, I thought this was just an affectionate term, for example, little brother. To think that with a little aunt, she also had an elder aunt. And to think that Hei Lou Lan’s elder aunt was such a formidable person!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 943: Afraid of Death

Blazing Heaven Demoness was actually Hei Lou Lan’s elder aunt, Fang Yuan did not expect this.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength was rank seven at best.

Against Hei Lou Lan, he had an advantage, but the other party had the Great Strength True Martial Physique, he needed to be wary of her last resort attack.

Against Fairy Li Shan, he was at most only evenly matched. Fang Yuan would be in a disadvantage the moment she used her battlefield immortal killer move, he could not give her enough time to use it.

As for Blazing Heaven Demoness, he was extremely pitiful in comparison, it was despair-inducing. Even though Fang Yuan had many Immortal Gu, with his bottom tier rank six cultivation level, there was no way he could fight against a rank eight Gu Immortal.

Even a rank seven Gu Immortal could not match a rank eight Gu Immortal. Feng Jiu Ge was an exception, in the last thousand years of Central Continent’s history, he was the only one.

It was virtually impossible for Fang Yuan to deal with Blazing Heaven Demoness.

The other party was simply too powerful, Fang Yuan was at a weaker position with an absolute disadvantage.

‘Right now, the only thing that I can rely on is the alliance agreement I made with Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan previously. Allies are not allowed to kill each other.’

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly to himself internally.

Earlier, he was finding this agreement restricting to his actions, but now he had to rely on it to survive.

‘However, Fairy Li Shan is an information path Gu Immortal, this agreement might not be reliable. Blazing Heaven Demoness can completely suppress me using battle strength, but she has not struck yet. If Fairy Li Shan wants to kill me, she would not create this situation either. Also, Blazing Heaven Demoness knows my true identity, why did she help me in refining star thought Immortal Gu? This means that they are not going after my life, they have other objectives.’

As for what their objectives were, Fang Yuan had a vague idea.

The conclusion was, right now, Fang Yuan was not in any mortal danger. This was also the reason why he was continuing to watch and not trying to escape.

Just as Fang Yuan was thinking over his own safety, the green giant that was trapped by orchard garden in mountain roared as it raised its head.

After several uses of the killer move dark ember, most of the pear trees in the valley were burned to ashes, but they continued to grow from the ground, extending towards the green giant even though it would take some time to trap it again.

Using this chance, two more pairs of giant green wings appeared on the green giant’s back again.

At the same time, the green giant’s appearance underwent a change, its large head turned into that of an eagle’s, its entire body became slimmer and longer, its arms and legs turned into sharp five fingered claws.

Whoosh!

Its three pairs of wings flapped together, at the same time, the green giant’s knees bent slightly, it jumped and burst into the sky.

The ground trembled, a huge crater was formed from the impact.

Dust clouds rose and mixed with the huge amounts of ashes.

This time, the green giant was not restricted by the vines, but the moment it flew into the sky, the four elders of Hei tribe felt a strong suction force, it was pulling onto the giant, preventing the green giant from flying far away from it.

“This is?” The four elders of Hei tribe showed stunned expressions one after another.

Every several meters the green giant rose into the sky, the strength of the huge pulling force increased by ten times as much!

Gradually, the green giant was unable to resist it anymore.

No matter how much the three wings flapped, the giant’s speed became slower and slower, eventually, it slowed to a crawl, resembling a snail.

After reaching its limits, it was only thirty meters away from the ground.

Boom!

With another loud bang, the green giant crashed into the ground.

The four elders of Hei tribe were silent.

There was no need to say anything, anyone could guess the result, their faces were completely ashen now.

This was the true power of orchard garden in mountain.

Fairy Li Shan cultivated information path mainly, and secondarily in wood path and earth path. Orchard garden in mountain was a battlefield killer move that was formed by combining earth path and wood path, the pear blossoms were like snow, the vines coiled around the target, these were just wood path techniques. The force of gravity that pulled it down was the aspect of earth path.

Of course, this was also due to Fairy Li Shan using the power of Miniscule Mountain inside her.

Otherwise, if she used the original version of orchard garden in mountain that was based on her own strength, the green giant might have broken out of it already.

This was an ancient battle formation, Green City Rampage, even though it was incomplete, there were four rank seven Gu Immortals inside the battle formation, they could fight against a rank eight when unified.

The green giant could not break out, it landed on the ground. In the valley, countless vines coiled around it again like tough snakes, the green giant was restricted again.

At this time, there was a sharp sound of wind as explosions occurred in the air, the sound was so loud eardrums could almost burst.

Three angry birds fused in the air, turning into a fire phoenix that was neither big nor small.

The phoenix sang loudly, its wings flapped, it was extremely fast, it drew a beautiful rainbow arc in the sky, crashing into the green giant’s arm and vanishing completely.

The green giant displayed an incredibly powerful defense, merely a deep hole was created from the explosion on its arm.

Next, waves of green fog circulated around it, as the deep hole closed up, it was like liquid metal, rapidly mending.

But Blazing Heaven Demoness’ attacks did not stop for even a moment.

She stood arrogantly in the air, she slowly pointed her arm towards the green giant that was below her, her arm made a slashing motion from up to down!

Fire path killer move – Phoenix Feather Triple Wing Blade!

Three waves of flames formed instantly. They resembled the feathers of the phoenix, they were curved but extremely sharp like sickles.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Three fire blades tore through the air, burning intensely as huge winds started blowing as a result of the movement.

Three blades launched one after another, hitting the same place consecutively.

Together with the angry bird earlier, this achieved another combo move effect, the green giant’s arm was chopped off by these three blades.

The four elders of Hei tribe growled furiously, but it was too late for them to stop her.

The green giant’s body was formed from the ancient battle formation, after the arm was detached from the body, it was as if the Gu formation itself had lost a portion of itself. Losing the immortal essence supply from the four elders, the arm quickly vanished into nothingness, as countless Gu worm flew out rapidly towards the green giant.

Hei Cheng who was captured earlier lost his restraint, he quickly fell.

The green giant tried to grab him, but Blazing Heaven Demoness stopped it.

Hei Cheng tried to escape, but times were different now, he was inside orchard garden in mountain, almost immediately, countless vines and roots tied him up tightly, sending him out into the hands of Fairy Li Shan.

“Let him go!” The four elders of Hei tribe flew into a rage.

Countless dark ember killer moves were used consecutively. Marks of dragons appeared on the green giant’s chest and back, it was like they were emerging from a body of water, they turned into green dragons and flew around the area.

This was the signature killer move of Hei tribe’s first supreme elder — Nine Dragon Body Protection!

It could both attack and defend, under the amplification of the ancient battle formation, it displayed incredibly terrifying power!

At once, nine dragons flew around, they were unstoppable.

Mountain ridges collapsed, pear blossoms wilted, plants and trees were sent flying.

Fairy Li Shan’s expression changed: “Hurry up, I cannot hold on much longer!”

The green giant unleashed its full battle strength, it was already very difficult for orchard garden in mountain to trap it until now.

“Go!” Blazing Heaven Demoness moved without hesitation, she shot out a long chain of fire, grabbing onto Fairy Li Shan, Hei Lou Lan, Fang Yuan, and Hei Cheng.

Soon after, she used her killer move, turning into a rainbow, dragging everyone into the air along with her.

At the moment where he was trapped by the chain of fire, Fang Yuan subconsciously wanted to resist it, but he held in that instinct eventually.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ speed was extremely fast, in the blink of an eye, she vanished with everyone into the horizon.

Ten breaths of time later, orchard garden in mountain was completely destroyed, the terrifying collapse of mountains ravaged the battlefield.

The green giant successfully flew into the air, it roared and caused tremors in the sky and earth.

Blazing Heaven Demoness' movement killer move was extremely fast, it would take a lot of effort for the four elders of Hei tribe to catch up to her.

Even if they caught up, it would be hard to decide a winner among them.

But it was too late now, the four elders of Hei tribe had to chase her. Hei Cheng had been the representative of the four supreme elders, he had settled Hei tribe's affairs for so many years, he knew a lot of secrets.

Furthermore, as a super force, their own Gu Immortal was kidnapped by others, the four elders of Hei tribe had lost all of their face, if they did not stop Blazing Heaven Demoness, they would not be able to raise their heads in front of the other super forces, or even any of the righteous path or demonic path forces.

Hei tribe's Immortal Gu House Dark Prison was lost, and Hei Cheng got captured, Hei tribe's reputation was going to plummet.

As the saying goes, everyone kicks a man who is down, with Hei tribe being so weak now, all the other forces would try to suppress them, they would also be forced to give up a lot of the cultivation resources that they were holding onto in Northern Plains.

Green City Rampage was an ancient battle formation, the four supreme elders of Hei tribe had no lack of movement killer moves. Once they activated their moves together, their speed would be several times that of Blazing Heaven Demoness.

But just as the green giant was about to chase her, a latter for emergency support appeared beside the four elders of Hei tribe.

“What? Our blessed land base has been infiltrated by someone secretly and most of our resources were stolen, we have suffered great losses!”

“The Hei tribe Gu Immortals guarding the place are all heavily injured!”

“The invader is extremely powerful, they have undeniable rank eight aura!”

The four elders of Hei tribe were shocked and furious.

This was most definitely a plot.

“Right now, Northern Plains Zombie Alliance has three rank eights including Blazing Heaven Demoness.”

“Damn it! Our base cannot be lost, the defense of a blessed land assembled with bits and pieces is not enough.”

“We have all fallen into Blazing Heaven Demoness' scheme. Go! We have to go back and defend it.”

The green giant roared loudly, both of its arms raised up and pulled, causing a gigantic dark hole to appear in the space in front of it.

The green giant flew into the dark hole and vanished, leaving behind only the ravaged battlefield which was completely in ruins.

“Hei tribe did not pursue us, we are safe now.” Blazing Heaven Demoness landed on the ground with everyone.

The chain of fire that restricted everyone was collected by her.

Next, she waved her hand casually and the surrounding ten li were covered by a layer of dark red barriers.

The battle was now over, but Fang Yuan was more alert than before.

He moved his shoulders and arms, saying calmly to Fairy Li Shan: “So you are all family, you have truly kept me in the dark.”

“The same goes for you.” Fairy Li Shan smiled with deep meaning.

It was obvious that she had already known that Fang Yuan obtained Star Form blessed land and disguised himself as Xing Xiang Zi.

“Spare me! Spare my life! I am willing to become your subordinate, I am willing to serve you faithfully, it will be better for you if you keep me alive!” Hei Cheng struggled to get up, his face was filled with anxiety as he shouted continuously.

Blazing Heaven Demoness had taken away the parts of the chain of fire restricting everyone else, but Hei Cheng alone was still bound up tightly.

Not only did the situation develop beyond Fang Yuan’s expectations, it was also completely out of Hei Cheng’s expectations.

Fairy Li Shan stared with furious eyes as she pointed at Hei Cheng and scolded: “Dog thief, my little sister loved you so much, yet you took her life away. But that was not enough for you, you even wanted to lay your hands on your own daughter!”

Hei Cheng directly knelt on the ground, he raised his head and begged: “I am willing to be your dog or horse, I am willing to tell you all of the secrets of Hei tribe! Including the time path inheritance of our rank eight ancestor Hei Fan. Didn’t Su Xian Er get close to me because of this inheritance? Don’t you all want this inheritance! I will tell you everything that I know, I will not conceal any secrets!”

But Fairy Li Shan was completely unmoved, as Hei Cheng turned towards Blazing Heaven Demoness: “I did not have any intentions to offend you! Back then, if I had found out that you were behind Su Xian Er, I would not have taken her life! This is all a misunderstanding, this is all just a misunderstanding!!”

Hei tribe was a super force, they have an inheritance from long ago, their ancestor was obviously very powerful.

During the generation when Hei Fan was the one in power, Hei tribe had a rank eight Gu Immortal, they were one of the stronger super forces in Northern Plains.

But his lifespan was limited, after Hei Fan died, Hei tribe slowly became weaker, while some of the other super forces rose up.

This was normal in the world of Gu Immortals. The saying goes, upturns and downturns were just like the ebb and flow of tides, if one falls, another rises.

Hei Cheng continue to beg unceasingly.

He knew that this was the only way he could possibly survive.

Facing the rank eight Blazing Heaven Demoness, and Hei Lou Lan who bore a deep and unresolvable hatred towards him, he could not threaten them using Hei tribe itself. Thankfully, Hei Fan had an inheritance, and Hei tribe was unable to inherit it. The inheritance of a rank eight Gu Immortal was extremely attractive to any Gu Immortal out there.

But Blazing Heaven Demoness snickered, she looked at Hei Lou Lan and spoke with a gentle tone: “Your life is not mine, whether you can survive or not, only Little Lan can decide. Little Lan, go ahead, I have already restricted Hei Cheng, he is now as fragile as a mortal.”

“Little Lan, Little Lan, listen to me!” Hei Cheng knelt on the ground, he rubbed his knees against the ground as he crawled towards Hei Lou Lan in a frenzy.

“You are my daughter, I am your father. you have the blood of Hei tribe flowing in you, you have a huge advantage in inheriting Hei Fan’s inheritance. If your mother was alive, she would not want to see you and I in such conflict, right? If you mother was here, she would definitely be extremely happy to see you inherit Hei Fan’s inheritance. Also, also! You have one of the ten extreme physiques, you were able to live until now because I asked Jiang Yu to protect your life, that is an undeniable fact!”

Hei Lou Lan looked at Hei Cheng, seeing his frightened and panicking face, she frowned, showing an expression of deep disgust and hatred.

Next, she kicked Hei Cheng away ruthlessly.

“I will only ask you one question!” Hei Lou Lan’s expression was cold as ice.

“Ask, please ask! I will tell you everything that I know!” Hei Cheng could almost see a chance of survival.

Hei Lou Lan breathed in deeply, her eyes were red and her voice was trembling: “Mother loved you so much, she trusted you completely, actually, she knew that you were going to harm her long ago, but she believed that you would realize your mistake and stop your actions because of love. Facing someone who loved you so deeply, how could you have the heart to end her life?”

Hei Cheng was stunned.

He was originally tied up tightly on the ground, and was using his arm to prop his body, trying hard to sit up.

But he was completely stumped by Hei Lou Lan’s question.

At this moment, he seemed to have turned into a statue.

A gust of wind blew, Hei Cheng’s messy and muddy hair was blown up, his eyes were red as the loving memories of him and Su Xian Er surfaced in his mind.

Regret, pain, sadness, all sorts of emotions filled his heart.

He started choking, before wailing.

“I, of course I knew that your mother loved me... but, but, but I was afraid of dying... I was afraid of dying! Sob, sob, sob...”

After answering her question, Hei Cheng no longer had the strength to support his body, he collapsed on the ground.

He was like an old dog, or a rotting prawn, his body was curled up as he wept in the dirty mud.

His mucus and tears were mixed together, flowing down his face.

His silk robe was tattered beyond repair, his body was covered in blood.

His handsome face and former glory was like a dried up mask made of mud. When facing the prospects of death, this mask disintegrated and vanished.

Hei Lou Lan and the others fell into deep silence.

The scene was completely quiet.

Except for the wind that was blowing, and Hei Cheng’s continuous soft weeping.

Hei Cheng’s display made everyone around feel a deep sensation.

Death was truly a terrifying thing.

Facing death, even an invincible rank nine venerable was fragile beyond belief.

Eternal life.

Was it possible?

Fang Yuan only knew: From ancient times until the present, nobody had reached such a stage.

“Let him go.” At this moment, a lump of emotion came out of Hei Lou Lan’s body, turning into a translucent figure of a female immortal’s body.

‘Su Xian Er, the mother of Hei Lou Lan.’ Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered.

In the past, before Su Xian Er died, she had given Hei Lou Lan a sum of immortal essence, as well as this familial emotion.

It was because of the familial emotion and immortal essence that Hei Lou Lan could activate Immortal Gu while she was still a mortal.

“Little sister!” Seeing this familial emotion, Fairy Li Shan could not help but have tears fall from her eyes.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ eyes were turning red, she showed an extremely guilty expression full of regret.

Hei Lou Lan lowered her head, she looked at Hei Cheng calmly, seemingly in deep thought.

Su Xian Er’s figure floated towards Hei Lou Lan, she stretched out her hand behind Hei Lou Lan, hugging her beloved daughter as she consoled her gently: “Let him go, you see how pitiful he is now. After killing me, he was already living a life of misery and regret, is he really happy to be alive now? No, he is barely scraping through life, he lives in terror, he lives in guilt, he is drifting without purpose, only living due to his fear, even though he is alive, he had already died long ago.”

“Let him go, that is also the same as letting yourself off. Little Lan, do not live in a world of hatred, do not live in the past, you need to lead your own life. Don’t bear the sin of killing your own father, it is a very heavy burden. Trust me, revenge will not lead you to salvation, but destruction instead. I want you to live a better life!”

“Mother, I know that you are saying that for my sake.” Hei Lou Lan said as she walked towards Hei Cheng.

Suddenly, she raised her leg.

And she stomped!

Like what Blazing Heaven Demoness had said, Hei Cheng was currently as fragile as a mortal.

So under Hei Lou Lan’s feet, his head was like a watermelon that burst, blood matter, blood, his skull, and teeth were all mixed together in a pile.

The high and mighty Hei Cheng, a rank seven Gu Immortal, a generation’s hero, had died.

Su Xian Er’s familial emotion was dazed.

Next, she saw that Hei Lou Lan turned around, facing her: “There is nothing I cannot bear, mother! It is like in the past, when you knew the situation but still let him have his way, I have my own resolution as well. Will this lead me on the path of destruction? Hmph, I am not so fragile.”

“Little Lan.” Fairy Li Shan took a step forward, holding Hei Lou Lan’s hand with much worry.

“Little Lan...” Blazing Heaven Demoness muttered softly, she wanted to take a step towards Hei Lou Lan, but she did not do so eventually.

‘So it’s like this, I think I understand now.’ Fang Yuan had been observing all of their expressions this entire time.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 944: The Greatest Fear is Fear Itself

Central Continent, Spirit Affinity House.

Mountains stood tall, fog was thick, in a deep area of the bamboo forest, a waterfall resembled a clear veil as it hung in the air and fell downwards.

Feng Jin Huang sat silently on the branch of a pine tree, she quietly looked at the waterfall as her tears fell.

During this period of time, the Central Continent Gu Immortals who were sent to investigate Northern Plains had already returned.

But there was no news of Feng Jiu Ge.

From Feng Jin Huang’s perspective, her father was missing without a trace in another region, it was likely that he had already died.

These last days, Feng Jin Huang did not have the appetite to eat or mood to cultivate, her face was drenched in tears as she became thinner.

Life and death.

These were heavy words, they attacked Feng Jin Huang’s fragile heart at an unexpected timing.

It was not that Feng Jin Huang had never seen someone die.

But when it came to her own family, facing this situation, she lost all of the composure and calmness that she had.

But she was still hanging on staunchly.

The nightmare did not defeat her, she only cried secretly at a place without any other person.

On the surface, she was still cultivating as usual, but she had no idea what the content of her cultivation for the last few days was.

A figure appeared behind Feng Jin Huang silently, out of thin air.

“Daughter.” She heard a familiar voice.

Feng Jin Huang turned around, the person was her mother, Fairy Bai Qing.

“Mother!” Feng Jin Huang could not hold it in anymore, she went into Fairy Bai Qing’s embrace as she cried her lungs out.

Fairy Bai Qing consoled her for a long time before Feng Jin Huang stopped crying.

“Mother, father is so powerful, he must be alright now, am I right?” Feng Jin Huang raised her head as she looked at her mother with a hopeful expression.

But Fairy Bai Qing did not directly console her in this matter, she shook her head: “Even the invincible rank nine Gu Immortals die one day, not to mention your father. Peopleir must die eventually, Huang Er, stop crying, let mother tell you a story.”

This was a story in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

Legend says that Ren Zu tried to rely on the capabilities of the feathermen to save his daughter, who was still stuck inside ordinary abyss.

However, the feathermen wanted freedom, they did not want to be restricted.

Ren Zu thought of a scheme, but he failed, the feathermen would rather die than compromise their freedom.

Ren Zu fell into deep perplexity.

He could not find a better way to save his children.

The same situation applied to his eldest son, Verdant Great Sun, and also his daughter, Boundless Forest Samsara.

At this time, self Gu spoke in Ren Zu’s heart: “Oh human, you want to save your son, Verdant Great Sun, I have a method.”

Ren Zu thought that he had to save at least one of them, he quickly asked: “Oh? What method?”

Self Gu laughed: “All living beings in this world will die, this is because fate Gu entered the door of life and death, and left a trace behind when searching for fairness Gu. Oh human, you can enter the door of life and death, and walk on the road of life and death, as long as you do not walk on the traces of fate, you will step on a road that belongs to you solely. When you walk into the door of life and death and leave again, you will form a brand new road, that would be partway to success.”

“Next, as long as you bring Verdant Great Sun onto the path that you walked on, and leave the door of life and death, you will be able to return to the human world where the sun shines. Your son, Verdant Great Sun, will be able to escape death and revive.”

Ren Zu heard the method of self Gu and was very hesitant, but there was no better solution available.

Thus, he decided to let Boundless Forest Samsara stay inside ordinary abyss for a while longer, while he used the method taught by self Gu to save his eldest son, Verdant Great Sun.

Ren Zu set off towards the door of life and death, as he walked, one day, he met with a beastman.

This beastman was very muscular, his muscles were like rocks, the fangs in his mouth were sharper than blades. He took huge steps, sprinting in the wilderness as he shouted: “Don’t get any closer, don’t come here! I am afraid!”

Ren Zu was very curious, he asked: “Oh beastman, what are you afraid of?”

The beastman said: “I am afraid of my own shadow, it keeps following me, I cannot get rid of it. I am so afraid that I can only run around in all directions, I am tired, hungry, and thirsty, I am going to die!”

Ren Zu felt that this was funny: “Oh beastman, you have such a powerful body, yet you are afraid of a harmless shadow, do you have a cowardly heart? What is there to be afraid of?”

At this time, a Gu worm came out of the beastman’s heart, it laughed at Ren Zu: “Oh human, do not speak so shamelessly. You do not feel afraid because you have not encountered me, fear Gu. Hehehehehe.”

“Fear Gu?” Ren Zu took a step back, his expression changed.

Once fear Gu appeared, fear started to well up in Ren Zu’s heart.

He was afraid.

Fear Gu laughed even more arrogantly now, it said to the beastman: “I will let you off now, little beastman, you pitiful worm.”

The beastman was free now, it fell to the ground, weeping in extreme joy.

Fear Gu turned around, facing Ren Zu: “Oh human, you dared to look down on me, fear Gu, now I will torture you with endless fear!”

Saying this, fear Gu flew into Ren Zu’s heart with a whooshing sound.

Ren Zu felt immense fear.

He was afraid of this, and afraid of that.

Fear Gu made him scared of the wind, every time the wind blew, Ren Zu screamed in horror.

Fear Gu made him afraid of sunlight, Ren Zu could only travel at night and often lost his way, during daytime he would enter caves or hide inside thick bushes.

Fear Gu also made Ren Zu afraid of tree leaves, thus Ren Zu ran away from the forests, every tree he saw made him shriek.

Fear Gu made Ren Zu afraid of snakes, in the end, Ren Zu even stopped using the grass ropes that he made himself.

After that, fear Gu made Ren Zu scared of rain.

Whenever it rained, Ren Zu would shrivel up and look at the sky that was raining continuously, feeling extreme fear.

Ren Zu wanted to go to the door of life and death, but after being struck by fear Gu, he could not move much, he could not make any progress.

When fear Gu understood Ren Zu’s motive, it made Ren Zu scared of death.

Ren Zu no longer dared to walk towards the door of life and death.

Because once he entered the door of life and death, he would be walking from life towards death.

Ren Zu was afraid that he would die, he could only stay in place.

Self Gu sighed: “Oh human, actually death is not scary, the real scary thing is the fear in your heart.”

“That is right!” Fear Gu heard this and said proudly: “The only thing worth being afraid of is fear!”

Fairy Bai Qing spoke this story as Feng Jin Huang was silent in her arms.

Fairy Bai Qing looked at her daughter lovingly, she said again: “Huang Er, no matter what, you have to become stronger, and face death head on! Death is not scary, everybody dies, not even a rank nine venerable is spared from it. Your father might be dead or alive. But one day, I will certainly die, and so will you. Never be defeated by the fear in your heart.”

Feng Jin Huang’s body shuddered.

She struggled lightly, freeing herself from her mother’s warm hug.

Tears were still flickering in her eyes, but she showed determination and fortitude.

She looked at Fairy Bai Qing, gritting her teeth: “Mother, I understand! I will go cultivate now, there will be no fear in my heart, no matter how father is right now, I will not be fearful, I will face it directly, and face any possible outcome. I am Feng Jin Huang, how can I make father and mother lose face?”

“Hehehe, you are really a good child.” Fairy Bai Qing concealed the worry in her eyes, her face was filled with a smile.

Actually, she was frantic internally.

Feng Jiu Ge’s disappearance hugely influenced matters.

Spirit Affinity House recruited Feng Jiu Ge, allowing them to be at the lead of the ten ancient sects in this generation. The other nine sects faced some suppression in one way or another.

These were the characteristics of a society where one person could cultivate to have great strength.

The influence of one person was expanded hugely.

Right now, Feng Jiu Ge was not around, Spirit Affinity House’s authority fell drastically, the other nine sects were ready to make trouble, Central Continent had deep undercurrents that could create huge tremors and drastic changes.

It was like this outside of the sect.

But within her own sect, Fairy Bai Qing also was not having an easy time.

Places with people will have competition for benefits.

Where there are sects, there is internal strife.

Feng Jiu Ge’s disappearance made the ones who were had been suppressed to the lowest level able to suddenly raise their heads.

Feng Jiu Ge was too powerful, to the extent that Fairy Bai Qing had almost forgotten that there were many people in the sect who was against them.

These last days, those people had been gathering strength and ostracizing Fairy Bai Qing.

Fairy Bai Qing loved Feng Jiu Ge deeply, she wanted to go to Northern Plains and help him. But she had been controlling herself, holding down this impulse.

She had a daughter to care for, Feng Jiu Ge was so powerful but he still went missing, she could not move carelessly.

If even she was gone, what would Feng Jin Huang do?

“She is just a child!” This was Fairy Bai Qing’s thoughts.

From the viewpoint of every parent, their children were always children.

Northern Plains.

Hei Cheng’s headless corpse was still in the mud.

His soul was wailing, but he could not escape from Hei Lou Lan’s hands.

Hei Lou Lan killed Hei Cheng and stomped on her father’s head, but it was not enough. Now, Hei Cheng’s soul had also been captured, he was surely going to be tortured and interrogated by Hei Lou Lan.

Meanwhile, Blazing Heaven Demoness squatted on the ground and used an immortal killer move.

A small hand of flames appeared out of nowhere, grabbing at Hei Cheng’s stomach.

The small fire hand easily fused into Hei Cheng’s corpse, after fiddling around for a while, it flew out while holding onto a pearl.

“This is Hei Cheng’s immortal aperture, I have temporarily retrieved it. Little Lan, take it, it can only last for seven days and seven nights, once the time limit is up, my immortal killer move will stop and the immortal aperture will fuse with the outside world to form a blessed land. It is a pity that the Gu worms in the immortal aperture, be them mortal or immortal, have all been destroyed.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness said as she passed the fire pearl into Hei Lou Lan’s hands.

Hei Lou Lan received it silently.

Fairy Li Shan and Fang Yuan were inwardly shocked by Blazing Heaven Demoness’ method.

Blazing Heaven Demoness laughed: “Don’t look at me with such expressions. Hehehe, this method of taking an immortal aperture is not a skill devised originally by me. I obtained an inheritance of Immortal Kong Jue in Eastern Sea, I learned his method of retrieving apertures, and created this fire path immortal killer move.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness was an extremely rare great grandmaster.

At this attainment level, it was easy to understand capabilities of other paths using their own as a foundation, her methods were very comprehensive in all aspects.

“Alright, now, we will talk about your matter, Fang Yuan.” Fairy Li Shan looked towards Fang Yuan with a coldly smiling expression.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 945: Ceasefire

“Alright, now, we will talk about your matter, Fang Yuan.” Fairy Li Shan looked towards Fang Yuan with a coldly smiling expression.

Fang Yuan’s heart shook.

But Blazing Heaven Demoness said: “No need to rush, I am still waiting for someone.”

“Oh? Who is it?” Fairy Li Shan asked in surprise.

“It is me.” A voice suddenly came from nowhere.

Everyone’s pupils shrunk, they turned around at lightning speed, facing the new arrival.

This person had immense capability, if he did not speak, none of them would have realized that he was so close to them.

But when they saw his appearance, everyone felt that such capability was to be expected.

“Old Ancestor Xue Hu!” Hei Lou Lan growled out.

“Lead, leader...” Fairy Li Shan’s voice was hoarse and surprised.

The person’s elderly face was very energetic, his snow-white beard was very thick, it extended to his toes.

Right now, all of his aura was concealed, not a trace of his might was felt, he looked like an ordinary old farmer.

But everyone was at full alertness.

Because he was the number one demonic path Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, in control of Snowy Mountain blessed land, after the battle of rank eights, some crowned him as the ‘strongest rank eight Gu Immortal’, Old Ancestor Xue Hu!

Facing Old Ancestor Xue Hu, only Blazing Heaven Demoness was calm and seemingly at ease: “Xue Hu, how was your harvest just now?”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu nodded, replying slowly: “Even though Hei tribe has gotten weaker over the years, it is still a super force, it has a deep foundation. This infiltration into Iron Eagle blessed land gave me great gains.”

As it turned out, the four elders of Hei tribe directed the ancient battle formation Green City Rampage to chase after Hei Cheng, causing their base to be relatively unguarded.

In order to obtain more Gu refinement materials, Old Ancestor Xue Hu sneaked into Iron Eagle blessed land and looted it.

When the four elders of Hei tribe returned, he had already left with the profits.

“Snowy Mountain and Zombie Alliance are in a heated battle with constant conflicts. But just now, Blazing Heaven Demoness and Old Ancestor Xue Hu teamed up together to deal with Hei tribe?” Fang Yuan squinted, he couldn’t help but raise his opinion of Blazing Heaven Demoness, seeing her in a different light.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was strong and overbearing, but what was truly fearsome were her wits.

If she did not ask Old Ancestor Xue Hu to take action, the four elders of Hei tribe would not have left, Blazing Heaven Demoness would not have been able to leave so easily.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu, who had the highest battle strength in Northern Plains, was willing to be used by Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Ultimately, the reason for this was that Blazing Heaven Demoness aimed at Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s weakness. He needed lots of immortal material for Gu refinement, even though he knew he was being used, he was willing to do such a thing.

“Alright, this is the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie, and the other immortal zombies. Even though I used several of them, most are still around. I will return them to you.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu waved his hand, dozens of immortal zombie bodies appeared on the ground, one of them was still sleeping, it was the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu looked at the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance physique immortal zombie with a regretful gaze.

He knew that the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance zombie had some Immortal Gu.

But these last days, even though he tried, he could not extract these Immortal Gu.

This Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie had many methods, he used an unknown immortal killer move and fell asleep. If Old Ancestor Xue Hu did something overboard, the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie would start self-detonating, and the Immortal Gu in his immortal aperture also showed signs of self-detonation.

Blazing Heaven Demoness collected and put away these immortal zombies as she said seriously: “Old Ancestor Xue Hu, you truly keep your words, then according to the agreement, Zombie Alliance will stop targeting Snowy Mountain, our battle will cease!”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s eyes shined with light, he looked at Blazing Heaven Demoness as he said: “Blazing Heaven Demoness, it seems that you made great gains in Eastern Sea, your strength has increased tremendously. But the time path injury still plagues you, now that the four elders of Hei tribe are back in Iron Eagle blessed land, after this, they would not move out easily anymore. If you want to obtain Hei Fan’s time path inheritance and settle your injury, it will be difficult. When you attack Iron Eagle blessed land in the future, I can lend a hand.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness laughed heartily, she clapped: “Good! I am also looking forward to working together with you again.”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu nodded, his figure slowly faded, in a few breaths’ time, he vanished into thin air, like fog that dispersed under sunlight.

From start to finish, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had not taken a glance at Hei Cheng’s headless corpse.

Earlier, Blazing Heaven Demoness and Old Ancestor Xue Hu had engaged in fierce combat, but now they were actually talking about future cooperation.

Having the power and capability to do anything they want, that was the power of rank eight great experts.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was known as the strongest Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, his battle strength exceeded Blazing Heaven Demoness, but he actually gave in this time and handed over the immortal zombie captives and bodies.

He disregarded the reputation of the number one expert entirely.

But Fang Yuan felt no surprise.

Reputation was very much a secondary concern in reality, only one thing could move almost everybody in this world.

That was benefit.

Gu Immortals were humans too, they looked at benefits.

In fact, it was very common for Gu Immortals to work together.

Having cultivated to this stage, not at all an easy matter, what was the point of fighting to the death?

If there was no special reason, no Gu Immortals would do that.

All Gu Immortals want to develop themselves properly, because there was a sharp blade hanging above their heads.

This blade would descend once in a while, cutting at their necks.

If they could not endure it, they would die. If they survived it, they would still suffer a huge loss.

This blade naturally was calamities and tribulations.

The higher the Gu Immortal’s cultivation level, the more terrifying the calamities and tribulations get, with greater difficulty in surviving, hope was bleak.

People like Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Blazing Heaven Demoness, these rank eight experts, were extremely cautious, they faced great danger. If they were careless, they would die under the tribulations.

Thus, rank eight Gu Immortals were all very vigilant.

Earlier, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang fought against Old Ancestor Xue Hu, but did they use all of their trump cards and full strength?

No.

Both sides were only probing each other.

In the end, Old Ancestor Xue Hu displayed methods that were superior to what they were willing to use.

That caused Yao Huang and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu to retreat. Because if they continued, the fight would escalate, and they would lose control of the situation, they would be in danger.

The fight between Zombie Alliance and Snowy Mountain blessed land was very heated, but there were few losses.

They were making a huge commotion but there were barely any consequences.

Because be it Old Ancestor Xue Hu or Blazing Heaven Demoness, they knew their limits.

Just now, both sides cooperated, it might seem abrupt, but that was not true.

Be it Blazing Heaven Demoness or Old Ancestor Xue Hu, they achieved their goals.

The former saved the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie and the other immortal zombie bodies, she completed the mission given by Zombie Alliance and successfully defended its reputation.

The latter gave in, but he plundered the base of Hei tribe, his gains were greater than the immortal zombies he lost!

The only party who had losses was the super force Hei tribe.

Hei tribe’s losses were immense, but who cared?

One could say that Hei tribe was the innocent party, suffering due to the conflict between Zombie Alliance and Snowy Mountain.

But whose fault was it that the four elders of Hei tribe were schemed against?

In this world, be it Gu Immortals or mortals, it did not matter who was innocent, the only thing that mattered was who had greater strength and methods.

The strong prey on the weak, this was such a cruel and beautiful rule!

After confirming that Old Ancestor Xue Hu had left, Blazing Heaven Demoness turned around and faced Fang Yuan at long last.

“Now, we need to have a chat, Fang Yuan.”

She smiled lightly, she called him Fang Yuan instead of Xing Xiang Zi.

Subconsciously, the pressure Fang Yuan felt internally intensified.

But Fang Yuan smiled confidently: “What do you have to say, I am listening.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness could not help but frown.

She, Fairy Li Shan, and Hei Lou Lan had planned secretly for a long time to set up this situation, not only did they want Hei Lou Lan to fulfill her vengeance and kill Hei Cheng, they also schemed against Hei tribe and settled the battle between Zombie Alliance and Snowy Mountain. In addition, they also wanted to force Fang Yuan to relent so that they could get their way.

But now it seemed that Fang Yuan felt indifferent towards such force. He was like an eel, slipping out of their control.

Blazing Heaven Demoness did not speak, but Fairy Li Shan said in a heavy tone: “Fang Yuan, I admire you as a person, but please take a look at your situation. We can determine whether you live or die today!”

“So what?” Fang Yuan shrugged, he looked at Fairy Li Shan mockingly: “It’s only death at worst. Do you think that I, the great Fang Yuan, would fear death?”

The air seemed frozen.

The scene became still.

Ever since Blazing Heaven Demoness, Fairy Li Shan, and Hei Lou Lan’s relationship was exposed, Fang Yuan had been full of doubts.

What did they want to do with him?

Since Blazing Heaven Demoness knew the true identity of Xing Xiang Zi, why did she fund Fang Yuan to refine star thought Immortal Gu?

Using her rank eight battle strength, it was not hard for her to kill this bottom tier rank six immortal zombie. Why did she have to create this situation?

Next, Fang Yuan analyzed calmly, with his rich life experience, he could see the true relationship between Blazing Heaven Demoness, Fairy Li Shan, and Hei Lou Lan.

On the surface, these three seemed like a united family, very close to each other.

But in truth?

Hehehe, their relationship was quite peculiar, they were not united!

When Fang Yuan realized this, many questions that he had were answered at once.

Thus, he had some confidence just now to adopt a strong stance, negotiating with Blazing Heaven Demoness fearlessly.

Of course, he had split a portion of his focus on Spring Autumn Cicada at all times.

If this situation turned bad, he could only rely on this unreliable trump card.

But each time he used Spring Autumn Cicada, there was a chance of failure. Fang Yuan would not use it unless he had no other options.

The current situation was not so severe that he needed to use Spring Autumn Cicada.

While remaining silent, Blazing Heaven Demoness’ frown became tighter.

Fang Yuan’s attitude gave her a problem.

She understood that Fang Yuan had already realized her true motive.

That was self strength Immortal Gu!

Blazing Heaven Demoness was someone without limits, back then when she could not obtain the fragment world of the immemorial nine heavens, she directly destroyed it, resulting in nobody gaining anything.

She was afraid of Fang Yuan being just like that and destroying self strength Immortal Gu!

Self strength Immortal Gu was already refined by Fang Yuan, he could destroy it with a single thought.

Immortal Gu were hard to take away, if it were not for that, Blazing Heaven Demoness would not have created this situation, using a great deal of effort.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 946: Past Grudges and Hatred

In the past.

Blazing Heaven Demoness suffered from time path injuries, thus she had placed hope in Hei Fan’s time path inheritance.

Thereupon, Blazing Heaven Demoness began to make arrangements, she took charge of Su tribe, changed her third sister’s name to Su Xian Er and intentionally made her approach Hei Cheng to enter Hei tribe.

Hei Cheng and Su Xian Er were both in love with each other, becoming a Gu Immortal couple, and Su Xian’s Night Elopement thus became a famous story.

Su Xian Er did not forget her task and tried to find out information of Hei Fan’s inheritance, but she gradually exposed her traces in the process. Hei tribe began investigating and got knowledge of Fairy Li Shan, making them think this was Snowy Mountain’s plot.

Su Xian Er, however, was truly in love with Hei Cheng, so she did not leave Hei tribe. Afterwards, Hei Cheng secretly killed Su Xian Er and prolonged his life.

After learning of their younger sister’s sacrifice, Blazing Heaven Demoness and Fairy Li Shan felt incomparable grief.

Fairy Li Shan blamed Blazing Heaven Demoness and believed she was the reason for their sister’s death. Later on, Fairy Li Shan completely fell out with Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Blazing Heaven Demoness felt ashamed and guilty, but she was heavily injured and could not take revenge. She had also taken position as the leader of Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, she could not act independently easily, and could only go far away towards Eastern Sea.

When she passed the regional wall, it was a nearly fatal experience.

In Eastern Sea, she gradually had some fortuitous encounters from the clues she had gathered at Northern Plains. For instance, an inheritance left behind by Old Immortal Kong Jue allowed Blazing Heaven Demoness to have a method of seizing another person’s immortal aperture.

These fortuitous encounters provided great help to Blazing Heaven Demoness and partially alleviated her injuries.

For a long time, Fairy Li Shan did not contact Blazing Heaven Demoness.

But when Fairy Li Shan took in Hei Lou Lan, instructed and helped her cultivate, and saw her growth, Fairy Li Shan gradually began to let go of her hatred.

She hoped Hei Lou Lan could receive better help and support.

Recently, Fairy Li Shan had completely calmed down and began to use information path methods to contact Blazing Heaven Demoness, both sides started to communicate with each other.

Blazing Heaven Demoness thus learned of Xing Xiang Zi’s identity and began to scheme.

Because Fang Yuan just happened to need star thought Immortal Gu; Blazing Heaven Demoness was able to smoothly set an agreement with Fang Yuan.

When she made use of Zombie Alliance’s power to return to Northern Plains, she wanted to resolve her countless years of shame and guilt to Hei Lou Lan.

She wanted to use all her strength to make it up to Hei Lou Lan, she wanted to make up for the mistakes she made in the past!

She viewed things through Hei Lou Lan’s perspective and thought of ways to support her.

What was most important to Hei Lou Lan?

Without doubt, it was self strength Immortal Gu.

First of all, Hei Lou Lan possessed the Great Strength True Martial Physique and cultivated strength path, self strength Immortal Gu was a strength path Immortal Gu and was perfect for Hei Lou Lan.

Second, self strength Immortal Gu was an inheritance given to Hei Lou Lan by Su Xian Er; as far as Hei Lou Lan was concerned, it was not just a rank six Immortal Gu, it was an extremely important keepsake of her mother!

Thus, Blazing Heaven Demoness thought of every way possible to take self strength Immortal Gu back for Hei Lou Lan.

But she encountered a problem.

From the communication with Fairy Li Shan, Blazing Heaven Demoness got an understanding of Fang Yuan.

She was startled and wary of Fang Yuan’s craftiness, and also saw her own image in him.

On one hand, Fang Yuan was very proficient in scheming, on the other hand, Fang Yuan could take life threatening risks and was not afraid of death.

In pleasant words, it was bravery. In ugly words, it was thuggish and unscrupulous behavior. If I can’t get benefits, you also can stop dreaming about them. If you want to fight, then come, it is just death at worst.

This attitude was like that of Blazing Heaven Demoness, destroying a fragment world of the immemorial nine heavens.

As a result, Blazing Heaven Demoness had agreed to help Fang Yuan refine an Immortal Gu and set an agreement with him —

Blazing Heaven Demoness would help fund Fang Yuan with immortal materials, but Fang Yuan would be in debt to her. Whether he succeeded or not in refining the Immortal Gu, he would need to pay her back later. The longer he dragged this on, the more interest Blazing Heaven Demoness would receive. If Fang Yuan successfully refines the Immortal Gu but fails to return her the sum in a hundred years, then Blazing Heaven Demoness would be allowed to take any one Immortal Gu from Fang Yuan as compensation.

“Any one Immortal Gu” was the key.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was targeting the self strength Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan possessed..

Right now, as she saw Fang Yuan’s attitude, Blazing Heaven Demoness raised her eyebrows and spoke frankly: “Right, I want self strength Immortal Gu. Return the Immortal Gu to Little Lan, it was hers after all.”

If she could directly take it, Blazing Heaven Demoness would have already done so and absolutely would not have gone through such trouble.

But even if she was a fire path great grandmaster, she could not forcibly take Immortal Gu.

The Immortal Gu was already refined by Fang Yuan, and could be destroyed instantly with just a thought from him.

Like Old Ancestor Xue Hu who had extremely strong attainment in ice path, but had no way to take the mysterious Immortal Gu inside the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie.

Unless they were a wisdom path Gu Immortal who suppressed Fang Yuan and made sure he could not take action in thinking, or someone who had great accomplishment in theft path.

Theft path was created by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

His signature immortal killer move formless hand was feared by countless Gu Immortals.

Blazing Heaven Demoness, Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan did not have wisdom path methods and theft path was a not a mainstream path, despite it being created by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, besides him, other cultivators of theft path were generally not able to achieve anything significant.

If Blazing Heaven Demoness and the others had theft path methods, they could directly steal the Immortal Gu from Fang Yuan’s aperture, given they had set this up, the possibility of this was very small.

Especially when Fang Yuan had wisdom path attainment, Blazing Heaven Demoness felt even more cautious regarding taking action.

Blazing Heaven Demoness directly demanded self strength Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan remained silent.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ reason was not very justifiable.

Fang Yuan had obtained self strength Immortal Gu fair and square, if he had not saved Hei Lou Lan, she would have already lost her life in the dream realm.

It could be said that Fang Yuan was Hei Lou Lan’s benefactor.

However, Fang Yuan did not want to speak of this.

Such words were useless, why would there be discussion about benevolence with those of fierce character?

Moreover, back then when Fang Yuan helped Hei Lou Lan, he also did not hold any good intentions.

If he talked about this, Blazing Heaven Demoness and the others would instead look down on him.

‘A bigger fist is the best and the strongest reason. If I were stronger, I would not need to fear Blazing Heaven Demoness’ extortion. Unfortunately, I cannot even escape right now. My cultivation is stagnant, my strength is too low!’

Fang Yuan was self-aware.

He knew it was impossible for him to not hand over self strength Immortal Gu.

In the current situation, the enemy was strong while he was weak, like meat on the chopping block. But it was not that he did not have any cards in his hands.

‘Firstly, there is the previous agreement. The agreement states allies cannot harm each other. But Fairy Li Shan is an information path Gu Immortal, she had openly violated the agreement when we invaded Dong Fang tribe’s blessed land. The value of this is rather small.’

‘Secondly, Immortal Gu are not easy to plunder. It is because of this that Blazing Heaven Demoness and the others had to make arrangements to trap me. But the value of this can only be at a middling level, I cannot overestimate its use. Blazing Heaven Demoness has the ability to capture me alive, if she put aside all considerations and decided to do so, wouldn’t I be like that Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie that fell into Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s hands?’

‘Thirdly, there is Purple Mountain True Monarch. Hei Lou Lan and others don’t know this is only a lie. Earlier, I used this lie to deceive Tai Bai Yun Sheng. But who could have thought it would instead become my greatest trump card at this moment.’

Fang Yuan was not wrong.

After Blazing Heaven Demoness knew of Purple Mountain True Monarch, she treated such information with great importance.

She was quite wary of this mysterious Purple Mountain True Monarch.

If Purple Mountain True Monarch was a rank eight Gu Immortal, and she captured his beloved disciple, the trouble stirred up in the future would not be small. Blazing Heaven Demoness had just approached Old Ancestor Xue Hu and sought to trouble him, she naturally did not want herself to fall into the same situation.

Even if Purple Mountain True Monarch was only rank seven, he still had many disciples. Fang Yuan claimed he was only a junior disciple and had senior disciples above him.

Especially when this Purple Mountain True Monarch was extremely resourceful, he could arrange his disciple to enter Immortal Crane Sect.

But did Purple Mountain True Monarch really exist?

Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan were completely in the dark, and Blazing Heaven Demoness, who obtained information from them, also was deceived by this.

Fang Yuan’s silence made Blazing Heaven Demoness slightly impatient as she urged: “Fang Yuan, what requests do you have, say them, we can talk.”

Fang Yuan let out a breath, he had already planned it all inwardly.

But he did not reply to Blazing Heaven Demoness’ question, instead asking: “Those Gu refinement immortal materials you gave me to refine star thought Immortal Gu, did you tamper with them?”

Blazing Heaven Demoness smiled: “Of course.”

She actually admitted it!

Moreover, she did not have even a trace of embarrassment on her face.

Fang Yuan frowned: “Actually, I had suspected this, but every time I refined Gu, I inspected the immortal materials carefully, why was I not able to find anything amiss?”

Blazing Heaven Demoness replied: “That is because your fire path attainment has not reached great grandmaster level. I added a trace of fire path dao marks on each fire path immortal material. The increase is very small, but it accumulates with every immortal material used, and takes substantial effect during the refinement process, ruining the Gu refinement.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness naturally had to do this.

If Fang Yuan succeeded in refining, how could she coerce Fang Yuan?

Fang Yuan did not nag about this issue, he nodded and continued: “I can return self strength Immortal Gu, but I have some conditions.”

Hearing this, Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan’s hopes were raised.

Blazing Heaven Demoness looked at Fang Yuan with slight surprise, and clapped: “Now I can somewhat understand why little sister wanted to suppress you. Speak, what are your requests?”

“First of all, I want to form a new agreement.”

This agreement was the assurance for his safety. Although Fairy Li Shan was an information path Gu Immortal and could have unknown methods to break the agreement, she would need to make preparations before doing so. At least during that period, Fang Yuan could escape safely.

“This is a must.” Blazing Heaven Demoness agreed.

Fang Yuan continued: “Secondly, my debt of the immortal materials you lent to me before will be cleared.”

“As long as you return self strength Immortal Gu, this won’t be a problem.” Blazing Heaven Demoness replied straightforwardly.

“I want to leave Zombie Alliance, and get rid of the alliance agreement with them.”

“Okay.”

“Finally, I want strength path immortal zombie corpses. You need to promise me that you will do your utmost to get me as many strength path immortal zombie corpses as possible.” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 947: Nirvana Fire

Hei Lou Lan had Blazing Heaven Demoness protecting her, Fang Yuan could no longer target her.

If he could not obtain a super grade blessed land, a high grade blessed land was still very good.

To achieve that, Fang Yuan needed a large number of ordinary strength path immortal zombie bodies. And in Northern Plains, who else could obtain more immortal zombie bodies than Blazing Heaven Demoness?

Of course, Fang Yuan gave a valid sounding excuse: “If I give self strength Immortal Gu to you, I will not have a useful strength path Immortal Gu with me. I need to refine a strength path Immortal Gu to replace it. The Immortal Gu recipe that I have needs a large number of strength path immortal zombie bodies.”

This excuse perfectly concealed the life-and-death immortal aperture revival method, Blazing Heaven Demoness could not reject him either.

Blazing Heaven Demoness frowned deeply.

If she agreed, she would have a pay a huge price.

Earlier, Old Ancestor Xue Hu handed over some immortal zombies, a large number of strength path immortal zombies were among them. But if she gave them to Fang Yuan, Blazing Heaven Demoness’ contribution to Zombie Alliance would be greatly diminished.

Immortal zombies were very particular about preserving their corpses after dying.

This was the last bit of pride they had.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu targeted the immortal zombie graveyard, that caused Zombie Alliance to mobilize their forces to deal with this rank eight expert, going into a state of frenzy disregarding the cost. That was because immortal zombie bodies were the bottom line of Zombie Alliance, anyone who targets them will face the vengeance of Zombie Alliance!

Old Ancestor Xue Hu understood this as well.

After the matter was exposed, even though he obtained a large number of immortal zombie bodies, he kept many of them without using them, leaving behind a way to settle the situation.

Blazing Heaven Demoness thought: “I can give the strength path immortal zombie bodies to Fang Yuan. This matter can be blamed on Old Ancestor Xue Hu, nobody will suspect me. But the problem is, Fang Yuan wants to use immortal zombie bodies to refine Immortal Gu!”

Immortal Gu were hard to refine, it was normal to fail.

Blazing Heaven Demoness shook her head, she said to Fang Yuan: “If you keep failing in your refinement, would I have to provide you immortal zombie bodies unceasingly? That is impossible! As the leader of the Zombie Alliance branch, I am stealing from the inside, if I get exposed, the consequences are severe. How about this, you can give me a number, if it is reasonable, I will consider it.”

Fang Yuan thought about it and gave a number.

Blazing Heaven Demoness immediately rejected him, the number was too large, it was too risky for even her to obtain this many strength path immortal zombie bodies.

Next, both sides negotiated and eventually reached a consensus.

Fang Yuan obtained a number of strength path immortal zombies that greatly exceeded the requirements for a high grade blessed land. But on the surface, he pretended to be dissatisfied: “This is only enough for me to do three attempts at Gu refinement...”

Fairy Li Shan snorted coldly: “Fang Yuan, I urge you not to get an inch and ask for a mile.”

Fang Yuan chuckled, he looked at Fairy Li Shan: “Back then, when Hei Lou Lan was trapped in the dream realm, why didn’t you have this attitude?”

These words made Fairy Li Shan slightly awkward.

She was not as shameless as Blazing Heaven Demoness.

“Talking more is pointless, we can form the new agreement now. Once the agreement is created, I will return self strength Immortal Gu to you.” Fang Yuan continued.

“Wait.” Blazing Heaven Demoness waved her hand: “Earlier, you stated your conditions, now, it is my turn.”

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly internally, he knew that Blazing Heaven Demoness was not so easy to deal with.

But Blazing Heaven Demoness’ words made Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan extremely surprised.

“I am willing to fund you to refine star thought Immortal Gu, I will not do anything to the immortal materials this time.”

Fang Yuan heard this and did not feel joy, he squinted as he went into high alert.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s vigilant state, Blazing Heaven Demoness smiled, she said: “Fang Yuan, I know that you have been looking for a revival method to get rid of your immortal zombie state, look at this!”

Saying so, Blazing Heaven Demoness' body started to burn in raging flames.

Orange-yellow flames covered Blazing Heaven Demoness' entire body.

But the strange thing was, it was not hot, it was filled with life force and could give observers a feeling of warmth and hope.

It seemed harmless, but Fang Yuan took a few steps back vigilantly.

Next, his eyes opened wide as he witnessed an unbelievable sight.

In the burning flames, Blazing Heaven Demoness' immortal zombie body started to change.

First, her five meter tall zombie body shrunk rapidly, returning to a normal person's height.

Next, her skin which was rough and dark like tree bark vanished in the flames, white and tender skin appeared on her, like a freshly peeled egg.

Next, her immortal zombie hair, which looked like messy red wheat stalks, turned long and slim, the red color was vibrant and warm.

Finally, Blazing Heaven Demoness' entire figure went through a complete transformation.

From a scary giant zombie, she turned into a beautiful woman wearing a red dress, she had tender skin, sharp features, her gaze was energetic, and her lips were bright red.

Her chest was busty, it could be barely be contained, her legs were slim and long, yet they were also not thin.

Most strikingly, her hair extended to waist length, it was burning red, giving off a dream-like feeling, vibrant and overflowing with colors.

In this wondrous flame, Blazing Heaven Demoness had performed an amazing display in front of Fang Yuan.

She turned from an immortal zombie to a living person!

Her entire aura also became stronger. Like a gently burning flame, becoming larger and giving off loud noises, other than giving people a sense of liveliness, her aura was also more overbearing.

Blazing Heaven Demoness' face became more rosy, but Fairy Li Shan showed worry on her face: "Big sister, be careful of your injury!"

Blazing Heaven Demoness understood this of course, the price she paid for this was not small, but seeing Fang Yuan's shining eyes and intense desire, she felt that it was worth it.

Thus, she extinguished the flame on her body and used Gu worms, turning her body taller and transforming from a beauty into a monster, becoming an immortal zombie again.

Blazing Heaven Demoness said: "I have a time path injury on my body that causes my ageing to accelerate hundreds of times. Without any choice, I had to become an immortal zombie. But you saw earlier that I can revive easily, changing between the immortal zombie and living Gu Immortal states. This is because of the immortal killer move that I used earlier — Nirvana Fire!"

“Nirvana fire?” Fang Yuan felt some hope internally.

Earlier, he did not care about it, because he already had the best revival method there was.

But hearing Blazing Heaven Demoness’ words, Fang Yuan still was greatly excited.

“Using the life-and-death immortal aperture revival method, I will turn into an ordinary Gu Immortal completely. My remaining lifespan will decrease accordingly. I cannot use wisdom Gu after that, since my lifespan would be consumed rapidly under the light of wisdom. Furthermore, each immortal aperture can only use the life-and-death immortal aperture revival method once, it cannot be repeated.”

“If I can obtain this revival method and interchange between the states of immortal zombie and living Gu Immortal, that would be excellent! I would be able to use wisdom Gu more optimally!”

Blazing Heaven Demoness observed his expression, seeing that Fang Yuan was interested, she added chips to her side of the bargain.

She took out a mortal Gu, saying to Fang Yuan: “This is my third request, you have to accept this gift.”

If it were an ordinary mortal Gu, Fang Yuan would not take even a glance at it.

But Fang Yuan could not look away from this mortal Gu that Blazing Heaven Demoness took out.

The reason was simple, this mortal Gu was so valuable even rank nine venerables looked for it painstakingly.

This was a lifespan Gu!

Blazing Heaven Demoness continued: “Fang Yuan, I know that you have little lifespan left, this lifespan Gu can give you sixty years of life, after you change back, you will not be old.”

Fang Yuan sighed to himself deeply.

Blazing Heaven Demoness gave three conditions.

The first was to help Fang Yuan refine star thought Immortal Gu, and she promised that she would not tamper with the materials.

The second was to give Fang Yuan a revival method, most importantly, this revival method allowed Fang Yuan to turn into an immortal zombie freely and use wisdom Gu fully.

The third was a sixty year lifespan Gu, it was a treasure that Fang Yuan had been looking for.

Rather than saying these three requests were Blazing Heaven Demoness’ conditions, they were more like bait that she was laying out in front of Fang Yuan.

Facing such huge temptation, Fang Yuan felt excited, at the same time, his mood was heavy.

He knew that Blazing Heaven Demoness was doing this for a reason.

Thus, he cupped his fists at Blazing Heaven Demoness, saying seriously: “I cannot reject Blazing Heaven Demoness’ conditions. Please continue stating them.”

Fang Yuan could not reject her.

Because he did not have the strength to do so.

“Hahaha.” Blazing Heaven Demoness raised her head and laughed, Fang Yuan understood the situation he was in, she was very pleased and finally stated her true objectives.

Blazing Heaven Demoness had six true conditions.

First, she wanted Fang Yuan to give her all of his eerie fire dragon pythons.

Second, she wanted to enter into the guts Gu business, and become the largest buyer in the guts Gu trades.

Third, and the most important of them, she wanted Tai Bai Yun Sheng to cooperate with her using Man as Before and Landscape as Before, to try and heal the time path injury that she had.

Fourth, she wanted to be able to borrow Fang Yuan’s Fixed Immortal Travel from now on to return to Eastern Sea.

Fifth, she wanted Fang Yuan to make a deduction for her each year for free. The content could be related to finding Immortal Gu, deducing incomplete Immortal Gu recipes, and others.

Sixth, if possible, she wanted to meet Fang Yuan’s master, Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Fang Yuan thought about this thoroughly.

He could agree to the first request, eerie fire dragon pythons were related to fire path, they might be useful to Blazing Heaven Demoness, but Fang Yuan could do without them.

The second request was for Blazing Heaven Demoness to enter into the guts Gu trade and become a larger buyer than Immortal Crane Sect and Spirit Affinity House, Fang Yuan could accept this. With Blazing Heaven Demoness’ funding, perhaps the guts Gu trade would expand even further.

For the third request, if Fang Yuan talked to Tai Bai Yun Sheng he would not reject it. But Man as Before and Landscape as Before could not fall into Blazing Heaven Demoness’ hands.

The fourth request involving Fixed Immortal Travel was similar. Fang Yuan would not lend the Immortal Gu, at most, he would go along with Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Fang Yuan directly agreed to the fifth request.

The sixth request was nothing but Blazing Heaven Demoness trying to probe into Fang Yuan’s background and the force behind him. This was impossible! Purple Mountain True Monarch did not exist, he was made up by Fang Yuan!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 948: Attitude Gu!

Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

The silver light in the sky seemed everlasting and indestructible. There were many halls on the ground, but there was silence, without any person around.

There was an old tower standing tall and proud among the halls.

This tower was covered in blemishes, it had over three million years of history.

It was very famous, the Immortal Gu House that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable created herself — Heaven Overseeing Tower!

There was a huge refinement path Gu formation around Heaven Overseeing Tower.

In the four cores of the Gu formation, there were four rank eight Gu Immortals respectively, three male and one female, one old looking and three young.

At this moment, seeing that the huge Gu formation was gradually coming to a halt, the four Heavenly Court Gu Immortals let out deep breaths, their tense minds calmed down.

Once they relaxed, Lian Jiu Sheng’s body wavered, he could not stand upright, he sat down on the ground directly.

The others were not any better.

Bai Cang Shui’s head was full of sweat, while Bi Chen Tian was pale. Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s aged face had even deeper wrinkles than before.

Any of these four people, if they went outside, would be huge characters in Central Continent, or famous experts even in the five regions.

But at this moment, they were all exhausted, it was as if they were extremely hungry, after having fought strong foes for three hundred days, without any rest or sleep.

After all, how could repairing the rank nine Immortal Gu Fate be so easy?

Thinking about the difficulties when activating the Gu formation, Bai Cang Shui and the others felt immensely glad.

One crucial step in repairing Fate was to draw in heaven’s will.

Heaven’s will was grand and vast, a human’s will was small and insignificant compared to it. The four Gu Immortals endured much hardship to maintain their consciousness amidst the inflow of heaven’s will, under this situation minutes felt like years, they lasted for several hundred days and eventually succeeded.

“Good! Just now was a great success for repairing fate Immortal Gu. Everyone has worked hard.” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord carried his walking stick as he slowly got up, he looked at the Gu formation in the center with much joy, as fate Immortal Gu floated above it.

This fate Immortal Gu was like a black and white spider. The red wound on its body had already shrunken by thirty percent.

“We finally succeeded.” Bi Chen Tian sighed.

“Now that we succeeded, fate Gu can already use fifty percent of its strength. Even if it is outside of Heaven Overseeing Tower, it can start to show some effect!” Lian Jiu Sheng said excitedly.

“Oh? What effect?” Bai Cang Shui asked in puzzlement.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was extremely tired, but he smiled and said: “The effect of fate Immortal Gu is fate itself. You have to know: All living beings in this world have certain paths in life that they follow, they cannot be allowed to change. After Red Lotus Demon Venerable harmed fate Immortal Gu, the world went into chaos! Right now, fate Immortal Gu has already recovered fifty percent of its strength, with its existence, the world is already starting to adjust itself. All of those who derailed from their original path before this, even if they took a huge detour, will start to move towards their original fate, and continue on that path!”

At this moment, in Northern Plains.

Blazing Heaven Demoness listed her true intentions.

After considering them, Fang Yuan replied to Blazing Heaven Demoness.

He did not directly reject the sixth request, he said he that he could not directly make the decision for such a thing. He would try to inform his master, Purple Mountain True Monarch, but whether he would show up or not was the master’s decision.

Blazing Heaven Demoness expressed her understanding.

After both sides reached a consensus, the heavy atmosphere eased slightly.

After patiently negotiating, both sides set a new agreement.

This alliance agreement was hard to break. Fang Yuan used his previous life’s experiences to avoid loopholes in the alliance agreement and increasing the difficulties of breaking it.

Fang Yuan estimated that even if Fairy Li Shan had information path great grandmaster attainment level, she would still need at least two to three years to break the agreement.

Moreover, Fairy Li Shan was not an information path great grandmaster.

After setting the alliance agreement, Fang Yuan’s safety was assured, he followed the agreement and handed over self strength Immortal Gu to Hei Lou Lan.

Even though he lost self strength Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan was satisfied with the results.

In fact, Blazing Heaven Demoness was not overbearing in this negotiation.

Of course, if Fang Yuan refused to hand over self strength Immortal Gu, then that would be another story.

Fang Yuan made great gains this time.

All in all, this was a fair exchange of benefits.

Blazing Heaven Demoness did not try to lay her hands on Fang Yuan’s Hu Immortal blessed land, Star Form blessed land, Dang Hun Mountain, or Fixed Immortal Travel. She did not even mention Fairy Li Shan’s time luck Immortal Gu.

This showed that she was truly sincere in cooperating with Fang Yuan.

Be it his wisdom path attainment, Fixed Immortal Travel or other aspects, Fang Yuan had very great value if used.

After achieving a mutually beneficial result by cooperating, Blazing Heaven Demoness would not strike forcefully.

After all, in her mind, Fang Yuan was backed by Purple Mountain True Monarch.

After Hei Lou Lan received self strength Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan purposely let go of it, and she successfully refined it rapidly.

It had finally returned to her, Hei Lou Lan sighed as she used the Immortal Gu.

At once, her body shook as three strength path phantoms appeared.

These three phantoms were not burly and rough-looking men like before, they were similar to Hei Lou Lan’s own appearance, they were all peerless beauties.

Fairy Li Shan was overjoyed at this: “Little Lan, you have finally unraveled the biggest obstacle in your heart, and found your true self!”

Hei Lou Lan nodded in joy.

When she killed Hei Cheng personally, she felt refreshed, her breathing became more relaxed, and she felt like she had started a new life.

The strength path phantoms in front of her were proof.

Hei Lou Lan smiled and laughed, she turned towards Blazing Heaven Demoness: “Elder aunt, don’t you want Hei Fan’s time path inheritance? I can help you.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness heard Hei Lou Lan calling her ‘elder aunt’ and trembled from excitement.

She knew that Hei Lou Lan actually hated her.

After all, if it were not for her injury, Hei Lou Lan’s mother would not have exposed herself during the course of events when undercover in Hei tribe.

In a way, Blazing Heaven Demoness could be considered the killer of Hei Lou Lan’s mother.

Hei Lou Lan continued: “Next, I will return to Hei tribe by infiltrating it. I will find Hei Fan’s inheritance, and obtain it afterwards.”

“No!” Blazing Heaven Demoness and Fairy Li Shan shouted in disagreement.

Hei Lou Lan’s words made them severely shocked.

Back then, Su Xian Er died because of this. Hei Lou Lan wanted to walk on Su Xian Er’s former path, how could her two aunts allow tragedy to strike again?

“Don’t worry, I have already planned this for a long time.”

Hei Lou Lan expected their reactions, she placed her arms behind her as she walked slowly, analyzing calmly: “Times are different now. The four elders of Hei tribe would not leave their base easily after this battle. With Hei Cheng’s death, Hei tribe’s reputation has sunken, in the following days, many super forces will collaborate and deal with Hei tribe. With Hei tribe’s current strength, they cannot hold onto so many resources anymore. This is a rare opportunity! I will get into Hei tribe and obtain the highest authority, it is time this super force had a new owner!”

Hei Lou Lan had great ambition, even Fang Yuan was shocked at her goals.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu only wanted to steal some resources, he even hid himself during the process, fearful of Hei tribe’s revenge. But Hei Lou Lan actually wanted to take over all of Hei tribe.

“It is too dangerous!” Fairy Li Shan shook her head.

“I will not allow it.” Blazing Heaven Demoness spoke plainly, but she showed off a stance that did not allow rebuking.

Hei Lou Lan looked at her aunts fearlessly, she smiled: “I know that you are concerned about me, but I’m afraid you have the wrong idea. This is my decision, I am not discussing it with you. You can refuse to cooperate with me, but you cannot interfere with my choice.”

Fairy Li Shan and Blazing Heaven Demoness looked at each other speechlessly.

Hei Lou Lan knew that it was hard to accomplish this goal herself, but if she had the help of both her aunts, along with Fang Yuan’s strength, it would be of huge help to her, the danger would be lower, and she would have a higher chance of succeeding.

“Fine, I will give you some assurance.” Hei Lou Lan said, taking out a mask.

This mask was emanating with the aura of an Immortal Gu.

“Attitude Gu?” At once, Fairy Li Shan stared with wide opened eyes.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was fixed onto this mask.

Attitude Gu was a legendary Immortal Gu, it was recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, and also one of the Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan was searching for.

That was because attitude Gu was the core Immortal Gu of familiar face.

Fang Yuan had the modified immortal killer move vaguely familiar face, if he fused attitude Gu into it, his disguise would surely be at a higher level.

Blazing Heaven Demoness had a puzzled look: “This Gu was once in Hei Fan’s hands, Hei Fan doted on his granddaughter, Hei Feng Yue, and gave attitude Gu to her. Hei Feng Yue was a spoiled brat, as a mortal, she brought the Immortal Gu to roam the icy plain. In the end, she was targeted by a mysterious Gu Immortal and vanished. Attitude Gu also disappeared as a result, and never showed up again.”

Hei Lou Lan’s lips curled up, she toyed around with attitude Gu: “That’s right, I obtained this attitude Gu from the icy plain.”

Fairy Li Shan was curious: “Little Lan, when did you go to the icy plain? Wait, unless...”

“That’s right, I purposely went to the northern icy plain for my immortal ascension because I had clues of attitude Gu’s whereabouts. That was the only way I could subdue attitude Gu, by borrowing the heavenly might of the tribulation. Haha, I will not talk about the specific details.” Hei Lou Lan explained.

Fairy Li Shan was surprised.

She assessed Hei Lou Lan again, feeling complex emotions, she was both happy and dejected.

Nobody found out that Hei Lou Lan had obtained attitude Gu, and she did not tell anyone either. Even Fairy Li Shan was kept in the dark.

“This child has grown up after all.” Blazing Heaven Demoness sighed internally.

Hei Lou Lan wore the mask, saying plainly: “From now onwards, I am Fairy Black Moon.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness clapped and smiled: “Excellent! With attitude Gu as well as the genuine Hei tribe bloodline, this matter might very well succeed!”

Fang Yuan was shocked.

“Hei Lou Lan is Fairy Black Moon?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 949: Divine Concealment

Fang Yuan observed Hei Lou Lan closely.

Hei Lou Lan’s appearance had changed greatly after wearing the mask.

Clad in black and gold armored martial attire, with short hair and bright eyes, a heroic and domineering aura radiated around her and gave an oppressive sensation to others.

She unexpectedly looked almost the same as Fairy Black Moon’s appearance, which Fang Yuan had seen in the records from Central Continent back in his previous life.

‘Attitude Gu influences not my eyes, but my mind. Right now, the person I am looking at is still Hei Lou Lan wearing attitude Gu, but my mind is perceiving her as a different person. This is far too huge of a coincidence, it seems Hei Lou Lan is undoubtedly Fairy Black Moon!’

Fang Yuan was convinced of this, understanding the hidden inside details of his previous life.

In his previous life, Hei Lou Lan had become the winner of the Imperial Court contest, according to history, she was a tyrant and was later assassinated.

But in fact, she had not died.

She joined Central Continent’s Spirit Affinity House and became the next generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House. And later, she returned to Northern Plains, leading Central Continent’s Gu Immortals, wrecking Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and destroying the spiritual pillar of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

If that was the case, how was Hei Lou Lan able to get in touch with Spirit Affinity House?

Fang Yuan immediately thought of Mo Yao’s will.

Hei Lou Lan won in the Imperial Court contest, entered Imperial Court blessed land and obtained Mo Yao’s will. And under the influence of Mo Yao’s will, she joined Spirit Affinity House.

As for how big of an influence Mo Yao’s will was, Fang Yuan was not sure.

His intuition told him that this guess should be the truth of history during his previous life.

It was only that in this life, because of Fang Yuan’s interference, the whole situation was thrown into disorder. Mo Yao’s will influenced Fang Yuan and almost caused him to die.

“So when I was in Northern Plains, I had already caused a huge influence to the future of Central Continent. Sure enough, the butterfly effect is beyond imagination. But now, Hei Lou Lan is still in Northern Plains, if so, who will Spirit Affinity House appoint as the next generation fairy? Will it be Feng Jin Huang?”

Fang Yuan let his thoughts wander.

He felt that since Hei Lou Lan was no longer involved, Feng Jin Huang was the most likely candidate to inherit the position of the next generation fairy.

...

“Zhao Lian Yun, you can be the next generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House — as long as you successfully obtain this inheritance!” Standing in front of the Thieving Heaven inheritance’s entrance, a wisdom path Gu Immortal of Spirit Affinity House, Xu Hao, spoke to Zhao Lian Yun.

Zhao Lian Yun gazed at the huge entrance of light with a resolute expression: “I don’t care about being the next generation fairy, I only want to save brother Ma Hong Yun as quickly as possible!”

Illusory Fairy Li Jun Ying stood beside Xu Hao, revealing a slight smile as she heard this.

She softly stroked Zhao Lian Yun’s cheek, revealing a bewitching smile: “Cute little sister, this is a Thieving Heaven inheritance. As long as you can successfully inherit it, you will be very likely to have the power to save your lover.”

Zhao Lian Yun blushed, her eyes, however, were sober and calm.

She was an otherworldly demon, a transmigrator, she was not so easy to deceive.

Zhao Lian Yun persisted in asking: “I am only a mortal, can this inheritance immediately let me ascend and become a Gu Immortal?”

“Ah...” The female Gu Immortal, Li Jun Ying, did not have an answer to this, in fact, she also did not know the specific contents of the inheritance.

She glanced at the male Gu Immortal Xu Hao, before continuing: “Even if you can’t immediately become a Gu Immortal, by obtaining Thieving Heaven’s inheritance, you will become the strongest competitor for the position of the next generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House. Don’t underestimate this position. As long as you succeed, you can borrow the sect’s strength to save your lover. Our Spirit Affinity House is one of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, only super forces like ours can match up to Old Ancestor Xue Hu and save your brother Ma Hong Yun.”

“I understand.” Zhao Lian Yun nodded and did not speak any further, taking a firm step forward into the entrance of light and disappearing within.

“Do you think she can succeed?” Illusory Fairy Li Jun Ying let out a sigh, and asked with a worried expression.

Xu Hao, however, was confident: “We have already confirmed that Zhao Lian Yun is an otherworldly demon, if even she can’t succeed, who can?”

He continued: “I know you are worried the inheritance will have difficult tests, and Zhao Lian Yun might not be able to pass them since she is only a mortal. But you don’t know much about this aspect. After these last years of research, I have already confirmed what the qualification for Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable inheritance tests are – as long as one is an otherworldly demon, they can easily obtain his inheritance, and there are no other dangerous tests. I just don’t know how much Zhao Lian Yun can grow by inheriting this.”

Li Jun Ying felt at ease at her husband’s words: “I wouldn’t be surprised even if Zhao Lian Yun were to immediately advance to a Gu Immortal. After all, this is Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s arrangement.”

“Hehe, compared to ascending to immortal, I want his formless hand more. Back then, if only I had a slightly stronger immortal killer move, I would not have been defeated by Feng Jiu Ge.” Xu Hao’s fists were clenched as he said this, his eyes flickering with a vague light of hatred.

No organization would lack internal strife, Spirit Affinity House naturally was not an exception.

After Feng Jiu Ge disappeared, many Gu Immortals of Spirit Affinity House tacitly agreed to trouble Fairy Bai Qing.

And Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying, this couple were the most important people in the ‘anti-Feng’ faction.

Li Jun Ying consoled her husband: “Heaven’s Envy Manor had sent the news of the deaths of Ao Xue and Ling Mei. And Feng Jiu Ge has been missing for so long, he might already be dead as well. Why would you be bothered by a dead person?”

Xu Hao discontentedly gritted his teeth: “Hmph, in the past, Feng Jiu Ge had such might that almost anything he said in the sect was carried out automatically, suppressing us for so many years. I was dispatched to comprehend the Thieving Heaven inheritance, this was also him removing me from a seat of power. But it was fortunate, I became the person who has the most understanding of Thieving Heaven’s inheritances, and have the highest authority regarding this matter. Otherwise, how could we have openly taken charge of Zhao Lian Yun?”

Li Jun Ying repeatedly nodded: “At present, Feng Jin Huang is the top candidate for the next generation’s fairy, but Zhao Lian Yun’s appearance is a new variable, becoming the competitor with the highest threat to Feng Jin Huang. If we could support her to rise to the status, we would not only be able to suppress that slut Bai Qing, but also can make use of it to regain authority.”

Zhao Lian Yun was just newly arrived, but had already fallen into the power struggle within Spirit Affinity House, becoming a powerful weapon for Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying to fight for authority.

As the saying goes: In this world, people often had no control of the situation.

Xu Hao was just about to say something when his gaze suddenly focused, becoming very surprised: “Huh? She came out so quickly!”

In front of the two immortals, Zhao Lian Yun’s figure gradually appeared from thin air.

Xu Hao hurriedly asked: “The Thieving Heaven inheritance has disappeared, this means she has succeeded! Is it really so simple?”

Even if he had done deep research and was mentally prepared, he could not avoid having an envious feeling right now.

Li Jun Ying had already moved ahead to welcome Zhao Lian Yun.

Zhao Lian Yun was out of the inheritance space, and appeared somewhat clueless and dazed right now.

“How was it, did you succeed? What did you inherit?” Under the heat of the moment, Li Jun Ying grabbed Zhao Lian Yun’s small, tender shoulder and shook it fiercely.

Zhao Lian Yun frowned from the pain: “I am also not too sure, there was a dazzling light after I entered, then a will appeared, he told me to accept the rank nine immortal killer move — Divine Concealment.”

“Divine concealment?!” Hearing this term, Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying’s eyes opened wide as they glanced at each other, both seeing the shock in each other’s eyes.

Zhao Lian Yun, however, was disappointed, asking anxiously: “I did not become a Gu Immortal, and also didn’t experience any changes, can I still save brother Ma Hong Yun?”

Xu Hao reacted at this moment, and started laughing heartily, replying firmly: “Of course! I did not think the true content of this inheritance was this. Being able to inherit divine concealment is a gargantuan fortune.”

“Rank nine immortal killer move divine concealment...” Li Jun Ying also involuntarily let out a gasp, “In the past, when Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable created theft path, he stole the treasures of the world with no one able to forecast or deduce his movements. Why was that the case? It was rumored that it was because of two defensive killer moves Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable possessed, one was ‘divine concealment’, the other was ‘ghostly concealment’.”

Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes opened wide: “Divine concealment, ghostly concealment?”

Li Jun Ying nodded: “Right, divine concealment makes it so that no thoughts, wills or emotions can deduce your state or origins. Do you know what this means? The methods of probing and deducing of almost all wisdom path Gu Immortals in the world come from these three aspects: thought, will and emotion. And with divine concealment, you are immune to the deductions of almost all wisdom path Gu Immortals. Rank nine divine concealment... only a rank nine wisdom path Gu Immortal can have a chance to succeed in making deductions about you.”

Xu Hao continued: “This is actually still not its most amazing aspect! You might not even believe it when I say it, but the most amazing thing is that divine concealment can make Gu Masters immune to heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities!”

Li Jun Ying’s expression looked enchanted, while Zhao Lian Yun still looked uncomprehending.

Xu Hao could not help but laugh, he realized Zhao Lian Yun was only a mortal and not a Gu Immortal, thus she did not understand the significance of this.

He patiently explained: “Heaven’s will is a kind of will. You have divine concealment, since heaven’s will can’t probe you, it can’t send calamities and tribulations to you. You have already escaped the detection of heaven’s will, when you ascend to immortal later, you won’t attract any heavenly tribulation or earthly calamity. After Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable created divine concealment, no calamities and tribulations befell him.”

“But this has its disadvantages as well, calamities and tribulations are not entirely bad, they are a major way to increase the number of dao marks a Gu Immortal has. In the future, although you won’t face calamities and tribulations, and will be incomparably safe, you won’t be able to increase your quantity of dao marks through calamities and tribulations, and your accomplishments would be limited. Unless you have the other methods of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable to support your cultivation. In records of history, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable could even steal dao marks.”

Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes moved round and round in puzzlement, as she probed: “Divine concealment is so powerful, then what about ghostly concealment?”

Xu Hao, who had been talking with confidence, did not have an answer for this, and Li Jun Ying also slowly shook her head.

“Divine concealment, ghostly concealment. The former is known by everyone, but the latter is extremely mysterious. There are many guesses and public opinions vary, but they are all unreliable and there has never been a publicly accepted answer.” Xu Hao replied.

Li Jun Ying spoke faintly: “But since both are equally famous, it also must be extraordinary.”

Zhao Lian Yun blinked, her tone one of astonishment: “Besides inheriting divine concealment, I also obtained a clue. Another Thieving Heaven inheritance is hidden in Luo Po valley, and that inheritance is about ghostly concealment!”

“What? A second Thieving Heaven inheritance!”

“And it is hidden in Luo Po valley?”

Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying was surprised and joyous, they glanced at each other with bright eyes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 950: Unexpected Compensation

Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying were very perceptive.

Zhao Lian Yun’s information was very important.

Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying immediately thought of Feng Jiu Ge rather than the Thieving Heaven inheritance!

Combined with the information from the Central Continent Gu Immortals who returned, they were almost certain: The reason why Feng Jiu Ge disappeared was because he was trapped inside the Thieving Heaven inheritance.

“The Thieving Heaven inheritance must have been used by the enemy to trap Feng Jiu Ge.” Xu Hao was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he said this after deducing.

“Then what should we do now?” Li Jun Ying’s words made them sink into silence.

Zhao Lian Yun looked around left to right and back, she did not speak.

The reason why said she mentioned this was because she wanted to return to Northern Plains, using Spirit Affinity House’s power to save Ma Hong Yun.

But she did not know about the internal conflicts within Spirit Affinity House.

Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying looked at each other, they interacted with their gazes.

Both of their gazes gradually turned cold, they had chemistry and a close rapport built over the years, they quickly came to an agreement.

They decided to suppress this information and temporarily not report it.

They wanted Feng Jiu Ge to die.

If they reported it, Spirit Affinity House would definitely send people to save him, if Feng Jiu Ge was still alive, what would happen once he was saved?

After dragging it out for three days, both immortals reached the time limit and reported this information.

As expected, the higher ups in Spirit Affinity House were alarmed, they organized a group to save him. As for the otherworldly demon Zhao Lian Yun, she became the key person in this rescue mission, she was brought to Northern Plains.

Several days later.

Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, Dark Flow Giant City.

Boom!

A loud sound was heard as intense explosions occurred, the entirety of Giant City trembled.

“What is going on?”

“What is going on? Is someone attacking Dark Flow Giant City?”

In Dark Flow Giant City, people had fallen to the ground, shocked cries were heard.

Dark Flow Giant City was enormous, it had a total of seven layers. The lower five layers were the residences of mortal Gu Masters and were very bustling and clamorous. One layer above was where people with some connection to immortal zombies resided. The highest layer was reserved for immortals only.

At this moment, at the highest layer of Dark Flow Giant City, a thick smoke rose into the sky.

“Cough cough.” Fang Yuan was covered in soot as he came out of the secret room, he was coughing non-stop.

He failed again when refining star thought Immortal Gu.

Ever since they made the new alliance agreement, Fang Yuan did not return to his blessed land, he came to Dark Flow Giant City and used Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s refinement path Gu formation.

He was not a refinement path Gu Immortal, he could not set up a refinement path Gu formation of such a level himself.

Fang Yuan tried to refine star thought Immortal Gu again.

Blazing Heaven Demoness had funded him a huge amount of immortal materials for Gu refinement in accordance with the agreement.

This time, the immortal materials were not tampered with at all.

Fang Yuan had an easy time during the refinement, but during the final few steps, the Gu refinement failed, and an intense explosion occurred.

Not only was the entire refinement path Gu formation blown to bits, the explosion also destroyed the secret room, alerting all of the Gu Immortals in Dark Flow Giant City, even the mortals in the lower layers felt it.

“At the final few steps, the dao marks will undergo a unique change that cannot be controlled. The interaction of dao marks would only stabilize under one condition, that is the successful refinement of star thought Immortal Gu. This step is purely dependent on luck.” Fang Yuan sighed internally.

Man is the spirit of all beings, Gu are the essence of heaven and earth.

All living beings, including humans, could not directly manipulate dao marks. Be it Gu Masters, desolate beasts, desolate plants, even if they had dao marks in them, they could only make use of them through Gu worms.

Thus, when Gu Immortals refine Gu, they could not directly manipulate the dao marks, they could not control intense changes in the dao marks.

To make a rather crude comparison.

Refining a rank six Immortal Gu was like playing golf.

The Gu Immortal’s preparations are all to ensure that the golf ball moves according to the path that they had planned.

But the long path that the ball needs to travel on is filled with over a hundred holes.

Only when the golf ball falls into the correct hole at the end of the path would the Gu refinement succeed.

Gu Immortals could only ensure that the golf ball would move according to their wishes during the first half of the route, by the second half, the ground would be uneven and filled with pits, the Gu Immortals would not be able to control how the ball moved anymore.

Thus, whether the ball could enter the proper hole depended on luck.

“Even though Blazing Heaven Demoness no longer tampered with the immortal materials, her funding is not without cost, I need to pay her back eventually. Refining Immortal Gu is simply too hard, the success rate is too low. Maybe I can seek help from Lang Ya land spirit, he should have a strong refinement path Immortal Gu, or a special refinement method to increase the rate of successfully refining Immortal Gu.”

In history, Long Hair Ancestor was known as the ‘number one refinement path immortal of all times’, the number of Immortal Gu that he had refined in his life shocked countless people.

Even though Long Hair Ancestor had died, his land spirit was alive, and Lang Ya blessed land was still intact.

Fang Yuan’s Gu refinement had failed again, he even suffered injuries.

He decided to seek help from Lang Ya land spirit and try to increase his chances, even if he had to pay a huge price!

“I’d suggest you to first try refining the strength path Immortal Gu.” At this time, Fairy Li Shan came over and gave Fang Yuan a suggestion.

Fairy Li Shan could no longer stay in Snowy Mountain blessed land. Ever since they killed Hei Cheng, Fairy Li Shan had been staying inside Dark Flow Giant City.

Her relationship with Blazing Heaven Demoness was exposed, everyone knew about it.

Earlier, Blazing Heaven Demoness had led a band of immortal zombies to assault the Snowy Mountain blessed land demonic path Gu Immortals, with high rates of success.

In actual fact, it was because Fairy Li Shan was the traitor exposing intelligence to Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Fairy Li Shan was an information path quasi-great grandmaster, even though she had was restricted by the alliance agreement of the forces of Snowy Mountain blessed land, she could skirt around the restrictions and aid Blazing Heaven Demoness while only suffering mild injuries from violating it.

How could Old Ancestor Xue Hu keep such a traitor?

After meeting with Blazing Heaven Demoness, he publicly announced the expulsion of Fairy Li Shan, and declared her to be an enemy of Snowy Mountain blessed land.

Fairy Li Shan had offended the biggest demonic path force in Northern Plains, but she was welcomed by Zombie Alliance. Her relationship with Blazing Heaven Demoness made her one of them. Furthermore, she was the key person in forcing Old Ancestor Xue Hu to give in just now, in Dark Flow Giant City, Fairy Li Shan was very well respected by the immortal zombies.

Fang Yuan heard Fairy Li Shan’s words and frowned: “Please explain.”

Fairy Li Shan sighed: “There is a change in the situation, my sister’s funding for your refinement of star thought Immortal Gu might have to be delayed.”

“Why is that the case?” Fang Yuan could not understand, they had just set the agreement, was Blazing Heaven Demoness going to break the agreement so quickly?

That did not make sense.

Because funding Fang Yuan’s refinement of star thought Immortal Gu was Blazing Heaven Demoness’ idea.

Fairy Li Shan explained the reason and Fang Yuan soon understood why.

The reason was that the cooperation between Blazing Heaven Demoness and Old Ancestor Xue Hu had a huge impact on Northern Plains after Snowy Mountain and Zombie Alliance went into a ceasefire.

The conflict between both forces received much attention, some of the other regions even looked into the matter.

But Blazing Heaven Demoness and Old Ancestor Xue Hu knew their limits, they cooperated and settled this conflict rapidly and peacefully.

The righteous path forces in Northern Plains were excitedly watching this as they wanted to see a conflict between them.

Suddenly, there was a turn of events.

As the conflict ended, Zombie Alliance’s headquarters sent out a mandatory mission in addition to the contribution points.

All the members of Northern Plains Zombie Alliance had to work together, using all their resources to refine a giant Gu formation.

This Gu formation’s sole use was to protect the immortal zombie graveyard.

If a situation like Old Ancestor Xue Hu stealing bodies happened again, the Gu formation would activate and defend the place. If it could not defend the place, the power of the Gu formation would teleport these immortal zombie bodies out of Northern Plains.

“Right now, Zombie Alliance is putting in a huge sum! Not just the Northern Plains Zombie Alliance branch, but the other three branches and even the headquarters are building this giant Immortal Gu formation together. Just here alone, we are using thirteen Immortal Gu, and countless supplementary mortal Gu.”

“Most of the Immortal Gu are sent here from the headquarters, but we also have to refine a number of them. Thus, Dark Flow Giant City is recalling all the immortal zombies back to refine Gu. There will definitely be insufficient storage in Dark Flow Giant City, the immortal zombies will have to use their personal resources.” Fairy Li Shan explained in detail.

Of course, the immortal zombies would be compensated for contributing their personal resources.

The Zombie Alliance headquarters was giving out huge amounts of contribution points, much higher than ordinary times, to compensate the members.

This was among the biggest actions taken by Zombie Alliance in the last thousand years.

An immense amount of contribution points made the immortal zombie members feel enthusiastic about refining Gu. As long as they participated and expended immortal materials, regardless of whether they failed or succeeded, they would be able to obtain a huge sum of contribution points, this was a benefit rarely seen in a thousand years!

Furthermore, after setting up this Gu formation, the Zombie Alliance graveyard would be safe without any future worries.

The immortal zombies in Zombie Alliance were also delighted to see the creation of this giant Immortal Gu formation.

The immortal zombies from Eastern Sea were temporarily unable to return to Eastern Sea, they stayed and refined Immortal Gu, and a huge number of supplementary mortal Gu.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was in the same place, she could no longer fund Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s plan to refine star thought Immortal Gu was obstructed, he could not even continue using the Gu refinement secret room.

He had already rescinded the Zombie Alliance agreement that had been placed on him.

Blazing Heaven Demoness, who was the branch leader, had the authority to do this.

In Dark Flow Giant City, Fang Yuan and Fairy Li Shan were both outsiders. Except that Fairy Li Shan was much more popular and well regarded than Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan frowned as he thought: “In the five hundred years of my previous life, Zombie Alliance had this plan too, and they even succeeded. But the reason was not because Old Ancestor Xue Hu stole immortal zombies from the graveyard. It seems that the course of history will not alter easily, in this life, Zombie Alliance is building this giant Immortal Gu formation again.”

Fang Yuan could not stop them, of course.

Zombie Alliance was a huge force, Blazing Heaven Demoness, who was just the leader of a branch, was already able to suppress him firmly.

If not for Fang Yuan’s immense value which interested Blazing Heaven Demoness, choosing to cooperate with him, Fang Yuan might have been dead already.

But no matter how strong Blazing Heaven Demoness was, Fang Yuan would not let go of the compensation that he was entitled to.

“Blazing Heaven Demoness’ action is going against our alliance agreement, right?” Fang Yuan asked as he looked at Fairy Li Shan.

Fairy Li Shan smiled bitterly.

This was indeed Blazing Heaven Demoness violating the agreement.

According to their alliance agreement, Blazing Heaven Demoness had to give Fang Yuan quite a sum of compensation.

Unless Fang Yuan was willing to forgo the compensation claim, Blazing Heaven Demoness would have to pay him, otherwise the backlash of the agreement would heavily injure her.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was feeling regret towards this as well.

If she had known this, why would she fund Fang Yuan? Wasn’t a different condition better? Even if she wanted to fund him, she could do so in a different way that did not break the agreement.

The plan of Zombie Alliance caught Blazing Heaven Demoness off guard, since Fang Yuan refused to let go, she could only compensate him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 951: Genius of a Generation, Feng Jiu Ge!

Fang Yuan returned to Hu Immortal blessed land.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ compensation was very satisfactory.

Firstly, Blazing Heaven Demoness’ recently funded immortal materials were all waived, Fang Yuan did not need to pay her back. Secondly, Blazing Heaven Demoness lent Fang Yuan three fire path Immortal Gu and gave him a large number of mortal Gu.

These three fire path Immortal Gu along with the countless mortal Gu could create the fire path immortal killer move — Nirvana Fire.

Speaking of which, Blazing Heaven Demoness was quite unlucky.

She had funded Fang Yuan in refining star thought Immortal Gu, and provided him a huge amount of precious immortal materials. In the end, all of it went to waste and Fang Yuan did not need to pay her back.

Even though Blazing Heaven Demoness had tampered with the immortal materials earlier, Fang Yuan had gained a lot of experience from it, he was very familiar with the refinement process of star thought Immortal Gu.

Because of the alliance agreement, Fang Yuan obtained the details of the immortal killer move nirvana fire.

Which Immortal Gu were the cores, how many supplementary mortal Gu were needed, what was the order of the Gu worms, Fang Yuan knew all of these clearly.

But to use this killer move, there was a prerequisite — fire path dao marks needed to be expended from the Gu Immortal’s body!

Blazing Heaven Demoness had cleverly concealed this fact, it was a small trap in the agreement.

She wanted to increase her control over Fang Yuan using this.

Since Fang Yuan did not have any fire path dao marks, if he wanted to revive using nirvana fire, he would need Blazing Heaven Demoness to use nirvana fire for him.

Fang Yuan planned to modify the immortal killer move nirvana fire, using other Immortal Gu as the cores to achieve the same or similar results.

And it would be best of these new core Immortal Gu were Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan possessed.

This modification was very difficult, typical wisdom path Gu Immortals would not have any confidence in this, but Fang Yuan had high hopes for it.

The reason was because wisdom Gu was inside Hu Immortal blessed land.

The power of the rank nine wisdom Gu was simply brilliant, it could not be expressed with words!

It was important for Fang Yuan to do this.

The life-and-death immortal aperture revival method could allow him to revive, but it could only be used once on each immortal aperture. After revival, he would not be able to use wisdom Gu.

If Fang Yuan could modify nirvana fire and freely change between being an immortal zombie and a living person, wisdom Gu would continue to assist him in unimaginable ways.

“Blazing Heaven Demoness is tight on funds now, she needs to spend her own resources to refine Immortal Gu and complete the mandatory mission by Zombie Alliance. Thus, she had to lend out these three fire path Immortal Gu. If not for this situation, even if I requested it, she would not lend them to me so easily. With these three fire path Immortal Gu, my modification and deduction will be much easier!”

Fang Yuan felt very pleased about this.

The Gu formation plan of Zombie Alliance unexpectedly made him a beneficiary.

In the following days, Fang Yuan was bathed in the light of wisdom, he deduced with all his energy, concentrating on modifying the killer move nirvana fire.

Speaking of which, he had already gathered enough strength path immortal zombies and refined enough exert strength Gu, he even had a sixty year lifespan Gu.

He had all three, he could activate the life-and-death immortal aperture revival method now to become a living Gu Immortal and obtain a high grade blessed land.

But after obtaining nirvana fire, Fang Yuan was no longer satisfied with just this.

Even though with Blazing Heaven Demoness’ interference, Fang Yuan was prevented from plotting against Hei Lou Lan and obtaining a super grade blessed land, because of this opportunity, he obtained nirvana fire and if he used it well, he would be able to continue using wisdom Gu.

Summing up his gains and losses, Fang Yuan was uncertain if he had overall made a gain or a loss.

Just as Fang Yuan was modifying the immortal killer move, Zhao Lian Yun had already stepped into Luo Po valley.

She was the key to rescuing Feng Jiu Ge.

There was only one person who came along with her as the rescue team from Spirit Affinity House.

Prince Feng Xian!

His rank eight cultivation could face any challenges.

On the surface, he was a Northern Plains righteous path Gu Immortal, and was an external supreme elder of a super force, Gong tribe. He did not have the Huang Jin bloodline in him, and because he had some grievances with Gong tribe, he had been living outside for many years.

The truth was, he was a disciple of Spirit Affinity House. The Central Continent force had spent a huge effort and price to send him into Northern Plains as their highest level spy, his main task being in regards to Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Normally, Prince Feng Xian could not be used easily. If any traces were exposed, Prince Feng Xian’s secret status, which had been hidden for hundreds of years, would be wasted.

But it was different now because of Feng Jiu Ge. He was the face of Spirit Affinity House, currently, he already could suppress the rest of Central Continent, if he advanced to rank eight, with his talent and ability, in time, he would be an expert even among rank eights. His existence meant more benefits. His life and death would tilt the balance between the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, and even change the situation of the entire Central Continent Gu Immortal world.

Thus, Spirit Affinity House took a risk in using the hidden agent Prince Feng Xian, to try and save him as soon as possible!

Prince Feng Xian and Zhao Lian Yun, a mortal and an immortal, moved forward in Luo Po valley.

“Lord, I would like to ask a question. If I can save Lord Feng Jiu Ge, will I be able to become the next generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House?” While traveling, Zhao Lian Yun asked this.

Prince Feng Xian wore a mask, his figure was blurry, he was shrouded in fog, his true appearance was concealed.

He said softly with a smile: “It is not so easy to become Spirit Affinity House’s next generation fairy. But if you can save Feng Jiu Ge, then it would almost be guaranteed that you succeed. I heard that his daughter Feng Jin Huang is the top competitor for this title. If you become the savior of her father’s life, she would step down from this contest for sure.”

“So that’s it...” Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes shined with the light of hope.

Even though she had the soul of an adult, after she went to Spirit Affinity House, she was very cooperative, she did not conceal anything and acted obediently.

Because she had understood what world she was in.

Without strength, no matter how intelligent you was, you were like a loose strand of grass, once the wind blew, you would be blown away and sent into danger.

She understood that she needed to rely on Spirit Affinity House to save Ma Hong Yun.

But it was unrealistic to get Spirit Affinity House to attack Snowy Mountain.

Zhao Lian Yun had understood the rules of Spirit Affinity House, all the generations of fairies were fully nurtured by the sect. In Spirit Affinity House’s long history, all of these fairies had become Gu Immortals, they had immense strength and had significant authority in the sect.

“To save brother Hong Yun, I need to rely on myself. Brother Hong Yun, you must hang in there!” Zhao Lian Yun prayed for Ma Hong Yun internally.

Prince Feng Xian suddenly stopped moving: “Found it, it is here.”

Using the Immortal Gu from Spirit Affinity House, Prince Feng Xian obtained an immortal killer move that was specialized in finding the Thieving Heaven inheritance.

To use this killer move, they had to move slowly.

Prince Feng Xian brought Zhao Lian Yun and walked for over two hours before they located the Thieving Heaven inheritance in the giant Luo Po valley.

Prince Feng Xian activated his Immortal Gu, and in a few minutes, an entrance of light opened.

Whoosh!

The entrance of light had just opened when an intense wind blew.

Prince Feng Xian was shocked: “How can the winds of assimilation be here?!”

He quickly activated his Immortal Gu, using a killer move and grabbing with his hand.

The winds of assimilation were condensed into a ball, grabbed tightly by Prince Feng Xian in his hand.

But soon, Prince Feng Xian’s hand started trembling as his expression turned pale: “Quickly go in, I can only control it for a moment!”

Zhao Lian Yun swiftly acknowledged his words, even though she could not see his face, she could hear how anxious he was from his voice.

Zhao Lian Yun stepped in and saw a familiar sight.

Like the previous inheritance space, this place was empty. The only thing here were over a dozen tornadoes of the winds of assimilation, moving slowly in the space like tall pillars.

Zhao Lian Yun’s heart was pounding.

Even though she did not know what the winds of assimilation were, from the actions of Prince Feng Xian, she knew that they were incredibly powerful.

“You are finally here, quickly come to me.” A voice was transmitted into her ears.

Zhao Lian Yun was shocked, she took a step back: “Who are you?”

“I am Feng Jiu Ge, hurry, come here now.” The voice was extremely weak, it sounded like a dying old man who was holding onto his last breath.

Zhao Lian Yun hesitated.

She could hear that the voice came from within one of the tornadoes of the winds of assimilation.

Zhao Lian Yun also realized that the tornadoes were all gathering towards the most central one, they were moving slowly, like a group of lions stalking and eyeing up on their food.

“Don’t worry, you are an otherworldly demon, you have received the acceptance of Thieving Heaven’s will, the winds of assimilation are harmless to you.”

Feng Jiu Ge paused before speaking with difficulty: “Didn’t you come to save me? If I stay here, you will not be able to inherit this Thieving Heaven inheritance.”

Zhao Lian Yun licked her dry lips.

She knew that she had to make a decision now.

Time waits for no one.

Zhao Lian Yun carefully got closer to a tornado of the winds of assimilation, the tornado’s power was very concentrated, Zhao Lian Yun could only feel a light breeze when she was beside it.

She stretched out her trembling hand as she placed it into the tornado.

If any Gu Immortal saw this, they would cry out in shock. But Zhao Lian Yun’s ignorance made her less fearful, she did not know the power of the winds of assimilation, and she chose to believe in Feng Jiu Ge.

Like what Feng Jiu Ge had said, the winds of assimilation that even Prince Feng Xian could not deal with were harmless towards Zhao Lian Yun. After Zhao Lian Yun placed her hand into it, the tornado shrunk at an observable rate, in a few breaths’ time, it vanished.

Feng Jiu Ge’s voice was transmitted again: “See, wasn’t I correct? This inheritance space has a power greater than the winds of assimilation, thus it cannot be destroyed. You are an otherworldly demon accepted by this space, with it protecting you, you are in no danger.”

Zhao Lian Yun was overjoyed: “Lord Feng Jiu Ge, I will save you now!”

She rushed into the tornadoes, charging her way in, as the winds of assimilation vanished wherever she went.

Eventually, she reached the center, and the largest wind pillar trapping Feng Jiu Ge dispersed.

Next, she saw that Feng Jiu Ge was sitting cross-legged in the air, three meters from the ground. His face was rosy and his robe was clean, but his eyes were shut tight.

“Lord Feng Jiu Ge...” Zhao Lian Yun called out lightly.

Feng Jiu Ge slowly opened his eyes, his expression was clear as jade.

He did not speak, he opened his right hand and showed it to Zhao Lian Yun.

There were two words written with blood on his palm.

Zhao Lian Yun looked at it in confusion, turning her gaze towards Feng Jiu Ge again.

Feng Jiu Ge smiled lightly at her, next, his entire body scattered with the wind, it disintegrated and vanished on the spot.

Zhao Lian Yun was left staring blankly.

The greatest genius of a generation, Feng Jiu Ge, had passed away!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 952: Fang Yuan’s First Entry into Luo Po Valley

Hu Immortal blessed land.

Because the rate of time was different, half a month had already passed here.

In the underground cave, Fang Yuan was bathed in the light of wisdom as he deduced quietly as usual.

In here, he did not need to use the killer move vaguely familiar face, he was in his original zombie appearance.

He did not move, he sat still like a rock.

But in his mind, countless starlight specks were shining, as thoughts clashed endlessly within.

“Puff...” A long while later, he let out a breath, he opened his eyes and showed an extremely tired expression.

He stood up with difficulty, after undergoing such a long period of intense thinking, his mind was hurting and he felt waves of dizziness.

Even though he was a wisdom path grandmaster, his fire path attainment level was too low, he could only maintain each deduction for seven days and nights.

After seven days and nights, he would need to rest, unable to continue further.

His mind was like a simmering cauldron, it needed time to cool down frequently. If not, his mind would suffer considerable damage.

“After so many days, I have only completed twenty percent of nirvana fire’s modification. And this was with the effect of the light of wisdom. If I did it alone, I would need countless years to reach my current progress.”

Immortal killer move were very hard to create.

The killer move nirvana fire was even more profound. Using fire path to display the mysteries of life and death, if Blazing Heaven Demoness was not a fire path great grandmaster, she might not have successfully created this move.

Fang Yuan left the underground cave and returned to Dang Hun palace to rest.

After sleeping for half a day, his mind was refreshed, but according to his experience, Fang Yuan still needed to rest for an entire night before he could recover fully.

Hu Immortal blessed land did not have day and night, there were no changes in the sky.

But if it did, then there were would still be six hours until night time.

Fang Yuan was unwilling to waste his time, he activated connecting heaven Gu and his consciousness entered treasure yellow heaven. During this period of time, he selectively put some rank eight immortal materials up for sale, to exchange for a large amount of food to feed his Immortal Gu.

Of course, the more precious quasi rank nine immortal materials were kept in his possession.

The rank eight immortal materials that he sold were the lowest quality among his inventory.

Even so, waves of commotion were created in treasure yellow heaven as a result.

The attraction of rank eight immortal materials was huge. This allowed Fang Yuan to easily complete the current goal of feeding his Immortal Gu.

“If not for these rank eight immortal materials, I would be troubled by this for a long time.” Fang Yuan was feeling the burden of feeding Immortal Gu now.

He had simply too many Immortal Gu on him right now.

Very few Gu Immortals had so many Immortal Gu in their possession.

The burden of feeding these Immortal Gu was huge.

Actually, quality was more important than quantity for Immortal Gu. Like Xue Song Zi, he only had one Immortal Gu, but after Shadow Sect gave him a set of immortal killer moves, he fought without any clear weaknesses. In this situation, he was making full use of his Immortal Gu.

“The most common situation is to feed a small number of Immortal Gu and use them as the cores to create many different immortal killer move to deal with different situations.”

Fang Yuan knew this, but he had no choice.

He could not sell these Immortal Gu easily.

Transactions of Immortal Gu were very rare, even if there occurred, they traded Immortal Gu for Immortal Gu.

After settling the final deal in treasure yellow heaven, Fang Yuan’s Immortal Gu feeding session ended for the time being.

As for the refinement of star thought Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan had set it aside.

He still had the rank six Immortal Gu recipe of all-out effort Gu, but he did not plan to refine it. Even though he lost self strength Immortal Gu and his battle strength fell drastically.

The success rate of refining Immortal Gu was too low, in order to refine star thought Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan suffered huge losses.

Right now, he felt sick every time he heard about refining Immortal Gu. He felt some pity and sympathy towards the immortal zombies who were refining Immortal Gu collectively right now.

He did not lack immortal essence stones currently, but his funds were all spent on the building of Star Form blessed land.

During this period, Fang Yuan had been multitasking.

Star Form land spirit had been working laboriously, following the design plans of Fang Yuan in building the new structures. Right now, Star Form blessed land was already forty percent done with the new development.

But with the revival method, Fang Yuan no longer felt such urgency towards Star Form blessed land.

Fang Yuan also did not plan to move Hu Immortal blessed land’s resources into Star Form blessed land.

During this period, Fang Yuan’s time in Hu Immortal blessed land was fulfilling and peaceful.

His main effort was on modifying the killer move nirvana fire.

Everything was prepared now, he only lacked the final critical elements!

Once nirvana fire was completed, Fang Yuan would revive and obtain a high grade blessed land. Next, he will move all of the blessed lands' resources into his own immortal aperture.

This was the safest and fastest way.

Undoubtedly, once this plan succeeds, Fang Yuan's future would be bright.

Fang Yuan waited patiently.

He was not anxious, even though he had been seeking this goal for a long time.

His experiences in the five hundred years of his previous life trained his incredible level of patience.

But just when he was preparing to rest for the night before continuing his killer move modification, Hei Lou Lan requested help from him.

“You will never imagine what I found in Hei Cheng's soul!” Using a stargate, Hei Lou Lan arrived in front of Fang Yuan excitedly.

After Hei Cheng died, his soul was captured by Hei Lou Lan.

These last days, Hei Lou Lan had obtained lots of shocking information from Hei Cheng's soul. What moved her the most was the hundred days battle in Luo Po valley!

“Fang Yuan, you have the ability to move mountains, I need you to retrieve Luo Po valley for me! Don't worry, I will give you enough compensation! We have to move quickly before complications arise!” Hei Lou Lan acted rapidly.

Luo Po valley...

Fang Yuan did not speak, he thought of the open door Gu and close door Gu in his possession.

He had the clue to Luo Po valley long ago, but he was bothered with other matters and did not head there.

Now, after receiving Hei Lou Lan's information, he was internally glad about his vigilance and careful decision.

Luo Po valley was under the control of Shadow Sect long ago, it was their base. If Fang Yuan headed there abruptly, without enough strength, he would be easily captured by the other party. Even if he struggled while risking his life, his enemies would be too powerful, there would be little hope of escaping.

“But now is a chance!” Hei Lou Lan's eyes shined brightly.

Fang Yuan nodded, agreeing: “Shadow Sect failed and Luo Po valley is controlled by the Central Continent Gu Immortals now. But they are from another region after all, they cannot stay for long. We just need to leak some information to force them to escape.”

Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan did not know that the Central Continent Gu Immortals had already left Northern Plains, returning to Central Continent.

Fang Yuan had always been weak in collecting information. In terms of Northern Plains, he relied on Fairy Li Shan. In terms of Central Continent, Immortal Crane Sect would never reveal such secrets to him.

“This group of people should be trying to investigate the culprit behind the fall of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, they are after us. But for some reason, their investigation led to Shadow Sect.” Hei Lou Lan chuckled.

Fang Yuan pondered: “Compared to this, I am more concerned about the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie. He is a member of Shadow Sect, why was he saved by Zombie Alliance?”

When the mysterious Gu Immortal revealed his identity as a ten extreme immortal zombie, Hei Cheng was there as well, thus this precious information was leaked.

“Sigh, there are many secretive Gu Immortals and Gu Master forces. Zombie Alliance has a loose structure, many of the members have their own forces, this is nothing strange, right?” Hei Lou Lan said nonchalantly.

“Shadow Sect is not to be underestimated!” Fang Yuan had a heavy expression: “Shadow Sect members are not afraid of sacrifice, the unity of this mysterious force is simply too high.”

This was not the first time Fang Yuan had heard of Shadow Sect.

Back in Southern Border, he had heard about it from Chou Jiu.

Fang Yuan even knew that the door of life and death was inside Shadow Sect’s blessed land. But he did not make any plans regarding it.

The reason was that his strength was too low, and there was no good opportunity.

It was very difficult to attack a blessed land and not attract attention. Shadow Sect was mysterious and stretched across Southern Border and Northern Plains, they were not to be trifled with.

“Alright, enough of that. Luo Po valley is right in front of us, I am inviting you and my aunts to explore it. We will split the gains according to our alliance agreement.” Hei Lou Lan said anxiously.

Fang Yuan understood why she was in a rush.

This was truly an incredibly rare opportunity.

Fang Yuan was excited too.

He still had open door Gu and close door Gu in his possession, he wanted to know if these two Gu worms could grant him any different treatment in Luo Po valley.

But before going, some things had to be said.

“You want to take Luo Po valley completely, I do not agree with that.” Fang Yuan said firmly.

Hei Lou Lan stared with furious eyes, her gaze shined with a ruthless light: “What do you mean? I found the information on Luo Po valley!”

Fang Yuan laughed, he said the location of Luo Po valley.

Hei Lou Lan was shocked, she was staring at Fang Yuan with much suspicion.

She had withheld some information earlier, she did not tell Fang Yuan this piece of important information!

Fang Yuan took out open door Gu and close door Gu. Like how Hei Lou Lan exposed attitude Gu to them, since these Gu worms were going to be used anyway and could not be concealed, he openly explained it.

Hei Lou Lan snorted, looking at Fang Yuan disdainfully: “Without my information, would you dare to go? By the time you are willing to go, the chance would have been lost.”

Fang Yuan smiled: “Don’t be so agitated, I am just saying your information is not as important as you think.”

But Hei Lou Lan acted very agitated.

Next, they went into an intense verbal fight.

Both sides were breathing roughly with exertion written on their faces, their demeanor as Gu Immortals was disregarded, but they came to an agreement.

The ownership of Luo Po valley was divided up.

Blazing Heaven Demoness would take fifty percent, Fairy Li Shan would take twenty, while Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan would take ten percent each.

Hei Lou Lan was very crafty, she used her two aunts to force Fang Yuan to give in.

Ten percent of the ownership might be little, but it achieved Fang Yuan’s goal.

He just needed the rights to use it.

Fang Yuan had never thought of taking Luo Po valley for himself. After all, Hei Lou Lan had Blazing Heaven Demoness backing her.

However, Blazing Heaven Demoness was busy refining Gu, and as a rank eight, her every action would garner great attention. She transmitted to them: Since Fang Yuan had Fixed Immortal Travel anyway, if they were in any danger, she would be able to save them.

In the end, only Fang Yuan, Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan went.

“Oh no, some people have entered Luo Po valley!” Hui Feng Zi, who was hidden outside guarding the entrance, saw Fang Yuan and the others and quickly reported it.

Soon, Prince Feng Xian was informed of it!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 953: Late By One Step

After Hui Feng Zi surrendered in battle, he was subdued by Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects. The Central Continent Gu Immortals returned while leaving him behind to keep watch over Luo Po valley.

He had just sided with Central Continent and had originally been unwilling, and was only a temporary hired hand, so naturally he did not have the qualifications to know of Prince Feng Xian’s true identity.

He only knew an immortal and a mortal had entered Luo Po valley, while he was keeping watch for them.

He was at the mercy of others and had no choice but to slog for Central Continent; the moment he saw Hei Lou Lan and the rest of the group, he quickly used information path methods to inform Prince Feng Xian who was inside Luo Po valley.

Prince Feng Xian quickly obtained the information. At this moment, his hand was still slightly shaking.

Clearing up the winds of assimilation was truly not easy.

Just from this, Prince Feng Xian could not help but admire Feng Jiu Ge. The latter was actually able to last for so long under the winds of assimilation. He truly did not know how Feng Jiu Ge was able to do this.

Unfortunately, Feng Jiu Ge was already dead!

The process of inheriting the Thieving Heaven true inheritance was extremely fast.

Only the identity needed to be checked and if one was indeed an otherworldly demon, the Thieving Heaven inheritance would go to them.

After Feng Jiu Ge died, the inheritance space only had Zhao Lian Yun remaining. So, she quickly obtained this inheritance — Ghostly Concealment.

Right at this moment, she returned to Prince Feng Xian’s side and reported the news of Feng Jiu Ge’s death.

“Sigh, we were late.” Prince Feng Xian sighed inwardly.

He then grabbed Zhao Lian Yun’s shoulder and flew away.

An immortal and a mortal were soon away of the scene.

At present, Fairy Li Shan and Blazing Heaven Demoness’ relation was already known by everyone.

Prince Feng Xian did not want to get in a fight.

The social circle of rank eight Gu Immortals was very small.

In the whole of Northern Plains, the number of rank eight Gu Immortals on the surface was only five.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, Yao Huang, Prince Feng Xian and Five Elements Grandmaster.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was a rank eight immortal zombie who was barely able to join in this circle.

One could say all six of them were very familiar with each other, and had fought and sparred with each other many times. To exaggerate it, if someone farted, they would know who it was, and they would recognize someone even if they turned into ashes.

Were Prince Feng Xian to attack Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan, Blazing Heaven Demoness would definitely come out.

In Prince Feng Xian’s opinion, Blazing Heaven Demoness might already be secretly lurking in the surroundings.

Prince Feng Xian’s identity was very special, he could not rashly make a move. If he made a move and Blazing Heaven Demoness recognized his identity, that would truly mess up the situation.

Why would Prince Feng Xian appear in Luo Po valley?

Gu Immortals were not idiots, they would easily guess Prince Feng Xian had a secret link with Shadow Sect or perhaps Central Continent forces.

One should not forget the existence of wisdom path Gu Immortals in this world!

Prince Feng Xian was looking at the overall situation and in caution, he took the initiative to retreat, avoiding leaving behind any clues or evidence that could be deduced by wisdom path Gu Immortals.

Hei Lou Lan and the others still did not know they had already forced a rank eight great expert to ‘retreat’.

They broke the concealment seal outside and entered inside Luo Po valley, inspecting their surroundings.

Luo Po valley was a scene of ruins, this valley of legend had experienced the hundred days battle and was already half-ruined. Moreover, the remains of the valley was already beyond recognition, as almost everywhere were Gu formations arranged by Gu Immortals.

Some of these Gu formations were the works of Shadow Sect while some were arranged by Central Continent’s Hong Chi Ming.

These Gu formations had no doubt an extremely bad influence to Luo Po valley’s environment. It was to the extent that the bewilderment fog which blew all year round in Luo Po valley, and Luo Po wind, were nowhere to be seen.

The group of three began to roughly search Luo Po valley.

Fang Yuan found some remains of white lotus giant silkworm Gu.

He sighed, feeling some regret.

He had learned from Hei Lou Lan that there had been large numbers of white lotus giant silkworm Gu in Luo Po valley, but the hundred days battle caused the death of most of them, and when the Central Continent Gu Immortals swept through the battlefield later, they did not leave behind any living ones.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan had already obtained enough white lotus giant silkworm Gu in treasure yellow heaven, and fed cleanse soul Immortal Gu.

This proved that the accumulation of those old senior Gu Immortals could not be looked down upon. Naturally, the prior condition was you needed to have something enticing enough to make them act and carry out the transaction.

Under Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan’s attentive gazes, Fang Yuan used open door Gu and close door Gu.

No response!

Open door Gu and close door Gu were the inheritances of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, but this place was already occupied by Shadow Sect and there were Gu formations everywhere, turning Luo Po valley into a stronghold or a fortress.

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh, he realized the Thieving Heaven inheritance was already taken by someone else. Most probably it was Shadow Sect.

But his guess was wrong.

The true beneficiary of the Thieving Heaven true inheritance was Zhao Lian Yun and Central Continent’s forces.

What’s more, she had inherited it just a short while ago.

Prince Feng Xian was late in saving Feng Jiu Ge, and Fang Yuan was also late by a step to arrive at Luo Po valley.

“Even if Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had left behind an inheritance, so many years have gone by, it is normal for it to be taken by others. The true treasure is still Luo Po valley!” Hei Lou Lan patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder and said with a smile.

Fang Yuan knew she was urging him to hurry up and get to work.

Fang Yuan nodded, and activated Immortal Gu to slowly lift the whole of Luo Po valley.

Fairy Li Shan closely cooperated from another side, countless Gu worms flying all around.

“They are actually going to take Luo Po valley!” Hui Feng Zi had been spying from outside and was shocked at this sight.

Prince Feng Xian was also surprised.

He had not expected Hei Lou Lan’s side actually had such an unorthodox method!

This truly caught Prince Feng Xian unprepared. He hesitated, but finally decided to restrain himself and do nothing.

After spending an hour, Fang Yuan succeeded in storing Luo Po valley in his immortal aperture.

“There are still blessed lands here, but just to be safe, we better leave now.” Ever since Hei Lou Lan failed in passing the calamity, she had become more self-controlled and had lost almost all her rashness.

Although Luo Po valley was extremely ruined, but with Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s Landscape as Before, it could definitely be restored.

Compared to the blessed lands, Luo Po valley’s value was extremely difficult to replace.

Many Gu Immortals had fallen here in the hundred days battle. After they died, their immortal apertures should have become blessed lands hidden in space within this place.

Fang Yuan could take away Luo Po valley, but he could not bring these blessed lands.

However, now was not a good time to search for them.

After taking Luo Po valley, Fang Yuan and the group quickly made their retreat.

“They left really quickly, they know their situation.” Far away, Prince Feng Xian quietly looked at the receding figures of the three people, his gaze dark and cold.

Although he could not make a move, he had the two female Gu Immortals, Swordmaster You Lan and Le Yao, under him, and he also had other secret forces.

Prince Feng Xian had hidden in Northern Plains for hundreds of years, naturally, he would have accumulated quite a bit of strength.

He had still been wanting to find trouble for Fang Yuan and the others, but they left too quickly, so he was unable to chase them.

Prince Feng Xian glanced at the battlefield of the hundred days battle, Luo Po valley was already gone, this place had now become an empty desolate land.

Although the auras of Immortal Gu were removed as much as possible, an expert could still sense some clues.

So many Gu Immortals had died here, these blessed lands themselves were rich resources.

Prince Feng Xian naturally would not give them up.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals behind him also would not give them up and would definitely move to retrieve these blessed lands.

As for the Immortal Gu, he did not have to even think about it, they were certainly already destroyed.

Retrieving blessed lands, especially ones that fell in foreign regions, was a difficult and troublesome matter.

“I hope this troublesome matter doesn’t fall upon me, it is better if those other nine ancient sects take up the trouble. Feng Jiu Ge died from the winds of assimilation, he left behind nothing except two words in blood. I should first send back Zhao Lian Yun and this important information to the sect!”

Prince Feng Xian did not remain any longer and immediately left with Zhao Lian Yun.

As for Hui Feng Zi, he was still left behind to watch over the blessed lands.

“This is Xiao Hun blessed land.” Hei Lou Lan brought Fang Yuan and Fairy Li Shan to the blessed land left by Hei Cheng.

This blessed land was clearly dominated by dark path and soul path dao marks, the whole of the blessed land was dim and gloomy, giving an oppressive feeling.

In the central area of the blessed land was a large and dense forest.

The trees were in all kinds of postures resembling female bodies. This was a special resource Hei Cheng had raised in his immortal aperture.

This kind of tree was not found in the nature, Hei Cheng could be considered its creator.

Thus these female-shaped trees were also one of a kind.

Hei Lou Lan had already thought of the place for Luo Po valley, calling out the land spirit.

Xiao Hun blessed land’s land spirit looked rather peculiar, it was a jade-green vine. The vine was like a cloth, attaching itself onto that familial emotion left behind by Su Xian Er to Hei Lou Lan.

Fairy Li Shan introduced to Fang Yuan with a sigh: “Xiao Hun land spirit’s ownership condition was to stay together forever with Su Xian Er. So after Little Lan took out sister’s familial emotion, she easily became the master of this blessed land.”

Fang Yuan was also slightly surprised.

Who could have thought that Hei Cheng’s final obsession before his death was actually Su Xian Er.

It could be seen he truly loved Su Xian Er and even during the moments of his death, what he thought of was still her.

Humans were truly complicated creatures.

Turbulent events occurred over time, most people did not understand themselves fully even until their deaths.

“Little Lan, you have returned.” Su Xian Er’s familial emotion looked at Hei Lou Lan with love.

“Mother.” Su Xian Er softly called out, then ordered the land spirit.

The land spirit brought the three to another part of the blessed land in an instant.

The land spirit’s movement ability signified this blessed land had a lot of space path dao marks. Fang Yuan’s Star Form blessed land had few space path dao marks, so Star Form land spirit did not have the ability to teleport.

Boom, Fang Yuan placed down Luo Po valley.

Fairy Li Shan could not help but smile at the completion of this task: “Fang Yuan, you have Dang Hun Mountain, I have Miniscule Mountain, and Little Lan has Luo Po valley. Haha, this is interesting, we actually have possession of three secluded domains of heaven and earth!”

Gazing at the Luo Po valley below him, Fang Yuan also could not help but reveal some look of expectation.

Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po valley were proclaimed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable as the two treasures of soul path cultivation. Fang Yuan was already gaining endless profits from Dang Hun Mountain. He wondered how this Luo Po valley would make him grow.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 954: Blue

Central Continent, Spirit Affinity House, discussion hall.

There were fifteen Gu Immortals in the sect, more than half of them had come in person.

This was a rare sight.

There were meetings held in the sect quite often, Gu Immortals only needed to participate with their will or emotion.

But now, there were eight Gu Immortals who came in person, including the only two rank eight Gu Immortals in Spirit Affinity House.

The reason for this situation was Feng Jiu Ge’s disappearance.

Spirit Affinity House’s Gu Immortals felt uneasy and uncertain towards the future.

“This time, we gathered everyone here to declare important information.” Spirit Affinity House’s first supreme elder sat at the main seat as she looked around, speaking solemnly.

Spirit Affinity House was very different from the other nine sects in one aspect.

They had a high proportion of female immortals.

Spirit Affinity House had ten female Gu Immortals, but only five male Gu Immortals.

Spirit Affinity House’s first supreme elder and second supreme elder were both female rank eight immortals.

At this moment, everyone’s attentions were focused on first supreme elder.

First supreme elder was expressionless, but second supreme elder beside her had a grim expression.

The Gu Immortals observed their reactions and had a very bad feeling.

As expected, first supreme elder’s following words were like a huge rock crashing into their hearts.

“It has been confirmed, Feng Jiu Ge has died in Northern Plains. He died inside the winds of assimilation, he did not leave behind anything but two words written in blood.”

All of the immortals’ hearts sank.

Fairy Bai Qing, who attended the meeting personally, felt her head spinning as her expression paled.

Even though they were mentally prepared, when they heard the news, everything still found it unbelievable.

Feng Jiu Ge, who was so strong, actually died in Northern Plains. In contrast, the Gu Immortals who were weaker than him were alive and returned to their sects.

Honestly speaking, when Feng Jiu Ge went to Northern Plains, nobody expected this ending.

Since long ago, Feng Jiu Ge’s strength was ingrained into everyone’s minds. He was the face of Spirit Affinity House, he had even become a symbol.

Now that he was dead, the immortals felt dejected and empty inside.

Even those who were against him, Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying, had the same feelings.

First supreme elder continued: “Look at the information path Gu worms in front of you, the details are recorded inside, take a look.”

The Gu Immortals looked into the Gu worms.

“Sigh, Lord Feng Jiu Ge died in the winds of assimilation, it was not an unworthy death.” Long after, a Gu Immortal broke the silence in the hall.

Fairy Bai Qing’s eyes were shut, her body was trembling slightly, the intense pain and grief engulfed her like a tsunami.

She loved Feng Jiu Ge so deeply, and Feng Jiu Ge loved her just as much.

Her mind was filled with the scene before he left. To think that it was the last time she would see him!

People were often played by destiny.

Right now, she was alive while he was dead, she was in Central Continent while he perished in Northern Plains!

Fairy Bai Qing did not dare to open her eyes, she was afraid that her tears would flow out uncontrollably if she did.

She tried to think of her daughter and said to herself internally: “Bai Qing, oh Bai Qing, you must stay strong. At this time, you cannot let others see your weakness!”

She took a few deep breaths, slowly opening her eyes. Her eyes were watery and had redness in them.

At this moment, the immortals in the hall were discussing Feng Jiu Ge’s final action.

“Before Feng Jiu Ge died, he wrote ‘Bo Qing’ on his palm, what was he trying to say?”

“In my opinion, this lead is very important. Feng Jiu Ge must have understood something while under the immense pressure of death. It is a pity that he was already beyond saving when he met Zhao Lian Yun, he did not have the strength to speak anymore, he only left this clue for us.”

“Feng Jiu Ge was investigating the truth behind the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, what does that have to do with Bo Qing?”

“Feng Jiu Ge and Bo Qing are very similar people. Of course, Bo Qing was much stronger than him, he was at the peak of Central Continent, even Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had to bow to him. At that time, Spirit Affinity House was at its most glorious period! Back then, many people thought highly of him, that he would become a sword path Immortal Venerable. It was a pity that he failed in the end.”

“We all know about Bo Qing’s information. What I want to know is, why did Feng Jiu Ge write his name before dying? What was he trying to tell us?”

The hall became silent, a Gu Immortal opened their mouth: “Did everyone forget? In the information returned, Feng Jiu Ge had fought against Qin Bai Sheng who used five finger fist heart sword. This killer move was created by Bo Qing, it was his signature killer move.”

“Feng Jiu Ge was trying to say that the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was related to Bo Qing?”

“According to my deduction, he should have thought that since the other party had five finger fist heart sword, they must be related to Bo Qing in some way. Bo Qing was a Gu Immortal of Spirit Affinity House, we will have an advantage in investigating it, this is an important lead.”

“That is indeed the case, back then, Bo Qing died under the tribulation, not even his ashes were left. How can his killer move be used by a Northern Plains Gu Immortal?”

The Gu Immortal talked about it for a while, they had all sorts of ideas, but none were reliable.

First supreme elder raised her hand, her action made the hall turn quiet.

“No matter what, we have to investigate Bo Qing’s matter. I will pass this mission to you, Bai Qing.”

Hearing first supreme elder call her name, Fairy Bai Qing turned around and looked at first supreme elder, agreeing.

These was her husband’s final words before dying!

Fairy Bai Qing would exert all her efforts to investigate this lead, and find the truth.

“Only we will know about Feng Jiu Ge’s death, conceal it as much as possible. Whoever leaks this information will be come under trial as a traitor of the sect!” First supreme elder called out coldly: “Next, we will talk about the forces that are under our sect’s control in Central Continent.”

Feng Jiu Ge’s death created many problems for Spirit Affinity House.

Even though the sect had two rank eight Gu Immortals, unless they were in a perilous situation, these two Gu Immortals would not move easily.

There were many reasons.

Firstly, rank eight cultivation level was like treading on thin ice, the Gu Immortals would be very careful, and spend all their efforts on the tribulations. If they were careless, and lost their battle strength from fighting, they would die under the terrifying might of the tribulations.

Secondly, the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent had a sole origin, that was Heavenly Court. With Heavenly Court around, the conflicts of the ten great ancient sects would never escalate, they did not require rank eight Gu Immortals to intervene.

Thus, in the world of Central Continent’s Gu Immortals, or even in all five regions, the most active ones were rank seven Gu Immortals and rank six Gu Immortals.

And among rank sevens, the invincible Feng Jiu Ge was important beyond words for the sect.

Because of his existence, Spirit Affinity House could expand to such a size, and occupy countless precious resource points.

With Feng Jiu Ge’s demise, Spirit Affinity House was much less of a threat towards the other sects. The resources that they controlled were like pieces of delicious meat that attracted countless greedy gazes.

“Xuanwu mountain range has rich resources, it is a treasury of immortal materials, at least one rank seven Gu Immortal needs to guard it.”

“The mining inside the golden sand cave has reached a critical moment, we have already invested a huge amount of time and resources into it, now is the time we reap our harvest, we should not give it up.”

“Reincarnation Battlefield is most important...”

The Gu Immortals felt headaches, they had too large of a sphere of influence but too few Gu Immortals. Even if they were split their forces up to defend everywhere, they still had insufficient numbers.

At this time, they finally realized that Feng Jiu Ge’s reputation was such a huge deterrence to the outside world.

Fairy Bai Qing was silent.

The Gu Immortals were talking about immortal materials or other resources constantly, nobody talked about Feng Jiu Ge anymore.

It was as if Feng Jiu Ge’s existence ended with the discussion of the two words ‘Bo Qing’.

Fairy Bai Qing felt some sadness towards this, “Husband, oh husband, you made so many contributions to the sect, yet in the end, these people forget about you in an instant.”

In the entire process of the discussion, Fairy Bai Qing’s mind was not focused on it.

The immortals could tell and understood why, even the strict first supreme elder did not criticize her.

Only when the immortals mentioned Zhao Lian Yun did Fairy Bai Qing’s eyes light up, showing deep concern.

If Feng Jiu Ge was still around, Feng Jiu Ge would almost certainly become Spirit Affinity House’s next generation fairy. But now that Feng Jiu Ge was gone, and Zhao Lian Yun appeared out of nowhere, she became Feng Jin Huang’s greatest threat.

Fairy Bai Qing doted on her daughter, of course, thus she was very concerned about Zhao Lian Yun’s matters.

She heard the Gu Immortals discuss:

“Zhao Lian Yun inherited two Thieving Heaven true inheritances, did anything change in her?”

“Otherworldly demons cannot be trusted!”

“Divine concealment, ghostly concealment, these two are top tier defensive immortal killer moves, we are still researching on them... with our current progress, it is profound and unfathomable! These two immortal killer moves have formed two layers of dao marks cloaking Zhao Lian Yun’s soul, I have never seen such a unique usage of dao marks!”

“These two layers of dao marks will always protect Zhao Lian Yun. We tried many methods to deduce her, but there is no effect. We as Gu Immortals are deducing a mortal, but we failed to get anything. If I did not experience it myself, I would not believe it.”

“Did you all notice? Divine concealment and ghostly concealment are top tier defensive killer moves that do not expend immortal essence. They are like fortune rivalling heaven Gu, the power of venerables are truly hard to comprehend.”

“Hiding from the deductions of thoughts, wills, and emotions, this is the defensive effect of divine concealment. Then what about ghostly concealment?”

“That is still unclear, we have tried many methods. Oh, Zhao Lian Yun was very cooperative during the entire process. I feel that even though she is an otherworldly demon, she knows how to behave properly, she can be nurtured.”

“This little fellow wants to save her lover. Hehe, but sadly, according to our intelligence, Old Ancestor Xue Hu has already gathered enough immortal materials, he will start the refinement soon.”

Finally, first supreme elder concluded this meeting: “Continue researching, and also increase Zhao Lian Yun’s attachment to our sect. I am looking forward to her future!”

At the same time, in a nameless forest.

Seven Star Child immortal zombie looked at a mirror to communicate with someone.

There was a vague elderly figure in the mirror.

He spoke slowly: “All the preparations are in place. But Heavenly Court has already completed their last process of repairing fate Gu, you have to act in advance now.”

“Understood.” Seven Star Child immortal zombie said solemnly.

“Be careful, Vice Envoy Blue.” The figure in the mirror spoke again.

Seven Star Child did not speak, he stopped activating this information path immortal killer move and the mirror vanished.

Next, he turned around and entered deep into the forest without looking back.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 955: Swords Traverse Central Continent

The scene was quiet and dark.

Under the hazy moonlight, shadows of trees seemed to be dancing.

The occasional breeze, the cries of birds and the growls of beasts felt like the sleep talking of this mountain range.

Lanterns were lit in a cabin in the mountain valley, giving off a dim light.

Feng Jin Huang lay on the bed, weak and pale without a trace of rosiness on her face.

She looked at Fairy Bai Qing who was sitting at the edge of the bed, and apologized: “Mother, I made a mistake, I will not do it again...”

Fairy Bai Qing was grave: “Huang Er, I know what you are thinking about. You are cultivating so desperately that you have already injured yourself five or six times over these last dozens of days. I have warned you when you began cultivating, you need to be act according to what is natural and be in control. But what you are doing is going for more haste, which is instead causing you to progress slowly, you might even collapse and endanger your life as well!”

Feng Jin Huang lowered her eyelids, speaking quietly: “Mother, I am sorry.”

“I have already placed Gu in your body, as punishment, you cannot cultivate for seven days and seven nights and you can only move around this mountain valley. If you are hungry, you can pick up wild fruits, if you are thirsty, you can go drink from the mountain spring. Think properly over these days.” Fairy Bai Qing said in a heavy voice.

“Mother, don’t!” Feng Jin Huang was very anxious.

However, Fairy Bai Qing brushed her sleeves at Feng Jin Huang’s cheek.

Immediately, an intense sleepiness attacked Feng Jin Huang’s mind.

Her eyelids were extremely heavy and she felt so exhausted that she was not able to say anything.

In the blink of an eye, she fell into a deep sleep.

Seeing her daughter in a deep sleep but still frowning slightly, Fairy Bai Qing was sad and worried.

Fairy Bai Qing had not informed Feng Jin Huang of Feng Jiu Ge’s death.

On one hand, Spirit Affinity House wanted to conceal the news for as long as possible to make arrangements more easily. Feng Jin Huang, a mortal, was not qualified to know. After all, prying information from mortals were much easier than prying information from Gu Immortals.

Secondly, Fairy Bai Qing did not know how she could inform her.

Why was Feng Jin Huang cultivating so desperately? She was working hard to advance further, to become stronger so that she could look for her father and save him.

How could Fairy Bai Qing tell the cruel truth to Feng Jin Huang?

She could not bear to.

“Sigh...” As she looked at her daughter’s face, Fairy Bai Qing heaved a long sigh.

Her normally upright posture and dignified white robe, in this dim light, looked weak and dull.

She was truly tired.

Only now did she remove the disguise and revealed her true emotions.

Fairy Bai Qing softly caressed Feng Jin Huang’s cheek. The love and affection in her gaze could even melt iron.

Feng Jin Huang’s appearance combined the good features of Feng Jiu Ge and Fairy Bai Qing.

In her face, Fairy Bai Qing could vaguely see Feng Jiu Ge’s image.

Feng Jiu Ge was dead, Feng Jin Huang was now her only sustenance to keep on living.

In such a silent gaze, time passed and light was already shining in from outside the cabin.

The light of dawn made Fairy Bai Qing realize the passing of time, she had to set out now.

She stood up slowly, taking slow steps towards the outside, and closed the door carefully.

She looked at the cabin in the valley deeply, murmuring to herself: “Huang Er, wait seven days for mother, you need to take care of yourself during this period and calm your mind.”

Fairy Bai Qing was not worried about Feng Jin Huang’s safety.

After all, this was Spirit Affinity House’s central region.

Even if there were internal fights in the sect, they were limited and a move would not be made against Feng Jin Huang.

Fairy Bai Qing stepped on the clouds and mist, flying towards the north-west direction.

Her destination was the source of Falling Heavenly River.

Why was she going there?

She had received the sect mission to investigate Bo Qing, the clue left behind by Feng Jiu Ge.

Bo Qing had been a Gu Immortal of Spirit Affinity House and the sect had large amounts of records on him which Fairy Bai Qing had looked through.

In her investigation, Fairy Bai Qing discovered Bo Qing’s experiences were actually extremely similar to Feng Jiu Ge’s. What made her even more interested was Bo Qing’s lover, Mo Yao.

Mo Yao had been the fairy of that generation of Spirit Affinity House, and unlike those of other generations, she was an inkman and not a human.

But even so, Bo Qing and Mo Yao had fallen in love with each other at first sight.

“Bo Qing might not have entered Northern Plains, but Mo Yao went to Northern Plains, even entering Imperial Court blessed land. Could Mo Yao be involved in the plan of destroying Eighty-Eight True Yang Building?”

Fairy Bai Qing knew the reason that Mo Yao risked entering Imperial Court blessed land was to help her husband, Bo Qing, pass his tribulation.

Back then, the peak rank eight Bo Qing was about to face tribulation to breakthrough to the rank nine level. Such a huge event had not only attracted the attention of Central Continent, but also the other four regions.

Unfortunately, at the end, Bo Qing died, perishing in the terrifying tribulation. And Mo Yao also perished with him.

In fact, all the Gu Immortals of Central Continent knew of this.

Fairy Bai Qing had also heard of this many times in the past.

But now, as she recalled, she got a different feeling, as if they were in the same boat.

She even envied Mo Yao, even in death, she had died together with her husband. Both had not let each other down, they were a couple who were greatly in love with each other and had died worthy deaths.

Fairy Bai Qing repeatedly investigated and racked her brains, but was not able to make much progress. She discovered some clues in the records of the sect, all pointing towards the same place — the source of the Falling Heavenly River.

As there was no breakthrough in other aspects, Fairy Bai Qing decisively moved towards Falling Heavenly River to search for more clues.

The source of Falling Heavenly River was the place where Bo Qing had perished in the past.

Spirit Affinity House was quite far away from the source of Falling Heavenly River.

If Fairy Bai Qing relied on her own methods, she would take up to a year to reach there.

She naturally would not do so and had already made sufficient preparations before leaving.

She flew rapidly, using Spirit Affinity House’s Gu formations constantly on the way to transport her, in one use, she could travel over a hundred thousand li, saving a large amount of time.

She did not directly move towards the direction of the source of Falling Heavenly River, instead moving towards Myriad Dragon Dock.

In the range of Myriad Dragon Dock’s force, she used their transportation Gu formations to speed up her journey. She had already communicated with Myriad Dragon Dock’s Gu Immortals, and although she paid a high price, she was able to further save a large amount of time.

She moved smoothly towards Falling Heavenly River, after Myriad Dragon Dock’s territory, Fairy Bai Qing stepped into the territory of Combat Immortal Sect.

Just like before, she used their transportation Gu formations to speed up her journey.

A day and a night later, the fatigued Fairy Bai Qing was finally only a thousand li away from the source of Falling Heavenly River.

In front of her was an enormous waterfall that fell from an endless height.

A boundless expanse of water heavily crashed at the riverbed.

The rumbling noise of the waterfall was like the continuous crackling of thunder.

Endless water vapor formed dense fog that shrouded a vast range of the surroundings.

Why was it called Falling Heavenly River?

Falling Heavenly River, a giant river that fell from the heavens.

Compared to this enormous river, Fairy Bai Qing was minute like an ant.

Fairy Bai Qing had already seen Falling Heavenly River when she had traveled with Feng Jiu Ge in the past.

Right now, as she looked at this enormous river again, she could not avoid thinking about Feng Jiu Ge, feeling distressed.

She still remembered what Feng Jiu Ge said to her at that time.

It was about the reason for the formation of Falling Heavenly River.

Feng Jiu Ge had confidently told Fairy Bai Qing that there were two opinions about this.

One was that Falling Heavenly River itself was a form of calamity or tribulation, while the second said that when Bo Qing had resisted his tribulation, his sword light was so sharp that it instantly pierced through white heaven to black heaven.

And Bo Qing had faced his tribulation during daytime.

Thus this sword light had pierced a huge hole in white heaven, continuing on to black heaven, where it formed a small hole in the bottom layer of black heaven.

It just so happened that above these two holes was a majestic heavenly river.

The heavenly river followed the path between these two holes and crashed down to Central Continent, forming an inland sea; at the same time, the river surged and opened a path, forming the first river that traversed through Central Continent’s mainland.

Fairy Bai Qing had asked, which was more reasonable between these two opinions?

Feng Jiu Ge had answered with a smile: “I am also not too sure. But the second opinion can explain the change in the water flow. During daytime, the Falling Heavenly River flows with extremely strong momentum, even rank eight Gu Immortals are unable to resist this momentum. And during night, the flow of Falling Heavenly River slows down to the extent rank seven Gu Immortals can just barely resist it.”

Nature’s might was boundless and peerless. Even Gu Immortals appeared insignificant when compared to it.

Ending her recollection, Fairy Bai Qing’s gaze focused.

She had borrowed many water path Immortal Gu for this trip, to help her enter Falling Heavenly River.

However, it was clearly impossible to do that during the day, Fairy Bai Qing was a rank seven Gu Immortal, her only opportunity was to enter during night and search for clues.

It was still daytime right now, Fairy Bai Qing reduced her speed and slowly neared Falling Heavenly River.

She intended to wait for nightfall before she entered the riverbed.

Time passed, the sun gradually set in the west, red streaks of colors overlapped in the horizon and the radiance of the setting sun shone on Fairy Bai Qing’s face.

Suddenly, she opened her eyes, looking at the distant Falling Heavenly River with astonishment.

Roar!

Water gurgled as a giant beast stretched out its head from under the river, revealing the tips of its horns.

This was an enormous bull head, the horns were curved.

“Immemorial desolate beast myriad eyes clear bull!” Fairy Bai Qing was pale as she recognized this fierce beast’s identity.

Falling Heavenly River was not safe.

Besides the majestic waterfall, there were also large amounts of ancient desolate beasts and immemorial desolate beasts living inside.

The myriad eyes clear bull was an immemorial desolate beast and one of the overlords that lived at the riverbed of Falling Heavenly River.

“Doesn’t it normally stay at the riverbed and patrol its territory? Why has it suddenly come out of the river?” Fairy Bai Qing was puzzled, but she quickly retreated, maintaining some distance with this myriad eyes clear bull.

Immemorial desolate beasts had rank eight battle strength.

Fairy Bai Qing could not defeat this giant bull.

Moreover, her main objective here was not to hunt.

Fairy Bai Qing was cautious while sighing at her bad luck. With the myriad eyes clear bull’s appearance, she had an ominous feeling.

Right as she was about to distance herself further from the myriad eyes clear bull, a sword light suddenly came out from the riverbed.

Like a thunderbolt, it pierced through the myriad eyes clear bull.

This sturdy and tough immemorial desolate beast was instantly cut into two by the sword light.

Endless blood and internal organs splattered out, dying the nearby river blood red.

Whoosh!

Before Fairy Bai Qing was able to react, another sword light flew out, slashing at the river bank.

The next moment, a long gash was slashed open on the ground, like it was a delicate tofu, and large amounts of water flowed towards the space rapidly.

The river water overflowed, all of the surroundings were covered with water.

Fairy Bai Qing was extremely shocked.

What was going on?

What was this situation?

The sword light had such power that its terrifying might had reached an extreme. The immemorial desolate beast had been cut down as easily as a vegetable.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Countless sword lights shot out from below the Falling Heavenly River.

Like fireworks, the sword lights flew everywhere, leaving Falling Heavenly River before rapidly disappearing from Fairy Bai Qing’s sight.

Swords traverse Central Continent!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 956: World Shaking Might

Central Continent, centipede valley.

A terrifying chase was happening in the narrow ravine on the mountain road.

“Quickly run, quickly run!” A miniman laid down on Hong Yi’s head as it shouted anxiously.

“It hurts, it hurts! Don’t pull my hair.” Hong Yi screamed in pain.

The miniman did not pay attention to what he said, it subconsciously grabbed onto Hong Yi’s hair and turned back to look.

“Damn it! It is already here, quickly leave, if you are not fast enough, we will be eaten by it.” The miniman called out frantically.

“I also want to move faster...” Hong Yi gritted his teeth, exerting all his effort to use his movement Gu. Unfortunately, his cultivation level was too low, at only rank two upper stage.

Of course, this cultivation level was already very rare at Hong Yi’s age.

Ever since the Refinement Path Convention, Hong Yi had obtained some lucky opportunities and his cultivation speed far surpassed others.

But in this current moment of danger, rank two upper stage cultivation level was useless against the wild rank five golden horn centipede chasing behind him.

This centipede had a huge body, it was like a large python. It had a sharp horn on its head, when it moved on the ground, its hundreds of legs stomped, its body twisted as it moved rapidly.

“We’re finished! It is already right behind you.” The miniman was pale from shock, it was terror-stricken.

“I’ll risk it!!” Hong Yi could also feel the golden horn centipede getting closer, the hair over his body was standing on end from fear, he had no choice but to use his only killer move.

This killer move was a movement killer move.

But Hong Yi had only obtained it recently, he had not practiced with it for long enough.

When he used it, the success rate and failure rate was fifty percent each.

Killer moves required at least two Gu worms to activate. The more Gu worms there were, the more complicated the steps involved, and the greater difficulty in activating it, but the power of the move also normally increased.

Hong Yi’s new movement killer move was formed by nearly ten mortal Gu.

It was not comparable to a Gu Immortal, but for Gu Masters, this was a relatively huge number of Gu.

Killer moves were not so easy to practice.

When the activation of the killer move fails, the Gu Master or the Gu worms might receive damage.

Thus, normally, Hong Yi was very careful every time he practiced this killer move.

But at this time, his life was in critical danger, he could not care anymore.

His original speed was not enough for him to break free from the golden horn centipede, he was sure to die.

Right now, there was only one way left, he had to risk it!

“Activate, I must succeed!” Hong Yi screamed in his mind.

But wishes were wonderful, reality was cruel.

Activating killer moves required intense concentration, some killer moves needed special environments and could not be disturbed.

Fang Yuan could easily use his killer moves because he had a huge amount of experience in the five hundred years of his previous life, but Hong Yi was a newbie.

At this time, he was in danger, he had to pay attention to the path in front of him as the mountain was full of rocks and pitfalls, he was running rapidly, if he fell, his life would be over.

On the other hand, Hong Yi was chased by the golden horn centipede. The intense commotion behind him was ringing in his ears, he was engulfed in the aura of death, how could Hong Yi be unaffected by it?

Under this situation, those who could remain calm and absolutely focused were experienced experts who had already undergone countless battles and had disregarded the fear of death. Hong Yi could reach this stage eventually, but he was too young now.

“It’s catching up, it’s catching up!” The miniman on top of his head screamed in fear as it looked at the golden horn centipede, shortening the gap between them with a fierce demeanor.

The centipede was heavy and had a huge body, it had hundreds of legs and a huge mouth, saliva splattered everywhere as it bit at Hong Yi.

The miniman screamed tragically, it shut its eyes in fear.

Even though it had wings, they were broken already, it could not fly.

It had succeeded in stealing the rank five Gu material hundred flower dew during this exploration into the cave. But there was a price to pay for this, it had attracted the animosity of the golden horn centipede which was guarding the dew. Thus, the miniman could only escape with Hong Yi, trying to get away using his superior speed.

However, the miniman did not feel any pain.

It opened its eyes, showing disbelief.

For some reason, Hong Yi had escaped from the golden horn centipede’s bite.

But at the next moment, the golden horn centipede chased them again.

The miniman was scared, but it could see clearly now.

The reason was, whenever the golden horn centipede tried to bite Hong Yi, it would subconsciously raise its head first.

This action would cause its head to go dozens of meters above the ground, half of its body would be elevated from the ground as well, before it landed heavily.

When the centipede raised its head, many of its legs would leave the ground, its speed would fall.

But at this time, Hong Yi was still running without lowering his speed.

Thus, Hong Yi could evade the golden horn centipede every time it attacked.

“This fool!” The miniman laughed heartily, it felt an intense joy in escaping from mortal danger.

Man is the spirit of all beings, wild Gu worms had limited intelligence, their movements were decided by instincts.

“I was kind enough to escape with you, but you call me a fool!” Hong Yi was displeased.

“I am not scolding you, I am talking about this golden horn centipede, you fool!” The miniman shouted.

Hong Yi was still nursing displeasure: “You are the fool, I said the centipede was sleeping, you should not have been afraid and simply should have stolen the hundred flower dew and escaped, but you had to scream for no reason!”

The miniman’s cheeks puffed up, guilt flashed across its eyes as it showed an embarrassed expression.

It wanted to rebuke him, but at the next moment, its eyes opened wide in shock.

It turned out, the golden horn centipede behind saw that it could not bite Hong Yi, it changed its attack method, using its golden horn.

Of course, it had not become smarter.

The reason was, during its long life, the golden horn centipede had encountered some large prey that it could not swallow, in that situation, the golden horn centipede would use its horn to slice the prey up into pieces.

Opening its mouth to bite was the golden horn centipede’s instinct, using the golden horn was also an instinct.

The golden horn centipede pounced harshly, lowering its head and stabbing its horn forward, soon approaching... Hong Yi’s butt.

This was unavoidable because of its size.

“Fool, run!” The miniman saw this dangerous situation and shuddered in fear, it could not even grab onto the hair firmly.

“You still are calling me a fool — oh!” Hong Yi shouted, but suddenly, his pitch became higher, like a rooster who was grabbed by the neck. There was shock, unpreparedness, and intense pain in his voice.

The golden horn had already stabbed into Hong Yi’s buttocks.

The miniman was full of despair, it thought that this was it!

But at this moment, Hong Yi’s speed suddenly rose by a huge amount.

He shot out like a cannonball!

The reason was, when he was screaming, the intense pain gave him a moment of inspiration and he successfully used the killer move in an instant.

Hong Yi escaped as a result.

“Bleeding, you are bleeding.” The miniman screamed loudly to Hong Yi.

It turned out that the golden horn centipede had already stabbed Hong Yi’s buttocks, but because Hong Yi burst out in an instant, the two sides had been separated by a distance again.

It was as if a dagger was pulled out of Hong Yi’s buttocks, the wound was unstopped and started bleeding.

“My butt hurts! Ahhhh, its so painful!!” At this moment, Hong Yi’s mind was filled with an intense thought.

He subconsciously grabbed his butt, applying pressure on the wound.

However, naturally because he was feeling pain from his injury, his mind was distracted again.

The killer move that he had activated earlier fell apart, and his speed dropped again.

But the golden horn centipede was still chasing him.

The golden horn stabbed into his other buttcheek.

“Ah!” Hong Yi screamed again.

But the same thing happened again.

The powerful attack, the sudden pain, Hong Yi’s focus reached another peak, he used the killer move again.

He sprinted again.

“You’re bleeding, you’re bleeding!” The miniman screamed.

There was no choice, the two wounds were very deep, because of Hong Yi’s intense movement, it was no wonder that blood spewed out!

Hong Yi grabbed his buttocks as the golden horn centipede chased relentlessly, he was in such a helpless situation.

“Oh no, my primeval essence is running out!” Suddenly, Hong Yi’s expression paled.

Gu Masters had little primeval essence in the first place, it was easily used up. Activating killer moves meant using many Gu worms, the expenditure was great. After running for such a long time, Hong Yi reached his limits.

Death was approaching, Hong Yi was forced into a desperate situation, there was no way to live.

“Are we going to die? Are we going to die? Lord centipede, don’t eat me. I am so small, I have little meat, eat him, eat that fool.” The miniman was muttering senselessly while grabbing Hong Yi’s hair.

At this moment, Hong Yi was feeling empty inside, he did not bother to respond to this miniman.

But suddenly, sword light that shook the world flashed!

In an instant, the world turned white, everything turned silent.

The sudden change did not make Hong Yi stop running, he kept running for a while before he realized something amiss.

Looking back, he was shocked.

The rank five golden horn centipede Gu was no longer present, it had vanished completely.

Along with it, half of centipede valley had vanished!

What was in front of him was a huge and deep trench. The sides of the trench were extremely smooth, like a mirror.

“This, what is going on?” Hong Yi was lost for words, he could not believe it.

“Just, just that sword light...” The miniman was completely stunned.

Central Continent, east coast.

Waves crashed, rumbling non-stop, frost energy oozed out in the surrounding area.

“Youngsters, we are here. This is profound ice island, the place where Flying Frost Sect is located. This will be where you live from now on, the place where you change your destiny.” The leading Gu Master pointed at the ice island and proudly introduced this.

The youngsters raised their heads, looking forward.

Some had shining eyes, some were extremely excited.

Even though Flying Frost Sect did not have any Gu Immortals and was not a super force, within a huge surrounding area, it was the supreme overlord, the only force that could contest it was Five Virtues Sect.

Not long ago, when the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was held, Flying Frost Sect was one of the venues for participation.

Because of this, the reputation of Flying Frost Sect had spread widely.

“This time, the children here have the highest aptitude for the last ten years. They are the future of the sect, nurture them well, they will make us stronger.” The leading Gu Master saw these children and felt very excited.

The leading Gu Master said loudly: “Youngsters, it is your fortune to be able to become Flying Frost Sect’s disciples. Now, let me tell you...”

Swoosh!

At this time, sword light flashed, everyone was blinded momentarily, they all shut their eyes.

When they opened their eyes, everyone was stunned, their opened their mouths and were still like statues with exaggerated expressions.

The huge profound ice island was gone, in its place, there was a deep trench that appeared in their vision.

Even the sea water was split apart!

On the surface of the sea, a path of five to six li in length had been completely emptied of water, the lingering sword path dao marks were extremely overbearing, blocking the water path dao marks and preventing the water from filling up the gap.

At once, a weird but domineering scene was formed!

Heavenly Court.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord held his walking stick as he stood below Heaven Overseeing Tower shakily.

His other hand was holding fate Gu, his old wrinkled hand was gently rubbing fate Gu.

This time, fate Gu was successfully repaired to a great extent, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was extremely excited and happy.

The ones who had repaired it with him, Bai Cang Shui, Lian Jiu Sheng, and Bi Chen Tian had already left Heavenly Court, going to the mortal world.

The Gu Immortals in Heavenly Court mostly used sleeping as their lifespan extension method. After waking up, they had to make good use of their time, going to their sects and settling some private matters, or to take care of their blood related descendants in the sect.

Heavenly Court controlled the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, but at the same time, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were also chosen from the ten great ancient sects.

In the structure of sects, Heavenly Court was like the upper level sect, and the ten great ancient sects were the lower level sects.

Not all Gu Immortals had the chance to join Heavenly Court.

Other than having deep attainment in their paths, great battle strength and reaching rank eight cultivation level, there was also additional important criteria to join Heavenly Court.

That was their values!

Heavenly Court.

What was Heavenly Court?

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had described it three million years ago, it was — Following the will of heaven, and upholding justice for heaven!

“After this restoration, fate Gu can use half of its might. Using Heaven Overseeing Tower, we can find more people who escaped from fate. Eliminating these people will help in repairing fate Gu, this can allow more people to be found and result in a beneficial cycle, as long as this progresses, Heaven Overseeing Tower will regain its former glory!”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was filled with anticipation, he was about to step into Heaven Overseeing Tower again.

Rumble!

A sword light shot over like a flash of lightning. In no time, it sliced through Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s mouth was opened wide, his pupils shrunk to pin size.

His body was extremely stiff, he saw that the upper half of Heaven Overseeing Tower slowly tilted and crashed onto the jade floor.

“Heaven Overseeing Tower!!” After being stunned momentarily, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord screamed loudly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 957: Rising Commotion

“It finally stopped.” Fairy Bai Qing looked at the tranquil river surface, her face pale with lingering fear.

When the sword lights rampaged, she was nearest to the source and had personally witnessed this heaven shaking scene.

Right now, Falling Heavenly River was filled with corpses.

Large quantities of mutilated body parts of ancient desolate beasts and immemorial desolate beasts bobbed up and down in the river.

The surging white heavenly river water was now dyed blood red.

Although Falling Heavenly River came from the heavens, the river water was filled with vitality. Countless ferocious beasts lived within and propagated, large numbers of aquatic plants grew within and there were also countless hidden currents, whirlpools and other natural traps which even a Gu Immortal could die from.

Fairy Bai Qing waited for some moments, no more sword lights appeared.

She ran to the river and picked up the corpses of the beasts, and the branches and roots of ancient desolate plants and immemorial desolate plants.

She had truly earned a fortune!

The fortune was so huge even she could not help being joyous.

But the happiness did not last long, many ancient desolate beasts began to show up, Fairy Bai Qing could even vaguely see some faint images of ancient desolate beasts through the river water.

These beasts' ferocity was stimulated by the bloodied water.

The flesh and bones cut apart by the sword light were excellent delicacies to these beasts.

More and more beasts were attracted over by the blood and flesh, leading to a fierce battle.

They tore at each other as they battled for food, raising frightening waves.

Fairy Bai Qing had no choice but to retreat, over half the original quantity of corpses remained, she looked at them with much regret. These were all excellent Gu refinement materials!

"The sword lights shot out so suddenly, what happened in Falling Heavenly River? Should I enter to explore and find the reasons or not?"

Fairy Bai Qing was held back by the thought of Feng Jin Huang, thus she hesitated.

However, she had a feeling that Bo Qing's clues should be in the riverbed of Falling Heavenly River.

Fairy Bai Qing gritted her teeth, turning into a white light, shooting straight into Falling Heavenly River.

From Falling Heavenly River's source, unrivaled sword lights had shot out everywhere, their range covering the whole of Central Continent.

Whether it was the centipede valley in Central Continent's central region, or Flying Frost Sect in the east, or even Heavenly Court which was high above, they were all affected by the sword lights.

The whole of Central Continent was in a commotion.

Heavenly Court.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord's face was ashen, his hand moved without stopping, he had immediately started restoring Heaven Overseeing Tower when he had gotten out of his shocked state.

He had already sent a message to Bi Chen Tian, Bai Cang Shui and Lian Jiu Sheng, urgently recalling them.

Right now, they were already on their way.

The damage created by the sword light was extremely troublesome, its sword path dao marks seemed to contain a corrosive nature. The remaining parts of Heaven Overseeing Tower might be standing upright, but it would not last for long.

If the sword path dao marks were left to continue corroding, it would definitely lead to even more disastrous damage.

“We succeeded in our last attempt at restoring fate Immortal Gu, but when I was just about to use it, Heaven Overseeing Tower was split apart. Is this a coincidence? Or....”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord had a bad premonition.

After a while, Bi Chen Tian was the first to return, then Bai Cang Shui and finally Lian Jiu Sheng arrived.

Lian Jiu Sheng had stopped partway through, but was thus able to bring concrete information: “I have investigated it, the sword light came from the source of Falling Heavenly River. Right now, the whole of Central Continent is in a ruckus.”

“Falling Heavenly River’s source, isn’t that where Bo Qing died?” Bai Cang Shui exclaimed in shock.

Speaking of Bo Qing, Heavenly Court’s four immortals had complicated feelings on him.

Back then, it was not that they did not try to recruit Bo Qing, but unfortunately, Bo Qing’s ideals did not conform to theirs, and he did not join Heavenly Court.

“Bo Qing...” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s gaze was dark, “Investigate, we must investigate this clearly. Fairy Cang Shui, you are specialized in water path, I will have to trouble you to make a trip. The three of us will stay here to restore Heaven Overseeing Tower. For some reason, I am having a very bad feeling about this.”

The other three immortals’ expressions turned serious, Bi Chen Tian spoke: “Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, you are in charge of Heaven Overseeing Tower and fate Gu, if you are uneasy, we cannot disregard it, we need to move quickly!”

Central Continent, Combat Immortal Sect.

“Falling Heavenly River’s source has changed all of a sudden, I suspect Bo Qing’s sword path inheritance has appeared! Jin Lie Yang, you will go to investigate the truth. You can bring two rank six Gu Immortals, choose whoever you want.” Combat Immortal Sect’s first supreme elder’s will floated in mid-air.

Gu Immortal Jin Lie Yang was sitting within fire. He was tall and well-built, with golden hair and fiery eyes, and a vigorous rank seven aura.

Hearing what was said, he instead snorted, not giving any face to the first supreme elder: “You should go find Shi Lei for this matter, he is the Immortal Monkey King, with Feng Jiu Ge no longer alive, he is now the strongest among Central Continent’s rank seven Gu Immortals!”

First supreme elder’s will smiled: “Jin Lie Yang, Shi Lei might be strong, but he is not the only person in Combat Immortal Sect. He has already made more than enough contributions in the exploration of Starry Sky grotto-heaven, could it be that you want him to make more contributions?”

An idea came to Jin Lie Yang and he suddenly became convinced.

He leaped out of the fire, and cupped his fists: “Heh! First supreme elder is correct. I had thought of growing another seventeen or eighteen fire path dao marks, but since that is the case, I will immediately move out!”

First supreme elder’s will nodded, instructing: “Go and return quickly.”

Wind Cloud Manor.

“First senior brother, you came out of seclusion?” Gu Immortal Hong Chi Ming immediately greeted the person in front of him with great joy.

This person was clothed in a white robe and was wearing a jade belt. He was tall and thin, elegance and harmoniousness seemed to be expressed in him. He smiled and nodded: “I came out because of the change in Falling Heavenly River. Junior brother, you participated in the hundred days battle and personally witness five finger fist heart sword. I have been asked to go investigate the truth of Falling Heavenly River, please lend me a hand.”

Hong Chi Ming took a deep breath and said sincerely: “First senior brother, you are treating me like an outsider. Back then, were it not for your help, I would not be around today. I will offer my full efforts!”

Spirit Affinity House, discussion hall.

“Should we send someone to investigate the strange change in Falling Heavenly River’s source?” First supreme elder was not present, so the discussion hall was managed by second supreme elder.

“Second supreme elder, you may not be aware but Fairy Bai Qing has already gone to explore Falling Heavenly River’s source a few days ago.” Li Jun Ying’s will spoke.

“Oh? Did she discover some clues?” A Gu Immortal unavoidably recalled the matters discussed.

Second supreme elder frowned: “Fairy Bai Qing only has peak rank six cultivation, it is not enough to cope with this situation. But the sect is limited on available personnel right now, who should I send to reinforce Bai Qing at this time?”

Xu Hao’s will laughed: “Reporting to second supreme elder, Fairy Bai Qing has actually already advanced to rank seven, it is just that she concealed it and did not report it.”

“Oh? Is that the case? I remember there was still some time before the tribulation for her advancement to rank seven.”

Xu Hao calmly replied: “This matter has been confirmed. Before Feng Jiu Ge left for Northern Plains, he borrowed time path Immortal Gu to secretly help Fairy Bai Qing advance her cultivation.”

“So it was like that.” Second supreme elder mumbled before saying, “Fairy Bai Qing advancing to rank seven is a blessing for our Spirit Affinity House. When she returns, she shall be rewarded heavily. Also, open the storage and let her choose a rank seven Immortal Gu. As for this matter of Falling Heavenly River, there is no need to send reinforcements anymore, just message her regarding the sect’s intentions.”

“Yes, we will follow second supreme elder’s command.”

Tian Ti mountain.

“This sword light, Bo Qing, Bo Qing... the pseudo-Immortal Venerable who split the five regions with his sword, it was fortunate for the people in the world that love changed him... maybe this is the appearance of his sword path true inheritance!”

Sword path Gu Immortal Jian Yi Sheng gazed into the horizon with excitement and yearning.

“Such a huge change, Falling Heavenly River will definitely be a gathering point for Gu Immortals, maybe there will be an opportunity to fish for profits in this commotion. Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects are strong and can eat the meat, but I should be able to drink some soup, right?”

As he thought of this, Jian Yi Sheng hardened his mind and flew out of Tian Ti Mountain towards the northwest.

Whether it was the righteous path led by the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, or the demonic path or lone cultivators like Jian Yi Sheng, they all started making their moves.

Countless gazes pierced through space and gathered at the source of Falling Heavenly River.

Bo Qing, a pseudo-Immortal Venerable, at the pinnacle below the venerables, this reputation that had been covered in dust resurfaced once again.

The countless sword lights that wreaked havoc throughout the whole of Central Continent reminded the world of Bo Qing’s power.

A rumor, who knows from where, started spreading and kept on getting bigger, affecting everyone’s mental states.

“The sword lights are the arrangements left behind by Bo Qing before he perished. He is reminding the world that his sword path true inheritance has appeared, and although he perished, he did not want his true inheritance to be obtained by the wrong person. He is using this chance to select the most suitable inheritor!”

Thereafter, the shock created from the sword lights’ might, gradually turned into greed and desire.

Central Continent’s Gu Immortal world was in a commotion!

Countless Gu Immortals, even the hidden old monsters, started to move towards Falling Heavenly River.

A commotion occurred in Central Continent, a huge dispute that covered the whole of Central Continent was going to unfold at Falling Heavenly River.

But in Southern Border, it was calm and tranquil.

The trees swayed in the lush green hills.

On a mountain peak, in a stone pavilion.

Old Man Yan Shi was sitting inside the pavilion, playing chess.

A giant rock was in front of him, on the smooth surface of the rock were star path dao marks that formed either horizontal cuts, vertical cuts or diagonal cuts, forming a dazzling diagram.

Below Old Man Yan Shi was actually the famous astrolabe chessboard from history.

A figure descended down from the sky, and the stone pavilion instantly filled with cold air.

“Why did you call me?” Bai Ning Bing coldly stared at the back of Old Man Yan Shi.

Old Man Yan Shi slowly turned around and faced Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing continued to speak in an icy tone: “Although you helped me in becoming a Gu Immortal, I am not a subordinate of yours who is at your beck and call.”

Old Man Yan Shi smiled, speaking softly: “Do you know that Fang Yuan will be returning?”

Fang Yuan!

Bai Ning Bing’s gaze turned bright, he then squinted, hiding the sharp light in his eyes.

With a cold snort, he said: “Explain it clearly.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 958: Pawn Bai Ning Bing

Looking at Old Man Yan Shi, Bai Ning Bing was very vigilant.

Ever since he had advanced to Gu Immortal, while in the process conveniently getting rid of his female body which had been troubling him for a long time, he thoroughly realized how unfathomable Old Man Yan Shi was.

Bai Ning Bing’s nature was to be indifferent. But his firm attitude towards Old Man Yan Shi was only a type of probe.

Even his strong desire of wanting to fight Fang Yuan and take vicious revenge was also a disguise for himself as well as a probe towards Old Man Yan Shi.

Although only a few years had passed, Bai Ning Bing was no longer so concerned about Fang Yuan.

Being at the Gu Immortal level had broadened his horizons, he saw many more things and experienced many more wonders.

What he minded was Old Man Yan Shi in front of him, it was not that he had not secretly investigated, but Shadow Sect was still deeply concealed, not revealing a trace.

He did not know why Old Man Yan Shi was helping him, but at the same time, he was also discontent at being controlled like this.

He had thought of walking away from all of this. But Shadow Sect had spent so much effort on him, they certainly would not let him leave easily. In addition, Bai Ning Bing cared about excitement and brilliance more than his own life, when the enemy was stronger, the process was dangerous, resistance became more difficult, it instead made him feel like he had not lived in vain, taking it as a pleasure of life.

Competing against heaven, competing against earth, competing against humans, the joy was endless!

There was one thing that Bai Ning Bing had never done in his life, that was — retreating in the face of danger!

Facing Bai Ning Bing’s query, Old Man Yan Shi leisurely took out an Immortal Gu and said: “You only need to do as I say and I can guarantee Fang Yuan will return to Southern Border.”

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes shined with coldness: “You seem to know Fang Yuan’s whereabouts clearly. But in the past, when I was advancing to Gu Immortal, and I asked you the same question, you said you did not know.”

Old Man Yan Shi chuckled.

He did not respond to Bai Ning Bing’s query, instead continuing: “To the south of Namei peak, east of Li Qiu, not far away from rock dragon cave, there is a nameless mountain peak. The mountain is tall and there is a long river that passes by it, the trees on the mountain are green and lush, it is a lone mountain with no other branch peaks. Go to the top of that mountain and activate this Gu. Once you succeed, leave quickly. This mountain will become a forbidden zone for immortals, any Gu Immortals that enter this area will be met with fatal killing intent.”

Bai Ning Bing did not accept this Immortal Gu, his eyes still staring at Old Man Yan Shi as he coldly said: “You still haven’t answered my question.”

“I don’t need to answer your question. You only need to know that when this is done, Fang Yuan will return. Back then, you signed an agreement with Shadow Sect, wasn’t the agreement that only after Fang Yuan is dead, you can be free from the agreement and regain your freedom?” Old Man Yan Shi smiled faintly.

Bai Ning Bing was silent for a while, before taking the Immortal Gu.

He then gave a cold snort, and flew away, disappearing into the horizon.

He made haste when traveling, two days later, he found the mountain Old Man Yan Shi spoke of.

“This mountain is ordinary and there is nothing strange, why did he choose this place?” Bai Ning Bing was puzzled.

Actually, he had many guesses, even thinking of the possibility that Old Man Yan Shi was trying to harm him.

“But, he has spent a huge price to raise me to Gu Immortal, why would he kill me now? The chance of this is very low.”

Bai Ning Bing shook his head, there was another uncertainty which he had for a long time: “Why did Old Man Yan Shi help me to become a Gu Immortal? Among so many people, why did he choose me? Is it simply because of my Northern Dark Ice Soul physique?”

Previously, Bai Ning Bing had such thoughts, but now he was increasingly feeling the truth was not as simple as that.

Bai Ning Bing started to carefully investigate this nameless mountain peak, but he did not find any traces of Gu formations.

He was filled with doubts and hesitation.

If this was truly a trap, then he would be stupidly sending himself to death, wouldn’t he be humiliating himself?

Bai Ning Bing suddenly had a thought: “Old Man Yan Shi would not make me come here in particular and activate Immortal Gu for no reason. His motive is veiled in mystery, but there is no time limit, I might as well delay and probe him.”

If the matter was urgent, Old Man Yan Shi would be very anxious and naturally would urge him. At that time, with the Immortal Gu, Bai Ning Bing could obtain the initiative.

Bai Ning Bing bided his time and made no move, sure enough, someone on Shadow Sect’s side became anxious.

A black robed Gu Immortal appeared inside the stone pavilion, and spoke with a rough voice: “Yan Shi, Bai Ning Bing has already gone for close to half a month, but there has been no word or action from him. Could it be that he ran away with the Gu, or maybe encountered a problem?”

Old Man Yan Shi was at ease, looking at the astrolabe chessboard.

The astrolabe chessboard in front of him was filled with dao marks but compared to before, when Bai Ning Bing had appeared, the numerous and disorderly lines had already reduced by a little less than half.

Old Man Yan Shi was pinching his fingers as he tried to deduce the chess moves, while saying to the black robed Gu Immortal: “Bai Ning Bing is still there, just not making a move. He already had doubts, doubts that this trip is harmful to him, so it is normal for him to have this reaction.”

The black robed Gu Immortal could not help but speak urgently when he saw the leisurely attitude of Old Man Yan Shi: “But we can no longer delay the matter in Central Continent! Now, not just the Gu Immortals from the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, but even a lot of lone cultivators and demonic cultivators have entered to explore the riverbed of Falling Heavenly River. Vice Envoy Blue and the others can only hold on for three days at most. After three days, Heavenly Court will realize this is an arrangement and it might disrupt our true plan.”

Old Man Yan Shi nodded, agreeing: “What you say makes sense. In fact, the present state has already diverged from the original plan, the progress is really too slow.”

“How about you send a letter to urge Bai Ning Bing to make a move quickly. If he doesn’t submit, we can take away his immortal level and make him fall down back to a mortal! He became a Gu Immortal with our help, but he is only a false immortal, there is no need for us to continue letting him be so arrogant! We can take action first and remove his Gu Immortal strength, making him a mortal again, restoring his female body. Such a junior with his head high above the clouds, if we don’t make him know his place, we won’t be able to use him.” The black robed Gu Immortal suggested.

“Hehehe, why do you think I am using him?” Old Man Yan Shi chuckled, he lightly flicked his wide sleeve, immediately, a star mark was removed from the astrolabe chessboard.

If Fang Yuan was to see this sight, he would definitely be very shocked.

Doing this with such ease, Old Man Yan Shi's wisdom path attainment level was definitely great grandmaster!

The black robed Gu Immortal was wearing a large hood that covered his expression, but his tone was filled with heavy doubts: "Yan Shi, didn't you choose Bai Ning Bing because you saw his ten extreme physique battle strength?"

"No, no, that is not the case." Old Man Yan Shi laughed, "This is only what makes him special on the surface. His true special characteristic is that he is also someone who has escaped fate!"

"What? He is also one?" The black robed Gu Immortal was shocked.

Old Man Yan Shi explained further: "Our crucial plan has been devised for a hundred thousand years! Our true enemy is not the Central Continent's Heavenly Court, or the other four regions, but heaven. So I am handing this final crucial step to Bai Ning Bing. He is an escapee of fate, from a certain perspective, he could be said to have escaped the grasp of heaven's will as well. Only this kind of person is qualified to become our pawn."

"So it was like that." The black robed Gu Immortal came to a realization and had no more doubts.

Old Man Yan Shi continued: "Bai Ning Bing is a fate escapee, heaven's will is unable to control him completely, making him a potent weapon for us. We will first let him spearhead the attack, and what we will do is build up our energy, using all of our strength to cope with the fury of heaven's will. After Bai Ning Bing left, I did not contact him and let him move freely, but you can rest assured, with his nature, he will not wait for much longer."

"Since that is the case, then I will continue sleeping." The black robed Gu Immortal cupped his fists, and took his leave.

Bai Ning Bing waited another two days on the nameless mountain peak, occasionally looking at the direction of Old Man Yan Shi's stone pavilion.

"So many days have passed by, but Old Man Yan Shi has not urged me yet. It seems he is not in a hurry about this matter. That makes sense! If he was hurried, he would emphasize the time limit for completing the task when he handed it to me."

Bai Ning Bing could not help but feel somewhat dejected.

The probing just now was undoubtedly a failure.

He looked at the mountain below him, and pondered: "I have checked this mountain time and time again over these last days, but I could not find traces of any Gu formations. Sigh! If this is is truly harmful to me, I can only admit defeat, I could not find out anything, I can only blame my inadequate ability!"

Bai Ning Bing sighed and hovered in the air, looking at this ordinary mountain.

"Go." With a shift of his mind, his immortal essence started to be consumed as he activated the mysterious Immortal Gu.

The Immortal Gu let out some radiance but it still lay on his palm, showing no movement.

Bai Ning Bing was slightly surprised: "So this Immortal Gu requires a lot of immortal essence."

He continued to send beads of green grape immortal essence to it, the radiance of the Immortal Gu grew brighter and brighter, and the exquisite body of the Immortal Gu started to slightly tremble.

After a while, Bai Ning Bing's forehead was dripping with sweat, and he was feeling worried: "I have already used up hundreds of beads of immortal essence, why does it still not activating? So the difficulty in this task was in this!"

Just when he was getting very puzzled, the Immortal Gu in his hand suddenly buzzed, it turned into a ray of light that shot towards the sky.

The light continued to grow bigger, its speed however was becoming slower. When it reached a peak in height, it charged down to the nameless mountain.

Boom!

It crashed onto the mountain peak, the clash produced incomparably dazzling radiance.

Bai Ning Bing quickly covered his eyes and retreated.

He no longer needed to use his immortal essence.

But whether the Immortal Gu succeeded in its activation, he still needed to check to be certain.

Thus, he flew to a distance of five li away, before stopping in the air.

He then saw an unbelievable and marvelous scene!

Within the intense radiance, the nameless mountain peak suffered no damage, phantom images started to appear over the woods on the mountain.

This was a section of a long river, the river water billowed, rising and falling, filled with a mystical and natural wondrousness that would be difficult to portray, there was endless profundity that could not be described with words or expressed.

"This scene... could it be the river of time?!"

Bai Ning Bing's eyes suddenly enlarged, filled with extreme surprise.

Afterwards, he saw the river of time's phantom image gradually dissipate, becoming dimmer and dimmer. Two human-shaped figures seemed to jump out of the river, their appearances and clothes gradually becoming clearer.

These two people were fighting!

Both sides exchanged moves one after the other, the battle's intensity shocked Bai Ning Bing to the core.

Among them, one was enormous with bulging muscles, he was like a mythical creature that rampaged around with an extremely fierce momentum. He was a rank eight Gu Immortal!

The other person was rank seven. But he seemed to be using a killer move to disguise himself, his whole body was covered in a layer of fog that made others unable to distinguish his face or stature. The only thing that could be clearly seen was a red lotus that was drawn on his forehead.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 959: Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage

The battle between the two shook the scenery in the image, boulders shattered and the river roared.

Even if the change in the phantom image did not affect reality, it was an extremely moving scene.

The battle gradually heated to the climax, the burly rank eight Gu Immortal held the upper hand, he raised his head and laughed wildly: “I have rank eight cultivation and also possess the Great Strength True Martial Physique, a mere rank seven dreams of challenging me?!”

That mysterious Gu Immortal with a red lotus mark on his forehead chuckled and said with a plain voice: “Martial Duel Heavenly King, your defeat is certain. Take this move!”

Right after he finished speaking, the rank seven Gu Immortal flung his right hand and a high platform flew out.

The next moment, the contempt on the face of the rank eight Gu Immortal, Martial Duel Heavenly King, was completely gone, replaced by shock: “This is an Immortal Gu House! What Immortal Gu House is this?”

The rank seven Gu Immortal proudly smiled: “Let me teach you, this is my original creation — Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage!”

“Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage?” Bai Ning Bing frowned, as far as he knew, the present Southern Border Gu Immortal world did not have any such Immortal Gu House.

Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage’s might was extremely mysterious.

No matter what kind of attacks Martial Duel Heavenly King sent, they were all absorbed and sealed.

That was not all.

After the attacks were sealed, they could still be used by the rank seven Gu Immortal to strike back!

Martial Duel Heavenly King’s attacks were mighty, but in the end, he had to bear most of his attacks himself.

The images transformed continuously, and the battle situation kept on getting more heated.

Finally, with the help of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, the mysterious rank seven Gu Immortal won against Martial Duel Heavenly King, accomplishing an extraordinary feat of rank seven defeating rank eight!

However, the rank seven Gu Immortal also had to pay a heavy price.

As a final stand, Martial Duel Heavenly King did not hesitate to turn into a rank eight immortal zombie, almost possessing an unkillable body. The mysterious rank seven Gu Immortal was not able to take his life, and could only let go of this Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, using it to suppress Martial Duel Heavenly King deep under the earth.

To win against Martial Duel Heavenly King, the unknown rank seven Gu Immortal had to give up an Immortal Gu House.

After the battle was over, he sighed as he gazed down, at his Immortal Gu House that was under the earth, before flying away.

There were no more images of the Gu Immortals, but the phantom image still kept on transforming.

The battlefield where the Gu Immortals fought returned to tranquility. With good weather, grass and trees started to grow. Then there were lightning strikes and flood. Meteors crashed down and inferno raged. The plain terrain gradually began to rise, growing slowly. At first, it was a mound, then it continued to increase until it became a mountain.

There were occasionally scenes of humans moving in the mountain, the movements were extremely quick, whether it was natural phenomenon or the movements of humans and beasts, they were shown like a sped-up video.

This mountain also began to change rapidly, it occasionally had landslides and occasionally changed in shape. Finally, in the phantom image, this mountain gradually turned into the appearance of the nameless mountain.

When the phantom image had completely disappeared, the world regained its original appearance.

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes shone strangely, he understood that the Immortal Gu Old Man Yan Shi gave him was a time path investigative Immortal Gu!

It drilled into the crevices of time and transported the scene of the ‘past’ at a certain segment of the river of time towards the ‘present’.

The scene of a huge battle between the two Gu Immortals was now this ordinary and inconspicuous mountain.

“This means there is an Immortal Gu House buried here!” Bai Ning Bing fixed his gaze under the mountain, his heart thumping in excitement.

He naturally knew the value of an Immortal Gu House.

Only forces with Gu Immortals could be considered super forces. But even among these super forces, only the powerful ones could possess one or more Immortal Gu Houses!

“If I can get hold of this Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, it will definitely be a huge help to me and I can more easily deal with Shadow Sect and leave! But this is bad, the Immortal Gu’s aura has leaked everywhere, the disturbance when I activated the Immortal Gu was also not small, it will definitely attract other Gu Immortals. Time does not wait for anyone, I must hurry up!”

Bai Ning Bing had just thought of flying down, piercing deep into the earth and taking the Immortal Gu House, when he hesitated.

He thought of Old Man Yan Shi.

If he went down, would it be messing up Old Man Yan Shi’s plan?

Maybe Old Man Yan Shi already calculated his reaction and wanted him to go deep into the earth, explore the depths of the earth and take Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

“If it is like this, he must have something up his sleeve... the mantis stalks a cicada, unaware of the oriole behind, if I blindly move, all my efforts will be in vain and I will be used by others!”

Bai Ning Bing’s gaze was deep, he decided to first probe the surrounding environment before deciding to move.

However, what he had not expected was when he had just approached the nameless mountain by some distance, he felt an intense weakness, his Gu Immortal aura started to quickly weaken, he could not even exert his thoughts.

Bai Ning Bing retreated in shock, he recalled Old Man Yan Shi’s words.

“Go to the top of that mountain and activate this Gu. Once you succeed, leave quickly. This mountain will become a forbidden zone for immortals, any Gu Immortals that enter this area will be met with fatal killing intent.”

Bai Ning Bing thought with a frown, could this be the forbidden zone for immortals?

If this had truly become a forbidden zone, then how could he seize Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage?

At this moment, the phantom image on the mountain peak changed again, turning into the previous scenes.

Bai Ning Bing patiently observed, and could not help having a thought: could it be that there was a clue to take the Immortal Gu House hidden in the transformations of these phantom images?

However, after the phantom image finished showing the scenes, it disappeared again, Bai Ning Bing was not able to find out any clues.

He then discovered: the phantom image would reappear once in a while.

Every time the phantom image played, it would show the same contents with no difference.

He also discovered: the forbidden zone was expanding.

At first, he could still approach within three li of the nameless mountain. Now, however, he was ten li away from the mountain peak, but still felt exhausted and weak. He had a sense of warning deep within telling him that were he to forcefully charge in, he would definitely die.

Looking at the huge fortune moving farther and farther away from him, Bai Ning Bing was naturally uneasy.

He had stayed here for three days, trying to hide this constantly appearing phantom image.

He had already erased the Immortal Gu aura, but he was not able to hide these images.

Although Old Man Yan Shi helped him ascend to immortal, he did not give him any Immortal Gu.

This phenomenon in front of him was created by a time path investigative Immortal Gu, Bai Ning Bing naturally could not cover it using mortal Gu.

Of course, if he used superior mortal killer moves, there was a possibility of covering the images temporarily. But his foundation was shallow, and he did not have such methods.

“If Fang Yuan was here, what would he do?” In the worrisome moment, Bai Ning Bing recalled Fang Yuan’s image.

Despite him no longer being concerned with Fang Yuan, he could not deny that Fang Yuan’s ruthlessness and craftiness had made a deep impression and subconsciously influenced him.

He thought and thought, before he stopped in terror.

He suddenly realized: this Immortal Gu was given by Old Man Yan Shi, this should be a plan of Shadow Sect.

What was Shadow Sect trying to do?

They did not try to seize Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage secretly and silently earn a fortune, instead they were proclaiming this as if they wanted the whole world to know...

“Involving an ancient battle and the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, probably the whole of Southern Border will be in an uproar. Be it righteous path Gu Immortals or demonic path or lone immortals, they will all go crazy for it. None of them would yield a step for the Immortal Gu House, this will definitely cause great turbulence and incite bloodshed. Is Shadow Sect’s objective to bring a calamity to Southern Border? But how would this benefit them?”

Bai Ning Bing fiercely slapped his forehead, as his anxious expression vanished, clarity returned to his gaze.

“What was I doing these last days?! I actually let myself be blinded by greed. This is not something I can obtain, this nameless mountain will soon become the center of a storm in Southern Border, luring almost all the Gu Immortals of Southern Border. I am only a rank six Gu Immortal with limited methods. I can’t stay here for long, I better leave early. Right, I should return and try to probe Old Man Yan Shi on what he is thinking of doing. Does he want to use this to lure Fang Yuan?”

Bai Ning Bing hurriedly returned, but Old Man Yan Shi was no longer in the stone pavilion.

He hurried to Shadow Sect’s blessed land, but he was unable to summon the blessed land’s entrance to appear, he also could not contact them using information path mortal Gu, it was almost like the entirety of Shadow Sect, including Old Man Yan Shi, had completely disappeared in an instant.

The wave of doubts in Bai Ning Bing’s mind intensified, there was a sensation of being discarded, he vaguely felt that the last series of events was anything but a reassuring omen.

Central Continent, Falling Heavenly River.

Right now, the bottom of the riverbed of the source of Falling Heavenly River was filled with light.

Countless Gu Immortals of Central Continent fixed their gazes at the riverbed’s only light source, their hearts filled with fervent desire.

An immortal zombie with eyes closed was floating in this light. His appearance was just like before when he was alive, seemingly filled with vitality. Sharp brows, high nose, jade green hair, upright back, it was Bo Qing!

“Who could have thought Bo Qing would have turned into an immortal zombie.”

“Back then, the fairy of Spirit Affinity House at that time, Mo Yao, had also faced the tribulation with him. But there is only Bo Qing here, it seems Mo Yao had completely died.”

“According to the sect records, that heavenly tribulation had such terrifying might that it shook the whole of Central Continent. It really is inconceivable that Bo Qing could preserve his life, how strong was he actually?”

The immortals discussed with each other.

“The corpse has been maintained for so long, who knows how many secrets it contains. As long as we can obtain it, we can decipher the profound mysteries of Bo Qing’s cultivation back then. Even if there is no sword path true inheritance, just this research alone would be an enormous gain. Maybe it can even add to a true inheritance in the sect?”

Most of these thoughts were from the Gu Immortals of the ten great ancient sects. They were looking at long term prospects, considering for the situation of their sect.

While the lone immortals and demonic cultivators like Jian Yi Sheng were paying attention to the Immortal Gu carried by the immortal zombie Bo Qing.

“There are still auras of so many Immortal Gu on his body. This is really unimaginable for them to exist until now! These are all sword path Immortal Gu of the pseudo-Immortal Venerable, I will be satisfied with even just one!”

Central Continent’s righteous path was very prosperous, and the demonic cultivators were fiercely suppressed, to the extent that their situation was the most miserable among the demonic cultivators in the entirety of the five regions.

These demonic cultivators and lone cultivators did not dare to have any idea of taking Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body, and only wanted to make a profit and run away quickly.

In fact, before this, in the process of entering Falling Heavenly River, almost all the immortals had made some gains.

The remains of beasts and plants cut down by the sword lights were not few. As long as one looked for them carefully, they could find them.

However, Bo Qing’s assets was truly too attractive.

Humans die for wealth and birds die for food. Since they personally witnessing it, who would want to leave now?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 960: Bo Qing Awakens

At this time, there were at least thirty Gu Immortals at the bottom of Falling Heavenly River's source.

The immortals had heated gazes, they were staring at the light lump that enveloped the immortal zombie, Bo Qing, they looked around secretly, they were very alert towards their competitors.

Among these competitors, the strongest ones were the Gu Immortals from Central Continent's ten great ancient sects.

Jin Lie Yang, Hong Chi Ming, Qi Yun Tian and others.

And among the people from the ten great ancient sects, the most threatening one was Fairy Bai Qing.

Seeing this stalemate, Qi Yun Tian said slowly: "Fairy Bai Qing, this situation is very clear. Bo Qing has his immortal zombie remains, but his soul was decimated by the tribulation. However, there are some wills and emotions left in his mind, he can defend himself."

"Thus, whenever we get close, he will use his Immortal Gu and shoot out extremely sharp sword lights, attacking everywhere. To weaken his animosity, we need something that contains Bo Qing's aura, or a Gu worm that he refined in the past, we can also use the wills and emotions left behind by Bo Qing, as long as we take these out, we can get close to Bo Qing and gain the upper hand."

Fairy Bai Qing smiled bitterly: "Why would I have these things, if I did, I would have taken action long ago, right?"

She indeed did not.

Because she had not expected to find Bo Qing's immortal zombie body.

Qi Yun Tian smiled lightly: "Fairy Bai Qing, why are you lying to us? You are the first person here, why did you come here alone secretly? Is all this a coincidence?"

Fairy Bai Qing's smile became more bitter: "You say I came here secretly, that is wrong. I had used the path through Myriad Dragon Dock and Combat Immortal Sect, I came here openly, what do you mean by secretly?"

She had come to investigate Falling Heavenly River because of Feng Jiu Ge's last words.

But she could not expose this truth.

Spirit Affinity House needed to stall the information regarding Feng Jiu Ge's death as much as possible, so that they could have more time to prepare.

Jin Lie Yang frowned more deeply now, his voice became more shrill: "Why is Fairy Bai Qing hiding it from us? The current situation will only draw in more Gu Immortals. As time passes, accidents might occur! We of the ten great ancient sects should work together to jointly control situation in Central Continent. Otherwise, if those lone cultivators obtain Sword Immortal Bo Qing's sword path Immortal Gu, Central Continent would undergo huge turbulence. Is your sect going to ignore Central Continent's wellbeing just for your own greed?"

Qi Yun Tian's attitude was warm, he continued urging: "We of the ten great ancient sects are of the same origin. We should work together and obtain immortal zombie Bo Qing. I can represent Wind Cloud Manor and sign an alliance agreement with your sect, we will ensure you get your benefits in this matter."

Fairy Bai Qing was silent.

She sneered internally, Jin Lie Yang and Qi Yun Tian were working together to coerce and coax her, how could she not know that.

She was secretly anxious.

This had happened too suddenly, and Spirit Affinity House did not send Gu Immortals to reinforce her.

Even though she was rank seven, facing these immortals, she could not do much.

No matter what immortal zombie Bo Qing's situation was, it was very important to take back his body and sword path Immortal Gu for Spirit Affinity House.

The other nine sects knew this.

Right now, in their opinion, Feng Jiu Ge was missing, he was likely dead, Spirit Affinity House was weakened now, they could not let them obtain this immortal zombie Bo Qing.

If they nurtured another Bo Qing who was as strong as Feng Jiu Ge, what would the nine sects do?

The situation in Falling Heavenly River was extremely dangerous.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing's sword lights were extremely sharp, they shot through the entirety of Central Continent.

Large numbers of demonic and lone cultivators came because of it. They desired conflict, they wanted to obtain huge gains from it.

As for the immortals from Central Continent's ten great ancient sects, they want to stabilize the situation and not give these outsiders a chance.

But at the same time, the immortals of the ten great ancient sects were not united, thus, the nine sects were resisting Spirit Affinity House together.

Fairy Bai Qing was thought to have possession of a crucial method, she could not explain her innocence now.

Just as the immortals were in a deadlock, a vast rank eight aura surged.

“All of the immortals stand back, we of Heavenly Court are taking charge.”

Everyone gasped, they looked at the source of the sound and saw a female immortal descending.

It was the rank eight water path Gu Immortal Bai Cang Shui.

The situation changed at once!

Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

Light shone on Heaven Overseeing Tower, it had been rebuilt again, standing in front of the three immortals.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, Bi Chen Tian, and Lian Jiu Sheng felt the weight on their hearts easing, they sighed in relief.

Ever since Heaven Overseeing Tower was slashed by the sword light, they had not rested.

To prevent the sword path dao marks from corroding it further and destroying more Gu worms, they had worked day and night to repair it without rest, they had finally succeeded.

Thankfully, the three immortals rapidly replaced the destroyed Gu worms using the huge amount of immortal materials in Heavenly Court’s storage, saving it in time.

There was something important to note, Heaven Overseeing Tower was a rank nine Immortal Gu House, it had incredible defense. Even though it was split in half by the sword light, what it truly lost was only the Gu worms near the damage caused by the sword, in fact, Heaven Overseeing Tower was not gravely damaged.

After looking at it for a while, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord took a deep breath and supported himself on his walking stick as he held fate Gu, walking towards the tower.

Lian Jiu Sheng could not help but ask: “Tower Lord, are you not going to rest, why are you in a rush to activate Heaven Overseeing Tower?”

“Thank you for your concern, it is alright.” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord smiled, rejecting the suggestion.

For some reason, ever since the sword light attacked Heaven Overseeing Tower, he had been having an ominous sensation.

As time passed, this ominous sensation intensified.

Even after seeing the repaired Heaven Overseeing Tower, he did not feel this ominous sensation going away.

“Go.” He willed, in his hand, fate Gu turned into a mystical light, entering the top of the tower, towards the formation core.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord moved his aged body as he slowly walked up the stairs.

Every step he took expended rank eight immortal essence.

The tower walls were shining in bright light, they appeared to be in a mess and did not give any hints or advice.

But Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord did not mind it.

Fate Immortal Gu could only use half of its might, half of the images displayed were blurry or dark.

After walking for sixty steps, the image on the wall became clear.

On the nameless peak of Southern Border, the scene was depicted vividly in front of Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord.

In the image, Martial Duel Heavenly King and the mysterious rank seven Gu Immortal’s fight entered Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s vision.

This old man frowned unconsciously.

“Rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie... Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage... and this!”

On the mysterious rank seven Gu Immortal’s forehead, the red lotus mark was very bright red and striking.

“An inheritor of Red Lotus’ true inheritance!”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s eyes flashed with sharpness.

The pain that Red Lotus Demon Venerable brought to Heavenly Court and the damage he dealt to fate Immortal Gu, had tormented generations after generations of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals for over a million years!

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord stopped on this step, thinking deeply.

“Red Lotus’ true inheritance, it has to be destroyed! No traces must be left behind!”

“The Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie is less of a concern... but that Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage should belong to Heavenly Court ideally. Even if Southern Border has the regional wall, Heavenly Court has to make an attempt now.”

Just that mystical Immortal Gu House, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, was worth the intervention of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals.

Even though rank eight Gu Immortals faced much difficulty in passing the five regions’ regional walls, and had to pay a huge price.

“Without concealing such a scene, Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world would definitely be stirred up, countless immortals would come forward to fight for it. If Heavenly Court wants to traverse regions and compete, we have to choose appropriate people, and the number has to be precise.”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord thought more deeply and soon shook his head, placing these troublesome thoughts aside.

He continued to go up.

Sixty steps, seventy steps, eighty steps...

When he got to the eighty-third step, the image changed again.

This time, it was the scene of Central Continent.

In Falling Heavenly River, immortal zombie Bo Qing’s eyes were shut as the Heavenly Court Gu Immortal Bai Cang Shui led the immortals and controlled the situation singlehandedly.

In the image, Bai Cang Shui smiled and spoke to Fairy Bai Qing.

But after Fairy Bai Qing replied to her, Bai Cang Shui’s expression became one of deep disappointment.

Soon, she concealed her expression and became calm again.

She moved her fingers, setting up a Gu formation, planning to seal this place.

But at this moment, starlight shot over, it penetrated the incomplete Gu formation and shot towards immortal zombie Bo Qing.

As starlight shined brightly, immortal zombie Bo Qing opened his eyes!

In an instant, countless flashes of sword light burst out, turning the world white.

Even Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord shut his eyes in response.

At the next moment, he opened his eyes.

What he saw was a bloody scene.

There were bits and pieces of Gu Immortal corpses everywhere, the head of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortal, Bai Cang Shui, was rolling away with streams of blood.

Her eyes were opened wide, she had died!

“How can this be?” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, who saw this, was anguished.

Three figures landed immediately.

Seven Star Child was in front, followed by Song Zi Xing and Yu Mu Chun.

“Azure, you are finally awake.” Seven Star Child laughed loudly, his body was emitting a powerful rank eight aura.

He walked forward, getting close to immortal zombie Bo Qing.

Bo Qing’s eyes shined with ruthlessness, sword light shot out.

Seven Star Child was shocked, he did not expect Bo Qing to attack him!

The sword light was peerlessly sharp, he was sliced in half, even his immortal zombie body was useless against it.

Seven Star Child’s pitiful death stunned Song Zi Xing and Yu Mu Chun.

“What is going on? Envoy Azure killed Vice Envoy Blue!”

“No, he is not Envoy Azure, his mind is filled with heaven’s will, and there is another person’s remnant soul living inside his body!”

At once, Song Zi Xing and Yu Mu Chun were shocked and furious.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing was expressionless, he turned around to look at them.

Song Zi Xing and Yu Mu Chun felt a strong chill, they sank into despair.

They did not see any killing intent from immortal zombie Bo Qing’s eyes.

They only saw the unfeeling and impartial nature of the way of heaven!

They were people who escaped from fate, they were targets of elimination of the way of heaven.

An intense aura of death engulfed them, against the famous pseudo-Immortal Venerable, Song Zi Xing and Yu Mu Chun could not escape or dodge, they could only await their deaths.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 961: Unprecedented Contest

“Hahaha, I finally succeeded!”

Coming out of the underground cave, Fang Yuan’s face was filled with joy.

During this period, he had exerted all of his effort into deducing this immortal killer move, he had finally obtained some results today.

This new killer move used eat strength Immortal Gu, pulling mountain Immortal Gu and pulling water Immortal Gu as the cores, with three hundred and thirty thousand supplementary mortal Gu, he formed an extravagant combination that would stun another person.

To activate this killer move, Fang Yuan had to focus wholeheartedly for two hours, activating this set of Gu worms.

Then, going through three days and nights without rest, he could gradually transform his living body into an immortal zombie body, or transform his immortal zombie body into a living body.

Even though it was not as convenient as nirvana fire, Fang Yuan had reached his limits by getting such progress.

Fang Yuan was very satisfied with this result.

After all, Fang Yuan only had so many strength path Immortal Gu. He could use all of them here thanks to the light of wisdom.

Of course, it was because he had nirvana fire as the blueprint.

If he did not have nirvana fire, or the set of Gu worms to research that were lent by Blazing Heaven Demoness, Fang Yuan would not have been able to obtain a strength path version in such a short time.

Also, Fang Yuan had wisdom path grandmaster attainment level.

Because of all these reasons, a minor miracle was created.

“Next, I have to use those strength path immortal zombies and exert strength Gu to form my high grade life-and-death blessed land, to revive.” Fang Yuan sighed internally.

After searching for so long, he had finally reached this stage.

As for Luo Po valley, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had repaired it not long ago.

Fang Yuan gave it a try, cultivating inside Luo Po valley.

It was indeed the soul cultivation sacred land that was on par with Dang Hun Mountain!

Paired with Dang Hun Mountain’s guts Gu, Fang Yuan’s soul cultivation was advancing by leaps and bounds.

But now, Fang Yuan knew that the most important thing was to revive. His soul cultivation could be placed aside now, he did not need to engage in it.

Fang Yuan could almost not hold in his urge.

But just as he was about to start, he received Blazing Heaven Demoness’ letter.

The contents caused his revival plan to pause.

“Rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie?” When Fang Yuan saw this line, his heart pounded.

The information that Blazing Heaven Demoness gave him was regarding the nameless mountain in Southern Border.

This matter was too big now, it concerned an Immortal Gu House, it had spread throughout the entirety of Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world.

In Southern Border, there was a Zombie Alliance branch as well.

Thus, as the leader of the Northern Plains Zombie Alliance branch, Blazing Heaven Demoness quickly got hold of the news.

“Blazing Heaven Demoness has great ambitions, she knows that I have Fixed Immortal Travel, thus she observed the events over all five regions. As a higher up of Zombie Alliance, she could collect information more easily than Fairy Li Shan.”

Fang Yuan felt his weakness in intelligence gathering once again.

In his previous life, he had an organization and network, his developed blood path Gu worm techniques could replace the use of most information path methods.

But in this life, Fang Yuan used his previous life’s memories together with intelligence mainly from people like Fairy Li Shan and Lang Ya land spirit.

As more and more unexpected surprises occurred, Fang Yuan was starting to feel that his previous life’s memories were beginning to become unreliable.

The truth of history was often hidden in deep fog, what Fang Yuan saw in his previous life was only what had been exposed and was seemingly true on the surface.

Even for matters that he had experienced personally, they might not have been as simple as he thought.

The reasons for the occurrence of many events were complicated.

“In my previous life, I had a tough time, I slowly climbed up from the bottom, my network and resources were accumulated slowly, thus I had no obvious weaknesses. But after rebirth, I have obtained opportunities one after another, my strength rose rapidly, or rather, explosively. Thus, in many aspects, I could not keep up.”

“It seems that I have to use more information path methods to collect intelligence. For the time being, I can rely on outsiders like Blazing Heaven Demoness, but in the long run, I need to rely on myself!”

Fang Yuan contemplated.

Lack of information meant losing many opportunities.

Like just now, Fang Yuan did not know the situation, he was kept in the dark, he almost missed this fortuitous encounter completely.

Three days later, Fang Yuan went alone to Southern Border, approaching the nameless mountain.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was still in Dark Flow Giant City, she had told Fang Yuan in the letter that she was busy refining Gu and setting up the Immortal Gu formation, she could not leave. But when necessary, she would come to take action.

As for Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan, they were in Northern Plains, using Luo Po valley to cultivate their souls, and increase their foundation. They had an intense interest towards the Immortal Gu House, but their Northern Plains aura made it difficult for them to roam Southern Border.

Fang Yuan came here to obtain intelligence.

Even though he had become a Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, he had the concealment of vaguely familiar face, ordinary Gu Immortals could not expose him.

On the nameless mountain, once in a while, phantom images would reappear.

Bai Ning Bing was nowhere to be found.

Fang Yuan watched it three times over and pondered over it before moving, getting close to the nameless mountain.

As expected, like what Blazing Heaven Demoness said in the letter, this place was a forbidden zone for immortals. The deeper Fang Yuan went, the more he felt his limbs going weak, he felt that his immortal aperture was being pressured by a formless force.

Fang Yuan had to stop in his tracks, he knew that if this continued, his immortal aperture would be destroyed before he took fifty or sixty steps.

That would not do.

He had to use his strength path immortal aperture to create the life-and-death immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan had to retreat.

At this time, he heard a tender laughter from behind him.

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, he immediately turned around.

Only to see a beautiful woman, dressed in pink and red, her hair was tied up and her skin was white like snow, her eyes were alluring and watery, she was standing nearby, looking at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not dare to be careless.

This woman was oozing with Gu Immortal aura, she was a rank six Gu Immortal.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s gaze, this beautiful woman introduced herself: “I am Li Mei Hua, people call me Granny Mei Hua. Handsome lad, you look very unfamiliar, where do you cultivate?”

Fang Yuan smiled, he thought: “So she is Granny Mei Hua.”

Even though Fang Yuan had never seen Granny Mei Hua personally, he had seen her granddaughter, that demonic path female Gu Master, Hu Mei Er.

To care for beauty was natural for women.

There was no relation between the age and appearance of Gu Immortals.

Right now, Fang Yuan wore a green robe and his sleeves were large and wide, the wind blew and his robe fluttered, moving like a war banner.

In Fang Yuan’s disguise, he had a rank six Gu Immortal aura, he was tall and skinny, having a middle aged appearance with a tall nose bridge, slim eyes, and his pupils radiated with faint traces of jade green light. He gave off an eerie aura, as if he was not to be trifled with, even though he was not good looking, he had quite a disposition.

“Granny Mei Hua, I have long since heard of you. I am Sheng Ying, I am just a simple wanderer.” Fang Yuan replied.

“Sheng Ying...” Li Mei Hua memorized this name, she could not remember such a person in Southern Border.

However, she did not find it strange.

Hearing Fang Yuan’s introduction, she knew that he was a lone cultivator.

Southern Border had many mountains, countless experts were in seclusion. Many lone cultivators never showed themselves, nobody knew about them.

But because of the Immortal Gu House, Gu Immortals one after another were attracted and had come over.

Fang Yuan, who was disguised as Sheng Ying, was just one of them.

These last days, Li Mei Hua had contacted many Gu Immortals similar to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was slightly suspicious towards Li Mei Hua’s warm attitude in approaching him.

Fang Yuan was about to ask, when Li Mei Hua told him the reason.

Fang Yuan realized at once.

Li Mei Hua invited Fang Yuan to travel together, after thinking about it, he agreed.

He followed Li Mei Hua and moved out, settling down at Headless Mountain which was a thousand li away. When Fang Yuan got there, there were already many demonic path or lone immortals on the mountain.

Seeing Fang Yuan, many cast curious gazes, while some has grim or ruthless expressions.

Because they did not know Fang Yuan’s background, no Gu Immortals spoke to him yet.

But Granny Mei Hua was quite popular, the moment she returned, someone smiled: “Li Mei Hua, you brought another one?”

“Hahaha, this time, we demonic and lone cultivators have gathered to negotiate with the righteous path, Granny Mei Hua has made the most contribution towards it.”

“Oh no, I am flattered, I am just doing my best to help.” Li Mei Hua smiled as she greeted and interacted with the people around here one after another, she managed the individual relationships with great ease.

“Let me introduce you, this is brother Sheng Ying, he is a lone immortal.” After talking to everyone, Li Mei Hua introduced Fang Yuan to them.

“So you are brother Sheng.” Immediately, a demonic path Gu Immortal cupped his fists.

“I am Zhong He Zi.”

“I see that sir cultivates transformation path, oh, my name is Lan Tian Hong, I am also a lone cultivator.”

...

Fang Yuan showed a look of being poor at socializing, barely interacting with them.

After some short talks, Headless Mountain returned to being peaceful like before Fang Yuan arrived.

Li Mei Hua did not stay on the mountain for long, she had to return to the nameless mountain and wait for more people, she pointed at a mountain before leaving, telling Fang Yuan: “That Pine Tail Mountain is the base camp of the righteous path Gu Immortals.”

Even without her pointing it out, the intense Gu Immortal aura on that mountain had already informed Fang Yuan.

After separating from Li Mei Hua, Fang Yuan stayed on Headless Mountain.

He did not go out often, most of his time was spent in his cave, after all, Fang Yuan was disguised now, and vaguely familiar face was not an invincible disguise.

He stayed and waited for more than ten days, during this period, Headless Mountain and Pine Tail Mountain welcomed Gu Immortals from both righteous and demonic paths.

Most of them were rank six, whenever a rank seven Gu Immortal came, a commotion would be created, eventually, even rank eight Gu Immortals arrived, a total of four!

One demonic path, one lone cultivator, and two of the righteous path.

It formed a balance of power on both sides.

The rank eight Gu Immortals did not involve themselves, every day, the Gu Immortals on both sides recommended one person each to engage in a difficult negotiation.

After seven days and nights of negotiation, they finally came to an agreement.

The righteous and demonic paths, dozens of Gu Immortals set an agreement together, all around the nameless mountain, they were engaging in a grand contest that was rare even in a thousand years!

The winner of the contest would obtain the opportunity on the nameless mountain. As for the other Gu Immortals, they were not to attack the victor for the next three years.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 962: Xiao Shan, Xiao Mang

At the bottom of Falling Heavenly River, immortal zombie Bo Qing's eyes moved around, looking emotionlessly at Song Zi Xing and Yu Mu Chun.

At this moment, Song Zi Xing and Yu Mu Chun's hearts were jumping, they were facing immense pressure, they were drenched in sweat.

Bo Qing was known as a pseudo-Immortal Venerable, during his time, he was publicly recognized as the strongest person under rank nine venerables in the five regions!

Even though he had become an immortal zombie after the tribulation and his immortal aperture was completely destroyed, he still had ample rank eight immortal essence on him, especially his sword path dao marks, they were not destroyed.

Thus, his battle strength was terrifying.

The most crucial point were the dao marks!

The higher the Gu Immortal's cultivation level, the more dao marks they had. Even if two people were using the same Immortal Gu, the difference in dao marks would cause different outcomes when the Immortal Gu's power was amplified.

Consider Qin Bai Sheng, a soul path Gu Immortal who also cultivated metal path, he did not have a single sword path dao mark on him, but when he used five finger fist heart sword, he could fight Feng Jiu Ge on equal grounds.

Right now, none of Bo Qing's Immortal Gu were damaged, together with his vast number of sword path dao marks, he could display unimaginable might, he could almost replicate the glory that he had when he was alive.

Thus, Bai Cang Shui, Seven Star Child, and the others had no chance to resist him.

Not to mention Song Zi Xing and Yu Mu Chun.

The higher the rank of the Gu Immortal, the greater the difference, between rank seven and eight, the difference in dao marks was like heaven and earth. Between rank six and seven, there might be those who are evenly matched occasionally. But when rank eight fought against rank seven, it was almost always a one-sided fight. When rank nine fought rank eight, it would be as simple as stepping on an ant.

Facing immortal zombie Bo Qing, Song Zi Xing and Yu Mu Chun had no way to retaliate!

“Am I going to die today?”

“What will we do? What will we do!”

The two of them felt their bodies going cold, countless thoughts were churning in their minds, looking at this situation, they had almost no hope.

Bo Qing raised his finger, pointing at Song Zi Xing.

A thin sword light flashed.

Song Zi Xing did not even try to escape, he faced death with a bitter smile.

Because he knew that in front of Bo Qing, escaping was completely futile.

Bo Qing pointed at Yu Mu Chun.

“No—! I am unresigned, I cannot die!” Yu Mu Chun shouted loudly, in the moment between life and death, he took out an Immortal Gu.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing’s movements froze.

His face started to show a struggling expression.

Yu Mu Chun’s heart was pounding loudly, he started at Bo Qing’s changing face anxiously.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing’s expression turned from impassive to confused, he showed pain, hatred, and sadness, he was like a traffic light that was rapidly changing in color.

Eventually, his expression turned lively, there was some intelligence shining in his eyes, it was like a person with dementia suddenly recovering his senses.

He looked at his hand, and looked around at the brutal bloody scene, in the end, he looked towards Yu Mu Chun, asking hesitantly: “You are...”

Yu Mu Chun’s body was full of cold sweat, he replied weakly like he had lost all his strength: “You are finally awake, Mo Yao, it seems that I made the right gamble. It was so close, so close.”

It turned out that the remnant soul inside immortal zombie Bo Qing’s body was Mo Yao’s remnant soul.

Yu Mu Chun’s Immortal Gu awakened Mo Yao’s remnant soul, it caused the heaven’s will which was inside the immortal zombie’s mind to be pushed out.

Without the manipulation of heaven’s will, immortal zombie Bo Qing stopped attacking.

Yu Mu Chun took several deep breaths as he continued: “Remember our conversation back then, in order to revive Bo Qing...”

“Bo Qing!”

Hearing her lover’s name, Mo Yao’s remnant soul shook.

She manipulated the immortal zombie body, nodding as she interrupted Yu Mu Chun: “Then what should I do now?”

Yu Mu Chun looked at Seven Star Child and Song Zi Xing’s corpses, sighing.

If they were still alive, together with Yu Mu Chun, the three of them could use an immortal killer move and teleport all of the immortals to Central Continent’s north-east area.

Heavenly Lotus Sect was in control of that area.

But now that Seven Star Child and Song Zi Xing were dead, Yu Mu Chun could only settle for dealing with Combat Immortal Sect, giving up on attacking Heavenly Lotus Sect.

“I hope that they can be stalled!” Yu Mu Chun took a glance in Heavenly Court’s direction, feeling deeply worried.

Heavenly Court, Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord's expression was dark, he was filled with anger.

He looked at the image, Yu Mu Chun cooperated with immortal zombie Bo Qing and was going to attack one of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, Combat Immortal Sect, he could no longer watch idly.

Even though he was a Gu Immortal from Heavenly Lotus Sect, Combat Immortal Sect was still a sect underneath Heavenly Court.

Right now, immortal zombie Bo Qing had awakened, Combat Immortal Sect was in danger. Only Heavenly Court Gu Immortals could save them!

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord flew out of Heaven Overseeing Tower, summoning Lian Jiu Sheng and Bi Chen Tian: "An issue has occurred in Falling Heavenly River, Bai Cang Shui is dead, Bo Qing revived as an immortal zombie and is attacking Combat Immortal Sect. We have to reinforce them now!"

The two immortals were extremely shocked, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord's words contained information that was simply too hard to believe.

"Go!"

The two immortals were only stunned momentarily.

Immediately after, they reacted and the three immortals used Heavenly Court's teleportation Gu formation and appeared at Combat Immortal Sect's base in a moment.

Looking at the north-west direction, the sky was clear as a grand sword light flew over rapidly.

A battle of rank eights was right before their eyes.

Southern Border, Light Mountain.

Light Mountain was more than two and a half kilometers tall, the light path Gu worms produced on the mountain were well-known over the whole of Southern Border.

This mountain had been in the control of a single force for the last thousand years.

Xiao clan.

Rumors had it that Southern Border's Xiao clan and Western Desert's Xiao clan were of the same origin. A thousand years ago, there was an internal conflict within Western Desert's Xiao clan, resulting in the losing side leaving and moving to Southern Border.

Southern Border's Xiao clan was once a super force. But its final remaining Gu Immortal, Xiao clan's supreme elder, had not appeared for the last hundred years, it caused Xiao clan to fall from a super force to a large scale force.

Xiao clan's current leader, Xiao Shan, stood on a mountain slope, he looked at Xiao clan's main base partway up the mountain as he showed dejection and hatred in his eyes.

A figure ran up the mountain rapidly, landing beside Xiao Shan, paying respects to him: "Xiao Zi Feng greets lord clan leader."

“That Wu Hui, is he still causing trouble?” Xiao Shan asked in a low voice.

Clan elder Xiao Zi Feng lowered his head: “Reporting to clan leader, Wu Hui is still screaming in the hall, requesting us to hand over the culprit that killed his son. The other elders are still holding the ground, don’t worry clan leader.”

Xiao Shan snorted coldly, he gritted his fists: “Wu Hui’s son was the one with ill intentions, trying to target Xiao Cui Er, my daughter was just defending herself. This Wu Hui is actually using Wu clan to cause a ruckus in Xiao clan’s discussion hall!”

“Clan leader, all will be fine if we endure this. Wu Hui is not a problem, but Wu clan is very powerful, we cannot resist them.” Xiao Zi Feng quickly urged.

Xiao Shan’s clenched fists loosened, he sighed deeply, his face was full of fatigue and bitterness.

He waved to Xiao Zi Feng: “Forget it, I will hide at the back of the mountain for the time being.”

Xiao Zi Feng took his leave, vanishing into the forest below.

Xiao Shan sighed at the sky again, his mind was filled with gloominess and anger, he could not calm himself.

But at this moment, he suddenly heard a voice resounding in his mind.

“Come here, my descendant!”

“Who is it?” Xiao Shan was suspicious and uncertain.

This voice spoke again — come here, my descendant!

This voice was very familiar to Xiao Shan. He followed the voice’s direction, entering deep into the region at the back of the mountain, until he reached Xiao clan’s forbidden area.

“This is Xiao clan’s forbidden area, even as the leader of Xiao clan, I have no authority to enter it!” Xiao Shan stopped moving, he was very troubled.

That voice rang in his mind again: “My descendant, you inherited my bloodline, why are you so timid? I am Xiao clan’s ancestor, a Gu Immortal of Xiao clan, quickly come and receive my inheritance, the mission to strengthen our clan is yours to bear.”

Xiao Shan’s eyes shined, his body was trembling in agitation.

Gu Immortal!

Xiao clan’s ancestor!

“Were the rumors true? My Xiao clan has had a Gu Immortal before? This voice is so familiar to me. I am a rank five peak stage Gu Master, other than Gu Immortals, who in this world can transmit their voices into my mind directly?”

“But this is forbidden area in the clan. Anyone who steps into this place will be exiled from the clan, even as the leader, I am no exception!” Xiao Shan thought of this and clenched his fists tightly.

He was engaged in an intense internal struggle.

“No, I must get the ancestor’s inheritance! Wu Hui has caused our Xiao clan to lose face, if Wu clan voices out their support of Wu Hui, will I be able to protect my daughter? Wu clan is so overbearing and forceful, rumors says that they have Wu clan’s Gu Immortals backing them! If I can receive the inheritance and become a Gu Immortal, I will definitely be able to raise Xiao clan’s reputation and change everything!”

Xiao Shan’s face shined with determination.

He hesitated no longer, he walked into the forbidden area.

Under the guidance of the voice, he reached a cave, seeing an Immortal Gu inside the cave.

Before he reacted, the Immortal Gu turned into a mystical light and fused into his body.

“This Gu worm’s aura is preventing me from moving at all through power alone. Is this a legendary Immortal Gu?” Xiao Shan was surprised and joyful.

But when he inspected his body, the Immortal Gu was nowhere to be seen.

He could not find it anywhere.

And at this time, the voice in his head vanished completely.

Xiao Shan felt trepidation and deep suspicion as he walked out of the mountain’s forbidden area.

“Brother, right now, Wu clan’s elder is here to cause trouble, but you as the leader violated our rules and sneaked into our clan’s forbidden area! You are not fit to be the clan leader!” Xiao Mang suddenly appeared, bringing with him a larger number of Xiao clan elders.

Xiao Shan realized the situation was turning bad.

He knew that his twin brother had great ambitions, he had been coveting his position as clan leader.

“This is not what you think!” Xiao Shan wanted to explain himself, but he could not explain himself clearly.

He was unwilling to casually mention the Gu Immortal inheritance, he was afraid that other forces or experts would try to take it away by force.

“Your explanations are just excuses! According to the clan rules, you are no longer a member of Xiao clan! The position of clan leader is mine!” Xiao Mang shouted, his expression was ruthless and furious, excitement and ambition was hidden deep inside his eyes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 963: Yi Tian Mountain!

The speed of the sword light was beyond belief, as it cut through the air.

However, Heavenly Pool, the location of Heavenly Lotus Sect, was still far away beyond the horizon.

“Hmm?” The sword light dissipated, revealing Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body and Yu Mu Chun.

The immortal zombie Bo Qing, which was controlled by Mo Yao’s remnant soul, was now frowning with a sharp gaze, as he used sword light to sweep the surroundings.

The sword light was incomparably sharp, everywhere it went, space rippled and illusions shattered, revealing the true scene.

However, a breath of time later, the true scenery was covered by layers and layers of illusions again.

“This is Heavenly Lotus Sect’s Immortal Gu House, Illusion Garden, which is built on the foundation of illusion path and was created over three hundred years ago by Illusion Demon Immortal Huang Xiao.” Yu Mu Chun immediately explained.

Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body nodded, sighing: “Every age brings forth new geniuses. It seems many geniuses have appeared in Central Continent after my main body’s death.”

Yu Mu Chun spoke: “Illusion Demon Immortal has already died, this Immortal Gu House could beguile and trap us so stealthily that we were only able to realize now, the person who is controlling it should have a very high cultivation!”

Just as he said this, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, Bi Chen Tian and Lian Jiu Sheng appeared.

“Escaping fate is already a great sin. Now, you are thinking of attacking the sects under Heavenly Court, this is unpardonable!” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord immediately shouted.

“You talk too much!” Immortal zombie Bo Qing was furious, he waved his arm, a terrifying sword light quickly slashed.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, Bi Chen Tian and Lian Jiu Sheng cried out as they activated their immortal killer moves.

The sword light was unstoppable, it broke all the killer moves of the three immortals, its might had decreased for the most part in doing this but it still was able to charge towards them.

The three immortals disappeared without a trace, evading this strike.

“Cowards!” Immortal zombie Bo Qing snorted, extremely displeased.

Yu Mu Chun’s eyes shined with sharp radiance, but he let out a sigh of relief inwardly.

The three Heavenly Court immortals were controlling the Immortal Gu House Illusion Garden, combining the strength of three rank eights, using this to be able to trap Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body and Yu Mu Chun in it.

Time passed, several days later.

Southern Border, on the nameless mountain.

Bam bam bam!

Three explosions resounded, and bright light blossomed.

Xiao Mang was sent flying, blood spurted out from his mouth while in the air.

Bam.

A muffled sound echoed.

He did not crash on the ground, but was instead caught by the elders behind him with some difficulty.

Defeated!

Xiao Mang’s face was pale as paper, he opened his eyes wide, staring fixedly at Xiao Shan with hatred and anger.

Behind Xiao Shan stood two demonic path Gu Masters, both rank five experts, one tall and fat, another short and thin.

Several days ago, Xiao Shan had set foot in the forbidden area at the back of Light Mountain, breaking Xiao clan’s rules, and had to be punished. Xiao Mang took this chance to seize authority and kill Xiao Shan.

Xiao Shan ran as quickly as he could, while Xiao Mang hunted him down with the elders.

Their chase had brought them to this nameless mountain peak, Xiao Shan was in a hopeless situation with no way out, just as he was about to be killed by Xiao Mang, two demonic path Gu Masters descended from the sky and saved him.

Xiao Mang was filled with anger at having all his efforts go to waste at the last moment, he pushed away the hands of the elders supporting him as he stood up, shouting at Xiao Shan: “Xiao Shan, sure enough, you were harboring evil intentions! As a clan leader of the righteous path, you were secretly colluding with demonic path Gu Masters!!”

Xiao Shan threw his head back and laughed loudly, his laughter filled with grief and indignation: “I really misjudged you, for power, you were actually willing to kill me! You have such a vicious heart, it is so funny that I always treated you as my only close relative in the world. You can distort the facts as you like, but I believe that others will easily be able to discern the truth.”

“Lord Xiao Mang, the enemy’s strength is great, we should retreat.”

“Right, we have enough time.”

“Xiao Shan is heavily injured and near death, but the two rank five demonic path Gu Masters behind him are in good condition.”

The elders tried to quietly persuade him.

“Hmph!” Xiao Mang spat out some blood and said with disdain, “Those two are also nothing but stray dogs, their cultivation might be high but they don’t have many Gu worms, what are you afraid of?”

Although he said this, Xiao Mang also knew that he would be unable to kill his own elder brother, Xiao Shan, today.

The dark light in his eyes flickered as he internally pondered: “Right now, I already hold the upper hand and also have the basis of righteousness on my side. There is no need to go all-out, after returning to Light Mountain, I can inherit the position of clan leader! At that time, I can use my identity in the righteous path to issue a warrant and bounty for Xiao Shan’s head. Xiao Shan is without a clan now, and with the righteous path’s warrant, he can only live as a fugitive with his strength decreasing constantly. It will be wiser if I bide my time and kill him in the future.”

With these thoughts, Xiao Mang did not stubbornly persist.

“Xiao Shan, you traitor of the righteous path, you will surely die like a dog. For now, I will spare your life, just you wait, I will come to take it in the future! Let’s go!”

After leaving behind these vicious words, Xiao Mang and the elders cautiously retreated.

He was also injured but he still had ample strength left.

The two demonic path Gu Masters did not have many Gu worms and so did not dare to go on a reckless chase, letting them leave.

“Brother Xiao, we meet again!” The tall and fat rank five demonic path Gu Master was called Sun Pang Hu, after he saw Xiao Mang had left, he looked at Xiao Shan with tears in his eyes.

The short and thin rank five Gu Master was called Zhou Xing Xing, he was supporting Xiao Shan’s shoulder while activating a healing Gu worm: “Talk about the past later, heal brother Xiao’s injuries first!”

Xiao Shan’s heavy injuries were quickly stabilized under the efforts of these two Gu Masters.

Xiao Shan had an ashen expression as he heaved a deep sigh: “It is fortunate the two of you were here to help, otherwise I would have died here! But my younger brother is ruthless, he will definitely try to come after me again. He won’t rest until he kills me, I can heal these injuries myself, both of you leave, I don’t want to implicate you two!”

“What are you talking about, back then I was saved by you. My life is yours, brother Xiao!”

“Right! In the past, I had slaughtered an enemy’s family for revenge, but was caught by brother Xiao. When you heard my story, you let me go that very night. This kindness has always been engraved in my mind.”

Sun Pang Hu and Zhou Xing Xing spoke fervently and sincerely.

“Neither of us will leave you.”

“If Xiao Mang wants to battle, he can come, I will fight him to the end!”

Sun Pang Hu and Zhou Xing Xing were extremely firm in their attitude.

Xiao Shan was very moved, his eyes started getting moist with tears: “Sigh, over these years, I have understood this. Who says demonic path Gu Masters are all ungrateful and unkind? Instead, the hypocrites who put on false pretences of kindness can be seen everywhere in the righteous path.”

“Brother Xiao is correct! Many of us in the demonic path stay true to our nature, and the righteous path go through all possible means to kill us. Since the righteous path won’t accept you, we will be a team from now on, and roam the world as part of the demonic path!” Sun Pang Hu spoke boldly.

Xiao Shan fell into silence.

He still had the mindset and ideals of the righteous path embedded in him, and he did not want to join the demonic path.

He knew there was an Immortal Gu hidden in him, he still wanted to restore his position in Xiao clan.

Zhou Xing Xing was observing his expression: “Brother, you may not understand. When people hear how you were expelled out of your clan and are being hunted by an insidious relative, many good people will come to help you. Brother, you have been just, upright and have aided people in need over these years, saving others from disasters without consideration for whether they belonged in the righteous or demonic path. Everyone will be willing to help you, willing to fight for you!”

Xiao Shan frowned, but did not respond.

At this moment, the voice appeared in his mind again: “Fool! Why do you need to rigidly mind the difference between righteous and demonic? Since you inherited my Immortal Gu, you have the ability to create your own Xiao clan and lead it to prosperity! i will give you a task now, listen carefully...”

Xiao Shan was excited, and listened carefully.

The voice in his mind told him that only by passing this test, he could truly earn the inheritance, getting the Immortal Gu and obtaining the method to become a Gu Immortal.

“Gather Gu Masters at this mountain and create a fortified village, and fight off any invading righteous path enemies. As long as it can be maintained for a hundred days, I can pass the test, obtaining the Immortal Gu and becoming a Gu Immortal!”

Xiao Shan’s excitement was hard to describe, he clenched his fists and his eyes shined brightly.

“Good, then let’s go all out! Let these so-called righteous path people look at our might!!” Xiao Shan suddenly spoke boldly.

Sun Pang Hu and Zhou Xing Xing were very happy.

After discussing for a while more, they felt a close affinity with each other, talking and drinking harmoniously.

Xiao Shan saw the timing was right and suggested becoming sworn brothers.

Sun Pang Hu and Zhou Xing Xing exclaimed that this was a wonderful thing!

Immediately, they chopped off a chicken’s head, put drops of the blood into a single bowl of wine, before they all drank and used Gu to make an oath...

After they became sworn brothers, Xiao Shan’s face also regained some rosiness, he stood up and faced the breeze of the mountain as he looked at the scenery in front of him.

He sighed: “The Xiao Shan of the righteous path from yesterday is dead, today, the one standing here is Xiao Shan of the demonic path. This place and I have a fated connection, it allowed me to run into the two of you, this is an arrangement of heaven! I want to build a new village on this mountain, we will welcome any demonic path Gu Masters. Let’s work together and band up to resist the righteous path clans!”

Sun Pang Hu’s face flushed with excitement, giving a thumbs-up as he praised: “Brother, you are truly a great hero with high morals, this is such a grand course of action!”

Zhou Xing Xing spat out saliva, speaking with a dark and ruthless look: “Screw it, I have been hunted everywhere by the righteous path over these years, living a life of a fugitive, I have been dissatisfied with this for a long time. Brother, I support you, we will do it like that!”

“My good brothers!” Xiao Shan grabbed the arms of Sun Pang Hu and Zhou Xing Xing, saying, “The demonic path is filled with mutual suspicion, if we are to accomplish this, we need to set aside our prejudices and doubts, and believe others, abiding by a spirit of loyalty and brotherhood. Our village shall be called Yi Tian Village! This mountain shall be called Yi Tian Mountain!”

Far away, Fang Yuan sighed as he observed all these events.

Indeed, this nameless mountain that hid the Immortal Gu House, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, and the rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie was Yi Tian Mountain.

He had already recognized it the moment he saw this mountain.

It was just that he had not expected the true reason for the battle of Yi Tian Mountain in his previous life to be this.

“My status was too low back then, my vision was only limited to the mortal world. There are so many hidden details to history, who obtained the Immortal Gu House in my previous life?”

Fang Yuan was filled with the desire to explore this.

His gaze moved down again, piercing through the soil, inspecting the Immortal Gu House deep under the earth.

Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage was suppressing the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie, it was extremely strong and the forbidden zone for immortals was caused by its strength seeping to the outside. Clearly, it contained the mysteries of food path, the Gu worms that formed the Immortal Gu House were full and in excellent condition.

And that rank eight immortal zombie, although possessing the Great Strength True Martial Physique, its main cultivation was wisdom path.

He naturally was not willing to be suppressed, and used a certain killer move, attempting to use his battle will to refine the Immortal Gu House.

He did not succeed.

His soul thoroughly died, only leaving behind an empty shell of a body.

But he did not completely fail either.

There were large quantities of his battle will in the Immortal Gu House, these battle wills were already purified by the Immortal Gu House’s strength, becoming pure and ownerless battle will.

When battles occurred on Yi Tian Mountain, the intentions of Gu Masters to fight would form battle will, and resonate with the battle will in the Immortal Gu House, the pure battle will would then gradually turn into the Gu Master’s individual battle will.

If someone turned all the battle will in the Immortal Gu House into their own battle will, they would complete the unfinished last step of the rank eight immortal zombie, that is, refining the Immortal Gu House and becoming the true owner of the Immortal Gu House!

The gambling contest agreed to by the Southern Border Gu Immortals revolved around this point.

First of all, the forbidden zone for immortals had already expanded to ten thousand li. Gu Immortals were unable to personally make a move, so they could only select mortals as their representatives.

Afterwards, they would form a battlefield, only continuous fierce battles could stimulate the battle will of mortal Gu Masters.

Then, the bodies of mortal Gu Masters would be tampered with via a simple wisdom path technique.

Finally, the pure battle will in the Immortal Gu House would convert into the Gu Immortal’s personal battle will.

In conclusion: Gu Immortals would choose certain mortals and turn these mortals into tools, which the Gu Immortal would use to indirectly refine Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

Xiao Shan was the person selected by the supreme elder of Xiao clan.

On his body was not only the Immortal Gu of Xiao clan’s supreme elder, there was also immortal essence and large amounts of the supreme elder’s battle will.

It was just that Xiao Shan was only a mortal, only able to see the vague image of an Immortal Gu, and had no awareness of the truth.

Naturally, besides Xiao Shan, Xiao Mang was similarly a pawn of Xiao clan’s supreme elder.

If it were not arranged by Xiao clan’s supreme elder, how could Xiao Mang coincidentally run into Xiao Shan when he stepped foot in the forbidden area?

These two rank five Gu Masters, standing at the peak of the world of Gu Masters, were both in the dark, both being played in the hands of Xiao clan’s supreme elder.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 964: Gua Lao Borrows Money

Xiao Shan forced Xiao clan’s reinforcements into retreat, and after naming this mountain Yi Tian Mountain, he began to invite demonic path members from all over, building up his forces.

Before he was expelled from the clan, he was known for his grand morals, his social network was extremely large and he had been popular in both the righteous and demonic path.

Xiao Shan’s nature was straightforward, he clearly separated kindness and hatred, and emphasized close connections and loyalty.

On the other side, Xiao clan was weakening, suppressed and pressured by Wu clan and other forces from all sides. Sometimes, even demonic path Gu Masters could not be offended, especially those lone warriors with rank four and rank five cultivation.

These demonic path experts were different from the righteous path experts.

Demonic path experts were loners, acting without scruples, but righteous path experts were bound by morals, family, reputation and so on.

Xiao clan had established a caravan years ago to strengthen themselves. These wandering demonic path experts were treated with even more caution compared to other clans.

Over these last years, Xiao Shan let these demonic path Gu Masters go, or roped them in if he could, but if it came down to killing, he would do it with all his strength and as fast as possible. Occasionally, he even aided some lone cultivators or demonic cultivators financially. Thus, although he was a righteous path clan leader, he had obtained the approval of many Gu Masters of the demonic path.

All these gave Xiao Shan a strong rallying force.

When the news of him creating a fortified village was spread, there were many immediate responses.

A few days later, several demonic path experts traveled from far away to join Xiao Shan.

Moreover, the Gu Immortal of Southern Border intensified the situation in secret, so as to easily put their own pawns in the battlefield.

Thus, more and more demonic path Gu Masters and lone cultivators started joining Yi Tian Village.

In just six to seven days, Yi Tian Village already had over thirty members. Such a speed made even Xiao Shan shocked and surprised.

As the number of people grew, they formed an organization.

Any organization needed to have distinctions in status.

In the world of Gu Masters, the strong were always revered.

Among all these people, Xiao Shan not only had the highest strength, he also had the highest reputation, he was chosen by everyone as Yi Tian Village’s leader, stably placed at the highest ranking.

His two sworn brothers, Sun Pang Hu and Zhou Xing Xing, respectively were placed at the second and third ranks. After all, they were rank five experts, having the highest strength among others.

As for the other people, the vast majority were rank two and rank three, with few at rank four. Their statuses were arranged simply according to their cultivation and strength.

In a mountain cave, Fang Yuan was drinking wine with a Gu Immortal.

This demonic path rank six Gu Immortal was short but had a large head, he was an old man and his name was Gua Lao.

“Here, brother Sheng Ying, give it a sip, how is the taste of my melon wine?” Gua Lao enthusiastically urged Fang Yuan to drink.

Fang Yuan knew Gua Lao’s intention in coming, without saying anything, he drank a mouthful and nodded, critiquing: “Not bad, not bad.”

Although he said ‘not bad’, but Fang Yuan’s expression was impassive and it was clear he had spoken only half-heartedly.

Gua Lao was observing him, he chuckled and pointed outside: “I wonder what opinion brother Sheng Ying has towards this grand contest of Southern Border?”

Fang Yuan calmly replied: “Given that it concerns who Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage will belong to, no one will yield a step. Since everyone is participating in this contest and has joined the agreement, putting forth their wagers, there should not be anyone who will cause trouble.”

In the past, it was always the righteous path who suppressed the demonic path.

Whether it be in the mortal Gu Master world or the Gu Immortal world.

But right now was an exception.

The appearance of the Immortal Gu House completely shook the world of Southern Border’s Gu Immortals. To seize the Immortal Gu House, demonic and lone immortals emerged, forming a huge force that gave the righteous path no choice but to compromise and set up this large gambling contest.

The content of the wager was to select mortals as pawns who would participate in the battle between the righteous and demonic paths in Yi Tian Mountain, helping the Gu Immortal behind them to refine the Immortal Gu House.

But to participate in this huge contest, there were some conditions.

Any Gu Immortal that wanted to participate in this gambling contest had to make a wager. Those who made larger wagers could arrange pawns with higher cultivation and enter the battle earlier.

Finally, when the gambling contest ends, all the wagers would be redistributed.

Each Gu Immortal would be ranked according to the amount of battle will they refined. Whoever had higher quantities of battle will in the Immortal Gu House would accordingly have higher returns.

Naturally, one that refined over fifty percent of the battle will would be the winner who could activate the Immortal Gu House, obtaining the highest returns from their bet.

But other Gu Immortals would also be able to get some profits, they might even be able to get great returns from small bets, earning a huge fortune.

This condition could be considered to be superb!

It was because of this that all the Gu Immortals participating in the gambling contest, be it righteous path, demonic path or lone cultivators, whether they had enmity or resentment, they all subconsciously worked together to maintain this unrivaled gambling contest.

Anyone who attempted to play dirty tricks or acted shamelessly would have their wagers completely confiscated.

Gu Immortals who arrived later could also join in, but they had to take part in the gambling.

And as the gambling contest progressed, if Gu Immortals wanted to raise their bets, they could do so.

And this demonic immortal Gua Lao in front of Fang Yuan was a person who wanted to raise his bet.

But he lacked the capital to do so.

Over these last days, he went around borrowing money, so everyone knew of it. This time, he intentionally came to find Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was giving him the cold shoulder, Gua Lao had no choice but to take the initiative to mention the gambling contest.

Fang Yuan had only given a casual analysis, but Gua Lao squinted and gave a thumbs-up, exaggeratedly smiling: “Brother Sheng Ying, you are right, you have hit the nail on the head. The rules of this contest cannot be broken by anyone. If anyone breaks them, it will be akin to making Gu Immortals of the whole of Southern Border their enemies! So they need to earn capital and participate honestly in the contest.”

“Just look at it, the contest has just started, but Xiao clan’s supreme elder is already at the lead. Xiao Shan is his pawn and from the previous battle of Xiao Shan and Xiao Mang, Xiao clan’s supreme elder has become the first to refine the battle will in the Immortal Gu House. As long as Xiao Shan doesn’t die, his lead will continue increasing.”

Fang Yuan glanced at Gua Lao: “Xiao Shan is a rank five Gu Master and was the first to enter the mountain, Xiao clan’s supreme elder naturally will have a huge advantage. But, he has also paid a large price for this, although he is only a rank seven Gu Immortal, his wagers are the highest, to the extent that even rank eight Gu Immortals cannot match it.”

Gua Lao nodded repeatedly, and grinned, revealing his yellow teeth: “Yes, the earlier we can place our pawns in Yi Tian Mountain, the more beneficial it would be. Of course, the cultivation of these pawns need to be ensured, they should at least be rank four, otherwise they will likely die there and we will just suffer losses. Brother Sheng Ying, I won’t conceal it from you, I really hate not being able to put myself as a wager! I am a bit short on funds right now, brother Sheng Ying, could you lend me some immortal materials? Wait till this is over, and I will return double the amount!”

Fang Yuan smiled: “Sure.”

Gua Lao was joyous, and was just about to say his thanks, when Fang Yuan said: “But we need to set a vow.”

“This is natural, and it is a must as well.” Gua Lao nodded quickly.

Fang Yuan continued: “Also, take out an Immortal Gu as collateral.”

Gua Lao’s joyful expression immediately stiffened: “Brother Sheng Ying, is this a joke? If I had an Immortal Gu, why would I go for this Immortal Gu House?”

Fang Yuan’s expression also changed, with a face filled with coldness, he glared violently and spoke: “Gua Lao, you don’t even have one Immortal Gu, but are actually scheming for this Immortal Gu House? Don’t you think you are indulging in a wild fantasy? Aren’t you too greedy?!”

“Sheng Ying, you...” Gua Lao was just about to flare up, but suddenly he sensed an aura of Immortal Gu from Fang Yuan’s body, no longer concealed.

“He actually has Immortal Gu!” Gua Lao’s heart immediately sank.

Many rank six Gu Immortals did not have even one Immortal Gu.

But Fang Yuan did.

This surpassed Gua Lao’s expectations. As far as he was concerned, any Gu Immortal with Immortal Gu would have some reputation.

But Sheng Ying clearly did not.

He had taken Fang Yuan to be a weak lone immortal, cultivating bitterly in some unvisited area of the world.

But Fang Yuan had Immortal Gu, this caused fear to emerge in Gua Lao’s heart.

With an Immortal Gu, the Gu Immortal’s battle strength would often rise by a large extent. Sheng Ying, with Immortal Gu, was not someone Gua Lao could handle.

Thus, he did not vent his anger and finally forced a smile as he cupped his fists towards Fang Yuan: “I was too abrupt and rude, brother Sheng Ying, please don’t mind it!”

Fang Yuan gave a cold snort: “You can leave.”

“I am leaving, leaving now, farewell!” Gua Lao smiled as he retreated a few steps, before turning around and leaving, not daring to linger.

When he walked out of the cave, the smile on his face disappeared, replaced by shame and anger.

His gaze was cold, as he roared in his mind: “Hmph! Having Immortal Gu is indeed amazing! I shall remember this humiliation. Wait for the day I have an Immortal Gu, I will return this humiliation back to you!!”

Inside the cave, Fang Yuan was thinking.

Gua Lao’s matter made him aware of the gambling mentality of many bottom tier Gu Immortals.

Most of these people did not have Immortal Gu, so they had an extreme thirst for the Immortal Gu House. They all knew that success could not be built on small efforts, but when it concerned themselves, who did not want to soar to the sky with a step and get rich overnight?

The gambling contest in front of them gave these Gu Immortals an extremely favorable environment to compete in.

If it were a normal situation, for instance, finding wild Immortal Gu, the Gu Immortals would engage in fighting each other. These bottom tier Gu Immortals with no Immortal Gu had low battle strength, how could they compete with other Gu Immortals?

But what this gambling contest examined were other aspects, not the Gu Immortal’s own battle strength.

This gave hopes of success to the bottom tier Gu Immortals.

Examples like Gua Lao were not few in number.

Fang Yuan then thought of Xiao clan’s supreme elder.

According to the news, this rank seven Gu Immortal was facing a huge problem. He had barely gotten past extreme danger in his previous tribulation, and his strength had yet to recover. The next tribulation, which would be even more powerful, was already approaching.

Xiao clan only had one Gu Immortal remaining, that was him. Without another Gu Immortal’s support, he would not be able to face this tribulation by himself, and his death was almost certain.

However, this gamble gave him hope of surviving.

If he obtained the Immortal Gu House, he would have huge assurance in getting through this tribulation.

Thus, he brought out all he had and went all in on this gamble, placing the highest wagers. These wagers gave him the qualifications to select two pawns.

Moreover, both the pawns had rank five cultivation. Among them, Xiao Shan was the first to enter the area of the contest, the other, Xiao Mang, would enter the stage after some more time.

Xiao Shan belonged to the demonic path and Xiao Mang belonged to the righteous path, no matter what the result between the righteous and demonic paths was, or how the process went, Xiao clan’s supreme elder was well-prepared with having these two arranged. The two rank five pawns had a low likelihood of death, as time passed, the advantage of Xiao clan’s supreme elder would continue growing larger.

“This time, I intentionally leaked out an Immortal Gu’s aura so as to let other Gu Immortals feel sufficiently cautious and not take me as a weakling.”

“I need to properly participate in this gambling contest. The information exposed from the gambling contest is extremely valuable, it is a most precious opportunity for me to get close to the world of Southern Border’s Gu Immortals and understand their structure!”

“As for this gamble, maybe I can personally take action...” A sharp light flashed past Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 965: Battle of Yi Tian Mountain (1/2)

A forbidden zone for immortals, that was the power of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

This zone now covered thousands of li around Yi Tian Mountain, any Gu Immortal who went in would face huge suppression, if they entered deeply, their lives would be in danger.

Before the gambling contest was set up, the Southern Border Gu Immortals had probed it themselves.

But even the rank eight Gu Immortals returned empty-handed.

And because there was the outside pressure of having too many competitors, this shocking gambling contest was established.

But Fang Yuan could keenly sense that this forbidden zone had a loophole.

This loophole was Immortal Gu.

Immortal Gu could be used in the forbidden zone, but their power was greatly reduced. Xiao clan's supreme elder placed an Immortal Gu in Xiao Shan's body, and left behind immortal essence secretly to protect his life to an extent.

After all, Xiao Shan was a bloodline descendant of Xiao clan's supreme elder.

"Immortal Gu can be used in the forbidden zone, but Gu Immortals cannot enter, does this forbidden zone for immortals target only the bodies of Gu Immortals?"

Fang Yuan thought of this conjecture.

Then, what was the difference between Immortal Gu and Gu Immortals?

Evidently, dao marks were not the answer. Immortal Gu were vessels containing dao marks, while Gu Immortals also had dao marks in their bodies.

Fang Yuan quickly thought of an answer — immortal apertures!

Maybe immortal apertures were the most crucial difference.

Immortal Gu would not have immortal apertures, but Gu Immortals definitely had them. If the forbidden zone targeted immortal apertures, then maybe Fang Yuan could make use of this loophole and attend the battle of Yi Tian Mountain in person!

"I am different from others, I have two apertures. Spring Autumn Cicada is sealed in my first, mortal aperture. My second aperture is dead, most of my Gu worms are stored inside."

"If I can seal my immortal aperture and become a mortal rank five Gu Master again, will I be able to enter the forbidden zone for immortals?"

The more Fang Yuan thought about it, the more hopeful he became.

Even though he did not have the method to seal an immortal aperture, he had the help of wisdom Gu, and with his grandmaster attainment level in wisdom path, he could deduce it himself!

"Furthermore, I have the method to transplant immortal apertures, and succeeded in moving Star Form blessed land. This is very helpful as reference for my deduction."

"Right, I also can look into Blazing Heaven Demoness' fire path aperture taking method, maybe I can gain even more inspiration from it. No, I do not need to focus on her aperture taking method. She created this fire path method after benefiting from an inheritance of Old Immortal Kong Jue, maybe I can get Old Immortal Kong Jue's research gains from her directly."

Fang Yuan's thoughts were churning rapidly.

Old Immortal Kong Jue, a publicly recognized refinement path supreme grandmaster, being on par with Old Eccentric Tian Nan and Long Hair Ancestor. He had the deepest research in immortal apertures and mortal apertures, in terms of depth, it was yet to be surpassed by another.

If he could obtain a portion of his inheritance, Fang Yuan’s deduction of the immortal aperture sealing method would receive substantial and crucial help.

Fang Yuan did not invest much into this gambling contest.

According to the terms of the gambling contest, he could only choose a rank three upper stage Gu Master, and this Gu Master could only ascend Yi Tian Mountain after three months.

He had a lot of immortal materials and had much capital to spare, he could bet heavily. But he had just arrived, if he acted rashly, other Gu Immortals might covet his wealth and place attention on him, it would be dangerous if any rank eight Gu Immortals targeted Fang Yuan.

Thankfully, during the process of this gambling contest, the bet could be raised at any time.

The rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie was important for Fang Yuan’s plans. Other than that, he was also enticed by Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

This was an Immortal Gu House after all!

Furthermore, this Immortal Gu House involved secrets of food path. After so many years, not a single Gu worm had died of hunger.

If he could obtain these secrets of food path, perhaps Fang Yuan would be able to settle his problem of feeding Immortal Gu more easily.

Fang Yuan stealthily left the surroundings of Yi Tian Mountain, using Fixed Immortal Travel to return to Hu Immortal blessed land secretly.

In the following period of time, he kept his attention on the battle of Yi Tian Mountain while deducing the immortal aperture sealing method enthusiastically.

The deduction of the method was very rapid, as expected and worthy of a rank nine Immortal Gu, even though Fang Yuan was only using the light of wisdom, its help towards him was immense.

Over a month later.

News of the righteous and demonic battle of Yi Tian Mountain had spread far and wide. The attentions of almost all experts and large forces had been drawn on this battle in Southern Border.

The first wave of attack since Xiao Shan created Yi Tian Village arrived. This was an expert sent by Wu clan, the super force closest to Yi Tian Mountain.

Wu Shen Tong.

Wu clan elder, rank four peak stage, enslavement path Gu Master.

Enslavement path Gu Masters excelled in fighting large numbers of enemies, but were more vulnerable if personally targeted and fought. Thus, Wu Shen Tong had three rank four Gu Masters around him in protection.

Two of these three rank four Gu Masters were clan leaders of villages that had submitted to Wu clan. The third was a Wu clan elder assigned to protect Wu Shen Tong.

The beast group attacked Yi Tian Mountain like a tide.

The demonic path’s side had just created Yi Tian Village when it got engulfed by a beast group.

Many demonic path Gu Masters died, but relying on Xiao Shan, Sun Pang Hu, and Zhou Xing Xing, these three rank five Gu Masters, Wu Shen Tong retreated with heavy injuries, and two rank four righteous path Gu Masters lost their lives.

Even though Wu Shen Tong’s attack was repelled, the newly created Yi Tian Village suffered a huge blow because of this.

Wu Shen Tong remaining alive caused Xiao Shan and the others to feel unrest.

Just when the three of them were about to take a risk and go down the mountain in their injured states to kill Wu Shen Tong, a demonic path Gu Master ascended the mountain.

Furthermore, he brought Wu Shen Tong’s head with him.

This person was called Lu Zuan Feng, he was a rank five Gu Master, called the Divine Thief in Southern Border. He had a demonic path Gu Immortal backing him, he had once sneaked into Tie clan’s Demon Suppression Tower.

Lu Zuan Feng relied on his infiltration methods to kill Wu Shen Tong and settled Yi Tian Village’s crisis. The first wave of attack by the righteous path thus ended.

Wu clan was unresigned, they quickly sent the second elder to battle. In fact, he was joined by two of Shang clan’s new elders: Yan Tu and Ju Kai Bei.

During the second battle, both sides had wins and losses, they were in a deadlock.

This time, Lan Mei He and Fei You Wang ascended the mountain, joining Yi Tian Village.

These two Gu Masters were not simple, they were famous flying masters in the world of Southern Border’s Gu Masters!

Yi Tian Village thus had the upper hand, and the righteous path members were forced back.

To resist Lan Mei He and Fei You Wang, the righteous path invited a female Gu Master, Hong Fei Yu, she was also a flying master, but belonged to the righteous path.

But Hong Fei Yu alone could not resist the combination of two flying masters of the demonic path.

Hong Fei Yu was at the moment between life and death, when Shang clan’s reinforcements rushed and arrived, it was the White Light Swordsman Wei Yang.

Wei Yang had been nurtured by Shang Yan Fei and had his aptitude raised, his cultivation level was at rank four initial stage. Not only did he save Hong Fei Yu, he even gained much fame.

After Hong Fei Yu was heavily injured and retreated, he fought against both Lan Mei He and Fei You Wang, eventually managing to stall for enough time until more reinforcements from the righteous path came, as Lan Mei He and Fei You Wang were forced to retreat.

After this battle, Wei Yang was acknowledged by both the righteous and demonic paths, joining the ranks of the flying masters. Southern Border’s three famous flying masters became four famous flying masters, with Wei Yang at the top.

With Wei Yang’s addition, the righteous and demonic battle entered another deadlock once again.

However, as the Second Zombie King entered Yi Tian Mountain, enslavement path showed its might again, the righteous path lacked Wu Shen Tong and had no choice but to fall back.

The second righteous and demonic battle came to an end.

“It seems that because of me, Yi Tian Mountain’s battle has undergone some changes.” Fang Yuan watched as he compared it to his previous life.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, during this period, Yi Tian Mountain should have held the upper hand firmly.

This was because Wang Xiao joined Yi Tian Mountain and killed many righteous path experts, he was extremely powerful and had once attempted to force Xiao Shan to give up his role in leading the demonic path.

But on San Cha mountain, Wang Xiao was killed by Fang Yuan, this caused Wang Xiao to not join Yi Tian Mountain this time, and thus they were almost at a disadvantage against the righteous path.

Thankfully for them, Second Zombie King arrived early and saved the demonic path’s position from worsening.

Second Zombie King came from the Southern Border Zombie Alliance branch, he was likely the pawn of a certain Southern Border immortal zombie. He was a rank five peak stage Gu Master, he had once left behind his inheritance on Mu Bei Mountain, causing the rise of an enslavement path Gu Master, Ding Hao.

But Ding Hao had been killed by Fang Yuan in this life.

“In my previous life, Ding Hao sacrificed himself to save the life of his master, Second Zombie King. If Second Zombie King encounters a mishap this time, who would save him?” Fang Yuan was curious.

Conflict in the Yi Tian Mountain battle continued raging, but Fang Yuan was met with difficulty in deducing the immortal aperture sealing method.

He was stuck at a certain point, he had to make use of the foundation of others to rapidly get past it.

Otherwise, with just his own deductions, he would need seventeen to eighteen years.

Fang Yuan sought help from Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Blazing Heaven Demoness had part of an inheritance of Old Immortal Kong Jue, it was enough for Fang Yuan to get through this.

But Blazing Heaven Demoness made use of the chance, asking to borrow Fang Yuan’s immortal killer move, vaguely familiar face.

Blazing Heaven Demoness, Hei Lou Lan, and Fairy Li Shan all wanted to get a share of the action. But the Southern Border Gu Immortals were working together in this gambling contest, they could not interfere.

They were Northern Plains Gu Immortals, once they showed up, the Southern Border Gu Immortals would jointly assault them.

Right now, in the five regions, Southern Border was the least welcoming to outsiders. Eastern Sea was the most open, followed by Central Continent.

Thus, if Hei Lou Lan and the others wanted to interfere, they would need Fang Yuan’s vaguely familiar face.

Fang Yuan was unwilling to lend it, of course.

Lending the immortal killer move was different from lending Immortal Gu.

Once the immortal killer move was lent out, the secrets in it would be learned by other Gu Immortals, they would know its weaknesses and could easily develop ways to counter this immortal killer move.

But Fang Yuan did not have other options and could only agree to it.

He lent vaguely familiar face, but he obtained Blazing Heaven Demoness’ partial inheritance of Old Immortal Kong Jue.

Even though he paid a huge price, he got his reward rapidly.

Getting past the point he was stuck, his speed in deducing the method rose again, it was smooth sailing.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 966: Battle of Yi Tian Mountain (2/2)

Central Continent.

Boom—!

Suddenly, an intense explosion broke the tranquility of the mountain valley.

The aftermath of the explosion created a huge inferno that rapidly spread in all directions.

In just a breath of time, the lush trees in the surroundings were destroyed, and the area became a barren desert.

The eight rank eight Gu Immortals that came from Heavenly Court gradually revealed their figures.

They had formed a circle, each of them heavily injured, their gazes looking heavily at the proud and aloof figure in the center.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing was standing upright and proud like a spear.

He slowly moved his eyes, a sword light suddenly flickered from them.

The eight Gu Immortals were terrified, three even subconsciously retreated a step. In the intense battle earlier, they had suffered a lot under these sword lights coming from his eyes.

However, the sword light in Bo Qing’s eyes died out in an instant.

Afterwards, the lively light in his eyes completely dissipated. His whole body became motionless like a stone statue.

“Success!”

“We finally killed the remnant soul within Bo Qing...”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals let out breaths of relief, they had obtained victory in this battle.

Bo Qing was known as a pseudo-Immortal Venerable, but he had only left behind his corpse, and the remnant soul in it was Mo Yao’s.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals targeted this weak point, using their battle tactics to completely annihilate Mo Yao’s remnant soul. Without the control of the remnant soul, Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body moved no longer.

“It has been so long since I had such a thrilling battle!” A Gu Immortal sighed, deeply moved.

“Fortunately, this immortal zombie Bo Qing had such a huge weakness, otherwise someone among us would definitely be annihilated.”

“It is a pity we couldn’t take it alive....”

“After taking this immortal zombie body to Heavenly Court and storing it properly, I will continue my sleep.”

Previously, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, Bi Chen Tian and Lian Jiu Sheng used an Immortal Gu House, Illusion Garden, to trap immortal zombie Bo Qing and Yu Mu Chun.

Bo Qing battled the three immortals with incredible sword path might. Heavenly Court’s three immortals were no match for him and could only request for reinforcements. Five Gu Immortals from Heavenly Court had no choice but to come out of their rest and enter the mortal world as reinforcements.

The eight Gu Immortals formed an ancient battle formation, and after over a month, they finally killed Yu Mu Chun and extinguished Mo Yao’s remnant soul.

The battle ended, the five Heavenly Court Gu Immortals that were awoken immediately returned to their headquarters and continued to rest.

They had almost no lifespan remaining, they had to treasure every second they had.

Bi Chen Tian and Lian Jiu Sheng also wanted to leave, but their situation was better than the five immortals. They still had time to care for their descendants and sects.

But, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord gave the task of cleaning up the battlefield to Bi Chen Tian, and persuaded Lian Jiu Sheng to go to the riverbed of Falling Heavenly River and search again.

He now was flying towards Heavenly Court.

“Although we have won this battle, my unease has instead increased, and I am feeling very restless, as if an apocalypse is approaching.” Standing in front of Heaven Overseeing Tower, this old rank eight Gu Immortal frowned.

He stepped inside the tower and continued the previous deductions.

“What’s going on?” Soon, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s forehead was dripping with sweat.

His gaze was extremely puzzled.

There was an enormous pressure which made it difficult for him to move forward.

In the past, he only needed to spend a bead of rank eight immortal essence for each step. But this time, he did not know why, but the consumption of immortal essence had doubled!

“Ever since I have been in control of Heaven Overseeing Tower, there has never been such a situation! What’s happening?”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s intuition was urgently telling him: Sword Immortal Bo Qing’s matter was only a prelude, and behind the scenes, there was an even stronger mastermind!

“I understand, it seems someone is secretly hindering me from deducing... haha, if that is the case, then I want to succeed even more, I will walk to the top of the tower. I want to see who it is that has escaped the judgment of fate!”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord continued to climb, his expression was firm with no more puzzlement.

But after he climbed a hundred steps, the wall turned dark.

It was like the darkest, blackest ink had spilled over the whole wall.

There were no more images.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s heart sank: “Who is it? Who is interfering with my deduction! They could actually interfere with a rank nine Immortal Gu House, Heaven Overseeing Tower, to this degree!!”

Time continued to pass.

A month later, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord finally stepped onto the top floor of the tower.

He was extremely exhausted, most of the immortal essence accumulated in his lifetime had been consumed.

He looked at the wall with anticipation.

After the first pitch black wall, he no longer saw other images.

However, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord knew fate Immortal Gu’s might extended over the whole world and could not be blocked, the wall at the end would definitely reveal the true perpetrator behind the scenes.

When he stepped on the top floor, he widened his eyes, gazing impatiently!

At the next moment, his pupils shrunk down to pin-size.

His aged body shook intensely.

The final wall was still pitch black.

Darkness, incomparably deep darkness.

But unlike before, in this darkness, a pair of eyes were shining.

This was a pair of human eyes!

But it was filled with bone-chilling coldness and terrifying killing intent.

They gazed at Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord like a beast hiding in the darkness, waiting patiently for an opportunity, upon which it would charge of the darkness, causing terror over the world.

“You, you are...” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was soaked with cold sweat, he trembled and even his teeth chattered.

After a long while, he barely managed to calm down.

But fear and panic still remained on his face.

“Crisis! A huge crisis! If this is left unchecked, even Heavenly Court will be destroyed. Immortal zombie Bo Qing was no more than a distraction for us. I must awaken many more of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, this is a battle that decides our survival!!”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord did not hesitate, he ran out of the Heaven Overseeing Tower, directly to Floating Maple Cliff.

On Floating Maple Cliff, there was a giant Gu formation.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord decisively activated the Gu formation; a sound of a bell, vast and unparalleled, immediately resounded throughout the sky.

Heavenly Court shook!

At the same time, in Southern Border.

“Finally, the deduction has succeeded.” Fang Yuan had already taken another appearance and stepped onto Yi Tian Mountain, his immortal aperture sealed.

After obtaining a portion of Old Immortal Kong Jue’s inheritance from Blazing Heaven Demoness, Fang Yuan did not encounter any obstacles in his deduction. Using the method of sealing the immortal aperture, Fang Yuan sealed his own immortal aperture and turned into a rank three Gu Master, officially stepping into this huge stage.

At this time, the situation on Yi Tian Mountain had already undergone a huge change.

Large numbers of Gu Masters had entered both the righteous and demonic sides.

The righteous path had initiated the third and fourth waves of offense, both sides suffered heavy losses.

On the demonic path’s side, Second Zombie King had summoned many of his disciples, their zombie army giving a huge headache to the righteous path.

On the righteous path’s side, Wei Yang and Hong Fei Yu had allied, getting an advantage over Lan Mei He and Fei You Wang in the aerial battles.

However, Divine Doctor Sheng Shou was supporting the righteous path.

This person was one of the four great doctors of Southern Border, extremely proficient in healing and treating wounds and illnesses. With him there, righteous path Gu Masters had fewer losses, and most injuries were quickly healed, so they did not fear fighting fiercely.

Xiao Shan knew if this were to continue, the righteous path would continue becoming stronger, thus he decided to make use of a diversion while taking the initiative to attack, beginning the fifth wave of battle between righteous and demonic.

On the surface, he, Sun Pang Hu and Zhou Xing Xing attacked, while Lu Zuan Feng was commanded to sneak towards the rear of the righteous path and try to kill Divine Doctor Sheng Shou.

But the result was, Divine Doctor Sheng Shou was not killed, instead, Shang Fu Xi of the righteous path had planned for their scheme, laying an ambush and killing Second Zombie King.

With Second Zombie King dead, the demonic path’s disadvantage was quickly enlarging.

Around this time, Killer Ghost Doctor Chou Jiu stepped onto Yi Tian Mountain, suppressing Divine Doctor Sheng Shou, salvaging the situation.

Chou Jiu saved many demonic Gu Masters’ lives, and soon took the third highest rank. Lu Zuan Feng was ranked at second while Xiao Shan still was at first.

As for Sun Pang Hu and Zhou Xing Xing, they had already been squeezed out to the fourth and fifth.

Because of Chou Jiu, the demonic path could recuperate and build up strength day by day, and because one of the rising stars of the demonic path, Mo Wu Tian, had joined and challenged many to one-on-one battles, the righteous path had lost many strong warriors.

Shang clan sent Doctor Su Shou, who together with Divine Doctor Sheng Shou, managed to close the gap created by Chou Jiu.

A phantom path inheritor, Yan clan’s young clan leader, Yan Jun, entered the spotlight, he sneaked into Yi Tian Mountain and killed Chou Jiu before swaggering off.

The righteous path’s morale was boosted, making another attack, beginning the sixth wave of battle between righteous and demonic.

However, they fell into the demonic path’s trap.

Chou Jiu had remnant life Gu, as long as his body was mostly intact, he could resurrect. After Yan Jun killed him, he had secretly resurrected while pretending to be dead, causing the righteous path to take the bait.

In the sixth battle, Mo Wu Tian showed his demonic might, killing three rank four Gu Masters in the chaotic battle, his fierce might surged and even Yan Jun was defeated by him and suffered heavy injuries.

The righteous path retreated in defeat, but the demonic path had also incurred huge losses, both sides temporarily rested, trying to recover their strength.

During such a situation, Fang Yuan stepped onto Yi Tian Mountain, joining Yi Tian Village.

He had disguised himself as a rank three Gu Master, and after joining, his status in Yi Tian Village was outside the top one hundred. The higher ups arranged him a position of guarding an archery tower.

Fang Yuan was extremely low profile, working without making any disturbances.

He patiently waited for the first three days, and after seeing no Gu Immortals had appeared to stop him, began to stealthily refine the battle will in the Immortal Gu House.

The number of demonic path Gu Masters who had joined Yi Tian Village had already reached six hundred.

Among these people, some were pawns of Gu Immortals, while some were not. Fang Yuan was hidden among them and was not in the least bit conspicuous.

He was secretly earning a fortune, rapidly refining the battle will in the Immortal Gu House with his wisdom path grandmaster attainment.

Other Gu Immortals could only make their pawns fight and indirectly refine the battle will from this. But Fang Yuan did not need to fight, he could continue to unceasingly refine the battle will. After all, a Gu Immortal was personally making a move, it naturally would be extraordinary.

Day after day passed, the righteous and demonic sides were like two giant beasts, after taking a few breaths, their energy was restored and they began to battle again.

It was the seventh wave of battle, and this was a draw again.

The demonic path made a crafty scheme, cutting off the righteous path’s supply lines. But on the righteous path’s side, Shang clan leader Shang Yan Fei personally arrived with his forces, and used gourmet food box Gu, providing a feast for the army, foiling the demonic path’s scheme.

Next, the clan leaders of Southern Border’s super forces like Yi clan, Luo clan, Yao clan and Xia clan also showed themselves, joining the battlefield.

The battles were getting increasingly heated, affecting the minds of countless Gu Masters and forces.

But from Fang Yuan’s viewpoint, it was simply another ordinary scene.

Righteous and demonic battled, it looked to be extremely brilliant, but in fact the true manipulators were Southern Border’s Gu Immortals.

During these last days, the Gu Immortals had also clashed. Although they did not officially fight, they secretly schemed and strategized, each trying to cheat or outwit one other, making everyone on guard.

Fang Yuan was able to obtain huge amounts of information from this and his understanding of the world of Southern Border’s Gu Immortals increased at a rapid speed.

He had refined large amounts of battle will, but Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage seemed like a bottomless pit.

Time continued to pass, a month had gone by.

On this day, Old Man Yan Shi secretly came to the surroundings of Yi Tian Mountain with over ten Gu Immortals.

He took a deep breath, and said in a slightly shaky tone: “Heavenly Court has already detected this and is preparing for an expedition to Southern Border. Time does not wait for anyone, we can only begin early!”

Whoosh.

The Gu Immortals behind him turned into shadows as they flew in all directions.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 967: Trapping Immortals, Tribulations Fall Like Rain

“Eh, what’s going on?” At this moment, the Gu Immortals of Southern Border, who were situated ten thousand li away from Yi Tian Mountain, looked at the sky one after another.

Even the mortal Gu Masters on Yi Tian Mountain also felt an indescribable chill.

Rumble...

A vague rumbling sound could be heard coming from the sky.

Several breaths later, the rumbling got louder and louder, as if hundreds of people were beating war-drums far away.

Ever since Fang Yuan stepped on Yi Tian Mountain, he had been making use of every second in refining the battle will, but the commotion in the sky right now was getting louder and louder, he had no choice but to temporarily stop his work and look above.

From high up in the air, he saw the sky suddenly brightening with a series of white light specks.

These light specks were extremely vast in scale and densely packed together. They started to fall rapidly and powerfully down towards Yi Tian Mountain.

“This is the thousand pearl-light tribulation.” A Gu Immortal exclaimed in shock.

“Wrong, the thousand pearl-light tribulation only has a thousand light pearls, but this tribulation has at least a hundred thousand light pearls!”

“How could there be a tribulation?” Many Gu Immortals were baffled.

“Could someone be undergoing a tribulation?” Most of the Gu Immortals immediately looked towards Yi Tian Mountain.

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, and he became extremely vigilant.

Soon, he was dripping in cold sweat as he felt waves of immaterial investigative senses scanning his whole body.

Although he had vaguely familiar face, the core Immortal Gu of this immortal killer move was only at rank six. It could deceive rank six Gu Immortals, but facing the inspection of rank seven and rank eight, there was a huge chance of being exposed.

Fang Yuan was filled with anxiety before he finally let out a sigh of relief.

He was not discovered.

“There was no discovery?” The Gu Immortals were surprised.

They searched Yi Tian Mountain and its nearby surroundings, but did not discover any rank five Gu Master that was facing a tribulation.

Just when they were about to continue searching with even more powerful investigative methods, the thousand pearl-light tribulation was already just above the immortals.

“Just in case, we can’t let this tribulation affect Yi Tian Mountain!”

“Right, let’s block this tribulation.”

Some Gu Immortals started guessing, perhaps this tribulation was caused by Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage?

The Southern Border Gu Immortals soon came to an agreement.

According to the gambling agreement, if a menace appeared, the Gu Immortals participating in the gambling contest would band together to obstruct it and protect their interests.

Although the thousand pearl-light tribulation was high in quantity, the Gu Immortals that occupied this place had power in numbers, they included four rank eight, nine rank seven and over ten rank six Gu Immortals.

The immortals made their moves, and soon the thousand pearl-light tribulation was destroyed, with not even one light pearl touching the ground.

It was to the extent that even some Gu Immortals used their methods to draw in layers of clouds, blocking the sky of Yi Tian Mountain, and preventing the mortal Gu Masters from sensing this anomaly.

“Hehehe.” A lone cultivator rank eight Gu Immortal, Peng Shi Long, stroked his beard, laughing, “No matter who it is that is ascending to immortal at this moment, they are quite creative.”

“We need to find this person! The people here are all elite Gu Immortals of Southern Border, we can’t even find a mortal who is facing tribulation?” The rank seven Gu Immortal Ye Qing Tang smiled coldly, being taken as a meat shield by someone else and used as a tool to face the tribulation made this proud Gu Immortal extremely displeased.

“Whose descendant is this mortal? Speak up, avoid losing your face when we find them.” Gu Immortal Wang Kai chuckled.

The immortals looked at each other, but no one stood out.

Rank eight Gu Immortal Ren Hai Yang’s expression turned dark as he shouted: “You don’t know what is good for you! You still want to hide, do you take us as fools?”

“Look, another tribulation is falling.” Suddenly, a Gu Immortal gave a reminder.

The sky was dark, like a giant had coated it with a dense black dye.

At once, the temperature fell and cold air emanated.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Endless ice and snow circled around like sharp blades before pouring down like a storm.

Ye Qing Tang’s expression turned heavy, calling out: “Dark flying frost.”

“Who is facing the tribulation, they could actually attract one of the ten great catastrophes!”

“No that’s wrong, the scale of this tribulation is even greater than the ten great catastrophes.”

“Its here!”

“Hold it back!”

Rumble, lightning flashed and inferno roared as the dark flying frost was destroyed.

Dark flying frost was indeed one of the ten great catastrophes.

After this tribulation, many Gu Immortals suffered injuries. Gu Immortal Gua Lao was heavily injured, and he could not help but think of retreating.

“Strange! Could this be because Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage is about to appear? So the heavens sent down the tribulations? No, this won’t do, I don’t have any Immortal Gu, I can’t stay here, foolishly facing the tribulation, I need to leave this dangerous place before thinking of anything else!”

The moment he thought of this, Gua Lao turned into a ray of light, as he flew away.

“This guy ran quite quickly!” Ye Qing Tang sneered, proudly floating in the air with his hands behind his back. Dark flying frost was strong, but he could still deal with it.

However, many rank six Gu Immortals started imitating Gua Lao.

Most of these people were bottom tier Gu Immortals, with no Immortal Gu, and injuries all over their bodies.

However, at the next moment, Gua Lao’s figure suddenly appeared in the center of the Gu Immortals.

He was stunned, how could he appear here?

Shortly afterwards, many more rank six Gu Immortals were also sent back, appearing beside Gua Lao.

“Ambush! Someone has set a huge space path Gu formation in the surroundings!” Soon, a Gu Immortal reacted and shouted in shock.

Rank eight auras burst out, Peng Shi Long’s eyes let out a ferocious light as they gazed all around: “Who is it, come out!”

“Hehehe....” With a sinister laugh, Old Man Yan Shi appeared with over ten black robed Gu Immortals, encircling the Southern Border Gu Immortals.

Old Man Yan Shi was at the back, his hand pointing towards the sky: “Everyone, a word of advice, the third tribulation is already here.”

Everyone looked up, the sky was packed with lion groups.

Desolate beast, qi grand lion!

These lions had qi path dao marks and could innately fly.

There were over six thousand qi grand lions, the rank six Gu Immortals turned deathly pale.

Rank eight Gu Immortal Jia Yi shouted in fury: “Such little things! Get lost!!”

He waved his sleeve, and a wild wind started blowing.

Giant wind sickles, numbering in tens of thousands, shot in every direction.

The lion group howled in pain, severely injured by the wind sickles, many even died on the spot. The corpses were cut in thousands of pieces, blood started to rain down majestically from the sky, mixed in it were countless bone fragments and crushed flesh.

“Berserk Wind Jia Yi, you are truly mighty!” Old Man Yan Shi lightly smiled, freely giving praise.

Jia Yi, however, frowned. He had sent most of the wind sickles towards Old Man Yan Shi, but the wind sickles were blocked by a Gu formation and were completely destroyed, while the Gu formation only rippled and had suffered no damage, its defensive prowess was beyond imagination.

“Who are these people, what are they aiming for?”

“Scheming against us, they really are audacious, they are seeking death.”

“You dare to oppose Gu Immortals of the whole of Southern Border!”

The Gu Immortals shouted and cursed, while having doubts in their mind.

Time did not permit for them to wait for the response of Shadow Sect, a tribulation was descending again!

Roar——!

A majestic dragon’s cry resounded throughout the surroundings.

Cloud of fire spanned ten thousand li of distance, and started pressing downwards.

“Four inferno clouds tribulation!” Someone shouted.

“Careful, I have faced this four inferno clouds tribulation, it has four layers in total. Each layer above is much more ferocious than the one below.” A fire path Gu Immortal warned.

“Block it!”

“There is also the dragon roar tribulation, this is two tribulations at once!”

“Protect surrounding Gu Immortals, maintain our strength!”

The Gu Immortals shouted one after another, as they worked together to face these tribulations.

“A typical four inferno clouds tribulation covers at most a hundred li, why is this so large?” At Yi Tian Mountain, Fang Yuan also watched with shock.

The clouds drawn in earlier could block the vision of mortal Gu Masters, but could not obstruct Fang Yuan’s gaze.

He felt extremely uneasy.

“I seem to have entered a huge trap. These black robed Gu Immortals are extremely similar to the Shadow Sect Gu Immortals that Hei Lou Lan had described. They actually dared to scheme against so many Southern Border Gu Immortals, what are they trying to do?! It seems these tribulations are not because someone is undergoing tribulation, but their own handiwork.”

With Old Man Yan Shi at the lead, Shadow Sect’s immortals had constructed a giant Gu formation that completely trapped the Southern Border Gu Immortals.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals wanted to escape and tried to break the Gu formation, but their efforts showed no results, thus they could only face the bombardment of the tribulations.

As time passed, the strength of the tribulations became more terrifying, soon even rank seven Gu Immortals felt difficulty.

After another three waves, rank eight Gu Immortals also struggled to cope, their expressions looked unsightly.

It was not that they had not tried breaking the formation, but their attempts had failed.

“Hold back this tribulation, let me do it!” Peng Shi Long decided, activating his trump card.

Waves of light scattered with imposing momentum, but Shadow Sect’s Gu formation only shook three times before stabilizing again.

“What Gu formation is this?!” The Southern Border Gu Immortals’ hearts sank to rock bottom, they were unable to hide their worries.

The tribulations came in succession, and the time interval between each wave became shorter and shorter. Different kinds of tribulations poured down like an endless rainstorm.

The Gu Immortals gradually defended more and attacked less, losing the initiative.

“Persevere!” Jia Yi shouted, “We still have a chance! The tribulations are coming against us continuously, but it is also affecting the surrounding Gu formation.”

The immortals felt a surge of morale.

Despite the fact that some rank six Gu Immortals were already dead, the remaining immortals did not give up.

They held on bitterly, retaining hope.

Once the Gu formation was destroyed by the tribulation, they could escape with their lives.

The situation of the battlefield was observed by Old Man Yan Shi, he saw all the changes clearly.

“Wu Xie.” He softly called.

Behind him, a young man stood up.

He had wavy black hair that draped down to his shoulders. His eyes shined with countless lights of all kind of colors, forming a vortex that was slowly but constantly spiralling.

He had a tall nose bridge, the contours of his lips were like knife carvings, and when they were closed, they gave off a cruel and demonic charm. However, right now, he was concentrating on the sky, his lips opened wide as a smile filled his face, revealing white teeth, unexpectedly appearing somewhat... silly.

“Wu Xie.” Hearing no response behind him, Old Man Yan Shi called again.

“Ah, you called for me, I was looking at the fireworks.” The young Gu Immortal responded with a smile.

Old Man Yan Shi gave a bitter smile: “This is not a simple display of fireworks, these are tribulations, although they look beautiful, they contain fatal danger. These are all the work of heaven’s will, it is attempting to destroy us, it is our greatest enemy.”

The young Gu Immortal immediately revealed an earnest and serious look: “Ah, so it is like that. Then tell heaven’s will to come out, I will take it down!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 968: Ten Extreme Immortal Zombie Lifeless Formation

Old Man Yan Shi sighed: “Heaven’s will is not a physical enemy, it is everywhere, vast and boundless. As long as the five regions and nine heavens exist, heaven’s will is eternal. Even if you destroy a portion of heaven’s will, at the same time, another portion of heaven’s will would be created.”

The young Gu Immortal was stupefied: “Then, then what do we do?”

“What we are doing is defying heaven, so heaven’s will is our greatest enemy. After a hundred thousand years of preparation, we are going to unleash an explosive strike. There is a common saying: man proposes, heaven disposes. But right now, we will be taking action all of a sudden, catching heaven’s will unprepared, this can be considered to be man winning against heaven!”

While Old Man Yan Shi spoke to Wu Xie, he pointed with his finger: “The ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation we set up has already entrapped all the Southern Border Gu Immortals nearby. But only a small portion of this formation has been set, it cannot even display one-tenth of its might. The tribulations are constantly affecting the Gu formation, the formation won’t last long at this rate.”

“Next, I and some other Gu Immortals will sacrifice our souls in setting up this formation. With this, the formation can display ninety percent of its might, only lacking a step for completion. The Southern Border Gu Immortals will have no more chance to escape.”

“So powerful!” The young Gu Immortal stared with wide opened eyes, looking blankly.

Old Man Yan Shi continued in a serious tone: “After I die, you will be the strongest of us. You need to remember, you were born from a dream realm, and only have eighteen hours of lifespan in total. Every two hours, your cultivation will rise by one rank. Right now, you have just advanced to rank seven, your lifespan only has four hours remaining. The stronger you become, the closer your death approaches. When you advance to rank nine, no one can defend from even one attack of yours!”

“Rank nine is so powerful?” The young Gu Immortal had a look of ignorance.

Old Man Yan Shi chuckled: “Of course. Rank nine is the limit in the whole world, it is the highest summit, this world cannot have rank ten, so rank nine is the strongest!”

“I can only live for four hours, isn’t the time too short? After four hours, will I die? Death, what is it?” The young Gu Immortal asked questions one after another.

Old Man Yan Shi patiently explained: “Everything has been planned properly, four hours is more than enough. Should the plan fail, even if you live longer it won’t change the outcome.”

“As for death...”

Old Man Yan Shi paused, before speaking slowly with a quiet and deep voice: “Death is the end of life, and is also the beginning of life.”

The young Gu Immortal scratched his head, not fully understanding this.

Old Man Yan Shi took a deep breath, his emaciated, aged body trembled in the wind, as if he would be blown away the next moment.

He gazed far away.

His eyes did not have whites, they were pitch black, but right now countless inverted images emerged in them.

In the inverted images were Fang Yuan, Bai Ning Bing, the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, Southern Border Gu Immortals, Yi Tian Mountain, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage...

“It’s time.” Old Man Yan Shi spoke, “But before I die, I will use my remaining lifespan to deduce for you. Remember my words, they will provide huge help to you.”

After he finished speaking, Old Man Yan Shi’s life force started to quickly weaken.

The next moment, he suddenly opened his eyes, for the first time his face showed bewilderment, seemingly being puzzled and terrified of the result of the deduction.

He turned his head with difficulty, and looked at the childlike Gu Immortal with an extremely complicated gaze.

His lips squirmed a few times, before he finally let out several words: “One of... us... be careful... failure...”

He revealed the heavenly secret with extreme difficulty, his body started turning into powder while he spoke, dissipating in the wind.

When he said ‘failure’, he had no more time remaining, he completely dissipated and unraveled.

His soul was absorbed by the formation, completely merging in an instant.

Not only Old Man Yan Shi, a number of Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals also sacrificed themselves, their souls merging with the formation.

Ninety percent — Ten Extreme Immortal Zombie Lifeless Formation!

A vast radiance suddenly soared to the sky.

At this moment, even the mighty heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities seemed to dim and lose their luster.

The radiance was so dazzling, all the Southern Border Gu Immortals had to tightly close their eyes.

The radiance passed in an instant and the Southern Border Gu Immortals quickly opened their eyes.

The entire area was covered by a gigantic Gu formation.

Ten Gu Immortals stood in the air, separated from each other, standing at the outermost periphery, seemingly encircling the group of Southern Border Gu Immortals.

Among them, nine Gu Immortals wore black robes, their appearances covered under their hoods, veiled in mystery.

The last one was the young Gu Immortal, Ying Wu Xie. He looked all around him with curiosity. After all, he had begun life just fourteen hours ago, it was understandable he had a mindset of exploring the novelty of this world.

“What is going on?”

“What happened? This Gu formation has suddenly become much more powerful!”

Previously, under the bombardment of the tribulations, the formation had already been swaying unstably, but now it appeared like a giant reef at the seaside, unbreakable by the storm, standing firm and stable like a mountain.

Sensing this situation, the hearts of the Southern Border Gu Immortals sank.

Rank eight Gu Immortal Ren Hai Yang stopped protecting the rank six Gu Immortals, and chose a direction to attack the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation.

“Merely putting up a facade, die!” He shouted as he clapped his hands, a giant tsunami rose from thin air, the water was incomparably vast, with a roaring sound, it fiercely charged towards a black robed Gu Immortal.

“Protect him!” The other three rank eight Gu Immortals exerted themselves to block the tribulations overhead, protecting Ren Hai Yang.

With their help, Ren Hai Yang had less pressure on him, he laughed heartily as he stopped holding back and activated his immortal essence again.

Waves after waves erupted, giving a feeling of covering the sky and the sun, as if an ancient beast had opened its mouth to devour heaven and earth!

Wu Xie wanted to go help, but was stopped by a black robed Gu Immortal beside him: “Stay at the formation core where you’re located, don’t move recklessly. He can deal with it.”

Sure enough, the mysterious Gu Immortal who faced the tsunami, suddenly sent out a burst of flames that soared to the sky.

In an instant, with the black robed Gu Immortal at the center, the surroundings turned into a seething world of lava.

Waves over thirty meters in height smashed into the formation, and evaporated into white vapor.

Whoosh...!

Immediately afterwards, the fire roared as it spread quickly, the intense temperature clearing up the vapor in an instant.

“Such power... I almost cannot control it!” The black robed Gu Immortal was pleasantly surprised.

He stood proudly in the center of the lava, the black robe on him was already mostly destroyed, revealing his true appearance.

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, he recognized this person.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals also exclaimed in surprise: “You actually are a ten extreme immortal zombie — Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance!”

This person was precisely the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance zombie that had participated in the hundred days battle and had successfully escaped. After he was captured by Old Ancestor Xue Hu, he was then saved by Blazing Heaven Demoness and others sent by Zombie Alliance.

Who could have thought he would actually appear here!

“Could it be that the party scheming against the Southern Border Gu Immortals is Zombie Alliance? That can’t be! If it were Zombie Alliance, it would be impossible for Blazing Heaven Demoness to not know of it. Perhaps...”

Shadow Sect!

These two words suddenly jumped into Fang Yuan’s mind.

Fang Yuan’s whole body shuddered, the situation was becoming worse. His own circumstances were actually similar to the Southern Border Gu Immortals, he was also trapped here.

Ren Hai Yang’s attack failed and he could only discontentedly retreat.

The tribulations from the sky rained down like a storm, not only did they not halt for even a moment, their power also continued to grow greater.

The air was mixed with constant sounds of shouting and screaming.

The rank eight Gu Immortals could hardly look after themselves, many bottom tier rank six had already lost their lives.

These Gu Immortals, who stood high and mighty above the masses under normal circumstances, were as weak as chicks and pups in front of the tribulations.

Many of the rank seven Gu Immortals could only be carried along by the tide, like a small raft in a stormy sea, they had no control over their circumstances and with any slight carelessness, they could be swallowed by the waves.

The tribulations were very difficult to face, but the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation firmly withstood them all and was unshakeable, while the Southern Border Gu Immortals were in a predicament.

At this juncture of life and death, they let go of any previous enmity and collaborated.

They soon realized their only remaining path to survival.

That was the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage!

This Immortal Gu House had extraordinary defensive strength, it could block the vast and boundless tribulations, and protect the Gu Immortals.

At the same time, the Immortal Gu House's offensive prowess was also the most suitable weapon to break through the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation.

The Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage that lay deep under the earth was the hope of the Southern Border Gu Immortals!

Although the forbidden zone made it extremely difficult for the Southern Border Gu Immortals to approach in person, it did not damage Immortal Gu. Though the powers of Immortal Gu were weakened greatly in there, they still surpassed the vast majority of mortal methods.

“Combine our strength to bombard Yi Tian Mountain and get hold of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage!” Gu Immortal Jia Yi shouted.

However, the only remaining ones who still had such ample strength left were the four rank eight Gu Immortals.

The rank seven Gu Immortals, dodging and defending desperately from the tribulations, had no energy to spare.

The four rank eights attacked furiously, but it did not affect Yi Tian Mountain.

The thick layer of clouds above Yi Tian Mountain had been infused with the power of the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation, and could defend from the powerful attacks.

It absorbed all the attacks, clouds and fog surged intensely for a while before it was calm again.

The four rank eight Gu Immortals' efforts showed no results.

Their eyes shone with a ferocious light, they clenched their teeth as they attacked without stop, their expressions gradually turned frantic.

On Yi Tian Mountain, it was still a scene of serenity.

Mortals were all kept in the dark, knowing nothing about the blood-curdling scene above them.

So long as a fraction of the tribulations leaked out, they could destroy Yi Tian Mountain completely, and all the mortal Gu Masters would turn into dust.

Fang Yuan gazed at the sky heavily.

“Was there such a situation in my previous life as well? None of us knew death was right above us. Calm down, calm down!”

Fang Yuan took a few deep breaths, and forcibly dispelled his nervousness and unease, before starting to think.

The shocking and enormous action taken by Shadow Sect schemed against the Southern Border Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan was also trapped within and could not extricate himself.

“Although Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan have joined this gamble, they are currently in Xiao Hun blessed land, using Luo Po valley to cultivate their souls. This Gu formation cuts off links between the inside and outside, it even restricts all my communication methods!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 969: Losses and Deaths are Natural

“Even if I still had self strength Immortal Gu, rank seven battle strength is simply not enough in this situation. The top priority now is still Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage. The Southern Border Gu Immortals outside the forbidden zone already have no hope of taking this Immortal Gu House. But I still have a chance!”

“Only with the help of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage will I have hope of escaping! Otherwise, I can only use Spring Autumn Cicada.”

Fang Yuan thought rapidly, the only chance in front of him was to become the new owner of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage!

He had Fixed Immortal Travel.

But this Immortal Gu was in his immortal aperture.

The aura of Immortal Gu could be easily detected, and they could only be kept safe when stored within an aperture.

However, Fang Yuan had already sealed his immortal aperture.

If Fang Yuan were to break the restriction of the forbidden zone, he would be destroyed at the first moment. He simply would not be able to last three breaths of time to activate Fixed Immortal Travel.

However, Spring Autumn Cicada was not under this seal.

Spring Autumn Cicada was Fang Yuan’s first vital Gu, it had long ago been placed under a different seal in his first aperture.

After all this time, Spring Autumn Cicada had already recovered for the most part, and even though it was heavily sealed, it was already giving huge pressure to Fang Yuan’s first aperture.

Prior to this trip, it was not that Fang Yuan had not considered sealing Fixed Immortal Travel and other Immortal Gu in his first aperture just in case something happened.

But it simply got nowhere.

The aperture could store some mortal Gu, but containing a second Immortal Gu was impossible.

“Even with Fixed Immortal Travel, I am afraid...” Fang Yuan’s gaze pierced through the cloud layer, falling upon the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation, his breathing turned somewhat rough.

Among the Southern Border Gu Immortals, there were space path Gu Immortals as well as space path immortal killer moves. But none of them were able to do anything.

Clearly, this formation restricted space path as well, its defense was extremely tight, with no loopholes that could be exploited!

Gu Immortals continued to die miserably under the tribulations.

The four rank eight Gu Immortals were also injured, they knew that the longer this continued, the lower their chances, they had no choice but to work together and break through simultaneously.

“You are all flies trapped in a web, where can you escape?” A black robed Gu Immortal Gu blocking their way sneered, his aura was surging as his hood swayed.

“Northern Dark Ice Soul!” Peng Shi Long shouted in shock.

Frost energy spread rapidly, a crystalline ice wall that was dozens of meters tall spanned in front of them all.

While the four immortals were obstructed, a lightning strike smashed down on them!

“Snow war tribulation lightning!”

Typical snow war tribulation lightning was already one of the ten great catastrophes. But this tribulation lightning in front of them had multiple bolts branching out, its might over dozens of times stronger!

When it rains, it pours, the four immortals did not dare to face such lightning head on. Among them, one activated a time path killer move to slow down the lightning, which gave the four immortals time to move away.

The snow war tribulation lightning continued on its path, as it struck the Northern Dark Ice Soul immortal zombie’s crystalline ice wall.

A huge hole was pierced through the icy wall, the Northern Dark Ice Soul immortal zombie snorted as he suffered minor injuries.

“Heaven’s will!” The Northern Dark Ice Soul immortal zombie stared fiercely at the sky.

The four Southern Border rank eight Gu Immortals changed their direction, towards another area of the Gu formation.

“You shall not pass.” The black robed Gu Immortal located here, chuckled.

Boom!

Both sides attacked each other, they fought for a long time, but they were evenly matched.

The four immortals were obstructed and their momentum was halted, but the black robed Gu Immortal also did not have it easy.

“Carefree Wisdom Heart Physique!”

This was another immortal zombie of the ten extreme physiques.

"You... you are Shang clan's Shang Gui Cai!"

Peng Shi Long frowned, recognizing the black robed Gu Immortal's identity.

"Shang clan's first supreme elder and I have a close friendship. As a member of Shang clan, you actually joined a demonic organization, bringing disaster to the world! A prodigal son who returns is immeasurably precious, you still have time to repent! Otherwise, if this leads to catastrophe, you will implicate your clan as well."

The black robed Gu Immortal sneered with disdain: "What do you understand? Shang Gui Cai is just an identity I used after soul replacement, what is mere Shang clan? How can it compare to my great plan?!"

Boom!

A lightning bolt of the tribulation struck the four immortals, causing them to be on the verge of collapsing.

"Don't bother with him, let's change to another direction!"

"Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance, Northern Dark Ice Soul, Carefree Wisdom Heart... the ten extreme physiques that one seldom sees in a hundred years are actually appearing one after the other, I am afraid this is not a coincidence."

"This Gu formation should be using the ten extreme physiques to garner such huge power!"

"That means he is the only flaw!!"

After they were thwarted by the Carefree Wisdom Heart immortal zombie, the four immortals quickly communicated and fixed their gazes at the young Gu Immortal Ying Wu Xie.

Among all the Gu Immortals present, he was the most peculiar.

He was alive, and at the same time, his aura revealed he did not have one of the ten extreme physiques.

The four immortals bore heavy injuries as they charged towards Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie's heart was thumping, he thought frantically: "What to do? What to do? They are coming over!"

"Don't be nervous, use your most proficient method." The black robed Gu Immortal beside him immediately reminded.

"I am not nervous, I am not nervous!" Ying Wu Xie took a deep breath, his breathing, however, was rushed.

But as the four immortals neared him, Ying Wu Xie thought of the scene when he was born.

He had been born from a dream realm.

When he opened his eyes, the first person he saw was Old Man Yan Shi.

Old Man Yan Shi had chuckled when sizing him up with his black eyes, his tone hardly concealing his happiness: "Good, good, good. Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, you are the greatest accomplishment of my dream path research! Since Bo Qing is dead, you will replace him, becoming our greatest strength in suppressing the situation.”

“Who are you, who am I?” Ying Wu Xie curiously asked.

“I am you, and you are me. I am Old Man Yan Shi, and you... shall be called Ying Wu Xie.” Old Man Yan Shi chuckled.

He then lightly waved his arm, countless thoughts were transferred into Ying Wu Xie’s mind.

Ying Wu Xie felt information flowing into the depths of his mind — time is limited, I can only impart an immortal killer move to you. Although it doesn’t have any killing power, it is the pinnacle of dream path achievement currently in the five regions, at the forefront of this era. Even those Heavenly Court Gu Immortals are far behind. As the saying goes: ‘When you have the skill, you can eat your fill’! Learn it properly, when you become a Gu Immortal, I will give you a complete set of Gu worms for you to speed up your practice at that time!

...

The recollection stopped, the four immortals had already neared him. Among them, Berserk Wind Jia Yi was at the lead!

Ying Wu Xie’s eyes suddenly let out a sharp light.

He slowly spoke, like he was reciting: “Immortal killer move — Lead! Soul! Into! Dream!”

The four immortals slowed down sharply, and were extremely vigilant, as if they were facing a powerful foe.

However, there was no movement even after several breaths of time.

“Kid, you actually dared to trick us!” Peng Shi Long was about to attack in fury.

Right at this time, the rank eight Gu Immortal Jia Yi, however, began to fall down.

“What’s going on?” Just when Peng Shi Long and the rest were bewildered, the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation sent out an incomparably swift attack at Jia Yi.

Jia Yi made no movement, the layers of heavy defense over his whole body began to slowly dissipate.

The remaining three immortals quickly moved to block the Gu formation’s attack.

Jia Yi was still falling.

Zzz... Zzz...

He had actually fallen asleep!

“That kid’s behind this!!” Ren Hai Yang was grim and frantic.

The enemy was only a rank seven Gu Immortal, but Jia Yi was struck by his immortal killer move, putting up no resistance!

What’s more, the layers of defense over his whole body showed no effects!

What killer move was this?!

“Careful!” Peng Shi Long exclaimed.

Another form of tribulation lightning descended, this time, countless bolts of falling star lightning struck at the speed of light, reaching the Southern Border Gu Immortals in an instant.

In this wave of tribulation, most of the Southern Border Gu Immortals lost their lives.

Even the rank eight Gu Immortal Jia Yi, renowned as Berserk Wind for hundreds of years, was turned into countless pieces by the falling star lightning.

Peng Shi Long and the others were not even able to take care of themselves, they simply had no time to save him.

“We are finished!” The three rank eight Gu Immortals started to despair.

Ying Wu Xie was indeed the flaw in the formation, but his battle strength far surpassed the imaginations of the three immortals.

This unprecedented dream path killer move directly sent Jia Yi into deep sleep, unable to wake up.

Jia Yi died, the remaining three immortals’ momentum immediately slowed, and their hopes of breaking through became miniscule.

“Hold on!” On Yi Tian Mountain, Fang Yuan, who had been observing the battlefield, also started to feel anxious.

Even if he became the owner of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, with just his strength, it would be hard to activate the enormous Immortal Gu House. It would be like a lone person controlling a battleship, it would be extremely difficult for him to make use of it.

So, he had to ally with the Southern Border Gu Immortals.

The more Gu Immortals in the Immortal Gu House, the more immortal essence would be consumed, the more power the Immortal Gu House could unleash. Just with Fang Yuan alone, it would be impossible to increase the Immortal Gu House’s strength to the level where it could break through the formation.

Time passed, the three rank eight Gu Immortals were extremely exhausted, let alone the few remaining rank seven Gu Immortals who were fleeing desperately from the tribulations.

When Ren Hai Yang perished under the tribulations, the remaining two rank eights had lost all hope.

“It’s over now!” Fang Yuan exhaled painfully, “Sigh, now I can only continue with my disguise and hope I won’t be discovered...”

But right when the rank seven and rank six Gu Immortals had all died, with only the two rank eight Gu Immortals remaining, Yi Tian Mountain suddenly began to shake.

Soon, the tremor increased rapidly.

The earth was shaking!

“What’s going on?” The tremor attracted the gazes of the two rank eight Gu Immortals.

“Could it be that Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage has been obtained by you?” The two rank eight Gu Immortals said to each other with strange tones.

Both were stupefied, realizing it was not due to them.

Fang Yuan’s body shook, he had yet to refine the Immortal Gu House, so who was it?

Boom!

Boulders cracked, the ground opened up, and from the huge rift jumped out a figure.

The Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie!

He had actually gotten free of the Immortal Gu House’s suppression, and flew to the sky!

However, before Fang Yuan and the others could react, a cold snort resounded throughout the scene: “You want to escape fate in front of us? Die!”

A beam of light shot down from the sky.

Rank nine Immortal Gu House — Heaven Overseeing Tower!

Heavenly Court immortals had arrived.

The pure white beam of light was extremely terrifying, breaking apart the ten extreme formation like snapping a rotten branch. The two Southern Border rank eights were immediately exterminated.

“Damn it!” The rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie was not able to dodge, and could only roar in extreme unwillingness as he was turned into fine powder by the beam of light.

The beam of light continued its path as it shot down onto Yi Tian Mountain.

“Am I going to die....” Fang Yuan raised his head and clenched his teeth, all the muscles in his body tensed.

A rank nine Immortal Gu House’s full power attack, he had no way to defend from it.

He only had one remaining trump card — Spring Autumn Cicada!

At the next moment, Fang Yuan self-detonated.

It failed!

Spring Autumn Cicada was carrying Fang Yuan’s will and had just entered the river of time when it suddenly crumbled, exploding into countless tiny fragments.

Fang Yuan was dead!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 970: Rebirth, Ghost Face, Red Lotus!

Legend says there was a river in this world.

It connected the beginning and the end, it had hidden causes and effects, flowing to every part in the world, it was everywhere.

With its irrigation, the world could operate normally and all things were able to change.

This river was called the river of time.

This was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, a place where time path flourished, and countless time path Gu worms lived and propagated.

The endless river flowed wantonly without pause.

The river was vast and boundless, its tides rose and fell along with the surging waves.

Each drop of the water of time was pale and colorless, but innumerable droplets of water crashed, intertwined, collided, and spun all the time, giving off a brilliant show of lights.

These brilliant lights were in all kinds of shapes and colors, and were hard to put into words. Fang Yuan felt this was one of the most beautiful sights in the world.

When the rank nine Immortal Gu House, Heaven Overseeing Tower, sent out the attack which it had prepared for a long time, Fang Yuan was like a bystander that had been implicated, unable to avoid it.

His only remaining option was to activate Spring Autumn Cicada.

However, the rank six Spring Autumn Cicada had a huge flaw. There was a chance of failure every time it was used!

At Qing Mao Mountain, Fang Yuan successfully activated it once.

At San Cha mountain, Fang Yuan successfully activated it again.

If his previous life of five hundred years was counted, then Fang Yuan had already successfully activated Spring Autumn Cicada three times.

Now, he had finally failed.

Spring Autumn Cicada’s activation failed.

Although his will entered the river of time, at the moment of activation, Spring Autumn Cicada self-detonated, turning into countless fragments.

Fang Yuan’s will was like a baby that had lost the small boat it was in and was drowning.

The surging river of time would engulf and destroy Fang Yuan’s will in an instant, not even a trace would remain.

“In the end, I still failed...”

At the moment of death, Fang Yuan’s remaining will was strangely tranquil.

There was no worry, no discontent, and no regret.

When he had first chosen this path, he had already expected the situations that could occur, the situation right now had already been within Fang Yuan’s consideration.

He could do nothing now.

He had already done everything he could.

“If a chance was given to me again, I would still choose to live this way. Hehehe, so be it, my story as a Gu Immortal shall end here. Although I did not leave behind any biography or inheritance, but... it doesn’t matter.”

Fang Yuan’s will was quickly dissipating.

He was tranquil, even feeling happy in a way.

If he still had a face, the corners of his lips would probably be curled up into a smile right now.

Dying while pursuing one’s goal, what regrets could he have?

“Hehehe... hmm?”

Fang Yuan’s laughter abruptly stopped, a strange change was occurring at this moment.

From the remote and grand river of time, a ghost face suddenly came out.

The ghost face first looked at Fang Yuan’s remaining will and made faces, seemingly in silent mockery.

Then, the pitch-black ghost face’s cheeks swelled up, its expression seemed like one of extreme suffering, like it was going to vomit.

A giant flower bud, dripping wet, came out from the ghost face’s mouth.

The ghost face’s mouth almost ripped apart, its lips had stretched to an exaggerated degree, even reaching its ears.

After vomiting out the flower bud, the ghost face relaxed before starting to make faces at Fang Yuan again, it was amusingly comical, but at the same time was a ghastly and terrifying smiling expression.

And that flower bud started to slowly blossom in the river.

Time seemed to have stopped at that moment.

In the blink of an eye, the flower bud opened, turning into an enchanting red lotus!

From the center of the lotus shot out a slightly red light ray that landed at the area where Spring Autumn Cicada had shattered, the time in the red light began to turn back.

At the same time, the ghost face that had carried the red lotus slowly sank down into the river.

Like a movie being played backwards, everything began to go backwards.

As if water spilled from a basin was returning.

Fang Yuan’s will had almost completely dissipated, the scant few bits remaining were negligible. But under the illumination of the red light, his will began to rapidly restore and countless Gu worm fragments also began to appear.

And when these Gu worm fragments joined together, they turned into an intact Spring Autumn Cicada!

Spring Autumn Cicada carried Fang Yuan’s restored will, and began to set on its path again.

The red light dissipated, the red lotus immediately scattered, and that ghost face also had been completely washed down into the endlessly surging river of time.

It was as if everything had been an illusion.

However, Spring Autumn Cicada was already forcibly restored.

It carried Fang Yuan’s will, carrying Fang Yuan’s remaining hopes as it flowed in the river.

Flowing backwards....

Returning to the past!

...

Star Form blessed land.

Poisonous fog was spreading, poisonous blood was boiling, three layers of Gu formations were already destroyed by corrosion, the surrounding land turned into a thin layer of poisonous swampland.

Fang Yuan’s face was stern.

“Next is the most troublesome and difficult to process immortal material, earthly limit astral qi.”

He took out an immortal material and held it in his hands.

This Gu refinement material was very peculiar, it was made up of soil and qi. They gathered into a lump.

At the top was light azure colored astral qi, below was black soil.

Astral qi was the heaven qi found up in the nine heavens. Outside the immemorial nine heavens was a thick wall of astral qi. If a Gu Immortal wanted to explore the nine heavens, they would need to break through the astral qi wall.

Meanwhile, the black soil was made up of the essence of earth qi condensed from the ten depths.

Heaven and earth qi could not coexist, but at this moment, this earthly limit astral qi was joined together in harmony. Not only were they existing peacefully, they were converting into one another constantly. Black soil turned into astral qi while astral qi turned into black soil.

Fang Yuan shook it by moving his hands rapidly, as this lump of earthly limit astral qi melted, fusing with the black soil and becoming a lump of fog.

But after shaking, after a dozen breaths, the black soil sank while the astral qi stayed on top. Black and white was separated again, the two were rotating, it was a mystical sight.

“Processing such an immortal material is most troublesome. Ordinary refinement path killer moves cannot deal with it perfectly. Only the four publicly recognized strongest immortal killer moves to deal with immortal materials — slumbering lightning python, reflect snow, muffled thunder stone drum, and wind grind, can complete this step instantly. Unfortunately, I do not have any of these four immortal killer moves, to process the earthly limit astral qi, I can only put in much time and effort.”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts flashed as he moved his feet, his huge body shot into the air, he leaped and jumped into the turtle shell, into the poisonous blood.

Boom!

Fang Yuan flashed his sharp nails, causing injuries on his six monstrous arms, he next slashed at his chest, back, and other areas, creating openings on his skin.

Blood refinement killer move — Blood Trace Travel.

From these injuries, traces of blood appeared.

The blood traces quickly fused into the dark purple poisonous blood, the poisonous blood in the turtle shell was drawn away, it moved into Fang Yuan’s wounds.

Intense pain assaulted him, Fang Yuan snorted.

Immortal zombies did not have a sense of pain, Fang Yuan could feel pain because he used Gu worm methods. He needed to feel pain so that he could know what step the immortal materials were at.

Fang Yuan’s blood and the poisonous blood in the turtle shell acting as a pot continued to fuse and circulate, they were entering and exiting Fang Yuan’s body.

After this process stabilized, Fang Yuan took out the earthly limit astral qi and swallowed it.

Gulp, the earthly limit astral qi entered his stomach.

This was his own original method, created in his previous life, an abnormal technique using blood path to refine Gu. He called this the flesh body blood refinement technique.

The earthly limit astral qi entered his body, it was engulfed by the blood and slowly melted into the blood.

Blood flowed out of Fang Yuan’s body through the wounds, into the turtle shell pot, and sank to the bottom.

At the same time, the other poisonous blood in the pot flowed into Fang Yuan’s body through the wounds, engulfing the earthly limit astral qi again.

Time slowly passed, three days and two nights later.

Fang Yuan was covered in wounds, the pain made his face distorted, his eight monstrous arms were inserted into the poisonous blood, his fangs were exposed and his eyes were red, he was breathing heavily like an ox.

“Still... still a night remaining, I need to completely process all the earthly limit astral qi in my body... as long as I can get past this step, the most difficult part of refining change form Immortal Gu would be over... uh!"

Suddenly, Fang Yuan's pained expression stiffened.

Under his deep frowning expression, his bright eyes suddenly showed confusion, almost losing all their luster.

When refining Immortal Gu, one had to maintain high degrees of concentration, how could he be allowed to be distracted?

Pff—!

He immediately spat out a large mouthful of poisonous blood.

Shortly afterwards, he fell down heavily in the poisonous blood in the giant turtle shell, raising a huge wave of blood.

The bloody wave splashed out of the turtle shell, into the grassland; soon, a large patch of healthy green grass turned into dark red smoke due to the corrosion.

"Master!" Star Form land spirit shouted worriedly, jumping into the turtle shell.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan's head emerged from the pool of blood.

He splashed around twice, before standing up.

The confusion on his face quickly disappeared, his gaze brimming with energy as he mumbled: "This is... this place?"

Hearing Fang Yuan's mumbling, Star Form land spirit became even more worried: "Did master lose his mind because of the refinement failure?"

Fang Yuan gazed at his hands first, then swept through the turtle shell and the blood pool, before finally stopping on Star Form land spirit.

"What time is it now?" Fang Yuan asked.

Star Form land spirit jolted inwardly, but still replied: "Many days have already passed since master began refining the Immortal Gu."

"Hahahaha..." Fang Yuan raised his head and laughed heartily.

Star Form land spirit felt bleak: "Oh no, master has lost his mind! After failing the Immortal Gu refinement, his body suffered heavy injuries, he has even forgotten the time, and is still laughing so happily!"

There was no need for Fang Yuan to tell others about the reason for his happiness.

"I have returned once again!"

"Despite the activation of Spring Autumn Cicada failing, because of a strange change, I returned to life from death, from defeat to victory, my will has once again returned to the past."

"I am still refining change form Immortal Gu... the time is over a year ago? This is actually so short!"

"According to my foundation and with so many Immortal Gu on me, I should have at least traveled several hundred years back. Is it because Spring Autumn Cicada failed to activate that I only returned to a point over a year ago?"

“Also, that ghost face and the red lotus, what was going on... what had happened?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 971: A Bit of Excitement Thinking About It

The strange phenomenon in the river of time only occurred for a very short moment, but it was deeply etched into Fang Yuan’s mind and left a lasting memory.

It was at the crucial moment between life and death, it was impossible to not have a clear memory of it!

Now, as he recalled that moment, Fang Yuan was filled with doubts.

“The ghost face and the red lotus, what do they mean? Why did I not come across this situation when I used Spring Autumn Cicada before? Does it occur only when Spring Autumn Cicada’s activation fails? Or...”

Shaking his head, Fang Yuan stopped thinking about this mysterious subject.

He jumped out of the poisonous blood and flew out of the turtle shell.

“The injuries on me are heavy, and the sole success dao mark is now destroyed because of the Gu refinement failure, it is truly a pity.”

Fang Yuan examined himself and soon noticed the aftereffects of this Gu refinement failure.

His body was filled with cracks, almost on the verge of falling apart. Such injuries would require months of recuperation before they could be mended.

Gu refinement in itself was a dangerous task, not unlike a heated battle.

Let alone when refining Immortal Gu!

This time, Fang Yuan had failed in Gu refinement because of his rebirth, suffering serious injuries was to be expected.

What made Fang Yuan feel even more regret was that the success dao mark, which he had obtained after painstaking efforts in the Refinement Path Convention and a difficult journey to reach the top ranks, was destroyed.

This gave Fang Yuan some insight.

“Previously, the reason I failed in refining star thought Immortal Gu was not because there was a problem in my method, but the subtle aspect of mutual fusion of the dao marks of each immortal material, which is not something one can control. This is one of the crucial reasons for the low success rate in refining Immortal Gu.”

“The greatest use of success dao marks is to influence this aspect, to let the dao marks of the immortal materials fuse together and reach the standard for the Gu refinement. Thus, when I began refining Immortal Gu, the success dao mark was consumed, turning into a special type of immortal material that assisted in refinement.”

“Last time, there was no mishap and I was able to refine change form Immortal Gu, the aid of the success dao mark was immeasurable. But this time, because of my rebirth, this highly likely refinement was messed up.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan felt some irony.

It was not that with the success dao mark, the Gu refinement would succeed no matter how it was done.

If the Gu Master was purposely trying to fail, intentionally using wrong refinement methods, then it would be certain failure.

Success dao marks were not all-powerful.

Earlier, why did Fang Yuan intentionally choose Star Form blessed land to refine the Immortal Gu? It was because he was afraid of being disturbed by outside forces, which could cause the Gu refinement to fail.

Once the refinement failed, the immortal materials would be lost, injuries were a small matter, the main thing was that the success dao mark would also be destroyed.

Fang Yuan was reborn, and it just so happened to be during the process of refining change form Immortal Gu, this doomed him to failure.

Nothing could be done about it now. Last time, change form Immortal Gu had been refined successfully, but now it had failed.

“I have been reborn, and although I have the advantage of future knowledge, accurately speaking, it doesn’t mean a path to success.”

“But this rebirth gave me huge advantages. Losing a success dao mark is inconsequential!”

Fang Yuan soon sorted out his mood, and stabilized his mindset.

Fixed Immortal Travel!

Fang Yuan activated the Immortal Gu and returned to Hu Immortal blessed land.

In the past, he was anxious, but now he knew that there would still be a while before Central Continent made a breakthrough with the matter of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. He could be more at ease.

Although he had his previous life’s experience, Fang Yuan had always been the one to consider everything before taking action. An impetuous person would absolutely be unable to reach his current stage.

How would he use the countless disorderly clues and his current resources to obtain the maximum benefits?

This was the main question Fang Yuan needed to consider.

An immortal zombie had slower thought processes, Fang Yuan stepped in the light of wisdom to ponder.

Compared to his previous life, his wisdom path attainment had already reached grandmaster level! He had even thought of a small Gu formation that could let him use the light of wisdom more efficiently and save a large amount of time.

In just half a day, Fang Yuan finished pondering over the question.

An immortal zombie did not need to eat or drink, although he was injured, Fang Yuan had to make use of every minute and second.

Fixed Immortal Travel!

He immediately activated this Immortal Gu to secretly return to Southern Border.

Using his methods, he removed most of the aura of the Immortal Gu, then he quietly approached Yi Tian Mountain.

Fang Yuan was familiar with the surrounding ten thousand li of Yi Tian Mountain.

In his previous life, an unprecedented gambling contest had been held on Yi Tian Mountain, Fang Yuan had also participated in it. As time passed, the range of the forbidden zone for immortals had continued to expand, and Fang Yuan had to constantly move farther away, along with the Southern Border Gu Immortals. Thus, he was very familiar with the scenery near Yi Tian Mountain.

Yi Tian Mountain!

At this moment, it was still only a nameless mountain peak.

Before Fang Yuan’s arrival, there had just been rain over this mountain, the future Yi Tian Mountain was tall and beautiful, with lush trees and deep valleys. A rainbow appeared above and life seemed to brimming with vitality.

Fang Yuan gazed from afar, moving in carefully and full of expectations.

If Fang Yuan was asked what was it that enticed him the most after rebirth?

It was no doubt Yi Tian Mountain, under which was buried the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, and the suppressed rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie.

The significance of the latter to Fang Yuan did not need to be said.

“Although last time, this rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie had actually leaped out, getting rid of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage’s suppression, as long as I can successfully refine the Immortal Gu House and become its new owner, I can continue to suppress him!”

“If I can obtain Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage...” Fang Yuan licked his lips as he thought of this.

An Immortal Gu House was no small matter!

Immortal Gu Houses and ancient battle formations, they were the highest achievements of formation path.

Among them, ancient battle formations were gradually eliminated over the course of time, and Immortal Gu Houses had become mainstream.

Whether it be Southern Border, Northern Plains, Eastern Sea, Western Desert or Central Continent, all powerful super forces had at least one Immortal Gu House as their trump card. Like Hei tribe, Dark Prison was their symbol as well as a powerful trump card!

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, after Dark Prison had been lost, to seize it back, even the four supreme elders of Hei tribe had risked going out and chasing Hei

Cheng.

Dark Prison was only a rank six Immortal Gu House and Hei tribe had been so anxious to take it back.

The significance of Immortal Gu Houses could be seen from this.

And Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, which was buried deep under Yi Tian Mountain, was not only of higher rank than Dark Prison, a mysterious Gu Immortal had used its power to forcibly challenge someone of a higher rank and succeeded in suppressing a rank eight expert, one who furthermore possessed the Great Strength True Martial Physique!

The value of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage was clearly many times higher than Dark Prison!

“Thinking back to my previous life, the Profound Ice House used by Shark Demon and Su Bai Man was only an incomplete Immortal Gu House, but it could repeatedly break through the hindrance of the battlefield killer moves and escape. If I can obtain this Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, even if I can’t reach the level of moving unhindered in the world, in the future, when the truth is exposed and I am hunted down by Central Continent, Northern Plains and others, I can protect myself and intimidate other immortals!”

An Immortal Gu House was a fortress for battle, it did not have any shortcomings and covered all aspects of attack, defense, movement, healing and even assistance in cultivation.

It was structurally stable, and was easy to control.

A rank seven Immortal Gu House could be controlled by a rank six Gu Immortal as well.

However, Immortal Gu Houses had two major flaws, one was feeding and the second was immortal essence.

An Immortal Gu House was constructed from many Immortal Gu and vast numbers of mortal Gu, feeding these Gu worms was naturally extremely troublesome and a huge burden.

But Fang Yuan knew that Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage seemed to involve food path in its construction, and the feeding problem could be disregarded.

Next was the immortal essence.

To activate an Immortal Gu House, the amount of immortal essence consumed would be a gigantic number. Just with Fang Yuan’s capability, he would not be able to bear it.

In his previous life, when Shark Demon had no choice but to activate Profound Ice House, all the immortal zombies had to share the burden of immortal essence consumption, and the amount of consumption had greatly distressed everyone.

The price to activate an Immortal Gu House was huge.

Because the amount of immortal essence consumed was extremely high.

Fang Yuan was now in a poor state, he had staked it all and used up all his assets to barely be able to gather one set of immortal materials for refining change form Immortal Gu.

And now, he had failed the refinement, losing most of the immortal materials, he had little money in possession.

Even though he had many rich income sources like the guts Gu trade, earning a thousand immortal essence stones every month, half of a year of accumulating this income would not be enough to activate the Immortal Gu House for even thirty seconds.

But none of these mattered!

Fang Yuan had very little green grape immortal essence, but he had large amounts of Giant Sun's immortal essence!

This could be traced back to Imperial Court blessed land.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was rank nine, the immortal essence he had left behind was the yellow apricot immortal essence that only rank nine venerables could form. The quality of this immortal essence was countless times greater than green grape immortal essence, the difference between the two was like the gap between heaven and earth.

Giant Sun's immortal essence could not be used by Fang Yuan himself, but the Immortal Gu House could absorb it.

Immortal Gu Houses could absorb immortal essence of others, otherwise Shark Demon and the other immortal zombies would not be able to combine their powers to activate Profound Ice House.

This was the fundamental characteristic of Immortal Gu House — integrating the power of a group of immortals into one!

Fang Yuan had thought of this in his previous life.

As far as he was concerned, Giant Sun's immortal essence was like water with a source or a tree without roots, the more it was used, the more it would be consumed, and it could not be replenished.

Thus, the even more economical method was to gather many Gu Immortals to serve as a source of labor in activating the Immortal Gu House.

Unfortunately, the Southern Border Gu Immortals had died too quickly.

Or one could say Fang Yuan was not able to make it in time.

Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage had yet to be refined by anyone when the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie had broken out.

This was a huge pity.

“If I have Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, I could resist even that beam of life that was about to kill me!” Fang Yuan had confidence.

Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage naturally was not Heaven Overseeing Tower's match, but Heaven Overseeing Tower's condition was not optimum, that light pillar's might had been reduced after being whittled down by the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation.

With Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, although he could not say ‘with a house in hand, the world is mine’, it was enough to say ‘with a house in hand, advancing or retreating is up to me.’

‘With a house in hand, the world is mine’, the rank eight Eighty-Eight True Yang Building could be said to be one such example, it was specialized in plundering Gu worms, even Immortal Gu. The rank eight Refinement Cauldron was another one.

Compared to the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, self strength Immortal Gu, all-out effort Immortal Gu, star thought Immortal Gu, all of them seemed unimportant.

As long as he had the Immortal Gu House, with Giant Sun's immortal essence, Fang Yuan could use his rank six bottom tier cultivation level and immortal zombie body to forcibly fight rank eights, directly becoming one of the strongest experts!

"Just thinking about it gives me a bit of excitement." Fang Yuan carefully inspected his surroundings, and after confirming there was no one around, he immediately drilled into the ground, entering deep into the earth.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 972: Rebirth Plans

"What's going on? Where is Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage?" Fang Yuan was filled with doubts and disappointment.

After he was reborn, he had almost immediately hurried to Yi Tian Mountain, thinking of getting this Immortal Gu House.

But when he searched under the ground, he discovered that Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage was simply not present, even that rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie could not be found.

"Could it be that there were other reasons behind the appearance of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage? I came early, so the opportunity was not available?" Fang Yuan frowned as he pondered.

He had guessed correctly.

Previously, the reason Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage appeared was due to Bai Ning Bing.

He had activated a mysterious Immortal Gu, and this Immortal Gu had been given to him by Old Man Yan Shi.

Fang Yuan naturally did not know this detail, he also did not have this Immortal Gu, so he could not find any trace of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

If Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage was simply buried under the ground, then it would probably have already been discovered by others. How would it remain up until now?

Without any other choice, Fang Yuan could only leave quietly.

He was unable to obtain Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, as such, Fang Yuan had to modify his plans and put it aside for the moment, carrying out his other ideas first.

After moving a long distance from Yi Tian Mountain, Fang Yuan carefully activated Immortal Gu Fixed Immortal Travel.

The Immortal Gu's aura leaked, jade green radiance flashed.

The next moment, Fang Yuan disappeared from Southern Border, and appeared in that giant formation in Northern Plains' Earth Trench.

This giant formation was a space path formation, the space inside it was extremely large. In his previous life, Fang Yuan had used Fixed Immortal Travel to enter here.

In this life, he had once again used Fixed Immortal Travel to enter here, there were no mishaps or setbacks.

Moreover, this time, he directly entered the central area of the Gu formation.

This was a large, desolate land of purple sand.

In this desolate land, some rarely seen and extremely valuable immortal materials were spread.

His memories were still very clear, Fang Yuan did not even need to put in the effort to search, he directly ran to each key area and collected the immortal materials.

These immortal materials were of extremely high rank, they were basically all at rank eight and there were even some top quality rank eight materials with such dense dao marks that their light could be seen with naked eyes!

Like the tiger-striped honey bee's wings, the fragment of the immemorial desolate beast cloud phoenix's body...

Altogether, eighteen immortal materials ended up in Fang Yuan's hands once again.

He then moved to the middle of the desolate land of purple sand, where he discovered those multi-layered Gu formations once again.

He carefully inspected the contents and saw it was just like his previous life. He left the Gu formations as they were, but destroyed all the crucial thoughts.

Fang Yuan naturally did not intend to leave the life-and-death immortal aperture method for others.

Before leaving, Fang Yuan gave the place a final glance, sighing inwardly.

He knew that outside the desolate land of purple sand, there were large numbers of desolate plants and desolate beast corpses, but these immortal materials only looked impressive, once they were picked up, they would all turn into purple sand.

Thus, Fang Yuan did not even look at them.

In his previous life, he had to painstakingly scheme, joining Zombie Alliance's headquarters first, then after being schemed by Blazing Heaven Demoness, he was thrown into Northern Plains' Dark Flow Giant City. He had to deceive several immortal zombies before he was able to enter Earth Trench. He kept on scheming the whole way, not hesitating to be swallowed by the mouth earthworm, then arriving at the nest of yaksha octopuses, searching painstakingly, taking the risk to unravel a small portion of the Gu formation, before he was finally able to enter this hidden space.

But this life, because of rebirth, he went straight to his destination, getting the maximum benefits while spending the least amount of time and energy. The whole process was very simple, it was like a dream.

Using Fixed Immortal Travel again, Fang Yuan left the place and returned to Hu Immortal blessed land.

Change form Immortal Gu’s refinement failed, not only was the success dao mark lost, most of the immortal materials were also destroyed.

To prepare for this single refinement of change form Immortal Gu, he had taken out all his assets.

After rebirth, he could be said to be dirt-poor.

But now, he had these precious immortal materials as very timely assistance.

These immortal materials were extremely valuable, if their value was to be maximized, it would undoubtedly be by keeping them until a time when Fang Yuan refined rank eight Immortal Gu.

However, the time needed for this was too long, Fang Yuan’s cultivation was still at the bottom tier of rank six, advancing to rank eight was a distant prospect and not within the foreseeable future.

Fang Yuan had already considered how to make full use of these immortal materials.

Like in his previous life, Fang Yuan put several of the immortal materials in treasure yellow heaven, causing a huge commotion among the Gu Immortals.

Even in treasure yellow heaven, these immortal materials were extremely rare and were very sought after.

Fang Yuan easily traded them for the things he wanted, and fed all the Immortal Gu he had, except for self strength Immortal Gu and wisdom Gu.

Taking a look over the Immortal Gu Fang Yuan had:

Strength path: Self Strength, Pulling Mountain, Pulling Water, Iron Crown Eagle Strength, Eat Strength.

Star path: Star Shoot, Star Mark, Starlight.

Luck path: Connect Luck, Time Luck, Calamity Beckoning.

Besides these, there was also his first vital Gu, Spring Autumn Cicada, the extremely practical space path Immortal Gu, Fixed Immortal Travel, the less frequently used poison path Immortal Gu, Woman’s Heart, a soul path Immortal Gu, Cleanse Soul and a wisdom path Immortal Gu, Unravel Mystery.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan had change form Immortal Gu at this time. But after rebirth, the refinement had failed, and change form Immortal Gu did not exist.

As for the rank nine wisdom Gu, Fang Yuan could not refine it so it was temporarily placed in Hu Immortal blessed land. Thus, whether it could be considered Fang Yuan’s Immortal Gu was debatable.

Normally, most rank six Gu Immortals only had mortal Gu and not even one Immortal Gu.

The number of Immortal Gu Fang Yuan had already numbered sixteen, without counting wisdom Gu.

As such, the burden of feeding the Immortal Gu was extremely heavy and had always been on Fang Yuan’s mind.

The feeding issue of the Immortal Gu was resolved for now, Fang Yuan could relax for the moment.

“Land spirit?” Fang Yuan softly spoke in the secret room.

“Master, I am here!” The land spirit Little Hu Immortal swiftly appeared, beaming with a smile, and hugged Fang Yuan’s leg.

“Master, I didn’t disturb you because you were busy, but I really missed you.” Little Hu Immortal said while shaking her furry tail, before saying some childlike words, “Although master has turned ugly.”

Fang Yuan laughed, stroking Little Hu Immortal’s head as he instructed her: “Go command all the hairy men in the stone nests to start refining only airsac Gu.”

“Yes, master.” Little Hu Immortal immediately replied.

“You can leave now.”

“Okay...” Little Hu Immortal gazed at Fang Yuan with a reluctant look, before disappearing.

Fang Yuan’s thoughts shifted, as he activated Fixed Immortal Travel, leaving Hu Immortal blessed land.

When he appeared again, he was already at Lang Ya blessed land.

At this time, Lang Ya land spirit had not changed his nature, and was still that long robed, white hair, and seemingly sagelike land spirit.

“Why are you here? That immortal material I wanted, did you get it? If you didn’t, then there is no need for discussion!” Lang Ya land spirit waved his large sleeves and spoke with a cold and detached expression when he saw Fang Yuan.

Because of his excessive demands, Fang Yuan’s relationship with Lang Ya land spirit had already turned cold.

Fang Yuan wanted to request for Lang Ya land spirit’s help, but Lang Ya land spirit’s condition was extremely harsh — asking Fang Yuan to get a type of immortal material.

And this immortal material’s origin was from the immemorial nine heavens, and was extremely rare even in treasure yellow heaven.

If not for this, Lang Ya land spirit would not have asked Fang Yuan to do this.

“Of course I have it, take a look.” Fang Yuan laughed, not minding Lang Ya land spirit’s cold attitude.

“You really got it?” Lang Ya land spirit looked at the immortal material in Fang Yuan’s hand, his expression immediately relaxed and his tone revealed his incredulous feelings.

Clearly, he had not been optimistic about Fang Yuan’s chances.

Rightfully so.

The task of getting this immortal material had already surpassed Fang Yuan’s capabilities. At least, that was the case in his previous life.

But in this life, after Fang Yuan was reborn, he made use of the rank eight immortal materials in his hands, why would he fear not being able to purchase goods of this level?

Fang Yuan handed the poisonous flower petals to Lang Ya land spirit: “I need a certain amount of exert strength Gu and disappointment Gu, along with large numbers of star thought Gu.”

Fang Yuan already knew: Lang Ya blessed land was extremely special, the space inside was so large that it had already surpassed most grotto-heavens.

This was because Lang Ya land spirit had merged the rank eight Immortal Gu House, Refinement Cauldron, into the whole blessed land.

Countless hairy men lived here, the number beyond imagination.

The land of cloud soil in front of him was only a layer of clouds in Lang Ya blessed land. Under this layer were three continents, where large numbers of hairy men lived. Specializing in Gu refinement, they selected talents, living and working in peace and happiness.

With the help of these hairy men, it was extremely simple for Lang Ya land spirit to refine exert strength Gu, disappointment Gu and star thought Gu.

“On the basis of this immortal material, I will do you this favor.” Lang Ya land spirit replied, before adding, “But next time, I hope to get scales of the half moon qilin, at least thirty of them. Otherwise, I won’t agree to any of your requests.”

His tone was still rather frigid, but his expression was no longer cold.

Fang Yuan nodded, and without speaking further, he activated Fixed Immortal Travel and left.

He possessed the life-and-death immortal aperture revival method, as well as a strength path version of nirvana fire, so he could get rid of the immortal zombie body and become a living person.

But for the moment, Fang Yuan had no plans to do so.

Becoming alive would only mean having the potential to advance, his cultivation would still be at the bottom tier of rank six. He would also lose his immortal zombie body, and his battle strength would instead decrease.

More importantly, Fang Yuan did not have much lifespan left, and thus would not be able to use the light of wisdom.

Fang Yuan asked Lang Ya land spirit to refine exert strength Gu and disappointment Gu as early preparations for the future.

What he had paid for this was an immortal material, while Lang Ya land spirit was only refining mortal Gu, although the numbers were somewhat huge, Fang Yuan had still incurred a loss.

But Fang Yuan did not seriously concern himself with it.

He had his own plans regarding Lang Ya land spirit, but it was not the time for them yet.

Fang Yuan left Lang Ya blessed land, directly arriving at a certain village in Central Continent.

There was an extraordinary tree here.

It was a spring dream fruit tree.

“It indeed still exists.” Fang Yuan hid his figure and inspected it, feeling some joy.

In his previous life, he had obtained information about this tree from Mo Yao’s will, but before he could collect the spring dream fruits, this tree was cut down by someone.

But after rebirth, Fang Yuan had no need to join Zombie Alliance and search for the revival method, he was able to come here half a year early, making up for a regret in his previous life.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 973: Spring Dream Fruit Tree

Spring dream fruit trees were a very special type of plant.

They could be any kind of fruit tree, but only extremely few fruit trees could become spring dream fruit trees.

One of these spring dream fruit trees was next to a farmer’s home.

The head of the family was an old man, known as old man Chen.

“Son, in half a year, you will be married. I will build a house for you, the main girder of the house will be built using this fire date tree.” Old man Chen stood in front of the tree, and patted its thick bark, as he spoke to his son who was at the side.

The son looked at this date tree and gave a thumbs up, pleased: “Father, this is a good idea. This date tree is older than the history of our village. I remember that it has already stopped producing dates, it will be useless even if it keeps on growing. Cutting it down to construct the main girder for my house will be putting it to good use!”

Fang Yuan coldly snorted.

He was standing not far away, but was invisible.

Old man Chen and his son, who were not even Gu Masters, were unable to sense him.

Finding out by chance the reason for the spring dream fruit tree being cut down, Fang Yuan inwardly frowned.

This spring dream fruit tree’s existence was supported by this date tree.

A true spring dream fruit tree was a tree that existed in dreams and did not have a material body. But it required a real tree to be the foundation for it to live long.

This date tree was several thousand years old, only old trees like this could be used by the spring dream fruit tree.

Naturally, the specific requirements involved not just age.

Humans needed to be living near the tree, the dreams of these humans from generation after generation would nourish the spring dream fruit tree.

In history, this place was once the base of a volcano.

Because the volcano erupted every several hundred years, the large amounts of volcanic ash created fertile soil in the surroundings.

Attracted by the excellent natural farmland, there would be people migrating now and then. They would gradually form villages, which would later be destroyed by the volcanic eruptions.

Fire date trees were extremely resistant to heat, they could even resist lava, thus they were able to continue existing.

If the date tree was cut down, the spring dream fruit tree would be destroyed. But to move the date tree, there needed to be corresponding dream path methods to move the spring dream fruit tree at the same time, otherwise Fang Yuan would only obtain an ordinary date tree and not the spring dream fruit tree.

Fang Yuan did not have methods to move the spring dream fruit tree. Currently, it was not possible for him to even pick the spring dream fruits. He would need to refine some dream path mortal Gu that were targeted at picking the fruits.

In the past, Mo Yao seemed to have recognized the extraordinariness of this tree, but due to her limited knowledge, or perhaps she also sensed that casually picking the tree would not work, she chose to leave it behind.

“It seem I still need to preserve the living environment of this spring dream fruit tree for some time.”

Fang Yuan flicked a finger, two wills separately drilled into the minds of old man Chen and his son.

The son suddenly let out tears: “Father, let’s not cut down this tree. Even if it can’t produce dates anymore, I want to keep on seeing it. It has accompanied me as I have grown, when I was young, I urinated on the tree, when I got slightly older, I built a swing on it. Let’s forget about cutting it down...”

“Sigh! Alright.” Old man Chen’s eyes had also reddened, nodding emotionally: “Then let it continue to grow here. We will choose another tree, although there is not any that is as tall as this one, they will be enough for the main girder of the new house.”

After dealing with the mortals’ thoughts, Fang Yuan arranged a Gu formation here to protect the spring dream fruit tree.

In the meantime, he would have to refine some corresponding dream path mortal Gu to pick up the fruits.

This required time.

Almost all the refinement materials for dream path mortal Gu were derived from dream realm.s

“According to how my previous life went, after refining change form Immortal Gu, I helped Tai Bai Yun Sheng pass his tribulation, then participated in the battle to defend Lang Ya blessed land. After the battle, I took up the identity of Xing Xiang Zi to enter Eastern Sea and participate in the invasion of Yu Lu blessed land. In this process, because of the collapse of Starry Sky grotto-heaven, I was invited by Immortal Crane Sect to invade a fragment world of the grotto-heaven. After this matter, Blazing Heaven Demoness appeared, defeating the immemorial desolate beast one finger flow shark. I was forcefully recruited by Blazing Heaven Demoness, then returned to Northern Plains and obtained the Earth Trench inheritance. After that, I took part in killing Hei Cheng, then was forced to set a new agreement with Blazing Heaven Demoness and the others, then we went on to seize Luo Po valley. Finally, I took part in the battle of Yi Tian Mountain!”

“This time, after my rebirth luckily succeeded, my main objective is still the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage. As long as I can become the owner of this Immortal Gu House, I can smoothly suppress the rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie, in that case, my gains will be huge!”

Although Fang Yuan’s plan of taking the Immortal Gu House early had failed, how could one failure shake his resolution?

Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage had not appeared now, then he could only wait for the moment it appeared.

Originally, Fang Yuan’s plan had been to take the Immortal Gu House, then suppress the rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie. He would wait until the alliance agreement expired, then he would use the Immortal Gu House to deal with Hei Lou Lan, Fairy Li Shan and Blazing Heaven Demoness, maybe he could even borrow the rank eight Immortal Gu House, Refinement Cauldron, from Lang Ya blessed land, and seize their Immortal Gu, obtaining the greatest benefits.

However, he could not do that now.

Without the Immortal Gu House, Fang Yuan’s strength was clearly weaker than Hei Lou Lan’s side. Even if he had many plans and plots, without strength, they could not come to fruition. After all, Hei Lou Lan was also a formidable character, she was not someone who could be trifled with easily. This was clear from when she killed her own father, then disguised herself to enter Hei tribe.

Fang Yuan’s original plan was wonderful, but reality was cruel.

Fang Yuan made calculations on the basis of the worst possible situation, if Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage appeared at the same time as in his previous life, then he would be unable to covertly take this Immortal Gu House.

The likelihood of this was huge.

“When Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage appeared, it produced a grand sight, the battle scene of that day in history kept on being displayed. If that is the case, then I can only follow my previous life, and participate in the gambling contest between the Southern Border Gu Immortals, and personally entering the demonic path side on Yi Tian Mountain.”

If he went in like this, the risks would be extremely huge, he would have to face the Gu Immortals of Southern Border, Shadow Sect, and also Heavenly Court. It would be entering great danger.

But how can there be gains without any danger?

Fang Yuan was cautious, but he did not lack the mindset to take risks.

The huge benefits had already made him resolved to take the risk.

He had been reborn, and had plenty of experiences and knowledge of his previous life, if he did not dare to conspire, then Fang Yuan considered this to simply be cowardly!

“Since the protection of the spring dream fruit tree has been ensured, I can put it aside for the moment. I should change my plans, I need to ally with Hei Lou Lan again!”

Fang Yuan had self strength Immortal Gu, Blazing Heaven Demoness would definitely target him.

If Fang Yuan obtained the Immortal Gu House early, then he would not be afraid of Blazing Heaven Demoness.

But the situation happened to be different now, Fang Yuan needed to obtain the Immortal Gu House, and in the process, he might have to face the Southern Border Gu Immortals, Shadow Sect and Heavenly Court. Now, he needed the strength of others.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Hei Lou Lan, Fairy Li Shan, Blazing Heaven Demoness and others, especially Blazing Heaven Demoness, with her rank eight cultivation, she could add much power to the Immortal Gu House.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan had suffered from going in alone without help. When Shadow Sect mobilized, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan were both in Xiao Hun blessed land, using Luo Po valley to cultivate their soul. And Tai Bai Yun Sheng was still in Eastern Sea.

Naturally, it was also because Fang Yuan had intentionally concealed it from Hei Lou Lan, Fairy Li Shan and the others, sneaking into Yi Tian Mountain alone.

Even if Fang Yuan revived, he would only have rank six bottom tier cultivation. To advance to rank seven, he needed to go through many earthly calamities and three heavenly tribulations. In the blessed land’s time, it would take three hundred years.

There was clearly not enough time for Fang Yuan to do this.

Of course, he could also devour Hu Immortal blessed land and Star Form blessed land, but his body had a strength path immortal aperture which did not relate to these blessed lands.

Right now, the utmost priority was to turn enemies into allies and strategize from there.

Fang Yuan wanted to eliminate Hei Lou Lan and the others, but this kind of impatience could spoil his grand scheme. There were many times when one needed to compromise.

To accomplish one’s aims in the world, it was necessary for any person to compromise, and to learn how to compromise. No matter how high someone’s position was, they would need to follow this.

Giving up small benefits for greater benefits, this was a display of a person’s growth.

Using Fixed Immortal Travel again, Fang Yuan returned to Hu Immortal blessed land.

In his previous life, when Fang Yuan wanted to target Hei Lou Lan, she had already left Hu Immortal blessed land for the outside world, her tracks were concealed, and as such Fang Yuan was not able to make a move against her.

But in this life, at this time, Hei Lou Lan still was staying in Hu Immortal blessed land.

She was using her strength qi Immortal Gu to help the hairy men in the stone nests to refine airsac Gu.

When Fang Yuan found Hei Lou Lan, she was within a stone nest.

She was holding an information path mortal Gu in her hand, frowning at the information brought by the Gu worm.

Seeing Fang Yuan, Hei Lou Lan raised the information path mortal Gu and asked: “Did you hear about the matter of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent ambushing Song Zi Xing?”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “Of course I did. This matter can be kept secret from mortals, but it cannot be hidden from Gu Immortals. Even though Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects are hiding their traces, the other Gu Immortals in Central Continent would not want to keep this a secret, right now, they are looking forward to seeing some drama in the ten great ancient sects.”

“Oh!” Hei Lou Lan sighed deeply: “Such a prime opportunity, but we missed it. If we could kill Song Zi Xing during this period, we might be able to obtain Star Form blessed land.”

Fang Yuan glanced at Hei Lou Lan, sighing internally: This person really is formidable!

She already had attitude Gu, but had restrained herself, not only was he not informed, she did not even inform her closest friend and relative, her aunt Fairy Li Shan.

To deceive the enemy, one had to start from deceiving those they were closest to.

But Fang Yuan was like her.

He had obtained possession of Star Form blessed land, but had deliberately concealed the information, keeping Hei Lou Lan in the dark. In his previous life, were it not for Blazing Heaven Demoness, this secret would not have been revealed.

It was because Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan were similar kinds of people, that Fang Yuan appreciated Hei Lou Lan while also being apprehensive at the same time. If possible, he truly wanted to get rid of her and get rid of her quickly.

But destiny worked in mysterious ways, Fang Yuan had to deepen his collaboration with Hei Lou Lan to obtain the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

Therefore, at the next moment, Fang Yuan took out self strength Immortal Gu, placing it in his hand and holding it out for Hei Lou Lan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 974: Difficult Interaction with Hei Lou Lan

“Self strength Immortal Gu!” Fang Yuan’s action shook Hei Lou Lan’s mind.

This Immortal Gu was originally hers, but because she failed her tribulation, she had been trapped in a dream realm and was later saved by Fang Yuan.

The result was that this Immortal Gu became the price for saving Hei Lou Lan, ending up in Fang Yuan’s hands.

This self strength Immortal Gu had huge significance to Hei Lou Lan.

Not only was it very suitable for Hei Lou Lan as she possessed the Great Strength True Martial Physique and cultivated strength path, this self strength Immortal Gu had been refined by Hei Lou Lan’s mother, Su Xian Er, and was a memento she left to Hei Lou Lan.

Thus, self strength Immortal Gu had extremely great importance to Hei Lou Lan!

Hei Lou Lan had been extremely unwilling to give it, but she had no other choice.

She thought about this Immortal Gu day and night, and really wished she could seize it back from Fang Yuan.

However, she had restrained this impulse.

On one hand, it was because Gu worms were very difficult to take away and could be destroyed with a thought from their owner. On another hand, it was because Hei Lou Lan was astute.

She deeply understood there was an art called compromise when interacting with people.

Hei Lou Lan and Fang Yuan were natural allies. Hei Lou Lan still needed to rely on the guts Gu business to support her cultivation, working together created benefits, while being enemies formed losses, so Hei Lou Lan had continued to endure.

Besides the first meeting after waking up, Hei Lou Lan had not raised any objection towards Fang Yuan having self strength Immortal Gu.

It was as if she had already forgotten this.

She had deep shrewdness.

But now, Fang Yuan was suddenly handing over the self strength Immortal Gu, like he was returning it to its rightful owner; Hei Lou Lan was caught unprepared and was unable to conceal her desire.

But at once, Hei Lou Lan calmed down, her frown deepened as she fixed her sharp gaze on Fang Yuan.

She had already snapped back to awareness, and she was filled with vigilance.

She knew Fang Yuan’s nature, and just like Fang Yuan, who had both appreciation and apprehension towards her, she also felt the same about Fang Yuan.

“Why would Fang Yuan hand over self strength Immortal Gu for no reason? This is impossible! Then what is he planning?”

As if seeing Hei Lou Lan’s doubts, Fang Yuan chuckled: “Don’t be nervous. Self strength Immortal Gu is rather suitable for me as well, but I believe this Immortal Gu is more important to you. Like they say, a gentleman doesn’t take advantage of others, isn’t that the case?”

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes flashed with dark light, she glanced at the self strength Immortal Gu in Fang Yuan’s hand, before fixing her gaze on Fang Yuan, sneering: “You are a gentleman? Just say what you want to say.”

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose: “If I speak directly, I am afraid it will scare you.”

Hei Lou Lan snorted: “Just tell me!”

Fang Yuan’s eyes flickered, speaking in a serious tone: “Then I won’t beat around the bush. I want to use this self strength Immortal Gu to trade for your attitude Gu.”

“What?!” Hei Lou Lan’s body shook, the ferocious glint in her eyes increased, and she almost took a step back involuntarily.

“I have kept the matter of acquiring attitude Gu extremely secret, how did he know? I hid it from even little aunt. Besides heaven and earth, only I know!!”

The shock Hei Lou Lan felt was hard to express.

This was her greatest secret, but it was suddenly exposed by Fang Yuan, she could not help being shocked.

Killing intent surged inside her, subconsciously wanting to attack Fang Yuan.

To eliminate the person who knows her secret!

This was the nature of ferocious characters.

However, at this time, Fang Yuan took the initiative to retreat a step.

This movement was simple, but had subtle effects on Hei Lou Lan’s current mentality.

Hei Lou Lan was like a frightened beast, but Fang Yuan moved away some distance and showed a harmless smile, emitting good intention, making Hei Lou Lan feel safer.

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes squinted into a slit, fixing her gaze at Fang Yuan. Her expression was cold as ice, her killing intent had not dispelled yet, instead it was restrained for now.

“It seems you truly possess the legendary attitude Gu.” Fang Yuan pretended to be observing her expression, and spoke with a surprised tone.

Hei Lou Lan stared blankly before speaking in fury: “You tricked me?!”

“Of course not.” Fang Yuan smiled bitterly, shrugging his shoulders: “Do you still remember my master, Purple Mountain True Monarch?”

Hei Lou Lan took a deep breath, hearing the name of Purple Mountain True Monarch again, she was filled with wariness.

She knew this Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Fang Yuan was his disciple and so was Tai Bai Yun Sheng. That was the reason why

Fang Yuan called Tai Bai Yun Sheng senior brother.

Of course, all this was false information. In his previous life, even Blazing Heaven Demoness had been deceived.

“It was your master who informed you?” Hei Lou Lan asked.

Her killing intent went down to rock bottom, from her view, Fang Yuan had huge backing. It was very difficult to kill Fang Yuan, let alone Purple Mountain True Monarch, who was not someone she could handle.

After all, at this time, Fairy Li Shan had yet to fully reconcile with Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Fang Yuan chuckled: “What do you think?”

Hei Lou Lan snorted, thoughts churning in her mind: “Purple Mountain True Monarch actually knows my secret, he indeed has vast powers and is unfathomable! Fortunately, we have set an agreement with Fang Yuan... but Fang Yuan is really scheming, no matter how important self strength Immortal Gu is, it is only a rank six Immortal Gu, how could it be traded for my attitude Gu? Hmph!”

Hei Lou Lan immediately refused Fang Yuan’s suggestion: “My attitude Gu is a rank eight Immortal Gu. As long as it is someone with a thinking mind, they can wear it and use it! It is a legendary Gu worm recorded in the <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>. You are actually thinking of using the rank six self strength Immortal Gu to trade for my attitude Gu. Hehe, aren’t you daydreaming!!”

Fang Yuan pondered it before speaking: “Then how will you trade for it?”

“Not trading!” Hei Lou Lan immediately replied firmly.

Fang Yuan’s expression sank, letting out a dangerous aura: “Hei Lou Lan, think properly... I will remind you this is my territory, my Hu Immortal blessed land.”

Hei Lou Lan laughed loudly: “Hahaha, so what? Don’t forget the agreement between us, it has not ended yet, allies cannot attack each other.”

“Of course!” Hei Lou Lan added, “You have your master’s backing, maybe you have already undone your restrictions. But do you think I, Hei Lou Lan, am afraid of death?”

“You underestimate me too much! Even if I die here, I will destroy all my Gu worms before I die. Also, I know all about the resources that are in your Hu Immortal blessed land. After the battle, how many of these resources will remain? Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s Landscape as Before cannot restore these resources.”

Fang Yuan could not help but laugh.

In his previous life, he had threatened Blazing Heaven Demoness by showing a fearless stance towards death. This life, after he was reborn, Hei Lou Lan was using the same method to pressure him, and he similarly had to accept and go along with it.

Fang Yuan’s expression changed, laughing and clapping: “Hei Lou Lan, I wouldn’t dare to underestimate you, it was only a joke.”

“Using a rank six Immortal Gu in exchange for a rank eight, your joke only reveals your greed and stupidity!” Hei Lou Lan coldly berated, without giving any face to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan's eyes flickered with sharp light: "Then I will add some more on the table, how about I give up in contesting for Star Form blessed land?"

Hei Lou Lan shook her head: "Giving up in contesting for it? Even if you hand over both Hu Immortal blessed land and Star Form blessed land to me, I won't trade it. Attitude Gu is not only a rank eight Immortal Gu, the requirements to use it are very minimal, it doesn't need immortal essence and only consumes mental energy. That means, even I, a rank six Gu Immortal, can use this rank eight Immortal Gu. This kind of Immortal Gu is a peerless treasure, I absolute won't give it up! Don't mention trading for it! Fang Yuan, you are a smart person, you won't make useless efforts, right?"

Fang Yuan nodded, sighing.

"I understand. Then I shall take a step back, I want to use self strength Immortal Gu to exchange for your slavery Immortal Gu."

Hei Lou Lan's eyebrows raised.

She had a slavery Immortal Gu, she had obtained it during the final moments in Imperial Court blessed land, after deceiving Giant Sun's will.

Hei Lou Lan sank into silence, Fang Yuan's offer enticed her.

As far as she was concerned, self strength Immortal Gu's value was undoubtedly far above slavery Immortal Gu.

Hei Lou Lan gazed at Fang Yuan's eyes: "My slavery Immortal Gu is only rank six. You are using rank six in exchange for rank six, this is feasible. But slavery Immortal Gu cannot be used repeatedly, it can only be used once. Trading Self Strength for Slavery, don't you think you are losing out?"

"Yes, there is some loss." Fang Yuan laughed, before raising a finger: "So I still have a condition, I want to borrow attitude Gu for some time."

Hei Lou Lan did not reply, sinking into silence.

Fang Yuan was trying all kinds of methods to borrow attitude Gu, this made her acutely sense the importance of attitude Gu to Fang Yuan.

However, how much importance it had, Hei Lou Lan was not too sure, she needed to probe.

Therefore, she refused: "I will not lend attitude Gu."

Fang Yuan's expression sank: "Then forget it."

He then turned around, leaving.

Hei Lou Lan stood at her spot, watching coldly without moving.

Fang Yuan moved several steps before stopping, turning around with a bitter smile as he faced Hei Lou Lan again: "I only want to borrow attitude Gu for three years."

"Three years? I wouldn't agree even if it was three days!" Hei Lou Lan's expression was cold and ruthless, internally, however, she was excited. She saw an opportunity to rip off Fang Yuan.

Hei Lou Lan's concealment was good, but she was in the end still young, and Fang Yuan was an old monster who had lived hundreds of years.

Fang Yuan gave a displeased snort, how could he not know Hei Lou Lan's current thoughts.

He threw out his trump card: “It seems you don’t want revenge. You have such a good opportunity in front of you to kill Hei Cheng. But it feels like you don’t want it.”

“What? Hei Cheng!” Hei Lou Lan’s eyes flashed with a ferocious glint, her expression fluctuating.

Although Hei Cheng was her own father, the hatred between them was so great, she would not rest until he was dead.

Killing Hei Cheng and taking revenge was already the greatest obsession of Hei Lou Lan.

This obsession was so deep that it had affected her cultivation, becoming a permanent scar in her mind.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, Hei Lou Lan had killed Hei Cheng, got back the self strength Immortal Gu, dispelled the scar in her mind, and found her ‘self’, so when she activated strength path phantoms, they turned into her appearance, and not the brawny burly man.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 975: New Alliance Agreement

The negotiation with Hei Lou Lan lasted for six hours.

After it ended, even Fang Yuan with his immortal zombie body felt extremely exhausted, his pitiful immortal zombie mind could not think on its own easily, who knew how many thoughts he wasted in the process.

Hei Lou Lan also wasn’t better off, she felt this negotiation was much more exhausting than an intense battle of life and death, a feeling of weakness emitted from deep within her, her tongue went dry and she was feeling dizzy.

After the negotiation, Fang Yuan brought over Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and formed a new agreement with Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan.

Fang Yuan handed over self strength Immortal Gu, trading for Hei Lou Lan’s slavery Immortal Gu, as well as borrowing attitude Gu for one year.

Fang Yuan also had to provide an opportunity to kill Hei Cheng for Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan.

As for Star Form blessed land, everyone would continue to participate fairly.

Besides these, Fang Yuan also obtained Hei Lou Lan’s consent to connect their luck.

The new agreement was tightly linked together in all aspects, even Fairy Li Shan with her information path quasi-great grandmaster attainment would need to spend several years to break the agreement. More importantly, it also took account of Blazing Heaven Demoness.

There was a condition inside that stated more allies could be added, but the new allies must follow the agreement.

Moreover, both sides could not get the help of external forces to target each other. Both sides would also have a one time opportunity to request for support, and once used, the other side must be assisted! The compensation after the matter would be calculated according to the specific situation.

The agreement was extremely stringent, the division of profits was stipulated in detail. Fang Yuan used Hei Lou Lan’s apprehension towards Purple Mountain True Monarch, and his previous life’s memories, to reach his goal.

One who could only fight was no more than a boor.

Battles could not resolve all issues.

Man is the spirit of all livings beings, humans possessed great wisdom. If they used this wisdom only to fight, they would be letting down this gift from heaven.

After the agreement was made, Fang Yuan’s situation had changed greatly.

First of all, Hei Lou Lan was Fairy Black Moon, with vigorous luck that would not decline for a long time. Fang Yuan connected his luck with hers, offsetting Spring Autumn Cicada’s flaw.

Second, he was able to borrow the rank eight attitude Gu. This Immortal Gu was used in the past by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, it was the core Gu of the legendary immortal killer move — Familiar Face.

Back then, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had only been rank six Gu Immortal, but by using this killer move, he deceived two rank eight Gu Immortals in a row, obtaining large amounts of treasures as well as causing the two rank eight Gu Immortals to misunderstand each other, indirectly causing their deaths.

Fang Yuan had lost change form Immortal Gu, but obtained attitude Gu, which was countless times better!

His improved vaguely familiar face killer move’s effect would be sharply increased to an astonishing level. Fang Yuan was now confident of deceiving even rank eight Gu Immortals!

Lastly was Blazing Heaven Demoness.

In his previous life, Blazing Heaven Demoness, this rank eight Gu Immortal, had schemed against Fang Yuan. This life, Fang Yuan had reached a new agreement with Fairy Li Shan and others, which could be taken as stopping Blazing Heaven Demoness’ scheme early.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ guilt and affection towards Hei Lou Lan was her biggest weakness. Fang Yuan was planning to “inadvertently” make use of Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Even if Blazing Heaven Demoness did not join the new alliance, when Hei Lou Lan falls into a predicament while assisting Fang Yuan, could Blazing Heaven Demoness do nothing?

It could be said that Hei Lou Lan was the best tool to control Blazing Heaven Demoness.

“Hei Lou Lan’s side is no longer an obstacle to me. After turning enemies into allies, my plans should now go much more smoothly. But Hei Lou Lan and the others are extremely shrewd, they are not easy to fool. They are now very satisfied with this new alliance agreement, but they will slowly realize the enormous advantage I am holding. At that time, they will definitely be displeased and may even try to go against me.”

Because of his previous life’s memories, Fang Yuan was able to gain the advantage. But he had not removed his vigilance against Hei Lou Lan’s side.

“Wait until I possess Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, then the course will be set, the contrast between the strength of our sides will be overturned. Even if Hei Lou Lan’s side is unsatisfied, they won’t be able to create any problems.”

Fang Yuan did not hesitate on giving up self strength Immortal Gu, it was because he was planning for the Immortal Gu House, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, and the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie.

With self strength Immortal Gu, he would only have the first style of myriad self, at best, his strength would only be rank seven.

But with the Immortal Gu House, Fang Yuan did not need to fear even rank eights, easily advancing or retreating.

After obtaining attitude Gu, Fang Yuan stored it in his own immortal aperture and moved to Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya land spirit was extremely surprised, asking: “So quickly? You got what I wanted?”

“No.” Fang Yuan shook his head.

Lang Ya land spirit’s expression immediately turned gloomy, shouting coldly: “Fang Yuan, you brat, are you disregarding my words? Before you left last time, I told you Lang Ya blessed land is not a place for you to come whenever you want! If you don’t have the immortal material I want, then don’t come bothering me. I won’t agree to any of your requests.”

“Is that so?” Fang Yuan chuckled, his attitude calm, “What if I want to use my final opportunity to request you to refine Gu for me?”

“Ah.” Lang Ya land spirit was staring blankly, lost for words.

Fang Yuan had stolen Ma Hong Yun’s fortuitous encounter, arriving at Lang Ya blessed land with the identity of an inheritor of Thieving Heaven.

Because Long Hair Ancestor had made an agreement with Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, Lang Ya land spirit had to refine Gu three times for Fang Yuan without any costs.

If refining mortal Gu, Lang Ya land spirit must guarantee the success of the Gu refinement. If refining Immortal Gu, Lang Ya land spirit could fail, but the materials for the Gu refinement must come from his own pockets.

Fang Yuan had used two opportunities.

The first was to refine stargate Gu, although this Gu worm was only a mortal Gu, it had provided huge help to Fang Yuan at that time.

The second was to refine second aperture Gu, during the Gu refinement process, Fang Yuan drank four types of fine wines, obtaining divine travel Gu. Finally, he used divine travel Gu to trade for gruel mud Immortal Gu from Lang Ya land spirit.

Thus, Fang Yuan only had one remaining opportunity to request Gu refinement.

Lang Ya land spirit said sternly: “Kid, what Gu do you want to refine?”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, patting Lang Ya land spirit’s shoulder: “I only said ‘if’, I don’t truly want to waste the third opportunity now.”

Lang Ya land spirit snorted, brushing away Fang Yuan’s hand, and dusting off his clothing with extremely dislike.

But in the end, he did not speak anymore.

As long as Fang Yuan did not use his final opportunity, he could casually enter Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya land spirit knew this was Fang Yuan’s warning towards him, even a verbal attack. But he was unable to do anything about it, so he felt very displeased.

“If you don’t want to use the final chance, then leave quickly!” Lang Ya land spirit said, displeased.

Fang Yuan unconcernedly shrugged his shoulders: “Although I did not get the immortal material you mentioned, but I brought this. Take a look.”

The corners of Lang Ya land spirit’s lips curled up: “Brat, you want to deceive me? Hmph, you think immortal materials can easily substitute for each other? I cannot...”

He suddenly stopped speaking.

His eyes flew wide open, his gaze intensified sharply as it fixed upon the immortal material in Fang Yuan’s hand.

This immortal material naturally was not a simple one, it was a rank eight immortal material Fang Yuan had picked up inside the Gu formation in Earth Trench!

Lang Ya land spirit’s eyes were captivated.

“This... this... this... looks like fragment of the immemorial desolate beast cloud phoenix’s body!” Lang Ya land spirit stuttered in an incredulous tone.

Fang Yuan gave a thumbs up: “As expected of Lang Ya land spirit, you are correct. After I obtained this immortal material, I had to spend some effort before I found out its origin.”

As he said this, Fang Yuan handed this immortal material to Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit did not restrain himself, he quickly stretched his hand, grabbing the immortal material and put it in front of his eyes, examining carefully.

“Good stuff, good stuff.”

“Sure enough, it is a fragment of a cloud phoenix, this is a rare object!”

“What dogshit luck do you have, to actually get such a treasure!”

Lang Ya land spirit muttered non-stop, he was extremely enticed, and his gaze looked somewhat infatuated.

No matter which Lang Ya land spirit it was, they both originated from Long Hair

Ancestor.

Long Hair Ancestor excelled in Gu refinement, and was also infatuated with it. Lang Ya land spirit had also inherited this nature.

Right now, as Lang Ya land spirit looked at this rank eight immortal material, his thoughts started to fluctuate. He had bitterly sought for such immortal materials, but had not found them, if he had this, the gaps in materials for a lot of Immortal Gu recipes could be filled up. The Gu refinement materials for one or two Immortal Gu would even be collected entirely, and the Gu refinement could begin immediately!

Lang Ya land spirit had already stopped paying attention to Fang Yuan, his gaze was tightly fixed at the cloud phoenix’s fragment, inspecting it from all directions. He was almost salivating!

Even in Lang Ya blessed land, there were very few rank eight immortal materials.

Why?

It was simple, they were hard to gather!

Like this cloud phoenix’s fragment, its main body was an immemorial desolate beast cloud phoenix! This cloud phoenix was extremely powerful, able to match rank eight Gu Immortals.

To gather this immortal material, normally speaking, one had to kill the cloud phoenix. Gu Immortals were few in numbers, rank eight Gu Immortals were even fewer, only a handful of them existed. They had to consider their tribulations and their own safety, and would not easily start a battle. Unless they had some specific demands, there would be extremely few rank eight immortal materials entering the market.

This was also the reason why Fang Yuan had only put two immortal materials in treasure yellow heaven, yet he was easily able to trade for all kinds of food for Immortal Gu.

Even Lang Ya land spirit’s main body, Long Hair Ancestor, did not have too much capability to personally gather rank eight immortal materials.

One of the reasons he agreed to refine Gu for Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was to borrow the strength of the rank nine venerables to gather rank eight immortal materials.

Fang Yuan saw Lang Ya land spirit’s expression, and smiled, he then took out another rank eight immortal material, and intentionally asked: “Lang Ya land spirit, help me check the origins of this immortal material.”

“Ahhh!!” Lang Ya land spirit raised his head to take a glance, immediately letting out a loud and shocked scream.

His eyes were wild with joy: “Heavens, isn’t this the wing of a tiger-striped honey bee? Look, such beautiful lights from dao marks. The metal path dao marks on this wing are so dense that we can see the light from the dao marks with our naked eyes!!”

“Brat, how could you obtain something of this level!? It simply angers me to death, I searched so hard for so many years, but even I have barely over twenty of them. They are so precious that I am not willing to use them!!”

Fang Yuan laughed loudly: “What if I say I picked them up, do you believe me?”

Saying this, he immediately took back the cloud phoenix’s fragment from Lang Ya land spirit’s hand.

Lang Ya land spirit was caught unprepared, and after he reacted, he gave a miserable howl, feeling like a piece of his heart had been cut out.

He stamped his foot and shouted: “What are you doing?!”

“Doing what?” Fang Yuan had a baffled expression, “This belongs to me, are you thinking of stealing it?”

Lang Ya land spirit stiffened, he was not able to retort and could only glare at Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 976: Familiar Face

Lang Ya land spirit looked straight into Fang Yuan’s eyes, unsure of what to say.

These immortal materials were Fang Yuan’s, he was so anxious that he almost scratched his own head.

Fang Yuan looked at Lang Ya land spirit with a smile, not matter how bad Lang Ya land spirit’s attitude towards him was, as long as these immortal materials were with him, he seemed to have taken hold of Lang Ya land spirit’s weakness.

Suddenly, Lang Ya land spirit’s eyes turned, and he quickly reacted.

He was no longer anxious, instead sneering: “Hmph, brat, do I still not know you? You swindler, you don’t do anything without benefits! Speak, what advantage you want to take from me?”

Fang Yuan pretended to be unhappy: “Your words are really wrong. I didn’t come to take advantage of you, but to do a fair transaction with you.”

“Hehe.” Lang Ya land spirit was already somewhat prepared for Fang Yuan’s shamelessness, “Speak up, don’t talk in a roundabout way.”

Fang Yuan drooped his eyelids, staring at the immortal materials in his hands: “Since you are so forthright, then I will speak directly. Can I ask if you have the immortal killer move familiar face?”

Lang Ya land spirit was stunned before asking back: “How did you know I have Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s signature killer move?”

Fang Yuan was inwardly joyous, Lang Ya land spirit indeed had it!

He had only made a guess about this.

Thinking of the past, Lang Ya land spirit lacked a desolate beast and wanted Fang Yuan to grab a living one, using the mortal killer move unfamiliar face as a reward to tempt Fang Yuan.

Back then, when they had been discussing, Fang Yuan had asked about familiar face and Lang Ya land spirit’s original words were:

“Familiar face? You are really daring! That is an immortal killer move, the core Gu is the legendary attitude Gu. Even if I give it to you, you will not be able to use it. But this killer move of mine has a huge relationship with familiar face, it can be said to be the former version of it, this is a mortal killer move and is suitable for you to use.”

Land spirits were simple and would not tell lies.

Lang Ya land spirit had not said that he did not have familiar face, he had only said that even if he gave it to Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan would not be able to use it.

But Fang Yuan now already had attitude Gu with him.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had deceived two rank eight Gu Immortals with his rank six cultivation in his time.

Fang Yuan should also be able to do it!

“Looking back over that time, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable sought out my main body to refine space escape Gu. My main body also had been interested and worked an entire twenty-one years with Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable. This duration was according to the time of the five regions, when calculated with Lang Ya grotto-heaven’s time, it would be even longer!”

Lang Ya land spirit recalled those eventful years with a nostalgic expression.

He paused for a moment, before continuing: “In these twenty-one years, my main body and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable made many attempts, but they all failed. Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s accumulated savings were spent, and even my main body’s treasury was used. My main body naturally would not accept making a loss, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had to bring out his resources to buy immortal materials from my main body. Unfamiliar face, vaguely familiar face and familiar face, this set of killer moves was one of them.”

“So it was like that.” Fang Yuan nodded, engraving this information in his mind.

Lang Ya blessed land indeed had deep foundations, actually having Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s possessions.

A person’s wealth is their own ruin, no wonder Shadow Sect targeted them, and even Heavenly Court also attacked.

Fang Yuan had also been eyeing this land of treasures, but his strength was simply not enough, and rashly attacking would only cause trouble for himself.

“Brat, what do you want familiar face for? Hehehe, did you experience the benefits of unfamiliar face? My things are all of top quality. But unfamiliar face is only a mortal killer move, it indeed is not suitable for your current cultivation.” Lang Ya land spirit laughed.

Fang Yuan spoke frankly: “I want to exchange a rank eight immortal material for familiar face.”

Lang Ya land spirit had still been laughing, but the next moment his laughter turned into anger: “Brat, you really think I am stupid? You want to use a rank eight immortal material to buy Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s signature killer move? Keep on dreaming!”

Fang Yuan did not mind it, and asked with a warm attitude: “Then what’s your price?”

“Ten rank eight immortal materials!”

This time, it was Fang Yuan’s turn to change his expression: “Impossible! How could I have so many in my hands? Do you really think I picked them up?!”

He cried out in seeming seriousness, lying brazenly.

Lang Ya land spirit was in the dark.

He sheepishly smiled: “Then eight?”

Fang Yuan’s eyes were wide open as he shouted: “Eight?! You are robbing me! Back then, you told me yourself that familiar face’s core Immortal Gu is attitude Gu! Without attitude Gu, familiar face simply cannot be used. I am only trying to use it as reference, to make my own deductions and create an immortal killer move suitable for myself. You think I will use eight whole immortal materials in exchange for merely familiar face?!”

Fang Yuan’s saliva flew out as he shouted, landing on Lang Ya land spirit’s face.

Lang Ya land spirit looked embarrassed, retreating a few steps.

He had been tricked many times by Fang Yuan, and had learned to bargain. But clearly, his experience was still not enough, and he was stumped by a few words from Fang Yuan.

In the end, Lang Ya land spirit’s existence was only an obsession formed by heavenly power. They were extremely simple, Lang Ya land spirit being able to reach this stage was already extraordinary.

Fang Yuan continued to lower the price loudly with ragged breathing. According to him, familiar face had already been degraded in value to being of no worth whatsoever, while the rank eight immortal materials’ rarity and value were emphasized and enhanced countless times.

Lang Ya land spirit was unable to hold his own, and kept taking steps back in defeat.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life of five hundred years, he had worked as a merchant. He ran a merchant caravan and built stores, earning a huge fortune, but in the end it was destroyed in just one day, breaking his habitual thought processes from Earth, and he comprehended the logic that this world was different from Earth, it was a world where the fist was strongest!

Fang Yuan finally reduced the price to five immortal materials.

This was the limit.

If he tried to reduce it any further, Lang Ya land spirit would not sell familiar face.

Land spirits were simple but stubborn. However, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s signature move was indeed worth this much at the minimum!

Lang Ya land spirit would not make a loss, he had calculated internally, at most he could say he had sold it at base price.

Fang Yuan knew he could not change the outcome, immediately paying five immortal materials and getting possession of familiar face.

Success!

The joy Fang Yuan felt was hard to describe.

Although he could use the light of wisdom, it would be extremely difficult to deduce familiar face. His wisdom path attainment was grandmaster level, but his transformation path attainment was merely at master level. And the ‘familiar’ series were transformation path killer moves.

“Even if I could deduce it, it won’t be the same. But now what I have is the original familiar face, which contains its full contents without any flaws!”

Fang Yuan had no mood to keep staying, and left immediately.

He returned to Hu Immortal blessed land, and started to carefully study the immortal killer move.

There was only one core of familiar face, that was the rank eight attitude Gu. This move fully utilized the might of attitude Gu, one could say attitude Gu was the essence of this move, and without it, no matter which other Immortal Gu was added, it would be hard to display the profound capability of familiar face.

Besides attitude Gu, familiar face had over twenty supplementary Gu. Among them were two Immortal Gu, including change form Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan had failed in refining Change Form, while he did not even have the Immortal Gu recipe of the second Immortal Gu. This was the only blemish in this otherwise perfect matter.

“It seems that in the past, when Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was at rank six, he possessed these two supplementary Immortal Gu.”

Shortly afterwards, Fang Yuan entered the underground cavern and used the light of wisdom, continuously consuming large amounts of star thoughts as he began modifying the immortal killer move familiar face.

Several days later, he succeeded.

The two supplementary Immortal Gu were removed, about a thousand mortal Gu were added in, barely replacing the effect of the two Immortal Gu.

With this, the activation of Fang Yuan’s modified familiar face was over ten times slower and more complicated.

The original familiar face only had over twenty Gu worms, even including attitude Gu, it did not reach thirty. The fewer the Gu worms, the simpler and faster the process of activation.

After Fang Yuan’s modification, the number of Gu worms was over a thousand, their activation naturally was not as fast and convenient as the original.

This was something he had no other way to deal with.

Fang Yuan tried activating the modified familiar face.

The result of the test made him quite satisfied.

The modified familiar face could show sixty percent of the original’s capability. The two supplementary Immortal Gu had been replaced with a thousand mortal Gu, being able to reach this point was already extremely exceptional.

It was just that the activation was very slow and required about an hour.

This was not of much importance, after all, familiar face was not used for battle.

“In my previous life, I refined change form Immortal Gu and used it as the core to form the modified vaguely familiar face. Now, I have this modified familiar face where the effect is over a hundred times better! I can completely deceive rank seven Gu Immortals, while the specific situation needs to be assessed for rank eight Gu Immortals.” Fang Yuan inwardly calculated.

The killer move familiar face was exquisite beyond compare, especially the attitude Gu at its core, causing Fang Yuan’s transformation to not be a transformation of surface appearance, but directly affecting others’ minds.

Even if Fang Yuan transformed into a stranger, if the enemy was affected by this move, they would feel Fang Yuan was a long lost friend, or have a warm impression, or feel intense familiarity.

After gaining familiar face, Fang Yuan spent some time to practice every day.

Although attitude Gu was at rank eight, its requirements for activation were very low, only using up mental energy, not using up any immortal essence.

Thus, Fang Yuan’s practice did not cost much.

As he became more accustomed, the time taken to activate familiar face reduced to half of the original one hour.

“The preparations are done. Now, I will have to wait for Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s tribulation.” Fang Yuan settled down, staying in Hu Immortal blessed land and occasionally traveling back and forth from that small village which had the spring dream fruit tree.

He continuously refined dream path mortal Gu, and used these Gu to pick up large numbers of spring dream fruits.

As time passed, his injuries gradually turned better, and finally it was the day of Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s tribulation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 977: Slavery Immortal Gu

In a green heaven fragment world within Western Desert.

The sky was green, the wind that would not stop in all four seasons was blowing gently.

A pure white and vast city was stably floating in the air, letting out faint golden radiance.

At present, humans were the rulers of the world. The variant human races, who once were dominant, were already hiding in corners of the world, surviving with difficulty.

And this green heaven fragment world was the paradise for a group of one of the races of variant humans, the feathermen.

Immortal Gu House Sacred Feather City was the strongest headquarters of these featherman descendants.

Right now, rainbow flags were hanging in Sacred Feather City, cheers and shouts could be heard everywhere.

All the feathermen were calling the same name.

“Yu Fei!”

“Yu Fei!”

“Yu Fei!”

The featherman king had passed away, according to their customs, it was time to select the new featherman king through battles.

And just a while ago, the battle had concluded.

The most popular candidate, the featherman prince Dan Yu, had actually lost. While the ordinary citizen, the black haired youngster Yu Fei, had obtained the final victory.

“I, Yu Fei, have finally realized my life’s dream, I have become the featherman king!” Yu Fei was severely injured, but it did not bother him, as he raised his head and laughed heartily.

He stretched his arms as well as his wings, enjoying everyone’s cheers.

He grinned from ear to ear, and his mouth was opened wide, revealing his gums.

“This new featherman king is quite unique, he is quite different from the other kings.”

“Hehehe, he is an interesting fellow.”

“It seems that he has quite the ambition, he wants to expand the territory of us feathermen. But after he becomes the featherman king, he should become more mature.”

Behind the scenes, three featherman Gu Immortals were communicating with each other, wearing smiles on their faces.

But right at this moment, a powerful attack suddenly hit this peaceful city!

Boom!!!

The enormous explosion shook the entirety of Sacred Feather City.

“Painful, painful, painful!” Yu Fei was caught off guard, he lost his balance and crashed onto the ground, rolling around in the process.

“Quickly look, this, this is?!” The feathermen at the front saw something amiss, they pointed at the sky and stammered in fear, they could not speak.

Immediately after, most of the feathermen raised their heads, they were shocked to find out that above them, in the green sky, there was a huge crack!

From the crack, several figures descended like demonic gods.

The three featherman Gu Immortals in Sacred Feather City had already reacted, they were startled to awareness as they flew towards the sky.

They appeared to face the invading enemies while shouting to their featherman citizens.

“Be careful, there is a strong enemy attacking!!”

“Quick, sound the alarms, defend our homeland!”

“Gu Masters assemble, go to the formation cores and activate the defenses of Sacred Feather City!”

The entire city was in chaos, fear was spreading.

Sacred Feather City had been peaceful for too long, they had no competition with the outside world, it was like life inside a utopia. This caused their defenses to be very lax, and with the crowning of a new king, the non-militarized feathermen could not respond properly.

The enemy had come in with such momentum, the three featherman Gu Immortals were grim-faced, but they held a hope as they tried to negotiate peacefully.

But the command from the enemy’s leader, White Sea Shatuo, destroyed the three featherman Gu Immortals’ hopes.

This old Gu Immortal’s eyes were extremely apathetic, as he commanded: “Attack!”

The three featherman Gu Immortals were no match for them, and could only retreat to the Immortal Gu House Sacred Feather City and defend.

Sacred Feather City was besieged from all directions by the Western Desert’s immortals, battlefield killer moves followed one after the other, as they covered the whole area. Countless mortal killer moves and immortal killer moves impacted the Immortal Gu House, creating grand fireworks.

White Sea Shatuo had clearly come prepared, as his methods immobilized Sacred Feather City.

Sacred Feather City seemed like it had sunk into a mire, it would be difficult for it to get free in a short period of time.

The feathermen had lived in peace for very long time and now they were suddenly thrusted into a life and death battle, they were not able to cope in time. The three immortals were also the same, thus losing the best chance to escape.

Two days later.

Boom!

A bolt of lightning shot out and struck a section of the wall of Sacred Feather City.

The city wall immediately crumbled, and shortly dispersed into countless Gu worm fragments.

None of the featherman Gu Masters defending the city wall were able to escape, their dead bodies covered the ground.

Dust clouds rose, from within, a slight trace of green light suddenly flashed.

“Damn it!” The battle had already lasted for two days and two days, the featherman Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong’s eyes were bloodshot.

He saw the destroyed city wall, their defense had a flaw now, thus he immediately flew to guard it.

Immortal Gu Houses were essentially formed from countless Gu worms. This destroyed city wall meant all the Gu worms in it had died, and it was like a hole had been opened in the Immortal Gu House.

This was like a boat with holes, its defense had reduced by a large extent. If the enemies pierced through it and took the chance to enlarge this hole, the whole Immortal Gu House could be destroyed in the end!

Right now, although the hole was small, it absolutely could not be ignored and allowed to be enlarged. Zhou Zhong quickly hurried to block the hole, buying crucial time for the Immortal Gu House’s self-recovery.

However, just when Zhou Zhong had arrived, he heard a sinister laugh: “Hehehe, you have fallen into the trap.”

Suddenly, two figures appeared at his sides, flanking him in the middle.

The portion of the Sacred Feather City that had collapsed had already formed a gap which allowed the two Gu Immortals to enter.

“Scoundrels!” Zhou Zhong was extremely furious and panicked, as he counterattacked. But he had lost the initiative, and after several rounds, he was severely injured and on the verge of death.

“Bind!” From outside the city, a Western Desert Gu Immortal got close and suddenly activated his immortal killer move.

Instantly, Zhou Zhong could not budge an inch, like he was bound all over.

The two Gu Immortals beside him laughed sinisterly, as they struck Zhou Zhong’s chest.

Zhou Zhong spat out huge amounts of blood and was sent flying back like a cannon, crashing through countless constructions on the way before finally laying down motionless on a pile of rubble.

His body shook slightly as he struggled with all his strength.

However, the killer move’s effect was still there, making him unable to move.

Those two Gu Immortals came rushing over; Zhou Zhong could not help but feel despair.

“Zhou Zhong, hold on, I am coming!” At the crucial moment, a stalwart figure stood in front of Zhou Zhong.

The strongest expert in the featherman city, first supreme elder!

Even by collaborating, the two Western Desert Gu Immortals were unable to match the first supreme elder’s strength.

This supreme elder’s cultivation level was almost at the peak of rank seven. Right now, as he attacked in anger, his might burst out, it was overwhelming!

The two Western Desert’s Gu Immortals were unable to attack back, and were soon injured heavily, they quickly retreated back to the hole.

The final featherman Gu Immortal, Zheng Ling, was controlling the Immortal Gu

House to quickly repair the hole as quickly as possible.

The hole was already eighty percent restored and was getting increasingly smaller.

The two Western Desert Gu Immortals hurried to the hole in the Immortal Gu House, but were unable to escape. They would have to stay and enlarge the hole slightly.

However, at this critical juncture, every second was extremely important. The Western Desert Gu Immortals simply did not have the time to attack the hole.

“Zheng Ling, great work!” The featherman first supreme elder was joyous.

Right now, the Immortal Gu House was continuously being repaired, and the situation had already become such that the enemies were trapped inside, waiting to be attacked.

Once they kill these two Western Desert Gu Immortals, the featherman tribe’s morale would surely be uplifted greatly. The enemies would be shaken and no one would dare to rashly charge into the Immortal Gu House anymore.

But right as the featherman first supreme elder was about to kill the two Western Desert Gu Immortals, a shocking change occurred.

The two Western Desert Gu Immortals no longer had panicked expressions, instead replaced by a smile, as if they had a plot which succeeded.

At the same time, four Western Desert Gu Immortals appeared beside the featherman first supreme elder.

“Our true target is you! You will die!!” The leading Gu Immortal was actually White Sea Shatuo!

At this moment, his aura erupted and surged, and overwhelming might burst out, revealing rank eight cultivation level!

The featherman first supreme elder paled in fear, the moment of carelessness had sent him into a dangerous situation.

“Damn it!” The rank seven featherman Gu Immortal Zheng Ling, who was controlling the Immortal Gu House, was extremely anxious, activating the Immortal Gu House quickly.

Both sides were focused in this peripheral area of the Immortal Gu House, this crucial battlefield.

“Old ancestor, are you alright?” Yu Fei shouted as he moved towards the featherman Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong, who was lying on the ground motionlessly.

Zhou Zhong was struck by the immortal killer move and its effect had yet to dissipate, thus he was still unable to move from the rubble.

“The newly crowned featherman king...” Zhou Zhong sighed as he looked at Yu Fei.

He transmitted his voice: “Leave quickly, the battle here is not something you can participate in.”

But Yu Fei ignored it, flying towards Zhou Zhong’s side and activating mortal Gu: “Old ancestor, I will save you!”

Zhou Zhong appreciated Yu Fei’s bravery, feeling moved, but also helplessness.

There were countless injuries on his body, all inflicted by immortal killer moves, the injuries were filled with dao marks, how could they be healed by ordinary mortal Gu?

“Huh?!” But the next moment, Zhou Zhong’s eyes protruded out, as he stared at ‘Yu Fei’.

“You are not Yu Fei, you...” Zhou Zhong tried to cry out furiously, wanting to resist, but he could not budge.

Before he could even alarm others, Fang Yuan had sealed his voice.

The moment when there was a gap in the Immortal Gu House, Fang Yuan had used Fixed Immortal Travel to travel here from Northern Plains.

The Immortal Gu House’s control near the hole had fallen to almost nil, Fang Yuan was thus not detected by anyone.

He then waited for a chance, and taking advantage of when the two sides were in an intense battle, with their attention focused on the key battlefield, he immediately made a move, disguising himself as Yu Fei, and was able to smoothly approach Zhou Zhong.

Right now, he was silently activating slavery Immortal Gu!

Zhou Zhong resisted intensely, his resistance kept on increasing. But after a while, all his resistance suddenly disappeared, as he was turned into Fang Yuan’s slave!

In an instant, he turned to Fang Yuan’s side.

“I finally succeeded.” Fang Yuan was completely exhausted.

Shortly after, he gave a command to Zhou Zhong: “Go replace Zheng Ling to take control of the entirety of Sacred Feather City.”

“Yes, master.” Zhou Zhong moved his heavily injured body, flying towards the center of Sacred Feather City.

“Elder Zheng Ling, go reinforce first supreme elder. I will control the Immortal Gu House!” Zhou Zhong called out.

Zheng Ling was joyous, the featherman first supreme elder’s situation was already extremely bad. Although he was controlling the Immortal Gu House, the entirety of Sacred Feather City was already immobilized by the enemy, as such, it was not able to display its true power.

Instead of using Sacred Feather City’s power, it was better for him to go in person to reinforce the first supreme elder.

“Are your injuries okay?” Zheng Ling was about to move, but hesitated.

“Quickly go! At this point, even if I die, I will guard the Immortal Gu House.” Zhou Zhong shouted, his whole body bathed in blood.

“Alright, I am leaving. Hang in there!!” Zheng Ling nodded, and turned into a bolt of lightning as he left.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 978: Subduing the Feathermen

Bam bam bam!

Continuous explosions resounded like thunder.

Every explosion shook the whole of Sacred Feather City.

Fang Yuan was standing within ruins, hiding inside the rolling dust and dirt as the entirety of Sacred Feather City shook.

“Enslaving a Gu Immortal is indeed countless times more difficult than enslaving beast groups!” Fang Yuan felt the pressure on his soul.

Enslaving other life forms created a burden on the Gu Master.

Back in Northern Plains, during the contest for the imperial court, Fang Yuan had commanded tens of thousands of beasts, but it was not that he had enslaved all of them, rather, through enslaving myriad beast kings, thousand beast kings and hundred beast kings, he had been indirectly controlling the whole beast army.

Man is the spirit of all livings beings, beasts did not have much intelligence, so Fang Yuan was able to enslave a lot of them.

However, Zhou Zhong was completely different.

Zhou Zhong had deep wisdom and intelligence, although enslaving him did not fail, it created an extremely huge burden on Fang Yuan’s soul.

After all, Zhou Zhong was a Gu Immortal!

Rank six slavery Immortal Gu could only enslave a rank six Gu Immortal.

“It is also because Zhou Zhong is a featherman and not a human. His intelligence is inferior just by a bit, if I were to enslave a human Gu Immortal, I might have failed.”

“I had cultivated soul path previously and have some foundation in regards to my soul. But this is only at the limits of mortal levels, and my foundation in it as a Gu Immortal is quite shallow. By enslaving Zhou Zhong, my soul has become heavily burdened, if my soul was like an energetic youth before, now I have turned into an old man with a heavy load on my back. With such a sharp reduction in strength, it would be good if I can display twenty percent of my ability.”

Fang Yuan sighed inwardly.

All the paths of Gu were broad and profound.

So too was enslavement path.

At Gu Immortal level, there were extraordinary abilities that laymen could not grasp.

Simply put, Fang Yuan was a layman in enslavement path.

He did not know of any enslavement path immortal killer moves, if he had, then in combination with slavery Immortal Gu, his current situation might have been much better.

He was only able to use the slavery Immortal Gu superficially.

But with his previous lives’ experiences, along with the help of the light of wisdom to deduce the plans, he was able to achieve a huge success.

“Master, I have received control over Sacred Feather City. Zheng Ling has already moved towards the battle to support the first supreme elder.” Zhou Zhong’s voice suddenly resounded in Fang Yuan’s ears.

Fang Yuan excitedly licked his lips, clenching his fists subconsciously.

He send a command: “First, kill the real Yu Fei.”

He now had Yu Fei’s appearance, the real Yu Fei was his greatest flaw.

Shortly afterwards, Zhou Zhong’s voice arrived again: “Yu Fei is dead, turned into ashes.”

At present, Zhou Zhong was the only one controlling Sacred Feather City alone, as such, this was accomplished easily.

“Good, do all you can to control the Immortal Gu House and get away from the battle!” Fang Yuan sent another command.

This time, it took a good while before Zhou Zhong’s weak voice arrived: “Forgive me, master, I was not able to do it. The whole Immortal Gu House is already locked in place by the enemies.”

Fang Yuan snorted, a ferocious light flashing in his eyes.

“So it is still like this.” He did not feel much disappointment.

In his previous life, he had laid a trap which caused all the feathermen to suicide, and he was only able to obtain featherman Gu Immortal Zheng Ling’s soul.

Zheng Ling had personally participated in the battle to defend Sacred Feather City, and not much time had passed, thus his memories were extremely clear.

His soul was not like Xue Song Zi’s, which had been tampered with by a soul path expert, Fang Yuan could easily search his soul and obtain all his memories.

It was these memories that let Fang Yuan feel like he had personally experienced the battle to defend Sacred Feather City.

Thus, his timing was so precise, he could infiltrate the Immortal Gu House and take the opportunity when the two sides were in an intense battle to successfully enslave Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong.

There were a lot of opportunities like this, but the best one was this.

Zhou Zhong just happened to be restricted by an immortal killer move and was not able to budge, providing huge convenience to Fang Yuan.

From Zheng Ling’s soul, Fang Yuan also knew this Immortal Gu House, Sacred Feather City, was locked down by the enemies and was unable to be moved.

However, a person like Fang Yuan would absolutely not be reconciled to this, they would personally attempt it.

The attempt indeed failed and he was unable to steal this Sacred Feather City. Fang Yuan could only choose the second best option, observing from the sidelines and letting the events continue to develop.

Similarly to his previous life, Zhou Zhong carried his heavily injured body and controlled the Immortal Gu House with difficulty, freeing Zheng Ling from the duty.

Zheng Ling hurried to reinforce the first supreme elder and had a huge fight with White Sea Shatuo and the rest.

This huge fight was the most crucial fight of the battle to defend Sacred Feather City.

The outcome of the fight was the same as Fang Yuan’s previous life.

White Sea Shatuo and the rest were beaten back, and escaped through the gap in the wall. The first supreme elder was heavily injured and was on the verge of death after being targeted by the combined strength of the Western Desert Gu Immortals. As for Zheng Ling, his situation was slightly better.

The battle ended, the Immortal Gu House was restored and there was no gaps anymore, its defense becoming perfect.

However, the featherman first supreme elder’s injuries could not be healed and he died within the city.

After losing their greatest battle strength, the two featherman Gu Immortals held on for a night, and seeing that nothing could be done, they resolutely decided to give up on the Immortal Gu House and leave this place.

All the feathermen gathered together and activated the immortal killer move heavenly wish.

“I wish — my clan’s feathermen, survive!”

“I wish — my clan’s feathermen, gain freedom!”

“I wish — my clan’s feathermen, have a place to live in the world!”

The Western Desert Gu Immortals observed from the sidelines, letting the feathermen leave. Once the feathermen left, they could obtain the entire Immortal Gu House Sacred Feather City.

It was the first time Fang Yuan experienced this heavenly wish.

He felt a majestic and powerful white light engulfing him along with the rest of the feathermen, and transporting them through a white tunnel.

He felt he was like a piece of wood dropped into a rapid whirlpool, as he was sent revolving round and round.

After about five minutes, the surrounding white light suddenly disappeared and Fang Yuan found his footing once again.

He was feeling extremely dizzy and almost fell to the ground.

The surrounding mortal feathermen were already sprawled on the ground.

Only the two featherman Gu Immortals, Zheng Ling and Zhou Zhong, were vigilantly standing.

Fang Yuan inwardly shook his head at this : “It seems that after enslaving Zhou Zhong, my own battle strength is not worth any expectations.”

“Where is this place?” The featherman Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong scanned his surroundings.

Zheng Ling’s expression changed rapidly: “Not good! This is a human Gu Immortal’s blessed land! We were treated as an earthly calamity and transported here.”

With Tai Bai Yun Sheng at the lead, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan slowly flew towards the feathermen.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan helped Tai Bai Yun Sheng to pass the tribulation and did not invite them.

But this life, Fang Yuan wanted to use this earthly calamity to intimidate them, so he invited them to help.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was expressionless, feeling both shocked and joyous internally: “Fang Yuan looked for me to tell me he could deduce this calamity and told me what to do. I did not dare to believe him then, but now it seems everything is just like what he said. I can definitely pass this earthly calamity!”

Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan were both inwardly shocked.

Having a featherman calamity was rare and peculiar.

But Fang Yuan had actually accurately predicted it, what did this mean?!

One of the reasons it was difficult to pass heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities was that they could not be predicted.

Fang Yuan now had this ability, which was simply like a divine weapon to pass tribulations! As long as they made specific preparations before the tribulation, the probability of successfully passing the tribulation would be raised by a terrifying degree!

The featherman Gu Immortal Zheng Ling’s heart sank to rock bottom.

In his previous life, when he had seen Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he had a feeling of contempt.

But now, the rank seven Fairy Li Shan, Hei Lou Lan with the Great Strength True Martial Physique and Tai Bai Yun Sheng arrived together, especially the unconcealed aura of Immortal Gu on them, they involuntarily brought huge mental pressure on Zheng Ling.

There was nothing much to say after that.

With Tai Bai Yun Sheng displaying the ability of landscape as before Immortal Gu, the featherman Gu Immortals’ threat towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture had become non-existent.

In his previous life, just with Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, these feathermen had been duped over and over.

This time, not only was there Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan, Zhou Zhong and Yu Fei were also hidden traitors.

After a duel, Zheng Ling was once again killed, but Tai Bai Yun Sheng and the others did not force the remaining feathermen.

This was a mistake Fang Yuan had made last time.

This time, he would not make it again.

These feathermen were different from those feathermen sold in the markets. They lived in the immemorial green heaven fragment world, living on for generations in isolation from the rest of the world. They had the nature of the ancient feathermen, they would rather suicide than lose their freedom.

Thus, Tai Bai Yun Sheng did not restrict them, instead negotiating with them deceptively.

Under the lead of Zhou Zhong and ‘Yu Fei’, the feathermen moved to Star Form blessed land.

With these feathermen, Fang Yuan’s development in Western Desert could reach a new stage, and his prospects were bright.

This was not his only harvest.

After the event, Hei Lou Lan indirectly asked him regarding the prediction of the calamity.

Fang Yuan intentionally gave a bitter smile, asking back: “You think I have such an ability? Don’t forget, Purple Mountain True Monarch is my master, at the same time, Tai Bai Yun Sheng is also his disciple.”

Hei Lou Lan thought: “So it was indeed like this, this ability is too powerful, it is not something Fang Yuan can possess, so it was Purple Mountain True Monarch.”

Unconsciously, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan’s apprehension towards Purple Mountain True Monarch deepened further.

Fang Yuan was able to deal a heavy blow to them, this would be greatly beneficial to him in restricting Blazing Heaven Demoness in the future.

It was only that after he enslaved Zhou Zhong, his soul’s burden had become very heavy, and there was much difficulty in even refining dream path mortal Gu.

This intensified Fang Yuan’s desire towards Luo Po valley.

Luo Po valley and Dang Hun Mountain, if he had both of them, then even if he was a layman in soul path, the foundation of his soul would increase rapidly!

However, right now, it was still not the time to go to Luo Po valley.

In his previous life, Hei Cheng’s soul had ended up in Hei Lou Lan’s hands, much of the information obtained through soul searching had been shared with Fang Yuan as well.

Fang Yuan knew that currently, Luo Po valley had been remodeled into a secret stronghold by Shadow Sect, with large numbers of Gu formations arranged everywhere.

Even in his previous life, when Feng Jiu Ge and the other Central Continent Gu Immortals had attacked Luo Po valley when no one was around, these Gu formations were able to hold them off until Qin Bai Sheng and the rest arrived.

Right now, Luo Po valley was filled with Shadow Sect’s members, it was much more terrifying than a dragon’s den.

Fang Yuan needed to wait for the appropriate time.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 979: Going With The Flow

Fang Yuan had a lot of patience.

After helping Tai Bai Yun Sheng pass the tribulation, Fang Yuan refined dream path mortal Gu while collecting the spring dream fruits, along with expanding his guts Gu and eerie fire dragon python trades.

Soon, his monthly profits greatly exceeded his previous life, it was over two thousand!

There were many reasons for this.

Firstly, Fang Yuan had to spend a lot of time in investigating and gathering information before deciding on suitable trade partners in his previous life. Especially in Western Desert.

But now, with his experience, Fang Yuan could easily contact the buyer and save a lot of time and effort, causing his profits to come much earlier than before.

Secondly, the hairy men in the Fang Yuan stone nests were now free to refine guts Gu. This was different from last time, when they were still refining star thought Gu and other Gu worms that did not provide income.

Thirdly, Fang Yuan did not have any plans to relocate Star Form blessed land, he had already made a new alliance agreement with Hei Lou Lan and the others. He might need to relocate it in the future, but it was not an urgent matter now.

Fourthly, with the feathermen forming caravans and dealing with transactions for him, Fang Yuan obtained much benefits in Western Desert quickly.

The use of the feathermen was starting to show.

But Fang Yuan was still experimenting for now, he did not send out all of these tens of thousands of feathermen.

In this aspect, he had a long term plan, he wanted to use these current feathermen to increase the population of feathermen, he might be able to implement slave trade of feathermen in the future.

In terms of slave trade, even though feathermen were inferior to hairy men, they were much better than rockmen. Especially in Western Desert forces, they sacrificed a large number of feathermen yearly, the demand for featherman slaves was always high and unceasing.

Fang Yuan developed patiently, while he accumulated immortal essence stones, he did not forget to accumulate Gu refinement immortal materials.

Time passed quickly, Lang Ya blessed land was attacked by strong foes once again.

Lang Ya land spirit knew that the enemy was powerful, he had to seek help, sending emergency support letters to Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

In this life, Fang Yuan had planned meticulously, Tai Bai Yun Sheng's immortal aperture did not suffer much losses, after receiving the letters, the two of them went to Lang Ya blessed land.

In Lang Ya blessed land, there was a thick fog of clouds that shrouded everyone's vision. They could not see anything, not the sky, the ground, or even their own fingers.

"This is the twelve wave cloud confusion formation." Lang Ya land spirit explained in a deep and low tone: "And these are the invaders."

The land spirit waved his sleeves, as several images appeared in front of Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Qin Bai Sheng, Jiang Yu, Hei Cheng, Xue Song Zi, He Lang Zi, and Hui Feng Zi, as well as the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie, they were all present.

"It's them!" Fang Yuan pretended to be surprised.

"You recognize these people?" Lang Ya land spirit quickly asked.

Fang Yuan nodded with a serious expression: "These people are extremely strong, the leader, Qin Bai Sheng might only have rank seven cultivation level, but he can fight with a rank eight Gu Immortal."

Lang Ya land spirit was shocked: "So powerful?!"

Fang Yuan pointed at the others: "This is Fairy Jiang Yu, she has dark limit Immortal Gu. This is the supreme elder handling public affairs of a super force in Northern Plains, Hei tribe's Hei Cheng, he has an Immortal Gu House in his possession! There is also Xue Song Zi, he might be only rank six, but he is a member of Snowy Mountain blessed land, he is backed by the rank eight Old Ancestor Xue Hu. And this He Lang Zi, he is a transformation path Gu Immortal with high battle strength, in the past, he rejected a recruitment offer by Old Ancestor Xue Hu. This is Hui Feng Zi, a wind path expert, his wind path attainment level is very deep, he is the publicly recognized fastest person in Northern Plains' Gu Immortal world, he had once escaped from many rank eight Gu Immortals."

As Fang Yuan spoke, Lang Ya land spirit's expression turned grimmer and grimmer.

When Fang Yuan finished his words, Lang Ya land spirit's expression was extremely grave, he pointed at the mysterious black robed Gu Immortal: "To think that the enemies are so powerful. Then who in the world is this Gu Immortal?"

Fang Yuan knew who he was, of course, but at this moment, he pretended to show a confused and suspicious expression.

He hesitated before saying: "This person is covering his face and has an immortal killer move protecting him, he is very mysterious. Let me make a deduction."

Saying so, he pinched his fingers and deduced, his body was covered in starlight as Immortal Gu aura surged around him, as if he was working hard.

Seeing this, Lang Ya land spirit was deceived, he thought: "Even though I had approached Fang Yuan many times in the past and asked him to deduce Immortal Gu recipes for me, this is the first time I am seeing him make a deduction. I do not know what Immortal Gu he is using, but looking at this, his wisdom path attainment level is not low!”

The starlight on Fang Yuan’s body faded gradually, his expression was grim as his eyes shined brightly: “My goodness, this mysterious Gu Immortal is extremely special, he is an immortal zombie, and one of the ten extreme physiques, Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance Physique!”

“You deduced it so quickly?” Lang Ya land spirit was surprised.

Beside him, Tai Bai Yun Sheng chuckled: “That is only natural. Fang Yuan is a wisdom path grandmaster.”

“Wisdom path grandmaster?!” Lang Ya land spirit was shocked, he assessed Fang Yuan again, looking at him in a different light.

Fang Yuan’s expression was calm, his voice was heavy as he spoke to Lang Ya land spirit: “The enemy is so powerful, we are in danger now.”

Lang Ya land spirit chuckled: “No need to worry, as long as we persevere for a period of time, I can capture any Gu Immortal no matter how strong they are.”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan’s eyebrows rose, he probed Lang Ya land spirit while pretending to be curious: “It seems you still have additional assistance?”

Lang Ya land spirit smiled with a smug expression, he did not want to say much, but he changed his mind suddenly and probed Fang Yuan instead: “You are a wisdom path grandmaster at such a young age? Honestly speaking, I am quite surprised. Why don’t you deduce where my confidence lies in dealing with the enemies?”

Fang Yuan naturally knew that Lang Ya land spirit’s confidence was in the rank eight Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron.

But afterwards, he pretended to deduce and acted like he was met with difficulty.

Eventually, he admitted his failure: “I cannot deduce it, honestly speaking, in the past, I have tried to deduce Lang Ya blessed land, but I had no gains. Now is no exception.”

“Hahaha.” Lang Ya land spirit laughed loudly, he patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder proudly, but did not say much.

An Immortal Gu House could attack and defend, so could the rank eight Refinement Cauldron.

Defensive methods were not just against attacks, they could also defend against the deductions of others.

Fang Yuan pretended to fail, this was within Lang Ya land spirit’s expectations.

From his point of view, this was natural. No matter how outstanding Fang Yuan was, he only had rank six cultivation level, no matter how mystical his Immortal Gu were, they could not match the rank eight Immortal Gu House, Refinement Cauldron.

“It is normal for me to fail in deducing it. If I succeed, it would cause Lang Ya land spirit to become very wary.” Fang Yuan smiled coldly internally.

Land spirit were obsessed and pure, but that did not mean they were stupid.

Especially when Lang Ya land spirit’s original form was Long Hair Ancestor, this legendary person had a good friend when he was alive, Immortal Yi Yan, a wisdom path Gu Immortal that created the Prophecy of Three Venerables, he was also a famous person throughout history.

Thus, Lang Ya land spirit was clear about the capabilities of a wisdom path Gu Immortal to a great extent.

If Fang Yuan deduced something, it was evidently out of the scope of ability that a rank six Gu Immortal had, this would cause Lang Ya land spirit to become very wary and suspicious.

He would think: “How could Fang Yuan alone deduce anything? Evidently, he has someone behind him! And this great expert is very powerful, he can breech the defense of my Refinement Cauldron and deduce my arrangements in the blessed land!”

Once he thought of that, Lang Ya land spirit would be very vigilant, he would be on guard against Fang Yuan.

After all, Lang Ya land spirit was the obsession of Long Hair Ancestor. And Long Hair Ancestor was a hairy man, towards humans and other variant humans, he had deep wariness. This could be shown from the transformation in personality and manner of speech in Lang Ya land spirit in Fang Yuan’s previous life.

The reason why Fang Yuan could get close to Lang Ya land spirit was mainly because he had obtained a certain inheritance of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

Because of his agreement with Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, Lang Ya land spirit had to help Fang Yuan refine Gu three times.

If not for that, how could Fang Yuan, as a human, get so close to Lang Ya land spirit?

Even though Fang Yuan had to refine star thought Immortal Gu and all-out effort Immortal Gu, all along, he did not want to waste this final opportunity to refine Gu, that was because he wanted to remain close to Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit had lived countless years in this blessed land. His interactions with the outside world, other than the transactions inside treasure yellow heaven, were limited to only Mo Tan Sang.

He understood that great wealth would attract the greed of others, thus he had been keeping a low profile.

At the same time, he had a natural form of distrust towards other individuals.

Fang Yuan was not strong back then, thus Lang Ya land spirit was not too wary or suspicious of him, but now that he was starting to show extraordinary abilities, Lang Ya land spirit would naturally be alert and uneasy.

How can an outsider be allowed to sleep beside his bed?

In the past, Fang Yuan was a white rabbit, but the Fang Yuan who displayed wisdom path grandmaster attainment was considered a poisonous snake.

Matters developed just like in his previous life.

Fang Yuan was arranged to guard a cloud building by Lang Ya land spirit.

But before that, Fang Yuan suggested that they should allow Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan to join the battle.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng gave his assurance as well.

But Lang Ya land spirit rejected them.

Fang Yuan used a different method to deal with Xue Song Zi this time, he did not sneak attack Xue Song Zi, instead, he fought him openly.

Even though it was a more impressive fight, the result was less of a victory.

Fang Yuan only fought with Xue Song Zi for a while before Shadow Sect’s reinforcements came, and Fang Yuan took the initiative to retreat.

There was no benefit in killing Xue Song Zi. He had Immortal Gu and lifespan Gu, but they could not be taken.

He might as well let him go, so that he could deal with the Central Continent Gu Immortals next.

Fang Yuan had thought of reminding Lang Ya land spirit and making arrangements earlier, so that Refinement Cauldron could take down the group from Shadow Sect in advance, but after considering it thoroughly, Fang Yuan rejected this idea.

First, there was a great risk in dealing with Shadow Sect. Qin Bai Sheng was very powerful, Fang Yuan had no confidence against him. Shadow Sect and Zombie Alliance also had some kind of secret connection, there was more than met the eye.

Second, even if Shadow Sect was dealt with, Fang Yuan’s gains would not be ideal. Refinement Cauldron would hold the biggest use, if they won, Lang Ya land spirit would gain most of the loot. Shadow Sect’s base, Luo Po valley, would end up in the hands of the Central Continent Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan would get nothing.

Third, Fang Yuan needed the Northern Plains Shadow Sect members to resist the Central Continent Gu Immortals. Even though he did not know how the Central Continent Gu Immortals found Shadow Sect while investigating Fang Yuan, this was something he wanted to see. If Shadow Sect was eliminated, Central Continent would have no obstacles, if they found Fang Yuan, what would he do?

Finally, Fang Yuan could guess that the mastermind behind the battle of Yi Tian Mountain was Shadow Sect because of the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance zombie, if they were killed, the influence would be huge, during the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, unexpected mishaps would occur. With many mishaps, Fang Yuan’s plans would be disrupted, his preparations would be in vain.

Thus, Fang Yuan decided to go with the flow for the battle to defend Lang Ya blessed land.

Altering the result of this battle not only carried big risks, the disadvantages outweighed the advantages, a wise person would not do this!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 980: Joining Lang Ya Sect

“Damn it, it had to be at this time!” Qin Bai Sheng clenched his fists, looking at the battlefield in front of him, he was filled with discontent and reluctance.

“Retreat.” A moment later, he sighed as he ordered.

“Why are we retreating?” Fairy Jiang Yu was shocked.

“Luo Po valley is being attacked, it’s the Central Continent Gu Immortals who are investigating the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.” Qin Bai Sheng transmitted.

“How could their investigation lead to us? Unless... heaven’s will?!” Fairy Jiang Yu’s body shuddered.

“Heaven’s will is vast and grand, that is likely the case... But our action earlier caused too much of a commotion, while making preparations for our ultimate plan, heaven’s will obstructed us. Later, on Yi Tian Mountain, I wonder how terrifying heaven’s will’s obstruction will be.” Qin Bai Sheng sighed.

The two conversed at lightning speed, they transmitted their words to each other, no one else heard them.

Soon, Qin Bai Sheng ordered the Shadow Sect members to retreat from Lang Ya blessed land.

“They... have retreated.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng let out a breath.

“Damn it! He escaped again.” Hei Lou Lan clenched her fists, gritting her teeth.

Fairy Li Shan was silent, she was deeply frowning, her expression of worry.

The hairy man Gu Immortals first cheered before feeling great sorrow. In this battle, they had made a bloody sacrifice, and even found traitors. Life was hard to predict, with the sad state of life and death in front of them, these hairy man Gu Immortals who normally only thought of refining Gu were greatly incited.

Lang Ya land spirit dismantled the ancient battle formation Heavenly Giant Solor, his eyes were bright red, he looked at the direction where Qin Bai Sheng and the others were leaving harshly: “These people really think us hairy men are easy to bully! I will return today’s humiliation with bloodshed one day in the future!”

In this battle, because Fang Yuan did not do much, it was quite similar to his previous life.

First, Fang Yuan and the others defended the mortal Gu house cloud buildings, but they were destroyed by Shadow Sect easily, breaking the twelve wave cloud confusion formation. Once again, the inkman Gu Immortal was killed by Qin Bai Sheng rapidly, losing his life.

Lang Ya land spirit’s plan to stall for time was severely disrupted, he had no way out and was pacing around anxiously.

In his previous life, during this crucial moment, the land spirit transformed.

But now, during this period, Fang Yuan gave a suggestion and advised Lang Ya land spirit to use an ancient battle formation.

When Lang Ya land spirit was desperate and at his wits’ end, he heard this suggestion and quickly used it.

Ancient battle formations were quite different from the currently mainstream battlefield killer moves. The dao marks in an ancient battle formation were much less harmful to the blessed land than battlefield killer moves.

Lang Ya land spirit was desperate, he could only use Heavenly Giant Solor.

At this moment, Fang Yuan suggested again: “Just the few of us, how can we resist them? We need more people.”

But Lang Ya land spirit was hesitant, he had more than ten hairy man Gu Immortals, but they were hidden and manipulating the rank eight Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron.

Especially when he somewhat sensed that there were traitors among them.

Fang Yuan had anticipated Lang Ya land spirit’s response, he suggested that he had reliable aid.

Lang Ya land spirit frowned immediately, he was very wary of outsiders, the less people who knew about the blessed land, the better.

Fang Yuan smiled and said: “Land spirit, rest assured, how good is our relationship? I can definitely keep a secret for you! We will not expose any information regarding the blessed land. You just need to summon them directly into Heavenly Giant Solor, and let them fight. Afterwards, give them appropriate remuneration.”

Lang Ya land spirit did not want to agree, but Qin Bai Sheng and the others were attacking more fiercely, even though they used Heavenly Giant Solor, they were still losing slowly.

Lang Ya land spirit had no choice, he could only accept Fang Yuan’s suggestion.

This way, Fang Yuan brought Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan into Heavenly Giant Solor and caused this ancient battle formation’s power to rise.

However, Hei Cheng controlled the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison, he could resist Heavenly Giant Solor.

Qin Bai Sheng’s five finger fist heart sword was extraordinarily sharp, it caused great harm to Heavenly Giant Solor.

The situation was only suppressed for a moment before it turned bad again.

Lang Ya land spirit was forced to move the hairy man Gu Immortals in Refinement Cauldron into Heavenly Giant Solor in batches.

In the intense battle, Lang Ya land spirit’s other self was finally summoned.

After sending three batches, Qin Bai Sheng finally got a chance and had the traitors take action, starting to take away Refinement Cauldron.

Eventually, he obtained many core Immortal Gu from Refinement Cauldron and hurriedly retreated, bringing Xue Song Zi as well as the two exposed hairy man Gu Immortal traitors.

After the battle, Fang Yuan handed Fixed Immortal Travel to Tai Bai Yun Sheng, asking him to bring Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan away, without staying.

This way, he completed a part of the new alliance agreement that they had made earlier.

He had provided a chance for Hei Lou Lan to kill Hei Cheng. But she did not grasp the opportunity, this did not mean that Fang Yuan failed on his side of the agreement.

After the battle, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan were very curious and suspicious towards this Lang Ya blessed land.

But Fang Yuan did not answer them.

The alliance agreement did not state that all information had to be shared openly.

Since Fang Yuan knew everything now, why would he create problems for himself?

Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan felt that Fang Yuan was shrouded in mystery and had a deep background, he could actually be related to such an incredible existence. They could not help but think, was this related to Fang Yuan’s master Purple Mountain True Monarch?

First, he borrowed attitude Gu, then now, using Lang Ya blessed land, he dealt several blows towards the confidence of Hei Lou Lan’s side, this made Fang Yuan very confident in dealing with Blazing Heaven Demoness.

At the same time, he was slightly setting up for the future, where he might cooperate with Hei Lou Lan and the others to capture Lang Ya blessed land.

If possible, Fang Yuan wanted to have sole possession over Lang Ya blessed land. But many times, ideas were beautiful, while reality was cruel. This was minor preparation for the future in case Fang Yuan needed it.

Lang Ya land spirit turned into his second personality, like in the previous life, he immediately decided to relocate Lang Ya blessed land after the battle, at the same time, he changed the social system in the blessed land and created Lang Ya Sect, inviting Fang Yuan to be an external supreme elder.

Fang Yuan agreed.

Speaking about the remuneration of joining this battle, Fang Yuan did not ask for the rank six Immortal Gu recipe of all-out effort Gu, instead he sought a request for reinforcements from Lang Ya land spirit.

In the future, if Fang Yuan got into a dangerous situation, Lang Ya Sect would need to dispatch Gu Immortals to save him.

This way, Fang Yuan roped all of the Lang Ya blessed land hairy man Gu Immortals onto his side.

Lang Ya land spirit handed Fang Yuan a sect mission, asking him to go deep into the icy plain and contact the super tribes that the rockmen and snowmen who were deep underground had created.

“As long as you complete this mission, I will release some Immortal Gu recipes to you. As long as you have enough sect contributions, you can use the points to exchange for the Immortal Gu recipes that you want.” Lang Ya land spirit tempted Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s thoughts shifted: “Can I take a look at these Immortal Gu recipes first?”

“Of course.”

After seeing them, even with Fang Yuan’s broad knowledge and experiences, he was tempted.

Lang Ya blessed land had dozens of Immortal Gu, but the quantity of Immortal Gu recipes was something even Fang Yuan couldn’t expect.

At the very least, Lang Ya land spirit gave Fang Yuan more than two hundred recipes to view!

Fang Yuan quickly saw some Immortal Gu recipes that suited him.

He asked: “Can I choose other missions?”

But Lang Ya land spirit rejected him.

“My Lang Ya Sect has just been established, there are many things waiting to be done, of course many missions are available. But this mission is the most dangerous, thus it is given to you. If you die, so be it, I will not feel any heartache. The hairy man Gu Immortals cannot die so easily, they are one of our true members!”

Lang Ya land spirit only spoke the truth, Fang Yuan did not know whether to laugh or cry, but he feel at ease internally.

“But don’t you worry, I aim to create an era of hairy men, the assistance of you and other species are needed. I have a transformation path method to turn your human body into a hairy man. When you become a true hairy man, I will open up the Immortal Gu storage and allow you to exchange for Immortal Gu or borrow Immortal Gu using contribution points. Hahaha...”

Lang Ya land spirit patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder, encouraging him.

This encouragement was extremely straightforward.

But Fang Yuan did not care.

The first question he had considered was whether he could use familiar face to turn into a hairy man and deceive Lang Ya land spirit.

But soon, he gave up on that idea.

Not only was the familiar face that he had now an incomplete copy, the original familiar face came from Lang Ya land spirit himself, even though he was straightforward, he was not stupid.

“As for turning into a real hairy man, I will not consider it. Humans are the true masters of this world. It has been like this since the Remote Antiquity Era. This is the direction the world is going, how can it be easily turned around? Back then, even Long Hair Ancestor had to hide and conceal his own identity. Right now, he is only a land spirit, what can he accomplish? Hmph, simply wishful thinking!”

Fang Yuan did not think well of Lang Ya Sect’s prospects.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, Lang Ya Sect was taken down by Heavenly Court, this was the eventual outcome of Lang Ya blessed land. Even if the future changes, and it is not Heavenly Court, it could also be other Gu Immortal forces.

Humans were the rulers, the status of variant humans would not change.

Fang Yuan’s plan, from start to finish, was to extract benefits from Lang Ya land spirit. Lang Ya land spirit turning into his second personality carried greater benefits for Fang Yuan than losses. At least right now, for Fang Yuan, there were greater gains.

The original Lang Ya land spirit was conservative, he would not create Lang Ya Sect, or invite Fang Yuan to be an external supreme elder, he would also not agree to assist Fang Yuan when he was in danger.

After the battle to defend Lang Ya blessed land ended, the hundred days battle in Luo Po valley commenced gradually.

Fang Yuan returned to Hu Immortal blessed land, resting as he created a large number of dream path mortal Gu.

At the same time, he amassed a huge amount of Gu refinement immortal materials, to make preparations for refining Immortal Gu.

A month later, he collected all of the spring dream fruits, refining a large number of dream path mortal Gu, the number was higher than in his previous life.

Two months later, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had settled the relationships on the other side as Fang Yuan used the earth tide as an opportunity to enter Eastern Sea.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 981: The Might of a Wisdom Path Grandmaster

Eastern Sea, Yu Lu blessed land.

Just as in his previous life, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were led by the scenic blue travel immortal zombie, Sha Nan Jiang, passing Yu Lu blessed land’s entrance.

“Brother Tai Bai, we meet again. Hahaha!” Shark Demon saw Tai Bai Yun Sheng and showed a warm expression.

He took the initiative to approach and pat Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s shoulder affectionately.

Even though Tai Bai Yun Sheng had not been in Eastern Sea for a long time, he had Man as Before and Landscape as Before, these two Immortal Gu that gave him fame.

Earlier, when Tai Bai Yun Sheng assisted Shark Demon and the others in attacking Yu Lu blessed land, his Man as Before was a huge help to everyone.

After Shark Demon said his greetings, he directed his gaze towards Fang Yuan: “Sir, you must be brother Tai Bai’s best friend, Wisdom Star Chen Dao? Since you are brother Tai Bai’s friend, you are also my friend.”

“I am but a wandering lone cultivator, I would not dare.” Fang Yuan smiled humbly.

His body was straight, he looked like a scholar with a handsome face, he had the appearance of a good looking young man.

His skin was fair, the bridge of his nose was high, his thick brows hung over his deep eyes, right now, Fang Yuan was smiling, with his handsome appearance, he looked like a perfect gentleman, it was very appealing.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan was Xing Xiang Zi, but now, he was Wisdom Star.

The power of familiar face was much greater than vaguely familiar face. If Shark Demon and the others could not expose his identity then, it was even more impossible now.

Shark Demon's wife, Su Bai Man looked at Fang Yuan for a while, speaking: "I heard that sir cultivates wisdom path primarily and star path secondarily, you were highly recommended by Sir Tai Bai. Can we have a demonstration?"

In his previous life, Fang Yuan was disguised as Xing Xiang Zi and declared: he cultivated star path primarily and wisdom path secondarily. But now, Fang Yuan's wisdom path attainment level had reached grandmaster level, even without any wisdom path Immortal Gu, he had sufficient foundation. Thus, he swapped the primary and secondary path this time.

Fang Yuan nodded, saying to Shark Demon and the others: "All of you must be curious about my cultivation level, that is normal. Hmm... then I shall give it a go, and let everyone critique."

In his previous life, Fang Yuan was very humble, but now, even though he spoke in a polite manner, his expression was full of arrogance.

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man looked at each other, feeling great anticipation.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng felt deep worry internally, but he did not show it on his face.

Bo Dan, who was among them, had a grim expression. Fang Yuan's appearance threatened his status immensely, his benefits were being infringed.

At once, everyone's gazes were on Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan smiled, one of his hands was behind his back, while the other was holding a feather fan, waving it in front of his chest.

He looked around, observing the surroundings.

At this moment, it was still the battlefield killer move freezing rain frozen earth. Thus, when he looked around, it was a vast area of snow and ice.

Once in a while, there would be icy rain forming countless snow monsters, bringing huge problems to everyone.

Fang Yuan only took a while to look around before he said: "I have completed my deduction."

Shark Demon and the others were shocked, they thought that Fang Yuan was creating some immortal killer move, but to think that he was done so quickly!

Su Bai Man spoke in an even more polite manner: "Sir truly has incredible cultivation level, to think that you could unravel the flaws of this battlefield killer move in such a manner without creating any commotion, it is truly amazing."

"No, no." Fang Yuan waved his hands: "Madam is too kind. It would take some effort to deduce the flaws of this battlefield killer move, what I deduced was not that."

An immortal zombie asked immediately: “Then what did sir deduce?”

Fang Yuan spoke calmly: “I deduced some details about the battlefield killer move. For example, the battlefield killer move that we are in is called freezing rain frozen earth.”

Hearing this, the immortals were stunned.

Immediately, Shark Demon frowned as a sharp light flashed in his eyes, he had a ruthless nature, he was about to blow up when Su Bai Man stopped him secretly.

Bo Dan chuckled, saying: “Chen Dao, are you toying with us? Everyone knows that this battlefield killer move is called freezing rain frozen earth. To think that you have such weak abilities but such great guts, you dare to toy with Lord Shark Demon and Lady Su Bai Man!”

Su Bai Man laughed, relaxing the tense atmosphere: “Hold your tongue, Bo Dan, I am sure brother Chen is only joking, he has yet to use his true abilities.”

Fang Yuan shook his head: “Madam, this is what I deduced.”

Su Bai Man’s expression froze, her gaze also became dark.

“What?!” Shark Demon snorted, he could not stand it anymore, he stared with furious eyes as he walked up angrily.

At this moment, Tai Bai Yun Sheng walked forward, standing in front Fang Yuan, obstructing Shark Demon.

He cupped his fists to Shark Demon as he said with a bitter smile: “Lord Shark Demon, it was my fault. I did not tell you all that my brother Chen is like this, he like to explain the deduction in bits and pieces, it has troubled me for a long time too.”

“Oh?” Shark Demon’s expression eased, he stared at Fang Yuan.

“Sigh, oh brother Chen, tell us your full deduction.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng pretended to be anxious.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Everyone, I indeed did deduce the origins of this battlefield killer move, but there is not only freezing rain frozen earth. Underneath it, there is fighting soul battlefield, eight doors labyrinth, and unmoving troops.”

“Fighting soul battlefield, eight doors labyrinth, unmoving troops... is this for real?” Shark Demon was drawn in by Fang Yuan’s words, his eyes shined with bright light as he stared at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan waved his fan slowly: “I made the deduction, how can it be wrong?”

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man transmitted to each other secretly.

Shark Demon was joyful: “My wife, if this Wisdom Star is accurate, then his wisdom path attainment is incredible!”

Su Bai Man agreed: “That’s right! The few wisdom path Gu Immortals that we invited earlier faced great difficulty in deducing the battlefield killer move, to think that this person found the answer so easily.”

Shark Demon pondered: “We will see. What if he is just spouting nonsense and pretending to be mysterious? If he is wrong, what good would it do?”

Su Bai Man thought about it as she rejected that possibility: “I think it is unlikely. Firstly, Tai Bai Yun Sheng is an honest man, he approves of this person, if he really is a wisdom path grandmaster, then it is understandable that he could find the battlefield killer moves. Secondly, we can confirm his claims. As we attack the blessed land, we can confirm if he is right. If he wants to deceive us, he would not be so stupid as to give us information that can be exposed so easily.”

“Yes, you are right.”

While Shark Demon and Su Bai Man were conversing, Bo Dan could no longer wait, he sneered at Fang Yuan: “Chen Dao, you are very smart, what an amazing deduction you made! As long as we do not go past freezing rain frozen earth, who would know if you are right or wrong?”

Fang Yuan sighed internally, he had trampled on and framed this Bo Dan in his previous life, it seemed that it was unavoidable this time round as well.

Fang Yuan did not want unnecessary trouble, but this Bo Dan was prancing in front of him, he had no choice.

At this time, Shark Demon smiled: “Sir Chen, Bo Dan is rude, please don’t take it personally.”

“Even though he is rude, he is speaking the truth. The things that I deduced need some time to confirm.” Fang Yuan nodded in admission.

Su Bai Man smiled lightly: “I don’t know why, but even though this is the first time I am meeting sir, it is as if we are long lost acquaintances, I feel a sense of cordiality and trust. Thus, even though we cannot confirm it now, I will believe sir.”

“Hahaha, many people say that as well.” Fang Yuan talked big, he was not humble at all.

But he did not need to be humble anyway.

The effect of familiar face was like this.

Shark Demon said: “Sir Chen, we are stuck at freezing rain frozen earth, I hope sir will help. The faster we unravel this battlefield, the faster we can get to the next layer and confirm sir’s deductions, proving your capabilities.”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Lord Shark Demon, that is not true. I am confident in my earlier deduction, I do not need to confirm anything to myself. It is just that all of you do not trust me and needs some affirmation.”

After a while, Fang Yuan continued: “Since you want my help, should we talk about the remuneration first?”

Shark Demon frowned, Fang Yuan’s attitude made him very unhappy.

After all, Fang Yuan was only rank six while he was rank seven, this attitude of a rank six towards a rank seven could already be considered a form of offense.

Fang Yuan sucked up to Shark Demon in his previous life, that was because he wanted to join Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance, thus he was very polite. But now, Fang Yuan had already obtained the Earth Trench inheritance, why would he need to join Zombie Alliance?

Shark Demon was attacking Yu Lu blessed land, he needed Fang Yuan’s help, Fang Yuan had to make use of this status to gain more benefits.

After some negotiation, Shark Demon offered a huge price.

Fang Yuan accepted it gladly and started to work.

Even though he did not have star thought Immortal Gu, now was different from his previous life, he had wisdom path grandmaster attainment level. Even if he only used mortal Gu, he could do many things.

Most importantly, he had unraveled this battlefield killer move in his previous life.

Thus, when he worked, results came quickly, it caused everyone to cheer and gasp loudly.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan could only focus solely on unraveling the battlefield killer move, but now, Fang Yuan had a lot of leeway in doing it, he placed his focus on learning instead.

Be it in his previous life or now, Fang Yuan did not have a single battlefield killer move.

He was extremely curious in regards to any battlefield killer move.

As time passed, Fang Yuan gained more understanding about freezing rain frozen earth, and obtained deeper insight.

The core Immortal Gu of freezing rain frozen earth, how many there were, how many supplementary mortal Gu there were, Fang Yuan gradually understood them.

Except that he could not investigate for the time being how these Gu worms cooperated, and how many ways they could be used in a certain manner.

Once in a while, there would be icy rain and snow monsters attacking, but Shark Demon and the others attacked and ensured Fang Yuan’s safety.

Fang Yuan did not make the same mistake as previously, he did not increase the power of freezing rain frozen earth. Instead, he deduced and unraveled it step by step, weakening the battlefield killer move gradually.

As for Bo Dan, he had already shrunken into a corner dejectedly, he did not dare to contest with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s wisdom path attainment was far deeper than in his previous life. Back then, Bo Dan felt indignant, but now, he saw their immense gap and lost all fighting spirit, he felt great dejection.

Eventually, when Fang Yuan almost expended all of the mortal star thought Gu that he accumulated, he stopped.

Sixty percent of freezing rain frozen earth had been unraveled, only forty percent was left.

“Why did brother Chen stop?” Shark Demon asked anxiously.

Fang Yuan smiled: “Haste means waste, I am feeling tired, we will stop here for today.”

Shark Sea was furious, but he needed Fang Yuan’s help, he had no other choice, he could only smile: “Sir, you are right, you need to rest. How about this, you are a guest from afar, do you want to visit my Shark Sea? My personal shark fishing banquet is unique in Eastern Sea.”

The other immortals gasped upon hearing this, they looked at Fang Yuan with much envy.

Fang Yuan nodded, his expression was plain: “Then I will trouble Lord Shark Demon.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 982: Grasping the Battlefield Killer Move

In the shark fishing banquet, delicious delicacies filled the table as the aroma of wine pervaded the air.

After seeing Fang Yuan’s wisdom path attainment, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man were very inviting and warm towards Fang Yuan.

While drinking, Shark Demon summoned many female Gu Masters: “How can we not have dances to entertain us while in a banquet? These are the servants that I nurture, they have Gu Master cultivation level and are skilled in transformation path, they can perform the sea demon dance, many Gu Immortals have praised it. Today, I will let both of you watch and critique it.”

These female Gu Masters were all beautiful like flowers, their bodies were slim and attractive.

Right now, music could be heard as the girls danced, their sleeves fluttered in the air, they were extremely dazzling and alluring.

Suddenly, the music changed as the calming atmosphere became faster, the female Gu Masters transformed and gained fish tails, becoming mermaids dancing in the air.

The music changed again, becoming lively, the female Gu Masters transformed again, growing shells on their backs, becoming clam girls, dancing around.

The music changed again with a metallic feel, the hands of the female Gu Masters turned into crab pincers, they danced around causing wind to blow, they were bold and grand.

The music changed time and again, as the female Gu Masters transformed every time, showing an array of dancing styles, Fang Yuan had a truly eye-opening experience.

“Eastern Sea has various unique and wondrous cultures, it is truly different from Northern Plains’ brutish and bold beauty.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng praised deeply.

Shark Demon saw that Fang Yuan did not speak and asked: “How would Sir Chen critique it?”

“It is indeed beautiful beyond imagination.” Fang Yuan said, finding it a bit funny internally.

In his previous life, his wisdom path attainment was not high, even though he suppressed Bo Dan, it was through schemes and framing.

But now, after displaying great capabilities, Fang Yuan obtained the enthusiastic hosting of Shark Demon and Su Bai Man.

In his previous life, even though Fang Yuan joined the shark fishing banquet, there were no dances or songs provided for him. But now, its appearance showed that Shark Demon was placing great emphasis on Fang Yuan.

As the dance ended, the female Gu Masters left.

Su Bai Man smiled: “I wonder which servants Sir Chen and Sir Tai Bai like? Just tell us, I can make the decision and give them to you.”

“I am too old, too old. Thank you madam for the thought!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng rejected it politely.

Fang Yuan said: “I have heard some things about the shark fishing banquet. I am more interested in the shark groups outside of the underwater palace.”

Su Bai Man felt some disappointment but she smiled: “Hehehe, sirs did not choose the servants, it is their misfortune. But I cannot make decisions about the sharks in this sea, they are my husband’s prized possession.”

“Hahaha, if you want to take part, how can I not agree to it? In every shark fishing banquet, I will gift some sharks. But there is a rule in this, I wonder if you have any understanding towards it?” Shark Demon asked.

“Of course I understand.” Fang Yuan nodded, waving the fan in front of him: “But I need to confirm with the owner, the sharks in this sea, no matter what we catch or how many we catch, they will belong to us?”

“That is true, but you have to do it personally.” Shark Demon nodded without hesitation.

Fang Yuan smiled: “Then let me deduce which is the most valuable shark in this Shark Sea? If I can really obtain it, I hope you can bear with the pain and give it to me. Hehehe.”

“Sir Chen, go ahead and use your methods.” Shark Demon smiled, he wanted to probe Fang Yuan’s true foundation.

Fang Yuan pretended to pinch his fingers and deduce.

At once, his body was covered in starlight, shining brilliantly.

A moment later, starlight shone and shot out everywhere, filling the entire palace.

A moment later, bells rung, the scene was beyond words.

Starlight shone with a grand appearance, aura of Immortal Gu surged as Shark Demon and Su Bai Man were moved, they transmitted to each other secretly.

“This Wisdom Star Chen Dao is truly incredible!”

“Did you notice, he has already used three different Immortal Gu, I wonder which wisdom path Immortal Gu they are?”

What they did not know was, Fang Yuan was just pretending, it was a facade.

The starlight faded, Fang Yuan’s forehead was covered in sweat, after resting for a short moment, he slowly opened his eyes.

His eyes burst out with starlight, shooting out several meters past, the light was extremely dazzling, one could not stare directly at it.

“To think that Lord Shark Demon and Lady Su Bai Man have such incredible methods. You actually used enslavement path methods to restrain a rank eight level one finger flow shark, I am truly impressed. Even though I deduced it, my methods are too weak, I cannot capture this beast, what a shame. Earlier, I spoke arrogant words, but now my abilities are insufficient, I hope the two of you do not laugh at me.”

The bodies of Shark Demon and Su Bai Man shuddered.

“Wisdom Star Chen Dao could deduce even this secret?!”

“This, this this...”

At once, this rank seven Gu Immortal couple stared with wide eyes, they looked at Fang Yuan with an expression of disbelief.

A few breaths later, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man calmed down slowly as they finally reacted.

Su Bai Man sighed: “I finally know how skilled Sir Chen is! One finger flow shark is our greatest secret, Sir Chen might not know this, but to prevent others from deducing this matter, we had put in a lot of effort to ask Song Jia Dan to conceal this information for us.”

Shark Sea continued: “Jia Dan sits in twin polar, Hua An hides in Nan Gong, there is also Dragon Head Tortoise, living inside adversity sea. Song Jia Dan is one of the three most outstanding wisdom path Gu Immortals in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world. Brother Chen’s methods could breach Song Jia Dan’s defenses, that means that brother Chen’s wisdom path attainment can match Song Jia Dan already?”

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, he had overdone it.

He quickly waved his hand, salvaging the situation: “Oh! I cannot match Song Jia Dan yet, I had been lucky earlier and did better than usual. If I faced off against Song Jia Dan personally, I would not be able to win.”

Shark Demon’s upper body moved forward, he looked at Fang Yuan, saying: “I finally have seen sir’s abilities! But... earlier in Yu Lu blessed land, why did sir not use Immortal Gu?”

Fang Yuan chuckled: “Wouldn’t using Immortal Gu expend immortal essence? This would raise my cost in unraveling it. I am not as rich as Lord Shark Demon, if using mortal Gu can also unravel the battlefield killer move, except that the time needed would be longer, why wouldn’t I do it?”

Shark Demon’s heart was jumping.

Fang Yuan did not mind the time, but he did mind it a lot.

He had accepted Zombie Alliance’s mission to attack Yu Lu blessed land. As time passed, Zombie Alliance’s higher ups would urge him more. If he did not show progress, others would take over.

Thus, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man’s pressure had always been high.

“Sir knows I am a hasty person, dragging on would lead to mishaps, we should take down Yu Lu blessed land as soon as possible.” Shark Demon laughed, continuing: “It seems that my earlier remuneration did not satisfy sir. Sir Chen can quote a price, I will try to satisfy you.”

Fang Yuan shook his head as he smiled: “It is better to take down Yu Lu blessed land slowly. Lord Shark Demon, do you not know the value of a battlefield killer move?”

“Of course I do, I know that the true value of Yu Lu blessed land is not just these battlefield killer moves. It is the method to use the dao marks in the blessed land to create a battlefield killer move! But these methods can be obtained from the land spirit after capturing the blessed land.” Shark Demon said.

“What if there is no land spirit?” Fang Yuan asked immediately.

“This... it is only a small possibility.” Shark Demon hesitated.

“There is a possibility no matter how small. Has Lord Shark Demon seen the land spirit after attacking Yu Lu blessed land for so long? I doubt that is the case. Thus, the safest way is to slow down the attack and comprehend all of the battlefield killer moves.” Fang Yuan sighed deeply.

Shark Demon was starting to get angry, he continued to urge him, but Fang Yuan was insistent on his idea.

Shark Demon could not ruin their relationship, he needed Fang Yuan’s help, he could only endure it.

Fang Yuan had no fear, he raised the price, finally stopping after reaching Shark Demon’s limit.

After resting for a few days, Fang Yuan followed Shark Demon into Yu Lu blessed land again.

This time, he used star thought Immortal Gu, expending many days and finally unraveling the freezing rain frozen earth killer move for Shark Demon.

As for this star thought Immortal Gu, it was quite a peculiar thing.

After rebirth, Fang Yuan succeeded in his first attempt at refining star thought Immortal Gu!

But in fact, refining Immortal Gu was not so easy.

He could refine star thought Immortal Gu because Fang Yuan had a lot of practice in his previous life. Or perhaps his luck had become better after connecting luck to Hei Lou Lan, his elevated luck could be one of the reasons why the Gu refinement succeeded.

Fang Yuan was accumulating materials now, he waited for the time to be ripe before he refined the rank six all-out effort Gu.

Time passed, several months went by quickly.

Under Fang Yuan’s help, Shark Demon had a much easier time attacking Yu Lu blessed land than in his previous life.

Freezing rain frozen earth, fighting soul battlefield, eight doors labyrinth, they were all unraveled by Fang Yuan one after another.

After refining star thought Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan no longer lacked star thoughts, he grasped eighty to ninety percent of freezing rain frozen earth, fighting soul battlefield, and eight doors labyrinth.

Even though Fang Yuan did not have the corresponding Immortal Gu to create any of the battlefield killer moves.

This was already an immense gain.

Fang Yuan's understanding towards battlefield killer moves had become very deep. Using the light of wisdom, one day, Fang Yuan was confident of creating his own unique battlefield killer move using the Immortal Gu that he possessed!

Finally, Fang Yuan faced the battlefield killer move unmoving troops once again.

He finally met with difficulty.

Unmoving troops was the final trial in Yu Lu blessed land, it involved wisdom path and was very tough to breach.

Since Fang Yuan did not have any experience of unraveling it in his previous life, progress was slow.

Fang Yuan simply abandoned it, he did not join Zombie Alliance so Shark Demon could not command him. Of course, the main reason was that Central Continent was in chaos now, with the shattering of Starry Sky grotto-heaven, countless fragment worlds had scattered over Central Continent.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan obtained dual grandmaster attainment level from the fragment world's dream realm. But he did not explore the dream realm fully.

In this life, Fang Yuan was deeply in anticipation.

If he fully explored the dream realm, how much would his gains be?

Would his wisdom path and star path attainment level rise again?

Or maybe his other paths' attainment levels?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 983: Shocking Appearance of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable

Several days later, Fang Yuan appeared in a nameless valley in Central Continent.

A certain fragment world of Starry Sky grotto-heaven had fallen here, and it was temporarily stable.

Central Continent's ten great ancient sects sent their Gu Immortals to guard this valley.

Seeing that He Feng Yang had led Fang Yuan in, the other Gu Immortals did not have good expressions.

Currently, it was thanks to Fang Yuan's rank six bottom tier cultivation level, otherwise, he would not be able to obtain such a benefit.

This fragment world could barely allow a rank six bottom tier Gu Immortal to enter. But in the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, where would they find a Gu Immortal who had cultivation level as low as Fang Yuan?

Thus, Fang Yuan became the sole and unique person in this category.

Immortal Crane Sect made full use of the rules of this contest and allowed him to enter the grotto-heaven fragment world.

Like in his previous life, Fairy Bai Qing asked Fang Yuan to take care of Feng Jin Huang.

Fang Yuan agreed, but he was thinking internally, should he kill Feng Jin Huang here?

Due to Spirit Affinity House keeping it a secret and concealing Feng Jiu Ge’s death, according to Fang Yuan’s information, he knew that Feng Jiu Ge had gone missing in Northern Plains.

But thinking about it, Fang Yuan gave up on this idea.

“Even though Feng Jiu Ge died in my previous life, at this point, the hundred days battle has not concluded yet, anything is possible. Furthermore, Feng Jiu Ge’s death was not confirmed in my previous life.”

“Most importantly, I harmed Feng Jin Huang back then because I wanted her dream wings Immortal Gu. But even though she is a mortal, she can destroy the Immortal Gu with a thought. Even though I am a Gu Immortal, I do not have special methods to steal it. Dealing with her now is courting death, with Feng Jiu Ge still at the height of power, I will definitely face the attack of Spirit Affinity House and the other forces!”

“Go in. The others have already entered, your cultivation is the highest so you are the last one.” He Feng Yang said heavily.

There was no other choice, if Fang Yuan entered first, the mortal Gu Masters from the other nine sects could not compete with Fang Yuan.

Of course, this showed Immortal Crane Sect’s weakness as well.

If Immortal Crane Sect was as strong as Spirit Affinity House, it would not be difficult to arrange Fang Yuan as the first person to go in.

The fragment world of Starry Sky grotto-heaven was right in front of Fang Yuan.

An ocean-blue lake appeared like a half torn drawing, suddenly inserted into this mountain valley that was full of trees.

This was not a complete grotto-heaven or blessed land, Fang Yuan stepped in directly.

At the next moment, he was inside the Starry Sky grotto-heaven fragment world. Looking back, the Gu Immortals from the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent were still in the valley, they were no longer in the same world as Fang Yuan.

The gazes of these Gu Immortals were either solemn, envious, or jealous.

They could not help it, their cultivation level was too high, they had too many dao marks, if they entered outright, they would directly cause this weak fragment world to break apart.

“This lake is huge, I remember that in my previous life, a desolate beast dragonfish was hidden near the small island at the center of the lake, it was influenced by someone’s Immortal Gu and became berserk and frenzied. I have lost self strength Immortal Gu and cannot use strength path giant hand. It will be harder for me to capture it now.”

Fang Yuan recalled as he flew out.

Similarly to his previous life, elite Gu Masters of Heaven’s Envy Manor were trapped on the small central island.

Around the island, the lake water was treacherous, that desolate beast dragonfish was wreaking havoc, creating huge waves.

Fang Yuan descended from the sky, using immortal methods and expending some effort to capture the dragonfish.

Other than the desolate beast dragonfish, there were over six hundred thousand ordinary dragonfish.

Leaving behind the shocked and paralyzed Heaven’s Envy Manor Gu Masters, Fang Yuan flew towards the direction of the dream realm.

Arriving at the dream realm’s area, Feng Jin Huang had already led the four Gu Masters from Spirit Affinity House and occupied this dream realm.

“Fang Yuan, I have been waiting for quite a while.” Feng Jin Huang smiled, her facial features were picturesque, her skin was fair and she radiated deep confidence.

Fang Yuan smiled too: “Before this trip, your mother asked me to take care of you. I will not find trouble with you, I will try to let you have an easy time, but there is a price for it. What can you give me?”

Feng Jin Huang was prepared and was about to speak.

Fang Yuan interrupted her: “If you want to use a method to restore an immortal zombie back to human as the price, forget it. I have already found a suitable method, of course, it is not the ten extreme physique ascension method that you told me before.”

Feng Jin Huang stared blankly, being caught off guard.

She did not expect Fang Yuan to find a suitable immortal zombie revival method so quickly.

“How about this, I know that Spirit Affinity House’s research in dream realms far surpasses the other nine ancient sects. I only need the Gu recipe of a dream realm mortal Gu, I will let you stay at this dream realm and explore it for some time, how about that? You have dream wings Immortal Gu, don’t tell me you do not know the recipe of some dream realm mortal Gu.” Fang Yuan suggested.

According to the ten sects’ agreement, for the representative of Spirit Affinity House, Feng Jin Huang, to occupy this place, she needed to face the challenge of any sect. Only with two out of three victories could she take away the opponent’s rights to claim this territory.

Even though Feng Jin Huang had Fairy Bai Qing’s Immortal Gu, will, and immortal essence, she was still a mortal, she could not beat the immortal zombie Fang Yuan.

Feng Jin Huang’s expression was bitter: “Fang Yuan, your request is too hard to meet. I have dream wings Immortal Gu, everyone knows that. But the value of a dream path mortal Gu recipe is immense, you may be severely underestimating it. I have used some dream path mortal Gu before, but they were only extremely secret practice. I planned to combine them with Dream Wings to create an immortal killer move, but I failed. Those mortal Gu were given to me by the sect, I do not know a single dream path mortal Gu recipe. Change your request, for example, a strength path mortal Gu recipe.”

At this time, dream realms had not appeared on a large scale, dream path was still being explored, it had not been created yet.

Even though dream path Gu worms were appearing, they were limited in quantity.

To make dream path a mature path, it was not enough with just Dream Wings or Dream Travel.

Only a widely cultivated path can be known as a path.

Dream path was still developing in its infancy period. In the five regions, only super forces could research on it. Thus, the value of dream path mortal Gu recipes was immense.

Fang Yuan did not pester about this matter.

He knew: even if Feng Jin Huang knew any dream path mortal Gu recipes, she would not hand them to him.

Thus, this request was only to set up for his true motive.

Fang Yuan said: “Then in that case, I want information on Sword Immortal Bo Qing. You may not know, but this person is a legendary character from Spirit Affinity House. Hand his information to me, don’t try and deceive me with those details already in the market.”

Feng Jin Huang thought: “This Fang Yuan underestimates me! Even though I am a mortal Gu Master, I have been in the Gu Immortal world since a young age. How would I not know Bo Qing? But, why is Fang Yuan seeking Bo Qing’s information?”

She thought again: “Bo Qing is already dead, what’s wrong with agreeing to it? It is easy for mother to get the information, even if it involves Spirit Affinity House’s secrets, I know my limits, I will not hand all of the confidential information to Fang Yuan.”

After thinking about it, Feng Jin Huang agreed.

But Fang Yuan continued: “This dream realm is something Immortal Crane Sect must have. The duration of your exploration will depend on what information you give me. You can transmit to your mother to start preparing already. Two hours later, in Central Continent’s time, I want to see it. Then, according to the value of the information, I will decide your time in the dream realm.”

Feng Jin Huang’s heart sank, she knew that Fang Yuan could not be fooled so easily.

She was the treasure of both her parents, she naturally had Immortal Gu with her, and large numbers of information path mortal Gu, Fairy Bai Qing could learn about Feng Jin Huang’s status at any time.

After spending some effort, both sides finally came to an agreement.

Fang Yuan was very straightforward, he left the area near the dream realm immediately. This time, even though he had already subdued the desolate beast dragonfish, he still needed to take the desolate beast hidden essence turtle, and the desolate plant nether grass.

Two hours later in Central Continent time, a few days had gone by in the Starry Sky grotto-heaven fragment world.

Fang Yuan captured the hidden essence turtle and nether grass, and just like his previous life, he let out some rockmen to explore for him, searching for valuable Gu worms or materials.

He returned to the dream realm’s location as Feng Jin Huang handed him the first batch of information, while unable to conceal her dejected and irritated emotions.

Fang Yuan looked at the information as he nodded, it was very in-depth, as expected of Spirit Affinity House’s internal information.

“In my previous life, the heavenly river in Central Continent had a huge disturbance and many Gu Immortals gained a lot of benefits, but I could not interfere. This time, with my experience, I will not need to make many deductions, I can save much time and effort, I might be able to explore Falling Heavenly River in time.”

Fang Yuan thought as he evaluated openly: “This information, although in-depth, does not talk much about secrets. According to our agreement, I will give you three days. Of course, that is in terms of the fragment world’s time.”

Feng Jin Huang nodded, sighing internally.

She had overestimated herself, while underestimating the dream realm’s difficulty. Until now, even though she had dream wings Immortal Gu, she could not pass the first layer of the dream realm.

She had thought that six to seven days was enough to explore this dream realm completely and obtain great gains.

But the cruel reality was like a loud slap on her face.

“If I knew this, I would lower the price during our agreement. Now, this information can only provide me three days... this is not enough to even heal my injuries. Sigh!”

Feng Jin Huang sighed deeply again.

Fang Yuan knew about her status clearly, but he pretended to not know and left.

But secretly, he turned towards the other side of the dream realm and entered it stealthily.

With his previous life’s experience, he was very proficient, and with enough preparation, he had a large number of dream path mortal Gu, he could use the killer move unravel dream much more frequently.

The first layer’s beastmen wind knot grass dream realm, the second layer’s mountain peak astrolabe chessboard dream realm, they were all unraveled.

He finally came to the third layer of the dream realm.

He did not manage to come here in his previous life.

There was a shore with willows on it, the lake’s surface was like a mirror.

In the pavilion at the center of the lake, a female immortal was playing the zither.

“You are finally here.” She looked at Fang Yuan, starlight shining brilliantly in her eyes, as her mouth was showing a mysterious smile.

Fang Yuan’s body shuddered.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 984: Mystical Dream, Mysterious Song

This was the third layer of the dream realm.

The night was calm, as stars filled the sky.

The water of the lake was peaceful, Fang Yuan had just entered the dream realm when he stood in the pavilion at the center of the lake.

His gaze was staring fixedly at the female immortal, feeling extremely surprised.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

Throughout history, among the ten venerables, only Red Lotus Demon Venerable was mysterious and unfathomable, with his appearance publicly unknown. As for the others, their appearances were widely known.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was the second venerable in history, a disciple of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, as well as the second generation Immortal King of Heavenly Court.

She had incredible accomplishments and fame, her appearance was known by all, Fang Yuan recognized her instantly.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had a tall body, she wore a long blue dress as it was dragged along the ground.

She had a long black waterfall-like hair, extending to her waist.

Her brows were thick and long, her eyes were like the moon in the well, peaceful but oozing with wisdom and mystery.

Her skin was white like snow, she looked at Fang Yuan deeply as her slender hands played the zither.

“You are finally here.” She spoke slowly, her voice was soothing like this beautiful night sky.

“Interesting, in this dream realm, who is my character?” Fang Yuan looked at his clothing, he realized that he was in his true appearance!

This was shocking to Fang Yuan.

Logically speaking, this should not be happening.

Earlier, in the first layer of the dream realm, Fang Yuan was in the form of a child. In the second layer of the dream realm, he was a mortal youngster seeking the path of immortals. Why was he in his original appearance now in the third layer of the dream realm?

“Before entering this dream realm, I have been activating the immortal killer move familiar face. Right now, even this immortal killer move has lost its effect, maybe this dream realm is so deep that my soul has already submerged deeply into it?”

Fang Yuan thought about this and became increasingly alert.

When he was exploring the first two layers of the dream realm, he was clear that it was a dream, it was not real.

But if his soul sank into it completely, he would lose that perception, he would think that everything was real. Like back then, when Hei Lou Lan was undergoing tribulation and had fallen into a dream realm, as it continued to loop, she lost herself in that world.

“In this dream realm, I am in my original appearance, this is a sign of my soul sinking into the dream realm. It seems that this third layer is extraordinary!” Fang Yuan thought of this and focused, not daring to be careless.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable in front of him seemed to understand Fang Yuan’s worry, she smiled lightly: “Don’t be afraid, listen to my song.”

Saying so, her tender fingers moved.

The zither produced an alluring and beautiful sound under her manipulation, it was like the soothing sound of flowing water.

Next, she opened her mouth and sang with an ancient tune and method.

Fang Yuan only heard her sing:

“Fallen songs and despondent heroes, difficulty in resisting the trials of fate.”

“Bent swords sink in the sand, rising and falling from ancient times, the rumbling of an unceasing heavenly river.”

“Alas...”

“Spectral night carries a soul into endless dreams, where can one rest in peace?”

“During spring and autumn body and mind shifts, only heaven’s will remains vast and boundless.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sang in the night, her voice was clear like a mountain spring, flowing into the deepest part of Fang Yuan’s mind.

Fang Yuan frowned deeply, hearing this, he felt that the song was some kind of prophecy, it contained deep meaning, it was trying to say something, but he could not comprehend it in this short time.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable finished her song, her figure gradually faded, but the mysterious smile was still hanging on her face.

Fang Yuan focused intensely, concentrating his mind, but at the next moment, the dream realm vanished!

“What happened? This dream realm suddenly vanished?!” Outside the dream realm, Feng Jin Huang, who was recuperating, opened her eyes with shock and suspicion.

Fang Yuan concealed his figure in time, he was not exposed.

He stealthily left this place, feeling great shock: “Why did this happen? The third layer of the dream realm vanished before I explored it, what sort of dream was it, why was it so mystical? Even with the five hundred years of experience in my previous life, I have never heard of such a dream realm!”

Fang Yuan frowned tightly, he vaguely felt that this dream realm was very special, it had a sort of great meaning and purpose regarding him.

“In the dream, what was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable trying to sing, what was she trying to tell me?”

Fang Yuan tried to recall, but he could not remember anything.

It was like a person waking up after a dream, even though he knew there was a dream, he could not remember any details about it.

Fang Yuan thought hard, even using wisdom path methods, but he could not recall the contents of what Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sang, only the sound of the zither remained in his mind.

At the same time, in Southern Border.

Shadow Sect’s base — Life and death blessed land.

Life and death blessed land contained the door of life and death, and in front of this door, there was a dream realm.

Old Man Yan Shi held nine rank eight Immortal Gu, stepping into the dream realm slowly.

The moment he went in, Old Man Yan Shi felt a cold and surging killing intent!

“Die, die, die!” A man dressed in a black robe pounced at him with bloodshot eyes and messy hair.

At once, Old Man Yan Shi could not move at all.

If outsiders were here and saw this black robed man, they would scream: “Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!”

At the next moment, Old Man Yan Shi was forced out with a heavily injured soul, returning to his body, he spit out a mouthful of blood, his expression pale.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s dream realm was much more difficult than the Star Constellation Immortal Venerable dream realm that Fang Yuan had explored.

Old Man Yan Shi only entered the first layer of the dream realm and was forced to act as a character in the dream.

This character was an enemy killed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Old Man Yan Shi tried countless times, but the moment he entered the dream, he was killed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, unable to react.

“But I have already left the Immortal Gu in the dream, it is time to use the killer move.” Old Man Yan Shi disregarded his injuries, his old and wrinkled right hand opened and revealed an Immortal Gu in his palm.

This Immortal Gu was refined by Yu Mu Chun in Central Continent, it was of rule path, named Become Real.

Become real Immortal Gu was activated by Old Man Yan Shi using immortal essence, turning into a flash of silver light, flying into the sky.

It flew around the dream realm in the air, creating a long silvery trail that stopped in the air and did not disappear.

“Rise.” Old Man Yan Shi chanted internally, countless Gu worms flew out of his immortal aperture, circling around Spectral Soul’s dream realm, forming a formation in the air.

The hundreds of thousands of mortal Gu, all rank five, with become real Immortal Gu and the nine Immortal Gu left in the dream realm as the cores, formed into a mysterious immortal killer move.

An hour later, Old Man Yan Shi’s face was purple and gold, the immortal essence that he accumulated in his life, along with all his Gu worms, were all expended or dead.

Only a silver light cocoon was left, it was huge and wrapped around Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s dream realm completely and tightly.

Old Man Yan Shi let out a breath of air, his body shook as he almost fell to the ground.

He was extremely tired, but he was joyful and looked at the silver light cocoon, muttering to himself: “Next, we will have to wait for it to mature.”

Several days later, in Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, coming out of the underground cave.

He had succeeded.

After spending a month in Hu Immortal blessed land, he finally created an immortal battlefield killer move!

This move was called star soul battlefield, using Cleanse Soul, Star Mark, Star Shoot, Starlight, and Star Thought as the cores, it did not have explosive strength, but it could endlessly drain the enemy’s battle strength over time.

“The light of wisdom is truly formidable, if I had to deduce this alone, I would not have any results even after three years.” Fang Yuan sighed to himself.

Even though this star soul battlefield only had six hundred or so Gu including Immortal Gu.

In fact, the coordination of the Gu worms and the methods to use them were extremely complex.

Thus, to set up this star soul battlefield, Fang Yuan needed at least a few minutes.

This time was not too long, compared to other battlefield killer moves, it was average.

Normally speaking, battlefield killer moves took a long time to set up. In his previous life, when Fairy Li Shan faced off against the four elders of Hei tribe and their Green City Rampage, the immortal battlefield killer move orchard garden in mountain was prepared in advance a while before.

“In terms of trapping enemies, my star soul battlefield cannot rival orchard garden in mountain. But the ability to drain the enemy’s strength inside the battlefield is almost endless, it is superior to orchard garden in mountain in this aspect. After all, my star soul battlefield used fighting soul battlefield as the main reference.”

With star soul battlefield, Fang Yuan wanted to test it on a suitable target.

He quickly thought of the one finger flow shark.

“One finger flow shark has rank eight battle strength, it also has three time path Immortal Gu, my star soul battlefield cannot trap it. Furthermore, to deal with the one finger flow shark, I will also have to fight Shark Demon and Su Bai Man.”

Fang Yuan discarded this unrealistic idea very quickly.

He could cooperate with Blazing Heaven Demoness, of course.

At this time, Fairy Li Shan had already sent many letters to Blazing Heaven Demoness, establishing some common grounds and understanding.

If Fang Yuan used his identity as Hei Lou Lan’s ally to cooperate with Blazing Heaven Demoness and deal with the one finger flow shark, it was highly possible.

But Fang Yuan did not want this.

Even if he succeeded in dealing with the one finger flow shark, in terms of loot, Fang Yuan would not be able to compete with Blazing Heaven Demoness, he would only gain a small portion of the benefits.

And it was impossible to cooperate with Blazing Heaven Demoness to kill Shark Demon and Su Bai Man.

Even though Fang Yuan was not a Zombie Alliance member, Blazing Heaven Demoness was. According to the alliance agreement, Blazing Heaven Demoness could only suppress Shark Demon and Su Bai Man, she could not take their lives.

“However, I need to look for Blazing Heaven Demoness. If I do not find her, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan might conceal her existence to try and deal with me using her. If I take the initiative to find her, Hei Lou Lan will lose all hope in this aspect, and it will also be a form of deterrence towards Blazing Heaven Demoness!”

Fang Yuan returned to Eastern Sea.

Shark Demon and Su Bai Man in Eastern Sea were already in great anticipation regarding Fang Yuan.

In this life, their progress in attacking Yu Lu blessed land was greatly advanced due to Fang Yuan. But the final step, unmoving troops, was extremely difficult. Shark Demon and the others had no way to break it, they could only look at the Immortal Gu fluttering in the air while sighing.

Shark Demon’s desire towards Fang Yuan’s help was apparent.

But Fang Yuan ignored him completely.

Rather than helping him, he might as well help Blazing Heaven Demoness in devouring Yu Lu blessed land.

Fang Yuan's relationship with Blazing Heaven Demoness was closer than Shark Demon. Fang Yuan could get much more benefits by working with her.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 985: Fang Yuan's Entry into Ascending Heaven Plain

The sky was blue, several clouds were floating.

Fang Yuan floated in the sky, looking far away into the horizon.

He only saw that the sky was vast, his vision was filled with blue, both from the sky and sea, waves were moving about, the atmosphere was grand.

These were the special characteristics of Eastern Sea, it was completely different from the mountainous Southern Border.

When Eastern Sea was peaceful, the scenery was flat and still, like the grand and brutish Northern Plains. Yet when fierce waves appear on the surface of the seas, turning it into a dangerous place, the resemblance to Northern Plains vanishes.

Along with the changes of the seas and waves, Eastern Sea constantly shifted in various ways.

Precisely because of these changes, such grand scenery could be created, and there were cultures that had various unique features.

Fang Yuan waited patiently.

The sea area below him was rather small, it was within Zombie Alliance's territory, the private sea area of Bo Dan.

But Bo Dan had been chased out long ago, the person who was occupying this place was the leader of the Northern Plains Zombie Alliance branch — rank eight fire path immortal zombie Blazing Heaven Demoness.

A moment ago, the letter Gu that Fang Yuan had prepared for Blazing Heaven Demoness had been tossed into the sea.

But there was no disturbance in the sea.

“Who are you? Such guts, you interrupted me when I was at the most crucial moment of refining Gu.” Suddenly, Fang Yuan heard a voice.

Fang Yuan's heart jumped, he had used his investigative methods long ago, but Blazing Heaven Demoness could not be traced at all, Fang Yuan did not sense her.

She actually got close to him and before she spoke, Fang Yuan had no idea.

On the surface, Fang Yuan was unmoved, he spoke calmly and slowly turned around, bowing: “I am Fang Yuan, my respects to Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness.”

“Fang Yuan?” Blazing Heaven Demoness' eyes shined with brilliance.

These last days, her mood had been good.

Because she and Fairy Li Shan had started to communicate using letters ago, and in the letter, Fairy Li Shan mentioned that she was trying to mend their relationship for the sake of Hei Lou Lan.

Earlier, she was not refining Gu.

But when she received the information path mortal Gu, stating that it was ‘Hei Lou Lan’s friend’, Blazing Heaven Demoness was curious and wary, she sneaked out and got close to Fang Yuan, probing him.

Fang Yuan did not sense her, because of his rank six cultivation level, Blazing Heaven Demoness’ wariness fell drastically.

Blazing Heaven Demoness had a tough personality, the moment she spoke, she claimed that Fang Yuan had interrupted her refinement, she wanted to gain the initiative in the conversation, so that she could pressure him later.

But the initiative that she took did not phase Fang Yuan, Blazing Heaven Demoness was impressed by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan nodded: “That is me.”

Saying this, he deactivated familiar face, turning from the appearance of Wisdom Star back to his immortal zombie body.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ pupils expanded slightly, she sighed: “This rank eight attitude Gu is really amazing, I could not find any flaws in it. However, what is your relationship with Wisdom Star Chen Dao?”

Fang Yuan laughed: “Wisdom Star Chen Dao is me, but I am not just Wisdom Star alone.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ impression of Fang Yuan rose: “In Fairy Li Shan’s letters, she did not mention that you had wisdom path attainment.”

She had been eyeing Yu Lu blessed land for a long time.

Thus, she had been collecting information about Shark Demon secretly.

The information of Wisdom Star Chen Dao that Fang Yuan had been disguised as was known by Blazing Heaven Demoness.

“If I did not have wisdom path attainment, how could I venture into Imperial Court blessed land alone? Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness, I wonder if you are interested in Yu Lu blessed land?” Fang Yuan spoke about his intention.

Blazing Heaven Demoness smiled: “What do you think?”

Fang Yuan was calm and collected: “If you are not interested, I would not have come here.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness laughed loudly: “Is this also the intention of your master, Purple Mountain True Monarch?”

Fang Yuan did not deny it: “Madam, with my capabilities, as long as I am given some time, I will be able to unravel the final battlefield killer move in Yu Lu blessed land. But how to get rid of Shark Demon and Su Bai Man will be your matter.”

Without star thought Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan would not be so confident.

But with the wisdom path Immortal Gu in his hands, and with the fact that the battlefield killer move unmoving troops was unmanned, Fang Yuan would not face much difficulty in dealing with it.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ expression sank.

Fang Yuan had control of the flow of the conversation, she could no longer control her patience.

“Baseless talk.” She snorted: “You say you have the ability, is that necessarily true? How can I believe it?”

The anger of a rank eight Gu Immortal was not to be underestimated, the atmosphere became heavy at once.

Fang Yuan smiled calmly, he knew that Blazing Heaven Demoness would react like this.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was not familiar with Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan had his previous life’s experiences, he knew about Blazing Heaven Demoness’ temper.

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated.

Precisely because of this, Fang Yuan had control of the conversation.

“It is simple to get madam to believe in my abilities. Please bear with me.” Saying so, Fang Yuan started deducing.

At once, starlight shone on his body as Immortal Gu aura surged.

After a dozen breaths, Fang Yuan stopped pretending, he said to Blazing Heaven Demoness, sighing: “A rank eight great expert is truly difficult to deduce.”

“Is this your excuse for failing?” Blazing Heaven Demoness raised her eyebrows.

“Of course not.” Fang Yuan’s lips curled up: “I have already deduced that madam has already contacted the Zombie Alliance headquarters and is prepared to push aside Su Bai Man and Shark Demon. Bo Dan has already been captured, right? Subduing him first, then letting him go and making him bribe Su Bai Man with an immortal material. By then, you can find an excuse of stealing immortal material to righteously seek trouble with them.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness heard this and her expression changed!

She was very shocked internally, she did not expect Fang Yuan to deduce her plan so quickly in such a short time.

She was a rank eight Gu Immortal, even though she was fire path, she had methods to defend against the deduction of wisdom path Gu Immortals.

Why did her methods fail against Fang Yuan?

“No wonder this person could make little sister feel wary and cause a loss to Little Lan! No, maybe this is what his master Purple Mountain True Monarch deduced, he is only using that information to act in front of me.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness calmed down quickly.

She was not an ordinary immortal zombie, anyone who could reach rank eight was not easy to fool.

“Alright, since you have the ability, I have a difficult problem for you to solve!”

Saying this, Blazing Heaven Demoness grabbed him and fire burst out, surrounding Fang Yuan’s entire body.

Fang Yuan’s heart shook.

He saw Blazing Heaven Demoness’ domineering personality once again, but he was not afraid that she would cause him harm.

Because Hei Lou Lan’s attitude Gu was in his hands.

If Blazing Heaven Demoness tried to kill Fang Yuan, would she not be afraid that Fang Yuan would destroy attitude Gu along with him?

Fang Yuan did not resist, he was grabbed by Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Next, Blazing Heaven Demoness turned into a rainbow of fire and tore through the sky.

Fang Yuan’s eyes could only see fire, he could not move.

He did not know how long it took, but suddenly, the flames vanished and Fang Yuan found himself in a plain.

This plain was filled with greenery, young and tender grass grew over the entire plain.

The plain had few trees, one could see very far. What was most eye-catching was a palace not far away.

This palace had a green-gold floating sculpted design, the surface was carved with the sea, sky, and mountains, this was the design style of the Remote Antiquity Era.

The radiating Immortal Gu aura showed that this palace was extraordinary.

This was an Immortal Gu House!

At this moment, many Gu Immortals were standing on the plain, surrounding this Immortal Gu House from all directions.

There were some Gu Immortals who floated in the air, far from the Immortal Gu House.

Whichever Gu Immortal it was, their gazes were all focused on Blazing Heaven Demoness and Fang Yuan.

Earlier, a fiery rainbow had descended, it was a huge disturbance, nobody could miss it.

Blazing Heaven Demoness released her rank eight Gu Immortal aura, causing them to focus on her. With such a high profile entrance, Fang Yuan who came along with her was also heavily locked on by many gazes.

“I am Song Kun, greetings to Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness.”

“Cai Xiong pays respects.”

“I, Ruo Lai Gui Yi, am truly honored to be able to see Lady Blazing Heaven

Demoness in person.”

Soon, three Gu Immortals acted as the representatives and spoke.

Even though their cultivation level was not as high as Blazing Heaven Demoness, they were the representatives of Song clan, Cai clan, and Ruo Lai clan.

These three clans were super forces in Eastern Sea.

They were also the main forces competing for the ownership of Ascending Heaven Plain.

Even Blazing Heaven Demoness could not be too arrogant with them.

She nodded lightly at the three of them, speaking: “I have heard about Old Eccentric Tian Nan’s inheritance, I am here to try and obtain it. You can feel free to handle your own matters.”

The three clans were silent.

Blazing Heaven Demoness said that casually, but the three clans did not dare to be careless.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ cultivation level was at rank eight, and she even had a huge force, Zombie Alliance, behind her. If Zombie Alliance wanted to interfere in Ascending Heaven Plain, there would be a huge disturbance in the current situation within Ascending Heaven Plain.

“Lady Blazing Heaven is from Northern Plains, you are a guest here. How can we be so rude, I am unworthy, but allow me to accompany you.” Song Kun took the initiative and flew over.

“Brother Song Kun is right, Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness has just arrived here, I am willing to explain the situation to Lady Blazing Heaven Demoness.”

Cai Xiong had just spoken when Ruo Lai Gui Yi also flew towards Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Blazing Heaven Demoness gave the three immortals a look, she did not chase them away, she allowed them to stand beside her.

The geographical location of Ascending Heaven Plain meant that Zombie Alliance could not intervene in it. There were many super forces in Eastern Sea, but the ones who could influence this place only numbered to three.

These three clans contested both up-front and in secret, but when a strong external force like Blazing Heaven Demoness came, they collaborated and resisted her together.

There was no need to guess, Blazing Heaven Demoness knew that these three had already informed their clans, soon, rank eight experts were going to show up and hold the fort for them.

But Blazing Heaven Demoness also knew that even though what was in Ascending Heaven Plain was good, she could not obtain it.

Even though she was a rank eight Gu Immortal, if she tried to interfere in Ascending Heaven Plain, not only would Zombie Alliance not help her, she would offend the three super forces.

Blazing Heaven Demoness had a domineering and firm attitude, but she was not stupid, in fact she was very wise, she understood the value of giving in.

Otherwise, in Fang Yuan’s previous life, she would not have established that alliance agreement with him.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ motive in this trip was not to obtain Old Eccentric Tian Nan’s inheritance, she wanted to test if Fang Yuan had wisdom path attainment, or whether he was only a fraud, merely relying on Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 986: Wisdom Path Fame Spreads in Eastern Sea

“Wisdom Star, this is Ascending Heaven Plain, a secluded domain of heaven and earth, it was recorded inside <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>. This place is filled with space path dao marks, not only does it have no regular pattern, it is extremely complex and rearranges constantly. Since you are confident in your wisdom path methods, obtain the Tian Nan inheritance here.” Blazing Heaven Demoness said to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan nodded.

He understood Blazing Heaven Demoness’ intention.

His wisdom path methods were only exposed recently. Even Hei Lou Lan and the others were not very clear on them.

Blazing Heaven Demoness wanted to take down Yu Lu blessed land, she needed to test the might of Fang Yuan’s wisdom path methods. If Fang Yuan had decent capabilities, she would believe him and entrust the duty of attacking Yu Lu blessed land to him. If he was a fraud, Blazing Heaven Demoness had to find someone else. As for Fang Yuan, if he was useless, he would have to scram.

“Wisdom Star, why is this name so familiar?”

“Since this person is thought highly of by Blazing Heaven Demoness, he must have some proficiency.”

“Hmph, not only are the space path dao marks in Ascending Heaven Plain complex, they change at every moment. Our three clans are restricted by this and have little progress. How is it possible for him who is working alone?”

Song Kun, Cai Xiong, and Ruo Lai Gui Yi transmitted to each other, as Fang Yuan landed on the ground, walking towards the Immortal Gu House that Old Eccentric Tian Nan left behind.

Not just the three of them, the other Gu Immortals’ gazes were also on Fang Yuan.

In the Song clan camp, a young woman was dressed in white, seemingly glowing with snow-white light, pure as jade, she was the prized jewel of Song clan, one of the beauties of Eastern Sea, Song Yi Shi.

“Wisdom Star Chen Dao...” At this moment, Song Yi Shi’s eyes stared at Fang Yuan unblinkingly, filled with curiosity: “I know this person. Recently, Shark Demon has been attacking Yu Lu blessed land, he is doing all that he can to ask this person to help. Earlier, it was Chen Dao who helped Shark Demon unravel the first few battlefield killer moves at a rapid pace. But for some reason, Chen Dao started ignoring Shark Demon recently.”

“Strange. Little Shi, why are you so knowledgeable about Chen Dao? Come to speak of it, this lad has quite the gentlemanly appearance, he is also quite handsome, one glance at him produces good feelings towards him.” A female Gu Immortal senior from Song clan teased Song Yi Shi.

Song Yi Shi’s face turned bright red, she explained: “Chen Dao had once exposed one of Shark Demon’s secrets, but Shark Demon had asked uncle Song Jia Dan to protect this secret. This is why I am paying attention to him.”

Now was different from his previous life, back then, Fang Yuan had been disguised as Xing Xiang Zi, an elderly man. But now, with attitude Gu and familiar face, Fang Yuan naturally would make full use of this killer move, he transformed into a handsome appearance which could make people put down their guard, to make it easier for him to execute his current plans.

Song clan’s Gu Immortals heard these words and their expressions changed.

Song Jia Dan was the pride of Song clan, he was also one of the three publicly recognized wisdom path Gu Immortals in Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan could actually break Song Jia Dan’s methods, just in this aspect, one could see his capabilities.

At once, the Gu Immortals from Song clan looked at Fang Yuan with changed gazes.

Fang Yuan walked five to six steps under everyone’s eyes before stopping.

His expression was calm, but he was secretly on alert.

Ascending Heaven Plain was not simple.

Secluded domains of heaven and earth were usually very mysterious. For example, Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po valley were filled with soul path dao marks, while Ascending Heaven Plain had an uncountable number of space path dao marks!

Precisely because of these space path dao marks, Ascending Heaven Plain could connect to the immemorial nine heavens. Even a mortal could enter the immemorial nine heavens through Ascending Heaven Plain.

However, after the havoc caused by Ren Zu’s children, many of the immemorial heavens were destroyed, even Ascending Heaven Plain was implicated.

Ascending Heaven Plain was no longer as safe as during the Immemorial Antiquity Era, the space path dao marks here were complex like interlinked spider webs, and they were changing all the time.

Even though Ascending Heaven Plain looked peaceful and safe currently, danger was lurking everywhere, it was full of life threatening traps.

Even Gu Immortals would suffer terrifying damage from the space path dao marks here if they were careless.

“Blazing Heaven Demoness brought me here to test the capabilities of my wisdom path methods, and also to suppress me through a show of force.”

“She is probably still suspicious that I am relying on Purple Mountain True Monarch, not using my personal wisdom path methods, instead acting as a middleman. After all, the things I deduced were all predetermined matters, the deductions could be prepared earlier. Only in this environment which is ever-changing can my wisdom path ability truly be tested.”

It was not surprising that Blazing Heaven Demoness would be suspicious.

After all, Fang Yuan’s display of wisdom path methods was too sudden. Furthermore, he was an immortal zombie!

There were wisdom path immortal zombies, but after becoming an immortal zombie, it was rare for them to still have such formidable wisdom path methods.

Fang Yuan’s mind was filled with star thoughts, colliding continuously.

With star thought Immortal Gu, he no longer lacked star thoughts, this gave Fang Yuan a great amount of confidence.

After a while, he continued moving forward, progressing towards Old Eccentric Tian Nan’s Immortal Gu House.

One step, two steps, three steps...

After eleven steps, Fang Yuan stopped again.

At this time and place, he was about three hundred steps away from Old Eccentric Tian Nan’s Immortal Gu House, but he had already caught up to the farthest Gu Immortal.

This Gu Immortal was from Ruo Lai clan, seeing that Fang Yuan had reached the same progress as him, he smiled without feeling ashamed.

Fang Yuan deduced again.

The space path dao marks here were invisible and did not show traces, he had to make deductions to progress.

He had already reached the end of the path that he deduced earlier.

Fang Yuan needed to walk and stop, while deducing on the way.

Deducing a long path was not worth it. Because the space path dao marks kept changing at varying speed, even if he deduced a long path, by the time he walked on half of it, the latter half would change. The result would be that half of his deduction was wasted.

“I need to demonstrate my value so that I can participate in Yu Lu blessed land, I need to show my wisdom path ability. It seems that after this trip, my reputation as Wisdom Star is going to become renowned in Eastern Sea.”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with starlight, he had an understanding while deducing.

Several minutes later, he had surpassed many of the Gu Immortals on the ground, he was one of the closest people.

“Wisdom Star Chen Dao...” Cai Xiong stared at Fang Yuan’s back as he muttered.

“How old is he? This attainment level is at least wisdom path grandmaster.” Ruo Lai Gui Yi gritted his teeth.

Song Jia Dan sighed internally: “It is a pity that my clan’s Song Jia Dan cannot come personally. Otherwise, this inheritance would have been ours long ago.”

Blazing Heaven Demoness was very pleased.

With such an achievement, it was enough to be qualified to attack Yu Lu blessed land even in the vast Eastern Sea.

At the same time, Blazing Heaven Demoness could not help but feel shock: “How many years has it been since Fang Yuan became an immortal? Not only did he cultivate strength path, he also has such an attainment in wisdom path! And from sister’s letter, he even displayed exemplary enslavement path methods in the imperial court contest. This shows how incredible his master Purple Mountain True Monarch is!”

“This should be enough. I am a hundred and eight steps away from the Immortal Gu House now. Even though I can progress more, I am already one of the closest people, if I move any closer, I would attract trouble.” Fang Yuan assessed this situation.

Relying on Blazing Heaven Demoness, Shark Demon and Su Bai Man could be bullied. But against Song clan, Cai clan, and Ruo Lai clan, Blazing Heaven Demoness was too weak.

The space path dao marks here became more numerous and changed faster as one got closer to the inheritance.

Thus, the difficulty of deduction rose rapidly.

With just Fang Yuan’s capabilities, he could not get to the Immortal Gu House.

Especially after he got to within the range of eighty steps, he would need a wisdom path immortal killer move.

The wisdom path immortal killer move here did not mean defensive methods like star fog concealment, or attacking methods like myriad star fireflies, it needed to be specialized for deductions.

Fang Yuan did not have this foundation.

But he had wisdom Gu.

Even though he did not subdue wisdom Gu, he could use the light of wisdom. Relying on it, he could obtain a result that far surpassed any deduction wisdom path killer move.

If he had the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan would have broken through already, he would be fifty steps away, not a hundred.

The light of wisdom naturally could not be known to others, and in any case, if Fang Yuan obtained the inheritance, he would not be able to leave.

The three super forces were wolves waiting to pounce, how could Fang Yuan leave after taking their food?

Thus, Fang Yuan stopped, looking at Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Blazing Heaven Demoness laughed internally, Fang Yuan truly was very aware of the situation.

Not to mention this rank six immortal zombie, even with her rank eight cultivation level, she did not dare to attempt to take the treasure here.

She wanted to leave already.

But leaving without fighting would cause trouble.

Song clan, Cai clan, and Ruo Lai clan were three super forces that treated Ascending Heaven Plain as theirs, Blazing Heaven Demoness coming here would cause others to place their attention here if they did not show a firm stance now.

And for Blazing Heaven Demoness, if she left now, the three super forces would pursue the matter for sure. She might as well stay and settle it now.

It was impossible unless she fought with a rank eight Gu Immortal.

As expected, not long later, rank eight Gu Immortals from the three clans appeared, getting into a vague alliance as they spoke with Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Blazing Heaven Demoness, although alone, was not weak in stance, she suggested for them to fight.

The four immortals flew to white heaven, the scene of their fight was unknown to everyone.

After fighting, Blazing Heaven Demoness descended, laughing loudly as she left with Fang Yuan.

The three rank eights from Song clan, Cai clan, and Ruo Lai clan showed deep wariness and solemness in their eyes.

They secretly conversed.

“I have heard that Northern Plains Gu Immortals have incredible battle strength, above the other four regions. After this battle with Blazing Heaven today, it appears true.”

“Although she is an immortal zombie, she has incredible battle strength. We can only resist her when two of us collaborate. She has great grandmaster fire path attainment level...”

“This woman cannot be underestimated. Earlier in Northern Plains, she destroyed a fragment world of the immemorial nine heavens, giving her the title of Blazing Heaven Demoness, she is extremely thuggish and unscrupulous, even though she left, in my opinion, we need to guard against her.”

“Mm, your words make sense!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 987: Star Fog Conceals Traces

Eastern Sea, Twin Polar Sea Strait.

The sounds of waves penetrated the thick fog as it entered the sea strait.

Song Jia Dan sat beside the cliff, his eyes were shut as he rested.

His lower body was encased in grey stone. His upper body had the appearance of an old man, it was extremely wrinkled and he looked very aged.

Suddenly, his eyelids moved, he sensed that Song clan’s first supreme elder, the rank eight Gu Immortal Song Qi Yuan, had used his token.

At Song Jia Dan’s will, the fog dispersed, revealing a path to walk on.

A moment later, from the path, two figures walked in.

One male and one female, both Gu Immortals.

The female immortal was dressed in white, she was like a lotus flower, pure and moving, her clear eyes were oozing with liveliness and anticipation. The male immortal was middle aged, he was experienced and mature, walking behind the female immortal.

“Uncle Jia Dan!” Song Yi Shi called out from afar.

Song Jia Dan wanted to smile, but his face was firm like a statue, his muscles were stiff and could show no expression.

His wisdom path cultivation was very unique. He could fuse with the world and make deductions, they were often very accurate.

But the advantages came with disadvantages, Song Jia Dan lost his freedom, his lower body turned into stone and had fused with Twin Polar Sea Strait. When his lifespan runs out, he would turn into stone completely, losing all life.

Eventually, Song Jia Dan could only speak expressionlessly in a low and drawn out tone: “Little Shi, cousin Xia Qi, it has been a long time.”

The people who came to Twin Polar Sea Strait to visit Song Jia Dan were Song clan’s Song Yi Shi and Song Xia Qi.

“Uncle Jia Dan, this is grandfather’s token, please take a look.” Song Yi Shi first handed the token to Song Jia Dan.

Song Jia Dan inspected it thoroughly and nodded, asking: “This time, what do you want to deduce?”

Song Xia Qi spoke: “This time, we are here for the Tian Nan inheritance in Ascending Heaven Plain.”

Song Jia Dan pondered: “Ascending Heaven Plain’s space path dao marks are complex and ever-changing. I cannot go personally, thus I cannot deduce the path spontaneously. But Ruo Lai clan and Cai clan have no powerful wisdom path Gu Immortals. I believe that all of you can succeed using the wisdom path Immortal Gu that I have.”

Song Yi Shi smiled lightly: “Uncle Jia Dan, there has been a change in Ascending Heaven Plain.”

“Oh?”

Immediately, Song Yi Shi talked about Blazing Heaven Demoness and Fang Yuan, about how they entered Ascending Heaven Plain.

Song Jia Dan immediately understood Song Yi Shi and Song Xia Qi’s intentions, he spoke: “So you want to employ this Wisdom Star to help Song clan obtain the inheritance.”

“That’s right. Wisdom Star is not a member of Zombie Alliance, he is only Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s good friend, he is a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, coming here because of the earth tide. Since he can work for Zombie Alliance, he can also be employed by Song clan. He had quite an amazing wisdom path attainment, if we are slow and the other two clans take action first, we would get into a passive situation.” Song Xia Qi said.

“So you are here to ask me to deduce matters regarding Wisdom Star?” Song Jia Dan continued.

Song Yi Shi nodded: “Uncle, we really cannot hide anything from you. That’s right! Since we want to employ Wisdom Star, we need to know about his background, after all, he is not a clansman. Most importantly, the other party is also a wisdom path Gu Immortal, if he tries to scheme, we will not only suffer a loss, we will also lose our face. Thus this time, we need you to use your methods and see if you can defeat this Northern Plains wisdom path Gu Immortal.”

Song Jia Dan’s eyes were lowered, he had a hint of hesitation: “But this Wisdom Star Chen Dao can crack the method that I used for Shark Demon, and he was able to achieve that much in Ascending Heaven Plain, that means he not only has wisdom path attainment, he even has wisdom path Immortal Gu. It goes against the usual customs and manners of us wisdom path Gu Immortals if I make deductions on such a wisdom path expert abruptly. If I am careless, we may attract the animosity of the other party and create a strong wisdom path enemy for our clan.”

In his previous life, Fang Yuan was disguised as Xing Xiang Zi, because he peeked at Song Yi Shi when bathing, Song Jia Dan made deductions on him.

In this life, Fang Yuan was disguised as Wisdom Star, he did not leave behind any flaws, and most importantly, he had incredible wisdom path methods, this made Song Jia Dan very apprehensive.

Song Yi Shi and Song Xia Qi looked at each other, the former did not speak while the latter said: “There are advantages and disadvantages in everything, it depends on our judgment. Before coming here, we have already discussed with first supreme elder and second supreme elder, cousin Jia Dan, please do it.”

Song Jia Dan nodded, even though he was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he was not in charge of making decisions in the clan.

In that case, he no longer hesitated.

After preparing for a while, he took action.

A long while later, Song Jia Dan opened his eyes, showing signs of fatigue in his eyes: “I could not deduce anything.”

“What? Uncle, you are one of the three strongest wisdom path Gu Immortals in Eastern Sea, how can you fail the deduction?”

“Is this Chen Dao really that formidable in terms of wisdom path? He can already match cousin?”

Song Yi Shi and Song Xia Qi were both very shocked.

Song Jia Dan shook his head: “A person’s effort is limited, while heaven’s will is unpredictable. Maybe this Chen Dao is very skilled, able to block all my deduction methods, or maybe he isn’t in Eastern Sea.”

“Not in Eastern Sea? Where can he be? The earth tide is gone, there is still a long time until the next earth tide.” Song Yi Shi was very confused.

“Every immortal aperture is a small world, it is isolated from the outside world. I am only rank seven, it is not strange that I could not deduce it.”

“Is that so...” Song Yi Shi muttered, feeling dejected and disappointed.

Song Jia Dan’s words shifted, saying: “I am more concerned about Ascending Heaven Plain. This place can connect to white heaven and black heaven, it is of strategic importance and is wanted by many. Just now, even though Blazing Heaven Demoness left, we did not defeat her. This would lead to increase in the greed of others. We have to be careful of Eastern Sea’s lone immortals and demonic cultivators. And although the other righteous path super forces cannot interfere directly, they can use their influence to meddle with the situation in Ascending Heaven Plain. These are our biggest lurking dangers.”

“Cousin is truly wise, this makes perfect sense!” Song Xia Qi’s expression changed, he nodded repeatedly.

Song Yi Shi also showed an expression of worry.

“Rather than deducing Wisdom Star Chen Dao, I might as well deduce this matter. Don’t worry, as long as you use my arrangement, you will defeat the lone immortals and demonic cultivators, we can even use their strength to weaken Ruo Lai clan and Cai clan.” Song Jia Dan was very confident.

...

Central Continent, Hu Immortal blessed land.

“Star fog concealment!”

Fang Yuan willed, using his immortal killer move.

Immediately, fog made of starlight came out of his second immortal aperture.

Soon, the star fog shrouded Fang Yuan’s entire body, blurring his facial features. Others could only see a vague figure of Fang Yuan inside the fog.

“I finally succeeded in deducing the modified star fog concealment!”

Fang Yuan inspected it and felt joyous.

This star fog concealment could defend against the deductions of others against himself.

After leaving Ascending Heaven Plain and negotiating with Blazing Heaven Demoness, he returned to Hu Immortal blessed land and used the light of wisdom to modify the original star fog concealment.

The original star fog concealment had two core Immortal Gu, one of them was star thought Immortal Gu.

The modified star fog concealment also had two core Immortal Gu. Star thought Immortal Gu was one of them, while the other was replaced with unravel mystery Immortal Gu.

Right now, Fang Yuan had wisdom path grandmaster attainment level, the wisdom path Immortal Gu Unravel Mystery that he could not utilize well previously was starting to display its capabilities.

“The trip to Ascending Heaven Plain earlier will soon make the name of Wisdom Star spread throughout Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world. By then, there will be many who will try to make deductions on me, to find information on Wisdom Star.

Familiar face is a transformation path killer move, it can disguise me, but it cannot block deductions. With star fog concealment, I am much safer in Eastern Sea.” Fang Yuan thought.

Of course, the defense of star fog concealment had its limits.

Firstly, it could only defend against deductions from others, it could not block fire, wind, water, or physical punches and kicks.

Secondly, it only used two rank six Immortal Gu as the core, if a rank seven wisdom path Gu Immortal makes a deduction, it would only be able to defend for a while before collapsing.

But star fog concealment did not need constant activation. The star fog produced after activation was a layer of defense, as long as the fog remained, it could defend him.

“This star fog is filled with tiny fragments of star path and wisdom path dao mark. Because of this jumbled mix of fragments, I can block outside deductions. Even if Song Jia Dan makes a deduction, the star fog can block him for a while, it would alert me and I would be able to use Fixed Immortal Travel to hide in a blessed land.”

Once he entered a blessed land, he would be in another world, even a rank eight wisdom path great expert would be unable to make any deductions on him.

First, he created star soul battlefield, next, he made star fog concealment. Two of Fang Yuan’s weaknesses had been eliminated.

Next, he should focus on refining the rank six all-out effort Immortal Gu, at the same time, he had to patiently wait for Blazing Heaven Demoness to act.

“In my previous life, Blazing Heaven Demoness had succeeded in pushing aside Shark Demon and Su Bai Man, but because the timing was bad, she had to go to Northern Plains. Right now, with my influence, progress in Yu Lu blessed land was much faster, thus she can take action early, we should have enough time. I hope that the rewards in this Yu Lu blessed land will not be as disappointing as the dream realm inside the Starry Sky grotto-heaven fragment world.”

Earlier, Fang Yuan got through the second layer of the dream realm and came to the third, reaching a new layer that he did not enter in his previous life.

Both his wisdom path and star path attainment levels had risen, but they were still at grandmaster level.

But the most important thing was, the third layer of the dream realm was very strange.

Fang Yuan could not understand.

The third layer of the dream realm collapsed on its own, not giving Fang Yuan any boost to his attainment levels.

And in the dream, the song that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable recited could not be recalled by Fang Yuan no matter what he tried.

Days passed by.

Blazing Heaven Demoness finally settled the relationships within Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance, similarly to Fang Yuan’s previous life, she used Bo Dan as an excuse to oust Shark Demon and Su Bai Man.

Fang Yuan did not participate in this.

He would only take action when Blazing Heaven Demoness was attacking Yu Lu blessed land.

As he expected, even though the battlefield killer move unmoving troops was mystical, it did not have anyone controlling it, it was like an empty formation. Fang Yuan expended a huge amount of mental energy and immortal essence, unraveling this final level and completely capturing Yu Lu blessed land.

“There is only one strength path Immortal Gu, don’t think about it, this is a present I am giving to Little Lan. According to our agreement, you can take two rank six Immortal Gu. But this star path Immortal Gu, even though it is only rank six, it is on the list of top ten mystical Gu, it has immense value. If you choose it, you will not be able to take another Immortal Gu.” Blazing Heaven Demoness said to Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 988: Star Eyes Immortal Gu

Central Continent, Star Form blessed land.

Fang Yuan concentrated, without any distraction, on refining all-out effort Gu.

Large amounts of immortal materials had fused into a lump of liquid.

The yellow-brown liquid was floating in the air.

At Fang Yuan’s will, his second vital Gu, all-out effort Gu, shot into the liquid.

“Rise.”

Saying this, Fang Yuan grunted as he stretched out his hand, his five fingers opened and grabbed at the ground.

Crack crack.

With bursts of sound, the rocks on the ground rumbled and completely surrounded the liquid, forming a big muddy ball.

This was an earth path refinement path killer move. Not long ago, Fang Yuan had traded for it with Lang Ya land spirit.

This was a small benefit of joining Lang Ya Sect.

Of course, he had to pay a price.

Fang Yuan deduced an Immortal Gu recipe for Lang Ya land spirit, completing thirty percent of it.

This refinement path killer move, even though it was not immortal level, was very useful. The all-out effort Gu recipe that Fang Yuan had modified used this refinement path killer move many times during the process of refinement.

Blood refinement killer move — Blood Refinement Snake!

Fang Yuan’s body shook, his eyes, nose, and ears, all his seven orifices started to bleed.

The blood flowed continuously, forming seven snakes that slithered around and hissed, producing scary sounds.

The seven snakes climbed onto the muddy ball.

The muddy ball was coiled around, becoming a ball of snakes.

Fang Yuan threw mortal Gu in continuously, as the blood snakes opened their mouths and ate. With every Gu worm that they ate, their bodies would sink into the muddy ball.

Two hours later, the blood snakes completely fused into the muddy ball.

On the muddy ball’s surface, there were countless red snake scales.

The entire muddy ball almost seemed to be alive, the red snake scales flickered with faint light, it seemed like this muddy ball was breathing with life.

Fang Yuan roasted it with fire.

These were three different types of fire, roasting the muddy ball of snake scales in turns.

The blue fire made the flickering of the muddy ball’s scales less frequent, as a layer of frost appeared on the red scales.

Fang Yuan used a green fire next.

After roasting it, the muddy ball became more lively, from the frost, a layer of moss grew.

Finally, Fang Yuan used a yellow fire.

From within the fire, the moss on the muddy ball hardened, turning into a brown cocoon of blood. The cocoon of blood was flickering with golden light, as if golden sand was mixed in it.

The yellow fire roasted the muddy ball for the longest time.

After roasting it for a day and a night, the brown muddy ball turned into a pure golden color.

By this point, he had finally finished a crucial step.

Fang Yuan let out a sigh, he obtained some precious time to rest, he slept for two days and two nights.

After recovering completely, he took out the golden muddy ball.

The original brown muddy ball was a large as a basin, but the golden one was only slightly larger than a baby’s head.

Next was another crucial step.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, activating a special Gu worm, attacking the golden ball.

With a bang, the golden muddy ball exploded, endless gold powder scattered around the surrounding three li.

“Failed!” Fang Yuan’s expression was grim, his expectant gaze had dimmed.

The gold powder was all over the place, but nothing else was left. If he had succeeded, a half-completed Immortal Gu would have been formed!

But unfortunately, it did not.

The immortal materials and immortal essence stones that he had invested earlier were all wasted. His only gain was the experience of refining the Gu, during his next attempt, he would be slightly more proficient.

Sighing, Fang Yuan quickly settled his mood, becoming calm once again.

Refining Immortal Gu was not easy, the success rate was too low.

This failure was very normal. He could only continue to accumulate immortal materials and try again next time.

Fang Yuan had refined Spring Autumn Cicada in his previous life, and succeeded in refining star thought Immortal Gu now, after these experiences, he had a very strong mental fortitude in terms of this.

After resting for a bit, he used Fixed Immortal Travel and left the blessed land, arriving in Southern Border.

It was night time.

Fang Yuan flew up into the clouds.

Above the clouds, the stars in the sky could be seen shining brightly.

Star Eyes!

This Immortal Gu was recently obtained by Fang Yuan.

It was his reward in Yu Lu blessed land.

Fang Yuan activated this Immortal Gu, immediately the pupils in his eyes turned into whirlpools, spiralling and spinning non-stop.

A formless attractive force sucked the starlight in the night sky into Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Rank six Immortal Gu Star Eyes, tenth on the list of top ten mystical Gu!

This was an investigative Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan did not lack investigative methods, but after careful consideration, he still chose this Immortal Gu.

That was because this Gu’s investigative ability far exceeded most investigative immortal killer moves!

Using Star Eyes, Fang Yuan could turn the stars in the night sky into his own eyes temporarily, using them for observation.

The light of stars in black heaven shined over all five regions. Any place with the light of stars shining on them could be seen and investigated by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan could stay in Central Continent and use the stars in the night sky to observe Southern Border and Northern Plains.

Thus, this Gu was at tenth.

“It is a pity, if it did not have this weakness, its position would rise by two or three places.”

Star eyes Immortal Gu’s weakness was that it could not be used immediately. Before using it, there was a need to connect with the stars.

Fang Yuan was doing this now.

The spiralling in his eyes slowed in speed, as the light of the stars were drawn in and filtered, until the remaining starlight intertwined together, forming a trace of starlight that was the thickness of a finger.

One in his left eye, one in his right eye, a total of two starlight traces.

These two traces were formed from starlight, one was connected to Fang Yuan’s pupils, while the other was connected to a star in black heaven.

Beads of green grape immortal essence were expended.

Star eyes Immortal Gu continued to be activated, as a mystical force was transmitted through the traces of starlight towards the end point.

Fang Yuan’s eyes had been wide open, but now his vision was filled with darkness.

But with the continued activation of star eyes Immortal Gu, he could gradually see a faint blue speck in the darkness.

Time continued to pass, soon, the night was over.

Fang Yuan’s vision was still covered by darkness. But at the center, the blue light had already expanded by quite a bit.

“In time, this blue light will grow larger and larger, regaining its appearance as a star. Hopefully, the light of the star that I chose is small, otherwise, to completely make use of it, I would need a lot of time and effort!”

If the starlight was small, Fang Yuan could turn it into his tool much quicker.

Even though a smaller star’s starlight was dimmer, and a larger star’s starlight had greater penetrative force.

But Fang Yuan still preferred the former, he wanted to quickly be able to use star eyes Immortal Gu.

The sky turned bright, Fang Yuan finally stopped.

He counted, after one night, he had consumed eight beads of immortal essence to activate Star Eyes!

“Star Eyes is at tenth, a flaw is that its expenditure is too high. To refine a star, the consumption is around ten attempts at refining rank six Immortal Gu. Thankfully, I can bear it.”

“In fact, my star path attainment level is grandmaster, and with the light of wisdom, Star Eyes can combine into other immortal killer moves and show great use. Most importantly, if I can combine the use of Star Eyes and Fixed Immortal Travel...”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts wandered, thinking of this combination, he smiled.

Blazing Heaven Demoness must have known this point beforehand, placing so much emphasis on star eyes Immortal Gu.

It was true, Star Eyes and Fixed Immortal Travel had very complementary effects.

In the following days, Fang Yuan attempted to refine all-out effort Immortal Gu while deciphering the battlefield killer moves left behind by Fairy Yu Lu. Among which, the most important information was the method to create a battlefield killer move in an immortal aperture without harming it.

All the while, Fang Yuan found some time to use star eyes Immortal Gu and refine the star in black heaven.

Furthermore, he had been paying close attention to the information of the outside world.

Time passed quickly while Fang Yuan was hard at work.

The situation in Northern Plains and Central Continent was not much different from in his previous life.

But in Eastern Sea, Ascending Heaven Plain’s situation changed. In Fang Yuan’s previous life, large numbers of lone cultivators and demonic immortals charged into Ascending Heaven Plain, messing up the arrangements created by Song clan, Cai clan and Ruo Lai clan.

In this process, Seven Seas Snake Woman even laughed at Song Yi Shi, causing her to destroy a village by the sea, killing Li Xiao Yao’s ancestor.

But now, these lone cultivators and demonic immortals were attacked by the combined forces of Song clan, Cai clan, and Ruo Lai clan, they broke apart before they even did anything. The reason was because Blazing Heaven Demoness brought Fang Yuan and caused trouble first, resulting in them becoming more alert. The internal conflicts between the clans also became more limited and controlled. With the appearance of outsiders, the three clans collaborated immediately.

Fang Yuan was most concerned about Luo Po valley.

He knew that Luo Po valley was undergoing the hundred days battle!

Led by Feng Jiu Ge, Central Continent’s side were battling against the Shadow Sect Gu Immortals led by Qin Bai Sheng. Fang Yuan wanted to know about the situation of the battle, but he could not find out.

He could only set up some investigative Gu about a hundred li away from Luo Po valley.

This was a very dangerous range.

If he got closer, the Gu Immortals from both sides would likely discover him.

Be it Central Continent or Shadow Sect, they were not to be trifled with. They were fighting to the death in the valley, they were definitely afraid of third parties trying to benefit from this. They would inevitably set up many investigative and counter-investigative methods, setting up battlefield killer moves and Gu formations in advance.

“Now is different from my previous life, I purposely kept Xue Song Zi alive to increase Shadow Sect’s strength. The overall situation in the hundred days battle will likely change.”

In his previous life, Shadow Sect failed, but people managed to escape. Even though Central Continent won, they lost Feng Jiu Ge, it was only a pyrrhic victory.

This time, Fang Yuan was very curious about the result of the new hundred days battle.

But before the winner was decided, he did not want to interfere. Having lost Self Strength and failing to refine all-out effort Gu, he did not have enough confidence now.

Time continued to pass, three days had already gone by since the end of the hundred days battle during his previous life.

Fang Yuan pinched his fingers as he deduced, he was already in Northern Plains, waiting patiently.

There was finally a reaction from Luo Po valley!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 989: Chasing Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance

Two figures emerged from Luo Po valley, one in front and one behind.

They were the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie and Hei Cheng!

Fang Yuan went on alert, his gaze followed the two, he did not chase them immediately.

After a while, there were no Central Continent Gu Immortals who came out of Luo Po valley.

Fang Yuan guessed in his mind: “It seems that even though I kept Xue Song Zi alive, the result was only stalled by three days. Shadow Sect still lost, now it seems only the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie and Hei Cheng escaped.”

Actually, this result was not strange.

The decisive factor of this battle was the fighting between Feng Jiu Ge and Qin Bai Sheng.

Fang Yuan kept Xue Song Zi alive, but just merely him alone did not have much of an impact towards the two experts.

“I wonder if there are any other changes in the hundred days battle in Luo Po valley this time?” Fang Yuan thought as he chased.

The Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie flew quickly, his speed was very fast, he turned into a black line in the air, shooting forward rapidly.

“Who is it?!” Suddenly, the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie stopped, his eyes burning with fire.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng appeared, smiling coldly: “You are finally here, you will die today!”

“Merely a rank six, hmph!” Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance burst out with killing intent, pouncing at lightning speed.

Boom!

He hit Tai Bai Yun Sheng harshly, the latter turned into a clump of bubbles and dissipated.

“Illusion!” The Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie’s heart jumped: “The other party is only rank six, he dares to obstruct a rank seven. Most importantly, how did he know my location? Is he a Northern Plains pawn of Central Continent? Earlier, he did not join the hundred days battle because his battle strength was too low, and could not do much? Or perhaps he just arrived? Or do the Central Continent Gu Immortals not trust him?”

This Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance, even though he was an immortal zombie, had high wisdom path attainment, in an instant, countless thoughts turned in his mind, he understood Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s objective.

“He is only rank six, while I have rank seven cultivation level, and I have forty percent of my battle strength left! He is not my match, and has a Northern Plains Gu Immortal aura, the most likely reason is that he is just here to slow me down and delay my escape!”

“Hehehe, slow down, no rush.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s illusion appeared again.

This illusion was very vivid, earlier, the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance was not paying attention and thought it was his true body.

But now, after using investigative methods, the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance took a look and found something amiss.

“Hmph.” He snickered, flying far away.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s battle strength was not high, and he did not have fast movement abilities, he could only cause a disturbance.

But the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance did not care, after realizing Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s intentions, he only thought of escaping.

“Where do you think you’re going? Stay here.” Fang Yuan finally caught up.

He had Fixed Immortal Travel, and arranged for Tai Bai Yun Sheng to slow him down, with their information path methods, he could keep an eye on the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance, he could catch up easily.

If not for the fact that Fang Yuan did not want to expose Fixed Immortal Travel and his identity in front of the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie, he would have arrived long ago.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s arrival, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s heart was uplifted.

Next was the crucial moment.

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie saw Fang Yuan and his heart jumped, he was so scared he shuddered.

“Feng Jiu Ge!” He screamed.

In fact, Fang Yuan had used familiar face to turn into Feng Jiu Ge’s appearance.

His battle strength was only at the peak of rank six. Because he enslaved the featherman Gu Immortal, his battle strength fell by a lot. If they properly fought, he would not be able to do much.

But Fang Yuan had a trump card.

This trump card was star soul battlefield.

The Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie was only rank seven. After the hundred days battle, and breaking out with difficulty, his remaining battle strength would be less than half of usual.

In this situation, as long as they forced the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie into star soul battlefield and used it to drain his strength, Fang Yuan could likely win.

“Forget about Hei Cheng for now, he is like a stray dog, probably in a worse state than in my previous life, his Immortal Gu House has already been lost in Luo Po valley. Otherwise, why did the Central Continent Gu Immortals not chase him? He has heavy injuries and only has dark arrow Immortal Gu, he is not a concern.”

“But this Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie is a crucial member. Qin Bai Sheng and Jiang Yu went through all means possible to keep him alive. During the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, he was one of the members inside the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation, acting as a formation core!”

“He is assigned an important mission, he will not die easily. In my previous life, after Old Ancestor Xue Hu captured him, he awaited the rescue of Zombie Alliance. Thus, there is a high chance of me capturing him.”

“As long as I capture him, I can soul search him and Shadow Sect’s secrets will be exposed to me. Of course, if his soul was tampered with, it would be like Xue Song Zi in my previous life. But even then, when I kill him, it would be a huge loss to Shadow Sect in the execution of their plans.”

Fang Yuan had many considerations, Shadow Sect had huge power, if he wanted to take Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, he would need to face this mysterious and powerful Gu Immortal force.

According to Fang Yuan’s experience and ruthlessness, as well as his forceful personality, why would he not find trouble with Shadow Sect personally?

Fang Yuan was not going to wait passively.

This time, he was going to strike at their weakness and deal a huge blow to them!

“Is it really Feng Jiu Ge?” The Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie saw that Fang Yuan was approaching while having a thought.

He was a core member of Shadow Sect, Qin Bai Sheng’s plan was not hidden from him.

Before the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie broke out, he had seen Qin Bai Sheng using the location to drag Feng Jiu Ge, Ao Xue, and Ling Mei into the space of the Thieving Heaven true inheritance. Afterwards, Qin Bai Sheng would suicide, using the winds of assimilation to eliminate Feng Jiu Ge and the rest.

How could Feng Jiu Ge appear here?

The likelihood was very small!

Because Shadow Sect had already learned: Zhao Lian Yun had been secretly sent to Central Continent.

From Spirit Affinity House’s perspective, they had control of a Thieving Heaven true inheritance, they would naturally send Zhao Lian Yun there.

“Unless, among Feng Jiu Ge, Ao Xue, and Ling Mei, one of them is an otherworldly demon! But we had investigated this beforehand too!”

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie thought quickly as he recalled Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s previous illusion, feeling deeper suspicion towards the Feng Jiu Ge who was chasing him.

Thus, he decided to use his investigative immortal killer move.

After investigating, he broke out in cold sweat.

“This is the real Feng Jiu Ge!” At once, the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie wanted to grow a hundred pairs of wings to help him fly away faster.

“My familiar face can fool even rank eight Gu Immortals. How can you overcome it? I have star fog concealment protecting me, which means, even if you use wisdom path methods, it will take a long time for you to find out my identity.”

With star fog concealment, a large part of familiar face’s flaws were alleviated.

Furthermore, if the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie makes deductions on Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan would sense that the star fog was thinning, he would naturally activate the immortal killer move star fog concealment again and resist the deduction, concealing the truth.

Unless the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie had very strong wisdom path methods that could defeat star fog concealment quickly.

But this was very unlikely.

At least, in Fang Yuan’s previous life, in the information he got from Hei Lou Lan, there was nothing that stated the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie had shown any wisdom path methods during the hundred days battle.

Familiar face’s power was fully displayed at this moment.

Even though it did not have attacking power, the great Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie, having one of the ten extreme physiques with rank seven battle strength, was sent into shock by Fang Yuan, and escaped in a panic.

He had powerful movement ability, at least two immortal killer moves were meant for movement.

Fang Yuan’s flying speed could not keep up with the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie.

But Fang Yuan had Fixed Immortal Travel!

Fang Yuan had used wisdom path methods to scout the surrounding area completely already.

As long as he knew the direction that the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie was going, Fang Yuan would teleport there and block his path.

This way, Fang Yuan chased and obstructed him at times, doing this repeatedly, he gradually chased the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie towards the area he had made his arrangements.

There, Fang Yuan had placed many Gu worms and set up most of the star soul battlefield. Once he gets there, he would use his Immortal Gu and in a few breaths’ time, star soul battlefield would be formed.

Once the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie falls into star soul battlefield, he would be a trapped beast.

But just as the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal killer move was forced towards Fang Yuan’s specially created trap, he suddenly turned around, using an immortal killer move to attack Fang Yuan!

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

The blazing red flames shot towards Fang Yuan.

The temperature in the air rose, Fang Yuan felt incomparable heat before the flames even reached him, his eyebrows and hair were turning charred.

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed sharply, he had to retreat!

The Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie laughed heartily: “Lowly rat, you actually dared to deceive me!”

Fang Yuan sighed secretly, no plans were perfect. His biggest flaw was that his flying speed was too slow.

In the hundred days battle, Feng Jiu Ge displayed incredible speed, Fang Yuan could not replicate it.

This flaw made the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie increasingly suspicious.

As his suspicions grew, the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie started to guess Fang Yuan’s motives.

Not only did he have great battle strength, he had a meticulous mind, even as an immortal zombie, he was not held back by its weakness, he was very astute.

Fang Yuan almost succeeded in his plan, but at the crucial moment, it failed.

Now, the situation had turned around.

Fang Yuan was the one in grave danger!

The Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie’s flying speed was much faster than Fang Yuan’s. Fang Yuan had enslaved the featherman Gu Immortal, his situation was very bad.

After dodging the flames with much difficulty, Fang Yuan was in a pathetic state.

The Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie was angry that Fang Yuan deceived him, he was greatly enraged, he charged towards this fake ‘Feng Jiu Ge’.

Fang Yuan suddenly looked inspired, laughing: “Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie, you fell for it! Everyone, my mission is complete, I will leave the rest to you.”

The Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie was shocked, he subconsciously turned around and escaped for his life.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 990: Fang Yuan’s Second Entry into Luo Po Valley

Seeing that Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie was flying away, Fang Yuan relaxed, he immediately left in the opposite direction.

Although he had Fixed Immortal Travel, it was best that he did not expose this Gu.

Fixed Immortal Travel was too obvious, if it was exposed, even if one was not a wisdom path Gu Immortal, they could deduce the true identity of Fang Yuan.

“I have Fixed Immortal Travel, many Gu Immortals know that. Sigh, if not for that, it would be much more convenient for me to do things.”

Fang Yuan flew towards the direction he had set up the battlefield killer move, a moment later, he arrived at his destination.

There, Tai Bai Yun Sheng had been waiting already.

“The strategy to force the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie here failed.” Fang Yuan said solemnly.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng sighed in relief: “In my opinion, this is a good thing. After all, with just the two of us, to deal with a rank seven Gu Immortal, it is very dangerous. Actually, Fang Yuan, you do not need to be so anxious, Central Continent still hasn’t found us, right? Even if they found us, master would not leave us in the lurch. Don’t forget, we have Fixed Immortal Travel, where can we not go in this world? We can develop peacefully now and accumulate our strength. Why is there a need to put ourselves in danger all the time?”

Fang Yuan sighed, he shook his head and did not speak.

Fang Yuan did not tell Tai Bai Yun Sheng about the Immortal Gu House.

It was not that he did not want to develop peacefully, but the situation did not allow it. Tai Bai Yun Sheng was not a person from the future like Fang Yuan, only with his five hundred years of experience did Fang Yuan know how deep the Gu Immortal world’s secrets could be.

Once the truth of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was exposed, the suppression of Heavenly Court and the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent would come faster and with greater severity than Tai Bai Yun Sheng could imagine.

Even if Fang Yuan wanted to develop peacefully, he would not be able to.

His businesses would definitely suffer greatly.

As long as Heavenly Court hands out false information that Fang Yuan had obtained an immense amount of wealth inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and has countless Immortal Gu with him, as well as Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path true inheritance.

Then no matter where he went, he would be suppressed and chased after.

After all, the current era was not the one where dream realm flourished. It was no exaggeration that Fang Yuan, with Giant Sun’s true inheritance, would become the focus of the entire Gu Immortal world.

Fang Yuan with only rank six bottom tier cultivation level would become the target of countless greedy people.

By then, Fang Yuan, with insufficient battle strength, would have to roam everywhere like a stray dog.

Even if he wanted to develop, he would not be able to.

Don’t forget, he had to undergo calamities and tribulations, once in a while, he would be faced with them.

But if he had the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, everything would be different.

Rank eight battle strength was at the peak of the Gu Immortal world. A Fang Yuan who had nothing but cultivation level at the bottom of rank six could be hunted down by the entire world. But a Fang Yuan with rank eight battle strength would only be targeted by rank eight Gu Immortals or super forces that owned Immortal Gu Houses.

Even if they had strength, they needed time, effort, and most importantly, confidence in taking down Fang Yuan.

Thus, these two situations were vastly different.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng saw that Fang Yuan was silent and spoke to console him: “Fang Yuan, are you forcing yourself too much? No need to be like this. Actually, you can change your lifestyle. We are immortals, we should enjoy life occasionally, shouldn’t we?”

“I am enjoying life now.” Fang Yuan gave Tai Bai Yun Sheng a glance, before looking into the horizon: “It has been a while, but we have not seen that Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie approaching, he is truly cool-headed! With his intelligence, he should have been able to know that I was lying very quickly. But that person was not overcome by rage, he used the chance to leave instead.”

“Oh you.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng shook his head, sighing: “But this Gu formation that you set up is quite something, it is very interesting. It surrounds an area of tens of thousands of li, it is the largest Gu formation I have seen, and within it, I can actually control Gu worms and create illusions. Most importantly, the Gu worms used to create this formation are all mortal Gu. Where did you get it? Was it obtained from Yu Lu blessed land as well?”

Fang Yuan nodded, but did not explain it.

He had not only obtained star eyes Immortal Gu from Yu Lu blessed land, he had also gotten Fairy Yu Lu’s cultivation knowledge.

From it, he had an inspiration, and using the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan created this huge Gu formation that was designed for this situation.

Fang Yuan said: “Just an area of ten of thousands of li, so what? Look at Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, it covers the entirety of Northern Plains! And this Gu formation is actually very weak, the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie merely did not break it because he was busy escaping and did not have the time for it. Alright, let’s go, we are going to chase Hei Cheng.”

Fang Yuan’s plan against the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie did not work, the other party was simply too astute.

But Fang Yuan was not going to let Hei Cheng go.

Fang Yuan had planned for the featherman Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong to tail Hei Cheng, he instructed him to follow secretly and avoid battling.

The process of chasing Hei Cheng was very successful.

Even though Hei Cheng had high cultivation level, he was injured and only had dark arrow Immortal Gu, he had also experienced the hundred days battle.

Fang Yuan did the same thing again and set up the trap.

This time, he did not turn into Feng Jiu Ge, but pretended to be Old Lord Can Yang.

Hei Cheng was escaping and fell into the trap easily.

Fang Yuan had been waiting for a long time, he activated his Immortal Gu and opened the star soul battlefield.

The pitiful Hei Cheng was continuously weakened by star soul battlefield, he had no choice but to scream surrender.

Fang Yuan did not take his life, instead, capturing him alive.

This way, Hei Cheng became the first gain that Fang Yuan had after creating star soul battlefield.

Hei Cheng had great value, at the very least, if he were to be sold to Hei Lou Lan, she would be willing to be extorted by a huge sum.

But before this, Fang Yuan had to conduct a thorough soul search on Hei Cheng.

He had obtained information from Hei Lou Lan in his previous life, but how could that compare to Fang Yuan’s personal search?

Bringing along the captive Hei Cheng, Fang Yuan returned to Hu Immortal blessed land.

He rested while observing Northern Plains’ situation.

“My next target is Luo Po valley. Once I have it, together with Dang Hun Mountain, my soul foundation will grow at a rapid pace! The backlash of using slavery Immortal Gu will be quickly eliminated, and my battle strength will recover!” Fang Yuan had a strong desire towards Luo Po valley.

Back then, he had chosen to trade for slavery Immortal Gu because of Luo Po valley’s existence.

Fang Yuan wanted to take Luo Po valley, but he needed to wait for some time.

After soul searching Hei Cheng, Fang Yuan knew that during the initial period of the hundred days battle, Xue Song Zi died. The rest of the battle was similar to his previous life, and towards the end, it was nearly identical.

“Feng Jiu Ge was trapped by Qin Bai Sheng using some unknown method. By now, Luo Po valley has been taken over by the Central Continent Gu Immortals, it is not time to go yet.”

Fang Yuan waited patiently.

He would never lack patience.

Soon, the situation in Northern Plains changed, Fang Yuan’s attention was drawn over.

The Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie escaped and sneaked into Earth Trench, but found out that Old Ancestor Xue Hu was stealing immortal zombie corpses.

A battle ensued, the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie was captured, while Old Ancestor Xue Hu was exposed, attracting the rage of Zombie Alliance.

Even though the hundred days battle was dragged on by a few days, the incident regarding Old Ancestor Xue Hu still occurred.

Fang Yuan felt a bit of pity regarding this.

He did not want Blazing Heaven Demoness to return to Northern Plains so quickly.

Blazing Heaven Demoness, along with Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan, these three immortals together gave Fang Yuan a lot of pressure.

He still wanted to sell Hei Cheng for a good price.

But if Blazing Heaven Demoness helped Hei Lou Lan, Fang Yuan would be very passive.

Later developments were almost the same as in his previous life.

Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance ordered Blazing Heaven Demoness to return to Northern Plains and defend Dark Flow Giant City.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was the leader of the Northern Plains Zombie Alliance branch, she could not refuse it.

Even though she knew that Fang Yuan had Fixed Immortal Travel, to play it safe, she chose two rank eight immortal zombies and some others to accompany her in passing the regional walls.

Fang Yuan told Blazing Heaven Demoness a plan, saying that he had deduced it using wisdom path methods.

Blazing Heaven Demoness heard it and praised him: “This plan is brilliant, I like it. Old Ancestor Xue Hu is hard to deal with, but he has a weakness, that is, he lacks immortal materials to refine fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu. Tell me, knowing your personality, what do you want in return for giving me this plan?”

Blazing Heaven Demoness did not know that this was a plan that she had come up with after returning to Dark Flow City and thinking deeply for a long time.

Fang Yuan told her that he wanted strength path immortal zombie bodies.

Blazing Heaven Demoness hesitated, but thinking about Fang Yuan’s deep background, she agreed to it.

Fang Yuan was doing this for assurance.

In case he fails in obtaining the Immortal Gu House and the rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie, he still had a way out.

Time passed rapidly.

Fang Yuan was investigating Central Continent, and knew that the Central Continent Gu Immortals had started to leave Northern Plains.

“It is time to take Luo Po valley.”

Fang Yuan mobilized Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Zhou Zhong, using Fixed Immortal Travel to get to the deepest part of Luo Po valley.

He had come here in his previous life, and after soul searching Hei Cheng, he knew the scenery of Luo Po valley. Thus, it was easy to get here.

At this time, Hui Feng Zi, who had surrendered to Central Continent, was guarding this place, preventing anyone from entering Luo Po valley. He did not know that Fang Yuan was already inside.

Immortal Gu Pulling Mountain!

Fang Yuan had just activated this Immortal Gu and was about to take Luo Po valley into his immortal aperture when a change occurred.

In his ears, a voice could be heard.

It was when he was in the dream realm, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had once sang —

“Fallen songs and despondent heroes, difficulty in resisting the trials of fate.”

“Bent swords sink in the sand, rising and falling from ancient times, the rumbling of an unceasing heavenly river.”

“Alas...”

“Spectral night carries a soul into endless dreams, where can one rest in peace?”

“During spring and autumn body and mind shifts, only heaven’s will remains vast and boundless.”

This time, Fang Yuan heard it clearly. At the same time, a wave of information entered his mind.

Fang Yuan’s shock was beyond description!

“Luo Po valley actually has a Thieving Heaven true inheritance?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 991: Inheriting the Thieving Heaven True Inheritance!

Even the person involved, Fang Yuan, did not know the reason.

When Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s song echoed in his ears again, he received some mysterious information in his mind.

The information told him that at a certain area in Luo Po valley, a Thieving Heaven true inheritance was hidden!

Fang Yuan was greatly enticed.

And also very suspicious.

“This isn’t a trap left by the Central Continent Gu Immortals, right? In which there is actually no Thieving Heaven true inheritance, but it is a wisdom path method specially used to influence the rationality of enemies who enter the valley?”

Fang Yuan quickly calmed down, and began to inspect all over his body as well as the surrounding environment.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s song had appeared abruptly and disappeared just as quickly.

Fang Yuan inspected himself and found nothing wrong.

He then checked his surroundings, the many Gu formations arranged in Luo Po valley as well as large numbers of damaged Gu formations.

However, Fang Yuan did not discover any wisdom path Gu formations.

He lowered his head and pondered, feeling this matter might be strange but its credibility was high!

The reasons?

One was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s song, and the second was the contents inside the information, indicating to Fang Yuan that he had to use open door Gu to enter the Thieving Heaven true inheritance.

“I am already a wisdom path grandmaster, normal wisdom path methods probably won’t be able to influence me. Let alone when the only wisdom path Gu Immortal among the group of Central Continent Gu Immortals, Old Oracle, is already dead. Actually, it is easy to verify this, I just have to test it out myself.”

Fang Yuan made a decision and cautiously neared the location.

He detoured around four Gu formations and unraveled three Gu formations.

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals had arranged large numbers of Gu formations in the periphery of Luo Po valley. This was because they had been attacking Shadow Sect for a long time from the periphery. When they invaded the valley, they destroyed Shadow Sect’s Gu formations.

After the battle, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals officially occupied this valley. The intense battle was already concluded by then and they had no more need to arrange any Gu formations.

Adding in Fang Yuan’s deepening wisdom path attainment, these Gu formations were simply no obstacle to him.

After a while, he arrived at the location which the information during Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s song had indicated.

Fang Yuan observed for a long while, having no hurry in using open door Gu.

But in the end, he could not find any clues!

This place was extremely safe, at least, Fang Yuan could not detect anything even after using all his methods.

After confirming again and again, his eyes flashed before he resolutely decided to use open door Gu.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan had also used open door Gu in Luo Po valley, but he had not obtained any results. Fang Yuan had thought Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s arrangement was already dismantled by Shadow Sect.

But this life, soon after Fang Yuan used the open door Gu, a change occurred.

An entrance of light suddenly appeared in the air.

Shortly, a beam of light shined on the prepared Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was shocked, he thought for a moment before letting the beam of light engulf him.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan entered the space of the Thieving Heaven true inheritance.

This space was vast, extremely vast.

Behind him was that entrance of light which had not disappeared and was still there.

It was only that the size of the entrance was gradually becoming smaller.

If it continued shrinking, it would likely disappear.

Sounds of wind appeared from nearby, Fang Yuan moved his gaze towards the source and was immediately shaken.

“Winds of assimilation!”

He cried out inwardly, his gaze revealing extreme wariness.

He was extremely clear of the power of winds of assimilation, this wind could assimilate everything into itself and expand continuously. Back then, Imperial Court blessed land had been destroyed by winds of assimilation.

This time, dozens of huge tornadoes of winds of assimilation had formed, slowly moving in the true inheritance space.

Fang Yuan quickly retreated, creating some distance from the winds of assimilation.

He only felt slightly at ease after retreating hundreds of steps away. He then carefully sized up this true inheritance space.

“I had not expected there was truly a space here! That mysterious information was true?” Fang Yuan was cautious, and still held doubts towards the information during Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s song.

He did not hurriedly wander around this true inheritance space to look for the true inheritance, instead his mind was focused on close door Gu.

“If open door Gu can let me enter, then close door Gu can close the entrance?”

Fang Yuan activated close door Gu.

Sure enough, the next moment, that shrinking entrance of light in his vision suddenly disappeared.

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with sharp light as he activated open door Gu again.

Under the use of this rank five mortal Gu, a new entrance of light formed in front of him again.

Fang Yuan stepped into this entrance of light and immediately left the Thieving Heaven true inheritance space, returning to Luo Po valley.

“This means that information should be true. No, more precisely, the part about open door Gu and close door Gu is true.” Fang Yuan unavoidably had some expectations.

He entered the true inheritance space again.

“According to the contents in the information, these winds of assimilation are genuine, but they are harmless to me. And I can only inherit the true inheritance after dispelling these winds of assimilation.”

Fang Yuan carefully approached one of the tornadoes of winds of assimilation, he revealed his true form and stretched out his eight large arms.

He slowly moved one of his hands towards the tornado.

Suddenly, the roaring winds of assimilation completely dissipated.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly.

He mumbled to himself: “Incredible! Winds of assimilation can assimilate everything, but they are so restrained in this true inheritance space. Even if the Gu Immortal who arranged this space is not Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, just this method shows they are absolutely a peerless expert!”

Although he removed one of the tornadoes of winds of assimilation, Fang Yuan was not careless, and was very cautious in touching the winds each time. If anything was wrong, he could instantly retreat.

Every time, after moving a certain distance, he would use open door Gu and close door Gu, letting the entrance of light open up as close to him as possible.

Like this, even if something happened and he did not have time to activate Fixed Immortal Travel, Fang Yuan could still retreat rapidly to the entrance of light and move to the outside world.

One after another, the tornadoes of winds of assimilation started to disappear under Fang Yuan’s efforts.

After a while, there was only one tornado left in the center.

Fang Yuan observed briefly and discovered: this tornado not only had the largest size, it was also moving the fastest.

The sound of the wind roared in Fang Yuan’s ears, this tornado seemed to be hiding something in the center.

“Could it be that the Thieving Heaven true inheritance is within this tornado?” Fang Yuan could not help but guess this.

He stretched out his finger and touched this dark green tornado.

The winds of assimilation suddenly disappeared, revealing a person!

This person was sitting cross-legged in mid-air, wearing a red and white robe, and was revealing a faint rank seven aura.

“Feng Jiu Ge!” Fang Yuan cried out softly, and subconsciously retreated.

But Feng Jiu Ge was even faster than him, he suddenly opened his eyes, letting out a sharp gaze.

The piercing, sharp gaze scanned Fang Yuan, before Feng Jiu Ge turned into a rainbow light and with lightning speed, he flew past Fang Yuan, moving into the entrance of light!

The whole process was over before one could even blink.

Fang Yuan reacted, his first action was to activate close door Gu.

The entrance of light closed and Fang Yuan finally relaxed.

“Why is Feng Jiu Ge here?! Could it be that the place he was trapped in was this true inheritance space? Since he was here, then what about the others? Where are Qin Bai Sheng, Ao Xue, and Ling Mei?”

Fang Yuan quickly inspected, but the true inheritance space was empty, with just an information path mortal Gu hovering in front of Fang Yuan.

This information path Gu worm was left behind by Feng Jiu Ge.

When Fang Yuan did not discover anything wrong with it, only then did he send his consciousness inside to check.

“Fang Yuan, so you are an otherworldly demon, I will keep this a secret for you. You want to know why I recognize you? Because I am Feng Jin Huang’s father. Today, you saved my life, in the future, I will save yours. After I leave, there will only be you left in the true inheritance space, the Thieving Heaven true inheritance will be inherited by you. We shall meet again some day!”

“Feng Jiu Ge....” Fang Yuan grasped this letter Gu with a complex expression.

He heaved a sigh before storing the Gu in his immortal aperture.

At this moment, the entire true inheritance space began to dim.

The bright light rays that had been present earlier disappeared in an instant, turning the space into darkness.

In this darkness, there was only one spot where there was some light, it was precisely the spot where Fang Yuan stood.

A charming masculine voice came from the darkness.

“Traveler from far away.”

“You and I are the same, we are both pitiful people who cannot return to our homes.”

“My real name is Ben Jie Sun, people in this world call me Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable. In truth, I am just a vagrant who wants to return home.”

“This world feels like a cage of despair.”

“If you also want to return home, then accept my present.”

“I believe it can definitely help you. But if you want to return home, you still need to rely on your own effort!”

“This gift’s name is — Ghostly Concealment.”

At the next moment, Fang Yuan appeared in Luo Po valley.

A layer of grey light was shining over his whole body.

Fang Yuan ignored this grey light, and instead used investigative and defensive methods, being vigilant of his surroundings.

Feng Jiu Ge did not appear.

“It seems his injuries are extremely serious, not even having half of his strength. If not for this, he might have made a move against me in the true inheritance space.”

“But... this person clearly distinguishes kindness and hatred. Kindness is repaid, and revenge is taken for hatred. His biography after he died explained this point. His words of repaying me for saving his life are perhaps... true.”

Fang Yuan contemplated.

Feng Jiu Ge did not take action against Fang Yuan, perhaps it was not because his battle strength had fallen, but because Fang Yuan had saved him.

No matter what, Fang Yuan had profited hugely this time.

Having Feng Jiu Ge owe him a favor, such a huge connection would probably be of great use in the future.

He also obtained ghostly concealment, although Fang Yuan did not know what its use was, it was after all a Thieving Heaven true inheritance!

Besides these two, there was also this Luo Po valley!

“Feng Jiu Ge has probably already left Luo Po valley, now it is the best time to take this valley.” Thinking of this, Fang Yuan decisively took action.

“What’s going on?!” Hui Feng Zi, who was guarding the valley, was shocked by the scene of Luo Po valley, his eyes widened as he shouted incredulously: “Someone is taking away Luo Po valley?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 992: Fang Yuan Outwits Hui Feng Zi

Hui Feng Zi was startled and furious.

Even though he did not surrender willingly, because of the situation, after he had surrendered to them, he could only work for them even if he did not want to.

Central Continent ordered him to stay here and guard Luo Po valley, they had naturally made many arrangements on his body.

Hui Feng Zi was restricted by them, and for the sake of his safety, he had to stand up and stop Fang Yuan from taking Luo Po valley.

But when he saw Fang Yuan, Hui Feng Zi, who was startled and furious, shook intensely, he called out in fear: “Feng Jiu Ge!”

Fang Yuan looked at him lightly with a calm expression.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals had already left Northern Plains and returned to Central Continent. Then, they would naturally leave some arrangements back in Northern Plains. How could the astute Fang Yuan not guess this?

Thus, while taking Luo Po valley, he turned into Feng Jiu Ge.

“So the Central Continent Gu Immortals arranged Hui Feng Zi to guard this place... It seems that Central Continent has good methods, making this ‘fastest person in Northern Plains’ defend their interests against his will. Furthermore, seeing his expression, did he not see Feng Jiu Ge leave earlier? Is Feng Jiu Ge still in the valley? No, that is unlikely. After the hundred days battle, the Shadow Sect Gu Immortals have already left, Feng Jiu Ge knows this is a dangerous place, he is heavily injured, although he mentioned repaying the debt of saving his life, he was very intent on urgently escaping. Thus, he did not speak to me inside the true inheritance space.”

Guarding against others was a necessity.

Feng Jiu Ge’s actions were extremely wise.

After all, Fang Yuan was not Zhao Lian Yun, in the previous life, Feng Jiu Ge spoke when Zhao Lian Yun appeared. But now, when Fang Yuan showed up, Feng Jiu Ge kept completely silent.

Let alone another point.

If Fang Yuan knew Feng Jiu Ge was there, he would likely attack!

Killing Feng Jiu Ge would give immense profits, even if he could not get his Immortal Gu, searching his soul was very valuable.

In addition, if he could capture Feng Jiu Ge alive, he could either extort Spirit Affinity House or sell him to enemy forces of Feng Jiu Ge, such transactions would be hugely profitable.

“Feng Jiu Ge is heavily injured, he is extremely vigilant now! He did not speak with me, maybe after leaving Luo Po valley, he saw Hui Feng Zi but did not approach him. The likely reasons for that being, either he did not know Hui Feng Zi surrendered, or even if he knew, he was afraid of the internal conflicts of the ten great ancient sects. After all, a person’s inner thoughts and intentions are inscrutable, with Feng Jiu Ge’s current state, he could not take a risk.”

Fang Yuan appeared impassive, but he had already considered many things. Countless thoughts had appeared in his mind in just these few breaths of time.

“He is real!” Hui Feng Zi used his method to investigate and after confirming Feng Jiu Ge’s identity, he sighed in relief.

Feng Jiu Ge was the leader of the Central Continent Gu Immortals, if he personally was taking Luo Po valley, Hui Feng Zi had no reason to stop him.

“This subordinate greets Lord Feng Jiu Ge.” Hui Feng Zi was very obedient, he flew forward and paid respects to Fang Yuan.

“Mm.” Fang Yuan nodded: “I have understood what happened. Defend me, I am not to be interrupted when taking Luo Po valley.”

His words were short and did not contain much information. But by stating this beforehand, he prevented Hui Feng Zi from becoming suspicious.

“Yes, lord!” Hui Feng Zi quickly replied.

Like this, under the protection of Hui Feng Zi, Fang Yuan succeeded in taking Luo Po valley.

“Even though Luo Po valley was moved away, there are many blessed lands left. Stay guard here and prevent any problems from occurring.” Before leaving, Fang Yuan said this to Hui Feng Zi in a serious tone.

Hui Feng Zi did not suspect anything, he nodded in agreement.

Fang Yuan flew away calmly.

“Feng Jiu Ge has already escaped, that confirms that Qin Bai Sheng is dead.” Hui Feng Zi looked at his figure while sighing at Feng Jiu Ge’s great strength.

Hui Feng Zi was not surprised by this.

He knew that Qin Bai Sheng was heavily injured.

Hui Feng Zi suddenly thought: “Oh no. The ten great ancient sects restrain each other, they have internal conflicts. Feng Jiu Ge is a member of Spirit Affinity House, I have no reason to stop him from taking Luo Po valley, but I have to send this information over to the other nine sects.”

Thinking of this, he did not hesitate, he quickly used his information path methods.

Prince Feng Xian quickly received his letter.

“Oh? Feng Jiu Ge is still alive? Not only did he come out, he even took Luo Po valley!” Prince Feng Xian was overjoyed, he laughed loudly.

Meanwhile, after leaving Hui Feng Zi, Fang Yuan flew to a safe location and met with Tai Bai Yun Sheng, as well as the featherman Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong.

These two were arranged to be situated not far away, just in case they were needed.

At the same time, he had been maintaining contact with Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan, if any trouble occurred, they would be called over as reinforcements.

With Hei Lou Lan and Blazing Heaven Demoness’ relationship, even if a rank eight Gu Immortal appears, Fang Yuan could deal with them.

Naturally!

The current situation was best.

Fang Yuan obtained Luo Po valley on his own.

And Hei Lou Lan was not like in his previous life, without Hei Cheng’s soul, she could not know the location of Luo Po valley.

Fang Yuan wanted to keep quiet and earn a fortune, not telling her about Luo Po valley.

Fairy Li Shan had once suppressed Fang Yuan, there was no way he would tell them about Luo Po valley.

Once they knew, with Blazing Heaven Demoness’ demanding personality, she would definitely request the use of Luo Po valley.

“Even in the future, if I want to trade with them using Luo Po valley, it will be after my soul becomes sufficiently powerful...”

Fang Yuan returned to Star Form blessed land and placed Luo Po valley there.

Hei Lou Lan went to Hu Immortal blessed land often. She had to use strength qi Immortal Gu to refine airsac Gu with the hairy men. Thus, it was not wise to put Luo Po valley inside Hu Immortal blessed land.

The matter regarding Luo Po valley came to an end, but Fang Yuan was still apprehensive.

His gains in Luo Po valley were beyond his expectations, but the course of events was way out of Fang Yuan’s control.

The feeling of losing control over the situation was extremely irritating, Fang Yuan felt uneasy.

In the Thieving Heaven true inheritance, Fang Yuan obtained ghostly concealment.

Fang Yuan checked his body, he found that his soul was covered by a layer of dao marks.

But Fang Yuan did not know what the use of ghostly concealment was.

Thankfully, he had joined Lang Ya Sect.

Thus, Fang Yuan went to Lang Ya blessed land and asked about Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

Lang Ya land spirit did not conceal things or make any requests, he told Fang Yuan a lot of information.

“There are many inheritances of Thieving Heaven, but he only has ten true inheritances. The one you got earlier was to make me refine three Gu, that was not a true inheritance. Each Thieving Heaven true inheritance is an unparalleled treasure in the world, they contain the essence of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s cultivation. Anyone who obtains them will gain immense potential! There is only one requirement of these true inheritances, that is, the inheritor has to be an otherworldly demon!”

“Legend says that Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had two defensive killer moves, named divine concealment and ghostly concealment. The use of divine concealment was to conceal oneself from the deductions of any thoughts, wills, and emotions. As for ghostly concealment, it is very mysterious, I do not know much, it seems to have something to do with the soul. Ah? You are suddenly so interested in Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s information? Why? Did you obtain a clue to a Thieving Heaven true inheritance?”

Fang Yuan laughed: “You guessed correctly.”

“Divine concealment, ghostly concealment...” Lang Ya land spirit sighed, deeply moved: “If I had divine concealment, Lang Ya blessed land would become a true paradise, we will no longer face any heavenly tribulations or earthly calamities. It is a pity, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable created ten true inheritances, but they are extremely mysterious, until now, I have not heard of anyone obtaining them. His true inheritances come in pairs, divine concealment and ghostly concealment are a pair. Obtaining one will give you clues to the other. Fang Yuan, if you can obtain divine concealment and contribute it to Lang Ya Sect, I will make you the second supreme elder. In the whole of Lang Ya Sect, you will be second to only me, you will have immense authority! In fact, you will be able to take one rank seven Immortal Gu from my inventory. Ah, no, at least two rank seven Immortal Gu!”

Fang Yuan nodded, Lang Ya land spirit’s change of personality gave him a lot of benefits.

At least, the previous Lang Ya land spirit was too conservative, he would not promise Fang Yuan such benefits.

“However, if I can obtain divine concealment, that is a Thieving Heaven true inheritance! Back then, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable went around stealing everywhere, nobody could deduce his location, was it not because of divine concealment and ghostly concealment? This inheritance is far more valuable than merely two rank seven Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan had a faint smiling expression.

Lang Ya land spirit pouted, he laughed loudly and tried to alleviate the awkwardness: “You are not wrong. Actually, I did not finish what I was saying, not only will I give two rank seven Immortal Gu, you can even ask me for countless Immortal Gu recipes, immortal killer moves, and all sorts of ancient secrets and inheritance clues! How about that, is that reward enough?”

“Mm, that is about enough. I will be back when I get divine concealment.” Fang Yuan obtained the information he wanted and turned around abruptly to leave Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya land spirit stared with wide eyes, muttering as he looked at Fang Yuan leaving: “This fellow... he might have really obtained some clues! If I can get divine concealment, what is there to worry about? Wahaha! Even if I let him become the second supreme elder, the hairy man Gu Immortals only listen to me, wahaha! Argh, I accidentally said my thoughts out loud again!”

Lang Ya land spirit covered his mouth, staring at Fang Yuan innocently.

Fang Yuan was used to such strangeness, he laughed internally.

If it were any other force, he would feel wary and alert. But joining Lang Ya Sect, with a leader like this, things were extremely easy.

“I heard everything you said.” Fang Yuan waved to Lang Ya land spirit without turning around, using Fixed Immortal Travel and leaving Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya land spirit was left behind with a dejected expression, he stomped his foot and muttered: “Damn it! Damn it!”

Returning to Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered uncertainly as he fell into deep thought.

“I am a transmigrator, even though my body is from this world, my soul is from outside. Thus, I am an otherworldly demon, I have the qualification to obtain Thieving Heaven’s true inheritances.”

“Earlier, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable left behind some words, it indicated that he was also an otherworldly demon.”

“It can be either very difficult or very easy to obtain Thieving Heaven’s true inheritances, the most important thing is the status of being an otherworldly demon. No wonder Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable spread clues everywhere in setting up this true inheritance. I was wondering why the clues of open door Gu and close door Gu were so easily obtained.”

“But after obtaining ghostly concealment, I did not find any trace of divine concealment. This means, divine concealment has already been taken by someone?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 993: Immortal Zombie Bo Qing Appears

Fang Yuan still had many questions.

He did not get the answer he wanted from Lang Ya land spirit.

Fang Yuan still did not have conclusive clues regarding ghostly concealment. Up until now, he only knew ghostly concealment targeted the soul.

“Divine concealment is already an extraordinary wonder, and ghostly concealment, which is equally famous, should not be worse.”

“Actually, I am even more curious about that song than ghostly concealment!”

Every time he thought of this, Fang Yuan would subconsciously frown.

The song which Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had sung in the dream realm was extremely peculiar.

According to logic, the song originated in the dream realm and should have no relation to reality. But Fang Yuan’s experience in Luo Po valley showed that this song had huge significance in reality, almost like a prophetic song.

“Speaking of prophecies, they have always been a specialty of wisdom path great experts. Like Immortal Yi Yan’s Prophecy of Three Venerables. Could it be that this dream realm is a prophetic dream realm left behind by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable?” Fang Yuan guessed.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was the greatest expert in wisdom path. After she died, the arrangements she left behind schemed against three Demon Venerables, ensuring Heavenly Court did not fall.

This dazzling achievement consolidated her status in wisdom path firmly at the peak, and later generations could only look up to her.

For her dream realm to be special and able to deliver a prophecy was not that strange.

Moreover, although the latter stages during Fang Yuan’s previous life of five hundred years was the time when dream path developed rapidly like a raging fire, it was far from being explored fully.

It was not strange for Fang Yuan to not be aware of this special kind of dream realm.

“Fallen songs and despondent heroes, difficulty in resisting the trials of fate... the first verse of this song should be talking about Luo Po valley’s Thieving Heaven true inheritance and also Feng Jiu Ge. Then what about the second verse?”

“Bent swords sink in the sand, rising and falling from ancient times, the rumbling of an unceasing heavenly river.”

Fang Yuan mumbled.

“Heavenly river... Falling Heavenly River?”

“Bent swords sink in the sand... is it talking about the greatest expert in sword path, Bo Qing?”

“It has already been countless years since he died under the tribulation. During his time, all five regions paid attention to him, he could do whatever he wished, upon his death, even his corpse was lost, his glorious radiance dissipated. This could be said to be rising and falling from ancient times.”

After the experience in Luo Po valley, Fang Yuan had already remembered the complete song.

After making deductions, he increasingly felt this second verse of the song was related to Sword Immortal Bo Qing.

Adding in his previous life’s memories, Fang Yuan was even more determined to explore Falling Heavenly River.

He had wanted to go anyway.

It was filled with danger, but those corpses of ancient and immemorial desolate beasts along with desolate plants in Falling Heavenly River could be said to be superior immortal materials.

They could not compare to those rank eight and quasi-rank nine immortal materials Fang Yuan obtained in Earth Trench.

But their quantity was extremely large, and adding all of them would have a price that surpassed Fang Yuan’s gains in Earth Trench!

Although large numbers of Gu Immortals had died at the bottom of Falling Heavenly River, at the initial stages of the exploration, almost every Gu Immortal had made a fortune!

“It seems there is much to reap from Sword Immortal Bo Qing’s appearance. It is just that it is still not the optimal time to explore. On one hand, the sword lights don’t follow a fixed pattern, just being scratched would cause injuries and death if struck, it is too dangerous. On the other hand, Falling Heavenly River is home to ancient and immemorial desolate beasts, desolate plants, hidden undercurrents and whirlpools, there are countless dangers.”

Although Fang Yuan's modified immortal killer move familiar face was usable, it had limits.

At present, Fang Yuan could only take on human form and could not transform into beasts or other species.

The original familiar face could transform into anything.

Why?

Fang Yuan did not have change form Immortal Gu. One of the core supplementary Immortal Gu in familiar face was change form Immortal Gu. With this Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan could transform into other species, getting rid of the shackles of being only able to disguise as a human.

But even with change form Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan could not go to the bottom of Falling Heavenly River.

Besides ancient and immemorial desolate beasts along with desolate plants, Falling Heavenly River was filled with countless dangerous natural traps that were enough to take Fang Yuan's life.

He only had to wait until Bo Qing's sword lights finished erupting, Falling Heavenly River would be cleansed, the beasts and the dangerous plants would be cleared away temporarily, the natural traps would also be almost completely destroyed. That would be the optimal time to enter Falling Heavenly River.

During this short preceding period of time, Fang Yuan could only wait, there was no better alternative.

Prince Feng Xian.

The rank eight Gu Immortal Prince Feng Xian was one of the peak experts of Northern Plains' Gu Immortal world. But his true identity was a mole of Central Continent arranged by Spirit Affinity House many years ago. He had infiltrated Northern Plains when he was a Gu Master. After going through immortal ascension, he became a genuine Northern Plains Gu Immortal.

On one hand, he had support from Spirit Affinity House, on the other, it was also his own effort and talent that combined to let him achieve his current level.

Prince Feng Xian was very loyal to Spirit Affinity House.

He knew how much strategic importance Feng Jiu Ge had in regards to Spirit Affinity House currently.

He had been extremely worried during the time Feng Jiu Ge disappeared. When he received Hui Feng Zi's message and learned Feng Jiu Ge had appeared, he was extremely happy.

It was just that he did not know the 'Feng Jiu Ge' in this message was Fang Yuan in disguise.

He waited for several days but did not see Feng Jiu Ge coming to his residence.

"I lead Spirit Affinity House's matters in Northern Plains, since Feng Jiu Ge is already out of danger, why did he not look for me? Could it be that he encountered some powerful enemies or troublesome matters?"

Prince Feng Xian knew Feng Jiu Ge's battle strength, but he was also aware of the huge battle between Feng Jiu Ge and Qin Bai Sheng.

Feng Jiu Ge had been trapped for so long, and had now suddenly appeared. This information itself hinted at Feng Jiu Ge’s miserable state.

“But since he has already freed himself, why didn’t he come to find me at the first moment? The other Central Continent Gu Immortals have already gone back, he probably won’t be able to return to Central Continent with just his strength, he needs my help. Does he not trust me?”

While Prince Feng Xian was having doubts, a letter came from Spirit Affinity House.

The letter expressed that Zhao Lian Yun had successfully obtained divine concealment some days ago, and also that they knew ghostly concealment was in Luo Po valley’s Thieving Heaven true inheritance.

Since Prince Feng Xian was able to become rank eight, he naturally had an astute mind.

He came to a realization after reading the letter.

“So it was like this.” He heaved a sigh.

Where people interacted, there would be conflicts. Even after uniting to form an organization, internal conflicts would exist.

Feng Jiu Ge was in power for too long, it had definitely resulted in dissatisfaction from many forces in Spirit Affinity House. This dissatisfaction had the chance to erupt when Feng Jiu Ge was missing.

Merely considering the time when Zhao Lian Yun obtained divine concealment, Prince Feng Xian knew someone had intentionally delayed matters.

He immediately realized Feng Jiu Ge’s plan: “It seems Feng Jiu Ge is keeping a low profile currently to see who in the sect has ill intentions towards him. Or maybe he already knew and was only waiting for an excuse, he wants to grab hold of them using this opportunity and throw these people deep into the abyss!”

“So, Feng Jiu Ge won’t come to me because he knows he cannot influence me and I can send a message back to the sect at the first moment.”

“But he is safest in my residence, and I am also help that he needs to rely on in order to return to Central Continent. He is not an idiot, he is a champion who knows how to make plans and schemes! It is very likely for him to still have injuries, while dangers exist from Shadow Sect externally and sect conflicts internally. Even if he doesn’t come here, he must be near this place. Then, once something unexpected happens, he can ask for my help in time. So if I am going to search, I should first search the areas nearby.”

The moment he thought of this, Prince Feng Xian’s eyes flickered with sharp light as he immediately took action.

A rank eight Gu Immortal’s full-powered search naturally was extraordinary.

Soon, Prince Feng Xian discovered Feng Jiu Ge.

“Hahaha, Brother Jiu Ge, I had to search for a while.” He laughed heartily as he patted Feng Jiu Ge’s shoulder.

“I hope Brother Prince doesn’t blame me.” Feng Jiu Ge’s expression was still slightly pale.

“I understand.” Prince Feng Xian nodded, “Let’s go. My grotto-heaven is the safest place for you to recuperate.”

This Feng Jiu Ge naturally was not Fang Yuan in disguise.

The two entered the grotto-heaven and as they conversed, they talked about Luo Po valley.

Prince Feng Xian was slightly furious: “Hui Feng Zi was negligent, he should be punished. As for the Gu Immortal who took Luo Po valley, he might be from Shadow Sect.”

Fang Yuan’s image appeared in Feng Jiu Ge’s mind for a moment, but he did not speak.

Prince Feng Xian continued: “I sent a letter to the sect after seeing you. You are able to return alive, this is the greatest news for us! I can’t let your wife and daughter spend time in sorrow any longer. When your injuries are healed, I will hold a celebration for you, the celebration will last for seven days and seven nights, and only then will I let you go back to Central Continent. Us brothers will definitely drink until we get drunk!”

Feng Jiu Ge smiled bitterly.

He knew Prince Feng Xian’s intent.

Prince Feng Xian was half an outsider to Central Continent, what he had to consider was the growth and interests of the whole sect.

Feng Jiu Ge wanted to suppress the other Gu Immortals in the sect, but if the process was too intense, it would inevitably create internal friction in the sect. Prince Feng Xian did not want to see this.

However, when he thought of his wife and daughter, Feng Jiu Ge’s heart softened.

Never mind!

“Brother Prince truly considers everything.” Feng Jiu Ge cupped his fists, his words containing hidden meaning.

Prince Feng Xian laughed even more happily at this reply.

The information reached Spirit Affinity House, all the higher ups were in great jubilation.

Feng Jiu Ge’s disappearance brought these Gu Immortals huge mental pressure. When Feng Jiu Ge was there, they had subconsciously neglected his worth. But his disappearance now made Spirit Affinity House’s Gu Immortals recognize how important Feng Jiu Ge was to the whole of Spirit Affinity House.

Feng Jin Huang laughed with tears on her face, while Fairy Bai Qing also had a smile.

Some were happy, and some were apprehensive.

“Feng Jiu Ge did not die? Things will be difficult for us in the following period of time.” Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying were feeling heavy.

They had intentionally delayed and hidden the news regarding Zhao Lian Yun, although it was not blatant, discerning people would know it immediately.

Even if Feng Jiu Ge could not use it against them, when he returns, he would definitely be displeased at Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying, and it would be a natural thing for him to suppress them to some extent.

Feng Jiu Ge’s news had reached Spirit Affinity House early, naturally there was now no conference between the higher-ups, and Fairy Bai Qing also did not go to investigate Bo Qing.

However, the immortal zombie Bo Qing still appeared.

Swords roam unhindered over Central Continent!

Countless sword lights shocked immortals and mortals.

When the sword lights stopped, countless Gu Immortals began to move towards Falling Heavenly River.

But Fang Yuan had already arrived at this place before them.

In front of him, Falling Heavenly River was already dyed blood red and immortal materials filled his vision!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 994: Stealing Bo Qing’s Immortal Gu

“This is the immemorial desolate beast myriad eyes clear bull?!” Fang Yuan looked at Falling Heavenly River, as a sinking bull head attracted his attention.

He quickly hurried over, using his methods to pull up this bull head.

An immemorial desolate beast was a strong life form that could rival rank eight Gu Immortals.

The myriad eyes clear bull had a large body. Just this head already was like a small hill.

And it was very heavy.

Fang Yuan had once pulled up Luo Po valley, but this bull’s head alone was heavier than the valley.

“This bull head’s weight is mostly on the horns. Incredible, the horns were already cut by the sword light and only half remain, but it is still so heavy!”

Fang Yuan gasped.

The bull’s horns were rank eight immortal material, they were filled with metal path and earth path dao marks.

And the bull’s skin was very rare, it was full of water path dao marks. Unfortunately, Fang Yuan only had part of the skin from the bull’s head. If it was the skin of the bull’s body, not only would there be water path dao marks, there would also be light path dao marks, it was very useful for the refinement of investigative Immortal Gu!

But the eyes of the bull were the most valuable part of the myriad eyes clear bull.

The two eyes were dark and deep, they were full of dark path dao marks. When Fang Yuan obtained them, there were many dark path wild mortal Gu inside, mostly rank five, they could not escape in time.

The eyes of the myriad eyes clear bull could not see.

They were blind to begin with.

The mechanisms through which the myriad eyes clear bull truly perceived vision were the eye tattoos on its thick skin.

They were very mystical.

The dao marks that were on such rank eight level lifeforms already had functions helpful to them.

For example, the ten thousand li earthworm was also an immemorial desolate beast, it had extremely strong regenerative abilities. As for what gave it this ability, it was the wondrous dao marks on it. Only by destroying these dao marks can the ten thousand li earthworm truly be killed.

But ten thousand li earthworms were hidden deeply inside Earth Trench or Earth Abyss, they did not exist in Falling Heavenly River.

The lifeforms in Falling Heavenly River were mostly related to water path, followed by earth path, metal path, wind path, light path and dark path. There were few fire path lifeforms here.

“Eh? This is the right arm of an ancient desolate beast, icefall divine ape.”

“This is the tail of an ancient desolate beast, snow soil crocodile.”

“What is this? Never mind, I will collect it first.”

Fang Yuan was prepared, he rapidly looted.

These were all severed portions of bodies, Fang Yuan could recognize some of them, but not all.

They were mostly ancient desolate beasts and desolate plants, with a few of immemorial desolate level among them. But these rank eight immortal materials, even if they were small in quantity, had immense value.

Fang Yuan felt great joy every time he saw one.

“Oh my! This seems to be a life and death kun-peng!” Fang Yuan gasped in surprise.

When he was almost done collecting all of the immortal materials floating on the river, he found his nineteenth rank eight immortal material.

This was a grey fish with the size of a boat.

It did not have gills, in place of them, there were dao marks in the shape of feathered wings.

“The life and death kun-peng is a law path immemorial desolate beast, it is very special. Its body is filled with life and death dao marks, it has two forms. One is a fish, the other is a bird. It lives as a fish for eight thousand years before turning into a bird after dying. After living for another eight thousand years, it will die for real. This life and death kun-peng seems to be close to becoming a bird, it is probably more than seven thousand years old.” Fang Yuan sighed.

Humans were the spirit of all beings, but they had short lifespans. Meanwhile, immemorial desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts would often have thousands or tens of thousands of years to live.

Not to mention plants.

The most famous example was Ku Mu Mountain in Northern Plains.

It was not a mountain, but an old earth wood tree.

This tree had a million years of history, because it had grown extremely large, it was called a mountain!

Compared to it, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, who had the longest lifespan among venerables, only lived for twenty five thousand years. Red Lotus Demon Venerable with the shortest lifespan lived for three thousand years, it was barely a fraction of that of the old earth wood tree!

This life and death kun-peng had a well preserved corpse, only the fish head was partially cut away, the rest of its entire body was still around.

Together with the life and death dao marks that it had, this special type of rule path dao mark was very rare in the entire world, thus it was very valuable.

“This life and death kun-peng is probably my biggest gain in this trip.” Keeping the life and death kun-peng in his aperture, Fang Yuan sighed internally.

At this moment, the bloody water in Falling Heavenly River was frothing.

Large numbers of fierce beasts and immemorial level aquatic plants were fighting over the severed limbs and corpses.

Fang Yuan had insufficient battle strength, he could only work quickly and collect the immortal materials that floated to the surface.

From time to time, some immortal materials floated up.

These immortal materials were mostly taken by Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan wisely left some alone due to the might of the fierce beasts and plants underwater that sought them.

Gradually, under the river, there was growing chaos.

These severed limbs and flesh were good food for these living beings.

As their food decreased, they engaged in fierce combat that caused bloodshed.

Sometimes, some dead ancient desolate beast corpses would float up to the river’s surface. Fang Yuan would take them away and earn a heavy sum.

As time passed, Fang Yuan’s gains decreased, while the risk of collecting immortal materials became larger.

He was a bit hesitant, wanting to leave while it was safe, but on the other hand, he wanted to explore the riverbed.

After all, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s second sentence seemed to be referring to Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body.

But it was all only a guess, he was uncertain.

Right at this time, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s singing voice appeared in his head again.

“Fallen songs and despondent heroes, difficulty in resisting the trials of fate.”

“Bent swords sink in the sand, rising and falling from ancient times, the rumbling of an unceasing heavenly river.”

“Alas...”

“Spectral night carries a soul into endless dreams, where can one rest in peace?”

“During spring and autumn body and mind shifts, only heaven’s will remains vast and boundless.”

As the voice faded, a second wave of mysterious information entered Fang Yuan’s mind.

“Sword Immortal Bo Qing, Mo Yao’s remnant soul!” Fang Yuan was shocked, his eyes shone with brilliant light.

“So what if I take another risk? As long as I can obtain Sword Immortal Bo Qing’s sword path Immortal Gu, even if I am unable to display their true power, it could be comparable to part of an Immortal Gu House.”

Fang Yuan was very resolute, he immediately left this part of the river’s surface, choosing a faraway place and diving deep into the river.

Because the sword lights had rampaged and almost all of the fierce beasts were gathered at that segment of the river fighting for resources, Fang Yuan could dive in very safely now.

In fact, he even picked up some naturally present immortal materials.

Like snow soil, unchanging water, qilin ice and others.

Arriving at the location indicated by the mysterious information, Fang Yuan stopped moving in the river.

He took out Mo Yao’s fake will.

“Fang Yuan, what do you want...” Mo Yao’s fake will was at first indignant, but she was quickly weakened by Fang Yuan’s methods, she was defenseless and at his mercy.

“It seems that somehow, everything has a connection. Mo Yao, your fake will caused me to topple Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, today, I will return you that favor.”

Mo Yao’s fake will was captured by Fang Yuan, it dissipated slowly, as an intense aura spread out.

Sensing this aura, a beam of light appeared, as an incomparable sword qi burst into the sky.

Fang Yuan was startled and almost retreated, but the sword qi did not attack him, it only cleared the surroundings and was very gentle towards him.

In the beam of light, Sword Immortal Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body slowly appeared.

Fang Yuan held his breath, looking at Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body tightly.

The latter did not open his eyes, they were still closed. This meant that the remnant soul of Mo Yao inside the body was still in a semi-conscious state.

This remnant soul only felt a familiar aura and was drawn over by Fang Yuan’s methods, arriving in advance.

His surroundings were covered in sword light, Fang Yuan could only move three steps closer.

This distance was his limit.

Any closer and Fang Yuan would not be able to conceal it. After all, he was relying on just a fake will that Mo Yao had left behind.

And this fake will had been weakened and tortured by Fang Yuan countless times.

“Basically all my other methods are unusable. Only through using Mo Yao’s will can my aura be disguised and the Immortal Gu in Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body be lured out.”

Fang Yuan moved carefully, he was afraid that enough of a disturbance would wake up the other party.

Actually, the most drastic method against immortal zombie Bo Qing was to take away all of his rank eight immortal essence.

That way, even if he has Immortal Gu, he would not be able to do anything.

Although that did not account for special existences like dream wings Immortal Gu.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing had died for a long time, his immortal aperture was completely gone. If not for the layers of sword light around his body, Fang Yuan could even capture him alive.

But reality was not as Fang Yuan hoped.

The thick sword light protected immortal zombie Bo Qing, anyone who breached it would be attacked by the countless sword lights.

According to the mysterious information in his mind, Fang Yuan used his method and quickly saw effect, he lured out an Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu was like a swan’s egg, it was translucent, and from the outside, jade light could be seen in it. When it was close, Fang Yuan could feel a bone chilling coldness emitting from this Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan was overjoyed.

Even though he did not know what Immortal Gu this was, or what use it had, the aura of the Immortal Gu told him that it was a rank seven Immortal Gu!

What sort of person was Bo Qing? Even in history, he was known as among the strongest people beneath the venerables. Even though he was not invincible, he could still easily dominate and suppress all of Central Continent.

None of the Immortal Gu that he used was rank six. They were at least rank seven, and his core sword path Immortal Gu would certainly all be rank eight. If not for that, he would not have that terrifying battle strength which he was famous for.

Fang Yuan enveloped this Immortal Gu in Mo Yao’s aura, before using wisdom path methods to seal it completely.

These seals were very fragile, they were deceptive in nature.

He was deceiving the consciousness of the Immortal Gu, making it feel that it was still in its owner’s hands, that it had not been taken away by a stranger.

Fang Yuan could not touch this Immortal Gu yet, he kept it in his immortal aperture.

Soon, he repeated it again and used his method on Bo Qing.

This time, after a long while, a second Immortal Gu was drawn out by Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 995: Rank Eight Wisdom Sword Gu

This Immortal Gu was the size of an adult’s finger, it was silver and blue in color, shining with a bright light. It was like a centipede, but instead of having multiple pairs of legs, it had soft and thin hair instead.

“This seems to be... sword eyebrows Immortal Gu?”

Fang Yuan thought and had a flash of inspiration.

This was among the information that he had obtained from Feng Jin Huang.

Sword Immortal Bo Qing had a rank seven Immortal Gu, Sword Eyebrows, it was not an attack type Gu, instead, it assisted with sword path cultivation.

When Gu Immortals use it, they can modify their eyebrows. Every hair on their eyebrows could be embedded with sword path dao marks.

Dao marks had immense amplification effects towards the power of Immortal Gu.

The number of hairs in a person’s eyebrows, if one truly counted all of them, the quantity was not few.

“This Immortal Gu’s value is very high, but to me, it can only be considered better than nothing. After all, I do not cultivate sword path.” Fang Yuan surrounded this Immortal Gu with Mo Yao’s aura and collected it carefully.

Next, the third Immortal Gu appeared in front of Fang Yuan.

This Immortal Gu was more special.

It did not have a fixed form, it was a snake at times, and a sword at other times. Its entire body was pale blue, resembling translucent liquid, like water.

After being lured out, it continued to dance around Fang Yuan.

The liquid formed into the shape of a blade, it was very vivid. But because it was moving around, the blade of the sword seemed to be soft and slippery, yet it gave Fang Yuan a feeling of extreme sharpness.

Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body did not have weak defense. But when this Immortal Gu surrounded him, everywhere it went, he could feel a sense of tearing on his skin when it got close.

Combined with his information, Fang Yuan guessed that this was the rank seven wave sword Gu.

According to Spirit Affinity House’s historical records, in the past, Sword Immortal Bo Qing had tried to raise this wave sword Gu to rank eight, but he failed.

The Gu refinement failed, and Bo Qing suffered a huge loss, the rank seven wave sword Gu was completely destroyed.

But later, Bo Qing spent a lot of time and effort to refine the rank six wave sword Gu again. After that, he laboriously raised it to rank seven again.

The fourth Immortal Gu was flying sword Gu. Its outer appearance was that of a silver-winged dragonfly.

This rank seven immortal gu was one of the most commonly used Immortal Gu by Sword Immortal Bo Qing in combat.

Using this Immortal Gu as a core, together with other Immortal Gu and mortal Gu, he created many sword path killer moves, leaving a deep mark in history.

For example, among them included the killer moves formless flying sword, cloud flying sword, pursuing flying sword, ten thousand li flying sword...

The fifth Immortal Gu was specially used for movement, it was called sword escape Gu.

It was shaped like a golden bee, once used, the person turns into a sharp sword, piercing through space and moving forward.

The speed was so fast it was nearly on par with the qi escape Immortal Gu of the same rank. In Bo Qing’s life, among his countless prominent achievements, there was a recorded case.

When he was rank seven, he was fighting with a Gu Immortal of the same rank. After three rounds, the Gu Immortal could not beat him, he used qi escape Immortal Gu to escape.

Bo Qing used sword escape Immortal Gu to chase him.

Even though he did not catch him, the distance was not reduced.

Afterwards, Bo Qing used one of his immortal killer moves, sword rampage, one of the core Immortal Gu of this move was sword escape Immortal Gu.

Once he used this move, the enemy’s head was chopped off, and the victor was decided.

After collecting these five Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan did not want it to end, he continued to use the method on the slumbering Bo Qing.

Mo Yao’s fake will was limited, sixty-five percent was used up already.

“I wonder what Immortal Gu is going to be next?” Fang Yuan was filled with excitement and nervousness.

He was dancing on top of sharp blades.

If immortal zombie Bo Qing awakens, he would be in danger.

But Fang Yuan knew that it was Mo Yao’s remnant soul here, he was not defenseless against it.

With his eloquence that could distort reality, it was not impossible to deceive the immortal zombie and the remnant soul.

But if immortal zombie Bo Qing reawakens with rage and shock, he might kill Fang Yuan before he can talk.

Fang Yuan would not wake up immortal zombie Bo Qing of course, he was not going to place his life in the hands of another person’s reaction.

This time, there was no reaction when luring the Immortal Gu.

This was truly the longest period of waiting.

An hour had passed, but there was no reaction at all.

“Maybe immortal zombie Bo Qing has no Immortal Gu left? This is impossible, right? If he only had these Immortal Gu, how could he create those incomparable sword lights that shot through the entirety of Central Continent?”

Two hours passed, Fang Yuan had barely any of Mo Yao’s fake will left.

His heart suddenly jumped.

He had placed many investigative mortal Gu and Gu formations near Falling Heavenly River. Suddenly, large numbers of mortal Gu and Gu formations were pulled out of their place.

“Other Gu Immortals are coming!” Fang Yuan’s expression sank.

Earlier, Fang Yuan had spent some time collecting immortal materials on the river surface. Looking at the time, it was not strange for other Gu Immortals to come now.

But if Gu Immortals found out something wrong with the riverbed, and got close to Fang Yuan, that would be troubling.

Fang Yuan was not worried about other Gu Immortals, but immortal zombie Bo Qing instead. Others would not have Mo Yao’s fake will, if they woke up immortal zombie Bo Qing accidentally, what would he do if he sees Fang Yuan taking his Immortal Gu?

Hehe.

The result was obvious.

Most likely, Fang Yuan would be beheaded before he has a chance to speak.

“Mo Yao’s fake will is almost used up, I need to leave. After all, I need to conceal my aura when leaving, thus, I cannot use up all of Mo Yao’s fake will here.”

Fang Yuan was too close to Bo Qing.

If he used Fixed Immortal Travel directly, the Immortal Gu's aura would surge, Mo Yao's remnant soul would reawaken, and Fang Yuan would die.

However, just as Fang Yuan was about to leave.

The sixth Immortal Gu finally appeared in front of him.

This Immortal Gu's appearance was very simple, it was a bubble, floating and having an ordinary appearance.

But its aura made Fang Yuan's eyes turn wide.

This was a rank eight sword path Immortal Gu!

No wonder it took so long to lure it out.

“But what Immortal Gu is this?” At once, Fang Yuan could not tell what this rank eight Immortal Gu was.

He had no time to think about it.

Using his earlier method, he took it into his immortal aperture.

Leave!

Leave quickly!

This time, his gains were huge, far beyond Fang Yuan's expectations.

He earned a fortune, great wealth could not describe his immense gains.

Compared to this, the benefits in Earth Trench were nothing!

Next, there would be more and more Gu Immortals exploring Falling Heavenly River. If immortal zombie Bo Qing was awakened, hehe...

Thus, he could not stay!

The process of leaving Falling Heavenly River went very smoothly.

The Gu Immortal who came had rank seven cultivation level, his shock had dissipated already. At this moment, his attention was drawn over by the fierce beasts which were fighting in the river.

From time to time, high grade immortal materials would float to the surface, before being swallowed by ferocious tides.

This Gu Immortal wanted to take these body parts, but he was hesitant and did not dare to strike.

After all, now was no longer the best timing. It was very risky to try and steal their food.

Fang Yuan left Falling Heavenly River, relaxing himself.

Just as he was about to use Fixed Immortal Travel, he shuddered.

“I remember now! This rank eight Immortal Gu is likely to be that legendary wisdom sword Gu!” Fang Yuan's eyes shined with immense joy.

“This Immortal Gu was created by Bo Qing. In the past, even though he had outstanding battle strength, he had suffered greatly at the hands of wisdom path Gu Immortals, thus to deal with them specifically, he created wisdom sword Immortal Gu. This Immortal Gu is not just a sword path Immortal Gu, it also contains the ingenuity of wisdom path.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan decided, when he subdues these Immortal Gu, he would choose this Gu first!

His wisdom path grandmaster attainment level made Fang Yuan gain a vague understanding. As long as he could control wisdom sword Immortal Gu and use it for himself, Fang Yuan’s gains would not just be a rank eight Immortal Gu. His wisdom path methods would improve by leaps and bounds, he would achieve a qualitative change!

Safely returning to Hu Immortal blessed land, Fang Yuan realized another point: “Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance, wisdom path grandmaster attainment level, rank six star thought Gu, rank eight wisdom sword Gu, and rank nine wisdom Gu... Without specific intention, my wisdom path prospects seem to have become the brightest. With my current state, strength path and time path seem to be more helpful to me, but in terms of prospects, wisdom path is far greater.”

He handled all of these Immortal Gu that he obtained appropriately.

Large amounts of Mo Yao’s fake will were created, used as an expendable tool to seal the Immortal Gu.

As long as wills did not sleep, they would think, and they would be greatly expended. Back then, in Imperial Court blessed land, Mo Yao’s fake will used delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu to strengthen herself, replenishing all of her expenditure.

Now, even though Fang Yuan did not have delight in water and mountain Immortal Gu, he had other methods, and was a wisdom path grandmaster, it was easy for him to create Mo Yao’s fake will.

It was just that he needed to use countless mortal Gu of all kinds, Fang Yuan needed a lot of preparation.

The situation in Falling Heavenly River happened too quickly, Fang Yuan’s time was tight, he did not have time to create more of Mo Yao’s fake will.

Thinking back, his gains this time were truly too unthinkable!

Chances to steal Immortal Gu from others were extremely rare.

Because under normal situations, Immortal Gu could be destroyed with a single thought.

Fang Yuan took advantage of the sleeping immortal zombie Bo Qing. To be able to steal the opponent’s Immortal Gu when they were awake, only rare cases like Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable were able to do that in history.

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s prophecy from that dream realm is truly formidable! What do the next few lines truly mean?”

Fang Yuan thought about the reasons for his huge gains and felt suspicious and expectant.

“Fallen songs and despondent heroes, difficulty in resisting the trials of fate.”

“Bent swords sink in the sand, rising and falling from ancient times, the rumbling of an unceasing heavenly river.”

“Alas...”

“Spectral night carries a soul into endless dreams, where can one rest in peace?”

“During spring and autumn body and mind shifts, only heaven’s will remains vast and boundless.”

Fang Yuan already understood the first two lines, but what were the later three lines trying to predict?

Everything was too ambiguous at the moment, Fang Yuan could not guess now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 996: Fang Yuan Cultivates His Soul

Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

“Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, give up, this Immortal Gu cannot be saved.” Bi Chen Tian urged.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord did not answer.

At this moment, his hands were ethereal, giving off a warm orange light. An Immortal Gu was nearly cut in half, but the orange light was sustaining its life, its aura was strong at times and weak at other times, being very unstable.

Lian Jiu Sheng’s face was full of concern.

He was a refinement path great expert, in his opinion, this Immortal Gu was beyond saving. Even Lian Jiu Sheng could not save it if he tried.

But Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was insistent on trying.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was in control of Heaven Overseeing Tower, he was a wisdom path Gu Immortal. Gu Immortals who have reached his level could make use of aspects of other paths even if they only cultivated one path, using it as the basis.

A person at this level did not have shortcomings, he could use wisdom path to imitate the strength of other paths, and even due to taking an innovative approach, it could potentially surpass the original.

Now, Lian Jiu Sheng could not help this Immortal Gu, but Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s wisdom path methods gave them some hope.

Except that the method he was using, in the opinions of Lian Jiu Sheng and Bi Chen Tian, was too risky.

If there were any errors, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord would face a strong backlash, his dao marks would go into chaos. Not only would he be heavily injured, he would not be able to use any Immortal Gu for the next thirty years, otherwise his injuries would get more severe.

Whoosh.

Suddenly, from the Immortal Gu’s body, an extremely sharp, formless burst of sword qi flew out.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord could not react in time, but thankfully, this formless burst of sword qi only scraped past his ears, cutting down a strand of his white hair.

Bi Chen Tian was shocked.

“It’s over.” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s expression relaxed, he let out a breath of air, saying in a gratified tone: “I pulled out the sword qi that was inside the Immortal Gu, it has been saved.”

Earlier, countless sword lights had burst out of Falling Heavenly River, rampaging over Central Continent.

One of the extremely sharp sword lights, like in the previous life, penetrated Heavenly Court and cut Heaven Overseeing Tower into two.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord quickly recalled Bai Cang Shui, Lian Jiu Sheng, and Bai Cang Shui. The four immortals had a discussion, as Bai Cang Shui headed to the riverbed of Falling Heavenly River, while the other three immortals repaired Heaven Overseeing Tower as it was being corroded by the sword qi, before its damage intensified.

Soon, the Immortal Gu in Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s hands could be seen recovering rapidly under the orange light.

Lian Jiu Sheng’s eyes shined, he clapped and praised: “Tower Lord, your ability to sacrifice your emotions to repair the Immortal Gu is truly an incredible wisdom path method! To think that you could really revive it, amazing. But... why did you take such a risk? This is a rank six Immortal Gu, Heavenly Court’s inventory is very abundant, we can refine it again easily. But if you got injured, you would not be able to do anything for thirty years, it would be an immense loss to Heavenly Court.”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord shook his head, saying slowly: “I don’t know why, but recently, ever since the Refinement Path Convention started, I felt something wrong. It is as if a hidden danger is brewing, once it strikes, the consequences will be severe. We have just repaired fate Gu and can now use half of its might. But when I was about to enter Heaven Overseeing Tower, a sword light flew over and coincidentally cut it in half. But was it really a coincidence?”

Bi Chen Tian and Lian Jiu Sheng looked at each other, as their expressions became grave.

“I will not hide it from you, I have been getting this feeling too.” Bi Chen Tian said heavily: “But my feeling only started when we repaired fate Gu.”

Lian Jiu Sheng also said: “So it was not my feeling alone. I thought that my descendants had encountered trouble, causing me to have this feeling. Now it seems it is not so simple. Tower Lord, you are a wisdom path Gu Immortal and you control Heaven Overseeing Tower, your senses are sharper than ours, it seems that something is really going to happen.”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was still holding the healing Immortal Gu: “Thus, I had to take a risk and try to heal this Immortal Gu. Even though this is not one of Heaven Overseeing Tower’s core Immortal Gu, by saving it, we can resolve one of the biggest issues in Heaven Overseeing Tower’s injuries at the moment. As long as we can fix the tower and use its might, together with our instincts, we will be able to deduce the truth.”

“Also, Bo Qing died under the tribulation back then, why did he suddenly appear? Between the two, there seems to be some close connection. Next, I will continue to use this method to repair the other Immortal Gu. During this process, I need to concentrate and I cannot be interrupted. If Fairy Cang Shui sends any letters back, try to inform me as soon as possible.”

Bi Chen Tian and Lian Jiu Sheng nodded in agreement: “Understood.”

Matters regarding Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body continued to grow as time passed, there was a huge influence on Central Continent and Heavenly Court.

Just as the Central Continent Gu Immortals placed their sights on Falling Heavenly River.

Fang Yuan had already obtained the biggest benefits and was cultivating on Dang Hun Mountain.

At this moment, he was standing on Dang Hun Mountain’s peak, waving a hand and sending out tens of thousands of souls.

These souls were mostly beast souls, rabbit souls, goat souls, horse souls and others were the most common. There were fewer wolf souls, tiger souls and souls of other fierce beasts. There were plant souls too, but the type of souls in the fewest quantity were variant humans and humans.

Actually, trade involving souls had long since existed.

Because in this world, there were many soul path Gu Immortals.

Soul path Gu worms had appeared since the immemorial era, but they had never formed into a path.

Only upon the rise of a certain Gu Immortal did soul path get created and flourish.

This person was one of the ten venerables in history, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

He was the creator of soul path, and had also singlehandedly pushed soul path to its peak over history. During his era, out of ten Gu Masters, at least five chose to cultivate soul path.

For the cultivation of soul path, the soul was the most important resource.

Souls were common Gu refinement materials needed for the refinement of soul path Gu worms.

In order to create soul path Gu worms, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had engaged in massacre and slaughter, to obtain countless souls. Thus, in history, he was also known as the venerable with the most murderous nature.

And because he created the rise of soul path, it also made his era filled with endless killing, it was a dark time when the world was in unrest.

Because many Gu Masters and Gu Immortals cultivated soul path, they needed to kill and gain souls for their cultivation resources.

Thus, during that era, the trading of souls appeared, they were undergone openly and on a grand scale.

After that, Spectral Soul died, and Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable appeared.

This kind and merciful Immortal Venerable did not promote strife against others, he loved peace. Because of his experiences growing up, he knew the suffering of the commoners, and understood the harm that Spectral Soul had caused. Thus, when he became an Immortal Venerable and was invincible in the world, one major accomplishment of his was to suppress soul path.

Soul path Gu Masters thus decreased in numbers, and trade involving souls was forced to be done underground.

The five regions began to recuperate and the killing subsided, the turbulence also gradually disappeared.

What the people considered most memorable thing was, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable did not force people using strength, he won support from people with virtue, and moved the world with his actions.

Thus, up until today, even in treasure yellow heaven, the largest and most free market in the world, the sale of souls was very rare.

Fang Yuan’s souls were obtained by Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan.

Ever since Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan cooperated, the matter of souls was dealt with by them, he saved a lot of trouble.

They were well-connected locals of Northern Plains, especially Fairy Li Shan, she was the third leader of Snowy Mountain blessed land. She had mountain pledge Gu and had a huge network.

These souls were immediately destroyed on Dang Hun Mountain.

After the vibrations from Dang Hun Mountain, the souls were shattered and turned into countless soul essences that were fused into the mountain.

Not long later, because of these souls, Dang Hun Mountain produced a new batch of guts Gu.

“Normally speaking, the stronger the life form, the higher the quality of the soul. At the same time, the higher the intelligence of the life form, the higher the quality of the soul. This batch of souls is only average. Because inside, there are few fierce beasts, and no desolate beasts, with very few variant human and human souls. The guts Gu generated will not be high in quantity.”

Fang Yuan estimated in his mind as he walked on Dang Hun Mountain.

This batch of souls was not from Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan, but obtained by Fang Yuan.

He was already different from in the past.

He could obtain souls at a stable rate without Fairy Li Shan or taking action by himself personally.

They were obviously not from treasure yellow heaven, but Western Desert.

Western Desert was the place with the greatest trade economy in the five regions, Fang Yuan was no longer a newcomer there, he had worked with Xiao clan of Western Desert for some time, he had obtained their crucial token after gaining their recognition.

Xiao clan was a super force, it was not hard for them to obtain souls.

But if the soul transactions were exposed, Xiao clan would never admit they were involved. The trading of souls could not be done openly, Xiao clan was, after all, a righteous path super force.

Fang Yuan bought souls from Western Desert in order to guard against Hei Lou Lan, Fairy Li Shan, and Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Even though they had set an alliance agreement, that did not mean that Fang Yuan did not need to guard against them anymore.

Fang Yuan knew how to defend himself against others, and he was even more adept at harming others.

Fang Yuan suddenly attempting soul cultivation would definitely lead to the suspicions of Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan. Fang Yuan did not want to leave any clues for them.

When he uses guts Gu to cultivate, it would cause the quantity of guts Gu to fall, to make up for this, he secretly placed souls in and filled the difference.

The typically rare guts Gu could be easily picked up at Fang Yuan’s feet.

Fang Yuan did exactly so.

Once guts Gu left Dang Hun Mountain, they would be destroyed. But using airsac Gu, they could be contained and sold.

After consuming a huge amount of guts Gu, Fang Yuan’s soul reached its limit, if he raised it any further, his soul would collapse.

Fang Yuan felt that his immortal zombie body was feeling quite tight.

It was like an adult man wearing clothes he wore when he was a teenager.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 997: Refining Bo Qing’s Immortal Gu

Actually, the limit of immortal zombie bodies in containing souls was higher than normal living bodies, it was just that they lacked the aspect of nourishing the soul.

Only living bodies could nourish souls. A dead corpse’s soul would continue to wither.

Guts Gu played the most important role in Fang Yuan’s soul being able to last until now. Besides this, he also used some other soul path methods to nourish his soul.

Although Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had brought disaster to the world, it was also because of him that soul path had dominated an era. Countless soul path experts emerged one after the other, innovating large numbers of soul path methods.

Despite going through Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable's era, until now, there are still large numbers of precious soul path methods that were passed down from generation to generation.

“I don't cultivate soul path, soul path Gu Immortals have soul path dao marks which allow the body to hold an even stronger soul.” After he reached the limit, Fang Yuan left Hu Immortal blessed land and moved to Star Form blessed land.

Luo Po valley was placed here.

Fang Yuan entered Luo Po valley.

Luo Po valley had been modified by Shadow Sect and was in a completely different state. But Fang Yuan asked Tai Bai Yun Sheng to restore it, thus Luo Po valley had regained its original environment.

Luo Po valley's terrain was complex like a maze. <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> stated: In the past, Ren Zu had been trapped in the maze, unable to find his way out.

Right now, Fang Yuan imitated Ren Zu and walked inside Luo Po valley.

He directly let his soul leave his body.

A grey-white fog spread out.

This was the famous bewilderment fog.

Fang Yuan's soul was shrouded by the bewilderment fog, gradually diffusing.

After the fog passed, cold wind blew.

This was the famous Luo Po wind.

The cold wind was like a knife as it cut Fang Yuan's soul, inflicting countless injuries. The incomparable pain almost drove Fang Yuan mad. This pain stemmed from the very depths of the soul and was countless times more painful than death by dismemberment!

Fang Yuan roared at the sky, but he lacked a physical body, so he could only produce a piercing screech from his soul.

After enduring for a while, Fang Yuan realized he had once again reached his limit.

He wisely chose to retreat, his soul returning to the immortal zombie body.

With the immortal zombie body's protection, the bewilderment fog and the Luo Po wind's might was immediately reduced by a large extent.

Fang Yuan safely left Luo Po valley.

He inspected his soul.

After going through the bewilderment fog and the destruction by the Luo Po wind, Fang Yuan's soul had shrunk by a large degree and was clearly heavily injured.

If he continued, although it would not be severe to the extent where the soul dissipated, the enslaved featherman Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong might be able to get rid of the enslavement.

The soul was the foundation of enslavement. When the soul is heavily injured, the enslavement would greatly weaken, and the enslaved party could have a chance to free themselves.

“I don’t know how Ren Zu was able to stay for so long in Luo Po valley.”

Fang Yuan gave a moved sigh, returning to Dang Hun Mountain.

He continued to consume guts Gu.

Guts Gu was a mortal Gu, but it was worthy of being a thing of legend. Using it to heal the soul’s injuries would show instant effects.

Soon, the injuries to Fang Yuan’s soul completely recovered!

Fang Yuan once again inspected his soul.

His soul had condensed by at least one-fold! Moreover, his soul was smeared with something like oil that emitted a faint eerie glow.

Checking again, the burden on his soul from enslaving the featherman Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong was reduced by thirty percent.

The inhuman torture and pain Fang Yuan suffered in Luo Po valley was worth it.

It was because his soul’s impurities were extracted in Luo Po valley, like iron that went through endless hammering and smelting before it finally turned to steel! His soul’s quality had been elevated to another stage.

And on Dang Hun Mountain, guts Gu were continuously expended, which strengthened his soul at an unimaginable speed. The quantitative strength of the soul was increasing steadily.

“Luo Po valley refines the soul, Dang Hun Mountain strengthens the soul. Both quantitative and qualitative change are combined, the soul’s foundation advances at a tremendous pace. It is so fast, no wonder in my previous life, after Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan obtained Luo Po valley, they moved back and forth between Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po valley, strengthening their soul foundation. They were cultivating freely!”

Fang Yuan sighed.

He also wanted to imitate Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan, but he still had many things to do. Right now, there was the most important matter he had to deal with, that was Yi Tian Mountain’s battle, and the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

No doubt, the stronger Fang Yuan becomes, the higher his chances of seizing Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage at the crucial time.

Fang Yuan could only try to think of every possibility and make more appropriate arrangements for every task. He had to squeeze out every second of time, making every second count in his cultivation!

Finally, Fang Yuan obtained news of the appearance of the Immortal Gu House, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

“What’s going on? I made so many arrangements near Yi Tian Mountain, but they actually disappeared without alerting me.” Fang Yuan made time in his busy schedule, personally going to Southern Border to inspect.

But he did not discover any worthwhile information.

Like in his previous life, Yi Tian Mountain displayed the ancient battle repeatedly.

In the intense battle, the mysterious Gu Immortal with the red lotus mark on his forehead finally used the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage to suppress the rank eight Gu Immortal with the Great Strength True Martial Physique.

“This Gu Immortal has a red lotus imprint on his forehead, does he have any relation to Red Lotus Demon Venerable? My rebirth had failed, but in the river of time, a red lotus appeared out of nowhere and turned my failure to success, letting me rebirth. Is there some connection between the red lotus in the river of time and this mysterious Gu Immortal?”

Fang Yuan was confused, he could only shake his head and leave.

He still had many matters to arrange.

Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage had appeared, but there was still some time before the battle of Yi Tian Mountain.

At the very least, Fang Yuan needed to remove the aftereffects from enslaving the featherman Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong in this period of time.

Cultivating back and forth on Dang Hun Mountain and in Luo Po valley, Fang Yuan’s soul foundation was rising sharply, while Zhou Zhong’s soul was still at its original stage.

“The burden from enslaving a Gu Immortal has completely disappeared, I can now easily slip into Yi Tian Mountain and secretly refine the Immortal Gu House.”

The body nourishes the soul, while the soul brings about intelligence, producing thoughts, will, emotions, and promoting thought processes.

The increase in his soul foundation would be very beneficial for Fang Yuan in refining the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

“Besides the aspect of the soul, if I can refine Bo Qing’s sword path Immortal Gu, it would be a huge increase to my battle strength. That would be even better!”

He had tried to refine all-out effort Immortal Gu several times now, but had yet to succeed.

At this time, Fang Yuan’s rebirth plan had already reached the final juncture.

He resolutely gave up on refining all-out effort Immortal Gu, not continuing to invest in this sunk cost.

During these last moments, Fang Yuan went all-out in making preparations.

Central Continent.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing left Falling Heavenly River and was slowly rising up.

Under his feet, the surging waves and tides of Falling Heavenly River attacked the shore, engulfing the piled up snow.

Blood had already faded from the water, while countless ferocious beasts living in the river sensed Bo Qing’s aura, and scattered everywhere in panic.

And in the riverbed of Falling Heavenly River, there were corpses of many Gu Immortals, only the rank eight Gu Immortal from Heavenly Cour, Bai Cang Shui, had luckily survived.

“I have lost many Immortal Gu, my battle strength is reduced.” Immortal zombie Bo Qing spoke in a low and deep voice: “What’s our next course of action?”

Right now, standing beside him was the owner of Starry Sky grotto-heaven, Envoy Blue of Shadow Sect, immortal zombie Seven Star Child, as well as the blood path demonic immortal Song Zi Xing, also known as ‘Blood Dragon’, and the hairy man refinement path Gu Immortal Yu Mu Chun.

Somehow, there was a difference in this situation as compared to the previous life.

In the previous life, Seven Star Child and Song Zi Xing had died at Bo Qing’s hands. But now, they were both alive.

Perhaps this was because Fang Yuan had used Mo Yao’s fake will to plunder Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body.

Song Zi Xing and Yu Mu Chun did not speak, letting Seven Star Child speak: “Next, I, Song Zi Xing and Yu Mu Chun will use an immortal killer move to transport the four of us to Central Continent’s north-east region to attack Heavenly Lotus Sect!”

He had already made the arrangements.

In the previous life, Seven Star Child and Song Zi Xing had died, only Yu Mu Chun was left behind, unable to activate this powerful immortal killer move.

But now, it was different.

In Heavenly Court, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was shocked and furious.

He saw the four immortals with immortal zombie Bo Qing at the lead, battling as they headed towards one of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, Heavenly Lotus Sect. He was unable to keep watching from the sidelines.

Because, he, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, was a Gu Immortal formerly from Heavenly Lotus Sect.

In Heavenly Lotus Sect, he had large numbers of disciples and descendants.

Right now, immortal zombie Bo Qing had awakened, Heavenly Lotus Sect was in danger. Only Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals could save them!

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord flew out of Heaven Overseeing Tower, summoning Lian Jiu Sheng and Bi Chen Tian: “An issue has occurred in Falling Heavenly River, Bo Qing revived as an immortal zombie and is attacking Heavenly Lotus Sect. We have to reinforce them now!”

The two immortals were extremely shocked, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s words contained information that was simply too hard to believe.

“Go!”

The two immortals were only stunned momentarily.

Immediately after, they reacted and the three immortals used Heavenly Court’s teleportation Gu formation and appeared at Heavenly Lotus Sect’s base in a moment.

At this moment, Bo Qing and the rest had also just arrived. The remaining radiance of the teleportation immortal killer move on them had yet to dissipate.

Both sides stared at each other, battle intent rising immediately.

“What’s going on?” Heavenly Lotus Sect’s Gu Masters and Gu Immortals were puzzled.

Fight!

A battle of rank eights suddenly erupted...

Central Continent, Hu Immortal blessed land, an underground cave.

“Success!” Fang Yuan looked at the Gu formation in front of him, his eyes shining with joy as well as regret.

Over these last few days, he had used the light of wisdom to continuously ponder and deduce, obtaining a powerful Gu formation to refine Bo Qing’s sword path Immortal Gu.

This Gu formation actually used the light of wisdom as the core, it used Mo Yao’s fake will along with the poison path Immortal Gu, Woman’s Heart, and the wisdom path Immortal Gu, Unravel Mystery, to refine Bo Qing’s Immortal Gu.

“Unfortunately, after using this Gu formation for three days, I could only refine one Immortal Gu. Moreover, I still don’t know what use this Immortal Gu has. I can’t wait any longer, the battle of Yi Tian Mountain has already begun, the earlier I can obtain the Immortal Gu House, the better. Undue delay might bring trouble!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 998: Prematurely Joining Yi Tian Mountain

Southern Border, Yi Tian Mountain.

Fang Yuan walked forward with big steps.

His appearance had changed greatly. Huge bulging muscles, an exposed chest, thick hair over his head, chest, and beard, even along his legs.

His hair was a muddy yellow color, his clothes were very tattered.

His cheekbones were protruding, his fingers and toes all had extraordinarily huge joints.

His nose bridge was short and stumpy, he had huge nostrils that contained thick hair, they were like open taps, gushing out together uncontrollably.

Even though this appearance was ugly and disgusting, it was something that Fang Yuan had picked after careful consideration.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, this person had come to Yi Tian Mountain at this time.

After rebirth, Fang Yuan secretly killed this person.

Taking his place, Fang Yuan arrived at Yi Tian Mountain.

The sun had just risen, there was a thin fog.

The scenery of Yi Tian Mountain was still peaceful, there were birds chirping in the mountain’s forests.

At this time, the righteous and demonic battle had not even started its first wave.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan had disguised himself and joined Yi Tian Mountain, by that time, Yi Tian Mountain was already immersed in heated battles, there were even demonic path guards at the base of the mountain.

But this time, Fang Yuan had arrived here several months early.

At this time, Xiao Shan had just been forced to leave his clan, he, Zhou Xing Xing, and Sun Pang Hu had just created Yi Tian Village.

Fang Yuan did not see any people as he walked.

After getting partway up the mountain, he finally saw a glimpse of Yi Tian Village from the crevices between the dense trees.

Yi Tian Village was still in the process of being built, it was not completed yet.

“Who is this? Which Gu Immortal’s pawn is this?”

“He doesn’t resemble a pure human, he seems to have hairy man blood.”

“Hmph, this guy is a half-breed, would anyone even choose him as a pawn? Hehehe.”

Far away, the Southern Border Gu Immortals discussed the matter of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan walked slowly, confidently and calmly.

In his previous life, he had used vaguely familiar face and was not exposed by these Southern Border Gu Immortals. Now that he was using an immortal killer move with attitude Gu as the core — Familiar Face, it was even more impossible for him to be exposed by them!

He took big steps and went to the mountain peak.

Soon, before he reached Yi Tian Village, someone finally stopped him.

It was a rank three demonic path Gu Master. But Fang Yuan was also disguised as a rank three, so he did not dare to be careless, he asked in a serious tone: “You are?”

Fang Yuan cupped his fists, saying boorishly: “My name is Huang Sha, I heard about Hero Xiao’s matter and came to join you.”

The other rank three demonic path Gu Master’s body shook.

He was not intimidated by the name of ‘Huang Sha’, instead, it was because Fang Yuan was too loud.

“Okay, keep it down, why are you shouting. Since you know about our leader’s reputation, come with me to meet him.” The rank three Gu Master rubbed his ears as he turned around.

Fang Yuan laughed as he quickly chased.

He had a huge body, his steps were huge, he quickly surpassed the Gu Master in front.

The demonic path Gu Master was unhappy, he stretched out his arm, pulling Fang Yuan: “Why are you running so quickly? If you want to join Yi Tian Village, follow the rules, get it? I got here first, so my position is higher than yours! Follow behind me!”

“Oh, oh.” Fang Yuan quickly nodded, pretending that he was all brawn and no brains.

“This structure needs to be built properly. If anyone attacks us next time, we will defend from here. We need to set up at least a hundred iron snake vine Gu.” Xiao Shan pointed at a location and said this to a Gu Master beside him.

At this time, someone shouted: “Leader, your fame spreads throughout Southern Border! Right now, a new warrior has joined us.”

Xiao Shan heard this and was overjoyed, turning around to see Fang Yuan.

The joy in his mind faded a little as he felt disappointment. But at the same time, he showed a look of appreciation on his face.

He quickly went forward, patting Fang Yuan’s shoulders: “What a strong man!”

Fang Yuan laughed and cupped his fists: “You are Hero Xiao? I am here to join you, you are really brave! You dared to oppose those righteous path members!”

Saying so, Fang Yuan raised his thumb at Xiao Shan, saying: “With just this, I am in admiration towards you, I am willing to follow you, but you have to feed me three meals a day.”

Xiao Shan saw that Fang Yuan was boorish and uneducated, the disappointment inside him grew.

But on the surface, he did not show it, he praised Fang Yuan as he arranged a mission for him.

After Fang Yuan left, Xiao Shan called Zhou Xing Xing, asking: “This Huang Sha, what is his background? I am not too clear about it.”

Zhou Xing Xing thought about it and laughed: “Brother, what rank are you, there are so many people in this world, how can such a minor character attract your attention? I know this person, his father is human and his mother is a female hairy man, he was born as a slave collecting sand rocks on sand mountain. In the end, on sand mountain, he obtained an inheritance by chance and became a Gu Master. Next, he and a water path Gu Master occupied a territory, calling themselves the ‘Bai Sha Twin Generals’. Afterwards, they were defeated by Tie clan Gu Masters, Bai Jiang died while Huang Sha escaped, with his whereabouts unknown. To think that he came here after hearing brother’s name.”

“So that’s it, I remember now, there was once a time when there was news about the ‘Bai Sha Twin Generals’ assaulting Tie clan’s merchant ships.” Xiao Shan nodded, his expectations towards Fang Yuan fell to rock bottom.

He even dared to touch Tie clan’s ships, this showed that the Bai Sha Twin Generals were rash and boorish, they did not use their brains.

Furthermore, this Huang Sha even had hairy man blood, this made Xiao Shan look down on him more.

Hairy men, feathermen, snowmen, and other variant humans were all the slaves of humans, why would human Gu Masters treat them as equals?

If Fang Yuan had rank four or five cultivation, Xiao Shan might have placed great emphasis on him and disregarded that point. But Fang Yuan was disguised as Huang Sha, who was only rank three.

Even though rank three was higher than the average Gu Master.

But in Yi Tian Village, it was not eye-catching.

Very soon, Xiao Shan forgot about this Huang Sha.

Fang Yuan was at a worksite.

“Now, I have joined Yi Tian Mountain, and was sent by Xiao Shan to help in the building of the village, it shows that this person is not placing attention on me. Good, this is my motive after all. Everything has been very successful so far.”

If Fang Yuan had higher cultivation level, he would be given a major role by Xiao Shan, in the following righteous demonic battle, he would definitely be kept busy. If he did not go for the missions, he would expose himself, but if he went, he would be wasting time.

If his cultivation level was lower, he would be cannon fodder, sent to the front lines to attract the enemy’s firepower and waste their primeval essence. After some battles, he would be sacrificed.

Only with rank three cultivation level, it was neither high nor low, he could be the leader of a small group.

He would not be given important missions, and if he survived in the battlefield, nobody would find it strange.

Yi Tian Mountain’s forbidden zone only targeted immortal apertures, it did not affect Immortal Gu.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan had deduced a method on how to seal immortal apertures. But now, he had this method prepared in advance, he could join Yi Tian Village a few months earlier.

Even though his immortal aperture was sealed, his body was still an immortal zombie body.

During the day, he worked at the sites and easily did physical labor. At night, when everyone was asleep, he would be awake and refining Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage secretly.

Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage was suppressing the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie, not allowing any freedom.

This rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie had no signs of life at all. It seemed like its soul had completely dissipated.

But Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories, he did not dare to be careless.

He did not probe the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie, he placed his efforts on refining the battle will.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals engaging in this gambling contest were trying to refine the battle will into their own, they needed these mortal Gu Master pawns to engage in fierce combat to create their own battle will and resonate with the Immortal Gu House. They would then convert the pure battle will in the Immortal Gu House into their personal battle will.

But Fang Yuan came in person, and was also a wisdom path grandmaster, he did not need to do so.

Even if he did not fight fiercely, he could increase the battle will in his mind and convert the Immortal Gu House’s battle will, his efficiency was many times that of ordinary Gu Immortals.

If someone turned all the battle will in the Immortal Gu House into their own battle will, they would complete the unfinished last step of the rank eight immortal zombie, that is, refining the Immortal Gu House and becoming the true owner of the Immortal Gu House!

Thus, there was a key point needed for Fang Yuan to snatch Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage from these Southern Border Gu Immortals.

At the final period of time, the Immortal Gu House’s pure battle will would be completely refined by everyone.

But there can only be one winner.

Thus, these battle wills had to engage in combat and undergo a terrifying battle.

In this battle, any loser would vanish, there would only be one winner.

“I am a wisdom path grandmaster, I have a huge advantage in a fight between battle wills. Furthermore, I am going to take the lead and refine battle will at many times the speed of others. The more battle will I convert, the bigger my advantage during the battle will contest. As long as I follow my plan, it is assured that I would obtain the Immortal Gu House! But there might be unexpected surprises...”

While Fang Yuan was pondering, the other Southern Border Gu Immortals were also harboring their own intentions.

Xiao clan’s supreme elder was paying close attention to the developments on Yi Tian Mountain.

He had barely survived his last tribulation. The next one was approaching, he had lost all hope initially, but the appearance of the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage gave this Gu Immortal see the light of hope within the darkness.

Thus, in this unprecedented gambling contest, he went all in on his bets.

Almost all of his wealth was invested into it.

His stake was the highest among the immortals, according to the rules, one of his pawns — Xiao Shan, became the first Gu Master to ascend Yi Tian Mountain.

Xiao clan’s supreme elder also became the first Gu Immortal in Southern Border to start refining battle will in the Immortal Gu House.

“I must succeed in obtaining the Immortal Gu House, I cannot fail!”

“Without this Immortal Gu House, in the following tribulation, I will definitely die.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 999: Chess Piece, Chess Player

“But looking at it now, I have made a good start. I have converted the highest amount of battle will. As long as I maintain this advantage, the Immortal Gu House is mine.”

Xiao clan’s supreme elder spurred himself on secretly, but he was also aware internally: the biggest difficulty was in maintaining his current advantage.

According to the rules, the second to take the stage was the pawn of a Wu clan Gu Immortal, Wu Dang Zhi.

This female immortal from Wu clan was an insightful character. She chose someone with lower cultivation level, as the cost of entering Yi Tian Mountain earlier.

“Hopefully, Xiao Shan does not disappoint me later.”

Xiao clan’s supreme elder’s wish was something that the other Southern Border Gu Immortals were unwilling to see happen.

Right now, Xiao clan’s ancestor had created a huge advantage, the Southern Border Gu Immortals wanted to see Xiao Shan defeated or even killed, so that the advantage of Xiao clan’s ancestor would be gone, and they would have an opportunity.

Wu Shen Tong arrived near Yi Tian Mountain.

“Everyone, I bear a mission of utmost importance to the clan. To exterminate evil, we will pay any cost!” He pointed at Yi Tian Mountain, his expression was stern as his intent to fight surged, along with his battle will.

Around him were many Gu Masters.

Among them, those with the highest cultivation were three rank four Gu Masters.

One was a Wu clan elder, guarding Wu Shen Tong. The other two were clan leaders of villages that were subordinates of Wu clan.

Wu Shen Tong was a rank four peak stage enslavement path Gu Master, he was thin and had a pale face, he coughed from time to time, like a sickly scholar, he could not even stand in the cold winds for long.

But nobody dared to look down on him, because he cultivated enslavement path. This path allowed him to fight many people singlehandedly.

“On Yi Tian Mountain, the strongest person is Xiao clan’s former leader Xiao Shan. Below him are Sun Pang Hu and Zhou Xing Xing, two demonic path Gu Masters. These three are all rank five Gu Masters. In my opinion, we should act slowly, inviting more righteous path members to join us, this will make the battle more assured, and we can prevent these demons from escaping as well.” A rank four clan leader suggested.

Wu Shen Tong’s expression turned grim, he wanted to do this too, but this mission was a forced mission by the clan, they had given him a certain timing. It was so strict and rushed, Wu Shen Tong could not help but suspect that he had become a sacrifice in a political conflict of his clan.

He exerted all of his effort and used his network to recruit all of these people around him.

Wu Shen Tong would not understand the truth of Yi Tian Mountain even after death. All these high and mighty Gu Masters were all merely the tools of the Gu Immortals’ gambling contest. He certainly did not know, at this point in time, how many Southern Border Gu Immortals were placing their attention on him.

“You do not need to say anymore. As long as everyone protects me, even if they have rank five battle strength, how long can they last against the beasts? Once their primeval essence is expended, the accomplishment of killing a rank five will be all yours. Furthermore, I am going personally, I have some confidence of course, why would I send myself to die?”

Wu Shen Tong was a skilled person, with just a few words, he dispelled everyone’s suspicions and raised the group’s morale.

They moved quickly, they were trying a sneak attack.

A moment later, the mountain was covered in beast groups, under Wu Shen Tong’s manipulation, they charged towards Yi Tian Mountain.

Right now, Yi Tian Village was still being built.

The demonic path Gu Masters were all in chaos, they were used to fighting alone, even though Xiao Shan was trying to group his men together and organize them, there was little effect in the short term.

Xiao Shan was extremely anxious, he thought: “Yi Tian Village has just been built, we are only partway through completion. This is my first fight against the righteous path, Yi Tian Village is like a banner, it cannot fall! Once it falls, our morale will suffer, it is like a heavy blow that will make us falter forever. Losing our reputation, who would come here and join me?”

Thinking of this, Xiao Shan immediately ordered the demonic path Gu Masters to defend Yi Tian Village with their lives.

Xiao Shan’s thoughts were very precise, but he greatly overestimated the ability of the demonic path Gu Masters to cooperate.

If demonic path Gu Masters fought righteous path Gu Masters one on one, they usually won more than they lost. But when there were many people, if they had even numbers, the righteous path usually won.

Without any cooperation, the demonic path Gu Masters were just a mob.

Against the huge beast groups, they did not place priority on defending the strategic points, this was what Wu Shen Tong most wanted to see.

Initially, large numbers of wild beasts died from the demonic path Gu Masters’ attacks.

But soon, the demonic path Gu Masters' attacks became more sparse. After all, mortal Gu Masters had limited primeval essence.

The wild beasts charged past the attacks of the demonic path Gu Masters and assaulted them.

The demonic path Gu Masters suffered heavier and heavier losses, the battle was tilting in favor of the righteous path.

“Good.”

“Great...”

The Southern Border Gu Immortals watched the battle as they showed expressions of joy.

Xiao clan's ancestor had a dark expression, he stared at Xiao Shan fixedly.

Xiao Shan was an veteran of the battlefield, he knew that the situation could not go on, he shouted: “Rank four and five experts, come with me and kill the enslavement path Gu Master! Everyone else, retreat while you battle.”

In the current situation, the demonic path was suffering terrible losses. Meanwhile, although the righteous path was few in numbers, they did not lose anyone.

Everyone knew that fighting alone would not result in a good ending. Only by relying on one another and carving out a path of blood could they survive.

Xiao Shan's words received quick response.

The rank four and five Gu Masters were all secretly joyful and gathered around Xiao Shan. The remaining rank two and three Gu Masters, however, all had pale expressions.

The people who charged out were strong, no matter what, if they managed to get out of the encirclement, they could escape alone.

But the Gu Masters who stayed back were surrounded by beast groups, there was nowhere they could go, they could only await reinforcements.

Only Fang Yuan, despite having an anxious and ferocious expression, had peace of mind.

Even if the beast groups expanded by a hundred times, they were no threat to him. Furthermore, he had the knowledge of his previous life, he knew what was going to happen.

As expected, the following developments were almost the same as in his previous life.

In this sudden fight, the demonic path Gu Masters fought against the waves of beast groups and moved forward, causing many Gu Masters to die along the way.

But eventually, they managed to get to Wu Shen Tong.

Xiao Shan, Sun Pang Hu, and Zhou Xing Xing were rank five Gu Masters, they were forced into a desperate situation, they had to attack the righteous path.

After an intense battle, two rank four Gu Masters from the righteous path died, while Wu Shen Tong retreated with heavy injuries.

The other rank four elder from Wu clan blocked them desperately, at the crucial moment, a group of flying birds came and saved Wu Shen Tong from the demonic path’s objective of killing him.

They had no choice but to return to Yi Tian Mountain.

That night, Xiao Shan gathered the remaining demonic path members in a certain cave.

He was bathed in blood, his eyes were bloodshot as he called out in a hoarse voice: “Wu Shen Tong is not dead yet, he is truly a threat. As long as he is alive, we will face the threat of an unceasing tide of beasts. We need to kill him, otherwise, Yi Tian Village will never be built.”

Xiao Shan had just finished his words, but there was little response.

The demonic path Gu Masters had suffered a loss, their morale was low.

Among them, a rank three Gu Master said dejectedly: “Leader, we should retreat. The righteous path is very powerful, it is normal that we cannot win. But we can always fight back another day. We should leave this dangerous place and find another mountain to rebuild Yi Tian Village, that is possible too.”

As he said that, a sharp light flashed in Xiao Shan’s eyes as he stood up and attacked.

He raised his saber and killed the demonic path Gu Master on the spot, shouting: “This person is trying to shake our spirit, he deserves death! If anyone dares to request to retreat, you will end up like him!”

Sun Pang Hu and Zhou Xing Xing immediately stood up, walking to either side of Xiao Shan, with wary expressions towards everyone.

The Gu Masters were all stunned by Xiao Shan’s demeanor, they quickly spoke and agreed to battle to the death.

Xiao Shan’s expression relaxed: “I know that everyone is having a hard time, there are injuries. But no injury can compare to our brothers who have sacrificed themselves today, right? Everyone, rest in this cave today, tomorrow, we will gather our forces and fight on the path to killing Wu Shen Tong, we will not rest until he is dead!”

Everyone quickly responded, Fang Yuan was among them, his wounds were still bleeding, but of course, it was a disguise.

The night sky grew darker, the mountain cave was not big, there was not much space for the demonic path Gu Masters to sleep.

This was a cave that Xiao Shan specially chose, it was easy for them to monitor each other. If they needed to use the toilet, they had to do it in the cave.

Soon, the cave was filled with the disgusting smell of blood, sweat, urine and feces mixed together.

The demonic path Gu Masters were tossing and turning, thinking about the desperate battle tomorrow, they could not sleep.

Only one person was sleeping soundly, it was Fang Yuan.

His snoring could be heard in the entire cave.

Xiao Shan was shutting his eyes and resting, hearing this sound, he opened his eyes and saw Fang Yuan, he smiled lightly and said loudly: “This guy has no worries.”

His voice attracted everyone’s attention.

Xiao Shan continued: “Don’t worry everyone, I have complete confidence in tomorrow’s battle! That Wu Shen Tong has already been severely injured, he is definitely going to die tomorrow. I, Xiao Shan, swear that I will not run away, if I go against my word, may heaven bring judgment upon me, and may the world shake in anger!”

The demons were inspired, they were in admiration towards Xiao Shan’s enthusiasm and aspiration.

But they did not know that Xiao Shan was trying to subdue the Immortal Gu in his body, and obtain the acknowledgment of Xiao clan’s ancestor. Unless he had no choice, he would never retreat from here.

Xiao Shan thought of these demonic path Gu Masters in the cave as his chess pieces.

In contrast, he was a chess piece of Xiao clan’s ancestor, but he did not know.

On this night, the chess player, Xiao clan’s ancestor, was also feeling anxious and worried.

After the fight today at Yi Tian Mountain, he had left his place of residence, arriving at a mountain peak. He stood for a long time under the winds of the mountain.

“Master, Xiao clan’s ancestor has requested to meet you, but you have not agreed to it. He is a rank seven Gu Immortal, he has already been outside for two hours. Won’t it be bad if we continue dragging it on?” Lu Zuan Feng asked carefully and softly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1000: Changes Beyond Expectations

His master, rank seven lone cultivator Old Man Yue Xia, was sitting cross-legged on a mat. He remained unmoved and had his eyes closed, even after hearing Lu Zuan Feng’s words.

After a long while, Xiao clan’s ancestor spoke again from outside the cave: “Brother Yue Xia, I am willing to add in ten heavenly dragon pearls, please help me.”

Old Man Yue Xia slowly opened his eyes and said to Lu Zuan Feng: “Disciple, go to Yi Tian Mountain and solve this crisis for Xiao Shan.”

Lu Zuan Feng hurriedly knelt down and kowtowed three times to Old Man Yue Xia.

“Master, this disciple shall leave.”

Although he said this, Lu Zuan Feng was still kneeling down on the ground, and did not show any signs of getting up.

Old Man Yue Xia smiled: “Your crafty nature, I can see right through it.”

He then blew cold air towards Lu Zuan Feng.

The cold air seeped into Lu Zuan Feng’s belly, and lingered there without dispersing.

“This Immortal Gu can protect you. Go now.”

Lu Zuan Feng was joyous, kowtowing three more times before getting up and cheekily speaking: “I was actually thinking in the interests of master. As a disciple, losing my life is not important, but then master would have no one to serve him, what to do then? Master has shown me great benevolence, I still haven’t returned it, so how could I die so easily?”

“Go now, go.” Old Man Yue Xia sighed, repeatedly waving his hand at Lu Zuan Feng.

Wu Shen Tong led the beast group to attack Yi Tian Mountain, Yi Tian Village, which only had its foundations constructed, was destroyed.

The demonic side’s morale fell sharply, Xiao Shan was determined to fight back to the death.

But on that very evening, the rank five Gu Master Lu Zuan Feng infiltrated the righteous path’s camp and assassinated Wu Shen Tong, bringing his head back to Yi Tian Mountain.

Xiao Shan was ecstatic, saying to Lu Zuan Feng: “Brother Lu is magnanimous, thanks to brother Lu, all of us were saved.”

Lu Zuan Feng was a quick-witted person, immediately cupping his fists, replying in a cordial manner: “Brother Xiao exaggerates, I only took advantage of an opportunity. If not for brother Xiao and the other comrades fighting with all you have and inflicting heavy injuries to Wu Shen Tong, how could I have easily taken his life? Out of the total contribution, I can only account for ten percent, and the other ninety would go to everyone here.”

When they heard such words, everyone immediately had a much better impression of Lu Zuan Feng.

Xiao Shan’s heart sank, he was not able to ruin Lu Zuan Feng’s fame by overpraising him, so he quickly changed his words to stabilize and pull Lu Zuan Feng to Yi Tian Village.

Like this, the righteous path’s first wave of offense collapsed under the attacks of Xiao Shan, Lu Zuan Feng and the rest.

Fang Yuan was staying on the sidelines, not caring any less about this situation, viewing it coldly with the stance of a bystander and not provoking any doubts.

He thought of the information gathered during his previous life.

“It seems in this life as well, due to Wu Shen Tong being heavily injured and Xiao Shan’s situation being critical, Xiao clan’s ancestor sought Old Man Yue Xia’s help.”

“This Old Man Yue Xia is a well-known lone immortal of Southern Border, with some friction against Wu clan. And with Xiao clan’s ancestor giving him heavy payment, he was able to increase his wager, letting Lu Zuan Feng enter Yi Tian Mountain early on. And the female immortal from Wu clan, Wu Dang Zhi, had lost her chess piece because of this scheme, although she had refined much of the battle will, her loss was the greatest.”

“Righteous and demonic paths are fighting on Yi Tian Mountain, but the masterminds are the Southern Border Gu Immortals behind them. Mortals are like ants...”

“Let them continue scheming against each other, after this battle, the amount of battle will I have refined has already surpassed Xiao Shan, becoming the highest!”

Like this, Fang Yuan was silently earning a fortune, the battle will he refined secretly continued to grow, but no one noticed.

Time passed, the second wave of the righteous and demonic battle erupted.

After the first wave of offense, in which Wu Dang Zhi suffered a loss, she was still unreconciled.

Old Man Yue Xia had increased his wager, how could she not do that as well?

Therefore, she chose another person and allied with a Shang clan Gu Immortal, not repeating the previous mistake of fighting alone.

At the battlefield on Yi Tian Mountain, Wu clan’s Gu Masters attacked Yi Tian Mountain, at the same time during this attack, Shang clan’s two newly advanced elders, Yan Tu and Ju Kai Bei, also joined.

Both sides fought at the base of Yi Tian Mountain, having some wins and losses on either side, they were in a deadlock.

This time, Lan Mei He and Fei You Wang ascended the mountain, joining Yi Tian Village.

These two Gu Masters were not simple, they were famous flying masters in the world of Southern Border’s Gu Masters!

Yi Tian Village thus had the upper hand, and the righteous path members were forced back.

To resist Lan Mei He and Fei You Wang, the righteous path invited a female Gu Master, Hong Fei Yu, she was also a flying master, but belonged to the righteous path.

But Hong Fei Yu alone could not resist the combination of two flying masters of the demonic path.

Hong Fei Yu was at the moment between life and death, when Shang clan’s reinforcements rushed and arrived, it was the White Light Swordsman Wei Yang.

Wei Yang had been nurtured by Shang Yan Fei and had his aptitude raised, his cultivation level was at rank four initial stage. Not only did he save Hong Fei Yu, he even gained much fame.

After Hong Fei Yu was heavily injured and retreated, he fought against both Lan Mei He and Fei You Wang, eventually managing to stall for enough time until more reinforcements from the righteous path came, as Lan Mei He and Fei You Wang were forced to retreat.

After this battle, Wei Yang was acknowledged by both the righteous and demonic paths, joining the ranks of the flying masters. Southern Border’s three famous flying masters became four famous flying masters, with Wei Yang at the top.

With Wei Yang’s addition, the righteous and demonic battle entered another deadlock once again.

However, as Second Zombie King entered Yi Tian Mountain, enslavement path showed its might again, the righteous path lacked Wu Shen Tong and had no choice but to fall back.

Thereupon, the second righteous and demonic fight came to an end.

Behind the scenes of this were the Southern Border Gu Immortals plotting and conspiring, naturally the mortal Gu Masters could not imagine it.

The only one who was in the know on Yi Tian Mountain, Fang Yuan, was secretly earning a fortune, disregarding all of this.

With Huang Sha’s identity, he had gone on the battlefield and had encountered Wei Yang face to face.

This expert under Shang Yan Fei had once taken great care of Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing when they were in Shang clan city. Right now, Wei Yang’s growth was large, Fang Yuan, however, was already an immortal, it could be said that times had changed.

After this battle, Fang Yuan was already way ahead in the amount of battle will refined. The lead was so huge that even if all the Southern Border Gu Immortals added up their refined battle wills, it would still be slightly less than Fang Yuan’s.

Central Continent, Heavenly Lotus Sect.

Rumble...

Explosions resounded without an end.

All the surroundings within an enormous area had turned into a desolate land, sand rolling and covering the sky.

In the desolate land were many deep craters, some burned with fire, some had piles of ice, some was still letting out rumblings of thunder, a river of blood flowed wantonly in this battlefield.

Because of the battle between rank eights, the original mountainous terrain had completely changed.

This was the location of Heavenly Lotus Sect, and also home to famous mountains and rivers, possessing profound natural dao marks. Otherwise, the landscape would be even more severely ruined.

After a round of battle stopped, with Sword Immortal Bo Qing at the lead, Shadow Sect’s group retreated by some distance, panting roughly.

In front of them were three Immortal Gu Houses hovering in the air.

One was Canary Pavilion, which was delicate and exquisite. Another was Yue Yang Palace which shined with brilliant radiance.

However, the gazes of Shadow Sect’s group were focused on the central Immortal Gu House.

This Immortal Gu House was rank eight, named Heavenly Pool!

Looking from the outside, this was a pool with a small area, it could even be said to be among the world’s smallest Immortal Gu Houses!

But this Heavenly Pool was filled with green lotuses, some were in full bloom while some were closed.

However, in every lotus was a blessed land or grotto-heaven!

The rank eight Immortal Gu House, Heavenly Pool, was the base of Heavenly Lotus Sect, created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, its greatest use was to store immortal apertures!

“If we can’t take down Heavenly Pool, these losses to Heavenly Lotus Sect can’t even be considered to be harming them.” Song Zi Xing said heavily.

“But it is too difficult to take down. Among the ten venerables, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable was most specialized in healing and recovery. This Heavenly Pool has inherited his style to an exaggerated degree, if it is not broken apart in one attack, it can recover any severe losses in a short period of time.” Yu Mu Chun was solemn.

Immortal zombie Seven Star Child shook his head: “Not only Heavenly Pool, the other two Immortal Gu Houses are also very difficult to handle. And Bo Qing’s greatest weakness is already known and being used by them.”

Immortal zombie Bo Qing’s greatest weakness was Mo Yao’s remnant soul.

This remnant soul was the biggest shortcoming, its greatest flaw was that it was very easy to target.

In the previous life, Bo Qing had died and the soul inside was destroyed by Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals. This life, immortal zombie Bo Qing had even lost wisdom sword Gu, which had been a trump card against wisdom path methods when he was alive.

After losing this Gu, immortal zombie Bo Qing had to be even more cautious when fighting and was extremely passive.

“Let’s go! We have already achieved our goal of delaying them.” Immortal zombie Seven Star Child retreated first, his body turning into a rainbow light, quickly flying far away.

Bo Qing and the rest also followed closely behind.

“Escaping the judgment of fate and attacking one of the ten great ancient sects, such audacity, this is unpardonable! And you still want to leave?” Heavenly Lotus Sect’s three Immortal Gu Houses chased after them.

From within Heavenly Pool came Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s furious voice.

Seven Star Child’s expression changed slightly, saying to the other Gu Immortals: “In the current situation, someone has to bring up the rear and hold them off until the others can escape.”

“I will do it.” Immortal zombie Bo Qing immediately spoke.

“It is better if I do it. Azure, Blue and Song Zi Xing, you all have higher battle strength than me, you will be a lot more helpful to our crucial plan.” Yu Mu Chun had an indifferent expression while he volunteered to stay behind.

The other three immortals’ gazes flashed, and they quickly retreated without hesitation, leaving behind Yu Mu Chun to cover their retreat.

“Overestimating your ability!”

“Hehe, demonic path people specialize in treachery.”

“You think you can stop us, what gives you such blind confidence?”

The righteous path immortals angrily called out one after the other, the three Immortal Gu Houses nearing.

Yu Mu Chun looked at the approaching death calmly and with a smile: “You think we haven’t made any arrangements?”

Saying this, he fell to the ground, an enormous Gu formation gave a brilliant flash of light that reached to the sky.

The information about this battle was simply unable to be concealed by Central Continent. After Fang Yuan learned of the news, his gaze flickered, this event was already very different from his previous life, immortal zombie Bo Qing was still alive!

As such, he would naturally hold animosity against Fang Yuan, who had stolen his Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan sent his consciousness inside his sealed immortal aperture, in there was a mysterious Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu was one of the harvests Fang Yuan had reaped from Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body. But in fact, this Immortal Gu’s original owner was not Bo Qing but Mo Yao.

Because this Immortal Gu’s body was filled with Mo Yao’s will, Fang Yuan was able to quickly refine this Immortal Gu using Mo Yao’s fake will.

As for the other sword path Immortal Gu, their true owner was Bo Qing, with large amounts of his will in them. So when Fang Yuan used the same Gu formation, it would take a lot more time to refine these Immortal Gu.

“I can forget about these sword path Immortal Gu for now, they definitely cannot be used in this battle. As for this mysterious Immortal Gu, I have tried to inspect it over these last days, but unfortunately I did not gain anything even from Lang Ya land spirit’s end.”

“At present, the sixth wave of offense between righteous and demonic has already passed. The scale of my battle will in the Immortal Gu House probably is already over thirty times the total amount of the battle will of the Southern Border Gu Immortals. If I battle with them at this time, within less than fifteen minutes, I can clear out all their battle will.”

There were probably many among the Southern Border Gu Immortals who had wisdom path attainment.

But so what?

Not to mention Fang Yuan’s wisdom path grandmaster level, just based on the scale of the battle will, he already occupied absolute dominance.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals already had no chance of victory.

It could be said that these Gu Immortals were already of no concern, but Fang Yuan was still filled with worry: “I have refined it for so long, but there is actually still pure battle will remaining in the Immortal Gu House. I wonder what quantity are there exactly? Can I make it in time?”

Fang Yuan looked up at the sky.

The night was dark and hazy.

Fang Yuan felt somewhat stifled.

The amount of pure battle will in Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage had greatly surpassed Fang Yuan’s expectations.

His original plan was to get this Immortal Gu House earlier on and leave freely. But now, it had already dragged on until this day, when would he finish?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1001: Taking Control of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage

Time passed quickly, a month went by.

In Southern Border, be it the Gu Immortal world or the mortal world, their focus was all on one place.

This place was Yi Tian Mountain.

Under the influence of Gu Immortals adding fuel to the fire, countless righteous path and demonic path Gu Masters set off to join the two sides.

The seventh righteous and demonic fight had concluded.

The demonic path members schemed and cut off the righteous path’s supply lines.

At the moment of crisis, Shang clan leader Shang Yan Fei personally arrived with his forces, and used gourmet food box Gu, providing a feast for the army, foiling the demonic path’s scheme.

Next, the clan leaders of Southern Border’s super forces like Yi clan, Luo clan, Yao clan and Xia clan also showed themselves, joining the battlefield.

In this battlefield, rank three Gu Masters were all cannon fodder, the normally uncommon rank four Gu Masters were everywhere, and rank five Gu Masters were the most important battle power.

Life and death blessed land.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s dream realm had completely dissipated.

Light in the seven colors of the rainbow shined brightly, turning into a cocoon.

Crack...

Some cracking sounds came from the cocoon of light.

As time passed, more and more cracks appeared on the cocoon.

Old Man Yan Shi had a tired and haggard face, but his gaze showed that he was extremely overjoyed.

As he watched with expectations, the cocoon of light finally exploded, as a young man appeared in front of Old Man Yan Shi, completely naked and bare.

He floated in the air, his eyes were shut, as if he was sleeping.

Old Man Yan Shi quickly moved forward, using his hands to caress the young man's body, from his thigh to his chest, and then to his face.

Old Man Yan Shi could barely hold in his excitement, his fingers that were touching the face were shaking.

He muttered: "Success! I actually succeeded! I replicated Ren Zu's methods and used a dream realm to create a completely new extreme physique."

"This is a historical moment! Hahaha..."

Old Man Yan Shi laughed loudly for a while, before stopping: "You were born from a dream realm, created from nothingness. Since I used the rule path become real Immortal Gu, I will name this, 'Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique'."

Saying this, Old Man Yan Shi moved his hand and took out a lump of soul.

This lump of soul was dark like ink, it immediately flew into the body with the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique.

Old Man Yan Shi waited for a moment, but he saw no movement from the body, his frown was getting deeper.

"What's going on? Why is he not waking up? This shouldn't be the case?"

He quickly inspected, a moment later, he sighed: "It seems that this body with the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique is truly flawed. The dream path dao marks are very high in quantity, they gained a type of power in the body. Any soul that enters it will fall asleep and lose their memories continuously."

"What should I do?" Old Man Yan Shi paced around, feeling anxious: "The lifespan of the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body has already started to decrease. Time is limited, I cannot do any detailed research now to solve this problem. What should I do?"

After a long time, the body with the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique slowly opened his mouth, finally awakening.

He was childlike and unlearned, looking at Old Man Yan Shi, then looking around the place, his eyes were wide open and showed a naive expression.

Old Man Yan Shi felt some regret, he tried all sorts of ways and finally awakened the soul within the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body, solving the problem of the sleeping soul. But almost all the memories in the soul were lost.

"But it doesn't matter. The Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique is a consumable rank nine battle strength, he is the greatest trump card to defend our core. As long as our plan succeeds, so what if the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique has a flaw?"

Thinking of this, Old Man Yan Shi smiled as he sized him up with his black eyes, his tone hardly concealing his happiness: "Good, good, good. Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, you are the greatest accomplishment of my dream path research! Many of Bo Qing's Immortal Gu were robbed and his battle strength has fallen. You will replace him, becoming our greatest strength in suppressing the situation.”

“Who are you, who am I?” Ying Wu Xie curiously asked.

“I am you, and you are me. I am Old Man Yan Shi, and you... shall be called Ying Wu Xie.” Old Man Yan Shi chuckled.

He then lightly waved his arm, countless thoughts were transferred into Ying Wu Xie’s mind.

Ying Wu Xie felt a wave of information entering his mind.

Old Man Yan Shi said: “Remember, you only have eighteen hours of lifespan. Every two hours, your cultivation level will rise by one rank. Time is limited, I can only impart an immortal killer move to you. Although it doesn’t have any killing power, it is the pinnacle of dream path achievement currently in the five regions, at the forefront of this era. Even those Heavenly Court Gu Immortals are far behind. As the saying goes: ‘When you have the skill, you can eat your fill’! Learn it properly, when you become a Gu Immortal, I will give you a complete set of Gu worms for you to speed up your practice at that time!”

Southern Border, Yi Tian Mountain.

Fang Yuan, who was recuperating on his bed, shook as he opened his eyes suddenly.

In his eyes, joy flashed across slightly before they went back to being emotionless.

Around him, there were many injured members lying down and talking. Some healing Gu Masters were moving the injured members around, some were healing, while others were checking if injuries of patients were becoming worse.

The air was filled with a bloody smell, it lingered in the nose and did not fade.

After the seventh righteous demonic battle, Yi Tian Village’s medical ward was full of injured people. Right now, both sides were recuperating, healing from their losses and regaining their strength.

Thus, the number of members in the medical ward was decreasing.

Most of them were healed and left. Some could not be treated and died here.

People were happy to live and hated to die, this medical ward became a place avoided by the demonic path Gu Masters.

But Fang Yuan did not mind it.

He pretended to be wounded and severely injured. Familiar face could deceive rank eight Gu Immortals, not to mention these mortal Gu Masters on Yi Tian Mountain.

Fang Yuan found that this was the place which was most suitable to refine the Immortal Gu House’s battle will.

Only here could he lay back, openly and calmly refining battle will almost unceasingly.

Even though there were many people moving around, none of them could threaten a Gu Immortal like Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s strategy finally paid off earlier.

“After spending so much time, I have finally finished converting Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage’s battle will. Now, I have to get rid of the other Gu Immortals’ battle will and become its owner!”

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, he did not hesitate, he took action immediately.

Inside the Immortal Gu House, his battle will whipped up a storm, engulfing other battle wills easily.

The battle wills of these Southern Border Gu Immortals were all operating independently and caught unprepared, they could not react before they were all wiped out by Fang Yuan.

At once, Fang Yuan caused a huge commotion.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals were furious and shocked, some screamed while others flew out, some were staring blankly from disbelief!

They communicated and realized that someone did not participate in the gambling contest, they secretly refined battle will and fooled all of the Southern Border Gu Immortals.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals felt immense anger and hatred, a sea would not be able to douse their fury.

All of their hard work had been for nothing.

They had been scheming against others, but now, it was all like a joke!

“Who is it? You dared to toy with us!”

“Find them and kill them! They have openly challenged our Southern Border Gu Immortal world!!”

“Not only will I kill them, I will tear their skin and pull out their tendons, I will extract their soul and torture them for a thousand years!”

The Southern Border Gu Immortals had surging auras as they encircled Yi Tian Mountain.

They could no longer bother with hiding their traces, countless auras burst into the sky, engulfing the entirety of Yi Tian Mountain.

The righteous and demonic path Gu Masters were stunned.

“What, what, what is going on?”

“Immortals, are they immortals?!”

“Such strong auras, they must be the legendary Gu Immortals. To think that I could have an opportunity to meet them in my life.”

“So many immortals, is this the plot of the righteous (demonic) path?”

The two factions of Gu Masters fell into chaos, a commotion ensued in their corresponding groups.

“It is useless, this is the forbidden zone, none of you have the immortal aperture sealing method, how can you come in?” Fang Yuan snickered in his mind.

But on the surface, he showed a fearful expression, similar to everyone around him.

This was a crucial moment, Fang Yuan would, of course, not be careless.

The forbidden zone could prevent Gu Immortals from entering, but it only targeted the immortal aperture, not their Immortal Gu. This meant that Gu Immortals could attack Yi Tian Mountain from afar.

“Who is it? Come out!”

“You have the guts to steal from us, but no guts to admit it?”

The Gu Immortals were furious and anxious, they screamed like the rumbling of thunder, shaking the world.

Even Yi Tian Mountain was shaking under their voices, not to mention the mortal Gu Masters. Including the rank five Gu Masters, all of them had pale expressions and were shivering in fear.

Fang Yuan concealed himself and did not expose any flaws.

After getting rid of the other battle wills, he manipulated the battle will and started to take over Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

This process needed some time.

But Fang Yuan was not worried about the Southern Border Gu Immortals attacking without any reservations.

For righteous path Gu Immortals, they needed to defend their reputations, they would not conduct a massacre here. For demonic path Gu Immortals, some had placed their Immortal Gu with their mortal pawns, similar to how Xiao clan’s ancestor had left Immortal Gu on Xiao Shan.

Immortal Gu were very fragile, Fang Yuan’s Spring Autumn Cicada could be crushed by a child.

If they attacked without holding back, these Immortal Gu would likely be destroyed.

As for some lone immortals like Old Man Yue Xia, his treasured disciple Lu Zuan Feng was on Yi Tian Mountain, how could he attack?

More and more Gu worms came under Fang Yuan’s control.

Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage’s secret was finally exposed to Fang Yuan.

“So this Immortal Gu House is a time path Immortal Gu House, it uses the power of time path to seal any attacks aimed at it, before sending them back! An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth, this is an incredible idea!”

Fang Yuan continuously praised in his mind.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1002: Extreme Formation, Dangerous Situation Again

The exact reason could no longer be confirmed.

But in short, the Immortal Gu House, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, had been suppressing the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie for so many years, the two had formed a peculiar balance.

The Immortal Gu House was ownerless, inside, there was pure battle will.

Right now, Fang Yuan had completely converted the battle will into his own, he had even pushed out all of the Southern Border Gu Immortals.

Since rebirth, after so much planning, he had finally achieved his goal!

Fang Yuan was filled with joy.

But at the same time, he was undeniably nervous.

“Faster, faster.” Fang Yuan secretly urged himself.

Even though the battle will was his, taking over the Immortal Gu House needed some time.

This duration was when Fang Yuan was at his weakest.

If any of the Southern Border Gu Immortals went berserk and suddenly attacked Yi Tian Mountain, Fang Yuan would have to defend against the attack, exposing himself in the process.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals were furious and anxious, their minds were filled with rage and hatred.

If they found Fang Yuan, they would definitely gang up and chop him into pieces, or completely eradicate him!

Their emotions were understandable.

After all, they had spent the last few months trying to be first, they had used all their methods to obtain the Immortal Gu House.

But in the end, their hopes were dashed. The Immortal Gu House that they wanted had become someone else’s!

If Fang Yuan had acted in accordance to the gambling contest and won fair and square, the immortals could still accept that result. But Fang Yuan had sneakily avoided them completely, his actions was simply theft in their eyes, he was unscrupulous and shameless!

Why had they been working so hard over these last days?

It was all useless!

Even though the Southern Border Gu Immortals did not attack, they had used all their investigative methods.

In a short amount of time, Fang Yuan felt dozens of mental waves sweeping across his body.

His anxiety increased, his muscles were contracted, all of the hair on his body was standing.

Even though he was using the immortal killer move familiar face, it was a modified version. And even if it was the original, times had changed, some Gu Immortals might have developed new investigative methods that could expose it.

Fang Yuan was confident in deceiving the rank six and seven Gu Immortals. But against rank eight Gu Immortals, he was not as confident.

Time continued to pass, as Fang Yuan waited.

Fang Yuan’s mind was filled with thoughts that churned like a sea.

As he took over the Immortal Gu House slowly, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage’s inner structure was exposed to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan used all his time and effort to learn about these Immortal Gu and mortal Gu.

At this crucial point of time, wisdom path grandmaster attainment level helped him immensely. Using these Immortal Gu and mortal Gu, Fang Yuan could deduce many things about the Immortal Gu House.

Thus, Fang Yuan’s understanding of the Immortal Gu House, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, rose rapidly from a state of nothingness.

“Success!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined, he shouted internally.

At this moment, he had finally succeeded, he completely took over the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

This Immortal Gu House belonged to him entirely, at Fang Yuan’s will, this Immortal Gu House flew out.

Bam.

At this moment, the medical ward’s doors were broken through.

Xiao Shan, Lu Zuan Feng and another rank five Gu Master charged in ferociously with their troops.

“There, there and that one there, they are all suspicious, kill them!” Xiao Shan was filled with killing intent, he pointed at three beds as he screamed.

It turned out that not only were the Southern Border Gu Immortals themselves investigating, they were sending their pawns in both the righteous and demonic factions to undergo a bloodbath.

Anyone that was found suspicious by the Gu Immortals was mercilessly killed, in order to find this accursed mastermind, Fang Yuan.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals were all anxious.

Even if their identities and the truth behind Yi Tian Mountain were exposed, they could not care less.

“Even though they did not see through familiar face, they were still suspicious of me...” Fang Yuan muttered internally.

Xiao Shan pointed at three suspicious people, Fang Yuan was one of them.

Rank five Gu Master Sun Pang Hu walked towards him with a ruthless expression, Fang Yuan felt completely calm, feeling no nervousness.

Of course, on the outside, Fang Yuan showed a confused and angry expression, he screamed: “What are you doing? I am not a spy from the righteous path!”

“Who cares if you are not!” Sun Pang Hu shouted, pouncing towards Fang Yuan and kicking directly in the chest.

Fang Yuan’s chest was caving inwards, his heart was crushed as blood oozed out.

Fang Yuan shouted in pain as he tried to retaliate.

But Sun Pang Hu’s punch sent him flying.

Boom.

Fang Yuan’s corpse hit the wall, it slowly slid down, sprawling on the ground with his eyes wide open, he had ‘died’.

“Go! To the next site!!” After settling this, Xiao Shan waved his hand as he brought his people elsewhere.

The remaining injured members were all left panicking, there were also three unlucky corpses.

Naturally, Fang Yuan was not dead.

This was a disguise.

Familiar face’s disguise was limited to a human-like form, but it was very easy to show an appearance of death.

Fang Yuan still needed some time.

Taking over the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage was not enough, there was still one matter he had to settle first.

That was, to suppress the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie!

There was still some immortal essence left inside Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, Fang Yuan mobilized the Immortal Gu House and created a huge force with his battle will, assaulting the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie.

The slumbering rank eight immortal zombie opened his eyes, resisting violently.

Fang Yuan snorted internally: “Sure enough, it will not be easy...”

He was not surprised.

In his previous life, this rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie had charged out.

Fang Yuan had previously deduced the possibility of the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie retaliating.

A Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie was something Fang Yuan required, he was not going to let it go, he prepared many methods just for this situation.

But just as he was about to strike, tribulation clouds rumbled in the sky as the earth started to shake.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals were uncertain, they shouted: “What is going on?”

“This seems like the prelude to a heavenly tribulation or earthly calamity!”

“Why would there be a tribulation out of nowhere?”

“Is someone undergoing tribulation?”

“Who cares about the tribulation, what I am concerned about now is finding that thief who stole our Immortal Gu House!!”

Fang Yuan was surprised: “It is not time yet, why is this happening earlier? Oh no... the tribulations are already starting, then, is Shadow Sect also here already?”

Fang Yuan knew this was turning bad, he hesitated.

“Activating the tribulations in advance, was it the influence of my rebirth? Shadow Sect is a mysterious and huge power, should I retreat?”

Actually, at this point, it was okay to give up on the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie.

After all, this was not the only possible Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie in the world, there was still Hei Lou Lan.

Even though Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan had an agreement, once it expired, or if he used an information path method to nullify the agreement, Fang Yuan would be able to target Hei Lou Lan.

In the past, Fang Yuan did not have the strength to deal with Hei Lou Lan. That was because Hei Lou Lan was backed by Fairy Li Shan and Blazing Heaven Demoness.

But now, Fang Yuan had the Immortal Gu House, if he disregarded the immortal essence cost, he could suppress all three of these women, who cared if she was rank seven, rank eight, or had one of the ten extreme physiques.

With the Immortal Gu House, Fang Yuan had sufficient confidence!

“However, it is quite a big loss if I give up. This is a rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie... plotting against Hei Lou Lan will be a matter for the future. Who can be certain about the future, how can I ensure that I will succeed? The alliance agreement was just set recently, if I give up now, it will take too long to deal with Hei Lou Lan, unexpected surprises might occur.”

While he was hesitating, a change occurred in the sky!

Old Man Yan Shi appeared, leading the Gu Immortals of the ten extreme physiques in setting up the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals were encircled, after feeling shocked, rage rose in their hearts.

A Gu Immortal shouted: “Who are you? Were you behind the theft of the Immortal Gu House?”

A rank eight Gu Immortal snorted: “Cowards hiding yourselves, show your faces if you dare, I want to see who dares to plot against me in Southern Border?”

Old Man Yan Shi looked at the Southern Border immortals as he smiled coldly in disdain, he turned around and looked at Ying Wu Xie: “I have already told you everything that needs to be done, you need to remember them.”

Ying Wu Xie blinked innocently, he nodded: “You can go ahead and die, don’t worry about me.”

He was just born twelve hours ago, his cultivation level was at rank six, he had become a Gu Immortal. But he was still very ignorant about the world, and about life and death.

Old Man Yan Shi shook his head helplessly.

He naturally did not originally intend to create such an assistant.

“It is a pity, my attainment in human path cannot compare to Ren Zu. The ten extreme physiques from Ren Zu could exist for a long time. But my Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique can only live for eighteen hours. Even though the weakness of a sleeping soul was eliminated, the memories in the soul are still being lost by the effect of the dream path dao marks.”

This way, there was no use in transferring a large amount of information into Ying Wu Xie’s mind. The more information he got, the faster he would forget them.

Only if he tried to memorize it himself would there be some effectiveness.

Old Man Yan Shi concealed his regret: “I am going now, but before dying, I will make a deduction for you.”

“Be careful... one of us...” Old Man Yan Shi said his final words before turning into powder, dissipating in the wind.

Including his soul, many Shadow Sect Gu Immortals sacrificed themselves, sending their souls into the giant formation.

Ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation, created by the sacrifice of many Gu Immortals, it had reached ninety percent completion.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals had already tried to break this formation, now that it was ninety percent complete, the Southern Border Gu Immortals were startled and fearful.

Above them, the thousand pearl-light tribulation descended.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals gave up on breaking out, they had to deal with the impending tribulations first.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1003: Fang Yuan Defeats Bo Qing in One Move!

“Shadow Sect also came earlier, huh...” Fang Yuan looked at the sky, mumbling to himself internally.

Although he wholeheartedly wanted to finish his plan early, after putting it into practice, he knew that although his plan was great on paper, the way events unfolded in reality turned him helpless.

In his previous life, the Southern Border Gu Immortals resisted several waves of tribulations before Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals made their appearance.

This life, however, Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals also appeared early and arranged the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation.

Since this formation had succeeded, Fang Yuan was no longer in a hurry to retreat.

The reason was simple.

The worst situation had already appeared.

Like in his previous life, Fang Yuan’s Fixed Immortal Travel would also be ineffective in this formation.

Even with the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, it would take some time to break through the ninety percent complete ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation.

Fang Yuan had deciphered many battlefield killer moves, particularly in Eastern Sea’s Yu Lu blessed land.

However, Yu Lu blessed land’s battlefield killer moves might be exquisite, but they were unmanned, and were arrangements that were fixed in place. Even if someone took control of them, their strongest state might not even match one percent of this ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation.

Although Fang Yuan was not a formation path Gu Immortal and also was not proficient in it, he at least had this insight.

If he went out now, he would definitely be a target for all. The Southern Border Gu Immortals would not let him go, and Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals naturally would not just look on as the Immortal Gu House was taken by Fang Yuan.

“Suppress the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie first, then look for a good opportunity to use the Immortal Gu House to forcibly break through!” Fang Yuan concentrated on the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie.

The sudden appearance of Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals had somewhat helped Fang Yuan from a certain perspective.

If not for their appearance, the Southern Border Gu Immortals would definitely concentrate on Fang Yuan.

The pressure on Fang Yuan had relaxed, he had even more energy to deal with the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie now.

What made Fang Yuan shocked was that this immortal zombie still had quite a bit of strength left.

Facing Fang Yuan’s continuous offense, he activated Immortal Gu to mobilize his battle will and resisted fiercely and decisively.

For a moment, Fang Yuan was on the back foot!

“This immortal zombie is also an astute schemer! Previously, he used battle will to try to refine the Immortal Gu House, but failed. Probably because of exhaustion, he went into a deep sleep. While in his sleep, he accumulated his strength in the hope that when he woke up, he could use the accumulated energy to turn around the situation.” Fang Yuan guessed, involuntarily having some admiration for such an opponent.

If the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie cultivated strength path, he quite likely would not have such a method.

However, this immortal zombie was different, he had such good strength path talent but he actually gave it up to cultivate wisdom path.

Who knew what he was thinking.

But Fang Yuan knew that it was his wisdom path method that allowed him to forcibly dig a way out in this situation of certain loss.

Maybe this immortal zombie had already woken up and slept many times, repeating it and accumulating battle will. But during his sleep, the Immortal Gu House would purify his battle will.

If not for Fang Yuan interfering, according to such a course of events continuing, this immortal zombie could definitely free himself.

He would not only be able to free himself, he could also obtain Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

Unfortunately, his scheme was for naught, as Fang Yuan overtook him.

While Fang Yuan was dealing with this Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie, the situation in the sky around Yi Tian Mountain was rapidly changing.

Thousand pearl-light tribulation, dark flying frost, desolate beasts, dragon roar tribulation, four inferno clouds tribulation, snow war tribulation lightning...

Like the previous life, waves after waves of tribulations, with increasingly frightening might, descended upon the Southern Border Gu Immortals, inflicting severe losses.

It was not that they hadn’t tried breaking the formation.

But how could they break through the ninety percent complete ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation?

Like in the previous life, they mistakenly thought Ying Wu Xie was the greatest flaw, but they were struck by the immortal killer move lead soul into dream, and had to halt in defeat.

Later, they entrusted hope in the tribulations, hoping that the tribulations could destroy the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation. But Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals started initiating their offensive.

As time passed, under the Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie’s resistance was becoming weaker and weaker.

While Fang Yuan slowly saw hope, the Southern Border Gu Immortals had already lost theirs.

Almost all of them were dead, either dying to the battle formation from the extreme immortal zombies, or dying under the terrifying tribulations.

The only remaining two rank eights were heavily injured, running like headless chickens in the gaps between the tribulations and Shadow Sect’s offense.

Fang Yuan was also without other options.

It was not that he did not try to help these Southern Border Gu Immortals.

He still had not completely suppressed the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie, so he naturally hoped these Southern Border Gu Immortals could stall for some time.

Not long earlier, he had secretly transmitted his voice, trying to inform these Gu Immortals about the power of Ying Wu Xie.

But the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation had already spread to ten thousand li around Yi Tian Mountain, not only did it isolate the space, it also stopped sound transmissions. Fang Yuan was unable to achieve what he wanted.

Fang Yuan had tried other methods as well, but they all failed.

After several attempts, Fang Yuan had wisely given up, placing all his concentration back upon the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie.

At the same time, high in the sky, a tall and white tower was quietly hovering.

Immortal Gu House Heaven Overseeing Tower!

“Tower Lord, the Southern Border Gu Immortals are already almost all dead, should we make a move now?” Bi Chen Tian asked.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord held his walking stick, with the help of Heaven Overseeing Tower, his gaze pierced through all obstacles and saw the battlefield below clearly.

“Such a powerful formation. This formation is seemingly an ancient battle formation, but in fact it relies on the dao marks of the ten extreme physiques. A man-made formation has the intrinsic qualities of a battlefield killer move. But this formation has a flaw, that is, it lacks one last strength path extreme physique. If all ten extremes were to really gather, that would be quite a thorny situation.” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord remarked.

“No wonder Shadow Sect’s people thought of all possible methods to capture that Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie under the mountain.” Lian Jiu Sheng suddenly realized.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord stroked his beard: “It is not easy to take the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie. They must pass the obstacle that is Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage. Let’s wait for now. Bo Qing and the others have yet to appear.”

“In this journey, we have brought thirteen Gu Immortals, along with the Immortal Gu House Heaven Overseeing Tower. But we have passed the regional wall through white heaven without stopping on our way, we are not in optimal condition.”

“The enemies still have trump cards unused, let them bustle about first. Even if the Southern Border Gu Immortals are annihilated, aren’t there still the tribulations? Hmph... that person refuses to stay dead, he wants to return but has provoked the fury of heaven’s will. The mighty tribulations will become increasingly terrifying!”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was not hurried.

This was different from the previous life.

In the previous life, when he saw the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie appearing again, he had immediately struck with a vicious attack.

But in this life, the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie was suppressed by Fang Yuan, he could not even budge, much less appear out in the open, thus Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was not in a hurry to make a move.

Although his twelve companions had a common goal and all had rank eight cultivation, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord did not dare to make a rash move.

“Heavenly Court is still not making a move?” Far away, Bo Qing was gazing at the sky solemnly.

In the previous life, he was unable to attack Heavenly Lotus Sect and could only choose to attack Combat Immortal Sect, which made Shadow Sect’s previous arrangements useless.

But in this life, there were divergences. Vice Envoy Blue, who was Seven Star Child, did not die, and together with Yu Mu Chun and Song Zi Xing, they activated an immortal killer move to transport themselves quickly to Heavenly Lotus Sect.

Attacking this sect was among Shadow Sect’s plans.

Bo Qing and the rest delayed some time before retreating.

However, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was not easy to deceive. The unease inside him caused him to immediately return to Heavenly Court and use Heaven Overseeing Tower to make calculations. When he deduced Yi Tian Mountain, this crucial area, he quickly summoned as many Gu Immortals as he could and moved out together with Heaven Overseeing Tower, traveling to this place without resting.

“Since he won’t make a move, we will.” Song Zi Xing’s voice came through an information path Gu worm.

Bo Qing nodded: “Let me go first.”

Next moment, dazzling light shot to the sky, an Immortal Gu House of a majestic scale appeared in everyone’s vision.

“Hmm?!” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was surprised, this Immortal Gu House had been hiding in the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation, who knew what methods were used, he had actually not sensed it.

The Immortal Gu House flew to the sky before fiercely crashing down on Yi Tian Mountain.

Fang Yuan’s expression was ashen, his eyes shining with a cold brilliance.

“Immortal Gu House Sacred Feather City!” He gritted his teeth, he had not thought that at this crucial moment, Sacred Feather City, which was originally owned by the featherman Gu Immortals, would appear at this place.

The moment this city appeared, Fang Yuan had started feeling uneasy.

Now, seeing this enormous Immortal Gu House falling down on him, Fang Yuan’s heart sank to rock bottom.

He was extremely unwilling, he was just a few steps away from success. The rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie was already on the verge of defeat and would not be able to hold on any longer.

But now, he had to stop!

The Sacred Feather City directly smashed down, Fang Yuan had to activate Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage to resist it.

If the Immortal Gu House was not activated, its battle strength could not be displayed. The amount of immortal essence used in the activation process would determine whether the Immortal Gu House’s battle strength would be high or low.

Even Heaven Overseeing Tower, a rank nine Immortal Gu House, had a portion cut by Bo Qing’s sword light in its inactive state.

“Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, rise!”

Fang Yuan resolutely called out internally, no longer concealing himself, showing his real body.

Yi Tian Mountain instantly crumbled, while Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage shot towards the sky like a crimson meteor.

It also had space path Gu worms, bursting out with a powerful and formless force that instantly transported Fang Yuan inside.

Right now, Fang Yuan was officially controlling Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage!

“Merely Sacred Feather City...” Fang Yuan snorted inwardly, and with a flourish of his hand, rank nine yellow apricot immortal essence spread out.

Rank nine immortal essence from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, it was nothing to scoff at!

Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage was originally shrouded within an aura of red light a few meters in size. But after the expenditure of yellow apricot immortal essence, this red light was like a volcano, as it violently enlarged to fifteen or twenty meters!

“What?” Bo Qing, who was controlling Sacred Feather City, called out in shock.

Boom!

An earth-shaking explosion erupted, Sacred Feather City was ruthlessly sent flying by Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

Large amounts of city walls, gates and tiles were sent flying everywhere, turning into corpses of Gu worms which then scattered along with the air.

There was no doubt about it, Fang Yuan defeated Bo Qing in one move!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1004: Deep Underlying Schemes, Great Danger

Fang Yuan repelled Sacred Feather City, he did not know that immortal zombie Bo Qing was inside manipulating it.

Using this opportunity, Fang Yuan maneuvered Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, turning around in the sky and crashing towards Yi Tian Mountain again.

Along the way, tribulations rained down and hit Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, causing loud crackling sounds.

Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage defended as it charged down relentlessly, it could protect itself from the tribulations.

At this moment, Yi Tian Mountain had already collapsed, turning into a ruin. Yi Tian Mountain’s demonic path Gu Masters were all heavily injured or dead. Corpses were everywhere, it was a terrible sight.

Fang Yuan took a glance and then stopped looking at these lowly mortals.

His eyes were shining with cold light, at this point, he was still unwilling to give up.

The earlier suppression failed, but Fang Yuan still had a chance.

“Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie, you are mine! Hmm?” Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage was about to charge down again, when a second Immortal Gu House blocked Fang Yuan’s path.

This Immortal Gu House was entirely black, it gave off a metallic luster.

It was also in the form of a fortress.

But it was not as grand as Sacred Feather City, it was a battle fort that was forged with steel.

To compare them, Sacred Feather City was like a gentlemanly prince, while this Immortal Gu House was a warrior clad in steel armor.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light, he gritted his teeth and charged down again.

He had to race against time.

The more time the rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie had, the more he could recover to a better state.

Boom!

With a huge sound that could burst eardrums, the two Immortal Gu Houses crashed into each other.

A huge shock wave was generated, blasting out in all directions.

The shock waves caused rocks from the mountain to fly away, among them were the corpses of Gu Masters.

The two Immortal Gu Houses were in a deadlock.

Even though Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage had a powerful charge, the iron fortress-like Immortal Gu House could barely hold it off.

Both sides were contesting.

The iron fortress Immortal Gu House was slowly pushed back, but Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage was losing its momentum.

“Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage is a rank seven Immortal Gu House, this other Immortal Gu House is likely also rank seven, specialized in defense.” Fang Yuan had a realization.

He sighed, knowing that he had lost his opportunity.

He had tried hard, but because of obstructions, he did not succeed.

This amount of time was enough for the rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie to break free from the force of Fang Yuan’s suppression and recover.

Fang Yuan’s attempt failed, he immediately tried to retreat, leaving this troublesome place.

Turning around, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage flew into the sky.

Fang Yuan did not fly directly upwards, he crashed towards the southeast direction.

The third and fourth Immortal Gu Houses appeared consecutively.

These two Immortal Gu Houses were small, one was filled with blood-red light, in the shape of a chariot. The other was dark and eerie, it was an old castle with grey tiles and white walls.

Four Immortal Gu Houses trapped Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, which Fang Yuan was controlling.

Fang Yuan charged in all directions, but he was obstructed by the four Immortal Gu Houses, he could not gather enough force to charge out of the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation.

Inside Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, Fang Yuan’s expression was dark.

He did not expect Shadow Sect to make such a huge move.

An Immortal Gu House was already very rare. Shadow Sect actually took out four Immortal Gu Houses, what were they trying to do by being so relentless?

Even though the situation was not in his favor, Fang Yuan was still calm.

The enemy might be strong, but it was not a desperate situation yet, because one party had not joined the fight yet.

Fang Yuan looked into the sky from time to time, he was waiting.

Would Heavenly Court fail to deduce that Shadow Sect was attacking early? Even if they failed, by this time, they should have arrived.

When Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals attack, the situation would be chaotic, Fang Yuan would be able to take advantage of the confusion.

“But Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, why are they not attacking yet?” Fang Yuan thought as he reduced Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage’s power purposely.

The Immortal Gu House that was shining with bright red light turned from brilliant to faint.

At once, the situation changed.

Fang Yuan’s Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage was suppressed by four Immortal Gu Houses.

Inside Heaven Overseeing Tower, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s eyes were shining with white light that gradually faded.

He used Heaven Overseeing Tower earlier to make a deduction, it had just ended.

He smiled coldly: “The person inside Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage is an otherworldly demon. His name is Gu Yue Fang Yuan, the destruction of Imperial Court blessed land and the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had been done by him! This person seems to have some sort of relationship with Red Lotus Demon Venerable and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. Don’t think that he is being suppressed in this current scenario, he is just acting so that we will strike.”

“Oh? Then, are Fang Yuan and Shadow Sect allies or enemies? Is their intense battle just an act?” Lian Jiu Sheng asked in confusion.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord waved his hand: “I am not interested in Fang Yuan and Shadow Sect’s relationship, it is not important. Since he wants to lure us to attack, let’s do it. The ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation is part of the enemy’s crucial plan. I have already deduced that they have obtained that final key immortal zombie. Everyone, come with me, activate Heaven Overseeing Tower and destroy the formation, ruin the enemy’s scheme!”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord called out and everyone responded, they were full of intent to fight.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals around him all had stern expressions, they attacked together.

A beam of light shot towards the ten extreme formation.

“I wanted to use Fang Yuan to prevent the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals from attacking, so as to stall for time. It seems that such a shallow scheme cannot deceive these Heavenly Court members. Attack!” Envoy Blue, or Seven Star Child ordered as he thought over Shadow Sect’s situation.

“Good, Heavenly Court is attacking.” Fang Yuan was just starting to feel joy when he saw three more Immortal Gu Houses emerging!

One was a pavilion with red bricks and green tiles. One was a manor with white traces flying around. One was an altar with shiny golden lights.

The three Immortal Gu Houses worked together to resist the attack from Heaven Overseeing Tower.

“...” Fang Yuan did not know what to say.

Since when did Immortal Gu Houses become so commonplace? They were emerging one after another, what were they planning to do?

Fang Yuan’s sense of unease was growing.

He had thought that the mysteries behind the battle of Yi Tian Mountain were as deep as a lake. But to think that this place was as deep as an ocean!

The hidden details simply ran too deeply.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, during the five regions chaotic war, a battle of such a scale numbered to less than five!

“Good, good, good. Sacred Feather City, Unbreakable Iron Fortress, Blood River Chariot, Nightmare Castle, Green Wave Pavilion, Weaving Cocoon Manor, Golden Altar... seven Immortal Gu Houses were forced out by my one move.” From inside Heaven Overseeing Tower, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s voice could be heard.

He exposed the names of Shadow Sect’s Immortal Gu House, his voice was loud as thunder, it could be heard over the surrounding thousands of li.

“Now then, we will let you see the might of Heaven Overseeing Tower!”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord shouted as the heavens shook.

Rank nine Immortal Gu House, Heaven Overseeing Tower, activated fully.

There was no warning.

The sky turned white!

The world turned white!

Even Fang Yuan, who was inside Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, at this moment, could only see white.

Light was everywhere.

White light.

It filled the entire world, all the space in this world was filled with white light.

The light seemed harmless, Fang Yuan did not even feel a sense of danger.

“This... what sort of attack...” When the white light faded, Fang Yuan regained his senses slowly.

Taking a look, his body shook.

In the sky, debris of these Immortal Gu Houses was falling down.

The falling debris turned back into countless Gu worms as they fell.

Not a single Gu worm survived.

The corpses of these Gu worms fell in the air, scattering everywhere.

The most mysterious thing was, from the outside, these dead Gu worms did not have any injuries, but they had lost all traces of life.

The three Immortal Gu Houses closest to Heaven Overseeing Tower, Green Wave Pavilion, Weaving Cocoon Manor, and Golden Altar had broken apart. The remaining Immortal Gu Houses were also heavily damaged.

But overall, Fang Yuan’s Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage had suffered the least damage.

“Did Heavenly Court spare me?” Fang Yuan had a thought but he quickly denied it.

“Hmph! Otherworldly demon...” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord gave Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage a look as he directed his attention towards the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation.

The move earlier had activated fate Immortal Gu, creating an incredibly strong attack.

This was an attack that carried the power of fate.

Fate was predestined.

If one is not fated, no matter how hard they work, they will not achieve anything.

If fate decrees that you fail, you will fail.

This was an unavoidable attack.

It could have destroyed the ten extreme formation, but these three Immortal Gu Houses sacrificed themselves and endured the attack.

In contrast, from the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation, Ying Wu Xie had flown out, his spot was taken over by the rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie.

“After being suppressed for so many years, I face such a great enemy upon escaping. Hahaha, I like it!” The rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie raised his head and laughed.

He pointed at Heaven Overseeing Tower, shouting: “Scoundrels from Heavenly Court, come! Celebrate my resurrection!”

The fully completed ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation activated!

Dark clouds formed, covering the entire battlefield, spreading out endlessly at a rapid speed.

All ten of the extreme immortal zombies were hidden in the dark clouds, their traces were gone.

Countless immortal apertures were drawn out by the mystical power of the formation, they resembled starlight.

These immortal apertures were left behind after the Southern Border Gu Immortals died.

The immortal apertures went into the deep part of the dark clouds and gathered.

Countless Gu worms, both Immortal and mortal, were flying about inside the dark clouds.

At this point, Fang Yuan finally understood something: “So this ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation is actually a refinement path Gu formation! What is Shadow Sect trying to refine? They actually used the Southern Border Gu Immortals’ immortal apertures as the refinement materials?!”

Such a method was simply unheard of.

The high and mighty Gu Immortals were like ants now, casually killed and used to refine Gu.

Even Fang Yuan, with his five hundred years of experience, had never seen something like this.

Shadow Sect, a mysterious force hidden in the depths of history, its true motive and plan that had been ongoing for countless years was finally going to show itself!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1005: Thousand Year Traitor, Stalling

“You actually activated this formation in front of us?! Even though you were once invincible in the world, you are already dead now. If you do not respect us, so be it, but such a heaven defying act to transgress against heaven’s will, how can we let you succeed?”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord shouted, gathering the strength of the Heavenly Court immortals to use Heaven Overseeing Tower’s strongest attack again.

“Endure it!” The Shadow Sect immortals, who had predicted, this activated their Immortal Gu Houses and charged up.

The world turned white.

The attack from fate could not be defended against.

After recovering his senses, Fang Yuan spat out a mouthful of blood, his face was purple-gold in color.

Even though he was an otherworldly demon, he was still a part of the world and under its influence, his injuries were only less severe than others.

Taking another look, Fang Yuan saw that the Immortal Gu Houses Unbreakable Iron Fortress, Blood River Chariot, and Nightmare Castle had broken apart, turning into fragments and falling from the sky.

Fang Yuan’s Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage had also suffered huge losses even though it was inside the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation. Up to a thousand mortal Gu had died, two Immortal Gu were on the verge of death, they already could not be used. Three out of seven of the duel stage’s edges had broken apart.

But Fang Yuan was happy about this.

He wanted Heavenly Court to continue attacking this ten extreme formation.

Once there was an opening, he could escape.

The situation was getting clearer, evidently, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were here for Shadow Sect. If Fang Yuan escaped now, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals would not have the spare energy to attack him.

Under Fang Yuan’s expectant gaze, Heaven Overseeing Tower was surrounded in white light once again.

The white light gathered and became thicker, when it accumulated to its maximum capacity, it would unleash fate’s strongest attack again. By then, the ten extreme formation would definitely be breached.

Whoosh...!

With a burst of wind, Sacred Feather City moved towards Fang Yuan to crash into him.

“You are not dealing with Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, but approaching me instead?” Fang Yuan snickered, but did not fight the other party.

He craftily maneuvered Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, dodging everywhere and awaiting the next attack of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals.

Boom!

Suddenly, Heaven Overseeing Tower shook immensely, the accumulated white light exploded and vanished.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was covered in blemishes, it was heavily damaged.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals in the tower were spitting out blood, facing the damage of the backlash.

In Sacred Feather City, Seven Star Child’s voice could be heard: “Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, you fell for our trap.”

At this moment, in Sacred Feather City, there were more than ten Shadow Sect Gu Immortals, with immortal zombie Seven Star Child, immortal zombie Bo Qing, and Ying Wu Xie at the lead.

The other six Immortal Gu Houses were destroyed, but Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals used some space path method to escape, gathering in this final Immortal Gu House, Sacred Feather City.

With the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation, and having planned for so long, it was not strange that Shadow Sect could do this with their territorial advantage.

“How can this be?” Fang Yuan saw the damage and was shocked and doubtful.

Inside Heaven Overseeing Tower, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals reacted one by one.

“Heaven Overseeing Tower is a rank nine Immortal Gu House, how can it be damaged so heavily?”

“Earlier, Shadow Sect did not strike, that means Heaven Overseeing Tower itself has a problem!”

“There are traitors in Heavenly Court!” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s expression was grim as he looked at Bi Chen Tian and Lian Jiu Sheng fixedly.

After Sword Immortal Bo Qing awakened, sword lights rampaged over Central Continent, one had cut Heaven Overseeing Tower.

To prevent the sword qi from destroying more Gu worms and causing bigger damage, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord had repaired it with Bi Chen Tian and Lian Jiu Sheng.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord had no issues of course, thus, the traitor was either Bi Chen Tian or Lian Jiu Sheng.

Hearing Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s words, the other Gu Immortals reacted, quickly moving away from these two suspects, encircling them in the process.

“Wait! How can I be a traitor from Shadow Sect?!” Bi Chen Tian’s expression was shocked and furious, he defended himself: “To join Heavenly Court, there are countless trials to go through. Heavenly Court has already existed for three million years, since when had any traitors appeared? Maybe this is a method from Shadow Sect, the urgent matter now is to destroy this refinement path formation! We must not fall for Shadow Sect’s scheme of sowing dissension!!”

Bi Chen Tian’s expression was sincere, his anxiety could not be concealed.

“Hahaha...” Lian Jiu Sheng beside him laughed loudly, his expression was dark as he looked around, speaking eerily: “Precisely because it was created three million years ago, any strict test or trial is already too outdated. How hard can it be to infiltrate Heavenly Court?”

“Lian Jiu Sheng, you!” Bi Chen Tian shouted, taking a step back in shock.

“So Lian Jiu Sheng is the traitor!”

“Are you Lian Jiu Sheng, or someone else?”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were preparing themselves for a fight, but nobody made a move yet.

“Lian Jiu Sheng never existed in the first place. You want to stop me? Not even the rank nine Immortal Gu House can succeed! Hehehe, survive this first.”

Saying this, Lian Jiu Sheng died!

A large burst of green wind blew out from within him.

“Winds of assimilation!”

With his identity exposed, Lian Jiu Sheng immediately suicided, destroying his immortal aperture and creating the winds of assimilation.

Such resolution and boldness, he was just like Qin Bai Sheng.

Winds of assimilation could assimilate everything, they were extraordinary. But this was the internal space of the rank nine Immortal Gu House Heaven Overseeing Tower, before the winds of assimilation grew any further, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord and the others spent a great deal of effort to quickly quell the winds.

But Lian Jiu Sheng’s death did not simply only create this wind.

Since there were traitors in Heavenly Court, was Lian Jiu Sheng the only one? Were there others?

The united Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were starting to have trust issues.

“Heavenly Court’s investigative methods have not been modified for many years. According to ‘his’ ability, it is not impossible to infiltrate Heavenly Court.” A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal said gravely.

“Is Heaven Overseeing Tower’s damage severe?” More people were concerned about this.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord shook his head: “Forty percent of Heaven Overseeing Tower was destroyed. We cannot use the attack from earlier again. If we attempt to force its use, it will only lead to Heaven Overseeing Tower breaking apart!”

After Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord said that, he sighed deeply.

If it were not for fate Gu being incomplete, Shadow Sect would definitely not succeed.

Although one had to admit that the creation of an undercover agent by Shadow Sect was simply brilliant.

Lian Jiu Sheng had been there for a thousand years, nobody had ever suspected him, once he took action, he temporarily destroyed Heaven Overseeing Tower’s strongest attacking method.

Of course, the underlying cause for this was Shadow Sect exploiting Red Lotus

Demon Venerable’s achievement.

If fate Immortal Gu was fully intact, Heaven Overseeing Tower would be able to stop its own attack, there would be no backlash.

“Everyone, the traitor is already exposed, why are you still encircling me?” Bi Chen Tian could not bear to remain in this state, he asked this.

The immortals finally reacted, apologizing as they left the encirclement.

But Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were not completely trusting of Bi Chen Tian, some of their gazes towards him carried deep suspicion.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord saw this and was alarmed and fearful, he quickly spoke to control the situation: “Everyone! Listen to me, do not be suspicious of one another. Lian Jiu Sheng was merely exaggerating, if he could continue to lurk, how could he expose himself? If Heavenly Court had many spies, Heaven Overseeing Tower would have been destroyed long ago, why would they only reach this point?”

The morale of the immortals rose, realizing at once.

“So close, we almost fell for their scheme.”

“Tower Lord is right, it is Shadow Sect’s limit to achieve this much!”

“If Lian Jiu Sheng could really resist our investigative methods, why would he expose himself and suicide? He had no confidence, this shows that our methods are still useful.”

“Let’s not consider how Lian Jiu Sheng got into Heavenly Court for now. The urgent matter now is the formation down there. Heaven Overseeing Tower might have lost its strongest attack, but we still have hope, as long as we work together, the power of a rank nine Immortal Gu House can still destroy their schemes!”

The immortals were all experienced veterans, after discussing, their morale was raised once again.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was activated, crashing down like a meteor.

Shadow Sect did not block it, they opened a gap in the formation and allowed Heaven Overseeing Tower to get in.

Fang Yuan wanted to leave, but was obstructed by Sacred Feather City.

Thus, inside the formation, three Immortal Gu Houses engaged in a chaotic battle.

Even though the rank nine Heaven Overseeing Tower was heavily damaged, it was still an overlord, it charged around with an unstoppable might.

Shadow Sect used the power of Sacred Feather City and the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation to barely contest with Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan was maneuvering Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, with evasion as his priority.

Compared to before, Fang Yuan’s predicament was much better now.

Because Shadow Sect and Heavenly Court had both suffered immense losses. As Fang Yuan was an otherworldly demon, his losses were actually the smallest among them.

“No need to rush, Shadow Sect and Heavenly Court are irreconcilable enemies, they will continue to fight intensely. As they continue to weaken themselves, I will have an opportunity. Right now, my priority is to preserve my strength.” Fang Yuan assessed.

“No need to be hasty, as long as we are inside the formation, the other party needs to focus their attention on Heaven Overseeing Tower. The longer we drag, the stronger the calamities and tribulations, and the higher our chances of winning.” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord looked at the situation and explained to the Heavenly Court immortals.

“Stall!” Inside Sacred Feather City, immortal zombie Bo Qing called out.

Seven Star Child continued: “That’s right, we have Ying Wu Xie. The longer we drag this on, the higher his cultivation level, and the stronger his dream path killer move. Dream path is beyond this era, even Heaven Overseeing Tower cannot defend against it. Against dream path attacks, it would have almost no defense.”

“Are you talking about me?” Ying Wu Xie stared with wide opened eyes, pointing at himself.

Seven Star Child nodded: “Even Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord cannot deduce your actual situation. The only concern now is, the higher your cultivation level, the more sophisticated your killer move, lead soul into dream, becomes. But this immortal killer move needs more Gu worms to become stronger, the activation process also becomes more complex. You need to use it properly, there cannot be a mistake.”

Ying Wu Xie breathed in deeply, waving his hands with a fearful look: “Uncle zombie, I am getting nervous after hearing that.”

Coincidentally, Shadow Sect, Heavenly Court, and Fang Yuan, all three of them were thinking of stalling for time. But in the end, who would get the last laugh?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1006: Continuously Going In and Out

Bam bam bam!

Waves and waves of lightning strikes rained down continuously.

Before the previous wave dissipated, the next wave struck.

The entire sky was like a dark blue forest.

This forest made entirely of lightning was covered in dark clouds.

The ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation had already turned into dark clouds. The ten extreme immortal zombies inside could not be found at all. This made Fang Yuan’s plan of attacking the formation cores a failure.

In the dark clouds, three meteor-like Immortal Gu Houses circled around one another, clashing from time to time, or attacking with a long range method.

All of them were patiently waiting for an opportunity, but whose tactic would emerge victorious?

As the tribulations increased in strength, the ten extreme formation was starting to fall short, the dark clouds had scattered slightly after being struck by lightning. But it had not reached the level of weakness that Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord wanted.

Because the three sides were restricting one another, Fang Yuan's opportunity never came.

"Okay, I have rank seven cultivation level now." Inside Sacred Feather City, Ying Wu Xie spoke cheerfully.

"Good, we will deal with Fang Yuan first and take Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage!" Seven Star Child replied.

Ying Wu Xie nodded.

Shadow Sect had specially designed the dream path killer move, lead soul into dream, for him. They had prepared a set of Gu worms, every rank of cultivation would have a corresponding version of 'lead soul into dream'.

Why were they dealing with Fang Yuan first instead of Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals?

Firstly, Fang Yuan only had rank six cultivation level, he was easier to deal with. Furthermore, he had control of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, once he was dealt with, they would obtain Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage to fight against Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Secondly, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals were also stalling, they were not emitting strong pressure on Shadow Sect. Shadow Sect's Gu Immortals realized this and were going to make use of it.

Thirdly, Ying Wu Xie was only rank seven, his lead soul into dream was still ineffective against rank eight Gu Immortals. If Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals were attacked by it in advance, they would have time to try and deduce the killer move, they might be able to resolve it later.

Ying Wu Xie's expression was serious as he started to use lead soul into dream.

"Don't be nervous, do it slowly."

"You can do it, good luck!"

The other Shadow Sect Gu Immortals were more nervous than Ying Wu Xie himself.

Rank seven dream path killer move — Lead Soul Into Dream!

Under the immortals' expectant gazes, Ying Wu Xie did not disappoint them, he successfully activated the dream path killer move.

Lead soul into dream's power was sent towards Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage formlessly.

Fang Yuan was caught unprepared, he fell into a dream realm after being hit.

In the pavilion on the lake, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was singing while playing her zither.

“Fallen songs and despondent heroes, difficulty in resisting the trials of fate.”

“Bent swords sink in the sand, rising and falling from ancient times, the rumbling of an unceasing heavenly river.”

“Alas...”

“Spectral night carries a soul into endless dreams, where can one rest in peace?”

“During spring and autumn body and mind shifts, only heaven’s will remains vast and boundless.”

Similar to the first two times, this time, a new wave of information somehow went into Fang Yuan’s mind.

“Spectral night carries a soul into endless dreams, where can one rest in peace? Spectral night... soul into endless dreams... so the truth behind Shadow Sect is like this!” Fang Yuan’s body and mind shook.

“Weird.” At the same time, Ying Wu Xie scratched his head inside Sacred Feather City, having a strange expression on his face.

“What is it? You did not succeed?” The other immortals asked.

They were extremely concerned about Ying Wu Xie’s performance.

Ying Wu Xie shook his head: “They fell asleep and entered a dream, but this immortal killer move’s effect is different from what was predicted.”

Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals relaxed.

“Ying Wu Xie, this is the first time you are using the rank seven lead soul into dream, it is normal for it to be different from your expectations.”

“Since we succeeded, we should use the opportunity to obtain this Immortal Gu House!”

Sacred Feather City moved, turning around and charging towards Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

At the same time, the dark clouds rumbled intensely, the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation coordinated with Sacred Feather City’s movement.

However, just as Sacred Feather City was about to hit Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, Ying Wu Xie’s eyes opened wide “Oh no, he escaped from it.”

Lead soul into dream would have a wondrous effect against any other Gu Immortal.

But against Fang Yuan specifically, it had little effect.

Why?

Because among all the immortals here, Fang Yuan’s dream path attainment was second to Ying Wu Xie’s.

He had his five hundred years of memories, and he had the special immortal killer move — Unravel Dream!

However, this move was only rank six, lead soul into dream was rank seven, it was superior. According to common sense, Fang Yuan should not be able to escape.

But the dream realm he was in was very strange.

Seemingly, because it was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream, the difficulty was very low.

If one use of unravel dream was not enough, he would use unravel dream more!

Fang Yuan had many dream path mortal Gu, he could expend them a huge number of times to use the killer move unravel dream.

The action of collecting the spring dream fruits had given Fang Yuan immense returns at this moment!

But it was too late when Fang Yuan escaped from the dream.

Boom!

At the next moment, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage was sent flying.

Fang Yuan could not stand stably, he fell inside the Immortal Gu House.

But he had regained his senses, he quickly made Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage fly upwards, causing Sacred Feather City’s plan of immobilizing the Immortal Gu House to fail.

“What is going on?”

“How could he escape? That was lead soul into dream.”

Shadow Sect’s immortals shouted, their expressions were like they had seen something unthinkable.

This situation was too unexpected.

Ying Wu Xie scratched his head, he was worried too: “Let me try again!”

Immortal killer move — Lead Soul Into Dream!

Fang Yuan was hit again.

In the pavilion on the lake, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked at Fang Yuan, her eyes were deep like pools, her smile was light and mysterious.

Her hands were holding her zither.

But this time, she did not sing.

The music of the zither was clear and beautiful, but Fang Yuan did not have the time to enjoy it, he knew that he was in the dream realm, how could he stay any longer?

After using the killer move unravel dream countless times, he escaped from this dream realm.

“What is going on!” Inside Sacred Feather City, Ying Wu Xie screamed, he was being driven crazy.

Just as Sacred Feather City was about to get close to Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, Fang Yuan woke up again, manipulating the Immortal Gu House and escaping.

Sacred Feather City was more damaged than Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, its speed was slower now.

“Try again.” Seven Star Child’s expression was grim, he had a vague guess in his mind but he did not give up.

“Mm!” Ying Wu Xie quickly nodded, activating the killer move again.

“Damn it, this is too troublesome. The other party’s dream path attainment is beyond this era! Lead soul into dream... even if I am inside the Immortal Gu House, I cannot defend against it, I get hit every time.” Fang Yuan’s expression was not any better than that of Seven Star Child.

As time passed, there were bound to be improvements.

Immemorial, Remote Antiquity, Olden Antiquity, during those times, the world of human Gu Immortals was still not as strong as now.

Of course, the rank nine venerables were special cases, they were not considered in this.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, dream path was flourishing, dream realms were everywhere. Many of the Immortal Gu Houses that super forces owned had added dream path Gu worms into them, to defend against methods of dream path, they were effective.

But Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, which Fang Yuan owned now, originated from that mysterious Gu Immortal from the past, it was older than the current era, it could not defend against lead soul into dream.

“Immortal killer move — Lead Soul Into Dream!” Inside Sacred Feather City, Ying Wu Xie shouted again.

“How is it?” The immortals looked at Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie nodded with certainty: “He is inside the dream.”

“Attack!” Bo Qing shouted, as Sacred Feather City got close to Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

But Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage dodged at the nick of time again.

“What is going on? Didn’t he go in? Why is his reaction faster this time?” Seven Star Child frowned.

“He went in, ah, ah, no, he came out.” Ying Wu Xie stammered.

The immortals were speechless.

Inside Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

“Oh Old Bai, at this crucial moment, I need to depend on you, my ally.” Fang Yuan had just come out of the dream realm, he patted Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s shoulder.

A moment ago, Fang Yuan knew that Shadow Sect would not let go of him, they were sure to drag him into the dream again.

Even though he could escape, he had to spend time for that.

During this moment, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage had no one to manipulate it, the other party could attack in the meantime.

Thus, Fang Yuan brought out Tai Bai Yun Sheng to reinforce him.

Earlier, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage could escape because Tai Bai Yun Sheng was controlling it.

The ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation restricted space path methods, Fixed Immortal Travel could not be used.

But before Fang Yuan came here, he had already sent Tai Bai Yun Sheng into his own immortal aperture!

Meanwhile, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan were hiding inside Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture.

“Fang Yuan! You are taking too huge of a gamble!!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng manipulated the Immortal Gu House as he said with shock. Even though he had observed the battlefield through Fang Yuan, this old man was shocked beyond words at the involvement of Shadow Sect and Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan laughed: “The other party has dream path methods, they might target you. Call out Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan!”

At the next moment, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan emerged.

They had complex emotions on their faces, but among which, it was mostly shock.

Looking around, Hei Lou Lan said: “Fang Yuan, you are really good at putting yourself in danger.” Her tone had a hint of admiration.

Fairy Li Shan however, said: “Oh Fang Yuan, you are dragging us into a pit of fire.”

Fang Yuan smiled, waving his hand and saying grandly: “What are you afraid of? When two tigers fight, one will definitely be injured. With you helping me, the other party cannot do anything to me. With the protection of the Immortal Gu House, we might have a chance of victory! Afterwards, you will be heavily rewarded.”

Hei Lou Lan nodded, she did not speak anymore. Her eyes were shining with bright light, she was assessing Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

Fairy Li Shan felt hugely vexed internally. Because of the new alliance agreement, she had to come. Earlier, Fang Yuan had used Yi Tian Mountain and Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage to coax them into lurking in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture, to think that the situation had already developed beyond Fairy Li Shan’s imagination!

Through the Immortal Gu House, they could see the battlefield outside, this famous Gu Immortal who had made countless connections in Northern Plains was feeling great trepidation now.

Like what Tai Bai Yun Sheng had said earlier, Fang Yuan was taking too huge of a gamble!

Could Fairy Li Shan not feel trepidation?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1007: Everyone’s Abilities Against the Grand Tribulation

“Fairy Li Shan, can you contact Blazing Heaven Demoness now?” Fang Yuan observed the battlefield through the Immortal Gu House and asked.

In the current situation, the more reinforcements they had, the better.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was not part of the new alliance agreement, this was likely Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan’s arrangement, to guard against Fang Yuan. But at this moment, Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan were both stuck in here, would they not want Blazing Heaven Demoness to assist them?

Fairy Li Shan knew that they had fallen for Fang Yuan’s scheme, she rolled her eyes and tried to contact her.

In a moment, her expression was pale as she shook her head: “No! This ten extreme formation is amazing. It can even restrict my information path methods.”

Fang Yuan nodded, he did not speak, instead he thought: “It seems that only after breaking out of the formation can we contact this strong ally.”

Actually, even if Blazing Heaven Demoness could come, Fang Yuan would not feel assured in letting her stay in the Immortal Gu House.

But if she was outside, it was too dangerous, nor could it be justified to not let her in.

Ignoring Blazing Heaven Demoness for now.

With the assistance of Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and Fairy Li Shan, Shadow Sect could not take down Fang Yuan.

And to deal with Heaven Overseeing Tower, the rank seven Ying Wu Xie was not strong enough.

As they continued to stall, the tribulations got stronger.

Heavenly tribulations fell one after another, there was no repetition.

Suddenly, golden light shot out from the sky, shining brightly!

Crack crack crack...

A series of crisp cracking sounds occurred.

Tens of thousands of golden vajra pearls descended from the sky in an endless fashion.

“Grand tribulation!” Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals were all taken aback.

“Hahaha, this is the relic vajra tribulation!” Inside Heaven Overseeing Tower, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals laughed as they stroked their beards, they knew what this tribulation was.

This tribulation had surpassed the levels of the ten great catastrophes, catastrophes like the snow war tribulation lightning were still within the limits of a heavenly tribulation.

But this relic vajra tribulation was stronger than a heavenly tribulation, it was a grand tribulation!

After Gu Masters ascend to immortal, they are troubled by calamities and tribulations. According to the time in their immortal aperture, once in a while, calamities and tribulations would occur.

Calamities and tribulations contain both disaster and fortune, if one could not pass them, they might die, but if they pass, their foundation would deepen, their cultivation level would rise.

Among which, rank six Gu Immortals had green grape immortal essence. They faced an earthly calamity every ten years, and a heavenly tribulation every one hundred years. After three hundred years, after three heavenly tribulations, they would become rank seven.

Rank seven Gu Immortals had red date immortal essence. They faced an earthly calamity every ten years, a heavenly tribulation every fifty years, and a grand tribulation every one hundred years. After three hundred years, they would become rank eight.

As for rank eight Gu Immortals, their immortal apertures would create white litchi immortal essence. They faced a heavenly tribulation every ten years, a grand tribulation every fifty years, and a myriad tribulation every one hundred years. After three myriad tribulations, they would become the invincible rank nine Gu Immortals!

Earthly calamities, heavenly tribulations, grand tribulations, myriad tribulations, the calamities and tribulations were ranked according to increasing strength.

Heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities were already very dangerous, grand tribulations were even more terrifying. Countless Gu Immortals had died because of them, being wiped out of existence, thus, every Gu Immortal expert was wary and careful, they worked day and night to cultivate in great difficulty, facing this pressure.

As for myriad tribulations, there was a term in the cultivation world, known as apocalyptic myriad tribulations, it was extremely difficult for Gu Immortals to survive them. Once someone survives a myriad tribulation, it would be an incredible glory, Gu Immortals from all over would look up to and admire them.

In the long history of humanity, there were only ten people who had passed three myriad tribulations, they were the ten venerables.

Sword Immortal Bo Qing had passed two myriad tribulations and was highly favored to become a sword path Immortal Venerable. He failed once on this third tribulation and barely survived. When he tried again, he died.

At present in Northern Plains, Old Ancestor Xue Hu was desperately trying to pass the first myriad tribulation, he had spared no expenses in refining fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu. As for Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang, they were still far away from the first myriad tribulation.

They might be old, but they had all used time path methods to slow the rate of time in their immortal apertures. Some Gu Immortals fear calamities and tribulations, they even might spend a huge fortune to completely remove the tributary of the river of time in their immortal aperture, this way, the time in their immortal aperture would be completely still, the calamities and tribulations would not approach.

But in that case, the immortal aperture would not be able to produce immortal essence, and without undergoing calamities and tribulations, the Gu Immortal’s dao marks would not increase, their cultivation level would stagnate.

And time path methods that stalled for time had drawbacks. They could not stay in the paused time for overly long, they had to pay even higher costs to maintain it.

But in the current Gu Immortal world, to prepare amply for tribulations, most Gu Immortals would use time path methods to slow the time in the immortal aperture.

Even expert Gu Immortals were no exception.

This was because, the higher the cultivation level, the greater the power of the calamities and tribulations, and the more dangerous they become.

Most of the rank eight Gu Immortals in Heavenly Court were sleeping during normal times.

This hibernation was one of the best time slowing methods in the world.

For rank eight Gu Immortals, they had to face a challenge that threatened them every fifty years, those were grand tribulations.

Right now, in the sky, the first grand tribulation descended.

Relic vajra tribulation!

Even though it was not directed at them, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals felt joy but also deep wariness.

Vajra pearls crashed into the dark clouds with crackling sounds.

This thick dark cloud could be seen thinning at a rapid pace.

Soon, the uppermost layer of dark clouds melted like ice that was mixed with hot water.

Seeing this, Shadow Sect’s immortals had grim expressions, their brows were knitted.

“Great.” Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals smiled, they had used this stalling tactic, it had finally started to work.

“Even without us doing anything, the other party might lose already. Hahaha.” Bi Chen Tian laughed.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s gaze was deep, he said with admiration and deep emotions: “The other party might have been extremely strong during his time, but how can he surpass heaven and earth? Humans should respect heaven and earth, compared to it, what can the strength of a Gu Immortal do? Looking at the rank nine Gu Venerables, which one of them could live forever? Respecting and revering heaven and earth, following the will of heaven, this is the true way of cultivation.”

Facing the might of the grand tribulation, the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation was slowly losing its sustainability.

“We cannot resist it head on!” The formation was controlled by people, it was naturally more flexible than the battlefield killer moves inside Yu Lu blessed land.

The dark clouds opened up a space and let the vajra pearls into the formation.

Crack crack crack...

The vajra pearls hit the three Immortal Gu Houses in the formation.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord sneered, he knew that Shadow Sect was planning to make Heaven Overseeing Tower endure some of the pressure for them.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was unwilling to see that happen.

But he could do nothing.

He was inside the formation, there was nothing he could do.

He activated the Immortal Gu House and tried to dodge.

“Fate Immortal Gu is inside Heaven Overseeing Tower. One of the main materials in refining fate Immortal Gu is heaven’s will! And these tribulations are also due to the will of heaven! Heaven Overseeing Tower, overseeing the world, we follow heaven’s will and uphold justice for heaven. Thus, under the tribulations, Heaven Overseeing Tower suffers far less damage than the other Immortal Gu Houses.” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord spoke.

The implications of his words were very obvious, he wanted to continue stalling. When the ten extreme formation reveals a flaw, he would activate the Immortal Gu House and unleash a victorious attack!

Towards this, the other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had no objections.

“Oh no, right now, we have to endure more of the pressure, otherwise, the ten extreme formation would not last until the end.”

“So what if it’s a grand tribulation? Our plan defies heaven, we had already seen such a thing from Dong Fang Chang Fan. The appearance of a grand tribulation was within our expectations!”

“Sacrificing other Immortal Gu Houses to protect this Sacred Feather City, it was for this moment!!”

Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals showed resolute expressions, they were extremely prepared.

Above Sacred Feather City, a faint light appeared.

This light looked pink, but in truth, it was pure white, there was only a hint of pinkness.

The strange thing was, this light made people feel a strong sense of warmth in their hearts.

But in essence, this was not a light.

It was a situation when the power of wishes was scattered.

Each Immortal Gu House, even though were proficient in every aspect, had their respective specialties. For example, Dark Prison’s specialty was in capturing, rearing, and enslaving desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts. If its rank could be raised, it would also be able to subdue immemorial desolate beasts.

Rank nine Heaven Overseeing Tower’s specialty was in unleashing the attack of fate, none of the targets could defend or resist it. Unfortunately, because of rank nine Immortal Gu Fate’s current condition, it could no longer be used.

As for Sacred Feather City, the Immortal Gu House that Shadow Sect spared no effort in obtaining, it had its specialty too.

That was, it could absorb the power of wishes from past and present generations of feathermen in the city, to automatically refine wish power mortal Gu.

This Sacred Feather City had existed for a long time, occupied by the feathermen. Generations after generations of feathermen lived in the immemorial green heaven fragment world, the stored wish power mortal Gu was incredibly large in number.

Even though the immortal killer move heavenly wish already expended a large number of them, more than half was still left. Or rather, the feathermen did not know of any other ways to use them.

They did not, but Shadow Sect had an incredible background, it originated from long ago, it had a method.

Thus, Sacred Feather City’s wish power mortal Gu were continuously activated, consumed without counting the cost.

Wish power Gu was a consumable Gu.

Obtaining the power of wishes, Sacred Feather City experienced growth in all aspects.

It flew down and blocked the relic vajra tribulation, helping the ten extreme formation endure much of the pressure.

“What an amazing tribulation, in just a short time, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage is already showing signs of breaking.” Hei Lou Lan shouted.

Fairy Li Shan’s expression was ashen, her gaze was wavering.

This grand tribulation was too terrifying, if she had to face it alone, she could only endure two or three pearls.

But there were tens of thousands of vajra pearls in this grand tribulation, and they were still growing in number, unceasingly!

Fang Yuan laughed instead: “Hahaha, I was waiting for this. I will show you the true power of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage now! Absorb!”

At the next moment, thoughts exploded like fireworks in his mind, starlight was shining dazzlingly.

All of his concentration and attention was on Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

This Immortal Gu House could use time path methods to seal any attacks aimed at it, before sending them back at enemies.

But this method, when used, needed the controller to be completely focused, the Gu Immortal needed heavy concentration.

Fang Yuan was not familiar with the Immortal Gu House earlier, nor could he manipulate the Immortal Gu House to move and deal with his enemies while using this method.

But now, with Tai Bai Yun Sheng and the rest helping him, and with Sacred Feather City busy with the grand tribulation, Fang Yuan could finally find time to use Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage’s unique power!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1008: Respective Sacrifices

Under Fang Yuan’s control, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage erupted with a dazzling red light.

The red light enshrouded a large distance, burning like a raging inferno.

A mysterious strength was spread over the fire, any vajra tribulation pearl that hit the Immortal Gu House would be engulfed by the red light and sealed inside.

The rank nine immortal essence of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable allowed Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage to display its strongest ability.

Crack...

The whole Immortal Gu House shook intensely and started cracking.

It was barely able to absorb the relic vajra tribulation.

After all, this was a grand tribulation!

But Fang Yuan still succeeded.

More and more vajra pearls were controlled by him, sealed inside Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage temporarily.

However, Fang Yuan had to pay a huge price for this.

“We battled for so long, but the portion of Giant Sun’s immortal essence I took out was not expended by even thirty percent. But after absorbing a hundred vajra pearls, all of that portion of Giant Sun’s immortal essence was expended!”

The rapid expenditure of Giant Sun’s immortal essence caused Fang Yuan to be inwardly shocked.

But right now was not the time to be distressed over the loss, he took out more of Giant Sun’s immortal essence.

Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage moved freely, not only was it safe in the grand tribulation, it also absorbed even more vajra pearls, its strength continuing to increase instead.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was a rank nine Immortal Gu House with astonishing defense and with fate Immortal Gu as its core, it had a defensive effect against calamities and tribulations.

But Fang Yuan’s Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, under the effect of Giant Sun’s immortal essence, was able to display extraordinary might, displaying the wonders of time path, its strength did not decrease but increased.

After a wave of this grand tribulation, Shadow Sect’s Sacred Feather City suffered the biggest damage. Even if they had used large numbers of wish power mortal Gu, it could not match Fang Yuan and Heavenly Court.

The relic vajra tribulation continued for eight minutes before stopping abruptly.

Without letting the three sides have time for a breather, a second wave of tribulation descended.

Circles of light lit up in the sky, from within the circles of light, multiple giant deer charged out.

Each of these deer were the size of an elephant. Their bodies were translucent, seemingly formed from white light.

Immemorial desolate beast — Destiny Light Deer!

This was a grand tribulation formed from immemorial desolate beasts. Every immemorial desolate beast could match a rank eight Gu Immortal. And now there was a whole twenty-two of these deer.

That is to say, there were twenty-two beasts of rank eight battle strength!

No doubt, even if these deer did not have any wild Immortal Gu on them, this grand tribulation’s power was much more terrifying than the first wave.

The light deer group galloped towards the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation, in an instant, Shadow Sect’s group paled.

A gap quickly expanded in the ten extreme formation, letting half of the deer group enter inside.

“Destiny light deer have nine colors corresponding to the immemorial nine heavens. These deer are all white light deer, it seems they should come from white heaven.”

“Destiny light deer have gentle natures, they are named in beautiful legends where they carried humans to the heavens. Who would have thought that under the influence of heaven’s will, these deer would go berserk and be filled with intent to battle!”

Despite Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals not wanting to participate, by being in this situation, they were unable to evade and were also involved.

Fang Yuan controlled Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage to retreat to the edge of the battle.

These light deer were alive, he was unable to use the Immortal Gu House to seal them.

The attacks that could be sealed by Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage using the mysteries of time path were things like wind, water, earth and fire, not beasts.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan had captured many vajra pearls earlier, he used them now to force the deer away.

In the second wave of tribulations, Heavenly Court’s situation was best, Fang Yuan second, and Shadow Sect had the heaviest pressure on them, their situation extremely critical.

At the crucial moment, it was immortal zombie Bo Qing who stood out.

He activated famous and dazzling sword path killer moves like five finger fist heart sword, their power unstoppable and terrifying.

Most of the destiny light deer lost their lives on the spot under the slashes of sword lights. Even if they had wild Immortal Gu, it was of no use.

Bo Qing was already dead, but his immortal zombie body was filled with an unimaginable number of sword path dao marks. With the amplification of these dao marks, even the same killer move would have completely different effects from when Qin Bai Sheng used it, the difference was gigantic.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing persevered bitterly, finally letting Shadow Sect get through the second wave of grand tribulations.

However, the dark clouds in the sky was already extremely sparse, the ten extreme physique immortal zombies were no longer able to conceal themselves and were vaguely visible.

“The formation has already weakened to its lowest point, charge!” Fang Yuan resolutely called out.

Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage shot out vajra pearls, attempting to break the formation.

On another side, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord also saw this good opportunity, and Heaven Overseeing Tower also moved out, adding insult to Shadow Sect’s injury.

“What to do?!” Inside Sacred Feather City, Ying Wu Xie had his head in his hands, unable to do anything to help.

The expressions of Shadow Sect’s other Gu Immortals were also ashen, the mood was extremely solemn.

It was already the crucial moment between victory or defeat.

The ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation was completed, and would either succeed or fail, there was no other result. Once the formation was broken, everything would fall apart in succession.

“There is nothing else we can do, we can only sacrifice Zombie Alliance!” Seven Star Child heaved a long sigh, before coming to a decision.

The Zombie Alliance branches that were spread throughout the five regions were actually subordinate forces of Shadow Sect; like how the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent were subordinates to Heavenly Court.

It was just that Shadow Sect was extremely covert, many Zombie Alliance higher ups were not even aware of it. This secret was hidden in the deepest parts of Zombie Alliance.

The ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation was the greatest plan of Shadow Sect, made by exhausting everything they had.

At this moment, Shadow Sect was forced to make a painful sacrifice, giving up Zombie Alliance to salvage this situation.

The backup plan was activated, one after another, figures appeared within the ten extreme formation.

These were immortal zombies from all the Zombie Alliance branches. Numerous rank six, rank seven and rank eight zombies appeared, their numbers were shocking.

“This is?!” Inside Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and the rest were wide-eyed as they blurted out together.

“Hmph! Sure enough, Shadow Sect was behind Zombie Alliance,” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord frowned, killing intent surging within him, his gaze turning cold, “Good! We will catch all these rebels that defy heaven’s will in one fell swoop.”

But unexpectedly, these immortal zombies did not seem to be in a conscious state and were like puppets controlled by wires.

Before Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord could make a move, they actually sacrificed themselves, turning into a portion of the ten extreme formation!

“Big sister!” Fairy Li Shan howled in grief.

Among these immortal zombies, she saw Blazing Heaven Demoness’ figure.

But this rank eight immortal zombie, the leader of Northern Plains’ Zombie Alliance branch, did not seem to be in a conscious state, showing a blank expression.

Under the gazes of Fairy Li Shan and Hei Lou Lan, Blazing Heaven Demoness also followed these immortal zombies, turning herself into immortal material, merging into the huge formation.

Obtaining these immortal zombie bodies filled with dao marks as well as countless Immortal Gu and immortal apertures, the ten extreme formation’s dark clouds condensed and instantly expanded, surpassing its previous peak state, and reaching an unprecedented level, almost covering the whole sky.

Fairy Li Shan wept tears of sadness.

Hei Lou Lan sank into silence.

Fang Yuan frowned, the rank eight reinforcement he was anticipating had died miserably in front of his eyes.

Who could have though Zombie Alliance had such a relation to Shadow Sect.

Even if someone had seen through the truth and spoke it out, who would believe them?

Spreading throughout the five regions, an overlord among super forces, the huge Zombie Alliance was actually only a front for Shadow Sect.

“Previously, Shadow Sect issued a compulsory task to refine Gu formations on a large scale, it was probably to scheme against Zombie Alliance’s members.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng suddenly came to a realization, feeling his heart chilling at the sinister motive of Shadow Sect.

Fang Yuan’s expression was also unsightly.

“I had guessed the relation between Shadow Sect and Zombie Alliance, but had not expected there to be such a situation! My previous life’s memories misled me. After all, during the five regions chaotic war, all the Zombie Alliance branches had existed...”

“Such an immense cost! Killing almost all the immortal zombies of the five regions, and making them into immortal materials to put in this ten extreme formation. What do they want to refine? Could it be the legendary Gu for eternal life?!”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord similarly had an extremely unsightly expression.

The immortals from Heavenly Court behind him also showed worried expressions.

Even if they were experienced and knowledgeable, with high status and power, they could not help but be awestruck by this astonishing move of Shadow Sect.

From this moment onwards, the super force with the most Gu Immortals over the five regions, Zombie Alliance, was completely destroyed, dissipating in the wind!

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

A piercing sound penetrated everyone’s ears.

The third wave of grand tribulations had descended.

Heaven’s will was ferocious, no matter what Shadow Sect was trying to refine, it was clear that it was absolutely a heaven defying thing and had already provoked the fury of heaven’s will.

Even heaven and earth did not permit its creation!

The third wave of grand tribulations was much more terrifying than both the previous two grand tribulations combined.

Sharp rain started falling from the sky. Every drizzle of rain was only half an inch long, but they were incomparably sharp as if they could pierce through everything in the world!

Grand tribulation — Absolute Piercing Rain.

The ten extreme formation was reconstructed, but the dense rumbling dark clouds seemed to have suffered a huge blow, unable to regain their strength.

Fang Yuan repeated the same thing, using Giant Sun’s immortal essence to activate Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage to absorb the piercing rain.

It was just that this time, he clearly felt the difficulty was many times higher than earlier.

After holding on bitterly for a while, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage was pierced in many places with large numbers of Gu worms continuing to be sacrificed.

“If this continues, the Immortal Gu House can probably only last fifteen minutes of time.” Hei Lou Lan called out to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan also did not have any good methods.

Despite him already using all his strength and absorbing many attacks with Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, he still was not able to protect everything.

The arrow-like rain he was dealing with was only about ten percent of the total.

Shadow Sect was suffering most of the arrow-like rain.

With this, anyone would know the terror of the grand tribulation. Under such a fatal predicament, rank eight Gu Immortals absolutely would not have a good time.

The third wave ended, Sacred Feather City and Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage were both shattered, the remaining Gu worms were stored by the respective Gu Immortals.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was filled with cracks, many times deeper than before, a corner of the tower had even completely crumbled apart.

“Everything is over. The final victor can only be Heavenly Court!” Heaven

Overseeing Tower Lord laughed loudly, activating the strongest attack of Heaven Overseeing Tower.

This was an attack that carried the power of fate.

Unavoidable and unstoppable.

At the next moment, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord saw: Under Heaven Overseeing Tower’s attack, the formation cracked open, Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals suffered countless casualties, Fang Yuan and the rest also died together!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1009: Huge Hand!

“It’s over.” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord stood on top of Heaven Overseeing Tower, looking at the battlefield.

In his field of vision, Shadow Sect’s Sacred Feather City had turned into rubble, Bo Qing, Seven Star Child and others had fallen to the ground as corpses. Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage was heavily damaged, the Gu Immortals’ corpses inside were mostly in pieces.

Dark clouds faded, a beam of light shot down from the sky, it was shining with golden brilliance, light burst out.

“This is what happens to those who defy heaven’s will! Hahaha...” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord laughed loudly.

But after a few seconds, he frowned, feeling suspicious that something was amiss: “Oh wait, Heaven Overseeing Tower was damaged and cannot use Fate’s strongest attack, why did it manage to attack earlier?”

“Also... I could not help but laugh earlier, that is not my normal behavior, what is going on?”

At this moment, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord could vaguely hear some faint voices in the sky.

“Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, wake up...”

“Quickly wake up!”

“Wake up? Aren’t I awake now?” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord felt greatly surprised, the suspicion inside him grew.

Suddenly, his body shook, he realized the truth.

“Oh no! I fell into their trap, everything that happened is not real, I am inside a dream realm!”

As he thought of this, he realized more and more issues.

Both parties had died too easily. Especially Shadow Sect, they were backed by ‘that person’ after all!

Furthermore, the other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were missing, in the entire tower, he was the only person.

“I can confirm that I am in a dream realm! However, how do I leave?” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was anxious, even though he knew he was in a dream, he did not have unravel dream like Fang Yuan, thus, he could not escape from the dream realm.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was sleeping soundly.

Snore snore snore...

He was snoring loudly, lying down on the concrete floor with a band of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals around him.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was not only old, he was very tired.

Earlier, in order to repair fate Immortal Gu, he consecutively refined Gu, and later, he spent a lot of time repairing Heaven Overseeing Tower, protecting Heavenly Lotus Sect, and fought intensely with Bo Qing and the others. After that, he found Shadow Sect’s secret mastermind and mobilized Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals to use Heaven Overseeing Tower and enter white heaven, he did not rest at all, traveling towards Yi Tian Mountain in Southern Border.

And when he arrived, he had to control Heaven Overseeing Tower to engage in a huge battle.

Thus, the moment he went into the dream realm, his entire body relaxed, he snored extremely loudly, he was in a deep sleep.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals surrounded Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord in the middle, they poured water on him, they used fire to burn him, they shouted until their throats were sore, they tried all methods, but he could not wake up.

This was the power of dream path.

It was beyond this era, just this one move could not be stopped.

Even these rank eight Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had no way to resolve this.

The scene was quite amusing.

Outside Heaven Overseeing Tower, the battle was extremely heated, the sky turned dark, as the grand tribulation rumbled.

Heaven Overseeing Tower floated in the sky, unmoving.

Inside the tower, the Heavenly Court immortals were anxious, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s soul was deeply in the dream, they had no methods to wake him.

All they could do was to use some wisdom path methods to transmit to him, to try and get Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord to wake himself up.

On Shadow Sect’s side, the atmosphere was no longer as dreary, it was much more relaxed now.

“Ying Wu Xie, good job!”

“This is the power of dream path? Amazing!”

“Ah... after so long, you finally have rank eight cultivation level.”

Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals surrounded Ying Wu Xie, some of them relaxed, after all, the situation earlier was too dangerous. Some were in awe towards the power of dream path, some patted Ying Wu Xie’s shoulders and praised him continuously.

After fighting for so long, Ying Wu Xie with the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique had advanced again, becoming a rank eight dream path Gu Immortal.

Thus, he could use a rank eight immortal killer move — Lead Soul Into Dream.

After two failures, during his third attempt at this killer move, he finally succeeded, sending Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord into a dream.

The effect was immediate, with Heaven Overseeing Tower stopping all movements, Shadow Sect’s pressure was relieved greatly.

Seven Star Child asked: “How long will Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord be trapped for?”

Ying Wu Xie answered: “He is a rank eight Gu Immortal who has passed one myriad tribulation, the dream realm can only trap him for several minutes. But even if he escapes, I can still use the killer move to lead his soul into a dream once again!”

“Good, Yan Shi did not create you in vain.” Seven Star Child sighed.

At this time, Heaven Overseeing Tower began to move again.

“What is going on?” Shadow Sect’s immortals were shocked.

Someone looked towards Ying Wu Xie: “Did Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord get out?”

Earlier, Ying Wu Xie’s attack was useless on Fang Yuan, he kept entering and exiting, this made the confidence of the Shadow Sect Gu Immortals fall.

But this time, Ying Wu Xie shook his head, he was certain: “Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord is still in the dream. It seems that the other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals are manipulating the tower instead!”

That was right, seeing that they could not wake up Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals took over Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Even though Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was asleep, the entirety of Heaven Overseeing Tower did not belong to him alone. After Star Constellation Immortal Venerable died, Heaven Overseeing Tower had become Heavenly Court’s public property.

Right now, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was fast asleep and unconscious, the other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had the rights to take over control of Heaven Overseeing Tower.

But soon, Heaven Overseeing Tower stopped moving again.

This was seen by Fang Yuan’s group.

Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan had doubtful and angry expressions: “What is Heavenly Court trying to do?!”

Fang Yuan’s expression was grim: “It seems that Shadow Sect used dream path methods to deal with the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, just like what they tried with me. But... why didn’t they target Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals earlier?”

“What is the point of considering this now? We do not have the Immortal Gu House to protect us, and Shadow Sect has also lost Sacred Feather City. Only Heavenly Court still has Heaven Overseeing Tower. But they are obstructed by Shadow Sect, we are in grave danger! Fang Yuan, can you use Fixed Immortal Travel again?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was full of worries.

“I can’t.” Fang Yuan shook his head, sighing deeply.

“It seems that now, we are dead meat.” Hei Lou Lan smiled bitterly, a harsh light shined in her eyes as she clenched her fists: “It is a pity that Hei Cheng isn’t dead yet, I cannot avenge my mother even up until death!”

Fang Yuan glanced at her, he did not speak.

After the third grand tribulation, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage and Sacred Feather City had broken apart, only Heaven Overseeing Tower was left.

Heavenly Court was the hope of Fang Yuan’s side, but that hope had vanished.

Not even considering a fourth grand tribulation, simply the ten extreme formation was something Fang Yuan and the others could not hope to survive against.

“Is this really it?” Fang Yuan inspected Spring Autumn Cicada, too little time had passed, it had not recovered much, it could not be used again.

At this time, in the sky, the sound of a zither playing could be heard.

Right now was daytime, but the sky was shining with endless starlight.

The music entered the formation, into the Gu Immortals’ minds.

“Oh no! The ten extreme formation also defends against sound path methods, but the formation cannot block this zither music at all. This is the fourth grand tribulation — zither mind tribulation!”

“And the starlight in the sky, it is so bright even during daytime. This is the fifth grand tribulation — star flow tribulation!”

“Why is it so dangerous?! The fourth and fifth grand tribulations appeared together!!”

Seeing this, Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals shouted, they forgot about both Heavenly Court and Fang Yuan for the moment.

In Heaven Overseeing Tower, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals also drew in deep breaths.

The might of the grand tribulations increased according to the number of tribulations.

The fourth tribulation, in terms of might, surpassed the first three grand tribulations together. As for the fifth star flow tribulation, it was stronger than zither mind tribulation, absolute piercing rain, immemorial light deer, and relic vajra tribulation combined.

“What is Shadow Sect trying to refine? They actually attracted such fury from heaven, to send down such terrifying disaster!” Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals and Fang Yuan had many questions.

The two grand tribulations had not descended yet, they were still storing power.

Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals had grim expressions, they barely managed to endure the first three tribulations. And now, the fourth and fifth grand tribulations were here. Anyone could feel the deep animosity of heaven, it was not going to give Shadow Sect any way to live.

What now?

At once, Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals were lost and helpless.

Their Immortal Gu House was destroyed, the ten extreme formation had suffered a huge blow from the third grand tribulation, even if all the Gu Immortals were sacrificed, they could not defend against these two grand tribulations.

“It seems that we are going to die in the grand tribulations after all.” Hei Lou Lan sighed.

Fang Yuan squinted, he had a different opinion.

Regardless of what Shadow Sect was trying to refine, they had first created the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation, killing Southern Border’s Gu Immortals to use their immortal apertures and bodies as Gu refinement material, before sacrificing all of Zombie Alliance’s members as fuel.

Furthermore, they even lost seven Immortal Gu Houses!

The price that Shadow Sect paid was unheard of, if Fang Yuan had not seen it himself, he would not believe it if anyone told him!

Since they paid such a huge price, Shadow Sect was not going to give up.

The zither music suddenly became louder, it was heard by everyone.

The immortals’ expressions changed, they felt the world spinning, some of them fell down.

The zither mind grand tribulation had started!

In the sky, starlight gushed down like a huge blue tsunami, it extended over an endless distance, crashing down.

Star flow grand tribulation!

Shadow Sect’s immortals had firm expressions that were prepared for death, they encouraged each other as they charged forward. Only Ying Wu Xie was left, dealing with Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Fang Yuan’s side was on the ground, they had pale expressions, desperately resisting the power of the zither mind grand tribulation.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was a rank nine Immortal Gu House after all, it was still floating in the sky.

“Without an Immortal Gu House, how can we survive two grand tribulations? Hehehe, dying from the might of heaven and earth, it has to be more glorious than dying from old age in bed.” Fairy Li Shan had a dazed expression, she looked at the sky, blood flowed out of her seven orifices.

She had already given up on resisting the zither mind tribulation.

The others were still desperately holding on.

At this moment, an incredibly powerful aura with supreme strength burst out of the ruins of Yi Tian Mountain!

An immortal aperture’s entrance opened.

This was Shadow Sect’s blessed land.

Earlier, the Shadow Sect headquarters that Bai Ning Bing could not find had already been placed here long ago!

Feeling this aura, all of the Gu Immortals’ hearts shook.

Even the rank eight Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had pale expressions, their eyes were full of fear.

Shadow Sect’s immortals had overjoyed expressions.

“Our main body... has appeared!”

Boom!

A huge and monstrous ghostly hand moved out of the immortal aperture’s entrance.

The rank nine aura grew immensely!

A formless shock wave swept across the battlefield.

Rocks broke and rumbled, dust and smoke rose.

“This is? This is!” Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were tongue-tied.

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!” Inside Heaven Overseeing Tower, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord had finally woken up, he felt immense pressure in his mind as he exposed the identity of the ghostly hand.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1010: Embroidered Tower Cannot Block the Demonic Might

This ghostly hand that stretched out from life and death blessed land was extremely huge, like a hill.

Its arm was not fully stretched out, more than half of it was still inside the door.

Life and death blessed land’s entrance was seemingly already opened to the maximum, but only a small part of the ghostly hand could come out, as if it was stuck.

Rank nine aura, majestic and vast, spread out and engulfed in all directions.

Fang Yuan’s side hurriedly retreated.

Under the suppression of the rank nine aura, they felt suffocation and had a fearful sensation that they were going to die from it!

Looking at this huge hand again, it was dark like the depths of an abyss, terrifyingly sinister, and seemingly undulating with a dark blue light.

“What soul beast is this? It actually has such a terrifying aura! Not even immemorial soul beasts can match its aura! Could it be that the world has rank nine soul beasts?” Hei Lou Lan blurted out in shock.

She still did not know the true identity of this ghostly hand.

“Impossible!” Fairy Li Shan’s expression was pale as paper as she retreated, speaking in a trembling tone, “Among all the living beings in the world, only humans can reach rank nine, thus man is the spirit of all living beings.”

Once the soul left the physical body, it should be in a weak state, moreover the soul was incorporeal and could pass through bricks and tiles.

But this right hand of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was solid like it was material, stable like a hill.

After stretching out of life and death blessed land, it grabbed at the ruins of Yi Tian Mountain. Large numbers of boulders turned into powder under the hand.

This was simply beyond the common sense of the cultivation world.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s main cultivation path was soul path, his soul path foundation was so deep that it had reached the limits of a material state! It far surpassed the immortals’ imaginations!

“Spectral Soul... Demon Venerable...” Looking at the huge hand that engulfed his vision, Fang Yuan felt his mouth drying up.

He knew the origin of this huge hand.

It was because not long ago, when he had been struck with the immortal killer move lead soul into dream, and had entered the dream realm again, he had heard the melodious song of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

“Fallen songs and despondent heroes, difficulty in resisting the trials of fate.”

“Bent swords sink in the sand, rising and falling from ancient times, the rumbling of an unceasing heavenly river.”

“Alas...”

“Spectral night carries a soul into endless dreams, where can one rest in peace?”

“During spring and autumn body and mind shifts, only heaven’s will remains vast and boundless.”

Following this song, information flowed into Fang Yuan’s mind out of nowhere.

“Spectral night carries a soul into endless dreams, where can one rest in peace?” This showed the ghostly hand’s true identity, informing Fang Yuan that the mastermind of Shadow Sect behind the scenes was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

When Fang Yuan had known this, he had been extremely shocked.

With such mental preparation, now that he looked at the giant ghostly hand, Fang Yuan was able to forcibly calm down, instead feeling some relief.

Everyone dies.

This was the rule of the world, and everyone knew of it, even rank nine venerables could not escape this fate.

Then where did the soul of these rank nine venerables go to after death?

This was clearly explained in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

Road of life, road of death and Obsession Death Domain which held fairness Immortal Gu. In the legends, after Verdant Great Sun died, his soul returned to the door of life and death, rank nine venerables along with all the living beings in the world had such an outcome in the end.

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> clearly recorded: The road of life was filled with suffering Gu while the road of death had three obstacles: Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley and Reverse Flow River.

Fang Yuan did not know about Reverse Flow River’s location, but he knew Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po valley were in his hands!

Fang Yuan even made a bold guess: The third obstacle, Reverse Flow River, was also probably no longer on the road of death.

Without the obstruction of these three obstacles, couldn’t souls after people die easily return to the world of the living?

This meant Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s soul returning to the world of the living was not an unexplainable matter.

Regardless of what happened in the depths of the door of life and death, and what the truth was, right now, at this moment, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s soul had charged out of the door of life and death and appeared once again amidst the living.

“So all these were really Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s arrangements. No wonder Shadow Sect is so mysterious and so powerful! No wonder Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals did not fear death. Have they already grasped a method of reviving the soul? But what in the world does Spectral Soul Demon Venerable want? Shadow Sect did everything possible to protect the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation, not even stinting on making any sacrifices, what are they trying to refine?”

The doubts in Fang Yuan’s mind intensified, like the dense dark clouds above him.

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable... you finally could not bear it anymore.” Inside Heaven Overseeing Tower, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord heaved a deep sigh.

With the help of Heaven Overseeing Tower, he had already deduced Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s identity back at Heavenly Court.

That pair of eyes that gazed at all things from the darkness, filled with killing intent, were the eyes of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

Knowing Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was attempting to defy heaven to resurrect and escape fate, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord had paled with shock and alarm, hurriedly awakening Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals to immediately take action and destroy Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s plan, making him fall back to Obsession Death Domain, maintaining heaven’s will and fate.

It was because the two roads to Obsession Death Domain had been traveled by fate Immortal Gu personally.

All things go through life and death, it is the world’s greatest fairness.

Once Spectral Soul Demon Venerable resurrected, it would no doubt be unfair, the greatest violation of fate and heaven’s will.

Fate Immortal Gu would probably be unable to recover further because of this.

They had to take this chance while Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had not resurrected, and pass judgment. If they allowed this Demon Venerable with the strongest killing intent in history to resurrect, the world would become filled with massacre and chaos, Heavenly Court’s side could forget about restoring their former glory, they might even be unable to protect themselves.

That was the reason that in this battle at Yi Tian Mountain, Heavenly Court did not care about the price to activate the rank nine Immortal Gu House Heaven Overseeing Tower, bringing Heavenly Court’s main forces with them.

“Spectral Soul... rank nine Demon Venerable...”

“What’s there to fear? He is already dead, his soul has been hiding in the door of life and death, lingering on his last breaths, he is already no longer the rank nine Demon Venerable.”

“Right. Everyone is aware of a soul’s weakness. If he truly had his former strength, why would he need to establish Shadow Sect and create so many split souls? Why would he need to form these schemes?”

“In my opinion, he can at most only be considered Spectral Soul, and not Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals talked and roused each other’s morale, expelling the fear in their hearts.

Facing a rank nine existence, even these rank eights of Heavenly Court could not help being anxious and fearful.

“The ten extreme formation is Spectral Soul’s weakness. We need to first stop this huge hand, then we can gather our strength to break this formation!” Bi Chen Tian shouted.

“That makes sense!” Heavenly Court’s immortals nodded, a portion of them then flew out of Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Heaven Overseeing Tower started activating, releasing sparkling white light.

Immortal killer move — Lead Soul Into Dream!

Ying Wu Xie once again activated his only ability.

One skill to dominate the world!

“Damn it!” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord stomped his foot in anger but could only fall into the dream realm once again, unable to extricate himself.

Shadow Sect had gone through untold hardships to create Ying Wu Xie, and their efforts were showing outstanding effects at this moment. Even the rank nine Immortal Gu House was being tied down by Ying Wu Xie alone.

Even if there were people who replaced Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s position, they also soon fell into dream realms.

As long as Ying Wu Xie targeted Heaven Overseeing Tower, these temporary tower lords would follow suit and be struck by his ability.

“Hmph, you think the grand Heavenly Court only has one Immortal Gu House?”

Right at this time, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, who had flown out of Heaven Overseeing Tower earlier, suddenly brought out their second Immortal Gu House.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House — Embroidered Tower!

This small pavilion was adorned with beautiful decorations, its walls were red and its tiles were made of jade, looking exquisite and beautiful, but it lacked part of its foundational support; one could clearly see the traces of destruction on the Immortal Gu House.

Although this was a rank eight Immortal Gu House, it was only a damaged object and not intact.

“The so-called Heavenly Court only has these antiques left? It is embarrassing for you people to keep what Reckless Savage Demon Venerable broke for so long, and you are still bringing it out now to make a fool of yourselves!” Immortal zombie Bo Qing stood up, raising his right hand in the shape of a fist above his head.

The next moment, the peerless sword path killer move, five finger fist heart sword, erupted with full power.

Embroidered Tower shook for a while from this attack, before shooting out seven embroidery needles condensed from faint light.

These seven embroidery needles flew gracefully like birds, and struck the huge ghostly hand in a blink of an eye. Immediately, the embroidery needles pierced through the ghostly hand and the ground countless times.

Spectral Soul’s ghostly hand tried to rise, but could not even budge.

The seven embroidery needles seemed to be using invisible thread that tightly sewed this ghostly hand to the ground.

“This Embroidered Tower Immortal Gu House might be only rank eight, but after Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s disciple, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, was betrothed, he prepared it as a dowry. In the past, when Reckless Savage Demon Venerable had rampaged into Heavenly Court, and was struck by this move, he also had to discard the three bloody skins to free himself!” Inside the Embroidered Tower, the leading Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal sneered.

According to logic, during the time when the ghostly hand was sewn to the ground, the ghostly hand could have already flown away from the ground.

But this ability of Embroidered Tower was this Immortal Gu House’s strongest attack.

The sewing threads it used were actual dao marks.

It used dao marks as threads to sew the ghostly hand to the ground. If Spectral Soul wanted to raise his hand, he would need to have the power to lift the ground of the whole of Southern Border!

Maybe Reckless Savage Demon Venerable had such power.

But this remaining soul could not reach such a standard.

Heavenly Court’s foundation was truly unfathomable.

Even when facing Spectral Soul, they had corresponding methods.

Seeing Spectral Soul’s huge hand tightly sewn to the ground, Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and the rest stared, dumbfounded.

While Shadow Sect’s group revealed worried expressions.

However, the next moment, the solid and malevolent dark ghostly hand suddenly turned soft, until it turned into a pool of black water.

Whoosh...!

A sea of black water surged out of the door of life and death. In an instant, the surrounding mountain ranges were submerged by it, this water that was from a soul covered all of the surroundings, it was tyrannical and domineering.

Fang Yuan and the rest quickly flew into the sky.

The next moment, the sea of black water soared to the sky, turning into a monster thousands of meters tall!

“Spectral Soul!” Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were terrified, a giant ghostly hand swept across the air at such a quick speed that it could not be dodged, smashing Embroidered Tower immediately.

Another hand grabbed the large Heaven Overseeing Tower. The ghostly hand increased its strength, cracks started appearing on Heaven Overseeing Tower, and at this rate, the whole of Heaven Overseeing Tower looked like it would be crushed!

The two grand tribulations, zither mind tribulation and star flow tribulation, came smashing down.

Spectral Soul roared towards the sky, suppressing the zither sound.

He raised two of his other hands and ferociously tore at a space.

The space where he tore broke, the huge starlight tsunami rushed into the void.

The two grand tribulations were so easily resolved by Spectral Soul!

Fang Yuan and the rest, witnessing such a scene, were wide-eyed and tongue-tied.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1011: Spectral Soul? Spectral Soul!

The immortals present could not believe their own eyes!

Zither mind tribulation, star flow tribulation, these two grand tribulations were easily stopped by Spectral Soul, it was as easy as drinking water.

“This, this is the might of a rank nine demon venerable?” Fang Yuan’s heart shook.

Spectral Soul was already dead, what was present now was merely his soul.

This gigantic soul was already beyond normal form.

He was thousands of meters tall, like an imposing giant! The dark clouds that the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation created merely reached the height of his waist.

Fang Yuan and the others were in the air, resembling flies. Looking at Spectral Soul’s leg, it resembled a giant mountain peak.

Spectral Soul’s chest had reached the clouds, he was as tall as the sky!

He had three heads.

The front head had dragon horns, a lion’s mane, snake eyes, and elephant tusks.

The left head had a peach-colored forehead, hair like grass, and three flower-like eyes.

The right head had a fringe of clouds, eyes resembling lightning, ears like fire, and a golden mouth.

He had a thousand arms, five hundred on each side. They were dark like ink, his muscles were bulging with firm lines, oozing with demonic aura.

He also had a thousand ghostly hands, earlier, Heavenly Court had spent huge effort to use Embroidered Tower to immobilize a ghostly hand to the ground, but that was merely one out of a thousand!

“Ah! This appearance, this appearance! Don’t tell me? Impossible! Impossible!” Fairy Li Shan had recognized Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, she screamed in disbelief. Her arms were covering her head, she shook her head as she retreated, she lost all the grace that a rank seven Gu Immortal had.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s appearance was not a secret, it was widely spread in the Gu Immortal world, even in the mortal world it was well known.

Especially in Southern Border, many villages and countless mortals had a culture of revering Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. The people used clay to create a statue of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, and would pray to it during festivals and offerings.

Hei Lou Lan’s pupils shrunk to pin size, she was so shocked she could not speak, her entire body was shivering.

Gulp, Tai Bai Yun Sheng swallowed his saliva, his body was covered in cold sweat.

Fang Yuan showed a moved expression full of anticipation.

His shock from earlier had vanished.

“This... is the limit of soul path? The soul turns from phantom to solid, it can interfere with the material world, it is as condensed as a physical body, and is unbelievably powerful! Such a soul foundation definitely surpasses a hundred million man soul. My soul compared to it, is like an ant versus the moon...”

“But even the powerful Spectral Soul Demon Venerable died in the end, his soul returning to the door of life and death. Now that he has broken out, defying heaven and fate, what is he trying to do?”

“When can I reach such a level as well? But even at this level, he cannot avoid death. I pursue eternal life... does it truly exist?”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light, at this moment, he felt greatly excited.

Even as an immortal zombie, he could feel a sensation of hot-bloodedness!

One could learn from examples set by capable people.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was a predecessor who was undeniably a forerunner of Gu cultivation.

Even Fang Yuan, who had five hundred years of experience, was small like a fly when he was facing Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

But Fang Yuan’s fear had gone away entirely.

He felt deep excitement, it was feverish!

Like a person who aspires to climb the highest mountain seeing an immeasurably tall peak, even if that was not the goal, he still feel deeply motivated and wanted to climb up, to surpass it!

Fang Yuan had long since forgotten about death.

If he died on the path of ascension, even if his corpse was desecrated and his soul was utterly destroyed, so what?

This was the goal that he pursued!

Bam!!

At this moment, Heaven Overseeing Tower burst out with a grand light, it shattered Spectral Soul’s ghostly hand and regained freedom.

It was a rank nine Immortal Gu House after all.

Inside the tower, the atmosphere was extremely heavy.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals bit their lips, seeing this overwhelming giant, they felt great pressure in their hearts.

“As expected of Spectral Soul, such vast demonic might, it is simply terrifying!” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord laughed loudly, the aura in his body rose as his silvery hair swayed, his sleeves were fluttering like a war banner.

His fighting spirit soon spread to the other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

The immortals’ eyes burned with passion.

“Heaven’s will cannot be defied!”

“Heaven cannot be defied!”

“Even if you are Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, who had once slaughtered the world and caused endless bloodshed.”

“Your era is over!”

“Even if we die today, we will protect the Great Dao of heaven!!”

“Come, activate Heaven Overseeing Tower.”

The immortals had firm determination, Heaven Overseeing Tower shined with an unprecedented dazzling light.

Spectral Soul’s left head looked at it as it growled, several hands were moving around.

The entirety of Spectral Soul moved with a speed disproportionate to its size. In an instant, several hands grabbed Heaven Overseeing Tower tightly.

More and more ghostly hands emerged, overlapping over one another, surrounding Heaven Overseeing Tower in the center.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were unrelenting, Heaven Overseeing Tower’s light shone through the crevices of the ghostly hands’ fingers, shooting out light that resembled sharp blades.

More than ten ghostly hands had layered together, but they shook vaguely.

Spectral Soul, after getting to this point, actually ignored Heaven Overseeing Tower, the three heads looked towards the sky, having grim expressions.

Even though he was several thousand meters tall, the sky was taller, it was still above his head.

As if angered by Spectral Soul’s arrogance, the deepest part of the sky was conjuring the strongest thunderstorm it could muster.

An apocalyptic feeling engulfed the immortals.

“This... is no longer a grand tribulation.”

“This is a myriad tribulation! Apocalyptic myriad tribulation!”

Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals were lost for words.

Beyond grand tribulations, there were myriad tribulations.

Myriad tribulations were terrifying, if a rank eight Gu Immortal passed all three, they would become a rank nine venerable!

Heaven was enraged, it knew that grand tribulations were useless against Spectral Soul, thus, it conjured a myriad tribulation.

Myriad tribulation — Wind Lightning Prison!

Fast! Fast! Fast!

The myriad tribulation descended faster than any Gu Immortal’s expectations.

Countless lightning bolts descended from the sky, countless tornadoes coiled around Spectral Soul’s body like pythons and dragons.

Spectral Soul’s three heads roared at the sky angrily. His six eyes shot out blood-red light that was oozing with killing intent, it had an intimidating aura.

A thousand arms moved together, ghostly hands tore the tornadoes apart while his hill-like fists punched against the lightning bolts in the sky.

Hei Lou Lan and the others could not speak anymore.

The scene in front of them was like the reenactment of a legendary tale.

The myriad tribulation was targeting Spectral Soul and the ten extreme formation. Fang Yuan and the others were inside the formation, they were rather safe.

“This myriad tribulation’s power is much higher than ordinary ones!”

“Our main body can endure it.”

“The ten extreme formation?”

“It has been refined by sixty percent already.”

“Only sixty percent... the following tribulations will become more terrifying.”

Saying this, Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals became silent.

Their real archenemy was not Heavenly Court or Fang Yuan, it was heaven!

If they were in their complete state, Shadow Sect’s group was confident. But because of Heavenly Court and Fang Yuan, they were in an incomplete state, in fact, the ten extreme formation had almost been about to break earlier, they only salvaged it by sacrificing Zombie Alliance.

“Sacred Feather City is lost, and our main body has appeared, we serve little purpose now.”

“That’s right, we should sacrifice ourselves to the ten extreme formation and save some time, that is the best way.”

“Then, what about those people?”

“Leave them to us.” Ying Wu Xie spoke this as he looked at Bo Qing.

The later tribulations would be more powerful. Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals had little use in resisting the tribulations. They might as well use themselves to accelerate the refinement of the formation.

The true identity of these Shadow Sect Gu Immortals was that they were Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s split souls.

Precisely because of this, Shadow Sect could remain mysterious and hide in the background, developing for so many years without exposing themselves.

This was also why Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals disregarded death, they were united and did not care about sacrifice.

This huge force was simply a one man show by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

After discussion, Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals, including Seven Star Child and Song Zi Xing, made the same choice as Old Man Yan Shi, they entered the formation and sacrificed themselves.

Only two people were left.

One was Ying Wu Xie, he had the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, his cultivation level also rose as time passed. At the last moments of his life, he would fully become rank nine, he was the final trump card of Spectral Soul.

The other was immortal zombie Bo Qing, he had also been one of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s split souls, but right now, he was only Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body, the remnant soul inside was not Bo Qing but Mo Yao.

Mo Yao’s remnant soul would not help in the formation even if she went in, she could only be refined as immortal material. This was not worth it, thus she stayed behind.

Currently, Spectral Soul was controlling the situation, resisting the myriad tribulation while suppressing Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing and Ying Wu Xie had no more worries, they charged towards Fang Yuan and the others.

Fang Yuan and the others were not their match, they quickly retreated.

But being encircled by the formation, and with space path methods sealed, where could they run to?

Bo Qing waved his hand and sword light flew out, chopping off Fairy Li Shan’s head as blood spewed out of her neck.

The Sword Immortal’s strength could not be resisted.

Man as Before!

At the crucial moment, Tai Bai Yun Sheng activated man as before Immortal Gu.

Fairy Li Shan returned to her former state, touching her neck, her eyes were filled with fear.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing’s arms were behind his back, he laughed arrogantly: “Merely a rank six time path Immortal Gu, how can it stop me?”

As he said this, Fairy Li Shan’s eyes widened as sword qi burst out of her body, turning her into a pile of mushy flesh.

“Little aunt!” Hei Lou Lan cried out in pain, her eyes were bright red as she charged towards Bo Qing.

Ying Wu Xie blocked Fang Yuan.

He stared at Fang Yuan intently: “Fang Yuan, you were actually able to leave my dream realm, very interesting. Then, with my rank eight cultivation level, I want to see if you can escape from it again!”

“You know my name?” Fang Yuan growled, feeling something amiss.

“Hehehe, you are an otherworldly demon, you are still useful to Shadow Sect, I will spare your life. Don’t think of using Spring Autumn Cicada, this rank six Immortal Gu has already been deduced by Old Man Yan Shi. In its current state, it cannot be used, isn’t that right?” Ying Wu Xie was confident of victory, he approached with a smile.

“What?!” Fang Yuan’s entire body shook.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1012: Murdering Kin, Slaughtering Everyone

A hundred thousand years ago.

Southern Border, Xuan Ci Mountain.

It was night time, darkness was everywhere. Wind and thunder rumbled, lightning flashed across the battlefield at times.

Partway up Xuan Ci Mountain, more than ten Gu Masters’ corpses were on the ground.

It rained heavily, but it could not wash away the thick and bloody smell of the place.

A battle had just ended, there were only two people left on the battlefield, the victor was evident.

“Hahaha!” A young man laughed while looking at the sky, his eyes were blood-red, his expression was filled with bloodthirst. He slowly walked towards the other Gu Master.

The other Gu Master was an old man, he was heavily injured and could not battle anymore. He retreated in a hurry, but he tripped and fell into the mud.

The young Gu Master slowly walked in the rain, standing in front of the old Gu Master, looking down imposingly, his gaze was cold and icy, there was not a hint of warmth.

But the old Gu Master’s gaze did not carry fear, instead, it was filled with disbelief and fury!

The elderly man shouted: “Why? Why! I am your grandfather, I brought you up, I taught you everything you know. Your accomplishments today are all because of the clan’s nurturing! Why did you attack the clan’s higher ups, why did you repay our kindness with enmity? Why? Why!”

Facing the elderly man’s questioning, the young Gu Master lowered his gaze, smiling lightly: “Why? I did not really consider that. Hmm... if I have to give a reason, maybe it is because I was annoyed.”

“Annoyed?!”

“That’s right... Saying things like, our clan is weaker than the other party, we should endure it and suffer in silence. Saying things like, we should respect the old and love the young, we should be courteous and have integrity, we should not talk back to elders. Saying things like, the clan is relying on me to defend its reputation, I need to think for the clansmen, that is how I can become a brilliant clan leader... it is really annoying! Since I was young, I have felt annoyed, I thought I could endure it, but I kept enduring and finally, I could not anymore.” The young Gu Master said as his mouth opened, revealing his pale white teeth.

“Just because of this?!” The old Gu Master was furious, he sat up in anger.

He stared with wide opened eyes as he scolded: “Why did you become like this? What were you actually thinking about? I must have been blind, I raised you for so many years in vain! Hehe, I actually wanted to hand the village to you?!”

The old Gu Master angrily rebuked until he cried, he sobbed uncontrollably.

“Enough! Enough!” The young Gu Master had a ruthless expression, the old Gu Master’s crying made him extremely annoyed.

He raised his right hand, slashing down.

Whoosh.

With a soft sound, the old Gu Master was cut in two, blood spewed out as his intestines flowed out, he had died without satisfaction.

The young Gu Master became calm, he stopped moving.

He wore a black robe, standing in the rain like a statue.

He lowered his head, looking at the corpse below him, memories of the past appeared in his mind involuntarily.

When he was a child, his grandfather had brought him to ride horses and fly kites. When his superb aptitude was revealed, his grandfather smiled in joy. When he became a Gu Master, his grandfather taught him personally. He taught him to handle the clan affairs, he taught him meticulously...

A long time passed.

The young Gu Master let out a breath, he started to laugh.

“Hehehe... hahaha.”

Soon, his laughter became louder as he raised his head, looking at the sky with his arms wide open.

His tears flowed out, he was filled with sorrow, but on his face, there was an expression of utter satisfaction.

He felt like he was someone who was drowning, suddenly, he had reached the surface of the water and struggled to get to the shore.

He breathed in deeply, he could smell a thick, bloody stench, it assaulted him, seemingly filled with the rage of his clansmen.

But he felt that this air was goddamn fresh!

“Even though I am very sad... is this freedom? Hahaha, if I had known this, I would have killed them long ago. These annoying things should have been killed long beforehand. From now on, I will kill whatever annoys me!”

The young Gu Master screamed in the rain, his excitement was evident on his face.

Crack.

A flash of lightning went by, illuminating the young Gu Master’s expression of joy.

A hundred thousand years later.

Lightning flashed and thunder roared, the young Gu Master’s face was still illuminated by this light.

But now, he was already entirely different, he was a monster that was thousands of meters tall, with three heads and a thousand arms.

“So noisy, non-stop rumbling, enough is enough!” Spectral Soul roared.

Boom!

A thousand arms exerted force, demonic aura surged and filled all the surroundings, they coiled around the tornadoes and tore them to shreds.

The impact of his actions caused the clouds over the whole area to stir.

He suppressed the wind and lightning!

The lightning bolts completely vanished under his wrath.

The clouds dispersed and the sun returned, the myriad tribulation, wind lightning prison, had been resolved by Spectral Soul!

Even a myriad tribulation could not stop him.

The might of a Demon Venerable, it was fully displayed!

All who witnessed this, be it Fang Yuan’s side, or Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, they were in shock.

“Did we succeed?” Bo Qing and Ying Wu Xie looked back, joy showing on their faces.

But immediately, the sky turned dark again, countless grey clouds gathered above Spectral Soul’s head.

The second myriad tribulation was gathering strength!

Bo Qing and Ying Wu Xie’s expressions turned dark.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals heaved a sigh of relief.

Spectral Soul’s six eyes showed a pondering expression.

Suddenly, he raised hundreds of arms, stabbing into the dark clouds at his waist.

The dark clouds were formed by the ten extreme formation, receiving Spectral Soul’s help, the clouds shook intensely.

“Oh no! He is accelerating the formation!”

“Even though I do not know what he is trying to refine, we cannot let him succeed!”

“Everyone, collaborate with me!!”

Under Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s lead, Heaven Overseeing Tower turned phantom, it flew out, bypassing the encirclement of the ghostly hands.

At the next moment, Heaven Overseeing Tower turned back into material form, with a loud sound, it propelled forward and crashed into Spectral Soul’s right head fiercely.

At once, Spectral Soul’s head caved in from the impact, his chin was slammed into the position of the cheek bones.

Spectral Soul roared furiously, a hundred hands grabbed at Heaven Overseeing Tower.

“Again!” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord shouted.

The six Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortals around him were in charge of this.

At the critical moment, Heaven Overseeing Tower turned phantom again, causing Spectral Soul’s attack to miss.

This ability to turn phantom was one of Heaven Overseeing Tower’s methods. But it was not easy to activate, a large amount of thoughts and concentration was needed, it was like Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage’s ability to absorb attacks.

Six Heavenly Court Gu Immortals turned the tower phantom twice, they were breathing heavily in exhaustion.

Heaven Overseeing Tower floated above Spectral Soul’s head in phantom form. But at this moment, a hundred of Spectral Soul’s strong dark arms shrunk immensely, turning dry, thin and long.

Obtaining his help, the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation underwent a huge change, the scattered dark clouds gathered towards the center.

At the center of the dark clouds, a round ball could be vaguely seen, it spun on its own, shining with fourteen different colored lights.

Seeing this, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord had an anxious expression, he ordered: “Chop off these arms!”

Heaven Overseeing Tower was like a rocket, it drew an eye piercing light rainbow in the sky as it slashed forward. The light rainbow cut all of Spectral Soul’s arms off upon contact.

“Ying Wu Xie, go and deal with Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals!” Immortal zombie Bo Qing called out.

It was a simple matter for them to deal with Fang Yuan’s side.

But because of a series of events, they were constantly interrupted.

Ying Wu Xie gritted his teeth, he was unwilling to leave at this moment: “Give me a moment to make Fang Yuan sleep first.”

Saying so, he activated the rank eight immortal killer move — Lead Soul Into Dream.

Fang Yuan could not dodge, he was dragged into the dream realm.

At the pavilion in the center of the lake, the music from the zither could be heard.

Fang Yuan met Star Constellation Immortal Venerable again.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Fang Yuan hurriedly activated his dream path killer move, but the dream realm held firm, all he saw were transparent ripples in his vision.

His unravel dream might work against the dream realm, but it was only rank six. In contrast, Ying Wu Xie's killer move was rank eight.

The difference between the two was too vast, Fang Yuan could not unravel the dream realm.

At once, Fang Yuan's heart sank to rock bottom.

The zither music continued, as Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled at Fang Yuan gently, she sang with a soft voice.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly, he knew that he had lost!

Phantom form!

Heaven Overseeing Tower dodged Spectral Soul's attack again.

But Spectral Soul's ghostly hands did not stop, they drove into the ten extreme formation.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was prepared to attack again, but one of Spectral Soul's heads opened its eyes and gazed at Heaven Overseeing Tower, immobilizing it.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was unable to change out of its phantom form!

"Hahaha, this time, why don't you try and escape?!" Ying Wu Xie placed his hands at his waist, laughing smugly.

"Fang Yuan!" Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted.

But Fang Yuan was deep in sleep, he could not be woken up.

Bo Qing was about to kill Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, when there was suddenly a huge suction force from the ground.

The immortals were caught off guard, they were all sucked into the ground, their legs were deeply buried in the ground, a strong force was restricting them, preventing them from moving.

Grand tribulation — Earth Collapse!

Bo Qing and Ying Wu Xie were shocked, they did not expect that while the myriad tribulation was dealing with Spectral Soul, there was actually a grand tribulation waiting to ambush them.

"Why are they not restricted?!" Soon, both of them were shocked again.

They saw that after landing on the ground, Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng regained their freedom, they could move freely.

Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were shocked and joyful.

The latter quickly grabbed Fang Yuan, who was sleeping, and retreated rapidly.

What made them even more joyful was that after the ten extreme formation created the mysterious ball, the force that restricted the space around them vanished. If Fang Yuan woke up, they would be able to use Fixed Immortal Travel and escape.

But Fang Yuan was deep in sleep.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing’s eyes shined with deep killing intent, he was about to use his sword path Immortal Gu, when he felt that the thoughts in his mind, just as they appeared, were sucked out and into the ground.

Evidently, the power of the grand tribulation earth collapse had a variety of targets. Not only could it target the Gu Immortal’s body, it could even affect their thoughts, wills, and emotions.

Just like this, Bo Qing could only watch as Hei Lou Lan and the others escaped from under his nose!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1013: Grey Memory

This grand tribulation earth collapse was completely unreasonable!

Not only were the Gu Immortals trapped in the ground, their thoughts were also interrupted.

Without thoughts to mobilize their Gu worms, what methods could Gu Immortals use?

Unless they could use wisdom path methods to resist it.

But the condition for that was, the wisdom path method had to be set up in advance. Otherwise, once they fell into earth collapse, even if the Gu Immortal had a wisdom path method to use, they could not unleash it.

Taking action in advance was the only way.

Without the initiative, one was doomed.

This showed the power of the grand tribulation, one could just imagine the might of the myriad tribulation.

“Damn it!!” Ying Wu Xie struggled continuously, there were few results from his actions, he sank deeper and deeper as he screamed.

“Stop struggling, stop thinking. It will make our situation worse, we cannot deal with this at the moment.” Immortal zombie Bo Qing who was beside him said in a calm tone.

Or strictly speaking, Mo Yao’s remnant soul was very calm.

She was experienced.

When she was alive, she helped her lover Bo Qing with his tribulation, the myriad tribulation that she had seen before was more terrifying than this!

Comparatively, the grand tribulation earth collapse was harmless and gentle.

“We can only hope that our main body saves us.” Ying Wu Xie sighed, looking at Spectral Soul.

Only to see that Spectral Soul was also sinking, half of his huge legs were already below the surface of the ground. Not just that, his left leg’s lower portion was tightly sewed onto the ground.

This was the result of an earlier attack by the Immortal Gu House Embroidered Tower.

Even though Spectral Soul was powerful and mighty, and had used his full efforts, he could not control the entire situation.

At this moment, out of his six eyes, two were staring at Heaven Overseeing Tower, preventing it from moving, the other four were staring at the sky.

At the top of the sky, grey colored clouds were growing in thickness, they descended slowly.

The second myriad tribulation had started.

But it was different from the first, wind lightning prison, that was extremely fast beyond one’s reaction speed, in an instant, the wind and lightning would approach a person and attack them.

This myriad tribulation however, was very slow.

It was so slow that anyone who was undergoing the tribulation could retaliate in many ways.

But Spectral Soul did not move.

He stood quietly, like a solemn mountain.

“Did our main body get hit already?” Ying Wu Xie shouted, looking extremely anxious: “This is such a good chance, you have to retaliate!!”

But until the grey cloud completely shrouded Spectral Soul, he did not move, he stared at Heaven Overseeing Tower, controlling it firmly.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were troubled.

They used the phantom method to make Heaven Overseeing Tower evade Spectral Soul’s attacks. But to think that Spectral Soul’s phantom path attainment level was beyond expectations, he was certainly a great grandmaster.

Heaven Overseeing Tower’s phantom tactic was taken advantage of by Spectral Soul, becoming unable to return to its normal form. Then how could it fight or do anything in that state?

“The myriad tribulation is coming!” Ying Wu Xie gritted his teeth, looking at the grey cloud descend slowly.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing squinted, his muscles were tense.

The grand tribulation earth collapse was enough to make them defenseless and helpless, now that the myriad tribulation had descended, was it the end for Bo Qing and Ying Wu Xie?

The grey cloud descended, but it caused no harm.

“What is going on? Is this a harmless myriad tribulation?!” Ying Wu Xie was nervous, seeing that there was no disturbance, he touched his body all over as he cried out in suspicion.

Bo Qing did not answer him.

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals recognized this myriad tribulation, but Ying Wu Xie was unable to obtain the answer.

"Is this grey memory?" The Heavenly Court Gu Immortal who recognized it cried out.

"What is grey memory?"

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortal recalled: "When I was young, I had once obtained the inheritance of a rank eight Gu Immortal. In the past, this rank eight Gu Immortal failed to pass a myriad tribulation, grey memory. During his final moments, he left behind his inheritance. This myriad tribulation is harmless to the body, but it draws out the person's deepest memories. These memories were either those which had caused huge pain to the Gu Immortal's mind, or were a trauma in their life."

"Don't look down on this myriad tribulation. That rank eight senior did not even last fifteen minutes under this myriad tribulation, he lost all his motivation and became dejected without any fighting spirit left in him, he lost all interest in life."

"The saying goes, you are your worst enemy. Looking at Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he was invincible in the world, then wasn't his biggest enemy himself? For everyone in the world, even if we become a rank nine venerable, we will have a period of time when we were weak. We cultivate step by step, becoming stronger along the way. Spectral Soul Demon Venerable slaughtered people over the world, he had an immense murderous nature, people guessed that he might have suffered some trauma when he was young."

"Who does not have any painful memories in the deepest part of their mind? Who does not have any shameful memories that they cannot express? Who has never made any decision that went against their nature? Along the way, who has never made a mistake? Amazing, simply amazing! This myriad tribulation is incredible! Perhaps even Spectral Soul is going to falter here."

Myriad tribulation – Grey Memory.

Because he recognized this myriad tribulation, Spectral Soul did not move.

He knew that no attacks could resolve this tribulation. Only by entering it and facing his past, all the shame, trauma, humiliation and anger, could he pass this tribulation.

The grey clouds coiling around his body suddenly had bright lights, there was even sound emitting from them.

What was presented in front of the immortals was a scene from Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's childhood.

"Kill her! Kill her! Kill her!"

A band of Gu Masters surrounded a family of three, their eyes were reddened as they shouted ruthlessly.

"Father! You cannot kill mother!!" A child protected his heavily injured mother, yelling with all his energy.

"Hmph, all demonic path members should be executed! We of the righteous path have to uphold justice and slay members of the demonic path!! Why can't we kill her? Not only can we kill her, we must kill her. Only by killing her can our clan’s humiliation be purged!!” The old Gu Master who was leading the group, said with a righteous tone, he shouted angrily, he was the grandfather of the boy, the leader of the clan.

The clan leader’s words received a warm cheer from all of the clan elders and elite Gu Masters.

They raised their arms and shouted.

“Kill!” Kill! “Kill!”

“Kill!” Kill! “Kill!”

Whoosh.

With a soft sound, fresh blood spewed out.

The boy quickly turned around, at the next moment, his eyes opened wide, as his pupils shrunk to pin size.

He saw his father had moved in front of him, his face was red and he was gritting his teeth, there were tears in his eyes as he suppressed his intense emotions. The dagger that he was holding had already stabbed deeply into the heart of his beloved wife.

The boy opened his mouth and wanted to scream.

But he did not make any sound.

From that day onwards, he became very quiet.

Evidently, this boy was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable when he was a child.

Under the influence of grey memory, his childhood trauma was no longer hidden, it was displayed in front of everyone.

The grey fog moved, as another scene appeared.

Several years had passed.

The young boy had grown slightly, he was standing in front of his grandfather respectfully.

His grandfather, who was the clan leader, drank a sip of tea, asking casually: “I let you read about the history of our clan, what insight have you gained? Come, tell grandfather.”

“Grandfather.” The boy first greeted, before saying: “I have had many gains these last few days, I have learned much.”

“Oh? Tell me.” The old man asked in curiosity.

“Looking at history, I realized that there is one universal law in this world, that is – to kill.” The boy said calmly.

“Kill?” The old man frowned, he replied in a grim tone: “Explain it to me.”

“Yes.” The boy continued: “When we are hungry and need food for our bellies, we kill prey. When we have enemies, we kill our enemies and eliminate the threat. When the world is peaceful, the ruler will kill his meritorious subjects to gain authority and control...” The boy said slowly, he did not notice that the old man’s frown was getting deeper.

The boy continued: “Throughout history, it is a case of you killing me, and me killing you. What is a hero? They are someone who has killed the most enemies. What is a loser? They are someone who could not kill their opponent and got killed instead.”

“Actually, even though kill is a word, it has very deep meaning behind it. How to kill, should one use Gu worms and do it themselves, or hire other Gu Masters to accomplish the deed? Sometimes, we cannot kill outright, because that would attract trouble, so we choose to assassinate. There are many forms of assassination, for example...”

“Enough!” The old man bellowed, in his anger, he smashed the cup on the ground.

The fragments shot past the boy’s face as a wound was created, blood flowed slowly.

The old man stood up, pointing at the boy, shouting in anger: “I let you study and read, it is for you to admire the achievements of our clan’s ancestors, and learn about the glorious history of our clan. I want you to learn about courtesy and integrity, I want you to understand the glory of the righteous path. And you actually learned about killing? What sort of twisted logic is this? You, you, you, you are confined for a month, stay in the house and reflect upon your mistake!!”

“Yes, grandfather.” The boy replied, he spoke softly, but there was a stubborn light in his eyes.

The grey fog moved, as the scene changed again.

Several years later, the boy was already a rank one Gu Master.

“Hehehe, I finally refined hidden aura Gu today, I will give grandfather a shock by hiding in the study room!” The youngster sneaked into the room.

“Eh? No, I am only a rank one Gu Master, while grandfather is rank four. It is very easy for him to find me. I should hide behind the secret door, in the hidden tunnel, and jump out to scare grandfather later.” The youngster changed his mind, he opened the secret door and hid behind it.

Not long after, he heard a commotion.

He did not dare to open the secret door, he could only listen to the voices.

Two people walked into the study room.

His grandfather walked with heavy and hurried steps, he was furious.

“This traitorous son! He really wants to rebel? He wants to harm his father?!” The old clan leader was enraged, he slammed the table and caused a huge impact.

“Clan leader, the evidence is conclusive. News that you have obtained an eighty year lifespan Gu has already spread out. It is confirmed that young clan leader wants to harm you.”

A hoarse voice could be heard.

The youngster could recognize instantly that this was a certain clan elder, the personal aide of the clan leader.

“Hmph! This traitorous son, he wants to seize my authority, how can that be possible?!” The clan leader shouted.

“Clan leader, there are many higher ups supporting young clan leader.” The hoarse voice said again.

There was a brief silence.

The youngster’s grandfather’s voice said solemnly: “My son’s influence is not to be underestimated. If we suppress him openly, not only will our reputation in the righteous path be damaged, there will be internal strife that would weaken the clan. Hmm... go and prepare, we will strike first and find a chance to assassinate him. Once he is dead, as long as we kill this traitorous son, the other clan elders will have no choice but to give up.”

“Clan leader is wise!”

Behind the secret door, in the hidden tunnel, the youngster covered his mouth, his entire body was shivering intensely.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1014: Food Path Inheritance

Tai Bai Yun Sheng carried Fang Yuan as he sprinted and escaped.

Hei Lou Lan took one final look at the grey fog, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s pitiful childhood made Hei Lou Lan feel a sense of understanding due to her similar experience.

For some reason, the grand tribulation, earth collapse, did not affect them.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan made use of this chance to escape, running away while feeling shock and joy.

The ten extreme formation was in its critical moment, it could not restrict the surroundings, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan escaped very easily.

Soon, the battle of Yi Tian Mountain was thrown to the back of their minds.

In a few minutes, they could no longer see the grey clouds in the sky.

“Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan, wake up!” Hei Lou Lan slapped Fang Yuan’s face, but he was not responding, he was sound asleep.

Without Fang Yuan’s Fixed Immortal Travel, they could not leave Southern Border.

Unless they crossed the regional walls.

But that would cause too much losses.

“Gu Immortals from Northern Plains?!” A voice could be heard from afar.

Next, three Southern Border Gu Immortals landed.

Seeing Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng in a pathetic state full of injuries, the leading Gu Immortal was shocked: “Looking at your injuries, did you come from Yi Tian Mountain? Speak! What actually happened there?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had an expression of wariness.

Hei Lou Lan smiled coldly: “You want to know what happened, go there and see for yourselves.”

The three Southern Border Gu Immortals snorted, they did not have high cultivation level, they were here to investigate because the Gu Immortal experts of their respective clans had gone to Yi Tian Mountain and lost all traces of communication with them.

No matter which super force it was, they were very concerned about the ownership of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

Furthermore, Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s auras were very weak, they were covered in injuries and were not in their best condition.

“We are asking you to speak, you had better obey us.”

“Northern Plains Gu Immortals coming to Southern Border and still acting so arrogantly!”

“Attack!! Take down the three of them.”

Thus, a battle occurred out of nowhere.

And in Yi Tian Mountain’s battlefield, the grey fog was still spreading.

The situation was in a stalemate.

No matter how hard the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals tried, they could not go out of their phantom form.

Ying Wu Xie and Bo Qing were all immobilized on the ground because of earth collapse.

Waves of grey fog coiled around immortal zombie Bo Qing as they shined with bright lights, showing constantly changing scenes.

These were Mo Yao’s memories, as a variant human, she had suffered a fate of being ostracized.

Speaking of which, it was strange, Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body actually had Mo Yao’s remnant soul. What happened in the past to Bo Qing during his tribulation was unknown.

But Mo Yao, who was now present, had to endure the attack, because her remnant soul was in the grey fog, the most painful memories in her mind was drawn out.

“Hmph.” Immortal zombie Bo Qing snickered.

Facing these sad traumas in her life, Mo Yao’s remnant soul showed her strong-willed personality.

“Strange, why are you unaffected by the grey fog?” Bo Qing looked at Ying Wu Xie who was beside him.

Ying Wu Xie was staring at Bo Qing’s grey fog intently.

“I don’t know.” Ying Wu Xie shook his head, he pointed: “Yours is pretty interesting.”

Bo Qing snorted: “It seems that because you were just born, and only have eighteen hours to live, you had no time to experience these things.”

Saying this, Bo Qing’s face was full of worries.

The myriad tribulation grey memory was not a threat to Ying Wu Xie. That was because he was too young, he did not have much life experience.

But it was a completely different story for Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

“This second myriad tribulation is truly vicious! Once you are within the grey fog, not only are your past traumas revealed, the deepest emotions in your mind will be drawn out, you will experience the emotions that you once felt. My memories have already caused me to feel upset. If the recollection was on my lover, I might... If I am already this affected by it, then for Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, who has had a longer life and much more experience, how would he deal with it?” Thinking about this, Mo Yao’s remnant soul looked up by moving the immortal zombie body.

Inside the grey fog, Spectral Soul was like a tall mountain, he was unmoving, like a dormant volcano.

Surrounding him, the grey fog was rumbling, countless rainbow lights were shining. This fog showed all kinds of images, Spectral Soul had already become a Gu Immortal.

Inside Earth Abyss.

“Youngster, you want to obtain my inheritance?” In the darkness, two eyes shined brightly like lanterns.

“Yes.” The Gu Immortal spoke concisely. He wore a black robe with messy shoulder length hair, his expression was cold, bright light shined in his eyes from time to time.

“Hehehe... hahaha!” In the darkness, a crazed laugh could be heard, it got louder and louder, it caused one’s eardrums to tremble.

After a while, the laughter stopped.

“It seems you have made your decision! Then this is your inheritance test. Roar!” Following a loud roar, a strange beast came out of the darkness.

This beast had four limbs, its body was covered in scales, it had a crocodile’s head.

Its huge crocodile-like mouth had sharp teeth inside, they were shining with cold light, like blades of daggers.

Above its head, it had two curly dragon horns.

But from its body, there was the aura of a Gu Immortal.

Evidently, this was a beastman Gu Immortal.

Beastmen were a type of variant human, in history, they were the most targeted during the era of the three Demon Venerables. Who could have thought that Spectral Soul encountered a beastman Gu Immortal during his life.

This beastman Gu Immortal with dragon horns and a crocodile’s head opened his mouth, biting at the Gu Immortal’s soul.

But Gu Immortal Spectral Soul did not dodge or evade.

The beastman bit, tearing apart Spectral Soul’s arm.

Blood spewed out.

Crack, crack.

The beastman chewed, under the grinding of his sharp teeth, Spectral Soul’s arm was torn to shreds, blood oozed out of the space between his teeth, flowing everywhere.

Gulp, the beastman swallowed, sending the blood and flesh, along with the bones, down its throat.

“Delicious! I have not eaten such fresh food in a long time!” The beastman Gu Immortal shouted, pouncing again.

Spectral Soul did not retreat, he allowed him to continue biting.

The beastman Gu Immortal quickly ate his other arm, and his two legs, devouring them.

Assaulted by intense pain, Spectral Soul was expressionless, he did not even frown at all.

Instead, the beastman Gu Immortal showed some shock on his face.

“You are different from those previous people.” The beastman Gu Immortal stopped eating, he assessed Spectral Soul as he spoke with a tone of praise: “You have no emotion of fear at all. You know, I invented food path, I did a lot of research on eating. Many people wanted to obtain my inheritance, they allowed me to eat them, they looked very tough on the outside with no expression, but they were filled with pain and fear on the inside.”

“Don’t think that emotions can be concealed so easily. Actually, this kind of flesh tastes sour and disgusting, it is not delicious at all, I can tell when I eat it.”

“Then, is my flesh delicious?” Spectral Soul asked.

The beastman Gu Immortal frowned, he spoke: “Honestly speaking, your flesh feels cold, your bones are too tough, they are not delicious. They taste like the icicles that I ate during my childhood, when I was hunted down by you humans in frozen lands while escaping in hunger.”

“But forget it. Hahaha, I have been trapped here, I have not eaten anything fresh in a long time. How can I not be satisfied with this? Furthermore, what I love eating most are the heart, lungs, liver, and kidneys, they are my favorites, hahaha. Lad, you want to obtain my inheritance, there is a price to pay! Don’t die at the last moment!”

Saying this, the beastman Gu Immortal scratched, tearing open Spectral Soul’s stomach, pulling out his large and small intestines.

Next, in front of Spectral Soul, he sucked them into his mouth, crying out that they were delicious.

Spectral Soul had a pale face, but his expression was still cold, as if those were not his intestines.

Deep in the beastman Gu Immortal’s eyes, there was a flash of panic.

He cackled, brandishing his claws, pointing at Spectral Soul’s chest: “Next, I will eat your lungs, you have to endure it!”

“What can I not endure?” Spectral Soul smiled coldly: “In this special environment, even if I am eaten until only my head is left, I can still grow back. And by then, I would obtain your inheritance. After that, you would lose all value to me, you should worry about yourself.”

The beastman Gu Immortal’s movements froze for a second, he went into a rage, his eyes were spewing fire: “Lad! You talk big! I want to see how long you can endure this for?”

He purposely moved slowly, causing friction in Spectral Soul’s body, making him feel that his intestines and organs were being held, and his bones were being scratched, to try to generate fear and panic in him.

The beastman Gu Immortal took out Spectral Soul’s organs and ate them one by one. In front of him, he opened his mouth from time to time, letting Spectral Soul see the miserable state of his organs that were crushed to bits.

Spectral Soul’s calm expression slowly changed, turning into one of interest.

The beastman Gu Immortal saw this gaze and had a change of expression: “What are you thinking of?”

“I find it interesting.”

“I am eating your flesh, I am eating your organs, you find it interesting?” The beastman Gu Immortal looked at Spectral Soul with a disbelieving expression.

“Of course, eating is natural in this world, but on the other side of eating, there is killing. We eat meat, we have to hunt. When we eat vegetables, we have to uproot them, that is also killing. Even if we eat nothing but wind and drink nothing but water, we are still swallowing and digesting them. All in all, eating is killing. Of course, killing is not just eating, thus, your food path is inferior to my killing path.”

“I have eaten many things, but I have never been eaten by another individual. You are eating me now, that is the same as killing me. Similarly, I have killed many life forms, but I have never been slowly killed by anyone else. This allowed me to understand the feeling of being killed, it is a form of enjoyment. Those who kill have to be prepared to be killed. Simply by killing others, I cannot fully comprehend killing. Thank you for letting me comprehend a deeper meaning in killing.”

The beastman Gu Immortal heard this and opened his eyes wide, he looked at Spectral Soul like he was seeing a nightmare, a monster!

Cold sweat began to form on his head.

He felt that he could not swallow the young man in front of him anymore.

He gulped, feeling that his throat was blocked.

“Lad! I will eat your upper body now, let’s see how arrogant you can be!!” The beastman Gu Immortal shouted, devouring with a frenzied gaze, his eyes were reddened.

Soon, Gu Immortal Spectral Soul had only his head left.

Seeing this, all of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, along with immortal zombie Bo Qing and Ying Wu Xie, were silent.

Even though he only had a head left, Gu Immortal Spectral Soul was still calm and at peace.

“This, what sort of willpower...” Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were lost for words.

Earlier, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortal who was very confident of the myriad tribulation grey memory saw this and his expression turned dark, he lost his confidence.

But at this moment, the beastman Gu Immortal laughed wildly.

He laughed in an insane manner, he was so happy, tears were flowing out of his eyes.

It was filled with a tone of mockery.

“Hahaha, you were deceived, but don’t be upset, you are the two hundred and seventieth person who was deceived. Hahaha!”

Spectral Soul’s gaze flashed: “Is this inheritance fake?”

“Of course it is real! Back then, I cultivated to rank eight, Barbarian Jiu Lie tried to trap me instead of killing me, he was after my food path, hmph! I could not beat him, but he could not obtain what he wanted so easily either. I established an agreement with him, I would pass the food path inheritance to future humans, but not him. And the inheritor must endure my eating test.”

“After making the agreement, I have been trapped here, many humans came here in order to pass the test, to obtain knowledge of food path. But even Barbarian Jiu Lie could not understand my true ability. Hehehe, my entire body is full of food path dao marks, I have reached a level that has never been achieved by anyone before me. I can consume rocks and wind to fill my stomach. I can even consume Gu worms to increase the dao marks on me. I ate dao marks non-stop, and finally, after a thousand years, I broke the agreement that we had made.”

“Hahaha! So do you get it? Next, I will eat your head and turn you into my nutrients and nourish me, to allow me to recover. Don’t worry, I will remember you, you are one of the most unique among the pitiful people that I have eaten.”

“So that is it.” Spectral Soul still had a plain expression, he was very calm.

The beastman Gu Immortal’s expression froze, he grabbed his throat, shouting anxiously: “What is going on? What is going on?!”

Spectral Soul laughed coldly: “I would never allow another person to determine my life and death. Not to mention an old agreement. You think my flesh is so easy to consume? Every piece of flesh that you eat contains a part of my soul. You are a great expert in food path, but coincidentally, I also have some attainment in soul path.”

“Soul path? When did such a path appear?! The splitting of the soul will cause you pain that is immensely higher than the tearing of your flesh!”

“I’ll let you know, I am the founder of soul path. As for that bit of pain... only by experiencing it will I enjoy the amazing feeling of killing, isn’t that right?” Spectral Soul said as the beastman Gu Immortal’s expression turned ashen, he stopped moving.

He was dead.

His eyes were opened wide, staring at Gu Immortal Spectral Soul.

Even though the other party only had his head left.

In the beastman Gu Immortal’s eyes, there was only fear.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1015: Scenes of Past Events

Not only the beastman Gu Immortal, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals who saw this also felt immensely fearful.

“Demon! Demon!”

“This Spectral Soul is completely crazed, even though there was a cause, he is filled with demonic thoughts, he thinks that nothing cannot be killed, he thinks that the greatest joy is killing, he thinks that the Dao of heaven and earth is essentially killing.”

“No wonder he could become a Demon Venerable, and caused the greatest bloodshed in the world! Even the pain of tearing his soul apart felt splendid to him. He seems cold and logical, but he is actually crazy to the extreme. Nobody can save him, his mind is incapable of redemption!”

“I have to agree, an invincible mindset is the basis for becoming invincible. He has such a mindset, it is simply demonic, but because of this, his mind will never waver, everything in this world will only reinforce that misconceived ideology!”

“The myriad tribulation grey memory cannot stop him. Even though he is not a Demon Venerable now, and cannot be ‘physically invincible’, he is still mentally invincible!”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals discussed, they were anxious, fearful, disdainful, and filled with hatred, all of these were on their expressions.

Chirp, chirp...

Just at this moment, in the sky, there was the clear chirping of birds.

Heavenly Court’s immortals looked up, feeling great joy.

“Myriad tribulation!”

“Another myriad tribulation!”

“The myriad tribulation grey memory is not over yet, but another myriad tribulation is on the way already.”

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable is defying heaven, once he revives, the world would undergo bloodshed again. Heaven would not allow him to do so, thus it caused these immense tribulations. He will definitely not succeed!”

The chirping of birds became louder and more frequent.

The sky was shining with a jade light.

Large groups of birds entered a formation and charged down.

“Myriad tribulation — Grand Clear Space.” One of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals recognized this.

They seemed like birds, but it was actually the power of space path. Wherever the flying birds went, space would be cleared out, nothing could exist there, it was a terrifying power that could not be stopped.

“This is grand clear space? In history, there was a Northern Plains predecessor who failed the tribulation but survived it, with an inspiration, he created the immortal killer move three winged green bird. His descendants obtained it and had once dominated Northern Plains.”

“That’s right, this is the tribulation!”

Under the expectant gazes of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, the jade flying birds flew down, circling around Spectral Soul.

Wherever the flying birds went, long and deep wounds were formed, as if they were sharp blades.

Wounds soon formed all over Spectral Soul’s body, it was a terrible sight.

Spectral Soul had no reaction, but Ying Wu Xie was screaming on the ground.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing was also showing nervousness on his face.

The grey fog surrounded Spectral Soul, its power was seemingly causing him to dwell in his memories.

A vast amount of rainbow fog that was thousands of meters tall rumbled in the surrounding hundred li, countless scenes were shown, they displayed Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s rich life experiences in front of everyone.

Suddenly, behind Spectral Soul’s head, rainbow fog expanded, forming a huge veil that pushed away all of the surrounding scenes.

In the image, there was an abundance of green light, this was a green heaven fragment world of the immemorial nine heavens!

A group of Gu Masters were inside fighting with a group of featherman Gu Immortals.

Spectral Soul, who was still a Gu Immortal, was also among them. He wore a black robe and had black hair that swayed with the wind, killing intent was oozing.

“Humans, you are too much!” The featherman Gu Immortal leader cried out, throwing out an Immortal Gu House.

It was Sacred Feather City.

More than ten featherman Gu Immortals flew into Sacred Feather City, as the city burst out with a glorious light.

The human Gu Immortals could not beat them, they were utterly defeated.

Gu Immortal Spectral Soul was unable to resist the might of the Immortal Gu House, he was heavily injured, barely surviving.

Next, the scene vanished, turning into countless smaller fragmented images. Tens of thousands of images surrounded Spectral Soul, encircling him tightly, almost without any gaps.

All of the experiences in his life, as long as there were emotions in them, they were shown, everyone was watching with dazed expressions, they could not keep up with the number of scenes.

Spectral Soul’s entire life was condensed endlessly.

Everyone could see that he walked further and further on the demonic path, his killing nature also intensified, as his cultivation level rose.

A huge screen of fog was formed, pushing away the surrounding images again.

The position was at Spectral Soul’s left leg.

Seeing this, the immortals had an understanding: The larger the scene that came from the rainbow fog, the more variation there was in Spectral Soul’s emotions at the time.

Thus, the moment the scene started, everyone’s attention was drawn.

This was a silver-white space.

It was the location of a Thieving Heaven true inheritance.

Gu Immortal Spectral Soul barged in, arrogance could be felt from his expression, he spoke to himself: “Thieving Heaven, even though you were a Demon Venerable, you are already dead. Why don’t you leave your inheritance to me.”

However, the Thieving Heaven true inheritances were left for otherworldly demons.

Gu Immortal Spectral Soul was not an otherworldly demon, he was not qualified to inherit it.

He tried all kinds of methods, but he ended up spitting out blood, his expression was pale as he returned empty handed.

...

When Spectral Soul became a Demon Venerable, he dominated the world, slaughtering the masses.

He stood on a peak, his hair was white as snow.

Looking afar, looking at a field of corpses, looking at the perishing life forms.

This was recorded in human history, Spectral Soul destroyed a certain super force and slaughtered over ten million people just to obtain lifespan Gu.

He played with the lifespan Gu in his hands, while his expression was perplexed.

He looked over the scenery, muttering to himself: “Heaven, if you want to kill us, why did you create us?”

Even though he had strength that was invincible in the world, he was perplexed.

His killing path could not explain this.

...

Another huge screen of fog appeared.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable came to a Thieving Heaven true inheritance space, the same place he had once went to in his youth.

Thieving Heaven's will formed in front of him: "Anyone who can become a venerable has an outstanding aspect. I hope you can be magnanimous and leave this true inheritance for a fated person."

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's hands were behind his back, he had a cold expression: "When I was young, I had desired everything in here. But now, I have already obtained my Dao, no matter how precious the things are here, they are of no attraction to me. I came here because I have a question."

Thieving Heaven's will smiled: "I understand. Those who have reached our heights will have questions about heaven and earth. How about this, I will share my experiences with you, as a reference."

"Okay." Spectral Soul Demon Venerable nodded.

Thieving Heaven's will continued: "You might already know, I am not from this world, I am what you would call an otherworldly demon."

"The world I came from is different from here in both its foundation and scenery. To me, I am only a traveler here, I want to go home, I have strived over my whole life for that goal."

"My real name is Ben Jie Sun, in my original appearance, I had blond hair and blue eyes. Before coming here, I had a beautiful fiancée, we were preparing to get married. I had a high status in society, that was because I was a mecha operator."

"Meka?" Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's eyes were shining with deep interest.

Even though he had traveled over the five regions, this was the first time he was hearing about other worlds.

"Mecha... you can think of it as a puppet, or a suit of armor. A human stays inside and manipulates it to unleash immense battle strength." Thieving Heaven's will explained vaguely.

...

A moment later, another scene appeared.

Within Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable held Giant Sun's true inheritance, looking at it as he sighed deeply: "This possession method can extend lifespan, but possessing a body using the soul is only a desperate method, death is still unavoidable. To extend one's life, lifespan Gu is the best option. The path of a Gu Immortal is filled with calamities and tribulations, it is hard for the body to resist them, and it is hard for the soul to exist independently, the maintenance of longevity means the defiance of heaven... it is hard, hard, hard!

"Giant Sun, oh Giant Sun, even if you created Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and attempted to plunder the lifespan Gu in Northern Plains. But heaven's will is vicious, fewer and fewer lifespan Gu are being produced, even if you obtain all of the lifespan Gu in the world, so what?"

"Heaven's will dictates the production of lifespan Gu. To live a long life, the crucial thing is heaven's will."

...

At the river of time.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable stood in the air, looking at a red lotus that was floating on the river's surface.

His entire body was emitting a thick darkness that was corroding the red lotus.

Eventually, after exerting all his efforts, he successfully left a ghost face on the surface of the red lotus.

"Throughout history, the most mysterious Red Lotus Demon Venerable..." Spectral Soul Demon Venerable sighed, his face was full of fatigue as his eyes shined brightly: "I want to know, why did you purposely stop and leave behind the heavily injured fate Immortal Gu?"

A long time passed.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's expression was mixed with shock and bafflement.

He muttered.

"Star Constellation Immortal Venerable truly made a deep scheme!"

"So only a complete otherworldly demon can thoroughly destroy fate."

"Even Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable is only half an otherworldly demon. He is similar to the immortal killer move soul replacement that I created, his soul is from another world, but his body was born here."

"I want to extend my lifespan, I have to defy heaven, and go against heaven's will. Unfortunately, heaven's will has no soul, I cannot kill it. Maybe with the help of this Red Lotus true inheritance, I can become half an otherworldly demon..."

...

In a dark secret room.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable sat on the ground, there were countless Gu formations in front of him.

Inside the Gu formation, there were countless corpses, including men, women, young and old, and all sorts of variant humans.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had disheveled hair now, his hands and body were covered in blood, he was skinny like a skeleton, his eyes were deeply swollen, but they were shining with brilliant light.

He was staring at a book fixedly.

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

"The Legends of Ren Zu, The Legends of Ren Zu, to think that I only truly comprehended you today. You are an exposition of human path, you are the true inheritance left behind by Ren Zu."

"With methods of human path, I can create a completely new body, after soul replacement, I will become half an otherworldly demon!"

"Maybe not just that, I can still..."

"It is a pity. It is too late, it is too late! I am heavily injured beyond treatment, death is approaching me.”

Seeing this, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were deeply in shock.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was invincible in the world, but he actually died from injuries. Who hurt him? Or did he injure himself after testing out human path methods?

The myriad tribulation grand clear space was still continuing.

More than half of Spectral Soul’s thousand arms were already chopped off by the jade flying birds. His body was covered in wounds, but he was not resisting at all.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1016: Over A Long Time

There was another scene.

Inside the door of life and death.

In Obsession Death Domain.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had no body, what was displayed was the soul with three heads and a thousand arms.

He looked at his appearance in the lake, muttering to himself: “Very good. I created a method of soul devouring based on food path, it not only let me return to my peak condition, I could even devour the souls of other Gu Immortals to obtain their memories and cultivation experience over their lives! Hehehe, is this a blessing in disguise...”

“But from start to finish, I did not find the souls of any other Immortal Venerables or Demon Venerables. I can understand why Star Constellation is not here. Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable is not here too, did he return home successfully?”

“It is time to return to the world of the living. Without Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po valley obstructing me, it is much easier for me to get out of the door of life and death compared to Ren Zu. But my main body cannot move out yet, I should send out some split souls to pave the way for my main body.”

“Hmph! When I regain control of the world, I will deal with you.”

Spectral Soul looked at a special soul. He was sleeping soundly, his body was emitting a golden luster, he was like a sun that had sunken into a lake.

...

In the following scene, there was no Spectral Soul, but seven mortals instead.

“We can see the light of day again, this is amazing.” Among the seven people, one looked up at the sky.

“Even though we are now mortals, we have our main body’s cultivation experiences, we can definitely become Gu Immortals.”

“Due to the obstruction of Reverse Flow River, only seven of us made it out, even though there were ten at the start.”

“It is going to take some effort to let our main body come out. If anyone finds out, it will be troublesome. They will not sit around and watch.”

“To play it safe, we should separate and develop in all five regions secretly. We will communicate once in a while.”

“In that case, why don’t we create an organization to deceive the masses?”

“That’s true, let’s call it Shadow Sect, we will be as unnoticed as shadows, yet we are everywhere. One day, the entire world will be shrouded in our shadows!”

“Alright, the seven of us will be called Red, Orange, Yellow, Green, Azure, Blue, and Purple. Like seven of the immemorial heavens, we have once stood at the peak, but have now fallen. This is to warn ourselves that we cannot be lazy or complacent!”

...

“Sword Immortal Bo Qing is actually a split soul of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!” Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals cried out.

Among them, an old woman said in shame: “There is no denying it with the evidence in front of us. My Spirit Affinity House is at fault for failing to investigate properly.”

“The methods of a Demon Venerable are almost impossible to defend against. Even in Heavenly Court, his split soul spies were lurking here, not to mention Spirit Affinity House. It was fortunate that Tower Lord noticed it and used Heaven Overseeing Tower to expose these shocking secrets, that gave us the chance to stop this terrifying demon!”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal exclaimed.

In this situation, even though they could not do anything, Spectral Soul’s condition was not good either.

Every since grey memory descended, Spectral Soul had been standing still, allowing the myriad tribulation grand clear space to assault him, he was already covered in countless injuries.

“Azure.” On the ground, Mo Yao’s remnant soul, who was inside Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body, felt deep emotions as she saw the young and handsome Azure in the image.

Around her, grey fog rumbled as a scene in the depths of her memory was shown.

All around there were ruins, there were countless mangled corpses lying on the bloody ground.

There seemed to have been an intense battle earlier.

“Husband! Don’t die, you cannot die! If you die, how will I live without you?” Mo Yao hugged Sword Immortal Bo Qing as she sobbed helplessly.

Bo Qing held Mo Yao’s hands weakly: “At this point, I will not conceal it from you. I am from Shadow Sect, I am a split soul of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

You loved the wrong person, loving me will only cause you pain and hardship. Go, leave, if not, it will be too late.”

Mo Yao’s body shook, she shook her head as she rejected him firmly: “No, I will not go! I don’t care about your identity, I only know that we love each other deeply, that is the most important thing. I don’t care about anything else! If I cannot live together with you, I will die with you!”

“Oh, oh, oh!” Ying Wu Xie watched from the side, he showed a curious and shocked expression.

Grey fog rumbled continuously, the scenes around Spectral Soul became more and more chaotic.

Earlier, it was from Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s perspective, but now, they were from the perspectives of seven people.

These seven only inherited a small portion of his foundation, they had their own difficulties and pains.

Once in a while, Spectral Soul’s main body would send out more split souls from Obsession Death Domain, traveling through Reverse Flow River.

This made the scenes even more chaotic now.

However, the largest image still attracted everyone’s attention the most.

Six members of Shadow Sect gathered together.

They were the first batch that had left the door of life and death, they were all immortals now.

“It was my mistake!” Green spoke: “If I did not ask Azure to teach that unscrupulous merchant in treasure yellow heaven a lesson, Azure would not have fallen into the trap of love and betrayed us, even our main body was exposed!”

“This is not your fault, Green.” Purple consoled: “These are traps and difficulties created by heaven’s will! Haven’t you all noticed? It was faint when we were still mortals, but as our cultivation level rise, our lives also have become more filled with difficulties, nothing is going smoothly. Anything we do will cause unnecessary consequences, there are problems everywhere.”

“We have to settle Azure’s matter quickly, otherwise, our main body’s plan will be obstructed!”

“What should we do? Azure cultivates sword path and his battle strength is the highest. Do we need to gather our strength and jointly eliminate him?”

“It is possible, but the price is huge, and the risk is high. I have a plan! If it succeeds, we might be able to turn Fairy Mo Yao over to our side.” Purple said slowly.

“Oh? What plan?”

Purple smiled: “The reason why Azure fell into the trap of love was because Spirit Affinity House used their signature Immortal Gu, Love. This Gu is rank nine, its might is nigh unstoppable, thus Azure fell prey to it, it is not his fault. After all, his sword path is not complete yet, he cannot resist such attacks.”

“But coincidentally, I had some enlightenment today, my wisdom path attainment level reached great grandmaster. Because we have been keeping in contact, I have a deep understanding towards Azure’s sword path. After he got into trouble, I have been deducing on how to solve this problem. I deduced an Immortal Gu recipe, it can create wisdom sword Immortal Gu.”

“Wisdom sword Immortal Gu?”

Purple nodded: “That’s right, wisdom sword can cut the threads of love, even if this Gu cannot rival rank nine love Gu, in actuality, we just need to cut away the dao marks from love Gu on Azure’s body. We can make it such that Azure obtains a fortuitous encounter and thinks he created this new Immortal Gu recipe himself.”

“Once he uses it, the love threads on his body will be cut, he will regain his reasoning and become one of us again. Not just that, since Mo Yao still has those love threads, we can use them to turn her over to our side!”

Purple’s words made everyone overjoyed, they praised.

“Brilliant! Brilliant plan!”

“Haha, worthy of a wisdom path Gu Immortal like Purple.”

...

“What?!” Seeing this, immortal zombie Bo Qing, who was on the ground, frowned deeply.

Mo Yao’s remnant soul, which was inside the body, knew that her lover had created wisdom sword Immortal Gu himself!

“Then... after that, did Azure deceive my feelings, or did he still love me?” At once, Mo Yao’s remnant soul shook, she was filled with doubts .

But at this time, another scene was portrayed around Spectral Soul.

Shadow Sect’s seven immortals gathered.

“As long as I become a venerable, even without our main body, I can be unrivaled and dominate the world. By then, with such invincible strength, even heaven’s will may not be able to deal with me. At the least, there are still many lifespan Gu in this era.” Azure raised his head, speaking with an arrogant tone.

“Don’t look down on heaven’s will.” Green said solemnly: “The lesson that we have learned over these years, isn’t it enough?”

“Purple, you are our advisor, what do you think?” Yellow asked.

Purple looked at Azure: “After Azure’s first failure, it seems that as long as we prepare amply and deal with any mishaps, there aren’t big problems... how is Fairy Mo Yao?”

“Hehehe.” Azure laughed coldly: “That silly woman, she is prepared to sacrifice herself for me. She went to Eighty-Eight True Yang Building to refine calamity beckoning Immortal Gu. She wants to draw the myriad tribulation over to herself when I undergo the tribulation.”

Purple shook his head: “Even though Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path is quite innovative, Mo Yao’s method will not succeed. But since she has the intention to do so, why don’t you hand change soul Immortal Gu and that immortal killer move over to her. If you fail the tribulation, as long as your soul is intact, you will still have a foundation, you can start over rapidly again.”

“Mm. It is better to prepare amply.” Azure nodded expressionlessly.

...

This scene made immortal zombie Bo Qing’s body shake intensely.

Ying Wu Xie felt something amiss, he quickly said: “Don’t overthink it, this is a myriad tribulation, it might not be real!”

Immortal zombie Bo Qing did not speak, he was silent as a rock, he clenched his fists as his muscles tensed, his eyes were shut tight.

...

Five of the immortals from Shadow Sect were gathered again.

“Blue failed. He used his own immortal aperture and fused with the immemorial blue heaven fragment, in order to research heaven’s will, but he has already fallen deep into the dream realm.” Yellow said with deep pain.

The immortals were silent.

A long while later, Purple said: “Even though Blue can be saved, I think we should not attempt it hastily. This is a trap left by heaven’s will, in order for our members to get exposed.”

“Sigh! We can tell after Azure failed his second attempt to ascend to rank nine. The power of that tribulation was more than ten times as much as the first! Evidently, heaven’s will does not want us to become venerables, it is trying to deal with us at all times.”

“I will not hide it from you, I have recently had a bad feeling. First Azure, then Blue, I am afraid the next one is me.”

The immortals were shocked, they quickly said: “Purple, don’t overthink it.”

“I am not overthinking, this is the prediction of a wisdom path Gu Immortal... After I am gone, Gu Immortal Da Li will take over my position. Also, the power of heaven’s will is higher than our estimations, but it is not impossible to deceive. From now on, Shadow Sect will lay low, accumulating our strength in secret, when we perform the heaven defying deed, we should go all out at once, so that heaven’s will has no time to react to our actions.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1017: Deep Scheme

On a larger image.

“Green, hurry go!” Yellow grabbed Green’s hand, pulling him outwards.

“No, I will not leave! It can still be saved, look at the immortal fetus Gu, it is still alive!” Green screamed, struggling: “Let me go, that is my entire life’s work!”

“You think this explosion is simply an accident? Look at the remaining rank eight immortal materials, take a good look at them!” Yellow called out furiously.

Green’s body shook, clarity returned to his eyes, he had a realization, his forehead was covered in sweat as he said with lingering fear: “These immortal materials are all full of heaven’s will. That was so close, a moment ago, my sense of reasoning was influenced by heaven’s will. Even after setting up this huge formation and hiding in Northern Plains’ Earth Trench, I was still noticed by it?”

“Only a complete otherworldly demon can be fully undetected by heaven’s will. Us being discovered is nothing to be discouraged over. Give up on this attempt, we will start over again.” Yellow consoled.

Green was speechless, looking at the sandy area around him, he nodded solemnly.

...

“I’ve already told you, your deduction is completely wrong, I have nothing to do with Red Lotus’ true inheritances.” Gu Immortal Da Li said helplessly.

The opposing time path Gu Immortal was shrouded in fog, their appearance could not be seen. Only the red lotus marking on their forehead was visible, bright and red.

They smiled coldly: “I used the time path method in Red Lotus’ true inheritance to deduce, how can that be wrong? Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s next true inheritance is with you.”

Da Li was silently before replying: “There is nothing else to say, let’s fight!”

Saying this, he charged ahead.

“You finally stopped evading!” The mysterious Gu Immortal was filled with intent to fight.

After a long battle.

Gu Immortal Da Li could not defeat the other party, he was suppressed by the Immortal Gu House, Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

...

The myriad tribulation grand clear space finally ended.

Spectral Soul did not put up any resistance, his entire body was hurt by the countless green birds, his mass had shrunk by one third.

At the same time, Heaven Overseeing Tower was prepared to strike, it seemed to be close to getting out of its phantom form.

The surrounding grey fog had dissipated by half.

This meant that the myriad tribulation, grey memory, was already half over.

But the tribulations from the sky still continued!

Another myriad tribulation was gathering on top of Spectral Soul’s head.

It seemed that as long as Spectral Soul was still alive, heaven’s will would not let him off!

Myriad tribulation — Dark Oil Poison.

From the sky, drops of sticky poisonous oil dripped down.

The oil seemed to be boiling hot, when they landed on Spectral Soul’s body, there was a sizzling noise as smoke rose.

The oil entered the wounds created earlier, flowing in and corroding Spectral Soul’s body, an intense process of rotting was occurring inside.

Soon, the poisonous oil turned from drops to streams, countless streams were raining down from the sky, over the surroundings.

Spectral Soul’s huge body was bathed in poisonous oil, it was rotting at an observable rate, his body mass was shrinking rapidly.

But he did not do anything.

Ying Wu Xie, who was below, had an anxious expression.

He wanted to call out, but he was in the grand tribulation earth collapse, any movement or intense thinking would cause him to sink further.

“What is wrong with you guys, both of you are acting like this!” He grumbled, looking at immortal zombie Bo Qing beside him.

From the start, immortal zombie Bo Qing was like a statue, not moving, it was as if he was dead, he was unmoved by anything outside.

Thankfully, they were below Spectral Soul’s feet.

Being covered by Spectral Soul’s body which was above the clouds, the myriad tribulation did not cause any harm to Ying Wu Xie or immortal zombie Bo Qing.

A very far distance away.

Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were assisting each other as they escaped.

Behind them, a group of Southern Border Gu Immortals were chasing them.

The xenophobia of the five regions’ Gu Immortals was quite strong. Even in the most open Eastern Sea, foreign Gu Immortals did not have an easy time, they were often ostracized and bullied by Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

In the earlier battle, after Hei Lou Lan nearly killed a Southern Border Gu Immortal, the situation became uncontrollable.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals flew into a rage, these Northern Plains outsiders were so arrogant and bullying them, not only did they fight in Southern Border, they injured them. Where did they think they were?

Thus, the chasing continued, not just that, they even gathered their allies and reinforcements.

Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were not in good condition to begin with, they were injured. They battle as they retreated, under their skillful movement, they got farther and farther away from Yi Tian Mountain.

No matter how huge Hei Lou Lan’s ambition was, she did not dare to get close to that place again.

That was not the stage for rank six Gu Immortals.

Not even rank sevens, and rank eights also could only be side characters.

That was a battlefield where Spectral Soul and heaven’s will fought!

The myriad tribulation dark oil poison had already ended, Spectral Soul was now surrounded by another myriad tribulation.

This myriad tribulation was unknown, it had broken the limits of historical records.

It was formless and ethereal, only a mystical aura that could not be perceived was around.

The aura coiled around him, causing Spectral Soul’s body to explode wherever it went. Spectral Soul was a soul, but it was so condensed it was like material, it was as if it was a soul beast.

With the explosions caused by the aura, the huge mountainous body vanished, only a framework of it was left, huge pieces of the soul were blasted away.

In the grey fog, another scene appeared.

Old Man Yan Shi coughed blood, he held heavenly secret Immortal Gu as he muttered: “So Fang Yuan has Spring Autumn Cicada. No wonder he could refine Fixed Immortal Travel and go to Central Continent’s Hu Immortal blessed land and obtain Dang Hun Mountain. He then destroyed Imperial Court blessed land and caused the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!”

“Since he is an otherworldly demon who possesses Spring Autumn Cicada, he has clearly escaped fate... hehehe, this can be the best tool against heaven’s will. Fine, I will conceal the tracks of you and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, to prevent others from deducing matters about you.”

...

Qin Bai Sheng secretly watched the immemorial ruin bat as well as the numerous calamities and tribulations in this area.

This was the time when Dong Fang Chang Fan had undergone possession and was going through tribulation.

“Dong Fang Chang Fan was merely using possession to revive, but his main body’s aura was perceived by heaven’s will, sending such a terrifying disaster. In the future, when our main body tries to revive, the tribulations would likely be worse!”

The Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie nodded beside him: “We can leave, this test against heaven’s will has ended. Why is Chu Rong not back yet?”

At this time, Fairy Jiang Yu appeared with a terrible expression: “Chu Rong is dead, the operation to take back Modest Thatched Hut failed!”

“What happened?” Qin Bai Sheng was mildly shocked: “Chu Rong is a fire path grandmaster with rank seven cultivation level.”

“It is the inheritor of Three Thatch Demon Immortal.” Fairy Jiang Yu said: “This person was deeply concealed, his methods were ruthless, I almost failed to make it back.”

“Three Thatch Demon Immortal... Hmph, forget it, we will give up on Modest Thatched Hut. Before the commencement of our crucial plan, we cannot expose our identities over this Immortal Gu House and cause heaven’s will to attack us in advance.” Qin Bai Sheng thought for a moment and said this.

...

Luo Po valley.

Shadow Sect’s group faced the Central Continent Gu Immortals with grim expressions.

Qin Bai Sheng stared at Feng Jiu Ge, sighing: “Heaven’s will’s attack is already here. In order to protect the pawn Fang Yuan, Yan Shi concealed his traces. Central Continent’s Gu Immortals investigated Fang Yuan and in following their clues, instead found us.”

“What do we do?” Fairy Jiang Yu asked.

“We have no choice but to fight.” Qin Bai Sheng gritted his teeth and said.

...

“Cough, cough, cough...” Old Man Yan Shi coughed continuously, his expression was pale, he was so exhausted that it seemed like he would die from being out of breath.

“I used heavenly secret Gu and consumed a hundred years of lifespan. But it was worth it, I deduced that Spring Autumn Cicada’s condition is bad, it has already been used.”

“Seeing that Fang Yuan went to Yi Tian Mountain in advance, he evidently knows about the battle of Yi Tian Mountain. With this, I can deduce that our main body has already failed once, thus, he had to use that Red Lotus true inheritance to make Fang Yuan rebirth, sending him back to the past to change the future. Heh, thankfully, Spring Autumn Cicada is only rank six, it is nothing scary.”

“In that case, Fang Yuan is the best method of measurement. Looking at his future performance, I can deduce even more things.”

“Would searching his soul directly be easier? Or would it affect the entire situation?”

...

“In accordance to my planning, Bo Qing and Seven Star Child have already slowed down Heavenly Court as much as possible. This result should be a lot better compared to the last time.”

Old Man Yan Shi sat in the pavilion, looking at the mountain and fog change mysteriously.

“On Zombie Alliance’s side, the arrangements are set, we can use them as a backup. It would be best to preserve them, sigh, I hope we do not need to use them.”

“Using the newly obtained lifespan Gu, I have about twenty years left. It is time to die. It is natural for my split soul to return to the main body. But before dying, I should help the main body deduce the tribulations of the following heaven defying plan.”

A moment later.

“Cough, cough, cough, I didn’t die? This means that I have already deduced all of the tribulations? No, it is because every wisdom path advisor of Shadow Sect, from generation after generation, had been deducing all along, we finally accumulated enough foundation to create a qualitative change!”

“Hehehe, this is so ironic. Using heavenly secret Immortal Gu as the core, the wisdom path killer move created can deduce the contents of the tribulations. But this Immortal Gu was created by Paradise Earth. He had tried to get rid of the main body’s influence all his life, to think that after dying, he actually provided us such huge help.”

...

Seeing this, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were shocked beyond words.

It turned out that Shadow Sect had already deduced the tribulations! That meant it was very suspicious that Spectral Soul was not moving inside the myriad tribulations.

The mysterious myriad tribulation had gone away, the next myriad tribulation descended.

Vine dragon tribulation!

Countless green vines with sharp thorns shot out from the sky and ground, coiling around Spectral Soul’s body.

Soon, millions of vines surrounded Spectral Soul tightly, forming a huge ball.

They coiled around him relentlessly, becoming tighter and tighter, stabbing into his body and using the Demon Venerable’s soul as their nutrients!

“Something is wrong! Something is wrong!”

“He is doing this on purpose, look at that ten extreme formation!”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals shifted their gazes around as they came to realizations.

Because Shadow Sect had deduced the tribulations, they could make arrangements around them.

Spectral Soul purposely did not put up resistance because he wanted to fuse his soul path foundation into this formation, as the nutrients for this formation.

“What is he trying to refine? He actually used his own demonic soul as Gu refinement material!”

“Not just that, with so many myriad tribulations around him, they are actually carving space path, poison path, qi path, and wood path dao marks on his body, to destroy his soul path dao marks. They could harm Spectral Soul because these dao marks were not weaker than the soul path foundation that he had accumulated for the last hundred thousand years!”

Gasp...

Sensing this, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals drew in deep and chilling breaths.

It seemed that Spectral Soul was not only refining himself, he was even using the power of the myriad tribulations to achieve his goals.

But what was his goal?

The ten extreme formation was at the final juncture. In the dark fog, the ball of light was becoming brighter and rounder.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s heart sank to rock bottom.

He had a determined expression, he said solemnly: “We cannot go on like this, we have to ruin Spectral Soul’s scheme! No matter what he is refining, we have to destroy this ten extreme formation.”

“But we are in phantom form.”

“No, we have one chance to retaliate. This is something that generation after generation of Heaven Overseeing Tower Lords have created after researching. It has always been kept as a confidential secret!” Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord said.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals heard this and were joyful and surprised: “Why don’t you use it?”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord smiled bitterly, he told them the price for using it.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals fell into deathly silence.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1018: Narrow Victory

A moment later, someone stepped up: “Since Shadow Sect can make sacrifices, why can’t we of Heavenly Court do the same? I am willing to stay behind and manipulate Heaven Overseeing Tower!”

“I am willing too.”

“Giving up this body to slay a Demon Venerable, what reason is there not to?”

More and more Gu Immortals stood up.

Of course, there were Heavenly Court Gu Immortals who had other opinions.

“In my opinion, the urgent matter now is to find out what Spectral Soul is trying to refine.”

“The matter is not desperate yet, we should preserve our strength until absolutely necessary.”

“Back then, when Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was still alive, he could not take down Heavenly Court. Now that he is dead, he is weaker than during life, what should Heavenly Court fear?”

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord waved his hand: “I have decided, those who want to stay will come with me to activate Heaven Overseeing Tower. As for the rest of you, I will send you to white heaven. Regardless of victory or defeat, you have to gather the remains of the Immortal Gu House and return to Heavenly Court.”

After saying this, Heavenly Court’s members came to an agreement.

Heaven Overseeing Tower shot out a bright light towards the sky, before a beam of light descended from the sky, covering the entirety of Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Spectral Soul was startled, he tried to control Heaven Overseeing Tower, preventing it from getting out of its phantom form.

But Heaven Overseeing Tower was not being manipulated to get out of its phantom form, in fact, its final attack required it to stay in phantom form the entire time.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord’s voice resounded over the surroundings: “Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, I will show you the newest and most powerful attack of Heaven Overseeing Tower!”

Boom!

With a loud sound, the surrounding scenery had a subtle change.

The myriad tribulation, vine dragon, was coiling around Spectral Soul’s body, but now, under the control of Heaven Overseeing Tower, it changed targets and attacked the ten extreme formation instead.

Spectral Soul’s expression changed.

Heaven Overseeing Tower’s attack was beyond his expectations. Even though he had planned for tens of thousands of years, and deduced it countless times, expending the lives of many generations of wisdom path Gu Immortals. His entire plan had been deduced and refined, deduced and perfected.

But he did not deduce that Heaven Overseeing Tower had a method to manipulate the myriad tribulation directly!

What sort of method was this?

An intense aura burst out, Spectral Soul stopped being motionless, he quickly used his methods to resist the attacks of the countless vines.

He had experienced many myriad tribulations, to complete the mysterious Immortal Gu in the ten extreme formation, his battle strength had already been severely lowered.

But right now, he attacked at full strength, his demonic might was overwhelming, it gave off an unstoppable feeling.

Even though more than half of the soul path dao marks on his body were gone, he was still shining with the light of dao marks, they were bright and numerous like the stars in the sky.

An unimaginable clash!

One side controlled the myriad tribulation to attack, while the other’s soul changed into countless forms to defend against the vines.

Even though he was alone, even though he only had his soul left, Spectral Soul showed incredible capabilities in battle that almost resembled a miracle!

He blocked all of the vine dragons coming his way.

The ten extreme formation was tightly defended by him, nothing could go through.

Heaven Overseeing Tower, still in phantom form, was disassembling.

The speed got faster and faster, the countless mortal Gu and Immortal Gu that formed Heaven Overseeing Tower were facing destruction every minute and second.

In Heaven Overseeing Tower, every few breaths of time, one rank eight Heavenly Court Gu Immortal died, sacrificing themselves.

In order to control the myriad tribulation, Heavenly Court had paid a huge price!

The same went for Spectral Soul.

His main body was already heavily injured, to resist the vine dragon myriad tribulation, his soul was diminishing rapidly, it was as fast as a deflating balloon.

The aura that was all over the place had weakened. His overwhelming demonic might seemed to have turned from a forest fire to a pile of bonfire.

“Spectral Soul, you transgress against heaven, you will die like a dog!” Before dying, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord shouted his final curse.

Around him, all of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were dead.

With a loud bang.

The remaining half of Heaven Overseeing Tower broke apart, turning into countless fragments.

The fragments turned back into mortal Gu and Immortal Gu, following the beam of light, penetrating the heavenly wind qi wall to go deep into white heaven.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals who were left behind to guard white heaven rapidly moved and collected the Immortal Gu. Most importantly, they had to retrieve fate Immortal Gu.

Spectral Soul’s body had shrunk from thousands of meters to hundreds, until he was only a handful of meters tall.

Not only that, his soul was no longer condensed, it was very translucent, it swayed with the wind, his aura was very weak.

The grand tribulation earth collapse dissipated at this moment.

A bright sword light flashed in the sky, immortal zombie Bo Qing had already flown towards Spectral Soul.

Mo Yao’s remnant soul inside the body screamed: “Spectral Soul! Return my husband to me!!”

Spectral Soul’s gaze was fixed upon the ten extreme formation. The dark fog in the ten extreme formation was gone, all of the ten extreme immortal zombies were sacrificed, only one round ball was left, shining in the light of nine different colors.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing moved closer: “You promised me you will revive him!”

Spectral Soul turned around, gazing at immortal zombie Bo Qing’s face: “The split soul that created Bo Qing was already destroyed in the myriad tribulation. With the split soul lost, how can I revive him?”

“You lied to me?!” Immortal zombie Bo Qing clenched his fists, a dangerous light was shining in his eyes.

“Of course I did not lie to you. I am Bo Qing’s main body, when I revive, Bo Qing will naturally revive as well. When I dominate the world, it would also mean that Bo Qing has attained rank nine cultivation level. Isn’t this what you were hoping for?” Spectral Soul said slowly.

“Old scumbag!” Immortal zombie Bo Qing was furious, he attacked Spectral Soul.

But the sword light had just shone and vanished instantly.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing floated in front of Spectral Soul, unable to move.

“You are my final obstacle? Hehehe, it is a pity. If Yan Shi did not remind me earlier, you might have caused me trouble. But now... hehe. Did you forget that all of your sword path Immortal Gu have my will in them, did you also forget who was the one feeding them over these years?”

Spectral Soul spoke coldly, he paused before continuing: “Now, I will give you one final chance. Kill them, and repent for your act of betrayal.”

‘Them’ naturally meant the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals in white heaven.

Spit.

“Hmph, foolish woman.”

At the next moment, Mo Yao’s remnant soul was pulled out, devoured by Spectral Soul in one mouthful.

After swallowing this remnant soul, Spectral Soul’s body condensed slightly.

“Wu Xie, you will defend me, I only need a little over ten breaths of time to succeed!” Spectral Soul said as he shrunk to the size of a child.

“Yes.” Ying Wu Xie flew up, standing beside Spectral Soul, looking around alertly.

The beam of light that penetrated the heavenly wind qi wall was gone.

“We have no chances left.” Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals sighed, they retrieved the remaining Immortal Gu from Heaven Overseeing Tower as they retreated.

Spectral Soul touched this newly refined Immortal Gu, with his eyes filled with emotions.

“After plotting for tens of thousands of years, after so much planning and painstaking efforts, I finally succeeded in refining this rank nine sovereign immortal fetus Gu. With this Immortal Gu, I can surpass all of the venerables in history, I can obtain the body of an otherworldly demon, reaching an unsurpassed realm that nobody has ever seen! All other Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables in history will not be my match, even if Ren Zu resurrects, he will be inferior to me! Hahaha...”

Spectral Soul raised his head and laughed.

In his laughter, there was insanity, relief, pride, arrogance, and venting...

Wind blew, as Spectral Soul swayed in the wind.

He almost had used up his full strength, if he did not devour Mo Yao’s remnant soul, he might not even be able to keep his form.

The laughter stopped.

Spectral Soul squinted, having an eerie gaze: “The closer I am towards the end, the more I cannot afford to be careless.”

The remaining soul path dao marks on him were shining brightly.

Using his soul, he could undergo surveillance of a very huge radius.

In white heaven, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had withdrawn, although they left behind many investigative Gu worms.

Spectral Soul snickered, the light in his soul shined brightly as he spat out a breath of spectral qi towards the sky.

This spectral qi moved up, penetrating the heavenly wind qi wall and destroying all of the investigative Gu worms left by Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, not a single one was left.

Spectral Soul quickly looked around.

Soon, he ‘saw’ Fang Yuan.

At this moment, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan were guarding him.

Fang Yuan was lying on the ground, his eyelids were trembling, he was about to wake up.

“He is awake, he is almost awake!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng cried out in joy.

Hei Lou Lan frowned deeply, looking into the horizon, she said without turning her head: “Then quickly wake him up! Use Fixed Immortal Travel and leave this bloody place.”

Spectral Soul frowned slightly, but he soon returned to normal.

Right now, they were a gigantic distance apart. The radius of ten thousand li around Yi Tian Mountain was covered by the myriad tribulations, the entire area looked completely different from before. If Fang Yuan used Fixed Immortal Travel, he could only teleport to ten thousand li away from Yi Tian Mountain.

Furthermore, after he wakes up, he might not take a risk and approach the mountain. Even if he takes a risk, there was already enough time for Spectral Soul!

After having been enveloped in grand tribulations and myriad tribulations, this entire area was very ‘clean’ now.

The Gu Immortals who died and the immortal apertures they left behind had all been refined by the ten extreme formation. A small portion were also destroyed by the tribulations. Only life and death blessed land was intentionally preserved.

“There are no problems left. Eh? No.” Spectral Soul turned his gaze towards Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie blinked several times, looking at his main body.

“How much lifespan do you have?” Spectral Soul asked.

Ying Wu Xie answered: “I have fifteen minutes left.”

“More than enough.” Spectral Soul finally relaxed his mind.

He could no longer sustain his form, his body faded and condensed into a ball made of soul, it was the size of a face, firmly condensed like it was solid, it floated towards the ball-like sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

During this process, Fang Yuan opened his eyes abruptly.

“Heaven’s will!” He screamed, he sat up on the ground with a furious and anxious expression.

“Fang Yuan, you are finally awake.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan were overjoyed.

Boom!

Fang Yuan attacked, striking at the two who saved his life.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan were caught unprepared, they were sent flying.

Fixed Immortal Travel!

At the next moment, Fang Yuan used this rank six Immortal Gu.

Guh.

He spat out a mouthful of blood, his body was shaking, the activation of Fixed Immortal Travel failed.

“Damn it! I must make it in time!!” He gritted his teeth as he thought this, activating Fixed Immortal Travel again.

Before Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan arrived, he succeeded!

He was ten thousand li away from Yi Tian Mountain.

Seeing the entire battlefield that had changed beyond recognition, he was stunned, his entire body and mind froze.

It was too late!

Like what Spectral Soul had expected, Fang Yuan could not make it in time.

But!

Right when Spectral Soul was about to enter the sovereign immortal fetus Gu, a hand stretched out.

Ying Wu Xie grabbed Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul was already almost out of strength, before he could react, he heard Ying Wu Xie say four words.

“Lead soul into dream.”

“Wha...”

At the next moment, Spectral Soul fell into a dream realm.

And Fang Yuan’s soul flew out of Ying Wu Xie’s body!

Next, he rapidly entered the rank nine Immortal Gu in front of him!!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1019: So it was Change Soul

Let us rewind time back to a while ago.

Heaven Overseeing Tower floated above Spectral Soul’s head in phantom form. But at this moment, a hundred of Spectral Soul’s strong dark arms shrunk immensely, turning dry, thin and long.

Obtaining his help, the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation underwent a huge change, the scattered dark clouds gathered towards the center.

At the center of the dark clouds, a round ball could be vaguely seen, it spun on its own, shining with light in fourteen different colors.

Seeing this, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord had an anxious expression, he ordered: “Chop off these arms!”

Heaven Overseeing Tower was like a rocket, it drew an eye piercing rainbow light in the sky as it slashed forward. The rainbow light cut all of Spectral Soul’s arms off upon contact.

“Ying Wu Xie, go and deal with Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals!” Immortal zombie Bo Qing called out.

It was a simple matter for them to deal with Fang Yuan’s side.

But because of a series of events, they were constantly interrupted.

Ying Wu Xie gritted his teeth, he was unwilling to leave at this moment: “Give me a moment to make Fang Yuan sleep first.”

Saying this, he activated the rank eight immortal killer move — Lead Soul Into Dream.

Fang Yuan could not dodge, he was dragged into the dream realm.

At the pavilion in the center of the lake, the music from the zither could be heard.

Fang Yuan met Star Constellation Immortal Venerable again.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Fang Yuan hurriedly activated his dream path killer move, but the dream realm held firm, all he saw were transparent ripples in his vision.

His unravel dream might work against the dream realm, but it was only rank six. In contrast, Ying Wu Xie’s killer move was rank eight.

The difference between the two was too vast, Fang Yuan could not unravel the dream realm.

At once, Fang Yuan’s heart sank to rock bottom.

The zither music continued, as Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled at Fang Yuan gently, she sang with a soft voice.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly, he knew that he had lost!

Deep in the dream realm, his only method, unravel dream, had failed, Fang Yuan could not turn this around.

But at this time, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s singing entered his ears again —

“Fallen songs and despondent heroes, difficulty in resisting the trials of fate.”

“Bent swords sink in the sand, rising and falling from ancient times, the rumbling of an unceasing heavenly river.”

“Alas...”

“Spectral night carries a soul into endless dreams, where can one rest in peace?”

“During spring and autumn body and mind shifts, only heaven’s will remains vast and boundless.”

Along with it, a wave of information once again entered Fang Yuan’s mind.

Fang Yuan, who was deep inside the dream realm, suddenly jolted!

“During spring and autumn body and mind shifts, only heaven’s will remains vast and boundless!” At this moment, he finally understood the meaning of this final line.

As it turned out, the mysterious rank seven Immortal Gu that he had obtained from Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body was change soul Immortal Gu!

Back then, Mo Yao had activated this change soul Immortal Gu at the critical moment because she was afraid that her lover, Bo Qing, would fail his tribulation. Their souls swapped and she saved Bo Qing, deceiving the entire world in the process.

Bo Qing also wanted to make use of Mo Yao to pass his tribulation, but he was afraid that the myriad tribulation might affect his mind, thus, he gave this Immortal Gu to Mo Yao, rather than lending it to her.

Therefore, change soul Immortal Gu was refined by Mo Yao, it was filled with her will.

Thereafter, Fang Yuan used the light of wisdom and Mo Yao’s fake will to create a Gu formation, containing these Immortal Gu that he deceived while slowly refining them.

Because of the relationship with Mo Yao’s will, change soul Immortal Gu was the first to be refined by Fang Yuan. As for the other sword path Immortal Gu, they were filled with Bo Qing’s will, thus, they had slower progress, they could not be refined before the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, they were still inside Hu Immortal blessed land.

According to the hint of the final line, it was not possible to use unravel dream to escape anymore. He had to use change soul Immortal Gu, to swap his soul with Ying Wu Xie’s!

Of course, it was not that simple.

The information in Fang Yuan’s mind also included an immortal killer move. This immortal killer move not only used the rank seven change soul Immortal Gu as a core, it even included attitude Gu, unravel mystery Immortal Gu, and also a lot of dream path and soul path mortal Gu.

Fang Yuan hesitated slightly, before deciding to follow it!

According to his previous experiences, Fang Yuan knew that the information was highly reliable.

Most importantly, he had no other choice.

At this moment, Fang Yuan was at his wits’ end, the enemy was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, purely with his foundation and ability, he could do nothing to the other party.

Only by following the instructions could he obtain any hope of victory.

Thus, he activated the immortal killer move.

He succeeded!

The souls of Fang Yuan and Ying Wu Xie were secretly swapped.

Fang Yuan’s soul was originally hit by lead soul into dream and was deep in a dream realm.

After switching souls, he covertly entered Ying Wu Xie’s Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body, while Ying Wu Xie’s soul went into Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body, but he was inside the dream realm in Fang Yuan’s place.

After switching their souls, Fang Yuan couldn’t help but be stunned for a moment.

But after seeing ‘himself’, he thought quickly, he placed his hands at his waist, laughing smugly: “Hahaha, this time, why don’t you try and escape?!”

“Fang Yuan!” Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted.

But ‘Fang Yuan’ was deep in sleep, he could not be woken up.

At this moment, immortal zombie Bo Qing raised his hand, preparing to attack Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped.

He had set an alliance agreement with Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, if he left them in the lurch, he might face a backlash from the alliance agreement. But if he saved them, he might attract suspicion, his identity might be exposed.

But soon, Fang Yuan realized.

“I am overthinking it! I have left all my Immortal Gu in my original body, I have no way to stop Bo Qing, even if Ying Wu Xie has many Immortal Gu, lead soul into dream is an immortal killer move, how can I learn to use it so quickly?”

Fang Yuan could only watch.

But an unexpected surprise quickly occurred!

There was a huge suction force from the ground.

The immortals were caught off guard, they were all sucked into the ground, their legs were deeply buried in the ground, a strong force was restricting them, preventing them from moving.

Grand tribulation — Earth Collapse!

Bo Qing and ‘Ying Wu Xie’ were shocked, they did not expect that while the myriad tribulation was dealing with Spectral Soul, there was actually a grand tribulation waiting to ambush them.

What was even more shocking was that Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and ‘Fang Yuan’ were unaffected by the grand tribulation.

After landing on the ground, Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng regained their freedom, they could move freely.

Furthermore, at this moment, the ten extreme formation had created already the mysterious ball, the force that restricted the space around them vanished.

Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng brought ‘Fang Yuan’ and rapidly retreated, escaping for their lives.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing’s eyes shined with deep killing intent, but he could only watch as they escaped.

Soon, Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and ‘Fang Yuan’ escaped far away, vanishing from Bo Qing’s field of vision.

“Hmph, Fang Yuan can escape for now, but can he escape for his entire life? As an otherworldly demon, you are the best tool to use against heaven’s will, how can we let you go so easily? As for Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, even though they are not otherworldly demons, they were affected by him and became fate escapees. Even if we do not deal with them, Heavenly Court would eliminate them eventually.” Bo Qing snorted coldly.

Fang Yuan heard this and quickly thought: “It seems that an otherworldly demon is very useful to Shadow Sect. No wonder Ying Wu Xie only wanted to capture me and not kill me. Strange! That grand tribulation, earth collapse, why did it not affect Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng? Heaven’s will... forget it, the most important matter at hand is to familiarize myself with the dream path Gu worms I have. If I have to attack later and I fail to use lead soul into dream, wouldn’t I get exposed?”

Fang Yuan took a peek and was shocked to find that he had more than just dream path Immortal Gu! There was also change soul Immortal Gu, attitude Gu, unravel mystery Immortal Gu, and other mortal Gu, they had all been brought over through his soul.

And this mysterious immortal killer move had another use, it allowed Fang Yuan to use Ying Wu Xie’s Gu worms.

“It seems that attitude Gu had an important use. It allowed me to disguise myself and deceive Ying Wu Xie’s will that is inside these dream path Immortal Gu and mortal Gu. It is like earlier, when I used Mo Yao’s fake will to coax Immortal Gu out of Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan glanced at immortal zombie Bo Qing again.

If the other party knew that Ying Wu Xie was already someone else, moreover, he was now the culprit who harmed Bo Qing and took out most of his sword path Immortal Gu, immortal zombie Bo Qing might behead Fang Yuan immediately without saying anything else!

The situation was still very dangerous.

Even though they swapped souls and Fang Yuan had escaped from the dream realm, he was currently more fragile than he ever was.

If he was found out, there would be no hope.

It was as if he was walking on a tightrope above a valley, if he was careless, he would fall and die with a mangled corpse.

Fang Yuan gathered his concentration, he immediately moved his limbs, struggling intensely.

The result was, his body sank deeper and deeper.

He shouted, acting like he was furious.

But internally, he felt extremely glad: “This grand tribulation came at a great time. I am stuck in here and cannot escape, I cannot even generate thoughts, thus I cannot attack. If I cannot attack, I will not be exposed. This gives me the opportunity to familiarize myself with these unknown Gu worms!”

“Stop struggling, stop thinking. It will make our situation worse, we cannot deal with this at the moment.” Immortal zombie Bo Qing, who was beside him, quickly attempted to console him in a calm tone.

Fang Yuan observed and noticed that Bo Qing was not suspicious, he finally felt slightly relieved.

He sighed, looking at Spectral Soul: “We can only hope that our main body saves us.”

But Spectral Soul was also deeply trapped, after the first myriad tribulation, wind lightning prison, the second myriad tribulation, grey memory, descended.

The grey fog descended at a very slow speed. It was so slow that anyone who was undergoing the tribulation could retaliate in many ways.

But Spectral Soul did not move.

He stood quietly, like a solemn mountain.

“Did our main body get hit already?” Fang Yuan shouted, looking extremely anxious: “This is such a good chance, you have to retaliate!!”

In his mind, he was thinking about other things, Spectral Soul was restricted now, he was glad to see this. But on the other hand, he was within the range of the myriad tribulation grey memory, he felt some unease.

The grand tribulation was already unstoppable, if the myriad tribulation descended, how would he survive?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1020: Obtain the Greatest Gain!

“The myriad tribulation is coming!” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, looking at the grey cloud of fog descending slowly.

Immortal zombie Bo Qing squinted, his muscles were tense.

The grey cloud descended, but it caused no harm.

“What is going on? Is this a harmless myriad tribulation?!” Fang Yuan was nervous, seeing that there was no commotion, he touched all over his body as he cried out in suspicion.

Bo Qing did not answer him.

Someone in Heavenly Court quickly recognized this myriad tribulation, grey memory. But Fang Yuan and Mo Yao’s remnant soul did not know it.

However, soon, Fang Yuan and Mo Yao’s remnant soul obtained some understanding of their own.

Because after Spectral Soul was shrouded in the grey fog, his memories started to appear in images before them.

His experiences during childhood, in his youth, during adulthood... all of these experiences were a form of interrogation and torture in regards to Spectral Soul’s heart, he made countless choices that decided his future fate.

And at the same time, Tai Bai Yun Sheng carried Fang Yuan as he escaped at full speed.

Hei Lou Lan took a final look at the grey fog in the sky before following after them.

Inside Fang Yuan’s body, Ying Wu Xie was trapped in the dream realm, he was facing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

He gritted his teeth, shouting maniacally, pouncing towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

However, he did not hit her.

This was a dream realm, distance was not what it seemed.

He might seem to be close to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, but no matter how many steps he moved forward, his distance with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not change.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable played the zither but did not sing, the music was beautiful, like the sound of a clear mountain spring.

Compared to Ying Wu Xie’s agitated behavior, it formed a stark contrast.

“Quickly let me out, quickly let me out. Heaven’s will! You accursed heaven’s will!” He pointed at Star Constellation Immortal Venerable as he shouted.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was unmoved, she showed neither joy nor rage.

Ying Wu Xie blinked, he forced himself to calm down, muttering: “Don’t be anxious, I need to stay calm, stay calm. I know everything about lead soul into dream, this dream realm has not manifested externally, it will fade away soon, it cannot contain me forever. Also, the Gu Immortals on Fang Yuan’s side will save me. Once I wake up, I will return and expose Fang Yuan’s identity! Now, I can only hope that Yi Tian Mountain isn’t far away after I wake up!”

But Ying Wu Xie’s wish was not going to be fulfilled.

Because next, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan met with some Southern Border Gu Immortals, both sides fought while moving.

Not only did Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng not have the time to wake up Ying Wu Xie, they even got farther and farther away from Yi Tian Mountain.

‘Ying Wu Xie’ and Bo Qing were all immobilized in the ground because of earth collapse.

Waves of grey fog coiled around immortal zombie Bo Qing as they shined with bright lights, showing constantly changing scenes.

These were Mo Yao’s memories, as a variant human, she had suffered a fate of being ostracized.

“Hmph.” Immortal zombie Bo Qing snickered.

Facing these sad traumas in her life, Mo Yao’s remnant soul showed her strong-willed personality.

“Strange, why are you unaffected by the grey fog?” Bo Qing looked at Ying Wu Xie, who was beside him.

Fang Yuan was thinking: “I want to know the answer to this question as well!”

According to logic, grey memory affected Spectral Soul and Mo Yao’s remnant soul, there was no reason for Fang Yuan to be unaffected.

But for some reason, nothing happened to Fang Yuan.

Evidently, this myriad tribulation, grey memory, let Fang Yuan off, he did not get exposed because of it.

“Don’t tell me this is the manipulation of heaven’s will? Earlier, heaven’s will let Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng be unaffected by the tribulation, did it want them to bring my body and get far away from this place?”

Fang Yuan had many guesses, but behind these guesses, there was a cold sensation when Fang Yuan thought about them, he felt his hair standing, there were a lot of terrifying implications behind his thoughts.

But right now, facing immortal zombie Bo Qing’s suspicion, Fang Yuan could only pretend to be ignorant.

“I don’t know.” Fang Yuan shook his head, he pointed: “Yours is pretty interesting.”

Bo Qing snorted: “It seems that because you were just born, and only have eighteen hours to live, you had no time to experience these things.”

Mo Yao’s remnant soul inside immortal zombie Bo Qing did not suspect Fang Yuan, her attention was mostly on Spectral Soul.

Regarding Spectral Soul’s main body, Mo Yao’s remnant soul was quite worried.

But next, the grey fog showed that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had obtained the food path true inheritance of the beastman Gu Immortal back during his time.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s nature made Fang Yuan quite shocked.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were in a commotion, but because they were in phantom form, they could not do anything.

At this time, in the sky, the third myriad tribulation descended — Grand Clear Space!

Countless green birds slashed at Spectral Soul, the power was terrifying, the expressions of Fang Yuan and Mo Yao changed.

Next, Fang Yuan saw many scenes in the grey fog.

Sacred Feather City, Thieving Heaven true inheritance, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the red lotus in the River of Time...

“So it turned out that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable knew about Sacred Feather City’s location during his lifetime.”

“Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s name was Ben Jie Sun, but even though he was an otherworldly demon like me, he was not from Earth!”

“Lifespan Gu... it seems that heaven’s will is the greatest restriction of Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables.”

“Red lotus! Ghost face! When I failed my rebirth last time, it was actually Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who helped me! I understand now, in my previous life, the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie was killed, and the ten extreme formation could not be completed, Spectral Soul made use of me to start all over again!”

“What, <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> is Ren Zu’s true inheritance?”

Next, Fang Yuan saw Spectral Soul using the method of soul devouring, but still failed when dealing with the golden soul. He saw seven out of the ten split soul returning to the world of the living.

Next, combined with the portion of grey memory affecting Mo Yao’s remnant soul, he understood the origin of wisdom sword Immortal Gu, as well as the complex relationship between Bo Qing and Mo Yao.

“That soul which is sleeping while emitting golden radiance is Verdant Great Sun? The one born from Ren Zu’s right eye in the legend?”

“Bo Qing is Azure! That Purple is actually Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s master, Purple Mountain True Monarch, whom I randomly named?!”

“So the truth behind Mo Yao and Bo Qing was like this.”

“Heaven’s will! So all of those superb immortal materials are filled with heaven’s will, Shadow Sect is wary of them and had to give them up. After obtaining them, they seemed harmless to me. But what about in the future? If I carry these immortal materials around, will I draw the attention of heaven’s will?”

“So that’s it. A wisdom path Gu Immortal of Shadow Sect, Da Li, was the rank eight Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie that was suppressed! Everything makes sense now.”

At this time, the myriad tribulation grand clear space dissipated, while the myriad tribulation dark oil poison descended, attacking Spectral Soul.

The following scenes made Fang Yuan even more shocked!

He finally understood that the secret of him having Spring Autumn Cicada had been known by Shadow Sect since long ago.

Because of Shadow Sect’s help, he was not exposed for so long after the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

In contrast, Shadow Sect’s Qin Bai Sheng and others helped him deal with the problem, engaging in a battle with Feng Jiu Ge.

Shadow Sect’s strength was incredible, they managed to deduce the tribulations.

“The secret of rebirth, the fact that I own Spring Autumn Cicada, after this battle, the entire world knows!”

“Shadow Sect, Spectral Soul, they seem to want to use my otherworldly demon status, but because of a twist of fate, Shadow Sect’s Northern Plains branch was almost completely wiped out. No, in a way, isn’t this showing the power of heaven’s will?”

“Shadow Sect could deduce all the tribulations, what method did they use? This is simply the ultimate weapon against tribulations!”

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable... he is likely the strongest venerable. During his life, he might have been equal to the other venerables, but using the food path true inheritance, he created the soul devouring method. He could steal the cultivation memories and experiences of others. Thus, he could not raise his attainment level directly like with dream realms, but after so many years of accumulation and development, his attainment level in all other paths, including formation path and wisdom path, are definitely at least great grandmaster! It is not strange that he deduced the tribulations.”

“In this case, it is too strange that he is not reacting. Could it be that he is doing this on purpose?”

Dark oil poison and grey memory faded, but the vine dragon tribulation descended soon after.

Heaven Overseeing Tower began its final struggle, it manipulated the myriad tribulation and directly attacked the ten extreme formation.

Spectral Soul’s fight to defend it made Fang Yuan, who witnessed everything, tongue-tied. He had once been proud of his battle tactics that were refined over time, but compared to Spectral Soul, it was nothing.

Eventually, Heaven Overseeing Tower broke apart, Heavenly Court failed, even Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was sacrificed.

Both sides suffered great losses!

Spectral Soul’s body was only a handful of meters tall. He was no longer as condensed as previously, his aura was very weak.

Mo Yao’s remnant soul manipulated the immortal zombie body, flying into the sky and questioning Spectral Soul, but she was wiped out.

“You are my final obstacle? Hehehe, it is a pity. If Yan Shi did not remind me earlier, you might have caused me trouble. But now... hehe. Did you forget that all of your sword path Immortal Gu have my will in them, did you also forget who was the one feeding them over these years?”

Spectral Soul’s words made Fang Yuan’s heart jump.

During this period of time, he had already deciphered many details regarding the immortal killer move lead soul into dream.

This was thanks to the fact that Ying Wu Xie only had Gu worms that were meant to use lead soul into dream.

Even though Shadow Sect designed this killer move for him, according to his cultivation level, there were several versions. But Ying Wu Xie had distinctly classified them, he placed a pile for each of their respective Gu worms.

This allowed him to use the killer move much more efficiently and easily. But at the same time, Fang Yuan could learn about them more easily.

Fang Yuan understood: “Facing Spectral Soul’s main body, I only have one chance to strike. If I fail once, Spectral Soul will react and I will have no opportunity left!”

Spectral Soul swallowed Mo Yao’s remnant soul, saying to Fang Yuan: “Wu Xie, defend me. I just need a little over ten breaths of time to succeed!”

“Yes.” Fang Yuan had a calm mind, he flew up, standing beside Spectral Soul, looking around alertly.

“We have no chances left.” Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals sighed as they retreated.

“After plotting for tens of thousands of years, after so much planning and painstaking efforts, I finally succeeded in refining this rank nine sovereign immortal fetus Gu. With this Immortal Gu, I can surpass all of the venerables in history, I can obtain the body of an otherworldly demon, reaching an unsurpassed realm that nobody has ever seen! All other Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables in history will not be my match, even if Ren Zu resurrects, he will be inferior to me! Hahaha...”

Spectral Soul raised his head and laughed.

“Sovereign immortal fetus Gu?” Fang Yuan’s heart was moved: “What use does this Gu have, it can allow Spectral Soul to reach a realm where nobody has never gotten to before? Is this realm immortality?”

“The closer I am towards the end, the more I cannot afford to be careless.” Spectral Soul squinted, investigating carefully.

Fang Yuan’s heart nearly skipped a beat.

But in the end, Spectral Soul only spit out some spectral qi and destroyed all of the investigative Gu worms.

“As expected. The final line of the song indicated the true use of ghostly concealment, it is to prevent the detection of ghosts and souls. Back then, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable could take Luo Po valley, Dang Hun Mountain, and travel through the Obsession Death Domain without being restricted by endless souls, it was because of this move!”

“Thus, Spectral Soul did not suspect me. It seems that Ying Wu Xie’s soul is also his split soul. Only towards himself could he be so trusting without reservations.”

Next, Fang Yuan witnessed Spectral Soul floating towards the sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan calmed down, he was no longer nervous.

According to the song, he had to destroy this sovereign immortal fetus Gu. Because Immortal Gu were fragile, he just needed to squeeze it to destroy it. But Spectral Soul, no matter how weak he was, there was an unknown level of risk to deal with him.

But Fang Yuan was firm and determined, he directly targeted Spectral Soul, snatching sovereign immortal fetus Gu!

“Lead soul into dream.” He struck.

He had not comprehended it entirely, this was not a complete immortal killer move, it was inferior to the original rank eight version.

But right now, Spectral Soul was already weak to his limits.

Fang Yuan succeeded in one attempt!

Next, he left Ying Wu Xie’s body, doing the same thing as Spectral Soul, his soul floated towards sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

At this moment, he had finally broken free from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s instructions, he took the fruits of Spectral Soul’s labor, the achievement he had spent countless years and paid an immeasurable price to painstakingly create!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1021: Still Not Returning Here?

Fang Yuan’s soul left the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body, he flew towards this mysterious rank nine Immortal Gu.

The moment they interacted, Fang Yuan felt an immeasurable suction force.

This Immortal Gu, named sovereign immortal fetus Gu by Spectral Soul, seemed to be eager for a soul already.

Fang Yuan’s soul entered it, it was as if he had fallen into the whirlpools of Falling Heavenly River!

At once, his soul was sucked in by the Immortal Gu, he was blending into it at an unbelievable speed!

Fang Yuan could not think, he felt that he was inside darkness that was unfathomably deep.

This darkness was not cold, it was warm.

It was like he had gone back into his mother’s womb, he was like a fetus inside amniotic fluid.

And outside.

After Fang Yuan’s soul entered the rank nine Immortal Gu, the sky rumbled loudly, it seemed furious, but helpless at the same time.

Sovereign immortal fetus Gu began to shine brightly.

First, there was white light, from pale transparent light to pure white light, and finally to thick milky white light.

Next, there was a hint of red inside the white light. The red quickly spread, turning the light into pale pink, before it turned pinkish red, and finally, bright red like fire.

After red light, it turned into orange. After orange, it turned into yellow...

Like the colors of the rainbow, it continued changing, until finally, the light became black.

Inside the black colored light, sovereign immortal fetus Gu twitched continuously, from the size of a thumb, it expanded to the size of a basin.

Inside this dark ball, a fetus was shining brightly in rainbow light, it could vaguely be seen.

Life force was gathering, it was growing and becoming stronger.

White fog started to surround it.

The temperature of the surroundings fell rapidly, fog turned into frost, covering the surface of the ball.

Next, lightning shot out, surrounding the ball, forming a web of lightning.

Lightning crackled as sparks were created. The sparks fell on the frost and did not extinguish, instead, the frost started burning.

The frost turned into qi that surrounded the ball.

Green patterns slowly appeared on the surface of the ball. Soon, they turned from phantom to solid, becoming countless vines and twigs.

The twigs were wilted, while the leaves were green and lively.

Soon, fruits began to grow around these leaves.

These purple fruits emitted a fragrant smell. But the surface of the fruits were very ugly, there were many holes in them, like they were rotten.

Many changes occurred, they were unimaginable. On the surface, they looked random and abrupt, but if one observed carefully, they seemed to contain the profoundness of heaven and earth.

As the changes continued to occur, the fetus inside the ball grew larger.

Eventually, after a total of eighty-one changes, the ball turned into mud, as the fetus inside was at its largest, a baby was formed, stretching his four limbs!

At once, the ball that surrounded him cracked, the baby was born!

This baby had a lively expression, his eyes were shining like stars, he had pale and fair skin, his limbs were chubby, his face was rosy, cute and delicate, immortal aura was oozing from him.

A formless force surrounded his entire body, it protected him from damage, he was safe and sound.

The baby gradually landed on the ground.

During this process, he grew rapidly.

From the time of his birth to when he was two to three years old physically, only a breath of time had passed.

Four, five, six, seven, eleven, twelve years old... when his legs landed on the ground, he was already a sixteen year old young lad!

His skin was still white, but it was not pale white, nor a feminine pinkish white, it was a white that was clean and simple.

His long hair was black and shiny, extending to his waist.

His body was slightly thin, there was no excess flesh on his entire body.

The bridge of his nose was high, the most attractive thing were his eyes. The starlight that was shining in his eyes had already become muted, they turned dark and deep like an abyss.

His lips were quite rich, giving off a rosy and healthy glow. Right now, they were tightly pursed together,showing his mental state of being determined and unwavering.

This youngster was naturally Fang Yuan.

At this moment, he opened his eyes, looking at his young body, he was shocked: “An entirely new... body?”

The body that was created by Spectral Soul and the entirety of Shadow Sect, after countless years of hard work and effort, it was not as simple as it seemed.

Regarding its traits, Fang Yuan had to explore further.

But simply at this moment, Fang Yuan’s first feeling was that this body was incomparably suited for his soul.

In comparison, his previous immortal zombie body was like clothing made from twigs and leaves, and this new body was made with soft silk.

Everything was different now.

Fang Yuan felt that he had walked out of the darkness, he saw blue skies and white clouds, his perspective was broadened.

“This is the use of the sovereign immortal fetus Gu that Spectral Soul had painstakingly created? Revival! And having rank six cultivation level upon revival.”

Fang Yuan’s Gu Immortal aura was not fake.

He had made the right gamble!

Even though he did not know what the use of this Immortal Gu was, seeing Spectral Soul float towards the Immortal Gu personally, Fang Yuan knew he could do the same.

As he thought about these things, Fang Yuan directed his gaze towards the sky.

There, Spectral Soul was still in the dream realm. This was within Fang Yuan’s expectations, after all, Spectral Soul’s condition was really terrible.

And Ying Wu Xie’s body was no longer controlled by Fang Yuan’s soul, it had already shut its eyes, floating in the air, unmoving.

Fang Yuan called out: “Come back.”

Instantly, a large number of Gu worms flew out of Ying Wu Xie’s body.

Earlier, Fang Yuan’s soul had entered the sovereign immortal fetus Gu, all of the Gu worms with him had stayed inside the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body.

Now, Fang Yuan called out and retrieved these Gu worms.

Attitude Immortal Gu, unravel mystery Immortal Gu, change soul Immortal Gu, and other soul path and dream path mortal Gu.

“Ying Wu Xie still has a number of dream path Immortal Gu on his body, how can I retrieve them?” Fang Yuan frowned, feeling troubled.

He had used Change Soul earlier, using attitude Gu to disguise himself and used the immortal killer move lead soul into dream. Even though he succeeded in affecting Spectral Soul, the wills inside these dream path Gu worms had already reacted, Fang Yuan could not move them anymore.

“Not only the Immortal Gu in his body, Ying Wu Xie’s body itself has a lot of value for research! Hmm?”

Fang Yuan suddenly turned around, seeing an immortal zombie approach him with an imposing demeanor.

Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered, his lips curled into a smile, thinking: “You are finally here.”

It was himself.

Or more accurately, it was Ying Wu Xie’s soul, who was manipulating Fang Yuan’s former immortal zombie body.

At this moment, Fang Yuan had just obtained a new body, he was still adapting, the number of Gu worms with him could not compare to the immortal zombie body.

But Fang Yuan was not nervous, he waited for Ying Wu Xie to arrive.

“You are?” Ying Wu Xie hesitated, he slowly approached Fang Yuan, assessing him closely.

Fang Yuan purposely pretended to be close to him, placing his arms behind his back and saying: “Wu Xie, I have succeeded. Fang Yuan’s soul has already been completely destroyed!”

“No! You are not my main body! If you are, with my relationship as a split soul, how can I feel no connection?” Ying Wu Xie’s eyes shined with bright light, he reacted and exposed Fang Yuan’s true identity.

“Oh, ghostly concealment became a flaw instead. But if I could use familiar face, I should have been able to deceive him.” Fang Yuan thought while rubbing his chin, he couldn’t help but laugh.

He was so casual, a confident light flickered in his eyes, as if he was in control of the situation.

“You are Fang Yuan!” Ying Wu Xie understood, he gritted his teeth until they were making sounds, he was so angry he felt he was burning up!

His anger was understandable.

They had worked so hard, planning for countless years before seeing the fruits of their labor. But Fang Yuan actually snatched it from them now.

Ying Wu Xie shouted loudly, pouncing towards Fang Yuan, he wanted to hack him into a million pieces!

They were a hundred steps away from each other, Fang Yuan showed a smile like his scheme had succeeded: “Ying Wu Xie, don’t you find it strange? Fixed Immortal Travel is my Immortal Gu, how could you activate it?”

Ying Wu Xie’s expression froze.

Back then, he was anxious and used it subconsciously, he did not consider that point!

Now that he was reminded by Fang Yuan, he knew something was amiss, his momentum was interrupted.

“You could use Fixed Immortal Travel because I lent it to you. I wanted you to rush here. Most of my accumulations are still in this body.” Fang Yuan said.

Since he knew that he was going to change souls with Ying Wu Xie, with his personality and methods, why would he not set up some arrangements?

Firstly, Fang Yuan concealed a huge amount of his fake will inside his mind.

Because of this, when Ying Wu Xie woke up, he wanted to rush back and ignored many things that did not seem right.

This was like what Mo Yao’s fake will did to Fang Yuan in Imperial Court blessed land.

Secondly, Fang Yuan injected some special will into his Gu worms.

What were special wills?

In Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had left behind a vast number of special wills. He set up some specific situations and they would activate accordingly.

Just like now.

Fang Yuan looked at Ying Wu Xie approaching, as the smile on his face grew, he called out: “Still not returning here?”

Swoosh!

A large number of Gu worms flew out, they were mostly mortal Gu, but there were Immortal Gu mixed in them.

Like birds flying back to their nests, they entered Fang Yuan’s embrace.

Ying Wu Xie stared with wide opened eyes, immensely shocked.

At that moment, he was all alone, without anything at his disposal. In his body, only Spring Autumn Cicada was left, and he could not activate it.

The situation on both sides flipped!

Fang Yuan’s arrangement was like this.

As long as Ying Wu Xie brought Fang Yuan’s body back to Yi Tian Mountain, and heard someone call out ‘still not returning here?’, these Gu worms would fly out and go to that person.

These Gu worms were originally Fang Yuan’s, now that they returned, they could be used at will, just like before.

Back then, Fang Yuan did not know about the use of sovereign immortal fetus Gu, he could not predict that he would revive and obtain a new body.

He was worried that it might not be appropriate for him to use Ying Wu Xie’s Gu worms, unexpected surprises could easily occur. He needed his own Gu worms to increase his battle strength at the crucial moment!

Of course, the special will that Fang Yuan injected was not so simple.

Once the time limit was exceeded, these Gu worms, no matter if they were mortal or immortal, would self destruct!

Enemies were often the best teachers. Fang Yuan had suffered under the influence of Mo Yao’s fake will and Giant Sun’s special will, how could he not learn from them?

Waving his hand, Fang Yuan easily sent Ying Wu Xie flying.

“Everything is over.” He walked to Ying Wu Xie, looking at the ‘Fang Yuan’ in front of him, he sighed with complex emotions.

Ying Wu Xie felt like he was in an icy river, he was chilled to the bones!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1022: It was all Heaven’s Will

Book 5: Demon King’s Domination

“Everything is over.” Looking at Ying Wu Xie under his feet, Fang Yuan sighed.

After realizing he himself had fallen to a scheme, Ying Wu Xie’s heart was filled with ice-cold despair, he gave up completely.

He knew he was thoroughly defeated and had no chance of turning around the situation.

However, a change occurred right at this moment!

Bam.

A soft explosion erupted, Ying Wu Xie’s soul, as well as Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body, had instantly self-detonated.

The immortal zombie body’s dao marks, as well as Ying Wu Xie’s soul, turned into fuel for Spring Autumn Cicada.

Spring Autumn Cicada activated!

A light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Spring Autumn Cicada once again entered the River of Time.

Fang Yuan was pale with shock!

“What’s going on? What the hell is going on! Spring Autumn Cicada is filled with my special will, how could it be activated by Ying Wu Xie?”

“No! Based on his expression, he already had no more will to resist. How could he activate my Spring Autumn Cicada?! Could it be that he was only acting?”

“Spring Autumn Cicada is my possession, I took extra precautions with the special will as well, how could it be activated by Ying Wu Xie?”

Fang Yuan was filled with shock and fright, as well as questions.

The questions he had puzzled him.

Standing on the same spot, Fang Yuan did not move, like a stone statue.

The change had occurred too suddenly.

Soon, his forehead was filled with cold sweat.

“What to do? What can I do?!”

Fang Yuan had used Spring Autumn Cicada to turn around many situations, making comebacks and escaping from multiple dangerous scenarios.

However, at this moment, facing someone else using Spring Autumn Cicada, he found that he had no method to deal with it!

His time path accumulation was indeed too weak.

Without Spring Autumn Cicada, he almost had no foundation in this aspect.

“Did I miscalculate? What else is there that I did not consider?” Fang Yuan squinted, a drop of cold sweat slipping down from his forehead to his eyes, and then down across his face.

Unable to find any answers, Fang Yuan shook his head and sighed.

“Nothing can be done about it, I already did my utmost.”

If Fang Yuan had not switched souls according to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s instructions, he would have utterly lost, with no chance to make a comeback. He simply could not have reached his current position.

“Could it be that because I did not follow Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s intention to destroy sovereign immortal fetus Gu, this change occurred?”

“Spring Autumn Cicada has not recovered, its activation now can only result in death!”

“No, that’s not right!”

Fang Yuan suddenly thought of a remaining arrangement created by Shadow Sect.

That was the ghost face and the red lotus in the River of Time.

In an instant, a chill spread all over his body and his hair stood on end.

“Be prepared for the worst in every situation. If he succeeds in rebirth, what change will occur on my end?” Right as Fang Yuan was thinking, he felt his vision starting to turn blurry.

No, it was not his vision turning blurry.

It was the whole world turning blurry under the strength of time path.

Because of Ying Wu Xie’s rebirth, everything was changing!

Whoosh!

Ying Wu Xie quickly reacted, exclaiming in shock: “This, this is the River of Time? How could this be! How did the Spring Autumn Cicada activate? How can my consciousness replace Fang Yuan’s consciousness in the Spring Autumn Cicada?”

He had no fewer questions than Fang Yuan.

Although he was the person concerned, he had reached the River of Time without knowing anything about how it happened.

In the River of Time, waves surged.

A huge wave ruthlessly crashed towards Spring Autumn Cicada.

Ying Wu Xie’s will immediately became panicked, screaming in fear! Spring Autumn Cicada was extremely weak, if it was struck by this wave, it had no possibility of surviving!

“Sigh... so it was like this.”

A sigh emerged during this moment of crisis.

From the River of Time floated out a ghost face. Its expression was bitter as it opened its mouth wide and spat out a red lotus.

The red lotus opened up and obstructed the fatal wave.

Afterwards, a formless suction force carried Spring Autumn Cicada, which contained Ying Wu Xie’s will, to the center of the red lotus.

In an instant, Ying Wu Xie’s will had entered a dark red space.

In this space, another will in Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s appearance was sitting cross-legged in mid-air, smiling bitterly at him.

“Our main body actually left you behind as a last resort in the River of Time?” Ying Wu Xie’s will was stunned for a moment before he immediately asked joyfully.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s will nodded, then shook his head: “You can also be considered a split soul of the main body, you should have remembered me. But unfortunately, because of the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, your memories dissipated.”

“Sigh! Nothing can be done about it, you think I was willing?” Ying Wu Xie was extremely anxious: “Also, what is going on? I had been schemed against by Fang Yuan and landed in his hands, I thought my death was certain. Why would I appear in the River of Time? Also, I clearly did not use Spring Autumn Cicada, so why did it suddenly activate?”

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s will heaved a long sigh: “I watched the whole series of events from inside this Red Lotus true inheritance, and just came to a realization. You could enter here because heaven’s will helped you. Spring Autumn Cicada was also activated by heaven’s will.”

“What?!” Ying Wu Xie almost collapsed from shock.

This was beyond his wildest imagination.

If it were not the genuine will of Spectral Soul in front of him, Ying Wu Xie would absolutely not have believed this fact.

“Hasn’t heaven’s will always been making difficulties for us? How could it suddenly help us?” Ying Wu Xie asked.

“Your memories have already completely dissipated, you lack my knowledge. Heaven’s will never made things difficult for us out of dislike. It also never helped us out of pity. The way of heaven is to be impartial, it is to take away surpluses while replenishing deficits. So all things are in balance and mutually restrict each other. As such, almost all fierce beasts have their natural enemies, and even rank nine venerables have limited lifespan.”

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s will paused for a moment before continuing: “And the way of humans is exactly the opposite of the way of heaven, it is to reduce the deficits and build up the surpluses. An expert will want to become even stronger. The rich would want to become richer. A beauty would want to become more beautiful. Those who have found longevity will want to obtain eternal life. Human avarice knows no bound, it will never be satisfied and is opposed to heaven’s will.”

“I understand a little now. Heaven’s will helped me because I failed. Fang Yuan has become a complete otherworldly demon and has already broken free of restrictions. If he is left unchecked, it will greatly damage the balance of heaven and earth. So heaven’s will shifted its target and wants to use me to deal with him and not let his plan succeed. But how could heaven’s will activate Spring Autumn Cicada? This Immortal Gu is clearly refined by Fang Yuan.” Ying Wu Xie was puzzled about this.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s will replied: “Sigh! This is an action by heaven’s will. I also realized it just earlier. When Fang Yuan obtained Spring Autumn Cicada, it was all arranged by heaven’s will. Heaven’s will had already chosen him as a tool, letting him rebirth and destroy our main body’s plan!”

“Now that I think about the information given by Bai Ning Bing earlier, a place where Fang Yuan performed particularly out of the ordinary was at Qing Mao Mountain. Although his aptitude was not good, his path had been smooth sailing, and at every urgent moment, he would make the wisest choice, obtaining the greatest benefits. Qing Mao Mountain, Three Kings blessed land, Imperial Court blessed land, Yi Tian Mountain... all along the way, he clearly has not used Spring Autumn Cicada just once.”

“Spring Autumn Cicada is only rank six, it has a failure rate. But he actually succeeded time after time. Besides the previous time where we helped him, he did not fail even once in all his other attempts! And bear in mind that Spring Autumn Cicada lowers his luck. This is probably all because heaven’s will was helping him in secret, which allowed him to rise from a mortal to a Gu Immortal in a handful of years, causing him to draw the attention of our main body and be chosen as a tool to deal with heaven’s will.”

Ying Wu Xie was gobsmacked: “Wait, wait, you are saying...”

Spectral Soul’s will nodded: “Right! This time, our main body failed primarily because of Fang Yuan. Our main body wanted to use Fang Yuan as a tool. But in fact, Fang Yuan was already a tool of heaven’s will.”

“Regardless of how many times Fang Yuan underwent rebirth, before his first rebirth, our main body had likely already succeeded. Not only did we refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, we might have even reached a heaven defying level! Precisely because of this, heaven’s will did not stint on helping Fang Yuan, letting him rebirth and arrive in the past to destroy our main body’s plan.”

“Fang Yuan is quite an interesting character. He is an otherworldly demon, so he has the qualifications to rebirth and change the past. Ordinary people, no matter how superior they are, cannot escape the decree of fate. However, he is not a complete otherworldly demon, so he could still be influenced and manipulated by heaven’s will. He thought he was the one to refine Spring Autumn Cicada and use it, but in fact that was never the case. This trump card, Spring Autumn Cicada, was already infused with heaven’s will. It is clear this arrangement had already started the moment Fang Yuan obtained Spring Autumn Cicada. But he was deceived by heaven’s will and never felt anything wrong. After all, Spring Autumn Cicada can only carry a portion of will when traveling to the past. And wills are inferior to souls, they can very easily be influenced. It is like right now, I want to impart all my memories and knowledge to you, but unfortunately your will can only bear very little.”

For a moment, Ying Wu Xie’s mouth was wide open, unable to say anything!

The waves of the River of Time unceasingly crashed against the red lotus.

Petals scattered along with the waves.

Soon, only the innermost center of the flower was remaining.

“You don’t have much time.” Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s will sighed and continued.

“Fang Yuan is an otherworldly demon, heaven’s will tried to influence him as much as possible, but in the end, he followed his own mind’s inner desires and chose to seize sovereign immortal fetus Gu, instead of destroying it.”

“As such, he is like a chess piece who no longer is restricted by the rules of chess. Heaven’s will naturally would not tolerate such an existence, so it activated Spring Autumn Cicada to use you in the process of dealing with Fang Yuan.”

“But heaven’s will is not going to let you regain sovereign immortal fetus Gu after you rebirth. So, after you rebirth, you would likely not have any easy opportunities to change the overall situation, don’t be impatient and ruin this final chance.”

Ying Wu Xie asked: “Then what should I do?”

“Now, Zombie Alliance is already annihilated, Shadow Sect is also destroyed, even my main body is in a dangerous situation. But Shadow Sect’s immortals have all left behind some arrangements for the future. You can use these to reestablish Shadow Sect.”

“Fate is hard to defy, but luck can be exploited! The power from Northern Plains’ Longevity Heaven can be used. On Central Continent’s side, there are also hidden forces which have not been targeted by the ten great ancient sects...”

“Your will is limited, knowing this much is already your maximum. Use these to reestablish Shadow Sect and save our main body. Most crucially, you need to inform our main body of this important information. Because when you rebirth, both I and this Red Lotus True inheritance will also change, and I won’t remember these things. At that time, you will be the only person who knows!”

“Remember, a tall tree is the first to face destruction, soil that is nearest to the water will be the first to be swept away by the currents. Our previous action of hiding and accumulating power to deal with heaven’s will was correct. Since we succeeded once, then we can succeed a second time! Take care of yourself!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1023: Ying Wu Xie Rebirths

The sound of the wind was blowing intensely, as ‘Fang Yuan’, who was still flying, jolted to awareness, he blurted out: “I was reborn!”

“Spring Autumn Cicada is amazing indeed! Worthy of Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s vital Immortal Gu!”

“What time is it now?”

Ying Wu Xie stopped moving, he looked around, realizing that he was on the way to Yi Tian Mountain.

At this moment, he was less than ten thousand li away from his destination.

“Fang Yuan purposely lent me Fixed Immortal Travel so that I could get to him, he would then take his Gu worms back and obtain victory!”

“But he did not expect that he was heaven’s will’s tool to begin with, the Spring Autumn Cicada that he had was controlled by heaven’s will all along.”

“Now that I have been reborn, I know the appearance of Yi Tian Mountain’s scenery clearly. I can use Fixed Immortal Travel to teleport there directly. I can deal with Fang Yuan and take revenge!”

Thinking of this, Ying Wu Xie shook his head rapidly.

“Damn it! Fang Yuan’s fake will affected my judgment again.”

Ying Wu Xie gritted his teeth: “Heaven’s will truly has ill intentions, even if I rush over now, Fang Yuan has already used sovereign immortal fetus Gu, he is weakened at most, all I can do is injure him.”

“What a pity! If I returned to the time when I just escaped from the dream realm, I would be able to turn this around. Hmph, but heaven’s will would not allow that, it does not want to see my main body obtain sovereign immortal fetus Gu.”

“Since the outcome is already decided, I should follow the instructions of my main body and retreat!”

“Heaven’s will wants us to fight, how can I let its scheme succeed?”

“Anyone who can achieve great things must be able to endure the most unbearable things.”

“I do not need to deal with Fang Yuan, he can draw the attention of heaven’s will. In the future, if he is still alive, I will use him as the material to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu again, I can save a lot of time and effort in that case.”

“I need to rebuild Shadow Sect, this is definitely not the end! I can make use of Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan, but I cannot let them meet Fang Yuan.”

Since he knew about the fake will, he was on guard against it, Ying Wu Xie escaped from Fang Yuan’s scheme.

He took a final look at Yi Tian Mountain, anger, hatred, and anticipation were flickering in his eyes.

At this distance, he could see that Yi Tian Mountain was in rubble. The despicable thief Fang Yuan, the one who took the fruits of his labor, was definitely still there!

But he could not go there now.

The most important thing was the big picture.

Ying Wu Xie gritted his teeth, turning around and leaving.

“Why has Ying Wu Xie not come here yet?” Fang Yuan waited for a long time, his heart sank to rock bottom.

“This means he saw through my arrangements and left my control?”

Fang Yuan was frowning deeper.

Although he did not know what happened, he did not know the truth of Spring Autumn Cicada with the memories of the previous life gone, but Fang Yuan knew one thing clearly: He was in quite a pinch.

“If Ying Wu Xie does not come here, the special will that I placed in my Gu worms will not activate. After the time limit, these Gu worms will self detonate! I need to get to Ying Wu Xie as soon as possible, suppressing or convincing Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan to subdue him with me.”

Fang Yuan still had attitude Gu, this was the best evidence to convince Hei Lou Lan.

As for Tai Bai Yun Sheng, it was even easier. After spending so much time together, he just needed to reveal some details to convince him.

Fang Yuan inspected his Gu worms.

He had regained control of the Gu worms that he brought after using Change Soul.

The highest ranking one was the legendary attitude Immortal Gu. Other than that, he had the wisdom path Immortal Gu Unravel Mystery, and the soul path Immortal Gu Change Soul.

As for the others, they were all dream path and soul path mortal Gu, they were not worth mentioning.

Fang Yuan frowned deeply.

Among them, there was no movement type Gu worm!

“Do I need to chase after Ying Wu Xie, who has Fixed Immortal Travel, on foot? Or maybe I can subdue the dream path Gu worms on Ying Wu Xie’s body first? These Gu worms include movement type Gu worms.”

But inside these Gu, there was none of Fang Yuan’s will. Thus, Fang Yuan could not subdue them easily like Unravel Mystery and Change Soul.

To use them, he might need to use attitude Gu to deceive them.

But he had already deceived them once, Fang Yuan felt little confidence in succeeding a second time.

“But I have no choice, I must try.” Thinking of this, Fang Yuan subconsciously raised his head, looking at Ying Wu Xie’s body in the sky.

He did not expect that this was the last time he was seeing Ying Wu Xie’s body!

At the next moment, Ying Wu Xie’s body self-destructed.

There was no sound.

This was a silent explosion.

The result of the explosion was not bloody, it was beautiful and dazzling.

The entirety of Ying Wu Xie’s body turned into layers of dazzling lights.

These beautiful lights were shining in the colors of the rainbow, they were extremely beautiful.

But looking at this beautiful sight, Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, he quickly retreated, getting some distance from it.

Because he recognized this was a dream realm!

This dream realm had manifested externally, it was unfathomably deep, forming right in front of him.

“Did this happen because I used lead soul into dream on Spectral Soul? No, definitely not. All of a sudden, why did Ying Wu Xie’s body self-detonate? And it turned into a dream realm?”

Fang Yuan sighed inwardly.

He did not know that Ying Wu Xie’s lifespan was only eighteen hours. During the eighteen hours, Ying Wu Xie turned from a mortal into a rank one, rank two, three, four... seven, and rank eight Gu Immortal. Every two hours, his cultivation level increased by one rank. At the final moment, he would even become a rank nine Gu Immortal.

But once the eighteen hours was up, he would self-detonate, turning into a dream realm.

He was born from nothing, he was created using Immortal Gu Become Real, appearing from a dream realm. It was not strange that he turned into a dream realm.

The dream realm created from his detonation expanded rapidly, spreading out.

Fang Yuan raced away as fast as he could, he fled for seven hundred li, until he was out of the dream realm’s radius.

If he was inside the dream realm, he would be in trouble.

Even though Fang Yuan had unravel mystery Immortal Gu, he did not have enough mortal Gu to use his immortal killer move, unravel dream.

The dream realm was still spreading, but the speed was decreasing.

Fang Yuan could only keep retreating, when he was a thousand li away from Yi Tian Mountain, the dream realm stopped expanding.

In this way, a giant dream realm that stretched a thousand li after manifestation appeared in front of Fang Yuan, filling his vision.

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped: “Thankfully, I did not listen to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable at the end and destroy sovereign immortal fetus Gu. Otherwise, my soul would be trapped along with Ying Wu Xie’s body in this giant dream realm until my death?”

“What do I do now?”

This change severely disrupted Fang Yuan’s plans.

Ying Wu Xie’s body was extremely valuable. He had a set of dream path Gu worms and could use the formidable lead soul into dream.

What Fang Yuan wanted the most was Spectral Soul. Even though he was in bad condition, if he escaped the dream realm and ended up in Fang Yuan’s hands, Fang Yuan could soul search him and obtain lots of secrets, along with a vast amount of cultivation experience.

And this huge battlefield, even though it was ravaged by myriad tribulations, some Gu Immortals’ immortal apertures might be left behind, at the least, life and death blessed land was still around.

But now, all of these things were covered by the dream realm.

Regardless of whether Fang Yuan had unravel dream, even if he could use it, how many years would it take him to unravel this dream realm and get to the center of the battlefield?

Fang Yuan clenched his fists, looking at the giant dream realm, he sighed helplessly.

“At this point, there are no other options. I cannot stay here, after such a commotion, Southern Border Gu Immortals are definitely rushing here.”

Fang Yuan quickly moved according to his memories.

He chose the direction where Tai Bai Yun Sheng had escaped with his body.

“Hopefully, my luck is good and I can encounter them.”

Fang Yuan was not going to succeed.

He did not know that after encountering some Southern Border Gu Immortals, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan had already changed directions after the intense battle.

He also did not know that using the advantage of rebirth, Ying Wu Xie had joined up with Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan already.

“Fang Yuan, you had better explain it properly, otherwise, we will be enemies!” Hei Lou Lan’s expression was dark, she was very rude towards Ying Wu Xie.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly waved his hands: “Calm down! I believe Fang Yuan has his reasons, listen to him.”

Ying Wu Xie looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan in a sincere manner: “I was too anxious, I was hit by his killer move, I did not just end up in the dream realm. Right now, most of my Gu worms cannot be used, only by killing him can this killer move be undone.”

“But I saw you use Fixed Immortal Travel! If not for the fact that our locations can be detected with Gu worms, I thought you were abandoning us and left Southern Border yourself!” Hei Lou Lan spoke quickly, demanding imposingly.

“That was a desperate move that I was forced to use. You also saw that I failed and suffered heavy injuries when I used Fixed Immortal Travel the first time. Furthermore, why would I abandon you? The situation now is filled with danger, we have to stay united to have a bigger chance of survival.” Ying Wu Xie said convincingly.

Hei Lou Lan snorted, she wanted to continue arguing.

But Ying Wu Xie stopped her from speaking: “Enough! We will use Fixed Immortal Travel to leave now. My identity is already exposed, Heavenly Court knows already, Hu Immortal blessed land is not safe, we have to transfer the resources inside.”

Fang Yuan sprinted rapidly.

He did not use any Gu worms, but he was fast like a charging horse.

After fifteen minutes of sprinting, he did not feel any fatigue.

Along the way, he realized joyfully: This body might look pale and tender, but it had incredible defense. During his sprint, none of the tree branches that scraped his body left a mark. The sharp rocks on the ground were crushed when he stepped on them, they were no obstruction to him.

Furthermore, he had huge strength.

By just leaping gently, he could jump for ten meters of distance.

But what made Fang Yuan disappointed was, he did not encounter any traces of Ying Wu Xie, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, or Hei Lou Lan wherever he went.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1024: Fang Yuan Borrows Gu

Wind blew wildly past him, Fang Yuan traveled across mountains and rivers, even without using Gu worms, his speed was very fast.

After he left the range of the tribulations, he no longer saw flat plains, instead, there were mountains and forests.

Southern Border was full of mountains, this was the special characteristic of the region.

“After running for so long, without any rest, I felt no fatigue at all! Most importantly, I did not even use a single Gu worm.”

Fang Yuan was starting to feel the uniqueness of this body now.

A Gu Master’s body, without using Gu worms to modify them like black boar Gu and white boar Gu, was no different to a mortal.

Precisely because of the dao marks in their bodies, Gu Masters’ bodies become extraordinary, filled with unique specialties.

“My body was created from the rank nine sovereign immortal fetus Gu. It seems that the dao marks in me are not few in number. At the least, the number of strength path dao marks surpass my previous body’s accumulation!”

Fang Yuan assessed in his mind.

After becoming an immortal zombie, he had also stopped feeling physical fatigue. But if his original body revived, he would definitely need to rest if he tried running like this.

Fang Yuan ran in the thick forest, he used both his hands and legs to climb cliffs and steep paths.

Fang Yuan was still naked, he was like a white figure dashing through the thick forest.

He could see the thick forest clearly in his vision. Even during his sprinting, it was as if time was still, Fang Yuan could easily avoid obstacles.

“Using a phrase from Earth, this is visual acuity. My visual acuity while moving is superb to the extreme! This is definitely inhuman. My original body could only reach this stage after using Gu worm.”

Rapidly, Fang Yuan ascended to the peak of this mountain.

The forest that obscured his vision was gone, his field of vision expanded, he could see everything around him!

Wind blew as his long hair swayed behind his back.

Fang Yuan took a couple of deep breaths before settling down, his breathing was regular and relaxed, as if the running earlier did not happen.

His stamina was unbelievable!

Mountain winds blew coldly, Fang Yuan was still naked, without being covered up at all, but he felt no chill.

His heartbeat returned to normal, every time it beat, it was very strong and lively.

Fang Yuan looked into the distance.

His vision was very good.

Looking ten thousand steps away, everything was clear to him.

Looking around, Fang Yuan’s gaze froze, he stared in focus.

He saw traces of battle.

“It seems that Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan carried my body and encountered Gu Immortals here, they had a fight.”

Fang Yuan jumped down from a mountain peak.

With a loud bang, he landed on a rock ten meters below.

He was uninjured.

Even his legs felt no numbness!

The rock below him however, was covered in spider web-like cracks.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined, he began experimenting.

The distance between him and the ground increased. From ten meters to fifteen meters, to twenty-five meters, and to forty meters.

Using examples from Earth, fifteen meters was the height of a five storey building. Forty meters was a tall building, a lighthouse.

He was not at his limit yet, the distance increased to a hundred and sixty meters.

At this point, Fang Yuan felt his feet turning numb. His guts were huge, several times, he used other areas of his body to land.

His chest hit the ground, his back hit the ground, he was able to create holes in the mountain rocks.

Fang Yuan stood up from the holes, completely intact.

In fact, the numb feeling felt great!

Breathing in deeply, Fang Yuan jumped down again.

This time, he was at a hundred and eighty meters.

This height was not a problem for Fang Yuan, but the point was, he was pointing his head downwards!

Bam.

With a loud sound, Fang Yuan’s entire head was buried into the rock.

Propping himself up, he pulled his head out of the rock.

The skull was the hardest part of the body, but Fang Yuan felt something.

His skull was numb, and he felt a little dizzy.

But this dizziness only lasted for three breaths of time, and it was very mild. With a gust of cool breeze, it was gone.

Fang Yuan touched his head and inspected his body.

He was completely intact, he did not even lose a single strand of hair!

He was good as new.

Fang Yuan tried to pull his hair, he found out that his hair was very durable, he had to use a lot of strength to pull out one strand.

This hair was thicker than a normal person’s hair, it was black and shiny, resembling a thin steel wire.

Pulling it further, it did not break, it was extremely durable.

Fang Yuan thought it over, he tied this hair around his wrist, turning several rounds before tightening it.

This hair could not be lost, if someone with ill intentions took it, it was a useful thing for deductions.

Fang Yuan ran towards the area with traces of battle, while jumping down from mountain cliffs and testing his limits.

The height continued to increase, from a hundred and eighty meters, he reached two hundred and fifty meters.

At this point, Fang Yuan felt pain, but it was not unbearable yet.

Eventually, after three hundred and thirty meters, Fang Yuan stopped his experiment.

From this height, he could already feel evident pain. The area where he landed on was slightly red, there was a slight bruise.

“Three hundred and thirty meters is not my body’s limit?” Fang Yuan was shocked.

This height was terrifying, even the Eiffel Tower on Earth was only three hundred meters tall.

“With just this body, without using a single defensive Gu, I can reach this level. Even Gu Immortals, with just their bodies alone, it is not common to reach this level, right?”

“It seems that among the dao marks that I have, there are a lot of defensive properties.”

Realizing this, Fang Yuan was more assured.

He had no defensive Immortal Gu now, he only had Unravel Mystery, Change Soul, and attitude Gu.

Arriving at the location of the battle traces, Fang Yuan squatted down and investigated.

“It seems to be them.” Soon, Fang Yuan stood up, frowning.

Without investigative Gu worms, it was very troublesome, Fang Yuan could not be certain.

But he knew that he had to continue chasing them!

“There is not much time left.”

He had no time to check his own abilities, the earlier experiment was only due to convenience, Fang Yuan continued pursuing them.

Soon, he found the second and third traces of them.

Fang Yuan followed these traces and slowly changed his direction.

Battles between Gu Immortals usually happened in the sky. There were few traces left on the ground. And because Fang Yuan could not fly, it was hard for him to track them.

As time passed, Fang Yuan’s heart sank to rock bottom.

Suddenly, a figure descended from the sky like a comet.

With a loud crash, he landed in front of Fang Yuan.

Fire spread everywhere, burning all of the surrounding trees.

“Who is it?!” Fang Yuan frowned, his eyes shined as he shouted coldly.

“I am Huo Kong Dong, did you come from Yi Tian Mountain?” The person was burning in flames, his attitude was not friendly.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned grim, change soul Immortal Gu’s aura burst out as he questioned instead of answering: “You came at a good time, just now when you were flying, did you see any suspicious individuals?”

Sensing the aura of change soul Immortal Gu, he knew that Fang Yuan was not to be trifled with, his demeanor changed.

The majority of rank six Gu Immortals did not have Immortal Gu.

Even though Huo Kong Dong was a lone cultivator, he had already joined Southern Border’s Chai clan.

Chai clan was a super force, in this battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Chai clan’s Gu Immortals died. Chai clan’s first supreme elder thus sent an external elder, Gu Immortal Huo Kong Dong, to investigate the cause.

Hearing Fang Yuan’s question, Huo Kong Dong thought in his mind: “Suspicious individuals? You are running around here butt naked in broad daylight, you are the most suspicious one!”

He was silent briefly before answering: “There is not a single person within a hundred li other than you, sir.”

“Damn it! Damn it!” Fang Yuan screamed, his expression was twisted and ruthless, he seemed to be bloodthirsty.

Next, he clenched his fists as he gritted his teeth, speaking to himself: “It seems they have escaped! But even if you escape to the ends of the world, I will find you. I will return this humiliation to you by a hundredfold, a thousandfold!”

Huo Kong Dong saw Fang Yuan like this and had a guess: “It seems this person is naked because he was plotted against by someone, he lost many Gu worms and suffered a loss. He has a fierce personality and is furious now, I should be careful.”

Fang Yuan did not explain anything, but Huo Kong Dong had already found an explanation for Fang Yuan in his mind.

Furthermore, he did not want to provoke Fang Yuan, it was not worth it to deal with his anger.

“I did not delve deeply into Yi Tian Mountain, go and see for yourself!” Saying this, Fang Yuan was ready to leave.

Hearing this answer, Huo Kong Dong was not pleased, he wanted to obstruct Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan paused in his steps, he asked: “Wait! You are Huo Kong Dong? A member of Chai clan?”

“That’s right.” Huo Kong Dong stared blankly as he answered.

Fang Yuan showed an unsightly smile: “Good, I am old friends with your ninth supreme elder, has he completed his battlefield killer move myriad flash fire?”

Huo Kong Dong quickly replied: “Ninth elder is still in seclusion.”

“Heh, he is forced to stay in by his grandfather. Earlier he tried to harass Fairy Yi Yi... heh! After I settle this matter, I will look for him.” Fang Yuan said, stretching out his arm to Huo Kong Dong: “Lend me some Gu worms.”

“Ah?” Huo Kong Dong was shocked.

“What? You are a grand Gu Immortal, just lend me some mortal Gu, why are you so stingy?” Fang Yuan asked impatiently.

Huo Kong Dong thought: “Ninth elder is completing his battlefield killer move, but that is only an excuse to outsiders. The truth is, he did harass Fairy Yi Yi. The other party knows this, he must be friends with him. Even though I joined Chai clan, I am only a lone cultivator and outsider. But ninth elder is a member of Chai clan, and the grandson of first supreme elder. If I meet his friend and refuse to lend Gu worms, he would definitely be unhappy with me.”

Then I’ll lend them.

They’re mortal Gu anyway, they don’t cost much.

Huo Kong Dong took out his Gu worms, handing them to Fang Yuan, asking: “I wonder what is your name, brother?”

“I am Dong Fang Xiong Ji.” Fang Yuan waved his hand.

Huo Kong Dong stared as he thought: “He is Dong Fang Xiong Ji? He is indeed a notorious friend of ninth elder, he is famous in Southern Border for being extremely stingy, moreover he is small-minded and would take revenge for minor grievances. But he doesn’t look like this? Oh! He has no clothes left, he could only change his appearance. Never mind, I can forget about getting back these Gu worms I lent him. But if I can get this person to leave after lending to him, it would be a blessing.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1025: Dark Night, Cold Winds

Whoosh...!

Fang Yuan flew in the sky, like a fireball, his body was burning in flames, a long trail of smoke was behind him, he had quite the striking appearance.

The situation earlier was quite dangerous.

Fang Yuan met Huo Kong Dong, even though he had three Immortal Gu, and some soul path and dream path mortal Gu, they were not comprehensive, if they fought, he would be at a disadvantage.

Even if Fang Yuan wanted to use the immortal killer move and swap souls with Huo Kong Dong, he could not.

Earlier, when swapping souls with Ying Wu Xie, he had already expended a lot of mortal Gu.

All of the Gu worms with him could not form a full set to use the killer move.

But using his superior acting skills, not only did he alleviate the danger, he scammed four rank five mortal Gu from him.

“In my previous life, I joined the battle of Yi Tian Mountain and the huge gambling contest. I witnessed the conflicts between Southern Border’s Gu Immortals and obtained a lot of information. Thanks to this, I was able to learn about the relationship between Chai clan’s ninth elder and Dong Fang Xiong Ji.”

“I could deceive Huo Kong Dong just now thanks to attitude Gu!”

Even though Fang Yuan had the original familiar face, he modified it with attitude Gu as the core, using a thousand mortal Gu for the new version.

But he could not use this killer move now.

Earlier, against Huo Kong Dong, he had used attitude Gu solely.

“Attitude Gu’s ability is to conceal my true emotions and show a fake attitude, it can make others believe it.”

Thinking back, Fang Yuan felt that attitude Gu was really useful.

Because he used attitude Gu secretly, his acting earlier was flawless, Huo Kong Dong felt that Fang Yuan was enraged and did not want to provoke him.

There was another advantage too, even though attitude Gu was of high rank, it had a low usage requirement. It only expended mental energy.

Fang Yuan had just revived, he had little immortal essence, it was far less than his original accumulation.

“Unfortunately, attitude Gu is not mine, I have to return it to Hei Lou Lan eventually.” Thinking of this, Fang Yuan felt it was a great pity.

Even though he had revived and obtained a new body, his soul was the same as before, it did not change.

Earlier, just after he had reborn, he had set a new alliance agreement with Hei Lou Lan and Fairy Li Shan.

This alliance agreement was very restrictive and did not have any loopholes, it restricted the alliance members in both body and soul.

Thus, even though Fang Yuan was in a different body, he could not go against it.

“But the effect of the alliance agreement should be split into two portions. One is in the soul while the other is in the body, I am only considered half an alliance member.”

“Sigh! Even so, the harm of going against the agreement is too great, even if it does not affect my body, my soul would not be able to endure it.”

“Hmm... this body must have quite a lot of wisdom path dao marks!”

While he was pondering, Fang Yuan’s thoughts shifted as he realized another point.

He distinctly remembered: When he had just become an immortal zombie, his mind could not work well, he was like a dying old man whose thinking was very slow. Using wisdom path methods, he managed to overcome this flaw.

After obtaining a new body, he could feel his thoughts turning rapidly with just a shift of his mind. Inspiration was bursting out like the water of a fountain.

During the process of thinking, thoughts were being produced in larger numbers, like the ripples of waves from the sea.

“I can finally stop using wisdom path Gu worms to replenish the thoughts in my mind!” At this moment, Fang Yuan was about to tear up.

In the past, he had to use Gu worms to generate thoughts and think.

But now, with a living body, he could produce large numbers of thoughts, and these thoughts varied greatly.

There were malicious thoughts, kind thoughts, longing thoughts, empty thoughts, battle thoughts, evil thoughts, obsessed thoughts...

“As long as a person is alive, there would be a great variety of thoughts in their mind, this is not strange. But my speed of producing thoughts is much faster than normal. I could sustain even the rate of consumption under the light of wisdom for a long time!

Precisely because of this, Fang Yuan predicted that this body had a significant number of wisdom path dao marks.

As to how many, he could not estimate the numbers yet.

The clarity of his cognition was unprecedented. Even his former body, before becoming an immortal zombie, was far inferior.

“Other than wisdom path dao marks, I also have quite a number of fire path dao marks!” Fang Yuan looked at the flames on his body as bright light flashed in his eyes.

The clothing of fire he was wearing was the rank five fire cape Gu. Once used, it would cause the body to burn in flames, they were harmless but had an elaborate effect, showing an eye-catching appearance.

Huo Kong Dong also used this Gu, but his body was covered in flames that were less than a human finger long.

But Fang Yuan’s flames not only covered his whole body, they were very long, the height of the flames exceeded the forearm of an adult man.

Other than fire cape Gu, Fang Yuan also ‘borrowed’ a rank five flying smoke Gu.

Right now, Fang Yuan was flying in the sky, it was due to flying smoke Gu.

Behind Fang Yuan, thick black smoke billowed out. Most importantly, his speed was so fast that it exceeded the normal limits of flying smoke Gu, it could match some mortal killer moves!

During the process of flying, winds blew wildly as he left the mountains behind.

Fang Yuan had an idea in his mind: “It seems that not only are there fire path dao marks, I also have dao marks suited for flying.”

He could finally fly!

This way, Fang Yuan’s flying quasi-grandmaster attainment level could be displayed.

Being able to fly meant that he could be very agile in fighting. When humans stood on the ground, they could only move left, right, forward, backward, or jump up and down. But in the sky, they could fly in all directions, evading wherever they wished.

This was a qualitative change.

His battle strength rose rapidly because of just one Gu worm!

Of course, Fang Yuan’s current battle strength was still very low among Gu Immortals. If he met other Southern Border Gu Immortals, he would need to deceive them using attitude Gu.

“I should try to avoid battles and catch up to Ying Wu Xie! I need to expose his identity and join up with Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.” Fang Yuan planned.

Right now, because Yi Tian Mountain was covered by the huge dream realm, Ying Wu Xie would not go there, Fang Yuan’s special will would not activate if he went there.

After the time limit was up, Fang Yuan’s Gu worms would self-detonate.

But as long as Fang Yuan controlled the situation, it could still be resolved.

That was to use Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s help to collect Gu worms and swap souls again.

After using Change Soul, Fang Yuan would return to his original body and mobilize his Gu worms, extracting the special will from them.

There is a need to explain the relationship between souls, bodies, and thoughts here.

With just a body, thoughts could not be produced, the body only provided the mind.

The soul produces thoughts, but they could not last, the mind was needed to store them and cause collisions to result in thinking.

When Gu Masters manipulate Gu worms, normally speaking, they were using thoughts to control them.

Ying Wu Xie’s soul would produce different thoughts from Fang Yuan’s. Thus, he could not use Fang Yuan’s Gu worms.

Time was pressing, Fang Yuan needed to hurry.

Being able to fly expanded his field of vision.

It was immensely better than searching on foot!

Along the way, he saw many traces of fighting.

Gu Immortals usually fought in the sky, this was a trait that separated them from Gu Masters.

Gu Immortals had Gu worms and time to train their flying abilities. But Gu Masters normally could not.

Thus, though these traces were all left behind during battle, there was little obvious damage to the terrain.

Luckily, Southern Border had a lot of mountains, if this was Northern Plains with linear terrain, the traces would be fainter. If it was Eastern Sea or Western Desert, the signs would be even more faint.

But despite this, Fang Yuan could not catch his target.

As the sky turned dark, his heart sank.

“Sigh!” He exhaled at the sky, he gave up on chasing them, he changed his mind and left, rapidly retreating.

Fang Yuan was taking a huge risk in searching for them.

Yi Tian Mountain was already a troublesome place to be nearby.

Spectral Soul refined Gu and went through tribulation, many Southern Border Gu Immortals died, the matter had escalated so much that more Southern Border Gu Immortals were sure to investigate the area.

Ying Wu Xie and the others encountered some of these Southern Border Gu Immortals who came to investigate.

Fang Yuan met Huo Kong Dong, but he was only one of them.

The difference between the two situations was, the former were Northern Plains Gu Immortals, they were regarded with antagonism by Southern Border Gu Immortals. Fang Yuan had a Southern Border Gu Immortal aura, he did not attract excessive suspicion.

But if he continued to stay, even if Fang Yuan had attitude Gu, it was not safe.

“I left a lot of fake will in my mind, but Ying Wu Xie did not chase after me. Was it because of the obstruction of these Southern Border Gu Immortals? Or did he find out my arrangement? Or were there some hidden details?” Fang Yuan guessed.

“The huge force of Shadow Sect and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s tens of thousands of years of planning, there are surely arrangements left behind. Even just Zombie Alliance’s branches in the five regions are already a huge asset. Would Ying Wu Xie go to them?”

“In the worst case scenario, if he uses my identity to take over my assets, how can I deal with it?”

“Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po valley were once used by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to cultivate, they are in Hu Immortal blessed land and Star Form blessed land respectively. Even if Ying Wu Xie does not know the scenery of Hu Immortal blessed land and Star Form blessed land, he can directly teleport to Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po valley using Fixed Immortal Travel, right?”

“Even after swapping souls, the land spirit should be able to detect the difference. But there are many ways to deceive land spirits, and the enemy is Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s split soul...”

Fang Yuan gradually stopped flying, he floated in the air.

Cold wind continued to blow, his mind seemingly was being chilled.

The night became darker, Fang Yuan’s face also had a deep layer of gloominess.

Where did Ying Wu Xie, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and Hei Lou Lan go exactly?

Fixed Immortal Travel!

Jade green light dissipated, Ying Wu Xie left Southern Border, returning to Central Continent.

“Ma... master?” Before he looked around, a meek voice could be heard.

“It is me.” Ying Wu Xie raised his head, replying nonchalantly.

Looking around, his lips curled into a smile.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1026: Given to Feng Jin Huang

“Master, please speak the secret code.” That timid voice spoke again.

Ying Wu Xie spoke: “Heaven has nine layers.”

That voice continued: “The land has five regions.”

Ying Wu Xie spoke: “Throughout the ages.”

The voice continued: “Ruling over all beings!”

With a loud sound, two knees landed on the ground, and a sobbing voice could be heard: “Shi Nu pays respects to master.”

“Stand up.” Ying Wu Xie laughed, raising his hand as a signal to the kneeling rockman Gu Immortal.

The rockman Gu Immortal kowtowed three times before respectfully standing up.

However, facing Ying Wu Xie, his hands were still dropped, his legs were closed tightly and his body was still in a half-bowing posture, his eyes only gazing at Ying Wu Xie’s feet, not daring to look straight into Ying Wu Xie’s eyes.

The Gu Immortal aura from him was strong, at rank seven level.

Ying Wu Xie used Fixed Immortal Travel, but did not go straight to Hu Immortal blessed land and seize Dang Hun Mountain, instead, he arrived at this secret base of Shadow Sect in Central Continent.

Ying Wu Xie’s soul was a split soul of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Previously, his childlike frankness and lack of sophistication were because of the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique erasing the soul’s memories. With his memories erased, Ying Wu Xie was like a newborn, he would naturally have limited shrewdness.

But the battle on the edge of life and death tempered his character, and going through the imparting of Spectral Soul’s will in the Red Lotus true inheritance, Ying Wu Xie’s memories had already recovered to some degree, and was much more mature and steady when handling matters.

He had experienced rebirth and thus already knew Fang Yuan’s arrangements.

Not only could he not use any Gu worms on his body, Fang Yuan’s fake will was in his mind, and slight carelessness would have his thoughts influenced.

He had an extremely large number of Gu worms, as well as a dazzling array of Immortal Gu, but Ying Wu Xie could only use Fixed Immortal Travel.

In such a situation, he naturally would not stupidly run to Hu Immortal blessed land.

Even if he had ways to deceive the land spirit, he still required many Gu worms to put them to use.

If he entered Hu Immortal blessed land without any preparations, he would definitely be found out by the land spirit and that would be truly troublesome.

Thus, Ying Wu Xie used Fixed Immortal Travel to first arrive at this place and make preparations.

“First take me to the underground core.” Ying Wu Xie instructed.

“Yes, master.” Gu Immortal Shi Nu quickly responded.

The two drilled into the ground, going through many twisting dark tunnels and arrived before an underground chamber.

This chamber was extremely large, spanning as far as the eye could see.

The yellowish-brown soil in the chamber was extremely dense and thick, constantly rolling around.

In the periphery of the chamber were layers and layers of Gu formations, for healing, concealing, supporting and other uses.

Ying Wu Xie fixed his eyes upon a spot, vaguely seeing a sphere made of a soul in the center of the soil, sinking and rising.

He observed it for a while, letting out a sigh.

This soul sphere was Bo Qing’s soul.

Back then, Sword Immortal Bo Qing failed in passing his tribulation and was barely saved by Shadow Sect’s split soul ‘Yellow’. Thousands of years had gone by but the injuries to Bo Qing’s soul were instead worsening, not only did it not recover, it was reduced to this soul sphere.

Bo Qing’s soul was struck by the myriad tribulation, water path dao marks lingered around him, constantly generating without pause. Although it was inhibited by the dense earth path dao marks in the underground core, it was temporary relief that could only delay for some time and not cure it.

Even with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s foundation, they were at a loss on what to do.

However, Shadow Sect had never given up.

To look over this area, Shadow Sect subdued a group of rockmen. After some nurturing, they raised a rockman Gu Immortal.

This rockman Gu Immortal was Shi Nu.

Originally, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had planned and conspired for tens of thousands of years to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu. Although Shi Nu was only rank seven, he was also a considerable battle strength.

Unfortunately, when they were about to summon him, an unexpected mishap occurred here.

A wild one-eyed giant ape appeared, Shi Nu had no choice but to come out and fight the giant ape and draw it away.

Back then, Heaven Overseeing Tower had already set the situation, Shadow Sect was already busy dealing with this and thus did not summon Shi Nu.

As such, Gu Immortal Shi Nu had luckily survived.

Actually, there were many unexpected incidents occurring in all aspects related to Shadow Sect.

Apart from Shi Nu, the most clear example was Qin Bai Sheng running into Feng Jiu Ge.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable wanted to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, desiring to go against heaven, heaven’s will would naturally see to stop it. If Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was an otherworldly demon, the situation would be somewhat better. Unfortunately, he was a native of this world and was extremely restricted by heaven’s will.

Shadow Sect’s strength was absolutely not small, and it was spread over five regions.

But because of heaven’s will’s obstruction, they were not able to use all their strength.

After Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was defeated, Shadow Sect dispersed, in particular, their subordinate organization, Zombie Alliance, was completely annihilated. But in the five regions, they still had some remaining arrangements.

Like Gu Immortal Shi Nu.

After half an hour.

“Where is this?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng came out of Ying Wu Xie’s immortal aperture.

“It is not Hu Immortal blessed land?” Hei Lou Lan also came out of Ying Wu Xie’s immortal aperture shortly afterwards.

The two gazed at their surroundings in doubt, they found they were in an underground room.

The arrangement here was extremely crude.

The two used investigative Gu worms and immediately found this underground room was only a small portion of an entire underground maze.

“This is the underground environment of rockmen. So this is below the ground?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a slight realization.

Ying Wu Xie nodded: “Right. We have already returned to Central Continent. Right now, we are in Earth Abyss. The rockmen here have already been transferred out. This is a secret base arranged by master.”

“No wonder you put Star Form blessed land in Earth Abyss. So master had already arranged a location in Earth Abyss.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng smiled.

“So Fang Yuan’s second blessed land is also in Earth Abyss.” Ying Wu Xie mentally noted it down.

“Purple Mountain True Monarch?” Hei Lou Lan’s mind shook as she narrowed her eyes, staring at Ying Wu Xie and asking: “Why did you not go directly to Hu Immortal blessed land?”

Ying Wu Xie was already prepared, replying calmly: “It is not that I don’t want to return. But my identity is exposed now, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals know about me. Although their speed in returning to Central Continent can’t match Fixed Immortal Travel, don’t forget that they have information path methods. They can notify the ten great ancient sects to surround Hu Immortal blessed land, such a simple matter, they definitely have already done it!”

“If we directly return there, we might just be sending ourselves into a trap. So I first moved here to scout for intelligence.”

“Then what did you find out?” Hei Lou Lan asked.

Ying Wu Xie sighed: “It is like I expected, my identity has been exposed, Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects already know that we are the true culprits of the destruction of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. Hu Immortal blessed land is already surrounded, and they will attack the blessed land any moment now.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was greatly shocked: “Dang Hun Mountain is still there, what should we do?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng knew Fang Yuan had already found a revival method. As such, Hu Immortal blessed land’s value had greatly reduced, what was more important were the cultivation resources in the blessed land. Dang Hun Mountain was extremely important, they had an inexhaustible source of income with it.

Ying Wu Xie sneered: “Hu Immortal blessed land is lost. I will let the ten great ancient sects safeguard the resources inside for a while. Sooner or later, I will take them back. The urgent thing is to make preparations and recover... ahh!”

Ying Wu Xie suddenly stopped speaking, his face revealing a shocked and startled expression.

“What happened?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly asked.

A furious look flashed past Ying Wu Xie’s eyes, before he bitterly smiled and brought out Fixed Immortal Travel’s destroyed body: “I was struck by Shadow Sect’s moves, but forcibly activated Fixed Immortal Travel. Now, it is destroyed!”

“This?!” For a moment, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan both felt deeply regretful.

Fixed Immortal Travel was extremely practical, now that it was dead, the three immortals all felt great loss.

Ying Wu Xie was extremely furious inwardly: “How could Fixed Immortal Travel self-destruct all of a sudden? It seems Fang Yuan left behind some methods. Damn it! He not only schemed against me, he intentionally let me use Fixed Immortal Travel to try to lure me into going to Yi Tian Mountain, moreover, he still left behind this method! Since Fixed Immortal Travel could self-destruct, then the same should also apply to Fang Yuan’s other Gu worms.”

Thinking of this, Ying Wu Xie was immediately unable to stand by.

He now had to think of ways to subdue these Gu worms of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s arrangement had truly caught him unprepared.

“Special will, it should be the special will! Looks like I need to race against time, I need to borrow Immortal Gu to suppress his Gu worms. I can’t let them self-destruct as well!” Ying Wu Xie screamed internally, unable to conceal his anxiousness on the surface.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng felt something amiss and asked in concern: “Fang Yuan, what’s wrong?”

Ying Wu Xie’s face was very gloomy: “We have huge trouble. I must quickly deal with it, otherwise my other Gu worms will also have the same ending as Fixed Immortal Travel!”

“What! Is there anything I can help you with?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng immediately felt like his heart was burning, he also felt anxious.

“You two rest and recuperate first, you will be led to your rooms by the rockmen in a while. Hmph, I can deal with this situation. After all, master has not only left behind this stronghold, we still have our network!” Ying Wu Xie finished speaking, and then left.

Meanwhile in Central Continent, Tian Ti mountain.

“We have broken through! We have broken through!”

“Hahaha, Hu Immortal blessed land has finally been captured by us.”

“Let me see what benefits this kid Fang Yuan had gotten!”

“Be patient, don’t forget Dang Hun Mountain will be managed in turns by us, the ten great ancient sects.”

Gu Immortals of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent flocked inside, excitedly storming their way into Hu Immortal blessed land.

Afterwards, it was like their whole bodies were drenched in cold water!

“Empty, how could it be empty!”

“There is nothing here, what’s going on?”

“Where is Dang Hun Mountain? Where did Dang Hun Mountain go?”

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals shouted one after the other.

“You are Lord Feng Jiu Ge?” Hu Immortal land spirit appeared in front of Feng Jiu Ge and looked at him with her large watery eyes.

Feng Jiu Ge was slightly taken aback: “I am.”

“My master instructed me to tell lord that he has already taken everything he needs. As for this blessed land, it shall be given to lord’s daughter, Feng Jin Huang.” Hu Immortal land spirit said openly.

“What? Fang Yuan was faster than us?!”

“Didn’t our combined deductions say he was still in Southern Border?”

“Why did Fang Yuan hand over Hu Immortal blessed land to Feng Jin Huang? Could it be that the two of them...”

“Speaking of it, ever since the Refinement Path Convention, these two have been pretty close. Everyone in the ten sects know of this.”

The Gu Immortals mumbled.

Feng Jiu Ge’s gaze swept past them and these whispers immediately stopped.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1027: Nine-five Sovereign Immortal Aperture (1/2)

Going back a while ago in time.

Fang Yuan chased Ying Wu Xie with no results, he stopped in the air, feeling dejected.

Darkness was becoming deeper as it enshrouded the land.

This was a cold night.

Wind blew eerily, as Fang Yuan felt a chill in his mind.

His original plan was great.

Making arrangements in his body, leaving behind fake will and special will, lending Fixed Immortal Travel, according to Fang Yuan’s estimations, this plan was very likely to succeed.

But the result in reality was failure.

Fang Yuan did not know that he had succeeded once, but because of heaven’s will and Spring Autumn Cicada, it all fell apart.

Even though he lost, Fang Yuan decided to face the results without denying or trying to make excuses.

In fact, he was mentally prepared. This was his mental fortitude created after hundreds of years in this world.

Any plan, no matter how detailed, had a possibility of failure. Even Shadow Sect and Spectral Soul’s plan over tens of thousands of years, after so many deductions, didn’t it still fail?

Even the former Demon Venerable failed, not to mention Fang Yuan?

In this world, no matter who it was, there was no one who would never fail.

Fang Yuan attempted to guess Ying Wu Xie’s situation.

The most likely scenario was that right now, because of the obstruction of Southern Border Gu Immortals, Ying Wu Xie could not go to Yi Tian Mountain.

If that was the case, Fang Yuan’s arrangements were still in place, Ying Wu Xie had not discovered them, this was not the worst situation.

Perhaps if Fang Yuan continued chasing them, he might get back all his Gu worms and regain his peak battle strength again.

But this was only one possibility.

Fang Yuan had a vigilant nature, he considered defeat before thinking about victory. He preferred to make the worst possible assumptions and prepare against them.

“Then, what would be the worst situation?” Fang Yuan floated in the night sky, asking himself.

The worst case scenario was if Ying Wu Xie found out his arrangements and exploited them to his benefit, deceiving Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan, going to Star Form blessed land or Hu Immortal blessed land and taking all of his assets!

This was very possible.

From Fang Yuan’s perspective: Ying Wu Xie was Spectral Soul’s split soul, his foundation was very abundant, it may not be hard to detect this arrangement. The most important thing was, Yi Tian Mountain had manifested a gigantic dream realm!

The dream realm was the greatest obstacle, Ying Wu Xie could not return to Yi Tian Mountain. Spectral Soul’s main body had already fallen deep into the dream realm, Ying Wu Xie definitely wanted to rescue his main body, but he had too few dream path Gu worms.

In his previous body, there were a number of dream path Immortal Gu and mortal Gu, but after the body detonated, it was unknown whether these Gu worms still existed. Gu worms were very fragile, even Immortal Gu could be destroyed by a child’s fingers.

Even if these dream path Gu worms were still alive, the dream realm was way too big, in his current state, Ying Wu Xie could not enter the dream realm and take these Gu worms back.

Fang Yuan did not have a mentality of leaving things to chance, he stopped chasing them and landed on a nearby mountain.

There were many mountains in Southern Border, with many forests on these mountains.

Fang Yuan was leaning against a huge pine tree, he sat on a thick branch as he calmed his mind, using connecting heaven Gu.

He had borrowed four rank five mortal Gu from Huo Kong Dong.

One was flying smoke Gu, one was fire cape Gu. The other two were connecting heaven Gu and divine sense Gu.

The latter two were necessities to Gu Immortals. Using these two Gu worms, they could connect to treasure yellow heaven. It was the biggest market for Gu Immortals across the five regions.

It was not suspicious that Fang Yuan sought these Gu worms from Huo Kong Dong.

If he had them in the first place, he could buy some appropriate Gu worms in treasure yellow heaven, he would not need to run around naked.

But he could not ask for more. Even if Fang Yuan had attitude Gu, and Huo Kong Dong would not suspect his identity, the latter would think that he was taking advantage of him.

Fang Yuan had inspected these four Gu worms before he carefully used them.

There was no issue with connecting heaven Gu, but when Fang Yuan was about to use it, his body shook, he showed an expression of immense shock.

With his mental fortitude, he could already completely conceal his emotions.

But at this moment, his shock was so great, it was unprecedented in his entire life after rebirth!

Even when he learned that the mastermind of Shadow Sect was Spectral Soul, Fang Yuan had never been so shocked before.

His body and mind were trembling!

His mind was quaking incessantly, he was staring with wide opened eyes, looking at the night sky and lush leaves, he appeared like he was in a daze.

“Calm down.” Fang Yuan blinked, telling himself, but his breathing was rough, his heart was beating rapidly.

He sent his consciousness into his immortal aperture again.

At the second glance.

Fang Yuan observed his brand new immortal aperture again.

Immense shock.

He frowned, his entire body tensed, an unbelievable immortal aperture was presented to him!

What sort of amazing immortal aperture was this!

“If I did not witness this personally, I would never believe that such an immortal aperture exists in the world!” Fang Yuan was filled with this thought.

In fact, he had already been mentally prepared.

Spectral Soul had spent tens of thousands of years and used up almost all of Shadow Sect’s assets, what was it for?

It was to refine this rank nine sovereign immortal fetus Gu!

Looking over the entire refinement process, they first used the ten extreme immortal zombies to create the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation. They next used the bodies and immortal apertures of countless Southern Border Gu Immortals who died as Gu refinement material. They next sent the members of Zombie Alliance, over a hundred immortal zombies into the formation. Finally, the Demon Venerable did not stint on sacrifices to himself to activate the ten extreme formation. Finally, using the countless grand tribulations and myriad tribulations, this grand feat was achieved!

The difficulty of each of these steps was unimaginable for rank eight Gu Immortals! Just the first step, to collect all ten of the ten extreme physiques, it was very difficult! Tens of thousands of years of planning and waiting, along with some luck, were needed to do this. Not to mention the rest of the steps.

After spending such a great sum and sacrificing so much, a rank nine Immortal Gu was formed eventually.

Even if Fang Yuan did not know the inside details, he knew that this sovereign immortal fetus Gu had extraordinary power!

Rank nine Immortal Gu, in the vast numbers of Gu worms, had the same status as rank nine venerables. They were extremely rare, extremely precious, and extremely powerful.

Fang Yuan had interacted with a rank nine Immortal Gu before.

That was wisdom Gu.

Facing wisdom Gu, he did not even have the ability to refine it!

He could only use the light of wisdom, it was like seeing a luxurious meal, but he could only smell it.

Even so, the smell was so amazing and brought Fang Yuan immense benefits.

Without the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan could not progress so rapidly and fiercely to this extent.

He recently encountered his second rank nine Immortal Gu.

Sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

This time, not only did he smell it, he swallowed this supreme meal whole!

“Spectral Soul refined sovereign immortal fetus Gu, it is definitely not so simple, there are profound mysteries behind it.” After rebirth, this idea was lingering in Fang Yuan’s mind.

But he was chasing after Ying Wu Xie, he had no time to explore the mysteries of this body.

Fang Yuan’s new body was formed by sovereign immortal fetus Gu. Even though there were huge mysteries behind it, there was no rush.

The urgent matter was to catch Ying Wu Xie and take back his Gu worms.

Thus, Fang Yuan threw this matter to the back of his mind.

But now, he failed to catch Ying Wu Xie, he had to make a response to the worst case scenario, thus he wanted to use connecting heaven Gu to enter treasure yellow heaven.

At this moment, he looked into the immortal aperture for the first time.

With just one glance, he was extremely stunned!

Because the scenery of this immortal aperture was not normal, it had greatly exceeded Fang Yuan’s common sense in regards to cultivation, that had been accumulated over hundreds of years.

This immortal aperture was a rank six Gu Immortal blessed land, but the space was huge, extremely huge.

To what extent?

Most rank six Gu Immortals had medium or low grade blessed lands. A low grade blessed land had a size of 2000km2 at the maximum, while a medium grade blessed land could have a size of 2700km2 to 4000km2.

This was the case for most rank six Gu Immortals.

A smaller number of rank six Gu Immortals, who were like Tai Bai Yun Sheng, had an impressive inheritance and had abundant foundation when ascending to immortal, they would obtain a high grade blessed land.

High grade blessed lands were formed with a size of 4700km2 to 6000km2.

High, medium and low grade blessed lands were the cases for most rank six Gu Immortals.

‘Most’ because there were exceptions.

The ten extreme physiques. Great Strength True Martial Physique, Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique, Verdant Great Sun Physique, Desolate Ancient Moon Physique...

Once a person of the ten extreme physiques became a Gu Immortal, like Hei Lou Lan, they would obtain a super grade blessed land!

Super grade blessed lands had a territory of over 6700 km2 but did not exceed 13000km2.

(The above information refers to the starting size after immortal ascension.) Super grade blessed lands were very rare. Because the ten extreme physiques were already rare to begin with, and most of them would die along the way, there were few who could become immortals.

Of course, once a ten extreme immortal came into being, just the space of the immortal aperture was a huge asset for them.

Bigger immortal apertures were better, because the larger they were, the more space path dao marks they had, and the more they could carry. The production of resources and limits on their growth would be higher as well.

Many Gu Immortals encounter a problem when they cultivate —

Their immortal aperture did not have enough space.

Their beast groups were too big, they had to sell some. The variant humans were too large in number, they needed to sell slaves. There were too many flowers and grass inside, they had to get rid of some.

Everyone knew that the larger the beast groups, the more young they would produce. Everyone knew that the larger the number of variant humans, the more they would reproduce. Everyone knew that their plants were more valuable when they were allowed to grow and expand further.

But they had no choice.

The size of the immortal aperture was the limitation.

Thus, many Gu Immortals tried all ways possible to increase the sizes of their immortal apertures. For example, expand space Immortal Gu could increase the number of space path dao marks in the immortal aperture, it was one of the ways to increase the space inside of the immortal aperture.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1028: Nine-five Sovereign Immortal Aperture (2/2)

However, methods like expand space Immortal Gu were only icing on the cake. No matter what methods were used, the biggest factor in determining the limit of the size of the blessed land was still its grade.

Looking at Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture again.

Every layer of his immortal aperture had over 33500km2 of space!

33500km2 already exceeded the super grade blessed land of a ten extreme physique Gu Immortal vastly. And this was just one layer.

Fang Yuan found that his immortal aperture had ten layers.

And each layer had more than 33500km2 of space.

Adding them up, ten layers amounted to over 335000km2 of space!

What did that imply?

Fang Yuan could not imagine.

Because he had never heard of such a ridiculous immortal aperture in the world!

The large space inside was only the first point.

Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture was split into ten layers.

This was very unique.

Normal blessed lands would not have separate spaces, they only had one unified area. For example, Hu Immortal blessed land and Star Form blessed land.

When would the space inside the immortal aperture split up?

It was when immortal apertures become grotto-heavens.

By then, the immortal aperture would undergo changes according to the Gu Immortal’s body, creating many different areas and segments.

Starry Sky grotto-heaven was a prime example.

“My blessed land has the characteristics of a grotto-heaven? Even what may be the greatest blessed land in the world, Lang Ya blessed land, only has one unified space. And Lang Ya blessed land has fallen from a grotto-heaven, while my blessed land has just started at rank six. And in this first layer, it is split into five areas.”

Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture had ten layers.

The first layer was a vast piece of land, split into five areas.

The second to tenth layers had no soil or earth, they were empty.

What made Fang Yuan surprised was that the five areas in the first layer were divided very clearly.

The central area had the most fertile soil and differences in terrain within.

The southern area had many mountains and peaks, it was moist and foggy.

The northern area had huge grasslands with strong winds.

The eastern area was a sea with countless islands, like a huge chess board.

The western area was desolate and had high temperatures, it was mainly a desert.

“This arrangement, isn’t it the five regions of this world? Southern Border, Eastern Sea, Central Continent, Northern Plains, Western Desert...” Fang Yuan mumbled internally.

What shocked him were the second to tenth layers.

In these nine layers, there was no soil, there was nothing, but they were all colored red, orange, yellow, green, azure, blue, purple, white, and black respectively.

“Aren’t the immemorial nine heavens arranged with these colors as well? But later, Ren Zu and his ten children caused seven of the heavens to collapse, resulting in the fragment worlds of the immemorial seven heavens to scatter and fall. right now, only white and black heaven are left.”

“Nine heavens, five regions, nine-five... sovereign. So this is why it is called sovereign immortal fetus Gu?”

In fact, Fang Yuan had some expectations that his immortal aperture would be different from others, that it would be very exemplary. But he did not expect it to be so impressive.

Impressive to the point that Fang Yuan felt a little... fearful.

Fearful?

This emotion seemed hard to understand.

But to make a comparison.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was an elite person. Hei Lou Lan was a ten extreme immortal, a genius among elites.

And what was Fang Yuan?

He was far beyond any genius, if he had to be described in one word, that would be: Monster!

Towards geniuses, people would feel admiration, envy or resentment towards them. As for monsters, freaks who went far beyond common sense, people would feel fear... and the urge to eliminate them!

In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan's previous life, his aperture was only high grade. After rebirth, his strength path immortal aperture was only medium grade.

He had worked hard for the goal of attaining super grade.

But suddenly, he obtained this immortal aperture.

All of a sudden, he had turned from an ordinary Gu Immortal to a ridiculous and freakish monster. Naturally, he felt some fear.

"I cannot let news of this immortal aperture be exposed. Once it is exposed, I will face an endless wave of enemies who wants me dead."

"But even if I told people about this immortal aperture, nobody would believe me. Ah, no, at least, Spectral Soul would believe it."

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan's expression turned grim.

The better the nine-five sovereign immortal aperture was, the deeper the enmity between Fang Yuan and Spectral Soul, along with Shadow Sect!

Even though Fang Yuan had not uncovered the mysteries of the sovereign immortal aperture yet, on the surface, with just these traits, his relationship with Spectral Soul and Shadow Sect was already irreconcilable.

Even if the other party did not have rank nine cultivation level, they were quasi-rank nine. Against such an enemy, Fang Yuan felt deep pressure.

"Right now, Spectral Soul's main body is still trapped in the dream realm."

"But he has planned for tens of thousands of years, he definitely has backup plans."

"Ying Wu Xie is his split soul, he is now in my body with his whereabouts unknown."

"Most importantly, Zombie Alliance is finished, while Shadow Sect lost terribly, how much foundation does this secretive super force have left?"

“And, in the five hundred years of my previous life, did Shadow Sect and Spectral Soul succeed?”

His new body was very useful.

In just a moment, Fang Yuan thought of many things, the thoughts in his mind collided into one another, causing intense reactions.

“I should connect to treasure yellow heaven first.” Fang Yuan cleared his mind.

It only took a bit of time for him to absorb the information regarding the sovereign immortal aperture, there was no big issue.

He used connecting heaven Gu and divine sense Gu, easily ‘finding’ treasure yellow heaven.

Treasure yellow heaven was the number one market for Gu Immortals of the five regions, it had a huge origin. It was formed from a Gu Immortal’s grotto-heaven and a large immemorial yellow heaven fragment.

Yellow heaven, of the immemorial nine heavens, was of the same level as white heaven and black heaven.

Even when a mortal raises their head, they would see white heaven and black heaven. When a Gu Immortal uses connecting heaven Gu, they could sense treasure yellow heaven, which was like a torch in the darkness.

His attempt at connecting to treasure yellow heaven was very successful.

Soon, within Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture, there was a smooth mirror. Inside, he could see treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan activated divine sense Gu, sending his thoughts inside.

In a short time, he found Little Hu Immortal.

In accordance with Fang Yuan’s instructions before he left, Little Hu Immortal had been keeping her connecting heaven Gu open the entire time.

After rebirth, even though Fang Yuan did not know how the battle of Yi Tian Mountain would turn out, he knew that if he was exposed, Hu Immortal blessed land would be besieged by Central Continent Gu Immortals.

The dragonfish and eerie fire dragon pythons inside Hu Immortal blessed land had already been shifted into Star Form blessed land.

Hu Immortal blessed land only had Dang Hun Mountain, several Fang Yuan stone nests, and a large number of hairy man slaves left.

In the underground cave, there was wisdom Gu, as well as the sword path Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan had taken from immortal zombie Bo Qing.

Dang Hun Mountain was kept in Hu Immortal blessed land so that he could easily sell guts Gu. After all, Hu Immortal blessed land was connected to Spirit Affinity House and Immortal Crane Sect. If it were in Star Form blessed land, it could be easily deduced.

There was another point, Hu Immortal blessed land was an enslavement path blessed land, it had a larger number of enslavement path dao marks, it could allow Fang Yuan to manage the hairy man slaves more easily. If these hairy men were moved to Star Form blessed land, they would not be as obedient, and would not refine Gu as enthusiastically.

Even though hairy men were variant humans, they had emotions, their attitude to work varied.

Of course, Fang Yuan was considering Hei Lou Lan and Blazing Heaven Demoness as well.

As for wisdom Gu, Fang Yuan wanted to relocate it the most. But Fang Yuan did not have this ability. Back then, his agreement with wisdom Gu was made under a special situation.

Fang Yuan and Little Hu Immortal quickly connected.

“Is it master?” Little Hu Immortal was joyous as she asked this.

“It’s me.” Fang Yuan answered.

“It really is master? Quickly confirm the secret code with me!” Little Hu Immortal said again.

The two confirmed the code as Little Hu Immortal said happily: “Master, are you okay? I miss you so much.”

Fang Yuan laughed, he told Little Hu Immortal some important details as he told her to use plan B section C.

All along, Fang Yuan had been facing a lot of mental pressure, he was worried that Central Continent’s Gu Immortals would attack Hu Immortal blessed land.

To minimize his losses, Fang Yuan used the light of wisdom and deduced many plans to deal with many situations.

Furthermore, he gave these plans to Little Hu Immortal.

It was good to prepare in advance.

But after hearing his words, Little Hu Immortal thought about that plan and was stunned, she spoke as she cried: “Master, master, you don’t want me anymore? I am very obedient, I will listen to master more from now on.”

“Heh.” Fang Yuan laughed: “Don’t worry, plan B section C has been recently edited. Act according to it and the other party will not truly accept you.”

Little Hu Immortal smiled through her tears, she trusted Fang Yuan completely, she did not doubt his judgment.

She followed this plan and contacted Lang Ya land spirit.

Over on Lang Ya land spirit’s end, Fang Yuan had already told him long ago, after all, he was the external supreme elder of Lang Ya Sect.

Lang Ya land spirit quickly dispatched a group of rank six hairy man Gu Immortals, using a stargate to get to Hu Immortal blessed land.

They displayed the ancient battle formation, Heavenly Giant Solor, turning into a giant and carrying Dang Hun Mountain, before placing it in the immortal aperture of one of the hairy man Gu Immortals and going back to Lang Ya blessed land through the stargate.

Little Hu Immortal next brought them to wisdom Gu. The hairy man Gu Immortals were stunned, they transmitted the information back to Lang Ya land spirit and after his shock, he used his methods to convince wisdom Gu to enter one of their immortal apertures, before going back to Lang Ya blessed land.

After learning about this outcome, Fang Yuan relaxed.

He had no choice but to expose wisdom Gu to Lang Ya land spirit out of necessity.

The outcome was that Lang Ya land spirit did not disappoint Fang Yuan. He was an obsession of the rank eight Long Hair Ancestor after all. Back then, Long Hair Ancestor's refinement path attainment had exceeded that of two venerables, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

He was the number one refinement path immortal of all times, he had an unfathomable foundation. Some people in the future who researched him conjectured that Long Hair Ancestor's limitation was that he was a hairy man variant human. If he were a normal human Gu Immortal, he might have reached the supreme realm of rank nine!

After Lang Ya land spirit transported wisdom Gu to Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan contacted Star Form blessed land and sent Luo Po valley, which was inside, to Lang Ya blessed land as well.

This way, Dang Hun Mountain and Lang Ya blessed land were both inside Lang Ya blessed land.

Even if Fixed Immortal Travel did not self-detonate and Ying Wu Xie obtained it, he would go to Dang Hun Mountain or Luo Po valley, and Lang Ya Sect would have to deal with the danger instead.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1029: Vital Immortal Gu, Dog Shit Luck

“The relocation of Hu Immortal blessed land and Star Form blessed land is also settled now.” Fang Yuan could finally exhale a breath of relief after completing this matter.

He considered defeat before considering victory. After this matter was settled, no matter how Ying Wu Xie reacted, Fang Yuan's losses would already be reduced greatly.

It was interesting, actually, under a series of odd events, his and Ying Wu Xie's statuses had swapped.

Fang Yuan aspired to attain eternal life, a physical body to him was no different to a bag of flesh, and he felt no reluctance in altering it. What he cared about were three aspects.

First, his original body's Gu worms.

Second, the cultivation resources he accumulated in Hu Immortal blessed land and Star Form blessed land.

Third, the relations with Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Lang Ya land spirit, Spirit Affinity House, Immortal Crane Sect and others.

Fang Yuan gazed at the dark sky, the mountain winds shaking the branches of the pine tree he was resting on.

He pondered: “By this time, Fixed Immortal Travel should have already self-destructed. Next, the other Gu worms will self-destruct one after the other. I wonder how Ying Wu Xie will deal with this?”

“There is little to no hope for me in taking these Gu worms back now. The resources of Hu Immortal blessed land and Star Form blessed land have already been moved. Hu Immortal blessed land has fallen into the hands of Central Continent’s Gu Immortals, and Star Form blessed land is hidden deep within Earth Abyss. Now, only the third matter remains, Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and others.”

Fang Yuan carefully pondered.

Regarding the third aspect, the relations with Central Continent’s Spirit Affinity House and Immortal Crane Sect were already broken.

The truth of Fang Yuan destroying Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was already exposed everywhere. Heavenly Court would definitely pursue this and find trouble with Fang Yuan, from a certain perspective, Ying Wu Xie possessing Fang Yuan’s physical body meant he would face the disaster for Fang Yuan to an extent.

So he did not need to worry about these.

What Fang Yuan was worried about were Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Fairy Li Shan and Blazing Heaven Demoness were dead, Hei Lou Lan’s value had fallen sharply, but she was still a ten extreme physique Gu Immortal with the Great Strength True Martial Physique. Adding in her identity in his previous life as Spirit Affinity House’s fairy, as well as her strong luck and formidable character, she absolutely could not be looked down upon.

And Tai Bai Yun Sheng might only have two Immortal Gu, but each of them were top grade Gu worms with huge practical value.

Fang Yuan was extremely worried that these two would be used by Ying Wu Xie to make difficulties for him.

So after he connected with Hu Immortal blessed land and Star Form blessed land, he immediately tried to communicate with Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng in treasure yellow heaven.

They had left behind their wills in treasure yellow heaven.

This was a communication method prepared early on.

But although Fang Yuan contacted these two wills at treasure yellow heaven, he had yet to truly contact the two of them.

Only when these two people connect to treasure yellow heaven and their wills returned to their main bodies would they be able to understand and learn the truth.

With no contact from them, the worry in Fang Yuan’s eyes became even deeper.

Without other options, he chose to give up trying for now and contacted Lang Ya land spirit.

And this time, he obtained a reply almost immediately!

“Lad, you finally contacted me!!” Lang Ya land spirit appeared extremely excited as he called out.

In truth, he had agreed to help Fang Yuan relocate the resources mainly due to Fang Yuan’s status as a member of Lang Ya Sect.

But when he saw Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po valley and especially wisdom Gu, he was completely dumbstruck with amazement.

To sum it up in a single word, he was shocked.

He had never expected Fang Yuan’s hidden accumulations to be so deep.

So deep to the extent it made him unable to believe it.

Hearing Lang Ya land spirit’s words, Fang Yuan smiled, it was as if he was looking at the land spirit, with hair all over his body, like a gorilla jumping around with an exaggerated appearance.

Lang Ya land spirit originated from Long Hair Ancestor, he was extremely special as he was formed from two obsessions.

This current obsession was filled with aggressiveness, wholeheartedly wanting to make hairy men the rulers, the masters of the five regions, suppressing humans.

Compared to the previous sagely-looking land spirit, this one was more erratic.

But no matter which one, land spirits could not lie, they were frank and honest. Fang Yuan could be much more at ease in dealing with the land spirit than human Gu Immortals who were able to hide their intentions from him.

Seeing that Fang Yuan was keeping quiet, Lang Ya land spirit could not endure it and continued speaking: “Fang Yuan, Lang Ya Sect has done a huge favor for you this time. What if you lost these, wouldn’t you want to smash your own head and die? So how will you repay me?”

Pausing for a while, Fang Yuan heard Lang Ya land spirit speak again: “Lad, contribute these things to the sect. I absolutely won’t let you suffer a loss. You are our external supreme elder! I will give you an uncountable number of sect contribution points, enough to exchange for countless Immortal Gu recipes and Immortal Gu!”

Since Fang Yuan had asked Lang Ya land spirit for help, he naturally was already mentally prepared. Anyone who saw Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po valley and wisdom Gu would definitely be moved. Even Lang Ya land spirit was not an exception.

Lang Ya land spirit might be straightforward and stubborn, with a one-track mind, but he was not without intelligence.

Fang Yuan calmly replied: “I am Lang Ya Sect’s external supreme elder, these are all mine. First elder, you are not thinking of embezzling my possessions, right?”

“Hehehe!” Lang Ya land spirit grabbed at his hair while yelling, “If I had known this beforehand, I would not have let you join Lang Ya Sect. I could have directly confiscated these supreme treasures if so! Damn it, I told the truth again.”

Fang Yuan laughed.

Back then, Lang Ya land spirit sincerely wanted Fang Yuan to join Lang Ya Sect.

Now that both sides had already set the agreement, it was too late for Lang Ya land spirit to go against it. At least by his current means, he was not able to breach the agreement.

Even if he wanted to renege on the agreement, he needed to prepare for some time to break the information path agreement between the two sides.

Even so, because he could not lie, Fang Yuan just needed to probe slightly to extract the information.

Just based on this point, Fang Yuan already had Lang Ya land spirit firmly in his grasp.

After some careful thinking, Fang Yuan still felt it was better to leave Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po valley and wisdom Gu in Lang Ya blessed land.

Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po valley were two treasure troves once held by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, if Fixed Immortal Travel hadn't been destroyed, wouldn't it mean Ying Wu Xie and others could casually return to these two places?

If Fang Yuan placed these two treasure troves in his own immortal aperture, that would be a huge mistake, it would be opening the door for robbers, letting a wolf into one's house.

As for wisdom Gu, Fang Yuan could not use it for the moment.

He had now revived with a new physical body, unlike his previous immortal zombie body.

In his immortal zombie body, Fang Yuan had no need to fear the light of wisdom. But right now, if he entered this light, his lifespan would start decreasing, which was a price Fang Yuan could not accept.

So from now on, unless he had no alternative, it was better to not use wisdom Gu.

“I have obtained the sovereign immortal aperture but lost the support of wisdom Gu, it can be considered that there are losses along with the gains. But, there will be a day I will find a method to use wisdom Gu with a living body. During this period of time, it is better to let Lang Ya land spirit safeguard wisdom Gu, saving me from worrying about it.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan said to Lang Ya land spirit: “First supreme elder, you want me to present these three treasures to the sect, that is impossible. But we can cooperate. I can lend Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po valley and wisdom Gu for the sect's use. The sect will be in charge of safekeeping them, if anything unexpected happens, you will have to compensate me ten times over. Besides this, you need to compensate me with some sect contribution points too.”

Lang Ya land spirit was jubilant, almost dancing with joy as he shouted: “Lad, you are quite tactful. That's good, that's good. With Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po valley, I can let these children refine and strengthen their souls. It will be a huge help to their Gu refinement! Also wisdom Gu, hehe, this is a rank nine Gu of wisdom path, in the past it was the vital Gu of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, hehehe! Using it to deduce Immortal Gu recipes is simply too wonderful.”

From the land spirit's tone, he actually knew how to use wisdom Gu, Fang Yuan could not help asking.

Lang Ya land spirit was not stupid, replying with a chuckle: “You want to know the method to use wisdom Gu, then exchange for it with contribution points. Our

Lang Ya Sect is fair!”

Both sides negotiated for a while before completing the matter of collaboration.

Fang Yuan then casually mentioned the featherman Zhou Zhong, this variant human was Fang Yuan’s slave, but it was not impossible for this relation to be exposed. Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan knew of Zhou Zhong, he was already exposed. It was better to let him lead those feathermen to stay in Lang Ya blessed land for the time being. In any case, Lang Ya blessed land’s space was extremely huge. Of course, it was unable to compare with Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture in terms of potential future space.

As for those hairy man slaves in the Fang Yuan stone nests, after Fang Yuan haggled with Lang Ya land spirit, these hairy man slaves still belonged to Fang Yuan, but he had to remove their slave status, they could only be considered Fang Yuan’s subordinates in Lang Ya Sect.

Because of his identity, Lang Ya land spirit had deep love for hairy men and disdain for other races, having a doctrine that hairy men were to be the rulers. Naturally, he would not let Fang Yuan continue to order these hairy men as slaves.

It was already extraordinary for him to still let these hairy men be subordinate to Fang Yuan, not arguing about it.

Fang Yuan was actually quite happy about this.

These hairy men were now free and belonged to Lang Ya blessed land. But as long as Fang Yuan mobilized them to refine Gu, they would have to obey his orders, which was not much different from beforehand.

These hairy men would even be nurtured by Lang Ya land spirit, building their own families and working in the blessed land, which would stimulate their passion for Gu refinement and increase their work efficiency.

Finally, Fang Yuan briefly informed Lang Ya land spirit about the matter regarding Ying Wu Xie and Shadow Sect.

Lang Ya land spirit listened on while staring blankly, and only a long time after Fang Yuan finished talking did he react.

“So you even had Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s vital Immortal Gu, Spring Autumn Cicada!” Lang Ya land spirit cried out again: “Lad, what kind of dog shit luck do you have? No, don’t tell me you even have Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s vital Immortal Gu, Dog Shit Luck?”

“So Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s vital Immortal Gu was actually Dog Shit Luck? Not fortune rivalling heaven Gu?”

Lang Ya land spirit snorted: “He refined Fortune Rivalling Heaven in his later years. In his early years, it was Dog Shit Luck. I had cooperated with him when I was alive, how would I not know?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1030: Making Hei Lou Lan Defect

Fang Yuan had a peculiar expression, this was the first time he was hearing about Dog Shit Luck, this strange sounding Immortal Gu.

In the current situation, it was not a big deal to expose Spring Autumn Cicada.

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals already knew about it, that meant the ten great ancient sects also knew of it, the entire world would basically know of it.

Lang Ya land spirit continued: "It is a pity that this Spring Autumn Cicada is only rank six, if it were the former rank nine Spring Autumn Cicada, you would definitely obtain victory. Since Spring Autumn Cicada is in Ying Wu Xie's hands, you cannot allow him to use it! But thankfully, I have quite a few time path methods. Spring Autumn Cicada is only rank six and I know who has it, it is quite easy to counter it."

"Counter Spring Autumn Cicada?" Fang Yuan felt great interest, in fact, this was his biggest worry currently.

Lang Ya land spirit said: "Spring Autumn Cicada is merely rank six, so be it if we do not know who owns it, but since we know, it is easy to deal with. It might be Red Lotus Demon Venerable's vital Immortal Gu, but so what? There are only invincible Gu Masters, there are no invincible Gu worms. In the entire world, time path is not the strongest, all of the different paths have their strengths. But if we use time path methods, it would be more effective as a counter."

Fang Yuan heard this and nodded, feeling that Lang Ya land spirit's words made a lot of sense.

Like just earlier, he used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth and was used by Shadow Sect after they deduced it.

This was a classic example of wisdom path countering time path.

Spring Autumn Cicada had its unique ability, but it was not invincible. Man is the spirit of all living beings, Gu are the essence of heaven and earth. The world was balanced, it made sense that Spring Autumn Cicada was countered by other methods.

"Since rebirth, I have been treating Spring Autumn Cicada as my greatest trump card. To think that I would need to deal with it one day." Fang Yuan sighed internally.

When he was contacting Lang Ya land spirit, at the same time in Central Continent.

Ming Tang valley.

This valley that was bathed in light all year round was famous in Central Continent.

It was under control of Wind Cloud Manor and Heavenly Lotus Sect, two of the ten great ancient sects, it was famous in Central Continent for being among the best places to produce light path Gu worms.

This land of treasures was incredibly rich in light path dao marks, almost every twenty years, there would be wild light path Immortal Gu formed.

Deep in this Ming Tang valley, there was a hidden demonic path Gu Immortal.

Unmoving Mountain — Gong Sun Liang.

Suddenly, he opened his eyes from his deep sleep.

“Oh? Someone is calling me?” He muttered lightly, the suspicious expression on his face faded at once, turning into a serious and solemn expression.

His consciousness entered his immortal aperture as he used a special information path method to communicate.

“Boss, you want to borrow my Immortal Gu?”

On the other end, in a deep part of Earth Abyss, Ying Wu Xie answered: “Yes.”

Gong Sun Liang opened his eyes, without any sleepiness left. He was very hesitant, his gaze was flickering.

He was a demonic path Gu Immortal, he had been chased and suppressed by Central Continent’s righteous path, especially the ten great ancient sects.

He lived like a fugitive, during one of his near-fatal escapes, he fell into a trap and nearly died. At that time, he was saved by a mysterious man.

Gong Sun Liang not only kept his life, under the lead of the mysterious man, he joined a mysterious organization.

This organization was called — Defy.

The members of the organization were identified with numbers, they were very mysterious.

Gong Sun Liang had obtained much help from this organization. If not for that, he would not have been able to escape up until now, without getting caught by the ten great ancient sects.

As time passed, he saw the importance of this organization, and had some guesses towards the motives of this organization.

“This organization’s codename shows the time the person joined, and their status in the organization. Boss is at the top, he is the person who created ‘Defy’. He suddenly wants to borrow my Gu...”

After hesitating for a long time, Gong Sun Liang gritted his teeth and nodded in agreement.

Central Continent, Great Heavenly Sword Sect.

Two sword path Gu Immortals, Miao Jun and Miao Yue, were discussing the matters of their sect.

Suddenly, Miao Jun’s body shook, he received the information that Ying Wu Xie sent.

Facing Ying Wu Xie’s request, Miao Jun was very hesitant, he said to Miao Yue: “The boss contacted me, he wants to borrow our Immortal Gu.”

Miao Yue frowned: “This boss is very mysterious. We have only joined Defy for a short time, we have not heard about the boss’ information. But the moment he contacted us, he wants to borrow Immortal Gu...”

Miao Jun nodded: “We joined Defy because we wanted their help. But earlier, when trying to leave Immortal Crane Sect, they did not provide us any help. And now, they want to borrow Immortal Gu from us, this boss is truly shameless.”

A few years ago, someone in Great Heavenly Sword Sect ascended to immortal.

Thus, this force had three Gu Immortals.

Great Heavenly Sword Sect was a subsidiary force of Immortal Crane Sect, after having three Gu Immortals, they wanted to get rid of their vassal status from Immortal Crane Sect.

Unfortunately, they did not succeed, Immortal Crane Sect’s plan worked and they lured their third Gu Immortal away.

After this matter, Great Heavenly Sword Sect was ‘taken care of’ by Immortal Crane Sect, Miao Jun and Miao Yue’s lives were getting tough.

The two wanted to borrow the strength of ‘Defy’, but their wishes were not granted, thus they were not happy.

As a result, Ying Wu Xie failed to borrow their Gu using his identity as the boss.

Bang!

In Earth Abyss, in a secret room, Ying Wu Xie slammed the table in front of him, smashing it.

“Hmph! Miao Jun, Miao Yue...” Ying Wu Xie gritted his teeth, his expression was dark.

This organization called Defy was created by Shadow Sect.

Central Continent was different from the other four regions, Heavenly Court ruled over it, its subsidiary forces, the ten great ancient sects, split up most of Central Continent’s resources and controlled it tightly.

Below the ten great ancient sects, there were countless forces trying to survive.

People looked up to bigger forces, who would not want to improve? Who would not want to expand their territory and obtain more resources for themselves?

Especially Gu Immortals, they had to face tribulations once in a while. Thus, Gu Immortals were forced to improve, otherwise, they would die from the calamities and tribulations.

It was not so easy to increase one’s strength.

One couldn’t cook a meal without the ingredients, the most important thing was the lack of resources.

But the ten great ancient sects had incredible strength, they occupied most resources. The other forces could not gather enough strength to influence their control.

People with aspirations noticed this and interacted with one another, forming all sorts of alliances.

But these alliances did not last long. Because Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects sowed discord between them, or the members of the alliance went into internal conflicts themselves.

Of course, the fundamental problem was insufficient strength to challenge Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects.

Shadow Sect thus secretly created the organization Defy, selecting the members carefully and getting stronger.

But this was only a casual move. Even the Shadow Sect member who created the organization Defy back then did not have much expectations.

The more members there were, the more inflated the organization was, and the more complex and hard to manage it was.

Furthermore, these members were not otherworldly demons, they were not even fate escapees. They could not be used to resist heaven’s will.

Thus, back then, Spectral Soul’s Gu refinement plan did not involve these people.

If he mobilized them, would they listen? Even if they did, there was a high chance that heaven’s will would make use of them, it was not worth it.

But at this moment, Shadow Sect’s plan failed, they were dealt a huge blow. After rebirth, Ying Wu Xie had to make use of the strength of Defy.

His experience in borrowing Gu was not very successful.

Most Gu Immortals gave lots of excuses.

Immortal Gu were very precious, the identities of the members of Defy were kept secret, they did not know each other, the organization was not strict in enforcement. How difficult would it be to borrow Gu?

Only people like Unmoving Mountain Gong Sun Liang, these demonic path Gu Immortals without any support would need to make use of Defy in order to escape from the pursuit of Central Continent’s righteous path, and avoid deductions.

He could not leave Defy, thus, even if he did not want to, he had to take a risk and lend the Immortal Gu to Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie tried for a long time to borrow Gu, while Fang Yuan’s Gu worms were in the processing of self-detonating one by one.

Eventually, even though Ying Wu Xie managed to suppress them, and prevented the Gu worms from continuing to self-detonate, his losses were severe.

“Fang Yuan, good job! You are really resolute in cutting your losses.” In the darkness, Ying Wu Xie had a grim expression: “But only a person with your caliber would be able to obtain sovereign immortal fetus Gu, after all.”

After suppressing Fang Yuan’s Gu worms, Ying Wu Xie used the borrowed Immortal Gu to get rid of Fang Yuan’s fake will in his mind.

Just as he was about to continue and use the Immortal Gu to make Fang Yuan’s Gu worms his, he had a feeling as he noticed Hei Lou Lan’s actions.

Hei Lou Lan was sitting on a rock bed, opening her eyes.

She was frowning, as worry flashed across deeply in her eyes.

In the room, from a corner within the darkness, Ying Wu Xie’s voice could be heard: “Hei Lou Lan, you can stop trying. In this place, it is impossible for you to use connecting heaven Gu to reach treasure yellow heaven.”

Hei Lou Lan’s gaze shined, she was about to speak.

At this moment, Ying Wu Xie continued: “You don’t have to pretend and lie to me. I know you are suspicious of my identity, then I will tell you. That’s right, I am not Fang Yuan, I am Ying Wu Xie.”

Hei Lou Lan’s expression changed.

She was not Tai Bai Yun Sheng, she was not easy to fool.

After ‘Fang Yuan’ woke up, he acted strangely, Hei Lou Lan held back her suspicions because they had to use Fixed Immortal Travel to escape first.

But to think that Ying Wu Xie brought her here.

There was a super Gu formation here, the defenses were tight, actually preventing connecting heaven Gu from use, she could not connect to treasure yellow heaven.

After Hei Lou Lan failed to reach treasure yellow heaven, she realized that Ying Wu Xie’s identity was even more suspicious.

But now, Ying Wu Xie directly told her the truth, Hei Lou Lan did not know how to react.

“You know my identity.” Ying Wu Xie’s voice continued: “I am one of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s split souls, I took over Fang Yuan’s body. You have two choices now, one is to die, the other is to abandon Fang Yuan and join me.”

For Ying Wu Xie, Hei Lou Lan had the Great Strength True Martial Physique, and was someone who escaped fate, she was a high quality pawn.

But if Hei Lou Lan did not know what was good for her, he would kill her with no reservations. He could use Hei Lou Lan’s corpse to revive his current body.

Using the Gu formation here, Ying Wu Xie was completely confident in taking down Hei Lou Lan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1031: Flawless

Hei Lou Lan was startled and furious.

Ying Wu Xie’s sudden declaration made her situation very passive.

Even though Hei Lou Lan did not know that Ying Wu Xie was one of Spectral Soul’s split souls, she had experienced the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, she was aware that Ying Wu Xie, Shadow Sect, and Spectral Soul were on the same side.

In the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Hei Lou Lan’s aunts, Blazing Heaven Demoness and Fairy Li Shan, had died one after the other.

These two people were the only two remaining family members that Hei Lou Lan cared about.

As Shadow Sect was the culprit for killing Blazing Heaven Demoness and Fairy Li

Shan, Hei Lou Lan’s hatred was immense.

Ying Wu Xie knew this but disregarded it, he directly approached her and forced Hei Lou Lan to surrender.

If she did not, he would kill her!

Even though Ying Wu Xie was in Fang Yuan’s body and was a rank six immortal zombie, he had the rank seven Gu Immortal Shi Nu with him, who had high battle strength. Most crucially, he had a super Gu formation set up here.

It was able to prevent Heavenly Court from investigating the place, and could resist the attacks of the wild beasts living in Earth Abyss. Being able to protect Bo Qing’s remnant soul for so many years, this Gu formation was extraordinary.

This was Ying Wu Xie’s greatest assurance.

Even though Ying Wu Xie was only a split soul, he had inherited Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s killing nature and firm personality.

Hei Lou Lan’s expression was dark, deep hatred was flickering in her eyes.

“Since Ying Wu Xie is fearlessly challenging me, he surely has made preparations and is fully confident. The other party’s capabilities are unfathomable, and they have a close relationship with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. If I resist, I would likely end up dead. I can only endure this and find a good opportunity later...”

While having such thoughts, Hei Lou Lan snorted, speaking: “Your Shadow Sect killed two of my family members, you want me to join you, aren’t you afraid I will betray you?”

“Hehehe.” Ying Wu Xie’s laughter could be heard: “What is there to fear?”

Pausing for a while, he continued: “Firstly, I am strong while you are weak, there is nothing to fear. Secondly, I have information path methods to restrict you using an alliance agreement. Thirdly, I understand your personality. You have not taken revenge yet, Hei Cheng is still alive, are you satisfied with this ending? Even if you already had killed Hei Cheng, you would endure this for now and cultivate, finding a chance to take revenge in the future.”

Hei Lou Lan was silent.

Hearing that Ying Wu Xie was so aware of her personality, Hei Lou Lan’s heart sank.

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated, Hei Lou Lan did not expect Ying Wu Xie to know so much about her. In contrast, she knew nearly nothing about him.

This was caused by Fang Yuan.

Back then, Old Man Yan Shi in Shadow Sect found out something wrong with Fang Yuan and used heavenly secret Gu to deduce matters about him.

As someone close to Fang Yuan, Hei Lou Lan was implicated, Shadow Sect collected information about her, deducing many details.

Ying Wu Xie originally did not know, but because of the Red Lotus true inheritance in the River of Time, he received the guidance of Spectral Soul’s will, he learned much about Hei Lou Lan.

Seeing Hei Lou Lan become silent, Ying Wu Xie showed great patience, he did not rush her.

There was only a hint of light in this simple room.

Hei Lou Lan’s entire body was nearly shrouded in darkness.

A long while later, she spoke: “You want to recruit me to deal with whom? If you want me to fight against Heavenly Court, you might as well kill me now.”

“Hahaha.” Ying Wu Xie laughed:” No need to probe me, Hei Lou Lan. I want to recruit you to deal with Fang Yuan!”

Bright light flashed in Hei Lou Lan’s eyes, her pitch became higher: “Oh, it seems Fang Yuan isn’t dead yet?”

“Not only did he survive, he has obtained great gains!” Hatred could not be concealed in Ying Wu Xie’s tone.

“You want to make use of me to harm Fang Yuan and take Hu Immortal blessed land for you?” Hei Lou Lan continued asking.

“Hmph.” Ying Wu Xie smiled coldly: “Fang Yuan’s Hu Immortal blessed land and Star Form blessed land should be empty already. The cultivation resources inside, including Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po valley, were all moved to Lang Ya blessed land.”

“Lang Ya blessed land?”

“Hehe, it is the place where you and Fairy Li Shan fought against Qin Bai Sheng, Hei Cheng, and Jiang Yu. Why? Fang Yuan didn’t tell you?” Ying Wu Xie asked.

Hei Lou Lan sank into silence.

Ying Wu Xie continued: “Lang Ya blessed land was the immortal aperture left behind by Long Hair Ancestor. It is a former grotto-heaven that had fallen to a blessed land. But its foundation is so abundant that it could be said to be the number one blessed land in the five regions. Imperial Court blessed land is already destroyed, no other blessed lands can match it.”

“Fang Yuan not only moved his resources into Lang Ya blessed land, he even joined Lang Ya Sect, betraying humans and becoming the lackey of hairy men.”

Hei Lou Lan heard this and her gaze flickered.

Ying Wu Xie seemed to know her thoughts, he continued speaking with a smile: “You guessed right. I have an insider in Lang Ya blessed land. I know everything that happens inside Lang Ya blessed land. Fang Yuan will not be running around for long, you can only survive by joining me.”

The sights of Yi Tian Mountain appeared in Hei Lou Lan’s mind again.

Spectral Soul’s gigantic body was deeply ingrained in her mind.

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable...” Hei Lou Lan muttered internally, she gradually closed her eyes, saying solemnly: “The circumstances are not in my favor, I will join you. But I will remind you, even if you want me to deal with Fang Yuan, we still have an active alliance agreement.”

“Merely an alliance agreement, I can get rid of it for you easily.” Ying Wu Xie said confidently.

But Hei Lou Lan said: “Are you sure? Back then, when we made the alliance agreement, it was stated very clearly, if any side breaks the alliance agreement, the other party would not need to follow it anymore.”

Ying Wu Xie felt that this was turning troublesome: “Oh? So if I help you get rid of the alliance agreement, I will be helping Fang Yuan indirectly?”

Hei Lou Lan nodded: “Precisely.”

Fang Yuan had included this line back then because he was afraid of Fairy Li Shan secretly removing the alliance agreement. After all, she primarily cultivated information path, Fang Yuan had to guard against her.

But things changed too quickly, unexpected events happened in life.

Fairy Li Shan died, and Ying Wu Xie wanted to help Hei Lou Lan remove the alliance agreement.

“The essence of alliance agreements is the use of information path methods to leave information path dao marks on both the body and the soul. To remove the alliance agreement, I have to get rid of the information path dao marks.” Ying Wu Xie thought.

“It is very easy for me to get rid of Hei Lou Lan’s information path dao marks, using this super Gu formation and my Gu worms, I can accomplish it. But this way, I will be helping Fang Yuan too.”

Ying Wu Xie did not want that.

In his opinion, the best situation would be that Hei Lou Lan was free from the alliance agreement, while Fang Yuan was still restricted by it.

In this way, he could use Hei Lou Lan to deal with Fang Yuan, he would have a huge advantage.

“Actually, it is not impossible to achieve that. As long as I can find the corresponding information path dao marks and remove them first.”

On Hei Lou Lan’s body, there had to be one or multiple information path dao marks that represented the condition, ‘if one side breaks the alliance agreement, the other party did not need to follow it’.

And these information path dao marks had to be related to the other information path dao marks.

Ying Wu Xie only needed to remove these information path dao marks first, before removing the others to achieve the result that he wanted. In the future, he could use this alliance agreement to restrict Fang Yuan.

“But to do that, it is very difficult...” Ying Wu Xie was frowning more deeply.

Using an inappropriate analogy, the alliance agreement between Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan was like two interlinked bombs strapped onto them.

Whichever side broke the alliance agreement would cause their bomb to explode, and they would suffer a severe punishment.

Ying Wu Xie had the ability to remove Hei Lou Lan’s bomb now, but that would cause Fang Yuan’s bomb to deactivate as well.

This was not what Ying Wu Xie wanted.

But to get the result he wanted, he needed to get rid of Hei Lou Lan’s bomb while finding that crucial wire or multiple wires to remove first.

It was very difficult to do that.

Ying Wu Xie did not have the attainment level, and he did not have corresponding Immortal Gu either.

“Damn it... this Fang Yuan does things so flawlessly!” Ying Wu Xie felt stifled internally.

If it were before the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, it would be easy for him to do this. He only needed to ask the other members of Shadow Sect to do it, there was even Spectral Soul’s main body!

But the situation now was different from the past.

After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Shadow Sect’s plan failed, they faced massive losses, only a small portion of their forces were left in the five regions.

Ying Wu Xie knew that even if he rebuilt Shadow Sect and combined all of the remaining forces, he could not reach its former level again.

“In this way, Hei Lou Lan’s value is greatly diminished. Should I kill her and turn her into a Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie, allowing me to obtain a life-and-death immortal aperture to revive?”

Ying Wu Xie had an idea.

But after considering it, he gave up on the idea.

“Reviving with a life-and-death immortal aperture has a huge flaw, if I am unlucky, the immortal aperture might explode. I might as well use normal immortal zombies to create a stable life-and-death immortal aperture.”

Thinking about the life-and-death immortal aperture, Ying Wu Xie naturally thought about sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

At once, he gritted his teeth, feeling his hatred towards Fang Yuan intensify.

After Shadow Sect created the life-and-death immortal aperture revival method, they had performed many experiments and found lots of problems with it. Next, they paid a huge price to modify it step by step. Eventually, even Spectral Soul’s main body joined in, using the essence of human path, transformation path, and heaven path to create the Immortal Gu recipe for sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

Fang Yuan snatched sovereign immortal fetus Gu and obtained the nine-five sovereign immortal aperture, he ascended to heaven in a single leap!

Shadow Sect’s countless years of effort and hard work had turned to nothing.

Such deep hatred could not be expressed in words.

“Forget it, I should let Hei Lou Lan off. I am too short on manpower now, Hei Lou Lan’s aptitude is great, she can be a very good lackey.”

“Fang Yuan! You will end up in my hands one day, by then, I will pull out all of your tendons, I will use every inch of flesh and skin on your body to refine the sovereign immortal fetus Gu again!!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1032: Treasure Yellow Heaven Transports Gu Worms

“Well? Have you considered it? You are an external supreme elder of Lang Ya Sect, you can use your sect contribution points to exchange for the method.” Lang Ya land spirit smiled.

Over in Central Continent, Hei Lou Lan was forced by Ying Wu Xie and had no choice but to submit, Fang Yuan did not know this and was contacting Lang Ya land spirit.

Speaking of the method to counter Spring Autumn Cicada, Lang Ya land spirit was indeed formed from Long Hair Ancestor, he had a deep foundation.

In their earlier conversation, Fang Yuan was shocked to find out that Lang Ya land spirit had more than ten methods! All of them were effective in dealing with Spring Autumn Cicada.

These methods involved many aspects, with so many choices, at this moment, Fang Yuan felt a bit uncertain.

But he quickly focused his mind, asking as he thought of something: “I have a question, how many sect contribution points do I have?”

“Three hundred!” Lang Ya land spirit hesitated for a moment before answering.

“Three hundred...” Fang Yuan frowned, he knew that he had not done anything for Lang Ya Sect yet after joining it. This amount of sect contribution was obtained because he had lent Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po valley, and wisdom Gu to Lang Ya land spirit.

However, either of Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po valley, or wisdom Gu were unparalleled things, they were only worth three hundred sect contribution points?

Immediately, Fang Yuan had some suspicion, but he did not question him, he asked in a roundabout manner: “First supreme elder, I am not sure how your three hundred points were calculated, I would like you to explain for me.”

Lang Ya land spirit heard Fang Yuan call him ‘first supreme elder’ and felt very pleased internally.

He said frankly: “This is very simple. Dang Hun Mountain counts as a hundred, Luo Po valley counts as a hundred, and wisdom Gu is also a hundred.”

Fang Yuan’s tone became lower: “Wisdom Gu is a rank nine Immortal Gu, why is it worth the same number as Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po valley?”

“No need to be suspicious.” Lang Ya land spirit quickly answered: “You lent all three of them to the sect, but my Lang Ya Sect has to bear the expenditure of the earth qi, and the feeding of wisdom Gu. Three hundred sect contribution points are given to you according to the rules in the sect. I know that fairness is required for a sect to grow, don’t worry, we will not shortchange whatever is rightfully yours, but we will also not give you extra that you did not earn.”

After pausing for a while, Lang Ya land spirit continued: “Of course, if you contributed them to the sect, the contribution points would be much higher! It is possible for you to become the first supreme elder of the sect as well.”

Fang Yuan heard this and couldn’t help but feel excitement.

Becoming the first supreme elder of Lang Ya Sect, wouldn’t he obtain the highest authority? Even if he was not the owner of Lang Ya blessed land, he would be able to mobilize the hairy man Gu Immortals inside Lang Ya blessed land, right?

But quickly, Lang Ya land spirit said: “But for you to become the first supreme elder, you need to get rid of your human status and become a true hairy man. Only an exceptional hairy man can be the leader of the hairy men!”

Lang Ya land spirit’s tone was full of confidence towards the ideology of hairy man rulership.

Fang Yuan dispelled his earlier thoughts.

He had no doubt that Lang Ya land spirit had methods to turn humans into hairy men. But if Fang Yuan became a hairy man, the price was too great.

Most fundamentally, the current trend of human dominance could not be overturned. Hairy men and other variant humans, even if they became immortals, would be pushed aside and ostracized.

Furthermore, hairy men and the other variant humans were flawed to begin with, they could not become rank nine venerables.

Fang Yuan aspired to reach immortality, cultivation was only a tool. But evidently, the higher his cultivation level, the closer he would be to this goal.

This logic was simple. Between an ant and a tree, which one was closer to eternal life?

Fang Yuan only had three hundred sect contribution points, Lang Ya land spirit calculated the amount very precisely. He did not give Fang Yuan one point less or one point more.

Fang Yuan sensed keenly that these three hundred sect contribution points were very precious, they had great value, if he used them wisely, they would be a huge help towards him!

Thus, after he thought over it, he did not spend these contribution points rashly to obtain one of the ways to counter Spring Autumn Cicada.

At the other end, Lang Ya land spirit said: “Sect contribution points are meant to be used. Don’t be too stingy with them, we have many sect missions for you. As long as you complete one, your sect contribution points will increase.”

“Oh? What kinds of missions?” Fang Yuan asked lightly.

Lang Ya land spirit wanted to make use of Fang Yuan’s strength, he naturally explained them to him.

Fang Yuan soon shook his head, disappointment was all over his face.

These sect missions were split into two types. One was to collect Gu refinement materials, the other was to spar with the hairy man Gu Immortals and nurture their fighting skills.

Earlier, after Qin Bai Sheng and the rest attacked Lang Ya blessed land, Lang Ya land spirit turned from the shape of a human and white haired land spirit to a hairy man and black haired land spirit, the management of Lang Ya blessed land had changed drastically.

The black haired land spirit wanted hairy men to be the rulers, the overlords of the Gu world, to trample on humans and all other races.

Thus, he tried to train his hairy man Gu Immortals, wanting to raise their battle strength.

Before this, these hairy man Gu Immortals only knew how to refine Gu, they did not even train normally, their battle strength could not be said to even be at the dregs.

Currently, Fang Yuan did not have the time to help the black haired land spirit search for Gu refinement materials, or be the nanny of the hairy man Gu Immortals.

“How about this, first supreme elder, I lack Gu worms now. Could you buy some Southern Border Gu worms from treasure yellow heaven and inspect to check that they are not tampered with. If they are fine, send them over to me.” Fang Yuan changed the topic, listing his needs.

Lang Ya land spirit did not reject this.

Batches of Gu worms quickly passed through connecting heaven Gu via treasure yellow heaven, reaching Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

The first batch was a large number of mortal Gu, including wine sack flower Gu, rice pouch grass Gu, spring water Gu, eating wind drinking dew Gu and others.

The situation now was different.

Earlier, Fang Yuan was an immortal zombie, he did not need to eat.

But now that he had revived, his body was alive, he needed to consume food and water.

Even Gu Immortals would die if they did not eat. Unless they had the relevant food path dao marks.

Other than these food path mortal Gu, there was also some clothing Gu.

Fang Yuan was not satisfied with fire cape Gu and flying smoke Gu, the effect of the flames was too eye catching, they were unnecessary.

After acquiring these clothing Gu, he immediately changed his clothes.

There were also Gu for housing.

For example, the wood path Gu worm, three star cave.

After it was used, it would turn into a tree house with space in the trunk.

The second batch provided was moving perspective cup Gu and stargate Gu.

It was not safe to use treasure yellow heaven.

Treasure yellow heaven was an open market, it was not a secret channel.

Moving perspective cup Gu used the Space Door to transport objects, it bypassed the five region’s regional walls, it was a superb mortal Gu!

Be it the moving perspective cup Gu recipe or stargate Gu recipe, Lang Ya land spirit had already obtained them from Fang Yuan.

According to the previous Lang Ya land spirit’s personality, he would have refined a lot of them.

Thus, these two Gu worms were directly taken out from Lang Ya blessed land. Once they entered treasure yellow heaven, the two Gu worms shined with bright treasure light, it drew the attention of many Gu Immortals.

They were mortal Gu, but the treasure light was really very bright, it was out of the ordinary.

This special situation drew the attention of many Gu Immortals, they went to ask but Lang Ya land spirit rejected them.

The third batch was also mortal Gu, they came from Lang Ya Sect’s storage, Fang Yuan wanted to use them to test his sovereign immortal aperture.

The earlier tests were only observations on the surface.

To learn about the secrets of the sovereign immortal aperture, he needed to use Gu worms as tools.

The fourth batch was the main objective.

Sword Immortal Bo Qing’s sword path Immortal Gu!

Fang Yuan stole quite a number of Immortal Gu from immortal zombie Bo Qing, he used the light of wisdom and wisdom path methods to deceive these Immortal Gu temporarily, as he gradually refined them.

Before joining the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, he only managed to refine change soul Immortal Gu. And during the crucial moment in the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, he used it to turn the situation around.

Right now, change soul Immortal Gu was still in Fang Yuan’s hands.

As for the other sword path Immortal Gu, they were filled with Bo Qing’s will, they were much harder to refine compared to change soul Immortal Gu. They were left inside Hu Immortal blessed land, and were not brought to Yi Tian Mountain by Fang Yuan.

After all, these Immortal Gu were not refined, they could not be used even if they were brought.

As it turned out, it was lucky that Fang Yuan did not bring them.

Otherwise, according to what happened, these Immortal Gu would be left in his body and become Ying Wu Xie’s property.

These sword path Immortal Gu were the rank eight wisdom sword Gu, rank seven sword escape Gu. rank seven sword eyebrows Gu and rank seven flying sword Gu.

Lang Ya land spirit only sent sword escape Immortal Gu and flying sword Gu over to Fang Yuan.

The two of them made an instant transaction.

At the first moment, Fang Yuan used a rock that he picked up to buy sword escape

Immortal Gu and flying sword Gu.

“The treasure light is hundreds of meters tall, what happened?”

“Transaction of Immortal Gu!!”

“How is this possible?”

“I saw it earlier. Someone bought two rank seven Immortal Gu immediately, they were so fast that no one could react.”

“Buying two rank seven Immortal Gu? Heavens! I do not even have a single rank six Immortal Gu, who is that rich?”

The earlier few batches of Gu worms had already attracted some attention. With this transfer, involving Immortal Gu, heated discussions were occurring in treasure yellow heaven!

The trading of Immortal Gu was usually done through exchanges of Immortal Gu, they were rare even in treasure yellow heaven.

Thus, Fang Yuan and Lang Ya land spirit’s transaction was like a rock that was thrown into a calm lake, ripples formed immediately.

“Two Immortal Gu... each having around three hundred meters of treasure light. But the other party paid with a rock.” A lucky Gu Immortal who witnessed the transaction transmitted using his divine sense.

This information caused more heated discussion between Gu Immortals again.

“Impossible!”

“A rock? Are you kidding me?”

“This is not a normal transaction, they are using treasure yellow heaven to transfer Gu worms.”

“Even if they are transporting Immortal Gu, it is very rare. Treasure yellow heaven’s fee is charged according to the treasure light’s height.”

At once, countless divine senses conversed in treasure yellow heaven, the wills of many Gu Immortals were engaging in conversation enthusiastically.

The commotion was similar to a mortal fish market.

Because of Fang Yuan and Lang Ya land spirit, the entirety of treasure yellow heaven was in chaos.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1033: Taking Large Strides With Unwavering Determination

Southern Border, on the peak of a nameless mountain.

Fang Yuan held sword escape Immortal Gu in his left hand, and flying sword Gu in his right hand.

He observed them.

Sword escape Immortal Gu was like a golden bee, while flying sword Immortal Gu was like a silver winged dragonfly.

Both had their merits.

The first was a movement Immortal Gu, it was extremely fast, not inferior to the rank seven qi escape Immortal Gu. The second was very famous in history, it was Bo Qing’s most used offensive and defensive Gu worm.

The aura of rank seven was oozing.

Fang Yuan smiled as he stored the two Immortal Gu.

After Yi Tian Mountain, the sword path Immortal Gu were all successfully refined under the light of wisdom, becoming Fang Yuan’s Gu.

These two Immortal Gu were among them, Fang Yuan could use them now.

With these two Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan felt more assured about his safety.

Earlier, he had attitude Gu, change soul Immortal Gu, and unravel mystery Immortal Gu, he lacked movement and attacking methods. With these two Immortal Gu now, Fang Yuan’s weakness was alleviated, his battle strength surged!

If he met Huo Kong Dong again, Fang Yuan could use his Immortal Gu to kill him.

He had stopped using connecting heaven Gu.

Because Lang Ya land spirit sent Sword Escape and Flying Sword, two rank seven Immortal Gu, treasure yellow heaven was in a commotion, more and more Gu Immortals were joining in and discussing the matter.

In the Gu Immortal world, rank six Gu Immortals were the majority.

And among them, a large portion did not have any rank six Immortal Gu.

Thus, this transaction that involved two rank seven Immortal Gu had such a huge impact.

Treasure yellow heaven was an open market, secrets could not be kept. Fang Yuan had no choice but to use treasure yellow heaven to transport his Immortal Gu.

After obtaining two sword path Immortal Gu, he stopped using connecting heaven Gu, allowing treasure yellow heaven to dwell in that commotion on its own.

Using moving perspective cup Gu, he continued to communicate with Lang Ya land spirit.

“Just now, you spent thirty sect contribution points.” Lang Ya land spirit said.

It was not free to use treasure yellow heaven to transport Gu worms.

Treasure yellow heaven would take a cut from every transaction. According to the treasure light, the higher it was, the larger the processing fee.

The processing fee was paid by Lang Ya land spirit, he converted them into sect contribution points in Lang Ya Sect and deducted them from Fang Yuan.

Thus, Fang Yuan’s sect contribution points fell, he had two hundred and seventy left.

Of course, a portion of the thirty points had been used on Fang Yuan’s purchase of different mortal Gu.

“I want to talk to you about the trade of guts Gu.” Fang Yuan replied.

This discussion took a long time.

Only until late at night, both sides came to a detailed agreement, concluding their negotiation.

Trade of guts Gu!

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone, excitement was still lingering on his face.

The winds of night blew, they were cold but were unable to extinguish the fire inside him.

All along, Fang Yuan’s guts Gu trade had been restricted by the number of hairy man slaves.

Because guts Gu needed airsac Gu as the container to leave Dang Hun Mountain, and to be sold outside. But airsac Gu needed Hei Lou Lan’s strength qi Immortal Gu as the Gu refinement material, and the hairy man slaves needed to refine it continuously.

Now, Hei Lou Lan was missing, and strength qi Immortal Gu was not with Fang Yuan.

But this was okay. Long ago, Fang Yuan had used the light of wisdom to deduce a new recipe. He had been keeping it a secret because he wanted to maintain his cooperation with Hei Lou Lan.

Therefore, the number of hairy man slaves was the main limitation towards this trade.

And it was very difficult to increase the number of hairy man slaves.

Firstly, hairy man slaves were the most expensive among variant human slaves in treasure yellow heaven. Especially those skilled in refinement, they were even pricier.

Secondly, the process of refining Gu was filled with danger, hairy man slaves would die during the process. Thus, even though Fang Yuan replenished many hairy man slaves, inside Hu Immortal blessed land, their numbers did not increase.

Fang Yuan wanted to raise his own hairy men, but because he did not have the methods to do so, he could not execute this idea.

But right now!

Fang Yuan had joined Lang Ya Sect.

How many hairy men were there in Lang Ya blessed land?

It was an unimaginable number.

This blessed land was perhaps the most populous location for hairy men in the whole five regions.

Fang Yuan had his motives in lending Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po valley to Lang Ya Sect.

Using the vast number of hairy men in Lang Ya blessed land to refine airsac Gu for him, the number of guts Gu produced would far exceed Fang Yuan’s previous scale, his profits would rise to an unprecedented level.

“As long as it is inside treasure yellow heaven, even if Central Continent attempts to suppress it, so what? The trade of guts Gu will not be affected.”

“I am really excited. According to our negotiation, even if Lang Ya Sect takes more than half of the benefits, my profits each month from the guts Gu trade would reach six thousand immortal essence stones!”

Before this, Fang Yuan’s total profits, including his other businesses, only reached two thousand immortal essence stones a month.

Now that he joined Lang Ya Sect, with just the guts Gu trade, he could obtain six thousand immortal essence stones a month.

This was a number that many rank six Gu Immortals could not imagine!

After rebirth, Fang Yuan had joined Lang Ya Sect after deep and careful consideration.

Firstly, one day, when Fang Yuan faces the pursuit of the entire world, which place was more reliable than Lang Ya blessed land? Others were targeting Fang Yuan’s Giant Sun true inheritance, but they were also after Lang Ya blessed land. After Lang Ya land spirit transformed, he wanted to strengthen the hairy man race, he was a natural ally for Fang Yuan.

Secondly, Lang Ya blessed land was very powerful, it resisted seven waves of attacks in the five hundred years of his previous life.

Thirdly, Lang Ya land spirit could not lie, Fang Yuan would easily sense it should he decide to turn on him.

With these three reasons, Fang Yuan joined Lang Ya Sect.

Indeed, on the first night after reviving, he obtained a huge benefit.

Fang Yuan not only used Lang Ya land spirit to solve his dangerous situation, he even used Lang Ya blessed land’s foundation to increase his wealth.

“I have passed the weakest period after revival. Now, I need to inspect my nine-five sovereign immortal aperture.”

This was a night without stars in the sky, cold winds were blowing.

Fang Yuan entered the house Gu, after eating food, he inspected his immortal aperture.

With so many mortal Gu, his efficiency in inspecting it was higher.

It was a sleepless night.

Around dawn, Fang Yuan left the three star cave Gu, seeing the start of the sunrise.

Southern Border was mountainous and foggy, when the sun rises, it would make the direction where it was facing look like a burning cloud.

As the sun rose, the first light of dawn could be seen as golden-red traces.

Soon, light burst out, bringing heat along with it, like metal that had just come out of the furnace.

The morning sun ascended slowly, the clouds between the mountain peaks were moving about, beautiful lights were created after the rays of sunlight hit them, there were gorgeous red clouds in the sky.

In Fang Yuan’s heart, a grand feeling of ambition was brewing.

“Ambitious mountains with steps firm as steel, taking large strides with unwavering determination. Taking risks to obtain the essence of the universe, my heart still seeks to rise beyond heaven.”

As he recited, Fang Yuan opened his arms like a bird, jumping down the cliff before ascending rapidly. It was as if he was stepping on the clouds, flying towards the south-east direction.

After this night, he gained a greater understanding of the sovereign immortal aperture.

The immortal aperture had a huge space of over 335000km2. Not just that, there were rich time path resources, one day in the outside world was two months inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Hei Lou Lan’s aperture, with her having the Great Strength True Martial Physique, was only at a one to thirty-eight ratio with the outside world’s time.

But Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture was one to sixty, it greatly exceeded that of Hei Lou Lan.

But compared to the space in the immortal aperture, the time path aspect was not as impressive.

But this was a huge relief to Fang Yuan.

When the time flow in the immortal aperture was fast, calamities and tribulations would occur more frequently, and Fang Yuan would have bigger problems dealing with them.

Perhaps Spectral Soul had considered this point when he was refining the Gu, at a ratio of one to sixty, it surpassed super grade blessed lands, but was not too exaggerated, Fang Yuan could handle it, although with difficulty.

Other than time path resources, Fang Yuan also found sixteen beads of green grape immortal essence in his sovereign immortal aperture.

An immortal aperture that was alive was different from a dead one, it could produce immortal essence.

Sixteen beads of immortal essence in a day, that meant four hundred and eighty in a month, it was extraordinary, far surpassing Fang Yuan’s previous life.

Fang Yuan also found that his body was full of dao marks.

These dao marks were of all paths. Fire path, water path, wood path, light path, dark path... even poison path and luck path were encompassed within.

What shocked Fang Yuan more was that these dao marks were not just high in variety, they were also of a large quantity.

He could vaguely estimate that on average, each path had around a hundred dao marks.

A hundred dao marks could amplify the effect of Gu worms by ten percent.

No wonder Fang Yuan could use the fire path fire cape Gu and flying smoke Gu to such an extent.

But this discovery did not make Fang Yuan happy, he felt a bit grim.

Gu Immortals usually pursued one type of dao mark.

Because dao marks could amplify the effect of Gu worms, they could also weaken and counteract them.

For example, when a Gu Immortal who cultivates water path and has water path dao marks all over their body uses a fire path mortal Gu, the effect would be worse than a mortal Gu Master.

Even if Gu Immortals cultivated more than one path, they would choose one to be primarily used.

This was common sense in the Gu Immortal world.

“But strangely, I used the mortal Gu of so many paths, but I did not feel any resistance and weakening from the dao marks of other paths. In fact, the amplification is working normally. This goes against the logic of the cultivation world, what is going on?”

“There is another point, any Gu Master who ascends to immortal has a vital Gu. But my sovereign immortal aperture does not have one. What is going on?”

Towards the mystical properties of the sovereign immortal aperture, the deeper Fang Yuan explored it, the more questions appeared in his mind.

“I have already used all my methods for yesterday’s investigation. It seems that to understand the mysteries behind the sovereign immortal aperture, I need to get answers from Spectral Soul, Shadow Sect and Ying Wu Xie.”

“But near Yi Tian Mountain, the changes are too large, with the dream realm manifested, Southern Border Gu Immortals would seal it up and turn it into a forbidden area for outsiders. And I also do not know Ying Wu Xie’s location.”

“Forget it, the matter at hand is to find Southern Border’s current generation Ni Xiang!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1034: Man-made Disaster

Southern Border, Rotten Mud Mountain.

It was noon, the sun was high in the air, it was a clear sky with no clouds in sight.

At a certain area in a forest at the back of Rotten Mud Mountain, a youngster was fighting with a mature bear.

The atmosphere was tense.

The bear stood as tall as three meters in height, it had a bulky body and brown fur which was thick and shiny. At this moment, the bear was opening its mouth, revealing its sharp teeth as its red eyes stared at the young man with a ruthless look.

The young man who was facing this bear was only fifteen or sixteen years old.

He was only five and a half feet tall, compared to the bear, he was tiny and weak.

But the young man’s eyes were shining with vigor, he dared to face the bear head on, without any fear.

Roar!

The brown bear growled, opening its mouth and pouncing at the young man.

The brown bear might look clumsy and heavy, but any experienced hunter would know that it had incredible explosive strength.

When the brown bear moves from a still position, its speed rises rapidly as it pushes forward!

The young man only felt a gust of wind as the bear suddenly arrived in front of him.

The young man’s expression did not change, he activated his Gu worm during the crucial moment.

His movement Gu allowed him to move away by a certain distance.

The brown bear missed its target, it crashed into the tree behind the young man.

With a loud sound, the thick tree trunk was snapped by the brown bear.

With the falling of the tree, another loud sound was heard as it slammed on the ground.

The surrounding birds flew away in panic.

The young man let out a breath of cold air, thinking: Thankfully, I dodged in time. If this bear hit me directly, even if I had defensive Gu worms, my bones would break and I would suffer heavy injuries.

However, after dodging this attack, the battle tilted in favor of the young man.

The young man’s eyes shined brightly, he cried out: “Stupid bear, feel the power of my sword qi Gu!”

Before he finished speaking, he had already stretched out his middle and index fingers on his right hand, pointing at the brown bear.

The next moment.

Whoosh.

With a soft sound, a burst of pale white translucent sword qi shot out of the young man’s fingers.

The sword qi flew through the air, hitting the brown bear’s back.

But there was the aura of wild Gu on the brown bear. The fur on its back turned firm, becoming hard plates.

The sword qi hit the hard plates and made a buzzing sound, as the sword qi dispersed.

The brown bear’s bulky body was completely uninjured.

It shook its head as it recovered from the dizziness earlier, it turned around towards the young man.

The young man was dumbfounded.

“What? This bear has a wild defensive Gu. How can my sword qi Gu hit it? Grandpa, did you intentionally put the wild Gu on that brown bear?” The young man shouted.

“Hehehe, grandson, I walked along the mountain’s paths for over ten li to find this brown bear. It is a great opponent for you.” From the tree branches, a voice said this.

It turned out that the young man’s grandfather had been sitting on top of the tree, watching his grandson fight this brown bear.

The young man’s strongest method was sword qi Gu.

But against the brown bear, it had little effect. Each sword qi could only shave off some of the bear’s fur.

There was no choice, the young man could only dodge everywhere.

The brown bear attacked fiercely, but it was a beast, it did not have enough intelligence.

Even though the young man could not defeat the bear, he was agile and had much experience. Because of that, he dodged everywhere while causing the bear to crash into trees while fighting.

Seeing the young man’s difficult state, the grandfather laughed: “Rascal, do you know sword qi Gu’s weakness now? It attacks by piercing, once it is countered, you will waste your primeval essence with no damage dealt. Come, catch this Gu.”

Saying this, the grandfather tossed a Gu worm to the young man.

In order to receive the Gu worm, the young man was almost hit by the brown bear, he tumbled to the ground.

But because he reacted quickly, he rolled away from the brown bear’s bite.

After getting some distance, he jumped and stood up again.

“This is muddy Gu!”

The young man cried out, recognizing this Gu worm.

This Gu worm was not his, but his grandfather had lent it to him, the young man could use it with no problem.

After injecting primeval essence into muddy Gu, the Gu worm shined with a murky light.

The young man’s hand flicked, and the murky light on the Gu worm left his hand, landing below the bear’s feet.

Gugugu...

A large amount of bubbles emerged from the soil below the brown bear’s feet.

In the blink of an eye, this area became a pile of soft mud.

The brown bear’s two feet were stuck inside the mud.

It struggled intensely, shaking off a lot of the mud on it.

The young man was hit by mud on his body and face, but he did not care, he used muddy Gu again.

The murky light went into the pile of mud again.

The brown bear was already stuck at the bottom of the mud, it struggled and was about to get out.

But because of the light, the mud deepened.

The brown bear’s four limbs were stuck inside, the more it struggled, the more it sank.

The bear stood on two legs, but the depth of the mud was already at its waist.

When the young man used muddy Gu for a third time, victory was decided.

The brown bear sank again, eventually, only its head was exposed, it growled, unwilling to give in.

“I finally won.” The young man was tired, he sat on the ground, breathing roughly.

His face was pale, his primeval essence was almost expended.

With a soft sound, the young man’s grandfather jumped down from the tree, floating down slowly for several meters, landing in front of the young man.

“Rascal, you know the advantages of muddy Gu now? Without this Gu, how could you defeat the brown bear?” The grandfather chided.

The young man did not answer, he breathed roughly for a few seconds before snorting, looking at his grandfather: “Grandpa, you did this on purpose. I know you want me to give up on sword path and cultivate our Ni clan’s specialty, earth path, right?”

The grandfather raised his finger and tapped the young man’s head, he said in a loving but bitter tone: “Rascal, you are smart, it would be great if you could use it on your earth path cultivation.”

The young man had his face in his hands, saying: “But I like sword qi. It is so cool when I shoot out sword qi. Earth path is so lame, grandpa, look at me, I am covered in mud. After one battle, I lose all my coolness.”

The grandfather heard this and stared with wide eyes, about to scold him further.

But at this moment, the bells from the base of the mountain started to ring.

Both of them were startled.

The young man jumped up, standing and looking at the base of the mountain, saying anxiously: “Ah! This is the alert bell Gu of the clan. The bell is ringing so rapidly, what happened?”

Go!” The grandfather was more direct, he stretched out his arm and grabbed the young man, running towards the base of the mountain rapidly.

The young man felt the wind blowing past him, all he saw were shadows of trees that rapidly moved behind him.

He was shocked: “This is the power of a rank five Gu Master? Such speed...”

After a dozen breaths of time, the young man’s vision returned to normal as his grandfather put him down.

With the sudden deceleration, he felt queasy, his stomach was churning as he almost vomited.

“Lord clan leader.”

“Greetings to lord clan leader.”

The young man heard the voices of clan elders.

He tried to stand up, but realized that he was already at the wall surrounding Ni clan village.

The young man’s grandfather was Ni Kun, the current leader of Ni clan and a rank five Gu Master.

Ni Kun frowned, asking with a serious expression: “What happened? Why was alert bell Gu used consecutively?”

“Clan leader, the matter is urgent, take a look!”

A clan elder used the clan’s Gu formation, this was an investigative Gu formation, it was directed to Ni Kun.

Ni Kun’s vision flashed with all sorts of images, in an instant, he saw a scene a hundred li away from the village.

His breathing paused, he frowned as he showed confusion on his face: “A beast tide! Strange, we had already survived a beast tide a year ago. And the surrounding beast groups near the village are insufficient in forming a beast tide.”

“That’s right, we found it strange too.”

“If there is an abnormality, there must be a cause! I suggest that we send our elite Gu Masters to investigative.”

“Nevertheless, we should focus on defending ourselves. This beast tide is colossal, the question now is whether we can protect the village.”

Ni Kun’s expression was grim.

The danger had arrived so suddenly and severely.

His grandson, Ni Jian, was staring blankly in a daze. Earlier, it was a calm and peaceful day, but now, his village was on the brink of destruction.

“The beast tide is fierce, an attack of this scale has not been seen in decades. Ni clan is facing a life and death situation, activate all three layers of our defenses! Second elder, third elder, quickly go and lead our elites to use the heavenly fire Gu formation! Sixth elder, lead the medicine hall and the medical team. Seventh elder, check our transportation Gu formation. If anything goes wrong, send our youths away...” Ni Kun ordered.

The elders knew that the situation was dangerous, they moved immediately, showing firm determination.

The beast group attacked like fierce waves, rushing forward relentlessly.

Wherever they went, dust rose as trees in the mountain were snapped.

The young man, Ni Jian, saw this on top of the village wall and felt immense fear, his expression turned pale.

He had never seen such a fierce beast tide.

Normally, beast tides came in one species, for example, a wolf tide, or a tiger tide. But now, this beast tide had many different types of beasts, wolves, tigers, leopards, bulls, deer, foxes, snakes, and more were mixed in.

“Strange! Why are these wild beasts not attacking each other, they are forming together and attacking our village?!” The grandfather Ni Kun mumbled.

At the next moment, Ni Kun’s shuddered, the Ni clan Gu Masters around him also stared with wide opened eyes.

The terrifying beast tide slowed down, before stopped entirely.

An enormous group of beasts of all kinds stood ten thousand steps away from the village wall, watching the people in anticipation.

Ni clan’s Gu Masters looked at each other, feeling uncertainty and fear.

A mound tiger moved out.

Mound tigers were mutated beasts, they had huge bodies, far larger than normal, they were like small mounds.

Fang Yuan was lying on the mound tiger’s back, his eyes were half open as he looked at Ni clan.

Seeing Fang Yuan, Ni clan’s Gu Masters shouted in shock.

Ni Jian’s eyes were wide open, he finally realized — This beast tide was not a natural disaster, it was a man-made disaster!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1035: Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs, Qi Clan’s Two Immortals

The sky was grand and vast.

White clouds rumbled, moving below one’s feet.

A huge lion growled lowly as its four limbs stepped on the air, flying towards the cloud layer.

This lion’s body was like snow, it was completely white.

Its thick mane swayed in the wind, strong air currents were created below its feet.

On the lion’s back, there was a huge chair, two Gu Immortals, one male and one female, were sitting together.

The female was old and looked like she was in her sixties, but her eyes were shining brightly, she was excited and could not sit still, looking around.

And the male had the appearance of a young man, he had a sharp nose and long thin eyes, his body was emitting a cool and experienced aura.

“Great-uncle, your steed is really amazing, it can travel on the clouds, in just half a day, we have already flown tens of thousands of li.” The female Gu Immortal praised.

“This is a desolate beast qi grand lion, it is not flying on the clouds, but it has the ability to control air currents, thus it can fly.” The young looking man explained patiently.

“A lion that can control air currents and fly in the air, I have never seen such a thing. Desolate beast... what does that mean?” The female Gu Immortal asked.

The young-looking male Gu Immortal smiled silently: “Qi He, you just ascended to become a Gu Immortal, it is normal that you do not know about common knowledge of the Gu Immortal world. This qi grand lion has qi path dao marks on its body, once it matures, it can soar through the skies. But this type of lion is very rare now, it is almost extinct in the five regions, it can only be seen in white heaven and black heaven now.”

“As for desolate beasts, they are a certain rank of beasts. Like how Gu Masters have rank one, rank two and rank three, other than desolate beasts, there are ancient desolate beasts and immemorial desolate beasts. Desolate beasts are equivalent to rank six Gu Immortals, because one desolate beast can fight evenly against a rank six Gu Immortal. And ancient desolate beasts are equivalent to rank seven Gu Immortals, while immemorial desolate beasts are equivalent to rank eight Gu Immortals.”

The female Gu Immortal, Qi He, heard this and her eyes shined, she assessed the qi grand lion again, thinking: “No wonder I felt such danger from this lion. Thanks to great-uncle, I survived the tribulation from ascension and became a Gu Immortal. If I had to fight this lion, I might get torn to shreds.”

The young-looking Gu Immortal, Qi Zai, was hundreds of years old, he had rank seven cultivation level, he only looked so young because of lifespan Gu.

He was old and experienced, seeing Qi He’s face, he could guess what she was thinking.

Stretching out his arm to pat this junior’s shoulder, Qi Zai consoled: “Little He, don’t worry, most people are like this after becoming immortal. When the matter I have to deal with is settled, we can return to Qi Sea grotto-heaven, your seniors are there, if the seniors know that our Qi clan has another Gu Immortal, they will be very happy. You will live in the grotto-heaven for some time and learn from your elders. Remember to observe carefully and ask questions.”

“Thank you for your advice, great-uncle.” Qi He had a serious expression, standing up and bowing to Qi Zai solemnly.

“Mm... let’s sit down and talk.” Qi Zai nodded, showing a proud expression on his face.

Qi He sat down, showing a confused expression, she hesitated for a while before saying: “Our Qi clan has a lot of Gu Immortal elders, why are we not imitating Southern Border super forces like Wu clan and Shang clan?”

Qi Zai smiled as he said: “You want to ask, why is it that we elders who have become Gu Immortals are not acting like Wu clan and Shang clan, looking after our descendants. Instead, we allow our juniors to get bullied and suppressed, is that right?”

“I wouldn’t dare to.” Qi He said anxiously.

“In the past, when I had just become an immortal, I had the same question as you.” Qi Zai sighed, he showed a look of reminiscence: “The reason is quite complex, it will take some time to explain.”

“The underlying cause of this relates to our Qi clan’s ancestor, he was one of the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs thousands of years ago.”

“Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs?” Qi He asked.

“The Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs were five publicly recognized Gu Immortal experts in Southern Border during that time. The five of them had rank eight cultivation level, at the peak of the Gu Immortal world. They often collaborated and explored white heaven and black heaven together, they had a close relationship, thus they were known as the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs. Our Qi clan ancestor was one of the Five Xiangs, Qi Xiang. And our Qi clan cultivates qi path primarily.”

“Rank eight Gu Immortals!” Qi He was lost for words.

Qi Zai sighed: “In the absence of rank nine, rank eights dominate! Every rank eight Gu Immortal is a legend, their actions have huge impact. And back then, the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs were extremely famous, even in the other four regions. And because these five people had similar interests and a close relationship, they often fought enemies together. In most situations, rank eight Gu Immortals work alone. Thus, in white heaven and black heaven, other rank eight Gu Immortals would avoid the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs if they encountered them.”

“During that time, Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world had the edge over the other four regions because of the Five Xiangs, they had incredible fame. But dozens of years later, the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs disbanded.

As he said that, Qi Zai’s tone became deeper.

“Why?” Qi He asked.

Qi Zai sighed, continuing: “I am not sure about the exact details. Supposedly, back then the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs found a huge secret while exploring white heaven. This secret represented an unimaginable achievement, but only one person could obtain it. All of the five Xiangs wanted to get it, but they did not relent. Because their strength was similar, and because of their relationship, they created a bet.”

“Bet?”

“That’s right, this bet had a thousand year duration. The rules of the bet were: The five Xiang could only watch as their descendants developed on their own. A thousand years later, whichever clan had the most Gu Immortals would be the winner.”

Qi He considered the time, a thousand years had already passed, she quickly asked: “Then who won?”

Qi Zai smiled bitterly: “A thousand years later, two clans had the same number of Gu Immortals, the victor could not be decided. The other three clans were unwilling to give up, thus, with two clans against three, another round of betting was decided upon. Thus, a thousand years, two thousand years, three thousand years... until now, the five ancestors already died long ago, but the bet is still ongoing.”

“So that’s it!” Qi He heard this old secret and was tongue-tied.

After a while, she accepted this fact and sighed: “That means without this agreement, Southern Border would have five more super forces?”

But Qi Zai shook his head: “Among the five Xiangs, there were lone immortals and demonic path members, developing clans is something only righteous path members generally have the patience to do.”

“Our Qi clan had Qi Xiang, who are the other four Xiangs?” Qi He asked again.

Qi Zai responded: “Qi Xiang, Ni Xiang, Bai Xiang, Xue Xiang, Chi Xiang, they were known as the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs. The following place I am going is where the current generation Ni Xiang is.”

“Why does great-uncle want to go to Ni Xiang?”

Qi Zai hesitated for a moment before smiling: “Alright, it is not an issue to tell you. Recently, a huge matter happened in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, large numbers of Gu Immortals died around Yi Tian Mountain. One of our elders from Qi clan died there. Thus, we are here to find the current generation Ni Xiang, so that they can help us deduce the truth.”

“Ah! Yi Tian Mountain...” Qi He cried out.

Regardless of what had occurred in Fang Yuan’s previous life, this time around, the battle of Yi Tian Mountain involved both mortals and immortals. Thus, Qi He had heard about it long ago.

But she only knew that Southern Border’s forces sent their mortal experts to attack Yi Tian Mountain and exterminate the demonic path in order to defend the righteous path. In Southern Border, there had been no demonic path power that was so brazen to create a force. Thus, the righteous path was trying to take them down.

Qi Zai thus told Qi He the gambling contest of Yi Tian Mountain.

Qi He finally realized that the truth was like this.

She muttered: “The difference between immortal and mortal is as far apart as clouds and mud. Those rank four and five experts are just pawns of the immortals.”

This truth had great impact towards Qi He, who had just become a Gu Immortal.

Qi Zai heard this and smiled internally.

When Gu Masters become immortals, not only would their strength and cultivation change, their mentality also had to change.

At this moment, Qi Zai could use the matter of Yi Tian Mountain to stimulate Qi He’s growth, so that she could adapt to her new identity.

Soon, there was silence.

Only the qi grand lion was still running in the air, Qi Zai and Qi He had turned silent.

Clouds moved around them, the world seemed vast.

Because there were Gu formations on the chairs, they did not feel any wind or noise.

Could any mortal see such a sight?

Qi He saw this and felt how huge the world was, mortals were like insects, her complex feelings faded gradually, she thought: “That’s right, I am a Gu Immortal, I am not a mortal anymore. Mortals and immortals are different, I need to remember this.”

After telling herself that, Qi He’s mood returned to normal, even her mind had undergone a change.

Qi Zai nodded internally at this, saying: “Actually, during these last few thousand years, among the descendants of the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs, our Qi clan is the most prosperous. Xue Xiang’s descendants cultivate blood path, they are almost wiped out. Chi Xiang’s descendants are staying inside their immortal aperture and live like livestock, they do not have any urge to improve themselves, they are lazy and only want to eat, they are nothing significant. Bai Xiang’s final traces of bloodline have all died recently. As for Ni Xiang, even though they have several branches in Southern Border, there are no longer any Ni clan Gu Immortals.”

Qi He understood why, she nodded: “Becoming an immortal is really difficult, if not for great-uncle’s help, I would have died in the calamity and tribulation already.”

Qi Zai smiled, shaking his head as he said to Qi He with deep meaning: “Actually, Ni clan had the most hope in producing Gu Immortals. But because of that, the other clans obstructed them, resulting in their pitiful state now.”

“Three thousand years after the bet was created, Ni clan had a greatly talented refinement path Gu Immortal, Ni Ren, he was the final Gu Immortal in Ni clan’s history. Before dying, he planned for his clan’s future. He broke the rules of the agreement, helping Ni clan and selecting Immortal Gu to refine into his future descendants’ bloodline.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1036: Grudge Qi Mudman

“Ah? What does that mean?”

“Once in a while, a Gu Master in Ni clan would awaken their bloodline. If they survive, an Immortal Gu would grow inside their body.”

Qi Zai looked at the clouds in front of them as he continued saying: “Ni Ren did that to help Ni clan produce Gu Immortals. He was talented indeed, by refining Immortal Gu into his descendants’ bloodline, others could not take them away. Even if they tried to reverse refine it, it would fail. And these Immortal Gu were specially chosen and could be used by mortals, although the price would be high.”

Qi He blinked as she felt admiration towards Ni Ren: “If I could have the help of Immortal Gu, I might have been able to survive my calamity and tribulation alone.”

Qi Zai suddenly laughed sinisterly, a cold aura emanating from his body: “Ni Ren worked hard, but in the last few thousand years, there has not been a Gu Immortal from Ni clan. The Immortal Gu that he chose had too high of a cost, even if the mortal controlled an Immortal Gu, and even if it could not be snatched away by others, this was still like a baby holding onto a treasure, how could they be safe?”

“Once someone creates an Immortal Gu in their body among Ni clan, we call them the current generation Ni Xiang. The first Immortal Gu created is an information path Immortal Gu, called ‘Yes or No’. This Gu can get the information from heaven and earth, and be expressed by the Gu Master, but they can only say either yes or no. Every time they answer a question, the Gu Master would expend fifty years of lifespan.”

Qi He’s brows rose: “Fifty years of lifespan? This price is so huge! How can this current generation Ni Xiang do it willingly?”

Qi Zai smiled and did not answer.

Qi He’s body slightly shook.

She had over sixty years of life experience, she had gone through many things, she finally realized what Qi Zai meant when he said this.

“Each answer costs the current generation Ni Xiang fifty years of lifespan, how can they be willing? But great-uncle is a Gu Immortal, while the current generation Ni Xiang is only a mortal, does it matter if they are unwilling?”

“Ni clan is in such a pathetic state now, most likely, they were schemed by Qi clan’s ancestors.”

“And my Qi clan is in a bad state, do the senior Gu Immortals really have no way to help?”

At once, Qi He felt a chill.

In their following journey, Qi He became quiet, no longer speaking.

Qi Zai kept his mouth shut, he was someone who did not speak much to begin with.

Just now, he spoke so much in order to educate the junior, Qi He. Now that she was an immortal, she was one of Qi clan’s Gu Immortals.

This action by Qi clan was by no means righteous. If newly included Gu Immortals had beliefs that did not fit with it, there would inevitably be conflict among the members.

Qi Zai did not speak explicitly, but Qi He had already understood his words.

“Rotten Mud Mountain is not far away. This time, I should let Qi He handle this particular Ni clan. Even if the whole of the Ni clan here is sacrificed, there is no issue.” Thinking of this, Qi Zai’s eyes shined with cold light.

At Qi Zai’s will, the qi grand lion descended.

The scene was filled with white clouds.

Soon, the qi grand lion went below the cloud layer and Qi He’s field of vision expanded, she could see mountains, rivers, and forests below her. She had never seen such a grand sight when she was a mortal, she was quite amazed.

And among these mountains, there was a tall black mountain that was very eye-catching, it stood out among the other mountains.

Even the trees on this mountain were brown-black in color.

“Eh?” As they got closer, Qi Zai’s eyes focused.

Soon, Qi He also found something wrong.

On the east side of the mountain, towards the sun, there was a village.

But now, this village had already turned into ruins. Rivers of blood were everywhere, corpses were piled up on the ground.

Not only were there human corpses, there were also beast corpses.

“What happened?” Qi He cried out.

The qi grand lion slowly landed on this bloody land, as the two Qi clan immortals looked at the battlefield.

The intense smell of blood assaulted their noses. Qi He was unable to bear watching this terrible sight.

Qi Zai had a cold and indifferent expression, he muttered: “Rotten Mud Mountain has a special property in the soil, the blood has not dried yet, evidently, Ni clan was slaughtered less than one or two days ago.”

“Something’s strange. There are many types of wild beasts here, it is not a normal beast tide. Ni clan was really unlucky to have encountered such a beast tide.” Qi He said.

Qi Zai looked on with a cold gaze: “Hmph, what beast tide, this is a man-made disaster! There is only one type of beast tide in Rotten Mud Mountain, that is the mud monster beast tide.”

Qi He was shocked: “What? Who is it, they are so cruel, doing something so immoral!”

But she then thought over it briefly and said: “This person can control a huge number and different types of beasts, they have an amazing method, since when did Southern Border have such an amazing enslavement path Gu Master?”

“Hmph! This person is not a Gu Master, it is a Gu Immortal.” Qi Zai walked to the middle of the village.

At the center of the village ruins, there was a layer of black mud, it was a clear contrast to the surrounding blood.

“This Ni clan has control of a desolate beast mud monster. Although this mud monster is already close to dying, no matter how strong an enslavement path Gu Master they are, the beast tide would not be able to do anything to this desolate beast mud monster. This is the work of a Gu Immortal!” Qi Zai said grimly.

“Gu Immortal?” Qi He did not expect that it was a Gu Immortal.

She felt strange. She had lived for decades without seeing a single Gu Immortal. To think that during her tribulation, she would meet her great-uncle, and now there were traces of another Gu Immortal.

“I am a rank six Gu Immortal now, things are different, the people I can encounter are completely different as well.” Qi He thought to herself.

Qi Zai’s expression was turning grimmer.

He came here to find the current generation Ni Xiang. But now, Ni clan village was completely wiped out, there was little hope of his plan succeeding.

“Hmph! Killing the whole of Ni clan and leaving, I want to see who you really are.”

Qi Zai snorted, deep killing intent appeared: “You think that by doing this, I can’t find you? How can the methods left by Ancestor Qi Xiang be ordinary methods?”

Qi Zai said this as he stretched out his right hand.

Two of the fingers on his right hand curled inwards, only his thumb, index finger, and middle finger were pointed out.

The three fingers tapped at the air, Qi He did not think much of the small movements, but soon, the disturbance caused by this move was huge.

Boom.

The entirety of Rotten Mud Mountain shook, air currents moved and shook intensely, the rubble of the village, like snapped wood and bricks, were blown away by the strong wind.

Qi He took a step back, she was shocked by the huge force created.

Howl howl howl...

Pale green aura rose up in all areas of the battlefield.

At first, there were only a couple dozen of them, but soon, the number of traces of pale green aura rose to hundreds, then thousands, flying in the air. At once, the entire battlefield was covered in green light, it was a grand sight.

“Come.” Qi Zai shouted, three fingers were hooked, resembling a strong eagle claw.

He grabbed at the pale green aura dancing in the air.

The aura was affected by a strong suction force, gathering towards the eagle claw that Qi Zai’s hand resembled.

In a few tens of breaths, the pale green aura in the air was completely gone, having fused into Qi Zai’s hand.

Qi Zai’s hand was no longer of normal color, it had turned into a peculiar jade green.

“Great-uncle, your hand!” Qi He only took a look and felt her body and mind tremble, an intense feeling of grudge assaulted her.

“You have just passed your immortal ascension, you are still very much like a mortal, don’t get close.” Qi Zai instructed, but his voice was still as low and calm as always.

Qi He nodded, taking a few steps back, turning her gaze around.

Next, she heard Qi Zai say: “The pale green aura is the grudge qi that is scattered all over this battlefield. That Gu Immortal killed Ni clan’s entire village, not even letting the children and elderly live, he was truly ruthless. Ni clan did not have a single survivor, they are naturally feeling grudge towards their fate and the person who killed them. The aura is not only left in the battlefield, they are still entangled around the murderer.”

“Go!” Qi Zai shouted.

At the same time, he opened his hand, slamming the pale green hand towards the black mud below him.

In an instant, all of the grudge qi was sent into the mud by Qi Zai’s action.

This was not ordinary mud, it was filled with earth path dao marks from the corpse of the desolate beast mud monster.

“Qi path has a long history, Little He, watch closely, this is one of the signature methods of our Qi clan.” Qi Zai could not conceal his pride.

With a whooshing sound.

The mud rumbled under Qi Zai’s method, forming into a giant mud ball.

The thick mud ball floated in the air, rotating on its own.

On the surface of this mud ball, there were countless faces.

These faces showed anger and hatred.

“Puff!” Qi Zai breathed out, blowing out a breath of mystical aura.

The aura entered the mud ball, as the latter quickly transformed into a monster made from mud.

The mudman shouted: “Kill! I want to kill you!”

Qi He gasped: “A member of Ni clan revived?”

Qi Zai’s method was simply unfathomable in her eyes.

“Ever since fate Gu was broken, the world began to have many revival methods.” Qi Zai explained, turning towards the frenzied mudman monster, asking: “What is your name?”

“Ahhhhh...” The mudman monster was still shouting, its limbs were still moving around, expressing its rage.

Qi Zai frowned, he asked again.

The mudman monster did not listen, it continued cursing: “Murderer! You forced my grandpa to die! I will tear your into shreds!”

Qi Zai snorted as he shifted his thoughts.

The mudman monster was created by him, he could naturally control it.

“Who are you? You are a murderer too! I will also...” The mudman monster’s body shook as if it was hit by lightning, mud was falling off of its body.

The cursing ended, the mudman monster calmed down, looking at Qi Zai and Qi He with its hollow eyes.

Qi Zai let out a breath of air, he knew that this mudman monster had very low intelligence, it was made from grudge qi. Questions could not be asked too rapidly, he had to ask slowly and progressively.

“What is your name?”

“Ni Jian!” The mudman monster shouted.

Qi Zai misinterpreted his words as ‘you bastard 1 ‘, his eyes shined with cold light as he waved his sleeves while snorting.

With a splat, the mudman monster broke apart, turning into a pile of mud on the ground.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1037: Difficulties of Three Parties

Qi Zai snorted, pointing his finger as the mud gathered into a mud ball again.

On the surface of the mud ball, there were countless faces filled with hatred. Even though it was silent, this scene made Qi He feel a cold chill internally.

Qi Zai waved his sleeve as the mud ball turned back into a mud monster again.

Qi Zai gasped lightly, thinking: “This is the grudge qi from earlier. I had already dispelled this grudge qi once, but it could show up again by suppressing the other grudge qi and regaining form. It seems its owner had felt an immense grudge before dying.”

Qi Zai asked again: “What is your name?”

“Ni Jian.”

This time, Qi Zai heard him clearly.

Thus, he continued asking: “How old are you?”

“Fifteen.”

Qi Zai asked as the mud monster answered.

Qi Zai’s questions gradually became more in depth and more difficult.

As time passed, after a while, Qi Zai finally learned what had happened in Ni clan.

A mysterious Gu Immortal had controlled the beasts and attacked Ni clan village. His motive was like that of Qi Zai, it was to find the current generation Ni Xiang.

But unlike Qi Zai, he did not know who the current generation Ni Xiang was.

Thus, he used the lives of the entire village to threaten and force the current generation Ni Xiang out.

Without a choice, the Ni clan leader had to step up.

As it turned out, he was the current generation Ni Xiang who had yes or no Immortal Gu in his body.

The Gu Immortal was overjoyed, forcing the Ni clan leader to use yes or no Immortal Gu and answer his question. He promised that as long as he received a satisfactory answer, he would spare Ni clan village.

In order to protect the entire clan, the Ni clan leader chose to believe the Gu Immortal and sacrificed himself.

After the mysterious Gu Immortal obtained the answer he wanted, he went back on his words and ordered the beasts to attack the village.

Ni clan village felt furious and bore deep hatred, they resisted but fell back rapidly, suffering great losses due to the huge beast group.

At the moment of life and death, the desolate beast mud monster that Qi Zai subdued came to save them.

It turned out that the Ni clan villages that were scattered all over Southern Border were purposely preserved by Qi clan’s Gu Immortals. Qi Zai was in charge of Rotten Mud Mountain, once in a while, he would do a check, thus, he knew that the current generation Ni Xiang was Ni clan leader.

He had subdued a desolate beast mud monster in a swamp of the mountain, leaving his will in it. This will manipulated the mud monster to protect Ni clan from mishaps.

As the incident occurred, the mud monster rushed to the scene and protected Ni clan.

But the mysterious Gu Immortal was very strong, he attacked personally and killed the mud monster after many attacks.

Once the mud monster died, Ni clan’s remaining clansmen were submerged by the beast group, not a single person survived.

The peaceful Ni clan village had been turned into a ruin, corpses were everywhere, it was a pitiful sight.

Days later, at this moment when Qi Zai and Qi He arrived, they found out about this.

This Ni Jian was the young clan leader of the village, the grandson of the Ni clan leader. he had lost his parents at a young age, he was brought up by his grandfather and was carefully nurtured, they had a close relationship.

His grandfather was forced into death by the enemy, and the enemy even went back on his word and killed the entire village, including himself.

After he died, his soul was taken away, only his deep grudge was remaining and did not dissipate.

Qi Zai asked one question at a time, Ni Jian had a deep impression of Fang Yuan, he said everything he knew.

According to his answer, Qi Zai obtained an idea of Fang Yuan’s appearance.

This was a short but muscular old man, he had a black and white beard, he looked tough like steel nails. He was yellow skinned and had small eyes, his teeth were unevenly positioned.

“Who is this?” Qi Zai searched through his memories, but he did not recognize this person.

Of course he did not.

Fang Yuan was a vigilant person, even when facing unthreatening mortal Gu Masters, he still disguised himself and changed his appearance.

Actually, even if Qi Zai had appeared personally and saw Fang Yuan, he would not be able to expose his disguise.

Because not long ago, Fang Yuan had already obtained enough Gu worms via Lang Ya land spirit to use the immortal killer move, familiar face.

“This Gu Immortal is likely a secluded cultivator in Southern Border... sigh, it is a time of unrest!” Qi Zai sighed to himself.

Ever since the gambling contest on Yi Tian Mountain, a large number of Southern Border’s Gu Immortals had died for some reason.

And these Southern Border Gu Immortals who died were mostly those who controlled certain areas in Southern Border, they had control of countless cultivation resources.

This way, a power vacuum was created.

Many lurking Gu Immortals who were normally rarely seen started appearing one by one.

“This person had to attack the desolate beast mud monster many times, he does not have outstanding strength, he is likely to be a rank six Gu Immortal. He actually knows about the current generation Ni Xiang, this secret is not known by Wu clan or Shang clan. Is he the descendant of one of the other three Xiangs?”

Qi Zai hesitated for a moment before deciding to pursue him.

Qi clan was already in sight of victory regarding the ancient bet by the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs. But at this final juncture, a mysterious Gu Immortal appeared, this matter was extremely important, even more than investigating the deceased Qi clan Gu Immortal, he, Qi Zai, had to pursue it!

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

Guh.

A basin of cold water was poured on Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s face.

Fang Zheng, who was unconscious, shuddered, waking up instantly.

“Where... is this?” He opened his eyes, realizing that he was in a cage, as a captive.

And around him, there were two hairy men wearing armor.

One of them was carrying an empty basin, there was still water droplets inside.

The other was holding a leather whip, sneering.

“Who are you? Where is this?” Fang Zheng struggled intensely, but he was tied up and could not move.

“Kid, you are finally awake? You seem pretty lively.” A hairy man prison guard said as he raised his leather whip, swinging it.

With a loud cracking sound.

The leather whip landed on Fang Zheng’s chest, an intense pain assaulted him.

His thin shirt was torn from the lashing, blood flowed out of his wound, dripping down.

Fang Zheng sucked in a deep breath, his face was distorted as he screamed loudly.

“What are you screaming for?!” The hairy man prison guard had a fierce expression, he whipped again.

This lash hit his face, he was disfigured.

Fang Zheng screamed in pain again.

The hairy man prison guard was even more excited now, he kept whipping as he spat out saliva: “Dog shit human, go ahead and scream, scream!”

Fang Zheng was tortured and felt anguished, he was abused terribly.

With the intense waves of pain assaulting him, he finally remembered: He was originally imprisoned in Hu Immortal blessed land by his brother, Fang Yuan, but one day, a large group of hairy men came and brought him away.

“What happened? What in the world happened?” Fang Zheng was confused.

But he was not confused for long, the pain soon caused him to faint.

“He fainted, this lad is really weak.”

“Hehe, pour some more cold water, wake him up!”

The two hairy men laughed sinisterly.

The bone chilling water was poured over Fang Zheng again.

Fang Zheng’s body spasmed, he opened his eyes slowly.

His consciousness was returning, but the pain in his body was becoming clearer and more intense.

The hairy man who whipped Fang Zheng took a huge step forward and stood in front of Fang Zheng.

Next, he stretched out his hairy arm, grabbing Fang Zheng’s face, gritting his teeth: “Lad, don’t think of surviving after ending up in our hands. Nobody will save you! Hu Immortal blessed land has already been taken over by our great hairy man Gu Immortals, your brother died in battle already.”

“Cooperate with us and we will let you die peacefully without much torture. Tell us, how much do you know about Hu Immortal blessed land? How much do you know about your brother’s secrets?”

Fang Zheng heard this and felt that his mind was quaking.

He was in a daze, looking at the hairy men in shock, he cried out: “What? Fang Yuan is dead?!”

“Hmph, he was attacked by our hairy man Gu Immortals, as a mere immortal zombie, how could he not die? He has already been torn to shreds, hahaha.”

“Us hairy men are not to be trifled with. One day, we will attack and trample all humans under our feet!”

The two hairy man prison guards laughed.

Fang Zheng knew little about Gu Immortals, he was convinced by these two.

His gaze was empty, he was dejected.

Central Continent, deep in Earth Abyss.

In a dark room, Hei Lou Lan was sitting with her eyes shut.

The door opened, Ying Wu Xie stood outside.

Hei Lou Lan opened her eyes slowly, she did not speak, only looking at him.

Frankly speaking, the result of the battle of Yi Tian Mountain was out of Hei Lou Lan’s expectations. Seeing this familiar ‘Fang Yuan’, Hei Lou Lan had complex emotions.

“I have decided.” Ying Wu Xie said, breaking the silence.

“Oh? I am listening.” Hei Lou Lan said.

She knew that the judgment of whether she lived or died had come.

If Ying Wu Xie was unwilling to get rid of the alliance agreement for her, she would definitely be killed. Evidently, since Ying Wu Xie exposed his identity, he would not allow Fang Yuan’s ally to stay around him.

If Ying Wu Xie decided to get rid of the alliance agreement and recruit Hei Lou Lan, she would be able to live.

Ying Wu Xie had hesitated for a long time.

He wanted to use Hei Lou Lan to deal with Fang Yuan by getting rid of the alliance agreement only on her end. But Fairy Li Shan had deep information path attainment, and with Fang Yuan’s meticulous planning, Ying Wu Xie’s plan failed before it even begun.

Hei Lou Lan’s value fell greatly.

After all, Hei Lou Lan and Shadow Sect had a deep grudge.

If breaking Hei Lou Lan’s information path alliance agreement was the same as releasing Fang Yuan from it, he would have to use a new alliance agreement to restrict Hei Lou Lan.

If he gave up on it, he would kill Hei Lou Lan. Even though he could not obtain her Gu worms, her immortal aperture and the Great Strength True Martial Physique would remain. That way, Fang Yuan would still be bound by the alliance agreement, it could be used against him later.

After considering the costs and benefits, Ying Wu Xie made his decision.

He opened his mouth slowly.

Undoubtedly.

At the next moment, his words would determine Hei Lou Lan’s life or death!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1038: Rushing to Refine Fixed Immortal Travel

Green light flickered, red light shined like fire.

The two lights fused, growing and weakening in intervals.

The light faded gradually, the center of the formation turned into darkness again.

Hei Lou Lan floated in the air in a sitting position, she opened her eyes, admiration flashed across her shocked gaze.

“Ying Wu Xie belongs to Shadow Sect, he is a subordinate of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. I had thought that he would use soul path or dark path methods to get rid of the information path dao marks on me. To think that he used light path, this shows how unfathomable Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and Shadow Sect are, little aunt’s information path attainment was already quasi-great grandmaster. But Shadow Sect could actually break it using this light path Gu formation...”

Hei Lou Lan’s evaluation of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and Shadow Sect rose by another level.

The scene she viewed changed, in an instant, Hei Lou Lan had returned to the room she was in previously.

“I have already removed all of the information path dao marks on you.” Ying Wu Xie stood at the side, saying calmly.

After careful consideration, Ying Wu Xie decided to preserve Hei Lou Lan’s life.

After all, his biggest mission now was not to deal with Fang Yuan, it was to pick up the pieces and rebuild Shadow Sect, he had to save Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s main body.

Fang Yuan was a secondary goal.

Even though Ying Wu Xie hated Fang Yuan to the core, he would not lose his reasoning due to hatred.

Precisely because of this, he knew his primary objective and decided to make Hei Lou Lan a member of his after some hesitation.

She was a talented person.

Great Strength True Martial Physique, with Ying Wu Xie's knowledge, and with some teaching, she would be a capable force in his hands.

Hei Lou Lan inspected her body.

She did not have any methods to observe her own dao marks, after inspecting herself, she saw nothing wrong with her body. Of course, the emphasis was on her soul.

But everyone knew that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was the founder of soul path!

Ying Wu Xie smiled lightly: “The old agreement is gone, you have a new alliance agreement now. From now on, you are my subordinate, you have to listen to my orders, you are not to defy me or hide anything from me.”

Hei Lou Lan snorted coldly, not showing any respect to Ying Wu Xie.

Since Ying Wu Xie could get rid of her alliance agreement, his methods were proven to be superior to Fairy Li Shan.

From now on, Hei Lou Lan no longer had freedom, she had to listen to every order from Ying Wu Xie.

But...

For Hei Lou Lan, this was a helpless choice that she had to accept.

The situation was not in her favor, if she resisted, she would die.

As for the fact that she betrayed her ally Fang Yuan, Hei Lou Lan felt zero remorse. Her relationship with Fang Yuan originally was about scheming against each other for benefits, they were just making use of one another.

In fact, she even felt hatred towards Fang Yuan!

“What do you want me to do next? Lure Fang Yuan here? I have stargate Gu, I can travel the five regions using black heaven.” Hei Lou Lan said plainly.

Without the alliance agreement, she exposed Fang Yuan's secrets without mercy.

But Ying Wu Xie shook his head, he said regretfully: “I'm not afraid to tell you that Shadow Sect has a spy in Lang Ya blessed land. We know about stargate Gu, even though this Gu is amazing, it is effective on rank six bottom tier Gu Immortals at best. It cannot even transport a single Immortal Gu, you will be no match for the current Fang Yuan.”

Ying Wu Xie obtained Spectral Soul's guidance in the Red Lotus true inheritance, he knew a lot of secrets regarding sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

He understood clearly that Fang Yuan's new body had a larger number of dao marks. Fire path, water path, wind path, all of his paths had at least a hundred dao marks.

That meant that the cumulative number of dao marks that he had exceeded a thousand for sure.

With so many dao marks, Fang Yuan could not use stargate Gu.

“The next step of my plan is to refine Fixed Immortal Travel.” Ying Wu Xie said.

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes shined with bright light, she nodded.

She knew about Fixed Immortal Travel, this Immortal Gu was very useful, it was very wise of Ying Wu Xie to refine it first.

“Fixed Immortal Travel has just been destroyed, there is a high chance of succeeding the refinement. But to refine Fixed Immortal Travel, you will need divine travel Gu, and to get divine travel Gu, you will need four top tier liquors within the world...”

Before Hei Lou Lan finished, Ying Wu Xie interrupted her: “Divine travel Gu is in Lang Ya land spirit’s hands. However, even though Immortal Gu like Fixed Immortal Travel are unique, there isn’t only one possible Gu recipe. A city has multiple gates to enter it, the same goes for Immortal Gu.”

Hei Lou Lan was curious: “This means you have a new recipe to refine Fixed Immortal Travel?”

“Of course.” Ying Wu Xie smiled.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was invincible in the world when he was alive, his accumulation and foundation was immense, and after his death he created Shadow Sect.

Spectral Soul’s will inside the Red Lotus true inheritance had formulated a series of plans for Ying Wu Xie relating to Fixed Immortal Travel. As the core of the plan, Fixed Immortal Travel naturally could not have issues. Thus, Ying Wu Xie had three Immortal Gu recipes of Fixed Immortal Travel in his mind.

All of them could be used to refine Fixed Immortal Travel!

Southern Border.

Fang Yuan traveled in the mountains.

He had just slaughtered Ni clan village singlehandedly, right now, he was traveling as he assessed his gains and losses from the battle.

Experiences were lessons.

Only by sorting out one’s experiences could they learn from those experiences, allowing their foundation to rise and become more stable.

Ni clan’s Gu Masters were not a concern, Fang Yuan only used some enslavement path methods to summon the huge number of beasts and trample over the village.

No matter how many mortals there were, Fang Yuan did not need to attack personally.

What made Fang Yuan fight was the desolate beast mud monster.

This mud monster gave Fang Yuan a lot of problems before he killed it.

In this battle, Fang Yuan learned a lot about his weakness.

“Even though I have rank seven sword path Gu, the immortal essence expenditure is too high!”

Gu worms and Gu Masters both had nine ranks, since ancient times, there was a common understanding in the cultivation world, that was, the Gu Master and Gu worm’s rank should be equal. When the Gu worm’s rank was too low, the Gu Master would not be able to use their full strength. When the Gu worm’s rank was too high, the Gu Master would also be unable to use their full strength.

Because, if the Gu worm had a higher rank, the Gu Master would be like a baby holding a hammer, not only would it be difficult to use it to harm foes, the Gu Master themselves may also receive damage when using the hammer.

Like earlier, when Fang Yuan used his rank seven sword path Gu against the desolate beast mud monster, he felt a sense of helplessness.

Every time he used his sword path Gu, the expended green grape immortal essence exceeded a hundred beads.

Fang Yuan’s nine-five sovereign immortal aperture could only produce sixteen beads of immortal essence a day, it was not enough for one activation.

Thankfully, he had taken a sum of immortal essence stones from Lang Ya land spirit to replenish his immortal essence. Otherwise, in Ni clan village, he would face much greater problems when dealing with the mud monster.

“I was hesitant earlier, but now it seems I must reverse refine these rank seven sword path Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan sighed internally.

The higher the rank of the Gu worm, the rarer they were, and the more valuable they were.

But in Fang Yuan’s situation, he had no choice but to reverse refine these rank seven Immortal Gu and turn them into rank six.

This way, they would suit Fang Yuan better and he could use them as he wished.

“My refinement path attainment is so-so. I should ask Lang Ya land spirit to do the Immortal Gu reverse refinement for me.”

“Even though his personality changed, he is still Long Hair Ancestor’s obsession, as long as I pay the sect contribution points, he will do it.”

Fang Yuan analyzed in his mind.

Reverse refining Immortal Gu, even though the success rate was higher than normal refinement, there was still a possibility of failing, and it was high.

Thus, it was better to ask Lang Ya land spirit to do it instead of Fang Yuan himself.

“I wonder how many of these rank seven sword path Immortal Gu I would have left after all of them are reverse refined?”

“Even if all of them are left, just these sword path Immortal Gu would not be enough.”

Fang Yuan thought about the battle against the desolate beast mud monster again.

Even though he used rank seven sword path Immortal Gu, the enemy was a mud monster.

Mud monsters were different from other beasts. Ordinary desolate beasts had flesh and blood, they had bones and skin, they had obvious weaknesses.

But mud monsters were made of mud, but because the mud was filled with earth path dao marks, they became different from normal mud.

Fang Yuan’s flying sword Immortal Gu was specialized in dealing fatal blows, once used, a three meter long silver sword would fly out, even though it was sharp and could easily pierce the mud monster, it could not deal much damage.

Thus, in that battle, even though Fang Yuan had the advantage, he was very unhappy.

Eventually, even though he won, the expended green grape immortal essence greatly exceeded Fang Yuan’s bottom line.

“Flying sword Immortal Gu was the most commonly used Immortal Gu of Bo Qing, using it as the core, he created many immortal killer moves to deal with many situations. Earlier, if I had a sword path immortal killer move, I would be able to split flying sword Immortal Gu into countless swords, sending down a rain of them, the mud monster would not last one hit!”

Thus, Fang Yuan not only needed to reverse refine the sword path Immortal Gu, he also needed to collect sword path killer moves.

As for creating them himself, he could forget about it.

He could not use wisdom Gu, or at least, he did not find the method yet, and his sword path attainment was almost nonexistent.

If not for these available sword path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan would have tried to use blood path, strength path, or time path already.

After pondering, Fang Yuan stopped traveling, sitting down on a rock.

He contracted Lang Ya land spirit.

Right now, Lang Ya land spirit was not so interested in refining Gu, his focus was on expanding the hairy men race and trampling over humans, making hairy men the overlords of the five regions.

But when Fang Yuan was willing to use his sect contribution points to ask the land spirit to do it, he agreed.

As for sword path killer moves, Lang Ya blessed land had many in its collection.

The original Lang Ya land spirit spent all his time researching Gu recipes and refining Gu. He had researched sword path Gu as well, these killer moves were things that Lang Ya land spirit used for research.

Looking over them, Fang Yuan could not decide what killer move to get.

He changed the topic: “First supreme elder, I am willing to use the final opportunity to ask you to refine an Immortal Gu.”

Even though Lang Ya land spirit had changed, the agreement between Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and Long Hair Ancestor still had to be fulfilled.

Fang Yuan had already used two chances, asking Lang Ya land spirit to refine stargate Gu and second aperture Gu. Now, he made up his mind, using the final chance.

“Oh? What Immortal Gu?” The land spirit asked.

Fang Yuan’s answer was quick and simple —

“Fixed Immortal Travel!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1039: Dark Assassination

“Fixed Immortal Travel?” Lang Ya land spirit was surprised, asking hesitantly.

Fang Yuan knew what his concern was, it was that Immortal Gu were unique.

He replied to the land spirit calmly: “Don’t worry, I am mostly sure that Fixed Immortal Travel no longer exists in the world.”

He had approached the current generation Ni Xiang, asking a question about Fixed Immortal Travel and other Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan asked: Fixed Immortal Travel, Spring Autumn Cicada... and other Immortal Gu, were all of them either destroyed or preserved?

Current generation Ni Xiang answered: No.

Thus, Fang Yuan confirmed two details.

The first was that some of the Immortal Gu including Fixed Immortal Travel were still remaining, while some were destroyed.

The second was that Ying Wu Xie had most likely discovered and broken the arrangements on his original body.

The current generation Ni Xiang was already over fifty years old, after using yes or no Immortal Gu once, he expended fifty years of lifespan. Thus, after answering one question, Ni clan’s old clan leader died on the spot.

But this answer had already helped Fang Yuan greatly.

“In the worst case scenario, Ying Wu Xie has already broken my arrangements, he would hide himself and prevent me from finding him. He might not even be in Southern Border anymore.”

“I am unable to contact Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, these two have either turned to his side or been killed by him.”

“I wonder which Immortal Gu in my original body have already been destroyed? It is most likely that Fixed Immortal Travel is already destroyed, because the special will that I designed would destroy it first.”

Fang Yuan made such an arrangement earlier because he was wary of Fixed Immortal Travel’s power, and also because he was afraid that he could not retrieve the special will in time after getting back his body, thus he set them to self-detonate one by one.

“The most likely thing is that after Fixed Immortal Travel was destroyed, Ying Wu Xie found there were problems and used methods to seal the other Immortal Gu temporarily.”

“The two of us have swapped souls, his situation is worse than mine, he has no Gu worms to manipulate. But to think he could seal my Immortal Gu, that means he either deceived Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng or used the remaining forces Shadow Sect has.”

Since Shadow Sect was created by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and was in operation for tens of thousands of years, it was natural that they had remaining forces. Fang Yuan had already expected this.

“Shadow Sect exists in all five regions, even Zombie Alliance was a subsidiary force of Shadow Sect. The battle of Yi Tian Mountain happened in Southern Border, most likely, Shadow Sect’s forces in Southern Border suffered the greatest loss, while the other four regions are less affected.”

“If Fixed Immortal Travel is already destroyed, Ying Wu Xie can’t deal with me using just Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng. He would need to gather Shadow Sect’s remaining forces and come at me after he is prepared. Thus, he also wants to refine Fixed Immortal Travel.”

Fang Yuan’s new body was outstanding.

When he thought about things, inspiration flowed with ease, there were no obstacles.

And for him, Fixed Immortal Travel was also something he needed urgently.

Because of the regional walls, and the fact that stargate Gu had no effect on his new body, Fixed Immortal Travel was the best tool for him to travel the five regions.

“As long as I have Fixed Immortal Travel, I can return to Lang Ya blessed land directly and store all of the Immortal Gu with me.”

“My earlier cultivation resources can also be placed into the nine-five sovereign immortal aperture.”

“I can even go into Earth Abyss and devour Star Form blessed land!”

No matter which one it was, it would greatly increase Fang Yuan’s strength.

But not only was treasure yellow heaven too open and would lure many greedy people to Fang Yuan if he used it for transportation, just the processing fee that it charged was too high.

If Fang Yuan used treasure yellow heaven to transport the rank eight wisdom sword Gu, all of his savings would be expended, and it would not be enough.

“Are you sure you want to refine Fixed Immortal Travel?” Lang Ya land spirit asked again.

Fang Yuan sensed something amiss, he frowned: “What, is this out of your capability?”

Lang Ya land spirit shook his head: “I am not going to go back on my agreement with Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable. But even though I have divine travel Gu and the other supplementary Gu materials, I lack the most critical material. Can you guess what it is?”

Fang Yuan thought and frowned: “Is it the light of the immemorial era?”

“That’s right.” Lang Ya land spirit answered: “No matter which Gu recipe you try to use to refine Fixed Immortal Travel, in all of them, the most crucial material is the light of the immemorial era. Light is something hard to capture and store. The Immemorial Antiquity Era... it is earlier than the Olden Antiquity and Remote Antiquity Era, it is the time when Ren Zu was alive. Back then, in the entire world, the only humans were Ren Zu and his ten children.”

“Not a single Gu recipe will work?” Fang Yuan knew that Lang Ya land spirit would not lie, but he was unwilling to give up.

“Of course!” Lang Ya land spirit replied firmly: “I have two fixed immortal travel Immortal Gu recipes. I have seen more than ten Fixed Immortal Travel remnant recipes, no matter which one, they cannot avoid the light of the immemorial era. The only difference is the amount of light needed in each recipe.”

“Fixed Immortal Travel is a precious Gu, it has great use. If not for this, it would have been refined long ago, how could you have the chance?”

Fang Yuan heard this and realized how lucky he was back then when refining Fixed Immortal Travel.

The light of the immemorial era at that time was formed using the extreme light Gu in Xiao Mang’s hands.

But now, Xiao Mang was dead already.

Because Xiao Shan and Xiao Mang were pawns of Xiao clan’s supreme elder.

These two were potential Gu Immortals, but yet they were mortals and simply pawns. Even after dying, they did not realize the truth of Yi Tian Mountain.

Once Xiao Mang died, extreme light Gu was destroyed as well.

“Xiao Mang is dead, his soul was not even spared, how can I get the light of the immemorial era? First supreme elder, if you use the light of wisdom, would you be able to deduce a recipe that does not use the light of the immemorial era?” Fang Yuan asked again.

Involving a rank nine Immortal Gu, Lang Ya land spirit was uncertain, he was only a rank eight Gu Immortal even during his life.

Even if he helped two venerables refine Gu, he was not clear about the exact details of wisdom Gu.

“Forget it, even if the light of wisdom can be used to create an Immortal Gu recipe without the light of the immemorial era, I am no longer an immortal zombie, I cannot use it. I should go to Xiao clan and check, Xiao Mang’s extreme light Gu was found in a graveyard, I might find some clues there.”

Fang Yuan ended the conversation with Lang Ya land spirit.

He changed directions and rushed to Xiao clan.

But before ending their talk, he did not forget to pass the souls from killing Ni clan to Lang Ya land spirit.

Next, he asked for a list from Lang Ya land spirit.

The list was a request for the sword path killer moves in Lang Ya Sect.

Fang Yuan rushed to Xiao clan as he inspected these killer moves.

Even though there were a number of sword path killer moves, most of them were mortal killer moves, there were only three immortal killer moves.

Among them, one was an incomplete immortal killer move, like a remnant Immortal Gu recipe, it had a lot of value in research, but could not be used directly.

Among the other two, one was for movement, another was for attack.

The movement immortal killer move was called ‘sword flash thunder sound’, it only used two core Immortal Gu, they were flash sword Gu and rumbling thunder Gu.

The offensive immortal killer move was called ‘dark assassination’, there were also two core Immortal Gu, flying sword Immortal Gu and dark limit Immortal Gu.

Seeing the familiar dark limit Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan sighed internally.

A long time ago, he had once sought this Immortal Gu, but he did not succeed.

After Fairy Jiang Yu died, dark limit Immortal Gu was destroyed as well.

“If I had dark limit Immortal Gu, together with flying sword Immortal Gu, I would be able to use this dark assassination. It is a pity...”

While Fang Yuan was thinking, a voice came from afar: “Friend, please wait.”

Fang Yuan turned around and saw a desolate beast qi grand lion running over, there was a huge red chair on the lion’s back, two Gu Immortals were seated.

Central Continent, Earth Abyss.

The soul beast howled, emitting a wretched growl.

“Be careful, soul howl Immortal Gu has activated again!” Ying Wu Xie warned.

A formless sound wave created air currents in the air, sweeping towards Ying Wu Xie, Hei Lou Lan, and Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

The three had no choice but to retreat gradually.

This wild soul howl Immortal Gu was rank seven, living inside a soul beast. Ying Wu Xie, Hei Lou Lan, and Tai Bai Yun Sheng forced the soul beast into a dangerous situation, the Immortal Gu reacted and unleashed its power, giving the soul beast enough time and space to retaliate.

“How can this be? This soul beast is only a desolate beast, how can it have a wild rank seven Gu?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s seven orifices were bleeding as he called out.

The other two were in bad shape as well, their heads were spinning, their souls were heavily injured.

Ying Wu Xie’s expression was ugly.

It was truly a crisis out of nowhere.

Earlier, it was still fine, but suddenly, a soul beast charged into Shadow

Sect’s territory.

“The activation of soul howl Immortal Gu does not require immortal essence, it uses the foundation of the soul. This desolate soul beast must have been at ancient desolate level earlier. It had escaped after going through intense battle and because soul howl Immortal Gu activated, it fell from an ancient desolate beast to a desolate beast.”

Ying Wu Xie answered Tai Bai Yun Sheng with a hoarse voice.

At the same time, two words appeared in his mind — heaven’s will!

“My Shadow Sect’s plan failed, and I defied heaven’s will, after rebirth, I did not go to Fang Yuan and perish together with him. Thus, heaven’s will is coming after me now.”

The way of heaven emphasized on balance between all living beings.

Earlier, Shadow Sect was hidden and tried to evade heaven’s will, they operated in secret and faced less obstruction.

But now, Ying Wu Xie was completely exposed, heaven’s will prepared and lured the soul beast to them.

“Heaven’s will is everywhere!”

“Back then, when Fang Yuan refined Fixed Immortal Travel, it arranged the situation for him nicely, sending the light of the immemorial era to him. Now, it is trying to eliminate me.”

“Do I really need to destroy the Spring Autumn Cicada in my body?”

Ying Wu Xie was hesitant.

“We cannot get close to this soul beast! At this point, why are you still concealing your strength? Why aren’t you using the Gu formation?” Hei Lou Lan transmitted, urging.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1040: Fang Yuan versus Qi Zai

“Friend, please wait.” From the desolate beast qi grand lion, Qi Zai’s voice came over.

Fang Yuan stopped and gazed back.

After he was far away from Rotten Mud Mountain, he had dispelled the immortal killer move familiar face.

Rank eight Immortal Gu attitude Gu consumed mental energy, if it were maintained for a long time, it would wear out Fang Yuan’s mind.

Moreover, because Fang Yuan’s modified familiar face lacked change form Immortal Gu, it led to an increase in the quantity of the Gu worms, with over a thousand supplementary mortal Gu, and it also required more time and concentration to activate these Gu worms.

So when Qi Zai saw Fang Yuan from afar, he did not feel he was the culprit, he only had some doubts at most.

As they got closer, Qi He also saw Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan wore a white robe and looked like he was not marred by a speck of dust, his skin was white like snow and his eyes twinkled like stars, with long dark hair that reached down to his waist.

Even though Qi He was already old, over fifty years old, when she saw Fang Yuan, her eyes brightened and she thought: “This Gu Immortal senior has such a refined and graceful bearing, and sagely demeanor, I have rarely seen anything like it before in my life!”

“Senior, why did you call me?” Fang Yuan’s expression was tranquil as he asked this with his fists cupped in front of him.

He did not use familiar face and his rank six cultivation level was clearly displayed.

While Qi Zai was emitting rank seven aura.

In this world, the strong were respected, Fang Yuan’s greeting was natural and graceful. If he had his hands behind his back and showed an arrogant attitude, that would be unusual behavior.

Qi Zai also inwardly praised Fang Yuan’s conduct, his expression softening slightly as he said: “It is only to verify some things.”

He then shook his sleeve, from where a mud ball shot out.

The mud ball started expanding and soon turned into the size of an elephant. After another transformation, it turned into the shape of Ni Jian.

Fang Yuan’s gaze became slightly dark.

Ni Jian gazed towards Fang Yuan, at first he had a puzzled look, it soon turned into incomparably intense hatred.

Fang Yuan’s appearance was hugely different, but deep down, a sense of intuition told Ni Jian that the young man in front of him was the culprit!

“It’s you, it’s you! You demon, you forced my grandpa to die and even slaughtered my whole clan.”

As he said this, Ni Jian charged towards Fang Yuan.

“Oh?” Qi Zai’s expression changed, his gaze turning cold as he sized up Fang Yuan again.

Fang Yuan felt Qi Zai’s gaze piercing his body like a needle.

With a cold snort, Fang Yuan waved his arm and immediately clouds started to surge out, covering the scenery as he quickly made his retreat.

“Sure enough, there are an endless number of methods developed by Gu Immortals, it’s virtually impossible to defend against all of them effectively. They could actually find me?”

The enemy was a rank seven Gu Immortal, of a higher rank than Fang Yuan.

There was no doubt that this was a strong enemy.

Fang Yuan immediately had the intention to retreat.

“Stop!” Qi Zai shouted as he noticed this. His right hand took on the shape of an eagle claw and swept ferociously at the clouds and the mist in the sky.

Swoosh!

It was like the sound of a huge wave.

The clouds and the mist that filled the sky instantly dissipated.

Fang Yuan who was still retreating, was exposed.

Qi Zai faced Fang Yuan and opened his mouth, inhaling air.

Fang Yuan immediately felt an enormous suction force over his whole body, causing his speed to rapidly decline.

At this moment, the mudman, Ni Jian, had already flown close to him.

Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed, his expression was indifferent.

“Die!” Ni Jian punched his fist, it caused a gust of wind to blow!

The fist’s momentum was terrifying, as if it would destroy anything it struck.

Ni Jian was originally only a rank two Gu Master, but after being killed by the beast group, he was revived as a mudman by Qi Zai using a mud monster corpse.

His strength had thus increased rapidly and was at the level of a desolate beast, and could match ordinary rank six Gu Immortals.

Just from this, one could see how strange and terrifying the rank seven Gu Immortal Qi Zai’s method was.

Ni Jian’s fist ruthlessly charged at Fang Yuan.

But the next moment, Fang Yuan’s figure dispersed, turning into clouds and mist.

Qi He exclaimed in surprise as she had not expected such a scene.

Qi Zai, however, showed no surprise on his face, he looked to his right as he flicked his finger.

Mortal killer move — Divine Flick.

A pellet of qi, the size of a thumb, moved towards Fang Yuan so quickly that he actually was not able to dodge it.

This time, his real body was exposed.

Qi Zai let out a breath.

Immediately, a thick and translucent rotating current of qi appeared around Ni Jian’s waist. The current of qi constantly revolved around his waist, and Ni Jian’s speed was multiplied a few times over.

“Hand over your life!” Ni Jian roared as he once again charged towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan frowned.

His whole body was covered in lion fur armor, the divine flick just now did not cause him any harm and only forced him to appear.

“A qi path Gu Immortal....” He thought to himself.

The history of qi path was older than even strength path, and its decline was also much more extreme than strength path.

Fang Yuan had not expected he would actually run into a rare qi path Gu Immortal in Southern Border.

No wonder he was chased and the truth of his massacre of Ni clan was exposed. In qi path, there naturally were secret methods passed down over countless years which Fang Yuan did not understand clearly.

“I only massacred Ni clan, what does it have to do with these two Gu Immortals? In my previous life’s memories, there were no Gu Immortal ancestors of Ni clan around.” Fang Yuan was puzzled.

“Ahhhhhhhh!” Ni Jian charged over once again.

Fang Yuan was starting to feel a slight headache.

He had already fought against a desolate beast mud monster, they did not have any fatal weakness.

Even using the rank seven flying sword Immortal Gu had little effect.

But this did not mean Fang Yuan had no way to deal with it.

He swayed lightly as he pounced forward, he raised his hands, which were covered in a layer of cold white frost.

Fang Yuan lightly struck Ni Jian’s body with his palms.

Ni Jian’s offensive was crude, while Fang Yuan’s movement was like a leaf swaying in the wind, nimble and graceful.

Ni Jian was quite lacking in battle experience, he was not able to even touch Fang Yuan’s clothes.

On the contrary, Fang Yuan’s moves were nimble and refined, his frosted palms continuously striking Ni Jian’s body.

Soon, Ni Jian was covered in a layer of white frost, his speed sharply reduced, moreover the translucent current of qi rotating around his waist had already been dissipated by Fang Yuan’s attacks.

Fang Yuan had Immortal Gu but they were all rank seven, he could not use them lightly.

So he used the mortal killer move, lion fur armor, to pass this hurdle.

And the surging clouds before as well as his current hands of frost were both superior mortal killer moves.

The former originated from Tai Bai Yun Sheng, while the latter was obtained from Xue Song Zi.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng primarily cultivated time path while cultivating cloud path as a secondary path, he would often spar with Fang Yuan, and Fang Yuan was thus able to grasp his mortal methods.

And before his rebirth, Fang Yuan had captured and searched Xue Song Zi’s soul.

Back then, Xue Song Zi’s soul had been tampered by Shadow Sect’s side, Fang Yuan could not get information about Shadow Sect (Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was, after all, the founder of soul path), however, Xue Song Zi’s own process of growth during life, his cultivation insights and other experiences of his were all probed out by Fang Yuan.

These were all used by Fang Yuan.

As for the Gu worms needed for the mortal killer moves, they were all taken from Lang Ya land spirit.

And when Fang Yuan massacred Ni clan, he had freely practiced with them against the desolate beast mud monster.

Qi Zai’s expression sank when he saw Ni Jian, with rank six battle strength, being toyed around by Fang Yuan, he again used his mortal killer move, divine flick, to send out countless pellets of qi.

These pellets of wi were extremely fast, Fang Yuan was only able to dodge a few before he could not dodge anymore, and had to use his lion fur armor to block them head on.

Lion fur armor had extremely strong defense, somewhat surpassing Qi Zai’s expectations.

He snorted as he changed his method, from afar, he made a cutting motion with his hand towards Fang Yuan’s direction.

Every time he made this movement, a blade of qi would instantly be formed.

Lion fur armor could only endure two slashes before Fang Yuan had to use other methods, a layer of black, oil-like sticky liquid appeared on the lion fur armor’s surface.

The power of the blades of qi immediately lowered when they struck the black oil, the sharpness was greatly reduced and when they impacted on the lion fur armor, the effect was reduced by sixty percent.

This black, oil-like defensive killer move was from Hei Cheng.

Fang Yuan had obtained this killer move when he searched Hei Cheng’s soul and was using it now.

Most of the killer moves he had obtained by soul searching had been trained countless times by their respective Gu Masters. Although they could not raise Fang Yuan’s attainment level, these cultivation insights could allow Fang Yuan to have shortcuts to their results.

Fang Yuan only needed to train with these mortal killer moves a little to use them with ease.

As Qi Zai saw this, he snorted, two gusts of fire qi puffed out of his nose.

The fire qi dispersed in the air, turning into an inferno that rushed towards Fang Yuan.

At the same time, Ni Jian was fighting with everything he had.

Fang Yuan continued to hit with his palms against the mudman.

At this time, the inferno was already right in front of him.

He laughed as he activated a cloud path killer move, immediately, nine rings of clouds appeared around him.

This was Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s defensive killer move — Nine Cloud Ring.

The inferno was completely blocked by the rings of clouds and absorbed. Four formerly white rings of clouds were dyed red.

Fang Yuan stretched out both hands and grabbed at the air.

Gusts of air gathered in the center of his palms and quickly formed into two black spheres.

Mortal killer move — Dark Vortex.

Fang Yuan flew forward, his hands continuously moving as spheres of dark vortexes were fired towards Qi Zai.

Qi He, who was beside Qi Zai, exclaimed in shock when she sensed the danger hidden within the dark vortexes.

Qi Zai counterattacked, using blades of qi, pellets of qi as well as the fire qi he snorted out of his nose.

Both sides went at each other, neither yielding even a step.

Qi He was getting dazed, unable to keep up with battle methods of Gu Immortals that were on display.

She had just ascended to an immortal, mortal battles were almost always carried out on the ground, it would never be like this where they flew up and down in a fast paced movement.

“I am almost certain he is genuinely a qi path Gu Immortal.” Fang Yuan observed while he fought, gathering intelligence.

The battle had lasted for so long, but Qi Zai was still sitting comfortably on the back of the qi grand lion.

Even when Fang Yuan’s dark vortexes and other killer moves bypassed his flurry of attacks and struck his body, they would be blocked easily by his condensed qi.

Qi Zai had the upper hand, but he was far from at ease in his mind.

“What is going on?”

“This guy... what path does he cultivate?”

The more Qi Zai battled, the more puzzled he was.

He was somewhat confused.

The mortal killer moves Fang Yuan used all had the signs of being amplified by dao marks.

But the killer moves already covered many paths like wind path, cloud path, dark path, strength path and other paths!

Qi Zai was really puzzled.

This was the first time he had encountered such a situation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1041: Scaring Himself

Fang Yuan’s situation was very weird, Qi Zai could not help but feel wary.

“What sort of dao marks does he have, why can he use the killer moves of different paths and receive an amplification effect, without any hindrances?”

Qi Zai seemed to be preparing while waiting patiently and at ease, but in fact, he was working hard at racking his brains.

“As far as I know, in history, only one person could do this... that was Reckless Savage Demon Venerable!”

There were a number of Demon Venerables in human history, among them was Reckless Savage, he was the founder of strength path and had also cultivated transformation path.

Historical records had stated that he could transform into countless things, and his dao marks could change at will.

For example, when Reckless Savage Demon Venerable turned into a lightning wolf, he would be able to use lightning path killer moves. When he became a swamp crab, he would be able to use earth path killer moves without feeling any disturbance and weakening from other dao marks.

Ordinary transformation path Gu Masters could only specialize in one kind of transformation. For example, in Northern Plains’ imperial court contest, Cheng Long and Cheng Hu could only transform into a dragon and tiger respectively.

As for transformation path Gu Immortals, for example, He Lang Zi, he could turn into three types of wolves, having different dao marks on him. But when he switched his dao marks, he had to wait for some time and use certain methods to get rid of the original dao marks and prevent the disturbance of dao marks of other paths.

This problem had troubled every single transformation path Gu Master and Gu Immortal in history.

Except one person.

That was Reckless Savage Demon Venerable.

He could transform at will without considering the interference between dao marks.

Unfortunately, after Reckless Savage Demon Venerable died, his method was not passed down, countless talented individuals had tried to learn his methods, but their results had been failure, obtaining nothing.

“Don’t tell me that this enemy here has inherited a crucial transformation path inheritance of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable?” Qi Zai thought of this and felt a fire of excitement burning in him.

Other than this explanation, he could not think of anything else.

“Of course, Gu Masters cultivate in various ways, there are countless numbers of people and methods, not all of them follow conventional wisdom.” Qi Zai squinted, he was still very calm.

Actually, his guess that Fang Yuan had obtained a true inheritance of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable was still an underestimation of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan could do this because he had the rank nine sovereign immortal fetus Gu that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable refined.

This Immortal Gu was not ordinary!

Not only was it the crucial thing needed for Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s revival, it was also his hope of surpassing all of the venerables in history.

In the past, after Spectral Soul Demon Venerable died, he was not resigned to that fate.

Thus, he built Shadow Sect and planned meticulously. During that time, he not only revised on the knowledge gained during his life, he even searched for countless inheritances all over the world. Among these inheritances, there were Gu Master inheritances of all kinds, they could give Spectral Soul Demon Venerable new inspiration and brand new directions. There were also Gu Immortal inheritances and even a number of the other venerables’ inheritances.

Shadow Sect could obtain one of Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s true inheritances, the most mysterious venerable in history, not to mention the other venerables.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable controlled Shadow Sect and set up Zombie Alliance over the five regions, after tens of thousands of years, he accumulated his foundation and researched, putting in immense effort and making huge sacrifices.

Eventually, he gathered all his knowledge and made use of the key aspects of it, creating the rank nine sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

One could say, this Immortal Gu was not just the materialization of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s soul path, it also showed his immense accumulation of the essence of other paths, it was an unparalleled treasure.

Even though heaven’s will used Fang Yuan as a tool, at the crucial moment, Fang Yuan, as an otherworldly demon, broke free of its manipulation, using sovereign immortal fetus Gu for himself.

Qi Zai felt suspicion, even though Fang Yuan had rank six aura, he did not dare to be careless.

He was probing Fang Yuan.

He was a rank seven Gu Immortal, even if he did not have any rank seven Immortal Gu, he had rank six Immortal Gu.

Earlier, the method of extracting the mud ball of grudge qi to create the mudman Ni Jian was an immortal method.

But he did not use Immortal Gu right now.

Immortal Gu were the trump cards of Gu Immortals, when used, they expended immortal essence!

Qi Zai only had a low grade blessed land, unless it was a crucial moment, he would not use Immortal Gu.

Of course, immortal essence was not the main reason, the most important reason was that once he used Immortal Gu, the information would be known by the enemy.

The number and specific types of Gu worms that a Gu Master owned were confidential secrets. Once intelligence was leaked, the Gu Master could be countered using specific means.

The same applied to Gu Immortals.

During an initial battle, without knowledge of the background of one another, Gu Immortals would try to probe each other first.

While Qi Zai was probing Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan was also probing him.

All sorts of mortal killer moves were used by Fang Yuan, together with his handsome appearance, Qi He’s attention was greatly captured.

Similar to Qi Zai, even though Fang Yuan had Immortal Gu, he could not use them casually.

Even though the rank seven sword path Immortal Gu were powerful, Fang Yuan only had rank six green grape immortal essence, this was inferior to that of the rank seven Gu Immortal Qi Zai.

If not for Fang Yuan joining Lang Ya Sect, he would not have enough immortal essence stones to replenish his immortal essence, he would lose this battle for sure.

Both sides fought continuously, attacking and defending at various times, the commotion was huge, Qi He watched unblinkingly, gasping in her mind.

Unavoidably, Qi Zai was gradually falling into disadvantage against Fang Yuan.

No matter how impressive mortal killer moves were, they did not have Immortal Gu in them. Thus, the amplification from Qi Zai’s dao marks was very limited, they could not exceed the level of effect from using an Immortal Gu.

In the long history of humanity, only one mortal killer move was publicly known to match Immortal Gu when activated.

That was the White Bone Chariot that Proud Bone Demon Lord Shen Jie Ao created.

This person was a rank eight demonic path Gu Immortal, he was proud for a good reason. In this particular achievement, none of the ten venerables could match him.

Even though Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables were invincible, they were not omnipotent.

Specialists tackled their own fields, in the past, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had asked Long Hair Ancestor to refine Gu for them.

In contrast, even though Fang Yuan’s dao mark accumulation was not as high as Qi Zai, he had a large number of methods and because the amplification towards mortal killer moves was limited, he could deal with his opponent.

Thus, gradually, Fang Yuan attacked more and defended less, gaining the initiative.

Qi Zai was fully aware of the battle situation in his mind. He frowned and began his counterattack.

Battlefield killer move — Qi Lockdown.

Immediately, the surrounding area was sealed, air was immobilized, forming a translucent temporary battlefield.

Fang Yuan smiled, he was not nervous.

This battlefield killer move was only mortal level, it had little threat towards Gu Immortals like him who had Immortal Gu.

Only if they were a rank six Gu Immortal without Immortal Gu would they feel like this was a huge threat.

And Fang Yuan already had this kind of battlefield killer move.

Immediately, he used a signature move of Xue Song Zi, battlefield killer move snow domain.

At once, qi lockdown was pushed aside, as coldness seeped into the surrounding air.

Qi He could not hold it in anymore, she gasped out loud.

In front of her eyes, the battlefield had been split into two, one was an icy domain, the other had motionless air.

Qi He’s perspective was still that of a mortal. This type of battlefield killer move, even though it was mortal level, was the trump card of every powerful mortal force. Unless it was an emergency, they would not use it normally, otherwise, they might get countered if enemies gained intelligence on it.

Just now, she witnessed two battlefield killer moves used in front of her, she felt that this trip was worth going on, she was satisfied with this eye-opening experience.

Seeing that Fang Yuan was still at ease, Qi Zai lost his patience, he took the lead to activate his Immortal Gu.

He was a vigilant person.

He did not use an immortal killer move, he only activated the Immortal Gu.

A rank six qi path Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan did not know what it was, Qi Zai was not stupid enough to use it while calling out the Immortal Gu’s name.

Once the Immortal Gu was activated, the entire battlefield changed drastically.

The qi lockdown battlefield dissipated, turning into fuel for the Immortal Gu. Snow domain could not resist it, a long rope of qi invaded it and pierced through.

This long rope of yin qi coiled around like a venomous jade snake, it was several meters long, assaulting Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan sighed, using his rank seven sword escape Immortal Gu.

Whoosh!

Immediately, he seemed to have turned into a sharp sword, piercing the air and flying away.

“So fast!” Qi He opened her mouth, extremely shocked. In the blink of an eye, Fang Yuan had flown almost beyond her vision.

It was a rank seven movement Immortal Gu after all, it had spectacular speed.

Qi Zai was shocked too.

He had estimated that Fang Yuan was a Gu Immortal specializing in snow path, wind path, or dark path, after all, the mortal killer moves that he used earlier were mostly from these three paths.

But when Fang Yuan used his Immortal Gu, it was sword path!

And it was a rank seven sword path Immortal Gu.

“What is this? He is not a transformation path Gu Immortal, but a sword path Gu Immortal?” Qi Zai felt like his brain was frying.

After probing for so long, he had thought that he found out some details about Fang Yuan.

But when he used his true methods, Fang Yuan actually displayed a rank seven sword path Immortal Gu!

And he flew so quickly!

“If this were in the past, I could only look on and sigh. It is a pity that you are unlucky, not long ago, I completed the immortal killer move that I had been designing for three years.”

Qi Zai snickered, whistling as he opened his mouth.

At the same time, aura burst out of his body, the aura surrounded him and Qi He, and penetrated into the qi grand lion’s body.

The qi grand lion cried out in pain, its eyes were red as it charged towards Fang Yuan.

Under the effect of Qi Zai’s immortal killer move, the qi grand lion’s speed was astonishing!

In less than a few minutes, the qi grand lion carried the two Qi clan Gu Immortals and chased up to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan saw this and felt a headache.

Qi Zai used his Immortal Gu again, summoning the long rope of yin qi.

Very evidently, it was the same Immortal Gu as before.

The yin qi rope coiled and flew towards Fang Yuan, rapidly getting closer.

“He did not use any other immortal killer moves, just a rank six Immortal Gu, is it because his movement killer move has a lot of Gu worms in it, he has to focus his attention on it?”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined.

During the moment of crisis, his mind was still calm. He thought about it as he displayed his deep foundation in fighting.

When activating Immortal Gu, the aura of the Gu worm would leak, but when activating immortal killer moves, the leaked aura would be much more complex.

Thus, Qi Zai easily noticed that Fang Yuan’s Immortal Gu was rank seven and sword path.

And Fang Yuan could also easily notice that Qi Zai was using just the rank six Immortal Gu alone.

Of course, this was a typical case, it did not hold true all the time.

Some special methods could conceal the aura of Immortal Gu and mislead the enemy.

Flying sword Gu!

Fang Yuan pointed as his Immortal Gu shot out.

Flying sword Immortal Gu was peerlessly sharp, the yin qi rope was cut into pieces easily.

Qi Zai’s heart shook, he was shocked: “Why does he have another rank seven sword path Immortal Gu?”

“Is he really a sword path Gu Immortal?”

“Then, why did he use all those mortal killer moves?”

“Why are both his Immortal Gu rank seven?”

“Don’t tell me, he is a rank seven Gu Immortal, and he is purposely concealing his aura to be rank six so that he can pretend to be weak when preying on others?”

Qi Zai could not guess Fang Yuan’s actual situation.

He had a vigilant nature and a tendency to think deeply, the more he analyzed, the more shocked he got, he was scaring himself!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1042: If Heaven’s Will Finds Trouble, Cut Down the Trouble!

Qi Zai’s mind was churning with thoughts, his expression turned grim.

Fang Yuan was also frowning deeply.

He had used flying sword Gu earlier to destroy the yin qi, but it had recovered in an instant.

The yin qi rope flew towards Fang Yuan again. It was not going to stop until it coiled around Fang Yuan.

“Flying sword Gu might be strong, but against an obstacle that can disperse and gather at will, it cannot take it down.” Fang Yuan had a realization.

Earlier, when dealing with the desolate beast mud monster, he had such a feeling as well.

Now, facing a qi path Gu Immortal, this feeling emerged in him again.

Of course, this was because he lacked a relevant killer move.

If he had a sword path killer move that could help flying sword Gu to scatter its attacks instead of focusing on one point, his problems would be resolved.

Actually, Fang Yuan had anticipated this situation.

Thus, he used sword escape Immortal Gu and tried to retreat.

But he did not think that the other party would have a movement killer move to chase him.

Fang Yuan fell into disadvantage.

Earlier, during the probing, he had the upper hand because of his countless mortal killer moves.

But now, after using Immortal Gu and immortal killer moves, they were fighting for real, he got into a disadvantage very quickly.

The other party was a rank seven Gu Immortal, his cultivation level was higher than Fang Yuan.

It was to be expected that Fang Yuan could not beat him.

In fact, it was already not easy to get to this point.

“I only have two Immortal Gu, while he is rank seven with higher cultivation level than me and has more methods. If he has an immortal battlefield killer move, even if I have flying sword Immortal Gu, I would not be able to break out. I cannot stay here!”

Sword Escape!

Fang Yuan activated this rank seven Immortal Gu again, flying into the sky.

“Heh, he is very vigilant.” Qi Zai snorted coldly.

His fighting style was to drain his opponent’s resources and draw out the battle.

When the yin qi rope breaks, the aura would disperse and as time passes, the entire battlefield would favor qi path more.

By then, even if Qi Zai did not use Immortal Gu, his strength would be higher, and he would be able to spend less immortal essence, it was a very good strategy that benefited him.

But Fang Yuan had already decided to fly away and escape after a short battle.

Every round was basically at a new location.

Qi Zai could not accumulate his advantage.

Gu Masters had limited movement speed, they were often restricted to fighting at a particular place. But Gu Immortals could travel far, moving thousands of li easily, they were different from Gu Masters. Thus, it was easy to defeat a Gu Immortal, but very difficult to kill them, unless one had an immortal level battlefield killer move to trap them.

However, these types of battlefield killer moves took time to set up. When Gu Immortals fought, they could only set up the arrangements in secret if they were in front of the enemy, they had to conceal their actions for the trap to succeed.

Or like the time when Fang Yuan dealt with Hei Cheng, he set up the battlefield killer move in advance, luring his enemy into it.

Even though Fang Yuan escaped, Qi Zai had an immortal killer move to chase him.

Fang Yuan had slaughtered Ni clan village, this was a place which Qi Zai was in charge of, if he let Fang Yuan go, he would have to be held to account for this.

Most importantly, Qi Zai was afraid that Fang Yuan was a descendant of the other clans.

In this thousand year bet, Qi clan was already going to win, at this juncture, he could not allow unexpected mishaps to occur.

Thus, Qi Zai had to investigate this matter.

He could not let it go.

After Fang Yuan escaped, he realized that Qi Zai had chased after him.

“How deep is his enmity? Why is he chasing me like this?” Fang Yuan was perplexed.

In his previous life’s memories, Ni clan did not have any Gu Immortals, this was why Fang Yuan acted so unrestrained. To think that he actually attracted the attack of Gu Immortals, and there were two of them, one rank six and one rank seven.

Fang Yuan could not guess Qi Zai’s motives. Because he knew nothing about the bet between the Five Xiangs.

He could only retreat while fighting.

Each time, he would use flying sword Immortal Gu to engage in a short fight before using sword escape Immortal Gu to retreat.

After many rounds of battle, Fang Yuan saw some details gradually.

“The rank six Gu Immortal beside him is behaving strangely, she is likely a newly ascended Gu Immortal. She calls the rank seven Gu Immortal great-uncle, the two of them should be blood related family members.”

“This rank six Gu Immortal is not a threat. If she could attack, she would have done so long ago to disrupt me. But in this entire battle, she has been sitting back and doing nothing.”

Fang Yuan obtained much information, while Qi Zai also learned a lot about Fang Yuan.

“This odd fellow is really a rank six Gu Immortal. Hehe, he is actually using two rank seven Immortal Gu...”

Qi Zai did not know what to say about this situation.

Normally speaking, most rank six Gu Immortals did not even have one rank six Immortal Gu, they desired them greatly.

This person did not have any rank six Immortal Gu, but he took a big leap and had two rank seven Immortal Gu instead.

“But this step is too huge, I want to see how much green grape immortal essence you have to use these rank seven sword path Gu!”

Qi Zai snickered internally.

He was skilled in battles of attrition, with his higher cultivation level, and Fang Yuan using rank seven Immortal Gu, he was not in a rush.

Fang Yuan fought as he retreated, he followed after him closely, he was scheming and hard to shrug off.

Fang Yuan thought to himself: “Since the start of the battle, I have already used up tens of thousands of immortal essence stones. These were all obtained from Lang Ya land spirit, I am wasting my sect contribution points.”

“This person has a good plan, he wants to waste my immortal essence, I know his scheme but can do nothing about it.”

If he had rank six Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan would be able to fight in a sustained battle, he would not end up in this state.

With his rank six cultivation level, it was very difficult to make use of rank seven Immortal Gu.

Qi Zai could not catch Fang Yuan, while Fang Yuan could not leave him in the dust, the situation was in a deadlock.

After countless rounds of fighting, in order to maintain the situation, Fang Yuan had to continue to request for immortal essence stones from Lang Ya land spirit.

His Lang Ya Sect contribution points were nearing zero.

Qi Zai was shocked, it was beyond his expectations that Fang Yuan could hold on until now.

“This rank six Gu Immortal is very strange. He definitely has a huge secret, if I can obtain it, this might be the biggest fortuitous encounter in my life!”

Fighting to this extent, Qi Zai’s gaze was getting more heated, seeing Fang Yuan’s cold gaze, he felt like he was looking at a mobile treasure chest.

But at the next moment, Qi Zai’s gaze froze, he showed shock on his face.

He thought: “Isn’t the mountain range ahead the Five Regional Mountain Range? Oh no, so this is his plan. I cannot let him escape into the mountain range.”

This Five Regional Mountain Range was not simple.

It was created by a rank eight Gu Immortal from Southern Border, his name was Tao Zhu, he was known as the Restriction Expert.

This person cultivated restriction path, it was a branch of rule path, just like how emotion path was a branch of wisdom path.

People called him Restriction Expert, it was because he was the expert of restriction path in this generation, it showed how incredible his attainment was.

He had deep research regarding the five regional walls, he attempted to find a way to allow Gu Immortals to travel through the regional walls easily.

This Five Regional Mountain Range was created due to his research.

Unfortunately, after he died, there had been no progress. But this Five Regional Mountain Range was left behind and became a special area in Southern Border.

Fang Yuan was restricted by Qi Zai, he was trying to find a way to escape.

He was very familiar with Southern Border, the Five Regional Mountain Range was his hope.

Qi Zai had been thinking of draining his immortal essence, this was in line with Fang Yuan’s objective, he was able to use sword escape Immortal Gu and after some hurdles, he flew for hundreds of thousands of li, arriving at this place.

Qi Zai had been in seclusion for some time, and because Fang Yuan was drawing his attention, he did not think of this area.

He quickly took action, trying to obstruct Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan had two rank seven Immortal Gu, he was prepared, how could any obstruction work?

Qi Zai watched grimly as Fang Yuan entered the Five Regional Mountain Range.

He hesitated before making up his mind, saying to Qi He: “Sit here, I will let the qi grand lion protect you, you will be safe. After I kill him, I will come and find you.”

“Great-uncle, be careful!” Qi He said hurriedly.

Qi Zai nodded, air currents burst out behind him as he chased after Fang Yuan, entering the Five Regional Mountain Range.

Once he entered the mountain range, he felt a strong repulsive force directed at pushing him out.

As it turned out, this Five Regional Mountain Range was created by Restriction Expert, who replicated the regional walls. Once Gu Immortals enter, it would be like they were passing the regional walls.

Fang Yuan chose the part of this mountain range which was shining with golden light, it was a replica of Central Continent’s saint regional wall.

Qi Zai was a Southern Border Gu Immortal, when he entered, he was sure to face repulsion.

He knew Fang Yuan’s motive: “This crafty person came here, and because of his rank six cultivation level, he has the advantage. My rank seven cultivation level is facing more pressure than him in here.”

“No! This person is so suspicious, this concerns our Qi clan’s ancient bet, I need to kill him!”

Qi Zai was firm and determined, he did not waver in the face of difficulty.

Both parties stopped flying, they started to travel by foot on the Five Regional Mountain Range.

While another chase occurred here, in Central Continent’s Earth Abyss, a different battle had ended.

Ying Wu Xie, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and Hei Lou Lan were surrounding the ancient soul beast’s corpse, searching for the soul core inside the soul beast’s body.

Soul beasts nurtured a soul core in their bodies, it was the size of an egg, but had a large number of soul path dao marks in it, it was a top tier refinement material. Other than this, the soul beast’s corpse would disappear after some time, it had no use.

“Where is it?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng searched for the soul core.

Hei Lou Lan said, praising with certain intent: “The Gu formation set here is truly amazing. In this short amount of time, even though this soul beast had the soul howl Immortal Gu, it still died.”

Ying Wu Xie did not speak, he was frowning.

“This was caused by heaven’s will, it lured this ancient soul beast here. Just now, even though I killed it, I had to use the Gu formation.”

“The more I use the Gu formation, the higher the chances of getting exposed. After all, Central Continent’s Heavenly Court will try its best to find this place.”

At this time, Shi Nu transmitted to him secretly.

Ying Wu Xie analyzed to himself: “Hmm? Not long ago, Lang Ya land spirit used treasure yellow heaven to send dark limit Immortal Gu to Fang Yuan?”

“This Immortal Gu belonged to Shadow Sect, but it had perished with Jiang Yu. After that, because Lang Ya land spirit created Lang Ya Sect, he refined dark limit Immortal Gu so that the sect members could have an easier time moving around in the future.”

“This Gu can conceal aura and hide from heaven’s will. Hehe, indeed. Since I am targeted by heaven’s will, Fang Yuan’s situation is worse, he might be facing the assault of Gu Immortals now.”

Ying Wu Xie made a casual guess, but he was actually on the mark.

However, Qi Zai did not succeed in killing Fang Yuan.

Both parties fought in the Five Regional Mountain Range, Fang Yuan was heavily injured, but because he had lower cultivation level, he could move more freely and escaped from Qi Zai eventually.

Qi Zai saw that Fang Yuan had escaped, noting that his own condition was bad, he had no choice but to return.

Once he left the Five Regional Mountain Range, he saw Qi He.

“Great-uncle, you are finally back, I was so worried about you.” Qi Zai was prancing on the spot, seeing Qi Zai, she quickly went up to him.

Qi Zai felt warmth in his heart, but his expression turned grim, he scolded: “Foolish! I told you to stay with the qi grand lion, why did you not listen to me, instead coming here? This is a dangerous place!”

Qi Zai’s movement paused, she slowly walked to Qi Zai, lowering her head, apologizing: “I.. I am sorry...”

Qi Zai grunted: “That person is already heavily injured by me, he was lucky and escaped. But if I see him again, I will definitely not... urgh!”

Qi Zai cried out.

He stared with wide opened eyes at Qi He.

A dark flying sword had pierced into his forehead, the tip of the sword was pointing out from the back of his head.

Qi He turned back to Fang Yuan’s appearance, he smiled lightly at Qi Zai.

Shock, regret, fear, all sorts of emotions filled Qi Zai’s mind.

But it was too late.

Bam.

He fell to the ground, creating a soft sound in the process.

He was dead.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1043: Surprising Discovery

In the Five Regional Mountain Range, five different colored lights filled the skies all year round.

The entire mountain range was divided into five areas based on the five different colored lights.

The dark purple light was the imitation of Southern Border’s miasma regional wall, the green mountain range was the imitation of Northern Plains’ licorice regional wall. The red portion was Western Desert’s raging flame regional wall. The deep blue portion was Eastern Sea’s blue water regional wall.

As for the white-gold mountain range, it was Central Continent’s saint regional wall.

The rank seven qi path Gu Immortal, Qi Zai, had died in the white-gold region in the Five Regional Mountain Range.

Fang Yuan let out a breath, he pulled out the flying sword Immortal Gu that was lodged in his opponent’s forehead.

Flying sword Immortal Gu was originally shining in silvery light, but now it was dim and did not have an aura emitting from it.

This was because of the immortal killer move dark assassination!

This move provided extraordinary concealment, once used, none of the aura of the rank seven immortal killer move would leak, others could not detect it.

Once used, the sword attacked quickly, at a speed which one could not react to.

The only weakness was that the attack range was small, the user had to be less than a hundred steps away.

This was truly a short distance.

Ordinary immortal killer moves could be used across huge distances, they were incomparable.

Thus, Fang Yuan had to take a risk, using familiar face to disguise his identity and get close to Qi Zai. The closer he got, the higher his chance of killing Qi Zai.

For this, Fang Yuan had to fight with Qi Zai and purposely get injured, so as to reduce Qi Zai’s suspicions.

Qi Zai dying from this move was not unreasonable.

Because Fang Yuan deceived him using the infamous familiar face.

Even though it was not the original version, the core was still rank eight attitude Gu, when used, this Gu could influence the minds of others, allowing them to feel Fang Yuan’s ‘attitude’, so as to lower their suspicions.

Even though Qi Zai was vigilant and it was hard to find vulnerabilities against him, with Fang Yuan’s scheming personality, he saw a weakness in Qi He instead during the battle.

Using Qi He, Fang Yuan took a risk and killed a rank seven expert with his rank six cultivation level.

This was an incredible result, if one was an ordinary rank six Gu Immortal, they might wish for the whole world to know about it.

But Fang Yuan only sighed in relief now, he did not show any expression of pride.

After rebirth, he had gone through a lot, he witnessed Spectral Soul undergoing the myriad tribulations, killing a rank seven Gu Immortal was already a small matter from his perspective.

“If you did not pursue me to this extent, I would not have taken the risk to kill you. Alright, let me see why you were so insistent on chasing me.”

Fang Yuan grabbed at the air as he pulled out Qi Zai’s soul from his corpse.

Qi Zai cultivated qi path, his soul was just an ordinary Gu Immortal soul, it was not outstanding.

After dying, he was not like those from Shadow Sect, even though his soul was angry and unwilling, struggling intensely, he could do nothing against Fang Yuan’s actions.

Fang Yuan first inspected and ensured that this soul had no problems before stuffing him into the nine-five sovereign immortal aperture.

After entering the immortal aperture, large numbers of soul path Gu worms flew towards Qi Zai’s soul.

Soul search!

While Fang Yuan searched the soul, he activated familiar face and turned into Qi Zai’s appearance.

He did not forget that the rank six Gu Immortal Qi He was still outside.

Killing her would be much easier than killing Qi Zai, but to make this easier and safer, Fang Yuan decided to use the same method to assassinate Qi He as well.

His familiar face was not the original version, without change form Immortal Gu, he could only use over a thousand mortal Gu to replace it.

Thus, transforming his appearance was not instantaneous, he had to spend some time.

After he turned into Qi Zai’s appearance, he stored Qi Zai’s corpse and flew out of the Five Regional Mountain Range.

In the end, when he found Qi He, she was already dead.

What killed Qi He was none other than the desolate beast qi grand lion she was sitting on.

This qi grand lion was enslaved by Qi Zai originally. Once he died, the qi grand lion regained its freedom.

The qi grand lion was forced by Qi Zai to travel this much, it was already hungry.

If Qi He cultivated any other path, she might have survived, but she was a qi path Gu Immortal with a number of qi path dao marks, she was a delicacy to the qi grand lion.

Thus, as the qi grand lion was hungry, it attacked her after the control over it was gone.

Qi He was a newly advanced Gu Immortal, how could she match the qi grand lion, after a bit of resistance, she was killed by the qi grand lion and eaten by it.

It was pitiful, she cultivated her entire life and fortunately became an immortal, but the moment she started witnessing the glory of the Gu Immortal world, before she started her journey, she ended up in the desolate beast’s mouth.

Fang Yuan chased after the qi grand lion, using flying sword Immortal Gu and piercing its head in a few moves.

Flying sword Immortal Gu, which was shining in silvery light, rampaged inside the qi grand lion’s brain. The qi grand lion fell from the sky in pain, it grimaced and cried out painfully, eventually dying after its struggles ceased.

Fang Yuan felt glad when he saw this result.

This was the true power of the rank seven flying sword Immortal Gu!

Against Gu Immortals or the qi grand lion, once flying sword Immortal Gu dealt a critical strike through piercing, it could deal huge damage.

This was unlike the desolate beast mud monster which did not have any weaknesses in its body, Fang Yuan had a vexing time fighting it.

Other than feeling glad, Fang Yuan also felt a loss in wealth.

This rank seven Immortal Gu used too much immortal essence, after killing the qi grand lion, Fang Yuan's expenditure rose again.

He could slowly kill it without using Immortal Gu and only using mortal killer moves.

But it would take far too long.

To avoid more trouble, Fang Yuan had to deal with it quickly.

After killing the qi grand lion, Fang Yuan cut open its stomach and took out Qi He's minced corpse.

He checked carefully, he wanted to find the crucial area near her belly, it was the place where the immortal aperture was at in the Gu Immortal's body.

Qi He's aged body was already chewed up by the qi grand lion, after ending up in its stomach, half of the body was already dissolved.

Fang Yuan looked around for a long time before his gaze flashed, he picked out a piece of flesh.

Similar to Qi Zai's corpse, Fang Yuan placed it into his immortal aperture.

As had been mentioned before, after killing a Gu Immortal, there were two ways to benefit from it. One was to place the immortal aperture down in the five regions, where they would form a blessed land or grotto-heaven, before attacking it and obtaining the resources inside. The other way was to place the immortal aperture into one's own immortal aperture, making the immortal aperture self-detonate, the dao marks inside would be left behind for the victor.

Fang Yuan was using the second method.

"After this battle, the qi path dao marks in me should increase drastically. From now on, when I use qi path Gu worms or killer moves, the amplification effect would exceed my other paths. It is a pity that I am not skilled in qi path, my qi path attainment level is only at ordinary level. But my immortal aperture will benefit, the environment will change slowly, it would help me when I grow resources that are related to qi path."

Fang Yuan flew into the air, concealing his traces as he flew among the clouds, thinking over his gains.

Ignoring Immortal Gu.

Qi Zai's soul was a huge asset, it had great value waiting to be excavated.

As for how many qi path dao marks he would get, Fang Yuan could not estimate it. But he knew that no matter how many qi path dao marks he obtained, it could not match his other benefit!

He only discovered this benefit of his new body just now, but it exceeded Fang Yuan's expectations, other than feeling surprise and joy, he also felt doubts and anticipation.

When he entered the Five Regional Mountain Range, he had a shocking discovery.

His body was unaffected by the Five Regional Mountain Range!

According to common sense, Fang Yuan was a Southern Border Gu Immortal, his body had the aura of Southern Border, no matter what other area relating to a particular region he entered in the Five Regional Mountain Range, he would be affected by it.

But after Fang Yuan went in, he could move freely with no obstructions.

After realizing this, Fang Yuan was puzzled, but it soon turned into joy, he had a guess in his mind: “This Five Regional Mountain Range was created by Restriction Expert Tao Zhu, who imitated the regional walls, if I can travel freely here, does that mean I can also pass the regional walls freely?”

After that, he thought about the pursuers behind him, he pretended to travel with much difficulty, like he was heavily obstructed.

Now, after killing Qi Zai, and settling the matter of the qi grand lion and Qi He, he had time to think, and realized that this was very likely.

“My new body is not an ordinary body, it has no parents, no origins from other people. It is formed from the rank nine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, if it is treated as an Immortal Gu, that would explain why I can freely travel across the regional walls.”

The five regional walls targeted Gu Immortals, not Immortal Gu.

In the past, when Feng Jiu Ge entered Northern Plains to investigate the truth of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he sent a rank six information path Immortal Gu to his family, it could travel across Northern Plains and Central Continent, going through two regional walls without obstruction.

“If this guess is correct, why would I need to rush and refine Fixed Immortal Travel?” Fang Yuan flew as he thought, he got closer to a regional wall.

He wanted to verify this guess as quickly as possible.

From his perspective, he could not confirm if Fixed Immortal Travel was destroyed. It was only very likely because the special will had set Fixed Immortal Travel as the first one to be destroyed.

When Fang Yuan asked the current generation Ni Xiang about it, his focus was to confirm Ying Wu Xie’s current situation.

Secondly, he wanted to refine Fixed Immortal Travel to pass the regional walls and return to Lang Ya blessed land.

Why?

Firstly, Lang Ya blessed land was safe, it survived seven waves of attacks in the five hundred years of his previous life, it was finally taken down by Heavenly Court after Feng Jiu Ge died. Secondly, a large number of his resources were inside Lang Ya blessed land, he could develop in peace there. The cost of using treasure yellow heaven was simply too high.

Lastly, a crucial immortal material, the light of the immemorial era, was needed to refine Fixed Immortal Travel. Even though Fang Yuan had some clues, he knew that hope was small. His biggest worries now were his calamities and tribulations. He was less than two months away from the first earthly calamity.

Fortune and disaster came together, his blessed land had such a deep foundation, its aptitude far surpassed the ten extreme physiques, the power of his calamities and tribulations would surely be extraordinary.

“If my guess is correct, I should give up on Fixed Immortal Travel! I should rush to Lang Ya blessed land and prepare amply for the calamities and tribulations! In just less than two months...”

He was no longer an immortal zombie, his immortal aperture was out of this world, the calamities and tribulations were like swords resting above his neck.

Fang Yuan looked at the vast clouds in the sky as he felt a strong sense of urgency.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1044: Ancient Cloud Beasts, Disaster Follows After Great Fortune?

Central Continent, Earth Abyss.

Ying Wu Xie looked at the rubble in front of him with an ugly expression.

Behind him were Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and the rank seven variant human Gu Immortal Shi Nu.

The battle strength of four Gu Immortals!

Of course, among them Shi Nu was the strongest, followed by Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng. Ying Wu Xie was still an immortal zombie with some borrowed Immortal Gu, he had not subdued Fang Yuan’s remaining Immortal Gu yet, his battle strength was the lowest.

Hei Lou Lan was forced by Ying Wu Xie to surrender, she was free from the alliance agreement with Fang Yuan, and was now Ying Wu Xie’s lackey.

Shi Nu was completely loyal to Ying Wu Xie.

And Tai Bai Yun Sheng, who did not know the truth, was not suspicious of Ying Wu Xie. Hei Lou Lan and Ying Wu Xie had worked together to deceive him, he was still in the dark.

“What is going on?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked ahead and asked in puzzlement.

Shi Nu replied heavily: “Earth Abyss is not a tranquil environment, tremors will appear at times within the earth. The tremors might cause a great cave-in, like what is happening here.”

A strange light flashed across Hei Lou Lan’s eyes: “This cave-in is simply too terrifying.”

Shi Nu nodded: “Yes, each cave-in in Earth Abyss would be gigantic, endless numbers of life forms would perish. The aftermath would be a huge amount of rubble stacked together, together with the grudge and death energy of the dead life forms and their blood, countless desolate level blood beasts, bone beasts, or even blood path and earth path wild Immortal Gu would be created. Master, what do we do now?”

Ying Wu Xie looked ahead, after some time, he let out a breath.

He was gloomy internally, thinking: “This route is the safest way to leave Earth Abyss, previously created by Shadow Sect. I had just wanted to leave Earth

Abyss, and at this timing, a cave-in happened. Coincidentally, it happened here, obstructing our path. Hehe.”

Ying Wu Xie mentally sneered.

“This is the act of heaven’s will!”

“My main body defied heaven to refine Gu, resisting heaven’s will, causing heaven’s will to be expended greatly. But now it seems, heaven’s will has already mostly recovered.”

“I still have Spring Autumn Cicada with me, it has a lot of heaven’s will in it. Thus, I am like a torch in the darkness from heaven’s will’s perspective!”

“If I did not have investigative methods and did not slow down on purpose, I would be trapped inside the cave-in. Or if I was greedy in regards to the wild Immortal Gu here and refused to leave, I might be discovered by the Gu Immortals who came to investigate. Perhaps when I used the Gu formation earlier, the commotion was already detected by Heavenly Court, they have already started searching.”

Ying Wu Xie had obtained the guidance of his main body’s will in the Red Lotus Demon Venerable true inheritance, he had a deep understanding of heaven’s will.

Heaven’s will had its limits, it would be expended as well. But because its foundation was the world of the five regions, heaven’s will could not be destroyed entirely, it could recover at a rapid speed.

Regarding heaven’s will, Fang Yuan was still kept in the dark, he was unaware and his knowledge could not compare with Ying Wu Xie.

“Heaven’s will is so troublesome, a large portion of the reason is due to that bitch Star Constellation!”

“My current body is ordinary, I need to refine Fixed Immortal Travel to travel over the five regions. By gathering the remnant forces of Shadow Sect, I can accumulate enough strength to attempt to save my main body.”

Thinking of this, Ying Wu Xie thought of Fang Yuan again.

Intense hatred rose inside him!

“Back then, when we designed the recipe of sovereign immortal fetus Gu, my main body thought about the five regional walls. Thus, Fang Yuan can not only pass the five regional walls now, he can freely change his aura to become a Gu Immortal from any of the five regions!”

“However... don’t think about having an easy time. Even though you are a complete otherworldly demon, and heaven’s will cannot influence your thoughts, it can influence others and create situations to eliminate you.”

“Also, every tribulation that you undergo is the best chance for heaven’s will to eradicate you.”

“I hope you can survive them all until I find the opportunity to eliminate you!”

Even though Ying Wu Xie hated Fang Yuan, the urgent matter at hand was to save his main body’s remnant soul.

Right now, his main body’s remnant soul was trapped in the dream realm.

As everyone knew, when the soul was in the dream realm, they would slowly worn down by the dream realm. Thus, Ying Wu Xie was pressed for time greatly now.

Compared to saving his main body, Fang Yuan was a minor matter.

Thus, the priority of Ying Wu Xie and the others was to refine Fixed Immortal Travel and gather their remaining forces, to return to Southern Border and break through the encirclement of the Southern Border Gu Immortals around the giant dream realm, to save Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Southern Border.

Sword escape Immortal Gu activated!

Swoosh.

Fang Yuan’s body was like a sword, sharp and cutting through the sky, forming a long white cloudy line behind him.

Using sword escape Immortal Gu alone would not create this white cloudy line behind him.

The problem was, Fang Yuan’s injuries were very severe now.

His injuries were so deep bones could be seen, cloud path dao marks were gathered in them, spilling out white clouds constantly.

Fang Yuan’s expression was pale, he was frowning deeply.

Behind him, about ten li away, a large group of ancient cloud beasts were chasing after him.

What caused Fang Yuan’s injuries were these ancient cloud beasts.

Even though Fang Yuan had the rank seven flying sword Immortal Gu, against cloud beasts which were similar to mud monsters, without a fixed body structure, they could not be dealt with.

“According to legend, Bo Qing created the immortal killer move myriad sword tribulation in the past, using flying sword Immortal Gu as the core to create ten thousand swords that shoot down like rain. After I return to Lang Ya blessed land, I must find immortal killer moves like this, I cannot have this weakness!” Such thoughts had appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind multiple times.

As it turned out, after Fang Yuan found out a secret of his new body, he had a new idea, abandoning his earlier plan and wanting to pass the regional walls to get back to Lang Ya blessed land.

But not long after that, he unexpectedly entered the attacking range of a group of ancient cloud beasts.

Cloud beasts were extremely rare, not just in Southern Border, but also the other four regions. It was no exaggeration to say that they were nearly ‘extinct’.

But Fang Yuan encountered a group of them, there were even ancient cloud beasts among them which had the battle strength of rank seven Gu Immortals.

When ancient cloud beasts were stationary, they were like clouds, very hard to detect.

Even though Fang Yuan was using investigative methods, he did not have investigative Immortal Gu, he only had mortal killer moves. Thus, he went into the territory of ancient cloud beasts.

After an intense battle, he managed to escape, but the ancient cloud beasts were unwilling to let him go, they chased after him.

In his vision, a trace of purple-black color could be seen from behind a mountain range.

Southern Border’s miasma regional wall was already within sight!

Fang Yuan was overjoyed.

His speed slowed drastically.

He had stopped using sword escape Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu was too expensive to use. Right now, Fang Yuan had already expended all of his Lang Ya Sect contribution points.

To save costs, Fang Yuan could only use sword escape Immortal Gu at certain times to maintain a safe distance from the cloud beasts.

Without sword escape Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan used mortal killer moves.

As a matter of fact, the speed of movement from them could not compare to the ancient cloud beasts.

A moment later, the cloud beasts were already very close to Fang Yuan, less than one li away.

Seeing that the cloud beasts were near, Fang Yuan had no choice but to use sword escape Immortal Gu again.

Whoosh!

His speed rose again, he shrugged off the ancient cloud beast group.

The purple-black miasma regional wall covered half of his vision.

Finally, when Fang Yuan got to the Southern Border regional wall, he did not hesitate, entering it immediately.

Zero obstruction!

It was as if the miasma regional wall in front of him was an illusion.

Fang Yuan was overjoyed, he clenched his fists: “As expected! I was right, this sovereign immortal fetus Gu is truly mystical! From now on, even without Fixed Immortal Travel, I can travel freely over the five regions.”

Of course, Fang Yuan was not only considering this.

“This can also help me fight. The battle with Qi Zai earlier is a prime example. From now on, I can lure Gu Immortals into the regional walls before killing them!”

But his excitement only lasted for a short moment.

Soon, he frowned again.

Because he realized that the ancient cloud beasts behind him also went through the regional walls, with no signs of stopping the chase against him.

His guess was confirmed, Fang Yuan sighed to himself: “I knew it, I am actually so unlucky!”

“Cloud beasts are nearly extinct in Southern Border, even if they exist, they would only be a group of one or two desolate level cloud beasts. Groups of ancient cloud beasts like this only exist in white heaven and black heaven.”

“Seeing how white these ancient cloud beasts are, they must have flown down from white heaven to breed their next generation.”

Actually, cloud beasts were a special type of life form from the immemorial nine heavens. The cloud beasts in the five regions were also all from the immemorial nine heavens.

Cloud beasts had a trait.

Once in a while, they would fly down from the immemorial nine heavens, landing in the five regions and storing their cloud essence in the clouds in the sky.

The clouds that were storing cloud essence would not dissipate unless there was a strong external force.

Hundreds of years later, these clouds would turn into cloud beasts.

The infant cloud beasts were all desolate level each. Once they were alive, they would follow their instincts and fly towards the sky.

Passing the heavenly wind qi wall, they would return to their origins — the immemorial nine heavens.

During this process, the cloud beasts would be obstructed by the heavenly wind qi wall, and would be attacked by fierce beasts, as well as all sorts of natural phenomena causing danger. A very small number of them actually made it back to the immemorial nine heavens.

“I was so unlucky to actually encounter a cloud beast group after they bred, this luck is truly...” Fang Yuan was speechless.

“Logically speaking, I have already connected luck to many lucky people, even if my body and soul are split into two portions, my luck shouldn’t be this bad. Don’t tell me, to obtain sovereign immortal fetus Gu, I expended a huge amount of luck, in this way, disaster follows after great fortune?

Fang Yuan flew within the miasma regional wall as a group of ancient cloud beasts followed behind him.

Fang Yuan had crashed into the place where the ancient cloud beasts stored their cloud essence, to take revenge for their offspring, the ancient cloud beasts wanted to eliminate Fang Yuan, they would not let him go.

As long as Fang Yuan was still injured, the cloud beasts would pursue him.

The problem was, these ancient cloud beasts could also move freely within the five regional walls!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1045: Fortuitous Encounter or Trouble?

Normally speaking, it was difficult for desolate beasts of the five regions to pass the regional walls and move to another region.

These desolate beasts, ancient desolate beast and immemorial desolate beasts could match the respective levels of Gu Immortals, they involved the essence of their regions and as such, it was very difficult for them to leave the domain of the region they had been raised and grown in.

To them, the regional walls were like shackles.

Comparatively, ordinary wild beasts, beast kings or mutated beasts were much more free and could move through regional walls.

This group of ancient cloud beasts that were chasing Fang Yuan, however, were not raised by Southern Border, but originated from white heaven of the immemorial nine heavens.

The regional walls of the five regions had no relationship with them and did not restrict or reject them.

Perhaps it was because no matter which layer of the immemorial nine heavens it was, they all covered the whole five regions.

This characteristic was already widely known.

Previously, when Spectral Soul Demon Venerable went against heaven’s will to refine Gu, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were able to reach Southern Border so quickly because they had used Heaven Overseeing Tower to travel through white heaven.

Also, Fang Yuan’s stargate Gu could attract the starlight of black heaven to travel over the five regions.

Both, in essence, were similar to this group of ancient cloud beasts, they all used this special characteristic of the immemorial nine heavens.

Fang Yuan was rapidly moving through the regional wall.

The group of ancient cloud beasts were chasing closely behind him, Fang Yuan could do nothing but let them follow.

These cloud beasts were stubbornly fixed upon Fang Yuan, not willing to rest until they reached their goal.

At this time, Fang Yuan couldn’t help but fondly recall the benefits of Fixed Immortal Travel.

If he had Fixed Immortal Travel, he could simply get away from these problems.

Even if Fang Yuan was injured, there was a limit to the range the ancient cloud beasts could chase him, he could use Fixed Immortal Travel to go beyond this limit.

However, Fang Yuan only had sword escape Immortal Gu as his movement Immortal Gu.

If he recklessly used sword escape Immortal Gu, it could increase the distance between them, but he would have to pay a huge price.

Most importantly, Fang Yuan was not fully aware of the range in which the ancient cloud beasts would continue to chase him. If this range was extremely great, even if Fang Yuan spent all his assets, it might not be enough for the expenditure of activating sword escape Immortal Gu.

“Lang Ya land spirit may be simple and unable to lie, but he has all along been planning against me.”

“Previously, he schemed against me when I was dealing with Qi Zai as well. I had to pay a considerable amount to borrow dark limit Immortal Gu.”

“If I impatiently try to get rid of these ancient cloud beasts, he might extort me again! After all, Luo Po valley, Dang Hun Mountain and wisdom Gu are truly tempting!”

The regional wall in front of him suddenly turned into a deep blue color.

Fang Yuan had already passed Southern Border’s miasma regional wall and had now entered Eastern Sea’s blue water regional wall.

There was nothing to say, Fang Yuan concentrated on flying.

The journey was unimpeded.

The regional wall did not have creatures or any other obstructions.

Because the regional walls of the five regions in themselves were the greatest obstruction.

After flying for a while longer, Fang Yuan looked behind him, those ancient cloud beasts were still chasing him.

Cloud beasts did not have any fixed shape and continued to chase like rolling clouds, white and graceful as snow. But to Fang Yuan, they looked truly troublesome.

By now, Fang Yuan had already used all his contribution points from Lang Ya Sect and was starting to owe Lang Ya land spirit immortal essence stones.

“If not for these ancient cloud beasts, how could I go this far? Hmm? What’s going on?”

On the way, Fang Yuan’s expression suddenly changed, his gaze enlarging in wonder.

He surprisingly discovered that in this blue water regional wall, his aura was having a mysterious change.

His Southern Border Gu Immortal aura was continuously growing fainter, while the aura of an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal was strengthening constantly.

If Fang Yuan had activated familiar face, he would not have been so amazed.

The key point was that he had not activated this killer move.

“Could it be that this new body can not only pass the regional walls of the five regions, but can also change my aura into the aura of that region?”

Fang Yuan speculated inwardly.

The moment he flew out of blue water regional wall, his Southern Border Gu Immortal aura had completely dissipated and had truly turned into one of an

Eastern Sea Gu Immortal.

Fang Yuan naturally was surprised and happy.

“This sovereign immortal fetus Gu is truly mysterious, I am not even using familiar face and my body can actually perfectly adapt to the new region, which means I won’t be pushed aside by the region’s Gu Immortals.”

“But right now, it is still better for me to use familiar face.”

Fang Yuan gazed at the group of ancient cloud beasts following right behind him and sighed as he activated familiar face, turning into a different appearance.

He had originally wanted to quietly move through Eastern Sea and return to Northern Plains.

But now, with the group of ancient cloud beasts right behind him, he had naturally dispelled this idea.

Such a commotion was not what Fang Yuan wanted, but he could do nothing about it.

“But this place is not far away from the turbulent flow sea area. Maybe I can detour around and move towards the turbulent flow sea area, and use its environment to break away from these ancient cloud beasts?”

Fang Yuan suddenly had an idea.

His five hundred years of life experience as a wanderer had given him an understanding of the various environments of the five regions.

After pondering for a while, Fang Yuan chose to be cautious, giving up this idea.

The turbulent flow sea area was like a maze, if he was careless in entering it, he might lose his freedom and be trapped himself.

According to rumors, the turbulent flow sea area was a battlefield formed after a life and death battle between powerful Gu Immortal experts. It was a bloody battlefield where many Gu Immortal experts had fallen, leaving behind many inheritances.

Many Eastern Sea Gu Immortals as well as Gu Immortals of Central Continent, Northern Plains and Southern Border would come to the turbulent flow sea area to search for fortuitous encounters.

Unfortunately, in his previous five hundred years of life, Fang Yuan had never heard of anyone obtaining any huge fortuitous encounter. On the contrary, he often heard of certain Gu Immortals going missing in the turbulent flow sea area. Or that certain Gu Immortals would go missing for several months or several years before they were able to free themselves and appear again in the world.

The turbulent flow sea area was not dangerous, but its special environment often caused Gu Immortals to be trapped and not be able to free themselves.

Fang Yuan moved like an arrow, forming a straight line in the air.

He did not choose the direction of the turbulent flow sea area, instead he flew straight towards Northern Plains’ regional wall.

Sword escape Immortal Gu was activated, gradually getting distance from the ancient cloud beasts.

He had already inquired Lang Ya land spirit for information about ancient cloud beasts, but Lang Ya land spirit did not know much.

Fang Yuan then sent out dozens of wills in treasure yellow heaven to search for information on the limits of the tracking range of ancient cloud beasts, but he did not get any useful news.

With no other choice, Fang Yuan could only choose to try to see if he could break free of the pursuit of these ancient cloud beasts.

Making up his mind, Fang Yuan activated sword escape Immortal Gu unceasingly!

Finally, he was able to throw off the ancient cloud beasts beyond his vision.

Fang Yuan stopped sword escape Immortal Gu and used mortal killer moves to continue to fly.

His speed naturally slowed.

“I have paid such a price, it would be good if I have freed myself of them.” Fang Yuan was inwardly worried.

Not seeing the ancient cloud beasts did not mean he had already gotten away from them.

Existences that were comparable to rank seven Gu Immortals usually did not track using just sight. It depended on what the limit of their tracking range was.

Right as Fang Yuan was worriedly gazing back, a blood-red ray of light suddenly flew over from the southeast direction.

The blood-red light was soaring through the horizon, and when it sensed Fang Yuan’s presence, it immediately lowered its speed before rapidly approaching Fang Yuan.

“A rank six blood path Gu Immortal, and it looks like they went through a fierce battle!” Fang Yuan frowned when he sensed the approaching aura.

No matter what intention the other party had, Fang Yuan did not want to provoke any more trouble.

He already had enough trouble on his hands.

He still did not know if he had thrown off that group of ancient cloud beasts behind him, and there was also the earthly calamity which was going to approach in two months.

Therefore, he immediately changed his direction and flew away from the approaching blood-red light.

The Gu Immortal in the blood-red light sensed Fang Yuan’s intent, quickly shouting: “Wait! I have found a peerless fortuitous encounter in the turbulent flow sea area, as long as you can help me resolve this crisis, I am willing to use blood oath Immortal Gu to form a pact and share this peerless fortuitous encounter with you!”

“Turbulent flow sea area? Peerless fortuitous encounter? There really are people who have obtained benefits?” Fang Yuan was truly surprised.

Right at this time, several Gu Immortals appeared in the horizon, chasing after the blood-red light with surging momentum and emitting powerful auras.

They seemed to have heard what the blood path Gu Immortal had shouted to Fang Yuan.

Curses after curses began to rain down —

“A blood path demon causing harm to the world, everyone must execute them!”

“Anyone who associates with the demon shall be killed without mercy!”

“Block this demon and my Tang clan will definitely reward you.”

“No need. I, Liu Qing Yu, have struck this demon with my immortal killer move, he definitely won’t be able to escape. You there ahead, if you know what’s good for you, get lost!”

In an instant, Fang Yuan was subjected to the persuasion, warnings and even curses of these Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan snorted.

He was not someone afraid of getting into trouble, but right now, what he had to do was hurry to Lang Ya blessed land and deal with his immortal aperture’s earthly calamity.

He changed his direction, moving away directly from the blood path Gu Immortal.

The blood path Gu Immortal felt very anxious, he had already reached his own limits, Fang Yuan was his only hope to survive.

When Fang Yuan retreated, he also changed his direction, flying rapidly towards Fang Yuan.

“If you can help me, I am willing to hand this fortuitous encounter to you completely!” He cried out.

Fang Yuan sneered, retreating without hesitation.

Seeing this, one of the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals laughed loudly: “That’s right! Smart guy, you know how to judge the situation, get lost quickly!”

Someone else also called out: “We might as well help one another, lend a hand and we will definitely reward you after this.”

Fang Yuan’s brows slowly started to furrow.

He only wanted to quietly return to Lang Ya blessed land, why were there troublesome matters occurring one after the other. He himself did not want to engage in these troublesome matters, but they instead were taking the initiative to follow him.

“This is the crucial information regarding the inheritance, if you obtain it, your cultivation will definitely advance rapidly and you’d become a superior existence among immortals!” The blood path Gu Immortal threw an information path Gu worm towards Fang Yuan, attempting to lure him.

Fang Yuan screamed: “Screw off!”

With a wave of his hand, a powerful burst of wind destroyed the Gu worm.

At the same time, he rapidly charged towards the sky.

The blood path demonic cultivator was not able to plot against Fang Yuan and seeing this hopeless situation, he suddenly shot a streak of strange light towards Fang Yuan.

“I have already handed the crucial part of the inheritance to this person. If you guys want to get the fortuitous encounter, killing me will be of no use!” The blood path demonic cultivator yelled loudly before flying away in the opposite direction.

The streak of strange light was extremely fast and soon neared Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan snorted, he very much was unwilling to provoke trouble, he shouted in a stern voice: “I have important matters to deal with, do not provoke me!”

Saying this, he simultaneous activated Sword Escape and Flying Sword, these two rank seven Immortal Gu.

Sword Escape increased his speed while flying sword Immortal Gu shattered the strange light.

“Ah, two rank seven Immortal Gu!”

“Who is this person?!”

Fang Yuan’s power had suddenly erupted, the group of immortals were astonished, their expressions changed in an instant.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1046: Battle of Chase and Escape in Eastern Sea (1/3)

Fang Yuan’s aura was only at rank six, before he took action, there did not seem to be anything special about him.

Furthermore, after retreating repeatedly, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals involuntarily started to look down on him.

But once he took action, everyone was shaken.

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortals froze in their tracks, they reassessed Fang Yuan.

They saw Fang Yuan wearing white clothing with his long hair fluttering in the wind. Graceful and handsome, he had quite a disposition. Right now, Fang Yuan had an angry expression, like the brewing of a thunderstorm, his killing intent was like a blizzard, giving people a suppressive feeling.

There were numerous Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, but they all became silent.

They turned around and targeted the blood path demonic immortal instead.

This blood path demonic immortal wanted to escape, but his injuries caused his speed to fall, after some time, he was killed by the group of Gu Immortals.

Based on this, he was indeed at his wits’ end, no wonder he threw away the fortuitous encounter and tried to survive by using Fang Yuan.

After killing the blood path demonic immortal, one of the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, a rank seven that had taken the lead, Liu Qing Yu, spoke heavily: “The imprint is not on him.”

Another rank seven Gu Immortal reacted, saying loudly to Fang Yuan: “Please wait!”

Fang Yuan had two rank seven Immortal Gu, the immortals’ impressions of him had changed, they no longer acted so rudely towards him like before.

They looked at each other, before flying towards Fang Yuan imposingly.

Fang Yuan floated in the air, sneering without speaking.

“Friend...” The rank seven Gu Immortal stopped, partway through, he could not continue his words.

The imprint to open up the inheritance was extremely important, but it was missing now.

The biggest suspect was Fang Yuan.

But there was no way Fang Yuan would let them search his body. Looking at his immortal aperture was even more impossible, it was a huge taboo.

If Fang Yuan was an ordinary rank six Gu Immortal, with so many people on their side, it was okay to request it.

But Fang Yuan had two rank seven Immortal Gu, and this was only what he showed on the surface.

“Zhou Li, what are you afraid of?” The third rank seven Gu Immortal waved his long sleeves as he stepping forward.

He had a cold expression, his gaze was sharp, he stared at Fang Yuan, saying: “I am a Gu Immortal of Eastern Sea’s Tang clan, Tang Song, this matter is difficult to resolve peacefully today. But I have a way, as long as you follow it, you can prove your innocence.”

“Hahaha!” Fang Yuan laughed loudly: “Prove my innocence? Why do I need to prove my innocence?”

As he laughed, his battle intent surged.

“It seems that all of you think I am afraid of battle.” Fang Yuan said in an ominous tone.

The expressions of the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals changed.

Fang Yuan squinted: “It is laughable, you are being deceived but you remain ignorant. Liu Qing Yu, you killed that blood path demonic immortal, you have already obtained the inheritance imprint, but you are trying to frame me now, you are really scheming.”

“This...” The immortals froze again.

Many people turned to look at the rank seven Gu Immortal Liu Qing Yu.

Liu Qing Yu looked at Fang Yuan with an angry expression, but he was thinking: “Impressive! This person has a sharp tongue, he is rank six but has two rank seven Immortal Gu, who in the world is he? Since when did Eastern Sea have such a person? I actually don’t know who they are!”

At the same time, he called out: “Everyone, don’t forget about our agreement, what kind of person am I? Why would I possibly deceive you?”

Fang Yuan chuckled: “What agreement? I know that regardless of the information path alliance agreement, it can be broken using information path methods. As for what kind of person you are? I only know that in the face of huge profits, people change and cannot be trusted.”

Fang Yuan’s words were logical, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals hesitated even more.

Liu Qing Yu flew into a rage, pointing at Fang Yuan: “I saw him throw the inheritance imprint to you!”

“The others also saw that I slashed it.” Fang Yuan rapidly replied.

“Hehehe.” Liu Qing Yu laughed sinisterly: “There are many ways in the world to create illusions, who knows what methods you used to keep the imprint secretly.”

Fang Yuan raised his head and sighed, saying in a dour tone: “I have a mission from first supreme elder, I did not want to create trouble. But if it is like this, let’s fight.”

Hearing the words first supreme elder, many of the Gu Immortals’ pupils shrunk, they thought: So this person is not a lone cultivator, he has a super force behind him. No wonder he has two rank seven Immortal Gu!

At once, their wariness rose again.

Especially the lone cultivators, they operated independently and did not have a force to defend them, they did not want to offend a huge force.

“Hold it.” At this moment, Tang Song stood out: “I can guarantee on my Tang clan’s reputation, as long as you cooperate with our investigation, if the imprint is not with you, we will let you go.”

Tang clan was a super force in Eastern Sea, it was equivalent to Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects.

“Tang clan?” Fang Yuan laughed coldly, his eyebrows raised as the silvery flying sword Immortal Gu flew around him: “That’s very amazing huh? Do you think my clan will be afraid of your Tang clan? Hehe, in that case, let’s see what your Tang clan can do!”

Before he finished speaking, Fang Yuan used flying sword Immortal Gu, attacking the rank seven Gu Immortal Tang Song.

“You!” Tang Song did not expect Fang Yuan to strike so suddenly, he was caught off guard, quickly getting into a disadvantage under Fang Yuan’s attacks.

The other Eastern Sea Gu Immortals decided to look on from the side.

“This person is not afraid of Tang clan, he has a huge background.”

“Tang clan might be an overlord in Eastern Sea, but it also has enemies like Shen clan and Su clan. Is this person from one of those two clans?”

“Since he is attacking Tang Song, that is a good thing. We can stay on the sidelines and watch their methods. If there is a future battle, we will be able to prepare.”

These Eastern Sea Gu Immortals were not united, earlier, they only worked together to capture the blood path demonic immortal.

Fang Yuan’s words and actions caused doubts among them, resulting in division among these immortals.

He picked his opponent with specific reasons.

If he chose a rank six Gu Immortal, others would think he was depending on two rank seven Immortal Gu to bully a weaker opponent. Only by choosing a rank seven Gu Immortal could there be deterrence.

As for why he chose Tang Song, it was because Fang Yuan observed that he was the only rank seven Gu Immortal with a super force behind him.

Lone cultivator Gu Immortals did not want to offend super forces, and because super forces had many assets to protect and matters to take care of, they were wary of lone immortals.

Thus, as someone in an organization, Tang Song spoke and acted with many concerns. After all, he was representing not just himself but his Tang clan as well.

Both sides fought for a long time.

After more than ten rounds, Tang Song was still at a disadvantage, he was breaking out in cold sweat.

Flying sword Immortal Gu was very sharp, while Tang Song was a sound path Gu Immortal with insufficient defensive methods, he could not block flying sword Immortal Gu, he could only evade it.

He was furious and startled.

A grand rank seven Gu Immortal was being forced to this extent by a rank six, his face was completely gone.

Tang Song had a grim expression as he thought: “To salvage my face, I have to use that immortal killer move to capture this rank six Gu Immortal alive. In that case, my display of weakness earlier can be thought of as a battle tactic.”

But this immortal killer move was not easy to activate, it comprised four hundred and ninety Gu worms.

Tang Song had to deal with Fang Yuan’s attacks while concentrating on the Gu worms in his immortal aperture, and slowly forming his killer move.

“This flying sword Immortal Gu might be useless against mud monsters and cloud beasts, but it is really useful against Gu Immortals, once it pierces the head or heart, they would die. Back then, Bo Qing dominated Central Continent and was known as the strongest person under rank nine, this indicates some of the power of flying sword Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan sighed internally.

Even though he had the advantage, he had not become careless.

Tang Song was a rank seven Gu Immortal, he had a deeper foundation than Fang Yuan. But because Fang Yuan attacked first, he lost the initiative.

But currently it was a dangerous situation, the longer it dragged on, the harder it was for Fang Yuan to escape.

Most importantly, he could not use dark assassination.

Because he had to maintain the pressure on Tang Song, Fang Yuan attacked first and pressured him. If he had any time to regain the initiative and use his methods freely, the situation would be different.

Thus, Fang Yuan had to use flying sword Immortal Gu continuously. Flying sword Immortal Gu was the core of dark assassination, it had to be used together with dark limit Immortal Gu.

After some time, by combining it with other supplementary mortal Gu, dark assassination could be unleashed.

“I have few Immortal Gu now, if I had some more...” At this time, Fang Yuan sensed something, his movements stopped as he looked behind him.

The group of ancient cloud beasts was already within sight.

Seeing the group of ancient cloud beasts, Fang Yuan did not feel irritation, he felt joy.

The opportunity he was waiting for had arrived!

“What is going on? What are these things, they have such strong auras.”

“Cloud beasts, oh heavens, so many cloud beasts!”

“These are ancient cloud beasts, why are there so many of them?!”

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortals noticed the ancient cloud beasts, they were puzzled and shocked.

Tang Song’s focus was on Fang Yuan, seeing that Fang Yuan had relaxed, he was overjoyed, he immediately sped up in completing the immortal killer move he was preparing, it was already one-third done in this short time.

“Soon! Once I use this move to capture you alive, I’ll deal with you personally.” Tang Song gritted his teeth.

Fang Yuan shouted: “Hmph! I lured these ancient cloud beasts out from white heaven. It was to cooperate with the other supreme elders to lure these ancient cloud beasts into a trap and capture them. You people obstructed us, we will deal with you one by one later. If you want to die now, follow me!”

Saying so, Fang Yuan left Tang Song, flying in the sky.

The immortals were shocked but relieved.

Fang Yuan’s injuries were caused by the ancient cloud beasts.

And the ancient cloud beasts were chasing him.

These were all evidence for his words.

After all, ordinary cloud beasts were very rare, this group of ancient cloud beasts most likely came from white heaven.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1047: Battle of Chase and Escape in Eastern Sea (2/3)

Chase, or not?

The Eastern Sea immortals looked at each other.

The first to react was rank seven Gu Immortal Tang Song.

“Don’t think of leaving!” He moved like lightning, chasing after Fang Yuan as he shouted.

Fang Yuan snorted: “Don’t go overboard! Don’t think I am afraid of you, if not for my important mission, I would kill you here.”

Tang Song surged with anger: “Bullshit!”

His immortal killer move was almost ready to be used, he was about to salvage his face, but at this moment, Fang Yuan ran away.

He actually ran!

Tang Song was unwilling to let him go, he chased relentlessly.

His actions caused the stunned Eastern Sea Gu Immortals to pursue him as well.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank, but he shouted: “Those who are not afraid to die can come, hahaha.”

Tang Song yelled after him: “Those who are afraid to die are cowards! Chase him, the inheritance imprint is with him, we cannot let him join up with the other Gu Immortals. Only by capturing this person can we obtain the inheritance of the great expert.”

With such great profits in sight, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals chased with even faster speed after hearing that.

Fang Yuan muttered ‘not too stupid’, before pointing his finger, as flying sword Immortal Gu flew out and shot at Tang Song.

Tang Song was shocked, he tried to dodge. But because he was distracted, his immortal killer move was interrupted and he had to start all over again to use it.

Tang Song almost stomped his feet in anger.

The rank seven Gu Immortal Liu Qing Yu passed him and chased after Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan took a look and tried to sow discord: “Liu Qing Yu, the inheritance imprint is in your hands, but you are chasing after me. Such incredible acting!”

Liu Qing Yu was furious: “Don’t run if you have guts!”

“Against you people, why would I need to run, it would be ruining our clan’s face!” Fang Yuan shouted: “Continue chasing me if you have the guts, we’ll see who is the most unlucky one in the end! Hahaha.”

Fang Yuan appeared fearless, he was so arrogant even though he was being pursued by so many Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

In contrast, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals became increasingly hesitant.

There was a key point, who had the crucial inheritance imprint? What Fang Yuan said earlier was highly possible.

And in addition, it seemed that Fang Yuan had reinforcements. And to hunt such a huge group of ancient cloud beasts, they must have set up an immortal level battlefield killer move, or even mobilized their Immortal Gu House, this was quite possible!

“If we enter an immortal battlefield killer move, it would be troublesome...”

Tang Song was a member of Tang clan, a super force, he might not be afraid, but these Eastern Sea Gu Immortals were lone immortals.

These lone immortals were not doing too well, otherwise, they would not have gone into the turbulent flow sea area to find some kind of opportunity.

After all, time was very precious for Gu Immortals.

First, a Gu Immortal fell to the back of the group before gradually separating from the pursuing group.

Next, more and more Gu Immortals imitated their actions.

Gu Immortals were not stupid, they were astute figures.

The Gu Immortals who fell behind were not willing to let Fang Yuan go, but they were afraid of falling into a battlefield killer move, and being unable to leave. Thus, they all decided to let others take the lead and scout the route.

“These guys... they’re useless!” Liu Qing Yu who was the closest to Fang Yuan noticed this and mentally cursed, but his actions also became hesitant.

He was a lone cultivator and had obtained an opportunity in the past to become immortal, even though he had Immortal Gu, they were rank six. Against the immortal battlefield killer move of a super force, he might not be able to escape.

Even Tang Song was hesitant, he reserved some of his attention and energy to deal with any reinforcements of the enemy.

Thus, a strange chase was created.

Fang Yuan flew in front, yelling and cursing angrily, he was in a weaker position but he had an arrogant attitude.

Behind him were a bunch of Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, even though they had the advantage in numbers, they were restrained, they displayed a weaker attitude.

Most of the time, Fang Yuan was using mortal killer moves to fly, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals behind him were also using mortal killer moves to follow him.

Fang Yuan’s thoughts were far less confident than his actions: “So troublesome! Looking at this situation, I can only escape to the regional wall and use the advantage in that environment to break free from these pursuers.”

“Liu Qing Yu...” Fang Yuan took note of this name.

Fang Yuan had not received any inheritance imprint, he might have destroyed it, but it was also very possible that was only a deceptive move by the blood path demonic immortal, the true inheritance imprint could already be in Liu Qing Yu’s hands.

If that was the case, Liu Qing Yu’s acting skills were almost on par with Fang Yuan’s, he was a deeply shrewd opponent.

In the sky high up in the clouds.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

With Fang Yuan at the lead, a group of Eastern Sea Gu Immortals flew in the sky while moving like flashes of lightning, there was a huge commotion.

Tang Song had secretly been preparing his immortal killer move, it could already be used.

He held in his excitement as he accelerated, surpassing Liu Qing Yu and getting closer to Fang Yuan.

This sudden action made Fang Yuan extremely alert.

He immediately used sword escape Immortal Gu and raised his speed, flying away.

“Damn it!” Tang Song mentally cursed, his rank seven immortal killer move had greater effect when the distance was short. With his current distance from Fang Yuan, there was no chance to succeed in capturing him.

Fang Yuan activated sword escape Immortal Gu and raised his speed, the Gu Immortals behind were internally grumbling.

The three rank seven Gu Immortals were still fine, they could use rank six Immortal Gu or immortal killer moves to maintain the distance.

But those ordinary rank six Gu Immortals who were at the bottom of the Gu Immortal world did not even have any rank six Immortal Gu, they were quickly left behind.

Seeing that Fang Yuan was flying away, rank seven Gu Immortal Zhou Li was anxious: “I have a way, I can bring both of you along with me at great speed. But I need to focus and cannot be distracted, I hope you can restrain him.”

Liu Qing Yu and Tang Song looked at each other, rapidly agreeing.

Tang Song was the first to agree.

These people had an agreement already, they had a basis to trust each other.

Zhou Li roared as countless phantom waves appeared around his body, these phantom waves moved his body as his speed rose.

An immortal killer move!

Fang Yuan’s gaze focused, but Liu Qing Yu and Tang Song cheered, they stepped on the phantom waves and allowed the waves to move them forward.

The two thus had free time to start attacking.

Fang Yuan’s situation became bad.

Earlier, in the process of chasing, the Gu Immortals behind attacked. But because Fang Yuan was always using Immortal Gu to disrupt them and also dodged them, he was agile and hard to hit, the Gu Immortals behind him could not succeed.

But now, two Gu Immortals had the free time to focus on attacking, they could use more precise methods and possessed bigger threat.

Fang Yuan's pressure intensified, after a while, he was injured.

“Well done, this person has only so much capability, he only has two rank seven Immortal Gu. His other methods are all mortal killer moves.” Zhou Li said.

“He was injured to begin with, he was likely hurt by those ancient cloud beasts.” Liu Qing Yu said darkly.

“Even though he has rank seven Immortal Gu, he is only a rank six Gu Immortal, how much green grape immortal essence can he expend?” Tang Song said, smiling in the process.

As long as this progressed, they were sure to win.

Their only concern was the mysterious force behind Fang Yuan and a possible ambush.

Thus, they were holding back, and did not deal any fatal blows.

Fang Yuan's situation was quite dangerous.

If this continued to progress, he might die here.

Gu Immortals were intelligent and could form complex ideas, they were much harder to deal with compared to the simpleminded ancient cloud beasts.

If they really fought head on, these Eastern Sea Gu Immortals were not the match of the ancient cloud beasts. But their threat towards Fang Yuan was much higher than the ancient cloud beasts.

Fang Yuan had never banked on the two forces fighting each other.

Gu Immortals were not stupid, they had to consider the costs and benefits before killing even a cloud beast, not to mention this group of ancient cloud beasts.

“This means, I can only rely on the five regional walls. Even if something gets exposed, I have no choice.” Fang Yuan slightly changed his direction and flew towards the closest regional wall.

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortals behind him chased.

Along with that group of ancient cloud beasts.

Soon, the regional wall appeared in Fang Yuan's sight.

The regional wall was like a fence surrounding Eastern Sea, Fang Yuan had come out of the regional wall earlier, he was originally very close to it. It was just that he was flying straight ahead as he wanted to save time traveling.

If he flew by following the edges of the regional wall, he would have to take a long detour.

But who would have expected such trouble to appear from nowhere?

“Oh no, he is going to enter the regional wall!” Liu Qing Yu realized Fang Yuan's intention and shouted.

“Good plan. We are rank seven Gu Immortals, after we enter the regional wall, we will face greater restrictions than him." Zhou Li said.

"Quickly attack, don't let him succeed." Tang Song was anxious.

The two immortals' attacks changed.

They attacked fiercely, Fang Yuan could not block them all, his injuries were getting more severe, some of his bones could be seen through the deep wounds.

"Hehehe." He laughed instead: "You dare to attack, very good, Tang clan! If I die and the clan's plans are ruined, we will not let you off."

Tang Song's heart shook: "You keep claiming to be part of a clan, it is just a hoax! I know Eastern Sea's righteous forces deeply, why have I never heard of you?"

Fang Yuan laughed again, his tone filled with hatred: "Tang Song, why bother probing? I will not fall for it. This matter has to be kept a secret, I was sent out because we were afraid of external interference. Even if you kill me, I will not tell you my background. I will even self-detonate my soul, you will not be able to soul search me."

Fang Yuan's words made their hearts sink.

Which enemies were the scariest?

Everyone had different answers to this question. But a large number of people would agree: An unknown enemy was the scariest.

The enemy is hidden while you are exposed, you do not know where they are, or what they are planning against you.

This was the worry of the three rank seven Gu Immortals.

From start to finish, they did not think that Fang Yuan was lying.

After all, ancient cloud beasts were too rare, why would a group of them chase after him like this? There had to be a cause.

Since there was a cause, the perpetrator had to have enough confidence in their strength to take down this group of ancient cloud beasts.

And in Eastern Sea, what kind of force would be able to take down this group of ancient cloud beasts?

Evidently, only super forces like Song clan!

Fang Yuan's words made the three rank seven Gu Immortals' attacks slow, and he obtained some precious time to recover.

The regional wall was right in front of him, Fang Yuan could almost escape, but at this time, Zhou Li attacked!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1048: Battle of Chase and Escape in Eastern Sea (3/3)

The phantom waves around Zhou Li that were carrying Tang Song and Liu Qing Yu rushed forward, engulfing Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan felt a strong sense of pressure.

The waves were only phantom images, but he felt like he was facing a colossal tsunami, he was helpless like an ant, about to be devoured by this tide!

“An amazing immortal killer move!”

“Rank seven Gu Immortals are truly hard to deal with.”

In the moment of danger, these two thoughts flashed across Fang Yuan’s mind.

Without the waves carrying them, the three immortals stopped moving.

“The matter is settled.” Zhou Li smiled as confidence radiated in his eyes.

Tang Song and Liu Qing Yu looked at each other, they had guessed Zhou Li’s scheme, they involuntarily looked at him in a different light, raising their opinion of him.

As it turned out, Zhou Li had secretly collected information on Fang Yuan and learned about his abilities, he knew what methods were suitable to deal with Fang Yuan’s capabilities.

On the surface, he was helping them to fly, but in fact, he was using them to obstruct Fang Yuan while he gathered strength in the phantom waves below him. As they chased, the phantom waves got bigger and bigger, gradually creating a huge force.

And now, Zhou Li attacked.

He had not taken overt action previously, but once he did, it was a huge tsunami that swallowed everything. It was faster than even sword escape Immortal Gu, it could not be stopped!

Fang Yuan had the rank seven flying sword Immortal Gu, but against the phantom waves, it was ineffective, like dealing with cloud beasts and mud monsters.

He still had sword escape Immortal Gu, but the phantom waves were already surrounding Fang Yuan tightly. Fang Yuan’s room to maneuver became smaller, and sword escape Immortal Gu could not escape from the range of the phantom waves in time.

“To think that this Zhou Li appeared weak and timid on the surface, but he actually had such plans. I raised my voice at him earlier but he did not retaliate, to think that he is even more shrewd than me!” Liu Qing Yu felt deep wariness towards Zhou Li.

Tang Song had an ugly expression, he had prepared his immortal killer move painstakingly, wanting to save his face, but he did not get a chance to do so, in the end, Zhou Li was the one who benefited.

Not mentioning rank six Gu Immortals, among those who could become rank seven Gu Immortals, who would be a simpleton?

Once Zhou Li attacked, Fang Yuan was like a trapped beast.

“Our victory is assured!”

The three rank seven Gu Immortals had similar thoughts.

But Fang Yuan laughed coldly: “Hahaha, friends, why are you so foolish? You came to sacrifice your lives. In my opinion, the rank six Gu Immortals are far smarter than you.”

The three immortals looked and saw that Fang Yuan did not evade, his hands were behind his back as he floated in the air, calm and composed.

The three immortals’ bodies shook, they cried out in their minds: “Oh no! He is fearless, is this the place where they are ambushing us?”

Fang Yuan said again: “What’s the name of this move? It can actually accumulate and grow in power over time, but... can it break through my clan’s immortal battlefield killer move? Hehehe, I think not.”

These phantom waves had incredible power and could take his life, but Fang Yuan was unmoved, as if this was not a fatal killer move, but a gentle breeze instead.

He even dispelled the defensive killer move on his body, lion fur armor, in front of the three immortals.

“Oh no! This move uses almost all my Immortal Gu, it has strong attack but weak defense, if the other party attacks...” Zhou Li’s pupils shrunk, there was no time to think further, he subconsciously withdrew the phantom waves to defend himself.

The phantom waves had already accumulated greatly and were a fatal attack, but with Zhou Li withdrawing most of the waves, only a small portion was left to deal with Fang Yuan, a gap formed as Fang Yuan made use of it.

“Farewell, friends!” Fang Yuan activated sword escape Immortal Gu, flying in the sky like a burst of lightning, entering the blue water regional wall.

The three immortals were stunned before feeling intense rage.

“This kid is so crafty, he was putting up a front!”

“He was at his wits’ end, but he acted in such a convincing manner. Let’s chase him!”

Tang Song and Liu Qing Yu were furious, they charged towards Fang Yuan again.

Zhou Li’s expression turned pale, after staring blankly momentarily, he slapped himself before pursuing Fang Yuan again.

It was such a good situation earlier, but he messed it up, how could there still be another chance?

Fang Yuan had survived narrowly, after entering the regional wall, he went deep into it.

The three immortals were greatly troubled.

Their higher cultivation level was a burden here.

At this moment, the three immortals wished that they were just rank six Gu Immortals.

The deeper they got into the regional wall, the greater the repulsive force, and the slower their speed became.

Left without a choice, the three immortals could only entrust their hope in the rank six Gu Immortals who were still behind.

But these rank six Gu Immortals also faced a lot of obstruction, they were very different from Fang Yuan who felt zero resistance inside.

Soon, the Gu Immortals were left in the dust by Fang Yuan.

“What cultivation level does this person have? He faces such little resistance inside the regional wall?” The Eastern Sea Gu Immortals were gloomy.

But they did not know that Fang Yuan was purposely holding back.

Fang Yuan did not want this secret to be exposed, thus, he lowered his speed and pretended to be having difficulties traveling, only causing them to be suspicious.

They could not catch up to Fang Yuan, but the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals were unwilling to give up.

“I don’t believe that he can hide here and not come out!”

“He is a rank six Gu Immortal, flying here consumes a lot of immortal essence. I want to see if a rank six Gu Immortal’s foundation can match my own rank seven?”

Even though the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals were unwilling to see this, reality was cruel.

Fang Yuan left them farther and farther behind, even the ancient cloud beasts were catching up.

After some more chaos, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals felt bitter, seeing the ancient cloud beasts surpass them in chasing Fang Yuan.

These ancient cloud beasts came from white heaven, they were unaffected by the five regional walls.

Eventually, Fang Yuan left the investigative range of the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, they could only chase the ancient cloud beasts.

The ancient cloud beasts got closer and closer to Fang Yuan.

Seeing that the time was ripe, Fang Yuan activated sword escape Immortal Gu and raised his speed, flying away.

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortals chased until some people could no longer take it, they chose to give up, leaving the regional wall.

“So unlucky! I actually encountered such a person!”

“We know nothing about this person’s identity, it is unknown whether he really has a super force behind him or not.”

Tang Song and Zhou Li conversed, feeling that hope was slim.

Only Liu Qing Yu was not talking, continuing his chase.

“Brother Liu, stop chasing.”

“He is already gone, this matter has so many issues, we should first leave and discuss it.”

Tang Song and Zhou Li urged.

Liu Qing Yu said: “I have my methods for investigating. I will not rest until I catch him! Hold on, I will try again, I’ll be back shortly.”

Saying so, he turned into a green rainbow as his speed rose, charging towards the ancient cloud beasts.

Tang Song looked at the light as he said in a strange tone: “It seems that brother Liu is anxious, he even used this move. This move uses a lot of his dao marks to activate, it has a high price, it is a trump card, he rarely uses it. In the past, he used it to escape from many strong foes.”

“What did you say?” Zhou Li’s expression changed.

Tang Song was staring blankly, his expression soon turned grim.

The two immortals looked at each other, sensing the rage in their eyes.

It was very possible that this Liu Qing Yu was not chasing after Fang Yuan, but that he had secretly obtained the inheritance imprint and was trying to escape from them!

After all, Fang Yuan destroyed the inheritance imprint that the blood path demonic immortal threw out, everyone saw that.

And the person who killed the blood path demonic immortal was Liu Qing Yu.

“Brother Liu, hold on.”

“This thief is crafty, he might have help arriving, we will lend you a hand, brother Liu!”

Tang Song and Zhou Li quickly chased.

Liu Qing Yu heard these words and moved even faster, he did not even turn back, it was like he had heard nothing.

Tang Song and Zhou Li affirmed their guesses, their expressions turned grim as they swore that they would not let Liu Qing Yu go.

Half a month later.

A figure penetrated the green licorice regional wall and entered Northern Plains.

“I am finally in Northern Plains.” It was Fang Yuan, he was filled with fatigue, injuries covered his body.

He had already healed the wounds that could be treated.

But most of his injuries were caused by the ancient cloud beasts, Immortal Gu, and even immortal killer moves. These injuries had dao marks in them, he had to use healing Immortal Gu to get rid of them.

Fang Yuan only had three Immortal Gu, he could only stall his treatment.

“Over on Lang Ya land spirit’s end, there should be healing Immortal Gu, once I return, I would get to rest.”

Fang Yuan spurred himself on.

Earlier, he had fought with the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, and these last days, in order to escape from the ancient cloud beasts, he had used sword escape Immortal Gu again. He already owed Lang Ya land spirit a huge debt.

Most importantly, because the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals were pursuing him, Fang Yuan had to travel in the regional wall.

Thus, he took a long detour and consumed a lot of immortal essence.

But these were not important.

The important thing was the immortal aperture’s calamities and tribulations!

Time was running shorter, Fang Yuan’s bad feeling was getting deeper.

Turning around and looking back, the ancient cloud beasts’ figures were already vaguely showing in the regional wall. Fang Yuan sighed as he used sword escape Immortal Gu, flying towards the north-east direction.

Fang Yuan did not know the exact location of Lang Ya blessed land.

Earlier, Lang Ya blessed land was near Crescent Lake, but because of Shadow Sect’s attack, Lang Ya blessed land had relocated.

After contacting Lang Ya land spirit, he did not tell Fang Yuan the exact location of Lang Ya blessed land, he only gave a direction, a Gu Immortal would come and pick him up.

Three days later, Fang Yuan reached the meet up location, but no one was there.

The ancient cloud beasts continued to chase him and he could only run away.

After contacting Lang Ya land spirit, he realized that Lang Ya land spirit had dispatched a hairy man Gu Immortal, but he encountered human Gu Immortals along the way and was killed.

Lang Ya land spirit could only send another person to go, but an unexpected mishap happened again.

This hairy man Gu Immortal vanished mysteriously, he could not be contacted.

To bring back Fang Yuan, Lang Ya Sect had lost two hairy man Gu Immortals, and they did not even manage to bring Fang Yuan back to the blessed land.

Lang Ya land spirit could not bear such a loss, he told Fang Yuan the location directly.

Seven days later, Fang Yuan arrived at Feng Bo cliff.

At Feng Bo cliff, he saw the arrangements of Lang Ya land spirit.

This was an immortal level Gu formation, its use was similar to the green crystal hero’s path Zombie Alliance had. Fang Yuan used it to free himself from the ancient cloud beasts, returning to Lang Ya blessed land.

After so many troublesome circumstances, he was finally safe!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1049: Selling a Human Slave

Lang Ya blessed land, Black Hair Continent.

Steel Thread City was the grandest city in Black Hair Continent.

Just within the city, there were hundreds of thousands of hairy men. Not to mention the periphery of the city, with countless villages and towns around.

Lang Ya blessed land could be considered the largest paradise of hairy men in the current world.

Within the blessed land, there were four continents. Three were on the sea, with similar sizes, the fourth one was the smallest but was floating in the sky, known as Cloud Cover Continent, it was the sacred land that hairy men from the other three continents aspired to reach.

In the trading market of Steel Thread City, there was much clamor, it was one of the most famous markets in Black Hair Continent.

Today, at the southeast corner of this market, a fat and muscular hairy man walked onto the stage.

On the stage, there were a ring of hairy men with muscular and hairy bodies.

These hairy men had black and brown hair. This was the natural hair color of the hairy men on Black Hair Continent.

The fat and muscular hairy man stepped onto the stage as the hairy men below started calling out.

Among them, one asked loudly: “Kang Ba, what goods do you have this time?”

The hairy man Kang Ba was a slave merchant, he specialized in selling slaves, he had a huge business, and a certain amount of fame.

Kang Ba heard this and laughed, looking around: “Don’t worry everyone, I brought a lot of yellow haired slaves this time, they include quasi-masters in refinement path, you will definitely be pleased.”

The surrounding hairy men had shining eyes, they discussed enthusiastically.

“Every since Lord Immortal declared from Cloud Cover Continent that seeds would be chosen every ten years to learn the ways of immortals, our three continents have been engaging in huge battles.”

“As for how to choose the immortal seeds, it will depend on who can draw the Lord Immortal’s attention in the battles between the three continents.”

“Just now, our Black Hair Continent joined up with White Hair Continent to deal with Yellow Hair Continent, I heard we won several battles and captured a number of yellow hairs.”

“I am an old man, I dare not think of becoming immortal, but I want these yellow haired slaves as labor for my Gu refinement factory.”

“These slaves are better than employing Gu Masters, they are cheap and I control their life and death, their offspring will also continue to be my slaves.”

...

“Everyone, everyone.” Hairy man Kang Ba raised his hands, causing the surroundings to become quiet: “I do not want to waste everyone’s time, I will now bring out the first slave, everyone can have a look, bring him here!”

“Quickly move!” Behind the stage, a muscular black haired hairy man dragged the chain in his hands.

At the end of the chain, a slave was tied up, full of injuries that exposed his flesh.

It was Fang Zheng, who was interrogated earlier!

Fang Zheng could not resist the black haired hairy man’s brute force, he almost fell to the ground after being pulled.

But when he stood up, he stared at the black haired hairy man fiercely, with a firm and stubborn expression.

Crack.

The black haired hairy man raised his whip and lashed at Fang Zheng’s face.

Fang Zheng felt his face turning numb, before an intense pain assaulted him.

But he gritted his teeth, he swallowed the scream that he was about to utter back down his throat.

“You’re asking for a beating, move quickly!” The black haired hairy man laughed as he stretched out his arm that was thicker than Fang Zheng’s legs, he grabbed his neck and raised him up.

Next, the black haired hairy man stepped onto the stage and walked a few steps to the center, before throwing Fang Zheng down.

Fang Zheng’s neck was grabbed, he could barely breathe, his head was spinning.

After being thrown onto the stage, he nearly fainted on the spot.

He was seeing stars, his head was dizzy, he was sprawled on the ground, unable to stand up.

“Be careful, you idiot.” Kang Ba scolded angrily.

The black haired hairy man who brought Fang Zheng did not dare to offend him, he quickly apologized.

“Scram!” Kang Ba scolded angrily.

The black haired hairy man quickly ran down the stage.

Kang Ba’s expression changed instantly, turning from angry to joyous as he pointed at Fang Zheng, explaining to the hairy men: “This slave is a rare breed, I, Kang Ba, obtained him with great difficulty.”

These words attracted the interest of the audience.

“This slave is not weak at all, he has rank five cultivation level!” Soon, someone noticed Fang Zheng’s faint Gu Master aura and gasped.

“Is this a city lord from Yellow Hair Continent? He was actually captured and had nearly all his hair shaved, who humiliated him like this?” Immediately after, someone asked this curiously.

In White Hair Continent, Black Hair Continent, and Yellow Hair Continent, the city lords usually has the highest authority, they had rank five cultivation level.

In the culture of hairy men, they were proud of the hair on their bodies. Getting their hair shaved was the most cruel humiliation and punishment, in the hearts of most hairy men, it was worse than death.

To make a comparison, it was like having male convicts castrated on Earth.

Kang Ba laughed: “You all are guessing wrongly, this slave is not a hairy man, he is a pure bred human!”

“What?”

“Human?!”

“He is a human?”

In Lang Ya blessed land, hairy men were the dominant race, they rarely saw others. Many of the hairy men present were shocked, this was the first time they had heard of the rumored human.

Fang Zheng had already recovered from his daze, he felt extremely uncomfortable, being watched by so many hairy men.

“Get up, stand properly.” Kang Ba made a hooking motion with his finger.

Fang Zheng lost control of his body, a formless force was controlling him, causing him to stand up on the stage.

The hairy men below the stage could see him clearly now, they were conversing softly with each other, exclaiming in wonder over Fang Zheng.

Kang Ba laughed, feeling very pleased.

He had spent a huge amount to buy this Fang Zheng, it was to create this commotion.

Now, it seemed his goal had been achieved.

The hairy men below the stage were talking among themselves, growing louder and rowdier.

“Quickly look, there’s a human slave on sale there.”

“Really? I want to see it.”

“Go, go and look at this rare thing!”

More and more hairy men noticed this, they were gathering from all around the market.

Fang Zheng stood on the stage, looking down at the sea of hairy men, he was also staring widely.

There was such a huge number of hairy men, this was the first time Fang Zheng was seeing such a thing.

He had seen hairy men in Immortal Crane Sect before, they were slaves refining

Gu. He knew the situation of the five regions, humans were the absolute rulers, variant humans were heavily suppressed, desperately surviving in some isolated parts of the world. But now, it seemed that these hairy men were the rulers here, and humans were heavily suppressed!

“Where is this place?” Fang Zheng felt increasingly confused and puzzled.

He remembered being interrogated and tortured, the prison guard told him that his brother was dead and Hu Immortal blessed land was taken over.

At first, he did not believe it, but after some interrogation and torture, he was half believing and half doubtful. Now that he saw this, his puzzlement was intensifying.

“Kang Ba, how much are you selling this slave for?” Someone shouted.

“Hahaha, this much!” Kang Ba raised both hands, extending all ten of his fingers.

The crowd went into a commotion, many cried out: “So expensive!”

“Kang Ba, you are robbing us!”

“You must be crazy to think of such money.”

“Everyone, everyone!” Kang Ba raised his voice, saying loudly: “This is a rank five Gu Master, after becoming your slave, you will gain a rank five fighter! This is an opportunity that you may never encounter again.”

But there were astute figures among the hairy men under the stage.

“A rank five Gu Master, it will not be easy to enslave him.”

“That’s right, to enslave an expert like this, we need at least rank four cultivation level?”

“Also, this slave has clearly been tortured and interrogated, maybe he is already heavily injured.”

“What if he dies after we buy him?”

Kang Ba pretended to be furious: “Who do you think I am? I do business based on sincerity and honesty. Look at him, take a good look!”

Saying this, Kang Ba walked towards Fang Zheng and firmly pressed his fingers around Fang Zheng’s chin and lips.

Fang Zheng felt intense pain, his mouth opened involuntarily, revealing his teeth and lips.

“Look at his teeth, come, look at his skin!” Kang Ba tore and with a sharp sound, Fang Zheng’s shirt was completely shredded.

Fang Zheng shuddered, he was completely naked, exposed in front of the band of hairy men.

“Even though he has injuries over his body, they are all superficial wounds, they can be treated. I can assure they will not result in problems!”

Fang Zheng gritted his teeth, his eyes were spewing fire, intense anger and humiliation filled his heart, he would love to kill all of these hairy men instantly.

Kang Ba chuckled, he used a twig to hold up the object in Fang Zheng’s groin, saying: “Everyone, look, this thing is still working. In the future, he can create human offspring for you, you will have an unlimited supply of slaves.”

“Hahaha...”

The hairy men were laughing loudly.

Fang Zheng’s face was red, he was extremely humiliated, if not for Kang Ba immobilizing him completely, he would have bitten his tongue and tried to suicide.

“I will buy this slave.” Suddenly, a voice came from afar.

Everyone looked towards the source of the voice, and saw a female hairy man, she had black hair all over her body, and she looked at Fang Zheng with a lustful expression.

“Greetings to city lord.” The hairy men all knelt down, including Kang Ba.

“Hahaha.” The female city lord who was twice the size of normal hairy men ordered: “Kang Ba, give this slave medical treatment, clean him and send him to my home. By night time, I want to see him.”

“As you command, our beautiful and strong city lord!” Kang Ba was overjoyed, he kowtowed as he acknowledged.

Fang Zheng shut his eyes, losing all hope in life.

At this moment, there was a thunderous sound, the world trembled.

A five-colored light shot up from Cloud Cover Continent in the sky, shining over the entirety of Lang Ya blessed land.

“What is happening in Cloud Cover Continent?”

“Oh heavens, this is the light of the immortals, this is a huge blessing!”

The attention of the hairy men was drawn by this event, everyone raised their heads and looked with curiosity, admiration, and envy... as for Fang Zheng, he was completely forgotten already.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1050: Recovering From Injuries

On this day, from Cloud Cover Continent, a huge light burst into the sky.

Light in the colors of the rainbow was shining in the sky, shooting into the sky like a beam from the heavens.

It was so dazzling, all of the hairy men on Black Hair Continent, White Hair Continent, and Yellow Hair Continent only needed to raise their heads to see it.

“This is the work of immortals!” The hairy men sighed.

If this were in the past, the three continents would only have rumors and vague legends of Gu Immortals.

But after Lang Ya land spirit’s personality changed, the situation changed completely.

Lang Ya land spirit sent out orders, imitating the imperial court contest, to stir up competition in the three continents to select elite candidates to cultivate in Cloud Cover Continent.

The war between the three continents affected all hairy men, and the ‘immortal miracle’ of Cloud Cover Continent stirred the passions of the hairy men.

“Becoming an immortal...” Black Hair King looked at the sky, his eyes shining with brilliant light.

As the light faded, Black Hair King made up his mind: “Send out my imperial decree. The immortal miracle is an auspicious sign. We will hold a martial competition in remembrance of this. The winner of the martial competition will be able to choose a treasure from our treasury!”

“Yes.” The guard who received the order answered as they left in a bowing position.

Black Hair King’s idea was not new, he had thought about it for a long time already.

The war between the three continents made Black Hair King realize that the mindset of Gu refinement being important above all needed to be abandoned. To deal with the future battles, he needed elite Gu Masters skilled in combat.

With Black Hair King’s order, a huge commotion spread out from the imperial city, rapidly projecting outwards and growing larger and larger.

Soon, half a month later.

Steel Thread City had an esteemed guest.

This guest was received by Steel Thread City Lord personally, because he was also a city lord himself.

“Hua Feng City Lord, is there anything you need by coming here?” During the banquet, while drinking, Steel Thread City Lord asked.

“Steel Thread City Lord, you are an insightful person, you know my intentions in coming here already.” Hua Feng City Lord smiled, pointing at the hairy man Gu Masters behind him: “The king wants to hold a martial competition, but each region can only send three people. And in our region, there are both of our cities. The Gu Masters behind me are the ones I am going to send to the competition. But because the king has limited the number of people, we can hold a contest here first and decide who goes to the martial competition!”

“Hahaha. Very good, I have the same idea.” Steel Thread City Lord laughed, clapping as she summoned the hairy man Gu Masters onto the stage.

Both sides dispatched a person each and started to fight.

After several rounds, Hua Feng City won all of their matches, while Steel Thread City lost all of theirs.

Hua Feng City Lord laughed, drinking wine casually, while Steel Thread City Lord had a grim expression, she had a heavy feeling: “To think that Hua Feng City Lord came prepared, he picked such elite Gu Masters. Oh no, if we do not win any battles, this would definitely become widely spread news. For the next few years, we will live under the pressure of Hua Feng City.”

“There is only one match left, Steel Thread City Lord, please send your participant.” Hua Feng City Lord urged.

Steel Thread City Lord snorted coldly, she placed her gaze on a hairy man.

But this hairy man Gu Master was breaking out in cold sweat, this situation made him feel a strong burden. Precisely so, he felt a lack of confidence.

Not just him, the higher-ups of Steel Thread City in the banquet also felt no confidence in him.

At this moment, an elder in the city transmitted to Steel Thread City Lord secretly: “City Lord, I know someone who can salvage our reputation.”

Steel Thread City Lord heard this and was overjoyed, she quickly asked who it was.

This elder answered: “City Lord, did you forget, you recently bought a human slave, he has rank five cultivation level.”

Steel Thread City Lord was stunned, her expression was bitter as she transmitted: “This is inappropriate! My contest with Hua Feng City Lord is an open, fair and just matter involving our reputations. If I send out this human slave, so be it if we lose, but if we win, he will be sent to participate in the martial competition. If the king sees that my Steel Thread City sends a human instead of hairy men, would he not reprimand me?”

The elder laughed.

He knew that this was just Steel Thread City Lord’s excuse.

The truth was, Steel Thread City Lord was just reluctant.

That slave called ‘Fang Yuan’ had been visited by the city lord almost every night since he was bought. This had made a lot of the higher-ups unhappy.

The elder continued: “City Lord, don’t worry. The current king is magnanimous, he only cares about talent. Among the elders assisting him, there are no lack of snowmen and feathermen. City Lord, if you send Fang Yuan and he loses, he can take full responsibility. If he wins, our reputation will be salvaged, and he would be sent to the competition, the king would surely hold a good opinion of you, he might even think of you as a friend, who knows.”

Steel Thread City Lord looked at this elder deeply, thinking: “This old fox is really scheming! Isn’t the reason simply because I have neglected the nephew that you sent to me? This is such a vile plan. If we win, I will send Fang Yuan away. If we lose, I will have to kill Fang Yuan and throw the responsibility to him. Regardless of victory or defeat, I will lose Fang Yuan.”

“Oh, forget it!” Steel Thread City Lord sighed: “How can I be someone who gives in to lust and neglects the important matters?”

Even though Steel Thread City Lord visited Fang Zheng every night and was obsessed with him, she was a hard-hearted person, a hairy man who pursued authority and power.

In her heart, looks were nothing.

Thus, Steel Thread City Lord swapped that hairy man and summoned Fang Zheng, informing him.

After learning of the reason, Fang Zheng walked onto the stage.

“It is a rank five Gu Master!” Hua Feng City Lord’s heart jumped, sensing Fang Zheng’s rank five aura, he immediately was on alert.

He smiled: “According to the rules, my side will decide the content of this round. In the previous few rounds, we competed using battle strength, now how can the traditions and essence of us hairy men be discarded? This round, we will compete using Gu refinement.”

Once he said that, Steel Thread City Lord almost berated him in anger.

The elders from Steel Thread City also looked towards Hua Feng City Lord with distaste.

But Hua Feng City Lord had been a city lord for many years, he was unabashed, he ignored these glances.

Steel Thread City Lord could not rebuke him, after all, the rules were set earlier, she waved to Fang Zheng: “Go and compete. Display all of your capabilities, remember, you must win at all costs. If you lose, you will lose your life to compensate for the loss.”

Fang Zheng heard this and was expressionless.

He had been utterly humiliated these last days. Steel Thread City Lord had a strong desire for night activities, she liked all sorts of stances and positions, they did it seventeen or eighteen times a night, she had no restraints, Fang Zheng felt like he was better off dead.

Fang Zheng really wanted to simply die, but as a slave, he was under their control, he could not even die if he wanted to.

Steel Thread City Lord threatened him with death now, to him it was a form of release.

In his mind, there was a thought: “Do I still want to live? I might as well surrender and die!’

But at this moment, a voice appeared in his mind: “Idiot! A true man needs to be able to give in and put down his pride at times, this humiliation is nothing. If you have guts, take revenge in the future, cut all of these enemies who humiliated you into a million pieces. This is the act of an outstanding individual!”

“Who are you?!” Fang Zheng was shocked, he screamed out loud.

On the other side, Hua Feng City’s final hairy man Gu Master stepped onto the stage.

He thought Fang Zheng was talking to him, he puffed out his chest and said: “I am Mao Shi Ba!”

Fang Zheng did not respond.

He had regained his freedom, he could use many Gu worms now, but the voice in his mind appeared and vanished instantly, he could not find any traces of it no matter how much he inspected his body.

“Scum, you dare to humiliate me?!” Mao Shi Ba was furious.

He gave his own name, but Fang Zheng ignored him, it was as if he was too high and mighty to introduce himself, Mao Shi Ba was extremely angry.

“Why is this guy so angry?” Fang Zheng was startled into awareness by Mao Shi Ba, he thought this to himself.

Because of this misunderstanding, before the contest started, there was huge animosity.

Under everyone’s gazes, the contest started.

Mao Shi Ba was the strongest Gu Master in Hua Feng City, he was skilled in both the pen and the sword, not only was he good at fighting, he was also skilled at refining Gu.

In contrast, even though Fang Zheng cultivated in Immortal Crane Sect for some time, he mainly cultivated enslavement path, he had only explored refinement path a little.

The contest had just started, but Mao Shi Ba already took the lead.

During the middle of the contest, Mao Shi Ba had already left Fang Zheng in the dust, his advantage was immense.

In the final moments, the hairy men watching, be it from Steel Thread City or Hua Feng City, did not think that Fang Zheng could win.

Even Fang Zheng thought the same.

“Am I going to lose, so be it, death is release after all.” He sighed internally.

“Bullshit!” At this time, the voice spoke again.

Fang Zheng was shocked, his hands trembled, the half complete Gu went up in smoke.

“Hahaha.” Hua Feng City Lord laughed.

Steel Thread City Lord had an ugly expression.

Inside Fang Zheng’s mind, the voice continued: “How can a true man falter in the face of such a small setback?”

“You, you are... Fang Yuan?!” This time, Fang Zheng recognized the voice.

“Hehe, my main body is already dead. Only this will is left in your mind. As my brother living in this world, you are not thinking of improving yourself, you do not seek revenge, I truly cannot watch anymore!” Fang Yuan’s will scolded angrily.

Fang Zheng snorted, thinking: “You are already dead, why are you still coming out to interfere in matters?”

He was familiar with Lord Sky Crane’s soul, who helped him cultivate in the past, it was easy for him to converse with Fang Yuan’s will, in fact, he even felt a sense of nostalgia.

But on the surface, the hairy men could not see anything. They only thought that Fang Zheng was completely dazed and had a blank expression.

Fang Yuan’s will felt Fang Zheng’s animosity and laughed nonchalantly: “Since I am dead, why did you use my name to impersonate me?”

Fang Zheng was silent.

Fang Yuan’s will continued: “You were humiliated and tortured, but you refused to expose your real name, this shows that you still have a sense of shame, anger, and hatred. Then why are you not using this chance to improve and get stronger? You know the situation, if you win this, you will be able to join the martial competition, freeing yourself from being a slave and regaining freedom!”

“I want to win too, who doesn’t want revenge and freedom? But my loss is assured!” Fang Zheng said angrily.

“Haha.” Fang Yuan’s will laughed: “As long as you follow my instructions, you can surpass Mao Shi Ba and win this.”

Fang Zheng was stunned, he asked: “What scheme is it this time?”

“Hmph.” Fang Yuan’s will snorted: “Even though I am dead, I am indignant! I want revenge! None of the hairy man Gu Immortals who killed me will escape. You are my hope for revenge! Aren’t you using my name now? Then take revenge for me!”

“Why must I help a demon who slaughtered his entire clan like a monster take revenge?!” Fang Zheng replied furiously.

Fang Yuan’s will replied: “There is no time for you to squabble. Follow my instructions. Start the fire, put in the three different kinds of gold. Remember, profound gold, ice gold, and tear gold, place them inside the cauldron in order.”

Fang Zheng gritted his teeth, even though he did not want to listen to Fang Yuan, his words gave him some hope of victory, and this concerned his life.

Hesitating for a while, he stretched out his hand.

Refining Gu again!

The audience laughed loudly upon seeing this.

But in a few minutes, they could not laugh anymore, they looked at Fang Zheng in shock.

He raised his right hand, holding the Gu worm, he had refined it under everyone’s gazes.

“I won!” He breathed in deeply, declaring loudly.

In the hall, nobody spoke.

Even his opponent, Mao Shi Ba, could not accept this fact, he was staring blankly.

The atmosphere was quite unique.

The hairy men did not want to acknowledge that a human had defeated an expert hairy man Gu Master in a competition of Gu refinement!

After a while, someone said: “Quickly look, the rainbow light from Cloud Cover Continent is fading!”

Everyone followed what the voice had said.

Dozens of gazes looked through the entrance of the hall, indeed, the rainbow light coming from Cloud Cover Continent was vanishing.

From the rainbow light, a figure walked out.

“It seems you have recovered.” Lang Ya land spirit looked at this person and smiled.

“Yes.” This person nodded: “This is all thanks to first supreme elder.”

As he spoke, the rainbow light faded, showing his appearance.

If Fang Zheng saw this person, he would be shocked.

This person was naturally Fang Yuan!

Lang Ya land spirit laughed: “If you want to thank me, isn’t it simple? Give Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po valley, or wisdom Gu to me.”

Fang Yuan smiled: “Giving is impossible! But we can make a trade. I wonder what price first supreme elder is willing to pay?”

“Ugh.” Lang Ya land spirit’s laughter stopped: “This...”

He was hesitant, awkwardness was written all over his face.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1051: Three Supreme True Inheritances

Be it Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po valley, or wisdom Gu, they were priceless treasures, unique in this world, exceptional in their domains.

Fang Yuan said they could be traded, but what could Lang Ya land spirit use to buy them?

Fang Yuan did not reject him, he was waiting in anticipation.

Lang Ya blessed land had a deep foundation, it was not simple. It had survived the eras of two venerables and existed up to this day. After Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed, it could be called the number one blessed land in the five regions!

When he was alive, the land spirit was known as the number one refinement path immortal of all times. He faintly surpassed Old Eccentric Tian Nan and Old Immortal Kong Jue.

Such a character, how could he not have anything worth trading?

Like Immortal Gu transactions, each one was unique.

Unparalleled items could be exchanged using similarly unparalleled items.

The assessment of their value depended on the individual’s own circumstances!

Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po valley, and wisdom Gu, these three were not objects that Fang Yuan would not trade away, as long as the gain was worth it.

Lang Ya land spirit started to pace around.

He frowned, entering deep thought.

If it were the previous land spirit, there would be no need for consideration, he would trade with Fang Yuan. But after changing personality, this new Lang Ya land spirit had a different focus.

“The white haired land spirit was formed from the obsession about space escape Gu, thus he is only interested in refining Gu, he nurtured all of the hairy man Gu Immortals to be refinement path experts. But this black hair land spirit wants to turn hairy men into the dominant race, I can make good use of this point.” Fang Yuan thought, seeing this land spirit walking around, he patiently waited for his decision.

Fang Yuan had a sense of confidence.

He believed that Lang Ya land spirit would not disappoint him.

As Fang Yuan had expected, after struggling, Lang Ya land spirit made up his mind and decided to trade with Fang Yuan.

“First supreme elder, I am not doubting your ability to trade with me, but it has to suit both of us. If the things you have cannot match my expectations, I am afraid...” Fang Yuan purposely said.

Lang Ya land spirit stared as he said grumpily: “Don’t worry! My Lang Ya Sect’s treasures are not inferior to those three things!”

Saying so, he handed Fang Yuan an information path Gu worm.

Fang Yuan stretched out his arm, receiving this Gu worm.

This Gu was like a silkworm, although it had a head, thorax and abdomen, three distinct parts, its body looked like a cocoon overall, round and cute. It was white and looked like a vase, with a shiny glaze on the surface. Fang Yuan held it in his hand, it was smooth and shiny, it had a good feel to it when handled.

“This is a bookworm?” Fang Yuan was slightly shocked.

He had seen bookworms before, they were a type of valuable rank one Gu. But what shocked him was, this bookworm was emanating rank three aura.

Lang Ya land spirit snorted, saying: “This is something my previous self made. He broke the limits of the rank one bookworm, developing rank two and three versions of it. But what use do they have? If enemies attack, can the bookworms defend us?”

Even though he said that, Fang Yuan could hear vague smugness hidden in Lang Ya land spirit’s tone.

Fang Yuan shook his head, without speaking, he used a trace of the unlimited primeval essence in his immortal essence to use the bookworm, as well as sending a portion of his consciousness into it.

He did not own the bookworm, but he had borrowed it from Lang Ya land spirit, thus he could use it without obstruction.

Fang Yuan’s eyes were shining.

The information in the bookworm made him extremely excited, his heartbeat rose.

“As I expected!” Fang Yuan praised in his mind, his thoughts were frothing about uncontrollably.

Fang Yuan had returned to Lang Ya blessed land and spent a lot of time recuperating, at this time, his immortal aperture’s calamity was around the corner.

Ying Wu Xie, Hei Lou Lan, Hu Immortal blessed land, Fixed Immortal Travel, all of these things did not matter now. His biggest obstacle was to pass this calamity!

Once in a while, calamities and tribulations descend in a Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture. The deeper the foundation of the immortal aperture, the stronger the calamities and tribulations.

Fang Yuan’s current immortal aperture had not been managed yet, it was empty. But it had an incredibly huge space, and a large time path foundation in it, it was even not limited by the separate natures of the five regions. Such an immortal aperture far surpassed the ten extreme physiques combined, the calamities and tribulations he was going to face would be unprecedentedly dangerous!

One could say, this was a sharp blade hanging around Fang Yuan’s neck.

When he was recuperating, Fang Yuan had been training Fang Zheng as well as considering his circumstances.

There was only a few days until the calamity, Fang Yuan did not have much confidence, he was uncertain about it.

Most of his Immortal Gu were left in his original body, a number were destroyed, while the others were left with Ying Wu Xie. Fang Yuan’s strength was much lower now.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan were nowhere to be found, while Fairy Li Shan and Blazing Heaven Demoness were dead. The only help he could get was from Lang Ya blessed land.

And Lang Ya blessed land must have survived a lot of calamities and tribulations after existing for so many years. It was a successful example that had dealt with many tribulations, there was bound to be much for Fang Yuan to learn from it.

“How is it?” Lang Ya land spirit smiled and said.

He raised three fingers at Fang Yuan: “My Lang Ya Sect has three major foundations. Firstly, the refinement path true inheritance left behind by my main body, it has the essence of my entire life’s cultivation. Secondly, the luck path true inheritance left by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. Thirdly, the theft path true inheritance left by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable. When my main body was alive, I had refined Gu for these two venerables, the payment I requested were one of each of their true inheritances.”

Fang Yuan gave a slight nod.

The bookworm recorded details of these three true inheritances.

No matter which one, they were deep and profound, Fang Yuan only saw their most superficial information, and was already deeply attracted by them, they were extremely valuable.

Lang Ya land spirit continued: “Among these three true inheritances, the Thieving Heaven true inheritance is the least valuable. That is because my main body created space escape Gu, but could not activate it, thus, I returned a portion of the payment. However, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s true inheritances all come in pairs. If you are lucky, after getting this true inheritance, and if the other true inheritance is not obtained yet, you might get clues to the second true inheritance.”

“Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable left behind a total of ten true inheritances, but only otherworldly demons can receive most of them, only the one I have is an exception. Fang Yuan, you are an otherworldly demon, you can easily obtain the other Thieving Heaven true inheritance if it is still available.”

Fang Yuan gave a slight nod.

He had seen the power of formless hand, using theft path methods, he could steal the Immortal Gu of others, and gain the greatest benefits after every battle.

And some methods that Fang Yuan relied on greatly, unfamiliar face, vaguely familiar face, and familiar face, were also Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s immortal killer moves.

Fang Yuan had experienced the benefits of stealing, this true inheritance would not disappoint him.

After pausing for a while, Lang Ya land spirit continued: “Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had a total of ten true inheritances, but Giant Sun Immortal Venerable only had three. When I was alive, I refined the Immortal Gu House Eighty-Eight True Yang Building for him, thus, this true inheritance’s value is higher than Thieving Heaven’s.”

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s three true inheritances encompass all of his methods regarding luck path. They are self luck, all living being’s luck, and heaven and earth luck. Among which, the self luck true inheritance is with me. The all living being’s luck true inheritance was inside Imperial Court blessed land. As for the heaven and earth luck true inheritance, it is in Longevity Heaven.”

Self luck, all living being’s luck, heaven and earth luck.

Connect luck Immortal Gu, break luck Immortal Gu, divert disaster Immortal Gu, they were part of the all living being’s luck true inheritance. After Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed by Fang Yuan, some of these Immortal Gu were sent outside, as for the details of cultivation involved in it, they were already lost.

Fang Yuan and Ma Hong Yun had interacted, he knew about the power of luck path.

“Ignoring other things, if I had divert disaster Immortal Gu, I could mimic Imperial Court blessed land and send my calamities and tribulations outside.” Fang Yuan knew that luck path was very useful for his tribulations.

Even if this self luck true inheritance did not have Gu like divert disaster Immortal Gu, the higher Fang Yuan’s luck was, the weaker his calamities and tribulations would be, he could deal with them more easily.

“Fang Yuan, I would suggest you take the self luck true inheritance. Because your luck seems to be really bad.” Lang Ya land spirit said.

“Just now, how many problems and mishaps occurred when you came back from

Southern Border? Even on my end, I lost two hairy man Gu Immortals, you can’t even imagine the cause!”

“In order to refine fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, Old Ancestor Xue Hu ordered the demonic path Gu Immortals in Snowy Mountain blessed land to collect materials for him. This act made the loyalty of his members drop, at a crucial moment, a traitor appeared in Snowy Mountain blessed land, stealing one of the most crucial materials.”

“Old Ancestor Xue Hu was enraged, he dispatched Gu Immortals to capture any suspicious people. The hairy man Gu Immortal I sent to receive you was implicated.”

“As for the second Gu Immortal who disappeared mysteriously, I have not even discovered what was the cause of his disappearance!”

“I believe that one day, the truth will come out. They will not be sacrificed in vain!” Fang Yuan urged.

Lang Ya land spirit gritted his teeth, he did not continue this topic, he went back to the previous one: “Actually, it seems to me that the true inheritance which suits you the most is the first one. Refinement path has two styles, do you know of them?”

“I have heard of them.” Fang Yuan said.

Lang Ya land spirit continued: “The two styles are the hairy man heaven and earth style, and the human isolation style. Us hairy men refine Gu differently from humans, we can use the dao marks of heaven and earth to create the most conducive environment to refine Gu, and increase the chance of succeeding in the Gu refinement.”

Fang Yuan listened patiently, Lang Ya land spirit would have his reasons for saying this.

“Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had requested help from my main body, that was because my main body used the hairy men heaven and earth style to refine Gu, the success rate of refining Gu was higher than your human isolation style.”

“My main body not only knew the essence of the hairy man heaven and earth style, I even used Old Immortal Kong Jue’s true inheritance to break past our limits, reaching a higher level, I conceptualized an immortal killer move, called immortal tribulation tempering aperture!”

“Immortal tribulation tempering aperture?” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined, he felt deep interest.

Lang Ya land spirit smiled with great pride as he continued explaining.

As it turned out, this killer move, immortal tribulation tempering aperture, was a refinement path killer move that used several Immortal Gu and more than a hundred thousand mortal Gu to form.

It had an ingenious concept, it used the blessed land or grotto-heaven as the target of refinement, using the killer move to connect the immortal aperture with the outside world of the five regions, influencing the calamity or tribulation and using it to temper the immortal aperture itself.

“The calamities and tribulations of immortal apertures can have all sorts of strangeness, it makes them hard to deal with. But using this killer move, one can restrict the type of calamities and tribulations that happen. Do you know why Lang Ya blessed land was placed around Crescent Lake in the past? That was because the area near Crescent Lake has a lot of water path dao marks and refinement path dao marks.”

“My previous self always used the killer move, immortal tribulation tempering aperture, to deal with calamities and tribulations. Most often, water path and refinement path calamities would occur. After passing them, the immortal aperture would gain water path and refinement path dao marks.”

“A hundred and eighty thousand years ago, Lang Ya blessed land had no seas. But now, look at this vast ocean, the huge landmass has been reduced to three continents. This is the effect of a huge number of water path dao marks!”

Fang Yuan heard of this and thought about Spectral Soul using the myriad tribulations to refine the sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

“This killer move, immortal tribulation tempering aperture, is very similar in concept to Spectral Soul’s method. No, Shadow Sect had spies inside Lang Ya blessed land, maybe Spectral Soul’s method originated from immortal tribulation tempering aperture?”

Fang Yuan guessed correctly.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s method was derived from the killer move immortal tribulation tempering aperture. But his methods were more refined, he used wisdom path to deduce the type of tribulations before making additional preparations.

It was not like this immortal tribulation tempering aperture, it could only influence calamities and tribulations, there was a chance of failure. In the calamities and tribulations that Lang Ya blessed land went through, there were also fire path and lightning path tribulations, not all were water path and refinement path.

“Alright, you have Luo Po valley, Dang Hun Mountain, and wisdom Gu, I also have three true inheritances, we can do a one to one trade, which one do you want to exchange for?” Lang Ya land spirit asked.

This time, it was Fang Yuan’s turn to decide.

What should he choose?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1052: Listed on the Board, Heavenly Court’s Pursuit

Central Continent, Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fairy Zi Wei slowly opened her eyes.

She was adorned in a beautiful purple robe which could hardly conceal her graceful figure. Her eyes were like deep dark pools, with a sense of sorrow shrouding her face. Her skin was white as snow and her black hair hung down to her waist, her whole body was brimming with rank eight aura.

Letting out a breath, she withdrew her wisdom path killer move and descended from the air.

“Greetings to Ancestor Zi Wei.” On the ground, Feng Jin Huang, who had been waiting for a long time, quickly knelt down on the ground respectfully when she saw Fairy Zi Wei.

The corners of Fairy Zi Wei’s lips slightly curled up as she revealed a rare smile, the sadness on her face immediately faded and she seemed to blossom with radiance, giving off an immortal beauty that could move people’s souls.

“Huang Er, get up, no need to stand on ceremony. Speaking of it, your mother and I have some blood relation.”

From the looks of it, she was extremely pleased with this junior Feng Jin Huang.

Feng Jin Huang stood up with a reverential and admiring expression.

The person in front of her was a rank eight Gu Immortal!

In Feng Jin Huang’s mind, she did not dare to have extravagant hopes regarding the rank nine realm, rank eight was her lifelong dream. This Fairy Zi Wei in front of her originated from Spirit Affinity House, and had extremely high seniority in the sect. She had lived for at least one thousand six hundred years, she cultivated wisdom path and had joined Heavenly Court. She was dignified and beautiful, and it could be said she was everything Feng Jin Huang admired and was a realistic reference for the latter’s ideal goal.

“Ancestor Zi Wei, you have been deducing for three months in Hu Immortal blessed land, did you find anything?” Feng Jin Huang asked in curiosity.

Fairy Zi Wei gave a slight nod.

At this moment, she had already descended in front of Feng Jin Huang and was only a foot away from the ground, slowly floating in the air.

This was part of her personality, she had somewhat of an obsession towards cleanliness.

It was not necessary for her to speak about this to Feng Jin Huang, but Fairy Zi Wei still replied: “After these days of deductions, I am certain the original owner of Hu Immortal blessed land, Hu Immortal, was a member of the organization Defy.”

“Defy?!” Feng Jin Huang’s pupils shrank in surprise.

She might be a mortal but with parents who were famous Gu Immortals, she was aware of many secrets.

She had heard of this organization named Defy, it was a powerful undercover force of Central Continent, made from the secret alliance of some Gu Immortals.

The ten great ancient sects of Central Continent held the vast majority of resources and authority, controlling and suppressing other forces or lone cultivators.

Where there was suppression, there would be rebellion.

Organized forces rebelling against Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects were not few in number.

However, these forces usually did not last for long as they were either taken down by the ten great ancient sects or they disintegrated by themselves through internal discord.

However, this organization, Defy, was greatly hidden and was the force that had lasted the longest.

It was not that the ten great ancient sects had not targeted them, but there had been no effect. Most importantly, this organization was hidden truly deeply!

Even the members of the organization did not know the identities of other members and only used code names in numbers to address each other.

Right now, Feng Jin Huang suddenly heard Hu Immortal had been a member of Defy, she was truly surprised.

“On the surface, Hu Immortal was a lone immortal, and she obtained Dang Hun Mountain through fortuitous encounters and coincidence. Looking over it now, Defy was helping her from behind the scenes.” Fairy Zi Wei continued.

Feng Jin Huang’s eyes flashed, she recalled the scene when she was miserably defeated and under Fang Yuan’s feet, guessing: “Does that mean Fang Yuan is also a member of Defy? No wonder he appeared back then so coincidentally!”

Fairy Zi Wei, however, frowned slightly: “I attempted to deduce this, the result seems to be uncertain. But no matter what, Fang Yuan must have a deep connection with Defy. Huang Er, you have been avoiding contact with Hu Immortal land spirit and haven’t become the true owner of this blessed land, are you thinking of returning this blessed land to Fang Yuan?”

“Ancestor Zi Wei...” Cold sweat seeped out of Feng Jin Huang’s forehead.

Fairy Zi Wei smiled and reassured: “We are family, you don’t need to worry. I know Fang Yuan undoubtedly saved Feng Jiu Ge. Your father has stunning talents and is astonishingly gifted, he is someone who will leave a deep mark in history, what’s more, he repays kindness and hatred, he is loyal and righteous. I understand why he requested this of you.”

Feng Jin Huang quickly said: “Ancestor Zi Wei, you are magnanimous...”

Fairy Zi Wei waved her hand, stopping Feng Jin Huang’s words, speaking in a slightly meaningful tone: “But you need to remember, Fang Yuan is a wanted criminal listed on the Demon Judgment Board by Heavenly Court! Should you want to repay his kindness, you should not overdo it. In the future, I won’t stop you if you truly want to return Hu Immortal blessed land to him, I can even take responsibility for this. But that will be my bottom line, I hope that you two will not become too persistent and commit a huge mistake.”

Feng Jin Huang lowered her head: “I shall engrave your words in mind, ancestor.”

Fairy Zi Wei gave a slight nod before lightly flying to the sky.

As she flew, a gap opened up in Hu Immortal blessed land which connected to the outside world.

She then turned into a purple ray of light that flew out like a meteor, disappearing from Feng Jin Huang’s sight in an instant.

Fairy Zi Wei flew straight to Heavenly Court.

In Heavenly Court, halls stood tall and upright everywhere.

The purple ray of light Fairy Zi Wei had turned into cut through the air and entered a large hall.

Inside the hall, Fairy Zi Wei's main body was sitting cross-legged on a mat, discussing with two other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

The purple light flickered as it landed on her hand.

It turned into a will, several Immortal Gu and a few beads of immortal essence.

The 'Fairy Zi Wei' who had been at Hu Immortal blessed land was merely a will of the main body!

This will send the results of the deductions to Fairy Zi Wei's mind.

Fairy Zi Wei stored the Immortal Gu and immortal essence into her immortal aperture, she closed her eyes and went through the deduction results.

Several breaths of time later, she opened her deep, dark eyes and lightly said: "We have already found clues to Fang Yuan."

An old Gu Immortal sitting in front of her, who was known as Myriad Tidal Dragon, smiled: "Fairy Zi Wei, you live up to your reputation of being a wisdom path great expert on the same level as Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, you actually are able to use a will to deduce the crucial clues."

The more a will thinks, the more it is consumed. Even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's special will left in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had to hibernate to prevent expending itself due to thinking.

Fairy Zi Wei's method, however, was mysterious and powerful.

She used only a will to deduce, and not only did she succeed, that portion of will was not consumed by even twenty percent.

Such an attainment was truly awe-inspiring.

Fairy Zi Wei's main body had a slightly sorrowful expression, she did not comment on Myriad Tidal Dragon's praise, continuing: "If Fang Yuan had not already been managing Hu Immortal blessed land for some time, I would not have been able to deduce any clues. Fang Yuan has a close connection to Defy, although I was not able to obtain Fang Yuan's exact location, I know as long as we follow the clues and eliminate the core aspects of Defy, we will be able to find Fang Yuan."

Myriad Tidal Dragon nodded: "Fang Yuan has Spring Autumn Cicada, he destroyed Imperial Court blessed land and has obtained inheritances of Red Lotus Demon Venerable, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he is also an otherworldly demon, and was actually able to survive the battle in Southern Border. Such a dangerous variable must be eliminated! But if we want to deal with him, we must first deal with Spring Autumn Cicada."

"You can rest assured about this, after I woke up, I immediately made some preparations. I already successfully activated a killer move several days ago and have sealed Spring Autumn Cicada, it won't be able to activate within three months of time." The third Gu Immortal present in the hall spoke.

His voice was hoarse, he had a middle aged appearance with dark bags under his eyes and looked listless, giving others an impression of extreme fatigue.

However, Fairy Zi Wei and Myriad Tidal Dragon seemed to have confidence in him.

The latter smiled: "Since you, Wei Ling Yang, have made the move, then Spring Autumn Cicada is of no concern."

Fairy Zi Wei spoke: "Then we shall go to Ming Tang valley to capture Gong Sun Liang."

At the same time, in Central Continent, at the banks of Pot River.

Ying Wu Xie was standing at the riverbank, looking at the green willows and feeling the gentle breeze, however, he was feeling erratic inside.

After detouring around the collapsed area in Earth Abyss, he, along with Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Hei Lou Lan and Shi Nu had moved quite a distance before he could use a Gu formation to transport them to the eastern part of Central Continent.

This area was under the jurisdiction of Wind Cloud Manor, Ying Wu Xie had Fang Yuan’s body and as such, was a criminal wanted by Heavenly Court and Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, however, he still risked staying here and even had been staying here for three days.

He was waiting for a person.

Which person was worth him taking such a huge risk?

A green shadow approached them while flying at low altitude.

Ying Wu Xie’s mind jolted, he went to welcome the person.

The green shadow landed on the ground and halted, it was not a real person but a puppet.

This puppet had a human figure with two hands and two legs, its body was also robust. But its whole body seemed to be knitted with green grass and rough vines, its head, shoulders and even its rear had green grass growing all over them, all spiking up like knives.

The green grass puppet looked at the Gu worm in Ying Wu Xie’s hand and recognizing he was its objective, it hummed with a haughty tone: “My master was invited to participate in Ancestor Kong Kong’s treasure appraisal event, so he could not come. If you want to see him, you will have to wait three more days.”

“Wait for three more days?” Ying Wu Xie’s expression slightly changed.

“What? If you don’t have the patience, you don’t need to wait, I will quickly go back to inform master.” The green grass puppet spoke indifferently.

“I will wait.” Ying Wu Xie hurriedly smiled, “I have already waited for three days, there is no harm in waiting three more days. It is just that three days later, it will be a whole six days. If I somehow am still unable to see your master, then I can only give up on this transaction.”

The green grass puppet snorted before turning around and leaving.

Several steps later, it lightly stomped on the ground, leaping to the air and turning once again into a green shadow.

After he left, Ying Wu Xie’s expression immediately sank, his gaze flickering incessantly as he gazed at the receding figure of the green grass puppet.

When the green puppet’s shadow was out of Ying Wu Xie’s vision, three Gu Immortals appeared from the surroundings, gathering towards Ying Wu Xie.

They were Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Hei Lou Lan and Shi Nu.

“That green grass puppet just now, is it the rumored grass puppet avatar?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng asked in curiosity.

“Right.” Ying Wu Xie nodded, “It is a grass puppet avatar, formed from the rank six grass puppet Gu with rank six battle strength. When Feng Chan Zi ascended to immortal, his grandfather, Old Man Bei Feng, gave this grass puppet Immortal Gu to him as a gift.”

“Feng Chan Zi is wildly arrogant, we waited so long for him and he isn’t even coming to meet us? He only sent a grass puppet avatar to meet us?” Hei Lou Lan was dissatisfied.

Shi Nu sighed, saying helplessly: “To refine Fixed Immortal Travel, we must have the light of the immemorial era, all Gu recipes of Fixed Immortal Travel revolves around this critical material. And the light of the immemorial era, such a rare Gu refinement material, is one of the treasures of Wind Cloud Manor. We have no choice but to put up with them.”

Ying Wu Xie coldly snorted, but did not speak.

He wanted to rescue his main body, and to do that, he had to pass the regional wall. He was not like Fang Yuan, so Fixed Immortal Travel was almost a ‘necessary’ Gu to pass the regional wall.

Right now, he could only endure it.

He inwardly thought: “Spring Autumn Cicada has already been sealed, it seems Heavenly Court has begun to investigate me. I can’t stay for long in Central Continent, after I refine Fixed Immortal Travel, I need to hurry to Northern Plains and borrow luck from Longevity Heaven! Perhaps I can even make use of the power to conveniently get rid of Fang Yuan. Hmm? No, considering the time, tomorrow should be the day Fang Yuan has his earthly calamity. The earthly calamity of sovereign immortal aperture won’t be easy to pass. Heaven’s will cannot affect Fang Yuan, but can still make arrangements to deal with him. Most likely, not only will there be calamities and tribulations, there could also be human disasters.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1053: Fang Yuan Undergoes Tribulation (1/5)

“To think that I am back here again.” Fang Yuan sighed internally, he stopped flying as he descended from the sky.

All he saw was white.

An icy land filled with snow.

Huff huff huff...

Harsh winds blew around him.

In this intense wind, countless snowflakes and even icicles were flying around.

Because of the blizzard, Fang Yuan’s vision was greatly hindered.

Because the temperature was very low, Fang Yuan had to use many Gu worms to maintain his body temperature, to defend himself from the cold winds.

This was still Northern Plains.

But the location was at the northernmost end of Northern Plains, it was known to people as the northern icy plain.

This place originally had a grassland, but because of a devastating battle by experts, the entire terrain was completely destroyed, turning into a void of complete nothingness.

After the battle, the victor, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, turned into an immemorial desolate beast ice phoenix and breathed out absolute profound ice to freeze and restore this place.

Earlier, Hei Lou Lan chose this place to undergo her immortal ascension and become an immortal.

That was because the icy plain had Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s true meaning in strength path and transformation path. When strength path or transformation path Gu Masters ascend here, there would be a resonance of dao marks, the strength path and transformation path true meaning would manifest using the earthly calamity.

When the person undergoing tribulation destroys the earthly calamity, they would receive the infusion of true meaning, it was the same as receiving Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s guidance.

Memories flashed in Fang Yuan’s mind.

The image was so vivid, like it was yesterday.

But now, times were different.

Fairy Li Shan who had the highest cultivation level was dead, Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng had likely been forced to betray him, only Fang Yuan was left now.

His situation was very different from back then as well.

“Strength path and transformation path Gu Masters can only receive Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s infusion of true meaning once, that is during their immortal ascension. But now, with the killer move immortal tribulation tempering aperture, I might be able to replicate it again.” Fang Yuan thought.

He had not done anything like this before, he was not very certain.

But after talking with Lang Ya land spirit, he realized that there was a high possibility of success.

“Hei Lou Lan had the Great Strength True Martial Physique, during her immortal ascension, the danger was huge, she lost her Immortal Gu to barely pass it. My immortal aperture’s calamity is probably far more terrifying than hers!”

Fang Yuan felt immense pressure.

If not for the situation, he would not want to undergo tribulation so early.

Although once in a while, calamities and tribulations would occur in the immortal aperture, Gu Immortals had many methods to deal with them, the most common were time path methods to delay the rate of time of the immortal aperture, to stall the arrival of the calamities and tribulations.

But this way, the resources inside the immortal aperture would greatly diminish in production.

The gains and losses had to be assessed according to the Gu Immortal’s situation.

Lang Ya blessed land had once used time path methods and modified the tributary of the River of Time in the immortal aperture, thus, the time in the immortal aperture was greatly slowed.

But this method was not from Lang Ya land spirit. In the past, Long Hair Ancestor had requested the help of a time path great expert.

“I have too large of a tributary of the River of Time in this immortal aperture, I have to undergo tribulation every two months in the outside world. Even though my cultivation level rises quickly, and the resources in the immortal aperture grow rapidly, if I cannot endure the calamities and tribulations and die, it would be for nothing. After this calamity, I need to find some time path methods to modify the tributary of the River of Time in my immortal aperture.”

These were all matters for the future, the important thing now was the impending calamity.

“Huff!”

Fang Yuan let out a breath as his body shook, a mystical change was occurring in his immortal aperture.

“Immortal aperture, fall here!” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, a mystical light shone in his eyes.

Following a loud sound, his vision changed, taking a glance, he was already inside his immortal aperture.

Five regions, nine heavens.

It was vast and empty.

There were no cultivation resources, because Fang Yuan had not started managing it yet.

Only all sorts of Gu worms were placed in here.

At this moment, these Gu worms were flying around Fang Yuan, they were huge in quantity, resembling a giant black cloud.

Normally speaking, the immortal aperture was inside the Gu Immortal’s body. But now, the immortal aperture was placed in the outside world, and the Gu Immortal’s body was drawn inside.

At this moment, the situation with Fang Yuan’s body was like that of a land spirit, he could move freely inside the immortal aperture, but he could not leave. And the immortal aperture itself could connect to the heaven and earth qi outside and stabilize itself.

When Gu Immortals undergo tribulation, they would normally place their immortal apertures in the outside world.

There was another situation, that was when Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture had too many resources, if the heaven and earth qi inside were too limited in quantity, they would need to place the immortal aperture to take in and replenish the heaven and earth qi.

On the spot that Fang Yuan was originally standing, he had already disappeared.

The immortal aperture was placed on the ice and entered a point in space, it could not be seen as it was linked to the empty space.

The blizzard was still blowing.

There were no changes, as if Fang Yuan had never come.

Everything was as per normal.

But at the next moment, when Fang Yuan opened the entrance of the immortal aperture, everything changed.

In an instant, the entire surroundings rumbled, the glaciers shook, endless heaven and earth qi rushed into the immortal aperture through the entrance.

Soon, a vast amount of heaven and earth qi engulfed the place.

Blizzards and hail were converted into pure heaven and earth qi.

The entrance of the immortal aperture was connected to the outside world. By opening it, Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture started to connect to the outside world, drawing in heaven and earth qi continuously.

It was like a giant monster lurking in the sea, emerging out of the water and opening its mouth to suck in air.

The vast amount of heaven and earth qi rushed in, causing a tremor in the entire immortal aperture, but the magnitude was so small normal people could not notice it.

At the same time, the tributary of the River of Time started to fuse with the River of Time of the outside world. The rate of time of the immortal aperture thus slowed greatly.

When immortal apertures were placed outside, the rate of time inside would greatly decrease, converging towards the five regions’ time.

Lang Ya blessed land itself was modified by a time path Gu Immortal, and was also placed in the five regions, the rate of time inside was very close to that of the five regions.

Many Gu Immortals would also choose to place their immortal apertures outside and hide inside the immortal aperture in consideration of their lifespan.

Out of nowhere, a sensation informed Fang Yuan that the calamity was coming.

But because the immortal aperture was placed outside and time slowed down, Fang Yuan could clearly sense that the calamity was approaching at a ‘slower’ rate.

This was normal.

Every Gu Immortals would feel this whenever they had calamities and tribulations.

It was like the premonition of an earthquake, animals would growl and go berserk, it was the signifying of an apocalypse.

Heaven and earth qi continued to gush in at a slower rate, the waterfall at the start had become a large river, in just a short while, it turned into a stream.

The ‘appetite’ of the immortal aperture was limited.

Fang Yuan was calm.

He had rich experience, after seeing the heaven and earth qi, he started to organize his Gu worms.

Most of the Gu worms in the immortal aperture had already been arranged, the important thing was regarding the outside world.

A vast number of Gu worms flew outside of the entrance like swarms of bees.

Even though Fang Yuan could not leave, the Gu worms could.

Next, he controlled the Gu worms and set up arrangements.

In a few minutes, the arrangements were completed, Fang Yuan did not hesitate as he injected his immortal essence, activating the Gu worms.

Immortal Gu flew up one by one, shining with bright lights while floating in the sky.

The lights weaved together, eventually resonating with the Gu worms in the outside world.

Finally, a huge blue colored image was formed, it engulfed the immortal aperture and even expanded into the outside world, covering a huge surrounding area of the icy plain.

Immortal killer move — Immortal Tribulation Tempering Aperture!

Large amounts of immortal essence were expended, over ten thousand were used, but it was just the start!

The core Immortal Gu of this killer move were mostly rank seven, Fang Yuan’s green grape immortal essence were consumed rapidly.

Thankfully, he had already obtained a large amount of immortal essence stones from Lang Ya land spirit, he even borrowed Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.

Fifteen minutes later, the killer move was completed, and Fang Yuan’s immortal essence was consumed by sixty percent.

“This expenditure has greatly exceeded the number that Lang Ya land spirit said. But he also mentioned that the expenditure was dependent on the immortal aperture’s world itself, changing accordingly.”

Before undergoing the tribulation, Fang Yuan had already consumed more than half of his immortal essence.

However, he had already negotiated with Lang Ya land spirit, he could rapidly borrow immortal essence stones if needed.

In this tribulation, Lang Ya blessed land was Fang Yuan’s greatest backer.

But it was inappropriate to borrow now, Lang Ya land spirit would feel suspicious. they had already prepared enough moving perspective cup Gu to transport things during the tribulation. As for what the calamity would be, it was unknown.

He felt that the calamity was close.

Fang Yuan collected his Gu worms, he closed the entrance and waited in the immortal aperture patiently.

During this period, he checked his Gu worms again.

An hour later, the calamity descended.

The immortal aperture started to shake, heaven and earth qi appeared from every direction.

This was the heaven and earth qi inside the immortal aperture, in an instant, heaven and earth qi clashed as a blizzard formed.

Snow was moving wildly as fierce winds flew, in an instant, the immortal aperture turned into an icy world.

Fang Yuan saw this and was overjoyed: “Did the immortal tribulation tempering aperture method work?”

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

The blizzard rampaged in the immortal aperture, snow monsters formed in the blizzard one after another.

“Snow monster calamity? Slash!” Fang Yuan muttered internally, floating in the air as Gu worms flew around him, forming a defensive barrier, he shot out flying sword Immortal Gu.

Swoosh.

Flying sword Gu pierced through a snow monster’s head, coming out from the back.

In an instant, it flew back to Fang Yuan.

The snow monster cried out, the injuries in its head healed on its own as it continued to charge at Fang Yuan.

Snow monsters were like mud monsters and cloud beasts, if their core was not destroyed, they were hard to kill, all of these were problematic opponents.

Flying sword Gu alone could not be effective.

“But what I am using now is a sword path killer move.” Fang Yuan smiled coldly.

The snow monster ran for a few steps before growling, its core had been destroyed, as if its bones had melted, the snow monster broke down and became a pile of snow.

Sword path killer move — Sword Marks Targeting Death!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1054: Fang Yuan Undergoes Tribulation (2/5)

Fang Yuan was someone who learned from his mistakes, while traveling to Northern Plains, he encountered the mud monster and cloud beasts, suffering great losses because of them. Now that he was undergoing tribulation, how could he not fix this weakness?

Speaking of which, there was a complicated story behind the immortal killer move sword marks targeting death.

When Fang Yuan entered Lang Ya blessed land, he healed himself while seeking help from Lang Ya land spirit to reverse refine flying sword Immortal Gu and the other rank seven Immortal Gu.

He was a rank six Gu Immortal now, it was very hard for him to use rank seven Immortal Gu.

Lang Ya land spirit was very straightforward, because Fang Yuan was a member of Lang Ya Sect, as an external supreme elder, he was one of them, he gave good advice.

“I can obviously reverse refine these Immortal Gu. And to reverse refine them from rank seven to rank six will be much easier than promoting them to rank seven from rank six. But don’t you find it a waste? Most importantly, reverse refinement would take quite some time, your tribulation is nearing, there is little time. If you start the reverse refinement now, it will not be done in time. You might as well use this killer move.”

Lang Ya land spirit said this as he handed the killer move, sword marks targeting death, to Fang Yuan.

“You are very lucky, this killer move was bought by my previous self, it is suitable for many sword path Immortal Gu to use.”

Fang Yuan felt strange when he heard that, Long Hair Ancestor was purely a refinement path Gu Immortal, why would the land spirit purchase a sword path killer move that he could not use?

But after looking at it, he understood why.

As it turned out, sword marks targeting death was a killer move that permanently expended the dao marks in the sword path Immortal Gu to carve them on the target. After the sword path Immortal Gu flies away, the sword path dao marks would find the target’s weak spot and attack it.

Like earlier, Fang Yuan used flying sword Immortal Gu as the core to use sword marks targeting death and pierced the desolate beast snow monster. This attack was not fatal, the wound caused by the Immortal Gu healed quickly. But the dao marks it left behind were still in the snow monster’s body, it attacked its hidden core and once broken, the snow monster suffered a fatal blow and died.

This way, flying sword Immortal Gu could kill targets like snow monsters, it no longer worked with little effect against these enemies.

But this killer move had a huge drawback.

That was the permanent expenditure of the Immortal Gu’s dao marks.

Immortal Gu were large fragments of the Great Dao, the product of countless dao marks. The higher the rank of the Immortal Gu, the larger the fragment of the Great Dao, and the higher the number of dao marks.

The more sword marks targeting death was used, the fewer the dao marks in the sword path Immortal Gu, they could not be recovered. This way, the Immortal Gu would get weaker and weaker. At a certain point, a qualitative change would occur, and the rank six Immortal Gu would turn back into a mortal Gu, or the rank seven Immortal Gu would become a rank six.

This weakness was severe, it made sword marks targeting death an unfavored killer move.

The previous Lang Ya land spirit bought this killer move for a low price because he was interested in the killer move itself.

In fact, every usage of the sword path killer move sword marks targeting death was akin to reverse refining the Immortal Gu. Except that the reverse refinement was very minute, a large number of usages were needed to produce a clear effect.

Once Fang Yuan understood this, he knew why Lang Ya land spirit had bought this killer move.

The previous Lang Ya land spirit’s favorite interest was to refine Gu.

Fang Yuan thought over it and accepted this sword path killer move.

Without question, this killer move was extremely suitable for him now.

Winds howled as snow blew around.

Sword light entered the blizzard, the blizzard could not block the sharp sword light, it was easily pierced.

The sword light drew a beautiful arc in the sky, it hit a desolate beast snow monster’s chest, before flying out from its back, turning around and flying back to Fang Yuan.

The injuries healed quickly, the desolate beast snow monster laughed, it was about to move when its body scattered, turning into a pile of snow.

In a breath’s time, dozens of small snow monsters came out of this pile.

But these snow monsters were only ten or twenty feet tall, they were not a problem.

Another sword marks targeting death!

This move was very effective, desolate beast snow monsters were destroyed in just one hit.

Fang Yuan nodded in satisfaction.

At this point, he finally experienced one of the advantages of sword path.

“When Gu Masters cultivate, they use Gu, nurture Gu, and refine Gu, these are extremely profound and deep. It is still flying sword Immortal Gu, but I changed the method of usage and received an incredibly different result. Again!”

Fang Yuan used sword marks targeting death again.

In the blizzard, desolate beast snow monsters formed again, but they were quickly killed by Fang Yuan.

The strength of the snow monsters were related to their size.

Ten or twenty feet tall snow monsters could be dealt with by rank one or two Gu Masters. Sixty feet tall snow monsters were desolate beasts, they were on par with rank six Gu Immortals. Seventy feet tall snow monsters were equal to rank seven Gu Immortals.

These sixty feet tall snow monsters were all killed by Fang Yuan, they were easy targets.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength was raised greatly, back then in Hu Immortal blessed land, he had so much trouble facing the swamp crab, but now against an endless number of snow monsters, he could fight calmly and control the situation.

But Fang Yuan did not relax, he was staying vigilant.

“I am having an easy time because I am using the rank seven flying sword Immortal Gu to deal with desolate beast snow monsters, and also because sword marks targeting death is a powerful move that consumes dao marks. Furthermore, the swamp crab had brought over gruel mud Immortal Gu’s effect with it, while these snow monsters have no such Immortal Gu. Hmm?”

Fang Yuan’s expression focused.

He observed closely, after those desolate beast snow monsters died, the new, small snow monsters that were formed were growing in size.

Ten feet to twenty feet, twenty feet to thirty feet...

These snow monsters were growing stronger!

“If they are allowed to continue growing, would they become sixty feet desolate beast snow monsters?” Fang Yuan did not dare to be careless, he stopped using flying sword Immortal Gu, as he waved his hands, countless dark vortexes flew out.

Bam bam bam...

These black bullets rained down like a storm.

The snow monsters were instantly faced with a disaster, countless numbers died.

But soon, from these smaller snow monsters’ corpses, more of them spawned.

Fang Yuan killed dozens of snow monsters, but over a hundred came back up!

Fang Yuan saw this and frowned, he felt troubled.

But he observed carefully, although the snow monsters that came back were high in numbers, they were much smaller now.

Fang Yuan had a guess, at his will, thousands of green wind blades flew out around his body, shooting out.

The wind blades arrived like a huge net, engulfing the countless snow monsters on the ground.

The desolate beast snow monsters were intact, but the small snow monsters were sliced into pieces.

At once, marks from the blades were on the ground as snow splattered.

Fang Yuan activated his investigative Gu, his eyes shined brightly as he observed the battlefield.

“As expected, once ten feet tall snow monsters die, they cannot produce more snow monsters.” After confirming his guess, he relaxed slightly.

Soon after, he had a flash of inspiration: “Is this because of the blizzard?”

Splitting his focus, he activated over a hundred mortal Gu in a few breaths' time.

A domain of darkness formed from under his feet, creating a dark veil.

This was Gu Immortal Hei Cheng's battlefield killer move — Dark Veil.

The immortal aperture could not normally have battlefield killer moves inside. This was because battlefield killer moves had dao marks, they changed the environment, they clashed with the immortal aperture's own dao marks and would result in damage.

But the battlefield killer moves here referred to immortal battlefield killer moves. Fang Yuan's dark veil was mortal level, it was not problematic.

He also had Xue Song Zi's mortal battlefield killer move, snow domain, but if he used it, it would increase the strength of the snow monsters, it was inappropriate.

Once dark veil was used, the surrounding blizzard weakened.

As expected, the small snow monsters started growing at a slower speed.

But this did not last, the blizzard seemed to have been enraged, it rampaged more fiercely, as the snow moved rapidly, dark veil was being compressed, it shrunk to Fang Yuan's feet before completely collapsing with a loud sound.

Only twenty percent of the hundred Gu worms that made up dark veil survived, they were retrieved by Fang Yuan.

"Desolate beast snow monsters appear continuously, and small snow monsters appear from their corpses, they would also become stronger at an unthinkable speed due to the blizzard. It is counterproductive to try and isolate the blizzard. Now it seems, I can only get rid of the small snow monsters as well as the desolate beast snow monsters..." Fang Yuan concluded.

He did not guess wrongly.

This calamity was very powerful.

This was only sovereign immortal aperture's first calamity, but it had greatly exceeded Hu Immortal blessed land's fifth (blue charm lightning shadow), sixth (swamp crab), and seventh (blood poison kerria flowers) earthly calamities.

His immortal essence was continuously expended.

As he concentrated deeply, his mind was feeling fatigue.

But Fang Yuan was also getting more familiar with using the killer move sword marks targeting death.

Time passed.

The heaven and earth qi in the immortal aperture continued to rumble, the blizzard formed also was growing immensely.

Fang Yuan's expression was grim.

He noticed that this earthly calamity was not only huge, it was going to last a long time, it was far stronger than the ten great catastrophes!

Desolate beast snow monsters continued to increase in numbers, Fang Yuan's sword marks targeting death could no longer kill them quickly enough.

The newly formed small snow monsters were large in numbers, Fang Yuan had to use mortal killer moves to kill them.

He was handling both matters at the same time, it was hard to manage them.

“Thankfully, these snow monsters cannot fly. I occupy the high ground, even though I need to deal with the blizzard, the initiative is still with me.”

The moment this thought flashed in Fang Yuan’s mind, the loud screech of an eagle entered Fang Yuan’s ears.

Fang Yuan raised his head and his expression turned dark, this was bad!

In the blizzard, iron crown eagles made from snow were forming.

An eagle flapped its wings, charging at Fang Yuan with a ferocious aura.

Fang Yuan quickly turned around, using sword marks targeting death to deal with the eagle.

But in a short time, three more iron crown eagles formed, flying in the air, encircling him.

His pressure increased, danger was approaching!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1055: Fang Yuan Undergoes Tribulation (3/5)

Three iron crown eagles charged at Fang Yuan.

Sword marks targeting death!

Fang Yuan internally gasped, to think that at the crucial moment, this had happened.

As the activation of the killer move failed, the backlash caused blood to flow down from the corner of his mouth.

After all, he had owned this sword path killer move for too short of a time. In an emergency, when he was not focused, the failure rate of activation would surge.

An eagle screech resounded, it could burst eardrums.

The iron crown eagle in front of him pounced.

Fang Yuan quickly dodged, a phantom image behind him flickered as light illusion bat wings appeared, dodging the eagle’s attack.

But the shield of wind around him was already broken, the iron crown eagle’s claws tore through it in a moment.

Fang Yuan squinted, he decided to use sword marks targeting death again, and he succeeded!

The sword light was extremely sharp, it easily pierced the iron crown eagle’s back, and continued to shoot out.

Suddenly, cold winds blew behind him as Fang Yuan’s heart skipped a beat, he had no time to think further, he used sword escape Immortal Gu immediately.

Swoosh, he shot out like an arrow, piercing the sky, by rising in altitude, he narrowly avoided the attack of the iron crown eagle behind him.

He temporarily escaped danger, Fang Yuan stopped using Sword Escape.

Sword escape Immortal Gu flew straight, it was extremely fast, Fang Yuan flew into the sky and was more than ten li away from the iron crown eagle.

Letting out a breath, Fang Yuan’s heartbeat returned to normal.

After regaining his composure, he willed and summoned flying sword Immortal Gu.

Earlier, he could not recall Flying Sword as it had flown away after piercing the iron crown eagle. There was more than ten breaths of time needed for it to return to Fang Yuan.

As for the iron crown eagle which got pierced, it cried out pitifully as it crashed towards the ground.

Before landing on the ground, its entire body turned into a big mushy pile of snow and ice, scattering.

The remaining two iron crown eagles charged to kill Fang Yuan from left and right respectively, as the blizzard roared.

Fang Yuan was unwilling to face them head on, he used Sword Escape and retreated.

Even though his body was superb, it was not as tough as his immortal zombie body.

Sword path was good in offense while weak in defense.

Sword escape Immortal Gu allowed Fang Yuan to fly like an arrow, tearing through the sky as he pulled away from the iron crown eagles, the effect was immediate.

Even flying sword Immortal Gu was not as fast as Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan flew in a circle in the sky before converging with flying sword Immortal Gu, retrieving it.

Fang Yuan held flying sword Immortal Gu in his hand as he injected immortal essence into it, at the same time, he mobilized his Gu worms and activated more than a hundred supplementary Gu worms, a profound light was created as it entered flying sword Immortal Gu.

The two iron crown eagles were coincidentally chasing him with one in front of the other.

Fang Yuan stretched out his fingers, he felt a small tremor in his hand as flying sword Gu flew out, it turned into an astonishing sword light, it seemed to have the power to pierce the universe!

Flying sword Immortal Gu and the iron crown eagles rapidly approached each other. In the blink of the eye, flying sword Immortal Gu flew through the first iron crown eagle and proceeded to pierce the second one without any loss in momentum.

Two birds with one stone!

The iron crown eagle in front flew for a moment before breaking apart.

The one behind was still intact, it continued to fly towards Fang Yuan, as if it had an immense grudge against him.

Fang Yuan was about to take back flying sword Immortal Gu when his mind shuddered!

Out of nowhere, a burst of true meaning was entering his mind, Fang Yuan’s brows raised, he could not conceal his joy.

“This is Reckless Savage’s infusion of true meaning! It seems that my original guess was not wrong, it succeeded!”

Fang Yuan was purposely undergoing tribulation in the icy plain, it was for the true meaning of Reckless Savage.

Because in historical records, when strength path and transformation path Gu Masters undergo tribulation in the icy plain, they would receive an infusion of Reckless Savage’s true meaning, obtaining a growth in their attainment levels.

But this gift was only for Gu Masters when they ascended to immortal. After the Gu Master becomes an immortal, the calamities and tribulations happen in their immortal apertures, they would not receive any infusion of true meaning.

But after Fang Yuan obtained the killer move immortal tribulation tempering aperture, he wondered if this killer move would be able to cause the infusion of true meaning.

Earlier, when he killed the desolate beast snow monsters and small snow monsters, he did not receive any infusion of true meaning, he thought he was wrong. But after killing the iron crown eagle, there seemed to be an infusion of true meaning, although it was a dangerous situation, he could not confirm it.

Now, he could finally feel the infusion of true meaning.

A sense of understanding arose in him.

He seemed to have turned into an iron crown eagle, from birth, until its first flight, and until it soared the skies. He felt its wings flapping strongly, they had great strength. He clenched his fists like two claws of an iron crown eagle, he looked around, being able to see up to a gigantic distance away.

His strength path and transformation path attainment levels were rising.

And his flying attainment level was also rising slightly!

The infusion of true meaning was like the guidance of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, without any withheld information.

Undeniably, the rise of attainment levels gave great benefits in all aspects.

If he trained normally, his attainment level might rise after decades or centuries. Other than dream realms, only something like the infusion of Reckless Savage’s true meaning here could raise the attainment level of someone so easily.

“In fact, dream realms themselves are the manifestations of emotions, obsessions and desires, they are the remains of countless wills. Once one succeeds in exploring a dream realm, their attainment level would rise, it is the same as breaking free from the obstruction of emotions in the dream realm, without losing oneself, one could extract true meaning from these scattered memories and gain a growth in attainment level.”

“Everything, in essence, is still true meaning infusion!”

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with bright light.

The iron crown eagle approached, but Fang Yuan easily dodged it.

There was only one iron crown eagle left, Fang Yuan created some distance from it and used sword marks targeting death to kill it without any mishaps.

Looking over his immortal essence, there was still some left.

Even though he used multiple sword path killer moves and rank seven Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan was well prepared, he was not as desperate as the time he was traveling.

He had not borrowed from Lang Ya land spirit yet.

Most of his resources were in fact spent on the killer move immortal tribulation tempering aperture!

There were no enemies in the sky now, Fang Yuan looked at the ground.

The snow monsters stood on the ground, raising their heads and growling at him.

“The number is higher now.” Fang Yuan frowned.

At the next moment, countless green wind blades and dark vortexes appeared out of nowhere, shooting down. Like surging waves of a river, he unleashed a terrifying attack that covered the entire area, engulfing all of the snow monsters.

Boom boom boom...

Explosions occurred continuously.

After dozens of breaths of time, Fang Yuan stopped attacking.

The huge number of snow monsters had decreased innumerably, the ground had a lot of empty space now, only the desolate beast snow monsters were still around, like dozens of huge pillars.

He had only used mortal methods, they were not threatened by them.

Huff huff huff.

Small sounds were produced, completely covered by the raging blizzard.

More small snow monsters emerged from the snow.

“It has only been such a short time, but these snow monsters are still persisting!” Fang Yuan felt this was quite a headache.

He could only use sword marks targeting death to kill the desolate beast snow monsters quickly. At the same time, he used mortal methods to kill the uncountable number of small snow monsters.

What made him feel strange was, no matter how many snow monsters he killed, be it desolate beasts or not, he received no true meaning of Reckless Savage.

“This earthly calamity is very strange, there aren’t records of it in history. But at its current strength, it has already surpassed Hei Lou Lan’s ascension.”

At this time, spirals formed in the blizzard, as a change occurred.

Cranes flew out of the spirals.

These cranes had pure white and clean feathers, they were graceful and had beautiful cries, they were desolate beast nine palace cranes.

Fang Yuan licked his lips, he charged forward with bloodthirsty intent.

After killing one, there was indeed an infusion of true meaning infusion, Fang Yuan felt very excited, his eyes were shining brightly.

Snow descended, wild winds blew, Fang Yuan engaged in combat with these nine palace cranes.

He moved around rapidly in all directions, he could maneuver agilely as he flew up and down.

At first, he fought alone against many enemies, he was pushed back and fell into a passive position.

But after killing a few nine palace cranes, he had more space to move around, he could retreat and advance more easily.

As his gains increased, he started to gain control of the situation, he had an easier time.

Nine of these nine palace cranes had appeared this time, they were three times the number of iron crown eagles, but they were still killed by Fang Yuan, it just took a longer time.

The results were gratifying.

Fang Yuan could feel his attainment level rising, he was improving again.

This type of feeling towards getting stronger was extremely intoxicating.

However, when Fang Yuan saw the uncountable number of snow monsters on the ground, his heart sank again.

Earlier, he was only fighting over a dozen desolate beast snow monsters, but now there were fifty to sixty of them!

And in the blizzard, more and more small snow monsters were appearing, while the desolate beast snow monsters were progressing to ancient desolate beast level.

This situation made Fang Yuan determined to stop it as soon as possible.

“In this situation, I can only use the third sword path killer move!”

Immortal killer move — Triple Layered Sword Wave.

Fang Yuan took in a deep breath, more than sixty percent of his concentration was on this, he activated more than five hundred mortal Gu at once, and even more supplementary Gu worms as time passed.

This killer move’s difficulty as well as the time needed to activate it were far higher than sword marks targeting death.

Thus, it could not be used extensively.

Finally, Fang Yuan took out wave sword Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu looked like either a blade or water at various times, it expanded in the air, soon resembling a blue circular wave of water, it surrounded the area all around it.

Fang Yuan was about to attack the snow monsters, when at this time, a huge figure descended.

Fang Yuan raised his head and drew in a deep breath.

He saw that a giant ruin bat had formed and filled the sky, covering the surroundings!

“Oh no!” Fang Yuan’s heart jumped.

This ruin bat was huge, it was an ancient desolate beast, able to fight rank seven Gu Immortals.

At the same time, ruin bats were space path beasts, they had incredible destructive force if they rampaged in the immortal aperture, they could even shatter the walls of the immortal aperture!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1056: Fang Yuan Undergoes Tribulation (4/5)

“It is only my first earthly calamity, but there are so many desolate beast snow monsters, and even an ancient ruin bat...” Fang Yuan looked up with a bitter expression.

The ancient ruin bat was huge, it cast a shadow that loomed over Fang Yuan and countless snow monsters.

At once, the blizzard weakened.

The snow monsters stopped making cries and roars, they looked up at this ferocious beast in the sky.

“Before leaving Lang Ya blessed land, I had already used luck path killer moves to increase my luck. Since the tribulation, I have been using dog shit luck Immortal Gu continuously. My luck should have reduced the might of the earthly calamity already. Even so, this earthly calamity is still so incredibly powerful!”

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, focusing his mind again.

The ancient ruin bat flew in the sky, its body was huge like a mountain, crashing down on Fang Yuan.

At once, aura was bursting out, the air was compressed as a strong pressure could be felt.

Sword path killer move — Triple Layered Sword Wave.

Fang Yuan had no way to retreat, he could only face it and use the third sword path killer move.

Rumble!

A loud sound.

The sword waves around him started moving around, they rumbled as ripples appeared.

These waves were shining with a silvery white light, they were extremely sharp and had incredible offensive power.

The waves moved upwards in defiance of gravity, splitting apart in the air, as multiple gigantic waves crashed at the ancient ruin bat.

The ruin bat did not make a sound, it smashed these waves.

Fang Yuan pushed with a hand, swoosh, another huge wave was summoned.

This wave was larger than the first one, it filled the entire surroundings. There were many ripples at the edge of the wave, they were shining and emitting a dangerous aura.

Wherever the sword waves went, everything was cleansed, the blizzard was wiped out and even air shattered.

Evidently, this was an area of effect attack.

It used the rank seven wave sword Immortal Gu as the core, along with several water path Immortal Gu which were borrowed from Lang Ya land spirit by Fang Yuan.

The second sword wave crashed into the ruin bat.

The ruin bat, which was flying down, stopped moving for a moment, at the same time, it screeched out in pain.

The sword wave did not last long, after it receded, Fang Yuan could see that there were deep marks left by swords on the ancient ruin bat.

In normal situations, ruin bats would avoid danger and would retreat when they encountered danger that threatened their lives. But this ancient ruin bat was not a normal specimen, it was formed from the earthly calamity, after getting injured, it did not rest, it charged at Fang Yuan relentlessly.

The ruin bat was a space path beast, facing it, Fang Yuan’s sword escape Immortal Gu had little effect.

Because the space around Fang Yuan was affected by the ruin bat’s strength. One or two steps would take several hundred steps to travel in reality.

Simply dodging was a terrible idea. Even though the ruin bat flew slowly, its space path powers also restricted Fang Yuan’s speed.

The only way to resist was by eliminating the enemy, using offense against offense, that was the best plan!

Thankfully, triple layered sword wave could unleash three sword waves, its might grew with each wave.

The third wave!

The sword wave was ten meters tall, it crashed towards the ancient ruin bat with immense might, the sound of the moving wave filled the world. The ripples were sharp with sword light, even Fang Yuan, who was the user, felt his body shuddering, a feeling of chilliness inside him.

Boom!

The sword wave and the ruin bat collided.

The ancient ruin bat’s charge halted, it raised its head and cried out in utter pain.

The sword wave struck at its stomach, the wounds from earlier were hit again, its injuries were deepening. Finally, when the wave was about to run out of water, it pierced through the ancient ruin bat’s back.

Poof.

With a loud sound, a large amount of flesh and blood fell from the ancient ruin bat’s body.

After being cut by the third sword wave, the ancient ruin bat ‘slimmed down’, its huge body became much smaller.

The gigantic mountain which emitted an immense pressure had been lifted.

Fang Yuan felt his entire body relaxing. The space path power that was restricting him earlier had vanished.

The heavily injured ancient ruin bat crashed to the ground, after floating around like a kite with its strings cut.

With a huge sound, snow and ice were sent flying on impact.

“I killed it!” Fang Yuan was joyous, but his expression suddenly changed.

A huge amount of true meaning entered his mind, like a waterfall from the nine heavens.

This true meaning far surpassed the total gains from earlier.

In an instant, Fang Yuan’s state of mind was scattered.

Fang Yuan forgot himself, he was like a ruin bat, from birth to growing up, until his death. Flying in the sky, he tore through space, traveling freely in the huge world.

After a momentary daze, Fang Yuan jolted to awareness, his eyes, which were unfocused, gave off a sharp light.

“It seems that too much true meaning would be like a snake swallowing an elephant, I would overeat and have a risk of dying from bursting my stomach!” Realizing this, cold sweat dripped from Fang Yuan’s forehead.

Reckless Savage’s true meaning was good, it was the fastest way to raise one’s attainment level.

But there was a limit to everything in the world. Too much of a good thing would lead to harm.

With too much of Reckless Savage’s true meaning, the Gu Immortal’s consciousness would be destroyed. Thankfully, Fang Yuan had a wisdom path foundation and had defensive wisdom path Immortal Gu that he borrowed from Lang Ya land spirit.

Otherwise, Fang Yuan’s consciousness would be destroyed by the true meaning, after losing his senses, he might think he was truly a ruin bat that had died in the earthly calamity.

“I have little immortal essence left, thankfully, the ancient ruin bat is already dead...”

Fang Yuan floated in the sky, looking down.

After the ruin bat’s corpse landed on the ground, it turned into snow, breaking apart.

But there were a hundred desolate beast snow monsters on the ground, along with an uncountable number of small snow monsters, seventy feet tall ancient desolate beast snow monsters were starting to appear!

“Damn it, it has only been such a short time.” Seeing this, Fang Yuan felt terrible, he felt a strong sense of helplessness towards such a huge group of enemies.

“To clear up these snow monsters, I will need to borrow immortal essence stones from Lang Ya land spirit.” Fang Yuan was not willing to do it, he had already repaid the debt he owed to Lang Ya land spirit, but now he had no choice but to borrow again.

The blizzard which had weakened was getting stronger again.

Palm-sized snowflakes flew down from the sky. Raging winds rampaged wildly.

Two ancient ruin bats started to form in the blizzard.

Fang Yuan’s body shook, his expression was ashen as he cursed internally: “I might as well die, what sort of earthly calamity is this? Even heavenly tribulations are not this terrifying!”

This was of course, just a complaint to vent his emotions, Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, he shot out like an arrow, taking the initiative to attack!

The ancient ruin bat earlier had almost killed him already. If two appeared at the same time and attacked Fang Yuan, he could not win!

The earthly calamity’s power was starting to decline, it was going to end.

These two ancient ruin bats formed slowly, it could not compare to earlier.

Fang Yuan wanted to attack before these two ancient ruin bats finished forming.

But at this time, a new blizzard started to fall from the sky.

Several huge snowballs were directed towards him, they were like horse carriages, thankfully, Fang Yuan had quasi-grandmaster flying attainment, he dodged in time and was not hit.

Fang Yuan took a look, the perpetrators were the snow monsters on the ground.

After the nurturing of the blizzard, the ancient snow monsters had increased in numbers, growing rapidly, earlier there were only a few, now there were twenty-eight of them.

These ancient snow monsters clenched their fists as snowballs formed. After growling, they stretched their hands as the horse carriage-like snowballs shot up like meteors, towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank to rock bottom, these two ancient ruin bats were hard to deal with, and with these snowballs obstructing his movement, his plan would be delayed, by the time these two ancient ruin bats formed, Fang Yuan would fail this tribulation for sure!

Just as Fang Yuan was in a dangerous situation while undergoing tribulation in his immortal aperture, someone else was also undergoing tribulation in the icy plain.

This was a Gu Master’s immortal ascension, the heaven and earth qi was turning into the tribulation.

“Master, save me!” The Gu Master cried out, facing the attack of the frost lightning, he could not retaliate, he could only watch as death descended.

Bam.

A soft sound echoed.

At the crucial moment, a figure stood in front of the Gu Master undergoing tribulation.

The frost lightning that was unstoppable against the Gu Master was fragile as paper in front of this person.

The frost lightning appeared and disappeared just as quickly.

it was useless, it could not even touch that person’s clothing.

“Master’s cultivation level is so high!” The Gu Master sighed. Ever since the tribulation started, he had been sighing and feeling shocked, he was almost numb now.

“This is only the flying frost jumping lightning tribulation, it is not even one of the ten great catastrophes.” Gu Immortal Chu Du was expressionless, he felt regret looking at the lingering frost lightning.

“Master, from your words, you are not happy with the intensity of the tribulation?” The Gu Master asked.

Chu Du answered plainly: “When Gu Masters ascend, they draw in heaven and earth qi, during this process, they would mingle with heaven’s will. If they ask any questions regarding cultivation, heaven’s will would give them an answer. This is also known as natural inspiration.”

“But in the northern icy plain, when strength path Gu Masters undergo immortal ascension, they would trigger Reckless Savage’s true meaning. Because of this, the Gu Master does not interact with heaven’s will, instead, they will mingle with Reckless Savage’s true meaning, and their strength path and transformation path attainment levels will rise sharply.”

“The stronger the tribulation, the higher the quantity of Reckless Savage’s true meaning gathered. I nurtured all of you disciples because I want the true meaning of Reckless Savage during your ascension. Obtaining the true meaning would allow my strength path attainment level to rise.”

“So that’s it.” The Gu Master realized: “So this is what master meant regarding the need for my help when you made me your disciple back then?”

Chu Du was about to speak when a huge sound from a great distance was heard.

“Hmm?” Chu Du looked, he saw that far away, space was cracked, like a broken mirror, the scene of Fang Yuan fighting with the ancient ruin bats in his immortal aperture could be seen.

“This?!” Chu Du’s body shook, his eyes were shining immediately.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1057: Fang Yuan Undergoes Tribulation (5/5)

Chu Du.

Known as Domination Immortal, a legendary person in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world!

He was born in a poor family, he was not of the Huang Jin bloodline, he had a lowly start, even his aperture awakening was by chance. Without any teachers or tribesmen to help him, he cultivated alone. He cultivated strength path, but was not restrained by the flaws of it. With his overwhelming talent, he independently created jin strength Gu, strength of ten jin Gu, jun strength Gu, strength of ten jun Gu and others.

Using these Gu worms, he grew step by step, under everyone’s shocked gazes, he turned from a mortal to an immortal.

But this was not the end of his legend, when he became a Gu Immortal, he went back to his roots and created the human jun strength branch.

This small branch gave the dying strength path a surge of rejuvenation, it was as if vitality had filled dying trees, strength path shined again in a different light.

After the beast strength phantom branch and atmospheric heaven and earth branch, it was recognized by everyone that strength path had a new human jun strength branch.

With his efforts alone, he changed the future of strength path.

Nobody could deny his grand achievement.

Now, nine out of ten Northern Plains Gu Masters cultivated strength path on the side, they mostly used the human jun strength branch.

Destiny was a mystical thing, nobody could decipher it.

Be it Chu Du or Fang Yuan, they had never thought that they would meet in such a situation.

Fang Yuan was undergoing tribulation, because of the ancient ruin bat’s power, his immortal aperture’s walls were shattered, connecting to the outside world.

And Chu Du was assisting his disciple in his immortal ascension tribulation, absorbing the true meaning of Reckless Savage.

The northern icy plain was so huge, but these two people chose their tribulation location so closely.

Both of their eyes made contact over the distance in an instant!

Chu Du had just destroyed his disciples tribulation, one of his hands was behind his back, while the other was toying with the frost lightning, he was calm and composed.

Fang Yuan was wearing a white robe, he had a sharp gaze, his body was injured, battle intent rose in him like he was a divine sword, the sharpness in him made even Chu Du frown.

“Someone is undergoing tribulation here, what is going on? The ancient ruin bat inside has Reckless Savage’s true meaning, it manifested using the tribulation. This person has such an amazing method, he can replicate the immortal ascension and obtain Reckless Savage’s true meaning to improve himself!” Chu Du felt immense shock before it turned into joy.

“Domination Immortal Chu Du!” Fang Yuan was shocked: “This person is helping another person with his tribulation, he must be after Reckless Savage’s true meaning. Oh no, he saw what is going on here, he will definitely seek me!”

Fang Yuan had obtained the killer move immortal tribulation tempering aperture from land spirit, this was a huge attraction to Domination Immortal Chu Du.

“As long as I can get his method, why would I need to bother with raising disciples for immortal ascension? I can undergo tribulations myself and draw in Reckless Savage’s true meaning, the tribulations would be stronger and I would obtain even more true meaning, that would be best! I must, I must get this method!!” Chu Du screamed in his mind, he shot towards Fang Yuan like a flash of lightning.

He was known as the Domination Immortal, in the past when he was rank six, an experienced lone immortal came to find trouble with him and was beaten to a pulp. The lone immortal called for reinforcements, but the three lone immortals were chased by the newly ascended Chu Du, he chased them for an enormous distance before killing all three immortals.

A hundred years later, Chu Du and a Gu Immortal of Liu tribe had a conflict, after a dozen rounds of fighting, the Liu tribe Gu Immortal lost and begged him for mercy, but Chu Du killed him without hesitation.

Next, Liu tribe sent out several Gu Immortals, Chu Du’s two fists could not rival four palms, he was outnumbered, he went into seclusion for decades. When he appeared again, he had rank seven cultivation level, he went around and destroyed eighteen of Liu tribe’s resource points in three days. Three of Liu tribe’s Gu Immortals chased after him, but he did not run away, instead, he forced the three Liu tribe Gu Immortals to retreat and even nearly attacked their headquarters.

Chu Du encircled Liu tribe’s blessed land and refused to leave. Liu tribe’s first supreme elder emerged outside in anger, fighting with Chu Du for a long time, he was an experienced rank seven expert, but he could not do anything to Chu Du. He could only let him leave freely.

After this battle, Chu Du's reputation surged, the entire Gu Immortal world found out about his domineering style!

No Gu Immortal dared to look down on him. Those who tried to find trouble with him had to consider it thoroughly before acting.

But after this battle, Chu Du became very low profile, he cultivated in seclusion and rarely showed himself. It was only during the recent Northern Plains auction that he appeared in front of everyone.

Now, it seemed that in the past, Chu Du gained a huge growth in strength and defeated Liu tribe because of Reckless Savage's true meaning.

He nurtured a few Gu Masters and helped them to ascend to immortal, his strength path attainment level reached grandmaster level, and he created his own immortal killer moves.

When the time was ripe, he took advantage of Liu tribe's temporary weakness and challenged them, he not only took revenge for himself, he even created a fierce reputation.

These last years, he had been secluded, staying inside the northern icy plain, trying to excavate the huge treasure known as Reckless Savage's true meaning.

Chu Du saw Fang Yuan, he not only wanted Fang Yuan's method of drawing out Reckless Savage's true meaning, he even had a feeling of unhappiness because his treasure was being taken by others.

Thus, he did not think too deeply, he attacked directly, he wanted to take down Fang Yuan and interrogate the method to lure out Reckless Savage's true meaning.

Though the distance was great, it was nothing to Gu Immortals.

Their distance was shrinking rapidly.

"Huh?" Chu Du stretched out his right hand, pointing at Fang Yuan who was in the immortal aperture, but a sword light shot at him first.

He reacted quickly, but Fang Yuan was even faster!

Almost at the first instant, Fang Yuan used sword marks targeting death and shot out flying sword Immortal Gu.

Flying Sword pierced through the sky, shining in bright silvery light, Chu Du could not look at it directly.

Chu Du chuckled, he stretched out his right arm, grabbing at Flying Sword.

Boom!

An explosion caused the air to burst.

A huge strength path phantom in the form of Chu Du's right hand squeezed the air, it was like a rampaging mountain, moving quickly and grabbing flying sword Immortal Gu.

Surprise flashed across Fang Yuan's eyes.

Chu Du's strength path phantom hand was very similar to his giant hand. But evidently, his strength path giant hand was not only stronger than Fang Yuan's, it was even more agile.

Chu Du’s strength path giant hand moved together with his actual right hand.

After grabbing flying sword Immortal Gu, Chu Du clenched his fist and directly sealed flying sword Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan instantly felt that his connection to flying sword Immortal Gu weakened severely.

Chu Du frowned in an unnoticeable manner, he opened his clenched fist, he saw a trace of blood at the center of his palm.

It was the killer move sword marks targeting death’s effect.

“Interesting.” He commented lightly.

While he said that, the injury on his palm has already healed.

“Hand over the method and I will spare your life. Hmm?” Chu Du proclaimed but when he raised his head, his expression changed.

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan chopped off the lower half of his body, he used a certain blood path killer move and refined his lower body into a pool of blood.

The blood fused into the immortal aperture’s gap and fixed the crack within space in an instant.

Chu Du quickly used his strength path giant hand to attack.

But it was a moment too late, he had lost his chance. The giant hand failed to hit anything, like a crashing meteor, it landed on the ground and formed a huge crater of over dozens of meters wide.

Chu Du flew to the spot where Fang Yuan placed his immortal aperture with a heavy expression. He did not have any method to break into the immortal aperture.

“Damn it! Why did I encounter Domination Immortal of all people?” Inside the immortal aperture, Fang Yuan only was left with his upper body, he floated in the air. His injuries were severe, his lower body had already been refined and used.

Intense pain did not affect Fang Yuan due to the use of Gu worms, faced with two ancient ruin bats, he kept his composure and calmness.

“I have to kill these two ruin bats as soon as possible!!” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, his expression was ruthless.

Triple layered sword wave!

He used this killer move consecutively, the waves crashed against the ancient ruin bats.

Ugh!

Fang Yuan’s seven orifices spurted blood, his head was dizzy, he was on the verge of fainting.

His head was hurting, triple layered sword wave was a killer move that used many Gu worms, it was not easy to activate. In order to use so many Gu worms, he had used up all of the thoughts in his mind, his brain was in a state of overuse.

And to protect his aperture walls, to prevent the ancient ruin bats from causing more destruction, Fang Yuan had to block all of the ancient ruin bats’ attacks desperately.

Seconds passed like years.

Every time he blocked an ancient ruin bat’s attack, Fang Yuan’s vision turned dark, he was uncertain about his capability regarding blocking the next attack.

He could not think of anything else, all of his newly produced thoughts were used to mobilize all of the Gu worms in his body.

Both sides were like warriors in a death match, they attacked with sharp weapons and stabbed their opponents continuously, whoever was unable to endure it would fall in defeat first.

After an unknown period of time, a gust of wind blew, clarity flashed in Fang Yuan’s dazed eyes.

“Did I succeed?” He looked up in the sky, at the falling ancient ruin bat as he muttered to himself.

Soon, the thoughts in his mind replenished amply, he could finally think again.

He finally killed one ancient ruin bat, there was still another left.

Fang Yuan licked his dry lips, his face was pale as paper, but it showed a distorted expression as he charged towards the ancient ruin bat again.

It was much easier for him this time.

Facing an ancient ruin bat alone, Fang Yuan felt much less pressure, the thoughts in his mind increased in number, he could think of more things, he could attack the ruin bat after making rational decisions in response.

But he did not dare to relax.

If another ancient ruin bat formed, it would be troublesome.

Even worse was if Domination Immortal Chu Du was allowed to come in, if that happened, Fang Yuan’s situation would be far worse, it might be even more terrifying than dying in the calamity.

But eventually, the heaven and earth qi calmed, and Fang Yuan succeeded in killing the third ancient ruin bat, no more ruin bats formed, and Chu Du was absent.

“The calamity has ended. I finally survived this!” Fang Yuan looked down weakly, this place had already turned into an icy field, countless desolate beast snow monsters were staring at him, growling as they showed ruthless expressions.

“Thankfully, my immortal aperture is big enough, there are no resources in here yet, I will let these snow monsters stay for now. They cannot break the aperture walls.” Fang Yuan flew up to the first layer of the heavens in the sky of his immortal aperture.

He was severely injured, he needed to recuperate.

While healing his injuries, he also needed to prepare for battle.

If Chu Du invaded this place, it would no laughing matter!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1058: Blood Asset Immortal Gu

Three days later, inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The sovereign immortal aperture was extremely huge, its layout was like the five regions and nine heavens.

After Fang Yuan succeeded in passing the tribulation, he had been staying inside the first layer of the nine heavens to heal.

At this moment, he was at a crucial moment of healing his injuries.

Fang Yuan was submerged hundreds of feet under a lake of blood which filled a wide surrounding range.

He was gravely injured, it was a sad sight. His entire lower body was cut away, only his upper body was in the lake of blood.

The lake of blood was full of life force, it entered his huge injury continuously.

After three days, a blood-colored silhouette could be vaguely seen in the form of his legs and lower body.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan opened his eyes.

His eyes were blood red, the moment he opened them, it was as if lightning shined deeply inside the dark lake of blood.

“Blood path body refinement, restore my immortal body.” Fang Yuan cried out in his mind, countless thoughts were colliding.

Tens of thousands of mortal Gu were mobilized with thoughts, they shined with dazzling light.

These mortal Gu were placed in various parts of the blood lake.

Once connected, the entire dark lake of blood shined in a bright red light.

Gradually, the lights from these mortal Gu fused into one.

A rank six Immortal Gu emerged from Fang Yuan’s body, floating upwards.

This Gu resembled a round pearl, it was as large as a goose egg, the pearl had countless markings on it that were moving around, like the blooming of a field of lotuses, or the rumbling of clouds.

Blood path Immortal Gu — Blood Asset!

This Immortal Gu was not one known to Fang Yuan, this was a Gu innovated by the previous Lang Ya land spirit, he had created this using blood path Gu recipes he bought in treasure yellow heaven.

Blood asset Immortal Gu's effect was to protect a portion of the immortal materials or Gu worms during refinement. If the refinement failed, some of these immortal materials or Gu worms could be restored afterwards using blood asset Immortal Gu.

Ever since he obtained this Immortal Gu, the previous Lang Ya land spirit had saved a huge amount of resources. The previous land spirit treasured this Immortal Gu deeply, he would not exchange it no matter what.

But after changing personalities, the new Lang Ya land spirit most wanted to promote the rise of hairy men, he did not have much interest in Gu refinement.

When transacting with Fang Yuan, blood asset Immortal Gu fell into Fang Yuan's demonic clutches.

Fang Yuan obtained it and did not outwardly express any emotions, but he was overjoyed internally!

This Gu could only be used in refinement path in the hands of ordinary Gu Immortals. But Fang Yuan was a blood path grandmaster, not only could he display its full ability, he could also use it in a variety of ways that surpassed its original limits. (B oxnovel.c om)

Like now.

Blood asset Immortal Gu caused the entire lake of blood to boil, like a volcano that was ready to erupt with molten magma underneath.

Gugugu...

Large numbers of bubbles floated to the surface of the lake.

Streams of life force gushed into blood asset Immortal Gu like sparrows returning to their nests.

Blood asset Immortal Gu floated above Fang Yuan's head, it rapidly rotated, like an inexhaustible black hole, it drew away all of the vitality in the lake of blood.

Next, after purification, a stream of life force that could be seen with the naked eye, resembling translucent flowing water, poured into Fang Yuan's body.

Crack crack.

Fang Yuan's bones were cracking, it was a delightful sound. His withered flesh became enriched, inflating like a ball. The injuries on his skin vanished instantly. His long black hair grew out, covered in a layer of gloss.

Most important was the huge injury on Fang Yuan's body.

The translucent blood-colored silhouette of his lower body started to gain physical form under the injection of vitality.

In the blink of an eye, Fang Yuan's heavy injuries healed, his flesh recovered and he was whole again!

Whoosh!

Fang Yuan shot out of the lake of blood like an arrow, appearing in the air.

His consciousness swept around the area as he nodded in satisfaction: "This body created by sovereign immortal fetus Gu is truly profound and mystical. I have dao marks of every path, yet they don’t interfere with each other. Because of this, I can use healing methods of any path and display their full effect. If not, how could I recover from this terrible injury in only three days?”

Fang Yuan stretched out his arm, blood asset Immortal Gu shot out of the lake of blood like a meteor, into Fang Yuan’s hands.

Holding this Immortal Gu in front of him, Fang Yuan took a look of appreciation before placing it on his chest.

Blood asset Immortal Gu lived on Fang Yuan’s body, at his chest area, turning into a red pearl tattoo.

This type of storage was not safe. If Fang Yuan’s body was destroyed, blood asset Immortal Gu would also face destruction.

Immortal Gu were extremely fragile, even toddlers could kill rank nine Immortal Gu.

It was safest to keep it in the immortal aperture.

But now, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture was still in the outside world, he could only do this, but as long as he was careful, there would be no issue.

“In the five hundred years of my previous life, I could not obtain a single blood path Immortal Gu even after a long search, I had no choice but to refine Spring Autumn Cicada. if I had this blood path Immortal Gu back then, I would have already achieved much more in life, even if the ten great ancient sects encircled me, I would be able to fight them confidently.”

Fang Yuan was not simply bragging.

In his previous life, he had battle strength at the peak of rank six, he had fought against two ordinary rank seven Gu Immortals and won.

Even though there were many reasons for the outcomes, like the terrain and other coincidences, defeating a rank seven as a rank six was truly an incredible feat!

Of course, compared to Bo Qing and Feng Jiu Ge, this was a very ordinary achievement. But the important thing was, Fang Yuan defeated the rank seven Gu Immortals without any Immortal Gu himself. He used blood path mortal Gu and mortal killer moves to defeat such strong foes!

During that time, Fang Yuan became an immortal using blood path, he not only created his own blood path mortal Gu, he even designed many blood path killer moves, they were either high in power, had mysterious effects, or were very bloodthirsty abilities...

Fang Yuan’s blood path attainment level was grandmaster, he did not lack anything but a blood path Immortal Gu.

If he had it, he could quickly modify his mortal killer moves into countless immortal killer moves, his battle strength would surge immensely!

In his previous life, or even after rebirth, Fang Yuan did not obtain a single blood path Immortal Gu.

After rebirth, he advanced rapidly, taking huge risks and facing great challenges, because of all sorts of reasons, he did not obtain a single blood path Immortal Gu.

(Author’s note: Actually, it was the influence of heaven’s will.)

Until recently, he finally obtained blood asset Immortal Gu from trading with

Lang Ya land spirit.

Actually, Fang Yuan did not want to start his blood path cultivation so early. Any blood path Gu Immortal would be detected by Heavenly Court and be listed on the Demon Judgment Board. Blood path was very harmful, even demonic cultivators did not like them, everyone wanted to exterminate them.

(B oxnovel.c om) When Fang Yuan obtained blood asset Immortal Gu, he thought: The less I use it, the better.

But situations were unpredictable.

During the tribulation, he encountered Domination Immortal Chu Du, his life was at stake, he had to use blood asset Immortal Gu to create the immortal killer move to seal the gap in the aperture wall.

When healing himself, Fang Yuan also used a blood path killer move. Only this healing technique could heal his injuries rapidly, and allow him to defend against the huge threat of Chu Du.

Fang Yuan did not want to ask for more help from Lang Ya land spirit, the more he exposed, the higher the chances of leaking information. Fang Yuan had reserved some information from Lang Ya land spirit, he concealed the biggest secret of sovereign immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan was a blood path grandmaster, with his five hundred years of deep accumulation, it was easy to modify blood path mortal killer moves into immortal killer moves, it was a natural process. It was unlike Hei Lou Lan in the past, who faced so much difficulty in elevating self strength phantom to immortal level.

In fact, he had created many blood path Immortal Gu recipes in his previous life. But because his refinement path and wisdom path attainment levels were too low, he could not continue on those deductions, they were very incomplete.

After retrieving blood asset Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan thought to himself: “Three days have passed, Chu Du did not attack, it seems he has no methods to break into the immortal aperture.”

Three days ago, Fang Yuan paid a huge price of getting heavily injured to seal the aperture wall’s gap, causing Chu Du’s plan to fail.

If Chu Du had any methods, he would have used them already.

But three days had passed, even if some methods needed time for preparation, they would not take three days, thus, Fang Yuan surmised that Chu Du had no options.

This was not strange.

After an immortal aperture is placed in the Five Regions, as long as the entrance was not open, they would shrink into a tiny spot and be undetectable, outsiders could not break in.

Back then, when Immortal Crane Sect attacked Hu Immortal blessed land, they had to use Fang Zheng’s bloodline as a connection to use blood path methods in sensing where the blessed land was.

Chu Du was a strength path Gu Immortal, while methods to pierce into immortal apertures involved space path.

Fang Yuan guessed correctly, but he did not relax as a result.

Even though Chu Du could not break into the sovereign immortal aperture, he could stay behind and guard this area.

This was an expected situation.

Thinking from his perspective, as the strength path Gu Immortal Chu Du who wanted to obtain Reckless Savage’s true meaning desperately, would he ever give up such a huge opportunity?

In the past, when facing Liu tribe, a super force, Chu Du did not leave and stayed outside their headquarters, until Liu tribe’s first supreme elder fought with him! Fang Yuan was alone, how could he compare to Liu tribe? Even if he added in Lang Ya blessed land, it could not match Liu tribe. Those hairy man Gu Immortals had negligible battle strength.

Furthermore, even if Chu Du could not break the aperture walls, he could find others to help.

“It seems that I am trapped here for now. If I collect my immortal aperture and use Sword Escape, can I escape from Chu Du’s pursuit?”

Fang Yuan shook his head.

“Sword escape Immortal Gu might be fast, but it flies in a straight line. I would need to stop if I want to change directions, this is a major flaw. Against ordinary Gu Immortals, it would work, but against Domination Immortal, it is not enough. I need at least an immortal killer move.”

While thinking, Fang Yuan flew below the first layer of the heavens.

When he got to the part of the sky where he was undergoing tribulation, the snow monsters sensed Fang Yuan and growled at him, ancient snow monsters even raised their hands, throwing huge snowballs at him.

After sighing, Fang Yuan had no choice but to leave.

“The earthly calamity is over, but these snow monsters are still around. I have to ignore them for now, in any case, this immortal aperture has nothing for them to destroy.”

“I have sword escape Immortal Gu, but my sword path attainment level is too low. There is more hope in blood path methods. Next, I should modify mortal killer moves and create a blood path immortal killer move, using blood asset Immortal Gu as the core, for use in movement!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1059: Dog Shit Splits Luck

Western Desert, on a certain trail.

“Kill, kill these bastards, the money is all ours!”

“Let’s rob them!!”

“Guards, defend us, if these goods are lost, the clan will not let us off!”

Sounds of fighting could be heard, around a sandy dune, a group of bandits and caravan members were fighting in an intense battle.

This bandit group had been committing crimes in the desert for a long time, they were all human Gu Masters, they were fierce and experienced in battle, they were quite strong.

In the merchant caravan, there were few humans, they were mostly feathermen.

A portion of this group of featherman Gu Masters were standing on the ground guarding the goods, while some were flying in the sky, fighting the bandits.

Waves of fiery attacks were unleashed, the temperature was rising, at times, wind blades were shot out, cutting the trail or directly into people, causing bloodshed.

Western Desert was flourishing with fire path and wind path Gu worms, Gu Masters of these two paths were most common.

After a moment, the bandits had the upper-hand, they suffered little loss. But the merchant caravan was already heavy with casualties.

Han Li was lying in a pile of goods, his body was covered in blood, his face was charred.

He had been hit by a wind blade earlier during the intense battle, there was a deep and long injury on his chest, it was still bleeding. His face was charred because a fire pellet had exploded around him, the hot debris had slammed into his face.

“Damn it! Am I going to die here today?” The battle scene had Han Li feel despair.

He had started his cultivation journey after much difficulties, becoming a Gu Master by chance. But he was chased out and could only be a vagrant.

To survive, he joined this caravan as a member, but to think that such a merchant caravan would still be targeted by bandits.

“Run!”

“This merchant caravan is finished, I am not going to die with them.”

“Smart people will run with me, these feathermen are finished, even if they return alive, they will be executed by the clan.”

The loss was assured, the merchant caravan members started to escape for themselves.

They were all human Gu Masters employed to be guards.

“These fellows!”

“Ignore them, conserve our primeval essence, even if we die, we will die fighting!”

The featherman Gu Masters gritted their teeth, saying angrily.

“How can this be?” Han Li was dazed, he was very young and inexperienced, he could not react to the fact that these human Gu Masters were escaping.

“Why are you not running?” A featherman Gu Master walked over and saw Han Li.

Han Li gasped, he did not know what to do, he knew who this featherman Gu Master was, he was the leader of the caravan.

“Even though your cultivation level is low, in some ways, you are far superior to those escaping humans!” The featherman leader sighed, before patting Han Li’s shoulder.

His hand flashed with light, he patted Han Li’s shoulder three times, his injuries healed at once!

“Amazing! This is the might of a rank four Gu Master?” Han Li was shocked, he wanted to express his gratitude, but the featherman leader had already charged into the battlefield.

The front lines were in a critical state already, the featherman leader had to join the fight.

Once the rank four Gu Master attacked, the bandits suffered huge losses, many fell off their horses.

Among the bandit group, there were rank four experts too, but they were sitting at the back, watching coldly with icy smiles on their faces.

The featherman leader quickly controlled the battlefield, he killed many enemies, Han Li watched with much enthusiasm, while the other feathermen praised loudly.

But the featherman leader’s state of mind was turning grim.

He knew that the enemy was ruthless, they were using cannon fodder to waste his primeval essence. When the true bandit experts appear, he would have less primeval essence, he would be at a disadvantage.

Whoosh—!

At this time, wind could be heard from afar.

The wind was huge and grand, like the howling of a desolate beast.

Everyone looked over, as someone shouted: “Oh no! It is a golden thread tornado!”

The tornadoes in Western Desert were split into golden thread, silver thread, bronze thread, and so on, in decreasing order of strength. Golden thread tornadoes were the strongest, even a rank four Gu Master would perish if they got trapped in them.

The feathermen panicked, the bandits also panicked, like gunpowder that had been ignited, they shouted loudly as they charged towards the caravan.

They wanted to take down the merchant caravan before the golden thread tornado appeared, to take the precious goods and leave.

“Hold on!” The featherman leader shouted.

Even though the tornado was dangerous, and featherman Gu Masters would still likely die in it, they were able to naturally fly, they would be in a much better situation than the humans.

This intense battle reached the climax.

Every moment, people lost their lives.

Han Li was hiding in between the goods as he defended them.

He had low cultivation level, he was not a significant target, the bandits did not think of him as a threat.

Han Li was indeed not a threat, when his primeval essence was expended, he was no different from a powerless mortal.

Few of the fire pellets and wind blades hit Han Li, because he was near the goods, and both parties did not want to ruin the goods.

The tornado moved quickly, it was still far away earlier, but now, it was already close to the battlefield.

Winds howled, sand flew in the air, when hitting against Han Li’s body, he felt numb and pain.

“Retreat!” Even though he was unwilling, the astute bandit leader called out, choosing to retreat.

The bandits moved like the wind, even though they were injured and had blood red eyes, they left quickly.

“Quickly! Move these goods away.” The featherman leader had severe injuries, but he still placed his focus on the goods first.

The feathermen quickly saved the goods, nobody cared about Han Li.

The tornado assaulted, Han Li could not save himself, he was sucked into it. Many feathermen and large amounts of goods followed after him.

Han Li was swept into the tornado, his vision was spinning, he could not tell which direction he was facing. He was like a flower, flying along with the raging winds, he was in danger of dying.

Bam, he did not know whether he had hit a rock or some goods, but he fainted at once.

After a long time, he slowly woke up.

“Young man, you are finally awake.” An old man was sitting beside him, speaking faintly.

“You, who are you?” Han Li was still in a daze, he looked around and realized that he was lying on sand, there were rocks, corpses, and goods scattered around him.

“The tornado stopped? I survived?!” Han Li was stunned before bursting out in joy.

“If I did not save you, how could you survive?” The old man smiled.

“Thank you, senior, for saving my life!” Han Li quickly paid respects, sincerely expressing his gratitude.

The old man nodded in appreciation: “Back in the day, before becoming an immortal, I was just like you. Today, the tornado that you got swept into was caused by me. I lost my bet with Tian Jin after all... Before dying, I will impart the true inheritance of my entire life to you.”

Central Continent.

Inside Broken Sword Valley.

“Where is sword qi Gu?”

“Chase!”

“This sword qi Gu is mine, don’t think of snatching it away!”

A group of Gu Masters were shouting, they formed into a stream of people as they charged into the valley.

“Lad, don’t block us!”

“Anyone who gets in our way will die!!”

Hong Yi was outside of Broken Sword Valley when he saw a group of frenzied Gu Masters charging towards him. Among them were rank three and four experts.

Hong Yi’s expression paled, he quickly escaped as he moved out of their way.

A group of Gu Masters whipped a dust storm, running past Hong Yi’s body rapidly.

“What, what is going on?” Hong Yi muttered, his heart was still pounding.

Listening to a conversation among some people passing by explained the situation to him.

“I heard there is a rank four sword qi Gu.”

“No wonder so many people are going after it.”

“Let’s go quickly, we might be able to encounter a rank four sword qi Gu.”

“Wishful thinking. How long as it been since this Broken Sword Valley was created? There might be only one rank four sword qi Gu. Don’t even think about it.”

“Sword qi Gu... rank four?!” Hong Yi’s heart shook, a look of envy appeared on his face.

He quickly ran into the valley.

He had explored this valley before, but earlier, it was not like this.

As it turned out, before the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, when immortal zombie Bo Qing awakened, he had shot out countless sword lights from under Falling Heavenly River.

One sword light landed here, cutting this mountain into two, creating the shape of this valley.

This was the origin of Broken Sword Valley.

Initially, people did not pay attention to it, but soon, Central Continent Gu Masters realized that this valley was producing wild sword path Gu worms.

As it turned out, the sword light was not ordinary, every sword light contained sword path dao marks, after the sword light landed here, sword path dao marks were carved into the valley. A special location was created, and many wild sword path Gu worms were slowly produced here.

This fact could not be concealed, more and more Gu Masters came here to find treasures.

Earlier, a rank four sword qi Gu was found by someone, creating a huge commotion for everyone.

“Rank four wild Gu worms are extremely rare, even if I encounter one, I would not be able to catch it, it is too dangerous.” Hong Yi thought as he carefully explored this valley.

He moved away from the crowd, in an ordinary looking location, he saw something shocking.

It was a common caterpillar molting.

But the thing was, the caterpillar’s skin was shining.

Hong Yi was stunned before recognizing this scene, he was overjoyed: “Such luck! I actually came during the moment when the insect becomes a Gu. This aura it is emitting is... so strong! Is it rank four or rank five?”

Hong Yi could not wait for the caterpillar to finish molting, he quickly grabbed it in his hands.

He immediately moved away to a safer location, activating his primeval essence and refining it.

A moment later, he succeeded in refining it, he obtained a very strange rank five sword path Gu worm. It was black and palm-sized, it looked like a miniature sword sheath of iron.

Rank five sword sheath Gu!

“What’s the use of this Gu? Even though I obtained a rank five Gu, my primeval essence can’t activate it.” Hong Yi sighed to himself, when suddenly, he saw a sword path Gu worm coming out of a bush near him, it flew slowly towards him and entered the sword sheath Gu in his hand.

Hong Yi was shocked, at once he was speechless.

Southern Border, on a nameless small mountain.

It was night time, a huge rainstorm was pouring down.

“Shang Xin Ci, your life ends here today.” A muscular man walked towards the peak with his arms behind his back.

There were three Gu Masters defending themselves.

One male, two females.

One female Gu Master was heavily injured, she was Shang Xin Ci’s servant, Xiao Lan.

The other female Gu Master had long, silky black hair flowing like a waterfall, her skin was white like snow, she was extremely beautiful, it was Shang Xin Ci.

Seeing the person approaching, Shang Xin Ci smiled bitterly: “Shang Bi Xi, to think that it was really you, why do you need to fight to the death with me?”

Shang Bi Xi laughed loudly: “Father died, elder brother died, Chao Feng also died. As long as I kill you, eighth brother will ascend to the position of Shang clan leader. Thus, you must die today!”

Shang Xin Ci heard these words and her body shook, she almost fell to the ground, as if an invisible force had pushed her.

She said in a mournful tone: “For the position of clan leader, Shang Pu Lao is truly so cold-hearted and cruel?”

Shang Bi Xi smiled coldly: “Yes, you saved eighth brother’s life before, but so what? You want him to repay you with kindness and hand over the position of clan leader? Hmph, Shang clan leader has authority over the entire city! You have undue benevolence, how can you compete with eighth brother!”

Shang Xin Ci shook her head: “When I saved him, I did not think of fighting for the position of clan leader.”

“Exactly, that is why you are in this state right now. Hahaha!” Shang Bi Xi continued.

“Lady Xin Ci, what’s the need to talk to this scumbag!” Ye Fan was frowning, his tone expressed his utter hatred and disgust towards Shang Bi Xi.

“Young master Ye, you should leave. He only wants my life, I will give it to him. You are not involved in this, don’t interfere, quickly leave!” Shang Xin Ci pushed Ye Fan’s back, urging him to leave.

“I will not go!” Ye Fan shouted: “Lady Xin Ci, you were the one who saved me, a droplet received in need will be repaid with a whole spring, how can I abandon you?”

“Hmph, how touching. But you won’t be able to leave even if you want to. Today, all three of you will die. Shang Xin Ci, you are still so naive! If I do not kill all of you, wouldn’t the survivors tarnish eighth brother’s reputation in the future?” Shang Bi Xi said as he got closer.

Ye Fan gritted his teeth, even though he was heavily injured and could not stand straight, he stood in front of Shang Xin Ci.

“Hmm, a brave man.” Shang Bi Xi commented, before pushing as Ye Fan fell to the ground.

“If you were in your peak condition, I would have to be wary of you. But your primeval essence has been used up, you are no threat. Hahaha.” Shang Bi Xi laughed as he approached Shang Xin Ci.

Shang Xin Ci shut her eyes, giving up any futile resistance.

Before dying, in the depths of her heart, the figure of a man appeared.

One thought emerged in her mind — If I could see him one last time before dying, how good would that be.

But even after waiting for a while, she did not feel Shang Bi Xi’s attack.

Shang Xin Ci opened her eyes in confusion, she only saw that Shang Bi Xi was some steps in front of her, not moving at all.

He was stiff as a statue, an expression of fear was frozen on his face.

“Hmph, for simply some authority and wealth, you disregarded kinship, you are truly a disgrace to Shang clan!” A female immortal appeared.

“You are?” Shang Xin Ci was shocked.

The female immortal looked at Shang Xin Ci with approval, saying warmly: “Don’t be afraid, I am an ancestor of Shang clan, Shang Qing Qing. I have decided, from now onwards, you will assume the role of Shang clan leader.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1060: Pot River, Luck Inspection

Pot river resembled a long jade belt, it was situated in the eastern area of Central Continent.

The water in pot river was smooth flowing, like a beautiful song, it was graceful and harmonious.

Ying Wu Xie stood on the bank of pot river as he waited for Feng Chan Zi.

Meanwhile, Hei Lou Lan, Shi Nu, and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were hiding nearby, protecting Ying Wu Xie’s safety.

The river water flowed slowly, two dragonflies were flying above the river, landing on the pot grass nearby at times.

There was a lot of pot grass growing in pot river.

This type of grass was deeply rooted in the soil below the river, drawing in nutrients. They were long and thin, the tip of the grass emerged above the river surface.

The tip of one of the stalks of pot grass had a brown fruit.

This fruit was still fist-sized, it was not mature now. The fruit was empty inside, and was not tightly closed, the tip was opened widely.

At this moment, a dragonfly followed the smell of the fruit and entered the fruit rashly.

It struggled for a moment, but it was captivated by the intense aroma, it did not fly out again.

Ying Wu Xie watched silently.

He knew: In a few months, more fruits would grow, the fruits would get larger, they would attract more insects, and even fish and prawns. As they grow, the fruit would close up eventually, and when they fully mature, the tips of the pot grass would look like brown pots, tightly sealed.

And next, pot river’s annual flood season would come.

During the flood season, pot river would no longer be calm, water would move rapidly, sweeping all of the pot grass away. All these brown fruits would travel in the river, leaving their origins and floating away.

On the two sides of the river, Gu Masters would start to haul up all of these fruits.

After smashing them, they could obtain the fish and insects inside, as well as some seeds of the pot grass. There was also a chance of getting Gu worms from them.

These Gu worms were sleeping in the pot grass, they could be easily refined.

A super force of the ten great ancient sects, Wind Cloud Manor, was in charge in pot river, during this time every year, they would hold a festival around pot river. Countless Gu Masters would be drawn here, of all ages and genders, not just Wind Cloud Manor's disciples, but even all the surrounding forces would join in the festive season.

As Ying Wu Xie looked at the pot grass in the river, his gaze began drifting elsewhere.

In order to get the light of the immemorial era, he had already stayed in pot river for some time.

On the surface, he was calm and peaceful, but a lot of frustration was building up inside him, and this feeling was getting stronger as time continued to pass.

“I have Spring Autumn Cicada, but it is sealed now and is unusable. Before I refine it again, I will be watched by heaven's will. Not only can heaven's will influence my emotions stealthily, it can even plot and influence others to attack me. I cannot give heaven's will any time to prepare, I cannot stay at the same spot for a long time. If Feng Chan Zi does not show up again, I have to give up on this.”

Ying Wu Xie made up his mind.

At this time, a green figure flew rapidly along the surface of pot river, towards Ying Wu Xie.

“It is that rank six level grass puppet avatar!”

“Be alert, stay wary of any unexpected surprises.”

Shadow Sect's immortals transmitted, focusing their minds.

The grass puppet avatar saw Ying Wu Xie and said arrogantly: “The light of the immemorial era is with me, but master said that the earlier price will not do, you have to pay an extra thirty percent on that basis!”

“What? Another thirty percent?”

“This is extortion, this Feng Chan Zi really dares to raise it.”

“The price was already very high, with another thirty percent, it is exorbitant!”

Shi Nu and Tai Bai Yun Sheng discussed.

Ying Wu Xie was also furious, but there was no choice, he needed the light of the immemorial era. To refine Fixed Immortal Travel, the light of the immemorial era was needed, there were no alternatives.

After staying silent for a while, Ying Wu Xie nodded: “I'll agree to it.”

The grass puppet avatar snorted: “Then let's trade.”

Ying Wu Xie was already prepared amply, both sides transacted quickly.

The grass puppet avatar counted the amount before showing a satisfied expression.

Ying Wu Xie suffered a huge loss, he paid a great price but he had finally obtained the light of the immemorial era, he was overall still pleased with it.

He smiled at the grass puppet avatar: “It has been a pleasant transaction, we should trade again some other time.”

The grass puppet avatar said, “Hmph, again? That depends on my master’s mood. Actually, earlier, master did not want to trade, but he had lost a bet to Lang Zi Qiu some time ago, he wants to recoup his losses, so I came. You must remember this, my master definitely did not give the light of the immemorial era to you!” (B oxnovel.c om)

“I understand, I understand. Actually, your manor has a huge inventory, it is truly a sea of treasure. Just a bit of the light of the immemorial era, what could it affect? Nobody would notice for sure.” Ying Wu Xie said politely.

“Enough, this matter is over, quickly leave now, we cannot stay here for long.” The grass puppet avatar said before leaving.

Even without its reminder, Ying Wu Xie was already ready to leave!

Concealing their traces, after flying for a hundred thousand li, Shadow Sect’s group landed in a nameless forest, resting and recovering.

“Just now, even though we obtained the light of the immemorial era, Feng Chan Zi’s price was too high, we paid too much. To refine Fixed Immortal Travel, we still need other supplementary immortal materials.” Shi Nu said.

“Thankfully, the light of the immemorial era is already obtained, the following matters are easier to solve. We can make use of Defy.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng suggested.

“The important thing is, how many refinements can you do with this portion of the light of the immemorial era?” Hei Lou Lan got to the point immediately.

When Gu Immortals refine Immortal Gu, just one batch of immortal materials was not enough.

Disregarding the hairy man heaven and earth style, and just looking at the human isolation style, the chances of refining a rank six Immortal Gu were often less than one percent.

Theoretically, Ying Wu Xie and others should have prepared a hundred portions of materials.

But after experimentation, reality was even more cruel.

Because the success rate was not just dependent on the amount of immortal materials. Many times, even with more than a hundred portions of immortal materials, one can still fail the refinement.

“This portion of light of the immemorial era can last for nine refinement attempts.” Ying Wu Xie said as he paused.

He secretly activated an Immortal Gu in his body.

Rank six luck inspection Immortal Gu!

This Immortal Gu originally belonged to Qin Bai Sheng, coincidentally, because he needed it, Shi Nu obtained it and used it temporarily.

After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Shadow Sect failed, and this luck inspection Immortal Gu was transferred to Ying Wu Xie.

This was an investigative Gu worm that could inspect the luck of people.

Ying Wu Xie’s eyes shone as he looked above him.

His vision was very different now.

A luck pillar, resembling an illusion, appeared in Ying Wu Xie’s eyes.

Ying Wu Xie was taken aback: “Eh? Why did my luck improve so much out of nowhere?”

He had already inspected his own luck long ago, it was very bad. And because of Spring Autumn Cicada’s drawback, his luck was continuing to decrease.

But now, it was much better than his initial assessment!

“Don’t tell me...” A thought flashed in Ying Wu Xie’s mind.

He thought of Fang Yuan.

He also thought of the self luck true inheritance in Lang Ya land spirit’s hands.

“Earlier, Shadow Sect invaded Lang Ya land spirit and took a portion of Refinement Cauldron, we even destroyed dog shit luck Immortal Gu accidentally. Lang Ya land spirit was preparing to refine it once again, and it just so happens that he succeeded recently. Perhaps he has already lent Dog Shit Luck to Fang Yuan.”

Ying Wu Xie felt that this was the most likely possibility.

A few days ago, he was informed that Fang Yuan had passed his tribulation.

Because Shadow Sect still had one hairy man Gu Immortal traitor left inside Lang Ya blessed land.

“That must be it!”

“Originally, Fang Yuan connected his luck to several people, splitting it equally. After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, my body is Fang Yuan’s, while he still has his soul, both involve the connected luck.”

“When he uses dog shit luck Immortal Gu to improve his own luck, it will flow down like water, going towards Ye Fan, Han Li, Hong Yi, and Hei Lou Lan. And these four people have luck connected to my body, thus, I also benefited from it.”

“No wonder I waited so long earlier with no results and slim hopes. But now, Feng Chan Zi suddenly lost a bet to Lang Zi Qiu and needs capital, thus he transacted with me and I obtained the light of the immemorial era!”

After thinking about it, Ying Wu Xie found out about Fang Yuan’s immense value! (B oxnovel.c om) “His immortal aperture has to undergo tribulation every two months, he must have used Dog Shit Luck to increase his luck and decrease the might of the earthly calamity. This way, I can benefit from it! I do not need to go to Northern Plains and find Longevity Heaven to borrow luck!”

“Even though he knows that this would strengthen his enemies, he has no choice. Because the calamities and tribulations of the sovereign immortal aperture far exceed logic, he has to do everything he can to survive every crisis! However... he chose to undergo tribulation in the northern icy plain, it was truly a wise move. Heaven’s will is targeting him, trying to get rid of him, it would definitely strengthen the earthly calamity. But undergoing tribulation in the northern icy plain, Reckless Savage’s true meaning replaced a portion of heaven’s will, it greatly reduced the danger. Hmph, I hope you can survive this, I will reclaim your body one day!”

After staying in the nameless forest for a while, Ying Wu Xie and the others moved off on their journey again.

Ying Wu Xie was moving quickly.

He was pressed for time.

Not only because his main body’s remnant soul was stuck in the dream realm, facing great danger all the time, he had to make use of this good luck to refine Fixed Immortal Travel, because the chances of success would be much higher!

Northern Plains, northern icy plain.

“Master, how long must we stay here?” The newly advanced strength path rank six Gu Immortal asked meekly.

Chu Du stood on the icy plain, he looked at the handprint that he had created on the ground, sighing.

He did not answer his disciple, he fell into deep regret.

“I was too rash earlier, why did I attack him without thinking?”

“Since he knows the method to draw out Reckless Savage’s true meaning, it will not be easy for me to get this method, regardless of whether it is an immortal killer move or an Immortal Gu House!”

“Even if I kill him, I need to prevent his soul from self-detonating, otherwise, it will all be for nothing, I would lose this immense opportunity to gain strength!”

“I needed to act more carefully, at least, I should have been polite before resorting to brute force!”

“Right now, the other party has fixed the gap and is hiding in the immortal aperture, that place is easy to defend but hard to attack, I have no methods to break in.”

“It is not too late to salvage the situation. Maybe I can talk to him? Right, I still have his sword path Immortal Gu with me, this is a negotiation chip!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1061: Blood Torrent

Northern Plains.

Inside the first layer of the heavens in the sovereign immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes slowly, his pupils flashed.

“I’ve spent so many days on deductions, but I’ll use its original name, it will continue to be called blood torrent.” Thinking of this, at Fang Yuan’s will, the Gu worms around him moved, scattering around him.

Hundreds of mortal Gu flew around him, forming a huge circle.

Blood asset Immortal Gu was residing in his chest, its red insignia started to glow as it emitted burning heat.

Suddenly, a dazzling blood-red light shot out of Fang Yuan’s chest.

The blood-red light rushed into the sky, turning into a huge stream of blood.

The stream of blood carried Fang Yuan and charged out.

After flying into the sky, with a swoosh, a long red line was drawn.

A river of blood-red light was flowing in the first layer of the heavens.

Everywhere it went, an intense stench of blood that would make people nauseous could be smelled.

In the river of blood-red light, Fang Yuan’s entire body was covered, completely concealed. This was good, he could hide himself, even if enemies wanted to attack, they would not know which part of the river to attack.

After flying for a while, Fang Yuan stopped moving.

The river of blood-red light vanished, Fang Yuan’s figure appeared all alone.

“The speed of this river can be even faster, I just need to add in some more mortal Gu.” Fang Yuan thought about his experience and concluded.

“But no matter how many mortal Gu I add, the linear speed cannot match sword escape Immortal Gu.”

Sword escape Immortal Gu was a rank seven Immortal Gu, this immortal killer move, blood torrent, used only one rank six Immortal Gu, and that was the rank six blood asset Immortal Gu, it was natural that the speed was inferior to Sword Escape.

Unless Fang Yuan could raise blood asset Immortal Gu to rank seven, the straight line speed of blood torrent could not surpass Sword Escape.

But this way, as a rank six Gu Immortal, for Fang Yuan to use the rank seven Immortal Gu, he would face the same awkward situation again, it was not worth it.

“My linear traveling speed is inferior to using Sword Escape, this was expected, it is not a problem! I deduced this immortal killer move while thinking about traveling while changing direction, to make up for the flaw of sword escape Immortal Gu. I can use blood torrent and sword escape Immortal Gu alternately, this way, I can barely deal with Chu Du.” Fang Yuan considered it clearly.

Blood torrent was a blood path killer move, while sword escape Immortal Gu was sword path, the two were unrelated, if any other Gu Immortal used both of them, they would lose out on both ends.

But Fang Yuan was an exception!

His body was special, it was formed from sovereign immortal fetus Gu. His dao marks were of all paths, yet they did not interfere with one another.

Fang Yuan could use blood torrent and sword escape Immortal Gu alternately, without causing them to lose their original strength.

Sword escape Immortal Gu allowed one to fly in a linear direction, even though it was fast, they could only move in one direction, it was too simple, it could be countered easily.

If the user stopped to change directions, the weakness exposed in that instance would be fully used by Domination Immortal.

But if he used Sword Escape and blood torrent alternately, he would make up for their weaknesses, he would be able to face Domination Immortal.

Chu Du was a strength path Gu Immortal, strength path was a path that focused on offense and recovery, it had the longest sustainability in battle, but it usually lacked in speed.

Of course, this was only Fang Yuan’s estimation.

As for whether it would be effective, he needed to test it.

After all, the last time Domination Immortal Chu Du fought openly was a hundred years ago.

After his battle with Liu tribe’s first supreme elder, he had concealed his traces and cultivated in seclusion.

Fang Yuan not only deduced his blood path killer move these last days, he even collected information on Chu Du using all kinds of methods.

But most of the information was from a hundred years ago.

At this point, Fang Yuan started to miss Fairy Li Shan. Hei Lou Lan’s younger aunt had mountain pledge Gu, she had a huge network and was in contact with many people in the demonic and righteous paths, and even lone immortals. If she was still around, he would be able to collect more information regarding Chu Du.

“Lang Ya Sect might be huge, but it had been in seclusion for so many years before wanting to make contact with the world again recently. In terms of information, it cannot match Fairy Li Shan. Information path, this is one of my weaknesses, I need to fix it.”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts were wandering.

He thought of the battle of Yi Tian Mountain.

Ah, that was a huge trap!

Fang Yuan thought about it and his heart was still pounding.

He could survive because two giants were fighting, and he as an ant had profited from their conflict. He barely survived, a huge portion was attributed to luck.

Come to think of it, it was because his information path attainment was too low, he had insufficient intel! If he knew about the hidden details of Yi Tian Mountain, he would have changed his plans.

“However, even if I had Fairy Li Shan’s information path methods, I would not have been able to get any information. Yi Tian Mountain was simply too big of a plot, in the five hundred years of my previous life, there was no such huge commotion!”

Fang Yuan put aside all of his irrelevant thoughts.

He had to say, after reviving, his thinking speed was extremely fast. It was completely unlike the immortal zombie body.

And with his wisdom path grandmaster attainment level, with the help of many wisdom path methods, he was even more perceptive than in the five hundred years of his previous life, he could think more nimbly.

In this aspect, he had completely surpassed himself!

Even though he deduced blood torrent, he needed to practise it, and continue to modify it as he used it.

After creating an immortal killer move, it could not be left untouched. The Gu Immortal needed to modify and improve it, or even revamp it if needed.

Back in the day, Dong Fang Chang Fan created myriad star fireflies, he had improved upon it multiple times. Even so, he was not personally satisfied with it.

Some immortal killer moves were improved upon by the creator for their entire lives, even their inheritors participated in this process.

For example, peerless crescent moon slash was a signature immortal killer move of Heaven’s Envy Manor, generations of Gu Immortals had improved on it countless times. Precisely so, this move could become famous in Central Continent, and its might was not to be underestimated.

Fang Yuan’s immortal killer move was only created hastily, it was far from the level of moves like peerless crescent moon slash.

In the following days, Fang Yuan practiced on using blood torrent and sword escape Immortal Gu.

Non-stop usage increased his experience, he gained a lot of insight towards the use of blood torrent and Sword Escape.

While practicing, he continued to modify the move, eventually, he stopped adding in mortal Gu to blood torrent, instead, he started taking out certain Gu worms.

“I need blood torrent to work with Sword Escape, because I need it for changing directions. After Sword Escape stops, I need to succeed in activating blood torrent in an instant. This is a short window of time, thus, many mortal Gu makes it troublesome. Not only would it be a waste of time, increasing the difficulty of activation, the gains are also minute with just a small increase in speed.”

“This is almost ready, I should try to gather my immortal aperture and escape. Let’s see if I can escape from Chu Du.”

Even though Fang Yuan could continue to create more blood path killer moves, there was no need to.

After getting blood asset Immortal Gu, he had used this Immortal Gu as the core, along with the accumulated mortal killer moves in the five hundred years of his previous life, to create three blood path killer moves: life staking blood print, blood healing lake, and blood torrent.

At this level, it was enough already.

After all, he only had blood asset Immortal Gu, if he used one blood path killer move, the others could not be used at the same time.

As for the other aspects, Fang Yuan could use other Immortal Gu instead.

After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, he had lost almost all of his accumulated Gu worms, his current Gu worms were of many paths, they were a mess and were not organized to systematically cover all aspects. But he had no choice but to use them now.

“But if I were given another chance, I would still choose to take sovereign immortal fetus Gu!” Fang Yuan had no doubts about this.

Even though Fang Yuan was inside the sovereign immortal aperture, it was easily guarded and hard to attack, but he had to be wary of Chu Du seeking help from others, or setting up an immortal battlefield killer move on the icy plain.

In any case, the longer he stayed, the worse it would be.

After making up his mind, Fang Yuan had no more hesitations.

At his will, the entire immortal aperture started shaking.

The tremors were increasing in magnitude, after a while, the immortal aperture world started to shrink.

It was shrinking at an incredible speed! After an instant, Fang Yuan opened his eyes and he was already in the outside world, the northern icy plain.

There was no snow or wind.

Pale white sunlight shone on this flat icy plain.

It was still very cold.

Fang Yuan focused his mind, he looked around with a divine light in his eyes, quickly seeing Chu Du.

Domination Immortal Chu Du!

As Fang Yuan had expected, he had stayed here and did not leave.

But the unexpected thing was Chu Du’s attitude.

“Wait, please wait!” Chu Du did not attack, he smiled warmly as he spoke to Fang Yuan in a gentle tone, there was no killing intent in him.

Fang Yuan snorted: “Are you being polite after resorting to brute force?”

“I am ashamed, truly ashamed.” Chu Du admitted his mistake, he apologized: “I was too rash earlier. But after seeing your tribulation, it truly had too big of an impact on my future cultivation journey! Thus, I lost my reasoning for a moment and attacked. Now that I think about it, it was truly shameful.”

Fang Yuan looked at Chu Du vigilantly, he used many methods to probe the surrounding area.

Seeing that Fang Yuan was silent, Chu Du initiated: “Friend, I do not want to be enemies with you, I just want the method to draw out Reckless Savage’s true meaning. I hope we can make a deal.”

“Deal?” Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with brilliance, he said with a tone of consideration: “It is not impossible, as long as you can interest me with your offer.”

Joy flashed on Chu Du’s face.

But next, Fang Yuan said: “But before the transaction, we have to settle the score for your attack on me which interfered with my tribulation!”

“I will definitely satisfy you with the compensation!” Chu Du said immediately, he had an earnest attitude.

Even Fang Yuan was shocked — Was this still the Domination Immortal?

But thinking about it, Fang Yuan’s alertness towards Chu Du rose.

This person could put down his pride, he was an incredible person! Anyone who looked down on him was a terrible fool.

“If you want to compensate me, return my flying sword Immortal Gu to show your sincerity.” Fang Yuan continued to speak.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1062: Chu Du’s Weakness

Hearing that Fang Yuan wanted to take back flying sword Immortal Gu, Chu Du smiled, he replied: “As long as we complete the transaction, not only will I return flying sword Immortal Gu, I will even give you satisfactory compensation.”

What a joke, of course he had to keep this flying sword Immortal Gu for now, it was the best bargaining chip to restrain Fang Yuan.

How could Chu Du return it now?

Chu Du was warm and polite now, but he was deeply aware internally of this.

Fang Yuan laughed, but there was no disappointment on his face.

When he asked this question, he had already known the answer, his expression turned cold: “Chu Du, you have no sincerity! We can forget about this matter.”

Saying so, he activated sword escape Immortal Gu and flew out like a sword, he pierced the air and instantly appeared far away.

“Friend, please wait.” Chu Du’s expression changed, he quickly chased.

Fang Yuan moved straight ahead, pointing towards the sky, after flying for a while, Chu Du’s figure appeared several li behind him.

“Immortal killer move...”

Fang Yuan looked back and felt that the Gu worm aura on Chu Du was very complex.

It was a strength path movement killer move, and was at rank seven, it was even faster than sword escape Immortal Gu’s linear movement!

Fang Yuan’s heart sank, this situation was bad for him.

In fact, he had placed most of his hope on sword escape Immortal Gu. After all, it was very fast, even ancient cloud beasts could not catch up.

(B oxnovel.c om) To think that Domination Immortal Chu Du also had an immortal killer move that could allow him to fly faster than sword escape Immortal Gu!

“I’m afraid that Chu Du has nurtured more Gu Masters for their immortal ascension than just this one. In the last hundred years, he must have secretly obtained a lot of Reckless Savage’s true meaning, his strength path attainment level is unmeasurably deep, this is how he created such strength path killer moves.”

“Since sword escape Immortal Gu will not work, let’s try blood torrent.”

Fang Yuan willed and stopped Sword Escape, his body still flew ahead due to inertia, but it became slower.

Next, blood-red light flashed on his body as it surrounded him entirely, turning into a river of blood.

The river of blood tore through the sky, moving like a slithering red snake, the smell of blood permeated the air.

Immortal killer move — Blood Torrent, activated successfully!

Fang Yuan turned around and flew towards his left side.

The consecutive use of both moves was very smooth, even Fang Yuan was satisfied: “I reduced the number of mortal Gu, it was the correct move! This way, the chances of blood torrent failing are lower, and I can use it faster. This is all thanks to the practice I did back in the immortal aperture.”

These thoughts only flashed for an instant, his attention was mainly placed on Domination Immortal Chu Du.

Fang Yuan had changed his direction, the most important thing was Chu Du’s reaction to it.

“If Chu Du can catch up to me, I will have to stop and debate with him, to discuss the matter of transaction.”

Fang Yuan was planning for the worst case scenario, but Domination Immortal Chu Du charged forward with an incredible force, flying right past him!

Fang Yuan’s expression froze.

His vision turned to follow Chu Du, he saw the other party move like a bullet train, Chu Du moved forward with great speed, he had such great strength that shock waves could be felt along his path.

After flying for more than ten li, Chu Du’s speed slowed down until he stopped moving.

Next, he turned around and gradually gained speed, charging at Fang Yuan.

His speed became faster and faster, soon, he reached a speed that surpassed sword escape Immortal Gu.

Brilliance flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes, he immediately used blood torrent and changed his direction.

Thus, the same situation happened again.

Domination Immortal Chu Du flashily, or rather, brutishly, flew past him.

Fang Yuan was overjoyed.

(B oxnovel.c om) He was worried about sword escape Immortal Gu because it could only fly in a straight line, thus he created blood torrent to make up for that weakness.

To think that this shortcoming was even more serious for Domination Immortal Chu Du!

The situation changed suddenly, Fang Yuan’s thoughts churned fiercely, he decided to stop moving.

It was very easy for him to escape now and shrug off Chu Du, as long as he was vigilant, he would not fail.

“Interesting.” Fang Yuan muttered, deciding to negotiate with Chu Du.

Chu Du saw that Fang Yuan stopped flying and felt great joy, he also stopped moving.

“So close, so close. It seems that the flying sword Immortal Gu in my hands is very useful. The other party is making considerations for it!”

Fang Yuan waited for Chu Du to fly to him, after a certain distance, he raised his hand: “Stop, let’s talk with this distance between us.”

Fang Yuan was vigilant, even though he had the advantage of movement, it was still better to maintain a certain distance.

Chu Du immediately stopped, he smiled, looking slightly pathetic compared to before.

Fang Yuan said: “Brother Chu is really incredible, this was really eye-opening! What killer move is this, it is so amazing, even my sword escape Immortal Gu cannot compare to it.”

“This killer move is called body strength travel, I created it after much effort, it can increase my speed using my immortal body’s strength path dao marks. But there is one weakness, I can only travel forward, and cannot change directions while flying, I cannot even move backwards. I have not practiced with it enough, I used it today out while panicking, it was truly shameful.” Chu Du said, he candidly conceded his weakness, giving an open-minded disposition that could make people look up to him.

Fang Yuan nodded, showing a serious expression: “Brother Chu is extremely powerful, during normal combat, in Northern Plains, who can make you use this move to retreat?”

“I will thank your praise! Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world is extremely deep, I only have a bit of reputation, but the more I cultivate, the more I realize my insufficiency. There are definitely more than five rank eight Gu Immortals in Northern Plains. Among rank sevens, you are one of those experts who can make me feel wary. I am ashamed, I do not even know about your name or background.” Chu

Du smiled with a bitter expression.

His words were not just out of politeness, they were his true thoughts.

Fang Yuan did not know much about Domination Immortal Chu Du, but Chu Du knew even less about Fang Yuan.

After Fang Yuan used sword escape Immortal Gu, his speed shocked Chu Du! After all, in terms of linear speed, sword escape Immortal Gu could compare with the similarly ranked qi escape Gu.

Chu Du was an experienced rank seven Gu Immortal, he had many movement methods. But compared to sword escape Immortal Gu, most of them were inferior. Only this final immortal killer move, body strength travel, could work.

Fang Yuan’s guess was right, this immortal killer move, body strength travel, was created by Chu Du for retreating.

But in Northern Plains, very few people could force Chu Du to retreat.

And because Chu Du had been keeping a low profile these last years to raise these Gu Masters for their immortal ascension, he did not fight much.

It was not that he did not practice this immortal killer move enough, but it simply had too many Gu worms, it was hard to use.

The first time Chu Du saw Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan was undergoing tribulation in the immortal aperture. Chu Du made a move, but Fang Yuan was even faster than him, with more resolution!

While Fang Yuan was searching for Chu Du’s information, Chu Du was not slacking, he was also trying to find Fang Yuan’s information.

But he had no gains.

In his perspective, Fang Yuan was someone who seemed to have jumped out of a rock. Since when did such a person exist in Northern Plains?!

Not mentioning anything else, just his aura was very strange. When Chu Du first saw him in the immortal aperture, he was rank six. But now, he had rank seven aura.

However, he was a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, that much should not be wrong.

But did he cultivate blood path or sword path?

This was a question that Chu Du was very curious about.

These two paths were not related at all! If it were soul path and enslavement path, or rule path and restriction path, or wisdom path and emotion path, then it was understandable.

But sword path and blood path?

Wasn’t he afraid that they would interfere with one another?

But Fang Yuan not only had rank seven sword path Immortal Gu, his blood path killer move made even Chu Du gasp in shock.

Also, also.

So be it if he cultivated blood path and sword path, that was none of Chu Du’s business, but he actually had a method to lure out the Reckless Savage’s true meaning?!

Chu Du had racked his brains and made countless attempts before ending in failure, he could only choose a crude method like raising disciples afterwards.

What method was actually used?

Reckless Savage’s true meaning, he definitely needed to have wisdom path attainment to do it!

Did that mean, his wisdom path attainment was also not low??

In this pursuit, even though it was very short, Chu Du could not catch up to Fang Yuan!

Seeing that Fang Yuan did not fly away but stopped instead, Chu Du felt like his heart was pounding, he was filled with excitement and joy!

Strength decided everything, thus right now, Chu Du treated Fang Yuan as an equal.

Fang Yuan was silent for a moment, before he slowly said again: “Actually, it is not impossible to have a transaction...”

Chu Du did not speak, he only listened. His eyes were burning with enthusiasm, as if fires were blazing in his pupils.

But after a long time, the despicable Fang Yuan did not speak, he seemed to have gone deep in thought.

Chu Du could not hold it in anymore, he asked: “I believe that with my wealth, you will definitely be satisfied.”

Fang Yuan looked at him before saying: “Didn’t you attend the Northern Plains auction recently?”

Chu Du’s expression froze, he said in a probing manner: “So you attended the auction as well?”

“That’s right.” Fang Yuan admitted openly: “During the auction, I even made use of you.” Of course, the second line was only in Fang Yuan’s mind.

“What would you like, you can just say it.” Chu Du pursued.

“It is hard to say.” Fang Yuan sighed, he frowned as he showed a difficult expression.

Chu Du was feeling impatient.

If this were another person, he would have slapped the other party already.

“There is nothing you cannot say, even if I do not have it now, I can try to get it for you.” Chu Du continued.

He had already decided to obtain this method regardless of the cost!

Fang Yuan sighed again: “I said that because I have not thought of what to trade with brother Chu yet.”

Chu Du was furious.

After such a long time, you showed such a difficult expression simply because you have not made up your mind?

Chu Du frowned, his tone became deep and low as he said: “Sir, did you stay here simply to toy with me?”

“Brother Chu, don’t be angry, of course not!” Fang Yuan immediately said: “Any Gu Immortal would have calamities and tribulations looming over them, we have countless needs. I have not thought of what, and how to transact with you to obtain the greatest benefit for my cultivation. How about this, give me some time to think about it, after careful consideration, I will reply to brother Chu.”

Chu Du had an ugly expression, he thought about it and nodded helplessly: “Alright.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1063: Transformation Path!

Seeing Fang Yuan’s figure leaving in the horizon, Chu Du watched, staying on the spot.

“Letting him go like this, was it a correct move or not?” Chu Du’s gaze was flickering.

But soon, he smiled bitterly to himself: “Even if I do not want to let him go, what can I do?”

“My methods cannot capture or catch up to him.”

“If I use brute force, with this person’s mysterious background, he might be troublesome to deal with, and even if I capture him, he might destroy his own soul, how would I get the method then?”

“However, seeing his attitude, he must be sincere in trading with me. Otherwise, he could have left already, why did he stay to talk with me?”

Chu Du recalled the conversation he had with Fang Yuan.

He thought about it for a while, he felt that Fang Yuan was very sincere, even though Fang Yuan did not talk about anything significant, and most of the things he said were lip service.

But precisely so, Chu Du felt: This was much more sincere than giving empty promises and assurances of benefits.

Of course, his greatest confidence was not in Fang Yuan’s attitude, but the flying sword Immortal Gu that he had in his hands.

“This is a rank seven Immortal Gu!”

Even a legendary figure like Chu Du did not have many rank seven Immortal Gu in his possession.

Fang Yuan flew away and did not encounter any more problems.

Lang Ya land spirit had already arranged for hairy man Gu Immortals to set up immortal battlefield killer moves, there were even Immortal Gu formations used for teleportation.

However, Fang Yuan had an extremely easy time in getting away from Chu Du. Thus, the immortal battlefield killer move to obstruct Chu Du was no longer needed.

Retrieving the components of the battlefield killer move, Fang Yuan used the Immortal Gu formation and returned to Lang Ya blessed land.

“You had dog shit luck Immortal Gu’s protection, yet you still encountered Chu Du, this does not follow common sense. Did anyone scheme against you?” Seeing Fang Yuan, Lang Ya land spirit asked straightforwardly.

Fang Yuan frowned, he had considered this question long ago.

“With dog shit luck Immortal Gu’s protection, my luck should not be bad. Was it because the earthly calamity was too fierce, the luck gained from Dog Shit Luck was all used to counter the earthly calamity?” Fang Yuan had a guess, but he could not say it to Lang Ya land spirit.

He was a human Gu Immortal after all.

Even though he joined Lang Ya Sect, they were still of different races, there was a rift between them.

Like earlier, when Fang Yuan rushed back to Northern Plains from Southern Border, Lang Ya land spirit used the opportunity to take advantage of his situation.

“But if that is the case, then the earthly calamity that I went through was already heavily weakened by luck. Then, what sort of strength would the actual earthly calamity have?”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan felt a cold chill.

In this tribulation, he had narrowly avoided death, his life was in danger, it was a close call.

In fact, this earthly calamity had completely surpassed the level of earthly calamities. Even the ten great catastrophes could not match Fang Yuan’s current earthly calamity.

“But I have connected luck with many people. Perhaps because Dog Shit Luck’s effect was split between many people, it was not effective.” Fang Yuan thought, but he said: “First supreme elder is right, this is not a problem of luck, someone was plotting against me!”

The identity of ‘Fang Yuan’ had already been exposed in the battle of Yi Tian Mountain.

Be it the secret about him being an otherworldly demon or Spring Autumn Cicada, the fact that he also destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was known to all.

Shadow Sect, Heavenly Court, and all of the Huang Jin tribes in Northern Plains were likely to plot against Fang Yuan.

Lang Ya land spirit sighed, worry was written all over his face, his tone became grim: “Maybe no one is plotting against you. Don’t forget, you are a member of Lang Ya Sect. And my Lang Ya blessed land is already exposed, we have suffered more than one attack. A while ago, we lost two Gu Immortals, the value of this place is enough for many experts and forces to act.”

Fang Yuan was slightly happy, it was much better for him if Lang Ya land spirit had such thoughts.

Lang Ya land spirit’s gaze was flickering, he quickly changed his words: “But if we can use wisdom Gu as the core to create the Immortal Gu House Secluded Residence, not only can we defend ourselves, we can even defend against all of the deductions from almost everyone in the world!”

Fang Yuan smiled without speaking.

It turned out that Lang Ya land spirit wanted to talk about this. It seemed that he was still coveting wisdom Gu. But sadly, in the earlier transaction, Fang Yuan did not sell wisdom Gu.

“It was all thanks to first supreme elder’s Gu worms that I passed this tribulation. I will return them to you now, these Gu worms were a great help.” Fang Yuan said as a huge number of Gu flew according to his will, out of his immortal aperture.

“Of course! With their help, simply an earthly calamity is a piece of cake.” Lang Ya land spirit said proudly.

Fang Yuan did not say the truth, but he did not lie, he diverted the topic: “Especially your killer move immortal tribulation tempering aperture, it was really effective. But Chu Du appeared at the end, it was quite scary. Thankfully, I was superior to him in terms of movement, albeit slightly.”

While listening, Lang Ya land spirit collected all of the Gu worms, after inspecting each of them, he asked with a tone of regret: “Are you really not selling Dang Hun Mountain and wisdom Gu to me?”

In the original transaction, Lang Ya land spirit wanted to use three true inheritances in exchange for Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley, and wisdom Gu.

But after thinking about it, Fang Yuan felt that even though refinement path, luck path, and theft path were good, they were not entirely suitable for him, they did not quite fit his future plans. If he exchanged for all of them, it was not worth it.

However, the refinement path killer move immortal tribulation tempering aperture, the luck path true inheritance’s dog shit luck Immortal Gu and others, they could provide Fang Yuan with huge help.

Thus, after thinking about it, Fang Yuan chose his words and urged the land spirit: “Do you really want to trade all three true inheritances with me? There are many Immortal Gu in the true inheritances, if I get them, would Lang Ya Sect not need them later?”

Lang Ya land spirit was unwilling to let them go as well.

For example, dog shit luck Immortal Gu, it had been refined immediately by Long Hair Ancestor the moment Giant Sun Immortal Venerable died.

After that, dog shit luck Immortal Gu had been guarding Lang Ya blessed land, providing huge help to the previous Lang Ya land spirit when he refined Gu. At the same time, it protected Lang Ya blessed land from countless disasters and dangers.

However, if Lang Ya land spirit did not offer them, these true inheritances would be too low in value, how could they be traded for Fang Yuan’s three treasures?

Thus, Fang Yuan urged again: “First supreme elder, since both of us are unwilling, why don’t we take what we need. Let’s deal with a portion of each.”

“Oh? Explain clearly.” Lang Ya land spirit said.

Fang Yuan spoke about his intentions as Lang Ya land spirit rejected: “No way, no way, you want the most essential parts of all three true inheritances, but you are only offering Luo Po Valley. This is a huge loss, no way! It will not do!”

Fang Yuan smiled, continuing to negotiate with Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit was not good at negotiations, his baseline was quickly identified by Fang Yuan after some probing.

Under such a situation, the land spirit was simple and easy to deal with compared to Gu Immortals.

Eventually, Fang Yuan and Lang Ya land spirit came to an agreement.

Fang Yuan officially sold Luo Po Valley to Lang Ya land spirit, while he obtained dog shit luck Immortal Gu, blood asset Immortal Gu, and dark limit Immortal Gu, these three rank six Immortal Gu. His debt to Lang Ya Sect was cleared, and he borrowed a large number of mortal Gu and Immortal Gu to fix his weaknesses, and most importantly, the Gu worms needed to form immortal tribulation tempering aperture and triple layered sword wave.

And in fact, immortal tribulation tempering aperture and triple layered sword wave were extremely helpful to Fang Yuan during the tribulation.

Even though this transaction was made, Lang Ya land spirit was still coveting Dang Hun Mountain and wisdom Gu right now.

This time, the land spirit expressed his intent to purchase them again.

But would Fang Yuan agree?

Even so, he could not reject Lang Ya land spirit too harshly, he thought and said carefully: “I have no intentions to sell these two yet, but if I have any difficulties in the future, and the situation requires it, I will use them to trade with first supreme elder.”

Lang Ya land spirit was about to speak.

Fang Yuan waved his hand, quickly saying: “I will leave these two treasures in Lang Ya blessed land. I will not take them with me, I will lend them to the sect for use, as per our previous agreement. Don’t worry, first supreme elder.”

Lending wisdom Gu to Lang Ya Sect meant Lang Ya land spirit would feed it, this solved a huge problem for Fang Yuan.

As for Dang Hun Mountain, it was better to not place it in his immortal aperture.

Famous mountains or rivers bore a huge burden on the heaven and earth qi. The same applied to secluded domains of heaven and earth.

Most importantly, Shadow Sect had clear knowledge of Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley, if they used Fixed Immortal Travel to teleport into Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture, that would be a terrible situation.

Lang Ya land spirit was not resigned, he continued to touch on this topic, but who was Fang Yuan? He was someone with negotiation skills honed from over five hundred years of life, the simple Lang Ya land spirit could not compete with him.

After a long conversation, Fang Yuan took back a lot of his cultivation resources that were stored with Lang Ya land spirit.

Like the eerie fire dragon pythons, regretful spiders, dragonfish, arrow bamboo forest, they were all from Hu Immortal blessed land or Star Form blessed land, they were sources of revenue that were only inferior to guts Gu.

From start to finish, Fang Yuan did not ask Lang Ya land spirit about selling the killer move immortal tribulation tempering aperture.

Chu Du?

He was just a backup plan for Fang Yuan.

Even though they had exchanged information path Gu worms and could communicate, Fang Yuan had already left, he was not restricted by any information path methods, wouldn’t any future transactions depend on Fang Yuan’s mood?

As for... rank seven flying sword Immortal Gu.

Hehe, it was just a rank seven Immortal Gu, so what if he could not take it back?

Ordinary Gu Immortals treasured rank seven Immortal Gu, but Fang Yuan owned even rank nine Immortal Gu like wisdom Gu, he naturally had a different perspective.

Especially when he had lost almost all of his Immortal Gu some time ago to Ying Wu Xie.

Merely rank seven flying sword Immortal Gu paled in comparison to all those Immortal Gu.

Chu Du did not know about Fang Yuan’s background, he underestimated Fang Yuan.

All in all, there was little chance that Fang Yuan would trade with Chu Du.

Reckless Savage’s true meaning was much more important to Fang Yuan compared to a rank seven Immortal Gu!

“Because the path that I am going to walk on now is transformation path.”

Fang Yuan had thought about it deeply, he had considered it thoroughly.

Transformation path!

This was the most suitable path for him now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1064: I am a transformation path Gu Immortal

Why did Fang Yuan choose transformation path?

After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Fang Yuan had a living body. He had been considering the most important question, what path was he going to choose from now on.

In his previous life, he chose blood path, that was because blood path allowed quick growth and was very powerful, he could grow while fighting, and it had little requirements towards resources. Moreover, during his previous life, this was his only decent fortuitous encounter, his best prospects were in blood path.

After rebirth, he gave up on blood path and chose strength path, that was because now was not the five regions chaotic war period, the regions were still orderly and blood path could not flourish. Another reason was because of his fortuitous encounters. Fang Yuan searched his memories and found the best opportunities for him at certain periods of time, coincidentally, these opportunities were all related to strength path.

Actually, be it blood path or strength path, they had flaws.

Blood path was in poor circumstances, people held animosity towards it. Any Gu Immortal or Gu Master who cultivated blood path would be pushed aside by the entire world.

Strength path was declining, even though Domination Immortal Chu Du added the human jun strength branch, its decline could not be stopped.

Truthfully speaking, these two paths were not the best choices.

Fang Yuan concluded: Since rebirth, his fortuitous encounters were quite plentiful.

Wisdom path, luck path, theft path...

These opportunities were also of very high grade. For example, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance, or Star Lord Wan Xiang’s star path inheritance.

Star path and wisdom path, these two paths were much better than blood path and strength path.

Having an inheritance and not having one resulted in drastically different outcomes.

The former allowed one to use the wisdom of predecessors to advance fearlessly, they could be very confident. The latter explored on their own, in a world of the unknown, they had to experiment and find their way forward slowly.

If Fang Yuan had obtained these two true inheritances in his previous life, as long as the situation allowed it, he would have chosen Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance as the main focus, with Star Lord Wan Xiang’s star path inheritance as well as Blood Sea Ancestor’s true inheritance to assist him. He would become a wisdom path Gu Immortal.

Because in terms of prospects, Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance was the best.

Wisdom path Gu Immortals were few in numbers, they were very valuable in the Gu Immortal world. While being very popular, they were also deeply feared by many.

But the path to choose was not just dependent on future prospects, one’s immediate needs were important too.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path inheritance came from a Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortal, it had been passed down for many generations, the prospects were great.

But this inheritance had a weakness, it did not excel in fighting.

The biggest advantage of this true inheritance was the proficiency in deduction.

In order to make up for this weakness, Dong Fang Chang Fan created the immortal killer move myriad star fireflies, his weakness was alleviated.

Dong Fang Chang Fan’s route was not suitable for Fang Yuan.

Because he was facing danger everywhere.

Ying Wu Xie, Shadow Sect’s remnant forces, Heavenly Court, Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, the Huang Jin tribes in Northern Plains, Fang Yuan had many enemies.

Especially after the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Fang Yuan’s secrets were exposed, be it Spring Autumn Cicada, his otherworldly demon status, or the crime of Imperial Court blessed land, he had almost been completely exposed.

Thus, Fang Yuan not only needed to consider his future prospects, he had to consider his circumstances.

In some aspects, his immediate needs were more important than his future prospects.

Without the ability to deal with his circumstances, even if he had huge prospects, it was useless, he could not make use of them.

Right now, Fang Yuan needed high battle strength.

Metal path, fire path, lightning path, sword path, blood path, these five paths were publicly recognized as the paths with the highest battle strength.

The first three had been mainstream for an extremely long time.

The latter two, be it sword path or blood path, had very short history, they were considered to be new. Sword path had Bo Qing, while blood path had Blood Sea Ancestor, but other than these two, there were few noteworthy people. Thus, the foundation of these two paths could not match the other three.

For Fang Yuan, be it metal path, fire path, or lightning path, his attainment level was ordinary, he had no inheritances for them.

In contrast, he was a blood path grandmaster, and even though his sword path attainment level was ordinary and had no inheritance, he had many of Bo Qing’s Immortal Gu.

The attainment level of all of the paths was an important element of consideration.

Without an inheritance, if the person had high attainment level, they could innovate and create new methods. But it would be harder to do it without an inheritance, the person needed talent and creativity.

Fang Yuan’s strength path, blood path, wisdom path, and star path attainment levels were all at grandmaster, with blood path coming from his previous life’s foundation. Strength path was accumulated over both lives, while wisdom path and star path were obtained by chance, using the dream realm to raise their attainment levels rapidly.

Refinement path was at quasi-grandmaster, it was good even among Gu Immortals.

Enslavement path was at master level, it was not impressive among Gu Immortals.

Luck path was quasi-master, while most of his other paths were ordinary (like sword path, light path, dark path, and others), or even blank (like phantom path).

In terms of attainment level, he should go on the path with the highest grandmaster attainment level, one out of these four.

But forget about blood path, or strength path on the decline, wisdom path and star path were not outstanding in battle strength, even though he had inheritances of them, Fang Yuan’s accumulated Immortal Gu were all lost already.

If the Immortal Gu in these inheritances were not yet refined, Fang Yuan could still slowly refine them in the future.

But these Immortal Gu were in Ying Wu Xie’s hands now, he did not know which ones were already destroyed, in this situation, there was a huge obstacle for his future cultivation. Even if he was willing to take a risk and refine Immortal Gu, because there could only be one, he might not succeed!

With all of these considerations, Fang Yuan was in an awkward position.

After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, when thinking about his future path, Fang Yuan felt deeply lost.

Only after he gradually realized the profoundness of this body, the confusion in him was dissipating, he could see hope again.

He first realized that his body had over a thousand dao marks, of all paths.

This was not out of the ordinary.

When Gu Immortals undergo tribulations, because of the tribulations in their immortal apertures, dao marks of all different kinds would form, it was only that there would very clearly be one or two types with the highest quantities.

The most important thing was — his dao marks did not interfere with each other, they did not weaken one another!

This was simply too amazing!

When Fang Yuan first realized this, he could not believe that something this good could exist!

This overturned conventional wisdom regarding cultivation. If he told people about it, they would think he was spouting nonsense.

But thinking about sovereign immortal fetus Gu — a rank nine Immortal Gu that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and Shadow Sect had prepared to create for tens of thousands of years, the essence of their work.

In this way, it was not strange for it to go against common sense.

Next, Fang Yuan was immensely joyful.

This benefit was not for others, it was for himself!

With just this point, he could cultivate every path!!

Long ago, Fang Yuan had once planned to cultivate two immortal apertures, one for time path, and another for strength path. But the sovereign immortal aperture was much more absurd, it could cultivate every path, from the start of history, every single path that had existed!

This was simply like a dream.

In history, even Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables cultivated one path primarily, with another secondarily. Even if Gu Immortals cultivated many paths, the result was often that they would end up in failure after trying to bite off more than they could chew.

Because their dao marks resisted each other, the more they cultivated, the greater the conflict, it was not worth it.

But Fang Yuan did not have this problem, he could cultivate every path, there was zero conflict, his prospects were bright, he surpassed the Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables in history!

Fang Yuan quickly calmed down.

The possibility was beautiful, but cultivating every path was just a wondrous dream. He had to consider the amount of time needed, resources, effort, and most importantly, a safe and peaceful cultivation environment.

Fang Yuan did not have any of these.

He had limited effort and resources, and had no time, his enemies were in all five regions, including the Northern Plains Gu Immortals who were most skilled at combat, the number one Gu Immortal organization in the world, Heavenly Court, the ten great ancient sects who controlled Central Continent, and countless people who were coveting the luck path true inheritance that he had...

His prospects were wonderful, but danger lurked everywhere.

Forget about creating his own path. Fang Yuan did not have that foundation. He could only choose one path that was available now, and continue on it. At most, he could cultivate a second one.

Any more, and the situation would not allow it. His time and effort would be wasted, and he would be seeking his own doom.

Among all of the paths, which one could allow Fang Yuan to gain great battle strength and display his expertise, while also considering his attainment level and inheritances?

After thinking about it, one path was left in Fang Yuan’s mind.

That was — transformation path!

Transformation path was called the ‘path that projected every path’, transformation path Gu Immortals could transform into existences of metal path, light path, sword light, light path, and all other paths.

But transformation path had a flaw that has lasted until today, that was when transformation path Gu Immortals transform into other beings, they needed to get rid of those dao marks to prevent their dao marks from interfering with one another.

This flaw was non-existent to Fang Yuan. Because of sovereign immortal fetus Gu, his dao marks co-existed in harmony. When Qi Zai chased him, he had even thought that Fang Yuan was the owner of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s secret of unrestrained transformation.

It could be said, transformation path could display Fang Yuan’s advantage the most.

It could even be said, Fang Yuan was currently, no, he was one of the only two people in history that were most suitable to cultivate transformation path.

Even more amazingly, once he cultivated transformation path, his secret of having dao marks that did not resist each other would be concealed completely.

Fang Yuan could use the Immortal Gu of all paths after transforming, without attracting any suspicion.

And after transforming, he could use the Immortal Gu of those paths and receive an amplification effect. For example, becoming a sword path beast to gain numerous sword path dao marks, and then using sword path Immortal Gu to gain a greater amplification in power.

Even though Fang Yuan’s transformation path attainment level was not high, so what, he had Reckless Savage’s true meaning!

Even though Fang Yuan did not have any transformation path inheritance, it was not an issue. Why? Because transformation path killer moves were easy to obtain, perfectly transforming into another form completely was a killer move of transformation path in itself.

As for the Immortal Gu of transformation path, they were the easiest to refine in all of the paths. To Fang Yuan, he could quickly accumulate them and restart again.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan had other considerations.

Like Lang Ya blessed land.

This Lang Ya land spirit placed high value on the identity of a hairy man, if Fang Yuan cultivated to fruition, he could turn into a hairy man Gu Immortal to gain his trust, he would get more support!

In the future, when he faces assault, he could turn into other things or people to deceive others. If his identity was exposed, and he could not do anything with his original identity, he could conceal himself and continue to roam the world safely.

“From now on, I am a transformation path Gu Immortal!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1065: Refining Change Form Immortal Gu Again

Lang Ya blessed land, a few days later.

“This is the interior rain.” Lang Ya land spirit said as he landed a basin of water to Fang Yuan, letting him look.

Fang Yuan stretched out his arm to receive it.

“Be careful.” Lang Ya land spirit instructed: “This rank six immortal material is very special, it is quite ‘heavy’.”

Lang Ya land spirit placed a lot of emphasis on the word ‘heavy’.

Fang Yuan nodded: “Don’t worry, I have heard of this immortal material.”

Saying this, Fang Yuan took this immortal material.

Suddenly, he felt a strong gravitational pull.

Looking over at it, the water in the basin was clear and transparent, it had traces of green in it. Fang Yuan was holding it stably, but the water surface had ripples for some reason, like the surface was being struck by rain.

This was the rank six immortal material interior rain!

This type of rainwater was very unique, it contained dao marks, its actual weight was not high, but it brought a type of burden to the life form holding it.

Lang Ya land spirit emphasized on ‘heavy’, he was not talking about weight, he was talking about its psychological burden.

“Have you really decided to use the third and final opportunity to ask me to refine Gu? Not to refine Fixed Immortal Travel, but to refine change form Immortal Gu instead?” While Fang Yuan was looking at the immortal material in the basin, Lang Ya land spirit asked again.

“Yes, I have decided, I won’t change it again!” Fang Yuan nodded, he replied firmly without hesitation.

Fang Yuan had thought about it deeply, he had made up his mind to cultivate transformation path.

Fixed Immortal Travel was good, but firstly, the most crucial material, light of the immemorial era, was missing, secondly, Fang Yuan was not certain that it had been destroyed, and finally, change form Immortal Gu had greater importance to Fang Yuan at present.

Thus, Fang Yuan changed his mind and used the final opportunity to try and refine change form Immortal Gu!

Immortal Gu were unique, change form Immortal Gu was the essence of transformation path itself!

This Immortal Gu was famous in history, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable had used it and refined it to rank nine.

But after Reckless Savage Demon Venerable died, the rank nine change form Immortal Gu was destroyed as well. From then on, people would refine it again starting from rank six.

In terms of foundation, transformation path was much deeper than sword path and blood path. After Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, there were many Gu Immortal experts in transformation path, these people were like bright stars in the sky, they had left a deep mark in the long history of the world, they were talented and legendary, future generations revered and looked up to them.

Change form Immortal Gu had been a key element, it had also risen and fallen with these experts. Change form Immortal Gu had been destroyed dozens of times, and refined again by others. Under most situations, it was rank six. Rank seven change form Immortal Gu appeared scarcely in history. As for rank eight change form Immortal Gu, it was even rarer, almost countable with two hands.

The higher the rank of the Immortal Gu, the harder it was to refine. And together with the lower chances of success, the refinement materials were also more expensive. For instance, Old Ancestor Xue Hu, to refine rank eight Immortal Gu Fortune Rivalling Heaven, had spent almost all of his savings, and even ordered Snowy Mountain blessed land's Gu Immortals to find immortal materials for him. From this, one could see the terrifying cost of refining a rank eight Immortal Gu.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan was only trying to refine rank six change form Immortal Gu.

He had the Immortal Gu recipe, and there was little chance of change form Immortal Gu being refined by others.

The immortal materials were mostly prepared, this was thanks to Lang Ya blessed land's huge immortal material inventory, and Fang Yuan did not have to pay for them at all.

Because of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and Long Hair Ancestor's agreement, Lang Ya land spirit would refine Gu for Fang Yuan three times. Mortal Gu were guaranteed, but Immortal Gu were not.

This was the third and final time.

“It is a pity. Back then you had the success dao mark, refining change form Immortal Gu would have been a guaranteed success. Why did you rebirth at that crucial moment?” Lang Ya land spirit thought back and felt it was greatly regretful.

Fang Yuan had informed Lang Ya land spirit of many things honestly. After all, secrets like his rebirth were already exposed, even if Lang Ya land spirit did not know, he could obtain information from the outside world.

“At that time, I was used by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, but even now, thinking back to it, it is still very suspicious.” Fang Yuan frowned.

Lang Ya land spirit shook his head: “Forget it, let's not talk about this. Even though we do not have a success dao mark, I have inherited my main body's special hairy man nature Gu refinement technique. This method can use the dao marks of heaven and earth to assist in the Gu refinement, even though calamities and tribulations occur, the advantages surpass the disadvantages.”

“Furthermore, my Lang Ya blessed land has used the killer move immortal tribulation tempering aperture to pass countless calamities and tribulations, there are a great number of refinement path dao marks here. Together with the effect of the remaining parts of Refinement Cauldron, there is a high chance of succeeding in refining change form Immortal Gu on the first try.”

“However, to make it safe, Fang Yuan, you have to participate in this refinement. You are the owner of dog shit luck Immortal Gu, using your strong luck, you can increase the chances of success. In this refinement process, interior rain is the first problem. In the following days, you have to practise with the interior rain that you have.”

Luck path had great effect in assisting Gu refinement.

Back then, when Giant Sun Immortal Venerable worked with Long Hair Ancestor to refine Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, luck path played an important role of assistance.

But when Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and Long Hair Ancestor cooperated to refine space escape Immortal Gu, it could not be used. After all, theft path was inferior to luck path in terms of helping with Gu refinement.

Next, Lang Ya land spirit taught Fang Yuan some of the secrets behind the hairy man nature Gu refinement technique, including some precious Gu refinement methods and many mortal killer move for Gu refinement.

Of course, these were not free, Fang Yuan had to pay with his sect contribution points.

Even so, Fang Yuan gladly accepted them.

The current Lang Ya land spirit was inferior to the previous one in Gu refinement, but it was still Long Hair Ancestor’s obsession, its refinement path attainment far surpassed Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had an amazing teacher now, many of his questions and problems in refinement path was solved. Those precious Gu refinement methods and killer moves that were long lost benefited Fang Yuan greatly. The hairy man nature Gu refinement technique was an eye-opener to Fang Yuan, he felt that if this method worked, it would be far superior to the human isolation style!

Interestingly, while Fang Yuan was researching refinement path, his brother was also researching refinement path in Black Hair Continent, which was under Cloud Cover Continent.

Fang Zheng was sitting in a room in the imperial city of Black Hair Continent, holding a three-colored flame in his hands.

Fang Yuan’s fake will was speaking inside his mind: “In the competition tomorrow, the enemy is extremely powerful! Fang Zheng, even though you have rank five cultivation level, you severely lack Gu worms. You are also a human Gu Master, you are ostracized in Black Hair Continent, you can only refine Gu yourself. Tonight, you must refine the rank five Gu River Swallowing Toad. That way, you will be able to counter the enemy’s water path methods.”

“I know, can you shut up?!” Fang Zheng snorted in his mind.

Fang Yuan’s fake will stopped speaking, but soon, the three-colored flame in Fang Zheng’s hands dissipated.

Fang Zheng spat out a mouthful of blood, after failing the Gu refinement, he suffered internal injuries.

“Hehe.” Fang Yuan’s fake will laughed: “Oh my stupid brother, you are still as useless as ever. The Gu refinement process has just started, and you have already failed at the third step.”

Fang Zheng’s expression was very ugly, but the truth was in front of him, he had nothing to say, he kept quiet and sat down, using Gu worms to heal himself.

Fang Yuan’s fake will continued: “Being useless is fine, any person can grow and become stronger even if they are useless and weak. But the important thing is, there is no hope if you cannot recognize your own weakness and uselessness. The materials you prepared can only allow you to attempt the Gu refinement three times. This is just the start and you have already failed. Without my help, how will you refine the River Swallowing Toad? Hehe, in tomorrow’s battle, death is not barred, the other party will not spare you even if you beg them. You are beyond saving.”

Fang Zheng felt anger from embarrassment, he shouted: “If I die, that’s my own business, you are too noisy, shut up!”

Fang Yuan’s fake will said eerily: “I am going to keep talking, can you stop me? You think I care about your life? Hmph, little brother, you are still so ignorant. I only want revenge, you are just a tool for my revenge.”

“I can become anyone’s tool, but I will definitely not be yours!” Fang Zheng replied resolutely.

Fang Yuan’s fake will laughed: “You have no choice, even if you do not want to, so what? After participating in the competition, along your advancement, you killed many hairy man Gu Masters, you were taking revenge for me. Tonight, you must listen to my advice in order to successfully refine the Gu. You must accept my guidance, otherwise, you will die tomorrow without doubt!”

Fang Zheng’s expression was dark, but he did not rebuke.

He clenched his fists, falling into dead silence.

Two hours later, he started to refine Gu.

Fang Yuan slowly gave his pointers regarding the steps. Fang Zheng did not speak, but he followed the instructions without any deviation.

Finally, when the sky was turning bright, at dawn, Fang Zheng succeeded in refining the River Swallowing Toad!

Cloud Cover Continent.

Fang Yuan lightly let out a breath of air.

The interior rain in front of him had been processed properly, it was like frozen ice, resembling a completely transparent jade.

But the truth was, processing the immortal material to this degree was not just as simple as freezing it.

There were more than fifty steps involved in this, more than twenty Gu refinement methods were used, and thirty refinement path mortal killer moves. Furthermore, the Gu refinement needed to do all these within several minutes.

After wasting three basins, Fang Yuan finally succeeded by the fourth basin of interior rain.

At this time, a lump of fake will flew to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone, after confirming that it was harmless, he retrieved it in his mind.

Soon, an almost indiscernible smile appeared on the corners of his lips.

“In order to survive, Fang Zheng can only follow my instructions. Even though he hates me to the core, in order to live, he can only obey.”

“Every time he survives using my guidance, he would feel humiliated and angry. But as long as this happens once, it will continue to happen. The more it happens, the less affected he feels, eventually, he will get used to my existence and rely on me subconsciously. By then, it would be the best time to refine Blood Deity.”

“But his current mental state is still not good enough, he needs to be trained further.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1066: Everyone Collecting Immortal Materials

A blood deity was Fang Yuan’s long term plan.

Fang Zheng was the second step of this plan.

The first step of this plan was to refine blood deity Immortal Gu. Fang Yuan wanted to refine this Immortal Gu in his first life. He had even found trouble with Vicious Lightning Fiend for its remnant recipe.

Only after refining blood deity Immortal Gu and killing a blood related relative would he be able to create a blood deity.

Right now, Fang Yuan might have a blood deity Immortal Gu recipe, but it was only seventy percent complete. When he had been an immortal zombie, he did not have the resources and effort to spare in completing this Immortal Gu recipe. Now he had revived, but he could no longer step in the light of wisdom.

“Even if I can’t use the light of wisdom, with my grandmaster attainment in blood path and wisdom path, it is enough to deduce the rest of the blood deity Immortal Gu recipe. It is just that the time and effort used would be far more than using light of wisdom.”

“Even after refining blood deity Immortal Gu, for killing Fang Zheng and creating a blood deity, I still need to change his point of view first, at least, I need to make him not have hatred towards me. Because refining a hatred filled relative into a blood deity will create backlash to the owner, they are like a double-edged sword, harming the enemies but also able to harm myself as well if I let go of my guard.”

Actually, there were many ways to influence someone’s feelings towards other people in the world of Gu Masters. Wisdom path had countless methods, emotion path was even more specialized in this.

Fang Yuan had quite a lot of such methods. As long as he wanted to, he could just use one to make Fang Zheng docile and loyal to him.

But doing so meant influencing Fang Zheng through external power, altering his true emotions. And when he is killed and refined into a blood deity, the wisdom path dao marks used on him would be cleared completely, leaving behind only pure blood path dao marks.

At that time, Fang Zheng’s true emotions would return.

Fang Yuan could only slowly change Fang Zheng’s emotions and perspective, and he would be able to get a blood deity that met his standards.

Obviously, changing Fang Zheng’s perspective would be a very long process, and the completion of blood deity Immortal Gu’s recipe was also a far-off project, at least, Fang Yuan currently did not have the time to do this. Not to mention, after he perfected the blood deity Immortal Gu recipe, he still would have to prepare immortal materials to refine Blood Deity. However, the last point was much easier than other paths, blood path Gu worms had a characteristic – the cost of their refinement was quite low.

These many reasons determined that the refinement plan of Blood Deity could only be a long term goal.

But no matter how long it took, as long as he moved forward step by step, persevering and not giving up, he would finally succeed.

Fang Yuan was currently taking out some time from his busy schedule to train Fang Zheng, reaching his goal slowly.

A thousand mile journey starts from a step, droplets of water form into river.

After understanding Fang Zheng’s situation, Fang Yuan activated Gu worms to produce fake will which then flew out.

This fake will would fly to Fang Zheng’s mind, replenishing the fake will that had been consumed in his mind.

A few days passed, Fang Yuan became very skilled in processing interior rain. Lang Ya land spirit then gave him another set of immortal materials to familiarize and gain proficiency in the Gu refinement technique.

Fang Yuan’s attention was mainly placed on this aspect in preparation for refining change form Immortal Gu.

When he was free, he would pay attention to his sovereign immortal aperture, inspect the changes in his immortal aperture and managing it.

Gu Masters nourished their aperture, and the aperture produced primeval essence which was then used to activate Gu worms. But regardless of if it were Gu worms, Gu materials or primeval stones, Gu Masters relied on the outside world for these cultivation resources.

At Gu Immortal level, the immortal aperture could not only produce immortal essence, it could also produce countless resources and they would be extremely safe and reliable, unlike the resources from the outside world which would need the Gu Immortal to watch all the time to prevent others from stealing them.

To a Gu Immortal, the immortal aperture was the safest production base. If it was managed properly, it would be an extremely huge help to the Gu Immortal, and be a solid foundation for them to rely on. Because of having the same dao marks, it could produce the most suitable resources needed for the Gu Immortal and produce food for Immortal Gu. Trading the resources with the outside world could earn the Gu Immortal a lot of immortal essence stones. There was even a chance of the immortal aperture having a completely new wild Immortal Gu formed!

Fang Yuan inspected his immortal aperture.

His immortal aperture was divided into ten layers, with the layout like the five regions and nine heavens.

Why was there such a layout, was it intentionally created like that by Spectral Soul or was it naturally formed? Fang Yuan did not know. After all, he had no role in creating sovereign immortal fetus Gu, he was only a lucky fellow who seized the fruits of success at the last moment.

Fang Yuan had conveniently named the layers by referencing the five regions and nine heavens, with just an addition of the word ‘mini’ in front; like Mini Northern Plains, Mini Eastern Sea and so on.

After making several observations, Fang Yuan had gradually discovered some minor mysteries of the sovereign immortal aperture.

He discovered: the sovereign immortal aperture’s five regions and nine heavens were not only similar to the outside world in layout, their environments were also almost the same.

For instance, Mini Northern Plains had the terrain of a boundless flat grassland, the wind path dao marks in the immortal aperture were somewhat more numerous in this area.

Most of the fire path dao marks in the immortal aperture were located in Mini Western Desert. Mini Southern Border had more earth path dao marks and also some poison path dao marks as well.

After discovering this, Fang Yuan had distributed his accumulated cultivation resources accordingly.

He placed the eerie fire dragon pythons in Mini Western Desert.

Dragonfish in Mini Eastern Sea.

Regretful spiders in Mini Southern Border.

Arrow bamboo forest, star fragment grass and so on in Mini Blue Heaven.

As for Mini Northern Plains, there were large numbers of snow monsters in there. These monsters remained behind from the first earthly calamity, and they included large numbers of desolate beast snow monsters, and even ancient desolate beast level snow monsters.

Fang Yuan did not have the time or energy to deal with these snow monsters for the moment and so he left them aside. Anyway, Mini Northern Plains was empty, with no precious resources and was quite large, so these snow monsters could move about freely, after all, they were unlike ruin bats which could pierce through the aperture walls.

Air bubble fish, shark fin wolf, literature carps, desolate beast giant horned sheep, worldly sand gull, oil water, rockmen, blood zhi forest, mirror willow trees and so on were also arranged properly.

While Fang Yuan was training his Gu refinement skills, he was also taking out some time to look after these resources.

Arrow bamboo forest, star fragment grass and so on might have been moved into Mini Blue Heaven, but their Gu worm production had fallen terrifyingly. Meanwhile, eerie fire dragon pythons and dragonfish experienced minor decrease in their reproduction. Only regretful spiders had similar production rate to beforehand.

There was nothing to be done, the sovereign immortal aperture might have broad prospects and unlimited potential, but currently it had only gone through one earthly calamity.

Although it possessed dao marks of every path, but there were only about a hundred dao marks of the majority of the paths.

The growth of regretful spiders relied on wisdom path dao marks, dragonfish on food path and water path dao marks, while the living environment of eerie fire dragon pythons had more fire path dao marks. The production of star path mortal Gu in arrow bamboo forest and the star fragment grass fields depended on star path dao marks.

He had previously placed these resources in Hu Immortal blessed land or Star Form blessed land.

The former had passed six or seven earthly calamities and had a lot of dao marks, its fire path and water path dao marks passed the numbers in the sovereign immortal aperture. While Star Form blessed land itself focused on star path, the sovereign immortal aperture simply could not be compared to it on this aspect.

However, not all the paths in the sovereign immortal aperture had only around a hundred dao marks.

Qi path dao marks were far higher in number, this was because Fang Yuan had killed the qi path Gu Immortal Qi Zai in Southern Border’s Five Regional Mountain Range and obtained his accumulation of qi path dao marks.

However, qi path dao marks were still not the highest in number, the highest were snow path dao marks.

Fang Yuan had passed his first earthly calamity with difficulty, actually calling it an ‘earthly calamity’ was not appropriate, it was so terrifying that it far surpassed the ten great catastrophes.

Calamities and tribulations had a rule, that was the balance of fortune and disaster, the stronger the might of the calamities and tribulations, the more benefits the Gu Immortal could receive after passing them.

The benefits here were referring to dao marks.

Fang Yuan obtained huge numbers of dao marks from his first earthly calamity.

Among them, snow path dao marks were the highest in number, following afterwards were strength path and transformation path dao marks. The latter two paths’ dao marks were lower in quantity to qi path. After all, Fang Yuan’s qi path dao marks were the lifetime accumulation of the rank seven Gu Immortal Qi Zai, while the strength path and transformation path dao marks were obtained just from the first earthly calamity.

These dao marks were already beginning to influence Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

It was still not noticeable in the other four small regions, but in Mini Northern Plains, there was already a large patch of snowy plain and its boundary was still slowly expanding.

This environment was good enough for Fang Yuan to plant many kinds of cold resistant vegetation.

Like when Hu Immortal blessed land’s environment changed after experiencing a few earthly calamities, and Hu Immortal was able to plant blue degree grass, chestnut grass, six divine grass, milk tea flowers and so on.

One main principle of managing immortal apertures was to act according to the environment.

To refine Change Form, Fang Yuan was preparing with all his effort, and in Central Continent, Ying Wu Xie’s group was also not idling.

They had obtained the light of the immemorial era, and started gathering other immortal materials listed in the Gu recipe.

They were able to resolve a small portion of the items from their own inventories, but there were still many that required them to buy from the outside world or exchange with others.

Ying Wu Xie had inherited the remnant forces of Shadow Sect, and was the boss of Defy, so his first choice was to trade for the resources from the organization.

Negotiations, bargaining, and finally transactions.

Gu Immortals chased after profits and with the loose structure of Defy, it was not easy to transact immortal materials.

Ying Wu Xie and Hei Lou Lan almost ran their mouths dry while negotiating. Shi Nu and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were not adept at negotiations.

After great pains and effort, Ying Wu Xie was finally able to gather three portions of Gu refinement materials.

“Yu Mu Chun is already dead, I have no choice but to give up on the hairy man heaven and earth style and use human isolation style to refine Fixed Immortal Travel. This method’s success rate is quite low, just three portions of immortal materials are not enough.”

Ying Wu Xie did not stop purchasing the materials, moreover to refine the Gu, he and the other three immortals took the risk of returning to Earth Abyss.

Shadow Sect had arranged a super Gu formation in Earth Abyss which could provide huge help in Gu refinement.

When Ying Wu Xie barely gathered six complete portions of immortal materials through Defy, a mishap occurred.

A member of Defy, demonic Gu Immortal Gong Sun Liang, who had been hiding in Ming Tang valley, was ambushed and captured by Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals! Gong Sun Liang sent a request for help to Defy, the whole of Defy had immediately fallen into a huge turbulence.

Gong Sun Liang, who had hidden himself very well, was actually captured. More importantly, Heavenly Court had personally made a move, this was truly shocking.

Most of the members of Defy were those that were suppressed or excluded by Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, and had secretly allied for survival. Meanwhile, the ten great ancient sects were no more than subsidiaries of Heavenly Court.

Facing the colossal Heavenly Court, everyone in Defy was feeling insecure, and feared Gong Sun Liang revealing clues that would implicate them.

“Damned Heavenly Court!” Ying Wu Xie could only curse at this.

Because of this event, other members of Defy went into hiding, and no longer dared to communicate with him, let alone trading immortal materials.

Ying Wu Xie knew they not only feared Heavenly Court, more than that they were doubtful of him, this boss. After all, previously, Gong Sun Liang had lent his Immortal Gu to Ying Wu Xie, and he was the one who met with disaster while the Immortal Gu remained with Ying Wu Xie. Was it the greed for Immortal Gu that the boss intentionally did not save Gong Sun Liang? This suspicion had caused the power and prestige of the boss’ name to take a huge hit.

Gong Sun Liang was captured, cutting down Ying Wu Xie’s optimal source of gathering immortal materials.

With no choice, they could only take help of treasure yellow heaven.

This was the biggest market in the five regions.

But the service charge was high and the transactions were not secret, they could easily be tracked down by those that had the intention.

In short, the risk was high, if not for there being no other way, Ying Wu Xie would not have used this method.

“Gong Sun Liang is captured, Heavenly Court will sooner or later find out about this place. Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord is dead, but Fairy Zi Wei has awakened. I must refine Fixed Immortal Travel as soon as possible!”

Ying Wu Xie was feeling more and more hurried.

His circumstances were also worsening by the day.

Shadow Sect had emptied out almost all their treasuries to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, even using Zombie Alliance as immortal materials to refine into the ten extreme formation.

Shi Nu might be rank seven, but his immortal aperture was not managed properly.

Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng had advanced to Gu Immortal not long ago and had limited accumulations.

Although treasure yellow heaven had a superb collection of immortal materials, Ying Wu Xie suffered from poverty and had to spend his remaining wealth very carefully. He had to haggle over the smallest details, who would want to transact immortal materials with him?

Finally, by the time Ying Wu Xie was able to gather ten portions of Gu refinement materials through treasure yellow heaven, he had almost reached the point where he shed tears of bitterness, his expression one of misery.

A tiger without strength gets bullied by dogs.

If now was before the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, there would be ten or twenty entire portions of rank six immortal materials which could be obtained from just a fraction of Shadow Sect’s treasury. Even if the materials were not in the treasury, with just one order, Zombie Alliance over the five regions would mobilize large numbers of immortal zombies to gather the immortal materials.

Why would he get into this state!

To gather the immortal materials, the current Ying Wu Xie and the rest had almost already emptied out their pockets.

“I must succeed in refining Fixed Immortal Travel! I must succeed!” Ying Wu Xie inwardly cried out.

His situation was filled with difficulties, while Fang Yuan was progressing smoothly.

Fang Yuan had already discussed with Lang Ya land spirit, even if the first Gu refinement did not succeed, they would still continue.

As for the immortal materials required for the second or the third time, Fang Yuan would have to bear all the costs.

He had ample money on hand, or rather, he had extremely ample money on hand .

The production of his major resources had decreased, but Fang Yuan’s earnings had instead multiplied by several times!

The reason?

The time path foundation in Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture was extremely abundant, the rate of time inside was as high as sixty times that of the outside world.

What did that imply?

One day in the outside world was two months inside the sovereign immortal aperture!

With such an increase in time, there would be more resources produced, completely making up for the reduction in the production rate.

However, only a part of these resources would be sold by Fang Yuan. When negotiating with Lang Ya land spirit, Fang Yuan had intentionally mortgaged Dang Hun Mountain. In any case, Fang Yuan was able to pay the debt.

But this, however, gave Lang Ya land spirit plenty of motivation.

Lang Ya land spirit was slightly worried that the Gu refinement would succeed in one go, wouldn’t that mean he would be unable to take the chance to obtain Dang Hun Mountain?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1067: Both Sides Refine Gu

Several days later, in a deep part of Central Continent’s Earth Abyss.

Shi Nu came back from the outside, reporting to Ying Wu Xie: “Master, I have already investigated clearly. Because of the huge cave-in, there was a massive commotion, Ancient Soul Sect sent out three Gu Immortals to investigate. According to your instructions, I have already lured several ancient desolate beasts and five desolate beast groups to them. Because there seems to be wild Immortal Gu in them, the three Gu Immortals from Ancient Soul Sect will be kept busy.”

Shi Nu was a rockman, he was born with earth path dao marks. Shi Nu’s earth path cultivation was extremely useful in an environment like Earth Abyss.

Ying Wu Xie nodded: “You did well in this matter, but heaven’s will is everywhere, do not be careless. When I am refining Gu, heaven’s will might influence these Gu Immortals to cause them to come here and ruin our plan!”

Shi Nu thought for a moment before speaking: “Master is right, but in this direction, we have already arranged three groups of desolate beasts to obstruct them. Even if they get past the desolate beasts and arrive here, we will have enough time to react.”

Ying Wu Xie shook his head slightly: “You have not seen the true power of heaven’s will. Not only can it influence Gu Immortals, it can also affect desolate beasts and desolate plants. At the crucial moment, these desolate beast groups might charge at us.”

Shi Nu’s expression changed: “If the desolate beast group charges here... what do we do?”

What he meant was, were his earlier preparations of luring the beast groups simply shooting themselves in the foot?

“No need to worry. My confidence does not lie in these desolate beast groups or ancient desolate beasts. It is in this super Gu formation!” Ying Wu Xie said as an insightful light flashed across his eyes.

Here was the safest place in Central Continent.

This super Gu formation covered all aspects, it not only hid them from heaven’s will, it prevented the deductions of wisdom path Gu Immortals, and also had incredible offense and defense, it could even assist in refining Gu.

When Spectral Soul was in the door of life and death, he devoured souls and gained the memories and cultivation experiences of countless Gu Immortals. When he was alive, he was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, his talent was top tier even throughout history.

Experiences of formation path and refinement path were all absorbed by Spectral Soul, he saved a lot of time and effort because of this, he raised his formation path, refinement path, and other paths’ attainment levels to great grandmaster.

And this super Gu formation was designed by Spectral Soul in the door of life and death, one could imagine how powerful it was.

Ying Wu Xie was relying on this super Gu formation to refine Gu, it was an ingenious idea.

Even if desolate beast groups or ancient desolate beasts came charging, he could use the super Gu formation to kill these desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts, using their souls to fuel the super Gu formation and increase its might. Thus, there was no issue of creating trouble for themselves.

Shi Nu’s worry was undue, even though he had lived here for a long time, he did not know the true power of this Gu formation.

“I did not destroy Spring Autumn Cicada, heaven’s will resides inside this Gu, thus, the location of the super Gu formation is known by heaven’s will. But it is not a problem, even if Heavenly Court’s rank eight Gu Immortals attack us, I can defend us for some time. With Heaven Overseeing Tower destroyed now, even though they have fate Gu, the chances of Heavenly Court getting here are low!”

Ying Wu Xie did not give up on Spring Autumn Cicada after careful consideration.

Fang Yuan could use Spring Autumn Cicada to destroy Shadow Sect’s plan of a hundred thousand years. Then why couldn’t Ying Wu Xie also use Spring Autumn Cicada as his final trump card?

Heaven’s will was vast, it only cared about balance, it did not bear grudges. Anyone who threatens this world or threatens the life forms in this world would be targeted by heaven’s will.

Right now, heaven’s will’s main target was Fang Yuan, not Ying Wu Xie.

Thus, even though Spring Autumn Cicada was full of heaven’s will, it was still useful to Ying Wu Xie.

And in Ying Wu Xie’s plans, he was going to re-refine Spring Autumn Cicada, to clear out the heaven’s will inside, making this legendary Gu his own.

But these were future plans.

Right now, Ying Wu Xie’s mind was on refining Fixed Immortal Travel.

This Immortal Gu was the key to resolving his problem!

With this Immortal Gu, he could go anywhere, he would regain the freedom he needed.

“There is no time, we should refine Fixed Immortal Travel now. Shi Nu, don’t resist, I will activate the Gu formation and send you to the formation core, you will assist me with refining the Gu.” Ying Wu Xie ordered.

“Yes master, I will do my best, even if I have to stake my life!” Shi Nu quickly responded.

After moving Shi Nu, Ying Wu Xie also came to the most central formation core. As for Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan, they were moved to two other formation cores.

Even though it was only a rank six Fixed Immortal Travel, this Gu refinement was very significant to Shadow Sect’s future, and even the situation of the five regions.

The Gu refinement began!

Half a month later, Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

The first refinement attempt of change form Immortal Gu was about to begin.

Fang Yuan stood in Cloud Cover Continent, he was looking at Lang Ya land spirit with a serious expression.

Lang Ya land spirit was no longer so sagely, he was muscular and brawny, he had black hair on his body as he floated in the sky like a demonic god.

He growled, his voice filled the scene, clouds scattered upon his action.

Dao marks seemed to have lit up due to his voice, the surroundings were full of them.

“These dao marks are mostly refinement path dao marks, they are exceptionally good assistance in Gu refinement!” Lang Ya land spirit introduced proudly.

He growled again.

While growling, lumps of light shined in the entire sky, they shone with beautiful and vibrant lights, it was a dazzling sight.

“What is happening in the sky?”

“Quickly look, an immortal miracle has occurred again!”

“Not long ago, there was a rainbow beam, and now, there are rainbow stars in the sky, this is such a grand sight!”

At once, in Black Hair Continent, Yellow Hair Continent, and White Hair

Continent, there were huge commotions as all sorts of people, from beggars to royalty, looked up with enthusiastic gazes, at the stars in the sky.

“Each star is oozing with Immortal Gu aura, these are the components of the Immortal Gu House, Refinement Cauldron?” Fang Yuan asked in a questioning tone.

Lang Ya land spirit nodded, saying regretfully: “You guessed right, it is a pity that most of the core Immortal Gu are gone, if Refinement Cauldron was intact, the chances of refining change form Immortal Gu are sixty percent!”

“But forget it if its lost, I am not going to repair Refinement Cauldron anyway, what can the complete Refinement Cauldron do? True strength does not lie in Immortal Gu, it depends on the Gu Immortal themselves.”

“Pay attention, I am about to start!”

At this time, the dao marks in the surrounding hundred li lit up, the sky was shining in rainbow colors.

Lang Ya land spirit was high in the sky, countless Gu worms were flying around him, large numbers of mortal Gu materials were instantly refined by him, the speed was so fast Fang Yuan could barely keep up by looking.

In a while, Lang Ya land spirit growled: “Your turn.”

In an instant, Fang Yuan’s vision changed, he replaced Lang Ya land spirit in his position, floating in the air. As for Lang Ya land spirit, he was standing on the ground, watching Fang Yuan.

As it turned out, Lang Ya land spirit had assessed the situation and decided that this Gu refinement was going to use a dual Immortal Gu refinement method. Lang Ya land spirit was going to use the hairy man Gu refinement method, while Fang Yuan was going to process the important immortal materials. They held equal importance in this.

Fang Yuan was amply prepared. After appearing in the sky, he waved his hands as he took out a large basin of interior rain.

Lang Ya land spirit saw this and nodded, feeling slightly pleased.

Fang Yuan was calm and collected, he had deep foundation in the basics, his methods also had an indescribable essence of profundity.

“This lad is worthily a reborn individual, with his previous life’s experiences, his refinement path attainment level is reaching grandmaster. But to take this final step, it will not be easy.” Lang Ya land spirit assessed.

The Gu refinement proceeded smoothly, all of the steps were meticulously followed. Even if accidents occurred, they were small and negligible.

Fang Yuan and Lang Ya land spirit made ample preparations. And because Fang Yuan and Lang Ya land spirit were not unskilled in refinement path, it was a cooperation of two experts. It was not strange to have such progress.

For three days and nights, Lang Ya land spirit and Fang Yuan worked without rest, their hard work paid off in the form of an incomplete Immortal Gu.

Lang Ya land spirit saw this and was overjoyed: “It seems that this first Gu refinement is likely to succeed! As long as the last few steps have no issues...”

Before he finished his words, the sky rumbled, thunder resounded as lightning flashed.

The Immortal Gu was about to form, tribulation descended!

Fang Yuan’s expression changed, but his hands were still stable, manipulating the mystical icy flame, tempering the incomplete Immortal Gu.

“Don’t worry, it is merely a rank six Immortal Gu’s tribulation, it is nothi... what?!” Lang Ya land spirit’s pitch became extremely high, like a rooster held by its neck.

His eyes were staring wide at the rumbling tribulation lightning in the sky.

Before the tribulation descended, the intensity and aura had already far surpassed the standards of rank six in Lang Ya land spirit’s memories.

In fact, even rank seven Immortal Gu would not result in such tribulation lightning!

“Why did this happen?!” Lang Ya land spirit growled angrily in confusion.

“First supreme elder, take care of the Gu refinement, I will deal with the tribulation.” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth.

“No! At the crucial moment, you cannot leave, your Dog Shit Luck is protecting the Immortal Gu. Let me deal with the tribulation, everyone, form the ancient battle formation!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted.

As he said that, close to ten hairy man Gu Immortals flew to him. As silvery light flashed, a huge silver giant appeared again!

The second ranked battle formation in the Olden Antiquity Era — Heavenly Giant Solor!

Central Continent, Earth Abyss.

“Huff, huff, huff...” Ying Wu Xie breathed roughly, his eyes were red, he was like a gambler who had lost almost all his money, and was desperate to recoup his losses.

Since half a month ago, he had been trying to refine Fixed Immortal Travel, up until now, he had already failed eight times!

“Damn it, I only have two chances left.”

“I have the Gu formation to help me, but I still failed eight times. The human isolation style truly has lower success rate compared to the hairy man heaven and earth style.”

“However, even if Yu Mu Chun were still alive, I would never use the hairy man heaven and earth style. Heaven’s will wants to get rid of me, if I give it this opportunity, it will use the tribulations to attack. If a tribulation that counters the super Gu formation destroys it, there will be trouble!”

“Fang Yuan does not know about heaven’s will, he is using the hairy man heaven and earth style. Hehe, good luck to him.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1068: Success and Failure

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Loud sounds resounded non stop as the entire sky of Cloud Cover Continent shook.

“This is the heavenly drum thunder tribulation!” Lang Ya land spirit said inside the ancient battle formation Heavenly Giant Solor.

His face was showing shock and confusion.

“With this heavenly drum thunder tribulation, every time thunder booms, formless astral lightning would form in the Gu Immortal’s body, destroying their intestines and organs, the force can blow up mountains and crack boulders. This is a sound path and lightning path tribulation, normal Gu Immortals cannot defend against it easily, they are also sure to die in this tribulation. However, Fang Yuan, you do not need to fear, this place is surrounded with refinement path dao marks, it is the best defense. Furthermore, I have methods to resist it, as long as Heavenly Giant Solor is around, you will be safe!”

While feeling anxious, Lang Ya land spirit transmitted this to Fang Yuan, he was afraid that Fang Yuan would be distracted by the tribulation, causing the Gu refinement to end up in failure.

Even though Lang Ya land spirit wanted to get Dang Hun Mountain, and Fang Yuan failing to refine the Gu would help in this, he was a land spirit that had to follow his promises, this was an agreement made by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and Long Hair Ancestor, he had to do his best to help Fang Yuan without scheming against him.

Fang Yuan floated in the air, completely unaffected by the rumbling thunder outside.

His expression was calm, his mind was also ice cool.

Lang Ya land spirit’s worry was excessive, Fang Yuan had undergone so many battles, the five regions chaotic war, the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, he had experienced all of these chaotic scenes, he was immune to such interference.

He was composed, his fingers moved quickly, like flowers blooming, he stably proceeded with the Gu refinement.

Boom boom boom.

Every thunderous sound would cause the giant silver body of Heavenly Giant Solor to shake.

The hairy man Gu Immortals who formed the battle formation felt agitated, their hair was standing on end, as if an apocalypse was coming.

Lang Ya land spirit snorted coldly: “I have a move that counters sound path. Behold my immortal killer move — Silent World!”

The silver giant shone with boundless brilliance.

The silvery light was sharp, like shards of the sun.

Fang Yuan shut his eyes in time, as he activated several defensive killer moves.

The silvery light flickered and vanished without a trace.

Silent world!

No more thunder was heard.

In the sky, dark clouds loomed as countless bolts of lightning flashed in the clouds.

But the thunder that accompanied every flash of lightning was gone.

After a long time, the sounds of thunder returned, from soft gradually to loud.

“With just this heavenly drum thunder tribulation’s size, even if it expands by ten times, it cannot interrupt the Gu refinement.” Lang Ya land spirit had just said this smugly when the dark clouds in the sky transformed.

Numerous blue light lumps shot down from the dark clouds, each light lump was a blue charm lightning shadow!

This was a lightning fiend, its battle strength matched rank six Gu Immortals.

When Hu Immortal underwent tribulation, she died because of a blue charm lightning shadow. And now, Fang Yuan had to face twenty of them!

Lang Ya land spirit’s eyes were bulging, he yelled: “What is going on? Why is there a second blue charm lightning shadow tribulation? And the size is actually twenty times of the usual!”

Even with Lang Ya land spirit’s long life and countless experiences, he was visibly fazed.

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, this was so similar to the situation when he was undergoing tribulation.

“During my first earthly calamity, it surpassed a heavenly tribulation. This time, during change form Immortal Gu’s refinement, the same thing happened, there are actually twenty blue charm lightning shadows! If I encountered this during my earthly calamity, I would have died without question!”

During Fang Yuan’s first earthly calamity, the heaven and earth qi turned into some iron crown eagles, two ancient ruin bats, and countless ancient snow monsters, desolate beast snow monsters, and others...

In terms of size, his first earthly calamity was larger, but Fang Yuan barely passed it.

If he encountered this earthly calamity with twenty blue charm lightning shadows, he would not be able to live.

During his earthly calamity, the ancient ruin bats had just formed when Fang Yuan resolutely attacked them with his full power without hesitation, destroying them. Fang Yuan had high offense and low defense, this was making use of his advantage.

But if he fought against twenty blue charm lightning shadows, it would be different.

Blue charm lightning shadows were fast, their battle strength matched rank six Gu Immortals, even if Fang Yuan used triple layered sword wave, he could not hit them.

Fang Yuan had rank seven and eight Immortal Gu, but they were not defensive

Immortal Gu. Fang Yuan had strong attacks, but weak defensive methods, he was countered by the blue charm lightning shadows.

“The underlying problem is, I developed too quickly, my foundations are unstable, I have too many weaknesses now.” Fang Yuan had a thought.

Actually, he had discovered this problem long ago.

But since the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, he had been pressed for time, he had no free time to make up for these aspects.

Twenty blue charm lightning shadows charged at Fang Yuan together. They were so fast, like lightning, Fang Yuan only saw several blue traces before they all got near him.

Lang Ya land spirit shouted in panic, using another immortal killer move.

The silver giant’s body was shining in light, within the pure white light, the silver giant’s body expanded until it multiplied a dozen times in size.

The original silver giant was already huge, with this transformation, its feet stepped on Cloud Cover Continent while its head extended up towards the heavens!

The silver giant’s mountain-like body shook intensely, it used another immortal killer move.

The blue charm lightning shadows were already at Fang Yuan’s left and right, they crashed into a sudden wall of light that appeared and were bounced back.

After saving Fang Yuan, the silver giant raised its hands, clasping them together to form a circle, with Fang Yuan inside.

Its arms were huge, they covered the surrounding space around Fang Yuan.

“The situation, is bad, even though my killer move can defend against blue charm lightning shadows, your refinement is still being interrupted. You need to be careful now, stronger attacks might be coming at you, if you fail to hold firm, the Gu refinement will fail!” Lang Ya land spirit transmitted again.

Fang Yuan nodded, he did not speak, his expression was heavy.

While refining Gu now, there were countless refinement path dao marks helping him, and even the remaining portion of Refinement Cauldron was in the air assisting him. But the silver giant’s battle with the blue charm lightning shadows would disturb the dao marks, causing countless tremors. These were all problems for Fang Yuan! If he made a mistake, his hard work would be wasted.

Bam bam bam!

Loud clashing sounds entered Fang Yuan’s ears.

The blue charm lightning shadows were like blue bees, surrounding the silver giant and attacking at its two hands.

They were moving quickly, while the silver giant was moving clumsily.

“You bunch of fools!” Lang Ya land spirit scolded.

He had to protect Fang Yuan and keep his arms stable, he could not be distracted, thus, the matter of resisting the blue charm lightning shadows was left to the other hairy man Gu Immortals.

But these hairy man Gu Immortals had low battle strength, they were unskilled in controlling the giant. Even though they did their best, the immortal killer moves they used either failed, or even if they succeeded, in the outside world, they created flashy effects but had little impact.

After a long time, they only killed one blue charm lightning shadow, and that was because of a lucky hit.

Lang Ya land spirit did not even have the energy to yell at them.

“Right now, it is really bad.” He was full of worries.

The silver giant was created with Heavenly Giant Solor, it had expanded by more than ten times, with less defense than before. It could only take a beating while the blue charm lightning shadows attacked, it was getting more transparent, fading with time.

Even though Fang Yuan’s situation was stabilized, because of the outside interference, his speed fell drastically.

Lang Ya land spirit estimated that with this speed, the silver giant could not last until the end.

He was already occupied now, while Fang Yuan was focusing on the Gu refinement, they could not fight.

Without external help, this refinement was bound to fail!

“Thankfully, this is my first try, it is okay if it fails, I have funds.” Fang Yuan’s attitude was actually rather good, he had a positive mindset.

When refining Immortal Gu, who could expect to succeed on the first try?

Fang Yuan could bear the failure, but over in Central Continent’s Earth Abyss, Ying Wu Xie had no alternatives left.

“This is the final chance, the final set of immortal materials, I cannot fail again!” Ying Wu Xie’s forehead was covered in sweat, he gritted his teeth.

He was like a wolf that was forced to the edge of the cliff.

Once he failed, to gather another batch of immortal materials, it would be extremely difficult.

“In this situation, I can only use my trump card... I can’t care less about the backlash, I need to get through this crisis first!”

Ying Wu Xie made up his mind and activated a certain immortal killer move.

An intense pain assaulted the depths of his soul.

Under the effect of the immortal killer move, his entire soul turned into fuel and started burning. At the same time, his luck rose gradually!

“My main body had explored Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and created this move... luckily, I obtained rank seven soul howl Gu earlier, together with some mortal Gu, I can use this move.”

Determination flashed across Ying Wu Xie’s eyes.

He was going all in, using a huge amount of luck to help himself in refining Fixed Immortal Travel.

“I can definitely succeed this time!!” He screamed internally.

Inside Lang Ya blessed land, there was great danger.

The silver giant was extremely weak, it was on the verge of collapsing.

The hairy man Gu Immortals in the giant suffered severe injuries, some of them had burst arteries, they were spitting out blood, some had fainted while others were trembling intensely, throwing up frothy saliva.

They had assembled the ancient battle formation, now that the formation was damaged, the injuries were reflected onto them.

There were eleven blue charm lightning shadows left.

Be it Fang Yuan or Lang Ya land spirit, they were in despair.

“The next time I refine Gu, I will definitely not use the hairy man heaven and earth style!” Fang Yuan swore to himself, at this moment, he felt that the human isolation style was very wonderful.

“I am actually going to fail this time, my Lang Ya blessed land’s reputation is ruined, it is the fault of these tribulations that increased in strength so ridiculously!” Lang Ya land spirit was furious.

“Alright, it is almost time to stop.” Gu Immortal Sixth Hair thought to himself.

He was the spy that Shadow Sect had placed in Lang Ya blessed land, there were three of them formerly, now he was the only one left.

He was the one communicating with Ying Wu Xie, giving him the information about Fang Yuan and the blessed land.

While resisting the blue charm lightning shadows, he did not help much, in fact he was doing sabotage. From Shadow Sect’s perspective, they were unwilling to see Fang Yuan refine change form Immortal Gu.

“For the final attack, let’s use killer move one arm sacrifice!” Sixth Hair thought as he almost laughed out loud.

Even though this move was powerful, it would greatly weaken the silver giant. Now that the silver giant was on the brink of breaking apart, once this move was used, it would definitely collapse.

“If I use this move, the ancient battle formation would collapse, not only would Fang Yuan’s refinement fail, the backlash of the ancient battle formation would also kill many of the hairy man Gu Immortals. After surviving, I would be given even greater responsibilities. This is perfect, simply perfect!”

Cold light flashed in his eyes, the traitor Sixth Hair used one arm sacrifice resolutely!

One of the silver giant’s arms left its body, as it fell, a bright light was emitted.

“Oh no! Which idiot...” Lang Ya land spirit’s expression changed, he was about to scold.

Suddenly!

This severed arm was hit by an immortal killer move and erupted with incredible strength as it flew far away.

Boom!

With a loud crash, an intense explosion occurred, it happened to hit the surrounding blue charm lightning shadows.

These blue charm lightning shadows were flying around everywhere, at that moment, coincidentally, most of them were gathered together, and were hit by this explosion, they all died at once.

Stunning results!

Fang Yuan was dazed.

Sixth Hair was shocked: “This, this actually worked?!”

Lang Ya land spirit was also in a daze, he shouted after a while: “Good attack!!”

With this change, the silver giant collapsed, and the hairy man Gu Immortals were all injured. But there were only three blue charm lightning shadows left, the situation turned around quickly.

Just Lang Ya land spirit alone could deal with these blue charm lightning shadows.

Sixth Hair was in regret, he wanted to attack but Lang Ya land spirit ordered him to take care of the other hairy man Gu Immortals.

An hour later, Fang Yuan held the newly refined change form Immortal Gu as he stood in disbelief.

“The first refinement attempt succeeded?”

Central Continent, Earth Abyss.

Puff!

Ying Wu Xie spat out blood as he fell backwards.

His expression was pale, he fainted at once.

The final attempt at refining Fixed Immortal Travel failed!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1069: Heavenly Court!

The butterfly fluttered its wings, it flew up and down, as jade green light scattered below its beautiful wings.

Eventually, it landed on the tip of Fairy Zi Wei’s slender white finger.

Fairy Zi Wei looked at this jade butterfly deeply, smiling as she said: “This is Fixed Immortal Travel?”

“Precisely.” An old female Gu Immortal beside her said expressionlessly.

This old woman had a hunched back, she was bending down, her hair was yellow like wheat, her face was wrinkled and her eyes were blurry.

She wore a brown-yellow robe, there was a ring of sand around her waist.

Fairy Zi Wei turned around, expressing her gratitude sincerely: “Merely a rank six Immortal Gu, it actually needed a refinement path great grandmaster like Granny Sha to refine, this was truly its honor.”

This old female Gu Immortal was a member of Heavenly Court, she had recently woken up.

She had rank eight cultivation level, she was several thousand years old, there were no records about her age, but there were such antiques in Heavenly Court, except that her refinement path great grandmaster status was very rare.

Fairy Zi Wei knew a bit more.

She was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, she could deduce many secrets from small clues.

She knew that this Granny Sha had little lifespan, she had to sleep in Heavenly Court to delay the arrival of her death. But she and Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord were from the same generation, they were even in a relationship during their younger years.

During the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord sacrificed himself and died, this alarmed Granny Sha, she took the initiative to end her hibernation and woke up.

Granny Sha looked at Fixed Immortal Travel in Fairy Zi Wei’s hand as she sighed deeply: “I am an old woman with half my body inside the coffin, what honor is there? By refining Fixed Immortal Travel this time, can I really help you to capture that Fang Yuan?”

Refining Fixed Immortal Travel needed the crucial immortal material, the light of the immemorial era.

By this era, it could no longer be found by normal Gu Immortals, but Heavenly Court was an exception.

This was the number one Gu Immortal organization in the world, present since the Remote Antiquity Era, it had been in a leading role throughout history, arrogantly looking down on all five regions.

Wind Cloud Manor was only a sect under Heavenly Court, but they already had the light of the immemorial era in their inventory, Heavenly Court’s own treasury undoubtedly had more.

Thus, Granny Sha could rush to refine Fixed Immortal Travel without lacking immortal materials.

This was the foundation of Heavenly Court after being around for three million years!

Towards Granny Sha’s question, Fairy Zi Wei smiled: “This is the result of my deduction, I have sixty percent assurance.”

Surprise flashed across Granny Sha’s eyes: “You and tower lord are wisdom path Gu Immortals on par with one another, with sixty percent assurance, there is a need to try.”

Fairy Zi Wei nodded lightly: “To speak the truth, I was able to deduce because of luck, as I had gotten some crucial information. Fang Yuan having Fixed Immortal Travel and Spring Autumn Cicada is no longer a secret. Some time ago, we captured a demonic path Gu Immortal, Gong Sun Liang, we learned about the boss who had borrowed Gu from him. Next, we investigated several areas that Fang Yuan might have appeared in, one of them was pot river. At Wind Cloud Manor, Gu Immortal Feng Chan Zi stole the light of the immemorial era from their treasury and sold it to an outsider.”

“Thus, you deduced that Fang Yuan’s Fixed Immortal Travel has already been destroyed, right?” Granny Sha asked.

“That was a possibility, but looking at the result, we were right.” Fairy Zi Wei answered.

“That Fang Yuan has many Immortal Gu, Spring Autumn Cicada has already been sealed, while Fixed Immortal Travel is with us. This way, it is much easier to capture him.” Granny Sha said.

Fairy Zi Wei shook her head, she sighed lightly: “Actually, Fixed Immortal Travel is not a problem. It is merely a rank six Immortal Gu, there are too many ways to deal with it.”

“That’s right.” Granny Sha agreed: “It is almost impossible to raise Fixed Immortal Travel to rank seven or eight. The light of the immemorial era needed is too much, even in Heavenly Court’s treasury, we can only try to refine the rank seven version three times. As for rank eight Fixed Immortal Travel, it is consigned to history.”

During the Immemorial Antiquity Era, there was an unlimited amount of light, but now, it was an extinct immortal material.

But Fixed Immortal Travel required the light of the immemorial era to refine.

Rank six Fixed Immortal Travel could not transport rank seven Gu Immortals, not to mention rank eights.

These Gu Immortals had plentiful dao marks in them. To transport them using Fixed Immortal Travel was like asking a baby to carry an elephant.

Unless there was a Gu Immortal specialized in space path, or if a special immortal killer move was used.

But such a situation was extremely rare, in general, Fixed Immortal Travel was capped at rank six, even though it had a great effect, it had little use to rank seven and eight Gu Immortals.

Granny Sha continued: “Actually, in Heavenly Court’s history, we have owned Fixed Immortal Travel multiple times. In most situations, we gave them to the lower sects for use, and because of tribulations and others reasons, they were lost. Once, Fixed Immortal Travel was in the hands of Heavenly Court Gu Immortal Liang Liang, he raised it to rank seven. This person cultivated space path alone, but during the rampage of immemorial desolate beasts, he battled and died, the rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel was destroyed during that time.”

Rank six Fixed Immortal Travel was treasured by Fang Yuan, but in the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals’ eyes, it was almost an unnoteworthy object.

It was unusable, thus in many situations, it was given to the ten ancient sects, so that they could display its greatest worth and control the situation in

Central Continent.

To think that Fang Yuan relied on Fixed Immortal Travel to create so much trouble in the world.

It was still the same saying —

There was no strongest Gu worm, only strongest Gu Master (Gu Immortal)!

The effect of a Gu worm not only depended on the Gu worm itself, the more important reason was the user, the Gu Master.

Fairy Zi Wei continued: “Rushing to refine Fixed Immortal Travel and sealing Spring Autumn Cicada merely cut Fang Yuan’s wings. The true problem is finding his hiding spot. Now, I will deduce with my full strength and find him in Central Continent. Granny Sha, I will need your help to refine Immortal Gu and restore Heaven Overseeing Tower.”

Granny Sha nodded and said in a heavy tone: “Tower lord is dead, I couldn’t save him. But I can rebuild Heaven Overseeing Tower, I am sure he would rest in peace behind the door of life and death if he knows this. Goodbye.”

Granny Sha said this as Fairy Zi Wei summoned another Gu Immortal, Myriad Tidal Dragon.

“Feng Chan Zi almost made a great blunder through this selfish use of public assets. It seems that Central Continent has been peaceful for too long, the sects are all complacent and rotting, how can such scoundrels be allowed to tarnish the reputation of Heavenly Court? Punish him to guard Hidden Dragon Cave and Di Zang Sheng for twenty years. If that Evil Dragon manages to move even a bit, he would be failing his duties, we will take his life as punishment.” Fairy Zi Wei said as cold light flickered in her eyes.

Myriad Tidal Dragon nodded as he frowned slightly: “What about Old Man Bei Feng?”

Feng Chan Zi was Old Man Bei Feng’s grandson, he was very doted on. Most importantly, with Old Man Bei Feng’s accumulated achievements and battle strength potential, he could already rise to Heavenly Court and become one of its members.

Among the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, not all rank eight Gu Immortals can ascend to Heavenly Court and become members. One had to be exceptional.

Fairy Zi Wei smiled: “If Old Man Bei Feng wants to come to Heavenly Court, I will personally welcome him. But his grandson will now be guarding Hidden Dragon Cave, with Feng Chan Zi’s rank six cultivation level, he cannot deal with it. Since nobody in Heavenly Court is willing to take care of that mess, we will let Old Man Bei Feng handle it.”

After pausing for a while, Fairy Zi Wei continued: “I called you here today because I deduced many identities of Defy’s members, I want you to go personally and capture a number of them, so that I can get more clues.”

“Understood.” Myriad Tidal Dragon accepted the order.

Now that Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was dead, as the only remaining wisdom path great grandmaster, Fairy Zi Wei was tasked to lead Heavenly Court.

A wisdom path Gu Immortal was most suited for this job.

Of course, she was only leading Heavenly Court temporarily.

Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had equal status, not one of the rank eight Gu Immortals had absolute authority, they had to discuss matters between all of them. Unless there was an Immortal Venerable leading them, that would be a different story.

“Granny Sha is rebuilding Heaven Overseeing Tower.”

“Myriad Tidal Dragon is outside capturing the members of Defy.”

“Wei Ling Yang is internally investigating Heavenly Court and modifying our investigative methods, times are different now, we cannot let more traitors come in.”

“Now, I will go all out to deduce Fang Yuan’s location. We cannot stall this!”

Thinking of this, Fairy Zi Wei’s brows rose slightly.

It seemed from the result from her last deduction, that the more she targeted Fang Yuan, the more Fang Yuan and Shadow Sect would cooperate.

From Heavenly Court’s perspective, Spectral Soul was the main target, they could not rest until he was dead.

Right now, Spectral Soul’s main body was trapped in Southern Border’s super dream realm. Heavenly Court did not (and could not) act, they could only watch as Spectral Soul died slowly in the dream realm.

Thus, Heavenly Court’s focus was on Fang Yuan and Shadow Sect’s remnant forces.

To prevent them from saving Spectral Soul.

Shadow Sect’s remnant forces, like Zombie Alliance, was already facing the assault of people sent by Fairy Zi Wei. Fang Yuan was her current focus, Fixed Immortal Travel was not an issue, but Spring Autumn Cicada was different.

If Fang Yuan went back to the past and rewrote history, what would happen?!

Central Continent, deep in Earth Abyss.

Ying Wu Xie woke up slowly.

“What happened? This is...” Ying Wu Xie was in a daze, gradually, clarity returned to his eyes.

He remembered everything.

“Damn it, I failed in refining Fixed Immortal Travel! After using my trump card, my luck rose immensely, why did I not succeed? Now, I have lost everything, and my soul’s injury is severe.” Ying Wu Xie had a pale expression as he clenched his fists.

He was upset, and also lost, he did not know what to do now.

Suddenly, the surroundings shook, Ying Wu Xie’s super Gu formation started to activate rapidly.

“Oh no! This is the deduction of a wisdom path great expert, the super Gu formation’s automatic defenses has been activated!” Ying Wu Xie gasped in his mind, his face turned even more pale now, without a trace of rosiness.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1070: Sacrifice A Rook To Save The King

In Central Continent, who would deduce Ying Wu Xie?

Ying Wu Xie’s first thought was Heavenly Court.

The number one Gu Immortal force in the world since the Remote Antiquity Era.

The Heavenly Court that three Demon Venerables could not take down.

The Heavenly Court that had three generations of Immortal Venerables leading it.

Even when Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was invincible in the world, he did not attempt to attack Heavenly Court.

The supreme Heavenly Court!

As the super Gu formation continued to run, resisting the wisdom path deductions of the mysterious great expert, the entire Gu formation was shining in dark eerie light, it was cracking under the pressure.

“In just a short time, who is it that has made the super Gu formation so overworked? Only Heavenly Court’s wisdom path great expert can do it!” Ying Wu Xie’s expression was pale, his back was covered in sweat.

After Spectral Soul Demon Venerable died, and he returned to the door of life and death, Shadow Sect had existed, having been developed over a hundred thousand years, achieving its peak due to immaculate planning, but after the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, the losses were terrible, only some remnant forces were left. Now, Spectral Soul was stuck in the dream realm, only Ying Wu Xie was left as the final hope.

Ying Wu Xie knew deeply how heavy the burden on him was.

If he was deduced, without Fixed Immortal Travel to teleport and escape, he would definitely be assaulted by a large number of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, until he died.

“Never mind if I die, but my main body will fall into a desperate situation. I, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, will die for real! I will become history. I am not resigned to that fate!”

Ying Wu Xie howled, he struggled to get up.

He invested his attention and immortal essence into the super Gu formation.

The Gu formation started to become more stable, the eerie light flowed like water, moving in the formation, the cracking sounds also became softer.

With a Gu Immortal controlling it, the Gu formation could display a completely different level of power!

Earlier, this super Gu formation did not have Ying Wu Xie controlling it, but it could still defend against Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions. With Ying Wu Xie’s support, its might rose by more than ten times, the situation was under control.

But Ying Wu Xie’s situation was becoming worse.

He had just woken up, his condition was not good.

Because the Gu refinement failed, and he used his trump card killer move to increase his luck, his soul was severely injured.

After waking up, he controlled the super Gu formation without rest, he did not even have time to heal his injuries.

Ying Wu Xie controlled the super Gu formation for a while, he felt dizzy and saw stars in the air, his body was shaking as he almost fainted again.

“No! This super Gu formation is hard to control, we have to defend against the wisdom path deduction, my mental energy is severely drained, I cannot continue resisting it.”

Ying Wu Xie’s heart sank.

“Shi Nu! Hei Lou Lan!” He called, left with no choice, he told these two the secret method to manipulate the super Gu formation and let them control it.

A while later, he could not endure it anymore, he fainted.

“Master!” Shi Nu was very loyal, after being able to control the super Gu formation, he found that Ying Wu Xie’s situation was bad and quickly used the Gu formation to heal Ying Wu Xie.

Hei Lou Lan was in charge of defending against Fairy Zi Wei’s deduction.

The situation was stable again.

Ying Wu Xie finally woke up again.

He was in a better state, once he woke up, he asked: “How long was I unconscious for?”

Shi Nu replied: “Two days and three nights, master.”

“Did they stop the deduction?” Ying Wu Xie asked again.

“Not even once.” Hei Lou Lan transmitted.

Ying Wu Xie’s expression was grim, his heart sunk to rock bottom: “Two days and three nights of deduction without stopping, the other party is indeed a wisdom path great expert of Heavenly Court, their wisdom path attainment can match Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord! Sigh, Heavenly Court...”

Heavenly Court’s foundation was too deep.

It had been under the rule of three Immortal Venerables, with countless rank eight Gu Immortals joining throughout history. Shadow Sect had developed for a hundred thousand years, it had a huge force, but compared to Heavenly Court, its foundation was too shallow.

Shadow Sect had researched for tens of thousands of years, they found an opportunity coincidentally and paid a heavy price to send the traitor Lian Jiu Sheng into Heavenly Court.

But Lian Jiu Sheng could not get much intel after joining Heavenly Court.

Most of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were sleeping, they rarely were active.

However, just the small amount of information obtained, showing a portion of Heavenly Court’s power, made Shadow Sect feel great trepidation.

The biggest concern was Heavenly Court’s rank nine fate Gu. This Immortal Gu was only damaged during Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s time, it was not completely destroyed.

Using rank nine fate Gu as the core, the rank nine Immortal Gu House Heaven Overseeing Tower had incredible might, it could truly oversee everything. Its range of detecting fate escapees spanned over the whole five regions, along with white heaven and black heaven, it was a shocking scope.

The second concern was that Heavenly Court’s grotto-heaven was free from tribulations, seemingly because it had devoured large numbers of fragments of the seven broken immemorial heavens.

Finally, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had unfathomably deep research regarding immortal apertures. In this regard, even Spectral Soul could only gasp in amazement.

Any rank eight Gu Immortal who joins Heavenly Court would first have to contribute their immortal aperture, and combine it into Heavenly Court’s grotto-heaven. When they go outside of Heavenly Court, they would be given a mystical phantom aperture for storing immortal essence and Gu worms.

This method was among the deepest secrets of Heavenly Court, it was the work of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable! After rank eight Gu Immortals fuse their immortal apertures into Heavenly Court’s grotto-heaven, they would be free from tribulations, they could also sleep and slow down the loss of their lifespan.

Heavenly Court was created three million years ago during the Remote Antiquity Era. By now, it had the grotto-heavens of three Immortal Venerables, along with countless rank eight Gu Immortals’ grotto-heavens, they were all fused into Heavenly Court.

Thus, the size of Heavenly Court’s grotto-heaven was unbelievable, the amount of resources in immortal materials inside was immeasurable. With just these resources, Heavenly Court was self-sufficient, it did not need anything from the five regions.

It was unknown just how many rank eight Gu Immortals were sleeping inside Heavenly Court, or even how many members there actually were in Heavenly Court.

But just by thinking about it, one could understand the terrifying might lurking in Heavenly Court.

However, since ancient times, lifespan Gu had been the traditional way to gain lifespan. For the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals to use sleep to extend their lives, there was definitely a drawback. But Lian Jiu Sheng had never uncovered what this drawback was, it was among Spectral Soul’s greatest regrets.

Compared to Heavenly Court, Shadow Sect with a hundred thousand years of foundation was too weak. Shadow Sect was like an iceberg, Zombie Alliance, which was scattered over all five regions, was just the tip of the iceberg. Old Man Yan Shi, Bo Qing, and Purple Mountain True Monarch, were hidden under the iceberg. As for Heavenly Court, it was the sea that carried the iceberg. The sea was unfathomably deep, even though the iceberg floated on the sea, nobody knew what was hiding inside the sea, or what ferocious creatures were dwelling below.

Maybe the Gu Immortals were already dead, but nobody knew the truth, and they were not going to find out either.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, Lian Jiu Sheng, Bi Chen Tian, Fairy Zi Wei, Granny Sha, they were all rank eight Gu Immortals who joined Heavenly Court in the last thousands of years. The depths of the sea was not explored yet, these were just huge waves on the surface.

“Master, what do we do now?” Shi Nu asked.

Ying Wu Xie fell into deep contemplation.

He racked his brains, thinking hard!

At the moment, Fairy Zi Wei’s deduction was like a long spear forcing Ying Wu Xie and the rest to raise their shield and defend against (the super Gu formation). Even though it was powerful and could block Fairy Zi Wei’s deduction, this way, by controlling the super Gu formation, Ying Wu Xie and the rest were restricted from doing anything else.

And just defending themselves was too passive, they were going to lose eventually, it was not a wise decision.

“Heavenly Court targeted me not only to deal with Shadow Sect, but also because they want to pursue Fang Yuan. My body is originally Fang Yuan’s, in a way, I am shielding him from this disaster.”

“It is very strange that I failed to refine Fixed Immortal Travel this time. I had ten chances and extremely high luck in the final one. Even if my luck was split, the chances of success are still very high. Fang Yuan could succeed his refinement even in that situation. My situation was far better than his, yet I still failed. I am afraid Fixed Immortal Travel has already been refined by someone. If that is so, it is likely Heavenly Court!”

At this time, over in Lang Ya blessed land, the traitor Sixth Hair had already sent a letter of apology to Ying Wu Xie.

Thus, Ying Wu Xie had a clear understanding of Fang Yuan’s situation.

“It seems I can only sacrifice a rook to save the king.” Ying Wu Xie had a resolute expression.

He decided to abandon his subordinates to obtain a chance to escape.

Using the super Gu formation, his aura could be concealed for some time, Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions would be drawn to the super Gu formation.

This way, Ying Wu Xie could escape in the meantime, going through the regional walls and leaving Central Continent.

Central Continent was a tiger’s den, there were too few remnant forces of Shadow Sect. Leaving this place and going to any of the other four regions would be a huge help to Ying Wu Xie.

“I failed to refine Fixed Immortal Travel, but I am only a rank six bottom-tier immortal zombie, it is far easier for me to pass the regional walls compared to rank sevens and eights. Now, I can only work hard to travel the four regions and gather my remnant forces. Even if Heavenly Court has the rank six Fixed Immortal Travel, those rank eight Gu Immortals cannot use it. Heaven Overseeing Tower has been destroyed, they cannot locate me as well.”

“I can only abandon this place. And to control the Gu formation, at least two rank sixes or one rank seven are needed...”

Ying Wu Xie thought about it and decided to give up on Shi Nu, bringing Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan with him.

The loyalty of these three was not an issue, especially Hei Lou Lan, followed by Shi Nu,and finally, Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

The more important reason was that he had to pass the regional walls many times. The lower the cultivation level, the better it was when going through them. Shi Nu’s rank seven cultivation level was a burden instead.

Ying Wu Xie made his decision and executed it.

Shi Nu had no objections, he was utterly loyal, he even passed all of his accumulated Gu worms and the rockman tribe in his immortal aperture to Ying Wu Xie completely.

Ying Wu Xie’s immortal aperture was a dead land, he kept the Gu worms while passing the rockman tribe to Hei Lou Lan, letting them live in her immortal aperture.

Bringing Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, with Shi Nu left to draw the attention, Ying Wu Xie retreated, his target was the closest regional wall.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1071: Selling Immortal Gu

Boom boom boom!

Lightning flashed and thunder rumbled, rocks were sent flying.

Within the dust cloud, Ying Wu Xie opened his mouth, growling.

His growl could not be heard by ears, but the three Central Continent Gu Immortals attacking them shook, their souls were also shaking intensely.

“Oh no! This is a soul path immortal killer move!”

The three Central Continent Gu Immortals quickly put up their defenses.

“Retreat!” Using this prime opportunity, Ying Wu Xie called this out as he led Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan to fly away.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals soon regained their senses, but Ying Wu Xie and the rest were nowhere to be seen.

“What soul path killer move is this? Amazing! At that moment, I felt that my soul was going to dissipate from the tremors alone.”

“These three Gu Immortals are from Northern Plains based on their aura. They are so secretive and mysterious, who are they?”

“They actually appeared in Earth Abyss, the territory of our Ancient Soul Sect. Are they related to the giant cave-in that happened earlier?”

The three Central Continent Gu Immortals had grim expressions as they communicated while healing their injuries.

“I have already sent this information to the sect, we are sending reinforcements now.”

“Chase! They are all hit by my immortal killer move, I can sense them, they cannot escape!”

The three Central Continent Gu Immortals stabilized their injuries and quickly chased after them.

After chasing them for a while, the sensation vanished.

The leading Central Continent Gu Immortal was troubled: “Strange! My immortal killer move was created several years ago, it can trace people, few know about it. How did they dispel it?”

“There are many types of Immortal Gu, through different combinations, killer moves are created. Gu Immortals have many different methods, they are uncountable in number. Maybe the other party happened to have a way to counter your immortal killer move.”

“This is possible but unlikely. In my opinion, it might not be dispelled, but only temporarily suppressed! Maybe they used a certain method to conceal themselves.”

The leader of the three immortals said: “We chased them here, but the immortal killer move’s connection vanished, there must be a reason. Did they enter someone else’s immortal aperture?”

An immortal aperture was a small world independent of the five regions and nine heavens.

When fate escapees live in blessed lands and grotto-heavens, they can avoid Heaven Overseeing Tower’s detection. If Ying Wu Xie, who was hit, entered someone else’s immortal aperture, the investigative method of the leader of the three immortals would not work.

But entering someone else’s immortal aperture was very rare in the Gu Immortal world.

Firstly, the immortal aperture was extremely important in a Gu Immortal’s cultivation, few would allow others inside. Secondly, there was a drawback to this. The immortal apertures of Gu Immortals had their respective dao marks. By entering another person’s immortal aperture, their dao marks would clash, they would interfere with, obstruct, or even reject and consume each other. The actual expenditure would depend on the situation itself.

Normally speaking, a larger aperture storing a smaller one was more stable. Even if a smaller one was storing a bigger one, as long as their strengths were not far apart, the immortal aperture could contain Gu Immortals. But they would suffer losses in one way or another.

If the immortal aperture was placed outside and was connected to the heaven and earth qi, they would be a part of the five regions’ world. The immortal aperture would be far more stable, and could contain much more, or even higher cultivation level Gu Immortals.

If the person entering the immortal aperture had too high of a cultivation level and too many dao marks, they might cause the immortal aperture to detonate. Like the fragment worlds of the immemorial nine heavens, only people of a certain cultivation level could explore it. If they were too strong, they could not enter, forcefully going in would just destroy the small world.

There was also a special situation, it was regarding apertures of immortal zombies. Everyone knew that an immortal zombie’s immortal aperture was a dead land, the time inside was the same as the outside world, and the space inside was constantly crumbling, it could be seen as the dao marks in the immortal aperture breaking apart, it was the process where they returned to the body.

Thus, even if an immortal zombie’s dead aperture enters a Gu Immortal, there would not be any dao mark resistance, the only problem would be that the dead land would crumble more quickly, and the dao marks would return to the zombie body at a faster rate.

The leader of the three immortals had anticipated this situation, thus, he made Ying Wu Xie, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and Hei Lou Lan all afflicted by his immortal killer move. No matter who entered which immortal aperture, one person would be left, they would be detected.

The leader of the three immortals suddenly had a thought: “Don’t tell me, someone placed their immortal aperture while the other two entered the immortal aperture along with them?”

“It is easy for a Gu Immortal to regather their immortal aperture, but placing it down takes time, there would be a commotion. How can they do it so quickly without making a disturbance? But... Gu Immortals have countless methods, there are all sorts of geniuses in this world, they might have a certain method to quickly place down the immortal aperture?”

This Central Continent Gu Immortal thought a lot, but could not discern anything relevant.

But this did not affect his actions.

“My connection was severed here, rather than chasing them endlessly, I should stay here and investigate, maintaining the area and letting our wisdom path Gu Immortals in the sect deduce.” The Central Continent Gu Immortal said.

His suggestion was well received, the other two nodded without objecting.

“They are not leaving, it seems they are staying here.” Inside the super Gu formation, Tai Bai Yun Sheng looked outside and sighed.

“These three rank seven Gu Immortals are from Ancient Soul Sect, sent here to investigate the huge cave-in. Master, it was fortunate that you could escape. Please heal your injuries.” Shi Nu urged.

Hei Lou Lan sank into silence.

Ying Wu Xie’s expression was very ugly, he said in a hoarse voice: “To think that three Gu Immortals are waiting here for me!”

He had decided to make a sacrifice to protect his major interests, but to think that shortly after leaving, these three Ancient Soul Sect Gu Immortals appeared and fought with them, Ying Wu Xie and the rest were outmatched, they could only return to the super Gu formation.

With the concealment of the super Gu formation, the immortal killer move that was used on Hei Lou Lan and the others became temporarily ineffective.

The three rank seven Gu Immortals from Ancient Soul Sect were flying above the super Gu formation, but because the super Gu formation was extraordinary, it not only concealed them but also concealed all their aura, being in phantom form, it did not have any physical state, the three Central Continent Gu Immortals could not detect anything.

“What do we do now?” Hei Lou Lan thought to herself, looking at Ying Wu Xie with an inquisitive gaze.

Ying Wu Xie turned his face around, his gaze flickered uncertainly, after thinking about it, he made up his mind, he gritted his teeth: “In this desperate situation, I can only do this!”

A moment later, in treasure yellow heaven.

One pillar of treasure light shot into the sky, it was thick and large, attracting countless gazes the moment it appeared.

“What kind of treasure can lead to such amazing treasure light?!”

“Immortal Gu, it’s an immortal Gu!”

“Someone is using treasure yellow heaven to transport Immortal Gu again? So extravagant.”

Countless wills and Gu Immortals who happened to be around were talking about it. This familiar scene made them think of earlier, when Lang Ya land spirit used treasure yellow heaven to send Fang Yuan his sword path Immortal Gu.

But soon, the commotion exploded among the people.

The Gu Immortal’s will publicly announced: This Immortal Gu was to be sold openly, anyone could buy it, but they had to use Immortal Gu to exchange for it, or collect enough immortal materials provided in the list to trade.

All of the Gu Immortals were shaken!

Exchanging Immortal Gu for Immortal Gu was normal, it was also nearly the only way of transacting Immortal Gu.

But to think that this transaction could also be done using immortal materials.

This was shocking and surprising.

At once, the whole of treasure yellow heaven went into chaos!

Central Continent, Eastern Sea, Western Desert, Northern Plains, Southern Border, Gu Immortals from all five regions revealed deep interest towards this Immortal Gu.

Especially when they realized that the immortal materials on the list were not absurd. As long as they collected the immortal materials and exchanged for this Immortal Gu, they would profit without fail!

As time passed, a sudden Immortal Gu transaction caused a huge commotion in treasure yellow heaven.

More and more Gu Immortals heard about this and placed their attention here, asking for the price.

The price was very fair, countless Gu Immortals were moved.

Ying Wu Xie smiled coldly as he saw this.

The seller of the Immortal Gu was none other than him.

Immortal Gu were usually not sold, because refining Gu was hard, and Immortal Gu were unique, even a hundred portions of immortal materials might not successfully refine the Gu.

But Ying Wu Xie was forced to his wits’ end, he had no choice but to choose to sell Immortal Gu.

He had immortal killer moves and Immortal Gu recipes in his mind, they were all given to him by Spectral Soul’s will within the red lotus in the river of time.

Because the will carried in Spring Autumn Cicada was limited, this information was chosen carefully and given to Ying Wu Xie. All of it was precious and had great value.

He could not sell these, they were all useful in saving his main body. If they were sold, his secrets would be exposed, they could not be sold.

He could not sell these things, and his cultivation resources had been exchanged for immortal materials, which were used up when refining Fixed Immortal Travel. Then, Ying Wu Xie had only one choice left, that was to sell Immortal Gu.

He had quite a number of Immortal Gu.

They were mostly from Fang Yuan.

He was selling one of Fang Yuan’s Immortal Gu, iron crown eagle strength Gu.

In the current Gu Immortal world, even though strength path Gu Immortals were rare, this Immortal Gu still drew a lot of attention. Because its price was not high, many rank six Gu Immortals without Immortal Gu could bear the cost.

“As I expected! By selling this iron crown eagle strength Gu first to cause a commotion, I can raise the prices later when I sell other Immortal Gu!” Ying Wu Xie snickered internally.

Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

“Fairy Zi Wei, do you know about the situation in treasure yellow heaven?” Granny Sha used Gu worms to transmit and ask Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei had been trying to deduce the location of ‘Fang Yuan’.

But she did not know that Fang Yuan’s soul and body were separated.

Most of her deductions were focused on Ying Wu Xie, who was closest to her. Fang Yuan was inside Lang Ya blessed land, and they were separated by two regional walls, her capability in deducing him was minimal.

After getting Granny Sha’s reminder, Fairy Zi Wei smiled, stopping her deduction: “Selling iron crown eagle strength Immortal Gu in treasure yellow heaven? And he wants to use space path Immortal Gu like Fixed Immortal Travel in exchange? It seems that Fang Yuan has been pushed into a corner, he has no choice but to do this.”

“It is a pity... if it were anyone else, treasure yellow heaven cannot be disrupted. But Heavenly Court is an exception. Open the treasury, I am going to make a transaction with treasure yellow heaven’s heavenly spirit!”

Treasure yellow heaven’s heavenly spirit was extremely proud and rarely showed itself. It ignored even Heavenly Court and had once resigned itself to death rather than giving in to a venerable’s threat, making them helpless.

The huge Heavenly Court could not force treasure yellow heaven to stop Ying Wu Xie from making transactions, that was impossible.

But Fairy Zi Wei was very confident in this.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1072: New Shang Clan Leader

Southern Border.

Shang Liang Mountain.

The sun was high in the sky, shining brilliantly. There were lots of people on Shang Liang Mountain, the atmosphere was lively.

Rank four peak stage Gu Master Shang Bu Li stood at the mountain peak, attracting almost everyone’s attention.

Even though Shang Bu Li was an experienced veteran, at this moment, he was feeling anxious.

Because right now was Shang clan’s ceremony, it had huge significance. All sorts of people were attending, Tie clan, Yi clan, Wu clan, Hou clan, and all the other representatives of Southern Border’s super forces, even experts from the demonic path and lone cultivators were here. The elites of Southern Border were all gathered for this, it was a grand event.

Shang clan was different from the other super forces, that was because of Shang clan’s battle stage policy. The other super forces’ battle stages were meant for their clansmen, while Shang clan’s battle stage could also take in demonic cultivators and lone cultivators.

Shang clan’s foundation was in trading, its main base was Shang Liang Mountain. Deals could be made with anyone, it was the biggest connector of the righteous path, demonic path, and lone cultivators.

This was not just among the Gu Masters, the same applied to the Gu Immortal world.

Shang clan’s Gu Immortals were usually the middlemen of righteous path and demonic path transactions.

Seeing that Shang Bu Li appeared, the countless Gu Masters on Shang Liang Mountain realized that this ceremony of Shang clan was about to begin.

The entirety of Shang Liang Mountain became quiet, Shang Bu Li felt his pressure intensifying.

He took in a deep breath, he forced himself to calm down as he declared loudly: “Shang clan leader’s succession ceremony, begin—!”

At the next moment, grand music was played, countless birds and peacocks flew around, golden flowers were raining down from the sky, it was a glorious scene.

From the interior of Shang Liang Mountain, a long clear rainbow road extended outwards.

A splendidly dressed girl walked on the clear rainbow road, appearing in front of everyone.

She had silky jet black hair draping over her shoulders. Her eyebrows were thin like smoke, her eyes as clear as the moon. Her skin was snow-white, and her hair was tied up, wearing a beautiful dress, she walked slowly.

It was Shang Xin Ci.

At once, countless Gu Masters held their breaths.

“So beautiful!”

“This is Shang clan’s next clan leader?”

“This woman is so beautiful, she is truly like a fairy. Who is she?”

Everyone was discussing and clamoring. But these noises were all drowned by the elegant music that was being played.

The esteemed guests on the mountain peak from all the super forces, as well as experts from the demonic path and lone cultivators, were all looking at Shang Xin Ci as she walked in, transmitting their thoughts to each other.

“This woman is Shang Yan Fei’s illegitimate daughter. She does not have high reputation, her aptitude is low, and her cultivation level is also low. But in the end, she actually became Shang clan’s new clan leader! Fate truly toys with people, incredible, incredible.”

“During the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, countless heroes and conquerors died, the forces in Southern Border were all heavily affected, much of the power balance shifted. And Yi Tian Mountain has also become among Southern Border’s greatest mysteries after that battle.”

...

Shang Xin Ci slowly walked on the clear rainbow road.

Under everyone’s watchful gazes, her clothes fluttered in the air, she ascended slowly, walking towards the sky from Shang Liang Mountain’s peak.

Clouds gathered in the sky, light was shining brightly, gathering into a throne.

Everyone raised their heads to watch, Shang Xin Ci had an unmatched and elegant disposition right now.

“Today, in Southern Border’s Gu Master world, you are the sole main character.” Shang Qing Qing muttered, as a senior female immortal of Shang clan, she was the one who singlehandedly supported Shang Xin Ci to become the leader of Shang clan.

Shang Xin Ci became Shang clan leader, in order to prevent any chaos, Shang Qing Qing had concealed herself and watched in the background to control the situation.

“After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Southern Border has fallen into its biggest commotion in several hundred years. Can this girl really lead Shang clan and maintain stability, or even expand?” Shang Tan Mo asked.

He had the appearance of a youth, he wore a blue robe and was skinny, he was looking at Shang Xin Ci with a deep gaze of doubt and inquisitiveness.

Shang Qing Qing smiled: “All of the generations of clan leaders were nurtured through gaining experience. The reason why I chose Shang Xin Ci is not because of her ability, but her heart and magnanimity. Her characteristics are an advantage that gives her an unspeakable charisma, it is extremely rare in the current world. Look at the mountain peak, her subordinates are all tearing up from joy, they are so loyal and trusting towards Shang Xin Ci. But actually, these people that she took in had varied backgrounds, they were a chaotic bunch but now they are all on the same side.”

“Oh?” Shang Tan Mo heard this and was moved, he knew that Shang Qing Qing chose this girl to be the clan leader not just because of her personality, but because she had also made some observations and considerations over time.

He followed Shang Qing Qing’s indication and looked down.

“To think that my lady would become Shang clan leader one day. Sob sob sob... Missy, we finally did it.” Xiao Die was weeping in happiness, she was Shang Xin Ci’s trusted servant, when they were in Zhang clan, they were inseparable. She followed her in the caravan, to Shang clan city, they had gone through thick and thin, her loyalty was unmatched.

“Master, if you learn about this inside the door of life and death, you must be very happy. Young miss is completely different from your other children, she can definitely give a new future to Shang clan.” The servant Xiao Lan had teary eyes. She was an orphan, adopted by Shang Yan Fei when she was young, she was capable and was given to Shang Xin Ci by Shang Yan Fei. Now that Shang Yan Fei died on Yi Tian Mountain, her loyalty towards Shang Yan Fei was all transferred to Shang Xin Ci.

Zhou Quan was silent.

He was Zhou clan’s leader, he had an arrogant attitude and thought highly of himself. After Zhou clan was destroyed, he was a vagrant, surviving by opening a shop in Shang clan inner city. Afterwards, Fang Yuan forced him to go under Shang Xin Ci as a subordinate.

Seeing that Shang Xin Ci was sitting down on the cloud throne, Zhou Quan’s gaze was in a daze.

At this moment, he thought of Fang Yuan, a complex smile appeared on his face: “Black and white demons, should I be thanking you? Now that the young miss is Shang clan leader, my Zhou clan has hope to rise up again!”

But soon, Zhou Quan thought again: “No, reviving the clan will have to wait. Even though the young miss is a clan leader, the internal threats are huge, her situation is not stable. How can I leave her now when she needs the help of her subordinates the most?”

Zhou Quan was not overwhelmed by this huge ceremony.

He looked around at Shang Bu Li and Wan Qian Shan.

When Shang Yan Fei was Shang clan leader, he had five capable subordinates, they were called the five great generals of Shang clan. After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, among the five great generals of Shang clan, only two were left, they were Shang Bu Li and Wan Qian Shan.

The former controlled Shang clan’s slave trade, while the latter was in charge of resource gathering, like mining, herb gathering, hunting, and others.

The one with Shang surname was the representative of Shang clan. The other with Wan surname was an external elder, he represented the benefits of Shang clan’s external Gu Masters.

“With these two experts, young miss’ internal situation in Shang clan is truly bad, she is weak while they are strong. There is even a possibility that they could make her a puppet leader by taking over secretly. Young miss’ status makes her unable to obtain the support of every clansman, she is an illegitimate daughter after all.”

“The internal problems are alarming, but the external problems are worse, danger is lurking everywhere. In the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, too many leaders and experts died, everything is changing, resources without owners are being contested for again! Young miss has too few resources available, be it human resources or actual goods, compared to her siblings. And she also has to deal with affairs outside the clan?”

“And at this critical moment, Lady Wei is leaving her too!”

Thinking of this, Zhou Quan looked at the female Gu Master beside him, Wei De Xin, feeling very unhappy.

He was the chief steward of Shang Xin Ci, he knew a lot of information.

Wei De Xin was the wife of Wei clan leader, she was skilled at training guards, and was pregnant, her motive was to protect her husband’s only bloodline. Because Fang Yuan targeted her weakness, threatening her, she eventually went over to Shang Xin Ci’s side, and helped her nurture a band of elite guards. At the same time, she became the leader of Shang Xin Ci’s guards.

But now, she had already given birth, she had successfully carried on her husband’s bloodline. Because she was always out in the open, her brother Wei Shen Jing found out. He sent a letter and urged Wei De Xin to go and serve Wu clan with him.

Wei De Xin was moved, after all, she was not loyal to Shang Xin Ci, she was threatened by Fang Yuan and had no choice back then.

But Zhou Quan did not know that, while he was worrying about the situation, Wei De Xin was also very worried.

Zhou Quan was once the leader of a clan, he had a good perspective of the big picture. Wei De Xin was the same, she was a clan leader’s wife, she could see further than Xiao Lan and Xiao Die.

“Shang Yan Fei is already dead, my enmity with Shang clan has faded.”

“Even though I was forced by the black demon back then, and had to serve the young miss, after this long period of time, I have come to understand her.”

“Young miss is... a good person. There are too few good people in this world.”

“Little brother, I will have to disappoint you, I cannot go to help you!”

“You are a hidden elder in Wu clan, even though you are ostracized, your life is safe. But here with young miss, danger lurks everywhere.”

Wei De Xin sighed internally.

“But no matter what, as the young miss’ steward, I need to think for her sake. Right now, she needs manpower, the three demonic path brothers, Xiong Tu, Xiong Huo, and Xiong Feng, must stay, we cannot let them leave.” Zhou Quan looked at three people as brilliance flashed in his eyes.

“No matter what, as the young miss’ personal guard, I need to think in her interests. Shang Yan Fei is dead, Shang clan only has two generals left, we need to prevent them from making her a figurehead, we need to draw in new blood. Xiao Yan... is a great choice! Not only does he have outstanding battle strength, he idolizes Wei Yang. Because of the black and white demons, Wei Yang had a good relationship with young miss, and Xiao Yan was also close to them.” Wei De Xin looked at Xiao Yan who was among the crowd as she planned.

In the sky, Shang Xin Ci began to speak publicly for the first time, her speech was succinct, but there was deep meaning in it, people were pondering over it.

This was not prepared by her of course, Wei De Xin and Zhou Quan had written her script.

After the speech ended, a huge wave of applause and cheers erupted, Shang Xin Ci slowly left the center of attention.

But the succession ceremony was not over yet, what followed would be a day and night of celebration, wine and food with songs playing, to sweep away the sadness and dejection from all the heroes’ deaths.

After vanishing from the sky, Shang Xin Ci directly appeared in the inner city’s mansion.

“So tired...” With no one watching her, she relaxed as she felt deep fatigue in her mind.

But she knew that now was not the time to rest, she used her Gu worms to summon her aides.

Xiao Lan, Xiao Die, Wei De Xin, Zhou Quan, Xiong Tu, Xiong Huo, and Xiong Feng.

Shang Xin Ci had arrangements to make.

Ye Fan walked on the road, his eyes were shining brilliantly, he walked with an imposing aura.

Ever since he defended Shang Xin Ci while refusing to retreat in danger, he obtained the female immortal Shang Qing Qing’s approval, he was given a superb inheritance and many Gu worms.

Ye Fan was troubled because he had no cultivation guidance, after getting this inheritance, his horizons expanded, he no longer lacked Gu worms, his future was bright.

He was considered Shang Xin Ci’s life benefactor, he could enter her mansion without anyone stopping him.

“To think that Lady Xin Ci became Shang clan leader... but it will not be easy as a clan leader, not to mention the leader of Shang clan. How can I, Ye Fan, abandon her?”

Thinking of Shang Xin Ci, Ye Fan’s heart beat quickly.

He was developing feelings for Shang Xin Ci, but he did not know what she felt about him.

He knew that Shang Xin Ci was inside her mansion, he came without an invitation.

Close, he was close.

The final door was right in front of him.

He could see Lady Xin Ci again...

Ye Fan’s footsteps became faster!

He stood at the door, he straightened his back as he patted his clothes, he was about to knock.

He heard Shang Xin Ci voice from inside: “Everyone listen to me, after becoming clan leader, there is one thing I want to do first. This has been weighing in my heart for a long time. I want to use Shang clan’s power to remove black demon, brother Fang Zheng’s, arrest warrant! Of course... that includes sister white demon as well.”

Ye Fan was dazed, his finger that was going to knock on the door froze in the air.

Shang Xin Ci was talking to her subordinates, while Shang Qing Qing and the other Gu Immortals were discussing Southern Border’s matters in Living Treasure blessed land.

Living Treasure blessed land was Shang clan’s public blessed land, their base camp, it was situated in the main world of Southern Border, it was very stable and could allow Gu Immortals to go in.

The door of this blessed land was the living treasure door, its favorite activity was digging its nose.

“The battle of Yi Tian Mountain has ended, Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world will be in turmoil and unrest for the next few decades.” Shang clan’s first supreme elder spoke.

He looked around, continuing: “Right now, our clan has three matters.”

“First, Zombie Alliance have vanished mysteriously over the five regions, the same goes for Southern Border’s Zombie Alliance branch. They occupied many resources, Shang clan can take them over.”

“Second, Yi Tian Mountain has been covered by the giant dream realm. Us righteous path forces are joining up and blockading this place, doing research while preventing demonic path or lone immortals in.”

“Third, Yi Tian Mountain’s shocking gambling contest ended without result, but there are huge amounts of cultivation resources left inside treasure yellow heaven. The sole participant of this gambling contest who is still alive, Gu Immortal Gua Lao, is the only person to inherit the resources. We have to take control of him!”

Shang clan’s Gu Immortals all nodded. The three matters mentioned by first supreme elder were the biggest matters in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world now, countless people were concerned.

“I have been paying attention to treasure yellow heaven, to speak the truth...” Shang Qing Qing was about to speak, when suddenly her expression changed, she said in shock: “What happened? Treasure yellow heaven closed!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1073: Wisdom is Hard to Use

Treasure yellow heaven came from Daoist Countless Treasures.

In the Medieval Antiquity Era, a rank eight Gu Immortal, known as Daoist Countless Treasures, acquired a fragment of yellow heaven by chance. He fused the fragment into his grotto-heaven, and formed treasure yellow heaven.

After a Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture absorbs a fragment of the immemorial nine heavens, it would be placed in the outside world of the five regions, and could not be moved anymore.

Treasure yellow heaven was the same, ever since it was placed in its location three hundred thousand years ago, it had not moved.

But where was treasure yellow heaven’s exact location? This was a huge mystery, people did not know. Wisdom path Gu Immortals had tried to deduce it over the years without finding the answer.

Treasure yellow heaven’s original owner was Daoist Countless Treasures. After him, there were no successors.

Even the many Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables could not find the exact location of treasure yellow heaven.

“Treasure yellow heaven has existed until today, it is the number one open market in the five regions’ Gu Immortal world. Why did it close suddenly?” Shang clan’s Gu Immortals were shocked and suspicious.

Every since Daoist Countless Treasures created treasure yellow heaven, it had been open for three hundred thousand years, it had unknowingly become the biggest help towards Gu Immortals’ cultivation, it had an important place in the mind of every Gu Immortal.

For the longest time, Gu Immortals had gotten used to the existence of treasure yellow heaven. Now that it was closed, everyone was caught off guard.

“Why do you think that treasure yellow heaven closed suddenly?”

“Oh no, we are after the resources gambled in Yi Tian Mountain, now that it is closed, that huge bet is stuck in treasure yellow heaven.”

“Don’t tell me, treasure yellow heaven’s heavenly spirit is trying to steal this huge amount?”

Shang clan’s first supreme elder shook his head, he denied that idea: “Treasure yellow heaven’s heavenly spirit does not care about that bet, if it was corrupt, treasure yellow heaven would not have its reputation and status. There had never been a case of corruption in treasure yellow heaven in history. But regarding the closing of treasure yellow heaven, there have been a few instances.”

“Is that so? We would like to know.” Shang Qing Qing quickly asked.

Shang clan’s first supreme elder spoke slowly, revealing a secret.

As it turned out, there were some instances recorded of treasure yellow heaven closing in history, they were due to the same reason.

It involved fragments of immemorial yellow heaven.

The immemorial nine heavens were red, orange, yellow, green, azure, blue, purple, white and black. Right now, only white heaven and black heaven remained. Yellow heaven had shattered long ago.

Back then, Daoist Countless Treasures knew that he could not survive a coming tribulation, he used his own immortal aperture to absorb a small fragment world of immemorial yellow heaven, forming treasure yellow heaven. Even though he was trapped inside treasure yellow heaven and lost his freedom, he no longer faced any tribulations.

After treasure yellow heaven absorbed the immemorial yellow heaven fragment, it could only continue to expand by absorbing other yellow heaven fragments.

There were several transactions recorded in history.

Certain people had sold a fragment world of immemorial yellow heaven to treasure yellow heaven’s heavenly spirit.

After the heavenly spirit obtained it, it closed treasure yellow heaven and focused on absorbing the yellow heaven fragment to expand itself.

“This time, if there are no unexpected surprises, should also be this case.” Shang clan first supreme elder finally surmised.

He was right.

In this world, it might be that the only thing that could move treasure yellow heaven’s heavenly spirit were yellow heaven fragments.

The immemorial nine heavens had shattered long ago, yellow heaven fragments were nearly non-existent at this point. Only those with immense luck and opportunities could obtain them.

But Heavenly Court had a long history, its treasury was beyond imagination. It could take out a fragment of immemorial yellow heaven, and the size was quite large too.

If the amount was little, treasure yellow heaven’s heavenly spirit would not need to close treasure yellow heaven, it could absorb the fragment easily.

Now, treasure yellow heaven closed, the yellow heaven fragment had to be so huge that the heavenly spirit had no choice but to focus entirely on the absorption.

Treasure yellow heaven had been impartial all along, it did not side with anyone, it was mysterious and Heavenly Court could do nothing to it.

If Heavenly Court asked the heavenly spirit to reject Ying Wu Xie’s transactions openly.

The heavenly spirit would not respond to them, and Gu Immortals from the other four regions would not care either. With the five regional walls, Heavenly Court’s influence and control was mostly limited to Central Continent.

But Heavenly Court was extremely affluent, it tossed out one large yellow heaven fragment. This way, Ying Wu Xie’s plan to save himself was thwarted!

“Damn it! Heavenly Court actually did this!” Ying Wu Xie’s face was ruthless, he clenched his fists, veins were popping, he was gritting his teeth until a grinding sound could be heard.

He was furious, but with the heavy handed method used by Heavenly Court, he could not do anything but watch helplessly.

Guh.

Suddenly, Ying Wu Xie felt a rush of blood as he spat it out, falling backwards.

Hatred and anger filled his heart, other than that, he also felt bone-chilling coldness.

Heavenly Court directly sold the yellow heaven fragment cheaply, they were paying such a huge price to eliminate Ying Wu Xie, this showed their firm determination in this aspect.

It was a desperate situation!

Heavenly Court’s move had blocked Ying Wu Xie’s final way out.

They were too ruthless.

Without treasure yellow heaven, even if Ying Wu Xie wanted to sell Immortal Gu, they were stuck with him.

And even more disgustingly, his Immortal Gu Iron Crown Eagle Strength was still stuck inside.

Without the immortal materials from transactions, how can he continue to refine Gu?

One couldn’t cook a meal without the ingredients, without Immortal Gu, how could he get out of this situation?

Treasure yellow heaven closed, the heavenly spirit was absorbing the yellow heaven fragment, this was not going to end quickly. In history, the shortest period was just over two months.

There was no way out!

He could only allow Heavenly Court to deduce while he and the rest defended and stalled for time, until finally, strong foes came to find them personally, and they failed to resist them.

Lang Ya blessed land.

Fang Yuan’s appearance had changed, he became an immortal zombie again.

He had once modified nirvana fire and created a strength path immortal killer move to alternate between life and death. He could be a living Gu Immortal, or a dead immortal zombie.

But now, he was not using this method.

His strength path Immortal Gu were all lost, he could not use that strength path killer move.

Fang Yuan’s plan was simple, his soul flew out and left his body, entering the corpse of a strength path immortal zombie.

The corpses of these strength path immortal zombies came from Blazing Heaven Demoness. After rebirth, Fang Yuan had still asked for these to make preparation for the life-and-death immortal aperture as a failsafe, he had obtained many strength path immortal zombies from Blazing Heaven Demoness.

These bodies were all placed in Star Form blessed land. After Yi Tian Mountain, he had gotten them back from Lang Ya land spirit.

Other than these immortal zombie bodies, there were also large amounts of precious immortal materials.

Most of the quasi-rank nine immortal materials were obtained from the Gu formation in Earth Trench. Some of the rank seven and eight immortal materials were picked up from Falling Heavenly River. He had benefited greatly from Bo Qing’s awakening, when his sword lights traversed Central Continent.

Fang Yuan did not have much immortal essence or immortal essence stones, but he did not lack Gu refinement materials. But the value of these immortal materials were too high, it was inappropriate to use them now.

Immortal materials were not the key point, wisdom Gu was more important.

Fang Yuan was staring at wisdom Gu for a long time, but it did not move at all, let alone emit the light of wisdom.

“Using other immortal zombie bodies in place of myself did not work. I cannot draw out the light of wisdom.”

Fang Yuan was not surprised at this.

He had already made similar experiments long ago in Hu Immortal blessed land.

Wisdom Gu had never been refined by Fang Yuan, he had only made an agreement with it back then because of the winds of assimilation.

Survival was the instinct of all living beings.

But wisdom Gu seemed to only respond to Fang Yuan as a whole. His body and soul were both needed to draw out the light of wisdom. If one was missing, if he only had his soul and not his body, it would not work.

“That means, the most direct way is to just take back my original body?” Fang Yuan thought.

His original body was still an immortal zombie.

There was no need to change anything, it was suitable to bathe in the light of wisdom.

But this method, although it would work, was impractical.

“Ying Wu Xie has already vanished... he could possibly have Spring Autumn Cicada, Fixed Immortal Travel, and other Immortal Gu. Other than that, Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng might be helping him.”

Earlier, Fang Yuan had no time because of the calamity. Now, every time he thought about the problem called Ying Wu Xie, he felt a deep headache.

“Thus, I all the more need to refine Fang Zheng into a blood deity.”

Fang Yuan’s current body was created from sovereign immortal fetus Gu, he had no parents, he had no bloodline relationship to anything in this world.

But Fang Yuan still wanted to refine Fang Zheng into a blood deity.

The blood deity refined using Fang Zheng could counter Fang Yuan’s body.

Even if the immortal zombie body could not be taken back later, Fang Yuan could use the base of Fang Zheng’s blood deity to modify it. Or possibly, he could combine it with his soul to regain wisdom Gu’s acknowledgement.

Of course, this was purely Fang Yuan’s intuition.

But intuition was not to be underestimated, especially when Fang Yuan’s blood path attainment level was at grandmaster level.

When Fang Yuan was testing wisdom Gu, Lang Ya land spirit was also observing. Seeing the results, he sighed and felt much regret.

Fang Yuan looked towards Lang Ya land spirit in concerned fashion: “Does first supreme elder have any methods to use wisdom Gu?”

Lang Ya land spirit stared at Fang Yuan, replying petulantly: “The simplest method is to raise your cultivation level to rank nine and directly refine this wisdom Gu!”

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly: “I know this method too, I am asking if there are other methods?”

“Sigh, there is a method that isn’t a method. I can feed it with lifespan Gu continuously, after feeding it for some time, I might obtain wisdom Gu’s acknowledgement. If this method works, wisdom Gu would be mine, by then, you would have to give it to me no matter what.” Lang Ya land spirit thought about it and smiled to himself.

Fang Yuan’s eyes drooped: “Is it really fine to directly say it?”

“You think I want to?!” Lang Ya land spirit was stomping his feet: “Land spirits cannot lie, damn it, why did I tell you about my motives again? You accursed fellow!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1074: Spy Exposed

Fang Yuan shook his head, sighing.

The price of feeding wisdom Gu was too high. Only Lang Ya land spirit was willing to pay it.

Fang Yuan used sovereign immortal fetus Gu to revive, his age was about sixteen now. Humans in this world lived a hundred years on average, that meant that Fang Yuan had about eighty-four years of lifespan left, it was a long time.

But even so, Fang Yuan knew that if he obtained lifespan Gu, he would use them all on himself. Even if he did not use them, he would save them for the future in case of emergencies.

Lifespan Gu were mortal Gu.

But lifespan Gu were among the strongest forms of currency in Gu Immortal transactions, almost nothing could compare.

There were two obstacles in a Gu Immortal’s cultivation, one was calamities and tribulations, the other was lifespan.

Even if one was as strong as an Immortal Venerable or Demon Venerable, they would still be challenged by these two problems.

In fact, back then when Giant Sun Immortal Venerable set up Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, one of his most important goals was to ransack the lifespan Gu in the whole of Northern Plains to extend his lifespan, as for feeding wisdom Gu, it was secondary. During Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s later years, for a long period of time, wisdom Gu was in constant hunger, it had to go into deep sleep and could not be used.

Later, when Spectral Soul Demon Venerable explored Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he also found wisdom Gu. But he could not use it, or afford to feed it, lifespan Gu were hard to find, he did not have enough for himself. However, with his soul path attainment level, he could make use of aspects of other paths using his own as a foundation, he did not have much need for wisdom Gu anyway.

After Spectral Soul Demon Venerable died, his era ended. Thereafter, the world started to produce lifespan Gu again. And after that, another huge figure appeared in the world, that was Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

He had already searched for lifespan Gu during his later years, but lifespan Gu’s demand far exceeded the supply, it became rarer until it vanished.

After Paradise Earth died, a new cycle started as the world recuperated, lifespan Gu appeared again. Every ten years, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building conducted the imperial court contest, ransacking Northern Plains’ lifespan Gu, wisdom Gu was slowly fed and recuperated, until Fang Yuan destroyed Imperial Court blessed land.

And later, due to its survival instincts, wisdom Gu left with Fang Yuan and went to Hu Immortal blessed land. After a long series of events, it ended up in Lang Ya blessed land now.

“During Three Kings blessed land, I used two lifespan Gu to refine second aperture Gu. But that could not be helped. In this life, I had obtained a lifespan Gu from Blazing Heaven Demoness. But after rebirth, I lost this opportunity and have no lifespan Gu with me now. Since Blazing Heaven Demoness could give me a lifespan Gu, she definitely had more than one in her possession. But she died in the ten extreme formation, her lifespan Gu were also destroyed.... Eh? No.”

Fang Yuan thought as he recalled something.

“Lifespan Gu is hard to find, even an Immortal Venerable or Demon Venerable would need and desire it. Blazing Heaven Demoness was plotted against by Spectral Soul and died, her accumulated wealth must have been taken by Spectral Soul already! Even though Spectral Soul’s plan failed, the remnant forces of Shadow Sect and Zombie Alliance remain, their wealth is still immense!”

As for Lang Ya land spirit, he also had a number of lifespan Gu, it was quite the sum.

These lifespan Gu were all produced inside Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya blessed land had a long history of over three hundred thousand years, it had lived through the era of two venerables.

Lang Ya blessed land was originally Lang Ya grotto-heaven, it had an incredibly huge space. After intentionally being dropped to a blessed land, because

Refinement Cauldron was fused into the immortal aperture world, Lang Ya blessed land’s space increased instead, it was larger than even many grotto-heavens.

There were an immense number of hairy men living here, they were split into three countries, the life forms in here procreated and had generations after generations of offspring.

Lifespan Gu was produced from life forms.

Wherever life forms lived, lifespan Gu could be naturally produced.

With a huge space, countless inhabitants, and a long history, together with Lang Ya land spirit’s absolute control over the blessed land, whenever a lifespan Gu appeared, he could collect it immediately. With all these reasons, Lang Ya land spirit’s lifespan Gu accumulation increased continuously.

Fang Yuan did not know the exact number, but he could easily guess that the number was not small!

Ordinary Gu Immortals would need lifespan Gu, but Lang Ya land spirit did not.

“Activating wisdom Gu requires the Gu Immortal’s lifespan to be expended. And feeding wisdom Gu also requires lifespan Gu. For now, I should let Lang Ya land spirit feed it.”

Fang Yuan knew about Lang Ya land spirit’s motives even without any probing.

This could not be helped, Fang Yuan had no lifespan Gu, he could not feed it.

He was in deep trouble himself, when Gu Immortals went through tribulations, they become stronger and stronger each time. Fang Yuan was worried about the next earthly calamity, he had no time to care about wisdom Gu.

Ever since wisdom Gu was brought away by him, Fang Yuan had not fed it once.

The truth was, Lang Ya land spirit was helping Fang Yuan.

“In any case, even if wisdom Gu acknowledges Lang Ya land spirit, it is a good thing. With my current status, I can use Lang Ya land spirit’s methods to use wisdom Gu, I will only need to pay some sect contribution points.”

All Gu worms were tools.

All of his hard work was targeted towards that illusory goal.

For this goal, Fang Yuan had given up too much, there was nothing he could not discard.

The experiment with wisdom Gu ended in failure.

But Fang Yuan felt no disappointment, before leaving, he asked for one thing from Lang Ya land spirit.

An information path mortal Gu that recorded the scene of when he refined change form Immortal Gu.

“This Gu refinement was very strange, the tribulations became so strong! We were lucky that we succeeded. Fang Yuan, if you find out anything, you have to tell me.” Lang Ya land spirit instructed Fang Yuan before he left.

“First supreme elder did not manage to find out anything, neither could I. I will do my best.” Fang Yuan answered. He had a vague guess that the tribulations gained strength due to the sovereign immortal fetus Gu. But he would not tell Lang Ya land spirit this guess no matter what.

Other than researching the tribulations, Fang Yuan had another goal, he wanted to investigate Lang Ya Sect, and see if there were any traitors left.

All along, Fang Yuan had been mindful of this.

Shadow Sect had sent two traitors into Lang Ya blessed land, unexpectedly having hairy man Gu Immortals. When Shadow Sect attacked Lang Ya blessed land, these two spies played an important role.

“But other than them, are there other spies in Lang Ya Sect?”

This problem was extremely important to Fang Yuan. After all, he had already joined Lang Ya Sect. For a long time in the future, he would need to depend on Lang Ya land spirit to undergo tribulations and cultivate.

He had just started this investigation, he did not have the time or energy until now.

After flying for some time, Fang Yuan was already close to his new accommodations.

This was a grand city.

Pure white city walls stood up proudly. At the peak of tall towers, flags were hanging.

This was a cloud city.

On Cloud Cover Continent, there were twelve cloud cities, each of the cities was a mortal Gu House. When activated together, they could form the twelve wave cloud confusion formation, it could cover the entirety of Cloud Cover Continent.

These twelve cloud cities were created from the former twelve cloud buildings.

The current Lang Ya land spirit liked grand appearances, he was different from the previous one.

The cloud city in Fang Yuan’s vision was given by Lang Ya land spirit, to be the place where he defended and lived. The other hairy man Gu Immortals, including Lang Ya land spirit himself, each occupied one cloud city.

There were few residents in the city, but soon, there would be more and more. Because in Lang Ya land spirit’s plan, he was going to trigger a war between the three continents and pick outstanding Gu Masters, moving them to Cloud Cover Continent for nurturing.

Fang Yuan flew down to the cloud city and landed.

Several hairy man Gu Masters quickly welcomed him.

They were elite hairy man Gu Masters, they were chosen by Lang Ya land spirit and sent to Fang Yuan. On one aspect, they were to take care of Fang Yuan’s daily affairs, but there was also the intention for them to receive Fang Yuan’s guidance in cultivation.

Fang Yuan was not concerned about these hairy men. But the leader of the hairy man Gu Masters respectfully told Fang Yuan that the sixth city lord has visited Fang Yuan, he had already been in the guest room for a long time already.

The sixth city lord was Gu Immortal Sixth Hair, he was guarding the sixth cloud city.

“Why is he here?”

Fang Yuan felt uncertain, he came to the guest room and met with this Gu Immortal, Sixth Hair.

“I am Sixth Hair, greetings to second city lord. I am here today to seek guidance from you regarding combat.” Sixth Hair paid his respects as he said this.

Fang Yuan’s expression did not change, but his gaze had turned ice cold.

As it turned out, although Sixth Hair said that out loud, he was secretly transmitting a different message to Fang Yuan.

“Fang Yuan, I am here representing Lord Ying Wu Xie to make a deal with you!”

Ying Wu Xie!

Shadow Sect!

Sixth Hair was the spy!!

At once countless thoughts flashed across Fang Yuan’s mind like lightning.

“Too polite, too polite. We are all from the same sect, don’t talk about guidance, we can definitely spar.” Fang Yuan smiled as he showed a warm expression.

He first moved away and invited Sixth Hair to sit down, before getting to his own seat.

These few steps were not far, but countless thoughts flashed in Fang Yuan’s mind.

“Sixth Hair is the spy, is he the only spy in Lang Ya blessed land?”

“He is representing Ying Wu Xie to make a deal, what transaction does he want?”

“Over on Ying Wu Xie’s end, what is going on? He wants a transaction?”

“Is he sincere? Is this a trap? Is this Lang Ya land spirit’s probing? After all, I joined Lang Ya Sect and have an information path alliance agreement on me.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan sat down.

His expression changed, his eyes were sharp like daggers, he looked at Sixth Hair with deep killing intent, he transmitted coldly: “Sixth Hair, what guts! Is what you just said true? If it is true, I will hand you over to first supreme elder for judgment!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1075: Simple Words can Turn a Snake into a Dragon

Sixth Hair looked at Fang Yuan as he laughed, feeling no fear.

If he wanted to snitch, Fang Yuan would have attacked the moment Sixth Hair exposed himself.

But Fang Yuan did not, he sat down and said some empty threats.

As for the reason, Sixth Hair knew clearly, he said: “I was originally in charge of the twelve cloud cities. Before you came here, I had already set up an Immortal Gu formation. Not only can it conceal us to prevent Lang Ya land spirit from finding out, it can also suppress the alliance agreement. You can test it out.”

Fang Yuan had joined Lang Ya Sect, he was bound by the alliance agreement and could not act freely.

Especially when talking with the spy Sixth Hair, it was against the alliance agreement.

But hearing Sixth Hair’s words, Fang Yuan tested it, as expected, there was no backlash from breaking some small alliance agreement rules.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was deep, he said after a while: “It seems you are indeed a spy in Lang Ya Sect. What transaction do you want?”

Sixth Hair felt great relief, he was afraid that Fang Yuan would take him down without any further discussion. The first hurdle had been passed already.

However... he could not be careless, Fang Yuan was unscrupulous and shameless, he was a devious person with no bottom line.

Even though he took a risk and exposed his own identity, danger was still extremely high.

There was no choice, Ying Wu Xie was out of ideas over there, he could only try this.

Having a transaction with Fang Yuan was the same as plotting with a tiger, it was too dangerous.

Only after the transaction was over and the evidence was firm, they would be tied together and he would have a hold on him. By then, Sixth Hair would be safe.

But how could he achieve his aims without losing too many benefits, Sixth Hair felt troubled, he was on the weaker side now.

“Ying Wu Xie and I have deep enmity, they are suddenly approaching me and even exposed their spy’s identity, they have something to ask of me. Interesting... I want to see what he is up to.” Fang Yuan had such a thought in his mind.

“To speak the truth, Lord Ying Wu Xie has already reached a desperate situation, his survival is at stake. Otherwise, I would not have appeared to talk to you.” Sixth Hair said.

“Oh?” Fang Yuan’s brows rose, he looked at the other party again.

Sixth Hair was so honest, Fang Yuan felt shocked internally.

Why would one expose their own weaknesses before the deal?

Fang Yuan's eyes shined, he sensed the ingenuity of Sixth Hair's purposeful reveal — even if Sixth Hair did not say it, Fang Yuan would have noticed. By saying it, he could show that this was a last ditch attempt that was filled with determination.

"It seems that after interacting with Lang Ya land spirit for a long time, I have let down my guard. Even though the other party is a hairy man, he is a spy from Shadow Sect, how can he be as simple and easy to bully as a land spirit?" Fang Yuan raised his alertness.

Thinking about it, Fang Yuan spoke slowly and calmly: "Ying Wu Xie has all of the accumulated Gu worms in my body, he even has the help of Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan, how can he reach such a stage? I refuse to believe it."

Sixth Hair shook his head: "Fang Yuan, why the need to probe further? You set up the special will and caused your Gu worms to self-detonate, you really gave Lord Ying Wu Xie a huge surprise. He tried to preserve the Gu worms, but only thirty percent remain."

Once he said that, Fang Yuan was fully certain that Sixth Hair was a spy lurking inside Lang Ya Sect sent by Shadow Sect.

Fang Yuan's thoughts churned, his words earlier were not completely true, after Sixth Hair answered him, he obtained a lot of precious information.

"To think that Ying Wu Xie is really controlling Hei and Bai. Hei Lou Lan is a formidable person, she was not easy to control, but after her aunts died, it is much easier to deal with her. She has the Great Strength True Martial Physique, if used well, she is an excellent pawn."

"And Tai Bai Yun Sheng is a kind man, even though he is hesitant and timid, he has two time path Immortal Gu, he can help out a lot. To think that they are both controlled by Ying Wu Xie, what a shame!"

Fang Yuan sighed internally.

Fate worked in mysterious ways.

After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, he and Ying Wu Xie had swapped places. He obtained sovereign immortal fetus Gu, while Ying Wu Xie obtained his accumulated wealth.

He was able to use Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, as a split soul of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he had incredible methods to keep these two under control.

"Ying Wu Xie has my Immortal Gu and Hei and Bai to help him. Now, he is initiating a transaction with me, I just make him pay a high price!" Fang Yuan thought to himself harshly.

However, next, after Sixth Hair exposed their weakness, he changed his words: "Before the deal, let me show you our sincerity. Think of this as free intel. This intel is extremely important, it concerns your future cultivation greatly, or more accurately, it has to do with your life and death!"

Fang Yuan snorted, he said coldly: "You do not need to brag about the value of the intel. I can assess it myself when I see it."

"Fang Yuan, do you know what heaven's will is?" Sixth Hair asked.

“Heaven’s will?” Fang Yuan asked in confusion.

Sixth Hair looked at his expression before nodding in understandment, saying: “You indeed forgot a lot of things, Fang Yuan.”

“What do you mean?” Fang Yuan’s brows rose slightly.

Sixth Hair said: “You had once used heaven’s will’s guidance to swap souls with Lord Ying Wu Xie, disguised as the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique and finally taking away sovereign immortal fetus Gu. But what you did not know was, this eleventh extreme physique was created by Old Man Yan Shi, it had a huge flaw. Any soul which resides in the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body will fall into deep sleep and lose its memories. Even though Old Man Yan Shi tried to remove the weakness, he only eliminated the weakness of falling asleep, the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique still caused the soul to lose memories continuously. As time passed, more memories would be lost. Precisely because of this, Lord Ying Wu Xie was constantly losing memories and could only use the immortal killer move lead soul into dream.”

Saying this, Sixth Hair took out an information path mortal Gu.

He moved this Gu around with his finger as he sighed internally.

This Gu worm has little to no value to him. But to Fang Yuan, it was immensely valuable! If not for the situation, why would he pass this to Fang Yuan?

In Ying Wu Xie’s original plan, he was going to use this weakness of Fang Yuan to deal with him.

To think that there would be a time where he personally helped Fang Yuan fix this flaw.

“This letter Gu records the details before and after Yi Tian Mountain, take a look.” Sixth Hair said as he tossed the Gu worm to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan received it and inspected it, there were no problems, he activated the Gu worm and the scenes of Yi Tian Mountain appeared in his mind.

He found that he was indeed lacking many crucial memories.

“No wonder I have been feeling something weird, but I did not know what. I lost my memories.”

This was true amnesia.

By completely losing one’s memories, they could not realize it themselves. If they knew that they forgot something, that would not be true amnesia, they could still remember it eventually.

However, the scenes in the information path mortal Gu gave Fang Yuan a familiar feeling, of course, there was still a chance that they were deceiving him.

After checking it several times, Fang Yuan had a calm expression, his gaze was deep as he said: “I seem to have lost my memories, but how can I know that this is real, this can possibly be made up too.”

Sixth Hair gritted his teeth.

He knew that this was the hard part of this transaction.

Fang Yuan and Ying Wu Xie were enemies, they had deep enmity, there was little trust between them. The problem was how to express his sincerity and make Fang

Yuan believe them.

If this problem was tackled, the transaction would proceed smoothly.

Sixth Hair’s thoughts moved rapidly, colliding continuously in his mind. He was considering his words carefully, he had to, because Fang Yuan could kill someone without even blinking! If he said something wrong, so be it if he died, but Ying Wu Xie had the mission to save his main body, this could not fail.

After a long time, Sixth Hair spoke: ” Fang Yuan, you possess Spring Autumn Cicada, you have experienced rebirth, everyone knows this. But the truth is, even if you have many secrets, you have less of a clear understanding than us.”

“Heaven’s will is vast, it is everywhere, all over the five regions and nine heavens, it spans across the past, present, and future. The way of heaven is to take away surpluses while replenishing deficits, it emphasizes on balance. And the way of humans is exactly the opposite, it is to reduce the deficits and build up the surpluses. The two are complete opposites, and they are in conflict with each other.”

“Thus, the previous venerables, and any legendary figures, are the targets of heaven’s will’s suppression. Calamities and tribulations, lifespan Gu, they are two of heaven’s will’s trump cards. Fang Yuan, you have experienced two tribulations already, one was the earthly calamity, and the other was the creation of an Immortal Gu. The two of them had incredible power beyond reason, it was because you had revived using sovereign immortal fetus Gu and your new body and immortal aperture have unlimited potential, once you grow, you will surpass previous venerables. Because of this, heaven’s will feels extremely wary of you, and wants to kill you before you grow any further.”

Fang Yuan’s heart shook.

Since the tribulations, he had been considering this question.

And now, Sixth Hair gave him the answer.

“Heaven’s will...” Fang Yuan muttered internally, thinking about this phrase.

Sixth Hair sighed, he continued: “My main body, Spectral Soul, created Shadow Sect, Zombie Alliance, and refined sovereign immortal fetus, preparing for a hundred thousand years, ending up in failure. This is the work of heaven’s will, not only were there grand tribulations and myriad tribulations, we even had to face countless enemies. Heavenly Court with Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord as the leader was its representative. And you, Fang Yuan, were the hidden assassin of our human tribulation!”

“What do you mean?” Fang Yuan squinted as his eyes shone, he felt deep interest, he could acutely sense that Sixth Hair’s words were going to cause a huge transformation in his situation!

Sixth Hair hesitated.

He knew: Once he said the following words, Fang Yuan’s greatest weakness of not knowing heaven’s will would be fixed. In fact, it might even cause Fang Yuan’s uncontrollable rise to the top.

Fang Yuan was like a python stuck in the swamp now. This python’s eyes were covered by a black cloth, it did not know its directions, it was rolling around in the mud.

But once the information was given to Fang Yuan, the python’s cloth would be removed, its vision would return, it would be able to see the huge world and realize that the swamp trapping it was very tiny.

With an accurate direction, knowing its circumstances, the python would raise its head towards the sky, it would cause huge storms, it would even become a dragon and roam the world freely!

These might just be some words, but to Fang Yuan, they were a qualitative transformation, the value was immeasurable.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1076: Transactions with Shadow Sect (1/3)

Sixth Hair did not want to tell this secret to Fang Yuan, but he really had no choice!

Ying Wu Xie’s situation forced him to do this!

Breathing in a deep breath, Sixth Hair continued: “Fang Yuan, you were able to take sovereign immortal fetus Gu away at the most crucial moment, it was not just because of your own capabilities, but because you received the guidance of heaven’s will. Even the fact that you were able to use Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth was also part of heaven’s will’s plot. To let you return to the past and ruin my Shadow Sect’s grand plan!”

Fang Yuan heard this and his heart shook.

The first half was still fine, but the content of the second half! Even with his mental fortitude, he also could not control himself.

Boom!

Coincidentally, at this time, there was a huge tremor in the outside world.

“What is going on?” In an instant, Fang Yuan regained his cool.

He sat up as he used his Gu worms, his eyes pierced the cloud cover, he saw that there was thunder rumbling in the sky, several bolts of lightning were flickering.

A thunderstorm was brewing!

Sixth Hair laughed coldly, but he felt bleak internally: “Fang Yuan, you have just undergone tribulation, there is still much of heaven’s will left in Lang Ya blessed land. My earlier words exposed the scheme of heaven’s will, I attracted the fury of heaven’s will. But all blessed lands and grotto-heavens are small worlds independent of the five regions, heaven’s will cannot control this place. The tribulations are already over, no matter how angry heaven’s will is, there is no use!”

Fang Yuan did not deny it, he looked at Sixth Hair expressionlessly: “Continue speaking.”

Sixth Hair was hesitant earlier, but now that he had spoken, he felt relieved on the inside.

He spoke even more quickly, continuing: “Fang Yuan, your Spring Autumn Cicada also has heaven’s will hidden in it. This has been verified by Lord Ying Wu Xie. This is the best evidence proving that every single one of your rebirths were affected by heaven’s will.”

“Spring Autumn Cicada uses everything in the Gu Immortal and only retains a will. This will is carried inside Spring Autumn Cicada and enters the River of Time, traveling upwards to your body in the past, achieving a rebirth. Fang Yuan, you have used it many times, you should know this clearly.”

Fang Yuan was expressionless, he did not retort.

Sixth Hair continued: “Spring Autumn Cicada has heaven’s will in it, every time you use Spring Autumn Cicada, it is the best chance for heaven’s will to increase its influence on you. Because at that time, you only have some portion of remaining will left, without your body, your focus will also be on the River of Time, you will not anticipate such a plot working on you.”

“After rebirth, you naturally had to think about how to use your rebirth advantage to cultivate. Precisely so, you were plotted against by heaven’s will. The things you experienced before rebirth, the opportunities that you knew, were they really simply what you know now? Those so-called fortuitous encounters were just bait left by heaven’s will, so that as a tool of heaven’s will, you would grow and reach Yi Tian Mountain, ruining Shadow Sect’s plan.”

“According to our deduction, in the future before your first rebirth, Shadow Sect had succeeded. But heaven’s will was not willing to see my main body become a venerable again. Why did Bo Qing fail in the past? It was because he was a split soul of my main body. And furthermore, after my main body obtained the sovereign immortal fetus and revived, he would definitely grow beyond all of the other venerables! In the future, heaven’s will was no longer able to eliminate my main body. Thus, it thought of a way, creating a plot to send you back in time, using you to change the past and remodel the future!”

Fang Yuan suddenly asked: “Wait, I don’t understand something, why did heaven’s will choose me?”

“Because you are an otherworldly demon, only otherworldly demons can change the past. If they are not an otherworldly demon, even a venerable cannot do enough. Red Lotus Demon Venerable tried all his life, but he only broke fate Gu, he could not even destroy it, or harm heaven’s will.”

“Of course, you are not the only otherworldly demon. But regardless, after taking personal experience and circumstances into account, during that time period, you were the most suitable candidate to be the tool.” Sixth Hair answered.

Fang Yuan was silent.

This was a brand new perspective, a shocking revelation!

Sixth Hair’s words made Fang Yuan realize that he was immersed in a huge scheme.

He thought back over the five hundred years of his previous life, he had roamed for hundreds of years, was it the suppression of heaven’s will?

He had wanted to refine Blood Deity, did heaven’s will obstruct him from doing so?

It seemed too easy that he obtained Spring Autumn Cicada’s Immortal Gu recipe.

After refining Spring Autumn Cicada, he immediately faced the attack of all the ten great ancient sects.

Sixth Hair looked at his expression and saw that Fang Yuan was moved, but because he did not express himself, Sixth Hair could only curse internally as he asked again:

“Your Spring Autumn Cicada is only rank six, there is a high chance of failure. Why did you succeed every time you used it?”

“That isn’t the case, I failed the last time.” As Fang Yuan said this, he suddenly was stunned.

This point was the strongest evidence proving the presence of heaven’s will!

His amnesia did not affect this part of his memories, he remembered that he used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth because he was hit by Heaven Overseeing Tower, he could not dodge and had no choice.

But before this, the Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie was already vaporized by Heaven Overseeing Tower.

According to Sixth Hair’s explanation, it could be understood as: The Great Strength True Martial immortal zombie was destroyed, the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation was incomplete, it could not refine Gu. Shadow Sect’s plan failed, the only other way was Hei Lou Lan, but she was not at Yi Tian Mountain. Thus, heaven’s will no longer needed the tool, Fang Yuan, and he failed when using Spring Autumn Cicada.

Instead, Shadow Sect refused to lose, after heaven’s will abandoned Fang Yuan, Shadow Sect used the Red Lotus true inheritance to help Fang Yuan rebirth and change the past, allowing Shadow Sect’s plan to progress.

“What? You do not know that I failed my last activation?” Fang Yuan looked at Sixth Hair.

Sixth Hair blinked and felt cold sweat in his hands.

He naturally did not know this.

He was only a split soul, he did not even join the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, he had been inside Lang Ya blessed land the entire time. Furthermore, he only had Ying Wu Xie as a higher-up, a lot of his information came from Ying Wu Xie.

But he knew that Ying Wu Xie had activated Spring Autumn Cicada. Originally, Ying Wu Xie was plotted against by Fang Yuan and had no way out, but because of Spring Autumn Cicada, there was a reset which caused the current situation.

Sixth Hair was thinking about whether he should tell Fang Yuan this secret. He got more and more nervous as he thought over it, he did not know what reaction Fang Yuan would have after he told him.

But at this time, Fang Yuan waved his hand, saying: “Never mind, continue.”

Sixth Hair heaved a sigh of relief, he let out a breath and calmed his emotions, he continued: “Heaven’s will planned for you to be a tool, it was a brilliant move. We subconsciously assumed that an otherworldly demon would have nothing to do with heaven’s will. Because of this, even my main body was deceived.”

“After Three Kings blessed land, one of our split souls, Old Man Yan Shi, found out that you had Spring Autumn Cicada, that you are someone who had been reborn. But because you already went to Hu Immortal inheritance, and our hundred thousand year plan was right before us, we did not want to create external trouble, so we tried to scheme against you secretly. Thus, Old Man Yan Shi blocked deductions for you, and that caused the Central Continent Gu Immortals, Feng Jiu Ge's group, to go to Luo Po Valley."

"In that battle, even though the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance immortal zombie escaped, he was captured by Old Ancestor Xue Hu. Heavenly Court and these Gu Immortals in Northern Plains were all secretly influenced by heaven's will, they were part of my main body's 'human' tribulation."

"Fang Yuan, after rebirth, on the way to Northern Plains from Southern Border, you encountered a lot of unexpected mishaps, right? These were all caused by heaven's will to eliminate you."

"Similarly, Lord Ying Wu Xie is in a desperate situation now, a part of the reason was that Lord Ying Wu Xie had obtained your body, he also attracted a lot of enemies for you, and is facing the problem for you."

"Fang Yuan, your name is on the Demon Judgment Board, the ten great ancient sects are after you, even Heavenly Court is pursuing you. Lord Ying Wu Xie is the best example of your future! Do you think you can be safe if you hide in the other four regions and don't go to Central Continent? My main body defied heaven to refine Gu, but Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals could still come after us. The main reason that most Gu Immortals don't travel regions is not because of the five regional walls, but because of their calamities and tribulations. Once they arrive, the result is hard to predict, if their tribulation was affected, they would suffer. Furthermore, Heavenly Court Gu Immortals give their immortal apertures to Heavenly Court, they have no calamities and tribulations, they go outside using a phantom aperture, and they have the method to sleep while preserving their lifespan."

"Fang Yuan, let me ask this, if I did not inform you today, would you know about heaven's will? The scheme that made you a tool?"

"You and my main body have deep enmity, that is true, but you are also closely linked to us. Lord Ying Wu Xie is in grave danger, if he ends up in the hands of Heavenly Court, your relationship with him and your information would all be leaked. Heavenly Court will come after you! Because Heavenly Court are the lackeys that defend heaven's will. Earlier, Feng Jiu Ge and the other Central Continent Gu Immortals went to Northern Plains to investigate, and later, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord launched an ambush in Southern Border. Fang Yuan, you and Lord Ying Wu Xie are tied together by the same rope, if he dies, you will follow soon enough!"

Sixth Hair had great eloquence, he spoke without pausing, he listed his reasons with strong evidence, it was truly convincing and understandable.

Fang Yuan was so moved he could not help but say: "You are right, this is truly the case! I think.... we can have a good transaction."

Sixth Hair was overjoyed, he thought: "This matter is settled!"

At this moment, he was about to tear up.

Because recently, he had been under strong pressure.

Because of him, Fang Yuan succeeded in the tribulation and refined change form Immortal Gu.

No matter the reason or motive, the result was clear.

He was at fault!

He was filled with regret and anguish.

Thus, he had to make up for his mistake.

Now, he exposed his identity and took a huge risk to urge Fang Yuan, it was Ying Wu Xie’s idea, but Sixth Hair was also a willing party.

It seemed now that everything was worth it.

Fang Yuan was Ying Wu Xie’s only way out. Sixth Hair had helped Ying Wu Xie open up this possibility singlehandedly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1077: Transactions with Shadow Sect (2/3)

“Then how do we deal? What do you people need?” Fang Yuan asked with an amicable expression.

“Fang Yuan, we know you have a lot of immortal materials. The immortal materials picked up in Earth Trench have a problem, they are filled with heaven’s will. We do not want these. But the huge amount of immortal materials from Falling Heavenly River can be traded. This is our list, take a look.” Sixth Hair took out an information path mortal Gu.

Fang Yuan received it and inspected it before his consciousness entered the Gu, he nodded as he browsed.

A moment later, Fang Yuan said to Sixth Hair: “I have most of these immortal materials, but as a member of Lang Ya Sect, can’t you get these from Lang Ya Sect’s inventory?”

Sixth Hair smiled bitterly: “Times are different, the new Lang Ya land spirit is not the same as previously, in Lang Ya Sect, sect contribution points are everything. If I want to get items from the inventory, I will need to use my sect contribution points. But my sect contribution points have not reached the number that Lord Ying Wu Xie needs.”

“You are right.” Fang Yuan nodded before asking: “I can give you these immortal materials, but how will these immortal materials reach Ying Wu Xie? Treasure yellow heaven is currently closed.”

Ying Wu Xie had been selling Immortal Gu, he made a huge commotion, Fang Yuan knew about it.

Sixth Hair continued speaking: “It is more troublesome without treasure yellow heaven, but there is a way to send these to Lord Ying Wu Xie. Zombie Alliance was a subsidiary of Shadow Sect, before the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, because Old Ancestor Xue Hu had stolen immortal zombie bodies, Zombie Alliance had ordered the branches to create a super Gu formation to connect between the five regions. Even if someone attacks a branch, we can transport these immortal zombie bodies to other regions using the super Gu formation.”

“I thought this was just an excuse to plot against the immortal zombies, to think it was real?” Fang Yuan was slightly surprised.

Sixth Hair smiled bitterly: “This is true. Sacrificing Zombie Alliance to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu was not part of Shadow Sect’s original plan. During the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, we had no choice and did it. There were more benefits in keeping Zombie Alliance, if possible, we would not have sacrificed them.”

Fang Yuan nodded.

He thought about the five hundred years of his previous life. During that time, Zombie Alliance was still around in the five regions, even until the five regions chaotic war, and just before Fang Yuan’s rebirth, it still played a significant role in the affairs of the world.

But it was different now.

Zombie Alliance in all five regions was now an empty shell, most of the immortal zombies were used as immortal materials and were refined in the ten extreme immortal zombie lifeless formation.

Up until this point, the five regions were still in a commotion because of it.

After all, when Zombie Alliance was around, it controlled many resources.

These resources were now ownerless, many Gu Immortal experts and super forces were fighting for them, there were bloody scenes.

“It seems that in the five hundred years of my previous life, Shadow Sect indeed succeeded. Zombie Alliance’s continued existence proves this point. Heavenly Court attacked Lang Ya blessed land, resulting in Feng Jiu Ge’s death inside Lang Ya blessed land, this event is very suspicious. Shadow Sect had spies inside Heavenly Court, maybe Spectral Soul had revived and controlled Heavenly Court, turning it into his own force.”

Fang Yuan thought a little and felt that many things in his memories could have likely had a deeper story behind them.

“This world’s secrets are too deep. Legendary people have appeared continuously. Countless experts contest and plot against each other, they are like the countless stars shining in the sky. Even though I was considered an expert, compared to these people, I am not outstanding. Hehe... precisely because of this, it is more interesting, isn’t it? Hahaha.”

Fang Yuan thought about this and felt increasingly joyful.

On the surface, his lips curled up as he smiled lightly.

Sixth Hair could not understand it, he thought: “Why is he smiling? And why do I have a bad feeling...”

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, he looked at Sixth Hair with a shining gaze, his smile became more apparent: “Then, what can I get in exchange for my immortal materials?”

“Immortal Gu.” Sixth Hair answered, having a calm expression.

“Interesting, very interesting.” Fang Yuan clapped and smiled.

What Immortal Gu could Ying Wu Xie sell? It was obviously Fang Yuan’s own Immortal Gu.

Selling Fang Yuan’s Immortal Gu back to himself, Ying Wu Xie’s plan was really amazing.

But even Fang Yuan himself felt that Ying Wu Xie’s idea was quite good.

In this world, who would want these Immortal Gu more than Fang Yuan? Even if there were such people, they would be few in number.

And for other Gu Immortals, they were not used to these Immortal Gu, they needed to get familiar with them. But Fang Yuan was very familiar with them, he could use them well. These Immortal Gu had greater value to Fang Yuan than to others.

Furthermore, even if Immortal Gu were sold, they needed suitable Gu Immortals. For example, a strength path Immortal Gu would not be well utilized by Gu Immortals of other paths. Because of differences in paths, and conflict in dao marks, the effect would be reduced, it was not suitable for them. Unless they were using it as a supplementary Gu worm for an immortal killer move, but such situations were rare.

One could say, Fang Yuan was the best buyer. Not only did he have use for these Immortal Gu, most importantly — he could afford them!

As for how to send the Immortal Gu, Zombie Alliance’s super Gu formation was likely to be used.

Fang Yuan smiled: “How many of my Immortal Gu are left? Not only do I want to buy them, I also want Hei Lou Lan’s self strength Immortal Gu, and Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s Man as Before and Landscape as Before. I will include these three Immortal Gu into my request.”

Sixth Hair considered it for a while before nodding: “I can make the decision on this matter and agree to it.”

Ying Wu Xie had control over Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan, he could make them hand over their Immortal Gu. And the most important thing now was to escape from danger and get away. Other matters could be put aside.

Fang Yuan said again: “We will trade at the same time, bring your Immortal Gu, I will pay the immortal materials.”

At this time, Sixth Hair showed a difficult expression: “As a matter of fact, it will take some time for you to see the Immortal Gu. You are aware of the situation in the five regions. All the Zombie Alliance branches are being targeted, if Northern Plains’ Dark Flow Giant City did not sink into Earth Trench, it would have been ransacked already. The super Gu formation is placed in Dark Flow Giant City, it will take some time for me to get the Immortal Gu. But before this, I hope that you can provide some immortal materials first. Because these immortal materials are going to be used for Gu refinement, the faster we refine, the better. Over on Lord Ying Wu Xie’s end, we do not know how long they can last.”

Fang Yuan heard this and sneered internally: “Sixth Hair is speaking both truth and lies at once, earlier, he said Ying Wu Xie is in grave danger, now he is indicating that Ying Wu Xie can last for some time.”

On the surface, Fang Yuan’s expression turned stiff, he rejected: “No, impossible. If I pay immortal materials and you do not hand me the Immortal Gu, wouldn’t I be a fool?”

“Don’t worry about this. I have prepared an information path immortal killer move to restrict both sides, none of us can break it.” Sixth Hair had a sincere expression.

Fang Yuan laughed, he waved his hand: “Don’t talk to me about information path methods, I don’t believe it! Since you can subdue Hei Lou Lan, you must have removed her information path alliance agreement, right? I do not cultivate information path, would I be so foolish as to make an information path agreement with you?”

“This...” Sixth Hair hesitated.

He understood Fang Yuan’s thoughts, if it were him, he would not set an agreement with Shadow Sect either.

“How about this?” Sixth Hair quickly thought of a new idea: “I can use information to exchange for a portion of the immortal materials first, how about that? This information and these secrets have immense value to you. Fang Yuan, don’t you want to know what the limitations of heaven’s will are? Don’t you want our Shadow Sect’s precious experience in dealing with heaven’s will? And information about otherworldly demons, even information about Lang Ya blessed land, don’t you want them?”

Fang Yuan was deeply enticed.

Heaven’s will!

After understanding that heaven’s will was plotting against him, how could Fang Yuan ignore it? In this world, who else other than Shadow Sect had greater experience in dealing with heaven’s will?

If not for Shadow Sect taking the initiative to transact, Fang Yuan would still be left in the dark for a long period of time.

As for the matter of otherworldly demons, Fang Yuan was very curious. Why did he transmigrate here? Were other otherworldly demons were there? Did they come from the same place as him? Why could otherworldly demons change the past?

And information about Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya blessed land had existed for three hundred thousand years, what secrets were hidden inside? This was extremely important for Fang Yuan, who was getting Lang Ya land spirit’s help, and also his goal of obtaining Lang Ya blessed land.

Undeniably, all this information was extremely valuable, they were very helpful to Fang Yuan.

At this moment, the room was silent.

Neither side was talking.

Fang Yuan was deep in thought.

Sixth Hair waited for Fang Yuan to agree, he was very confident that Fang Yuan would definitely say yes. The allure of this information was too high, after all.

Of course, if not for this situation, Sixth Hair would not have wanted Fang Yuan to know these secrets.

Fang Yuan spoke, but instead asked a question: “I don’t understand something. Since there is a super Gu formation, why aren’t Ying Wu Xie and the rest using the super Gu formation to escape directly?”

Sixth Hair explained honestly: “The super Gu formation can only transport immortal materials. Immortal zombie bodies are considered immortal materials, but they cannot include the immortal aperture. It is too hard to transport Gu

Immortals across regions. There are some methods, but they are very rare. For example, Fixed Immortal Travel, but Immortal Gu are one of a kind. Stargate Gu is an exception, but it is too limited. And not everyone can enter immortal apertures”

Shadow Sect knew about stargate Gu. Fang Yuan had used it many times and even gave the Gu recipe to Lang Ya land spirit. It was not strange that Shadow Sect knew about it.

Be it Fixed Immortal Travel or stargate Gu, they had requirements towards the Gu Immortal being transported.

The Gu Immortal must have few dao marks in their body for transportation. Especially stargate Gu, it was only a mortal Gu, even though it used the power of black heaven, only rank six bottom tier Gu Immortals or those who had only gone through a few calamities could use it.

Of course, the things inside the Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture were in another world, they were not considered in this.

Thus, back then, Fang Yuan used his dead aperture to contain rank nine wisdom Gu, he could transport it using stargate Gu.

Using rank six bottom tier Gu Immortals or immortal zombies as the container to use Fixed Immortal Travel or stargate Gu for cross-regional transportation?

This was very possible.

But it could not be used widely.

There was only one Fixed Immortal Travel in the world, and stargate Gu was in the hands of few people. Furthermore, rank eight Gu Immortals and high rank immortal materials or Immortal Gu have too many dao marks, they are a huge burden to the immortal aperture. Living immortal apertures could burst, while dead immortal apertures would break apart even more quickly, they could not go through this many times.

Precisely because of this, Fang Yuan placed the high rank immortal materials into Hu Immortal blessed land or Star Form blessed land, these blessed lands that were placed in the outside world were very stable.

Rank eight Gu Immortals have their own unique methods to travel across regions.

It was through white heaven and black heaven. Earlier, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord had brought a group of people to Southern Border and thwarted Shadow Sect’s plan, they went there through white heaven.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1078: Transaction with Shadow Sect (3/3)

There had never been good methods to transport Gu Immortals across regions.

Because Gu Immortals had little need for this!

When Gu Master undergo immortal ascension, they would become Gu Immortals of their respective regions due to the heaven and earth qi. For example, they would be a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, or a Central Continent Gu Immortal.

Gu Immortals had a territorial mentality, Gu Immortals from other regions were usually ostracized. At the end of the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng were pursued by Southern Border Gu Immortals, this point was showed clearly. In this aspect, Eastern Sea was more open.

The territorial mentality was not the key, most importantly, once in a while, Gu Immortals had to place their immortal apertures in the outside world to draw in heaven and earth qi and stabilize it. At this time, the heaven and earth qi needed was very specific. If a Northern Plains Gu Immortal placed their immortal aperture in Central Continent and took in Central Continent’s heaven and earth qi, there would be huge problems.

The third reason was calamities and tribulations. Gu Immortals faced calamities and tribulations continuously, who would have the time to run around? What was the point of going to other regions? Unless they had important reasons, like clues to a huge inheritance, or maybe for investigation missions like Feng Jiu Ge.

There was one thing to note.

There was little demand for Gu Immortals to travel across regions, but Immortal Gu and immortal materials were not the same!

They had huge demand for them.

And these demands were mostly settled through treasure yellow heaven.

Due to all sorts of reasons, few people researched in regional transportation of Gu Immortals. In history, there were barely any results. Zombie Alliance’s super Gu formation was merely used to transport immortal materials.

Who would waste their time and effort to research on something useless?

Gu Immortals had huge pressure towards survival! Even though they were ‘immortals’, they could not live freely and peacefully. Managing their immortal apertures, raising Immortal Gu, and dealing with tribulations, these were enough for all Gu Immortals to slog their lives out.

Thus, since long ago, cross-regional transportation methods for Gu Immortals were very primitive, they were developed slowly. As a result, when the grand ten great ancient sects of Central Continent dispatched a team of Gu Immortals to go Northern Plains, they barged through two regional walls.

In four to five hundred years, there would no longer be a need to research on this. Because the five regional walls would start to disappear, the five regions will merge into one!

This was something for the future, forget about it for now.

In the hall, Fang Yuan let out a hearty laugh.

He had probed for so long, he finally had a clear understanding of this transaction.

“Fang Yuan, why are you laughing?” Sixth Hair’s ominous feeling was growing.

“Because I am happy. Even though the super Gu formation can only transport immortal materials, that is enough! Forget about information and whatnot. My first condition is my original body. Hand it to me.” Fang Yuan spoke quickly.

Sixth Hair’s expression changed.

He knew about wisdom Gu.

If Fang Yuan obtained his body, together with his soul, he could use the light of wisdom, and borrow the might of wisdom Gu once again.

What did that imply?

He would be like a tiger with wings, he would soar to the sky!

In the past, Fang Yuan had a flaw, he did not have lifespan Gu to feed wisdom Gu. But now, Lang Ya land spirit had a good number of lifespan Gu to feed it.

Fang Yuan knew about heaven’s will already, if he had wisdom Gu’s help, how could he be stopped? He would be like an eagle in the sky, or a flood dragon roaming the seas. Together with the sovereign immortal aperture...

“My goodness!” Sixth Hair cried out in his thoughts, these few elements alone were shocking, they were unprecedented! If they were combined together, he would gain unimaginable strength!

How would anyone else ever compete with him again?!

“That will not work.” Sixth Hair shook his head: “Without a body, how can Lord Ying Wu Xie escape from his predicament?”

“I have bodies.” Fang Yuan laughed: “I have many strength path immortal zombie bodies! We can trade one for one. You will not suffer a loss for sure, these immortal zombie bodies have more dao marks than my original body, you are definitely going to profit.”

“Profit my ass!” Sixth Hair scolded Fang Yuan’s shamelessness internally, his expression became ugly, he snickered at Fang Yuan: “Let’s not beat about the bush, why would I not know your intentions?”

“Oh... so you know about wisdom Gu.” Fang Yuan rubbed his chin.

“Immortal Gu and information can be sold, but body... no way!” Sixth Hair rejected with a firm reply.

But Fang Yuan’s mood changed even more quickly: “Then there’s nothing to say! Goodbye, see you!”

Fang Yuan stood up and waved his hand, chasing Sixth Hair away.

“...” Sixth Hair was stunned!

He was dazed in place, unmoving.

Seeing him like this, Fang Yuan snickered internally, with a flourish of his sleeves, he took his leave.

Sixth Hair jolted to awareness, he said: “Fang Yuan, wait!”

“You agreed?” Fang Yuan did not turn around, he only turned his head.

“Body cannot be sold, the rest can be negotiated.” Sixth Hair insisted.

Fang Yuan snorted, walking ahead and through the door, leaving Sixth Hair’s vision.

Sixth Hair quickly chased him: “We have to be willing parties in a transaction! Fang Yuan, why must you make it difficult for us, if we encounter trouble, you will soon follow.”

Fang Yuan stopped moving, but he did not turn around even now, he left the back of his head facing Sixth Hair, it was very rude.

Sixth Hair heard Fang Yuan’s words: “You are right. But so what if I follow? At most, I will die.”

Sixth Hair walked several steps and chased after Fang Yuan, urging: “Fang Yuan, why the need to say these things? Who would believe such lies? Will you be willing to die? With Shadow Sect around, how many enemies are we drawing away from you? Without us, how long can you last? You think you can deal with heaven’s will? Even my main body failed after a hundred thousand years of planning! With a common enemy ahead of us, why are you like this?”

“Noisy!” A sword wave appeared around Fang Yuan.

Rank seven Immortal Gu Wave Sword!

Sixth Hair was forced to retreat, he quickly said: “Careful, be careful! Don’t use Immortal Gu, it will ruin my arrangements. If Lang Ya land spirit finds out, we will both face the consequences.”

Fang Yuan snickered, he walked ahead as he said: “The body is my first condition, if this cannot be fulfilled, forget the rest! You have three days, go and have a good discussion with your Lord Ying Wu Xie.”

Sixth Hair stomped his feet: “Three days?! Fang Yuan, you know that Lord Ying Wu Xie is facing great danger, we have to fight for time.”

Fang Yuan walked away as his voice drifted over: “It is great that you realize this. Quickly agree to it, after the deal, you can use the immortal materials to refine Gu, and last an even longer time, right?”

Sixth Hair had a ruthless expression, he gritted his teeth as he pointed at Fang Yuan, killing intent surged: “Fang Yuan, don’t go overboard!”

“So what if I do? I will not be the first to die. I can live well inside Lang Ya blessed land for some time. But you guys? Without Ying Wu Xie, Spectral Soul’s main body will remain trapped in the giant dream realm, hehe, the great Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he is going to die before me. Hahaha!” Fang Yuan laughed, he walked through the door and vanished from Sixth Hair’s vision completely.

Sixth Hair stared with bloodshot eyes.

Fang Yuan’s shameless and thuggish attitude dealt a huge blow to him!

In less than half a day, Sixth Hair went to Fang Yuan again.

“Lord Ying Wu Xie agreed.” Sixth Hair stared at Fang Yuan, he wanted nothing more than to tear him to shreds.

A sharp light flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Sixth Hair agreed so quickly, on Ying Wu Xie’s end, the situation must really be terrible!

This was both good and bad.

Fang Yuan wanted to gain the most benefits from this trade, but he also wanted

Ying Wu Xie to draw away the enemies for him. It was most beneficial to Fang Yuan for Heavenly Court and Shadow Sect’s remnant forces to fight.

“We will trade the immortal zombie bodies first, one for one, before we continue with the others.” Fang Yuan said, adding: “If I find out that you tampered with the body, don’t blame me for what I will do. You know I am a person who has been reborn, I can use some future methods...”

“Impossible! We will do the transactions all at once!” Sixth Hair was not easy to fool.

But Fang Yuan was a tougher nut to crack.

A little later, Sixth Hair lost, he raised three fingers, gritting his teeth: “Fine, we will first trade the immortal zombie bodies. But there are only two deals after that. We will conclude this trade in three sessions!”

Three days later in Lang Ya blessed land, the two made their transaction.

“Okay, next will be Immortal Gu. I want all of my Immortal Gu, along with Self Strength, Man as Before, and Landscape as Before.” Fang Yuan said.

Sixth Hair had a curious expression: “So many Immortal Gu, do you have enough immortal materials?”

Fang Yuan laughed: “Of course.”

A few minutes later.

“This is what you mean by ‘of course’? You casually changed the quantity to be traded by yourself?! These immortal materials are not enough to buy even thirty percent of the Immortal Gu!!” Sixth Hair screamed furiously.

“We can continue to negotiate the deal. What do you mean by changing it myself? I did not casually do it, I am very sincere!” Fang Yuan smiled lightly.

“Your mother is sincere!” Sixth Hair cursed.

Fang Yuan’s expression stiffened: “This means you do not want to deal?” Saying this, his sleeves billowed as he turned around.

Sixth Hair was beyond furious: “Threatening to leave? The same trick again?!”

“I don’t care, I am not the first to die anyway.” Fang Yuan shrugged, latching on Sixth Hair’s weakness.

Sixth Hair’s expression froze, he felt like he had fallen into an icy river.

He felt really foolish, why did he expose his own weakness?

But, with Fang Yuan’s shrewdness, even if he said nothing, he would sense it.

The second transaction was a long tug-of-war.

Fang Yuan’s price was way too low, Shadow Sect was not going to take it.

In a few days, they went through dozens of difficult negotiations, until both sides came to an agreement.

Fang Yuan relented a bit, but he still earned the most from this.

Sixth Hair had a downcast expression, his straight back had hunched already.

“Thankfully, there is only one last deal left...”

The third transaction.

“What?! We agreed on three transactions, why do you want to extend it to ten?!”

“Fang Yuan, you shameless bastard, you fiend with no bottom line!”

“Can’t you see the big picture at all? Die, let’s just all die together.”

Sixth Hair screamed, his throat went sore, blood was flowing out of his nose due to anger.

But Fang Yuan only said one thing, reflecting all of these statements: “I am not the first to die anyway. Once Ying Wu Xie dies, Spectral Soul’s main body is going to follow. After all, the dream realm is huge, the consumption of the soul is extremely rapid as well...”

“Extremely rapid as well...”

“Extremely rapid...”

“Extremely...”

Fang Yuan’s voice was floating around in Sixth Hair’s head.

Next, he fainted on the spot.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1079: Regaining His Body and Spring Autumn

A dark and deep pool of soul water undulated with countless ripples.

Ying Wu Xie opened his eyes wide, the ghost fire in his eyes burning bright as he observed the surface of the soul water.

He was viewing a scene that outsiders would not be able to observe.

Sixth Hair’s figure appeared in the soul water, he was half-kneeling on the ground and had an expression of remorse and guilt: “Lord, I made a huge mistake! When Fang Yuan was facing the tribulation, if I had not used...”

“I have already said that this matter is not your fault. Speaking of which, it is also because I used my trump card to increase my luck, which allowed Fang Yuan to take advantage of it.” Ying Wu Xie’s voice directly transmitted to Gu Immortal Sixth Hair’s mind.

This was the method of communication between Sixth Hair and Ying Wu Xie, it was a soul path method but with the effect of information path, and was extremely powerful.

Both sides were in Central Continent and Northern Plains, separated by two regional walls, moreover there was Lang Ya blessed land as well. Not only were they able to communicate in real time, they were also able to evade Lang Ya land spirit’s senses.

Right now, Ying Wu Xie no longer had Fang Yuan’s appearance.

He had already changed to another strength path immortal zombie’s body.

But this vessel, because it was too old, its immortal aperture had already broken apart and what Ying Wu Xie obtained was only the physical body. Unlike Fang Yuan’s zombie body, which had a mortal aperture as well as an immortal aperture.

As such, it was very inconvenient for Ying Wu Xie to use Gu worms. Whether it be Immortal Gu or mortal Gu, they could only live in parts of his body like on his skin, hair, blood, bones, and so on, not only would this leak their aura and make it easier for enemies to inspect, it was also not safe. When the physical body gets struck by an attack, the Gu worms could also very well meet with a terrible fate.

Gu worms were very fragile.

Ying Wu Xie could be said to have suffered a huge loss from this transaction with Fang Yuan, but his expression was tranquil.

He instead encouraged Sixth Hair: “You did this task very well. You constantly expressed weakness to Fang Yuan during the whole transaction process, good job. Especially the fainting at the end... without your efforts, I wouldn’t have obtained the immortal materials I needed.”

Sixth Hair sighed: “I intentionally fainted to probe Fang Yuan, but unfortunately he did not do anything to me.”

“Since he knows our background, he is naturally extremely cautious. Moreover, we have already done transactions multiple times now, both sides have gotten a handle on the other, he has to be wary against us reporting about him to Lang Ya land spirit.” Ying Wu Xie replied.

He had been in an absolute plight just now, and had thought about every possible way, before finding there was no way left other than Fang Yuan.

Before transacting with Fang Yuan, he had already made sufficient mental preparations.

The immortal material list he gave to Fang Yuan had exaggerated contents with huge numbers, hiding the immortal materials he truly wanted within them.

In short, he had achieved his goal.

He was able to fight for a ray of hope in this desperate situation.

As long as he passed this hurdle, his future prospects would be extremely promising!

“Not mentioning the other Immortal Gu, but the main thing is that Fang Yuan not only obtained his physical body, he now has Spring Autumn Cicada as well! His current foundation is extremely huge!” Sixth Hair was still worried.

Ying Wu Xie snorted: “Even if Fang Yuan gets back his physical body, does he dare to use it? Spring Autumn Cicada is not a problem, it was already sealed and is going to starve to death soon. Even if Fang Yuan can resolve this problem, Spring Autumn Cicada itself has a failure rate when activating, it still has heaven’s will hiding inside it, it will be a long time before he will be able to use it. Moreover, the attention of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals will also be attracted to him.”

Sixth Hair’s expression shook, the visible worry lessening by a lot.

He repeatedly nodded his head: “Lord, you are correct.”

Ying Wu Xie heaved a long sigh: “You will still have to continue to watch Fang Yuan. You are already exposed, but Fang Yuan won’t make a move against you. It is okay if we are not able to suppress him. He has obtained so many Immortal Gu just now, they will certainly be a large burden to him. Moreover, the calamities and tribulations will divert even more of his energy. Let him develop, wait until I gather strength and save our main body, then we shall settle the score with him!”

One could learn from experience, after having experienced so much, Ying Wu Xie was rapidly maturing.

He understood what he could give up, and more importantly, learned to patiently endure.

He was, after all, one of the split souls of Spectral Soul, and had the natural skill to become a powerful expert.

Suffering and setbacks were of value in life, and he was rapidly growing up because of them.

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

Some time had already passed since the transactions with Ying Wu Xie.

Fang Yuan gazed at the immortal zombie body in front of him, and sighed.

“I don’t dare to use it...” Fang Yuan rubbed his chin, feeling troubled.

After he had regained his immortal zombie body, although he had used almost all the means available to him at present to conduct many careful inspections, he did not find any issues.

But what origin did Ying Wu Xie have? What origin did Shadow Sect have?

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

He was the progenitor of soul path, a Gu Venerable, a person who had once ruled over the world and all living beings!

Would his split soul, Ying Wu Xie, have some kind of soul path method to create a sinister trap within this body?

It was very possible!

Fang Yuan’s transaction with Ying Wu Xie had not been under any information path restriction from the beginning to the end.

Because neither side trusted the other.

Moreover, Fang Yuan’s information path methods were definitely inferior to Ying Wu Xie’s. If he used an information path method to restrict himself, it was very possible the other party would secretly break it, and this would make it even more unfavorable to Fang Yuan!

Thus, he was completely unable to guarantee the safety of this body.

Fang Yuan wanted this immortal zombie body back mainly to obtain the acknowledgement of wisdom Gu and use the light of wisdom. So he needed to put his soul into this immortal zombie vessel.

This was very dangerous.

Shadow Sect was most proficient in matters regarding the soul.

Fang Yuan did not discover any issues, perhaps Ying Wu Xie had not tampered with it, but the more likely possibility was that there was a huge issue with this immortal zombie body, only that Fang Yuan did not have the ability to discover it.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was the founder of soul path, Fang Yuan trying to decipher soul path methods was like an amateur performing in front of an expert.

“Looks like I still need to inspect this body for a while. I can’t be careless, any slight carelessness and I might fall into a scheme of Shadow Sect.” Fang Yuan warned himself.

Only when he was a hundred percent sure of safety would Fang Yuan use this body.

Or perhaps when there were no other options, he might choose to take the risk.

“Although I can’t use wisdom Gu, regaining my body and Spring Autumn Cicada is already a great success.”

Spring Autumn Cicada had all along been Fang Yuan’s greatest trump card.

Now that Fang Yuan had gotten his body back, Spring Autumn Cicada, which remained in the first aperture as the vital Gu, was naturally also back.

In the previous negotiations, when Fang Yuan mentioned for Spring Autumn Cicada to be returned, he was met with strong denial from Sixth Hair.

He refused to admit Ying Wu Xie had Spring Autumn Cicada.

Because neither side was restricted by information path methods, Fang Yuan would not be able to tell apart truth or lies. There were no consequences for lying.

However, Fang Yuan was even more unreasonable, directly saying: “That is impossible! If you truly did not have, then you people would have refined it. In any case, I don’t care about others, but you must return my Spring Autumn Cicada!”

Fang Yuan had no bottom line and his stance was extremely resolute.

Even though Sixth Hair said that he would swear on his life, shouting loudly as he vowed, Fang Yuan’s attitude was unchanged.

After wasting a good amount of time, Fang Yuan regained his body and Spring Autumn Cicada.

However, Spring Autumn Cicada had an issue.

It was sealed by Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals using some strange methods, it was already cut off from the River of Time and was currently in a starving state.

Moreover, Fang Yuan also knew Spring Autumn Cicada had heaven’s will in it, this was his biggest threat!

The immortal zombie body and Spring Autumn Cicada, both had dangers lurking within them and could not be used.

But even so, Fang Yuan was happy.

Even if I can’t use them, as long as they are in my possession, it is a huge victory!

Especially when Spring Autumn Cicada was a huge trump card!

After regaining Spring Autumn Cicada and the immortal zombie body, Fang Yuan demanded Fixed Immortal Travel in the second transaction.

But where would Sixth Hair get it from?

No matter how forceful Fang Yuan was, it was no use. Moreover, he could also guess Fixed Immortal Travel might truly have been destroyed. If they had Fixed Immortal Travel, they would have already used Fixed Immortal Travel to make an escape, why would they come to be extorted by him?

A more crucial matter was that Fang Yuan and Sixth Hair had already completed a transaction.

With the transaction, it meant betraying Lang Ya Sect.

Sixth Hair had a hold over Fang Yuan, land spirits were single-minded and obstinate, if he discovered this, no matter how Fang Yuan tried to explain, it would probably be of no use.

So Fang Yuan finally gave up on Fixed Immortal Travel.

Although he could not obtain Fixed Immortal Travel, Fang Yuan obtained a large number of Immortal Gu in this transaction.

A large number!

Among them were Hei Lou Lan’s strength qi Immortal Gu, self strength Immortal Gu and flying bear strength Immortal Gu, as well as Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s Landscape as Before and Man as Before. Among Fang Yuan’s own, there was pulling mountain Immortal Gu, pulling water Immortal Gu, star eyes Immortal Gu, and calamity beckoning Immortal Gu.

Iron crown eagle strength Immortal Gu and connect luck Immortal Gu had already been placed in treasure yellow heaven by Ying Wu Xie, and since treasure yellow heaven was closed, these two Immortal Gu were also trapped within it.

Eat Strength, Cleanse Soul, Fixed Immortal Travel, Star Shoot, Star Mark and Starlight had all self-detonated under Fang Yuan’s special will, and Ying Wu Xie had not been able to save them.

Naturally, this information could be false as well.

Fang Yuan and Sixth Hair were not bound by information path methods. The bottom lines of both sides had to be probed out by themselves. Maybe Ying Wu Xie had secretly withheld some Immortal Gu, but Fang Yuan had already done everything he could and had no way to make Ying Wu Xie spit them out.

After all, every time Fang Yuan transacted, he would be betraying Lang Ya Sect once more, and his tough stance would weaken by some degree. While Shadow Sect had obtained a portion of the immortal materials and their weak stance gradually strengthened by some degree.

Of course, Fang Yuan had the firm upper hand from start to finish. After all, Ying Wu Xie was the one in a bad situation.

But Fang Yuan also did not want Ying Wu Xie to die so quickly.

If he died, as long as he left behind some clues to Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan would soon be met with disaster.

It was a much better situation with Ying Wu Xie attracting the enemies ahead of him. Heavenly Court and Shadow Sect could mutually weaken each other, while Fang Yuan observed from the sidelines.

Fang Yuan was aware that since he had stolen sovereign immortal fetus Gu, Shadow Sect would absolutely try to kill him. But this was also a reason for Shadow Sect to secretly protect him.

Ma Hong Yun’s example was right in front of him. Fang Yuan knew he was Ma Hong Yun from Shadow Sect’s point of view, Shadow Sect definitely wanted to re-refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu. It was just that the situation currently did not permit them to do this.

Since Ying Wu Xie had looked for Fang Yuan to do transactions, it meant he was truly at a dead end. Fang Yuan had to leave him some hope.

If Fang Yuan truly forced him until he gave up and went to drag both of them down, Fang Yuan would also be implicated and might even die.

In fact, what Sixth Hair said at the beginning had been effective.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1080: Flying Bear Transformation

Several days later, Lang Ya blessed land.

Two figures were cutting through the air, before they suddenly stopped.

“This land is a desolate area, it is suitable for our spar.” The figure ahead observed the surroundings, and spoke leisurely.

“Brother Fang is right.” The figure behind was a hairy man Gu Immortal named Twelfth Hair, he spoke brightly and with a grin on his face.

Compared to the other hairy man Gu Immortals in Lang Ya Sect, Twelfth Hair was somewhat special.

Because he not only cultivated refinement path, but also cultivated enslavement path. He was a dual cultivator of refinement and enslavement path.

It was not an easy thing for Gu Immortals to cultivate two paths, because almost all Gu Immortals only had one immortal aperture. When they underwent immortal ascension, the Gu worm they used for breaking open their aperture into an immortal aperture would be what decided their main cultivation path. The dao marks added on from passing tribulations would mostly be of their main path as well.

However, in this world, there were many Gu Immortals that cultivated two paths as well, they were mostly rank six and rank seven. Cultivating one path primarily, while cultivating another path as a secondary path.

Such Gu Immortals often had fortuitous encounters, obtaining Immortal Gu that were suitable for cultivating two paths. For instance, Fang Yuan’s eat strength Immortal Gu could increase his strength path dao marks. If Gu Immortals of other paths obtained it, they could also dual cultivate strength path.

Twelfth Hair was not an exception.

In his early years, because of an unexpected surprise when refining Gu, he obtained a completely new Gu embryo from the failed refinement. After his immortal ascension, he raised this Gu to rank six and named it Immortal Slave. This Gu could add enslavement path dao marks to his body.

This made him rather special among all the hairy man Gu Immortals.

The previous Lang Ya land spirit had taken great care of him. Although enslavement path did not have much of a relation to refinement path, Lang Ya land spirit encouraged Twelfth Hair to continue cultivating both paths, because the enslavement path dao marks in Twelfth Hair could provide huge help when refining enslavement path Immortal Gu.

The current Lang Ya land spirit regarded Twelfth Hair with even more respect. But what he prioritized was the aspect of battle strength. Twelfth Hair cultivated enslavement path, this was an excellent foundation. Lang Ya land spirit even gave beast enslavement Immortal Gu to him, intending to nurture him as their enslavement path battle strength!

Every emperor had his own favorites, but Twelfth Hair was even more well-liked and was the favorite of the current Lang Ya land spirit.

Fang Yuan had not been very sure on the details about these hairy men. But in the secret transactions with Ying Wu Xie, he obtained much intel about Lang Ya blessed land.

The intel could not be said to be very precious, but they were of extremely huge help to Fang Yuan, letting him have a comprehensive understanding of Lang Ya Sect.

Fang Yuan and Twelfth Hair both descended to the ground.

Cloud Cover Continent’s ground was made from cloud soil, it was white and slightly soft. It was very different from the sensation of an ordinary muddy surface.

“Twelfth brother, please.” Fang Yuan gestured with his hand.

“Haha, Brother Fang, I won’t stand on ceremony then! Chestnut yak, come out!” Twelfth Hair laughed loudly, he somersaulted and while landing on the ground, he hit the ground with his palms.

He looked like he was horsing around, before suddenly performed a kneeling ceremony towards Fang Yuan.

Gu Immortals paid attention to their bearing, this kind of humiliating action was absolutely avoided by human Gu Immortals. But these hairy man Gu Immortals were different, they had gone through the previous Lang Ya land spirit’s nurturing, each of them were very straightforward with very shallow battle strength!

Over these last days, Fang Yuan was already used to the unusual.

Twelfth Hair knelt towards Fang Yuan, his excited expression suddenly stiffened.

“Ah.” He raised his head, looking at Fang Yuan, “How embarrassing, I failed.”

“No problem.” Fang Yuan warmly smiled: “It is an immortal killer move, failure in activation is an unavoidable matter, try again.”

“Yes, yes!” Twelfth Hair repeatedly nodded his head, somersaulting once again towards the back and with a slam, his knees and hands touched the ground simultaneously.

...

Silence.

After being at a standstill for several breaths of time, Twelfth Hair stuck his tongue out, licking his lips: “Damn, I failed again. Let me try again!”

Swoosh!

A somersault.

Slam.

Kneeling towards Fang Yuan.

...

Another few seconds of standstill, but there was still silence.

“Let me try again! I don’t believe it.” Twelfth Hair shouted in determination.

Swoosh!

A somersault.

Slam.

Kneeling towards Fang Yuan.

...

Another few seconds of standstill, but there was still silence.

“I’m sorry, I’m sorry, wait a while.” Twelfth Hair said to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan warmly smiled: “It is understandable, understandable.”

Twelfth Hair gratefully nodded his head as he made an attempt again.

Swoosh!

A somersault.

Slam.

Kneeling towards Fang Yuan.

...

Another few seconds of standstill, but there was still silence.

This continued for a dozen or so times without any success. Fang Yuan had not even made any move, but Twelfth Hair had already spurted out several mouthfuls of blood, moreover blood was seeping out of his ears as well, his face getting paler and paler.

Failure in activating an immortal killer move would cause backlash to the Gu Immortal.

Even Fang Yuan also could not bear to see this continue, and could not resist reminding: “From my observation, twelfth brother, your somersaulting has almost no use towards the immortal killer move, might as well try discarding it.”

“Somersaulting?” Twelfth Hair scratched his head and said, innocently, “This is my meticulously designed movement. Don’t you feel somersaulting will make me look imposing and cool?”

Fang Yuan’s face almost was distorted to the point of lines appearing, as he thought: “Your movement of kneeling towards your enemy is indeed ‘imposing’.”

But Twelfth Hair was also an obedient person who knew to correct his mistake: “Since Brother Fang thinks it is inappropriate, then I will change it.”

After that, Twelfth Hair no longer somersaulted.

Instead, slam, he directly knelt towards Fang Yuan.

It was a standstill, several breaths later, he stood up, puffing out a mouthful of blood, refusing to give in, he said: “Let me try again.”

Several tries later, an azure blue radiance suddenly blossomed from Twelfth Hair’s hands.

The radiance quickly enlarged, and actually formed a blue lake on the ground.

The lake water surged and a cattle shaped desolate beast rode the giant wave, charging towards Fang Yuan.

Rumble!

The blue lake water washed to the shore, the giant yak stepped on the ground and grunted towards the sky.

Whoosh—!

A formless sound wave squeezed out the air and actually stirred up a vortex.

This giant yak was bluish black with a large head and thick lips. A pair of bull horns spaced quite far apart pierced towards the sky.

It had a wide chest and a large stomach, but it gradually became slim towards the rear. The whole body looked huge at the front and small at the back.

The lower side of its body and its four legs were covered with thick hair that were drooping down to the ground. Its tail was thick and large like a brown broom.

There was no doubt of the might of this giant yak, and it also had a superb debut, brimming with a tyrannical aura, forming a completely stark comparison with Twelfth Hair’s performance.

However....

Fang Yuan did not care.

Chestnut yak... this giant yak might be a desolate beast, but it was well-known for its low battle strength. The impressions of many Gu Immortals towards it were of the unique flavor of its meat, it could be eaten raw and tasted like chestnuts. This was the reason for its name.

But the chestnut yak's battle strength was naturally not the weakest among desolate beasts.

The publicly recognized weakest desolate beast were desolate beast dragonfish, which Fang Yuan was breeding.

“It finally activated.” Twelfth Hair was jubilant, and shouted as he pointed at Fang Yuan, “Chestnut yak, charge!”

Snort!

The chestnut yak grunted towards the sky once again, but did not move.

Twelfth Hair's face flushed with embarrassment, and seeming holding back his anger, he commanded again: “Charge, charge, charge, you foolish yak!”

The chestnut yak only then started to rush forward.

It was already at a very short distance away from Fang Yuan, and reached Fang Yuan within a few steps.

Strong winds surged forward.

The chestnut yak was enormous, and as it rushed, it was like four carriages stacked together, it had quite an imposing aura.

Fang Yuan chuckled.

Inside his immortal aperture, change form Immortal Gu flew up.

Following it, all kinds of supplementary mortal Gu flew up and revolved around change form Immortal Gu.

Transformation path immortal killer move — Flying Bear Transformation!

Bright radiance suddenly erupted.

An intense light forced Twelfth Hair to close his eyes.

Twelfth Hair quickly activated his investigative Gu, a layer of transparent crystal covered his eyes and he was able to open his eyes again.

The light had yet to dissipate, but Twelfth Hair was able to see the scene clearly.

Bam.

The chestnut yak seemed to have collided into a giant beast.

This giant beast was even larger than it.

The chestnut yak's collision showed no results.

At this time, the light dissipated, and revealed the true appearance of the giant beast.

This was a giant white bear, its physique was burly and bulky, and its body was covered in short and densely packed white fur. It had sharp claws, and its short tail was curled up like a white pompom, appearing somewhat cute.

This was a transformation of Fang Yuan, into a desolate beast flying bear.

When the chestnut yak saw this flying bear, its eyes immediately popped open as its imposing aura vanished like a flickering candle, it gave a miserable cry before actually turning around and running away.

Twelfth Hair yelled furiously at this: “You cowardly yak, you are also a desolate beast, damn it, go back.”

He activated his enslavement path method and was only able to regain his control over the chestnut yak after it had ran a large distance. The yak once again charged towards the flying bear.

The chestnut yak was herbivorous and had a docile nature. This chestnut yak had been raised by the previous Lang Ya land spirit in order to use its meat as Gu refinement immortal material.

Because of Shadow Sect’s sudden attack, Lang Ya blessed land’s other desolate beasts all died. So Twelfth Hair could only use this chestnut yak to practice his skills.

Fang Yuan quietly stood on the spot and only when the yak had reached in front of him, did he exert strength in his limbs and erupt.

Whoosh!

The flying bear’s enormous physique did not implicate its speed in the least, as it easily dodged to the side.

The chestnut yak brushed past the flying bear.

The flying bear roared and suddenly turned around, leaping towards the sky.

As it descended, the flying bear stretched out its right paw and slammed at the back of the chestnut yak.

Bam.

There was a strong collision, white cloud soil flew all around.

The chestnut yak was heavily injured and was actually slammed to the ground by one smack from the flying bear.

A huge crater formed on the level ground.

The chestnut yak was defeated in the blink of an eye, lying on the crater without moving, its eyes revealed its terror and its whole body was trembling.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1081: Fang Yuan Contributes a Plan

The chestnut yak was slammed down by Fang Yuan's own paw, and did not dare to climb back up again.

No matter what methods Twelfth Hair used, he was unable to make this chestnut yak climb back up and fight again.

"The desolate beast is weak, the Gu Immortal is also useless." Fang Yuan shook his head internally, and dispelled his immortal killer move.

In moments, the giant flying bear turned into a ball of light.

From within the ball, Fang Yuan's figure slowly walked out and descended to the ground.

"I lost once again. Brother Fang is truly amazing!" Twelfth Hair tried for a long time but seeing no success, he could only cup his fists towards Fang Yuan, admitting defeat.

He and Fang Yuan had sparred several times already.

At first, after he lost, he did not admit defeat and remained obstinate. But after several times, he was already less affected, loss became normal and victory instead was the anomaly.

"Twelfth brother, you should practice your immortal killer move more frequently. And this chestnut yak is weak and timid, it is better if you change to another desolate beast as soon as possible." Fang Yuan advised.

Twelfth Hair repeatedly nodded his head and sighed: "This is all because treasure yellow heaven is closed! When it opens, I will immediately buy a desolate beast for combat. This yak already has none of its wild nature left, I already thought of throwing it away. But I need to bear the cost of buying a desolate beast myself, this is the rule created after the sect was established. Sigh, my beast enslavement Immortal Gu is also not mine, I still need to pay to use it. Enough talking, I need to hurry back to refine Gu and sell them to earn immortal essence stones."

"See you." Fang Yuan nodded.

Twelfth Hair took back the chestnut yak and hurriedly left.

"Good, I have obtained twenty sect contribution points again." Fang Yuan gazed at the receding figure of Twelfth Hair, his mind rippling with some joy.

Over these last few days, he had not only been sparring with Twelfth Hair, he also had similar contact with other hairy man Gu Immortals.

Although the secret transactions between Fang Yuan and Sixth Hair had already finished, Sixth Hair repeatedly visiting Fang Yuan's cloud city during the process was a small flaw.

Although Fang Yuan had joined Lang Ya Sect and become an external supreme elder, there had always been a barrier between him and the hairy man Gu Immortals.

After all, the human race was powerful currently while hairy men were a type of variant human which suffered persecution from humans.

Fang Yuan might be on their side, but the hairy man Gu Immortals kept away from him. Why would Sixth Hair suddenly pay visits to Fang Yuan on his own initiative? This would certainly incite doubts.

To fix this flaw, after the transaction, Sixth Hair subtly revealed to the other hairy man Gu Immortals that he looked for Fang Yuan in order to raise his battle strength. Because the previous sudden invasion by Shadow Sect, along with the tribulations just now, had made him feel his battle strength was truly lacking, so he looked for the human Gu Immortal, Fang Yuan, to ask for advice.

To increase the trustworthiness of his words, Sixth Hair sparred with the other hairy man Gu Immortals and defeated them.

Sixth Hair was a spy, one of the split souls of Spectral Soul. He had deep combat proficiency and just using a little bit of it was enough for him to easily defeat them all.

This event caused a commotion in the small circle of hairy man Gu Immortals, even Lang Ya land spirit heard about it and affirmed Sixth Hair’s actions in front of everyone. He even encouraged other hairy man Gu Immortals to ask for guidance from Fang Yuan. After all, the extremely low battle strength of the hairy man Gu Immortals had all along been a worry for Lang Ya land spirit.

After Sixth Hair, other hairy man Gu Immortals went to Fang Yuan for guidance. With just a little thinking, Fang Yuan realized Sixth Hair’s intention and enthusiastically welcomed the other hairy man Gu Immortals.

Because this was a profitable thing with no harm to Fang Yuan.

First of all, he would be relying on Lang Ya Sect for a long period of time to cultivate more conveniently and be safer when undergoing tribulations. So having a good relationship with these hairy man Gu Immortals was a must.

Second, like Sixth Hair’s considerations, Fang Yuan had to cooperate as well to make up for the flaw created because of the transactions.

Lastly, Fang Yuan needed sect contribution points.

From now on, if he wanted Lang Ya land spirit’s help to borrow the strength of Lang Ya Sect, he could not always negotiate deals with Lang Ya land spirit.

Previously, he could make deals with Lang Ya land spirit because the land spirit had taken a fancy upon his Luo Po Valley, Dang Hun Mountain and wisdom Gu.

But from now on, to make Lang Ya Sect help him, the main thing would be to use sect contribution points.

This was Lang Ya Sect’s rule. Even Lang Ya land spirit took the initiative to comply to it.

Lang Ya land spirit had already issued sect missions, the types of missions were mainly about guiding hairy man Gu Immortals to raise their battle strength.

Lang Ya land spirit himself was not suitable for these missions, and Fang Yuan was the only suitable candidate.

In these last few days, Fang Yuan guided many hairy man Gu Immortals and the response was extremely enthusiastic.

Even when the hairy man Gu Immortals who came later did not receive good training, they did not blame Fang Yuan and instead found reasons caused by themselves.

On one hand, Sixth Hair set an example, on the other, Fang Yuan knew about the information of these hairy men, and used his exquisite communicative skills to enthusiastically get along with them, making these hairy man Gu Immortals have a huge change in their impression of Fang Yuan.

As for why Fang Yuan knew about the information of these hairy man Gu Immortals, that was because he had obtained a lot of intel about Lang Ya blessed land from his transactions with Shadow Sect.

Fang Yuan calculated: “With this, my sect contribution points amount to over one hundred and forty. This is quite lucrative.”

Every time he gave guidance would provide Fang Yuan twenty sect contribution points.

Previously, when Fang Yuan had lent Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley and other resources, he had only earned about three hundred contribution points.

“These one hundred and forty sect contribution points are enough to exchange for some flowing light fruits.” With such thoughts, Fang Yuan moved towards the first cloud city.

In first cloud city, he saw Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit sized up Fang Yuan and praised: “As worthy of change form Immortal Gu! This hairy man Gu Immortal you have transformed into has almost no flaws, unless I use investigative Immortal Gu.”

When Fang Yuan was arriving, he suddenly had a brilliant idea, and used change form Immortal Gu to transform into a hairy man Gu Immortal.

His aim was clear, it was to get into to Lang Ya land spirit’s good books.

Lang Ya land spirit held the ideology of hairy men rulership, and when he saw this appearance of Fang Yuan, he smiled happily and started praising change form Immortal Gu. In fact, he found his opinion of Fang Yuan rising.

Fang Yuan, however, sighed and spoke with a bitter tone: “This transformation is still not complete, although I have change form Immortal Gu, I lack everlasting Immortal Gu. If I had everlasting Immortal Gu, I could completely transform into a hairy man and truly become a member of Lang Ya Sect! Lord first supreme elder, you might not know, but after these days of being in contact with other hairy man Gu Immortals, I am deeply moved. Human Gu Immortals are crafty and on guard against each other. But hairy men are forthright and sincere, united, warm and cordial, this is a true home. I already can’t bear to part with this place.”

Lang Ya land spirit laughed heartily and repeatedly patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder: “Fang Yuan, having such an awareness is good, very good!”

If he knew Fang Yuan had transacted with Shadow Sect just some days ago and did not report the spy, he would flay Fang Yuan, this insidious fellow, alive!

But what a pity, Lang Ya land spirit did not know any of it.

“I have seen your actions over these last days. You have guided these children and raised their battle strength by a lot, especially Sixth Hair’s! Good, good. These last days, I have heard a lot of good things about you from other hairy man Gu Immortals. Ah, what matter did you come for this time?” Lang Ya land spirit asked.

“I wanted to use some sect contribution points to exchange for some flowing light fruits.” Fang Yuan replied.

“That’s a small matter! As long as your contributions are enough, exchanging for flowing light fruits is no problem.” Lang Ya land spirit waved his hand and said frankly.

Fang Yuan pretended to hesitate: “I have a very slight opinion regarding Lang Ya Sect’s development. I don’t know if I should say it or not?”

“Tell me about it, I’m listening.” Lang Ya land spirit squinted his eyes and smiled.

Fang Yuan spoke: “Over these last days of sparring with many hairy man Gu Immortals, I made some findings. Their battle strength needs to be raised urgently, but how to raise them is the problem. Because all of them primarily cultivate refinement path, and although refinement path also has offensive methods, it is inferior to the offensive prowess of other paths.”

Lang Ya land spirit nodded, Fang Yuan’s words hit his core problems, he could not help but sigh: “This is precisely what I am worried about.”

Fang Yuan continued: “Actually, there is a good way to increase battle strength, that is transformation path.”

“Transformation path?”

“Right.” Fang Yuan slowed down, before continuing: “Among all the Gu cultivation paths, to speak of the one that can increase battle strength the fastest, that would be blood path. But blood path is extremely dangerous and is too threatening to others! Its reputation is vile and it is hated by everyone. Moreover, if one’s blood path cultivation is even slightly high, their name will be added to Heavenly Court’s Demon Judgment Board, and that would expose us. So, blood path won’t do.”

“You are right!” Lang Ya land spirit approved.

Actually, he was also apprehensive towards blood path. If hairy man Gu Immortals cultivated blood path, he was worried if it would lead to internal strife and conflicts in Lang Ya Sect.

Fang Yuan spoke with assurance: “Besides blood path, the path that can increase battle strength the fastest is transformation path. The threshold for transformation path is very low, its immortal killer moves also don’t require any planning, any kind of transformation is an immortal killer move. Normal immortal killer moves require at least a few years of trial and error, right?”

“And in Lang Ya Sect, there are large numbers of Immortal Gu recipes which includes many transformation path Immortal Gu recipes. We have many Immortal Gu recipes but few immortal killer moves. If hairy man Gu Immortals cultivate refinement path primarily and transformation path as the secondary path, they can take advantage of the strengths and avoid the weaknesses.”

“The hairy man Gu Immortals are not hardened, to raise their battle strength would not be a day’s work. If they transformed into desolate beasts, their bodies would become tougher, even if they make some mistakes in battles, it won’t be much of a problem, they can fight back. It won’t be like other paths such as fire path and water path, the body is extremely weak and without defensive methods, they would be in extreme danger in the battlefield.”

“Transformation path Immortal Gu recipes are easy to deduce and their immortal materials are easy to obtain, thus the Immortal Gu are easy to refine as well.”

“Hairy man Gu Immortals can transform into desolate beasts to fight, and it can also be a way to disguise their hairy man identities. Although Lang Ya Sect has deep foundations, the five regions are still ruled by humans. As long as we can do so, we should give as little chance to expose ourselves as possible.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1082: Quality over Quantity?

Lang Ya land spirit could only keep on nodding at Fang Yuan’s well-founded words.

“Reasonable, reasonable!” He praised.

“I am flattered. This is only my shallow opinion.” Fang Yuan spoke modestly.

Land spirits were straightforward, Lang Ya land spirit did not understand Fang Yuan’s modesty, retorting with a shake of his head: “No, this is not just a shallow opinion, it is a true insight. Your words have inspired me greatly, they are a huge contribution towards Lang Ya Sect.”

“According to Lang Ya Sect’s rules, just this contribution could have raised your status by one level. For instance, Sixth Hair could promote to Fifth Hair. But you are not a true hairy man Gu Immortal right now, so you can only receive two hundred sect contribution points.”

At the end, Lang Ya land spirit looked at Fang Yuan and sighed in regret.

Fang Yuan also showed an extremely regrettable expression on his face.

He was only an external elder at present and did not need to complete any missions, and every month, he would get ten sect contribution points. However, other hairy man Gu Immortals were genuine members, and their monthly earnings were much higher. Moreover, the higher the hairy man Gu Immortal’s ranking, the more sect contribution points they would receive each month.

“How I wish to become a true hairy man!” Fang Yuan lamented, showing a genuine and sincere expression on his face, as if he truly wanted that.

Lang Ya land spirit spoke: “It is a pity that treasure yellow heaven is closed at the moment, once it opens, I will start a large scale purchase of the desolate beasts.”

“I have a slight opinion about this.” Fang Yuan quickly spoke, “There are many hairy man Gu Immortals, and to nurture them, no matter how great our sect’s assets are, we won’t be able to bear such expenses. Moreover, this is not the way to run a business. I suggest we develop our own resources.”

“Oh? How do you propose we do that?” Lang Ya land spirit asked.

Fang Yuan replied: “Simple, like other super forces, we occupy the resources in the five regions.”

Lang Ya land spirit showed a reluctant expression.

He had already thought of this before and also carefully pondered its advantages and disadvantages, before considering it an undesirable choice.

The reason was evident, hairy men were variant humans, and could not be out in the open in the current age.

Although there were variant human forces in Northern Plains, one clear example being Inkman City, this Inkman City only had one inkman Gu Immortal publicly. And in history, Inkman City’s founder, Immortal Yi Yan, had paid a heavy price to reach an agreement with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. These two factors allowed Inkman City to barely be able to survive amidst the countless powerful human forces.

If Lang Ya Sect’s force appeared in the open, with so many hairy man Gu Immortals, it would definitely provoke human Gu Immortals, encroaching upon their bottom line.

Whether it be righteous path, demonic path or lone immortal forces, they would not easily allow the existence of such a powerful outside force.

Lang Ya land spirit might be straightforward, but he was not foolish. He wholeheartedly wanted to make hairy men rule the world, but he was still very aware of the current situation.

However, Fang Yuan had already expected this reaction from Lang Ya land spirit, as he continued: “First supreme elder, I am not suggesting for Lang Ya Sect to openly fight with human forces for the outside world’s resources. We will instead focus on occupying the resources they have not occupied, and secretly develop.”

Realization dawned upon Lang Ya land spirit: “You are referring to those dangerous forbidden areas?”

Northern Plains was vast and broad, but the large and super forces had already split the cultivation resources found within it. What remained mainly were the ten great fierce areas.

“First supreme elder is wise!” Fang Yuan immediately gave a thumbs up in admiring fashion: “The ten great fierce areas are dangerous, but at the same time, they contain plentiful opportunities. In my opinion, Earth Trench is a good place. We can set up a teleportation Gu formation, letting the hairy man Gu Immortals freely go back and forth the blessed land and Earth Trench. There are countless desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts in Earth Trench, they are perfect for the hairy man Gu Immortals to train their combat abilities. Moreover, by killing these desolate beasts, we can use their body parts to refine transformation path Immortal Gu. If we capture these desolate beasts, we can also use beast enslavement Immortal Gu to enslave them and make them aid us, increasing the defense of the blessed land.”

One of the crucial components for this was a teleportation Gu formation.

Accurately speaking, a Gu formation that could transport Gu Immortals.

Lang Ya Sect undoubtedly possessed such a method.

Because when Fang Yuan was previously hurrying back from Southern Border, he used the teleportation Gu formation at Feng Bo Cliff to get rid of those troublesome cloud beasts and return to Lang Ya blessed land.

That teleportation Gu formation had left a deep impression on Fang Yuan.

Lang Ya land spirit sank into contemplation: “This matter is too significant, I need to consider it properly.”

“I am only suggesting, the significant matters in the sect still need to be decided by you, first supreme elder. If my suggestion is flawed, I hope you can be lenient.”

Fang Yuan was deeply aware that pushing too much could be detrimental, he changed the topic to the flowing light fruits he wanted to obtain.

After a while, he left with a large number of flowing light fruits.

Parting with the land spirit, he returned to his own cloud city and immediately started arranging these flowing light fruits.

Flowing light fruits were not ordinary fruits.

They were formed from pure bundles of light, if ordinary people were to try to touch them, they would just pass through their hands. Special methods were needed to collect these fruits.

These fruits did not grow on plants or trees like ordinary fruits either, instead they were a pure materialization of dense aurora lights.

Aurora lights were of many colors, so the same went for flowing light fruits, having all kinds of color like red, brown, yellow, green, black, blue, purple, etc.

Flowing light fruits were the food of attitude Gu.

The reason Fang Yuan exchanged for flowing light fruits was because of this.

Ever since the transactions, the Immortal Gu Fang Yuan possessed had suddenly increased to a terrifying number.

Counting his current collection.

Rank nine Immortal Gu: wisdom Gu.

Rank eight Immortal Gu: attitude Gu, wisdom sword Gu.

Rank seven Immortal Gu: Change Soul, Sword Eyebrows, Wave Sword, Sword Escape, Calamity Beckoning.

Rank six Immortal Gu: Unravel Mystery, Woman’s Heart, Blood Asset, Dark Limit, Dog Shit Luck, Change Form, Strength Qi, Self Strength, Flying Bear Strength, Pulling Mountain, Pulling Water, Landscape as Before, Man as Before, Star Eyes.

Among them, to refine Bo Qing’s sword path Gu worms, Fang Yuan had left Woman’s Heart in Hu Immortal blessed land before the battle of Yi Tian Mountain. He had used the light of wisdom to construct a Gu formation, in which Unravel Mystery and Woman’s Heart were two components. But Unravel Mystery was brought away by Fang Yuan after it had been activated at the start. Woman’s Heart, however, needed to remain in the Gu formation, until Bo Qing’s sword path Immortal Gu were successfully refined, before it could be taken out.

Because of this, after the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, when Fang Yuan used Lang Ya Sect to completely move away the resources in the two blessed lands, Woman’s Heart was also taken by Lang Ya blessed land before finally returning to Fang Yuan’s hands.

Connect luck Gu and iron crown eagle strength Gu, which originally belonged to Fang Yuan, were placed in treasure yellow heaven by Ying Wu Xie, so Fang Yuan was not able to obtain them during the transactions. After finishing the transactions, it was even more impossible for him to get them back.

Among the star path Gu worms, only star eyes Immortal Gu returned to Fang Yuan’s possession, while it was a mystery whether the other Immortal Gu like Star

Shoot, Star Mark, Starlight and Star Thought were in Ying Wu Xie’s hands, he did not know if they still existed or not.

In the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, when Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage broke down, many of its Gu worms were destroyed, but there were still some Gu worms remaining which had been left behind in the immortal zombie body’s immortal aperture. Fang Yuan was not too familiar with those Gu worms and he did not even remember their appearances (the loss of memories), and also did know how many of them were withheld by Ying Wu Xie.

It was not that Fang Yuan did not want to take these Gu worms back, but before he could even talk about it, Ying Wu Xie had already concluded the transaction.

Normally speaking, there was a rule for Immortal Gu, quality over quantity.

Forget about mortal Gu, even for a large number of mortal Gu, Gu Immortals could raise them.

Immortal Gu were the key factor in measuring a Gu Immortal’s strength.

Very few Gu Immortals raised as many Immortal Gu as Fang Yuan currently possessed.

Even many rank eight Gu Immortals did not have as many as Fang Yuan.

This was not in the least bit exaggerated.

It was enough for most Gu Immortals to have two or three Immortal Gu. Naturally, these Immortal Gu were suited for their ranks.

One Immortal Gu, when matched with large numbers of different combinations of mortal Gu, could result in different immortal killer moves and produce different effects which covered offense, defense, movement, healing and other aspects.

But just one Immortal Gu was not enough.

Because with just one Immortal Gu, the Gu Immortal could only activate one immortal killer move at one time. If they used a defensive killer move, they would not have offensive methods, or they would lose their movement advantage, and could only be in a passive situation. If they used offense, then they would not have defensive method, which could cause the Gu Immortal’s situation to be very dangerous.

But with two Immortal Gu, both could be simultaneously used to cover all aspects.

Having more than three Immortal Gu would become a burden, generally, they could not be nurtured properly and used.

After all, activating Immortal Gu required immortal essence.

There were few examples where someone used higher rank Immortal Gu like Fang Yuan using rank seven Immortal Gu. It was because he was a special case and his experiences were different from the vast majority of Gu Immortals.

Gu Immortals were very selective in choosing Immortal Gu.

They were selective not in terms of quantity, but they focused on and limited the range of types of Immortal Gu.

A fire path Gu Immortal would perform best with fire path Immortal Gu, using water path or ice path would simply be looking for trouble. Even if they had

Immortal Gu of other paths, they could at most be used as supplementary Gu worms for immortal killer moves.

The quality of Immortal Gu was valued, not their number, this was common sense in the cultivation world, almost all Gu Immortals knew of it.

To Fang Yuan, however, this was not applicable.

Because he had the nine-five sovereign immortal aperture.

He had no worries about not having enough space in his immortal aperture. The rate of time was also fast, allowing the resources inside to grow extremely quickly.

These were all part of his potential.

Fang Yuan was already aware he had the potential to bear the burden of supporting large numbers of Immortal Gu!

Since he had this potential, he naturally would excavate as much of it as possible.

The second reason was that Fang Yuan was earning a lot daily, his current financial condition was extremely good.

His sovereign immortal aperture produced ninety-six beads of immortal essence every year. This one year was in relation to the time in the immortal aperture. In terms of the time in the outside world, his aperture would produce sixteen beads of immortal essence every day.

This number was already a lot, even those of the ten extreme physiques could not compare to it. When factoring in Fang Yuan’s monthly income, this number was simply a drop in the bucket.

This meant Fang Yuan had the capital to provide for these Immortal Gu.

There was also Lang Ya Sect, which could be relied upon to a certain degree.

These three reasons added up to make Fang Yuan determined in raising large numbers of Immortal Gu to raise his battle strength.

There was no other way, whether it was facing heaven’s will or the calamities and tribulations, Fang Yuan needed to ensure his strength was high.

A Gu Immortal’s battle strength mostly came from their Immortal Gu and immortal killer moves.

Currently, Fang Yuan had few immortal killer moves, and he could not use wisdom Gu either, deducing more would require too much time, so he could only place his efforts in the aspect of Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan was naturally aware of Ying Wu Xie’s scheme, it was to increase Fang Yuan’s burden by giving him these Immortal Gu, and letting him have no time and energy to influence Shadow Sect’s movements.

However, Fang Yuan needed large numbers of Immortal Gu to keep up his battle strength.

He also had the potential and the capital to raise these Immortal Gu.

This was completely different from when he was an immortal zombie.

The nine-five sovereign immortal aperture was the most crucial reason!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1083: Feeding Immortal Gu

Most of Fang Yuan’s attention was on his immortal aperture.

Large numbers of light path mortal Gu flew around before carrying flowing light fruits towards the sky.

Piercing through layers and layers of ‘heavens’, after a long period of flying, these flowing light fruits finally reached the highest layer.

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture was divided into five regions and nine heavens.

After considering it, Fang Yuan stored all the flowing light fruits in the highest layer.

“Although there are quite a few space path dao marks, I cannot imitate land spirits and directly use space path dao marks to teleport. After all, there is a huge difference between a Gu Immortal and land spirit. Land spirits are special existences formed from heavenly power merged with the Gu Immortal’s obsession.”

“The sovereign immortal aperture is extremely vast, it seems I will have to arrange a transportation Gu formation inside to facilitate the ease of transferring resources, and to adjust the structure and the layout of the various resources.”

Fang Yuan’s thought process was quite scattered.

Right now, all the flowing light fruits had entered the highest layer of the aperture.

The Gu worms Fang Yuan had mobilized brought the flowing light fruits to a specific location.

Poof poof poof...

In the next moment, soft explosions went off endlessly.

The flowing light fruits self-detonated one after the other.

Each flowing light fruit was not big, but after self-detonation, they rapidly formed into aurora lights that filled the sky, shining with all kinds of colors, forming a beautiful sight.

The essence of these flowing light fruits was condensed aurora light.

The reason Fang Yuan gathered these flowing light fruits was to feed attitude Gu, but why was he detonating these flowing light fruits?

It was because although the quantity of these flowing light fruits was not small, it was far from enough to fill attitude Gu.

Attitude Gu was a rank eight Immortal Gu, although its duration between feeding times was extremely long, every feeding session required an enormous amount of flowing light fruits.

This was normal when feeding Gu worms.

Normally, the higher the rank of the Gu worms, the more food they required, but the interval between each feeding session would increase greatly as well.

Gu worms altogether had nine ranks, rank eight was only below rank nine, the amount of food attitude Gu required was naturally an enormous number.

So Fang Yuan obtained these flowing light fruits in order to produce more fruits from them.

He detonated eighty percent of these fruits. He let the remaining twenty percent of the fruits float to the sky, nourishing them in the vast aurora lights.

As for the light path mortal Gu which carried the fruits, Fang Yuan retrieved and stored them.

“My sect contribution points were originally not many, but who could have thought that after giving a suggestion, Lang Ya land spirit himself increased my sect contribution points. And I was able to exchange for a satisfying number of these flowing light fruits.”

“Next, I need to bring in large numbers of a mortal Gu, dazzling light Gu, to let these aurora lights grow.”

Dazzling light Gu could erupt with red aurora lights, to maintain their survival, Fang Yuan would need to add in their food here, which was scorching swan stones.

However, neither of these were available in Lang Ya Sect’s treasury, Fang Yuan needed to wait until treasure yellow heaven reopened to put this plan into action.

“Moreover, dazzling light Gu is only the simplest method to produce aurora lights, it is not very effective.”

“There are Gu Immortals in treasure yellow heaven who sells flowing light fruits. I remember that among them are Visitor Can Xia, Qing Hui Zi and Fairy Cai Xia. Maybe I can ask for guidance from them, paying an amount to purchase their insights. But whether this succeeds or not, it will depend on their decision.”

There was still quite a long time before attitude Gu starved.

Fang Yuan was planning for the future by doing this.

After all, attitude Gu’s appetite was too huge, making prior preparations wouldn’t be the least harmful.

Right now, Fang Yuan’s situation was still rather leisurely.

Although he had gained a lot of Immortal Gu, it was not the time to feed most of them.

And the first earthly calamity had been passed not long ago, there was still ample time before the second calamity.

Fang Yuan now intended to focus on managing his immortal aperture as his main priority.

"I have already prepared for attitude Gu's feeding. But attitude Gu is not mine, there is Hei Lou Lan's will inside it. Right now, I know that Hei Lou Lan has betrayed the agreement and sided with Ying Wu Xie; so some of the information path restrictions on me should have been broken as well."

"That means I can now refine this attitude Gu to make it my own!"

Attitude Gu was the greatest harvest Fang Yuan made recently.

Even Fang Yuan, when he borrowed Gu from Hei Lou Lan back then, had not thought there would be a day attitude Gu would fall into his hands.

But refining attitude Gu was not a simple matter.

Because attitude Gu was not a wild Immortal Gu, moreover it was rank eight while Fang Yuan was merely a rank six Gu Immortal.

For him to forcibly refine a rank eight Immortal Gu of another person was not only incomparably difficult, it could also destroy attitude Gu if he did not handle it properly.

"But I have a method which can help me refine Immortal Gu of others. That Gu formation which I thought of before, I will just name it wisdom refinement formation for now."

Fang Yuan casually chose a name.

He was not concerned about these minor details, which was why he only named the Gu formation now.

Previously, he had robbed many sword path Immortal Gu from immortal zombie Bo Qing, and to refine them, he used the light of wisdom and star thoughts to deduce the wisdom refinement formation.

The wisdom refinement formation was constructed by using the light of wisdom, with Woman's Heart and Unravel Mystery as the cores and large numbers of supplementary mortal Gu.

Change Soul, Sword Eyebrows, Flying Sword, Sword Escape, Wave Sword and rank eight Wisdom Sword were all refined by Fang Yuan with the help of the wisdom refinement formation.

But the issue right now was that wisdom Gu did not acknowledge Fang Yuan, which meant he could not use light of wisdom, so how would he arrange the wisdom refinement formation?

To bring about the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan's soul had to be in his original body, only then could he obtain wisdom Gu's acknowledgement.

So this issue came down to the previous point, that was Fang Yuan's immortal zombie body.

The plan of refining attitude Gu and making it completely his was set aside for the moment.

Fang Yuan's next plan was to feed wisdom sword Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu was like attitude Gu, it was similarly a rank eight Immortal Gu. It was classified under sword path and also under wisdom path.

Wisdom sword cuts the threads of love!

In the past, Sword Immortal Bo Qing used this Immortal Gu to cut the wisdom path dao marks left by love Gu on his body, getting rid of the restrictions and regaining his freedom. He even used this to incite Spirit Affinity House’s Fairy Mo Yao to rebel, using her for his own purposes.

This wisdom sword Immortal Gu could be said to be an amazing method which helped Bo Qing to turn the tides of his situation!

Right now, wisdom sword Immortal Gu was already refined by Fang Yuan.

But it was rather difficult for Fang Yuan to use it currently.

It was already very hard for Fang Yuan to use rank seven Immortal Gu. Using green grape immortal essence to activate wisdom sword Immortal Gu, if compared to a situation on Earth, might be like trying to run an aircraft carrier with two double A batteries.

Wisdom sword Immortal Gu was a genuine rank eight Immortal Gu, and needed rank eight immortal essence to activate.

One could see how outstanding attitude Gu was from this point.

Although it was also a rank eight Immortal Gu, attitude Gu could be activated using mental energy and be freely used by even rank six Gu Immortals. It was worthy of being a legendary Immortal Gu recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>!

“Wisdom sword Immortal Gu feeds on multicolored overlord flowers.”

“This flower is extremely huge, each mature multicolored overlord flower can cover an enormous surrounding range. For the flower to mature, it requires large amounts of illumination, intense sweet scents as well as pearl soil.”

This difficulty was very high, many times higher than flowing light fruits.

Flowing light fruits were only a rank six immortal material, while multicolored overlord flowers were rank seven.

If Fang Yuan wanted to plant multicolored overlord flowers on a large scale, he needed to fulfill three conditions. Illumination, sweet scents and pearl soil.

First, illumination was quite difficult.

Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture had about a hundred or so light path dao marks, so it was filled with some light and was not dim like his immortal zombie body’s dead aperture.

But this light was certainly not enough to fulfill the demands of multicolored overlord flowers.

Unless he used the aurora lights of flowing light fruits.

But if he did that, his plans for flowing light fruits would be completely ruined. Light would be used up, it was consumable, especially since those aurora lights did not have any source right now.

The most basic solution was to increase the number of light path dao marks in the immortal aperture.

Light path Gu Immortals with deep foundation and accumulation often had limitless illumination in their immortal aperture.

But for Fang Yuan to achieve this in a short period, apart from having the earthly calamity be a light path calamity, he would have to kill light path Gu Immortal and absorb their dao marks.

The former was up to heaven’s will, it could not be relied upon, while the latter was dangerous and also not reliable. Battles were hazardous and terrifying. Back then, Fang Yuan was able to kill Qi Zai because the latter had underestimated him, chasing him all the way, Fang Yuan had also used the special terrain of the Five Regional Mountain Range and used familiar face before he killed Qi Zai, obtaining the corpse and the soul.

The first condition, illumination, was the most difficult to resolve. There were many ways to obtain the other two, sweet scents and pearl soil. Pearl soil, especially, was sold on a large scale in treasure yellow heaven and was also not expensive.

Of course, Lang Ya blessed land did not have them.

The aforementioned plans were only those for feeding attitude Gu and wisdom sword Gu, and they already took up much of Fang Yuan’s time and energy.

Fortunately, rank nine wisdom Gu’s feeding was already taken care of by Lang Ya land spirit.

Wisdom Gu’s food was lifespan Gu.

Fang Yuan did not even dare to think about it.

Even he would want to take its food.

“The feeding plans for attitude Gu and wisdom sword Gu have already been arranged. Next would be the rank sevens, Change Soul, Sword Eyebrows, Wave Sword, Sword Escape and Calamity Beckoning.”

Fang Yuan had already fed calamity beckoning Gu with the black blood of the six headed snake.

The six headed snake was a desolate beast with six heads. Fang Yuan had once bought the snake’s corpse in treasure yellow heaven, but now for his long term plan, he intended to move over several six headed snakes into his immortal aperture to breed them.

As for the other rank seven Immortal Gu, their feeding plans required Fang Yuan to carefully arrange them.

Naturally, Fang Yuan did not forget Chu Du still had his rank seven flying sword Immortal Gu.

Its feeding issue was handed over to Chu Du.

In any case, Chu Du coveted Fang Yuan’s tribulation technique, how could he let flying sword Immortal Gu starve?

In this aspect, Chu Du could be considered to be helping out Fang Yuan and decreasing his burden.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1084: Manipulating Mortals, Plotting Against the Land Spirit

In Lang Ya blessed land, the capital of Black Hair Kingdom.

There was hubbub of voices, a nationwide competition was reaching its end.

On the arena, the final two Gu Masters were in an intense battle, chasing for the final throne of victory.

Almost all the observing hairy men were supporting one side.

Because the other side was Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

He was a human Gu Master, so he naturally would not receive the support of the hairy men.

Even the Black Hair King observing from the raised platform was frowning. He did not want to see the final winner of the first national martial contest to be a human Gu Master. Would this not make his kingdom the laughing stock of the other two kingdoms? It would even seem like the Black Hair Kingdom's talents were declining to let a human Gu Master easily obtain victory.

If Fang Zheng won, it would no doubt seriously infringe on Black Hair Kingdom's political interests. So the Black Hair King had already planned beforehand and tampered with this battle.

“It has finally activated.” Black Hair King suddenly felt joyous as his eyes flashed with bright lights.

On the arena, Fang Zheng suddenly felt dizzy and almost fell down to the ground.

“What's happening?!” Fang Zheng paled in fright and subconsciously pushed his hands.

Rumble... surging waves rose up out of thin air and charged towards his opponent.

Fang Zheng's opponent was a rank five fire path hairy man Gu Master.

Fang Zheng's sudden powerful attack gave this hairy man a scare, he immediately jumped to the air to avoid the wave.

Under his hairy feet were two lantern-like flames, which could let him float for some time.

But because of this, he lost the best opportunity to attack Fang Zheng.

Fang Zheng was slowly recovering but still felt extreme dizziness, his condition was quite bad, but he had experienced many setbacks and tempering, so right now, he had already restrained his expression, not showing anything wrong on the outside.

The wave appeared quickly and dissipated just as quickly, the hairy man Gu Master also hurriedly descended.

He was not a flying master, standing in the air would make him a good target.

Just now, he was forced to dodge the water wave with no alternative option. Right now, he was immediately making up for it.

The two sides confronted again.

“Fang Zheng, you have been schemed against by someone. I do not know when, but someone secretly planted a Gu worm in your soul.” Fang Yuan’s will revealed the truth to Fang Zheng.

“How could it be?” Fang Zheng was shocked and furious.

Fang Yuan’s will sighed: “This soul path Gu worm has a faint connection with that Black Hair King sitting on the platform. It seems he is the one who schemed against you.”

“Damn it! Damn it!” Fang Zheng clenched his fists, finally showing a furious and hatred filled expression.

“What happened?” Fang Zheng’s opponent was observing his expression and suddenly seeing his expression change, he thought Fang Zheng was preparing a powerful move and was immediately on complete guard.

Fang Yuan’s will sneered: “Now do you believe me? I already told you Black Hair Kingdom’s higher ups won’t let you win so easily. This martial contest has all along been a tool for those in power, although they advocate fairness on the surface, those that truly expect it to be fair are fools.”

“You are right!” Fang Zheng gritted his teeth, his eyes opened wide as if fire would burst out, “But I want victory even more now!”

“Heh, this enthusiasm... you are still so young, my foolish brother.” Fang Yuan’s will was very aware of Fang Zheng unwillingness to give in, thinking of this secretly.

Actually, the best response would be to intentionally lose to the opponent and end at second.

With that, Fang Zheng would not have to overwork himself and Black Hair Kingdom’s higher ups would also be happy to accept the result. Such an outcome would not only show Black Hair Kingdom’s talents to be outstanding, it would also show the King’s generosity of promoting talents no matter their origins, even accepting a human Gu Master.

However, Fang Zheng wanted to get the first position, not only was it making it hard for himself, he was also turning other hairy men hostile to him.

First or second, what’s the difference?

Just momentary victory or defeat, it would not be a turning point of one’s life, was it really so important?

But Fang Yuan’s will was happy to see this.

Fang Zheng was deeply prejudiced against him, only by using constant pressure from external force could Fang Zheng work together with him and be subtly influenced.

And the current choice made by Fang Zheng would result in an enormous obstruction, which was greatly beneficial for Fang Yuan’s training plan.

So, Fang Yuan’s will decided to do all he could to bring about Fang Zheng’s wish.

He spoke: “I am only a will, you can only think about how to get rid of this soul path Gu worm after the battle. Right now, your soul is injured and so you cannot use River Swallowing Toad anymore. After all, commanding River Swallowing

Toad to battle uses up an enormous amount of your mental energy. Although you have lost this trump card, you still have hope to win. Just listen to my instructions now!”

Fang Zheng let out a muffled snort, although he did not feel good about it, with the current situation as it was, he could only give tacit consent to the words of Fang Yuan’s will.

Fang Zheng himself might not be aware of it.

But after these days of interaction, he had indeed begun to change.

Just as Fang Yuan went out of Luo Po Valley, his will returned to him.

After careful inspection, finding no issues with it, Fang Yuan let this will enter his mind.

In his mind, countless thoughts surged like tidal waves and surrounded this will, closely interacting with each other.

In just an instant, Fang Yuan learned of Fang Zheng’s recent developments.

“Oh? Under my will’s instructions, he defeated his opponent and obtained first?”

“Doing pretty well, I see.”

“But with this, he has caused the entire Black Hair Kingdom to lose face. Haha, interesting. Winning the competition, but losing even more, your coming days will not be so comfortable, my little brother.”

“But this is very helpful to my reeducation plan, isn’t it?”

“Moreover, I still have an arrangement left in Steel Thread City which is currently being prepared.”

Fang Yuan condensed another will of his, its size was several times larger than the returned will.

Reeducating Fang Zheng would need the will to think, which would cause it to be consumed continuously and require replenishment from Fang Yuan frequently.

Right away, Fang Yuan pointed forward with a finger, several rank five Gu worms flew out and guarded this enormous will as they flew down to Black Hair Continent.

When they arrived just above Black Hair Continent, this will further divided into two parts.

One part flew towards Black Hair Kingdom’s capital, while the other portion flew to Steel Thread City.

Steel Thread City’s City Lord was that female hairy man who favored Fang Zheng. Fang Yuan’s will quietly seeped into her mind.

It was easy for a Gu Immortal to plot against a Gu Master.

The female city lord was currently processing some documents, strictly managing the affairs of the city. She did not have even the slightest awareness of Fang Yuan’s will, and also did not sense her lower abdomen had slightly swollen.

“My hidden card has been placed.” In the sky, in Cloud Cover Continent, Fang Yuan chuckled as he withdrew his gaze.

This feeling of controlling the fate of mortals was indeed quite the symbol of being an immortal.

The fundamental cause of it was that the strength of Gu Immortals far surpassed mortals.

“Changing Fang Zheng’s perspective has already shown slight success, moreover it is progressing smoothly. But I have yet to deduce blood deity Immortal Gu’s recipe.”

“The problem is still wisdom Gu.”

Right now, some days had already gone by since Fang Yuan stored flowing light fruits in his immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan was increasingly feeling the disadvantage of not being able to use the light of wisdom.

However, the issue in his immortal zombie body was still in the process of being resolved.

Fang Yuan pondered, his soul path attainment was far inferior to Shadow Sect’s, but he still thought of a way — he could increase his soul foundation!

This was coping with the changes by sticking to the fundamental principle.

If he cultivated his soul to the terrifying level of Spectral Soul, any soul path traps in his body would be of no use.

Naturally, for Fang Yuan to cultivate to Spectral Soul’s level was extremely far-off into the future. But Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body had only gone through Ying Wu Xie’s hands, who was only a split soul that was far inferior to the main body.

Thus, for the last few days, Fang Yuan was not only managing his immortal aperture and guiding hairy man Gu Immortals, earning large numbers of sect contribution points, he also made time to enter Luo Po Valley every day to temper his soul, afterwards, he would use guts Gu to heal and strengthen the soul.

Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley were indeed the two sacred lands of soul cultivation proclaimed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Not even ten days had passed and Fang Yuan’s soul foundation had already become quite deep.

However, Fang Yuan was still not confident at the moment to test out the trap that might be in his immortal zombie body.

Another day went by, Fang Yuan came out of Luo Po Valley, and saw an information path Gu worm flying towards him.

Fang Yuan read it briefly, Lang Ya land spirit had called for him to discuss important matters.

Fang Yuan was immediately joyous, thinking to himself that it was finally here. Actually, he had also been secretly waiting for Lang Ya land spirit’s response.

He immediately set out and not long later, he arrived at the first cloud city with the appearance of a hairy man.

Lang Ya land spirit greeted: “You’ve arrived, come sit over here.”

Fang Yuan had just sat down when Lang Ya land spirit spoke again: “I considered your suggestion for some days, and I feel it is quite reasonable. But choosing Earth Trench is not very appropriate. You might not be aware, but currently Earth Trench is in a mess, much more activity there than in the past. Many Northern Plains Gu Immortals of righteous path, demonic path or even lone cultivators are hanging out there.”

Fang Yuan revealed a slightly surprised expression, and deliberately asked while knowing the reason clearly: “What is the reason?”

“Because of the battle on Yi Tian Mountain, each region’s Zombie Alliance has now become an empty shell. Northern Plains Zombie Alliance also disappeared without a trace, inciting many doubts and probes. Zombie Alliance’s members seem to have almost all died, the probing Gu Immortals became more audacious seeing no response. Not only have they already encroached upon Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s cultivation resources, they have also invaded Earth Trench. That is where the final territory of Zombie Alliance is. According to the rumors, a righteous path wisdom path Gu Immortal deduced that Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s headquarters, Dark Flow Giant City, had sunken into Earth Trench and disappeared.” Lang Ya land spirit replied.

“So it was like that.” Fang Yuan showed a look of realization, “Since that is the case, Earth Trench is now a dangerous territory, it seems my previous suggestion cannot be implemented.”

While saying this, Fang Yuan inwardly thought: “It seems that although Shadow Sect intentionally sacrificed Zombie Alliance, they had also left behind some defensive measures. Like Dark Flow Giant City sinking into Earth Trench. With Shadow Sect’s methods, since they could make Dark Flow Giant City sink into Earth Trench, it is probably hidden very well. It will be very difficult for the Northern Plains Gu Immortals to find it, their efforts might even be in vain.”

Lang Ya land spirit continued: “Earth Trench’s situation is too complicated, we cannot meddle in it. But your suggestion is still good, I have decided to adopt it. At present, the location I have decided upon is also one of the ten great fierce areas, this one.”

Saying this, Lang Ya land spirit pointed at a part on the map.

Fang Yuan’s sight followed Lang Ya land spirit’s hairy finger to the bottom right part of Northern Plains.

To the southeast of a super force, Guan tribe, and north-west of another, Liu tribe.

Fang Yuan’s expression had no change, as he inwardly rejoiced: “This is it.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1085: Trip to Tai Qiu

The location pointed out by Lang Ya land spirit was Tai Qiu!

Fang Yuan’s true target was also Tai Qiu.

But it was not good for him to say it immediately, he could only beat about the bush, leading Lang Ya land spirit to ‘comprehend’ the answer himself.

Tai Qiu was one of the ten great fierce areas of Northern Plains.

A type of giant grass grew here. This grass was extremely large and sturdy, one stalk of grass could compare to a normal tree of a hundred years in age.

This giant grass grew everywhere in Tai Qiu.

The huge swathes of grass formed into a large primitive jungle.

Inside the jungle lived large numbers of desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts, and one could even see vague indications of immemorial desolate beasts.

So even Gu Immortals did not dare to intrude. Even those rank eight Gu Immortals had to be careful, a slight slip-up and the disturbance could create a beast tide here.

Dong Fang Chang Fan had set up his inheritance here for his possession revival plan. Later, Fang Yuan and the rest had also fought an intense battle at Tai Qiu.

“This place... you should be familiar, right?” Lang Ya land spirit smiled at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan said: “It is indeed somewhat familiar because of Dong Fang Chang Fan’s matter.” Saying this, he glanced at Lang Ya land spirit, the latter clearly knew of this history.

“I intend to set up a teleportation Gu formation here at Tai Qiu. What do you think?” Lang Ya land spirit asked.

Fang Yuan spoke with hesitation: “To speak the truth, I don’t suggest setting up a Gu formation in Tai Qiu. It is because I am slightly familiar with it that I feel we cannot do it. This is a hornet’s nest, just a slight commotion can lead to a beast tide. And this beast tide won’t be a simple mortal beast tide, it will comprise desolate beasts and even ancient desolate beast. There is even a possibility of attracting immemorial desolate beasts.”

“I had fought here before. But that was because Dong Fang Chang Fan had set a battle stage using an immemorial ruin bat’s corpse. The immemorial desolate beast’s aura deterred other desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts. It was because of this that there was no beast tide. But when the tribulations struck and the immemorial desolate beast’s aura was eliminated, that immemorial ruin bat’s corpse was immediately split up and devoured by countless desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts. We can see how terrifying Tai Qiu is from this.”

“If we were to set up a teleportation Gu formation in Tai Qiu, and set it around the periphery, we might be able to travel back and forth, but our sect’s Gu Immortals will also be easily sensed by other forces. While if we set the teleportation Gu formation inside the inner regions of Tai Qiu, once a battle goes awry, the Gu Immortals would not be able to escape. Even if we choose an optimal location that considers these, once the battle’s scale enlarges slightly, it will lead to a beast tide which could then be sensed by humans.”

“It is because of these reasons that super forces don’t want to touch Tai Qiu. Our sect needs to worry about much more than them. This area is not a good choice.”

Fang Yuan analyzed the pros and cons of the plan, speaking with a loyal expression as if he wanted to convince Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit laughed heartily.

While laughing, he patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder.

He laughed for a good while before speaking: “Fang Yuan, you are right. But you can be assured, tell me, what is this?”

Lang Ya land spirit looked like he was offering a treasure as he handed an information path Gu worm to Fang Yuan.

After Fang Yuan inspected it, he pretended to have a shocked and joyous expression, stammering: “Thi... thi... this! This is actually such a detailed map of Tai Qiu. This is truly a godsend at the most crucial moment, ah, no, our sect’s foundation is actually that deep. If I had not seen this personally, I might not have believed it!”

“Hehehe, good kid, has your vision expanded?” Lang Ya land spirit laughed brightly, as he jumped and waved his hands.

“Amazing, amazing!” Fang Yuan gave a thumbs up, expressing in a sincere way.

Lang Ya land spirit excitedly explained: “In the past, to acquire immortal materials from Tai Qiu, my main body made repeated trips there, and after combining his experiences with others’ deductions, he got this Tai Qiu map!”

“So it was like that.” Fang Yuan looked like he was enlightened.

In truth, he was already aware of it.

This intel was a small part of what he obtained from the transactions with Shadow Sect.

This Tai Qiu map allowed Fang Yuan to plan and intentionally mention Earth Trench, while he was in fact luring Lang Ya land spirit’s attention to this place.

Lang Ya land spirit pointed at the information path Gu worm in Fang Yuan’s hand: “This map not only records all the topography of Tai Qiu, it also records the distribution of the various beast groups. But there is a huge flaw, this map was created a long time ago, there will definitely be many changes in Tai Qiu after all these years.”

“First supreme elder is right, I also have this worry.” Fang Yuan quickly confirmed.

Lang Ya land spirit continued: “Aren’t you familiar with this place? You are also a human Gu Immortal with change form Immortal Gu to boot, I intend to send you there with this map...”

Lang Ya land spirit had yet to finish speaking when Fang Yuan stood up straight and spoke without hesitation: “First supreme elder only needs to give me the command, being able to work for the sect and in such an important matter at that, this is my honor!”

Lang Ya land spirit laughed heartily, patting Fang Yuan’s shoulder, indicating him to be seated: “Fang Yuan, you are good, I didn’t misjudge you. Rest assured, the sect absolutely won’t treat you unfairly. On your trip, act according to the circumstances. The main matter is to inspect Tai Qiu’s terrain and improve this Tai Qiu map. If you get the opportunity, you should set up the basic form of the teleportation Gu formation at a suitable location.”

“There are three locations on the map. These three locations mark the areas of the corpses of immemorial desolate beasts. Prioritize in inspecting these three locations, if you can set up a teleportation Gu formation in one of them, that would be great.”

“Naturally, you need to take care of yourself and move about secretly. Even if you are discovered by humans, never disclose the existence of our sect.”

Lang Ya land spirit repeatedly reminded.

Fang Yuan quickly nodded, even patting his chest in assurance: “First supreme elder, you can rest at ease. I will make some preparations and set off immediately!”

“Good, good.” Lang Ya land spirit laughed loudly, extremely pleased with Fang Yuan.

Actually, there was not much to prepare, Lang Ya blessed land’s foundation was deep, Fang Yuan was rather at ease placing Luo Po Valley, Dang Hun Mountain and wisdom Gu here.

Even if there was the spy from Shadow Sect, it would not hamper this situation. The disturbance Sixth Hair could create was small, adding on that Shadow Sect was already barely able to take care of itself, it would not dare to invade Lang Ya blessed land.

As for Heavenly Court, even if they discovered Lang Ya blessed land, what would they do?

During the five regions chaotic war, Heavenly Court attacked Lang Ya blessed land and a few times at that. In the end, Feng Jiu Ge was killed off before they were able to conquer Lang Ya blessed land. Even more importantly, at present, the regional walls still existed in the five regions.

Inspecting his Immortal Gu once again, Fang Yuan decided to carry almost all of these Immortal Gu with him. As for his immortal zombie body, he also brought it with him. His sovereign immortal aperture had enough space to carry them all.

Speaking of which, his immortal zombie body was quite a problem, and the Spring Autumn Cicada inside was even more of a problem.

Spring Autumn Cicada was currently sealed by some unknown methods, it was unable to absorb the water of the River of Time and could only bear its hunger passively, gradually falling towards the abyss of destruction.

Not only this, Spring Autumn Cicada still had heaven’s will in it.

Fang Yuan already knew about this from the transaction.

He also knew of much precious information regarding heaven’s will.

These were huge gains!

“I have the sovereign immortal aperture, which is a small world independent of the outside world. But right now, I am carrying Spring Autumn Cicada and large numbers of snow monsters filled with heaven’s will, there will definitely be obstructions when I go to Tai Qiu. Just like when I was hurrying back from Southern Border, I met the cloud beasts, was pursued by Qi Zai and so on.”

Fang Yuan understood this clearly.

He was no longer ignorant regarding heaven’s will, instead, he knew a lot.

Heaven’s will was not omnipotent, heaven’s will had its own restrictions.

After understanding heaven’s will, the threat of heaven’s will decreased immensely.

After all, an unknown enemy was the most troublesome. Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated!

The first earthly calamity’s might had sharply increased, Fang Yuan knew that was heaven’s will trying to eradicate him. But he underwent tribulation in the northern icy plain which unknowingly had helped him a lot.

The reason was, a large portion of the earthly calamity had been influenced by Reckless Savage’s true meaning, taking over the role of heaven’s will, forming into iron crown eagles, ruin bats and so on.

Only the snow monsters were formed from heaven’s will.

Their bodies held purely heaven’s will, they would not rest until they eradicated Fang Yuan.

The influence of Reckless Savage’s true meaning had weakened the dangers of the snow monsters by a large degree.

Currently, these snow monsters were still in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture. Each of them held heaven’s will, like Spring Autumn Cicada. When Fang Yuan went outside, he would be as clear as a torch in the darkness to heaven’s will’s perception.

“Heaven’s will cannot make a move by itself, unless it is during calamities or tribulations. When I go out now, heaven’s will would definitely influence others to kill me. I will deal with whatever it sends when the time comes!”

Bright light flashed, in the central region of dragon elephant plain, a young-looking Gu Immortal appeared out of thin air.

He wore snow white clothes, his face looked mild like jade, his dark hair reached down to his waist, and he had a pair of dark eyes which seemed to have unfathomable depths.

He was Gu Yue Fang Yuan.

“I am out!” Fang Yuan took a deep breath, and immediately activated defensive Gu worms and investigative Gu worms.

Many types of investigative methods were activated together.

His gaze scanned all directions, and his perception covered everything within ten thousand steps.

It was temporarily safe.

Every since Lang Ya blessed land migrated from crescent lake, its exact location was only known by Lang Ya land spirit.

This was among the greatest secrets of Lang Ya blessed land, the land spirit would not tell anyone.

But he had also arranged several teleportation Gu formations outside, facilitating transportation between the inside and the outside world.

This response was much wiser than the previous Lang Ya land spirit.

One of Lang Ya blessed land’s teleportation Gu formations was set up at Feng Bo Cliff. Now, Fang Yuan learned of the location of a second teleportation Gu formation, it was this place, Northern Plains’ dragon elephant plain.

“I need to get a move on, it is not safe to stay for long at this place.”

At Fang Yuan’s will, Gu worms started to fly inside his immortal aperture.

His figure shot upwards like an arrow.

His field of vision immediately expanded, and as he looked below him, dragon elephant plain’s terrain entered his vision.

Dragon elephant plain had a flat terrain and an extraordinary majesty to it. There was plenty of water and lush vegetation, dragon elephant groups were scattered everywhere.

This was a famous habitat of dragon elephants in Northern Plains, and was under the control of a nearby super force.

“Grand rivers and hills, such a beautiful sight.” Fang Yuan praised before hiding his figure and flying away.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1086: Speed!

A few minutes later, Fang Yuan had already left dragon elephant plain.

He saw a huge field of clouds in front of him.

Fang Yuan subconsciously slowed down.

He was very cautious of white clouds now, ever since he encountered those pesky cloud beasts in Southern Border.

Learning from experience, Fang Yuan became very wary of large areas of clouds.

After inspecting them, Fang Yuan relaxed, the clouds had no problems.

He flew into them.

His vision was covered by the thick white clouds.

But it was alright, Fang Yuan had investigative methods to use.

Be it hearing or sound waves, or even using his consciousness, he could fly freely inside the clouds without feeling like a lost insect.

Gu Immortals had access to most mortal methods, they could deal with many situations.

Fang Yuan’s speed fell, he stopped all movement.

Next, thoughts flickered in his mind as he activated countless Gu worms in his immortal aperture.

Large numbers of mortal Gu moved like a storm, creating a huge, bloody tornado in the sovereign immortal aperture.

The core Immortal Gu flew up next.

Rank six blood asset Immortal Gu!

It descended like a ruler with imposing aura, the rest of the mortal Gu were assistants, creating the immortal killer move that Fang Yuan was activating — Blood Torrent.

Blood-red light rushed out of Fang Yuan’s body, before turning into liquid, forming a river of bloody water.

The blood carried Fang Yuan and tore through the clouds, moving forward rapidly.

The speed was so fast, completely at a different level to before!

Earlier, when Fang Yuan left dragon elephant plain, that place was within a righteous path super force’s territory, he did not use an immortal killer move.

Because most immortal killer moves would leak strong aura from them, attention would be drawn to him.

Thus, Fang Yuan only used mortal killer moves when leaving dragon elephant plain. – You’re reading on B oxnovel.c om .Tks!

But now, after leaving it, he could finally use an immortal killer move.

His speed rose sharply, he moved ahead rapidly.

A long bloody trail was drawn out, but it was concealed by the thick clouds, it could not be seen from the outside.

This was the advantage of flying in the clouds.

If not for the cloud cover, Fang Yuan could only conceal his tracks. Openly flying like this was too attention grabbing.

In a short moment, this huge area of clouds was pierced through by Fang Yuan.

He had already traveled past an enormous distance.

Outside of the cloud layer, Fang Yuan stopped using blood torrent.

During this time period, blood path demonic immortals could not display themselves, they had to be concealed. Blood path was a target of attack from all over, Fang Yuan did not want to attract trouble due to blood path.

Especially when heaven’s will was locked onto him!

“Unless I can modify blood torrent and prevent others from sensing its blood path nature.” Fang Yuan had a thought.

Actually, he had already modified blood torrent again.

While cultivating in Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan had been practicing his blood path killer moves and strength path killer moves.

One day, Fang Yuan had an inspiration when practicing, he modified blood torrent.

Originally, when using blood torrent, hundreds of mortal Gu would appear around Fang Yuan, flying around in a big circle.

After modification, these mortal Gu flew in a spiral in his immortal aperture.

This was a small change, but it fixed one of its major flaws.

Flying around the Gu Immortal meant it could be easily attacked and destroyed, but being in the immortal aperture was safe.

Just this alone showed great improvement.

But blood torrent was still very eye-catching, when flying in the sky, it created a long river of blood, anyone would notice it. It would even emit a strong and foul bloody smell that would make one puke.

If these flaws were not fixed, blood torrent could not be widely used.

If the light of wisdom could be used, these modifications could be done overnight. But Fang Yuan was unsure of the safety of the immortal zombie body at this time.

It was fine with clouds covering it, but without clouds, Fang Yuan would not use blood torrent.

He activated sword escape Immortal Gu.

Rank seven sword escape Immortal Gu!

Fang Yuan flew forward like a sword.

Compared to blood torrent, he was even faster now!

Just sword escape Immortal Gu alone surpassed a rank six blood path killer move.

Even though with his cultivation level, using sword escape Immortal Gu with green grape immortal essence was not worth it, Fang Yuan was very firm on doing this.

The biggest factor of this trip was — Speed! Speed! Speed!

He had to move quickly.

It was because of heaven’s will.

“Heaven’s will follows the way of heaven, taking away surpluses while replenishing deficits, it treats me as an eyesore. But the way of heaven has its own rules and regulations, heaven’s will has to follow certain rules and is limited to an extent.”

“Heaven’s will cannot act casually, it can only attack me directly during calamities and tribulations. Normally, heaven’s will can only engineer situations and circumstances to kill me.”

How can heaven’s will create such situations?

By affecting the living beings of this world.

Like in the past, when Fang Yuan was in Imperial Court blessed land, he was affected by Mo Yao’s fake will, heaven’s will was vast and omnipresent, it could affect other life forms.

This influence was on the subconscious level, it was very situational.

In most situations, decisions were made in an instant.

Heaven’s will could influence countless life forms, and countless decisions that they make, through many subtle influences, these life forms could gather together into a force that would be fatal.

But this way, to influence others and set up fatal traps, time was needed.

Therefore, Fang Yuan emphasized on speed.

The faster he was, the less time heaven’s will had to influence other life forms and create situations to deal with him.

During the journey from Southern Border to Northern Plains, Fang Yuan did not know this, he also lacked movement methods, especially at the start, it gave heaven’s will a lot of time to set things up.

Now that Fang Yuan knew heaven’s will’s weaknesses, he naturally made use of them.

This was an effective method that Shadow Sect used against heaven’s will.

Shadow Sect followed a key principle: Accumulating in secret, striking at once like a volcano, moving as fast as lightning, achieving one’s goal!

Fang Yuan learned fully from this.

“To deal with heaven’s will, Shadow Sect and Spectral Soul are the best role model. They are my enemies, but these enemies have aspects in which they are superior to me, I naturally must abandon bias and learn from them!”

“And I have a huge advantage compared to Shadow Sect, I am a complete otherworldly demon!”

“Shadow Sect members have to think about themselves when acting and use self will to cleanse themselves from heaven’s will’s hidden influence.”

“But I do not need to, as a complete otherworldly demon, heaven’s will cannot influence me!”

To guard against heaven’s will, Fang Yuan used Sword Escape, disregarding the intense immortal essence consumption!

Thankfully, Fang Yuan had preserved most of his accumulated cultivation resources.

He was raking in money daily, it could be said he was very affluent.

Even though he needed to build and manage his own immortal aperture, most of his plans had not started yet. Treasure yellow heaven was closed now, the things he could get from Lang Ya Sect’s inventory were limited.

Fang Yuan tore through the sky, bursting with a sharp sound along the way, he seemed to have turned into a flying sword!

Roaming the desolate plains with peerless sharpness.

Suddenly, there was a growl filled with pain and fear.

An ancient desolate beast was escaping for its life, a wild rank seven Immortal Gu was chasing it.

The two entered Fang Yuan’s vision.

In front was a horned six-winged pegasus, while the wild Immortal Gu behind was a Dragon Centipede.

A four winged pegasus was a beast emperor, while a six-winged pegasus was a desolate beast, one with a horn on its forehead and six wings on its back was an ancient desolate beasts.

And this Dragon Centipede was seven li long! It has a centipede body and a dragon head, there were countless legs split across the two sides of its body, moving continuously. It had a hard bronze shell, under the light of the sun, shining and dazzling golden color could be seen. It was very bold and grand looking!

Some wild Immortal Gu lived in desolate beasts and desolate plants, absorbing their nutrients, living in co-existence while treating them as food.

But this was only the majority of cases.

The Dragon Centipede was a fierce and savage wild Immortal Gu, it directly captured desolate beasts and desolate plants, treating them as prey, surviving through hunting.

This was the only dragon centipede Immortal Gu in the world, it was rank seven, it was capturing ancient desolate beasts and desolate plants to fill its stomach.

Fang Yuan was flying straight ahead, this pair appeared right in front of him, blocking his path.

“Something happened after all!” Fang Yuan snickered internally.

Last time was a cloud beast group, this time, it was a horned six-winged pegasus and the wild dragon centipede Immortal Gu.

Wild Immortal Gu had low intelligence, even though they had their own will, they were easily influenced by heaven’s will.

The horned six-winged pegasus was an ancient desolate beast, beasts like horses mostly had higher intelligence. It was harder for heaven’s will to influence them.

But now, it was escaping and moving without thinking, heaven’s will only needed to influence it slightly to change the direction that the horned six-winged pegasus was escaping.

These two were here to block Fang Yuan’s path!

The pegasus was escaping for its life, it would try its best to crush all obstacles ahead.

And the Dragon Centipede’s gaze was also on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s Gu Immortal aura was apparent.

He was a rank six Gu Immortal.

His aura was much weaker than the horned six-winged pegasus. But his sword path aura was also strong, coming from the rank seven sword escape Immortal Gu.

This attracted the Dragon Centipede more.

Because the Dragon Centipede was full of sword path dao marks as well!

Its countless limbs contained sword path dao marks, allowing it to carry tens of thousands of swords with it. Once it coiled around its prey, these sharp swords would attack from all directions, creating bloody holes in the ancient desolate beast, it was very fierce.

Fang Yuan’s reaction was at lightning speed.

He instantly stored sword escape Immortal Gu, the aura vanished instantly.

The Dragon Centipede was confused, but its focus was still on him. After all, in its long life of hunting, it had encountered many prey which could conceal its aura.

Fang Yuan’s body shook, as countless figures appeared.

Convergence of enslavement and strength path, immortal killer move — Myriad Self!

In the earlier transactions, Fang Yuan had obtained many strength path Immortal Gu, his strongest method from back then had returned!

Even though he did not have cleanse soul Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan used other mortal Gu to replace it. Myriad self’s power fell, but at this moment, it was very useful in confusing his enemies.

Countless Fang Yuans flew around the place, like a school of fish swimming in the sea, scattering around after encountering a huge whale.

The Dragon Centipede was even more confused now, its speed fell for a moment.

Next, its seven li long body attacked like a whip.

Boom boom boom.

Countless strength path phantoms of Fang Yuan were destroyed.

The horned six-winged pegasus also crushed many of Fang Yuan’s phantoms as it rapidly escaped.

The Dragon Centipede saw that the pegasus was escaping, its attention was focused on it once more.

The two escaped and chased, quickly getting out of Fang Yuan’s vision.

Fang Yuan lightly let out a breath of air.

His true body descended.

With a thought, countless Fang Yuan phantoms dissipated at once.

Move!

Fang Yuan activated Sword Escape again, flying into the sky, leaving.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1087: A Goat Explores Tai Qiu

Fang Yuan traveled day and night without rest.

When seeing thick cloud cover, he used blood torrent. Most of the time, he used sword escape Immortal Gu.

He passed several dangerous areas along the way, there were also lone Gu Immortals or super forces around. Fang Yuan did not dare to use Immortal Gu openly, he used mortal killer moves.

His strategy was correct, after the horned six-winged pegasus and wild Dragon Centipede, no other unexpected surprises occurred.

Heaven’s will needed time to lay out traps.

On the other hand, there was a limit for heaven’s will’s influence on other life forms.

Like the influence on the horned six-winged pegasus and wild Dragon Centipede, heaven’s will could not order either of them to attack Fang Yuan.

Heaven’s will’s influence was based off situational decisions.

Fang Yuan’s speed was very fast, heaven’s will could not create obstacles in time.

Heaven’s will could think and plot.

This was because of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

According to the intel provided by Shadow Sect, before Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, heaven’s will was much easier to deal with. But after her, heaven’s will became much more ‘crafty’.

Thus, Fang Yuan was not purely flying straight ahead.

He curved and took detours, moving forward in arcs.

If he moved straight, his route would be easily deduced by heaven’s will, it would lay out dangers along the way and wait for Fang Yuan to fall in.

In fact, heaven’s will might even deduce that Fang Yuan’s true destination was Tai Qiu and set up arrangements there.

That would be dangerous!

Not only would Fang Yuan be unable to complete the sect mission, his life would be in danger.

However, with Fang Yuan’s fast advancement, heaven’s will could not stop him.

Of course, Fang Yuan would not purposely backtrack. If heaven’s will formed an arragement that was behind him, he would be going into a trap that he had already evaded, that would be stupid!

This way, his route was very far, the total length of his journey was extended multiple times.

However, in the end, Fang Yuan's speed was still very fast.

Thus, three days after encountering the wild dragon centipede Immortal Gu, along the horizon, Tai Qiu entered Fang Yuan's vision.

Tai Qiu was in sight!

A vast amount of ordinary grass formed a huge yellow plain.

Tai Qiu's appearance was like a jade green tower standing tall in a thick forest. In this yellow plain, it was very eye-catching.

As Fang Yuan got closer, the green Tai Qiu expanded in the horizon, becoming bigger in Fang Yuan's field of vision. It was like dye that was spreading rapidly on paper.

Eventually, Tai Qiu filled Fang Yuan's vision completely.

A vast amount of giant grass covered this area, figures of beasts were roaming inside, tigers were roaring as wolves howled, there was a stream of continuous noise.

Far and wide, it was a grand scene of the wilderness!

At this moment, there was no point for Fang Yuan to hide it from heaven's will.

His speed became slower, he stopped using Immortal Gu, directly entering Tai Qiu.

Compared to the giant grass, he was tiny. Compared to the entirety of Tai Qiu, he was like a fly that had entered a palace.

The lush giant grass blocked out the sky.

The entirety of Tai Qiu was concealing an unknown number of fierce beasts and mutated plants.

There was a commotion ahead, it seemed like a beast tide was about to form.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, activating dark limit Immortal Gu.

Immortal Gu Dark Limit!

It could conceal aura and hide from others to prevent deductions, it could also hide one from heaven's will to a degree.

Change form Immortal Gu!

Fang Yuan turned into a coiling mountain goat, entering Tai Qiu.

The commotion ahead slowly faded.

"If heaven's will could feel emotions, it must be shocked and furious now." Fang Yuan smiled, before shaking his head and sighing: "Unfortunately, heaven's will has no emotions..."

Dark limit Immortal Gu helped Fang Yuan greatly.

Back then, when Hei Lou Lan was still a mortal, she relied on this Immortal Gu to conceal her Great Strength True Martial Physique aura, thus surviving.

Why did the calamities and tribulations of the ten extreme physiques surpass ordinary people?

Because heaven’s will takes away surpluses while replenishing deficits, it did not want an existence like one of the ten extreme physique to upset the balance of the world.

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture surpassed the ten extreme physiques. The power of his calamities and tribulations were much greater than the ten extreme physiques. Even dark limit Immortal Gu had limited effect.

Fang Yuan suddenly thought: “Fairy Jiang Yu was a member of Shadow Sect, to resist heaven’s will, Shadow Sect definitely had many tools such as dark limit Immortal Gu. If Ying Wu Xie can escape from this predicament and make use of Shadow Sect’s remnant forces, his future might be unhindered, he would have an easier time ahead.”

He had turned into a coiling mountain goat, this was a common desolate beast in Tai Qiu, even though he was in disguise, he blended in perfectly.

Unlike his Gu Immortal body, which was completely different and eye-catching in Tai Qiu.

Soon, he encountered a desolate beast.

A golden sand dark stallion.

This was a huge horse.

Its body was larger than the coiling mountain goat that Fang Yuan became. It has bulging muscles and strong bones, its skin was dark gold, it had six hooves that were dark and deep.

The golden sand dark stallion was eating grass.

Sensing the coiling mountain goat that Fang Yuan had turned into, the golden sand dark stallion raised its head, observing this ‘uninvited guest’.

Desolate beasts had their respective territories, the coiling mountain goat had invaded the golden sand dark stallion’s territory.

But the golden sand dark stallion did not eat meat, it also had a calm temperament, the coiling mountain goat was also a herbivore, the golden sand dark stallion subconsciously felt that the coiling mountain goat had no threat.

But it was still very alert.

It stared at Fang Yuan until he went far away from it, before lowering its head to eat grass again.

Fang Yuan chose to become a coiling mountain goat, he had considered it deeply.

Actually, in Northern Plains, there were lots of wolf desolate beasts, but if he became a desolate beast wolf, he would face an intense reaction from the golden sand dark stallion.

Getting past the golden sand dark stallion, Fang Yuan continued to move forward.

He had already memorized the map of Tai Qiu. Even in the case that he could not remember something, he had it copied in many information path Gu worms in his

immortal aperture.

“The first location is in the southeast direction.” Fang Yuan looked around.

But the giant grass became taller and taller, the giant grass in the periphery were tall as trees, but as he went in, the giant grass became as tall as towers. The giant grass in the center of Tai Qiu were as tall as hills or mountains.

The coiling mountain goat’s body was not small, but as Fang Yuan went deeper, the surrounding giant grass became taller and thicker, the coiling mountain goat looked smaller and petite.

Along the way, Fang Yuan encountered many desolate beasts.

These desolate beasts were either in groups or alone. Most of them were herbivores, but there were some carnivores as well.

Fang Yuan made use of his mind, his intelligence far surpassed desolate beasts.

Thus, after some hurdles, he managed to get through them.

Baa baa baa...

The cries of goats entered Fang Yuan’s ears.

In the grass ahead, there was a huge group of coiling mountain goats.

Fang Yuan sighed in his mind: “It seems that I am deep into Tai Qiu already, this is the first large group of desolate beasts I’ve seen.”

This goat group had about a hundred of them together, some were eating grass, some were lying on the ground sunbathing, while some young ones were playing around.

Fang Yuan entered their field of vision.

The wild coiling mountain goats looked at him.

This was the first time they were seeing this unknown goat.

Fang Yuan moved carefully.

Even though he had change form Immortal Gu, there was a hidden threat. If one of the goats in this group had a wild investigative Immortal Gu, and could see through Fang Yuan’s concealment, it would be a disaster.

To play safe, Fang Yuan secretly activated attitude Gu.

Immediately, the goat group felt Fang Yuan’s ‘attitude’ and looked at him with warmer gazes.

Fang Yuan took a few steps forward, there were several young desolate beast coiling mountain goats that ran to him, observing him with huge curious eyes, two of them were running around Fang Yuan, jumping around.

Fang Yuan walked away from them safely, leaving the goat group.

The young coiling mountain goats moved with him for a while, as he got away from the goats, they were called back by their parents and returned.

Fang Yuan sighed as he felt some pity.

If he could bring two or three of these younglings with him, and raise them inside the sovereign immortal aperture, that would be great.

Regretfully, he did not have a chance to do so.

Leaving the territory of the coiling mountain goats, Fang Yuan was very close to the first location indicated on the map already.

He was not careless, he inspected himself.

“Dark limit Immortal Gu’s power of concealment is weakening, but it can still last for some time.” Fang Yuan had an accurate assessment.

After activating dark limit Immortal Gu once, it needed to rest for some time before Fang Yuan could use it again.

Its power was left behind in Fang Yuan, concealing his aura. But as time passed, or due to other forces, the concealment would weaken.

And depending on the target, the protection effect varied.

For example, it had been more effective on Hei Lou Lan when she was a mortal. If used on dark path Gu Immortals, the effect would be lower. If used on Gu Immortals of other paths, the effect would be even worse. Thankfully, Fang Yuan’s dao marks did not conflict, otherwise, the effect would be horrible.

In conclusion, Fang Yuan had to complete his mission while dark limit Immortal Gu’s power was still concealing him.

Otherwise, after the concealment fades, heaven’s will would focus on him, and the countless desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts would attack Fang Yuan together, the situation would be dire.

After a moment, Fang Yuan got close to the first location.

Before reaching, Fang Yuan already knew that the location had completely changed.

Because the map indicated that there was the corpse of an immemorial desolate beast, a qi grand lion, here.

What guarded the corpse was a group of qi grand lions, they were a mix of desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts.

But the hill-like corpse was gone. There were no qi grand lions either, Fang Yuan used his investigative killer moves and heard some faint wolf howls.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

“Desolate beast black blood wolves! And this scale... at least thirty of them.”

A group of desolate beast wolves.

Even though the size was not large, they are fierce carnivores.

The territory of wolves was larger.

Fang Yuan did not need to observe them from close by, he just needed to use mortal investigative methods and hearing to get a lot of information.

This was the intelligence of humans.

Within this group of desolate beast wolves, there might be wild Immortal Gu, but they could not be activated at will. Compared to Gu Immortals who controlled

Immortal Gu, it was a different story.

Fang Yuan thought to himself: “The first location has changed. Be it the immemorial desolate beast level qi grand lion’s corpse, those desolate beasts, or the ancient desolate beast qi grand lions, they have all vanished for some reason. Three hundred thousand years later, a small group of black blood wolves are occupying this place.”

Fang Yuan did not hesitate, he gave up on this place.

He took a detour past the wolf group’s territory, heading to the second destination.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1088: A Monkey Achieves Success

One day later, Tai Qiu.

“This place...” Fang Yuan’s hands were holding onto a giant strand of grass that was hundreds of meters tall, he climbed upon it and looked afar.

There was a trunk of a huge tree ahead, resembling a giant ship that was washed ashore.

But the tree only had part of its trunk left, it was dark and in ruins, it seemed to have been hit by lightning.

Fang Yuan’s appearance had also changed greatly.

He had turned into a monkey.

A fire swallowing monkey.

An ancient desolate beast.

Even though he was not big, he was not to be trifled with.

Fang Yuan had stopped using the coiling mountain goat’s appearance. The coiling mountain goat could not enter deep into Tai Qiu, this was a place where ancient desolate beasts roamed.

Fire swallowing monkey was a special case.

It was strong, but only ate fire, thus it roamed around the place. It did not compete with other desolate beasts for food, it was a suitable disguise for Fang Yuan.

Without becoming a fire swallowing monkey, Fang Yuan could not move in here.

“Thousand snakes haze tree...” Fang Yuan looked into the distance as he muttered.

This was the third destination on the Tai Qiu map.

The first location was occupied by a group of desolate beast black blood wolves. The second area was empty, it was a region between two carnivorous groups.

Fang Yuan’s current location was the final one marked on the map.

There was once a thousand snakes haze tree here.

This tree was like a mountain, occupying a huge area. It was immemorial level, with seventy thousand seven hundred and seventy branches, the branches were like long snakes. At the tips of the branches, there were snake heads.

The roots of this tree was deeply buried in the earth, they were thousands of meters long. It ate passing desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts as food, when hunting, the tens of thousands of branches would dance around, moving like slithering snakes, coiling around the prey and strangling them to death, before sucking up their blood to survive.

For the longest time, the countless life forms that died under the tree rotted and piled into a mountain. Their grudge was overwhelming, the place was filled with a dark aura.

Positive and negative energy are drawn to each other, whenever there was a storm, grand heavenly lightning would strike on the thousand snakes haze tree.

It was fine if it were ordinary storms, but if it was unlucky and met with an extraordinary heavenly lightning bolt, the result would be disastrous.

The thousand snakes haze tree had no natural enemies, it was at immemorial desolate beast level, it dominated its territory, it might have attracted the attention of heaven’s will, resulting in lightning strikes.

In any case, three hundred thousand years ago, there was a huge fire in Tai Qiu. This thousand snakes haze tree was burned and resembled an erupting volcano, it lit the sky of the surroundings, for months without ceasing.

“But this thousand snakes haze tree isn’t dead yet!” There was a dark and wary gaze in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

When Long Hair Ancestor was alive, he left this Tai Qiu map behind, it was three hundred thousand years old.

This thousand snakes haze tree had lived for three hundred thousand years, it was not dead yet, there was still signs of life in it!

“Man is the spirit of all living beings, but our vitality, lifespan, body, and soul, are far inferior to other beings. This thousand snakes haze tree has the strongest vitality. It is still alive even after the lightning and fires.” Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

Right now, the thousand snakes haze tree was completely lying on the ground. More than half of its tree trunk was rotten, a few li remained.

The complete thousand snakes haze tree was taller than a mountain if it was upright, the attacking range of its branches and vines covered an enormous surrounding area.

Fang Yuan could acutely sense that on this segment of the thousand snakes haze tree, dozens of branches were still alive. They were like pythons, coiling and moving around slowly. If any prey entered their range, they would strike swiftly, killing the prey.

Even though the thousand snakes haze tree was in a sad state, it was still an immemorial desolate plant, it was easy to kill ancient desolate beasts and desolate beast groups.

Fang Yuan observed for a while and discovered something new: “Fortune and disaster really comes together, the complete thousand snakes haze tree killed many life forms and created a mountain of corpses, causing the lightning to strike it. But this thousand snakes haze tree only has this tiny segment left, it can only hunt a limited number of prey, yin qi and grudge are not accumulated here, thus no lightning struck it again.”

That was the reason why this thousand snakes haze tree was still around in the world.

But Fang Yuan frowned gradually.

He took a huge risk in coming to Tai Qiu, it was to find a suitable location to set up the transportation Gu formation.

There were three locations indicated in Tai Qiu for Fang Yuan to visit.

The first two were gone, and the third was unsuitable.

Because the thousand snakes haze tree was still alive.

This was an immemorial desolate plant, it had incredible battle strength, rivaling rank eight Gu Immortals. Even if it were the weakest of all rank eight beings, Fang Yuan could not defeat it. This was a huge problem for Lang Ya Sect’s plan.

If they fought here, a beast tide might happen.

“That means, I completed part of my mission, and failed a part. Even though I made Tai Qiu’s map more accurate and eliminated three locations, I did not find a location that suited Lang Ya Sect in setting up the transportation Gu formation.”

“It can’t be helped, dark limit Immortal Gu’s power is weakening, I should leave first. I will return to explore Tai Qiu again another time.”

Fang Yuan sighed internally.

If he could succeed this time, that would be best, after all, Fang Yuan’s recent situation was not bad, he had no immediate internal or external threats.

If he did not succeed, by the next time, Fang Yuan would not have much time or energy to spare.

He was very busy.

Managing an immortal aperture was a huge job, he also had his own cultivation to worry about, he had to settle his immortal zombie body’s problem, as well as turn Fang Zheng’s mindset.

It could not be helped. Most things in life did not go according to one’s wishes.

Fang Yuan slowly left.

He chose the direction closest to the exit and took his leave.

But the problem was, after Fang Yuan moved for a while, he discovered some peculiarities.

First, two ancient desolate beasts were fighting, causing a huge commotion. Next, three desolate beast groups were also facing each other, they were about to erupt into battle.

And unfortunately, these three desolate beast groups were blocking Fang Yuan’s path.

“These all point to the occurrence of a beast tide.”

“So that’s it.”

“The protection of dark limit Immortal Gu on my body has weakened to this degree? Even though heaven’s will cannot detect my location, it already known the general location. Thus, it is creating a beast tide, to wreak havoc Tai Qiu. It wants to use this chance to expose me.”

“Mm... that’s right, I have Spring Autumn Cicada and large numbers of snow monsters with me, they all have heaven’s will. Even though they are restricted inside my immortal aperture, the heaven’s will inside can resonate with the parts in the outside world.”

Fang Yuan frowned even deeper.

He had somewhat underestimated heaven’s will’s power.

Logically speaking, any immortal aperture world, be it a blessed land or grotto-heaven, was independent, they had nothing to do with the world of the five regions. Heaven’s will could not interfere in these small worlds.

But now Fang Yuan knew, if heaven’s will existed in these small worlds, then it could cause a resonance with the heaven’s will in the outside world, collaborating with one another.

Using heaven’s will’s connection, and with dark limit Immortal Gu’s weakening, even though heaven’s will could not find Fang Yuan’s location, it could create a huge beast tide that could seek out Fang Yuan, before eliminating him mercilessly!

“Experiments lead to the truth! Or maybe, the intel provided by Shadow Sect regarding heaven’s will was not complete. I cannot stay here!” Fang Yuan thought as he moved.

He stretched out his monkey arms, jumping on giant grass strands, moving away from the beast groups, evading heaven’s will’s trap.

But he was bound to fail.

It was too late.

The two ancient desolate beasts fought and went towards the beast groups that were in conflict, a huge chaotic battle started as a result.

The impact of the chaotic battle affected the surroundings, triggering even more chaos.

As the havoc grew, a beast tide formed, rampaging towards Fang Yuan.

The beast tide was terrifying.

Be it desolate beasts or ancient desolate beasts, they were in a frenzied state.

They were in a berserk state, only listening to their survival instincts as they growled frenziedly, roaring.

Prey began to attack the predator, many beast groups that had lived together were now broken apart, there was no order left.

Large numbers of desolate beasts scattered in fear, a strong force was forming. This force brought along other fierce beasts, even if they were unwilling to, they could not help themselves.

A moment later, this force became stronger and stronger, it was like an unstoppable flood.

Sweeping everything! Anything that stood before this force, be it desolate beast or ancient desolate beast, was decimated.

Fang Yuan felt like he was a small plank floating on top of raging waters.

He could not help himself, he could only move forward along with the beast tide.

He had to continue his disguise, if he was exposed, heaven’s will would overwhelm him using the beast tide. By then, even if he had unlimited immortal essence and a large number of Immortal Gu with him, he would die without an intact corpse.

He was only a rank six Gu Immortal who had passed one earthly calamity.

Even though Fang Yuan had Change Form and attitude Gu, and even familiar face, simply disguising himself was not enough.

Dark limit Immortal Gu’s power was fading, by some point, Fang Yuan would be exposed to heaven’s will!

He could not expose himself, that was courting death. But he could not stay hidden forever, that was waiting for death.

Fang Yuan was in deep danger, he could not find any solutions for the moment.

“Maybe I can take a risk for a chance of survival.” He suddenly had a thought.

If there was no other choice, he could only do this.

Entrusting his hope in blood torrent and sword escape Immortal Gu.

But this was deep inside Tai Qiu.

Desolate beasts were everywhere, and ancient desolate beasts were also high in number. Heaven’s will had too many options, it could choose and influence them, it could block Fang Yuan easily.

At this time, the beast tide suddenly changed directions, it was moving forward before, but now, it turned at an angle.

“This is?!” Fang Yuan looked ahead, joy was showing in his round monkey eyes.

He looked at the mountain-like red corpse in front, there were still buds of blue flames burning on the bones, the heat was concealed and there was no warmth at all, but Fang Yuan felt a deep sense of danger.

This was an immemorial desolate beast’s corpse.

It seemed to have just died, the immemorial aura was overwhelming, even the beast tide avoided it subconsciously.

“Truly a surprise when I least expected it, hope is just around the corner!” At this moment, Fang Yuan really wanted to laugh loudly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1089: Formation Path Great Grandmaster

Fly!

The fire swallowing monkey’s body moved agilely in the air, it jumped up and flew away from the beast tide under the concealment of smoke and dust, getting close to the immemorial desolate beast’s corpse.

From the appearance, it resembled an elephant corpse.

Tattered grey-blue elephant skin hung over flesh and blood that had dried and rotted. Its white skeleton formed a rack, and with the skin, a giant ‘tent’ was made.

This was a half collapsed ‘tent’, there was an intense aura from within it, when this immemorial desolate beast was still alive, it must have undergone a fierce battle.

Fang Yuan had a question in his mind: “What could have killed this immemorial desolate beast?”

He was currently very close to the center of Tai Qiu.

This was one of the ten great fierce areas in Northern Plains, it was very dangerous and its contents were unknown. The immemorial desolate beasts hidden in it made even super forces feel headache.

After all, immemorial desolate beasts had battle strength equal to rank eight Gu Immortals.

And among super forces, only a few had rank eight Gu Immortals.

In the huge Northern Plains, there were only five rank eight Gu Immortals in the open.

Even if he was at the periphery of Tai Qiu, if he was careless, he would trigger a beast tide. Immemorial desolate beast and beast tides, these two reasons were why Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal forces refused to meddle in here.

Fang Yuan got closer to the immemorial desolate elephant’s corpse.

Compared to this huge corpse, Fang Yuan was like a fly, he flew towards the tattered grey-blue ‘tent’.

There was no wind.

But Fang Yuan felt his pressure increasing.

A formless force was repelling Fang Yuan in waves, he felt like he was moving against a tide, as he entered deep into the sea.

After getting close, Fang Yuan started to hear things.

Swish swish swish...

All he could hear was the ebb and flow of waves.

“Water path dao marks!” Fang Yuan was slightly shaken.

Undoubtedly, this immemorial desolate elephant had an abundant number of water path dao marks.

Even though the immemorial desolate elephant was dead, the water path dao marks in its bones and skin were left. They were affecting this area at all times.

Fang Yuan had seen the corpse of an immemorial desolate beast before, it was during Dong Fang Chang Fan’s tribulation.

Back then, the immemorial ruin bat’s corpse was modified by Dong Fang Chang Fan, thus, Fang Yuan did not have the same feeling as now.

Inside the super Gu formation of Earth Trench, fang yuan had obtained a number of immemorial immortal materials, these immortal materials had lots of dao marks in them, lights of dao marks could even be seen with the naked eye!

But these immortal materials were just a small portion. In terms of the number of dao marks, they could not compare to this immemorial desolate elephant’s corpse which was nearly complete.

The number of accumulated dao marks in an immemorial desolate beast was quite terrifying.

And most importantly, this immemorial desolate beast had died just recently.

Thus, Fang Yuan felt a repulsive feeling, it was hard to get close to it.

“When immemorial desolate beasts and desolate plants stay in a place for long, their dao marks would affect the environment, and change it gradually.”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts flashed quickly, his legs did not stop moving, he maneuvered and tried to get as close as possible.

Because of these water path dao marks, there was no wind. Around the entire corpse, there was silence, with no signs of life.

“After this area is completely transformed, it will have thick fog, a lake might even form, and countless plants and wild beasts would start living here.”

Fang Yuan concluded that this area was still not stable.

The immemorial desolate elephant’s dao marks were subtly changing the environment of the surroundings.

This process could take decades, centuries, or even millennia. During this process, the immemorial desolate elephant’s water path dao marks would dissipate, the surrounding area would also reject dao marks of all other paths, with water path remaining primarily.

Eventually, the water path dao marks in the surroundings and the water path dao marks left in the immemorial desolate elephant’s body would reach an equilibrium. The desolate elephant’s corpse would stop breaking down, the remaining water path dao marks would stop decreasing, it would, instead, be nurtured by the environment.

Other than Fang Yuan, there were no traces of plants or animals.

Fang Yuan was very out of place now.

The beast tide suddenly became chaotic, they were moving forward initially, but now they were starting to get messy.

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, he watched as he focused.

But the beast tide was only messy for a moment before it returned to normal. It was like a tidal wave, going around this corpse and crashing elsewhere. Everywhere it went, grass and trees fell, smoke and dust rose, it was a pitiful sight.

Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, he thought: “It seems that Shadow Sect’s intel is correct. Even though desolate beasts are easily influenced by heaven’s will, the effect is small in the short run. The beast tide has already formed, even if heaven’s will discovers me, it cannot control the beast tide to charge at the immemorial desolate beast corpse. Over here, I am safe!”

A moment later, Fang Yuan stopped moving.

He looked around, raising his head.

At this distance, it was perfect, he was neither too far nor too close to the immemorial desolate corpse.

Most importantly, there was a reaction in Fang Yuan’s Gu worms.

Before leaving, Lang Ya land spirit had given him a set of Gu worm to set up the area. The Gu worms which were reacting now were specialized investigative Gu worms. If they sensed a suitable location for the formation, they would send out sound and vibrations that only the Gu Immortal could hear.

Set up the formation!

Fang Yuan stopped moving forward, he stood still and injected immortal essence into his Gu worms.

One after another, Immortal Gu were activated.

Some flew out of Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture, circling around him. Some were dancing in the air within Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture, staying inside.

Lights of immortal origin were shining, it was a beautiful scene.

A great amount of concentration was needed, Fang Yuan had to stop his transformation and show his true form.

Heaven’s will raged, it had uncovered Fang Yuan, thunder was rumbling in the sky.

But it was futile.

Heaven’s will could only act in itself when a Gu Immortal was undergoing tribulation. Fang Yuan was not undergoing tribulation now, he was also not using the hairy man nature Gu refinement technique to refine Immortal Gu.

Traces of smoke were dancing, mysterious sounds were resounding.

With Fang Yuan as the center, a huge seven colored spiral was formed, it looked like fog, while also looking like a tide, it was a grand scene with unparalleled beauty.

The spiral became larger and larger, expanding in an orderly fashion.

Gu worms were arranged in the rainbow light, some were buried in the soil, some were left on the ground, some turned phantom and were floating in the air, some were even sealed in the air, they could not be seen with the naked eye.

A vast number of Gu worms were arranged at lightning speed.

Fang Yuan was mainly the immortal essence provider, an Immortal Gu was setting the formation.

Rank six formation plate Gu!

It was like a round plate, a porcelain plate used to hold rice and vegetables. It was floating above Fang Yuan’s head, mobilizing all sorts of Gu worms.

Setting up the formation took six hours.

By sundown, when the sun emitted the final trace of light, Fang Yuan collected his Gu worms.

A vast number of mortal Gu had been placed here, the Immortal Gu were all retrieved. All of the Gu worms formed a complex and hidden Gu formation, hidden in this area. Unless it was used, even Fang Yuan could not find it.

“Such astonishing attainment!” Fang Yuan sighed.

By placing down this formation, he had benefited greatly.

Even though his formation path attainment level was ordinary, he had much insight.

“If a formation path Gu Immortal has great grandmaster attainment level, they would be able to use the dao marks of heaven and earth to arrange the formation. This Gu formation is similar. This makes me think of a historical figure.”

This person was called Immortal Lady Jiu Hua, she was a famous formation path great grandmaster in history.

Her style of setting up formation was to create myriad lights, beautiful and extraordinary.

Most importantly, she was from the same era as Long Hair Ancestor. Or more accurately, it was because Long Hair Ancestor had lived for too long.

“Maybe this transportation Gu formation was the result of a transaction between Long Hair Ancestor and Immortal Lady Jiu Hua.” Fang Yuan guessed.

The Gu formation was already completed.

Fang Yuan hesitated for a moment before activating the Gu formation.

With his vigilant nature, he would surely inspect the Gu formation.

But he had no research in formation path, and this Gu formation was made by a great grandmaster, it was too complex. Fang Yuan did not have the ability to inspect if there were flaws in it.

The Gu formation activated slowly, after a few minutes, the first step was completed.

Lights shone, an illusory formation manifested in the surrounding li. Fang Yuan was in the center, he could hear the sound of water becoming more quickly, but the formless force around him vanished.

“This Gu formation uses the immemorial corpse’s water path dao marks, no wonder Lang Ya land spirit wanted to choose a place like this to set up the Gu formation.”

“Gu formations that can transport Gu Immortals are very rare. Even though this Gu formation can do it, it takes a long time, it cannot be used for a speedy escape.”

Fang Yuan assessed as he activated the crucial Immortal Gu in his immortal aperture.

This Immortal Gu’s power spread out from his body, causing a rapid change.

The surrounding lights gathered at Fang Yuan, they turned from phantom to solid, surrounding Fang Yuan and condensing into a ball.

Fang Yuan felt an intense pressure.

But a moment later, the huge pressure vanished.

Bam!

With a loud sound, the ball of light exploded, turning into specks of light in the sky.

But Fang Yuan had disappeared.

A moment later, the area became tranquil.

As if nothing had ever happened.

“I am back in Lang Ya blessed land?” Fang Yuan’s body shook, his vision was covered in bright lights, the world was spinning rapidly. Suddenly, he felt that he was stepping on solid ground, he focused and looked ahead, his vision became clear, and he was already inside Lang Ya blessed land.

He was at the center of a huge Gu formation.

He had already come into contact with this Gu formation.

When he teleported from Feng Bo Cliff previously, he had landed here.

Fang Yuan had some understanding now: “It seems that this is the main formation, the ones at Tai Qiu, Feng Bo Cliff and others, are the sub formations. To use the super Gu formation, the key is that Immortal Gu.”

Lang Ya land spirit’s figure appeared.

He laughed loudly: “Fang Yuan, you did not disappoint me!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1090: Ancient Battle Formation Omni-directional Travel

The matter in Tai Qiu ended in success with Fang Yuan setting up the Gu formation.

Lang Ya land spirit did not shortchange him, he gave him the promised reward, a total of six hundred sect contribution points.

Using these points, Fang Yuan could exchange for many things, what attracted him the most were the transformation path Immortal Gu recipes inside Lang Ya Sect’s treasury.

Lang Ya Sect has three true inheritances, they came from three legendary people, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and Long Hair Ancestor. There were no transformation path true inheritances, but Lang Ya Sect had a huge array of Immortal Gu recipes, among them were many transformation path Immortal Gu recipes.

But Fang Yuan was not in a rush to exchange for them using sect contribution points.

He saved these sect contribution points for now.

Now was not the time to exchange them for transformation path Immortal Gu recipes, or the time to refine transformation path Immortal Gu.

It was not a good moment.

After transacting with Shadow Sect, and after the trip to Tai Qiu, Fang Yuan became deeply aware of his situation!

You’re reading on .com Thanks!

Even though he succeeded in setting up the transportation Gu formation, and could travel between Lang Ya blessed land and Tai Qiu quickly, Fang Yuan did not want to enter Tai Qiu again.

If he went again, it would be too dangerous.

“Dark limit Immortal Gu’s power has faded, it can only be used after some time, it is not safe anymore. Heaven’s will can think, I caught it off guard last time, but because setting up the Gu formation could not be done secretly, heaven’s will already knows about it, it will definitely try to influence the surrounding desolate beasts, ancient desolate beasts, and even immemorial desolate beasts!”

Since heaven’s will was trying its best to get rid of Fang Yuan, it was a no-brainer that heaven’s will was going to create all sorts of traps and arrangements in the surroundings of the immemorial desolate elephant corpse.

It was best for Fang Yuan to not go.

However, even though he was not going, Lang Ya Sect was going to take action there.

“Since Lang Ya land spirit has already accepted my suggestion, he will mobilize many hairy man Gu Immortals to cultivate transformation path.”

“Cultivating transformation path will require him to refine transformation path Immortal Gu. And to refine Immortal Gu, he would need immortal materials.”

“Lang Ya Sect has a huge treasury with many immortal materials, but the previous Lang Ya land spirit has controlled the blessed land for so long, and he had been constantly refining Gu. Thus, even though the treasury has many immortal materials, they are mostly rank eight or quasi-rank nine materials, rank six and seven materials are scarce.”

“Thus, Lang Ya land spirit will definitely set up sect missions soon to encourage hairy man Gu Immortals to go to Tai Qiu and kill desolate beasts. They can collect immortal materials to refine Gu, while also training the hairy man Gu Immortals to improve their battle strength. The second point is Lang Ya land spirit’s greatest concern!”

“Let these hairy man Gu Immortals be my pawns! Since heaven’s will can think, even if they are targeted, it is better than me being targeted.”

A cold light shone across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Lang Ya Sect was stronger than him by countless times, but at this moment, he became the chess player. The whole of Lang Ya Sect were his chess piece.

And the best thing was, even though Fang Yuan was plotting against Lang Ya Sect, he was also thinking about the future of Lang Ya Sect and its progress. Thus, he was not going against his alliance agreement.

“This is the tactical advantage of having more intel than the other side.” Fang Yuan sighed, he learned about the value of information once again.

Gu Masters of all paths had their own specialties.

Information path was not an exception among them.

But if its ability could be displayed fully, information path could give the Gu Master as much advantage as compared to any other path, if not more!

Of course, Fang Yuan’s advantage in information was because of his transactions with Shadow Sect.

And Shadow Sect definitely paid a high price to obtain information on heaven’s will and Lang Ya Sect.

“I have been lacking information path methods, from now on, I need to try and fix that!” Fang Yuan was determined.

Information path Gu Masters were skilled in collecting intelligence and setting up alliance agreements, they were carriers of information. This might not seem important for cultivation, but one could gain immense advantage from it.

Central Continent, Earth Abyss.

Loud sounds were reverberating here.

“A discovery!”

“We had searched that direction more than ten times... they are really well hidden.”

Ancient Soul Sect’s Gu Immortals reacted, they were enthusiastically charging towards the area with the sound.

Ying Wu Xie spat out a mouthful of blood, he was half-kneeling on the ground, not only was his expression downcast, he was also gravely injured, half his body was missing.

“A mere immortal zombie...” The Ancient Soul Sect Gu Immortals fighting with Ying Wu Xie floated in the air, looking down at Ying Wu Xie, they scoffed in disdain.

“Keep them alive!”

“Even as an immortal zombie, his concealment method is very incredible, we have to interrogate him for it.”

The other two Gu Immortals shouted, rushing here with rapid speed.

Ying Wu Xie laughed with a mocking tone: “You want my concealment method? Sure, I can tell you now!”

Oh no!

The three Ancient Soul Sect Gu Immortals’ expressions changed, they realized that this was the enemy’s plan.

Ying Wu Xie had purposely showed weakness to lure these three immortals over.

He was bait.

Since there was bait, there were surely plans to deal with the enemies.

Ancient Soul Sect’s three Gu Immortals did not react slowly, but Ying Wu Xie had prepared amply, how could they manage to escape?

In an instant, the super Gu formation, which had already charged up, activated.

Ancient Soul Sect’s three immortals fell into despair, they only felt that an endless force was restricting them from all directions.

At once, they could not move at all, they were helpless!

Next, under the three immortals’ expressions of disbelief, their bodies and souls were smashed into bits by the power of the super Gu formation.

Even though they resisted, they only lasted for less than three breaths of time.

“Hmph, I will collect some interest from you people first.” Ying Wu Xie snickered, his gaze was cold.

He had just spoke, when Earth Abyss trembled, sharp light shone dazzlingly, covering a vast surrounding range.

“So fast! It has only been so long, but Heavenly Court has already found my location and are moving here!” Ying Wu Xie was shocked.

But soon, he calmed down.

He flew into the super Gu formation.

The super Gu formation was overworked these last days from resisting Heavenly Court’s deductions, and after killing the three Ancient Soul Sect elite Gu Immortals earlier, it was greatly damaged and was on the brink of destruction.

But Ying Wu Xie did not care.

He was abandoning this base already.

It could not be saved.

“Master.” Shi Nu appeared beside Ying Wu Xie, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan followed behind.

The latter two were lacking Immortal Gu, their battle strength had fallen to the bottom. Shi Nu was the strongest, particularly as Ying Wu Xie had already returned him all of his Immortal Gu.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was worried: “Fang Yuan, your injuries...”

Ying Wu Xie smiled, waving his hand, stopping Tai Bai Yun Sheng: “No need to worry.”

After transacting with Fang Yuan, he had lost Fang Yuan’s body, his appearance changed, but he still had absolute control over these three people.

It was easy to deceive Tai Bai Yun Sheng, his body was destroyed when refining Gu, it was a good excuse that did not attract suspicion.

“The enemy is in front of us, let’s stop talking and leave.” At Ying Wu Xie’s will, the super Gu formation broke apart and the Immortal Gu that made up the Gu formation returned to him.

The other three immortals coordinated together, they gathered and stood at the north, south, east, and west directions with Ying Wu Xie.

Before leaving, Ying Wu Xie looked at the mysterious light in the sky as he laughed, he cried out loudly: “Central Continent... We will return with vengeance!”

He had transacted with Fang Yuan, obtaining a way out in this desperate situation, he had undergone a transformation, like jade that had been polished.

Even though he was escaping, when he spoke, morale was raised, it gave people hope from out of nowhere.

Move!

A bright light shone from Ying Wu Xie and the other immortals’ bodies.

They had practiced it extensively, they activated the Immortal Gu that they had refined recently, they burst out with power, fusing together into one mystical effect.

Bam...

With a loud sound, Ying Wu Xie and the others vanished.

Multiple rank eight Gu Immortals from Heavenly Court arrived from beyond the mystical lights.

“They left so quickly!” A female immortal was leading Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals.

She had a graceful figure and was adorned in a beautiful purple robe. Her eyes were like deep pools, with a sense of sorrow shrouding her face.

It was Fairy Zi Wei.

A troublesome figure with wisdom path attainment not inferior to Heaven

Overseeing Tower Lord.

The few times she took action, she caused Ying Wu Xie and the others to end up in despair. If not for Fang Yuan, Ying Wu Xie would have been dead for sure.

She looked at the rubble on the ground as she deduced, frowning: “A total of four Gu Immortals... strange, I deduced that Fang Yuan was here initially, but now it’s different. No matter what, they are from Shadow Sect, they have to be killed.”

She spoke casually, but there was deep killing intent hidden in her icy words.

A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal behind her spoke: “I am sure they cannot escape this time, I will go to capture them.”

Fairy Zi Wei smiled lightly, but there was bitterness in her smile: “We cannot go. These four are at the regional wall already. By now, they should already be inside the regional wall.”

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were surprised.

Someone asked: “So quickly?”

“This is an ancient battle formation, called Omni-directional Travel. Earlier, when Bo Qing awakened, he, along with the hairy man Gu Immortal Yu Mu Chun, immortal zombie Seven Star Child, and Blood Dragon Song Zi Xing teleported from Falling Heavenly River to Heavenly Lotus Sect, they used this method.”

“Even though we have Fixed Immortal Travel, this ancient battle formation uses people as the formation cores, it has lower restrictions regarding the Gu Immortals. We cannot stop them.”

Fairy Zi Wei deduced again as she said slowly.

In just a moment, she had completely understood what method Ying Wu Xie used to escape for his life.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1091: Retreating After Fighting

Fang Yuan inspected his immortal aperture.

His divine sense was roaming the huge space inside his immortal aperture, all around, he saw barren land.

“I have too few earth path dao marks, this barren terrain has few resources, most plants cannot be grown. To improve it, I will need to add earth path dao marks, other than that, all other methods do not solve the fundamental problem.” Fang Yuan thought.

The sovereign immortal aperture was too big, it surpassed common sense.

Even if Fang Yuan’s divine sense spread out completely, he would have to spend a lot of time.

But when Fang Yuan inspected his immortal aperture with a focus and a target, his efficiency was greatly raised.

Different divine senses were spreading towards different areas.

Gradually, the resource points that Fang Yuan was managing were displayed in his mind.

Western Desert had sandy terrain.

There was a huge pit with charred sand surrounding it, the temperature was high.

Inside the pit, there were a huge number of eerie fire dragon pythons coiling around, procreating.

This was the first pit.

Normally, eerie fire dragon pythons lived in clusters of two to three. But here, Fang Yuan used the Northern Plains Dong Fang tribe’s special method to raise them, he placed many eerie fire dragon pythons together, promoting the creation of more infant snakes.

These eerie fire dragon pythons came from Dong Fang tribe’s blessed land previously.

He had obtained this rearing method from Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul, it was the original copy and had many fine details clearly stated in it.

Because of this, the eerie fire dragon pythons were growing in numbers at a rapid rate.

Several li away from this pit, there were three other pits.

The number of dragon pythons in each pit was not fewer than the first pit!

“It has been less than a month outside, but the time inside here passes at sixty times the rate, I have quadrupled the number of eerie fire dragon pythons already.” Fang Yuan nodded.

Sixty times the rate of time, it was terrifying!

The eerie fire dragon pythons had been living in Hu Immortal blessed land for a long time, but there was little growth in them, the result was far inferior to what Fang Yuan was seeing now.

This was because Hu Immortal blessed land was placed in the main world, the rate of time was much slower, the resources grew more slowly.

The eerie fire dragon pythons were like this, so too were the dragonfish, regretful spiders, arrow bamboo forest, star fragment grass fields and others, they increased in scale to varying degrees.

But in terms of quality, the arrow bamboo forest and star fragment grass were growing less well than in Star Form blessed land in terms of vitality.

This was because the sovereign immortal aperture had fewer star path dao marks than Star Form blessed land.

When Gu Immortals manage their immortal apertures, they had to inspect all aspects of the immortal aperture, to prevent missing something.

Especially when immortal apertures were small and all sorts of resources were placed closely together, they might negatively influence each other’s growth.

But Fang Yuan’s situation was fine.

The sovereign immortal aperture had huge space, all sorts of resources had their respective environments, there was little chance of a problem occurring.

“When treasure yellow heaven opens, I will sell these resources, the rewards will surely be promising.” Fang Yuan concluded, feeling pleased.

Treasure yellow heaven closing had a huge influence on him.

He was trying to manage and construct resources points in the immortal aperture, but without treasure yellow heaven, he could not buy much. Even though Lang Ya Sect’s inventory was huge, they were mostly Gu refinement immortal materials, they were not useful to Fang Yuan.

Stopping the use of his divine sense, only one last part went towards Mini Northern Plains.

This time, Mini Northern Plains was Fang Yuan’s focus.

Roar roar roar...

In Mini Northern Plains, large numbers of snow monsters were roaming around.

The further north he went, the colder the weather, there was even snow in the air. On the ground, there was a thin layer of frost.

Fang Yuan observed carefully, the size of the snow had expanded since his last investigation.

This was all due to the previous earthly calamity.

Fang Yuan had undergone the first earthly calamity in the icy plain. It was powerful, but Fang Yuan also gained much from it, he obtained a huge number of ice and snow path dao marks.

Because of these dao marks, Mini Northern Plains had snow falling from the sky.

This environment suited the snow monsters more.

Currently in Mini Northern Plains, there were countless ordinary snow monsters, large numbers of desolate beast snow monsters, and a small number of ancient snow monsters ruling them.

Before transacting with Shadow Sect, Fang Yuan had planned to keep these snow monsters as a form of resource inside his immortal aperture.

But after the transactions, Fang Yuan understood what heaven’s will was, he was determined to eliminate these snow monsters!

Because these snow monsters were filled to the brim with heaven’s will.

Fang Yuan came with killing intent, he mobilized his divine sense, a strength path immortal zombie brought along a large number of immortal essence as Gu worms flew around the body.

Sword path killer move — Triple Layered Sword Wave!

The Gu worms were used one by one, immortal essence was expended, a moment later, a grand wave burst out.

Rumble...

The silvery sword wave charged out with countless ripples, giving off killing intent that was colder than ice.

Ordinary snow monsters could not resist, they were engulfed by the sword wave and cut into pieces. The pieces were cut further into specks, before being completely eliminated, nothing remained eventually.

But those desolate beast snow monsters could resist.

But they only lasted a few breaths of time before being destroyed by the sword wave.

Sword path had extremely strong offense. It was one of the five strongest paths for fighting in the current Gu Immortal world.

Triple layered sword wave was an outstanding killer move, the wave of attacks became stronger each consecutive time. When Fang Yuan was undergoing tribulation, he used this move to kill the ruin bats made from snow, barely surviving.

After three sword waves, he killed thousands of ordinary snow monsters and six desolate beast snow monsters, it was quite a good result.

The thousands of snow monsters did not expend much of the sword waves. But the six desolate beast snow monsters, each one used up a lot of energy, causing the three waves to expend.

Roar!

Following a loud roar, a seventy feet snow monster rushed towards him with unbounded rage.

Along with it, there were several desolate beast snow monsters and ten thousand ordinary snow monsters.

A huge snow monster group charged forth like an army, towards Fang Yuan with killing intent.

Fang Yuan moved the immortal zombie body, retreating!

He was currently controlling this strength path immortal zombie to fight using his immortal essence and Gu worms.

This strength path immortal zombie was obtained from Blazing Heaven Demoness, its immortal aperture had been destroyed long ago.

Immortal essence and Gu worms could only be brought alongside the immortal zombie, it was very unsafe for fighting.

Thus, to eliminate these snow monsters, Fang Yuan chose to stay at range to attack them.

This was a shameless tactic.

Every fight was basically at a new location!

After another fight, he would retreat again.

The snow monsters charged imposingly, but when they arrived, Fang Yuan had already escaped, nowhere to be seen.

The snow monsters’ rage could not be vented, they growled loudly, causing vibrations in the air. The ancient snow monsters growled, throwing snowballs around, as they flew like meteors, scattering.

Man is the spirit of all living beings, with a difference in intelligence, Fang Yuan held the initiative, these snow monsters could only take a beating passively.

After getting to a safe distance, the strength path immortal zombie that Fang Yuan was controlling stopped moving, stopping to rest.

Even though his body was uninjured, Fang Yuan paid a price.

It was his green grape immortal essence.

Activating triple layered sword wave used a lot of immortal essence!

And his Lang Ya Sect contribution points.

Because the Immortal Gu that formed triple layered sword wave included not just the core Immortal Gu, Wave Sword, but also other, water path Immortal Gu. Fang Yuan had to borrow these water path Immortal Gu from Lang Ya land spirit, he had to spend a lot of sect contribution points.

All in all, the cost of using triple layered sword wave once was high.

But now, Fang Yuan had a lot of resources to trade, he had enough profits to sustain the immortal essence cost. In terms of sect contribution points, because of the trip to Tai Qiu, he had obtained a huge number of them. In the short term, they were not an issue.

After resting, the snow monster group had settled down, before Fang Yuan started his slaughter again.

“I have to kill all of these snow monsters before the second earthly calamity comes. Otherwise, the calamities would make use of this and work together, I would die in the second earthly calamity.” Fang Yuan was aware of this.

The calamities and tribulations of a Gu Immortal become stronger and stronger each time.

Fang Yuan’s second earthly calamity was bound to be stronger than the first.

If the snow monsters from the first earthly calamity remained, and coordinated with the second earthly calamity, Fang Yuan’s chances of surviving would be slim, he would almost certainly get into a desperate situation!

This was not the first time Fang Yuan had acted.

More than ten days had passed since he returned to Lang Ya blessed land. Every day, Fang Yuan went to kill snow monsters.

Snow monsters were dying on a large scale, their sizes were shrinking, but many were still left, Fang Yuan had to work harder.

But if he killed many of them in one day, he would cause a huge commotion.

Even though snow monsters had low intelligence, they had survival instincts, other than growling to vent their anger, they could also communicate with one another and alert each other.

After Fang Yuan attacked them multiple times, these snow monsters were alert already, they went under the protection of the ancient snow monsters, forming a tight defense.

Fang Yuan could not attack easily, he withdrew the strength path immortal zombie and stopped killing snow monsters for the day.

Placing his focus away from the immortal aperture, Fang Yuan stood up.

He flew out of cloud city, soon, he came to Luo Po Valley.

Every day, he had to cultivate his soul.

“Lord Fang Yuan.”

“Elder Fang Yuan is here again? You are really hardworking when it comes to cultivating, this is very admirable.”

In Luo Po Valley, there were other Gu Immortals. These hairy man Gu Immortals were familiar with Fang Yuan, because he had guided them in combat tactics.

Fang Yuan entered the valley, they took the initiative to greet him.

Fang Yuan also replied to them politely.

Thanks to the spy, Sixth Hair, Fang Yuan could get along well with these hairy man Gu Immortals.

Selecting a spot, after inspecting the area, Fang Yuan had his soul fly out, starting his cultivation.

Pain was ingrained into his soul, causing it to tremble intensely.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, he was unwavering.

After a long while, a few hairy man Gu Immortals who were watching him talked among themselves after retracting their gazes.

“A cultivation maniac!”

“It is hard to think that he can stay in Luo Po Valley for two hours a day!”

“This pain... I cannot even endure some minutes of it...”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1092: Self Will Gu

Fang Yuan’s soul was roaming in Luo Po Valley.

He did not move far, only around the vicinity of his body.

Once in a while, there would be bewilderment fog drifting towards him.

Fang Yuan’s soul was bathed in the bewilderment fog, he was like a book soaked in water, slowly opening up.

“The more condensed my soul is, the harder it is to loosen. After cultivating here for so many days, my soul is more than ten times as condensed as before, this is an incredible improvement! However, compared to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, this is truly insignificant.” Fang Yuan assessed himself, thinking about the battle of Yi Tian Mountain once again.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was the founder of soul path, even though he died, his soul remained, he still had the highest soul path foundation in the world.

Spectral Soul’s soul was condensed to a terrifying level.

Ordinary souls were like illusory silhouettes, they could interfere with the mind at most, they could not affect the material world.

But Spectral Soul was so condensed that he could resist the grand tribulation with his soul. The imposing appearance was stuck deeply in Fang Yuan’s mind. Even though he lost his memories due to the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, this portion of his memories was not lost.

“Perhaps even if Spectral Soul came to Luo Po Valley, the bewilderment fog would have no effect on him.” Fang Yuan thought as he sighed to himself: “When can I have this level of cultivation myself?”

If Fang Yuan’s soul had the foundation of Spectral Soul, then even if the immortal zombie body had a strong trap, it would be useless.

Bewilderment fog gathered and scattered, soon, Luo Po wind started to blow.

Fang Yuan’s soul was bathed in the wind, traces of wind cut his soul apart like steel threads.

Pain that was greater than dying by a thousand cuts made Fang Yuan’s soul tremble.

But Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, enduring this wind.

This wind was not very strong, it did not last very long either, Fang Yuan could endure it.

But if he encountered strong winds, Fang Yuan would retreat wisely, and keep his soul inside his body.

With the protection of his body, Luo Po wind’s might was greatly reduced.

After this wind passed, Fang Yuan’s soul shrunk by thirty percent.

To play safe, he returned to his body.

Guts Gu!

Guts Gu were shattered in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture, as they turned into a mysterious power that affected his soul.

Soon, his soul became strong again.

The injuries from his earlier cultivation vanished completely!

Luo Po Valley and Dang Hun Mountain were both sacred lands for soul cultivation.

With these two in his hands, Fang Yuan’s soul path cultivation level rose rapidly, he was improving immensely.

Like this, after the bewilderment fog and Luo Po wind, Fang Yuan’s soul was tempered like steel, it became more refined and condensed.

But he did not know when he could enter the immortal zombie body.

Two hours later, Fang Yuan’s soul started to feel agitated.

He wisely stopped his cultivation, his soul returned to his body and he left Luo Po Valley.

Two hours was Fang Yuan’s personal limit, he had learned it after cultivation multiple times.

There were three aspects in soul cultivation.

Everyone knew about strengthening the soul and refining the soul, but these were just two of them.

There was a third aspect, that was soul pacification.

Strengthening the soul could make the soul grow.

Refining the soul could make it more condensed and pure.

And pacifying the soul was to allow rest and recovery.

The three complemented one another, if one only focused on one aspect, they would lose out on a lot, it was not worth it.

Among which, guts Gu from Dang Hun Mountain were the best to strengthen the soul. Luo Po wind and bewilderment fog were the best for soul refinement. And finally, the most effective way to pacify the soul was the pacifying soul soup in Bewitching Lake.

Bewitching Lake was inside the door of life and death. In the legends, after Verdant Great Sun died, he had remained drunk by the riverside.

“The door of life and death is inside Shadow Sect’s blessed land, and Shadow Sect’s blessed land is at Southern Border’s Yi Tian Mountain, it is currently engulfed by the giant dream realm. Otherwise, if I could obtain the door of life and death, I would be able to gather all three and cultivate my soul with the highest efficiency!”

Fang Yuan was only thinking about it.

That giant dream realm was the greatest obstacle. Currently, he could not pass that obstacle no matter what.

And most importantly, there was heaven’s will.

Fang Yuan’s every action drew the attention of heaven’s will.

Even if he was going to act in the future, Fang Yuan would still be most wary of heaven’s will.

As he flew, Fang Yuan did not return to his cloud city first.

He rushed to the twelfth cloud city.

Soon, he saw the hairy man Gu Immortal Twelfth Hair.

“Elder Fang Yuan, you are here. This is the self will Gu that you wanted me to refine. Inspect them.” Twelfth Hair said in a warm tone.

Fang Yuan waved his hand, keeping all of the self will Gu, saying: “No need for inspection. Twelfth elder, I trust you.”

Twelfth Hair laughed, he was deeply moved.

Before Fang Yuan left, he held his hand as he said with much gratitude: “I have to thank you for giving me this chance to refine self will Gu. Otherwise, when treasure yellow heaven opens, I would not have the capital to buy desolate beasts.”

“We are kindred spirits, this is a win-win situation, I hope we can continue to work together.” Fang Yuan smiled as he replied.

“Of course!” Twelfth Hair replied candidly.

After the transaction, Fang Yuan returned to his cloud city.

“Self will Gu.” In the room, Fang Yuan mumbled as he held a rank five mortal Gu.

This Gu worm looked like a scorpion, it was tiny. It had a unique appearance, it looked like folded paper. In Fang Yuan’s hand, it was very light. When it moved its limbs, there was a light sound, it moved very slowly around Fang Yuan’s palm.

Self will Gu’s recipe came from Shadow Sect.

Fang Yuan was a complete otherworldly demon now, he was unaffected by heaven’s will. But other Gu Immortals or Gu Masters were not like him, how could they resist heaven’s will and prevent it from subconsciously affecting them?

Shadow Sect gave him a solution, that was self will Gu.

This was a wisdom path Gu worm, it could produce a special type of will — self will. Using self will Gu to cleanse oneself, it could block and prevent the influence of heaven’s will.

This was an important part of Shadow Sect’s research after a long period of experimentation to resist heaven’s will.

Fang Yuan obtained self will Gu’s recipe in the transactions with Sixth Hair, he started refining it himself.

But the result was not good.

He was not a refinement path expert, he could not achieve much on his own. In particular, his time and effort were very precious, he could not waste time on refining Gu.

Earlier, he refined change form Immortal Gu because it was too significant to him.

But although self will Gu was only a mortal Gu, Fang Yuan had a great need for it.

Thus, after brief hesitation, he gradually felt that he should expose the recipe of self will Gu and give it to the hairy man Gu Immortals from Lang Ya Sect, to get them to help Fang Yuan refine it.

The price of asking Lang Ya land spirit to help was too high and unnecessary.

Among the hairy man Gu Immortals in Lang Ya Sect, other than Sixth Hair, the rest were all willing to work for Fang Yuan.

Because Fang Yuan was already close to them, or even had a good relationship. Also, Lang Ya Sect focused a lot on sect contribution points. After the trip to Tai Qiu, Fang Yuan had accumulated a lot of sect contribution points, the other hairy man Gu Immortals needed them.

Twelfth Hair was not the only one of them, Fang Yuan also asked for help from other hairy man Gu Immortals.

He had set the Gu refinement fees to a very low price.

It was not hard for Fang Yuan to do this.

The hairy man Gu Immortals were quite guileless, and most importantly, they were skilled in Gu refinement while having some unwillingness to fight, they were willing to accept Fang Yuan’s missions.

This was not the first batch of self will Gu that Fang Yuan obtained.

After placing the self will Gu into his immortal aperture, Fang Yuan inspected the other Gu worms.

He had shown a trusting and casual attitude with Twelfth Hair, but he was a vigilant person, after receiving the goods, he inspected them carefully.

After all, Lang Ya Sect had spies like Sixth Hair.

Fang Yuan did not know that Sixth Hair was the final spy remaining. But he was cautious, he was wary of Sixth Hair as well as other potential spies.

The inspection took some time, but compared to refining these mortal Gu himself, it was insignificant.

After inspecting that there were no issues, Fang Yuan nodded, showing a look of admiration.

“These are refined by hairy man Gu Immortals after all, the quality is really superb!”

Fang Yuan kept the self will Gu in his immortal aperture.

Or rather, he sent them into Mini Northern Plains. He activated them one by one, until these mortal self will Gu were expended.

A large amount of self will swept through several battlefields, cleansing all of the heaven’s will inside. Other than those inside the snow monsters, the battlefield had none of heaven’s will left.

“These self will Gu are the best weapon against heaven’s will, but they are very flawed. They are only rank five and are one time consumable Gu, they are gone after I use them.” Fang Yuan sighed.

He held deep suspicion towards this: “This self will Gu recipe has to be an incomplete version. Even though Shadow Sect gave it to me, they surely have a better recipe! But in those transactions, I requested for too many things, this is the limit, I could not obtain a better recipe.”

Like this, Fang Yuan got rid of the snow monsters in his immortal aperture and used self will to get rid of the heaven’s will.

At the same time, he used Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley to cultivate soul path. His soul path foundation was accumulating rapidly.

Other than this, he even squeezed out some time to coach the hairy man Gu Immortals in fighting. Secretly, he got familiar with his Immortal Gu and practiced his killer moves.

Treasure yellow heaven’s closure was also a huge impact on Fang Yuan.

The construction of his immortal aperture was forced to stop, even though Fang Yuan had the capital and plans.

Days passed by.

While Fang Yuan anticipated the opening of treasure yellow heaven, the second earthly calamity gradually got closer.

Lang Ya Sect’s plan towards Tai Qiu had never stopped.

From time to time, hairy man Gu Immortals received sect missions and used the transportation formation to head to Tai Qiu.

These hairy man Gu Immortals’ first mission over there was to change the environment and stabilize the transportation Gu formation.

What made Fang Yuan feel strange was, these hairy man Gu Immortals did not face any difficulties, it was smooth sailing, heaven’s will did not seem to be targeting them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1093: Rejection

Lang Ya blessed land, Cloud Cover Continent.

In the first cloud city, Lang Ya land spirit was attending to Fang Yuan.

“Here, Fang Yuan, have some tea. This is the famous fire rainbow tea!” Lang Ya land spirit said with a warm expression.

Fang Yuan received the cup, he saw that this cup of tea was glowing with a red light. Looking closely, there seemed to be a rainbow inside, swimming around like a fish, moving up and down in a jolly manner.

Fang Yuan had five hundred years of experience, he had a trove of knowledge.

Ordinary tea needed to be drunken slowly and appreciated. But this tea was different, one had to gulp it in one mouthful. Most importantly, it was the rainbow inside the tea, after drinking it, one could taste the true fire rainbow tea.

Fang Yuan held the cup as he looked at the tea, he did not drink it.

His current body was very outstanding, at once, countless thoughts churned in his mind, he was pondering deeply into an idea.

The current Lang Ya land spirit liked drinking fire rainbow tea. The previous Lang Ya land spirit drank cloud smoke tea instead.

The two types of tea showed the difference in the personalities of both Lang Ya land spirits.

The main ingredient of the cloud smoke tea was float ball tea grass.

This was planted in Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s blessed land, as his main resource. This float ball tea grass floated in the sky, it was not ordinary.

Float ball tea grass was quite high-end, because it grew in the sky, mortals could not pick it.

But in Northern Plains, there was a type of tea flower that grew from the ground and was deeply liked. It was the milk tea flower.

This type of flower grew in the plains of Northern Plains, there were a huge number of them. In some places with lots of aquatic plants, they could be seen everywhere in large numbers. The flower of the milk tea flower was in the shape of a cup, every few days, nectar would fill to the brim of the cup.

The nectar was sweet and delicious, it attracted countless bees and butterflies, it used them to spread the pollen of the milk tea flower.

Of course, people could drink it too.

Almost all Gu Masters living in Northern Plains, or even mortals, had tasted this natural beverage.

Actually, tea and alcohol were very popular drinks in Northern Plains, as well as the other four regions.

In Southern Border, there were blue sea cloud tea bricks for sale. This tea brick was not produced in Southern Border, but Eastern Sea instead. Yi clan, one of the super forces of Southern Border, had a close relationship with Eastern Sea. Every year, they imported a huge number of blue sea cloud tea bricks and sold them for great profits.

In Central Continent, there were even more types of tea. Like Spirit Affinity House’s qingpu tea, Myriad Dragon Dock’s dragon shadow tea, they were very famous.

Some tea were specialties of Gu Immortals, only that specific Gu Immortal could make it.

For example, Fairy Li Shan’s snow oil tea, or Feng Jiu Ge’s jade sea tide tea.

Lang Ya land spirit saw that Fang Yuan was not drinking it, he coughed and urged: “Elder Fang Yuan, quickly drink it! You might not know, but this is the best way to drink this fire rainbow tea.”

Fang Yuan waved his hand: “I have heard about fire rainbow tea long ago, but when I held this cup of tea, I suddenly thought of many things and was lost in my thoughts.”

Lang Ya land spirit: “Then what was Elder Fang Yuan thinking of? Is there an issue with Lang Ya Sect developing in Tai Qiu?”

“No, not this.” Fang Yuan smiled, he freely picked out something in his mind and used it as an excuse.

Lang Ya land spirit showed a look of disappointment, he replied: “You are the owner of Spring Autumn Cicada, you came from the future and are very knowledgeable, you have experienced many things, and know a lot about tea. But do you know? Be it tea or wine, they have both been spread far and wide due to food path.”

“Oh? Is that so?” Fang Yuan was deeply interested.

Or more accurately speaking, he was interested in food path.

He was managing his immortal aperture now, the main goal was to have multiple resources that could satisfy the feeding requirements of his Immortal Gu.

But if he had methods of food path, it would be easier for him to feed his Immortal Gu.

Unfortunately, food path was very mysterious, there was only a short period in history when it flourished. Afterwards, it spread much less, it was rarer than wisdom path inheritances. It was on the brink of extinction.

Regarding food path, Fang Yuan had learned some secrets during the battle of Yi Tian Mountain through Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s memories.

The creator of food path was not a human Gu Immortal, but a beastman Gu Immortal. This was likely the reason why food path was in its current state.

But to Fang Yuan, it did not matter who made this path, as long as it has use to him. Most human Gu Immortals had a sense of racial pride and superiority, but Fang Yuan did not.

If being a hairy man could help him reach the goal of eternal life, he would discard his human identity immediately without hesitation and become a hairy man.

After realizing that Lang Ya land spirit had some understanding towards food path, Fang Yuan continued to ask.

Lang Ya land spirit revealed: “The creation of any type of tea or wine is actually an incomplete Gu recipe.”

“If it is completed, a unique tea Gu or wine Gu would be refined. There are already many types of wine Gu or tea Gu, like the famous liquor worm and big smoke tea Gu.”

Liquor worm was a familiar one, Fang Yuan had used it after rebirth to grow rapidly.

Big smoke tea Gu was a type of Gu worm that could make a Gu Master addicted and become decadent. It was heavily suppressed by the people in power, it was a type of drug in this world.

“It is a pity that food path is facing extinction before it even became widespread.”

“Right now, when many Gu Immortals want to test their refinement path attainment, they do not need to join the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, they can compete by making a cup of tea each, tasting and determining who is superior.”

Lang Ya land spirit’s answer disappointed Fang Yuan slightly.

The land spirit did not know much, the contents were mostly about refinement path.

“Spectral Soul’s main body definitely knows a lot of food path methods. After all, he had inherited a food path true inheritance in his life. Unfortunately, he is trapped in the giant dream realm now, and is being weakened continuously. It is too hard for me to get anything from him...” This thought flashed across Fang Yuan’s mind.

Lang Ya land spirit and Fang Yuan spoke for a while, he saw that Fang Yuan could not stop talking about tea, he got anxious and said openly: “Fang Yuan, I will speak frankly. I invited you for tea because I have a mission for you!”

“Here it comes.” Fang Yuan thought, he looked at the land spirit: “Please speak.”

The land spirit was straightforward, Fang Yuan had guessed his intentions long ago.

As expected, Lang Ya land spirit said at the next moment: “You know about my plan to develop in Tai Qiu. You suggested it yourself, after all. There is also the transportation Gu formation, you placed it yourself.”

“Because of your actions, recently, our Gu Immortals could enter Tai Qiu smoothly and modify the environment to expand our base. But now, we have a problem.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “First supreme elder is talking about the falling star hound?”

“That’s right. This damned ancient desolate beast injured several Gu Immortals of our sect. I have already placed a mission to exterminate it, but everyone who took the mission returned in failure. I know that the only person who can beat this falling star hound is you, Fang Yuan. But why did you not take that mission?” Lang Ya land spirit asked directly.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly: “I am very busy recently.”

He had his difficulties to deal with.

More than a month had passed since the last earthly calamity.

The next earthly calamity was coming.

Fang Yuan was preparing for this earthly calamity now.

But Fang Yuan was not going to tell Lang Ya land spirit about the earthly calamity. In fact, he was keeping the sovereign immortal aperture as a secret from Lang Ya land spirit.

As long as he did not cause harm to Lang Ya blessed land, it was not going against the alliance agreement of Lang Ya Sect.

This secret was Fang Yuan’s trump card, he was going to keep it hidden. Of course, Shadow Sect knew all about it.

But Fang Yuan knew that Shadow Sect’s plan was to take back sovereign immortal fetus Gu. In this case, they were not going to expose the existence of the sovereign immortal aperture — because that was just causing more problems for themselves in the future, right?

From Lang Ya land spirit’s perspective, it was very fortunate that Fang Yuan could revive and become a living person. As for the revival method, Fang Yuan had lots of excuses and explanations. He knew many ways for immortal zombies to revive after all!

Fang Yuan’s difficulties could not be said.

Lang Ya land spirit nodded: “You are very busy indeed.”

He was a land spirit, he knew everything happening inside Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya land spirit said: “You cultivate really hard, but completing the mission also helps you in your cultivation. Don’t forget about dog shit luck Immortal Gu. To feed it, you need to find six types of desolate hounds and use their faeces to feed this luck path Gu worm.”

“In the past, when my previous self fed Dog Shit Luck, he made use of treasure yellow heaven, purchasing from there. But now, treasure yellow heaven is closed, even after it reopens, I would suggest you rear some desolate hounds in your immortal aperture. You also know the benefit of doing this.”

“Lord’s words are truly enlightening!” Fang Yuan immediately nodded.

Dog Shit Luck was very important to him.

Against heaven’s will, luck path could be used.

Fate and luck.

Fate was predetermined, it could not be changed.

But luck was ever-changing, it could be made of use.

This precious information was obtained from the transactions between Fang Yuan and Shadow Sect.

Fang Yuan’s exploration was known by heaven’s will, it caused a beast tide and tried to eliminate him. But at the crucial moment, Fang Yuan found an immemorial desolate corpse and used it to set up the formation.

Thinking about it, Fang Yuan felt that this was not a coincidence, it was likely thanks to Dog Shit Luck.

This Immortal Gu had no use towards offense or defense, but its passive help was huge.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable... self luck, all living being’s luck, heaven and earth luck... Dog Shit Luck is among the key parts of the self luck true inheritance, I am in possession of it. All living being’s luck was hidden in Imperial Court blessed land, Connect Luck, Calamity Beckoning, and Fortune Rivalling Heaven were from there. What a pity!”

Fang Yuan had a scary guess recently.

Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed because of him. Back then, he was influenced by Mo Yao’s fake will, but was he unaffected by heaven’s will? Did heaven’s will use him as a tool to destroy Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s all living being’s luck true inheritance?

From heaven’s will’s perspective, it had to take away surpluses while replenishing deficits.

Fate was the best method that heaven’s will had.

After fate Gu was broken by Red Lotus Demon Venerable, the power of luck path burst out, creating Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Lang Ya land spirit sat up, muttering: “Elder Fang Yuan, if you can take this mission and complete it, regardless of whether you capture or kill the falling star hound, you will receive eight hundred sect contribution points!”

“Eight hundred...” Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed.

But next, he thought about it and answered: “I’ll have to say no.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1094: In This World, What Is Most Important Is Myself

Fang Yuan flew in the sky.

Before leaving, he looked back at the cloud city behind him.

He showed a bitter expression, he sighed deeply before flying away.

Last time, he accepted Lang Ya land spirit’s mission to explore Tai Qiu, the land spirit was happy and the meeting ended well. But now, Fang Yuan rejected him, he did not accept the mission to take down the falling star hound, the meeting ended poorly.

In cloud city, Lang Ya land spirit sat gritting his teeth.

He held in his anger, he was holding the cup, but before he drank the tea, he smashed it towards the ground.

“Fang Yuan, this fellow!” Lang Ya land spirit clenched his fists, grinding his teeth, feeling very unhappy.

However, he could see Fang Yuan’s expression before leaving, the anger in him subsided a little.

“Fang Yuan, oh Fang Yuan, you might be really busy, cultivating so intensely and having your own plans. But this matter affects the development of Lang Ya Sect, you are a member of the sect. At the crucial moment, how can you not sacrifice yourself and defend the interest of the sect? You are an outsider after all! You are not a hairy man Gu Immortal!”

Lang Ya land spirit thought of this and squinted, there was a cold glint in his eyes.

In his position, Lang Ya land spirit could not force Fang Yuan to accept the mission if he did not want to.

He created Lang Ya Sect, all of the members were under an alliance agreement. But there were no rules that would allow him to force members to do missions that they were unwilling to do. Of course, when Lang Ya Sect was in a life and death crisis, there were rules that would be enforced.

But currently, Lang Ya Sect was developing Tai Qiu, it had nothing to do with fatal danger. If Fang Yuan was unwilling, there was nothing Lang Ya land spirit could do.

Lang Ya land spirit could not sit, he stood up and paced around the room.

His arms were behind his back, he lowered his head and pondered, he felt troubled and frustrated, his frown was growing deeper: “Fang Yuan is unwilling to do it, what can I do about the falling star hound?”

Thinking about it hard, there were no good solutions.

Lang Ya land spirit himself could not leave Lang Ya blessed land.

There was another way, that was the ancient battle formation Heavenly Giant Solor.

But Lang Ya land spirit was in control of the most crucial Immortal Gu that constituted the formation, now that Refinement Cauldron, an Immortal Gu House, was incomplete, this was one of the strongest remaining methods to protect Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya land spirit did not want to lend Heavenly Giant Solor over this situation, what if an unexpected mishap happened?

Lang Ya land spirit had a clear view of the circumstances.

“Sigh! Do I really need to do what Fang Yuan suggested? I might as well use this falling star hound as a grindstone and develop the fighting abilities of these hairy man Gu Immortals?” Lang Ya land spirit sighed.

Fang Yuan flew in the air, his clothing fluttered in the wind.

Raging winds brushed past his face, the sound of the wind was clear and loud.

He was cold and impassive on the inside.

His bitter smile and sigh earlier were just an act.

Fang Yuan knew: Inside Lang Ya blessed land, Lang Ya land spirit knew almost everything, he had a huge investigative range. Otherwise, he would not be able to collect so many lifespan Gu.

Because Lang Ya blessed land had existed since long ago, it had a deep foundation, and an uncountable number of dao marks. This allowed Lang Ya land spirit’s abilities to be very developed in this blessed land, other land spirits could not compare to him.

“My current plan is to rely on Lang Ya Sect to cultivate. I am the chess player, and Lang Ya Sect are my chess pieces. If I accept that mission, wouldn’t I become the pawn myself, risking my life for Lang Ya Sect?”

You’re reading on .com Thanks!

“Hmph! Heaven’s will has its attention on Tai Qiu, it is very dangerous there. I suspect that heaven’s will has already set a trap, but because it has not found me, and because of the immemorial corpse, it is biding its time...”

Fang Yuan was vigilant, in this situation, he was not going to go to Tai Qiu.

He wanted to cultivate transformation path, he had to refine transformation path Immortal Gu, and kill desolate beasts to get immortal materials. But he did not need to do these himself.

Lang Ya Sect was trying to develop in Tai Qiu, it would do all these. Fang Yuan only needed to use his sect contribution points and stay behind to cultivate.

Not mentioning the danger and the possibility of a trap from heaven’s will. Even if there were no such thing, Fang Yuan was not going to delay his own cultivation speed!

In this world, what is most important is myself.

Fang Yuan had a firm attitude.

He was mentally prepared for this unpleasant meeting already.

“I will definitely not waste my time for Lang Ya Sect, but I need to handle my relationship with Lang Ya land spirit well.”

“If such arguments happen often, my relationship with Lang Ya land spirit will worsen. At some point, Lang Ya land spirit might be unable to control himself, he might chase me out of the sect or even kill me.”

“For the current period of time, I still need Lang Ya Sect’s power. At least, during this second earthly calamity, I need to borrow those water path Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan calmly analyzed his situation.

He had once been in conflict with the previous Lang Ya land spirit and their relationship became icy cold. That was a mistake, Fang Yuan alerted himself not to make the same mistake again.

“Sometimes, if the situation permits, I can and have to try and help out.”

“I am purely making use of Lang Ya Sect to bring convenience for my cultivation.”

“Only my own strength and cultivation level are dependable.”

Heaven’s will could affect many things, but the extent of its influence was limited. Heaven’s will was not a fake will, capable of directly colliding with the thoughts in one’s mind to distort the results of their thinking.

Heaven’s will could not compare to fake will in that regard.

After hearing about heaven’s will from Shadow Sect, Fang Yuan learned that heaven’s will was, in essence, simply a type of will.

Heaven’s will could, at most, make very subtle influences.

Thus, heaven’s will used Fang Yuan as the tool to deal with Shadow Sect and Spectral Soul, it had not exposed itself, it created a huge scheme and progressed slowly, only towards the end did it bare its fangs.

But at the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Fang Yuan, based on his nature as half an otherworldly demon, broke free of heaven’s will’s planning and resulted in the current outcome.

Thus, to deal with heaven’s will, the best method was to raise one’s cultivation level and strength themselves.

For example, when Qi Zai chased after Fang Yuan, it was because Fang Yuan was a rank six Gu Immortal, he was weaker. If Fang Yuan was rank eight, Qi Zai would not foolishly pursue him.

Similarly, against the cloud beasts, if Fang Yuan had the strength, he could kill them easily. It was because he was weak that he had to escape and run away.

“Thus, even if earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations are the best timing for heaven’s will to get rid of me, I must face them without any fear! Every time I pass the calamities and tribulations, I would be one step closer to breaking free from heaven’s will’s restrictions, I will grow stronger and stronger, until I can face it head on. When I become a Demon Venerable, when I am invincible in this world, what can heaven’s will do to me?”

Fang Yuan was aware of this, he was prepared for it.

Returning to his cloud city, he was informed that a hairy man envoy had visited him.

Fang Yuan met with this hairy man envoy.

He was a rank five peak stage Gu Master.

“Lord, this is something my city lord had ordered me to bring to you.” The hairy man Gu Master said respectfully.

Saying this, he held up a wooden box with both hands.

Fang Yuan received it but did not open the box, he took a look at this hairy man envoy.

With just one glance, the hairy man Gu Master felt his heart turning cold, it was as if his entire body was naked, all of his hair was shaved away, all of his secrets were exposed.

“From today onwards, you will stay here, I will guide you in the cultivation of enslavement path.” Fang Yuan said slowly.

“Thank you, lord immortal, for your guidance!” The hairy man Gu Master quickly knelt on the floor, his body was trembling.

“You can go now.” Fang Yuan had no interest in this rank five peak stage Gu Master.

After sending him away, Fang Yuan went to his room and cultivated.

He opened the wooden box, there was an Immortal Gu inside, it was the rank six beast enslavement Immortal Gu!

As it turned out, a few days ago, Fang Yuan felt that the relationship was close enough and the time was ripe, he made a suggestion to Twelfth Hair, wanting to borrow his beast enslavement Immortal Gu, he was willing to pay for it using sect contribution points.

Even though Twelfth Hair agreed, he did not accept the sect contribution points. He had another request.

Not long ago, he had taken in a bloodline descendant from the continents below. Twelfth Hair had an intimate relationship with the grandmother of this descendant, and because he had good aptitude, Twelfth Hair wanted to nurture him. Because this descendant cultivated enslavement path, Twelfth Hair wanted Fang Yuan to guide him.

Fang Yuan had no reason to reject it.

In fact, this was better for him.

After all, he had been using a lot of sect contribution points recently, cutting costs was good for him.

Inside the immortal aperture, the snow and ice had stopped increasing in area.

This meant, the earthly calamity’s ice and snow path dao marks had fully displayed their influence, they had finished modifying the immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan controlled the immortal zombie and carefully got close to a desolate beast snow monster.

Inside the immortal aperture, because time flowed differently, since his last slaughter, a long time had passed already. The snow monsters had relaxed, thus, Fang Yuan could find a lone snow monster roaming outside.

Beast enslavement Immortal Gu!

At Fang Yuan’s will, he injected green grape immortal essence into this Immortal Gu.

The desolate beast snow monster’s body shook, it was as if it had been hit by an invisible force.

But soon, it growled, it discovered the hidden strength path immortal zombie and attacked it.

“Failure, huh... retreat!”

Fang Yuan immediately left.

Normally speaking, with his current soul foundation, it was nearly certain that he could suppress this desolate beast snow monster. But the reality was different.

“As Shadow Sect had said, these lifeforms filled with heaven’s will cannot be controlled or enslaved by me. Keeping them is a major threat!”

Fang Yuan sighed.

Even though he knew this from Shadow Sect’s information, he was not going to be certain until he tested it for himself.

“If I could enslave them, I could control the desolate beast snow monsters to resist other tribulations, or sell them in treasure yellow heaven, those are good options. But now, I can only kill them.”

“Wait! Maybe I can use self will Gu to get rid of the heaven’s will before using beast enslavement Immortal Gu?” Fang Yuan had an idea.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1095: Ample Preparation

An hour later.

The desolate beast snow monster only had its head left after Fang Yuan’s attacks.

Roar!

Even with just its head left, the snow monster’s fierceness did not drop, it growled at Fang Yuan, spitting out icy wind.

Snow monsters were different from ordinary desolate beasts, they were formed from snow and ice, they were like cloud beasts, blood beasts, or mud monsters.

Fang Yuan controlled the strength path immortal zombie, he snorted as he stood in front of the snow monster’s head, his hand was placed on top of the snow monster’s head.

At once, a thin layer of ice covered the strength path immortal zombie’s hand.

Fang Yuan ignored it, he activated a huge amount of self will Gu.

Self will surged like a tidal wave, flowing into the snow monster’s head.

The snow monster’s head was full of heaven’s will.

Fang Yuan’s self will entered and fought with heaven’s will, it was like the clash of fire and water, they were irreconcilably opposed to one another.

There was little heaven’s will, but the self will was unceasing.

In a while, the heaven’s will lost and was completely wiped out by the self will.

Bam.

At the crucial moment, the snow monster’s head exploded.

A large amount of snow and ice scattered everywhere.

The strength path immortal zombie Fang Yuan was controlling immediately was buried in snow.

However, the explosion before dying had no destructive power. Soon, Fang Yuan manipulated the strength path immortal zombie to come out of the snow unscathed.

But his expression was quite dark.

“Even if I use self will and get rid of heaven’s will, the result would be that the snow monster self-detonates, it cannot be subdued?”

“But even if I could subdue it, I spent hundreds of self will Gu to cleanse just one snow monster’s head, the cost is too high.”

Self will Gu was only a mortal Gu, but it was rank five.

Furthermore, the self will Gu was not refined by Fang Yuan, he had asked the hairy man Gu Immortals to refine by paying contribution points. Because of this, the cost was higher to Fang Yuan.

And most crucially, it costed his time.

Fang Yuan had to injure a desolate beast snow monster, forcing it to be unable to move or resist him, before he could flood it with self will and get rid of the heaven’s will.

One desolate beast snow monster might not take long, but Fang Yuan had so many snow monsters in Mini Northern Plains.

With a greater number, the time needed would increase, his second earthly calamity was coming, Fang Yuan could not do this.

“Actually, even if I enslave the desolate beast snow monsters and sell them, it is dangerous.”

“Back then, one of the first split souls of Shadow Sect, the Gu Immortal named Green, had researched the life-and-death immortal aperture in Earth Trench’s super Gu formation. A huge explosion occurred during his research, countless immortal materials were infested with heaven’s will, Green avoided them like the plague. Because of that, he threw these immortal materials away. This firm attitude of his shows a huge problem.”

“If I truly sell these snow monsters filled with heaven’s will, there might be horrible series of consequences.”

After his attempt failed, Fang Yuan could only continue his previous plan to kill these snow monsters.

He had to kill these snow monsters completely before the second earthly calamity. He even had to cleanse all of the heaven’s will here, not a trace could be left.

Ordinary snow monsters were cannon fodder, Fang Yuan could easily kill them, it was not a problem.

But desolate beast snow monsters were harder to deal with, he had to spend some time. As for ancient snow monsters, they were even more troublesome.

Fang Yuan started to miss flying sword Immortal Gu.

With flying sword Immortal Gu as the core, the immortal killer move sword marks targeting death was extremely effectively in dealing with ancient snow monsters. Triple layered sword wave was an attack with wide range, it was too wasteful to use against a single ancient snow monster.

And using triple layered sword wave had a huge cost.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan regained his strength path Immortal Gu, he could use the killer move myriad self once again.

Strength path had few requirements for primeval essence and immortal essence, myriad self first style, giant hand required much less immortal essence to activate than triple layered sword wave.

In the following period of time, Fang Yuan used his strength path giant hands to eliminate these ancient snow monsters and desolate beast snow monsters.

He first used beast enslavement Immortal Gu to try and enslave a snow monster.

After failing, the snow monster would be angered and fall into a frenzied state, pursing Fang Yuan endlessly.

Fang Yuan immediately retreated, luring this snow monster away, before using strength path giant hands to kill them.

This way, the other snow monsters would not be alerted.

Earlier, when Fang Yuan attacked, the snow monsters would gather into groups, but now was different, the efficiency was higher.

After enslavement path methods failed, the target would feel great hatred towards the Gu Master. Fang Yuan made full use of this.

Earlier, Fang Yuan had tried other methods, but mortal enslavement path methods were too weak, and some wisdom path methods were useless due to heaven’s will.

Thus, the beast enslavement Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan borrowed was not useless after all.

Days passed, less than thirty percent of the snow monsters were left. But there was less than ten days until the second earthly calamity.

Fang Yuan manipulated the strength path immortal zombie, coming to Mini Southern Border in the immortal aperture.

At a particular location, Fang Yuan’s original immortal zombie body was placed.

“Even though I have my original immortal zombie body, I can only look at it, I cannot use it.” Fang Yuan sighed, mobilizing self will Gu as he placed his formation.

After some time, a Gu formation using hundreds of self will Gu as the core was created.

This Gu formation was mainly for sealing.

Fang Yuan obtained the method of setting up this formation from Shadow Sect.

Using a large number of self will Gu to seal heaven’s will.

The super Gu formations that Shadow Sect had in all five regions used this method.

After inspecting it, and confirming there were no problems, Fang Yuan let out a sigh.

Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body was at the center of the Gu formation, the Gu formation had completely sealed the Spring Autumn Cicada inside.

Spring Autumn Cicada had originally been sealed by one of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, Wei Ling Yang. Ying Wu Xie was unable to activate Spring Autumn Cicada and start again. Thus, he was trapped in Central Continent and could only trade with Fang Yuan.

During the transactions, Ying Wu Xie returned Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body as well as Spring Autumn Cicada.

After obtaining it, Fang Yuan realized that Spring Autumn Cicada was still sealed, it could not even consume the water of the River of Time. It was weakening, on the verge of dying.

Fang Yuan had tried many methods but this seal was very powerful, he could not even obtain any information about it. Without other options, he could only give up on this.

Not long ago, the method of the rank eight restriction path Gu Immortal, Wei Ling Yang, seemed to have worn out. Spring Autumn Cicada’s seal was lifted, Fang Yuan knew that heaven’s will was hidden inside it, only refinement path methods could remove it.

Fang Yuan did not dare to place this immortal zombie body outside. Storing it inside his own immortal aperture was safest.

But Fang Yuan was afraid that during the second earthly calamity, the heaven’s will inside Spring Autumn Cicada would coordinate with the calamity. Thus, he set up this Gu formation, sealing heaven’s will and preventing this threat from occurring.

Three more days passed, the snow monsters were completely eliminated from Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

Next, he used self will to cleanse all of the heaven’s will.

For this, Fang Yuan paid a huge price. Even though giant hand had a low cost, using it so many times meant his consumption was still very high.

Right now, Fang Yuan did not have much immortal essence or immortal essence stones.

Because treasure yellow heaven closed, even though Fang Yuan had a lot of resources, he could not sell them. His Lang Ya Sect contribution points were also dwindling.

Even though Fang Yuan could earn more from teaching the hairy man Gu Immortals combat techniques, Lang Ya land spirit was making his own plans, he reduced the rewards of these missions while raising the reward of the falling star hound mission.

“Treasure yellow heaven... treasure yellow heaven... when are you going to open?”

Fang Yuan waited for the opening of treasure yellow heaven as he prepared for his second tribulation.

There were five days until his second earthly calamity, Fang Yuan cleansed all of the heaven’s will inside, before going to Dang Hun Mountain.

Using myriad self and other methods, he completely altered the appearance of Dang Hun Mountain.

Next, using pulling mountain Immortal Gu, he moved Dang Hun Mountain into his sovereign immortal aperture.

Earlier, Fang Yuan did not have Landscape as Before, he did not dare to do this, but now his worry was lessened greatly.

Such a commotion caused Lang Ya land spirit to show up.

He asked nervously: “Elder Fang Yuan, what are you doing?”

He was worried, because Dang Hun Mountain belonged to Fang Yuan, it was not like Luo Po Valley. If Fang Yuan wanted to bring it away, he could not stop him.

Fang Yuan had a glib tongue, he gave an excuse of his that was prepared long ago, saying he was going to leave Lang Ya blessed land for some time.

Lang Ya land spirit believed what he said, he wanted Fang Yuan to exterminate the falling star hound, but instead, he was going to leave with Dang Hun Mountain.

Lang Ya land spirit was very worried.

Fang Yuan used this chance to exchange all of his sect contribution points, he even used wisdom Gu as collateral to borrow a lot of Immortal Gu from Lang Ya land spirit, and large amounts of immortal essence stones.

He finally replenished his green grape immortal essence!

Regretfully, up until Fang Yuan left Lang Ya blessed land, treasure yellow heaven did not open.

Fang Yuan sighed, choosing to move a portion of the resources in his immortal aperture to Lang Ya blessed land for safekeeping.

“So much resources? It seems that you are very skilled in managing an immortal aperture.” Lang Ya land spirit was a bit surprised at the amount of resources Fang Yuan had.

But in fact, this was only a small portion, it was not even thirty percent.

Fang Yuan was not going to move out all of his resources, Lang Ya land spirit was not a fool, he would be suspicious of Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

With half a day until the earthly calamity descended, Fang Yuan used the transportation Gu formation to go to the northern icy plain.

Even though the northern icy plain was created by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, and had lots of Reckless Savage’s true meaning, heaven’s will still existed here.

Thus, Fang Yuan did not come here far in advance.

The icy plain was huge, Fang Yuan casually chose a direction and picked a spot to place his immortal aperture.

What would the second earthly calamity be?

No matter what it was, the second earthly calamity’s might would surely be greater than the first.

Fang Yuan waited for it vigilantly!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1096: Wind Flowers, Snow Moon

Fang Yuan wore a white robe, his black hair was flowing with the wind, he slowly descended into Mini Northern Plains within the sovereign immortal aperture.

He was planning to undergo tribulation in this place again.

The other areas had resources placed in them. Mini Northern Plains only had this icy area, and most importantly, the snow monsters filled with heaven’s will were all eliminated already.

The sovereign immortal aperture had a huge space, but the calamities and tribulations only targeted Fang Yuan.

Therefore, the tribulation would occur where he was located.

The immortal aperture had already been placed, it was in Northern Plains. The tributary of the River of Time in the immortal aperture linked to the River of Time outside, and the rate of time inside greatly slowed down.

First, he inspected his arrangements.

There were large numbers of Gu worms placed in the sovereign immortal aperture.

Most of them were Gu worms related to the killer move immortal tribulation tempering aperture.

Other than that, there was Dang Hun Mountain right beside Fang Yuan.

Right now, Dang Hun Mountain looked completely different from before. Fang Yuan did this to prevent others from using Fixed Immortal Travel to enter while he was undergoing tribulation. He got rid of this possibility before it could be used.

During the first tribulation, Fang Yuan did not have pulling mountain Immortal Gu or Landscape as Before, he could not bring Dang Hun Mountain him.

But now, it was different.

With Pulling Mountain, Fang Yuan could singlehandedly drag Dang Hun Mountain into his immortal aperture. If he had to request for help from other hairy man Gu Immortals, not only would he need to waste his sect contribution points, he would also need to let the hairy man Gu Immortals into his sovereign immortal aperture, exposing his huge secret.

With Landscape as Before, he was not afraid that Dang Hun Mountain would be destroyed in the calamity. After all, the more severely Dang Hun Mountain was damaged, the fewer the guts Gu produced.

After some inspections, Fang Yuan confirmed that his arrangements had no problems. Immediately, at his will, the entrance of the sovereign immortal aperture opened.

Huff huff huff...

A huge amount of heaven and earth qi entered the sovereign immortal aperture through the entrance.

At once, there was a huge commotion, as if tidal waves were crashing in.

“This time, I brought in Dang Hun Mountain, increasing the burden on the sovereign immortal aperture, thus, there is more heaven and earth qi than last time.”

Heaven and earth qi rushed in fiercely, Fang Yuan also activated the Gu worms outside of his immortal aperture at the same time.

He had already done this set up once before, Fang Yuan was quite familiar with it.

While undergoing tribulation, Fang Yuan naturally used immortal tribulation tempering aperture.

First, the killer move immortal tribulation tempering aperture could, indirectly, weaken the earthly calamity’s power.

Second, it could draw out Reckless Savage’s true meaning, helping Fang Yuan with his transformation path cultivation.

Unlike the first tribulation, this time, many of the mortal Gu used for forming immortal tribulation tempering aperture belonged to Fang Yuan. He even modified immortal tribulation tempering aperture himself, making some slight tweaks.

The modified immortal tribulation tempering aperture was one of the preparations Fang Yuan made for this tribulation.

Even though his refinement path attainment level was not high, he had grandmaster wisdom path attainment level. His modifications were just icing on the cake, they were not crucial aspects. But as long as he continued his research, Fang Yuan was sure that he would make this killer move as suitable for himself as possible.

After all, Fang Yuan could not always rely on Lang Ya Sect. Each time he underwent tribulation, he needed to borrow so many Gu worms from Lang Ya land spirit, there was a huge cost in it. Fang Yuan modified immortal tribulation tempering aperture so as to break free from Lang Ya land spirit’s control in this aspect.

A moment later, Fang Yuan completed his arrangements and began to use his immortal essence, activating his Gu worms.

Green light shone, filling the entire immortal aperture, while connecting to the outside world. Gradually, a green hue appeared outside the immortal aperture, covering a huge surrounding area.

Tens of thousands of green grape immortal essence beads were used, allowing Fang Yuan to activate the killer move immortal tribulation tempering aperture.

The second earthly calamity descended.

The world rumbled, winds blew as clouds shifted.

At first, there was only a mild wind, but soon, the intensity of the wind rose greatly!

In the blink of an eye, a huge wind blew, it had the force to sweep the world and blow away all life.

“What tribulation is this?” Fang Yuan stood on the peak of Dang Hun Mountain, awaiting vigilantly.

Even though he had not recognized the earthly calamity yet, he could see that this earthly calamity was like last time, it was far beyond reason in terms of power.

Intense winds blew, blowing the snow and ice on the ground up, causing the area to become obscured.

The sovereign immortal aperture had few light path dao marks to begin with, it was dim. With the raging winds and snow, Fang Yuan’s vision became very limited.

Ding ding ding... ding ding ding...

“What sound is that?” Fang Yuan had already activated his methods to investigative, but he suddenly heard the sound of chimes from within the snow and wind.

This strange scene made Fang Yuan frown slightly.

“Don’t tell me, this is...” A thought flashed in his mind.

At this moment, the sound of chimes became louder, a huge green flower flew out of the wind, crashing into Dang Hun Mountain.

This green flower was extremely fast.

It was simply faster than lightning, after crashing into Dang Hun Mountain, a huge mark was left on Dang Hun Mountain. The mountain rocks along the way were all smashed into bits, before being blown away by the wind.

Ding ding ding! Ding ding ding!!

Wind chimes rang again, at the next moment, eighteen green flowers flew out and crashed into Dang Hun Mountain, they turned into dust, but eighteen blemishes were made on Dang Hun Mountain.

“These are wind flowers!” Fang Yuan’s eyes were shining brightly, he confirmed this in his mind.

Wind flowers were a type of wind essence. They were only produced in extremely intense winds.

They had no roots and floated in the wind. They were large like horse carriages, they were light green in color and were extremely sharp.

Ding ding ding!

Fang Yuan had just recognized these flowers, when the next wave of wind flowers came again.

The flowers were in greater numbers now, there were forty to fifty of them. They were attacking from all directions, crashing into Dang Hun Mountain consecutively.

Dang Hun Mountain’s surface was impacted, dust and smoke rose, fragments of rocks were scattered by the wind and vanished.

Fang Yuan quickly retreated, moving away from the mountain peak.

He gritted his teeth, feeling slightly troubled.

“Last time, heaven’s will created a large number of snow monsters, but I could fly and had the initiative.”

“This time, heaven’s will learned its lesson, it changed its tactics and used the wind flower tribulation on me.”

This was Fang Yuan’s weakness!

Fang Yuan’s speed was lower than the wind flowers, and his defensive methods were only at mortal level.

“Thankfully, I moved Dang Hun Mountain here this time, otherwise, I’d have no place to guard myself, it would be terrible!” Fang Yuan felt extremely glad.

Landscape as Before!

He used his time path Immortal Gu, the blemishes on Dang Hun Mountain vanished, it returned to normal.

But soon, at the next second, a barrage of wind flowers attacked again, smashing layers of the mountain’s surface into pieces.

“This cannot go on!”

“Activating immortal tribulation tempering aperture already used more than half of my immortal essence.”

“Even though I am safe currently, I am expending a lot of green grape immortal essence. Restoring Dang Hun Mountain is merely prolonging the inevitable.”

Fang Yuan squinted, thoughts were churning rapidly in his mind.

He had rich battle experience, he quickly thought of a counter-measure.

Strength path killer move — Myriad Self!

Transformation path killer move — Familiar Face!

Immortal Gu Dark Limit!

His body shook, he utilized his methods, as countless Fang Yuan occupied the whole of Dang Hun Mountain.

One of them roared at the sky as all of the Fang Yuan phantoms rushed towards the winds outside of the mountain.

At the same time, Fang Yuan’s actual body used familiar face and myriad self to conceal himself, he turned into a rock on Dang Hun Mountain.

With change form Immortal Gu, familiar face was closer to the original version, it was easy to use, having instantaneous transformations. It was unlike before, when Fang Yuan used a large number of mortal Gu to replace the effect of change form Immortal Gu, causing familiar face to need a very long time to activate.

After turning into a common rock, Fang Yuan did not rest, he used dark limit Immortal Gu, concealing his aura.

Ding ding ding...

A large number of wind flowers attacked the tens of thousands of Fang Yuan phantoms.

The calamity’s firepower became less concentrated, Dang Hun Mountain sustained less pressure than before.

In a moment, Fang Yuan’s myriad self phantoms were all exterminated by the wind flowers.

Fang Yuan used myriad self again, summoning countless phantoms that charged out carrying his aura.

The wind flowers scattered and danced in the wind, many phantoms were instantly destroyed.

After some repetitions, heaven’s will sensed Fang Yuan’s tactic, as the wind flowers stopped paying attention to the Fang Yuan phantoms, they targeted their attacks at Dang Hun Mountain.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, feeling the ill intent of heaven’s will.

“Dang Hun Mountain is my greatest sources of revenue, heaven’s will wants to destroy it and ruin my future prospects!”

Thankfully, Fang Yuan had Landscape as Before.

He had Landscape as Before to restore Dang Hun Mountain, but it could only let Fang Yuan maintain the situation, he would still be in a passive state.

Green grape immortal essence was rapidly expended.

Triple layered sword wave!

Strength path giant hand!

Fang Yuan tried to counter attack, but the wind flowers were too fast, the two killer moves were ineffective. Especially strength path giant hand, even though it was powerful, it was too slow, it could not catch any wind flowers at all, unless the wind flowers came at it.

Poison breath!

Fang Yuan breathed out dark purple poisonous gas that scattered with the wind.

Large numbers of wind flowers wilted upon coming into contact with the poison.

Fang Yuan showed great joy on his face.

Poison breath was modified from the wisdom path killer move, harboring malicious heart. It used Woman’s Heart as the core, it had many flaws and was of comparatively low value.

Fang Yuan rarely used it.

To think that it was so effective now!

Under the effect of poison breath, the wind flowers’ offensive power lowered immensely.

The winds were starting to slow down.

A cold light shone on the entirety of Dang Hun Mountain.

Fang Yuan raised his head and saw that in the sky, there was a crescent moon that appeared out of nowhere.

Fang Yuan squinted, he muttered under his breath: “Snow moon!”

This crescent moon was pure white as snow, it shone down with a pale light, causing Dang Hun Mountain’s temperature to fall.

Soon, layers of frost began to cover the surface of Dang Hun Mountain.

Fang Yuan felt like there was a weight on his heart, he thought: “So this is not a wind flower tribulation, but a wind flower snow moon tribulation! The former is an earthly calamity, but the latter is a heavenly tribulation. This second earthly calamity is simply too absurdly strong!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1097: Undergoing Tribulation with Difficulty

Wind flower tribulation, snow moon tribulation, when alone, they were two different earthly calamities.

When the wind flowers and snow moon were together, they formed a heavenly tribulation. The power was much higher, and the difficulty of passing the tribulation increases. The wind flowers were fast and hard to avoid, they were sharp and not easy to defend against. The snow moon gave off cold light that froze Gu Immortals, making them slower, the two were a perfect pair.

Fang Yuan was feeling heavy pressure.

Actually, with his current strength, especially after the transaction with Shadow Sect, strength path and sword path became his main source of offense. Be it strength path giant hand or triple layered sword wave, they could allow him to unleash rank seven Gu Immortal battle strength. It was possible to pass a heavenly tribulation.

What created Fang Yuan's heavy mood was not the heavenly tribulation now, but his future progression.

When Gu Immortals undergo tribulations, they get stronger and stronger. Fang Yuan's second earthly calamity was in theory stronger than the first.

But the second earthly calamity was already at heavenly tribulation level. Such an increase was simply too much.

Theoretically, if this went on, how strong would his third and fourth earthly calamities be?

A rank six Gu Immortal faces an earthly calamity every ten years, and a heavenly tribulation every one hundred years. After three hundred years, after three heavenly tribulations, they would become rank seven.

That means, they would have twenty-seven earthly calamities and three heavenly tribulations.

And for Fang Yuan, after this second earthly calamity, he still had twenty-five earthly calamities and three heavenly tribulations.

If his second earthly calamity was already at the level of a heavenly tribulation, what future would he have? If he projected this into the future, his earthly calamities would reach the level of grand tribulations!

The light of the snow moon made Fang Yuan's face look pale.

Even the thoughts in his mind were moving at a slower rate as a result.

The snow moon gave off a cold light that not only slowed the Gu Immortal's movement, but also their thoughts.

Fang Yuan quickly used wisdom path methods to protect his mind.

He was a wisdom path grandmaster, he could achieve this easily.

"This should not be. During Shadow Sect's transaction, Sixth Hair told me — even though earthly calamities get stronger each time, there is a limit to their power. As long as this is an earthly calamity, it will be within the range of an earthly calamity. Was he lying to me? He gave me false information?" Fang Yuan frowned deeply.

It was not impossible that they lied to him.

But to Fang Yuan, thinking from the other side’s perspective, they had nothing to gain from doing so.

Because this was something that could be easily found out. And Shadow Sect wanted to capture Fang Yuan to reverse refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, wouldn’t it be a problem if they lied to him and caused him to die in this calamity?

“Or can I say, there is another possibility...” Brightness flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes, before turning dim.

The winds were howling outside.

Fang Yuan raised his head, looking at the sky, his pupils were dark like the night sky.

Standing on a mountain rock, his white robe and black hair fluttered in the wind, he was like a lone wolf.

Triple layered sword wave!

Strength path giant hand!

Suddenly, he burst out with a strong attack.

Sword waves appeared out of nowhere, rushing up towards the sky, defying gravity. Strength path giant hands tore through space, pushing apart the wind with immense force.

The two charged towards the snow moon in the sky.

Ding ding ding... ding ding ding...

Countless green wind flowers gathered towards the sword waves and giant hands like bees that were attracted to nectar.

The sharp wind flowers clashed with the sword waves and giant hands.

Soon, these two forces were eliminated.

But there was a strange sight.

Earlier, the wind flowers only targeted Dang Hun Mountain. They wanted to destroy this famous secluded domain of heaven and earth. They ignored Fang Yuan’s sword waves and giant hands, even avoiding them on purpose.

But now, these wind flowers went to attack them.

It was because Fang Yuan’s attack was aimed at the snow moon in the sky.

It seemed like these wind flowers were trying to protect the snow moon.

The snow moon’s existence was indeed placing much pressure on Fang Yuan. It was not wrong that the wind flowers were protecting it.

But excitement flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Myriad Self!

Myriad Self!

Myriad Self!

A group of phantoms roared, large number of Fang Yuan phantoms rushed up like a tidal wave.

Fang Yuan used it three times, in an instant, Dang Hun Mountain which was originally empty, became extremely crowded.

Countless Fang Yuan flew into the wind by jumping down the mountain.

But unlike last time, Fang Yuan’s true body also turned into a strength path phantom, rushing out of Dang Hun Mountain.

Large numbers of wind flowers came at him.

But there were too many strength path phantoms, and too few wind flowers.

Fang Yuan’s strength path phantoms could not resist the wind flowers, they were rapidly sacrificed.

But using them to conceal himself, with familiar face and Dark Limit helping him, Fang Yuan successfully got into the sky.

“It is time.”

Sword Escape!

Fang Yuan found the perfect time to use sword escape Immortal Gu. He was like a dragon out of the water, he rushed into the sky and soared above the clouds, it was an astonishing sight.

He was close.

Fang Yuan used triple layered sword wave and strength path giant hand again.

Heaven’s will was caught off guard, the wind flowers were still eliminating the Fang Yuan phantoms.

Fang Yuan successfully destroyed the snow moon in the sky.

At the next moment, large amounts of Reckless Savage’s true meaning filled him.

Fang Yuan was like a withering plant receiving water, he absorbed all of the true meaning.

All of a sudden, he felt like he had transformed into a moon, he was hanging in the sky, quietly emitting moonlight as he looked down on the living beings of the world.

His transformation path attainment level rose rapidly!

Transformation path, it did not just include animals and plants, it also encompassed mountains, water, wind, moons, all of these natural phenomena.

This true meaning of Reckless Savage gave Fang Yuan great gains.

He laughed loudly, one could feel his joy from his laughter alone.

As it turned out, the ‘wind flower snow moon tribulation’ was just pieced together, it was not a true heavenly tribulation.

The second earthly calamity was within the scope of an earthly calamity. No matter how angry heaven’s will was and how much it wanted to eliminate Fang Yuan, there was no use. It was heaven’s will, it had to obey the law of balance of the way of heaven.

Winds roared, heaven’s will raged, as if it was embarrassed from having its plan exposed openly.

Countless wind flowers assaulted Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan used myriad self again, large numbers of Fang Yuan phantoms diverted heaven’s will’s offense.

The wind flowers killed Fang Yuan phantoms, it was a true slaughter.

But there was little effect, Fang Yuan’s true body was hidden among the phantoms, eventually landing on Dang Hun Mountain again.

With Dang Hun Mountain, he had a place to defend himself, Fang Yuan could catch a breather.

Deactivating familiar face, Fang Yuan’s body shook.

There was a huge wound on his back, blood was dripping, his bones could be seen.

But because of change form Immortal Gu, his wound was concealed, he managed to deceive heaven’s will.

“My defense is too weak.” Fang Yuan sighed, starting to heal himself.

He did not use Man as Before.

Man as Before was an Immortal Gu that used immortal essence. And it could only return him to his state a moment ago.

Fang Yuan was hurt by a wind flower in the sky when he was flying.

At that time, he could not use Man as Before. If the Immortal Gu aura was leaked, he would be exposing himself.

“Thankfully, my dao marks do not conflict, even mortal methods work well on me!” Fang Yuan felt his immense advantage in this aspect.

Normally speaking, Gu Immortals were hard to heal. Because they had dao marks, they would interfere and reduce the effectiveness of mortal healing methods. When using healing immortal killer moves, one also had to consider if the dao marks conflicted.

Fang Yuan had no such problems, he could use mortal methods, this allowed him to conserve immortal essence.

Fang Yuan did not prepare as much immortal essence as last time.

The main reason was the closing of treasure yellow heaven.

Cold light assaulted him, frost formed on Fang Yuan’s forehead. It spread and he was soon covered in a layer of frost.

Not just him, the entirety of Dang Hun Mountain was the same.

Fang Yuan looked up and his pupils shrunk, he mentally cried out in dismay.

There were three more snow moons that appeared in the sky!

With three times the cold light accumulated, the effect was multiplied. Fang Yuan’s wisdom path method defending his mind stopped working, he could only use other ways to counter it.

He also had to defend his body, multiple defensive mortal killer moves were used, his body flickered with light, his body temperature was maintained at a normal level.

The number of snow moons and their rate of production exceeded Fang Yuan’s expectations.

This ruined his plan of sitting back on Dang Hun Mountain.

Fang Yuan’s heart beat quickly, when he saw the three snow moons, he realized: This was a crucial moment of life and death!

The longer he dragged on, the more snow moons would appear, and the less hope he had of passing the tribulation.

He had to counter-attack, he could not slack on it, otherwise, when the opportunity fades, a slight delay would cause him to get into deep despair, there would be no way for him to survive!

A different Gu Immortal might hesitate, but Fang Yuan had rich battle experience, after realizing his situation, he used myriad self once again without hesitation!

Doing the same thing again, large numbers of Fang Yuan phantoms lured the wind flowers away.

Fang Yuan’s body was mixed in with them, charging into the sky relentlessly.

After flying towards the sky, the cold light’s power rose, it was no longer restricted by Dang Hun Mountain’s soul path dao marks.

This was an intense battle!

Fang Yuan needed to destroy the three snow moons, but the cold light from them gave him much greater pressure than the wind flowers. And worst of all, a fourth snow moon was already forming in the sky.

Heaven’s will was going through all kinds of ways to stop Fang Yuan, while he had the best opportunity to attack, large numbers of wind flowers attempted to kill Fang Yuan.

One moon, two moons, three crescent moons, Fang Yuan destroyed them after a difficult process.

And more snow moons were still forming.

The cold light made Fang Yuan feel a deep chill in his mind, the cruel reality was making his limbs go numb.

His chances of surviving dwindling, but Fang Yuan’s expression became more firm, he charged up against the difficulty without any dejection.

His immortal essence was rapidly decreasing, every time he used an immortal killer move, he had to be careful about the expenditure and calculate it accurately.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1098: Success In Danger

Ding ding ding!

A wind flower hit Fang Yuan’s back.

Fang Yuan’s defenses were like paper, torn to shreds immediately.

His robe on his back was cut apart, blood spewed as his flesh was dug out.

“I’m getting unlucky!” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

There were dozens of strength path phantoms around him, but there was only one wind flower attacking them. To think that he was the one who got hit.

As time passed, Dog Shit Luck’s protection would get weaker, the chances of him being found out by heaven’s will increased.

And worse, there was also dark limit Immortal Gu to take into account.

Dark limit Immortal Gu was activated, protecting Fang Yuan and concealing his aura, but it was weakening too.

Once this protection vanishes, it would be more severe than losing Dog Shit Luck’s protection.

Time passed, seconds passed like years to Fang Yuan, he was holding on desperately.

He had already endured countless attacks from the snow moons and wind flowers.

Dog Shit Luck and Dark Limit’s protection weakened progressively, but familiar face, formed using attitude Gu and change form Gu, was a reliable method that Fang Yuan was holding on to. There was also myriad self, at this moment, its attack power was useless, he could only use it as a distraction.

Heaven’s will was not stupid, it could think.

After understanding Fang Yuan’s tactic, after he used myriad self each time, it could find him in a shorter time than the previous attempt.

Fang Yuan’s injuries were getting more severe, he had no choice but to use Man as Before.

But this way, his immortal essence expenditure rapidly increased. He did not have much to begin with, now, it was depleting.

Heaven’s will had the high ground controlling the earthly calamity, it was not going to lose out in this situation.

While Fang Yuan was like an ant, desperately struggling to survive in this dangerous situation.

The number of snow moons continued to increase, Fang Yuan was slowly unable to keep up.

The situation was dire, Fang Yuan saw almost no hope.

But he did not give up, he continued to grit his teeth and persevere.

The winds were wild, seemingly mocking him for overestimating himself.

The snow moons hung in the sky, the cold light seemed to be looking down at Fang Yuan, seeing this ant struggle desperately in futility.

Fang Yuan was bathed in blood, his white robe had turned into a blood-red color, his blood and sweat had frozen because of the cold light.

He was in a pathetic state, some of his black hair that fluttered with the wind had snapped, the length was now uneven, he looked like a combination of a beggar and a lunatic.

His face was icy cold, he did not laugh nor shout.

He was like a firm piece of ice, even if heaven and earth were burying him, he did not say a word, he endured silently in this desperate situation.

The wind slowly became weaker.

The power of the wind flower tribulation was fading.

This was its limit.

An earthly calamity’s power had limits. Even if heaven’s will amplified it to the greatest extent and personally manipulated it.

Fang Yuan was not killed by the wind flowers, soon, the number of wind flowers decreased, there was no longer any wind.

Fang Yuan smiled, he activated his immortal essence, targeting the snow moons!

Even though the wind flowers were gone, and the snow moons had stopped forming, there were still some wind flowers left behind, and many snow moons in the sky.

A tough battle!

Fang Yuan had no strength to grit his teeth, he felt extremely weak.

Myriad self.

Strength path giant hand.

Triple layered sword wave.

Familiar face.

He was not in a good condition, some of his immortal killer moves failed upon activation. Each time he failed, he faced a backlash and spat out blood from his mouth.

The earthly calamity was at its limits, so was Fang Yuan.

There was no reason to run now. Not only could the wind flowers stop him, the snow moons could fly slowly, the range of the cold light was too large.

The earthly calamity was not over yet, heaven and earth qi was not balanced yet, it was impossible to retrieve his immortal aperture.

Undeniably, heaven’s will had planned this for some time, creating the most suitable tribulation to kill Fang Yuan. In the last earthly calamity, Reckless Savage true meaning was a part of the earthly calamity’s strength. But this time, even though heaven’s will could not stop it, it influenced Reckless Savage true meaning and turned it into the snow moon tribulation, increasing the difficulty of the entire earthly calamity!

In this current situation, it depended on who could outlast the other.

An hour later, Fang Yuan collapsed on Dang Hun Mountain.

His immortal essence was depleted.

He could no longer sustain familiar face, his mental energy was drained.

Fang Yuan exerted his effort and strength, destroying a large number of snow moons, but there was still one final moon in the sky!

Using Dang Hun Mountain’s protection, Fang Yuan resisted the force of the cold light.

He was covered in injuries, frost had formed on the surface of many of his injuries.

Fang Yuan had no strength left, snow and frost accumulated on his body, turning him into a piece of ice.

The final trace of wind was blowing on top of the ice, carrying heaven’s will, wanting to take Fang Yuan’s life away.

He had no immortal essence left to use even one immortal killer move, but Fang Yuan showed the faint smile of a victor on his face.

“I finally survived this calamity.”

At the next moment, a desolate beast spinefin star dragonfish appeared, it swung its tail and destroyed the final snow moon!

Beast enslavement Immortal Gu!

A few minutes later, heaven and earth qi settled down, Fang Yuan quickly used his methods to leave Northern Plains.

After he left, a while later, two figures emerged from below the ice.

“It’s here.” One of the figures inspected the place, saying this after it confirmed the surroundings.

The other figure sniffed around with its nose, confirming as well: “We did not sense wrongly, someone was undergoing tribulation here earlier, there is still some heaven and earth qi remaining, it has not completely dissipated yet.”

The two figures were indistinct, they were purposely concealing their figures.

However, to be able to know about tribulations and to inspect them so clearly, they were surely Gu Immortals.

“Sigh! The northern icy plain was created by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable in the past singlehandedly. This is an icy plain without any land. The heaven and earth qi here is less abundant than in other places. If many Gu Immortals undergo tribulation here, more heaven and earth qi would be consumed. At some point, the glaciers will shatter, the entire place would become unstable.” One of the two mysterious Gu Immortals sighed as they spoke with much worry.

“The northern icy plain is the final paradise left for us snowmen. We live under the icy plain and do not conflict with the rest of the world. To think that the humans are not satisfied, they even want to take away this final sanctuary of ours!” The other mysterious figure was younger and said with much anger.

It turned out that these two Gu Immortals were not simple, they were snowman Gu Immortals of the variant humans.

The young snowman Gu Immortal continued: “First supreme elder is too behind the times! In my opinion, we should have gotten rid of that Chu Du. Look, not only is Chu Du coming to undergo tribulations, others are coming too. Soon, more and more Gu Immortals will come and destroy our sanctuary.”

The older snowman Gu Immortal sighed: “Sigh! I understand why first supreme elder agreed. They are worried that a battle with Chu Du would expose our location to the world. Right now, humans are the overlords of the world, their status is firm as a mountain, unshakable. If we are exposed, all the Gu Immortals in Northern Plains would come after us.”

“Do we let this continue? Let more and more Gu Immortals undergo tribulations on top of us? With our strength, if we fight in this icy plain, as long as we plan well, it is not hard to kill some human Gu Immortals. Of course, I admit that Chu Du is very strong. We can play it safe and avoid him, but other Gu Immortals are not hard to kill. If they all die, who will know we are the culprits? Heh! Humans are a chaotic bunch internally, the righteous path and demonic path have never stopped their conflicts.” The young Gu Immortal said.

“Sigh, you make sense too. Let’s report this matter to the tribe and see what the other supreme elders have to say.”

The two snowman Gu Immortals discussed as their vague figures vanished.

Even though Fang Yuan was covered in wounds, he moved unceasingly, rushing back to Lang Ya blessed land.

“Heaven’s will wants to exterminate me, the best chance is during my tribulations. Not only can it increase the might of the calamities and tribulations to their limits, it can manipulate them personally. And worse, it can influence other people and create a human tribulation to kill me!”

Fang Yuan remembered this detail clearly.

This was precious information that he had obtained from transactions with Sixth Hair.

In the battle of Yi Tian Mountain months ago, he was also part of the crucial human tribulation that heaven’s will used to deal with Spectral Soul.

Because he had experienced it personally, Fang Yuan was very much on alert regarding these ‘human tribulations’.

Look at who Spectral Soul was, and he had Shadow Sect and Zombie Alliance to assist him for a hundred thousand years, he still lost to heaven’s will in the end.

Compared to them, what was Fang Yuan?

Thus, Fang Yuan disregarded his severe injuries, he immediately left. He was fast, not giving heaven’s will any time to plan.

There were no unexpected mishaps along the way, Fang Yuan successfully returned to Lang Ya blessed land.

After he got to Lang Ya blessed land, he let out a sigh, knowing that he was safe for now.

Next, Fang Yuan hid inside his cloud city and healed his injuries, while returning all the Immortal Gu he borrowed.

A few days later, Fang Yuan’s injuries healed, he was in prime condition again, he started restoring Dang Hun Mountain which was in his immortal aperture.

Speaking of which, this mountain was a huge help when he was undergoing tribulation.

Dang Hun Mountain was in a terrible condition, it was a huge mountain earlier, but after getting attacked by countless wind flowers, there was only a tiny mound left.

Landscape as Before!

Using this Immortal Gu, Dang Hun Mountain regained its former size.

Only when Dang Hun Mountain was in this state could it produce guts Gu at the highest efficiency.

Fang Yuan did not dare to be careless, he quickly took out Dang Hun Mountain and handed it over to Lang Ya blessed land.

However, even though he could mass produce guts Gu, the place to sell them, treasure yellow heaven, was still closed. Right now, Lang Ya Sect’s inventory had a huge amount of guts Gu that could not be sold. Fang Yuan was anxious.

“Two months later, the third earthly calamity will arrive. It will be stronger than now. If I do not obtain a breakthrough in any aspect during this period of time and gain more strength, I will likely die.”

“But gaining strength does not come out of nowhere, I need all sorts of cultivation resources. Treasure yellow heaven... when is it going to open?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1099: Transformation Path Grandmaster!

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Eastern Sea.

This was a place with an aquatic terrain.

But it was not as vast as the Eastern Sea in the outside world, the deepest sea level was only sixty feet.

Most of the places were like mud pits to desolate beasts.

This was because the sovereign immortal aperture did not have enough water path dao marks yet.

Right now, in a particular location of Mini Eastern Sea, two desolate beasts were fighting.

Howl!

The desolate beast shark fin wolf howled as it pounced. It opened its mouth, showing its fangs, if its attack landed, even mountains could be damaged.

But its opponent was a desolate beast flying bear. A crafty light shone in its eyes as it retreated.

The shark fin wolf exerted excessive strength, its attack was easily dodged by the flying bear.

Next, the flying bear raised its paws and slammed down at the shark fin wolf’s head.

Bam, a huge force threw the shark fin wolf onto the ground, it went into a daze from the impact, it could not get up.

However, Fang Yuan was not satisfied with this result.

“When I used flying bear strength Immortal Gu earlier, my strength increased. But the flying bear transformation had an issue. I am temporarily using this strength path immortal zombie body, it has a lot of strength path dao marks on it. Even though I have change form Immortal Gu, I can only change my appearance with difficulty. The strength path dao marks are resisting the effects of change form Immortal Gu.”

Transformation path Gu Immortals mainly had transformation path dao marks in their bodies.

These dao marks could transform into dao marks of other paths under the influence of Gu worms.

Change form Immortal Gu was the essence of transformation path, with it, the Gu Immortal could transform into anything. Flowers, birds, fish, insects, grass, trees, mountains, rivers, suns, stars, moons, they could become anything.

But this Gu only changes the form, other Gu worms had to be used to change the strength, speed, defense, and other aspects.

“Right now, the sovereign immortal aperture is inside my body, I can only use the strength path immortal zombies and train my transformation path methods. But strength path immortal zombies have strength path dao marks, it is hard for them to use change form Immortal Gu. But flying bear strength Gu gains an amplification from strength path dao marks, it has a greater effect.”

Fang Yuan assessed this, realizing the usefulness of his current body.

Non-interference and conflict between his dao marks.

This was an immense advantage!

Between all paths, they had clear boundaries that separated them. Even if one cultivated more than one path, there was a difference between the primary and secondary path. But for Fang Yuan, the boundaries were indistinct, he could cultivate all paths.

“It seems that using strength path immortal zombies can only train my transformation path methods to some extent. It cannot let me understand the true extent of my abilities!” Fang Yuan sighed, controlling the flying bear, dodging agilely.

As it turned out, the desolate beast shark fin wolf had gotten up, it attacked in a frenzied state.

But Fang Yuan had the intelligence of a human, he utilized battle tactics and manipulated the flying bear fluidly. The shark fin wolf could not even injure the flying bear.

Even though Fang Yuan had beast enslavement Immortal Gu and controlled this desolate beast before, after the earthly calamity, Fang Yuan had to return beast enslavement Immortal Gu.

Thus, before this, he had released his control over the shark fin wolf and spinefin star dragonfish.

This had a benefit.

Without beast enslavement Immortal Gu, the desolate beast shark fin wolf could unleash its true fierce nature, it was a good sparring partner.

Bam.

With another loud sound, the shark fin wolf was slammed into the mud pit by the flying bear’s paws once again, as mud splashed all over.

This time, the shark fin wolf whimpered, it got up quickly, seeing that the flying bear was unharmed, it quickly escaped timidly.

Fang Yuan who was anticipating the shark fin wolf’s attack was dazed, he thought: “Was it because I was too harsh when flicking it to subdue it in the past? Its ferocity is greatly reduced as a result?”

The shark fin wolf escaped, Fang Yuan lost all interest in continuing.

“But my practice these last days was not in vain. It proved that my transformation path attainment level has indeed reached grandmaster level.”

Transformation path grandmaster!

Right now, Fang Yuan was a grandmaster in blood path, strength path, wisdom path, and star path, a fifth path, transformation path, had also become grandmaster level!

The five hundred years of his previous life were not of much help to Fang Yuan here. His transformation path attainment could reach this level because of Reckless Savage’s true meaning.

Heaven’s will wanted to exterminate Fang Yuan, it planned and raised the power of his calamities and tribulations to the limits permitted by the way of heaven.

Fang Yuan had passed two earthly calamities, but these earthly calamities were extraordinarily powerful, they were on par with heavenly tribulations. Thus, even Reckless Savage’s true meaning was drawn out in a greater amount.

Good fortune and misfortune came in turns.

Calamities and tribulations had a rule, that was the balance of fortune and misfortune.

The stronger the calamities and tribulations, the greater the danger Fang Yuan faced, but after passing the tribulation, he would receive much greater benefits!

Fang Yuan's transformation path grandmaster attainment was obtained after three infusions of Reckless Savage's true meaning. The first was when Hei Lou Lan ascended to a ten extreme immortal, the latter two times were inside his own earthly calamities, drawn out using immortal tribulation tempering aperture. He could become a grandmaster because his foundation had been accumulated sufficiently.

"Becoming a transformation path grandmaster is good news, but my current situation is quite bad." Fang Yuan was worried.

Calamities and tribulations grew stronger each time.

After the second earthly calamity, Fang Yuan could guess how much stronger his following calamities and tribulations would become.

The second earthly calamity was passed after an extremely dangerous process.

Along the way, the snow moons started appearing, if Fang Yuan was not resolute and attacked them immediately, the outcome would be disastrous. Towards the end, Dang Hun Mountain was reduced to a small mound, he had so little immortal essence he could not even use one immortal killer move, he only passed because of the desolate beast he prepared.

It could be said, Fang Yuan expended almost all of his trump cards.

"During the first earthly calamity, Reckless Savage's true meaning took over half of the calamities and tribulations' power. The snow monsters created by heaven's will did not hold the initiative."

"But during the second earthly calamity, heaven's will planned and plotted while involving Reckless Savage's true meaning, making use of it, influencing it to become the snow moons that amplified the power of the wind flower tribulation."

"Heaven's will can think, in the third earthly calamity, it will definitely consider Dang Hun Mountain, my current immortal killer moves, and my desolate beasts, as well as even subordinates like Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong."

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated.

Fang Yuan had gone through some tribulations, he gained a deeper understanding towards heaven's will.

Conversely, the same applied to heaven's will, it gained more and more information regarding Fang Yuan.

Currently, Fang Yuan had seven main methods against the tribulations.

The first was to undergo tribulation in the northern icy plain, using immortal tribulation tempering aperture to lure out Reckless Savage true meaning, weakening heaven's will's control over the tribulations.

The second was Dog Shit Luck, using luck path to weaken the tribulations.

The third was using attitude Gu, dark limit Gu, change form Gu, and familiar face to transform into various things that could confuse heaven's will.

The fourth was his strength path, sword path, and blood path Immortal Gu, as well as immortal killer moves that could resist it head on.

The fifth was Dang Hun Mountain, it gave him an advantage in terrain.

The sixth was his status as a complete otherworldly demon, heaven’s will could not influence Fang Yuan’s cognition.

The seventh were external forces. Like the spinefin star dragonfish, shark fin wolf, featherman Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong, Lang Ya Sect’s hairy man Gu Immortals, and others.

“Heaven’s will knows clearly about these methods and trump cards. At most, the seventh point has greater room for variance.”

“But these external forces are unreliable.”

“My enslavement path attainment level is not high, I am not skilled in enslavement path methods either. Even though I can enslave the shark fin wolf and spinefin star dragonfish, heaven’s will can also use the tribulations to grant them freedom, thus, during the tribulation, I can only set them up as a trump card, to prevent heaven’s will from making use of them.”

“And the featherman Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong, he is a variant human Gu Immortal, he has abundant intelligence, if he regains freedom, he would be a bigger threat than desolate beasts. Unless I have no choice, I will not expose the secret of my sovereign immortal aperture to him. And most importantly, he had once used heavenly wish to descend into Tai Bai blessed land as an earthly calamity. If he was manipulated by heaven’s will like those snow monsters and betrayed me, that would be problematic.”

“At this rate, my third earthly calamity will be a near death experience, and the fourth earthly calamity would be a certain death situation.”

Fang Yuan was deeply aware of his circumstances.

Even though he passed the second earthly calamity, treasure yellow heaven was not open, he could not use any cultivation resources to increase his strength.

This was the problem with Gu Immortals undergoing tribulation.

The calamities and tribulations get stronger each time, they had to work hard and cultivate, to ensure that the growth of their strength could match the increase in strength of the calamities and tribulations.

Gu Immortals with lower potential would face weaker calamities and tribulations, there was a long time between each one, it was not hard for them to cultivate. But Fang Yuan’s potential was unprecedented and possibly never surpassed, he had the sovereign immortal aperture that could cultivate all paths!

Thus, his calamities and tribulations were so terrifying, the growth in their strength was unheard of, and there was only two months between each tribulation!

Other Gu Immortals would have died already, because Fang Yuan had a deep foundation and a huge amount of resources saved up, he could last until now.

Look at the number of Immortal Gu and immortal killer moves Fang Yuan had, his grandmaster attainment level in multiple paths, and even Dang Hun Mountain and Lang Ya Sect, these external forces that he could use.

But even so, his future was bleak.

“Treasure yellow heaven is closed, it completely breaks my plans and momentum.

At this rate, I cannot survive.”

The problem was treasure yellow heaven.

If treasure yellow heaven opened, he would have a smooth journey ahead!

But when was treasure yellow heaven opening?

Nobody knew.

It could open in the next moment, or several months later.

In Fang Yuan’s case, if it took a few months to reopen, he would be dead already. Unless he had a fortuitous encounter and gained a huge boost in strength.

Days passed, but there were no signs of treasure yellow heaven opening.

Fang Yuan’s injuries had recovered, but his immortal aperture could not develop.

Lang Ya Sect’s development was also halted. Lang Ya land spirit had asked Fang Yuan many times to settle the matter of the falling star hound. But Fang Yuan did not agree, their relationship was getting worse.

Lang Ya land spirit reduced the rewards of Fang Yuan teaching the hairy man Gu Immortals combat skills to the lowest, he was making almost no gains.

Under Sixth Hair’s instigation, the other hairy man Gu Immortals were also turning cold to Fang Yuan, they even started hating him.

Even though the second earthly calamity was over, Fang Yuan’s situation was getting worse.

Should he wait until treasure yellow heaven opened, or attempt to take the initiative and find a breakthrough?

Fang Yuan was faced with a difficult problem.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1100: Hei Tribe Takes The Blame

Fang Yuan thought about it for a long time, he chose to wait.

After the second earthly calamity, he gained a deeper understanding of heaven’s will.

“Over at Tai Qiu, it seems peaceful, but heaven’s will has likely already made its plot, waiting for me to jump in!”

“Earlier, Lang Ya Sect was developing smoothly in Tai Qiu, it was likely heaven’s will’s bait.”

“Next, the falling star hound appeared, it was heaven’s will’s probing and pressure. It is attempting to use Lang Ya Sect to force me out.”

"This means, I definitely cannot go."

Or maybe Fang Yuan was just over thinking it? Maybe heaven's will was not so omnipotent. Or maybe heaven's will has not started plotting in Tai Qiu yet?

Fang Yuan thought about these, but he eliminated all these wishful thoughts.

He could survive until now because of his vigilance, and the fact that he did not leave things to chance. He always planned for the worst outcome.

Placing no expectations on the love of others, not longing for anyone to be kind to him, not expecting himself to be favored by fate.

Relying entirely on himself!

Waiting.

Fang Yuan settled down, awaiting the opening of treasure yellow heaven.

After considering all aspects, this was the most advantageous and stable choice for him.

Time continued to pass, half a month soon passed, but treasure yellow heaven still had no change.

Sixth Hair was sowing discord everywhere, the hairy man Gu Immortals' attitude towards Fang Yuan was getting worse.

Some were pointing at Fang Yuan in the face, scolding him for being a traitor, even though he joined Lang Ya Sect, he was not contributing it.

"I have a reason for everything I do." Fang Yuan explained plainly, after that, he stayed in his cloud city and rarely moved around.

He also accepted very few requests to guide the hairy man Gu Immortals in fighting.

Because the rewards were simply too little after Lang Ya land spirit's adjustment.

He could not develop his immortal aperture, and it was difficult to become proficient in transformation path methods, Fang Yuan did not waste his time, he used wisdom path methods to make many deductions.

But without the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan felt a strong contrast. His deductions took a long time, it was very different from using the light of wisdom, the difference was like that of heaven and earth.

"Why would I care about the attitude of others?"

"As long as I am in Lang Ya Sect, and do not break any sect rules, would Lang Ya land spirit break his own rules and remove my external supreme elder status? Unlikely."

Fang Yuan continued to wait.

Even though the environment exerted great pressure on him, he was unmoved.

Northern Plains, Myriad Bean Garden, more than ten days later.

This place had fertile soil and good sunny weather, there were fields for farming with lots of irrigation channels that were orderly arranged.

Chu Du came here and looked around, he felt his emotions calming down, he said loudly: “Tian Xia Xin, you are indeed the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal in Northern Plains. The outside world is already in a mess, but you are still here farming and living peacefully, you are truly an unfettered expert.”

There were thousands of square kilometers of farmland, with many figures that had their backs lowered and farming.

Most of them were inkmen, they had dark skin and white hair, they were a type of variant human.

One of them was a human, he looked like an old farmer with a hunched back, fifty to sixty years old with wrinkles on his face. His rough hands were grabbing onto two special beanstalks. His pants were rolled up as he stood on mud, he had no demeanor of an immortal, he really looked like an ordinary old man.

But after hearing Chu Du’s words, he raised his head, straightening his back. facing the famous Domination Immortal, he had no fear or unease, he smiled lightly: “Chu Du, you are flattering me. How can I be the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal in Northern Plains? There is a mountain taller than another mountain, an expert above another expert, there are so many hidden experts in Northern Plains, even though I inherited Old Immortal Tian Yuan’s true inheritance, I could not learn much and had a weak foundation. Back in the day, I competed with Dong Fang Chang Fan and lost to him by miles. There is no way I am number one.”

This wisdom path Gu Immortal Tian Xia Xin was originally a mortal, he was not even a Gu Master.

But under a coincidence, he obtained an immense opportunity from an immortal.

Eventually, he inherited the true inheritance of a famous person in history, the wisdom path great expert Old Immortal Tian Yuan, becoming a wisdom path Gu Immortal secretly.

Back then, when Dong Fang Chang Fan tried to develop his clan and lead Dong Fang tribe on a strong rise, he had to infringe on other people’s benefits.

Even though Tian Xia Xin obtained a true inheritance and became a Gu Immortal, he had ordinary aptitude, his immortal aperture was ordinary and his calamities and tribulations were not powerful. Because of his personality, he had no grand ambitions. He was originally cultivating peacefully at home, but when Dong Fang tribe expanded, they interrupted his peaceful lifestyle.

Even though Tian Xia Xin was unwilling to, Dong Fang Chang Fan was very overbearing, after losing to Dong Fang Chang Fan, he could only leave Myriad Bean Garden and roam outside.

During this period, he interacted with other Gu Immortals and slowly, the Northern Plains Gu Immortal world learned of his existence.

After Dong Fang Chang Fan died, Dong Fang tribe’s base was taken down, countless resources were snatched away.

As a super force, Dong Fang tribe was like the setting sun, fading out of existence rapidly.

Without Dong Fang Chang Fan, Dong Fang tribe collapsed, Tian Xia Xin used this chance to return to his former home, becoming the owner of Myriad Bean Garden.

Even though he had ordinary aptitude, his true inheritance was very impressive, many Northern Plains Gu Immortal promoted him, considering him to be the number one person under Dong Fang Chang Fan.

After Dong Fang Chang Fan died, he naturally went up in status, and was now publicly recognized as the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal in the Northern Plains Gu Immortal world.

But he had no ambitions or desires, he wanted to be ordinary, even as a Gu Immortal, he did not want to give up on his original life, he went to the fields to farm daily.

Of course, Myriad Bean Garden was huge, most of the labor was done by inkmen.

Tian Xia Xin raised inkman slaves, he was quite famous in the Northern Plains Gu Immortal world for this.

Chu Du smiled, walking towards Tian Xia Xin: “Brother Tian is too humble, if I had brother Tian’s wisdom path attainment, I would call myself number one already, in the whole of Northern Plains, I would like to see who can compete against me?”

Tian Xia Xin squinted his eyes, he laughed heartily: “Brother Chu, you carry yourself like a dragon or tiger, you are a domineering person among immortals, you have grand ambitions, I cannot compare to you. Well? Do you also want to reap some benefits from Hei tribe?” You came here today to ask me to make deductions for you?”

Chu Du nodded, but shook his head a moment later: “Hei tribe is about to be destroyed, like the former Dong Fang tribe. Right now, almost all forces in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world are attacking and plotting against Hei tribe. However, I do not want to interfere in this. I came here with an even more important matter to ask Brother Tian to deduce.”

Tian Xia Xin showed a look of admiration on his face: “Impressive! As expected of Domination Immortal Chu Du, you are unfazed by the trends of the world and stick to your own goals. What do you want me to deduce?”

“I want you to make deductions about a person. This is the clue.” Chu Du said, handing an Immortal Gu to Tian Xia Xin.

This Immortal Gu looked like a silver winged dragonfly, its wings were flickering with silver light, Tian Xia Xin felt a cold chill looking at it.

“A rank seven sword path Immortal Gu.” He was slightly taken aback, suddenly, his body shook with a mystical aura, he answered himself: “Flying sword Immortal Gu, Bo Qing once used it.”

“As expected of Tian Xia Xin, that is the case.” Chu Du praised, stating his intent.

He wanted to obtain the immortal tribulation tempering aperture method from Fang Yuan, to lure out infusions of Reckless Savage’s true meaning, assisting him in cultivation.

Compared to the immortal tribulation tempering aperture method, his method of nurturing strength path Gu Masters to become Gu Immortals was too slow and inefficient.

Even though he had Fang Yuan’s flying sword Immortal Gu, he could not match him in speed, he could only negotiate with him.

But after that, Fang Yuan left, even though he gave Chu Du a contact method, Chu Du received few replies from him. Even when Fang Yuan replied, he was just giving half-hearted replies.

Chu Du was getting more anxious.

Especially in the last few months, when treasure yellow heaven closed, Chu Du lost all ways to contact Fang Yuan.

Chu Du was also anticipating the opening of treasure yellow heaven, but when he thought about it, even if treasure yellow heaven opened, Fang Yuan might still ignore him.

It was quite unbelievable, what sort of person was Chu Du, he actually had to wait for a Gu Immortal to reply to him.

But the immortal tribulation tempering aperture method was very important, it was a way for Chu Du to cultivate.

Chu Du ignored even the events in Hei tribe, he went to Tian Xia Xin to use his methods to deduce Fang Yuan's location.

“Since you are ignoring me, I will find you myself!” Chu Du was thinking like this.

This was the demeanor of the Domination Immortal!

Tian Xia Xin continued deducing, a moment later, he said: “Good! This Immortal Gu still belongs to the target, you did not forcefully refine it. This way, I have a fifty percent chance of deducing the other party.”

Chu Du frowned: “Only fifty percent?”

“If he is hiding inside an immortal aperture, I definitely cannot deduce anything. Fifty percent is very high already.” Tian Xia Xin said.

Chu Du nodded helplessly: “Then I will trouble Brother Tian.”

“Let's go to another location. I need three days.”

Lang Ya blessed land.

Fang Yuan returned to his cloud city.

Earlier, he was summoned by Lang Ya land spirit, he was not asking him to deal with the falling star hound, instead, something huge was happening in Northern Plains!

“Hei tribe...” Fang Yuan muttered, his gaze flickering.

Hei tribe was facing a destructive crisis, they were in dire straits. Speaking of which, Fang Yuan was among the main culprits for it.

Looking at the situation.

Fang Yuan caused the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he destroyed Imperial Court blessed land and caused Northern Plains' righteous path to be furious, they were trying to find him.

But at that time, with Shadow Sect helping him, along with Fang Yuan's own efforts, they could not find him.

Next, Hei Cheng joined Shadow Sect, Shadow Sect and Feng Jiu Ge's group fought in the hundred days battle in Luo Po Valley.

Hei Cheng left behind the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison and escaped, being captured by Fang Yuan.

Next, Blazing Heaven Demoness dealt with Old Ancestor Xue Hu, they came to an agreement, Blazing Heaven Demoness forced Hei tribe’s top four supreme elders, who were using Green City Rampage, to retreat, and Old Ancestor Xue Hu used the chance to steal immortal materials from Hei tribe’s headquarters, earning a huge fortune.

Finally, in the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Shadow Sect was destroyed, nobody could protect Fang Yuan from deductions anymore, his secret was exposed by Heavenly Court to the entire world, the truth of Imperial Court blessed land was revealed.

Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals wanted to get rid of Fang Yuan, but they could not find his location. Firstly, wisdom path Gu Immortals were very rare, and secondly, Fang Yuan had been hiding inside Lang Ya blessed land the entire time! Finally, this fellow also had quite a high attainment in wisdom path himself!

Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals could not find Hei Lou Lan or Tai Bai Yun Sheng. Fang Yuan was the main culprit, they were the accomplices! Right now, they were with Ying Wu Xie. Central Continent’s Heavenly Court struck but could not capture them.

Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals were furious!

Especially the righteous path Gu Immortals, and those super forces who dominated territories, the Huang Jin tribes.

Their lives was originally great, using the arrangement of their ancestor Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, they could bully those demonic path or lone immortals, playing the game of the Imperial Court contest every ten years, heh, it was quite exciting! In all, the righteous path flourished, and the Huang Jin tribes dominated Northern Plains, the situation could not be shaken.

But Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed, this beautiful setup broke apart utterly.

They could not find the culprit or the accomplices, so they went to Hei tribe!

Hei Lou Lan was a member of Hei tribe after all!

Who else but Hei tribe could take the blame now?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1101: Two True Inheritances

“With Hei tribe’s current situation, should I interfere?” Fang Yuan thought about it, there was much he could do here.

Even though Hei tribe was a super force, part of the Huang Jin family, they were weak among the super forces of Northern Plains. Moreover, they were besieged on all fronts now, they were facing the entire Northern Plains Gu Immortal world!

The outcome was obvious, Hei tribe was going down in flames.

Even if they were unwilling to give in, how could one tribe resist the entire Gu Immortal world?

Unless they had a rank eight Gu Immortal to defend them, but Hei tribe did not have such a person.

Hei tribe’s top four supreme elders could form the ancient battle formation Green City Rampage and had battle strength that could contest with that of a rank eight to an extent. But this was the only trump card that Hei tribe had.

Fang Yuan became more enticed as he thought about it. To him, the situation was a mess now, everyone wanted to gain profits from Hei tribe, in this situation, he could definitely gain something.

Don’t forget, Fang Yuan had a huge advantage — he had a Gu Immortal captive, Hei Cheng!

Gu Immortal Hei Cheng was not like ordinary Hei tribe Gu Immortals. He had authority, he was trusted by the top four supreme elders.

Hei tribe’s top four supreme elders encountered a problem when using the ancient battle formation Green City Rampage, causing them to be unable to distance themselves from one another, they could only give up some authority. Hei Cheng was their spokesperson, he managed the affairs of Hei tribe, and knew clearly about the situation in the whole of Hei tribe.

Hei Cheng was in Fang Yuan’s hands, he naturally had methods to search souls and wills, Fang Yuan was a wisdom path grandmaster, Hei Cheng could not defend against him.

Right now, Fang Yuan had more clear knowledge about Hei tribe than those Huang Jin tribes who were targeting it. He knew deeper and more specific information.

With the support of his intel, Fang Yuan had a huge advantage compared to them.

Within Hei tribe, there was a key thing which attracted Fang Yuan.

That was — the Hei Fan true inheritance!

Hei Fan was once a Gu Immortal of Hei tribe, he was a famous person in history, but he had died long ago.

In the past, Hei Fan cultivated time path, he reached rank eight. he controlled Hei tribe and made it an overlord back then, it was quite powerful even among super forces, those were glorious times.

But his lifespan was limited, after Hei Fan died, Hei tribe slowly became weaker, while some of the other super forces rose up.

Before Hei Fan died, he left behind his true inheritance, but none of Hei tribe’s descendants could inherit it.

The true inheritance of a rank eight Gu Immortal, if one inherited it, they might become a rank eight Gu Immortal in the future.

If Hei tribe had a rank eight Gu Immortal, they would not be in this situation.

In the world of Gu Immortals, rank six Gu Immortals were at the bottom, rank seven Gu Immortals were in the middle, while rank eights were the top brass.

If Hei tribe had a rank eight Gu Immortal, even if Hei Lou Lan was the main culprit behind the destruction of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, they could still withstand it! The existence of a rank eight Gu Immortal was crucial to the deterrence of a super force against others!

Even if this rank eight Gu Immortal were to be faced with pressure by many other rank eight Gu Immortals, they would at most only need to pay a huge price in resources and compensation to protect the tribe.

The current situation was not like that, Hei tribe had many Gu Immortals, but they could not defend the tribe.

“Hei Fan true inheritance...” Fang Yuan muttered, his eyes were shining deeply.

“In my current situation, the biggest obstacle is heaven’s will. And heaven’s will’s strongest methods are calamities and tribulations.”

“Each calamity and tribulation is a gamble, I am targeted by heaven’s will, it is too dangerous. And the interval between each calamity is two months, this is simply too short!”

If he had more time, Fang Yuan could deal with the calamities and tribulations after more preparation.

But Fang Yuan’s body, coming from the Sovereign Immortal Fetus, was simply too absurd! Its existence defied heaven, it could not be allowed to remain.

However, man is the spirit of all living beings, Gu Immortals were incredibly intelligent beings. Predecessors had thought of countless ways to deal with the short durations between calamities and tribulations.

Among them, the most popular were time path methods.

Lang Ya blessed land did this, Long Hair Ancestor had once asked a time path great expert to slow the rate of time in Lang Ya blessed land. This way, the interval between calamities and tribulations was longer.

After Long Hair Ancestor died, this was left behind. This gave Lang Ya land spirit lots of time to prepare and get ready for all the calamities and tribulations.

“I do not know any time path Gu Immortal. Even if I once was in contact with Tai Bai Yun Sheng, he could not slow the time in the immortal aperture.”

Fang Yuan knew about Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s inheritance, because he had once soul searched Tai Bai Yun Sheng in Imperial Court blessed land. But in fact, not all time path Gu Immortals had methods to slow time in the immortal aperture. Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a good example.

“Even if I know any such time path Gu Immortal, or approach them now, my sovereign immortal aperture is an extremely important secret, it is too huge of a deal, how can I let any time path Gu Immortal know about it? It is hard to trust anyone.”

“I might as well rely on myself! If I can obtain the Hei Fan true inheritance and slow the time in my immortal aperture, that would be great.”

Ordinary time path true inheritances might not have a method to slow the time passing in the immortal aperture.

But the Hei Fan true inheritance was extraordinary, it was left behind by the rank eight Hei Fan!

In the history of Hei tribe, it was recorded: When Hei Fan was alive, he had slowed the time in many immortal apertures of Hei tribe Gu Immortals. This way, the Hei tribe Gu Immortals could deal with their calamities and tribulations with more ease, there was a greater chance of success. As time passed, the number of Hei tribe Gu Immortals exceeded other super forces.

With the rank eight Gu Immortal Hei Fan as deterrence in Northern Plains, and with countless rank six and seven Gu Immortals in Hei tribe, this created a glorious time of prosperity in Hei tribe’s history!

Fang Yuan knew clearly about the history of Hei tribe through the captive Hei Cheng.

Blazing Heaven Demoness knew about this too. She had a time path injury, it made the rate at which time passed for her very fast, she had to become an immortal zombie.

To cure her injury, Blazing Heaven Demoness formed a scheme, sending her sister Su Xian Er to Hei tribe, attempting to obtain the Hei Fan true inheritance and heal her. Instead, her sister fell in love with Hei Cheng and gave birth to Hei Lou Lan, it became a story of love and hatred.

All in all, as long as Fang Yuan could obtain the Hei Fan true inheritance, he could slow the rate of time in his immortal aperture.

Once the rate of time in his immortal aperture slowed down, Fang Yuan’s circumstances would change drastically!

Even though slower time meant that production of resources would also be slower, and his cultivation level would also rise more slowly, it stabilized the situation, Fang Yuan’s pressure and difficulty in cultivating would be lower by a huge margin. The advantages outweighed the disadvantages!

Hei Fan true inheritance...

Fang Yuan became more enticed as he thought about it.

To him, this was a crucial way to get out of his situation.

“If I want to leave and go to Hei tribe, participating in this chaotic battle, there are many ways to do so.”

“This precious information is my first advantage. Secondly, I have dark limit Immortal Gu to conceal my aura, heaven’s will cannot find me. And thirdly, I have familiar face and change form Immortal Gu to disguise myself, I can mix in with the chaotic bunch moving in.”

“Should I go?”

Fang Yuan thought over it, he decided to observe from the sidelines, he did not go immediately.

The situation over at Hei tribe was too chaotic now.

Righteous path, demonic path, even lone immortals were participating in the raid.

The scene was a mess, countless experts were moving about, appearing continuously.

Among rank six Gu Immortals, there were bottom tier Gu Immortals like Old Lu, and also ordinary Gu Immortals like Qing Xuan Zi, there were even Zhuo Zhan, Divine Lord Tian Du, Shi Hou, and other experts. Among rank seven Gu Immortal experts, there were Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han. According to some vague rumors, it seemed like Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Old Ancestor Xue Hu were also active in this.

Fang Yuan looked at the situation, the time was not ripe yet.

This was only the start, many forces and Gu Immortals were taking over Hei tribe’s resource points. These Gu Immortals were far from reaching the headquarters yet.

All sorts of forces were restricting one another, it was very chaotic. Countless people rose up and fought, they competed to decide who would get to keep the resources.

If Fang Yuan went now, he would be implicated, no matter who he disguised himself as.

And dark limit Immortal Gu’s protection only lasted for a while, it could not be used for long.

And most importantly, there was heaven’s will.

Heaven’s will could make arrangements against Fang Yuan.

What did heaven’s will know?

Heaven’s will was inside Spring Autumn Cicada, with Spring Autumn Cicada around Fang Yuan, heaven’s will might know of his plan beforehand.

During the transactions with Sixth Hair, Shadow Sect had told Fang Yuan: Heaven’s will was vast, it was everywhere.

Heaven’s will covered the area of the five regions and two heavens, this was a huge advantage, it knew much information and secrets.

Because of many reasons, Fang Yuan could not act casually.

He decided to wait until Hei tribe’s situation became clearer, once he could see the situation clearly, he would be able to take action.

The key of this was still one word — Speed!

Accumulating strength, and striking immediately, before leaving rapidly.

There was no better tactic.

Fang Yuan waited patiently, using Lang Ya Sect, he could gain information about the outside world.

Days passed by.

The battles involving Hei tribe continued to aggravate. Countless Gu Immortals got involved, some won while others lost, countless schemes were used, it was like a huge spiral, and this spiral was expanding, sucking in even more people. At this rate, the spiral was becoming chaotic and uncontrollable.

Many secluded cultivators could not resist the temptation, they appeared.

There were people like Fang Yuan as well, biding their time.

Days later, in Myriad Bean Garden.

“I tried my best, but the other party is hiding inside an immortal aperture, there are no results.” Wisdom path Gu Immortal Tian Xia Xin sighed, showing some embarrassment on his face.

“Is that so...” Disappointment could not be concealed on Chu Du’s face.

“But, I have made some other gain.” Tian Xia Xin suddenly said.

“Oh? What do you mean, Brother Tian?” Chu Du was perplexed.

Immediately, he saw that Tian Xia Xin returned flying sword Immortal Gu to him, he pointed at the Immortal Gu and said: “This flying sword Immortal Gu is not simple, there is an insignia left on this Gu. I have already deciphered this insignia, it is the key to an immortal’s true inheritance!”

“What? There is such a thing!” Chu Du was surprised, he was greatly interested: “Is this the sword path true inheritance of Sword Immortal Bo Qing?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1102: Planning

“No, no.” Hearing Chu Du’s guess, wisdom path Gu Immortal Tian Xia Xin shook his head: “This insignia is made from an information path method, according to my deduction, it is an information path true inheritance. But the location of the true inheritance is not in Northern Plains, but Eastern Sea instead.”

“Eastern Sea, information path true inheritance?” Chu Du frowned, his expectations fell drastically.

If it were a sword path true inheritance, there was little hope of him cultivating it anyway.

The reason was simple, he cultivated strength path, his foundation in strength path dao marks was deep, it was difficult for him to cultivate other paths.

But sword path had strong attacking power, and because of the historical records of the legendary ‘pseudo-Immortal Venerable’ Bo Qing, Chu Du gained a lot of curiosity.

The moment he heard information path, the curiosity faded.

Chu Du was a highly accomplished character who naturally knew the advantages of information path towards his cultivation, but he was straightforward and had grand ambitions, he had a preference for strong offensive methods instead.

He was known as the Domination Immortal, there was a saying: There are only wrong names, not wrong titles.

Chu Du could not cultivate sword path or information path, of course.

In this world, throughout the past, present, and future, Fang Yuan was the only one who could cultivate all paths!

If other Gu Immortals wanted to cultivate a second path, they would need to spend a lot of time and effort. Unless there was a special situation, or if they had an exemplary Immortal Gu, most would not do something like this with great disadvantages, it was not wise.

Seeing Chu Du's expression, Tian Xia Xin knew what he was thinking, he quickly explained: "Brother Chu, don't look down on this insignia. According to my deduction, this was carved onto flying sword Immortal Gu at a later time. Such an information path method is unheard of, it was an eye-opener, this is definitely not ordinary!"

Chu Du's expression became serious.

After the reminder, he felt that Tian Xia Xin's words made much sense!

If the carving was done on ordinary rocks or walls, that was normal. But it was done on a Gu worm, that was very rare.

And this was flying sword Immortal Gu, a rank seven sword path Gu!

Man is the spirit of all beings, Gu are the essence of heaven and earth.

When Gu Immortals cultivate and undergo tribulations, they would gain more dao marks in their bodies. Meanwhile, Immortal Gu were fragments made of dao marks!

The dao marks of different paths would resist and conflict with each other. This information path insignia had a trace of information path dao marks within it, but it could be carved on a container of sword path dao marks, and be kept for such a long time. This was like a ship floating in the sea, unmoved by all the currents around it.

In this case, the information path method was simply extraordinary!

"Brother Chu, can I negotiate with you?" Tian Xia Xin suddenly asked.

Chu Du smiled lightly, he was not a wisdom path Gu Immortal, but he understood what Tian Xia Xin was going to say.

Chu Du waved his hand, interrupting Tian Xia Xin, saying: "Brother Tian, please don't blame me. This flying sword Immortal Gu is not mine to begin with, it belongs to my friend. My friend had gone missing, so I got worried and wanted to deduce his location. The opportunity on this Immortal Gu also belongs to him."

The deductions of wisdom path Gu Immortals did not come from thin air, they needed clues. The more clues there were, the easier the deduction could be done.

Thus, wisdom path Gu Immortals often had a great desire towards information path methods.

Tian Xia Xin was originally not interested in most information path methods, because he had inherited Old Immortal Tian Yuan's extraordinary wisdom path inheritance, he had very high standards. But because this information path true inheritance was too high quality, even a Gu Immortal as reserved as him was interested.

"I see, I was too abrupt." Hearing Chu Du's rejection, Tian Xia Xin felt dejected, but he still returned flying sword Immortal Gu to Chu Du.

This rank seven sword path Immortal Gu was used to deduce for clues, it was not the payment for his services.

Of course, Chu Du asked Tian Xia Xin to make a deduction for him, he paid a hefty price.

“The deduction did not succeed, according to the rules, I will take only half of the payment.” Tian Xia Xin looked at the flying sword Immortal Gu in Chu Du’s hands longingly, he sighed and said this.

Chu Du shook his head, laughing: “No need, even though my goal was not achieved, it was not for nothing. Brother Tian is indeed the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, it was worth the price. I will take my leave.”

Chu Du was the Domination Immortal, but he was not a rash person lacking interpersonal skills.

Tian Xia Xin was one of the few wisdom path experts in Northern Plains, he would likely need his help again in the future, how could Chu Du worsen their relationship?

“This...” Tian Xia Xin hesitated.

But Chu Du had already left, he did things quickly and resolutely, he left without hesitation.

When he left, he was quite happy.

The rank seven Immortal Gu Flying Sword was already very precious, now that it also had an information path true inheritance clue, Chu Du felt that Fang Yuan would never give up on it. This way, he had a way to pressure Fang Yuan!

“I must obtain the method to draw out Reckless Savage’s true meaning no matter what!” Chu Du felt a flame burning inside him.

Tian Xia Xin saw Chu Du leaving, he sighed helplessly.

If it were others, he might have gone ahead to snatch it. But that was the Domination Immortal!

Chu Du only cultivated strength path, while Tian Xia Xin cultivated wisdom path, but Tian Xia Xin did not have the courage to scheme against Chu Du.

Strength path was declining like the setting sun, while wisdom path was precious and rare. But throughout history, there was no strongest path, only a strongest Gu Immortal, no path or Gu worm could be known as the strongest.

Man is the spirit of all living beings, Gu are the essence of heaven and earth. To humans, Gu worms were just tools!

Time passed, the commotion in Northern Plains intensified.

The web around Hei tribe was starting to tighten.

Like what Fang Yuan had predicted, Hei tribe was resisting the entire Northern Plains Gu Immortal world, how could they win?

Even though Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals resisted strongly, they still lost bit by bit, with no hopes of winning. The intense aura of blood attracted more and more hungry sharks that came after Hei tribe’s immense assets.

Hei tribe headquarters, Iron Eagle blessed land.

Right now, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals were gathered, there was a gloomy atmosphere.

Hei Cheng’s four top supreme elders were seated at the highest position. Hei Cheng was captured by Fang Yuan, his good friend Hei Bai was injured. The other six Hei tribe Gu Immortals were all rank six.

The atmosphere was heavy.

“The tribe is facing a calamity, we are all pillars that hold up Hei tribe, let’s talk about it, how can we survive this crisis?” First supreme elder initiated, breaking the silence.

But Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals simply looked at one another in turn, nobody said a thing.

This was not the first meeting.

In the earlier meeting, they were participating actively. Some suggested that they should fight back strongly, they should punish and take down all those who try to infringe on Hei tribe’s property. Of course, their goal was to achieve peace.

Peace could only be obtained after fighting.

Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals were not stupid, they knew this.

Unfortunately, even though they understood this, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals could not rival so many enemies, even though they fought back, they were forced back. Almost all of Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals were injured now. One rank six Gu Immortal even died.

Second supreme elder sighed: “If not for the fact that an accident happened when we used Green City Rampage, causing us to be unable to separate, the situation would be much better now.”

Hei tribe occupied a lot of resources, but Hei tribe Gu Immortals were few, and most of them were rank six. Against the attacking forces, Hei tribe was too weak, and had little battle strength, they could not control the situation.

“It is all because of Hei Cheng! This person is a sinner of our tribe!! That daughter of his caused this mess. He even lost our Immortal Gu House Dark Prison, he truly deserves death without sympathy!” A Hei tribe Gu Immortal scolded angrily.

“Indeed, indeed.”

“Hei Cheng is a heinous sinner...”

At once, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals spoke agitatedly.

Hei Cheng lost the Immortal Gu House Dark Prison, it was truly a huge mistake. Otherwise, with Dark Prison and the four elders’ Green City Rampage, the situation would not be this terrible.

First supreme elder was silent.

Dark Prison was originally his, he had lent it to Hei Cheng. Hei Cheng was the one who lost Dark Prison, first supreme elder was also to blame for trusting the wrong person.

During usual times, the four top supreme elders trusted Hei Cheng deeply, allowing him to manage matters in the tribe.

The criticism and scolding of the Hei tribe Gu Immortals was also vaguely expressing their unhappiness towards the four supreme elders, but they could not say it directly.

After a while, third supreme elder could not stand it anymore, he said: “Enough, at this point, the matter has already happened, what can cursing do? We are in a crisis now, if cursing could save us, I would have done it long ago. We are all members of Hei tribe with the same bloodline, if the tribe is wiped out, none of us will be spared. You should all know this.”

Once he said that, the berating stopped.

Fourth supreme elder coughed: “Regarding our current situation, if anyone has any input, you can mention it.”

The immortals were silent.

The difference in strength was too huge, there were no effective strategies.

“I have something to say.” At this point, a rank six Gu Immortal spoke.

Everyone looked over, it was Hei Bai.

This immortal cultivated wood path, he had rank six cultivation level, when he was young, he was known as the ‘Hei tribe stoneman’, he was a man of few words. Normally, he was close to Hei Cheng, they had a deep friendship.

“Speak, we are listening.”

“I want to see what great idea you have, Hei Bai?”

The Gu Immortals spoke in cold tones, they hated Hei Cheng, that hatred extended to Hei Bai as well.

Hei Bai’s expression did not change, he was like a rock, saying solemnly: “In this situation, I do not need to speak much, you are all aware of it. Not only the righteous path and demonic path Gu Immortals, even lone immortals are coming to get a share. The only reason for this is due to benefits.”

“Everyone kicks a man who is down, the survival of our tribe is most important. As long as we survive, be it resources, benefits, or reputation, they are all things we can give up.”

“You want us to surrender? Our tribe had traitors like Hei Lou Lan and Hei Cheng, Imperial Court blessed land was also destroyed, do you think the Huang Jin families would let us off?” Some Gu Immortals immediately mocked and sneered.

Hei Bai shook his head: “The Huang Jin tribes will not let us off, but there is one person in Northern Plains now who can help our Hei tribe escape this crisis.”

“Who?”

Hei Bai said a name.

The immortals heard this and were all shocked.

Author’s note: Guess who.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1103: Chaos in Northern Plains

The sun was setting, there was beautiful light in the horizon, it was blazing like fire, showing a scenic view.

A light wind was blowing, the golden wheat fields were swaying along.

“This is the wheat field that Hei tribe cultivates with great care, it is truly huge and majestic.” Gu Immortal Lu Qing Ming floated in the air as he looked down, saying plainly.

Hei tribe had planted a huge amount of wheat here.

This wheat was known as the golden wheat, it matured once every two years, but it was not meant to be consumed by humans, it was a type of metal, called metal essence.

This place was originally a barren desolate land. Because it had too high of a mineral content, even causing the formation of mines, no plants would grow here.

Hei tribe planted this golden wheat, making use of it to excavate the resources here, they had put in a lot of time and effort for the project. Thus, this wheat field forming an immense area was created. Even though Lu Qing Ming was in the air now, he could not see the borders of this field.

There was another person beside Lu Qing Ming.

His name was Su Guang, a light path Gu Immortal.

He looked at the wheat field below him passionately: “Hei tribe’s wheat field is famous in Northern Plains. Every time it is harvested, at least five hundred thousand kilograms of metal essence is obtained. The metal essence is a huge source of revenue in Hei tribe. Even though the metal essence is a rank five mortal material, we have little use for it, but it can be sold in bulk for a good price.”

Lu Qing Ming smiled before nodding: “It is worth taking.”

“I would urge you both to not be foolish, my Guan tribe is taking this.” A figure appeared along with the voice, standing in front of Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang.

He had a stern expression, he was emitting strong battle intent, the third eye on his forehead was very eye-catching.

Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang looked at each other, reaching a consensus.

They had sensed that there were other Gu Immortals’ auras here, they spoke earlier without taking physical action in order to lure out the Gu Immortals.

“So it is Guan Shen Zhao of Guan tribe.” Lu Qing Ming said politely.

“The Traveling Three Elites, I have heard of you. But after Dong Fang Chang Fan’s incident, Gu Immortal Han Dong is already dead. If you try to act forcefully, I am afraid the Traveling Three Elites would be completely wiped out today.” Guan Shen Zhao was not polite at all.

He was a Guan tribe Gu Immortal, Guan tribe was a super force, part of the Huang Jin family, he had enough confidence.

Su Guang laughed: “You are in the righteous path, while us brothers are in the demonic path. Righteous and demonic are opposing sides, will we retreat now? We have to fight and determine the winner!”

Guan Shen Zhao snorted coldly, attacking directly.

At once, immortal aura rampaged, light burst out, the two sides engaged in fierce combat in the sky.

...

Two figures, one big and one small, were flying parallel to the ground.

“Grandfather, where are we going?” The smaller one was only a teenager in appearance, he asked with an expression of curiosity.

“Hehe, my dear grandson, we are going to Gushing Spring Forest. Do you know about it?” The larger one was an old looking Gu Immortal, he wore a yellow robe, his huge sleeves were fluttering in the wind.

The youngster’s eyes moved about: “Gushing Spring Forest is a forest of water pillars formed from underground geysers. It is said that there are countless water path and earth path Gu worms there, it is a precious territory of Hei tribe.”

“Good, I did not teach you in vain. Dear grandson, don’t you cultivate water path? We are going to Gushing Spring Forest now, let’s see if there are any water path mortal Gu that you want. If we are lucky, we might even obtain some of the springs, we can place them in my immortal aperture, when you becoming an immortal, I will transfer these resources to you.” The old Gu Immortal said.

The youngster showed a look of gratitude, he asked worriedly: “Grandfather, you are only a bottom tier rank six Gu Immortal. What if you die after entering Hei tribe’s territory?”

The youngster spoke without restraint, the old Gu Immortal was not angry, he laughed as he explained to his grandson: “More than ten days ago, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals had already gone back to their headquarters. Right now, Hei tribe’s other territories are unoccupied.”

“Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals are not around, but what about other Gu Immortals? Didn’t we hear that those old demons like Pi Shui Han are also getting involved?” The youngster was still worried.

“You don’t understand.” The old Gu Immortal was confident: “Even though Gushing Spring Forest is an important territory, compared to the others, it is still inferior. Experts like Pi Shui Han would not want to come here.”

“The closest super forces near Hei tribe are Liu tribe, Guan tribe, and Yao tribe. We cannot snatch the resources of territories near these tribes. Those close to Hei tribe’s headquarters are also untouchable. Those important treasures are for these experts to fight over, even if we watch from afar, we will be in danger. Considering this, Gushing Spring Forest is the safest and wisest choice for us.”

“So that’s it.” The youngster realized.

The sound of wind was loud, the two got closer to Gushing Spring Forest.

Suddenly, the old Gu Immortal’s expression changed, he heard the sound of intense battle.

“Oh no.” The old Gu Immortal’s expression sank, he quickly flew into the air.

At this moment, the sun was high in the sky, sending down blazing rays of light.

Gushing Spring Forest could be seen by the grandfather and grandson, but the place was a chaotic mess.

The tranquil Gushing Spring Forest had been ravaged, it was in disarray.

Spring water was spraying everywhere, explosions were occurring constantly.

Looking over it, there were nearly ten Gu Immortals in battle.

At once, the two looked at each other bitterly.

They could tell, others had the same plan as them. There were many wise bottom tier Gu Immortals.

...

In the sky, dark clouds were looming, rain was drizzling.

Two groups were facing each other in the sky of this ordinary plain.

Guan tribe and Liu tribe.

Guan tribe had three Gu Immortals, while Liu tribe had two.

The atmosphere was not heavy, the leaders of the two sides were talking warmly.

If not for the weather, they might even look like they were having a tea party.

“Lord third supreme elder, we have the advantage, why don’t we strike and occupy this place?” Over at Guan tribe, Gu Immortal Guan Shen Zhao could not stand the frustration, he transmitted this.

Guan tribe’s third supreme elder was talking with the other party, but he also transmitted to Guan Shen Zhao: “You are foolish! Have you forgotten the lesson a few days ago? By attacking rashly, you caused a bigger chaos, we could not defend the golden wheat field, other demonic path Gu Immortals snatched it.”

“A fragment of immemorial red heaven is hidden in this place, it is very important. Who knows how many people are aiming at this location. But my Guan tribe and even Liu tribe each can be considered to have half the local territorial advantage, thus, we are on the surface the two competing for it.”

“At this moment, we cannot act rashly and attack without reason. once we do, we would lose control of the situation, outsiders would come in to steal the fruits of our labor!”

Guan Shen Zhao was scolded severely, he showed shame on his face as he transmitted: “Lord, you are right, I was too rash.”

...

Eastern Sea, on a common island.

Ying Wu Xie, Shi Nu, Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, all four of them appeared.

“This is the island.” Ying Wu Xie looked around, letting out a breath of air.

“Fang Yuan, this is the turbulent flow sea area?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng guessed, he had once roamed in Eastern Sea, he could differentiate the locations of Eastern Sea.

Ying Wu Xie smiled: “That’s right, master had given me information about this secret base, we can rest and recover here.”

Currently, he was still using Fang Yuan’s identity to deceive Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Among these four Gu Immortals, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was the only one who was unaware of the truth.

Ying Wu Xie willed, after a while, he waved his hand, saying: “Follow me.”

Immediately, a certain arrangement was activated in this place.

Hei Lou Lan and the others’ field of vision changed, when they regained their senses, they were already under the island.

This place was a hollow that was previously dug out, a beautiful five floored palace was right in front of them.

“This is an Immortal Gu House?!” Hei Lou Lan was shocked, Shadow Sect was a huge force, there were arrangements in all five regions. Even though Yi Tian Mountain was a failure, the remaining forces were not to be underestimated!

But what happened next was more shocking to her.

The three immortals followed Ying Wu Xie, going inside the palace.

The palace doors opened on its own, it recognized Ying Wu Xie’s identity and welcomed the owner.

“This is?”

“So many Immortal Gu!”

Once they entered the palace, Shi Nu and Tai Bai Yun Sheng could not help but cry out.

Ying Wu Xie explained while smiling: “The turbulent flow sea area is a hugely advantageous location, it has a collection of the world’s currents running through here, among them is a tributary of the River of Time. Thus, even though this is not a blessed land or grotto-heaven, it is a rare place to store treasure in the five regions.”

“My Shadow Sect had already found out this tributary of the River of Time long ago, we made this arrangement on the island. We dug out the island’s interior and put an Immortal Gu House here, drawing strength from the River of Time to refine Gu. Thus, once in a while, Immortal Gu refine themselves.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had a guess already, he could not help but ask: “Don’t tell me, this Immortal Gu House is the legendary Regret Pool?”

Ying Wu Xie nodded before shaking his head: “This is only most of Regret Pool, even though we have Regret Pool’s greatest ability, the Gu refinement aspect, its attack and defense are horrible. Once it is placed, it cannot be moved.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng heard this and was shaking from excitement: “There are three great pools in this world, Heavenly Pool, Regret Pool, and Wine Pool, they are famous in the history of the five regions. To think that I can get to see Regret

Pool today!”

Hei Lou Lan was less well informed, she had less information regarding time path compared to Tai Bai Yun Sheng, she asked: “Refining Immortal Gu is extremely difficult, this Regret Pool is only an Immortal Gu House, it can refine so many Immortal Gu by itself?”

Ying Wu Xie smiled and explained: “Regret Pool is a time path Immortal Gu House, its Gu refinement ability is both amazing and weak. When Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals refine Immortal Gu successfully here, we will leave an insignia behind. When the Immortal Gu is destroyed, Regret Pool can be activated, using the power of the tributary of the River of Time and the preserved insignia to refine the Immortal Gu again, the success rate is about fifty to sixty percent.”

“Fifty to sixty percent?!” Hei Lou Lan was shocked by the extremely high chance of success.

“There are flaws too. After succeeding in the Gu refinement, the insignia would vanish, Gu Immortals have to replenish it themselves. And if not for this hidden tributary of the River of Time, it would be too hard to activate this effect, it cannot be used much.” Ying Wu Xie added.

Hei Lou Lan still had shock on her face, she looked at the Immortal Gu in front of her as she sighed, deeply moved: “Even so, it is very strong.”

Ying Wu Xie laughed as he raised his head: “We are in a dangerous situation, you have all lost your Immortal Gu. The Immortal Gu here are compensation, pick what you want!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1104: Treasure Yellow Heaven Opens!

Shadow Sect’s remnant forces were truly not simple!

Right before Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, there were over a dozen Immortal Gu.

But looking at these Immortal Gu, the joy on their faces faded gradually.

“I have the Great Strength True Martial Physique, but there are no strength path Immortal Gu among these Immortal Gu...” Hei Lou Lan shook her head, she said with a regretful tone.

“Sigh! Fang Yuan, you know that I cultivate time path, if I use these Immortal Gu...” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was in the same state, there were no time path Immortal Gu among these Immortal Gu.

Most of the Immortal Gu were soul path.

Shi Nu was silent, he was an earth path Gu Immortal, there were two Immortal Gu here which were earth path, but his original Immortal Gu were still around anyway.

Ying Wu Xie nodded, the smile on his face did not fade.

He knew that these were Immortal Gu that were destroyed during the battle of Yi Tian Mountain. These last days, the Immortal Gu House Regret Pool had activated, using the insignias left behind and the tributary of the River of Time to refine these Immortal Gu again.

Thus, most of them were soul path, there were time path ones, but the refinement had failed.

As for strength path Immortal Gu, there were none.

That Great Strength True Martial Physique immortal zombie, Da Li, was a rare cultivator of both wisdom and strength path, but when he refined strength path Immortal Gu, Shadow Sect had not yet built Regret Pool, he did not leave behind any insignia to refine Gu.

“No problem. You are all worried about conflicting dao marks, I have a special method to allow you to cultivate another path, without having it clash with your original main path.”

“There is such a thing?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng stared with wide eyes that were almost popping out.

Shi Nu’s emotionless face had also changed. This method was simply unheard of!

Hei Lou Lan squinted her eyes, she was suspicious that Ying Wu Xie was trying to increase his control over them, she felt that this was a scheme.

She spoke: “How can there be something as good as this? There has to be a downside, with such a special method, the drawback has to be severe?”

Ying Wu Xie smiled: “I can assure you, there are no side effects.”

He looked at Hei Lou Lan deeply, his gaze becoming darker.

He had thought of Fang Yuan, feeling some gloominess.

Compared to sovereign immortal fetus Gu, what was so surprising about having two non-conflicting paths? Shadow Sect had researched and created sovereign immortal fetus Gu, it could allow dao marks of all paths to coexist without any conflict between them.

Inside the door of life and death, Spectral Soul had devoured the souls of countless Gu Immortals, obtaining an immense amount of cultivation experiences.

Using a hundred thousand years to prepare, he had raised a multitude of paths to great grandmaster.

Shadow Sect had the method to cultivate two paths since long ago, it was their initial version. At its final state, it was sovereign immortal fetus Gu!

To refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, Shadow Sect spent a hundred thousand years, using up the whole of the foundation of Shadow Sect and Zombie Alliance, they even had to involve Spectral Soul’s main body to succeed.

But even the best laid plans could go awry. Even though sovereign immortal fetus Gu was refined, at the final moment, Fang Yuan took the fruits of their labor.

Sovereign immortal fetus Gu was a one time consumable Gu, Fang Yuan had already used it, there was no sovereign immortal fetus Gu left in this world, it could theoretically be refined again.

However, the cost and risk to refine a second one was too high. Even Ying Wu Xie did not have any confidence in it. Thus, sovereign immortal fetus Gu was essentially never going to appear again.

“Unless I can capture Fang Yuan and use him as the main immortal material to reverse refine it!”

“However, now is not the time to deal with him.”

“I need to increase my strength, I need to gather the remnant forces in Eastern Sea and save my main body first!”

Ying Wu Xie sighed internally, Shadow Sect and Fang Yuan had a score to settle, but he had his priorities. Now was not the time to fight against Fang Yuan.

Time passed quickly.

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

Since Fang Yuan’s second earthly calamity, more than a month had passed.

Treasure yellow heaven had still not opened, there were no changes.

Fang Yuan’s plan of managing his immortal aperture was greatly affected, left with no choice, he could only try to cultivate while deducing, placing his focus on the chaotic scene in Northern Plains, he obtained information about the situation regarding the Hei Fan true inheritance.

The earthly calamity occurred every two months. More than a month had passed already, in less than a month, Fang Yuan would face the third earthly calamity.

Time in this world passed unceasingly.

Fang Yuan could sense the third calamity already.

What made Fang Yuan worried was: The third earthly calamity would be more dangerous than the second. And at the moment, his strength was not much higher than during the second earthly calamity.

“If I can obtain the Hei Fan true inheritance, I can likely make use of the Immortal Gu to slow the rate of time in the immortal aperture. This way, not just the third earthly calamity, even against future calamities and tribulations, I would have a great advantage.”

Fang Yuan obtained a lot of intel from Hei Cheng.

The Hei Fan true inheritance was very impressive, it came from the rank eight time path great expert, Hei Fan. If he could obtain this true inheritance, he would be able to enter Hei Fan grotto-heaven, not only could he become the grotto-heaven’s owner, he could even obtain the time path Immortal Gu inside!

Many Gu Immortal true inheritances only had Immortal Gu recipes and immortal killer moves, they lacked Immortal Gu. This was because the feeding of Immortal Gu was very difficult, it was hard for them to live for long, and to be inherited by successors.

But Hei Fan true inheritance was different!

Because the Immortal Gu that Hei Fan left behind were still in his immortal aperture.

For ideal management of a Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture, the first requirement would be that the immortal aperture satisfies the feeding requirements of their Immortal Gu.

Gu Immortals like Hei Fan were like the rank eight Gu Immortal Yao Huang in the current Northern Plains, the management of his immortal aperture was definitely ideal.

If Fang Yuan could obtain the Hei Fan true inheritance, his capabilities would rise drastically. Once he slows down the rate of time in the immortal aperture, the dangerous situation would be lifted temporarily, or even settled completely. He would not be in this current situation, like he was walking on a tightrope, if he was careless, he would end up dead.

These last days, due to Lang Ya Sect, Fang Yuan gained a lot of intelligence regarding the chaos in Northern Plains.

That was not to say that Lang Ya Sect was skilled at gathering intelligence. It was the opposite, because of the hairy man Gu Immortals’ identities, they could not obtain information easily, far inferior to the former Fairy Li Shan.

The crucial reason was, Northern Plains’ chaos was too big, the entire Northern Plains Gu Immortal world was involved. Their conflict could be kept from mortals, but to Gu Immortals, nothing could be concealed at all!

A lot of intelligence did not need to be looked into to be found, they were available openly.

Even though Fang Yuan was in Lang Ya blessed land, he was very closely watching this situation.

Hei tribe was bearing too big of a blame, they were in a moment of crisis, at the risk of facing extermination.

Righteous path, demonic path, and lone immortals, all three factions were like hungry wolves coming at them.

Looking at Northern Plains’ map, Hei tribe was at the southeast area of Northern Plains, they had a huge territory and controlled many resources.

These resources attracted the greed of countless jackals.

Initially, these wolves could still be restrained, but with immense benefits attracting them, demonic path Gu Immortals started to fight.

The conflict between righteous and demonic continued to intensify.

A notable event was the battle between Guan Shen Zhao and the Traveling Two Elites. Guan Shen Zhao was outnumbered, the two demonic path Gu Immortals managed to snatch the golden wheat field.

Thereafter, large numbers of Gu Immortals joined in. With demonic path Gu Immortals like the Traveling Three Elites, Old Lu, Half Moon Brutemaster, and Zhuo Zhan, they competed over the resources of Hei tribe.

The scene was chaotic, the righteous path were caught off guard by them.

Gushing Spring Forest was faced with a destructive plunder under such a situation, Hei tribe’s hundreds of years of management had gone to waste.

The righteous path Gu Immortals became increasingly alert, they started to coordinate.

Even with competing for the fragment world of immemorial red heaven, it was such an important resource, yet they still restrained themselves and did not go all out.

The Gu Immortal world had always been led by the righteous path.

Particularly Northern Plains’ righteous path, they were all part of the Huang Jin family, they had the same origin.

The demonic path Gu Immortals lost their momentum, but soon, as more than half of the resources were split among them, Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han, these rank seven Gu Immortals started appearing, causing another wave of chaos.

For the first time, the demonic path was pushing back the righteous path.

At the start, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals were still defending their territories, but after experiencing some hardship, they gathered their remaining Gu Immortal battle strength and hid inside their headquarters, refusing to come out.

This undoubtedly gave rise to the arrogance of the demonic path Gu Immortals.

Besides that, there were other reasons.

Like earlier, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had defeated Yao Huang and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, as a member of the demonic path, he became the top expert in Northern Plains.

And most importantly, the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building caused Immortal Gu to fly around randomly, large numbers of demonic path and lone cultivator Gu Immortals benefited. Afterwards, Qin Bai Sheng held an auction, many Gu Immortals obtained Immortal Gu that were compatible to them, their battle strength rose drastically.

This caused the powers of the whole of the demonic path and lone cultivator forces to rise, they were able to contend with the righteous path now.

“I destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and Imperial Court blessed land, in just a few years, this influence spread throughout Northern Plains. The current Northern Plains is already drastically different from the five hundred years of my previous life!”

Fang Yuan sighed internally.

The situation in Northern Plains had completely changed because of him.

The other regions were still fine. But in Northern Plains, Fang Yuan had lost most of his rebirth advantage.

Of course, ever since he knew about heaven’s will, he had become quite suspicious regarding his so-called rebirth advantage.

Fang Yuan waited patiently.

Many resources in Hei tribe enticed him. But he did not take action. The most important resource in Hei tribe was the Hei Fan true inheritance. Fang Yuan could see this clearly.

Some days later.

Eventually, Fang Yuan obtained information that Northern Plains Gu Immortals were attacking Hei tribe’s headquarters.

“The Hei Fan true inheritance is hidden in Hei tribe’s headquarters, it is time to act!”

Fang Yuan immediately left, he was very resolute, using the transportation formation to leave Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya land spirit supported his actions.

Because this was a good chance to observe Northern Plains' Gu Immortal world, and become aware of all the respective forces' strengths, if they were lucky, they could obtain a lot of benefits!

Lang Ya land spirit did not dare to send Lang Ya Sect's hairy man Gu Immortals over, but Fang Yuan was a human and he was very crafty, a very suitable person to go.

Fang Yuan did the same thing again, the moment he appeared in Northern Plains, he used Dark Limit, familiar face, and other methods to conceal his identity.

At the same time, he used sword escape Immortal Gu and blood torrent to travel rapidly.

He moved very quickly, he encountered no trouble.

Northern Plains' Gu Immortals were mostly gathered in Hei tribe's headquarters, this allowed Fang Yuan to travel unhindered.

Not long later, Hei tribe's headquarters was right in front of him.

“Hei Fan true inheritance, I'm coming...” Fang Yuan thought to himself, but he did not expect that treasure yellow heaven had opened at this very moment!

It was getting heated.

Treasure yellow heaven's reopening caused all of the Gu Immortals who were waiting patiently to burst out with enthusiasm.

Fang Yuan stopped moving, he fell into great hesitation on whether he should continue or go back.

He received a piece of information coming from treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan opened it and looked, it came from Chu Du!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1105: Hei Tribe's Huge Battle (1/3)

Two days later.

Blue skies and white clouds, the sun brightly shone in the sky. The surroundings were vast expanses of plains, one had unhindered vision.

Two Gu Immortals from Yao tribe floated in the air, they did not conceal themselves, they showed themselves confidently to everyone.

A female Gu Immortal, Yao Ju, had a round face, she smiled: “Today's weather is great, my mood has gotten better because of it.”

Beside her, another female Gu Immortal from Yao tribe, Yao Zi Han, also sighed: “The weather is great, we are in a good mood, but it is the opposite for Hei tribe.”

Her eyes shined with purple light, looking down at the empty grassland below her with much interest.

On the other side of the cloud, there were two male Gu Immortals sitting.

Both of them were middle aged, they had thick beards, they wore armor and had exposed arms, bulging with muscles.

Both of them were not wearing shoes, and their pants were very short, almost showing their knees.

The only difference was, one of them had charcoal-black skin, while the other had dark yellow skin.

These were distinctive of two members of another Huang Jin clan.

It was Meng tribe!

Meng Ji had dark yellow skin, he stared at the two female immortals from Yao tribe as he said: “That is Yao Zi Han, her eyes radiate purple light, that is because of Yao tribe’s signature killer move, purple jade eyes, this pair of eyes can see through blessed lands and grotto-heavens, Yao tribe has a clear awareness of the situation inside Iron Eagle blessed land.”

Meng Si, on the other hand, looked up and called out: “No big deal. If we really compete, our fists will do the talking.”

Saying so, he suddenly raised his head, looking towards the east.

Only to see that aurora burst out in the east, golden light radiated as a beautiful palace flew over.

“Gong tribe is here!”

“Impressive, they even brought their tribe’s Immortal Gu House, Golden Dawn Hall, Gong tribe is very determined.”

“Gong tribe has always been acting like this, they emphasize on extravagance, don’t bother about them!”

The righteous path Gu Immortals conversed.

Most of their attention was on Iron Eagle blessed land.

Iron Eagle blessed land was the headquarters of Hei tribe, it was a public blessed land, placed in just one tiny spot, if the entrance was not open, the outside world could not observe it.

Unless they had immortal killer moves similar to Yao Zi Han’s purple jade eyes.

The righteous path Gu Immortals were patiently waiting.

According to what they knew, the demonic path Gu Immortals had already joined up and attacked.

As it turned out, during this chaos in Northern Plain, a rank seven demonic path expert called Huang Di had interfered. He had high cultivation level, and had obtained the true inheritance of a legendary person in Northern Plains, the earth path great expert Di Lao.

He had methods to attack the blessed land. Because Iron Eagle blessed land was a public blessed land, it was assembled together and did not have the defense of a normal blessed land.

Demonic path Gu Immortal Huang Di went out first, bringing a bunch of demonic cultivators and lone immortals to attack.

At some point, Iron Eagle blessed land was bound to collapse.

That way, it would be full of loopholes, even if the entrance was not open, righteous path Gu Immortals could enter freely.

“Everyone, I, Gong Er, would like to invite everyone to attack Hei tribe together.” Outside Gong tribe’s Immortal Gu House, Golden Dawn Hall, an old rank seven Gu Immortal dressed in a golden robe spoke.

“It’s that old fellow Gong Er, our information was right, he indeed came.”

“Hehe, Gong tribe wants to lead over everyone. If we enter their hall, he would definitely be the alliance leader.”

“This is Gong tribe’s habit. But Gong tribe brought their Immortal Gu House here, they have the strongest power among us righteous path members.”

“Who would be so foolish to let Gong tribe lead them?”

The righteous path Gu Immortals sneered internally, nobody moved.

Gong tribe was a Huang Jin tribe, a super force, their supreme elders had grand ambitions, wanting Gong tribe to be the leader of the righteous path. But among Huang Jin tribes, none would submit to each other.

Earlier, Yao Huang and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had worked together but lost to Old Ancestor Xue Hu. The last remaining righteous path rank eight Gu Immortal was Prince Feng Xian, he was a member of Gong tribe.

Gong tribe had been spreading news that only Prince Feng Xian could rival Old Ancestor Xue Hu, thus, they grew in boldness.

Gong Er stood in front of the Immortal Gu House, he thought that he would be well received by the righteous path, but after a long time, nobody moved, there was not even any response or acknowledgment.

Even though he was old and experienced, his expression could not help but turn ugly.

“Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals greet senior Gong Er.” At this time, three Gu Immortal flew over, getting close to Gong Er.

Among these three, the leader was a rank seven Gu Immortal, while the other two were rank six Gu Immortals.

The three immortals were humble, they smiled and emanated warmth.

Gong Er’s expression soothed, he felt that the three Gu Immortals from Bai Zu tribe were amicable, and now, he could save his face, quickly inviting these three immortals into Golden Dawn Hall.

The righteous path Gu Immortals who saw this had complex expressions.

Because Bai Zu tribe was not of the Huang Jin bloodline, they had just become a righteous path super force. This was due to the famous rank eight Gu Immortal Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was a lone cultivator, but after the collapse of Imperial Court blessed land, he saw hope of creating his own super force.

In the current Northern Plains, righteous path super forces were mostly Huang Jin tribes.

To become a super force, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu got closer in his relationship with Yao Huang, working with him to deal with Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

Even though they lost against him in a two against one.

But Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s goal was achieved.

He gained Yao Huang’s friendship, and Yao tribe’s recognition, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu could create his Bai Zu tribe with his bloodline descendants.

Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals were all nurtured inside Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s grotto-heaven. Even though there were few of them, right now, during these chaotic battles in Northern Plains, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu sent three to participate.

“Bai Zu tribe...”

“Hmph, these Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortals are as crafty as Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.”

“We have differing viewpoints than Gong tribe, this caused Bai Zu tribe to gain benefits instead.”

The righteous path Gu Immortals were mostly part of the Huang Jin bloodline, they had dominated Northern Plains, even though there was internal conflict among them, they were more resistant towards ‘outsiders’ like Bai Zu tribe.

“It is a pity that Bai Zu tribe is protected by Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, we cannot touch them.”

“Even so, we have many ways to deal with them, they want to establish a super force in Northern Plains, heh! It is not so easy...”

At once, the righteous path Gu Immortals gathered and discussed on how to deal with Bai Zu tribe.

Boom!

The immortals had just started talking, before they had gone any further, they heard a loud explosion.

Countless gazes looked down, they saw that on the grassland, space shattered like a broken mirror, the broken shards showed a gigantic expanse of scenery.

The scene inside Iron Eagle blessed land was shown in front of everyone.

Right now, killer moves like purple jade eyes were no longer needed, the immortals could see what was going on.

All of the righteous path immortals’ attentions were drawn.

Inside Iron Eagle blessed land, there was chaos.

Large numbers of demonic path Gu Immortals were competing for Hei tribe’s resources and treasures. Some were looting, some were fighting aggressively.

Crackle!

Lightning shot everywhere, causing rocks to shatter and fly. Many deep pits were formed, they were charred black.

Divine Lord Tian Du was covered in sparks as he shouted: “The lantern grass here is mine, who dares to compete with me?”

Old Lu and the others looked at each other, they could see that their gazes were filled with much wariness.

“Divine Lord Tian Du had gained two lightning path Immortal Gu, his battle strength rose drastically, we should retreat.”

“That’s right, this place is filled with treasures, why must we compete with him?”

These Gu Immortals were, without exception, all rank six bottom tier Gu Immortals, they quickly discussed this matter and left.

At the other end.

A desolate beast iron crown eagle cried out weakly, trampled by a boar.

There was a demonic path Gu Immortal on the boar’s back, he was burly and wearing armor, he held a pair of bronze hammers as he said smugly: “You are just a lowly beast, you dare to sneak attack me?”

Saying this, his expression suddenly froze, he looked towards the east.

A peacock was flying over, immortal aura emanated as it spoke clear human language: “Zhuo Zhan.”

“Oh, It is Fairy He Ruo!”Zhuo Zhan’s expression changed, he smiled and tried to leave a good impression on her.

Peacock Flying Immortal He Ruo, rank six transformation path Gu Immortal.

“Trade the desolate beast under your feet with mine? I have just captured a desolate beast shadowless horse.” He Ruo suggested.

Zhuo Zhan’s eyes flashed with brilliance, he quickly nodded: “Sure, let’s trade! I am very willing to accede to fairy’s request, hehehe.”

At another end.

Wind was intertwining like willows, it could be seen with the naked eye.

Gusts of wind was moving about continuously.

A figure descended from the sky, he said with agitation: “To think that a rank seven immortal material, green jade wind, is here.”

It was the rank seven Gu Immortal expert Pi Shui Han.

“Brother Pi, this immortal material is mine, go elsewhere.” A figure appeared as well, it was a scholar with graceful and elegant bearing.

Pi Shui Han’s pupils shrunk, he said coldly: “So it is you, Unfettered Scholar.”

Unfettered Scholar smiled calmly, he was also a rank seven expert, his reputation and abilities were not inferior to Pi Shui Han.

“Last time in Tai Qiu, we did not decide a victor, let’s fight now!” Pi Shui Han took the initiative to request for a battle.

Unfettered Scholar’s smile faded: “I heard that Brother Pi has created a new immortal killer move, let me take a good look at it.”

...

All sorts of situations were occurring, the righteous path Gu Immortals were watching them unfold.

“Because of the demonic path Gu Immortal Huang Di, these demonic scoundrels had the initiative.”

“No need to worry, Iron Eagle blessed land has a special structure, it is famous for nurturing desolate beast iron crown eagles. There is little ground in there, but the sky is huge and vast. The truly valuable thing are those round ball wooden eagle nests.”

“Hmph, simply a rabble. Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals have not shown themselves yet, the core resources have not even been uncovered, but they are already fighting among themselves.”

The righteous path Gu Immortals were ready to strike.

But at this moment, a figure shot down at lightning speed, he was so fast, in an instant, he entered Iron Eagle blessed land.

“Who is he? He has sword path cultivation.”

“It is a junior from Nian Er tribe. I think his name is Nian Er Ping Zhi!”

The righteous path Gu Immortals were shocked, this person had been concealed, he did not interact with any of the other immortals.

“Who is it?” In the blessed land, Qing Xuan Zi sensed something, he raised his head and called out.

Sword light flashed across at an incredible speed!

Qing Xuan Zi was beheaded.

“The person who killed you, Nian Er Ping Zhi.” Sword light flashed by as a voice could be heard.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1106: Hei Tribe’s Huge Battle (2/3)

Qing Xuan Zi might only have rank six cultivation level, but he had undergone a heavenly tribulation already. Yet he could not put up any resistance and was killed by Nian Er Ping Zhi instantly.

At once, the expressions of the righteous path Gu Immortals who were not fighting changed.

Qing Xuan Zi’s head fell to the floor, separated from his body.

The headless corpse was spewing out blood as it twitched continuously.

Qing Xuan Zi had died with his eyes wide open.

Nian Er Ping Zhi’s sword light continued to shoot forward, moving with imposing aura.

“The next one dead is you.” Nian Er Ping Zhi said lightly, his clear voice resonated in the sky.

The second unlucky person was also a demonic path Gu Immortal.

But Nian Er Ping Zhi had already revealed himself, such disturbance could not be hidden.

Thus, the demonic path Gu Immortal did better than Qing Xuan Zi, he managed to retreat for a while before Nian Er Ping Zhi caught up to him and killed him in one strike.

The righteous path Gu Immortals’ expressions changed again.

A Gu Immortal from Liu tribe, Liu Zhuan Shen, smiled towards the sky: “Nian Er Fu, this person is the newest generation Sword Child from your Nian Er tribe?”

Bam.

Fog and smoke burst out, there was a voice that came from within.

This was a rank seven Gu Immortal, but from his appearance, he was very young, resembling a fat five or six year old boy.

The fat boy chuckled, he looked around sneakily, answering in a mature tone: “Indeed. This lad obtained the Sword Saint true inheritance, and was kept in the tribe by my first supreme elder for ten years. Therefore, when he came out for the first time now, he is excited to this frenzied degree.”

Liu Zhuan Shen and the others’ expressions changed mildly, they transmitted to each other.

“Sword Saint Nian Er, we were still discussing it earlier, this person was a rank eight Gu Immortal of Nian Er tribe. He was like Hei Fan in history, leading Nian Er tribe to become among the forefront of the righteous path in Northern Plains.”

“Sword Sword Saint Nian Er was a prodigy, he had once cultivated light path, but switched to sword path successfully. After he died, he left behind the Sword Saint true inheritance, it has an extremely difficult and deadly test, it is rare to have actual inheritors for it.”

“It is said that this Sword Saint true inheritance is split into three portions. After the first round, and obtaining the first portion of the Sword Saint true inheritance, one will be known as the Sword Child.”

“To think that after three hundred years, a new Sword Child true inheritor appeared in Nian Er tribe!”

Wariness rose in the righteous path Gu Immortals.

If this person is allowed to continue developing, in the future, he will definitely be an active person among the Northern Plains righteous path. If he can progress and become rank seven, if he passes the second round and inherits the second portion of the true inheritance, he will become the Swordmaster true inheritor, nobody in the whole of Northern Plains would dare to look down on him.

In fact, the Sword Child with just rank six cultivation was already a force to be reckoned with.

In just a short time, he had once again killed another demonic path Gu Immortal!

Nian Er Ping Zhi roared with enthusiasm, he was extremely confident. He moved quickly, being one with his sword, only sword light could be seen darting around, his body was a blur.

Sword light changed directions, towards the closest demonic path Gu Immortal.

Sword light penetrated the demonic path Gu Immortal’s body, but he showed a cold smile: “Junior, just because you killed a few weaklings, you gained the courage to challenge me this brazenly?”

Old Monster Corpse Poison said this as purple smoke rose up from his terrifying injuries.

The purple smoke dissipated, healing his body.

But Nian Er Ping Zhi’s sword light shattered, revealing his true appearance.

Nian Er Ping Zhi’s appearance could finally be seen, he had sharp brows and clear eyes, he was a handsome young lad.

Blech...

He suddenly covered his mouth with his hand, but he could not stop the purple poisonous blood from flowing out of his mouth and nose.

“Fight me again!” Nian Er Ping Zhi was heavily injured, but his eyes were burning with flames of enthusiasm.

“Then I will kill you before seeking the treasure here.” Old Monster Corpse Poison smiled sinisterly.

“Hehe, youngsters these days, they are truly fearless and ignorant.” Nian Er Fu took a glance before retracting his gaze.

Next, his figure disappeared in the air, before appearing beside Qing Xuan Zi’s corpse at the next moment.

Nian Er Fu stretched out his fat little arm, waving at Qing Xuan Zi’s corpse.

Immediately, Qing Xuan Zi’s body and head was held up by a formless force, flying into Nian Er Fu’s immortal aperture.

“Youngsters are so energetic, they don’t even want their loot. This is a Gu Immortal’s corpse, even though his Immortal Gu cannot be obtained, all of his dao marks are still here. Hehehe...” Nian Er Fu shook his head.

Even though he was a rank seven Gu Immortal senior, he was a greedy person, even when Nian Er Ping Zhi and Old Monster Corpse Poison were fighting, engaging in a tough battle, he did not help but instead, he was taking the Gu Immortal corpse that Nian Er Ping Zhi had left behind.

“Die! Die!”

“This is mine, nobody should try to take it from me.”

“I, Meng Ji, am here, who dares to fight me?!”

...

The scene was getting more chaotic, because after Nian Er Ping Zhi attacked, the other righteous path Gu Immortals also started taking action, entering Iron Eagle blessed land. This way, all sorts of conflicts rose up, battles occurred over all sorts of resources.

The cries of eagles could be heard continuously.

A desolate beast peacock raised its head, showing a deep human emotion of desire in its eyes.

This was naturally the Peacock Flying Immortal He Ruo.

“So many iron crown eagles! Hei tribe’s Iron Eagle blessed land truly lives up to its name.” He Ruo thought: “If I can enslave all of these desolate beasts...”

Iron Eagle blessed land had less space on the ground and much more in the sky. The resources on the ground were much less valuable than the ones in the sky.

Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals did not show themselves, but they had mobilized all of their iron crown eagles, sealing the sky.

Large numbers of desolate beast iron crown eagles flew in the sky, anyone who trespassed was assaulted intensely by them!

Because of this, most of the demonic path Gu Immortals chose to take action on the ground, they wanted to first obtain the resources on the ground.

A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush.

To He Ruo, the iron crown eagles held immense attraction.

Because in her cultivation plan, her next transformation was the iron crown eagle transformation!

The desolate beast peacock flew in the sky, it was fast, in a moment, He Ruo attracted the attention of several iron crown eagles.

He Ruo was alert internally, she quickly retreated from the iron crown eagles that she lured.

She was alone, she could not fight so many desolate beast iron crown eagles.

She planned to lure one away and fight it alone, slowly capturing it.

...

“This is affinity wood?” Murong Qing Si landed, looking at the rootless tree growing in the pond, her eyes shone brightly.

“Fairy Murong, you are very perceptive, that is it.” A lone cultivator Gu Immortal answered.

He was named Yun Liang, known as Cloud Gentleman, he had arrived before Murong Qing Si, he was concentrating on collecting the affinity wood here.

Murong Qing Si saw that Cloud Gentleman Yun Liang was taking action, she did not obstruct him, she only watched quietly.

She patiently waited until Yun Liang succeeded in keeping all of the affinity wood.

“I am ashamed for making fairy wait.” Cloud Gentleman Yun Liang said with a polite and warm attitude.

Murong Qing Si smiled: “To tell the truth, this affinity wood is only a rank six immortal material, but it is very suitable for me. I wonder if we can spar and...”

Cloud Gentleman smiled, before Murong Qing Si finished her words, he said: “Affinity wood is very fragile, the collection process cannot have any interference. Fairy, if not for your patience, how could I have obtained it? We can spar, if you win, I will hand all of the affinity wood to you.”

Murong Qing Si shook her head: “No need for everything, I only need half.”

“Fairy, please.”

“Gentleman, please.”

The two fought without using their true strength, a victor was not decided.

Cloud Gentleman Yun Liang gave half of the affinity wood to Murong Qing Si, both of them left with satisfaction.

The vast majority of righteous path Gu Immortals conducted themselves with a lot of self restraint and politeness.

Nian Er tribe’s Nian Er Ping Zhi and Nian Er Fu were exceptions among the righteous path.

Even though righteous path was flourishing in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world, suppressing the demonic path and lone immortals, the righteous path Gu Immortals who came just now could not match the numbers of the demonic path and lone immortals.

The reason was: The rest of the Huang Jin tribes had their own territories and resources to defend. Even though the righteous path had many Gu Immortals, they had to guard different places, only these people could be sent out in the end.

In contrast, the demonic path and lone cultivators did not have such problems.

There was another reason, the super forces had huge assets, they had mortal forces under them. They were quite tolerant towards lone demonic immortals and lone immortals. As long as their benefits were not touched, they would not fight it out.

Gu Immortals were not easy to kill, if a grudge was established, they would go and attack their territories, it would be a huge headache even for super forces.

As the saying goes, he who is down need not fear falling.

On the other side, Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han had decided a victor.

Pi Shui Han had a brand new immortal killer move, but he could not compete against Unfettered Scholar’s trademark killer move — Thousand Disintegrations.

Pi Shui Han snorted, directly leaving without hesitation.

It was not worth going all out just for some simple resources.

Even though demonic path Gu Immortals were free, they often worked alone, when calamities and tribulations descended, they had to rely on themselves, they were not like righteous path forces with Gu Immortals in their tribes to rely on, and seek help from.

Thus, demonic path Gu Immortals and lone immortals were very wary of their calamities and tribulations, they often calculated the cost of fighting, it was okay to fight over resources, but if the immortal essence expenditure was too high, they would not proceed with a losing deal!

In the sky of Iron Eagle blessed land, the Immortal Gu House Golden Dawn Hall was still floating at the original spot, shining with dazzling golden light.

Gu Immortals of Gong tribe and Bai Zu tribe had not acted, they were talking inside the hall.

Gong tribe’s Gong Er was already anxious, but he showed nothing on his expression, mentioning casually: “Everyone is fighting over Iron Eagle blessed land’s resources on the ground, there is barely anything left. Is your tribe not going in yet?”

Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals looked at each other, shaking their heads and smiling: “The precious resources inside Iron Eagle blessed land are in the sky. Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals have not appeared yet, the battle is just in the middle stage now.”

Gong Er was amazed and surprised.

Even though this Bai Zu tribe was in the righteous path now, protected by Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, its foundation could not compare to the Huang Jin tribes.

At this moment, Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals were acting calm and composed, with no anxiousness or hastiness at all, it was truly confusing.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1107: Hei Tribe’s Huge Battle (3/3)

“Fourth one!” Peacock Flying Immortal He Ruo took down another iron crown eagle, she was feeling very happy.

Desolate beasts were not common.

In the Northern Plains’ ten great fierce areas, desolate beasts lived in groups, few Gu Immortals dared to venture into them.

And wild iron crown eagles and the ones Hei tribe nurtured had different battle strength.

And because Peacock Flying Immortal had good battle tactics, she made great gains, capturing four iron crown eagles.

“Hei tribe is famous for raising iron crown eagles, I really wonder how they did manage to raise so many iron crown eagles here?” He Ruo sighed as she looked towards the sky.

There were still large numbers of iron crown eagles flying in the sky. They were a huge group, He Ruo capturing four was nothing to the group.

“Strange... Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals had not appeared since the beginning. Even after I captured four iron crown eagles, they are not going to care?”

He Ruo was wary, she was not overwhelmed by happiness over victory.

Suddenly, there was a loud sound!

A figure clad in wind and lightning rushed towards the eagle group.

He Ruo’s pupils shrunk, she recognized this person: “It is Nu Er Gu! Heh, they are in for trouble.”

Nu Er Gu came from Nu Er tribe, part of the Huang Jin bloodline, and a super force.

Nu Er Gu had a small head and big belly, his body was disproportional, his eyeballs were popping out, while his limbs were dry as twigs, he had pale skin resembling a sick person, without any hint of pinkness on his face.

But looks were deceiving, he was a famous expert among rank seven Gu Immortals, he was on the same level as Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han in the demonic path.

Nu Er Gu’s charge angered the iron crown eagle group.

At once, more than fifty iron crown eagles charged towards him.

Nu Er Gu was shocked, he did not expect that he would draw so much attention.

The eagle group attacked, casting huge shadows and shrouded Nu Er Gu’s vision.

In the moment of crisis, Nu Er Gu used his signature immortal killer move.

His body inflated rapidly, expanding to six times of the original, making Nu Er Gu look like a highly pregnant woman.

Nu Er Gu stretched out his hand, patting his belly.

Boom!

A loud sound with huge sound waves caused the eagle group’s movement to halt.

Boom boom boom!

Three huge sounds were made, sound waves spread out one after another, the eagle group’s momentum was interrupted, their formation became messy and disorganized.

Nu Er Gu growled, as the surrounding iron crown eagles instantly felt dizzy.

Next, he flew rapidly away from the gaps between these eagles, getting out of their encirclement.

The eagle group chased for a while, before returning to their original spot.

Nu Er Gu had already landed on the ground, he was sweating as he looked at the sky, his belly had shrunk already, but he still felt some lingering fear.

On one side, one voice could be heard: “Nu Er Gu, why are you so pathetic?”

Nu Er Gu looked over, he saw that the person was over eight feet tall, he had bright red pupils and dark blue skin, with purple hair and sharp fangs.

Nu Er Gu snorted coldly: “Enough sarcasm, Guan Chou! If you have guts, charge in like me.”

Guan Chou snickered: “Two fists cannot rival four palms, I am not as stupid as you.”

“You!” Nu Er Gu was furious, he stared at Guan Chou, his eyes spewing fire.

Guan Chou laughed coldly, staring at him fearlessly.

Nu Er Gu was a famous righteous path rank seven expert, cultivating sound path. Guan Chou was not weaker than him, he cultivated transformation path. The two were Gu Immortals from Guan tribe and Nu Er tribe respectively, they had an equally strong background.

“As expected of a famous expert, even though he looked troubled, he is unharmed.” He Ruo saw everything, she quickly retracted her gaze.

“Nu Er Gu is here, and Guan Chou’s attention is also on these iron crown eagles. This means that the resources on the ground are mostly taken already.” He Ruo quietly retreated.

She was only a demonic path Gu Immortal with rank six cultivation level, she did not dare to get too close to these two righteous path experts.

Iron Eagle blessed land’s battle continued to rage like wildfire, all sorts of battles of different scales were unfolding.

Some battles ended with a winner and a loser, while other battles involved deaths.

Some made great gains, while some escaped with heavy injuries.

On the ground of the blessed land, resources were dwindling. Some bottom tier Gu Immortals were eliminated, either dead or injured, some wisely chose to retreat, while others had methods to preserve their lives, they hid somewhere and observed the situation quietly.

More and more Gu Immortals placed their focus in the sky.

Countless greedy gazes swept through the iron crown eagle group in the sky. As well as the hidden round ball wooden eagle nests that were concealed by the eagle group.

The scale of the eagle group was huge, this was the accumulation of Hei tribe after countless years, they had expended so much time, effort, and fortune into it! These were among the most valuable resources in Iron Eagle blessed land.

Even people like Nu Er Gu could not block the attacks of the iron crown eagles.

The number was too great!

Of course, it was also because Nu Er Gu was unwilling to waste immortal essence.

His goldfish eyes looked down, seeing more and more Gu Immortals, he shouted: “There are too many iron crown eagles, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals have not shown themselves yet, we should all go ahead and split up this eagle group among ourselves!”

“I concur!” Unfettered Scholar was the first to respond.

The two were in the righteous path and demonic path respectively, but in this situation, they came to a consensus — they should first deal with the eagle group and get the benefits.

The eagle group was huge, there were many Gu Immortals, if they worked together, these iron crown eagles were meat on the chopping block.

Someone struck first, causing the start of the battle between immortals and eagles.

Huge attacks were unleashed, driving intense fights.

Eagles screeched shrilly, while humans were also yelling loudly.

Attacks of all elements were shot out, lightning flashed as golden lights flickered.

Outside the blessed land, Gong Er sat inside the Golden Dawn Hall, looking down. In his vision, there were rainbow colored fireworks that covered the whole sky. But there was intense killing intent in the fireworks, at times, iron crown eagles died, their bodies were cut into pieces, while some iron crown eagles were also captured.

Gong Er’s eyes shined.

Scenes of battles between the righteous path, demonic path, and lone immortals were secretly recorded by him using hidden Gu worms.

This was precious intelligence!

Ever since the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, large numbers of Immortal Gu were obtained by Northern Plains Gu Immortals. After Qin Bai Sheng held the auction, Gu Immortals obtained the resources they wanted. After some time of adapting, many Gu Immortals gained new methods, their battle strengths had increased drastically.

Gu Immortals who were doing the same thing as Gong Er were not few in number.

Everyone had the same intention.

Intelligence was very important.

Be it other super forces or lone Gu Immortals, in most cases, knowing what Immortal Gu your opponent had meant that you could find a way to counter them. Even if you did not have any ways to do so, it was still good to be on guard against them.

Gu Immortals fought the iron crown eagles as they observed, collecting information.

Underneath the intense battles were undercurrents of plots and schemes.

Gu Immortals were assessing themselves and their enemies, confirming their status in the current Gu Immortal world. After this period of cultivation, did they get stronger or weaker relative to others? Who could be bullied, while who could not be trifled with?

Iron crown eagles were just the material gain at present, while information was a long term gain.

Gong Er watched for a while, feeling more and more impatient.

The three Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortals beside him had not moved at all since the battle in Hei tribe’s headquarters started.

Just now, he brought Gong tribe’s Golden Dawn Hall in order to gain great benefits, that was the only way to make this trip worth it.

Gong Er could not stand it anymore, he pointed down, telling the Gu Immortals that came with him: “Iron Eagle blessed land is taking damage, there are over a thousand flaws created. But now, not a single Hei tribe Gu Immortal has appeared, this is very strange. Go down and assist our comrades, and preempt Hei tribe’s scheme. We of Gong tribe are the leaders of the righteous path, we have to defend our allies.”

“Yes.” The two Gong tribe Gu Immortals immediately acted.

The three Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortals sat there inwardly laughing to themselves.

The outcome of this Hei tribe battle was decided from the beginning. Even if something strange happened, there was no danger. Gong tribe’s Gu Immortals acted like this out of their own interests, they had selfish motives, but they still wanted to pretend to be grand and selfless.

At the same time, at the highest area of Iron Eagle blessed land.

Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals were gathered, they looked at the battle, they had heavy feelings and ugly expressions.

“Why is he not acting yet?”

“At this stage, he has not done anything yet. Don’t tell me, our agreement has been canceled?”

Some Hei tribe Gu Immortals asked this, feeling uneasy.

“He had already agreed, with his status, he will not go back on the agreement.”

“Let’s watch first. We set up three layers of defense, the iron crown eagle group is only the first.”

Hei tribe’s first supreme elder and second supreme elder spoke, calming the immortals.

He Ruo transformed into a desolate beast peacock, spreading her wings and fighting with three iron crown eagles.

This was just a small part of the huge battlefield, and she was just an insignificant Gu Immortal among countless others.

In the absence of rank eight, rank seven experts were the strongest, some rank six experts were attempting to gain benefits along the periphery.

Suddenly, there was a weird fragrance!

He Ruo’s heart jumped, she quickly held her breath.

“I’m poisoned!” Sensing this, He Ruo quickly used her healing Gu worms.

Three iron crown eagles cried out, in an instant, they could not exert any strength anymore, they fell to the ground weakly.

A figure flew into the sky, capturing these three iron crown eagles and stuffing them inside his immortal aperture.

It was Old Monster Corpse Poison!

He laughed sinisterly, purple gas coiling around him. After collecting the three iron crown eagles, he looked at He Ruo with an evil grin.

He Ruo’s heart shook, she felt her body turning cold.

“Hehehe, young lady, come with me.” Old Monster Corpse Poison breathed out air towards He Ruo.

He Ruo had just suppressed the poison in her body, when she suddenly lost control of her body, she felt weak and fell towards the ground after Old Monster Corpse Poison blew at her from a distance.

“I was too greedy! I wanted to obtain more iron crown eagles and placed too much of my attention on them, neglecting the surroundings and being sneak attacked by Old Monster Corpse Poison!” Seeing that she was about to be captured by Old Monster Corpse Poison, He Ruo felt deep despair.

At this moment, a sword light flew over.

The sword light was fast as lightning, it boldly pierced through Old Monster Corpse Poison’s body, before turning into Nian Er Ping Zhi a hundred steps away.

Old Monster Corpse Poison was bursting with rage: “Little rascal, you are still finding trouble with me!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1108: Tragic

Because of his interruption, He Ruo managed to suppress her poison and quickly escaped, regaining freedom.

Nian Er Ping Zhi’s body was tattered, one of his arms was corroded until only bones were left, his face was turning purple, he was deeply poisoned.

But he raised his head and looked at Old Monster Corpse Poison, saying arrogantly: “You cannot leave until a victor is decided.”

Old Monster Corpse Poison was furious, but within his anger, there was also regret.

Why did he attract this psycho?

“Every Sword Child in each generation is crazy. But this one is crazier than the rest.” Far away, Nian Er Fu shook his head, waving his fat little arms.

An iron crown eagle screeched in fear, it flapped its arms desperately, trying to escape, but with the power of space path, the iron crown eagle vanished, entering Nian Er Fu's immortal aperture without resistance!

Old Monster Corpse Poison's method was vicious, he attacked Nian Er Ping Zhi, but most of his attention was still kept on Nian Er Fu secretly.

Nian Er Ping Zhi had rank six cultivation level, even though he inherited a portion of the Sword Saint true inheritance, he was not the match of a rank seven expert like Old Monster Corpse Poison.

Nian Er Ping Zhi could survive until now because Nian Er Fu had been assisting him from a distance all along.

Nian Er Fu was a space path Gu Immortal, he had a deep cultivation level, with countless methods at his disposal. He was looting resources all over the place, gaining a huge fortune, while protecting Nian Er Ping Zhi, preventing Old Monster Corpse Poison from dealing a fatal blow.

Old Monster Corpse Poison felt more and more regret.

Right now was a precious opportunity that one would not see in a hundred years, but he was fighting with a Gu Immortal here, while others were looting resources all over the place.

Old Monster Corpse Poison was famous and had a deep background. He had once joined Zombie Alliance as a living person, before betraying them later on. Northern Plains Zombie Alliance tried to capture him, but failed each time.

Nian Er Ping Zhi and Old Monster Corpse Poison fought, the battle getting more and more heated as time passed, even though he could not win, he had become famous from the fight.

From now on, Northern Plains' Gu Immortal world would know that Nian Er tribe had produced such an incredible genius!

Actually, Gu Immortals from other super forces would not offend a demonic path Gu Immortal so thoroughly.

But Nian Er tribe was different.

This Huang Jin bloodline tribe was different from the other Huang Jin super tribes — their tribesmen lived in blessed lands or grotto-heavens, they did not occupy any territory in the outside world of Northern Plains.

This way, they had little reservations.

Even if a demonic path Gu Immortal wanted to attack them, they could not.

After all, there were few methods to enter immortal apertures. Even if one could get in, they would be in the enemy's territory, they would lose a lot of their advantage inside.

"Youth is really wondrous." Nian Er Fu sighed, he spoke with an aged tone, but he had the appearance of a chubby boy, it was a really weird sight.

Only Old Monster Corpse Poison could feel his terrifying power.

During this battle, Nian Er Fu had already attacked dozens of times, not only did he save Nian Er Ping Zhi's life, he even successfully injured Old Monster Corpse Poison secretly a few times.

After capturing several iron crown eagles again, Nian Er Fu's field of vision was cleared.

A huge round ball wooden eagle nest was floating in the air, without any defense.

"I had heard of Hei tribe having this special rearing method, they use some sort of metal or ore, immortal materials that could increase the rate of the iron crown eagles' reproduction, and speeding up the rate of their growth. What kinds of precious immortal materials would be in this nest?"

Nian Er Fu was about to move, when his expression suddenly froze.

A figure moved like the raging winds, flying out of the nest before him, rapidly leaving towards the horizon.

Demonic path Gu Immortal Hui Feng Zi!

This was a rank seven wind path expert, publicly recognized as the fastest person in Northern Plains, even Yao Huang could not stop him. He had first joined Shadow Sect, before submitting to Heavenly Court, his identity as a traitor had not been exposed yet.

In a situation filled with chaos, Hui Feng Zi could act freely like the wind.

Not only was he fast, he was agile, he displayed the greatest advantage of wind path to its limit.

Soon, Nian Er Fu saw that Hui Feng Zi easily passed through countless obstacles, entering another eagle nest.

"Sigh, this lad is simply blocking me from my fortune!" Nian Er Fu gazed at Nian Er Ping Zhi, sighing loudly at the sky.

The battle between humans and eagles came to an end.

The number of iron crown eagles decreased, all of the round ball wooden eagle nests were invaded by Gu Immortals.

"Good, good, good! It is the rank seven immortal material domination copper!" Gu Immortal Shi Hou cheered, he had made great gains.

"This damned Hui Feng Zi, he dares to snatch what is mine!" Meng Ji was furious, he stared fixedly at Hui Feng Zi who was flying away.

Hui Feng Zi did not speak, but he felt very troubled: He did not touch that eagle nest. It seemed that someone who had already sneaked in made him take the blame for their actions!

Within the round ball wooden eagle nests, there were rank seven immortal materials in each one, either metals or ores, and they were huge in quantity.

Gu Immortals made great gains, they expressed joy on their faces.

This was simply a feast, they were looting all of Hei tribe's hard work. The stronger the Gu Immortal, the greater the gains, the law of the jungle in the Gu Immortal world was displayed here in full view.

Hei tribe's Gu Immortals were deadly silent.

They looked at the round ball wooden eagle nests that were fuming with smoke, some had fallen to the ground, some were incredibly damaged, spinning in the air.

These nests were the pride of Hei tribe, the symbol of their strength. But now, they were trampled and snatched away.

Anger.

Indignance.

Hatred.

Fear.

All sorts of emotions were in these Hei tribe Gu Immortals, they almost could not breathe.

“Enough!” A Hei tribe Gu Immortal stood up abruptly.

He had a huge body, he looked around with an angry gaze, fixing it on first supreme elder: “When are we going to wait until? You are counting on him? Can’t you see? He had agreed to us on purpose, so that we would not keep the resources according to the agreement, we are trapped inside the blessed land and cannot leave.”

“This is a scheme, he is toying with us! Everyone, where is your courage? Are you not angry? Don’t you feel hatred? Will we sit here and wait for death, or go out and fight like courageous heroes? This is our home! But now, these outsiders are plundering and destroying it!!”

“Tie Sheng...” Second supreme elder had a complex expression, he called out to this furious Hei tribe Gu Immortal.

“First supreme elder, say something!” Hei Tie Sheng stared at Hei tribe’s first supreme elder with an indomitable gaze.

Everyone also looked at first supreme elder.

Hei tribe’s first supreme elder was silent for a while before saying: “In this situation, resources are just external things, so what if we give them up? If we do not receive his help, we will have no place in the whole of Northern Plains! We will wait and see.”

Hei Tie Sheng heard this and his body shook, he took in a deep breath, stabilizing his body. He did not feel rage now, just intense sorrow.

“Seniors, in my humble opinion, I think that Lord Hei Tie Sheng is right.” This time, a rank six Gu Immortal from Hei tribe spoke.

“I have the same opinion.”

“If we do not fight now, when will we wait until?”

“The worst case is death anyway!”

More and more Hei tribe Gu Immortals stood up.

Hei Tie Sheng saw this and felt a strong surge in confidence, his gaze regained its sharpness.

“You...” Second supreme elder was shocked.

First supreme elder remained silent.

Hei Tie Sheng suddenly laughed loudly: “Three layers of defense? Even if we have thirty layers of defense, what can we do in this situation? Go! Let’s face these enemies! How can Hei tribe’s glory be tarnished? Hei tribe’s resources are not so easy to take! They will pay with blood and their lives!”

Hei Tie Sheng took huge steps forward, he turned around and left the hall.

Seven Hei tribe Gu Immortals said nothing, but they followed him with firm expressions.

“First supreme elder, won’t you talk to them...” Third supreme elder was uneasy.

“Forget it, forget it, let them go.” First supreme elder sighed, he seemed to have aged by a hundred years.

Hei tribe’s first layer of defense was broken already, the iron crown eagles were either dead, injured, or captured, none were left.

The Gu Immortals flew up higher into the sky, seeing dragon eagles.

A large number of dragon eagles formed the second line of defense.

“So many dragon eagles!” Someone’s eyes flashed.

“Even though the dragon eagles are not as numerous as the iron crown eagles, they are still a huge fortune!” Someone critiqued.

Some impatient Gu Immortals had already started attacking.

The Gu Immortals gasped, some were surprised, they found something strange.

“These dragon eagles are not normal.”

“That’s right, I’ve interacted with desolate beast dragon eagles before, how can they be so hard to deal with?”

“These dragon eagles have stronger vitality and faster speed, is that rumor from long ago true after all?”

The immortals were reminded by this, fifty to sixty years ago, there were rumors in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world that Hei tribe had obtained a huge breakthrough in nurturing the dragon eagles, they created a brand new species of desolate eagles, they looked like dragon eagles, but were different.

“These are not dragon eagles, they are resonance eagles. These eagles were not created by Hei tribe, they were the fruits of my Qiao tribe’s labor!” A Gu Immortal said with much anguish.

Everyone looked over, it was Qiao Dong.

He was a righteous path Gu Immortal, the first supreme elder of Qiao tribe.

Qiao tribe was a subordinate of Hei tribe, long ago, Qiao tribe had wanted to leave Hei tribe, and were taught a lesson by Hei Cheng, who went to pressure them.

No wonder Qiao tribe and Hei tribe had a conflict, there was lots of hidden background information!

The immortals had differing expressions, but they said nothing about this.

The law of the jungle was very common after all.

This Qiao Dong could become an immortal because of Hei tribe’s support. Now that Hei tribe was in trouble, he joined in and attacked Iron Eagle blessed land.

Most righteous path Gu Immortals, the supreme elders of the Huang Jin tribes, looked towards Qiao Dong with coldness and animosity.

They did not like people who bit the hand that fed them.

But behind Qiao Dong, there was Liu tribe’s Gu Immortal, Liu Zhuan Shen.

With a single glance, it was obvious that Qiao Dong was now under Liu tribe.

Liu tribe and Hei tribe had a poor relationship, Qiao tribe was a subordinate of Hei tribe, but now that Hei tribe was going down, Qiao Dong went over to Liu tribe, it was not strange.

“This traitor deserves death!”

At this moment, a thunderous voice came from afar!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1109: Hmph!

No sooner said than done!

A shadow resembling a mountain crashed towards Qiao Dong.

In an instant, Qiao Dong was immobilized, he could only scream: “Elder Liu, save me!”

Liu Zhuan Shen swiftly appeared in front of Qiao Dong, his body shone with white light, causing all of the darkness to fade away.

“Hei Tie Sheng, with me here, you cannot harm Qiao Dong.” Liu Zhuan Shen looked at the person with intense battle intent.

The Gu Immortals started stirring.

Be it the dragon eagles or resonance eagles, they were not important.

The important thing was, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals had finally acted!

With the rank seven Gu Immortal Hei Tie Sheng as the leader, seven rank six Gu Immortals followed behind him, standing before the immortals.

Hei Tie Sheng looked around, before his gaze fixed on Liu Zhuan Shen, he snickered, asking: “Is that so?”

Liu Zhuan Shen’s expression turned to shock, he turned around and looked.

Qiao Dong was still standing behind him, floating in the air, but his expression had frozen with shock, he had no vitality left, he was dead.

“Immortal killer move life draining darkness!” Liu Zhuan Shen shouted before feeling intense anger, but his anger soon faded as only sadness and admiration remained.

He and Hei Tie Sheng were old rivals, they had fought for more than a hundred times. he was clear that this life draining darkness was powerful, but it could not be used easily, each activation had a huge cost.

Liu Zhuan Shen had never seen Hei Tie Sheng use this trump card at the start of the battle.

From this, he understood: His rival for many years had prepared himself to die, he had the mentality of killing as many enemies as possible before going down.

Hei Tie Sheng looked Qiao Dong, the morale of the Hei tribe Gu Immortals behind him rose.

Hei Tie Sheng was an experienced person, using this chance, he used his methods.

At once, the resonance eagles formed into groups, moving in formation. Each of the Hei tribe Gu Immortals went to an area and defended territory.

With Gu Immortals here, the second line of defense stabilized, they were hard to deal with.

This made many Gu Immortals who invaded Hei tribe furious.

Ruining a person’s wealth was like killing their parents!

This hatred was huge, and because Hei tribe was weak, they lost their only Immortal Gu House Dark Prison, the only problem was Green City Rampage. But in this situation, Hei tribe was only struggling at death’s door.

“I’ll fight you!” Pi Shui Han pounced.

He waved his hand, as tides began to form, charging towards Hei Tie Sheng.

The tides flew into the air and stopped, turning into glaciers as the temperature fell.

“Be careful, this is Pi Shui Han’s signature killer move — Flood Glacier!” A rank six Gu Immortal from Hei tribe shouted.

Hei Tie Sheng laughed lightly, he and Pi Shui Han had deep enmity too, he was not surprised that Pi Shui Han attacked him.

“He is just a loser, so what?” Hei Tie Sheng’s eyes shined with dark light, he did not move, he only looked over.

The white glacier was covered with black water, in a few breaths’ time, it disintegrated.

Pi Shui Han grunted, spitting out a mouthful of blood, falling from the sky.

“Against so many enemies, consecutive killer moves are not easy to use.” A figure appeared behind Hei Tie Sheng.

It was Huang Di!

This was the rank seven demonic path Gu Immortal who communicated with the other demonic path members, entering Iron Eagle blessed land first and causing the righteous path to lose the initiative.

He had earned immensely, right now, he was using the chance to attack and kill

Hei Tie Sheng!

Hei Tie Sheng did not move, he did not even turn around, he only waved his sleeves.

Immediately, dark light burst out like waves, sending Huang Di far away.

Huang Di struggled to get out of the black tide, showing shock on his face. His seven orifices were spewing out black blood, he drilled into the ground without even a bit of hesitation, vanishing.

“Simply a rat, what can you do?” Hei Tie Sheng snorted, looking around, shouting: “Who is next?”

Nobody came.

Hei Tie Sheng had incredible battle strength, he was even stronger than Pi Shui Han.

The immortals could tell, this person was prepared to die, he was oozing with fighting intent and was fighting without reservation, in this situation, his battle strength was at its peak.

Why did everyone come to Iron Eagle blessed land?

To gain fortune!

If their goal was fortune, why would they fight with this person to the death?

The Gu Immortals moved away, evading Hei Tie Sheng.

Battle commenced.

One side was the collaboration of righteous and demonic, they had great numbers, but Hei tribe had the territorial advantage and large numbers of desolate beast resonance eagles to help them.

Battles raged on.

Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals were all prepared to die defending their home, their battle intent was high.

The demonic path Gu Immortals just wanted a fortune, they did not want to die, they were heavily restricted.

The intelligence of Gu Immortals could not be matched by iron crown eagles.

At once, the second line of defense was extremely stable!

Hei Tie Sheng saw that everyone was avoiding him, so he approached them instead.

“Meng Ji, hand over your life!” Hei Tie Sheng shouted angrily, pouncing towards the Meng tribe rank seven Gu Immortal who was closest to him.

“Hmph, would I be afraid of you?” Meng Ji fought back courageously.

Boom boom boom!

The two fought as the sky rumbled, intense shock waves were sent out.

After several rounds, the proud and arrogant Meng Ji turned around and fled.

He was courageous, but Hei Tie Sheng was beyond courageous, he was a lunatic not afraid of death!

He fought with Meng Ji by causing injuries to both of them, he was trying to go down together.

After several times, Meng Ji could not stand it anymore, he immediately retreated.

Hei Tie Sheng was going to chase him, but he heard the Hei tribe Gu Immortals cry for help, he turned around to help them out.

“Guan Chou, take this!” Hei Tie Sheng charged forward, dark light burst out and engulfed the surroundings.

Guan Chou was a transformation path Gu Immortal, he had turned into a lion. He roared as he crashed into Hei Tie Sheng.

At the next moment, the lion that Guan Chou had transformed into flew out like a rag doll.

Hei Tie Sheng charged at him again.

Guan Chou screeched, turning into a little bird and flying away.

“Coward!” Hei Tie Sheng could not catch up, he snorted.

His gaze swept around, he targeted the rank seven Gu Immortal who was closer to him, Liu Zhuan Shen.

Liu Zhuan Shen was very perceptive!

Seeing that Hei Tie Sheng was approaching, he retreated.

Hei Tie Sheng chased after him, so Liu Zhuan Shen went over to Divine Lord Tian Du.

Divine Lord Tian Du’s body shook, he turned around and left.

Liu Zhuan Shen then lured Hei Tie Sheng towards Unfettered Scholar, he snorted as a three-way battle started.

Boom boom boom!

A moment later, in an intense clash, Liu Zhuan Shen and Unfettered Scholar were forced back.

Hei Tie Sheng continued to fight everyone, he was unstoppable.

In the sky, Hei tribe’s first supreme elder sighed: “Tie Sheng, this child...”

He knew that Hei Tie Sheng had a special technique, he could expend his lifespan to increase the power of his killer moves.

He was fighting by consuming his life!

The righteous and demonic Gu Immortals did not want to die, that was true. But with just this reason, there was no way anybody could contest him.

Hei Tie Sheng was a huge setback to the Gu Immortals.

These were all people with high cultivation level and impressive methods. In the earlier battles, the weaker Gu Immortals were already eliminated.

But no matter how strong Hei Tie Sheng was, he could not reach the level of rank eight.

He could not turn around the situation singlehandedly.

Resonance eagles were captured or killed, while Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals died one by one.

Fight!

A fight to the death!

Towards the end of the battle, Hei Tie Sheng was the only one left.

He was bathed in blood, he stood proud and straight, looking at the Gu Immortals around, he laughed loudly: “Alright, come and kill me!”

The immortals looked around, but nobody moved.

Liu Zhuan Shen’s expression was complex, he knew that Hei Tie Sheng was already out of steam. His immortal essence was expended, he was not a threat.

But he was unable to attack!

Hei Tie Sheng moved his lips: “Then let me!”

Saying so, he charged towards the Gu Immortals in front.

Charge!

His final charge.

He died while charging.

It was tragic.

It was courageous.

Hei Tie Sheng died, the immortals had no obstacles left, they went towards Hei tribe’s final line of defense.

Twelve flying eagles blocked them.

Enemy eagles with overflowing killing intent, absolute eyebrow eagles with divine aura, shadow eagles with indistinct figures, whale swallowing eagles with huge muscular bodies...

Without exception, they were all ancient desolate beasts, having rank seven battle strength.

Hei tribe’s first supreme elder and the other six elders descended from the sky.

At this moment, they no longer placed further hope in being saved, they came out to battle.

Ancient battle formation, Green City Rampage!

The top four supreme elders joined forces, their might could rival rank eight Gu Immortals.

The righteous and demonic Gu Immortals split up at once.

Resources were more important.

By now, everyone had already earned a lot, but they paid a huge price too. Their mental energy was depleted, their immortal essence was also expended, who would fight against Green City Rampage in this state?

Whoever got caught would simply be unlucky!

In the sky of Iron Eagle blessed land, there were twelve eagle nests that were in peculiar shapes.

These eagle nests were not round ball wooden eagle nests, they held precious rank eight immortal materials.

Immediately, countless Gu Immortals fought over them.

The battle was a chaotic mess!

Green City Rampage went on a killing spree, lots of unlucky people died in the top four supreme elders' hands.

Humans die for wealth and birds die for food.

“This is too dangerous, let's go, let's go.” Nian Er Fu grabbed the unconscious Nian Er Ping Zhi as he sneakily retreated.

“I cannot stay here.” Pi Shui Han also retreated, he had obtained some eagle nests, and had gained large amounts of rank eight immortal materials.

Some astute Gu Immortals were leaving.

The twelve eagle nests were all lost.

Suddenly, in the air, there were ripples as a thirteenth eagle nest appeared, drawing everyone's attention.

The immortals shouted, pouncing over.

“This is mine.” Chu Du suddenly appeared, blocking all the immortals.

“Ah, Domination Immortal!” The immortals were shocked, stopping their movement.

Chu Du was powerful, far stronger than Hei Tie Sheng!

Liu tribe's entire strength as a super force could do nothing to him. In the entire Northern Plains Gu Immortal world, only people like Qin Bai Sheng could fight him.

At this stage in the battle, everyone was in poor conditions.

But this was the first time Chu Du was acting.

At once, nobody dared to go forward.

Chu Du successfully deterred the immortals, it was to obtain this mysterious thirteenth eagle nest.

Green City Rampage came crashing, a voice was loud as thunder: “Chu Du, you dare?”

Chu Du laughed coldly: “Why wouldn't I?”

Boom!

The two sides clashed, the giant that Green City Rampage transformed into was sent flying by Chu Du in one move.

“The ancient battle formation is powerful, but it is powered by you people. In your condition, none of you can match me.” Chu Du stood arrogantly in the air, looking at the immortals.

The immortals wanted to attack, but they also wanted others to do the work, so that they could reap the benefits.

“Simply a mob.” Chu Du commented, before going ahead to grab at the eagle nest behind him.

Suddenly, a shocking change occurred.

An Immortal Gu House appeared, crashing towards Chu Du’s head.

“Modest Thatched Hut!” A Gu Immortal yelled, he recognized that this was Dong Fang tribe’s former Immortal Gu House!

“Scram!” Chu Du slapped, creating a huge sound.

Thud!!

Bam, Modest Thatched Hut was actually sent flying by his slap.

Gasp!

Everyone took in a deep breath of shock.

Chu Du successfully placed the thirteenth eagle nest into his own immortal aperture.

Next, his gaze fell on Green City Rampage.

The four supreme elders felt a wave of despair.

“Wait.” Just as Chu Du was about to deal the killing blow, a voice resounded in the entire place.

An immeasurable aura, like a formless mountain, enveloped the entire area in an instant.

Rank eight Gu Immortal, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu!

The immortals were shaken, the identity of the voice appeared in their minds.

At this point in the battle, a rank eight Gu Immortal had finally shown up!

It was not certain that he came in person, after all, only his voice was heard.

“Wasn’t it agreed upon that the rank eight great experts would not personally interfere?” Some righteous path Gu Immortals who knew some inside information were confused.

At the next moment, the immortals heard Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s voice: “Hei tribe’s battle ends here, the remaining members of Hei tribe have submitted to me. From now on, this is Bai Zu tribe’s territory.”

“We are willing to change our surnames to Bai Zu!” Hei tribe’s elders responded.

The immortals were shaken, this matter was huge, the situation in Northern

Plains' Gu Immortal world would immediately change!

Smarter people knew: Heavenly Lord Bai Zu could say this because he had come to an agreement with the other rank eight great experts.

“No need to leave, I am holding a banquet for three days and three nights for everyone.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu said again.

The remaining Hei tribe Gu Immortals' faces twitched.

This battlefield which was still filled with blood from the battle earlier was going to hold a banquet. The change was too sudden and abrupt.

“Congratulations to Bai Zu tribe, congratulations to Heavenly Lord.” The righteous path Gu Immortals quickly came to an agreement, giving many responses.

The demonic path and lone immortals were uneasy and agitated.

“Hmph!” Chu Du snorted coldly, it was loud and shrill.

He left with a billowing of his sleeves.

Under everyone's gazes, he flew away into the horizon.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1110: Rank Eight Gu Immortals Cannot Be Schemed Against

“Hahaha, he is Domination Immortal indeed, I am leaving too.” Amidst the silence, Hui Feng Zi laughed loudly.

Next, winds moved around his body, assisting him in his quick departure.

Countless gazes focused on him as well.

Hui Feng Zi was the fastest person in Northern Plains, Yao Huang had once tried to capture him but failed. That was Hui Feng Zi's greatest and proudest achievement.

Chu Du and Hui Feng Zi had huge guts, they did not give Heavenly Lord Bai Zu face, the other immortals had differing ideas, but nobody dared to leave.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu did not say anything, he watched as they left.

Hei tribe's first supreme elder quickly shouted: “Reporting to Heavenly Lord, forget about Hui Feng Zi, but Chu Du has taken the thirteenth eagle nest, Hei Fan true inheritance is inside it!”

The immortals heard about this and went into a commotion, they secretly started conversing quietly.

Everyone had heard of Hei Fan's reputation and fame. This person was the pride of Hei tribe's history, he was the one who led Hei tribe to their current status as a super force. If he was still alive, who would dare to attack Hei tribe?

“No need to worry, I know about that.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s spoke again, the tone of his voice was extremely calm and plain!

First supreme elder’s heart jumped, his lips trembled, he wanted to speak, but no words came out of his mouth.

Second supreme elder suddenly said: “Reporting to Heavenly Lord, Iron Eagle blessed land is about to break apart. If we set a banquet here, it might not last for even half a day.”

“Don’t worry, we have already been prepared long ago.” At this time, three Gu Immortals appeared together.

The immortals took a look, showing expressions of realization.

These three immortals were none other than the three Gu Immortals from Bai Zu tribe.

During the entire battle in Hei tribe, they were watching from the side, it turned out that they were following Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s orders, they were in charge of settling the aftermath of the battle.

Next, Bai Zu tribe’s three Gu Immortals worked together, unleashing an immortal killer move.

The killer move’s effect showed immediate result, in a moment, Iron Eagle blessed land which was shaking and breaking apart managed to stabilize.

Seeing this, a lot of the righteous and demonic immortals had changes in their expressions.

This immortal killer move had incredible effect, this was the first time they were seeing it, it had never been used in past records.

They realized that: Bai Zu tribe did not just have Heavenly Lord Bai Zu alone, the other Gu Immortals were also formidable characters.

“Gong Er greets Heavenly Lord.” Next, Gong tribe’s Gu Immortal Gong Er came forward alone, entering Iron Eagle blessed land and paying respects towards the sky.

In the absence of rank nine, rank eights were the dominating overlords!

Gong Er was a proud person, but facing a rank eight existence, he had to be polite, even though he was feeling moody on the inside.

During the final moments of the battle of Hei tribe, Gong Er wanted to use the Immortal Gu House Golden Dawn Hall to snatch the resources inside.

But the Gu Immortals of Bai Zu tribe smiled as they told him not to act rashly for his own sake.

Gong Er would naturally not listen to them, but soon, he received a message from Prince Feng Xian. The content was: Do not act rashly, otherwise, you are making enemies with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu! If Heavenly Lord Bai Zu is displeased and kills you, you deserve to die, I will definitely not take revenge for you.

Gong Er heard this and did not dare to act, even though he was extremely unwilling internally, he had suffered a huge loss of face.

He had mobilized Golden Dawn Hall to come here and control the situation, but his effort did not match the gains that he had. Originally, Gong Er wanted to act as the leader of the righteous path, but the other Huang Jin bloodline Gu Immortals paid no heed to him at all.

Bai Zu tribe’s three Gu Immortals listened to him and went into Golden Dawn Hall as guests. Even though this gave Gong Er some face, the three immortals had hidden intentions.

Gong Er represented Gong tribe, he had to come out. When he greeted Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, he felt extremely displeased towards Prince Feng Xian: “Damn it, curses! This time, I completely lost to Prince Feng Xian. Hmph, he is not one of us after all, he is just a son-in-law of Gong tribe, an external supreme elder in our tribe!”

Normally speaking, super forces with family based systems rarely had external supreme elders.

This was unlike Central Continent’s sects, they could easily take in others as their external supreme elders.

External elders who join super clans or tribes usually had a close relationship with one of the tribe’s Gu Immortals. For example, they could be husband and wife, or blood-sworn brothers.

Fairy Jiang Yu had once joined Hei tribe, she had been Hei Cheng’s concubine on the surface.

Prince Feng Xian’s true identity was that of a spy from Spirit Affinity House that had entered Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world, he was in charge of the great plan of looking over Imperial Court blessed land, and controlling Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

In his early days, he had become the husband of a female Gong tribe immortal. Under Spirit Affinity House’s secret help, he had become a rank eight Gu Immortal, he stayed out most of the time and did not interact much with Gong tribe.

Prince Feng Xian stayed inside his own Feng Xian grotto-heaven, he did not pay attention or communicate with his Gong tribe wife, he only stayed with his two female attendant Gu Immortals, You Lan and Le Yao.

Gong tribe was very unhappy because of this, but Prince Feng Xian was a rank eight Gu Immortal, Gong tribe’s Gu Immortals could do nothing but hold in their anger.

This time, after Old Ancestor Xue Hu defeated the combination of Yao Huang and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, Gong tribe came up with a plan, they went ahead to brag that Prince Feng Xian was the only person who could defeat Old Ancestor Xue Hu. This way, they could use Prince Feng Xian’s reputation to elevate Gong tribe’s status in the righteous path. Secondly, they could also force Prince Feng Xian to become enemies with Old Ancestor Xue Hu. If the two of them fought, regardless of victory or defeat, it would benefit Gong tribe.

This plan hit two birds with one stone, but could a rank eight Gu Immortal be schemed against so easily?

This time, Gong Er was taught a huge lesson!

Prince Feng Xian secretly came to an agreement with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, one could guess that Heavenly Lord Bai Zu definitely paid a price for it. Prince Feng Xian concealed this matter, not informing Gong tribe about it. He sacrificed Gong tribe’s benefits and kept the gains for himself. But at the crucial moment, he sent a letter, he did not leave behind any evidence that could be used against him. Gong tribe could only endure this silently, after all, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu only gave face to Prince Feng Xian.

Gong tribe did not have any other rank eight expert, strength was the foundation for talking on equal terms!

The three Bai Zu Gu Immortals stabilized Iron Eagle blessed land, it was not only safe now, they even started to repair it. For the next three days, Iron Eagle blessed land held a huge banquet.

In Hei tribe’s former headquarters, Bai Zu tribe’s rise was declared, the intention was quite extraordinary, there was profound meaning behind it.

Almost all the Gu Immortals joined the celebration, other than exceptions like Domination Immortal and Hui Feng Zi.

Other than these two, there could have been others. For example, the mysterious Gu Immortal who appeared during the battle in Hei tribe, the person who controlled Modest Thatched Hut. It was unknown whether they were hidden among the immortals now, or whether they had left secretly already.

The righteous path Gu Immortals mostly joined in the celebrations on the first day before taking their leave.

Gong tribe with Gong Er as the leading Gu Immortal was the first to leave. When they left, Gong Er walked with confident steps, but people could tell that Gong tribe was in a dejected state.

The second was Nian Er tribe.

Only two Gu Immortals from this super force came to Hei tribe.

One was the rank seven space path Gu Immortal Nian Er Fu, while the other was the current generation Sword Child, Nian Er Ping Zhi.

Even though the latter had only rank six cultivation level, he had gained much reputation in this battle in Hei tribe, he became famous overnight. But he paid a hefty price.

Old Monster Corpse Poison stared at Nian Er Ping Zhi with much hatred, he was gritting his teeth.

The grudge of both parties was immense now.

Meng tribe, Yuan tribe, Nu Er tribe, Ye Lui tribe, and the others took their leave one by one.

Liu tribe, Yao tribe, Guan tribe, these three tribe’s Gu Immortals attended for the entire banquet, staying until the end. After three days and nights, they took their leave, they gave Bai Zu tribe ample face.

It was because these three tribes were different from the other Huang Jin tribes, they were quite close to the current Bai Zu tribe’s territory, they needed to establish good relationships.

As for the demonic path and lone immortals, they left entirely after three days and nights.

The stronger they were, the earlier they left. There were also certain Gu Immortal experts who stayed back, attempting to get close to Bai Zu tribe.

If it were the other Huang Jin tribes, when holding a celebration, they would not invite all of these people.

But Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had been a lone immortal in the past, the lone immortals and demonic path Gu Immortals could accept his invitation and stayed here.

“See you, see you.”

“Until we meet again, forgive us for not sending you off.”

During these three days, Iron Eagle blessed land had been completely repaired.

The blessed land’s entrance opened, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals and Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals stood at the entrance, speaking in polite tones as they sent off all of the leaving Gu Immortals.

The leaving Gu Immortals, regardless of their faction, sighed to themselves: After this battle in Hei tribe, the entire situation in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world changed!

Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals surrendered, they had to send off these Gu Immortals who invaded their homes, they definitely felt uneasy and unhappy. Heavenly Lord Bai Zu made them do this, he was humiliating them.

Among them, Hei tribe’s first supreme elder could feel it the most.

During the battle in Hei tribe, he suffered the heaviest injuries. Heavenly Lord Bai Zu personally used his healing methods to heal the rest of the Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals, except him.

He was pale, he sent off the guests in an injured state, he spat out blood from time to time, he looked so pathetic, all of his face was gone!

Hei tribe’s first supreme elder understood: “I purpose exposed the fact about the Hei Fan true inheritance earlier, I wanted Heavenly Lord Bai Zu to attack Chu Du. If he was killed, we could take revenge for Chu Du’s invasion. If he failed, and Chu Du escaped, with his personality, he would definitely exact revenge on Bai Zu tribe. To think that Heavenly Lord Bai Zu chose to do nothing, he knew that this was my scheme, thus, he has been suppressing and punishing me secretly these last three days!”

Sadness, pain, hatred, fear, all sorts of emotions tangled together and filled Hei tribe’s first supreme elder.

After sending the final Gu Immortal off, Gu Immortals of Hei tribe and Bai Zu tribe went to meet Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

In the highest level of Iron Eagle blessed land, the original discussion hall of Hei tribe, everyone met with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

“Greetings to Heavenly Lord.” The immortals stood on the spot, paying their respects.

“Mm, everyone has worked hard.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu sat at the highest position, he smiled: “From now on, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals will change their surnames to Bai Zu. Hei tribe’s resources have been taken by Northern Plains’ immortals, that is an established fact. This is also the result that I had gotten after negotiating with the other rank eight experts. In the future, you cannot use this as an excuse to take revenge.”

The immortals quickly responded in acknowledgment.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu paused for a while before saying: “But the Hei Fan true inheritance is not a small matter, it involves a rank eight expert. Even if I do not cultivate time path, I can use it as reference. Ignore Chu Du for now, I already know the location of Hei Fan grotto-heaven. After some time, we can forcefully attack it and obtain everything inside!”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu did not anticipate obtaining the Hei Fan true inheritance.

This true inheritance could not even be obtained by Hei tribe’s own members, not to mention him as an outsider.

The true benefit was Hei Fan grotto-heaven, and the countless resources accumulated inside. This was enough to entice any rank eight.

Hei tribe’s first supreme elder heard this and felt incredibly shocked!

“Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s location is the biggest secret in our tribe. Including me, only the rest of the top four supreme elders know! How can Heavenly Lord Bai Zu learn about it? Don’t tell me, someone secretly submitted to him before this? This secret was told to him?!”

Learning about this, Hei tribe’s first supreme elder felt a chill going down his spine, his body shuddered in fear.

He knelt on the floor immediately, kowtowing to Heavenly Lord Bai Zu in an extravagant manner: “I have failed in my task, I am greatly at fault! Please punish me, Heavenly Lord!”

“Oh? What failure is it?” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu looked at Hei tribe’s first supreme elder, showing an expression of a vague smile.

Hei tribe’s first supreme elder felt cold sweat on his forehead, he could not tell the Heavenly Lord Bai Zu about his scheme three days ago, that would be offending the great expert!

Thus, he shifted the topic: “In this battle in Hei tribe, we anticipated that Fang Yuan would appear to reap some benefits. In the entire battle, we had used investigative immortal methods continuously, but we could not find him at all. I have failed in capturing Fang Yuan, it was my mistake!”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu smiled: “Your investigative method is quite unique, it can actually expose an otherworldly demon. I am afraid that Fang Yuan truly did not come. That is a pity, if he appeared, I would have captured him. With this bargaining chip, I would not have to pay such a huge price.”

As it turned out, Hei tribe and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had already discussed to set a trap against Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was the culprit behind the matter of Imperial Court blessed land, it was widely known, the Northern Plains Gu Immortal world knew that Fang Yuan had Fixed Immortal Travel and Spring Autumn Cicada.

Hei tribe’s battle was an opportunity not seen in hundreds of years, to think that Fang Yuan did not come. This was out of their expectations, after all, Fang Yuan had Fixed Immortal Travel, it was easy for him to show up.

They did not know about the matters after the battle of Yi Tian Mountain. Right now, Fixed Immortal Travel was in the hands of Heavenly Court.

As for the investigative immortal killer move that could expose an otherworldly demon, it also had a peculiar origin.

Hei tribe had once had an otherworldly demon. When he was a mortal Gu Master, he displayed incredible talent and attracted the attention of the higher-ups.

The Quartet Sparrow Battle Tactic that he came up with was a game that the top four supreme elders of Hei tribe loved, they could not stop playing it even until now.

After soul search, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals found out that this person was an otherworldly demon. Thus, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals did thorough research on his body, even though his life was lost in the process, they obtained an immortal killer move that could expose an otherworldly demon.

This secret was only known by Hei tribe’s top four supreme elders, the rest of the Hei tribe Gu Immortals did not know about it.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu continued: “Never mind that Fang Yuan did not come here. Your Hei tribe was smart and knew to join my Bai Zu tribe in the nick of time, it is a good thing. Three days later, I will help you get rid of your problem, you will be able to separate and move on your own. Don’t worry, as long as you sincerely forget the past and live on as a Gu Immortal of Bai Zu tribe, think in the interests of our tribe and contribute to the tribe, I will definitely notice and reward you for your hard work.”

“Yes! We obey the orders of Heavenly Lord!” Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals quickly responded.

Hei tribe’s first supreme elder even knelt on the floor, shouting loudly with an attitude of gratitude and joy: “Heavenly Lord, you are magnanimous, you forgave us for our incompetence, we are truly in awe at your grace! You even thought about our problem and are going to help us resolve it, you are truly the savior of our tribe....”

Saying this, he kowtowed with his head heavily hitting the floor, tears were flowing endlessly down his cheeks.

But inside, he felt icy chills.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was highly skilled, he immediately wanted to get rid of their Green City Rampage. This formation would no longer belong to Hei tribe’s top four supreme elders from now on.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was extremely pleased, he allowed them to leave after saying some words of encouragement.

He sat and did not move, he was thinking in his head.

“Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals have just joined us, their status fell drastically, they are definitely not in a tranquil state, they will need a lot of time to adjust to their new life.”

“However, it is good that Hei tribe’s first supreme elder has this attitude now. My effort of suppressing him was not wasted, I can spare his life.”

“It is too bad that Fang Yuan did not show up, otherwise, if I could capture him, my gains would be greater! Now, I can only pay the price myself.”

To ensure that the other rank eight experts did not act, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu paid a hefty price, he felt pain thinking about it.

“However, there can only be gains after putting in the investment. Right now, Bai Zu tribe finally has the foundation to firmly stay in Northern Plains!”

“And there is also Hei Fan grotto-heaven, if I can take it down, my losses will be replenished.”

“Of course, I cannot rush this, I need to let the tribe recuperate now, and ensure that there is peace! After this battle, I have gotten on the nerves of the righteous path. If I attack Hei Fan grotto-heaven now, the other rank eights will not watch me quietly from the side.”

“Thankfully, Hei tribe lost all of their fortune now, the righteous and demonic immortals are satisfied by their gains. These forces would conflict and restrain each other, for the short term, they will not find problems with Bai Zu tribe.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu thought about all these things, in this short period of time, he clearly assessed the circumstances of Bai Zu tribe and himself, he was clear about his goals, and was prepared to start his future plans!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1111: Fang Yuan’s Third Earthly Calamity

Southern Border.

Mountains were standing tall, greenery was widespread, mountains winds howled endlessly.

More than ten Gu Immortals, thousands of li apart, formed a huge circle.

In the sky above this circle, an old Gu Immortal was using his immortal essence, concentrating as he set up the formation.

The framework of a formation was already placed, covering a gigantic surrounding area, a huge illusory light lump was within.

This huge light lump was shining in many colors, dazzling and bright, it was the giant dream realm.

After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, the place was in shambles. Spectral Soul was plotted against by heaven’s will, Fang Yuan obtained the fruits of his labor, and his main body was trapped in the dream realm, constantly getting weakened by it.

Even though the Southern Border Gu Immortals did not know about the details of the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, they knew about the immense benefits involving this giant dream realm.

The Gu Immortals here came from the respective righteous path super forces in Southern Border.

After a difficult negotiation, they came to an agreement, they were going to control this giant dream realm together.

This dream realm was too important, none of the super forces could take it down alone. They were afraid of the demonic path and lone immortals coming to gain benefits, thus, the righteous path joined up and occupied this place, setting up a super Gu formation here so that they could slowly devour the benefits of the dream realm later on.

“Rise!” The old Gu Immortal in the sky suddenly shouted, profound light shone from all directions around his body.

Following him, the Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals put in effort, large amounts of immortal essence was expended, countless mortal Gu were flying, Immortal Gu flew out of the Gu Immortals one by one, landing in their respective spots.

Many Gu Immortals were sweating and nervous, some of them had trembling fingers.

They had already spent nine days and nights here setting up the Gu formation.

Now, they were at a crucial moment of arranging the super Gu formation.

“They are about to succeed!”

“Are we not taking action yet? If we don’t do it now...”

“Sigh! There is no chance. Around them, there are hidden Gu Immortal experts, I suspect they have Immortal Gu Houses defending them!”

“In that case...”

Conversations were quietly taking place.

Demonic path and lone immortals understood the value of this giant dream realm. Even without this dream realm, this place had undergone a mysterious battle, there might be some Gu Immortal corpses or inheritances left behind, they were all treasures!

But the righteous path Gu Immortals acted with caution, they did not give these demonic path and lone immortals any chance.

Without any chance, these Gu Immortals wisely chose to retreat.

Boom—!

With a loud sound, a huge pillar of light burst up into the sky.

The pillar of light appeared quickly and vanished just as quickly.

A huge super Gu formation gradually concealed itself, vanishing from the immortals’ sights.

“After so much hard work, it is finally completed!” The old Gu Immortal who set up the formation slowly descended.

The righteous path Gu Immortals gathered together.

“In setting up this formation, my Wu clan used five Immortal Gu. Thus, thirty percent of this dream realm should belong to my Wu clan.”

“Hehe, this makes sense. But... my Luo tribe contributed just as many Immortal Gu as your Wu clan.”

“What are you talking about! If we did not work together and used our immortal essence, could we have created this super Gu formation?”

“In my opinion, in terms of contribution, my clan’s first supreme elder, Chi Qu You, was the main person in charge of setting up the formation, he definitely ranks as the highest contributor!”

Even though the super Gu formation was set up, the righteous path Gu Immortals had not decided how to split up the super dream realm yet.

At once, sounds of discussion became louder and louder, they were progressing towards an argument.

Arguments would have no use in terms of getting a result, of course.

The righteous path Gu Immortals left unhappily, starting to plan for their own share of this pie.

A few days later.

Shang Liang Mountain.

“Xin Ci greets Lady Qing Qing.” Shang Xin Ci paid her respects.

Shang Qing Qing looked at Shang Xin Ci, nodding in satisfaction: “I was right about you. You have done well as the clan leader, the members of Shang clan are starting to show some unity.”

“I was able to achieve this all thanks to Lady Qing Qing’s nurturing.” Shang Xin Ci said with sincere gratitude.

Shang Qing Qing went into the main topic immediately: “I called you to come here because I have some questions. After becoming clan leader, the first thing you did was to get rid of the arrest warrants of the black and white demons. But do you know, that Brother Hei Tu of yours is not Fang Zheng, he is Fang Yuan instead.”

“Fang Yuan?” Shang Xin Ci was perplexed.

She did not expect that Lord Shang Qing Qing had called for her to talk about Brother Hei Tu.

After Shang Xin Ci became Shang clan leader, her vision had broadened, she learned many secrets, she knew that the beautiful lady in front of her was a high and mighty Gu Immortal who transcended mortals!

This Gu Immortal was actually talking to her regarding a mortal Gu Master, how could she not be confused?

Shang Qing Qing had a solemn expression as she said: “Xin Ci, you have to listen to my following words very carefully, they are very important.”

“Yes, I will listen and learn.”

“This Black Demon that you know of as Fang Zheng, his real name is Gu Yue Fang Yuan. He has a startling background, he is not an ordinary person. He appeared out of nowhere and is extremely dangerous. He is a demonic path Gu Immortal, he committed a huge crime, not only Southern Border, but Central Continent, Eastern Sea, Northern Plains, and Western Desert Gu Immortals are all pursuing him now.” Shang Qing Qing said in a solemn tone.

Shang Xin Ci opened her mouth, she was in shock.

At once, she felt like her ears were playing tricks on her.

Since when did Brother Hei Tu become an immortal, and he was so dangerous that Lady Shang Qing Qing felt wary of him?

“Don’t suspect your hearing, why would I joke about these things? You and the demon Fang Yuan had some friendship back then, tell me everything about it now.” Shang Qing Qing questioned.

“Ah... ah, yes, yes.” Shang Xin Ci regained her senses after some time, she began to recall: “I first met Brother Hei Tu in the merchant caravan, he was such a kind person, he saved me from that horrible predicament...”

Shang Xin Ci recalled the past, as she got deeper into it, a hint of tenderness was showing on her face.

Throughout the process, Shang Qing Qing listened on the side, not saying a word.

After Shang Xin Ci finished, she mustered up her courage and tried to explain for Fang Yuan: “Lady Qing Qing, is there a misunderstanding? Fang Zheng, I mean, Brother Fang Yuan is clearly a mortal Gu Master, how can he be such a great demon?”

“Hehe.” Shang Qing Qing showed a mocking smile: “If he is not a great demon, who is? His craftiness and deviousness is not something you can imagine. He turned the entire Northern Plains Gu Immortal world upside down, Central Continent’s Heavenly Court has not even managed to catch him yet. Nobody knows where he is, or what evil scheme he is planning next. Your encounter with him might not be as simple as you think, I can tell that there was a scheme involved in this!”

“Do you know? Because of your relationship with him, my Shang clan is facing great pressure from Southern Border’s Gu Immortals. From now on, you have to keep a clear distance between you and him, there cannot be any relationship between the two of you. Be a good Shang clan leader, you may leave.”

Shang Xin Ci could only leave.

“You are letting her go?” After Shang Xin Ci left, a figure appeared, standing beside Shang Qing Qing.

He was thin and looked very pale, it was Shang clan’s Gu Immortal Shang Tan Mo.

Shang Qing Qing smiled: “What else can I do?”

Shang Tan Mo said solemnly: “We cannot listen to her words alone, we need to soul search and see it for ourselves!”

Shang Qing Qing smiled even wider now: “Look at this?”

Saying this, she stretched out her hand from her sleeve.

Her hand was no longer a human hand, it was like a twig, there were flowers growing on her nails.

Shang Tan Mo saw it and was dazed: “I forgot that you have this immortal killer move, it is more reliable than soul searching.”

“I already know all of Fang Yuan’s interactions in Shang clan city. He came here for a fortuitous encounter in cultivation, as expected and worthy of the user of Spring Autumn Cicada. This is nothing much, he did not set up any hidden schemes after all.” Shang Qing Qing said.

Shang Tan Mo nodded: “Then I am assured, but, how will we explain this to the outsiders?”

Shang Qing Qing smiled coldly: “Them? They are just using Fang Yuan as an excuse to get a bigger share of the dream realm, now that I have this result, I can shut their mouths.”

Shang Tan Mo’s eyes shined, he looked up, his gaze pierced Shang Liang Mountain as he looked at the giant dream realm: “Maybe... my Shang clan’s Gu Immortals have been too polite for a long time, people think we are no longer adept at fighting.”

The situation was still changing.

Over in Northern Plains, the battle at Hei tribe had ended, there were just some loose ends. The righteous and demonic factions, as well as the lone immortals, had their own gains. Hei tribe was history, Bai Zu tribe took them over and changed the situation in the Gu Immortal world.

In Southern Border, they were fighting over the giant dream realm, the righteous path Gu Immortals worked together and managed to keep the demonic path and lone immortals out of it. But within the righteous path itself, a competition for shares of the giant dream realm was about to begin!

No matter where and when, people will always fight over benefits and resources.

More than ten days passed like this.

Northern Plains, northern icy plain.

Fang Yuan placed his immortal aperture, looking at the sky, muttering: “Finally, this is the third earthly calamity!”

Heaven and earth qi rumbled, there were no clouds or fog, there was a peculiar and strange scene of tranquility in the sovereign immortal aperture.

Flying birds appeared from thin air.

They were glowing with a slight green light, they flew extremely quickly, in Fang Yuan’s vision, he saw long lines of light caused by their movement.

The cry of the birds was extremely crisp, filled with endless vitality.

“Spring dawn jade oriole.” Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, he recognized these flying birds.

They might have tiny bodies, like sparrows, but they were genuine desolate beasts!

“These birds are very special among desolate beasts, they have a lot of rule path ‘life’ dao marks in their bodies, but they have very short lifespans. After the egg hatches, they can fly in the skies immediately. Everywhere they go, their dao marks will rain down and change the terrain of the environment, pouring down endless life force. After a dozen or so breaths of time, their lifespan would be expended and they would die.”

Fang Yuan muttered in his mind, he could see that in this area of Mini Northern Plains, the thin layer of ice on the ground was already starting to have sprouts growing out of them.

Soon, under the influence of the spring dawn jade orioles, grass grew taller, rapidly growing and there were even wildflowers mixed among them.

“What is going on? What earthly calamity is this? Heaven’s will is trying to help me develop my immortal aperture?” Fang Yuan was confused.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1112: Spring Dawn Jade Orioles

The cries of the birds were unceasing and pleasing to the ears.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Northern Plains was originally wilderness covered in frost, but now, green plants could be seen sprouting rapidly.

The power of the earthly calamity was huge. In just a dozen breaths of time, a gigantic area surrounding Fang Yuan was already covered in greenery, it was a grassland.

Grass, trees, and flowers grew rapidly, it was as if this was an entirely new place.

Fang Yuan stood on the peak of Dang Hun Mountain, he had a heavy expression, he focused his mind.

This was his third earthly calamity, he bought Dang Hun Mountain with him again.

But the situation now was very strange.

The earthly calamity involved spring dawn jade orioles, it was helping Fang Yuan to develop his immortal aperture.

Half a month ago, when treasure yellow heaven opened, Fang Yuan did not choose to go Hei tribe and take a risk, instead, he went back and developed the sovereign immortal aperture.

He had developed many areas, but because Mini Northern Plains was the place where Fang Yuan would be undergoing tribulation, he did not develop it.

Right now, this earthly calamity was helping Fang Yuan to do it, this was out of his expectations.

This was a good thing for Fang Yuan.

“But heaven’s will can act in unexpected ways, it is not so kind, there are surely traps that it set, I need to inspect for them.” Fang Yuan stood at the peak of Dang Hun Mountain, observing vigilantly.

Mini Northern Plains was huge.

The grassland formed by the earthly calamity could not fill the whole of Mini Northern Plains, it only covered the part of the frosted land that was around Dang Hun Mountain.

Looking at it, the greenery was growing thicker, soon, sprouting trees grew taller, rising at an observable pace.

At this rate, a huge forest was going to form.

Fang Yuan felt surprised and joyful.

The power of the earthly calamity was usually used for destruction, against regular people. When used to develop the immortal aperture, it had truly shocking effects. If Fang Yuan wanted to transplant this huge forest into his immortal aperture, it would cost him a lot of time and effort.

The spring dawn jade oriole had a short lifespan, as they died, they turned into jade green life force, fading in the air, but at the same time, more spring dawn jade orioles formed, moving forward in their place.

At once, the sky was filled with the figures of these desolate birds, they were so numerous, like a flock of sparrows, it was a grand sight.

“Wait!” Fang Yuan’s expression suddenly changed.

“Go.” He suddenly thought of something, he called out as he pointed.

Instantly, sword light flew out, moving at lightning speed.

Rank seven Immortal Gu — Flying Sword!

Spring dawn jade orioles were fast, but they could not match the speed of this sword light. But they could move agilely, they did not travel linearly, Fang Yuan used up some effort to kill one.

A wave of true meaning rushed in soon, entering Fang Yuan’s mind.

In an instant, Fang Yuan felt like a spring dawn jade oriole, from the start of life to flight, and until his death. In a short period of time, he experienced life and death, his mental state was transformed.

Fang Yuan fully absorbed this true meaning, clarity returning to his eyes.

Right now, he was a transformation path grandmaster, it was no longer as hard for him to absorb Reckless Savage’s true meaning.

If he was like an empty basin earlier trying to hold buckets of water, he was like a well now, taking in Reckless Savage’s true meaning in huge quantity, with much greater ease than before!

Fang Yuan frowned, at this moment, he realized the scheme of heaven’s will.

Fang Yuan’s earthly calamity was very unique, because of the immortal tribulation tempering aperture method and the nature of the northern icy plain, his earthly calamity had two portions.

One was controlled by heaven’s will, the other was influenced by Reckless Savage’s true meaning.

In the previous two earthly calamities, the portion controlled by heaven’s will formed first, before the part of the earthly calamity formed by Reckless Savage’s true meaning appeared. But in this third earthly calamity, Reckless Savage’s true meaning appeared at the start!

Fang Yuan did not expect this.

This was the first time he was seeing this!

Fang Yuan suffered a minor loss.

Between Reckless Savage’s true meaning and developing the blessed land, the former was much more important than the latter.

Because Reckless Savage’s true meaning could directly raise his transformation path attainment level, it could only be obtained during each tribulation, the costs and risks involved were high.

As for developing the blessed land, he could do it at any time.

“Heaven’s will knows about my vigilant nature, this is a good scheme to prevent my transformation path attainment level from rising rapidly, I wasted a lot of Reckless Savage’s true meaning.” Fang Yuan smiled, not feeling dejected.

He flew out like lightning.

In the air, his body shook, as countless strength path phantoms appeared.

Strength path killer move — Myriad Self!

Myriad self charged forward, forming a huge tide of humans, rampaging towards the spring dawn jade oriole flock.

Spring dawn jade orioles were desolate birds, they could move freely among the myriad self army while chirping continuously.

Myriad self had little effect, Fang Yuan quickly used other methods.

Sword path killer move — Triple Layered Sword Wave!

Swish swish swish!

Silver-white sword waves burst out like tides, containing an unstoppable sharpness, pushing forward.

The speed of the spring dawn jade oriole was faster than the sword waves. Fang Yuan sent out three sword waves, even though some were killed, the result was not many.

He frowned, understanding: “In the previous two earthly calamities, heaven’s will already learned a lot about my foundation. Be it myriad self or triple layered sword wave, it knows about their weaknesses. In this earthly calamity, the spring dawn jade orioles counter my two killer moves. Heaven’s will is plotting against me by intentionally setting up these situations.”

In the previous earthly calamity, there were wind flowers with sharpness like blades.

But Fang Yuan had Dang Hun Mountain, using it as his base, he could defend himself to a great extent.

But now, even though Fang Yuan brought Dang Hun Mountain, the spring dawn jade orioles were formed from Reckless Savage’s true meaning, he could not sit around and defend himself, he needed to go on the offense or he would lose his greatest benefit.

“Thankfully, I retrieved flying sword Immortal Gu!”

Fang Yuan activated this rank seven Immortal Gu, sword light rampaged according to his will.

Spring dawn jade orioles died at Fang Yuan’s hands, but more and more spring dawn jade orioles died on their own.

If Fang Yuan did not kill them, he would not receive infusions of Reckless Savage’s true meaning. Heaven’s will purposely caused this, Fang Yuan’s losses were not small.

This was not just a loss of Reckless Savage’s true meaning, but also his green grape immortal essence.

Even though flying sword Immortal Gu was powerful, it was rank seven, each activation needed a huge amount of green grape immortal essence! But each attack only hit one spring dawn jade oriole, Fang Yuan was wasting a lot of his resources for limited results.

“It seems that I need new methods in the next tribulation. Old moves are losing effectiveness.” Fang Yuan thought of wisdom Gu.

If he had the light of wisdom, this problem was easy to solve. With his grandmaster attainment level and wisdom path methods, he could very easily deduce new immortal killer moves.

But even though Fang Yuan had his immortal zombie body, he did not dare to use it.

After fifteen minutes of the earthly calamity, there were still spring dawn jade orioles forming.

Mini Northern Plains was not just budding with greenery, there was a huge forest, the trees inside the forest were huge, they were dozens of meters tall, each of the tree trunks resembled pillars.

At this time, Fang Yuan tried other methods like poison spit. In the previous earthly calamity, this killer move was very effective, but now it was useless against the spring dawn jade orioles.

Growl growl growl—!

In the huge forest, trees raised their heads and cried out loud.

Next, they uprooted from the ground, becoming huge treemen.

Fang Yuan noticed the changes on the ground and snickered: “So this is the portion controlled by heaven’s will. Hehe, I was vigilant and got rid of half the forest in advance, now it seems that my preparation was not in vain.”

Countless treemen pulled out their roots from deep underground, charging towards Dang Hun Mountain.

They moved slowly, but each of them were huge. Fang Yuan changed his mind and chose to defend. He landed on the peak of Dang Hun Mountain, looking at the treemen moving towards him. It was a scene of greenery, it was like the entire forest was pushing towards him, he felt suffocated.

Fang Yuan stretched out his finger and tried to attack.

Flying sword Immortal Gu charged over, turning into a bright light, piercing a great distance ahead, many treemen were penetrated.

These treemen stopped moving but soon, their injuries were healed and they continued climbing towards Dang Hun Mountain.

Fang Yuan used triple layered sword wave again.

The dazzling sword waves engulfed the treemen with sharp sounds. There was nothing left of them, the effect was great, but soon, treemen behind filled up the gaps.

Fang Yuan frowned.

“These treemen are not desolate beasts, but they are close to that level. Not only are they very durable, they can absorb life force and recover rapidly.”

The life force naturally came from the spring dawn jade orioles.

Every since the first earthly calamity, event though heaven’s will could not control the entire earthly calamity, it could influence Reckless Savage’s true meaning and create a combination.

Last time, it was the snow moons and wind flowers, now it was the treemen and spring dawn jade orioles, they combined perfectly, gaining huge effect!

Fang Yuan suddenly opened his mouth, spitting out a mouthful of poisonous air.

The poisonous air spread around the treemen, dozens of them started to move slowly, their green leaves turned purple. In a few breaths’ time, their movement became slower and slower, until they collapsed on the ground, the entire tree’s branches and leaves started rotting, turning decayed.

Poison spit’s effect was quite good.

But Fang Yuan could not continuously use this killer move, there was a huge drawback, he needed to get rid of the poison in his body first, otherwise, he would die.

The treemen started to climb Dang Hun Mountain.

Soon, these treemen experienced the power of Dang Hun Mountain, their souls shook, their bodies trembled, many leaves fell.

However, there were too many treemen, they advanced forward, pushing each other up the mountain.

Dang Hun Mountain was indeed a secluded domain of heaven and earth, just at the base of the mountain, a hundred treemen died, Fang Yuan did not use any immortal essence.

Fang Yuan looked at the scene, his frown was deepening.

Even though these treemen were troublesome, they had little threat.

Because they moved slowly, Fang Yuan could attack from a distance and kill these treemen slowly.

Fang Yuan felt something amiss: “This earthly calamity is too easy, don’t tell me, because heaven’s will felt that it cannot kill me this time, its focus went to depleting my foundation instead?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1113: Giant Disaster Blazing Tree

To eliminate these treemen, he would need to expend a lot of immortal essence.

The number of these treemen was greater than the first earthly calamity’s snow monsters, and they had strong regenerative abilities. Fang Yuan could see many severed twigs that were stabbed into the ground growing with new budding leaves.

Unless he used killer moves like triple layered sword wave to completely decimate these treemen, to avoid any future problems.

Otherwise, when these trees grow, they would expend a great amount of the earth qi inside the immortal aperture.

But using triple layered sword wave or flying sword Immortal Gu to kill these treemen was too wasteful!

“If I were a fire path Gu Immortal, this would not be a problem to me.” Fang Yuan thought of this, when he suddenly heard a sound, fire was starting from those treemen’s corpses.

The fire burnt rapidly, in the blink of an eye, it spread and covered countless treemen!

The fire continued to rage on these treemen’s bodies, turning these treemen into charcoal, their leaves were completely incinerated, a great number of them died.

The fire was nourished by the treemen and became larger, it was almost twenty meters tall!

Raging flames advanced towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was stunned.

What is going on?

Evidently, this was part of the earthly calamity.

But why did the earthly calamity start burning itself? What was heaven’s will trying to do? Was it trying to resolve Fang Yuan’s problem?

Fang Yuan quickly ruled out the possibility.

What a joke, how could heaven’s will help him?

Roar—!

There was a huge figure standing among the roaring flames.

In the orange-red flames, a sixty meter tall giant stood up!

“This is?!” Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk to pin size, he subconsciously gritted his teeth: “Giant disaster blazing tree!”

This was an ancient desolate plant.

In history, immemorial red heaven often had these giant disaster blazing trees.

But this type of ancient desolate plant was rarely seen in the five regions, although not extinct.

Giant disaster blazing trees could be created from any type of tree. When a forest fire starts, after countless lifeforms are killed, there was a chance of forming this giant disaster blazing tree.

The giant disaster blazing tree’s body was covered in raging flames. It burned endlessly, nothing could get close to it. More impressively, this giant disaster blazing tree would cause bad luck to whatever life forms got close to it.

“Heaven’s will, truly insidious! Evidently, heaven’s will has noticed the protection of Dog Shit Luck on me, it created this giant disaster blazing tree to destroy my good luck!”

Fang Yuan felt a huge challenge.

Normally speaking: If he encountered a giant disaster blazing tree in the wild, he would wisely choose to evade it. But now, this giant disaster blazing tree directly appeared in his immortal aperture, it was draining his immortal aperture’s earth qi and bringing him disaster and bad luck, negating Dog Shit Luck’s effect. If he left it alone, soon, Fang Yuan would be extremely unlucky, nothing would go right, he might even face a huge disaster. As for refining Immortal Gu, he could forget about it.

Flames raged on, crackling sounds could be heard from the burning trees.

The blazing tree had appeared in a very peculiar location, it was close to Dang Hun Mountain.

Even though Fang Yuan activated his defenses, the huge flames were still causing his eyebrows and hair to dry up.

“This is only the periphery, but the temperature is already like this, what would the center of this blazing tree be like?” Fang Yuan sighed, leaving.

He left Dang Hun Mountain.

He had Landscape as Before, he could restore Dang Hun Mountain before it was completely destroyed.

The problem was how to kill this giant disaster blazing tree which reached partway up Dang Hun Mountain in height!

Sword marks targeting death!

Triple layered sword wave!

Poison spit!

Fang Yuan used many killer moves, but they were ineffective. The poison in the air was completely eradicated by the flames, flying sword Immortal Gu pierced the giant disaster blazing tree and returned to Fang Yuan, but the giant disaster blazing tree only shook intensely, before turning to normal.

As for triple layered sword wave, it managed to put out the flames, it got to the blazing tree and destroyed many branches and leaves. But soon, the flames spread again as the blazing tree returned to normal, its injuries vanished after a few breaths of time.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with brilliance, immortal aura burst out around him as he cried out: “Strength path giant hand!’

Bam.

A giant hand appeared out of nowhere, pushing the air and grabbing at the blazing tree with an unstoppable aura.

But the blazing tree was huge too, it was almost half of Dang Hun Mountain’s size.

The strength path giant hand grabbed the giant disaster blazing tree and tried to lift it up.

But after some time, even after trying hard, there was no effect.

The giant disaster blazing tree had countless roots, they were like snakes deeply rooted in the soil, sucking in earth qi fiercely, it also had the spring dawn jade orioles flying in the sky to replenish its life force, it was stable as a mountain, unmoving.

As time passed, the entire strength path giant hand started melting in the flames, almost half of it was gone.

Fang Yuan dispelled this giant hand, he had an idea after some inspiration.

Rumble!

A second strength path giant hand flew out, but this time, it grabbed at Dang Hun Mountain instead of the giant disaster blazing tree.

Fang Yuan could not lift the giant disaster blazing tree, but strength path giant hand had the power of Pulling Mountain, he could lift Dang Hun Mountain.

Whoosh!

Wind currents blew, Dang Hun Mountain was brought into the air by Fang Yuan, before he tossed it directly towards the giant disaster blazing tree.

With a loud sound, the entire ground shook intensely.

The giant disaster blazing tree was suppressed under the mountain, the huge flames were no longer apparent, there was only a ring of fire left around the mountain’s base.

Fang Yuan floated in the air, staring at the battlefield expressionlessly.

The giant disaster blazing tree could not move, it was attacked by Dang Hun Mountain’s soul path dao marks, but it had incredible vitality and tenacity, it was still struggling intensely.

Blazing flames started to roast Dang Hun Mountain, liquefying some of its rocks.

It was not so easy to get rid of the giant disaster blazing tree.

Fang Yuan was in a heavy mood, looking around, it was a scene of red.

A sea of fire!

The flames had spread to the entire forest, and even the grassland.

As expected, heaven’s will’s arrangements were just to nurture the growth of the giant disaster blazing tree, how could it be so nice to him?

Fang Yuan’s breathing became rougher.

He saw that more and more giant disaster blazing trees were forming in the sea of fire, their roots were digging into the ground as they sucked in earth qi to strengthen themselves.

The first plant was not destroyed yet, but so many others were forming!

Not just that, these giant disaster blazing trees were growling, they stood up and turned into giant blazing treemen!

They had only one target, Fang Yuan, who was in the sky.

Boom boom boom!

Under Dang Hun Mountain, the first giant disaster blazing tree also became a treeman, it was not giving up, attempting to flip over this mountain.

It had incredible strength, each time it struggled, Dang Hun Mountain shook intensely, causing a huge and scary sound.

In an instant, the situation became as bad as it possibly could!

Fang Yuan could ignore the snow monsters earlier and slowly kill them But he could not ignore these giant disaster blazing treemen. Even though they moved slowly, they had a terrible influence on the immortal aperture. Not only did they suck away earth qi and damage the sovereign immortal aperture's foundation, they would even bring Fang Yuan a lot of bad luck!

What should he do?

The light of the fire flickered on Fang Yuan's face, a smile slowly appeared on his face: “Thankfully, I made my preparations!”

At the same time, Shang Xin Ci who was in Southern Border stared at the lamp in front of her in a daze. In the fire, it seemed to show Fang Yuan's former appearance.

“Brother Hei Tu...” Shang Xin Ci thought to herself.

“Clan leader, clan leader?” She heard something close to her ears.

“Ah.” Shang Xin Ci regained her senses, she looked at Xiao Lan, Xiao Die, Lady Wei, Zhou Quan, and her other subordinates.

“Sorry, my mind was wandering again.” Shang Xin Ci quickly apologized.

“Miss, this is the third time you've gone into a daze.” Xiao Lan muttered.

“I was disrespectful, I am truly sorry.” Shang Xin Ci quickly said again.

Zhou Quan and Lady Wei glanced at each other swiftly, before coughing: “Now, let's continue the topic from before, how will we take in the Gu Master groups that were controlled by Shang clan's former young clan leaders.”

After the meeting, everyone left the hall.

“Xiao Die, how is the clan leader? Why is she constantly in a daze?” Zhou Quan asked.

Xiao Die showed an expression of worry: “I am not sure too, it seems that after the higher-ups met with her, she became like this ever since.”

“Higher-ups?” Zhou Quan's expression changed, he already knew about the existence of Shang clan's Gu Immortals, this was not something that he could settle or interfere in.

Ye Fan could not hold it in anymore: “Let me go talk to Lady Xin Ci, maybe as an outsider, I can learn something from her.”

“Young master Ye, you are not an outsider.” Xiao Lan smiled.

“We will trouble you, young master Ye.” Lady Wei nodded, agreeing with this.

A moment later, Ye Fan arrived at Shang Xin Ci's study room.

The doors were shut.

Through the small hole in the center, Ye Fan saw that Shang Xin Ci was holding onto a piece of paper, looking at it carefully.

She was so deep in thought, even when Ye Fan walked with heavy steps, she did not notice it.

Ye Fan was about to cough and remind Shang Xin Ci that he was here.

But suddenly, he heard Shang Xin Ci's soft whisper: "Brother Hei Tu... what kind of person are you..."

Ye Fan's heart jumped, he instantly understood, the paper in Shang Xin Ci's hand was none other than the black demon's arrest warrant. It was his drawing!

Ye Fan felt a sense of hollowness in his heart, his strong limbs were turning frail.

He stood outside the door, he hesitated for a long time before gritting his teeth, turning around and leaving.

From start to finish, Shang Xin Ci did not discover him.

Ye Fan walked out of the mansion, arriving at the street. This was the inner core of Shang Liang Mountain, an important place in Shang clan, it was flourishing with bustling activity.

But Ye Fan had a worried expression, he had a question inside him — Hei Tu, what kind of person are you?

Northern icy plain.

Chu Du's arms were behind his back, he watched this vast icy plain.

Suddenly, his body shook: "It's here!"

He received Fang Yuan's transmission and quickly used the Immortal Gu in his hands.

Rank seven calamity beckoning Immortal Gu!

At the next moment, the sovereign blessed land's entrance opened.

First, spring dawn jade orioles were sent out of the entrance by a formless force, next, one by one, the giant disaster blazing trees were dragged out without managing to put up resistance!

They were unwilling, they were furious.

The sky was rumbling with thunder, heaven's will was furious too.

But it was no use!

Two hours later, the third earthly calamity ended.

Fang Yuan collected his immortal aperture, appearing in the northern icy plain.

Chu Du obtained quite a bit of Reckless Savage's true meaning, he cried out with an excited tone: "Walking on a long road for countless years, today I obtain the blessing of azure clouds. Flying above rivers and lakes on these clouds, nothing can obstruct my view of this world."

His voice resounded over the surroundings, the disposition of the Domination Immortal was fully emanated.

“May I ask you for your name?” Chu Du greeted Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “Obstacles and difficulties fill this road, life and death matters little against calamities and tribulations. My body flies like willows with the wind, regardless of wind or mud I still fly free.”

After pausing, he returned the greeting to Chu Du, saying plainly: “I am Liu Guan Yi.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1114: Obtaining One of Two True Inheritances

Time passed quickly, several days went by.

Lang Ya blessed land, inside a cloud city.

Fang Yuan was sitting in his secret room, cultivating.

Using connecting heaven Gu, his divine sense communicated with a certain female Gu Immortal’s will in treasure yellow heaven.

“Your pill azure incense is of lower quality than Gu Immortal Xi Zi, the price should be cheaper.” Fang Yuan bargained.

But that female Gu Immortal was not like Fang Yuan, who used his divine sense to conduct the deal.

She had left her will in treasure yellow heaven, to manage transactions with goods.

And unfortunately, this was a resolute will, it was obstinate in nature, it would not give in.

As expected, the female immortal rejected with no hesitation at all: “The price is like this, buy it if you want, it is up to you!”

Fang Yuan was not giving up yet, he continued: “Will you reconsider? I am buying in bulk.”

The resolute will was obstinate, it did not agree.

Fang Yuan was a little annoyed.

These last days, when developing the sovereign immortal aperture, he had to trade in treasure yellow heaven, to sell his own resources and buy all sorts of resources.

But after the third earthly calamity, he felt that his transactions were not going smoothly.

The female immortal’s resolute will was one of them.

But this was quite a good situation already.

Fang Yuan had been encountering this recently: Gu Immortals would come in and raise prices with ill intent, or he might see some shortage of certain materials, after rank eight Gu Immortal experts bulk purchase everything.

“Even though I have Dog Shit Luck’s protection, in the third earthly calamity, the giant disaster blazing tree destroyed a lot of my good luck.”

Thinking about his third earthly calamity, Fang Yuan sighed.

“If I did not think about it carefully and decided to work together with Chu Du before the third earthly calamity, I would have been done for. Even if I passed the tribulation, I would be heavily injured and stuck with bad luck. Currently, I am only facing some small obstacles, they are of no real concern to my cultivation.”

Fang Yuan quickly gathered his thoughts, his divine sense continued to negotiate with the female immortal in treasure yellow heaven.

Since she did not agree to lower prices, Fang Yuan could only accept this.

“I will buy your pill azure incense.”

The female immortal’s resolute will was stunned.

Fang Yuan was making a huge purchase.

He had to pay almost ten thousand immortal essence stones in this deal!

But Fang Yuan was not shaken.

With his accumulation from before, he was extremely affluent. Even though the third earthly calamity expended a lot of his green grape immortal essence, he could still afford ten thousand immortal essence stones.

After buying the pill azure incense, Fang Yuan retrieved his divine sense, no longer staying in treasure yellow heaven.

After inspecting it, he ensured that the pill azure incense had no problems, transporting them into his sovereign immortal aperture.

His consciousness quickly entered his immortal aperture.

The sovereign immortal aperture was split into five regions and nine heavens, Fang Yuan placed strength path immortal zombies in all the different areas.

Soon, one strength path immortal zombie flew over under his manipulation, using Gu worms to store the pill azure incense.

There was no choice, his sovereign immortal aperture was too huge, he could only use these strength path immortal zombies as laborers.

Every time he was in this situation, Fang Yuan thought of Hu Immortal land spirit and Star Form land spirit, if he had a land spirit, the job could be handled by them, he did not have to waste so much time on this.

The land spirit was basically the steward of the blessed land.

They were very convenient to have.

But it was a pity, Fang Yuan had never heard of any land spirits appearing in an immortal aperture before the Gu Immortal dies.

This pill azure incense resembled jade smoke, it constantly blew around, creating a hazy area.

Fang Yuan placed all of the pill azure incense into Mini Azure Heaven, causing this huge area to become more misty.

Even though the strength path immortal zombie could not smell anything, the pill azure incense was very fragrant, it was very amazing, it had the smell of ink and grass, extremely elegant and long lasting.

After placing the pill azure incense, Fang Yuan set up some Gu formations.

These Gu formations were made with mortal Gu, their only use was to keep the pill azure incense within a certain area, preventing it from dispersing away.

“I accumulated so much now, it is enough to feed change soul Immortal Gu three times.” Fang Yuan was satisfied.

The pill azure incense would not renew itself, when he used it, it was gone for good.

If he had to produce pill azure incense himself, it would be troublesome.

Pill azure incense grew in places with primeval essence as well as pill crane groups, azure pine forests, ink bamboo forests and herb incense Gu. These four things, including beasts, plants, and Gu, were needed, and each of them had to be of a certain quantity, otherwise they could not produce pill azure incense.

And this exact amount was a trade secret.

Gu Immortals who sold pill azure incense had a firm grasp of this secret, they prevented the secret from leaking.

At this point, Fang Yuan could only temporarily store the pill azure incense.

Pill azure incense was the food that change soul Immortal Gu ate, but the good thing was, it was widely sold in treasure yellow heaven. Fang Yuan had accumulated a lot of it now, it could last for some time.

After more inspections, Fang Yuan modified the Gu formation, he took a final look before leaving, only to see that Mini Azure Heaven had a small area of thick azure spots, it was different from before.

Even though Fang Yuan placed great emphasis on developing his immortal aperture, on the whole, the sovereign immortal aperture was still very barren.

The point was, the sovereign immortal aperture’s space was simply too big!

Fang Yuan placed so many resources inside, if it were the normal aperture of any other Gu Immortal, it would be filled already.

Speaking of which, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture had quite a lot of dao marks, but in influencing such a huge area of space, the dao marks’ effect was very small.

Fang Yuan retrieved the divine sense inside Mini Azure Heaven.

The pill azure incense was already placed, the development of Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture had reached a certain stage.

Before this, Fang Yuan had already bought several batches of resources, he settled the feeding requirements of Sword Eyebrows, Wave Sword, Flying Sword, and the other rank seven Immortal Gu.

“Rank eight Immortal Gu and rank seven Immortal Gu already have their food. Now, the development of my immortal aperture should be to resolve the feeding requirements of my rank six Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan assessed.

The first criteria of development for a Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture was to be self sufficient in feeding one’s own Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan was a strength path immortal zombie previously, his immortal aperture was dead, he did not follow this rule.

After reviving, he went steadily and surely, settling the feeding requirements of the rank eight and seven Immortal Gu to some degree.

Next were the rank six Immortal Gu.

There was a need to say, Fang Yuan simply had too many Immortal Gu.

It was a shocking quantity!

But there was no choice, Fang Yuan had to raise so many Immortal Gu, not only to resist the tribulations as well as heaven’s will, but also against other Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan’s circumstances were bad.

In the past, he had Shadow Sect, which concealed him from deductions. But after the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, this protection was gone, Heavenly Court placed his name on the Demon Judgment Board, they were determined to kill him. Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals had deep hatred towards him, because Fang Yuan destroyed Imperial Court blessed land and Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, this was something that created more enmity than digging the graves of these Huang Jin bloodline tribes.

The other Eastern Sea, Southern Border, and Western Desert Gu Immortals were all after the luck path true inheritance. Even though Fang Yuan did not obtain the true inheritance of all living being’s luck, nobody would believe him if he said it.

All in all, Fang Yuan’s identity could not be exposed, a lot of Gu Immortals were trying to find him.

Earlier, during the battle of Hei tribe, Hei tribe Gu Immortals had worked with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu to try and ambush Fang Yuan, in the end, because he was vigilant, he did not go to Iron Eagle blessed land and escaped. Of course, Fang Yuan did not know this currently.

Thus, Fang Yuan traveled outside using a fake name — Liu Guan Yi.

If he said his true identity, Chu Du’s attitude might have been completely different!

Currently, Fang Yuan had worked together with Chu Du.

Half a month ago, when treasure yellow heaven opened, Fang Yuan received Chu Du’s letter.

In the letter, Chu Du stated the situation clearly, he informed Fang Yuan that flying sword Immortal Gu had an information path inheritance’s clues!

At that moment, Fang Yuan was enticed.

Earlier, he was still thinking about the benefits of information path.

With strong information path methods, he could set agreements with others and not be afraid of them being broken. He could also secretly remove the alliance agreement that was on him, he could easily betray or break his word without any restraints.

He could even collect intel and make wiser decisions after knowing more details.

Information path and wisdom path were complementary.

Information path searched for information, while wisdom path used this information to deduce, they assisted each other.

The information path inheritance insignia on flying sword Immortal Gu was incredible, even the wisdom path Gu Immortal Tian Xia Xin was interested and wanted it from Chu Du.

Chu Du had told Fang Yuan about this situation. He wanted Fang Yuan to know about the value of the true inheritance, so that he could change his mind.

Fang Yuan thought about it and decided to deal with Chu Du.

He agreed to let Chu Du get Reckless Savage’s true meaning, but Chu Du had to compensate him.

After the battle of Hei tribe, Chu Du snatched the thirteenth eagle nest under Fang Yuan’s guidance.

Days after that, he and Fang Yuan met in Northern Plains secretly, making a transaction for both sides.

Fang Yuan obtained flying sword Immortal Gu and the eagle nest, while lending out calamity beckoning Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan could not give the immortal tribulation tempering aperture method to Chu Du. Even though this was an immortal killer move, and Immortal Gu were unique, but Chu Du could use other Immortal Gu in place of these.

Different Gu worms could produce similar immortal killer moves after all.

Chu Du was a powerful rank seven expert after all, his reputation made him a legendary figure in the current Northern Plains!

With his help, Fang Yuan successfully passed the third earthly calamity.

In the first two times, he was gravely injured, the situation was too dangerous. But in this third earthly calamity, he only suffered some setbacks, the biggest problems were resolved by Chu Du.

Calamity beckoning Immortal Gu was simply too incredible.

No wonder Mo Yao wanted to use this Immortal Gu to help her lover Bo Qing undergo tribulation.

But eventually, she failed.

Calamity beckoning Immortal Gu was only rank seven, but Bo Qing was undergoing the myriad tribulation that would lead him to rank nine!

Fang Yuan did not want to seek the information path true inheritance with clues on flying sword Immortal Gu yet.

The turbulent flow sea area was a problematic place, it was easy to get lost, and many Gu Immortals often traveled in it.

Fang Yuan placed his attention on the eagle nest.

The thirteenth eagle nest in Iron Eagle blessed land was usually concealed, it only appeared when Iron Eagle blessed land was near the point of breaking apart.

Inside this nest, there were clues to Hei Fan’s true inheritance.

Fang Yuan had explored it for some time, he had some gains!

Compared to the information path true inheritance, the Hei Fan true inheritance, which could delay the time in his immortal aperture, was far more useful and important.

Fang Yuan had decided: While he still had this period of free time after undergoing tribulation, he was going to obtain Hei Fan’s true inheritance!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1115: Opening Heavenly Crystal Eagle Nest

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Purple Heaven.

A faint purple light was shining in the haziness.

In the vast sky, there was a floating eagle nest.

This eagle nest was like a three-storey building, there were no doors or windows, it was like a huge crystal.

A type of translucent crystal, twice as thick as a human’s forearm, interlinked with itself, forming this tight eagle nest that had the same color throughout.

This crystal was extraordinary.

Fang Yuan had recognized that this was heavenly crystal, a rank eight immortal material!

Heavenly crystal came from the sky, it was very light and could float in the sky, it would never fall to the ground unless there were external forces.

Regardless of what was inside the eagle nest, just the outer nest itself contained five hundred kilograms of heavenly crystals! Just this heavenly crystal alone had immense value.

Evidently, this eagle nest was the thirteenth eagle nest in Iron Eagle blessed land.

Its value surpassed the sum of all the other eagle nests, firmly holding the highest position.

After Fang Yuan and Chu Du collaborated, Chu Du went to Iron Eagle blessed land

and at the final moment of Hei tribe’s battle, he displayed great strength and took this eagle nest.

However, before Chu Du left the battlefield, Hei tribe’s first supreme elder shouted and let all of the immortals know that the thirteenth eagle nest had clues to Hei Fan’s true inheritance!

This was a problem for Fang Yuan.

After Chu Du knew this, he renegotiated with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan knew he had to concede.

Flying sword Immortal Gu, the Eastern Sea information path true inheritance, and this thirteenth eagle nest, as well as Hei Fan’s true inheritance, they had a lot of value when put together!

Even though Chu Du was solely a strength path cultivator, that did not mean he could not sell these for a good price.

Thankfully, Chu Du was firmly set on Fang Yuan’s tribulation method.

Fang Yuan exploited this to deepen his cooperation with Chu Du, he spent a lot of effort and much discussion to barely reach an agreement.

Chu Du would use Calamity Beckoning to get Reckless Savage’s true meaning from Fang Yuan. In the future, he will take thirty percent of Fang Yuan’s gains from these two true inheritances.

“Chu Du is a normal Gu Immortal, he does not want to cultivate information path and time path on the side, thus, he has little interest towards the two true inheritances.”

“Unlike me, I can cultivate all paths, any true inheritance can be used for my own cultivation!”

“Even so, I really admire his resolute decision, he can give up when needed to. Northern Plains’ Domination Immortal, he is truly formidable, his title is well deserved!”

Fang Yuan inspected the eagle nest as he gathered his thoughts.

He and Chu Du were allies in terms of benefits. They had little relationship, they were just making use of each other.

Against Chu Du, Fang Yuan felt quite wary.

He knew that Chu Du was not giving up, he still wanted the immortal tribulation tempering aperture method.

Chu Du had brains and brawn, he was not a ‘stupid’ Domination Immortal.

His brawn allowed him to singlehandedly cause trouble to the Huang Jin super force, Liu tribe. During the battle of Hei tribe, he caused the immortals present to be unable to attack.

His mind was not to be underestimated. After Liu tribe’s battle, he rarely appeared, he nurtured his disciples in secret, helping them become immortals, luring out Reckless Savage’s true meaning. During the negotiation with Fang Yuan, his eloquence made Fang Yuan recognize this person’s shrewdness and wisdom.

Domination Immortal had grand ambitions, how could he be satisfied with just Calamity Beckoning?

And the bigger worry for Fang Yuan was, Chu Du seemed to have guessed his true identity.

During the third earthly calamity, which was their first collaboration, the latter two lines of his poem were ‘flying above rivers and lakes on these clouds, nothing can obstruct my view of this world’.

Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan 1 .

Vaguely, it seemed like he was pointing out Fang Yuan’s true identity.

Of course, he could be overthinking it.

But many things had happened, Fang Yuan would rather be overly vigilant than miss out any important details.

Chu Du’s appearance was very suspicious, during the first earthly calamity, he almost took Fang Yuan’s life!

Fang Yuan was suspicious: Chu Du was influenced by heaven’s will and was a part of a plot, the ‘human calamity’ against Fang Yuan.

Cooperating with a person like this was simply ‘asking favors from a tiger’.

Thus, during the first cooperation, after the third earthly calamity was over, Fang Yuan did not talk much to him, he quickly left.

Chu Du let Fang Yuan leave without saying anything.

First, calamity beckoning Immortal Gu was in his hands. Second, he and Fang Yuan had an alliance agreement. The information path Immortal Gu used was borrowed from other Gu Immortals. Third, he could not catch Fang Yuan in terms of speed!

With Chu Du’s strength and skill, he had a wide network and knew many people.

Fang Yuan considered one point as well. To guard against heaven’s will, Fang Yuan gave Chu Du a lot of self will Gu. At least, Fang Yuan did not need to worry that heaven’s will would cause any negative influence on Chu Du.

“I need to be very careful when cooperating with Chu Du, if I make a mistake, it would lead to a disastrous end!” Fang Yuan alerted himself mentally, he placed his attention on the strength path immortal zombie again.

He controlled a strength path immortal zombie and slowly got closer to the heavenly crystal eagle nest.

These last days, he had been using investigative methods and collecting clues, looking into Hei Cheng’s memories, to aid with his deductions.

“If I am not wrong, this time...”

Fang Yuan had confidence as he used his Immortal Gu.

The strength path immortal zombie which got close to the heavenly crystal eagle nest went through a complete transformation. It was originally emanating death energy, but in a moment, it became alive, turning into Hei Cheng, indiscernible from the real one.

‘Hei Cheng’ gradually got close to the heavenly crystal eagle nest, placing his hand on the eagle nest.

Fang Yuan’s divine sense continued to explore, entering the heavenly crystal eagle nest.

At the same time, Gu worms flew out, coiling around ‘Hei Cheng’ as they flew in a spiral.

Refinement path killer moves were used one after another, impacting on the heavenly crystal eagle nest.

These refinement path killer moves were all mortal killer moves, they were modified by Hei Fan in the past, passing down for generations. Before Hei Fan died, he instructed his descendants that any new member of Hei tribe who became an immortal must learn these refinement path methods.

After several generations of research by Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals, they gradually understood: These refinement path killer moves were the key to opening the heavenly crystal eagle nest.

Many Hei tribe Gu Immortals had used the refinement path killer moves on the heavenly crystal eagle nest in order to get Hei Fan’s true inheritance.

Of course, they all failed.

Because they lacked the most critical element — attitude Gu!

In these refinement path killer moves, there was a crucial step that needed the aura of attitude Gu to activate.

This step obstructed generations of Hei tribe Gu Immortals, nobody could inherit Hei Fan’s true inheritance.

Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals were not fools, after understanding this, they immediately went to search for attitude Gu.

After a lot of effort by generations of Hei tribe Gu Immortals, they finally found some clues, they gained a breakthrough in this.

By the current generation, there was Su Xian’s Night Elopement, she became Hei Cheng’s wife, in the end, she joined Hei tribe as an external supreme elder.

Her surname was not Hei, she could not learn about deep secrets like Hei Fan’s true inheritance.

But she came with a motive, with her sister Blazing Heaven Demoness’ help, she stole the information about Hei Fan’s true inheritance that generations of Hei tribe immortals had accumulated.

Using these results, she found some suspicious points.

But when she was close to success, there was a change in the situation. Hei Cheng killed Su Xian Er, Fairy Li Shan had a falling out with Blazing Heaven Demoness as a result, Su Xian Er left behind the crucial clues as well as a lot of familial emotion and immortal essence to her daughter, Hei Lou Lan.

After becoming an immortal, Hei Lou Lan used these clues to get back the attitude Gu that had been lost in the northern icy plain for many years!

But after some twists and turns, this Immortal Gu ended up in Fang Yuan’s hands, being heavily used by him.

These last days, Fang Yuan had been familiarizing himself with the refinement path killer move, he even disguised himself to ensure that there were no issues.

Refinement path killer moves were used, turning into flames and lightning, attacking the heavenly crystal eagle nest. Each hit caused the heavenly crystal eagle nest to shake slightly, giving off a clear sound.

Gradually, the heavenly crystal eagle nest’s movements became larger, and the sounds it made became louder, until it resounded in the sky.

“The final blow!”

Fang Yuan was nervous.

With his skillful method, he drew a trace of attitude Gu’s aura and fused it into a translucent ripple as it flew towards the heavenly crystal eagle nest.

The ripple fused into the heavenly crystal eagle nest, vanishing immediately.

The heavenly crystal eagle nest continued to shake, light was emitting from within it. Gradually, the entire heavenly crystal eagle nest started shining in nine colors.

Red, orange, yellow, green, azure, blue, purple, white, black!

Nine colors filled the world, the light was dazzling and forced ‘Hei Cheng’ to retreat to a distance.

Ding ding ding...

As the light faded, the sound of chimes could be heard in the sky.

In front of ‘Hei Cheng’, this heavenly crystal eagle nest that had been closed for years finally opened itself!

Each of the pillars of heavenly crystal started moving and unraveling, making Fang Yuan think of a Rubik’s cube. The nine colored heavenly crystal weaved and moved, eventually, an entrance was formed on the surface of the heavenly crystal eagle nest. The entire process was fluid and dazzling, he subconsciously held his breath from the incredible sight.

“I understand!” Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, he understood the method that Hei Fan used.

“The heavenly crystals were originally colorless and translucent, but they no longer are now!”

“These heavenly crystals have nine colors, they should come from the respective immemorial nine heavens. But Hei Fan fused them together, using these rank eight immemorial immortal materials through refinement path methods. He caused their colors to fade away, so that they looked like a whole entity.”

“Before Hei Fan died, he left behind some refinement path methods. Using these methods, one could reverse refine these heavenly crystals, allowing them to regain their original appearance, and open up the eagle nest from the inside.”

Thinking about this, Fang Yuan’s assessment of the heavenly crystals’ value increased again.

Heavenly crystals were an immortal material that could be produced naturally in grotto-heavens with deep foundations, other than in the immemorial nine heavens.

Originally, Fang Yuan thought that these heavenly crystals were formed in Hei Fan grotto-heaven. But in fact, they came from the immemorial nine heavens.

They had higher value as a result.

Because there were only two heavens left from the immemorial nine heavens, the other seven were destroyed already.

In the past, when Hei Fan searched for these heavenly crystals from the immemorial nine heavens, he definitely spent a lot of effort. Right now, it was getting harder for Gu Immortals to get these heavenly crystals, the only source was the scattered fragment worlds of the immemorial nine heavens that were hidden in the five regions.

“Hei Fan true inheritance, here I come.” Fang Yuan restrained his excitement as he controlled ‘Hei Cheng’, carefully entering the eagle nest.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1116: A Dead Egg

Fang Yuan controlled ‘Hei Cheng’, slowly getting into the eagle nest.

Light in nine colors shone on ‘Hei Cheng”s face interchangeably.

His vision was covered by heavenly crystals, it was a grand and beautiful scene, like something out of a dream or illusion.

The eagle nest was not big, it was like a small room.

At the center of the room, there was a huge egg, other than that, there was nothing else.

‘Hei Cheng’ glanced at it.

His gaze was focused on this egg.

This egg was the height of a young man, it was oval shaped and had a glass-like shell, it was reflecting the light of the nine colors, it was extremely beautiful.

But Fang Yuan sensed acutely that this egg was covered in death energy, it was devoid of life.

Sensing this, he no longer cared about it, he placed his attention on the other aspects.

He searched and explored, after some hours, other than the heavenly crystals, he had no other gains.

“How can this be? Hei Fan was a time path great expert, how can the true inheritance that he left behind only have one empty heavenly crystal eagle nest? Where are his time path Immortal Gu? Where are his immortal killer moves?”

Fang Yuan thought quickly, soon, he placed his attention on the dead egg again.

“Perhaps to find Hei Fan’s true inheritance, that dead egg is the key!”

Fang Yuan guessed.

At this stage, the memories that he had obtained from Hei Cheng were no longer useful. Fang Yuan had surpassed the generations of Hei tribe Gu Immortals, he was at a step that they had never reached before.

To obtain Hei Fan’s true inheritance, Fang Yuan had to rely on himself.

‘Hei Cheng’ walked around the dead egg, using his Gu worms to observe and research it.

A moment later, Fang Yuan confirmed again that this was a dead egg.

An absolutely dead egg.

There was no disguise.

This way, Fang Yuan’s guess that Hei Fan’s true inheritance was hidden inside the egg shell was thwarted.

“Don’t tell me, Hei Fan’s true inheritance has already been stolen by someone. The Immortal Gu stored here are taken away already? I am not the first person in here?” Fang Yuan could not help but think.

This was not impossible.

This world had too many secrets!

After Fang Yuan’s secret transactions with Sixth Hair, he did not dare to underestimate anyone.

Even though he was a transmigrator, in this world, he was not the only one. There already was one who did well enough in life to become a rank nine venerable.

Righteous path, demonic path, lone cultivators, countless elites and geniuses, heroes and conquerors, throughout history, they were shining like brilliant stars in the sky.

Fang Yuan was just one of the stars.

Fang Yuan’s guess was not random, he had his evidence.

According to the intel obtained from Hei Cheng, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals had realized that attitude Gu was the key. While searching for attitude Gu, they also researched their methods, replicating attitude Gu’s aura, attempting to ‘deceive’ the heavenly crystal eagle nest to open.

In Hei Cheng’s memories, Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals did not succeed.

But that did not mean that nobody had succeeded!

A Gu Immortal might have secretly opened the heavenly crystal eagle nest, taking Hei Fan’s true inheritance for themselves, while nobody knew.

And this might not even be a Hei tribe Gu Immortal.

This example was very common throughout history.

The most famous example was Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

This person was the ultimate thief, in his life, he stole many Gu Immortals' true inheritances, countless forces hated him greatly.

Fang Yuan inspected it a few times over, there was indeed nothing else.

With his current methods and knowledge, if he found nothing, there was likely no Hei Fan true inheritance.

Fang Yuan felt very disappointed.

He was banking on Hei Fan's true inheritance to slow the rate of time in his immortal aperture.

Of course, he had Chu Du's help now, he did not need it temporarily.

But what about the future?

If one did not have huge worries, they would worry about smaller things.

Cooperating with Chu Du was dangerous, he was asking for favors from a tiger, heaven's will would also seek to instigate him.

Even if Fang Yuan did not need it now, with this assurance, he could have many ways out in the future if he encountered trouble.

"Even if there is no Hei Fan true inheritance, this heavenly crystal eagle nest is an entire nest of rank eight immortal materials, it has great value."

In fact, other than the Immortal Gu in Fang Yuan's immortal aperture, all of his other resources accumulated could not match half the value of the heavenly crystal eagle nest!

Of course, this was excluding Dang Hun Mountain. Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley were in Lang Ya blessed land, and the trade of guts Gu was solely handled by Lang Ya Sect now. He only took his share of the profits monthly.

"However, what is this dead egg? I actually could not recognize it using my own knowledge. If Hei Fan's true inheritance is still around, this dead egg might be the clue that Hei Fan purposely left behind."

Even though hope was slim, Fang Yuan was intending to follow this route and investigate.

He first went to treasure yellow heaven, because cultivation experience and knowledge was also sold here.

Among which, there were desolate beast encyclopedias, maps of Southern Border, books on ancient desolate plants.

Fang Yuan's divine sense looked around, choosing carefully, he bought some and looked at them.

Last time, he spent nearly ten thousand immortal essence stones to buy a large amount of pill azure incense. But this month's profits were not here yet, his funds were low.

But after seeing these, even though Fang Yuan learned something, he did not manage to find information regarding this mysterious dead egg.

Fang Yuan was not disappointed, instead he was a little happy.

The more mysterious this dead egg was, the deeper its origin, and the greater hope he had regarding the clues to Hei Fan’s true inheritance.

“This dead egg is very likely to be an immemorial desolate beast’s egg!” Fang Yuan’s readings were not without result.

But in this case, the knowledge from treasure yellow heaven was basically useless.

Because this knowledge were mostly limited to rank six and seven.

Immemorial desolate beasts had rank eight battle strength, but rank eight Gu Immortals would not sell their knowledge in treasure yellow heaven. They had no lack of such money. In any case, most Gu Immortals would not buy them, because with their level, they could not interact with immemorial desolate beasts.

In the current world, most immemorial desolate beasts were inside white heaven and black heaven. Other than that, they were in the forbidden or catastrophic areas in the five regions, like the Northern Plains ten great fierce areas, or places like Earth Trench and Earth Abyss.

“Should I ask directly in treasure yellow heaven, putting up a high price for the origins of this egg?” Fang Yuan thought about it and denied this idea.

It was too eye-catching.

Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals were not all dead.

Wisdom path Gu Immortals could easily deduce some information.

This was not good for Fang Yuan.

If rank eight Gu Immortals were drawn to him, they would be a problem.

Fang Yuan could not afford to face these existences yet.

He did not feel much dejection from treasure yellow heaven’s uselessness, because he knew that he had someone who could help him with this problem.

That was Lang Ya land spirit!

Lang Ya land spirit was the obsession of Long Hair Ancestor, he had been a rank eight Gu Immortal, a refinement path supreme grandmaster, he was famous throughout history and had great reputation.

Which paths would have Gu Immortals with the widest knowledge?

Wisdom path, information path, and refinement path.

Wisdom path Gu Immortals could deduce secrets, information path Gu Immortals could search and find intel, while refinement path Gu Immortals had to refine Gu, they needed to know lots of immortal materials.

As one of the greatest refinement path experts in history, Long Hair Ancestor’s knowledge was undeniably immense.

Fang Yuan sought help from Lang Ya land spirit.

This was not a smooth process, Fang Yuan was troubled by Lang Ya land spirit’s attitude.

Recently, Lang Ya Sect was very unhappy with Fang Yuan, they felt that he was cultivating for himself and did not contribute to the sect. Now, Lang Ya Sect was developing in Tai Qiu, the falling star hound was causing them problems, their progress was minimal as a result.

“Fang Yuan, if you kill the falling star hound, I will let you read such books in our inventory. If you want to exchange for it, use a hundred contribution points.” Lang Ya land spirit said coldly with a low tone.

Fang Yuan smiled: “I will exchange for it.”

A hundred contribution points was almost all that he had now.

However, even so, Fang Yuan wanted to exchange for it, he did not plan to go to Tai Qiu.

Lang Ya land spirit snorted, he was about to speak again, but Fang Yuan said: “First supreme elder is truly impartial, handling matters according to sect rules. Lang Ya Sect’s rise is inevitable.”

Lang Ya land spirit was so angry his chest was puffing, his hair stood on ends as he breathed roughly, he contained his anger: “I heard that you have a deep relationship with Twelfth Hair, I remember this child had praised you before. Recently, he challenged the falling star hound, he suffered great injuries and his desolate beasts all died, he is very dejected. Are you going to visit him?”

“Thank you for the concern, first supreme elder.” Fang Yuan had a heavy and sorrowful face, as if the one injured was not Twelfth Hair but himself.

“After exchanging for the books, I will go to Twelfth Hair.” Fang Yuan assured.

Lang Ya land spirit was helpless, he could not do anything to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan got what he wanted, going to Twelfth Hair’s cloud city along the way. But he did not meet with Twelfth Hair in person, a mortal Gu Master said: “My master is unwilling to meet guests, please go back.”

Fang Yuan was not welcomed, but he did not leave, he asked with concern.

However, the attitude of this mortal Gu Master was very cold, Fang Yuan could not get any results, he had to leave ‘helplessly’.

If not for the land spirit’s awareness of matters in the blessed land, Fang Yuan would not even put up this show.

He knew clearly, how could a mortal hairy man Gu Master act like this to a Gu Immortal? Evidently, he was backed by a hairy man Gu Immortal. And this person was none other than Twelfth Hair, who held a grudge against Fang Yuan.

“My relationship with Lang Ya Sect has reached this stage... of course, a lot of the ‘credit’ goes to Sixth Hair. Lang Ya Sect has a lot of value, I need to restore and maintain a good relationship with it in the future, but that is not an urgent matter.”

Returning to his own cloud city, he checked the information and was not disappointed.

“So this egg is the upper extreme heavenly eagle!”

Fang Yuan’s heart shook.

Upper extreme heavenly eagles were immemorial desolate beasts with rank eight battle strength!

After his surprise, Fang Yuan was filled with joy.

He realized: his hard work was not in vain. If this was an egg of the upper extreme heavenly eagle, then Hei Fan’s true inheritance was not taken away yet, it was waiting for him!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1117: Upper Extreme Heavenly Eagle

Upper extreme heavenly eagle.

Fang Yuan had known about this immemorial desolate beast since long ago, but he did not know what its egg looked like.

Upper extreme heavenly eagles were space path immemorial desolate beasts, a mature adult upper extreme heavenly eagle could freely travel in the immemorial nine heavens or in grotto-heavens.

This ability was amazing.

Outside of the immemorial nine heavens, there were extremely thick heavenly wind qi walls. Grotto-heavens were situated in the sky, if they did not open up, it was hard to detect them from the outside world.

But as long as the upper extreme heavenly eagle had gone to a place before, it could follow its instincts and travel through space, returning to a former location.

It was an immemorial desolate beast with rank eight battle strength, it could fly extremely fast. Hei Fan could obtain an egg of the upper extreme heavenly eagle, he must have paid an extremely high price if it was not by chance.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle’s only weakness was its lifespan.

It only had eighty years of lifespan.

Ordinary mortals had about a hundred years of lifespan.

The great immemorial desolate beast, upper extreme heavenly eagle, had less lifespan than even a mortal, it was truly astounding. Other immemorial desolate beasts often had hundreds of thousands of years to live, the upper extreme heavenly eagle could not compare to them.

However, it had the ability to prolong its life.

When it died of old age, it would produce an egg.

Inside this egg, there would be all of its memories as well as the accumulated space path dao marks over its entire life.

When the chick breaks out of the shell, the upper extreme heavenly eagle would live another life, it would grow up again, but with its previous life’s memories and dao mark accumulation. Without any unexpected mishaps, the upper extreme heavenly eagle would only become stronger.

Of course, when it is an egg or eagle chick, the upper extreme heavenly eagle would be at its weakest.

After understanding this, Fang Yuan had a bold guess: “This upper extreme heavenly eagle’s egg must have been left behind by Hei Fan!”

Why did he leave behind this egg?

Evidently, the upper extreme heavenly eagle had gone to Hei Fan grotto-heaven before. It was the key to entering it.

Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals had always been searching for the grotto-heaven that Hei Fan had left behind. But in Hei Cheng’s memories, they had no gains.

“Hei Fan’s true inheritance must be inside his own grotto-heaven. This is not strange, because if he did not have food path methods, it would be best to keep all of his Immortal Gu inside the grotto-heaven and sustain their own feeding, that has most assurance.”

“And Hei Fan grotto-heaven has no tribulations. According to Hei Cheng’s memories, Hei Fan had obtained a certain fragment of the immemorial nine heavens before his death. If I am not wrong, he must have fused this fragment of the immemorial nine heavens into his immortal aperture before dying.”

“It is a pity, even though he has no tribulations, he had no lifespan Gu, his lifespan extension methods were also at their limits, he could only die.”

“But why is the heavenly eagle egg inside the eagle nest dead?”

Fang Yuan was faced with a difficult question.

There were two answers.

One was that the heavenly eagle egg had naturally died. Hei Fan left the living egg behind, preventing it from hatching, he used the heavenly crystal eagle nest to create an arrangement. But because nobody came to inherit it after a long time, the heavenly crystal eagle nest was not opened, the egg died eventually after a long time.

The second possibility was that the heavenly eagle egg had no life force left because Hei Fan did it. This egg was not truly dead, it needed a special method to unseal it.

If it was the first possibility, Fang Yuan naturally could not obtain any benefits. He could only get a heavenly crystal eagle nest and a dead immemorial egg. They had great value in themselves but that was all.

From Fang Yuan’s perspective, he would naturally prefer the second possibility.

But if that was the case, what was the special method that could unseal the egg?

“Assuming the second case, how can I unseal this dead egg, to let it regain life force and even hatch?” Fang Yuan fell into deep thought.

He thought for a long time, but there were no answers.

It was not strange.

This egg was quite literally dead. If not for that, Fang Yuan would not have confirmed this at the start so easily.

“If I were Hei Fan, I would definitely leave behind clues to resolve this problem after setting up this dead egg, so that descendants could inherit this.”

Fang Yuan had a flash of inspiration.

He realized he had subconsciously ignored something.

It was the refinement path methods that Hei Fan had once modified and left behind on purpose.

“I used these methods to open the heavenly crystal eagle nest. If I use these methods again, will it work on the dead egg?” Fang Yuan had a bold assumption.

But he did not act yet.

Because this was just a hypothesis, there was no proof or evidence backing it.

Fang Yuan was vigilant, he started using wisdom path methods, he went deep into analyzing these refinement path methods, placing focus on deducing them.

He quickly discovered something strange.

What was strange?

Some refinement path killer moves were very strangely modified. The original versions were better and had stronger effects than the newer versions.

Hei Fan’s modifications were simply going the reverse direction.

What was he trying to do?

Fang Yuan suddenly thought about some historical records regarding Hei Fan that were inside Hei Cheng’s memories.

Hei Fan was a rank eight Gu Immortal, during his later years, he liked to nurture juniors, but he often taught them: “When learning, you have to think for yourself, don’t just blindly follow and idolize your seniors’ experiences. Only by thinking for yourself and learning them can you go further on the path of a Gu Immortal.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan looked at the refinement path killer moves with new ideas.

He tried to remove the ‘failed modifications’ that Hei Fan did in those killer moves, he made a shocking discovery.

“So these refinement path killer moves are not failures, by combining them, they form a brand new killer move!”

“Hei Fan had purposely added in unnecessary steps in these refinement path killer moves, they are failures individually. But together, these parts can combine into a whole!”

What made Fang Yuan more surprised was that this new killer move was a type of blood path method.

The great rank eight time path Hei Fan, researching blood path?

This was not strange.

Ever since Blood Sea Ancestor appeared, blood path’s power was known to all. All the super forces restricted the growth of blood path, while researching it secretly themselves.

This was something happening even in Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, not to mention Northern Plains, a region with Gu Immortals that sought battle strength greatly.

Fang Yuan was much more confident in blood path than refinement path.

He was a blood path grandmaster! Blood path was his most used path in the past.

With some research, Fang Yuan realized: Hei Fan had purposely concealed this blood refinement killer move, it was to be used on the upper extreme heavenly eagle!

But this blood refinement killer move was not complete.

With Fang Yuan’s knowledge and blood path attainment, he could tell that this blood path killer move was not complete, it was only a portion.

Seeing this, Fang Yuan was not disappointed, instead his eyes were shining brightly.

“Hei Fan must have the complete blood refinement killer move, he used the first half to process this upper extreme heavenly eagle dead egg. He only left the other half to his descendants.”

“But he did not pass down this blood path killer move directly to his descendants, he used a unique method to conceal it.”

“His first motive must be to test his descendants, so that a skilled Gu Immortal who could think for themselves inherits this. The second reason was that blood path was notorious, if the great Hei Fan’s true inheritance used a blood path method, it would cause a huge commotion. Hei Fan did not want that to happen.”

Fang Yuan was scheming and shrewd, he could easily tell what Hei Fan was thinking in the past.

After clarifying this, he was even more assured that this upper extreme heavenly eagle was not truly dead, it was just processed by Hei Fan through a special method.

That made things easier!

Fang Yuan was no longer an immortal zombie, he could easily draw blood from his own body.

However, just as he was about to use blood refinement, he stopped his actions.

“So close! I almost failed to notice Hei Fan’s intention...” Fang Yuan’s forehead was filled with sweat.

Why did Hei Fan leave a blood path method for his descendants?

Wasn’t it really strange?

Everyone knew that Hei Fan was a time path great expert, at this level, he could easily use time path methods to leave his inheritance behind and imitate methods of other paths.

But he used blood path instead of his strongest time path, why was that?

There was only one possible reason, the blood path method could do something that time path could not.

What else could it be?

As a blood path grandmaster, Fang Yuan first thought of — bloodline recognition!

The inheritance that Hei Fan left behind was meant for Hei tribe descendants. The inheritance of a super force's Gu Immortal was usually kept to the clan or tribe itself, the first condition was to be blood related. Very few Gu Immortals would leave behind inheritances that could be obtained by others.

Attitude Gu, the refinement path method left behind for generations, they were just the first two precautions.

The blood refinement method that uses one's bloodline was the third.

"If the inheritor is not a Hei tribe descendant and does not have Hei tribe's bloodline, then blood refining this dead egg might cause a backlash. Or rather, the immemorial desolate beast upper extreme heavenly eagle that hatches would be the enemy of this Gu Immortal!"

Fang Yuan thought of this and felt even more sweat on his forehead.

Especially the last part, if he truly became enemies with an immemorial desolate beast, of rank eight battle strength, he would be in deep trouble!

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was very fast, Fang Yuan could not outrun it, he had weak defenses as well, he would definitely die.

"It seems that I can only use a proper bloodline to refine the egg." Fang Yuan wisely stopped.

Some days later.

In a part of the sovereign immortal aperture.

Hei Cheng's hair was a mess, he had a very tired and weak expression.

Fang Yuan manipulated the strength path immortal zombie, flying towards him.

Hei Cheng jolted like he was hit by lightning, his body shook as he shouted in fear and shock: "You, what do you want?!"

Earlier, Fang Yuan had soul searched him, forget about that. Now, he was using all sorts of methods to 'torture' Hei Cheng, he was truly in misery, he felt that he was better off dead.

Hei Cheng was Fang Yuan's captive, at this stage, he had already given up. His Gu Immortal demeanor was gone.

But he could not even bite his own tongue to suicide.

Fang Yuan had thought: Hei Cheng still had some value, even though Hei tribe was gone, Hei Lou Lan was alive.

Thus, Hei Cheng was in a state where he could neither die nor live in peace.

"Don't worry, this is likely to be the last time, I am confident of it." Fang Yuan manipulated the strength path immortal zombie, smiling as he got closer.

Hei Cheng was about to cry, he struggled intensely: "You say that every time, it is always the last time! No, no, no! Ah—!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1118: Future Rank Eight Battle Strength

Hei Cheng’s expression was distorted, he screamed in great agony.

Fang Yuan did not care, he continued to use his blood path killer move.

With blood asset Immortal Gu as the core, this blood path killer move was an immortal killer move!

Because of this power, Hei Cheng felt immense pain, blood from all over his body and even bone marrow were drained out, gathered into a lump.

Next, Fang Yuan controlled the strength path immortal zombie and swallowed it whole.

Hei Cheng was drained of much of his blood and fainted, his entire body was skin and bones, he had a pale expression, like he had died.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, several mortal Gu flew out entered Hei Cheng’s ears, going into his bloodstream and traveling.

These blood path mortal Gu were huge, when they traveled in Hei Cheng’s body, there were bumps over his body, as if rats were moving rapidly in him.

Soon, these ‘rats’ became smaller and smaller, Hei Cheng’s body started inflating, color was restored on his face. But he was exhausted mentally, as if he had just overcome a huge sickness.

He slowly opened his eyes, looking at the strength path immortal zombie, he muttered: “Spare me, spare me. I am willing to surrender, I will be loyal to you...”

Fang Yuan did not reply to him.

Hei Cheng had said this many times.

Fang Yuan did not care to have a subordinate like Hei Cheng.

Fang Yuan was already wary of the featherman Gu Immortal Zhou Zhong, not to mention Hei Cheng. With the outside situation as it was, Fang Yuan could only trust himself.

In fact, sometimes, he did not even trust himself.

After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Fang Yuan had lost his memories.

After knowing the secrets of heaven’s will and his rebirth, he realized that the fortuitous encounters that he remembered in his previous life were likely arrangements set by heaven’s will!

Right now, Fang Yuan’s focus was on manipulating the strength path immortal zombie.

After swallowing Hei Cheng’s blood, the strength path immortal zombie’s body shone with a thin layer of blood-red light.

Under Fang Yuan's expectant gaze, this blood-red light slowly faded, entering the strength path immortal zombie's body, turning into blood which those of Hei tribe's bloodline had.

"Success!" After several inspections, Fang Yuan was excited.

These last days, he had been preparing to refine the egg.

Disguising his bloodline was not a problem for Fang Yuan.

He was a blood path grandmaster, he had a deep foundation in his previous life.

But he had to take into account Hei Fan's blood refinement method, it was a bit troublesome. Fang Yuan had to deduce and modify it several times, after torturing Hei Cheng many times, he finally succeeded.

"With this blood, I still cannot use it on the egg. I need to integrate this blood path killer move into familiar face, so as to be certain!"

For the next ten days, Fang Yuan focused on deductions.

But he had high attainment levels, blood path and transformation path were both grandmaster. Ordinary Gu Immortals could not achieve this, but he completed it in less than half a month.

Looking at the time, a month had passed in total.

He was only about a month away from the fourth earthly calamity.

With everything ready now, Fang Yuan made good use of his time, immediately targeting the egg.

As he had expected, under the effect of the blood path killer move, the lifeless egg started to produce life force.

As more and more blood went in, this life force also grew stronger, and became more amiable with Fang Yuan.

Eight days and nights later, the shell cracked from inside, as a small bird came out.

This bird was newly hatched, but it was not small, it could stand at the height of a youngster.

The small eagle looked at the strength path immortal zombie that Fang Yuan had become, it had a warm gaze, affection could be seen from within its sharp eagle eyes. It was like a child seeing their parents.

"Come, come here." Fang Yuan manipulated the immortal zombie, saying.

The little eagle quickly jumped to the immortal zombie, looking at him with dark eyes that showed an innocent gaze without any wariness.

The immortal zombie stretched out its arm, patting the eagle's head.

There was only a layer of yellow feathers on the young eagle's head, it was very sparse, Fang Yuan could feel its scalp, it had a good feeling of warmth.

While patting it, the young eagle lowered its head without any resistance. Not just that, the eagle's eyes were shut, it opened its beak and chirped cutely, as if it was trying to get Fang Yuan's attention.

Fang Yuan could discern many things, he internally praised: "Hei Fan is amazing, he actually removed the memories of the upper extreme heavenly eagle from its previous life, only its space path dao mark foundation is left. If it had its memories, this upper extreme heavenly eagle, as an immemorial desolate beast, would be hard to control.”

“And this blood path killer move can actually enslave an immemorial desolate beast. No, enslave is not the word, the true effect is to make the immemorial desolate beast feel close to me, it is the sense of kinship, of being a close bloodline relative.”

“This way, it should not be hard to get it to carry me and find Hei Fan grotto-heaven.”

Just when he had that idea in his mind, the eagle chirped anxiously, its body was wavering unstably.

“Hungry?” Fang Yuan controlled the immortal zombie, pulling back his hand as he pointed at the heavenly crystal eagle nest: “Go eat!”

The upper extreme heavenly eagle’s food were heavenly crystals!

After getting permission, the little eagle chirped happily, it jumped over and pecked, causing a small piece of heavenly crystal to fall out.

The little eagle carried the heavenly crystal in its beak, it did not swallow it, instead, it turned to the strength path immortal zombie.

The strength path immortal zombie smiled at the little eagle, saying warmly: “Go eat.”

The little eagle understood, it raised its head and swallowed the small piece of heavenly crystal.

Next, it continued to eat.

The hard heavenly crystal broke apart like tofu inside its beak, Fang Yuan watched, slightly startled.

One could not look down on this bird, it was a genuine immemorial desolate beast — upper extreme heavenly eagle!

“This means, from now on, I control battle strength on the level of an immemorial desolate beast? No, it is too young, it cannot have such high battle strength.”

“It seems to understand my words, that must be Hei Fan’s doing. Since he can erase its memories, he can also make it learn human language.”

“However, there is a huge flaw!”

“I need to disguise my bloodline, so that the upper extreme heavenly eagle feels close to me. The real me would not do, I would even get attacked by it. After all, such immemorial desolate beasts are very prideful, they are naturally aggressive.”

Fang Yuan considered the other aspects.

For the next few days, Fang Yuan controlled the strength path immortal zombie, staying with the young eagle, watching it eat.

The young eagle did not eat all the time, it ate for a while before going to the strength path immortal zombie, snuggling up to it and sleeping.

It was extremely trusting of the strength path immortal zombie, it did not guard against it.

For the next few days, half of the heavenly crystal eagle nest was consumed.

This consumption speed gave Fang Yuan a headache.

In order to get an immemorial level battle strength, spending such immortal materials was needed. But the price of feeding it was truly very high.

The young eagle grew quickly.

It was the height of a youngster initially, but in a few days, it was as tall as Fang Yuan.

It stood on the ground, raising its head, it had a strong body and thick layer of feathers, it had sharp eagle eyes and dark sharp claws, when it scratched, heavenly crystals broke like thin paper.

The time was ripe, Fang Yuan was not going to wait any longer.

He recalled the strength path immortal zombie, taking back all of the Immortal Gu and mortal Gu in it, using familiar face on his own body.

The current familiar face had exceeded the original version, by adding in blood asset Immortal Gu and other mortal Gu.

This way, Fang Yuan could even disguise his bloodline.

Fang Yuan chose to leave Lang Ya blessed land, choosing a spot with nobody around, opening his immortal aperture and letting out the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

The young eagle saw Fang Yuan’s true body, it did not have any suspicions, coming over to peck at Fang Yuan’s palm lightly, it lowered its head, using its head to rub Fang Yuan’s shoulder, it had a very warm attitude.

Fang Yuan smiled, instructing the young eagle: “Quickly bring me to Hei Fan grotto-heaven, I need to inherit Hei Fan’s true inheritance.”

The young eagle went in a daze, it remembered a certain part of its memories, chirping loudly as it spread its wings.

Fang Yuan saw the chance and jumped onto the eagle’s back.

The eagle screeched, carrying Fang Yuan as it ascended, flying towards the southeast direction.

The surrounding air currents were wildly blowing past his ears.

Fang Yuan activated his Gu worms, sitting on the eagle’s back stably.

He was very satisfied with the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s speed, it was not inferior to sword escape Immortal Gu.

Most importantly, this upper extreme heavenly eagle was an infant eagle, it was far from maturity, it had yet to fully develop. A mature upper extreme heavenly eagle was huge, multiple times the size of a whale.

Fang Yuan also estimated: Its current battle strength had not reached rank eight yet, currently, it was at rank six level.

Even though it had a lot of space path dao marks, it did not have wild Gu. A major influence on desolate beasts and plants in their battle strength was their physical bodies. This was different from humans, humans had weak physiques, but desolate beasts had naturally powerful attack, defense, as well as recovery. Not to mention immemorial desolate beasts.

This was the first time Fang Yuan was interacting with the upper extreme heavenly eagle, his earlier assessment of it having rank eight battle strength upon hatching was wrong.

Even though he was disappointed, it was sure to grow into having rank eight battle strength in the future!

The upper extreme heavenly eagle traveled quickly, Fang Yuan sat on its back, once in a while, he fed it heavenly crystals.

During other times, Fang Yuan was not slacking, he was analyzing Hei Fan as a person.

From Hei Cheng’s memories, there was lots of praise towards Hei Fan.

This time path expert who had led Hei tribe to a glorious era in history was not simple!

Fang Yuan reviewed the process of unraveling Hei Fan true inheritance, it was as if he was fighting against Hei Fan in terms of wits.

This was truly an extraordinary contest.

Hei Fan left behind the refinement path killer moves, heavenly crystal eagle nest, dead upper extreme heavenly eagle egg, and the hidden blood path killer move, they revealed to Fang Yuan this time path great expert’s meticulousness, his shrewd planning and proud nature.

Those who could cultivate to rank eight were not simple characters.

Hei Fan was an expert at rank eight, his true inheritance was not easy to obtain!

Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals tried for so many years without success. Of course, this was also due to the loss of attitude Gu.

But it was undeniable that anyone else would have failed. Only a shrewd and astute individual like Fang Yuan would be able to make progress while exploiting the appropriate opportunities, eventually making his way to Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

“After I get to Hei Fan grotto-heaven, will I get to obtain the true inheritance? I have a feeling that Hei Fan’s test is not over yet.”

“But the more tests there are, the more extraordinary the true inheritance, this is not a bad thing!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1119: Entering Hei Fan Grotto-Heaven

One and a half days later, the upper extreme heavenly eagle carried Fang Yuan and flew to the sky of an unknown location.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle’s speed decreased, it started to fly around the air.

After a while of flying, it seemed to have confirmed the location, it pecked at a certain spot.

Instantly, Fang Yuan could hear a clear sound of a bell, as space tore open and his vision changed.

In an instant, the upper extreme heavenly eagle brought him into Hei Fan grotto-heaven, disappearing from Northern Plains’ sky.

“The upper extreme heavenly eagle can truly cross space and enter grotto-heavens! It is so amazing as an infant, when it matures, it will surely be a huge help.”

Fang Yuan praised in his mind as he looked around.

This grotto-heaven was huge and vast, it was an extraordinary sight.

Below Fang Yuan, there was an ancient forest. It was green and huge, birds and beasts lived in it, there was much life within.

“Musical trees.” There were trees with rainbow colored leaves and countless birds flying on them, landing on the branches as they chirped, creating a beautiful melody.

“Qi death birds.” One of the types of birds had plump bodies that pressed down on the branches, they were covered in qi currents and had distinct voices.

“Tea stream.” Between trees, there was a smooth flowing stream, the water was a clear, pale green, it was steaming hot, making the leaves inside resemble tea leaves.

...

Fang Yuan took a look, finding many cultivation resources inside the forest.

He looked at the sky, this grotto-heaven’s sky was azure in color.

“It seems that Hei Fan obtained a fragment of the immemorial azure heaven, after fusing it into his grotto-heaven, the sky never changed color again.” Fang Yuan made an initial confirmation that this was Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Because in Hei Cheng’s memories, he knew that Hei Fan had once grew musical trees and famously sold them in treasure yellow heaven.

This entire forest was made of musical trees, the scale was shockingly big.

Just as Fang Yuan was looking around, the entire world suddenly started to ring with sounds of a bell.

The bell rang ten times.

Next, a brass bell appeared in front of Fang Yuan.

“Heavenly spirit! There’s indeed a heavenly spirit...” Fang Yuan’s heart shook, he got nervous.

He did not have Hei tribe’s bloodline after all, even though he deceived the upper extreme heavenly eagle, he still had to deceive the heavenly spirit to obtain the true inheritance.

...

In the north-east part of Hei Fan grotto-heaven, there was a tall mountain.

The locals named it Wang Gu Mountain, they revered it.

There was a cave in the mountain.

In the cave, three Gu Immortals were conversing.

“Without taking risks, how can we have great gains? To break free of this cage, we need to take on the risks of doing so.” Gu Immortal Feng Jun had an agitated expression.

The other two Gu Immortals looked at each other with hesitation.

One of them, Gu Immortal Zheng Tuo, looked at Feng Jun: “This is a huge matter, if we are careless, we will die, how can we not act carefully?”

The other Gu Immortal, Zhou Min, was female, she had beautiful features: “Brother Feng Jun, please calm down. It is very difficult to deal with the heavenly spirit, we need to plan this wisely, we are not in a rush. Don’t worry, the three of us are sworn siblings, we will work as one and move forward together.”

Feng Jun raised his head and sighed: “The heavenly spirit is not scary, we have already gained its trust, using the killer move, blood light spirit suppression, that I created, I am very confident of success.”

Zheng Tuo looked at Feng Jun: “Brother, I do not want to say this, but why are you in a rush? You said earlier that blood light spirit suppression was created recently. This immortal killer move has just been created, it is not perfected. Even if it is perfected, we need to practice it first, why are you so hurried?”

“That’s right, brother.” Zhou Min also said: “To deal with the heavenly spirit, we are not sufficient. We might as well convince Old Immortal Chen Chi to the west, he has three Gu Immortals under him.”

Feng Jun snorted, saying in disdain: “Chen Chi is useless. He is about to die, yet he still acts so conservatively, we should not rely on him!”

Feng Jun shook his head.

Zhou Min frowned: “Brother, even if you look down on Old Immortal Chen Chi, he has the highest cultivation level. Even if we cannot work with him to deal with the heavenly spirit, we have to get him to watch on the sidelines and not interfere.”

“Sister makes sense.” Zheng Tuo added.

Feng Jun had a grim expression, after some hesitation, he said: “I am not going to lie, you both know I cultivate luck path. Recently, I have had an ominous feeling, something bad is going to happen. I have this indescribable sensation — if we do not take the chance now, we might not have a chance anymore!”

These words were simply Feng Jun’s assumption, he had no proof at all to back him up.

But the other two immortals had grim expressions.

Zhou Min said: “Brother, you once had gone up Immortal Succession Mountain and cultivated the luck path inheritance that was on it. Even though your cultivation level did not reach rank seven, as the first inheritor, your dao marks are not less than that of a rank seven luck path Gu Immortal. I heard that with a certain number of luck path dao marks, the Gu Immortal will have a mystical promotion.”

On the side, Zheng Tuo also added: “That’s right, for refinement path Gu Immortals, their Gu refinement abilities would rise sharply, when refining Gu, they would be able to sense minute details. For fire path Gu Immortals, they would have a certain sense towards fire path Immortal Gu and desolate beasts. For wisdom path Gu Immortals, even without using any Gu, their own deduction abilities would be very strong. As for luck path Gu Immortals, they would have some sensation towards their own luck or the luck around them.”

“That’s right.” Feng Jun sighed, his expression calming down.

Since Zhou Min and Zheng Tuo could understand him, that was good.

After all, the killer move, blood light spirit suppression, that he made could not be used alone, all three of them needed to activate it together.

Suddenly, at this time, the sound of a bell from outside became clearer.

“Did someone else ascend Immortal Succession Mountain, obtaining a true inheritance?” Zheng Tuo’s eyes flashed.

“Regardless of who it is, we have to get them over to our side.” Zhou Min immediately said.

“Listen, there are five rings already.” Feng Jun’s attention was drawn.

“Impressive, this person got to this point, in the past, even you, brother, only got this far.” Zheng Tuo praised.

But soon, their expressions changed.

“Seven times.” Zhou Min cried out.

“How can this be? Not only was I surpassed, even Old Immortal Chen Chi was surpassed?!” Feng Jun could not believe it, he was aware of the difficulties of going up Immortal Succession Mountain.

But next, a tenth bell sound rang out, it resounded in the entire world, continuing to spread.

The three immortals were like statues, they stood in their places, unmoving.

A moment later, Zhou Min snapped back to awareness, shock was expressed all over her beautiful face: “Did I hear wrongly, the bell rang ten times!”

Feng Jun’s expression was dark: “According to the stone tablet on Immortal Succession Mountain, ten rings of the bell means that the person from the main tribe who is qualified to inherit Old Ancestor Hei Fan’s true inheritance is here! Don’t tell me my bad feeling is due to this person!”

“After so many years, I thought that nobody would inherit the first true inheritance on Immortal Succession Mountain! To think that...” Zheng Tuo shook his head, showing a complex expression.

He looked at the two immortals beside him, they also had differing expressions.

Zheng Tuo let out a breath of air, stabilizing his mind: “Let’s go, according to the rules, when the proper inheritor appears, the heavenly spirit will welcome them personally, we need to go ahead and pay respects to them too.”

“Pay respects? Pay what respects!” Feng Jun’s body shook, he said shrilly: “Regardless of who it is? Why must we go and pay respects to them? We are also Hei tribe descendants with Hei tribe’s bloodline. Just because our ancestors were criminals, we have to be subservient to the main tribe forever?”

Zhou Min quickly consoled him: “Brother, you make sense, I agree. Even though this is sudden, the result is not out of control yet. According to the rules on the stone tablet, even though the inheritor is here, the time has passed already. To inherit Hei Fan’s true inheritance, they would need to pass a test. Whether we are going to find trouble with them or take down the heavenly spirit, we need to stay calm, stay cool.”

Feng Jun was reminded, his mind cleared up: “Sister, you are right, we still have a chance! Go, we will go immediately, we cannot expose any flaws. I want to see how amazing this inheritor is, do they have three heads or six arms? Hmph!”

...

The brass bell floated in front of Fang Yuan, after ringing ten times, it went silent.

Fang Yuan tried to ask: “Are you the heavenly spirit? I am Hei Cheng, I opened the heavenly crystal eagle nest and hatched the upper extreme heavenly eagle, I am here to inherit Ancestor Hei Fan’s true inheritance.”

But the brass bell remained silent, it floated in front of Fang Yuan, unmoving.

“As expected... after devouring the fragment of immemorial azure heaven, even the heavenly spirit has become mindless.” Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed, he understood the reason.

This intel was obtained from Shadow Sect as well.

After absorbing a fragment of the immemorial nine heavens, even though the grotto-heaven would have no tribulations, if the Gu Immortal dies and becomes a heavenly spirit, they would not have control and would be mindless.

All in all, it was because of heaven’s will.

Heaven’s will originated from the five regions and nine heavens. Ordinary grotto-heavens were small worlds independent of the outside world. But once they absorbed an immemorial nine heavens fragment, they would let heaven’s will in. Their personal authority would be greatly diminished due to heaven’s will!

Shadow Sect had deep research in this.

In the past, a Shadow Sect member, one of the seven original split souls, Seven Star Child, had went ahead to devour a fragment of immemorial blue heaven, attempting to research a way to deal with heaven’s will. Unfortunately, heaven’s will made use of it and caused Seven Star Child to be stuck inside Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm, unable to get out.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm, because Starry Sky grotto-heaven had shattered and broken into many pieces, landed in many areas of Central Continent like all of the other grotto-heaven fragment worlds.

Among which, on a nameless mountain, Fang Yuan was invited by Immortal Crane Sect to explore it. Coincidentally, inside this fragment world, Fang Yuan explored the dream realm and obtained crucial pointers. Eventually, on Yi Tian Mountain, Fang Yuan obtained the result of Shadow Sect's plan after a hundred thousand years.

From this, one could see that by absorbing any nine heavens fragment, the grotto-heaven world would be under the supervision of heaven's will, it was not safe for Fang Yuan.

The safest place for him were blessed lands or grotto-heavens like Lang Ya blessed land.

They were privately owned, heaven's will could not look inside.

Long Hair Ancestor was a very famous figure, it was not hard for him to get some immemorial nine heavens fragments. But from start to finish, he did not let his grotto-heaven absorb any fragment of the immemorial nine heavens.

“Thus, this grotto-heaven is far less valuable to me than Hei Fan's true inheritance.”

“Once I inherit Hei Fan's true inheritance, I will give this grotto-heaven to Chu Du, it will fulfill that agreement of splitting thirty percent profit with him.”

Fang Yuan was still planning, when a few people appeared from the sky, their immortal auras were unconcealed, they rapidly got closer.

“What is going on? Hei Fan grotto-heaven has Gu Immortals?” Fang Yuan was surprised.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1120: Shocking the Immortals

From far away, four Gu Immortals approached.

Fang Yuan had a serious expression, he watched without blinking.

This situation was out of his expectations.

“Why are there Gu Immortals here?” Fang Yuan looked at the heavenly spirit and asked.

But this Hei Fan grotto-heaven's heavenly spirit was too dull, it did not respond.

Fang Yuan felt a gloomy sensation.

After a while, the four Gu Immortals got close, but there was no animosity from them.

Fang Yuan prepared himself without showing any changes externally.

“I, criminal immortal Chen Chi, greet the superior immortal from the main tribe!” The leader was an old Gu Immortal. He wore a tall crown, he had a green-grey robe and white hair, after seeing Fang Yuan, he paid respects with a solemn expression.

“Criminal immortal?” Fang Yuan thought over this, but he quickly responded: “I am not worthy of being called a ‘superior immortal’, my name is Hei Cheng, I was fortunate to have inherited Hei Fan’s true inheritance, to think that I could meet so many immortals after entering the grotto-heaven.”

Fang Yuan had turned into Hei Cheng’s appearance.

This was after careful consideration.

After all, with treasure yellow heaven’s existence, even though Hei Fan grotto-heaven was isolated from the outside world, they could still find out about Hei tribe’s information.

Hei Cheng had gone missing, and he lost Hei tribe’s Immortal Gu House, but that did not hinder him from inheriting Hei Fan’s true inheritance.

Most importantly, Fang Yuan had all of Hei Cheng’s memories, he could disguise as him perfectly with no flaws.

Chen Chi raised his head, looking at Fang Yuan, he sighed in admiration.

Hei Cheng was publicly recognized as a handsome man in Northern Plains, he had a gentlemanly grace and many women had crushes on him. At this moment, even though Fang Yuan was in disguise, he even had a superior flair to Hei Cheng, with his looks, he was extraordinary and charming, he could take one’s heart easily.

Of the four Gu Immortals who came, two were female, seeing Fang Yuan’s looks, their hearts involuntarily beat faster.

The other was a young man with an ordinary appearance.

Chen Chi bowed again: “Superior immortal Hei Cheng, you have dazzling disposition, us criminal immortals of Hei tribe have waited for so long up until you finally came, heaven truly is not blind.”

“I am flattered, but why do you call yourselves criminal immortals, what does that mean? I do not understand.” Fang Yuan frowned, asking directly.

Chen Chi was about to answer, when a voice came from afar: “Superior immortal, it is normal that you do not know! Our ancestors were guilty of a heavy crime in Hei tribe. Back then, Old Ancestor Hei Fan’s granddaughter, Hei Feng Yue, carried attitude Gu and roamed the icy plain. She was targeted by a mysterious Gu Immortal, at that time, our ancestors were her guards, but they failed to take care of her, Hei Feng Yue went missing and even attitude Gu was lost.”

“Old Ancestor Hei Fan doted on his granddaughter Hei Feng Yue, but he searched for her to no avail. Our ancestors could not make up for this failure, they could only submit to punishment and were locked inside this Hei Fan grotto-heaven by Old Ancestor Hei Fan. They were our lineage, continuing to live here over the generations.”

“So that’s it.” Fang Yuan understood, he meticulously observed them.

There were three new immortals that just came here.

Two males and one female.

They were Feng Jun, Zhou Min, and Zheng Tuo.

Feng Jun and Zhou Min were rank six, Fang Yuan took a glance at them.

Zheng Tuo flew in front, he was the leader of the three immortals.

He was the one who answered Fang Yuan earlier.

He had his rank seven cultivation level unconcealed. He had an ordinary face with a hunched back, when he flew over, there was a thin line of blood behind him, he was a blood path cultivator!

This made Fang Yuan surprised internally.

A blood path Gu Immortal appeared openly like this, but the other Gu Immortals were completely unfazed? They seemed used to it.

“Unless, this person does not cultivate blood path primarily, but only as a secondary path?”

“Even so, it cannot be shown openly.”

Fang Yuan was a bit puzzled.

If this was in the five regions, this blood path demonic immortal would have already been a target of pursuit.

But at the moment, it seemed like he was doing pretty well, not only was there no animosity, he even had two subordinates.

These two were really daring, they were not afraid that this leader would attack them to increase his own battle strength!

The three immortals flew closer and greeted Fang Yuan as well, having a respectful attitude.

But Fang Yuan could tell clearly, this Feng Jun was not sincere, he held animosity towards Fang Yuan. He took several glances secretly with an unkind expression.

Actually, the rest were also like this.

Be it Chen Chi or the other Gu Immortals, they were solemn and cautious regarding Fang Yuan, while expressing kindness, they had ill intentions hidden, their attitudes were strange.

After greeting Fang Yuan, the three immortals talked to Chen Chi and the immortals behind him.

They spoke plainly, but they did not gather together, they floated in the air forming two clear groups.

Fang Yuan saw all of these, on the surface, he was talking to them warmly, but on the inside, he was memorizing these details.

“How many of you are there in this Hei Fan grotto-heaven?” Fang Yuan thought about this and asked.

“Not many. Other than the seven of us here, there are only two others.” Chen Chi replied: “They will be here soon. Superior immortal, when you arrived, the heavenly spirit came to welcome you, ten rings of the bell resounded. They have also gone up Immortal Succession Mountain before, they know what it meant.”

Immortal Succession Mountain?

Fang Yuan noted this name, but did not ask about it yet.

As expected, two more Gu Immortals appeared soon after. They were both males, they paid respects to Fang Yuan.

Like the other Gu Immortals, they also had strange expressions.

After the Gu Immortals gathered, the heavenly spirit finally made a move.

It suddenly shook, creating a loud sound as it drifted forward.

“The heavenly spirit wants to direct us to Immortal Succession Mountain, superior immortal, please follow us.” Chen Chi saw this and said.

Fang Yuan nodded, he followed the brass bell heavenly spirit cautiously.

In this situation, he was alone, but the other side had nine Gu Immortals, two rank seven and seven rank six. If they suddenly attacked him, it would be a chaotic brawl with an unpredictable result.

However, even though the heavenly spirit was mindless, it could still welcome Fang Yuan, that showed that it carried Hei Fan’s will, it was not completely unreliable.

Earlier, Fang Yuan could already tell that these people were not united, they were in different groups. The last two that came even seemed to be lone cultivators.

Precisely so, Fang Yuan decided to travel with them, he wanted to observe them first, and did not take action yet.

The heavenly spirit did not fly quickly.

Thus, Fang Yuan did not use the upper extreme heavenly eagle, he let it fly alongside him.

In this situation, he did not dare to keep the upper extreme heavenly eagle in his immortal aperture. If anything happened, even if the upper extreme heavenly eagle could not kill the enemy, it could attract their firepower.

Along the way, Fang Yuan talked to the Gu Immortals.

Initially, they were very wary of Fang Yuan, they spoke with him cautiously, there was a huge distance between them.

But what had Fang Yuan experienced? In the five hundred years of his previous life, he had interacted with countless people, he had shocking interpersonal skills in communication.

Soon, Fang Yuan got closer to them.

Gradually, there was even laughter coming from this group.

“Sister, look at Hei Cheng, he is truly a superior immortal from the main tribe! He is so charming and attractive, no wonder it was him... only people like this are worthy of Old Ancestor Hei Fan’s true inheritance.” In the group, a female Gu Immortal with long hair in two buns and bubbly nature looked at Fang Yuan as she transmitted secretly.

This was one of the female immortals who came with Chen Chi.

The Gu Immortal who had been referred to as sister was more elegant and mature, she heard the words and transmitted in a cheeky tone: “Hehe, it seems that you, sister, are infatuated. But yes, he is truly a dragon among men! He seems to be young and have high cultivation level, he also has such charm and speaks with great experience, he has a convincing tone and makes people feel engaged when talking to him. Sigh, I wonder if people like him are rare in the outside world? What kind of place is Northern Plains?”

Fang Yuan’s ears twitched, he listened to all these words without missing any.

These Gu Immortal sisters used an ancient transmission method that had gone out of favor in Northern Plains long ago, this was exactly why Fang Yuan could eavesdrop on their conversation.

Even though this was a grotto-heaven, and mortal Gu could be prevented from being used, Fang Yuan did not receive a restriction in this aspect, he felt some assurance.

Actually, not just these two female Gu Immortals, the other Gu Immortals were also conversing, but they were not speaking as frequently as these two.

The other Gu Immortals were discussing Fang Yuan’s background and battle strength.

These matters were more important.

“To think that this person has rank seven cultivation level! On our side, only Old Immortal Chen Chi and Brother Zheng Tuo match his cultivation level.”

“Even though he is not displaying any Immortal Gu aura, the eagle flying beside him is extraordinary.”

“This eagle is strange, it seems to be a desolate beast, but its aura is not normal.”

“We have desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts in our grotto-heaven, but their aura cannot compare to this young eagle.”

...

After some discussions, someone could not control himself anymore, he asked: “Superior immortal, I see that your eagle is not ordinary, it looks very imposing, we do not know about it, may I ask what its origins are?”

Fang Yuan took a look, it was the Gu Immortal named Feng Jun.

Fang Yuan thought for a moment, he smiled: “Hehehe, such good perception, you can tell that my beloved eagle is extraordinary. This is an upper extreme heavenly eagle, have you heard of it? If fully grown, it is an immemorial desolate beast. But right now, it can only be used for traveling, it cannot compare to my other ancient desolate beasts.”

“Immemorial desolate beast!” At once, the immortals gasped.

Countless heated, shocked, and amazed gazes focused on the upper extreme heavenly eagle, observing it carefully.

Fang Yuan spoke casually, but he threw a bomb into these immortals’ minds.

These Gu Immortals had varying emotions, they could not conceal their shock.

Next, when they conversed with Fang Yuan, their tone was unavoidably more polite and restricted.

Fang Yuan did not act with a forceful stance, he smiled like before.

But his smile, when they saw it now, felt completely different from before.

“Upper extreme heavenly eagle, an immemorial desolate beast!”

“Who is this person? He actually has an immemorial desolate beast with him?! It seems that even in the main tribe, he has a high status.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1121: Finally Seeing Hei Fan’s True Inheritance

“This upper extreme heavenly eagle is an immemorial desolate beast, no wonder it gives off such an abnormal feeling.”

“If we are going to attack him, we will need to deal with the eagle first.”

“Did you forget what he said? Other than this eagle, he also has other ancient desolate beasts, is he an enslavement path Gu Immortal?”

“If he is an enslavement path Gu Immortal, he would be easier to deal with. This path is vulnerable to direct attacks, even if he is an immortal, we are also Gu Immortals...”

“That might not work! Don’t be hasty, we will see on Immortal Succession Mountain.”

Even up until the immortals arrived at Immortal Succession Mountain, some Gu Immortals were still talking about the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

This was not strange.

An immemorial desolate beast which had rank eight battle strength upon maturity, this news was a shock to the immortals.

Fang Yuan listened to their words but he still showed a calm and composed expression, there were no flaws in his acting.

Unwittingly, the immortals’ guesses of him had already distorted from reality.

Fang Yuan was happy to see this, the more wrong things they assumed, the greater his advantage.

If he was really treated as an enslavement path Gu Immortal, hehe, then they would get to see the power of a transformation path and strength path Gu Immortal!

Conversely, during the conversation, Fang Yuan continued to probe and obtained a lot of precious intelligence.

“These Gu Immortals seemed to have been isolated from the world for too long, they are not good at confrontations or dealing with people. Not just in terms of words, they are not as crafty as Gu Immortals outside, I could easily probe their background. They have barely any shrewdness, and their methods are outdated."

"All in all, these Gu Immortals are split into two groups. One is led by Old Immortal Chen Chi, the four Gu Immortals are related by bloodline. The other group are the three blood sworn immortals, they are Zhou Min, Zheng Tuo, and Feng Jun, they actually have a blood path leader. The final two are loners, as expected, they do not work with the groups."

Fang Yuan snickered internally.

Places with people will have competition for benefits.

Hei Fan grotto-heaven was no exception.

But evidently, the conflict here was small and low level, the Gu Immortals were not skilled at competing against one another. It truly paled in comparison to Northern Plains.

And most importantly, these Gu Immortals had very little knowledge.

Fang Yuan had already probed, these Gu Immortals could not get into treasure yellow heaven, or rather, they did not even know about its existence.

But...

Look at their identities, they were descendants of criminals, it made sense that Old Ancestor Hei Fan prevented them from connecting to treasure yellow heaven.

If they could connect to treasure yellow heaven, it would be different.

Not only would they have updated methods, they would be able to trade and gain knowledge, even without trading, they would grow in experience, it would be an immense growth.

Immortal Succession Mountain was a tall, lone mountain, it was not a famous mountain or river.

It had ten levels, getting smaller towards the top, there was evident signs of man-made design in it. Around the mountain were forests that had lots of resources in them, Fang Yuan was quite amazed.

Even though Hei Fan grotto-heaven was isolated from the world, it had no calamities and tribulations, and because it could not connect to treasure yellow heaven, the resources inside were truly too rich from generations of accumulation!

The immortals followed the brass bell heavenly spirit, landing in the single stone pavilion near the mountain peak.

The stone pavilion was very simple in structure, but even though it was just a pavilion, it had a grand atmosphere. The pavilion was supported by eight thick pillars. There was a stone tablet in the pavilion that was eye-catching. The stone tablet was huge like an elephant, it took up almost all of the space in the pavilion, there were words carved on it.

The brass bell heavenly spirit entered the stone pavilion, hanging on a pillar of the stone pavilion, there was a hook there, it stopped moving after getting into position.

Old Immortal Chen Chi said: “Superior immortal, you have just arrived, you must have many questions. Look at this stone tablet, it will answer a lot of your questions.”

Fang Yuan was prepared, he looked at it patiently.

A while later, he finally understood everything.

It turned out that back then, Hei Fan’s most beloved granddaughter, Hei Feng Yue, had vanished, along with attitude Gu.

Hei Fan lost his precious granddaughter, but there was nothing he could do, his lifespan was almost expended, he could only place his immortal aperture down and absorb the immemorial azure heaven fragment, losing his freedom.

The few Hei tribe Gu Immortals who could not take care of her were locked in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, not only was their freedom taken away, their immortal apertures were even taken out and fused into Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

This way, Hei Fan grotto-heaven became even bigger.

Before Hei Fan absorbed the fragment of immemorial azure heaven, he had already made his arrangements, leaving behind his true inheritance and the heavenly crystal eagle nest.

But he could not stop thinking about his granddaughter, he wanted his descendants to look for her, thus, he added an additional step, that was the aura of attitude Gu which was needed.

From his perspective: Even if he did not show up, with Hei tribe’s power at that time, they could definitely find Hei Feng Yue’s location and get back attitude Gu.

But in truth, he was too optimistic.

Or rather, because of kinship, he refused to accept the truth, he felt that Hei Feng Yue was still very likely alive.

Because of his miscalculation, Hei Fan’s true inheritance went uninherited for all this time, until now, after Fang Yuan disguised himself and opened the heavenly crystal eagle nest.

This had to be considered an error by Old Ancestor Hei Fan.

But he was a rank eight great expert after all, before his death, he sensed this error as well.

He thought: If nobody from the main tribe inherits his true inheritance, what would happen?

If that happened, either Hei tribe would be wiped out or become weakened, without any worthy descendants.

What Hei Fan thought of was: in that case, he might as well prepare another batch, and let the people in the grotto-heaven inherit his true inheritance, passing it down in that way. They had Hei tribe’s bloodline after all!

Thus, after setting up the heavenly crystal eagle nest, before his death, Hei Fan added a new rule to his true inheritance.

He set a timing.

Several hundred years later, if nobody from the main tribe obtains his true inheritance, then the descendants in the grotto-heaven would be allowed to roam Immortal Succession Mountain and find their own opportunities.

This was stated in the tablet: “Old Ancestor (Hei Fan) left behind his key true inheritance on Immortal Succession Mountain, he set up a lot of smaller inheritances as well before his lifespan ran out. The other Hei tribe criminal immortals cried and grieved, they felt that they let him down, they died together with him. But before dying, they imitated Hei Fan and left behind their stone tablet inheritances on Immortal Succession Mountain, their true inheritances were hidden inside.”

The Hei tribe members who were in Northern Plains were searching for attitude Gu, but there was nothing they could find.

Time passed, the time limit that Old Ancestor Hei Fan set had long since elapsed. Thus, in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, Immortal Succession Mountain was opened up to the mortals to explore.

As a result, Gu Immortals started appearing in Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

However, even though these mortals could compete for Hei Fan’s true inheritance, it was too difficult to explore Immortal Succession Mountain. Although many mortals obtained the true inheritances, and a portion of them became Gu Immortals, there had never been anyone who got to the mountain peak and obtained the first true inheritance.

According to the stone tablet: if the person who obtains the first true inheritance becomes a Gu Immortal, they would be the owner of Hei Fan grotto-heaven, they would have the authority to forgive the sins of these criminal immortals, they would regain freedom and return to Hei tribe.

But before this, no matter how many generations had gone by, they could not have the Hei surname, they could only have other names, it would remind them of their identities as criminals.

After reading the contents of the stone tablet, Fang Yuan finally understood, the confusion inside him was lifted.

“No wonder these Gu Immortals have such complex expressions and emotions towards me, they have both kind and ill intentions at the same time.”

Fang Yuan thought about it from their perspective, if it were him, he would be having even more complex feelings.

According to Hei Fan’s rules, the time limit was over, so be it the Hei tribe main immortals or these criminal immortals, they were qualified to vie for Hei Fan’s true inheritance.

These immortals had been enthusiastically raising descendants to obtain Hei Fan’s true inheritance, to open up the grotto-heaven and regain freedom.

As for these Gu Immortals, they had already obtained other inheritances, they were not qualified to compete for Hei Fan’s true inheritance.

Thus, the Gu Immortals in Hei Fan grotto-heaven did not have much conflict normally, they lived quite peacefully.

Originally, they did not think that anyone from the main tribe would come, after all, it had been so long, but nobody came. With Fang Yuan’s sudden appearance, their preconceptions were broken. And because of the rules on the stone tablet, they had to go welcome him, even though they were against his arrival and mentally not prepared.

From their perspective, Hei Fan’s true inheritance belonged to them already.

As long as they continued to nurture descendants, one day, someone would ascend the mountain peak and obtain Hei Fan’s true inheritance.

Thus, they did not want to see Fang Yuan’s arrival, but they had no choice but to follow the rules.

The heavenly spirit might be mindless, but Hei Fan had considered this before dying, even though it was rather unreliable, it still firmly carried on Hei Fan’s will after his death.

And Hei Fan still had one method of restriction.

Becoming a Gu Immortal would have calamities and tribulations.

Whenever they are unable to pass the tribulations, these Gu Immortals would come to Immortal Succession Mountain and ask the heavenly spirit for help.

The heavenly spirit would use the Immortal Gu in the first tablet’s true inheritance to stall their calamities and tribulations. Even though they could be safe for the moment, they would be under the heavenly spirit’s control.

The heavenly spirit only had to use a certain method in the true inheritance to remove the method of stalling calamities and tribulations, causing them to die.

Many Gu Immortals were able to pass the calamities and tribulations early on, but they did not know about treasure yellow heaven, even though Hei Fan grotto-heaven had a lot of resources, there was a limit to its variety, these Gu Immortals’ cultivation needs could not be fulfilled.

Thus, after many calamities and tribulations, when they got stronger, these Gu Immortals were gradually unable to pass them.

Eventually, they had no choice but to seek help from the heavenly spirit, they all fell into Hei Fan’s trap and became controlled by the heavenly spirit. Even though Hei Fan had died for many years, he still had great control over Hei Fan grotto-heaven as a result.

“Old Ancestor Hei Fan, as expected and worthy of the champion that led Hei tribe to its most glorious era! Even after he died, he still had complete control of Hei Fan grotto-heaven, these Gu Immortals all revere him.”

“But what this tablet states might not be too factual. Heh. I don’t believe that those criminal immortals were willing to die together with Old Ancestor Hei Fan! Evidently, regardless of their wishes, Hei Fan still acted in this ruthless and cruel manner, he is truly praiseworthy. If they were allowed to live, Hei Fan grotto-heaven might have been broken through from the inside already.”

Thoughts flashed past his mind rapidly, Fang Yuan’s gaze retracted from the stone tablet, he slowly raised his head to look at the brass bell heavenly spirit.

He asked: “Then, what should I do to obtain this true inheritance?”

Once he said that, the other Gu Immortals held their breaths and concentrated, looking over with concerned gazes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1122: Troublesome Final Test

The stone tablet in the pavilion stated: Be it a main tribe member brought over by the heavenly spirit or a criminal immortal who ascended the mountain, they had one final, most important test before inheriting Hei Fan's true inheritance.

But the contents of this final test were not written on the stone tablet, they had to ask the heavenly spirit.

The heavenly spirit was mindless, but remembered Hei Fan's instructions.

Thus, Fang Yuan asked it.

Soon, the immortals heard the brass bell heavenly spirit shake, creating a long and loud sound.

When the sound vibrated off the pillars, there were changes to the tablet. At the end of the original content, new lines were appearing.

The immortals gasped upon seeing it.

"This says that Hei Fan grotto-heaven is the true inheritance itself. Whoever obtains the true inheritance becomes Hei Fan grotto-heaven's owner!"

"But to obtain Hei Fan's true inheritance, there is one final test, it is actually this?"

"No wonder Old Ancestor Hei Fan set a rule that if the inheritor appears, all of us need to go and welcome him!"

"Old ancestor is magnanimous, he planned meticulously. Even though we are criminals, he had never forgotten us, he is still concerned about us descendants."

The immortals discussed, they felt admiration towards Old Ancestor Hei Fan, some had red eyes as they almost cried.

Fang Yuan looked at the new information, he was frowning, his expression had turned heavy.

The contents clearly told him what the test was.

"As long as I pass the final test, I can obtain Hei Fan's true inheritance. But what is this? It wants me to obtain the votes of half of the Gu Immortals inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven?! And I must complete it within three years in the grotto-heaven's time."

Fang Yuan shook his head.

Old Ancestor Hei Fan's final test was out of his expectations.

Evidently, he was siding with the Gu Immortals inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

As an outsider, it was very difficult for Fang Yuan to obtain their support.

But Fang Yuan soon reacted, he understood Hei Fan’s intentions.

Old Ancestor Hei Fan set the rules to encourage his inheritor to take in these Gu Immortals within Hei Fan grotto-heaven. After all, Gu Immortals were hard to nurture, by taking them in, it would benefit Hei tribe greatly.

Thus, this not only tested the inheritor’s abilities, their interpersonal skills were also tested, whether they could be a skilled leader to unite others or not.

Hei Fan was using his true inheritance to choose a leader for Hei tribe, he was not just looking for a Gu Immortal expert.

“Old fellow, you are already dead, why are you considering so many things, it is so troublesome!” Fang Yuan thought, but on the surface, he sighed as he spoke in heartfelt fashion: “Ancestor Hei Fan was thinking for Hei tribe the entire time, he put in so much effort, as a descendant, I am deeply moved!”

“Yes, yes!” The immortals heard his words and responded.

Originally, these Gu Immortals were feeling very worried, after all, if Fang Yuan obtained Hei Fan’s true inheritance, they did not know what would happen to criminal immortals like themselves.

But now, with Old Ancestor Hei Fan’s arrangement, their welfare was assured.

Fang Yuan kept his moved expression as he turned around, standing before the stone tablet, facing the immortals in the pavilion, he asked: “Then... how can I obtain all of your support?”

As Fang Yuan had expected, what he obtained was silence.

Times were different now.

Initially, they were wary of him, but now, Fang Yuan needed to get half of the Gu Immortals’ recognition, in that case, the situation was reversed, it was completely different.

The immortals looked at each other, nobody spoke.

Only their gaze towards Fang Yuan changed.

Earlier, they were cautious and tried to express kindness while concealing their ill intent, but now, they had distant gazes, they got on their high horses and thought about it internally.

Fang Yuan was not rushed, he stood on the spot, waiting for their reply.

After a while of silence, the most experienced and oldest Gu Immortal, Chen Chi, could not hold it in anymore, he coughed: “Today’s matters progressed too quickly, we are simply unprepared for it. Sigh, maybe I am getting old, all this thinking is making my head hurt, I cannot process it yet. Superior immortal, you must have had a long journey to reach here and are tired, right? Why don’t you go take a rest first and relax, we can think about this later.”

“This old fox.” Fang Yuan snickered internally.

Old Immortal Chen Chi’s words were well received by the Gu Immortals present, they answered him with great enthusiasm.

They were fragmented earlier, but now, it looked like they were united, dealing with the outsider Fang Yuan together.

“However, so what if I agree to your stalling?” Fang Yuan had expected them to respond in that manner, his expression did not change, he nodded and said reluctantly: “Immortal Chen Chi, you have a point.”

Chen Chi showed a smile of victory, but soon he concealed it: “My accommodations are crude, but we have some tea for you. If you do not mind, it would be my great honor to accommodate you.”

Chen Chi invited warmly, but he did not give a clear reply to Fang Yuan’s words.

Fang Yuan smiled in a reluctant manner, nodding: “I will trouble you in that case.”

He called it ‘crude’, but Old Immortal Chen Chi was naturally just being humble.

His accommodations were not crude at all, instead, they were very elegant and grand.

A number of palaces sat on top of a mountain peak.

This mountain seemed to be man-made, the top was flat, palaces were erected all over it, there were golden bricks and green tiles, with many beautifully crafted pillars.

Chen Chi and his Gu Immortal subordinates lived here.

Not just them, a large number of Gu Masters and mortals as well.

“These are all my descendants, hehehe, please excuse them, superior immortal. At my age, I enjoy having descendants and nurturing them.” Chen Chi explained.

Fang Yuan nodded: “This shows that you are someone who values relationships.”

Chen Chi looked at Fang Yuan with deep meaning: “Who would not like people who values relationships and loyalty? Hehehe.”

“Hahaha.” Fang Yuan laughed too.

Seeing Chen Chi and Fang Yuan talking so harmoniously, the other three Gu Immortals had relaxed emotions.

Just like this, Fang Yuan stayed here for the time being.

Strangely, since the first day, Chen Chi had not shown himself again, and did not meet with Fang Yuan again. Fang Yuan was not anxious, he waited patiently.

Four days later.

In the palaces.

Fang Yuan and Chen Le strolled in the long walkways.

Chen Le was one of the female immortals, she had long hair in two buns and a bubbly nature. In terms of bloodline, she was Old Immortal Chen Chi’s great granddaughter.

“Young master Hei Cheng, look at that lotus, I love its color!” Chen Le pointed at the lotus pond and smiled.

This walkway was quite special, it crossed over the entire lotus pond.

There were lotuses inside the lotus pond of all colors, they were floating aimlessly, it was a beautiful sight.

These last days, even though Old Immortal Chen Chi did not meet with Fang Yuan, Chen Le was keeping him company, to look at all the scenic sites in the palaces.

“This yellow lotus is cute, pure and innocent, it really suits you, Le Er.” Fang Yuan smiled.

Chen Le lowered her head, she was embarrassed, she said faintly: “Young master, what are you saying? Le Er... Le Er was just happy from seeing these flowers.”

“I feel very happy seeing you as well, Le Er.” Fang Yuan smiled as he extended his arms, holding Le Er’s hands.

Chen Le’s body shook, she subconsciously wanted to get free, but Fang Yuan’s hands were holding her tightly.

Chen Le’s face was bright red, even with her Gu Immortal cultivation level, her brain was in chaos, she struggled as she murmured: “Young master, young master, you...”

Fang Yuan took a step forward, his body almost completely touching Chen Le.

Chen Le quickly moved back, because her body was unstable, she fell backwards.

Fang Yuan held her in his arms as she fell.

“Be careful, don’t fall.” His gentle voice entered Chen Le’s ears, when Chen Le reacted, she was already lying in Fang Yuan’s arms.

Chen Le raised her head, she saw Fang Yuan, who was smiling with a hint of cheekiness in his gaze.

Chen Le was extremely embarrassed, she punched Fang Yuan’s chest softly: “Young master, you are too naughty, you bullied me!”

Saying this, she struggled out of Fang Yuan’s embrace.

Fang Yuan gasped, he took a step back, showing intense pain on his face.

Chen Le quickly moved forward, asking him with deep concern: “Young master, how are you?”

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply: “To speak the truth. not long ago, I engaged in a fierce battle. It is not easy to inherit Hei Fan true inheritance. Many Gu Immortals in the tribe are not willing to see it happen.”

“So you are injured? Why didn’t you tell me!” Chen Le stomped her feet, her embarrassment was gone, she looked at Fang Yuan’s chest as she asked: “Does it still hurt?”

“It is a small injury, it is no issue. But with higher cultivation level, my dao marks are deeper, the injuries I suffered are more severe.” Fang Yuan smiled, before shifting the topic: “However, your great grandfather refined Gu and suffered injuries, he is in a similar state as me, right? Otherwise, why would he not meet me for the last few days?”

Panic flashed across Chen Le’s eyes, she stammered and tried to respond to Fang Yuan.

Old Immortal Chen Chi could not refuse to meet Fang Yuan without any reason, thus, the excuse he gave was that he had suffered a backlash from Gu refinement failure, his injuries were severe and he could not meet guests.

Of course, at this timing, how could he suddenly get injured from refining Gu?

Both parties knew the reason, they did not speak it.

On that night, the four Gu Immortals including Chen Chi engaged in a secret discussion.

Chen Le reported: “Ancestor, young master Hei Cheng asked me about your injury today.”

“Oh? He finally lost his patience huh...” Chen Chi smiled.

“Thankfully, I managed to conceal it, he was not suspicious. But as time passes, I am afraid...” Chen Le was worried.

The other three Gu Immortals looked at each other, smiling.

Chen Le was well protected by her family, she was unhardened and innocent, she did not know that Fang Yuan knew about it clearly. The fact that he asked about Chen Chi’s injuries was a subtle reminder.

The male Gu Immortal Chen Li Zhi thought for a moment before saying: “It seems that we have to talk to this Hei Cheng properly.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1123: What is this Gu’s Name?

Old Immortal Chen Chi shook his head, he said with an unmoved expression: “So what if we wait a few more days? There is no rush.”

Chen Li Zhi said worriedly: “He understands the situation, if we drag this out, he might get annoyed. If he is forced away and goes to Zheng Tuo’s side, it would be troublesome.”

“Little Zhi, don’t worry.” Chen Chi smiled, analyzing: “The final test of the true inheritance requires half of the Gu Immortals in Hei Fan grotto-heaven to support Hei Cheng. Right now in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, disregarding Hei Cheng himself, there are nine Gu Immortals. We have four people on our side, we are nearly half of the total. This is a huge quantity, as long as he gets our support, he would already be one step from winning. As long as he gets one more person’s vote, he would succeed. There is no way he did not consider this.”

“Even if he gives up on our side and go to the other Gu Immortals, he would face trouble. The situation is different now, he is an outsider, if he wants our support, he has to give up some benefits, he needs to put up something for our gain. Moreover, those three, Zheng Tuo and the others, are more ambitious.”

Chen Li Zhi did not speak, instead, Chen Wan Yun said: “Old ancestor, actually, I have an idea. If Hei Cheng cannot get half of the Gu Immortals’ votes, wouldn’t he fail? As long as Hei Fan true inheritance remains on Immortal Succession Mountain, one day, our descendants would ascend to the top and obtain it, right? We have been guarding Hei Fan’s true inheritance for countless generations, even Old Ancestor Hei Fan gave us the rights to vie for it, are we really going to give it to an outsider?”

“Hei Cheng is not an outsider, he is from the main tribe.” Chen Le rebuked.

“Le Er, don’t forget, the main tribe is enjoying freedom and glory in the outside world. As for us, we have been trapped here for generations, suffering in torment!” Chen Wan Yun said grimly.

Chen Le had a bitter expression, she stopped talking.

Chen Chi shook his head: “Yun Er, I had considered your words long ago, this would not work.”

“Firstly, it is extremely difficult for mortals to ascend Immortal Succession Mountain, even if we nurture them and a lucky person shows up, when would they finally inherit the true inheritance? Decades? Centuries? Nobody knows.”

“Secondly, even though Hei Cheng is alone, don’t forget about the Hei tribesmen behind him, there are a huge number of Hei tribe Gu Immortals. If he fails, that is only his personal failure. Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals are going to continue coming here. By then, can we stop them all? Are we going to stop all of the main tribe’s Gu Immortal? Can we? Other than the four of us, can Zheng Tuo and the rest be trusted?”

These Gu Immortals in Hei Fan grotto-heaven did not know about treasure yellow heaven, after so many years and generations, they could not connect to treasure yellow heaven. Thus, they had no idea what happened to Hei tribe. Fang Yuan lied and concealed the truth, he easily deceived these Gu Immortals, running around them in circles.

Chen Chi’s words made the rest of the immortals’ expressions change.

Chen Le added: “That’s right, today, young master Hei Cheng told me that it was a tough process to defeat those Hei tribe Gu Immortals and obtain victory. Even until now, he is still injured.”

Chen Chi nodded, continuing to analyze: “Hei Cheng was able to emerge victorious, he is not ordinary at all. He has rank seven cultivation level, and the upper extreme heavenly eagle with him, he has great prospects. If we help him now, it would be giving him timely assistance, when we return to the main tribe, we will have a firm foundation under him, wouldn’t that be great?”

“However, we are not going to help him without any rewards. He has to pay a price, if he does not give up some benefits, he would not cherish our help. He would not feel gratitude towards us.”

“Old ancestor is right.” Chen Li Zhi said.

“We will not go wrong listening to ancestor!” Chen Le smiled.

Chen Chi sighed eerily, he looked at the three Gu Immortals, saying with deep emotions: “I am old, my lifespan is almost up. I only want you descendants to live better in the future. When I go into the door of life and death, I will rest in peace.”

“Ancestor, don’t say things like that, you will definitely live a long time.” Chen Le’s eyes turned red.

Chen Li Zhi said firmly: “Ancestor, don’t forget about lifespan Gu! To obtain our support, that Hei Cheng has to give us something, lifespan Gu is definitely one of our conditions.”

Chen Chi’s eyes flashed deeply, he looked at Chen Le: “Forget about lifespan Gu, at the very least, we need to make sure Le Er fulfills her wish, and gets together with her lover.”

Chen Le’s face was flushed red with embarrassment, she stood up as she stomped her feet: “Ancestor, you are making fun of me again!”

Hahaha...

In the secret room, laughter was echoing.

At the same time, Fang Yuan stood on the garden of his accommodation, raising his head towards the night sky.

This Hei Fan grotto-heaven had a clear day and night, daytime was long, while night time was short.

This was something that only happened in grotto-heavens, blessed lands usually did not have day and night.

Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s night sky had no stars, but the darkness was not pitch-black, if one looked closely, it had azure color.

A cool wind blew, Fang Yuan’s arms were behind his back, he looked at the sky as he sorted out the information that he had obtained recently.

These last days, he had been interacting with Chen Le, obtaining a lot of precious information from this gullible girl, he had clear and extensive knowledge regarding Hei Fan grotto-heaven and the Gu Immortals inside it.

Moreover, he had developed his ideas regarding Hei Fan true inheritance further.

“It is almost time, in just two days, the time will be ripe.” Fang Yuan thought, cold light flashed across his eyes, shining deeply.

Two days went by in an instant.

It was noon, bright sunlight radiated in the palace, making it extremely lively.

Winds blew, birds chirped, it was a beautiful sight.

From outside Chen Chi’s room, Fang Yuan’s voice could be heard: “I came here without informing you, I hope you can forgive me.”

“He finally lost his patience. But he already waited for quite some time.” Chen Chi was not surprised.

The entire group of palaces was a huge mortal Gu House, Fang Yuan’s actions were all under his observation.

The door opened on its own.

Chen Chi sat on his bed, half lying down, he said weakly: “Esteemed guest, you are here, but I am unable to get up and attend to you.”

Fang Yuan quickly walked in, standing in front of the bed, saying worriedly: “It seems that you are heavily injured. You are a rule path Gu Immortal, after considering deeply, I thought of a way to lighten your injuries.”

Chen Chi had no injuries: “Superior immortal, I am grateful for your concern, but my injury is not something that can be healed easily.”

Fang Yuan smiled: “Friend, you might not know, my immortal killer move is a signature method of our tribe. Even though the core Immortal Gu is still in the tribe, I know the content of the killer move. I will pass this immortal killer move to you, you can change the core and it might help with your injuries.”

“How can I accept this great gift?” Chen Chi quickly rejected.

Fang Yuan said warmly: “I feel like we are close friends, these last few days, I have been imposing on all of you. The killer move will be my gift in return.”

“Superior immortal, this gift is simply too valuable.” Chen Chi continued to reject it.

Fang Yuan’s expression changed, his tone became very worried: “How can an immortal killer move express my true sincerity? Oh! Honestly speaking, this Hei Fan true inheritance’s final test is troubling me greatly. I hope you can give me some advice.”

Chen Chi heard this and his eyes shined, he understood Fang Yuan’s words. He was here to exchange benefits for support.

Chen Chi subconsciously sat up, saying: “In my humble opinion, this matter is like refining Gu. When refining Gu, the fire is very important. It has to be large at times, and small at other times, we have to deal with important matters more patiently. Hehe, I am ashamed! I have a lot of interest in Gu refinement, so I spouted nonsense, please ignore me.”

This was not nonsense, it was simply bullshit!

As a rule path Gu Immortal, why are you so interested in refinement path?

But Fang Yuan knew what he was trying to say, he smiled: “The main tribe has countless books on refinement path, as long as I obtain the true inheritance, I will be able to grant everyone freedom. When you return to the main tribe, these books will all be accessible to you. And I have collected a number of refinement path methods and Gu recipes as well. When I succeed, I can give them all to you, why not?”

Chen Chi nodded, showing a pleased expression.

But he quickly said: “I love refinement path, it is truly a time wasting hobby. But my nephew Chen Li Zhi is an enslavement path Gu Immortal, he is so envious of your upper extreme heavenly eagle.”

Fang Yuan’s expression sank: “There is only one upper extreme heavenly eagle, it cannot be given away. But there are a lot of iron crown eagles in the main tribe, they are famous in Northern Plains. I can assure that everyone will get one once we return.”

Chen Chi’s joy flashed on his face, he sighed: “In the past, Old Ancestor Hei Fan suppressed Qiao tribe, it was to obtain their secret of raising eagles. To think that after so many years, they had already developed to this extent. But our ancestors were criminals, when we return to the main tribe, what circumstances will we face, I am truly worried!”

“No need to worry, I can assure that everyone will be very welcomed back in Hei tribe, after all, your return means that the tribe becomes stronger as well.” Fang Yuan paused before saying: “As for the crime, it occurred so many generations ago, once I get the true inheritance, I will spare everyone. You have all defended Hei Fan grotto-heaven for so many years, your merits outweigh your crimes, and because you also helped me obtain the true inheritance... Hehe, when I return to the main tribe, I will uphold justice for everyone!”

Chen Chi smiled: “Superior immortal, you are a dragon among men, an absolute genius, your words are truly reliable, after hearing this, I am somewhat assured.”

“I thank you for your trust. We all have Hei tribe’s bloodline, we are one family. However... as for the other immortals outside, it will depend on their performance.” Fang Yuan vaguely suggested.

His meaning was: first come first serve, whoever supports him first will gain greater benefits when they return to the main tribe.

Chen Chi nodded, he was a sly fox, he naturally understood what Fang Yuan meant.

He smiled: “Superior immortal, your words are truly enlightening, they are amazing. Especially the word family, it is so apt.”

Saying so, he looked at Fang Yuan, seeing his slight smile, he felt deeper confidence, he asked: “What do you think of Little Le?”

Fang Yuan’s smile faded, he answered: “Intelligent and eloquent, innocent and lively, she is very attractive.”

“I will not lie to you, Le Er is secretly in love with you. Sigh, it is a pity! Superior immortal, you are such a talented person, how could she match you. Sigh, as her ancestor, I am unable to fulfill her wish. I only hope that Le Er, this poor child, is able to forget about superior immortal and find her own happiness in the future.” Chen Le sighed.

Fang Yuan no longer smiled, he frowned as he considered, before saying solemnly: “I will not lie to you either, I am in love with Chen Le, I am willing to marry her as my wife!”

If he really loved her, he should be yelling happily in excitement, he would not show a solemn expression after considering it.

But Chen Chi ignored it completely, as if he could not understand it.

Fang Yuan snickered internally, he could understand why. This Chen Chi kept saying he was thinking for his descendant’s future, but was that true? He was sacrificing Chen Le to gain his own benefits!

Chen Chi laughed loudly, Fang Yuan’s reply was very satisfactory to him, even though he said it reluctantly.

He went overboard, his smile vanished, he sighed deeply: “Sigh, it is a pity that my lifespan is running out, I will not be able to attend you and Le Er’s wedding.”

Fang Yuan instantly understood, this old fellow was asking for lifespan Gu! His expression turned grim, he stopped smiling, he said dryly: “That’s not the case at all, in my opinion, you are truly hale and hearty, your appetite is truly great.”

Old Immortal Chen Chi chuckled as he looked at Fang Yuan directly, he showed a determined expression that was not backing off: “I am truly ashamed, actually, I am a very greedy person, not only do I want to attend the wedding of superior immortal and Le Er, I also want to see the children that you have after getting married. After all, those are my descendants as well.”

Fang Yuan began to prance around, his eyebrows were tightly pursed, he said directly: “Lifespan Gu are hard to find, they are very precious, I am unable to give them away.”

“This treasure from heaven is truly hard to obtain.” Old Immortal Chen Chi nodded, as if he had expected Fang Yuan's reply already, he continued: "But there is no need to worry. I'll let you know, this Hei Fan grotto-heaven also produces lifespan Gu, they are all gathered and collected. The heavenly spirit might be mindless, but Old Ancestor Hei Fan had his arrangements. If I am not wrong, there are definitely lifespan Gu within Hei Fan's true inheritance. I... sigh, I only need three hundred years worth of lifespan Gu."

"Three hundred years?!" Fang Yuan stared at Chen Chi angrily.

Chen Chi was still smiling comfortably.

Fang Yuan turned furious: "Three hundred is too much, I don't even have a single one! I will only give a hundred."

"One hundred and fifty." Chen Chi bargained, he finally put down his act.

Fang Yuan walked for a few more rounds, gritting his teeth: "Forget it, I will give you a hundred and fifty!"

"Deal!" Chen Chi clapped, smiling widely and happily, he stopped caring about his face.

After all, this was more than a hundred years of lifespan, how could a bit of face compare to it?

Chen Chi looked at Fang Yuan, smiling even more deeply now: "Superior immortal, I heard from Le Er that you have a lot of Immortal Gu, I wonder if you can let me have a look to broaden my horizons?"

Fang Yuan was stunned before flying into a rage, he gritted his teeth at Chen Chi.

This old fellow was too greedy, he said he wanted to take a look, but the truth was, he wanted Fang Yuan to use an Immortal Gu to exchange for his support!

Chen Chi saw Fang Yuan turning furious and his heart jumped, but soon, he thought that this was a rare chance, there would be no opportunities like this again. After they returned to the main tribe, would this occur again?

Thus, he quickly said: "Superior immortal, this is my final request, as long as I get it, the four of us will definitely support you."

Fang Yuan began prancing again.

He took heavy steps, as if the concrete floor had an unresolvable deep enmity with him.

Chen Chi observed his expression, seeing that Fang Yuan's anger was fading and he was actually thinking about it, he let down his guard.

He felt great joy inside him: "Success!"

As expected, after a moment, Fang Yuan stopped his movements, he stood in front of the bed with an Immortal Gu in his hand.

"Rank seven Immortal Gu!" Chen Chi shouted, feeling surprised and joyful.

"This is a sword path Immortal Gu, it is not compatible with me, otherwise, you would never see this!" Fang Yuan said angrily.

"What is this Gu's name?" Chen Chi's eyes were shining, he watched as Fang Yuan handed the Gu over to him.

"Wait, I'll exchange with this one instead." Fang Yuan suddenly changed his mind, he retracted his arm as he took out another Gu from his immortal aperture.

Chen Chi’s gaze subconsciously moved to Fang Yuan’s other arm.

No sooner said than done!

The sword path Immortal Gu activated!

Sword path killer move — Dark Assassination!!

Chen Chi was staring blankly, the bloody mark left on his forehead enlarged as blood started to spew out from the front and back of his head.

He was dead!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1124: Dark Assassination

With Chen Chi’s death, all the palaces started shaking.

The group of palaces were all mortal Gu Houses, they were under Old Immortal Chen Chi’s control.

But Fang Yuan came prepared, at his will, he activated arrangements that were prepared long ago.

At once, the tremors of the palaces settled down and did not continue.

This was one of Fang Yuan’s preparations these last days.

Mortal Gu Houses were nothing special to Gu Immortals. Unless it was regarding an Immortal Gu House, but how could these Gu Immortals inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven have that?

Hei Fan was ruthless, before he died, he killed all of the criminal Hei tribe Gu Immortals. The inheritances left behind were naturally lacking some crucial information, there was no way they contained information about Immortal Gu Houses.

And with just these Gu Immortals inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven, there was little hope of them creating an Immortal Gu House.

Furthermore, even though the palaces were huge and grand, the methods used were too old. Fang Yuan could easily unravel them. Old Immortal Chen Chi letting him stay here for such a long time was a huge mistake!

“These Gu Immortals in Hei Fan grotto-heaven have lived in peace for too long, without great struggle and competition to spur on progress, they have basically no alertness.” Fang Yuan looked at Old Immortal Chen Chi’s corpse, snickering in disdain.

Chen Chi died with his eyes wide open, he was still in shock, Fang Yuan had attacked too quickly, he could not even react to show fear.

Fang Yuan confirmed that Chen Chi was dead, before keeping him inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Next, he used familiar face, turning into Old Immortal Chen Chi’s appearance and leaving the room, walking out openly.

“Greetings to old ancestor!”

“Greetings to old ancestor!”

Along the way, Fang Yuan met many Gu Masters and mortals of all genders and age. After seeing Fang Yuan, they knelt down, expressing their most respectful greetings.

Every time, Fang Yuan activated his Gu worms, using a formless force to help them stand up, he asked them some questions in encouragement, these descendants of Chen Chi were extremely grateful to him.

They did not know that the real Chen Chi had already been killed by Fang Yuan, they were greeting the culprit.

They did not suspect a thing, because this was how Old Immortal Chen Chi usually acted.

Fang Yuan had been toying with Chen Le these last days, he obtained a lot of intel, among which were Chen Chi’s habits.

Otherwise, with just familiar face, he could only disguise his appearance, he could not alter his actions to fit those of Old Immortal Chen Chi as well.

Fang Yuan walked openly and confidently. After a while, he arrived at a palace.

“Ancestor, why are you here?” Chen Li Zhi heard a disturbance and walked out of the palace, greeting him.

He looked at Fang Yuan with much puzzlement.

He was not suspecting his identity, of course, instead, he was thinking, ancestor was clearly using the excuse of being bedridden currently to delay the meeting with Hei Cheng. Why did he appear in public so openly today, going against the original plan?

“Little Zhi, that Hei Cheng came to me secretly earlier, we have already finished negotiating. Let’s go in, I have a matter to discuss with you.” Fang Yuan said slowly, he patted Chen Li Zhi’s back, he walked ahead with his arms behind his back.

The entire group of palaces were mortal Gu Houses.

But these three Gu Immortals’ accommodations respectively belonged to them.

On this point, Old Immortal Chen Chi could not interfere. He could not control the lives of his descendants to this extent, right?

Chen Li Zhi heard Fang Yuan’s words and his thoughts shifted, his suspicions were lifted, he quickly moved forward, leading the way.

“Ancestor, please take a seat.” He bowed, directing Fang Yuan to his seat.

“Please have some tea.” Soon, he prepared a high quality tea and handed it over with both hands, having a respectful attitude.

After handing over the tea, Chen Li Zhi went down to sit at a lower seat.

After drinking the tea, Fang Yuan saw that Chen Li Zhi was seated far from himself, he said: “Oh, Little Zhi, bring your chair over, sit beside me.”

Chen Li Zhi was shocked and pleased, he joyfully answered: “Yes, ancestor. I will stand beside you and listen to your guidance.”

How could he stand?

There was a difference between sitting and standing.

When standing, one’s muscles were contracted, they could move rapidly.

When seated, the body relaxed, even their mental state would be affected, they would let down their guard.

Fang Yuan wanted to kill Chen Li Zhi, he had to make ample preparations.

Thus, Fang Yuan pretended to be unhappy: “I asked you to move your chair, why are you being so reluctant? I have already talked to Hei Cheng, now, we need to deal with Zheng Tuo’s gang. I need to entrust many matters to you, Yun Er and Le Er are both women, at the crucial moment, Little Zhi, you have to handle more responsibilities.”

Chen Li Zhi had countless thoughts in his mind, he had a feeling of joy after receiving recognition.

“Yes.” He quickly moved his chair, sitting beside Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan saw that the doors were open, he said: “Close the doors, these words are better kept as a secret from outsiders.”

Chen Li Zhi had no doubts, he followed the instructions.

“Hei Cheng could not endure it anymore, he came to me. After negotiating with Hei Cheng for a long time, he promised us many benefits, he is very sincere...” Fang Yuan said slowly.

Chen Li Zhi listened attentively.

He wanted to ask what price Hei Cheng paid, but because his ancestor did not mention it, he did not dare to ask.

Right now, Fang Yuan started to satisfy his curiosity, he exaggerated the amount somewhat, causing Chen Li Zhi to listen with joy and excitement.

“Hei Cheng actually offered a rank seven Immortal Gu?” At the end, Chen Li Zhi gasped, he was truly overjoyed.

“Will I lie to you? Take a look.” Fang Yuan chuckled, taking out flying sword Immortal Gu.

“Good Gu, this is a good Gu.” Chen Li Zhi quickly praised.

“Oh Little Zhi...” Fang Yuan said slowly.

Chen Li Zhi immediately raised his head, his ancestor was talking to him, how could he be distracted?

At this instance, sword light flashed!

Chen Li Zhi was startled, there seemed to be a flash of light just then?

Next, he looked at Fang Yuan’s hand subconsciously, the flying sword Immortal Gu there was gone.

Why did the Gu vanish?

Chen Li Zhi was perplexed, but suddenly, he felt his body going weak, there was a warm liquid flowing down his forehead.

Suddenly, his world started spinning.

He fell onto the ground, kneeling. One of his hands was on the floor supporting himself, while he attempted to grab Fang Yuan’s robe with the other, but he did not succeed.

Plop.

He fell onto the ground, completely dead.

Fang Yuan’s warm smile vanished, his expression turned icy cold.

Doing the same thing as before, Fang Yuan suppressed this palace as well, preventing it from shaking, others could not see any problems.

Next, he gathered Chen Li Zhi’s corpse and kept it in his immortal aperture, he opened the palace doors and left.

There were two female Gu Immortals remaining, Chen Wan Yun had greater threat, Fang Yuan’s next target was her!

“Sister, I finally succeeded in my new move, concealment within.” Chen Le smiled and said to Chen Wan Yun.

“Is that so?” Chen Wan Yun heard this and was overjoyed, she looked at Chen Le with an expression of satisfaction: “It seems that our Le Er is finally working hard. Let me guess, who is the person who motivated you to cultivate this hard?”

Chen Wan Yun pretended to think, she continued: “Hmm... I think this person has the surname Hei, and there is only one other word in his full name...”

Before she finished, Chen Le interrupted: “Sister, stop teasing me! I was very hardworking to begin with, okay!”

“Is that so?” Chen Wan Yun smiled as she saw Chen Le’s shy appearance, she thought: “Le Er might be innocent and grew up under our protection, but she knows how impressive Hei Cheng is, thus she is trying to improve herself. I was going to remind her, but it seems that I was worried for nothing.”

Chen Le could not deal with this glance, she took a step back, vanishing from Chen Wan Yun’s sight.

“Sister, I used concealment within, can you find me? Hehe, do you know where I am?” In an instant, Chen Wan Yun could hear Chen Le’s voice near her.

“Cheeky girl, after I find you, I will deal with you!” Chen Wan Yun showed an evil appearance, she was about to use her investigative killer move, when suddenly, she felt some disturbance outside, she was curious: “Why is ancestor here? Le Er, stop playing, go with me to greet him.”

Chen Le was about to dispel her immortal killer move, but suddenly, she had an idea, she remembered the time when Old Immortal Chen Chi made fun of her, she pouted: “Forget it, I will listen secretly by the side, let’s see if ancestor can find me. If he cannot find me, and I appear suddenly, he would be in shock.

Hehehe.”

“Oh you, you are too mischievous, you will not be able to get married.” Chen Wan Yun shook her head, walking out of the palace to greet Old Immortal Chen Chi.

Fang Yuan had familiar face, Chen Wan Yun and Chen Le could not find out his true identity. But Fang Yuan did not have an outstanding investigative killer move, he could not find Chen Le, who was concealed. In fact, even if he had a killer move like that, he could not use it openly.

Once he used it, his immortal aura would leak, it would invite suspicion.

Only immortal methods like dark assassination could completely conceal the aura of Immortal Gu, without leaking a trace, one could sneak attack and catch an enemy unprepared.

Chen Wan Yun brought Fang Yuan to his seat, she wanted to call Chen Le to come out, how could she peek at them with such disrespect?

But thinking about it: “Old ancestor dotes on Le Er, he gained a lot of benefits just now after negotiating with young master Hei Cheng, he is in a good mood. Even if ancestor discovers Le Er in hiding, he would surely not blame her.”

Thinking of that, Chen Wan Yun pretended to be unaware, passing the tea to him.

Fang Yuan drank a mouthful, he did the same thing again, asking Chen Wan Yun to sit closer to him.

Chen Le watched as she held in her laughter, she felt extremely excited.

Next, as she listened to Fang Yuan and Chen Wan Yun’s words, she gradually focused and upon hearing their gains, she was very happy, but she started worrying for Fang Yuan: “Young master Hei Cheng paid such a huge price, will this affect him negatively?”

Soon after, Fang Yuan took out flying sword Immortal Gu: “This rank seven sword path Immortal Gu was given to me by Hei Cheng, adding on to his previous offer. Yun Er, I want you to go to the cave where the three immortals live, using this as a chip to convince the three immortals to support Hei Cheng, are you willing to do it?”

Chen Wan Yun quickly got up: “Ancestor, I will follow your instructions.”

“Good, good, good.” Fang Yuan chuckled.

Chen Le’s gaze was focused on flying sword Immortal Gu as well.

This was the first time she was seeing a rank seven Immortal Gu, she could not hold in her curiosity, she wanted to jump out and give a surprise to her ancestor.

But at the next moment, a change occurred!

Dark assassination activated again.

How could Chen Wan Yun anticipate that her beloved ancestor, someone with such closeness to her, would attack?

Without any defense, this gentle female immortal followed in the footsteps of Chen Chi and Chen Li Zhi.

Chen Wan Yun was killed!

Fang Yuan retrieved Flying Sword, he sent the corpse into his immortal aperture, he got rid of the blood stains and left.

Chen Le was still concealed, she was covering her mouth with her hands, her eyes were wide open and staring, but her pupils had shrunk to pin size.

Her nostrils were expanded, she was breathing in deeply.

Her delicate body was shivering, tears were flowing down her beautiful tender cheeks silently.

Unbelievable!

Extreme terror!!

“How can this be? How can this happen!”

“What did I just see? What just happened?!”

“Is this an illusion? Definitely, this is all an illusion!”

“How can this be? Hehehe, hahaha, ancestor killed sister Yun Er?! How can that be!”

But the truth was in front of her very eyes.

Hearsay could be wrong, but seeing was believing!

Cold, cruel, she could not doubt what she saw at all!

Plop.

She knelt on the ground, collapsing weakly.

Her shoulders moved up and down, she was sobbing. On her lively face, there was fear, terror, confusion, and helplessness.

Her hands were still covering her mouth, she was desperately covering it, as if this could protect her.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1125: More Killing

Why did her ancestor kill Chen Wan Yun?

Chen Le could not understand, she could not imagine why.

She sobbed, her body shuddered, she suddenly thought of Chen Li Zhi. Did ancestor also go to find and kill him?

This was a simple inference.

No matter what, she had to find Chen Li Zhi and tell him about this!

At the crucial moment, Chen Le did not think of Hei Cheng, she thought of the Gu Immortals who were her most closely related family members.

Chen Le realized what she had to do, she stopped crying, standing up and activating her immortal killer move, concealing her appearance and running towards Chen Li Zhi’s palace.

But Fang Yuan did not go to Chen Li Zhi’s palace as Chen Le was thinking.

He did not discover Chen Le, and he had already killed Chen Li Zhi, thus, his final course of action was to go to Chen Le.

To find her and kill her!

A moment later, Chen Le arrived at Chen Li Zhi’s place.

“Why is there no one here?” Chen Le searched the palace, but did not find Chen Li Zhi.

Of course, she saw many mortals and Gu Masters.

But Chen Le did not alert them, even if she told them this shocking news, they might not believe her.

In the empty hall, fear and helplessness emerged again in Chen Le’s heart.

Ancestor Chen Chi had killed Chen Wan Yun, Chen Li Zhi was missing as well, he was likely to have met with disaster.

Chen Le could not help but cry again.

“What should I do? Oh, oh no! Young master Hei Cheng!” Chen Le finally thought of Fang Yuan at this time, she jolted back to focus.

She felt that at this moment, the most reliable person was Hei Cheng.

She turned around, towards Hei Cheng’s accommodation.

Almost at the same time, Fang Yuan arrived at Chen Le’s palace.

Nobody was here?

“Strange, where would she go at this time?” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

The situation was changing beyond his expectations.

Fang Yuan raised his head and looked up at the sky of Hei Fan grotto-heaven, it was cloudless and azure in color.

Fang Yuan smiled at the sky, before going towards his own accommodation.

Where could Chen Le go?

There were only a few places.

Gu Immortals and mortals did not have many common topics of interest.

Returning to his accommodations, Fang Yuan turned into Hei Cheng, waiting for Chen Le to come.

At this time, a bright light was shot into the sky, it went up and spread out in all directions, it was bright and piercing to the eyes.

“Is this the thing Chen Le mentioned before... that warning of bright light, to ask the immortals to work together in defense?” Fang Yuan frowned instantly.

These days, he had been getting intel from Chen Le.

Among which, one of them was about the time when Gu Immortals first appeared in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, they struggled against desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts.

The first few generations of Gu Immortals joined forces to resist them. Normally, they would be in different parts of the grotto-heaven, but when one side was attacked, they would send out a signal during critical times, inviting Gu Immortals from other areas to help out, and paying them afterwards.

“As the number of Gu Immortals increased in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, they got stronger, and this warning of bright light has not been used for a hundred years. This time, it must have been sent out by Chen Le. Hehe, I underestimated this girl, she dealt with the situation well!” Fang Yuan smiled.

With his craftiness, he already deduced many things.

He had already killed three people, only Chen Le was left. And the warning method could only be used by Gu Immortals, it was clear that Chen Le had activated it.

Why did Chen Le activate this without meeting him?

Evidently, she had found out that one of the others had met with disaster.

No matter where she is hiding or what method she used, since she did not come to find him, that meant she was suspicious of him.

Then, the immortals were going to gather together now, how would Fang Yuan deal with them?

Actually, a moment ago.

Chen Le was about to find Hei Cheng, when she suddenly had a thought, even if she found young master Hei Cheng, what if he could not defeat her ancestor?

Chen Le did not know about Hei Cheng’s strength, but in her mind, she felt that Old Immortal Chen Chi had deep and immeasurable power. This was the result of Old Immortal Chen Chi’s authority that had been ingrained in her.

“I have to think of a perfect method!” Chen Le thus thought of the warning of bright light.

The alert of bright light soared into the sky, Chen Le’s mind slowly calmed down.

“Will ancestor come to find me after seeing this light?” Thinking of this, Chen Le started feeling scared again.

She gritted her teeth, she decided to go find Fang Yuan.

From start to finish, she did not suspect that Fang Yuan was the culprit!

When bright light soared to the sky, Gu Immortals in all the other areas reacted.

“What happened? At this timing, old man Chen Chi actually sent a warning signal and asked us to go help him?” In front of their cave, Feng Jun frowned upon seeing the light in the sky.

Zhou Min also had a look of suspicion: “This matter is quite peculiar. Old Immortal Chen Chi has a total of four immortals, they are the strongest force among us. Inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven, what kind of ancient desolate beast can make Chen Chi ask us for help?”

“You think this matter has to do with Hei Cheng?” Zheng Tuo pondered.

“Most likely.” Feng Jun nodded: “This warning of bright light has not been used for a hundred years, it is strange that it is activated at this time. Hei Cheng has already stayed at old man Chen Chi’s place for some days. They might have come to an agreement now, and are working together.”

“Old Immortal Chen Chi will definitely provide support if Hei Cheng is willing to give him enough benefits, it is not surprising.” Zheng Tuo thought over it: “No matter whether there really is an ancient desolate beast attack, or if Chen Chi is trying to scheme against us, we need to go and investigate the situation.”

“That’s right, we have practised blood light spirit suppression and are at the crucial moment. In a few days, we will be able to suppress the heavenly spirit and take the true inheritance forcefully. We need to stall for time now, but we need to be careful of what the other side is planning. We will give in to them for now, in a few days, Hei Fan grotto-heaven will belong to us!” Feng Jun snickered.

Immediately the three immortals moved out, towards Old Immortal Chen Chi’s palace.

At the same time, the two lone Gu Immortals also went there.

Hei Fan grotto-heaven was not small, but the Gu Immortals lived quite close to each other.

And because the three immortals used immortal killer moves, disregarding the immortal essence to travel.

In a moment, they were already halfway there.

At this time, a flying figure appeared in front of the three immortals.

“Its Chen Le!” Zhou Min was the first to recognize the person.

Chen Le was bathed in blood, she had a shocked expression, she seemed to be escaping for her life, the three immortals looked at each other.

Was there really an ancient desolate beast attack?

“Chen Le, slow down, we are here, what happened over there?” Zheng Tuo called out.

Chen Le saw these three immortals and was overjoyed with surprise: “Seniors! It is great to see you. That Hei Cheng is heinous, after failing to negotiate with our ancestor, he used a sneak attack and killed sister Wan Yun! I was the one who sent the warning, I escaped, but Hei Cheng is still chasing me, thankfully, I had my immortal killer move’s concealment, I managed to survive.”

“What!” The three immortals heard this and were deeply shocked.

“Hei Cheng is so daring?”

“He dared to attack Old Immortal Chen Chi, he is so vicious and ruthless, he is likely going to attack us as well.”

“Strange, he has to get Hei Fan’s true inheritance, without our support, how can he get it?”

“A life for a life is perfectly justified. We will have to take down Hei Cheng!”

“To play safe, we need to gather with the other Gu Immortals. Chen Le, don’t worry, we are family, we will definitely uphold justice for you!”

“Justice?” Chen Le smiled suddenly, attacking.

Under the three immortals’ shocked gazes, sword light flashed and stabbed into Zheng Tuo’s body.

Zheng Tuo was caught unawares, even though he had a mortal killer move defending him, dark assassination was an immortal killer move, with rank seven Immortal Gu Flying Sword as the core, it could not be stopped, it cut him into half on the spot!

Instantly, Zheng Tuo died!

“Brother!!” Zhou Min shouted.

Feng Jun was furious, he clapped his hands, intense winds assaulted Fang Yuan.

“Oh brother—!” Zhou Min cried out, watching the two halves of Zheng Tuo’s corpse fall to the ground, his organs and blood scattered in the air.

Feng Jun carried Zhou Min, dragging her as they retreated.

“Chen Le, are you crazy! You dared to kill my brother Zheng Tuo, I will fight it out with you!” Zhou Min growled, her beautiful face was flushed red: “I will kill you!”

“Kill me?” Chen Le stopped her movement, she scoffed as she looked at Zhou Min in disdain: “You?”

Zhou Min was furious, she struggled intensely, getting free from Feng Jun’s arms: “Brother, what are you doing! Let go of me, this lowly bitch killed our big brother! She killed him! I will pull out her skull and use it as an offering for our brother!!”

“Calm down, sister! Don’t fall for his provocations. How can this be Chen Le? Don’t you know Chen Le? Earlier, that was a sword path immortal killer move! This is not Chen Le!” Feng Jun shouted, looking at Chen Le, his eyes were bursting with fire, filled with hatred.

“It seems that someone here has some brains.” Chen Le smiled, her appearance changed suddenly, becoming that of Hei Cheng.

“You are indeed Hei Cheng!” Feng Jun’s body shook.

“Scoundrel!!!” Zhou Min scolded.

“From their expressions, it seems that they were not aware that I was the killer. Strange... Chen Le did not use any information path Gu worms to tell them?” Fang Yuan was confused.

He did not know that from start to finish, Chen Le did not suspect him.

After creating the warning, Chen Le ran off to his accommodations.

Fang Yuan returned to his room long ago, but after seeing the warning of bright light while waiting for Chen Le, he thought he was exposed. Thus, he adapted to the circumstances and went out to weaken the remaining immortals’ battle strength in Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Since Chen Chi’s side had three immortals dead already, the next largest group were the three immortals who were sworn siblings.

Thus, Fang Yuan turned into Chen Le’s appearance, flying towards their cave.

In the end, he met the three immortals and used dark assassination to kill the most threatening of them, the blood path Gu Immortal Zheng Tuo.

Meanwhile, Chen Le went to Fang Yuan’s room, she could not find him, she felt disappointment and immense worry.

She did not know that out of sheer coincidence, she had narrowly escaped death.

“I did not put any hope in this disguised assassination attempt, but the process was unexpectedly smooth. The Gu Immortals inside this Hei Fan grotto-heaven are truly incomparable to Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals. After such a long period of peace, they have low vigilance. Anyway, I should kill these two first.”

Thoughts churned in his mind like fireworks, Fang Yuan thought of many things, but only a moment had passed in the outside world.

His lips curled up, he charged towards Feng Jun and Zhou Min.

To kill!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1126: Verge of Death

“He actually charged over!” Feng Jun’s pupils shrunk, he was stunned by Fang Yuan’s courage.

Fang Yuan charged forward relentlessly, even though he was alone, his stance was overwhelming, it was as if he was clad in wind and lightning!

Killing intent surged, it was like a terrifying claw, slashing towards the veil of life and death.

The Gu Immortals in Hei Fan grotto-heaven would often spar with each other, but when would they ever be in a life and death situation against each other?

“Retreat!” At once, Feng Jun only had one word in his mind.

In contrast, Zhou Min was spewing with anger, she said excitedly: “Good! Scoundrel, get ready to die!!”

She was already beyond furious, she wanted to take revenge for her brother, she wanted to tear this scoundrel, Fang Yuan, into pieces, to pull out his tendons and snap his bones!

Feng Jun dragged along Zhou Min as they escaped, but Zhou Min had already activated her immortal killer move.

Her eyes were wide open as they stared, golden white light shot out of her eyes. The light was extremely sharp, as if it was made of blades and daggers.

Zhou Min was a light path Gu Immortal, she was nurtured by a Gu Immortal from a past generation, she had sight light Immortal Gu.

And she was currently activating her strongest move — Farsight Weapon Light!

“It is this move.” Fang Yuan saw Zhou Min’s actions and came to a realization, his charging speed increased instead!

In his mind, he recalled a scene from a few days ago.

“Young master Hei Cheng, why are you sighing?” Chen Le asked: “Do you not like this scenery?”

“Thanks for your concern, Miss Le Er. The scenery is beautiful, I am truly impressed. But I have the mission of inheriting Hei Fan’s true inheritance, I am very worried... As I recall, Zheng Tuo and the others are not easy to talk to...” Fang Yuan acted like he was troubled.

Chen Le frowned too: “Indeed... ancestor had said this before, those three Gu Immortals have their own ambitions, they are different from us.”

“Birds of a feather flock together, those three are ambitious people! Even if I obtain your support, I will still be short of obtaining the true inheritance. Do you think these three would find trouble with me on the pretext of sparring? Will they obstruct us?” Fang Yuan asked.

Chen Le smiled: “No need to worry, actually, if you know about them, those three immortals are not scary. For example, Gu Immortal Zhou Min has a killer move called farsight weapon light, it is very powerful. Once she uses it, her eyes will shoot out golden white light, it can cut down anything. But this move is quite peculiar, the farther the distance, the stronger it is. If you are very close to Zhou Min, then this move is drastically weakened. If you are right in front of her, even a mortal killer move can block farsight weapon light.”

A warm smile appeared on Fang Yuan’s face: “Oh? There is such an interesting move, I am truly enlightened. Le Er, what other interesting stories are there?”

Chen Le looked at Fang Yuan, seeing his handsome face looking right at her, emitting lots of affection, it was so intense as if the summer winds were drowning her in bliss.

Chen Le had a flushed expression, she quickly turned around, not daring to look at Fang Yuan directly.

Her face was completely red, she looked afar as she stammered: “Young, young master, if you want to know, I will tell you.”

Inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven, some of these Gu Immortals’ inheritances came from Old Ancestor Hei Fan, like the blood path one for example, it was a result of Hei Fan’s research. And some came from the criminal immortals, like Zhou Min’s light path inheritance, and Old Immortal Chen Chi’s rule path inheritance.

These proper Gu Immortal inheritances were all very comprehensive.

The details of large numbers of mortal Gu, a few Immortal Gu, and all sorts of Immortal Gu recipes and mortal Gu recipes, cultivation experiences and information about the outside world.

Some of these contents were sensitive, like treasure yellow heaven, they were all erased by Hei Fan.

However, some information regarding the other inheritances was retained.

The Hei tribe Gu Immortals were quite close together. For example, outsiders might not about about farsight weapon light, but how could they themselves not know?

Thus, this kind of information was all left inside their inheritances. As time passed, mortals went up Immortal Succession Mountain and inherited them. Gu Immortals appeared and passed away, during this process, there were all sorts of reasons, like fighting over benefits or personal conflicts, they fought against each other. The Gu Immortals' methods were passed down over generations, everybody knew about their moves, these were no secrets.

Fang Yuan's preparation was not only regarding the assassination plan, he also collected a lot of other information.

Farsight weapon light!

This was quite a troublesome immortal killer move.

Under normal circumstances, when seeing an unknown attacking method, Gu Immortals would choose to retreat and observe cautiously. Nobody would charge in without knowing the situation and place themselves in trouble.

According to Fang Yuan's vigilant nature, there was a high likelihood of him doing so, unless the difference in their strengths was very big.

And that was exactly what Zhou Min wanted.

By the time Fang Yuan realized the effect of farsight weapon light, he might have already spent a lot of time, effort, immortal essence, or even gotten injured in the process.

When Gu Immortals battle, information often led to having an advantage!

Thus, under normal circumstances in the Gu Immortal world, they would keep their Immortal Gu secret, immortal killer moves were rarely used publicly. They would practise their moves in private. The Gu Immortal's immortal aperture was also rarely shown to others. Because the environment inside revealed the secrets of the Gu Immortal's dao marks. The resources inside were often food for Immortal Gu, all these could be used to deduce what Immortal Gu the Gu Immortal had.

Fang Yuan withstood the farsight weapon light, he charged forward with unparalleled vigor.

Of course, he was not rash.

His robe was previously stained with blood.

These blood stains were not eye-catching, but they were formed from an immortal killer move!

Blood path immortal killer move – Bloodstained Conqueror's Robe!

During the period before the opening of treasure yellow heaven, Fang Yuan was unable to develop his immortal aperture, because Lang Ya Sect was suppressing him, he had a tough time. But he did not waste his time, he deduced this immortal killer move to make up for his weakness.

Fang Yuan had many weaknesses.

But he considered it deeply, his greatest weakness was in defense.

During the second earthly calamity, this flaw was evident. If he did not have Dang Hun Mountain as a base for defense, Fang Yuan would have likely died.

Compared to investigative and information path methods, Fang Yuan would rather play safe and settle his weakness in defense first.

Due to his wisdom path and blood path grandmaster attainment levels, as well as the immense blood path foundation built during his previous life, Fang Yuan did not have much difficulty in creating bloodstained conqueror's robe.

At this moment, with blood asset Immortal Gu as the core, bloodstained conqueror's robe was showcasing its capability in battle!

The effect was superb!

Fang Yuan charged towards the farsight weapon light, his body did not waver, he had no injuries at all, his immortal essence expenditure was also reducing.

"Like what Chen Le had said, the closer I get, the lower farsight weapon light's power becomes, thus, even bloodstained conqueror's robe's immortal essence expenditure is falling."

Fang Yuan made such a decisive and wise choice, in the blink of an eye, he was already very close to Zhou Min.

They were less than a hundred steps away!

"Die die die!" Zhou Min cried out continuously, the sharp light in her eyes continued to shoot out brightly.

She was overcome with anger, she was not a threat.

Feng Jun, who was calmer, felt huge fear as his hair stood on end!

Fang Yuan's advancement made him feel an immense sense of danger.

The great shock made him use his most familiar defensive method subconsciously.

Immortal killer move — Luck Whirlwind!

Huge winds blew, Fang Yuan was pushed away by a mystical force.

Chen Le's words reverberated in Fang Yuan's mind: "Speaking of which, Gu Immortal Feng Jun is also quite strong. He is the only person who ascended Immortal Succession Mountain and successfully became a Gu Immortal. Such immortals are more formidable than us, who were nurtured by our seniors. Furthermore, Feng Jun cultivates the famous luck path..."

Luck path.

A Gu Immortal path with few members.

Luck path was created by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, even though it was famous, actual luck path Gu Immortals were few in number.

As the origin of luck path, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left behind three true inheritances, self luck, all living being’s luck, and heaven and earth luck.

Self luck was in Lang Ya blessed land, it was given to Long Hair Ancestor as payment, among which, Dog Shit Luck ended up in Fang Yuan’s hands.

All living being’s luck was placed in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. A portion of it was given to the winner of the Imperial Court contest. Fang Yuan had once possessed connect luck Immortal Gu, it was part of all living being’s luck.

Feng Jun’s true inheritance had also originated from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Back then, the Hei tribe Gu Master entered Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and fortunately obtained a portion of the true inheritance, he received qi luck Immortal Gu.

Thereafter, he cultivated to Gu Immortal level and passed it down for generations. The last generation had been punished after Hei Feng Yue’s disappearance and the loss of attitude Gu, thus this true inheritance was left in Immortal Succession Mountain.

Feng Jun obtained this true inheritance, he had qi luck Immortal Gu, the move he was most familiar with and had practised the most was luck whirlwind.

This move was very special.

When the target attacks, by using it, it could repel the target.

When the target retreats, if it is used, it could drag the target back to the user.

Once this move was used, intense winds would form, but that was only on the surface, the key was that formless force.

Fang Yuan could not see this formless force, he was hit by the move again and was sent away.

At once, their distance enlarged.

As if his hard work had been in vain.

But Fang Yuan smiled as his lips curled up, he thought to himself: “Luck whirlwind... the second time already.”

According to what Chen Le said, this move could not be used extensively, in one day, it could only be used a hundred times.

Just take it as a hundred, this might seem like a lot, but it was not!

Activating luck whirlwind was not as simple as it seemed on the surface.

The first issue was immortal essence, Feng Jun was a rank six Gu Immortal, he did not have a deep foundation, using this killer move would expend immortal essence, how long could Feng Jun last?

And immortal killer moves could not succeed with every use, each time Feng Jun failed, he would not only suffer a backlash, he would be unable to repel Fang Yuan, he would be able to get close and kill them.

Thus, it might seem like Fang Yuan could do nothing to Zhou Min and Feng Jun, but he actually had complete advantage in this situation.

Feng Jun and Zhou Min were walking on the side of a steep cliff, if they were careless, they would die without intact corpses.

“Die, go and die!!” Zhou Min was still furious, she stared at Fang Yuan as her eyes shot out white light.

“Retreat, we must retreat!” The calmer Feng Jun felt his mouth going dry, his heart was pounding as his body was covered in cold sweat.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1127: Resolving the Situation by Killing!

The two sides did not fight for very long, but Feng Jun already had the intention to retreat and escape.

Fang Yuan first assassinated the strongest rank seven blood path Gu Immortal Zheng Tuo, before charging forward and using the best tactic to gain the absolute advantage!

Feng Jun was not an idiot, even if he lacked battle experience, he knew that he was in great danger.

He wanted to retreat, it was a wise choice.

In Gu Immortal battles, they fought not only with strength but also with wits!

“Sister has lost it due to her emotions, Hei Cheng is a rank seven Gu Immortal, even if we cooperate, we cannot defeat him. We should join up with the other Gu Immortals, and with Old Immortal Chen Chi at the lead, encircle and kill him!”

Feng Jun thought of this and started to retreat.

He used his immortal killer move, his body moved like a cloud, bringing him and Zhou Min away towards the left.

“What are you doing? Brother, let me kill him, let me kill him!” Zhou Min screamed as she struggled in Feng Jun’s arms.

Feng Jun smiled bitterly, he increased the strength he was using on Zhou Min, he pacified her: “Don’t move, I am getting some distance to create a chance for your farsight weapon light!”

Zhou Min heard this and shuddered, she said excitedly: “Good idea!”

She concentrated, staring fixedly at Fang Yuan.

With greater distance, farsight weapon light became stronger, Fang Yuan’s defense would be under greater pressure.

Fang Yuan looked at the cloud below their feet, he smiled without concern.

He did not chase them, he charged down and landed on the ground, he picked up Zheng Tuo’s corpse which was split into two, putting both pieces into his

immortal aperture.

“Evil thief! Let go of our brother’s corpse!” Zhou Min shouted, her lungs were exploding from anger.

Fang Yuan’s actions were truly vile. Not only did he kill Zheng Tuo, he did not even let his corpse off.

How could he let it off?

The dao marks of this rank seven blood path Gu Immortal were an immense boost to Fang Yuan’s foundation!

Looking at it, including Zheng Tuo, Fang Yuan had already killed four Gu Immortals, it was hard to annex the immortal aperture as it had strict conditions, but the gain in dao marks was immense.

“Ordinary Gu Immortals would only absorb the dao marks of an enemy of the same path due to the conflict between dao marks. Otherwise, they would get more trouble instead. However, my sovereign immortal body is different, the dao marks do not conflict, this is amazing! I can absorb the dao marks of any enemy I kill and increase my foundation. This seems to be the best way to increase my strength!”

At this moment, Fang Yuan had a new insight.

This sovereign immortal body was created from sovereign immortal fetus Gu, Spectral Soul wanted to revive using it.

If he really succeeded in reviving, the consequences were unthinkable!

Firstly, Spectral Soul had devoured so many souls in the door of life and death, he had countless cultivation experiences. Secondly, all of his paths were great grandmaster and above! Finally, he had the help of Shadow Sect’s remnant forces.

With this starting point, he could repeat what he did in his era, killing everyone and everything. He could annex the immortal apertures of Gu Immortals he killed or absorb the dao marks they had. His growth would be at an incredible speed, it would surpass one’s imagination!

Unlike Fang Yuan, who only had grandmaster attainment level in four paths, it was hard for him to annex immortal apertures, he could only absorb dao marks in most cases.

Fang Yuan placed Zheng Tuo’s corpse in his immortal aperture, Zhou Min looked at with this anger and hatred.

Feng Jun did not speak, he felt aggrieved, but also let out a sigh of relief.

“It seems that Hei Cheng does not have movement methods, or maybe he uses the upper extreme heavenly eagle normally. This immemorial desolate beast has yet to grow fully, it only has rank six battle strength, he did not let it out because he is afraid of farsight weapon light killing it?”

Feng Jun became less worried.

But at the next moment, his mouth opened wide, a shocked expression appeared on his face.

It turned out that Fang Yuan had activated Sword Escape, his body flew into the sky like a sword.

His speed was so fast, Feng Jun and Zhou Min were completely stunned from shock!

“How can he be this fast?” Zhou Min said.

“So this is his real speed!” Feng Jun’s heart was about to jump out, his movement method was simply outmatched!

In a few breaths of time, Fang Yuan got close to them again.

His icy killing intent almost froze Feng Jun’s heart.

Immortal killer move — Luck Whirlwind!

At the moment of crisis, he had to use his trump card again.

Like what happened earlier, Fang Yuan was sent away again.

“The third time, hehe.” Fang Yuan noted, he had been repelled three times, but he felt no dejection.

Zhou Min finally became sober-minded.

She was completely shocked by Fang Yuan’s speed, her forehead was full of sweat, her anger dwindled, and fear took over.

“Quickly leave! This person is too strong, let’s gather with the rest first!” Zhou Min yelled.

Feng Jun heard this and felt glad at her change of mindset.

With Zhou Min’s help, the two rose in speed, they rapidly escaped for their lives.

Fang Yuan chased after them, shooting out with bursts of speed at times.

But every time, Feng Jun’s luck whirlwind would ruin his attempt.

After chasing them for some time, two Gu Immortals appeared before them.

They were the two Gu Immortal lone cultivators, they usually lived together, one was called Jiang Ji, the other was Gao Mi.

“Hold on, we’re coming!”

The two immortals were flying too, they quickly joined up with Zhou Min and Feng Jun.

Fang Yuan observed their expressions, seeing that they were showing no shock, he knew that Feng Jun and Zhou Min had used a certain information path method to inform these two Gu Immortals along the way.

“Hei Cheng, you are simply too bold, you dare to cause harm to us inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven!”

“Today, you will undoubtedly die!”

Feng Jun and Zhou Min stopped escaping, they went ahead to fight Fang Yuan.

“Young master Hei Cheng, you killed sister Wan Yun?! Did you kill old ancestor as well?” A shrill voice suddenly resounded.

It was Chen Le.

After using the warning, Chen Le went to find Fang Yuan, but at that time, Fang

Yuan had already left to find the three immortals including Zheng Tuo.

Chen Le could not find Fang Yuan, she was completely lost and helpless, she did not know what to do.

She did not dare to dispel her immortal killer move, she hid inside the palace for a while, before she received Feng Jun’s letter.

The letter stated that Fang Yuan disguised as Chen Le and used an immortal killer move to kill Gu Immortal Zheng Tuo, no matter how stupid Chen Le was, she realized instantly what the situation was.

She quickly went to Chen Chi’s place, but where could she find that old ancestor of hers?

Even though Feng Jun was escaping, he had already contacted the remaining immortals, Chen Le also decided to answer his call.

Thus, she appeared on the battlefield at this time.

“Oh, it’s you.” Fang Yuan looked at Chen Le, smiling cruelly: “You have finally gotten smarter. That’s right, be it Chen Chi, Chen Wan Yun, or Chen Li Zhi, even Zheng Tuo died in my hands. All of your rank seven Gu Immortals are dead now, the rest of you should surrender to me, after all, a wise person submits to circumstances.”

Chen Le’s expression turned pale, her body shook intensely.

Fang Yuan admitted it outright, this was a huge blow to her mental state.

“Why? Why did you do that for?!” Chen Le screamed in a sharp tone, tears were pouring out of her eyes: “Did we do anything wrong to you? Why must you do something so evil and cruel?!”

“Don’t be affected by him, Chen Le, let’s get into formation!” Zhou Min, who had regained her senses, shouted loudly.

With Fang Yuan in the center, a jade light ball suddenly appeared over a huge surrounding area.

This was a huge battle formation.

With Feng Jun, Zhou Min, Chen Le, and the other two immortals as the formation cores, they assembled an ancient battle formation!

“Hei Cheng, even if you are a rank seven Gu Immortal, you will die here today!”

“That’s right, we have already practiced this battle formation many times, we killed over a dozen desolate beasts and eight ancient desolate beasts.”

“You cannot escape from here! I will tear our your bones and tendons, and use them as offerings for the innocent souls of our comrades!”

Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s Gu Immortals shouted, their morale rose sharply.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, his calm expression did not change at all.

He said slowly and calmly: “Oh, Green City battle formation? Hehehe, it is only a small portion of the ancient battle formation Green City Rampage, do you think I am unaware of it?”

The expressions of the immortals changed, a bad feeling was emerging in them.

Chen Le’s expression paled even further, at this moment, she felt utter regret and hatred, she could not live with herself!

Because she was the one who told Fang Yuan about this Green City battle formation.

The Gu Immortals in Hei Fan grotto-heaven had to practice a huge formation in every generation. It was the Green City battle formation, it was used to kill desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts, it had incredible strength.

“I have rank seven cultivation level, while you people are just rank six. Thus, I expected you to use this move. After getting into formation, you won’t be able to run, right? Hehehe, when this battle formation is breached, you will all face a backlash, even if you do not die, you will suffer heavy injuries...”

Fang Yuan said in a plain tone.

His tone was very calm, he did not speak loudly, but the immortals could hear him clearly for some reason.

The morale that was raised earlier instantly got cut in several piecees after hearing his words. Before fighting, these Gu Immortals already had wavering determination!

“Now, I will show all of you my true strength.”

Fang Yuan called out, his body shook and a loud sound was heard, the aura of Gu worms burst out from within him!

Immortal killer move — Myriad Self!

In an instant, tens of thousands of Fang Yuan phantoms appeared in the space inside the entire battle formation.

They were all strength path phantoms!

And Fang Yuan’s true body was hidden among them, acting as one of the phantoms.

The battle commenced at this moment.

From the start, they entered the climax of the battle.

Feng Jun, Zhou Min, and the other Gu Immortals used their respective methods, all sorts of immortal killer moves were unleashed, causing huge damage to the myriad self army.

Fang Yuan’s strength path phantoms did not have high defense, but no matter how many were destroyed in battle, more strength path phantoms emerged and replaced them.

Fang Yuan had made ample preparation before the battle.

Even if he did not continue to activate myriad self, he had already stored hundreds of thousands of myriad self phantoms inside his immortal aperture in advance.

He did not lack the immortal essence!

Fang Yuan had a huge storage of green grape immortal essence!

Feng Jun and the rest soon realized that they were in a tough spot.

Without using immortal killer moves, they could not defend against the myriad self army attacking the battle formation. But if they used immortal killer moves, even though they could kill countless phantoms, Fang Yuan would also replenish them, their immortal essence would be wasted.

In this battle of attrition in immortal essence, Fang Yuan completely had the upper hand! Do not forget about the advantage of strength path, that was the minimal consumption of immortal essence. Meanwhile, the advantage of enslavement path was in battles of attrition.

Myriad self killer move combined the effects of both paths, it could display the strengths of both paths at once!

Fang Yuan waited patiently among the myriad self army, observing attentively.

All sorts of information was gathered by him, he committed them to memory.

After fighting for several hours, the Gu Immortals of Hei Fan grotto-heaven were extremely tired, not only were they tired mentally, the immortal essence expenditure was also starting to put a toll on them.

The moment they exposed weakness, Fang Yuan’s true body appeared!

“Hahaha, Chen Le, I need to thank you, without your information, how could I have killed Chen Wan Yun and the others?” Fang Yuan laughed loudly.

Chen Le felt like lightning had struck her, the pain in her heart could not be described with words.

Using this opportunities, Fang Yuan went for the killing blow.

Flying sword Immortal Gu!

A flash of light pierced Chen Le’s defenses, killing her instantly.

Always pick out the weakest enemy first!

Fang Yuan struck at the crucial moment, immediately killing one immortal on the other side.

Chen Le died on the spot, Green City battle formation became unstable instantly, it started shaking.

The other Gu Immortals quickly tried to stabilize it, succeeding after some effort.

“Next, it is time for the rest of you to die.” Fang Yuan smiled sinisterly, he did not attack, instead, he went back into the myriad self army.

The remaining four Gu Immortals had pale expressions, a cold chill was emerging in their hearts.

They were the ones encircling Fang Yuan, but at this very moment, none of these four Gu Immortals felt any joy or excitement.

His victory was assured!

From the start, Fang Yuan had used the most appropriate battle tactics, establishing his current huge advantage.

He was very aware about the methods of these Gu Immortals, but they, on the other hand, did not know about his methods.

Originally, the other party had an advantage.

For example, Chen Le’s concealment method, Fang Yuan could do nothing against it.

It was a pity, because Fang Yuan schemed against them, Chen Le joined the battle and formed the Green City battle formation, she gave up her greatest advantage.

In the end, it was because Hei Fan grotto-heaven had been in peace for too long, these Gu Immortals did not lack Immortal Gu or resources, but they truly paled in terms of battle experience.

Even though they sparred during their interactions, the experience gained from fighting on the verge of death could not be gained from friendly battles.

A long while later.

Fang Yuan killed two more Gu Immortals, before breaking apart Green City battle formation.

Feng Jun and Zhou Min escaped in defeat again.

The two immortals had completely lost their courage against Fang Yuan, they did not dare to fight, they escaped towards Immortal Succession Mountain.

Along the way, Fang Yuan killed Zhou Min, as Feng Jun crashed onto the peak of Immortal Succession Mountain with his heavily injured body.

“Heavenly spirit, save me!” He screamed loudly.

This situation was quite ironic, earlier he was still plotting to suppress the heavenly spirit, but now, he had no choice but to seek help from it.

“It is not going to save you.” Inside the stone pavilion, Fang Yuan’s figure appeared in a flash.

He spoke in a calm tone, he had no injuries on his body, he was still so charming and handsome. It was as if the battle earlier did not occur at all.

Feng Jun saw Fang Yuan and shuddered in fear, he focused his attention on the brass bell heavenly spirit.

The brass bell heavenly spirit had no reaction.

Feng Jun had a look of despair.

“Why?” He muttered.

“Why!” At the next moment, he screamed again, seemingly questioning the heavenly spirit.

But the brass bell heavenly spirit continued to be unmoved.

“Because you are all descendants of criminal immortals. Before Old Ancestor Hei Fan died, he thought of this point when leaving behind his true inheritance. Therefore, he set up this final test. Only by obtaining half of the votes of the Gu Immortals inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven could I inherit it. Hehehe, but what if you descendants of the criminal immortals bear hatred to Hei tribe and refuse to let our main tribe’s member obtain the true inheritance, what if you cause problems for us intentionally, what will we do?” Fang Yuan extended his hand, lightly touching this stone tablet.

“Then it can only be to kill all of you. After killing you all, I will be the only person left. Then I would also have satisfied the conditions for clearing the final test of Hei Fan’s true inheritance.”

Fang Yuan spoke lightly, there was even a faint smile on his face.

Feng Jun plopped onto the ground, he had an expression of despair, he was sprawled weakly.

He raised his head and looked up at the sky.

The azure sky which he sought to escape for so long, at the moment before his death, now seemed so endearing to him.

But at the next moment, he heard Fang Yuan’s words: “Now, I will give you a chance. As long as you submit to me, and serve me wholeheartedly from now on, I will spare your life.”

“What, what did you say?” Feng Jun’s body shook, he showed an expression of disbelief.

Fang Yuan repeated his words again, before saying: “You are a smart person, you are not swayed by emotions, you are unlike Zhou Min and Chen Le. I appreciate that aspect of you. Hand over your Immortal Gu and the luck path true inheritance’s details, I will spare your life and give you a chance to live.”

Feng Jun blinked, he was moved.

“You are not lying to me?” He raised his head and looked at Fang Yuan, anticipation was hidden deep within his gaze.

“Why would I lie to you? Killing you is as easy as breathing to me. But don’t even think of bargaining with me now.” Fang Yuan’s expression changed: “You only have three breaths of time to consider it, will you die, or surrender everything to me and submit, before making an alliance agreement.”

“I surrender.” At the first breath of time, Feng Jun said without hesitation.

“These are all of the Gu worms that I have.” At the second breath of time, Feng Jun handed over everything.

Fang Yuan nodded, stretching out his hand and keeping them, with Feng Jun’s cooperation, he suppressed all of them!

“Please make the alliance agreement.” Feng Jun breathed in deeply, he was already mentally prepared for an extremely harsh alliance agreement.

Swoosh!

A bloody hole appeared in his forehead.

He had an expression of shock, he stared at Fang Yuan fixedly as he gradually fell onto the ground.

The third breath of time had just passed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1128: Hei Fan’s Four Treasures (1/2)

Fang Yuan gathered Feng Jun’s corpse.

Together with the Gu Immortal corpses that he had collected earlier, Fang Yuan had a total of nine! And he also had nine corresponding Gu Immortal souls.

“Such gains are truly rare. For Gu Immortals in the outside world, even if they die, they may self-detonate. Among the Gu Immortals in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, only Feng Jun has some brains. This person was able to give in when needed, unfortunately, after I gained the upper hand, the situation was firmly within my grasp, he could not do anything. His eventual surrender was out of desperation, too bad for him, his enemy was me.”

Fang Yuan sighed as he set aside these thoughts.

He had won.

It was time for the rewards!

He turned around, entering the stone pavilion, he raised his head and looked at the brass bell heavenly spirit on the pillar, he said: “Right now, I am the only Gu Immortal inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven, I vote for myself to inherit Hei Fan’s true inheritance.”

The brass bell heavenly spirit was silent for a moment before shaking, emitting a loud bell sound.

Next, the stone pillars in the pavilion radiated with pure white light.

The white light was not painful to look at, it was very gentle.

As the bright light shone, the stone tablet became more transparent, it turned into a wall of light.

Inside the wall of light, there were several shadowy figures.

And on the surface of the wall, there were several lines of words.

Fang Yuan looked, the words were: the indistinct figures in the stone tablet are the contents of the true inheritance. The inheritor just needs to retrieve them by putting their hands in.

The final line was an instruction by Hei Fan — Descendant of Hei tribe, inheritor of the inheritance, may you achieve great things in life, do not let down the reputation of Hei tribe!

Fang Yuan looked at it and sighed.

Old Ancestor Hei Fan had put in immense effort in setting up this true inheritance, he thought of every aspect.

But a dead person was like an extinguished candle, even a legendary figure like himself could not predict everything in the future.

The incredibly strong Hei tribe had been wiped out, and Hei Fan’s true inheritance was taken by an outsider like Fang Yuan.

The world had changed, times were different. New forces prosper while old forces vanish, this was the changing of eras.

Fang Yuan settled his mood, he started acting according to the description on the wall.

He stretched out his left hand, to enter the wall of light.

The white light became brighter, as it shone on his left hand, Fang Yuan’s left arm became transparent as well.

Fang Yuan could see his skin, bones, flesh, and even his blood flowing in his vessels.

A small obstruction could be felt ahead.

Fang Yuan’s left hand touched the wall of light, it was as if he was touching an icy wall.

At the same time, he noticed: the white light shone on his blood and caused a reaction. His blood moved more quickly, the color also turned from bright red to dark red, before returning back to normal.

Next, the wall in front of his left hand became soft like water. Fang Yuan’s left hand easily got through the stone tablet like he was going into water.

Fang Yuan however, felt a chill in his heart, he thought: “So close! This light wall is a test towards my blood. Thankfully, I made ample preparations, I integrated blood asset Immortal Gu into familiar face and modified the killer move to disguise my blood as well. Otherwise, my efforts would have been in vain! This Hei Fan is so hard to deal with.”

Fang Yuan regained his cool, he started to assess this wall of light.

From the outside, he could see that there were four shadows in the wall, they were uneven in placement.

The largest shadow was like a ball, it was the size of a basin and was at the most central area of the wall.

On the upper right corner, there was a sharp shadow, it resembled a rock.

On the left side, there was also a shadow, it looked like intertwined threads.

There was also one spot at the bottom, this shadow was the smallest, like a finger.

Fang Yuan had worked so hard to obtain the famous Hei Fan’s true inheritance, but the contents seemed to be quite minimal.

Because of where he was standing, Fang Yuan’s left hand went to the left of the wall of light, he grabbed towards the shadow closest to him.

He held onto this thread-like shadow.

The shadow had a rough feeling, Fang Yuan felt like he was touching an old tree branch.

Next, Fang Yuan stretched out his hand and pulled out the mysterious shadow.

Once out of the wall, the aura was exposed.

Evidently, these were Gu worms.

These Gu worms were coiled together, they had similar appearance, they were like ginseng roots, or tree roots.

They were not Immortal Gu.

They were just mortal Gu.

But even so, Fang Yuan’s eyes shined, his breathing became rougher at once!

Mortal and Immortal Gu were vastly different.

Immortal Gu were unique. Mortal Gu could not compare to Immortal Gu, but there was a huge exception to this rule.

That was lifespan Gu!

That’s right, Fang Yuan pulled out a batch of lifespan Gu.

This was expected, yet unexpected.

Earlier, when Old Immortal Chen Chi had asked Fang Yuan for benefits, he mentioned lifespan Gu. Thus, Fang Yuan was mentally prepared for it. But to think there was so many.

“This is indeed a lot of lifespan Gu!”

Fang Yuan began to refine the lifespan Gu.

Mortal Gu could be refined using primeval essence.

Even though the lifespan Gu was not his, Fang Yuan had passed the test, he was the acknowledged inheritor.

As the white light shone, Fang Yuan quickly refined these lifespan Gu successfully.

He found out: “These lifespan Gu grants seven hundred and twenty years of lifespan in total!”

Immense gains!

Old Immortal Chen Chi had thought there would be at least three hundred years worth of lifespan Gu, but Fang Yuan could tell now that he had underestimated it.

Hei Fan grotto-heaven had over twice that amount of years worth of lifespan Gu!

“These lifespan Gu have great value.”

“I can use them for myself, who in this world would complain about having longer lifespan?”

“But I still have about eighty years to live, my lifespan is sufficient. Even if I do not use these lifespan Gu, I can use them for transactions.”

In transactions between Gu Immortals, immortal essence stones were just basic currency. Lifespan Gu had much greater value than immortal essence stones. No Gu Immortal would not want lifespan Gu! In many high end transactions, immortal essence stones were unusable, Gu Immortals only wanted lifespan Gu.

Lifespan Gu was an absolute hard currency out there!

After a long time of consideration, the lifespan Gu were all refined, becoming Fang Yuan’s property.

Fang Yuan placed the handful of lifespan Gu in his sovereign immortal aperture, keeping them securely.

He was not planning to use these lifespan Gu yet.

“Actually, it had been a long time since Hei Fan grotto-heaven was created. It is not strange that so many lifespan Gu were accumulated.”

“When can my sovereign immortal aperture produce lifespan Gu as well?”

Fang Yuan was rather fascinated by the prospect.

But he knew that he was far from this goal at this point.

Even though he was earning a lot of profits each month, those were his prior accumulations as an immortal zombie. His immortal aperture’s development was still in the basic stage. Only when he gathers enough production in resources to sustain the feeding of all his Immortal Gu could those initial developments be considered complete.

Fang Yuan suddenly thought of Lang Ya blessed land.

“Compared to Lang Ya blessed land, Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s existence is very short. Long Hair Ancestor was a person from three hundred thousand years ago, a legendary figure of the Medieval Antiquity Era!”

“Hei Fan grotto-heaven has about seven hundred years of lifespan Gu. Then how many years does Lang Ya blessed land have?”

Thinking about this, Fang Yuan’s eyes shined.

“Lang Ya blessed land definitely has much more lifespan Gu. No wonder Lang Ya land spirit can use up some to feed wisdom Gu!”

Fang Yuan could understand Heavenly Court’s actions at once.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, Heavenly Court attacked Lang Ya blessed land, even though they sacrificed Feng Jiu Ge, they went ahead without balking.

Lifespan Gu was likely one of the main reasons.

Thinking about it, the geezers in Heavenly Court were lacking lifespan, they could only sustain their lives through sleeping. It was easy to see how much attraction lifespan Gu had towards them!

Fang Yuan’s gaze returned to the center of the wall.

This shadow was the largest.

“It is at the center, is this a hint that this is the most precious treasure inside Hei Fan’s true inheritance” Fang Yuan’s heart jumped.

He stretched out his left hand towards the wall of light, soon, he touched that shadow.

It had an icy feeling, but the shadow was not smooth on the surface, it had many protrusions and holes, it was like a handful of sesame.

Fang Yuan tried to move it.

Very heavy!

Normal human strength could not carry it.

Fang Yuan activated his strength path mortal Gu, after gaining strength, he took it out with one hand.

After seeing this lump of shadow, Fang Yuan had a surprised look on his face.

This was not one entity, it was the combination of countless bodies.

It was a ball of ants.

Black ants, all gathered to fill the size of a basin, that were extremely heavy. Countless black ants were collected in a ball shape, they were extremely compacted and tight.

These ants were not ordinary ants, they were mortal Gu.

The previous item being mortal Gu was fine, because it was lifespan Gu, it had greater value than Immortal Gu from many Gu Immortals’ perspectives.

But this was also mortal Gu?

Fang Yuan felt perplexed and a bit confused.

Based on his knowledge, he could not recognize what this Gu worm was.

But forget that, Fang Yuan felt that since it was part of Hei Fan’s true inheritance, even as a mortal Gu, it could not be bad.

Thus, he began to refine it.

Mortal Gu could be refined using primeval essence, Fang Yuan was a Gu Immortal, he had unlimited primeval essence.

Layers of black ants were refined by him, becoming his property.

Under Fang Yuan’s manipulation, the ants split apart, revealing the center of the ball.

“Oh?” Fang Yuan’s expression changed, his gaze became sharp, because he felt the aura of Immortal Gu.

Actually, at the center of this ball of ants, there was something good! An Immortal Gu!

Ordinary ant mortal Gu were finally completely refined, they landed on the ground, there was only one Gu left in Fang Yuan’s hands.

Immortal Gu!

Compared to the other black ant mortal Gu, it was many times larger. It had the form of an ant, it had feelers, small legs, a large abdomen, it looked very chubby.

“Is this the queen of the ant group?” Fang Yuan guessed randomly.

This Immortal Gu had a strong aura, it was at a high level, it was a rank seven Immortal Gu.

As for what it was, Fang Yuan did not know.

He could not recognize it.

But whatever, he was going to refine it first.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1129: Hei Fan’s Four Treasure (2/2)

Refining Immortal Gu could not be done with primeval essence, he needed immortal essence.

At this time, Fang Yuan took a look at the brass bell heavenly spirit, thinking about it, he directly used his green grape immortal essence to refine this Gu.

The brass bell heavenly spirit had no reaction, on the surface, Fang Yuan could not tell what mentality it had. It was just a bell after all, it had no expressions.

The refinement process was very smooth, the rank seven Immortal Gu resembling an ant queen did not resist, it cooperated with him.

But it was still a rank seven Gu, Fang Yuan’s green grape immortal essence was greatly expended.

“Now, my stockpile of green grape immortal essence has dropped again.” Fang Yuan reminded himself.

In this trip to obtain Hei Fan’s true inheritance, he had consumed a lot of green grape immortal essence. His expenditure was mostly in battle, after all, other than myriad self, Sword Escape and flying sword Immortal Gu were rank seven, his sword path killer moves used rank seven Immortal Gu as the cores.

Even though the battles were not intense, his green grape immortal essence consumption was huge.

“After going back, I need to stock up on immortal essence, otherwise, I can’t feel safe.”

A moment later, Fang Yuan refined this rank seven Immortal Gu and kept it in his immortal aperture.

There were only two shadows left in the wall of light.

The shadow at the bottom had the smallest size, Fang Yuan left it to the end.

He stretched his hand in and grabbed the shadow at the top right corner.

This shadow was like a rock, but when Fang Yuan touched it for the first time, it reacted.

This shadow was very cold.

Fang Yuan took it out, it was indeed a piece of ice.

The upper portion of the ice was sealing a Gu worm.

Naturally, Fang Yuan’s attention was drawn to it.

Even though it was sealed in ice without any aura leaking.

But Fang Yuan’s eyes shone, he could recognize this was an Immortal Gu – “Year”.

Year Gu!

It was like a ladybug, thumb size and black in color, there were golden markings on its shell.

The golden markings were bright and shining, they showed images of a fierce beast growling, the sharp and menacing teeth left a deep impression. As for what beast it was, it was unclear.

“Oh, year Gu...” Fang Yuan sighed.

This was a famous Gu among time path Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan had a deep impression towards it.

Because it was very unique.

When Gu Immortals expend immortal materials, they could parallel refine a year Gu continuously.

Normal refinement and reverse refinement were mainstream in refinement path, parallel refinement was very rare.

Gu worms that could be parallel refined were very rare.

Year Gu was one of them.

Mortal level year Gu were less than ten years. There was one year Gu, two year Gu, five year Gu, and others.

When the year Gu rises to rank six, it would become an Immortal Gu, unique in the world. Rank six year Gu were at least ten years.

A ten year immortal level year Gu could be parallel refined using immortal materials, to make it twenty year Gu, thirty-eight year Gu, or at its highest, ninety-nine year Gu.

Hundred year Gu was rank seven, to refine a ten year Gu to hundred year Gu, it was not parallel refinement but normal refinement to increase rank instead.

Refinement in this case was tens to hundreds of times as difficult as parallel refinement, with equally low success rate.

Thousand year Gu was rank eight, in theory, ten thousand year Gu would be rank nine. but in history, there had never been a ten thousand year Gu.

But rank eight thousand year Gu had existed before.

The use of year Gu was very unique.

Corresponding to the usage by the Gu Immortal, the number of years would fall continuously. For example, a fifty year Gu might become a twenty year Gu after one use.

There was a specification when using year Gu, that it should not go overboard. For example, if a thousand year Gu is used and becomes nine hundred year Gu, it would fall from rank eight to rank seven. To increase its rank again through refinement, it would be troublesome and risky.

Strictly speaking, year Gu was a consumable Immortal Gu.

But it was not a one time consumable Gu like sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

It could be expended but replenished again.

This was a very special case among Gu worms.

“So Hei Fan had the Immortal Gu ‘Year’ in his possession. One good thing about year Gu is that it has no issues in terms of food. It has the same food as Spring Autumn Cicada, they both consume the water of the River of Time. However, how can I refine it?” Fang Yuan was unsure.

The year Gu in front of him was sealed by almost transparent ice.

Fang Yuan looked at this ice, he felt that this ice was quite special too.

Its effect was similar to fossilization or amber, it sealed the year Immortal Gu inside ice, so that it hibernated without leaking its aura.

“Why, why did Hei Fan seal year Gu? Wait, this is?” While observing, Fang Yuan had a new discovery.

He realized that there was some flowing water sealed at the bottom of the ice.

“This is water?”

Fang Yuan shook it, he could clearly see that there was water flowing, he could even hear a soft sound.

Water was sealed in ice, it was really quite strange.

Fang Yuan’s attention had been drawn to year Gu earlier. In comparison, the flowing water was not eye-catching.

At this moment, when Fang Yuan inspected it again, he realized: this ice was huge, year Gu only occupied a small portion, the flowing water took more than half of the space below. It gave a feeling that the ice was not sealing year Gu, but the water instead!

“To be given such treatment, is this flowing water a rank nine immortal material that surpasses rank eight?” Fang Yuan had a bold guess.

Rank nine immortal material, it could be used to refine rank nine Immortal Gu!

In this world, they were rare, having immense value.

A portion of rank nine immortal material being sealed like this was understandable.

Fang Yuan could not find a way to remove the ice, he could only set it aside, he held it with his right hand as his left hand entered the wall of light again.

This time, he went to the final shadow.

Taking it out, it was a rank five information path mortal Gu.

The details recorded inside were about Hei Fan’s true inheritance, it had immense value!

Firstly, the introduction to the Gu worms.

Fang Yuan took his first glance and saw the information about the ant ball.

“So the rank seven Immortal Gu at the center of the ant ball is the time path Immortal Gu, After!” [1. After sounds the same as ant queen if you read it in Chinese.]

Rank seven after Immortal Gu.

The recorded information noted the specifications of feeding after Immortal Gu.

The feeding of after Immortal Gu was quite unique.

This Immortal Gu could eat anything.

The feeding style was very unique too.

It produced black ant mortal Gu on its own, it sent them out to feed on all sorts of immortal materials before using these nutrients on itself.

“Any sort of immortal material can feed after Immortal Gu. The point is not about the immortal materials, but in preserving these black ant mortal Gu.”

These black ant mortal Gu were tough and could devour immortal materials, digesting them and retaining the nutrients.

But they were just mortal Gu.

Once too many of them were destroyed, the Immortal Gu, After, would starve. Even though the Immortal Gu could produce black ant mortal Gu, it could only produce one every month. If there were too few black ant mortal Gu, and after Immortal Gu could not be fed, it would die of hunger.

After all, this Immortal Gu, After, could not feed itself.

Fang Yuan felt enlightened, he continued reading, about the information on the ice.

The ice itself was a newly created type of rank eight immortal material, it was created by Immortal Bing Ren. The latter was invited by Hei Fan and went ahead to seal his two Immortal Gu.

One Immortal Gu was year Gu, it was only rank six. Fang Yuan had recognized it already.

The other Immortal Gu was the flowing water.

This was the greatest treasure within Hei Fan’s true inheritance!

It was named Years Flow Like Water, it was rank eight!

Rank eight time path Immortal Gu, Years Flow Like Water.

Rank eight Gu Immortals were rare, rank eight Immortal Gu were rarer, and had very great value. Many rank eight Gu Immortals did not even have a single rank eight Immortal Gu, they could not find one even after endless searching.

Hei Fan was a legendary character, the formidable champion who led Hei tribe to a domineering state, but in his life, he only had one rank eight Immortal Gu — Years Flow Like Water.

Fang Yuan’s situation was quite special.

As of now, he was a rank six Gu Immortal, but he already had three rank eight Immortal Gu.

One was attitude Gu, one was wisdom sword Gu, and now the third was Years Flow Like Water.

Ordinary Gu Immortals usually had a lack of Immortal Gu. Fang Yuan’s problem instead was that he had too many, and could not use them all optimally. Looking at some of his Immortal Gu like Wisdom Sword, he had not even started to use them yet.

This rank eight Immortal Gu, Years Flow Like Water, had one effect, that was to produce year Gu.

The more immortal essence expended by the Gu Immortal, the more year Gu produced, they could even produce immortal level year Gu.

Of course, the rule of Immortal Gu being unique still holds!

Right now, this rank six year Gu was around, unless Fang Yuan used and expended it, he could not create an immortal level year Gu from Years Flow Like Water.

If year Immortal Gu still existed, no matter how much immortal essence Fang Yuan used, he could only get mortal year Gu.

Fang Yuan continued to read.

Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water had two good points.

One was that it had a low usage requirement, even rank six Gu Immortals could use it. As long as they used green grape immortal essence, they would receive year Gu, even though the quantity was less than when using rank seven or eight immortal essence.

The second point was that Years Flow Like Water was easy to feed. It also fed on the water of the River of Time, just like year Gu and Spring Autumn Cicada.

This solved Fang Yuan’s greatest problem.

The feeding of rank eight Immortal Gu was a huge burden!

However, Years Flow Like Water had a flaw.

This was clearly listed in the information path Gu worm.

Once the seal of Years Flow Like Water was removed, its Immortal Gu aura would leak, year beasts would be lured towards it and would attack.

Year beasts, a type of special fierce beast that were rare even in the five regions and nine heavens, yet commonly seen in the River of Time. In terms of battle strength, there were desolate beast, ancient desolate beast, and immemorial desolate beast level year beasts.

The food of year beasts was year Gu.

The River of Time was the paradise of time path Gu worms, there were a vast number of wild time path Gu worms in it.

Year beasts were one of them, they ate year Gu as food.

The higher the rank of the year Gu, the more year beasts would be attracted to hunt them.

In fact, immortal level year Gu could also lure year beasts to attack. Even placing the immortal level year Gu inside the immortal aperture would not work.

Because in ordinary immortal apertures, there was a tributary of the River of Time. When year beasts smell the year Gu, they would travel into the tributary from the River of Time, and directly appear in the immortal aperture.

Immortal level year Gu had a huge attraction to the year beasts, Years Flow Like Water, which could endlessly produce year Gu, had hundreds or thousands of times as much attraction as immortal level year Gu for the year beasts!

Precisely because of this, when Hei Fan set up the true inheritance, he sealed year Gu and Years Flow Like Water, not exposing a trace of their auras.

At this point, Fang Yuan had completely understood what Gu worms he had obtained.

Next were the following important details.

Or more accurately, the immortal killer moves!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1130: Usage of Hei Fan’s Gu

The introductions of countless immortal killer moves were displayed before Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan restrained his excitement, he inspected carefully.

There were immortal killer moves that encompassed offense, defense, movement, healing, and other aspects.

These were all time path immortal killer moves, the cores used were mostly year Gu and after Gu. Few of the immortal killer moves used the Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water as a core. Using a rank eight Immortal Gu as a core of an immortal killer move would naturally produce incredible effects.

In this regard, Fang Yuan had personal experience.

He had familiar face, it was a legendary method that used the rank eight attitude Gu as the core.

Of course, with Fang Yuan’s rank six cultivation level, his green grape immortal essence could not activate Years Flow Like Water. It was unlike attitude Gu, which only needed mental energy to use.

“Attitude Gu is the legendary Immortal Gu recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, in terms of ease of use, Years Flow Like Water cannot compare to it. However, thinking about it, didn’t Hei Fan give attitude Gu away to Hei Feng Yue...”

These immortal killer moves were truly eye-opening to Fang Yuan.

Many theories were involved, the coordination of Gu worms was stated clearly, he only took a look, but he felt that he had already benefited greatly from the knowledge gained.

There were more than thirty immortal killer moves, some of the immortal killer moves were split between rank six, seven, and eight levels, in some of their descriptions, Hei Fan had also left behind his insight and experiences when creating and using them in the past.

“Bountiful year?” Fang Yuan’s gaze was fixed.

He discovered a rather interesting immortal killer move.

Bountiful year.

This was the name of an immortal killer move.

The core Immortal Gu used was immortal level year Gu.

There were tens of thousands of supplementary mortal Gu. It was a tough process to activate the move, Hei Fan had left behind his experience in using it. Even for a legendary figure like him, when using this immortal killer move himself, he would need two or three days of preparation to execute it!

The expenditure of immortal essence was huge, but bountiful year’s effect was that for the next year, starting right from the moment of successful activation of the killer move, all of the resources inside the immortal aperture would be produced at a higher rate!

This was an immortal killer move used to develop the immortal aperture.

It was a very rare move, but it had great use and value. Hei Fan also praised this immortal killer move greatly.

According to the description, he was not the creator of this immortal killer move, he had exchanged for it with a person called Pill Immortal.

Fang Yuan took a closer look, bountiful year needed to use many mortal Gu, if he wanted to prepare for it, he would need to buy them from treasure yellow heaven.

He was definitely going to use this killer move.

But not only did he need a lot of immortal essence, there was a lot of expenditure in terms of year Gu as well.

“The year Gu that I have is only a little over the hundred year level. I need to parallel refine it until I can use bountiful year. Otherwise, if it falls to to the level of a mortal Gu, that would be a severe loss.”

Fang Yuan continued to read.

Among these killer moves, some had incredible power, some were extremely wondrous, but to Fang Yuan, they were not especially important.

Fang Yuan had never forgotten about his true goal all along.

That was to find a method to delay the calamities and tribulations in his immortal aperture.

“Days pass like years!” His eyes flashed, he saw his target.

This immortal killer move also used immortal level year Gu as the core, with a huge number of supplementary day Gu. Once used, it could slow down the time in the immortal aperture.

Simply from the name itself, the effect was that one day in the immortal aperture would be extended to the length of a year.

However, Hei Fan had noted with great caution: extending one day into the equivalent of a year was purely theoretical. The actual effect varied greatly based on circumstances.

For example, a strength path Gu Immortal with primarily strength path dao marks would receive much lower effect when using this time path killer move.

If a time path Gu Immortal used it on themselves, like Hei Fan, the effect would be amplified by the Gu Immortal’s time path dao marks, the effect would be much better.

And also, using the same killer move on a low grade blessed land and a high grade blessed land would produce different results.

“Months pass like years.”

Fang Yuan continued to read, there was another immortal killer move that was very similar to days pass like years.

It could also slow the rate of time in the immortal aperture, it could turn what would be one month in the immortal aperture into the duration of a year. The core Gu was still immortal level year Gu, but the supplementary Gu were month Gu now.

Day Gu, month Gu, year Gu.

These were all time path Gu worms that were closely related.

Other than days pass like years and months pass like years, there were also two other immortal killer moves, they were called years pass like months and years pass like days.

The former two were used to slow the time in the immortal aperture, the latter two were used to accelerate the time in the immortal aperture.

Slowing the rate of time in the immortal aperture meant that the calamities and tribulations would be further apart. For example in Fang Yuan’s case, he had to undergo tribulation every two months in the outside world’s time. After using days pass like years, he would only need to undergo the next tribulation in decades or even a century.

Seeing this, Fang Yuan finally let out a sigh of relief.

He felt great joy.

In the first three earthly calamities, he was almost forced to his wits’ end, he could only brace himself as he challenged them.

But now he had this immortal killer move, the situation had changed!

From now on, Fang Yuan could decide when to undergo tribulation, he could either delay or hasten it, there was a huge advantage in this.

“But right now, I do not need to slow the time in the immortal aperture. I should undergo tribulations, increasing my dao marks and raising my cultivation level. With Chu Du helping me, there is a high chance of passing.” Fang Yuan thought.

Once he slowed the immortal aperture’s time, there were flaws.

His resource would grow more slowly, Fang Yuan’s cultivation level would also rise more slowly.

“Now, I should prepare these Gu worms, the Immortal Gu are already here, but I need a huge quantity of day Gu and month Gu. Even if I buy them inside treasure yellow heaven, I will need to spend a long time collecting them.”

Hei Fan’s true inheritance did not leave behind any day Gu, month Gu, and mortal year Gu, Fang Yuan had to purchase these mortal Gu himself.

Even though this task had its difficulties, as long as Fang Yuan was determined, he could achieve it.

“These four immortal killer moves form a set, they are specially used to alter the rate of time in the immortal aperture. Hei Fan, who created these killer moves, had incredible talent.”

At the end, Hei Fan even noted: If the inheritor could obtain immortal level day Gu or month Gu, these four immortal killer moves would not need to consume so many mortal day Gu and month Gu, the effect would even rise greatly.

“I was already extremely fortunate to have obtained immortal level year Gu. As for immortal level day Gu and month Gu, I can forget about it.” Fang Yuan was clear of the situation.

His goal in this trip had been fulfilled, Fang Yuan was satisfied with it.

He continued to look.

Immortal killer move — Years Grant Strength!

Soon, Fang Yuan saw a very interesting killer move.

This killer move used year Gu as the core, it could grant the Gu Immortal immense physical strength. The more year Gu expended, the greater the strength obtained.

This was Hei Fan’s own creation, he used time path Gu worms to achieve a strength path effect.

Immortal killer move — Hundred Years Harmony!

It also used year Gu as the core, with a large number of supplementary information path mortal Gu, to create an alliance agreement that could last for a hundred years.

This was a use of time path Gu worms to unleash the might of information path.

“I can use this with Chu Du, after all, our current alliance agreement was solely handled by him, it is not reliable.” Fang Yuan rapidly had an idea.

Immortal killer move — Unlucky Year.

This was an immortal killer move that used Years Flow Like Water as the core. Fang Yuan could not use it now, he could only look on in captivation.

Using time path to achieve the mystical effect of luck path.

This was an offensive killer move, once the enemy was hit, they would experience a huge fall in luck for a year, nothing they do would go smoothly.

“As expected of Hei Fan, an expert even among rank eight Gu Immortals!”

“If he was born in the Central Continent ten great ancient sects, he would definitely be invited into Heavenly Court, he would be an elite among Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals.”

To be able to use one’s own path to mimic other paths and achieve their mystical effects, this was the symbol of a rank eight expert. Ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals could not reach this stage.

Hei Fan’s strength was similar to Heavenly Court’s Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord.

Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord was a rank eight Gu Immortal cultivating wisdom path. But when Bo Qing awakened, and his sword lights were sent out over Central Continent, in order to fix Heaven Overseeing Tower, he actually used wisdom path methods. And the effect was even better than ordinary refinement path methods.

This was using wisdom path to achieve the effects of refinement path.

“Oh, endless trouble? What move is this?”

Towards the end, Fang Yuan saw an immortal killer move.

Its core was after Immortal Gu, once the Gu Immortal activated it, they could delay the current calamity or tribulation to the time of the next one, and face them together.

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped.

There was Hei Fan’s advice left inside the description of this killer move.

This killer move could not be used excessively, even though the calamity or tribulation would be delayed until the next one, it would anger heaven’s will, the following calamities or tribulations would increase greatly in strength.

This immortal killer move was created by Hei Fan, but he only used it once and never again.

To warn his descendants, Hei Fan intentionally gave a name like ‘Endless Trouble’.

“I can only use it in emergencies, it is not a standard method, but it is definitely something very useful.” Fang Yuan was surprised and joyful to have obtained this.

Anger heaven’s will?

He could not care less.

Heaven’s will was bent on killing him anyway. Fang Yuan’s existence was the biggest cause of heaven’s will’s anger to begin with.

After spending some time, Fang Yuan finally finished reading the contents of the immortal killer moves.

It was very comprehensive, there were even details about the development of an immortal aperture. In fact, there were even details about the mimicking of other paths’ effects.

Even though Hei Fan’s true inheritance only had these few Immortal Gu.

But by cooperating with mortal Gu and forming countless immortal killer moves, the Gu Immortal could deal with any situation that arises.

This was the norm in the cultivation world.

Even though Hei Fan was strong, he was not even of one of the ten extreme physiques. Thus, he raised very few Gu worms, they were all time path Gu worms, he could support them.

The number of Gu worms was not crucial, the Gu Immortal who uses them was most important.

Hei Fan was the best example.

Even though he only had three Immortal Gu, his use of Gu could unleash incredible effects.

There was no strongest Immortal Gu, only strongest Gu Immortal. This was what the sentence was referring to.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1131: Hei Fan’s Gu Refinement

“Compared to Hei Fan, even though I have many Immortal Gu, I am unable to use all of them to this extent.” Fang Yuan reflected upon himself.

Hei Fan’s true inheritance gave him a lot of insight to his problems, but he did not waver: “It is great that I can raise so many Immortal Gu as well.”

Gu Immortals placed great focus on their calamities and tribulations. The more they cultivated, the tougher the calamities and tribulations.

Hei Fan had few Immortal Gu, his burden of feeding them was low, but he had many methods to deal with all sorts of situations. He accumulated his resources, even if he sold them, by storing up immortal essence stones, he could have a huge immortal essence stones stockpile.

And Hei Fan had a tribe, a super force with the Huang Jin bloodline. Hei Fan liked to nurture descendants, he had a lot of Immortal Gu that were not too important, before setting up the true inheritance, he had given them out to Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals, or placed them into the treasury and passed them down.

Hei Fan did not have one of the ten extreme physiques, his immortal aperture had limited potential, the resources he could grow also had a limit.

All in all, he fed just a few Immortal Gu and researched many killer moves for them, it was a very wise choice.

But Fang Yuan was different.

Different situations needed to be analyzed in depth.

The first difference was his sovereign immortal aperture.

The sovereign immortal aperture had immense potential, feeding Gu was a burden, feeding Immortal Gu was a greater burden. But Fang Yuan could afford to do so, easily in fact.

The second difference was that Fang Yuan was alone.

He was alone, he only had to care for himself! He did not need to worry for a tribe, or give any attention to his descendants.

This was the advantage of being a loner.

The advantage of a tribe was shared resources and helping each other. But at Hei Fan’s level, he was the one giving the tribe benefits.

But Hei Fan had never thought of leaving the tribe.

He had grown up in this tribal environment, during his growth, he had received a lot of help from the tribe, relationships, friendships, and kinship, he had all of them. He cared about the tribe, and his descendants.

The environment that a person grows up in has a huge influence on them.

And Fang Yuan was free and unrestrained, he had almost zero burden in this aspect. Even though he joined Lang Ya Sect, he was just making use of them.

The third difference was that Fang Yuan had huge pressure in survival.

He needed a lot of Immortal Gu. Immortal Gu were unique, with a greater number of them in all aspects, they could deal with many situations. For example, he could use flying sword Immortal Gu to attack, and sword escape Immortal Gu to retreat.

Even without killer moves, Fang Yuan could use Immortal Gu to deal with many situations.

In fact, having many Immortal Gu was useful and helpful to the construction of immortal killer moves.

Immortal killer moves used core Immortal Gu and supplementary mortal Gu. For example, Fang Yuan’s sword marks targeting death, a sword path immortal killer move, used flying sword Immortal Gu as the core, and a small number of supplementary sword path mortal Gu.

If Fang Yuan did not have flying sword Immortal Gu, and only had sword escape Immortal Gu, how would he use Sword Escape in place of Flying Sword to unleash sword marks targeting death?

Sword Escape replacing Flying Sword was possible. Because the two were sword path Immortal Gu, they were interchangeable on this basis.

But the entire killer move, sword marks targeting death, would need to be heavily altered.

Flying Sword was used as an attacking Immortal Gu, it was easy to construct an offensive killer move with it.

But Sword Escape was a movement Immortal Gu, if it were to replace Flying Sword, the mortal Gu used for sword marks targeting death would need to be changed, and increased drastically in number. This way, when using sword marks targeting death, the process would be more lengthy and difficult, the failure rate would be higher, and it would have less feasibility as a whole.

Looking at it overall, Hei Fan’s development method suited most people, but it did not suit Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s Gu raising method was the most optimal for himself. But if other Gu Immortals mimicked him, they would be courting death.

Fang Yuan continued to read.

After the immortal killer moves, Hei Fan’s true inheritance talked about mortal killer moves.

There was an even greater number of these killer moves, a large portion of them were time path, but Fang Yuan basically had no need for them anymore.

Immortal and mortal was vastly different. Maybe in the future, Fang Yuan could use these methods to probe other Gu Immortals in battle, but they had little use, because Fang Yuan already had a good number of exemplary mortal killer moves.

He already had numerous blood path and strength path killer moves.

These mortal killer moves might only have one use in the end, to be the foundation for deductions.

After the mortal killer moves, there were some incomplete killer moves, including both immortal and mortal killer moves.

The completion rate varied, some were even simply inspired ideas or guesses.

These were things that Hei Fan had never completed even upon his death.

Deducing killer moves was unavoidable and essential in a Gu Immortal’s cultivation journey.

Fang Yuan took a look, nothing really caught his eye.

His time path attainment level was too low, and he could not use wisdom Gu. Furthermore, Fang Yuan already had many useful methods, they were sufficient.

As a result, his browsing of killer moves ended.

“After returning, I will need to spend a lot of time practising these killer moves.” Fang Yuan planned.

The usage of killer moves could end in failure.

If during an intense battle, the activation fails, the Gu Immortal would suffer a backlash. If it was during a critical moment in battle, that would be terrible. One killer move’s success or failure could directly affect the outcome of the battle, or even determine life and death itself.

Thus, one had to be extremely familiar and proficient with their killer moves!

This would use some funds as well.

The supplementary mortal Gu that made up the killer moves needed to be purchased. When practising, activating immortal killer moves would expend immortal essence. And practising would definitely occur more than once.

All of these required money, money, money!

Thus, the development of a Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture was extremely important in their cultivation.

Finances were the foundation for military might.

Fighting was dangerous, and with the threat of calamities and tribulations, unless huge benefits or conflicts were involved, Gu Immortals usually preferred to live in peace instead.

“To practise so many killer moves, I need a lot of funds.” Fang Yuan frowned, he felt both joy and worry.

Of course, this was simply a blissful worry.

Large numbers of immortal killer moves, even more mortal killer moves and incomplete killer moves. After looking at them, Fang Yuan moved onto Gu recipes.

Immortal Gu recipes!

Among which, the first was the parallel refinement method of immortal level year Gu.

There were quite a few parallel refinement Gu recipes.

There were a total of five, they could achieve parallel refinement and elevate year Gu.

At the back, Hei Fan even noted his experiences, he talked about the advantages and disadvantages of all five methods, and some tips when undergoing parallel refinement. Just the methods recorded here was incredibly insightful for Fang Yuan.

Out of the five parallel refinement Immortal Gu recipes, the one Hei Fan used the most was the final one.

This Immortal Gu recipe was created by Hei Fan in his later years. It used the least ingredients and had the highest success rate, it expended the least amount of time and mental energy as well. Overall, it used a large number of mortal level year Gu and added them into the immortal level year Gu, thus the effect was great.

After developing this, Hei Fan almost abandoned the first four Gu recipes, he used this parallel refinement method solely.

But because of the comprehensive nature of Hei Fan’s true inheritance, he recorded the four recipes into it regardless.

“Rank eight Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water can produce countless mortal year Gu, these year Gu can be used to parallel refine immortal level year Gu, it is so convenient.”

Fang Yuan sighed as he continued looking.

Next was the Immortal Gu recipe of refining after Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan already had this Immortal Gu, he only took one glance at it.

Overall, the number of Immortal Gu recipes was quite shocking.

There were nearly a hundred!

And all of them were fully completed Immortal Gu recipes.

Most were rank six, some were rank seven, and there were only two or three rank eight Immortal Gu recipes.

In terms of path, most were time path, but there were also other paths like fire path and luck path.

Compared to the immortal killer moves, these Immortal Gu recipes were more disorganized. There were recently created Immortal Gu recipes, there were also ancient recipes with extinct immortal materials, they could not be used anymore.

Among all of the Immortal Gu recipes, Hei Fan placed the greatest emphasis on Years Flow Like Water.

The rank eight Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water was actually the creation of Hei Fan!

His inspiration was obtained by constantly parallel refining year Gu.

Hei Fan had described the entire process of refining Years Flow Like Water in great detail. In order to get enough immortal materials, he had expended the entire Hei tribe treasury, and used up a lot of favors and paid a huge price to ask two refinement path great experts to help. In the end, he was still in a lot of debt.

To refine Years Flow Like Water, Hei Fan had placed all of his effort into it. During the refinement process, he had suffered failure after failure, there was several times he wanted to give up.

Hei Fan had recorded all of these mental states down, he was not afraid of his descendants laughing at him. This showed that Hei Fan had truly put his heart and soul into creating this true inheritance.

In the end, because of his relatively good luck, after nine failures, he finally succeeded.

In his words, all of the difficulties and risks that Hei Fan faced when refining the rank eight Immortal Gu was expressed in detail.

Even after succeeding, Hei Fan did not recoup his losses for many years to come.

He solemnly warned his inheritor to treasure the fruits of his predecessor’s hard work greatly. If they cultivate to rank eight in the future, when refining rank eight Immortal Gu, they had to be extremely careful.

Fang Yuan saw this and thought of Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

Right now, this old fellow was also refining a rank eight Immortal Gu.

And this Immortal Gu was extremely precious, it was fortune rivalling heaven Gu! According to what Lang Ya land spirit said, this Immortal Gu was created in Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s later years using the essence of luck path.

Refining rank eight was a huge gamble.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu had Ma Hong Yun as the main ingredient, it saved him a lot of costs. But even so, when gathering immortal materials, he had discarded his reputation, he went personally to Zombie Alliance to steal immortal zombie corpses, he even went to Hei tribe’s treasury and looted it. The entire Snowy Mountain blessed land was in chaos because of his actions, everyone was worried.

Yao Huang was also trying to refine resurrection from the dead Immortal Gu. According to the rumors in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world, this Immortal Gu was also rank eight.

Actually, everyone knew about the risks of refining a rank eight Immortal Gu.

But why did they still try?

As a matter of fact, having a rank eight Immortal Gu and not having one meant two completely different states.

Rank eight Gu Immortals had to undergo tribulations as well, they usually had low lifespan, many times, they had no choice but to take a risk.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was doing this for his tribulation, while Yao Huang was trying to prolong his life. Calamities and tribulations could not hinder Hei Fan, but he had limited lifespan, he eventually died.

“Tribulations and lifespan.” Fang Yuan knew that in his quest for eternal life, he had to get through these two tough problems.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1132: Taking Over Hei Fan Grotto-Heaven

After the Immortal Gu recipes, there were mortal Gu recipes.

There were many mortal Gu recipes, Fang Yuan felt a little shocked seeing all of them.

The ones worth looking at were the mortal Gu recipes of day, month, and year Gu.

In accordance with these mortal Gu recipes, Fang Yuan could buy his mortal materials and refine his own mortal level day Gu, month Gu, and year Gu.

“This way, not only can I buy these mortal Gu in treasure yellow heaven, I can also refine them myself. This would no doubt greatly reduce my preparation. But it is a waste for me to do the refinement myself, I should ask the hairy men in Lang Ya Sect to do it.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan frowned uncontrollably.

His relationship with Lang Ya Sect had already turned cold, he would need to improve their relationship if he were to ask them for help.

Forget about these for now, Fang Yuan continued to look at Hei Fan’s true inheritance.

After Immortal Gu recipes and mortal Gu recipes, there were some incomplete Gu recipes.

They had varying completion rates, some were ninety percent, stuck at a crucial step. Some were at ten to twenty percent, they were at the initial stages of creation.

“Immortal Gu ‘Before’?” Fang Yuan’s gaze halted.

Among the incomplete Immortal Gu recipes, the before Immortal Gu recipe was only fifty-seven percent complete.

Before Immortal Gu, after Immortal Gu, they were related Immortal Gu.

Evidently, in Hei Fan's lifetime, after obtaining after Immortal Gu, he had greatly desired before Immortal Gu.

Unfortunately, even until his death, he did not succeed.

Next was Hei Fan's recorded experiences in deducing these Gu recipes. He talked about the difficulties of deduction, he told his inheritor not to be afraid of difficulty and to persevere. At the same time, he talked about the importance of inspiration.

Thus, behind this, Hei Fan wrote about some tricks and tips. Like using wisdom path inspiration Gu, and light path a flash of inspiration Gu, to help him with the deduction.

Looking at this, Fang Yuan smiled.

He was a wisdom path grandmaster, he had obtained Dong Fang Chang Fan's wisdom path true inheritance, he dominated Hei Fan in this aspect. Hei Fan's experiences in this aspect were quite shallow from Fang Yuan's perspective.

Everyone had their own field of expertise, even though Hei Fan was skilled, he had his weak points too.

Like how Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable looked to Long Hair Ancestor for help to refine Immortal Gu.

After killer moves and Gu recipes, there were Hei Fan's own cultivation experiences.

Among this, there were maps, including the five regions and even white heaven and black heaven, they had huge value in terms of reference.

Of course, Northern Plains' map was the most detailed, the other four regions were more simple.

Fang Yuan placed the most attention on the maps of white heaven and black heaven, this had broadened his horizons.

Some strong rank seven Gu Immortals and all rank eight Gu Immortals would often explore black heaven and white heaven, scavenging for resources within.

As an expert among rank eights, Hei Fan was no exception.

After the maps, there were lots of secrets regarding the Gu Immortal world.

Like Imperial Court blessed land and Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, there was the most information about these. But they were useless now.

And Hei Fan's own conjectures.

What attracted Fang Yuan the most was one of them.

Hei Fan was suspicious that a time path Gu Immortal had inherited Red Lotus' true inheritance.

From this record, Fang Yuan could sense that Hei Fan had a huge desire towards Red Lotus' true inheritance.

This was expected.

He was a time path great expert, he naturally sought out and looked up to the number one time path true inheritance in the world.

The final important point was Hei Fan’s own ideas and experimentation on the development of an immortal aperture.

Using his own situation as an example, he clearly stated how calamities and tribulations, dao marks, and immortal aperture helped each other in an intrinsic relationship, and how to modify the immortal aperture’s environment, like how to alter the rate of time inside. There was also the management of the immortal aperture, and the selling of resources. The important point here was year Gu.

Back then, after Hei Fan refined rank eight Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water, he started selling mortal level year Gu, it became his most lucrative business.

In just a few months, he became the biggest year Gu vendor in the world, he was earning huge profits.

With this rank eight Immortal Gu, he had an unceasing gold mine!

However, Hei Fan had also stated the possibility of the attack of year beasts. How to deal with the year beast attacks, how to capture year beasts, how to dissect year beasts, and how to sell year beasts. There was also the relationship between year beasts and the immortal aperture and others.

Fang Yuan looked on with a frown.

In Hei Fan’s immortal aperture, because of Years Flow Like Water, immemorial level year beasts had once went in.

They had rank eight battle strength!

Hei Fan spent a lot of effort in killing them. Because he fought in his immortal aperture, the result was immense losses. Many times, Hei Fan felt pain due to his losses.

After a painful lesson, Hei Fan started to research on how to seal Years Flow Like Water, and conceal its aura when not using it.

He found and invented many methods, that were all recorded in the true inheritance.

He had made great achievements.

However, Hei Fan warned the inheritor to be careful on something, that was to use Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water carefully when in battle.

Once they fought against a strong foe and lured an immemorial year beast over to attack their immortal aperture, they would be in deep trouble.

“It seems that I need to be very careful when using Years Flow Like Water. If I am careless and heaven’s will uses this opportunity to lure immemorial year beasts to me, I would die!”

Fang Yuan was only rank six, he could not fight against a rank eight level existence.

With a huge difference in strength, there would be no unexpected lucky circumstances that could save him.

His consciousness returned from the mortal letter Gu, Fang Yuan let out a breath.

“Hei Fan’s true inheritance is truly the work of a time path great expert, he lives up to his name!” Fang Yuan praised: “But the difficulty to inherit this is too high.”

Precisely because of the difficulty, Hei tribe’s descendants worked hard but did not succeed. In the end, Fang Yuan took advantage of it and obtained the fruits of his labor.

Don’t look at how easy of a time Fang Yuan had, it had many preconditions. Like attitude Gu and familiar face, he even had Chu Du’s help to obtain the heavenly crystal eagle nest.

“However, according to the logic of the Gu Immortal world, the inheritances left behind by people of Hei Fan’s level are usually this difficult.”

For example, Nian Er tribe’s Nian Er Sword Saint true inheritance. An inheritor would only appear every few hundred years, the current one was Nian Er Ping Zhi.

Hei Fan and Nian Er Sword Saint were people who left their names in history, they were prideful people, they were unwilling to have their inheritances obtained by useless people that would tarnish their reputation, they set difficult requirements to choose a worthy successor, it was normal.

“Next, I have to take over this Hei Fan grotto-heaven.” Fang Yuan looked at the brass bell heavenly spirit, signalling to it.

At the next moment, the brass bell heavenly spirit slowly flew towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled.

When he inherited Hei Fan’s true inheritance, he became the owner of Hei Fan grotto-heaven, he could naturally command this brass bell heavenly spirit.

The regretful thing was, Hei Fan grotto-heaven had absorbed the immemorial azure heaven fragment, it made the brass bell heavenly spirit mindless and unresponsive, Fang Yuan could not manipulate it easily, it was hard to communicate, it was worse than Hu Immortal land spirit.

Fang Yuan first looked at Immortal Succession Mountain.

This mountain had many pavilions on it. Each one had an inheritance in it. Some of the inheritances were mortal level, while some were left by Gu Immortals.

The Gu Immortals originally in Hei Fan grotto-heaven had ascended Immortal Succession Mountain when they were mortals, after getting the inheritances, they slowly cultivated their way up.

Unfortunately, their generations of development were in vain, Fang Yuan killed all of them on this day.

Fang Yuan inspected and realized that Immortal Succession Mountain had a few inheritances left. Most of the stone pavilions were empty already.

He kept all of these inheritances.

He was the owner of the grotto-heaven now, everything inside was his. These inheritances were no different.

However, these inheritances were mostly mortal inheritances, there were only three Gu Immortal inheritances. Among which, two of them did not have any

Immortal Gu, but they had a few Immortal Gu recipes. The last Gu Immortal inheritance had one Immortal Gu left, it was called Bone Spike, it was a bone path offensive Gu worm.

After ransacking Immortal Succession Mountain, Fang Yuan looked at the huge world in this place.

Hei Fan grotto-heaven had countless resources, the map in the true inheritance had talked about Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s resource distribution, but after so many years, and after nurturing so many Gu Immortals, the resource map was no longer applicable to its current state.

And the brass bell heavenly spirit could not communicate.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan had captives.

Even though he killed all of the Gu Immortals, he had preserved their souls, right now, all of them were locked up in his immortal aperture.

Soul search.

A while later, Fang Yuan knew Hei Fan grotto-heaven like the back of his hand. Other than a few areas that ancient desolate beasts and ancient desolate plants were living in, there were some forbidden grounds.

These Gu Immortals inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven were locals, after tens of generations, how could they know nothing about Hei Fan grotto-heaven?

In the process of soul searching, Fang Yuan also learned about the inheritances and cultivation experiences of these Gu Immortals.

“Blood light spirit suppression? Hehe, heaven’s will...”

Fang Yuan inspected Zheng Tuo, Zhou Min, and Feng Jun’s souls, he realized their scheme.

Fang Yuan was glad that he struck quickly, otherwise, if he waited, these three immortals might have actually succeeded.

Chu Du snatched the heavenly crystal eagle nest away, while Fang Yuan had attitude Gu and familiar face, heaven’s will knew about all these.

Most importantly, Hei Fan grotto-heaven had absorbed a piece of an immemorial azure heaven fragment, heaven’s will could look into the grotto-heaven.

The immortal killer move blood light spirit suppression that Feng Jun had suddenly created was quite suspicious. Fang Yuan assumed that this was likely heaven’s will’s influence!

Thankfully, Fang Yuan took action after getting the heavenly crystal eagle nest, he went to obtain Hei Fan true inheritance in the shortest time possible.

“I have to move away all of the resources inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven, and put them in my immortal aperture. This place is not safe!”

“As for Hei Fan grotto-heaven, I will give it to Chu Du. The value of the grotto-heaven itself is already thirty percent of Hei Fan true inheritance’s value.”

As for what heaven’s will would do to Chu Du, Fang Yuan could not care less.

He had already given the method of self will Gu to Chu Du, he did not have to worry about heaven’s will influencing Chu Du’s thoughts.

In the next few days, Fang Yuan went through a thorough inspection.

The entire distribution of living habitats, the cooperation and co-existence between resources, some complemented each other while others restrained each other, these were all precious knowledge that Fang Yuan could learn in order to manage his own immortal aperture.

He was lacking in this aspect.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, he had low aptitude, blood path Gu Immortals were skilled in fighting, but were not good in immortal aperture management. Especially large immortal apertures, Fang Yuan had no experience in managing them. Not to mention the sovereign immortal aperture.

Right now, Hei Fan grotto-heaven was like an encyclopedia placed in front of him!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1133: Ransacking the Entire Grotto-heaven

In the next few days, Fang Yuan went around almost the entirety of Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

His consciousness was covering the surroundings, observing as he researched.

Sometimes, Fang Yuan felt that it was as if Hei Fan was teaching him personally across time and space.

There was an incredibly detailed explanation in Hei Fan’s true inheritance, the Hei Fan grotto-heaven in front of him was a real life example, he could interact with and excavate information from it, he could also observe it. If there were any differences, Fang Yuan would soul search those captive Gu Immortals, this made him understand the process and secrets of the prosperity and dwindling of species in a long span of time.

Hei Fan’s talent made Fang Yuan feel deep admiration, he had benefited greatly from it. Regarding the development of the sovereign immortal aperture, Fang Yuan now had many new bold ideas.

When Fang Yuan was certain that he had already understood the structure of the entirety of Hei Fan grotto-heaven, he started to move resources.

First were the heavenly crystals.

Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s first forbidden ground was the heavenly crystal storage pool.

This pool was built in the sky, it covered an enormous area, and was surrounded in layers of Gu formations. But the heavenly crystals only occupied the small area at the center.

The heavenly crystals produced in Hei Fan grotto-heaven were light azure in color.

Heavenly crystals had different colors depends on where they were produced.

Fang Yuan placed this storage pool into Mini Azure Heaven.

“It is a pity that this storage pool can only produce heavenly crystals in a grotto-heaven. My sovereign immortal aperture is only a blessed land, it cannot do anything inside here. However, the light azure heavenly crystals in the storage pool and that heavenly crystal eagle nest should last five to six years for me.”

Fang Yuan assessed, with the addition of these crystals, he would have no problems in feeding the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

Heavenly crystals were not easy to buy in treasure yellow heaven.

The second forbidden area was underground.

This was a huge cave.

There was stalactites growing in the cave, the most valuable one were the hibiscus stalactites, it was rare in the outside world, but a lot were growing here.

Fang Yuan spent some effort, digging out the entire cave and transplanting it into Mini Southern Border.

Thankfully, he had pulling mountain Immortal Gu, otherwise, this second forbidden area would be hard to deal with.

“But after I do this, when the stalactites grow, they would need to absorb the earth qi inside the sovereign immortal aperture, it would increase the sovereign immortal aperture’s earth qi expenditure. Once in a while, I will need to place down the immortal aperture and replenish earth qi.”

Other than these natural resources, there were ancient desolate beasts and ancient desolate plants.

Among the ancient desolate plants, there was one walking meat tree.

This tree was a rare strength path plant, it usually grew in black heaven.

In order to cultivate it, Hei Fan specially enclosed a portion of Hei Fan grotto-heaven, creating a condition of darkness.

Around the walking meat tree, Hei Fan specially created a habitat that suited its growth.

The walking meat tree’s branches were very peculiar, they were like soft and thick octopus tentacles. With a light whip, they could send desolate beasts flying.

Fang Yuan had once seen one in Starry Sky grotto-heaven, this was his second encounter, he sighed.

He had once wished he could get a walking meat tree, because he could use eat strength Immortal Gu to increase his strength path dao marks. But now, he had the walking meat tree, but eat strength Immortal Gu was destroyed, it was truly untimely.

Fang Yuan placed the walking meat tree into Mini Black Heaven within the sovereign immortal aperture.

The sovereign immortal aperture’s advantage was starting to show. Hei Fan had to make meticulous arrangements to plant the walking meat tree. Fang Yuan did not need to do this, because Mini Black Heaven’s environment was close to the real immemorial black heaven, the walking meat tree was very pleased after the relocation, it stretched out its branches comfortably.

Because Hei Fan had specialized methods, Fang Yuan had an easy time relocating these ancient desolate plants.

The same went for the other desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts living in Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Using methods in Hei Fan’s true inheritance, Fang Yuan could lure these desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts into his immortal aperture with no trouble.

What was worth mentioning was that among the ancient desolate beasts in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, there were three remnant heavenly dogs.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan needed dog desolate beasts, not ancient desolate beasts. He needed their faeces to feed the rank six dog shit luck Immortal Gu.

But these three remnant heavenly dogs were not useless.

In the future, if Fang Yuan raised dog shit luck Immortal Gu to rank seven, its food would change drastically. At that time, the remnant heavenly dog’s faeces would be useful.

Fang Yuan’s relocation was very efficient, in the entire process, the brass bell heavenly spirit followed beside him.

Fang Yuan was the grotto-heaven’s owner, the heavenly spirit would cooperate with everything he did without resistance.

After half a month, Fang Yuan finally emptied Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Even the empty Immortal Succession Mountain was not left alone, Fang Yuan moved it into Mini Southern Border.

Originally, there were large numbers of Gu Masters and mortals living in Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

They were all the descendants of Hei tribe’s criminal immortals.

Fang Yuan killed all of them, collecting their souls, planning to feed them to Dang Hun Mountain.

What made Fang Yuan feel slight regret was, Hei Fan grotto-heaven did not have any variant humans.

When grotto-heavens or blessed lands reach a certain stage, the Gu Immortals would start rearing variant humans inside. Even though Hei Fan could do this, he did not.

Even though there were no variant humans, and most of the common cultivation resources were expended by the Gu Immortals inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan still had immense gains!

All of the resources in Hei Fan grotto-heaven were placed into the sovereign immortal aperture, from a desolate state, it was starting to gain life.

“This is a huge breakthrough!”

"If I were to work at it myself, to get the sovereign immortal aperture to this stage of development, I would need six hundred years! And that is the best case scenario. Now after taking in Hei Fan grotto-heaven's resources, I have directly reached this stage."

Hei Fan grotto-heaven had existed for a long time, it had accumulated a great amount of resources! After all, this was the accumulation of a rank eight Gu Immortal's wealth.

Even though a lot was used up, and it was not at its prime, Fang Yuan still benefited greatly.

For example, the sovereign immortal aperture previously was like a pauper, even the Immortal Gu were starving. But now, he had inherited the wealth of a billionaire, he turned into a billionaire instantly!

"Now, the resources inside the sovereign immortal aperture definitely surpasses most rank seven Gu Immortals in terms of value! Even by the standards of rank eight Gu Immortals, I might barely be able to reach them."

"Of course, a lot of the resources have just been moved into the sovereign immortal aperture, with a change in environment and a fall in time path dao marks, their production would greatly reduce, they might even wither and die."

"The beasts and plants need to adapt to the new environment, and my sovereign immortal aperture also needs to assimilate them slowly."

"Among which, I can't use some of the resources, I should sell them and exchange for the things I need."

Moving all of the resources was just the start.

Next, Fang Yuan was going to get busy with his development and management.

A few days later, Fang Yuan brought Chu Du into Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

"After getting your letter, I came here immediately. This is Hei Fan grotto-heaven? Hm, why is it so barren?" Chu Du had just arrived in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, he looked around with a surprised and disappointed look.

There was almost nothing in Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Even the grasslands were dug up by Fang Yuan, it was literally empty. There were no trees as well, of course.

And the rivers and pools were all moved into the sovereign immortal aperture using pulling water Immortal Gu as well.

The scenic Hei Fan grotto-heaven had become desolate as ever, when winds blew, sand flew into the air, it was a dismal sight.

Chu Du looked at Fang Yuan with a flickering gaze.

His expression seemed to be saying: Brother, isn't your appetite too big? I rushed here to see this?

Fang Yuan smiled, pointing at the sky: "Brother Chu, according to our alliance agreement, I will pay you thirty percent of my gains. Hei Fan grotto-heaven is yours now."

Chu Du heard this and his expression changed, he looked at Fang Yuan in shock: "Are you serious?"

“Of course.” Fang Yuan nodded.

Chu Du was greatly enticed!

Even though the resources inside the grotto-heaven were taken by Fang Yuan, this was still a grotto-heaven!

Resources and grotto-heaven were like eggs and the chicken respectively.

Fang Yuan took the eggs, he left the chicken to Chu Du.

Chu Du squinted, his eyes were flickering with sharp light.

He could not reject it!

The reason?

Because controlling this grotto-heaven was an immense help to Chu Du’s cultivation.

Even though Chu Du also had an immortal aperture, it was only a blessed land, be it time path or space path resources, they could not compare to a grotto-heaven. And this was Hei Fan’s grotto-heaven!

Chu Du’s blessed land also had lots of cultivation resources, But it was not safe to place his resources there.

Because of calamities and tribulations.

Calamities and tribulations would destroy the immortal aperture’s resources when targeting the Gu Immortals as well.

Chu Du had rank seven cultivation level, he had passed many calamities and tribulations, he knew the trouble and pain of getting his resources destroyed by calamities and tribulations.

He did not have the Great Strength True Martial Physique, his blessed land’s space was limited. It was unlike Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture, it was too big, even after taking in Hei Fan’s resources, there was still a lot of space left. Fang Yuan could freely choose a place inside it with no resources to undergo his tribulation, but Chu Du could not.

“Hei Fan grotto-heaven has no calamities and tribulations, because this immortal aperture has absorbed a fragment of immemorial azure heaven. I can place my resources inside here, of course, there are few strength path dao marks here, I will need to decide this carefully in the future.” Chu Du assessed.

“Liu Guan Yi handed over Hei Fan grotto-heaven to me, other than completing our agreement, it is also because this grotto-heaven itself is a problem.”

Chu Du was not stupid, he quickly realized: He had taken the heavenly crystal eagle nest, everyone knew that Hei Fan true inheritance was in his hands.

In truth, the one who obtained Hei Fan’s true inheritance was Fang Yuan. Except that he was in the background, while Chu Du occupied the grotto-heaven. If anything happened in the future, Fang Yuan would not be in trouble, but Chu Du would.

“Even if Heavenly Lord Bai Zu attacks, I will take over Hei Fan grotto-heaven. How can I, the great Domination Immortal, be afraid of a small risk?”

Thinking of this, Chu Du spoke, agreeing.

"Good, as expected of the Domination Immortal!" Fang Yuan clapped, praising.

But next, when handing over Hei Fan grotto-heaven, there was a tiny problem.

The brass bell heavenly spirit was unwilling to.

It was because Chu Du did not have Hei tribe's bloodline.

"Ignorant thing." Fang Yuan smiled sinisterly, destroying the defenseless brass bell heavenly spirit with one hit.

The problem was immediately solved!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1134: Battling Falling Star Hound

After the transaction, Hei Fan grotto-heaven changed owners.

Even though Chu Du asked him to stay, Fang Yuan was insistent on leaving.

He had stayed in Hei Fan grotto-heaven for too long, Fang Yuan had to start preparing for his fourth earthly calamity.

Of course, before leaving, he used the immortal killer move hundred years harmony to create a new alliance agreement with Chu Du.

Fang Yuan left quickly, Chu Du was left behind, feeling a huge headache looking at the barren Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Traveling back, he returned to Lang Ya blessed land.

"Oh, look, Fang Yuan is back." A hairy man Gu Immortal who was inside Lang Ya blessed land saw Fang Yuan who was flying in the sky.

"Does it matter if he is back?"

"That's right, there is no difference if Lang Ya Sect has him or not."

"He is a human Gu Immortal after all, he is not one of us."

"Ignore him, let's continue planning on how to take down that falling star hound!"

Soon, these hairy man Gu Immortals lowered their heads, continuing to discuss their tactic.

Fang Yuan looked down, his gaze sweeping past these hairy man Gu Immortals. Even though they were far away, Fang Yuan had investigative methods, he heard what they were saying.

At once, Fang Yuan's gaze turned eerie.

He had spent a lot of time searching for Hei Fan's true inheritance, the fourth earthly calamity was close.

Fang Yuan was planning to undergo this earthly calamity himself.

Even though getting Chu Du’s help was safer, Reckless Savage’s true meaning would also be split.

Fang Yuan would definitely want to take the benefits for himself if possible! Only when he is unable to do so would he think of other ways.

And just now, he obtained Hei Fan’s true inheritance, his strength rose greatly, he was confident in dealing with the fourth earthly calamity alone!

“But to undergo tribulation, I need Lang Ya Sect’s immortal tribulation tempering aperture, I will need to borrow Immortal Gu and mortal Gu from Lang Ya land spirit.”

“With my current relationship with Lang Ya land spirit, he will not lend it to me, unless I provide a huge gain like selling Dang Hun Mountain.”

“Looking at it, I should use my remaining time to complete that sect mission of taking down the falling star hound. Firstly, it can improve our relationship, secondly, I can gain a lot of sect contribution points, to pay for borrowing Gu.”

Fang Yuan did not return to his cloud city, he flew straight to the first cloud city.

There, he met with Lang Ya land spirit.

“Oh, you still remembered to come back?” Lang Ya land spirit did not speak in a pleasant tone, he had a cold attitude.

Fang Yuan sighed, he showed a bitter expression: “Please understand, first supreme elder, I had my reasons. Earlier, I was not ignoring it, I simply had no time or effort. After going out this time, I resolved my crisis. The moment I returned, I heard the supreme elders taking about taking down the falling star hound, I rushed here to get this mission from you, first supreme elder, at the first moment.”

“Oh?” Lang Ya land spirit heard this and stopped frowning: “This means you are going to do it?”

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly again: “I have been wanting to accept the mission, I am a member of Lang Ya Sect after all. But the circumstances did not allow me to, I had no choice. Now that I can spare the effort, I want to do something for the sect.”

His acting skills with attitude Gu immediately took effect, Lang Ya land spirit felt that Fang Yuan was speaking the truth, he was sincere and apologetic.

Lang Ya land spirit’s expression soothed, he was about to agree, but he quickly changed his words: “It will be troublesome if you want to accept this mission. Earlier, Twelfth Hair and the rest have already coordinated, they are going to strike. Last time, even though they failed, they had gained great experience, both sides had suffered a loss. They are likely going to succeed now. If you want to take this mission, regardless of whether you succeed, you will conflict with them first.”

Fang Yuan was only an outsider, Twelfth Hair and the rest were true hairy man Gu Immortals, they were part of the hairy men.

Lang Ya land spirit naturally would side with Twelfth Hair and the rest.

Fang Yuan nodded: “So that’s it. How about this, let them take the mission first, if they cannot complete it, I will help out, is that okay?”

Lang Ya land spirit thought about it, nodding: “Okay.”

Fang Yuan said again: “I hope first supreme elder can announce this.”

Lang Ya land spirit did as he said.

Once he announced it, there was a commotion in Lang Ya Sect.

“That Fang Yuan is finally going to fight?”

“Hmph, he sees that we are succeeding, so he wants to attempt it.”

“Despicable scoundrel!”

“Disregarding the fact that he is despicable, the reward for taking down the falling star hound has risen to over a thousand! Whoever completes it will gain the greatest benefit.”

“Oh Twelfth, you must succeed, don’t let that Fang Yuan take advantage!”

The hairy man Gu Immortals had mutual animosity towards him.

Twelfth Hair nodded, subconsciously clenching his fists, thinking: “I must succeed, we prepared amply, I will not let everyone down!”

His previous fight gave the hairy men lots of confidence.

Twelfth Hair was prepared to attack in two days’ time. But because of this matter, he decided to be more safe, and prepare himself better.

Seven days later, Fang Yuan received notification that Twelfth Hair and the rest were about to attack.

He went uninvited, gathering with Twelfth Hair and the rest.

“Elder Fang Yuan.” Sixth Hair went ahead and spoke to Fang Yuan in a strange tone.

His true identity was Shadow Sect’s spy, but even if Fang Yuan exposed him, nobody would believe it. Because he had made a deal with Fang Yuan, they were in the same boat, he was fearless.

Last time, he was ordered to represent Ying Wu Xie in transacting with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had the upper hand, he had suffered immensely.

Fang Yuan did not go and challenge the falling star hound, Sixth Hair managed to stir up the hairy men and direct their attention to it, causing their relationship with Fang Yuan to worsen.

“Elder Fang Yuan, I know why you are here, but this time, you will be disappointed.” Twelfth Hair walked forward, puffing his chest, he was filled with confidence.

He spoke in a normal tone, he was frank and upright unlike the underhanded Sixth Hair.

Fang Yuan looked at Twelfth Hair, he saw that this hairy man Gu Immortal had evidently changed. He was more confident and secure than before.

Fang Yuan assessed: “Twelfth Hair cultivates refinement path along with enslavement path. This time, to deal with the falling star hound, he had been the leader. He was heavily injured before and had to rest in bed for some time. After these obstacles, he has improved drastically, his mental state has also become much more developed.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan smiled as he replied: “Then I will await brother Twelfth’s victory.”

“Hmph, hypocrite.”

“He seems to have given up on the surface, but he must be anxious on the inside right? Hehe.”

The other hairy man Gu Immortals could not stand Fang Yuan’s words, they were muttering.

Fang Yuan heard their words and ignored it.

The group was standing in the center of the main formation.

The hairy men were standing close together, Fang Yuan was the only outcast.

“Stay alert, I am about to activate the Gu formation.” Twelfth Hair said, he took a glance at Fang Yuan: With one more person, the immortal essence expenditure is definitely going to be higher.

The hairy man Gu Immortals had calm expressions, they had already used this teleportation Gu formation many times, they were used to it.

The Gu formation gradually activated, it gave off dazzling lights.

Fang Yuan watched silently.

The teleportation sub formation in Tai Qiu was placed by him, Fang Yuan had returned to Lang Ya blessed land using the teleportation Gu formation.

When he used it alone, it was easy, but he could see that these hairy man Gu Immortals had much more trouble in activating it.

Twelfth Hair continued to expend immortal essence, after a long while, the Gu formation finally activated.

Dazzling lights blinded everyone’s vision, with a huge mystical force, it reacted!

In the blink of an eye, the immortals looked around and realized they were in Tai Qiu.

Fang Yuan turned around, the huge elephant corpse was indeed behind him.

“The immortal essence expenditure did not increase by a lot, it seems that Fang Yuan does not have a deep dao mark foundation. He is probably more experienced than us in battle techniques only.” Twelfth Hair glanced at Fang Yuan, showing some disdain in his gaze.

“We can only win this time, we cannot lose! Let’s go!” Twelfth Hair waved, shouting loudly.

The hairy man Gu Immortals responded, they had high morale.

They started their journey, Fang Yuan tailed behind them. In order to not cause conflicts, Fang Yuan purposely stayed behind, not getting close to these hairy man Gu Immortals.

Before they advanced by a lot, Fang Yuan found his target.

“A falling star hound that has not reached maturity?” Fang Yuan was slightly surprised, he saw that the hairy man Gu Immortals were charging towards it.

“Dog, we will definitely beat you!” Twelfth Hair shouted loudly, battle intent surging in him.

The falling star hound howled, it lowered his body as its hill-like body burst forward with incredible speed.

The hairy man Gu Immortals were scattered by this attack.

Twelfth Hair was in a very difficult state, he shouted in anger: “Beast, you dare to sneak attack us! Come, let’s battle for three hundred rounds.”

Saying this, Twelfth Hair clapped his hands as a blue light expanded from his hands, forming a blue lake in the sky.

From the lake, water spewed out, as three desolate beasts came out from the bottom of the lake.

One yak, one tiger, and one bear.

It was a chestnut yak, a golden-white tiger, and a diamond bear.

The three desolate beasts went towards the falling star hound, engaging in an intense battle on the giant grass.

This was a deep area of Tai Qiu, the giant grass was extremely tall, even the falling star hound and diamond bear was not as tall as the strands of giant grass.

Twelfth Hair controlled the three desolate beasts, drawing the falling star hound’s attention. The other hairy man Gu Immortals were hiding in the giant grass, attacking the falling star hound from a distance.

Fang Yuan watched from an even greater distance.

He could evidently see many traces of intense battle in this battlefield.

The hairy man Gu Immortals’ performance was quite impressive. They were skillful and had improved from earlier. Even though it was still quite bad, their improvement was very apparent.

The falling star hound had not reached maturity, but it could fight with these hairy man Gu Immortals evenly.

Fang Yuan smiled, looking at the sky.

He thought to himself: “I am here, heaven’s will, how will you deal with me this time?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1135: Don’t Be A Disturbance

Boom!

With a loud boom, the falling star hound crashed into the diamond bear.

The diamond bear was only a desolate beast, but it had a robust body, it blocked the falling star hound like a wall.

It was hit by the falling star hound, it moved back five or six steps, but it still stood firmly. The falling star hound moved back by a huge step, its head was spinning.

It shook his head, clearing its mind.

During this period of time, five or six killer moves shot out from the giant grass, impacting on the falling star hound’s body.

The falling star hound cried out in pain, its flesh was cut open from the attacks.

Fang Yuan watched coldly from the side.

“It seems that not just Twelfth Hair, the other hairy man Gu Immortals have also learned to use their immortal killer moves.”

“But these immortal killer moves mostly only have one core Immortal Gu, they are at rank six level.”

After the falling star hound was attacked for a long time, even though its flesh was torn open, it was only lightly injured.

It was an ancient desolate beast, even as an infant which had not reached maturity, it still had incredible defense and recovery abilities.

“I cannot fail this time, Fang Yuan will see me as a joke!” Twelfth Hair concentrated, he was filled with unprecedented determination.

The three desolate beasts seemed to be able to sense their master’s feelings, they were filled with battle intent.

Under Twelfth Hair’s manipulation, the diamond bear with the sturdiest body resisted attacks, while the golden-white tiger assisted it. As for the chestnut yak, even though it was very weak, it could cause some interferences on the side.

“Twelfth Hair is directing the desolate beasts, he seems to be having an easy time. But this situation is quite stagnant, the falling star hound is attacking fiercely, he has not sent out a fourth desolate beast yet. I am afraid he only has three desolate beasts after all.”

Fang Yuan calmly analyzed.

He even had to use a desolate beast like the chestnut yak, Fang Yuan’s guess was very likely to be true.

“After treasure yellow heaven opened, Twelfth Hair bought a diamond bear and a golden-white tiger. But his choice is quite questionable, the diamond bear itself is sufficient. Golden-white tiger is a metal path desolate beast with strong defenses as well, he might as well get a flying desolate beast, it would pose a greater threat. That way, the falling star hound would be distracted more and act more warily, it would have weaker attacks when trying to defend itself. Hmm?”

Fang Yuan was thinking about this, when Twelfth Hair made a mistake, the diamond bear left a gap open after moving away.

“Damn it!” Twelfth Hair stared with furious eyes, he immediately moved the chestnut yak to fill the gap.

“You have to hang on!” Twelfth Hair bellowed in his mind.

The falling star hound growled, slamming the chestnut yak away.

Next, the falling star hound broke away from the encirclement and charged into the grass.

As a result, the hairy man Gu Immortals hiding in the grass screamed in terror.

“Quick, use that move!” Seeing that he was about to be hit by the falling star hound, an unlucky hairy man Gu Immortal shouted in fear.

Swoosh.

At the next moment, he vanished on the spot, appearing beside another hairy man a thousand steps away from him.

“Thanks, thanks. You acted quickly, otherwise, I would have died.” The hairy man Gu Immortal who was saved still felt lingering fear.

The one who saved him was Sixth Hair.

He patted the hairy man Gu Immortal’s shoulder: “Relax, relax, don’t forget the outsider is here, don’t make our Lang Ya Sect lose face.”

Even now, he was still trying to sow discord.

The hairy man Gu Immortal who was saved quickly concealed his expression, but his body was still shaking slightly.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, killing intent was hidden in his gaze as he looked at Sixth Hair.

“I will slaughter this fellow one day! But we are members of Lang Ya Sect now, the information path alliance agreement prevents us from killing each other. So to kill him, I need to get rid of this Lang Ya Sect alliance agreement secretly first.”

Fang Yuan wanted to make use of Lang Ya Sect’s strength, Sixth Hair was a severe obstacle.

Sixth Hair played a big role in causing Fang Yuan and Lang Ya Sect’s relationship to turn so sour.

In Lang Ya Sect, Fang Yuan and Sixth Hair both had ulterior motives. Their relationship was not simple either.

Because they had made transactions, they had a hold on each other.

Fang Yuan had Lang Ya Sect’s alliance agreement, he could not do things that harmed Lang Ya Sect. Of course, he could think and talk about them. Sixth Hair was a member of Lang Ya Sect, because of this, if Sixth Hair was in fatal danger, Fang Yuan had to save him! Of course, it depended on the situation. If Sixth Hair tried to suicidally put himself in danger and lure an ancient desolate beast in order to entrap Fang Yuan, he would not have to save him in that situation.

Since Fang Yuan joined Lang Ya Sect and went under an alliance agreement, he was not going to be restricted so easily.

And Sixth Hair only wanted to get rid of Fang Yuan and obtain his body. He had insufficient strength, and Fang Yuan had a hold on him, because of Shadow Sect's plan, he was the final spy left in Lang Ya blessed land, he had to stay hidden.

Both sides had their own reservations, they were wary of each other.

As if he had sensed Fang Yuan's gaze, Sixth Hair turned around and smiled sinisterly.

He was a split soul of Spectral Soul, he had rich battle experience. This was why he could save the hairy man Gu Immortal before anyone else reacted.

He was trying to unite the hairy man Gu Immortals and ostracize Fang Yuan, limiting his growth.

The battle continued.

The falling star hound did not kill the hairy man Gu Immortal, the diamond bear and golden-white tiger quickly diverted it. Soon, the chestnut yak arrived as well, forming an encirclement again.

The hairy man Gu Immortals also continued their long range attacks.

But Twelfth Hair continued to make flaws in the battle due to unexpected circumstances, even though he was performing above his usual abilities.

After getting out of the encirclement, the falling star hound attempted to kill the other hairy man Gu Immortals.

But these hairy man Gu Immortals seemed to have the same immortal killer move. Whenever one was targeted, the rest would be able to teleport them away to another comrade's side.

“This immortal killer move is quite interesting.” Fang Yuan watched silently, he subconsciously placed himself in the falling star hound's position, what would he do to resolve the killer move?

Soon, Fang Yuan had an answer.

It was difficult to resolve this killer move. Because with just this little bit of information, he could not analyze anything.

He did not even know the name of the killer move.

In this short period of time, the killer move did not seem to have any flaws.

“Even if I cannot break it, it is very easy to kill these hairy man Gu Immortals. My movement speed far exceeds them, sword marks targeting death and dark assassination can cause many deaths to them already. In fact, just flying sword Immortal Gu alone can kill them. Of course, Sixth Hair is hiding his strength, that is another issue. The actual situation would depend on how the fight develops.”

“I am about to succeed! This time, I will truly defeat the falling star hound!” Twelfth Hair got more and more excited, the light of victory could be seen in his eyes.

This time, he performed better than usual, seven to eight hairy man Gu Immortals along with three desolate beasts were fighting against an infant falling star hound. With the proper tactics, victory was favoring these hairy man Gu Immortals.

“Fang Yuan, are you seeing this? Even without you, we can take down the falling star hound and obtain true victory!” Twelfth Hair cried out in his mind.

He loved his home, he was extremely loyal to Lang Ya Sect. Earlier, when Lang Ya Sect was facing trouble with developing in Tai Qiu, Fang Yuan watched on the side, Twelfth Hair had a lot of grudge towards Fang Yuan.

When he was injured and bedridden, Fang Yuan went to visit him, but he did not even want to meet, he sent a mortal Gu Master to reject Fang Yuan’s entry into the cloud city.

This victory had incredible meaning for him.

Being able to obtain victory in front of Fang Yuan, Twelfth Hair felt great pride and joy!

As time passed, the battle situation was becoming obvious.

Falling star hound was gradually unable to hold on, the hairy man Gu Immortals felt that their pressure was lifting.

They unavoidably became excited, some of them could even see victory ahead, their eyes were red from excitement, they were trembling slightly.

It was not easy!

With their horrible battle strength, fighting against the falling star hound resulted in repeated setbacks.

They had put in so much blood and sweat, coming up with a tactic to deal with the falling star hound, they had spent countless sleepless nights practising, they were finally going to succeed today!

Even though they were tired and their immortal essence was depleted, the hairy man Gu Immortals felt revitalized, they were having an adrenaline rush.

“Kill, kill this dog!”

“That’s right, tear its skin and hang it above the cloud cities, let everyone see our victory!”

“Hahaha, we finally defeated it.”

“Fang Yuan, are you seeing this? I know you are unwilling, but so what?”

“Today, we will teach you a lesson, the hairy man Gu Immortals are not powerless. Lang Ya Sect belongs to us hairy men, it is not for a human like you!”

The hairy man Gu Immortals shouted and screamed in excitement.

Fang Yuan smiled plainly, as if he did not hear them.

His attitude made the hairy man Gu Immortals disappointed, some of them even felt disgust and anger.

“He is just concealing his emotions, what can he do?” A hairy man Gu Immortal sneered.

However, a change occurred right at this moment!

An eagle hound suddenly appeared in the center of the battlefield, with one swipe of its claws, the diamond bear fell! With one peck from its beak, chestnut yak went blind! With a flap of its wings, intense winds blew, the golden-white tiger flew back by dozens of steps. The falling star hound curled up into a ball, whimpering in fear.

“What, where did this ancient desolate beast come from?” The hairy man Gu Immortals were shocked.

“Not, not just one!” Soon, five eagle hounds appeared from the grass, and three were flying in the sky.

Out of nowhere, eagle hounds had completely encircled the hairy man Gu Immortals.

“How, how did this happen?” Twelfth Hair’s pupils shrunk to pin size, he was completely stunned!

He had just experienced going from heaven to hell.

A moment ago, he was still a high and mighty victor, at the next moment, his life was on the line, this was a desperate situation!

“Oh? Heaven’s will, this is your ambush huh... incredible indeed.” Fang Yuan laughed in his mind.

The eagle hounds did not make a noise, while the hairy man Gu Immortals were shocked beyond words, there was silence.

“Oh Twelfth Hair, it seems that you have all failed. According to our earlier agreement, it is time for me to act.” Amidst the silence, Fang Yuan’s plain words could be heard.

For some reason, Twelfth Hair felt his heart jump, intense rage was burning inside him, he screamed at Fang Yuan: “You, are you making a mistake! What are you talking about? Open your damned eyes and see the situation we are in, okay?!”

Fang Yuan’s lips curled slightly.

Bam!!

A strength path giant hand appeared out of nowhere, it slammed the eagle hound closest to Fang Yuan to the ground.

Dust and smoke rose.

The eagle hounds’ attention was drawn away, towards Fang Yuan, they were wary of this strong enemy.

Within the dust cloud, Fang Yuan’s voice could be heard: “Alright, I will accept this present, can everyone please go far away, don’t be a disturbance to me.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1136: Eagle Hounds

Eagle hounds!

They had the body of a wolf and head of an eagle, with a pair of eagle wings on their backs. Their head, neck and wings were covered in black feathers, while their canine bodies and four limbs were covered in grey wolf fur. The dao marks on their bodies were mostly of dark path.

This was a rather special beast.

Normal desolate beasts, ancient desolate beasts and so on reproduced through males and females mating. Eagle hounds, however, were different.

The reproduction of eagle hound was through infection.

The poison of an eagle hound could influence any species of dog or eagle. When this influence reached a certain degree, the dog or eagle beast infected with the eagle hound’s poison would gradually transform into an eagle hound.

As a result, the individual strength of eagle hounds varied greatly.

Some eagle hounds were transformed from desolate beasts, so they would be desolate beast level. Some transformed from ancient desolate beasts, thus would be ancient eagle hounds. Immemorial eagle hounds were rarely seen, even in white heaven and black heaven.

Everything was clear.

The moment the first eagle hound appeared, Fang Yuan had already realized how the falling star hound and these eagle hounds were related.

This group of eagle hounds had been eyeing this falling star hound. It was thrown down from the sky and confined in Tai Qiu to grow.

When the falling star hound matured, it would be a true ancient desolate beast. At that time, the eagle hound group would use poison to turn this falling star hound into an ancient eagle hound.

As for why this falling star hound was roaming near the teleportation Gu formation, the answer was clear — heaven’s will!

“Two ancient eagle hounds, while the rest are all desolate beast eagle hounds.” Fang Yuan’s gaze coldly focused on the two ancient desolate beasts.

He did not sense auras of Immortal Gu on the eagle hounds.

This gave him even greater assurance in this battle!

Having and not having Immortal Gu would lead to Fang Yuan adopting two completely different battle tactics.

“The, the eagle hound was killed in one strike...”

“It has not died, it is only unconscious.”

“What was that move just now?”

“It was like a huge hand!”

The hairy man Gu Immortals reacted only now, and they were extremely shocked.

Just now, the eagle hound that was beaten unconscious by one giant hand was naturally a desolate beast level. Strength path giant hand had rank seven battle strength, creating such an outcome was not strange. If it were against an ancient eagle hound, however, it would be a different result.

Twelfth Hair had never seen Fang Yuan fight seriously.

He had always thought the battle strength Fang Yuan showed when instructing him was Fang Yuan’s true strength.

Twelfth Hair forcibly calmed down, thinking: “Although Fang Yuan beat one eagle hound unconscious, there are still a lot more remaining! Even if he is powerful, what can just one person do? This battle bodes ill, it is better to retreat! Ahh!”

Just as he was thinking of this, Twelfth Hair suddenly could not help crying out in shock.

Fang Yuan’s confrontation with the eagle hound group lasted a very short time. Almost the next instant after beating the eagle hound unconscious, he began his attack.

Sword escape Immortal Gu.

Whoosh!

Fang Yuan left behind an afterimage on his original spot.

Within an instant, Fang Yuan had penetrated from the edge of the battlefield into the center.

“This, what level of speed is this?!” The hairy man Gu Immortals were shocked.

Even Sixth Hair’s pupils shrunk, he gritted his teeth. He guessed Fang Yuan used sword escape Immortal Gu, this was Bo Qing’s Immortal Gu!

Fang Yuan floated in the air, looking down at the giant beast below.

This was an ancient eagle hound, when it had just appeared, it had knocked down the diamond bear, sent the golden-white tiger flying and pecked the chestnut yak blind.

This ancient eagle hound was stepping on the diamond bear, not letting it budge. The infant falling star hound behind it was curled up into a ball, shivering.

He was close to it!

The distance between Fang Yuan and this ancient eagle hound was less than a hundred steps.

Images of each other were clearly reflected in both their eyes.

Fang Yuan suddenly disappeared and appeared right before the eagle hound’s eyes, giving it a scare and causing it to take a step back subconsciously.

But soon, its fierce nature was agitated, as it opened its beak wide and screeched furiously. Its wings flapped rapidly and energy transferred from its rear limbs, as it charged ferociously at Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan sneered, shouting: “Beast, lie down.”

Boom!

A strength path giant hand appeared and descended from the sky, slamming on the ground like a jar lid.

The giant hand collided with the ancient eagle hound; the ancient eagle hound was full of ferocity, but was still unable to match the giant hand’s power as it was pushed down.

The giant hand also was sent back from the collision.

But soon, under Fang Yuan’s control and replenishment, the giant hand once again pushed down fiercely, as if it was bringing down a storm.

The giant hand struck the ancient eagle hound’s head, immediately causing it to bow down, its four limbs bent exaggeratedly and its claws that were fiercely supporting its body left four pits on the ground.

The strength path giant hand was again flung up a distance from the vibration of the clash, thinning during the process.

But the next moment, the giant hand once again condensed as it slammed down.

The ancient eagle hound refused to give in and lifted its head, but at the next moment it saw the giant hand covering the entirety of its vision.

Boom!

There was a huge sound as the ancient eagle hound’s head was fiercely slammed down to the ground.

The thick and sharp eagle beak was firmly embedded into the ground.

Its feathers chaotically flew in the air, while its four limbs also sunk into the ground.

The ancient eagle hound fell into an extremely furious state, when had it ever received such humiliation. It wanted to strike back, energy flowed through its limbs, its muscles bulged and the next moment, it was about to lift up its head!

Boom!

The giant hand was quicker, however, slamming down on its head and back.

The eagle hound’s skeleton gave fracturing sounds at the extremely heavy burden. Its head was shaking intensely and it was seeing stars, the strength it had accumulated just moments ago completely dissipated.

But Fang Yuan’s momentum was unforgiving, bang bang bang, another three slams, and this ancient eagle hound was almost completely buried into the ground.

It was motionless, the surrounding soil was gradually turning red from the blood.

The hairy man Gu Immortals were all struck speechless!

After Fang Yuan had made a desolate beast eagle hound faint, he charged into the center of the eagle hounds without being afraid of the enemy’s numerical advantage.

Facing the ancient eagle hound, he sent out ten or so giant hands and struck it to death like slamming bread dough!

The hairy man Gu Immortals had never seen such a terrifying display, and were extremely frightened.

In fact, not only the hairy man Gu Immortals, even the other eagle hounds were dazed.

By the time they reacted, one of their leaders had been wiped out.

Deathly silence hung in the air, with not even the sound of wind.

Under everyone’s gazes, Fang Yuan slowly lifted his head and gazed at the sky.

There were quite a few eagle hounds hovering in the air, among them was the second ancient desolate beast.

“It’s your turn now.” Fang Yuan’s tone was light, as he charged towards the sky the very next moment!

The eagle hounds in the sky immediately let out ear-piercing cries, breaking up in an uproar as they retreated in every direction.

Twelfth Hair and the group still had their mouths wide open as they looked at Fang Yuan charging to the sky, driving the eagle hounds away like they were sparrows or pigeons.

Were these still eagle hounds?

A mighty ancient desolate beast, where is your imposing might!

Twelfth Hair felt like he was in a dream.

Pursuing good fortune and avoiding disaster, protecting oneself and seeking long life was every living being’s instinct. Wild beasts pushing aside the weak and fearing the strong was also normal.

With the eagle hounds dispersing, Fang Yuan could do nothing.

In terms of speed, eagle hounds were outstanding, regardless of whether they were desolate beasts or ancient desolate beasts.

Fang Yuan’s gaze continued to stare at that ancient eagle hound.

“Will you be able to escape...” As Fang Yuan mumbled, he suddenly sped up!

The next instance, his figure appeared behind the ancient eagle hound.

Myriad self first style, giant hand!

The giant hand slammed down with such a loud sound, the hairy men shivered and the eagle hounds felt their hair standing on end.

The hairy men saw that ancient eagle hound being slammed down from the air by Fang Yuan like a ball, colliding heavily with the ground.

Sword escape Immortal Gu combined with giant hand gave an outstanding result.

Strength path giant hand’s speed was rather slow, if it struck out from afar towards the eagle hound, this eagle hound would probably be able to escape before it reached it.

But Fang Yuan personally moved, using his speed to make up for this weakness of the giant hand.

Of course, this battle tactic also had a weakness, it could easily make Fang Yuan fall into a dangerous situation.

So, Fang Yuan had activated bloodstained conqueror’s robe before he used this tactic.

There was also another condition, Fang Yuan did not sense any wild Immortal Gu on these two ancient eagle hounds. If there were wild Immortal Gu, without probing out the details, Fang Yuan would not use this battle tactic.

Giant grass grew all over Tai Qiu, the eagle hound’s fall was greatly mitigated by these strands of grass.

Even though ancient eagle hounds specialized in speed, they were all of ancient desolate level, and had sturdy bodies. Fang Yuan would not be able to kill it without using ten or so strength path giant hands.

However, just as Fang Yuan was about to take the chance to chase it, his expression suddenly changed.

In his eyes flashed a scene of the future —

While he charged down, suddenly a third ancient eagle hound appeared and ambushed him.

Fang Yuan was caught unprepared and was clawed fiercely by the wolf claws, smashing to the ground. Blood flowed out of his seven orifices and all his bones were fractured, his bloodstained conqueror’s robe was broken and even blood asset Immortal Gu was injured, unable to be used again.

The image flashed in an instant, however Fang Yuan fully trusted it.

Because this was the result of his pre-activated immortal killer move — Three Breaths Future Vision!

It was a time path investigative killer move from Hei Fan true inheritance, ‘three breaths future vision’ used after Immortal Gu as the core and could allow the Gu Immortal to see their future situation. And this future situation would manifest within three breaths of time.

Fang Yuan did not lose his head, instead his eyes shined with satisfaction.

“Sure enough, heaven’s will’s arrangement wouldn’t be so simple, there was actually an ambush!”

“My bloodstained conqueror’s robe is an immortal level defensive move, but its core Immortal Gu is only the rank six Blood Asset. It is still slightly weak when facing an ancient desolate beast.”

Since he knew about the ambush, the ambush naturally would be useless.

Sword marks targeting death!

Fang Yuan suddenly shot out sharp sword light towards a certain location in the air.

Right as the hairy man Gu Immortals were feeling puzzled, sword marks targeting death struck that hidden ancient eagle hound.

Ding!

There was a sharp and clear sound, the ancient eagle hound was intercepted by sword marks targeting death.

The hairy man Gu Immortals shouted in shock.

“There was actually a third ancient eagle hound hiding in ambush!”

“Unimaginable, if it had sneak attacked any of us hairy man Gu Immortals, it would probably have gotten its way.”

“Fang Yuan could actually sense it?”

Fang Yuan slightly raised his eyebrows, staring at the third ancient eagle hound which had suffered no damage.

“Being able to block sword marks targeting death, this ancient eagle hound seems to have wild Immortal Gu on it?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1137: Transformation Path Gu Immortal

The third ancient eagle hound had Immortal Gu.

If not for this, how could it block Fang Yuan’s immortal killer move, sword marks targeting death?

Fang Yuan’s heart burned with eagerness.

Times had changed.

If it were before he inherited Hei Fan’s true inheritance, Fang Yuan would have avoided this eagle group, but now, with his strength having increased sharply, his mindset had changed.

He intended to take down all these eagle hounds!

“My sovereign immortal aperture is very big!” Fang Yuan’s lips curled up.

“As for the wild Immortal Gu on the ancient eagle hound, I will take it as well. Being able to block sword marks targeting death, let me see what kind of exemplary defensive Immortal Gu it is.”

In an instant, thoughts surged in Fang Yuan’s mind, he determined his battle tactics.

Blood path killer moves like blood torrent and so on were not suitable to be used in front of the hairy man Gu Immortals.

These hairy man Gu Immortals could connect to treasure yellow heaven and knew the terror of blood path. They were not like that group of ignorant Gu Immortals in Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Although he could use Hei Fan true inheritance’s immortal killer moves, he had to be prudent. After all, he still had not practised them to proficiency, rashly using them could likely result in failure and cause backlash.

Therefore —

Fang Yuan clapped, choosing his personal creation, which was also the offensive method he was most skilled in.

Convergence of enslavement and strength path — Myriad Self!

At the next instant, large amounts of strength path phantoms filled the sky.

“Ahh!” The hairy man Gu Immortals were all struck speechless.

Sixth Hair also had a stupefied look, but inwardly was not surprised.

He already knew about myriad self, this was old news.

But soon, Sixth Hair’s pupils shrunk as he blurted out: “He va... vanished?!”

In his perception, Fang Yuan had suddenly vanished, and only the dense group of strength path phantoms remained in the sky.

Fang Yuan had used familiar face to disguise himself as an ordinary strength path phantom, mixing in within the myriad self army.

Charge!

The myriad self army cried out together and like a torrent falling from the sky, charged towards the third eagle hound.

The eagle hound’s eyes flashed with sharp light, suddenly the wings on its back flapped, bringing forth a layer of dark wing shadows.

Its speed increased sharply, and it actually retreated!

This response was somewhat out of Fang Yuan’s expectations.

Clearly, this eagle hound had a second wild Immortal Gu. That layer of wing shadows was the effect of that Immortal Gu.

“It actually has another wild Immortal Gu!” The desire in Fang Yuan intensified.

He commanded the myriad self army to continue charging towards the ancient eagle hound.

Along the way, the strength path phantoms suddenly dispersed, like a blooming flower, or a giant beast’s maw, as they pounced at the ancient eagle hound.

The ancient eagle hound gave a sharp cry, as it suddenly rose up.

It was actually retreating again.

Fang Yuan had already calculated its retreat routes, the myriad self army, which had charged ahead like a flood dragon with its mouth open, swung its tail. The strength path phantoms at the rear pounced at the ancient eagle hound.

The ancient eagle hound that was retreating backwards suddenly leaned towards the right, its wings flapped and its whole body drew an inclining arc through the sky, perfectly dodging the myriad self army’s offensive route.

The hairy man Gu Immortals were in an agitated state watching all these moves.

Compared to the eagle hound, they naturally wanted Fang Yuan to win.

But this third ancient eagle hound seemed to be extremely cunning, Fang Yuan had encircled it several times but was still unable to succeed.

“The ancient eagle hound’s speed is much faster than these ‘Fang Yuans’. How could they catch up to it?” Twelfth Hair attentively observed, feeling dejected as Fang Yuan continued to make no progress.

Sixth Hair however had a bright gaze, thinking: ‘Fang Yuan’s enslavement path attainment seems to have increased slightly. It is going to end soon! This ancient eagle hound might be fast, but it is concerned about the other eagle hounds, and has only been flying around the battlefield, it will soon be captured by Fang Yuan.’

A battlefield formed in the sky.

Almost all the eagle hounds flew up and were battling with the myriad self army.

Fang Yuan’s focus was completely on the third ancient eagle hound.

“There is something odd about this ancient eagle hound!”

Fang Yuan had discovered that the other eagle hounds could be easily dealt with. As long as he used a few strength path phantoms, the eagle hounds could be pinned down. Only this third ancient eagle hound was rather crafty and could see through the tactics of the myriad self army, it was able to retreat and advance at will.

Finally, Fang Yuan was able to succeed, several groups of the myriad self army besieged the third eagle hound from the front, back, above and below.

“He actually surrounded it!” Twelfth Hair and the group cried out in joy.

The ancient eagle hound let out a sharp screech, as it flapped its wings wildly and clawed everywhere, destroying many of the strength path phantoms.

Within just a few moments of being encircled, the ancient eagle hound seemed to be about to break through the siege.

But this did not matter.

Because Fang Yuan’s true body, hidden among the strength path phantoms, had already approached the ancient eagle hound.

When he was close enough, he decisively used his sword path killer move — Dark Assassination!

This killer move’s specialty was that no Immortal Gu aura would leak out when it was activated, it was extremely stealthy.

The ancient eagle hound let out a miserable shriek as it was struck by Fang Yuan.

A bloody hole appeared on its neck, blood spurted out like a fountain.

But in the blink of an eye, the blood lessened, and the bloody hole disappeared, the injury had healed and feathers grew once again on the surface.

At the same moment, the ancient eagle hound turned berserk, its whole body was covered by a layer of dark shadows, its speed increased by multiple times as it attacked wildly, bringing forth afterimages of its wings and claws.

Crash crash crash!

Countless strength path phantoms were destroyed directly by the ancient eagle hound without putting up resistance.

Even Fang Yuan’s true body was discovered and was sent flying.

But with bloodstained conqueror’s robe, there was not much injury.

“How, how could this be?”

“There are disorderly auras of so many Gu worms appearing on this ancient eagle hound!”

Twelfth Hair and the rest blurted out in shock.

Sixth Hair’s eyes also widened at this, as he incredulously said: “Impossible! It can actually use an immortal killer move?”

Such a strong result and the complex aura of Gu worms indicated this ancient eagle hound had actually used an immortal killer move just now.

This no doubt went against the common knowledge of the immortal world.

A wild beast actually had enough intelligence to activate immortal killer move?!

Wind whistled past Fang Yuan’s ears, he was sent flying. Although he had avoided the frontal attack, it had still brushed past him and was enough to send him flying away.

He gazed at the ancient eagle hound, his eyes brightly flashing: “So it was like this, no wonder I had felt it was so peculiar! This ancient eagle hound was originally a Gu Immortal!”

It was impossible for wild beasts to be so smart to the extent of using immortal killer moves!

Sixth Hair did not realize this because he did not cultivate transformation path.

Fang Yuan had plenty of understanding regarding transformation path, immediately thinking of this most likely possibility.

A transformation path Gu Immortal who cultivated an eagle hound transformation, but because of transforming too many times or being in transformation state for too long, they were unable to turn back, losing their wisdom and memories, turning into a special ancient eagle hound.

Like when refining Gu, the Gu Immortals cultivating transformation path would have to face the risks when transforming into other forms!

In history, such cases were not rare.

The following battle proved Fang Yuan’s guess.

This ancient eagle hound still had some battle instincts of the transformation path Gu Immortal. As a result, its performance was much more cunning than normal ancient eagle hounds, and it understood when to advance and retreat.

But in the end, it was not a Gu Immortal, it did not have human wisdom, it could not grasp opportunities in the battle and could not carry out any battle tactics.

When in battle, it mainly used Immortal Gu. When it was the juncture of life and death, its instincts would be stimulated and it subconsciously used its most familiar immortal killer move from the past.

Just before, Fang Yuan had used dark assassination to pierce through its head, but in the moment of crisis, it had dodged and the attack struck its neck.

Then, the wild shadows it erupted with that sent Fang Yuan’s true body flying were from it using an immortal killer move.

The fight instantly fell into a stalemate.

If it were ordinary eagle hounds, Fang Yuan would have captured all of them by now. But it was a different situation with this ancient eagle hound, it was much more troublesome than ordinary ancient eagle hounds.

Whenever Fang Yuan sneak attacked, the ancient eagle hound was always able to avoid the fatal points. Perhaps it was because this transformation path Gu Immortal had experienced many battles, or maybe it was because of the support of an unique Immortal Gu, a more likely possibility was the help of heaven’s will.

In short, Fang Yuan’s intention to finish the battle quickly had been thwarted.

The sky was chaotic, loud sounds reverberated unceasingly as the strength path phantoms were destroyed at every moment.

But with Fang Yuan’s replenishment, the myriad self army was unending.

Their quality might not be up to par, but their quantity held the absolute upper hand!

From time to time, eagle hounds covered by strength path phantoms would fall down from the sky and smash into the ground.

“Upper hand! Fang Yuan... Elder Fang Yuan has the upper hand facing all these eagle hounds.”

“An individual’s strength can actually reach such a level!”

“Elder Fang Yuan is actually so powerful.”

The hairy man Gu Immortals had already retreated to the edge of the battlefield, and as they looked at the battle, they had, without noticing, started to address Fang Yuan as an elder.

Twelfth Hair’s expression was filled with shock as well as bitterness.

He felt it even deeper than others.

Fang Yuan’s enslavement path attainment of easily commanding the myriad self army, made him have a feeling of how shallow and minute he was!

Although the ancient eagle hound was somewhat troublesome, from the beginning, Fang Yuan occupied the dominant position and the eagle hounds could not do anything to him.

“Since it is like this, then I should change my battle tactics.” Fang Yuan’s true body put off attacking, and suddenly retreated to the side.

He began to gather his concentration to activate another immortal killer move.

By now, he had already been constantly maintaining bloodstained conqueror’s robe, familiar face and three breaths future vision. He was floating in the air and also activating Gu worms, and occasionally replenishing the myriad self army. All these used up his focus.

And this immortal killer move was rather complicated and he had yet to practice it to proficiency, thus he had to give up on attacking and move to a safer environment, to gather almost all his concentration and activate this move.

Rank seven year Gu was first activated, followed by the supplementary mortal Gu one after the other.

Immortal killer move — Year Beast Summoning.

“Come out, my ancient year beast!”

Splash splash splash.

In mid-air, a phantom image of the River of Time manifested.

Waves were surging endlessly in the river, and from these waves, an enormous bestial figure jumped out!

Cluck cluck.

The year beast unfurled its wings and descended to the battlefield!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1138: End of Battle

“This, what is this?”

“Such a large chicken!”

Seeing an ancient year beast suddenly entering the battlefield, the hairy man Gu Immortals were shocked.

“According to the contents of Hei Fan’s true inheritance, there are twelve different forms of year beasts. This time, I was pretty lucky to be able to summon a chicken year beast.” Fang Yuan sized up this year beast, while appraising it inwardly.

This year beast was as large as a hill.

When it unfurled its wings, it cast a huge shadow on the ground.

It was valiant and spirited, with awe-inspiring might. Its feathers were bright and colorful while its claws were sharp as blades.

It quickly swept its gaze around the battlefield, before fixing on Fang Yuan.

No one else had more appeal to it than Fang Yuan, because it smelled the scent of year Gu from Fang Yuan.

Year Gu!

This was the food of year beasts. The higher the rank of the year Gu, the more enticing it was to year beasts.

The immortal killer move, year beast summoning, was formed from this principle. Its creator, Hei Fan, had invented this killer move long before refining Years Flow Like Water.

“This is for you.” Fang Yuan chuckled, as he waved his hand, sending out large amounts of mortal year Gu.

The chicken year beast was joyous, as it raised its head and inhaled.

Immediately, an enormous air current was created and like a dragon swallowing water, the chicken year beast inhaled all the mortal year Gu.

“Kill it and I will give you a lot more.” Fang Yuan pointed at that crucial ancient eagle hound.

The chicken year beast’s gaze sharpened, as it quickly turned its head towards the target.

The ancient eagle hound felt goosebumps all over its body, revealing its sharp claws as it felt a strong threat from the chicken year beast.

The ancient eagle hound formed a clear contrast with the chicken year beast, even if it stood up like a human, it would not reach half the height of the chicken year beast.

Cluck cluck!

The chicken year beast flapped its wings, charging towards its target. The speed it erupted with was actually faster than the ancient eagle hound.

Bam.

The two collided fiercely, the chicken year beast was sent back seventy to eighty steps, while the ancient eagle hound was directly sent flying.

The chicken year beast let out a sharp cry, as it chased after the ancient eagle hound.

The ancient eagle hound was indeed crafty, after suffering a loss, it no longer confronted the chicken year beast head-on, instead it moved left and right, dodging the chicken year beast.

Fang Yuan looked on for a while before he relaxed.

This chicken year beast had no Immortal Gu, but its physical constitution was much stronger than the ancient eagle hound.

Year beasts, even in the River of Time, were very rare beasts!

Of course, if the ancient eagle hound activated Immortal Gu, the chicken year beast would fall into a disadvantage. Once or twice would not matter, but if it continued on, the chicken year beast would also be defeated.

The side which had Immortal Gu would naturally obtain a huge boost in their battle strength.

“Hei Fan warned in the true inheritance that the summoned year beast is not a slave and the summoner does not have very much control over it. If the enemy is too powerful, it won’t battle at all. Even if it battles, it might retreat after a short period of time and demand even more year Gu from the summoning Gu Immortal.”

As he thought of this, Fang Yuan knew he did not have much time left.

He did not choose to pincer attack the ancient eagle hound with the chicken year beast.

Because the chicken year beast was not under his control and he was only able to barely communicate with it using the method left behind by Hei Fan, reaching a collaboration.

Fang Yuan’s true body, which was hidden amidst the myriad self army, quietly approached a desolate beast eagle hound.

The eagle hounds were still fighting with the myriad self army in the air.

Occasionally, some eagle hounds would be beaten down by Fang Yuan’s strength path phantoms, but shortly afterwards, these eagle hounds would fly to the air again, continuing to fight.

Although there were many strength path phantoms, their offensive prowess was clearly weak when facing against desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts. They were only able to disrupt and expend the eagle hounds’ energy.

Strength path giant hand!

Suddenly, Fang Yuan attacked, a strength path giant hand appeared out of nowhere, slamming down towards an eagle hound.

Fang Yuan’s position was extremely good, the eagle hound was caught unprepared and was struck by the hand, immediately letting out a miserable cry before it fainted.

The eagle hound began to fall down, but Fang Yuan activated another giant hand and was waiting below.

The second giant hand grabbed this unconscious eagle hound, and carefully placed it on the ground.

Fang Yuan’s true body disappeared amongst the myriad self army once again.

But soon, he appeared in another area of the battlefield, strength path giant hand attacked quickly and sent another eagle hound fainting.

He then did the same as before, placing this eagle hound on the ground, beside the first eagle hound.

The hairy man Gu Immortals were all struck speechless!

“Elder Fang Yuan seems to be...”

“Right, he intends to capture these eagle hounds alive!”

“A skilled person is truly courageous.”

The hairy man Gu Immortals sighed. These eagle hounds, which were deadly opponents to them, seemed to be no more than wealth from Fang Yuan’s perspective.

One after the other, eagle hounds were plotted against by Fang Yuan, struck unconscious, and piled up together.

Soon, these unconscious eagle hounds piled up to form a hill, making for quite a grand sight.

The ancient eagle hound saw this scene and gave a furious cry. But it was pinned down by the chicken year beast and was unable to go rescue its brethren.

The chicken year beast was also slightly in a slightly miserable state, its whole body was filled with injuries and it seemed to be having the intent to retreat.

After all, Hei Fan was a time path Gu Immortal, being able to create an immortal killer move that imitated enslavement path was already extremely amazing.

“It seems that year beast summoning is ideal for use in a favorable battle. If used to fight in a disadvantageous situation during a life or death battle, the result won’t be outstanding.” Fang Yuan engraved this information in his mind. Only when one used immortal killer moves in practice would they obtain deeper experience.

Fang Yuan firmly held the initiative in the battle.

He paid attention to the battle between the chicken year beast and the ancient eagle hound all along.

Before the chicken year beast retreated, Fang Yuan dealt with the remaining eagle hounds.

The unconscious eagle hounds numbered to eight, while the rest were struck to death. After all, giant hand was not a capturing method, it was not easy for Fang Yuan to use it to imitate this effect.

“Die!”

Fang Yuan flew to the sky and flanked the ancient eagle hound with the chicken year beast.

After fighting for several rounds, the result was indeed not good.

Fang Yuan called out to the chicken year beast to retreat and guard those unconscious eagle hounds.

The chicken year beast already had low battle intent, and after receiving Fang Yuan’s instruction, it did not immediately move, but instead quietly retreated a distance before opening its beak as it gazed at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan understood its intention, and threw out a large batch of year Gu.

The chicken year beast had its fill, only then did it turn around and move towards the ground, to guard the unconscious eagle hounds.

Fang Yuan and the ancient eagle hound battled once again.

But this time, the situation was different from before.

The ancient eagle hound was anxious to save those unconscious comrades, as it charged in all directions.

“What a pity. A grand Gu Immortal falling down to such a level! Thinking it is an actual eagle hound.” Fang Yuan was lot more relaxed now than before.

The ancient eagle hound flew fast and with Immortal Gu on it, at the crucial times, it could arouse its survival instincts and activate the previous immortal killer move.

Fang Yuan changed his battle tactic.

His previous tactic of charging in and using giant hand was too risky. Bloodstained conqueror’s robe’s defense was nothing prominent in front of this ancient eagle hound.

Fang Yuan started using sword path killer moves to attack the ancient eagle hound from afar.

But the ancient eagle hound’s defensive method was outstanding, Fang Yuan did not know which Immortal Gu it was specifically. He estimated this transformation path Gu Immortal, when alive, felt the defense of an eagle hound was rather low, thus intentionally strengthening this aspect.

Fang Yuan fought for a long time but still had no upper hand, the ancient eagle hound also could not rescue its comrades, while the chicken year beast sat in position to fight a defensive battle.

The injuries on the ancient eagle hound slowly accumulated.

“This is truly troublesome. Giant hand’s speed is slow, it cannot hit. Sword path killer moves can hit, but the effect is not that good. Using poison spit is simply wasting immortal essence. Ancient eagle hounds are extremely resistant to poison!”

Fang Yuan was without other options.

Similarly, after this transformation path Gu Immortal completely transformed into the ancient eagle hound, they obtained the intuition of wild beasts, and with the remaining battle instincts, this ancient eagle hound became much more difficult to handle.

Facing it, Fang Yuan found himself at a loss as to what to do.

A transformation path Gu Immortal’s advantage was that after the transformation succeeds, their body’s constitution would be extremely high. Like this ancient eagle hound, just its flying speed could match Sword Escape in short range. Let alone when it activates its Immortal Gu.

At the moment, Fang Yuan could only choose to fight a battle of attrition.

When this ancient eagle hound uses up all its immortal essence, and is no longer able to activate its Immortal Gu, that would be his victory.

Or when its injuries accumulate to a certain degree and it exposes a flaw which Fang Yuan could use!

Fang Yuan felt helpless, but the spectators did not have this feeling.

The hairy man Gu Immortals were staring blankly.

Strength!

In the competitive, cruel world of Gu Immortals, the most important thing was the Gu Immortal’s strength.

The strength Fang Yuan displayed shocked all the hairy men.

Even Sixth Hair was not an exception.

“This guy, how could he increase his battle strength so much in such a short time?! He can actually summon a year beast, how did he get a hold of this method? He clearly only went out for a short period of time...”

Sixth Hair felt heaviness in his mind.

Fang Yuan’s growth speed caused him to feel stifled and breathless.

After some more time fighting, the ancient eagle hound suddenly rose up.

“Eh? You want to escape!” Fang Yuan thought before quickly giving chase.

The ancient eagle hound’s injuries had accumulated to a certain state, whether it be its offensive prowess or flying speed, both had clearly fallen.

No matter how talented in battle the Gu Immortal was when they were alive, the wild beast’s instinct of evading danger still made it choose to retreat.

As for those unconscious ‘comrades’, they could only be abandoned.

Fang Yuan inwardly cursed at this, he had already anticipated this situation, it was just that it happened earlier than his expectation.

Fang Yuan activated sword escape Immortal Gu to give chase, but the distance between them was shrinking very slowly.

The ancient eagle hound was escaping for its life with an astonishing speed.

Immortal killer move — Luck Whirlwind!

Fang Yuan was without other options and could only activate this killer move.

Success!

The ancient eagle hound directly returned to the previous position, Fang Yuan caught up to it and both sides engaged in fierce battle again.

After a few rounds of fighting, the ancient eagle hound escaped again.

Fang Yuan could only give chase.

Luck whirlwind!

Success.

Both sides battled again, while the hairy man Gu Immortals watched on from afar.

But soon, the ancient eagle hound gave up on Fang Yuan, it crazily flapped its wings as it retreated for a third time, its attitude more firm than before.

Fang Yuan was helpless, he was unable to break the eagle’s wings.

Luck whirlwind!

Unfortunately, he failed this time and immediately spurted out some blood.

It took him a few breaths to stabilize himself, the ancient eagle hound had already flown to the horizon by this time.

Fang Yuan had no choice but to stop.

Heaven’s will was paying attention all along, Tai Qiu was perilous, and there were already vague signs of a beast tide forming.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1139: Deadly Situation

“There was not much time to practice luck whirlwind properly.” Fang Yuan thought as he sighed.

If luck whirlwind was activated on its own, the success rate of its activation was eighty to ninety percent.

But when put in real battle, it was a different situation.

For instance, Fang Yuan had to maintain bloodstained conqueror’s robe, familiar face, three breaths future vision, and other immortal killer moves, these killer moves involved large numbers of Gu worms and needed enormous mental energy.

In this situation, activating ‘luck whirlwind’ which he was not proficient in, and being able to activate it twice successfully already showed Fang Yuan’s luck was quite good.

Immortal killer moves had outstanding effects, but their expenditure of mental energy was very high. Let alone in life and death battle, where one had to maintain their attention on the enemy, consider battle tactics as well as making appropriate responses in time.

As a result, it was not the case that the more immortal killer moves activated in battle, the better.

If the mind was burdened over the limit, one might not be able to give a correct response to an enemy’s sudden attack or might not even be able to react in time, leading to their defeat and death. That would truly be laughable.

In fact, there were countless such laughable ends in the history of Gu Immortals.

Examples of extremely powerful killer moves failing in activation and causing the Gu Immortal to die were not few.

“To resolve this issue, I can only raise my battle strength even further!”

“Besides adding in more practice and modifying the immortal killer moves to make them simpler, wisdom path can be used to solve it.”

Immortal killer moves were created from the combination of countless Gu worms.

Activating each Gu worm expended at least one thought of the Gu Immortal. Successfully activating one immortal killer move would expend thousands or even tens of thousands of the Gu Immortal’s thoughts!

Wisdom path was a path that was specialised in solving this issue.

Wisdom path Gu Immortals were often able to use a greater number of and more complex immortal killer moves than Gu Immortals of other paths.

“Among the wisdom path inheritances I have obtained, the most important one is still Dong Fang Chang Fan’s Wisdom Star true inheritance. It is specialized in deducing and is not specialized in controlling Gu worms and activating killer moves. But I am now a wisdom path grandmaster, I can fully use this foundation to develop on this aspect and make a breakthrough.”

After Fang Yuan sent the ancient eagle hound escaping away, he examined his own shortcomings while returning, and decided he had to progress on wisdom path next.

Descending on the ground, Fang Yuan patted his stomach and opened the entrance to his immortal aperture.

The entrance opened, revealing a part of the landscape in the sovereign immortal aperture.

Sixth Hair stared fixedly, but how could he be able to see properly from outside the entrance?

He only saw a desolate icy plain.

That was Mini Northern Plains of Sovereign blessed land.

Sixth Hair let out a sigh of relief at this.

‘It seems he focused on raising his battle strength, while the management of the immortal aperture has fallen. It’s no wonder, after all this sovereign immortal aperture faces calamity once every two months.’

Sixth Hair simply did not know Fang Yuan had completely plundered Hei Fan grotto-heaven, he thought Fang Yuan was still a pauper, little did he know that the other areas of Sovereign blessed land were beautiful mountains and rivers, lush forests, and shocking amounts of rich resources.

“Regardless, this is genuine rank seven battle strength.’ Sixth Hair’s eyes twitched as he gazed at the chicken year beast: ‘Fang Yuan might only be rank six, but he already holds rank seven strength. Adding on to another rank seven battle strength... this, I definitely need to report this matter to Lord Ying Wu Xie!”

The chicken year beast clucked in happiness.

Fang Yuan fed it large numbers of year Gu, making it extremely satisfied.

Finally, it flapped its wings and jumped into the River of Time, slowly disappearing from sight.

Taking in the eagle hounds one after the other into his immortal aperture, along with the falling star hound, and after sending away the chicken year beast, Fang Yuan turned around and faced the hairy man Gu Immortals.

“This mission should be considered done by me, right?” Fang Yuan lightly smiled, using an inquiring tone to ask these hairy men.

The hairy man Gu Immortals nodded, their expressions were more or less filled with reluctance, helplessness and embarrassment.

This was the fact.

Without Fang Yuan making a move, their lives would have been in danger.

Twelfth Hair opened his mouth as if to say something, but even after moving his mouth multiple times, he did not manage to say a word.

He thought of his meager performance and how he had an exaggerated opinion of his own abilities, he could not help feeling ashamed.

Sixth Hair was observing the others’ expressions, and spoke with a sinister smile: “Elder Fang Yuan, you are truly amazing, you were able to defeat the eagle hound group by yourself! If we had not seen it personally, none of us would have believed it. If you had made a move earlier, the falling star hound or whatever would have been nothing difficult, right?”

The hairy man Gu Immortals heard this and their expressions changed slightly, feeling even more complicated.

“I have my own problems, I don’t want to explain to you. First supreme elder knows about them.” Fang Yuan chuckled, he then gazed at everyone before looking at Twelfth Hair: “Alright. This matter is over now, let us return.”

With the teleportation Gu formation, everyone returned to Lang Ya blessed land.

After hearing everyone’s report, Lang Ya land spirit’s attitude softened by a lot.

He was not very shocked at Fang Yuan’s battle strength.

Because he knew Fang Yuan had once possessed Spring Autumn Cicada and had reborn. A rank six possessing rank seven battle strength was rare, but for Fang Yuan, it was not hard to understand.

Having eased his relationship with Lang Ya land spirit, and obtaining the thousand contribution points from completing the falling star hound mission, Fang Yuan was able to smoothly borrow Gu worms to use immortal tribulation tempering aperture.

Over the following days, Fang Yuan cultivated in peace.

He mainly cultivated his soul using Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley, secretly trained the new killer moves like luck whirlwind, and in his free time, he looked after the newly obtained infant falling star hound and the group of eagle hounds.

Regarding these desolate beasts and the ancient eagle hound, they only needed to slightly adapt to the new environment and could live in peace.

Regardless of where they lived, they were still living, right?

This was the behavior of those without intelligence.

As for the countless resources moved over from Hei Fan grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan placed most of them in Mini Southern Border.

Because Mini Southern Border’s environment was rather similar to Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s.

Despite this, because the dao marks of Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture could not compare to Hei Fan grotto-heaven, many resources had reduced production and some were even on the verge of dying.

As a result, Fang Yuan still had a concern, which was to quickly sell these resources that he could not grow.

Besides transacting with Lang Ya land spirit, the focus was on treasure yellow heaven.

In a short period of time, Fang Yuan accumulated a large number of immortal essence stones. After using a portion of the resources, the slightly insufficient immortal essence reserve was no longer a worry, and now it had become Fang Yuan’s strong point.

“So much green grape immortal essence! I don’t have to worry even if I activate triple layered sword wave a hundred times.”

Fang Yuan had never possessed so much green grape immortal essence.

This made him even more confident for his fourth earthly calamity.

Time passed, finally it was time for Fang Yuan to pass another earthly calamity again.

He left Lang Ya blessed land and came to the northern icy plain.

After choosing an area, he placed down his immortal aperture and opened its entrance, absorbing heaven and earth qi.

This time, the duration of the absorption of heaven and earth qi was tens of times as long as before!

The reason was that the resources inside Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture had increased by hundreds of times, expending large amounts of heaven and earth qi of the immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan then arranged immortal tribulation tempering aperture.

Everything was handled with ease.

After finishing the preparations, Fang Yuan closed the blessed land’s entrance, and welcomed the fourth earthly calamity.

It was still at Mini Northern Plains.

Fang Yuan encountered endless flying frost.

“This is... profound white flying salt calamity?”

Fang Yuan was stunned, before recognizing it.

He was slightly surprised.

This calamity was not strong, instead it was the type which could be passed rather easily.

Yellowish clouds started forming in the sky.

Large amounts of frost salt slowly fell down from the sky. The whole process was silent, the salt was like snow and there was not any wind.

The endless salt fell down on the ground, and melted the ice and snow on the ground.

Some cold-resistant wild grasses and flowers that had grown on the snow were submerged by the salt, and were wilting rapidly before completely dying.

“It is trying to destroy Mini Northern Plains’ ecology?” Fang Yuan was slightly perplexed. For the moment, he did not move and only looked on from the side.

Although there were some losses, most of his resources were currently gathered in Mini Southern Border.

Mini Northern Plains was the area Fang Yuan had been using to pass tribulations, Fang Yuan could completely bear these losses before, let alone now when he had harvested Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s accumulation, and had become extremely wealthy.

After a while, snowmen started to appear from the endless salt and frost.

This was the influence of Reckless Savage’s true meaning.

So long as Fang Yuan killed these snowmen, he could obtain Reckless Savage’s true meaning, rapidly raising his transformation path and strength path attainment levels.

This time was not like the previous time where he shared with Chu Du, Fang Yuan was going to enjoy it all by himself.

Fang Yuan quickly made a move.

These snowmen had just appeared when they were melted by the flying salt. The intention of heaven’s will manifested at this moment, it wanted to reduce Fang Yuan’s benefits from the earthly calamity, as much as possible.

Fang Yuan and heaven’s will raced to strike at the snowmen.

Myriad self was activated, eliminating these snowmen. Naturally, there were also other methods used.

These had to be done by Fang Yuan himself.

Other existences, whether they be Gu Immortal or desolate beasts, whoever killed the snowmen would be the one to obtain Reckless Savage’s true meaning.

Waves of Reckless Savage’s true meaning entered Fang Yuan’s mind, quickly raising his attainment level.

As for the profound white flying salt, they were inexorable and not something Fang Yuan could directly get rid of.

This fourth earthly calamity continued for a long time. Even when the duration of the previous three earthly calamities were added, they would not even be one-tenth of this earthly calamity.

Three days later, profound white flying salt’s scale began to slightly decrease.

“Is this a battle of attrition?” Fang Yuan frowned, somewhat puzzled.

Several days went by again, the profound white flying salt calamity finally stopped.

Fang Yuan gazed at the frost salt that had covered the land, the doubt in his mind intensifying.

According to his previous deduction, the fourth earthly calamity should have been even more strong and even more difficult to handle. But the reality was, the profound white flying salt calamity had been mild from start to finish, it descended gradually; Fang Yuan did not feel any pressure at all.

He was even able to destroy almost all of the snowmen, not wasting much of Reckless Savage’s true meaning. His gains were plentiful.

It was as if heaven’s will was letting him go.

“Previously, I used some time path killer moves in Tai Qiu, it was also to test heaven’s will’s deduction ability and to see how it deals with me afterwards. The result was the profound white flying salt calamity.”

“No matter what, the fourth earthly calamity is now over.”

“I can let the land of salt remain, after cleansing it with self will, I can treat it as a special environment.”

This earthly calamity was unimaginably easy. Fang Yuan did not suffer even a small injury.

Fang Yuan retrieved his immortal aperture and was about to return to Lang Ya blessed land.

But right at this moment!

The surroundings suddenly changed, Fang Yuan entered a battlefield killer move.

Nine Gu Immortals appeared around him, along with an enormous dragon shaped beast whose aura was majestic and boundless, staring at Fang Yuan with hostility.

Immemorial desolate beast!

Fang Yuan’s heart immediately sank to rock bottom, he immediately comprehended: “Human calamity! So heaven’s will was intentionally extending the duration of my tribulation to set up this deadly situation for me!”

In an instant, Fang Yuan had fallen deep into a predicament.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1140: The Sliver of Hope to Survive

The surrounding area was frost white in color.

Countless grey clouds, the size of carriages, hovered around Fang Yuan.

Although Fang Yuan did not feel any wind, these clouds coiled around him swiftly, like hunting sharks or a pack of starving wolves.

“This is a battlefield immortal killer move! And one which I have not seen before. It seems to be mostly formed of cloud path...”

Fang Yuan was fully vigilant, and after the brief shock, his mind worked rapidly, analyzing the situation.

“Forget about the battlefield immortal killer move, the main point is there are actually nine Gu Immortals and a dragon immemorial desolate beast!” Fang Yuan observed the nine figures.

These mysterious Gu Immortals were covered in a layer of grey clouds, covering their true appearances, only revealing their eyes.

As for the Gu Immortals’ auras, the clouds could not hide them, they were leaked.

That dragon beast was also covered in a thick layer of grey cloud as it hovered, facing Fang Yuan. It was completely releasing its majestically shocking aura! In Fang Yuan’s perception, the dragon was like a lofty mountain, while he himself was like an ant at the base of the mountain.

Fang Yuan was shocked.

This group was too powerful! He could not even think of being their match.

“Strange! How could there be so many people lying in ambush?” Besides shock, Fang Yuan also felt an enormous doubt.

The northern icy plain rarely had humans, as there were almost no resources in it.

This was a desolate land created by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, the only wealth to be found was Reckless Savage’s true meaning which Chu Du desired very much.

As a result, Gu Immortals rarely came here.

Moreover, before each earthly calamity, Fang Yuan would gather intel about any movements regarding Northern Plains’ righteous forces, through treasure yellow heaven, Lang Ya Sect and even Chu Du.

There was no commotion from Northern Plains’ super forces.

Because of Hei tribe’s extermination, everyone was absorbing their gains, and adapting to the completely new power structure of forces.

Almost all of these righteous forces had territories in Northern Plains which were guarded by Gu Immortals. In fact, it was difficult for Huang Jin tribes to mobilize three or four Gu Immortals at once, unless something big happened.

While demonic path and lone immortals might be free, they usually moved alone, how could they suddenly gather into one group?

“Moreover, I have been holed up inside Lang Ya blessed land for almost all the time, avoiding wisdom path Gu Immortals’ deductions. I am also protected by Dark Limit and other methods. It is almost impossible for my traces to be deduced so clearly! Where did these Gu Immortals come from? Could they be from Central Continent?”

Previously, to investigate the truth of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects had allied and built a team of Gu Immortals to send to Northern Plains.

Currently, Heavenly Court was trying every means possible to deal with Shadow Sect and Fang Yuan, it would not be strange if they sent out another group.

However!

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals, especially from the ten great ancient sects or

Heavenly Court, did things openly and in a grand style. How could they act so evasively like now?

These Gu Immortals’ appearances were hidden, even the immemorial desolate beast was the same, and only their vague figures could be seen.

“Maybe this is only an illusion created by the battlefield killer move?” Fang Yuan quickly speculated.

From the time he put away his immortal aperture and prepared to return, to being ambushed, falling into the trap and his current analysis of countermeasures, only a short few moments had passed.

The mental capability of the body from the sovereign immortal fetus was excellent by itself, and with wisdom path methods to support him, Fang Yuan had already reacted!

If it truly was such a terrifying formation, Fang Yuan did not have any hope.

But!

He felt the probability of this being an illusion was huge, because the origins of these Gu Immortals could not be explained at all.

A sharp light blossomed in Fang Yuan’s eyes, at the next moment he decisively activated sword escape Immortal Gu and charged towards the Gu Immortals.

The nine Gu Immortals did not react as if they were stupefied.

Fang Yuan flew nearer before stopping, three breaths future vision and bloodstained conqueror’s robe were already activated as he pointed, sword light shot out.

Immortal killer move — Sword Marks Targeting Death.

A Gu Immortal with rank six aura moved.

But a rank seven female Gu Immortal to the side grabbed their shoulder: “You can’t take on this move, let me.”

Her voice had just sounded out, when she pointed with a finger, an ice mirror immediately appeared in the air.

The sword light condensed by sword marks targeting death shot at the ice mirror, but it did not pierce through, instead it was reflected away.

“She is able to change the direction of my immortal killer move!” Fang Yuan’s heart chilled, as he quickly maneuvered sword marks targeting death back to the original direction.

His sword marks targeting death’s direction could be controlled by the mind once it was activated.

It was just that this killer move was extremely fast and was not easy to manipulate.

Sword marks targeting death returned to its proper path with difficulty, but suddenly there was another ice mirror in front.

Fang Yuan could only helplessly look as sword marks targeting death derailed once again.

Then, there were the third, fourth, and following ice mirrors, surrounding sword marks targeting death, actually making it go around in a circle.

“This is bad! This Gu Immortal’s method counters my sword marks targeting death.” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

A second rank seven Gu Immortal suddenly took a step forward and gave a deep bellow, an ice spear immediately condensing in his hand.

He then pulled back his arm, like drawing a bow, and after stretching to the limit, he threw the spear towards Fang Yuan.

The ice spear produced a heart-shaking screech as it pierced through the air. Cold air overflowed and vapor was frozen along the way, turning into beautiful frost that floated in the air.

The breathtaking scene, however, carried intense killing intent.

“This is an immortal killer move formed with rank seven Immortal Gu as the core!” Fang Yuan quickly jumped backed to dodge the spear.

But this ice spear was like sword marks targeting death, its direction could be controlled.

Fang Yuan could not dodge, gritting his teeth inwardly, he knew just bloodstained conqueror’s robe could not block this move, so he sent out strength path giant hand.

The giant hand suddenly appeared and created a barrier, it blocked in front of Fang Yuan.

The ice spear reached the giant hand, immediately piercing through it and striking Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was sent flying backwards, thick ice condensed on his whole body and even the blood which he spurted out condensed into blocks of ice. His blood asset Immortal Gu also suffered damage.

If he continued to activate it, blood asset Immortal Gu might be seriously injured or even destroyed.

But in this situation, how could Fang Yuan care about this?

He could only crazily use blood asset Immortal Gu to barely maintain bloodstained conqueror’s robe.

“The two rank seven Gu Immortals are not illusions. What about the others then?” Fang Yuan swallowed his blood and clapped, using the killer move myriad self.

In an instant, large numbers of strength path phantoms surged out and covered everyone’s sight.

These mysterious Gu Immortals looked stunned.

The third rank seven Gu Immortal smiled and called out: “Let me.”

He raised his arms and puffed his cheeks, before fiercely blowing.

Spiralling wind shot out of his mouth.

Within the blink of an eye, the wind enlarged to an enormous tornado.

The tornado was as high as thirty meters, its two ends were wide while the middle part was thinner, and was dark green in color. It spiralled frantically, sharp as blades as it engulfed all the strength path phantoms in its path and easily ripped them into pieces.

The size of the myriad self army sharply reduced by more than half in a short period of time.

Fang Yuan quickly replenished the numbers.

“Brother, I will lend you a hand.” The fourth rank seven Gu Immortal spoke in a muffled voice.

He pointed with his index finger, targeting the tornado.

Instantaneously, a certain mysterious immortal killer move was activated, the tornado split into two, before turning into four. Within moments, four enormous tornadoes ravaged the battlefield! Their power had increased by four times!

“This!!” Fang Yuan’s mind shook once again, feeling the situation was far from good.

Since the battle started, he had suffered light injuries, blood asset Immortal Gu was injured and was in a danger of dying if it was continued to be used.

While at the enemy’s side, that immemorial desolate beast had yet to move, among the nine Gu Immortals, four rank sevens had each activated an immortal killer move, which were either mysterious and awe-inspiring, or profound and exquisite.

“Could it be... this is not an illusion?” As if he had fallen into an abyss, Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Wind whistled crazily, in a few short moments, the myriad self army was going to be completely destroyed even if Fang Yuan continuously replenished them.

The quality of the strength path phantoms was too low, their numbers could not be put to good use in front of rank seven killer moves.

Myriad self, which had always been successful, now was in an awkward place, and was not able to change the situation for Fang Yuan.

“No, there is still an advantage of myriad self, it can at least expend the enemy’s immortal essence, I have a strong point in this aspect. But there are a lot of enemies, while I am alone, this advantage is as good as nothing. What can I do!?”

The difference in strength between the two sides was so great that any battle tactic looked useless.

In fact, these mysterious Gu Immortals did not work together at once. Every time they made a move, they took turns. If this immortal level battlefield killer move was not entrapping him, perhaps Fang Yuan could make his getaway.

Unfortunately, the enemy had already prepared amply, Fang Yuan also lacked space path methods, escaping itself was a problem, not to mention he still had to face four rank seven and five rank six Gu Immortals, as well as that immemorial desolate beast. This was an extremely dangerous peril!

This situation was simply the worst.

Compared to his first life where he was besieged by righteous path Gu Immortals, this was innumerably more dangerous.

After all, at that time, there had not been an immemorial desolate beast to control the situation!

Fang Yuan probed these Gu Immortals, but regarding the immemorial desolate beast, he did not even have a thought of probing it.

Fang Yuan was relying on continuously activating myriad self to survive in this worsening situation.

One after the other, the Gu Immortals made moves, strength path phantoms were almost annihilated. The myriad self army, which had always until now been surging with overwhelming momentum, simply could not form a large scale.

“Am I going to die here today?” An intense sensation of incoming death shrouded Fang Yuan’s mind.

Requesting for reinforcements would not work, within this battlefield killer move, Fang Yuan could not even connect to treasure yellow heaven.

However, he had still not given up.

His thoughts moved like lightning, and he suddenly remembered: “No, I still have a chance of survival!”

This chance of survival was not Spring Autumn Cicada.

Spring Autumn Cicada was filled with heaven’s will, heaven’s will was trying all methods possible to eradicate Fang Yuan. Using Spring Autumn Cicada was courting death.

This chance of survival was in the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

If it was before Fang Yuan obtained Hei Fan’s true inheritance, his death would be certain at this moment. But it was different now, he still had one hope left.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was also an immemorial desolate beast, it was just that it was only an infant currently with desolate beast level strength.

However, Hei Fan’s true inheritance naturally had time path immortal killer moves that could speed up the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s aging and push it to grow in a short period of time!

With this, Fang Yuan would have rank eight battle strength.

Coincidentally, the upper extreme heavenly eagle was also a space path immemorial desolate beast that could enter and exit grotto-heavens and the immemorial nine heavens, there was a huge chance it could pierce through this battlefield killer move!

“Persevere! I need to persevere until the upper extreme heavenly eagle reaches rank eight!!” When he thought of this, Fang Yuan immediately changed his battle tactics.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1141: Refusal to Listen or Believe

The time path immortal killer move was already quietly activated inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was affected by the killer move, its body's time was rapidly quickened by countless times, making it mature quickly.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle cried out, feeling extremely unwell.

On one hand, it was because its body was growing rapidly, while on the other hand, it was hungry!

It required many heavenly crystals to fill its stomach every day. Right now, in just one breath, a day had passed for its body, and with its body growing continuously, how could it not feel hungry?

Naturally, Hei Fan had considered this situation as well, so there was another immortal killer move which was used specially to make up for this flaw.

At the same time, the upper extreme heavenly eagle huddled up in the heavenly crystal eagle nest and began to eat madly.

Only such a two-pronged approach could sustain its growth.

This was a quick growth method and had a lot of flaws. The upper extreme heavenly eagle had been in contact with Fang Yuan for a very short time, now with its strength suddenly increasing, it would become more bestial and would not be easy to control. Moreover, the upper extreme heavenly eagle's growth rate was sped up too much, and there was no way for it to adapt and get familiar with its growth, so it might not be able to use even thirty percent of its strength.

However, Fang Yuan had no other choice!

He was in a desperate situation and this was his only hope to get out of this predicament.

He was like a drowning man who was firmly grasping onto the sole life saving straw.

Myriad self was continuously activated, the once-powerful killer move had now become the only reliance for Fang Yuan to stall for time.

He had used familiar face to disguise himself and mixed in among the strength path phantoms, the enemy Gu Immortals had not discovered him since the start.

The tornadoes wreaked havoc, during which the enemy Gu Immortals had each made their moves, their powerful killer moves shrouding the entire battlefield.

Fang Yuan's strength path phantoms could only last about one or two breaths of time before they were destroyed.

He had never activated myriad self as frequently as now!

Fortunately, myriad self was created by him, and by now, he was so proficient with it that it had turned into an instinct and there had yet to be failure when activating it.

However, his green grape immortal essence reserve was rapidly dwindling.

Regarding immortal essence reserves, Fang Yuan was completely in a disadvantage, he naturally had no way to compare with the nine enemy Gu Immortals.

“This guy’s concealment skill is quite amazing.” An enemy Gu Immortal praised.

“Relax, as long as this battlefield killer move, grey cloud battle puppet, is here, we don’t have to worry about him escaping.” Another Gu Immortal replied.

“Hmph, rat like thing, come out. The earlier you die, the earlier you can be free from suffering.”

The four rank seven Gu Immortals did not speak, but the other five rank six Gu Immortals yelled, vainly attempting to shake Fang Yuan’s will.

But could Fang Yuan waver so easily?

His will was firmer than steel, even when he was in danger, he would not give up trying until the very last moment.

Since he was using a stalling tactic, Fang Yuan would never reveal himself.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was growing rapidly, it already gave a trace of an ancient desolate beast’s aura. As for the heavenly crystal eagle nest, it was already eaten by over half.

But this growth rate was still far from enough.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was the key for this battle!

“The enemy has the numerical advantage, their immortal killer moves also seem to be endless. Once I take out the upper extreme heavenly eagle, if my breakthrough attempt fails, I will probably be immediately dealt with the next moment. I won’t have any second chance! I must succeed in one try!!”

Just as he thought of it, Fang Yuan suddenly heard a chuckle by his ear.

“Heehee, found you.”

This was a female Gu Immortal’s voice.

At that instant, Fang Yuan’s hair stood on end, and without caring about exposing his true self, he activated sword escape Immortal Gu!

He flew towards the sky!

Almost at the same time, frost condensed on his original spot, quickly forming into thick ice the size of a pavilion.

“He’s quite fast.” A rank six Gu Immortal said in surprise. Her voice was the same voice that had sounded by Fang Yuan’s ear.

“Xue Er, you succeeded. Not bad.” A rank seven Gu Immortal praised.

“Thank you, great-grandma.” The female Gu Immortal seemed to be happy, “Although I cannot break through his disguise, every time he activates his killer move to create those phantoms, the aura of the killer move will leak out. He might be heavily concealed, but it is of no use. As the frequency increased, I discovered him.”

“Good! Let me see where you can escape!” Another rank seven Gu Immortal shouted, directly charging towards Fang Yuan.

He was extremely fast.

Shortly afterwards, he reached Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan recognized this Gu Immortal, this person was the one who had shot the ice spear before.

“Die!” The rank seven Gu Immortal clenched his fists, instantly two ice spears condensed in his hands.

“A close combat Gu Immortal?!” A sharp light flashed past Fang Yuan’s eyes, and he quickly retreated.

However, Sword Escape was actually unable to throw the enemy off.

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk slightly as he noticed his body was covered in a layer of thin grey clouds.

It was the cause of his reduction in speed.

While on the other side, the rank seven Gu Immortal’s speed seemed to have been increased.

“If I let you escape freely, would not it make me look incompetent?” The Gu Immortal controlling the battlefield killer move was standing straight, with his hands folded in front of his chest, watching the battle situation from afar.

Fang Yuan was forced to engage in close combat.

This rank seven Gu Immortal was very powerful with outstanding fighting skill.

Within several moves, Fang Yuan’s left arm and stomach were pierced.

Blood asset Immortal Gu was heavily injured!

Large amounts of fragmentary ice and snow path dao marks were engraved on Fang Yuan’s wounds, making them difficult to heal. Cold air entered his limbs and bones, further lowering his speed.

The sovereign immortal body’s disadvantage appeared for the first time!

There were no conflicts between dao marks, causing Fang Yuan to be easily injured.

Previously, Fang Yuan was defending and painstakingly dodging around. But at this moment, he had no choice but to face the consequences of this weakness.

“Die!” The enemy’s offense was extremely fierce. He thrusted the ice spear in his right hand towards Fang Yuan’s forehead, while quietly moving the ice spear in his left hand towards Fang Yuan’s heart.

Blood torrent!

Fang Yuan suddenly changed his killer move, bizarrely curving around and dodging the enemy’s attack.

“Blood path!” A rank six among the Gu Immortals blurted in shock.

“He is indeed an unforgivable sinner! He actually cultivates blood path!!”

“We can be considered to be eliminating an evil, helping the people of the world.”

“I had been somewhat suspicious of that defensive killer move earlier. So it was like this.”

The Gu Immortal dual wielding spears, was filled with even more killing intent, as he pounced over again.

Giant hand!

Fang Yuan suddenly slammed, a strength path giant hand flew out.

In such a short distance, the Gu Immortal with dual spears was unable to dodge.

But he had not even thought of dodging.

Head-on!

He pierced the giant hand with his two spears, and continued to chase Fang Yuan.

Since he could fight in close range, he naturally had extremely outstanding defensive methods. If not for this, how could he dare to take the risk?

The two spears in his hands intertwined into dense spear shadows, fully displaying the advantage of a close combat Gu Immortal’s attack speed.

Close combat Gu Immortals were few in numbers, they had once flourished in ancient times, but were now almost extinct.

However, if such a Gu Immortal manages to get near to the opponent, they would become an extreme threat.

Fang Yuan was constantly in a life and death situation, he had to pay close attention to the enemy’s movements, and slight negligence could result in him dying.

Fang Yuan possessed many immortal killer moves, but in close combat, in most cases, he could only concentrate on dodging. Because there was no time to use any complicated immortal killer moves, and once his response was delayed, it could be his death.

Fang Yuan’s momentum was already destroyed, he was barely able to continue for a while before the enemy finally found a gap and pierced a spear through his heart.

“It is over.” At this moment, the enemy’s expression was slightly relaxed.

Man as Before!

As Fang Yuan erupted, he used man as before Immortal Gu to restore the fatal injuries.

Then using dark assassination, he shot towards the enemy’s head.

In an instant, Fang Yuan had established his victory!

He had been concealing Man as Before, waiting for this battle opportunity.

Sounds of shock rose, but the Gu Immortals were not angry.

At the next instant, Fang Yuan saw a strange sight: The enemy’s head was not made of blood and flesh, and was completely formed from grey clouds.

The grey clouds scattered before condensing, and the dual spear wielding Gu Immortal shook his newly formed head, laughing: “Not bad! You could actually destroy my head, hmph! Human Gu Immortals are so crafty, if it were normal times, I would have already died. Unfortunately, this is within grey cloud battle puppet, an immortal level battlefield.”

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk to pin-size.

He suffered a loss.

Not knowing the mechanism of this battlefield killer move led to an error in judgment.

“Although this is the first time I have heard of grey cloud battle puppet, it is truly a fierce battlefield killer move.” Fang Yuan let out a breath, his whole body was filled with injuries.

He had intentionally concealed Man as Before and used it at the crucial time, but his painstaking plan had been thwarted by grey cloud battle puppet.

“That goes without saying, this was created by Lady Earth Mother!” The dual spear wielding Gu Immortal spoke with pride.

Fang Yuan took the chance to look at his immortal aperture, the upper extreme heavenly eagle had already grown into an immemorial desolate beast.

However!

It was near death.

The heavenly crystals were already finished, and it was now starving to death.

Fang Yuan quickly dispelled the effect of the immortal killer move on the upper extreme heavenly eagle and attempted to feed other things to it.

However, the upper extreme heavenly eagle kept its mouth closed.

“Damn it! Earlier, I was too busy dealing with the enemy, I simply had no time to be concerned about the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s situation.” Fang Yuan’s heart sank to rock bottom.

His final trace of hope was gone.

In this battlefield killer move, the enemies could not die, Fang Yuan did not have any strategy to ensure his victory. Dealing with just one rank seven Gu Immortal was difficult, not to mention there was also the dragon immemorial desolate beast that had not moved from the start.

What now?

Death was already approaching close.

“Young man, leave your name. You are a worthy adversary, after this life of mine, my battle with you shall be remembered as a glory by my descendants.” The dual spear wielding Gu Immortal pressed on forward.

The atmosphere was solemn, other Gu Immortals did not speak anything to stop him, seemingly approving of the dual spear wielding Gu Immortal’s words.

Fang Yuan, however, revealed a confident smile: “My name is not important, what is important is my status. I am a supreme elder of Lang Ya blessed land, a member of a variant human force. In the current situation of the world, we variant humans should not take up arms against each other, isn’t that the case? Snowmen, rockmen and hairy men should help each other, not have internal fights which will instead please enemies!”

“How do you know...” The dual wielding Gu Immortal was extremely surprised.

“He actually knows of our identities!”

“Quick, kill him!”

“Human Gu Immortals have always been crafty, don’t listen to his misleading words!”

The other Gu Immortals cried out, almost screaming.

“What Lang Ya blessed land! Also, you are clearly a human, what hairy man? Do you think I am blind?!” The dual spear wielding Gu Immortal furiously pierced forward with his spears.

Fang Yuan exposed their identities, but they simply did not listen to or believe Fang Yuan’s words.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1142: Bluffing, Deceiving

The dual spear wielding Gu Immortal rushed towards Fang Yuan.

“Variant humans... are indeed stubborn? Or is this the influence of heaven’s will? Hmph!” Fang Yuan’s gaze turned dark, he looked at the dual spear wielding Gu Immortal charging at him, but he did not dodge or retreat.

Boom!

At the next moment, he opened the entrance to his sovereign immortal aperture and released a gigantic beast.

“Ahh! This, this is!!!” The dual spear wielding Gu Immortal felt a majestic aura that instantly overwhelmed his body and mind.

His momentum stopped abruptly, and his battle intent had dispersed at that very instant.

What Fang Yuan released was none other than the upper extreme heavenly eagle that had now matured to immemorial level!

A truly mature upper extreme heavenly eagle was extremely huge, multiple times the size of a whale, it did not lose out even when compared to that immemorial dragon desolate beast.

The immemorial upper extreme heavenly eagle was a terrifying rank eight level battle force!

Shock!

Instantly, the enemy immortals were all shocked and dumbstruck. They had never expected Fang Yuan to still be holding such a card in reserve.

This trump card was too strong!

The dual spear wielding Gu Immortal was almost trembling from fear.

The atmosphere of the whole battlefield had instantly transformed completely.

Fang Yuan stood proudly on the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s head, and coldly snorted: “Why do you think I was fearless since the start? Even if your battlefield killer move is powerful, could it obstruct my upper extreme heavenly eagle?”

The enemy immortals’ bodies jolted upon hearing this.

“Upper extreme heavenly eagle!”

“According to legends, this eagle is a space path immemorial desolate beast that can avoid the heavenly wind qi wall and enter the immemorial nine heavens.”

“Not only this. It can also pierce through space and enter grotto-heavens. Our battlefield killer move cannot trap it!”

The group of immortals communicated in fluster.

Fang Yuan had a confident smile on his face: “Even if you use that dragon immemorial desolate beast, I am confident of escaping. But what I said before is all true! I simply don’t need to deceive you, and even if I wanted to deceive you, such a shoddy lie could easily be exposed. Why would I waste my time?”

The enemy immortals fell into silence.

The mountain-like upper extreme heavenly eagle was the best evidence of Fang Yuan’s words.

The dual spear wielding Gu Immortal was the nearest, the upper extreme heavenly eagle filled his whole vision. Despite the upper extreme heavenly eagle slightly closing its eyes, the cold light leaking out of the crack of its eyes still made him feel like he had fallen into an icy abyss.

“Did you verify it? Is it real or not?” The Gu Immortals secretly transmitted their voices.

It was rather ironic.

Just before, when Fang Yuan was ambushed and saw this terrifying battle formation, the first thing he felt was doubt at whether this was real or an illusion.

Now, after Fang Yuan released the upper extreme heavenly eagle, these Gu Immortals were experiencing the same thing.

“It is real!” That rank six Gu Immortal called Xue Er spoke with shock, “Moreover, that upper extreme heavenly eagle’s vitality is extremely flourishing, don’t be fooled by its unmoving and harmless look! Once it attacks, it would definitely be earth-shaking!”

Soon, the rank seven Gu Immortals confirmed one after the other.

“This! He only has a blessed land, how could he store an immemorial desolate beast!”

“Although it is unimaginable, it is the truth.”

“What should we do? He can use an immemorial desolate beast, could it be that we also have to send out the immemorial rock dragon?”

In fact, the dragon beast in grey cloud battle puppet was not as intimidating as it appeared. Although the aura was real, it could not fully display its rank eight battle strength.

There were many reasons.

Grey cloud battle puppet did not have a core rank eight Immortal Gu, and was not suitable for use on rank eight level existences.

Another reason was, the snowman and rockman Gu Immortals' main bodies were far below underground. They put in their respective Gu worms and immortal essence in this grey cloud battle puppet, forming battle puppets that were not weaker than the main bodies.

That is to say the power of grey cloud battle puppet originated from the remote control of the Gu Immortals, and the immortal essence along with Gu worms concealed in the battle puppets.

The battlefield killer move could form a grey cloud battle puppet corresponding to the immemorial rock dragon, but the immemorial rock dragon did not have a Gu Immortal's intelligence, let alone remote controlling the puppet, it could not even freely use Immortal Gu, as such it was unable to manifest its strength.

That was the reason for this rank eight battle strength to not move even the slightest since the start of the battle.

It was instead Fang Yuan who was cautious and did not dare to even risk probing it.

Naturally, this was common sense.

Just like now, the dual spear wielding Gu Immortal was stunned and did not dare to attack the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

When Fang Yuan released the upper extreme heavenly eagle, the situation completely transformed.

The rank eight battle strength on the variant human Gu Immortals' side was only a facade, while they were unaware of the details regarding Fang Yuan, and thought they were on the weaker side.

And Fang Yuan?

He was also not clear of the variant human Gu Immortals, and also did not know if the immemorial dragon beast was only there for show. He also felt his strength was on the weaker side.

As far as the truth was concerned, Fang Yuan's judgment was correct.

Right now, Fang Yuan was feeling rather tense.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was about to die from hunger, and he had to use blood path methods to disguise it to look like it had flourishing vitality. Once it was attacked, this disguise would fail.

However, the other side did not dare to attack.

The reason?

Once they attacked, if they could not kill their enemy and let him escape, that would be a very troublesome situation.

Even if they summoned the immemorial rock dragon from the deep underground, if the upper extreme heavenly eagle wanted to escape, they would not be able to stop it!

Since Fang Yuan exposed their identities, he also knew of their misgivings.

Their identities!

Once their identities of the snowmen and rockmen were exposed to Northern Plains' Gu Immortal world, it would immediately lead to invasion from the righteous path, demonic path and lone cultivators.

Human forces were strong and had killed on their path to reach this age since the immemorial antiquity era, they absolutely would not let such a huge variant human super force to exist beside them!

Thus, when the variant human Gu Immortals ambushed Fang Yuan, they had concealed their appearances.

The variant human Gu Immortals had even mobilized nine Gu Immortals and moved out an immemorial desolate beast to suppress the situation, just to handle Fang Yuan, one person.

It was to make sure there was no mishap.

But even in such a foolproof plan, there were many mishaps because of Fang Yuan alone. Finally, he even brought out an immemorial desolate beast, upper extreme heavenly eagle.

If they had known this earlier, how could the variant human Gu Immortals still lay an ambush, and end up in this current awkward situation of not knowing what to do!

Fang Yuan waited for a while, the variant human Gu Immortals did not speak.

He shook his head and gave a helpless smile: “Alright, I have already said this, why are you still not believing me? Could it be that you really want us to fight to the death? Naturally, I won’t be the one to die.”

“How could we trust you, a human!” A rank seven Gu Immortal said with anger.

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh of relief inwardly, since the other side spoke, that means they had been deceived. He got the opportunity, now it would depend on his performance.

Thereupon, Fang Yuan activated familiar face.

Immortal killer move’s aura spread everywhere, the variant human Gu Immortals immediately became vigilant, the dual spear wielding Gu Immortal even retreated far away.

However, what came next shocked the variant human Gu Immortals, as they looked on with wide eyes at Fang Yuan transforming into a hairy man, with no flaws.

“I am a transformation path Gu Immortal, and I inherited a portion of the true inheritance of Ren Wang. I could easily deceive you all by transforming into a hairy man, but why did I not do so?” Fang Yuan spoke in sincere fashion as he spread his arms and turned back to his previous appearance.

The variant human Gu Immortals quietly looked at him.

Fang Yuan continued to bullshit: “I did it as an act of sincerity to you! Since I realized your identities just moments ago, then we can be considered people on the same side. Although I am a human Gu Immortal, I am truly a member of Lang Ya blessed land. Lang Ya blessed land’s origin is Long Hair Ancestor. Currently, under Lang Ya land spirit’s lead, Lang Ya Sect has been created and I am one of the supreme elders of the sect. If you believe me, then open up the battlefield killer move, and I will send a message to inform the sect of this matter.”

The variant human Gu Immortals looked at each other but nobody moved.

Both sides were at a stalemate.

Fang Yuan did not dare to let their minds wander.

After all, heaven’s will was influencing them.

To dispel heaven’s will’s influence, Fang Yuan had to continue to talk and change their minds.

Heaven’s will was not fake will, and its influence over variant human Gu Immortals was not high. After all, the intelligence of variant humans was second to only humans. It was because of this that Fang Yuan had hope.

“Alright, I will show my sincerity first.” Fang Yuan suddenly sighed, and opened his immortal aperture, placing the upper extreme heavenly eagle inside.

This move shocked all the variant human Gu Immortals.

“Careful. Although the upper extreme heavenly eagle has been placed inside, it can rely on its power to come out of the aperture and make a move at any time.”

“Enough, dispel grey cloud battle puppet.”

“Leader...”

“Could it be that you still think grey cloud battle puppet can trap him?”

The other variant human Gu Immortals were unable to reply.

From what they saw, the truth was indeed like that.

Amidst the stifling silence, the killer move grey cloud battle puppet was slowly dispelled, Fang Yuan’s vision was once again filled with the sight of the bright landscape of Northern Plains.

He strongly endured the impulse of making an immediate getaway, speaking to these variant human Gu Immortals: “Good! Friends are often made after a fight. I will immediately notify Lang Ya Sect, staying here and waiting for the sect to send Gu Immortals.”

Fang Yuan’s joyful attitude was naturally a disguise.

But with his acting along with attitude Gu, there was no flaw at all.

At least, these variant human Gu Immortals did not notice any flaw.

Adding on that Fang Yuan did not run away, it gave even more proof of the truth of his words.

“Then we shall invite you to make a visit underground as a guest. Here.” The other grey clouds had all dispersed, while only a rockman Gu Immortal’s physical body was remaining. He was the person controlling grey cloud battle puppet.

“Hahaha, please lead the way.” Fang Yuan followed this rockman Gu Immortal into the underground part of this icy plain.

The facts proved that heaven’s will’s influence towards Gu Immortals was not remarkable. At least, Fang Yuan was able to use words to dispel this influence.

Naturally, it was on the basis of the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

It was because of the existence of the immemorial desolate beast that these variant human Gu Immortals changed their minds.

After all, heaven’s will could not destroy these Gu Immortals’ rationality, challenging an immemorial desolate beast would be looking for death.

In the depths below the icy plain, there was a scenic and beautiful world of its own.

Fang Yuan was vaguely encircled by several Gu Immortals as they led him, while he looked at the underground scenery absentmindedly.

The variant human Gu Immortals were also in the same situation.

Until Lang Ya Sect sent a group of hairy man Gu Immortals to this place.

Twelfth Hair and Sixth Hair were among them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1143: I Am... Rejoicing!

Northern icy plain, deep underground.

Within a large hall, stone chairs and tables were arranged in a circle, thick vines grew on the walls and grass grew between the cracks of the rocks.

Three bonfires were burning high at the center of the hall.

It is said that this was a tradition passed down from the Olden Antiquity Era. When variant humans attend to esteemed guests, they would set up a banquet and burn three bonfires.

Snowman, rockman and hairy man Gu Immortals, as well as Fang Yuan, were seated inside the hall.

The fire shone on every person’s face and their smiles could be seen.

All kinds of fruits were laid in front of everyone, and soon, rockman servants served each person a large bowl of wine.

“This is our rockman tribe’s lip fish wine, have a taste!” Shi Zong stood up from his seat and called out while holding the wine bowl.

Shi Zong was this rockman tribe’s first supreme elder, he had not joined the battle to kill Fang Yuan.

His whole body shone with many colors from the countless gold, silver and pearl ornaments inlaid on him.

This was the style of rockman tribes.

Rockman bodies were made completely of rocks and in their long period of life, all kinds of gold, silver, iron and steel ores would grow on their bodies. Rockmen took this as a symbol of good looks and honor, the higher the position of the rockman, the more extravagant ornaments they would have on them.

Not only Shi Zong, several other rockman Gu Immortals present on the scene were the same.

Since Shi Zong had invited it, all the immortals held up their wine bowls in response.

Shi Zong and the other immortals took big gulps of the wine, the hairy men did the same, only Fang Yuan took a small sip.

After Shi Zong had finished drinking, he put down the bowl which did not even have a drop of wine remaining.

Cheers broke out.

Other Gu Immortals also imitated him, and drank down all the wine in their bowls.

The immortals laughed, the calm atmosphere became lively.

Only Fang Yuan put down the wine bowl, having only drunken a bit of the lip fish wine.

The snowman and rockman Gu Immortals turned a blind eye to this.

Instead, the dissension rose from within the hairy man Gu Immortals, Sixth Hair criticized Fang Yuan: “Elder Fang Yuan, what are you doing? Don’t you know your action is impolite? The host finished the wine, you, as a guest, should also follow and not leave behind any wine in your bowl, this is respect towards the host. Ah, I forgot you are a human and not one of us variant humans, no wonder you don’t know this tradition passed down from the Remote Antiquity Era.”

Sixth Hair was a spy placed in Lang Ya Sect by Shadow Sect, he took advantage of every chance to cause trouble for Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan sneered, his gaze scanned around before he spoke leisurely: “How would I not know of this tradition? It is just that this lip fish wine is the saliva left behind by underground rockfish, I don’t like drinking it.”

“You...” Sixth Hair’s expression looked dark, but he was happy inwardly. Fang Yuan’s words were no doubt offending the other side, which was what he intended.

In Fang Yuan’s letter to Lang Ya Sect to notify the land spirit, he had naturally not mentioned everything, and only explained the matter roughly. Sixth Hair and the others did not know that Fang Yuan had brought out an immemorial upper extreme heavenly eagle in the life and death battle with the snowmen and rockmen, before he could make the other side compromise.

In fact, when Fang Yuan had joined Lang Ya Sect, Lang Ya land spirit had issued a mission to find variant human allies.

Since Fang Yuan had found them, he naturally completed this mission and was sure to receive rewards from Lang Ya Sect.

As a member of Shadow Sect, Sixth Hair did not want to see Fang Yuan obtain benefits and develop. Right now, he spoke up to try and suppress Fang Yuan.

“Haha, since Elder Fang Yuan does not like this wine, then we shall change to another one. Bring out the ice wolf wine from my winery.” A snowman Gu Immortal laughed.

Snowmen had snow-white skin, ice blue pupils and aqua blue hair.

This snowman Gu Immortal was robust and strong, his upper body was bare, revealing a dark blue tattoo on his chest. His aqua blue hair was tied up, revealing a firm and dauntless face.

This person’s name was Bing Zhuo, he was that dual spear wielding Gu Immortal who had made Fang Yuan struggle bitterly.

Soon, a snowman servant brought the wine.

This was a wine bowl made from ice, the wine inside was almost frozen and released cold air.

“To tell the truth, I myself don’t like drinking lip fish wine, so I brewed this wine, how about giving it a taste.” Bing Zhuo passionately spoke.

Fang Yuan swept his gaze at the wine and intentionally spoke without proper respect: “Let me taste it then, let’s see if it is to my taste or not.”

“Please.” Bing Zhuo laughed.

Fang Yuan drank a gulp, the first instance this wine entered his mouth, it was icy cold, but when it entered his throat, it became hot like fire. The feeling of ice and fire immediately made Fang Yuan’s eyes brighten as he spoke: “Good wine.”

“Hahaha.” Bing Zhuo laughed loudly, “Since you like it, then please drink some more.”

He had just finished speaking, when the immortals saw Fang Yuan lift the whole bowl and drink it down in one gulp.

The immortals were dazed for a moment, before applauding and cheering loudly.

Fang Yuan discreetly glanced at Sixth Hair while laughing internally.

He had already known Sixth Hair’s intention.

Sixth Hair would not let any mishaps happen to Fang Yuan. Because after Shadow Sect saves Spectral Soul’s main body, their next target would be Fang Yuan. Because of this, Sixth Hair would not harm Fang Yuan’s life.

Sixth Hair could only suppress Fang Yuan at most, and delay his growth to make it easier for Shadow Sect in the future.

Sixth Hair had already done this before, making Fang Yuan’s relation with Lang Ya Sect turn cold.

However, how could he have ever expected Fang Yuan to have an immemorial upper extreme heavenly eagle and moreover, that he had used it to successfully awe the snowmen and rockmen.

An immemorial level battle strength, these variant human Gu Immortals had no choice but to give respect to it!

This was strength!

In their hearts, no matter how Sixth Hair provoked or smeared, Fang Yuan's importance was much greater than all the hairy man Gu Immortals combined.

In fact, variant humans very strongly revered strength. This was one of the characteristics of variant humans that had passed down since the Immemorial Antiquity Era.

Because be it the era of eating raw flesh and drinking blood, or the period of war between different races, or the era when they were slaughtered by humans, great strength had always brought more space to survive and opportunities to these variant humans.

It was instead the humans who, after becoming the overlord of the five regions and having an unshakable position, stopped having as much reverence for strength as before, it could not compare to these variant humans who were barely surviving at some isolated parts of the world.

Fang Yuan had intentionally made things difficult, and as far as these variant human Gu Immortals were concerned, it was normal.

What expert did not have some attitude?

If Fang Yuan did not display it, they would instead feel uneasy.

Fang Yuan knew the mentality of these variant human Gu Immortals very well, naturally he also had another reason for it, that was to probe their intentions.

Now, Fang Yuan was basically completely confident that he was safe.

“What's going on?” Looking at the variant human Gu Immortals' smiling expressions, Sixth Hair was greatly shocked.

Next, almost all snowman and rockman Gu Immortals approached Fang Yuan, while leaving aside the hairy man Gu Immortals.

“Elder Fang Yuan, here, I will toast you.”

“Elder Fang Yuan sure is a great drinker!”

Fang Yuan did not refuse them, he drank each time.

The hairy man Gu Immortals looked at each other in confusion.

Sixth Hair was extremely bewildered: “What magic bewitchment has Fang Yuan used, he is actually so greatly welcomed?”

If Fang Yuan had turned into a hairy man's appearance, they maybe it could make sense. But he was in his original form, which was a genuine human.

“Elder Fang Yuan, I, Xue Er, shall pour wine for you.” During the feast, a beautiful female snowman Gu Immortal actually walked over to Fang Yuan and took up the work of a servant, pouring the ice wolf wine for Fang Yuan.

The other hairy man Gu Immortals looked on with wide eyes.

Sixth Hair almost shouted out: “What the hell are you all doing! Are you even variant humans? Fang Yuan is clearly a human Gu Immortal! Human! The humans who had slaughtered and marginalized you variant humans!!”

“Xue Er, you are that snowman who discovered my true body?” Fang Yuan brazenly sized up this female snowman immortal, and asked.

The female snowman lowered her head and gave a coy smile: “I am only good at some investigative methods, Elder Fang Yuan is the true hero.”

Twelfth Hair had been drinking wine, but when he heard these words, he could not help spurting out the wine.

Sixth Hair looked like he was about to fly into a rage, almost cursing at the female Gu Immortal: “What is your intention? Hey hey! Why is your face red? What are you doing by lowering your head and acting shy? Still taking sneaky glances at Fang Yuan, you think I can’t see your expression? Damn it! Are you a snowman or not! Pay attention to your identity!”

“I don’t deserve the title of hero.” Fang Yuan laughed half-heartedly. Even he himself was somewhat surprised. The attitude of these variant human Gu Immortals seemed to have changed a little too much.

Bing Zhuo walked over at this moment while holding his wine bowl: “If Elder Fang Yuan is not a hero, then who can still claim to be a hero?”

Xue Er gave a timely introduction: “This is Brother Bing Zhuo. He is the strongest in our tribe, normally he is cold and extremely prideful. Only when talking with Elder Fang Yuan is he this passionate.”

Fang Yuan stood up and assessed this Gu Immortal: “If I am not wrong, you are the person who dual wielded spears and fought with me for dozens of rounds?”

Bing Zhuo laughed, giving a thumbs up: “Elder Fang Yuan, you have a good eye for detail!”

Fang Yuan did not continue gossiping, and directly chugged down the wine.

Bing Zhuo was overjoyed, and also chugged down his wine.

Cheers rose up once again, while Xue Er clapped from the side: “Heroes attract heroes.”

The hairy man Gu Immortals looked on, dumbfounded, no one was paying attention to them. The other side’s Gu Immortals were all looking at Fang Yuan.

Sixth Hair almost slammed the table.

Bing Zhuo’s attitude was making him feel worse.

He mentally screamed: “What in the world are you guys doing?! Forget about that female Gu Immortal named Xue Er, Fang Yuan’s current appearance is quite handsome. What are you, a man, being so excited for! Look at your laughing expression, you look like you want to be sworn brothers with Fang Yuan, what are you thinking? The strongest in your tribe and also a hero? Being this close with a human Gu Immortal, you want to betray your tribe?!”

Bing Zhuo sighed: “Compared to Elder Fang Yuan, how could I be considered a hero? Elder Fang Yuan possesses an immemorial upper extreme heavenly eagle. If Elder Fang Yuan was not on the same side as us, we might have provoked a disaster for our tribes.”

“Wha... what? Immemorial upper extreme heavenly eagle!” In an instant, the hairy man Gu Immortals looked at each other in shock.

“Elder Fang Yuan, I didn’t hear wrongly, right? You actually have an immemorial upper extreme heavenly eagle?!” Sixth Hair finally could not endure it, he stood up suddenly and stared fixedly at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose, and said with a slightly embarrassed expression: “Not long ago, I allied with Chu Du to get to Hei Fan grotto-heaven and take Hei Fan’s true inheritance. This upper extreme heavenly eagle is one of the gains.”

“What?!” The hairy man Gu Immortals exclaimed in shock.

Meanwhile, the snowman and rockman Gu Immortals also exchanged looks with each other.

Sixth Hair took a step back unconsciously, staring at Fang Yuan incredulously, and then looking at the other Gu Immortals.

In that instant, he finally realized and understood why these variant human Gu Immortals gave so much importance to Fang Yuan!

Immemorial desolate beast, rank eight battle strength!!

Plop.

Sixth Hair could not bear such a huge impact, his legs gave way and he sat down again on the stone chair.

“I did not have the time to inform all of you. Come, let us Lang Ya Sect members have a drink, this calls for a celebration.” Fang Yuan smiled and raised his wine bowl.

The hairy man Gu Immortals reacted, revealing joyous expressions.

“Our Lang Ya Sect also has rank eight battle strength now!”

“Elder Fang Yuan, you are truly unfathomable, simply amazing!”

“Elder Fang Yuan, it was my mistake in the incident earlier, I had eyes but failed to recognize Tian Ti Mountain.”

The hairy man Gu Immortals all had looks of ‘acceptance’.

This was the prestige of rank eight battle strength!

Sixth Hair also rose his wine bowl with a smile, while inwardly, he was spurting blood from anger.

Fang Yuan glanced at him, smiling: “Elder Sixth Hair, why are your hands trembling?”

Sixth Hair smiled towards him, he indeed was a spy who had lurked for many years, his expression did not show any flaws, it was just his voice that had turned somewhat hoarse: “This is because I am extremely excited for you, Elder Fang Yuan, and for Lang Ya Sect, I am... rejoicing.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1144: Refining Gu, Grand Commotion

Snow descended slowly and quietly.

There was no wind.

A series of snowy mountain peaks formed a range.

A couple were snuggling each other near the window, looking outside at the snowy landscape.

There was a warm atmosphere in the room.

The wife was neat and graceful, some white color was already beginning to show in her hair. She leaned on her husband’s arm and spoke with nostalgia: “It has been so long since I watched the snowy landscape with you this serenely...”

Her husband already looked old but was in good health, he comfortingly patted his wife’s arm with his aged hand, and spoke slowly: “I would like to stay with you always and watch the snowflakes fall quietly. Do you still remember the time we first met?”

His wife chuckled, the joyous memory seemed to be resurfacing in front of her eyes: “That was also a snowy day, you were still hotheaded, wanting to become stronger and stronger.”

“I wanted to become stronger, wasn’t it for the sake of becoming worthy of you? Back then, you said you would marry me when I cultivate to rank eight. Hehe.” The old man laughed, his laughter had some craftiness as well as some pride.

His wife’s smile, however, shrank slightly, and her brows furrowed: “To tell the truth, I regret it a little. I would rather your cultivation be slightly lower.”

“To be your husband, how could I have lower cultivation level? Rest assured, as long as we refine fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, I have confidence in passing this myriad tribulation, then our future will be boundless as the sea and sky, and I can stay with you forever.” As he said this, the old man’s sight slowly became sharper, revealing an extraordinarily powerful aura.

His aura went from weak to strong, continuously growing stronger. As time passed, it actually flowed outside, causing the surrounding snowflakes to stop falling, and float in front of him.

His wife slowly moved away from him, quietly looking at the snowy landscape as a firm will emerged in her eyes.

“Let us begin.” After a long while, the old man spoke, breaking the silence.

His wife only replied with one word: “Okay.”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Lady Wan Shou began refining fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu!

On this day, gorgeous lights shot out to the sky from Snowy Mountain blessed land, unable to be hidden or concealed!

Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world had yet to recover from the commotion of Hei tribe’s annihilation, but now, it fell into upheaval once again.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu had begun refining rank eight fortune rivalling heaven Gu!

This news was like a whirlwind that engulfed the whole Northern Plains Gu Immortal world.

Feng Xian grotto-heaven.

“Such a grand show, as if he is afraid others won’t come to wreck his plan. But this is indeed Old Xue Hu’s style.” Prince Feng Xian chuckled indifferently at the news.

“Lord, if we let Old Ancestor Xue Hu successfully refine the rank eight Immortal Gu, I am afraid he would just get much stronger.” Gu Immortal You Lan spoke from beside Prince Feng Xian.

“Even without fortune rivalling heaven Gu, he is still the number one expert of Northern Plains. Our current task is to capture Fang Yuan. We have already obtained news from that side, Heavenly Court has deduced and confirmed Fang Yuan is in Northern Plains!” Prince Feng Xian laughed, his eyes shining with cold light.

His hatred towards Fang Yuan was deep.

The reason?

Because Prince Feng Xian’s original task had been to infiltrate Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. But the grand plan was destroyed by Fang Yuan, causing his many years of waiting to go down the drain.

Could he not feel hatred?

Bai Zu grotto-heaven.

“Old Ancestor Xue Hu has been fiddling around for these years, he finally decided to act?” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu mumbled, then shook his head.

After that battle with Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was even more aware of the other side’s strength.

“Just I alone am absolutely not Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s opponent. Also, wrecking his refinement plan would mean I will be an irreconcilable enemy of him. But I have now established Bai Zu tribe, this is the result of many years of planning and arduous work, I cannot make a move lightly.”

“Unless Yao Huang and some other people want to make a move... before they show any signs, I should concentrate on invading that Hei Fan grotto-heaven instead.”

Yao Huang grotto-heaven.

A large cauldron was floating in front of Yao Huang.

It was made from cauldron strength Immortal Gu.

Inside the cauldron were countless immortal materials, the blazing fire below it was constantly melting these immortal materials into liquid and fusing them.

When he heard the news of Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s Gu refinement, the fire heating the cauldron trembled.

Yao Huang sighed and mumbled to himself: “Fighting with Old Xue Hu is not wise. Instead, I just need to concentrate on refining this resurrection from the dead Immortal Gu, and I will also possess a rank eight Immortal Gu, and solve the issue of lifespan.”

Longevity Heaven.

“Look at those lights soaring to the sky, hmph! Old Ancestor Xue Hu has really started refining fortune rivalling heaven Gu!”

“Even if he is a rank eight Gu Immortal, he is too audacious, to dare to covet Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s Immortal Gu!!”

Longevity Heaven was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s grotto-heaven, the Gu Immortals who lived inside were descendants of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable with the closest bloodline connection to him.

They naturally did not want to see fortune rivalling heaven Gu falling into an outsider’s hands.

However!

They were unable to make a move.

Because of one person — Five Elements Grandmaster!

...

“Elder Fang Yuan, please come in, this is our tribe’s sacred land — Earth Mother Altar!” Shi Shi Cheng respectfully guided Fang Yuan.

This rockman Gu Immortal was only rank six, but he controlled the immortal battlefield killer move, grey cloud battle puppet, he was clearly a character representing the next generation of the rockmen.

Following with him was also the rank six female Gu Immortal from the snowman tribe, Xue Er.

Right now, some days had already passed since the banquet.

The allied tribes of snowmen and rockmen living here treated Fang Yuan and the hairy man Gu Immortals with utmost cordiality.

According to Lang Ya land spirit’s arrangement, Sixth Hair and the others were responsible for negotiating about cooperation and alliance between both sides. As for Fang Yuan, he was accompanied to tour around and view the scenery, becoming familiar with the lifestyle of these variant humans.

Over these last few days, Fang Yuan had deep insight.

These snowmen and rockmen were living in hiding below the northern icy plain, but they were filled with awareness of crisis and were extremely strict in the upbringing of their later generations, almost to the point of cruelty.

This led to generations after generations of powerful variant human Gu Immortals.

Compared to them, Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s Gu Immortals formed an extremely clear contrast.

“Elder Fang Yuan, didn’t you ask me yesterday why there is such earth and soil below the northern icy plain? You will know once you enter.” Xue Er giggled.

“Okay.” Fang Yuan nodded, being somewhat curious.

When he entered Earth Mother Altar and saw two statues enshrined at the center, he was left staring.

“This is...”

He was shocked.

Because he saw a female human immortal hugging a rockman Gu Immortal’s arm. The two were looking into the distance with blissful expressions, looking like they had lived a charmed life together.

“This is the twenty-seventh first supreme elder of my tribe, Shi Mu, the one beside him is his wife, my tribe’s most respected Lady Earth Mother. Of course, as you can see, Lady Earth Mother is a human Gu Immortal.” Shi Shi Cheng introduced.

This was somewhat unthinkable.

A female human immortal actually fell in love with a rockman Gu Immortal, and was enshrined and respected by the later generations of rockmen to this degree.

Xue Er continued: “Lady Earth Mother was kind and benevolent, her love transcends race. She was deeply saddened that the rockman tribe did not have land for survival, and not long after Lord Shi Mu passed away, she also died of her own accord to be with her love. For the sake of the later generations, her dao marks and blessed land turned into this underground land, allowing rockmen to have a foundation for survival.”

Fang Yuan firmly stared at this couple’s statues.

His mind was surging frantically.

Because this Earth Mother, whom the rockmen and snowmen respected and revered, he actually knew her!

Naturally, he and Earth Mother were not people of the same time period, there would normally not have been any link between them. The reason why Fang Yuan could recognize Earth Mother’s identity was because he had soul searched Hei Cheng.

Because Earth Mother was the missing Hei Feng Yue of Hei tribe, Old Ancestor Hei Fan’s most beloved granddaughter!

“Who could have expected that Hei Feng Yue disappeared as a result of hiding her own identity. She fell in love with a rockman Gu Immortal, this definitely would not have been accepted by the tribe, and even more so, would not have been accepted by the human Gu Immortals in Northern Plains.”

“As for why she fell in love and stayed with a rockman Gu Immortal, there definitely must have been a hidden story.”

Fang Yuan was expressionless, but was inwardly sighing.

No matter what the truth of the past was, he had no intention to excavate it.

Every person had their own life to lead, their own loved and hated enemies. Right?

Xue Er had been secretly observing Fang Yuan, and seeing Fang Yuan having no expression of disgust or anger, her whole heart felt joyous.

She then looked at the statues of Shi Mu and Earth Mother dazedly, speaking with certain intent: “I won’t hide it from Elder Fang Yuan, from my perspective, love has no boundaries! Whether it be rockmen or humans, both have the possibility of existing together and the right to love each other!”

Fang Yuan went absent-minded.

A beautiful white figure flashed across his eyes.

But it disappeared shortly afterwards.

“The five hundred years of my first life...” His gaze turned deep and serene.

He slightly realized now.

Why this group of snowmen and rockmen accepted him so easily after knowing Fang Yuan was on the same side.

From a certain aspect, Fang Yuan could also be considered to have received Earth Mother’s help.

“Actually, we were compelled by the situation to fight with Elder Fang Yuan. Elder Fang Yuan must also be clear on how the northern icy plain was formed. This was previously a pure icy land, only with Lady Earth Mother’s profound methods, did this area start gathering earth qi and form this soil.”

Shi Shi Cheng earnestly continued: “However, when a Gu Immortal faces their tribulation in the northern icy plain, it would draw in and consume heaven and earth qi. Every time the earth qi is weakened, the northern icy plain will get more unstable, and the land we can live on will decrease by a portion in area.”

Fang Yuan nodded, he already knew of this reason during the banquet, now his understanding had become even deeper.

“This is my fault. If I had known this before, I would not have undergone my calamity in the northern icy plain!” Fang Yuan earnestly spoke.

Shi Shi Cheng and Xue Er’s face brightened.

“If misunderstandings can be solved, that is for the best.” Shi Shi Cheng spoke.

Right at this time, Shi Shi Cheng’s expression changed, shortly afterwards Xue Er’s expression also changed.

“What’s wrong?” Fang Yuan quickly asked.

“Lights are soaring to the sky from Snowy Mountain blessed land, our information claims that Old Ancestor Xue Hu has begun refining fortune rivalling heaven Gu.” Shi Shi Cheng spoke in a heavy tone.

Any human growing stronger was grievous news to variant humans.

Xue Er’s eyes shifted to Fang Yuan: “Elder Fang Yuan, you used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth and are an otherworldly demon, you even destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building by your own hands. I would like to ask if Old Ancestor Xue Hu succeeds in refining fortune rivalling heaven Gu in the future?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1145: Rank Eight Determines The Situation

A number of days had passed since the hairy man Gu Immortals from Lang Ya Sect came in touch and started discussing with this group of snowmen and rockmen.

The more they talked, the more they found common topics between each other.

This was decided by the external factors.

Human forces were incomparably big, while the variant human tribes could only barely survive in isolated parts of the world, like this place. They were naturally inclined towards allying.

Although Sixth Hair was a spy inserted by Shadow Sect into Lang Ya Sect, he did not oppose the alliance of the two sides, instead even working hard for it.

On one hand, Sixth Hair knew very well that just by himself, he could not make the two sides turn hostile to each other.

On another hand, Sixth Hair also took this chance to show his skills and obtain more contribution points, letting Lang Ya land spirit put more trust in him and increasing his status.

Finally, Shadow Sect's goal was Spectral Soul's goal. Although the Demon Venerable had died, his aspirations were already beyond the boundaries of race.

Both sides discussed, each understanding more about the other. Sixth Hair even sold almost all the intel about Fang Yuan to get more trust from the other side.

Thus, snowmen and rockmen knew how special Fang Yuan's status was.

Fang Yuan once possessed Spring Autumn Cicada and was a person who had been reborn.

He was also an otherworldly demon who came from a foreign world.

He was also the main culprit for the destruction of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and Imperial Court blessed land.

It was worth mentioning that the last point made the variant human Gu Immortals feel even closer to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, greatly weakening the human forces of Northern Plains, which was an extremely good thing to variant human forces. They were so joyous that, in the past, when they heard about Eighty-Eight True Yang Building's destruction, this allied group of snowmen and rockmen even had a banquet for three days and three nights.

Inside Earth Mother Altar, hearing Xue Er ask about the future, Fang Yuan replied with a bitter smile, having already prepared beforehand: “Although I had Spring Autumn Cicada, I have already lost this mystical Gu. After I was reborn, there have been many changes in the world. You also know that I made Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapse, right?”

“Yes, Elder Fang Yuan, you are truly amazing.” Xue Er said with bright eyes.

“I also feel extreme admiration towards you about this.” Shi Shi Cheng also added.

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose and sighed: “I am a person who had been reborn, and knew some secrets. Although I am not of the Huang Jin bloodline, I participated in the fight for Imperial Court to get some benefits from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building. My original plan was to visit time after time to get unending benefits. But plans can't keep up with changes, some accidents happened and I could only adapt to the circumstances, finally causing the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!”

Xue Er and Shi Shi Cheng revealed joyous smiles.

Shi Shi Cheng said: “Elder Fang Yuan’s words make sense.”

Fang Yuan shook his head in helpless fashion: “Who wants to be chased by all the Gu Immortals in the world? That was truly an accident.”

Xue Er smiled: “From what I see, Elder Fang Yuan, you are a natural hero, although you destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building accidentally, if it were someone else, would they be able to do it?”

“It is because of this I had no choice but to hide in Lang Ya blessed land, later on, things happened and I joined Lang Ya Sect. While living over there, I slowly discovered that the traits of variant humans were actually not weaker than humans. Their sincerity, trust and loyalty and so on far surpass the humans who always try to deceive each other. Although the five regions are vast, the survival space of variant humans is shrinking by the day, this is not right. Heaven’s will permits all living beings to exist, variant humans and humans should indeed co-exist.”

Fang Yuan’s face did not show shame in the slightest when he said this.

He even brought up heaven’s will, which was trying every way possible to eradicate him.

Fang Yuan had a sincere expression, so vivid that it could not be more realistic, Xue Er’s eyes even reddened from hearing these words.

Shi Shi Cheng was extremely moved: “If other human Gu Immortals were all as understanding and knowledgeable as Lord Fang Yuan, the world would be much better!”

In his words, he had already raised Fang Yuan from elder to lord, even speaking to him respectfully.

Indeed, Fang Yuan’s words were extremely politically correct as far as variant humans were concerned, inciting resonance and approval with their minds.

“But Elder Fang Yuan, you have yet to answer my question.” Xue Er was intelligent and not easy to deceive.

“I was just getting there.” Fang Yuan coughed, “Eighty-Eight True Yang Building’s destruction was not my intention. In fact, before I had reborn, it had never fallen!”

“Ah? Is that so.” Xue Er and Shi Shi Cheng looked at each other.

“Northern Plains’ situation has changed too much because of me. Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was destroyed, Ma Hong Yun was kidnapped and his possession of fortune rivalling heaven Gu was exposed so quickly, with him being bought by Old Ancestor Xue Hu. Before I was reborn, there was simply no event of Old Ancestor Xue Hu trying to refine fortune rivalling heaven Gu.” Fang Yuan added.

These words were all true.

Xue Er and Shi Shi Cheng both chose to believe them.

The former slightly pursed her lips: “Then doesn’t it mean it is difficult to deduce the result? If we really let Old Ancestor Xue Hu refine fortune rivalling heaven Gu, the strength of Northern Plains’ human Gu Immortals will rise by another level.”

Fang Yuan's thoughts turned, questioning: "Could it be that you want to stop it?"

He had no choice but to admit this allied group of snowmen and rockmen had the power to interfere in this matter.

Because they had an immemorial rock dragon, this was a genuine rank eight battle strength.

Moreover, it was an existence which was very hard to deal with among rank eight battle strengths.

The immemorial rock dragon's might was recorded and emphasized heavily in the historical records.

"Of course not!" Shi Shi Cheng shook his head, "We absolutely cannot interfere in this."

"Yes. We have been living peacefully here, why would we expose ourselves and go offend a rank eight expert? Moreover this rank eight expert controls Snowy Mountain blessed land, with large numbers of demonic path experts under him." Xue Er also shook her head.

They were very aware of the situation.

Even if they seized fortune rivalling heaven Gu for their own use, they would be exposing themselves, attracting the joint pursuit of the whole of Northern Plains' Gu Immortal world.

All the human forces would come rushing over, at that time, forget fortune rivalling heaven Gu, even if there were several more immemorial rock dragons, they would be unable to stop the humans.

Fang Yuan nodded and did not say anything, while inwardly pondering.

"These variant humans are indeed not ordinary, I have seen all the variant human Gu Immortals over these days, each of them is an elite. Whether it be their battle strength or foresight, they are outstanding in both. Even among the Northern Plains' human Gu Immortal circle, they would be excellent. When compared to them, Hei Fan grotto-heaven's Gu Immortals would be way behind. Fortunately, I had rank eight battle strength with me!"

So what if he was an otherworldly demon?

So what if he had Spring Autumn Cicada and was a reborn person?

These statuses and mysteries, when they were stacked on his rank eight battle strength as foundation, they become a part of a glorious halo, and not a source of trouble.

When one had great strength, who would dare to find trouble?

Rank eight battle strength!

With just a flick of their finger, they could crush others like ants.

This was the reason the snowmen and rockmen not only did not dare to find trouble with Fang Yuan, they also expressed cordial stances and attempted to rope him in.

Anyone of rank eight battle strength was of sufficient value for others to rope in.

In the absence of rank nine, rank eights were the overlords. This was already among the peak battle strength in the world.

“In fact, the whole of Northern Plains’ situation and structure is a result of rank eight Gu Immortals conflicting with each other. The politics of a world having individuals with great strength is always dictated by the strongest people!”

Fang Yuan was well aware of this.

“But if they know my upper extreme heavenly eagle is already dead, I wonder what kind of expressions these people will have?” Fang Yuan found it somewhat funny as he thought of this.

He forcibly sped up the growth of the upper extreme heavenly eagle, using time path killer moves, but with insufficient heavenly crystals, it was on the verge of dying from hunger.

He then used blood path methods to raise its vitality when he let it out, and successfully shook the variant human immortals. Relying on his bluffs and deception, he was able to survive, and change the situation.

However, the upper extreme heavenly eagle was like the last radiance of the setting sun. After Fang Yuan placed it in his immortal aperture, it died at almost the very next moment.

An immemorial desolate beast dying of hunger, this life of the upper extreme heavenly eagle was indeed somewhat depressing.

But!

That might not be the case in its next life.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle’s amazing trait was that it would produce an egg after its death. When the egg hatches, it would once again be reborn.

It was true that Fang Yuan lost the immemorial desolate beast upper extreme heavenly eagle, but similarly, he obtained an upper extreme heavenly eagle’s egg, and also the immemorial desolate beast’s giant corpse.

He could completely accept this result!

Because first of all, Fang Yuan was not satisfied with this upper extreme heavenly eagle. He had to disguise as a person of Hei tribe’s bloodline to command it.

Secondly, many flaws appeared after the upper extreme heavenly eagle was forcefully grown. With rank eight battle strength, how could such a grand being let Fang Yuan, a rank six Gu Immortal, control it? Let alone when the upper extreme heavenly eagle was an extremely prideful beast. It was certain that the upper extreme heavenly eagle would not listen when it was forcefully grown into being of rank eight battle strength, there was even a huge possibility of it rebelling and turning against Fang Yuan because of its strong pride in itself.

As a result, the upper extreme heavenly eagle dying was not bad news to Fang Yuan.

As for the new egg, Fang Yuan could rely on the contents of Hei Fan’s true inheritance to change it, tampering with its memories and so on, such that when it hatches, it would directly obey Fang Yuan.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was openly refining fortune rivalling heaven Gu, the refinement path Gu formation’s light even shot up to the heavens, shining brightly for seven days and seven nights before it gradually dissipated.

This matter caused strong turbulence in the whole of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

However.

After the shock, the Gu Immortal world of Northern Plains strangely quietened down.

This was because Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, Yao Huang, Five Elements Grandmaster and Prince Feng Xian had not responded yet. Without these rank eight Gu Immortals speaking up, even if the other rank six and rank sevens clamored, it would be of no use.

Being able to battle a rank eight existence with rank seven cultivation, within the last few thousand years of the five regions, only Feng Jiu Ge could do it.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu did matters rampantly and tyrannically, but one had to say he not only had brawn but also brains, picking up such an extremely opportune time.

This group of variant humans under the northern icy plain also chose to watch by the sidelines.

As for Fang Yuan himself, he similarly had no thoughts of participating in this matter.

This matter was too big, it concerned the rank eight great expert Old Ancestor Xue Hu, although Fang Yuan currently was stronger than before, if he interfered in this matter, he would easily be turned into mush.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1146: Four Races Alliance

Three days went by.

Underground of the icy plain, Earth Mother Altar.

Four incense sticks were lit and the smoke coiled up to the air, Gu Immortals were standing by a side with solemn expressions, the four camps clearly differentiated.

Fang Yuan was also among them, the people beside him were Lang Ya Sect’s hairy man Gu Immortals.

A melodious bugle call resounded, and then the drums roared.

Shi Zong took a large step ahead during the drum sounds, speaking in a loud voice: “I, Gu Immortal Shi Zong of the rockman tribe, am willing to join the four races alliance. From today onwards, the four races shall be united, we shall share fortune and woe together.”

He then activated his immortal essence, causing some changes in the Earth Mother Altar.

The smoke that was curling up in the air surged towards Shi Zong, and after coiling around for a dozen breaths, they completely merged into Shi Zong's body.

"Adding on information path dao marks! It seems to be an ancient method..." Fang Yuan inwardly pondered.

Originally, the hairy men were discussing about an alliance with the allied group of snowman and rockman tribes.

But the matter went unexpectedly smoothly, as both sides were increasingly in agreement with the alliance. The hairy men's side even took the initiative to mention bringing Inkman City in too.

After the allied group of snowmen and rockmen understood the details, they agreed to it.

Long Hair Ancestor and Immortal Yi Yan were publicly known to be bosom friends in history. Long Hair Ancestor left Lang Ya blessed land behind while Immortal Yi Yan founded Inkman City. The inkmen and hairy men from these places thus always had close relations.

Since the hairy men's side vouched for the inkmen, the allied rockmen and snowmen tribes also chose to believe them.

As a result, the discussion between the three sides became one involving four variant human races.

Finally, the three sides reached a consensus and were willing to form an alliance, sharing hardships together and assisting each other from now on.

The current scene was a result of that.

The three sides used an ancient information path method to officially form an alliance.

Gu Immortals took turns to go forward and accept the effect of the information path dao marks. As such, they became members of the four races alliance.

Time passed, Fang Yuan gradually understood some of the mechanics.

"This does not seem to be an orthodox information path method, but instead earth path is used to get the effect of information path. Just like my time path immortal killer move — Hundred Years Harmony."

Fang Yuan's heart sank as he thought of this.

It was going to be troublesome if he wanted to break this alliance agreement in the future. Because it did not seem likely that he could resolve it using information path. Most probably, it needed to be resolved with earth path methods.

"Elder Fang Yuan, it's your turn." At this time, Twelfth Hair reminded softly from the side in a warm tone.

Speaking of which, ever since the matter of the falling star hound was resolved and the news of Fang Yuan obtaining an immemorial upper extreme heavenly eagle was known, the hairy man Gu Immortals' attitudes towards Fang Yuan had a complete change, becoming reverential, forming a stark contrast from before.

Fang Yuan nodded and walked to the front without hesitation, and just like what the rockman Gu Immortal Shi Zong did, he allowed the incense smoke to imprint on his body.

His every action was being observed by the immortals present on the scene.

Seeing that he had truly joined the alliance, the group of immortals slightly relaxed, letting go of another layer of worry. The smile on Xue Er became even more lovely.

Little could they imagine that Fang Yuan was already thinking of how to break the restrictions of the alliance agreement.

He naturally could not follow along with the aims and mindsets of these variant humans.

Even entering Lang Ya Sect was to make it more convenient to use Lang Ya blessed land’s strength.

Similarly, joining this four races alliance was because Fang Yuan was forced by the situation and also because it would be easier for him to borrow the strength of the alliance to help in his cultivation.

“To truly have me be of the same faction as variant humans and resist humans, that is impossible!”

“Humans have absolute dominance, even if these four variant human tribes have allied, what can they do?”

“However, this strength also cannot be underestimated. In my first life, did these four groups really ally?”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts had started to drift as he pondered.

He did not know the answer to this question.

In his first life, he had been a rank six blood path Gu Immortal. In matters regarding the Northern Plains Gu Immortal world, he did not have enough understanding. Especially these kinds of behind the scenes details, even Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals might not be aware.

“But I do know there had been no news of these snowman and rockman tribes in my first life, maybe they were annihilated or maybe they were still living, hiding from the world. Lang Ya blessed land had also not established a sect, and was finally destroyed by Heavenly Court. On the contrary, the inkman tribe did surprisingly well.”

As he thought of this, Fang Yuan sneaked a glance at Mo Tan Sang.

This person only had rank six cultivation and cultivated qi path. Qi path had much longer history than strength path, but was similarly a declining Gu cultivation path.

Mo Tan Sang had a middle-aged appearance, he had black skin and thick white hair. He appeared quite dignified when he did not smile, and when he smiled, he gave people a feeling of great closeness.

“This person is also a formidable character.” Fang Yuan inwardly appraised.

He remembered that in the five regions chaotic war, this Mo Tan Sang took advantage of the lack of attention paid to him due to the human tribes being too busy in their internal conflicts, to develop rapidly, greatly expanding the inkman forces.

When the Northern Plains human forces wanted to suppress him, he actually disregarded his dignity as the king and threw himself to Liu tribe. He took a servant’s rite to Liu tribe’s supreme elder and became a servant to him.

Liu tribe was one of the super forces, thus the inkman forces were protected. The inkman forces grew stably under this layer of protection.

Later, when Liu tribe weakened, the Inkman King immediately gave up on Liu tribe to collaborate with Ma Hong Yun on equal terms.

Before Fang Yuan self-detonated, the inkmen had hundreds of cities and occupied one-third of northern plains’ lands. If Fang Yuan were to talk of such a scale and force, no one would believe him.

In this four races alliance, the inkman tribe was undoubtedly the weakest.

But in Fang Yuan’s first life, it was the inkmen who were thriving.

Mo Tan Sang knew when to advance and when to yield, he was a spiritual figure representing the rise of the inkman tribe. At the same time, it was also because of the external environment. In the five regions chaotic war, all order collapsed, opportunities and risks were everywhere.

As if sensing Fang Yuan’s gaze, Mo Tan Sang turned back to look at Fang Yuan, immediately smiling, expressing sincerity and kindness.

This kindness was so deep and clear that when he smiled, he was almost bowing, even giving the feeling of some flattery.

Fang Yuan snorted inwardly, while returning the smile on the surface.

Mo Tan Sang’s expression changed slightly, showing a feeling of excitement at being recognized by an important person.

If it were others, they would have probably felt a sense of superiority and smugness at this moment.

“Truly formidable.” Fang Yuan’s own acting skills were beyond ordinary, but this Mo Tan Sang before him was on par with him.

“The world is big, experts and talents emerge every generation, I absolutely cannot look down on these champions.” Fang Yuan inwardly reminded himself, his mind remaining cool without any fluctuations.

Northern Plains’ situation could be described as going through one wave after another.

The storm of Hei tribe’s collapse and takeover by Bai Zu tribe had yet to settle down. Old Ancestor Xue Hu began refining fortune rivalling heaven Gu, attracting the gazes of the whole of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

And behind their backs, at an unknown, secluded area, four variant human races – hairy men, snowmen, rockmen and inkmen – had quietly formed an alliance.

Although variant humans were absolutely in a weaker position, this alliance could not be looked down upon. Because it possessed a rank eight battle strength immemorial rock dragon. Of course, in the minds of the other alliance members, there was also Fang Yuan’s upper extreme heavenly eagle.

Fang Yuan was forced to join them.

But what made him feel slightly at ease was there were no wisdom path Gu Immortal among these four tribes.

After the alliance was formed, Fang Yuan’s loss was obvious.

That was, from now on, he could not undergo tribulation in the northern icy plain.

This no doubt would influence Fang Yuan greatly.

But he had no choice.

Undergoing tribulation here meant consuming earth qi, which was the greatest damage to the rockmen’s home. This was the reason why these rockmen and snowmen did not stint on cost to set up the battlefield killer move, grey cloud battle puppet, to kill Fang Yuan.

But besides loss, Fang Yuan also had gains.

He cleared the way for trading with the rockman and snowman tribes, letting his monthly earnings reach a new level.

Leaving aside the snowmen, the main point were the rockmen, their desire towards guts Gu was higher than humans!

The reason?

It was obvious, when one considered the time Fang Yuan used guts Gu to increase the population of rockmen in Hu Immortal blessed land.

Guts Gu was the best way to grow and develop rockman tribes.

Besides this, Fang Yuan also sold some resources he obtained from Hei Fan grotto-heaven to the rockmen, snowmen and inkmen, making great profits, causing Sixth Hair to worry and rage on the inside.

“Fang Yuan’s gains are so huge! What should I do? How can we restrain him in the future?!”

It was time to bid farewell!

“Elder Fang Yuan, you really need to leave so soon? You could stay for another day or two.” Xue Er attempted to persuade Fang Yuan to stay.

Fang Yuan shook his head, saying with a warm smile: “We have formed an alliance, this matter is too important, I need to personally return to report to Lang Ya land spirit. You can rest assured, I will be back. We can be considered to be friends made from fighting and I feel quite fond of this place.”

Fang Yuan was interested in the snowman Gu Immortals’ ice and snow path Immortal Gu, as well as their killer moves.

These two were very suitable for him.

After all, in terms of dao marks, the highest quantity in his body were currently ice and snow path dao marks.

As per the relation between him and the snowman tribe currently, along with rank eight battle strength publicly, he could exchange Immortal Gu. But Fang Yuan did not plan to give up any of his Immortal Gu, he had a better plan.

For instance, some day in the future, when a certain variant human Gu Immortal cannot pass their tribulation and required his time path immortal killer move to slow the time in their immortal aperture.

At that time, Fang Yuan could take the chance to demand Immortal Gu.

In the past, Hei Fan did this many times and obtained a sizable number of Immortal Gu.

Xue Er naturally did not know this handsome young man in front of her was harboring evil intent with his mind full of schemes. She lowered her head as she saw Fang Yuan was intent on leaving, revealing hesitation and a struggling expression.

But soon, her eyes revealed firm intent as she raised her head and handed an item in her hand to Fang Yuan.

“Elder Fang Yuan, take this as my farewell gift to you.” Xue Er tried to keep a calm exterior as she spoke, but her voice was still shaking.

Fang Yuan glanced at the item, it was an ice tear drop!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1147: Making Chu Du Change Sides?

Ice tears were not an immortal material but was still precious, widely loved by both Gu Masters and Gu Immortals.

Ice tears originated from snowmen.

Snowmen survived in icy environments. Snowmen normally did not cry or laugh, so their tears were very rare. The majority of the snowmen would never experience crying from joy or pain in their lives. But if they shed tears, the tears would immediately condense into ice tears.

Snowmen could shed tears at most three times in their lives and the number would not surpass sixty drops. Every time they shed tears, the snowman’s lifespan and life essence would decrease by a huge amount. If the snowman shed too many tears, they would rapidly age, quickening their death.

So ice tears were rare as well.

Transactions of ice tears had always been flourishing in treasure yellow heaven. Long ago, Xue Song Zi had particularly engaged in selling snowmen, supplying them to other Gu Immortals to torment and get the ice tears.

As far as human Gu Immortals were concerned, ice tears were a precious Gu refinement material.

But to snowmen, ice tears had another significant meaning.

That was — a token of love!

That’s right!

Snowmen, this race had male and female genders, unlike rockmen who were purely male.

During the marriage of snowmen, they would often exchange ice tears. This action had extremely huge meaning to snowmen.

“This is an ice tear.” Fang Yuan’s eyes brightened, holding it in front of his eyes and making detailed observation.

“Don’t, don’t look at it like that, quickly place it down...” Xue Er’s voice was soft and anxious. There were many people present, holding the ice tear like that in public was sure to be noticed!

Sure enough, the next moment, Xue Er heard those Gu Immortals’ surprised sounds.

Xue Er quickly lowered her head, her face flushing red with shyness.

She handed the ice tear to Fang Yuan, which was as good as expressing her love. Although she had mustered her courage before, now that so many people were looking at her, she was truly, truly embarrassed!

“Speaking of it, I have heard of this strange Gu material long ago. I have now finally seen it personally. Thank you Xue Er, this gift is pretty good. Maybe I should refine it into some Gu worm?” Fang Yuan cheerfully spoke.

Xue Er’s body visibly shook.

Fang Yuan turned a blind eye to it, continuing: “But a drop of ice tear is still too little, it would be good if there were some more. Why are there no transactions of ice tears? It is truly regretful.”

As Xue Er listened, the shy redness in her face had already dissipated, replaced by pale white. Her head was lowered even more, her sight turning blurry as tears started to form in them.

“This, this fool!” Bing Zhuo could not see it continue, as he inwardly cursed and walked over.

The other variant human Gu Immortals were tongue-tied, not knowing what to say.

Xue Er suddenly raised her head, her back facing Fang Yuan as she called out to Bing Zhuo: “Brother Bing Zhuo!”

Bing Zhuo gritted his teeth, an intense pity rose up in his heart as he saw Xue Er’s pale white expression. He knew Xue Er was shy, it had already taken a lot of her courage to hand over the ice tear just now, maybe she had also felt an impulsive urge in her mind. Fang Yuan did not know the meaning of the ice tear, if he criticized Fang Yuan now in front of everyone, would it not put Xue Er in an even more embarrassing situation?

Thinking of this, Bing Zhuo could only swallow the words that were in his mouth, saying something else: “Elder Fang Yuan, I had many gains from battling you. Next time, we should spar properly again!”

When he mentioned sparring, he intentionally made his voice heavier, along with some gnashing noise.

Xue Er was young and beautiful, her talent was outstanding and her cultivation was high, she had all along been receiving the attention and favor of the tribe. It was just that there was no man in the same generation worthy of her.

This time, she felt feelings for Fang Yuan, although he was a human Gu Immortal, the snowman Gu Immortals felt they could accept him.

Rockmen had their Earth Mother, could our snowmen not have a Snow Father?

If Xue Er could marry Fang Yuan, the snowman tribe would possess the backing of an immemorial desolate beast.

But who could have thought Fang Yuan to not be aware of the tradition of these variant humans, treating the ice tear as a common Gu material, making the whole situation awkward. Even Xue Er was put on the spot.

Fang Yuan smiled and patted Bing Zhuo’s shoulder: “Alright, I promise you if there is an opportunity in the future, we will spar again. Okay, everyone, I am taking my leave. No need to send me off, we shall meet again in the future. Hahaha.”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily and walked away. Adorned in a white robe with long black hair, he looked handsome and extremely carefree.

Xue Er’s gaze even turned somewhat dazed.

Bing Zhuo, however, gnashed his teeth, wanting nothing more than to chop this kid Fang Yuan into pieces.

“This can’t do! When he has gone far enough, I need to send him a letter, telling him the meaning of the ice tear properly!”

The journey back to Lang Ya blessed land was smooth and without any obstacles.

Seeing Lang Ya land spirit again, the attitude of the first supreme elder of Lang Ya Sect towards Fang Yuan had underwent a huge change.

“You truly inherited Hei Fan’s true inheritance? You possess methods to slow the time of an immortal aperture? Also, you actually have an immemorial upper extreme heavenly eagle, quickly take it out!” Lang Ya land spirit excitedly asked.

Fang Yuan shook his head bitterly, and took out the corpse of the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

Lang Ya land spirit was stunned on the spot.

Fang Yuan informed Lang Ya land spirit of the whole event.

“A grand immemorial desolate beast was actually starved to death by you?! You... but fortunately, you still have the egg, that’s good, that’s good, the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s special point is this.”

Lang Ya land spirit came back to his senses, and looked at Fang Yuan with a burning gaze: “Sell this upper extreme heavenly eagle’s egg to me, we can make a deal!”

Fang Yuan laughed: “I can sell this egg!”

Lang Ya land spirit was joyous.

Fang Yuan continued: “But I am afraid you don’t have any heavenly crystals to raise it. Even treasure yellow heaven has very few transactions of heavenly crystals.”

“Naturally. Heavenly crystals can only be produced in grotto-heavens or the immemorial nine heavens. This is a very precious and rare rank eight immortal material! Right now, only black heaven and white heaven remain from the immemorial nine heavens while the number of rank eight Gu Immortals have always been few. Moreover, among these rank eight Gu Immortals, some are unable to produce heavenly crystals.”

As he spoke until here, Lang Ya land spirit shifted his words: “But you don’t have to worry about this. My Lang Ya blessed land was once Lang Ya grotto-heaven, it had once produced heavenly crystals, besides this, in the past, my main body had also hoarded a large batch of heavenly crystals from the immemorial nine heavens.”

“Ah, since that is the case, I can rest at ease. I will sell it to you.” Fang Yuan nodded.

Lang Ya land spirit laughed heartily: “Fang Yuan, since you are one of us, I absolutely won’t let you suffer a loss. Luck path true inheritance, Thieving Heaven true inheritance or Long Hair true inheritance, choose as you please.”

Fang Yuan’s tone sank: “What? I am not too interested in these things. Moreover, isn’t this price somewhat low to exchange for a rank eight battle strength?”

Lang Ya land spirit’s smile stiffened, he thought for a bit and nodded: “It is indeed so. Then... how about exchanging with my Luo Po Valley?”

Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley were secluded domains of heaven and earth, unique in the whole world. But compared to rank eight battle strength, Lang Ya land spirit would not hesitate to give up on the former and choose the latter!

“Price is too low, not selling, not selling.” Fang Yuan refused.

Lang Ya land spirit scratched his head: “How about this, I am willing to give up Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus as well as the incomplete Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron in exchange for your upper extreme heavenly eagle!”

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped but he still shook his head: “It is still not enough, not selling.”

Lang Ya land spirit was furious: “Then give me a price, how much will you sell it for?”

Fang Yuan smiled, emphasizing: “This is of rank eight battle strength!”

Lang Ya land spirit naturally was not foolish, as he retorted: “It is indeed of rank eight battle strength, but it needs to be fed. Do you have heavenly crystals? Also, even if you raise the upper extreme heavenly eagle, will it listen to you? To tell you the truth, you were really lucky this time, starving the upper extreme heavenly eagle to death. If not for this, according to my understanding, this upper extreme heavenly eagle only needs to have some strength left to directly crush you, an ant who tried to enslave it, to death.”

Fang Yuan smiled: “If so I am willing to use sect contribution points to exchange for heavenly crystals to raise the upper extreme heavenly eagle. Anyway, I am a supreme elder of Lang Ya Sect and also one of the members of the four races alliance. In the future, if the sect needs me, I will naturally appear.”

Lang Ya land spirit was stumped, pondering upon it before he pointed at Fang Yuan’s nose and scolded: “Good brat! You had no intent to sell it in the first place and were just making things difficult for me!”

Fang Yuan immediately showed a serious expression, speaking earnestly: “How could I easily give up a rank eight battle strength? But making things difficult for first supreme elder, how could I have such thoughts! It is just that the price is indeed too low.”

As he said this, he suddenly thought of another intention of Hei Fan.

Even if Hei Fan’s true inheritance was inherited by one of the Gu Immortals in the grotto-heaven, Hei Fan had left the upper extreme heavenly eagle in Iron Eagle blessed land.

With this immemorial desolate beast, even if there was not an inheritor, it would be an extremely huge gain to the tribe!

Lang Ya land spirit sighed, knowing well that Fang Yuan was not wrong, so he stopped persisting on buying.

On one hand, the upper extreme heavenly eagle had already become an egg, making him greatly disappointed. On the other hand, Fang Yuan was not only bound by Lang Ya’s alliance agreement, he had also joined the four races alliance, which put Lang Ya land spirit at ease. Finally, he, more or less, knew Fang Yuan’s nature.

“Such an ambitious and audacious guy like you absolutely won’t easily give up on a rank eight battle strength! But if you want to use sect contribution points to exchange for Lang Ya Sect’s heavenly crystals, it won’t be easy! Heavenly crystals are rank eight immortal materials, the contribution points you have are many, but you would still not be able to afford them.” Lang Ya land spirit’s mood became better as he said this.

With heavenly crystals at hand, he could entice Fang Yuan to work for Lang Ya Sect.

By now, Lang Ya land spirit had no choice but to admit Fang Yuan was strong and resourceful, much more useful than other hairy man Gu Immortals!

“Then I will exchange for some first. We can slowly go about this.” Fang Yuan intentionally revealed a distressed expression.

Fang Yuan’s current sect contribution points were indeed a lot.

He had solved the matter with the falling star hound, earning a thousand sect contribution points at once. And this time, he had discovered the allied tribes of snowmen and rockmen, and succeeded in spurring the four races alliance, the sect contribution points for this were also nearly a thousand!

As such, Fang Yuan’s Lang Ya Sect contribution points numbered over two thousand points.

But calculating it, two thousand contribution points were still too little to exchange for the rank eight immortal material, heavenly crystals.

At this moment, Lang Ya land spirit suggested another mission for Fang Yuan: “Aren’t you familiar with Domination Immortal Chu Du? Rope him in to our Lang Ya Sect, make him rebel against the humans and become one of us. I can give you another thousand sect contribution points if you do this!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1148: Temporary Rest

Fang Yuan’s divine sense was roaming in treasure yellow heaven.

“Oh?” His divine sense stopped for a moment.

A Gu Immortal’s will was at the side, with a mountain of goods behind him.

“These are all slippery soil?” Fang Yuan took the initiative and asked.

Han Yu’s Gu Immortal will awakened from slumber, seeing a customer, he quickly said: “These are all slippery soil!”

After reporting the price, he asked: “Sir, how much are you buying?”

Slippery soil was a type of rank five material, the soil was very fertile.

Fang Yuan nodded mentally, this was a very appropriate price, it was even lower than the normal market price. He needed this soil anyway, he said: “I’ll take them all.”

Han Yu’s will shook: “Everything? I have a huge stock.”

Fang Yuan confirmed: “Yes, everything. Two hundred and two immortal essence stones, that is the price, right?”

Han Yu’s will quickly nodded: “Yes, yes.”

Inside treasure yellow heaven, any form of goods would have treasure light emitting from them.

Fang Yuan could estimate the price by looking at the treasure light and the goods themselves.

He was a wisdom path grandmaster, after all.

“Let’s trade.” Fang Yuan said quickly.

“Alright, alright.” Han Yu’s will quickly nodded and responded.

The situation was out of his expectations.

He was only a rank six Gu Immortal who had passed one heavenly tribulation, he was trying hard in developing his blessed land. He wanted to sell the slippery soil in his blessed land, and because of his past experiences, he even lowered the price by a little, to think that it was going to be sold out so quickly!

This was great news to him.

Han Yu’s will carried two hundred and two immortal essence stones, the entire will’s body was shaking, he was very excited.

“In my previous life, I was just like this.” Fang Yuan saw this and sighed internally.

Han Yu was the norm among most rank six Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan, during his previous life, had even been inferior, because he was a blood path Gu Immortal.

But it was different now!

Just the guts Gu trade, which was a monopoly, was bringing him immense profits.

After taking the resources of Hei Fan grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan’s own wealth had reached an unprecedented level. Not just two hundred immortal essence stones, he could take out two thousand without batting an eyelid.

All in all, Fang Yuan’s financial situation was quite good now.

After buying the slippery soil, Fang Yuan moved his divine sense around and went to buy several types of soil.

After reaching his goal, Fang Yuan withdrew his divine sense and brought the soils back to the sovereign immortal aperture.

He controlled the strength path immortal zombies, they scattered the soils into different areas of Mini Southern Border in the sovereign immortal aperture.

The scenery in Mini Southern Border had already drastically changed.

Forests were everywhere, causing greenery to overwhelm the lands. Tall ancient trees and pine trees, the straight cottonwood, the short shrubs, and an uncountable number of grass and flowers made Mini Southern Border vivid and full of life all of a sudden.

These were just ordinary plants, there were lots of high grade resources mixed in among them.

Like the musical trees, they were in the greatest quantity!

This type of tree had curvy branches, they were quite unique. There were birds on the branches, mostly qi death birds, they had distinct calls and chirped loudly.

Originally, Mini Southern Border was completely empty, but it was quite lively now.

Other than birds, there were lots of deer, squirrels, monkeys, snakes, tigers, and other animals, they formed into a proper ecological cycle.

Originally, Mini Southern Border only had a few mounds.

But now, there were more than ten mountains here.

These mountains were all moved in by Fang Yuan from Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Ordinary Gu Immortals could not move mountains, but his pulling mountain Immortal Gu could be used for this.

Right now, among the mountains, the tallest one was Immortal Succession Mountain.

The stone pavilions were still on the mountain, Fang Yuan did not remove them, but the inheritances inside were all taken away.

After a long time, Fang Yuan finally finished controlling all of the immortal zombies to scatter the soil at their proper locations.

Fang Yuan observed for a while, before stopping in satisfaction.

“With these soils, these plants would be able to grow well for some time.”

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture had few earth path dao marks, the space was also very big, it had five regions and nine heavens, Mini Southern Border could not have many earth path dao marks after they were distributed.

With few earth path dao marks, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture would not have mountains forming, the soil would not be thick or fertile.

The vegetation in Mini Southern Border was almost completely from Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven, these plants and trees were growing well, they were dense and green.

But after moving into Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture, because of the sparse earth path dao marks, they were drying out, and appeared to be lacking nutrients.

Fang Yuan could only buy lots of fertile soil, like slippery soil, to scatter them in Mini Southern Border, resolving the problem.

“But this does not solve the underlying issue!”

“These different soils will turn into ordinary soil after some time, the earth path dao marks in them would dissipate.”

These soils were just mortal Gu materials, they had fragmented earth path dao marks in them. After the grass and trees absorb the nutrients, these scattered earth path dao marks would mostly vanish.

“Only by undergoing tribulation or absorbing the dao marks of an earth path Gu Immortal, to increase the earth path dao marks in the immortal aperture, can I resolve the problem.” Fang Yuan knew this clearly.

Fang Yuan could not undergo the fifth earthly calamity in the northern icy plain anymore. This time, he could choose to go Southern Border, or any place with rich earth path dao marks for his tribulation, hoping to encounter an earth path earthly calamity.

Once he encountered an earth path earthly calamity, after going through it, Fang Yuan’s problem would be alleviated.

As for killing an earth path Gu Immortal to absorb their dao marks, it was not easy.

Earth path Gu Immortals with low cultivation level did not have many earth path dao marks. And those with high cultivation level were too strong, there was too great of a risk for Fang Yuan to deal with them.

Until now, Fang Yuan had already gone through four earthly calamities.

The first was the snow monster calamity, there were iron crown eagles, ruin bats and others. The second was the wind flowers and snow moons calamity, the third was the spring dawn jade orioles and giant disaster blazing trees, the fourth was the profound white flying salt calamity.

Because the sovereign immortal aperture surpassed the ten extreme physiques combined, heaven’s will was wary of it, during each earthly calamity, it would increase the strength of the earthly calamity to the greatest limit allowed.

Earthly calamities of such difficulty greatly surpassed other Gu Immortals, by several or even over a dozen times.

Thus, Fang Yuan also made incredible gains, he obtained more than a dozen times the dao marks each tribulation!

As a result, Fang Yuan had the highest number of ice and snow path dao marks, followed by transformation path, strength path, qi path, rule path, there were also some from luck path, blood path, and others.

The entire sovereign immortal aperture had improved drastically after obtaining Hei Fan grotto-heaven's resources.

Because the space was huge, at the moment, only Mini Southern Border was quite lively, even though the other areas had some resources, they did not have such a complete ecosystem as Mini Southern Border.

There were many desolate beasts, giant horned sheep, shark fin wolves, dragonfish, eagle hounds and others. In terms of ancient desolate beasts, he had remnant heavenly dogs and a falling star hound (infant). He also had an immemorial desolate beast, that was the upper extreme heavenly eagle, but it had turned into an egg already.

There were some desolate plants too, he even had an ancient desolate plant, that was the walking meat tree.

All in all, Fang Yuan's accumulated resources currently matched Gu Immortals at the peak of rank seven. Chu Du was probably similar to Fang Yuan now. As for Feng Jiu Ge, he was heavily nurtured by a super force, Fang Yuan was still inferior to him.

After scattering the soil, Fang Yuan's concentration returned to soul searching the captive Gu Immortals' souls.

Fang Yuan's immortal aperture had many Gu Immortal captives, in fact.

There were many Gu Immortal souls.

The focus of his soul search this time was on the nine Gu Immortal souls in Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Feng Jun's luck path true inheritance and Chen Le's concealment method were quite impressive, Fang Yuan was interested in them.

“You are not Hei Cheng! Who are you?”

“You unscrupulous scoundrel, kill me if you dare!”

“Spare me, please spare me, as long as you resurrect me, I will be your most loyal servant!”

Among these Gu Immortal souls, some questioned him, some cursed him and wanted to die, while some wanted to survive.

Fang Yuan did not conceal himself as Hei Cheng anymore, after all, familiar face also needed to consume immortal essence, and attitude Gu needed to use his mental energy.

Towards these Gu Immortals' cries, Fang Yuan ignored them, he soul searched them without pause.

Every day, he would soul search them for a period of time.

“In about three days, I will be done searching the memories of these souls, I would know everything about them.”

After his soul searching, Fang Yuan collated his gains, retracting his mind.

He left the cloud city, moving towards Luo Po Valley.

There, his soul went out of his body, as he underwent tough soul path cultivation.

Fang Yuan had already used Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley for some time, his soul foundation had already reached dozens of times as before!

However, he was still not confident of placing his soul into his original body.

“This problem is the most troublesome.”

“Even if my soul foundation increases, it is still hard to avoid Shadow Sect’s possible hidden methods.”

“Who knows, Ying Wu Xie’s arrangements might become stronger if my soul has greater foundation. Perhaps the stronger my soul, the deeper Shadow Sect’s trap.”

“Ying Wu Xie knows I have Luo Po Valley and Dang Hun Mountain, when setting the trap, there is no way he did not consider these details.”

His daily soul cultivation ended, Fang Yuan’s soul returned to his body, he stood up shakily.

He had a grim expression.

As long as he could use wisdom Gu, his strength would increase at an explosive rate!

Many development problems he was facing now were related to wisdom Gu.

As long as he could use wisdom Gu, many problems would be resolved instantly.

“I have wisdom Gu, and the strength path immortal zombie body, I just need that final key!” Fang Yuan mentally sighed helplessly.

Just like this, Fang Yuan stayed in Lang Ya blessed land for seven days.

He cultivated unceasingly, he did not relax for even a minute.

His soul foundation grew again, he completely searched the souls of the nine Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan also used half of his Lang Ya Sect contribution points to trade for some heavenly crystals and even put up some Gu refinement missions.

Self will Gu, year Gu, month Gu, day Gu, as well as all the other mortal Gu, he needed a huge quantity of them.

He would rather spend sect contribution points to get these mortal Gu, getting the hairy man Gu Masters and Gu Immortals to refine them for him. This could save him a lot of time and energy.

Seven days later, he left Lang Ya blessed land, heading for Eastern Sea!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1149: Desiring the Information Path Inheritance

The great winds blew, carrying the salty flavor of the sea water.

Fang Yuan sat on top of a cloud, he traveled quickly while splitting his attention towards the information path mortal Gu in his hand.

This mortal Gu was from Bing Zhuo.

The snowman Gu Immortal who dual wielded spears and was skilled at close combat, he told Fang Yuan in the letter: the ice tear had significant meaning to the snowman tribe, it was not just a Gu refinement material, it was the token of one’s love.

“Hmph.” Fang Yuan smiled coldly, he crushed that information path mortal Gu in his hands.

Pure white clouds carried him on his journey. The wind caused his hair to flutter in the sky, he had a fair face like jade, he was extremely handsome, almost enchanting, his dark abyss-like eyes looked down at the deep blue sea, showing traces of cold flickering light.

How could Fang Yuan not know about the meaning of the ice tear to the snowmen?

Don’t forget, he was someone who had lived for five hundred years, even though his cultivation level was not high, his knowledge was definitely vast.

Not just the ice tear, Fang Yuan had deep knowledge regarding the wine culture of variant humans.

During the earlier banquet, Sixth Hair accused Fang Yuan of not knowing about the variant human drinking culture. In fact, Fang Yuan was just pretending to not know, he was probing the attitude of the snowmen and rockmen.

Sometimes, acting ignorant allows someone to have more options.

The matter of the ice tear was like this. Fang Yuan pretended to be unaware, but he knew it clearly on the inside.

Accepting the ice tear was accepting Xue Er’s love. But if he did not accept it, he would ruin the cooperative relationship between himself and the snowmen and rockmen.

Getting together with Xue Er?

The disadvantages were greater than the advantages!

The snowman tribe was after Fang Yuan’s rank eight battle strength, from the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

Disregarding how much benefits Fang Yuan could gain from the snowman tribe, just this point alone, he could not fulfill it.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle had already become an egg.

Even though Fang Yuan spent a portion of his Lang Ya Sect contribution points to get some heavenly crystals, the amount was not enough. He could not hatch the upper extreme heavenly eagle egg yet.

“Marrying Xue Er would tie me closely to the snowman tribe. We would be sure to establish a marriage agreement. Right now, I already have Lang Ya Sect’s agreement and Chu Du’s alliance agreement, there is also the alliance agreement of the four races, my freedom is greatly limited now. If I add in the marriage agreement, aren’t I just finding problems for myself?”

While Fang Yuan benefited from these alliance agreements, he also had to undergo missions for them in return.

For example, if Lang Ya blessed land was attacked by enemies, Fang Yuan would have to reinforce them and fight to his death if needed.

Lang Ya land spirit followed the rules, because the land spirit was not crafty like humans, it followed the rules of Lang Ya Sect closely and did not restrict Fang Yuan.

But the snowman tribe was different.

They were variant humans, their intelligence was lower than humans. But after being suppressed for so many years, and living pitifully in the northern icy plain, the immense pressure for survival had honed their strong battle strength and keen perception.

If Fang Yuan wanted to marry a snowman, the snowman tribe would do everything they could to squeeze out Fang Yuan’s value!

By then, Fang Yuan would unable to help himself.

“The snowmen and rockmen live under the northern icy plain. The rockmen have the immemorial rock dragon, it has rank eight battle strength, but the snowmen do not. Thus, they want me to marry Xue Er, so that they can also have rank eight battle strength and contest evenly with the rockman tribe.”

Do not look at how cohesive the rockmen and snowmen were when attending to Fang Yuan.

Were they really living in such harmony?

The two sides were living under the icy plain, sharing a tiny area together, how could there not be conflicts? They were two different races after all.

But because of the big picture, they maintained reason and tolerated each other.

One could imagine that the rockman tribe with the immemorial rock dragon would usually win when there were conflicts. The snowmen must have suffered many losses, but they endured it all along.

The rockman tribe had greater status after all.

This could be seen from many small details during the alliance.

For example, the Gu Immortal Shi Zong usually was the first to speak, instead of the snowman Gu Immortals.

“If I marry Xue Er, no, even if I just accept her feelings, it would mean that I am siding with the snowmen. Unavoidably, I would be involved in the conflict between both the rockmen and snowmen.”

Once there were internal conflicts, Xue Er would find Fang Yuan and hope that he would mediate their conflicts, as an ally, he could not reject them.

But the rockman tribe gave Fang Yuan more benefits.

After all, they were trading guts Gu.

How could Fang Yuan ruin his relationship with the rockmen just because of a woman, and cause his gains to be smaller?

These last days, not just Bing Zhuo’s letter, he had also obtain letters from other inkman, snowman, and rockman Gu Immortals.

Including Xue Er.

Their intent was to rope in Fang Yuan.

Rank eight battle strength was simply too alluring!

The reason why Fang Yuan left Northern Plains and went to Eastern Sea was to avoid these Gu Immortals. It also meant that he could avoid many problems in the future.

“I am purely making use of these variant humans. But our relationship is uncontrollably deepening. Once any mishaps happen, I will die along with them. I need to leave and gain freedom, so that I can retreat with ease.” Fang Yuan was well aware of the situation.

Furthermore, Lang Ya land spirit was showing the intention of recruiting Chu Du, this made Fang Yuan feel great threat.

Should Chu Du join, it would greatly affect Fang Yuan’s status in Lang Ya Sect.

The reason why Lang Ya land spirit wanted to recruit Chu Du was also worth considering.

Even though Lang Ya land spirit gave him this mission, Fang Yuan decided to stall it. He was not going to be so stupid as to wholeheartedly try recruiting Chu Du.

“Eastern Sea information path inheritance...” Fang Yuan thought to himself.

This was one of the reasons why he was in Eastern Sea.

If Fang Yuan could obtain a method from this information path inheritance to get rid of the restrictions of the alliance agreements, that would be best.

Fang Yuan would gain the complete initiative within his alliances.

However, this information path inheritance was only his secondary objective, Fang Yuan had another primary goal.

Several days later.

Eastern Sea, turbulent flow sea area.

“Spare me, I surrender!” Liu Qing Yu was kneeling on the ground, he was covered in injuries, he had no will to fight.

He was a rank seven lone immortal, he even collaborated with with three rank six comrades just now.

To think that they would be ambushed in this turbulent flow sea area, the three rank six Gu Immortals that he invited were already dead.

Their enemies were four mysterious Gu Immortals.

Liu Qing Yu was considerably knowledgeable, but he had never heard of these four strong experts in the entire Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world!

These four were all very unique.

The one with the highest cultivation level had rank seven aura, but he was a rockman Gu Immortal.

The other three were rank six Gu Immortals, one was a beautiful and bold female immortal, one was a kindly old man, and one was an ordinary looking immortal zombie.

No matter which one, they were formidable Gu Immortal experts. But the strange thing to Liu Qing Yu was, their leader was not the rockman Gu Immortal or the bold female immortal or the old man, it was the ordinary rank six immortal zombie!

“Oh? Surrendering, hehe, you know your place.” The rank six immortal zombie rubbed his chin, saying as he chuckled.

If Fang Yuan were here, he would know who this person was.

That’s right, it was Ying Wu Xie!

“Hmph, a spineless coward, no wonder he was not my match. We should kill him and give Shi Nu some earth path dao marks.” Hei Lou Lan was covered in orange flames.

The rockman Gu Immortal Shi Nu had no expression, he looked at Ying Wu Xie as he said slowly: “I will listen to master.”

“No, no!” Liu Qing Yu quickly shouted, he had a frantic and helpless expression: “Even though I am a rank seven Gu Immortal, my Immortal Gu are only rank six. However, fairy, you have rank seven Immortal Gu and even so many fire path killer moves, it was no wonder I could not defeat you!”

Ying Wu Xie laughed, waving his hand: “Right now, my Shadow Sect needs members, I will give you a chance to live. Do not resist, I will use an immortal killer move to make the alliance agreement!”

“Thank you lord for sparing my life, thank you lord for sparing my life!” Liu Qing Yu was overjoyed, he was crying as he kowtowed continuously.

Ying Wu Xie’s alliance agreement was extremely strict. But Liu Qing Yu wanted to survive, everything else was secondary.

“It is a soul path method indeed...” Hei Lou Lan observed on the side, Ying Wu Xie used a soul path method to achieve the effects of information path. It was like Fang Yuan’s hundred years harmony, it could unleash the effects of another path.

“From now on, you are a member of Shadow Sect, get up.” After making the alliance agreement, Ying Wu Xie smiled.

“Lord, I am willing to offer my Immortal Gu.” Liu Qing Yu did not get up, he held his two rank six Immortal Gu above his head.

Ying Wu Xie laughed: “I do not care for these two Immortal Gu, you can keep them, in the future, if you perform well, I can grant you rank seven Immortal Gu or even true inheritances, that is not a problem.”

“Thank you, lord, for your kindness!” Liu Qing Yu was overjoyed with tears.

“Speaking of which, this place is so remote, and there are many islands around us, why are you here at this island?” Ying Wu Xie asked, he was suspicious that his movements were exposed.

Liu Qing Yu heard this and smiled bitterly: “Lord, this is all a misunderstanding. I was just trying to find a place to rest. Sigh, I will have to explain from the start. In this turbulent flow sea area, I found the clues to an information path true inheritance...”

It turned out that back then, Liu Qing Yu chased after the blood path demonic immortal, wanting to get his information path inheritance clues. In the end, he killed this person and had no gains, the two other rank seven Gu Immortals became suspicious of him instead.

Thinking about it, he felt that Fang Yuan was the most suspicious, the information path true inheritance clues were likely in his hands.

Liu Qing Yu could not let it go, he brought a group of Gu Immortals and entered turbulent flow sea area secretly, attempting to find the clues or wait for Fang Yuan to arrive.

After hearing Liu Qing Yu’s story, Hei Lou Lan, Ying Wu Xie, and the others smiled.

This Liu Qing Yu was simply too unlucky.

He wanted to find a place to rest, but he ended up going towards Shadow Sect’s secret base instead.

Ying Wu Xie’s expression suddenly changed: “Wait, the Gu Immortal who you were suspicious of earlier, what was his appearance?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1150: Turbulent Flow Sea Battle (1/2)

Liu Qing Yu repeated his words from before.

Ying Wu Xie’s expression turned grim very quickly.

Fang Yuan had used familiar face when traveling from Southern Border to Northern Plains, he had concealed his appearance. But familiar face could not conceal Immortal Gu effects or immortal killer moves.

When he was in Eastern Sea, Fang Yuan had fought with Liu Qing Yu, Tang Song, and Zhou Li, he unavoidably revealed some methods.

Even though Ying Wu Xie did not know Fang Yuan’s appearance at that time, from Liu Qing Yu’s description, he felt a sense of familiarity.

Following his intuition, he probed, and Liu Qing Yu described this opponent in greater detail.

“Flying sword Immortal Gu, sword escape Immortal Gu...” Ying Wu Xie thought to himself.

“Looking at the timing, it matched perfectly.” Ying Wu Xie felt that the Gu Immortal who Liu Qing Yu fought was very likely to be Fang Yuan!

"It is quite coincidental, I actually got information about Fang Yuan like this. Hehe, heaven's will!" Ying Wu Xie raised his head, looking at the sky.

The turbulent flow sea area's sky was covered in clouds and fog the entire time.

At this moment, Ying Wu Xie could feel that beyond these clouds, heaven's will was looking at him closely!

For heaven's will, be it Fang Yuan, who has the sovereign immortal aperture, or Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, who is attempting to defy fate by reviving and reaching the apex again, they were targets to suppress and eliminate.

Of course, in the past, Spectral Soul was the biggest target, but now, Fang Yuan was the one who attracted its attention the most.

But currently, heaven's will was making an arrangement, attempting to lure Fang Yuan and Ying Wu Xie together, so that they would fight each other. This was a method that killed two birds with one stone, it was a plan that saved a lot of effort.

Ying Wu Xie assessed this as he transmitted secretly to Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan was slightly dazed.

She did not find anything wrong earlier because she was not familiar with Flying Sword and Sword Escape.

After reacting, she was a little shocked.

"Ying Wu Xie discovered something so significant, he is actually discussing with me?"

But soon, Hei Lou Lan realized, if she were in Ying Wu Xie's position, she would do the same thing herself to analyze the situation.

Until now, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was still kept in the dark, Shi Nu had absolute loyalty but he was a variant human, he could not think as flexibly.

She herself had the Shadow Sect alliance agreement, she was bound to Ying Wu Xie, she had no choice but to plot together with him.

"Dealing with Fang Yuan..." Hei Lou Lan had complex emotions.

She had a rather complex relationship with Fang Yuan.

They were enemies at first, before becoming allies, but now with a twist of fate, they were enemies again!

Even Hei Lou Lan had to admit it herself, Fang Yuan was a huge help and had great influence on her.

But soon, Hei Lou Lan calmed down and transmitted: "Your analysis makes sense, but you only guessed Fang Yuan's identity, how can you be sure he will come here? Just because of the information path true inheritance? Not only is the information path inheritance's crucial clue gone, even if he obtained it, what does that have to do with us? He might not come here and encounter us."

Ying Wu Xie smiled coldly: "That is because you don't understand heaven's will. Earlier, to obstruct Fang Yuan, heaven's will made a plan, that was to lure Fang Yuan with the information path true inheritance. But Fang Yuan is crafty and vigilant, he did not fall into the trap. He went to Northern Plains without stopping, this was a wise decision. Heaven’s will’s arrangements inside the turbulent flow sea area were completely wasted.”

Ying Wu Xie’s understanding was a little off.

The truth was, Fang Yuan did not sense the information path true inheritance’s clues back then. After all, the clue was concealed in flying sword Immortal Gu.

Of course, even if Fang Yuan found them, with his personality, it would not have slowed down his return to Lang Ya blessed land.

“Right now, Fang Yuan obtained Hei Fan’s true inheritance and has gained immense strength. But he is in Lang Ya Sect, and has recently been added to the four races alliance, he also has an alliance agreement with Chu Du, he has huge needs in the information path aspect. Thus, he is likely to come here, following the true inheritance’s clues to obtain this information path inheritance.” Ying Wu Xie continued.

Undoubtedly, suffering and setbacks were of value in life.

Ying Wu Xie had gone through many difficulties, his mind was sharper and more vigilant now, he had the demeanor of an expert.

Hei Lou Lan was quite familiar with Fang Yuan’s situation.

The intel that Fang Yuan had exposed reached Ying Wu Xie through Sixth Hair.

In order to draw out Hei Lou Lan’s hatred towards Fang Yuan, Ying Wu Xie had told her a portion of the information.

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes burst out with brilliance, she had an understanding: “You mean to say, Liu Qing Yu is a reminder to us from heaven’s will?”

“That’s right. Liu Qing Yu might have chosen this place by coincidence, but he was actually subconsciously influenced by heaven’s will. He purposely chose our island, it is too much of a coincidence. Heaven’s will probably thinks that the trap earlier can no longer affect Fang Yuan, who has gotten much stronger, thus, it wants to make use of us to deal with Fang Yuan!” Ying Wu Xie looked at the sky, showing a cold smile.

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated.

Shadow Sect had opposed heaven’s will for so many years, Ying Wu Xie was naturally aware about heaven’s will’s goals and schemes.

“Then, we can use this chance to ambush Fang Yuan. Aren’t you trying to get back the sovereign immortal body?” Hei Lou Lan transmitted.

Ying Wu Xie turned around, looking at Hei Lou Lan.

The two were secretly transmitting to each other. They did not talk for long, the other three immortals only saw Ying Wu Xie looking at the sky for a while, before he turned around and walked back.

Ying Wu Xie did not speak, he took huge steps, leading the way.

Behind him, Shi Nu, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and Hei Lou Lan followed after.

“Ah.” Liu Qing Yu who was kneeling on the ground was dazed, he quickly got up and followed behind them closely.

“Hei Lou Lan.” Ying Wu Xie suddenly transmitted: “If we can capture Fang Yuan this time, I will grant you freedom.”

Hei Lou Lan’s body and mind shook!

But soon, she reacted, replying: “Only a child would be fooled by that, would you willingly let go of my battle strength?”

“Hahaha, you truly know me well, Lou Lan.” Ying Wu Xie laughed, admitting it openly.

“How will you deal with Fang Yuan? He has rank eight battle strength.” Hei Lou Lan asked.

Ying Wu Xie’s smile faded, he sighed, Hei Lou Lan could hear the helplessness in his tone.

Next, she heard Ying Wu Xie: “I am not going to deal with him, the immemorial upper extreme heavenly eagle is very hard to deal with.”

“No, we can. If we use that secluded domain of heaven and earth, can’t we succeed?” Hei Lou Lan asked.

“You really want him to die? I remember that you have gone through thick and thin before.”

“Hmph, every man for himself, if he dies or is defeated, there are only advantages to me, there are no disadvantages.” Hei Lou Lan showed a cold killing intent.

Ying Wu Xie rejected this alluring suggestion: “Even if we use that place, my goal cannot be achieved. I need to capture Fang Yuan alive, the material needs to be fresh. If we use that place, we can only make the upper extreme heavenly eagle lose its threat temporarily.”

“Furthermore, even if we could, I would not do it.” Ying Wu Xie smiled.

Hei Lou Lan: “Why?”

“Not considering the big picture is simply shortsighted. Like how Fang Yuan did not take the information path inheritance earlier, as long as we save my main body, we will have a great advantage. My memories are limited, if we fight with Fang Yuan now, we will be falling into heaven’s will’s trap. We will leave Eastern Sea! However... before leaving, we can leave behind some arrangements as a present for Fang Yuan. Hehehe.” Ying Wu Xie transmitted a laugh.

A day later.

“I am finally here... turbulent flow sea area.” Fang Yuan stood on a cloud, he looked at this sea area as he sighed.

Rumors said that there was an intense battle between Gu Immortals here.

There were no rank eight experts among the participating Gu Immortals, but there were many rank six and seven Gu Immortals.

Because their battle was too intense, the dao marks carved in this area caused a change in the environment, in the end, a unique place in Eastern Sea, turbulent flow sea area, was created.

Because of this reason, there were many Gu Immortal inheritances hidden inside the turbulent flow sea area, or their wealth left behind after death.

In history, there were lucky people who obtained Gu Immortal inheritances inside the turbulent flow sea area. Even though the lucky people were few, these rumors caused many people to be attracted to this sea area.

Many Eastern Sea Gu Immortals as well as Gu Immortals of Central Continent, Northern Plains and Southern Border would often come to the turbulent flow sea area to search for fortuitous encounters.

Fang Yuan’s gaze swept across the sea water.

The turbulent flow sea area’s water was very unique, the surface was calm, but there were many undercurrents below.

These currents were of all types and forms. They interlinked with one another, they moved in this sea area with absolutely no rhythm or pattern.

Precisely because of this, Gu Immortals called this the turbulent flow sea area.

Fang Yuan looked at the sky again.

The sky had many white clouds, shrouding his vision, he could not see any starlight. Even when the sun was blazing, the sunlight could not penetrate the cloud layers, it only made the place brighter.

When Gu Immortals entered the turbulent flow sea area, they often lost their sense of direction. These cloud layers were one of the causes, because of the clouds, Gu Immortals could not determine their precise location.

It was impossible to get rid of these clouds.

To do that, one was contesting against heaven and earth. Gu Immortals with such abilities were at least rank eight great experts, they were very rare. Paying a huge price to destroy these clouds would also destroy the turbulent flow sea area. To them, it was not worth the effort at all.

Breathing in deeply, Fang Yuan’s aura surged as Immortal Gu aura burst out from within him.

Immortal investigative killer move — Qi Luck Sensation!

This move was obtained from Feng Jun’s inheritance, it used qi luck Immortal Gu as the core, it could sense people who were closely connected by luck to the Gu Immortal user. The closer the distance, the clearer the effects.

“Oh? They are nearby! They are in the turbulent flow sea area?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1151: Turbulent Flow Sea Battle (2/2)

Five Gu Immortals were moving along the surface of the sea.

“Hehehe, with the appropriate arrangement, as long as Fang Yuan falls for it, he will suffer. Even if we cannot trap him, we can greatly delay his growth.” Ying Wu Xie felt a little smug.

Fang Yuan’s development was too fast, it was terrifying!

Heaven’s will was trying all means possible to kill him, it even used the snowmen and rockmen.

They had to suppress him.

Earlier, Fang Yuan was in Lang Ya blessed land, Ying Wu Xie could not do anything. Now that he was coming over, they were going to teach him a lesson.

Of course, they could not act personally.

They had a huge responsibility, he had the most important task to rebuild Shadow Sect!

“This is good, we can suppress Fang Yuan while not falling into heaven’s will’s trap. Hmm?!” Suddenly, Ying Wu Xie’s gaze froze.

“Be careful, there is a desolate beast in the sea, it is moving rapidly, it is very strange!” Ying Wu Xie frowned, reminding them.

“Merely a desolate beast.” Rank seven Gu Immortal Shi Nu attacked.

Boom!

Huge ripples and waves appeared on the water surface, as Fang Yuan emerged and showed himself.

“I finally found you... Ying Wu Xie!” Fang Yuan’s mouth opened, revealing a ruthless smile.

The five immortals were stunned, this was the first time they were seeing Fang Yuan. Because Fang Yuan was vigilant, before setting off on this trip, he had already changed his appearance.

“You are?” Suddenly, Ying Wu Xie’s body shook.

He used luck inspection Immortal Gu, seeing that Fang Yuan’s tall luck was exactly the same as his and Hei Lou Lan’s luck.

Connect luck Immortal Gu!

Ying Wu Xie had used Connect Luck on Hei Lou Lan. And Hei Lou Lan was luck connected to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s appearance could change, but his luck was unconcealed.

Seeing his luck, Ying Wu Xie realized that this was Fang Yuan!

“Quick, the ancient battle formation!” He shouted loudly, panicking.

The other three immortals had coordination, they subconsciously acted, using the ancient battle formation, Omni-directional Travel.

Swoosh, the four immortals disappeared completely.

Only one person was left behind.

Liu Qing Yu: “...”

Fang Yuan: “...”

The two looked at each other, falling into silence.

Ancient battle formation — Omni-directional Travel.

It could allow Ying Wu Xie and the rest to escape from Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals, it naturally had incredible effect.

Fang Yuan was seeing it for the first time as well.

Thus, he was speechless.

Even though he had some guesses, after seeing it personally, he still felt quite shocked.

"This method might be strong, but as long as I have qi luck sensation, I will be able to find them. Now, I should kill this person first!"

Fang Yuan thought as his attention went over to Liu Qing Yu.

Liu Qing Yu: "..."

Seeing Fang Yuan's cold gaze filled with killing intent, he subconsciously flew backwards.

His mood was even worse than Fang Yuan!

He had tried so hard to obtain the information path inheritance, yet it got snatched away.

After killing the blood path demonic immortal, the crucial clue was lost.

He returned to the turbulent flow sea area to wait, but he encountered Ying Wu Xie, his helpers were all killed, and he had to surrender.

So be it if he surrendered, so be it if the alliance agreement was overbearing, he admitted his loss! So be it if he had to call Ying Wu Xie his boss! For his life, Liu Qing Yu was determined to become a core member of this group called Shadow Sect.

However, when leaving Eastern Sea, a person suddenly appeared!

And next, Ying Wu Xie ran away!

He ran!!

Not only did he run, the other three Gu Immortals also ran.

And they ran so quickly!

In literally one moment, they vanished without a trace!

"This is absurd!" Liu Qing Yu really wanted to swear.

But he could not.

He was under the alliance agreement, he had to be polite to Ying Wu Xie at all times.

If he cursed, he would face the backlash of the information path dao marks.

Liu Qing Yu's current mood was simply terrible, it was at rock bottom!

He did not recognize Fang Yuan, because Fang Yuan was only rank six now. But Liu

Qing Yu sensed that Fang Yuan was a Gu Immortal that was rank six as well.

This time, Fang Yuan had casually changed his appearance, in terms of aura, he did not conceal anything. His main goal was to kill Ying Wu Xie and the rest. Everyone knew each other and their cultivation level, his aura was not too important.

This caused Liu Qing Yu to feel deeply aggrieved.

“Against a rank six Gu Immortal, why are you running?!”

“Running for what?!”

“We have two rank sevens and three rank sixes, we are all experts! Why are you running?”

“Ah! Why did you run?”

Liu Qing Yu screamed internally, furious.

But he could not get any answers.

He had joined Shadow Sect for too short of a time, Ying Wu Xie did not expect Fang Yuan to come so quickly, he did not tell Liu Qing Yu some details.

If Ying Wu Xie told Liu Qing Yu that the reason why they fled was because Fang Yuan had the rank eight battle strength — upper extreme heavenly eagle!

Then Liu Qing Yu would not scream like this internally, he would definitely flee more quickly than Ying Wu Xie and Hei Lou Lan.

Oh, no.

He could not outrun them.

But in terms of effort, he would definitely exceed them.

Rank eight battle strength was no joke, killing them was as easy as killing an ant!

“This is the deterrence of rank eight.” At this time, Fang Yuan had a lot of insight.

Ying Wu Xie and the rest fled, they were wise and resolute. If their positions were reversed, Fang Yuan would escape too.

Earlier in the northern icy plain, he did not flee, that was because Fang Yuan could not begin to escape! It was not that he did not want to.

There was no shame in running away.

For an old demon like Fang Yuan, temporary retreat was a brilliant tactic in battle.

However, Ying Wu Xie and the rest did not know that the upper extreme heavenly eagle had died already, it had returned to being an unhatched egg.

Even though Fang Yuan told this to Lang Ya land spirit, he had asked him to not leak out this secret.

Thus, Sixth Hair only obtained intel about the earlier part, he could not tell Ying Wu Xie about the most crucial intel that was kept secret.

At this moment, Ying Wu Xie and the rest left, only Liu Qing Yu was left.

This situation was very good for Fang Yuan.

Originally, Fang Yuan was a bit concerned in chasing after them, after all, they had an advantage in numbers, there were two rank seven Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan recognized Liu Qing Yu, but this was the first time he saw Shi Nu.

Now, once Fang Yuan's identity was exposed, Ying Wu Xie ran away, only Liu Qing Yu stayed.

It was correct to escape.

Trying to probe a rank eight was courting death. During the grey cloud battle puppet killer move, Fang Yuan did not dare to probe the immemorial rock dragon as well.

Right now, Fang Yuan was considering killing Liu Qing Yu first.

Eliminating him would weaken their combined strength, this was a good chance to take them down, if Fang Yuan could not make use of it, he would definitely get hit by lightning.

"After killing him, I would be able to use soul search and obtain intel regarding Ying Wu Xie and the rest!" Thinking of this, Fang Yuan attacked.

Sword mark targeting death!

At once, he used an extraordinary sword path killer move.

Even though Liu Qing Yu was screaming internally, he was still filled with immense wariness.

The logic was simple, he was something who made Ying Wu Xie and the rest so fearful, even though he was a rank six Gu Immortal, he was definitely dangerous.

Liu Qing Yu was already completely focused against this huge foe.

At this moment, sword light flew out, Liu Qing Yu quickly moved, dodging Fang Yuan's attack.

"Sure enough, this guy is also a rank six Gu Immortal with rank seven Immortal Gu. Sword path?" Liu Qing Yu thought bitterly, he only had two rank six Immortal Gu, he had lost to Hei Lou Lan earlier because of this.

After some rounds of fighting, Liu Qing Yu was in a disadvantaged position.

He was a lone cultivator, even though his cultivation level was higher, with rank seven cultivation level, he had only two rank six Immortal Gu, his immortal killer moves were also deduced by himself, they were not exemplary, and few in number too.

After another dozen rounds, Fang Yuan had almost completely understood Liu Qing Yu's methods.

He only used the same few moves over and over again, how could he not learn everything?

Liu Qing Yu was covered in sweat, he was in a sad state.

Even though Fang Yuan could not use blood asset Immortal Gu temporarily, he had other time path defensive methods, he could easily attack or defend, he had an easy time.

His strength had grown too quickly!

In the past, Liu Qing Yu chased Fang Yuan and caused him to run, but now, Fang Yuan was suppressing him instead.

Even though he had rank six cultivation level, in terms of battle strength, he far surpassed Liu Qing Yu.

“No wonder Ying Wu Xie ran, this is a monster! He is unbelievably powerful, and by the looks of it, he has not used his full strength yet.” Liu Qing Yu lost his motivation as he fought.

He really wanted to surrender.

But now was different, he had Shadow Sect’s alliance agreement, he could not surrender to the enemy.

He had only one option left, that was to fight to the death!

“Follow me if you dare.” Liu Qing Yu desperately avoided Fang Yuan’s attack as he turned into a green rainbow, escaping towards the turbulent flow sea area.

“Too naive.” Fang Yuan sneered, he pointed at Liu Qing Yu’s escape route.

Immortal killer move — Year Beast Summoning!

A snake year beast tore through space, suddenly appearing and blocking Liu Qing Yu.

Liu Qing Yu was obstructed and could not escape anymore.

Fang Yuan used sword escape Immortal Gu behind him and easily caught up to him, attacking.

Liu Qing Yu was struck, his life was over, his body self-detonated as his soul broke into several pieces.

Fang Yuan quickly acted, but he only salvaged a portion.

Liu Qing Yu’s immortal aperture also fell into the sea, sinking, as the heaven and earth qi surged into it, a blessed land was formed.

His remnant soul was dissipating, it seemed to be Shadow Sect’s method, Fang Yuan tried several methods but did not seem to be able to stop the soul from self-destructing.

Fang Yuan quickly soul searched.

Dozens of memory fragments were seen by him.

Fang Yuan was quite lucky, he saw the scene of Liu Qing Yu and Ying Wu Xie setting up the trap.

“Oh? It seems that after Ying Wu Xie found out I have rank eight battle strength, he knew he could not fight me, so he set up a trap to harm me. He has truly grown.”

The other fragments were useless.

Soon, these remnant soul fragments dissipated completely.

Liu Qing Yu’s body also turned into pulp, it was hard to collect it. Already, all of his dao marks had returned to his immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan let out a sigh.

He wanted to absorb Liu Qing Yu’s dao marks into himself.

But Gu Immortals in the five regions were not so easy to loot.

After some commotion, a blessed land was completely formed from the immortal aperture.

The entrance opened.

This was a rare chance to enter the blessed land!

If he missed it, to enter it later, there would be much greater obstacles.

In the past, when Fang Yuan placed Star Form blessed land and Ge Pi blessed land, he also used these chances to enter the blessed land.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1152: Obtaining Five Light Mountain

Quack, quack!

Inside Liu Qing Yu’s blessed land, there was a dorky duck calling out to Fang Yuan.

This was the land spirit that was formed using heavenly power after Liu Qing Yu’s death.

Appearances of land spirits differed drastically, a duck land spirit was nothing peculiar.

Fang Yuan listened attentively.

Even though all he heard was the duck quacking, in his mind, it was translated into words that Fang Yuan could understand the meaning of.

In fact, Hei Fan’s heavenly spirit was a brass bell, but it could communicate with people as well. Unfortunately, before Hei Fan died, he had allowed his immortal aperture to absorb a fragment of immemorial azure heaven, it caused heaven’s will to enter and caused his heavenly spirit to lose intelligence.

“The condition of inheriting this Qing Yu blessed land and becoming its owner is actually this...” Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed, he showed a look of joy and surprise.

Even though Liu Qing Yu was killed by Fang Yuan, his obsession was not to find Fang Yuan for revenge. He was not trying to locate Ying Wu Xie and find trouble with him either.

It was — the whereabouts of the crucial clue to the information path inheritance.

“The clue to the information path inheritance is carved in flying sword Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan took out flying sword Immortal Gu, showing it to the duck land spirit, explaining the situation to it.

A moment later, the duck land spirit circled around Fang Yuan, using its beak to peck Fang Yuan’s white shoes, it was very fond of him.

Fang Yuan was now the owner of the blessed land!

However, this blessed land was quite desolate.

It was not that Liu Qing Yu had poor foundation, but after he joined Shadow Sect, the resources inside his immortal aperture were all taken away by Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie did not take Liu Qing Yu’s two Immortal Gu, that was because he wanted to preserve his battle strength and make him work like a slave.

But Ying Wu Xie took away his cultivation resources, this was leaving him no way out, in the future, when Liu Qing Yu wanted to continue cultivating, he would lack resources, he could only rely on Shadow Sect.

Fang Yuan only had to think for a bit before understanding this.

As for Liu Qing Yu’s Gu worms, they had already been destroyed.

This applied to the two Immortal Gu and the mortal Gu, nothing was left for Fang Yuan.

“What is left in this blessed land?” Fang Yuan looked around, asking the land spirit as he frowned.

Qing Yu blessed land was completely ransacked, it was left in a state similar to Hei Fan grotto-heaven when Fang Yuan took over it.

At this moment, Fang Yuan could somewhat feel what Chu Du had gone through at that time.

The duck land spirit: “Quack, quack, quack!”

Fang Yuan turned around: “Bring me there.”

The duck land spirit could not teleport, it brought Fang Yuan to the destination.

A rainbow colored mountain which was neither tall nor short was displayed before Fang Yuan.

The mountain rocks were giving off green, red, yellow, blue, and white lights. There were no trees on the mountain, but there were many different types of grass. These types of grass had ten colors, they shone together, they were more beautiful than a sea of flowers, it was a dazzling sight.

“Five Light Mountain, ten colored grass.” Fang Yuan muttered.

These were resources that light path Gu Immortals often cultivated.

The special environment would cause this mountain to produce large numbers of light path mortal Gu.

Evidently, this Five Light Mountain was heavily developed by Liu Qing Yu, it was quite big.

“Ying Wu Xie does not have pulling mountain Immortal Gu, he had no methods to move this mountain, he could only leave this here.” Fang Yuan guessed the truth.

Trees had tree roots, mountains had mountain roots too.

Mountains were not easy to move, using brute strength would only cause the mountain to collapse.

And methods to move mountains were very rare in the world.

Back then, when Fang Yuan was able to move Luo Po Valley, even the rank eight Gu Immortal Prince Feng Xian was shocked.

Even though Ying Wu Xie inherited a portion of Shadow Sect’s wealth, he lacked a method to move Five Light Mountain.

He originally had pulling mountain Immortal Gu, but in those transactions, it was sold to Fang Yuan.

When he saw this Five Light Mountain and could not move it, he must have felt annoyed.

All in all, this Five Light Mountain was now Fang Yuan’s property.

Without hesitation, Fang Yuan used pulling mountain Immortal Gu and moved this Five Light Mountain into his own sovereign immortal aperture.

He placed this mountain into Mini Southern Border.

Mini Southern Border had many mountains, it was a place with rich earth path dao marks to begin with. With the addition of Five Light Mountain, all of the mountains from Hei Fan grotto-heaven were outmatched, Immortal Succession Mountain could only become the second tallest mountain.

After all, Immortal Succession Mountain was used as an inheritance ground, the inheritances were all gone now. Five Light Mountain was now the biggest mountain in Mini Southern Border.

“I had some gains at last.” Fang Yuan let out a breath of air.

If he did not have Five Light Mountain, his losses would be severe.

Even though he won this battle, from Fang Yuan’s perspective, victory had no value, the loot after winning did.

It was a pity, even after taking Five Light Mountain, Fang Yuan concluded that in this battle against Liu Qing Yu, he still made losses.

It could not be helped.

He was using green grape immortal essence, and most of his Immortal Gu were rank seven, he also had to use many immortal killer moves.

In every battle, his green grape immortal essence expenditure was severe!

Of course, blessed lands could annex each other.

However, Liu Qing Yu cultivated light path, this blessed land was a light path blessed land. Fang Yuan’s light path attainment level was only ordinary, this was a rank seven blessed land, he could not annex it.

In the following period, Fang Yuan asked the duck land spirit, he obtained a lot of intel.

The duck land spirit still remembered many details from when it was alive, this allowed Fang Yuan to become quite aware of the trap that Ying Wu Xie set.

And also regarding the information path true inheritance, Fang Yuan also obtained some information.

After obtaining the intel, Fang Yuan left behind some mortal Gu for the duck land spirit, and ordered that without his permission, it was never to open the blessed land’s entrance. If any enemies attacked, it had to inform Fang Yuan using treasure yellow heaven immediately.

Liu Qing Yu’s rank seven red date immortal essence was still left behind, Fang Yuan did not take them, he gave them to the duck land spirit.

“Quack, quack.” The duck land spirit had tears in its eyes, it flapped one wing, saying goodbye to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not look back, he left the blessed land.

The blessed land’s entrance closed after he left.

“This rank seven blessed land, as long as the entrance is shut and it is hidden well, it should not be discovered.”

“However, if heaven’s will wants to harm me, it will have many ways of dealing with this blessed land.”

“It would be great if I can keep this rank seven blessed land, but even if I can’t, it is fine. It has too little value anyway.”

Fang Yuan did not have the time to raise his light path attainment level, and his cultivation level was still far from reaching rank seven.

To continue to pursue Ying Wu Xie?

Fang Yuan was hesitant.

From the duck land spirit, he had obtained a lot of information, he had a clearer understanding of their strength.

Ying Wu Xie had four Gu Immortals including himself. A rank seven Gu rockman Gu Immortal named Shi Nu, he cultivated earth path. Hei Lou Lan was now a strength and fire path cultivator. Tai Bai Yun Sheng had lost his time path Immortal Gu, but he now had cloud path Immortal Gu, he had originally been secondarily cultivating cloud path.

As for Ying Wu Xie, he still had a strength path immortal zombie body. He still used soul path Immortal Gu, he had the lowest cultivation level, but his battle strength was likely to be the highest or second highest.

If Fang Yuan had the immemorial upper extreme heavenly eagle, he would pursue them immediately!

But now, the upper extreme heavenly eagle was just an egg, even though Fang Yuan had many Immortal Gu, looking at it, with his strength and intelligence, against Ying Wu Xie’s group, it was difficult to predict the winner.

“How long has it been! Ying Wu Xie and the rest have already gained so much strength, it is truly out of my expectations.”

Fang Yuan’s growth shocked Ying Wu Xie and the rest. But Ying Wu Xie and the rest also grew at a rate that shocked Fang Yuan.

He had originally thought that Ying Wu Xie and the others had suffered a huge setback after the transactions. To think that not long after, they had already recovered.

Shadow Sect was already in shambles, but it was still not to be underestimated.

Ying Wu Xie and the others were truly huge threats from Fang Yuan’s perspective!

Because of sovereign immortal fetus Gu, Shadow Sect and Fang Yuan had an unresolvable conflict.

Ying Wu Xie was not dealing with Fang Yuan now, it was because saving his main body was more important, he was making a wise decision.

Fang Yuan did not deal with Ying Wu Xie earlier because he had insufficient strength, he needed to deal with the earthly calamities and try to develop his sovereign immortal aperture.

Now that he had Hei Fan’s true inheritance, with enough strength, he came to find Ying Wu Xie straight away.

Once Ying Wu Xie saved his main body, Fang Yuan knew that he would no longer have any chance of victory. Because the other party was one of the ten venerables, even though he had died before, Fang Yuan was not his match.

Of course, there was still a crucial point.

That was wisdom Gu.

Wisdom Gu was not lost, it was currently in Lang Ya blessed land. Fang Yuan regained his former strength path immortal zombie body, there was just one key point, he was afraid that inside this immortal zombie body, there was a trap set by Ying Wu Xie which targeted his soul.

Fang Yuan did not dare to act rashly.

He had thought of using other Gu Immortals’ souls and putting them inside the immortal zombie body to test it out.

But there were many flaws with this.

Firstly, he had to undergo such experiments secretly, he could not take out his immortal zombie body openly, this would reveal many secrets to Lang Ya land spirit.

Secondly, even if he used Gu Immortal souls to test it, they were unreliable. Because Fang Yuan was not clear if Ying Wu Xie had set up traps that targeted weak or strong souls, or was it a trap specifically targeting otherworldly demons?

The problem of using wisdom Gu was the greatest restriction towards Fang Yuan’s development.

Thus, Fang Yuan thought of the plan in Eastern Sea.

His main objective was to deal with Ying Wu Xie.

If he succeeded, he might be able to check from Ying Wu Xie whether this immortal zombie body had any traps. If there was a trap, how would he resolve it?

Ying Wu Xie wanted to suppress Fang Yuan's growth speed, but Fang Yuan was also afraid that Ying Wu Xie would grow too quickly and save his main body.

Thus, when he came to Eastern Sea now, the information path inheritance was secondary.

He went straight for the main objective.

Ying Wu Xie was his main goal!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1153: Fighting Across Vast Distance

Ahead was a deep blue veil, it completely covered the visions of Ying Wu Xie and the others.

Blue water regional wall!

Between the five regions, there were regional walls, they were like thin membrane which shielded the region.

Blue water regional wall was the protective membrane of Eastern Sea.

The turbulent flow sea area was very close to blue water regional wall to begin with, precisely because of this, when Fang Yuan was on the journey from Southern Border to Northern Plains, when he got close to the turbulent flow sea area, he encountered Liu Qing Yu and the rest.

Ying Wu Xie and the other immortals used Omni-directional Travel to directly reach this place.

“Are we leaving again?” Hei Lou Lan sighed.

“Who was that person earlier?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng questioned.

“An enemy, a strong enemy, an irreconcilable enemy! Don't look at his rank six cultivation level, he has rank eight battle strength.” Ying Wu Xie looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng, choosing to expose some information to him.

Hearing this Tai Bai Yun Sheng breathed in sharply, he shouted in disbelief: “Rank eight battle strength?!”

Hei Lou Lan pretended to be shocked too: “No wonder we had to retreat.”

Shi Nu had no expression.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng suddenly thought of something, he showed sadness on his face: “Sigh! Since he has rank eight battle strength, Liu Qing Yu is finished. It is a pity.”

“Dying for Shadow Sect is his greatest honor.” Shi Nu snorted, saying in disdain.

“Let’s go, since he can chase us, we should increase our distance. That upper extreme heavenly eagle is an immemorial desolate beast that can roam the nine heavens, it is likely to be a life form from the immemorial nine heavens, it can travel in the five regional walls freely.” Hei Lou Lan transmitted secretly, reminding Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie looked at her deeply, replying: “Don’t worry, I have already checked the historical records in Northern Plains. Fang Yuan’s upper extreme heavenly eagle came from Hei Fan, and the upper extreme heavenly eagle that Hei Fan had was raised in Northern Plains. If it enters the five regional walls, it would face suppression as well. We are quite safe now at the border of the regional wall.”

“Is that so?” Hei Lou Lan was stunned, before showing an expression of relief.

“Where are we going now? We cannot go to Central Continent, are we going to Southern Border to work on the rescue?” Hei Lou Lan asked.

Ying Wu Xie smiled, he did not enter the blue water regional wall, instead, he used his immortal essence as aura of Gu worms burst out from within.

His entire body was floating in the air, he turned around and looked in the direction of the turbulent flow sea area.

Ripples appeared below his feet, making a soft sound.

The cold and wet sea breeze blew on the four Gu Immortals’ faces.

“Wait.” Ying Wu Xie said one word in reply to Hei Lou Lan.

“Wait for what?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng was confused.

“Wait for the enemy.” Ying Wu Xie said.

The rest of the three Gu Immortals looked at each other, not understanding why.

Since they retreated earlier, why were they waiting for him now? That person had rank eight battle strength, why were they waiting for him? Waiting for him to kill them?

Hei Lou Lan’s expression changed: “I see!”

“See what?” Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly asked, he was extremely lost.

Shi Nu was expressionless, but his gaze also revealed curiosity.

Hei Lou Lan smiled: “Don’t you find it strange? How did he know our location? When chasing us, why did he have such precise knowledge of our whereabouts?”

This time, even Shi Nu’s expression changed.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s tone became lower: “Hei Lou Lan, you mean to say, we have a traitor? impossible, how can the four of us... unless, that Liu Qing Yu is a spy? Wait! He went under an alliance agreement to join us, could the alliance agreement be exploited?”

“The probability of a traitor is small.” Ying Wu Xie shook his head, replying.

He looked at Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Even though Tai Bai Yun Sheng was kept in the dark, he was also under an alliance agreement from Ying Wu Xie, he could not become a traitor.

“The most probable reason is, he has an investigative method that can track our locations.” Ying Wu Xie said.

“These last days, we have been staying in our base, we rarely went out.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng frowned.

Hei Lou Lan smiled: “Gu Immortal methods are unfathomably vast in number, some are incredibly brilliant, how much do we actually know?”

“That’s true.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng nodded.

Hei Lou Lan continued: “If we cannot find a way to counter it, no matter where we go, that enemy will find us, it is only a matter of time.”

“Thus, lord decided to stay here and not enter the regional wall. Lord is waiting for the other party to use his investigative killer move. I see!” Shi Nu suddenly realized.

Actually, a lot of information was only known to Ying Wu Xie.

At this moment, countless thoughts were forming and colliding in Ying Wu Xie’s mind.

Even though he was a strength path immortal zombie and could not think well, he had lots of methods to bypass this flaw.

Ying Wu Xie was rapidly thinking now!

“What method is Fang Yuan using to find my location?”

“I came to Eastern Sea secretly, how did the intel leak? Is he able to find my location in Northern Plains, across two regional walls?”

“That is impossible! Even Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals could not deduce anything after I used my Gu formation to conceal my traces.”

“No matter what is inside Hei Fan’s true inheritance, he would not be able to do this.”

Heaven’s will!

Ying Wu Xie had an answer in his mind.

“Since I can be plotted against by heaven’s will, gaining its reminder regarding Fang Yuan’s intel, would Fang Yuan also receive the same information about me?”

This was very possible.

But Ying Wu Xie was not satisfied with this answer.

“If at this time, the person in my situation is not me but Fang Yuan, what would he do? What would he consider?”

“He would consider the worst possible situation.”

“And what was the worst possible situation?”

Ying Wu Xie asked himself, and had answer — “The other party has an investigative killer move that can pass regional walls to confirm my location.”

Ying Wu Xie smiled, how could that be possible?

But suddenly, his smile froze.

He thought of a possibility!

Luck path!

Fang Yuan had the most important clue all along. It was that their lucks were all interconnected.

Connect luck Immortal Gu!

Back then, Ying Wu Xie had no choice, he could only sell this Immortal Gu in treasure yellow heaven.

After transacting with Fang Yuan, Ying Wu Xie obtained the Gu refinement materials he needed, when treasure yellow heaven opened, he took back connect luck Immortal Gu.

Even though Fang Yuan had a new body, Connect Luck’s effect also targeted his soul. Thus, his luck connection to Hei Lou Lan and the rest was still in effect.

Ying Wu Xie gained a lot of information from Shadow Sect regarding how to resist heaven’s will, there was one point — Fate is hard to defy, but luck can be exploited.

Using luck, one could deal with heaven’s will effectively.

Who had better luck?

Undoubtedly, it was Fang Yuan who owned dog shit luck Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan had Dog Shit Luck, Ying Wu Xie knew this clearly. Sixth Hair, who was in Lang Ya Sect, was not to be forgotten.

Thus, Ying Wu Xie used Connect Luck and connected his own luck with Hei Lou Lan.

Even though Hei Lou Lan was unwilling to, she could not resist.

This way, Ying Wu Xie and Fang Yuan truly had their luck connected.

“If he realizes this relationship and uses a luck path method, even if we are in two separate regions, he can still sense me, that is possible.”

“Is it luck path?”

Right at this moment, Ying Wu Xie’s body shook.

He saw it!

Using luck inspection Immortal Gu, he saw that at this moment, the luck above him and Hei Lou Lan’s head was shaking slightly.

“As expected... a luck path method. Impressive, Fang Yuan. To think that you even made use of the fact that we have Connect Luck, and found your way to us. It is a pity, I have understood your method already.”

Ying Wu Xie’s eyes flickered brightly.

Even though he knew about Fang Yuan’s method, Ying Wu Xie could not break the luck connection.

He did not have break luck Immortal Gu.

However, he had a lot of soul path methods, he could influence and interfere with the luck.

He tried them one by one, but the effect was not good.

The luck was still shaking.

In fact, even if he was concealed, there was still Hei Lou Lan.

Unlike Liu Qing Yu, Hei Lou Lan could not be thrown away easily.

She had huge value, once they lost her, they could not even use the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel. Thus, Ying Wu Xie quickly gave up this thought.

“Then, enter an immortal aperture?”

Ying Wu Xie entered Shi Nu’s immortal aperture, and he was surprised to find out that in conjunction with his soul path methods, the luck on top of his head stopped shaking.

He ordered Hei Lou Lan to enter Shi Nu’s immortal aperture as well.

Next, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Shi Nu entered the blue water regional wall, quickly vanishing from sight.

Fang Yuan had just come out of Qing Yu blessed land.

Luck path investigative killer move — Qi Luck Sensation!

He activated his immortal killer move, at once, he sensed several locations.

Eastern Sea, Western Desert, Southern Border.

Among which, Eastern Sea had the clearest sensation and highest number of people.

Qi luck sensation had a huge investigative range, but the effect was not very outstanding. If not for Connect Luck, Fang Yuan could not pass regions in investigation.

“They are at the border of blue water regional wall, this ancient battle formation is actually so amazing?”

“Hmph! Even if victory is hard to obtain, I will pursue you, even if I cannot kill you, I will weaken you. As long as I prevent you from saving Spectral Soul’s main body, I would be victorious.”

“Strange, why did they stop?”

“Hmm?!”

Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s expression changed, he showed shock.

In his senses, two people had suddenly vanished.

“Oh? He sensed it so quickly?” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

This way, he could not pursue them.

"But as long as your luck is connected, you will be threatened by my killer move. I have the initiative, I can use this killer move from time to time, and check your location. But you need to be wary of me at all times, you will have to pay a bigger price than me."

"This will cause a battle of attrition between us, but if you break the luck connection, hehe, isn't that just what I want?"

"Forget it, I should get the good stuff inside the turbulent flow sea area first."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1154: Immortal Hua Die

Since he could not locate them, Fang Yuan wisely chose to give up on pursuing them.

Ever since reviving, this was the second time Fang Yuan was up against Shadow Sect. The first time, Ying Wu Xie had no choice but to undergo transactions with Fang Yuan, in the end, Fang Yuan took great advantage of it.

In the second contest, Fang Yuan only had a slight edge. Even though Fang Yuan's strength had grown immensely due to Hei Fan's true inheritance, in the end, he did not achieve his goals, he only killed one member of Shadow Sect, he slightly weakened Ying Wu Xie and the rest.

Fang Yuan was growing fast, but Ying Wu Xie was also increasing in strength!

And Fang Yuan's growth was uncertain and unstable. After all, benefits like Hei Fan's true inheritance were once in a thousand year encounters, they were not easy to get.

Conversely, Ying Wu Xie's growth in strength was very steady.

Because he could go and obtain Shadow Sect's inheritances in all five regions, these originally belonged to him, they were reliable and predictable.

Based on this point, it was wise of Fang Yuan to kill them preemptively.

If he did not use this chance to act, the disparity between them would grow more obvious. Once Spectral Soul was successfully rescued, Fang Yuan's doomsday would arrive.

Ying Wu Xie's immediate retreat was shameless, but it was the wisest and most resolute choice.

For Ying Wu Xie, as long as he continued to gather Shadow Sect's remnant forces, he would grow rapidly in strength. Accumulating them, he eventually would grow to become quite powerful!

In the turbulent sea area, even though both sides did not fight, they had competed against each other across a vast distance.

Fang Yuan obtained a lot of information regarding Ying Wu Xie and the rest, he even saw the ancient battle formation, Omni-directional Travel, as well as Ying Wu Xie, Hei Lou Lan, and the others’ situations.

Meanwhile, Ying Wu Xie identified Fang Yuan’s investigative killer move, even though he only resolved it temporarily, and did not solve the problem, his advancement was not halted, his plan could still continue smoothly.

Fang Yuan and Ying Wu Xie were bound to engage in a battle of life and death.

But now was not the time, Ying Wu Xie chose to retreat.

One day, between Fang Yuan and Ying Wu Xie, one would die. Their enmity was far from resolved.

Fang Yuan turned around, going back to the turbulent flow sea area.

Vast clouds and turbulent sea water, it was a chaotic sight.

Fang Yuan was about to go in, when a female immortal suddenly came from the west, calling out: “Please wait.”

Fang Yuan turned around, only to see that this woman was dressed in a raiment, her sleeves were fluttering, she wore light pink. Her eyes were clear and shiny, she was extremely beautiful.

Immediately, Fang Yuan stopped moving, his eyebrows raised as he waited for the female immortal to arrive: “So it is Immortal Hua Die. I wonder why you called out to me?”

Immortal Hua Die smiled, her tender pink lips parted to show her pearl-like teeth: “I am ashamed, you know my name but I am unaware of your name?”

“I am Chu Ying.” Fang Yuan casually said a name, his current appearance was disguised as well.

Chu Ying, it sounded like remove shadow 1 .

Even though Fang Yuan’s goal was not achieved this time, Fang Yuan was determined to eliminate Shadow Sect, with a firmer attitude now.

“Chu Ying, I saw that you were about to enter the turbulent flow sea area, I have a suggestion, if it works, it will benefit you too.” Immortal Hua Die said.

“Please speak.” Fang Yuan smiled, having a warm attitude.

In his mind, he was thinking: If he killed this Immortal Hua Die, would the chances of success be high?

She was a beautiful woman, but to Fang Yuan’s heart, she was better off as part of his dao mark accumulation.

Fang Yuan knew a bit about Immortal Hua Die’s information. She was a transformation path Gu Immortal from Eastern Sea, she had rank six cultivation level and had passed two heavenly tribulations.

In terms of battle strength, looking at her records, she was at the peak of rank six.

For Fang Yuan, that was not a problem.

Transformation path!

The important thing was this.

Currently, Fang Yuan was a transformation path grandmaster, he had quite a few transformation path dao marks, but there was nothing wrong with accumulating more.

Immortal Hua Die smiled too.

She felt that even though Fang Yuan had an unimpressive appearance, he behaved gently and politely, he was not a frenzied demonic path Gu Immortal, he was likely to be a lone immortal like herself.

If she knew what Fang Yuan was thinking, who knew how she would feel.

“Even though I cannot set up a battlefield killer move, my battle strength should be superior to her’s. But Immortal Hua Die has a close relationship with Miao Ming Shen, how confident am I in killing her?” Fang Yuan was considering the possibility.

Miao Ming Shen was a rank seven expert in Eastern Sea, his status was similar to that of Qin Bai Sheng before awakening his memories.

Most importantly, Miao Ming Shen was a space path Gu Immortal who had a method to expand the size of immortal apertures. As a result, many Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, especially lone immortals, sought his help.

After all, the space of an immortal aperture was limited, many Gu Immortals had to choose carefully when cultivating resources. Miao Ming Shen could expand the immortal aperture, it could provide a lot of convenience and help to these Gu Immortals.

And Miao Ming Shen himself was an ambitious person, he was very good at building relationships, he had a lot of charisma. Thus, around him, there were a group of Gu Immortals with common interests.

This group had four people. With Miao Ming Shen as the core, and Immortal Hua Die, Feng Jiang, and Gui Qi Ye as his followers.

Among them, Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang had rank six cultivation level, Gui Qi Ye and Miao Ming Shen were rank seven, but the latter had the greatest battle strength.

If Fang Yuan killed Immortal Hua Die, he would become enemies with the other three.

Miao Ming Shen had a huge network and knew many people, a lot of Eastern Sea Gu Immortals wanted to be friendly with him. Even super forces refused to offend him. After all, they might need his help one day.

If Miao Ming Shen and Fang Yuan were enemies, he would fully use his network and call upon lots of Eastern Sea Gu Immortals to push aside Fang Yuan.

But so what?

Fang Yuan had familiar face, he could freely change his identity, so what if it was Miao Ming Shen!

As long as it was not a rank eight Gu Immortal.

“However, if I kill Immortal Hua Die, familiar face cannot defend me from wisdom path deductions, my identity might get exposed.”

Familiar face was not all-powerful.

In the past, when Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable used this method to deceive two rank eight Gu Immortals, he had ensured that they did not have investigative methods against it.

Even though this was an amazing story, it made others alert, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable could not replicate this glorious event in the future.

Not long ago, Fang Yuan and Ying Wu Xie had met.

Ying Wu Xie used luck inspection Immortal Gu to observe Fang Yuan’s luck and discern his identity, before retreating immediately.

Just rank six luck inspection Immortal Gu could make familiar face ineffective. It seemed peculiar, but it was not.

The world was balanced, all living beings had their food and natural predators. The same went for Immortal Gu, the essence of immortal killer moves was the use of a combination of Gu worms, it could not escape this principle.

This was why, there was no strongest Gu worm, only strongest Gu Immortal.

“But I am a wisdom path grandmaster, as long as I elevate my wisdom path methods and conceal my true identity, when I use familiar face to conceal myself, who would be able to find my true identity?”

Especially with his sovereign immortal body, he could travel through regional walls easily, he could even completely alter his aura and become a local.

He was unlike Hei Lou Lan and the rest, they had Northern Plains aura, it was still fine in Eastern Sea. But when they got to Southern Border, Western Desert, or Central Continent, they would face strong ostracism from the locals.

“However... I remember that this Miao Ming Shen had a method to find that immemorial desolate beast blue dragon whale, he had once rallied more than ten Eastern Sea lone immortals to find it. Should I build a relationship with him, so that I can use this relationship to take a share of the profits from entering the blue dragon whale as well?”

Taking this into consideration, the blue dragon whale was naturally more important than merely Immortal Hua Die, Fang Yuan dispelled the thought of killing her.

There was another advantage in becoming friendly with Miao Ming Shen.

Eastern Sea had the most cultivation resources among the five regions. Eastern Sea Gu Immortals often held meet-ups to exchange resources between each other. These resources were very precious, they had great value, lifespan Gu were used for transactions. In comparison, treasure yellow heaven was an open market, it was not a private auction location.

Miao Ming Shen was a common guest in these private auctions. With his approval, Fang Yuan would be able to enter these events as well.

Immortal Hua Die did not know that she had just barely escaped death, because of her relationship with Miao Ming Shen, she narrowly avoided a terrible fate.

She smiled lightly as she said: “Chu Ying, since you know about me, you must know about Lord Miao Ming Shen as well. Lord Miao Ming Shen has observed the turbulent flow sea area for years, he wants to find a tributary of the River of

Time among these chaotic currents. If you have the opportunity to find that tributary of the River of Time, I hope that you can locate it and inform us, we will definitely thank you for it.”

As for why a space path Gu Immortal like Miao Ming Shen was searching for a tributary of the River of Time, Immortal Hua Die was not going to explain it.

“So that’s it.” Fang Yuan agreed: “I have long since heard of Lord Miao Ming Shen. I would not ask for a great reward, I would simply like to be on good terms with both of you.”

Fang Yuan was so tactful, Immortal Hua Die’s smile became even wider.

Fang Yuan was not the first person she had talked to, in fact, Immortal Hua Die, Gui Qi Ye, and Feng Jiang would guard the turbulent flow sea area in turns at regular intervals. When they see any Gu Immortals approaching the turbulent flow sea area, they would talk to them and ask for their help.

Some rejected, but most people would agree.

The reason was naturally Miao Ming Shen’s method to expand immortal apertures.

Thus, Fairy Hua Die was not surprised that Fang Yuan agreed.

“Then I will wish you good luck, friend.” Immortal Hua Die turned around and was about to leave, she did not think highly of Chu Ying.

Because she had never heard of this person before.

Of course, Eastern Sea had no lack of hidden cultivators. But Immortal Hua Die had many connections, Chu Ying was someone who was completely unknown, and he only had rank six cultivation level, how strong could he be?

“Lord Miao Ming Shen is searching for the tributary of the River of Time, it does not require cultivation level, but luck instead. Maybe this Chu Ying might be able to find it? Oh, I have such thoughts each time. But more than ten years have passed, we have not even seen a trace of that tributary.”

Immortal Hua Die sighed internally, saying goodbye to Fang Yuan.

However, a while after leaving, Immortal Hua Die used an information path mortal Gu and transmitted to him.

“I almost forgot to tell you. A blood path demonic immortal, Ding Qi, has recently come to the turbulent flow sea area. This person’s younger brother, Ding Yan, had once held the clues to an information path inheritance, he was attacked by Liu Qing Yu, Zhou Li, and Tang Song. Ding Yan is dead, Ding Qi wants revenge, because he heard that Liu Qing Yu had come to the turbulent flow sea area, as if to obtain the information path inheritance, he rushed here. Blood path demonic immortals are ruthless and crazy, they are unlike us, their minds are completely insane. When they see a Gu Immortal, they would first think about whether they should kill that person to increase their own strength. If you encounter him, you should be careful.”

Fang Yuan kept the information path mortal Gu, rubbing his nose.

Immortal Hua Die gave him some friendly advice, she was a kind person. But she did not know that the person she was talking to was a blood path demonic overlord, a person bearing great sins, he had once casually slaughtered countless lives in Central Continent!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1155: Snatching Oyster

The conversation with Immortal Hua Die was only a short intermission.

Fang Yuan finally went into the turbulent flow sea area.

The sea water moved randomly, like intertwined ropes, or completely messy balls of string, filling Fang Yuan’s vision.

Strength path giant hand!

Seeing nobody around, Fang Yuan used his immortal killer move.

The giant hand smashed more than ten currents, causing the sea water to become chaotic.

Fang Yuan charged towards a certain direction.

This was at the fringe of the turbulent flow sea area, he could forcefully make his way in.

But a moment later, a huge current of light yellow water blocked Fang Yuan’s path.

“This is yellow spring water.”

Fang Yuan stopped his steps, this current was huge, strength path giant hand could not smash it, in fact, he might even get injured.

Yellow spring water came from the yellow spring sea area.

That was the territory of Zombie Alliance’s headquarters.

As the largest zombie farming area in the five regions, the yellow spring sea area was filled with zombie corpses. At the bottom of the sea, there was decomposed coral and between them, there were strands of seaweed drifting with the flowing water.

Yellow spring water contained dao marks, it was a type of Gu refinement material.

Fang Yuan activated his defensive method, entering it.

This yellow spring water current flowed in one direction, but it was not the one Fang Yuan wanted. He could only charge through this current, using his Immortal Gu and consuming immortal essence.

A while later, he broke through the yellow spring water current, arriving at another current.

This water was pale white, after entering it, Fang Yuan felt like he was moving inside clouds.

Illusory scenes were displayed before him.

Thousand illusion water, it came from Eastern Sea’s thousand illusion sea area.

Fang Yuan used wisdom path methods, easily blocking the interference of these illusions, after spending some effort, he got into the third current.

Magma current.

This current was not from Eastern Sea, it came from Western Desert’s largest pit — blazing glory pit.

It was extremely deep and was linked to the underground, every hundred years, magma would burst out from the earth veins, the hot magma would fill the entire pit, even oozing out and changing the terrain of the surrounding area.

Magma current, it came from a deep part of the magma, it was very hot.

Once Fang Yuan entered it, he would need a defensive immortal killer move, ordinary rank six Gu Immortals without an immortal level defensive method could only avoid this.

His immortal essence expenditure was multiple times that of the two earlier currents!

Thankfully, this magma current was not big, Fang Yuan got through in a few dozen breaths of time.

This time, he did not encounter another current, he went into an empty space.

Other than Fang Yuan, there was nothing.

Looking back, the magma current was still flowing behind him.

On his front-left side, there was deep darkness, waves were crashing inside, resembling thousands of vengeful souls. This black soul water came from the black soul sea area, it contained soul path and dark path dao marks.

On his right, there was a third current. It was golden and shiny, like countless gold fragments mixed together, moving forward together in a dazzling manner.

Fang Yuan saw this and was surprised: “If I am not wrong, this is a gold fragment current. Rumors say that immemorial yellow heaven has a lot of metallic heavenly rivers. After immemorial yellow heaven broke, most of the metallic heavenly rivers were destroyed. This gold fragment current is likely from a certain immemorial yellow heaven fragment world. Because of the nature of the turbulent flow sea area, by gathering all the different currents in the world, I am able to witness it.”

Magma current, black soul current, and gold fragment current.

These three currents contested against each other, they reached a mystical balance, a completely empty space was created between them.

This was where Fang Yuan was at now, as if he was in the eye of the cyclone, he could not stay here for long, but it gave him precious time to rest.

Fang Yuan did not rest, his strength had grown drastically, he had a lot of immortal essence, he had not reached his limit yet.

After finding his direction, he shot out into the gold fragment current at lightning speed.

He faced a lot of obstructions, more than ten times of the magma current, but his immortal essence expenditure had decreased instead.

The magma current was too hot.

Fang Yuan crossed the entire gold fragment current.

During this process, he collected up to five hundred kilograms of gold fragments.

On Earth, this would be a huge amount of wealth. But in this world, it was merely a common Gu material.

Other than gold fragments, the gold fragment current also had a large number of Gu worms.

They were mostly metal path.

There was golden dragon Gu, it looked like an earthworm, but it had claws and a head, it resembled a miniature dragon.

There was also golden aurora Gu, it could allow a Gu Master to fly.

And a rare mortal Gu that could make all mortal Gu Masters go crazy — polished gold Gu, it was a one time consumable Gu that could increase a Gu Master’s aptitude!

For Fang Yuan, this polished gold Gu had little use.

He casually collected some.

After getting out of the gold fragment current, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture gained a new small gold fragment river.

Fang Yuan placed this river in Mini Yellow Heaven, it was just to add to the scenery. With this tiny gold fragment river, it could not give him any benefits.

Gu Masters might treat it like a treasure, for Fang Yuan and other Gu Immortals, it was worthless.

Fang Yuan got through many currents, gradually getting towards the center of the turbulent flow sea area from the fringe.

A moment later, a huge current blocked Fang Yuan’s path.

The huge current was deep blue, every drop of water flickered with electricity, it caused the entire current to be eye-catching and bright.

Fang Yuan let out a breath, he knew that this was a lightning water current.

When lightning accumulates to a degree, it would become liquid. The destructive force would convert in a water of vitality that could draw out potential.

Lightning path Gu Immortals often built lightning pools, storing this lightning water inside.

Lightning path Gu Immortals would use these lightning pools to nurture large numbers of lightning path mortal Gu.

The significance of a lightning pool to lightning path Gu Immortals was like Five Light Mountain to light path Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan had already reached the center of the turbulent flow sea area.

With his strength, he could not go into currents rashly anymore. The strength of the currents had gotten stronger, if Fang Yuan went in, he would be swept away.

In this situation, to get to his destination, it depended on luck.

With good luck, a random current would bring him to his destination, Fang Yuan would be able to travel smoothly.

If he was unlucky, even after dozens of currents, he might still be going in circles.

This was the special characteristic of the turbulent flow sea area.

Fang Yuan entered the lightning water current.

This current was huge, it was as if Fang Yuan was a small rabbit which had entered a large river.

Thankfully, the lightning water was very calm. Only the ripples at the top would create lightning, with destructive force that would destroy whatever touched it.

Fang Yuan only had to sink to the bottom of the lightning water, the immortal essence expenditure was low, it was calm and smooth.

He traveled along with this current.

A while later, Fang Yuan got to the end of the lightning water current.

At the end, there was another current with the same size as the lightning water current.

Fang Yuan entered it as the water carried him along.

He was quite lucky.

Even though there were some hurdles, in the end, he still moved closer to his target destination.

A day and a night later, Fang Yuan got to an empty space with no currents.

This was the twelve one he had seen during this trip.

“This space has just formed, the surroundings currents won’t change for now, I should rest first.” Fang Yuan wanted to rest here.

Because now, even he felt a little tired. The expenditure of immortal essence was not small.

But after resting for a while, there was some commotion from the current above his head.

Soon, a giant oyster came out of the current.

This oyster was the size of four elephants, it gave off the aura of an ancient desolate beast, the surface was entirely white-gold.

After seeing Fang Yuan, this oyster moved in a stunned manner.

Soon after, a voice came from the oyster: “Eh? There’s someone here, you are just a rank six Gu Immortal, how can you reach here?”

Fang Yuan did not speak.

The oyster’s shell opened, as its pinkish flesh was exposed.

This flesh was like a bed, with three people lying on it.

Two mortals female, considerably beautiful, were lying on a male Gu Immortal’s body with their clothing undone.

This male Gu Immortal had a young man appearance, he was thin and had a sharp gaze, he looked at Fang Yuan with an overbearing gaze, he analyzed as he said with curiosity: “Strange, strange, you really have rank six cultivation level, quickly tell me your name.”

Fang Yuan was silent, his gaze went from the male Gu Immortal to the oyster.

The male Gu Immortal was angry: “Hey, I am talking to you, are you deaf or mute?”

Fang Yuan asked instead: “This is the rumored precious beast — hidden room oyster?”

The male Gu Immortal immediately felt praised, he laughed: “You have quite some knowledge, I had asked for this from my grandpa after much work. My grandfather is the famous enslavement path Gu Immortal in Eastern Sea, Ren Xiu Ping!’

Fang Yuan nodded, saying plainly: “I know about Ren Xiu Ping, he is an expert at the peak of rank seven, not long ago, he found his blood related grandson, and spent a lot of effort to get him to ascend to immortal, that is you, right?”

“Hahaha.” The male Gu Immortal laughed: “That’s right, that’s right, You are not bad, your foresight is good.”

“Mm. Hand over the hidden room oyster, and I will spare your life.” Fang Yuan said plainly.

“What?!” The male Gu Immortal thought he was hearing things.

His expression froze, he laughed out of pure anger, he pointed at Fang Yuan: “Good, good! I praised you wrongly, you have foresight but you are blind, you offended the wrong person! You are truly courting death! Then I shall — Ah!”

The male Gu Immortal was still talking, when he suddenly gasped.

Fang Yuan had already attacked.

The strength path giant hand grabbed the hidden room oyster fiercely.

The male Gu Immortal had a fearful expression, because he realized that the hidden room oyster was currently being squeezed by the giant hand, the two shells were making cracking noises under the pressure.

“Misunderstanding, it is a misunderstanding.” He screamed: “I am Ren Xiu Ping’s grandson, who are you, we might be friends!”

“Who is friends with you? I can let you go, just hand over the Gu worm that controls the hidden room oyster.” Fang Yuan sneered: “Otherwise, you will die here.”

“You are a demonic path Gu Immortal! You cannot do this, my grandfather will not let you off, think about it clearly!”

“It’s just Ren Xiu Ping, so what.” Fang Yuan smiled, aura surged out of his body, going from rank six to the peak of rank seven.

The young Gu Immortal had an ashen expression, the two mortal female beauties were completely shocked, they were shrinking away in a corner, shivering.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1156: Immortal Gu Perceivable Dao

A moment later, Fang Yuan controlled the hidden room oyster, becoming its new master.

Pat pat pat.

He patted the young Gu Immortal’s face: “Wise choice, lad.”

The young Gu Immortal had a stiff expression, he did not dare to move, but his eyes were burning with embarrassment and hatred.

Fang Yuan ignored it.

Next, he jumped up into the hidden room oyster, sitting in the young Gu Immortal’s former spot as he left.

Before leaving, he even said: “My name is Chu Ying, I took your hidden room oyster, remember to tell your grandfather.”

Looking at the hidden room oyster which had closed its shell and vanished into the currents, the young Gu Immortal said with a forceful tone: “Good, Chu Ying? Don’t worry, I have already transmitted your appearance to my grandfather!”

“Young master, what do we do now?” The two beauties were crying, they were tugging the young Gu Immortal’s sleeves.

The young Gu Immortal’s expression froze, the surrounding space was shrinking, the currents were about to form, his expression sank.

With his strength, he could not enter this place, he got here thanks to the hidden room oyster.

“Don’t worry, even though the hidden room oyster is lost, I have my grandfather’s traveling son Gu, I can return to the doting mother Gu, which is with my grandfather.” The young Gu Immortal gritted his teeth.

“That’s great, we are saved!” The two girls were overjoyed.

Boom boom!

With two sounds, the two beautiful girls looked with shocked gazes, one looked at the bloody hole in her chest while the other looked at the young Gu Immortal: “Young master, you...”

The young Gu Immortal had a grim expression: “Both of you witnessed everything, hmph!”

Immediately after, he showed a look of pity.

He stretched out of arm, touching the two beauties’ faces: “It is a pity, they are quite beautiful, it is all Chu Ying’s fault.”

As he said that, he threw these two corpses into the current.

Without the defensive methods of a Gu Immortal, the mortal corpses were torn to shreds in the currents instantly.

Seeing that this space was about to collapse, the young Gu Immortal gritted his teeth, using traveling son Immortal Gu.

This turbulent flow sea area had very chaotic dao marks, the same applied to space path, Gu Immortals could not use space path Immortal Gu easily, the safest way was to travel normally.

But the young Gu Immortal was not using a space path Immortal Gu now, but emotion path instead.

Emotion path was a path originating from wisdom path. Wisdom path had three elements, thoughts, wills, emotions.

Traveling son Gu and doting mother Gu were a set of famous Immortal Gu in emotion path.

When the turbulent flow sea area was formed, emotion path had not been created yet, thus, at this moment, the young Gu Immortal could use traveling son Gu without any danger.

The young Gu Immortal allowed the power of traveling son Gu to send him away.

He seemed to have entered a long river, he felt groggy and dazed. A few minutes later, he regained his senses, realizing that he was inside Ren Xiu Ping’s blessed land.

“Grandfather, I...” The young Gu Immortal showed fear and unrest.

“Hmph, while I was placing my immortal aperture to absorb heaven and earth qi and stabilize my blessed land, you sneaked out to have fun. If I knew this, I would not have given you the hidden room oyster for protection.” Ren Xiu Ping chided.

“Grandfather, the hidden room oyster was taken away.” The young Gu Immortal said in a distressed tone: “I met a demon, he stole my hidden room oyster and killed my two servants!”

“Oh?” Ren Xiu Ping’s eyebrows rose: “Tell me the details.”

The young Gu Immortal added lots of inflammatory details as he explained.

“Chu Ying...” Ren Xiu Ping muttered, frowning.

He had never heard of this name before. The two mortal girls were nothing, but a rank seven Gu Immortal approached and took away the hidden room oyster, this was the act of a demonic scoundrel. But why did he leave his name behind?

Was he not Chu Ying but someone else? Trying to frame him?

What ulterior motives did he have?

But regardless, Ren Xiu Ping memorized the name of Chu Ying.

He had a cold expression as he lectured his grandson: “Now, do you know about the cruelty of the Gu Immortal world? Up until now, you have been around me, all you saw were immortals I was on good terms with, they had a warm attitude towards you, or even flattered you because of me. Now, you have to learn a lesson, I will punish you to ten years of secluded cultivation. For the next ten years, you have to stay in my immortal aperture and will not leave.”

“What?” The young Gu Immortal was shocked.

“Scram.” Ren Xiu Ping billowed his sleeve, the young Gu Immortal’s vision changed, he was inside a cave instantly.

“A jade cannot become refined without polishing, grandson, I cannot let you mess around anymore. Otherwise, even with my protection, there are many people in Eastern Sea who would not give me face. As for this Chu Ying, I will deal with him one day!” Thinking of this, Ren Xiu Ping’s eyes flashed with ruthlessness.

...

“Since I am trying to befriend Miao Ming Shen, I might as well offend Ren Xiu Ping.”

“Speaking of which, this hidden room oyster is quite useful, it is easy to use for transport. As long as the current isn’t too strong, I can rest inside and regain my strength.”

Fang Yuan sat inside the hidden room oyster as it flowed along with the currents.

Just like this, he got closer to his destination.

But in the turbulent flow sea area, distance did not relate to time from destination.

After taking the hidden room oyster, Fang Yuan’s luck started to fall, he encountered several bad currents and went in bad directions. He had to make many detours.

After a long trip, a day later, he finally reached the central area of the turbulent flow sea area.

The currents here were massive, Fang Yuan entered them like an ant jumping into a river.

Ordinary currents would change directions or locations once in a while.

But the central area of the turbulent flow sea area was too big, because of its size, it was hard to shift, even though it changed at every moment, the extent was small, it was actually quite stable.

And in these currents, there were many bubbles.

There were big and small bubbles, from the size of a human head to a mountain.

These bubbles were formed during the huge battle, it was unknown which great expert’s immortal killer move did it.

In the bubbles, there were carcasses and inheritances. Most bubbles contained sea water and small sized islands.

“Found it, it’s this!” Fang Yuan looked for his target, he approached it with difficulty before entering it.

The bubble’s surface was torn open, but it soon was restored, only some water went in, it was not a problem.

Fang Yuan’s vision changed.

There was a green sea with a calm surface.

The sky was pure white, like an egg in color.

It was simply another world!

At the center of the sea, there was an island, there was wild grass on the island, and in the grass, there were many tall stone pillars.

Some people said that the worlds inside the bubbles were actually portions of the turbulent flow sea area originally, but after the battle, space was torn into pieces.

Some also said that these were the fragment worlds of the great expert’s immortal aperture, because of a unique immortal killer move, these bubbles were formed.

Fang Yuan did not care about the reason why there were bubbles.

He came to the stone pillar and took out flying sword Immortal Gu.

Seemingly having sensed the information path insignia on flying sword Immortal Gu, these stone pillars started to shine in red light, soon after, they started to move slowly.

When they slowed down, space of around a vat’s size opened, as a skeleton fell out.

Fang Yuan carefully inspected it.

This skeleton was full of bone path dao marks, it was a quasi rank eight immortal material.

The skeleton’s right hand was holding a dark green lump.

Fang Yuan took out this dark green lump, after inspecting it, he burst it and several sleeping Gu worms were revealed.

Two Immortal Gu, and five mortal Gu.

Unfortunately, most of them were dead, only a corpse was left. When the wind blew, they turned to ash.

Countless years had passed, the Gu worm preservation method was not very good, it was no wonder that time prevailed.

Eventually, only one rank six Immortal Gu was left.

Fang Yuan quickly saved it, as it barely hung onto life.

“What Gu worm is this?” Fang Yuan was perplexed, he did not recognize it.

Looking at the skeleton, there was nothing left.

“This is that so called information path inheritance.” Fang Yuan sighed.

An ordinary Gu Immortal would be joyous. But Fang Yuan, who had just obtained

Hei Fan’s true inheritance, felt quite unsatisfied.

Inspecting the corpse, Fang Yuan discovered that in the skull of this skeleton, there were many thoughts sealed.

The thoughts were fragmented, but Fang Yuan was a wisdom path grandmaster, he could barely excavate some details from them.

The name of the Gu Immortal who left behind this inheritance could not be found. Fang Yuan only knew that he had barely survived that intense battle with his last breath, he managed to enter this bubble and set up his inheritance.

It was indeed an information path inheritance, but most of the information was lost.

But Fang Yuan was not leaving empty handed.

He knew the name of the Immortal Gu he saved — Perceivable Dao.

Perceivable dao Immortal Gu was an information path investigative Immortal Gu. It had a very niche effect, it could help the Gu Immortal see clearly what types of dao marks the target had and their quantity as well.

As for the origin of this skeleton, it was not the inheritance’s creator, but an enemy killed by the information path Gu Immortal.

In the thoughts, the information path Gu Immortal who left this inheritance said that this skeleton could be used as immortal material directly. Because the enemy’s dao marks were all left inside this skeleton.

This made Fang Yuan feel some surprise.

Because after a Gu Immortal dies, their dao marks usually go back to the immortal aperture. Unless it was an immortal zombie, without a normal immortal aperture, their dao marks would remain in the body.

“This information path Gu Immortal has amazing methods, he could gather all of the Gu Immortal’s dao marks into their skeleton and preserve them. Unfortunately, the inheritance’s information is too lacking, and it cannot be restored.”

Fang Yuan felt it was a great pity.

He was hoping that this information path inheritance could allow him to obtain a method to break his alliance agreements.

Unfortunately, most things in the world do not proceed as one hopes.

What he obtained was only perceivable dao Immortal Gu.

Keeping the Immortal Gu in his immortal aperture, Fang Yuan prepared to leave.

“Murderer, where are you going!” At this moment, a blood-red figure charged into this huge bubble.

His bloodshot eyes were staring at Fang Yuan fiercely!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1157: Exterminate

The other party had arrived imposingly, staring at Fang Yuan fixedly, he had injuries on his body, his hair was messy and he looked to be in a sorry state.

One thought flashed in Fang Yuan’s mind: “Ding Qi.”

Some days ago, Immortal Hua Die had told Fang Yuan about the blood path demonic path immortal, Ding Qi, who had come to the turbulent flow sea area. His brother, Ding Yan, was the blood path demonic immortal that had died at Liu Qing Yu’s hands.

Now, Fang Yuan saw this person, he naturally had a guess towards his identity.

Next, another group of Gu Immortals appeared as they charged into the bubble.

The two at the front were familiar to Fang Yuan.

One was Tang Song, the other was Zhou Li.

Tang Song shouted: “Ding Qi, where are you trying to go? In exactly one year, it will be the anniversary of your death! It is a pity, your brother is dead, nobody is going to send you offerings, hahaha!”

Ding Qi seemingly did not hear anything, he stared at Fang Yuan, gritting his teeth: “It’s you! You just obtained the information path inheritance, my brother found that clue after so much trouble, but it is with you. You are also his murderer!!”

“What?” The Gu Immortals pursuing him heard this and turned to stare at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled: “Interesting. How did you know I took the inheritance?”

Ding Qi smiled coldly: “Because I have blood trace Immortal Gu.”

Saying this, he used his Immortal Gu.

Soon, blood colored shadows appeared in the island. The shadows formed a series of movements, it was Fang Yuan who had entered the bubble and took away the information path inheritance.

Zhou Li and Tang Song screamed angrily: “He stole the inheritance!”

“Who are you?”

“Hand over the inheritance!”

Fang Yuan’s smile bloomed, he ignored the immortals, he only looked at Ding Qi with curiosity: “Blood trace Immortal Gu, this is the first time I have heard of this.”

“This is a blood path Immortal Gu that I created together with my brother. Other than this, we also created the Immortal Gu Blood Oath!” Mentioning his brother, Ding Qi was extremely angry and upset.

Zhou Li, Tang Song, and the other immortals were furious too.

As it turned out, Liu Qing Yu gathered a bunch of people to come to the turbulent flow sea area, it caused Ding Qi to appear.

Information got out, Zhou Li and Tang Song also gathered a group of Gu Immortals to come here. Initially, they were suspicious that Liu Qing Yu had gotten the information path inheritance clue.

They had spent so much effort in getting here, but the immortals met Ding Qi.

Ding Qi had already gotten here long ago, using blood trace Immortal Gu to make some arrangements.

Both sides fought, but Ding Qi was alone, even though he was a blood path demonic immortal, he could not rival so many enemies, he had to escape while fighting.

During which, Fang Yuan came in and obtained the inheritance. Ding Qi felt something and rushed over without caring about anything else, meeting Fang Yuan.

“This is blood trace Immortal Gu? Very interesting indeed.” Fang Yuan looked at Ding Qi with a look of appreciation, sighing: “Geniuses are indeed everywhere, they have their own unique talents.”

Speaking of blood path, the most famous person was Blood Sea Ancestor.

He was a great demon with seven Blood Sea true inheritances, everyone knew about them, he had left a deep mark in history.

But at present, if blood path experts were listed down, Ding Qi and Ding Yan would definitely have reputable rankings.

These brothers had deeply researched, they created Blood Oath and Blood Trace, these two blood path Immortal Gu. Most importantly, they actually managed to refine them, in terms of blood path, they were truly talented, it was rare.

“What are you sighing about, hand over the inheritance!”

“That’s right, the inheritance is mine, you are an outsider, you actually snatched it from us.”

Zhou Li and Tang Song screamed.

They had worked so hard and put in so much effort, in the end, an outsider whose name was not even known had taken their rightful gains.

Zhou Li and Tang Song had already regarded this inheritance as their own. Fang Yuan was naturally taking away their food, how could they stand it?!

Zhou Li and Tang Song gave up on their original target, Ding Qi, they turned towards Fang Yuan.

But Ding Qi was even quicker, he directly attacked Fang Yuan: “Murderer, hand over your life!”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “You want my life, but I’m not going to play with you. The inheritance is mine already anyway.”

Saying so, he charged out of the bubble, going into the currents.

“Chase!”

“We will catch him, dead or alive!!”

Zhou Li and Tang Song shouted angrily, they refused to give up, especially Fang

Yuan’s final words, it truly sent their anger over the edge.

A group of Gu Immortals were chasing in the chaotic currents.

In this special environment, Gu Immortals could only move along with the currents. During the process, countless attacks aimed at Fang Yuan were unleashed.

Fang Yuan used his Immortal Gu to defend as he accelerated.

Sword escape Immortal Gu was not to be underestimated, soon, a group of Gu Immortals fell behind, they were too far apart.

“Eh? This person’s movement is so familiar!” Zhou Li was perplexed.

Tang Song’s eyes opened wide, he wanted to get back his inheritance, he did not think in that aspect at all.

Between the two sides, there was also the blood path demonic immortal Ding Qi.

His eyes were blood red, he was filled with killing intent: “Die, die! My brother died, and you took advantage of it, it was such a regretful death. Death, you deserve death, I will tear you into pieces!!”

Intense rage burned through his rationality, he was in a frenzied state.

Fang Yuan suddenly turned, dodging a huge waves of attacks.

The pursuers were stifled.

Fang Yuan’s movements were too slippery, even if some killer moves could chase after the enemy, he destroyed them personally.

The Gu Immortals chased him for so long, but there was no result, they even wasted a lot of immortal essence.

Here was not like other places, the environment was quite unique.

A bubble appeared before them, Fang Yuan thoughts shifted, directly entering it.

“He went in!”

“Quick, quick, encircle it.”

“Something is wrong, why did he enter a bubble instead of escaping?”

The immortals surrounded this bubble, but they did not enter, they were filled with suspicion.

A blood-red figure shot into the bubble like an arrow.

It was the blood path demonic immortal Ding Qi, he was more resolute than these Gu Immortals.

The immortals stayed outside the bubble, but they saw no disturbance.

They started to get restless, they could not stand it anymore, Tang Song went in first, followed by Zhou Li, and the rest, all of the Gu Immortals went into the bubble.

“Strange, where is this?”

"A city?"

The Gu Immortals who came in found that they had appeared amidst some houses for some reason.

These houses were designed meticulously, but they had broken walls, as if an earthquake had occurred here.

Furthermore, this place was full of cobwebs and dust, it looked like a city that had been abandoned for many years.

"Strange, strange. There are lots of pans and bowls here, it seems like many people had lived here before."

"On such a large scale, they cannot be Gu Immortals. But mortals actually lived here?"

"Even before the turbulent flow sea area formed, I have never heard of many mortals living here."

The Gu Immortals gathered as they discussed.

"Also, where is that Gu Immortal who ran away?"

"Ding Qi is missing too."

"No, Ding Qi is there, facing Lord Tang Song."

"The Gu Immortal who took the inheritance is really missing, he seems to be hiding inside here."

"Find him and force him to hand over the inheritance!"

The immortals were about to get to work, when they suddenly heard Fang Yuan's voice from the sky, it was loud and grand: "You are all here, good, everyone, enjoy this. It is your final moment before death."

As he said this, the immortals felt the sky turning dark.

They raised their heads and at the next moment, the immortals showed extremely shocked expressions.

Only to see that a huge hand, enormously big, covering the entire sky, pressed down slowly.

The aura was too imposing, it was like the sky was collapsing, everyone felt a strong feeling of weakness and helplessness.

"Impossible! This is an illusion, if he has such strength, how could he be running away from us?" Zhou Li shouted.

The immortals jolted, their morale rose, they felt that Zhou Li was right.

All of the immortals attacked.

Boom!

With a loud sound, the giant hand pressed down, countless houses collapsed, several Gu Immortals died at once, turning into meat paste.

"How can this be?" Zhou Li climbed up from the pit with much difficulty, he opened his eyes and looked around in disbelief.

The entire city was gone, it was a pathetic sight full of ruins.

The Gu Immortals who survived stood up in the rubble, they were all shocked and fearful.

In a contest of strength, they had so many Gu Immortals, but they actually lost.

“Shadow Sect’s trap is truly useful. Hehe.” Fang Yuan thought as he activated strength path giant hand again.

Thus, in the immortals’ eyes, the sky turned dark again, the giant hand crashed down slowly while covering the entire sky.

“It’s coming, it’s coming again!”

“Hold on, we have to endure it!!”

“At the moment of life and death, forget about the rest, take out your trump cards and survive this trial.”

The immortals shouted, they were fearful and uneasy, their attitude was clearly different from before.

Boom!

The giant hand caused the entire ground to lower by several meters, this time, only three people stood up.

Zhou Li, Tang Song, and the blood path demonic immortal Ding Qi.

Giant hand was used for the third time, the three immortals had a look of despair.

“I will not let you have an easy time even if I die!” Ding Qi self-detonated.

Zhou Li and Tang Song resisted but to no avail.

Eventually, they died at Fang Yuan’s hands.

“Secluded domain of heaven and earth – City Well, it truly lives up to its reputation!” Fang Yuan praised as he sighed.

Right now, there was a well in front of him.

The well was squarish on the outside, but it was circular on the surface inside.

Fang Yuan stood on the edge of the well, he looked down, seeing a miniature town at the bottom of the well. Right now, it had been completely decimated from his three uses of giant hand.

There were some bloody patches in the rubble, it was the meat paste of Gu Immortals who were killed.

City Well first appeared in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

Or more accurately, <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, chapter four, section twenty-three clearly described it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1158: City Well

Legend has it ——

Ren Zu’s fourth child, Boundless Forest Samsara, fell from the tree, she did not follow after Ren Zu, instead, she was trapped inside Ordinary Abyss.

One day, when she was sleeping, she met a miniman.

The miniman was crying, Boundless Forest Samsara asked him why.

The miniman spoke while crying: “I am the tallest in my tribe, and I was brave, arrogant and proud because of this. Today, I intended to climb a mountain, but to think that this mountain was really a person. There are actually such giant people like you in the world, this is the first time I’ve seen someone like you, so I burst into tears!”

Since then, Boundless Forest Samsara and the miniman became good friends, they were inseparable.

“Miniman, oh miniman, where is your father? Do you not have siblings? Why have I never seen your family?” One day, Boundless Forest Samsara asked the miniman.

The miniman directed Boundless Forest Samsara to a well, saying: “Look at this well, my former home is inside.”

Boundless Forest Samsara sprawled in front of the well, extending her head to look inside.

Next, she shouted: “Ah, there are so many minimen.”

She saw that there were countless minimen inside the well, they were living together.

They built many houses, they lived among each other, there were markets, flowers, it was a harmonious scene, they were very happy.

The minimen in the well also shouted.

“Why did the sky become so dark? It’s night time already?”

“There was thunder but no rain, I don’t see lightning either!”

The minimen were in panic, they discussed as the entire city went into commotion.

“Your family is here? Why did you go outside the well, you don’t want to live with them?” Boundless Forest Samsara asked.

The miniman shook his head: “They were the ones who exiled me, they think I am a monster.”

“Oh? Why is that?” Boundless Forest Samsara was curious.

The miniman answered with sadness: “I told them that the world we were living in was just a well. The outside world is very big. But they did not believe me, they told me to stop spouting nonsense.”

“I also told them that the mountain at the fringe of our city is a very small mound. But they refuse to believe me, they think that it is the tallest mountain in the world, they told me to stop spreading lies.”

“Which mountain is it?” Boundless Forest Samsara asked.

“That’s Miniscule Mountain.” The miniman pointed.

Boundless Forest Samsara started to giggle: “You call that a mountain? It can fit in my palm!”

Suddenly, Boundless Forest Samsara clapped: “Then let me tell them the truth.”

The miniman shook his head: “It is useless.”

Boundless Forest Samsara did not believe him, she faced the well as she shouted, the minimen inside started to panic even more.

They felt that today was too strange.

Not only did the sky turn dark, there was thunder rumbling, and it was getting louder and more frequent.

“Heaven is raging, I want to repent, I want to confess!”

“No, it is a monster, a monster ate heaven, it is burping now.”

“Save me, this world is getting destroyed!”

Some minimen knelt on the ground and begged, some had despair on their faces, while others were running around crazily.

Boundless Forest Samsara’s breathing became a tornado inside the well.

Boundless Forest Samsara’s saliva became a huge rainstorm when it went into the well.

Boundless Forest Samsara’s words were like rumbling thunder in the minimen’s ears, their eardrums almost burst from it.

Boundless Forest Samsara eventually gave up, she sprawled outside the well, exhausted, she said weakly: “Why are these minimen so stupid? Can’t they be like you, to get out of the well and see the world?”

The miniman shook his head as he sighed: “They think that they are big enough, they think the sky is round, they think the mountain is only that tall, they think life is just like this.”

“Then why did you climb out?” Boundless Forest Samsara opened her eyes wide as she asked with curiosity.

The miniman smiled bitterly: “Because I realized how small and insignificant I was, therefore, I got out to see how big the world is.”

...

Fang Yuan walked in a circle around City Well, his eyes were flickering brightly.

This was the third secluded domain of heaven and earth he had encountered.

The first two were Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley.

In order to harm Fang Yuan, Ying Wu Xie had set up a trap, it was by using City Well. But Fang Yuan took him by surprise, he obtained precious information from Liu Qing Yu, and in turn, made use of City Well to kill a bunch of Eastern Sea Gu Immortals instead.

Like what was recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, Boundless Forest Samsara's breathing became a tornado, and her saliva became rain. Fang Yuan was outside the well, when he used his immortal killer move, the power was amplified by tens or hundreds of times when it entered the well!

But Fang Yuan had to pay a price.

His immortal essence expenditure was also tens or hundreds of times as high.

Even though Fang Yuan only used three giant hands, the expenditure was around the same as a hundred uses of it.

If an uninformed person entered the bottom of City Well, they would be trapped. But once they realize their situation and know this is City Well, they would be able to escape.

Like what <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> said, once the miniman realized his own insignificance, and wanted to see the world outside, he managed to climb out of City Well.

One could say, leaving City Well was both difficult and easy.

Precisely so, Ying Wu Xie did not use City Well to target Fang Yuan to a great extent.

Firstly, he could not control his strength, what if he killed Fang Yuan, how could he find the immortal material to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu again?

Secondly, Fang Yuan might immediately recognize the truth and escape with the upper extreme heavenly eagle, by then, Ying Wu Xie would not stand a chance.

The bigger reason was the second one.

Because he was uncertain, Ying Wu Xie made this City Well a trap to stall Fang Yuan, instead of using it to kill him.

Fang Yuan wanted to take this City Well for himself.

Because this secluded domain of heaven and earth would be a huge help to him when he develops his immortal aperture.

Pulling mountain Immortal Gu!

Fang Yuan began to try.

But City Well only shook slightly.

Pulling Mountain could pull out mountains, but City Well was not a mountain, although it was on the ground and needed earth qi.

Strength path giant hand!

Fang Yuan tried to dig out City Well.

However, once the giant hand got close to City Well, it rapidly shrank, like a burst bubble, in a few breaths' time, it was completely depleted.

"It seems that even though Shadow Sect has control of this secluded domain of heaven and earth, they cannot relocate it."

Fang Yuan tried a few more times without success. His best attempt was the first time, the result was evident, he used pulling mountain Immortal Gu and managed to make City Well shake slightly.

"In this case, pulling mountain Immortal Gu is actually effective, but just Pulling Mountain alone is not enough, I need to think of an immortal killer move that can relocate this City Well."

Realizing this, Fang Yuan could only give up for now.

He entered the well, when he got to the bottom, his body became very small.

Looting the battlefield.

Only Zhou Li and Tang Song had complete corpses, Fang Yuan put them into the sovereign immortal aperture.

As for the other Gu Immortals, they were all meat paste.

The blood path demonic immortal Ding Qi had self-detonated, but his blood path immortal aperture was left behind.

Other than him, the other Gu Immortals also left behind their immortal apertures.

Soon, the world inside the well started to stir, heaven and earth qi burst out as blessed lands formed one by one.

Fang Yuan spent a lot of time entering these blessed lands and exploring them.

Forget about Immortal Gu.

But there were quite a number of resources that were normally owned by Eastern Sea cultivators.

These Gu Immortals were not as poor as Liu Qing Yu, most of their assets were still around.

Except the blood path demonic immortal Ding Qi, even all of the resources inside his immortal aperture were destroyed. Even so, Fang Yuan was a blood path grandmaster, he had enough attainment level to annex Ding Qi's blessed land and expand the sovereign immortal aperture.

Inside these blessed lands, some had land spirits, some did not.

In the blessed lands without land spirits, Fang Yuan took away all of their resources. Those with land spirits were more troublesome, they needed to acknowledge him as their master, otherwise, Fang Yuan could not take away all of the resources inside.

Of course, it was not impossible to just plunder it, but that was a short term benefit disregarding the long term gains.

Fang Yuan thought about it, he did not use brute force.

After spending some time in the well, he left and started to modify this bubble.

The bubble had a sea and an island, City Well was in the middle of the island.

Because of Ying Wu Xie’s arrangement, outsiders would directly end up at the bottom of the well when they went in.

But Fang Yuan had Liu Qing Yu’s information, he did not fall for it. Instead, he used this trap to kill all the pursuers, he got rid of a lot of trouble.

If Ying Wu Xie knew that his arrangements not only failed to give Fang Yuan problems, they even provided huge help to him, would he spit out blood from anger?

Fang Yuan preserved some of Ying Wu Xie’s arrangements, at the same time, he added in some of his own methods, to conceal the bubble even more.

Next, he left the bubble and directed the bubble to a new location.

Not long ago, Ying Wu Xie did the same thing.

This bubble with City Well was not originally here. Ying Wu Xie wanted to harm Fang Yuan, he spent a lot of time and effort to move this bubble here.

Inside the current, Fang Yuan could not control where he went, he was washed away by it.

Thankfully, he had the hidden room oyster, he could rest inside.

Fang Yuan moved back and forth dozens of times before moving this bubble into another current.

He spent more than ten times the amount of immortal essence and time as Ying Wu Xie.

After completing this, Fang Yuan took a detour and went to Ying Wu Xie’s former camp.

There, it was another island in a bubble.

Fang Yuan entered deep underground, but Regret Pool was already taken apart by Ying Wu Xie, even the surrounding Gu formations were gone.

The tributary of the River of Time that Shadow Sect had kept here was also missing.

This was the special characteristic of the turbulent flow sea area, every current was constantly changing and moving.

“But with this, it is enough to befriend Miao Ming Shen.” Fang Yuan used his information path mortal Gu, sending it through treasure yellow heaven.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1159: Development of the Sovereign Immortal Aperture

Several days later, Fang Yuan waited for Immortal Hua Die to arrive.

“There is a trace of the River of Time indeed, it is very recent!” Immortal Hua

Die inspected and felt overjoyed. With this clue, she could definitely locate the tributary of the river of time.

“Chu Ying, we have truly troubled you. To think that you really found this tributary of the River of Time, we searched for decades without finding any useful clues!” Immortal Hua Die was very excited, she could finally give Miao Ming Shen good news.

“Go ahead and track it. I do not need any compensation, I might need Lord Miao Ming Shen’s help in the future. I will take my leave.”

Fang Yuan was understanding and kind, Immortal Hua Die had a good impression of him.

Before leaving, she advised again: “Be careful, blood path demonic immortal Ding Qi has appeared, engaging in battle with Zhou Li and Tang Song. If you meet them, you should avoid them, there is no need to get involved in this.”

“Fairy, I will remember your words, thank you.” Fang Yuan showed a moved expression.

Immortal Hua Die had no idea: It was this person who had killed Ding Qi, Zhou Li, Tang Song, and everyone else. But the turbulent flow sea area was very complex, it was normal that they all went missing, nobody felt anything strange.

There were often Gu Immortals who went missing for months or years before appearing suddenly again.

Half a month later.

Fang Yuan returned to Lang Ya blessed land.

In this journey to Eastern Sea, even though his goal was not achieved, he had great gains.

In the cloud city’s secret room, Fang Yuan quietly sat as his divine sense activated, inspecting his entire sovereign immortal aperture.

The sovereign immortal aperture had changed greatly. In the past, it was barren and empty. But now, it had a lot of resources. At a glance, it was no longer so empty and boring.

Actually, all of these resources that Fang Yuan gathered could not fit inside ordinary blessed lands.

But the sovereign immortal aperture was simply too huge, after placing these resources, there was still a lot of space left.

In Mini Northern Plains, half the area was covered in snow and frost. The other half had green grass, on this grassland, Fang Yuan placed a few desolate beasts, like the giant horned sheep and shark fin wolf that he had since long ago.

In Mini Western Desert, there were already eleven eerie fire dragon python dens. Because of his aperture’s rate of time being at sixty times, along with Dong Fang tribe’s superb method of rearing, the eerie fire dragon pythons were reproducing at a rapid rate.

In Mini Eastern Sea, Fang Yuan had created several artificial lakes, putting dragonfish groups, air bubble fish groups, literature carp groups and others. Now, with more of the common resources obtained from killing the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, he had great gains. Even though they were not particularly precious, the quantity was high, he could develop using this foundation.

In Mini Central Continent, there was a huge area of mirror willows, it had formed a giant forest spanning a hundred li. Speaking of which, Fang Yuan had originally planted mirror willows inside Hu Immortal blessed land, after relocating them, these mirror willows were moved into Mini Central Continent. And because of the sovereign immortal aperture’s time flow, although Fang Yuan had never put effort in them, with just their own growth rate, the forest reached this scale.

Other than mirror willows, Mini Central Continent also had a huge underground blood zhi forest, its scale was only slighter smaller than the mirror willows.

Mini Central Continent was too huge, mirror willows and the blood zhi forest had no competitors, they could grow freely.

The most flourishing region was Mini Southern Border, which was overflowing with life.

The resources obtained from Hei Fan grotto-heaven were mostly relocated here.

However, Mini Southern Border was not filled up.

Large numbers of musical trees and tea streams were seen, there were also the qi death bird groups bringing immense vitality to Mini Southern Border.

More than ten mountains had appeared in Mini Southern Border already.

The tallest mountain was Five Light Mountain, it was bright and grand, followed by Immortal Succession Mountain, it had many stone pavilions on it, the scenery was good.

Mini Southern Border’s most important resource was the regretful spider group, it had already grown in scale multiple times already.

Above the five regions were the nine heavens.

In Mini Orange Heaven, there were profound lights, they were emitting from the flowing light fruits, this was the result of Fang Yuan’s previous effort in farming them.

In Mini Yellow Heaven, there was a gold fragment river, it was not big, but better than nothing.

In Mini Azure Heaven, there was azure fog, it was the pill azure incense that Fang Yuan bought. There was also the storage pool of the heavenly crystals, it was temporarily placed here without any use.

In Mini Blue Heaven, large clouds were floating with star fragment grass and arrow bamboo forests on them, producing star path mortal Gu for Fang Yuan. There was also a young ancient desolate beast falling star hound, it was saved by Fang Yuan and was playing around in Mini Blue Heaven.

In Mini Purple Heaven, the heavenly crystal eagle nest was eaten by the upper extreme heavenly eagle, only an upper extreme heavenly eagle egg was left. There were also some heavenly crystal fragments. These were all exchanged from Lang Ya land spirit.

In Mini Black Heaven, there was a walking meat tree.

In Mini White Heaven, there were three remnant heavenly dogs, and a group of eagle hounds, as well as some multicolored overlord flowers, the light was making the environment quite conducive already. Earlier, because Fang Yuan killed some light path Gu Immortals, the light path dao marks in the immortal aperture had increased.

“Unfortunately, I did not bring back City Well into the sovereign immortal aperture.”

Fang Yuan was still thinking about City Well, inside the turbulent flow sea area.

Even though City Well was damaged greatly, Fang Yuan could use Landscape as Before to restore it.

The destroyed buildings could not be repaired, but Miniscule Mountain could definitely be reformed.

It turned out that this legendary mountain had been destroyed during the battle of Yi Tian Mountain when Fairy Li Shan died. However, Fang Yuan thought of a way to restore it.

According to <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, Miniscule Mountain was a part of City Well.

“If I had City Well, I could raise large numbers of variant human groups inside the well. It is a pity...”

There were three stages in managing an immortal aperture.

The initial stage was when the Gu Immortal grows enough resources to fulfill the needs of their Immortal Gu’s food.

The middle stage would be to develop more resources in addition to the Immortal Gu’s food, to help the Gu Immortal in cultivation while also selling them for immortal essence stones.

The upper stage would be raising variant humans inside the immortal aperture, or even humans. This had huge significance to the Gu Immortal and has many benefits as well.

For example, earlier, Fang Yuan bought hairy man slaves in Hu Immortal blessed land to refine Gu for himself. This saved him a lot of time and effort.

Among the other variant humans, minimen could grow flowers and grass, rockmen could develop underground space, snowmen could produce ice tears and survive in the icy plains...

Pure bred humans had the greatest intelligence, they could reproduce rapidly and create things with their wisdom, large numbers of Gu recipes and killer moves could be created without the Gu Immortal making deductions themselves.

If one developed well, the immortal aperture might even have Gu Immortals or human Gu Immortals. They would be extremely loyal because they grew up in there. This would be a great help for the immortal aperture’s owner.

Currently, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture was at the initial stage.

Because he had gained a few more Immortal Gu, and had not fulfilled their feeding needs. Attitude Gu, wisdom sword Immortal Gu, and the other rank eight Immortal Gu were hard to feed. Fang Yuan could only devise a plan, he had solved a portion of them, but these problems were not resolved yet.

However, in terms of the middle stage, he had incredible achievements.

Because he had obtained countless resources from Star Form blessed land, Dong Fang tribe, and Hei Fan grotto-heaven. Most normal resources, like star path mortal Gu, regretful spiders, musical trees and others, they were all sold outside and provided profits.

Not to mention Dang Hun Mountain, guts Gu has always been Fang Yuan’s greatest source of profit, it earned him revenue daily.

Horses need extra grass to grow healthy, humans need windfalls to get rich.

What made Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture so wealthy were the countless windfalls that he had obtained.

And these resources were Fang Yuan’s great assurance in cultivating.

Without these resources, no matter how high Fang Yuan’s battle strength was, he would not feel assured.

Currently, Fang Yuan could not raise variant humans in large numbers.

Of course, he could do the same thing as in Hu Immortal blessed land, buying large numbers of variant humans to work inside the immortal aperture for him. But that was not the proper way.

The true way was to allow these variant humans to grow and reproduce naturally, they would be real members of the immortal aperture, living inside peacefully.

Only like this, they could grow healthily and produce great profits in the future.

If he bought variant human slaves and made them work, Fang Yuan would only incur losses. He had already learned this lesson in Hu Immortal blessed land. Fang Yuan’s stone nests had hairy man slaves dying from Gu refinement almost every day. The hairy man slaves had no time to reproduce or rest, their numbers dwindled, Fang Yuan could only make a loss as he continued to buy slaves to replenish them.

However!

If he had City Well, it would be different.

City Well was a special environment isolated from the outside world, it was very suited for raising humans or variant humans. The reproduction and deaths of variant humans inside City Well would also have an effect of nourishing and elevating City Well itself.

Forget about this mystical property for now.

All in all, with City Well, Fang Yuan could instantly start his upper stage developments while still in the initial stage, he would obtain great gains.

This would undoubtedly allow his cultivation journey to be smoother, and his cultivation level would grow many times faster.

Fang Yuan ended his inspection of the sovereign immortal aperture.

There were areas where he was pleased, and areas where he was not satisfied.

What made Fang Yuan satisfied was, the sovereign immortal aperture’s dao marks had grown favorably. For example, earth path dao marks, even though they were still lacking, they had improved greatly compared to earlier.

He was not satisfied with the fact that other than Mini Southern Border, the rest of the regions were still quite empty and had little resources. The sovereign immortal aperture was just too big.

Having huge space was a good problem.

The current situation would cause conflict between his resources in the future.

For example, the mirror willows, they were growing rapidly in Mini Central Continent. If another type of plant also grew quickly, and the two types met, an intense conflict would occur.

Conflict between plants was quite mild. But what about beast groups? If two fierce beast groups met, wouldn’t they fight to the death?

If the blessed land was small, the Gu Immortal could adjust it quickly. But Fang Yuan’s blessed land was too big, by the time he noticed their conflict, his losses would be severe.

To prevent this situation, Fang Yuan could only start planning early with great foresight.

The sovereign immortal aperture was not easy to manage.

Fang Yuan not only had to consider his current gains, he also had to think about the future.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1160: Qi Luck Sensation is Ineffective

In conclusion, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture had already grown much, but it still needed a lot of development work.

The sovereign immortal aperture had too much potential. It had five regions and nine heavens, even Mini Southern Border, which had taken in all of Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s resources, could not be filled up. Nobody would believe this story.

And every layer of the nine heavens had the size of all five regions combined.

Fang Yuan had already noticed that the development of the sovereign immortal aperture would be a vast and unparalleled project.

Up until now, out of a hundred percent, his current developments could barely be considered to make up two percent completion.

“Were it not for me being the person involved and witnessing this myself, how could I possibly believe that such an immortal aperture exists in this world?”

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, Shadow Sect, and Zombie Alliance planned for a hundred thousand years to obtain this, I took this from them, this conflict is truly irreconcilable.”

“Sigh! It is a pity... even though in this trip, I managed to deal a blow to Ying Wu Xie’s group, it could not truly shake their foundation.”

Fang Yuan sighed when he thought of this.

In the dark secret room, he sat quietly, his hair hung down to his waist, his skin was pure like jade, his eyes were unfathomably dark like an abyss, as cold light flashed in them occasionally.

After adjusting his breathing, Fang Yuan mobilized his immortal essence, using an immortal killer move.

Qi luck sensation!

At once, a feeling spread out from Fang Yuan’s body.

If he had luck inspection Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan would be able to see his huge luck shaking above his head.

Fang Yuan started to feel vague spots of sensation appearing one by one.

Western Desert.

The sun was blazing hot, causing steam to rise up from the sandy ground.

A pursuit of life and death was engaging here.

“Rascal, you actually dare to snatch the Gu worm that us bandits want!”

“Don’t let me catch you, I will tear you to pieces, and use your skin as a lantern cover!!”

“Surrender, obediently hand over polished gold Gu, and you might have a chance to live.”

A large group of Gu Masters with an imposing aura were chasing Han Li, who was running in front of them.

Han Li had extremely great luck, when he was alone, his luck could be low at times, but after it was connected, it had been very stable.

He cultivated for a period of time, he had rank three cultivation level now.

Elder level!

In the Gu Master world, he could already hold his own. He was neither a beginner rank one nor a cannon fodder rank two.

Rank three cultivation level was ‘elite’ in the Gu Master world.

However, in his current situation, three of the pursuers had rank three cultivation level, the rest were rank two and one.

Han Li could only run.

His primeval essence fell rapidly, his injuries were becoming a burden, blood was oozing out.

With every breath he took, Han Li endured pain that felt like a fire was burning his chest!

But such pain could not make him let go.

Right now, he was holding onto that polished gold Gu.

“My aptitude is not high enough, even though I have fortuitous encounters, in the long term, they are unreliable.”

“This polished gold Gu can increase my aptitude, it can grant me a brighter future.”

“I need to push on! Only by betting my life on it, can I have a chance to get stronger in the future!”

Han Li breathed roughly, he was extremely tired, but his legs moved like the wind, his running speed did not slow down at all.

His eyes were burning with fire!

Southern Border.

Water flowed down the lush green mountain.

Ye Fan shouted loudly, as his body suddenly grew to twice of his original size, he was tall and extraordinary.

Multi-colored lights were shining out of his muscles and pores, his eyes were radiating with bright light, he was truly grand and elegant.

Under the shocked gaze of his opponent, he punched with both fists like an unstoppable warrior, his aura was incredibly powerful.

Rumble!

Ye Fan took huge steps forward, everywhere he went, light shone as rocks shattered and streams dried, his enemies were forced back by him without any chance of retaliating.

“Cough, cough, Shang clan’s Ye Fan, you live up to your reputation. This time, we, the Eighteen Sons of Wine Village admit defeat!” The leader of the enemies spat out blood, even though he wanted to get up, he could not.

The other seventeen Gu Masters were also lying on the ground, some had fainted while others were grunting, even though they could not fight anymore, they stared at Ye Fan with intense hatred.

Ye Fan slowly adjusted his stance, he let out a breath, his huge body shrunk back to its original size.

He looked at his opponents on the ground, saying calmly: “According to the rules, you Eighteen Sons of Wine Village are not to take a step onto this mountain again. This is now Shang clan’s territory.”

“Hmph, don’t worry, we might be lone cultivators, but we lost this contest fair and square, we will keep our word.” The leader replied firmly.

Ye Fan nodded, he rubbed his hands together, as jade green light shone on the Eighteen Sons of Wine Village.

They first shook in anxiety, but soon, they found that their injuries were rapidly recovering.

Soon, the Eighteen Sons of Wine Village stood up, they were able to move again.

The Eighteen Sons of Wine Village looked at Ye Fan with more relaxed expressions now.

Ever since Ye Fan accepted Gu Immortal Shang Qing Qing’s Gu Master inheritance, his cultivation level might not have risen much, but his overall strength had grown drastically, he had methods in all aspects, and did not have a visible flaw.

When Shang Xin Ci first became clan leader, Shang clan’s mortal sector had lots of internal and external problems. It was Ye Fan who stood up and helped Shang Xin Ci resolve her problems. Right now, Ye Fan chased away the Eighteen Sons of Wine Village, he helped Shang clan open up a new trade route and eased her political pressure.

The leader sighed, cupping his fists: “Ye Fan, you are very strong, but you let us off in the end. We brothers will accept this favor, as long as you are in Shang clan, we will not target it. However, if you want to open up the trade route, we are only the third hurdle, you have two more obstacles ahead.”

“I understand, any Gu Master in these two rounds would be stronger than all of you combined.” Ye Fan nodded expressionlessly.

He had a lot of information, Shang clan was a huge force, Shang Xin Ci would not restrict Ye Fan in this aspect.

But the leader’s following words made Ye Fan’s expression change: “Hehe! Ye Fan, be careful. These two obstacles have changed, not long ago, White Demon appeared and defeated those lone cultivators. Right now, she has already gathered all the Gu Masters in these two rounds, becoming the mastermind. If you arrived a day later, we would have surrendered to White Demon as well.”

“White Demon? You mean, the Black and White Demons?” Ye Fan’s eyes shined brightly.

The leader of the Eighteen Sons of Wine Village nodded: “If it were not a famous demonic cultivator like White Demon, why would those lone cultivators submit? She has unfathomable strength, I would advise you to consider it thoroughly.”

Shang Xin Ci’s image appeared in Ye Fan’s mind, before Hei Tu appeared in his mind.

“No!” His body shook with determination, he spoke plainly, with an indisputable tone: “I will go.”

Central Continent.

In a nameless cave.

“Don’t come here, don’t come here!” Hong Yi’s clothes were torn, his muscular chest was exposed.

A morbidly obese female Gu Master chuckled as she approached him: “Little sweetheart, can you escape? You have ended up in my hands, accept your fate. Just submit to me, hahaha.”

Whoosh.

With a soft sound, Hong Yi’s clothes were all stripped away.

The female Gu Master jumped, about to press on him.

“No!” Hong Yi screamed in fear, at the moment of crisis, he unleashed two hundred percent of his potential, he broke the seal on his body and pushed the female Gu Master away.

“Impossible! How could you break the seal I created?” The female Gu Master was startled and angered.

“That is because I am here.” A miniman Gu Master appeared on Hong Yi’s shoulder.

“You finally came!” Hong Yi was about to cry.

“We got the thing, let’s go!” The miniman whispered.

The female Gu Master’s expression changed, she sensed something amiss, the muscles on her fat face distorted: “So that’s it! You two came here to steal my ecstasy water!”

Hong Yi, Ye Fan, Han Li...

Even though Fang Yuan could not see their experiences, he could sense their locations, and differentiate them.

Because of their relationship from Connect Luck, qi luck sensation could detect them across all five regions.

However, Hei Lou Lan and Ying Wu Xie were nowhere to be found.

From this, Fang Yuan concluded that Ying Wu Xie indeed had a way to conceal his own luck connection.

“Actually, so be it if he does. But Ying Wu Xie as a person is maturing, he will be much more problematic to deal with in the future.”

This was why, there was no strongest Immortal Gu, only strongest Gu Immortal.

The Gu Immortal was the core.

Ying Wu Xie’s matured mind, in Fang Yuan’s opinion, was far scarier than whatever strong Immortal Gu he had.

“The other party can deal with qi luck sensation, then in the future, I can only reduce the number of times I use this immortal killer move.”

After all, this was an immortal killer move, it required green grape immortal essence to activate.

Once it was used frequently, even Fang Yuan could not bear the cost.

This trip to Eastern Sea was rather successful, but his green grape immortal essence stockpile had already reduced sharply, he needed to replenish it.

From Fang Yuan’s perspective, the best situation was that he could find Ying Wu Xie’s location and exert pressure on him, or even kill him to get rid of the threat entirely.

But currently, the situation was not as he wished.

Fang Yuan thought about it, he could only choose the best alternative and focus on raising his strength.

But he knew deeply: “There was only one true inheritance of Hei Fan, but Shadow Sect has remnant forces in all five regions. In this trip to Eastern Sea, I did not get rid of Ying Wu Xie, the next time we meet, they might already greatly surpass me in strength.”

Shadow Sect did not lack resources, and they had at least four Gu Immortals on their side.

Right now, Fang Yuan could only do his best and develop, when they met again, hopefully, he would not be left in the dust by Ying Wu Xie and the rest.

Fang Yuan took out perceivable dao Immortal Gu.

This rank six information path Gu worm was now healthy and strong, it gave off an alluring light, it had been saved by Fang Yuan.

Breathing in deeply, Fang Yuan started to activate this Immortal Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1161: Testing Perceivable Dao Immortal Gu

Perceivable dao Immortal Gu!

This Immortal Gu had a round head and a black body, it had many segments in its body, once activated, it started to shine in starlight.

Blue starlight reflected on Fang Yuan’s entire body.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply and concentrated, he observed meticulously, preventing any accidents from occurring.

When Gu Masters use Gu, it was not safe. Many Gu worms had backlashes or weaknesses.

The same went for Immortal Gu, and because they were powerful, the drawbacks and weaknesses were also larger.

This was the first time Fang Yuan was using perceivable dao Immortal Gu, even though he used wisdom path methods to deduce it already, he still had to be careful.

Initially, starlight only shone on Fang Yuan’s body. But after a few breaths of time, starlight accumulated, it covered Fang Yuan’s entire body like a thin layer of water.

Starlight gathered into shining water, it got thicker and thicker, accumulating on Fang Yuan’s face, limbs, and body.

Afterwards, as time passed, the shining water faded, after more than ten breaths, it vanished.

The starlight around perceivable dao Immortal Gu also vanished, it returned to its black state.

But in Fang Yuan’s mind, there was some information, he could see how many dao marks he had in his body.

The greatest number were in snow path and ice path dao marks, reaching a total of sixteen thousand!

Fang Yuan learned this and his heart jumped.

A hundred dao marks meant that an Immortal Gu’s effect would increase by ten percent. A thousand dao marks would double its effect. Then sixteen thousand dao marks would result in sixteen times the amplification of effects!

This meant that when Fang Yuan uses an Immortal Gu from ice or snow path, the effect would be very strong. For example, compared to a Gu Immortal without any dao marks using an ice or snow path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan’s might would be seventeen times of this Gu Immortal!

And the most important point was, even though the power was seventeen times as much, Fang Yuan’s green grape immortal essence expenditure was the same as the other Gu Immortal.

This was different from City Well, even though the immortal killer move was a hundred times stronger, Fang Yuan’s green grape immortal essence expenditure rose by a similar proportion, he also spent a hundred times as much!

This was very fearsome.

Why did the battle strength of Gu Immortals as their cultivation level got higher, this was the reason.

Below ice and snow path, the second highest quantity of dao marks belonged to luck path, it had fifteen thousand!

“My luck path dao marks were basically all absorbed from Feng Jun’s accumulation, this person had a deep foundation, he personally ascended Immortal Succession Mountain and succeeded, inheriting a large number of luck path dao marks from it.”

“Oh, right. There was an earthly calamity with the giant disaster blazing tree, after passing it, I gained luck path dao marks as well.”

Below luck path dao marks were qi path and sound path dao marks.

Both had around thirteen thousand.

“Qi path dao marks mainly come from Qi Zai, he was a rank seven Gu Immortal who cultivated qi path, almost all of his qi path dao marks are absorbed into my body now.”

“Sound path dao marks came from Tang Song, this person is also rank seven, he is a supreme elder from a super force of Eastern Sea, Tang clan.”

Below that was blood path dao marks, about twelve thousand of them, they were obtained from Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s blood path Gu Immortal, Zheng Tuo.

Fang Yuan thought about it, he realized that among his dao marks, the rest of those that reached ten thousand were all from rank seven Gu Immortal corpses.

Among them, rule path dao marks had twelve thousand, they were from Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s rule path Gu Immortal, Chen Chi.

Water path dao marks were around eleven thousand, obtained from lone immortal Zhou Li after Fang Yuan absorbed his foundation.

Below that was transformation path and strength path, they summed up to nine thousand in total, close to ten thousand.

Other than that, there was an assortment of other paths, haphazardly mixed in.

For example, there was wind path, wood path, and food path.

“I went through a few earthly calamities, the wind flowers, spring dawn jade orioles, they gave me wood path and wind path dao marks. Food path actually exceeds these two paths, I guess the profound white flying salt calamity gave me food path dao marks.”

And fewer than these were earth path, time path, and information path.

“Earlier, I joined the alliance of variant humans, they used an earth path method to attain information path effects. Thus, I gained quite a number of earth path dao marks.”

“As for time path, they are probably from the hundred years harmony that I set with Chu Du, similar to the variant human alliance.”

“As for information path dao marks, they must be from the alliance agreement of Lang Ya Sect.”

The least in quantity, like phantom path, still had a hundred or so. This was the initial number of dao marks that sovereign immortal fetus brought with it.

Fang Yuan considered these numbers, from these, he had a glimpse of the nature of some calamities and tribulations.

He concluded.

Ice and snow path were highest, followed by luck path, qi path, sound path, rule path, water path, and blood path, they all had over ten thousand.

Below these were transformation path and strength path.

And below those were food path, wind path, wood path, earth path, time path, and others.

“I mainly fight with strength path, sword path, and time path methods. Familiar face and blood asset Immortal Gu are supplementary methods.”

“My five grandmaster attainments are in wisdom path, strength path, star path, blood path, and transformation path.”

Fang Yuan looked at his situation, it was quite awkward.

His paths with more than ten thousand dao marks were almost completely different from his main methods and five highest attainment levels.

According to Fang Yuan’s original cultivation plan, his focus was on transformation path.

But now, because he joined the four races alliance, this plan had a lot of barriers. He could not undergo tribulation in the icy plain, Fang Yuan could not draw out Reckless Savage’s true meaning. If he could not influence the earthly calamity, he would not gain transformation path dao marks, or even any rise in his attainment level.

Fang Yuan pondered.

“From this, it seems that most rank seven Gu Immortals have about ten thousand or more dao marks of their main path.”

“But I have only gone through four earth calamities, and already have sixteen thousand ice and snow path dao marks, while my transformation path and strength path dao marks are close to ten thousand. Looking at my wood path, wind path, and food path dao marks, my total gain from these calamities add up to thirty thousand.”

Evidently, this number was abnormal.

Gu Immortals with rank seven cultivation level had undergone up to around forty to fifty earthly calamities, four or five heavenly tribulations, and one or more grand tribulations.

After all these, their main paths only had about ten thousand dao marks.

Fang Yuan had only gone through four earthly calamities, but he had already gained three times the number of dao marks as them!

The stronger the calamities and tribulations, after passing them, the greater number of dao marks the Gu Immortal would obtain.

Ordinary Gu Immortals would have simpler tribulations. When they get to rank seven, they would have about ten thousand dao marks in their main path.

Those with higher aptitude and having high grade blessed lands, or even immortal apertures originating from the ten extreme physiques, would have more resources in their blessed lands, with greater fortune comes greater disaster, they would have stronger calamities and tribulations, and would gain more dao marks after passing them.

Fang Yuan’s situation was unique in the entire world!

Even if the sovereign immortal aperture had no resources, it was an immense amount of fortune in itself, the earthly calamity that befalls also reaches the limit of its strength.

And because he was a complete otherworldly demon, heaven’s will would try every possible way to kill Fang Yuan, causing his earthly calamity to be elevated to the maximum force allowed.

In his first four earthly calamities, each one was extremely difficult, Fang Yuan passed them with great danger, it was like he was walking on a tightrope. But now it seemed, the risks were great, but his gains were huge as well!

“Even though my current development and my methods don’t match, my dao mark growth is real. At this rate, after each earthly calamity and heavenly tribulation, my foundation would rise to a terrifying degree!”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan felt that all the difficulty and hard work he had gone through were worth it.

Even his attitude towards the earthly calamities had vaguely changed.

Each earthly calamity could be seen as a great chance to gain more dao marks!

“After a few more earthly calamities, how much would I grow? How much would my foundation grow?” Even Fang Yuan could not estimate this.

The sovereign immortal aperture surpassed the norm by too much.

His growth potential and speed could not be assessed by normal means!

The amount of dao marks Fang Yuan gained from four earthly calamities was multiple times that of an ordinary rank seven Gu Immortal’s dao marks in their main path!

After clarifying the number of dao marks in his body, Fang Yuan took out his Immortal Gu, using Perceivable Dao to investigative them.

But unfortunately, even though the starry water covered the surface of the Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan did not get any results.

He realized: “Man is the spirit of all living beings, Gu are the essence of heaven and earth. Mortal Gu have dao marks, while Immortal Gu have fragments of the Great Dao. Perceivable Dao can only investigate dao marks, it is ineffective against Great Dao fragments.”

Indeed, when he used perceivable dao Immortal Gu on mortal Gu and checked them, it worked like a charm.

But his tests were far from over.

Next, Fang Yuan took out immortal materials and used perceivable dao Immortal Gu to inspect them.

He realized that even though the dao marks in the immortal materials could be sensed by him, the expenditure of immortal essence rose when the quality and rank of the immortal material was higher.

“Perceivable dao Immortal Gu is an information path Immortal Gu, when looking at purely information path immortal materials, the immortal essence expenditure is lower. Other than that, any other type of immortal materials would have an element of conflicting dao marks. Thus, the immortal essence expenditure is greater.”

“As for why using it on me does not cause more immortal essence expenditure, that is because my dao marks are non-conflicting.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan had a stern expression on his face.

The property of non-conflicting dao marks of the sovereign immortal body was both a good thing and bad thing for him.

For ordinary Gu Immortals, when killer moves of other paths land on them, their dao marks would first reduce the might of the attacks, but Fang Yuan would have to face its full force. In fact, when his dao marks are of the same path as the attacking killer move, it might even get amplified!

With just this point, Fang Yuan could not fight at close range.

He was suited for long range battles, after creating some distance, he could amply think and evade attacks.

“Perceivable dao Immortal Gu cannot be used on Immortal Gu, and when using it on immortal materials, there is a conflict of dao marks. All in all, it is not very useful.” After Fang Yuan tried using it, he came to a conclusion.

He could only think of three ways to use perceivable dao Immortal Gu currently.

The first was to decipher immortal materials, preventing others from scamming him.

The second was to investigative a Gu Immortal’s dao marks, to probe their foundation and strength. But it was quite impractical, the time needed to use it was quite long, and the effect of the starry water was also very obvious, it was easy to take action to counter it.

The third was in refining Immortal Gu.

Investigation using Perceivable Dao could allow him to see the dao marks clearly during the process of refining Immortal Gu, as well as to make a comparison.

However, perceivable dao Immortal Gu was unable to find out the exact location of dao marks or influence them, thus, it had limited use.

At most, it could allow the Gu Immortal to turn from a ‘blind man’ to a ‘man with his eyes shut’.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1162: Soul Path Trap

After testing out perceivable dao Immortal Gu, it was time for Fang Yuan to cultivate his soul again.

He flew out of his cloud city, and went to Luo Po Valley.

However, the usage of perceivable dao Immortal Gu was not over.

Fang Yuan multitasked.

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Southern Border.

There were ample forests, it was no longer barren. Ordinary mountains were evenly distributed across Mini Southern Border in different places.

A strength path immortal zombie was controlled by Fang Yuan, carrying some immortal essence and perceivable dao Immortal Gu as it flew in the air.

A moment later, it slowly descended, landing on a small mountain.

Fang Yuan named this mountain Heaven Sealing Mountain.

The name was very grand, but the mountain was short and uninspiring. The mountain peak was being modified by Fang Yuan, there was a huge Gu formation on it, as the interior of the mountain was empty, it was sealing an immortal zombie body.

It was Fang Yuan’s original body.

The strength path immortal zombie entered the interior of the mountain and came to the center of the sealing Gu formation.

Fang Yuan’s original immortal zombie body was six meters tall, it had a miniature pair of bat wings on its back, it had a green face and sharp fangs, its eyes were shut. Its eight arms were all different, other than his two original arms, there was the asura arm, heavenly demon arm, blood wight arm, nightmare arm, plague arm, and the earth chief arm.

At this moment, the eight arms were spread out like a peacock’s tail, their fingers were tightly stabbed into the ground.

Because it was sealed, the immortal zombie’s heartbeat was very slow, there was only one beat every few minutes.

Light was emitting from the Gu formation, blowing on the immortal zombie body like a clear breeze, this showed that the sealing Gu formation was working fine.

Fang Yuan manipulated the strength path immortal zombie as he activated perceivable dao Immortal Gu, starlight gathered into flowing water as it covered the body of the immortal zombie.

A moment later, Fang Yuan got his results, he mentally snorted: “Something was done to it after all!”

His caution was truly wise.

Ying Wu Xie had left about ten thousand soul path dao marks in the immortal zombie body, it was more than Fang Yuan’s original strength path dao marks inside the body.

After storing away perceivable dao Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan manipulated the strength path immortal zombie, opening a slit in the sealing Gu formation as the strength path immortal zombie pulled something out of its body.

A Gu Immortal’s soul shrieked as it was dragged out by the strength path immortal zombie.

“Spare me, spare me!”

“I will acknowledge you as my master, please spare my life!!”

The Gu Immortal’s soul struggled intensely, it seemed to have sensed its doomsday.

Fang Yuan manipulated the strength path immortal zombie expressionlessly as his demonic claws controlled the Gu Immortal’s soul, preventing it from moving.

In the dark space in the mountain, the sealing Gu formation shone with light, not only did it not bring the warmth of light, it gave the environment a cold eerie feeling.

The Gu Immortal’s soul cried out, it made the atmosphere even more creepy.

The strength path immortal zombie moved slowly, pressing the Gu Immortal soul into Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body.

The Gu Immortal soul was unwilling, but Fang Yuan was amply prepared, he forcefully stuffed it into the immortal zombie body.

Soon after, Fang Yuan used the Gu formation, activating the sealing Gu formation.

Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body did not move, it lay on the ground like a statue. But after the Gu Immortal soul entered it, the body started to shake.

Soon, the shaking intensified.

Suddenly, the shaking stopped entirely, Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body stopped moving, he opened his eyes, they were red like blood!

Roar!

He opened his mouth and growled, the loud noise was echoing in the mountain’s interior, like the rumbling of thunder.

Fang Yuan sneered, the strength path immortal zombie that he controlled did not move, it looked down at the immortal zombie body.

Indeed, due to the Gu formation’s restrictions, and the arrangements done to the Gu Immortal soul earlier, Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body struggled to get up but could not, feeling weakness all over.

“What are you doing, what are you trying to do?” The Gu Immortal soul screamed.

He did not understand Fang Yuan’s intentions, he felt an utter wave of fear and horror.

Soon, the Gu Immortal soul screamed in a high pitch tone: “You, what did you do to me? My soul is melting, you have a vicious heart, I only have my soul left, and you still refused to let me off!!”

Fang Yuan controlled the strength path immortal zombie, he watched with concentration, he ignored the Gu Immortal soul’s screaming and crying.

“The soul would melt if they enter huh...” Fang Yuan investigated with all sorts of methods.

“Oh, this is an amazing soul path method. This Gu Immortal soul could not even last a short period of time!” Fang Yuan gasped, at his will, the strength path immortal zombie stretched out its right arm, trying to pull out the Gu Immortal soul from the immortal zombie body again.

But at the next moment, a ghost face appeared on the chest of Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body, cackling at Fang Yuan loudly!

An immense strength burst out as the strength path immortal zombie took three steps back.

Looking at it again, the ghost face had vanished.

Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body stopped moving, returning to the state of a statue.

Fang Yuan controlled the strength path immortal zombie, carefully getting closer, Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body did not move at all.

Fang Yuan continued to probe.

The Gu Immortal soul that he stuffed into the immortal zombie body earlier had completely melted, not even a bit of it was left.

“The melting speed is really fast, once the soul goes in, it is like a deep trap. Even if I pull it out, it cannot escape from the trap!”

Fang Yuan analyzed mentally.

Ying Wu Xie’s trap was incredibly vicious, the method was extraordinary.

Fang Yuan was glad that he was vigilant, he did not take a risk to enter the body, otherwise, the consequences would be severe.

After several inspections, Fang Yuan used perceivable dao Immortal Gu again, inspecting his immortal zombie body.

“What is going on? The soul path dao marks did not decrease, they even rose by two thousand!” Fang Yuan was shocked.

At this moment, Fang Yuan was completely stunned by Shadow Sect’s incredible soul path methods.

Melting the Gu Immortal soul was a huge problem, but Fang Yuan could deal with it.

The simplest and crudest method was to use Gu Immortal souls and constantly stuff them into the immortal zombie body so that the trap would weaken after several activations, before breaking down eventually.

But Ying Wu Xie’s trap was not normal!

It not only prevented the soul that entered Fang Yuan’s immortal body body from leaving, it even melted the soul and after that, strengthened itself, to replenish its expenditure and become stronger!

“Truly impressive! In this case, my action of sending Gu Immortal souls to probe it is restricted. Unless I have a method that can truly target the soul path dao marks in this body. Otherwise, I would only be making this trap more powerful!”

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth.

Actually, the Eastern Sea information path inheritance would have had many methods that targeted dao marks.

This could be seen from the information path dao mark insignia in flying sword Immortal Gu. Flying sword Immortal Gu was a dao mark fragment of sword path, but information path dao marks were added to it, the conflict between different paths was resolved. It was very difficult to achieve this, even rank eight Gu Immortals might have problems with it.

Furthermore, the quasi rank eight skeleton that Fang Yuan obtained was also clear evidence.

After a Gu Immortal dies, their path’s dao marks would go into the immortal aperture as it forms a blessed land outside. If a blessed land did not form, these dao marks would scatter into nothingness and return to the five regions.

But this information path Gu Immortal could actually directly carve this bone path Gu Immortal’s dao marks into his skeleton. The method was very special, it was rather unthinkable.

In the end, perceivable dao Immortal Gu even proved that this information path Gu Immortal had special methods that targeted dao marks.

“The complete information path true inheritance might have really had methods against dao marks. It is a pity I obtained this true inheritance too late, most of the Gu worms are dead, and the information path methods are lost.”

How could everything be perfect in this world?

Fang Yuan could obtain Hei Fan’s complete true inheritance, it was already very lucky.

The Eastern Sea information path inheritance had been there for too long, and the information path Gu Immortal had just killed his enemy, he created the inheritance on the verge of death. The contents of the true inheritance could not be preserved for long.

Even though he obtained perceivable dao Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan still needed to get more information path methods that could prevent him from being restricted by his alliance agreements.

"Searching for an information path Immortal Gu that can break alliance agreements is one way. But I need to keep it a secret, I cannot find Lang Ya Sect for help on this. Let alone getting Lang Ya land spirit to help me refine such an information path Immortal Gu."

Information path inheritances would not be easy to obtain, and Fang Yuan's information path attainment level was at ordinary level, he could not design his own Immortal Gu recipe and innovate.

In this trip to Eastern Sea, even though his gains were not few, Fang Yuan's original goal was not achieved.

He still sought out and lacked information path methods.

As his focus turned away from the sovereign immortal aperture, Fang Yuan began to focus on his soul path cultivation.

An hour later, he left Luo Po Valley.

He rigidly stuck to daily soul path cultivation. Because his soul path foundation grew rapidly, Fang Yuan could stay inside Luo Po Valley for a fifty percent longer time now.

However, now that Fang Yuan saw the trap inside his immortal zombie body, he was wavering on his plan of cultivating his soul.

Ying Wu Xie knew that Fang Yuan had Luo Po Valley and Dang Hun Mountain, how could he not consider this? Cultivating his soul was not a wrong decision, but by the time Fang Yuan gained enough soul foundation to resist the trap, a long time would have passed, he would have to put in a huge amount of effort!

And Fang Yuan's time and energy were not unlimited. He needed to spend a lot of time and effort in planning, devising ways to advance his cultivation and development.

"But I have to leave the matter of information path for later. The fifth earthly calamity is coming."

This earthly calamity was different from the previous four.

The last four times, Fang Yuan used immortal tribulation tempering aperture to undergo tribulation in the northern icy plain. But now, Fang Yuan could not stay in the northern icy plain, he had to find a new tribulation location.

What location should he choose?

A few days later, Chu Du sent him a letter, saying that he would help Fang Yuan undergo tribulation, in exchange for Reckless Savage's true meaning.

At once, Fang Yuan was in a situation with his hands tied!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1163: Chu Du versus Heavenly Lord Bai Zu

Northern Plains, Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Chu Du stood in the air, the Immortal Gu aura on him was emanating, his immortal essence was being consumed rapidly.

“Open!”

Suddenly, he shouted, his eyes burst with bright light, his body shook intensely.

The ground several meters away from him started to crack open under the power of his immortal killer move.

Suddenly, this opening became larger, it extended out, a hundred feet, a thousand feet, ten thousand feet!

After tens of breaths, Hei Fan grotto-heaven stopped shaking, a huge trench of tens of thousands of feet opened up along the ground.

Chu Du had created an artificial Earth Trench with his strength alone, he was indeed an expert that stood tall and proud in Northern Plains!

He breathed roughly, looking at the trench below him, he frowned.

“It is not perfect yet, even if it is long enough, it is not deep enough. After all, earth path Gu Immortals are most skilled in doing this.”

All paths had their own specialties.

Earth path Gu Immortals were particularly skilled at changing the terrain of the ground.

But Chu Du was a famous strength path Gu Immortal.

“There is another way, I can buy many rockman slaves and modify this place. However... forget it, this trench is enough for now.”

Thinking of this, Chu Du took out a huge object from his immortal aperture.

This object was huge like a small mountain, it was a red and black meatball, it was hot and round, vibrating weakly.

Chu Du used his strength path hand, carrying this huge thing and slowly placing it into this newly created earth trench.

This huge thing landed in the trench, once it came into contact with the soil, it spread out, becoming flat, spreading across several li.

Next, its color started to change.

Initially, it was black and red, but after spreading out, it took in earth qi, as its color changed. A portion became blue, another became green, part of it resembled jade, while another side was red like fire.

Chu Du watched from above, seeing this color changing scene in the earth trench, it was quite a dazzling sight.

These were multicolored guts!

A rank seven immortal material that came from deep within Earth Trench.

Chu Du acted quickly, taking out dozens of multicolored guts from his immortal aperture, tossing them in.

The earth trench that was empty earlier was completely filled, no more multicolored guts could be put in.

After carefully inspecting it, Chu Du let out a breath, his body slowly ascended into the air.

He looked far away, taking in the view of Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

When he took it over from Fang Yuan, it was barren and completely ransacked by Fang Yuan, it was a terrible sight. But now, it had mountains and rivers, the resources were prudently distributed.

Undoubtedly, these resources were all relocated from Chu Du’s own immortal aperture.

Even though he was just a lone immortal, his foundation in terms of resources was very deep.

“The initial developments are complete. In the future, Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s production will far surpass my own immortal aperture.”

“Looking at the time, Liu Guan Yi is about to undergo tribulation. Hmm?!”

Suddenly, Chu Du’s expression froze, his sharp gaze pierced through the sky, he saw a twisted figure squeezing into Hei Fan grotto-heaven with much difficulty.

“Who is it? You dare to invade my grotto-heaven!” Chu Du shouted, his body flew over like a gust of wind.

After the figure got into the grotto-heaven, he smiled at Chu Du: “Domination Immortal, as a junior, your talent is quite good. In such a short time, you have already taken ownership of this place.”

The invader spoke big words, against the great Northern Plains expert Domination Immortal Chu Du, he regarded himself as a senior.

But Chu Du did not rebuke him, he had a heavy expression: “It is you, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.”

It turned out, the invader of Hei Fan grotto-heaven was none other than one of the rank eight Gu Immortals in Northern Plains, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu!

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was originally a lone cultivator, but in recent years, because Fang Yuan destroyed Imperial Court blessed land and Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he saw hope in creating a super force.

He had planned this long ago, inside his Bai Zu grotto-heaven, he had countless blood related descendants and even multiple Gu Immortals.

Initially, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang worked together to deal with Old Ancestor Xue Hu, even though they lost, he had obtained Yao Huang’s support.

After that, when Hei tribe was exterminated, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu used the chance to take over Hei tribe’s Iron Eagle blessed land, and also taking in all of Hei tribe’s remnant forces.

Right now, Bai Zu tribe had officially taken over Hei tribe, becoming one of the righteous path super forces publicly recognized in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

However, Northern Plains was different from the other four regions, most of the super forces were of the Huang Jin bloodline. As an outsider, Bai Zu tribe was quite unique. Even though Heavenly Lord Bai Zu knew this and tried to be amicable with the other super forces, giving up most of Hei tribe's resources to satisfy their appetite.

But after he officially created Bai Zu tribe, he realized that the surrounding forces were still targeting him. Because he had rank eight cultivation level, these super forces did not give him problems openly, but they created many small issues indirectly.

In order to defend his hard work, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu could only stay to guard there personally. As a result, he wasted a lot of time.

Until not long ago, when the surrounding righteous path Huang Jin tribes realized they could not gain anything anymore, they gave up and Bai Zu tribe's situation became better, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu finally rushed to Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

The four supreme elders of Hei tribe did not know the exact location of Hei Fan grotto-heaven, but they knew which area it was in.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu acted secretly, coming here and spending a lot of effort to find out where Hei Fan grotto-heaven was.

After getting enough information, he took action and started to invade Hei Fan grotto-heaven!

“Chu Du, you are an astute person. If you back off, I will not make it hard for you, I was a lone cultivator myself.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu said calmly, urging Chu Du to give up.

Chu Du's lips curled up, he directly attacked!

Rumble!

With an intense clash, dust and clouds rose.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was destroyed by Chu Du in one move, there was a huge pit in the area he was standing at.

“Sending just an illusion, and you want to take Hei Fan grotto-heaven?” Chu Du snorted, turning his head.

The space behind him suddenly distorted, as a small centipede entered Hei Fan grotto-heaven from the outside.

Soon, the distortion vanished, and the centipede turned into Heavenly Lord Bai Zu's appearance, it was exactly the same as before.

“Nice method.” The second Heavenly Lord Bai Zu looked at Chu Du, praising as he commented: “You attacked earlier without any warning, and not a bit of Immortal Gu aura leaked out, is this your immortal killer move formless strength?”

Chu Du did not answer, he asked: “Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, even if you have rank eight cultivation level, to snatch Hei Fan grotto-heaven away from me, it will not be easy. Because I have already developed this place for a while, I have made many arrangements.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu smiled: “No matter how long you have been here, or how many arrangements you have made, I can break all of them with my own strength.”

He spoke calmly, but he had an aura of confidence and power.

There was only one reason. He was a rank eight Gu Immortal, while Chu Du was rank seven.

Chu Du did not rebuke him, he nodded and admitted: “You are right, I cannot resist the might of a rank eight. But Hei Fan grotto-heaven is my territory, how can I give it up so easily?”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu shook his head: “Hei Fan grotto-heaven is good, but it is not essential. If the great Domination Immortal dies in my hands because of it, isn’t it a waste?”

Chu Du’s eyes shined with a cold light: “Hmph! Too much bullshit, if you want to take Hei Fan grotto-heaven, just these small methods will not work. Show your true abilities, I want to see the might of a rank eight.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was silent for a while, before saying: “Fine.”

As he said that, around Chu Du, in an enormous surrounding range, countless distorted figures appeared, huge quantities of centipede Gu went into Hei Fan grotto-heaven, turning into Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s appearance.

In an instant, Chu Du was surrounded by over ten thousand figures of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

Event though he was encircled, he was not nervous, he even showed a look of disdain.

“Just illusions, no matter how many, they are useless!” Chu Du raised his right hand, his fingers were spread out, before clenching together, forming a tight fist.

Boom!

A huge strength shot out from all directions, in the blink of an eye, all of the figures of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu were exterminated.

“You made many preparations indeed.” Another figure of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu came from afar.

Chu Du’s pupils shrunk, the Heavenly Lord Bai Zu in front of him was not the main body either, but it was different from the illusions that Chu Du had destroyed earlier.

Chu Du could sense the aura of Immortal Gu on this Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

“Let’s fight in the sky.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was the first to fly up.

Chu Du followed him willingly.

There were lots of resources on the ground, he had placed them with much effort, Chu Du did not want these resources to be destroyed.

This was also Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s concern.

He had taken in Hei tribe, and built Bai Zu tribe, he made great losses. He had already paid a huge price to negotiate with the other four rank eight experts. Even though he took in Hei tribe, most of Hei tribe’s resources were distributed to the other forces to satisfy them.

Thus, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had a huge desire towards Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

But when he got here, he saw that the grotto-heaven had far less resources than he had estimated.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu quickly realized that most of the resources were newly added. He naturally thought: Did Chu Du store those resources away already?

Thus, Chu Du became his greatest target.

An intense battle unfolded in the sky of Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

One side was the clone of a rank eight great expert, while the other was a famous rank seven expert, the two sides fought like rumbling thunder, the entire world was shaking.

After more than ten rounds of fighting, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s clone could not take it anymore, it lost.

But soon, a second Heavenly Lord clone appeared and joined the fight, it also brought immortal essence and Immortal Gu with it, it was stronger than the first clone.

Chu Du fought against two enemies, but he got stronger as they fought, after another ten rounds, he had the advantage, he was about to execute the killing blow when a third Heavenly Lord clone appeared.

Chu Du’s expression changed, he realized something was amiss!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1164: Fifth Earthly Calamity

“Heavenly Lord Bai Zu has a method to invade grotto-heavens, but his main body cannot come in, he can only send clones.”

“Hei Fan grotto-heaven has a huge space, and the brass bell heavenly spirit was destroyed by Liu Guan Yi, I cannot see the entire place, I do not know how many Heavenly Lord Bai Zu clones there are at this moment!”

“Every time I am about to kill a clone, new ones come in. This shows that he definitely has more than three, they have already formed and are ready to enter battle. Once I understand their methods and gain the advantage, when I am about to deal the killing blow, they would show up to save the other clones, this is definitely him trying to stall for time!”

Thoughts flashed in Chu Du’s mind, he felt a bad sensation.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was stalling for time, he definitely had his motives!

Even though Chu Du could not decipher his true motive, there was one unquestionable point — he could not fight according to the enemy’s tempo.

Thinking of this, Chu Du erupted, his body expanded rapidly, turning into a ten meter giant.

Immortal killer move — Battle Strength Transpiration!

His entire body turned red, all of the pores on his body opened up, as his sweat turned into steam, surrounding his body.

Next, he raised his right hand to face the sky palm up, his left hand was facing the ground, he chanted softly: “Try this move — Heaven and Earth Combined Strength.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s three clones could not move, they felt like the entire world was sending an unparalleled strength that restricted them, crushing towards them from all directions.

Chu Du did not feel well either.

The muscles in his entire body were tense, he had used all of his strength. Within the steam, his face was bright red, his eyes were bloodshot, especially his two arms, they were bulging with beings resembling moving earthworms, it was quite terrifying.

His right arm moved down, his left arm moved up, as if two hills were converging towards the center with great difficulty.

In his immortal aperture, red date immortal essence expended rapidly.

As Chu Du did this, the three Heavenly Lord Bai Zu clones felt horrible. They felt that the force around them was increasing, they were almost getting crushed.

Seeing that these three clones were about to explode, at the crucial moment, the fourth, fifth, and sixth clones came to save them.

Boom boom!

With two loud sounds, the first clone and second clone were completely smashed by Chu Du, they were reduced to dust, but their Immortal Gu and immortal essence were missing, they were not destroyed.

“What an amazing killer move, it can attack, defend, and even immobilize multiple targets, it is almost like an incomplete battlefield killer move!” The third clone was saved, but it still felt lingering fear.

“No matter how many clones come, it is useless! I prepared this next move for rank eight existences. Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, if you refuse to show up, you will not be able to save these clones.” Chu Du shouted, preparing his attack.

He had spread out his arms and legs in a ‘大’ shape, his hands were facing heaven, palms upward, aura of Immortal Gu and mortal Gu were emanating from his body, changing constantly, just the aura alone was far superior than the heaven and earth combined strength earlier, it was truly shocking.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s clones all moved back, they used their defensive killer moves, preparing themselves.

Boom boom boom.

At the next moment, the Heavenly Lord clones self-detonated without any warning.

“What move is this?” Outside Hei Fan grotto-heaven, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s main body frowned deeply.

Even though his clones were all destroyed, he still had memories of the battle, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu could learn about Chu Du’s mystical attack.

“This killer move is formless and covers a range. Once one is within range, from within, an internal strength would be produced and detonate the body. Hmm? The area that it covers is actually so huge!”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu frowned deeply.

Inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven, Chu Du covered his mysterious strength path killer move over the entirety of Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

It caused all of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s clones to self-detonate.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu smiled: “Interesting, it seems that I cannot deal with Chu Du unless I enter personally.”

Once he said that, he used an immortal killer move.

A profound white centipede figure flew out of his body, it drilled into space, causing a huge distorted shadow to appear in Hei Fan grotto-heaven instantly.

Next, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu took large strides, stepping into the shadow.

“Want to come in?” Chu Du laughed, stomping his feet.

A strength path leg flew out and kicked the distorted shadow, sending Heavenly Lord Bai Zu out.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was stunned, before showing a furious and helpless expression: “This Hei Fan grotto-heaven is easy to defend and hard to attack, I will need twenty breaths of time to enter it. In this process, there is enough time for Chu Du to stop me. If I send clones in, they will instantly self-detonate, they are useless...”

Chu Du was completely defending, hiding inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu felt difficulty against this well defended fortress.

“Heavenly Lord Bai Zu is attacking Hei Fan grotto-heaven?” Fang Yuan held Chu Du’s letter of emergency support as he let out a breath of air.

His worry was lifted.

Even though Chu Du was his ally, in order to defend Hei Fan grotto-heaven, using the properties of the grotto-heaven to contest with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, there were great advantages for Fang Yuan in this.

Lang Ya land spirit wanted to recruit Chu Du, it was very difficult. But if it succeeded, and Chu Du joined Lang Ya Sect, it would greatly affect Fang Yuan’s current status. If he failed, Fang Yuan’s relationship with the variant humans would be exposed, the situation would be unthinkable.

Fang Yuan could only stall it, one day at a time.

Because of the alliance agreement, Fang Yuan could not lie to Chu Du, especially in terms of the tribulation. Fang Yuan could not continue to undergo tribulation in the northern icy plain, this way, Chu Du would make guesses, it would expose the snowmen and rockmen under the northern icy plain. If this was settled poorly, and Chu Du attacked the tribe, Fang Yuan would be trapped in the middle, the situation would be very awkward and dangerous.

Thus, he could not make alliances casually, in fact, most Gu Immortals were very wary when making alliances.

Fang Yuan had originally intended to use his time path killer move to slow the time in his immortal aperture, and inform Chu Du about it.

This was not lying, it was the truth.

Next, Fang Yuan would hasten his immortal aperture’s time, before starting his tribulation, he would inform Chu Du that the situation had changed. This way, Chu Du would not make it in time, even though it would ruin his relationship and trust, it was the best way.

Chu Du was very astute, there were no loopholes in his alliance agreement, Fang Yuan could only think of this roundabout way.

This method was very troublesome however, not only would it waste Fang Yuan’s immortal essence, it would also cause a rift between Fang Yuan and Chu Du.

All in all, it was troublesome.

But now, Chu Du was forced to defend Hei Fan grotto-heaven, he was engaging Heavenly Lord Bai Zu in battle, he could not leave.

Fang Yuan mentally praised: “Heavenly Lord Bai Zu really came in the nick of time, he solved a huge problem for me!”

“For that to have happened, my luck was pretty good.”

Fang Yuan started to reply using the information path mortal Gu.

In the letter, he expressed concern and sympathy for Chu Du’s encounter, he showed his intense fury and hatred towards Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s invasion. He said that he would definitely help Chu Du and would not break the alliance agreement. But!

His tribulation was coming, he had to get through this first before helping Chu Du, and getting rid of the huge threat, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

He hoped that Chu Du would understand.

Chu Du quickly replied. He showed his understanding and told Fang Yuan: It was not hard to deal with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s invasion, he had already rallied allies to support him, he hoped that Fang Yuan could settle his problem and quickly help.

Fang Yuan quickly replied: He would do his best, and all that he could, he hoped that Chu Du could hold on!

A few days later.

Fang Yuan left Lang Ya blessed land, using the super Gu formation to teleport out.

Next, he rushed to Earth Trench without stopping, choosing an appropriate location to place his immortal aperture.

The main part of Northern Plains’ Earth Trench had seventeen sections, they were managed by Zombie Alliance. But after the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Zombie Alliance was used by Shadow Sect and sacrificed, used to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, it caused the Zombie Alliances in all five regions to vanish overnight.

However, Shadow Sect also had their arrangements.

For Northern Plain Zombie Alliance, the headquarters, Dark Flow City, had sunken into Earth Trench, other than the remaining members of Shadow Sect, nobody could find it.

Fang Yuan came to an Earth Trench, it was not the one in Zombie Alliance. There were large numbers of lone immortals and demonic immortals there, they were all trying to look for Dark Flow City. Ying Wu Xie and the rest might have even gone to the secret base there, unless Fang Yuan was a fool, he would not undergo tribulation there.

Most parts of Earth Trench were split up by super forces, or were occupied by Gu Immortal experts.

The part Fang Yuan chose had been completely excavated, nobody wanted it anymore, after countless battles, it was barren and empty, nobody came here anymore.

Fang Yuan chose this place purely because this place had rich earth path dao marks, as well as many dark path dao marks too.

Immortal tribulation tempering aperture!

Fang Yuan successfully activated this immortal killer move.

Next, he opened his immortal aperture’s entrance, as heaven and earth qi rushed in.

Soon, the fifth earthly calamity formed.

The sky turned dark, a huge skeletal shadow covered up half of the sky.

The skeleton cackled, opening its mouth and spitting out a dark current that resembled a black python.

The dark current flew rapidly, everywhere it went, the soil became corroded, in an instant, they melted completely and turned into puddles of black rotten water, emitting a foul smell.

Earthly calamity – Corrosive Dark Current!

Fang Yuan recognized the earthly calamity, he quickly dealt with it.

The corrosive dark current was hard to deal with, Fang Yuan did not have any methods that resisted it, he could only fight it using his strong offensive methods.

The skeleton continued to spit, as waves of corrosive dark current rushed towards Fang Yuan like seas of snakes.

Heaven’s will had purposely raised the calamity’s power to its limit, Fang Yuan was in a difficult state.

This earthly calamity did not have Reckless Savage’s true meaning. It was completely controlled by heaven’s will, thus, it was multiple times as powerful than before.

However, Fang Yuan had grown drastically in strength, forget about the Eastern Sea information path inheritance, he had also obtained Hei Fan’s true inheritance, he had many time path immortal killer moves to use. Even though he looked distressed, rushing around frantically, he had been preserving his strength to deal with unexpected situations.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1165: Ye Fan versus Bai Ning Bing

“Huff...” Fang Yuan looked at the black rotten ground in front of him as he let out a deep sigh.

“I have finally passed the fifth earthly calamity!”

Fang Yuan spent a lot of effort in dealing with the corrosive dark current, but he had Hei Fan’s true inheritance, he did not have obvious weaknesses. After persevering for a while, he passed the tribulation.

The terrain here had completely changed, he needed to spend a lot of effort to get it back to its previous condition.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture was huge enough, this area in Mini Western Desert was originally barren to begin with, Fang Yuan’s losses were minimal.

In fact, he could even preserve this area and not modify it.

Fortune and disaster were correlated, there were two sides of the same coin.

This place could not cultivate normal crops, but it was now an extreme environment, many types of special fierce beasts and plants could live and grow here.

Of course, there was heaven’s will lingering here, Fang Yuan needed to use a lot of self will Gu to get rid of it.

But it was a small matter.

The important thing was, the fifth earthly calamity was over.

Successfully returning to Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan concluded that even though the fifth earthly calamity was powerful, beyond the first four, it did not greatly surpass his expectations.

There was one crucial reason why he passed it, Fang Yuan’s strength had grown far quicker than the growth of the earthly calamity’s power.

“It seems that earthly calamities themselves are no longer a problem, they can no longer stop me for now, the problem is human calamities!”

Fang Yuan thought about the fourth earthly calamity, the human calamity was too terrifying, he still felt a chill in his heart.

That human calamity was terrifying, even the immemorial rock dragon had appeared. Its might had greatly exceeded Fang Yuan’s limits, thanks to his bluffing, he evaded the danger and survived it.

“That means, heaven’s will is conjuring human calamities now because earthly calamities can no longer kill me?”

“Precisely so, heaven’s will is plotting and scheming to use human calamities to destroy me.”

“In this tribulation, I did not encounter any human calamities. That is because I am a complete otherworldly demon, heaven’s will cannot decipher my plans, and because I moved very quickly, it did not have enough time to construct a human calamity!”

Heaven’s will was not a fake will, it could not have such an obvious influence. Especially towards the higher cultivation level targets, or human Gu Immortals, having the highest intelligence.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan felt that he should not undergo tribulations at fixed locations.

Constantly undergoing tribulation in the northern icy plain allowed heaven’s will a chance to affect many Gu Immortals subconsciously, it nearly killed Fang Yuan.

“But this time, I purposely chose Earth Trench because I wanted an earth path calamity, to increase the number of earth path dao marks in my sovereign immortal aperture. In the end, it was a dark path earthly calamity.”

Inside Earth Trench, earth path and dark path dao marks were in the highest quantity.

Fang Yuan successfully activated immortal tribulation tempering aperture, the earthly calamity had to be from these two.

But heaven’s will did not want Fang Yuan to get what he wanted, thus, an earth path earthly calamity did not form, it was dark path instead.

Fang Yuan used perceivable dao Immortal Gu to inspect it, he realized that his dark path dao marks had increased, they were very close to ten thousand.

“Earlier, my dark path dao mark foundation was very weak, but in this earthly calamity, I gained at least nine thousand dao marks! I made quite some gains.”

Even though Fang Yuan’s dark path attainment level was low, he had a dark path Immortal Gu — Dark Limit!

This Immortal Gu was very useful to him, he could conceal himself from heaven’s will’s perception to an extent. Fairy Jiang Yu had once used this to conceal Hei Lou Lan’s ten extreme physique aura completely.

For this tribulation, Fang Yuan only spent a few days.

Over in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, it was still at a deadlock.

Chu Du had rank seven peak battle strength, while Hei Fan grotto-heaven was heavily guarded by him, it was impregnable.

However, Fang Yuan could tell that it was Heavenly Lord Bai Zu who had the upper hand, even though he could not break through and was pushed back repeatedly.

But Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was merely attacking, he could attack or retreat, he could decide completely when he fought or left. Chu Du could only defend using the grotto-heaven, he did not know when Heavenly Lord Bai Zu would attack or what methods he would use. He was in a passive position.

“Chu Du is bound to fail at this rate. But he is still far from reaching his limit.” Fang Yuan mentally assessed the situation.

He thought, if Chu Du died in this battle, would he benefit or lose out from it?

After consideration, Fang Yuan concluded: It was better for Chu Du to be alive.

There were several points.

Firstly, Fang Yuan had invested heavily in Chu Du. The first investment was the rank seven Immortal Gu Calamity Beckoning. If Chu Du died, Calamity Beckoning would perish.

Secondly, Chu Du had an alliance agreement with him, he could not abandon him if he requested assistance.

Thirdly, the calamities and tribulations were only going to get stronger from now, Chu Du's Calamity Beckoning could help Fang Yuan divert a lot of the pressure. His existence was useful for Fang Yuan's development.

Fourthly, if he helped Chu Du defend Hei Fan grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan would be able to relocate his storage pool, using Hei Fan grotto-heaven to produce heavenly crystals and hatch the upper extreme heavenly eagle once more.

“It seems that I need to take action and help against Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.” Fang Yuan made his decision.

However, he was not in a rush to act.

Chu Du could continue to suffer, he had just undergone tribulation, he needed to rest and restock his green grape immortal essence.

This was a justifiable reason, it did not break the alliance agreement, even if Chu Du knew, he could not blame Fang Yuan.

Southern Border, Sun Crown Mountain.

This mountain was green and lush, it had stood for a long time. During each sunrise, there would be a halo over the mountain peak, resembling a bright crown, thus it was named Sun Crown Mountain.

But now was night time.

The bright moon was radiating over the entire mountain.

“Who else?” Ye Fan stood arrogantly, his arms were crossed in front of his chest, he was standing on a huge rock.

Opposite him, a group of Gu Masters were shivering, hesitating.

They were fearful of Ye Fan!

“Ye Fan, you were chased out by your clan, you are also a lone cultivator. We are also lone cultivators, why are you making life hard for us?” A Gu Master spoke.

Ye Fan sneered: “Before we fought, all of you sought to overwhelm me with numbers, why did you not say that? Also, are you considered lone cultivators? Dominating this mountain and plundering the surroundings, as Gu Masters, you bully the weak and fear the strong, you slaughter and humiliate mortals. You are all vicious fiends, you are demonic cultivators, you are not lone cultivators!”

“We are innocent. The ringleader and main culprit has already died at your hands, we were forced to comply.”

“Also, ever since we submitted to boss White Demon, we have stopped committing crimes!”

The Gu Masters cried out.

Ye Fan’s expression eased.

According to the intel he obtained, the situation was indeed like this.

Ever since Bai Ning Bing took control of Sun Crown Mountain and Silent Flow Mountain, she had restrained the demons, taking them in, but did not give them any evil orders.

“Hmph, if not for this, you would all be dead now, how could I let you live?” Ye Fan snorted, he continued: “I represent Shang clan, I need to get through Sun Crown and Silent Flow Mountain, I will wait here, get White Demon to come and see me. Otherwise, tomorrow, I will slaughter everyone here!”

Ye Fan was very perceptive, he was not a rash brute.

He knew that Silent Flow Mountain’s defense was far stronger than Sun Crown Mountain, he came here alone, he could not take it down through force.

Alerting the enemy and luring out White Demon was the best method.

But the moment he said that, he heard an icy voice resound: “No need to call them, because I am here already.”

Saying so, more than ten figures appeared partway up the mountain.

The demons saw this and cheered loudly: “Boss White Demon! Boss White Demon has come to save us!”

Ye Fan watched with caution, he saw that all of the people who came were Gu Masters, they were stronger than the ones on Sun Crown Mountain. Among them, there were many demonic path and lone cultivators, there were also several famous people with their own unique traits.

But what truly attracted his attention was the woman at the center of them.

This woman was dressed in white clothes, her silvery hair was shiny, like a tassel, it extended to her waist, her deep blue eyes were clear like a lake, they were calm and peaceful, her skin was pale like snow, her face was cold and aloof, but her unparalleled beauty could not be concealed.

At this moment, she was lying down on a bamboo chair, she was relaxing and her eyes were shut, like she was resting. There were four snowmen carrying her chair.

Ye Fan’s heart shook.

He had roamed outside and seen many things.

But in terms of appearance, Bai Ning Bing was simply a divine beauty! The only person comparable to her in looks was Shang Xin Ci.

“Boss White Demon, we have tried our best to defend, we waited for you so desperately. You have finally arrived.” At this time, a demonic path Gu Master tumbled and crawled towards Bai Ning Bing, calling out loudly as he showed a fawning expression.

“You, who avoided the enemy and refused to fight, deserve death.” Bai Ning Bing opened her eyes slightly, blue light flashed in her eyes as that kneeling Gu Master froze completely at the next moment, he was beyond dead.

The demons were shocked, the few experts behind Bai Ning Bing shook, they recalled the terror when they had first met her.

Ye Fan was also shocked, before he burst into anger. His good first impression of Bai Ning Bing was completely gone, it was replaced with deep anger.

“As expected of a demon! You even kill your own men!” Ye Fan shouted, jumping down the rock, staring at Bai Ning Bing angrily.

Bai Ning Bing smiled lightly, stretching out her jade finger, pointing lightly at Ye Fan.

At that moment, Ye Fan felt a cold sensation, covering his left leg.

He looked down, only to see that on his left leg, a huge piece of ice had instantly formed.

“What move is this? I had already used my defensive killer move, but it could not block it at all?!” Ye Fan was extremely shocked.

All along, he had used these methods without fail. But now, it had completely failed in front of Bai Ning Bing.

“What cultivation level does White Demon have? My methods were given to me by Lady Shang Qing Qing, a Gu Immortal! It was actually useless!! Looking at her expression, she still has not put in all her effort. Will I die in this battle?” Ye Fan’s heart shook intensely.

He had greatly underestimated Bai Ning Bing, to think that their difference in strength was so huge. But after his shock, Ye Fan quickly calmed down, his battle intent surged in the face of despair.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1166: White Form Immortal Snake

“Come, even if I die, I will only die in the battlefield!” Ye Fan shouted, his eyes were shining with a threatening light.

The demons licked their lips, they gritted their teeth, they were going to charge up, wanting to kill Ye Fan and cut him into pieces.

But Bai Ning Bing suddenly said: “Isn’t it too boring to directly kill him? Go one by one.”

These words saved Ye Fan’s life, it greatly delayed the timing of his death.

After spending so much time with Bai Ning Bing, a demonic path expert who knew of her personality stepped up with shining eyes: “Since Boss White Demon wants to watch a show, allow me to kill this person, as long as the boss is happy, it will be our fortune.”

The demons heard this and all mentally badmouthed at this demonic path expert for being shameless, they were envious and jealous, why did they not speak first, this was the best chance to bootlick!

But soon, they no longer had such thoughts.

Ye Fan was in a desperate situation, but he displayed great might, killing a number of demonic path Gu Masters.

Even though his methods were useless against Bai Ning Bing, they were more than enough to deal with the rest.

“Interesting.” Bai Ning Bing watched the entire battle while relaxing on the bamboo chair, it was as if the people dying were not her subordinates, but strangers instead.

Ye Fan felt a chill regard her aloof nature, he felt disgust towards her: “This White Demon might look like a peerless beauty, but she has a vicious heart, she cannot compare to Lady Xin Ci. Birds of a feather flock together, the Black Demon guy who was with her is likely not a good person either!”

“Ah!” Suddenly, Ye Fan screamed.

It turned out that his right arm had been pierced by multiple icicles from the inside. At once, his entire right arm was pierced, flesh was exposed, his pale broken bones could be seen, his blood was about to squirt out but it was frozen by the frost energy.

Ye Fan’s right arm was crippled!

“Alright, continue.” Bai Ning Bing said plainly.

The demons had low morale, but seeing that Ye Fan’s right arm was crippled, they saw hope again.

A few more entered the battlefield, trying to take advantage of his weakness.

But Ye Fan got bolder as he took wounds, he ignored his injuries, fighting while disregarding his life, meanwhile the demonic path Gu Masters were fearful for their lives, they did not dare to fight directly, they were slowly losing.

Some were defeated, while others were killed by Ye Fan when he had the chance.

“What do I need such useless people for?” Bai Ning Bing’s eyes flashed as blue light flickered in them.

The few demonic path Gu Masters who were defeated and still alive did not even get a chance to shout, they were frozen into icicles, dying on the spot.

Bai Ning Bing was fierce and ruthless, the Gu Masters were trembling in fear, even Ye Fan felt a chill in his heart.

Bai Ning Bing pressed lightly with her right hand, the four snowmen noticed and quickly lowered the bamboo chair.

Bai Ning Bing slowly stood on the ground, looking at Ye Fan with her hands behind her back.

The demons were overjoyed, looking at this, Bai Ning Bing was going to fight!

Ye Fan smiled bitterly, Bai Ning Bing’s terrifying strength made him feel deep despair: “There always exists someone stronger than you. I was too overconfident, I deserve the fate of dying here. But before I die, may you answer a question that I have?”

“Oh?” Bai Ning Bing looked at Ye Fan, assessing him as she said plainly: “You are quite brave, few can be so unmoved in the face of death. Very well, go ahead.”

“I want to ask, what kind of person is Black Demon?” Ye Fan asked the deepest question in his heart.

Bai Ning Bing frowned, all along she had been having a cold expression, but this change in her expression showed that she was not calm on the inside.

“He...” Bai Ning Bing looked at the moon in the sky, dragging her words.

Ye Fan focused, listening attentively.

But Bai Ning Bing showed a mocking and cold gaze in her eyes.

Ye Fan stared with his eyes wide open, he was instantly frozen into an icicle!

Bai Ning Bing looked at the night sky and bright moon, after a few breaths of time, she retracted her gaze and walked away.

Behind her, Ye Fan’s entire body was frozen in transparent ice, he died.

The demons were silent, they were like frightened cicadas.

But Bai Ning Bing only took a few steps when a peculiar black aura appeared behind her, causing her silvery hair to flutter in the air.

“Oh?” Bai Ning Bing’s blue eyes shrunk to pin size, she turned around and realized that four figures had suddenly appeared behind Ye Fan all of a sudden.

Among them, one had an ugly appearance, he was an immortal zombie, placing his arm on Ye Fan’s shoulder.

He was using an immortal killer move, the peculiar aura that Bai Ning Bing sensed earlier came from it.

Bai Ning Bing’s hair was standing, her battle intent rose to its peak at this moment!

Gu Immortal aura burst out from her body, soon, her body started to change, her adam’s apple appeared, her body grew taller, her soft and plump chest shrank and became a muscular male chest, her face had turned into one with a sharp dagger-like appearance.

“Hehehe, Bai Ning Bing, your phantom aperture was given to you by my Shadow Sect, it can suppress the transformation path dao marks in you and revert you to your male body, it can also allow you to become a false immortal and own green grape immortal essence, you will be able to refine and use Immortal Gu. But now, you want to use this phantom aperture to fight me?” Ying Wu Xie chuckled.

“A member of Shadow Sect?” Bai Ning Bing squinted, a dangerous cold light was flashing in his eyes.

As he said that, Ye Fan was revived by Ying Wu Xie. The ice around his body had turned into water, he sat on the ground weakly, gasping loudly with a pale expression.

The feeling of life and death, he could feel entirely what true horror was!

His mental state was heavily affected, he could not control himself.

“You cannot kill this person.” Ying Wu Xie looked at Ye Fan plainly.

He had luck inspection Immortal Gu, he could see Ye Fan’s abundant luck.

Ever since they escaped from Eastern Sea, he had been hiding inside Shi Nu’s immortal aperture, devising methods to deal with Fang Yuan’s investigative killer move.

Even though there was not much success, after Ying Wu Xie saw Ye Fan, he could feel a resonance in their luck, he knew that their luck was connected.

“Fang Yuan is the owner of Spring Autumn Cicada and was a tool of heaven’s will, he returned from the future and knows who has great luck. Killing Ye Fan would harm my own luck.”

“As for Bai Ning Bing, he is under Shadow Sect’s alliance agreement, I am not afraid he will turn on us. He also has one of the ten extreme physiques, he would be very useful in saving my main body!”

Ying Wu Xie thought over this, while he suddenly tossed out a rank five mortal Gu.

“White form immortal snake!” Bai Ning Bing received it with a perplexed expression, he recognized this Gu worm which had left a heavy impression in him.

“This is a crucial clue in the old bet of the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs. Bai Ning Bing, you are the last bloodline descendant of Bai Xiang, you have the proper status to participate in the bet.” Ying Wu Xie said slowly.

Bai Ning Bing was silent before asking: “This is the reason why your Shadow Sect is scheming to rope me in?”

Ying Wu Xie did not answer, he only moved as he left this place.

Hei Lou Lan, Shi Nu, and Tai Bai Yun Sheng followed closely after him.

Bai Ning Bing gritted his teeth, he restrained the cold light in his eyes as he followed them.

Ye Fan was left behind, kneeling on the ground with his arms supporting him, stopping him from collapsing, as he gasped heavily.

As for those demonic path Gu Masters, they were all like statues, when the wind blew, they turned into rotten black mud...

Northern Plains, Become Dragon Mound.

“Sir, you have come to help us, our Chu Sect is extremely grateful.” A strength path Gu Immortal greeted Fang Yuan respectfully.

Fang Yuan nodded, looking at the person.

Before encountering Fang Yuan, in order to get Reckless Savage’s true meaning and increase his strength path attainment level, Chu Du had spent a lot of time and effort to nurture mortal Gu Masters, to help them become Gu Immortals.

As time passed, he gained a good number of strength path Gu Immortals. Chu Du treated them as disciples, and casually created a sect, naming it Chu Sect.

“Even though Chu Du is nurturing these strength path Gu Immortals, it is not his aim. Strength path is declining, and these strength path Gu Immortals lack

Immortal Gu, they are not a threat.” Fang Yuan assessed as he looked at Become Dragon Mound in front of him.

This mound was short and flat, it did not look amazing, but it was a true land of fortune.

In Become Dragon Mound, there were lots of transformation path dao marks. These transformation path dao marks could allow the living beings staying here to transform into dragon beasts. There were large numbers of dragon Gu that were produced here before, like golden dragon Gu, water dragon Gu, earth dragon Gu, dragon claw Gu, dragon breath Gu, dragon pearl Gu, and so on.

Unfortunately, after Hei tribe was destroyed, this place was ransacked by several Gu Immortals.

But in the last few months, Bai Zu tribe took control and started to develop, sending Gu Immortals to guard Become Dragon Mound, allocating resources to rebuild it, and return it to its former glorious state.

This was one of Bai Zu tribe’s important resource points.

“I have already investigated clearly, this place was originally guarded by Hei tribe’s fourth supreme elder. But the developments he had made here were taken away by Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals, no longer present.”

“Hehe, Hei tribe’s fourth supreme elder has rank seven cultivation level. But the Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortal sent here only has rank six cultivation level, it is good for us to act, we will attack this place.”

“Everyone is already in position, we just have to attack and fight the first battle!”

“As long as we deal a huge blow to Bai Zu tribe, it will surely make Heavenly Lord Bai Zu wary and give up on Hei Fan grotto-heaven, returning to guard his territory.”

Chu Sect’s Gu Immortals continued to talk, feeling excited.

If Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was still a lone cultivator like before, Chu Du might have given up on defending Hei Fan grotto-heaven already.

But now that he was taking over Hei tribe and creating his own righteous path super force, even though his territory was expanding rapidly, he gained a weakness.

Strength and weakness in this world were relative.

Like in the past, when Zombie Alliance took revenge on Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Blazing Heaven Demoness did not dare to fight him head on, but they looked to trouble Snowy Mountain’s demonic path Gu Immortals, plundering their immortal materials and ruining their collection. Before long, Old Ancestor Xue Hu could not take it anymore, he had to give in to Zombie Alliance.”

Chu Du had both brains and brawn, his tactic in dealing with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was definitely the best one.

However, the actual effect would depend on how much damage Fang Yuan and Chu Sect’s strength path Gu Immortals can do.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1167: Become Dragon Mound

Northern Plains, outside Become Dragon Mound.

The strength path Gu Immortal from Chu Sect continued: “It is not easy to get information on this Gu Immortal from Bai Zu tribe, their Gu Immortals all live inside Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s grotto-heaven, they rarely move around in Northern Plains. Hmm?”

It turned out, when he was still speaking, Fang Yuan had already flown out.

“Quick, come back!”

“Our battle plan has not been established yet.”

“Don’t be rash!”

“We might have two people on our side while the enemy is alone, but they have the territorial advantage, Become Dragon Mound has a set of Gu formations that can allow them to defend, as long as they last for a moment, there will be an endless stream of reinforcements from Bai Zu tribe!”

The Chu Sect Gu Immortal quickly transmitted, he was extremely frantic.

Fang Yuan did not reply to him, he flew into the air and called out: “Bai Zu tribe, come out, my Chu Sect is taking over Become Dragon Mound.”

“What Chu Sect? Never heard of it! You dare to cause a scene in my Bai Zu tribe!” A young Gu Immortal appeared on Become Dragon Mound, showing intense rage.

“We’re doomed!” The Chu Sect Gu Immortal had his head in his hands, showing a defeated and aggrieved look: “Why did master find such a person? He is too rash, he is just too rash!”

“The situation was good earlier... sigh!” He shook his head continuously.

Right now, they had no choice but to attack forcefully.

The Chu Sect Gu Immortal was about to appear, when Fang Yuan attacked.

Boom!

A giant hand flew out, crushing the air like an imposing mountain, it had an incredible aura.

Be it the Chu Sect Gu Immortal or Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortal, they were staring with dumbfounded expressions at this move.

The Bai Zu Gu Immortal was the first to react, he shrieked: “Rank seven battle strength! You, you, you, a senior that is pretending to be weaker, aren’t you ashamed!”

Saying so, he frantically activated Become Dragon Mound’s defensive Gu formation.

After activating the Gu formation, Become Dragon Mound shone in layers of bright light, the entirety of Become Dragon Mound was enveloped by it.

Fang Yuan snorted, the strength path giant hand ignored it, slamming on the formation.

Bam bam bam...

The strength path giant hand had incredible power, everywhere it went, the Gu formation collapsed without resistance.

It could not even last five breaths of time, Become Dragon Mound's defensive Gu formation was crushed by Fang Yuan, it became extremely damaged!

The Bai Zu Gu Immortal had a pale expression, he was only rank six, seeing Fang Yuan's strength, he did not dare to stay, he did not speak, rushing away immediately.

Fang Yuan did not chase him, he flew towards the sky above Become Dragon Mound.

Become Dragon Mound was completely ruined, but it was fine, Fang Yuan had landscape as before Immortal Gu.

However, he could not use it in front of others.

Thus, Fang Yuan used another Immortal Gu.

Pulling Mountain!

Rumble...

Under the Chu Sect Gu Immortal's shocked gaze, the entirety of Become Dragon Mound was pulled up by Fang Yuan, before he opened his immortal aperture's entrance and stuffed it inside.

“He, he, he, actually took away Become Dragon Mound entirely!” Chu Sect's Gu Immortal stammered, he was completely incoherent.

At this point, he finally realized Fang Yuan's words earlier were true, he was not exaggerating to raise morale.

“Junior pays respect to senior.” The Chu Sect Gu Immortal lowered his head, flying into the air as he greeted Fang Yuan again.

He was very careful, in a state of nervousness.

Fang Yuan revealed rank six Gu Immortal aura, but the Chu Sect Gu Immortal was extremely suspicious of it! He felt that Fang Yuan was one of those senior great experts who had a strange interest in pretending to be weak!

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, looking in the direction of Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

He did not do anything else.

This action was huge, Bai Zu tribe would definitely act rapidly, exacting revenge with all their strength.

Retreating now was the safest option.

He had already obtained Become Dragon Mound anyway.

As for Bai Zu tribe's Gu Immortals, there were only a few of them, they could not be killed. It was okay to kill Hei tribe Gu Immortals, but killing Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortals would truly enrage Heavenly Lord Bai Zu!

That was not a wise decision.

Soon, news that the tribe was getting attacked spread to Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s ears.

“Oh? It seems that Chu Du’s force is not small.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was shocked.

“A total of eight Gu Immortals, all of strength path, Chu Du, you have some deeply hidden plans and motives.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu squinted, speaking in an eerie tone.

This rank eight Gu Immortal had to admit, he had underestimated Chu Du.

Not only did he underestimate Chu Du, he also underestimated his force.

Once news got out, the entire Northern Plains Gu Immortal world would be shaken. Nobody had expected that Chu Du would gather such a group of people around him!

“However, if you want me to retreat like this, you are simply looking down on me, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu!” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu did not waver at all, he continued to stay, considering all sorts of methods to try and enter Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

As expected, once information got out, the Northern Plains Gu Immortal world which had just calmed down went into a commotion again.

Bai Zu tribe was attacked by an unknown force, it suffered a huge loss, losing a number of its resource points. The biggest loss was Become Dragon Mound, the area had simply turned into a giant pit.

Bai Zu tribe was like an enraged lion, it bare its fangs and claws, wanting to take revenge.

But Chu Sect’s Gu Immortals came and left quickly, with a well executed battle tactic, they did not lose any members.

A few days later, Fang Yuan looked at the battle reports in Lang Ya blessed land.

“This means, Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s danger has not been resolved yet.”

“After all... this time, even though Chu Sect attacked at full force, causing a huge commotion, Bai Zu tribe did not suffer a huge loss. The biggest loss was Become Dragon Mound, the rest of the areas were originally quite damaged, they had not been fully restored. And because these strength path Gu Immortals have few Immortal Gu, their battle strength is low, they could only cause little damage.”

“All in all, the commotion is greater than the effect, no wonder Heavenly Lord Bai Zu could endure it and continue to attack Hei Fan grotto-heaven without going back.”

This way, the situation was in a deadlock.

The fight over the ownership of Hei Fan grotto-heaven was split into two battlefields.

One was Chu Du defending Hei Fan grotto-heaven, while Heavenly Lord Bai Zu tried to invade it. Chu Du was very passive, as Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had the initiative.

The other was Chu Sect attacking Bai Zu tribe's territories, Chu Sect had the initiative, while Bai Zu tribe had to defend.

"In conclusion, Chu Du's side is weaker." Fang Yuan sighed.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu with rank eight cultivation level was much stronger. The reason why he could not display it was because he was trying to invade the grotto-heaven of an even stronger rank eight Gu Immortal.

Gu Immortals with more dao marks would face more difficulty in entering blessed lands or grotto-heavens. Rank eight Gu Immortals could not even enter blessed lands, if they tried, the entire blessed land would burst from exceeding its capacity.

And even though Bai Zu tribe had been created recently, it did not have a weak foundation, it took in many members of Hei tribe, its combined strength exceeded Chu Sect.

Chu Sect was able to have the advantage the first time because it launched a sneak attack, it caught the Bai Zu tribe members off guard.

If they tried this again, the other party would be wary, it would be less easy and safe!

"At this rate, there is a high chance of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu taking over Hei Fan grotto-heaven, however, Chu Du still has his trump cards."

Fang Yuan decided to wait and see.

A few days later, the entire Chu Sect was worried about Chu Du's safety, they wanted to launch another attack and invited Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan rejected them, telling them not to act rashly.

Chu Sect did not listen to Fang Yuan, but soon, Chu Du sent a letter to restrain them.

Even though Chu Du was being attacked by a rank eight Gu Immortal, he had a clear mind, he could look at the situation and assess it accurately. This move was very strategic, he preserved Chu Sect's foundation.

The situation fell into a deadlock again.

"Next, it will depend on how Chu Du reacts."

Fang Yuan did not believe that the great Domination Immortal would stop here.

He forgot about this matter for the time being, the fifth earthly calamity was already over, his focus was on developing his immortal aperture.

After taking Become Dragon Mound, Mini Southern Border obtained another named mountain.

Even though Become Dragon Mound did not look amazing, it had deep foundations, it successfully overthrew Immortal Succession Mountain, becoming the second most valuable mountain after Five Light Mountain.

In Mini Western Desert, there was a rotten dark swamp, filled with dark path dao marks. Fang Yuan had already used enough self will Gu to completely cleanse away the lingering heaven's will in it.

Other than that, in Mini Eastern Sea, there was a new blood lake that was isolated from the outside sea.

This blood lake had the blood of desolate beasts and Gu Immortals added by Fang Yuan, blood asset Immortal Gu was placed in it, floating inside the blood lake.

This Immortal Gu had been overused by Fang Yuan in a previous calamity, it was heavily damaged. Thus, it was placed here, recovering slowly.

Fang Yuan used his divine sense and looked at it, realizing that blood asset Immortal Gu was still quite far from a full recovery.

But this blood path Immortal Gu could already be considered easy to heal.

Other Immortal Gu would require parallel refinement methods to recover. Not only would the difficulty be high, the risk would also be high.

“Among my dao marks, the one most suited to me is my high number of blood path dao marks. But I only have one Immortal Gu, Blood Asset, if I can refine Blood Deity...”

Fang Yuan’s plan of refining Blood Deity had been going on for some time.

Inside Lang Ya blessed land, White Hair Continent, Yellow Hair Continent, and Black Hair Continent had been in war for many years.

“Hold on, you have to persevere, our reinforcements are here!” The leader of the black haired Gu Masters shouted, attempting to raise the morale.

On this battlefield, only a small part of the black haired army was left, the rest of the place was occupied by the allied white haired and yellow haired armies.

Black haired Gu Masters fought bravely, but they had limited troops, they were shrinking in number.

Croak!

Right at this moment, the croaking of a toad resounded in the battlefield like thunder.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

A huge tide flowed, sweeping the battlefield, everywhere it went, countless white haired and yellow haired troops were washed away.

At once, the allied army suffered huge losses.

“A black hair rank five Gu Master! Oh no, it is that toad Gu Master Fang Zheng.” The allied white and yellow haired armies were in chaos.

“We are saved, it is Fang Zheng...” The black haired Gu Masters had complex emotions.

Under everyone’s gazes, Fang Zheng stood on the back of the River Swallowing Toad, he was dressed in a blue robe, entering the battlefield with a rush of his tides.

Rumble!

He suddenly attacked, his offense was extremely strong, rampaging in the battlefield, everywhere he went, troops fell over their horses, the allied army was sent into chaos by him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1168: Lightning Refinement, Ma Hong Yun

“You have finally become a strong expert. In all three continents, your current strength is at least top ten.” Fang Yuan’s fake will purposely praised in his mind.

Fang Zheng replied plainly: “With enough accumulated growth, it happens naturally.”

These last years, he killed mercilessly. Under the pressure of life and death, he was gradually understanding Fang Yuan’s emotions when he slaughtered his clan.

He had no choice.

Either you die or I die!

Fang Zheng was still unable to forgive Fang Yuan, but he understood the reason why he did it. His deep hatred had faded slowly as time passed, after Fang Yuan’s fake will helped him to escape danger time and time again.

“Run!”

“We are not Fang Zheng’s match!!”

Soon, the allied white and yellow haired Gu Master army broke apart.

Fang Zheng did not talk to the black haired Gu Masters, he cleared out the battlefield and left.

Leaving behind black hair Gu Masters who were looking at him with complex expressions as he left.

“So he is that rumored human Gu Master.”

“Amazing! In the blink of an eye, victory was decided.”

“Unfortunately, he offended the higher ups, and is not a hairy man, no matter how big his contributions are, he can only reach this stage...”

“Even though I am grateful to him, for my own future, I should keep a distance from him.”

Lang Ya blessed land.

After receiving the fake will, Fang Yuan had an understanding expression: “Oh, it seems that Fang Zheng is going to be ready soon, but Blood Deity’s recipe has not been completed. Should I divert some of my energy towards this?”

Originally, according to Fang Yuan’s plans, he was going to use the light of wisdom to deduce Blood Deity’s recipe, it was the fastest way.

But the light of wisdom was unusable now. Fang Yuan might as well deduce it himself, it would be more quickly this way than trying to use it again.

But thinking about it, Fang Yuan gave up on this alluring option.

Firstly, he had Hei Fan’s time path true inheritance, he did not lack methods, refining Blood Deity was only icing on the cake.

On the other hand, blood path was not doing well in the current period. Once he used it, he would be chased down by all kinds of Gu Immortals. From Fang Yuan’s perspective, the five regions chaotic war was the best time to display blood path again.

Ever since he took Become Dragon Mound, these last days, Fang Yuan had been waiting for Chu Du to act while cultivating diligently.

His profits were starting to decline.

Because a large number of the resources in Hei Fan grotto-heaven had already been sold by him.

A lot of the resources in Hei Fan grotto-heaven could not grow in Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture, he could only sell them and exchange for the things he needed.

This way, his profits increased rapidly.

But these were non-replenishable resources, after a few months, he ran out of them.

Even though Fang Yuan earned a lot of immortal essence stones, he also used a lot of them.

An earthly calamity every two months was simply too frequent. And recently, Fang Yuan had fought in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, Eastern Sea, and Become Dragon Mound, he used rank seven Immortal Gu, thus his green grape immortal essence expenditure was huge.

And because he was developing his immortal aperture, he had invested a lot in it. His immortal essence stones came and went like a flowing river, even though the quantity was huge, he was not left with much to keep.

“Currently, the only thing that can allow me to grow rapidly is to use the light of wisdom after settling the soul path trap in my immortal zombie body.”

“Other than that, I can obtain information path methods to resolve the alliance agreements that I have. It will allow me to deal with the different forces and relationships more freely, I would be able to make full use of them.”

“I can also rise to rank seven and obtain red date immortal essence, it will greatly lower my expenditure, and give me a qualitative growth.”

Fang Yuan was aware of his options, but that did not mean he could easily succeed in doing them.

He was at an impasse in his cultivation.

Unless he had a fortuitous encounter, he could only get through these hurdles slowly.

But how could fortuitous encounters come whenever he wanted them? Even if they did, Fang Yuan had to be wary of whether they were part of heaven’s will’s plot.

Fang Yuan spent two hours cultivating his soul.

In the remaining time, he would use sword eyebrows Immortal Gu to increase his number of sword path dao marks, or go to the outside world and use star eyes Immortal Gu to refine the stars in black heaven.

Other than this, he had to spend a lot of effort in training his time path killer moves, to gain more proficiency to use them in actual battles.

He was mainly working on developing his immortal aperture.

Speaking of which, the sovereign immortal aperture’s initial stage arrangements were not completed yet.

The reason was that he had too many Immortal Gu. For him to be self sufficient and not rely on the outside world, he would need to rely on the production in his sovereign immortal aperture to feed all of his Immortal Gu.

At that time, his initial stage developments would be completed.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan had many rank eight Immortal Gu, he had just started gathering the food of attitude Gu and wisdom sword Immortal Gu, there was no follow up yet.

He had no choice, this was his limit.

Every day, he was making the most of every second, he was very stingy towards the use of his time on specific objectives, but his time and energy were limited. Fang Yuan could only think carefully before cultivating the most important aspects that he had chosen.

Such hard work caused Fang Yuan to improve rapidly.

Almost every day, he made great progress.

The sovereign immortal aperture defied heaven itself, Fang Yuan’s hard work was simply inhuman, he was ruthless towards others, but was even stricter and more cruel towards himself.

With these two elements, his immortal aperture’s development was rapid, Fang Yuan’s strength was rising all the time.

Half a month passed like this, until Fang Yuan finally received Chu Du’s letter.

In the letter, Chu Du invited Fang Yuan to help, once they succeeded, he would pay Fang Yuan hugely.

Chu Du spoke very courteously and humbly, almost as if he had forgotten Fang Yuan was his ally.

“Chu Du could control himself for so long, it is quite extraordinary. Fine, I will make the trip.” Fang Yuan was mentally prepared long ago, he immediately left.

A day and a night later, he arrived at the secret meeting location.

When he reached, many Gu Immortals had already arrived.

“Senior, you have arrived.” The one who came to welcome Fang Yuan was the Chu Sect Gu Immortal who had went with Fang Yuan to take down Become Dragon Mound.

“Allow me to make the introductions, these are experts that master has called for reinforcements. This is senior Hao Zhen.”

Hao Zhen had the appearance of a middle aged man, he had a beard and a muscular body, he nodded at Fang Yuan.

“This is senior Chou Lao Wu.” Chu Sect’s Gu Immortal continued.

Chou Lao Wu had a dismal looking face, his body was thin and dry, his back was hunched, he smiled at Fang Yuan with his uneven yellow teeth, his appearance was extremely ugly.

“This is senior Li Si Chun.” The Chu Sect Gu Immortal said with an evasive gaze.

This Gu Immortal was quite unique.

He had a square face, with thick brows and huge eyes, his nose bridge was very tall, his chest had thick black hair that was exposed, he was a man but he wore a flowery skirt.

Seeing Fang Yuan, his eyes shined brightly as he pulled his flowery skirt, saying seductively: “Oh my goodness, it’s a handsome little brother.”

The Chu Sect Gu Immortal shuddered, he immediately moved past this person, arriving at the final Gu Immortal.

“This is senior Immortal Wang 1 .”

Immortal Wang had a short stature, he had a red nose and triangular little eyes, looking at Fang Yuan as he said: “We have already introduced ourselves, you are the last one here, why don’t you introduce yourself to us?”

Fang Yuan smiled plainly: “I have nothing much to say, I am just a lone cultivator. You can call me Liu Guan Yi.”

“Liu Guan Yi.” The Chu Sect Gu Immortal quickly memorized this name. This was the first time he had heard Fang Yuan’s name, because he easily chased away the Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortal and even took away Become Dragon Mound, he had developed a strong interest and curiosity in Fang Yuan, and even a little admiration.

In fact, he was not the only one, the other Chu Sect Gu Immortals also paid a lot of attention to Fang Yuan.

After all, they mainly cultivated strength path. Fang Yuan’s strength path battle strength was immense, in this world where strength path was declining, he was like their shining beacon of hope.

“Liu Guan Yi.” Hao Zhen muttered, seemingly trying to remember this name.

The others also etched this name deep in their minds.

To be invited by Chu Du, and have the guts to deal with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, he was definitely not ordinary.

Hao Zhen and the rest had rank seven cultivation level.

Of course, Fang Yuan was currently using familiar face, he was also emitting rank seven aura.

“Darling Liu, I heard that you uprooted the entirety of Become Dragon Mound and took it away. You are so capable!” Li Si Chun laughed in an enticing manner, approaching Fang Yuan.

All of the immortals felt goosebumps over their bodies.

Fang Yuan was unmoved, he stared at Li Si Chun with a cold expression, he said plainly: “Stay away from me.”

The hearts of the other invited immortals shuddered.

Fang Yuan emitted a trace of deep killing intent that was bone-chilling, these invited immortals were all knowledgeable people, they instantly knew that this person was an evildoer who had killed countless people and was filled with ruthlessness.

The Chu Sect Gu Immortals around them had little experience, they could not sense Fang Yuan’s ferocious nature, the Gu Immortal who was doing the introductions for Fang Yuan earlier said: “According to master’s arrangement, us Chu Sect Gu Immortals have low battle strength, we will not participate. We will be relying on you seniors, once we succeed, master will definitely compensate you well.”

“Tell us about the battle plan.” Immortal Wang said.

The Chu Sect Gu Immortal said some shocking things: “Master has devised a conclusive plan, seniors, we hope that you will work together and attack Iron Eagle blessed land!”

At the same time, Snowy Mountain, first peak.

The refinement path Gu formation was shining in golden light, it was so condensed it was almost solid, firmly cast over the peak of the snow mountain.

Within the light, Lady Wan Shou and Old Ancestor Xue Hu were standing in front of Ma Hong Yun.

Lady Wan Shou was extremely tired, she was carefully taking out a ball of lightning.

The ball of lightning was fist sized, there were sparks inside, creating thunderous sounds, the exterior was protruding at times, at one glance, one could tell this lightning ball was unstable.

“What, what are you trying to do?! No, no, ahhh!” Ma Hong Yun screamed, he had a frantic expression, but his entire body was immobilized, he could not move.

“This is the final crucial step.” Lady Wan Shou said, pushing the lightning ball towards Ma Hong Yun.

The lightning ball quickly fused into Ma Hong Yun’s chest, vanishing instantly.

“AHHHHH—!” Ma Hong Yun was hit by intense waves of lightning, his body was shaking as he raised his head, he was screaming loudly with all his strength.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1169: Sudden Attack on Iron Eagle Blessed Land (1/2)

Lightning crackled.

Ma Hong Yun quickly fainted as his eyes rolled over, saliva leaking out of his mouth. He had completely lost consciousness, but his body was still shaking intensely.

The lightning started out strong and slowly weakened, until it vanished.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s expression sank.

Ma Hong Yun’s lightning refinement failed!

If they succeeded, why would Ma Hong Yun still be around? He would be refined by lightning, his flesh and bones would be gone, only a lump of golden luck essence would be left.

Lady Wan Shou let out a gasp, there was paleness on her beautiful face.

She was the one using lightning refinement on Ma Hong Yun, it was a crucial step in refining fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu. Now that she failed, Lady Wan Shou suffered a heavy backlash, she was injured.

“Dear.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu had an anxious tone, he expressed concern in his gaze.

Lady Wan Shou smiled at him lightly, saying softly: “Don’t worry, I can endure such a level of injury. I just need to rest for half a day and I will recover.”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu let out a breath: “That is good.”

Pausing for a while, he continued: “Even though we failed this time, it is fine, this is only the first attempt! We have prepared ample refinement materials.”

“That’s right.” Lady Wan Shou acknowledged: “Even though we failed once, and have to start over, this refinement path Gu formation preserves much of our beforehand successes, the second refinement will definitely go smoothly. Let me rest for half a day, after I recover, we will start over.”

How could Immortal Gu refinement succeed at the first attempt?

Especially rank eight Immortal Gu, the success rate was absurdly low.

In the past, when Hei Fan refined years flow like water Immortal Gu, he failed consecutively, he even lost confidence in it after many failures.

Thus, Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Lady Wan Shou did not put this failure to heart.

They were very confident.

“Dear, why the rush? It is fine if you rest for a few days. You may not know yet, another storm is brewing in Northern Plains, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Chu Du are fighting over the ownership of Hei Fan grotto-heaven. Right now, they are in a deadlock, but I am sure Chu Du has backup plans, he has just not used them yet.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu smiled, explaining the details to her.

“Oh?” Lady Wan Shou heard this and joy flashed across her face.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was refining fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, the risks involved were not just the rank eight Immortal Gu refinement itself.

Northern Plains had other rank eight Gu Immortals, they were unwilling to see

Old Ancestor Xue Hu obtain a rank eight Immortal Gu and become even stronger.

Thus, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had to keep a close watch on these rank eight existences.

Since Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was fighting with Chu Du now, for Old Ancestor Xue Hu, it was a wonderful thing.

However, after Lady Wan Shou heard his words, she shook her head firmly, rejecting Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s suggestion: “I only need half a day of rest. This refinement path Gu formation was created by Sun Ming Lu, who mimicked Regret Pool. It has several functions of Regret Pool, but it can only last for a day. Resting half a day is the limit, I need to refine Gu using the rest of the time.”

“So that’s it.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu realized, he said with much concern: “Dear, it has been hard on you.”

“No matter, it is an extremely exciting thing for me to be able to refine a rank eight Immortal Gu.” Lady Wan Shou’s eyes shone with dazzling brilliance.

That night.

Moonlight shone on the grasslands, several figures approached Iron Eagle blessed land stealthily.

They were Fang Yuan, Hao Zhen, Chou Lao Wu, Li Si Chun, and Immortal Wang.

Iron Eagle blessed land was Hei tribe’s headquarters originally, but after they were wiped out, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu took over and made it the main base of Bai Zu tribe.

At this moment, Iron Eagle blessed land was hidden in empty space, it could not be seen from the outside.

Fang Yuan took a glance, only to see that the green grass was reflecting the moonlight like a lake, it was extremely lush. The night’s winds blew on one’s face, like the hands of one’s lover.

It was a harmonious scene, but Fang Yuan and his fellow Gu Immortals were overflowing with battle intent, flames were burning in their hearts.

Chu Du’s battle plan made Fang Yuan feel admiration towards him.

Chu Du endured for half a month, it was not a short time. He planned secretly and gathered his strength, bursting it out as he attacked the enemy’s base.

If Iron Eagle blessed land were to be successfully taken down, it would greatly influence Bai Zu tribe. Heavenly Lord Bai Zu might truly be forced to return and give up on Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

“Chu Du has some brains indeed. He is taking advantage of Bai Zu tribe’s inner conflict.” Hao Zhen smiled.

“Hehe, Bai Zu tribe took in Hei tribe, they assimilated the Hei tribe Gu Immortals. Even though the Hei tribe Gu Immortals changed their surnames to Bai Zu, they have genuine Huang Jin bloodline, they are being ostracized. Just now, almost all of Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals were sent out to defend the important resource points. But the Bai Zu Gu Immortals were staying guard inside Iron Eagle blessed land.” Chou Lao Wu added.

Because Chu Sect’s Gu Immortals were hidden, they could attack at any time. Bai Zu tribe’s outside resources could not be unguarded. This type of defense mission was very difficult, it was far more dangerous than guarding Iron Eagle blessed land.

After all, the Gu formations at the resource points were rebuilt after they were destroyed earlier. Because these points were far from each other, when a single Gu Immortal defended one area, it was easy for many enemies to attack them at once.

“Darling Chu is simply a heroic genius! I was thinking earlier, which resource point should we choose to attack this time for darling Chu. But to think that we would attack Iron Eagle blessed land directly, ah, every time I think about darling Chu, my heart pounds so quickly. He is really amazing!” Li Si Chun curled his flowery fingers as he clutched his chest, showing a look of attraction and infatuation.

Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu beside him felt their hair standing, they quickly moved away from him, as far as possible.

“Alright, we have to strike fast! Who has a method to break into Iron Eagle blessed land, why are you not going ahead with it?” Fang Yuan asked coldly.

Li Si Chun’s eyes shined brightly: “Darling Liu is so cool, I am really moved.”

Fang Yuan said expressionlessly: “F*ck off, will you.”

Li Si Chun gasped, holding his chest as he took a few steps back, shaking his head: “I am so upset, my heart is about to shatter!”

As if he could not stand Li Si Chun’s amorous words, Immortal Wang stood up.

Like what Fang Yuan had estimated, among them, someone had a way to break into blessed lands rapidly. This was not Fang Yuan’s confidence in these strangers, it was his confidence in Chu Du. He was an intelligent person, why would he not think of this when devising a plan to attack Iron Eagle blessed land?

Immortal Wang’s throat emitted a sound, his aura rose intensely as countless Gu worm auras emanated from his body.

With a bright flash, Immortal Wang turned into a giant hound.

This hound had white fur, like snow, it had four strong limbs and a big head, its eyes were pale and colorless, without any pupils.

Li Si Chun gasped as he cried out: “Ah, this is an immemorial desolate beast, heaven swallowing hound?”

Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu looked at each other, feeling joy and surprise. Did it mean he had rank eight battle strength?

Fang Yuan shook his head calmly: “Even if he became a heaven swallowing hound, he only has rank seven cultivation level, how can he have rank eight battle strength?”

If he did, why would Fang Yuan, Hao Zhen, and the rest need to come? Just Immortal Wang alone could take down Iron Eagle blessed land.

Furthermore, if he had rank eight battle strength, he would be famous in Northern Plains, how could Chu Du invite him over so easily?

At this moment, the heaven swallowing hound that Immortal Wang turned into burst out with countless Gu worm auras again.

These auras intertwined, instantly, another immortal killer move was conjured.

The heaven swallowing hound suddenly opened its mouth, biting at the space in front of it.

Space shook, a shadow was torn out, entering the heaven swallowing hound’s mouth.

Next, shocked shouts could be heard.

“Who is it?!”

“You dare to devour our Iron Eagle blessed land!”

“Enemy attack!!”

Like the shattering of a mirror, a huge gap was created, Fang Yuan and the others could see the scene inside Iron Eagle blessed land.

The Bai Zu Gu Immortals reacted quickly, several figures flew over, wanting to block Fang Yuan and the rest.

Immortal Wang turned back to human form, saying weakly: “I need to recuperate, it is up to all of you now.”

Seeing his pale face, turning into the immemorial desolate beast was clearly beyond his limits, or perhaps, that immortal killer move earlier had a strong drawback.

Boom!

Fang Yuan stomped, creating a huge pit on the ground.

Before Immortal Wang finished his words, he had shot out like a cannon, charging over imposingly.

He was the first to invade, entering Iron Eagle blessed land.

“Such guts!”

“Look at our Immortal Gu!!”

The Gu Immortals from Bai Zu tribe faced him, among them, there were rank six and seven Gu Immortals, they attacked fiercely.

Fang Yuan snorted, pushing with his right hand.

With a loud sound, air burst as a huge giant hand slammed in that direction.

Fighting offense with offense.

Fang Yuan displayed incredible battle strength, he was extremely powerful. The strength path giant hand crushed the layers of attacks by the Bai Zu Gu Immortals. Thereafter, it flew towards the Bai Zu Gu Immortals.

But after blocking the attacks earlier, the strength path giant hand did not have enough force left.

A Bai Zu Gu Immortal attacked fiercely, with a swoosh, countless golden needles flew out of his mouth, in the blink of an eye, it pierced countless holes in the giant hand, before flying towards Fang Yuan.

A cold light flashed deep within Fang Yuan’s dark eyes.

Sword escape Immortal Gu!

In an instant, his speed rose drastically, he flew deep into Iron Eagle blessed land like a flying sword.

Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals were shocked by his speed.

Hao Zhen, Chou Lao Wu, and Li Si Chun, these three immortals behind him were very shocked too. They were hoping that Fang Yuan would be in front, diverting the firepower away from them.

But would Fang Yuan let them take advantage of him?

At the next moment, a Gu Immortal from Bai Zu tribe chased after Fang Yuan relentlessly. The other Gu Immortals remained on the spot, blocking Hao Zhen, Chou Lao Wu, and Li Si Chun.

Countless attacks flew out like torrential rain.

A chaotic battle ensued, the Gu Immortals could not care about anything else, they were all stuck here.

Fang Yuan flew into the sky!

His investigative methods had been activated long ago, he could see many traces left behind during the battle of Hei tribe.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1170: Sudden Attack on Iron Eagle Blessed Land (2/2)

Even though Iron Eagle blessed land was taken over by Bai Zu tribe, it had only operated for a short time, even though it was being renewed, it was still far from Hei tribe’s prime.

“Hmm?” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined, he could see many eagle nests floating in the sky.

“There are few resources on the ground, but the sky has at least a hundred eagle nests. It seems that Bai Zu tribe’s strategy is to develop Iron Eagle blessed land’s specialty and fully place effort in raising iron crown eagles and other desolate beasts.” Fang Yuan realized.

This was clearly a good strategy.

Raising desolate beasts and selling them in treasure yellow heaven would grant a huge profit for each of them!

“Last time, I could not be here for the destruction of Hei tribe, this time, I can earn a huge profit and snatch all of these eagle nests!” Fang Yuan felt excitement.

He was very perceptive, at one glance, he could tell that in the entirety of Iron Eagle blessed land, the most valuable thing were these eagle nests.

And there was a crucial point, these eagle nests were easy to take, unlike the other resources.

“Evil scoundrel, stop!” Behind him, a Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortal was frantically shouting.

“It seems that I need to get rid of this problem.” Fang Yuan sneered, turning around and charging towards the pursuer.

This pursuer was called Bai Zu Wei, he had rank seven cultivation level, and was the leader of the defenders of Iron Eagle blessed land.

Just earlier, he was the one who sent out all of Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals to the resource points in the outside world to defend them.

He felt that Iron Eagle blessed land was still safe, but Chu Du’s strategies had outmaneuvered him.

This attack came too quickly.

When Fang Yuan and the others attacked, it was like lightning had struck Bai Zu Wei’s heart.

If Iron Eagle blessed land suffered a huge loss, as the leader, he would have to bear the responsibility. Thus, he was very anxious now, he made up his mind, even if he had to put his life on the line, he had to defend Iron Eagle blessed land!

Thus, Bai Zu Wei’s facial muscles moved when he saw Fang Yuan charging at him, he showed a ruthless expression, he did not dodge, instead, he rushed at Fang Yuan with an even fiercer stance.

“Oh?” Fang Yuan’s gaze shined, he saw that his opponent’s body was shining in golden light.

“A metal path Gu Immortal? He seems to be very confident in his defense.” Fang Yuan had this thought in his mind as he turned around, flying in the backward-left direction.

Sword escape Immortal Gu’s speed was extraordinary, but he did not gain any distance from Bai Zu Wei.

He used his immortal killer move, his speed was not any slower!

“Even though Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals have always lived inside Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s grotto-heaven, they are not weak at all because of this rank eight Gu Immortal’s nurturing. Then... let me see your investigative methods.” Fang Yuan’s body shook, he used the immortal killer move myriad self.

Rumble!

At the next moment, countless Fang Yuan phantoms appeared, filling up half of the sky.

Bai Zu Wei’s expression of rage and anxiety froze.

He used his investigative killer move next.

His eyes turned golden, two rays of light seemed to be shooting out from his eyes, as he started looking around.

“My investigative immortal killer move was created by Heavenly Lord himself! No matter where you are hiding, how can you escape my detection?” Bai Zu Wei was confident.

But next, after a few breaths of time, he was stunned.

“How, how can this be? Where is his true body? I can’t see it?!” He was extremely shocked.

He would not know, even though his investigative killer move was good, Fang Yuan’s familiar face was immensely better!

The former was created by Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, but the latter was a move famously used by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

Boom boom boom.

Eagle nests broke open as Fang Yuan manipulated the myriad self army, attacking these eagle nests with full force.

In the eagle nests, there were young eagles and eggs that had not hatched yet.

Their homes were wrecked, the young eagles were chirping, moving out and fighting with Fang Yuan’s phantoms.

Fang Yuan’s phantoms had low quality, they could not fight against the young desolate beast eagles. However, the number of phantoms was too high, they could attack from every direction, the young desolate beast eagles could not defend the nests.

Soon, eagle nests were destroyed as they fell from the sky.

“No!” Bai Zu Wei shouted, rushing over, using a metal path killer move to try and catch an eagle nest that was falling. He next carefully placed it on the ground as it descended.

Using this chance, Fang Yuan revealed his true self, he used strength path giant hand and grabbed an eagle nest, stuffing it into his immortal aperture.

His immortal aperture’s entrance opened and closed, stuffing an eagle nest inside.

Bai Zu Wei saved the eagle nest in front of him, he had just let out a breath of air when he saw this scene.

Immediately, his eyes turned red as he furiously shouted: “No! Damned thief, return our eagle nest!”

Saying this, he pounced at Fang Yuan with a ferocious aura.

Fang Yuan’s lips curled, he smiled sinisterly as he entered the myriad self army, manipulating these strength path phantoms to scatter.

Bai Zu Wei was stunned!

His investigative method could not expose familiar face. He could only attack randomly, betting on chance. But how could his luck surpass Fang Yuan, who had dog shit luck Immortal Gu, and had also used Connect Luck on four lucky people?

Like this, Fang Yuan manipulated the myriad self army, attacking eagle nests everywhere. Bai Zu Wei was alone and could not find Fang Yuan’s true body, he could only rush everywhere, desperately salvaging the situation.

Fang Yuan used this chance to strike, taking more eagle nests into his immortal aperture.

Bai Zu Wei roared angrily, but he was helpless to stop him.

His lungs were bursting from anger, he screamed at the top of his lungs: “Shameless thief! Fight me fairly and openly if you have the balls to do so!”

Fang Yuan ignored him.

Bai Zu Wei screamed again: “You cowardly bastard, you are running around like a rat, how dare you invade my Bai Zu tribe?!”

Fang Yuan stored another eagle nest.

Bai Zu Wei had bloodshot eyes, his voice was hoarse: “You will not remain smug for long, you have offended Lord Heavenly Lord Bai Zu! Even if you run to the ends of the world, we will find you and deal with you!!”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, chanting on the spot: “One two three four, five six seven eight, the eagle nests are in my hands, what can Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals do to me?”

Guh.

Bai Zu Wei spat out a mouthful of blood from pure anger.

In fact, these eagle nests were managed by him, he poured his blood and sweat into each of them.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu would not care about these things, he trusted and gave him the authority to manage them, but Bai Zu tribe did not have much resources, Bai Zu Wei was putting in a lot of effort to try and increase the resource production, these eagle nests were his biggest hope in helping Bai Zu tribe ascend and break free from financial problems.

But these beautiful prospects were ruined by this accursed Fang Yuan.

“I will not let you off, I will not let you off even if I die!!” Bai Zu Wei screamed, he was spitting out blood and having a shrill voice, but the hatred in his voice made Immortal Wang, who had just arrived, feel a chill down his spine.

“How many eagle nests did this Liu Guan Yi take, to make Bai Zu Wei so enraged?” Immortal Wang reacted, he felt envious and jealous, he wanted the person Bai Zu Wei was cursing to be himself!

Hao Zhen, Chou Lao Wu, and Li Si Chun were still fighting.

“Where is Immortal Wang?”

“He entered the place. This dog actually went on a detour and made a new entrance at the back.”

The three immortals conversed, they were anxious and furious.

They wanted to go inside too and scavenge for resources, but Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals were blocking their entry.

These Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortals could not be killed.

Fang Yuan knew this, Hao Zhen and the rest also knew that this was their bottom line.

Bai Zu tribe was just established, they only had these few Gu Immortals, they were all nurtured by Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

If they died, it would mean becoming enemies with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu without any hope of reconciliation. If Heavenly Lord Bai Zu did not take revenge, he would not have any face to remain in Northern Plains!

Attacking Iron Eagle blessed land and making Bai Zu tribe lose some resources, or even killing some Hei tribe Gu Immortals was fine. The important thing was, these Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortals could not die. Chu Du had placed much emphasis on this point before they went.

Chu Du did not want to be a mortal enemy with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

In terms of strength, Bai Zu tribe's Gu Immortals were inferior to Hao Zhen, Chou Lao Wu, and Li Si Chun, these three rank seven Gu Immortals, but they were united and fought together, the three immortals were actually suppressed instead.

Li Si Chun shouted: "Let's retreat first!"

The other two immortals reacted, immediately moving back.

Bai Zu tribe's Gu Immortals chased after them, as the three immortals split up.

"Quickly come back! This is the outside world of Northern Plains, we are not reinforced by Iron Eagle blessed land. There are already enemies inside the blessed land, let's go back and help Lord Wei!" Bai Zu tribe's Gu Immortals chased for a while before returning to Iron Eagle blessed land.

The three immortals saw a chance and flew back immediately.

Among them, Li Si Chun went to the entrance created by Immortal Wang, successfully getting into Iron Eagle blessed land.

Bai Zu tribe's Gu Immortals were panicking, the entrance could not be blocked anymore, even if they went to the bigger gap in space, they could not change the situation.

They were also concerned about Bai Zu Wei's safety.

After all, three rank seven Gu Immortals had already entered Iron Eagle blessed land.

"Let's go find Lord Wei first!"

This was a wise decision.

Without anyone guarding it, Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu got into the blessed land as well.

"Quick, quick, we are the last ones in."

"Go and see what resources there are, and get them for ourselves!"

Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu were extremely hurried.

Gu Immortals needed resources to cultivate, this was their foundation for cultivation!

Without resources, they could do nothing.

This time, the immortals came to attack Bai Zu tribe, their own objective was to gain benefits. Without profits, how could anyone resolve themselves to offend a rank eight Gu Immortal?

“Alright, these soft jades are all mine!” Li Si Chun licked his lips, unsatisfied.

The soft jade beach in front of him was newly built by Bai Zu tribe.

Unfortunately, there were only a few hundred soft jades on the beach, the largest one was only basin sized, Li Si Chun was not satisfied.

“This is the third resource point I have found, there are so little resources. Damn, Bai Zu tribe is so poor, what’s the point of trying to become a super force.” Li Si Chun stood with his hands on his waist as he cursed.

“Oh? Wait, no!” He raised his head, looking at the sky with a flickering gaze.

“Damn, why did I forget about this?!” He patted his forehead, rapidly flying into the sky.

There were only three eagle nests in the sky.

Countless Fang Yuan phantoms were still flying in the sky, diverting Bai Zu Wei’s attention.

Fang Yuan’s true body was hidden among them, no matter how Bai Zu Wei cursed him, he refused to come out.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1171: Wind Thunder Roar

Thankfully, Bai Zu Wei was no longer as stifled as before.

He chased Immortal Wang all over the place.

Immortal Wang turned into a falling star hound, he was fast as he ran, shouting: “Why are you only chasing me? I did not even get a single eagle nest, it was all Liu Guan Yi! Are you blind? Do you have a brain?”

“You will all die, you will all die!!” Bai Zu Wei was beyond angry.

He could not find Fang Yuan’s true body, he could only take it out in Immortal Wang.

Immortal Wang was strong, but he did not dare to make a killing move against Bai Zu Wei, so he could only run away.

Thanks to him drawing Bai Zu Wei’s attention, Fang Yuan successfully obtained another eagle nest.

“Ah!” Bai Zu Wei charged towards him, but Fang Yuan smiled, using the same move to hide among the myriad self army.

Bai Zu Wei roared loudly, he was extremely angry, countless golden needles rained down like a storm, pouring.

Countless myriad self phantoms were destroyed, but Fang Yuan used it again, replenishing the phantoms.

This tactic was too shameless, Bai Zu Wei was breathing roughly from anger.

At this time, Bai Zu tribe’s other Gu Immortals arrived.

“Ah, where are our eagle nests?!”

“Lord Wei, are you alright?”

“Scoundrel! Return out eagle nests!”

Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals were furious, they were currently experiencing Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals’ feelings when their headquarters were attacked and taken over, the rage and helplessness they felt.

At the same time, Li Si Chun arrived too.

Hearing the screams of Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals, he easily understood what was going on.

He looked at the falling star hound that Immortal Wang had turned into, saying enviously: “Immortal Wang, you truly made great gains!”

The falling star hound who was full of injuries heard this and burst out angrily, speaking human language: “Woof! What damn gains, I did not get a single thing!”

Li Si Chun rolled his eyes, pointing at the falling star hound: “Sigh, who are you kidding? Look at how petty you are, I am not after your gains.”

Immortal Wang was almost jumping from rage: “Woof! So be it if you do not believe me, all the good stuff has been taken by that crafty Liu Guan Yi!!”

Li Si Chun was stunned, before looking at the army of myriad self phantoms, his eyes shined: “To think that darling Liu has such amazing methods, I am truly seeing him in a different light.”

As he said that, something happened over there with Bai Zu tribe’s immortals.

Green light burst into the sky, a huge green giant formed, its imposing aura enveloped the entire battlefield.

“None of you will escape!” The green giant shouted, it was loud as thunder, echoing in Iron Eagle blessed land.

Immortal Wang, who had become a falling star hound, saw this and ran rapidly with all four legs!

Li Si Chun screamed: “Oh mother! Ancient battle formation, Green City Rampage!”

Before finishing his words, he turned around and ran.

Ancient battle formation Green City Rampage, it was an amazing method that could rival rank eight Gu Immortals. After Heavenly Lord Bai Zu recruited the four supreme elders of Hei tribe, he obtained it and gave it to Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals to learn it.

This time, the Bai Zu Gu Immortals were using this formation for the first time in battle.

Boom!

The green giant clapped.

Golden light shone, instantly destroying all of the myriad self phantoms in the battlefield.

Fang Yuan’s true body was hiding in an eagle nest, he had transformed into a small eagle, his heartbeat was accelerating.

“As expected of Green City Rampage, my myriad self phantoms were instantly destroyed, yet the three eagle nests were unharmed. By gathering everyone’s strength, the attacks of the Bai Zu tribe immortals became much stronger, and their manipulation also became more precise. It is a pity... they are still unable to find me.”

Familiar face was this useful!

Without luck inspection or similarly special methods, it was almost unstoppable.

The green giant’s eyes burst out with golden light, the Bai Zu Gu Immortals activated all sorts of investigative killer moves, but they could not find Fang Yuan.

Bai Zu Wei snorted coldly, suddenly moving the giant’s hand, grabbing an eagle nest and putting it into his immortal aperture.

“Hmm? He became smarter.” Fang Yuan sighed, activating myriad self as he moved his real body.

He could not enter Bai Zu Wei’s immortal aperture along with the eagle nest.

Even though that was Bai Zu Wei’s greatest weakness, Fang Yuan did not have methods to break out of the immortal aperture, he was likely to be stuck inside.

For just three eagle nests, it was not worth the risk.

He had already taken more than eighty eagle nests!

“He is here indeed! Die!” The green giant screamed, golden light flashed as the myriad self army was decimated, only Fang Yuan was left.

Next, the green giant waved its hand as a dark green wind blade was formed.

The wind blade slashed at Fang Yuan with incredible speed.

Fang Yuan used myriad self again, hiding among the phantoms.

But the wind blade turned into numerous blades, slashing their respective targets..

Fang Yuan spat out a mouthful of blood, his time path defensive killer move was instantly broken, his ribcage had multiple fractures, his spine was nearly snapped, he had suffered a huge blow!

This was the terrifying battle strength that matched rank eight existences!

The wind blade had already split into countless ones, Fang Yuan was only hit by one of them.

He wanted to dodge, but after the wind blade split up, its speed rose tremendously, he could not evade it.

Man as Before!

At the next moment, Fang Yuan healed completely.

The green giant was very confident in this move, seeing that Fang Yuan was unharmed, it was enraged, charging towards him angrily.

Fang Yuan sped away as he flew.

He decided on a direction and flew towards Immortal Wang.

Immortal Wang saw that Fang Yuan was luring Green City Rampage over, he was so shocked he barked non-stop, his four dog legs moved like a windmill, desperately running for his life.

Fang Yuan quickly got closer to him.

Green City Rampage was chasing him relentlessly.

“Woof! Don’t come, don’t come here!”

“Woof! Liu Guan Yi, you took all the benefits, and you still want to drag me down with you! You are too ruthless!!”

“Woof! Let me off, we are friends of Domination Immortal!”

Fang Yuan had a cold expression, he ignored these words, he was bent on making Immortal Wang his cannon fodder.

There was no choice, Green City Rampage’s speed was faster than sword escape Immortal Gu.

Without cannon fodder, Fang Yuan could not outspeed Green City Rampage!

Immortal Wang saw that Fang Yuan had run ahead of him, while Green City Rampage was right behind.

At this moment, he was filled with intense rage and killing intent!

He had mixed in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world for so many years, he had never suffered like today before. This Liu Guan Yi, this pretty boy! He did not give a good impression at first glance, and after attacking Iron Eagle blessed land, he earned the most, Immortal Wang did not even get a single eagle nest!!

The important thing was, he was trying to use him as a sacrificial lamb now.

Immortal Wang almost attacked Fang Yuan.

But he restrained this urge.

The reason was obvious, before this battle, they had gathered into a temporary alliance, they were restrained by dao marks. If he attacked an ally, he would face a terrifying backlash.

This was necessary.

Because Fang Yuan, Li Si Chun and the rest were not close, when they worked together, they needed an alliance agreement, that was the basis of trust!

And the one who created the alliance agreement was a Gu Immortal in Chu Sect that Chu Du had chosen.

“At least you are still smart.” Fang Yuan smiled coldly, he was a vigilant person, he naturally was on guard against Immortal Wang’s attacks.

Sword escape Immortal Gu continued to fly, his green grape immortal essence was expended drastically, Fang Yuan flew faster and shrugged off Immortal Wang.

But he could not break away from the green giant.

This was the ancient battle formation Green City Rampage, ranked third in the past! It was only weaker than Heavenly Giant Solor and Golden Heavenly Saint.

If he did not scheme, Fang Yuan would be caught by the green giant eventually.

Doing something like this which harmed an ally also caused him to suffer some backlash. But the extent of it was mild, because Fang Yuan did not attack his ally.

Immortal Wang was anxious, his dog fur was standing up, he could feel intense killing intent from Green City Rampage.

“Quickly save me!” Immortal Wang shouted, feeling despair.

“Don’t worry Brother Wang, we are here to help you.” Far away, Hao Zhen shouted.

Beside him, there was a Gu Immortal, it was Chou Lao Wu.

Immortal Wang heard his words and was overjoyed, quickly shouting: “If I am saved, I will definitely thank you guys!”

Hao Zhen nodded, speaking to Chou Lao Wu softly: “Brother Chou, let’s start.”

“Alright.” Chou Lao Wu burst out with an intense aura that shot up into the sky, a large amount of his red date immortal essence was expended at once.

Around his entire body, a dark green wind was enveloping it, forming a gigantic ball of compressed winds.

“Wind—” Chou Lao Wu growled.

“Thunder!” Next, Hao Zhen cried out at the sky.

His muscular body was upright like a spear, he was floating in the air, countless lightning sparks were flickering, turning the area of a hundred steps around him into a plasma pool.

Next, Chou Lao Wu and Hao Zhen opened their mouths, bellowing loudly towards the green giant which was still far away — “Roar!!”

Double immortal killer move — Wind Thunder Roar.

First, the dark green wind ball flew out, forming into a horizontal tornado. It was like a world destroying serpent, moving forward with destructive force.

Next, the lightning plasma shot towards it, fusing with the tornado in an instant, forming a thick wind and lightning pillar.

The pillar moved extremely quickly, it shot out and flew several meters above the ground, along the way, intense air currents were formed, digging huge trenches along the grassland on the ground.

Two breaths of time later, the wind and lightning pillar crashed into the green giant’s chest with an unstoppable force.

Peak rank seven battle strength!

The green giant stood on the ground and braced itself, raising its arms in defense.

After several breaths of time, the attack dissipated, while the giant was still standing.

“If I were to be hit by wind thunder roar, I would die for sure. Worthy of Green City Rampage!” Fang Yuan flew as he watched the battle of two sides.

Immortal Wang was still running without even looking back, he was afraid that any pause would cause him to die there.

“No wonder it can rival rank eight Gu Immortals, let’s run!” Hao Zhen had a pale expression, the use of wind thunder roar was extremely taxing on him.

Chou Lao Wu was not feeling good either, the two quickly retreated.

The green giant almost perfectly blocked wind thunder roar, but unexpectedly, it stopped moving after the attack, staying completely still.

“Something’s strange.” During this period, most of the battling Gu Immortals had fled a huge distance.

At the next moment, they saw that the green giant broke apart all of a sudden.

Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals were all spitting out blood, they fell towards the ground.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1172: Unresolvable

The ancient battle formation was broken, Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals suffered a huge backlash.

“Lord Wei!!” Someone cried out.

Bai Zu Wei was the key person controlling the formation, after the ancient battle formation was broken, he suffered the biggest damage, he actually died on the spot.

Bai Zu Wei was the number one person below Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, the core of Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals.

To think that after Bai Zu tribe was created, when he was about to reach the prime of his life, he died in their base camp.

This shocking change not only made the Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortals feel deep sadness, Fang Yuan and the rest who invaded Iron Eagle blessed land also turned solemn.

A member of Bai Zu tribe died!

The enmity was huge now!!

Fang Yuan had a heavy mood.

Li Si Chun, with his flowery appearance, had a pale expression as he asked: “What, what do we do?”

Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu had even worse expressions.

“How could this happen? Green City Rampage can rival rank eights, our wind thunder roar cannot cause such harm to him.” Chou Lao Wu could not believe this.

“They were not familiar enough with the formation...” Fang Yuan had a realization in his mind.

The ancient battle formation Green City Rampage was powerful, but it was not so easy to use successfully.

The four top supreme elders of Hei tribe could use it well, that was because they had spent a huge amount of time practising it.

But the Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortals had only practised Green City Rampage for a short period of time.

And now was their first true battle in using it, it was understandable that they had made some errors.

“The matter is huge now, let’s all discuss, what do we do now?” The immortals left the battlefield as Hao Zhen called out.

“Hmph, you two are the ones who killed him, what does it have to do with me?” Fang Yuan sneered, flying away.

“You!” Hao Zhen was furious.

Chou Lao Wu quickly said: “Liu Guan Yi, we are all in the same boat, do you think the Heavenly Lord will let you off in his rage?”

But Fang Yuan ignored him, he continued to retreat, quickly entering the clouds, vanishing from everyone’s vision.

The other immortals were still flying, but they were silent and uncertain.

Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu felt panicked and flustered.

Chou Lao Wu tried to calm himself down, he broke the silence: “Liu Guan Yi is such a scoundrel...”

Before he finished his words, Immortal Wang interrupted: “Ah! I am heavily injured, I need to seek treatment, I will take my leave first.”

He turned into a falling star hound and changed directions, running away.

Li Si Chun saw this and thought quickly, smiling: “I am skilled at healing techniques, wait for me Immortal Wang, I’ll help you.”

Saying this, he followed behind Immortal Wang, swiftly leaving the place.

Chou Lao Wu looked at this in disbelief, he stared with wide opened eyes, cursing: “This dog shit Wang, he is so shameless! To think we saved him! If we’d known this in advance, why would we even help?!”

Chou Lao Wu looked at Hao Zhen, all of the negative emotions inside him were alleviated by a bit.

After all, he was not alone.

Other than him, Hao Zhen had also attacked.

Chou Lao Wu and Hao Zhen had a good relationship, this was rare among demonic path Gu Immortals. Once this happened, these two unlucky brothers’ relationship would grow closer.

But this did not help matters.

The two looked at each other, Hao Zhen had a stiff expression, he said in a heavy tone: “Since this has happened already, there is nothing we can do. Now, we can only rely on Chu Du.”

Chou Lao Wu’s eyes were shining, he was like a drowning person who saw a floating log: “That’s right, you are right. We were invited by Chu Du to help him, he cannot abandon us! Let’s go find him!”

Fang Yuan did not stick around, he immediately returned to Lang Ya blessed land.

“The situation is a little complex now.” He frowned slightly, analyzing the situation.

Originally, this attack on Iron Eagle blessed land was rather successful.

Fang Yuan and the others attacked Iron Eagle blessed land, they destroyed and took away a lot of resources, it was a huge blow to Bai Zu tribe.

If that was all that happened, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu would have to retreat, to defend his base.

He had created a super force after so much work, he had squeezed into the cracks between the Huang Jin tribes, obtaining his own territory. This expended so much of his time and effort, he had even paid a huge price!

If he continued to attack Hei Fan grotto-heaven relentlessly, allowing Fang Yuan and the others to continue attacking them, the situation would become very unstable.

Bai Zu tribe’s reputation would be completely ruined before it was even established. Other forces and Gu Immortals would gather like hungry wolves, targeting Bai Zu tribe like how they attacked Hei tribe.

Once such a situation occurs, even Heavenly Lord Bai Zu would feel very troubled.

Because he was not the only rank eight in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world!

In order to defend his hard work, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had to either take down Hei Fan grotto-heaven quickly, or wisely give up on it and return to stabilize the situation, and fortify his base.

Attacking Hei Fan grotto-heaven quickly was not feasible for Heavenly Lord Bai Zu. If he could, he would have already won by now.

Chu Du had noticed Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s greatest weakness, thus, his tactic aimed at his weakness, it was truly brilliant and impressive.

But unfortunately, how could simply a person’s strategy completely determine the outcome?

At the crucial moment, an unexpected mishap occurred, a rank seven Gu Immortal from Bai Zu tribe died!

Fang Yuan naturally knew that Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu acted to save Immortal Wang because they were after the reward. After they help Immortal Wang break free from Green City Rampage, how could Immortal Wang not thank them heavily with compensation?

“The two of them were the last to enter Iron Eagle blessed land, their gains were unable to satisfy their appetite. This is why they wanted to earn a fortune from Immortal Wang. It was a pity, they overestimated the Bai Zu Gu Immortals, and caused this terrible outcome.” Fang Yuan shook his head and sighed.

This way, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was sure to take revenge.

If he did not, his reputation would go down the drain, how could a rank eight Gu Immortal be unable to protect his own people? He might as well go die in that case!

This was more unforgivable than having Iron Eagle blessed land be completely destroyed.

Forget about managing any super force, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu would lose all of his reputation.

“This means that, Chu Du and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s conflict is now unresolvable. And I am Chu Du’s ally, who had also joined the battle in Iron Eagle blessed land.”

At this point, Fang Yuan was also dragged into it.

Even though his circumstances were better than those of Chou Lao Wu and Hao Zhen.

“What should I do?” Fang Yuan paced around in the secret room, thinking hard.

He had the alliance agreement, he had no choice. His desire towards information path inheritances grew even stronger now.

He thought about it for a while, there was a solution that was not really a solution.

“In the worst case, I can only get Chu Du into Lang Ya Sect. Lang Ya Sect is already part of the variant human alliance, by then, we can use the immemorial rock dragon against Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.”

Thinking about this, Fang Yuan saw hope in getting Chu Du to join Lang Ya Sect.

Originally, Domination Immortal Chu Du had the pride of being a human Gu Immortal, how could he lower his head and join a variant human force?

“Or maybe, Chu Du still has his trump cards?” Fang Yuan thought of another possibility.

Of course, he also had another solution, that was to leave Northern Plains directly.

He had the sovereign immortal body anyway, he was unique, he could survive in any region. He was unlike other Gu Immortals, for example, when a Northern Plains Gu Immortal leaves Northern Plains, a foreign region’s heaven and earth qi would cause their immortal aperture to become unstable, it might even break apart, trying to undergo tribulation was courting death.

“If I cannot fight you, I can still escape.” Fang Yuan thought. So-called reputation and pride were not obstacles in his way.

Of course, unless he had no choice, Fang Yuan would not want to leave Northern Plains.

Over here, he could use Lang Ya Sect’s power and live well. If he left, he could not use immortal tribulation tempering aperture. He could also not use Luo Po Valley which had already been sold to Lang Ya Sect. There were also lots of other problems as well.

Southern Border.

At dawn.

Far away, the dawn sky was white like marble white.

The fog in the mountains fused with the fragrance of the grass and trees, giving off a cooling feeling.

Two figures were descending from the cloud layer.

One was rank seven, the other was rank six, they resembled youngsters. They wore deep green short sleeve shirts and long black pants, they also had jade leggings.

“Big brother, they said third supreme elder went crazy? Do you think it is true?” The rank six Gu Immortal asked.

The rank seven Gu Immortal had a grim expression, he sighed and answered: “Ever since us righteous path forces started the super dream realm exploration, two Gu Immortals have already fallen unconscious, and one Gu Immortal’s soul was completely destroyed. Third supreme elder went crazy... I’m afraid it’s true.”

“Ah.” The rank six Gu Immortal gasped: “Third supreme elder has such high cultivation level, he is a senior among rank sevens, already having gone through two grand tribulations, how could he go crazy?”

The rank seven Gu Immortal shook his head: “Exploration of the dream realm has nothing to do with cultivation level. Other than bringing back third supreme elder now, we have to take over his role. Little brother, you need to be careful, he is a good example, do not succumb to the dream realm.”

“Don’t worry big brother! Even though there is a prophecy on Great Dream Immortal Venerable, I know my limits, how could I court death?” The rank six Gu Immortal had a fearful expression.

The two immortals spoke casually, passing by a nameless peak as they continued flying, before vanishing in the sky.

“They went in.” Hei Lou Lan said.

Currently, besides her, there was Ying Wu Xie, Shi Nu, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and Bai Ning Bing.

“This super Gu formation was set up by Chi Qu You, he used up a great number of Immortal Gu from the Southern Border righteous path super forces, as well as countless mortal Gu. The defense is really tight!” Shi Nu said heavily.

With such a powerful defensive Gu formation and a large number of righteous path Gu Immortals defending it, with just the power of Ying Wu Xie and the others, they could not break through.

Ying Wu Xie however, smiled lightly: “This Gu formation is not a problem. The dream realm is still expanding, every once in a while, the formation has to be reset, at that time, the righteous path Gu Immortals have no spare energy to care about other things, that is the time to attack. What truly obstructs us is this dream realm.”

Saying this, he spoke more slowly as he sighed eerily: “I have lead soul into dream, but I do not have a method to unravel dreams.”

“Fang Yuan does.” Hei Lou Lan transmitted.

“Him?!” Ying Wu Xie’s heart shook, his gaze suddenly became very complicated.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1173: Crazed Demon Cave

Inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Tens of thousands of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu figures floated in the air, looking down towards Chu Du.

The expression and attitude of the Heavenly Lord Bai Zu figures were completely different from before, all of their faces were grim and heavy.

“Chu Du! Hand over the murderers and Hei Fan grotto-heaven, I can spare your life.”

Tens of thousands of mouths spoke at once, the loud volume reverberated in Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Chu Du stood on the ground, raising his head and looking.

Compared to the numerous Heavenly Lord Bai Zu figures in the sky, he was all alone, seemingly lonely and weak.

However, his body was upright and straight like a spear, his domineering aura shrouded his body, he could resist Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s imposing display without wavering.

“Hmph! You are attacking my grotto-heaven, and you want me to surrender? So what if that Bai Zu tribesman died, this is your punishment and a price to pay for attacking me.”

Chu Du spoke plainly, his voice was echoing in the grotto-heaven.

The group of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu figures still wanted to speak, but Chu Du activated his immortal killer move at the next moment.

Inner strength self detonation!

The immortal killer move’s range covered the entirety of Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Inside the Heavenly Lord Bai Zu bodies, inner strength was appearing out of nowhere, it expanded until it reached its limit.

Next, all of the Heavenly Lord Bai Zu clones self-detonated at the same time, it was an incredible sight.

At once, the overwhelming army was completely destroyed by Chu Du in one move.

“Domination Immortal!” Outside the grotto-heaven, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s true body frowned as he gritted his teeth, fuming with rage.

Not long ago, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had received a letter from his tribe, he was informed of Bai Zu Wei’s death.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was naturally very upset, and also furious.

Bai Zu Wei was nurtured by him singlehandedly, he was like a child that he had raised.

To think that after building the tribe, and having just having started building their foundation in Northern Plains, he died, it was truly regretful.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu quickly noticed that if this matter was not dealt with properly, it would cause a huge crisis!

“If I do not take down Hei Fan grotto-heaven and kill the murderers, my reputation would fall drastically, people would think I am weak, Bai Zu tribe would be pushed aside.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu would not allow that to happen.

But his earlier call for surrender did not work.

“Domination Immortal Chu Du! This person is as tough as a rock on the seashore, just waves alone cannot stop him. Then let me show him a tsunami.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had a firm expression.

Inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

“Lord Domination Immortal, it is my, Hao Zhen’s, greatest honor to be acquainted with you!”

“Lord Domination Immortal, I, Chou Lao Wu, admires you and solely you alone.”

Somehow, at some point in time, Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu were brought into Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

They were hidden underground, after Chu Du killed all of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s illusory clones, they showed themselves.

Originally, they were worried, but Chu Du rejected Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s offer of surrender with a firm tone, their doubts were dispelled, they felt deep admiration towards him.

“You two.” Chu Du faced them, having a sincere expression: “You both got into trouble because of me. If I submit to the threat of a rank eight Gu Immortal and abandon you, I will be letting down my title as the ‘Domination Immortal’. That is definitely not my style and demeanor as Chu Du!”

“Lord Domination Immortal, what do we do now?” Chou Lao Wu asked.

Chu Du smiled lightly: “Don’t worry, this Hei Fan grotto-heaven is not ordinary. Earlier, I alone was able to defend it. With the help of both of you, we have no worries.”

Chou Lao Wu and Hao Zhen nodded, but the worry in their faces did not go away.

Chu Du continued: “Of course, simply defending will eventually lead to failure, right now, we are in a passive situation. I have already sent a letter out, I am inviting friends to fight with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu once and for all!”

Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu finally cheered up.

The former said: “Lord Domination Immortal, you can firmly control the situation, we are at ease.”

The latter added: “Fame and reputation attracts people. Relying on Hei Fan grotto-heaven to defeat a rank eight Gu Immortal is definitely an incredible achievement. If we use benefits and fame to attract them, Gu Immortals will surely come to help us.”

Saying this, Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu looked at each other, before saying loudly to Chu Du: “We are willing to shoulder the cost of inviting help.”

Domination Immortal laughed: “No need for that, this was my problem to begin with, how can I watch without paying a price?”

Saying this, he held the hands of Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu, saying in a moved tone: “Fortune and disaster comes together, whether it ends up as fortune or disaster will depend on our hard work. If we can defend the grotto-heaven, I am willing to give up sixty percent of the space here to both of you. It was fate that brought us together, from today onwards, I hope that the three of us can go through thick and thin together, regardless of poverty or wealth!”

A huge amount!

Chu Du promised that after success, he would give sixty percent of Hei Fan grotto-heaven to Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu directly.

At once, Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu’s eyes shined, their hearts were pounding.

This was Hei Fan grotto-heaven, it had no calamities and tribulations.

As long as they defended it, Chu Du would give them sixty percent, they would get thirty percent each!

This was simply a godsent fortune.

Hao Zhen’s body shook, he had a look of excitement: “Through thick and thin together, regardless of poverty or wealth!”

Chou Lao Wu was so moved his eyes were red: “Meeting Domination Immortal is the greatest blessing in my life.”

The two of them had no alternatives to begin with.

Chu Du not only took them in, he even gave them great benefits, at once, their passions were burning!

Bzzz bzzz bzzz....

Waves of buzzing noises entered their ears.

A change occurred, large numbers of distorted shadows appeared in Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s sky, some even appeared on the mountains and in water.

Next, from these distorted shadows, figures of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu walked out one by one, there were even desolate beasts, some were ruthless two-legged beasts while others were flying with flapping wings.

The three immortals had solemn expressions.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was an enslavement path cultivator, he could not enter Hei Fan grotto-heaven, but he could send a large number of desolate beasts in.

No, not just desolate beasts, even ancient desolate beasts.

There were even ancient desolate plants, their roots entered the soil as they changed the terrain into their temporary camps.

“Heavenly Lord Bai Zu is finally using his true methods!”

“We have to take action, kill, kill, kill!”

Chu Du called out loudly: “Good, both of you, go kill these fierce beasts. I will manage the situation, I will prevent Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s main body from entering the grotto-heaven.”

If Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s true body came in, they could not compete.

There was an enormous difference in strength between rank seven and eight.

The reason why Chu Du could resist Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was because he was using Hei Fan grotto-heaven as a barrier!

Lang Ya blessed land.

Inside the cloud city’s secret room, Fang Yuan was seated as an Immortal Gu moved to his side.

This Immortal Gu, in terms of width and length, was the size of an adult’s finger, it was silver and blue in color, shining with bright light. It was like a centipede, but instead of having multiple pairs of legs, it had soft and thin hair instead.

This was the rank seven Immortal Gu Sword Eyebrows.

At this moment, Fang Yuan was using sword eyebrows Immortal Gu to increase his sword path dao marks.

The secret room was dark and eerie, but sword eyebrows Immortal Gu was shining with silver light, it was flying around Fang Yuan as it drew a beautiful arc of dazzling light in the darkness.

A while later, Fang Yuan stopped his cultivation for now.

After the fifth earthly calamity, Fang Yuan had been using sword eyebrows Immortal Gu to increase his sword path dao marks.

He also had fixed times for cultivation daily, going to Luo Po Valley to cultivate his soul.

All in all, sword eyebrows Immortal Gu was quite useful, but it was a rank seven

Immortal Gu, unfortunately.

Fang Yuan was only rank six, using a rank seven Immortal Gu had a huge burden on his green grape immortal essence.

Thus, Fang Yuan could not freely use sword eyebrows Immortal Gu. It was because his pressure from the calamities had decreased to the extent after the fifth earthly calamity, along with his good financial status in earning immortal essence stones, that he could undergo this cultivation.

“Oh? Chu Du sent a letter.” Fang Yuan had just stored sword eyebrows Immortal Gu into his immortal aperture when he felt something, he sensed a letter Gu.

Through treasure yellow heaven, Fang Yuan retrieved the letter Gu, his consciousness entered it as his expression changed.

Chu Du had told Fang Yuan about the situation inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven, he also told Fang Yuan his firm attitude.

When Chu Du wrote this letter, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had not asked him to surrender yet, and had not sent in his army of beasts, but Chu Du had anticipated it.

In the letter, he said: “The might of a rank eight cannot be resisted. Even with the grotto-heaven’s help, the inevitable failure is only delayed.”

“He is quite aware, I see.” Fang Yuan praised before continuing to read.

Chu Du asked for Fang Yuan’s help in inviting reinforcements for him to resist Heavenly Lord Bai Zu. At the same time, he told Fang Yuan about his following plans.

Inviting reinforcements to defend Hei Fan grotto-heaven so that Heavenly Lord Bai Zu could not have any gains was not the important point.

The important thing was that other forces and Gu Immortals were not happy with Bai Zu tribe. As long as Heavenly Lord Bai Zu realized that he could not continue to attack Hei Fan grotto-heaven, if he did not return to stabilize the situation, the Bai Zu tribe that he had worked so hard to create would break apart.

That was the only way to get Heavenly Lord Bai Zu to leave.

Lone cultivator Heavenly Lord Bai Zu did not have this weakness. But after taking over Hei tribe and creating the righteous path super force, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had to defend it.

Undoubtedly, this plan would work, it was also the only way to deal with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

Fang Yuan had thought of it earlier as well, Chu Du’s plan and his were the same.

“Who is Chu Du asking for help? This letter shows much confidence, but he is only asking me to go to Crazed Demon Cave to ask for reinforcements. There must be some capable people.”

Crazed Demon Cave!

One of the ten great fierce areas in Northern Plains.

Who was cultivating in seclusion there, who would make Chu Du think of drawing support from their power?

Immediately, Fang Yuan felt a strong sense of curiosity.

Because Crazed Demon Cave was different from the other fierce areas.

If it were Tai Qiu, even though it was dangerous, it was still possible for people to cultivate there in secret. Lang Ya Sect was already doing that now.

But Crazed Demon Cave was created by Limitless Demon Venerable singlehandedly, the cave was filled with demonic sounds, other Gu Immortals would go crazy uncontrollably, before losing all their senses. In history, even a rank eight Gu Immortal had lost their reasoning because of it and became a lunatic.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1174: Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics

Of course, since Chu Du was asking Fang Yuan to go and invite people from Crazed Demon Cave, he had also given Fang Yuan some methods to defend against the demonic sounds, and some information regarding the patterns, strengths and weaknesses of these sounds.

“Regardless, I have to go.”

Chu Du and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu were competing over Hei Fan grotto-heaven, this originated from Fang Yuan’s actions. He had benefits linked with Chu Du, he was also involved with the attack on Iron Eagle blessed land, all in all, he was deeply related to the issue.

Fang Yuan acted quickly, immediately setting off.

Using the super Gu formation, he teleported out of Lang Ya blessed land, heading towards Crazed Demon Cave.

There were no issues along the way.

More than ten days later, Fang Yuan stopped in the air, looking down.

On the ground of flat yellow soil, there was a huge cave. The surroundings of the cave were a circular shape, spanning hundreds of kilometers. There was a thick rainforest in the cave, having both yellow and green colors. From time to time, desolate beasts growled, large numbers of featherless birds flew out, their red bodies made Fang Yuan think of pterosaurs.

It was a scenery of wilderness.

Fang Yuan descended, as the cave got bigger in his vision, until it eventually filled it up.

As he went down, Fang Yuan was completely shrouded by the rainforest in the cave.

Entering the rainforest, the humid and moist air enveloped Fang Yuan.

The branches of the trees were thick and large, but sunlight was very intense. Vines were hanging on the tree trunks, or intertwining on them, Fang Yuan could not find a place to land at times.

Creak creak...

Far away, many strange monkeys with grey fur were chasing each other on the trees.

Suddenly, a motionless ‘vine’ moved up, openings its bloodthirsty mouth as it swallowed dozens of grey monkeys into its stomach.

In truth, this was a desolate beast tree python that had successfully hunted its prey.

The grey monkey group was in a commotion, they called out loudly, their voices attracted the king of the monkeys, it was also a desolate beast.

The desolate beast tree python continued to retreat, it was already full, its goal was achieved, it did not want to fight the grey monkey king.

The grey monkeys were not insistent on revenge in nature, the monkey king saw that the tree python was leaving and did not chase it, only calling out loudly.

But at this time, there was a sound echoing in the place.

“Oh no, demonic sound.” Fang Yuan quickly used his Gu worms, using Chu Du’s method to defend against the demonic sound.

Ordinary methods could not block demonic sounds.

But Chu Du’s method worked against it with immediate effect. Fang Yuan felt like the demonic sound was gone, as if it never existed.

The vocalizations of the monkey king and the tree python could be heard now.

Influenced by the demonic sound, the two desolate beasts which were going to leave suddenly engaged in combat like they had gone crazy.

This was not just an intense battle, it was a battle to the death.

The two desolate beasts fought to the death, they were entangled, rolling around as many trees were snapped, countless living beings died.

The monkeys around them also went crazy, not only did they attack their allies, they even self-mutilated, banging against hard rocks or digging out their own eyes with their fingers.

The peaceful rainforest became chaotic, there was roaring everywhere, many life forms went into madness, fighting each other as dust clouds rose, an intense bloody smell was emanating.

Fang Yuan maintained his composure and calmness.

But the surrounding birds were all attacking him, even the ants and bees nearby were suiciding as they attacked him.

“This is Crazed Demon Cave...” Fang Yuan sighed internally, using Gu worms to defend himself.

He was clear-minded, he had many strong methods to survive in this crazy environment, he did not feel much pressure.

After all, these crazy life forms were not targeting him alone, they were attacking at will, acting like maniacs.

The demonic sound continued for a while before vanishing.

The noisy rainforest became silent at once.

The wild beasts that were mixing around earlier were corpses now, they had severed limbs and incomplete corpses scattered all over the rainforest. At some places, their blood formed into small rivers, nourishing the ground. Countless snapped trees obtained sufficient nutrients and rapidly grew again.

Far away, the two desolate beasts who fought had died.

The tree python’s thick and long body was coiled around the monkey king multiple times, while the final loop was around its neck, snapping it completely.

But the monkey king struggled before dying, tearing apart the python’s stomach. All of the monkeys that it had eaten were freed, but they were all dead.

The tree python was near death, as the demonic sound faded, it regained clarity, before the light in its eyes faded.

It lost its life.

Fang Yuan had a thought as he rushed to the battlefield, keeping these two dead desolate beasts in his own immortal aperture.

“If I were you, I would not waste my effort. The life forms in Crazed Demon Cave, be it flying birds or land-based beasts, even Gu worms and plants have no value. The corpses of these desolate beasts cannot be sold in treasure yellow heaven, because the dao marks in their bodies are completely chaotic.” A voice could be heard.

“Who is this?” Fang Yuan was shocked.

Even though he had been using familiar face, and the time path killer move three breaths future vision, the latter could only let him see events related to himself three breaths later.

‘See’ was not ‘hear’.

Three breaths future vision had its flaws.

Like right now, Fang Yuan could not foresee voices.

But soon, Fang Yuan ‘saw’ the future, a white robed Gu Immortal with a middle aged appearance came out of nowhere, he was behind and towards Fang Yuan’s right, about ten steps away.

Fang Yuan was fully focused, but he was still looking around.

Three breaths of time later, towards his back, at the right, a white robed Gu Immortal appeared in that very spot.

This Gu Immortal had a pale face and black beard, he had long wide sleeves and eyes that were shining like stars, his disposition was extraordinary.

Fang Yuan quickly turned around, looking at this foreign immortal with a nervous expression.

The white robed Gu Immortal smiled as he said: “Don’t be afraid, friend, I am Not Immortal.”

Fang Yuan was exposing rank six aura now, but the white robed Gu Immortal was rank seven, his aura was not concealed.

“What?” Fang Yuan was perplexed.

“My title is ‘Not Immortal’, I live in Crazed Demon Cave. The Gu worm that you have is the token that us Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics gave to Chu Du.” The white robed Not Immortal smiled.

Fang Yuan realized, hearing Not Immortal’s words, there were two other people in Crazed Demon Cave. He quickly greeted: “Junior greets senior, I came here without an invitation because we need senior’s help to assist Lord Domination Immortal.”

“Hehehe, us Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics have lived here for hundreds of years without bothering with the outside world, if Chu Du wants to join us, we will gladly welcome him. But if he wants us to leave Crazed Demon Cave, that is absolutely impossible.” Not Immortal smiled.

“Oh?” Fang Yuan had an anxious expression, but he felt nothing on the inside.

Regardless of whether Not Immortal was saying this to elevate his own value, just Domination Immortal Chu Du alone was not someone who toyed around.

Chu Du definitely had a close relationship with the three immortals here, he had a plan if he asked Fang Yuan to come.

“Since Chu Du gave you the Gu worm, I suppose he has also given you many methods and the traveling route as well?” Not Immortal asked.

“Yes.” Fang Yuan nodded.

Not Immortal assessed Fang Yuan involuntarily, to make Chu Du entrust him like this, what capabilities did this Gu Immortal junior have?

“In that case, follow me. Hehe, you were quite lucky, I came out here for a breather. Crazed Demon Cave is getting more dangerous in recent years, the routes are changing, follow me, if you take a wrong step, you will face the consequences yourself.” Not Immortal said as he entered the rainforest.

Fang Yuan hesitated, before moving and following him.

The two entered deep into the rainforest and went into a hole, arriving at the second layer.

Crazed Demon Cave had nine layers, the second layer was an incredibly hot land of burning rocks. A large amount of rocks were piled up together, big and small, the large ones were like huge elephants, the small ones were like pebbles.

A moment later, the two immortals arrived at the third layer.

The third layer was covered in white fog, a large number of fog Gu were living here, along the way, Fang Yuan saw figures of large fierce beasts moving about in the fog.

There was a very large quantity of cloud bamboo.

It was this special bamboo, on the same scale as the rainforest in the first layer, that created the endless fog here.

Next, Fang Yuan saw the image of a city in the fog.

A tall city with markets and vendors, countless people were moving about rapidly, but there was no sound, it was a peculiar scene.

“That is Fog City, the vengeful souls who died gather and form here, there is no point looking at it.” Not Immortal, who was in front, informed.

Fang Yuan was slightly shocked, he knew about Fog City, this was the first time he saw it. Souls that could form Fog City were at least Gu Immortals, and a large number at that. With Fang Yuan’s current strength, if he entered it, he would definitely die, there was no way to escape.

Crazed Demon Cave was one of the ten great fierce areas in Northern Plains, it was naturally very dangerous.

The Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics including Not Immortal were living here permanently, their strength was naturally not low.

Under Not Immortal’s lead, Fang Yuan entered deep into the cave without much danger, he got to the sixth layer.

“Even we do not dare to enter the bottom three layers casually, it is too dangerous. Come, let me bring you to Gu Immortal Pang Shan, he has the most interaction with Chu Du, he was the one who recommended Chu Du in the first place. Chu Du knows our rules, but he still asked you to come here, he definitely has his objectives. Pang Shan should know.”

Under Not Immortal’s lead, Fang Yuan met with Gu Immortal Pang Shan at a small valley in the sixth layer.

A huge person!

Pang Shan was dozens of meters tall, he was situated in the valley, he was using the valley as his chair, he was in a half lying down position.

He made Fang Yuan think of that Leshan Giant Buddha back on Earth.

Pang Shan opened his eyes slightly, waking up from his sleep.

“Oh? Chu Du is asking for reinforcements... hmm, we did have an agreement before.” Pang Shan said in a deep tone, speaking very slowly.

“As expected. What agreement?” Not Immortal stroked his beard and asked.

“Lend him Immortal Gu and killer moves to resolve his alliance agreements.” Pang Shan replied slowly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1175: Do Not Care

“Oh?” Fang Yuan heard Pang Shan’s reply and felt extremely shocked.

During this period of time, he had been looking for a way to remove his alliance agreements, but to think that it would show up in front of him like this.

At once, Fang Yuan felt extremely complex.

He had thought that Chu Du was here to ask for reinforcements, but to think that Chu Du’s true intention was to remove alliance agreements.

“Chu Du had such a backup, but he had not used it yet, only activating it now, evidently, asking the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics for help has a price.”

Crazed Demon Cave was a special place, demonic sounds often played, causing dao marks to become chaotic and all immortal materials to become useless. Because of the special environment, Gu Immortals here could not connect to treasure yellow heaven at all.

The Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics were isolated from the world.

And Domination Immortal Chu Du needed to guard against Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s invasion, he could not leave. He was unable to act personally and leave the defense of Hei Fan grotto-heaven to others.

Thus, even though Chu Du and Fang Yuan did not know each other for long, because of their closely linked alliance relationship, at this moment, Chu Du had to ask Fang Yuan to come, exposing the secret of Crazed Demon Cave.

“No, Chu Du is very shrewd. He might be intentionally exposing this to me.”

Fang Yuan had a thought flash in his mind.

If this guess was accurate, then Fang Yuan could not clearly guess Chu Du’s intention.

Fang Yuan was skilled at scheming, so was Chu Du, the Domination Immortal that could make the super force Liu tribe feel helpless, how could he be a simple brute?

Immediately, Fang Yuan held his breath as he asked Pang Shan: “According to what I know, Lord Domination Immortal has many alliance agreements, they are of different sources, they are not purely information path alliance agreements, there are also other paths that could attain the result of information path.”

Fang Yuan was spouting nonsense.

However, Chu Du had roamed Northern Plains for so long, he had to have relationships with people, he definitely had many alliance agreements.

Not Immortal stroked his heard and kept silent, smiling lightly.

Pang Shan spoke slowly, but his voice was filled with confidence: “No matter what alliance agreement it is from whichever path, my method can resolve it. Because my Immortal Gu is called ‘Care’.”

Immortal Gu Care?

Fang Yuan did not conceal the shock inside him, it was shown all over his face.

Care Immortal Gu, almost everyone knew about it.

Because it was in the top ten of the List of Mystical Gu.

In the past, it was ranked third.

But after the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Fang Yuan’s identity was exposed, everyone knew that he was a person from the future who had used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth.

Thus, Spring Autumn Cicada went from seventh place to third.

Care Immortal Gu, which was originally third, became fourth.

The List of Mystical Gu was constantly changing.

Of course, the top ten seldom adjusted.

Spring Autumn Cicada was related to Red Lotus Demon Venerable, the latter was incredibly mysterious, there was little information about him in this world compared to the other venerables. As for rumors regarding Spring Autumn Cicada, not everyone held the same view. Fang Yuan's example proved Spring Autumn Cicada's immense value, the status of this Immortal Gu rose drastically in everyone's minds, its ranking rose as a result.

Most of the top ten mystical Gu were related to rank nine venerables.

The fourth place care Gu was refined by Limitless Demon Venerable when he searched for the secluded domain of heaven and earth 'Care' that was recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

Fifth place was qi escape Gu.

Sixth place was combat relocation Gu, it originated from Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

Seventh place was connect mind Gu, it came from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

And for the number one mystical Gu, it was refined by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

According to <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, chapter four, section twenty-four – Ren Zu wanted to save his own children, but he encountered a beastman along the way, he was affected by fear Gu.

Fear Gu made Ren Zu fear everything, he was unable to advance due to his fears.

Ren Zu was tormented by his fear, he was in deep agony, he consulted self Gu.

Self Gu answered: "Then let me eat it."

Ren Zu waved his hand: "No, no. I want nothing more than to avoid fear. If you eat it, this fear will stay with me for life. This is too risky."

Ren Zu asked cognition Gu.

Cognition Gu said: "Oh human, you want to conquer fear, you need to have courage."

Ren Zu was troubled: "I used to have courage Gu as my companion, it is the friend of faith Gu. But afterwards, because I encountered the hairy men, due to failure Gu, it left me."

Cognition Gu said: "I'll teach you a method, hide fear Gu deep within your heart. Move forward after that and courage Gu will come to you. Courageous people are not fearless, they are just hiding fear deep within their hearts."

Ren Zu was more troubled now: "Oh Gu, what are you thinking? Precisely because of fear, I cannot advance, thus I need courage. But you are telling me that to obtain courage, I need to move forward first.”

While they were talking, a Gu worm flew over.

“Is it courage Gu?” Ren Zu was overjoyed, before feeling disappointment.

Because this Immortal Gu was not courage Gu, it was love Gu.

Sometimes, love comes to you on its own.

Love Gu said: “Oh human, I can smell hope and fear from you, as love, they are my food.”

Ren Zu was overjoyed: “You can take fear away, but hope is mine, I cannot give it to you.”

Love Gu refused: “Only hope and fear can nourish me together, that is how I survive. Oh human, then I can only stay by your side.”

Ren Zu did not have any good feelings towards love Gu, he was not very willing, but love Gu said: “Don’t chase me away, with me around, you can summon courage Gu.”

Indeed, after Ren Zu called out, courage Gu flew to his side a while later.

“Ah, this is the aura of love. Oh, and fear too.” Courage Gu landed in Ren Zu’s heart with much satisfaction.

It was actually good friends with fear Gu, the two were playing as they flew around Ren Zu’s heart.

Fear and courage are often within one’s grasp.

Ren Zu had courage, his fear dissipated by a huge amount, he could move on again.

“Oh Ren Zu, I want to thank you, you are the reason why I broke free from fear.” Before Ren Zu left, the beastman came to him.

“I have two Gu here, one is loyalty, one is betrayal. Choose one, this will be my token of gratitude towards you.” The beastman said, taking out two Gu worms, holding one in each hand.

Ren Zu did not know which to choose.

Love Gu said: “Choose loyalty, you already have fear.”

Cognition Gu said instead: “Go choose betrayal, you already have courage.”

Ren Zu was troubled, he asked the beastman: “Can I take a look at them first?”

The beastman said: “Of course.”

Ren Zu thus obtained both loyalty Gu and betrayal Gu, but to think that after he took them, loyalty Gu turned into betrayal Gu, and betrayal Gu turned into loyalty Gu.

Ren Zu was puzzled.

The beastman explained: “Loyalty to others is betrayal to oneself, betraying others is loyalty to yourself.”

Self Gu spoke at this time: “Oh human, choose betrayal. Since you are walking on your own road, you will need to betray others, and even betray yourself.”

Ren Zu made up his mind, he chose betrayal Gu.

The beastman kept loyalty Gu, before leaving, he told Ren Zu: “Oh Ren Zu, you have betrayal now, you cannot go to a place called ‘Care’. At that place, betrayal will harm you, but if you do not ‘Care’, then betrayal cannot harm you at all.”

Ren Zu nodded: “Thank you beastman, I will remember your advice.”

...

In Crazed Demon Cave.

At Pang Shan’s will, Immortal Gu Care flew out of his immortal aperture.

He said to Not Immortal: “Even though I have care Immortal Gu, it is not enough.”

Not Immortal stroked his heard: “I understand!”

He took out an Immortal Gu.

“This is Immortal Gu ‘No’.”

The two Immortal Gu were different in appearance, they floated towards Fang Yuan.

Pang Shan and Not Immortal took out their respective wills, as well as their own red date immortal essence.

“We will trouble you to bring these to Domination Immortal. By then, he will have no lingering worries, he would not be restricted by the backlashes of alliance agreements.” Not Immortal said to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was a little stunned

Two rank seven Immortal Gu were lent out like this, they were so casual about it, was their relationship with Chu Du really that close, or were they influenced by Crazed Demon Cave?

Two wills carrying Immortal Gu and immortal essence entered Fang Yuan’s sleeves.

Fang Yuan said goodbye as he asked before leaving: “May I ask both seniors, if I want to borrow these Immortal Gu in the future, what should I do?”

Pang Shan did not speak, he opened his eyes slightly before shutting them, falling into deep sleep again.

Not Immortal smiled and did not speak.

Fang Yuan sighed internally, he turned around and left.

Not Immortal did not send him off.

But Fang Yuan had already memorized the route, he managed to move along the route without any danger.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1176: Crazed Demon Agreement

The route to leave Crazed Demon Cave was much shorter than going in.

Some days later, Fang Yuan arrived in Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

“To think that Chu Du also has a super Gu formation, and has even set it up to transport Gu Immortals in and out of Hei Fan grotto-heaven.” Fang Yuan felt admiration towards Chu Du’s foresight and preparation.

This was his backup.

As long as he set up a teleportation Gu formation in the outside world that was not discovered, Chu Du and the others would not be trapped in Hei Fan grotto-heaven by Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

This showed that even though Chu Du resisted Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and had a strong attitude, he was not just being rash and reckless.

“Brother Liu, you have arrived.” Chu Du was already standing outside the formation, waiting for Fang Yuan.

Seeing Fang Yuan, he showed joy on his face.

Fang Yuan sighed: “Fate toys with people, if there were no mishaps, Hei Fan grotto-heaven would have already become a peaceful paradise.”

Fang Yuan looked around, only to see that Hei Fan grotto-heaven had rising smoke and flames, beast growls could be heard, there were large pits on the ground, fierce battles were happening far away.

Chu Du introduced at an appropriate timing: “Hei Fan grotto-heaven has huge space, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu is continuously sending in desolate beasts to invade, but I have already invited several experts, they are staying guard at different locations, while I am here to prevent Heavenly Lord Bai Zu from coming in personally.”

Fang Yuan had a solemn expression, his gaze held deep meaning: “Brother Chu, you have heavy responsibilities, I did not disappoint you, I brought what you need.”

Saying this, Fang Yuan waved his sleeves as two wills flew out from them.

The wills flew to the air and turned into the figures of Not Immortal and Pang Shan, from the outside, one could vaguely see the immortal essence and Immortal Gu that they were carrying.

Fang Yuan did not keep these two wills in his own immortal aperture.

The sovereign immortal aperture could not be exposed.

In this current situation, the wills of Not Immortal and Pang Shan could not be targeted.

Along the way, Fang Yuan had thought of harming these two wills and taking those extremely precious Immortal Gu for himself.

But this was very unlikely.

The main reason was that Fang Yuan had an alliance agreement, once he attacked, it would activate, he would die from the backlash.

Secondly, these two Immortal Gu were not easy to snatch, because the Gu Immortal’s will was not just carrying the Immortal Gu, the Immortal Gu itself inside it was filled with will. With just a thought, these two Immortal Gu would self-detonate.

“Thank you.” Chu Du said as he kept Pang Shan’s will in his immortal aperture directly.

This small detail was noticed by Fang Yuan, he noted it internally.

The immortal aperture was the basis of a Gu Immortal, it was the most reliable source of resources, one would not expose it to outsiders normally. Chu Du seemed to greatly trust Pang Shan.

Chu Du said to Not Immortal’s will: “Not Immortal, you can stay with this ally of mine.”

Not Immortal stroked his beard, smiling at Fang Yuan: “My main body guessed correctly, you really chose this person.”

“What do you mean?” Fang Yuan asked, he was filled with questions and suspicions on this trip to Crazed Demon Cave.

Chu Du explained: “I will summarize it. Crazed Demon Cave is one of the ten great fierce areas in Northern Plains on the surface, but it was actually specially created by Limitless Demon Venerable in his later years, to pursue the secrets of eternal life.”

“Limitless Demon Venerable refined the legendary derivation Gu, he hid inside Crazed Demon Cave and did experiments and Gu refinements on it, hoping to reach a breakthrough.”

Limitless Demon Venerable!

Eternal life!

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly: “Did Limitless Demon Venerable succeed?”

Not Immortal’s will shook his head: “We are unclear on that. Limitless Demon Venerable’s whereabouts are not listed clearly in historical records. The conclusion is, he went missing mysteriously, whether he succeeded or failed, we do not know.”

“However.” Not Immortal’s will said: “What Chu Du said is true. Crazed Demon Cave was indeed where Limitless Demon Venerable stayed in his later years, derivation Gu is currently at the deepest layer of Crazed Demon Cave. Around derivation Gu, there is a huge super Gu formation set up.”

“Derivation Gu...” Fang Yuan muttered.

This Gu was extremely famous, not just Gu Immortals, even almost all Gu Masters knew about it.

The reason was that it was inside <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

Towards the end of <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, after the seven heavens broke, Ren Zu's ten children died one by one, and Ren Zu was about to die of old age. But at the end, Ren Zu gathered the corpses of his ten children and sacrificed himself, all entering the stomach of derivation Gu. Derivation Gu's stomach burst, exploding as the light of life spread across the land, creating the first batch of mortals. These mortals did not have Ren Zu or the ten children's aptitude, but they could cultivate after awakening their aperture.

Humanity thus grew and developed, forming today's size. During this process, ten rank nine venerables were born, each of them led their own era and left deep marks on the world.

Eventually, today's situation in the five regions was formed.

“Limitless Demon Venerable actually obtained derivation Gu, was he trying to imitate Ren Zu, and create the human race again?” Fang Yuan sighed in shock as he asked.

“That's not the case.” Not Immortal answered: “Ren Zu created humanity, it is an unparalleled method of human path. Limitless Demon Venerable, however, cultivated rule path, he wanted to use derivation Gu to derive new dao marks, eventually using these dao marks as clues to reach eternal life.”

“Using derivation Gu to derive dao marks?” Fang Yuan was shocked.

Chu Du nodded: “Even though this is the estimation of the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics, Crazed Demon Cave has physical proof of it. The demonic sounds inside Crazed Demon Cave were the result of Limitless Demon Venerable's super Gu formation. His motive was not to make all the living beings go crazy, that was only the side effect, his true motive was to cause changes in the dao marks in their bodies, to create brand new dao marks.”

“So that's it!” Fang Yuan's mind shook, he thought about it and asked: “Does that really work?”

Not Immortal followed up: “The deeper you go into Crazed Demon Cave, the stronger the demonic sounds. Among chaotic dao marks, new dao marks do indeed form. But these new dao marks will be transferred to the deepest layer due to the super Gu formation, us Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics want to get through these obstacles of dao marks and enter the core of the super Gu formation, to control derivation Gu and make this super Gu formation work for us!”

“Precisely as a result, the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics need my strength.” Chu Du said.

Fang Yuan realized at once, he had a guess.

As expected, Chu Du's following words affirmed his guess.

“At the lowest layer, all sorts of dao marks of all paths are present. The Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics have their own specialties, but their strength path attainment is below mine. Thus, they invited me, wanting to use my understanding towards strength path and methods to resolve their obstacles in terms of strength path dao marks.”

Not Immortal's will sighed: “It is not about helping us Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics, it is about helping yourselves. We, the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics have been in Crazed Demon Cave for hundreds of years. Even though we are making progress, it is not evident. The secret of eternal life, it is not something the three of us can obtain with just our power. We need you, and you need us, only by working together can we obtained the fruits of Limitless Demon Venerable's labor.”

The Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics went through hundreds of years without much progress, they could only recruit new people to help.

Chu Du was their target.

And Chu Du thought that Fang Yuan was suitable, because of Reckless Savage’s true meaning, Chu Du felt that he was going to sustain his cooperation with Fang Yuan for a long time, they had to obtain deeper connections.

Thus, he gave the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics’ token to Fang Yuan and asked him to find them.

Among the three eccentrics, Not Immortal and Pang Shan saw Chu Du’s intent, thus they were very warm to Fang Yuan.

“Chu Du, you are a strength path great expert, right now in Northern Plains, no, in the five regions, you are an authoritative figure of strength path. It is not strange that you were chosen by the three seniors of Crazed Demon Cave, but what abilities do I have to be chosen?” Fang Yuan asked.

Chu Du laughed loudly: “Brother Liu, don’t be so humble. You are a transformation path rank seven Gu Immortal, you can disguise as a rank six without showing any flaws. I saw your tribulation, even though I only took a look, the power of the calamity was immense, it shows your deep foundation. Looking over the entire Northern Plains Gu Immortal world, in terms of transformation path achievement, hardly anyone can compete with you.”

“What? He is a rank seven Gu Immortal?” Hearing Chu Du’s words, even Not Immortal’s will was shocked.

He assessed Fang Yuan again: “Impressive! His transformation path foundation is truly deep, be it my main body or Pang Shan’s main body, we could not tell.”

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly.

This was mainly due to his immortal killer move familiar face.

Of course, there was also the impression left on Chu Du by the calamities.

Familiar face was indeed a transformation path immortal killer move.

Fang Yuan knew: even though his transformation path attainment level was not low, his foundation was superficial. He was relying on familiar face to make others misunderstand him.

But this misunderstanding was quite good.

Fang Yuan thus used familiar face to raise his aura from rank six to rank seven.

Not Immortal felt Fang Yuan’s aura change and stared with wide opened eyes, completely shocked.

“I was not intending to deceive you, but I was going into a dangerous place, I had to conceal myself for survival, I hope you will not blame me.” Fang Yuan apologized to Not Immortal’s will, speaking politely and having a sincere tone.

Not Immortal’s will quickly waved his hand: “I have learned much. Indeed, Domination Immortal has good foresight.”

His attitude had changed drastically.

Interaction between Gu Immortals mostly depended on strength.

Chu Du was solemn: “Brother Liu, are you willing to join us in the search for the secret of eternal life, Limitless Demon Venerable’s achievement in his later years?”

“Of course I am willing.” Fang Yuan was similarly solemn.

Not Immortal’s will stroked his beard: “Then after this battle, can Brother Liu go to Crazed Demon Cave, we will set the Crazed Demon Agreement!”

“Alright.” Fang Yuan replied curtly.

“Next, Not Immortal can follow Brother Liu.” Chu Du arranged.

This arrangement was very sincere!

If Chu Du kept Not Immortal and Pang Shan’s will, he would have both Immortal Gu ‘No’ and ‘Care’. He would be able to break his agreement without facing backlash.

But if he separated both Immortal Gu, ‘no’ Immortal Gu would be in Fang Yuan’s hand, while care Immortal Gu would be with Chu Du, not only can it dispel Fang Yuan’s suspicions, it would also let Fang Yuan feel the sincerity of Chu Du and the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics.

However, Fang Yuan waved his hand, saying something overbearing: “If both of you can trust me, I will keep ‘no’ Immortal Gu. Not Immortal’s will and immortal essence can be kept by brother Chu.”

Not Immortal’s will was dazed before stroking his beard.

Chu Du laughed: “Brother Liu, oh, you are seriously vigilant. Alright, we will go with that.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1177: Contest Over Hei Fan Grotto-heaven (1/3)

Several days later, Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Stiff horse hooves stomped on the ground, a black desolate beast horse was charging towards Fang Yuan while running like the wind.

Fang Yuan sighed internally.

He could have dodged, but a trench was behind him, inside the trench, there were the multicolored guts that Chu Du had placed before.

After placing these multicolored guts, they needed to absorb enough earth qi and nutrients before they could be relocated again. If they were forcefully moved, they would be destroyed.

Thus, a lot of the resources in Hei Fan grotto-heaven were moved back into his own immortal aperture by Chu Du. But some of the resources like the multicolored guts could not be taken away in the short term.

Ever since Fang Yuan brought the two Immortal Gu to Chu Du, he was asked to defend this place, to protect the multicolored guts from harm.

Of course, his services were not free.

Chu Du had already promised Fang Yuan that in the end, he would give half of the multicolored guts that were left to Fang Yuan, as payment.

Flying bear transformation!

Fang Yuan’s body shined with dazzling light.

After the light faded, he turned into a huge white bear, using his firm chest to block the charge of the desolate beast horse.

Flying bear Fang Yuan took five to six steps back, almost falling to the ground.

But the desolate beast horse went to a standstill, shaking its head as it felt dizzy.

“Nice strength.” Fang Yuan said, the pain in his chest made him grind his teeth, but the words he said turned into the growling of the bear.

Flying bear Fang Yuan breathed roughly for a few seconds, seeing that the desolate beast horse was still dizzy, he pounced at it.

Boom!

Dust clouds rose, the surrounding scenery shook.

Flying bear Fang Yuan slammed the desolate beast horse to the ground, raising his huge bear paws as he struck at the horse.

The horse was crying out in pain, struggling under Fang Yuan’s body.

It had great strength, but Fang Yuan was unmoved, he suppressed the horse firmly.

“Thankfully, I added flying bear strength Gu into my flying bear transformation killer move, I have the strength of an actual flying bear. Otherwise, I would not be able to suppress this desolate beast horse.”

Fang Yuan felt secretly glad as he acted more quickly.

In a while, the desolate beast horse had saliva foaming out from its mouth, its eyes rolled backwards as it fainted.

Fang Yuan chuckled, deactivating the killer move as he turned back to human. He next opened his immortal aperture, storing the desolate beast horse into his sovereign immortal aperture.

“This is the third desolate beast.” Fang Yuan thought to himself, having a distracted gaze.

He was at the rear. Dao marks were more abundant here, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu would not choose to send his desolate beasts here, it was difficult for them to reach this place and not worth it.

After Fang Yuan learned about the secret of Crazed Demon Cave, he expressed his willingness to join in, he and Chu Du’s relationship progressed further.

In order to defend his benefits, Chu Du sent Fang Yuan here to guard the place.

Even though the battle was intense, Fang Yuan had an easy time.

These last few days, the desolate beasts that had gone past the front lines numbered to three, two desolate beast horses and one desolate beast shark fin wolf.

Fang Yuan treated them as his practice partners for transformation path.

He killed the first two, he only captured the desolate beast horse from earlier.

“The desolate beast horse earlier had no shadow, it should be the famous shadowless horse of Northern Plains.”

The shadowless horse had no shadow. This was an obvious trait, even though Fang Yuan had not seen this desolate beast before, he could recognize it.

Even though the shadowless horse was a desolate beast, it was quite a rare one.

It was not commonly sold in treasure yellow heaven.

Mainly because shadowless horses were low in numbers to begin with.

This shadowless horse was Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s desolate beast, after Fang Yuan kept it into his immortal aperture, he immediately used perceivable dao Immortal Gu to inspect it.

Indeed, Fang Yuan realized that on the shadowless horse’s body, other than dark path and light path dao marks, there were also many enslavement path dao marks.

After several attempts, Fang Yuan realized he could not get rid of these enslavement path dao marks, thus, he gave up and killed the shadowless horse.

This shadowless horse was enslaved by Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, placing it in his immortal aperture would only cause it to destroy the environment.

He might as well kill the shadowless horse and sell the horse bones and flesh in treasure yellow heaven for some profits.

A living shadowless horse had greater value, but it was Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s property, others could not enslave it.

Other Gu Immortals were not idiots, they would not buy this problematic horse.

Furthermore, selling this shadowless horse openly would naturally be discovered by Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, he might use his relationships to buy this horse indirectly.

Not only would he gain the attention of a rank eight Gu Immortal, he would also be strengthening his enemy. Thus, Fang Yuan killed it.

After cutting up this shadowless horse and processing it, Fang Yuan put up a portion of it into treasure yellow heaven for sale.

He realized that these last few days, the two desolate beast corpses that he tossed into treasure yellow heaven had almost no popularity.

These two desolate beast corpses were taken out from Crazed Demon Cave, the monkey king corpse and tree python corpse.

Before selling them, Fang Yuan had used perceivable dao Immortal Gu to inspect them.

He realized that the monkey king and tree python corpses had all sorts of dao marks. Normally speaking, desolate beasts would only have dao marks of one specific path.

Obviously, the demonic sounds in Crazed Demon Cave had caused this situation.

The demonic sounds were created by Limitless Demon Venerable’s super Gu formation, it could make the listener go berserk, while also transforming their body’s dao marks into all sorts of strange dao marks.

Fang Yuan thought about it, he retrieved these two desolate beast corpses and placed them back into his sovereign immortal aperture.

The longer he placed them in treasure yellow heaven, the more fees he would incur, it was not worth the price.

Other than these desolate beast corpses, Fang Yuan also brought back large numbers of mortal Gu. Among which, day Gu, month Gu, and year Gu were the highest in number. Other than those, there were Gu worms of other varieties.

Ever since Fang Yuan obtained Hei Fan’s true inheritance, he had been purchasing these mortal Gu in treasure yellow heaven. When he used a time path immortal killer move, it expended a lot of them.

Other than day, month, and year mortal Gu, Fang Yuan’s greatest need in terms of mortal Gu was self will Gu.

But self will Gu was very rare, Fang Yuan mainly asked the hairy man Gu Masters in Lang Ya Sect to refine them, expending his sect contribution points.

Fang Yuan had been asking in treasure yellow heaven if anyone was selling heavenly crystals.

Up until now, he had only found two.

One was a rank eight Gu Immortal, they wanted to trade with materials, but Fang Yuan did not have what they wanted.

The other was rank six, due to a fortuitous encounter, they obtained half a piece of heavenly crystal, they wanted to sell it since they did not need it.

Fang Yuan wanted to buy it, but a Gu Immortal who wanted heavenly crystals even more appeared, buying it with three times the usual price.

Fang Yuan thought about it and gave up. Even though he had a lot of resources, the fifth earthly calamity was coming at that time. It was not worth it for that tiny heavenly crystal.

“Oh?” At this time, Fang Yuan suddenly received Chu Du’s message, he asked him to reinforce Li Si Chun, the situation over there was very dangerous, he needed backup.

These last few days, this was the first message that Fang Yuan received.

He immediately went to the battlefield.

There, Li Si Chun and Immortal Wang were already in a tough battle.

A group of desolate beast wolves were encircling them, they were huge in numbers, there were a hundred of them.

But Fang Yuan was not surprised.

He had obtained much intel from Chu Du.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had an immortal killer move, it could create clones of desolate beasts to form a clone army.

There would only be one actual desolate beast, but if it could not be found, these clones would quickly replenish themselves endlessly.

Each desolate beast had one figure of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu seated on them, they were clones as well.

“Then, which one is the main body?” Fang Yuan frowned, at the next moment, he used myriad self.

Countless strength path phantoms filled the sky as they charged at the wolf group.

“It’s Liu Guan Yi!” Li Si Chun sensed as he cried out in joy.

Immortal Wang snorted coldly, last time, Fang Yuan made him bait, his impression regarding Fang Yuan was at rock bottom. Right now, even though Fang Yuan was here to help, he was not grateful.

The myriad self army and the wolf group tangled together.

Two breaths of time later, the myriad self army broke apart, they were almost completely killed by the wolf group.

Matched against Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s cloning killer move, Fang Yuan’s myriad self really paled in comparison.

Myriad self had huge potential, it was an immortal killer move combining strength path and enslavement path, but as his opponents got stronger, its usefulness was falling drastically.

In the past, the myriad self army could fight. But now, it had become Fang Yuan’s method of concealing his true body.

Even though they had quantity, they lacked quality and battle strength.

Myriad self giant hand!

Only after Fang Yuan used myriad self first style was there a change in the situation.

Against the strength path giant hand, the desolate beast wolves could barely resist.

Snowy Mountain blessed land, first peak.

The refinement path Gu formation was activated, shining lights were enveloping the peak of the mountain, like a miniature sun.

“Third time.” Lady Wan Shou breathed in deeply, she was holding onto a condensed lightning ball as she got closer to Ma Hong Yun who was in the formation.

Ma Hong Yun shouted: “No! No! Let me off! I am going to die, I will die!”

The lightning ball entered his chest.

Clap clap clap.

Countless sparks appeared on his body, Ma Hong Yun’s eyes were turning as the whites were exposed, he no longer leaked out saliva, but blood instead.

He fainted again, after a while, the lightning vanished.

“I failed again.” Lady Wan Shou’s vision turned dark, an intense dizziness almost made her collapse to the ground.

She forced herself to continue, disregarding her injuries and healing Ma Hong Yun instead.

Ma Hong Yun had to be alive for the lightning refinement to work.

“Hmm? This guy’s cultivation level actually rose by one rank.” During the process of healing, Lady Wan Shou discovered an anomaly.

“Is it because of the lightning refinement? Indeed, some relic Gu were used, it can raise the Gu Master’s cultivation level.”

“Dear, are you alright?” Old Ancestor Xue Hu arrived at this time.

“No need to worry.” Lady Wan Shou was still pale, but she smiled to Old Ancestor Xue Hu: “I just need to rest for a while to recover.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1178: Contest Over Hei Fan Grotto-heaven (2/3)

Inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

The desolate beast wolf group that numbered to a hundred was charging towards them.

Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu stood side by side, having solemn expressions.

They looked at each other before using their strongest technique again, immortal killer move —— Wind Thunder Roar!

Bam...

The wind and lightning pillar swept the battlefield, at once, the earth shook, the sky trembled, few desolate beast wolves were left, they had suffered immense damage.

Fang Yuan and the others were right beside Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu, their expressions changed.

Every time they saw wind thunder roar, they felt their hearts shaking, such battle strength was truly at the peak of rank seven. Those desolate beast wolves were mostly clones, even weaker than their true bodies, they could not withstand wind thunder roar.

Even two true bodies died. The final one had been lucky enough to survive this wind thunder roar because it was at the back of the group.

“Kill it, we cannot let this true body escape. Otherwise, in a few hours, it will have another group of clones protecting it again!” Gu Immortal Wei Ming shouted, pouncing at it.

This Gu Immortal’s eyes were shut, he was a blind man. He had rank seven cultivation level and incredible battle strength. He became blind on purpose as he pursued battle strength.

“Be careful, there is a fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf!” At the next moment, Immortal Wang shouted frantically.

Wei Ming’s body froze, at that moment, a fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf appeared out of nowhere, its sharp fangs were about to bite Wei Ming.

Wei Ming snorted coldly, his body retreated backwards towards the left like an illusory shadow.

The fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf bit, but it missed by an inch, its sharp teeth did not land on Wei Ming.

Wei Ming broke out in cold sweat, suddenly saying: “Oh no!”

At the next moment, the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf opened its mouth as a lump of green wind shot towards Wei Ming like a plasma cannon.

Wei Ming’s defenses lasted for a short while before they were torn apart, his entire body was shredded into countless pieces of flesh.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s clone stood arrogantly on the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf’s head, he had a cold expression as Immortal Gu aura emanated from him.

“You ran away quickly, but next time, you will not be so lucky.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu said coldly.

“So close, so close, thankfully, I used my body replacement killer move!” The real Wei Ming showed himself, he had managed to escape.

“This happened again.” The immortals’ gazes focused on Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, they had heavy hearts.

The fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf was an ancient desolate beast, it had rank seven battle strength. Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s clone could use Immortal Gu, coordinating with the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf. He would observe the situation and use the Immortal Gu at appropriate times, because of that, their combined battle strength was many times higher!

At the start, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was sending large numbers of desolate beasts to invade Hei Fan grotto-heaven. But now, he gained a deeper understanding of Hei Fan grotto-heaven, he could use desolate beasts and clones to create battle opportunities, to even send in ancient desolate beasts.

Every ancient desolate beast was accompanied by a clone of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu. This combination had appeared many times already, it was gradually changing the battle situation.

Immortal Wang immediately turned into the falling star hound, saying human words: “Brother Hao and Brother Chou, quickly retreat. This fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf has hidden itself, it probably is attempting to target you two.”

Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu had pale faces, they were very weak.

Wind thunder roar was powerful, but using this move had a huge price.

For the following period of time, Chou Lao Wu and Hao Zhen would have reduced battle strength, their usefulness would fall drastically.

This contest over Hei Fan grotto-heaven had been ongoing for days. Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu’s wind thunder roar was a powerful tool, especially useful against desolate beast groups.

All the Gu Immortals agreed on this.

Thus, for the eventual victory, the Gu Immortals were intentionally protecting the lives of Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu.

Chou Lao Wu and Hao Zhen also understood this, they immediately retreated.

“I will escort you.” Li Si Chun flew to them.

Fang Yuan, Immortal Wang, and Wei Ming were left.

“Quickly settle this ancient desolate beast, about three thousand li away, another ancient desolate beast has appeared.” At this time, Chu Du sent them a message.

“I will block it from the front, the two of you find a chance to kill it!” Immortal Wang howled, turning into the falling star hound to face the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf.

Fang Yuan and Wei Ming cooperated, one flew into the sky while the other went to the back, attacking at the same time.

An intense battle ensued.

Immortal Wang was temporarily matched against it, Fang Yuan found a chance and flying sword Immortal Gu flew over.

Ding!

With a loud sound, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s clone used his Immortal Gu and blocked it.

“Use an immortal killer move, what can an Immortal Gu do on its own? Woof!” When Immortal Wang felt anxious, he would subconsciously bark like a dog.

“What do you know?” Fang Yuan sneered in disdain.

At the next moment, Wei Ming attacked, a light path immortal killer move destroyed Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s clone.

It turned out, Fang Yuan had attacked on purpose to draw the attention of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s clone, so that Wei Ming could find a chance to attack.

As they continued to fight, the Gu Immortals in Hei Fan grotto-heaven started to develop some coordination.

“They are just clones, they have limited intelligence. But this type of Immortal Gu usage is truly incredible!” Fang Yuan sighed internally.

He had already felt this many times.

Destroying the Heavenly Lord Bai Zu clone did not destroy the Immortal Gu. It seemed like the Immortal Gu was also a clone that was with Heavenly Lord Bai

Zu’s clone.

It was unknown how Heavenly Lord Bai Zu managed to do that.

Thus, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s strength was only slightly weakened, he did not suffer much losses.

Next, the three immortals attacked the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf.

This ancient desolate beast was covered with dao marks, it had incredible defense. Fang Yuan used flying sword Immortal Gu but could only puncture its skin and fur. After piercing deeply into its flesh, it could not move anymore. Even the immortal killer move sword mark targeting death was inefficient, a lot of its power was negated by the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf’s dao marks.

Thankfully, without the help of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s clone, the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf’s intelligence alone could not match the three immortals.

During this period, many distorted shadows had appeared in the sky, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was attempting to send in more clones to help the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf.

But Fang Yuan and the rest discovered them in time and attacked, preventing the Heavenly Lord clones from reaching the fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf.

Minutes later, this fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf was killed and cut into pieces by Fang Yuan and the rest, they split up the flesh into three portions evenly among themselves.

The death of an ancient desolate beast was quite a loss to Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

But in this situation, in order to take down Hei Fan grotto-heaven, he had to continue!

Fang Yuan and the others had severe losses too, especially Fang Yuan, his green grape immortal essence expenditure was huge.

“We have been fighting a lot these last days, if this continues, my green grape immortal essence will be used up.” Fang Yuan showed no expression, but he was getting anxious internally.

The other Gu Immortals were rank seven, they used red date immortal essence to activate rank seven Immortal Gu, it was fitting.

But Fang Yuan used green grape immortal essence, it was very hard and inefficient.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan had good finances, he sold desolate beast and ancient desolate beast corpses from time to time, sustaining his expenditure.

After killing this fragrant sorcerer yin statue wolf, the three immortals went to the next battlefield, they had no time to rest.

The situation was getting worse.

Some days ago, Fang Yuan could still hide inside the trench and guard the multicolored guts.

But recently, he had to go around helping out the others.

Right now, he was like a firefighter, he could not rest, he had to travel and help out the different battlefields.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s main body was blocked by Chu Du, but he had incredible methods, he continued to send in ancient desolate beasts and desolate beasts, it caused the situation in Hei Fan grotto-heaven to tilt in his favor.

A moment later, Fang Yuan and the rest arrived.

It was a heavenly dragon, it had seven claws and a terrifying dragon head, it was an ancient desolate beast.

Someone was already fighting the heavenly dragon, in order to defend Hei Fan grotto-heaven, Chu Du spent a lot of funds getting more Gu Immortal experts to help him, other than Immortal Wang’s group.

This female Gu Immortal, Sang Qing Qu, was one of them.

Her path was very special, it was actually theft path!

This was the path created by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, there were few inheritances regarding it.

Sang Qing Qu was at a disadvantage, she was unable to hold much longer, even though she had stolen a lot of mortal Gu from the heavenly dragon’s body, it had little effect on the enemy.

Fang Yuan and the rest quickly went to help, attacking the ancient desolate beast heavenly dragon.

This time, they were not as lucky as last time.

After spending a lot of effort, the immortals finally killed Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s clone.

Killing the heavenly dragon took multiple times as long as the last beast, because the heavenly dragon could fly and was very fast, it was not easy to hunt.

After killing this heavenly dragon, Fang Yuan’s mood became grimmer.

In the battle, his immortal essence expenditure was several times that of before. Currently, his usage was greatly exceeding his gain in immortal essence stones. At this rate, in a few days, he would be out of immortal essence.

The Gu Immortals gathered together and split the heavenly dragon corpse, when Chu Du spoke: “Quick! The battle earlier was a decoy by Heavenly Lord, he has already planted a field of desolate plant snow willows here, we have to get rid of them, once Heavenly Lord gets a foothold in here, the consequences will be severe.”

Fang Yuan and the rest noticed how dangerous the situation was, they did not dare to wait, they acted immediately.

A moment later, they arrived at the scene, the situation was far more severe than they had expected.

Not only was there a field of desolate plant snow willows, there were a hundred ice spike divine apes to guard them. Snow willows had an abundance of snow path dao marks, the ice spike divine ape was also ice path, the two complemented each other, and countless Heavenly Lord clones were moving around the snow willow forest, setting up Gu formations.

“We have to destroy this camp, the longer we drag on, the greater his advantage.” Chu Du said: “If there is no other way, I will act myself!”

“You should stay there and defend against Heavenly Lord. If his main body comes in, we are all finished.” Hao Zhen quickly responded.

He and Chou Lao Wu had also arrived, even though he had not recovered, the situation was dire, they had to risk their lives.

At the next moment, six Gu Immortals split up and charged towards the snow willow forest, engaging in an intense battle!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1179: Contest Over Hei Fan Grotto-heaven (3/3)

“Huff, huff, huff...”

Fang Yuan floated in the air, breathing roughly as he looked at the battlefield.

An intense battle had ended.

The battlefield was completely deformed, there were many pits with mangled corpses of ice spike divine apes inside, flames that were created with fire path killer moves were still burning quietly. There was frost mixed with blood, snapped bones and flesh, as well as leaves from the desolate plant snow willows.

The Gu Immortals were either injured or dead.

They were all injured, but the one that died was the theft path female Gu Immortal.

She had not been killed by the heavenly dragon, but was killed by the cooperation of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s clones when she rushed to assist in the battle, losing her life.

Fang Yuan was also injured.

His left lung was punctured by an ice spike, an icicle with the size of a javelin was still stabbed into his chest.

His lower limbs were covered in a thick layer of frost, much of his flesh had already gone necrotic.

The sovereign immortal body had a huge advantage, that was the non-conflicting dao marks. But this was also a major flaw. Once Fang Yuan was hit by an attack that penetrated his defenses, he would take the damage fully, the attacks would not be weakened by the dao marks in his body.

In this battle, Fang Yuan learned deeply about the weak point of the sovereign immortal body due to this trait.

“My defensive killer move is still too weak.”

“Blood asset Immortal Gu is still recovering, I cannot use bloodstained conqueror’s robe. My time path defensive methods are not exemplary either.”

Even though Fang Yuan obtained Hei Fan’s true inheritance, the true core Immortal Gu, Years Flow Like Water, was sealed. This Immortal Gu had a huge flaw, once its aura was leaked, it would draw immemorial year beasts to it.

Once something of rank eight battle strength entered Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture, he would definitely lose, he would only be able to leave his body as a soul and give up on the sovereign immortal body.

Hei Fan’s true inheritance had very outstanding defensive methods, but they used Years Flow Like Water as the core.

Fang Yuan’s current defensive killer move used year Gu, the effect was weaker. It was what Hei Fan used in his earlier days. When he reached rank seven, he stopped using it.

“Heavenly Lord Bai Zu is an enslavement path rank eight indeed, truly formidable!”

“Even though he is outside the grotto-heaven, and only using his clones to battle, he can still fight to this extent, I am truly inferior.”

“And the distortion of space to send desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts into the grotto-heaven, it is truly extraordinary!”

In this battle, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu sent in a hundred ice spike divine apes and a large number of desolate plant snow willows. During the process of fighting, distorted shadows appeared constantly, even though the Gu Immortals desperately tried to block them, two icefall divine apes still managed to get in.

Ice spike divine ape.

Icefall divine ape.

The two were closely related.

The former was a desolate beast, it had jade green eyes with frosty azure pupils, the hairs on its body were like icicles all over it. The latter was an ancient desolate beast, its body was like snow, its eyes were bloodshot, its fur was like icicles stabbing towards the sky.

Fang Yuan was familiar with the ice spike divine ape, long ago, Lang Ya blessed land had one.

Later, Fang Yuan borrowed it to defend Hu Immortal blessed land, he defended against a wave of attacks from Immortal Crane Sect.

After that, the ice spike divine ape died during the battle to defend Lang Ya blessed land.

Fang Yuan had also fought against the icefall divine ape.

That was during Hei Lou Lan’s immortal ascension, the tribulation in the northern icy plain, because of Reckless Savage’s true meaning, it turned into the divine ape.

“Right now it seems, the icefall divine ape created from the tribulation cannot match a real divine ape in battle strength.”

“Actually, if these desolate beasts and desolate plants are all there is to it, it is not difficult to deal with even though it is troublesome. Most importantly, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s clones are manipulating and controlling them, that makes a completely different story.”

“Especially the desolate beasts and desolate plants, they form into troops and move as one. They have incredible battle strength when enslavement path killer moves are used, it is very shocking.”

Fang Yuan recalled the entire battle, he could see how powerful a rank eight Gu Immortal was.

Even though his main body did not enter the battlefield, by just directing the battle in the grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan was not his match.

They were able to win in battle because all of the immortals gathered their strength.

“Such a miserable battle, if we were to fight a few more of those, my green grape immortal essence would be completely dried up.”

“Year Gu has fallen in terms of years, I need to parallel refine it.”

“Healing my injuries also consumed a lot of time and immortal essence.”

Fang Yuan could not bear such expenditure.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s losses were more severe than Fang Yuan’s.

Fighting up to this point, Chu Du’s side had been relying on Hei Fan grotto-heaven, dragging on this battle into a deadlock, the two sides were truly in a battle of attrition.

The Gu Immortals expended their immortal essence, while Heavenly Lord Bai Zu expended the foundation in the grotto-heaven. Both sides could not back down, they were trying to see which would be unable to continue first.

The following battles became more intense.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s attempts might have failed, but there was an effect.

He had attempted to create temporary bases in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, after he stabilized a foothold, he sent in ancient desolate beasts, causing Chu Du’s side to have much difficulty in defending.

Looking at the entire battle in Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had initially sent clones to attack the different resource points and target Chu Du’s foundation. He succeeded.

Next, he sent in large numbers of desolate beasts and caused the battle to tilt in his favor.

Now, he changed his battle tactics, he built temporary bases and forced the Gu Immortals to attack him instead.

Even though Chu Du, Fang Yuan and the rest had the advantage in numbers, and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was just alone, he controlled the entire situation, suppressing Chu Du, Fang Yuan and the rest.

Even though Fang Yuan and the others resisted strongly, they could not stop the situation from tilting in Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s favor.

Both sides were persisting.

But Fang Yuan was the first to lose in attrition.

He was a rank seven Gu Immortal on the surface, but in truth, he had been using green grape immortal essence the entire time.

Chu Du’s expression was quite ugly.

Especially when he was alone with Fang Yuan, he put away his front and showed an expression of worry.

He said to Fang Yuan: “I have already recruited all the people I could possible rope in.”

“But this battle’s eventual winner will be Heavenly Lord Bai Zu. Even though we did not fight against his main body, we are unable to challenge the foundation of a rank eight.”

“The real key in deciding victory is not in this battlefield, but the Bai Zu tribe outside.”

Chu Du was clear about the situation.

He and Fang Yuan had the same idea, after all, great minds think alike.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu himself had no weakness, his only weakness was the Bai Zu tribe that he had just recently created.

Chu Du’s arrangements were taking effect in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

Rumors were spread.

“Heavenly Lord Bai Zu is attacking Hei Fan grotto-heaven, if he succeeds in getting the place, his strength will rise to a new level.”

“Even though Bai Zu tribe has just been built, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu is holding it up, their only weakness is their weak foundation. Once Hei Fan grotto-heaven becomes Bai Zu tribe’s territory, in decades, Bai Zu tribe will surpass every Huang Jin tribe.”

“Heavenly Lord Bai Zu is a lone cultivator, he does not have Huang Jin bloodline, the strengthening of Bai Zu tribe is actually beneficial towards the survival of demonic and lone immortals.”

...

All sorts of rumors and discussions were going on, the main topic was on Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s threat, and the emphasis that he was not a descendant of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s bloodline.

Not just this, there were some Gu Immortals pretending to be from Bai Zu tribe, causing trouble everywhere and provoking the super forces.

Bai Zu tribe’s leader, Bai Zu Wei, had already died on the battlefield, and Bai Zu tribe’s new leader did not have enough capability, he was facing huge trouble, he was telling Heavenly Lord Bai Zu about the difficulties and danger Bai Zu tribe was facing, and that they had enemies on all fronts.

But Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was unmoved.

He replied: “This is Chu Du’s ploy. Chu Du is neither from the righteous path nor has the Huang Jin bloodline, if our Bai Zu tribe deals with him, those people from Huang Jin tribes would be most pleased.”

“Chu Du let out these rumors and pretended to be us, purposely provoking those tribes, this is his scheme, it shows that he is weak now on the inside, only putting up a front.”

“The other tribes are not idiots, they could tell what Chu Du was doing, but because of my deterrence as a rank eight, they did not dare to do anything.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu has excellent astuteness, he was clear of the situation, he was determined to take down Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

He had chosen the best timing.

Yao Huang and Old Ancestor Xue Hu were busy refining Gu. Five Elements Grandmaster was busy dealing with Longevity Heaven, and even though Prince Feng Xian was doing nothing on the surface, he was secretly retrieving blessed lands.

For Fang Yuan, it was becoming harder and harder to endure as time passed.

To increase his amount of green grape immortal essence, he had to start selling desolate beasts in treasure yellow heaven.

He originally had two spinefin star dragonfish, he sold them to replenish his immortal essence stones out of necessity.

This was starting to harm his immortal aperture’s foundation.

Earlier, he had been in a positive feedback loop due to his financial management and growth, but now, he was facing a vicious downward cycle.

Undoubtedly, this was a warning signal.

“In terms of blessed land foundation, I surpass Chu Du, but green grape immortal essence is my greatest weakness, thus, I was the first to burn out among the immortals. It seems that after this battle, I need to advance to rank seven as soon as possible!”

The battle situation was becoming more intense, temporary camps were already being built, Chu Du had to act in person and destroy them all.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu chose very good timings, on multiple dangerous occasions, he nearly managed to arrive with his true body.

Fang Yuan secretly asked Lang Ya Sect for help.

He said to Lang Ya land spirit: This was the best chance to recruit Chu Du.

But Lang Ya land spirit caved in when faced against a rank eight Gu Immortal. He clearly expressed that Lang Ya Sect would not help. If something happened to Fang Yuan, he had to keep Lang Ya Sect a secret, if he revealed anything, the alliance agreement would kill him.

“Even though I can still hold on, I have thought about it, the battle result has been decided, there is no point in wasting more resources.” Chu Du decided to give up. He did not conceal this thought from Fang Yuan, he looked for Fang Yuan to talk about it.

Fang Yuan had already been wanting to back out, he quickly agreed.

However, just as Chu Du and Fang Yuan were talking about their retreat plans, the commotion in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world changed.

All of the Huang Jin tribes, the righteous path super forces, united and wanted to pass judgment on Bai Zu tribe.

To think that at the final crucial moment, a change for the better had arrived!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1180: Heaven and Human Path, Grandmaster Discusses Dao

Some days ago.

Longevity Heaven.

This was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s rank nine grotto-heaven! Golden light enveloped the Four Desolations, an azure hue shone over the Eight Extremities.

Four Desolations and Eight Extremities, these formed the terrain of Longevity Heaven, much like how sovereign immortal aperture had the nine heavens and five regions.

And at the heart of the Four Desolations, at the center of the Eight Extremities, an Immortal Gu House was shining in a profound white light, shooting towards the skies. It resonated with the entirety of Longevity Heaven, emitting a loud humming sound.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House, Calamity Luck Altar.

Three floors of round altars with multiple pillars holding it up, white jade railings and shining aurora.

Eight Gu Immortals in Longevity Heaven were standing at the center of the nine corners of Calamity Luck Altar, doing their best to concentrate in controlling the operations of Calamity Luck Altar.

At the center of Calamity Luck Altar, lightning was flashing, dragons were dancing, luck was steaming, as clouds enveloped the area.

A Gu Immortal’s figure was seated on the ground, resisting the might of Calamity Luck Altar.

Around him, there was a ring, it was flying around and surrounding his body, emitting light in five colors.

“Five Elements Grandmaster, you might have rank eight cultivation level, but inside the Calamity Luck Altar, you cannot turn this around! I urge you to surrender, when our Four Desolation Immortals awaken, perhaps you might have a chance of survival.” The leader of the eight Gu Immortals, Heaven Extremity, snorted and said.

It turned out that the Gu Immortal trapped in the center of Calamity Luck Altar was one of the five rank eight existences in Northern Plains — Five Elements Grandmaster!

Five Elements Grandmaster laughed loudly: “The rank eight Immortal Gu House is nothing impressive! You Eight Extremities have combined forces to manipulate it, after suppressing me for this long, even using the might of Longevity Heaven to try and kill me, but now, you have not even broken through the first layer of my five elements ring. Heaven Extremity, you have the face to ask me to surrender?”

Heaven Extremity sneered: “That is because you do not know the mystical power of Calamity Luck Altar! Its true ability is to reverse calamity and luck, turning calamity into luck, and luck into calamity. By interlinking calamity and luck, it becomes unceasing. This is the profundity of heaven and earth luck! As a mere lone cultivator, how can you possibly understand?”

Hearing the words heaven and earth luck, Five Elements Grandmaster’s smugness vanished, disappearing from his face.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable created luck path, his entire life’s cultivation was summarized into three parts, self luck, all living being’s luck, and heaven and earth luck.

Among which, heaven and earth luck was created during Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s later years, it was grand and deep, deciphering the mysteries of heaven and earth. Five Elements Grandmaster had stalled in his advancement now, he could not break through on his own, thus, he sneaked into Longevity Heaven and tried to steal the heaven and earth luck true inheritance.

But to think that even though the Four Desolation Immortals were asleep in Longevity Heaven, the defense still exceeded Five Elements Grandmaster’s expectations.

After some fighting, Five Elements Grandmaster was trapped inside Calamity Luck Altar, he was suppressed by the Eight Extremities, unable to get free.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had three rank eight Immortal Gu Houses in his life, I’ve known about Calamity Luck Altar since long ago. But reversing calamity and luck, just what constitutes as reversing calamity and luck?” Five Elements Grandmaster thought for a moment before asking.

The Eight Extremities looked at each other, evidently surprised.

But soon, they reacted.

Heaven Extremity sighed internally: “I have long since heard that Five Elements Grandmaster has an incredible thirst towards knowledge, when he was mortal, he hid his identity and went around learning from different masters. After becoming a Gu Immortal, in order to obtain some experience and guidance from Gu Immortals, he was willing to be at their beck and call. This time, he actually asked his enemies for guidance inside the formation. He is truly passionate! However, an ignorant person fears nothing, if I inform him of the truth, I can strike a blow at his confidence and morale!”

Thinking of this, Heaven Extremity spoke: “Right now, the outcome has been decided, it is fine even if I tell you. Calamity Luck Altar was purposely left in Longevity Heaven by Ancestor Giant Sun, it was to defend Longevity Heaven. Reversing calamity and luck, we can turn calamities and tribulations into our own good luck. Right now, you came to invade Longevity Heaven, it was our human calamity. By using this Calamity Luck Altar, we can turn this difficulty into good luck, turning disaster into fortune. You will end up contributing to Longevity Heaven’s eternal existence.”

“Superb, brilliant!” Five Elements Grandmaster listened with shining eyes, he asked again: “If a human calamity is like this, then what about earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations?”

“We naturally reverse them as well, heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities do not cause any damage, they instead become nourishment for our Longevity

Heaven." Heaven Extremity said proudly.

Five Elements Grandmaster had wide opened eyes: "Longevity Heaven is a rank nine grotto-heaven and has not absorbed any fragments of the immemorial nine heavens. By relying on Calamity Luck Altar, it can go through all of its calamities and tribulations?"

"Hahaha! You are already a rank eight Gu Immortal, but you do not even know about the origins of calamities and tribulations?" Heaven Extremity laughed in disdain.

Five Elements Grandmaster was not upset, he asked humbly: "I hope you can teach me, Heaven Extremity."

Heaven Extremity sensed Five Elements Grandmaster's earnest attitude and the disdain inside him vanished, turning into traces of admiration.

He sighed, answering: "Why do humans have calamities and tribulations? The truth is, not just humans, but desolate beasts and desolate plants also have them. Like the thousand snakes haze tree, it faces the tribulation lightning."

"The origin of calamities and tribulations is in the principles of heaven. Heaven takes away surpluses while replenishing deficits, it emphasizes on balance and maintains this over cycles. Any existence which breaks the cycle of balance will face calamities and tribulations."

"But humans possess the greatest intelligence. Thus, we are more of a threat than beasts or plants. Gu Immortals can manage their own small worlds, it draws wariness and attacks from heaven."

"What is calamity? What is luck?" Heaven Extremity suddenly asked.

Five Elements Grandmaster had a realization, he spoke immediately:" I understand. Heaven takes away surpluses while replenishing deficits, the so-called calamity takes away surpluses, while luck replenishes deficits."

Heaven Extremity raised his eyebrows: "You answered correctly, that is exactly the case! And my Ancestor Giant Sun was extremely talented, he created luck path. It targets the operations of the principles of heaven. Self luck true inheritance replenishes oneself. All living being's luck takes away others' surpluses to replenish oneself. While heaven and earth luck takes away heaven and earth's surpluses to replenish oneself."

"So that's it." Five Elements Grandmaster sighed deeply: "No wonder Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not enter Heavenly Court during his life."

Heavenly Court followed the will of heaven, and upholded justice for heaven.

Meanwhile, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's luck path usurped the authority of heaven and earth. When nature operated according to the principles of heaven, and an individual was determined to be too strong and breaking the balance, it would generate calamities and tribulations to suppress them. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's luck path avoided calamities and tribulations, and in the section of heaven and earth luck, it directly turned calamities and tribulations into fortuitous encounters. Heaven and earth suppresses me, it wants to take away my surpluses to replenish others' deficits, then I shall go ahead and take away heaven and earth's surpluses to replenish my own deficits!

As the saying goes, there is nothing to say if there were opposing objectives!

"If heaven cannot use calamities and tribulations to destroy Longevity Heaven, it will use human calamities to destroy it." Heaven Extremity continued: "And you, Five Elements Grandmaster, were subconsciously influenced by heaven’s will, eventually becoming the human calamity that is here to destroy my Longevity Heaven! What a pity that you, a great rank eight, were influenced by heaven’s will without even knowing it.”

“Hahaha, I have learned much.” Five Elements Grandmaster laughed grandly: “Even if it is heaven’s will influencing me, so what? This is also my own intention! And I believe that man will triumph over heaven. No matter how vast heaven’s will is, it cannot compare to the will of humans. Throughout the long history of humanity, we were so weak and feeble, pushed aside and humiliated everywhere, until we became the overlords of the world today, suppressing all variant humans and other life forms under our feet! The human race is the one that destroys the balance the most, but can heaven suppress us? There were ten rank nine venerables in human history, and countless Gu Immortals among us, we roam heaven and earth, we can capture stars and overturn mountains and rivers, what can heaven do?”

Heaven Extremity laughed, the other seven also expressed joy.

This joy was the joy of meeting a companion, someone who shared similar understanding and aspirations as oneself.

Heaven Extremity’s laughter faded: “It seems that you, Five Elements Grandmaster, have also been reading <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> frequently.”

“Of course. <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> contains Ren Zu’s human path true inheritance! Every Gu Immortal who cultivates to a high level will try to benefit from it. Unfortunately, I do not have the wisdom and comprehension ability, I can only read the meaning that human path triumphs over heaven path. I had once heard that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable created self luck and reached an impasse where he stalled. He only obtained an inspiration after reading <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, creating all living being’s luck. After that, he went on to ascend to the Immortal Venerable throne, before creating heaven and earth luck.” Five Elements Grandmaster continued.

Heaven Extremity nodded: “Indeed.”

Five Elements Grandmaster went on: “I am a Northern Plainsman, born and bred here. Even though I do not have the Huang Jin bloodline, I admire Giant Sun Immortal Venerable greatly. Human path triumphs over heaven path, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path is deeply using the essence of human path! The trend of the rule of humanity cannot be overturned, it cannot be defied. Even heaven is not its match! Do you all agree with me?”

“Of course that is the case.” Heaven Extremity replied arrogantly.

Five Elements Grandmaster smiled lightly: “The trend of humanity is clear to everyone here. But the trend of Northern Plains, can you see it clearly?”

Heaven Extremity’s expression changed: “What are you trying to say?”

Five Elements Grandmaster said calmly but loudly: “Right now, Northern Plains’ trend in terms of humanity is that the demonic path is rising up while righteous path is shifting lower. Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed, allowing many lone immortals and demonic path members to gain strength. Heavenly Lord Bai Zu created Bai Zu tribe personally, allowing the righteous path to have a different bloodline.”

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s hereditary monarchy was indeed a grand aspiration, but it was really quite restrictive, Northern Plains is not his to begin with. It belongs to all Northern Plainsmen. The death of a person is like the snuffing of a candle, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s influence has affected Northern Plains for so long, so many years! It is time to change!”

“A load of nonsense!!!” Heaven Extremity was furious, the other seven extremities also started berating angrily.

Five Elements Grandmaster was very tranquil: “You are angry and furious, that is because of the fear in your hearts. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Huang Jin tribes, they have dominated Northern Plains, ruling over it, it is starting to decline now. Just like the ten great ancient sects in Central Continent, they seem strong, but they are rotten on the inside, there are many internal conflicts and useless members. What about the lone immortals and demonic cultivators? Look at Northern Plains’ rank eight Gu Immortals, how many have Huang Jin bloodline?”

“Old Ancestor Xue Hu is demonic path, I am a lone immortal, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu turned from lone to righteous path, Prince Feng Xian is a member of Gong tribe, but he is not of Huang Jin bloodline. Only Yao Huang alone is holding up the Huang Jin tribes’ reputation.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1181: Sudden Changes, Benefits are Key

Five Elements Grandmaster: “Eighty-Eight True Yang Building is a forewarning, while Bai Zu tribe’s creation is an obvious sign. Next, the influence of the Huang Jin tribes will start to fade away.”

“Because this is the trend of humanity in Northern Plains!”

“You say that I was affected by heaven’s will, that is not so! I was rushed here by the tide of humanity, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s reputation can no longer intimidate me, he has been dead for too long!”

“Next, more Gu Immortals will be discontent with the Huang Jin tribes, and covet your wealth. Northern Plains is full of battles, Northern Plains Gu Immortals have bravery and fighting spirit, suppression would only be met with even more resolute and crazed resistance.”

“I am just the first person to come to Longevity Heaven. Next, more and more will come here. Are you prepared for it?”

There was silence.

The Eight Extremities were so angry they were trembling, having cold expressions.

Heaven Extremity had a stiff expression, he smiled forcefully: “Amazing rank eight Gu Immortal, amazing Five Elements Grandmaster. You want to convince us that instead of being wiped out by this trend, we should merge and ride the wave, imitating Gong tribe to take in more lone immortals and demonic cultivators, to recruit a rank eight Gu Immortal like you?”

“We do not have a deep feud, we can cooperate.” Five Elements Grandmaster said solemnly: “Even though the Four Desolation Immortals are rank eight, they have little lifespan, they cannot move around freely. I have no such problems.”

Heaven Extremity laughed maniacally: “Hahaha! You? You are looking down on the foundation of the Huang Jin tribes! Or rather, you are looking down on Ancestor Giant Sun! If not for you, us Eight Extremities would have gone to rebuild Eighty-Eight True Yang Building already. And that Bai Zu tribe is merely a short-lived flicker. Such impure bloodline and he wants to be in the righteous path? Heavenly Lord Bai Zu? Is he worthy?! The righteous path of Northern Plains are the Huang Jin tribes!"

Liu tribe's base camp.

Xuan Bai blessed land.

"Ah, the Longevity Edict!" Liu tribe's first supreme elder was extremely shocked, he quickly knelt down and received it.

Liu tribe was one of the super forces, a Huang Jin tribe, the descendants of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Meanwhile, Longevity Heaven was the rank nine grotto-heaven of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, among the Huang Jin tribes, it represented supreme authority.

Liu tribe's first supreme elder received the Longevity Edict.

The Longevity Edict was golden in color, it resembled a token, but it was in essence, an information path Immortal Gu.

He felt a sensation and understood the information in the Longevity Edict.

Liu tribe's first supreme elder frowned: "Longevity Heaven has orders for us Huang Jin tribes to work together and deal with Bai Zu tribe?"

This order caught him off guard.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was fighting with Chu Du, the entirety of Liu tribe's Gu Immortals were happy to see this.

Bai Zu tribe took over Hei tribe, their forces bordered Liu tribe. Because Bai Zu tribe had a rank eight Gu Immortal, Liu tribe had a very vigilant attitude, while feeling deep wariness.

And Chu Du had a feud with Liu tribe, his reputation as Domination Immortal was mostly due to Liu tribe to begin with.

The contest between these two, in Liu tribe's opinion, was one foe fighting another. Liu tribe was watching on the fence, wanting to see them both suffer losses.

Chu Du was in trouble, Liu tribe felt good seeing it, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had taken revenge for them.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu suffering losses would cause Bai Zu tribe's reputation to fall in the future, it was a great thing for Liu tribe. Nobody would want a fierce tiger to live around them, a weak neighbor was better than a strong one.

"But now that the Longevity Edict is out, we have to follow it."

"My Liu tribe is close to Hei tribe's former territory, once this battle starts, we will face pressure many times that of the other tribes."

Liu tribe's first supreme elder left his information on Longevity Edict, on the Immortal Gu, before letting it go, as the Longevity Edict tore through the sky.

Next, this Immortal Gu would continue to visit the other Huang Jin tribes.

Back to the present time.

Inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Chu Du and Fang Yuan, who received this information, were surprised and overjoyed.

“All of the righteous path super forces, the Huang Jin tribes are attacking Bai Zu tribe, this way, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu is bound to retreat.” Fang Yuan spoke with a smile.

“The Huang Jin tribes that have never gotten along are acting in unison at such speed, I wonder what happened.” Chu Du was confused.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined: “Perhaps Longevity Heaven sent an edict.”

“Longevity Heaven?” Chu Du’s expression changed, he thought for a while: “It seems that is the only reason.”

In fact, the situation of the forces in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world was quite similar to Central Continent.

Central Continent had ten great ancient sects, Northern Plains had the Huang Jin bloodline super forces, Central Continent had the Heavenly Court ruling above, while Northern Plains had Longevity Heaven that stood in the sky.

More similarly, the ten great ancient sects were the lower level sects of Heavenly Court, while Longevity Heaven similarly had great influence on the Northern Plains Huang Jin tribes.

Perhaps in the past, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had imitated Central Continent, purposely creating this situation.

“Why did Longevity Heaven suddenly send an edict, ordering the Huang Jin tribes to work together and deal with Bai Zu tribe? Bai Zu tribe is backed by a rank eight Gu Immortal.” Chu Du thought, feeling doubts.

What made him unable to comprehend it was, if Longevity Heaven wanted to deal with Bai Zu tribe, the best time to strike was when Hei tribe had just been destroyed.

But at that time, Longevity Heaven did not act. So why did they wait until now? Was Longevity Heaven also interested in Hei Fan grotto-heaven?

Thinking of this possibility, Chu Du’s heart sank.

“No matter what, we need to make use of the remaining time and talk to Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, ending this conflict. Immortal Gu ‘No’ and ‘Care’ were prepared for this moment.” Fang Yuan reminded.

Chu Du came back to his senses, he said solemnly: “You are right.”

He immediately sent his clone to converse with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

Right now, Chu Du was the owner of Hei Fan grotto-heaven, he had made many arrangements here, the Gu worms that he sent out were not detected by others.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had more information than Chu Du.

He knew that right forces, the righteous path forces were coming at Bai Zu tribe because Longevity Heaven had directly sent a Longevity Edict!

He was very shocked, he did not know why Longevity Heaven was suddenly finding trouble with him.

In the past, when creating the tribe, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was worried about Longevity Heaven, he was waiting for a response from them.

Longevity Heaven’s silence made Heavenly Lord Bai Zu feel like he had probed its bottom line. He thought: As a grand rank eight, Longevity Heaven might not want to deal with him, after all, there was no good reason for it.

The commotion and change in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world made Heavenly Lord Bai Zu very perplexed.

“Yao Huang and Prince Feng Xian are righteous path Gu Immortals, Prince Feng Xian might not come, but Yao Huang is a true Huang Jin bloodline member. Other than that, there is still Longevity Heaven. Hmm... Five Elements Grandmaster has a good understanding of Longevity Heaven, I might be able to get some information from him.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu thought quickly, the situation was turning for the worse rapidly, he felt immense pressure on him.

He was still unaware that Five Elements Grandmaster was already fighting with Longevity Heaven. In fact, the current situation was caused by the conversation between Five Elements Grandmaster and Heaven Extremity.

“As for Hei Fan grotto-heaven...” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s gaze became dark, he assessed: “I cannot take it down for now, I should stop. I cannot waste any time and energy now, I need to put all my effort into defending my hard work.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu wanted to retreat.

The reason why he wanted to take down Hei Fan grotto-heaven was due to the loss of his reputation, it might cause a commotion and result in severe losses to Bai Zu tribe’s interests.

But now, Bai Zu tribe was in a crisis. Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s own interests were severely infringed now.

This situation was truly the worst, how could Heavenly Lord Bai Zu have any effort to spare for Hei Fan grotto-heaven!

But in this situation, Chu Du’s Gu worm arrived in Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s hands.

“Oh? As expected of the Domination Immortal...” After understanding Chu Du’s intention, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s gaze became dark and eerie.

The contest for Hei Fan grotto-heaven ended at once!

What made the Northern Plains Gu Immortal world shocked was, Chu Du not only came to a resolution with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, he even gave up a portion of Hei Fan grotto-heaven, and created an alliance with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu!

After achieving the alliance agreement, Chu Du let Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s main body into Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Using Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s deterrence, he went on to deal with those demonic path and lone immortals that he had invited earlier.

These Gu Immortals were facing Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s main body, how could they dare to resist, they could only lower their heads to Domination Immortal.

Chu Du successfully resisted Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, using the power of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, he forcefully subdued many lone immortals, gathering everyone and creating Chu Sect on that very day.

Chu Sect.

Using Chu Du’s words in his speech: This was the first Gu Immortal sect in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world! It had extraordinary meaning.

Fang Yuan watched coldly from the side, even though Lang Ya Sect was the actual first sect in Northern Plains, Fang Yuan could not help but gasp in admiration towards Chu Du’s incredible performance.

Chu Du had truly outdone himself.

He gave up a portion of Hei Fan grotto-heaven, but he managed to obtain a rank eight reinforcement, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu!

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was also a deep schemer.

Northern Plains’ situation gave him huge pressure, he had to find external allies.

And Chu Du could guess his mentality, thus he created Chu Sect, it was far easier than for Heavenly Lord Bai Zu when he created Bai Zu tribe.

Chu Du was not all alone, these last years, he had nurtured many strength path Gu Immortals.

And with Hei Fan grotto-heaven, he had a huge basis for development.

Meanwhile, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu needed Hei Fan grotto-heaven as a backup plan for the entirety of Bai Zu tribe.

Thus, the two sides turned from enemies to allies.

Chou Lao Wu and Hao Zhen, who accidentally killed Bai Zu Wei, were just punished mildly, before they were spared.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu could no longer bother with these two insignificant figures at this point.

Thus, Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu felt immense gratitude towards Domination Immortal, they became the two most loyal people in Chu Sect.

Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world had changed too rapidly.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, who was at the peak of his life earlier, having created his own tribe, was now facing the attack of all the Huang Jin tribes.

Chu Du and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, who were fighting to the death earlier, were now allies.

Ordinary Gu Immortals might be dazzled by these turns of events, but for people like Fang Yuan, it was very clear.

No matter what commotion or changes there were, the key concern throughout was still benefits, it had never changed!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1182: Leaving Hei Fan Grotto-Heaven

Inside a Gu formation.

Fang Yuan sat quietly on the ground.

Chu Du, as well as the wills of Pang Shan and Not Immortal, were in front of the formation.

“Start.” Chu Du said plainly.

The wills of Not Immortal and Pang Shan formed into human shapes, nodding as they activated their Immortal Gu.

One rule path Immortal Gu — No.

The other was also a rule path Immortal Gu, top ten in the List of Mystical Gu — Care.

Red date immortal essence was rapidly expended, the two Immortal Gu were shining in their own profound lights. The two profound lights had different colors, one was black and empty, the other was red and warm like fire.

The black and red lights entered the Gu formation.

Chu Du took action at an appropriate timing, activating this Gu formation, to fuse the power of Immortal Gu No and Immortal Gu Care into it.

The two profound lights fused under the guidance of the Gu formation, creating a half black and half red spiralling pillar of light.

The light pillar completely covered Fang Yuan’s body, without any leaks.

A moment later, the light pillar stabilized, it was no longer as distorted as before.

“It is ready.” Chu Du reminded.

Fang Yuan thus said: “You will not be able to imagine what is hidden under the northern icy plain, I almost died there…”

He spoke quickly, detailing what happened when he was undergoing tribulation in the northern icy plain, and the terrifying human calamity that he had faced.

The secret of the snowman and rockman tribes in the northern icy plain was revealed to Chu Du.

“To think that there is such a situation! The empty northern icy plain actually has such a powerful variant human force, they have been hidden all along!” Chu Du was extremely shocked.

The wills of Not Immortal and Pang Shan also shook, showing their stirred emotions.

A moment later, the black and red lights faded, the Gu formation stopped its operation, Fang Yuan slowly stood up, getting out of the Gu formation.

He was safe!

Originally, he was a member of the four race alliance, and a guest elder of Lang Ya Sect, he was not able to expose the secrets of the snowmen and rockmen to outsiders.

But because of the Immortal Gu No and Care, along with Chu Du’s cooperation, Fang Yuan was able to breach his alliance agreements without facing any harm!

These two Immortal Gu were meant to be used by Chu Du.

Chu Du’s intention was to come to a consensus with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu. After defending strongly and refusing to relent in battle, they would eventually settle at an agreement, defending Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Chu Du had long since planned that if there was no choice, he would secretly sacrifice Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu, to protect Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s reputation, and express his sincerity.

But the actual situation was far better than he had expected.

Perhaps the alliance of all the righteous path forces in attacking Bai Zu tribe had made Heavenly Lord Bai Zu feel strong external pressure.

Because of that, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu did not list any requirements of executing the murderers, he only gave them a light punishment on the surface.

“It is to the credit of these two Immortal Gu, otherwise, I would have no way to explain this situation to you.” Fang Yuan pretended to be relieved, he sighed deeply to himself.

Of course, he had withheld some information from Chu Du.

For example, Fang Yuan did not expose Lang Ya blessed land.

Fang Yuan was a vigilant person, he was not going to tell Chu Du everything, he was used to keeping trump cards at hand.

Chu Du said in a heavy tone: “By the looks of it, we cannot continue to undergo tribulation in the northern icy plain.”

“Indeed.” Fang Yuan nodded, he started to avoid mentioning things related to the four races alliance.

Because the two Immortal Gu No and Care had stopped activating, if Fang Yuan breached the alliance agreements again, he would face intense backlash, he would either be severely injured or dead!

The two Immortal Gu, No and Care, had incredible abilities, but they had to be activated constantly.

Because they had to be used together to allow the Gu Immortal to breach alliance agreements without suffering any damage.

But they could not remove the restrictions of Fang Yuan’s alliance agreements completely.

This was a method that resolved the situation but did not solve the underlying problem.

“Regarding this, what are your opinions?” Fang Yuan asked directly.

The wills of Not Immortal and Pang Shan looked at each other.

The former shook his head: “Crazed Demon Cave contains the secret of eternal life, our main bodies would not leave it. As long as humanity is not extinct, we will not come out. The variant humans can develop all they want, even if they become many times stronger, they are not the match of humans.”

The latter said: “If we are to deal with the variant humans, it is easy. We just need to announce this information, and the entire Northern Plains Gu Immortal world will go after them.”

“No, that way, the northern icy plain will get destroyed. If a huge battle occurs, the icy plain will not remain. And we would not be able to get anything from it, we might even get exposed and implicate Brother Liu.” Chu Du shook his head.

“I’m just saying.” Pang Shan’s will grumbled.

Indeed, if the variant human force underneath the icy plain was exposed, a huge battle would occur. By then, Fang Yuan would be trapped in the middle, he would not have an easy time.

Fang Yuan listened to their words, the worry inside him dissipated by a lot.

Fang Yuan had to tell Chu Du about the situation in the northern icy plain, because they had set an alliance agreement. There would be many opportunities to cooperate in the future.

If Fang Yuan concealed it, he would be greatly restricted.

Chu Du did not attack the variant human force in the icy plain, that was within Fang Yuan’s estimations. After all, right now, Chu Du’s focus was no longer on tribulations and Reckless Savage’s true meaning, it was how to control the situation and cooperate with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu to resist the attacks of the righteous path super forces.

And the wills of Not Immortal and Pang Shan also made Fang Yuan realize the mindset of the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics.

“It seems that these three are bent on researching Crazed Demon Cave. The commotion in the outside world cannot lure them out.”

Fang Yuan thought about it, he could understand the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics.

If he did not have so much trouble, he would also do the same thing as them.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan was in a lot of danger, not just Shadow Sect, but also the pursuit of Heavenly Court and other various aspects.

“However, if they know my true identity, how would they react?” Fang Yuan looked at the three, his thoughts were drifting.

After talking for a while, Chu Du kept the two Immortal Gu and the wills of Not Immortal and Pang Shan in his own immortal aperture.

Next, he and Fang Yuan left this underground camp together. After leaving the cave, they got back to the surface of Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

Hei Fan grotto-heaven was currently developing.

Large numbers of variant humans, rockmen, feathermen, and minimen were laboriously working.

Many Gu Immortals would often raise variant human slaves.

Right now, Chu Sect had allied with Bai Zu tribe, these variant humans were slaves that came from Chu Sect and Bai Zu tribe.

“Greetings to first supreme elder and second supreme elder.” Hao Zhen saw Fang Yuan and Chu Du, quickly taking the initiative to greet them.

Chu Du took the opportunity to create Chu Sect, he even roped in Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was originally unwilling, but Chu Du gave him special treatment, Fang Yuan’s alliance agreement for Chu Sect was very loose, it was not restrictive.

And because Fang Yuan intended to continue working with Chu Du, this allowed them to have another layer of relationship.

Chu Du asked about the development status of Hei Fan grotto-heaven, Hao Zhen answered that they were all at the initial stage, but the different Gu Immortals had taken out their resources and relocated them here. There was a crucial point, Fang Yuan had also put in a lot of effort, contributing a lot of resources.

These resources were originally from Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

After going through many places, they were back at their original spots.

Even Fang Yuan did not expect that.

Why did he contribute this huge amount of resources?

Firstly, using the two Immortal Gu No and Care was not free, Fang Yuan had discussed with Chu Du, using this as the compensation.

Secondly, Fang Yuan sold some resources to Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

Inside Hei Fan grotto-heaven, a large portion was Chu Sect’s territory, but a small portion belonged to Bai Zu tribe now.

The entirety of Hei Fan grotto-heaven became the symbol of alliance between Chu Sect and Bai Zu tribe.

Fang Yuan and Chu Du said goodbye to Hao Zhen, after flying for a while, Fang Yuan said to Chu Du: “Alright, you don’t have to send me off.”

Chu Du had a worried look: “Didn’t you just obtain Hei Fan’s true inheritance. In my opinion, delaying the calamities and tribulations by slowing your immortal aperture’s rate of time is most stable. After all, you have just undergone so many battles, if you undergo tribulation after going back, there is a huge risk.”

Fang Yuan smiled: “How can there be gains without risks. Furthermore, you are around, if I encounter any sudden danger, I will seek help from you.”

Chu Du had an apologetic expression: “It is a pity that Chu Sect was just created, we have strong enemies against us, there is unrest now, otherwise, I would go with you. Have you chosen the tribulation location?”

“Not yet, I need to think about it.” Fang Yuan shook his head.

Chu Du opened the grotto-heaven’s entrance.

“See you.” Fang Yuan stepped out of the grotto-heaven, flying away without looking back.

Chu Du shut the door again, sighing internally.

Fang Yuan was not easy to control, he was very decisive. And Chu Du still had desire towards the immortal tribulation tempering aperture method, but the current situation was very complex.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength and his status with the variant humans made Chu Du see a lot of value in him.

Fang Yuan wanted to deepen his cooperation with Chu Du, wasn’t Chu Du also thinking the same?

As Fang Yuan left Hei Fan grotto-heaven, in Southern Border, Bai Ning Bing arrived at Jade Pot Mountain.

“Why did you bring me here?” Bai Ning Bing asked directly.

Hei Lou Lan and the others were wondering too.

Ying Wu Xie, who was leading the way, stopped walking, he turned around and smiled: “Bai Ning Bing, you are too weak. This Jade Pot Mountain has our Shadow Sect’s arrangements, it has already formed an Immortal Gu. We will take it out and increase your battle strength, so that you can deal with the bet of the Five Xiangs.”

“Bet of the Five Xiangs? What is that?” Bai Ning Bing frowned.

Ying Wu Xie laughed loudly: “It is too early to tell you now.”

Bai Ning Bing frowned even more deeply now, snorting coldly: “The part about you I hate the most is that air of mystery that you use.”

“Insolence!” Shi Nu stared angrily at Bai Ning Bing, he was very unhappy about Bai Ning Bing’s arrogant attitude towards Ying Wu Xie.

“No matter, it’s no bother.” Ying Wu Xie laughed, he did not mind Bai Ning Bing’s attitude at all.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1183: Entering a New Blessed Land

Fang Yuan successfully returned to Lang Ya blessed land.

At this moment, his divine sense was in the sovereign immortal aperture.

“I have inspected it eighteen times, there should be no problems. But even if any problems occur, the newly hatched upper extreme heavenly eagle is only at the power of a desolate beast, even if it rebels, there is no danger.”

Fang Yuan thought in his mind.

He was inside Mini Purple Heaven in the sovereign immortal aperture.

An ordinary eagle nest was floating in the sky.

Inside the nest, other than an upper extreme heavenly eagle egg, there was nothing else.

Within the surrounding hundred li, Fang Yuan had placed many strength path immortal zombies, desolate beasts, and even the walking meat tree here temporarily, to ensure there were no accidents.

He hatched the upper extreme heavenly eagle once again!

Fang Yuan began to move.

A large amount of fresh blood was taken out by the strength path immortal zombies, before activating Gu worms and fusing the fresh blood perfectly into the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s egg.

Fang Yuan had done this once before.

But back then, Fang Yuan used Hei Cheng’s blood. This time, Fang Yuan was amply prepared, not only did he change the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s memories, he even did some changes to Hei Fan’s arrangements left on the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

This way, Fang Yuan could use his own blood to hatch the upper extreme heavenly eagle. It was not like before, using familiar face to conceal himself and become close with the upper extreme heavenly eagle, obtaining the acknowledgement of this immemorial desolate beast.

He went step by step, smoothly progressing, there were no unexpected mishaps.

Eight days and nights later in the immortal aperture, the upper extreme heavenly eagle hatched again, as the baby upper extreme heavenly eagle emerged.

“Chirp, chirp.”

The upper extreme heavenly eagle saw ‘Fang Yuan’ and immediately jumped at him affectionately.

This ‘Fang Yuan’ was not Fang Yuan’s real body, it was a strength path immortal zombie, using familiar face to turn into Fang Yuan’s appearance.

Even though it had just hatched, it was not small, when it raised its head, it had the height of a youngster.

The young eagle treated Fang Yuan as its parent, it surrounded him and flapped its wings, chirping and jumping around, extremely happy.

“Alright, alright.” Fang Yuan smiled warmly, stretching out his hand and stroking the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s head.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle obediently stayed still, its chirping became softer and more intimate.

“Come, eat.” Fang Yuan took out a thick and long heavenly crystal.

The heavenly crystal was white and gold, in a translucent state, placing it in front of the young eagle, all of its attention was drawn to it.

Its dark eagle eyes shined with bright light. It began to peck the heavenly crystal, as it broke apart like tofu, the young eagle ate it and swallowed the crystal very quickly.

The young eagle trusted Fang Yuan deeply, it did not hesitate in consuming the heavenly crystal in Fang Yuan’s hands.

After eating six heavenly crystals, it stopped in satisfaction.

Its tummy was bloated, the young eagle had become plump, it sat on the ground and chirped, slapping its tummy with its wings continuously, it was very cute and lovable.

“Full?” Fang Yuan smiled warmly, sitting down while leaning on the eagle.

The eagle felt a strong sense of safety, it let down its guard, shutting its eyes as its head lowered, lying on Fang Yuan’s lap as it fell asleep.

Fang Yuan stretched out his hand, stroking the young eagle’s feathers.

Its newly born feathers were yellow and soft, together with its body warmth, it was very comfortable to touch.

In the following days, Fang Yuan manipulated the strength path immortal zombie as he stayed by the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s side.

Other than deepening their relationship, he was also keeping a close eye on it, in case of accidents.

“I have enough heavenly crystal eagle nests.” Fang Yuan’s divine sense left the eagle nest.

Taking a look, in the surrounding hundreds of li, there were many eagle nests.

There were nearly a hundred eagle nests, Fang Yuan had taken them from Iron Eagle blessed land.

Fang Yuan chose the largest eagle nest as the temporary home for the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

The original heavenly crystal eagle nest had already been completely eaten by the previous upper extreme heavenly eagle, nothing was left.

But now, even though the heavenly crystals in the nests could not nurture the upper extreme heavenly eagle, there was still a pile of them, taller than an adult.

Among these heavenly crystals, a small portion came from Lang Ya land spirit. Fang Yuan had exchanged for them from Lang Ya land spirit using sect contribution points.

The bulk of them were obtained from Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, after Chu Du and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu allied, Fang Yuan had transacted with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu through Chu Du.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was a rank eight Gu Immortal, he had a grotto-heaven, he had a huge stock of heavenly crystals.

In order to get this transaction, while revealing the secrets of the variant human in the northern icy plain to Chu Du, Fang Yuan also told him about the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

Actually, this was already no secret.

Chu Du might have known, while Heavenly Lord Bai Zu definitely knew, because he had taken in the supreme elders of Hei tribe as his subordinates.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu desired the upper extreme heavenly eagle greatly, but currently, he needed Chu Du as an ally. And Chu Du wanted to deepen his cooperation with Fang Yuan, because of all these reasons, Fang Yuan easily succeeded in getting this transaction.

Fang Yuan paid a lot of resources.

But these resources were originally from Hei Fan grotto-heaven anyway. To purchase these heavenly crystals, Fang Yuan sold them all without hesitation.

Be it Chu Sect or Bai Zu tribe, they needed these resources greatly.

Because of their battle, both sides had expended a lot of their foundation, they needed replenishment. And the even better thing was, these resources were originally produced in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, they suited the environment and did not need to adapt.

After successfully hatching the upper extreme heavenly eagle, Fang Yuan settled down and observed it for some more days.

After he confirmed that the upper extreme heavenly eagle had no issues, Fang Yuan immediately left, using Lang Ya Sect’s teleportation Gu formation to get to Tai Qiu.

The sixth earthly calamity was about to arrive, there was little time, why was Fang Yuan going to Tai Qiu?

He could not undergo tribulation in Tai Qiu.

Because it was too dangerous.

Ancient desolate beasts and ancient desolate plants lacked intelligence, they were easily influenced by heaven’s will, and would form into a giant beast tide.

Fang Yuan followed a route and moved.

He used familiar face, constantly changing his appearance, disguising himself as ancient desolate beasts or desolate beasts to travel, moving in Tai Qiu.

Fang Yuan did not dare to go to the center of Tai Qiu, it was extremely dangerous, there were many wild Immortal Gu there and even immemorial desolate beasts!

Thankfully, his destination was not at the center of Tai Qiu, it was at the fringe.

Three days later, he successfully reached his destination.

The ground in front of him was uneven, even though there was a lot of giant grass, it could not conceal the traces of battle here.

Some mangled corpses were scattered here.

Fang Yuan’s gaze swept through the surroundings, he did not discover any danger, he let out a breath of air and relaxed.

“In the previous earthly calamity, I gained a lot of dark path dao marks. This time, I used Dark Limit to hide from heaven’s will, the effect is many times better! Thus, I am still safe.”

“Then next is…” Fang Yuan mobilized his Gu worms, inspecting the surroundings.

He was very careful, he searched meticulously.

There was a rank seven Immortal Gu in his immortal aperture, Fang Yuan had specially borrowed it from Heavenly Lord Bai Zu. Lending Immortal Gu was also part of Fang Yuan and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s deal. Other than this, there was an immortal killer move.

With this rank seven Immortal Gu as the core, Fang Yuan used the immortal killer move.

Not long after, he had a discovery.

“Good, I recalled correctly! It is here!”

The immortal killer move allowed Fang Yuan to discover a blessed land. It was hidden in empty space, concealed here in the air.

“Good eagle, it is up to you now.” Next, Fang Yuan opened the immortal aperture, letting out the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle had grown multiple times in size after these days, but it was still young, it had shiny feathers and sharp eagle eyes, it was quite strong and vigorous looking.

It flew in the sky, carrying Fang Yuan on its back as they flew multiple times in a circle, under Fang Yuan’s guidance, it sensed something and changed directions, aiming towards the ground and about to crash.

When it was three meters from the ground, the upper extreme heavenly eagle suddenly went through an entrance, as it vanished from Tai Qiu along with Fang Yuan.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan arrived at a completely new blessed land!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1184: Annexing Han Dong Blessed Land

This blessed land was very unique.

The entire terrain was a shallow beach.

Jade green water that was less than three meters deep, large numbers of rocks piled on the beach, like ink on a casually drawn canvas, they resembled strokes and lines that weaved together.

There were many pools of green water, some formed lakes, some formed tiny seas, it was distributed like a pieces of a chessboard.

“This is quite similar to Dong Fang tribe’s Jade Pool blessed land.” Fang Yuan thought to himself.

But he was aware that this place was different from Jade Pool blessed land at its core.

Jade Pool blessed land was filled with many deep pools, there were tens of thousands of them, resembling the stars in the sky, forming a beautiful sight. And inside the jade pools, the water was different and bred countless aquatic species.

But the water here was connected to the same source. Because there were crevices between the rocks that formed the terrain of the beach.

Fang Yuan looked, there were large numbers of fish and prawns, all sorts of aquatic insects and mortal Gu. Under the beach, in the crevices, there were seashells, mussels, seaweed, and others.

But what was most abundant was a type of snake.

This snake was pinkish red in color, it was small and delicate, about the size of an adult’s thumb, smaller ones were only a few centimeters.

This was a spirit snake.

Gu Immortal Han Dong specialized the most in this transformation.

This was Han Dong’s blessed land.

Han Dong was one of the Traveling Three Elites, back then when Dong Fang Chang Fan possessed Dong Fang Yu Liang and tried to revive, he had used the immemorial ruin bat corpse to create a temporary base.

By the time Fang Yuan and the rest got there, Gu Immortal Han Dong from the Traveling Three Elites had already died here.

The Traveling Three Elites were Lu Qing Ming, Su Guang and Han Dong.

They were lone cultivators, rather famous ones.

When the three worked together, they could use an immortal killer move that gathered light, forming a chariot that could travel quickly.

In the Gu Immortal world, when some Gu Immortals develop close relationships, they would help each other and cultivate together. As time passes, when they become more familiar, if they were talented, they would comprehend and create new joint immortal killer moves.

The Traveling Three Elites were like this, the wind thunder roar of Chou Lao Wu and Hao Zhen was similar.

Among the three of them, Lu Qing Ming was a wind path Gu Immortal, his signature move was entangled wind, it was very powerful and maneuverable.

Su Guang was a light path Gu Immortal, while Han Dong cultivated transformation path!

He was a transformation path rank six Gu Immortal, this Han Dong blessed land was a rank six blessed land.

Fang Yuan floated in the sky, at this time, a pinkish red spirit snake slithered over towards Fang Yuan.

"Hiss hiss hiss!"

The spirit snake was translucent without scales, its flesh was pinkish, it did not have bones, just one red line held its body from head to tail together.

It hissed at Fang Yuan, showing animosity in its tone.

This was different from the other snakes.

Fang Yuan could understand it, as the hissing turned into words in his ears: "Who are you? Why did you invade my home? Quickly leave, you are not welcomed here!"

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: "I came here because I want to be your master, what are the conditions for that?"

"Hiss hiss hiss!"

The pinkish red spirit snake hissed unhappily.

Fang Yuan nodded, feeling overjoyed, he thought to himself: "So Han Dong's obsession before death has to do with Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang."

It turned out that Han Dong blessed land's condition was very simple yet strict.

The spirit snake in front of Fang Yuan was the blessed land's land spirit, created after Han Dong's death, fusing his obsession with heavenly power.

This land spirit would only acknowledge Lu Qing Ming or Su Guang.

When either of them arrived, this blessed land would belong to them.

From this point, the Traveling Three Elites truly had a close relationship. Han Dong's obsession before dying was to leave all of his assets to his two good friends.

"In that case, I will bring Lu Qing Ming here. We are good friends." Fang Yuan spouted nonsense.

"Hiss hiss hiss!"

Spirit snake asked: "Is that true? You can find Lu Qing Ming? That is wonderful."

"In fact, he is nearby. Because your main body died here, Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang have been thinking about it. But Tai Qiu is too dangerous, thus, they asked me for help, and we finally found you after so long." Fang Yuan started his chain of lies, he neither was flustered nor did his heart beat faster.

The spirit snake slithered around, moving its body, it was very excited.

Next, it made an agreement with Fang Yuan, in just a few minutes, Lu Qing Ming would arrive.

"Thank you, truly, you are a good person!" The spirit snake's attitude changed, it was very welcoming as it opened the entrance, sending Fang Yuan out.

"You must find Lu Qing Ming!" Seeing Fang Yuan off, the spirit snake closed the entrance longingly.

Fang Yuan flew in a circuit outside, storing away the upper extreme heavenly eagle and using familiar face to become Lu Qing Ming.

He came back and waited for a while, before the blessed land’s entrance opened.

“Lord Lu Qing Ming... sob sob sob.” The spirit snake was at the entrance, seeing ‘Lu Qing Ming’, it started to sob uncontrollably.

Fang Yuan consoled it as the spirit snake’s mood lifted.

The spirit snake asked: “Lord Lu Qing Ming, where is your friend from earlier? He is a nice person, he actually brought you here.”

“He is a kind and helpful person, he is very dependable. He has already left, he said that there is no point in staying here, he has already done his part.” Fang Yuan continued with his fairy tales.

The pitiful land spirit could not see through familiar face, it thought he was speaking the truth, immediately acknowledging Lu Qing Ming as its master.

“Hiss hiss hiss!”

The spirit snake coiled around Fang Yuan’s shoulder: “From now on, you are the owner of this blessed land.”

Fang Yuan immediately changed his tone: “Wonderful, I’ve thought about it, I will give this blessed land to that friend of mine from earlier.”

“Hiss?!”

The spirit snake was stunned.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “Since I am the owner of this place, I have the authority for that, right?”

“Hiss... hiss.”

The pinkish red spirit snake lowered its head, it was upset but it still responded, acknowledging Fang Yuan’s words.

Fang Yuan immediately left, in a moment, he got rid of familiar face and returned in his original appearance.

Very successfully, the spirit snake acknowledged him as master.

“Hiss hiss hiss!”

The spirit snake said: “From today onwards, you are the owner of this blessed land. Sigh, even though I am sad, this is Lord Lu Qing Ming’s wish.”

Next, there were even more saddening words coming out of Fang Yuan’s mouth: “Since you acknowledge me as your master, work with me, assimilate this blessed land into my own blessed land.”

“Hiss? Hiss, hiss, hiss, hiss hiss!”

The spirit snake was completely stunned, before becoming frantic: “What? Why must we do that? If we do that, I will disappear!”

“Of course I know that. But by fusing into my blessed land, I can skip multiple calamities and tribulations, it is helpful to me.” Fang Yuan continued.

The pinkish red spirit snake thought of something and cried out: “To annex my blessed land, you need to be at least a transformation path master.”

“I primarily cultivate transformation path, I am a grandmaster!” Fang Yuan replied mockingly.

The spirit snake lost all its vigor, its head was lowered to the ground: “Fine, you are the owner of the blessed land, you can do whatever you want, I will cooperate.”

Immortal apertures could annex one another.

There were many restrictions and requirements in this.

Firstly, a smaller immortal aperture could not engulf a bigger one.

Secondly, dead apertures could not devour others.

Finally, annexing immortal apertures required specific attainment levels. To annex a rank six blessed land, one needed to have master attainment level in that path. For rank seven blessed lands, one needed grandmaster attainment level. and for rank eight grotto-heavens, one needed great grandmaster attainment level!

Once these requirements were met, another person’s immortal aperture could be devoured and become part of one’s own immortal aperture!

There were many benefits in this.

Firstly, the resources inside the annexed immortal aperture would be completely transferred into the other immortal aperture without any need for relocation.

Secondly, one would gain a portion of its dao marks.

Thirdly, and the most crucial point, the skipping of calamities and tribulations!

For example, Hu Immortal, an enslavement path lone cultivator from Central Continent, had died during her fifth earthly calamity, from the blue charm lightning shadow. Even though the blue charm lightning shadow remained, the fifth earthly calamity of Hu Immortal blessed land was passed.

If a Gu Immortal annexed this blessed land, they would gain all of the resources inside Hu Immortal blessed land, at the same time, they would receive a portion of the blessed land’s dao marks, and they would skip at least one calamity or tribulation, to a maximum of five. Furthermore, the countdown towards their next calamity or tribulation would be reset.

Southern Border, Jade Pot Mountain.

Ying Wu Xie’s group arrived at the interior of the mountain.

“To think that Jade Pot Mountain has jade soil on the surface, producing beautiful jade that is renowned in Southern Border, but the interior is actually an icy land, it is truly another world here.” Bai Ning Bing stood inside the icy cave, sighing in shock.

As they got deeper into Jade Pot Mountain, the temperature lowered, frost energy emanated, even though the Gu Immortals had defensive methods, they still felt a strong chill assaulting them.

Ying Wu Xie suddenly paused his steps, he seemed to have sensed something, he spoke while looking forward at the empty space: “We are here. This is a rank six immortal aperture left behind by a strength path Gu Immortal of Shadow Sect.”

Next, Ying Wu Xie turned around and said to Hei Lou Lan: “Hei Lou Lan, this is for you. You have enough strength path attainment level, you can annex this immortal aperture. This way, your upcoming calamities and tribulations will be bypassed.”

Hei Lou Lan’s expression changed.

She had the Great Strength True Martial Physique, one of the ten extremes, her calamities and tribulations were immensely powerful.

Annexing an immortal aperture could resolve her problem, but it sacrificed her potential for growth in the future, only to obtain some short term benefits.

She hesitated, but eventually gritted her teeth, walking forward.

Ying Wu Xie internally nodded at this, he understood Hei Lou Lan’s feelings, he spoke: “In a Gu Immortal’s cultivation journey, pursuing potential and long term growth is not wise. If you cannot survive the upcoming tribulation, then there is no future to speak of. Don’t worry, this blessed land contains strength path dao marks that are not fewer in number than your ten extreme physique tribulation. Shadow Sect’s cultivation methods are not something you can imagine. But how much you can actually absorb is up to your own fortune. Because the annexing of others’ immortal apertures will often result in a reduction of dao marks gained to some extent. It is far less than stuffing a Gu Immortal’s corpse into your immortal aperture directly and allowing it to break down naturally.”

Hei Lou Lan’s body shook, the anticipation in her gaze became heavier.

Ying Wu Xie could not help but think of Fang Yuan, he added in his mind: “Of course, the sovereign immortal body is exempt from this.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1185: Unexpected Joy

“What is going on?” Fang Yuan was confused.

Under the cooperation of the blessed land’s pinkish red spirit snake, he successfully annexed Han Dong blessed land, turning it into a portion of the sovereign immortal aperture.

Thus, a shallow rock beach appeared in Mini Northern Plains, within the sovereign immortal aperture.

In the shallow beach, there was clear jade green water, with all sorts of fish and prawns in it, they could be seen swimming in the clear water. Between the crevices of the rocks, algae and seaweed flowed with the waves, there were even seashells and conchs.

There was a great number of pinkish red spirit snakes, some were moving alone, exploring the crevices. Some formed into groups, swimming in the green water, resembling a ball of red threads as they moved together. Some spirit snake groups moved in hundreds, it was a grand sight.

What was worth mentioning was that there was a desolate beast pinkish red spirit snake.

It was resting in a crevice between some rocks, it seemed to be in deep sleep.

Even when the entire blessed land was engulfed, it did not wake up.

Fang Yuan moved the whole of Han Dong blessed land over, the assimilation was simply perfect.

Normally, if Fang Yuan took out these resources and planted them into his sovereign immortal aperture personally, he would need to dig rivers and create their habitat.

In that case, because of the change in environment and difference in dao marks, much of these resources would wither and die. Like what happened when Fang Yuan took away Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s resources, he had to constantly sell the resources in the outside world.

Because these resources could not grow in the sovereign immortal aperture.

It was not worth the effort in trying.

But now, Fang Yuan directly annexed the immortal aperture, he saved a lot of trouble.

The resources in Han Dong blessed land, be it the fish, prawns, or plants, did not need to adapt to a new environment. Because Fang Yuan moved the entire environment over directly!

This way, Fang Yuan had completely, with one hundred percent efficiency, taken over all of Han Dong’s accumulation of resources over his life, and instantly absorbed them.

“Han Dong blessed land only produces one valuable thing, that is the spirit snakes. He can already nurture desolate beast level spirit snakes, even though this blessed land is low grade, to reach this extent of development is already outstanding.”

Thus, Fang Yuan could inherit Han Dong’s business and sell the spirit snakes.

Spirit snakes were a type of mutated beast, but they had a high ceiling of growth, they could reach a peak of ancient desolate beast level.

Fang Yuan assessed it, this rock beach was the foundation for raising spirit snakes. The profits it generated for him slightly exceeded the star fragment grass fields that were in Mini Blue Heaven.

Fang Yuan put these resources aside for now.

There were other, stranger matters.

Firstly, Han Dong blessed land’s land spirit, that pinkish red spirit snake, was still around in the rock beach.

It did not die!

“Hiss hiss hiss?!” The pinkish red spirit snake twisted its delicate body, shaking its head, even the land spirit itself was confused.

The blessed land was annexed, the land spirit would die, this was common knowledge in the Gu Immortal world. But when it came to the sovereign immortal aperture, logic was meant to be defied.

Fang Yuan did not expect this at all, he was mentally prepared to sacrifice the blessed land’s land spirit.

But to think that this happened.

Fang Yuan’s will descended to the rock beach, forming into a human shape.

THe pinkish red spirit snake slithered over, happily hissing at Fang Yuan: “Hiss — hiss hiss hiss!”

“Master, master! What is going on, I actually did not die. I am still alive, master, master, you are amazing!”

Fang Yuan’s will laughed: “Of course, this is my secret art, solely created by me, it is unique in this entire Gu Immortal world. You think I wanted to harm you? But you are truly loyal, you were willing to sacrifice yourself, and give everything to me.”

The pinkish red spirit snake’s eyes were shining, it had deep admiration towards Fang Yuan: “Hiss hiss hiss!”

“Wow, my master is so amazing, master’s talent is higher than heaven! I am truly so blessed to have a master like you.”

Fang Yuan’s will nodded in agreement: “Alright, even though I have created a secret art to annex immortal apertures of others, this is the first time I used it. How much control do you have over this rock beach?”

The spirit snake answered: “Same as before, master, master, you are so amazing!”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan’s will pondered, before saying: “Then, little spirit snake, can you control any other areas?”

The spirit snake tried and shook its head: “No master, I cannot.”

“It can only control its original territory huh...” Fang Yuan’s will thought and said: “Then, can you try and leave this rock beach?”

The spirit snake was very obedient, it immediately tried.

Unfortunately, as Fang Yuan had predicted, it could not leave the rock beach at all.

“Thus, the little spirit snake can only manage this rock beach in the future...” Fang Yuan felt a slight pity.

He lacked a capable individual to manage the sovereign immortal aperture for him. Earlier, he had hoped that there would be someone like Little Hu Immortal to manage the place for him.

After all, the sovereign immortal aperture was just too big, Fang Yuan’s divine sense needed time to just look over it completely, it was a hassle to manage. It used up a lot of his time and energy over typical days.

The appearance of the pinkish red spirit snake was a somewhat unexpected and joyful surprise.

Fang Yuan had wanted to let it manage the sovereign immortal aperture for him, but now it seemed, forget about the sovereign immortal aperture, it could not even manage the whole of Mini Northern Plains.

Because it could only move around in its original territory.

“Forget it. This rock beach can be taken care of by the pinkish red spirit snake, it can sense any issues immediately if they occur. Why must I be unsatisfied?”

Fang Yuan quickly got over it and continued thinking calmly.

The pinkish red spirit snake was not destroyed, it still existed, this was just one aspect that shocked Fang Yuan.

The other aspect was in dao marks.

“I annexed Han Dong blessed land, but I actually absorbed all of the dao marks of the blessed land, what is going on?” Fang Yuan was puzzled.

According to the logic of the Gu Immortal world, when Gu Immortals annex immortal apertures, the dao marks they gain would be greatly reduced from the total amount.

But Fang Yuan obtained everything!

Before annexing the blessed land, Fang Yuan had used perceivable dao Immortal Gu to inspect the number of dao marks in Han Dong blessed land. Its transformation path dao marks were the highest in number, about seven thousand, followed by water and earth path dao marks, about a thousand each. Time path, space path, fire path, and other dao marks were mixed in and varied in numbers, some were less than a hundred, some were a few hundred.

These dao marks were all absorbed by Fang Yuan. As Han Dong blessed land completely fused with him, it became a part of the sovereign immortal aperture.

Results by testing with perceivable dao Immortal Gu proved this point.

“I kind of understand why.” Fang Yuan thought for a while, realizing something.

What caused this situation was very likely to be the trait of non-conflicting dao marks that the sovereign immortal body had!

Ordinary Gu Immortals, even those of the ten extreme physiques, when annexing immortal apertures, would face conflicts between different dao marks. The Gu Immortal’s dao marks were like the owners of the house. And the annexed dao marks were like guests.

If guests want to enter the house and refuse to leave, even attempting to become the new owners of the house, the original owners would chase them away.

Eventually, the original owners will take in a batch of guests that they like, and these guests would suit the nature of the owners, they would be of the same path. As for the other paths’ dao marks, they would be chased out, few of them could enter the house and become new owners.

But Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body was different.

This house was open and invited any guest to stay. Because dao marks did not conflict, the original owner could allow any newcomer to stay without any issues!

“It is all encompassing. Not only are dao marks non-conflicting, even land spirits can be taken in, it is like the huge world outside, there is nothing it cannot contain.” Fang Yuan suddenly felt a trace of Spectral Soul Demon

Venerable’s incredible fortitude and resolution.

The sovereign immortal body was formed from sovereign immortal fetus Gu, it was deduced by Spectral Soul singlehandedly, expending a great amount of time, effort, and resources, eventually refined through great danger.

This Immortal Gu was the embodiment of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s beliefs and mindset.

Fang Yuan could not help but praise internally: “Spectral Soul Demon Venerable reached the apex through killing, he created soul path and was invincible in the world. But after he died, his soul went to the door of life and death, he went a step further and broke the limits he faced during his lifetime, reaching a state of being akin to that of a sea which all rivers flow into, becoming an all-encompassing being, he was truly incredible!”

Non-conflicting dao marks made Fang Yuan’s body very fragile, but the advantages greatly outweighed the disadvantages.

Fang Yuan could use strong defensive methods to negate this weakness. But the great benefits it brought could not be replicated through other means!

After annexing Han Dong blessed land, Fang Yuan’s final gain was also his main objective — skipping calamities and tribulations.

He succeeded.

Originally, his sixth earthly calamity was impending.

But after annexing Han Dong blessed land, not only was the sixth earthly calamity skipped, the countdown until the next calamity, and he even jumped forward by four calamities.

“I have already passed five earthly calamities, with the sixth coming soon. Now that I skipped four, I have already passed the ninth earthly calamity, and my first heavenly tribulation would be next!”

Gu Immortals pass tribulations time and time again, it is like they were obtaining the acknowledgement of heaven and earth.

The achievements of predecessors would be enjoyed by the person who annexed their immortal aperture.

Even though Fang Yuan was not very clear on the reasoning behind this, it was proven countless times in history by many Gu Immortals: Annexing other people’s blessed lands would allow one to skip their tribulations.

This was also a way to undergo tribulations, but in actuality, there were huge restrictions and tough conditions to meet.

And the disadvantages were not small.

“Sigh, after annexing this strength path immortal aperture, even though I gained a lot, I lost a lot of future potential in exchange for the current gains.” Inside Southern Border’s Jade Pot Mountain, Hei Lou Lan had also annexed an immortal aperture.

But her expression was very gloomy.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1186: Ice Soul Immortal Gu

Even though Hei Lou Lan obtained a lot of resources, and her greatest weakness was alleviated, her gains in dao mark were very little.

Making an estimation, it was less than thirty percent of the immortal aperture’s dao marks.

She skipped more than ten calamities and tribulations directly.

This was an immeasurable loss to Hei Lou Lan!

Because of her having one of the ten extreme physiques, every time she underwent tribulation, it would be extremely strong. Fortune and disaster came together, whenever she succeeded in passing the tribulation, the dao marks that she gained would be much greater in number.

More than ten calamities and tribulations, it was not just earthly calamities, but a heavenly tribulation as well!

Considering this, her losses were huge.

Even though undergoing tribulation was a dangerous thing, for a bold and fierce character like Hei Lou Lan, she was not afraid of difficulties, she was only afraid of being ordinary.

“Even if I am unwilling, what can I do? I am stuck deep in the abyss, it is not up to me...” Hei Lou Lan sighed internally.

Ying Wu Xie observed her appearance, seeing Hei Lou Lan’s gloomy expression, he smiled internally as he said: “Alright, let’s continue traveling.”

The group passed the icy tunnel, getting even deeper into the mountain.

Eventually, they arrived in front of a wall of ice.

Through the white wall of ice, the immortals could see countless hearts inside.

These hearts were blue, there were about at least a thousand of them.

Bai Ning Bing did not know of them.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng screamed: “Oh heavens, these are ice hearts, they are all ice hearts.”

Hei Lou Lan’s expression also changed: “Not just ice hearts, there are twin ice hearts, the latter is a rank seven immortal material, and in such quantity.”

Even the normally quiet Shi Nu gasped: “Unimaginable, Jade Pot Mountain actually has such an abundance of wealth. If Southern Border’s Gu Immortals knew about this, a storm would be whipped up, in order to fight for these ice hearts, they would fight until rivers of blood flowed!”

Jade Pot Mountain was not uninhabited, there was a village on the mountain, with the surname Yu.

Jade Pot Mountain produced jade stones and jade Gu, Yu clan village relied on these resources for survival.

Among mortal forces, Yu clan village, which had many rank five Gu Masters, was very powerful. But to Gu Immortals, they were not worth mentioning.

Who could have thought that Jade Pot Mountain, controlled by a mortal force, could have such a quantity of rare immortal materials stacked together!

Ying Wu Xie sighed deeply: “Jade Pot Mountain is nothing special on the surface, it is easy to ignore. Even my Shadow Sect also found this place due to a fortuitous encounter. But the ice hearts formed naturally here are not so high in quantity. My Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals had secretly set up a Gu formation to turn this place into a Gu breeding ground.”

“In the past, this place had nurtured ice heart Gu, but they had been taken away. There is still one ice heart Immortal Gu here, it was not ready earlier, but now it has completely formed. Bai Ning Bing, come here and retrieve this wild Immortal Gu using the method I taught you.”

“Alright!” Bai Ning Bing said without hesitation.

She took large steps ahead.

Next, using Ying Wu Xie’s instructions, she stretched out both hands and placed them on the wall of ice, which was covered in frost energy.

Without using any defensive methods, Bai Ning Bing’s hands were completely frozen, frost energy assaulted her as a thick layer of frost formed on her arms.

Hei Lou Lan saw this and raised her eyebrows.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng wanted to speak, he had an expression of pity.

Ying Wu Xie smiled lightly, Shi Nu was expressionless, not saying a word.

Bai Ning Bing endured the intense pain as frost energy traveled through her body from her arms, soon, she felt her body turning stiff, even her mind was becoming frozen.

The intense threat of death assaulted her in both body and mind.

But she was unmoved.

Inside her clear blue eyes, a firm, determined gaze could be seen, she was even more stubborn and cold than this ice wall.

“Endure it!”

“Even if I die, it is nothing much.”

“Hmph, dying from frost like this, it is interesting too isn’t it...”

“Furthermore! Shadow Sect suffered a huge blow, they need manpower. Ying Wu Xie tried so hard to recruit me, how could he let me die like this?”

As expected, a change occurred in front of Bai Ning Bing.

Inside the wall of ice, the blue ice hearts were shaking together, the vibrations were small initially, but got more intense with time.

More than ten breaths of time later, the wall of ice made a loud sound, cracks were forming before the immortals’ eyes. Soon, they were covering the wall of ice like a spider web, one of the cracks went deep into the interior of the wall.

The aura of Immortal Gu leaked out.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng almost wanted to help out.

This was a wild Immortal Gu, it was very hard to catch, if they did not take action now, it would be too late!

But Ying Wu Xie was unmoved, he watched silently.

Since he kept motionless, Hei Lou Lan and Shi Nu also did not act.

Bai Ning Bing could not move.

She was completely frozen, frost energy had permeated her entire body, she was close to death.

But this person who was dying greatly attracted that wild Immortal Gu which had broken out of the ice.

This wild Immortal Gu flew over slowly, entering Bai Ning Bing’s hold.

In the immortals’ vision, this Immortal Gu was about the size of a baby’s fist, resembling a spider with a white body and eight claws, as well as a back with blue flowery markings that showed the appearance of a vengeful ghost screaming.

Rank six ice soul Immortal Gu!

Bai Ning Bing focused her mind, opening her phantom aperture’s entrance.

Ice soul Immortal Gu directly flew in.

When the phantom aperture’s entrance closed, Ying Wu Xie immediately acted, healing Bai Ning Bing’s injuries, dragging her back from the edge of death.

“Good, ice soul Immortal Gu is already in your aperture, it has nowhere to escape, refining it will be extremely easy.” Ying Wu Xie clapped and smiled.

Hei Lou Lan’s gaze shined, she suddenly spoke: “I understand, this ice soul Immortal Gu has a close connection to Bai Ning Bing. Because Bai Ning Bing has the Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique!”

“Indeed, the aura of the Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique has an intense attraction to ice soul Immortal Gu. Thus, I asked Bai Ning Bing to capture it without using any defensive methods. It was to completely release the aura of the Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique without any concealment!” Ying Wu Xie nodded, explaining.

“But if Bai Ning Bing’s vitality was too high, the wild ice soul Immortal Gu would hesitate. Thus, only when Bai Ning Bing was on the verge of death, would ice soul Immortal Gu feel that she was no threat and go towards her automatically.”

“So that’s it.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng realized.

“Lord Fang Yuan is so wise!” The loyal Shi Nu also said.

“Hahaha.” Ying Wu Xie raised his head and laughed: “My Shadow Sect is huge and has many resources, being with me will give you all great benefits. Like this wall of ice, my Shadow Sect had spent a thousand years mimicking a natural environment, creating this Gu refinement ground.”

“The cultivation methods that my Shadow Sect has are unimaginable to all of you. If you aptitude is low, we will raise it. If you have few dao marks, we will increase them. Everything is possible.”

Hei Lou Lan’s heart shook.

Ying Wu Xie’s final words were clearly directed at her.

“This fellow, he has learned how to be a true leader, he is really improving rapidly.” Before Hei Lou Lan could continue thinking, Ying Wu Xie waved his hand: “We’re leaving! Next, we will take over Bai Xiang grotto-heaven!”

Northern Plains.

“I skipped too few calamities and tribulations.” Fang Yuan sighed, he was not happy about this.

At almost the same time as Hei Lou Lan, who was unhappy over her major losses, wanting to skip as few calamities and tribulations as possible.

Fang Yuan sighed, the number of calamities and tribulations skipped did not match his expectations.

If possible, he wanted to be a rank seven Gu Immortal at the very next moment!

The endless number of battles in Hei Fan grotto-heaven made Fang Yuan realize his biggest flaw. His cultivation level was too low, his green grape immortal essence was not efficient.

As Fang Yuan’s identity got more complex, the dangers he faced also became greater.

In the past, Fang Yuan could control the future well, because he was alone. Now that he had many alliance agreements, he could not help himself.

And with the trip to Eastern Sea, he did not manage to exterminate Shadow Sect, the growth of Ying Wu Xie and the rest made Fang Yuan feel immense pressure.

Thus, he would rather sacrifice his future potential and raise his battle strength rapidly.

“Without the present, how can there be a future?”

“Potential is good, but to have room for development, one needs to spend time.”

“The true attitude for cultivation is to be practical, everything is for the sake of our present reality.”

Fang Yuan’s losses were even more severe than Hei Lou Lan’s, but he did not feel any pity or loss, he had a resolute and determined gaze.

“But, Han Dong had already gone through two heavenly tribulations and more than twenty earthly calamities. I annexed his immortal aperture, but I only progressed by four earthly calamities.”

“Is this because the sovereign immortal aperture is too big, the effect of skipping calamities and tribulations from annexing immortal apertures is not very evident?”

Fang Yuan thought about it from all angles, he felt that the sovereign immortal aperture was the cause.

Rank six Gu Immortals face an earthly calamity every ten years, and a heavenly tribulation every one hundred years. After three hundred years, after three heavenly tribulations, they would become rank seven.

During this process, if it was split into three, Fang Yuan was nearly one-third done.

“This is not fast enough, I need to hit rank seven as soon as possible, it would give me a huge boost in battle strength in terms of sustainability! Financially, I will also grow rapidly.”

“If only Han Dong blessed land is not enough, I will have to annex more immortal apertures.”

“Even though the gains in dao marks cannot compare to undergoing tribulation myself, I can save a lot of time, I can deal with challenges and dangers from all aspects more easily now.”

“Furthermore, when annexing blessed lands, I get all of their dao marks without any losses. Even though it is still a loss, I just need to kill some Gu Immortals to make up for it!”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan had a ruthless light flashing in his eyes.

After uncovering another advantage of the sovereign immortal aperture, Fang Yuan discovered a new way to cultivate.

His original method was to go with the natural flow, undergoing tribulations and obtaining a great number of dao marks and true meaning. But this method was too slow, his battle strength rose slowly, what grew the most was his immortal aperture’s foundation. It was not suited for Fang Yuan, it would only make his situation more dangerous.

Currently, Fang Yuan was going to use the method of annexing immortal apertures and skipping calamities and tribulations, to rapidly raise his cultivation level. When his cultivation level rises, his battle strength would also rise. Fang Yuan would use his new battle strength to kill more enemies and annex their apertures, to avoid undergoing tribulation himself, it could also allow his immortal aperture’s foundation to grow, and he would gain dao marks as well.

This method allowed Fang Yuan’s battle strength to grow at the fastest speed, but his immortal aperture’s foundation would increase more slowly. But it was suited for Fang Yuan’s situation, it allowed him to have a better chance at survival!

Both cultivation methods could create a cycle of benefits for him, they just had their own advantages and strengths.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1187: Fang Yuan’s Cultivation Opportunity

Immortal killer move — Days Pass Like Years!

Countless Gu worms flew in the sky, expending green grape immortal essence as a grand light filled the entire sovereign immortal aperture.

Splash splash splash.

The tributary of the River of Time in the sovereign immortal aperture showed its true form, it could be seen with the naked eye.

Under the power of days pass like years, this tributary of the River of Time shrank, the river surface became thinner.

“Huff—!”

Letting out a breath, Fang Yuan finally relaxed.

“I succeeded, the immortal aperture’s rate of time has greatly slowed down. The interval between my calamities and tribulations have lengthened drastically.” After confirming that the killer move succeeded, Fang Yuan retracted all of his concentration.

Right now, he was inside his cloud city in Lang Ya blessed land.

After annexing Han Dong blessed land, Fang Yuan immediately returned.

Tai Qiu was too dangerous, while Fang Yuan’s Dark Limit had a time-limited effect, heaven’s will was plotting to kill Fang Yuan at all times.

Now that his immortal aperture time was slowed down, the following calamities and tribulations were far away.

Fang Yuan felt relaxed all of a sudden, his pressure diminished.

He had undergone careful consideration before making this decision. Since he changed his cultivation method, he did not need to undergo tribulations so frequently. Annexing blessed lands could allow him to skip calamities and tribulations, this effect had nothing to do with the rate of time in his own blessed land.

The most important thing now were blessed lands.

Where could he find more blessed lands?

Fang Yuan first thought of Hu Immortal blessed land and Star Form blessed land in Central Continent.

But soon, he disregarded this unrealistic idea.

It was impossible!

Central Continent was a dangerous territory, the ten ancient sects along with Heavenly Court, which had deeper foundation than Longevity Heaven, would want nothing more than to kill Fang Yuan.

Like how Ying Wu Xie and the rest fled from Central Continent, for Fang Yuan, it was also a death zone.

Some time ago, Star Form blessed land faced its calamities and tribulations, the land spirit wrote to Fang Yuan, sobbing while asking for help, Fang Yuan ignored it, only sending some mortal Gu and immortal essence to the land spirit, asking it to save itself.

Star Form blessed land was in such straits, the exposed Hu Immortal blessed land was even more out of the question.

Fang Yuan thought of Luo Po Valley.

Or more accurately, the location that Luo Po Valley was previously at.

There was an intense battle at Luo Po Valley, with Feng Jiu Ge leading the Central Continent Gu Immortals to fight against Shadow Sect's Northern Plains branch with Qin Bai Sheng as the leader, they went through an intense battle, with victory going to the Central Continent Gu Immortals in the end.

At Luo Po Valley's original location, there were many Gu Immortals' blessed lands.

“These blessed lands are in Northern Plains, can I go over and take them?”

This was an alluring idea, but Fang Yuan hesitated for a while, and soon after, he gave up on this option as well.

Because this choice carried great risks.

Even though this battle was hidden and the Gu Immortals of Northern Plains did not know about it, Central Continent's ten great ancient sects and Heavenly Court knew about it, as well as Shadow Sect themselves.

After Gu Immortals die, blessed lands or grotto-heavens would be formed outside.

These blessed lands or grotto-heavens contain the resources accumulated by the Gu Immortals over their lifetimes, no matter how affluent a force was, they would try all ways to reclaim these resources.

“Since Central Continent could send people to Northern Plains for investigation of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building's collapse, then they can naturally send others to reclaim those blessed lands.”

“And Shadow Sect too, would want to take these blessed lands back.”

“I did not go there earlier, there is no way I am going there now.”

Fang Yuan's decision was very wise.

Because right now, the person secretly helping Central Continent to reclaim these immortal apertures was the rank eight Gu Immortal Prince Feng Xian!

If Fang Yuan was blindly hopeful and went there on his own, Prince Feng Xian would probably laugh even in his sleep, seeing how Fang Yuan went to him on his own without any effort exerted.

Fang Yuan thought of Eastern Sea next.

Eastern Sea's turbulent flow sea area, at its center, there were islands in bubbles.

One of the islands contained the secluded domain of heaven and earth, City Well, and inside City Well, there were lots of Gu Immortals' blessed lands.

These Gu Immortals were all slammed to death by Fang Yuan using the effect of City Well to amplify giant hand's power. He even went inside these blessed lands at the moment they were placed down, and went inside to scavenge for resources.

The most alluring one was Ding Qi blessed land.

Ding Qi was a blood path rank seven Gu Immortal, he self-detonated before dying, not leaving any resources, Immortal Gu, or soul for Fang Yuan, but his immortal aperture remained.

Even though Fang Yuan could annex his immortal aperture, he did not do so on the spot.

Firstly, Ding Qi blessed land’s land spirit had a difficult requirement for ownership, it needed Fang Yuan to complete the blood path Immortal Gu recipe of ‘Blood Revenge’. If Fang Yuan still had the light of wisdom, he could rapidly complete this. But now, wisdom Gu could not be used, and blood revenge Immortal Gu was less than ten percent complete, if Fang Yuan wanted to complete this Immortal Gu recipe, even with his blood path grandmaster attainment level, he would need to spend a lot of time and effort on it, the cost was not worth the gain.

And secondly, Fang Yuan’s previous cultivation method placed emphasis on potential. He went through tribulations one by one, if he annexed Ding Qi blessed land, it would go against his plan.

But now was different.

Firstly, Fang Yuan did not achieve his goal in this Eastern Sea trip, even though he weakened Ying Wu Xie and gang, he did not kill them once and for all. Fang Yuan had a deep understanding of Ying Wu Xie, their development speed surpassed his, the next time they met, he would be on the defensive.

There was also the variant human alliance, Hei Fan grotto-heaven’s contest, joining Chu Sect, and the Crazed Demon Agreement that was coming soon, his status was getting more complex. Fang Yuan felt trapped inside a vortex, in lots of situations, he could not do what he wanted, the alliance agreements were restricting his freedom.

Times were different now, as the situation continued to change, Fang Yuan realized he too needed to change.

His cultivation experiences in the five hundred years of his previous life gave him keen instinct towards how he should continue his future developments, as well as impending threats.

He had a strong feeling that if he did not make a change, the future was going to be very bleak!

Realizing the sovereign immortal aperture’s special trait in annexing blessed lands was just such an opportunity.

“I am a blood path grandmaster, annexing a rank seven blessed land is not a problem in terms of attainment level. But a smaller immortal aperture cannot devour a bigger one, what does the bigger here mean?”

If it referred to cultivation level, Fang Yuan’s rank six immortal aperture could not annex the rank seven Ding Qi blessed land.

But if it referred to the immortal aperture’s foundation, then the sovereign immortal aperture could definitely devour the rank seven Ding Qi blessed land easily!

Fang Yuan needed an answer to this question.

It was not hard to get, he just needed to try.

“But other than that, there is another problem, the land spirit’s acknowledgment.”

“The acknowledgement of Ding Qi land spirit is quite difficult to get, I can’t satisfy it currently. But if I attempt to use force, the land spirit would be destroyed, and the blessed land would be destroyed as well, creating the winds of assimilation.”

“When these winds of assimilation blow in City Well, will it implicate the other immortal apertures? Will it destroy City Well directly?”

Fang Yuan had thought about this problem back in Eastern Sea.

Thus, he did not forcefully attempt to get those blessed lands.

To destroy the land spirit while keeping the blessed land intact, it would need to absorb a fragment of the immemorial nine heavens.

But only grotto-heavens could absorb fragments of the immemorial nine heavens.

Like Hei Fan grotto-heaven, even though Fang Yuan destroyed the heavenly spirit, it still existed. It was because this grotto-heaven world had absorbed a fragment of the immemorial nine heavens.

But that was not the case for land spirits.

And the turbulent flow sea area was far away in Eastern Sea, taking a journey there and back would use a lot of Fang Yuan’s time. Heaven’s will might even be plotting to prevent Fang Yuan from obtaining City Well.

Fang Yuan thought about it carefully, he found another problem limiting his annexing of immortal apertures.

It was attainment level.

Fang Yuan was not Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, the latter had high attainment levels in every path, he could easily absorb blessed lands into the sovereign immortal aperture.

But Fang Yuan could not.

“Or rather, Shadow Sect refined sovereign immortal fetus Gu in order to devour immortal apertures?”

Fang Yuan realized that if he did not take sovereign immortal fetus Gu, and allowed Spectral Soul to revive.

Then his development would be at an incredibly shocking speed!

He had the most bloodthirsty nature among the venerables, he had many killer moves, after killing Gu Immortals, he could either take their main path’s dao marks and give up on the immortal aperture to raise his dao mark foundation, or annex the immortal aperture and skip calamities and tribulations, resetting the counting of his impending tribulation.

The two methods could be used in conjunction in the most efficient way.

“No wonder Spectral Soul managed to succeed in my previous life!”

“No wonder heaven’s will tried all means possible to send me to the past and stop him.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan’s gaze subconsciously moved towards the south.

Towards the direction of Southern Border.

Fang Yuan knew that the giant dream realm was there, a trace of Spectral Soul's remnant soul was there, it was the target that Ying Wu Xie and the rest were desperately trying to save.

"Attainment level... dream realm... Southern Border!" Fang Yuan's body shook, he suddenly thought of something.

The thoughts in his mind became extremely clear at this moment.

"The cultivation opportunity I need is in Southern Border. It is there..."

Snowy Mountain, first peak.

The refinement path Gu formation was still activated.

Lady Wan Shou was energetic, appearing in front of Ma Hong Yun again.

Ma Hong Yun saw her and his hair stood on end, he screamed: "You are here to shock me again, you want to shock me again!"

"Good that you know." Lady Wan Shou smiled, pushing the lightning ball in her hand towards him.

"Ahhhh!" Ma Hong Yun was twitching from the pain, his eyes rolled back but he did not foam saliva from his mouth.

At the same time, his voice was very clear, if one listened closely, it was rhythmic.

All in all, he lasted for a while before fainting.

"His cultivation level rose again? Also, he lasted thirty percent longer this time against the lightning refinement." Lady Wan Shou frowned as she observed.

From the eyes, nose, and ears, blood was flowing out.

This was the backlash of Gu refinement.

But Lady Wan Shou had experienced it many times, she was used to this backlash. Her healing process was also very rapid and efficient.

"It is a bit troublesome. The more times Ma Hong Yun undergoes lightning refinement, the stronger his resistance, and the more likely this crucial step is to fail. What should I do? Change the refinement method? No! If I change the method now, I will need to change the entire Immortal Gu recipe. Half of the materials we found earlier would be unusable. Snowy Mountain cannot bear such a cost anymore."

Lady Wan Shou sighed to herself, feeling extremely worried.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1188: Crazed Demon Agreement

Some days later.

Northern Plains, Crazed Demon Cave.

“Liu Guan Yi, we have been waiting for you!” Not Immortal came to the first layer, welcoming Fang Yuan and Chu Du.

The three conversed as they got deeper into the cave.

Fang Yuan discovered that the route this time was slightly different from the previous time he came here.

“Are the demonic sounds recently very frequent?” Fang Yuan asked.

“They are getting more frequent now. Thus, our travel route also has to be modified. Once the demonic sounds start, dao marks will go into chaos. Not only will the desolate beasts go crazy, the terrain will also change.” Not Immortal explained.

A moment later, they saw Pang Shan.

Pang Shan woke up from his slumber, his eyes opened slightly: “You are here again, Brother Chu.”

He seemed to have a good relationship with Chu Du.

Next, he looked at Fang Yuan: “Brother Liu, I know about your capabilities, let’s talk in depth after the Crazed Demon Agreement.”

Fang Yuan asked: “How will we establish the Crazed Demon Agreement?”

“We will need to go down to the third last layer, I can’t move easily, I will not go with you.” Pang Shan said vaguely, his explanation was as good as nothing.

“Follow me.” Not Immortal continued to lead the way.

The three immortals continued to go down, the deeper they went, the more turns they had to make, sometimes, the straight distance seemed to be short, but they had to make a long detour.

“Believe me, detours are much faster than walking straight in this place.” Not Immortal smiled.

Chu Du nodded, pointing out to Fang Yuan: “When we get there, don’t be too surprised.”

Fang Yuan felt some curiosity and anticipation.

A while later, through a cavern entrance, Fang Yuan officially stepped into the third last layer of Crazed Demon Cave.

His vision was covered by bright glorious lights.

All sorts of colors were emanated from the rocks, soil, and grass in this place.

Fang Yuan sucked in a deep breath: “This, these are all lights of dao marks! Only quasi-rank nine immortal materials can radiate such lights. The dao marks here are so dense that every piece of soil and rock is a quasi-rank nine immortal material?!”

Not Immortal laughed: “Brother Liu makes sense, but these immortal materials have chaotic dao marks, they cannot be used.”

Chu Du saw Fang Yuan’s shock and smiled: “Back then, when I first came here, I suffered the same shock.”

Not Immortal ended his laughter: “The dao marks here are extremely dense, it is not as simple as just emitting the lights of dao marks! There is almost a state of a battlefield killer move in here, moving here is extremely difficult, Brother Liu, why don’t you try?”

Fang Yuan quickly shook his head: “Not Immortal, since you say this, I will believe you. No need to try.”

Not Immortal looked at Chu Du, smiling: “Brother Liu is smarter than a certain person. Back then, he refused to believe it, he wanted to charge in, I could not change his mind and in the end, he suffered a lot.”

Chu Du rubbed his nose, admitting to Fang Yuan: “Not Immortal is talking about me, I spent three years to recover from that injury. Don’t look down at the dao marks here. This place is extremely dangerous, each step you take is precarious! I’ll teach you a secret, try to get close to the dao marks of your own path, that can make your traveling easier, and face the least obstruction.”

Not Immortal nodded: “That is true, I am a rule path Gu Immortal, I have to try walking on places with more rule path dao marks.”

“And I cultivate strength path, I need to get close to the strength path dao marks, thus, in the following journey, we cannot help you, you have to walk on your own, Brother Liu.” Chu Du said with concern.

Fang Yuan nodded.

Not Immortal stepped forward first: “I will go first, Brother Liu, watch carefully.”

Fang Yuan concentrated as he looked.

Not Immortal’s every step was very vigilant, the first ten steps were very easy, he could move calmly, but after ten steps, it became difficult. After twenty steps, his movements were stiff, it was like a formless force was weighing on him. After thirty steps, Not Immortal was perspiring profusely, at the forty-second step, he stopped for the first time, breathing roughly as he turned to ask Fang Yuan: “Brother Liu, did you manage to watch that?”

Chu Du laughed: “Not Immortal! Stop acting, you are clearly unable to continue, you still tried to ask Brother Liu a question to conceal the fact that you stopped.”

Not Immortal was exposed, he was embarrassed and snapped: “Oh Chu Du, I want to see how many steps you can take? Can you go as far as me!”

Chu Du snorted: “Would I be afraid of you, watch closely!”

Before he finished his words, he took large steps forward on the dao marks in the area.

Initially, his speed was faster than Not Immortal, he moved like a dragon or tiger, Not Immortal’s expression was dark.

But soon, Chu Du took a wrong step and the light of dao marks below him burst out, Chu Du grunted, his body shook as he spat out a mouthful of blood on the spot.

He was heavily injured, his momentum was lost but he did not stop, Chu Du endured his injuries as he continued to walk step by step, as slow as a snail.

Eventually, he took thirty-eight and thirty-nine steps, by the fortieth step, he could no longer continue.

His final burst of strength was used up.

He stopped.

“I could not compare to you after all.” Chu Du wiped the blood from his mouth, sighing.

Not Immortal was very shocked, he stared at Chu Du with wide eyes: “Domination Immortal, you actually improved so much since last time! I am ashamed, I have stayed in Crazed Demon Cave for so long, I have walked along this place hundreds of times more than you, I have such a huge advantage but I only managed to take forty-two steps.”

Chu Du laughed: “Alright, don’t flatter me. I know you did not use your full strength, you are trying to salvage my face?”

Not Immortal did not deny it, he chuckled: “Even so, your improvement is beyond my imagination. You are truly a genius at strength path cultivation, Domination Immortal... indeed, as the saying goes, titles are never wrong.”

Chu Du laughed heartily, waving his hand: “Alright, let’s stop the flattery, next, we will see Brother Liu’s performance.”

The two immortals turned around and watched Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan nodded: “Don’t laugh at me when I embarrass myself.”

“Brother Liu, relax, this is your first time here, you should focus on the feeling of walking here, don’t be obsessed over the number of steps.” Not Immortal said.

Chu Du laughed instead: “Haha, don’t worry brother Liu, I will remember your pathetic state later. I walked twenty-two steps when I first came here, if you cannot beat me, I will laugh at you forever. Haha!”

Fang Yuan laughed too, it was a harmonious scene.

But in truth, he understood internally: “These two are purposely probing me.”

“Even though Chu Du recommended me, they are not confident in my ability to explore this place, thus they created this situation.”

“They are working together, purposely asking me to walk alone, they want to probe my foundation.”

“If I perform too poorly, and am of no help to them, they might not even set the Crazed Demon Agreement with me!”

Involving Limitless Demon Venerable and the secret of eternal life, Fang Yuan made up his mind to put up a good show, to display his strength for Not Immortal and Chu Du.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with a mysterious light, he breathed in deeply and firmly stood on the ground as he took a step forward.

He chose the route with the most transformation path dao marks.

But at the next moment, Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

“Haha.” Chu Du observed his expression and laughed at the same time as Fang Yuan’s changing expression: “Brother Liu, watching alone is useless, can you feel the pressure already?”

Fang Yuan felt extremely mystified on the inside, but he showed no flaws on his expression.

He did not answer Chu Du, he kept quiet and continued walking forward.

One step, two steps, three steps... like this, Fang Yuan took more than ten steps forward.

Fang Yuan’s weird feeling intensified: “What is going on? Why do I feel no obstruction? I have already taken more than ten steps, it feels like I am walking on normal ground.”

This was not normal.

Fang Yuan soon guessed that the situation was caused by his sovereign immortal body.

“Chu Du and Not Immortal face pressure because of the conflicting dao marks. There are a lot of dao marks here, while the Gu Immortals also have a lot of dao marks in their bodies.”

“So even though they took one step at a time, walking on paths with rule path or strength path dao marks, the surrounding dao marks are nearby and will still pressure and reject them.”

“But I am different, the dao marks here are not immortal killer moves, they have no offensive power, they cannot influence me!”

“Of course, this is just my guess, the truth might not be like this.”

Fang Yuan thought as he continued walking, taking a few more steps ahead.

Not Immortal and Chu Du’s expressions changed mildly.

“This Liu Guan Yi is so strong!” Not Immortal was extremely shocked.

“He is almost at the twentieth step, he can still move so calmly, the first time I came, every step was difficult, I had to exert all my effort, it was a pathetic sight!” Chu Du recalled his own experience, compared to the situation in front of him, his pride and self confidence was taking a huge beating.

A thought appeared in his mind uncontrollably: “Don’t tell me, this Liu Guan Yi is an even greater genius in cultivating transformation path compared to me and strength path? He has even higher attainment level?”

Actually, Fang Yuan was trying his best to conceal himself.

He pretended to be panting, like he was very tired.

But his acting was in reference to Chu Du and Not Immortal earlier. They had gone through this many times, they were experienced, they could maintain their composure.

Even though Fang Yuan showed a pathetic sight, he was just slightly weaker than them.

Eventually, Fang Yuan stopped at the twentieth step, smiling: “I am about the same as you, Brother Chu.”

Chu Du looked at Fang Yuan with deep meaning: “Brother Liu, you have not gone all out.”

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly: “I am barely holding on, if I continue, I will start spitting out blood!”

Chu Du’s smile was even more bitter than his: “I will not lie to Brother Liu, the first time I came here, I started spitting out blood at the tenth step.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1189: Huge Rise in Cultivation Level

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, he realized that his performance had gone overboard.

But this was just a small mistake, it was not a problem.

“Let’s continue moving, we can set the alliance agreement before talking more!” Not Immortal smiled, his attitude was much warmer than before.

Fang Yuan’s earlier performance made Not Immortal’s evaluation of him rise by several levels.

The three traveled in the land of dao marks with much difficulty.

As they moved forward, dao marks were denser, the obstruction was greater.

Of course, this was referring to Not Immortal and Chu Du. But Fang Yuan also faced a lot of difficulty, having to pretend he was having a tough time, so that Chu Du and Not Immortal would not be suspicious of him.

The three immortals walked and rested, the short journey took them fifteen minutes.

Eventually, they came to a rock.

“A newcomer?” The rock suddenly spoke, as smoke rose up from the rock before vanishing.

The rock had turned into a skinny and short Gu Immortal.

He had a goatee, he was at the height of Fang Yuan’s knee, and his tiny eyes were shining brilliantly.

“This is one of the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics, wisdom path Gu Immortal Secret Schemer.” Chu Du introduced at an appropriate timing.

Fang Yuan gasped in his mind: “This person is actually Secret Schemer!”

He concealed his expression perfectly, acting like he had heard it for the first time, immediately greeting: “Hello, I am Liu Guan Yi of transformation path.”

A day later.

“Brother Liu, Brother Chu, you are leaving so soon, aren’t you staying for a few more days?” At the first layer of Crazed Demon Cave, Not Immortal tried to ask them to stay.

“No.” Chu Du smiled bitterly and rejected: “You also know about Northern Plains’ situation, I recently created Chu Du and allied with Bai Zu tribe. Right now, the righteous path is targeting our lone cultivator sect, they cannot stand us, they are gathering members to deal with us.”

Not Immortal sighed: “These are external worldly affairs, what is there that you cannot part with. Fame and reputation, will they still remain after death? In <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, after Verdant Great Sun died, his soul went to the door of life and death, he stayed in pacifying soul lake as reputation Gu left him. Only eternal life is the worthy goal and pursuit of us Gu Immortals.”

Chu Du had a determined expression: “I will make sure strength path flourishes, this is a promise I made to someone, if I cannot achieve it, I will not live in peace!”

Fang Yuan could not help but look at Chu Du.

This was the first time he had heard Chu Du say his aspiration.

Chu Du’s expression of sincerity did not seem to be fake.

“It seems that there is a story behind Chu Du cultivating strength path.” Fang Yuan was thinking about this, when Not Immortal asked him.

“Brother Liu, you have a lot of potential, why don’t you stay here?”

Fang Yuan smiled: “I came here this time to sign the Crazed Demon Agreement. Now that it is done, I have other matters to settle.”

Not Immortal actually thought more highly of Fang Yuan.

Mainly because Fang Yuan’s performance this time left a deep impression on him.

Fang Yuan was more confident than Not Immortal in this aspect.

He felt that he could even run freely in the third last layer’s dao mark landscape.

But if he did that, it would be too shocking, the jaws of the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics would drop!

“I have not seen the bottom and second last layers yet, I cannot assess them. But the third last layer is not a problem. Derivation Gu is at the bottom layer, but with the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics guarding it, I cannot act alone.” Fang Yuan felt it was somewhat of a pity.

One day, he would return to Crazed Demon Cave, using his advantage to explore the place.

But now was not the time.

He had to raise his cultivation level, that was the most important matter.

As for derivation Gu, even if Fang Yuan obtained it, what use would it have? It was a rank nine Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan thought back to wisdom Gu, he could neither use it, nor would he know how to, it would be a huge burden if he actually obtained it!

“Other than eternal life, everything else is temporary. Brother Liu, how long would you need?” Not Immortal asked. He did not want to let a useful person like Fang Yuan go.

Fang Yuan’s gaze shined, looking at Chu Du: “Actually, I am a member of Chu Sect, right now the Huang Jin tribes are attacking Chu Sect, I need to help them.”

Chu Du knew that Fang Yuan was using him as an excuse, but hearing this, he still felt warmed internally.

“Sigh, you guys... never mind.” Not Immortal saw that he could not convince Fang Yuan and gave up.

Fang Yuan and Chu Du said goodbye to Not Immortal, before flying towards the sky.

On the way back, Fang Yuan asked Chu Du about the situation in Northern Plains, as well as the difficulties Chu Sect was currently facing.

Fang Yuan had also undergone the Crazed Demon Agreement, his relationship with Chu Du had deepened again.

Chu Du did not conceal it from him, he smiled bitterly: “Right now, I feel great pressure too. Even though Chu Sect allied with Bai Zu tribe, we are against an enemy with tens or hundreds of times our strength! But they are not unified and have their own territories, they can only deploy limited Gu Immortals. And they are in the righteous path, they talk about rules and reputation... we still have a chance.”

“When are they coming?” Fang Yuan asked the crucial question.

Chu Du chuckled: “Far from now. Even though they are spreading news everywhere and saying harsh words, they are still far from setting off. These Huang Jin tribes have their own conflicts and disagreements, they need to consider a lot of things, things are not as simple for them as us demonic path members.”

Fang Yuan nodded.

Chu Du’s words made him gain even clearer insight and analysis of the current situation in Northern Plains.

Chu Du looked at Fang Yuan: “This might sound presumptuous, but Brother Liu, your transformation path has already reached great grandmaster attainment level?”

“What? Not yet.” Fang Yuan replied.

“Even if you are not a great grandmaster, you are at least quasi-great grandmaster.” Chu Du said with much self confidence.

Fang Yuan laughed, asking instead: “How did you know?”

Chu Du chuckled: “I deduced it from your performance with the dao marks. The higher your attainment level, the easier it is to explore Crazed Demon Cave. Not Immortal was shocked by my improvement, that was because I had recently attained a qualitative improvement in my strength path attainment level.”

Chu Du stared at Fang Yuan, his gaze contained deep meaning.

Fang Yuan knew that he was trying to ask about the killer move immortal tribulation tempering aperture.

After all, Chu Du was only using calamity beckoning Immortal Gu to gain some benefits from Fang Yuan.

The core method that could draw out Reckless Savage’s true meaning had been kept secret by Fang Yuan, he did not reveal any of it.

Fang Yuan knew what Chu Du was trying to ask, but he pretended not to know, saying: “Oh, I see.”

After saying those three words, there was no follow up, they continued traveling quietly.

Disappointment flashed deep in Chu Du’s eyes.

He had been desiring immortal tribulation tempering aperture all along, but in this situation, that was no longer the focus.

Thus, Chu Du asked very vaguely, he knew that a clever person like Fang Yuan would understand what he was trying to say.

But Fang Yuan replied with three words — oh, I see.

Chu Du immediately understood, Fang Yuan had rejected him.

Like how Chu Du asked very subtly, Fang Yuan’s answer was the same.

“Oh, I see.” It meant that Fang Yuan’s method to draw out true meaning was not for sale, he rejected a transaction.

“I can only forget about it for now.” Chu Du felt it was a pity, but he was very rational. In this situation, he had to deepen his cooperation with Fang Yuan, he could not worsen their relationship.

Fang Yuan did not return to Hei Fan grotto-heaven with Chu Du.

Halfway through the journey, he parted with Chu Du.

Fang Yuan flew towards the southwest direction, some days later, he landed on an ordinary looking mound.

“According to Xue Song Zi’s memories, this is the place.” Fang Yuan looked around, confirming that he had arrived at the right place.

He started to activate his Immortal Gu, after a while, the immortal killer move activated successfully, and he found the location of a blessed land accurately.

His Immortal Gu and immortal killer move were borrowed from Heavenly Lord Bai Zu. For this, he paid a huge price.

However, it was completely worth it for Fang Yuan.

“Found it!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined, he summoned the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle carried Fang Yuan and flew in a circle a few times, before piercing through space and bringing him into a new blessed land.

The owner of this blessed land had cultivated earth path during his life, thus, this blessed land was covered in black rotten mud.

Many small mud monsters were rolling around here.

From time to time, a desolate beast giant mud monster would jump up from the soil, like a huge black tidal wave.

A small mudman with a green strand of grass coming from its head floated and came to Fang Yuan.

“Bababa.” The small mudman spoke, talking to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan listened and understood what it was saying.

He could not help but look at the mud below him, muttering: “To become the owner of the blessed land, I need to defeat five desolate beast mud monsters at once? Heh, easy.”

The acknowledgement requirement of this earth path blessed land was difficult for most rank sixes.

But for Fang Yuan, it was very simple.

Fang Yuan was not unfamiliar with earth path, in fact, due to his previous life’s experiences, his earth path attainment level was at master level.

After annexing this earth path blessed land, his Mini Western Desert gained a huge swamp.

For the following month, Fang Yuan went around everywhere, finding blessed lands and annexing them.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle displayed immense value, Fang Yuan easily got into blessed lands to explore them.

The information of these blessed lands was basically obtained from the Gu Immortals souls that Fang Yuan captured.

Dong Fang Chang Fan, Zheng Ling, Xue Song Zi, and the nine Gu Immortals in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, as well as the countless Gu Immortal souls from the turbulent flow sea area, and of course, Hei Cheng who was alive.

Counting them all, Fang Yuan had a large number of Gu Immortal captives!

These captives had been soul searched many times, he obtained all of their intel.

Fang Yuan’s cultivation level rose tremendously, he skipped calamities and tribulations time and time again. The space and resources in the sovereign immortal aperture also increased each time he succeeded, rising time and time again.

Fang Yuan had long since passed his first heavenly tribulation.

By the time Fang Yuan returned to Lang Ya blessed land, in this short period of time, he had already passed two heavenly tribulations, he was a rank six Gu Immortal who was only three earthly calamities away from his third heavenly tribulation!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1190: Blood Plain Martial Competition

Northern Plains, Feng Xian grotto-heaven.

Rank eight Gu Immortal Prince Feng Xian was silently sitting with his eyes shut.

Flames were burning around him, like clothes fluttering in the sky, they were dazzling and brilliant, dancing like dragons or snakes, extraordinary.

Right now, Prince Feng Xian opened his mouth, spitting out small pearls of flame.

The pearls of flame grew with the wind, in a breath of time, they expanded to become orange-red fireballs with the size of a baby’s head.

The fireballs circled around Prince Feng Xian’s body, flying up and down, left and right.

Next, Prince Feng Xian opened his mouth again, spitting out another pearl of flame.

A while later, Prince Feng Xian already had eight fireballs around him, they were flying around, crashing into one another, they moved in a profound trail, circling around Prince Feng Xian endlessly.

Right at this time, Prince Feng Xian suddenly opened his eyes.

An unbelievably sharp light burst out from his eyes, it was extremely dazzling.

Bam bam bam...

The eight fireballs self-detonated one by one, turning into flickers of flames, dissipating.

“I failed again, I did not manage to deduce any trace of Fang Yuan.” Prince Feng Xian’s eyes were shining, he stared at the fireballs that were gone.

If his deduction succeeded, these flames would instantly draw Fang Yuan’s location, as well as what he was doing.

Evidently, Prince Feng Xian had failed once more.

He learned nothing.

“I am not a wisdom path Gu Immortal after all, I was just mimicking wisdom path, I cannot deduce Fang Yuan’s true location.” Prince Feng Xian sighed.

He was tasked to capture Fang Yuan, but the problem was, he had hidden himself too deeply. Most of the time, he was inside a blessed land and did not come out. As long as blessed lands and grotto-heavens did not absorb fragments of the nine heavens, they would be a completely different world isolated from the five regions, even Fairy Zi Wei cannot deduce anything.

Prince Feng Xian primarily cultivated fire path, he naturally could not.

Of course, Fang Yuan would go outside as well.

But he had familiar face and dark limit Immortal Gu. Together with his dark path dao marks, Fang Yuan could conceal his traces every time he traveled.

“Lord Feng Xian, Gong tribe is here, they want to meet you.” At this moment, a female Gu Immortal dressed in yellow came to the hall and reported.

She was beautiful like a flower, she had watery eyes and peach-like lips, she was one of Prince Feng Xian’s two female Gu Immortal attendants — Le Yao.

“Gong tribe is here? Hmph.” Prince Feng Xian frowned: “Not meeting them.”

“But Gong tribe’s Gu Immortal brought the Longevity Edict.” Le Yao hesitated.

Prince Feng Xian smiled lightly: “So what if they have the Longevity Edict? It can control the Huang Jin bloodline, but I am not one of them.”

Le Yao pouted: “But lord, did you forget, we are now spies inside Northern Plains. You are still a son-in-law of Gong Tribe on the surface, an external supreme elder. If you defy the Longevity Edict openly, would it not be a problem?”

“Hahaha.” Prince Feng Xian laughed heartily: “Le Yao, you are only half right. Longevity Heaven is not to be underestimated, it is a rank nine grotto-heaven, it has Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s foundation, and is unfathomably deep. It is simply like Central Continent’s Heavenly Court in Northern Plains! But this time, Longevity Heaven sent orders to unite the Huang Jin tribes, all of the righteous path super forces are to attack Bai Zu tribe. This is a unified battle of the Huang Jin tribes against outside forces. The collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the creation of Bai Zu tribe, as well as Chu Sect, have stepped on Longevity Heaven’s bottom line constantly. This time, Longevity Heaven will definitely not ask for my help, Yao Huang is their only choice!”

Prince Feng Xian analyzed it perfectly, Le Yao’s eyes shone, but she did not understand: “Then why did Gong tribe’s Gu Immortal bring the Longevity Edict here personally?”

Prince Feng Xian’s eyes shined with cold light: “These people from Gong tribe are trying to falsely use that authority, to use the Longevity Edict and deceive me into helping them. You also know about Gong tribe’s objective, they are still dreaming of becoming the number one righteous path force.”

“So that’s it. Then we will not meet them!” Le Yao smiled, showing her pearly white teeth, she had a beautiful smile, like the image of spring.

It was all according to what Prince Feng Xian had analyzed, several days later, the Longevity Edict was passed on to all of the Huang Jin tribes, eventually ending up in Yao Huang’s hands.

Yao Huang used his old hands to receive the Longevity Edict, sighing deeply to himself.

“This Longevity Edict still ended up with me after all.”

To one who heard him mumbling, it may have seemed that Yao Huang was aware all along.

The truth was that it was an obvious situation.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was a rank eight Gu Immortal, if the Northern Plains righteous path forces wanted to deal with Bai Zu tribe, they would need to have a rank eight Gu Immortal to deal with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

On the surface, out of the rank eight Gu Immortals in Northern Plains, other than Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, Old Ancestor Xue Hu was in the demonic path, Five Elements Grandmaster was a lone immortal and had invaded Longevity Heaven, he was already trapped inside Calamity Luck Altar. Only Prince Feng Xian and Yao Huang were left.

Prince Feng Xian’s identity was the biggest problem.

He did not have the Huang Jin bloodline, he was just a son-in-law of Gong tribe!

If they relied on Prince Feng Xian and defeated Bai Zu tribe, would that not prove Five Elements Grandmaster’s point? The great Huang Jin bloodline, descendants of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, could not rely on themselves to defeat a strong foe?

Thus, for Longevity Heaven, there was only one person they could choose, the rank eight refinement path Gu Immortal Yao Huang!

In fact, Yao Huang really did not want to involve himself in this mess.

Currently, he was very busy trying to refine resurrection from the dead Immortal Gu!

He was severely interrupted, Yao Huang was in a bad mood.

Ping.

A soft sound echoed.

Yao Huang threw the Longevity Edict onto the table casually.

“I should go talk to Heavenly Lord Bai Zu first.” Yao Huang sighed, storing his immortal aperture and going to the outside world of Northern Plains, flying into white heaven.

A moment later, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, who received Yao Huang’s invitation, hesitated for a moment, before deciding to meet with Yao Huang and discuss the matter.

The two rank eight Gu Immortals met in white heaven and talked in secret.

In fact, they were friends.

Long ago, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had considered creating Bai Zu tribe, thus, as a lone cultivator, he got very close to Yao Huang.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu wanted to be in the righteous path, but there were only two righteous path Gu Immortals, Prince Feng Xian did not originate from the righteous path, he stayed by himself and his relationship with Gong tribe was not good.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu could only have a goal of getting close to Yao Huang.

Afterwards, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang had fought against Old Ancestor Xue Hu together. Even though they lost and caused Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s reputation to surge, this matter had brought Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang closer together.

Thus, when they met, there was no animosity or anger.

“Friend, what do you think?” Yao Huang smiled and asked.

“Sigh, it has gotten to this point, I’ll tell you the truth, I did not expect this.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu waved his hand, he also felt very gloomy about the situation.

His motive was very simple, he wanted to take down Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

But to think that Chu Du's battle strength and wits exceeded Heavenly Lord Bai Zu's expectations, it caused the situation to change and worsen, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu could not back out.

Among which, the rumors and threats regarding Heavenly Lord Bai Zu in Northern Plains' Gu Immortal world were all spread by Chu Du and his subordinates.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was aware of this.

Anyone with a functioning brain knew.

But now, in fact, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and the culprit of the rumors, Chu Du had allied, to deal with the righteous path forces that he did not want to face.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was also very helpless in the progression of this matter.

Yao Huang saw Heavenly Lord Bai Zu's expression and deeply understood his feelings, Yao Huang pointed and smiled: "Old friend, do you understand now? It is not easy to be the leader of a righteous path force, in many situations, even as rank eight Gu Immortals, we cannot act freely."

"I used to envy your lone cultivator status, I also urged you not to create any righteous path force, do you feel it now?"

"I feel it. But I have worked hard for so long, it was not easy to get such results, I am not willing to give up just yet." Heavenly Lord Bai Zu said openly.

Yao Huang was silent, before saying: "I do not want to interfere in this matter either, but I cannot help it, Longevity Heaven's token is already in my hands."

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu sighed deeply, he felt gladness but also sorrow in his heart.

He was glad that his relationship with Yao Huang was close enough, but the sad thing was, he and Yao Huang were friends, but they had to fight. Even as rank eight Gu Immortals, they could not decide this for themselves.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu sighed deeply: "Then we can only fight now."

Yao tribe waved his hand: "This is an eventual matter, we are not in a rush now. Even though I am in charge of this matter, Yao tribe is just one of the righteous path forces, I still have Longevity Heaven overseeing it. They are watching patiently now, even if we fight, we cannot resolve this matter. In my opinion, we should let these juniors fight first, and rile them up."

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu pondered and nodded: "Then in that case, let's decide a date for a martial competition."

"Alright." Yao Huang thought: "Blood Plain is a good choice of location, how about there?"

"That is good." Heavenly Lord Bai Zu agreed instantly.

The two Gu Immortals talked for a while, deciding the matter of the Blood Plain martial competition, before leaving white heaven and going back to their tribes.

They gave their respective instructions on the Blood Plain martial competition.

At once, Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world went into commotion again.

A new storm was brewing, it faintly swept through the entire Northern Plains Gu Immortal world.

The Gu Immortals from the Huang Jin tribes were rubbing their hands together in anticipation, they felt that they had sufficient strength to suppress the allied forces of Bai Zu tribe and Chu Sect, they had high morale.

In terms of foundation, the allied forces of Chu Sect and Bai Zu tribe could not match the alliance of the righteous path forces, but they could seek help.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was from the lone cultivator faction, while Chu Du was a famous expert in the demonic path!

There was still some time until the competition. News of the Blood Plain martial competition had spread, even Central Continent and the other regions heard of it.

Both sides were gathering strength, the righteous path Huang Jin tribes were choosing carefully, only picking the elites, while Bai Zu tribe and Chu Sect started recruiting for experts to help them, making great preparations.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1191: Begging

Central Continent, deep in Earth Abyss.

Delicious wine and food was set out in the garden.

“Come, Brother Shi, I have heard that you like delicious wine. I have purposely looked for these wines for you to taste.” Gu Immortal Yang Feng sat upright as he stretched out his arm towards his esteemed guest.

This guest had short white hair and shining golden eyes with sharp light in them, he wore a tight martial uniform and had a blue silver belt, his forearms and knees had dazzling armor.

He had broad shoulders and a slim waist, he was emitting a valiant aura. But he was half-leaning on the wall and had a casual posture, it lifted a bit of the pressure that he was emitting.

Gu Immortal Yang Feng was a rank seven transformation path Gu Immortal, an expert in Ancient Soul Sect of the ten great ancient sects, but compared to his guest, he was inferior in fame.

Because this guest was Shi Lei, he cultivated earth path primarily and transformation path secondarily, he was at the peak of rank seven, he was an expert of Central Continent known as the Immortal Monkey King!

“Then I will not stand on ceremony.” Shi Lei laughed, he stretched out his arm, lifting the wine vat on the table.

Breaking the seal, the smell of liquor burst out, it felt like an intense flame had started raging.

Instantly, in the huge garden, it was filled with the smell of thick alcohol.

The alcohol was red in color, the vapor gathered around the vat, resembling a bright cloud of flames.

Shi Lei saw this and became joyful, praising: “Good wine! So this is the legendary red emperor wine. Brother Yang Feng, you could actually get your hands on this, you are quite impressive.”

Gu Immortal Yang Feng laughed loudly: “I’ll not hide it from Brother Shi, I paid a huge price to obtain it from Ancient Soul Sect’s treasury. Come to speak of it, this was thanks to our ancestor. Three hundred thousand years ago, a Gu Immortal from our sect became friends with a Gu Immortal of Eastern Sea, Wine Emperor, during the Gu refinement path convention, they competed in refining Gu and agreed that whoever won would obtain the loser’s creation. They fought for eighty-one days, having their respective victories, they were closely matched. This red emperor wine was created by Wine Emperor, he had lost it to our ancestor.”

Ancient Soul Sect of the ten great ancient sects had ancient in its name, true to its name, the sect was very old, having the longest history among the ten great ancient sects.

Three hundred thousand years ago, that was the Medieval Antiquity Era. Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable appeared in succession during this era. A female Gu Immortal, Shui Ni, founded water path and built Spirit Affinity House, it was also during this era.

“Oh?” Shi Lei was intrigued: “Wine Emperor, I know this person, he was a food path rank eight expert, he was very famous in human history. His entire life’s effort was in the creation of his three sovereign five emperor wines. Legend says that by combining these eight wines, one can obtain the rank eight liquor worm Immortal Gu. Using this Gu, one can turn rank eight white litchi immortal essence into rank nine yellow apricot immortal essence. After this person died, he left his inheritance behind. Currently, there is the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal Zui Xian Weng, who became the one hundred and thirty-seventh inheritor.”

“Brother Shi, you are so knowledgeable, I am impressed. Cheers!” Yang Feng raised his wine cup.

Shi Lei waved his hand instead: “Drinking with a cup is not satisfying enough, let’s drink from the vats directly.”

“Okay, Brother Shi, you are very direct, I will do the same.” Yang Feng patted the table, replying.

But Shi Lei had just touched the vat when his movements paused, his expression changed as he looked outside.

An information path Immortal Gu had appeared in the sky above the garden, it was flying around but did not land.

Shi Lei’s golden eyes shone: “This is an Immortal Gu from my sect, Brother Yang, please let it in.”

This garden was not normal, it was exquisitely built, grand with white jade tiles, it was oozing with cold air, there were faint dragon roars heard occasionally, this was Ancient Soul Sect’s Immortal Gu House, Frost Dragon

Manor!

Yang Feng manipulated the Immortal Gu House, opening a path for the information path Immortal Gu to fly towards Shi Lei.

After inspecting it, Shi Lei’s expression changed slightly.

Yang Feng could not ask about the sect matters, he raised his cup and savored the red emperor wine.

To think that Shi Lei took the initiative: “Northern Plains Gu Immortals are indeed battle maniacs, Hei tribe was just destroyed, and now they are starting to fight again. This time, the commotion is even bigger. All the Huang Jin tribes are ganging up to deal with the newly established alliance of Chu Sect and Bai Zu tribe.”

“Chu Sect?” Yang Feng was confused.

“This is a newly created sect, do you know about Northern Plains’ Chu Du?”

“I know a little, a strength path Gu Immortal, known as Domination Immortal.”

“That’s right, he created Chu Sect. This person is not to be underestimated, he used Hei Fan grotto-heaven to forcefully resist Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s invasion. He even nurtured many strength path Gu Immortals secretly, he has quite a force.”

Yang Feng frowned, after absorbing this information, he said: “Strength path is like the setting sun, it is nothing much. But this Chu Sect is probably the first sect in Northern Plains, this Chu Du is so daring!”

“That’s right.” Shi Lei said: “This is a good show to watch. Both sides have agreed to hold a martial competition. Hehe, Northern Plains is really exciting, they are fighting all the time, why was I not born in Northern Plains.”

“Cough, cough.”

Shi Lei patted his own head: “Oh, I nearly forgot. Heavenly Court has orders, we are to go and attack Star Form blessed land now.”

“Why, Heavenly Court has already confirmed that Fang Yuan will not come?” Yang Feng asked in surprise.

As it turned out, after Ying Wu Xie and the rest escaped from Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei had never given up on searching for Fang Yuan’s traces.

Fang Yuan’s true body was not exposed yet, even Prince Feng Xian could not make any progress. But using some clues and her immense capabilities, Fairy Zi Wei managed to forcefully deduce the existence of Star Form blessed land.

Star Form blessed land was inside Earth Abyss, it was in Ancient Soul Sect’s territory.

Fairy Zi Wei specially asked Gu Immortal Shi Lei to complete a task.

Shi Lei was a supreme elder of Combat Immortal Sect, Ancient Soul Sect sent Yang Feng to cooperate with Shi Lei.

Shi Lei was following orders, according to Fairy Zi Wei’s plan, he was waiting in ambush. The moment Fang Yuan returned to Star Form blessed land, he would capture him immediately.

But after waiting for so long, Fang Yuan did not even appear once!

Not long ago, Star Form blessed land faced calamity, Fang Yuan made up his mind and ignored it.

Fairy Zi Wei noticed Fang Yuan’s determination and deduced that if Star Form blessed land was kept intact, it would be of much help to Fang Yuan in the future.

Thus, she decided to go ahead and order Shi Lei to destroy Star Form blessed land.

Spirit Affinity House.

Lake Heart Mountain.

Feng Jin Huang’s accommodations.

“Senior sister, you are amazing, you could refine even this type of Gu!” Qin Juan held the Gu with both hands as she cried out excitedly.

Feng Jin Huang had snowy skin, her eyebrows were long and golden, her lips curled up as she smiled: “This is nothing much.”

She had dream wings Immortal Gu, her refinement path attainment was now grandmaster level. Refining a rank three mortal Gu was really nothing much.

“Senior, senior sister, oh no!” At this time, a Gu Master ran over with a flustered look on her chubby face.

Qin Juan was unhappy at her demeanor: “Sun Yao, you are an elite disciple of Spirit Affinity House, how can you be so panicky.”

Feng Jin Huang smiled: “No need to worry, I am here. Tell me, what happened?”

Sun Yao breathed in deeply as she said: “That, that Zhao Lian Yun is coming!”

“What, Zhao Lian Yun?” Qin Juan’s expression changed, she looked at Feng Jin Huang worriedly: “Zhao Lian Yun is an otherworldly demon, she has also inherited Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s true inheritance, since she joined the sect, she had been your opponent. Zhao Lian Yun wants to compete with senior sister over the next generation fairy position of Spirit Affinity House, why is she coming here to find you?”

Feng Jin Huang’s smile gradually faded: “I am not sure either, go, let’s meet her and ask, wouldn’t that answer our questions?”

The three left the room, meeting a girl.

This girl was dressed in white, like a flower by the lake, she had long black silky hair with a worried look between her eyebrows, she had clear skin and pupils like they were fused with the night sky, expressing worry and anxiety.

Such beauty was comparable to Feng Jin Huang, it was Zhao Lian Yun!

“Junior sister Zhao, I wonder what business you have with me?” Feng Jin Huang was the first to ask.

Zhao Lian Yun hesitated for a moment, determination shone in her eyes.

Plop.

At the next moment, she knelt down.

Qin Juan and Sun Yao did not expect this, they gasped in shock.

Feng Jin Huang was also quite shocked: “Junior sister Zhao, why are you doing this?”

“I really have no other alternatives. Please, please save Ma Hong Yun!” Zhao Lian Yun said, as tears flowed down her smooth cheeks.

“Ma Hong Yun, who is he? He asked you to come and beg me? Come, you can get up and tell me, don’t kneel.” Feng Jin Huang quickly walked forward, stretching out her arms to help Zhao Lian Yun stand up.

She had the magnanimity of a senior sister.

Even though she and Zhao Lian Yun were fiercely competing for the position of fairy, now that Zhao Lian Yun was begging her, Feng Jin Huang did not look down on her, she offered to help her up instead.

But Zhao Lian Yun did not get up, she shook off Feng Jin Huang’s hands, sobbing: “Right now, the only one who can help me is you, senior sister Feng Jin Huang!”

...

Southern Border, Gu Yue village.

Fang Yuan clenched his fists, gritting his teeth, he said to the two people sitting in front: “Uncle, aunt, you have already obtained the inheritance my parents left. Right now, I need some primeval stones, can’t you help me?”

Aunt snorted, saying shrilly: “That is not right, we did not take your parents’ inheritance, they are with your brother. Your brother has A grade aptitude, he has a far better future than you. I believe that your parents would do this too if they were still alive.”

“Oh Fang Yuan.” Uncle said in a calm and slow manner: “I know what you are thinking, you want primeval stones to buy Gu refinement materials and refine Gu. But do you know how hard it is to refine Gu? How big the risks are? You, oh, you are simply too young. Don’t bear such unrealistic thoughts, just do your part properly. With your C grade aptitude, stop dreaming and live your life realistically.”

It was winter now.

Inside the warm room, Fang Yuan’s heart was ice cold.

He had been standing on the spot, after a short silence, he said: “I understand now.”

He turned around and walked out.

Behind him, aunt criticized sarcastically: “Leaving like this? Not even saying goodbye, he is truly polite!”

Uncle was smiling, saying in a fake tone: “Oh Fang Yuan, don’t be so anxious to leave, stay for dinner.”

Fang Yuan did not stop, he walked even faster with firmer steps.

From his uncle and aunt’s place, he went towards the streets with many people.

It was late at night now.

Even though there was no snow, the cold air gave Fang Yuan a bone chilling feeling.

Next, he looked up at the sky, clenching his fists.

In the sky, countless stars were shining brightly.

Starlight reflected in Fang Yuan’s pupils, his eyes seemed to be shining with life.

“Since I transmigrated to this world, I must achieve something in life, so what if I have C grade aptitude, I can definitely succeed!”

Fang Yuan did not see that behind him, a figure was quietly tailing him, watching all the events unfold.

The stars in the night sky were shining even more brightly, this figure’s appearance became clear.

It was another Fang Yuan.

But this Fang Yuan’s appearance had changed completely, experience and maturity was also deep in his gaze.

Under his supervision, the entire night sky, the entire dream realm faded, as if there was a thick layer of fog in the sky, gradually, everything vanished.

In the real world, Fang Yuan opened his eyes slowly, muttering: “To think... that I could re-experience what happened in my previous life.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1192: Concession

Central Continent, Spirit Affinity House.

“Zhao Lian Yun might be an otherworldly demon, but she has deep love in her.” Feng Jin Huang’s mother Fairy Bai Qing looked through the window, a very far distance away, focusing on Zhao Lian Yun, who was still kneeling in the courtyard.

Zhao Lian Yun approached Feng Jin Huang and begged her to help save Ma Hong Yun.

Feng Jin Huang was lost, after asking, she learned about Zhao Lian Yun and Ma Hong Yun’s heart wrenching story.

Zhao Lian Yun was begging for help, but regardless of what Feng Jin Huang said, she seemed to be fixated on this, she refused to get up. Feng Jin Huang had no choice but to find her parents for help.

Her mother was a rank seven female immortal of Spirit Affinity House, Bai Qing, while her father was the famous Feng Jiu Ge!

Feng Jiu Ge walked towards Fairy Bai Qing, he did not look at Zhao Lian Yun, instead, he looked at the sky, saying plainly: “Dear, can’t you tell? Zhao Lian

Yun is guided by some people.”

Fairy Bai Qing’s gaze flashed: “Do you mean Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying?”

Places with people will have competition for benefits.

Spirit Affinity House had its internal conflicts too.

Feng Jiu Ge was powerful, in the absence of rank eights, he dominated the ten great ancient sects, nobody could rival him. But this did not mean he had no opponents.

Competition in this world did not just involve fighting and killing.

Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying were Feng Jiu Ge’s main opponents in Spirit Affinity House.

The two of them were married too.

Among which, Xu Hao was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, while Li Jun Ying was known as the Illusory Fairy, her power was extraordinary.

In the previous life, when Feng Jiu Ge died inside the Thieving Heaven true inheritance’s special space, these two immediately exerted pressure on Fairy Bai Qing and had a powerful stance. But afterwards, when Fang Yuan used Spring Autumn Cicada and ended up saving Feng Jiu Ge, history was changed.

Feng Jiu Ge’s return caused great pressure on Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying, they were at a disadvantage.

However, using Zhao Lian Yun’s influence, the two of them held their ground and were untouchable by even Feng Jiu Ge inside Spirit Affinity House.

Hearing Fairy Bai Qing mention their names, Feng Jiu Ge admitted: “It is them. This was my mistake, back then, I sent Xu Hao to complete the mission for the Thieving Heaven true inheritance, I wanted to push them aside, but to think they actually benefited from it.”

“Huang Er wants to be the next generation fairy, she was originally unmatched, but now, Zhao Lian Yun appeared. As expected of an otherworldly demon, this woman is very intelligent and has a different perspective on many matters, yet she can get to the point and succeed in her unique methods, she is truly worthy of being Huang Er’s opponent.”

“This time, Zhao Lian Yun is kneeling and begging for help, Xu Hao probably instigated this. Zhao Lian Yun wants to save her lover, she has to fight for the position of fairy. That way, she would have enough authority to use Spirit Affinity House’s power. If Huang Er gives in to her, she would give up being the fairy. But if she rejects her, it would breed trouble.”

Feng Jiu Ge analyzed deeply, he easily exposed Xu Hao’s schemes.

He was a sound path Gu Immortal, but he had incredible wits, he had a keen perception towards these internal conflicts.

Fairy Bai Qing rolled her eyes, saying playfully: “Dear, why would I not understand these? Our Spirit Affinity House’s signature Immortal Gu is Love, our sect values moving people through love. Xu Hao asked Zhao Lian Yun to do this, he probably does not expect her to succeed. But after Zhao Lian Yun is rejected by Huang Er, others would sympathize with her.”

“Hahaha, my dear, you are so smart, I was unduly worried.” Feng Jiu Ge laughed.

Xu Hao was trying so desperately to make Zhao Lian Yun win and defeat Feng Jin Huang, and become the fairy of Spirit Affinity House. That way, he could use Zhao Lian Yun’s power to ally with others and oppose Feng Jiu Ge together.

Xu Hao had a good plan.

All along, Zhao Lian Yun’s identity as an otherworldly demon was her biggest obstacle in becoming Spirit Affinity House’s fairy. Because people were more willing to believe in those who originated from a similar background.

Zhao Lian Yun, who came from another world, was ostracized and guarded against.

But after this matter, Zhao Lian Yun’s image in Spirit Affinity House would completely transform in the eyes of everyone.

Even though Zhao Lian Yun was an otherworldly demon, she loved a man of the Gu world.

For this man, she fought for the position of fairy, she was not a vicious or ambitious person.

She was really pitiful, nobody was helping her. Her lover was in Northern Plains, he might die any time, these lovebirds might never get together again!

“This time, Xu Hao made a good plan. No matter what decision Huang Er makes, she would still lose. In fact, to compete for the position of fairy, she has to reject Zhao Lian Yun.” Feng Jiu Ge said plainly.

“Then we let her continue kneeling here?” Fairy Bai Qing asked.

Feng Jiu Ge smiled: “No worries, she won’t stay here for long, this is just a show.”

But Fairy Bai Qing shook her head: “I do not agree with this. Did you not see Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes, she is so determined and resolute, she is in deep agony. Do you think Xu Hao would tell her about the truth? At this moment, Zhao Lian Yun probably thinks that her only hope in saving her lover lies in Huang Er giving up this contest! She will definitely not give up, she will continue kneeling.”

Feng Jiu Ge did not speak, he looked at the sky, he still paid no attention to Zhao Lian Yun.

Feng Jiu Ge was a little regretful now.

If he had known this, he would not have bought Zhao Lian Yun back in the Northern Plains auction.

Right now, she was Feng Jin Huang’s greatest obstacle.

Parents in this world still had the same wishes, they wanted their sons or daughters to succeed in life.

Even Feng Jiu Ge with rank eight battle strength was no exception from this.

“Even your mother pities Zhao Lian Yun, oh Huang Er, we will not advise you this time, how will you deal with this?” Feng Jiu Ge was secretly anticipating as he waited.

On the road to Lake Heart Mountain.

Qin Juan kicked a rock along the path angrily: “This Zhao Lian Yun is so annoying! Is this how you beg someone? She wants you to give up the contest for the position of fairy, she has the nerves to say that! She is really shameless.”

“But she really has no choice. She already explained that this is for the sake of her lover” Sun Yao mumbled.

“Yes but even so, she cannot do this. Kneeling on the ground, refusing to get up, does she want us to beg her to get up? Seriously, oh, I am so angry! She even caused senior sister’s home to be surrounded by spectators, causing you to be unable to go home, and have to roam out here!” Qin Juan stomped, going crazy.

“However, she is really pitiful. I did not feel that last time, but hearing her words, I find that Zhao Lian Yun is really kind too...” Sun Yao shook her head.

“Hey, whose side are you on, you are speaking up for Zhao Lian Yun!” Qin Juan was furious as she pointed at Sun Yao: “Senior sister is the most qualified person to be Spirit Affinity House’s fairy, Zhao Lian Yun is an outsider, how can she? And you, Sun Yao, correct your attitude. Did you forget about how senior sister has been taking care of us all along? You actually said such words, are you repaying kindness with enmity?”

“No, I have no such intentions. I just think that she is pitiful, no matter what decision senior sister makes, I will support her.” Sun Yao waved her hand, explaining.

Qin Juan calmed down a little, she started worrying for Feng Jin Huang: “Senior sister must be troubled now. This Zhao Lian Yun really posed a good problem. If we agree to her demand, we will give up the position of fairy. But if we don’t, people will say that senior sister is heartless, and people will sympathize for Zhao Lian Yun and acknowledge her. Most importantly, the contest for fairy is not just decided by our seniors, it also considers the view of our generation’s disciples. Every generation’s fairy in Spirit Affinity House has to be acknowledged by everyone!”

“Hehehe.” Walking in front, Feng Jin Huang suddenly laughed lightly to herself.

She stopped walking, Qin Juan and Sun Yao realized that they were at the mountain slope that they usually went to.

Feng Jin Huang stood on the slope, raising her head as she looked at the stars in the sky.

Next, she spoke: “I will not concede.”

Her tone was plain, but Sun Yao and Qin Juan could hear her unwavering determination.

Feng Jin Huang’s clear eyes reflected the light of the stars in the sky. Winds of the night blew, caressing her face as her hair fluttered in the sky.

She continued: “Even though Zhao Lian Yun is pitiful, the title of the next generation fairy is my goal. This is the path that I have decided on, I will not change it for the sake of others!”

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan was inside his own dream realm.

Inside Qing Mao Mountain again.

In Gu Yue village, a young Fang Yuan was standing in front of Gu Yue clan leader.

“You want me to give in to Fang Zheng tomorrow on purpose? And lose to him?!” Fang Yuan stared with wide opened eyes, growling.

Gu Yue clan leader sighed: “Fang Yuan, I understand that this is not your fault, Fang Zheng was the instigator. But you need to understand, he has been living under your shadow, unable to get free. He challenged you because his heart’s inner desires are leading him to oppose you, to defeat you and break free from his childhood trauma, and obtain the heart of an expert.”

Fang Yuan lowered his head, gritting his teeth: “Clan leader, since you looked for me in secret, that means I have the strength to defeat him.”

“That’s right, you took a debt and pawned all of your assets just to luckily succeed in refining that Gu. This greatly raised your battle strength. But Fang Zheng has A grade aptitude, he is taught by several elders, he has quite the skill, he just lacks some experience.” Gu Yue clan elder said.

“A grade aptitude... hehe.” Fang Yuan raised his head and looked at Gu Yue clan leader, smiling in a mocking manner.

“Your decision is?” Gu Yue clan leader was expressionless, looking down at Fang Yuan imposingly.

Fang Yuan turned around and walked away.

His figure faded into the shadows.

He left with one sentence: “I’ll do it.”

Gu Yue clan leader did not speak, his gaze became dark as he muttered to himself: “He conceded so easily, he must have other ideas. To play it safe, I should preemptively weaken him first.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1193: Gong Wan Ting

Dawn.

When the first ray of sunlight shone, the flowers and grass were still wet with dew.

A blood thorn snake slithered out of its cavern after the unbearable cold night, greedily absorbing the warmth of the sunlight.

Ordinary snakes were cold-blooded, but the blood thorn snake’s blood was warm.

As its temperature rose, it gradually regained its nimbleness. It stretched out its body and flicked out its tongue, as it started to look for food.

It needed to get enough food today and digest them to cope with the next cold night.

In this world, all living beings were struggling and fighting for every aspect of survival.

The appearance of the blood thorn snake was terrifying, but its nature was gentle. It did not eat meat and it fed on blood jaspers.

Its tongue darted in and out, and soon, it discovered its food.

Blood jaspers were translucent, like rose stones, hanging on the tips of stalks of grass. It was the dew from flowers and plants which had certain probabilities of transforming under the rays of dawn.

If this blood jasper managed to avoid the blood thorn snake’s hunt and endure through the cold nights, after seven days and seven nights, it would transform into a small rank one blood jasper Gu.

The blood thorn snake quickly slithered over.

Rustle rustle....

The dense shrubs were shaking continuously, showing traces of a line. Within several breaths of time, the blood thorn snake crossed a thousand steps of distance and neared this blood jasper.

The snake’s head rose and was about to devour this delectable food when suddenly, a loud explosion sounded from the horizon.

The blood thorn snake shook in fear, its whole body fell down to the ground without any trace of strength left.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Explosions reverberated through the landscape like war drums.

An enormous hall moved through the clouds and descended above this grassland, like the ruler of the world.

This hall had a broad structure and magnificent appearance, with lightning snakes coiling around it and countless thunderbolts raining down beside it.

Inside the hall, Nu Er Gu laughed heartily: “Sure enough, Loud Thunder Hall is extremely powerful! In this blood battle competition, my Nu Er tribe has this hall to suppress the situation, we will definitely kill the enemies. Hahaha!”

He was a famous rank seven Gu Immortal expert of Northern Plains’ righteous path, specializing in sound path and had impressive battle achievements. His battle strength stood at the same level as Guan Chou of Guan tribe, Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han.

Nu Er Gu had a small head and big belly, his body was disproportional, his eyeballs were popping out, while his limbs were dry as twigs, he had pale skin resembling a sick person, without any hint of blood in his face.

Right now, Nu Er Gu was controlling Loud Thunder Hall, experiencing the overflowing strength of this Immortal Gu House.

He was extremely excited!

Along with Nu Er Gu were several of Nu Er tribe’s Gu Immortals.

Among them, a girl did not conceal her frown, covering her ears as she shouted: “Alright, Nu Er Gu, stop using thunder sound. It is truly noisy, if you use it again, I will turn you into a toad.”

Nu Er Gu who had been in high spirits, heard the girl’s threat, his demeanor immediately disappeared without a trace.

“Great-aunt, I made a mistake!” He quickly turned around and bowed in apology.

The girl waved her hand: “Little Gu, you need to behave, we can’t stand out in this blood battle martial competition. Yao tribe, Guan tribe and Liu tribe are the ones nearer to Chu Sect and Bai Zu tribe. If we put too much effort, they will just watch from the sidelines and reap the benefits.”

“Yes, great-aunt, you are right. I shall listen to great-aunt’s arrangement.” Nu Er Gu quickly patted his chest and assured.

The other Nu Er tribe Gu Immortals almost could not hold back their laughter.

According to bloodline seniority, this Gu Immortal with the appearance of a little girl was indeed Nu Er Gu’s great-aunt.

The crucial point was that she was very powerful and had a trump card immortal killer move, which she had tested on Nu Er Gu since he was young. The trauma on Nu Er Gu was extremely huge from this, and he had developed a fear of his great-aunt.

“Hmm? Gong tribe’s people are also coming.” The girl suddenly turned around, under the amplification of Loud Thunder Hall, her gaze easily pierced through an enormous distance, seeing another Immortal Gu House.

This Immortal Gu House was similarly a hall, it was Gong tribe’s Golden Dawn Hall, shining with brilliant golden radiance.

When Nu Er Gu saw a female Gu Immortal standing at the entrance of the Golden Dawn Hall, he immediately frowned: “Why is it her?”

This woman looked to be in her late twenties, she was clad in dazzling palace attire with the lower hems touching the ground, her black hair was tied up high with jade and gold ornaments. Her skin was snow white, her eyebrows slender, her gaze sharp, and her chest was voluptuous and perky. She looked stately and beautiful, giving a feeling that she could not be offended.

“Gong Wan Ting?” Nu Er tribe’s girl exclaimed in slight surprise, before quickly adding, “Come with me.”

Nu Er tribe’s Gu Immortals immediately flew out of Loud Thunder Hall and went up to the entrance of Golden Dawn Hall.

The girl greeted first in a cordial tone: “Elder sister Wan Ting, hope you have been well.”

Gong Wan Ting lightly smiled: “Little sister Nu Er Qian, good day to you.”

The two Immortal Gu House stopped above Blood Plain, this was a rare scene in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

Next, the third Immortal Gu House appeared, making this scene even more colorful.

Divine Light Hall!

Yao tribe’s Immortal Gu House.

A Gu Immortal of Yao tribe, Yao Yuan Ying, flew out of the Immortal Gu House and greeted Gong Wan Ting first before greeting Nu Er Qian.

Nu Er Gu could not help but secretly transmit his voice to Nu Er Qian: “Great-aunt, it looks like Gong tribe came prepared this time. Sending Gong Wan Ting over, even the current holder of the Longevity Edict, Yao tribe, is overwhelmed.”

Nu Er Qian transmitted back her reply: “Gong Wan Ting is Prince Feng Xian’s official wife, who can dare to not respect her? Even if Yao Huang were to be present, he would also have to be somewhat courteous to her. But the person Yao tribe sent this time is actually Yao Yuan Ying. Her nature is gentle and she is not proficient in fighting and killing, but is specialized in healing. It seems Yao tribe also does not have the intention to put in much effort.”

Just looking at these Gu Immortals, one could have some clues to the thoughts of each tribe.

Last time, Gong tribe had suffered the most in the battle at Iron Eagle blessed land, when Gong Er returned to the tribe, he had been punished. This time, Gong tribe wanted Prince Feng Xian to show up, but their ploy was seen through by Prince Feng Xian. Gong tribe could only choose the next best option, sending Gong Wan Ting.

She was Prince Feng Xian’s wife, she had rank seven cultivation, with powerful battle strength, and was a genuine expert. Gong tribe’s main objective this time was to revitalize their prestige.

Yao tribe sent Yao Yuan Ying, a healing Gu Immortal who was not good at fighting, and she had been appointed by Yao Huang. Yao Huang was friends with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, so he came up with the blood battle martial competition as an explanation to Longevity Heaven, his main focus was still on refining Gu. Some combative Gu Immortals of Yao tribe had been suppressed by Yao Huang, and could only grit their teeth with nothing they could do about it.

Nu Er tribe sent Nu Er Qian and Nu Er Gu as the main forces. Nu Er Gu’s nature was erratic and was very aggressive, while Nu Er Qian was stable, experienced and very reliable. The main thing was that she could restrain Nu Er Gu.

However, Nu Er tribe also had the intention to forge ahead this time. So they did not stint on mobilizing the tribe’s Immortal Gu House, Loud Thunder Hall.

But the final decision was in Nu Er Qian’s hands.

Next, Huang Jin tribes appeared one after the other.

Liu tribe, Ye Lui tribe, Chanyu tribe, Meng tribe, Yuan tribe, Nian Er tribe, Murong tribe, Guan tribe.

A total of eleven Huang Jin tribes, super forces who ruled over territories, and had undisputed influence to Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

There had been two more tribes previously.

One was Dong Fang tribe, it was a pity, Dong Fang Chang Fan made it flourish, and it also was destroyed because of the failure of his plan to resurrect.

It could be said that Dong Fang tribe rose because of Dong Fang Chang Fan, and also suffered their downfall at Dong Fang Chang Fan’s hands.

Another was Hei tribe. Hei tribe had many surviving Gu Immortals, but they were annexed by Bai Zu tribe, their tribe name was discarded and they no longer were acknowledged by other Huang Jin tribes, even being cast aside and disdained upon.

“Greetings to Fairy Gong Wan Ting.” Like Yao tribe and Nu Er tribe, the Gu Immortals of different tribes also greeted Gong Wan Ting.

Gong Wan Ting’s own battle strength made her an undisputed leader of the righteous path, and more importantly was her status, she was Prince Feng Xian’s wife!

Even if she were a mortal, just this status alone was worthy for these Gu Immortals to have such an attitude.

“Gong tribe actually sent Fairy Wan Ting over, such a ruthless move, they clearly want to suppress Yao tribe.”

“Gong tribe’s people like to look down on others, to be honest, I like Yao tribe a bit more. After all, Lord Yao Huang is of our Huang Jin bloodline.”

Each tribe’s Gu Immortals acutely sensed the undercurrents in the righteous path forces, they were all secretly discussing, and looking forward to how Yao tribe would react.

“With Fairy Gong Wan Ting here, how could I, Yao Yuan Ying, command this edict?” Beyond most of the Gu Immortals’ expectations, Yao tribe’s representative Yao Yuan Ying directly handed over the Longevity Edict.

Gong Wan Ting, however, refused with a smile.

Yao Yuan Ying offered a second time.

Gong Wan Ting again refused, except her attitude had eased up by a lot.

Yao Yuan Ying offered the third time, and only then did Gong Wan Ting accept, looking like she was forced to.

And the moment she took it, she placed it at the center of the plaque on the entrance of Golden Dawn Hall.

Gong Wan Ting then continued: “Everyone, please come inside the hall. My tribe has already prepared some light wine and delicacies.”

The immortals all accepted her invitation.

Previously, Gong Er had also invited others, but no one gave him face. Gong Wan Ting, however, was different, all the immortals knew that behind her was Prince Feng Xian. Even though the rumors of marital discord between them had spread for a long time, the immortals could not be careless.

Each tribe’s immortals entered the hall.

Yao tribe was seated first from the left side, because left had the highest status, followed by right and center. 1

Nu Er tribe was first from the right side because they had brought Loud Thunder Hall.

Other tribes were arranged according to the strength of the forces that they sent over.

Who could have thought such an arrangement would make one person extremely dissatisfied.

“Why is my Nian Er tribe last? Does Gong Wan Ting look down on us?” Nian Er Ping Zhi was outraged, as he transmitted his voice to the tribe’s senior Gu Immortal beside him.

Right now, it was not just Nian Er Fu who came, but also wood path Gu Immortal Nian Er Yi Fang.

When he heard the words, he placed his aged hand on Nian Er Ping Zhi’s shoulder, and spoke expectantly and with encouragement: “Ping Zhi, if you are dissatisfied, kill some opponents in the blood martial competition, at that time, when we mention changing our positions, no one will stop us, and it will also show our Nian Er tribe’s prestige.”

“Elder Yi Fang, you are right! I will do so then!” Nian Er Ping Zhi clenched his fists, his eyes brightened with a sharp luster.

From the main seat in the middle, Gong Wan Ting was secretly observing everyone, and when she saw Nian Er Ping Zhi’s expression, she smiled lightly in her mind.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1194: Not Kneeling

The righteous path’s immortals had just been sitting for a while, when lone and demonic immortals also appeared.

A huge grey cloud was flying over, upon which Domination Immortal Chu Du proudly stood at the front, behind him were two battle formations. On one side were Hao Zhen, Chou Lao Wu, Li Si Chun, Immortal Wang and others. On the other side were Bai Zu Ren, Bai Zu Ling as well as some familiar faces of Hei tribe, among which the four top supreme elders were also there.

The righteous path immortals’ gazes went past the spacious entrance.

Their glances swept through the enemy group of immortals, before they fixed their gazes on Chu Du.

Several breaths later, a Gu Immortal laughed: “Our righteous path shall win this battle, no doubt. What Chu Sect and Bai Zu tribe, such a line-up dares to provoke our Huang Jin tribes?”

“Haha, that makes sense.”

“The way I see it, we only need to be slightly on guard against Chu Du.”

The immortals talked happily, the atmosphere in the hall becoming relaxed.

In contrast, Hao Zhen, Chou Lao Wu, Bai Zu Ren and others looked gloomy and worried.

One would just have to look at the situation and they would know it.

The righteous path had brought out three Immortal Gu Houses.

Loud Thunder Hall was to the right, Golden Dawn Hall was at the center, and Divine Light Hall was to the left.

In contrast, Chu Du’s side only had a huge empty grey cloud below them. The stronger and weaker side was clear at a glance.

The righteous path immortals were resting at ease with wines and delicacies inside the hall. But Chu Du's side was standing amidst the wind, only able to watch.

The righteous path immortals talked and laughed, their morale was high. In contrast, Chu Du's side was silent.

Only Chu Du had a relaxed expression.

He had both brains and brawn, he was extremely shrewd, and had already anticipated such a scene before this trip. Right now, he was not anxious, he looked at a Gu Immortal beside him.

This immortal was tall and thin, folding his arms across his chest, he had white brows and white hair, and had an extremely cold and aloof expression.

Chu Du transmitted his voice to him: "Brother Xue, you have been in seclusion for a long time, tempering your abilities, and possess astonishing attainments, but you don't have reputation. Right now is the time to make your name known, I want to hand over the first battle to you. After this battle, I believe your name will not only be spread to the world, it will likely go down in history."

The Gu Immortal surnamed Xue heard this, and bright light shone in his eyes immediately.

"Last time, Brother Chu invited me to take action, but I was refining Gu and not able to come out. This time, I must make the world know of my, Xue Wu Hen's, name!"

The Gu Immortal named Xue transmitted his reply to Chu Du, and then flew to the sky before hovering between the two sides.

He still had his arms folded across his chest as he remained silent.

Inside Golden Dawn Hall, the immortals pointed at Xue Wu Hen and jokingly spoke: "They sent some nameless junior to his death."

Nian Er Ping Zhi was just about to stand up and take the fight, but was stopped by Nian Er Yi Fang: "Be patient, the enemy only has rank six cultivation and has no reputation. Killing him won't be enough to awe these immortals. No need to take this fight."

"Ah?" Nian Er Ping Zhi thought for a moment and realized it was true, and did not get up.

"Who wants to take the first battle?" From the main seat, Gong Wan Ting asked the group of immortals.

A young Gu Immortal stood up soon after: "I, Ye Lui Xiao Jin, am willing to take the fight!"

Gong Wan Ting hesitated for a moment.

She was inwardly thinking: "Domination Immortal Chu Du is an extraordinary person, he actually sent a nameless character for the first battle, they are definitely not someone ordinary. If our side gets careless and we lose the first battle, it won't be good."

Ye Lui Xiao Jin was also a young junior, and came to the blood battle competition under the company of his seniors. He was also like the enemy, he was still unknown and had not made a name for himself.

At this time, Ye Lui tribe’s Gu Immortal Ye Lui Hui Hong smiled: “This junior might only be rank six, but he is talented in fighting and often pulls brilliant moves in battle. Even my tribe’s first supreme elder has praised him repeatedly.”

Gong Wan Ting heard Ye Lui Hui Hong, it was not good to contradict and disregard him publicly, so she agreed: “Then we shall see Ye Lui tribe’s valiance.”

“I heed the command!” This young Gu Immortal turned around and walked out.

When he passed by Nian Er tribe, he gave a deep glance at Nian Er Ping Zhi with his golden eyes.

“You!” Nian Er Ping Zhi was provoked, and almost jumped up.

But Ye Lui Xiao Jin had already walked out the entrance.

Nian Er Ping Zhi had made his name in the battle at Iron Eagle blessed land, but many young righteous path Gu Immortals were not willing to feel defeated, Ye Lui Xiao Jin was one of them.

This time, he also wanted to spread and establish his name through the blood battle martial competition!

The blood battle martial competition’s first battle was about to unfold under both sides’ gazes.

At the same time, far away at Southern Border.

“I have told you all the crucial information regarding Bai Xiang grotto-heaven. After a bloodline descendant of Bai Xiang becomes a Gu Immortal, this white form immortal snake can guide them to Bai Xiang grotto-heaven. But Bai Xiang grotto-heaven is filled with danger. Because Bai Xiang of the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs is a demonic path Gu Immortal, you need to be very careful when doing this. According to the information my Shadow Sect has gathered, Bai Xiang was a man of his word, and hated people who went against his wish, and was extremely tyrannical in the way he did things. Only Gu Immortals whose battle strength met his expectations could talk and associate with him. You cannot stubbornly charge ahead in this trip, you need to remember when to yield.”

Ying Wu Xie carefully instructed Bai Ning Bing.

Shadow Sect had already looked into the bet between the Five Xiangs for a long time, and wanted to meddle in it.

But inopportune time and coincidences made this plan progress very slowly. Naturally, the main reason was because Shadow Sect’s full efforts were in refining sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

Shadow Sect recruited Bai Ning Bing because they wanted to hit two birds with one stone. On one hand, they wanted to exploit her identity as a fate-escapee, on the other hand, they were preparing to step into the bet.

Bai Ning Bing snorted: “I know what to do.”

Ying Wu Xie was unfazed, still smiling: “Alright, go then.”

Bai Ning Bing quietly took out white form immortal snake.

The white form immortal snake was slender and long, its whole body was covered in snow white scales and it had a graceful physique. Its eyes were like jade, and on the two sides of its head were a pair of long whiskers, floating like celestial ribbons.

It was a rank five mortal Gu and was very attached to Bai Ning Bing, which was likely because it was attracted by her Northern Dark Ice Soul physique.

Bai Ning Bing began to activate her phantom aperture.

The phantom aperture was illusory, but after it was activated, it turned from phantom to real.

Shadow Sect had stolen this method from Heavenly Court and had studied it until fifty to sixty percent completion, as such, it had many flaws.

Because of this, Bai Ning Bing could temporarily possess Gu Immortal strength without undergoing tribulation. So she was only a false immortal.

After leaving Shadow Sect for a period of time, she had not been able to maintain her phantom aperture, causing it to lose many of its effects and have limited periods of use.

Ordinarily, Bai Ning Bing would be in her mortal body, turning into a woman. After her phantom aperture was activated, she would turn into a temporary false immortal, the effect of the mortal Gu would be suppressed at this time and her body would return to that of a man’s.

Sometimes a man, sometimes a woman, Bai Ning Bing him(her)self felt awkward.

However, among the immortals present, no one joked about it.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was kindhearted, Hei Lou Lan was fierce and ambitious, and did not care about these details, Shi Nu was actually rather nervous, after all, Bai Ning Bing’s success or failure would be of huge influence to Shadow Sect’s following actions.

Bai Ning Bing began to release his Gu Immortal aura, the white form immortal snake sensed this, its whole body jolted before it gave a long hiss towards the sky.

Its hissing was completely different from the sharp hiss of normal snake species, carrying a resounding and mighty aura.

Then, the white form immortal snake flew under Bai Ning Bing’s feet of its own accord, carrying him and flying towards the sky.

Hei Lou Lan, Ying Wu Xie and the rest stood at their spots, looking at this sight.

They could not go as they did not have Bai Xiang’s bloodline, and would only make things worse if they went. Everything now depended on Bai Ning Bing.

Fortunately, to raise Bai Ning Bing’s success rate, Ying Wu Xie and the rest of the group had gone to Jade Pot Mountain and gave ice soul Immortal Gu to Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing had his first truly owned Immortal Gu.

He looked down while standing on the white form immortal snake’s back.

However, when he saw the mountain ranges and the heavy fog, he suddenly recalled a scene back in Bai tribe.

That was his first encounter with the white form immortal snake...

The spirit spring was raging like boiling water.

All of a sudden, the spring water rose up like a tidal wave.

After it reached a certain height, the spirit spring scattered and splashed in all directions. The white form immortal snake flew out.

“I pay respects to Great Immortal!” Bai clan leader emotionally knelt on the ground, and at the same time anxiously urged, “Bai Ning Bing, why are you not kneeling down?”

“I will never kneel before a Gu!” Bai Ning Bing coldly snorted, his body standing upright and tall.

Although the white form immortal snake Gu released an ethereal cold grandeur with heavy killing intent concealed within, Bai Ning Bing was not the least bit afraid. His two blue eyes directly stared at its snake eyes...

“According to the clan’s secret records, once a Gu Master obtains approval, the white form immortal snake Gu would fly with the inheritor and open a secret place in the sky.”

“So, this so-called secret was Bai Xiang’s grotto-heaven. And the condition to receive approval was to become a Gu Immortal.”

The question from a long time ago finally cleared up at this time.

“Unknowingly, I have already reached this stage.” Bai Ning Bing took a deep breath in, his blue eyes gazing high: “Success or failure does not matter, hehehe, I only hope Bai Xiang grotto-heaven won’t be too boring, this trip should be splendid!”

Lang Ya blessed land, inside a secret room in a cloud city.

Fang Yuan lightly let out a breath of air.

In his hand was a dream path mortal Gu that had just been refined, and was still giving off warmth.

His cultivation was still at rank six second heavenly tribulation level and had stopped here for the moment, unable to be raised. Because he had almost annexed all the blessed lands in his memories. There were still some remaining, but he could not annex those blessed lands because of his attainment level.

Ever since he realized that dream realms provided incomparable help to this style of cultivation, he had immersed himself in refining dream path mortal Gu these last days.

These mortal Gu, when paired up with unravel mystery Immortal Gu, could form the immortal killer move unravel dream.

With this killer move, Fang Yuan could easily solve dream realms and unravel them, raising his attainment in many paths.

With unravel dream raising his attainment level, Fang Yuan could annex even more immortal apertures.

After annexing blessed lands, his cultivation level would soar up, causing his battle strength to surge.

After his battle strength surged, killing would become easier and he could obtain even more blessed lands.

It would then form a feedback loop of constant benefits.

Do not bother mentioning bullshit like whether killing is against morality or how it would influence one’s reputation, demonic path Gu Immortals were direct and straightforward in this aspect!

Fang Yuan had never thought of himself as a good person.

“The blood battle martial competition should have begun... I should participate a few times, kill a few Gu Immortals and seize their immortal apertures, taking the final step to becoming a rank seven Gu Immortal.”

“Although Eastern Sea has City Well, and there are many blessed lands in the well, it is too far away. Moreover, I have already been there once, heaven’s will already knows of it.”

“It is better to continue refining dream path mortal Gu while killing in the blood battle martial competition, it won’t be too late to go after that.”

With this idea, Fang Yuan once again entered a dream realm.

Verdant green trees grew in the rugged mountain path.

A merchant caravan was traversing on the mountain path with difficulty.

Fang Yuan was one of the members in the caravan.

In the end, he did not yield and wanted to prove that with his ability, he could defeat his genius A grade aptitude little brother.

He also needed such evidence for himself.

But Gu Yue clan leader did not give him this opportunity.

He personally schemed against Fang Yuan and used some sneaky moves, causing Fang Yuan to suffer an overwhelming defeat.

Finally, he became someone who overestimated his ability, being cast aside and troubled by everyone.

“C grade aptitude does not have any future.”

“Even if you won against Gu Yue Fang Zheng, so what? He has A grade aptitude, the future of the whole tribe belongs to him. No, he is our tribe’s future!”

“As an elder brother, you truly don’t have even a little tolerance, you are actually making things difficult for your little brother.”

Winner takes all.

Victory or defeat was decided, right or wrong was thus overturned, black and white was blurred.

Fang Yuan was on the verge of being exiled from the tribe, he could only join a merchant caravan, laboriously working while continuing his cultivation.

“Stop, stop, I am tired. This carriage is too bumpy, let’s rest for a while.” A young man’s voice came from a carriage.

“But young master, we are still a long way from the next village. We have already rested three times on the way, if we rest again, we won’t be able to walk out of this mountain before the sky gets dark.” A steward of the merchant caravan stood outside the carriage, and spoke with a bowed waist.

Ping.

There was a sharp sound as a lightning whip instantly landed on the steward’s body, sending him flying.

“What did you say?”

“This caravan is my clan’s, I have complete management rights over it. You lowly servant, you dare to lecture me?”

The carriage’s curtain was raised up, and a malevolent looking young Gu Master walked out from within.

“This servant deserves to die, this servant deserves to die.” The steward kowtowed continuously.

The whole caravan stopped.

From ahead came questions: “What is happening behind?”

Questions came from behind as well: “What is going on ahead?”

Feeling countless gazes at him, the young Gu Master frowned, as he shouted: “What are you looking at, you bunch of lazy slaves, if you look at me again, I will dig out your eyes!”

Fang Yuan quickly lowered his head.

“You, yes you!” The young Gu Master suddenly pointed at Fang Yuan, “Come over, kneel down, be a stool for this master. This is your honor, I want to rest outside for a while.”

Fang Yuan raised his head, staring at the young Gu Master with pursed lips.

“I won’t kneel!”

“What?” The young Gu Master could not believe it, almost thinking he had misheard it.

“What did you say just now? You won’t kneel?!” His finger that was pointing at Fang Yuan, was slightly shaking.

His expression was exaggerated, as if he had heard a joke.

“Haha, you won’t kneel?! You are an ant-like slave, you still won’t kneel?!”

He then heard Fang Yuan’s words again——

“No, I won’t kneel!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1195: Young

“Junior, take this move!” Liu Hui shouted, a powerful aura erupting from his whole body.

He raised his arms above his head, a grand radiance rose up from his body and rapidly condensed into a crescent moon in the air.

The crescent moon was thin and long, it was pale white but covered in a grey halo.

“Good! Elder Liu Hui finally got the chance to use his move, grey rock moon!”

“This move is a well known method of Liu Hui.”

“That’s right. Those that are struck by this move will start solidifying before finally turning into stone. Even their immortal aperture will also be contaminated, turning rocky, it is a truly troublesome move!”

Inside Golden Dawn Hall, righteous path Gu Immortals were discussing with smiles on their faces.

On the demonic path’s side, Xue Wu Hen was only illuminated by the grey moonlight for several breaths of time before his expression changed greatly.

He immediately felt the power of this move, and did not dare to be rash as he quickly used an immortal killer move.

Strong cold aura coiled around his whole body, ice and frost attaching to his body. The grey moonlight turned the ice and frost to stone, but the ice and frost regenerated themselves, the grey moonlight was unable to penetrate through them and reach Xue Wu Hen’s body.

“What? He actually used an offensive killer move on his own body?”

“Amazing! Xue Wu Hen handled such a complicated thing with ease, he is quite clever! For the moment, he has blocked Old Liu Hui’s signature trump card!”

“Go, beat him!”

The immortals in Chu Du’s side cheered and applauded loudly.

By contrast, the relaxed mood inside Golden Dawn Hall had now completely dissipated, and a bad feeling rose up in everyone’s hearts.

“We are not going to lose to Xue Wu Hen again, right?”

“Even Elder Liu Hui cannot hold him down?”

“Xue Wu Hen is an unknown character, while Elder Liu Hui is a renowned rank six expert!”

As the immortals talked, Xue Wu Hen wore the heavy layer of stone and frost, and charged towards Elder Liu Hui.

“Old geezer, you are so old, what are you doing not resting at home? Just die!”

Xue Wu Hen pushed both his hands forward, instantly a wave of snow and frost rose up in the air.

The righteous path Gu Immortal, Elder Liu Hui, had to maintain the grey crescent moon in the sky, his hands were raised as if he was supporting the sky, he could not move and was directly submerged by this wave of snow.

Xue Wu Hen won!

Liu Hui died!

Everyone was surprised, they had not expected such an outcome.

“Before this battle, Xue Wu Hen had already won two consecutive battles, he was injured and not in his best condition.”

“In the previous two battles, he battled against righteous path juniors, and could not kill the opponent. But now in this third battle, he killed Liu Hui.”

“The grand Liu Hui actually died at the hands of a nameless demonic path minor character!”

“Heavens, this is unbelievable.”

“This person might only have rank six cultivation, but he truly has rank seven battle strength. Where did this guy come from?”

“I can’t help but think of Old Ancestor Xue Hu, this Xue Wu Hen is similarly of ice and snow path, he truly resembles Old Ancestor Xue Hu when he was young.”

“He is still far from being qualified to compare to Old Ancestor Xue Hu. But three victories in three consecutive battles, his name will spread throughout the whole Gu Immortal world.”

Whether it be the righteous path or Chu Du’s side, they were both discussing Xue Wu Hen.

“Xiao Jin, don’t put your loss to heart. This is not your fault, but the opponent being too strong. He actually killed Liu Hui! Sigh.” Ye Lui Hui Hong consoled the young man beside him.

Ye Lui Xiao Jin felt his right arm.

His right arm was currently still in a frozen state, his whole arm had already turned black and blue from the cold, the intense chill was even affecting his bones and blood.

Ye Lui Xiao Jin felt such pain that after his defeat, he returned to the hall and had his head lowered the whole time.

As for Ye Lui Hui Hong’s words, he did not seem to have heard them.

Ye Lui Hui Hong saw this, and sighed inwardly: “You are still young. But this setback will be beneficial to you. This shame will make you try harder, who can say what will happen in the future? Maybe your future achievements will be above them. The main thing is to not lose the confidence in yourself.”

As he thought of this, Ye Lui Hui Hong gazed at Xue Wu Hen, who was standing alone in the air, and then at Nian Er Ping Zhi who was unable to stay still.

“Can I go fight now?” Nian Er Ping Zhi impatiently transmitted his voice to his senior, Nian Er Yi Fang.

However, Nian Er Yi Fang shook his head: “This person has won three battles, there are many injuries on him and his state is not at its peak. If you kill him, it would be nothing extraordinary, but if you can’t kill him, it would instead weaken your prestige. Moreover, the other side is not foolish, why would they let Xue Wu Hen continue fighting?”

Sure enough, the next moment, Chu Du spoke, withdrawing Xue Wu Hen from the battle.

Nian Er Ping Zhi snorted: “Even if he does not battle, I will go up. He won three battles, I will win at least six battles!”

Nian Er Ping Zhi rose up and bowed to Gong Wan Ting: “I request to go to battle!”

Gong Wan Ting’s frown relaxed a little.

The righteous path, which should have been victorious, was instead defeated thrice by a nameless character from Chu Du’s side.

This was not only a heavy blow to the righteous path Gu Immortals, it harmed their reputation and was also damaging to Gong Wan Ting’s prestige.

Gong Wan Ting knew Nian Er Ping Zhi was Nian Er tribe’s current generation Sword Child, she naturally had no reason to not permit him.

Nian Er Ping Zhi took the stage, and shouted: “Who wants to die?”

The rising morale of Chu Du’s side immediately stifled.

“Careful, don’t be fooled by this kid’s rank six cultivation, he can kill rank sevens.”

“He made outstanding battle achievements in the battle of Iron Eagle blessed land, he is also extremely savage, killing multiple Gu Immortals.”

“Even Old Monster Corpse Poison could not do anything about him.”

“He is the current inheritor of Sword Saint Nian Er’s true inheritance, he naturally is not ordinary.”

Chu Du’s side was silent.

Facing Nian Er Ping Zhi’s challenge, there was actually no one who dared to accept for a period of time.

“Youngsters at the moment, each of them truly are fiercer than the other.” Chu Du stroked his forehead.

“Big brother Chu, let me go handle him.” Xue Wu Hen requested.

How could Chu Du permit it.

He already saw Xue Wu Hen’s weak state, not only were there injuries on his body, many areas of his immortal aperture had even turned into rocks, causing losses to many resources, as a result of Elder Liu Hui’s immortal killer move.

“Relax, I have already made arrangements to deal with Ping Zhi.” Chu Du smiled, assuring Xue Wu Hen.

“Granny Yin, I will hand this battle to you.” Chu Du spoke to a black robed Gu Immortal behind him.

This Gu Immortal with a hunched back was holding a walking stick, and had been silent the whole time.

Hearing Chu Du’s words, terrifyingly bony hands stretched out of the wide sleeves and lifted up the hood, revealing an old, crooked face.

“Hehehe, let this old woman love you tenderly.” Granny Yin flew to the battle, and stared at the young Nian Er Ping Zhi with her turbid yellow eyes, which flickered with dangerous light.

“What, she is the rank seven demonic Gu Immortal Granny Yin.”

“Chu Du is shameless, our side’s Nian Er Ping Zhi is only a rank six Gu Immortal, they are actually sending a higher rank expert famous in Northern Plains!”

“This won’t do, call back Nian Er Ping Zhi.” Nian Er Yi Fang was also very anxious.

Nian Er Ping Zhi was a future star of Nian Er tribe who was heavily nurtured, and Nian Er Yi Fang was in charge of his safety in this trip. If he died here, Nian Er Yi Fang would have greatly neglected his duty.

However, Nian Er Ping Zhi’s fighting intent burned even stronger when facing a strong opponent.

He howled towards the sky, and disregarding the crazed voice transmission of Nian Er Yi Fang, he turned into an incomparably sharp sword light that charged towards Granny Yin!

Snowy Mountain, first peak.

“Now that I mention it, you need to be thankful to me. Haven’t you discovered, your cultivation has risen and is going to reach rank five.” Lady Wan Shou said to Ma Hong Yun, while holding a ball of lightning.

Ma Hong Yun shouted madly and hysterically: “You insane lunatic! You still want to shock me, you have tormented me so many times, you still want to continue! I don’t want this cultivation, please let me go.”

Lady Wan Shou sneered: “Impossible.”

She then sent out the ball of lightning.

Crack crack crack!

Ma Hong Yun’s whole body shook, his eyes rolled over, his mouth occasionally opened wide, occasionally pursed up and occasionally turned into ‘O’ shape, but all the time, he was shouting.

“Ahhh ooooohhhh arrghhhh...”

He screamed until the lightning completely dissipated.

“Failed again, this guy!” Lady Wan Shou’s face looked extremely gloomy, she fiercely slapped Ma Hong Yun’s cheek.

Ma Hong Yun instantly fainted from the slap.

Central Continent, Spirit Affinity House.

Heavy rain poured down, causing the sky to darken.

Zhao Lian Yun was drenched, her vision was blurry and intense dizziness was threatening to make her unconscious.

But she firmly held on, using every bit of strength in her body.

Although she was an otherworldly demon with memories of a previous world, she did not have much understanding of the upper levels of the Gu world, especially of the mindsets of Gu Immortals, whom she had rarely been able to associate with.

As far as she was concerned, this was the only way to save Ma Hong Yun.

“This otherworldly demon is indeed somewhat foolish.” Li Jun Ying had been observing secretly.

Xu Hao shook his head: “I also had not expected her to be so persistent. It has already been over ten days now.”

Li Jun Ying turned back and looked at her husband: “Have you thought about it, Feng Jin Huang can use this to make a countering scheme against us, requesting Zhao Lian Yun to give up on contending for the position of fairy, and then she will help save her lover?”

Xu Hao smiled: “How could that be? According to Feng Jin Huang’s nature, she absolutely would not be able to do such a thing. These two are still young.”

Inside a dream, Southern Border.

“Owww, it hurts, it hurts!” Fang Yuan screamed in pain.

“Kid, you know pain now? If you had knelt, you would not have had to experience this pain.” A middle-aged man with a big beard was holding a Gu worm in his hand, healing Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan raised his head and clenched his right fist: “Uncle, what are you saying? A man only kneels to their parents, heaven and earth, how can we kneel at someone’s order?! Even if I die, I won’t kneel!”

“Not cherishing life, it seems healing you was completely in vain. I should not have done it.” Big Beard suddenly became moody.

“Hmph, I didn’t ask you to heal me!” Fang Yuan endured the pain and stood up, walking out of this tent without looking back.

However, he fell down to the ground after taking just a few steps. The intense pain sent him unconscious.

When he woke up again, he found he was still inside Big Beard’s tent.

“Oh you, you are still too young.” Big Beard took a gulp of wine: “I have healed half of your injuries, and have left the other half as a lesson.”

Fang Yuan grumbled, weakly retorting: “Uncle, thank you. But I have told you, this is not about being young, this is a matter of principles!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1196: Sword Heart Clarity

Above Blood Plain.

Nian Er Ping Zhi and Granny Yin’s battle had attracted everyone’s attention.

Granny Yin was a veteran demonic path Gu Immortal, she cultivated soul path and possessed bewitching soul Immortal Gu, and her reputation had already been established long ago in Northern Plains.

She moved like a ghost, gloomy winds surged and vengeful souls moved around her, sending chills down people’s hearts.

And Nian Er Ping Zhi was a shining member of the righteous path’s younger generation, the current Sword Child of Nian Er tribe, his movement was quick and his sword moved like lightning.

Both sides had exchanged dozens of moves, at first they probed each other with mortal killer moves, then they used Immortal Gu, then immortal killer moves, and now the battle was at a very heated stage.

On the field, dark souls had covered most of the sky.

And the white sword light representing Nian Er Ping Zhi was already surrounded, despite it charging everywhere and the dark souls moving away, the overall flow of the battle was dictated by Granny Yin.

“Granny Yin is indeed a demonic path expert, the way she fights is steady and full of experience.” Immortal Wang praised.

Chu Du, however, frowned, silent.

He was inwardly thinking: “Granny Yin is a rank seven Gu Immortal, but she was not able to immediately kill Nian Er Ping Zhi. Even though the situation looks more inclined towards her, Nian Er Ping Zhi’s sword light is still rampaging around without the slightest of hesitation. He still is thinking of winning!”

Inside Golden Dawn Hall, seeing his tribe’s shining hope, a sword path genius, falling into disadvantage, Nian Er Yi Fang was becoming nervous, staring at the battle without blinking.

If the situation looked bad, he would immediately make a move and save Nian Er Ping Zhi.

No matter the rules or reputation, as far as Nian Er tribe was concerned, Nian Er Ping Zhi being alive was most important!

“Hehehehe... such a tender body, you have nowhere to dodge now, accept your death!” A change suddenly happened at this instance.

Countless vengeful ghosts suddenly covered all directions, as they surrounded the sword light that Nian Er Ping Zhi had transformed into.

Then, Granny Yin revealed her true body from amidst the countless dark souls, stretching out her withered finger and pointing at Nian Er Ping Zhi from afar.

Immortal killer move — Bewitching Soul Art!

Nian Er Ping Zhi’s eyes immediately lost their light, the freely moving nimble sword light completely dissipated and turned into his true body.

He was floating in the air like his mind had halted, not having the slightest bit of reaction to the charging Granny Yin.

“Hehehe!” Granny Yin laughed in satisfaction. She opened her mouth wide, revealing her sparse yellow teeth.

Her hand suddenly enlarged by many times, dark wind coiled around her five fingers, her nails as sharp as needles. The fan-like hand descended on Nian Er Ping Zhi’s head.

If this attack were to land true, Nian Er Ping Zhi’s skull would no doubt be crushed under his defenseless state.

“Stop it!” Nian Er Yi Fang shouted as he rushed out of Golden Dawn Hall.

However, Chu Du had already made prior arrangements.

He saw that Granny Yin was firmly grasping the battle situation, and had already considered if she were to make a killing strike towards Nian Er Ping Zhi, she would surely be obstructed by the righteous path Gu Immortals.

Therefore, he had already arranged his forces to lie in wait.

Sure enough, when Nian Er Yi Fang rushed out, Hao Zhen moved out shortly after.

“Shameless fellow, you are interfering in a one on one battle?” Hao Zhen shot out a bolt of lightning right at Nian Er Yi Fang’s face.

Nian Er Yi Fang slightly shook, and emerald wooden armor appeared, covering his whole body firmly.

This wooden armor was Nian Er Yi Fang’s immortal killer move, and it had extremely powerful defense. Regardless of how sharp Hao Zhen’s lightning was, it could not even make a dent on the wooden armor, instead the wooden armor seemed to be rejuvenated as it produced fresh yellow and green leaves, like it had received many benefits.

Chu Du immediately gave out a light gasp.

He was surprised.

What made Chu Du surprised was not Nian Er Yi Fang’s wooden armor, as his wooden armor was already famous in Northern Plains and was his self-created immortal killer move — Sick Tree Spring Armor.

Instead, it was that Nian Er Yi Fang had rushed out madly to save Nian Er Ping Zhi.

However, by using this move and blocking off Hao Zhen’s lightning, he had missed the best opportunity to save Nian Er Ping Zhi.

Chu Du considered what he would do in Nian Er Yi Fang’s position, his tribe’s genius, a star of the younger generation, was at risk of losing his life, while he himself could choose to either block the lightning or move to protect Nian Er Ping Zhi’s life.

But right now, Nian Er Yi Fang had chosen to protect himself. This action meant he did not feel it was urgent to save Nian Er Ping Zhi.

What was going on?

“Oh no!” Chu Du’s heart suddenly jumped, and he quickly looked at the battle.

He was just about to warn Granny Yin, but it was already too late.

The sluggish looking Nian Er Ping Zhi suddenly let out extremely sharp, mysterious light from his eyes.

This change immediately froze Granny Yin’s ecstatic laughter.

Granny Yin’s mind sent out warnings of danger, she wanted to get back to defend herself but it was already late.

An extremely stunning sword light flashed!

Life and death, victory and loss, were determined within this moment of time.

The dark souls were still hovering around, but Granny Yin was already starting to fall down, cut into two by the sword light.

She was gazing at Nian Er Ping Zhi with an incredulous look on her face, unable to think of how he had suddenly gotten free from her signature trump card.

“Bewitching soul art is Granny Yin’s proudest method, which she used when she roamed Northern Plains, but it was actually ineffective against Nian Er Ping Zhi?” Chu Du and his group of immortals paled in shock.

“What’s going on?” Inside Golden Dawn Hall, the righteous path Gu Immortals were both surprised and joyous.

“This is sword heart clarity, it is an immortal killer move in Sword Saint true inheritance, especially used to restrict wisdom path and other similar methods. Few of the Sword Childs in history could use it.” Nian Er Yi Fang laughed heartily, not giving up this chance to increase Nian Er tribe’s prestige.

Ye Lui Xiao Jin could not help thinking: “Is he saying Nian Er Ping Zhi is outstanding even when placed among all the Sword Childs in history?”

He was a genius of Ye Lui tribe, but unfortunately had lost to Xue Wu Hen.

On the contrary, Nian Er Ping Zhi had killed the rank seven demonic path expert Granny Yin. Comparing the two, it was clear for everyone who was better and who was worse.

“This Nian Er Yi Fang is truly crafty. He clearly knew Nian Er Ping Zhi’s situation was of no concern, but still pretended to rush out in panic to save Nian Er Ping Zhi.” Chou Lao Wu mumbled behind Chu Du, feeling indignant.

One had to say Nian Er Yi Fang had acted really well.

Because of his acting, the Gu Immortals of both sides had subconsciously thought Nian Er Ping Zhi was in absolute danger.

Even Granny Yin was deceived.

“No, maybe it was Granny Yin who was too confident in her immortal killer move bewitching soul art.” Chu Du assessed internally: “And this Nian Er Ping Zhi is also not just a brutish person, he actually pretended to be struck by the ability, deceiving Granny Yin. The killer move he used to kill Granny Yin is also not simple, it is terrifyingly powerful and also extremely fast, it is virtually impossible to guard against. It should be one sword life, an immortal killer move used by Sword Saint Nian Er in his younger days!”

“Come back quickly.” Nian Er Yi Fang was in high spirits, but quickly and anxiously transmitted his voice to Nian Er Ping Zhi.

Nian Er Ping Zhi had killed Granny Yin, but he had also suffered heavy injuries.

He quickly retreated, but before leaving, he naturally brought the two halves of Granny Yin’s body with him.

One half of the corpse had Granny Yin’s immortal aperture.

This was Nian Er Ping Zhi’s spoils of battle.

Chu Sect did not stop him, this was one of the rules stated in the competition agreement.

It was like when Xue Wu Hen who had stored away Gu Immortal Liu Hui’s corpse.

However, Xue Wu Hen might have won three battles, but he only killed the rank six Gu Immortal Liu Hui. While Nian Er Ping Zhi might have only won one battle, but he took a rank seven demonic path Gu Immortal, Granny Yin’s, life.

Thus, the righteous path’s side was slightly leading.

Chu Du was feeling the pressure.

The slight dominance brought by Xue Wu Hen had now been balanced out by Nian Er Ping Zhi.

“Who should I send in this next battle?”

Chu Du was hesitating.

Soon, the result of this battle reached Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was still in Lang Ya blessed land, cultivating.

“Nian Er Ping Zhi killed Granny Yin?” Fang Yuan was only slightly surprised before he accepted this fact.

There were many genius experts who were able to achieve the feat of winning against rank seven with rank six cultivation.

But using rank seven cultivation to fight rank eight was extremely rare.

Nian Er Ping Zhi... Fang Yuan did not have any impression of this person in his memories. After all, in his first life, Fang Yuan was still a mortal around this time, and was not at all aware of the events in the Gu Immortal world or Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

What made Fang Yuan more interested was instead Xue Wu Hen.

Precisely speaking, it was the loot in Xue Wu Hen’s possession — that Gu Immortal, Liu Hui’s, blessed land.

“Gu Immortal Liu Hui is an earth path Gu Immortal who has gone through two heavenly tribulations, his blessed land is suitable for me to annex. With this, my cultivation can also rise and reach rank seven.”

As he thought of this, Fang Yuan immediately wrote a reply.

He took the initiative to request for Chu Du’s help in expressing his intention of buying the immortal aperture from Xue Wu Hen.

As for the invitation of Chu Du asking Fang Yuan to help, Fang Yuan used the reason of being in secluded cultivation to delay in a roundabout way.

“I need to raise my cultivation to rank seven first, it won’t be too late to join this blood battle martial competition then.”

Fang Yuan slightly shook his head, throwing the news of this blood battle martial competition to the back of his mind.

The Chu Sect alliance agreement he had was rather lenient. Even if Chu Sect was annihilated, Fang Yuan could choose not to show up and it would not be a problem.

Fang Yuan prioritized raising his cultivation, all the other things were secondary.

Chu Du received Fang Yuan’s reply.

Fang Yuan did not come, which made Chu Du frown.

“Sigh, if Elder Liu Guan Yi could come, I would not be in this difficult spot.” Chu Du heaved a sigh.

Xue Wu Hen was standing beside Chu Du, and curiously asked when he heard Chu Du: “Hearing Brother Chu’s tone, it seems you hold this Elder Liu Guan Yi in high esteem.”

Chu Du laughed: “He had mentioned you in his letter, hoping you can sell Liu Hui’s immortal aperture to him.”

Xue Wu Hen shook his head: “I could not get Liu Hui’s Immortal Gu, but the resources inside the immortal aperture are my battle spoils. I don’t know their value, so how can I sell them?”

His intention of refusal was extremely obvious.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1197: Sword Dragon Transformation

Chu Du smiled.

Deep down, Xue Wu Hen was someone he wanted to recruit to his Chu Sect, so he had been giving him a lot of consideration.

However, Fang Yuan was his collaboration partner, later on he would have to get Reckless Savage’s true meaning from Fang Yuan to raise his strength path attainment.

Chu Du was well aware of which was more important.

“In his letter, Liu Guan Yi entrusted me to accomplish this matter.” Chu Du thought to himself, while transmitting his voice to Xue Wu Hen, “Brother Xue, collaborating with Elder Liu Guan Yi is probably your best choice to get the resources in Liu Hui’s aperture.”

“How so?” Xue Wu Hen asked doubtfully.

“Because Elder Liu has an upper extreme heavenly eagle. This eagle can go into blessed lands, it is better for you take away the resources in the immortal aperture and give the immortal aperture to Elder Liu, making him add on some resources as the price. Isn’t this a win-win situation?” Chu Du replied.

Xue Wu Hen’s eyes brightened.

“Upper extreme heavenly eagle?! I have also heard of this immemorial beast, I did not expect Elder Liu Guan Yi to have such a rare bird.”

Pausing for a while, Xue Wu Hen continued his voice transmission: “I am willing to transact with Elder Liu!”

Right as Fang Yuan’s plan was about to succeed, a change happened.

A Gu Immortal walked out of Golden Dawn Hall.

“It is a Liu tribe Gu Immortal, Liu Zhuan Shen!” Immortal Wang immediately recognized this person.

“He is coming down to fight?” Chu Du’s side cast their gazes.

However, Liu Zhuan Shen did not go to the stage, instead stopped at the entrance of Golden Dawn Hall: “Lord Domination Immortal, my side is willing to use Granny Yin’s corpse to exchange for Elder Liu Hui’s corpse and soul.”

Liu Hui’s corpse had ended up in enemy hands, Liu tribe’s Gu Immortals naturally were not willing to see such a scene.

The corpse was still alright, the main thing was the soul.

Liu Hui’s soul had not been destroyed.

Therefore, Liu tribe’s Gu Immortals wanted to get back Liu Hui’s corpse and soul no matter what.

However, Liu Zhuan Shen did not have enough bargaining chips on him, and was also afraid that the other side would be very greedy and recklessly extort them, if so, then the situation would be quite awkward and they would be put on the spot.

So, Liu Zhuan Shen and the other Liu tribe Gu Immortals felt anxious, but did not make a rash move.

After Nian Er Ping Zhi killed Granny Yin, Liu tribe’s Gu Immortals saw hope in this matter.

Liu Zhuan Shen had thus communicated with Nian Er tribe, and after giving up many benefits, had exchanged for Granny Yin’s corpse.

An immortal aperture was inside Granny Yin’s corpse, and for the moment, was unharmed.

It was only that Granny Yin’s soul was already destroyed by Nian Er Ping Zhi. Nian Er Ping Zhi had a tough victory and simply was unable to hold back.

Granny Yin’s soul was completely destroyed by the immortal killer move one sword life.

However, as far as Liu tribe’s Gu Immortals were concerned, Granny Yin was rank seven while Liu Hui was only rank six, this transaction was very likely to be accomplished.

Chu Du’s side heard these words, and there was immediately a stir among them, as they began to whisper to each other.

Chu Du inwardly exclaimed: “Amazing, this Liu Zhuan Shen has quite the ability, putting me in such a spot.”

Chu Du did not have to turn around to sense the disturbance among the Gu Immortals behind him.

Granny Yin moved alone and had few relations with other Gu Immortals, most of her relationships were even hostile. Granny Yin had come this time only because of Chu Du’s prestige and the rewards.

However, Chu Du knew these Gu Immortals behind him hoped the two sides could exchange the corpses.

The reason was that this blood battle martial competition had just begun, in the following battles, there might be Gu Immortals whose bodies and souls would perish in battle.

If that was the case, so be it, since there was no body nor soul.

But if they lost their life and their soul was left behind in the enemy’s hands, what could they do?

Under such a situation, they could only rely on their side’s Gu Immortals to help retrieve their soul.

“If I agree to Liu Zhuan Shen’s request, I can stabilize these Gu Immortals’ mindsets and lessen their worries. Otherwise, the morale will probably lower which can seriously impact the following battles.”

Chu Du understood the importance of this matter.

Most of the members of Chu Sect and Bai Zu tribe were lone immortals or demonic cultivators. They were not well united to begin with, they only took this risk because of the reputations of Domination Immortal and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, as well as the rewards.

If Chu Du were to refuse now, these Gu Immortals would probably be self-conscious and be on guard against each other.

Chu Du hesitated for a while, apologizing to Liu Guan Yi inwardly, before he spoke, agreeing to this transaction.

Liu Zhuan Shen was joyous, both sides exchanged the corpses.

Xue Wu Hen had lost a rank six earth path immortal aperture and Gu Immortal soul, but obtained a rank seven soul path immortal aperture. While Chu Du had also secretly made it up to him with some snow path killer moves.

So, he was quite happy with this result.

Anyway, even if he interrogated Liu Hui’s soul and obtained earth path killer moves, they would be useless to him.

After both sides exchanged the corpses, Gong Wan Ting also saw the importance of this matter, and took the initiative to negotiate with Chu Du.

Because of this event, both sides had thus conveniently added a rule in the blood battle martial competition regarding the exchange of corpses and soul captives.

After a delay of half a day, both sides engaged in another battle.

Chu Du’s side sent a Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortal, it was the previous Hei tribe supreme elder. The actual Bai Zu bloodline members were still being taken care of.

Before this trip, Chu Du had received Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s instructions to protect as many Bai Zu tribe descendants as possible.

Because of this setback, Fang Yuan’s plan went down the drain.

Not long later, he received Chu Du’s letter, the letter explained the reason in detail. Chu Du’s tone was polite and even apologized to Fang Yuan for not fulfilling what he was entrusted with.

Fang Yuan understood Chu Du’s difficulty.

He was standing in a Gu refinement secret room, mumbling to himself: “I don’t have a use for a soul path immortal aperture. It seems I still have to make a move personally and seize the immortal aperture that I want, and advance to rank seven.”

However, there were many forces in the blood battle martial competition, although Fang Yuan had familiar face, he still needed some new offensive methods.

After all, he had proclaimed to the outside world that he was a transformation path Gu Immortal.

“I have flying bear strength Immortal Gu, but the power of the flying bear transformation is quite poor.”

“Fortunately, I have been considering this beforehand and have many possible solutions now!”

Fang Yuan’s gaze landed on the dragon corpse in front of him.

This was a desolate beast.

Its whole body was shining with silvery light, its horn was sharp as a spear, its eyes were pure white, its fangs and claws looked fearsome, many layers of scales covered its body emitting metallic luster.

This was a silver colored dragon.

The whole body was twenty feet long, its body was slender and its shape was fluid and graceful. It was like a piece of art, but it emitted a dense cold feeling of sharpness, as if anyone who got close to it would be pierced through by the surrounding air.

This was not a false feeling, but it was because this silver dragon with two claws was originally a sword path desolate beast—— Sword Dragon.

Now, it was already dead, its sword path dao marks were gradually dissipating, merging into the surrounding environment.

This was the transformation Fang Yuan had prepared to cultivate ——Sword Dragon Transformation!

“The killer move sword dragon transformation needs dragon scale Gu, dragon horn Gu, dragon claw Gu, dragon eyes Gu, and so on. If any one of the Gu worms is an Immortal Gu, then it becomes an immortal killer move.”

“But I have change form Immortal Gu, this Gu is one of the core essences of transformation path. Thus, I don’t need to refine immortal level dragon scale

Gu, dragon horn Gu, dragon claw Gu or dragon eyes Gu, and only need to refine the mortal Gu versions, and use change form Immortal Gu as the core, to form immortal killer move sword dragon transformation.”

Transformation path killer moves were extremely simple.

It could even be said to be rudimentary.

This was one of the advantages of cultivating transformation path.

Immortal killer moves of other paths were not easy to deduce, but transformation path was completely different in this aspect.

Adding on that Fang Yuan himself was a wisdom path grandmaster, not only did he successfully deduced the contents of sword dragon transformation, but also improved on many aspects, making the transformation faster and nimbler.

Naturally, Gu Immortal Han Dong had a contribution in this.

He was a transformation path Gu Immortal who specialized in cultivating spirit snake transformation.

A dragon had a similar body shape and battle style. Although Han Dong died and his soul had dissipated, he had left behind a land spirit which retained some of Han Dong’s cultivation insights, it was enough for Fang Yuan to take as a reference.

He started activating the Gu refinement formation and began to refine this desolate beast sword dragon.

The desolate beast sword dragon was full of sword path dao marks and in itself was an immortal material which could be refined into Immortal Gu.

However, Fang Yuan’s refinement path attainment was not particularly high, and with just this sword dragon, the immortal materials to refine the relevant Immortal Gu were also not sufficient, so Fang Yuan was refining only mortal Gu to support change form Immortal Gu.

The refinement process went rather smoothly.

Fang Yuan himself was a Gu Immortal and was using precious immortal materials to refine some rank five mortal Gu, the success rate was naturally extremely high and could even be said to be quite easy.

Some days later.

Fang Yuan stood still and took in a deep breath, his mind was still. Suddenly, thoughts surged up like a storm, as Gu worms started activating one after the other.

In just a breath of time, Fang Yuan’s whole body emitted piercing silvery radiance.

After the silver light dissipated, an elegant and exquisite silver sword dragon that was emitting a feeling of sharpness appeared.

The sword dragon’s eyes were white, but they flashed with intelligence.

It was Fang Yuan!

“Immortal killer move sword dragon transformation has already been refined. Next...”

Fang Yuan began to get familiar with his body, brandishing his claws and fangs, or flying in the sky.

His practice drills went quite decently, it was because he had already begun cultivating transformation path. Not only the flying bear transformation, many times, he had used change form Immortal Gu to transform into all kinds of appearances, although they had not reached mastery, he could be said to be familiar with them.

After thoroughly getting familiar with this form, Fang Yuan began to test the might of this immortal killer move.

First was the expenditure of immortal essence.

Very little.

The expenditure of green grape immortal essence to maintain the sword dragon transformation was not high. After all, it only involved rank six change form Immortal Gu.

Next was his battle strength.

Fang Yuan had already arranged immortal materials in front of him.

First was a piece of hundred years profound ice, he swept at it with his claws, Fang Yuan felt like he had sliced into tofu, he easily smashed this profound ice into pieces.

Next, Fang Yuan moved to the subterranean adamantite and clawed at it!

Subterranean adamantite was among the hardest rank six immortal materials, it immediately showed a clear claw marking that reached a few inches deep.

Fang Yuan was immediately aware of the limit of the power of his dragon claws, he did not need to test it on the rank seven immortal material at the side.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1198: Dragon Breath

Gu are the essence of heaven and earth, man is the spirit of all living beings.

Human intelligence was the highest among all the living beings. However, the way of heaven was to have balance, humans were highest in intelligence, but their bodies were extremely fragile.

Humans did not have sharp claws, fur, wings, or gills.

The strength of humans might not be the weakest but it was at the bottom tier. They were fundamentally unable to contest with typical desolate beasts.

Human skin was no different from paper compared to desolate beasts.

However, when Fang Yuan transformed into a desolate beast sword dragon, he obtained the qualities of a sword dragon. Although there was still a difference from a true sword dragon, he was already far beyond the limits of humans.

The initial concept when transformation path was created was —

Study all living beings and add the advantages of those beings to one’s own body.

Humans did not have sharp claws, so transform human fingers into claws. Humans did not have fur, so transform one’s hair into fur.

If one is without wings, then create wings, and fly like the birds in the sky. If one has no gills, transform into a fish, and swim in the depths of the sea.

Naturally, by the current era, the concept of transformation path was not limited to just this.

Using one path to project every path had become transformation path’s main principle, imitating the advantages of other paths.

As time passed, there were bound to be improvements.

The wheels of history would keep on turning forward.

Ever since Reckless Savage Demon Venerable created transformation path, this path had not declined and was passed down throughout human history, moreover, new ideas replaced the old, causing it to thrive even now.

Fang Yuan lightly stretched out his dragon body, flying to the rank seven immortal material.

This was a giant dark inkstone, among rank seven immortal materials, it was considered very firm and had the characteristic of being difficult to process.

His dragon claws slashed at it, but were unable to leave any trace.

Fang Yuan had already expected this, thus he did not use only his claws, instead, he turned his body and suddenly whipped his tail!

Ping.

A sharp sound resounded as the dragon tail fiercely whipped at the dark inkstone.

Pain could be felt from the dragon tail, causing Fang Yuan to take a sharp breath of cold air.

While on the dark inkstone’s surface, a thin crack appeared.

Just based on the dragon tail’s whip, it was more menacing than the claws.

This was an attribute of the sword dragon.

Many dragons’ characteristics differed in subtle aspects.

Some dragons had extremely sharp fangs, their strong bite power surpassing the power of their claws and tail. Some dragons were better at ripping, their claws were their most powerful weapons.

And the sword dragon was slender and nimble, the power of its tail surpassed its two small claws.

And above the power of its tail was the sword dragon’s speed.

Fang Yuan had already practiced it, the sword dragon was not powerful in long distance attacks, but its burst of speed from an unmoving state was impressive.

Although it could not compare to sword escape Immortal Gu, it was not inferior to Fang Yuan’s blood path movement killer move — Blood Torrent.

Moreover, because it was the sword dragon’s own innate movement speed, Fang Yuan could change directions much more nimbly than blood torrent, and it was much easier to maneuver as well.

And the sword dragon’s strongest weapon was its dragon breath.

Dragons could breathe out attacks.

This was almost an innate ability of any dragon.

It was like the upper extreme heavenly eagle, having the innate ability to penetrate space and enter blessed lands and grotto-heavens. It was just that the dragon’s breath was a very common ability, while the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s ability was rare.

Upper extreme heavenly eagles were very rare, rank eight Gu Immortal Hei Fan had also obtained one through a fortuitous encounter. Besides him, no one had obtained another upper extreme heavenly eagle in Hei tribe’s history.

Whoosh!

Fang Yuan tested his dragon breath.

In an instant, a white light flashed and shot at the rank six immortal material subterranean adamantite.

The subterranean adamantite shook lightly before the dragon breath disappeared, the whole process was very fast, it was as if nothing had occurred.

But the next moment, changes started to slowly appear in the subterranean adamantite, a clear crack appeared on the subterranean adamantite, the whole crack was incomparably straight, going from top to bottom in a slightly inclined angle.

The subterranean adamantite was split into two by this thin crack. Then, due to the subterranean adamantite’s enormous weight, the two halves fell down.

Bam bam, two consecutive muffled sounds echoed.

The boulder sized subterranean adamantite had split into two and fallen to the ground.

The cut surface was smooth, like it was directly split by the sharpest weapon in the world.

Fang Yuan’s dragon claws could only leave behind marks a few inches deep. But his dragon breath was incomparably sharp, cutting down this giant subterranean adamantite into two!

It had to be known that subterranean adamantite was considered among the hardest rank six immortal materials.

The might of the sword dragon’s breath could be seen from this.

Despite Fang Yuan being mentally prepared, upon seeing the two halves of the subterranean adamantite, he could not help slightly nodding his dragon head in satisfaction.

Next, he continued to test.

He used his dragon breath on the rank seven immortal material dark inkstone.

Dark inkstone was even firmer than subterranean adamantite, the dragon breath was like sword light, cutting open marks several inches deep on the dark inkstone.

Fang Yuan continuously breathed it out sixteen times before he reached his limit.

For a short period of time, he would not be able to send out his dragon breath, he felt like a traveler in a desert who had not drank water for over half a month, his throat was extremely dry. If he tried to use dragon breath any more, he had the feeling he would destroy his throat.

Consecutively using dragon breath sixteen times changed the appearance of the whole dark inkstone. There were sword marks everywhere on it, it looked somewhat scary.

After resting for some time, Fang Yuan felt he had recovered to some degree.

He breathed out again, sure enough, he used the seventeenth dragon breath!

Fang Yuan engraved this duration in his mind.

He was continuously estimating: ‘With just my own strength, I can use dragon breath sixteen times in a row. After resting for about five minutes, I will recover and can continue to breathe it out. But it is just barely possible, and after breathing out the seventeenth dragon breath, I will once again fall into the previous plight and will still need to rest for five minutes of time.”

“If I add some dragon breath mortal Gu in this, I should be able to increase the amount of times I can use dragon breath.”

Fang Yuan had not yet combined dragon breath Gu in this sword dragon transformation immortal killer move.

Dragon breath Gu was quite difficult to refine.

This was because the material to refine this Gu worm was the breath of dragons.

This dragon Fang Yuan obtained was dead, he had waited for a long time in treasure yellow heaven before he found someone selling it, and he had to pay a considerable price to buy it.

Only a living dragon could send its breath out, which could then be used as material to refine dragon breath Gu.

Naturally, if the Gu recipe was modified and other materials were used to substitute for dragon breath, it could be done. But Fang Yuan clearly did not have such ability.

Besides a living sword dragon, other living dragons also could be used to refine dragon breath Gu.

However, such a dragon breath Gu might be the same in name, but would have some slight differences. Although it could be used, some other mortal Gu had to be added in to remove the differences.

Transformation path was somewhat particular about this aspect.

Thus, Fang Yuan had specifically refined all the required Gu like dragon scale Gu, dragon claw Gu and so on from the sword dragon’s corpse.

By using these Gu worms, he could much more quickly and conveniently activate the immortal killer move, sword dragon transformation.

The testing of the killer move was finished, the results were in line with Fang Yuan’s expectations.

He had pondered deeply about choosing sword dragon transformation, and he had deduced these results in detail prior to this.

“With just a rank six Immortal Gu as the core, sword dragon transformation has a certain level of battle strength, but it is still not enough against rank seven Gu Immortals.”

Normally speaking, rank seven Gu Immortals had defensive methods that were stronger than dark inkstone.

Fang Yuan used the strongest weapon of his sword dragon transformation, dragon breath, but was only able to deform this dark inkstone.

This sword dragon transformation was not sufficient for display in the blood battle martial competition.

Fang Yuan was well aware of this.

He naturally had follow-up methods.

Cancelling his transformation, he flew out of his cloud city and soon arrived in front of Lang Ya land spirit.

Fang Yuan directly expressed his intent: “Greetings to first supreme elder, I am here to exchange for sect contribution points.”

Lang Ya land spirit’s eyes flashed with joy, he knew Fang Yuan had obtained Hei Fan grotto-heaven, had the status of an inheritor of Thieving Heaven, wrecked Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and definitely had many good things in his hands.

And for Lang Ya Sect to develop, it naturally needed better and more precious cultivation resources.

However, Lang Ya land spirit could not force other Gu Immortals to hand over their resources, this would conflict with their interests, and Lang Ya Sect would then fall apart.

“It is good you have such thoughts.” Lang Ya land spirit was greatly interested, “What do you want to contribute to the sect this time?”

“First, take a look at this.” Fang Yuan brought out an item.

“A Gu Immortal’s soul?” Lang Ya land spirit frowned, souls of Gu Immortals could be treated as a type of immortal material, and had more value if they were of a soul path Gu Immortal. There was even more value in the cultivation memories in the Gu Immortal’s soul.

Gu Immortal souls were naturally not common.

Many Gu Immortals had methods to detonate their soul, Shadow Sect were most adept in this. Back then, when Feng Jiu Ge had battled Qin Bai Sheng before he recovered his memories, he had sensed the latter had a powerful soul detonation method, and thus let go of Qin Bai Sheng, not willing to fight to such a desperate extent.

When Gu Immortals battle, it would not be easy for them to hold back. Just like when Nian Er Ping Zhi killed Granny Yin, he directly destroyed her soul.

Lang Ya land spirit accepted this Gu Immortal soul, but he found this soul was already tampered with by Fang Yuan and could no longer be soul searched, only being used as immortal material.

“Like this, this Gu Immortal soul can only exchange for a hundred contribution points.” Lang Ya land spirit said with slight disappointment.

Fang Yuan, however, smiled: “No, I think the price can be slightly higher. We can place this Gu Immortal soul in Dang Hun Mountain and turn it into guts Gu. Gu Immortal souls are extraordinary, they are supreme goods, this will definitely turn into a large sum of guts Gu. Recently, we have not been able to increase the production of guts Gu, with this Gu Immortal soul, we can definitely satisfy the rockman tribe’s requests.”

Lang Ya land spirit came to a realization and nodded: “It is indeed true.”

He estimated the price again and said: “This rank six Gu Immortal soul can be considered as two hundred and ten sect contribution points then.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1199: Huge Sale

Fang Yuan nodded in agreement.

This price was fair, the value of the Gu Immortal soul had increased because of guts Gu.

Since the four races alliance was set, the rockman tribe below the northern icy plain requested for a large amount of guts Gu as they had an extremely urgent need for them.

However, guts Gu had always been sold at a fixed price in treasure yellow heaven. This price could not be reduced, after all, they had to consider the long term.

Currently, although the rockman tribe’s relation with Lang Ya Sect was close, most of the guts Gu were still sold at treasure yellow heaven.

Because of the monopoly on guts Gu, they could not only exchange guts Gu for immortal essence stones, but also exchange for many immortal materials and other resources.

In the resource-scarce northern icy plain, the payment the rockman tribe could provide was not able to satisfy Lang Ya Sect’s development requirements.

For the benefit of the whole sect, Lang Ya land spirit would not make the rockman tribe the main trade partner.

The rockman tribe was dissatisfied but had no choice regarding this.

In short, the production of guts Gu was far from enough to meet the demand in the market. Especially in regards to Southern Border, because of the righteous path Gu Immortals exploring the giant dream realm repeatedly, they had excessive demands for the guts Gu in treasure yellow heaven.

This even created a black market for guts Gu.

Some guts Gu were resold at a much higher price.

Lang Ya Sect had repeatedly raised the price of guts Gu, but the item was still extremely popular, the whole market was like an insatiable monster and even though Lang Ya Sect was already putting full effort in producing guts Gu, it simply was unable to satisfy the terrifying appetite of this monster.

Among Fang Yuan’s revenue sources, the profits from the guts Gu trade had already soared far ahead, entering its own level.

Guts gu was the greatest contributor to Fang Yuan being able to repeatedly use rank seven Immortal Gu in battle and easily replenishing his reserves of green grape immortal essence at set intervals.

Lang Ya land spirit received this Gu Immortal soul and spoke: “Man is the spirit of all living beings, with this Gu Immortal soul, we can indeed increase the production of guts Gu to a huge degree next time. Unfortunately, Gu Immortal souls can only be found by fortunate circumstances and not sought out. In the future, the primary investment for this aspect is still in Tai Qiu. Fang Yuan, if you are free, make a few trips to Tai Qiu. Desolate beast and desolate plant souls might be far inferior to Gu Immortal souls, but we can offset it with quantity and the source is also stable. With you taking action, we should be able to develop even more quickly in Tai Qiu.”

Lang Ya land spirit thought highly of Fang Yuan’s ability.

However, Fang Yuan replied: “I will be going to take part in blood battle martial competition soon, I am afraid I won’t have time to split my attention. This is a second Gu Immortal soul, I hope first supreme elder can verify its quality.”

“Second?” Lang Ya land spirit raised his eyebrows, but was not surprised.

He knew some details about Fang Yuan, and was not surprised at Fang Yuan selling some Gu Immortal souls.

“This is a featherman Gu Immortal’s soul.” When Lang Ya land spirit inspected it, he was slightly surprised. Variant humans were suppressed, variant human Gu Immortals were extremely rare. He had not expected Fang Yuan to have a featherman Gu Immortal’s soul.

“This is your kill?” Lang Ya land spirit casually asked.

Fang Yuan smiled: “Right.”

This Gu Immortal soul was of a featherman, Zheng Ling, the previous soul was Xue Song Zi’s.

Lang Ya Sect was a hairy man sect, regarding an unknown featherman Gu Immortal’s soul, Lang Ya land spirit decided to take it and did not have the intention to investigate further.

Thus, Fang Yuan gained several hundred contribution points.

Immediately afterwards, he brought out a third Gu Immortal soul.

Lang Ya land spirit smiled: “It seems you intend to sell a lot today. Alright, just take out all the Gu Immortal souls you want to sell.”

“Alright.” Fang Yuan started taking out Gu Immortal souls one after the other.

He truly had many Gu Immortal souls.

There were souls of Dong Fang Chang Fan, Xue Song Zi, Zheng Ling and others from before. Later, in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, he killed a group. Then finally, he received even more souls in the turbulent flow sea area.

When Fang Yuan took out three Gu Immortal souls in a row, Lang Ya land spirit smiled.

When Fang Yuan took out six, Lang Ya land spirit was surprised, he subconsciously stood a little from his seat, as if he wanted to come closer to check.

When Fang Yuan took out the tenth Gu Immortal soul, Lang Ya land spirit’s expression changed, he started pointing at Fang Yuan: “How did you kill so many people?”

Fang Yuan smiled: “It was just luck.”

He then continued to take out Gu Immortal souls.

Finally, when Lang Ya land spirit saw Gu Immortal souls all around in the surroundings, he was extremely shocked.

“I finally understand why you are not able to blend in with humans and sided with us variant humans!” Lang Ya land spirit was left speechless.

“You only have rank six cultivation!” Lang Ya land spirit knew details about Fang Yuan, because familiar face was given to Fang Yuan by him.

“How long has it been since you became an immortal? You also still had to travel around here and there to revive yourself. Killing so many people, you are simply like Spectral Soul Demon Venerable when he was young.”

Fang Yuan gave a forced smile when he heard the name Spectral Soul: “I am contributing all these souls to the sect, besides this, I also have many cultivation insights, Gu recipes of all paths, Immortal Gu recipes, killer moves and immortal killer moves. Even battlefield killer moves as well as up-to-date maps of each region, which will make it more convenient for my fellow sect members to move in the outside world.”

Fang Yuan was undergoing a huge sale!

Lang Ya blessed land’s history was extremely long, it had incomparably rich treasures which were even coveted by Heavenly Court and always in the minds of Shadow Sect.

But Fang Yuan had killed so many people, and the things he obtained from soul searching were also extremely abundant.

Most of the treasures in Lang Ya blessed land were payment received in the past by Long Hair Ancestor by refining Gu for others. While some were items purchased by Lang Ya land spirit through treasure yellow heaven.

Among these treasures, the former were stored ages ago, Long Hair Ancestor was a person from three hundred thousand years ago, a figure of the Medieval Antiquity Era.

And the latter could be sold at treasure yellow heaven, one could imagine that the top quality goods among them were sparse, although they would also have rare items.

As for these things Fang Yuan contributed, most of them were the entire foundation of the Gu Immortals, these things were as precious as life to them. Not to mention that they were new creations that would also not be sold for no reason in treasure yellow heaven.

In this regard, Lang Ya land spirit did not reject any offers.

He was different from the previous Lang Ya land spirit, the previous Lang Ya land spirit was only interested in refining Gu, while he was brimming with ambitions, creating Lang Ya Sect and wholeheartedly trying to make hairy men the rulers of the world, restoring their glory from the Immemorial Antiquity Era and Remote Antiquity Era.

Currently, Lang Ya Sect primarily used refinement path, most of the hairy man Gu Immortals cultivated transformation path as well.

Lang Ya Sect wanted to become a large sect, completing Lang Ya land spirit’s ambition, for this they needed to incorporate various kinds of things and possess Gu Immortals of all paths. Like the great Huang Jin tribe super forces of Northern Plains, the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent and so on.

Fang Yuan’s sect contribution points rose steeply.

In another cloud city.

Twelfth Hair was in the midst of refining Gu.

“Oh no, there is an error!” Suddenly, his expression changed as the fire he was controlling suddenly weakened.

He quickly activated Gu worms, spurting out blood into the fire.

Whoosh.

The fire burned high once again, Twelfth Hair was pale, his body shivering uncontrollably. He had just been injured by the backlash caused by failing in Gu refinement, blood was slowly seeping out of his seven orifices, causing the hair on his whole body to moisten with blood.

His wide-opened eyes were filled with traces of blood, as they firmly focused on the fire.

After a while, the burning fire suddenly erupted and disappeared.

The refinement path Gu formation opened up, revealing over a hundred self will Gu.

The hairy man Gu Immortals raised by the previous Lang Ya land spirit had extremely weak battle strength, but had strong Gu refinement ability.

These self will Gu were only mortal Gu but they were rank five. Twelfth Hair could refine over a hundred of these rank five self will Gu at once, revealing his extraordinary refinement path attainment.

Twelfth Hair thought to himself that it was a close shave, he rejoiced: “Fortunately, I sacrificed myself to make up for the mistake. Otherwise, these self will Gu would be destroyed, not only would it waste the effort I spent over these last few days to refine these Gu, I would also have to compensate for it with three times the refinement materials.”

To increase the production of self will Gu, Fang Yuan not only used his sect contribution points to attract other hairy man Gu Immortals to refine them for him, he also supplied them immortal materials out of his own pockets, letting these hairy man Gu Immortals use these immortal materials to refine mortal Gu.

The hairy man Gu Immortals no longer had disdain and disgust towards Fang Yuan like before.

Fang Yuan possessed rank eight battle strength, causing these hairy man Gu Immortals to be filled with respect. Moreover, after such a strong financial ability was revealed, these hairy man Gu Immortals accepted the difference between them and Fang Yuan even more.

Strong dizziness assaulted Twelfth Hair’s mind.

“Refining self will Gu eleven times without pausing is truly too consuming on the body and mind. The mistake just now is a warning that I need to rest. I need to quickly recover and accept some of these self will Gu refinement assignments later to earn more immortal essence stones.”

Twelfth Hair had a bitter expression when he thought of immortal essence stones, heaving a deep sigh.

“Desolate beasts are not easy to raise.”

“These desolate beasts all have great appetites, there is a huge burden on me every month to feed and raise them!”

“More importantly, beast enslavement Immortal Gu is only lent to me, every time I borrow it, I will have to pay with sect contribution points according to the period of time.”

“Considering the long term, I definitely need to buy this beast enslavement Immortal Gu. But rank six beast enslavement Immortal Gu needs up to ten thousand sect contribution points...”

Twelfth Hair took out an information path Gu worm.

This Gu worm had one use, to display the sect contribution points of all Gu Immortals in Lang Ya Sect and rank them accordingly.

Simply put, it was Lang Ya Sect’s contribution list.

Twelfth Hair looked into it with his consciousness and easily found his name in the upper half of the list.

Then he saw a series of numbers beside his name.

“Over six hundred sect contribution points, but I am still way too far from my target!” Twelfth Hair gave a bitter smile, feeling he had a long way to go.

“But the other hairy man Gu Immortals are also similar to me, some are even worse than me.”

“My advantage lies in that I cultivate enslavement path as well, and now already have several desolate beasts with me. I can obtain sect contribution points more easily than others.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1200: Dragon Breath Immortal Gu

“That’s right, this is my advantage, I need to prioritize my strengths from now on and make full use of my talents in battle.”

“I can use this to break the deadlock and drive up my cultivation speed.”

“According to this development, my strength will continue to grow and the sect will need me more often. When I have strength like Elder Fang Yuan, the sect contribution points will be solely mine to take!”

“Cheer up, these days will keep on improving, Twelfth Hair, you need to continue working hard and reach your peak in life!”

Twelfth Hair’s mood changed, and his fighting spirit gradually returned.

As he thought of Fang Yuan, he subconsciously glanced at the first name of Lang Ya Sect’s contribution list.

Last time, because of the four races alliance, Fang Yuan had obtained a thousand sect contribution points which had caused the hairy man Gu Immortals’ mouths to water in envy.

But recently, because Fang Yuan had issued large numbers of Gu refinement tasks, his sect contribution points had been continuing to dwindle, and quickly at that.

Fang Yuan’s name still occupied first on the list, but the gap with the second ranked hairy man Gu Immortal was getting smaller and smaller.

A lot of hairy man Gu Immortals were waiting for the time when Fang Yuan’s name was surpassed.

Fang Yuan was a human Gu Immortal possessing rank eight battle strength, surpassing him at the contribution list would give a different sensation to the hairy man Gu Immortals.

It would be an enormous glory!

However, the next moment, Twelfth Hair’s whole body suddenly stiffened.

He remained still like a stone statue.

Because he saw the number behind Fang Yuan’s name.

“Over fifteen thousand sect contribution points, how could it be?!” Twelfth Hair almost felt like he was hallucinating.

Ever since Lang Ya Sect was established, there had been no one who had obtained so many sect contribution points.

At most, at one time, Fang Yuan’s sect contribution points had reached above two thousand, before it started rapidly falling.

Now, Fang Yuan’s sect contribution points had passed fifteen thousand!

Unbelievable!

This was an unprecedented record!

Twelfth Hair’s heart shook wildly, but the following scene made him even more shocked.

Fang Yuan’s sect contribution points were continuously rising!

Fifteen thousand, eighteen thousand, twenty thousand, thirty thousand... fifty thousand, sixty thousand...

The number kept on rising steeply!

“It surpassed... eighty thousand!” Twelfth Hair was stupefied at the sight. What made him even more astonished was that Fang Yuan’s sect contribution points still showed no signs of stopping!

When it reached over ninety thousand, suddenly, Fang Yuan’s total sect contribution points decreased by over seventy thousand!

Only over ten thousand was left now.

“What is happening?”

“Could it be, I actually refined Gu so much that I am starting to hallucinate?”

“This, this is a dream?”

“Ah, no!”

Twelfth Hair suddenly shook and snapped back to awareness.

“Over seventy thousand sect contribution points suddenly disappeared, Fang Yuan definitely exchanged for an Immortal Gu. No, he did not exchange for my beast enslavement Immortal Gu, right?”

Twelfth Hair quickly took out another information path Gu worm and placed his consciousness in it.

After inspecting, he let out a heavy breath of relief: “So he did not exchange for beast enslavement Immortal Gu, but a rank seven Immortal Gu. It is good as long as it is not beast enslavement Immortal Gu.”

That was seriously a huge scare!

Twelfth Hair patted his chest, his whole body easing up.

But the moment he relaxed, his eyes rolled backwards as he fainted on the spot.

He had suffered injuries during the Gu refinement process, and his mood had swung up and down at this moment, he naturally would fall unconscious after relaxing.

Achieving his target, Fang Yuan returned to his cloud city.

Inside a secret room, he took out a completely new Immortal Gu.

This Gu resembled light purple colored fog in the form of a dragon, it did not have a fixed shape and was floating around.

Rank seven Immortal Gu — Dragon Breath!

Fang Yuan had finally chosen sword dragon transformation because Lang Ya Sect’s treasury had this Immortal Gu.

To exchange for this Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan had to sell all his Gu Immortal souls along with large amounts of cultivation information he had obtained from soul searching.

Naturally, Fang Yuan had withheld some of the contents. Like Dong Fang Chang Fan’s wisdom path methods, Hei Fan true inheritance’s important details, and so on.

This had sharply raised Fang Yuan’s sect contribution points to above ninety thousand. In the near future, this amount would be Fang Yuan’s peak, difficult to surpass.

Then, Fang Yuan used over seventy thousand sect contribution points to exchange for the rank seven transformation path Immortal Gu, Dragon Breath.

In just a short while, his sect contribution points had fallen to over ten thousand.

But he still occupied first place on the contribution list.

The second ranked Gu Immortal on the contribution list only had four digits in terms of contribution points.

The gap had been widened by a huge margin.

Fang Yuan’s position was firmly in place like a mountain.

Naturally, Fang Yuan did not care about the sect contribution list.

He also did not know Twelfth Hair had received a great impact from this event and had fallen unconscious.

If he knew, Fang Yuan would think he was over-thinking it.

Not all Immortal Gu in Lang Ya blessed land could be exchanged. Beast enslavement Immortal Gu was on the exchange list, but Lang Ya land spirit had clearly left it behind for Twelfth Hair.

Even if Fang Yuan wanted to exchange for it, he would not be able to.

Besides this, rank seven Immortal Gu Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was also not for sale.

This Immortal Gu was originally Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s Immortal Gu, later it was refined by Long Hair Ancestor up to rank eight and was merged into the rank eight Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron.

Some time ago, Shadow Sect had invaded Lang Ya blessed land, destroying Refinement Cauldron and seizing many of the core Immortal Gu. Although Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus remained, it had been damaged and had fallen from rank eight to rank seven.

If Fang Yuan wanted to exchange for this Immortal Gu, he would have to pay a very large price that could move Lang Ya land spirit’s mind.

However, Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus would not be of much help to Fang Yuan. He had calculated that after he raised his cultivation to rank seven and his immortal essence started producing red date immortal essence, it would be sufficient.

It was not worth it to pay a greater price for just Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.

Fang Yuan spent some time before he successfully integrated this rank seven dragon breath Gu into his immortal killer move, sword dragon transformation.

Transformation path immortal killer moves were essentially very simple. Dragon breath Gu was a natural component of sword dragon transformation.

What’s more, Fang Yuan was a transformation path grandmaster.

With this rank seven dragon breath Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan simply did not need any dragon breath mortal Gu.

Like in Hei Fan’s true inheritance, Hei Fan had really wanted to obtain immortal level day Gu and month Gu. Because then, when he activated days pass like years and similar immortal killer moves, he would not need to spend so many mortal day Gu and month Gu.

Having a relevant Immortal Gu made it extremely convenient.

It also reduced the difficulty of controlling the killer move.

Its effect would also have a large boost!

Taking a deep breath, Fang Yuan tried sword dragon transformation again.

Silver light burst out, shining towards the sky.

Just looking at this, Fang Yuan knew that sword dragon transformation’s might had increased by multiple times.

From within the silvery light, a sword dragon revealed its figure. Its body was more than double the size of before, reaching over forty feet.

Its eyes were still white, its scales were much wider and thicker than before, there were now two more claws, reaching a total of four claws now. The dragon horn protruded out further, piercing towards the sky.

Fang Yuan inspected all over and saw that every aspect had received a huge boost in quality.

“After adding the rank seven dragon breath Gu, this is now an ancient desolate beast level sword dragon.” Fang Yuan was well aware.

As such, this immortal killer move could be used at the blood battle martial competition.

The previous sword dragon transformation would not work.

It could only be used to bully some ordinary rank six Gu Immortals.

The current ancient sword dragon had the qualifications to match against rank seven Gu Immortals.

Next was the most important part.

Fang Yuan was unavoidably a little nervous.

He lightly stretched out his dragon body and flew to a completely new dark inkstone.

Dragon breath!

Fang Yuan opened his mouth and breathed out.

In that instant, a pure white sword light flashed past.

Crack, a crisp sound was heard, as the dark inkstone was cut in two.

Not only this, the sword light still had strength remaining to destroy the whole secret room.

Fang Yuan’s cloud city shook intensely, giving off muffled noises as large numbers of Gu worms that formed the secret room died instantly.

“I have already controlled my strength, the dark inkstone already bore most of the dragon breath, only a small part of its power was leaked out.” Intense joy flashed past the ancient sword dragon’s eyes.

Fang Yuan had only displayed a small portion of his strength, but his surrounding environment actually was unable to endure it.

Although the cloud city’s structure was exquisite and hairy man Gu Immortals had spent immense mental effort to make it, it was after all only a mortal Gu house, and could not endure the remaining power of the ancient sword dragon’s breath.

Green grape immortal essence continued to be consumed to maintain the form of the ancient sword dragon.

Clearly, the immortal essence expenditure had increased by many times.

Where there are gains, there are losses.

After all, adding rank seven Immortal Gu dragon breath had increased the level of the immortal killer move, sword dragon transformation, immortal essence being expended rapidly was an inevitable outcome.

“I can no longer practice in the cloud city. Lang Ya blessed land has many observers, but if I go out of Lang Ya blessed land I will receive even more attention from heaven’s will.”

“It seems I still need to place my sovereign immortal aperture and properly test the limits of ancient sword dragon transformation.”

“The dragon breath I send out has already reached rank seven battle strength, its effect is outstanding and the expenditure is still small. How powerful will it be when I use sword marks targeting death, dark assassination and triple layered sword wave in my ancient sword dragon form?”

Fang Yuan was feeling anticipation.

He resolutely took action, immediately flying out of the cloud city, going through the super Gu formation and teleporting to the outside world.

“Fang Yuan has left. He actually exchanged for dragon breath Immortal Gu, what is the reason?” Sixth Hair was secretly activating investigative methods, paying close attention until the super Gu formation activated and Fang Yuan’s figure disappeared from his perception.

After Sixth Hair knew the change in the sect contribution points list, he was filled with unease.

Fang Yuan’s development speed had surpassed his expectations again. Moreover, he did not understand the direction of Fang Yuan’s growth.

“Fang Yuan naturally won’t exchange for an Immortal Gu that has no use to him. No, I need to report this information to Lord Ying Wu Xie quickly.” Sixth Hair was filled with worries.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1201: Ye Lui Qun Xing

Sun was shining bright in the sky of Northern Plains, with no clouds to be seen in the surroundings.

However, at Blood Plain, starlight shone brilliantly, as if stars filled the sky.

Golden Dawn Hall was quietly floating in the air, it stood majestically, no matter how much turbulence was going on outside, it remained lofty and unmoved.

In contrast, the Gu Immortals on Chu Du’s side were all standing on clouds, their expressions looking unsightly or filled with worries.

Chu Du was expressionless, but his gaze that looked at the battle was extremely heavy.

“Immortal Wang is going to lose.” Chu Du sighed internally.

In the center of the battlefield, Immortal Wang was fighting with the righteous path Gu Immortal Ye Lui Qun Xing!

Immortal Wang had already transformed into a heaven swallowing hound, charging left and right with astonishing might.

The heaven swallowing hound was an immemorial desolate beast, but Immortal Wang was only a rank seven Gu Immortal, this transformation path immortal killer move also did not have a relevant rank eight Immortal Gu in it. So, this heaven swallowing hound’s battle strength was only at rank seven level.

And Immortal Wang’s opponent, Ye Lui Qun Xing, was tall and thin like a bamboo pole. He had three strands of hair as a beard and had a yellowish-white complexion. Right now, he was far away from the heaven swallowing hound, hundreds of star fragments were flying around him, shining with brilliant light, dying the sky a color of blue.

Immortal Wang’s heaven swallowing hound transformation used all its strength to attack.

However, countless star fragments, big and small, tightly surrounded him.

Of these star fragments, small ones were the size of a lantern, while the big ones were the size of an elephant. They kept on flying around, a small portion were encircling Immortal Wang with dizzying speed, while the larger portion were encircling Ye Lui Qun Xing, moving slowly in a mysterious trajectory.

Plop.

A muffled sound echoed, a star fragment firmly collided against Immortal Wang's body.

The heaven swallowing hound's movement slowed, and exposed a flaw when it tried to dodge.

Boom boom boom.

Three muffled sounds resounded as this opportunity was taken, star fragments collided against Immortal Wang fiercely.

The heaven swallowing hound let out a low growl, coughing out a large amount of blood, its feet staggered and almost fell down to the ground.

Any Gu Immortal with eyes could see who was in control of the situation.

Immortal Wang was the one attacking, but was in an absolute disadvantage from start to finish.

And the defending Ye Lui Qun Xing was the one who held the upper hand, putting himself behind layers of defense.

This battle tactic was naturally a correct one.

One often had to choose long range battle when dealing with transformation path Gu Immortals.

Because the Gu Immortal that transformed into desolate beast, ancient desolate beast or even immemorial desolate beast, would have a strong and sturdy body, just relying on their transformed body's quality, their battle strength would increase to a terrifying level.

Gu Immortals of other paths mostly had human bodies. Their physical qualities were weak, even if they had powerful defensive methods, they did not want to put themselves in such a dangerous situation where they were fighting with their weakness against a transformation path Gu Immortal's strength.

The dominance was already clear, Ye Lui Qun Xing was in an impregnable position.

He spoke in a clear voice: "It is useless, Immortal Wang. My immortal killer move was created by taking Dong Fang Chang Fan's myriad star fireflies as a reference, the flying trajectory is extremely profound and inscrutable. Previously, six star fragments could completely obstruct you. Now, there are at least thirty-six star fragments around you, how will you break through?"

This Ye Lui Qun Xing was also a person with an interesting past.

He had challenged Dong Fang Chang Fan, and had suffered defeat after defeat, but had still persisted in challenging him. Dong Fang Chang Fan was a righteous path figure, the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal of Northern Plains who had single-handedly led Dong Fang tribe to prominence.

Ye Lui Qun Xing's defeats did not make Northern Plains' Gu Immortals feel he was weak.

Instead, they very much appreciated him fighting back despite the repeated setbacks, and his steady, unwavering spirit.

As one of the leading figures of the righteous path, Dong Fang Chang Fan could not lay a heavy hand on Ye Lui Qun Xing, who was similarly of Huang Jin bloodline.

There was even one time when after he defeated Ye Lui Qun Xing, he personally instructed him regarding some secrets of myriad star fireflies.

Ye Lui Qun Xing treated the guidance as a precious treasure, immediately going into closed cultivation.

Unknown to him, this was precisely Dong Fang Chang Fan’s scheme.

Dong Fang Chang Fan had not only gotten rid of the annoying Ye Lui Qun Xing, this also expressed his goodwill to Ye Lui tribe, and had smoothly accomplished an instance of collaboration with Ye Lui tribe, gaining large amounts of benefits.

Ye Lui Qun Xing had originally felt that Dong Fang Chang Fan was a thorn in his eyes, but having obtained benefits from Dong Fang Chang Fan, he did not feel he could shamelessly challenge Dong Fang Chang Fan again. After coming out of his closed cultivation, he chose to focus hard on his own development and did not even find trouble with other Gu Immortals of Dong Fang tribe.

As such, this trump card killer move of his clearly bore resemblance to myriad star fireflies.

Myriad star fireflies was Dong Fang Chang Fan’s killer move, which was famous throughout the whole of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

Ye Lui Qun Xing’s move, however, treated the star fragments as the main body, it could be considered as him creating his own unique method.

A real star was extremely huge, Fang Yuan had been using star eyes Immortal Gu up until now, and had only managed to refine one star.

Immortal Wang’s heaven swallowing hound transformation kept on coughing up blood, and was struck by more and more star fragments. He could not even retort, he was dizzy and was heavily injured, moreover, his immortal essence expenditure had reached an enormous amount.

The immortals on Chu Du’s side showed even more unsightly looks.

“If Immortal Wang is defeated, he would be the fourth person Ye Lui Qun Xing has defeated from our side!”

“His immortal killer move is truly too powerful, when it was just two or three star fragments, they can still be resisted. When fifteen star fragments appear and they work together as one, the difficulty to resist them increases by countless times. Right now, he already has a hundred star fragments, achieving complete dominance, this simply cannot be resisted.”

Inside Golden Dawn Hall, the righteous path immortals had smiles on their faces.

Ye Lui Xiao Jin was watching the battle with excitement, Ye Lui Qun Xing was his senior, seeing this senior about to defeat his fourth opponent, Ye Lui Xiao Jin also felt excitement and pride.

On the other side, Nian Er Ping Zhi was still regulating his breathing.

One thing worth mentioning was that Nian Er tribe’s position had already moved to the center.

This was because of Nian Er Ping Zhi’s battle where he had killed the rank seven demonic path expert Granny Yin.

Many rank six geniuses and experts had the battle strength to go against rank seven. But being able to kill rank seven was a different level altogether.

Adding Nian Er Ping Zhi’s young age to this battle achievement, this undoubtedly became even more rare.

By this time.

The allied righteous path forces, and the alliance of Chu Sect and Bai Zu, had already gone through over ten battles.

At the start, Chu Du had the discerning eye to send out the promising young Xue Wu Hen, who won three battles in a row, awing others.

Then, from the righteous path’s side, Gong Wan Ting sent Nian Er Ping Zhi. Similarly a rising young genius, Nian Er Ping Zhi’s battle result was even more brilliant, using the immortal killer move sword heart clarity and killing the renowned demonic path expert Granny Yin.

Afterwards, Gong Wan Ting negotiated with Chu Du, and the two sides temporarily stopped the battle, setting rules regarding exchange of corpses.

Then the battle began again, Yuan tribe of the righteous path, Meng tribe, and other tribe’s Gu Immortals appeared one after the other, while Chu Du sent out Hao Zhen, Chou Lao Wu as well as some Gu Immortals of Bai Zu tribe to contest with them.

Perhaps it was because they were senior Gu Immortals, each side had their own victories and defeats, and suffered varying degrees of injuries, but there were no deaths.

Seeing the situation seemingly entering a stalemate, Gong Wan Ting pondered for a while before sending Ye Lui Qun Xing.

This person was a true main strength among Ye Lui tribe’s force. He was an expert among rank seven Gu Immortals, although he had many losses among his battle achievements, they were against Dong Fang Chang Fan, naturally, no one would look down on him.

What made people especially admire him were his character and spirit. He had suffered many defeats from Dong Fang Chang Fan, but he always came back stronger.

Worth mentioning was that Ye Lui Hui Hong had the highest seniority, but his battle strength could not compare to Ye Lui Qun Xing.

The righteous path paid attention to seniority, unlike the demonic path which only looked at strength.

Finally, Chu Du spoke: “Alright, this battle is our loss.”

Immortal Wang retreated with a shameful expression.

Ye Lui Qun Xing also did not forcibly go after his life, after all, Immortal Wang still had the ability to protect himself and it would give enough time for Chu Du to come help.

Immortal Wang was pale, his mood extremely complicated.

He was the fourth opponent of Ye Lui Qun Xing and had originally thought of having gotten an easy opportunity, but the result was that Ye Lui Qun Xing’s battle strength had not fallen even after three battles.

Immortal Wang returned to his human form and walked towards Chu Du, saying in a heavy voice: “That Ye Lui Qun Xing’s immortal killer move is extremely ingenious. His immortal essence expenditure is definitely small, and the star fragments have mutual attraction force between them, creating a good deal of starlight magnetic force, I am afraid it would not be easy to discern the mysteries of this killer move unless one is a star path Gu Immortal.”

“The opponent would be implicated by these star fragments. These star fragments are very fast and sometimes they would suddenly form a formless force which skewed my direction, making me lose control over myself many times. Now that I think of it, Ye Lui Qun Xing was weakest in the first battle. Now, he has already released a hundred star fragments, forming an array for battle. The ones who will go later will lose many advantages, and would find it very difficult to go against this array.”

Immortal Wang’s tone was sincere, these were his sincere words, they were also reasons given to excuse himself and not be held at fault.

Chu Du nodded and patted Immortal Wang’s shoulder: “No need to say much, it is good that you returned safely.”

It was a simple action, but this action almost made Immortal Wang’s eyes tear up.

“Who wants to come fight next!” At this time, Ye Lui Qun Xing called out.

“It seems this person still does not want to retreat and wants to fight his fifth battle!” Chu Du’s expression slightly changed, killing intent flashing in his eyes.

The immortals behind him started whispering.

“He has already defeated four people in a row, he still seems to have strength remaining.”

“Immortal Wang’s strength is outstanding, he transformed into a heaven swallowing hound but was still unable to win, sigh!”

Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals were silent.

Bai Zu Wei was already dead, what they were good at was not individual battle strength, but Green City Rampage.

Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu’s wind thunder roar was renowned throughout Northern Plains, it could be considered a trump card that could pressure the opponents and make them feel apprehensive. It was only that they had already battled separately and still bore some injuries.

When Gu Immortals were injured, because of the conflict of dao marks, they were very difficult to heal.

For a moment, Chu Du actually found that he had fallen into an awkward situation of having no experts to send.

Comparatively, in the righteous path, experts filled Golden Dawn Hall, while Chu Du’s side was only an alliance of the newly established Bai Zu tribe and his sect, they indeed had few members and were seriously stretched out.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1202: Arrogance Concealed Under Beauty

“Do I have to go myself?”

Facing the awkward situation of having no experts to send, Chu Du unavoidably had such a thought.

He could naturally take the stage and also had the confidence to win against Ye Lui Qun Xing.

But what would it look like when Chu Du, as the strongest expert on his side, took the stage? Would it not make their side look weaker?

Moreover, even after he wins against Ye Lui Qun Xing, the other side would definitely continue to send other Gu Immortals. Gong Wan Ting, Yao tribe’s Yao Yuan Ying, Guan tribe’s Guan Yang, Nu Er tribe’s Nu Er Gu and Nu Er Qian, all of these people were experts who Chu Du needed to pay attention to.

Two fists cannot rival four palms.

Chu Du could win one battle, two battles, three battles, but could he guarantee he would win all the battles?

Chu Du fell into silence.

“What, no one wants to fight? We have just reached this stage and there is already nobody left?” Ye Lui Qun Xing did not let go of this chance to mock them.

Xue Wu Hen could not endure this provocation, he was a very prideful person. He requested to be sent by Chu Du: “Let me go deal with this Ye Lui Qun Xing.”

However, Xue Wu Hen was only at rank six, how could Chu Du let him go? Xue Wu Hen might be able to battle rank seven, but the other party was an expert among rank sevens.

Chu Du slowly shook his head.

Right at this moment, his eyes suddenly brightened, because an information path Gu worm flew to his immortal aperture through treasure yellow heaven.

“Wonderful! Elder Liu Guan Yi’s timing is perfect.” Chu Du sent his consciousness into the Gu worm and after absorbing the information, his brows immediately relaxed.

He had confidence in Liu Guan Yi! He had always thought Fang Yuan’s strength was only second to his in Chu Sect.

Especially when they made the trip to Crazed Demon Cave, Fang Yuan’s performance had left a deep impression on Chu Du.

“Be patient. My Chu Sect’s second supreme elder is about to arrive. Ye Lui Qun Xing, why are you in such a rush, enjoy your moment of victory for a while longer.” Chu Du chuckled as he said in a plain tone.

“Chu Sect’s second supreme elder?”

“Chu Du is the first supreme elder, doesn’t it mean this second supreme elder is only second to him?”

“This person is very mysterious, no one knows where he comes from, and we have very limited information on him.”

Both sides’ Gu Immortals discussed.

The righteous path Gu Immortals in Golden Dawn Hall started discussing and exchanging information on Fang Yuan.

“Think about that Xue Wu Hen, what is strange about them having Liu Guan Yi?” Nian Er Yi Fang caressed his beard, speaking unconcernedly.

“So what if he is stronger? At most, he would have rank seven peak battle strength, our side is a gathering of experts and geniuses.” Ye Lui Hui Hong laughed.

Gong Wan Ting spoke softly, her voice lingering around the whole of Golden Dawn Hall: “Chu Du is not blind, this person is placed above Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu. He is Chu Sect’s second supreme elder, we should assume that he possesses an outstanding aspect.”

Xue Wu Hen’s eyes brightened, having many expectations regarding Fang Yuan.

“Elder Hao Zhen, how is Elder Liu Guan Yi’s strength?” One Hei tribe Gu Immortal asked. Naturally, this Hei tribe Gu Immortal had now already changed his surname to Bai Zu. He had not participated in the battle of Iron Eagle blessed land, and it was not appropriate for him to ask Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals, Bai Zu Wei had died in the battle, and this had become almost like a taboo topic in Bai Zu tribe.

Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu were respectively Chu Sect’s third and forth supreme elder. Actually, they were uncomfortable at being underneath Fang Yuan, but right now, they could not damage their own sect’s reputation.

“He claims to be a transformation path Gu Immortal.”

“But we have never seen him use any transformation killer moves. Even in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, when we resisted the attacks of Heavenly Lord, it was like that.”

The surrounding Gu Immortals could not help but draw in deep breaths.

The words of Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu made people unavoidably think towards one aspect.

“It seems this Elder Liu Guan Yi is quite amazing! Even the invasion of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu did not make him use all his strength?”

“This was the person who first intruded Iron Eagle blessed land and seized almost all the eagle nests.” A Gu Immortal of Bai Zu bloodline was feeling complicated at this moment.

“He has arrived.” Chu Du suddenly spoke.

The immortals behind him followed Chu Du’s movement and turned around, looking behind them.

Inside Golden Dawn Hall, the righteous path immortals also cast their gazes over.

A multicolored cloud was flying rapidly, upon which a young-looking Gu Immortal stood at the front with his head held high.

He wore a white robe, the wide sleeves constantly fluttered backwards due to the wind.

He had long black hair and a jade-like complexion, with sharp eyebrows and bright eyes, his nose bridge was tall, and his skin was white like snow. He had a light smile on his face, appearing relaxed and unfettered, and was extremely handsome, even a man would be moved by his appearance.

Just one glance at Fang Yuan left a deep impression on these immortals.

“Elder Liu, you have finally come.” Chu Du smiled brightly, flying over to welcome him.

“Domination Immortal Chu Du personally went to receive him?”

Seeing this scene, many Gu Immortals were shaken, instantly, Fang Yuan’s status had risen by multiple levels in their hearts.

“What are the origins of this Liu Guan Yi? What has he done to deserve such treatment from Domination Immortal?”

The righteous path Gu Immortals looked at each other, as they started to pay more importance to Fang Yuan’s arrival.

“This information path Gu worm records the battle scenes from earlier, look at it quickly.” Chu Du flew in front of Fang Yuan, and secretly handed an information path mortal Gu to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan silently accepted it.

Chu Du treated him as an equal, after the Crazed Demon Agreement, Chu Du’s and Fang Yuan’s relationship had become much closer.

The group of immortals subconsciously went silent, patiently watching Fang Yuan slowly fly towards the battle.

“This person is Ye Lui Qun Xing, he primarily cultivates star path. He has already defeated four people on our side, we need you to show your might and defeat him.” Chu Du spoke softly to Fang Yuan as he pointed at Ye Lui Qun Xing, who was standing proudly in the air.

Fang Yuan inwardly thought: “I came over because of this person. A star path blessed land is suitable for me to annex. Moreover, this guy has rank seven cultivation, after I annex his immortal aperture, my cultivation will immediately soar and reach rank seven, I will start producing red date immortal essence.”

Ye Lui Qun Xing was tense.

Ever since Fang Yuan had appeared, he had been paying close attention to him.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was tranquil, he could not read his expression at all.

After some thinking, Ye Lui Qun Xing solemnly spoke: “I am honored.”

The immortals quietly looked at Fang Yuan, awaiting him entering the battle.

Fang Yuan, however, internally was shaking his head.

He had already read all the information in the information path Gu worm, Chu Du had given him, and knew all the moves Ye Lui Qun Xing had shown before.

Fang Yuan had a clear estimation of Ye Lui Qun Xing’s strength.

He was probably at the level of experts like Unfettered Scholar and Pi Shui Han, or maybe slightly weaker, all in all, he was an expert among rank sevens.

Above them would be people like Domination Immortal Chu Du and Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei.

And above Chu Du were Feng Jiu Ge and Qin Bai Sheng after regaining his memories.

It was fully achievable for him to defeat Ye Lui Qun Xing with ancient sword dragon transformation.

But killing him would be difficult with a frontal assault. Especially under the view of the crowd and their watchful eyes, everyone was on guard against each other.

Let alone when the opponent was Ye Lui Qun Xing.

The most important thing regarding this person was this immortal killer move, not only did it expend little immortal essence, it also had terrifying offensive and defensive properties.

Even more praiseworthy was his mental state and nature.

Losses could not defeat him and could only make him stronger.

If this kind of person was the enemy, the best thing was to kill them.

Even Dong Fang Chang Fan felt a headache because he could not kill him.

But how to kill him?

Fang Yuan estimated he did not have a high chance of killing Ye Lui Qun Xing. After transforming into an ancient sword dragon, Fang Yuan’s battle strength would reach the level of Unfettered Scholar. However, Fang Yuan’s ability to sustain a long battle was quite poor, after all, green grape immortal essence could not compare to red date immortal essence.

One hundred beads of green grape immortal essence could turn into one bead of red date immortal essence. But when using rank seven Immortal Gu, the effect that could be reached with one bead of red date immortal essence required at least one hundred and thirty beads of green grape immortal essence.

This created a phenomenon of intensifying expenditure.

Gu Immortals using higher rank Immortal Gu were like children waving around a sledgehammer, it was very difficult.

As he pondered this, Fang Yuan spoke: “I won’t fight.”

The immortals were stunned.

“Why won’t you fight, are you afraid?” Immortal Wang’s sneering voice came from behind.

Ever since the Iron Eagle blessed land’s battle where Fang Yuan had treated him as a scapegoat, Immortal Wang had felt hatred towards Fang Yuan. The expectant gazes of immortals at Fang Yuan, made Immortal Wang very dissatisfied. He, himself, was defeated by Ye Lui Qun Xing, and the person whom everyone’s expectations were placed on was his enemy. Such a feeling left a really bad taste in his mouth.

Fang Yuan did not respond.

Chu Du, however, immediately frowned, as he turned back and gave a fierce glare at Immortal Wang.

Immortal Wang quickly closed his mouth, beads of cold sweat starting to seep out of his forehead.

Chu Du inwardly shook his head: “Immortal Wang and these other Gu Immortals were all lone immortals or demonic cultivators, they are accustomed to being unrestrained. After joining Chu Sect, their awareness has not increased much. Right now, even if he has some dissatisfaction with Liu Guan Yi, how could he reveal the internal conflicts of Chu Sect in front of the public?”

At the same time, Chu Du looked at Fang Yuan, he did not speak but his gaze inquired: Why won’t you fight?

Fang Yuan gazed at Ye Lui Qun Xing, sneering: “He is too weak, I can kill him with just my spit. Do we kill chickens with an ox-cleaver? Fighting him is an insult towards my status.”

Arrogant!

Way too arrogant!!

For a moment, the stomachs of the immortals churned, as all kinds of thoughts surged in their minds.

Fang Yuan looked like a quiet handsome boy, who could have thought his first few words would reveal the astonishing arrogance within him.

“He actually said he can win against an expert like Ye Lui Qun Xing with just his spit? Even Domination Immortal Chu Du might not be able to do it!” Nian Er Ping Zhi was displeased.

“He is tooting his own horn too much.” Xue Wu Hen looked at Fang Yuan with a dazed look. He had always thought he was a very prideful person, but he could not compare to this person before him.

Fang Yuan spouted a lot of nonsense right away. His arrogance caused many people to be dissatisfied.

The most dissatisfied person was Ye Lui Xiao Jin.

He was young and full of vigor, Ye Lui Qun Xing was his tribe member, humiliating Ye Lui Qun Xing was like humiliating him.

Therefore, this young Gu Immortal immediately stood up and shouted loudly: “You don’t dare to show your skills, but you have quite the mouth! How can you estimate the skills of my tribe’s Lord Qun Xing? You are not being proud, but are intentionally saying this because you are afraid!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1203: Shameless

“I don’t know if you are afraid or not, but we can all see whether you dare or not.” A Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortal sneered.

He had pure Bai Zu bloodline, behind him was Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, even Chu Du did not have a sway over him.

Fang Yuan lightly glanced at this person, the latter looked back without any fear.

Clearly, Fang Yuan stealing the eagle nests had caused the hatred with Bai Zu tribe to be big.

Fang Yuan swept his gaze around, the Gu Immortals all gazed back at him with doubts, curiosity, uncertainty, anticipation and so on. Especially, Xue Wu Hen who was beside him, his gaze was shining.

“Not fighting.”

“What kind of person am I?”

“This weakling?”

“Hehe, not worthy of me making a move.”

“In the future, when my biography is written, my first battle after seclusion is against Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, but the second battle is with this thing? There won’t be any splendor even if I win against such a minor character of Ye Lui tribe.”

No matter how open-minded Ye Lui Qun Xing was, his tone unavoidably had become colder from anger: “Hmph, so much nonsense! You have said so much, come fight me if you have guts!”

“You don’t have enough qualifications.” Fang Yuan held his hands behind his back, head raised and chest out, as he looked at Ye Lui Qun Xing with unconcealed contempt.

Many Gu Immortals’ eyes widened.

They really wanted to ask: Ye Lui Qun Xing actually doesn’t have enough qualifications, then who has the qualifications? What qualifications do you have? I really don’t understand where you are getting such confidence from!

You are clearly a demonic path lone cultivator, who knows where you came from. Ye Lui Qun Xing fighting you is giving you face, giving you the chance to perform and gain some glory.

But the person involved, Fang Yuan, clearly did not have such a thought.

The immortals began discussing, the situation had become noisy from the clamor.

They were all talking about Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan turned a deaf ear to their words.

After a while, Gong Wan Ting’s expression turned cold, lightly calling out:

“Enough, do you all want to make the grand blood battle martial competition into a joke?”

The righteous path immortals immediately turned silent.

Gong Wan Ting then looked at Chu Du: “Could it be that your side only has troublemakers remaining? Stalling for so long will only make others ridicule you.”

Facing the overbearing Gong Wan Ting, Chu Du did not reply, instead looking at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan ignored Chu Du’s gaze and slightly turned towards the side, pointing backwards: “You.”

“Me?” A former supreme elder of Hei tribe, currently a Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortal, was completely stumped, not having expected Fang Yuan to suddenly point towards him.

“Go take the fight, if he can win against you, it means he has some qualifications for me to make a move once.” Fang Yuan’s tone was still very arrogant, even his own side’s Gu Immortals felt their teeth itch from hearing him.

The immortals’ gazes turned towards this unlucky person.

This Gu Immortal immediately felt huge pressure.

His anger was boiling: “Who did I provoke to suddenly send me to battle? Moreover, why the hell are you commanding me? I am a Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortal, even Domination Immortal Chu Du can only discuss with me. How can you, a mere second supreme elder, command me?”

This Gu Immortal had decided to refuse.

But then he heard the discussions of other immortals.

For instance —

“Ye Lui Qun Xing is so strong, he has already defeated four people in a row. Now, letting this person fight, isn’t it letting the enemy gain more battle achievements?”

“Hmph, this person is only a minor character, Ye Lui Qun Xing can easily beat two of this guy.”

“He is a Hei tribe Gu Immortal, although his surname has changed to Bai Zu, can he really fight to the death with a Huang Jin bloodline Gu Immortal?”

Wow!

When these discussions resounded in this Gu Immortal’s ears, he immediately realized that he had no choice but to go to battle.

He fiercely glared at Fang Yuan, unfortunately, Fang Yuan had already turned around, facing him with his back.

The Bai Zu tribe Gu Immortal was furious and aggrieved, but could only give in and fly to the stage.

There was nothing unusual about the battle.

This Gu Immortal was clearly weaker than Ye Lui Qun Xing. After exchanging ten or so moves, he lost.

“I hope Elder Liu Guan Yi can fight now and enlighten us.” This Bai Zu Gu Immortal carried his injuries back, and his first words were to sarcastically speak to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan snorted: “You are too weak.”

The Bai Zu Gu Immortal suppressed his anger: “I am indeed too weak, elder should show his divine prowess.”

Fang Yuan’s following words almost made him flare up –

“Taking so long to fight with a weakling like you. I have to admit I had overestimated that Ye Lui Qun Xing. Now, I have no interest to battle with him at all.”

“You!” The Bai Zu Gu Immortal was stifled to the point of being speechless.

The immortals’ gaze towards Fang Yuan were also vaguely changing.

Xue Wu Hen’s expression was even more blatant, he sized up Fang Yuan with intense suspicion.

“So it was like this. The so-called Chu Sect’s second supreme elder is just a poser.” Ye Lui Qun Xing scoffed, his scoff felt piercing to Chu Du’s side’s Gu Immortals.

“Lord Domination Immortal, have you ever seen him make a move?” Ye Lui Xiao Jin also added.

Chu Du was silent, he had sensed Fang Yuan’s strange behavior but decided to wait and watch.

“Elder Liu Guan Yi, if you truly have skills, go kill him!” That Gu Immortal of Bai Zu tribe sneered.

Fang Yuan lightly shook his head, boasting shamelessly: “How can you comprehend my power? That’s why you will never have the hope of becoming an expert like me.”

Ye Lui Qun Xing flicked his sleeves and walked away. He knew Fang Yuan could not be forced to fight.

In truth, after fighting five people in a row, he was indeed feeling exhaustion. His immortal essence expenditure was still good, the main thing was that his mind had been taxed a lot.

Seeing him retrieve the star fragments and leave, many on Chu Du’s side let out a sigh of relief.

Ye Lui Xiao Jin was also extremely happy, as he raised his head high and ran to the entrance of Golden Dawn Hall to welcome Ye Lui Qun Xing.

How could they have known Fang Yuan to speak: “Look, he is indeed afraid of me, even if I didn’t enter the battle, he has been feeling frightened, now he is unable to maintain his cool any longer, having no choice but to leave.”

Ye Lui Qun Xing’s steps slightly paused.

Xue Wu Hen’s eyes widened, as he gazed at Fang Yuan and thought: “There is actually such a shameless person in this world? It has really opened my eyes. Brother Chu actually gave this person the status of second supreme elder, perhaps his judgment has dulled.”

Ye Lui Xiao Jin’s mouth almost twisted from anger.

On the contrary, Ye Lui Hui Hong’s expression slightly changed, he squinted his eyes and started looking at Fang Yuan.

Ye Lui Qun Xing shook his head, continuing to leave without even glancing at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly: “Ye Lui Qun Xing, f*ck your eighteen generations of ancestors!”

The whole scene was silent, before they suddenly burst into an uproar.

Where is your disposition? Where is it?

The Gu Immortals screamed internally.

Who could have thought the elegant looking Fang Yuan would swear out loud in public. Even if they were fighting for their lives, Gu Immortals always maintained their disposition, after all, they all praised themselves as being righteous. Cursing like this in front of everyone was really letting go of one’s reputation.

“His good looks are wasted.” A Gu Immortal gazed at Fang Yuan, shaking their head constantly.

No doubt, the favorable impression Fang Yuan gave to the immortals at first glance was already ruined.

Fang Yuan laughed sinisterly, suddenly walking to the battle stage: “Ye Lui whatever, I am here, didn’t you want to fight with me?”

Ye Lui Qun Xing stopped and gazed back.

The atmosphere of the whole scene changed.

Inside Golden Dawn Hall, Ye Lui Hui Hong was sitting upright, his expression solemn: “Qun Xing, careful, this person is doing something underhanded. Come back.”

Fang Yuan’s earlier and later attitude made Ye Lui Hui Hong realize that something was fishy.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Gutless rat, Ye Lui tribe is made up of cowards, you are a bunch of bastards...”

All kinds of derogatory terms were thrown out one after the other.

The immortals were stupefied as they listened.

Chu Du wanted to cover his face, Fang Yuan did not have even a bit of elegance, he was destroying the image of Chu Sect.

A piece of rat poop spoils an entire pot of soup!

It was the first time Chu Du reconsidered on his decision to draw in Fang Yuan, was it correct?

But no matter what anyone said, Fang Yuan's provocation was effective.

The righteous path was easier to deal with than demonic path and lone cultivators in certain aspects. Especially when the question was about reputation. When it involved the tribe and bloodline, even if one did not care on the inside and was willing to ignore the other's cursing, in front of the public, with so many outsiders watching fixedly, it became another situation.

The super forces which were held together by bloodline and blood relations protected and attached great importance to the reputations of their ancestors.

This was their basic moral philosophy!

"Qun Xing, come back. I will personally face the skills of this Chu Sect's second supreme elder." Ye Lui Hui Hong stood up.

Fang Yuan unavoidably felt disappointed inwardly, but laughed on the surface: "Ye Lui Qun Xing, it's time to scram."

Ye Lui Qun Xing waved his hand at Ye Lui Hui Hong, smiling at Fang Yuan, revealing his white teeth: "Since it is so hard to find a chance for you to fight, how can I avoid the battle and escape? It is just that I have fought hard for five battles, and need to rest for a while."

Such a request was completely fair.

Fang Yuan smiled, this Ye Lui Qun Xing could still be so cool-headed. But he also did not expect these words to be able to make these Gu Immortals lose their rationality from anger.

In truth, his pestering had already reached his target.

So, Fang Yuan immediately allowed: "Rest as much as you want, I will give you two or three days. If two or three days are not enough, then take two or three years, hahaha!"

"Hehe, an hour is enough." Ye Lui Qun Xing smiled with clenched teeth.

Fang Yuan was really detestable, Ye Lui Qun Xing was naturally very angry.

But he was also very aware of his own situation.

His immortal essence expenditure was not much and he still had a lot of reserves left. Resting for an hour was mainly to restore his mental energy. He had his own methods for this, and after an hour, he could completely recover to his peak state!

At that time, he will let this Liu Guan Yi taste his power!

This hour of time appeared somewhat unbearable as the Gu Immortals waited.

Finally, Ye Lui Qun Xing recovered and walked to the stage, standing opposite Fang Yuan.

"Liu Guan Yi, I..." Ye Lui Qun Xing was just about to speak when Fang Yuan's body suddenly erupted with dazzling silver light.

At the next instance, a silver colored ancient sword dragon shot out of the light.

It had a sharp dragon horn, its mouth was opened wide, revealing it to be densely filled with sharp fangs.

"So despicable!"

“He actually sneak attacked!!”

The righteous path’s immortals scolded at once.

The ancient sword dragon had already neared Ye Lui Qun Xing.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1204: How Could It Be Seen Through?!

Ye Lui Qun Xing had a great fright as he quickly retreated!

“This shameless guy!” He cursed inwardly, not having expected Fang Yuan’s actions. Every time he felt that Fang Yuan was shameless, Fang Yuan’s following actions would completely redefine shamelessness.

Fortunately, Ye Lui Qun Xing had been all the while and reacted in time.

One chased and the other escaped.

The distance between Fang Yuan and Ye Lui Qun Xing was rapidly shrinking.

The immortals held their breaths.

Ye Lui Xiao Jin also subconsciously stood up, looking at Ye Lui Qun Xing with worry.

Ye Lui Hui Hong, however, stood stably in his seat, he had a better understanding of Ye Lui Qun Xing’s trump cards and did not think Ye Lui Qun Xing was in danger right now.

“So he cultivates ancient sword dragon transformation!” Chu Du thought.

“Ancient sword dragon, based on potential, it is still inferior to my heaven swallowing hound...” Immortal Wang had clenched teeth.

“He finally took action!” This was what many Gu Immortals were thinking.

“Go.”

The retreating Ye Lui Qun Xing suddenly called out, pushing lightly towards the charging ancient sword dragon.

Immediately, his whole hand emitted brilliant blue light. A star fragment shot out from the blue light and collided against Fang Yuan with a speed like that of a meteor.

Fang Yuan roared towards the sky before suddenly moving, the whole ancient sword dragon made a beautiful arc in the air, as it nimbly moved past the incoming star fragment, almost brushing past it.

When the Gu Immortals saw this scene, despite having an extremely bad impression of Fang Yuan, many of them could not help but give praise internally, as they sensed Fang Yuan had already reached a proficient level at ancient sword dragon transformation.

Such control made Fang Yuan seem like he was an ancient sword dragon from the start of his life.

“Not good.” Immortal Wang suddenly spoke.

Almost at the same time, Ye Lui Qun Xing saw Fang Yuan moving past this star fragment, and the corner of lips slightly raised up.

Ping.

A sharp sound echoed. Fang Yuan’s dragon tail swung, directly smashing the star fragment he had brushed past.

The ancient sword dragon Fang Yuan had turned into had a more terrifying tail compared to its claws, its tail could directly smash dark inkstone, let alone this star fragment.

Such a response made even Chu Du pleasantly surprised.

He was happy inwardly: “The information path Gu worm I gave to Liu Guan Yi has records of all the battle scenes of Ye Lui Qun Xing. So Liu Guan Yi knows he absolutely cannot let Ye Lui Qun Xing have many star fragments under his control. The greater the number of star fragments he controls, the stronger he would become. Finally, it would form into an enormous advantage that managed to defeat five people in a row.”

Ye Lui Qun Xing was slightly disappointed when he saw Fang Yuan responding in the wisest way, and quickly increased his retreating speed.

At the same time, he repeatedly clapped, layers of blue light covered his two hands, from which star fragments shot out one after the other.

At first, they were only thumb sized, but as they moved in the air, they returned to their original size and flew more rapidly, bringing in strong gusts of wind.

Boom boom boom.

Fang Yuan used his horn, claws as well as his body and tail to destroy all these star fragments.

He did not give Ye Lui Qun Xing any opportunity to accumulate power.

For a moment, star debris flew all around, turning into blue fragments like fog or sand, which scattered with the strong gale, creating a beautiful sight that was difficult to describe.

The silver scales of the ancient sword dragon also added to this beauty, as it moved along the star debris.

Chu Du slightly frowned.

Originally, Fang Yuan made a wise choice of smashing the star fragments, targeting the weakness of Ye Lui Qun Xing’s immortal killer move. But also because of this, it led to a decrease in Fang Yuan’s speed.

The distance between the two did not shrink much.

The advantage of the sneak attack before had already disappeared now.

Ye Lui Qun Xing had already stabilized himself.

He snorted, as he struck out with his hands rapidly, star fragments shot out everywhere, but not directly towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan fell into a difficult situation with two choices in front of him.

If he charged directly towards Ye Lui Qun Xing, the latter would retreat and he would not be able to forcibly close the distance, at the same time, the surrounding star fragments would keep on increasing, accumulating a great advantage for the latter.

If Fang Yuan dealt with these star fragments, he would have to keep on flying around, and would fall deeper into Ye Lui Qun Xing’s scheme, giving the latter the initiative to more easily arrange the battle situation.

The ancient sword dragon slowed down its offense in its state of hesitation.

Sensing this, Chu Du’s frown became deeper, while Ye Lui Hui Hong, inside Golden Dawn Hall, was starting to smile, taking a small sip of fine wine.

Despite Fang Yuan’s hesitation not lasting for long, he had missed a good opportunity and there were now dozens of star fragments on the battlefield.

Ye Lui Qun Xing’s advantage had started to accumulate.

Fang Yuan was surrounded by the star fragments, despite him not caring about his body, and engaging in even more crazed offenses, he was not able to break through the layers of encirclement.

Ye Lui Qun Xing relaxed, the star fragments continued to increase, not only surrounding Fang Yuan, some had also appeared beside him, orbiting around continuously.

“Liu Guan Yi, you acted arrogant and boasted shamelessly, it was to make me take back the star fragments so I would have to lay them out again.”

“Your scheme was quite deep, almost letting others think you are wildly arrogant. Unfortunately, I am not the same person I was years ago.”

“A few years ago, I already improved upon this weakness of my immortal killer move. It is indeed somewhat weak at the start, but your methods are not enough to restrain me.”

“Now, what are you going to use to resolve this situation?”

A dragon’s roar resounded, Fang Yuan moved his body, brandished his claws, and destroyed countless star fragments, star debris flew all around.

The dragon’s might was powerful, its speed was especially astonishing.

Unfortunately, the spectating immortals sensed weakness within this strong momentum.

Fang Yuan was attacking wildly, but Ye Lui Qun Xing was far away, watching with arms folded in front of him, maneuvering the star fragments leisurely.

As time passed, there were more and more star fragments orbiting around Ye Lui Qun Xing.

“Liu Guan Yi has lost!” Immortal Wang spoke decisively at this sight.

Xue Wu Hen did not speak, inwardly thinking: “Based on strength, Elder Liu Guan Yi is indeed powerful, at the same level as Elder Hao Zhen and Elder Chou Lao Wu. But there is still a gap when compared to Ye Lui Qun Xing.”

Chu Du was still frowning, the strength Fang Yuan displayed was not consistent with his expectations. But he still felt Fang Yuan had a trump card and was still confident in Fang Yuan, and until the end of the battle, he would choose to keep his expectations.

Ye Lui Xiao Jin laughed heartily at the entrance of Golden Dawn Hall, and shouted: “That Liu Guan or whatever, why are you not yelling now? Come on, continue boasting. Didn’t you say my tribe’s Lord Qun Xing could not compare to you? Didn’t you say fighting him would lower your status? Why are you not speaking now? Only knowing how to yell, what do you want to vent out?”

The ancient sword dragon roared furiously, destroying the star fragments.

Sensing Fang Yuan’s furious mood, Ye Lui Xiao Jin laughed again.

“Chu Sect’s second supreme elder is only at this level.”

“In all fairness, he does have some strength. Have you counted how many star fragments he has already destroyed?”

“But that is useless, Ye Lui Qun Xing’s dominance is already increasing.”

“Liu Guan Yi’s hesitation earlier decided the battle. This was his only fault but it was perfectly used by Ye Lui Qun Xing.”

“Thinking of it, it is also not strange. What is Chu Sect? How can they be on par with our great Huang Jin forces? Their second supreme elder has such battle strength, Chu Du cannot be considered to have made a bad judgment.”

The righteous path Gu Immortals drank and rejoiced inside Golden Dawn Hall, the atmosphere was relaxed.

Ye Lui Hui Hong stroked his beard, the smile on his face had become brighter, but at the same time, he did not forget to speak and remind Ye Lui Qun Xing: “Be careful of his dragon breath. The ancient sword dragon’s strongest weapon is its breath. Until now, he still hasn’t breathed out once.”

Ye Lui Qun Xing slightly nodded.

Even without Ye Lui Hui Hong’s reminder, he had already been concerned about this.

Experts!

They were not decided with just strength, but also their mental state during battle.

No doubt, Ye Lui Qun Xing who had suffered numerous defeats, had an extremely good mentality. He was an expert that had gone through painstaking training, setbacks and defeats.

His foundation was extremely solid and stable.

However, Ye Lui Qun Xing did not retreat.

Right now, he was quite far away from Fang Yuan, almost at the opposite end of the battlefield.

Ye Lui Qun Xing looked at the star fragments orbiting around him, and thought: “I have a hundred star fragments protecting me. Even if Chu Du personally comes, I can resist for a while, let alone this Liu Guan Yi. Dong Fang Chang Fan, you might have passed away, but let me sustain the reputation of myriad star fireflies for you. After all, my immortal killer move had received your guidance.”

Right as most of the Gu Immortals felt the battle was decided, there was a sudden change!

Sword escape Immortal Gu!

Suddenly, Fang Yuan activated rank seven sword escape Immortal Gu.

Right now, he had transformed into an ancient sword dragon, his transformation path dao marks had turned into sword path dao marks, adding on to his cultivation of sword eyebrows Immortal Gu, his sword path dao marks had already reached a number of ten thousand.

A thousand dao marks could double an Immortal Gu’s power.

Ten thousand dao marks could add ten times the power!

Sword escape Immortal Gu was already an exceptional movement Gu worm among rank seven Immortal Gu. Now, ten times its power was added!

At the same time, the ancient sword dragon’s own speed also had to be calculated.

Sword dragons did not have strong long range attacks, but their burst of speed from a stationary state was astonishing.

Ancient sword dragon, sword escape Immortal Gu and ten thousand sword path dao marks, when stacked together, allowed Fang Yuan to instantly disappear from his spot.

Before any immortals had reacted, he had already flown through the whole battlefield and appeared in front of Ye Lui Qun Xing!

At this moment, Ye Lui Qun Xing’s expression was still paused on a strategic and victorious smile. But his pupils had shrunk to needle-sized, as he looked, with extreme fright, at a gigantic sword dragon head that filled his whole vision!

He only had one thought in his mind —

“Impossible! My star fragments’ flying trajectories are extremely profound and takes reference from myriad star fireflies, how could he see through it?!”

This was Ye Lui Qun Xing’s final thought in life.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1205: Be Careful of Liu Guan Yi

Everything happened too quickly!

At the previous moment, the ancient sword dragon was still tightly surrounded by star fragments. It was charging here and there, roaring repeatedly but unable to do anything.

At the previous moment, Ye Lui Qun Xing was still at the other end of the battlefield, star fragments were orbiting around him like he was the lord of stars.

At the previous moment, almost all the Gu Immortals felt Ye Lui Qun Xing already had victory in his grasp and the battle was decided. Because they were very much familiar with the scene that was unfolding in front of them.

Before this, the five Gu Immortals Ye Lui Qun Xing had defeated in succession were all in this situation.

Although there was no study of ‘subconscious bias’ in this world, these Gu Immortals’ thought processes were almost the same at this moment.

Then, at the next moment!

Fang Yuan suddenly used sword escape Immortal Gu, instantaneously bursting out with an extremely terrifying speed.

At the next moment, the ancient sword dragon had destroyed all the obstructing star fragments in its path, and arrived in front of Ye Lui Qun Xing.

He opened his mouth and breathed out.

Dragon breath!

While Ye Lui Qun Xing was still confident in his defensive methods, his whole head had instantly been sliced off.

The human body was weak and had many fatal areas. One the head was cut off, they would die. Even if they turned into an immortal zombie, their head was still a weak point.

Ye Lui Qun Xing immediately died!

Fang Yuan smoothly grabbed his body.

A portion of Ye Lui Qun Xing’s soul was also cut and before it could escape from his physical body, Fang Yuan had already stored it inside his immortal aperture.

The whole process went extremely quickly.

Fang Yuan had already been plotting for a long time!

Activating Sword Escape, charging in, using his dragon breath and retrieving the corpse. The whole process involved four actions.

But even so, after Fang Yuan finished these four actions, his whole dragon body had already charged out of the battlefield, reaching several li away.

One could feel how terrifying his speed was!

If it were a human body, it might have already burst from the enormous pressure brought by such intense speed.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan had transformed into a dragon.

But even with this, Fang Yuan felt quite a bit of pressure when he had charged.

His vision had already turned blurry.

If he had human eyes, they would not have been able to keep up with such speed. But Fang Yuan's eyes were dragon eyes now, even so, it was difficult for his eyes to cope with this speed.

At this speed, even Fang Yuan felt like he could not sustain it.

“If I am to move with this speed, I must use all my energy and concentration in controlling my body.”

“Otherwise, if there is any deviation in my direction, who knows whether I crash into peaks or the ground at the next moment.”

“This speed is too fast, one moment I am still in the air, and the next moment I am already several li away!”

Fang Yuan thought in his mind.

He thought of when he had first gotten the sovereign immortal aperture and practiced colliding into Southern Border's mounds, besides knocking himself dizzy, the whole mound and even the veins underneath had been destroyed.

This speed was quite suitable for a momentary burst, but in truth, it was not highly practical during battle.

Once Fang Yuan used his fastest speed, he would have to use all his energy and concentration in controlling the ancient sword dragon body. As such, he could only perform some simple actions, or maybe rely on the transformed sword dragon body.

If so, it would be quite dangerous.

Because although Fang Yuan would have a sturdy and strong body in ancient sword dragon form, the sovereign immortal body's characteristic of non-conflicting dao marks would still exist.

“Ancient sword dragon transformation is a classic case of strong offense and weak defense, moreover, there is an extreme imbalance between its offense and defense.”

“Fortunately, I actually succeeded this time and killed Ye Lui Qun Xing. My luck is pretty good!”

“First, I need to find a place to annex this immortal aperture before I think of anything else.”

Fang Yuan did not return, directly flying away from Blood Plain.

The Gu Immortals of both sides watched his figure dazedly, until he disappeared into the horizon.

The immortals looked at the messy battlefield with countless star debris as well as many star fragments still flying in the air, only then did they come to a sudden realization!

“Liu Guan Yi, he killed Ye Lui Qun Xing!”

“Unbelievable! This is like a dream.”

“Too fast, we simply cannot react to such speed.”

Regardless of the righteous path or Chu Du’s side, they were both clamoring in discussions. Gu Immortals did not transmit their voices secretly, but directly spoke out, as if they could only release the doubts in their hearts by speaking up.

Ye Lui Xiao Jin was standing, dumbfounded, at the entrance of Golden Dawn Hall, like a statue.

Just moments before Ye Lui Qun Xing was killed by Fang Yuan, he had still been shouting and mocking Fang Yuan.

Now, these words he spoke out, as well as his actions, seemed to be like slaps that struck his face repeatedly and resoundingly.

He was shaken and shocked, unable to believe this fact!

Ye Lui Hui Hong also stood from his seat, his hand was still holding a wine cup and his beard was wet from the spilling of the wine.

Just the moment before Fang Yuan killed Ye Lui Qun Xing, he had been sitting and moving the wine cup to his lips.

But after the matter occurred, Ye Lui Hui Hong subconsciously stood up from shock, not caring about the wine cup in his hand, letting the wine spill on his beard, neck and clothes.

Ye Lui Qun Xing was dead!

An expert of Ye Lui tribe, a famous Northern Plains Gu Immortal, Ye Lui Qun Xing was dead.

His death was so sudden that there had been no signs at all.

If Ye Lui Xiao Jin was said to be a future hope of Ye Lui tribe, then Ye Lui Qun Xing was a current pillar of the tribe.

But he had died.

His life had ended here!

This was an extremely heavy impact to Ye Lui Hui Hong and Ye Lui Xiao Jin!

And to the whole of Ye Lui tribe as well, this was an extremely big loss!

“Terrifying, too powerful.”

“He is indeed the second supreme elder of Chu Sect, such astonishing battle strength.”

“Chu Du really has an eye for talent, I had been looking down on Liu Guan Yi just before, my insight is still too superficial.”

The Gu Immortals on Chu Du’s side were all showing happy expressions.

Despite them not liking Fang Yuan, the battle achievement was displayed in front of them, Fang Yuan had resolved their difficult problem, Ye Lui Qun Xing, permanently.

From now, there would be no such person in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world!

“Amazing. Elder Liu put on a pretentious appearance to incite the other side, then during the battle, he lured the enemy into having a false sense of security step by step. He clearly has such strength, but he restrained himself until the last moment, when he dealt the fatal blow!” Xue Wu Hen heaved a long sigh.

He was thoroughly convinced.

Such a turn of events made him fully admire Fang Yuan.

“How laughable I was, I had still been thinking Elder Liu was nothing impressive. Sigh, if I was Elder Liu’s enemy, I might have died without knowing how I died. I am still too inexperienced!”

“Everyone needs to pay attention, this Liu Guan Yi is extremely crafty, be vigilant when you encounter him in the future.” Inside Golden Dawn Hall, Nu Er Gu spoke with a grave expression, breaking the long silence.

Right now, as they thought back to Fang Yuan’s performance, they all felt Fang Yuan was extremely insidious and sly.

The arrogance before the battle and the weak display during the battle were just disguises so he could strike with the most fatal attack at the end.

He did not make a move carelessly, but when he moved, it shook everyone!

“Ping Zhi, if you run into this Liu Guan Yi alone in the future, it would be best for you to avoid him and retreat.” Nian Er Yi Fang looked at his tribe’s future hope, and spoke with worry.

Nian Er Ping Zhi nodded: “Yes! I understand. I am only a Sword Child right now, when I become a Swordmaster in the future and cultivate to rank seven, I will definitely have a proper fight with this Elder Liu Guan Yi.”

The righteous path Gu Immortals spoke to each other.

“Ye Lui Qun Xing died a miserable death. The whole battle was in Liu Guan Yi’s grasp, what we and Ye Lui Qun Xing felt and saw, was all just his facade.”

“Sigh, who could have thought he had such strength.”

“Elder Ye Lui Hui Hong, don’t blame yourself. We will definitely take revenge for Ye Lui tribe in the coming battles!”

Ye Lui Hui Hong had already snapped back to awareness.

There was one thing he did not understand in his mind — how was Liu Guan Yi able to easily penetrate through the heavy lines of defense from Ye Lui Qun Xing’s numerous star fragments!

He had sparred many times with Ye Lui Qun Xing and was very clear on how much power the defensive lines held.

This doubt was shrouding over Ye Lui Hui Hong’s heart, like a heavy dark fog.

He took two large breaths, his face was still pale, but he forcibly calmed down because right now, he represented the whole of Ye Lui tribe.

If his performance was not good, the whole of Ye Lui tribe would be disgraced!

“Lady Gong Wan Ting.” Ye Lui Hui Hong took a deep bow to the main seat, “My tribe’s Ye Lui Qun Xing is of pure Huang Jin bloodline, sacrificing his life here is also a glory for him, he is a hero of our Huang Jin bloodline. But now, his corpse is still in his killer’s hands, his soul also might still be alive. I sincerely request to come forward and recover Qun Xing’s corpse and his soul.”

“Of course.” Gong Wan Ting softly agreed, her attitude was straightforward and clear.

According the rules set by both sides previously, they could exchange corpses.

But right now, Fang Yuan had already raced off to who knows where with Ye Lui Qun Xing’s corpse. Even if the righteous path Gu Immortals wanted to chase him, they were too late.

Thus, Gong Wan Ting directly asked Chu Du.

Chu Du was also surprised at Fang Yuan’s direct departure, and had already sent a letter to ask. Fang Yuan had such strength, Chu Du still needed to rely on him.

Just as Gong Wan Ting had asked, Chu Du had coincidentally received Fang Yuan’s reply in his immortal aperture —

“I have great use for Ye Lui Qun Xing’s corpse! Brother Chu, if you have no choice, just expel me from Chu Sect.”

These were two simple sentences, but they expressed Fang Yuan’s firm and unrelenting attitude.

Chu Du frowned, but spoke calmly to Gong Wan Ting: “Fairy, you can rest at ease, Ye Lui Qun Xing’s corpse will definitely be guarded properly. I have already notified my sect’s second supreme elder. But to exchange for the corpse, your side will have to pay a price.”

“Everything can be discussed.” Ye Lui Hui Hong immediately agreed, his stance was clear.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1206: Becoming Rank Seven!

Fang Yuan had already thrown the matter of the blood battle martial competition to the back of his mind.

He absolutely would not let go of Ye Lui Qun Xing’s immortal aperture. Even if he could not annex it right now, he could do so in the future.

As for the righteous path’s demand for Ye Lui Qun Xing’s corpse and soul, Fang Yuan thought about it and was willing to satisfy a portion of the request, regarding the body.

His focus was the immortal aperture, Ye Lui Qun Xing’s soul also could not be transacted, he could soul search and obtain many of Ye Lui tribe’s secrets. After the soul search, he could still hand over this Gu Immortal soul to Lang Ya Sect and earn sect contribution points.

“The urgent matter right now is to test whether I can annex this immortal aperture or not.”

Fang Yuan flew rapidly.

He took twists and turns, guarding against heaven’s will.

A few hours later, he arrived at Tai Qiu.

Tai Qiu was not too far away from Blood Plain.

If looked from Northern Plains’ map, Blood Plain would be at the left side and Tai Qiu would be at the right side, the territory in between was Hei tribe’s Iron Eagle blessed land.

Blood Plain, Iron Eagle blessed land and Tai Qiu, if these three were connected in two lines, they would form an irregular V shape.

Entering Tai Qiu, Fang Yuan changed his appearance and sneaked inside.

He was familiar with the route, and soon, he arrived at the super Gu formation he had arranged previously.

Through the super Gu formation, he arrived at Lang Ya blessed land.

“Fang Yuan has returned!” Sixth Hair immediately paid close attention to Fang Yuan’s every move.

“Ever since he left after exchanging for dragon breath Immortal Gu, this is the first time he has returned. What did he use dragon breath Immortal Gu for?” Sixth Hair was constantly guessing.

He did not know that hours ago, Fang Yuan had used ancient sword dragon transformation to kill a rank seven Gu Immortal expert, Ye Lui Qun Xing.

This person was at the same level as Pi Shui Han and Unfettered Scholar.

Fang Yuan’s strength was now already able to compare favorably to these characters.

Since the failure at Yi Tian Mountain, Shadow Sect was in an extremely disordered state, Sixth Hair might very well be the only survivor of Shadow Sect left in Northern Plains, his information gathering was much slower than before.

But the news of Fang Yuan killing Ye Lui Qun Xing could not be covered up. This news was too shocking and would soon spread throughout the whole of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world, and even Central Continent’s Gu Immortals would hear of it.

After all, Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects were also paying attention to this blood battle martial competition.

“Eh? Fang Yuan is leaving again?” Sixth Hair was astonished.

The super Gu formation flashed again as Fang Yuan left.

Sixth Hair did not know what Fang Yuan was doing, coming and going in such a hurry. But he intuitively felt something amiss, and was somewhat panicked. He felt Fang Yuan was going to obtain enormous benefits at this time.

Fang Yuan’s growth rate was increasing rapidly, and to Shadow Sect, this was very bad news.

Fang Yuan used Lang Ya blessed land to teleport.

He wanted to annex the immortal aperture, for that, he had to first place the aperture.

He could not place the immortal aperture in Blood Plain, the commotion would be huge and it would attract countless gazes, and that was not good for Fang Yuan.

“It was not easy to obtain this rank seven star path immortal aperture, I naturally want the process of annexing it to go without any mishaps!”

When Fang Yuan appeared in the other Gu formation outside, he was already very far away from Blood Plain.

He had already planned his actions, and had already chosen a location.

Exiting the teleportation Gu formation, he hid his tracks and flew rapidly, arriving above ordinary grassland not long later.

After inspecting and not finding anything wrong, Fang Yuan took out Ye Lui Qun Xing’s corpse.

The pitiful fellow’s head had already been sliced off entirely.

Fang Yuan used temporary measures to handle the headless corpse, ensuring the immortal aperture would still exist.

This method had its own history.

When Fang Yuan had seen Blazing Heaven Demoness’ method of retrieving apertures, he had also inquired her for some research results of Old Immortal Kong Jue. Adding on to Fang Yuan’s methods from his first life, he had created his own method in preserving an immortal aperture.

Ye Lui Qun Xing’s soul was already taken out by Fang Yuan and sealed properly.

The situation was a little troublesome.

Ye Lui Qun Xing’s soul had similarly suffered from his dragon breath and its injuries were not light. Fortunately, Fang Yuan had guts Gu.

Although this Gu worm was only a mortal Gu, it was created from a secluded domain of heaven and earth, and was among the best methods of soul strengthening in this world. Fang Yuan was the owner of Dang Hun mountain, thus he had large reserves of them with him.

After using many guts Gu, despite Ye Lui Qun Xing’s soul being on the verge of dissipation, it was finally rescued.

Fang Yuan released the seal he laid out and threw the corpse onto the grassland.

The mighty Ye Lui Qun Xing, who had enjoyed boundless glory while alive, was treated so casually after dying. If Ye Lui tribe’s Gu Immortals were to see this, they would definitely jump out in anger to stake their lives against Fang Yuan.

Several breaths later, there was turbulence in heaven and earth qi.

The immortal aperture began to land on the ground, causing a huge commotion.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan had Dog Shit Luck and was not as unlucky as before, when it seemed like he might even die from choking when drinking water.

Without any surprises, the immortal aperture’s entrance opened in front of Fang

Yuan.

Despite having the upper extreme heavenly eagle, he still took the chance to enter Qun Xing blessed land through the entrance.

Ye Lui Qun Xing’s blessed land was rather peculiar.

The sky was a scene of darkness, but the ground below emitted dim blue light.

The moment Fang Yuan glanced, his mind shook.

He discovered, the ground of this blessed land was actually covered with countless star fragments. The large ones among these star fragments were as big as shells, while the small ones were the size of pebbles, and they gave a rustling sound when stepped on.

The blessed land seemed endless in size, its surface was vast and its terrain was level.

Fang Yuan wanted to fly, but felt a powerful magnetic force that firmly kept him to the ground.

The ground suddenly protruded up, then a basin sized star core floated in front of Fang Yuan.

This azure star core was like a dark blue crystal ball, it was this blessed land’s land spirit.

It was bright and colorful, and was slowly revolving on its own axis, emitting all kinds of light rays, making Fang Yuan mentally associate them to the rays of light in those perfect diamonds back on Earth.

Amidst soundless communication, Fang Yuan learned about this blessed land’s ownership condition.

To ordinary Gu Immortals, this condition was quite difficult.

Because the land spirit’s request was to show the true, complete version of the immortal killer move, myriad star fireflies, to it.

While alive, Ye Lui Qun Xing had all along been pondering on myriad star fireflies. The immortal killer move he created also imitated myriad star fireflies heavily.

His obsession was about this.

After death, his obsession combined with the heavenly power in the immortal aperture, to form this land spirit.

“My luck is overflowing, it cannot be stopped, hahaha.” Fang Yuan immediately took out the whole contents of myriad star fireflies and gave it to the land spirit.

He was the killer of Dong Fang Chang Fan and had searched Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul countless times, sometimes also torturing him. In the end, he had handed Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul to Lang Ya land spirit like it was rubbish, and exchanged it for sect contribution points.

After a while, Fang Yuan became this blessed land’s master.

“Now is the most crucial moment. Let’s see if I can annex this blessed land.”

Fang Yuan rested for a while before beginning.

Immortal apertures could annex one another, and summarizing the experiences of predecessors, there were three main conditions for this.

First, annexing an immortal aperture required specific attainment level.

Second, a smaller immortal aperture could not engulf a bigger one.

Third, dead apertures could not be annexed.

Fang Yuan already satisfied two conditions for annexing Qun Xing blessed land. But there was still one condition left which was somewhat ambiguous.

A smaller immortal aperture could not engulf a bigger one. The question here was, what was small and what was big?

If it was cultivation level, rank six immortal apertures were small and rank seven immortal aperture were big, then Fang Yuan would not be able to annex this Qun Xing blessed land.

If it was based on the immortal aperture’s foundation and so on, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture absolutely surpassed Qun Xing blessed land, and could devour it.

Fang Yuan had already wanted to test this and verify it.

The regretful thing was that there were very few rank seven immortal apertures among the immortal apertures he knew of, and he was also unable to fulfill the attainment level conditions.

Until now, when Fang Yuan seized Qun Xing blessed land.

Fang Yuan had both skills and boldness, he began to test; with the land spirit’s help, he began to annex Qun Xing blessed land.

The process was smooth beyond expectations.

He simply did not encounter any obstacles!

The test succeeded!

After annexing Qun Xing blessed land, not only did the sovereign immortal aperture have an enormous star fragment plain, more importantly, many of Fang Yuan’s calamities and tribulations were passed, letting him officially ascend to rank seven from rank six.

Rank seven Gu Immortal!

“From this moment on, I am a rank seven Gu Immortal. I have finally become a rank seven...”

Fang Yuan was filled with emotions.

In the five hundred years of his first life, he had only been at rank six second heavenly tribulation level. Naturally, the current Fang Yuan knew that heaven’s will had intentionally suppressed his cultivation level.

Heaven’s will required an otherworldly demon as a tool to deal with Shadow Sect. Fang Yuan was chosen by heaven’s will, naturally it carved and sculpted Fang Yuan to make him a qualified chess piece. At the least, his cultivation level could not be too high, if he was too strong, heaven’s will would find it more difficult to control Fang Yuan. He also could not be too weak, otherwise, even with rebirth, he could not be of any use. Rank six was just right.

This was a long term plan of heaven’s will!

But at present, because of all kinds of fortuitous encounters as well as his own efforts and perseverance, Fang Yuan had finally broken through heaven’s will’s restrictions and charged to rank seven.

Its significance was huge!

Rank six Gu Immortals were considered bottom tier, they were numerous.

Rank seven Gu Immortals were mid-tier, they were the elites among Gu Immortals and had high statuses.

Rank eights were rare, their every move could create a storm in a region.

Reaching this level, Fang Yuan had already become an elite among Gu Immortals, an expert. If a rank six saw him, they would have to detour around him. Even among rank seven Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan was only wary of Ye Lui Qun Xing, Unfettered Scholar, Nu Er Gu, such characters of this level.

Chu Du? Fang Yuan estimated he was still somewhat below him. Fortunately, Chu Du was currently his ally.

At this moment, the sovereign immortal aperture began to produce red date immortal essence.

Shortly, Fang Yuan would possess his own red date immortal essence.

At the same time, he could also merge his accumulated green grape immortal essence and turn them into red date immortal essence.

One hundred beads of green grape immortal essence could merge into a bead of red date immortal essence.

“I need to merge them!”

“If green grape immortal essence was used to activate rank seven Immortal Gu, there would be at least thirty percent additional expenditure. After merging them into red date immortal essence, there won’t be any meaningless loss in this aspect.”

“Once some time passes, I will have reserves of red date immortal essence and will no longer have to fear battles of attrition. The difficult situation when Heavenly Lord Bai Zu attacked Hei Fan grotto-heaven will be completely behind me!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1207: Doing Something Bad

“Hah!” Hao Zhen flew to the sky and spat out a thunderbolt.

This thunderbolt shrunk into a ball, with the color of lapis lazuli, and charged towards Hao Zhen’s opponent with a speed that seemed to be slow but was actually fast.

His opponent was a Gu Immortal of Murong tribe who had a burly stature, with muscles that were like layers of rocks, he had a wide nose bridge, large chin, and small forehead, making his head look like a triangle.

Seeing the thunderbolt approach him, he actually did not dodge and let the thunderbolt land on his body.

Boom.

The thunderbolt exploded, lightning splashed out everywhere, dazzling the spectating immortals' eyes for a moment.

After the lightning dissipated, the Murong tribe Gu Immortal was standing on the same spot without even budging.

There was a patch of burnt color on his chest from which white smoke was still rising.

But, the effect was only that.

"This is your strongest attack? Hmm, you have burned some of my hair, it is a little more powerful than before." This Murong tribe Gu Immortal spoke in a tranquil tone without a hint of frustration.

"You!" Hao Zhen's eyes seemed to spout fire from anger, but he was not able to retort.

His strongest killer move had no effect on this opponent.

"Wonderful!"

"He is indeed the Gu Immortal famous for his defense in Northern Plains."

"Murong Gang... this guy has not attacked at all and is only taking the beating passively. Elder Hao Zhen's offense actually could not show any results."

Both sides' Gu Immortals exclaimed in surprise.

Fang Yuan killing Ye Lui Qun Xing had been an extremely heavy blow to the righteous path.

To turn the tide of the situation and raise morale, Gong Wan Ting immediately took measures to make Murong tribe's strongest expert among their current group take action.

It was this burly man who seemed to be forged from steel — Murong Gang!

Chu Du was frowning again.

He sighed internally: "Just now, Ye Lui Qun Xing was killed, now there is Murong Gang. These Huang Jin tribes are indeed the overlords who have ruled Northern Plains for so many years, their accumulation is truly powerful."

At this moment, Hao Zhen admitted his defeat and returned with a pale expression: "I am ashamed, I could not live up to your expectations."

Chu Du consoled him with a few words.

Fang Yuan had not left for long, and he had fallen into the same awkward situation like before.

He looked at the immortals behind him, but found he had no capable people to send.

“In my opinion, the strongest person among us is you, supreme elder. But, you cannot easily take the stage, I think you need to call back Elder Liu.” Immortal Wang suggested.

His suggestion was immediately approved by many Gu Immortals.

“Right, Elder Liu’s strength is unfathomable, he can kill Murong Gang!”

“Elder Liu killed Ye Lui Qun Xing easily, killing Murong Gang won’t be a problem for him.”

“Elder Liu’s ancient sword dragon breath is too powerful.”

Even Murong Gang spoke: “Domination Immortal, don’t send other minor characters. Besides you, the only one who can enter my, Murong Gang’s, eyes, is Liu Guan Yi. Bring him out, I would like to experience the power of his dragon breath.”

“Damn it! He is actually looking down on us.” Chou Lao Wu was furious.

Hao Zhen clenched his fists: “If it were two on two, we could use wind thunder roar and wipe them out!”

After seeing Fang Yuan’s power, Hao Zhen and Chou Lao Wu had no more dissatisfaction towards their position of third and fourth supreme elders.

Hao Zhen was only saying this to retain some face.

Actually, he was aware that his and Chou Lao Wu’s wind thunder roar was powerful, but it was not easy to use it and it required a safe environment.

Like before, when Heavenly Lord Bai Zu attacked Hei Fan grotto-heaven, they were able to use wind thunder roar because they were protected by other Gu Immortals.

Everyone was anticipating Fang Yuan’s reappearance.

Chu Du’s side hoped Fang Yuan could raise their might again.

The righteous path’s side hoped they could kill Fang Yuan. Avenging Ye Lui tribe was secondary, the main thing was that they wanted to kill this person to salvage their face!

Chu Du naturally also hoped Fang Yuan would take the stage again.

But Fang Yuan had not given any reply.

Chu Du could only smile bitterly at this, and could do nothing about it.

His and Fang Yuan’s relationship was of mutual benefits and they held equal status.

Lang Ya blessed land, inside a secret room in a cloud city.

Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged on a prayer mat, his divine sense entering his immortal aperture.

He was merging green grape immortal essence and refining them into red date immortal essence.

This merging method was widely popular and was not anything new.

Countless mortal Gu was moving on their specific trajectories, some were standing still, some emitted light, while some flew continuously.

Under the effect of these Gu worms, beads of green grape immortal essence were slowly but surely merging together.

Tens of thousands of green grape immortal essence were piled in this enormous mortal Gu formation.

With Fang Yuan’s continuous effort, there were already two beads of red date immortal essence produced at the bottom of the green grape immortal essence.

“Hmm? Chu Du sent a letter again, it is still that Murong Gang... this is already the sixth letter.” Fang Yuan’s attention slightly diverted.

Shortly afterwards, he threw this information path mortal Gu aside, having no interest to even reply.

What blood battle martial competition, I don’t give a f*ck!

Screw off.

In any case, Fang Yuan’s agreement with Chu Sect was extremely loose. Besides some fundamental interests and principles, even if he suddenly did not want to do a task, or his interest waned, or he betrayed the sect, or he voluntarily left Chu Sect, he would receive no backlash.

What was the nature of this blood battle martial competition?

Fang Yuan knew it was a political compromise.

This was a stage which Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang, two rank eights, had discussed and created. It was to restrict the scope of the conflict between one another. The basic purpose was to ensure both sides’ interests did not suffer loss beyond their bottom-line.

Yao Huang knew clearly that since Bai Zu tribe was already established, it could not be destroyed. At least, he alone was not able to do it.

Because on the opposing side was a rank eight Gu Immortal, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu. As long as he existed, Bai Zu tribe was as stable as a rock.

Unless Longevity Heaven sent a powerful reinforcement, for example, a rank eight Gu Immortal.

When he received the Longevity Edict, he was already reluctant. All he needed was to provide an explanation to deal with Longevity Heaven.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu did not want to provoke trouble, he had just created his tribe and wanted everything to move smoothly. However, the situation did not permit it. He could only swallow the bitter pill and face the Huang Jin tribes’ allied offense.

Just this competition would do. They would not truly fight to the death!

Chu Du had seen through these two sides’ thoughts, and because he was coincidentally squeezed in between, he took a huge step forward and established Chu Sect, using Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s might to test the response of Northern Plains’ righteous path. If it was accepted, he could expand Chu Sect, if it was not accepted, he would disband Chu Sect. The losses wouldn’t be huge and were of no concern.

From Longevity Heaven’s standpoint, they naturally did not like seeing other bloodlines mixing in among the righteous path. All along, Northern Plains had been the world of the Huang Jin tribes. They were even more unwilling to see Chu Sect’s existence! The master-disciple relationship, compared to the bloodline system, were two different ideologies. Systems based on either one were always sensitive and on guard against the other.

Longevity Heaven’s Gu Immortals were clear that once the master-disciple system was spread, it would greatly shake their tribal forces and benefits.

Central Continent was a clear example and the best evidence of this.

“But Longevity Heaven is dreaming if they want to rely on just the Longevity Edict to destroy the alliance between Chu Sect and Bai Zu tribe.”

“Unless they become more resolute and send out rank eight experts to kill Heavenly Lord Bai Zu!”

“This world is all about strength.”

“Hei tribe did not have a rank eight Gu Immortal to suppress the situation and had also lost their Immortal Gu House, with just some excuses, their fellow Huang Jin tribe members destroyed them.”

“Bai Zu tribe is an outsider and not of Huang Jin bloodline, but there is Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, making it a completely different situation.”

“Strength... strength...”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts lingered over this word.

Rank seven cultivation level.

This was an accomplishment, but to him, it was only another starting point.

“The blood battle martial competition does not match my interests.”

“I have the sovereign immortal aperture and can annex other immortal apertures, skipping calamities and tribulations to raise my cultivation and strength. This is a shortcut for cultivation, filled with slaughter and blood. But... I like it.”

“I want chaos, the more chaos, the better!”

“But the five regions chaotic war is still over four hundred years later! It is too far away, I can’t wait that long.”

“I need to think of a way to make them fight. The blood battle martial competition is too gentle, how many can be killed? If there are no deaths, there won’t be blessed lands.”

“There is also Lang Ya Sect and the four races alliance, hehe, if I let Northern Plains’ human Gu Immortals know of them, what will their response be? Regretfully, I am bound by alliance agreements. Although there is ‘Do Not Care’, it cannot resolve the underlying problem!”

Fang Yuan’s only worry was that the world wouldn’t be chaotic, sinister and dangerous thoughts started to rise up in his mind.

He did not intend to go to Blood Plain.

The sect’s enthusiastic anticipation and the enemy’s provocation, what value did they have?

Fang Yuan had to spend all his effort to kill Ye Lui Qun Xing. If his actions had slightly slowed, he would have lost the opportunity. Would those three Immortal Gu Houses just stay there like decorations?

Especially that Murong Gang, he was a tough foe, it would not be easy for Fang Yuan to defeat him, let alone kill him.

Since the start of the battle, Chu Du’s side had lost many times, while the righteous path had not even lost one-third of the time.

Hehe, there definitely would be some internal conflicts of the sect involved in this.

This was a trick righteous path Gu Immortals liked to play.

Fang Yuan had first thought of going to Southern Border.

Over these last days, he had adjusted his cultivation plan, using almost all his time and energy in refining dream path mortal Gu.

It was all preparation for that giant dream realm in Southern Border.

But he thought and thought, and felt the opportunity at this blood battle martial competition was truly too rare.

Adding on that on Southern Border’s end, it was occupied by the righteous path whom had arranged a super Gu formation to tightly defend the giant dream realm, Fang Yuan felt it would be very difficult for him to meddle in and did not have any opening currently.

Thus, after Fang Yuan refined all the green grape immortal essence into red date immortal essence, he quietly left Lang Ya blessed land and arrived at Liu tribe’s territory.

He was going to do something bad.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1208: With the Murder Weapon in Hand, Killing Intent Surges

Northern Plains, Bone Burial Field.

This was a place filled with white bones, countless piles of skeletons were together.

There were some huge skeletons resembling hills, and also small skeletons unassumingly situated by the side.

Most skeletons were pale white in color, under the corrosion of nature in the sun and wind, their flesh had already decomposed, only these strong and tough bones of the desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts remained.

But there were also some bones with special colors. Some were yellow and shining brightly, some were purple and alluring, emitting poisonous gas.

Gu Immortal Liu Yong was paying close attention.

He had the Huang Jin bloodline, he was a rank six enslavement path Gu Immortal of Liu tribe.

Right now, he was manipulating six desolate beast bone armor hounds as he traveled in Bone Burial Field, searching for his target.

The formation of Bone Burial Field had several possible rumored origins.

Some said that during the Olden Antiquity Era, two enslavement path great experts engaged in a life and death battle here, resulting in the deaths of many desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts.

Some said that this was a graveyard of bone monsters. Countless bone monsters felt that their lifespans were ending, so they came here and buried themselves.

Some even speculated that this was a Gu refinement ground created by a refinement path great grandmaster during ancient times, after countless years had passed, it reached this present state.

But no matter what, Bone Burial Field contained large numbers of desolate beast and ancient desolate beast corpses.

Liu tribe controlled this place and developed it wholeheartedly, trying to turn this into a production base for bone path Gu worms.

And every year, Liu Yong would borrow the use of this place, to pick suitable bones for his bone armor hounds and replenish their bone armor.

“This white bone seems like a snake bone, it is soft and cannot be used. If it is eaten, the bone armor would be soft and have no defensive properties.”

“This is a poison Gu, bone armor hounds do not have high resistance against poison, they will die if they eat this.”

“This bone is not bad, it seems to be a desolate beast steel skin giant lizard’s bone. Even though it is not the hardest, it is good enough, especially when it can endure heavy weight.”

Liu Yong inspected for a moment, discovering more and more loot.

Eventually, he placed his beloved hounds, the six bone armor hounds, at six different locations.

He himself was lying down on a huge skull, looking at the sky.

“Today has good weather, it is sunny with gentle breeze.” He looked at the blue sky, there were no clouds anywhere, and the sunlight was not intense, wind blew on his face mildly, he felt very comfortable.

Looking at the empty sky, Liu Yong felt really bored.

“Hmm? The tribe has sent an information Gu here?” Suddenly, his brows rose as his eyes shone with light, he sensed that something interesting was coming.

His mind quickly entered his immortal aperture, as his consciousness entered the information path Gu worm.

The contents of the Gu worm spoke about the advancements and developments that

Liu tribe had made in the last few months.

Next were some rumors, and the actions of experts recently.

Finally, the most important point, it talked about the developments of the blood battle martial competition.

“Murong Gang defeated eight people in a row, impressive!”

“However, between every battle, he has to recover for two hours. He is unlike Ye Lui Qun Xing, he could fight consecutively.”

“I heard that Murong Gang has strong defensive methods, but his immortal essence expenditure is huge as well!”

“Sigh, speaking of Ye Lui Qun Xing, it was really a pity. He was actually killed by Chu Sect’s second supreme elder in a sneak attack, that was really despicable!”

Liu tribe was a Huang Jin tribe, a righteous path force, when spreading the information, they naturally placed it from their own perspective for their political benefit.

Even though the information was not wrong, the way it was written would give others a different feeling when reading it.

For example, ‘losing repeatedly’ and ‘fighting on despite repeated setbacks’, between the two phrases, they would provide different impressions.

All in all, it talked about how strong Fang Yuan was, and the facts about his ancient sword dragon transformation, the information also emphasized on how shameless he was, and how devious and scheming he acted.

The ‘Liu Guan Yi’ identity that Fang Yuan was using had definitely became (in)famous after this battle, nobody in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world did not know of him, even Prince Feng Xian and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu learned of him, even in the other regions, like Central Continent, they heard about Liu Guan Yi.

After expressing his anger and disdain towards Fang Yuan, Liu Yong thought about himself, sighing.

“I cultivate enslavement path, I am not suited to one-on-one fights.”

“When can I gain such fame at the blood battle martial competition too?”

“Maybe one day, I can defeat Liu Guan Yi and challenge Domination Immortal Chu Du! Wouldn’t that be really cool!”

Liu Yong was thinking about this when suddenly, there was a huge explosion.

Rumble!

The entire ground was shaking intensely.

“What, what is going on?!” The giant skull below Liu Yong had fallen off the neck of the skeleton due to the tremors.

Liu Yong quickly got up as he floated in the air, staring widely in bewilderment: “This defensive Gu formation is being attacked, someone is attacking here? This is the territory of my Liu tribe!”

Thinking of this, Liu Yong felt that it was unimaginable.

My Liu tribe is a great righteous path force, a Huang Jin tribe, we are a domineering force in the whole of Northern Plains.

Especially recently, their long-time enemy, Hei tribe, was gone, and Chu Du was also being targeted, the future looked promising and they were currently in high spirits, someone was actually attacking Liu tribe’s territory now?

Who gave them the guts?

Their dog guts were truly rivalling heaven!

Liu Yong was furious, and also slightly glad: “Thankfully, I came here to pick up bones and feed my bone armor hounds, heh, the attacker is really unlucky to have encountered me... eh?!”

At the next moment, Liu Yong saw the invader.

Or rather, a dragon.

An ancient sword dragon!

It had pale white eyes, a sharp horn that extended to the sky, its scales were shiny and thick, its claws were sharp and powerful, it had a muscular tail, and its teeth gave off a chilly feeling, Liu Yong shuddered upon seeing it.

“Oh? It seems that a member of Liu tribe is here, my luck is pretty good.” The ancient sword dragon spoke human words, as its dragon eyes emitted strong killing intent.

“Liu, Liu Guan Yi?!” Liu Yong was stunned.

At this moment, he wanted to cry.

His heart was pounding intensely, his body was uncontrollably shaking as Liu Yong screamed internally to himself: “Stay calm, quickly calm down, Liu Yong! You can do it.”

Another voice in his head was resounding: “Calm down my ass, he is Liu Guan Yi, even Ye Lui Qun Xing died at his hands. He is scheming and shameless, unscrupulous and shrewd, I am just a tiny rank six Gu Immortal.”

“Calm down, calm down! Right, right! Liu Guan Yi is the second supreme elder of Chu Sect, isn’t Chu Sect a righteous path force? Then Liu Guan Yi is a righteous path Gu Immortal! As a righteous path member, how can he attack us for no reason? Attacking us for wealth, that is a demonic path act.” Liu Guan Yi calmly analyzed.

At the same time, another voice screamed in his head: “Then tell me, why is Liu Guan Yi not participating in the blood battle martial competition, but here instead? He destroyed our Liu tribe’s defensive Gu formation, his evil intentions are apparent! What else could he want?!”

Even though Liu Yong’s name had ‘courage’ 1 in it, at this moment, he was completely gutless, he stammered as his tongue was shivering: “Liu, Lord Liu, why are you here at my, my Liu tribe...”

“Of course it is to...” Fang Yuan purposely dragged his words out.

“Is, is to what?” Liu Yong asked.

Fang Yuan’s reply was not in words, it was his dragon breath.

This was the ancient sword dragon's breath, having the rank seven dragon breath Immortal Gu in it, the speed was fast like a flash of white light!

Liu Yong's upper body blew up.

Fresh blood spewed out, scattering on the pale white bones, detailing the sadness and pathetic state of a weakling.

The two halves of his body landed on the ground, his expression before death was still frozen on his face, his eyes were staring wide open.

“Useless fellow. But it is not strange... all of the Huang Jin tribes have been in power for too long, there is unavoidably some rot on the inside. Just like the ten great ancient sects.” Fang Yuan analyzed internally.

The bigger the tree, the more leaves it would have, and unavoidably, it would have some rotten wilting leaves as well.

Woof woof woof!

The six bone armor hounds barked at Fang Yuan angrily.

Their owner was dead, but they still feel attached to him, they all ran over, guarding their master's corpse, defending it loyally, as if hoping that it would revive.

Seeing this, Fang Yuan's evaluation of Liu Yong rose by a bit: “It seems that he is passable in raising desolate beasts, unfortunately, they do not have the wisdom of Gu Immortals, what can these six beasts do?”

Fang Yuan sneered as he flew down.

This battle had no unexpected surprises.

An hour later, six fainted bone armor hounds were lying in Fang Yuan's sovereign immortal aperture.

These desolate beast hounds appeared at a good time, Fang Yuan was about to buy some desolate beast dogs and use their faeces to feed dog shit luck Immortal Gu.

There were also a vast amount of desolate beast and ancient desolate beast corpses, they had extremely high value.

Fang Yuan placed them in his sovereign immortal aperture, temporarily storing them somewhere.

And finally, Liu Yong's corpse, his immortal aperture was still hidden in his stomach, Fang Yuan sealed it for now.

This enslavement path immortal aperture was suited for Fang Yuan to annex.

And also, Liu Yong's soul.

After being hit by Fang Yuan's dragon breath, although extremely weak and at Fang Yuan's mercy, it was still alive.

Fang Yuan quickly thought of the reason: “This Liu Yong was an enslavement path Gu Immortal, enslavement and soul path are related, to manipulate desolate beasts, one must have a sufficiently strong soul foundation.”

Fang Yuan quickly left the scene of the crime.

He moved very quickly.

Only a tattered defensive Gu formation was left, and the empty Bone Burial Field, as well as the upper body of Liu Yong.

“The next location, Liu tribe’s jade light pit.”

Fang Yuan licked his lips, showing excitement in his eyes.

He had just committed murder, but now he was not going to retreat, he was going to attempt another crime!

As the saying goes — With the murder weapon in hand, killing intent surges.

Fang Yuan was a rank seven Gu Immortal with ancient sword dragon transformation, his battle strength had risen immensely, he was starting to become somewhat unrestrained.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1209: Looting Another Place

Whoosh!

A figure flew in the sky, tearing across space as a shrill sound could be heard.

It was Fang Yuan.

Right now, he was still in the ancient sword dragon form, he was using sword escape Immortal Gu and flying rapidly.

This speed was terrifying!

Back then when he killed Ye Lui Qun Xing, almost none of the Gu Immortals managed to react.

Of course, his burst of speed at that time was shocking! But now, Fang Yuan was traveling a long journey, his speed was lower now, compared to his peak burst of speed.

Even so, he was very fast.

“My speed is top tier even in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world. Of course, I cannot compare to Hui Feng Zi. Chu Du’s body strength travel is far below me now.”

Hui Feng Zi was most skilled in speed, he was known as the fastest person in Northern Plains. Disregarding any hidden cultivators, Hui Feng Zi was truly worthy of this. Because there was once a rank eight Gu Immortal who chased him but failed to capture him.

Fang Yuan was still far inferior compared to him.

This was the case for both straight distance travel and nimbleness.

But Chu Du’s body strength travel had indeed been faster than Fang Yuan’s sword escape Immortal Gu in terms of straight distance travel.

Now, Fang Yuan turned into the ancient sword dragon, his original flying speed with his dao mark amplification caused Fang Yuan’s speed to surpass Chu Du.

Not to mention that Chu Du’s immortal killer move, body strength travel, had a major flaw, it could only fly straight, it could not turn and had low nimbleness.

“If compared to rank eight Gu Immortals, how would I fare?” Fang Yuan had a question in his mind.

Immediately, he shook his head.

Rank eight Gu Immortals were all unfathomable, if they wanted to pursue Fang Yuan, he would be in danger. His initial burst of speed might surpass them and pull some distance, but in a long distance chase, he would definitely become slower.

And pursuing methods were not just about speed. Rank eight Gu Immortals had a wide variety of methods, they could do other things like Gu formations, teleportation, long range attacks and others.

“I have just destroyed Liu tribe’s Bone Burial Field, and even killed an enslavement path Gu Immortal of Liu tribe, Liu Yong. When he was alive, he had already informed his tribe, as a super force, Liu tribe will definitely send Gu Immortals to pursue me.”

“However, Liu tribe’s available fighters are all at the blood battle martial competition. The remaining Gu Immortals are at the resource points, or have missions to attend to, it is not easy to send people out, especially people who are able to deal with the expert Liu Guan Yi, time is needed.”

“After they get to Bone Burial Field, they will still need some time to chase me. They would not think that instead of retreating, I actually went to the southeast direction and plan to rob the jade light pit next. In this case, these Liu tribe pursuers might waste even more time.”

“With all this wasted time, I can definitely devour the whole of jade light pit.”

Fang Yuan had been collecting information about the outside world while he was cultivating.

Liu tribe was big and eye-catching, a lot of their resource points in the outside world were known to all. Sometimes, in order to display their own strength and foundation, Liu tribe’s Gu Immortals would expose intel about these places themselves. For example, the Bone Burial Field’s production of mortal Gu, and how many profits they derived.

Fang Yuan had been very interested in Liu tribe’s jade light pit.

Because of attitude Gu.

To feed attitude Gu, he needed a vast number of flowing light fruits.

The higher the rank of the Immortal Gu, the longer the interval of feeding, and the greater amount eaten each time.

Fang Yuan had already bought a lot of flowing light fruits in treasure yellow heaven earlier, he had planted them in sovereign blessed land, using fruits to bring about more fruits.

Right now, he needed huge amounts of dazzling light Gu between his flowing light fruits to increase the amount of light. With intense light, brand new flowing light fruits would form.

This method was not only efficient, it was simple and easy for Fang Yuan to control.

And inside the jade light pit, there were all sorts of light Gu. For example, jade light Gu, reflect light Gu, borrow light Gu, return light Gu, all sorts of colored light Gu, like blue light Gu, red light Gu, black light Gu, and others. Dazzling light Gu was one of them.

Fang Yuan raced against time, right now, they were already alerted, his time was very precious.

“There is a cloud layer in front.” Joy flashed across the ancient sword dragon’s eyes.

At this time, he was already near the jade light pit, a huge cloud layer was able to conceal Fang Yuan’s traces.

“I am quite lucky, to think there was a cloud layer here. If the Liu tribe Gu Immortal defending the jade light pit is careless, I might even be able to sneak attack!”

Fang Yuan carried anticipation as he rushed into the cloud layer.

The thickness of the cloud layer completely concealed the ancient sword dragon’s body.

But the truth was not as nice as Fang Yuan had hoped.

In the jade light pit, Liu tribe Gu Immortal Liu Luo felt something, she stared with wide opened eyes: “An enemy!”

This Liu Luo was nearly two hundred years old, but she had the body of a young child, her eyes were watery and bright, her petite body was so cute and delicate, people would want to protect her.

She was the Liu tribe Gu Immortal guarding the jade light pit, she was very alert now.

All because of Liu Yong’s report, all of Liu tribe’s Gu Immortals were notified, they were all on guard.

The jade light pit’s defensive Gu formation did not have any Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan’s transformation, the ancient sword dragon, easily tore the defense and got in.

“It is Liu Guan Yi indeed, he did not escape, he is here to attack my jade light pit!” Seeing the ruthless ancient sword dragon, Liu Luo was furious and shocked.

“I cannot escape, my speed is not as fast as the ancient sword dragon.”

“Thankfully I planted many seeds here! I can only persevere and wait for reinforcements.”

“Brother, save me quickly...”

Liu Luo quickly analyzed, at the same time, she muttered as the ground of the jade light pit tore open, dozens of vines resembling dragons or pythons drilled out.

Next, countless trees expanded like jade umbrellas, becoming larger and larger until a huge forest was formed!

Liu Luo hid herself in the forest and vanished.

“It seems that they are on guard.” Fang Yuan took a glance and saw Liu Luo, before she vanished from his perception.

“Rank six wood path... but this forest was meticulously created, it is quite troublesome to deal with.” Fang Yuan was strong, but this was a tough nut to crack.

Because this forest was an immortal battlefield killer move.

Liu Luo was a rank six Gu Immortal, but she had an immortal battlefield killer move, this was atypical.

But Fang Yuan felt no surprise.

From Liu Yong’s soul, he obtained a lot of information. Liu tribe had Liu Chang and Liu Luo, these two siblings, because of their father’s protection, both of them became Gu Immortals.

Liu Chang was a rank seven Gu Immortal, his battle strength was not lower than Ye Lui Qun Xing. But this time, to get rid of the mud monster group in Liu tribe’s great mud pit, he could not spare any time outside.

Liu Chang had great battle strength and status, especially when Liu tribe had no rank eight Gu Immortals.

Liu Chang doted on his little sister Liu Luo since a young age, he even gave her lifespan Gu.

This wood path battlefield killer move was obtained by Liu Chang for Liu Luo to have a strong trump card defending her.

Fang Yuan thought about it, he did not deal with this forest, he charged straight for the Gu worms in the pit.

Countless Gu worms were taken by him, kept into his immortal aperture.

Liu Luo watched with much fear, gritting her teeth. This Liu Guan Yi was robbing her in her face, this proud female immortal felt extremely humiliated and angry.

“This Liu Guan Yi is truly too daring!”

“He dared to kill my Liu tribe’s Gu Immortals and even steal our cultivation resources!”

“It is a pity I do not have enough strength, otherwise, I would make you pay the consequences.”

Liu Luo hid inside the battlefield killer move and did not dare to show herself.

Even after Fang Yuan left, she did not reveal her traces.

Not long after, there was white light in the sky.

The light was painful to the eyes, it suppressed even the sun’s radiance.

As the white light charged down, it formed into a male Gu Immortal.

He had a skinny body and a sharp face, he had bean-like eyes, and showed anxiety and rage on his face.

“Brother!” Liu Luo saw this person and immediately appeared between the trees, feeling elated.

“Sister, you are safe!! I was so worried about you!” The person who came was Liu Chang, he saw that Liu Luo was fine and calmed down, the anxiety on his face turned into joy.

Liu Luo was also overjoyed, but she was still very cautious: “Brother, let’s match our secret code, before I let you in.”

There was no issue, Liu Chang entered the battlefield killer move and the siblings hugged each other tightly upon meeting.

“Sister, you must have been shocked, right? Don’t worry, brother is here.”

“Brother, that Liu Guan Yi is so terrible, he took away all of the Gu worms inside the jade light pit, not a single one is left. I failed to defend them, the tribe is definitely going to punish me.”

“No need to worry, no need to worry, with me here, I will protect you. Don’t be afraid, cheer up, I will back you up no matter what.” Liu Chang doted on his sister, even though she was actually nearly two hundred years old.

He touched Liu Luo’s head as he consoled: “Brother will go kill this bad person and avenge you, sister.”

In fact, he was sent by Liu tribe to capture Fang Yuan to begin with.

Liu Chang’s battle strength was not inferior to Ye Lui Qun Xing’s. He cultivated light path and was specialized in speed and movement, he could retreat or advance easily.

Between Gu Immortals, once one party had advantage in speed, they would gain initiative in the battle. Whether they fought or retreated, it would be up to them.

While the siblings interacted, more Liu tribe Gu Immortals arrived.

Just now, Fang Yuan killed Liu Yong and took Liu tribe’s resources, the entire tribe was furious!

Not only did they send Liu Chang, they also sent two more Gu Immortals to assist him and ensure that they succeeded.

“My goodness, our tribe’s jade light pit was completely robbed by Liu Guan Yi!”

“KIll him, we have to kill him, otherwise, our Liu tribe’s anger will not be appeased!!”

The two new Gu Immortals who arrived screamed.

“Stop screaming, you are so loud, what if you scare my sister?” Liu Chang raised his head and yelled back.

The two Liu tribe Gu Immortals knew about Liu Chang and quickly lowered their volume.

Among them, one used an investigative method and quickly found traces of Fang Yuan: “He escaped there, let’s chase him!”

“You guys go first, I will escort my sister back.” Liu Chang said.

The other two Gu Immortals were dazed: “To and fro, how long would you take? If we do not start chasing now, we will not catch up to him.”

“Then what if we leave and Liu Guan Yi comes back and harms my sister? If anything happens to my sister, I will take it out on you both!” Liu Chang shouted loudly.

“Brother is the best.” Liu Luo was joyous.

The two Liu tribe Gu Immortals looked at each other, they could see the bitterness in each other’s faces.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1210: Wanted by the Entire Righteous Path

“According to what Liu Yong said, if Liu tribe wants to capture me, they will send that Liu Chang. But he is a light path Gu Immortal, even if I kill him, I cannot annex his immortal aperture for the moment. Why would I take a risk then?”

Fang Yuan was still in his ancient sword dragon transformation as he flew towards the west.

As he flew, he searched Liu Yong’s soul.

Right now, Fang Yuan was going to retreat.

If he continued, there would not be enough time, he did not need to fight with Liu tribe’s Gu Immortals, if he did that, the risks were great with minimal benefits.

As he flew, Fang Yuan continued using sword escape Immortal Gu.

Undoubtedly, red date immortal essence was truly durable. If it were like before, would Fang Yuan with only green grape immortal essence dare to sustain such expenditure for so long?

But it was out of Fang Yuan’s expectations that while he retreated, he did not see a single trace of Liu tribe’s Gu Immortals.

He did not know that Liu Chang had delayed a lot of time in escorting his sister back, he could no longer make it. As for the other two Liu tribe Gu Immortals, they did pursue him, but they could not catch up.

After Fang Yuan entered Tai Qiu, these two Liu tribe Gu Immortals could only watch without entering.

Through the Gu formation, Fang Yuan returned to Lang Ya blessed land.

“Fang Yuan is back!” Sixth Hair immediately got news of it.

He had a complex feeling.

Because right now, he had already known that Fang Yuan had killed Ye Lui Qun Xing. Most importantly, Fang Yuan had used ancient sword dragon transformation, he used his own strength, instead of relying on the upper extreme heavenly eagle!

“How did his battle strength surge so quickly? And recently, he has been very busy, going in and out of this place, what is he trying to do?”

Sixth Hair was very uneasy.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s busy schedule, he felt like he was looking at Fang Yuan’s back, seeing him sprinting ahead rapidly.

Sixth Hair really wanted to trip Fang Yuan and halt his progression, but there was nothing he could do.

Whenever he thought of Fang Yuan’s upper extreme heavenly eagle, he became dejected.

Rank eight battle strength!

Sixth Hair did not know the truth, he could only hope that Fang Yuan had few heavenly crystals and could not feed the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

“I hope this upper extreme heavenly eagle dies of hunger!” Sixth Hair could only hope for this.

“I have insufficient heavenly crystals indeed.” Fang Yuan returned to his cloud city, after inspecting his immortal aperture, he sighed deeply.

Sixth Hair’s hopes were not groundless.

Heavenly crystals were rank eight immortal materials, they were rarely sold in treasure yellow heaven.

In this aspect, Fang Yuan did not have enough heavenly crystals to begin with, the majority were obtained by trading resources with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle had been growing all the while, his heavenly crystal storage was depleting.

“It doesn’t matter, I will use my sect contribution points to exchange for a batch and use my immortal killer move on the upper extreme heavenly eagle to delay its growth.”

Hei Fan’s true inheritance could accelerate the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s aging and cause it to mature rapidly, he naturally had a method to do the opposite.

However, Fang Yuan only spent some sect contribution points to exchange for heavenly crystals, he did not use any immortal killer move.

Fang Yuan was still not familiar with this killer move, he needed to practice it many times or the activation would fail. Not only would Fang Yuan be injured, the upper extreme heavenly eagle would be hurt as well. Secondly, this immortal killer move needed three days to activate, Fang Yuan did not have enough time.

Fang Yuan left after returning.

Using the super teleportation Gu formation, he went to another corner of

Northern Plains.

Undoubtedly, Lang Ya land spirit’s super Gu formation was simply too useful. Fang Yuan lost Fixed Immortal Travel, but using this super Gu formation, Fang Yuan could still enjoy the effects of Fixed Immortal Travel.

Choosing a location without anyone nearby, Fang Yuan tossed out Liu Yong’s corpse.

Placing his immortal aperture, Fang Yuan went inside.

Liu Yong had a land spirit left behind, it was a black hound, the condition it had was: collect twenty desolate beast hounds for this blessed land.

Fang Yuan easily completed it.

A few days later, he successfully annexed this blessed land and the sovereign immortal aperture gained some new territory.

Speaking of which, Fang Yuan had annexed many immortal apertures recently.

The entire space in the sovereign immortal aperture had increased slightly.

But because the sovereign immortal aperture was just too large, the increase in size was not significant.

There was also another change, the land spirits.

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture already had more than ten land spirits. There was a snake, star core, black hound, land spirits in all sorts of forms were scattered in different locations over the sovereign immortal aperture.

They all controlled an area and Fang Yuan provided them immortal essence and Gu worms.

A lot of the immortal essence was left behind by their main bodies before death, it was not Fang Yuan’s own green grape immortal essence or red date immortal essence.

Other people’s immortal essence was also known as foreign immortal essence, they had limited use.

The biggest use was to activate Immortal Gu Houses.

In the past, Fang Yuan obtained a huge amount of Giant Sun’s immortal essence, he used almost all of it to activate Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, and used it extensively in Yi Tian Mountain. Next, he used Change Soul and the remaining amount of Giant Sun’s immortal essence went to Ying Wu Xie.

It was necessary to mention that Immortal Gu House had fixed abilities, but their strength depended on the immortal essence that was expended, they could either be stronger or weaker.

After absorbing Liu Yong’s enslavement path blessed land, Fang Yuan realized that his count of calamities and tribulations had only moved forward by one!

“It seems that with rank seven cultivation level, annexing a rank six blessed land has negligible effects. The truly effective ones are rank seven immortal apertures!”

Fang Yuan realized this and his gaze turned pensive.

“It is slightly difficult.”

In the five regions’ Gu Immortal world, rank six Gu Immortals were the most commonly seen. Rank sevens were rarer, their quantity was far lower than rank sixes. And rank seven blessed lands could only be annexed by those with grandmaster attainment level in that path.

Fang Yuan only had five grandmaster attainment level paths. Among which, rank seven Gu Immortals who cultivated strength path, blood path, and wisdom path were few. Star path and transformation path were still available, but this way, Fang Yuan’s options were far fewer, he could not annex rank seven blessed lands as casually as rank six ones.

But Fang Yuan had a solution for this problem.

He directed his gaze far away.

In the direction of Southern Border!

“How can I make my way in? Just familiar face alone, even though I can conceal myself, if I interact with them, I will be full of flaws, this is a headache.”

Fang Yuan had no idea on what to do.

He did not leave Northern Plains urgently.

He was waiting to see everyone’s responses.

Liu Guan Yi had an infamous reputation now, he suddenly assaulted Liu tribe and killed Liu Yong, he looted Bone Burial Field and the jade light pit, news quickly spread in the Northern Plains Gu Immortal world.

The righteous path forces were furious, Gong Wan Ting also changed her attitude after hearing this, she questioned Chu Du and blamed the Domination Immortal.

Over at Chu Sect, they were also surprised and shocked.

They held great anticipation towards Fang Yuan, but he ignored the blood battle martial competition and went to loot Liu tribe alone.

So daring!

So unrestricted in his actions!

Liu tribe was Chu Du’s enemy, back then, it was because of Chu Du and Liu tribe’s conflict that he gained great reputation and became known as the Domination Immortal.

But now, even though Liu tribe suffered a loss, Chu Du was unhappy.

“This Brother Liu is too uncontrollable!!” Chu Du’s good feelings towards Fang Yuan vanished without a trace.

He did not want any Gu Immortal under him to do this.

Fang Yuan did this and broke all of the rules, he destroyed the tacit understanding between both sides.

Chu Du was quite angry.

Yao Huang and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu also felt the same.

Even Ye Lui Qun Xing’s death could not cause any sorrow or concern in these two rank eight Gu Immortals. But after hearing news of Fang Yuan attacking Liu tribe, they frowned in unison.

“A piece of rat poop spoils an entire pot of soup!”

“Liu Guan Yi... is not a member of the righteous path.”

The two rank eight Gu Immortals gave their verdict on Fang Yuan immediately.

Both sides had agreed to hold their bottom line during this conflict. It was like two kids fighting, they would agree beforehand that they could attack anywhere, except the face.

Fang Yuan did this, he not only slapped their face, the vile consequences were something that the righteous path Gu Immortals did not want to see.

Immediately, Chu Du declared: Liu Guan Yi’s actions were purely his own, he was not asked to conduct them. To express his innocence, as well as Chu Sect’s standpoint, Chu Du announced on the scene that Liu Guan Yi would be expelled from the sect, he would no longer be Chu Sect’s second supreme elder.

“So resolute.” Fang Yuan noted as he held Chu Du’s letter Gu.

In the letter, Chu Du was very polite, he expressed his helplessness, the situation was very urgent at that time, he had to expel Liu Guan Yi immediately. He expressed that on the inside, he had wanted Fang Yuan to stay, and hoped that in the future, they could still cooperate.

Be it Fang Yuan’s immortal tribulation tempering aperture or the Crazed Demon Agreement, Chu Du had reason to continue cooperating with Fang Yuan secretly.

But publicly, the two were enemies.

At the same time, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang sent orders denouncing Fang Yuan’s demonic acts, they were putting up an arrest warrant for Fang Yuan, so that he would receive judgment.

This was how the righteous path worked, they did not want demons to wreak havoc.

The three sides immediately kicked Fang Yuan out.

Even though Fang Yuan’s battle strength was something Chu Du needed.

Fang Yuan’s plan of disrupting Northern Plains failed. Not just that, Liu Guan Yi was now wanted by everyone.

“Chu Du, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, Yao Huang, they are truly not easy to scheme against.”

Fang Yuan smiled, he was unphased.

Not to mention Liu Guan Yi was just a randomly created false identity for himself, even if it was real, so what?

His main connections in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world were the variant humans.

At the same time, he was planning to go to Southern Border now.

Although Fang Yuan would still pay attention to the developments of Northern Plains, his focus was now shifting towards the giant dream realm.

“Southern Border, oh Southern Border, I am coming back.”

“As a rank seven Gu Immortal...”

“Is this considered to be returning with glory?”

Fang Yuan had a complex smile on his face.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1211: Stepping Into Southern Border

Wind was blowing around him.

The grassland below was rapidly moving in Fang Yuan’s vision as he flew past it.

After more than ten days of traveling, the huge green regional wall appeared in front of Fang Yuan.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

He sensed that dark limit Immortal Gu’s power was rapidly weakening.

“Someone is deducing about me again!” Fang Yuan realized.

He quickly used dark limit Immortal Gu, resisting the deduction’s power.

Fang Yuan had already encountered this problem many times. Recently, Fang Yuan killed Ye Lui Qun Xing and plundered two resource points of Liu tribe, not only did he empty them out, he even killed a rank six enslavement path Gu Immortal, Liu Yong.

Thus, while Fang Yuan was leaving Northern Plains, he encountered many deductions about himself, the frequency was much higher than before.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan had wisdom path grandmaster attainment level, and also dark limit Immortal Gu to defend himself.

But dark limit Immortal Gu had a flaw, every time it was activated, it would need to rest for a long time before it could be used again.

Fang Yuan needed to consider this point, and avoid a situation where he had to use dark limit Immortal Gu but it was not ready for use.

Nurture, use, refinement — the mastery of Gu was deep and profound, there were many things to take note of depending on different Gu worms.

Liu tribe.

Three Liu tribe Gu Immortals were in the Gu formation, consuming their immortal essence as they maintained the operations of the Gu formation.

A moment later, the Gu formation stopped, the three Gu Immortals took their rest.

“Failed again?” Outside the Gu formation, rank seven light path expert Liu Chang shifted his feet as he spoke in a disappointed tone.

“We have failed Lord Liu Chang’s request, we are extremely ashamed.” The three Liu tribe Gu Immortals sighed as they lowered their heads, having ugly expressions.

Liu Chang snorted coldly, looking at the three immortals unhappily, but his tone had calmed down: “Forget it, our Liu tribe do not have any wisdom path Gu Immortals, this Gu formation can only achieve the effects of a wisdom path deduction. I will go and find Tian Xia Xin for help now.”

“Pardon me for saying this, Lord Liu Chang, but we failed to deduce it not because our formation is weak, but because the enemy has very strong defensive methods that prevent others from making deductions about him.” The leader of the three Gu Immortals said.

“That is the case?” Liu Chang’s expression became darker.

He muttered to himself: “The other party is a transformation path Gu Immortal specialized in ancient sword dragon transformation, how can he have such methods? But who knows, transformation path is said to project all paths. But the higher possibility is that this demon Liu Guan Yi has helpers. Domination Immortal Chu Du... even though he expelled Liu Guan Yi, I do not believe that he would do nothing. These demonic path or lone immortals are nothing good!”

Saying this, Liu Chang gritted his teeth, his expression became ruthless.

Liu Guan Yi plundered two of Liu tribe’s important resource points, and even killed a Gu Immortal from Liu tribe, how could they take this lying down?

Liu Chang was ordered to kill Liu Guan Yi, but after so many days, he had not made any progress.

Earlier, for his sister’s safety, he did not chase after Fang Yuan. This matter caused a bad reaction in the tribe, right now Liu Chang was enduring huge pressure, he wanted to find Fang Yuan at this very moment.

“Liu Guan Yi, you coward, where are you?” Liu Chang felt extremely stifled.

He had no idea that he was going to be even more stifled from now on. Because Fang Yuan had already left Northern Plains, going to other regions.

Ye Lui tribe was similarly as troubled as Liu Chang.

Ye Lui Qun Xing died at Fang Yuan’s hands, Ye Lui tribe was definitely going to seek revenge. And now, Fang Yuan was expelled from Chu Sect, Ye Lui tribe immediately took action to investigate and pursue Fang Yuan.

The Gu Immortals that they sent were not weaker than Liu Chang. Unfortunately, Fang Yuan had already left Northern Plains.

Fang Yuan successfully passed the licorice regional wall.

This mystical regional wall that surrounded Northern Plains was filled with green fog. Grass was growing wildly in the fog and was constantly twining and twisting, like a sea of snakes or hair.

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture could pass through without any obstruction.

After passing the licorice regional wall, Fang Yuan got into the blue water regional wall of Eastern Sea.

When he passed the blue water regional wall and reached Eastern Sea, his aura had completely changed, it was that of an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal.

This was one of the special attributes of the sovereign immortal body.

Everywhere Fang Yuan went, he would perfectly integrate into the environment, like he was born and bred there.

It was unlike other Gu Immortals, their external region aura was very obvious. Undergoing tribulation was also very troublesome, they had to return to their region to do it, otherwise, taking in another region’s heaven and earth qi would cause a lot of problems.

After entering Eastern Sea, Fang Yuan did not travel in a rush, he went to Qing Yu blessed land and rested for a while.

This blessed land was left by Gu Immortal Liu Qing Yu.

After Fang Yuan killed him, the duck land spirit was successfully controlled by Fang Yuan.

Meeting Fang Yuan again, the duck land spirit was excited, it quacked and jumped up and down.

Fang Yuan said comforting words to it as the duck land spirit shed tears of joy: “Quack quack!”

“I knew that master did not abandon me!”

Sadly, Fang Yuan’s attainment level was too low, he could not annex this rank seven blessed land.

Fang Yuan rested for a while, waiting for dark limit Immortal Gu to recover. Because this blessed land was a small world, during this period, anyone who deduced things about Fang Yuan would fail, it would not expend dark limit Immortal Gu’s power.

By the time dark limit Immortal Gu could be used again, Fang Yuan did not hesitate to use it on himself.

After this replenishment, Fang Yuan left Qing Yu blessed land, going to the turbulent flow sea area.

The troublesome path in the chaotic currents wasted multiple days, but he eventually got into City Well.

There were many immortal apertures inside City Well.

Fang Yuan used the upper extreme heavenly eagle, entering and annexing a portion of the blessed lands.

Fang Yuan progressed by two calamities and tribulations again, the effect was not good. The remaining immortal apertures were mostly water path, but Fang Yuan’s water path attainment level was just ordinary.

After leaving, Fang Yuan did not rush ahead once again. He went to Qing Yu blessed land and waited for dark limit Immortal Gu to recover before leaving for his destination.

After leaving Northern Plains and going to Eastern Sea, the deductions from Northern Plains became extremely weak. Each deduction expended less of Dark

Limit’s concealment power.

Fang Yuan was much different from before now.

Not only was he aware about heaven’s will, he knew how to guard against it, he even had dark limit Immortal Gu and many wisdom path methods to protect himself. Of course, most importantly, his cultivation level and battle strength had risen greatly as well.

Compared to the time after the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, when Fang Yuan went from Southern Border to Northern Plains, there was an evident contrast.

Right now, if Fang Yuan met a group of ancient cloud beasts, he would not be chased around, the ones in danger would not be Fang Yuan but the ancient cloud beasts instead.

Thinking about it, Fang Yuan felt deeply: After gaining the sovereign immortal body, his cultivation level was rising at a shocking speed. It was worthy of the ultimate product created by Spectral Soul, Shadow Sect, and Zombie Alliance, after spending a hundred thousand years of time and effort!

Of course, the stronger the sovereign immortal body, the greater the enmity between Fang Yuan and Shadow Sect was.

This irreconcilable feud made Fang Yuan ‘deeply concerned’ about Ying Wu Xie and the rest.

Unfortunately, Ying Wu Xie and the others were crafty, Fang Yuan could not find their locations. Otherwise, he would rather give up on the annexing of blessed lands and get rid of these threats first!

Tens of days later, Fang Yuan finally got through Eastern Sea’s blue water regional wall, and Southern Border’s miasma regional wall, officially stepping into Southern Border.

Interestingly, be it Fang Yuan or Ying Wu Xie, they did not know that the other party was in the same region.

“I have heard long ago that the location of Yi Tian Mountain has been sealed with a huge defensive Gu formation made by the righteous path Gu Immortals together. I should go and check out the situation first.” Fang Yuan had no idea how to enter the giant dream realm now.

He decided to gather intelligence first.

He flew southwest.

The flying journey was filled with lots of detours, of course.

Considering heaven’s will, if Fang Yuan flew straight, that would be giving heaven’s will a chance to set up trouble.

“Hmm? Someone is deducing about me?” While flying, Fang Yuan felt dark limit Immortal Gu’s power weakening and found it laughable.

Southern Border, Northern Plains, they were separated by two regional walls, Fang Yuan’s danger of being deduced was extremely low.

As expected, in Northern Plains’ Myriad Bean Garden, Gu Immortal Tian Xia Xin returned half of the payment to Liu Chang.

Liu Chang had an ugly expression, and disbelief in his eyes: “What? Even you could not deduce it?”

Wisdom path Gu Immortal Tian Xia Xin smiled bitterly: “Wisdom path deductions are not all-powerful. I have tried my best, I am deeply sorry.”

Liu Chang flew away from Myriad Bean Garden at a slow speed.

He was very troubled.

And very lost.

If the current number one wisdom path Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, Tian Xia Xin, could not deduce Liu Guan Yi’s location, who could?

“Liu Guan Yi, you had better pray that you never bump into me ever!” Liu Chang swore, he had deep killing intent in his icy cold eyes.

No matter how deep his killing intent was, Fang Yuan was living a good life.

“Oh, they stopped deducing. Hehehe, when these people pay an even bigger price and obtain no results, they should stop.” Fang Yuan laughed.

Northern Plains, Snowy Mountain.

Ma Hong Yun looked at Lady Wan Shou who was approaching as he stared angrily: “Go ahead, you vicious woman!”

Lady Wan Shou snickered, she pressed the lightning ball into Ma Hong Yun’s chest.

Crack crack crack!

Ma Hong Yun’s body trembled intensely, he was emitting smoke due to the lightning.

Guh.

Lady Wan Shou spit out a mouthful of blood, she had a pale expression: “Why did I fail again?”

Her eyes were blood red, after failing so many times, her elegant demeanor was gone.

Ma Hong Yun forced himself to stay conscious, he said weakly: “How would I know? I don’t want it to fail. Just succeed, if you succeed once, I’ll die. Death will end it, I will not undergo such torture again!”

Saying so, Ma Hong Yun could not stay awake anymore, his eyes revolved backwards as he fainted.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1212: Burning Soul Bursting Luck!

“Chirp chirp!” A yellow haired female monkey pranced around, running towards

Fang Yuan with nimble steps.

The yellow haired monkey stood in front of Fang Yuan, offering its peach to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan received it wordlessly, before tossing it below the tree.

The female monkey was shocked, it waved its arms as it jumped around Fang Yuan, it yelled and caused the branch that Fang Yuan was standing on to shake, the leaves were rustling as some fell to the ground.

Fang Yuan covered his face with his hands, sighing as he lowered his head.

The female monkey approached Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan kicked, sending the monkey down the tree.

The female monkey fell off the tree, it gritted its teeth in pain, looking at Fang Yuan on the tree, the attraction in its eyes turned into fear, it quickly escaped while limping.

Fang Yuan’s appearance now had changed, his entire figure had turned from a human to a male monkey.

Precisely so, he attracted the affection of that female monkey.

This was the peak of a nameless mountain.

Fang Yuan came here, disguised as a monkey, he had been here for half a month already.

He concealed his identity, his focus was on observing the super Gu formation.

That’s right, in front of him was the super dream realm.

Unfortunately, the giant dream realm was completely concealed by the righteous path’s Gu formation, with the naked eye, one could only see the scene of a verdant green mountain.

Even if Fang Yuan used his methods, he could only see past the surface, the inside of the Gu formation was still very blurry.

“Unfortunately, my strongest investigative method is three breaths future vision, it cannot deal with this super Gu formation. There must be many Immortal Gu inside this super Gu formation.”

“The one who arranged this Gu formation is Chi clan’s first supreme elder, Chi Qu You. This person is a formation path great grandmaster, the strongest Immortal Gu formation he has ever made is called three tune nine pool formation. His Chi clan descendant Gu Immortals had used this formation during the five regions chaotic war and killed many Central Continent Gu Immortals. This formation was made during Chi Qu You’s later years, he is still far from dying now. But maybe I can deduce it from this super Gu formation in front of me, it has the style of three tune nine pool formation, formations inside formations, overlapping in layers.”

“Right now this Gu formation has only used a portion of its power, it has not even activated Immortal Gu, after all, that would consume immortal essence.”

“Even so, with my observations these last days, just I alone cannot destroy a Gu formation of this level. Not to mention that inside, there are at least thirteen righteous path Gu Immortals!”

There were thirteen super forces in Southern Border’s righteous path.

The super Gu formation here was made through everyone’s efforts. To defend their own interests, each clan had sent at least one Gu Immortal to defend it. These Gu Immortals were elites of their own clans, otherwise, they would not be able to control the situation.

“The defense is too tight, if I want to get in, and use unravel dream, forcing my way through is impossible, I need to plan wisely.” Fang Yuan shook his head internally.

But what plan should he use, Fang Yuan did not know.

There were no clear options.

Because this problem involved the entire Southern Border righteous path. These righteous path forces had worked together, they were united, their distribution of benefits was also very reasonable.

Fang Yuan was all alone, even though he had rank seven cultivation level, against such a huge force, there was nothing he could do.

These righteous path forces could stay in power until today and dominate most of Southern Border’s cultivation resources, there was a good reason for it.

Like before, Fang Yuan attempted to disrupt Northern Plains, in the end, the righteous path forces and Chu Du resisted him.

Fang Yuan had been reborn, but because of heaven’s will, the advantage of his rebirth was quite small.

Most crucially, this giant dream realm also had Gu formations that were not used in his previous life. Thus, Fang Yuan’s understanding of it was minimal.

“What should I do?” Fang Yuan was troubled.

Bai Ning Bing, who was inside Bai Xiang grotto-heaven, stared at the land spirit with an equally troubled feeling.

“I broke through the thirty halls and cut down all my obstacles, I finally met you but you refuse to acknowledge me as your master?” Bai Ning Bing stared at Bai Xiang heavenly spirit, he had an icy expression.

Bai Xiang heavenly spirit was an old man.

He smoked his cigar as he sat on the steps, he looked at Bai Ning Bing and breathed in deeply, before puffing out deeply: “Oh, young people these days, they are so hasty. When you came here, I said that if you get through the thirty halls, I will meet you. I did not say that I will acknowledge you as master. Getting here just means that you have the initial qualifications to accept the following test.”

“What is the following test?” Bai Ning Bing asked coldly.

“Bring back an immortal material.” Bai Xiang heavenly spirit looked at Bai Ning Bing, chuckling with a creepy look.

“What immortal material, where?” Bai Ning Bing asked.

“Do you see that hole at the top of the hall?” Bai Xiang heavenly spirit pointed up and said.

“I saw it the moment I came here, it is too eye-catching.” Bai Ning Bing said plainly.

Bai Xiang heavenly spirit sighed again: “The greatest use of this Immortal Gu House, Thirty Heavenly Halls, is to store large amounts of immortal materials. But a few thousand years ago, one immortal material at the highest layer broke through the ceiling and flew away.”

“What?” Bai Ning Bing was surprised.

“Don’t looked so shocked, young man, this world is huge beyond your imagination. The profundities of all life forms, you will encounter it in the future, and feel for yourself the grandness of heaven and earth...” Bai Xiang heavenly spirit sighed.

“Stop prattling, get to the point.” Bai Ning Bing interrupted mercilessly.

“Oh! Youngster, you have no patience, listening to an old man’s words is good for you.” Bai Xiang heavenly spirit sighed.

Bai Ning Bing was silent, only staring at Bai Xiang heavenly spirit with his blue eyes.

Bai Xiang heavenly spirit smoked another puff as he said: “Alright, I’ll tell you. I want you to subdue that flame. It is hidden deep in the sea to the west. Normally, you cannot find it because it can fuse with sea water completely, but once in a while, it will float to the surface and frolic around. That is your best chance to catch it.”

Bai Ning Bing followed Bai Xiang heavenly spirit’s guidance, arriving at the western coastline.

The sea was wide and vast, there were many waves on the surface, it was a magnificent sight.

Bai Ning Bing had hidden here for more than ten days, he finally found the chance that Bai Xiang heavenly spirit had mentioned.

Swish swish swish!

Countless waves appeared on the surface of the sea, causing tides that were more than a hundred feet tall to form.

The calm and silent sea had at this moment, turned into a roaring brute, the sea was fierce and magnificent, Bai Ning Bing, who was witnessing this for the first time, had deep emotions seeing it.

Next, he flew to the sky, seeing that immortal material which Bai Xiang heavenly spirit was talking about.

It was a small lump of flames.

The flames were orange-yellow, round and the size of an adult’s fist.

It burned and emitted light, it formed into the shape of a flying dragon as the orange flames continued to fly around randomly.

Bai Ning Bing, who was usually expressionless, showed shock on his face.

“Light of dao marks, and so lively, this is a rank nine immortal material!”

Rank nine immortal materials were extremely rare.

They were special materials in the world that could refine rank nine Immortal Gu.

Bai Ning Bing did not expect that Bai Xiang heavenly spirit was asking him to retrieve a rank nine immortal material!

This was out of his capabilities, Bai Ning Bing had to take a risk and use the Immortal Gu inside him to activate a special method, communicating with Ying Wu Xie outside.

“Didn’t I tell you not to contact me, if Bai Xiang heavenly spirit finds out, it will be troublesome.” Ying Wu Xie said.

“I encountered trouble, I need to retrieve a rank nine immortal material, it is a lump of orange-yellow flames...”

Hearing Bai Ning Bing’s thorough description, Ying Wu Xie’s expression changed: “You say that the light from its dao marks resemble flying dragons? The surrounding seawater is rushing outwards, as if it is afraid of this fire?”

“That is indeed so, around the fire, there is a huge empty space without any water in it. I can see the water level at the bottom of this, the empty space is still continuing to expand.” Bai Ning Bing added.

Ying Wu Xie’s expression changed again, his answer this time was a little shaky: “You must have read <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, recorded inside were the three unique flames of heaven, earth, and human respectively, this is the human flame — Raging Wave Rising Dragon Fire!”

“Raging wave rising dragon fire?!” Bai Ning Bing heard this answer and became tongue-tied.

After a short pause, Bai Ning Bing asked: “Then what should I do?”

Ying Wu Xie sighed: “It is very hard. With your cultivation level, there is almost no hope in subduing wild flames. However, this flame is not wild, it was once subdued by Bai Xiang, there is some chance. I have three methods for you, you can try them all.”

“How big are my chances?” Bai Ning Bing asked.

Ying Wu Xie smiled bitterly: “I am not sure, they all have a possibility of success, but the chances are slim, it will depend on your luck.”

Both of them conversed in a short time, in order to avoid getting caught, Ying Wu Xie was the first to cut the connection.

Ying Wu Xie was not optimistic, his thoughts were shrouded in darkness.

“The human flame among the three flames of heaven, earth and human... I am afraid only my main body after revival can have high hopes in succeeding.”

“It seems that I need to help Bai Ning Bing, if he fails, it will be troublesome for my future plans.”

Ying Wu Xie decided to do something.

Even though he was far away from Bai Ning Bing, the latter was in Bai Xiang grotto-heaven and was under the surveillance of Bai Xiang heavenly spirit, Ying Wu Xie had many methods to help Bai Ning Bing.

First, there was luck!

Ying Wu Xie’s immortal killer move — Burning Soul Bursting Luck.

He used this killer move again. The last time he used it was in the super Gu formation inside Central Continent’s Earth Abyss. Back then, Ying Wu Xie planned to refine Fixed Immortal Travel, he burned his own soul to raise his luck sharply!

Eventually, his Gu refinement still failed.

But this was because Heavenly Court had already refined Fixed Immortal Travel before him.

Immortal Gu were unique, even if his luck was overwhelming, Ying Wu Xie could not refine a second Fixed Immortal Travel in this world.

Before Bai Ning Bing set off, Ying Wu Xie had already used connect luck Immortal Gu to tie their luck together.

Right now, Bai Ning Bing was trying to subdue the rank nine immortal material raging wave rising dragon fire, he could not avoid this, Ying Wu Xie could only use luck to help Bai Ning Bing!

On the other hand, near the giant dream realm.

“Oh? Something’s happening!” Fang Yuan, who had turned into a monkey, quickly hid behind the branches.

Two Gu Immortals appeared, standing below the tree Fang Yuan was in.

The peach that Fang Yuan had thrown out earlier was by the feet of a Gu Immortal.

“Brother Luo, thank you for this.” A Gu Immortal said.

“I can bring you in, but if anything happens and you get discovered, it has nothing to do with me.” The other Gu Immortal replied.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1213: Immortal Opportunity Business

“What?” Hearing the conversation of the two Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan’s ears stood up.

He jumped out of the tree, landing above the two Gu Immortals as he hung himself on the branch.

It was a normal reaction for the type of monkey that Fang Yuan had transformed into to behave curiously like this.

The two Gu Immortals did not even raise their heads.

But Fang Yuan was well aware that these two Gu Immortals had already activated their investigative methods, they also found Fang Yuan. But Fang Yuan’s familiar face was a rank eight immortal killer move, it was beyond their methods.

The two immortals had no suspicions, they continued talking.

One of them said: “Brother Luo, don’t worry, I also gained interest after hearing Lady White Rabbit’s words, I want to interact with the rumored dream realm, and test the opportunity for myself. Even though I, Jiao Lei Zi, am a mere lone cultivator, I hold my promises. Since I promised you and made an information path agreement, I would not do something out of line.”

“Precisely because of your reputation, Jiao Lei Zi, us brothers agreed to meet you. Otherwise, you would not even see our shadows. Follow me, when you enter the formation, say that you are a member of Luo clan, and are here to bring an Immortal Gu to my brother.” The Luo clan Gu Immortal walked as he explained.

At the side, lone cultivator Jiao Lei Zi was following after him, listening attentively.

Fang Yuan sat on the branch as he watched them leave, he even followed them, brazenly jumping from tree to tree.

Only after the two Gu Immortals vanished did he stop moving, he looked around, screeching in confusion.

His disguise was extremely convincing, displaying the might of a transformation path grandmaster.

From start to finish, these two Gu Immortals had no suspicions.

“Interesting.” Fang Yuan went back to the trees, his eyes bright as excitement rose in him.

He had accidentally encountered two Gu Immortals’ secret deal.

These two had coincidentally chosen this mountain peak to meet, and right in front of Fang Yuan as well.

This luck was amazing!

Hearing their conversation, evidently, a righteous path Gu Immortal who was part of the defensive Gu formation had gone ahead and done a secret deal with the lone cultivator Gu Immortal, Jiao Lei Zi.

The righteous path Gu Immortal led the way for Jiao Lei Zi, letting him enter the defensive Gu formation and find his own opportunity.

Fang Yuan scoffed at Jiao Lei Zi’s idea.

“You really think the dream realm is this easy to interact with... Opportunity? Without specialized dream path methods, what opportunities can there be?”

“And that righteous path Gu Immortal called himself Luo, he must be from the super force Luo clan.”

Southern Border’s righteous path had thirteen super forces, they had their respective territories in the entire region, Luo clan was one of them.

“Can I use this chance to get into the defensive Gu formation and interact with the dream realm?” Unavoidably, Fang Yuan had such a thought.

He took a final glance at the formation before leaving.

The monkey that Fang Yuan had turned into jumped from tree to tree, climbing mountain cliffs, and continuing to travel. After half a day, he finally left the original mountain.

Continuing on and getting past some mountain peaks, Fang Yuan got rid of his transformation and returned to normal.

He had a vigilant nature, if he used an immortal killer move close to the super Gu formation, he might draw the attention and wariness of the righteous path Gu Immortals.

“This distance should be safe.” Fang Yuan estimated internally.

He was not certain, because he had no understanding of this super Gu formation.

However, even if the righteous path Gu Immortals found his traces, there were no issues.

“I do not believe that after the righteous path super forces made this super Gu formation, the demonic path and lone immortals did not come to probe it!”

Fang Yuan guessed correctly.

The battle of Yi Tian Mountain was like a ball of lightning, from the calm lake that was Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, it caused a massive tide that has risen with ferocity.

The battle of Yi Tian Mountain, it involved the Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, all the major forces in Southern Border and countless Gu Immortals paid attention to it.

Later on, the righteous demonic battle also affected the whole of Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world.

But eventually, that huge battle at Yi Tian Mountain destroyed everything, all of the Gu Immortals that were involved died. And in place of them at Yi Tian Mountain, there was a gigantic dream realm that manifested out of nowhere.

This made the Southern Border Gu Immortals unable to even investigate Yi Tian Mountain. The parties involved, Shadow Sect, Heavenly Court, and Fang Yuan, were keeping very quiet about it, these Southern Border Gu Immortals were all kept in the dark.

Ever since the righteous path went ahead to encircle the giant dream realm, and created this super Gu formation, the demonic path and lone immortals were very unwilling to give in, many of them wanted to investigate this Gu formation.

The righteous path Gu Immortals often found traces of these people, but as long as they did not charge into the Gu formation, they turned a blind eye.

Fang Yuan chose an ordinary mountain cave and stayed for a few days.

He waited for Jiao Lei Zi to leave the defensive Gu formation.

Jiao Lei Zi’s movement was not concealed, he left on the same way as he went in.

“Since Jiao Lei Zi disguised as a Luo clan Gu Immortal, when he left, he had to be open and nonchalant, otherwise, it would be suspicious.” Fang Yuan stared fixedly at Jiao Lei Zi, seeing him fly away, Fang Yuan followed after him closely.

The two flew for a while, Jiao Lei Zi’s speed suddenly slowed down, he stopped at the peak of a nameless mountain.

He turned around and looked at Fang Yuan: “Friend, you have been following me for so long, is anything the matter?”

Jiao Lei Zi did not have a confrontational attitude.

Because Fang Yuan had purposely revealed his traces to Jiao Lei Zi when following him.

He also used attitude Gu to express his goodwill, Jiao Lei Zi could sense it.

Jiao Lei Zi thus did not speak to Fang Yuan in a bad tone, but he was still very guarded.

“I am truly sorry for troubling you.” Fang Yuan greeted as he expressed his intention politely.

Jiao Lei Zi heard Fang Yuan’s following words and his expression soothed.

The reason was, Fang Yuan called himself a wandering lone cultivator, he was curious about the dream realm. But he had heard that Jiao Lei Zi had a way to bribe the righteous path Gu Immortals and get inside the defensive Gu formation, to personally interact with the dream realm, he wanted to see if he could find any opportunities.

Fang Yuan thus waited outside for a long time, only following Jiao Lei Zi after he came out.

“So news have already spread, even an outsider like you has obtained information about it.” Jiao Lei Zi was not suspicious, he smiled helplessly.

“Come with me, it is normal that you want to enter the dream realm to find your immortal opportunity. However, I am not a key middleman, I will bring you to Lady White Rabbit.” Jiao Lei Zi was very enthusiastic.

He might not know Fang Yuan, but his Southern Border Gu Immortal aura could not be false.

Furthermore, Southern Border was the region with the most secluded cultivators in the five regions. This was Southern Border’s trait, many Gu Immortals would not be known by people from the time of their ascension until their death.

With less than a day’s journey, Fang Yuan met with Lady White Rabbit thanks to Jiao Lei Zi.

This female Gu Immortal had the appearance of a woman in her twenties, her eyes were red like rubies, she had a cute round face and shiny big eyes. Her lips were lush, she spoke very quickly, words came out of her mouth like firing a Gatling gun.

The scene of meeting with Lady White Rabbit made Fang Yuan quite surprised.

Because this Lady White Rabbit directly placed a mortal Gu House at a mountain peak, many demonic path and lone immortals were entering and exiting this house.

“We only do dream realm business here, you came to the right place!”

“If you want to enter the dream realm, I have many reliable ways, it will depend on what price you can pay.”

“The bigger the price you pay, the faster you can enter the dream realm, perhaps you might be able to find your own immortal opportunity!” Lady White Rabbit said this as she pointed her thumb at the wall behind her while facing Fang Yuan.

There were all sorts of small boards there, people’s names were written there.

“There are five more people in queue.” Jiao Lei Zi saw this and sighed.

“You must know the importance of the immortal opportunity!” Lady White Rabbit stared at Fang Yuan as she spoke, listing many examples in history before she added: “The Prophecy of Three Venerables, you must know about it. Dream realm, this is the immortal opportunity that concerns Great Dream Immortal Venerable! Think about it, if you can become Great Dream Immortal Venerable in the future, what would happen? Even if you only get one small opportunity, your situation will change. If you do not try this, how would you know if you are able to succeed?”

“That’s right. Even if you know you cannot succeed, you can ensure that you have no regrets in the future.” Jiao Lei Zi added at the side: “A precious dream realm that even the righteous path Gu Immortals are coveting, it is so rare that we can have this chance!”

“That’s right, now is just the start. Thus, the righteous path is not very strict yet.” Lady White Rabbit continued, purposely telling Fang Yuan: “After a while, it will be different. This business will not last long, the opportunity will depend on whether you can grab hold of it!”

“What price do I have to pay?” Fang Yuan pretended to hesitate.

Lady White Rabbit said a sum.

Fang Yuan showed a look of hesitation: “I will consider it first.”

“Of course, consider it well!” Lady White Rabbit smiled, her attitude was still very polite.

At this time, a female Gu Immortal came to the counter, Lady White Rabbit’s smile became more sincere, she disregarded Fang Yuan as she went over: “Sister Miao Yin, you are here to try to find an opportunity again?”

That female Gu Immortal nodded, saying: “I feel that if I change to another location and enter the dream realm, I will have different gains.”

There were many Gu Immortals inside the mortal Gu House, Lady White Rabbit was not the only intermediary, from time to time, new boards were hung on the wall.

Fang Yuan walked out of the mortal Gu House, saying goodbye to Jiao Lei Zi.

“You can consider this again, but in my opinion, you should decide it as soon as possible. It cannot be dragged out. You can see the situation for yourself, the longer you think, the longer the queue of Gu Immortals become, there is no time to waste.” Jiao Lei Zi said before leaving.

Fang Yuan expressed his gratitude as he left.

“Well, has he not made up his mind yet?” Lady White Rabbit finished attending to her Sister Miao Yin as she asked Jiao Lei Zi.

“He said he needs to think about it, sigh, I thought that I could earn a sum of recommendation fees to replenish my losses.” Jiao Lei Zi smiled bitterly.

“Jiao Lei Zi, you are so affluent, why are you acting poor to me?” Lady White Rabbit laughed: “However, this person that you brought is likely a wandering secluded cultivator, he is poor and does not have resources, otherwise, why would he leave? Those with some funds would at least stay and interact for a while before leaving.”

Jiao Lei Zi laughed bitterly: “How am I affluent? I thank Lady White Rabbit for the praise. To speak the truth, this price is really expensive, even I feel great loss.”

Lady White Rabbit smiled, showing her pearly white teeth: “This business relies on both parties’ wishes, it is pricey because it is worth the cost, this is an opportunity involving Great Dream Immortal Venerable after all, right?”

Jiao Lei Zi nodded, making up his mind, saying: “I will pay a sum of resources, I want to try again.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1214: Situation of Southern Border

Looking at the clouds in the sky, Fang Yuan’s expression was dark.

He thought about the scene earlier.

Out of his expectations, that immortal opportunity business, as it was known, of the dream realm was extremely popular. The involvement was far bigger than he had predicted earlier.

Looking at the situation inside the mortal Gu House and Lady White Rabbit’s tone, evidently, whether they were demonic path or lone cultivators, as long as they could pay the price, anyone could enter the righteous path’s defensive Gu formation and interact with the dream realm.

“This is slightly above my expectations, but thinking about it, I understand why.”

Dream path.

At this time period, it was very empty.

Even though many super forces were researching on it, their gains were little.

Fang Yuan had the killer move unravel dream, he was a leading figure in the current five regions. Of course, Ying Wu Xie’s lead soul into dream was also very unique, it was an ability that surpassed the current era.

Lead soul into dream had displayed incredible might during the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had suffered due to it.

And Fang Yuan’s killer move, unravel dream, also gave him great gains, and immense profits.

“The righteous path Gu Immortals might have encircled this dream realm, but they have no way of excavating the treasures inside. In fact, a while later, they lost many members, among which were rank seven Gu Immortal experts holding great authority! Luo clan even lost their third supreme elder...”

Such information could not be hidden, it was widely spread in the Southern

Border Gu Immortal world, Fang Yuan could easily obtain this information.

“The righteous path suffered a lot, they know the power of the dream realm, it is not possible to explore it randomly, so they used this method to scam the demonic path and lone cultivators’ resources. And if any accidents happen, they would not need to waste any of their members to deal a huge blow to these non-righteous members, it is truly killing two birds with one stone.”

“To be able to make this immortal opportunity business so popular and at such a huge scale but still have the ability to remain intact, evidently, the righteous path have come to a consensus, Lady White Rabbit’s mortal Gu House is backed by Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals. One clan is not enough, there are at least six or seven clans working together to result in this fearless stance.”

Fang Yuan was an old schemer, because of the experiences in the five hundred years of his previous life, he could clearly deduce all of the details regarding this immortal opportunity business.

This way, even though he could use this method to enter the righteous path defensive Gu formation, and interact with the dream realm, he could not satisfy his own needs.

What were Fang Yuan’s needs?

Firstly, he needed time and opportunity to interact with the giant dream realm for an extended period of time.

Secondly, he needed an identity to protect himself, even if anything happened to the dream realm, he could continue staying there.

Just one or two trips into the dream realm, what could Fang Yuan get?

Just the cost involved was extremely high.

But the Prophecy of Three Venerables had deeply affected everyone, countless Gu Immortals were still going ahead with it.

The righteous path Gu Immortals had already tasted suffering, by the time these demonic path and lone immortals realized the futility, their enthusiasm would fade.

Furthermore, even if Fang Yuan did this and unraveled the dream realm, gaining an increase in his attainment level.

It would trigger a change in the dream realm.

At least, the dream realm would shrink by an amount.

If other righteous path Gu Immortals realized this situation, what would they do?

By then, Fang Yuan would be inside the Gu formation, like fish on the chopping block. Even with the upper extreme heavenly eagle, Fang Yuan had no heavenly crystals to feed it.

“If I cannot do this, what should I try? Kill a righteous path Gu Immortal and use familiar face to disguise myself before going inside?”

Fang Yuan thought about this, he shook his head, discarding this unrealistic idea.

Firstly, Gu Immortals from righteous path forces would use methods like life tablet Gu, soul lantern Gu or blood rope Gu.

These methods allowed their clans to easily inspect if the Gu Immortal was dead or alive. Furthermore, they could use these life tablet Gu, soul lantern Gu, or blood rope Gu to deduce the exact location of these Gu Immortals with great ease.

Once Fang Yuan kills these Gu Immortals, the clan would react immediately. Unless Fang Yuan had information path methods that could deceive these Gu worms.

Fang Yuan had always been weak in terms of information path.

Furthermore, familiar face might be a rank eight killer move, but it was not flawless. For example, back in Eastern Sea, Ying Wu Xie could use luck inspection Immortal Gu to find out Fang Yuan’s identity.

Finally, once a long time passes, even if Fang Yuan used familiar face, lots of minute details or habits of the Gu Immortal would slowly become flaws that allow others to realize a problem.

Thus, killing someone and replacing them was not feasible.

Fang Yuan thought from all angles, he could not think of any good ideas.

Even if Fang Yuan had rank eight battle strength and attacked the Gu formation forcefully, he might not be able to succeed. Even if he broke the Gu formation, there were still many rank eight Gu Immortals in Southern Border.

By that time, when rank eight enemies encircle him, Fang Yuan would be able to explore any dream realms.

He could not find a solution, Fang Yuan was quite helpless.

He thought about it and returned to the mortal Gu House.

Lady White Rabbit’s eyes shone, she greeted Fang Yuan: “Have you considered it, you want to find your own immortal opportunity?”

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly: “Fairy White Rabbit, I am but a secluded wanderer, I have not interacted much with the outside world, this price will cost me almost all my assets, I need to consider it. I am here this time to get some information from you, and understand matters in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world.”

Fang Yuan said this as he handed Fairy White Rabbit a rank six immortal material.

Fairy White Rabbit was slightly surprised, even though this immortal material was very common, Fang Yuan’s request was not hard. These days, she had been managing this business, she interacted with all sorts of Gu Immortals, she had a good understanding of the Gu Immortal world’s current situation.

“Let’s talk using this.” Fairy White Rabbit gave Fang Yuan an information path mortal Gu.

...

Super dream realm, righteous path Gu formation.

“We meet again, Fairy Miao Yin, do you remember me?” A Qiao clan Gu Immortal led a female Gu Immortal as they entered the Gu formation.

Even though he was a righteous path Gu Immortal, he had a fawning tone.

Because this Fairy Miao Yin, although from the demonic path, was extremely beautiful, she inherited a predecessor’s blessed land and was extremely affluent, she was publicly known as one of the three great fairies in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world.

The two entered the Gu formation, this was seen by the two righteous path Gu Immortals at the center of the Gu formation.

“These people are becoming more daring! They used to come once every seven days, but now, they come every one or two days, bringing all sorts of people in here.”

“The two Gu Immortals from Luo clan are still fine, they bring in people with good reputations and clean records. But Qiao clan’s Gu Immortals have no restraints, they are very greedy. This Miao Yin is a demonic path member, in the past, she had destroyed two important resource points of my Ba clan, and even injured four Ba clan Gu Immortals who chased her!”

Gu Immortal Ba Quan Feng said angrily.

Beside him was another Ba clan Gu Immortal.

This person was very tall, nearly three meters, he had an old fashioned appearance, his beard and hair were connected, his dark green beard hung down to his waist, while his jade green hair extended to the back of his waist.

He had a large mouth and broad nose, his eyes were covered by a black cloth, covering them completely. He had a strong body with broad shoulders and chest, his skin that was not covered looked like thousand year old tree bark, there was even green moss growing on it.

He was thousands of years old, his cultivation level was stuck at the final step before reaching rank eight.

He had rank seven peak battle strength, publicly recognized in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world as the number one person under rank eight — Old Treeman Ba De!

Ba De spoke slowly: “Little Feng, don’t be anxious. Even though Qiao clan is weak, at the bottom of the righteous path forces, they are backed by Wu clan. Qiao clan and Wu clan have been linked by alliance marriages for tens of thousands of years.”

Ba Quan Feng heard about Wu clan and the anger on his face faded, but he still continued : “Qiao clan is a righteous path force, but for the last few thousand years, they have been at Wu clan’s beck and call, they are just a dog raised by Wu clan!”

“This Wu clan is too overbearing! With two rank eight Gu Immortals in the clan, they act fearlessly. This time, they actually cooperated with six other clans, using this dream realm to make their immortal opportunity business. What do they think of the remaining six clans not involved, us included? This super Gu formation was made by all of us, we created it with all of our Immortal Gu!”

“Hehehe.” Ba De laughed: “Little Feng, you are thinking that everyone should have a part of the profits?”

Ba Quan Feng’s thoughts were exposed, his face turned red: “Hehe, I could not hide it from you, lord.”

Ba De shook his head: “Wu clan’s actions will attract even more clans to join in. After all, we have already realized that now is not the time to explore the dream realm. This method can give us greater profits, it is good for us.”

“But our Ba clan cannot join in.”

“Ah, why is that?” Ba Quan Feng asked quickly.

“There are advantages and disadvantages in this. Even though they gain many cultivation resources, we gain a hold on them in return. With enough evidence, in the future when we argue over it, my Ba clan will have the advantage. When we split the dream realm, we will get a bigger portion. Little Feng, look forward, the dream realm cannot be explored now, but what about the future? The dream realm is the true treasure.” Ba De sighed.

“But, Wu clan is so domineering, they have two rank eight Gu Immortals while we only have one, by then, if they keep a strong stance, we cannot stop them.” Ba Quan Feng said angrily.

“We cannot stop Wu clan, but what about the other clans? Furthermore, Wu clan’s first supreme elder is close to dying, Wu clan will soon be in unrest for a long time. With just one rank eight Gu Immortal left, can Wu clan still be the number one righteous path force?” Ba De smiled with deep meaning.

Ba Quan Feng stared with wide eyes: “So the rumors that Wu clan first supreme elder’s lifespan is depleted are not false? Impossible, they are a huge force, how can they not have lifespan Gu stocked up?”

“Wu clan’s first supreme elder had used other lifespan extension methods when she was young, there were problems left behind. Right now, lifespan Gu has no use to her.” Ba De sighed:” With her death, the entire situation in Southern Border will change, by then, we’ll see if Wu clan can control the situation, our clans will have a chance to strike. After all, all these years, Wu clan has occupied too many resources.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1215: Wu Clan’s Conflict

Wu Du Xiu slowly opened her eyes.

“A brand new day.” She thought to herself.

A rank eight Immortal Gu was flying around in this average sized house.

Food path Immortal Gu — Medicine Fragrance!

This was a healing Immortal Gu, it filled the entire house with a thick fragrance of medicine. But Wu Du Xiu’s own rotting smell was intense, the medicine fragrance could not conceal it.

The two smells mixed together, even Gu Immortals could not stand it.

Another passing day meant one less day left.

Wu Du Xiu knew that she was very close to dying.

At this moment, she was lying in her bed, looking at the scene outside her room, her heart was filled with tranquility.

Long ago, when she was still a rank six Gu Immortal, she fell in love with a demonic path Gu cultivator, and was punished by the clan.

She was locked in this house for fifteen years.

To think that this was her fortuitous encounter.

It turned out, inside this house, there was an inheritance of a Wu clan ancestor. Wu Du Xiu obtained it and cultivated in secret, her strength rose rapidly and drastically.

She even used the great expert’s blessed land to meet with her lover in secret. Wu clan’s Gu Immortals did not expect that Wu Du Xiu was openly breaking the clan rules under their watch.

Those were Wu Du Xiu’s happiest years, she was immersed in unparalleled bliss.

Back then, she was just a young, beautiful and silly girl, she did not know the vicious nature of people, she could not tell that her lover had ulterior motives.

Time passed.

Thousands of years later, Wu Du Xiu returned to this house.

She was close to dying, her lifespan was running out, she had days left.

This old woman was filled with experience and fatigue, her murky gaze seemed to have crossed thousands of years, back to the past when she spent her happiest times laughing in this house, all of her memories were surfacing in her mind.

These memories were forever painted in a rosy light.

The windows of the house were opened, a gentle breeze carrying the fragrance of flowers and grass entered her room.

A young lady with a beautiful appearance, youthful with eyes clear as water, greatly moving. She was singing in the house, cleaning up the place and doing a lot of mortal chores, yet she was extremely happy and lively.

At that time, happiness was so easily obtained. But as she grew older, this simple bliss left her.

As for that lover, Wu Du Xiu’s first love, she had already forgotten him.

His image was blurry.

The pain that he had caused Wu Du Xiu caused her to grieve terribly, the hatred that tortured her tired soul had faded with the wind.

Creak.

With a soft sound, the door of the house was opened by someone.

Wu Du Xiu turned her head with difficulty, through the curtains, she saw a familiar figure.

She was not surprised, she had allowed this.

She was Wu clan’s first supreme elder, a person who was in power for thousands of years, without her permission, who could enter this house?

“You are here.” Wu Du Xiu spoke faintly with much difficulty.

But the person who came was very well-mannered, he knelt on the ground and bowed deeply: “I am here to meet you, mother.”

This person was a middle aged man with an ordinary appearance, he had a strong body and sharp eyebrows, giving him a dark and hazy aura.

Wu Du Xiu spoke: “I called you here to tell you something. You have a younger half-brother, he was born in Eastern Sea. I will pass everything in Wu clan to you. And my own inheritance will be left to him, do you understand?”

The middle aged man lowered his head until it touched the ground: “This child understands.”

“You may leave.” Wu Du Xiu paused for a moment before saying.

“I will take my leave!” The middle aged Gu Immortal said carefully, he slowly got up and moved back a few steps before turning around and leaving the house, softly shutting the doors.

He did not dare to even breath loudly, he had an expression of reverence that never changed, only after he left and passed several large mountains, reaching his own Immortal Gu House, did his expression change.

“Mother is muddleheaded!”

“Before dying, she actually wants to bring back that illegitimate son!”

“That bastard, can’t he stay in Eastern Sea for good? Why must he return and fight with me over the inheritance?”

The middle aged Gu Immortal flew into a rage.

“Master, don’t be angry, mind your health.” A rank seven Gu Immortal with a hunched back quickly urged.

The middle aged Gu Immortal kicked him away, roaring: “Mother’s abilities come from her wind path Immortal Gu. She wants to hand these Immortal Gu to that bastard, without these Immortal Gu, with just my rank eight cultivation level, what can I do? We would still be bullied by Ba clan, Tie clan, and Shang clan!”

“Saying that she will leave everything in Wu clan to me, hmph! Why do I want these resources for? I want her rank eight Immortal Gu, I want battle strength! With strength, what can I not get?”

The middle aged Gu Immortal got angrier as he spoke, he paced around in the Immortal Gu House.

“Master, we could also just finish him off!” The rank seven hunched back Gu Immortal walked forward and chopped downwards with his hand.

The middle aged Gu Immortal stopped walking.

He frowned deeply, turning to ask the rank seven Gu Immortal: “You mean to say...”

“That’s right, first supreme elder only has two sons, other than you, there is only the Eastern Sea illegitimate son. If we kill him, then all of first supreme elder’s inheritance will be yours, right?” The rank seven hunched back Gu Immortal smiled sinisterly.

The middle aged Gu Immortal blinked rapidly as sweat appeared on his forehead.

“No.”

“If mother finds out, I will be finished!” Thinking about his mother’s methods, even though the middle aged Gu Immortal had rank eight cultivation level, he could not help but tremble.

“Forget it, he is only rank seven, what can he do even if he returns?” The middle aged Gu Immortal sighed deeply.

But the hunchback Gu Immortal did not give up, he continued to speak: “Oh master, you cannot think like that. He already has rank seven cultivation level, what will happen when he gets first supreme elder’s Immortal Gu?”

The middle aged Gu Immortal snorted, regaining some of his defiance: “Even if he has rank eight Immortal Gu, his dao mark accumulation cannot compare to mine. He is not my match. It is a pity regarding those two rank eight Immortal Gu, however. Sigh...”

The hunchback Gu Immortal smiled sinisterly: “Master, you are just hesitant because you are afraid of failure and causing first supreme elder to punish you. Actually, we do not need to act ourselves. Other than us, there is Ba clan, Tie clan, Chi clan, and others, they are all after our clan’s status, they want to displace us. As long as we release information about his traveling route, we can lure them to attack. By then, we will benefit from it greatly.”

The middle aged Gu Immortal heard and his eyes shone, he praised: “Good plan, good plan, Xu Tuo, you are indeed my greatest aide. When I become first supreme elder, I will not mistreat you.”

“Master, it is my job to solve problems for you, it is my honor.” The hunchback Gu Immortal’s eyes were turning red as he choked, holding back a sob.

The middle aged Gu Immortal patted Xu Tuo’s shoulder, he did not speak, he only showed happiness on his face.

Inside the Immortal Gu House, both master and servant had a lightened atmosphere.

“Master, there is no time, should I go prepare now?”

“Yes, go ahead, I am assured if you are handling it.”

After leaving the Immortal Gu House, Xu Tuo’s eyes flashed with a sharp and dark light.

“Hmph! After spending so much effort, I finally managed to convince this Wu Yong, this way, even if I expose information about this illegitimate son, and get hunted down by others, I will be safe under Wu Yong’s protection! My true identity will not be exposed.”

Xu Tuo’s true identity was not just simply Wu Yong’s servant, the truth was, he was a Ba clan Gu Immortal. He was a spy planted into Wu clan, he had the highest authority among the spies.

The situation in Southern Border was very different from Northern Plains and Central Continent.

Among the righteous path forces in Southern Border, Wu clan was the domineering one. In history, at their peak, they had three rank eight Gu Immortals! And across history, Wu clan always had at least one rank eight Gu Immortal to hold the fort in their clan.

Wu clan had always been strong. Wu Du Xiu’s life was ending, while Wu Yong was not talented enough, even though he was rank eight, compared to the other righteous path rank eights, he was not impressive.

Wu Du Xiu’s illegitimate son, Wu Yi Hai, had incredible talent according to some information. Even though he was a lone cultivator in Eastern Sea, he had formidable battle strength, he was quite famous even in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.

Killing Wu Yi Hai could not only weaken Wu clan, it can also attack Wu Yong’s reputation, and send Wu clan into chaos and suspicion internally.

Xu Tuo went with much hope.

Some days later.

Three Gu Immortals were passing through the miasma regional wall.

“Young master, we are almost through the miasma regional wall. This is the final hurdle, once we are out of the regional wall, they will have fewer chances to attack us.” An elderly Gu Immortal said solemnly.

Wu Yi Hai suddenly said: “Uncle Zhang, you mean that the following part of the journey is the most dangerous!”

“That’s right.” The elderly Gu Immortal nodded seriously.

Another young looking Gu Immortal said: “But as long as we get through this, we will be completely free. As long as you can meet your mother, all of the hardship and suffering on this trip would be repaid by hundreds or thousands of times!”

Hearing about his mother, Wu Yi Hai had complex emotions.

He sighed: “Oh! What rewards, I am not thinking about them. I just want to see my birth mother, she was the one who abandoned me, but she also got Uncle Zhang to lead me on the road of cultivation. I want to meet her personally, and for the first and final time, before leaving. I am an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, I became immortal in Eastern Sea.”

Uncle Zhang smiled: “Young master, don’t worry, first supreme elder had long since thought of this, she prepared everything for you. Even though you became immortal in Eastern Sea, we have an immortal killer move to cleanse your heaven and earth qi, to turn you from an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal to a Southern Border Gu Immortal. From now on, you can undergo tribulations in Southern Border, taking in heaven and earth qi without any problems.”

“Oh? There is such a way...” Wu Yi Hai heard this and became overjoyed.

Even though he had some fame in Eastern Sea, he was just a lone cultivator, he knew the pain and weakness of cultivating alone. If he had a super force to rely on, Wu Yi Hai would be glad about it.

He was just thinking about this, when suddenly, dragon breath resembling sword light assaulted his face!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1216: Regional Wall Ambush

This dragon breath was extremely sharp, before it even hit, Wu Yi Hai already felt like there were needles poking into his face.

He was extremely shocked, he had no time to dodge.

Clang!

With a sharp metallic sound, a small, round and golden shield appeared in front of Wu Yi Hai at the moment of life and death.

The dragon breath made of sword light landed on the golden shield, in the blink of an eye, this shield broke as the remaining power shot towards Wu Yi Hai’s face.

But with this golden shield, Wu Yi Hai gained a precious amount of time to save his own life.

He was a renowned rank seven Gu Immortal in Eastern Sea indeed, he called out as he activated his transformation path killer move.

Light shone, Wu Yi Hai vanished on the spot, a huge tortoise appeared in his place.

The huge tortoise’s four limbs, head, and tail were kept inside a shell.

The dragon breath landed on the huge tortoise’s shell, causing a deep mark to form.

“What amazing dragon breath! The horned divine tortoise that I transformed into is an ancient desolate beast, it has a tough shell, it is top ten even among Eastern Sea’s ancient desolate beasts.” Wu Yi Hai was very shocked: “It seems that the enemy is stronger than all the earlier ambushes! Now, it will depend on Uncle Zhang and Brother Leng.”

Wu Yi Hai was a transformation path Gu Immortal, but the horned divine tortoise he turned into was huge and had good speed when traveling underwater. On land, it was far slower.

Its battle strength also fell by a lot, Wu Yi Hai was merely using the horned divine tortoise’s strong defense.

High defense and low offense, even though Wu Yi Hai protected his life, he lost all initiative in this battle.

He had other methods to turn into other lifeforms as well, but do not forget about the major weakness of transformation path Gu Immortals.

That was: They could not transform casually. When changing to different forms, time needed to be spent. Gu Immortals had to remove the temporary dao marks on them first before transforming again.

Fang Yuan had the sovereign immortal body, that was a special case. Qi Zai had once mistaken that he had obtained Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s true inheritance, which allowed him to casually change forms.

Thus, after Wu Yi Hai became a horned divine tortoise, even though he saved his life, for the short term, he could not counter attack.

But Wu Yi Hai did not panic.

He knew that there were two rank seven Gu Immortal experts with him.

One was Uncle Zhang, the other was Brother Leng, Wu Yi Hai did not know their full names, but he knew that these two were sent by his mother, bodyguards to escort him to Southern Border!

On the previous parts of this journey, these two Gu Immortals displayed incredible strength, they were reliable and had helped Wu Yi Hai to get through many hurdles.

Wu Yi Hai placed his hopes in Uncle Zhang and Brother Leng, but Uncle Zhang was spitting out blood.

He had to.

Because his golden shield was broken by that sword light dragon breath.

This was Uncle Zhang’s defensive killer move, after it was broken, Uncle Zhang suffered a backlash, he immediately spat out blood.

Similar to Wu Yi Hai, Uncle Zhang was very shocked.

“Inside this miasma regional wall, all immortal killer moves are weakened by the miasma. This dragon breath penetrated the miasma and broke my defenses, it even left a mark on the horned divine tortoise shell, how strong is that dragon breath!”

Uncle Zhang was spitting blood, Brother Leng was flying forward.

The two worked with coordination.

This young Gu Immortal knew that Uncle Zhang needed to rest after his defensive killer move was broken.

He charged fiercely and imposingly.

In the blink of an eye, he turned from a human into a lightning flash giant wolf.

The lightning flash giant wolf was an ancient desolate beast, it was covered in blue fur, the tips of the fur was all covered in mysterious blue crystals, they gave off weak sparks.

Once the lightning flash giant wolf appeared, it brightened up the dark purple miasma in the area.

It followed the path formed by the dragon breath, and charging forward.

Its four limbs moved, its muscles pushed with strength, giving this Gu Immortal incredible speed.

At the same time, countless strands of lightning resembling snakes appeared on this lightning flash giant wolf’s body.

The lightning snakes gathered into a stream that shot forward from the lightning flash giant wolf’s head.

This was the Gu Immortal’s immortal killer move.

Seeing this, Uncle Zhang relaxed his mind.

In a few breaths of time, he suppressed his injuries as his body shone in a bright light.

In the blink of an eye, he turned into a golden sword teeth tiger, his size was twice as large as the lightning flash giant wolf.

As it turned out, he was also a transformation path Gu Immortal.

This was Wu Du Xiu’s purposeful arrangement.

Because the regional walls of the five regions were very special. Between different cultivation paths, there was no difference in terms of passing through them, but if they fought inside, transformation path Gu Immortals had an advantage.

Inside the regional wall, when Gu Immortals use their immortal killer moves, their immortal apertures would shake and they would get injured before even harming the enemy.

But if they turned into a fierce beast, fighting with just their physical body, this weakness would be avoided, and they would have a sustainable source of battle strength.

Uncle Zhang took a look behind, he knew of the horned divine tortoise’s defense, he instructed Wu Yi Hai before following after the lightning flash giant wolf, charging forward.

Soon, Uncle Zhang saw the lightning flash giant wolf running back!

Behind the lightning flash giant wolf, there were streams of dragon breath made of sword light shooting towards him, inside the thick dark purple miasma, dragon roars could be heard.

“What is going on?” Uncle Zhang was shocked, he knew that the Brother Leng was very courageous in battle, he would not retreat without a reason. There has to be a reason why he was running!

“Don’t fight, retreat.” Brother Leng saw the golden tiger and spoke human words.

Uncle Zhang was even more shocked now, why did Brother Leng want to avoid battle.

He was about to ask, when he finally saw the culprit that attacked them.

A sword dragon penetrated the dark purple miasma, appearing before them.

Many layers of silvery white dragon scales, pale white dragon eyes, a dragon horn that pierced towards the sky, and four sharp and dangerous dragon claws, dragon teeth that were shining with sharp light, as well as the aura of many Immortal Gu in its body!

“Is this a wild ancient sword dragon?!” Uncle Zhang opened his eyes wide, unable to believe it.

But the truth was right in front of him, he had to accept it.

At this moment, he understood why the Gu Immortal who usually felt no fear in any situation would retreat so suddenly.

Because he encountered a wild ancient sword dragon, this sword dragon did not come from the five regions, it lived in either white heaven or black heaven.

Why was Uncle Zhang so sure?

Because this ancient sword dragon could move freely in the regional wall, its movements were so fluid, as if it did not feel any resistance or pressure.

For Gu Immortals, they were differentiated by regions, when they enter regional walls, they would be greatly affected.

Only life forms that lived in the ancient white heaven or black heaven would be able to move freely in the five regional walls.

Uncle Zhang did not hesitate, he turned around and fled.

Being unaffected by the regional wall, this advantage was huge. Gu Immortals in the regional walls could display only about fifty to sixty percent of their strength.

Even in the outside world, against an ancient sword dragon with multiple wild Immortal Gu, Uncle Zhang did not have confidence. Not to mention right now, when they were inside a special environment like the regional wall?

“Why are we so unlucky? So coincidentally, we encountered a wild ancient sword dragon, roaming in the regional wall?”

“I am guessing that this ancient sword dragon is likely to have been lured here by certain Gu Immortals, to obstruct us!”

While escaping, Uncle Zhang and Brother Leng conversed.

Soon, they met with the horned divine tortoise that Wu Yi Hai had turned into.

Wu Yi Hai was informed of the situation as well, he quickly transmitted: “Try not to fight with this ancient sword dragon, it might have been lured here, with the purpose of draining our immortal essence and battle strength as we fight it!”

“Then what do we do?”

“Retreat, leave the ancient sword dragon alone and try not to aggravate it, but we also have to display great strength. Wild beasts have little intelligence, but if it knows that the prey is powerful, it will give up.”

The three Gu Immortals quickly decided on a plan.

Less offense and more defense, they allowed the ancient sword dragon to trail behind them, using its sword light dragon breath.

The three Gu Immortals retreated, they were on the back foot against the dragon breath, unable to raise their heads.

“What do we do, this ancient sword dragon seems to be locked onto us!”

“Maybe I aggravated it earlier when I used a lightning path killer move.”

“I have an immortal killer move that can reduce the anger of this fierce beast, but I need to change my killer move.”

The three immortals quickly discussed, they soon decided that Brother Leng and Uncle Zhang would defend while Wu Yi Hai would change his transformation to appease the ancient sword dragon.

Wu Yi Hai carefully changed back to human form.

He hid behind the two immortals, using his methods to get rid of the dao marks on him, before using another transformation.

As a wild beast, the ancient sword dragon would have little intelligence, it constantly attacked the huge wolf and golden tiger instead.

Uncle Zhang and Brother Leng thus endured the attacks of the ancient sword dragon, defending with much difficulty. They were both injured, but to chase this ancient sword dragon away, they did not use their offensive techniques, to prevent the situation from worsening and falling into their enemies’ trap.

“It is almost ready, my immortal killer move is... uh!” Wu Yi Hai’s joyous tone turned into a shocked gasp.

Because he saw that the golden tiger that Uncle Zhang had turned into had its head pierced by an immortal killer move, dying on the spot.

Sword path killer move — Dark Assassination!

It was so sudden, without any warning.

Next, that ancient sword dragon burst out with unparalleled speed in an instant, flying forward like a silver bolt of lightning, leaving behind vague silhouettes in the immortals’ eyes as it vanished on the spot.

Brother Leng was shocked!

“We fell for their trap! Oh no!!”

He turned around, only to see that Wu Yi Hai’s head was shattered into pieces, his white brain matter was flowing out. His headless corpse was grabbed by the ancient sword dragon, stuffed into its immortal aperture.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1217: Cultivation Level Rises Again

Seeing this, the poor Brother Leng’s eyes were almost popping out.

“How can this be? This ancient sword dragon has an immortal aperture, it is not wild, it is a Gu Immortal’s transformation!”

“This should not be! If it is a transformation path Gu Immortal, why is it not affected by the regional wall?!”

Brother Leng screamed crazily in his mind!

This went against the common sense of the cultivation world!! How could this happen?

The ancient sword dragon roared as it charged at him.

Blood flowed out of the eyes of the lightning flash giant wolf, Wu Yi Hai was dead, everything that he did earlier was for nothing.

Brother Leng tried to defend himself, in order to save his own life.

The ancient sword dragon craftily dodged all of his immortal killer moves, spitting out streams of dragon breath at the lightning flash giant wolf as it flew around it.

The lightning flash giant wolf could barely move in the regional wall, like an old man. But the ancient sword dragon was unaffected, it moved smoothly and could retreat and advance with ease, it held the initiative.

The lightning flash giant wolf could only take a beating, even if it used immortal killer moves to retaliate, the ancient sword dragon easily dodged them.

A moment later, the ancient sword dragon found a flaw and sent dragon breath at the lightning flash giant wolf’s stomach.

The lightning flash giant wolf’s defenses crumbled, its stomach was penetrated, its intestines and blood flowed out of the huge wound that was created.

The ancient sword dragon attacked using this chance, even though the lightning flash giant wolf dodged left and right, it could not resist the attacks of the ancient sword dragon, it fell on the ground with many holes in its body, it turned back to human form and died in a pool of blood at the hands of the ancient sword dragon.

The ancient sword dragon quickly cleaned up the battlefield, moving with great familiarity, as if it had gone through this countless times.

Soon, Uncle Zhang and Brother Leng’s corpses were stuffed into the immortal aperture, before it destroyed the battlefield entirely and flew away.

The ancient sword dragon did not turn around and return to Southern Border, instead, it flew towards the east, going through the miasma regional wall and blue water regional wall to reach Eastern Sea.

It searched for a nameless sea area before placing Wu Yi Hai in it.

After the blessed land was formed, the entrance was opened, and the ancient sword dragon flew in using the opportunity.

Wu Yi Hai’s blessed land was an ocean. The types of lifeforms inside mainly were sea turtles and tortoises, corals, and seagulls.

Inside, there were desolate beasts, and even ancient desolate beasts.

Like three ancient desolate beast horned divine tortoises, a field of ancient desolate plant silent corals, and six desolate beast white letter blue feather seagulls.

Not long after, the land spirit appeared before the ancient sword dragon.

This was a land spirit in the shape of a sea turtle, it gave a rather difficult acknowledgement requirement.

The ancient sword dragon could only leave this blessed land temporarily.

After returning to the outside world and confirming its safety, the ancient sword dragon turned back to human.

Who else could it be but Fang Yuan?

As it turned out, he had learned a lot of intelligence about Southern Border from Lady White Rabbit, he knew about Wu Yi Hai’s matter.

This was Wu clan’s internal conflict, but it involved Wu Du Xiu, naturally it escalated into a huge matter.

Wu Yi Hai’s route was widely spread, Fang Yuan sensed acutely that this was a major chance!

Evidently, Wu Yi Hai was very suitable for Fang Yuan to disguise as and replace.

Firstly, he was Wu Du Xiu’s illegitimate son, he did not have any life tablet Gu or soul lantern Gu, otherwise, he would not be an illegitimate son but the second young master instead.

Thus, when Fang Yuan killed him, there was little chance that Wu clan found out.

Secondly, Wu Yi Hai had always been staying in Eastern Sea, cultivating as a lone cultivator, he had basically zero interaction with Wu clan’s Gu Immortals. Most of Wu clan’s Gu Immortals did not even know what his appearance was, especially the details regarding his habits and the way he spoke, nobody knew about those.

Thus, once Fang Yuan used familiar face to disguise as Wu Yi Hai, for a long period of time, there was little chance of him getting exposed.

Wu Yi Hai’s blessed land was not obtained, but Fang Yuan did not panic.

He found a deserted island and rested in it.

On one hand, he was waiting for blood asset Immortal Gu to recover, on the other hand, he was trying to modify an immortal killer move — Blood Light Spirit Suppression.

Ever since blood asset Immortal Gu was injured, Fang Yuan had been healing it, paying great attention to it, it had almost recovered fully already.

Thus, in a few days, Fang Yuan got back his blood asset Immortal Gu in perfect condition.

But Fang Yuan continued to cultivate, deducing blood light spirit suppression.

Finally, he got what he wanted, a simplified version of blood light spirit suppression using blood asset Immortal Gu as the core!

Matters became simpler now.

Fang Yuan used the upper extreme heavenly eagle to enter Wu Yi Hai’s blessed land, after getting close to the land spirit, he suppressed it with blood light spirit suppression.

Next, because the land spirit had no resistance anymore, Fang Yuan spent a lot of effort to successfully annex this blessed land, making it a part of the sovereign immortal aperture.

This allowed his calamities and tribulations to move ahead by a large number.

After all, Wu Yi Hai was a rank seven Gu Immortal, he was different from those at rank six.

As for Wu Yi Hai’s sea turtle land spirit, under Fang Yuan’s careful preservation, it did not vanish, it entered Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture along with the blessed land.

But it did not listen to Fang Yuan, it cried all the time.

Fang Yuan wanted to get rid of it, but after realizing that it did not have the intention to harm the blessed land, he gave up that idea.

“Maybe when I fulfill the ownership requirement, I would be able to truly subdue this land spirit.”

After this matter was settled, Fang Yuan immediately traveled across the regional walls, going back to Southern Border.

Once he entered Southern Border, he flew straight towards the central region of Southern Border, placing the immortal apertures of Brother Leng and Uncle Zhang and annexing them after they formed blessed lands.

“Hmm, this way, I have already passed one grand tribulation.” Fang Yuan inspected, he found that after annexing three rank seven Gu Immortals’ blessed lands, his cultivation level rose sharply, he was a rank seven Gu Immortal who had passed one grand tribulation already.

Rank seven Gu Immortals faced an earthly calamity every ten years, a heavenly tribulation every fifty years, and a grand tribulation every one hundred years. After three hundred years, after passing three grand tribulations, they would become rank eight.

“But the might of the grand tribulation gets stronger each time, by tens or hundreds of times. Southern Border’s top rank seven Gu Immortal, Old Treeman Ba De, is stuck at the final grand tribulation, he does not dare to undergo tribulation.”

His gains this time were out of Fang Yuan’s expectations.

Not only did he annex three rank seven blessed lands, it even caused his cultivation level to rise sharply, such cultivation speed was scary even for him.

Fang Yuan could not help but gasp at his good luck!

“Dog shit luck Immortal Gu, worthy of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s vital Gu. I wonder what will happen when I elevate it to rank eight, how would it compare to fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu?”

Fang Yuan subconsciously looked above his head, even though he had no luck inspection Immortal Gu.

He did not know that the entire matter went so smoothly largely because of Ying Wu Xie, he had used the immortal killer move burning soul bursting luck.

Especially when he fought against the three Gu Immortals including Wu Yi Hai, they actually misunderstood Fang Yuan as a wild ancient sword dragon.

One one hand, ancient sword dragons truly could be unrestricted by regional walls, they could not help but think of it like that.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan had used attitude Gu and disguised himself, the three Gu Immortals were just rank seven, they fell for it without realizing.

Thus, when fighting, Fang Yuan had an easy time, the three Gu Immortals defended more than they attacked, they chose to take a beating.

Later on, Wu Yi Hai thought the ancient sword dragon had low intelligence and actually spoke, saying that he was going to attempt to change into another form.

Hearing this, the two immortals naturally relaxed their minds.

Fang Yuan saw this massive opportunity and activated the killer move that he had prepared long ago, dark assassination, killing Uncle Zhang. Next, he attacked at lightning speed, eliminating Wu Yi Hai, in the blink of an eye, only Brother Leng was left. At that point, Fang Yuan’s victory was assured.

In this battle, Fang Yuan gained immensely.

The only drawback was, these three transformation path Gu Immortals’ immortal apertures had shaken intensely, a lot of resources were lost.

There was no helping it, they were attacked many times in the regional walls, it was impressive to have lasted until then.

Next, Fang Yuan did not go to Wu clan immediately.

He soul searched Wu Yi Hai as he tried to understand his entire life.

During this period, Fang Yuan was not cultivating in seclusion, he went to Lady White Rabbit for more intelligence.

Wu Yi Hai’s disappearance was known to the whole of Southern Border.

It was unknown if he was alive or dead, Wu clan chose to remain silent. The forces had their guesses, although they were inclined to believe — Wu Yi Hai was dead, but it was unknown who did it.

There were many forces who acted in the dark, most of them were righteous path forces, this matter was known to everyone.

These forces were not going to foolishly admit they were the ones who killed Wu Yi Hai, of course.

Regarding this problem, there was a rumor that was entering everyone’s ears.

That was — the true culprit who murdered Wu Yi Hai was none other than Wu clan rank eight Gu Immortal Wu Yong!

There were many versions of this rumor, but the central claim was, Wu Yong wanted to take Wu Du Xiu’s inheritance for himself, thus, he went ahead to murder his half-brother.

Undeniably, this was a severe blow to Wu Yong.

Demonic path Gu Immortals did not care, while it varied from person to person for lone immortals, but righteous path Gu Immortals placed a lot of emphasis on and treasured their reputations.

Wu Yong also chose to remain silent, he did not clarify anything.

“Interesting.” Fang Yuan could feel many hidden undercurrents in this matter, countless forces and Gu Immortals were secretly exerting force, creating this contest that was carefully hidden from view.

Wu Du Xiu was about to die, Wu Yong, who had always lived in his mother’s shadow, had rank eight cultivation level, but his abilities were widely questioned.

“If I appear at this time, what would happen?” Fang Yuan had just thought of this when he felt a cold chill running down his spine.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1218: Du Xiu, Yong

Fang Yuan looked over the situation, he knew that now was not the time for ‘Wu Yi Hai’ to show up.

Firstly, he had not completely searched Wu Yi Hai’s soul yet, his preparations were not complete.

Secondly, Wu Du Xiu was not dead yet.

If Wu Du Xiu did not die, Fang Yuan could not safely appear as Wu Yi Hai.

Rank eight Gu Immortal!

Who knew what methods Wu Du Xiu had to ascertain if ‘Wu Yi Hai’ was her own son?

Even though ‘Wu Yi Hai’ would lose a lot in this case, Fang Yuan only really wanted the identity of ‘Wu Yi Hai’.

That was his original motive. If his disguise failed because of some greed, he would lose this rare opportunity, that was the biggest loss to him, he would slap himself endlessly.

Finally, there was danger lurking in all righteous path forces, the same went for even Wu clan.

There was no smoke without fire.

Wu Yong indeed had the motive and was likely to deal with Wu Yi Hai.

If Fang Yuan appeared too early, he might get killed by Wu clan secretly.

“Speaking of which, Wu Yi Hai’s identity is quite troublesome. But thankfully, I have future memories, I know what happened in the five hundred years of my previous life, this can help me analyze the situation.”

Just like this, Fang Yuan continued to cultivate.

He continued to soul search Wu Yi Hai while collecting information about the outside world.

Wu Du Xiu’s condition was getting worse every day, the entirety of Southern Border was in a commotion.

Over in Northern Plains, the blood battle martial competition was still ongoing. Without Liu Guan Yi, Chu Du’s side was completely suppressed. But soon, the situation changed, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu personally invited three rank seven lone immortals and they won consecutively, helping Chu Du’s side reach a deadlock with the righteous path alliance.

Liu tribe Gu Immortal Liu Chang had been announcing that he wanted Liu Guan Yi to fight him, otherwise, he was a coward, a chicken and more.

Not only was Liu Chang seeking to trouble Fang Yuan, the same went for other forces like Ye Lui tribe. But Liu Guan Yi had vanished without a trace, as if this person had never existed in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world!

These pursuing forces were bound to fail, but over in Central Continent, many Gu Immortals had worse fates.

Defy!

This underground organization created by Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals had been eradicated completely by Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals as well as the ten great ancient sects.

Other than that, many of the people on the Demon Judgment Board had been captured, blood path demonic immortals were killed, while some other demonic path or lone immortals had less severe crimes, they were taken away by the ten great ancient sects and turned into slave Gu Immortals.

On a certain day, half a month later, Wu Du Xiu summoned Wu Yong and several other Wu clan supreme elders to her house.

At her dying moments, Wu Du Xiu spoke with unprecedented clarity, she said: “I have three regrets in life.”

“The first regret is that I failed to exterminate the Seven Fierce Gorge Ghosts, I only destroyed their den.”

“The second regret is that I did not managed to find enough dry clear qi to refine eight-faced prestige wind Gu.”

“The third regret...”

Saying this, Wu Du Xiu paused.

“Is that I did not get to see my son Yi Hai. Back then... I hated his father, I killed him, but I should not have placed that hatred and anger on a pure and innocent child, he is blameless. I want to make it up to him, but it is too late.”

In the house, nobody made a sound, it was silent.

Wu Du Xiu sighed, sitting up on her own.

She got into a half sitting position with much difficulty, leaning on the head of her bed, she waved to Wu Yong weakly.

Wu Yong understood her intention, he quickly pulled the curtains apart and stepped forward, getting to Wu Du Xiu and kneeling down reverently.

Wu Du Xiu looked at her eldest son and smiled after a long time: “Yong Er, you are good, I am not disappointed.”

Wu Yong’s body shuddered, he raised his head, his eyes were red, tears were sprinkling down.

At this moment, he was expressing his true emotions, this old woman in front of him was his mother after all!

“I am handing Wu clan to you, I can rest assured.” Wu Du Xiu continued to say.

“Mother.” Wu Yong opened his mouth, his voice was hoarse, tears were streaming down his face.

Wu Du Xiu continued: “My child Yi Hai was unable to come here, that is fate. Forget it, I will hand these Immortal Gu to you. You cultivate wind path as well, I hope you can cherish them and put them to good use.”

“Mother, I don’t want your Immortal Gu, I just want you to live!” Wu Yong sobbed.

“Silly child, who can avoid dying? Even Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables with immense strength die in the end. Eternal life is but a fantasy of fools.”

Saying this, Wu Du Xiu’s Immortal Gu flew out of her immortal aperture, going towards Wu Yong.

The Wu clan supreme elders on the other side of the curtain watched this quietly.

The transfer was smooth.

Aura of Immortal Gu faded into Wu Yong’s body one by one.

Wu Du Xiu looked outside the window.

The sunlight was bright, through the small window, it entered the room.

In a daze, Wu Du Xiu could almost see a figure in the sunlight.

That figure was neither her father or mother, it was also not the man who she had once loved in her life, it was herself.

That young version of herself, the lady whose smile was as bright as the sun.

Wu Du Xiu.

Wu Du Xiu.

“Hehe.” Wu Du Xiu muttered her own name twice, before laughing lightly.

Her body began to shine with white light, countless white specks were flying out of her shriveled old body.

The specks of light were the dissipation of her soul and body.

A moment later, there was nobody left on the bed, the reputable and powerful rank eight Gu Immortal, Wu Du Xiu, a legendary person who had exerted her influence on Southern Border for thousands of years, had at this moment, vanished from this world.

She did not leave behind her body or her soul.

“First supreme elder—!”

Outside the curtain, Wu clan’s supreme elders cried out with sorrow.

Cries filled this small house without any owner.

Incredible anguish was vented through crying.

Wu Yong cried quietly, he knelt on the ground, lowering his head and not moving, like a statue.

Long after, he slowly raised his head, he no longer cried, his expression was as firm as steel.

He stood up.

Next, he looked at the Wu clan supreme elders through the curtain, they were sprawling on the ground, crying painfully without any of their usual demeanor.

“Everyone, hold in your sadness. Mother is gone, but we have to continue enveloping Southern Border with Wu clan’s glory!” Wu Yong’s plain tone carried extraordinary authority.

The supreme elders gradually stopped crying.

Wu Yong pulled the curtain aside, walking out.

The supreme elders had already stood up, they realized something.

The atmosphere had become heavy, these Gu Immortal elders paid their respects towards Wu Yong, they said together: “We pay respects to first supreme elder!”

The legend of a generation, Wu Du Xiu had died, as her son, Wu Yong with rank eight cultivation level became the next first supreme elder of Wu clan.

After news got out from Wu clan, it spread through the entire Southern Border Gu Immortal world at lightning speed!

Southern Border was in a commotion.

Wu Du Xiu had finally died, many Gu Immortals and forces let out sighs of relief.

Wu clan originally had two rank eight Gu Immortals, but now only one was left, could it still remain as the number one righteous path force?

Wu clan seemed to have too many resource points under its control.

Wu Du Xiu was gone, only Wu Yong, who had insufficient talent and abilities, was left, could he truly lead Wu clan on a path of glory?

Not only were the Gu Immortals outside of Wu clan thinking about this, even within Wu clan, many members were doubtful towards the abilities of this new first supreme elder.

And also the rumors of Wu Yong killing his half-brother Wu Yi Hai, at this moment, they were spread around fiercely, like the surface of boiling water, bubbles were emerging fiercely.

Qing Yang Mountain.

Qiao clan’s headquarters were here.

Two Gu Immortals of Qiao clan were standing at the peak, looking in Wu clan’s direction.

The two immortals could see many layers of clouds, mountains winds were blowing and causing their sleeves to flutter.

Qiao clan’s first supreme elder sighed: “Wu Du Xiu is dead, Wu Yong has just taken over her position, but he is already plagued by the rumors of killing his brother, hehe, this is a good opportunity for our Qiao clan. Everyone thinks that we are Wu clan’s lackey, but the truth is, we were just trying to survive. With Wu clan’s commotion, we can finally have a chance to take action. Compared to other clans, we have better reasons to do this because of our long term marriage alliances with Wu clan!”

“Wu Yong seems ordinary, but I feel like he is not so simple. Even if he is not talented, he is still a rank eight Gu Immortal.” The other Gu Immortal spoke.

She looked like a woman in her twenties, she wore a green dress that could not conceal her alluring body shape. Her skin was white as snow, her eyes were concealed by her long eyelashes, they seemed clear as water.

She was Qiao clan’s pride, a genius that was the hope for the future, as well as one of the three great fairies of Southern Border — Qiao Si Liu.

Qiao clan’s first supreme elder laughed:” Oh Liu Er, this is the reason why I asked you to talk to me. We are going to continue our marriage alliance with Wu clan.”

Qiao Si Liu’s body shook: “I understand, I am willing to contribute to the clan.”

“Very good, the clan did not raise you in vain.” Qiao clan’s first supreme elder was very glad.

“But if I marry Wu Yong, I might not be able to control him. He is a rank eight Gu Immortal, he even has authority over the entirety of Wu clan...” Qiao Si Liu hesitated.

“Not with him.” Qiao clan’s first supreme elder smiled.

“Then who else?” Qiao Si Liu was visibly confused.

“Wu Yi Hai.”

“Wu Yi Hai?”

“That’s right, he approached us a few days ago.”

Seven days later.

Wu clan held a grand funeral on Divine Wind Mountain.

All the righteous path forces, as well as many lone immortal experts, even certain special demonic path Gu Immortals were invited for the funeral.

In front of everyone’s eyes, Wu Yong suddenly erupted: “Men, take down this traitor of the clan!”

“What?!” Xu Tuo was shocked, he wanted to resist but it was too late.

“Master, what are you doing?! I am your most loyal and dedicated servant!” Xu Tuo screamed loudly.

“Hehe.” Wu Yong chuckled, he pointed at Xu Tuo as he shouted: “You are a loyal and dedicated servant indeed, Xu Tuo! To think I trusted you so deeply, yet you harmed me, leaking the travel route of my brother, and causing countless fiends to attack him. My poor brother, I have not even met him, but he was already killed by you bunch of evil fiends!”

Saying this, Wu Yong sighed at the sky, tears flowing down his face.

Xu Tuo looked on, dumbfounded.

The shock inside him could not be expressed with words.

He wanted to deny it, but Wu Yong tossed out a bunch of evidence!

The evidence could not be overturned.

Xu Tuo had no way of rebutting, he realized now that Wu Yong had found out his identity long ago, he endured all this while, until today!

Wu Yong made use of him to exterminate his brother Wu Yi Hai, and also fully obtaining the inheritance. He became Wu clan’s first supreme elder, and shattered all of the rumors regarding him on this very day.

Xu Tuo was the sacrificial pawn that he discarded.

“Today, I will win everything!” Wu Yong laughed in his mind, but he pointed at Xu Tuo, ordering: “Drag him away!”

The righteous path representatives were uneasy, even those demonic path and lone immortals showed shock on their faces.

Wu Yong looked around, feeling extremely satisfied.

But just as he was about to speak, Qiao clan’s first supreme elder stood up: “I have good news for Lord Wu Yong. Your brother Wu Yi Hai did not die, not only did he survive, he has arrived here with the help of my Qiao clan.”

“What?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1219: Fang Yuan versus Wu Yong

Fang Yuan took large strides, walking out of the group of Qiao clan Gu Immortals.

At once, everyone’s focus was gathered on him.

Fang Yuan instantly became the center of attention.

Seeing his face, multiple supreme elders of Wu clan gasped: “They are really alike.”

Fang Yuan’s appearance, no, Wu Yi Hai’s appearance, was very similar to his birth mother Wu Du Xiu. This was an undeniable point, it was Fang Yuan’s advantage.

Wu Yong was different, he resembled his father, he had complementing eyes and brows, he looked very ordinary, he had a natural unremarkable aura.

But Wu Yi Hai was different.

He was handsome and muscular, he stood out from the crowd like a spear stabbing at the sky. Even though he lived in Eastern Sea, his traits were very similar to Wu clan Gu Immortals, especially his nose, it was wide and tall, at a glance, people could tell that this person was very extraordinary, he had a firm personality and could not be looked down upon.

Of course, the reason why Fang Yuan could give off such an impression was highly attributed to his appearance.

The real Wu Yi Hai did not have the traits of a Wu clansman.

Rank eight immortal killer move – Familiar Face!

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s signature method, it was displaying its worth right now, all of these Gu Immortals were deceived, none of them could tell that Fang Yuan was an impostor.

The truth was, even Wu clan’s Gu Immortals were seeing Wu Yi Hai for the first time.

Undoubtedly, Fang Yuan’s prior preparation and hard work was rewarded now. When Wu clan’s Gu Immortals looked at him, they held some good feelings towards him.

Because Wu Yi Hai looked like Wu Du Xiu.

Wu Du Xiu was not beautiful, she had features that suited a man, if she were a male, she would be a grand hero that could rival heaven.

Wu Yi Hai bore seventy percent resemblance to her.

Wu Du Xiu died, Wu clan was in a commotion, the clan’s Gu Immortals were all in remembrance of Wu Du Xiu’s achievements and glory.

After all, humans were like this, they did not feel much attachment towards people when they were still alive, but the moment they were gone, they would want to cherish and appreciate them.

Fang Yuan appeared at this juncture, it made good use of the immortals’ mental state.

Of course, this was part of Fang Yuan’s calculations.

“Alike, they really look alike.” Even other clans’ Gu Immortals were sighing.

Fang Yuan sensed sharply that the gazes on him were changing slowly.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, he did not have the achievement of high cultivation level, but he had gone through five hundred years of life, he had nurtured an unfathomably deep ability to observe situations, and an acute perception towards the changes of emotions in the Gu Immortals near him.

He sensed that the gazes of Wu clan’s Gu Immortals were welcoming, while Wu Yong’s gaze carried animosity in it.

Wu Yong was indeed shocked.

Fang Yuan had disguised as ‘Wu Yi Hai’ and appeared, this greatly affected his plans and arrangements.

What made Wu Yong alarmed was that Fang Yuan and Qiao clan’s Gu Immortals were together, he felt a sense of wariness.

The truth was, Wu Yong hated this younger brother of his in the deepest part of his heart.

Even though both sides were meeting for the first time.

Wu Yong did not like Fang Yuan at first sight.

Because Wu Yi Hai looked too much like his mother Wu Du Xiu.

So many years.

Wu Yong had followed by Wu Du Xiu’s side, growing under her protection.

Wu Du Xiu was a giant tree, the leaves of the tree protected the entirety of Wu clan, including Wu Yong himself.

Wu Yong felt like he was constantly lowering his head, the shade of the tree was a type of shadow that loomed over his life.

He was Wu Du Xiu’s son, but do not forget, he was a man.

Men naturally sought strength, having an intense desire towards authority.

But all along, Wu Yong was under Wu Du Xiu’s shadow, her strength, her abilities, as well as her identity, Wu Yong could not resist her, he had to lower his head.

Wu Du Xiu passed away, Wu Yong was naturally very upset and grieved, but at the same time, unavoidably, he felt freedom, he felt... joy.

This joy was something that Wu Yong did not dare to admit he felt.

But now, when Wu Yong saw this Wu Yi Hai who resembled Wu Du Xiu, he unavoidably felt some feelings of dislike.

Fang Yuan sensed Wu Yong’s ill intent and animosity, even though he disguised himself well.

Fang Yuan knew on the inside: “The first step of showing myself succeeded, but the second step of interacting with Wu clan and getting them to acknowledge me is the crucial one.”

“Being accepted by Wu clan means getting Wu Yong, this rank eight Gu Immortal, the first supreme elder of Wu clan’s acknowledgement!”

Thus, when Fang Yuan stepped into the limelight, he bowed deeply towards Wu Yong: “Wu Yi Hai pays respects to elder brother.”

Wu Yong had an agitated but hesitant expression: “Are you really my brother Yi Hai? Alike, you really look like mother, except that your eyes are blue, we don’t usually have that eye color in Southern Border.”

That sentence had deep meaning.

Wu Yong did not directly acknowledge Fang Yuan’s identity, instead, he pointed out the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal identity of ‘Wu Yi Hai’ seemingly unintentionally.

Fang Yuan answered solemnly: “Reporting to brother, I had black eyes before, but some accidents occurred when I cultivated transformation path. Right now, I returned due to mother’s arrangement. Unfortunately, I met with many attacks along the way, Uncle Zhang and Brother Leng, who traveled with me, died on the battlefield while protecting me as I escaped.”

“Both Zhang and Leng were simply attendants of my mother, but they made great contributions to Wu clan. Pass my orders, we will give them a grand burial, according to the rules of how we treat external supreme elders. Their descendants will also be taken care of, and be treated as equals in our Wu clan.” Wu Yong instructed.

The supreme elders quickly responded.

Fang Yuan heard this and snickered internally.

This Wu Yong refused to give up any chance to show off his wise image, but hearing his words, he did not accept Fang Yuan’s identity. He avoided the important topic, taking about Zhang and Leng and ignoring the important point — his brother Wu Yi Hai.

Wu Yong ignored this part, but Fang Yuan was not helpless.

This could not stop him.

Fang Yuan bowed as he said: “I hope brother can allow me to pay respects to our mother!”

Wu Yong’s brows tightened.

Fang Yuan’s words were very logical, as a son, his mother had passed away, how could he not pay respects to her?

This was an extremely reasonable request, especially in a clan system where bloodline was crucial in maintaining relationships, even Wu Yong could not stop him.

If he said no, outsiders would react badly to it, his new image that had been painstakingly created would be completely ruined.

But if he did not refuse Fang Yuan’s request, then that would mean that Wu clan was acknowledging Fang Yuan’s identity, that he was a member of Wu clan!

As a matter of fact, Wu Yong did not want that.

Wu Yong disliked Wu Yi Hai’s appearance.

Wu Yi Hai’s identity was a headache to Wu Yong.

Wu Yi Hai came here with Qiao clan, it was a huge warning to Wu Yong!

“This Wu Yi Hai should go back to where he came from. Isn’t he an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal? Then let him develop in Eastern Sea, even if I have to spend some resources to get him to leave.”

This was the best result for Wu Yong.

In fact, Fang Yuan’s performance and the Qiao clan Gu Immortals’ testament made Wu Yong not suspicious towards Fang Yuan’s true identity.

“Wait, what if I get rid of this Wu Yi Hai?”

“I could not do it earlier because mother was around. But now, I am first supreme elder, this is my territory, in time, I will gain control of the clan, I can make arrangements in secret and execute him, wouldn’t that end my troubles?”

“Even if he is in Eastern Sea, it is a problem. If he is not in Eastern Sea and stays in Southern Border, the problem is even bigger.”

“I might as well agree to his current request. Eventually, I can go through some arrangements and demonstrate him to be a fake, I will be able to openly get rid of him!”

Thinking of this, Wu Yong felt intense killing intent surging in him.

He was about to speak, and directly agree to Fang Yuan’s request, when suddenly, a supreme elder of Wu clan said: “Pardon me, but is everyone forgetting to confirm second young master Wu Yi Hai’s identity. I am not suspecting him, or suspecting anyone from Qiao clan, but for him to come back to the clan, that is a necessary procedure!”

Wu Yong heard this and his brows tightened again.

He looked at the Wu clan Gu Immortal who spoke deeply, it was Wu clan’s third supreme elder, Wu Qiao 1 .

The gazes of Fang Yuan and Qiao clan’s first supreme elder met secretly, he thought: “It was right to contact Qiao clan, but I did not think that Qiao clan had infiltrated Wu clan so deeply, reaching up to the third supreme elder, Wu Qiao.”

Qiao clan’s first supreme elder looked at Fang Yuan, thinking about the scene in which they schemed and collaborated...

“As long as I appear during the funeral, Wu Yong would be in a passive position. Even as a rank eight Gu Immortal who can easily kill me with his strength, he cannot do anything to me there. Hehehe.”

Fang Yuan laughed as he continued: “He will not attack or kill me. Because he is Wu clan’s first supreme elder, he is not a lone cultivator or a demonic cultivator. By then, if I request to pay respects to our mother, what can Wu Yong do to stop me?”

“Hahaha, brilliant, truly brilliant!” Qiao clan’s first supreme elder gave a thumbs up: “Privately acknowledging your heritage is too dangerous. If we do this, it is brilliant, even if Wu Yong disagrees, what can he do?”

Fang Yuan said seriously: “Thus, we must undergo the acknowledgement during the funeral. If we miss this chance, it will be difficult. Not only would the risks be higher, Wu Yong would not even give us any opportunity.”

“Don’t worry, by then, I will speak up and suggest this.” Qiao clan’s first supreme elder smiled.

“No, no, no.” Fang Yuan shook his head: “It is unsuitable for you to suggest it, you are an outsider, how can you interfere in Wu clan’s business?”

Qiao clan’s first supreme elder fell into silence.

Fang Yuan’s words directly addressed his biggest concern. This was a huge problem he was facing. If this was not solved, he could not cooperate with ‘Wu Yi Hai’.

Fang Yuan’s arms were behind his back, he raised his head and looked outside the window: “Therefore, I need a supreme elder from Wu clan, he can openly suggest this, and steer the situation towards the heritage acknowledgement.”

Qiao clan’s first supreme elder was a bit troubled: “This...”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1220: Presence in Southern Border

Fang Yuan continued to say: “This supreme elder should have some status, and he needs to have a firm attitude! Because during this period, Wu Yong is likely to side with me, acting as if I am already confirmed to be his brother to deny this suggestion. Thus, the person we choose needs to be able to stand the pressure of a rank eight Gu Immortal!”

Qiao clan’s first supreme elder shrugged: “This is too difficult. After all, Wu Yong is not only a rank eight Gu Immortal, he is also Wu clan’s first supreme elder, he inherited Wu Du Xiu’s Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan did not even turn around, he still looked outside.

His words turned cold and firm: “Don’t tell me Qiao clan does not have such a person. If you don’t, why do you have ambitions towards Wu clan? Just give up and sleep, you might have more success in your dreams. I, Wu Yi Hai, will not cooperate with such a clan!”

Qiao clan’s first supreme elder was slightly stunned, he assessed Fang Yuan again.

From his angle, he could only see Fang Yuan’s side view.

Outside the window, the rays of the setting sun shone on Fang Yuan’s face, like a layer of blood.

Fang Yuan’s expression was firm like steel, his blue eyes were brimming with life.

“This man... hehe, interesting. As expected of Wu Du Xiu’s son.” Qiao clan’s first supreme elder sighed to himself internally, before agreeing: “We will go with your idea.”

...

Even though Wu Du Xiu was dead, at her funeral, there was a peculiar and interesting scene.

Wu Du Xiu’s illegitimate son from Eastern Sea, Wu Yi Hai, had appeared, wanting to pay respects to his mother.

All of the Gu Immortals from different forces watched quietly without interfering.

After all, these were Wu clan’s internal affairs.

Among them, many Gu Immortals could see some things beyond the surface.

But when Wu clan’s third supreme elder, Wu Qiao, spoke, multiple gazes landed on him.

Wu Qiao seemed unfazed, showing an attitude of being impartial and upright. He was Wu clan’s third supreme elder!

Qiao clan could infiltrate Wu clan to this extent, Fang Yuan was shocked.

Of course, he was one of the parties involved, he knew more and had clearer judgment. People not in the know, without knowing the reasons behind this, would not be able to tell what Wu Qiao’s stance was.

Was he siding with Wu clan or Qiao clan?

Even though Wu Yong noticed this possibility, he could not ascertain the facts.

Wu Yong spoke: “Alright, we will hold the acknowledgement of my brother’s heritage here at my mother’s funeral. I am sure that my mother would be very glad to see this happen.”

He did not rebuke them, he directly agreed to it.

Fang Yuan looked at Wu Yong deeply, this person was not simple!

Qiao clan’s first supreme elder was also slightly surprised by Wu Yong’s reaction, his evaluation of Wu Yong rose by a level.

Evidently, Wu Yong had noticed that he could not stop Fang Yuan from the acknowledgement of his heritage. If he continued to reject it, he would lose his reputation and image, he might as well agree and allow this matter.

“All of the immortals here can bear witness to it, bring the Immortal Gu!” Third supreme elder Wu Qiao stood up, he needed to be the host of this event, to prevent Wu Yong and the rest from tampering with it.

Soon, Wu clan brought the Immortal Gu.

Wu Qiao stood before Fang Yuan, holding an Immortal Gu in his hand, saying: “This is a rank seven blood path Immortal Gu, Bloodline, my Wu clan obtained it from killing a blood path demonic immortal, it is our trophy of victory, it can be used to certify second young master’s identity.”

As he said this, the Gu Immortals present internally rolled their eyes.

Blood path was not tolerated, it was too dangerous.

But the truth was, every righteous path force was secretly researching it. Because blood path could increase one’s battle strength the quickest.

Evidently, this bloodline Immortal Gu was the product of Wu clan’s research, but they called it their loot from battle.

“Second young master, please provide a drop of blood!” Wu Qiao said.

Fang Yuan was tense.

It was a rank seven blood path Immortal Gu!

This was out of his expectations.

A drop of blood was different from examining his body, it was hard to tamper with.

Under everyone’s supervision, Fang Yuan followed what he said and squeezed out a drop of blood to Wu Qiao.

Wu Qiao used the Immortal Gu and aimed towards the blood in his hand, as a dark red light shone.

There were no issues.

Fang Yuan let out a sigh of relief.

“Thankfully, blood asset Immortal Gu recovered, and I added it into familiar face to disguise my bloodline. Last time, I deceived measures in Hei Fan’s true inheritance, while this time, I got past the rank seven blood path Immortal Gu Bloodline.”

Thankfully, it was only rank seven, if it were rank eight, he might not be able to deceive it.

Fang Yuan was quite lucky in this aspect.

Of course, Wu clan was not going to be so wasteful as to raise a blood path Immortal Gu to rank eight.

Refining a rank eight Immortal Gu had too high of a cost, it could dry up a super force’s assets without assurance of success.

But this was not all.

Next, Wu Qiao asked Fang Yuan many crucial questions.

Some of these questions, Fang Yuan knew the answers, while some he did not, he answered honestly.

Among the questions, some were traps, events that had never happened were used to trick him.

But Fang Yuan had searched Wu Yi Hai’s soul, he could deal with these questions.

The true danger was the rank seven Immortal Gu Bloodline, he had already passed that, there was little difficulty left.

Hundreds of questions were asked, Wu Qiao was still expressionless.

But the other Wu clan supreme elders nodded, some of them were smiling, looking at Fang Yuan, showing that he had already passed the test.

“Actually, we also had to inspect your soul and bones, but Lady Wu Du Xiu has passed away, we will skip that.” Wu Qiao said, making Fang Yuan feel extremely glad.

Thankfully, he was not greedy regarding those rank eight Immortal Gu.

If he was questioned by her in person, his soul path and bone path methods were not impressive, there was a high chance of him showing a flaw.

“I heard that when Wu Du Xiu died, her body turned into specks of light, none of her body remained. Even her hair and other things left behind had dissipated as well. She really died completely without leaving a trace, it is a good death!” Fang Yuan was overjoyed at his luck.

Next, Wu Qiao reported his findings to Wu Yong.

Needless to say, everyone had already seen the result.

Wu Yong nodded, while the other Wu clan supreme elders also agreed.

Thus, Wu Qiao took out life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu, asking Fang Yuan to refine them. These Gu worms would be left in Wu clan’s ancestral hall, they were the symbol of Fang Yuan’s acknowledgement into the clan.

After all this, Fang Yuan had finally used Wu Yi Hai’s identity to step into Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world.

After paying respects to Wu Du Xiu, Fang Yuan cried profusely, showing off a fantastic performance with incredible acting.

As it was now Wu Du Xiu’s funeral, Wu clan could not hold a banquet. But after the ceremony ended, Fang Yuan interacted with many Wu clan Gu Immortals, even though they only drank tea and talked for a while, Fang Yuan benefited greatly.

Of course, Gu Immortals asked to spar with Fang Yuan, but he rejected them all.

His status was very high now!

He had rank seven cultivation level, he was the brother of Wu clan’s first supreme elder, the rank eight Gu Immortal Wu Yong.

Even though these brothers were of separate minds, on the surface, it seemed that their bloodline bonded them together.

Seven days later, the funeral ended, Fang Yuan stood beside the Wu clan Gu Immortals, sending off the guests who came, like he was an important part of the clan.

These Southern Border Gu Immortals remembered Fang Yuan well.

Many of them listed him as someone they could not trifle with, not because of Fang Yuan’s cultivation level, but because he was blood related to Wu Yong.

Wu Yi Hai’s name spread in Southern Border. Even though it could not be said that everyone knew about it, he was not far off.

Three days later.

Dawn, the sun rose slowly in the sky.

Fang Yuan was standing on the peak of Bear Mountain, quietly looking at the beautiful sunrise.

After the acknowledgement of his heritage, he was assigned by Wu clan to live on this Bear Mountain.

This was not within the blessed land serving as Wu clan’s base, Fang Yuan claimed that he wanted to live outside as well. Bear Mountain was a well known place, there were large numbers of wild beasts on this mountain, all sorts of bears were living here.

Wu clan directly gave this mountain to Fang Yuan, from now on, this was Wu Yi Hai’s territory.

But Wu clan did not assign Fang Yuan any relevant roles.

Wu clan’s Gu Immortals were all supreme elders, Wu Yong was the first supreme elder, followed by the second supreme elder, third supreme elder, and so on. They had different positions, and differing authority and power.

In this aspect, Qiao clan’s first supreme elder was very anxious and concerned about it.

Because Qiao clan helped Fang Yuan in order to get him to become an authoritative figure among the higher-ups of Wu clan. So that he could contest for Qiao clan’s benefits.

For this purpose, Qiao clan needed Fang Yuan to gain more power in Wu clan, that way, he could speak up for Qiao clan and make firm decisions.

Qiao clan’s help was not for free, Fang Yuan had already made alliance agreements with Qiao clan’s first supreme elder secretly.

But Fang Yuan was not in a rush.

He pretended to look at the sunrise, but he was actually thinking about the giant dream realm.

He had already obtained his righteous path identity, how could he enter the super Gu formation openly now, and use the giant dream realm to raise his attainment level?

Fang Yuan was thinking of this problem, when an information path Immortal Gu flew towards him, bringing Wu Yong’s summons.

Right now, Fang Yuan had perfectly assimilated into the clan, the process was seen by countless Gu Immortals in Southern Border, Wu Yong could not harm his life anymore.

The ship had set sail, it was far too late now.

Especially when he was inside Wu clan’s territory, Wu Yong needed to protect this ‘younger brother’ of his.

Fang Yuan followed the instructions of the information path Immortal Gu and met with Wu Yong in a hall.

Wu Yong said: “You are my younger brother, you have just returned to the clan. According to our clan rules, every newly advanced rank six Gu Immortal may pick a rank six Immortal Gu. After becoming rank seven, they may pick a rank seven Immortal Gu. Bring along this information path Immortal Gu with you and go to the clan’s treasury to choose your two Immortal Gu.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1221: Love Comes!

Hearing that his ‘brother’ was arranging for him to claim Immortal Gu from the treasury, Fang Yuan smiled.

In his case, he did not lack Immortal Gu. Forget about rank six Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan even had many rank seven Immortal Gu. As for rank eight, Fang Yuan had attitude Gu, years flow like water Immortal Gu, and wisdom sword Immortal Gu. Right now, the most important one was attitude Gu. Wisdom sword Immortal Gu needed rank eight immortal essence, while Years Flow Like Water had a huge drawback of attracting immemorial year beasts.

But in terms of numbers, Fang Yuan had more rank eight Immortal Gu than Wu Yong.

He even had rank nine wisdom Gu.

Although, strictly speaking, wisdom Gu did not belong to Fang Yuan.

Inside Wu clan’s treasury, there were indeed many useful or powerful Immortal Gu, and there was a high chance that many Immortal Gu suited Fang Yuan’s needs.

But deep down, Fang Yuan clearly understood — At this juncture, there was one thing that he needed the most.

Dream realm!

As long as he could enter the dream realm, Fang Yuan could use unravel dream to rapidly raise his attainment levels.

When his attainment levels rise, he would be able to annex more immortal apertures.

Unlike now, he was restricted by his attainment levels, he could not annex many blessed lands.

There were relatively few Gu Immortals.

In a single region, there were merely several hundred Gu Immortals, most of them were rank six, few were rank seven, and rank eight Gu Immortals were usually the ones at the peak.

Among these Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan could only annex some of the rank six and seven immortal apertures. And among these, only those which he had suitable attainment levels could be annexed. He could not go to Central Continent. As for the other four regions, there were many Gu Immortals that Fang Yuan could not touch. Like those with close relationships to rank eight Gu Immortals, or those who were hard to find, or people like Feng Jiu Ge and Shi Lei.

Therefore, at the end of the day, Fang Yuan did not have many immortal apertures to annex.

Earlier, he could annex a lot and raise his cultivation level, on one hand, it was Fang Yuan’s accumulation, he had killed many Gu Immortals and obtained a lot of information, but on the other hand, Fang Yuan had sufficient luck.

Raising his attainment levels in all the different paths had great benefits for Fang Yuan.

It increased the range of his choices drastically.

He would be able to annex even more immortal apertures.

“Earlier, I annexed immortal apertures and raised my cultivation level from rank six to seven. But after reaching rank seven, annexing rank six immortal apertures to skip calamities and tribulations has a far smaller effect.”

“My cultivation level is rising at an unavoidably slower speed. But after raising my attainment levels in different paths, my rank seven cultivation level would start to climb up rapidly again. The speed would not be as fast as before, after all, rank seven immortal apertures are very rare, but compared to normal cultivation, it is still extremely shocking!”

Of course, Fang Yuan could not estimate the actual speed.

Because it depended on the situation.

If he was lucky enough, he would be able to annex many rank seven blessed lands at once. With enough of them, he would rise to rank eight, it was not impossible.

This was the power of the sovereign immortal aperture.

Spectral Soul had spent a hundred thousand years, sacrificing Shadow Sect and Zombie Alliance to create this Immortal Gu, there was good reason for it.

For ordinary Gu Immortals, this cultivation method was impossible.

“However, there are not many rank seven blessed lands even if I add up all five regions, I can forget about advancing to rank eight for now.”

Fang Yuan thought about it, the chances of becoming rank eight immediately were too slim.

He had a clear mind.

Fang Yuan was not overly greedy, he knew what was important, and what was less of a concern.

Thus, facing Wu Yong, he said: “I do not need to go to the treasury, I know what I want.”

“Oh?” Wu Yong was surprised.

Next, Fang Yuan said the names of two Immortal Gu, one was rank six, the other was rank seven.

Wu Yong was even more surprised now, he looked at Fang Yuan deeply, having understood what he wanted. But he still pretended to be unaware: “These two Immortal Gu are part of the super Gu formation, they have been used already to encircle that giant dream realm. Are you sure you want them?”

Fang Yuan nodded without any hesitation, showing that he had made his decision.

In order to create the super Gu formation and protect the dream realm, the righteous path forces in Southern Border had contributed both manpower and resources. Wu clan put in six Immortal Gu, there was no need to conceal this information.

Fang Yuan had learned about it from Qiao clan’s Gu Immortals.

As for why he chose these two Immortal Gu, it was because they were extremely crucial to the operations of the super Gu formation.

One could say, if Fang Yuan became the owner of these Immortal Gu, he would have the biggest say in the super Gu formation.

Fang Yuan continued to speak earnestly: “Brother, you have been in the clan since your were born, you have the support of Southern Border’s strongest super force. But I am different, I grew up in Eastern Sea without anyone’s help. I am a lone cultivator, you have never been a lone cultivator, you will not know our pain.”

“Therefore, this time, I thought of coming to Southern Border, to join Wu clan, I do not want to go back to Eastern Sea anymore.”

“I admit that I have my ambitions, but which Gu Immortal has no ambition?”

“Brother, I will speak the truth. You are a rank eight Gu Immortal, you have rank eight Immortal Gu, you are the first supreme elder of Wu clan, you live freely in Wu clan. As for me, I came from Eastern Sea, I only have rank seven cultivation level, I have some transformation path methods, but how can I compete against you? I have never thought of fighting with you.”

“I merely want my cultivation journey to continue. Qiao clan has an alliance agreement with me, therefore they supported me to come here. I was forced to, without Qiao clan’s help, I could not even attend mother’s funeral.”

“But I am still a Wu clansman, Wu clan’s bloodline flows within me. My mother might have left me when I was a baby, but she had asked me to return in her final days. No matter what she thinks, she is still my birth mother all along.”

“These last few days, I have been thinking, the dream realm’s location is where I want to go. I am willing to leave Wu clan and cultivate there forever. All I want is some support from the clan, so that I would not be without cultivation resources. That way, I will be satisfied.”

Fang Yuan spoke with sincerely, it was a moving speech.

Towards the end, his eyes even turned red, he bowed deeply to Wu Yong.

Wu Yong was moved.

He left his seat, going towards Fang Yuan and grabbing his shoulders.

“My brother!” He spoke, his voice was trembling, his expression was agitated.

“You are my younger brother, we have the same mother.”

“I understand your intentions. I understand your hardships, and I am glad that you understand my difficulties.”

“Since that is so, I will agree to your request. Do not forget what you said today!”

“Elder brother!” Fang Yuan choked, tears falling down from the corners of his eyes: “I will not forget today’s words! Brother is granting my wish, I will support you fully. In the future, unless brother agrees, I will not act on my own and step into Wu clan’s headquarters at all. I will also not interact with Wu clan’s Gu Immortals excessively.”

Wu Yong grabbed Fang Yuan’s hands, patting the back of his hands: “You will not let me down, and I will not let you down!”

A moment later, Fang Yuan left the hall.

“Finally, I can go to the super Gu formation and openly explore the dream realm.” The excitement in his heart could not be described to others.

Meanwhile, Wu Yong sat down on his seat, having a deep gaze in his eyes.

“My younger brother knows what’s best for him, he is clear of the current situation. Not bad, not bad indeed.”

“He did not mention the Immortal Gu inheritance at all, and even volunteered to leave Wu clan’s headquarters. With his absence, I will be able to control the clan as rapidly as possible.”

“The dream realm is also very useless. Current methods cannot excavate this mountain of treasures. As long as he guards the super Gu formation quietly, and cultivate in peace, without trying to gain authority in Wu clan, so what if I have to give him many more times the cultivation resources he is asking for?”

“The dream realm is like this now, but the future is not certain. After all, this is a prophecy regarding Great Dream Immortal Venerable... Hehe, speaking of which, my younger brother’s ambitions are not small.”

“However, just as he said, who has no ambitions? It is not scary to have ambitions, it is scary if your ambitions are so big you cannot recognize your own limits, and do something stupid beyond your abilities. For example, Qiao clan... hmph!”

Central Continent, Spirit Affinity House.

Zhao Lian Yun knelt on the ground like a statue.

The house in front of her was shut tight, there was no disturbance.

Feng Jin Huang no longer lived here.

Zhao Lian Yun knew this, but she still continued to kneel here.

Because she knew that this was her only hope! She had to grab onto it, because other than this, there were no other options.

At this moment, Zhao Lian Yun’s legs were numb, she was so tired she felt dizzy, in her daze, memories of the past surfaced in her mind.

There was a grassland with budding wild flowers.

“This flower is for you, Lady Xiao Yun, they say that women love flowers.” Ma Hong Yun brought a bunch of flowers with him as he stood in front of Zhao Lian Yun, smiling sheepishly.

“It stinks!” Zhao Lian Yun covered her nose, saying in disgust: “What flowers did you pick? These smelly fly flowers only grow on top of animal faeces. Take them away, take them away from me.”

Ma Hong Yun was stunned, he answered: “Precisely because they grow on faeces, they are big and strong.”

Zhao Lian Yun was rolling her eyes, she stepped on Ma Hong Yun’s leg angrily: “Get lost! Fool! Why are you finding me flowers, you should think of how to please your young master! You idiot!!”

Ma Hong Yun was jumping from the pain, he said meekly: “I wanted to thank you, thanks for lying for me, otherwise, I would have been executed for stealing shoes.”

Scenes of the past faded gradually, Zhao Lian Yun returned to the cold hard reality.

“Big fool!”

“But, what am I doing now, I seem like a fool too huh.”

“To think that I, Zhao Lian Yun, would act so foolishly as well!”

“You always do foolish things, but the results always end up good. I am not you, but, this is the only thing that I can do... I am just a normal person.”

Thinking of this, tears rolled down Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes, the grief and agony in her heart could not be described with words.

At this time, in her blurry vision, she saw a Gu.

Rank nine —

Love Gu!

It was flying in front of Zhao Lian Yun.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1222: Current Generation Fairy, Zhao Lian Yun?

Rank nine love Gu.

Zhao Lian Yun did not recognize this Gu worm, but that did not stop her from noticing this Gu worm’s uniqueness.

Because in her vision, this Gu worm had become the center of the world, its body was glowing with multicolored lights, the entire Gu worm seemed to be the hottest flame burning in the universe. All of reality would be overturned, everything in this world would revolve around it.

“Is this... a miracle?” Zhao Lian Yun’s face was covered in tears, a final thought was produced in her mind.

Next, she fell onto the ground, falling unconscious.

Spirit Affinity House was in a commotion!

Love Gu, it was the signature Immortal Gu of Spirit Affinity House.

It flew out of its resting place to Zhao Lian Yun’s side. Most importantly, when Zhao Lian Yun was unconscious, it did not fly away, it remained on her shoulder.

That night, Spirit Affinity House recalled all of the Gu Immortals in the sect, holding an emergency meeting to discuss this matter.

Spirit Affinity House’s first supreme elder, second supreme elder, and third supreme elder, Feng Jiu Ge, Fairy Bai Qing, Xu Hao, Li Jun Ying, and the others had gathered, the auras of immortals mixed together, the highest number of Gu Immortals from Spirit Affinity House had gathered together for the first time in hundreds of years.

“Everyone, we know about the rules of the sect. Now that love Gu has acknowledged Zhao Lian Yun, she is the sect’s current generation fairy!” Xu Hao spoke expressionlessly, but intense joy could be felt from his tone.

Back then, he had advised Zhao Lian Yun, he was just trying to target Feng Jin Huang and damage her reputation, to elevate Zhao Lian Yun’s own prestige.

He did not think that Zhao Lian Yun would be so stubborn, continuing to kneel there without giving up.

Xu Hao was helpless about this.

He nurtured Zhao Lian Yun and used her as a chess piece to deal with Feng Jin Huang. His real goal was to attack Feng Jin Huang’s father — Feng Jiu Ge.

A place with people interacting would have internal and external conflicts.

When an organization is big, there would be many factions in it.

Right now, the Feng faction with Feng Jiu Ge at the lead had the greatest authority in Spirit Affinity House.

Xu Hao, Li Jun Ying, and the others were suppressed by theFeng faction, unable to lift their heads. Thankfully, Spirit Affinity House’s two rank eight Gu Immortals, first supreme elder and second supreme elder, were impartial, they did not side with anyone, only looking at the benefits of Spirit Affinity House, this allowed Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying to remain as part of the sect’s core authority, despite the Feng faction’s power.

Zhao Lian Yun knelt and begged Feng Jin Huang, most people could only see the surface of the matter, only a few understood that this was a political conflict in Spirit Affinity House.

Zhao Lian Yun was a mere mortal, but after inheriting the Thieving Heaven true inheritance, she was qualified to compete with Feng Jin Huang for the position of Spirit Affinity House’s fairy.

Xu Hao made Zhao Lian Yun his political tool.

Originally, Xu Hao was thinking that he could not let Zhao Lian Yun kneel anymore. In his opinion, as a political performance, it was already enough. If Zhao Lian Yun continued kneeling, she would be like an idiot, there were no gains for her.

But several hours ago, when Xu Hao heard that love Gu had stayed by Zhao Lian Yun’s side of its own accord, he was stunned.

After his heavy shock, he felt intense joy!

He acutely sensed that this was a godsent opportunity. This gift was too precious, he almost fainted from happiness.

This was an unbelievably rare chance.

He needed to use this opportunity to make Zhao Lian Yun Spirit Affinity House’s fairy!

Then on this basis, he would retaliate against the ‘Feng faction’, this was an unprecedented opportunity for Xu Hao in the sect! As long as he made use of this chance, his future in the sect would change drastically for the better.

Xu Hao did not doubt this.

Thus, he was the first to stand up and support Zhao Lian Yun for the position, to become Spirit Affinity House’s current generation fairy!

He spoke: “Our sect rules are clear, in choosing the fairies, first, we listen to the masses, then we look at aptitude, finally, we look at the preference of higher-ups.”

The meaning was: They would first see what the people in the sect thinks, before looking at the aptitude and talent of the participant, and finally, it would depend on who suited the preferences of the higher-up Gu Immortals more.

Xu Hao continued to speak: “Right now, in terms of the masses, Zhao Lian Yun might be an otherworldly demon, but she has love and loyalty, in order to save her lover, she knelt down to her opponent. The entire sect knows about her character, and in terms of aptitude, it is not important, as long as we are willing, we can raise a mortal’s aptitude easily. I believe that everyone has heard of her experiences in Northern Plains, she is an elite in terms of talent. And finally, everyone’s preferences. I greatly acknowledge Zhao Lian Yun, I express my support towards her in becoming our fairy.”

“I concur.” Xu Hao had just said that when Li Jun Ying added this.

She was Xu Hao’s wife, they had the same opinion in this.

This was not strange.

But the following scene was shocking to others.

“I agree with Xu Hao.”

“I approve of Xu Hao’s perspective.”

“Even love Gu acknowledged Zhao Lian Yun, what else do I have to say?”

...

At once, five to six Gu Immortals agreed with Xu Hao’s words.

Fairy Bai Qing could not stand it anymore.

She felt: It seemed that everyone here agreed with Xu Hao, they felt that the position of Spirit Affinity House’s fairy should go to Zhao Lian Yun.

Fairy Bai Qing was a Gu Immortal of Spirit Affinity House, but more than that, she was Feng Jin Huang’s mother.

The position of fairy in Spirit Affinity House was very special.

She was the cultivation seed that was chosen by the entire Spirit Affinity House, even the mortals were part of the selection process. Next, they would invest heavily in her and nurture her to become immortal. Every generation’s fairy would be Spirit Affinity House’s representative when they fully matured.

Spirit Affinity House was an organization, and organizations not only needed old experts, but also new Gu Immortals, to inject fresh blood and keep the system going smoothly.

Fairy Bai Qing herself was a fairy of Spirit Affinity House. She had felt for herself the experience of having an entire sect support her cultivation.

Even though Feng Jiu Ge and Bai Qing were both Gu Immortals and could totally fund their daughter, Feng Jin Huang, for her immortal ascension easily, this type of support paled in comparison to the funding of the entire sect.

Fairy Bai Qing did not want to see her daughter lose.

But she understood deeply: Right now, the situation was very disadvantageous for her!

Because the sect rules were, in choosing a fairy, other than ‘listening to the masses, looking at aptitude, and the higher-ups preference’, there was also an important part, that was —

Once love Gu acknowledged someone, no matter how disliked they were, or now bad their aptitude was, or even how badly received they were by the Gu Immortal higher-ups, they would become the current generation fairy, regardless of the situation, or whether they were male or female!

Because of this rule, after Xu Hao finished speaking, he gained the approval of many Gu Immortals, they expressed their support.

In fact, Xu Hao's own political force was not strong. Normally, he would not garner such support.

"Even though the sect rules are as such, it is not a hopeless situation. Because in our sect's history, there was a fairy that was promoted because of this rule, and in the end she..."

Fairy Bai Qing thought of this and was about to speak.

But at this time, Feng Jiu Ge pressed down on her hand softly.

"Don't be anxious."

"I know, you want to mention Mo Yao, right? Back then, she was just an inkman slave, but she gained the acknowledgement of love Gu and was funded by the entire sect to become a Gu Immortal, and even managed to reform Bo Qing. But in the end, she betrayed the sect, she defied Heavenly Court."

Feng Jiu Ge transmitted.

Fairy Bai Qing nodded, replying to him secretly: "That's right, this is Huang Er's only hope. As long as we use this point and continue arguing, using the strength of Feng faction, we might be able to get the sect to change this rule. After all, rules are made by people, isn't that right? This sect rule does not make sense!"

But Feng Jiu Ge shook his head.

He rejected Fairy Bai Qing's idea: "Xu Hao is a wisdom path Gu Immortal, why did he not mention the sect rules in his earlier speech? He only talked about the first three conditions, and seemingly forgot about this sect rule that was most advantageous for him."

Fairy Bai Qing was slightly stunned.

Feng Jiu Ge continued: "This is his scheme, his trap. If you talk about it, you will fall into his plot. Even though Bo Qing and Mo Yao had caused such a situation, the sect rules did not change. After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, our sect suffered a lot of pressure, but our rules had not changed either. This is a very deep issue, there is more than meets the eye. If you want to use Feng faction's power to challenge it foolishly, wanting to change this rule, we will lose miserably. We would suffer heavy losses while Xu Hao would be completely intact, that is what he wants to see."

Fairy Bai Qing's body was covered in cold sweat.

"I was rash." She quickly calmed down, after a while, she thought about why she made such a mistake.

"Because it involved Huang Er, I became confused due to love. No, there is another reason, I became a rank seven Gu Immortal and gained rank seven Immortal Gu, compared to before, I was overconfident. Because I am in the righteous path, battle strength is not everything. If hubby did not remind me today, I would have committed a huge mistake.”

Thinking of this, Fairy Bai Qing unconsciously looked at Feng Jiu Ge.

She felt a strong feeling of protection from him. Even though Feng Jiu Ge was from the demonic path, after all these years he had demonstrated his skills, being in the sect did not require just battle strength, his political abilities were also far superior to her, otherwise, how could his Feng faction have such brilliance today?

“Since you can expose Xu Hao’s trap, I will entrust this matter to you.” Fairy Bai Qing transmitted secretly, there was sweet affection in her tone.

Feng Jiu Ge smiled bitterly: “This matter, I am not going to interfere. Because interfering is of no use.”

“What do you mean?” Fairy Bai Qing was stunned.

Feng Jiu Ge did not speak, he looked at the sky.

“He did not fall for it...” Xu Hao was originally waiting for someone to jump out, but nobody objected to his words, even Feng Jiu Ge was keeping silent, he felt that it was a pity.

But he quickly collected his thoughts, feeling confident inside: “Forget it! Since nobody objected, this matter is decided.”

But first supreme elder suddenly said: “I have understood everyone’s stances. But Zhao Lian Yun has a special background, she is an otherworldly demon. I will report the result of our discussion to the higher-ups, they will decide themselves.”

“What?” Xu Hao was completely stunned.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1223: Entering The Gu Formation Openly

Southern Border.

The remains of Yi Tian Mountain.

“Lord Wu Yi Hai, this way please.” .Wu An bowed as he led the way.

Fang Yuan nodded, in front of him, an entrance opened in the super Gu formation.

“Please, lord, enter first.” Wu An gave way as he smiled affectionately.

Wu Yi Hai’s identity was now known to almost everyone in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world.

Fang Yuan arrived directly and became Wu clan’s person-in-charge for the super dream realm. Wu An with only rank six cultivation level was his direct subordinate, he had to curry favor.

Fang Yuan had yet to take over the role, but Wu An had already flown out of the super Gu formation, staying at a mountain for two days and two nights a hundred li away, just to receive Fang Yuan when he arrived.

When he saw Fang Yuan, he immediately lowered himself and stuck to Fang Yuan like a fly. Whatever he was asked, he answered to the best of his abilities. If Fang Yuan wanted to kick his butt, he would definitely move his butt over to Fang Yuan’s leg so that he could kick it more conveniently.

But this was exactly why he gave Fang Yuan a good understanding of all the Gu Immortals who were here from different clans defending the super Gu formation, as well as this current situation.

Fang Yuan did not stand on ceremony with Wu An, he entered first as Wu An followed after him, smiling and lowering his head.

Many Gu Immortals were looking at this scene secretly.

“Wu Yi Hai is here, not long ago, he used Wu clan’s immortal killer move and got rid of his status as an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, he is now a true member of Southern Border.” Ba Quan Feng said as he observed the expression of the Gu Immortal beside him carefully.

It was none other than the publicly recognized strongest rank seven expert in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, Old Treeman Ba De.

Ba De retracted his gaze, saying plainly: “Let’s observe for now.”

Saying this, he turned around and left.

It seemed like Wu Yi Hai’s appearance was just an insignificant matter to him.

Ba Quan Feng was disappointed.

He wanted to see Ba De’s reaction, Wu Yi Hai was here but he was a newbie, be it in the super Gu formation, or in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, he was a newcomer.

Wu Du Xiu died, Wu clan only had one rank eight Gu Immortal left, Wu Yong, their strength had fallen drastically, many clans were waiting to strike. Especially the strong Ba clan.

In the past, when Wu clan was strong, Ba Quan Feng had many opinions about it. Now that one of Wu clan’s rank eight Gu Immortals was dead, and a newcomer, Wu Yi Hai, was here, he unavoidably had some notions of suppressing him to vent his frustration.

Unfortunately, Ba De said that they would observe for now.

After all, nobody knew about Wu Yi Hai’s strength and methods.

Ba De was a dependable and experienced old schemer.

If Wu Yi Hai was naive or had low strength, he would not mind making Ba clan the main controller of this super Gu formation!

Inside the super Gu formation, there was space inside, that surrounded the entire super dream realm, forming something like a giant city.

Each segment was guarded by one clan, the thirteen righteous path forces split the space in this super Gu formation into thirteen portions.

The space that Wu clan occupied was huge, it was one of the largest among the thirteen. The only clan that was comparable to them was Ba clan. Even Tie clan and Shang clan were inferior.

Fang Yuan entered it and because he had information provided by Wu clan, and he had his lackey, Wu An, he did not lose his way.

Soon, he found his way to the core, and met with another Gu Immortal from Wu clan, Wu Liao.

This person had broad shoulders and a thin waist, he looked very brave and heroic, there was a needle-like beard under his chin, he greeted Fang Yuan without any tone of submission: “Greetings to Lord Wu Yi Hai. Please pardon me for not receiving you, I was tasked to stay here.”

His tone was calm, pride was rooted in him.

Fang Yuan felt very amused, Wu An and Wu Liao, they both had rank six cultivation level, but their attitudes were a stark contrast.

Now that Wu Yi Hai was here, all of Wu clan’s stationed Gu Immortals were here in the super Gu formation.

Originally, there was a rank seven Gu Immortal.

But since Fang Yuan came, he was sent off elsewhere.

Wu clan was huge, it was the number one force in Southern Border’s righteous path, but it did not have many Gu Immortals that could be used. Every Gu Immortal was a portion of strength that needed to be used wisely and carefully, in the right areas.

“Let’s solve the main issues first. I am sure you know about our clan’s orders. Bring me to refine my two Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan said.

This was the first important mission.

Wu Liao saw that Wu Yi Hai worked at a rapid speed, he felt a sense of acknowledgement towards him.

Wu An quickly ran to Fang Yuan’s side, smiling in a fawning manner: “Lord, this way please, I will bring you there now.”

A moment later, Fang Yuan successfully refined the two Immortal Gu.

Refining other people’s Immortal Gu was not easy. But with Wu clan’s cooperation, it was a different story.

Fang Yuan finally let out a sigh of relief.

He knew: Wu clan’s treasury definitely had Immortal Gu that were better or more suited for himself. But he still chose these two Immortal Gu regardless.

He did this because he had his own considerations.

With these two Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan could plant his roots into this super Gu formation.

From now on, even if Wu clan wanted to move Fang Yuan away, they had to consider this point!

This super Gu formation was already established, every Immortal Gu was tightly linked, changing a single one would adversely affect it. Every Immortal Gu that each clan controlled was also the investment that the clan was putting into the giant dream realm, it affected the distribution of power and authority that the respective clans had in this place.

“Lord, I have prepared some supper for you to eat.” After Fang Yuan refined the Immortal Gu, Wu An quickly came over and said this to him in a subservient manner.

Fang Yuan was expressionless, he responded with a grunt.

Wu An suddenly seemed like he had heard some heavenly music, he quickly led the way joyfully: “Lord, this way please.”

Wu Liao snorted coldly, showing disdain in his eyes, he did not like Wu An’s fawning.

But Fang Yuan said: “Wu Liao, follow us, I have some things to ask you two.”

“Yes, lord.” Wu Liao replied respectfully.

The banquet was indeed not bad, the dishes and wines were very delicious.

Fang Yuan sat at the main seat while Wu An and Wu Liao sat on his left and right.

Fang Yuan knew that there was a possibility of bias and misinformation, he could not listen to Wu An’s words alone. Thus, during the banquet, he asked the two of them many questions.

Wu An and Wu Liao answered respectfully.

After the banquet ended, Fang Yuan gained an even clearer understanding of the situation at the super Gu formation, there was a vivid picture in his mind.

In Fang Yuan’s plan, for a long time in the future, he was going to cultivate here secretly.

He had to be clear of the environment here.

The righteous path and demonic path was different, the demonic path acted freely while the righteous path talked about rules. What were the rules of the righteous path? It was nothing more than just customs created over a long period of time, rules of a game that involved the distribution of benefits.

Fang Yuan understood that since he came here using Wu Yi Hai’s identity, he had to settle matters using righteous path methods. If he used demonic path methods here, his enemies would laugh happily, and his clan would distance themselves from him. Even if Wu Yong sides with his brother, he would not be able to endure the pressure, for the sake of the clan, he would need to move Fang Yuan elsewhere.

After all, Wu clan was led by Wu Yong.

Wu clan was once the dominant clan, but Ba clan, Shang clan, and Tie clan were not willing to be under Wu clan. Qiao clan was Wu clan’s most loyal ally.

But after Wu Du Xiu’s death, the situation had changed greatly. Ba clan was stirring and ready to strike, especially when Old Treeman Ba De was the one sent here to guard the dream realm.

With just this, Fang Yuan could acutely sense that from now on, Ba clan was going to be his main competitor.

As for Qiao clan...

Fang Yuan felt somewhat of a headache.

He came here, he had gone against the agreement with Qiao clan. As for what Qiao clan’s attitude would be and how much support they would give him, Fang Yuan was uncertain.

After the banquet, Fang Yuan sent Wu An and Wu Liao away, resting alone.

Before leaving, Wu An wanted to say some things, but he was very hesitant about it.

Wu Liao left quietly, he had an improving opinion of Fang Yuan after this. During the banquet, he asked very precise questions, even though Wu Liao had difficulties answering them, he felt confident in Fang Yuan’s abilities as a result.

For righteous path Gu Immortals, their own strength was the foundation, but it was not enough, they needed to be skilled in political methods as well.

However, after the banquet, for the next few days, Fang Yuan did not show up in public, he was hiding in his own room, cultivating.

“Is this Wu Yi Hai really just a lone cultivator?” Fang Yuan’s actions were very much resembling lone cultivators, this made many Gu Immortals who were observing him secretly make such a guess.

Wu Liao was a bit disappointed, he wanted a superior that could suppress the situation, not someone who was purely cultivating.

Wu An felt very uneasy.

These last days, he had invited Fang Yuan with all sorts of reasons. But Fang Yuan rejected them all, he even said that he should not be disturbed if there were no important matters.

Wu An could not tell what Fang Yuan’s thoughts were, as time passed, his anxiety turned into fear.

And behind Wu An, there were also Gu Immortals from other clans, they were also very anxious.

The reason was simple.

The immortal opportunity business.

Back then, they could do the immortal opportunity business because Wu clan had led them, colluding with several clan’s Gu Immortals to undergo this trade secretly.

The original Wu clan rank seven Gu Immortal left, Wu Yi Hai was moved here.

The immortal opportunity business thus had to stop, because the person in charge of Wu clan over here was Wu Yi Hai. Most importantly, he controlled two Immortal Gu!

Wu An was fawning over Fang Yuan so desperately, other than wanting to gain his protection, he also wanted to salvage the immortal opportunity business.

Wu An obtained a lot of benefits from this, without these benefits urging him, he would not have been so enthusiastic towards Fang Yuan.

Initially, interactions between Fang Yuan and Wu An were developing well. But soon, Fang Yuan acted abnormally, Wu An was at a loss.

The immortal opportunity business could not be exposed, if it was known publicly, they would be held responsible. This was an act of corruption, it was information that could be used against them.

Without dragging Fang Yuan into this, Wu An felt uneasy.

Gritting his teeth, he decided to take a risk!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1224: White Rabbit’s Seduction (1/2)

“This servant greets Lord Wu Yi Hai.” The female Gu Immortal knelt down before Fang Yuan’s feet.

She wore a white fur coat, it only wrapped around her chest and lower body, a large portion of her snow white skin was exposed. Her ears were like rabbit ears, her eyes were red like rubies, her nose was small and delicate, she had an extremely cute appearance. In terms of beauty, she was only inferior to Shang Xin Ci and Feng Jin Huang.

At this moment, this female immortal was kneeling on the ground, her forehead was touching the floor. Her huge chest was squeezed by the floor, experiencing a change in form. And her butt was high in the sky, attracting people’s gazes.

She was none other than Lady White Rabbit.

Right now, she was pure yet wild, she was cute and embarrassed. Especially with her subservient attitude, when men see her, they would feel something emerging in their crotches, they would want to hug her tightly and give her some well deserved love.

Fang Yuan was feeling strange.

Not long ago, he had offered this woman some cultivation resources in exchange for information on the Gu Immortal world. To think that now, this woman would be kneeling before his feet, subjecting herself to whatever he wanted to do.

“This is an attempt to seduce me!”

“This Wu An took a risk and lied to me, saying that some important person wanted to report matters to me, therefore enabling Lady White Rabbit to meet me.”

“It seems that these last few days, I had been secluded for too long, they are anxious now. They even used this method.”

“The method is old and cliched, but it is very effective.”

Fang Yuan smiled, standing up from his seat, slowly walking towards Lady White Rabbit.

Lady White Rabbit’s forehead did not leave the concrete floor.

With Fang Yuan’s sharp eyes, he could see that Lady White Rabbit was trembling.

She was nervous.

Fang Yuan thought: He had interacted with Lady White Rabbit before, and with his five hundred years of cultivation, he could tell that this woman was a pure lone cultivator. To think that she would offer her own body, this must be her first time doing this.

Of course, Fang Yuan’s judgment could be wrong, but there were likely to be few people in the five regions who could deceive him this thoroughly.

Lady White Rabbit was indeed very nervous.

She was nervous, her body was trembling, her heart was pounding.

Even though she knew that she had to be calm and follow Wu An’s words, she could not do it.

Knowing was easy, doing was hard.

“Turns out seductions are not so easy after all.” Lady White Rabbit sighed internally.

Other than this, she felt some shame and anger, as well as disbelief.

“I, I am actually doing something like this? Why am I doing this? I am trying to seduce a man I have never even met before!”

Lady White Rabbit felt very strange, this was not something she would normally do.

Before this, she was a pure lone cultivator, having no conflicts in the world, she cultivated in peace and quiet. If anyone told her that she would be on her knees doing this in the future, she would definitely fight that person without doubt!

“Why did it come to this?”

Lady White Rabbit thought about it: She had good connections with people, so one day, Wu An came to her and said that he had a huge fortune to share with her.

Back then, Lady White Rabbit was very wary and suspicious, why would something so good come to her? She felt that maybe Wu An was trying to cheat her money and body?

But no.

Lady White Rabbit managed the immortal opportunity business, she became the middleman, both demonic path and lone immortals had basis to trust her.

Of course, the initial business was not good. But afterwards, when word got out, the Gu Immortals gradually understood this business, and people started to flood towards her endlessly.

After every business transaction, Lady White Rabbit would take a cut of the profits.

Very soon, her total wealth had reached the level of her accumulation in the last tens of years.

Lady White Rabbit was shocked and joyful.

The business was getting better, she felt that each new day would be brighter.

But an unexpected mishap came both suddenly, and not suddenly.

Not suddenly because Lady White Rabbit knew about the matter entirely. Rank eight great expert, Wu Du Xiu, of Wu clan, passed away, her illegitimate son from Eastern Sea, Wu Yi Hai was returning to Southern Border, and was attacked by many forces. In the end, Wu Yi Hai survived the attacks and successfully returned to the clan, becoming a Southern Border Gu Immortal.

But it was sudden because Lady White Rabbit did not expect that this matter, which involved the entire Southern Border Gu Immortal world, would implicate her. Wu Yi Hai, who was far apart, having a high status, had actually come over here and became the person-in-charge of the super Gu formation on Wu clan’s side.

The immortal opportunity business had to stop!

Because this business could not be exposed. Originally, Wu clan’s rank seven Gu Immortal was the person manipulating it in the background.

Now that he was gone, Wu Yi Hai came.

Wu An and the rest were beneficiaries of this, but they had no ability to continue this business.

Because they were not qualified to.

They could not bypass Fang Yuan and continue the business either.

Because this business only involved seven clans, Ba clan, Tie clan, and Shang clan were not participants. They needed a strong background to support them.

Stop it here?

No, of course not!

All of the Gu Immortals involved in the immortal opportunity business had experienced great gains and benefits, they still wanted to continue!

Thus, roping Fang Yuan in was the most important matter.

Wu An was tasked with this important mission, Wu Liao could not be relied on, this Gu Immortal seemed young, but he was very conservative and strict with rules, he had always objected intensely to Wu clan doing the immortal opportunity business.

Wu An was very enthusiastic and attended to Fang Yuan meticulously, but he suddenly went into seclusion.

This made Wu An and the Gu Immortals with him extremely anxious.

The situation with the demonic path and lone cultivators was terrible now.

Suddenly, they could not enter and interact with the dream realm. This made the Gu Immortals feel that something was wrong, were these righteous path members trying to take their cultivation resources and not holding their side of the deal?

Large numbers of Gu Immortals surrounded the mortal Gu House on the mountain peak. They could not find the righteous path Gu Immortals, they could only surround Lady White Rabbit and shout loudly, sending threats as they demanded answers!

At this moment, Lady White Rabbit realized that she was in extreme danger!!

If the immortal opportunity business could not continue, not only would she not have a bright future, she would be torn to shreds by these wolves, her end would definitely be miserable.

In this situation, Wu An came and spoke with a glib tongue, finally convincing Lady White Rabbit.

Lady White Rabbit was forced by the situation, she had no choice but to dress up like this and meet Fang Yuan, using her beauty to seduce this Gu Immortal from Wu clan, so that he could come out and manage the immortal opportunity business!

“Raise your head.” At this time, Lady White Rabbit heard Fang Yuan’s order.

Lady White Rabbit’s body shook, her heart almost skipped a beat.

She breathed in deeply, she raised her head, looking up at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan looked down imposingly at this beautiful girl, she was sprawling on the ground, raising her head to look at him. Her eyes were large and round, her skin was white like a boiled egg, and her lips were pink and delicate, soft as flowers, it made people unable to resist the urge of exploring how they tasted, especially the exquisite pink tongue that was inside, what flavor would it have?

“Stand up.” At this moment, Fang Yuan spoke.

Lady White Rabbit was like a wooden puppet, obediently standing up.

She had an exquisite and busty figure, her chest could barely be contained, but her height was only at Fang Yuan’s chest level, she was like a neighbor’s cute daughter.

The two were less than five meters apart.

Lady White Rabbit’s heart was pounding fiercely, her breathing was rough, she was almost gasping. Next, she remembered Wu An’s instructions, she stepped forward and hugged Fang Yuan.

She used her jade-like arms to wrap around Fang Yuan’s waist, using a seductive tone as she said: “Mas... master, please, please forcefully ravage this servant!”

She stammered as she said that, she wanted to die from shame and embarrassment!

Even though she had cultivated for many years, Lady White Rabbit was still very ignorant about male and female relationships. Her only guidelines were Wu An’s suggestions.

“White Rabbit, oh White Rabbit, how can you say such shameful words? You really said it!”

Her face was bright red, she was asking herself this on the inside, she found it hard to believe that this was actually her.

Elsewhere, outside the place that Fang Yuan lived in, Wu An was pacing around uncertainly.

He was anxious, he walked around as he rubbed his hands, they formed into fists at times. From time to time, he stopped walking, turning around to look at the tightly shut door, thinking about what could happen inside.

If the immortal opportunity business stopped, and Fang Yuan refused to take over, that would mean that he did not like this idea, he would expose it.

This was very possible, Wu Yi Hai was very young and had just joined Wu clan, he needed to prove himself to the clan.

His brother was Wu Yong, he definitely had no lack of cultivation resources. For the moment, benefits were less important to him than reputation.

This way, Lady White Rabbit would be done for, even if she did not die, she would be wanted by the righteous path. She would turn from a lone immortal to a demonic path Gu Immortal.

Even though Wu An would not die, because Wu clan had limited Gu Immortals, he would definitely need to give up the benefits that he had obtained. He would also be punished by the clan, he would be sent away and his bright future would be completely ruined due to this business.

At this time, footsteps could be heard.

Wu An turned and look, only to see that this person was standing straight like a spear, he footsteps were like the wind as he emitted an imposing aura all over his body.

Wu An had a bad feeling: “Wu Liao, why are you here?”

Wu Liao snorted coldly at him: “Why else? Someone was shameless and wanted to seduce Lord Wu Yi Hai into committing a grave mistake! I am here to tell lord everything that you have done. I want him to know your schemes and ill intentions.”

Wu An was so angry he was about to explode, he pointed at Wu Liao as he gritted his teeth: “Wu Liao, you dare to do so?!”

He had tried to bribe Wu Liao.

But Wu Liao refused to accept it, he did not find it little, it was just his personality.

Among Wu clan’s Gu Immortals, who would not know about Wu Liao’s personality?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1225: White Rabbit’s Seduction (2/2)

Wu Liao ignored Wu An, he bowed towards the door deeply as he shouted: “Wu An has ill intentions, Wu Liao seeks an audience with lord, I want to report him!”

Wu An’s heart was frozen at this point.

He was scared, he was fearful.

He was afraid that at the next moment, this door would abruptly open and Lady White Rabbit would be thrown out with tears in her eyes.

Then he, Wu An, would be done for.

But no.

The door remained shut, as if Fang Yuan heard nothing.

But how could this be possible?

This was not an ordinary location, it was the internal space of the super Gu formation, a huge group of palaces had formed that could accommodate people.

Fang Yuan controlled two crucial Immortal Gu, he was fully aware of everything going on in Wu clan’s territory inside the formation.

Wu An and Wu Liao’s actions were extremely clear to Fang Yuan.

How could he not hear what Wu Liao had shouted earlier?

Impossible!

Seeing that Fang Yuan was ignoring him, Wu Liao, who was extremely confident, was stunned.

He knew that Wu An had been trying all kinds of ways to meet Fang Yuan, Wu Liao knew the purpose of his request.

Wu Liao did not obstruct him, because he knew that humans were greedy and selfish, many people were different from him, for example, the previous rank seven Gu Immortal from Wu clan.

But afterwards, Fang Yuan did not meet Wu An once.

Realizing this, Wu Liao was extremely happy.

He thought of it in his own perspective, since Fang Yuan rejected Wu An, he was definitely unhappy with the immortal opportunity business.

“Indeed! How can someone of Lord Wu Yi Hai’s status be after such small gains? He has just entered the clan, he must be concerned about his reputation, and how he would develop as a Wu clan higher-up in the future.” Wu Liao guessed.

Having such thoughts, he came to meet Fang Yuan, hopeful that Fang Yuan would receive him.

But now?

The hall’s door was shut, like a wall or a tall mountain that was blocking Wu Liao’s heart.

Wu An laughed heartily.

He wiped the sweat off his forehead, his mind returned to a calm state.

Wu Liao’s request to meet was the best probe.

Wu An instantly thought that he had understood Fang Yuan’s intention.

Wu Liao did not believe it, he shouted again, but the doors remained shut, there was no response.

Wu An laughed even louder now, feeling very confident.

He spoke: “Wu Liao, stop screaming. Lord has important matters to attend to, is it nice to disturb him like this?”

Wu Liao’s expression was dark and ugly.

Wu An sneered, shaking his head.

Wu Liao looked down on Wu An, while Wu An felt that Wu Liao was too obstinate, he was not reasonable in how to deal with people and relationships.

“Now it seems, even though I took a risk, it paid off well.”

“It is understandable, after all, Lady White Rabbit has a great appearance. When I first saw her in that attire, my heart almost jumped out of my mouth. I wanted so badly to cuddle her and rub all over her body!”

“Seeing a beauty like Lady White Rabbit, as long as one is a man, they would be tempted! Lord Wu Yi Hai is a young and vigorous guy, he has just gotten some authority, and a beauty comes to him immediately, it can satisfy his ego. Furthermore, he was an Eastern Sea lone cultivator, while Lady White Rabbit is also a Southern Border lone cultivator, between lone cultivators, they can understand each other and feel for each other. And the rarer thing is that Lady White Rabbit is a real virgin, when a man and woman meet, they would be like the fusion of fire and ice... hehehe!”

While he was thinking that, at the next moment, something happened that caught Wu An off guard.

Only to see that the doors opened, Lady White Rabbit stood at the door, appearing before the two Wu clan Gu Immortals.

“What happened? She came out already? Why has it been so little time?” Wu An was extremely surprised.

“Lord must have heard my words and sent this female immortal out.” Wu Liao was overjoyed, but when he saw Lady White Rabbit, his gaze froze.

Even though he felt a little disgusted earlier, seeing Lady White Rabbit’s divine beauty made his heart shook, he could not help but admit that Lady White Rabbit was beautiful.

“Such a short time has passed, did she not succeed?!” Wu An’s heart sank to rock bottom, he was in a daze, his throat went dry.

But soon, he saw that Lady White Rabbit had changed her clothes, it was no longer the white fur coat from before.

Also!

What attracted Wu An’s attention more was that Lady White Rabbit was wearing a pair of jade earrings, they were ball shaped and extremely thick.

This was Southern Border’s custom.

When a woman marries and loses her virginity, she would wear such earrings, to show that she had successfully become one with her man.

Wu An was overjoyed, he was extremely happy!

Wu Liao’s expression was pale, his eyes were sharp, he had already seen Lady White Rabbit’s jade ball earrings.

“Did, did you succeed?” Wu An came forward and asked carefully.

Lady White Rabbit had an odd expression, but she nodded and did not speak.

Wu An let out a breath of turbid air, he shut his eyes as pressure left him, he could not adapt to this feeling and nearly fell down.

“But, why was it so fast?” Wu An had a thought: “This shouldn’t be, don’t tell me that Lord Wu Yi Hai is... a two pump chump in that aspect? Such a situation is not rare in Southern Border, there are many guys who had cultivate until this happened to them. Hehe, if that is the case, I can offer many useful Gu worms to lord in the future. But Lord Wu Yi Hai is already a rank seven Gu Immortal, with so many dao marks in him, these Gu worms might not be effective.”

“These jade pearls were given to me by Lord Wu Yi Hai. He has instructed me to tell you, from now on, he will mainly focus on cultivating, you can carry on with your duties, do not disturb his cultivation.” Lady White Rabbit said.

After she said that, Wu An looked at Wu Liao smugly with the expression of a victor.

Wu Liao’s body shook, he took a step back, looking at Wu An angrily as he turned and left.

“Lord Wu An, let’s leave too.” Lady White Rabbit said.

“Don’t call me lord, how can I, Wu An, be any lord. Just call me by my name.” Wu An showed a sincere expression, as well as a courteous smile.

Right now, Lady White Rabbit’s status had changed.

Not only did Wu Yi Hai take Lady White Rabbit’s virginity, he had given her jade pearl earrings, he acknowledged her status as his concubine.

Lady White Rabbit felt Wu An’s change in attitude, she had a complex feeling inside her.

She spoke: “Actually, Wu An, Lord Wu Yi Hai has some words especially for you.”

“Lady, please tell me!” Wu An quickly turned solemn.

Lady White Rabbit said some shocking things: “Actually... Lord Wu Yi Hai did not copulate with me.”

“What?!” Wu An’s expression turned into shock.

The earlier scene appeared in Lady White Rabbit’s mind again.

When she went ahead to hug him with an extremely flustered feeling, a pair of strong hands grabbed her shoulders.

Next, strong force was emitted in these warm hands, without allowing for any resistance, Lady White Rabbit was pushed away from Fang Yuan’s body.

Lady White Rabbit’s expression turned pale, instantly, she felt that she failed.

But at the next moment, she heard Fang Yuan’s voice: “When I was in Eastern Sea, I was a lone cultivator. I know the pain of a lone cultivator clearly. Some things are sweet, but you will have to pay a price if you swallow them. I am sure that now, you understand why. However, I do not want to take advantage of someone in dire straights.”

Saying this, Lady White Rabbit saw that a hand had stretched out towards her chest, it was holding a Gu worm.

“This is a clothing Gu, wearing it before talking to me.” Fang Yuan’s voice could be heard again.

Lady White Rabbit obeyed him, the clothing Gu turned into clothes that covered her body.

When she raised her head again, she saw Fang Yuan smiling lightly at her: “Even though I joined Wu clan, I am still a lone cultivator at heart, it will never change. You can consider this Gu worm a gift from a fellow lone cultivator, I suppose.”

Lady White Rabbit’s heart jumped, she felt an indescribable sensation, she was extremely touched in both body and soul.

At once, she started sobbing, tears formed in her eyes as her vision turned blurry.

But in her blurry vision, Lady White Rabbit could feel that Fang Yuan’s smile was so warm and gentle, it was like the rays of the morning sun, shining into her heart, providing warmth and protection to her.

“However, if you leave like this, you might not be able to answer for the consequences. I am clear about you and Wu An’s intentions in coming here. Thus, bring this with you.” Fang Yuan said, taking out a pair of earrings.

With his abilities, creating such mortal objects would only take a thought.

Lady White Rabbit received this pair of jade earrings with tears in her eyes.

“From today onwards, you are my attendant and mistress.” Fang Yuan smiled and said.

Lady White Rabbit acknowledged his words, slightly nodding.

“Go ahead with the immortal opportunity business. But I will not take over, if anything happens, I can help out secretly, but I will not step up officially.”

“This is a matter that violates the interests of the other righteous path clans. After all, the entire super Gu formation was created with everyone’s effort.”

“I have just arrived in Southern Border, I have yet to establish myself, I do not need these meager gains.”

“You are so intelligent, you understand what I mean, right?”

“Yes, I understand.” Lady White Rabbit quickly answered with a shaky voice.

“Go back, and convey my message to Wu An and the people around him. My portion of the profits will go to you.” Fang Yuan sent her off.

Lady White Rabbit mustered up her courage, wanting to take another look at Fang Yuan.

But she did not manage to do so.

She lowered her head as she walked out. The moment her back faced Fang Yuan, tears fell down her cheeks.

The situation was much better than she had thought.

The name of Wu Yi Hai was engraved into the deepest part of her soul.

“I understand now, I understand now!” After hearing Lady White Rabbit’s recollection, Wu An’s forehead was full of sweat, his smugness was completely gone by now.

He subconsciously looked towards Fang Yuan’s residence, wariness and even more so, admiration and respect was hidden in his gaze.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1226: Rules of the Righteous Path

On his bed, Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes.

He let out a breath of air, realizing that he was still in his bed, the surrounding arrangements were all intact.

This was the defensive Gu formation that Southern Border’s righteous path forces had created together, it was very safe. But Fang Yuan was vigilant to the core, he always considered the many possible outcomes before he did anything.

Ever since rebirth, he had been cultivating endlessly, he exerted all of his effort without wasting a moment of his time on useless aspects.

This sleep was the same.

Fang Yuan entered his own dream realm, getting materials from his dream realm, he obtained the Gu materials for many dream path mortal Gu.

“If I refine them, I can get five to six dream path mortal Gu.” Fang Yuan assessed.

His improvement in dream path was evident.

In the past, after one dream, he would only obtain a few Gu materials, to refine one or two dream path mortal Gu. But now was different, his gains had risen sharply, his efficiency in getting dream path mortal Gu also rose by many times.

Of course, there was an important element, his soul.

When exploring dream realms, the soul would weaken.

Thus, the stronger the soul, the longer one could explore the dream realm, and the greater the backlash that they could endure from the dream realm.

What was worth mentioning was: No matter how strong the soul was, it was just a basic condition for exploration. A strong soul could not allow one to freely move in the dream realm.

There was a somewhat unfitting analogy for souls and dreams.

The dream realm was like a desert, when souls explore it, they are like lost travelers inside the desert. The stronger the soul, the stronger the traveler’s constitution, they could endure hunger and stay inside the desert for a longer time.

But that did not mean that he could walk out of the desert. He did not know what direction it was, he could not create food and water inside the desert, he could not shrink the desert or leave it freely.

But clear directions, creation of water and food, and modifying the desert, all of these could only be achieved by dream path at this period of time.

Why ‘this period of time’?

Because when all the paths reach a certain attainment level, they can mimic other paths and attain their effects.

In the future, fire path, earth path, and others can also create their own immortal killer moves that mimic dream path effects.

However!

There was a huge condition.

That was, dream path had to be developed further as a path, and the Gu Immortal trying to mimic its effect needed to be familiar with dream path and have high dream path attainment.

Right now, dream path had just started being researched, all the forces and Gu Immortals were suffering from exploring it, they did not have many useful gains.

Even though there were quite a few dream path Gu worms and even wild dream path Immortal Gu, dream path as a path itself was still very far from actually being created.

It was not even properly created yet, not to mention completed.

Creating a whole new path was not so easy.

There were many water path Gu worms, during the Immemorial Antiquity Era, Remote Antiquity Era, and Olden Antiquity Era, there were countless wild water path Gu worms, there were even people who created new water path Gu worms. But only until the Medieval Antiquity Era did Spirit Affinity House’s founder, Shui Ni, finalize the path after considering all aspects, formally creating water path.

Thus, Gu Immortals in the five regions could do nothing about dream path, they knew that it was extremely valuable, but they had no way to gain from it.

Many Gu Immortals died in dream realms.

This situation was happening everywhere, and some time ago, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals had suffered massive casualties from this.

Precisely so, Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals noticed the fact and had to slow down their exploration of the dream realm, moving forward with steady steps, carefully progressing slowly.

Many Gu Immortals were still very wary of the dream realm, they started to have different ideas, thus, the immortal opportunity business was born as a result.

If the righteous path Gu Immortals had ways to explore the dream realm, how could they give up this immense profit to the demonic and lone immortals?

Thinking of the immortal opportunity business, Fang Yuan sat up on his bed.

The immortal opportunity business had to exist, but at the same time, he could not be involved in it excessively.

The immortal opportunity business had many uses.

On one hand, it could give Gu Immortals immense benefits. On the other hand, it could greatly reduce the conflict of the righteous path, demonic path, and lone cultivators.

If the righteous path Gu Immortals defended the super dream realm forcefully, what would these demonic path and lone immortals in Southern Border think?

“The righteous path definitely obtained a lot of benefits, but they are keeping it for themselves. If time passes, the righteous path will get stronger, while we get weaker, how can we live? These are the cultivation resources of Great Dream Immortal Venerable, who does not want to become Great Dream Immortal Venerable? Why is the righteous path allowed to hog it for themselves, without any for us?”

This would be their mentality.

It was extremely dangerous.

Southern Border’s righteous path forces knew that if these people were forced, the demonic and lone immortals would join up and result in another battle of Yi Tian Mountain, or result in the blood battle martial competition of Northern Plains.

With this immortal opportunity business, the lone and demonic immortals would realize: Oh, the dream realm is so dangerous, there is nothing to gain from it. At this moment, the righteous path can do nothing to it, otherwise, why would there be this business? Are they letting us experience the dream realm on purpose?

Creating this dream realm business was the idea of the rank seven Gu Immortal from Wu clan, he was very astute. Unfortunately, Fang Yuan was stronger and used his brother’s influence to chase this rank seven Gu Immortal away.

Fang Yuan needed stability.

The more stable the better!

He needed a stable environment to explore the dream realms here.

Thus, preventing the attacks of both lone and demonic path immortals here meant that it was necessary to continue the immortal opportunity business.

But Fang Yuan could not participate.

Because not all the righteous path clans were participating.

This was a crucial point!

Put simply, the loot was not distributed evenly.

Wu clan and six other righteous path clans were getting the benefits, while the other half of the clans were not participating.

This was very reasonable.

Gu Immortals were moved by benefits, the fewer people who joined, the more they would gain, right?

Thus, the result was — once the immortal opportunity business was exposed, all of the Gu Immortals involved would not be able to get away. They would definitely be punished severely, because this was the rule of the righteous path!

Fang Yuan could not step into this trap.

Wu An and the rest wanted to rope him in, but Fang Yuan knew that once this was exposed, even if he was the owner of two Immortal Gu in here and was the brother of Wu Yong, it was impossible for him to stay here.

Fang Yuan was not going to take the risk.

He went through all kinds of methods to infiltrate here, what was it for? It was for the dream realm!

Especially when Wu Yong was not someone who favored his ‘brother’ Wu Yi Hai. His attitude would depend on the circumstances.

But as long as Fang Yuan did not commit a mistake, and was the owner of the Immortal Gu here, Wu Yong would be less likely to send him elsewhere.

Fang Yuan could see all these details clearly.

Thanks to the five hundred years of his previous life.

Even though his cultivation level was not high, he had been in the righteous path, demonic path, and even was a lone cultivator, he had incredibly rich life experiences.

This allowed him to be in the righteous path while not being restrained by Wu Yi Hai’s lone cultivator upbringing. He was clear about the political situation here, he knew what to do as a righteous path Gu Immortal, and how to play this game of life.

Thus, he recruited Lady White Rabbit.

At the crucial moment, he could use her as scapegoat, saying that he did not know the matter.

The immortal opportunity business’ profits that were for him were all given to Lady White Rabbit as well.

He could not take the profits.

Unlike demonic path or lone cultivators who would crazy after seeing some resources, the righteous path could not do this, some benefits could be gained, but certain benefits were untouchable.

But what if he rejected her? What if he gave Lady White Rabbit and Wu An the cold shoulder?

That was worse.

If Fang Yuan did that, even though there would not be a crisis after getting exposed, he would make enemies with six clans of Gu Immortals. These people were beneficiaries, if Fang Yuan did not lead them, they would not dare to undergo this business. These people would definitely have poor feelings towards him.

Fang Yuan would have just arrived at the super Gu formation, and he would have already offended all of the political allies of Wu clan.

And all those who did not participate in the immortal opportunity business, like Ba clan, Tie clan, or Shang clan, would be greedily eyeing up Fang Yuan.

If he did that, he would be crippling his own network, it was an extremely stupid idea.

The arrangement now was good.

The immortal opportunity business continued, his political allies were happy, Ba clan and the rest were watching but could not do anything to Fang Yuan, who had no exploitable weaknesses.

In the future, if this matter was exposed, Fang Yuan would push Lady White Rabbit into the spotlight, sacrificing her and saying that he was doting on her, but to think that she would do something like this behind his back. He was completely kept in the dark and ignorant.

All in all, Fang Yuan had leeway to retreat or advance.

As for those profits, Fang Yuan could only give up on them.

He did not lack resources now, the sovereign immortal aperture’s cultivation resources would put most rank seven Gu Immortals to shame!

“Next, I can officially start exploring dream realms!” Fang Yuan prepared to move.

At the same time, in Northern Plains.

The blood battle martial competition was reaching its end.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang did not appear from start to finish, but their influence was heavily affecting the competition.

Chu Du had an ugly expression.

The situation was not in his favor.

Hao Zhen had lost, he was holding his left shoulder with his right arm. His injuries were severe, his left arm was completely chopped off, the injury area was covered in dao marks, it was hard to heal.

“Northern Plains’ righteous path truly has a deep foundation.” Chu Du sighed, he was in an extremely awkward position of having nobody to send out.

Hao Zhen had an angry expression, he spoke with unwillingness to give up: “Lord Chu Du, I have a friend who is stronger than me, but they are a secluded cultivator and have little fame.”

Chu Du was joyful and suspicious: “Oh? Why did you not recommend them earlier?”

Hao Zhen had a difficult expression, he transmitted carefully: “There is one bad point, they cultivate blood path.”

Chu Du’s expression turned solemn, he rejected it without hesitation: “Absolutely not! Any blood path Gu Immortal is a demonic path Gu Immortal. This blood battle martial competition is a competition between righteous path forces, how can this blood path demonic immortal take part?”

Once they were involved, the other party could slander Chu Du’s side for being demonic path members.

Chu Du’s hard work would completely go down the drain.

This was the rule of the righteous path!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1227: Dragonman

“Our Combat Immortal Sect is one of the ten great ancient sects. Lad, since you were recommended by my senior brother, you must know about the selection rules of Combat Immortal Sect, it will depend on your combat results.”.

In Fang Yuan’s vision, a Gu Master was looking down imposingly at him, saying: “If you want to officially become a disciple of Combat Immortal Sect, you have to put up a good fight and be one of the ten people left out of a hundred people, to be qualified to join the sect.”

“Combat Immortal Sect...”

“Why is it this kind of dream.”

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable didn’t seem to have joined Combat Immortal Sect during his life?”

“It seems that he absorbed many souls in the door of life and death and obtained lots of cultivation experiences. This is why it formed like this?”

Fang Yuan speculated inwardly.

At this time, the Gu Master took out three Gu worms.

This first Gu worm looked like a caterpillar, it was light blue and the size of an adult’s thumb, the head had a small horn on it.

The second Gu worm was a butterfly with red patterns, emitting a warm aura.

The third Gu worm was a toad, it seemed like a grey rock.

Inside the dream realm, the Gu Master spoke: “These three Gu worms are water arrow Gu, fire cloak Gu, and spirit saliva Gu. You are a rank one Gu Master, choose one.”

“I can only choose one?” Fang Yuan asked.

“Everyone can only choose one.” The Gu Master in charge said expressionlessly.

Fang Yuan nodded, he assessed carefully: “Water arrow Gu is for attacking, but it is not good among offensive Gu. Fire cloak Gu is a defensive Gu, it grants me a cloak of fire that can burn enemies mildly, and spirit saliva Gu can be used to heal Gu Masters.”

“If I can choose all of them, so be it. But if I can only choose one, it means this task needs cooperation. The earlier Gu Master said that there are a hundred people but ten spots. To explore this dream realm, I probably need to go ahead and get one of the ten spots.”

“I choose fire cloak Gu.” Fang Yuan thought, answering soon after.

He needed to race for time.

His dream realm exploration time was very precious. The soul would continuously be expended when exploring dream realms, once it weakens to a certain level, Fang Yuan’s cognitive abilities would fall drastically. He would be unable to differentiate between reality and the dream, he would not know that he was dreaming. Eventually, his soul would be trapped in the dream, until he died, Fang Yuan would only have his body left in this world, like those pitiful Gu Immortals of Southern Border earlier.

Exploring dream realms was dangerous.

Especially when Fang Yuan was exploring it alone, without anyone around to take care of him. If any problems occurred, he would be unable to save himself, that would be terrible.

But who could Fang Yuan truly trust?

To grow his attainment level, Fang Yuan had to pay a price and take some risks.

“Of course, I have my trump card, I am not recklessly charging around like other Gu Immortals, needing to test their luck.” Fang Yuan thought of this and immediately used an immortal killer move — Unravel Dream!

Large numbers of dream path mortal Gu were expended, a mystical power was displayed before Fang Yuan.

A Gu Master suddenly appeared.

The Gu Master from earlier was shocked, he asked the new Gu Master: “Senior brother, why are you here?”

The senior brother said: “I came to take a look, junior brother, give the spirit saliva Gu to this child.”

“But senior brother, this is cheating, if it is discovered...” The junior brother was troubled.

The senior brother laughed: “Don’t worry, spirit saliva Gu cannot be detected on the outside if it is used secretly. This child also chose fire cloak Gu, when he is concealed by it, who can see that he is healing himself?”

The junior brother nodded: “Since senior brother is saying that, I have nothing else to say. Take it.”

Saying so, he tossed two Gu worms at Fang Yuan, fire cloak Gu and spirit saliva Gu.

Fang Yuan had just received them when the surrounding dream realm faded, becoming the second scene.

Unravel dream’s effect would change to fit the dream realm, creating effects that would benefit the user.

Thus, unravel dream’s actual effect would vary from dream realm to dream realm.

“But this time, after using unravel dream, I only obtained one extra mortal Gu in the dream. Unravel dream is an immortal killer move, this effect was rather small.”

Fang Yuan thought about it, when he was exploring Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm, unravel dream had immediate results, like untying the wind knot grass instantly, it was direct progress of the dream realm. Unlike here, after using it, he only gained one more mortal Gu.

After all, Fang Yuan’s cultivation level was rank two in this dream realm, he had limited primeval essence, he could not use Gu worms many times. Even though he obtained a second Gu, he had to use his primeval essence wisely, the actual help was not very big.

“Don’t tell me that because this dream realm is too big, the rules of the dream realm are also stronger. Thus, external influences are less effective? In the five hundred years of my previous life, a batch of Gu Immortals also agreed with this point...”

Regardless of Fang Yuan’s thoughts, the second scene had started.

Fang Yuan found that he was in dusty fog, the road in front of him seemed to be at level ground.

“This is the internal space of a Gu formation, it can accommodate a hundred people to fight, the Gu Masters controlling the Gu formation can also observe our situation, huh...”

Fang Yuan analyzed as a young man in the fog approached him.

Fang Yuan thought quickly, he called out: “Don’t attack, friend, so many people are participating, we can ally first.”

“Ally? You offended Young Master Long, you want others to ally with you?” The young man snickered as he shot out a water arrow.

Fang Yuan’s figure shifted, he nimbly dodged it, before pouncing.

Seeing that Fang Yuan was getting close, the young man panicked, he used a second water arrow and tried to force Fang Yuan away.

But Fang Yuan was experienced, seeing the young man raise his hand, he knew where the arrow was heading.

Fang Yuan moved his feet and charged even quicker as the second water arrow missed him narrowly.

The youngster quickly moved back, retreating while firing arrows.

Fang Yuan observed patiently, even though he had a chance to get close, Fang Yuan purposely dodged instead. After a while, the young man was out of steam.

Fang Yuan smiled, slowly walking forward: “Right now, I can disqualify you easily, how about it? Join me and we can work together to deal with the others, I am very sincere!”

“Hmph!” The young man snorted: “Just the two of us against ninety-eight people, you are dreaming. You offended Young Master Long, you wanted to snatch his woman, and you still want to get into Combat Immortal Sect, you are simply dreaming! I would rather give up here than offend Young Master Long foolishly!”

Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

In this case, wouldn’t he have to deal with the other teenagers in this test alone?

This Young Master Long was truly a problem.

“No wonder earlier, Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals suffered heavy losses. This dream realm is too difficult. It is harder than even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm!” Fang Yuan retreated, realizing that he was surrounded by thirty youngsters who had ganged up together, encircling him all around.

Bai Xiang grotto-heaven.

“I succeeded.” Bai Ning Bing said plainly.

His gaze was still cold, he had a normal expression, but his appearance was quite tattered, he was charred black, like lamb on a barbecue rack, having been roasted for a long time.

When he spoke, smoke was coming out of his throat.

Bai Xiang heavenly spirit looked at him, nodding: “You used your own body to contain the fire, subduing the raging wave rising dragon fire. Do you know how dangerous this is, there is only a small chance of success, if you fail, your entire body will turn into ash.”

“Regardless, I succeeded.” Bai Ning Bing was still holding on desperately, when he spoke, each word was said with much difficulty, he was relying solely on his willpower.

Bai Xiang heavenly spirit chuckled: “Since you succeeded, you are now the new owner of this grotto-heaven. Greetings to young master.”

Bai Ning Bing nodded, he did not say anything, he felt like he would faint if he uttered another word.

But if he fainted, according to Ying Wu Xie’s words, he would be unable to control the raging wave rising dragon fire in his body, he would be burned to a crisp instantly.

At this time, Bai Xiang heavenly spirit said: “Young master, you are in a dangerous situation now, if you are careless, you will die completely, not even your soul will survive. If you were the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance Physique, it would be better, but you had to be the Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique. I have a cultivation method that suits your current state. This Gu refinement method uses the Gu Immortal themselves as Gu material, together with the raging wave rising dragon fire, you will be refined together, young master will leave the human race and become one of the variant humans — a dragonman.”

“Dragonman?” Bai Ning Bing stared with wide eyes, thinking: “<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> has no mention of any dragonman. There is such a variant human race?”

Bai Ning Bing did not speak, but Bai Xiang heavenly spirit knew his doubts.

The heavenly spirit continued: “It is indeed not inside <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, because the variant human dragonman was created by a human great expert, Duke Long, the original intention was to prolong lifespan.”

“Duke Long is a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal, he has extremely high battle strength, like Sword Immortal Bo Qing in the past. He brought about the method of humans alike dragons 1 , he fused refinement path and transformation path, to create a brand new variant human race, the dragonman.”

Bai Ning Bing’s shock increased a bit more, he thought: “Who is this Duke Long? Even though I only became an immortal recently, knowledge is not my weakness, I know much more than ordinary Gu Immortals. Duke Long is someone on par with Bo Qing, how could he not be in historical records, is there no such person recorded in Gu Immortal history?”

“Is Bai Xiang heavenly spirit speaking rubbish?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1228: Duke Long

Bai Ning Bing knew that a land spirit or heavenly spirit was formed by the Gu Immortal’s obsession fused with the immortal aperture’s heavenly power, it was a mystical existence.

Because of the obsession, land spirits and heavenly spirits had an ownership acknowledgement requirement, and they could not lie.

But although land spirits and heavenly spirits could not lie, that did not mean they could not spout nonsense.

If land spirits or heavenly spirits obtain wrong information, but they think it is real, when they say it, it is not a lie.

Bai Xiang heavenly spirit’s words were quite unbelievable.

Bo Qing was Bo Qing because he was a type of person rarely seen in human history.

What was Bo Qing’s title?

The pseudo-Immortal Venerable who split the five regions with his sword, it was fortunate for the people in the world that love changed him!

He was publicly recognized by all Gu Immortals across different eras that he was at a level second to only rank nine Gu Venerables.

Such a person was extremely dazzling, like the moon in the night sky, even over the span of history with countless geniuses. If this Duke Long was a great expert at the level of Bo Qing, how could he not be in historical records?

Bai Ning Bing was full of doubts.

But at this time, Bai Xiang heavenly spirit did not answer his doubts, he asked: “Young master, your life is in great danger. We can only use the humans alike dragons Gu refinement method to turn yourself into a dragonman and resolve your crisis.”

“However, this method is rather dangerous.”

Bai Xiang heavenly spirit said this as he frowned, sighing as he said: “You must know that Gu refinement has very strict requirements towards the materials. A proficient refinement path expert would consider all of the dao marks that were inside each Gu material.”

“And the humans alike dragons Gu refinement method uses the Gu Immortal themselves as the immortal material. But immortal materials like these vary from person to person. Every Gu Immortal has different number of dao marks of differing paths. Thus, this Gu refinement method has a low chance of success.”

“If young master had the Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance Physique, or if you cultivated transformation path or refinement path, there is a greater chance. But you are on the other extreme, being the Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique!”

“Sigh... if you use this method, the chance of surviving is extremely minute. During the Gu refinement process, all of your dao marks will be affected. Young master, all of the ice and snow path dao marks in your body might vanish completely.”

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes shined brightly instead!

“My ice and snow path dao marks will vanish, does that mean the information path alliance agreement on me, and the transformation path dao marks, will also vanish?”

He was very stirred up.

All along, what troubled him most were the transformation path dao marks.

Back then, in Southern Border’s Qing Mao Mountain, because of yin-yang rotation Gu, he turned from a guy to a girl. Now, once he used the phantom aperture, he would turn into a Gu Immortal, his transformation path dao marks would be suppressed and he would become a male again. If he did not use the phantom aperture and turned back to a mortal, his transformation path dao marks would turn him into a girl again.

Of course, the dao marks from Shadow Sect’s information path alliance agreement were Bai Ning Bing’s biggest restraint at the moment.

Was Bai Ning Bing someone who would submit to others?

All along, he merely had no methods or ways to break free.

“Use, this, method!” Bai Ning Bing did not hesitate, he struggled intensely and uttered three words.

Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

A female immortal was holding an information path Gu worm and inspecting it carefully.

She had a graceful figure with hair that extended to her waist, and was adorned in a beautiful purple robe. Her eyes were like deep pools, with a sense of sorrow shrouding her face.

It was the wisdom path great expert who replaced Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, the temporary leader of Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei!

She retracted her attention from the information path Gu worm as her lips curled into a smile.

“Love Gu actually acknowledged Zhao Lian Yun? Interesting.”

Fairy Zi Wei was not surprised.

She knew many historical secrets, love Gu had never been reliable in history. In the past, it could acknowledge the inkman Mo Yao, and now, was it really that strange that it acknowledged the otherworldly demon Zhao Lian Yun?

“Spirit Affinity House’s supreme elders cannot decide on this matter, so they are pushing the decision to me? They have gotten smarter.”

Fairy Zi Wei sighed to herself.

Spirit Affinity House was not having a good time recently.

During the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Bo Qing, even though he was dead, had become an immortal zombie, playing a crucial role in that battle. Long ago, he had joined Spirit Affinity House as Sword Immortal Bo Qing. Bo Qing’s sword lights rampaged over Central Continent, it caused great damage to Central Continent, the ten great ancient sects, and even Heavenly Court. After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain ended, Spirit Affinity House endured immense pressure because of it.

Whether they should make Zhao Lian Yun the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House, these Spirit Affinity House supreme elders could not decide. It was a hard decision regardless of whether they make her the fairy or not.

Pushing this difficult problem to Fairy Zi Wei, they could avoid the responsibility themselves.

Fairy Zi Wei did not feel angry about it.

Because she was from Spirit Affinity House in the past.

Fairy Zi Wei was once a Gu Immortal from Spirit Affinity House, because of her great talent, after she became rank eight, she was accepted into Heavenly Court.

Even though the ten great ancient sects were lower level sects of Heavenly Court, their relationship was not as simple as superiors and subordinates.

Because many Heavenly Court Gu Immortals did not forget their roots, the sect that they came from, when descendants from these sects enter Heavenly Court, they would become natural political allies of these Gu Immortals.

Thus, Fairy Zi Wei sided with Spirit Affinity House, and was willing to settle this problem for them.

In fact, she and Fairy Bai Qing had some bloodline relationship.

And Fairy Bai Qing was Feng Jin Huang’s mother, and Feng Jin Huang was vying with Zhao Lian Yun for the position of fairy, neither would relent.

If Spirit Affinity House’s supreme elders acknowledged Zhao Lian Yun, they would be denying Feng Jin Huang the position, thus, they gave this problem to Fairy Zi Wei and let her decide.

This problem was a small matter to Fairy Zi Wei.

She was about to use the information path Gu worm to reply when she suddenly felt a tremor.

This tremor was mild, Fairy Zi Wei almost thought that she was imagining things.

But soon, a tremor occurred again, at an even greater intensity than before.

Fairy Zi Wei stood up in shock.

She had to be shocked.

Because she was in Heavenly Court now, this was such an important place that was managed for countless years, the defense was extremely tight, how could tremors occur for no reason?

The tremors continued, this situation attracted the attention of many Gu Immortals.

Granny Sha stopped refining Gu, she had an expression of shock.

Wei Ling Yang walked out of his hall and looked around.

Fairy Zi Wei could not sit anymore, she left the hall and heard some dragon roars vaguely in the tremors.

The dragon roars were getting louder, Heavenly Court was shaking with even more intensity now.

Under Fairy Zi Wei’s shocked gaze, a dragon shaped pillar of light soared to the sky from deep within Heavenly Court.

“That place, is that deep within the immortal graveyard?” Don’t tell me, a senior has awakened?” Fairy Zi Wei frowned.

At this time, Granny Sha and Wei Ling Yang came to her.

“Such a scene inside the immortal graveyard, it must be a senior from Heavenly Court. But I wonder which one?” Granny Sha deduced.

Wei Ling Yang said: “The immortal graveyard is unfathomable and mysterious, even we do not know how many Gu Immortals are slumbering in it. But Heavenly Court has experienced such huge tremors, this person who woke up must be very extraordinary!”

Granny Sha nodded, she was also someone who had woken up from hibernation, but when she woke up, Heavenly Court was peaceful and quiet, without any commotion. It was a clear contrast to now.

Fairy Zi Wei breathed in deeply: “We’ll know if we go and see.”

The three immortals flew deep into the immortal graveyard, only to see a huge pit that had formed on the plain grassland.

Inside the pit, there was a withered and weak old man.

The old man saw the three Gu Immortals and quickly opened a slit of his eyes with much difficulty, saying weakly: “Water, water...”

Fairy Zi Wei quickly went ahead and used her healing methods.

Granny Sha and Wei Ling Yang looked at each other, the commotion was huge, but to think that this person was so weak when they saw him.

This was really surprising.

“My healing methods are not working.” At this time, Fairy Zi Wei frowned as she spoke.

Wei Ling Yang quickly went ahead and used all his methods, but nothing was working on the old man.

Wei Ling Yang said solemnly: “Not good, this senior’s body is very strange, my methods are not working. Senior’s life force is dwindling, at this rate, he will die in less than a few minutes.”

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes shined, she analyzed: “Earlier, senior said water, it must be a method to save him. Ordinary water would not work, then what water does he need?”

Granny Sha was a refinement path expert, she used her healing methods as she said: “There are three fires in this world, and also three waters. They are all rank nine immortal materials, Heavenly Court has stock of all of them, bring them here.”

But the three types of water had no effect.

The old man could barely breathe, he was dying.

The three immortals were anxious, what should they do?”

Fairy Zi Wei suddenly pointed at the old man’s head: “Senior’s forehead had two protrusions, what are these rock-like things?”

Granny Sha was reminded as inspiration flashed in her mind: “I know what water it is!”

She took out the true dragon heavenly water, pouring this rank eight immortal material into the old man’s mouth.

The old man obtained this water and his life force surged, his body started inflating, soon, his throat started moving, he had the strength to drink this water himself.

The result was immediate!

The three immortals were overjoyed.

After the old man drank five hundred grams of true dragon heavenly water, he pushed Granny Sha’s hands away.

Granny Sha understood and stopped feeding him.

The old man stood up shakily.

He was different from before.

His dry skin had been puffed up, his entire facial shape had changed, he no longer looked like a skeleton.

He opened his aged eyes as he looked at the three immortals, sighing: “This is the last time I can awaken, true dragon heavenly water is not effective now, five hundred grams is enough, any more is a waste. I sensed that someone was using the humans alike dragons Gu refinement method, I can smell traces of fate, I had no choice but to wake up.”

“You, you are Duke Long?!” Fairy Zi Wei stared with wide opened eyes, tongue-tied.

“That would be me.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1229: Love Gu (1/2)

Zhao Lian Yun was brought into a small secret room in her daze.

“Where is this?” She opened her eyes, looking around.

This secret room was extremely quiet, a bone chilling silence was embedded into every brick in this room, and every inch of the wall.

The secret room was not bright, it was dim like only a candle was lit, sending out faint traces of light, Zhao Lian Yun could barely see anything.

“Come here.” From the traces of light, an aged voice spoke.

Zhao Lian Yun followed the direction of the voice.

As she got closer, she saw an elderly person who was as aged as that voice.

She was the first supreme elder of Spirit Affinity House.

First supreme elder looked at Zhao Lian Yun with a deep glance, focusing her attention on love Gu, which was on Zhao Lian Yun’s shoulder.

Her gaze moved slightly, she quickly calmed down.

“Kneel down.” First supreme elder said.

Zhao Lian Yun felt that even though this old woman did not feel special, she had an immense authority, her calm words carried force that made people feel obliged to obey her.

Thus, Zhao Lian Yun lowered her head as she saw a cushion on the ground.

She knelt down on the cushion, her upper body was straight as she looked at the old woman.

The old woman said: “Look ahead.”

Zhao Lian Yun looked ahead, she saw that the secret room was getting bright, Zhao Lian Yun gasped as she stared with wide opened eyes.

Because she saw that on the wall in front, there were countless jade-like small tablets.

“These are life tablet Gu, each of the names there is a certain fairy of Spirit Affinity House in the past. From the first generation until now...” First supreme elder said slowly.

Zhao Lian Yun’s breathing intensified, her gaze swept past this wall, there were countless tablets, she was dazzled.

At the top left hand corner, there was a tablet, with the first generation fairy’s name written, Shui Ni.

Second generation fairy, Xun Yu.

Third generation fairy, Hui Xin.

...

She also saw Mo Yao, Lian Xiang, and other familiar names.

Zhao Lian Yun looked at these names, her breathing became rough. She was like a child, staring at the night sky that was flickering with countless stars.

She knew that these people were all past stars in the Gu Immortal world. Every generation of Spirit Affinity House’s fairies was a Gu Immortal that was famous in Central Continent! They were extraordinary and unrivaled. They were like pearls that were linked together, from the past to the present, they weaved Spirit Affinity House’s future, leaving behind dazzling brilliance and glory throughout history.

Zhao Lian Yun was dazed, at this moment, first supreme elder spoke: “From now onwards, you are the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House. Your life tablet Gu is already at the lowest position.”

At this moment, Zhao Lian Yun’s heart froze.

She stared with wide opened eyes, looking at the old lady, she was overjoyed but had endless doubts: “How can this be? Am I dreaming? According to Spirit Affinity House’s rules, I am not qualified yet, I...”

She said this until she thought of something, she turned her gaze away as she looked at love Gu on her shoulder: “Is it because of this Gu?”

First supreme elder nodded slightly: “This is love Gu, you have already received love Gu’s acknowledgement.”

After Zhao Lian Yun fainted, when she woke up, she was already inside this secret room.

She was unsure of what love Gu looked like, but she knew that love Gu was the signature Gu of Spirit Affinity House!

“Is this love Gu?!” Zhao Lian Yun’s body shook, her voice was also off pitch.

First supreme elder nodded again.

Zhao Lian Yun breathed intensely, intense joy was in her heart, it slowly oozed out as she felt like fortune had hit her in her head.

But this bliss was too sudden, it was too great, she did not feel any joy, she felt some fear and uneasiness.

She was afraid that everything was fake, she was worried that this was just a dream after she fainted.

Thus, she stared with wide opened eyes, asking first supreme elder nervously: “Why?”

This why contained too many questions.

Why did love Gu choose her?

Why did she become Spirit Affinity House’s fairy?

Why did all this happen?

First supreme elder did not answer her, she sighed deeply as she said slowly: “You must have read <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, among which, one chapter said this.”

Ren Zu obtained love, courage, and betrayal, he was no longer unable to progress due to fear.

He continued to move forward.

On this day, he walked on his road, hearing a voice behind: “Oh Ren Zu, I finally found you. Slow down, wait for me.”

Ren Zu stopped moving, turning around. He saw a snowman running up to him.

“What is it, snowman.” Ren Zu asked curiously.

The snowman said: “Oh Ren Zu, I finally found you. I am the strongest snowman in my tribe, snowmen are said to be afraid of fire, I want to prove that it is untrue. I traveled the world, I have already conquered the bright light glorious ring fire in the sky, the azure divine stone furnace fire in the earth, and the raging wave rising dragon fire in the sea. But I heard that there is a fourth type of fire in this world, called the fire of love. Once it burns, it can turn all life forms in this world into cinders. I do not believe it, I heard that you have just obtained love Gu, thus I wanted to try it.”

“Fire of love?” Ren Zu was surprised, he was hearing it for the first time.

Thus, he called out love Gu, asking: “Oh Gu, oh Gu, can you emit the fire of love?”

Love Gu replied: “I can, and I cannot.”

Ren Zu and the snowman were curious, they asked: “What do you mean by can and cannot?”

Love Gu explained: “I can because I am necessary in order to emit the fire of love. But I cannot, because I alone am not sufficient, two hearts are needed.”

“Two hearts?” The snowman was worried, she took out her heart from her chest.

This heart was huge and tough, it was emitting strong pressure.

The snowman said: “This is my heart of domination, it is a pity that I only have one heart.”

Ren Zu said: “Don’t worry, I have a heart too.”

Ren Zu originally had one heart, but he gave it to hope Gu.

He next obtained a heart of loneliness, self Gu was residing within it.

He also had a heart of discontent.

Thus, right now, he took out the heart of discontent.

The heart of discontent was dry and shriveled, it was small and weak, because this heart had little blood left. Ren Zu had once used almost all of his heart blood in Ordinary Abyss, to grow the grass and trees of achievement.

Love Gu flew into the heart of discontent and flew out, it flew into the heart of domination and flew out again.

It flew into the sky and said: “Alright, you want the fire of love, let these two hearts clash.”

The snowman and Ren Zu took out their respective hearts, putting them together.

Crackle, sparks were created.

The sparks grew rapidly, turning into a blazing flame.

Fire of love!

The fire of love burned on Ren Zu’s heart of discontent, it instantly turned this heart into ashes.

Ren Zu was stunned.

Love Gu said: “Love has a price, it makes people willing to sacrifice.”

The snowman laughed: “Oh Ren Zu, thankfully you have two hearts, otherwise, without a heart, you would die.”

The snowman turned to look at the heart of domination in her hand.

The fire of love enveloped this heart, but this heart shone brighter and brighter.

The snowman was nonchalant: “Oh what, this fire of love only has an impressive appearance, it neither has the heat of bright light glorious ring fire, or the heaviness of azure divine stone furnace fire, or the chaos of raging wave rising dragon fire.”

As she said, she placed the heart of domination into her chest.

Next, her body started bursting out in flames, she started melting like snowflakes under the sun.

She turned pale from shock, she quickly patted and attempted to put out the fire of love.

But the fire of love could not be extinguished.

Eventually, the snowman completely melted, only her heart was left, burning in raging flames.

Ren Zu was extremely shocked, he felt that this snowman was very strong, to think that she would vanish like this.

“The fire of love is so scary.” Ren Zu was shocked.

Love Gu said: “The result of love varies from heart to heart. The heart of the snowman was domination, but you had the heart of discontent, and it was completely burned from the fire. Thus, this was the result. Actually, there are good results that can occur when the fire of love burns.”

The results of love varied, each experience of love was a risk and gamble.

Ren Zu suddenly thought of something, becoming stirred up: “Oh love Gu, you said that love can make people willing to sacrifice. This is wonderful, I will fall in love with the feathermen and make them willing to fly for me, so that they can save my daughter from Ordinary Abyss.”

Right at this moment, a voice could be heard: “Father, father.”

From the burning flames of the heart of domination, a boy jumped out.

He was Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance.

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance jumped into Ren Zu’s arms as he said: “Father, father, so I have a sister as well. I support you, let’s go save sister.”

Ren Zu was extremely overjoyed, he rubbed Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance’s head as he said: “My son, you are so smart and sensible!”

Ren Zu brought Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance and went on a journey again, not long after, they returned to the gathering spot of the feathermen.

Ren Zu took out his heart of loneliness, saying to the feathermen: “Do you all have hearts?”

The feathermen answered: “We all have the heart of freedom.”

Ren Zu laughed: “Then let us fall in love, I have a heart too, as well as love Gu.”

The feathermen shook their heads: “The heart of freedom will be completely burned in the fire of love.”

The process of pursuing love was also the process of losing freedom.

Ren Zu was persistent: “The results of love vary from hearts to hearts. Don’t just look at one heart, my heart of loneliness is part of the process too.”

But no matter how Ren Zu urged, the feathermen would not agree.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1230: Love Gu (2/2)

Ren Zu was helpless, he asked love Gu: “Oh Gu, oh Gu, they don’t want to love me, you have to help me, and ignite the fire of love in our hearts.”

Love Gu sighed: “This is beyond my abilities. I cannot force others to love, no matter what heart, it has to collide on its own free will.”

Ren Zu shook his head: “No, this is a good chance to save my daughter, I cannot give up. Self Gu, I will rely on you.”

Self Gu nodded, using its own strength.

It had once eaten a mouthful of strength Gu, right now, Ren Zu had his own strength.

Thus, these feathermen were all captured by Ren Zu, their hearts to dug out and used to collide with Ren Zu’s heart.

But no matter how they collided, there were no hearts that created the spark of love.

Love Gu sighed: “Oh Ren Zu, forcing others to love is impossible, you will only create hatred.”

As it said that, a Gu worm appeared before Ren Zu.

Ren Zu took a look, it was hatred Gu indeed.

Hatred Gu made all of the feathermen feel hatred.

They shouted: “Oh Ren Zu, you are too much, you are bullying us, we will make you pay the price!”

Thus, these feathermen flew up together, shining worms were flying out of their bodies, they were wild freedom Gu.

The freedom Gu fused together into a gigantic freedom Gu.

This freedom Gu easily took away Ren Zu’s love Gu.

“Henceforth, love is free.” This giant freedom Gu said.

Ren Zu’s self Gu quickly flew out, it wanted to snatch love Gu, but it could not overpower freedom Gu, it only managed to take a bite of love Gu.

Self Gu said angrily: “Love, also belongs to oneself!”

...

After Zhao Lian Yun heard first supreme elder’s words, she was still in a daze.

Stories in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> were widely spread, Zhao Lian Yun had seen them many times in her childhood, but she always thought of them as fictitious tales.

As a matter of fact, she did not expect that this strict granny would talk to her about <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> in such a heavy and serious atmosphere.

Spirit Affinity House’s first supreme elder saw Zhao Lian Yun’s expression and knew that she had never paid close attention to <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

Thus, first supreme elder said: “The love Gu on your shoulder is rank nine, but it has a major flaw.”

“What flaw?” Zhao Lian Yun asked.

“It cannot be refined.” First supreme elder said solemnly.

“What do you mean? Even... Gu Immortals cannot refine it?” Zhao Lian Yun asked.

First supreme elder smiled: “Not to mention Gu Immortals, even rank nine venerables cannot. In history, many venerables have tried. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had attempted to refine this Gu for three years in a row without pause, but he still failed miserably.”

Zhao Lian Yun heard this secret and stared with wide opened eyes.

“So there are things in this world that Immortal Venerables or Demon Venerables cannot do!” She exclaimed.

“Venerables only have the strongest battle strength, invincible in this world. But they are not omnipotent, in the past, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had to ask Long Hair Ancestor for help in terms of Gu refinement, this is an obvious conclusion.” First supreme elder spoke slowly.

“Thus, love Gu cannot be controlled, it is free and nobody can give it orders.” First supreme elder concluded.

“But why did it...” Zhao Lian Yun did not know what to say, she looked at love Gu on her shoulder.

In her vision, love Gu was so dazzling and bright.

First supreme elder said: “This is the acknowledgement of love Gu, this situation is rare, but it has happened quite a number of times before. The last time was Fairy Mo Yao.”

“Why did it acknowledge me?” Zhao Lian Yun was curious.

First supreme elder shook her head: “I am not sure. But our sect has concluded two points. Firstly, a person has to believe in love to gain its acknowledgement, this is the foundation. Secondly, someone’s love has to reach an intense level, the greater your love, the higher the chances of gaining love Gu’s acknowledgement.”

“Is that so?” Zhao Lian Yun blinked as she listened.

She realized, it was because she loved Ma Hong Yun so deeply, even willing to give up her own life, that love Gu came and acknowledged her.

Why did this not happen for Feng Jin Huang?

Because she had no lover.

Love was not familial affection or friendship.

First supreme elder continued: “Precisely because love Gu cannot be controlled, to make use of it, one needs love Gu’s acknowledgement. Thus, there is a rule in our sect since we were created. Anyone who gains love Gu’s acknowledgement, be it female or male, would be our sect’s current generation fairy.”

Zhao Lian Yun blinked: “There are male fairies too?”

First supreme elder smiled: “Our sect has a large proportion of females, but we also have males. Why would we not have them? Look at that tablet in the center, named Sheng Yu Shan, at the bottom right corner, with Qian Yuan Liang, these are all people dedicated to love in our sect’s history.”

“Actually, love Gu has many special effects. For example, it has a different appearance as seen by different people. How does it appear to you now?”

Zhao Lian Yun replied honestly: “Dazzling with multi-colored rainbows.”

First supreme elder nodded: “To my sight, it is grey and unattractive, like a rock by the roadside.”

“How could this be?”

First supreme elder smiled lightly, deep wisdom hidden in her eyes: “I stopped believing in love long ago, thus, love Gu looks like that to me. In the generations of fairies, love Gu has always looked different, some see clear water, some see peach blossoms, there were countless forms that were observed.”

“And also, love Gu has varying effects.”

“Please enlighten me.” Zhao Lian Yun said.

First supreme elder continued: “Normally speaking, a Gu worm, be it mortal or immortal, has only one effect. Like water arrow Gu, it can only shoot water arrows. But love Gu is different, it can be said to have unlimited effects. It can shoot fire, heal, or provide defense for instance.”

Zhao Lian Yun became overjoyed as she listened: “So amazing!”

First supreme elder shook her head: “Love Gu is a rank nine Gu, it is naturally extraordinary. It has unlimited effects, but it cannot be controlled, if you want it to attack, it will bring you to fly away. If you want to defend, it will heal you. Often, when you want it to work, it does absolutely nothing. When you do not want it to activate, it will come out and unleash its might.”

Zhao Lian Yun was a little disheartened, but she soon gathered her spirits: “Even so, it is a rank nine Immortal Gu, any of the effects used must be extraordinary.”

First supreme elder said: “You are right, but you forgot something, strength cannot be gained from nothing, you have to pay a price. Every time love Gu is used, it will take something away from you.”

Zhao Lian Yun was nervous: “What thing?”

“The most common thing is immortal essence. But you are not a Gu Immortal, it might take away your beauty, your eyesight, or your lifespan.” First supreme elder said grimly.

Zhao Lian Yun’s expression was pale, she looked at the love Gu on her shoulder again.

But now, her gaze was very different from before.

“This Immortal Gu might end up accelerating my death? If that is the case, I need to make good use of my time!” Zhao Lian Yun made a resolute decision.

She mustered her spirits, saying to first supreme elder: “Even if I have a pay a big price, I will save Ma Hong Yun. Elder, if I become Spirit Affinity House’s current generation fairy, can I use the sect’s power to return to Northern Plains?”

First supreme elder did not answer Zhao Lian Yun immediately.

She had a complex expression.

A while ago, Heavenly Court’s Duke Long awakened, when news got out, the ten great ancient sects were stirred!

Duke Long was on par with Bo Qing in terms of strength. With just his own power, he created a brand new race, the dragonman.

In other words, he was the ancestor of dragonmen.

He had a legendary life, but his reputation was not high, buried deep in history. Even in the ten great ancient sects, barely anyone knew of him.

Duke Long had great seniority, he was unbelievably old, when he woke up, Fairy Zi Wei immediately gave up her position as leader, handing it to Duke Long.

The other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were all in agreement.

Duke Long used information path methods and understood the situation, he immediately ordered for Zhao Lian Yun to be Spirit Affinity House's current generation fairy.

Not just that, Duke Long even gave Zhao Lian Yun a phantom aperture, turning her into a Gu Immortal. More absurdly, he even ordered the ten great ancient sects to cooperate with Zhao Lian Yun, to bring a team to Northern Plains and save Ma Hong Yun after some time.

The ten great ancient sects were in tumult, but they all obeyed him without objection.

Because of historical reasons, nobody dared to question Duke Long's arrangements regarding love Gu.

Such news were not for Zhao Lian Yun to know about.

First supreme elder also did not want her to know.

Zhao Lian Yun was kneeling before her now, but she had fainted for a few days already. She would not know that the ten great ancient sects were engaged in a contest regarding the huge storm surrounding her.

Zhao Lian Yun saw that first supreme elder did not answer her, she became very nervous. She was afraid that first supreme elder would say no.

But first supreme elder soon said: “Zhao Lian Yun, you are an otherworldly demon who obtained the Thieving Heaven true inheritance. Perhaps you might be one of the most unique fairies in Spirit Affinity House.”

“And maybe because of your special traits...”

“Don't worry, Heavenly Court has been alerted by this, the ten great ancient sects will go ahead and form a team consisting of you as the core, to rescue your lover Ma Hong Yun in Northern Plains.”

“What?!” Zhao Lian Yun stared with wide opened eyes, hearing this, she was extremely joyful and surprised!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1231: Water Path Quasi-Grandmaster

Southern Border, super Gu formation.

Ba Quan Feng looked in Wu clan's direction, wondering discontentedly: “What is going on? This Wu Yi Hai is so patient, he is cultivating in seclusion and not going outside?”

He found it hard to believe.

Wu clan's members usually acted overbearingly, once in a while, they would find trouble with others.

Wu Yi Hai was Wu Yong’s half-brother, he had very high status in Wu clan. But he actually chose to cultivate in seclusion and normally did not interact with Gu Immortals.

Ba De shook his head.

He said solemnly: “Now it seems, this Wu Yi Hai is not simple at all.”

“Or rather, he is even harder to deal with than the rank seven Wu clan Gu Immortal earlier.”

Ba Quan Feng laughed:” How can that be? He is merely a lone cultivator from Eastern Sea.”

Old Treeman Ba De looked at Ba Quan Feng: “If he is only an ordinary lone cultivator, how can he manage this immortal opportunity business so outstandingly? Even if we place pressure on the business, we cannot do anything to Wu Yi Hai.”

“These last days, we have prepared many ways, but this person completely ignored us, facing our taunts, he chose to stay silent and endure it. Such a person is far more dangerous than other Wu clan Gu Immortals.”

Ba Quan Feng’s expression changed, he breathed in deeply: “Lord Old Treeman, even you give him high praise, it seems this person is really outstanding. Why don’t we go and ruin this immortal opportunity business, to force him to act?”

Ba De shook his head: “Impossible, he will definitely not do anything. If we expose this matter, the immortal opportunity business will certainly fall apart since it is not allowed in the first place. But we will not be able to harm Wu Yi Hai, and we will even offend the six other clans with them, all of their animosity will be drawn towards us. By then, Wu Yi Hai would benefit from it and unite them to form an even tighter political force.”

Ba Quan Feng stared with wide opened eyes, bellowing: “Then what do we do?”

“Wait.”

“Wait?”

“Wait for an opportunity.” Old Treeman Ba De said: “The opportunity that we can create right now is small and insignificant. In that case, we wait for a better opportunity in the future.”

Ba Quan Feng gritted his teeth: “Then wouldn’t Wu clan be above us? How long would we need to wait, we might have to wait for a very long time.”

Old Treeman Ba De’s expression turned cold, he no longer spoke, only looking at Ba Quan Feng silently.

Ba Quan Feng felt an immense pressure from his gaze.

He took three steps back, lowering his head as sweat appeared on his forehead: “Lord, I... I...”

“You are too rash Little Feng, these last days, your mental state is not right.” Ba De said slowly.

“Yes, yes lord, I was wrong.” Ba Quan Feng obediently admitted his mistake in an earnest manner.

“Wu clan indeed lost a rank eight Gu Immortal, but they are still a huge force. The other clans are observing Wu clan, but nobody wants to strike first, because we have not uncovered Wu clan’s true foundation yet. If Ba clan is the first to jump out and is met with Wu clan’s iron fist, we would suffer a loss, while the other clans would benefit, do you understand?”

“Yes, I will remember lord’s words.”

“You will stay in seclusion, if Wu Yi Hai does not come out, you will also stay inside.” Ba De said expressionlessly.

“Yes, lord.” Ba Quan Feng had a bitter expression as he acknowledged this, before taking his leave.

Fang Yuan was still inside a dream realm.

The Gu Immortals outside all thought he was undergoing closed cultivation, most Gu Immortals thought that this was Wu Yi Hai’s trait as an Eastern Sea lone cultivator, he had not adjusted his mindset. After all, lone immortals and secluded immortals loved to enter secluded cultivation.

A small portion, including Ba De, thought that Fang Yuan was purposely doing this to deal with their political methods.

But nobody thought that Fang Yuan was secretly exploring the dream realm!

Inside the dream realm, it was now a crucial moment.

Young Master Long had already gained a huge advantage in battle, he laughed at Fang Yuan: “You no longer stand a chance, you cannot win. If you surrender now, you can still save some face.”

Fang Yuan was covered in injuries, he was breathing roughly as he gritted his teeth, not speaking.

This was the seventh scene of the dream realm.

Fang Yuan’s cultivation level was also at rank five.

But Young Master Long was even stronger than him, at rank five peak stage.

Not only that, Young Master Long had many useful Gu worms, and with his dragonman constitution, be it the defense of his dragon scales, or the regenerative properties of his dragon blood, they were on par with rank five Gu worms.

His advantage was too huge!

Be it cultivation level, Gu worms, or his own human body, Fang Yuan was suppressed heavily by Young Master Long.

It was already a huge surprise to the spectators in the dream realm that the fight lasted this long.

In their opinion, even though Fang Yuan’s spirit was commendable, this battle’s result was already decided.

“Now, you have less than five percent of your primeval essence, let’s see how you block my attack!” Young Master Long shouted as he pounced at Fang Yuan.

Even though Fang Yuan was in a bad state, his gaze was very clear, as he counted down in his head.

After several failed explorations, he had already learned that he did not need to defeat Young Master Long in this battle, he needed to stall for time, he needed sufficient time.

Once time was up, a chance would occur.

“Seven breaths of time left. This time, I should give it a try, immortal killer move — Unravel Dream!” Fang Yuan called out in his mind.

Ping.

Young Master Long, who was approaching imposingly and arrogantly as he took large steps towards Fang Yuan, suddenly fell face down on the ground, after tripping over a rock.

The entire arena turned silent.

All of the female Gu Masters who were cheering for Young Master Long since the start of the battle went quiet.

“How could I make such a mistake?!” Young Master Long had a jade-like appearance, but his face was flushing red as he turned angry from shame.

He quickly got up, shouting as he charged at Fang Yuan again.

Fang Yuan could only barely stand now, his injuries were too severe.

He was simply waiting for his defeat, the entire place started cheering for Young Master Long again.

“Go, Young Master Long! Defeat this overconfident challenger!”

“Ah, I will remember this scene in my heart. Young Master Long is so charming, if only I could stand beside him, that would be great.”

“If he could talk to me, I would be satisfied in this life.”

The male Gu Masters were roaring, the female Gu Masters were calling out while cupping their hands or holding their faces.

Immortal killer move — Unravel Dream!

Fang Yuan could only use this again, because he could no longer put up a fight in this battle.

Whoosh.

A soft sound echoed.

Young Master Long’s movement paused.

He was taking large steps, and was ready to win the battle, but now, an unexpected accident occurred again.

Maybe because he took steps that were too large, or maybe his clothes were torn in the fight earlier, but now, his pants entirely ripped.

Wind blew, young master Long felt a chill in his crotch.

The entire place went silent.

Even Fang Yuan was surprised, thinking: “The effect of unravel dream currently is really quite peculiar.”

“Ah—!” Suddenly, female Gu Masters screamed.

The place went into a clamor.

“What is happening?”

“Hahahaha!”

“Young Master Long’s pants ripped.”

“So Young Master Long does not wear underwear.”

The male Gu Masters were watching with interest while the female Gu Masters were covering their faces, using the gaps between their fingers to continue watching secretly.

But the view was quite disappointing.

“So Young Master Long’s.... is this small.”

Young Master Long: “...”

His body was shaking intensely, his face was completely red, veins were popping on his forehead, his expression was extremely scary and malicious.

“Ahhhh! I will kill you!!” The shame in his heart was driving Young Master Long crazy, he pounced at Fang Yuan ferociously.

However, Fang Yuan smiled like a winner.

At the next moment, seven breaths of time had passed.

Plop.

With a soft sound, Young Master Long’s entire body self-detonated.

His dragon blood splattered on Fang Yuan’s face.

The entire place went into a commotion.

“Young, Young Master Long!”

“Why did this happen?!” Several female Gu Masters fainted on the spot.

“Did Young Master Long kill himself due to the shame and embarrassment?”

“It must be him.” A Gu Master pointed at Fang Yuan: “He must have used some evil method to kill Young Master Long. He is a blood path demon!”

Boom boom boom.

At the next moment, the spectating dragonmen all self-detonated one after another.

At once, blood splattered all over the place, the surviving Gu Masters were in chaos.

Fang Yuan blinked, worried that these people would bring problems to him, but suddenly, the dream realm transformed as a new scene appeared.

“Puff, this seventh scene is finally over.” Fang Yuan let out a breath.

He had been stuck at this seventh scene for three days. According to the special trait of the dream realm, he had to go through scene by scene, otherwise, he would need to repeat it endlessly.

A moment later, Fang Yuan left the dream realm after failing the eighth scene.

After regaining his senses, he treated his injuries.

The dream realm caused severe damage to the soul.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan’s soul foundation was outstanding, and with guts Gu, these injuries were no problem.

More than ten breaths later, Fang Yuan’s soul was as good as before.

Next, he inspected his gains.

“Hmm, not bad, my water path attainment level has already reached quasi-grandmaster.”

Fang Yuan’s water path attainment level was originally ordinary, it was not even master level. But the main character of this dream realm was a water path cultivator.

By the time Fang Yuan got to the seventh scene, his water path attainment level went from ordinary to master, after he passed the seventh scene, it became extremely close to grandmaster.

“It seems that the protagonist of this dream realm had very high achievements, they were definitely higher than rank six.”

“Now that I have water path attainment level, I can annex most of those blessed lands inside City Well, in Eastern Sea. Wonderful, wonderful!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1232: Body Refinement

“However, the mortal Gu for unravel dream were expended greatly. Right now, I can use less than ten unravel dreams.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan frowned lightly.

This was a problem.

Unravel dream was very effective, but the expenditure of dream path mortal Gu was huge.

And because these dream path mortal Gu were all refined by Fang Yuan solely, he could not raise their production.

Give these dream path Gu recipes to Lang Ya Sect and get the hairy man Gu Immortals to refine Gu for him?

Fang Yuan did not even consider this.

At this time period, the value of these dream path mortal Gu was higher than Immortal Gu!

Of course, Fang Yuan believed that Lang Ya land spirit could afford to pay this, but there was no absolute secret in this world, if it was exposed, the impact would be too big.

Fang Yuan was at the peak of the five regions in terms of dream realm exploration, if these dream path mortal Gu recipes were known to others, his advantage would be gone.

This was what Fang Yuan did not want to see.

Thus, he would rather refine them himself, even though the production was lower, he had to keep it strictly to himself. As long as he did not expose it, who would know?

“I cannot get others to help, but I can make use of things like spring dream fruit trees to raise the efficiency of my dream path mortal Gu refinement.” Fang Yuan thought of the spring dream fruit tree again.

Spring dream fruit trees were a very special type of plant.

It existed in dreams and did not have solid form. But it needed a real living tree as its foundation to survive.

Fang Yuan knew of one spring dream fruit tree, it was at the base of a nameless mountain in Central Continent.

This volcano erupted every several hundred years, the large amounts of volcanic ash created fertile soil in the surroundings. Thus, many people lived there.

Fang Yuan had once harvested the fruits of this spring dream fruit tree, they helped him greatly.

But Fang Yuan could not transplant this spring dream fruit tree.

The spring dream fruit tree at the base of the volcano was residing with a thousand year fire date tree. If Fang Yuan moved it, the spring dream fruit tree would be destroyed.

And Central Continent was a lions’ den to Fang Yuan now, he could not go there.

Familiar face could allow him to disguise himself, but he could not avoid wisdom path Gu Immortals’ deductions. Dark limit Immortal Gu could help him, but it was only rank six, that was not enough.

Fang Yuan could not solve this problem currently, it was out of his abilities.

And he also could not find a second spring dream fruit tree, he had no such methods, he could only give up.

After resting for a while, Fang Yuan did not rush into the dream realm.

He needed to deduce the eighth scene.

He was a wisdom path grandmaster, deducing things in advance could help him to explore the dream realm.

This was his advantage, he obviously made use of it.

In terms of wisdom path, he did not lack attainment level, but Immortal Gu instead. Unravel Mystery was his only wisdom path Immortal Gu, it was alone without any accompanying wisdom path killer moves, thus, Unravel Mystery had little use.

Right now, Fang Yuan was barely making use of it.

In terms of wisdom path, he was not focusing on developing it currently, so Fang Yuan was keeping things in this state.

Deductions were not just for dream realm, but also Fang Yuan’s current environment and situation.

“If I guessed correctly, Ba clan is my biggest enemy. Earlier, they looked for many ways to find trouble with me but I solved it all, now it seems that they want to observe on the sidelines.”

Ba clan’s passive state was making Fang Yuan feel wary.

If they did not do anything, Fang Yuan would not know what they were thinking, preparing, or scheming. If they took action, Fang Yuan could sense their plan and deal with it, resolving whatever problems they sent to him.

“All in all, the situation is quite good, Wu Yi Hai’s identity is really useful now.”

“The weakness of the immortal opportunity business was no longer an issue after my arrangement, it became a scheme displayed right in front of me. Maybe I can trap some stupid Gu Immortals?”

After all, wisdom path Gu Immortals were few in numbers.

Even if there were wisdom path Gu Immortals, they might not be righteous, if they did not know the rules of the righteous path, it was impossible.

As for Wu An or Wu Liao, they were doing their work properly, Fang Yuan did not have to bother with them.

Wu Liao had come to report some matters to Fang Yuan earlier, but Fang Yuan was determined to leave the work to them, he said that he was not to be bothered unless there were major matters.

Wu Liao was extremely disappointed, thinking that Fang Yuan was the same as the previous rank seven, his attitude towards Fang Yuan turned cold.

Fang Yuan sensed this easily but ignored it.

This giant dream realm was expanding slowly at all times.

When Fang Yuan secretly explored it, the dream realm would shrink, but to the entire dream realm, it was just a small portion, it only would slow down the speed of the dream realm’s expansion.

He could easily conceal it.

Those demonic path and lone immortals who explored the dream realm through the immortal opportunity business were Fang Yuan’s greatest concealment.

These people usually met with difficulties in the dream realm, but there were one or two of them who could bring out dream path materials even though they failed the exploration.

These dream path materials could naturally refine dream path Gu worms.

These Gu Immortals treated them like treasure, even though only a small number had gains, the remaining Gu Immortals were extremely excited.

The righteous path clans were also secretly purchasing the Gu materials from these Gu Immortals.

Wu clan was no exception.

However, the Gu Immortals who gained dream path Gu materials rarely chose to sell them, they kept them as valuables.

Wu clan only purchased around ten Gu materials, Fang Yuan did not dare to touch these materials, Wu clan was keeping a close eye on them.

After resting for a while, Fang Yuan went into the dream realm.

It was not the giant dream realm, but his own dream.

To get dream path Gu materials, one's own dream realm was the best and safest option.

Unfortunately, these Gu Immortals did not know that.

Southern Border, Bai Xiang grotto-heaven.

At the center of a huge Gu formation, Bai Ning Bing sat down with difficulty.

Bai Xiang heavenly spirit was in the air, manipulating the Gu formation.

The Gu formation operated silently, multi-colored lights were flickering from time to time, gathering in a stream, or splitting up like flowers, flying around aimlessly.

Bai Ning Bing had a pale expression, but his aura was much more stable than before.

This was because the Gu formation was enduring a portion of the pressure for him. He used his body to contain the raging wave rising dragon fire, it was truly too reckless, his life was on the line.

“Next is the most important step, we will target the raging wave rising dragon fire in your body!” Bai Xiang heavenly spirit had a solemn expression: “Young master, you need to persevere and be completely focused, you need to coordinate with the Gu formation and suppress the raging wave rising dragon fire. The entire process will take forty-nine days. During that period, you will not get any rest, if I do not say stop, it would not have ended yet. Even at the final moment, if you lose concentration, you will die for sure.”

Bai Ning Bing's eyes were seeing stars, he felt dizzy, almost unable to sit properly.

In this situation, not to mention forty-nine days, he would not even last half a day.

In this critical junction, his lips curled up, he was smiling.

“Hehehe, this is so fun.”

“According to my current condition, this is an impossible task...”

“This can test the true limits of my body.”

“Even if I die like this, it is very interesting!”

His body was tired, but he was very energetic in his mind.

Breathing in deeply, Bai Ning Bing called out to Bai Xiang heavenly spirit: “Why are you waiting, aren’t you going to start?”

Bai Xiang heavenly spirit smiled as he thought: “I had waited so long for this young master to arrive, he seems to be quite capable, he has no fear towards death.”

Thinking so, Bai Xiang heavenly spirit activated the Gu formation.

Boom!

At the next moment, brilliant lights burst out of the Gu formation, spreading over the entire place.

“Ah—!” Bai Ning Bing screamed as he raised his head.

A huge flame burst out of his eyes, nose, mouth, and ears.

Raging flames spread over his body, turning Bai Ning Bing into a human shaped fire pillar.

Pain, pain, pain!

Bai Ning Bing was someone who would not frown even if he was heavily injured, but now, he had no such composure, he screamed loudly in pain.

Simply because the pain was too intense, he had to do this to vent the anguish.

Bai Ning Bing was originally expecting the pain of a burning fire. But in fact, it was not like this.

While screaming, he realized something: This humans alike dragons Gu refinement method not only targeted the raging wave rising dragon fire but Bai Ning Bing himself. Be it his body or soul, or the dao marks in his body, they were all melted and separated under the humans alike dragons Gu refinement method.

This was the same as processing Bai Ning Bing as an immortal material, the pain was simply too immense to describe.

“Hang on, hang on!” Bai Xiang heavenly spirit screamed anxiously.

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes already had turned over to show the whites, the intense pain sent him into despair, he was in a state of being close to unconsciousness.

If he fainted, at that very moment, he would be burnt to a crisp by the raging dragon fire!

Northern Plains, Snowy Mountain first peak.

Ma Hong Yun was also screaming.

“Ahhhh!” The veins on his neck were popping.

Intense lightning danced in his body, Ma Hong Yun’s body was shaking intensely, he seemed to be spasming or dancing frantically.

After a moment, the lightning faded, as Ma Hong Yun breathed roughly with sweat pouring out of his pores, he did not have any strength left.

“Failed again?” Lady Wan Shou frowned, feeling slightly angry.

Ma Hong Yun had already been lightning refined countless times, even though he suffered each time, he did not lack any limbs, he was still intact. Furthermore, his cultivation level had risen to rank five peak stage.

This made Lady Wan Shou speechless.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1233: Gathering of Central Continent Gu Immortals

Central Continent.

In a certain village.

Rumble!

Intense rumbling was occurring on the mountain.

An endless amount of rocks and soil were falling down the mountain grandly like an avalanche.

“Quickly escape for our lives!”

“I am going to die, I am going to die...”

“Father, where are you, don’t leave me behind!”

Seeing the disaster unfold, the peaceful village exploded into complete chaos.

Countless people were scurrying around in a frenzy, some were lying on the ground in despair, children were crying as mothers held onto them, many had given up resisting.

In a situation without anyone noticing, a figure was floating in the sky.

It was a rank seven Gu Immortal.

He was dressed in a silky blue robe, his long hair extended to his shoulder, he was not brawny, but rather delicate looking.

At this moment, he was frowning, muttering as he looked at the mud flow: “This mud flow is very strange.”

Normally speaking, before the mud flow there would be huge rain, but now, the weather was sunny.

The truth was, the environment of the surrounding tens of thousands of li had been secretly modified by the rank seven Gu Immortal, he could ensure a proper amount of rain and sun to gain plentiful harvests yearly.

Plop.

Mountain rocks suddenly burst apart, as a huge brass shell appeared from underneath.

The rank seven Gu Immortal with a blue robe floated in the sky, looking at this extremely eye-catching scene.

He frowned slightly, before it eased: “Oh. So it’s a swamp crab.”

The swamp crab was a desolate beast, its body was covered in a hard shell, its eyes had vanished due to evolution, it had no weaknesses left.

It was the king of the swamp among desolate beasts.

The ten pairs of claws were extraordinarily firm, the first pair of pincers was more fearsome than steel poles, a pair of pincers that could break mountain rocks or cut a flood dragon in half! Its remaining eighteen claws, although thinner than the first pair, they were still thicker than hundred year old trees.

The blue robed rank seven Gu Immortal saw this swamp crab and his eyes shone, feeling pleased.

He was a water path Gu Immortal, this swamp crab had both earth path and water path dao marks. Killing it would give this blue robed rank seven Gu Immortal a lot of usable immortal materials.

“But the swamp crab is only a desolate beast, if I nurture it well, it might grow into the ancient desolate beast muddy swamp crab, and above that, there is the mud coat swamp crab. The mud coat swamp crab is an immemorial desolate beast, I can stop dreaming about it. My immortal aperture blessed land cannot nurture an immemorial desolate beast, but I can try to get a muddy swamp crab.”

Thinking of this, the blue robed rank seven Gu Immortal attacked.

He extended his hand out of his wide sleeves.

His skin was pale, and his fingers were slim.

His ten fingers moved around elegantly, they were covered in layers of multi-colored lights.

This was his special method to manipulate Gu worms!

Soon, countless Gu worm auras rose in his body, there were mortal Gu and also Immortal Gu, different auras weaved together, creating a complex aura that spread everywhere.

The swamp crab in the mountain had no eyes, but using its wild beast instinct, it acutely sensed the threat in the air.

The swamp crab started to go back inside the mountain.

Its huge brass shell had already half sunken into it.

But at this moment, the blue robed rank seven Gu Immortal finished his preparations, his immortal killer move was unleashed!

Rumble...

Blue waves resembling the tides of the sea appeared out of nowhere, crashing towards the swamp crab.

The swamp crab was huge, it could not dodge, it was swept by the waves.

But even with the ebb and flow, the swamp crab did not move, its body was too heavy.

The blue robed rank seven Gu Immortal’s lips curled with a confident smile of victory, his ten fingers moved rapidly, only the afterimages of his fingers could be seen, it was a dazzling sight.

His immortal killer move was not ordinary.

As his red date immortal essence continued to be consumed, the light blue waves turned into dark blue waves, the waves got stronger and were three times as powerful as before.

A deep spiral was formed in the water under the blue robed rank seven Gu Immortal’s skillful manipulation.

The swamp crab was in the middle of the spiral, it could not put up resistance, it was swept by the spiral.

Swish swish swish!

The swamp crab’s heavy body started to move quickly in the spiral, like a piece of seaweed, it could not help itself.

The blue robed rank seven Gu Immortal made a grabbing motion with his hands, as countless shadows of fingers dissipated in the sky, the tides expanded and rose into a torrential tsunami.

Boom!

With a huge sound, a gigantic tide of water crashed onto the swamp crab’s back.

The swamp crab’s shell was very hard, but with the impact of the tsunami, a huge dent was formed on the smooth shell.

The swamp crab did not move, it had fainted on the spot.

The blue robed rank seven Gu Immortal laughed heartily, he spread out the fingers on his right hand, as he raised his index finger.

A gush of water shot up from the tides like a geyser, dragging the swamp crab’s body towards the blue robed rank seven Gu Immortal.

The Gu Immortal opened his immortal aperture’s entrance, storing this swamp crab.

“Immortal! It is an immortal!!”

“Thank you lord immortal, you saved our entire village.”

“This immortal even defeated the crab monster in the mountain!”

Such a grand battle shocked the mortals in the village intensely.

Only after the battle was over, they reacted and shouted in joy, kowtowing to him.

The blue robed rank seven Gu Immortal closed his immortal aperture’s entrance, he smiled lightly as he looked at the people below.

It turned out that while fighting the swamp crab, he had placed a part of his concentration in manipulating the waves to sweep away all of the falling rocks and mud.

“As expected indeed of the famous water path Gu Immortal in Central Continent, Mu Ling Lan.” At this time, a voice came from the clouds.

The blue robed rank seven Gu Immortal moved all ten fingers as he stored away all of the water that was flooding the place.

Next, he flew into the clouds and met with another Gu Immortal.

This immortal wore a blue robe and had a square face, he had thick eyebrows and a tall nose bridge, he was emanating an aura of righteousness that could not be violated.

Mu Ling Lan smiled as he greeted: “So Senior Shi Ge has arrived.”

Shi Ge returned the greeting: “I just arrived, to think that I would get to see your method of subduing the swamp crab.”

Mu Ling Lan waved his hand, saying humbly: “My methods are just small tricks from your perspective. But, Senior Shi Ge, I hear you have also gotten orders from Heavenly Court to join this Northern Plains battle?”

Shi Ge nodded: “That’s right, Mu Ling Lan, you are also in the list of names, why don’t we travel together.”

Mu Ling Lan had an appreciative expression: “It is my honor to travel with senior.”

Thus, the two immortals traveled together.

The mortals were left behind, looking at the sky as they sighed in amazement.

Mu Ling Lan and Shi Ge spoke along the way, they were not silent.

Even though both were rank seven, Shi Ge was higher in seniority, having passed two grand tribulations, while Mu Ling Lan was still not at the first grand tribulation. Thus, Mu Ling Lan was seeking advice while Shi Ge taught him some things.

Along the way, Shi Ge suddenly descended as he floated in the air and waited.

Mu Ling Lan did not understand, this was not the gathering point.

Shi Ge smiled: “Pardon me, I have a son called Zheng Yi, he had recently passed his ascension tribulation and become a Gu Immortal. But he lacks experience and is still very childish. I intend to bring him along in this Northern Plains trip to train him.”

“So that’s it.” Mu Ling Lan realized, looking towards the direction that Shi Ge was gazing at.

Under the cloud cover, there was a small city.

There were many buildings in the city, in one restaurant, a storyteller was talking about folklore regarding justice and heroism.

“Good, good kill!” Among the guests, one young lad with thick eyebrows was dressed like a farmer with innocent eyes. Hearing the story of the main character killing the rich and helping the poor, he clapped in happiness.

His screaming was loud and caused the curtains to shake slightly.

The storyteller was shocked as he paused.

The surrounding guests were all unhappily muttering: “Why are you screaming?”

“Screaming all of a sudden, you’ll scare us to death.”

“Why are you screaming, listen to the story quietly, or we will chase you away, little peasant.”

The young lad was flushing red, he scratched his head and he looked around in embarrassment: “Sorry, sorry everyone.”

The guests heard his polite apology and their clamoring became softer, they no longer bothered about it.

The young lad sat down slowly but suddenly his expression changed, he stood up as the table and chairs around him were pushed away, causing an even bigger commotion.

“What now, you lad!”

“Hey lad, are you asking for a beating!!”

The guests were furious, but suddenly, the young man’s body shone with light as he shot out of the building like an arrow, tearing a hole in the window as he flew to the sky.

The restaurant went into chaos, countless people were shouting in panic.

The young lad came before Shi Ge and Mu Ling Lan as he cupped his fists, greeting politely.

He was Shi Ge’s son — Shi Zheng Yi 1 .

The three immortals continued on their journey, a few days later, they arrived at a mountain range.

An Immortal Gu House was stationed here.

It was a pavilion, exquisite and small, there were countless bird cages hanging on it, as birds chirped continuously.

This was an Immortal Gu House of Heavenly Lotus Sect, Canary Pavilion.

Shi Ge saw this and nodded slightly: “I have long since heard that Immortal Gu Houses would be sent out to attack Northern Plains. To think that this is Heavenly Lotus Sect’s Canary Pavilion, this pavilion specializes in capturing flying beasts, it can move quickly, it is a good choice.”

Mu Ling Lan added: “Heavenly Lotus Sect was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, it owns the highest number of Immortal Gu Houses, it makes sense that Heavenly Lotus Sect could send out an Immortal Gu House.”

Shi Zheng Yi asked in confusion: “Heavenly Lotus Sect has Canary Pavilion, Yue Yang Palace, and Heavenly Pool, is there a fourth Immortal Gu House?”

Mu Ling Lan smiled: “Little Yi, you might not know, recently, Heavenly Lotus Sect created its fourth Immortal Gu House, but it was kept secret.”

Shi Zheng Yi heard this and thought: “Senior Mu Ling Lan is from Spirit Butterfly Valley, this sect is most skilled in information path, it is not strange that he knows some secrets. But Heavenly Lotus Sect has four Immortal Gu Houses now, it is truly shocking.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1234: Rank Ten Immortal Gu!

Central Continent, Spirit Affinity House.

“Immortal killer move — Meteor Rain!” Zhao Lian Yun called out, a bright light bursting out of her body.

This light flew out of her body, in the blink of an eye, it entered the sky, vanishing.

At the next moment, the pale white space created by a Gu formation seemed to be covered in blue ink, turning deep blue.

Swish swish swish...

Countless meteors were falling from the sky, raining down like a storm of arrows, it was a majestic sight!

The meteors rained down on a hill-like desolate beast tortoise.

The tortoise’s four limbs and head retracted into its shell.

Meteors landed on the desolate beast tortoise’s back, fragments were created in large numbers, but the remaining meteor rain landed around the desolate beast tortoise, creating huge pits encircling the tortoise.

The meteor rain lasted twenty breaths of time until it stopped.

Zhao Lian Yun was covered in sweat, she was breathing roughly.

A voice came from within the Gu formation: “Not bad, Zhao Lian Yun, you are very proficient in meteor rain already. Next, go train your defensive killer move.”

As this was said, the desolate beast tortoise broke apart and turned into black crows.

There were tens of thousands of crows.

They were like black arrows, flying around as they shot towards Zhao Lian Yun.

Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes shone, she gritted her teeth as she used her defensive Immortal Gu before the crows hit her.

Suddenly, her body was covered in a layer of silver light.

The layer of thin silvery light successfully protected her from the impact and beaks of the countless crows.

Splat splat splat...

Zhao Lian Yun's tiny little body was soon covered entirely by the black crows.

Large numbers of crows were attacking the silver shield, loud crisp sound were resounding endlessly.

Zhao Lian Yun had a heavy expression.

She could feel her immortal essence expending rapidly.

"I have to think of a plan!" Zhao Lian Yun had an idea as she started using a defensive killer move.

At her first try, she successfully activated the defensive killer move.

Immortal killer move — Life Locking Silver Chain.

From the silver shield around her body, six silvery chains flew out.

The chains moved like dragons, they were extraordinary as they flew around in the crow group, stabbing and killing endlessly.

Many crows died, soon, in the ten li of space around Zhao Lian Yun, no crows were alive.

The silver chains also turned into a round cylinder, protecting Zhao Lian Yun, forming a tight defense. Any attacking crow would be ripped to shreds.

"This immortal killer move is amazing, it can attack and defend at once." It had incredible effect in this first battle, Zhao Lian Yun was extremely pleased.

The Gu Immortal controlling the Gu formation sighed internally: "This Zhao Lian Yun is an otherworldly demon indeed, her cultivation level was raised to rank five peak stage using relic Gu. After being given a phantom aperture, Immortal Gu, and immortal essence by Heavenly Court, she immediately showed her talent. Her battle talent is not weak at all, after so little practice with her immortal killer moves, she became proficient already."

Of course, these immortal killer moves were specially chosen for Zhao Lian Yun by Heavenly Court. They were very powerful and easy to control, they also used few Gu worms, the steps for activating them were simple.

"Alright, next, we will train your healing methods. you will get injured, but don't worry or panic, as long as you perform normally and use your immortal killer move, you will recover." The Gu Immortal controlling the Gu formation said.

Zhao Lian Yun nodded, seeing the crows vanish around her.

There was worry in her expression as she asked: "I have already trained for half a year in this Gu formation, when can I set off to Northern Plains for the rescue mission?"

The Gu Immortal controlling the Gu formation explained: "Don't worry, this is a time path Gu formation, a day outside is a year in here. Your time is very tight, battles between Gu Immortals are not just affected by training, there are also many situations that can occur in actual combat."

"Then give me some actual combat training!" Zhao Lian Yun shouted.

This time path super Gu formation was placed in Spirit Affinity House.

But everything inside was observed by Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei watched Zhao Lian Yun start her combat training as worry appeared on her face: “Lord Duke Long, do you really think that such training will allow Zhao Lian Yun to adapt to the battlefield? This is too rushed, her battle strength cannot be relied on.”

Even though he drank half a kilogram of true dragon heavenly water, it only managed to save Duke Long’s life, barely.

He was still very old and weak.

Right now, he was sitting in front of Fairy Zi Wei, there was a chessboard between them.

This chessboard had a huge origin, it was an Immortal Gu House personally created by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable — Star Constellation Chessboard, it most excelled in wisdom path deductions, it was the number one wisdom path Immortal Gu House!

Fairy Zi Wei was not qualified enough, but after Duke Long woke up, he immediately took out this legendary Immortal Gu House from Heavenly Court’s treasury and gave it to Fairy Zi Wei, allowing her deduction capability to reach a terrifying level.

Hearing Fairy Zi Wei’s doubts, Duke Long smiled lightly: “We cannot depend on Zhao Lian Yun, but I am not depending on her anyway.”

Fairy Zi Wei’s gaze shined: “Lord Duke Long is counting on love Gu.”

“That’s right.” Duke Long nodded: “Love Gu is very unique, even among rank nine Immortal Gu, it is extremely special. Most Immortal Gu have only one effect, one type of ability. But love Gu is the opposite, it can unleash all sorts of effects and expend a variety of resources beyond immortal essence. Most importantly, the power of love can resist fate and luck.”

“Resist fate and luck?” Fairy Zi Wei muttered, slightly shocked.

“That’s right, love can resist fate to an extent. If not for that, how could Red Lotus Demon Venerable damage fate Immortal Gu back then?” Duke Long exposed some shocking secrets, when he mentioned Red Lotus Demon Venerable, he had a solemn tone and complex expression.

Fairy Zi Wei was slightly shocked: “What? Back then, did Red, Red Lotus Demon Venerable obtain the acknowledgement of love Gu as well?”

“Precisely.” Duke Long confirmed this: “Red Lotus was not an otherworldly demon, how could he have damaged Fate. It was because love Immortal Gu was with him, allowing him to damage fate Immortal Gu in the end.”

“After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Zombie Alliance was wiped out, only a few Shadow Sect members are left, and Spectral Soul is trapped inside the giant dream realm. So many fate escapees have been destroyed, this allowed the repairing of fate Immortal Gu to be much easier than before.”

Speaking until this point, Duke Long needed to catch his breath, after resting for a while, he continued: “However, even if fate Immortal Gu is repaired completely, our Heavenly Court cannot regain its former glory.”

“This... is because of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable?” Fairy Zi Wei deduced and got an answer immediately.

Duke Long breathed in deeply: “Yes, because after Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, luck path appeared in the five regions. In the past, Fate was unchangeable, as long as we repaired fate, Heavenly Court would return to the apex again. But now, we have luck path. Fate is certain while luck is uncertain, good luck is a positive uncertainty for oneself while bad luck is a negative uncertainty for oneself.”

“Even if we repair fate Immortal Gu completely, we can only control certainty, we cannot control the uncertainty. Only by controlling luck path as well, can we allow Heavenly Court to rule the five regions and two heavens completely.”

“Thus, Lord Duke Long, you gave an order to gather elite Gu Immortals of all ten great ancient sects to go to Northern Plains, in order to snatch fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu. If we get Fortune Rivalling Heaven, will Heavenly Court be able to control luck?” Fairy Zi Wei asked.

Duke Long nodded before shaking his head: “Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s entire life of cultivation had three stages, self luck, all living being’s luck, and heaven and earth luck. Fortune Rivalling Heaven is the apex of all living being’s luck. Its true effect is to allow the possessor to continuously absorb the luck of all lifeforms around them.”

“Like right now, looking at Ma Hong Yun, fortune rivalling heaven Gu’s effect is related to the people near him. It continues to absorb their luck, collecting them on Ma Hong Yun, that is why Xue Hu and Lady Wan Shou continue to fail. Especially in refining a rank eight Immortal Gu, the chances are simply too low.”

“Fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu might be rank eight, but it actually has quasi-rank nine power. With enough time, and if the affected individuals have enough luck, fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu would be able to absorb even more luck and gather it into one person. This is also why Giant Sun Immortal Venerable named it Fortune Rivalling Heaven. The meaning was: by absorbing the luck of all living beings, and gathering it into one person, supreme luck that rivals heaven and earth would be born!”

“So that’s it.” Hearing Duke Long’s detailed explanation, Fairy Zi Wei had a realization.

Even though Duke Long was from the Olden Antiquity Era, over the process of his hibernation, he had woken up several times, he knew many precious lost secrets.

Duke Long continued: “If we can obtain Fortune Rivalling Heaven now, we would gain the accumulations in cultivation of half of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s life.”

“In the future, if we have the chance, we can search for heaven and earth luck and self luck, to control all of these luck path Immortal Gu, including Fortune Rivalling Heaven.”

“When fate Gu is repaired, Heavenly Court will reign supreme in the world.”

“If we have a chance to go further and refine the luck path Immortal Gu with fate Immortal Gu, we might be able to create the legendary rank ten Immortal Gu — Destiny! By then, Heavenly Court will understand the complete profundity of heaven’s will, we will act in the capacity of heaven, we will become the eternal rulers of the universe!!”

Duke Long spoke softly, but towards the end, his eyes were shining, he showed a fanatical and heated gaze.

“Rank ten Immortal Gu?” Even a Gu Immortal at Fairy Zi Wei’s level was tongue-tied upon hearing such secrets.

“Above rank nine, there really is rank ten realm?” Fairy Zi Wei asked in complete shock and disbelief.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1235: Blood Competition Ends

Duke Long sighed: “I cannot tell you if there is a rank ten Gu Immortal realm. But rank ten Immortal Gu likely can exist. Because this was confirmed by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable himself.”

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was the rank nine venerable after Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. He was kind and merciful, he did not dispute with people and loved peace, but like Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he did not truly enter Heavenly Court.

There were only three Immortal Venerables who truly entered Heavenly Court and fused their immortal apertures into Heavenly Court.

From the start of history, they were respectively, the first rank nine venerable, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, the creator of wisdom path, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, as well as the creator of wood path and the owner of Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable.

Northern Plains.

The blood battle martial competition was having its final battle.

Chu Du walked onto the stage and said: “I am honored.”

In front of him was a female immortal. She was clad in dazzling palace attire with the lower hems touching the ground, her black hair was tied up high with jade and gold ornaments. Her skin was snow white, her brows slender, her gaze sharp, and her chest was voluptuous and perky. She looked stately and beautiful, giving a feeling that she could not be offended.

It was Gong Wan Ting.

Prince Feng Xian’s wife.

Gong Wan Ting had a solemn expression as she sighed lightly: “Domination Immortal, you live up to your reputation, you defeated Liu Zhuan Shen and Yao Yuan Ying consecutively. Regardless of the result of this battle, the reputation of Domination Immortal will spread in Northern Plains.”

Liu Zhuan Shen and Yao Yuan Ying, who were mentioned, had pale expressions, there was no choice, Chu Du was stronger than them.

All in all, the blood battle martial competition was about to end with the Huang

Jin tribes suppressing Chu Sect and Bai Zu tribe’s alliance.

But towards the end, Chu Du took the stage, giving a slap to the righteous path allied forces.

The power of Domination Immortal struck wariness in these Huang Jin bloodline Gu Immortals.

This was the final battle, without any other options, Gong Wan Ting stepped forward.

This was a battle between the leaders of both sides!

“Please.” Chu Du was very gentlemanly, even though he was injured, he did not panic.

Surprise flashed in Gong Wan Ting’s eyes as she smiled: “Domination Immortal is truly brave and heroic.”

Saying this, a purple light shot towards Chu Du like a blade or sword.

Chu Du shouted, moving ahead instead, charging towards Gong Wan Ting bravely.

An intense battle shook heaven and earth.

The two sides exchanged moves after moves, and after a hundred rounds, there was no victor.

They fought on both the ground and in the sky, the Blood Plain was almost completely destroyed.

The spectating immortals had to move back by thirty thousand li to avoid getting involved in Chu Du and Gong Wan Ting’s battle.

Chu Du’s might was unstoppable, he attacked more than he defended, while Gong Wan Ting did the opposite with much energy to spare.

This intense battle lasted for another hundred rounds, Chu Du was covered in injuries, blood spewed out of him, but Gong Wan Ting was also no longer as relaxed, her gaze was sweeping over Chu Du, preventing him from attacking her suddenly, she did not dare to be careless.

The Gu Immortal spectators were all moved, they quickly commented on this intense battle, it was the clash of two experts at the peak of rank seven. Without rank eight Gu Immortals interfering, these two would not be surpassed by Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world for several hundred years.

The sun set, the moon rose, from morning to night, the victor was still not decided.

Battling intensely without stop, it was truly heated.

By the dawn of the second day, both sides were much weakened, the battle was at its end, victory could be decided at the next moment.

The Gu Immortal spectators held their breaths as they watched the ending of this battle.

But right at this moment, a grand pillar of light descended and separated Chu Du and Gong Wan Ting, who were fighting fiercely.

“That is enough, this battle will end in a draw.” Rank eight Gu Immortal Yao

Huang showed himself in the air.

He looked away as he said: “Does Heavenly Lord agree with me?”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu appeared from a cloud layer, nodding: “We will fight in the sky.”

Saying this, both rank eight Gu Immortals flew up into white heaven under everyone’s watchful gazes.

Soon, the immortals in Blood Plain could hear intense explosions coming from white heaven, it sounded like thunder and beast roars.

Domination Immortal Chu Du let out a breath of air, he was satisfied with this result.

Gong Wan Ting had a special status, she was Prince Feng Xian’s wife, Chu Du thought of this and could not kill her. If he did, he would offend Prince Feng Xian.

When Chu Du was all alone, he might not be afraid, but with Chu Sect established, times were different.

And Chu Du himself had displayed incredible abilities in this blood battle martial competition, for the sake of Bai Zu tribe, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu would not let Chu Du die here.

Like what Yao Huang and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had discussed before the martial competition, both sides managed to keep their losses to an acceptable level.

“Gasp... incredible, a crack appeared in white heaven.”

“Hearing this, I can tell how intense the battle is.”

“Unfortunately, we cannot penetrate the heavenly wind qi wall and observe the battle in white heaven.”

The spectators did not leave, they were conversing.

The battle between Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang would decide everything.

During the entire process of the blood battle martial competition, no matter how many sacrifices or losses there were, or all the different battle results, none could compare to this one.

Be it either side, they had suffered great losses.

But Gu Immortals who actually died were not many. Several rank six Gu Immortals died, few rank seven Gu Immortals died, the biggest loss was actually Ye Lui Qun Xing who Fang Yuan killed.

Towards the later part of the competition, both sides came to a subtle agreement.

Of course, Gu Immortals getting injured was still a huge issue.

Because of dao marks, injuries were hard to heal, the cost of it would make Gu Immortals pay a huge price.

Inside white heaven.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang were sitting opposite each other, a chessboard was in front of them.

“Please try this, my newly made gold leaf tea.” Yao Huang chuckled, recommending his tea.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu drank it as he nodded, taking out a big bag of snacks.

“This is my specialty, fried centipede.”

The two rank eight great experts drank tea and ate fried centipedes as they played chess, it was an enjoyable time.

Yao Huang sighed: “This fried centipede is fresh and delicious, the flavor never gets tiring, this is truly a rare delicacy.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu praised too: “Brother Yao Huang’s gold leaf tea is superior to silver leaf tea. It seems that you are not far from refining resurrection from the dead Gu.”

Every tea or wine could be treated as an incomplete food path Gu recipe.

Often, when Gu Immortals compete with their refinement path attainment, to avoid causing a commotion or to protect their reputation, they would offer wine or tea.

When Gu Immortals taste the tea or wine, they would understand the other person’s Gu refinement attainment.

Of course, this method was very vague, it was only a shallow probe, it could not show both parties’ true strength.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu could taste something different in Yao Huang’s new tea. Because he had drank the silver leaf tea before, comparing the two, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu could see how Yao Huang’s refinement path attainment had improved.

This improvement was naturally obtained from Yao Huang’s attempts at refining resurrection from the dead Immortal Gu.

As for Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, the snack that he created was not simple either, it was a display of his own refinement path attainment.

But Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had been busy creating Bai Zu tribe recently, he also had to attack Hei Fan grotto-heaven, his refinement path aspects did not improve, thus, his fried centipede did not become different.

But Yao Huang’s gaze was focused below them.

Not far away from them, two figures were fighting.

One resembled Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, while the other resembled Yao Huang.

Below white heaven, the clamor that these Gu Immortals in the Blood Plain heard was caused by these two figures.

Yao Huang praised: “Heavenly Lord, your cloning method is becoming more profound, you can actually mimic thirty percent of rank eight level strength.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu shook his head as he smiled: “I don’t deserve such praise. These last days, while attacking Hei Fan grotto-heaven, I created this immortal killer move after multiple failed attempts at invading it. I have once heard that Longevity Heaven possesses one of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s immortal killer moves — Perfect Pair, it can allow a Gu Immortal to create a clone that has their full power. My method cannot compare to Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.”

Yao Huang smiled.

He understood clearly that Heavenly Lord Bai Zu mentioned Longevity Heaven for more complex underlying reasons.

Yao Huang explained: “Don’t worry, Heavenly Lord, as long as Longevity Heaven’s rank eight Gu Immortals do not show up, just the Longevity Edict cannot mobilize us.”

“Furthermore, the situation in every region is dependent on the situation of the respective rank eight Gu Immortals, isn’t it?”

“Right now in Northern Plains, among the rank eight Gu Immortals, Old Ancestor Xue Hu has the highest battle strength. If he succeeds in refining fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, he would be unstoppable. But I can see that Snowy Mountain blessed land is heavily guarded now, even we will have trouble breaking into it.”

“Our conflict is just an internal conflict of the righteous path. But if Old Ancestor Xue Hu refines fortune rivalling heaven Gu, the situation in Northern Plains would favor the demonic path.”

Yao Huang said slowly as Heavenly Lord Bai Zu nodded, he agreed with the former’s analysis.

Originally, when Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed, Northern Plains’ situation changed, the demonic path rose in power. If Old Ancestor Xue Hu manages to refine fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, the situation would be even more uncontrollable.

Compared to the rise of new righteous path forces, Yao Huang was more unwilling to see the demonic path being rampant.

“Thankfully, in this martial competition, I invited many lone immortals and demonic path members, a portion of them died, while the rest would join either Chu Sect or Bai Zu tribe, this would weaken the demonic path and strengthen our righteous path.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu spoke with a smile.

Rank eight Gu Immortals had deep considerations.

The blood battle martial competition was helping Yao tribe weaken the other Huang Jin tribes, but Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Chu Du were also weakening the lone and demonic cultivators, stabilizing the situation in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world!

But upon the mention of Chu Sect, Yao Huang frowned.

“This Chu Sect needs to change.”

“Northern Plains will not allow the emergence of a sect.”

“If Chu Du wants Chu Sect to exist, he has to change it to Chu tribe, otherwise, the righteous path will not allow it!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1236: Cultivation Itself Is Enjoyment

Yao Huang’s attitude was very firm.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu laughed: “You don’t have to worry about this, Chu Du understands this and has already talked to me, he can concede on this point.”

“That’s good.” Yao Huang nodded.

Both of them talked for a while more, their chess game was half done, they had wasted enough time, both immortals flew down from white heaven.

Next, they announced that Yao Huang had won the battle by a slight margin, and this blood battle martial competition ended with the victory of the Huang Jin tribes.

Chu Sect and Bai Zu tribe’s Gu Immortals had grim expressions, only Chu Du was calm, he had expected this.

In contrast, the Huang Jin tribe Gu Immortals were in a joyous mood.

The consequences that followed would not be detailed, but the blood battle martial competition that shook Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world came to an end.

Southern Border, giant dream realm.

Deep in the sea.

There was darkness, one could not see their own fingers.

Fang Yuan was inside, suffering huge injuries.

The pressure of the sea was intense, most importantly, around him, there were countless long dragon silhouettes, swimming around him vigilantly.

These were dragons living in the sea.

Each sea dragon had desolate beast level battle strength.

There were hundreds, or thousands of sea dragons moving in countless layers.

Fang Yuan was currently a rank six Gu Immortal, but facing this sea dragon group, there was nothing he could do.

“The most troublesome thing is that I need to kill all of the sea dragons to pass this ninth scene of the dream realm.”

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly internally.

If this was reality, it was unclear what the chances would be for him to break out of the encirclement, and try to survive this dangerous situation.

But in this dream realm, there were specific rules, if Fang Yuan wanted to break out and survive, the dream realm exploration would fail.

Fang Yuan had no way out!

“To kill these sea dragons, with just my foundation and methods in this dream realm, it is impossible!”

Thus, if Fang Yuan wanted to pass this, he had only one option available, immortal killer move unravel dream.

“But there are so many sea dragons, unravel dream can be used less than ten times, it cannot resolve this huge problem.”

“It seems that this scene is the final moment of the dream realm’s main character.”

Fang Yuan gained deep insight.

Dream realms had different categories, most were realistic dream realms, they replicated the lifeforms’ experiences in their lives, but there were also few which were rare and peculiar, dream realms that were strange and weird.

Fang Yuan was exploring a realistic dream realm, but the severity of the content might be exaggerated compared to the actual event, even though there was some actual scenes that happened before.

“This Gu Immortal was once a Combat Immortal Sect Gu Master.”

“He had decent aptitude but after becoming rank six, compared to other Gu Immortals, he was no longer so amazing.”

“The ten great ancient sects of Central Continent allocate resources according to sect contribution. This Gu Immortal’s aptitude was far from exemplary, he did not have great strength or powerful methods, it was hard to get sect contribution points, so he could not get much resources. That was why he went to explore Eastern Sea.”

“In the end, when he passed the regional walls, his immortal aperture’s foundation was damaged. Next, he heard some rumors about the Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace and came to this sea area, in the end, he died here from the attacks of the sea dragons.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan made up his mind, he chose to give up.

He left this dream realm.

Normally speaking, the deeper one gets into the dream realm, the greater their gains after getting past the scene.

But Fang Yuan wisely chose to retreat.

He withheld his remaining uses of unravel dream, he was not going to waste them here for no reason.

A moment later, Fang Yuan returned to reality.

Using guts Gu to heal himself, he inspected his own body again.

Water path quasi-grandmaster.

His attainment level did not change.

He was still a distance away from grandmaster level.

But it was already enough to many of the blessed lands in City Well, because most of them were rank six blessed lands.

“According to my current situation, it would be best if I could raise all of my attainment levels to at least master.”

“That way, I would be able to annex any rank six blessed land.”

“Even though rank six blessed lands have diminishing effect on raising my cultivation level, with enough quantity, the gains are still very prominent.”

Fang Yuan thought.

Next, he entered his own dream realm and refined some dream path mortal Gu.

Of course, he used some time for deductions as well.

These last days, he had an inspiration, to fuse the killer moves myriad self and sword dragon transformation.

His deductions were progressing smoothly, Fang Yuan had enough strength path attainment, and his transformation path attainment level was also grandmaster, the only drawback was that his wisdom path deduction methods were slightly lacking.

But it was no problem.

Lady White Rabbit came to report to him about the situation of the immortal opportunity business, as well as some information.

Fang Yuan sat down on his cushion as he shut his eyes, telling her: “Go ahead and talk, I am listening.”

Fang Yuan was deducing his own matters while listening to Lady White Rabbit.

He was multitasking.

A wisdom path grandmaster could do this with ease.

Lady White Rabbit talked as she looked at Fang Yuan’s face, deep affection was in her gaze.

But to her disappointment, until she finished her report, Fang Yuan did not open his eyes to look at her once.

“Okay, you can go now.” Fang Yuan said.

Lady White Rabbit could only leave slowly while feeling disappointed, as she looked at him with a longing gaze.

Outside the room, Wu An was waiting long ago.

“Lady, this way please.” Wu An’s attitude towards Lady White Rabbit was even more polite than before.

Lady White Rabbit was allowed to meet Fang Yuan, this showed that he still favored her, thus, Wu An placed a lot of importance on Lady White Rabbit. Because she represented the future of the immortal opportunity business!

Lady White Rabbit was a little worried, asking Wu An: “Wu An, does Lord Wu Yi Hai cultivate like this all the time?”

Wu An was stunned: “What do you mean?”

Lady White Rabbit sighed in a gloomy tone: “Lord Wu Yi Hai cultivates really hard, he does not even waste any second of his time. Even when listening to my report, he did not stop cultivating, has he always been like this?”

Wu An blinked: “Lady, I will speak the truth. Even though I have never watched Lord Wu Yi Hai cultivate, just a glimpse can tell many things. Lord Wu Yi Hai might be the most hardworking cultivator I have ever seen in my life. Disregarding anything else, just the fact that he is staying in his room and cultivating without leaving for so long, that would be impossible for me.”

Lady White Rabbit became even more worried: “Precisely so, I am worried about Lord Wu Yi Hai. When he cultivates, he truly risks his life! There is a limit to cultivation speed, if he keeps at this, I am afraid he might not be able to endure it, and his mental state would be ruined. Wu An, if you have a chance, you must talk to Lord Wu Yi Hai, okay?”

Wu An thought: “You have met with him more than I have, what can I do?”

But he still nodded, acknowledging: “If I get a chance, I will talk to Lord Wu Yi Hai about this.”

Fang Yuan analyzed Lady White Rabbit’s information.

He had a clear grasp of Southern Border’s situation all along thanks to this.

All in all, Southern Border was still quite peaceful.

Even though Wu Du Xiu died, and Wu clan only had one rank eight Gu Immortal, Wu Yong, left. But this person displayed great battle strength and political methods after taking over Wu clan.

Precisely so, even though Ba clan, Tie clan and others were watching closely, they had to contain their dark intentions.

The situation of the rank eight Gu Immortals was reflected on Southern Border in many aspects. The situation at the super Gu formation was still calm. The immortal opportunity business was ongoing, Gu Immortals benefited and profited secretly, they were very happy, there were also Gu Immortals who did not participate, simply looking on from afar.

“The Northern Plains blood battle martial competition has ended, Chu Sect became Chu tribe, Bai Zu tribe was preserved, while the Huang Jin tribes won and gained a lot of cultivation resources.”

“This way, Northern Plains is also stabilizing.”

“Eastern Sea, Western Desert, and Central Continent have little information available, most of them are obtained from treasure yellow heaven, I only have a vague idea. But they are also relatively peaceful now.”

In truth, a peaceful state was most common in the five regions.

Who would go ahead and fight to the death if a peaceful life was available?

Northern Plains’ chaos was thanks to Fang Yuan. He destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and in addition to Shadow Sect’s schemes, a terrifying situation was created.

Only in the five regions chaotic war did the five regions go into chaos, all sorts of order was torn down, fighting to become Gu Immortal was the main trend.

The current situation was very calm.

This was best for Fang Yuan.

He entered his own dream realm, refining his dream path mortal Gu.

Amidst green and verdant mountains, the merchant caravan was temporarily resting at the base of a mountain.

Boom.

Moonlight curved in the air agilely, moving past a rock ahead and hitting the tree branch behind it accurately.

Immediately, wood shavings were sliced off, the thin branch was nearly cut down by the moonlight.

“After practising for so many days, I finally succeeded!” Fang Yuan was covered in sweat, he felt immense joy.

“Lad, not bad huh.” Gu Master Big Beard walked towards Fang Yuan.

“Uncle Beard, thanks for teaching me this!” Fang Yuan gave a wide smile, he showed his white teeth as he smiled, he was a bright and joyful lad.

Gu Master Big Beard was almost blinded by his shining aura, he blinked as he asked in confusion: “Normal people would only be able to go through such intense training for a week or so. But you woke up early and slept late, you would cultivate so long as you had the time, after a month, your enthusiasm has not faded yet. Is this boring cultivation process really so interesting?”

Fang Yuan clenched his fists, his eyes were shining like the stars in the sky: “Of course, Uncle, don’t you find it amazing and incredible? A person can unleash incredible attacks with a wave of their hand. Cultivation itself is a very enjoyable thing.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1237: Dragon Lady

Gu Master Big Beard naturally did not understand Fang Yuan’s emotions.

As a transmigrator from Earth, the special abilities of Gu Masters were simply superhuman. Turning from a normal person to a superhuman, of course Fang Yuan would be excited and enthusiastic.

“Furthermore, my aptitude is low, only at C grade. How can I not work harder?” The young Fang Yuan chuckled as he spoke.

“Uncle, go ahead with your business, I will continue cultivating.” Fang Yuan said again.

Gu Master Big Beard laughed as he shook his head, tactfully leaving.

Standing afar, he looked at Fang Yuan who was cultivating earnestly, he had a complex gaze as he muttered: “Even if you work so hard, what for? C grade aptitude... cruel reality will assault you and extinguish that fire of enthusiasm, failure will get rid of your excitement. Such enthusiasm and hard work, how long can it last?”

At another corner of the dream realm, the real Fang Yuan was holding onto the branch that was nearly cut off by the moonlight.

“Hmm, not bad this dream path Gu material is quite good, if I am lucky, I can refine more than ten dream path mortal Gu.”

He smiled lightly as his deep dark pupils flickered with light, resembling stars in the sky.

Bai Xiang grotto-heaven.

The humans alike dragons Gu refinement method was at its final crucial moment.

“Persevere, you cannot slack for even a moment, master, you can do it, you can definitely succeed.” Bai Xiang heavenly spirit screamed.

The Gu formation was operating, the pillar of light was tall and mighty, like it was holding up heaven and earth.

The center of the pillar was so shiny that one could not look at the light directly, there was a human shaped figure of fire in it.

It was Bai Ning Bing!

His face and body had all melted, like candles that were exposed to intense heat.

His hair was all burned, his eyes were blind, even his hands and legs were all melted into one.

Bai Ning Bing was nothing like a human.

The intense pain had never stopped assaulting him for the last weeks!

Initially, he screamed in pain, roaring at the sky, nearly fainting.

But afterwards, he survived countless dangerous situations, forcibly preserving his life until now.

Gritting his teeth and enduring.

Next, his teeth and tongue were also melted by the raging wave rising dragon fire, fusing together.

He smiled.

A relentless smile.

Next, he could not even smile anymore, because his nose and face had all melted like wax.

Now, he was just a human pole, it was a horrific sight.

But Bai Xiang heavenly spirit could sense Bai Ning Bing’s determination.

His determination was firm as steel, after the burning of the fire and the pain that tempered him, he was becoming more firm and unwavering.

Such determination made even Bai Xiang heavenly spirit lost for words!

Initially, even Bai Xiang heavenly spirit did not think Bai Ning Bing would succeed.

Because Bai Ning Bing’s situation was too terrible, the humans alike dragons Gu refinement method was extremely dangerous. Every Gu refinement carried risks of failure. In history, any Gu Master or Gu Immortal who tried to turn into a dragonman would be extremely careful and make ample preparations, only taking this risk after they were sufficiently prepared!

Boom!

An intense sound resembled the striking of thunder.

The pillar of light dissipated, as a lump of fire flew upwards.

It was shaped like a fiery dragon, its red body was strong as ever, after flying one round in the sky, it flew down towards Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing was a lump of meat now, his bones, flesh, dao marks, blood, and skin were all fused into one.

The meat seemed like a bottomless hole, absorbing the whole of the fiery dragon that crashed towards it.

Next, the meat turned red, the temperature rose, intense flames were raging nearby, causing distortions in the air due to the high heat.

When the lump of meat became red to the extreme, it exploded, within a bright light, a brand new Bai Ning Bing was born.

“Success, we succeeded!!” Bai Xiang heavenly spirit stared with wide eyes and muttered.

Under the rays of the lingering light, Bai Ning Bing raised her head to the sky!

Only to hear her say: “Ten thousand li mountain and nine layers of the abyss, dragons coil at the bottom of the well. Today I rise up towards the clouds, my proud body soars towards true freedom.”

Her voice sounded like the roar of a dragon, winds were rumbling as it echoed in the entire Bai Xiang grotto-heaven.

Bai Xiang heavenly spirit was in admiration, he knelt on the ground and said: “Congratulations to master’s new life, you have regained your immortal status!”

Bai Ning Bing stopped her roaring, she descended.

She was expressionless, her skin was white as snow, her facial features were even more distinct now, her beauty had surpassed her former self!

Her pale blue dragon eyes were emitting a cold aura to the outside world.

But at the next moment, shock was expressed in her dragon eyes: “Hmm? What is going on? I already became an immortal, I have a real immortal aperture, why did I become a woman?”

“This...” Bai Xiang heavenly spirit thought about his words carefully before explaining: “The humans alike dragons Gu refinement method uses master as the immortal material. The result of the refinement depends on the proportion of immortal materials and how they mix together. Master had transformation path dao marks earlier, to think that these dao marks would affect your body and actually influence the final result of the Gu refinement, turning you into a dragon lady.”

Bai Ning Bing: “...”

She realized that the information path dao marks and all her alliance agreements were gone, but the transformation path dao marks still affected the results of her refinement. Like what the heavenly spirit said, the humans alike dragons Gu refinement method could not be strictly controlled, the participating immortal material had a lot of influence on the result.

Bai Ning Bing furrowed her brows.

This was like a curse.

Her female body curse had started ever since she was in Qing Mao Mountain.

After pondering for a while, Bai Ning Bing asked: “How can I turn back to a man?”

Bai Xiang heavenly spirit replied: “This is easy, just cultivate transformation path in addition.”

Bai Ning Bing was knowledgeable, she shook her head: “That does not solve the underlying problem, I have my Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique, I will cultivate ice and snow path in the future.”

Bai Xiang heavenly spirit thought about it before saying: “Master, you have been reborn, the female body is your true gender. But if you want to change it, you will need to approach its root cause and find the other half of that rotation Gu from the past, and refine it into an Immortal Gu. Using that Immortal Gu, you will be able to become a man.”

Bai Ning Bing: “...”

The image of a person appeared in her mind uncontrollably.

“Fang Yuan, to think that you would still be an obstacle to me now. Hmph!” Bai Ning Bing snorted internally, she knew that Fang Yuan had the rank eight battle strength upper extreme heavenly eagle.

She had to plan for a long time to get that crucial Gu worm from Fang Yuan.

Central Continent, Spirit Affinity House.

Above the clouds, Gu Immortals gathered.

Spirit Affinity House’s first supreme elder said: “Bu Zhen Zi, you have to protect our sect’s fairy in this Northern Plains journey, she is only a false immortal, and her ascension was only recently.”

Bu Zhen Zi was a supreme elder of Spirit Affinity House, a rank seven phantom path Gu Immortal, he said: “Everyone, as long as I am alive, I will ensure her safety.”

He spoke with great confidence.

First supreme elder nodded, looking at Zhao Lian Yun: “You must not charge ahead in this journey, always protect your own safety. Leave the rest to the others, the Gu Immortals going with you are all elite experts of the ten great ancient sects, with our advantage as the attacker, there is a high chance of success.”

Zhao Lian Yun nodded, she understood now that this granny was actually the Gu

Immortal with the highest authority in Spirit Affinity House.

She bowed deeply to the first supreme elder, Xu Hao, and Li Jun Ying: “I am going now.”

“Set off.” First supreme elder waved her hand.

Bu Zhen Zi cupped his fists, bringing Zhao Lian Yun with him, riding on a ruin bat and flying away.

“To think that Zhao Lian Yun would become our sect’s fairy.”

“Heaven is toying with us.”

“I wonder if she will be able to save that Ma Hong Yun?”

“In my opinion, the chances are high, after all, all of the Gu Immortals going to Northern Plains are elites of our sects, this is a powerful force!”

The Gu Immortals conversed as they left.

“I will go talk to our daughter.” Fairy Bai Qing had a look of worry as she spoke to Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge nodded.

This time, he also wanted to go to Northern Plains, but Heavenly Court denied his suggestion.

Feng Jiu Ge was a legendary genius rarely seen in thousands of years, he was so talented none could match him, he possessed rank eight battle strength with just rank seven cultivation level.

According to common logic, he would be the best person to send to Northern Plains, but he was unable to become part of the rescue team.

At this point, Feng Jiu Ge did not know what Heavenly Court was thinking or planning.

When Fairy Bai Qing met with Feng Jin Huang, the latter was sitting by the lake, looking at the ripples on the surface as she went into a daze.

Fairy Bai Qing felt caring and affection in her heart.

She knew: Her daughter had always wanted to become Spirit Affinity House’s fairy, she worked hard for it. But now, Zhao Lian Yun gained love Gu’s acknowledgement, she was also supported by Heavenly Court, becoming Spirit Affinity House’s fairy.

This way, Feng Jin Huang was eliminated from the competition.

Fairy Bai Qing walked towards Feng Jin Huang: “Why? Still thinking about the fairy position?”

“No, mother, I was thinking, why did I not obtain love Gu’s acknowledgement?” Feng Jin Huang’s eyes were red, she had secretly cried earlier.

“That is because you do not have love.” Fairy Bai Qing sat beside Feng Jin Huang, stretching out her hand as she touched Feng Jin Huang’s hair.

Feng Jin Huang asked: “Why do I not have love? What is love?”

Fairy Bai Qing’s gaze flickered, she thought about it before saying: “Love is different from familial affection and friendship, it is a type of affinity, like when I met your father. Love came suddenly and nobody expected it. Love cannot be forced, it is all up to your affinity.”

Feng Jin Huang shook her head: “I do not want to leave it to fate, this is not my style, I want to find love and be acknowledged by love Gu, and take back the position of fairy. Mother, do you think this is possible?”

Fairy Bai Qing smiled, this was basically impossible, but seeing her daughter’s expectant gaze, as a mother, how could she say the truth?

Thus, she said: “There is a possibility, but you need to find a lover first. A lover is not your father or mother, or those female companions by your side.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1238: Luck Path Master

“Mother, you mean to say, it has to be...” Feng Jin Huang frowned, in the process of her growth, there were few youngsters who could match her. Spirit Affinity House had more women than men, this made Feng Jin Huang look down on those males of her generation since a young age.

There was another important reason, that was, Feng Jin Huang’s father was too talented, it elevated her expectations, she could not see anything good in those boys around her.

Fairy Bai Qing nodded, asking teasingly: “That’s right Huang Er, among those youngsters you met, who are you interested in?”

Feng Jin Huang frowned, after thinking about it, she shook her head.

Fairy Bai Qing almost laughed out loud, her daughter’s puzzled look was extremely cute, she asked again: “Then let me change my question, which youngster left the deepest impression on you?”

At this moment, Feng Jin Huang was stunned.

Fang Yuan’s image uncontrollably appeared in her mind.

Fang Yuan was the one who dealt a pitiful defeat to her, Feng Jin Huang would never forget the scene on Dang Hun Mountain.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan had saved Feng Jiu Ge’s life before!

All of these events made Feng Jin Huang have extremely complex feelings towards Fang Yuan.

It was not pure hatred.

It was also not pure gratitude.

Fairy Bai Qing looked at Feng Jin Huang, who was in a daze, and her expression turned dark, she became flustered as she blamed herself: “Oh no! Why did I forget about Fang Yuan’s existence.”

Fairy Bai Qing quickly said: “Huang Er, don’t think about it!”

As a mother, Fairy Bai Qing was very worried. Even though Feng Jin Huang had grown a lot, she was still innocent regarding relationships, like a blank white sheet of paper.

“That Fang Yuan is an otherworldly demon, he used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth. His actual age is probably older than both myself and your father!” Fairy Bai Qing said in a solemn time.

“Most importantly, he is listed on the Demon Judgment Board, he is a vicious and evil demon, slaughtering countless and causing great harm to the world, he is very dangerous.”

“But he saved father.” Feng Jin Huang retorted.

Fairy Bai Qing said in a serious tone, looking deeply into Feng Jin Huang’s eyes: “You must remember this, gratitude and enmity cannot be mixed together, you need to draw the line. His gratitude of saving your father’s life was a coincidence, we will definitely repay him. But he is a demonic path member, he is vile and vicious, after repaying that debt, if we meet him again, we will exterminate him. Understood?”

Feng Jin Huang nodded: “Understood!”

Southern Border, Fang Yuan was inside the dream realm.

“Achoo! Achoo!” Fang Yuan sneezed twice.

He rubbed his nose as he said to the female Gu Master in front of him: “Again.”

The female Gu Master was at the counter in front of him, she took out three rocks: “Please.”

This was another dream realm.

The earlier water path dream realm was too hard at the end, Fang Yuan gave up. A few days later, the dream realm changed, and a suitable one appeared for Fang Yuan.

What made him happy was that successfully exploring this dream realm would raise his luck path attainment level!

Luck path Gu Immortals were very few in numbers.

Because even though Giant Sun Immortal Venerable created luck path, he did not spread it.

Thus, dream realms that contained luck path true meaning were rare. It was unlikely that Fang Yuan could encounter such a dream realm.

Fang Yuan looked at the three rocks, he knew that according to the rules, he would need to win three consecutive times, finding the most valuable item in these three rocks to get to the second scene.

Rock gambling.

“I succeeded twice already, if I fail now, my efforts would be in vain, I should use unravel dream.”

Fang Yuan activated the immortal killer move unravel dream.

After waiting for a while, nothing happened.

“What is going on?” While he was confused, the female Gu Master who attended to him looked at him amorously and whispered: “Little brother, choose the middle one, don’t worry, I won’t harm you.”

Saying this, she winked at Fang Yuan in a subtle manner, it had a teasing flavor.

Fang Yuan finally realized, this was unravel dream’s effect. He did not hesitate, he grabbed the middle one.

The three rocks were opened, none had any Gu worms, but with the quality of the rocks themselves, the middle one had the highest value.

The first scene faded, as he quickly entered the second scene.

Northern Plains.

Longevity Heaven.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House, Calamity Luck Altar.

Three floors of round altars with multiple pillars holding it up, white jade railings and shining aurora.

Eight Gu Immortals in Longevity Heaven were standing at the center of the nine corners of Calamity Luck Altar, doing their best to concentrate in controlling the operations of Calamity Luck Altar.

At the center of Calamity Luck Altar, Five Elements Grandmaster had a solemn expression, he was surrounded by three layers of rings in the five elements, but Calamity Luck Altar’s pressure was increasing, Five Elements Grandmaster had to use his true abilities to resist it.

Both parties were silent.

Because it was clear that both sides could not be moved with just words.

But at this moment, the entirety of Longevity Heaven resounded with bell chimes.

The Eight Extremities heard the bell chimes and shook, they were shocked and full of questions.

“This is the immortal killer move ringing alarm bell, why did it activate?”

“In the past, Ancestor Giant Sun set up this immortal killer move in Longevity Heaven, if we met with trouble, it would activate.”

“But Five Elements Grandmaster has already been trapped.”

The Eight Extremities were conversing, feeling lost.

The leader of the Eight Extremities, Heaven Extremity said: “No, even when Five Elements Grandmaster attacked, ringing alarm bell did not activate, right now, it is pointing to another danger.”

The others were flustered.

“This means that the following calamity is going to be more severe than Five Elements Grandmaster’s attack?”

“Right now, we have to use our full strength to suppress Five Elements Grandmaster using Calamity Luck Altar, we cannot divert our attention. How will we deal with it?”

“With Calamity Luck Altar here, heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities cannot do anything to us, it has to be a terrifying human calamity instead.”

The second-in-charge, Earth Extremity, looked at Heaven Extremity and said: “In this situation, we can only awaken the Four Desolation Immortals.”

Heaven Extremity had a solemn expression as he nodded.

Five Elements Grandmaster spoke with a smile: “Longevity Heaven can barely fend for itself, I am curious, what kind of disaster can make this ringing alarm bell activate.”

Heaven Extremity was about to speak when a voice could be heard near him: “These so called disasters are accompanied by fortune and good luck. They are luck path in essence, a type of uncertainty, as Gu Immortals, we have to turn these negative uncertainties into positive uncertainties. The concept of Calamity Luck Altar was derived from this.”

Heaven Extremity heard this voice and felt great joy and surprise.

Five Elements Grandmaster looked at this mysterious Gu Immortal who appeared, asking: “Which of the Four Desolation Immortals are you?”

“Greetings to Lord South Desolation.” The Eight Extremities respectfully greeted at once, giving the answer to Five Elements Grandmaster.

Longevity Heaven had twelve positions, separated into Eight Extremities and Four Desolations.

The Four Desolation Immortals were East Desolation, South Desolation, West Desolation, and North Desolation, four rank eight immortals respectively.

The Eight Extremities were: Heaven Extremity, Earth Extremity, Black Extremity, Yellow Extremity, Space Extremity, Time Extremity, Flood Extremity, Desolate Extremity, a total of eight rank seven Gu Immortals.

Of course, Longevity Heaven was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s grotto-heaven, it had a huge space and abundant resources, other than these twelve, there were other Gu Immortals. But these twelve had the core authority of Longevity Heaven, they were elites among Gu Immortals.

South Desolation Immortal wore an azure-gold suit of armor, his beard extended to his chest, he was a muscular man with an old appearance, he said: “When the bell rang, I woke up. This sound has three long notes and two short notes, it is neither fast or slow, it means that love Gu has entered Northern Plains. Love Gu has the power to defy fate, in the past, even Ancestor was wary of it. To obtain love Gu, Ancestor made a bet with Heavenly Court, but he failed to refine it even after three years. He could only set up some supreme luck path methods in it, that would activate one day. Love Gu would come to Northern Plains due to luck, and this would be the best opportunity for us to snatch love Gu!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s immortal killer move was very amazing. His descendants could gain some information just by hearing the bells.

Even though the Eight Extremities knew of ringing alarm bell, they did not know its specific details, after hearing South Desolation Immortal’s words, they were excited.

It turned out that long ago, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had made his preparations.

Heaven Extremity said: “Us Eight Extremities will follow Lord South Desolation’s lead, we are willing to die for Longevity Heaven, and obtain love Immortal Gu!”

Southern Border.

“This is Bai Xiang grotto-heaven!” Hei Lou Lan stepped through the immortal aperture’s entrance, officially getting into Bai Xiang grotto-heaven.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng, Ying Wu Xie and Shi Nu followed behind.

“Hmm? Something’s not right.” Ying Wu Xie’s expression changed.

At the next moment, the surroundings changed, the Gu formation was activated, trapping the four immortals in a special space.

Bai Ning Bing’s figure slowly appeared.

Shi Nu was shocked and furious, he growled: “You are Bai Ning Bing? You dare to betray us!”

“Hmph, remnants of Shadow Sect, today will be the day you die!” Bai Ning Bing smiled coldly, a cruel light was shining in her pale blue dragon eyes.

Ying Wu Xie was greatly surprised, Bai Ning Bing had broken free of his control, this was out of his expectations.

He had a flash of inspiration: “So that’s it, you used the humans alike dragons Gu refinement method? This method had been lost long ago, Bai Xiang grotto-heaven actually had it?!”

“Honestly speaking, I need to thank you, now accept this present of gratitude from me.” Bai Ning Bing snickered, the image of the four immortals faded in front of her, before they vanished completely.

“Wait, we can still negotiate...” Ying Wu Xie had not finished his words when the Gu formation activated, large amounts of snow rained as countless ice spears shot up from the ground, the four immortals quickly defended themselves.

Remains of Yi Tian Mountain, inside the super Gu formation.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes, returning to reality.

His soul was extremely weak, but it was not a problem, he had enough guts Gu to use.

“Luck path master!” Fang Yuan inspected himself, his luck path attainment had risen to master level.

The luck path dream realm earlier was fully explored.

He had no remaining uses of unravel dream, but his gains were huge, his luck path attainment had jumped from ordinary to master attainment level.

He immediately felt a difference.

This feeling was mystical, it could not be described with words.

“If my luck path attainment is at grandmaster level, I might want to get the self luck true inheritance from Lang Ya land spirit, if I can use it well, my strength would rise greatly.”

“In my current case, I feel like I can already use unravel mystery Immortal Gu and dog shit luck Immortal Gu together, to greatly boost the effect of my immortal killer move qi luck sensation!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1239: Filled With Killing Intent

Qi luck sensation.

This immortal killer move came from Hei Fan grotto-heaven, the inheritance of Gu Immortal Feng Jun.

It used qi luck Immortal Gu as the core, with supplementary mortal Gu, to allow a Gu Immortal to sense people who were closely related to them in terms of luck.

Furthermore, the closer they were to each other, the clearer the connection would feel.

Fang Yuan used this move to sense the locations of Ying Wu Xie and the rest, even though they were separated by regional walls.

This was because Ying Wu Xie and the rest had their luck connected to Fang Yuan.

After using Connect Luck, both parties would have their luck closely connected, they would share both fortune and disaster together.

However, with Ying Wu Xie’s methods, he was able to negate a portion of the effect of qi luck sensation, he even could hide inside an immortal aperture to cut himself off from Fang Yuan’s detection.

Fang Yuan was very wary of Ying Wu Xie and gang, even though Shadow Sect was a fraction of its former size, a broken ship was still better than a plank, a dying camel was larger than a horse, by just gathering Shadow Sect’s remaining resources, Ying Wu Xie and the rest would grow much more rapidly than Fang Yuan and at a steadier rate.

“This time, after elevating qi luck sensation, I should be able to detect the locations of Ying Wu Xie and the rest. I will eliminate them in advance and get rid of this huge threat!”

Fang Yuan decided to add Unravel Mystery into qi luck sensation, causing this killer move to have two cores instead of one.

“Unravel mystery Immortal Gu is wisdom path, hmm... I should add some wisdom path Gu in.”

“After that, I will use some group think Gu and some mortal connect luck Gu, hmm, and some pair Gu and sequence Gu.”

...

Fang Yuan did not make any deductions, he was making decisions based on his instincts.

A large number of mortal Gu were added in.

Among these Gu worm, a portion were owned by Fang Yuan, but he had to buy more of them through treasure yellow heaven.

Without any hurdles, soon, he obtained these Gu worms.

But next, he did not activate the immortal killer move immediately, he went to do further testing.

After adding so many Gu worms, qi luck sensation had changed greatly, if he activated it blindly, he might just fail immediately, Fang Yuan might get injured, or worse, his Gu worms might be destroyed. Destroying mortal Gu was fine, but if his Immortal Gu were destroyed, what would he do?

When Gu Immortals create a new immortal killer move, the experimentation process was also very risky.

Fang Yuan first separated the new qi luck sensation into several portions and did experiments on them one by one.

The results of the experiments were very good.

Not a single one failed.

Fang Yuan next used wisdom path methods to deduce, modify and improve on the newly created qi luck sensation.

Half a day later, Fang Yuan finally finished his deductions, he activated the newly modified qi luck sensation for the first time.

Halfway through activating it, a small problem that was beyond Fang Yuan’s estimations occurred.

It was not a big problem, but the result of success might possibly be affected.

Fang Yuan was vigilant, he forcibly stopped the activation.

Many mortal Gu were destroyed.

Fang Yuan did not even blink at the result, as long as qi luck Immortal Gu and unravel mystery Immortal Gu were fine, it was no problem. He was very rich now, expending some mortal Gu was simply a negligible loss to Fang Yuan.

As for the supplementary mortal Gu, they did not need to be purchased.

Fang Yuan had considered this situation long ago, thus he purchased more than what he needed for one activation.

He continued to deduce and found out the reasons that resulted in this unexpected change.

This time, Fang Yuan spent half a day again modifying the immortal killer move. After fixing it, he experimented again.

This time, towards the later half of the immortal killer move, a mishap occurred again.

The immortal killer move used too many Gu worms, Fang Yuan could not completely deduce the entire process.

Even though these small unexpected sparks appeared minimally, Fang Yuan still thought of inspecting them, he forcibly stopped the killer move once again.

Be it unravel mystery Immortal Gu or qi luck Immortal Gu, they had to be used at the final juncture, thus, although he lost many mortal Gu, they were inconsequential.

After repeated trial and error, he continued to deduce and modify it.

Several days later, Fang Yuan finally obtained a relatively perfect version of qi luck sensation.

This immortal killer move used three times the number of Gu worms as before, with two Immortal Gu as the core, unravel mystery Immortal Gu and qi luck Immortal Gu, they were like two shining suns in the sky.

Activating the new qi luck sensation!

A mystical feeling appeared inside Fang Yuan.

First, he detected Ye Fan, Hong Yi, and Han Li, they were in Southern Border, Central Continent, and Western Desert respectively, the exact details were clearer than before, especially Ye Fan, Fang Yuan could tell that he was currently on Shang Liang Mountain.

The rest were more vague.

Ying Wu Xie and Hei Lou Lan appeared in Fang Yuan’s detection again.

It was vague, countless times less clear compared to Ye Fan, he also did not know their exact location, but Fang Yuan could tell the general area they were in.

“Strange, other than Ying Wu Xie and Hei Lou Lan, there is a third person, but they are just as unclear as them. Don’t tell me Ying Wu Xie used connect luck Immortal Gu to connect his luck with an unknown Gu Immortal?”

Fang Yuan guessed the truth immediately.

He frowned.

Connect luck Immortal Gu was in Ying Wu Xie’s hands, this was no secret.

This was Fang Yuan’s weakness.

Currently, Fang Yuan no longer used Spring Autumn Cicada, he sealed it. In regards to luck, with dog shit luck Immortal Gu’s protection, it had turned from a weakness to his strength.

But Ying Wu Xie and the rest were taking a portion of Fang Yuan’s advantage.

When Giant Sun Immortal Venerable developed in his early days, a lot of his success was attributed to this dog shit luck Immortal Gu. But Fang Yuan was not enjoying it alone, his dog shit luck Immortal Gu’s effect was split among other people.

If it was split equally with Ye Fan, Han Li, Hei Lou Lan, and Hong Yi, so be it. After all, these were four lucky people. But Ying Wu Xie and that new Gu Immortal were huge burdens, they were weakening the effects of Dog Shit Luck.

“This direction... hehehe, to think that they are in Southern Border!”

“Ying Wu Xie and the rest need to be eliminated, after killing them, I will be truly safe, nobody would come after the sovereign immortal body again."

"At the same time, after I kill them and remove the threat, my luck will rise greatly, the true power of Dog Shit Luck would be unleashed."

At this moment, Fang Yuan was filled with killing intent, he wanted to move immediately and get rid of Ying Wu Xie and the rest once and for all!

Central Continent.

"It is time, we can go now!" Rank eight Gu Immortal Wei Ling Yang shouted.

His voice was hoarse, he had a middle aged appearance with dark bags under his eyes and looked listless, giving others a feeling of extreme fatigue.

But he was the strongest among the three rank eight Gu Immortals on this journey, he was tasked as the leader of this rescue mission.

Along with him, there were Bi Chen Tian and Myriad Tidal Dragon.

These two were rank eight Gu Immortals as well.

Bi Chen Tian joined the battle of Yi Tian Mountain and survived in the end.

Myriad Tidal Dragon had higher seniority than Bi Chen Tian, recently, he was given pointers by Duke Long, his strength rose again.

Duke Long was old and it was difficult for him to fight once again, but he controlled the situation and immediately changed the way that Heavenly Court functioned.

They sent out three rank eight Gu Immortals, all from Heavenly Court, they had phantom apertures but their battle strength greatly surpassed the rank eight Gu Immortals of the ten great ancient sects.

The immortals acknowledged his words and split into three groups, entering three Immortal Gu Houses respectively.

These three Immortal Gu Houses were: Wind Cloud Manor's Wind Sweeping Building, it had seven floors and had fluttering curtains; Heavenly Lotus Sect's Canary Pavilion, small and exquisite, filled with liveliness; Combat Immortal Sect's Edge Link Camp, it was a military stronghold with waving battle flags.

Each Immortal Gu House was guarded by a rank eight Gu Immortal.

Zhao Lian Yun was in the middle one, Wind Cloud Manor's Wind Sweeping Building.

She was at the top floor, the safest place inside this Immortal Gu House.

"Right now, our group is too powerful, we have three rank eight Gu Immortals as well as three Immortal Gu Houses! Victory is basically assured." Bu Zhen Zi followed behind Zhao Lian Yun, saying this.

Zhao Lian Yun nodded, she was expressionless but her heart was jumping: "Hong Yun, I am coming! You must persevere."

The three Immortal Gu Houses were like shooting stars, flying towards the sky.

Edge Link Camp was at the front, opening a path for the rest. Wind Sweeping Building was in the middle, in charge of reinforcements. Canary Pavilion was at the back, looking out for unexpected situations.

The heavenly wind qi wall was right before them.

Boom!

Edge Link Camp unleashed its might, giant sharp horns were formed, resembling solid figures, as they stabbed into the heavenly wind qi wall fiercely. Without any resistance, they forcefully created a tunnel.

Wind Sweeping Building and Canary Pavilion followed after it quickly.

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh.

Wind Sweeping Building continued to shake, Zhao Lian Yun was also shaking at the top floor, almost falling down.

Bu Zhen Zi was tongue-tied: “It is said that the heavenly wind qi wall is thicker than the five regional walls, it seems to be true after seeing it myself. Our Wind Sweeping Building is just in the center, moving along the created tunnel, yet the heavenly winds are already causing us to be so unstable. It is hard to imagine what it is like inside Edge Link Camp!”

The heavenly wind qi wall was created by heavenly wind qi, even after creating a tunnel, the wind would rush in and fill the gap very quickly.

Thus, the three Immortal Gu Houses were very close together, almost touching the edges of each other, they continued to charge forward.

Halfway through their journey, Edge Link Camp lost many Gu worms, its charging power fell and it went to the back.

Wind Sweeping Building replaced Edge Link Camp’s spot, taking charge of creating a path ahead. After a quarter of the journey, Canary Pavilion went to the front.

This way, some days later, the three Immortal Gu Houses finally broke through the heavenly wind qi wall and reached black heaven.

Right now, in the Gu Master world, there were only black heaven and white heaven left of the immemorial nine heavens.

It was clear why they did not choose white heaven.

It was to prevent exposing themselves.

Black heaven had natural concealment, it could help to hide the traces of the three Immortal Gu Houses to an extent.

This way, the Central Continent Gu Immortals would ensure that they had the advantage in launching a sneak attack on this journey.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1240: Usefulness of Attainment Level

Southern Border.

Inside the super Gu formation.

Fang Yuan recalled the power of qi luck sensation, realizing the usefulness of attainment level.

“The process of elevating qi luck sensation just now was quite tedious, but it was actually very easy.”

“Everything flowed naturally like water running down a drain.”

Ordinary Gu Immortals would face difficulty in trying to improve or complete an immortal killer move. For example, Vicious Lightning Fiend from Myriad Dragon Dock of the ten great ancient sects took years before creating the immortal killer move lightning deity.

“Vicious Lightning Fiend’s lightning deity was deduced using the remnant recipe of Blood Deity. It involved both lightning path and blood path. Vicious Lightning Fiend had enough lightning path attainment level, but his blood path attainment was just ordinary. Thus, he had to spend years, using resources from Myriad Dragon Dock, to succeed with difficulty.”

“This is the lack of attainment level, one can only deduce forcefully, maybe high wisdom path attainment level can provide a lot of help, otherwise, inspiration or time would be needed. Hei Fan was a time path great expert, but even he had many immortal killer moves that were not completed after his death, right?”

“However, once the attainment level is sufficient, deducing killer moves will no longer be deductions, it would be an instinct, it is extremely easy.”

Fang Yuan thought about it.

Just now, he elevated the immortal killer move qi luck sensation, he only spent a few days.

But the results were shocking!

When creating the framework of the immortal killer move, Fang Yuan did not think much, he only had a vague concept in his mind.

Next, when he chose Gu worms, as long as they were luck path or wisdom path mortal Gu, he had a strong instinct about the selection.

Instinct?

This was hard to imagine.

It really was, but once the attainment level was sufficient, one’s understanding towards Gu worms and the concepts of immortal killer moves of the specific paths would turn into an instinct of the Gu Immortal.

This instinct was like a natural skill, as if one had it since birth, it was simple and effortless.

Like how someone could breathe through their nose, it was a natural thing.

“Attainment level is one’s understanding of the Great Dao.”

“My luck path attainment is master level, this allows me to have acute sensations towards all contents of luck path, it is hard to describe with words. When elevating qi luck sensation, I did not need to test anything, I already knew what Gu worms would be suitable as the supplementary Gu.”

“Similarly, for wisdom path, I have wisdom path grandmaster attainment level. My understanding of wisdom path surpasses luck path, thus, I could perfectly fuse unravel mystery Immortal Gu into qi luck sensation successfully.”

Fang Yuan concluded and realized that the benefit of attainment level surpassed his former expectations.

Being able to annex more immortal apertures was just a physical benefit.

It had great effects on other aspects as well.

“If I raise all of my attainment levels to grandmaster or even great grandmaster in the future, will I be able to create a terrifying killer move that uses all of the paths?”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts started to wander.

“In fact, Spectral Soul had already reached this level. Perhaps this was why he could create sovereign immortal fetus Gu?”

Conceptualizing immortal killer moves was the same in essence as creating Immortal Gu recipes.

Thinking of Spectral Soul, Fang Yuan subconsciously looked towards a certain direction in Southern Border.

Not long ago, he had confirmed with qi luck sensation that Ying Wu Xie and gang were over in that direction in Southern Border.

Fang Yuan had already known the rough range of their whereabouts.

Even though Fang Yuan had deep killing intent towards Ying Wu Xie and the others, he thought about it and decided to make some preparations before starting his assault.

Even though Fang Yuan hatched the upper extreme heavenly eagle, it only had rank six battle strength.

Ying Wu Xie and the rest had wrong information, thinking that Fang Yuan had rank eight battle strength, but he could not possibly use this non-existent power to kill them, right?

In the previous battle in Eastern Sea, Fang Yuan saw the strength of Ying Wu Xie and the others.

This time, after a long while, Fang Yuan could not estimate whether Ying Wu Xie and the rest had inherited Shadow Sect’s resources and gained a huge boost in strength.

To play it safe, Fang Yuan made a lot of preparations, just in case.

He wanted to use this chance to get rid of this huge threat!

Qi luck sensation was a great example, Fang Yuan had also already started to fuse myriad self and sword dragon transformation.

Other than that, he even borrowed Immortal Gu from Wu clan.

This was the benefit of joining Wu clan.

It was different from Lang Ya Sect, that was a sect and required sect contribution points. But Wu clan was a clan, Fang Yuan’s identity was Wu Yi Hai, the younger brother of Wu Yong, he had the closest bloodline relationship in the entire clan.

Thus, when Fang Yuan asked to borrow some Immortal Gu from Wu clan’s treasury, Wu Yong did not stop him, he agreed.

In fact, Wu Yong was quite satisfied with Fang Yuan’s recent performance.

After Fang Yuan went to the super Gu formation, he held his side of the agreement and did not interfere in Wu clan’s politics, this allowed Wu Yong to easily gain control of Wu clan.

Secondly, Fang Yuan, who acted as Wu Yi Hai, perfectly handled the immortal opportunity business. He displayed great political abilities and prevented Ba clan from interfering, he helped Wu clan control the situation and defend their territory inside the giant dream realm.

This was a contribution to Wu clan, Wu Yong remembered Fang Yuan’s contribution, thus he not only agreed to lend some Immortal Gu from the treasury, he even lowered the cost of doing so.

Fang Yuan paid a lot of Eastern Sea resources to borrow multiple Immortal Gu, among them were strength path dragon strength Immortal Gu and transformation path dragon scales Immortal Gu, they were all available. These Immortal Gu were added to fuse myriad self and sword dragon transformation, providing great help to Fang Yuan.

Bai Xiang grotto-heaven.

Inside the super Gu formation, Hei Lou Lan, Shi Nu, Tai Bai Yun Sheng, and Ying Wu Xie were at four spots, defending against Bai Ning Bing.

Howl howl howl...

The super Gu formation was activated, intense winds blew, ice blades shot out, encircling the four Gu Immortals.

With Ying Wu Xie leading and the three immortals helping, they resisted the super Gu formation’s pressure. Even though they were in a difficult state, the formation was still quite stable.

Suddenly, a figure appeared in front of Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

It was Bai Ning Bing, but only her upper body was present, her lower half was like smoke.

‘Bai Ning Bing’ appeared and charged towards Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was the weakest among the four immortals, Bai Ning Bing chose to attack him, it was the right choice.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly retreated!

In the battle earlier, he had already seen how powerful Bai Ning Bing’s attacks were, he suffered a lot due to it, if not for the other immortals’ help, he would have died already.

“Change! Shi Nu, go.” Seeing Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s predicament, Ying Wu Xie quickly commanded.

A white light appeared on all four of them, before a deep eerie sigh was heard in the sky.

Shi Nu and Tai Bai Yun Sheng had changed locations, swapping as Shi Nu faced ‘Bai Ning Bing”s attack.

Shi Nu grunted, defending against it.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was behind Shi Nu, seeing this, he quickly used his cloud path Immortal Gu to heal him.

“Bai Ning Bing is getting stronger, she is familiarizing herself with Bai Xiang’s methods, she is in control of many ice and snow path Immortal Gu that Bai Xiang had. The longer this drags on, the worse it will be for us!”

“Damn it!”

“Bai Xiang heavenly spirit actually had the humans alike dragons Gu refinement method! Wasn’t this method completely eliminated by Duke Long? How could he have missed this.”

“Also... during the battle earlier, I sensed something in my luck. Fang Yuan actually raised his detection method to this extent, even if I hide inside an immortal aperture now, he would still discover me.”

Ying Wu Xie was facing huge pressure!

Bai Ning Bing betrayed them and was getting stronger every minute, Ying Wu Xie and the rest were desperately trying to defend against her, they could not leave.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan knew where they were.

But Ying Wu Xie had the information that Fang Yuan possessed rank eight battle strength! If he got here, Bai Xiang grotto-heaven could not block the immemorial desolate beast upper extreme heavenly eagle.

This meant that Fang Yuan could appear at any moment. Ying Wu Xie would not even be surprised if Fang Yuan showed up suddenly at the next moment.

“Bai Ning Bing, stop it! Fighting would harm us both, only working together will bring benefits.”

“Since you are now a dragonman, you are qualified to inherit the Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace. In the past, the dragonmen were extremely powerful with a large number of Gu Immortals, they managed to create Dragon Palace. After the dragonmen went extinct, Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace has been secretly hidden in a certain area of Eastern Sea. My Shadow Sect knows roughly where it is, but only someone who has used the humans alike dragons Gu refinement method to become a dragonman Gu Immortal can inherit it.”

“If you work with us, Dragon Palace will be yours!”

Ying Wu Xie shouted.

Bai Ning Bing had no reaction, the super Gu formation was continuing to attack unceasingly.

Ying Wu Xie was stifled, he called out: “Bai Ning Bing, it will be too late if you don’t stop! A great enemy whom we both know of is coming, he has a rank eight level upper extreme heavenly eagle, and has already used luck path methods to find out our location.”

“I am not lying to you, our luck vibrated earlier, you must have sensed it too, right?”

Bai Ning Bing snorted, transmitting: “I would like him to come here. I want to cooperate with him, even if I have to give up this Bai Xiang grotto-heaven, so be it.”

Ying Wu Xie was anxious, he yelled: “Aren’t we clear what kind of person he is? You are playing with fire, you will get burned to a crisp in the end. Wait, why do you want to cooperate with him?”

Bai Ning Bing sneered: “This is our business, it has nothing to do with you. The four of you should just die here!”

Ying Wu Xie had a flash of inspiration: “I know, you want that rotation Gu in his hands? That’s right, you used the humans alike dragons Gu refinement method but turned into a dragon lady. You want to become a man, you need to solve the origin of the issue. I have the Gu worm that you need! It is with me.”

“What?” Bai Ning Bing was surprised.

For the first time since the super Gu formation attacking Ying Wu Xie had activated, it showed signs of slowing down.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1241: Journey in Black Heaven

Zhao Lian Yun stood at the top of the Immortal Gu House, Wind Sweeping Building, looking outside.

Only to see that black heaven was covered in darkness, a dark veil was shrouding the surroundings.

But there was light.

Small specks of blurry lights appeared in Zhao Lian Yun’s vision, they seemed far away.

Black heaven was huge, or rather, the immemorial nine heavens were all huge, every layer of the heavens would have the collective size of the five regions.

But because of Ren Zu and his ten children, only black heaven and white heaven were left now.

“We finally got past the heavenly wind qi wall and entered black heaven.”

“This is black heaven? It seems peaceful.”

The surrounding Gu Immortals started conversing.

There were more people on this floor than Zhao Lian Yun and Bu Zhen Zi.

“We entered black heaven.” Wei Ling Yang transmitted to the other two rank eight Gu Immortals.

Right now, the three Immortal Gu Houses changed their positions again.

Edge Link Camp was at the lead, flying in front, while Canary Pavilion and Wind Sweeping Building were at its sides respectively, slightly towards the back.

The other rank six and seven Gu Immortals have never entered black heaven before, they did not know the dangers. Wei Ling Yang, Myriad Tidal Dragon and Bi Chen Tian were very clear about them.

The immemorial nine heavens were usually places only rank eight Gu Immortals could enter and explore for resources.

There were special rank seven Gu Immortals like Feng Jiu Ge and Chu Du, they could enter but at a high risk.

Regardless of anything else, after entering black heaven, the three Immortal Gu Houses became much slower.

Furthermore, the Immortal Gu Houses no longer shined brightly, they were grey and dusty, like three lifeless rocks.

The surrounding Gu Immortals' discussions came to a stop.

The entirety of this floor in Wind Sweeping Building went into silence.

It was completely silent.

The first impression that black heaven gave to Zhao Lian Yun was that it was really huge.

"It seems that we were quite lucky." Bi Chen Tian said.

"We should remain careful, the journey has just started." Myriad Tidal Dragon kept up his vigilance.

Wei Ling Yang suddenly said: "Careful, there is a beast group ahead."

The three Immortal Gu Houses went even slower now, even with such a strong lineup, the three rank eight Gu Immortals were careful and moved with vigilance.

Loud sounds soon entered Zhao Lian Yun's ears.

"What are those things?"

"It seems like a group of boars."

Many Gu Immortals leaned on the windows, looking outside.

Soon, the immortals gasped in succession.

With the power of the Immortal Gu Houses, the Gu Immortals could see past the dark veil, noting that a large group of boars were below them.

Pigs were flying in the sky, was it quite funny?

No, the Gu Immortals had different feelings.

They were all shocked!

"These are astral wind flying heavenly boars, my goodness, there are so many."

"It is hard to imagine that each astral wind flying heavenly boar is an ancient desolate beast that has rank seven Gu Immortal battle strength. It is rare to see one in the five regions, but here there are hundreds.”

“Thankfully, desolate beasts have low intelligence, they do not have the intelligence of humans.”

The Gu Immortals felt gladness amidst their shock.

These astral wind flying heavenly boars were snorting loudly as they flew in the sky. Under the immortals’ gazes, the leading boar king who had the largest body suddenly charged and stomped its feet into the heavenly wind qi wall.

Immediately, the astral wind flying heavenly boars behind the boar king did the same.

They were agile like flying fish, they had agility incomparable with their boar bodies, they charged into the heavenly wind qi wall.

Soon, the large group of astral wind flying heavenly boars vanished from sight.

Bu Zhen Zi stood beside Zhao Lian Yun, sighing: “Nature is wondrous and incredible. Us Gu Immortals have such difficulty passing the heavenly wind qi wall. But for these astral wind flying heavenly boars, it is incredibly easy. The heavenly wind qi wall is like water for fish in the sea.”

At this time, a voice said: “Actually, long ago, Gu Immortals of the past had realized this. They eliminated the astral wind flying heavenly boars and used the immortal materials gathered from their bodies to refine qi path Immortal Gu. These qi path Immortal Gu were useful in helping the Gu Immortals pass the heavenly wind qi wall.”

Bu Zhen Zi and Zhao Lian Yun turned around, only to see a young male Gu Immortal as beautiful as a female, he stood before them quietly, smiling.

Bu Zhen Zi’s eyes shined, he recognized this person.

The young male Gu Immortal cupped his fists and greeted: “I am Yu Yi Ye Zi from Ancient Soul Sect, greets to senior Bu Zhen Zi, and Spirit Affinity House’s Current Generation Fairy Zhao.”

“Yu Yi Ye Zi, you may have rank six cultivation level, but you are extremely talented, often, rank seven Gu Immortals would approach you to refine Immortal Gu, or research Immortal Gu recipes, you are one of the top rank six Gu Immortals.” Bu Zhen Zi replied with a praising tone, but most importantly, he was explaining this to Zhao Lian Yun.

Zhao Lian Yun obtained a phantom aperture and placed love Gu inside, after intense training, she finally joined the circle of Gu Immortals.

She was not very familiar with Central Continent’s Gu Immortals.

“Hello, Yu Yi Ye Zi.” Zhao Lian Yun nodded at the young Gu Immortal, before asking: “Since you said that, why did we not use those Immortal Gu when we passed the heavenly wind qi wall?”

Yu Yi Ye Zi laughed: “That is because the era where qi path was strong is over. Right now, countless qi path Gu recipes are lost, and Gu materials used to refine them have gone extinct. Think about it, how many people can enter the immemorial nine heavens? Almost all Gu Immortals can only explore this place after reaching rank eight. Thus, having such an Immortal Gu has little effect on them to begin with.”

Zhao Lian Yun nodded, expressing her understanding.

At this time, clamors could be heard from the immortals by the windows.

Zhao Lian Yun turned around and looked, only to see that a huge patch of black clouds narrowly moved past Wind Sweeping Building.

“Black clouds are very common in black heaven. The ones we are seeing are among the smallest in black heaven. The real giant black clouds are like floating continents in the sky. Deep within the black clouds, there are terrifying fierce beasts or plants.” Yu Yi Ye Zi explained.

Even these smallest black clouds took several minutes for the three Immortal Gu Houses to fly past.

Yu Yi Ye Zi was really knowledgeable, he knew many things that even the rank seven Gu Immortal Bu Zhen Zi was unsure of, and could explain them clearly.

He answered almost all of Zhao Lian Yun’s questions.

The two conversed more as time passed, and the atmosphere was very relaxed.

In the following journey, the three Immortal Gu Houses encountered several black clouds along the way. These black clouds were not very evident in black heaven, without a strong investigative killer move, one would unknowingly fly into them.

The black clouds were like lone islands in the sea, the surface of the black clouds and even the interior were not empty, there were living beings residing there.

The three rank eight Gu Immortals were very careful, they did not move their Immortal Gu Houses into the black clouds.

They would rather take a detour and spend more time to avoid the clouds.

But sometimes, even when you avoid trouble, trouble still comes to you.

Hissing could be heard as a large group of dark venomous snakes flew out of the black clouds, attacking the three Immortal Gu Houses.

These dark venomous snakes were all desolate beast level, while the king snake was an ancient desolate beast.

“How can this be? At this distance, we should not be in the territory of the dark venomous snake group.” Wei Ling Yang was surprised.

“Fight or retreat?” Bi Chen Tian asked.

Wei Ling Yang thought about it: “Retreat, we should avoid fighting to preserve our battle strength, the journey ahead is very long.”

“But retreating won’t be easy, these are dark venomous snakes.” Inside another Immortal Gu House, Myriad Tidal Dragon transmitted.

The dark venomous snakes held grudges, once they lock onto prey, they would not give up.

The three Immortal Gu Houses flew rapidly, but even after a distance, the dark venomous snake group still trailed behind them.

Not only this, more and more dark venomous snakes were emerging from the black clouds.

“So many snakes!”

“That black cloud is like a snake den.”

“I wonder how our three rank eight lords will deal with this?”

“In my opinion, we should fight, we have three Immortal Gu Houses after all!”

“That’s right, these dark venomous snakes have poison path dao marks, and their snake guts are the best immortal material to refine healing Immortal Gu.”

The Gu Immortals inside the Immortal Gu Houses talked to each other, expressing their views.

But the three rank eight Gu Immortals continued to escape, they did not follow their wishes to fight.

They continued flying like this.

The three rank eight Gu Immortals tried to avoid as they retreated, in their following journey, they encountered another group of dark venomous snakes, the size was even larger than before. Other than that, they even encountered bear mosquitoes.

These mosquitoes were huge like bears, they had terrifying mouths. But most importantly, their numbers were huge, far greater than the dark venomous snakes.

The bear mosquito group was very large, on one occasion, the three Immortal Gu Houses were surrounded by a group of bear mosquitoes, they had to fight.

Each bear mosquito had desolate beast battle strength.

Tens of thousands of bear mosquitoes attacked at once, what did that mean?

It was terrifying!

After that battle, the Gu Immortals who wanted to fight all shut up, they realized how dangerous black heaven was.

Thankfully, they had three Immortal Gu Houses and the protection of rank eight Gu Immortals, otherwise, they would all die under the attacks of the bear mosquitoes.

After flying for a while more, they started seeing starlight ahead.

Above a black cloud, there was star fragment grass growing with countless insect groups living on top of the grassland.

The three Immortal Gu Houses stopped for the first time, several Gu Immortals were sent out to harvest the star fragment grass and other resources.

“Did you all feel it?” Wei Ling Yang transmitted.

“That’s right, this journey in black heaven is especially smooth, I have never encountered this when exploring black heaven.” Bi Chen Tian sighed.

Myriad Tidal Dragon continued: “Perhaps the most crucial thing currently in saving Ma Hong Yun is Zhao Lian Yun’s existence, it affects our luck. These clouds in the immemorial nine heavens normally float randomly, they have no fixed pattern, even heaven’s will cannot interfere with their movement. Whatever we encounter is up to luck.”

Wei Ling Yang nodded: “I think so too.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1242: Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace

Above the vast sea of clouds, a person was standing still, looking at the clouds move as he remained silent.

This person wore an azure-gold suit of armor, his beard extended to his chest, he was a muscular man with an old appearance, it was South Desolation Immortal.

“I, Yao Huang, pay respects to Lord South Desolation!” A figure emerged, it was Yao tribe’s first supreme elder, rank eight Gu Immortal Yao Huang.

South Desolation Immortal turned around and said while smiling: “We are both rank eights, just treat me as a friend, no need to be so polite.”

Yao Huang bowed reverently: “In terms of cultivation level, Lord South Desolation, you are far beyond me. In terms of seniority, I am a descendant of countless generations below you, how can I be so rude?”

South Desolation Immortal nodded, sighing: “You are good, but it is a pity that our Huang Jin bloodline is dwindling. In this huge Northern Plains, outside of Longevity Heaven, you are the sole rank eight Gu Immortal that belongs to a Huang Jin tribe!”

Prince Feng Xian was a member of Gong tribe, but from South Desolation Immortal’s perspective, he was an outsider in terms of bloodline.

“Back in my generation, there were four rank eights in the Huang Jin tribes, one of them was known as the Tiger God, he had incredible might, he was thought highly of by the people and was a potential seed to ascend to rank nine. Unfortunately, he died in black heaven. Time is merciless, the Huang Jin bloodline is declining every generation.”

South Desolation Immortal showed deep disappointment in his eyes.

Yao Huang could not speak.

Yao Huang was not qualified to speak such criticism of the Huang Jin bloodline, only South Desolation Immortal had the right to comment on it.

And he was expressing a fact as well.

Yao Huang had nothing to retort.

It was like this, Northern Plains’ Huang Jin tribes were degrading, they were lacking talents, in contrast, lone and demonic cultivators were rising up with large numbers of geniuses, like Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, Chu Du, and that Liu Guan Yi as well.

“However, Ancestor Giant Sun had anticipated this situation.” South Desolation Immortal suddenly said, causing Yao Huang to feel great shock.

“Oh? Ancestor Giant Sun lived in the Medieval Antiquity Era, he could predict this future situation?”

"Even though our ancestor cultivated luck path, his wisdom path capabilities were not low at all. Furthermore, 'luck' is uncertainty in essence, ancestor created luck path, he naturally learned the true meaning of change in this world. After he created Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he proclaimed that this building was bound to fall one day, when it did, a great era would begin, it was a sign of changing times." South Desolation Immortal added.

Yao Huang was shocked: "Is that so?"

What was a great era?

It was a great era if an Immortal Venerable or Demon Venerable could come into existence.

South Desolation Immortal sighed deeply: "Ancestor Giant Sun spent a lot of effort and set up many arrangements to help his descendants and preserve strength. He wanted to ensure that they would be part of the wave in this great era's storms and tides. In the worst case, he wanted to ensure that his bloodline would be passed down intact."

Yao Huang hesitated: "No matter how weak our Huang Jin bloodline becomes, we must be able to defend ourselves, at least? Northern Plains is still under our control, and even if we are useless, there is still Longevity Heaven."

South Desolation Immortal shook his head: "Longevity Heaven might be strong, but it is just the immortal aperture of our ancestor. Meanwhile, Heavenly Court has the immortal apertures of three Immortal Venerables, and all of the members of Heavenly Court have contributed their own grotto-heavens throughout history. How can Longevity Heaven's foundation compare to Heavenly Court? Like right now, Central Continent came to invade us, they sent three rank eight Gu Immortals and three Immortal Gu Houses. Does our Huang Jin bloodline possess such strength?"

Yao Huang was tongue-tied: "What? Central Continent invaded?!"

South Desolation Immortal did not explain, he said: "Follow me."

Saying this, he flew to the sky.

Yao Huang quickly followed after him.

The two immortals flew through the heavenly wind qi wall, getting into black heaven.

Under South Desolation Immortal's lead, Yao Huang headed towards the southeast direction.

After flying for a while, Yao Huang was shaken: "Black heaven is such a dangerous place, even though I explore it often for rank eight immortal materials, I have never had such a smooth journey without any obstacles before. Don't tell me Lord South Desolation has a map of black heaven?"

But the truth was, maps did not work in the immemorial nine heavens.

The clouds that were in the nine heavens were constantly changing. Some were in specific locations, but those were rare and few.

The Central Continent group had a relatively smooth trip, but they still encountered trouble like the astral wind flying heavenly boar group, the dark venomous snake group and other problems. South Desolation Immortal and Yao Huang met with absolutely no issues, they were safe and sound, as if they were strolling in their own garden.

“Alright, this is the place.” South Desolation Immortal stopped flying.

Yao Huang also slowed down, stopping beside him.

He felt a little strange, this place was empty, without a trace of wind, why was South Desolation Immortal stopping here?

At the next moment, South Desolation Immortal answered him with an action.

His body shined with golden light, like a fragment of the sun, Yao Huang had to close his eyes in response.

Yao Huang’s heart jumped.

Black heaven was dark and eerie, this action of creating strong light would attract the attack of countless fierce beasts.

Even though he became alert, no beast groups came attacking.

“Is this really black heaven?” Yao Huang wondered.

A moment later, South Desolation Immortal’s immortal killer move was completed, a grand dark gold palace appeared out of nowhere, revealing its majestic appearance.

Yao Huang had never expected an Immortal Gu House to be hidden here.

But he quickly realized what this palace was, he became extremely agitated as he called out: “This is Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace?”

Calamity Luck Altar, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, these were the three Immortal Gu Houses that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable owned during his life.

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was placed in Imperial Court blessed land by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Calamity Luck Altar was kept in Longevity Heaven, while this Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace was placed in black heaven, hidden for countless years!

“Ancestor Giant Sun placed Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace here, there clearly are deep intentions. But what was he planning?”

Yao Huang continued to guess as South Desolation Immortal turned around to look at him: “Follow me.”

Yao Huang followed South Desolation Immortal, entering Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

“Both of you have arrived.” Inside the hall, there was one person.

He sat on a cushion, he was not formed from will, he opened his eyes as lightning flashed in his eyes, golden radiance shone brightly.

Yao Huang saw this and shuddered, huge waves were churning in his heart: “Ancestor, Ancestor Giant Sun?!”

...

Howl!

The wolf group called out, chasing after the three Immortal Gu Houses.

These wolves had long and slim bodies, they had black eyes, claws, and fangs, they were emitting cold glints of light. Most amazingly, they had no fur on their bodies, they had black and shiny leather armor that were very tough.

This was a night heavenly wolf group. The size was huge, there were over ten thousand night heavenly wolves.

Each night heavenly wolf was a desolate beast, wolf kings were ancient desolate beasts, there was even a wolf emperor, it had rank eight battle strength!

“We can’t escape, we are surrounded.”

“To think that the wolf emperor has a wild rank eight Immortal Gu that can conceal traces!”

“A wolf group of this scale is not seen often in black heaven, we actually met one.”

The three rank eight Gu Immortals conversed rapidly.

Wei Ling Yang shouted: “Charge towards the northwest!”

Edge Link Camp opened a path in front, its aura rose as immortal essence was expended rapidly, forming a huge charging horn.

Wherever the giant horn went, it pierced into the wolf formation, creating a huge hole as several hundred desolate beast night heavenly wolves died.

The Immortal Gu House charged into the wolf group, as Canary Pavilion and Wind Sweeping Building followed close after it.

The huge battle was dangerous and terrifying.

The wolf emperor attacked during the battle, its huge hill-like claws sent the Immortal Gu Houses flying.

Thankfully, each of the Immortal Gu Houses had a rank eight Gu Immortal inside, the three Immortal Gu Houses could display their might and kill countless wolves.

The wolf group’s encirclement tactic was at an incredibly profound level, even though the three Immortal Gu Houses charged ahead, they could not break out.

Eventually, the wolf emperor howled and retreated with the other wolves, causing this bloodbath to end.

The wolf group had sustained losses that were too huge, the wolf emperor did not want to weaken it any further, thus it left.

The three Immortal Gu Houses were extremely damaged, a great number of Gu worms were destroyed, including three Immortal Gu. The three rank eight Gu Immortals also worked up a sweat, they were in difficult conditions.

Their immortal essence expenditure was immense.

“Why is it that the closer we get to Northern Plains, the harder it becomes?”

“We have already encountered five night heavenly wolf groups, we also met dragon crocodiles, ghost spirit foxes... it seems like countless beast groups are trying to kill us.”

“Forget about these beast groups, the most important thing is that we cannot encounter any black-white overturning clouds anymore. That time, this Wind Sweeping Building almost failed to come back.”

“Let’s rest first and fix the Immortal Gu Houses.” Wei Ling Yang said.

The three Immortal Gu Houses had just stopped, when countless lights illuminated an enormous surrounding range.

It resembled the blooming of countless flowers, the sparks were light red and looked like countless overlapping petals of flowers, but inside the flames, there were dark spots.

“Oh no, this is a special phenomenon of black heaven – black lanterns, blind fire nurtures inside them, do not look at them!” Bi Chen Tian shouted as he shut his eyes.

But it was too late, many Gu Immortals only took one look before they lost their sight.

Inside the three Immortal Gu Houses, screaming and shouting could be heard, it was chaotic.

Zhao Lian Yun was quite lucky, she was facing the interior of the Gu House as she spoke to Yu Yi Ye Zi.

Yu Yi Ye Zi looked at the blind fire from the black lanterns, feeling his vision weakening rapidly as it turned blurry, he quickly shut his eyes.

He was very knowledgeable, but many Gu Immortals were not.

Some were leaning on the windows as they looked around, they saw at least ten thousand blind fires, their vision turned completely dark, losing the ability to see anything.

The three Immortal Gu Houses quickly escaped hurriedly.

Black lanterns did not cause any physical damage, unlike wind or rain, the Immortal Gu Houses charged through them as they quickly left the black lanterns behind.

The three rank eight Gu Immortals counted, at least three people permanently lost their sight without any ways to recover. Seven had severely weakened vision, it greatly affected their battle strength, but it could be salvaged at a high price, some healing Immortal Gu were needed to be sent through treasure yellow heaven.

“We just left the wolf group and wanted to rest, when we encountered black lanterns, while at the center of them! This is too unlucky.”

“Wait, what is that?”

A swarm of ants were approaching.

Each ant was a Gu worm.

Nether ant Gu!

“Nether ants open a path, there has to be a soul beast army of hundreds of thousands or even millions. Run, quickly run!”

The three Immortal Gu Houses had just stopped when they were forced to flee again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1243: A Favor

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable actually appeared in front of Yao Huang.

Yao Huang was overwhelmed with shock, he could not believe it.

“I, South Desolation, pay respects to Immortal Venerable.” At this time, South Desolation Immortal greeted respectfully.

“This unfilial descendant greets ancestor!” Yao Huang was shaking from excitement, he quickly knelt down on the ground, tears flowing over his face.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled lightly: “Stand up, my main body has already died, I am merely a corpse sitting before you now.”

Yao Huang raised his head in shock, after inspection, he finally saw that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable in front of him was not alive, he was an immortal zombie.

Ever since Red Lotus Demon Venerable damaged fate Gu, all souls in this world could remain in the realm of the living, since then, zombies appeared.

Gradually, when Gu Immortals realized they had insufficient lifespan, they would become immortal zombies, it was their best alternative.

Even though Heavenly Court was against it and tried to stop it, they could not resist the desires of humans, more and more immortal zombies showed up in the five regions.

Ordinary Gu Immortals could become immortal zombies, there was no reason why Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could not do the same, right?

Thinking of this, Yao Huang’s doubts vanished.

Giant Sun immortal zombie continued to explain: “Right now, other than my body, I only have some remnant will left inside this body.”

But Yao Huang was still very excited: “Undeniably, you are the source of our Huang Jin bloodline, our common ancestor. As long as you show yourself, all of the Huang Jin tribes would end their conflicts and be united as one. The entirety of Northern Plains would belong to us Huang Jin tribes again!”

But Giant Sun immortal zombie shook his head: “My main body died long ago, I only left a corpse behind. I did not manage to surpass rank nine and attain eternal life, what is the point of showing myself? I will just be a laughing stock.”

“Furthermore, my body only has one attack left, if I move even slightly, it will fizzle out.”

“Just one attack?” Yao Huang was shocked, the admiration and excitement in his eyes did not fade at all: “Even if ancestor can only attack once, it will definitely shake heaven and earth, and make the sun and moon pale in comparison.”

Giant Sun immortal zombie laughed: “That is naturally the case. But don’t count on it. I set Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace here to defend Northern Plains. But I left this body behind for another reason, I need to return a favor.”

“A favor?” Yao Huang was shocked.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable became an immortal zombie and stayed in Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace for three hundred thousand years just to return a favor.

Who was it, who could make a great Immortal Venerable owe a favor?

And this favor was so huge that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had to do this?

Yao Huang was very confused, but Giant Sun immortal zombie did not explain it, he said: “Right now, Central Continent invaded but I cannot fight them off. Don’t count on me, it all depends on you two.”

Yao Huang slowly stood up with a solemn expression: “Central Continent’s Gu Immortals might have a strong lineup, but we have Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, myself and Lord South Desolation. Don’t worry ancestor, I will defend against these people at all costs, even if I have to give up my life, I will do so without hesitation.”

Giant Sun immortal zombie looked at Yao Huang before shutting his eyes, returning to an inactive state.

At this moment, he seemed to have become a statue, he no longer spoke.

Yao Huang did not know why, but South Desolation Immortal patted his shoulder: “Come with me.”

The two immortals left the main hall, going to the hall behind it.

Yao Huang was still excited from earlier: “Please give me orders, Lord South Desolation, I will do whatever it takes!”

South Desolation Immortal shook his head: “Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace is a rank eight Immortal Gu House, it was created by Ancestor Giant Sun personally using the heaven and earth luck true inheritance. Ancestor Giant Sun had great foresight, he placed Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace here for three hundred thousand years, suppressing this area until now. Do you know what heaven and earth luck is?”

Yao Huang was dazed, muttering: “Heaven and earth luck...”

South Desolation Immortal did not wait for a response, he smiled: “A person has their own luck, a beast has its luck, a blade of grass also has its own luck. Any life form has luck. Other than that, rocks, rivers, they all have luck. And for the entirety of this heaven and earth, there is also heaven luck and earth luck.”

“The heaven and earth luck true inheritance deciphers the profundities of heaven and earth, researching them, using them, and changing them.”

“Forget the fact that there are three rank eight Gu Immortals who brought three Immortal Gu Houses with them, even if they doubled in numbers, once they came here, they were goners.”

“I did not call you here for you to risk your life. You are the only rank eight Huang Jin bloodline descendant outside of Longevity Heaven.”

“Huh?” Yao Huang was shocked.

South Desolation Immortal continued: “I have little lifespan left, after surviving for so long, lifespan Gu stopped working on me. Next, I want you to see how I manipulate this Immortal Gu House, and eliminate these Central Continent Gu Immortals. After I die, you will inherit my position as South Desolation.”

Yao Huang stared with wide opened eyes, shouting: “Lord South Desolation!”

...

Wind Sweeping Building was silent inside.

The black lanterns were like wind, rain, and lightning, they were a unique type of phenomenon in black heaven.

They were not unprotected, but the black lanterns appeared too suddenly. And most importantly, when they appeared, Canary Pavilion, Wind Sweeping Building, and Edge Link Camp were right at the center of countless black lanterns.

Normally speaking, when rank eight Gu Immortals explored black heaven, if they saw any black lanterns, they would avoid them from afar.

This time, the Central Continent Gu Immortals had just escaped the night heavenly wolf group, they relaxed and did not expect the black lanterns to appear, thus, many Gu Immortals were heavily injured as a result.

At the top of Wind Sweeping Building.

“Father! Your eyes?!” Rank six Gu Immortal Shi Zheng Yi had tears in his eyes as he sobbed.

His father was a famous rank seven Gu Immortal expert, to think that he was one of the three who went blind.

When the black lanterns appeared, he was using an investigative killer move to observe the wolf group, his investigative killer move was very useful, but that resulted in him losing his vision instead.

It was confirmed that from now on, Shi Ge would no longer be able to see, he would be a blind man that could never use his eyes again.

But Shi Ge was calm, he stretched out his arm, patting Shi Zheng Yi’s head, saying: “So what if I lose my sight? I have many methods and countless investigative killer moves, even if I lose my vision, I can still cultivate and fight. What is the matter?”

“But...” Shi Zheng Yi lowered his head and gritted his teeth, almost at the point of crying.

“My son, don’t cry easily. Gu Immortal cultivation is full of dangers. As long as we are still alive, we should continue charging ahead. Don’t cry like a weakling. Don’t you like listening to stories? Think about those protagonists, how did they live?” Shi Ge said softly.

Shi Zheng Yi nodded: “Father, I understand!”

Even the rank seven Gu Immortal expert Shi Ge lost his sight from this.

Zhao Lian Yun looked at this as her heart shook, she felt that this Immortal Gu House, Wind Sweeping Building, was not so safe after all.

But she soon thought of Ma Hong Yun.

“Hong Yun, wait for me. No matter how dangerous and hard this is, I will find you and rescue you!”

Zhao Lian Yun cheered herself on as determination shone in her eyes.

“Yu Yi Ye Zi, how are you?” Zhao Lian Yun asked the young Gu Immortal beside her.

This refinement path Gu Immortal had been sitting on the ground with his eyes shut after seeing the black lanterns outside the window, he had been using an immortal killer move to heal himself.

Hearing Zhao Lian Yun’s question, Yu Yi Ye Zi did not stop his immortal killer move, he spoke without opening his eyes: “Thankfully, I realized early on and shut my eyes, if I was a bit slower, I would not be able to heal myself.”

Yu Yi Ye Zi did not speak anymore.

He stopped talking.

Cold sweat was still remaining on his forehead, as he experienced lingering fear.

Gradually, the Gu Immortals became silent, inside the three Immortal Gu Houses, they were enveloped with a solemn mood.

Outside the Immortal Gu House, there were soul howls, it was disturbing to the ears, even if the Immortal Gu House was dampening the effect.

Bu Zhen Zi looked outside worriedly: “Oh no, we are encircled by a soul beast army.”

Zhao Lian Yun heard this and looked outside, only to see countless nether ant Gu surrounding the three Immortal Gu Houses, like waves of black river currents..

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1244: Star Cloud Storm

Outside, there were countless nether ant Gu, with the figures of soul beasts among them, they were truly a massive army. The shocking thing was that their auras were joined together like a group of mountains, they would be incredibly powerful once they moved, like a tsunami that crashed down with endless might.

Not just the size of the soul beast army, but also the fact that there were many ancient and immemorial soul beasts among them. The Gu Immortals could also sense the auras of many wild Immortal Gu.

“Five immemorial soul beasts!”

“We have just left the black lanterns, and now a soul beast army is here.”

The three rank eight Gu Immortals conversed secretly.

They were having a bad feeling regarding how the situation was developing, their luck was too bad, it was very suspicious.

Wei Ling Yang said grimly: “It seems that we need to consider the worst case scenarios in our trip from now on.”

“Damn it!” Bi Chen Tian clenched his fists: “Ever since Red Lotus Demon Venerable damaged fate Gu, the door of life and death became much weaker in absorbing souls. Many strong souls are able to stay in this world. After Spectral Soul Demon Venerable ascended, the world changed in that great era, and soul beasts appeared, many souls even directly turned into soul beasts. Right now in immemorial black heaven, soul beasts are rampant in great numbers, when can we eradicate them and return to world to its rightful form?”

“Soon!” Myriad Tidal Dragon added: “After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, most of the immortal zombies in the world were destroyed. These were fate escapees that were meant to die, now that they are dead, the difficulty of refining fate Immortal Gu lowered drastically. With Granny Sha repairing it now, even without success dao marks from Infallible blessed land, we are still making huge progress.”

Wei Ling Yang shook his head: “Take note, the soul beast army is coming. The matter at hand is to try and escape from the soul beast army!”

Myriad Tidal Dragon sighed: “The best way is to use Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s defensive method, the killer move that pairs with divine concealment — Ghostly Concealment. Rumors has it that the Gu Immortal who possesses this immortal killer move would not be detected by soul beasts at all. But now, let’s use my dragon flow escape.”

“But in this case, I need to bring myself and three Immortal Gu Houses with me, along with many Gu Immortals. Once I use this move, I will not be able to fight for the next three days.”

The three immortals discussed and decided to use Myriad Tidal Dragon’s method.

Dragons roared!

Countless flying dragon phantoms appeared in the air, encircling the three Immortal Gu Houses.

The white dragon phantoms were like a long river, an uncountable number of dragons made of light, grand and unstoppable, charging forward with the three Immortal Gu Houses.

The soul beast army howled, blocking them with multiple layers.

But dragon flow escape was incredible, by charging relentlessly, an opening was forcibly created as the three Immortal Gu Houses escaped from the dangerous soul beast army.

The soul beasts moved quickly, the army did not give up, it followed closely behind.

Myriad Tidal Dragon did not dare to deactivate ‘dragon flow escape’, he had to grit his teeth and continue fuelling it.

Both sides chased for six hours, until the soul beast army gave up, its attention was drawn to a group of dark venomous snakes.

“I’m spent! I need to rest for seven days before I can do anything again. It will depend on the rest of you now.” Myriad Tidal Dragon had a pale expression, his face turned white, his originally vigorous eyes were filled with traces of blood, like he was completely exhausted beyond his limits.

After stopping the killer move dragon flow escape, Myriad Tidal Dragon fell backwards as he sank into deep sleep.

His eyes were shut as he snored.

His snore was special, it sounded like the roaring of dragons.

As he slept, a thick fog appeared around his body.

The thick fog started to form into a cocoon, two hours later, the cocoon thickened and turned into a pale white dragon egg.

“We are free from those soul beasts.”

“It was really dangerous!”

“The killer move earlier seemed to be from one of the three rank eight great experts, Lord Myriad Tidal Dragon’s method, it was truly grand and majestic, I was completely in awe.”

Inside the three Immortal Gu Houses, the Gu Immortals were cheering and praising.

But Bi Chen Tian and Wei Ling Yang had grim expressions.

Myriad Tidal Dragon had fallen into deep sleep, they had lost one of their three rank eights, but the journey was still around half done.

The three Immortal Gu Houses slowed down as the Gu Immortals inside tried to repair the Immortal Gu Houses.

In the next two hours, the Central Continent Gu Immortals encountered several ghost spirit fox groups and bear mosquito groups. They either retreated or fought, using the might of the Immortal Gu Houses to move forward.

Bi Chen Tian’s heart suddenly shook, his lips curled into a smile as he said: “Lord Wei Ling Yang, I found a huge field of heaven attached fungi three thousand li away from here.”

“Is that so? Wei Ling Yang let out a breath of air: “Then we will rest there.”

The three Immortal Gu Houses turned around and flew away, in a while, all three Immortal Gu Houses landed on the surface of the heaven attached fungi.

“Where is this? Are we safe?” Zhao Lian Yun looked outside in shock. Especially when she saw her Gu Immortal companions leaving the Immortal Gu House to move freely on the heaven attached fungi.

Yu Yi Ye Zi smiled as he explained: “The immemorial nine heavens have their own special points. Like the black lantern phenomenon, it is unique to black heaven. But in the nine heavens, there are some common aspects, like the astral wind flying heavenly boar, or this heaven attached fungi.”

“This fungi only grows in the immemorial nine heavens. Heaven attached fungi is a rank six immortal material, most importantly, it has to grow on its own without any foreign dao marks, other life forms and even rocks cannot exist here. Thus, once we see a field of heaven attached fungi, we know it is a safe place to rest at. Alright, I have to go out now and collect some heaven attached fungi, this is a rare opportunity.”

Yu Yi Ye Zi quickly left Wind Sweeping Building.

Zhao Lian Yun had no interest in the heaven attached fungi, she had just become a Gu Immortal, it had been too little time, she did not know the importance of cultivation resources, she was only thinking of how to save her lover Ma Hong Yun.

A moment later, there were no Gu Immortals left in Wind Sweeping Building.

“Are you not going to collect some heaven attached fungi?” Zhao Lian Yun looked at Bu Zhen Zi, asking this.

Bu Zhen Zi smiled: “The sect ordered me to protect you, I will not leave you for even a second.”

Zhao Lian Yun was understanding towards this: “Then I will go down as well.”

Bu Zhen Zi shook his head: “Thank you for the thought, but even if we are standing on the heaven attached fungi, I will not pick them. That would only distract me, if anything happens, it will be too late to regret it.”

Zhao Lian Yun heard this and felt warmth in her heart, she said softly: “Thank you.”

Bu Zhen Zi shook his head: “No need to be so polite, you are the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House, my duty is to protect you.”

Zhao Lian Yun sighed, leaning on the window as she said gloomily: “To think that black heaven is so dangerous, but there is such a safe place here. It shows that heaven always leaves a way out, we will definitely succeed in this trip. Right?”

Bu Zhen Zi did not hesitate, he answered: “Of... course.”

But he suddenly dragged out his words in a strange tone.

At the same time, Zhao Lian Yun saw that there were some starlight shining far away.

This was not the blind fire from black lanterns, of course, the color was different. This blue starlight resembled countless diamonds embedded on black silk, it was distant and unforgettable.

Zhao Lian Yun squinted as she sighed: “So beautiful.”

“Very dangerous! According to the records, this size...” Bu Zhen Zi turned pale, he said in a trembling tone.

Zhao Lian Yun became alert: “What?”

She had just asked when the warning and orders of rank eight Gu Immortal Bi Chen Tian came.

Outside the Immortal Gu House, Gu Immortals were rushing back in a panic.

Wei Ling Yang’s gaze was like an eagle, he looked at the approaching starlight with a grim expression: “What a huge star cloud storm!”

Millions upon millions of stars were flying now.

Some shooting stars had long trails left in the night sky. Among which were huge stars, some were island-sized, while some were as large as a piece of land.

Between stars, there were countless starlight specks, like the weaving of a web of lightning.

The star cloud storm was a phenomenon unique to immemorial blue heaven, but due to historical reasons, immemorial blue heaven shattered and large numbers of stars fell into immemorial black heaven.

Thus, there were star cloud storms in black heaven as well.

“This is the first time I am seeing a star cloud storm of this scale!” Bi Chen Tian had an ugly expression: “Now it seems, this heaven attached fungi field was a trap to lure us to rest here!”.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1245: Watching A Meteor Shower With You

The star cloud storm’s range was too huge, it was fast and powerful.

The three Immortal Gu Houses from Central Continent could not escape from it.

The stars flew over endlessly, lightning clouds were rumbling as starlight shot out continuously, it was a magnificent sight, but one could only feel weak and helpless, expressing nothing but shock at this.

“I will charge ahead with Edge Link Camp, the rest of you follow me.” At the crucial moment, Wei Ling Yang decided this.

The three Immortal Gu Houses flew towards the star cloud storm.

The huge Immortal Gu Houses were like tiny ants in front of the star cloud storm.

Heaven and earth was growling loudly.

The star cloud storm was like a prehistoric whale, swallowing the three Central Continent Immortal Gu Houses easily.

The three Immortal Gu Houses were unable to satisfy the appetite of this star cloud storm.

Rumble...

Wind Sweeping Building was shaking intensely.

Zhao Lian Yun could not stand stably, she fell to the ground. Outside the window, countless glaring starlight specks were shining in, turning the entirety of Wind Sweeping Building blue.

Zhao Lian Yun felt like she was on a plank in a stormy sea, she was enduring the might of the tides and strikes of lightning.

Her mouth was dry, she was scared, even with Gu Immortal battle strength, she could not resolve this problem.

She could only rely on the Immortal Gu Houses, on the three rank eight great experts.

Zhao Lian Yun did not know that among the three rank eight Gu Immortals, Myriad Tidal Dragon was sleeping now. Thankfully, Wind Sweeping Building was under Bi Chen Tian’s control, the situation was better than Canary Pavilion.

But even so, Bi Chen Tian was covered in sweat, he was concentrating and did not dare to relax his mind.

He moved Wind Sweeping Building and traveled in the star cloud storm, continuously avoiding the huge stars.

These stars moved quickly, if Wind Sweeping Building crashed into them, it would suffer huge damage. Even though Wind Sweeping Building was an Immortal Gu House, and would not break apart from just a few stars, in this situation, once Wind Sweeping Building loses control of its movement, it would slow down and be hit by endless number of stars. If that happened, it would be destroyed inside this star cloud storm, everyone would die.

“Gu Immortals are powerful, and Immortal Gu Houses are useful, but against the might of heaven and earth, we are still minuscule and insignificant.” Bi Chen Tian gritted his teeth: “Oh no!”

He could not react in time, Wind Sweeping Building finally got hit, a hill-like star crashed into Wind Sweeping Building with the ferocity of a storm.

Wind Sweeping Building’s entire size was less than ten percent of the star.

But it was an Immortal Gu House, it was sturdy.

It was the star which shattered instead of Wind Sweeping Building.

But the impact of the star’s collision sent Wind Sweeping Building flying far away through brute force.

The three Immortal Gu Houses were working together and flying alongside each other earlier, but now, the other two Immortal Gu Houses dodged the star while Wind Sweeping Building was pushed away from the group.

“Bi Chen.... quick.....” Wei Ling Yang’s voice could be heard.

But in this star cloud storm, fragments were everywhere, the uncountable number of star path dao marks were disrupting the information path communication method of Wei Ling Yang and Bi Chen Tian.

Bi Chen Tian could only hear a short and incomplete message.

But he knew what Wei Ling Yang wanted to say.

Wei Ling Yang wanted him to try and catch up with them!

In the star cloud storm, Wei Ling Yang could not stay behind or even have any strength to reinforce Bi Chen Tian. Because around him, Canary Pavilion also needed to be taken care of.

Bi Chen Tian had to rely on himself.

“Let’s do it.” Bi Chen Tian shouted, his eyes shone with endless brilliance, his rank eight aura surged like a tornado.

Wind Sweeping Building shone with a jade green light, which quickly turned into fierce winds rapidly.

The winds moved and howled shrilly.

These deep green colored winds joined together, forming into a strong and sturdy tornado pillar.

Immortal Gu House Wind Sweeping Building stabilized, the surrounding stars were all pushed away by the wind pillar.

“This is Wind Sweeping Building’s strongest method!” Yu Yi Ye Zi was roused, his eyes shone with light as he said excitedly.

Wind Sweeping Building was at the center of the wind pillar, it was completely peaceful here, as if they had left the terrible tsunami and landed on a shore.

The Gu Immortals inside Wind Sweeping Building erupted into cheers.

Zhao Lian Yun had just crawled up from the floor when a huge star crashed into the tornado wind pillar, before breaking in and assaulting Wind Sweeping Building.

At the crucial moment, Bi Chen Tian had a timely response, he controlled Wind Sweeping Building and lowered their altitude.

This huge star grazed past Wind Sweeping Building.

Some Gu Immortals by the window could see that at the moment near collision, the star had countless holes on the surface, they could be seen due to the close proximity.

The Gu Immortals who were normally graceful and elegant screamed again, they were like mortals who were experiencing natural disasters.

Wind Sweeping Building moved with difficulty inside the star cloud storm.

Even though this Immortal Gu House used its strongest method, against the star cloud storm, it was not enough.

Some huge stars approached forcefully, directly crashing into the tornado wind pillar.

And between the stars, there was a chaotic magnetic field, these fields repelled, attracted, and crushed Wind Sweeping Building.

Wind Sweeping Building had to dodge those stars while under the might of these magnetic fields, thankfully it was the rank eight Gu Immortal Bi Chen Tian holding the fort, any rank seven Gu Immortal would falter for sure.

However, even Bi Chen Tian was covered in sweat, his rank eight immortal essence was rapidly expended, his expenditure far surpassed any battle he had ever had.

“This will not do, this star cloud storm is too huge, I do not know when I can escape!” Bi Chen Tian had a thought as he ordered for the Gu Immortals to send their immortal essence into Wind Sweeping Building.

The Gu Immortals quickly contributed their efforts, including Zhao Lian Yun.

She had a phantom aperture, but she had refined immortal essence stones before and accumulated some immortal essence.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

From time to time, huge stars would crash into the wind pillar, most would be dodged by Wind Sweeping Building, but some still hit.

The magnetic fields were everywhere, like a cruel giant toying around with Wind Sweeping Building.

Inside the Immortal Gu House, the Gu Immortals did not speak, they were infusing their immortal essence into Wind Sweeping Building wholeheartedly.

The atmosphere was tense.

Every time a giant star crashed, many Gu Immortals’ bodies shook.

Zhao Lian Yun’s heart was in trepidation. She had never been faced with such danger, she would not be surprised if she died at the next moment.

“Hong Yun, Hong Yun...” She thought of Ma Hong Yun’s name, each time she mentally muttered it, her heart returned to peace slightly.

After countless times, Zhao Lian Yun’s mental state became completely peaceful.

“Hong Yun, you had once risked your life for me, do you know? I am doing the same now.”

“Even if I die here, I have no regrets. I am coming to save you!”

“When I meet you, I will tell you that the starlight here is very fierce and dangerous beyond your imagination, it is not romantic at all.”

In a daze, Zhao Lian Yun recalled the past.

At that time, Zhao Lian Yun’s father had died in the battlefield, she was all alone, forced to marry someone else, she had to rely on Ma Hong Yun.

On a small mound.

It was night time, Ma Hong Yun was lying on the grassland with her.

“Lady Xiao Yun, quickly look, it’s a meteor shower!” Ma Hong Yun pointed at the sky as he shouted.

“Boring, you brought me here to see this?” Zhao Lian Yun rolled her eyes: “What is so nice about this?”

“Guh.” Ma Hong Yun scratched his head: “I don’t find it nice either, but they said that to make a girl happy, I need to watch a meteor shower with her. At this time, in Northern Plains, we can often see meteor showers at night.”

Zhao Lian Yun mentally sighed, thinking: “I am so old already, I am afraid only young girls would like this. Hmm? Wait a minute, my body is still young, I am still a young girl.”

At this time, Ma Hong Yun asked: “Lady Xiao Yun, after looking at this meteor shower, has your mood improved?”

Zhao Lian Yun mentally sighed once again, she said in a coaxing tone: “I am much better now, I am so happy, look, this meteor shower is so beautiful, huh.”

Ma Hong Yun’s body shook, he quickly waved his hand: “Lady Xiao Yun, don’t say that, I am getting goosebumps.”

Zhao Lian Yun stood up in an instant, stomping at Ma Hong Yun: “Learning how to woo women out of all things, and you want to flirt with me, you are actually flirting with me.”

Ma Hong Yun was screaming out in pain from getting kicked, shouting: “Lady Xiao Yun, stop, stop it! What is flirting? I have done no such thing. If I did something wrong, I will change it, okay? Stop kicking, stop kicking me!”

Zhao Lian Yun ignored him as Ma Hong Yun rolled around from getting kicked. Eventually, Zhao Lian Yun worked up a sweat, she placed her arms at her waist as she looked at the scurrying Ma Hong Yun, laughing smugly.

Ma Hong Yun heard her laughter and thought: “Lady Xiao Yun is finally laughing, at expected, the meteor shower made her mood better. Gasp... but it is so painful for me.”

Her memories flashed right before Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes.

Unknowingly, Zhao Lian Yun had started smiling.

“Hong Yun, after I save you, I will kick you countless times to celebrate it.” Zhao Lian Yun thought. Right at this time, love Gu inside her phantom aperture actually emitted a profound aura on its own.

The aura was colorless and formless, it spread rapidly.

Ordinary Gu Immortals could not sense it, but Bi Chen Tian’s body shook, his eyes shone with brilliance, he subconsciously thought: “Is this the power of love Gu?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1246: Spaceless Tunnel

Every moment in the star cloud storm was hard to endure.

After a long time.

A certain Gu Immortal in Wind Sweeping Building realized something, saying: “Everyone... for some time already, there have been no stars crashing at us?”

As he said that, the tornado pillar surrounding Wind Sweeping Building vanished instantly.

The immortals saw that in the calm dark night, far away, the star cloud storm was moving away with imposing might.

Wind Sweeping Building was silent for a moment before exploding with cheers.

“We made it!”

“So close, even with an Immortal Gu House defending us, being in immemorial black heaven still poses a danger of dying.”

“Thanks to Lord Bi Chen Tian, otherwise, we would have died in this star cloud storm.”

The Gu Immortals talked with great joy.

Bi Chen Tian had a hazy gaze, he thought: “We were able to escape the star cloud storm all thanks to Zhao Lian Yun’s love Immortal Gu.”

At the crucial moment, love Gu emitted an aura that led Bi Chen Tian towards the correct direction.

Bi Chen Tian controlled Wind Sweeping Building, he followed this direction and quickly escaped from the star cloud storm.

And within the star cloud storm, star path dao marks were filling the area, with conflicting dao marks, Bi Chen Tian’s methods were very ineffective.

Bi Chen Tian’s expression was still gloomy.

“We have already escaped danger, but Wei Ling Yang does not have love Gu, I wonder if they are still struggling inside the star cloud storm.”

After losing contact with the other two Immortal Gu Houses, Bi Chen Tian did not continue on his journey, he moved around the area, searching for them.

Thankfully, half a day later, he successfully contacted Wei Ling Yang.

Wei Ling Yang led Canary Pavilion and charged through the star cloud storm with difficulty. They had left the star cloud storm after Bi Chen Tian, but unfortunately, they were ambushed by a sky chief beast group.

After being informed of this, Bi Chen Tian manipulated Wind Sweeping Building, bringing the Gu Immortals with him to rescue them.

After getting to the ambush site, the Gu Immortals saw Canary Pavilion and Edge Link Camp, they gasped loudly.

These two Immortal Gu Houses were surrounded by sky chief beasts.

Sky chief beasts lived in basically all of the immemorial nine heavens. Each sky chief beast was at least a mutated beast king, they were on par with ordinary beast emperors. And the kings of each sky chief beast group were desolate beast level. Beast emperors among them were at least ancient desolate beasts.

Within this sky chief beast group, there were a hundred ancient sky chiefs, and over a thousand desolate beast sky chiefs, the remaining sky chief beasts were overwhelming in number, they were uncountable.

Edge Link Camp and Canary Pavilion were at the center, surrounded by countless sky chiefs. Even though they defended themselves, they were heavily damaged and were in great danger.

Bi Chen Tian could not waste any more time, he charged ahead with Wind Sweeping Building.

At this time, both sides could communicate again, Wei Ling Yang immediately moved Edge Link Camp towards Canary Pavilion and Wei Ling Yang, cooperating with them to break out of the encirclement.

The sky chief beast group roared loudly, the sound waves were like a tsunami, it was shocking.

Both sides engaged in fierce combat, countless immortal killer moves were sent out like fireworks, displayed among the sky chief beast group.

The sky chief beast group died in batches after batches, but they were quickly replaced with even more beasts.

The sky chief beast group was too huge, it did not mind such losses.

And those desolate beast sky chiefs and ancient sky chiefs could last much longer in battle.

During this time, Edge Link Camp suddenly burst with strength, silhouettes of sharp horns were formed, shooting out in all directions.

This was an incredibly strong attack in which even desolate beast sky chiefs would be unable to withstand. Even ancient sky chiefs did not dare to take the attacks head on.

Wind Sweeping Building created a jade wind pillar again, as Canary Pavilion emitted the cries of a thousand birds.

The three Immortal Gu Houses worked together, opening a path within the sky chief beast group and meeting at the convergent point.

Next, the three Immortal Gu Houses turned around and fled, in a few minutes, they were free from the pursuit of the sky chief beast group.

“The situation is horrible!” Bi Chen Tian and Wei Ling Yang communicated in a grim tone: “The three Immortal Gu Houses are heavily damaged, half of Canary Pavilion is completely unstable now. We need to rest and recover, Myriad Tidal Dragon is unconscious, and my immortal essence has already been depleted by more than half.”

Immortal essence affected the Gu Immortal’s battle strength to a great extent.

Bi Chen Tian used more than half of his immortal essence, so did Wei Ling Yang.

Even though Immortal Gu Houses were powerful, they consumed a lot of immortal essence.

This was why Fang Yuan had never planned to construct any Immortal Gu Houses.

Even though he knew most of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage’s composition (of course, he forgot a portion), and also the entirety of Sacred Feather City’s structure. But he did not have Giant Sun’s immortal essence anymore, with his own immortal essence, he could not sustain the use of an Immortal Gu House.

Immortal Gu Houses used too much immortal essence, only rank eight Gu Immortals could sustain the consumption alone. Rank six and seven Gu Immortals had to work together to display their might fully.

Most importantly, the Central Continent Gu Immortals still had half the journey left.

“It seems we can only use spaceless tunnel now.” Wei Ling Yang said grimly.

Bi Chen Tian was stunned before nodding, agreeing: “That is the only way to cross half of the distance and reach our destination!”

The two rank eight Gu Immortals were determined figures, the greater the setbacks, the greater their fighting spirit, they had never thought of retreating.

And their encounters might not have been expected, but Heavenly Court’s wisdom path Gu Immortal Fairy Zi Wei had already prepared other plans for them in advance.

Spaceless tunnel was one of them!

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

Through this rank eight Immortal Gu House, the experiences of Central Continent’s three Immortal Gu Houses could be seen by Yao Huang.

“Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace affects the luck of heaven and earth. All that happens within immemorial black heaven, the direction where the lightning storms go, cannot be affected by even heaven’s will. But Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace can interfere with it. This is an invincible defense, with this palace, who can invade Northern Plains?!” Yao Huang was extremely excited, his tone was heated and he had great admiration towards Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Yao Huang looked at South Desolation Immortal, saying: “Lord, I finally understand why you are so calm now. With Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace here, nobody can think of invading Northern Plains!”

South Desolation Immortal laughed: “Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace has been stationed here for three hundred thousand years. What does that mean? It has already deeply affected immemorial black heaven, even immemorial white heaven has been influenced. This is the supreme power of heaven and earth luck!”

Yao Huang thought of Ma Hong Yun, saying: “Heaven and earth luck is so incredible, then all living being’s luck cannot be lacking in comparison. But now, fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu’s user is in Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s hands.”

Yao Huang had no other options against Old Ancestor Xue Hu, but South Desolation Immortal was different.

Especially when Yao Huang saw the power of Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace and the sorry states of these three Central Continent Immortal Gu Houses, thus he was moved and wanted to incite South Desolation Immortal to deal with Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

But South Desolation Immortal shook his head and smiled: “Ma Hong Yun has our Huang Jin bloodline, and is a descendant of Ancestor Giant Sun, there is no problem with him getting fortune rivalling heaven Gu. It will not be easy for Old Ancestor Xue Hu to snatch it away.”

Yao Huang was worried: “That Old Ancestor Xue Hu has already been refining it for so long, with just fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu’s power, can it really make the refinement fail?”

South Desolation Immortal shook his head: “Of course not, even though fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu has quasi-rank nine power, it cannot resist the rank eight Gu Immortal Old Ancestor Xue Hu. Furthermore, he has the aid of Lady Wan Shou, one of the four great refinement path experts in Northern Plains. Do you think my Longevity Heaven has done nothing? We will not let Fortune

Rivalling Heaven end up in the hands of others, we made our arrangements long ago. If Old Ancestor Xue Hu cannot find them, he will not succeed in this refinement.”

Yao Huang realized that Longevity Heaven had taken action long ago, but its method was too impressive, everyone was deceived, even Xue Hu and Wan Shou could not notice.

“Amazing, truly amazing! Compared to Longevity Heaven, even Old Ancestor Xue Hu was toyed in our palms.” Yao Huang was truly impressed in his heart.

His gaze towards South Desolation Immortal changed again, he felt that South Desolation Immortal was unfathomable, he truly had the demeanor of a senior.

But at the next moment, South Desolation Immortal’s expression changed suddenly.

South Desolation Immortal was confused, he called out: “What happened? These Central Continent Gu Immortals vanished all of a sudden?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1247: Water Path Grandmaster

“This... where are we?” Zhao Lian Yun looked outside, expressing shock on her face.

But this time, even the knowledgeable Yu Yi Ye Zi could not answer her.

Bu Zhen Zi, who was in charge of Zhao Lian Yun’s safety, said in an uncertain tone: “This unique phenomenon, is it spaceless tunnel?!”

The three Immortal Gu Houses from Central Continent, Canary Pavilion, Edge Link Camp, and Wind Sweeping Building, were moving inside a huge tunnel.

This tunnel was blue in color, with rainbow colored threads that extended forward in the path. These rainbow colored threads were lined around the blue tunnel walls, they were dazzling and beautiful.

“What is spaceless tunnel?” Yu Yi Ye Zi asked.

Bu Zhen Zi looked at Zhao Lian Yun with a complex gaze: “You should be familiar with it?”

“Me?” Zhao Lian Yun was confused, she did not know why Bu Zhen Zi would say this.

Bu Zhen Zi sighed, saying: “Because spaceless tunnel is a unique immortal killer move created by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable!”

Southern Border, super Gu formation.

Inside the dream.

“This disciple greets master!” Fang Yuan knelt on the ground, paying respects to the female Gu Immortal in front of him.

The female immortal gave a murmur of acknowledgement before saying: “I am Jing Miao Zi, I cultivate water path. Even though you are my descendant, whether you can cultivate my water path will depend on your understanding and aptitude. Pass this test and you will become my true disciple.”

“Please tell me, master.” Fang Yuan said respectfully.

The female immortal waved her sleeve and the dream realm changed, Fang Yuan was standing in front of a jade pool.

This jade pool was extremely green and calm, like a huge piece of jade.

“A rumbling river is water. The sea is water. The calm jade pool is also water. Water path is deep and profound, I personally cultivate the path of calm water. Step into the pool and the moment you can stand on top of it without using any Gu worms, I will accept you as my disciple.”

Fang Yuan stared with wide opened eyes, he was hearing this for the first time, he said: “Master, if I do not use Gu worms, I will be like a mortal. How can a mortal body stand on top of the water surface?”

“That is your problem.” The female immortal waved her sleeve, vanishing in front of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan frowned, he walked around the jade pool, after several rounds, he stepped into it.

Plop.

With a soft sound, he fell into the water directly.

He quickly climbed up the edge of the pool, he was completely soaked, it was a sorry sight.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, he hesitated before using the immortal killer move unravel dream.

But this time, the all-powerful unravel dream did nothing, there were no changes.

Fang Yuan sighed internally: “It was useless indeed... sigh, this is problematic.”

Not long ago, Fang Yuan’s luck path attainment level had risen, he could easily raise qi luck sensation to a new level. Therefore, the location of Ying Wu Xie and gang was exposed, they were in Southern Border.

Fang Yuan realized this and started to make preparations, raising his strength and borrowing Immortal Gu from Wu clan.

However, he met with a problem when he wanted to leave.

If Fang Yuan left, Wu clan would have no rank seven Gu Immortals holding the fort at the super Gu formation. With Wu clan initiating the immortal opportunity business, the situation was quite severe, without any experts around, the other clans could easily find trouble with them.

Wu Yong agreed readily to lend Fang Yuan Wu clan’s Immortal Gu, but he did not agree to the matter of leaving.

Wu clan had many Gu Immortals and had a huge force, but their territory was too big, they needed a lot of manpower. They had few Gu Immortals, causing them to be short on people. Some jobs could not be transferred easily, like Fang Yuan’s role of defending the super Gu formation, not many people in Wu clan could do it. Even if they had strength, their political abilities were a concern as well.

Fang Yuan gave the request of leaving his assigned position, Wu Yong felt a deep headache.

But Fang Yuan was insistent on it, Wu Yong had to relent and change the roles of the other Gu Immortals.

But this matter had huge implications on the others, Wu Yong said that a lot of time was needed, Fang Yuan had to wait.

But in the process of waiting, Fang Yuan encountered a superb dream realm.

There were all sorts of dream realms that were constantly changing. There were realistic dream realms and also strange ones.

Fang Yuan would normally choose realistic dream realms to explore. The strange dream realms were hard to decipher, Fang Yuan did not want to take unnecessary risks.

“According to historical records, Jing Miao Zi was a disciple of Shui Ni. This dream realm’s owner is the disciple of Jing Miao Zi, her true disciple. That can only be one person, the water path great expert famous in history, Sea Calming Lord!”

“In Central Continent’s history, there was an immemorial desolate beast that caused Falling Heavenly River to change directions, resulting in a tsunami that swept the lands. Central Continent’s central area was flooded and the tsunami to the east was overwhelming. Back then, Heavenly Court Gu Immortal Sea Calming Lord stood up and used several immortal killer moves to return Falling Heavenly River to its rightful direction, the sea level returned to normal, he had incredible methods.”

“My killer move unravel dream is usually effective, but it had no effect here. No wonder, no wonder.”

This was not the first time Fang Yuan was using unravel dream.

But this time, even after using it several times, the dream realm was unmoved.

Fang Yuan thought about it, most likely, this dream realm was too powerful, killer move unravel dream only used a rank six core Immortal Gu, it could not unravel this dream!

The strength of a dream realm was not closely related to the crucial person in the dream realm.

For example, Fang Yuan had once explored Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s dream realm, he used unravel dream there and achieved great success.

But now, Fang Yuan’s unravel dream could not unravel Sea Calming Lord’s dream realm.

Sea Calming Lord was only rank eight, he could not match Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

But the strength of the dream realm was not closely related to their cultivation level or strength during their lifetime.

As for what relationship there was, Fang Yuan had no idea.

Don’t forget, in the five hundred years of his previous life, Fang Yuan was not adept at exploring dream realms either, his main focus was on his blood path cultivation.

Fang Yuan did not study dream realms deeply, but he knew something, the stronger the dream realm, the greater the benefits after exploring it.

Remembering this, Fang Yuan’s interest in this dream realm rose again.

“Wu clan has not redistributed the roles yet, I want to borrow Immortal Gu, but Wu Yong would not let me have them until he finishes the new role distribution.”

“In that case, for this period of time, I should research in this dream realm.”

In the following days, Fang Yuan calmed down and went to explore the dream realm again.

Allowing him to stand on the surface of the water without using any Gu worms.

On the surface, this seemed impossible.

Because without using any Gu worms, the Gu Master was no different from a mortal. Of course, this was different from Fortune Rivalling Heaven, or black boar Gu which carved dao marks onto the Gu Master’s body.

“There are water path Gu worms like water walking Gu, they can allow the Gu Master to carve water path dao marks on their feet and allow them to run freely on the water surface. But this has nothing to do with the dream realm’s task.”

This dream realm did not allow the use of water walking Gu. Even if it could be used, Fang Yuan would not use it.

Because he knew that this problem was not about the task at hand, but himself instead.

As for solutions like freezing the surface of the water and standing on it, they were ideas that dodged the question, they did not target the true essence of this problem.

“Like what Jing Miao Zi had said, she is testing my aptitude. This is a realistic dream realm, Sea Calming Lord must have passed it, there is no reason that I cannot. After all, my water path attainment level is at quasi-grandmaster.”

Fang Yuan continued to try, he had fallen into the pool many times.

If ordinary mortals ended up in this dream realm and fell into the water once, their souls would dissipate on the spot.

For Gu Immortals, falling inside several times would weaken their souls to a great extent.

Fang Yuan’s soul foundation was deep, every time he entered the dream realm, he could fall into the water seventeen to eighteen times before his soul reached its limit.

At this time, Fang Yuan would use guts Gu to heal himself.

Guts Gu was a mortal Gu, but it originated from a secluded domain of heaven and earth, Dang Hun Mountain, it was very effective.

Fang Yuan had such a strong aid, he continued to work hard and started to have a feeling.

This feeling could not be expressed with words, it was mystical.

Fang Yuan tried again.

When he stepped onto the water surface again, plop, he fell into the water again without doubt.

When he climbed ashore, he saw his master Jing Miao Zi standing by the pool, looking at him.

Jing Miao Zi spoke furiously: “What aptitude is this? Such a simple test but you still can’t pass it until now. You are not fit to be my disciple.”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “No master, I did it. Like what you said, I have to stand on the water surface without sinking, I have already done it.”

Jing Miao Zi smiled from extreme anger, she pointed at the water on Fang Yuan’s body: “Then what is this?”

Fang Yuan shook his head: “This is nothing. The pool of water in my heart is calm and unmoving, I am already standing on it. Looking down, I can see my own reflection on the clear water surface.”

Jing Miao Zi’s anger and smile vanished gradually.

She looked at Fang Yuan deeply, nodding as she said plainly: “Not bad, from today onwards, you are my official true disciple.”

At the next moment, the entire dream realm vanished, Fang Yuan returned to reality.

“This dream realm only has one scene?” Fang Yuan was shocked.

But soon, his shock turned into extreme joy.

“Wonderful, my water path attainment finally reached grandmaster level!”

Earlier, Fang Yuan’s water path attainment level was at quasi-grandmaster level, he seemed close to grandmaster, but he was actually still very far from reaching grandmaster.

But now, this distance was passed as Fang Yuan became a true water path grandmaster!

Succeeding transformation path, strength path, blood path, wisdom path, and star path, Fang Yuan had finally become a grandmaster of a sixth path.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1248: Ying Wu Xie’s Objective

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

“Not here.”

“Not here either!”

“So strange, why did these Central Continent Gu Immortals vanish without a trace?”

South Desolation Immortal was no longer as composed, his calm smile vanished, sweat was covering his forehead.

He continued to manipulate Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, inspecting everywhere, but he could not deduce the location of the Central Continent Gu Immortals.

Yao Huang was also dazed, he asked quickly: “Lord South Desolation, do I need to do anything?”

At this time, Giant Sun immortal zombie’s voice resounded: “This is spaceless tunnel.”

South Desolation Immortal was even more shocked now: “Central Continent’s Gu Immortals possess this immortal killer move of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable?”

But Giant Sun immortal zombie denied it: “No, they are just using the spaceless tunnel left behind by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.”

Spaceless tunnel.

A space path immortal killer move.

In the past, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had roamed the entire world to look for a way to return home.

Undeniably, he was the venerable who had traveled the most in this world compared to the others. Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had covered almost every area in the five regions and two heavens.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable felt that a person was too small, and the Gu Master world was too big, thus he created spaceless tunnel.

This immortal killer move could shorten his traveling distance greatly, and hasten his exploration speed.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had gone missing long ago without a trace, but portions of his spaceless tunnel killer move left behind in the five regions and two heavens were still in existence even now, they seemed to be able to last forever.

The ten great ancient sects of Central Continent had never stopped researching Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

Because Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was different from the other venerables, he was an otherworldly demon. From this point, Heavenly Court would not ignore him.

Spirit Affinity House possessed a Thieving Heaven true inheritance, they let Zhao Lian Yun inherit it. This was a fruit of Heavenly Court’s research regarding Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

When Central Continent’s Gu Immortals found this spaceless tunnel, they could use a corresponding method and shorten their travel distance.

“Then where does this spaceless tunnel lead to?” South Desolation Immortal reacted, realizing the key to this problem.

Giant Sun immortal zombie answered: “I cannot find out either, this is the work of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable after all.”

When Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was still alive, he had suffered a loss in a Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable inheritance. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was the creator of luck path, but against Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, he did not have any strong methods to deal with his arrangements.

South Desolation Immortal was silent.

Yao Huang was stunned.

What could they do?

Giant Sun immortal zombie answered: “Since they used the spaceless tunnel, we only need to wait for them to reappear.”

Yao Huang asked: “This means that Central Continent’s Gu Immortals can appear at any place? If they appear in Northern Plains directly, what should we do?”

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were in a distressed state and lost a lot of their battle strength, but they were still very powerful!

Three Immortal Gu Houses and three rank eight Gu Immortals, along with many rank six and seven Gu Immortals, as well as the rank nine love Gu!

If this lineup appeared in the base of any super force Huang Jin tribe, the ones to lose would definitely be the Huang Jin tribe!

“If these Central Continent Gu Immortals appeared in my Yao tribe...” Thinking of this, Yao Huang felt uneasy.

“Please guide us, ancestor.” South Desolation Immortal sought help.

Giant Sun immortal zombie chuckled: “My descendants have their own fortune, fortune and disaster coexist, they can be interchanged. This is Northern Plains’ calamity, but it can be turned into Northern Plains’ blessing. My main body died long ago, this is not my era. Go and work hard for the future, regardless of failure or success. Turning the calamity into a blessing, that will depend on your actions.”

Giant Sun immortal zombie said that before returning to silence again.

South Desolation Immortal and Yao Huang looked at each other helplessly.

Southern Border, super Gu formation.

Fang Yuan was holding an ordinary Gu material.

He casually threw this Gu material into the stove.

The flame in the stove was burning, but it was emitting coldness instead.

The fire inside the stove was very special, it was not orange, it was pale white and blue, this was a cold flame.

Soon after, the cold flame extinguished all of a sudden, leaving no traces behind.

From the stove, a Gu worm flew out.

This Gu worm looked like a mosquito larva, it was thin and brown with a little green inside, it was wide and big. When it floated towards Fang Yuan, its body retracted and expanded, it was quite special.

This was a strength path Gu worm, obviously a mortal Gu.

But its name was Pulling Water, this made it a little special.

Fang Yuan already had Pulling Water, it was a rank six strength path Immortal Gu. But this one was a strength path mortal Gu.

Pulling water Gu could emit a mysterious power to allow the Gu Master to manipulate water currents like rivers and streams. This pulling water mortal Gu’s effect was naturally far below the rank six pulling water Immortal Gu.

But Fang Yuan was overjoyed.

Why?

Firstly, Immortal Gu were unique. If Fang Yuan used two immortal killer moves that needed pulling water Immortal Gu at the same time, what would happen? With mortal pulling water Gu, Fang Yuan could use a great number of mortal Gu to temporarily replace pulling water Immortal Gu in the killer move. Thus, even though a Gu Immortal may have the Immortal Gu version of a certain Gu, that did not mean they did not need the mortal version as well.

Secondly, Fang Yuan’s attempt succeeded because his water path attainment had reached grandmaster level.

Pulling water Gu might be a strength path Gu worm, but it was also related to water path. All along, even though Fang Yuan was a strength path grandmaster, he could not deduce the recipe of pulling water mortal Gu.

Now that his water path attainment level reached grandmaster, he did not even need to deduce it, he could instinctively detail the mortal Gu recipe.

Everything happened naturally.

“Water path grandmaster.” Fang Yuan started to feel the benefits from many aspects.

Not just Gu recipes, there were also killer moves, Fang Yuan had a lot of water path accumulations in his five hundred years of life, he had water path killer moves and water path Gu recipes.

Now that he recalled these details, he had a brand new sensation and deeper understanding.

This was an incredible feeling that could not be described with words.

Formerly, he was standing below the tower, observing the bricks of the tower. But now, he was at the top of the tower, the sights were completely different.

“Even though my attainment level rose drastically and it cannot be evaluated easily in material terms, my strength has grown immensely.”

“Especially when I already had five grandmaster attainment levels, the paths of these grandmaster attainment levels can work together and influence each other, forming an even greater benefit for me.”

“No wonder everyone went after dream realms so desperately in my previous life.”

Fang Yuan recalled, back then, his focus was placed on his blood path cultivation.

Of course, he had reasons for that.

Firstly, Fang Yuan’s circumstances were not good at that time, he constantly faced strong enemies, he needed great battle strength.

Secondly, Fang Yuan knew nothing about dream realms, he did not have exploration methods like unravel dream, exploring dream realms was a huge risk that he did not need to take.

Thirdly, as Fang Yuan recalled his memories now, heaven’s will quite likely was interfering in the circumstances.

When Fang Yuan was about to further explore his water path grandmaster attainment level, and see what benefits he had obtained, Wu clan finally sent a rank seven Gu Immortal over.

This Gu Immortal brought Wu clan’s instructions, as well as the Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan borrowed from Wu clan.

Fang Yuan quickly completed the trade, leaving the super Gu formation.

He flew north-east without stopping.

Just now, the excuse he gave to Wu Yong was that he had personal reasons to return to Eastern Sea alone.

Everyone had their own secrets, if it were an ordinary Wu clan Gu Immortal, Wu Yong would investigate further. But this was Wu Yi Hai, even if Wu Yong asked, he would likely not get an answer. Thus, he wisely chose not to pursue it.

Fang Yuan went through the regional wall and arrived in Eastern Sea, he found a nameless sea area and placed his immortal aperture, resting temporarily.

During this period, he stayed inside the sovereign immortal aperture and practised his killer moves, getting familiar with his new Immortal Gu.

The closer he got to the crucial time, the more steady Fang Yuan was. He decided to use this chance to kill Ying Wu Xie, and eliminate this threat, he wanted to prepare amply.

When Fang Yuan saw that the time was ripe, he stored his immortal aperture and prepared to move, executing his plan that had been set for a long time.

Qi luck sensation!

Fang Yuan had just activated this killer move, when, out of his expectations, he found that Ying Wu Xie and the rest had left Southern Border, returning to Eastern Sea.

“Good, it will be easier for me to strike in Eastern Sea.” Fang Yuan had no hesitations, he flew to the sky, towards his targets.

Ying Wu Xie and the rest were flying above the sea.

Bai Ning Bing was flying with them.

Their relationship had changed, she was an equal ally now.

A few days ago, Ying Wu Xie took out yang Gu, curbing Bai Ning Bing’s killing intent.

Ying Wu Xie used this chance to seek cooperation with Bai Ning Bing.

But Bai Ning Bing was not the same as before, she expressed that she would rather give up yang Gu to kill Ying Wu Xie and gang.

Ying Wu Xie spoke with a glib tongue, by listing the problems involved, he managed to convince Bai Ning Bing to establish a new alliance agreement with him.

Bai Ning Bing got back yang Gu, she knew that Fang Yuan had the upper extreme heavenly eagle and was a big threat.

At this time, it was not wise to stay in Bai Xiang grotto-heaven.

Because of the upper extreme heavenly eagle, Fang Yuan could easily enter the grotto-heaven. If Bai Ning Bing and the rest stayed in Bai Xiang grotto-heaven, they instead would give Fang Yuan clues to find it.

At this time, Bai Ning Bing looked at the blue sea as she frowned, transmitting secretly: “Ying Wu Xie, you said that you have a way to deal with Fang Yuan, but we are all the way in Eastern Sea now, and are still traveling. What method is it, say it directly.”

Ying Wu Xie laughed: “To deal with a rank eight, we need another rank eight existence. Eastern Sea is not our destination, we are going to Northern Plains.”

“You mean Shadow Sect’s remnant force in Northern Plains still has a rank eight existence? Hmph, bullshit.” Bai Ning Bing snorted in disdain.

If they had rank eight battle strength, why did they not use it in Yi Tian Mountain?

Ying Wu Xie smiled bitterly: “The timing was not right.”

“And the timing is right now?”

“It is a great opportunity now, Northern Plains and Central Continent are engaging in battle over Fortune Rivalling Heaven, by going to Northern Plains now, we are heading towards the center of the commotion — Snowy Mountain blessed land! Taking Fortune Rivalling Heaven, using the rank eight battle strength to kill Fang Yuan, and take back the sovereign immortal body!” Ying Wu Xie laughed as he said this, turning around to look behind him.

“Heh, he is coming.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1249: Reappearance of Ghost Face

While speaking, Ying Wu Xie felt the luck on top of his head shaking intensely.

Earlier, Fang Yuan elevated qi luck sensation greatly, even if Ying Wu Xie hid inside an immortal aperture, he could not evade detection.

But Ying Wu Xie was not someone who passively waited for death, he thought about it and decided to make use of this.

Previously, he had tried to conceal himself and his aura. Now that this was not possible, Ying Wu Xie decided to strengthen the luck sensation instead.

Everyone had their luck connected, Fang Yuan could use this to activate qi luck sensation and find them. Then Ying Wu Xie could also do the reverse.

Thus, Ying Wu Xie had researched a brand new Gu worm combination recently to use his own luck's vibration to deduce his distance from Fang Yuan.

Ying Wu Xie named this immortal killer move luck vibration distance.

This way, Fang Yuan's familiar face could not be used, it could not deal with Ying Wu Xie's methods.

Ying Wu Xie was a split soul of Spectral Soul, even though he lost his memories, after getting replenishment inside the River of Time, he did not lack attainment level.

Attainment level was the most important thing.

Precisely because of thing, Ying Wu Xie could think of new Gu worm combinations at any time, to deal with all sorts of situations.

Of course he had to have enough attainment level, and the creation needed to be given time for experimentation and practice.

“Get into formation! We will use the tactic we discussed to repel Fang Yuan.” Sensing that Fang Yuan was getting close, Ying Wu Xie ordered this, the five Gu Immortals stopped moving, assembling their formation.

After successfully convincing Bai Ning Bing to join the alliance, Bai Ning Bing's inheritance in Bai Xiang grotto-heaven also caused Ying Wu Xie's group to rise greatly in strength.

This immortal level Gu formation was the powerful method used to trap Ying Wu Xie and gang earlier, now, Fang Yuan was going to be the one facing it.

“He's here.” Bai Ning Bing suddenly said.

She was the owner of Bai Xiang grotto-heaven, her wealth rose drastically, she had very useful Immortal Gu and her investigative methods were far superior than before, she surpassed Ying Wu Xie, Hei Lou Lan, and the others, becoming the first person to notice Fang Yuan's traces.

The other four immortals looked at where she directed.

Only to see that waves were forming at the southern sea area.

A sword dragon was moving its body, flying past the clouds nimbly.

Its sharp dragon horn was piercing towards the sky, its scales were shining with silver light, its dragon claws were sinister and sharp, its dragon teeth were glowing with an eerie cold light.

Ying Wu Xie and the rest were ready to face this strong foe.

Bai Ning Bing took a step forward: “Do you dare to enter our formation?”

Fang Yuan saw Bai Ning Bing, even though she was a dragon lady now and was even more beautiful than before, her overall appearance was still similar, Fang Yuan was slightly stunned.

He did not think that he would meet Bai Ning Bing under such circumstances.

In fact, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing had not met for a long time. Even during the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Bai Ning Bing was not involved too deeply, they did not meet.

After Three Kings blessed land, Bai Ning Bing betrayed him and Fang Yuan separated from her, until now when they met again.

But everything had changed already.

The two surviving young Gu Masters from Qing Mao Mountain were now Gu Immortals.

Bai Ning Bing, who was known as a genius with a bleak future, possessing one of the ten extreme physiques, Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique, had become a rank six dragonman Gu Immortal, and owned Bai Xiang grotto-heaven.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan’s experiences were even more bountiful, he had first become the owner of Hu Immortal blessed land, and after causing havoc in Northern Plains and destroying Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and Imperial Court blessed land, he went to Eastern Sea, Central Continent, and Western Desert. Eventually, he appeared during the battle of Yi Tian Mountain and took away the fruit of Shadow Sect’s hundred thousand years of preparation — sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

Using this Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan’s cultivation level rose like a rocket, he grew at an unthinkable speed, being a rank seven Gu Immortal already. Using dream realms, he even became a grandmaster in six paths.

The two were known as the Black and White Demons during their time in Southern Border as Gu Masters, they had worked closely together, but this time, their reunion was as enemies.

“Good, I will kill you as well.” Fang Yuan was filled with killing intent, he roared as he shot out his dragon breath.

The white dragon breath was extremely sharp, as a bright light, it traveled rapidly and reached Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing did not dodge, she smiled lightly.

At the next moment, the sword light dragon breath landed on an invisible wall of light, dealing no damage to her.

The Gu formation able to trap Ying Wu Xie and the others was naturally not simple.

“Gu formation?” Fang Yuan thought.

At this point, he did not have many ideas.

Formation path.

Fang Yuan had little knowledge about formation path, even during the five hundred years of his previous life, it was like this.

To break the Gu formation, he either needed to have formation path attainment or use wisdom path deductions.

Fang Yuan was a wisdom path grandmaster, but he lacked a useful wisdom path Immortal Gu that could deduce the flaw in this Gu formation, it would not be easy.

The sword dragon flew in the sky, observing without advancing.

Ying Wu Xie and the rest were inside the Gu formation, awaiting Fang Yuan's attack.

At once, Fang Yuan was filled with thoughts on how to deal with this situation.

“The other party set up a Gu formation, this means that they cannot conceal their traces, but are already able to find out my location.”

“In the probing earlier, it can be seen that this Gu formation is not simple at all.”

“Since they set up this formation, they must have confidence in dealing with me.”

“A broken ship is still better than a plank, after such a short time, Ying Wu Xie already possesses such a method.”

Fang Yuan did not attack rashly.

He could not decipher this Gu formation, he would have to be an idiot to charge in recklessly. But there was a possibility that Bai Ning Bing and gang were putting up a front, this Gu formation might be weak on the inside and only strong against a direct attack.

Thus, Fang Yuan had to continue probing.

While Fang Yuan and Ying Wu Xie's group were fighting, inside black heaven.

Inside the spaceless tunnel.

Three Immortal Gu Houses were traveling slowly.

Myriad Tidal Dragon had already woken up, he looked at the scene inside the spaceless tunnel as he sighed: “Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable's method is truly unthinkable. He has already vanished for so long, but this immortal killer move created three hundred thousand years ago can still be used effectively. If I was not experiencing this myself, I would not believe it.”

Wei Ling Yang smiled: “Alright, since you are awake, we will not stay any longer, let's go!”

It turned out that the Central Continent Gu Immortals could have left the spaceless tunnel long ago, but they purposely stayed inside to wait for Myriad Tidal Dragon to wake up.

Myriad Tidal Dragon had used an immortal killer move to escape and fell into slumber.

After he woke up, Central Continent's Gu Immortals regained their full strength with three rank eight Gu Immortals!

The three Immortal Gu Houses moved quickly.

This was the final bit of distance in the spaceless tunnel.

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were enthusiastic, they were focused and awaiting the future battles.

“Hong Yun, hang on, I am coming!” Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes shone with determination as she prepared herself mentally.

But right at the final part of the tunnel, a change occurred.

A giant ghost face suddenly appeared, obstructing the three Immortal Gu Houses, completely blocking the entire spaceless tunnel.

“What is going on?”

“This is Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s...”

The three rank eight Gu Immortals were still shocked when the ghost face opened its mouth, roaring without emitting a sound.

As it roared, the entire spaceless tunnel started to collapse, countless dao mark fragments of the spaceless tunnel flew everywhere, a terrifying space crack spread out like a spider web.

Crack!

With a loud sound, the Central Continent Gu Immortals found that the tunnel that they were in broke into countless pieces, like a shattered mirror.

“Defend!” Myriad Tidal Dragon shouted.

“Hang on.” Bi Chen Tian and Wei Ling Yang activated their Immortal Gu Houses to their limits.

However, even the three Immortal Gu Houses were weak and fragile, as if they were planks facing a tsunami, there was nothing they could do.

At once, the three Immortal Gu Houses which had been together were separated and scattered by the space path chaotic currents.

A giant hole suddenly formed, it was like a huge beast’s mouth, devouring everything around it.

Myriad Tidal Dragon controlled Canary Pavilion, he did not even last several breaths of time before this hole devoured it, vanishing without a trace.

Wind Sweeping Building and Edge Link Camp were hanging on desperately, Edge Link Camp was like a bun getting shaved layer after layer by the space path dao mark fragments, Wind Sweeping Building was also breaking apart, the powerful Immortal Gu Houses looked so fragile here.

Spaceless tunnel was Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s immortal killer move, together with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s methods, there was the power of two Demon Venerables here.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals did not expect that the spaceless tunnel shortcut they were using was a fatal trap!

Three hundred thousand years ago, when the Medieval Antiquity Era’s Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable traveled in black heaven, he left behind spaceless tunnel.

Next, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable failed to refine love Gu and left behind many methods.

Then in Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s era, he seemed to have noticed the former’s plan, or because of some other reason, he left behind an immortal killer move here as well.

Duke Long did not understand these venerables’ secrets, even Fairy Zi Wei could not deduce such a thing.

Right now, the Central Continent Gu Immortals were facing the threat of getting wiped out!

“Am I going to die? Will I die here? No, no! I need to save Hong Yun, how can I die here? Help me, please help me, love Gu!”

Zhao Lian Yun cried out in her heart.

As if sensing her unwavering love and determination, love Immortal Gu started to shine with an immensely bright light in her phantom aperture.

This light spread out with Zhao Lian Yun at the center.

Boom.

Wind Sweeping Building had completely broken apart, the Gu Immortals were screaming loudly, activating their defenses.

But many people did not last for even a few breaths of time before they were cut into pieces by the space path chaotic storm. Only Zhao Lian Yun was covered in a thin layer of light, completely protected.

Not just that, this layer of light was expanding to the four people around her.

A hole formed before Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes.

At the next moment, love Gu emitted a strong force and entered the hole with Zhao Lian Yun and the other four Gu Immortals.

Their vision changed.

“Where is this?” Zhao Lian Yun realized that she was standing on firm ground.

“This is naturally Snowy Mountain blessed land.” A voice said..

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1250: Inside and Outside the Formation

“Snowy Mountain blessed land?!” Zhao Lian Yun cried out in surprise.

She raised her head and saw a female Gu Immortal in front of her.

This person was lying on a cloud bed. She wore a silk dress, she had an ordinary appearance but her blue hair was extremely eye-catching, it was like a river that flowed from her head down to the cloud bed and covered the surface.

The female immortal saw that Zhao Lian Yun's emotions were not a facade, and asked, finding it somewhat strange: "It seems you five did not intentionally barge into Snowy Mountain blessed land?"

"Five?" Zhao Lian Yun looked around her, and only then did she find she was in a large hall and she was not alone, there were four of her Gu Immortal companions from earlier.

The four also woke up around the same time.

Zhao Lian Yun had just recently become a Gu Immortal, but she essentially recognized these four Gu Immortal companions.

The most familiar one was Bu Zhen Zi, he was a supreme elder of Spirit Affinity House, a rank seven Gu Immortal who was tasked to protect Zhao Lian Yun.

Yu Yi Ye Zi, this young handsome Gu Immortal came from Ancient Soul Sect, although his cultivation was only rank six, he had a high refinement path attainment and was widely acknowledged for it.

Shi Zheng Yi was similarly a young man, with thick eyebrows and large eyes. He had been at the top floor of Wind Sweeping Building with Zhao Lian Yun just earlier, and although Zhao Lian Yun had not talked with Shi Zheng Yi, she had seen his father who had become blind from the blind fire, this gave her a deep impression.

The final one was someone Zhao Lian Yun did not know and it was the first time she had seen him.

However, Shi Zheng Yi clearly knew this person, he immediately ran to this person's side and greeted: "Senior Mu Ling Lan, how did we appear here?"

This person was Mu Ling Lan, a water path Gu Immortal coming from Spirit Butterfly Valley and having rank seven cultivation.

"I am also baffled. Space suddenly shattered and threw you five out." The female immortal spoke lightly, "Entering Snowy Mountain blessed land without permission, I am still waiting for you people to clear my doubts."

"Snowy Mountain blessed land... this place is Snowy Mountain blessed land?" Shi Zheng Yi called out, he looked outside the window and saw the snowy white world outside, and in the distance were more than ten snowy peaks standing loftily.

At the same time, Shi Zheng Yi discovered he was currently in a hall on one of the snowy peaks.

Central Continent's Gu Immortals quickly reacted.

Bu Zhen Zi ran to Zhao Lian Yun's side, tensely looking at the female immortal before them: "If I am not wrong, you are Snowy Mountain blessed land's ninth peak lord, Hair Mistress!"

"Snowy Mountain blessed land... Hong Yun is here!" Zhao Lian Yun's eyes let out bright light.

The female immortal straightened her upper body, revealing a solemn and nervous expression: "So you really came for Ma Hong Yun!"

"That's right, hand over Ma Hong Yun!" Zhao Lian Yun shouted.

Hair Mistress took a deep glance at Zhao Lian Yun: "Ma Hong Yun is not at my place, if you want to find him, you probably need to charge to the first peak.

But that peak has Lady Wan Shou and Old Ancestor Xue Hu staying guard, you five probably won't even be able to make a ripple."

"Where there is a will, there is a way!" Shi Zheng Yi telled with clenched fists.

"Even if I die here, I am going to save Hong Yun!" Zhao Lian Yun was resolute.

Mu Ling Lan took a few steps forward: "Us five are only the first to reach here, there are still rank eight Gu Immortals behind us. Although your Snowy Mountain blessed land has the territorial advantage, you only have one rank eight Gu Immortal in the end."

Mu Ling Lan was bluffing.

In truth, the outcome of the Gu Immortals who remained in the spaceless tunnel bode ill rather than well.

It might be that the only people who were saved were their group of five.

Relying on love Gu's power and under Zhao Lian Yun's obsession, the five Gu Immortals directly arrived at Snowy Mountain blessed land.

Hair Mistress's expression slightly changed, she was only a rank six Gu Immortal, while the group before her had the numerical advantage and there were also two rank sevens present.

Snowy Mountain blessed land had a total of fifteen snowy peaks.

Hair Mistress was at the ninth peak, she had never expected her peace would abruptly be broken, and five Gu Immortals would appear in front of her without any warning.

"I will be the main attacker, the rest of you retreat to the back." Mu Ling Lan secretly transmitted his voice, he shouldered responsibility and stepped forward.

Hair Mistress saw things going awry, quickly stretching her arm: "Wait, we are friends, not enemies."

"What do you mean?" Bu Zhen Zi stopped the eager Mu Ling Lan.

Hair Mistress: "You think I will willingly lay down my life for Old Ancestor Xue Hu? For his own private interests, Old Ancestor Xue Hu forcibly commanded us to gather immortal materials, we have suffered a lot but are helpless in front of Old Ancestor Xue Hu's might."

"As a matter of fact, I had already wanted to surrender and was thinking of when Northern Plains' righteous path Gu Immortals would attack, but I had never expected the ones to come would be all of you from Central Continent."

"I don't want to fight with you, you want to find trouble with Old Ancestor Xue Hu, I welcome you to do so."

"Eh? It was like that..." Bu Zhen Zi and Mu Ling Lan glanced at each other with some doubts.

Hair Mistress continued: "Since you are attacking Snowy Mountain, you must have gathered relevant information. I won't hide from you, there is already discord within the members of Snowy Mountain, Old Ancestor Xue Hu has become crazy in his desire to refine fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu and completely disregarded the feelings of us, the snowy peak lords. Regretfully, we are under his control and cannot rebel, we can only wait for external forces to help us.”

Central Continent’s five Gu Immortals did not speak, they had not expected such a development.

Mu Ling Lan spoke: “Since you want to surrender, just this information won’t be enough. Join our ranks and then we can be sure of your sincerity.”

Hair Mistress smiled bitterly: “If I could attack, I would have already rebelled. You do not have to probe, would you believe me even if I joined you? There is not only one way to help you, I am willing to tell you of the defense arrangements of Snowy Mountain.”

“Oh? Speak.” Mu Ling Lan nodded.

Hair Mistress gazed at the five immortals in front of her, before speaking slowly: “Old Ancestor Xue Hu has recklessly modified Snowy Mountain blessed land to refine fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, not long ago, he invited Sun Ming Lu to arrange a super Gu formation here.”

“This super Gu formation is extremely powerful. With the snowy peak lords as the formation cores, it links to Reverse Flow River. The invaders have to charge through each peak. And the peak lords guarding each snowy peak would receive the Gu formation’s amplification; rank six cultivation can display rank seven strength. On the other hand, the charging Gu Immortal would be greatly suppressed. With this contrast of strengthening and weakening, every snowy peak is a difficult hurdle. Even if rank eight Gu Immortals come, unless they can destroy this Gu formation, they will have to spend some time in here.”

“How do we know if your information is true or false?” Mu Ling Lan asked.

Hair Mistress smiled bitterly again: “All my words are true, if you don’t believe, you can test me.”

“Good!” Mu Ling Lan flicked his sleeve, and a wave of water appeared in the air and rushed towards Hair Mistress.

Hair Mistress did not panic, she slightly willed and a strand of hair suddenly sprang up, turning into a dam that blocked the wave.

Mu Ling Lan frowned, he saw through the issue with one attack, and did not make another move.

The other four Central Continent immortals looked at each other.

Just like Hair Mistress said, she could display rank seven battle strength here, while Mu Ling Lan himself was a rank seven Gu Immortal, but his attack was weakened greatly. His powerful offensive method was actually blocked easily by Hair Mistress.

“This Gu formation is too powerful.” Shi Zheng Yi exclaimed in shock.

Bu Zhen Zi directly questioned: “Then where is the flaw of this Gu formation?”

Hair Mistress shook her head: “I am not familiar with this Gu formation, but over these days of feeling around, I have some experiences that I can tell all of you.”

“First of all, the Gu formation isolates what is inside from outside, you cannot even connect to treasure yellow heaven. Currently, only Old Ancestor Xue Hu can contact us snowy peak lords, while the snowy peak lords cannot communicate with each other.”

“Secondly, each snowy peak lord is a formation core of the Gu formation, we can seemingly only defend from our main halls at the peak and are unable to leave our peak. This point is my guess, but it should be pretty accurate.”

“Finally... it is time for you guys to die!”

Hair Mistress’s expression suddenly changed, her blue hair suddenly rose up to entangle the five Gu Immortals.

Mu Ling Lan was vigilant the whole time, instantly flying out of the hall.

With Bu Zhen Zi’s help, Zhao Lian Yun was also able to escape.

Inside the hall, the dense blue hair quickly wrapped around Shi Zheng Yi and Yu Yi Ye Zi, forming two thick blue cocoons.

“Treacherous witch! Attack!!” Mu Ling Lan was alarmed and furious.

Before he spoke, Bu Zhen Zi and Zhao Lian Yun had already attacked.

Rumble...

The ninth snowy peak emitted thunderous noises.

The battle had instantly started.

Eastern Sea.

Dragon breaths that resembled white sword lights shot at the Gu formation, shaking the whole Gu formation.

“Fang Yuan is too careful, he is not entering the Gu formation, what do we do now?” Bai Ning Bing asked Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie sighed, transmitting his voice: “I had planned to use this super Gu formation to match against Fang Yuan’s upper extreme heavenly eagle, and probe his exact strength. Who could have expected him to only attack from afar, not giving us any opportunity at all.”

A concealed sword was the most terrifying.

Fang Yuan naturally could rely on the upper extreme heavenly eagle to move through space and get inside the Gu formation. But if he did so, he would be revealing the fact that his upper extreme heavenly eagle only had rank six power.

How could Fang Yuan reveal his own weakness?

“Although we have the Gu formation’s protection and are secure, Fang Yuan has the initiative. He is using a transformation path killer move, while we are using the super Gu formation, our immortal essence is expending at an extremely fast rate.” Bai Ning Bing spoke.

Shi Nu requested to battle: “Why don’t I go out to battle and lure him in?”

Bai Ning Bing disdainfully sneered: “Fang Yuan is a crafty old scoundrel, how could he be provoked by you and rashly enter the Gu formation?”

Shi Nu furiously glared at Bai Ning Bing: “Then what do you think we should do?”

“Forget it.” Ying Wu Xie spoke: “Wait for me to make some arrangements and leave behind a cover to confuse him. We will then quietly use the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel to leave this place. As long as we make haste, we will reach Northern Plains and meet with the rank eight Gu Immortal, that would be the time to turn around and deal with Fang Yuan.”

Bai Ning Bing’s expression was heavy: “You asked me to arrange this Gu formation only to give it up? Forget about the mortal Gu, but you want me to give up the Immortal Gu used in it as well?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1251: Hair Mistress Battle

“These are just a few Immortal Gu, so what?” Ying Wu Xie spoke in a profound voice, “As long as our plan succeeds, all your losses can be compensated. Being able to let go is the mark of a wise person. Moreover, we are not just abandoning them senselessly, instead we are leaving them behind to confuse the enemy and get some precious time for ourselves.”

Bai Ning Bing snorted: “Why do I feel like you are intentionally weakening my strength?”

“You are thinking too much. The enemy is outside, you can also choose to stay behind and personally control this Gu formation to help us delay the enemy.” Ying Wu Xie glanced at Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes flickered with sharp light, before finally nodding: “I shall go with your plan then!”

It was not that she did not want to fight by herself, but facing such a powerful Fang Yuan, she did not have any confidence in winning.

Northern Plains, Snowy Mountain blessed land.

Ninth peak.

Central Continent’s group of five immortals were plotted against by Hair Mistress, they were all wrapped around like cocoons by her blue hair.

“What killer move is this?!”

“My immortal essence is rapidly being consumed!”

“Ah!” Yu Yi Ye Zi suddenly shouted, his whole body suddenly burned with bright flames.

But the fire was actually not able to burn the blue hair, instead, large amounts of water vapor emerged from the hair, drenching Yu Yi Ye Zi.

“My fire is earth furnace fire, even melting rank seven Gu material only is a matter of minutes, but it actually cannot burn even a single strand of this hair!” Yu Yi Ye Zi was extremely shocked.

“Hahaha, it is useless. My move is blue hair constriction, the longer the time taken to activate it, the stronger it becomes. Ever since Old Ancestor Xue Hu began refining fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, I have been activating this immortal killer move without stopping. Just think of it and you will know how long a time it has been.”

Hair Mistress lay down on her bed again, laughing heartily.

“Moreover, I did not completely lie to you. Snowy Mountain blessed land is indeed already covered in a super Gu formation, my battle strength has reached rank seven in here, while all of you have been weakened. Surrender obediently and allow yourself to be captured, maybe you will still have a chance for survival.”

“Hmph, you are too simpleminded.” Right at this time, an illusory shadow flew out of a blue cocoon.

The hair cocoon was not damaged at all, but this phantom figure had strangely passed through the cocoon.

The figure shortly turned from phantom to solid, it was none other than Spirit Affinity House’s rank seven Gu Immortal — Bu Zhen Zi!

Hair Mistress’s expression sank: “So there was a phantom path Gu Immortal, no wonder you can escape my blue hair constriction!”

While she spoke, a huge amount of blue hair shot out from the ground, hard as needles, supple as snakes, and shot towards Bu Zhen Zi.

Bu Zhen Zi smiled brightly: “You are still too inexperienced to be able to hurt me.”

He again turned into phantom form, this time entering another blue cocoon.

The Gu Immortal inside this cocoon was Zhao Lian Yun.

Right now, she was activating her immortal killer move to guard against the cutting and strangling of the blue hair.

Bu Zhen Zi came to her side suddenly, giving Zhao Lian Yun a fright at first.

“I will count to three, deactivate your defenses and follow me.” Bu Zhen Zi put his hand on her shoulder, as he instructed this.

Zhao Lian Yun thought: “If I stop my defensive killer move, would I not be shred into pieces by the blue hair?”

However, she thought again, Bu Zhen Zi would absolutely not deceive her, and decided to believe in him.

At the next moment, she let go of her defense and stopped activating her defensive method, the blue hair immediately moved towards her, but Zhao Lian Yun had already turned into phantom form.

Then, both phantoms rushed out of the blue hair cocoon.

Hair Mistress finally paled with fright.

Bu Zhen Zi cultivated phantom path, it was normal for him to be able to turn into phantom. But it was unusual to be able to turn others into phantom as well, and even being able to affect those he had turned into phantom.

Phantom path Gu Immortals were very few in number, Bu Zhen Zi was no doubt an exceptional talent among them.

It was because of these methods that Spirit Affinity House was confident in him being able to ensure Zhao Lian Yun’s safety.

After Bu Zhen Zi rescued Zhao Lian Yun, he repeated the same thing, rescuing the other three.

The five Central Continent Gu Immortals then started to surround and attack Hair Mistress.

However, even with one against five, Hair Mistress was not at a disadvantage.

Blue hair coiled around her whole body, dancing around like snakes and at times, standing up like a wall, as it dissolved all the offenses of the five Gu Immortals.

“She clearly has only rank six cultivation, but actually has rank seven battle strength!”

“I have also found there are indeed traces of a super Gu formation in Snowy Mountain blessed land.”

“Get out of my way, let me attack!” Mu Ling Lan moved away from the four immortals, and activated his immortal killer move.

Howl!

Wolf howls resounded, three giant light blue water wolves appeared from thin air and charged towards Hair Mistress while brandishing their teeth and claws.

Hair Mistress’s hair wall was broken again and again, and was unable to stop the water wolves’ offense. She quickly rose up and broke out of the ceiling into the air.

The five Central Continent Gu Immortals immediately flew up to give chase.

Hair Mistress soon fell into a passive state.

Although her battle strength was rather strong, Zhao Lian Yun’s side had the numerical advantage.

Hair Mistress’s offense lowered as she started to defend more, most of her blue hair was destroyed, the remainder had curled up into a ball that firmly protected her.

“This immortal killer move is truly terrifying, it can absorb and release energy.”

“A portion of our immortal killer moves are absorbed by it and released back against us.”

“Even my snake wave stab cannot pierce through this hair ball.” Mu Ling Lan was solemn.

Bu Zhen Zi suddenly transmitted his voice to Mu Ling Lan.

Mu Ling Lan’s expression shook: “Let’s try again then.”

He accumulated energy for a while before suddenly pointing out his right index finger towards the continuously revolving blue hair ball.

At the next moment, a water snake half a foot long flew out from his fingernail.

The small snake was lifelike, completely formed from water and was deep blue in color.

The water snake was extremely fast, but right now, under Mu Ling Lan’s control, it intentionally flew slowly.

At this moment, Bu Zhen Zi suddenly used his immortal killer move, turning the water snake into phantom, the water snake was easily able to pass through the hair ball and appeared in front of Hair Mistress.

Hair Mistress turned pale from the shock, quickly activating her second defensive killer move.

But the water snake turned into solid, breaking open Hair Mistress’s defense and piercing straight into her heart.

Hair Mistress gave a sharp screech as her soul escaped out of her body.

The hair ball detonated, a huge number of short hairs shot out everywhere like sharp arrows.

Central Continent’s five immortals could only concentrate on defending themselves, and let Hair Mistress’ soul escape.

“We won! Hair Mistress is dead, only her soul is left now.” Shi Zheng Yi was extremely excited.

“Good teamwork.” Bu Zhen Zi and Mu Ling Lan looked at each other and smiled.

These two rank seven Gu Immortals had made the biggest contributions in defeating Hair Mistress. First, Bu Zhen Zi rescued them from the cocoons, then Mu Ling Lan was the main attacker. Yu Yi Ye Zi, Zhao Lian Yun and Shi Zheng Yi were only supporting figures.

The battle ended, the ninth peak turned silent.

What should they do next?

The five immortals discussed and soon came to a consensus.

They would first retreat and wait for the other forces from Central Continent to arrive!

With just the five of them, how could they go against the whole of Snowy Mountain? Forget about other Gu Immortals, just Old Ancestor Xue Hu alone was an opponent they could not beat.

However, the five immortals found they were unable to leave this place.

Snowy Mountain blessed land was a public blessed land, the whole blessed land was pieced together, its defense could not compare to a normal blessed land. But there was a super Gu formation arranged here, even Bu Zhen Zi’s phantom transformation method was of no use.

“Damn it, we don’t have a formation path Gu Immortal among us. If we had a formation path great expert, maybe we could decipher the profundities of this Gu formation.” Mu Ling Lan wrung his hands in disappointment.

There had been multiple formation path Gu Immortals specially mixed in among the Central Continent Gu Immortals sent. Unfortunately, because of the unexpected collapse of the spaceless tunnel, not even one formation path Gu Immortal was among this group of five.

The five Central Continent immortals helplessly found that even though they defeated Hair Mistress, her soul escaped, while they were trapped in the ninth snowy peak, unable to escape from this super Gu formation.

“What should we do?” They looked at each other, feeling great pressure.

How could they not feel pressure?

This was the enemy’s base.

The rank eight Gu Immortal Old Ancestor Xue Hu could crush them with just his fingers.

“Did you all find something strange? We have already been here in Snowy Mountain blessed land for a while now, but no one has actually come.” Yu Yi Ye Zi suddenly spoke.

The other four immortals had the same feeling.

“It is indeed strange. We have invaded Snowy Mountain blessed land and battled Hair Mistress, the commotion was huge, but besides Hair Mistress, no one else has appeared.”

“Our fight with Hair Mistress was not a short one, but no other Gu Immortals came to reinforce her.”

“Old Ancestor Xue Hu did not appear, it could be because of a rank eight’s pride. But the other Gu Immortals should have allied and besieged us, there is no way they are holding back now!”

Mu Ling Lan, Bu Zhen Zi and Yu Yi Ye Zi pondered over this, and felt it was odd.

Right at this time, inside Zhao Lian Yun’s immortal aperture, love Gu suddenly activated, a powerful Immortal Gu aura rose from Zhao Lian Yun’s body.

Such a majestic aura caused the other four immortals’ expression to change.

“What a powerful aura! Is it a rank nine Immortal Gu?”

“I remember this aura appeared in the spaceless tunnel as well.”

“So it was you who protected us!”

Mu Ling Lan, Yu Yi Ye Zi and Shi Zheng Yi stared at Zhao Lian Yun, dumbfounded.

Zhao Lian Yun, however, did not have control over her body, her eyes had rolled back, showing her whites, her legs were a foot above the ground, her head was slightly raised, and she was emitting chuckling sounds.

“Don’t disturb her, this is love Gu’s power.” Bu Zhen Zi quickly spoke.

“Love Gu?!”

“Spirit Affinity House’s signature Immortal Gu was actually brought here by Zhao Lian Yun?!”

The other three immortals were extremely shocked.

Bu Zhen Zi smiled bitterly, as he explained to them.

After a while, Zhao Lian Yun woke up: “I know all the secrets of this Gu formation now!”

The four immortals were joyous.

“This was because of love Gu?” Mu Ling Lan’s eyes were wide open.

Zhao Lian Yun nodded.

“Quickly explain it to us.” Bu Zhen Zi urged.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1252: Fate Reversing Sacrificial Refinement Formation

Atlas Studios

“This formation is called fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation. It was set up by Sun Ming Lu, using over ten Immortal Gu, the crucial point is it irrigates the water of Reverse Flow River, thus it has extremely astonishing power!”

Zhao Lian Yun explained in a heavy voice.

Love Immortal Gu had activated of its own accord, using up large amounts of immortal essence in Zhao Lian Yun’s immortal aperture, it had all sorts of effects, and this time, it had let Zhao Lian Yun directly obtain the origins and history of the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation.

“Reverse Flow River? That legendary Reverse Flow River?” Yu Yi Ye Zi’s eyes opened wide.

“Right, it is the Reverse Flow River recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.” Zhao Lian Yun nodded.

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> stated, Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley and Reverse Flow River were the three obstacles inside the door of life and death. Back then, to save his eldest son, Verdant Great Sun, Ren Zu had traveled to Obsession Death Domain but had failed. Ren Zu could only pass through the three obstacles, to revive once again.

In the end, Ren Zu had passed Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley, but had failed in Reverse Flow River.

“Reverse Flow River is a secluded domain of heaven and earth, who could have thought it was in Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s hands.” Bu Zhen Zi sighed.

Mu Ling Lan spoke: “Supposedly, in the past, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had relied on ghostly concealment to enter the door of life and death, and moved Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley out, but was unable to take Reverse Flow River. I never expected Reverse Flow River to be taken by someone as well.”

Mu Ling Lan was a supreme elder of Spirit Butterfly Valley, this ancient sect was most skilled in information gathering, so Mu Ling Lan knew many secrets.

This group of immortals soon accepted this fact.

Since Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley could be taken away, it was not that strange for Reverse Flow River to appear as well.

“The main thing now is how to break this fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation.” Bu Zhen Zi emphasized.

But Zhao Lian Yun shook her head: “It is almost impossible to break this formation. Even a rank eight Gu Immortal will be trapped and not be able to extricate themselves. Although there are no rank eight Immortal Gu used in this super Gu formation, this super Gu formation perfectly utilizes Reverse Flow River, which allows it to display endless might.”

Zhao Lian Yun explained slowly while the other four immortals listened speechlessly, no longer having the intention to break the formation.

This super Gu formation has completely remodeled Snowy Mountain blessed land, using the fifteen snowy peaks as the formation cores to form a solid defense.

If a Gu Immortal charges into the formation, they would be forcibly sent to different snowy peaks depending on their cultivation.

If it was a rank seven Gu Immortal, they would be sent to the snowy peaks with rank seven Gu Immortals to fight.

If it was a rank eight Gu Immortal, they would be sent to Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

Hair Mistress’ words had some truth and some lies, and were not completely nonsense.

The fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation could indeed amplify the strength of the Gu Immortal in the formation cores. It could let rank six Gu Immortals have rank seven might, and while it could not let rank seven Gu Immortals have rank eight strength, there would still be a tremendous boost.

Moreover, this fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation also imitated Regret Pool, having some mysterious abilities of time path.

The truly wicked thing was any Gu Immortals that died within the formation would be considered as sacrificing their life to this formation, helping Lady Wan Shou, who was in the center of the formation, refine Ma Hong Yun.

“No wonder when we killed Hair Mistress, her body and immortal aperture turned into ashes and disappeared.”

“Although her soul escaped, her soul must have already dispersed completely due to this formation.”

“Who could have thought Sun Ming Lu could actually construct such a level of super Gu formation? Such a powerful formation, even the ten great ancient sects might not be able to match it.”

“Sun Ming Lu is Northern Plains’ publicly recognized number one formation path grandmaster. According to rumors, he has an unyielding nature and highly values ties of friendship. He did not associate himself with the demonic path. Earlier, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had put down his pride and invited him repeatedly, but Sun Ming Lu did not yield to such an expert. In the end, he was touched by Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s love for Lady Wan Shou, and helped Lady Wan Shou construct a refinement path Gu formation. But from the looks of it now, creating such a wicked refinement path Gu formation, this Sun Ming Lu is not a good person.”

The Central Continent Gu Immortals discussed.

“That means, if we go out of this snowy peak, we will be forcefully separated and have to fend for ourselves?” Bu Zhen Zi asked.

Zhao Lian Yun nodded: “It should be the case. We appeared here because of love Immortal Gu’s strength.”

Love Gu was a rank nine Immortal Gu, its might surpassed the whole super Gu formation, so it could make the five Gu Immortals appear at the ninth snowy peak together.

However, right now, love Gu did not activate, this group of five would be separated by the Gu formation once they stepped out of the range of this snowy peak.

Bu Zhen Zi frowned deeply. This was extremely bad news.

He was given the task to escort Zhao Lian Yun, to protect Zhao Lian Yun as well as love Gu. But now, this super Gu formation would separate them, and there was nothing he could do.

“How about this, Fairy Lian Yun, enter my immortal aperture. I don’t believe this super Gu formation can influence my immortal aperture?” Bu Zhen Zi hesitated before making up his mind.

The immortal aperture of a Gu Immortal was their greatest secret, and normally they would not let others enter.

However, Bu Zhen Zi knew the significance of this matter and decided to make a sacrifice, letting Zhao Lian Yun in.

They could only do this.

Because Zhao Lian Yun did not have a true immortal aperture, hers was a phantom aperture. Heavenly Court’s phantom aperture had advantages as well as disadvantages. A disadvantage was that it could only store immortal essence, Gu worms and will, but could not be managed and developed like normal immortal apertures. It also had to be replenished at set intervals of time and could not last forever. An advantage was that it could store Immortal Gu of any rank, just like Zhao Lian Yun currently could store love Gu, and not have to worry about this rank nine Immortal Gu bursting the immortal aperture.

However, after attempting it, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals found that they could not even open the entrance to their immortal apertures.

Clearly, Sun Ming Lu had considered this issue when he constructed this super Gu formation. This flaw was not in the Gu formation.

The Gu Immortals fell into an awkward situation.

They had gotten rid of Hair Mistress, but they themselves were trapped here.

But there was good news, they did not need to worry about any reinforcements or the rank eight Old Ancestor Xue Hu making a move against them.

Because in this super Gu formation, each snowy peak lord guarded one peak, and could not leave it. Any rank eight Gu Immortals whom invaded Snowy Mountain blessed land could not fight rank six or rank seven snowy peak lords, and could only fight Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

This rule restricted Old Ancestor Xue Hu as well.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu could not make things difficult for rank six and rank seven invaders.

The reason for this rule came from Reverse Flow River.

Humans aspired to move up the social ladder, while water flowed downwards due to gravity.

These were rules of the world.

With rank eight as the high point, and rank seven and rank six as the low, the higher ranked Gu Immortals could only look for those of similar level or fight with stronger Gu Immortals.

In the whole Gu formation, the first snowy peak was the highest point, the invaders must move on to other peaks and could not leave.

This was the might of Reverse Flow River.

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> recorded that even Ren Zu was not able to successfully emerge from the river.

But this Reverse Flow River was, after all, only a secluded domain of heaven and earth. Sun Ming Lu used the plentiful dao marks in this secluded domain to create the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation.

And as the main parts of the formation, Old Ancestor Xue Hu and the snowy peak lords were also unable to go against this rule.

If it was not Reverse Flow River, and was one or more other Immortal Gu, the Gu Immortals could control the formation by themselves and create an environment favorable to themselves, instead of being in such a rigid situation like now.

But regardless, even though there was this flaw, Snowy Mountain blessed land was a solid fortress, easy to defend but hard to attack. With this Gu formation helping him, it was no wonder that Old Ancestor Xue Hu felt extremely confident and did not hide the commotion of refining fortune rivaling heaven Gu.

Even if he wanted to hide it, he might not necessarily be able to. The crucial thing was that he was not afraid of Gu Immortals attacking. Instead, he was even waiting for them, because the Gu Immortals who died in the Gu formation, whether it be enemies or his own side, they would turn into fuel which would help him refine fortune rivalling heaven Gu!

“Since that is the case, we might as well stay here and wait for the response from our reinforcements.” Bu Zhen Zi suggested.

This suggestion was approved by the other Central Continent Gu Immortals.

They were now familiar with the details of this Gu formation, but it was not of much use.

Zhao Lian Yun frowned, but she did not argue. After all, Ma Hong Yun was at the first peak, that was the center of the Gu formation, used to refine Gu. Even if Zhao Lian Yun and the group charged through the many snowy peaks and reached the first peak, they would have to face the rank eight Gu Immortal Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

Black heaven, Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

“We have discovered a small group.” South Desolation Immortal breathed out deeply.

“Ah? Where?” Yao Huang asked.

“They actually ran right inside Snowy Mountain blessed land. Strange...” South Desolation Immortal was uncertain.

Although he knew Central Continent Gu Immortals had entered the spaceless tunnel, he was not aware that an unexpected mishap had occurred in the spaceless tunnel.

He had thought he could find the majority of Central Continent’s forces, but he only discovered a small group.

However, this discovery included Zhao Lian Yun, an important person.

Love Immortal Gu.

The reason South Desolation Immortal woke up was due to this.

“Snowy Mountain blessed land.” Yao Huang frowned, “Not all the Central Continent Gu Immortals have appeared?”

South Desolation Immortal shook his head: “Maybe this is their plan of luring enemies, but whether it be rank eight Gu Immortals or Immortal Gu Houses, there are none of them.”

Yao Huang’s frown became deeper.

Just like when Fang Yuan confronted Ying Wu Xie, he did not take out the upper extreme heavenly eagle, but it had instead caused Ying Wu Xie to be even more apprehensive.

The situation of Yao Huang and South Desolation Immortal was largely similar.

If the Central Continent Gu Immortals had all appeared, they would be able to use all their strength to deal with them.

However, only five people appeared, which instead caused South Desolation Immortal and Yao Huang to not understand what the Central Continent Gu Immortals were planning.

Was this some kind of sinister plot? Are they brewing some special plan?

South Desolation Immortal thought about it before deciding: “Let this group of Central Continent Gu Immortals fight with Snowy Mountain blessed land first. The important thing is still the larger portion of the Central Continent group. Until this larger portion appears, we will just watch the events from the side.”

“Okay.” Yao Huang nodded, but was guessing inwardly: “Lord South Desolation is aware about the situation inside Snowy Mountain blessed land. This is not Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace’s ability, does our side have an insider in Snowy Mountain blessed land?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1253: Courting Death

Eastern Sea.

The sword dragon kept on breathing out sword light.

Rays of white dragon breath struck the Gu formation, causing the Gu formation to truly sway.

“Something is not right. Ying Wu Xie and the others are not fools, their immortal essence expenditure while activating the super Gu formation is far greater than mine. But they are actually maintaining the stalemate without retreating and letting me attack, do they have some other plan?”

Fang Yuan was attacking furiously, although he was not able to break the formation, he firmly held the initiative. Thoughts were surging in his mind and had not stopped even for a second.

“They should know I have the upper extreme heavenly eagle. Are they not afraid of me using the upper extreme heavenly eagle to penetrate space and enter the formation? Or is this Gu formation a trap to deal with my upper extreme heavenly eagle?”

“Or could it be that Sixth Hair has already learned from Lang Ya land spirit that my upper extreme heavenly eagle is only an egg, thus they are not afraid?”

“Wait.”

Fang Yuan suddenly stopped attacking, and dived inside the sea.

While under the sea, he waited for a reaction from Ying Wu Xie’s group while activating an immortal killer move.

Qi luck sensation.

“They are indeed all inside the Gu formation.” Fang Yuan relaxed: “It seems I was thinking too much.”

Fang Yuan continued to attack the Gu formation, but he gradually discovered the Gu formation was only passively defending and there were no signs of Ying Wu Xie, Bai Ning Bing or the rest.

Fang Yuan suddenly had a thought and stopped attacking again.

Right now, he was holding the initiative, and he could choose freely whether to attack or not. On the other hand, the enemy was defending and in a very passive situation, not knowing when Fang Yuan would attack, and they had to maintain the Gu formation all the time, which consumed their immortal essence.

Fang Yuan stopped his offenses and besides maintaining the sword dragon transformation, he did not need to use up any immortal essence, thus his expenditure was even lesser.

The silent confrontation lasted for an hour, Fang Yuan gradually realized the fishy situation.

The Gu formation was like a deep pool, and no commotion was visible inside. The enemy was actually firmly deciding on maintaining this stalemate with Fang Yuan.

“Ying Wu Xie seems to have some other motive that requires the safe environment created by the Gu formation. No matter what, I cannot let him continue smoothly, I should quickly take action and destroy the formation. It seems I can’t continue to hide this trump card, I need to use it early!”

Ying Wu Xie’s plan had come into effect and Fang Yuan’s qi luck sensation was misled.

But Fang Yuan still had sharp judgment regarding the situation, he firmly acted without hiding any trump cards.

If it was earlier, dragon breath would be his strongest weapon, but it was different now.

At the next moment, a dragon roar resounded over an enormous surrounding distance!

Ancient battle formation — Omni-directional Travel.

Ying Wu Xie’s vision suddenly changed, and when his vision was stable, he was already at the regional wall.

This was Eastern Sea’s blue water regional wall, it was deep blue, and was like a giant screen that connected heaven and earth, expansive and boundless. The four Gu Immortals (Tai Bai Yun Sheng had entered Hei Lou Lan’s immortal aperture) standing in front of the vast and mighty regional wall were as small as ants.

Once they entered, the ancient battle formation could not be used and they could only move by themselves.

Because using Gu worms or immortal killer moves in the regional wall would shake their immortal apertures, the ancient battle formation would cause this even more and the backlash would be extremely big.

Just as they were looking at the regional wall, Ying Wu Xie’s expression changed, Bai Ning Bing also subconsciously looked back, her eyes letting out sharp light as she stared at the direction they came from.

“The Gu formation has been broken.” Bai Ning Bing spoke in a heavy voice.

“So quickly?!” Hei Lou Lan was also moved.

She thought of when she was trapped, and compared it to how quickly Fang Yuan had broken the formation. Even if she was inside and he was outside, it clearly showed his terrifying battle strength.

“Did he use the upper extreme heavenly eagle?” Hei Lou Lan quickly thought of a possibility.

“No.” Bai Ning Bing shook her head.

Fang Yuan had broken the Gu formation, but did not discover anybody and was not able to obtain any Gu worms. Once the Gu formation was broken, the Gu worms would all self-detonate, how could Bai Ning Bing leave behind resources for the enemy?

Although the losses were huge, the scene when Fang Yuan attacked had been shown to them.

In a battle between Gu Immortals, information was a crucial and very important factor.

Bai Ning Bing, Ying Wu Xie and the group naturally would not let go of such a good opportunity to gather information.

“Fang Yuan used a completely new killer move, it is probably a recent creation of his.” Ying Wu Xie spoke.

“This killer move is terrifyingly powerful.” Bai Ning Bing’s expression was heavy: “Unless we have a method which targets it, we won’t be able to last a few breaths of time even if we combine our strengths.”

“What?!” Hei Lou Lan took a sharp breath, even the silent and expressionless Shi Nu was visibly terrified.

Ying Wu Xie knew the situation was far from good, he had arranged the formation and planned to delay for time.

Although his plan succeeded, he had not expected it to delay him for just such a short period of time.

They would have to spend some time in passing the regional wall.

The crucial thing was that the nature of the sovereign immortal body made it so that the sovereign immortal body could travel through regional walls freely without any restriction. Ying Wu Xie naturally already knew about this.

“The super Gu formation was forcefully broken, Fang Yuan has discovered we are not there. He will definitely use qi luck sensation again and search for us. If we enter the regional wall, even if I consider the best case scenario, according to Fang Yuan’s previous speed, he will certainly be able to catch up to us. We would then have to fight with him inside the regional wall. So, should I not enter this regional wall?”

Ying Wu Xie began to let out cold sweat, his heart felt like it was pressed under an enormous weight.

Ying Wu Xie judged the situation, he clearly knew his side was already on the brink of life and death, even though they were not under attack right now, if they did not handle the following situation properly, they would be in danger of dying!

And whether they could get out of this danger or not would depend on his plan.

The heavy pressure weighed down on Ying Wu Xie’s shoulders. This did not concern only his survival, it also concerned the Gu Immortals beside him.

Alright, Ying Wu Xie did not care about the safety of the Gu Immortals beside him, he did not even fear his own death. But if he died, who would save the Demon Venerable’s main body? Shadow Sect was in ruins currently, he was the only hope left!

“How could this be? How could Fang Yuan’s battle strength rise to such a level in such a short time?”

“He cannot even use wisdom Gu, how did he make deductions? Could it be that he gained some powerful wisdom path methods?”

Deducing immortal killer moves could not be done in a matter of days. Fang Yuan’s trump card was too abrupt, catching Ying Wu Xie off-guard.

“I have already used up the method to confuse the enemy, if we enter the regional wall, we will definitely have to fight Fang Yuan. Our side is at a great disadvantage!” Ying Wu Xie was very clear on this, using immortal killer moves in the regional wall would cause backlash, but Fang Yuan did not have such a restriction.

The five regional walls were the perfect places for him to fight! Even rank eight Gu Immortals might be in a bad situation. Because when rank eights entered the regional walls, they would face much more restriction than rank sixes or rank sevens.

Naturally, rank eight Gu Immortals moved through black heaven or white heaven, and would not stupidly travel to and fro through the regional walls.

If Ying Wu Xie persisted on entering the regional wall, undoubtedly, he would be taking a huge risk. Fang Yuan had shown his trump card, even without counting the upper extreme heavenly eagle, just this trump card alone made Ying Wu Xie feel he could not go against Fang Yuan..

“No, there is still Bai Ning Bing.” Ying Wu Xie suddenly had a thought, secretly glancing at Bai Ning Bing.

He immediately felt the alliance was an extremely good decision. At the same time, he also felt some emotions, who could have thought he would actually have to rely on Bai Ning Bing’s strength at this moment.

This was truly, what goes around comes around, the trajectory of fate had countless changes, he, the grand Ying Wu Xie, would actually have to rely on Bai Ning Bing, who had been arranged as a pawn before!

“But how much strength does Bai Ning Bing have? It has not been long since she inherited Bai Xiang grotto-heaven.” Ying Wu Xie did not have much confidence as he thought on it.

He then thought: “But if don’t enter the regional wall now, we can only wander around in Eastern Sea, Omni-directional Travel is also not a method that can be used repeatedly and requires some time before it can be used again. If so, we will sooner or later be found by Fang Yuan.”

“More importantly, this is Eastern Sea. All the Gu Immortals on my side are of other regions!’

Ying Wu Xie’s physical body was a Western Desert immortal zombie, Bai Ning Bing was a Southern Border Gu Immortal, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan were from Northern Plains, and Shi Nu was from Central Continent. There was not one Eastern Sea Gu Immortal.

Foreign region Gu Immortals would be marginalized in other regions and even be hunted. Although this was not too common in Eastern Sea, one should not forget that Fang Yuan was an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal.

Sovereign immortal body!

It could completely blend into any region and become a Gu Immortal of that region.

When the time comes in which both sides battle, and Eastern Sea Gu Immortals appear, and Fang Yuan had the upper hand, it goes without saying that the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals would help Fang Yuan.

Few people would provide help when one desperately needed it, but there were many who would add fuel to the fire.

“So if we stay in Eastern Sea, we might not only be facing Fang Yuan, but other Eastern Sea Gu Immortals as well.” Ying Wu Xie smiled bitterly.

After experiencing many setbacks, he had matured immeasurably. Thinking through all elements comprehensively, it was incomparable to the past.

“Moreover, Fang Yuan still has the upper extreme heavenly eagle.”

“We must go to Northern Plains! Snowy Mountain blessed land is our only hope. We can use the rank eight Gu Immortal to kill him.”

After considering everything, Ying Wu Xie finally made a firm resolution and flew straight into the regional wall.

Several hours later, a sword dragon flew over from far away.

“Trying to enter Northern Plains?” This sword dragon was Fang Yuan’s transformation.

Everything was like Ying Wu Xie expected, after he broke the Gu formation, he did not discover any trace of Ying Wu Xie and the rest.

How would Fang Yuan not understand that the other side had made a ploy to escape, fortunately, he had not hesitated to expose his trump card and forcibly destroyed the Gu formation, otherwise, he would still be in the dark.

“It seems that although qi luck sensation can detect the target, it can also be misled.”

“Then this target I am sensing, will it also be false?”

If it was false, Fang Yuan could do nothing about it, after all, this was his only clue.

But if it was real...

Hehe.

“I can get rid of you all in the regional wall. All of you are actually traveling in the regional wall in front of me, you are courting death!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1254: Love Becomes The Problem

Waiting was often long and difficult to endure.

Shi Zheng Yi was unable to sit still, pacing back and forth in the large hall.

Yu Yi Ye Zi was sitting cross-legged on the ground with his eyes closed, he spoke with dissatisfaction: “Can’t you rest properly, don’t move back and forth.”

Shi Zheng Yi yelled: “I have already rested enough, sigh, how long do we have to wait?”

“Until the other group arrives.” Bu Zhen Zi spoke.

“If they don’t come, do we continue waiting forever?” Zhao Lian Yun frowned, she was also somewhat impatient.

When fighting with Hair Mistress, the five immortals were all wholeheartedly focused and did not feel anything. Now that they were cooped up in here, every second became unbearable.

Zhao Lian Yun was feeling even worse, like a fire was burning her heart.

Bu Zhen Zi frowned and was about to speak.

But at this moment, Zhao Lian Yun spoke again: “You must have some thoughts. All of you have seen and even personally gone through the final moment in the spaceless tunnel. Do you think that perhaps the other Gu Immortals have died there?”

“Impossible!” Shi Zheng Yi was the first to refute it, as he glared at Zhao Lian Yun with anger.

His father, Shi Ge, was among those Gu Immortals. Zhao Lian Yun’s words were like predicting his father’s death.

Zhao Lian Yun ignored Shi Zheng Yi’s attitude, continuing: “You are all aware that we came here because of love Gu’s power. But the other Gu Immortals did not get such help. Even the Immortal Gu Houses were on the verge of destruction at that time, let alone Gu Immortals. If there are no reinforcements, how long do we wait for?”

The other Gu Immortals had slight changes in their expressions. They actually had such worries, but it was just that they did not take the initiative to speak up.

Now, Zhao Lian Yun had brought up this topic, Bu Zhen Zi thought and spoke in a deep voice: “Your speculation is not impossible. But even if there are no reinforcements, Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects will send a second group of Gu Immortals.”

Zhao Lian Yun continued: “The can the second group of reinforcements reach here? You have all experienced the difficulties and dangers we faced on our way. Can spaceless tunnel still be used a second time? Even if it can be used, can we be at ease using it again?”

Bu Zhen Zi firmly stared at Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes, and spoke solemnly: “You need to believe in our sect, Zhao Lian Yun, you are Spirit Affinity House’s fairy, the sect is your biggest backer. If you don’t believe in even the sect, who can you trust?”

Zhao Lian Yun sharply sensed Bu Zhen Zi’s displeasure.

But she disregarded it, and continued: “Even if the sect sends reinforcements and they reach here, what about the time? When will they arrive here? What price will they have to pay? Will there be mishaps again? This is Northern Plains, not Central Continent.”

Bu Zhen Zi was silent.

He was unable to retort to Zhao Lian Yun’s words.

Zhao Lian Yun let out a breath of air: “In short, I don’t want to wait any longer.”

“You have to wait even if you don’t want to.” Bu Zhen Zi frowned in anger.

He stared at Zhao Lian Yun, both did not retreat and were fixated on their own stance.

Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes were soon filled with mist, she moved her sight and looked the other way: “If, during this time, Hong Yun is killed, what would we do? Can you make a guarantee?”

In truth, Zhao Lian Yun was feeling more and more afraid as she waited.

What she was afraid of was not her own safety.

Instead, under the situation where the reinforcements were far away, waiting could not solve the problem.

If during this time, Ma Hong Yun was harmed by Old Ancestor Xue Hu and successfully used as a Gu material to refine fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, this would be Zhao Lian Yun’s lifetime regret.

In the future, when she recalled it, she would be filled with extreme regret!

Regret that she had once been so close to Ma Hong Yun, charging into Snowy Mountain blessed land, and fate gave her a perfect opportunity but she did not take it.

The blurry view of the first peak could be seen from the ninth peak. It was such a short distance, but she just kept on waiting here, losing the final chance.

Zhao Lian Yun did not want to see such a thing happening, that result would make her feel sadness and pain that was worse than death!

The other three immortals did not find it convenient to meddle in the quarrel between Zhao Lian Yun and Bu Zhen Zi, after all, it was Spirit Affinity House’s internal matter.

Bu Zhen Zi retorted: “Even if you don’t want to wait, can you save Ma Hong Yun? Even if you are able to defeat other snowy peak lords, don’t forget that you will have to face Old Ancestor Xue Hu in the end because Ma Hong Yun is kept at the first peak!”

“I know.” Zhao Lian Yun clenched her fists, her voice becoming sharper, “But you said as well that before Old Ancestor Xue Hu, we will have to deal with the other ten or so snowy peak lords. We can get rid of them first, in any case, rank eight Gu Immortals cannot act against us in this Gu formation! With this, once our reinforcements arrive, we can directly attack the first peak, saving time and energy.”

Bu Zhen Zi was furious, his expression turning dark: “Then I will speak frankly, this super Gu formation amplifies the enemy’s power while weakening us. If we leave this place, we will be forcefully separated by the formation and transported to other snowy peaks. Will each of you be able to fight them alone? In the previous battle, Mu Ling Lan and I led the main attack, what help can you three rank sixes bring?”

Bu Zhen Zi spoke bluntly, but the three rank six Gu Immortals were not able to retort because what he said was a fact.

Zhao Lian Yun lowered her head in silence for a while, before she raised her head and said: “Then I am going to use love Gu again!”

Bu Zhen Zi scoffed: “Who do you think you are? Will Love Gu listen to you and allow you to control it? Back then, even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was not able to refine love Gu.”

“That is because he did not receive the acknowledgement of love Gu.” Zhao Lian Yun retorted.

“So what you are saying is that all the other fairies of Spirit Affinity House were useless? Not even one of them was able to control love Gu?” Bu Zhen Zi sneered.

“How would I know without trying?” Zhao Lian Yun was persistent.

Bu Zhen Zi laughed, and was just about to speak when Zhao Lian Yun had already taken action, she called out in her heart: “Love Gu, oh love Gu, please display your might, take the five of us to another snowy peak!”

Love Gu did not even budge, as if it was dead.

Zhao Lian Yun was unwilling to give up, she continued to pray and beg in her heart.

Bu Zhen Zi noticed Zhao Lian Yun’s stillness, and was about to speak, but right at this moment, love Gu’s aura rose from Zhao Lian Yun’s body and, at the same time, bright radiance covered Zhao Lian Yun.

The other four immortals were extremely shocked, all of their eyes were wide open as they stared fixedly at this sight.

Mu Ling Lan could not help but say: “This... it seems like the time when we left spaceless tunnel and appeared at Snowy Mountain blessed land, it was this aura and also the light.”

“Continue, don’t stop.” Shi Zheng Yi urged.

At the next moment, the light moving around Zhao Lian Yun seemed to act on its own, as it spread towards the other four Gu Immortals.

“Like this, we can charge our way towards the other snowy peaks. Ah! Maybe it can directly take us out of Snowy Mountain blessed land.” Shi Zheng Yi was hopeful.

Bu Zhen Zi’s mouth was wide open, unable to say a word at this moment.

The shock he felt was much more intense than the others.

“Love Gu cannot be controlled, this is absolutely true from history! Even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was left without options. But why? Why!”

“Why is love Gu so obedient in Zhao Lian Yun’s hands?”

“Could it be that Zhao Lian Yun is the strongest fairy in the whole history of Spirit Affinity House?!”

“No, it is more likely because of her status. She is an otherworldly demon, could it be that otherworldly demons and love Gu complement each other? Others cannot control love Gu, but an otherworldly demon is an exception?”

Countless thoughts welled up in Bu Zhen Zi’s mind, like surging waves in the sea.

While he was thinking, the space behind him suddenly ruptured and turned into a fist sized black hole. The black hole let out an unimaginable suction force, forcibly dragging in Bu Zhen Zi!

A person as strong as Bu Zhen Zi, a rank seven Gu Immortal, was unable to do anything and was directly dragged in, disappearing from the spot.

At the same time, the same thing happened to other Gu Immortals. In the blink of an eye, this large hall was empty and silent.

“We have left the ninth snowy peak!” Bu Zhen Zi held feelings of shock, as he sized up his surroundings the moment his feet landed on solid ground.

This was similarly inside a large hall. But this hall was different from the previous one, the previous hall was decorated and beautiful, and seemingly emitted feminine aura, while this hall was majestic and grand, with a masculine air emanating from it.

“Which snowy peak is this?” Bu Zhen Zi had this thought.

But shortly afterwards, his expression suddenly changed, as he shouted: “Damn it!”

He found that he was the only one in the whole hall. The other four Gu Immortals were nowhere to be seen.

He sobered himself up: Looks like I was overthinking it. Zhao Lian Yun might be an otherworldly demon, but how can she control love Gu? Love Gu is still unreliable and has countless abilities, who knows when it will act up.

“I was sent here, what about the others? Where are they? It would be best if they were together, Zhao Lian Yun would be slightly more safe then. But if Zhao Lian Yun is alone...”

Bu Zhen Zi did not dare to continue thinking.

Right at this time, an inky black shadow crept near him from the ground and silently attacked him.

Bu Zhen Zi’s instincts set off warning signs, he quickly jumped back and dodged.

But the shadow was like a viper, extremely fast, and within a breath of time, it had pounced towards Bu Zhen Zi’s feet.

Turn phantom!

At the crucial moment, Bu Zhen Zi used his specialty as a phantom path Gu Immortal, turning into phantom form.

The shadow helplessly passed through him, reaching behind Bu Zhen Zi.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1255: Zhao Lian Yun’s Death?

Clap clap clap.

A series of claps could be heard.

“It is indeed phantom path.” A Gu Immortal showed himself.

This person was tall and well-built, with residues of a beard on his face, his eyes had no white color, being completely black. The most eye-catching thing was he had a skin-like black cloak draping behind him.

Bu Zhen Zi’s pupils shrunk slightly as he recognized this person. Since the Central Continent Gu Immortals had come to save Ma Hong Yun, how could they not have information on Snowy Mountain blessed land?

“So it is Shadow King.” Bu Zhen Zi lightly spoke, pointing out the other Gu Immortal’s identity.

At the same time, he also realized he was now at the seventh peak of Snowy Mountain blessed land.

Previously, this seventh peak’s owner had been Xue Song Zi.

However, after Xue Song Zi died, a demonic path Gu Immortal joined of his own accord, and it was this person.

In fact, Snowy Mountain blessed land was a place which Northern Plains’ demonic path Gu Immortals were attracted towards, especially those demons who were wanted by Huang Jin tribes, needing to find a reliable backer like Old Ancestor Xue Hu. Perhaps there were also some Gu Immortals, wanting to prolong their lives, who joined Snowy Mountain blessed land because of Lady Wan Shou.

Naturally, because Old Ancestor Xue Hu was refining fortune rivalling heaven Gu, it caused the morale of the members of Snowy Mountain blessed land to drop.

Shadow King looked at Bu Zhen Zi, and laughed: “You guys from Central Continent truly came running into death.”

“It isn’t certain who dies yet.” Bu Zhen Zi sneered.

“Is that so?!” Shadow King suddenly turned into a pitch-black shadow, pouncing towards Bu Zhen Zi.

Rumble, at the next instance, muffled explosions resounded from the seventh snowy peak.

The large hall shook, large amounts of snow that had accumulated on the mountain rolled down, forming a small avalanche.

Different from what Bu Zhen Zi had expected, Zhao Lian Yun was not alone but also was not with all the other immortals.

Twelfth peak.

Both sides had already started fighting.

“Oh? Two little ants, hmph, see how I step on you and send you to death.” The twelfth snowy peak lord called out, and stepped fiercely with his right leg.

The twelfth snowy peak lord had transformed into a giant with the head of a bull and body of a human, his two legs had also turned into thick and firm bull legs.

Bam.

The bull leg stomped, creating a deep pit.

The peak lord had powerful might, the two Central Continent Gu Immortals quickly retreated.

One was Zhao Lian Yun, and the other was Shi Zheng Yi.

Zhao Lian Yun was slightly pale, the enemy was a giant while she had limited battle experience, this no doubt created strong mental pressure on her.

Shi Zheng Yi had rolled away on the ground, barely dodging the bull leg, he was clenching his teeth: “Damn it!”

He turned around and stood up from the ground: “Take this!”

“Lelelelelele!”

Shi Zheng Yi opened his mouth, flicking his tongue like a fast mechanical spring. With every flick, a crimson sword light shot out from the tip of his tongue at an extremely fast rate.

Zhao Lian Yun was speechless for a moment.

Normal people could only curl up their tongue, some might not even be able to do that. It was the first time Zhao Lian Yun had seen someone’s tongue actually contracting and darting forward like a mechanical spring.

The crimson sword light was extremely sharp, the twelfth snowy peak lord had transformed into a giant which had thick skin and a sturdy physique, but the crimson sword light opened up holes all over his body.

“So painful!” The twelfth peak lord cried out in pain, and raised his arms to protect his head. For a moment, he could only defend and could not attack, all his momentum from before was suppressed.

“So powerful.” Zhao Lian Yun praised.

“Naturally, this is my vital Immortal Gu — sword tongue Gu.” Shi Zheng Yi flicked his tongue, sending out crimson sword light while also replying to Zhao Lian Yun. The strange thing was that his voice was clear even then.

“Are you a sword path Gu Immortal?” Zhao Lian Yun asked.

“Ah, no... I cultivate information path.” Shi Zheng Yi replied.

“Speaking while still fighting, so you are so strong!” Zhao Lian Yun had a new level of respect towards Shi Zheng Yi, this person who had thick eyebrows, large eyes, and was somewhat lacking in brains.

“Hehe, I have sworn to defeat all the evils and demons in the world!” Shi Zheng Yi looked quite pleased and smug.

“Don’t be so happy!” The twelfth peak lord roared.

Boom!

An overwhelming aura suddenly erupted from his giant body.

The majestic aura shot everywhere, creating a huge air wave.

“Not good, it is an immortal killer move!”

“Defend!!”

Shi Zheng Yi and Zhao Lian Yun defended with all their might, but it was of no use. The air wave was extremely powerful, the two were like a pair of small toys, easily sent flying.

With the twelfth peak lord at the center, the floor tiles of the hall started flying all around, turning the whole scene into chaos.

Thump thump, Zhao Lian Yun and Shi Zheng Yi crashed into the walls, throwing out mouthfuls of blood. Their whole bodies were suffering from intense pain, their internal organs were bleeding and their bones were fractured.

With one attack, the twelfth peak lord had completely turned around the slight disadvantage, and now had the upper hand.

“This is a qi path killer move!”

“How could it be so powerful?”

Zhao Lian Yun and Shi Zheng Yi endured the pain and struggled to stand up. The two were sent flying and were quite far from each other right now.

“How was it? Did you like my, Zhao Da Niu’s, immortal killer move, rising heaven bull qi?”

“You are young and also powerful. Unfortunately, my battle strength is amplified in this formation, and it has risen to rank seven level, how can you possibly compete with me?”

“Hahaha.” Zhao Da Niu laughed loudly, his laughter filled the hall like a huge wave.

“Watch as I stomp you to death!” Suddenly, Zhao Da Niu stopped laughing, gazing malevolently at Shi Zheng Yi.

He bent his waist and knees and suddenly jumped towards Shi Zheng Yi like a small hill.

Rumble!

A loud crashing sound echoed as Zhao Da Niu pressed Shi Zheng Yi to the ground.

“Shi Zheng Yi!” Zhao Lian Yun cried out in shock. This was a horrifying sight, being crushed by the heavy Zhao Da Niu, would Shi Zheng Yi not be turned into meat paste?

But the next moment, Zhao Da Niu’s back protruded up. Shi Zheng Yi stood up from below, lifting Zhao Da Niu up with his hands, and with a yell, he actually pushed Zhao Da Niu away.

This was like a small rabbit pushing away a lion. This unimaginable scene caused Zhao Lian Yun to open her eyes wide.

“What? My transformation has the weight of a desolate beast bull, you actually pushed me away?” Even Zhao Da Niu found it unbelievable.

Shi Zheng Yi was coughing up blood, after pushing away Zhao Da Niu, he knelt down on the ground, extremely tired.

“This, this is the power of justice!” Shi Zheng Yi spoke with difficulty.

“Don’t speak, you are coughing up too much blood.” Zhao Lian Yun called out.

“Bullshit justice!” Zhao Da Niu pulled himself together, and charged towards Shi Zheng Yi again.

He was extremely huge, but right now, his speed was like the wind, not fitting with his body size at all.

In the blink of an eye, Zhao Da Niu was right in front of Shi Zheng Yi.

“Ahhh, look at the power of my justice!” Shi Zheng Yi shouted, and actually collided head on.

Bam, a muffled sound echoed.

Zhao Lian Yun felt pain in her body just from hearing the sound.

Shi Zheng Yi was like a small ball that was thrown far away, coughing up large amounts of blood.

Then, like a broken sack, he fell to the ground, his blood dying the path red.

“I will kill you! Eh?” Zhao Da Niu was just about to rush forward and give a fatal blow to Shi Zheng Yi, but he had just stepped forward when he found his whole body was tied by a bright silver chain.

At the other end of the chain was Zhao Lian Yun.

She had already been preparing to activate her immortal killer move.

Unfortunately, real battle was different from practice, especially this intense atmosphere which caused Zhao Lian Yun to fail twice in activating her killer move.

But it was fortunate that Shi Zheng Yi had stalled for time, and Zhao Lian Yun finally succeeded on her third attempt.

Immortal killer move — Life Locking Silver Chain!

“Cough cough, thank you, this killer move is really beautiful.” Obtaining precious time for a breather, Shi Zheng Yi crawled up from the ground, coughing up blood in between his words.

“Don’t speak, you are still coughing blood!” Zhao Lian Yun was worried for him.

“Hehe, you don’t understand, I cultivate information path; by continuing to speak, I can heal my injuries. The louder I shout, the more powerful my attack becomes.” Shi Zheng Yi spoke of the reason.

“Little girl, you are annoying!” Zhao Da Niu roared and exerted strength from both of his arms, trying to break the chains on him. But no matter how much strength he used, he was unable to break these chains.

“Since it’s like this.” Zhao Da Niu gave a malevolent smile, activating the killer move rising heaven bull qi.

Boom!

An intense explosion shook the hall.

The surging air wave erupted once again, and this time, it sent the ceiling of the hall flying.

Clang clang!

Crisp sounds echoed as the silver chain broke into countless pieces. Before these chain fragments touched the ground, they turned into specks of silver light and disappeared completely.

Zhao Da Niu used his main killer move to destroy the life locking silver chain, and was free now.

On the contrary, Zhao Lian Yun and Shi Zheng Yi were struck by the air wave again, both coughed out blood as they fell to the ground, unable to stand up.

“Damn, damn it!” Shi Zheng Yi wanted to climb up, but his whole body was on the verge of breaking apart.

As for Zhao Lian Yun, she had already fallen into a stupor.

Her injuries were worse than Shi Zheng Yi’s.

Because life locking silver chain was forcefully broken, Zhao Lian Yun had suffered backlash, adding on Zhao Da Niu’s immortal killer move, her injuries had worsened.

She had rank nine love Immortal Gu, but from the start of the battle, she had not seen love Immortal Gu being activated.

Love Immortal Gu could not be controlled, even if it showed its strength, it might not necessarily be the correct solution to the problem.

Darkness.

The stupefied Zhao Lian Yun felt she was floating amidst boundless darkness.

“This is the feeling of death?”

“So this is death?”

“I must be the biggest failure of a transmigrator in history. I actually died at the hands of an irrelevant side character.”

“Let me just go down like this, after I die, I won’t have to feel so exhausted and anguished anymore.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1256: For The Sake of Love and Justice!

As she was thinking of this, Zhao Lian Yun suddenly heard a sound coming from the darkness.

This sound was calling out her name: “Zhao Lian Yun... Zhao Lian Yun...”

“Who?”

“Who is calling for me? I hear my name.”

“Why do I feel that this voice is so familiar?”

“Ah, I remember, isn’t this my voice before I lost it?”

Zhao Lian Yun suddenly recalled a scene of the past.

It was during the time of the Imperial Court contest, Zhao Lian Yun’s father had died and she was treated as a political chip for an arranged marriage. However, she went against this fate by relying on Ma Hong Yun. In just a short while, she had turned from a wealthy young miss to an orphan.

One day, Ma Hong Yun brought her to a valley.

“Look, I found a good place for you!” Ma Hong Yun looked pleased.

Zhao Lian Yun gazed around, but when she discovered this was just a common small valley, her mouth uncontrollably twitched: “What is special about this? Isn’t it just a normal valley? There is not even nice scenery.”

“What are you saying?” Ma Hong Yun’s eyes opened wide, “Valleys are very rare in Northern Plains. Here, let me teach you, shout at the valley with your name and the valley will reply to you. Like this!”

Ma Hong Yun took a deep breath, then yelled to the valley: “Zhao——Lian——Yun!”

An echo soon came from the valley: “Zhao——Lian——Yun!”

Zhao Lian Yun helplessly rolled her eyes: “Foolish people are the happiest, what is strange about echoes, I truly haven’t seen anyone as dense as you!”

“Hahaha.” Ma Hong Yun rubbed his hair: “Others have said I am an idiot, I am truly an idiot, how could I be as smart as Lady Xiao Yun.”

“But, when I felt sad in my childhood, when I was teased by others and no one played with me, I used to run to the valley near my home, and shout at the valley.”

“I call my name once, and the valley will reply back to me once, when I call again, the valley will reply again. It played with me, never abandoning or ignoring me. Unless my voice was not loud and clear enough.”

“I saw you were not feeling happy recently, there is probably no one to play with you, right? I have to be beside the young clan leader and cannot accompany you all the time, so when you are unhappy, come to this valley and play with it.”

Zhao Lian Yun did not speak, she looked at Ma Hong Yun who had an earnest expression, a feeling of pity rose in her heart.

“This Ma Hong Yun is so silly, but he is not bad at heart.”

“He must have lived a very sad life since a young age. Even now, when he works under young clan leader, he is scolded frequently. But I have never seen him cry in sorrow, he is always smiling the whole day.”

“Forget it, let me play with you then.”

Thinking of this, Zhao Lian Yun took a deep breath and called at the valley with her name.

Ma Hong Yun was so happy he almost danced when he saw Zhao Lian Yun following his words: “That’s wrong, you should shout louder, be louder.”

Zhao Lian Yun shouted once again.

Ma Hong Yun shook his head: “You are still not loud enough, the valley can hear you only if you are loud. It is not responding to you now, because it is not able to listen to you.”

Zhao Lian Yun took in a deep breath, and shouted with her loudest voice.

Zhao Lian Yun!

The valley replied — Zhao Lian Yun.

Ma Hong Yun laughed heartily.

Zhao Lian Yun also felt very refreshed, all her sadness seemed to have decreased and her mood also brightened.

“Zhao Lian Yun.”

“Zhao Lian Yun.”

“Zhao Lian Yun!”

In the darkness, the voice shouted constantly.

Zhao Lian Yun, what are you doing? Don’t be lost.

Zhao Lian Yun, you are not alone. Heaven and earth is with you, as long as you shout loudly, heaven and earth will hear you.

Zhao Lian Yun, wake up. There is someone who is still waiting for you to rescue him.

That person once stood beside you, accompanied you to watch the stars, accompanied you to call out to the valley...

Go help him.

Go help him!

He must be feeling lonely now, or maybe even afraid.

Shout loudly, send out your voice, let him know you are coming! Let him know he has to persevere, let him know he has hope!

“Yes!”

“I will save him!”

“How can I fall here?”

Zhao Lian Yun suddenly opened her eyes!

She had woken up from her stupor.

The moment she woke up, she found her whole body was burning with a pale blue light.

This blue light was let out by love Immortal Gu!

Zhao Lian Yun’s injuries rapidly recovered, and her condition was soaring.

The blue light also shone towards the surroundings.

Zhao Da Niu retreated step by step, his face filled with horror: “Ah, what is this light? It is heavier than a mountain! This aura, what Immortal Gu is this?!”

Shi Zheng Yi was similarly bathed in the light.

He suddenly stood up, feeling inexhaustible energy within him, his injuries had already disappeared, and his condition had reached an unprecedented peak.

“Thank you, Zhao Lian Yun, leave this to me now!”

“All you evildoers, I will strike you down. Take my...”

“Fist—Of—Justice!”

Shi Zheng Yi shouted loudly, the louder he shouted, the more powerful his immortal killer move became.

A giant fist of light rose up from his body and struck towards Zhao Da Niu.

Boom!

Like the roar of thunder, Zhao Da Niu’s defensive methods were broken, a bloody hole appeared in his wide chest from which one could see the wall behind him.

“I... I...” Zhao Da Niu’s eyes gradually lost their luster, before he fell down.

Bam.

His body collapsed on the ground, no longer moving.

Several breaths of time later, his body, soul and immortal aperture turned into pure energy that was absorbed by the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation.

“Haha, justice prevailed!” Shi Zheng Yi raised his fist and yelled.

Zhao Lian Yun smiled from the side.

Northern Plains, licorice regional wall.

Dragon roars resounded throughout the surroundings: “Ying Wu Xie! Where do you think you are going?”

It was Fang Yuan in sword dragon form, who had finally caught up to Ying Wu Xie and the group, under qi luck sensation’s guidance.

Ying Wu Xie and the group immediately turned around and faced Fang Yuan, their expressions extremely solemn.

Ying Wu Xie had said Fang Yuan would catch up to them, so the five immortals were already mentally prepared for it and not panicked.

Right now, they were waiting for the start of this vicious battle!

The sword dragon roared, opening its mouth wide, revealing fangs that were sharp like spears and very ferocious. Its eyes were ruthless and cold, emitting bone-chilling killing intent!

Without saying any nonsense, Fang Yuan directly charged forward!

To kill!

“If you want to go against my lord, you must go through me first.” The loyal Shi Nu took a step forward, standing in front of the group, and raised his right hand.

A tall and thick rock wall immediately rose up and formed an obstacle!

Boom boom boom.

At the next moment, the rock wall was pierced through repeatedly.

Fang Yuan had used his dragon breath, the extremely sharp rays of dragon breath shot forward and gathered into a rain of sword light that pierced through the rock wall, moving towards the five immortals.

Hei Lou Lan gave a cry, breathing out small fire birds from her mouth.

These small birds could act on their own, they moved towards Fang Yuan’s dragon breath. The fire birds collided into the dragon breath, turning into balls of flames that dissipated in the air.

“Angry bird?” Fang Yuan was slightly surprised.

This was clearly a fire path method, he had not expected Hei Lou Lan to use it.

The external appearance of these fire birds made Fang Yuan think of Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Back then during the battle in Eastern Sea, Fang Yuan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng, along with Shark Demon, Su Bai Man as well as the one finger flow shark, were unable to beat Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Blazing Heaven Demoness’ immortal killer move, angry bird, had left an extremely deep impression on Fang Yuan.

But the fire birds Hei Lou Lan used were different from the true angry bird.

After Hei Lou Lan’s strength path Immortal Gu were sent to Fang Yuan, she suffered from a lack of strength path Immortal Gu to support her battle strength, in Eastern Sea, she then chose to cultivate fire path, which was not complemented by the strength path dao marks in her body.

She possessed a fire path inheritance.

When Blazing Heaven Demoness met Hei Lou Lan, she secretly handed her fire path inheritance to Hei Lou Lan.

Blazing Heaven Demoness felt extreme guilt towards Hei Lou Lan, and thought of every way to compensate her.

Hei Lou Lan received the fire path inheritance and had not cared about it originally, feeling she would not use it in her whole life. But who could expect the way events unfolded, under strange coincidences, she chose to focus on fire path.

Naturally, she did not have even a trace of fire path dao marks in her.

But she possessed all the Immortal Gu of Blazing Heaven Demoness.

This matter would have to be traced back to before the battle of Yi Tian Mountain.

To refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, Spectral Soul had no choice but to sacrifice the whole of Zombie Alliance, using the countless immortal zombies as immortal materials to further the progress of refinement.

Zombie Alliance was underneath Shadow Sect from its establishment, and was controlled by Shadow Sect. It was just that many immortal zombies did not know of this fact despite joining Zombie Alliance.

Zombie Alliance had gone all-out in establishing super Gu formations to protect immortal zombie corpses. But in truth, this was a perfect excuse and a way to keep them in captivity.

Using this chance, Shadow Sect assassinated all the immortal zombies, it did not matter if the dead apertures of the immortal zombies existed or not, but the Immortal Gu in them were all safely stored.

Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s Immortal Gu were all still hidden in Dark Flow Giant City.

Ying Wu Xie and Hei Lou Lan were far away in Eastern Sea, but there was still Sixth Hair in Northern Plains.

Dark Flow Giant City was hidden in the depths of Earth Trench, Sixth Hair quietly sneaked in and used his methods to take away all the Immortal Gu of Blazing Heaven Demoness, sending them to Ying Wu Xie.

After Ying Wu Xie refined them, he gave them to Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan already had Blazing Heaven Demoness’ true inheritance, and with the Immortal Gu as well, she could almost replicate all the methods of Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Fang Yuan did not know of this before, but now that he saw these fire birds, he immediately had a pensive look.

The sword light dragon breath continued to be breathed out, Tai Bai Yun Sheng quickly acted and added the protection of cloud rings around the other Gu Immortals.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1257: Ruthless Sword Dragon

Tai Bai Yun Sheng mainly cultivated time path, but Man as Before and Landscape as Before were traded to Fang Yuan, so he chose to cultivate cloud path. He already had a foundation in cloud path, and with Shadow Sect not lacking on cloud path true inheritances, the defensive method he used right now was quite good.

However, after Tai Bai Yun Sheng placed a cloud ring around his allies, his expression turned pale.

When Gu Immortals use their immortal killer moves inside the regional walls, their immortal killer moves would tremor.

Using the immortal killer move five times caused Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s immortal aperture to tremor five times, inflicting huge losses.

“Interesting.” Fang Yuan smiled sinisterly, his dragon body moved in a zigzag fashion, and lightly flew to the sky.

Ying Wu Xie and the rest looked sombre.

In this regional wall, every movement of theirs was performed with difficulty, having to constantly resist the formless repulsion and attraction forces.

On the contrary, Fang Yuan could move easily and freely.

Fang Yuan flew high above, immediately gaining control of the situation. He looked down from above and moved around, breathing out dragon breath constantly, sword light fell down towards the heads of the five immortals like rain.

“Defend, don’t split up, we can’t fight him alone!” Ying Wu Xie shouted loudly, reminding everyone.

Seeing the sword light falling towards them, Ying Wu Xie suddenly roared, letting out an incomparably sharp screech.

Immortal killer move — Soul Howl!

Soul Howl’s power completely covered the sky, but did not affect the surrounding Gu Immortals in the slightest, showing Ying Wu Xie’s outstanding control.

Fang Yuan’s offenses were immediately suppressed. The sword light dragon breath clearly stopped for a moment, before quickly recovering.

“Since I am going against Shadow Sect, how could I not have prepared against soul path attacks?” Fang Yuan sneered inwardly.

He was already mentally prepared.

However, he did not have a method to protect his soul against soul path Immortal Gu, so he was hit by the attack and affected.

But his soul’s foundation was extremely robust. He was completely able to endure the attack of soul howl. It would not matter even if his soul was injured because he had guts Gu!

“Damn it.” Ying Wu Xie cursed while blocking the sword light dragon breath.

He knew Fang Yuan had guts Gu.

Guts Gu was only a mortal Gu, but it came from Dang Hun Mountain, and was beyond ordinary.

A secluded domain of heaven and earth like Dang Hun Mountain had an enormous amount of dao marks, the total surpassed even rank nine Immortal Gu. However, secluded domains of heaven and earth had scattered dao marks, though they could be of the same type and closely linked together. While rank nine Immortal Gu were fragments of the Great Dao, they could be controlled by a Gu Immortal to bring out mysterious powers.

Rank nine Immortal Gu and secluded domains of heaven and earth could not truly be compared and evaluated.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh.

Sword light fell down like rain, the five immortals were stifled.

There were traces of sword cuts everywhere on the ground.

The five immortals naturally did not like being suppressed like this.

The best way to deal with such a focused attack was to separate and dodge. But if they did that, Fang Yuan would have the chance to attack them separately!

But the five immortals would not take being beaten down passively, Shi Nu had finally finished his preparations as he activated an immortal killer move.

Rumble!

Muffled sounds echoed continuously, earth shook, a large hand made completely from soil and rocks rose up from the ground.

The large hand spread open and slowly hovered above the five immortals' heads, protecting Ying Wu Xie and the others under its palm. The thick back of the hand took on the sharp dragon breath.

Despite the large earth path hand being badly mauled and showing signs of being destroyed, Hei Lou Lan had finished preparing her killer move using this chance.

She stretched out her right arm, her five fingers together with no gaps between them, as she thrusted at the sky.

Boom!

A burning crimson ray of light erupted from between her fingers, and with breakneck speed, it pierced through the whole large hand and rushed towards Fang Yuan.

This immortal killer move was astonishingly fast, and it was concealed by the large earth path hand, if Fang Yuan was even the slightest bit inattentive, he would definitely be struck.

However, this ray of fire did not hit Fang Yuan and was easily avoided by him lightly moving his dragon body.

“It actually did not hit!” Hei Lou Lan’s heart sank.

Three breaths future vision.

Hei Lou Lan did not know that Fang Yuan had such a time path investigative killer move.

“Strange, Hei Lou Lan is a strength path Gu Immortal and is using fire path methods, but she is actually not impeded by the conflict of dao marks. It should be from Shadow Sect’s methods. After all, sovereign immortal fetus Gu was designed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.” Hei Lou Lan’s efforts were in vain, and instead gave away some of her details.

Soon, the large earth path hand collapsed, and the sword light dragon breath continued to rain down.

However, the five immortals were no longer as hurried before, each used their immortal killer moves to defend against the sword light rain.

“Then how about this move? Let me see how you deal with it.” Fang Yuan firmly held the initiative, easily using another immortal killer move.

Time path — Year Beast Summoning.

Roar!

A tiger shaped year beast answered the summoning and appeared in the regional wall, helping Fang Yuan battle.

Fang Yuan threw large amounts of mortal year Gu, raising the morale of the tiger year beast as it charged towards Ying Wu Xie and the group.

Shi Nu felt bitter, the sword light dragon breath was already difficult to cope with, now there was an ancient year beast worsening the situation.

This year beast could similarly move freely in the regional wall.

The reason was similar to the cloud beasts, the cloud beasts were life forms of white heaven and were not native to the five regions, thus they were not restricted by the regional walls.

While the year beasts which lived in the River of Time were similar.

“Allow me.” Ying Wu Xie stepped forward, and used an extremely similar method.

Soul path — Soul Beast Summoning!

In the past, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had created soul path, thus Shadow Sect was most proficient in soul path. Hei Fan could think of summoning year beasts, how could Shadow Sect not have similar methods?

Ying Wu Xie’s method was extraordinary, summoning three ancient soul beasts at once.

“My soul beasts are not influenced by the regional wall, because they come from the door of life and death!”

Ying Wu Xie’s complacency did not last long because he saw that Fang Yuan had already rushed forward.

The sword dragon snaked around, flying extremely fast.

It grabbed forward with its dragon claws, directly destroying a soul beast’s head.

Its tail whipped, severing the thigh of another soul beast.

It breathed out, dragon breath pierced through the third ancient soul beast.

Fang Yuan’s sword dragon transformation had outstanding battle strength, the main thing was that Fang Yuan also had Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s immortal killer move on him — Ghostly Concealment.

This made any soul beast unable to sense his existence.

Thus, with Fang Yuan’s battle strength surpassing the ancient soul beasts, and the soul beasts unable to sense him, Fang Yuan had huge superiority when fighting the soul beasts!

These soul beasts could not even react before they were severely injured by Fang Yuan.

Fortunately, soul beasts did not have a clear weak point on them, otherwise they would have been completely destroyed by Fang Yuan.

But even so, the soul beasts had clearly thinned, becoming increasingly transparent.

Ying Wu Xie’s expression was unsightly, but he simply watched as Fang Yuan destroyed the three ancient soul beasts without making a move.

Ying Wu Xie inwardly thought: “It doesn’t matter, even if you kill these three ancient soul beasts, so what? I can use the killer move again and summon another three ancient soul beasts. What is found everywhere in the door of life and death? Souls and soul beasts!”

But at this time, Fang Yuan suddenly gave up on attacking the ancient soul beasts and activated Sword Escape.

Sword escape Immortal Gu!

Fang Yuan’s speed suddenly erupted, leaving behind an afterimage in his original spot.

Fast! Fast! Fast!

Tai Bai Yun Sheng could not react at all and was struck by Fang Yuan’s claws.

The cloud ring protecting him directly collapsed, his stomach was torn open and his large intestine spilled out.

“He did not die?” Fang Yuan was surprised.

He had wanted to use dragon breath, after all, the dragon breath was the most powerful weapon of his sword dragon transformation, but at the crucial moment, a layer of ice had sealed his mouth out of nowhere.

Fang Yuan could not open his mouth, thus he chose to use his claws.

But his speed was too fast and rushed, Fang Yuan could not use his full strength, as a result, most of the strength of his claws was offset by Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s cloud ring, and Tai Bai Yun Sheng thus was barely able to survive.

“It is Bai Ning Bing!” Fang Yuan exerted strength, forcibly opening his dragon mouth, breaking the ice on it.

Fang Yuan looked back, his speed was too fast and right now, he was already a few li away from the five immortals.

Bai Ning Bing was guarding in front of the four immortals, her icy-blue eyes emitted cold light as she stared at Fang Yuan with no fear.

“Quick, quick!” Hei Lou Lan grabbed Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s leg and dragged him to the rear.

Then, she sat down and used healing methods, but unfortunately, Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s injuries were severe, and for the moment showed no signs of healing.

Once a Gu Immortal was injured, it was difficult to heal.

Because of the conflict between dao marks!

Once Fang Yuan’s ancient sword dragon transformation injured someone, it would leave behind large amounts of sword path dao marks. This was very hard to endure for Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s fragile human body.

“Oh, if I had Man as Before, it would not be so troublesome.” Saying this, Tai Bai Yun Sheng fainted, his life hanging by a thread.

This was after Hei Lou Lan used all her healing methods.

“Damned Fang Yuan, his true target was Tai Bai Yun Sheng!” Ying Wu Xie’s expression was ashen.

He could see Fang Yuan’s thought process.

Fang Yuan was entangled against the soul beasts on the surface, but ever since the battle began, he had been searching for an opportunity. He had probably marked Tai Bai Yun Sheng as his target since the beginning.

After all, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was the weakest among the five immortals.

Always pick out the weakest enemy first!

“Tai Bai Yun Sheng cannot be counted on now!” Ying Wu Xie’s expression was heavy. How long had it been since they battled? There was already a casualty on his side, how should they deal with such a strong Fang Yuan?

“Huh?”

At this moment, Fang Yuan was surprised, feeling something wrong.

He stretched out his dragon body, but astonishingly discovered that his dragon scales were covered by a layer of thin ice, who knows when it formed.

“Bai Ning Bing’s gaze is strange!” Fang Yuan immediately reacted.

“If we want to force back Fang Yuan, we need to first restrict his speed.” Bai Ning Bing’s eyes flickered with cold light. She had clear judgment of the whole situation!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1258: Fang Yuan versus Five (1/2)

Despite becoming an immortal just recently, Bai Ning Bing had some advantages over normal Gu Immortals.

First of all, she possessed one of the ten extreme physiques, Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique, which was the best for cultivating ice and snow path. Similarly to Hei Lou Lan’s Great Strength True Martial Physique, her dao marks surpassed most rank six Gu Immortals in the same condition.

Secondly, she had become the owner of Bai Xiang grotto-heaven. She obtained Bai Xiang’s true inheritance, and had all the Gu worms left behind by Bai Xiang, among which were rank seven Immortal Gu as well!

However, there were no rank eight Immortal Gu.

Bai Xiang’s status in history was slightly inferior to Hei Fan. But the joint forces of the five Xiangs surpassed Hei Fan by a lot.

Bai Ning Bing’s flaw was that she was not familiar with the Immortal Gu and the immortal killer moves, she often failed when activating them, which caused danger of backlash.

Nurture, use, and refinement, using Gu was one of the three important aspects of Gu Master cultivation.

To get familiar with her gains, Bai Ning Bing had to spend a long period of time in practising them.

As such, she was a long way away from being able to use them freely in real battle.

But...

At this time, Bai Ning Bing’s flaw was effectively concealed.

Because she had Ying Wu Xie, Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Shi Nu beside her.

Because of their protection, Bai Ning Bing had the time to use her immortal killer move unhurriedly.

Fang Yuan’s information regarding Bai Ning Bing was lacking.

On one hand, he thought Bai Ning Bing was like Tai Bai Yun Sheng and Hei Lou Lan, whose battle strength rose after receiving benefits from Shadow Sect.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan had used qi luck sensation many times before and had sensed Bai Ning Bing, but he could not know matters concerned with Bai Xiang grotto-heaven and so on.

Fang Yuan had thus greatly underestimated Bai Ning Bing’s true battle strength.

If he knew of the truth, he might not have chosen Tai Bai Yun Sheng as the first target, and marked Bai Ning Bing instead.

But Fang Yuan had always lacked information path methods, so how could he know about Bai Xiang grotto-heaven?

Fang Yuan had been reborn, but he was not all-knowing.

Bai Ning Bing’s gaze could actually freeze any targets in her sight, slowing down their mobility. This was Bai Xiang’s method.

After Fang Yuan realized the strangeness, he immediately took measures, flying back and concealing his traces.

Visibility was very poor in the licorice regional wall, after Fang Yuan flew back, he immediately disappeared from Bai Ning Bing’s sight.

Bai Ning Bing clenched her teeth, Fang Yuan was an old fox, seeing through the limits of her move in just a short while.

“Even with such a trump card, he doesn’t force himself to take risks. Unfortunately, we have especially formulated a battle tactic for this.” Bai Ning Bing felt regret.

The move Fang Yuan used to break the super Gu formation in Eastern Sea was so powerful that it gave chills to Ying Wu Xie, Bai Ning Bing and the rest.

On the way, they had discussed about defensive measures against this method of Fang Yuan.

However, Fang Yuan did not use that move the whole time, making the prior preparations of Ying Wu Xie and the rest useless.

“Unfortunately, I have only just obtained Bai Xiang’s true inheritance, this killer move has its limits, but other killer moves can be used together with it to make up for this limit.”

Bai Ning Bing had barely been able to activate this killer move. If she tried to activate another immortal killer move on top of this, she was almost certain to fail.

Bai Ning Bing was not Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan could do many tasks at once and use multiple immortal killer moves at the same time, but Bai Ning Bing had very low attainment in this aspect.

Fang Yuan had retreated and hidden himself, but he still held the initiative and upper hand.

Under this situation, Bai Ning Bing could not take the risk.

Once she failed, their arrangement would be in disorder, creating a weakness which Fang Yuan could exploit.

Bai Ning Bing understood Fang Yuan very well, he absolutely would not give up such an exposed weakness. Even Bai Ning Bing was in deep admiration of Fang Yuan’s ability to grasp opportunities in a fight.

“Fang Yuan’s scales have been frozen by my gaze, once he recovers, with his speed, it will be difficult for me to lock onto him with my sight!” Bai Ning Bing pondered.

Fang Yuan’s burst of speed in ancient sword dragon form was astonishing by itself, adding on Sword Escape and his sword path dao marks, even the rank seven expert Ye Lui Qun Xing had died at his hands.

Bai Ning Bing knew she had been able to use her freezing sight earlier because Fang Yuan was unprepared.

Now that Fang Yuan was on guard, when he used that astonishing speed again, this immortal killer move’s effectiveness would decrease drastically.

“It seems I can only change my tactics!” Bai Ning Bing immediately decided.

She had no choice but to change.

Previously, when Fang Yuan showed his speed, he had almost killed Tai Bai Yun Sheng.

If Bai Ning Bing did not change her tactics and continued to use freezing sight, the one to die might be her!

The situation was perilous, Bai Ning Bing retreated behind Shi Nu while saying to Ying Wu Xie: “Protect me, I am going to use that move!”

Bai Ning Bing and Ying Wu Xie had formed a new alliance, and with a formidable enemy in front of them, both sides had informed each other of some of their trump cards.

Thus, Ying Wu Xie understood without needing Bai Ning Bing to explain.

He nodded solemnly: “Okay, use that move, let us take care of your safety!”

He immediately commanded Shi Nu: “Even if you have to sacrifice yourself, you need to protect Bai Ning Bing.”

Shi Nu was loyal to Ying Wu Xie, he immediately nodded at this command with no hesitation.

“Relax, he has been hit by my freezing sight, according to the flaw you mentioned of the sovereign immortal body, if he does not have a specific method to counter it, he will need about a dozen breaths of time to recover completely.” Bai Ning Bing spoke with confidence.

Ying Wu Xie nodded: “That’s good, then.”

He did not doubt Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Xiang’s methods had their own originality. It was not easy to specifically target an immortal killer move. Often, one had to fight numerous times, getting familiar with the immortal killer move, and go through a long period of deduction to create a method that countered the immortal killer move. There was a low probability of Fang Yuan having a method to counter it.

But right at this time, in the sights of the five immortals, a white ray of light flashed by.

“Careful!”

“It is the dragon breath!!”

“Defend, protect Bai Ning Bing and Tai Bai Yun Sheng!”

Rays of sword light dragon breath attacked, recreating the previous sword light rain, for a moment, Ying Wu Xie and the group had their hands tied dealing with them.

Bai Ning Bing was using all her concentration in activating her immortal killer move, while Tai Bai Yun Sheng was unconscious from the severe injuries.

As such, for the remaining three other immortals, the pressure on them had amplified suddenly, and they did not even have enough strength to strike back.

Fang Yuan circled around Ying Wu Xie and the rest from afar, breathing out dragon breath, rays of sword light dragon breath shot from all directions towards Ying Wu Xie and the others.

His sword dragon body was still covered in thin ice.

Bai Ning Bing’s freezing sight was quite effective. Naturally, the main reason was Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body.

Despite transforming into an ancient sword dragon, his dao marks still did not have repulsion to different dao marks.

This created a disadvantage.

Like when Bai Ning Bing’s freezing sight affected Fang Yuan, it would not be weakened by Fang Yuan’s dao marks, and could strike with all its might.

Fortunately, the ancient sword dragon had a tough body and strong vitality, otherwise a human body might have been directly frozen to death.

Fang Yuan was breathing dragon breath, suppressing Ying Wu Xie and the rest, while quickly recovering.

He was influenced by the freezing sight, but healing was also rather easy.

Because his dao marks did not have repulsion, even using mortal methods repeatedly could display effect.

It was not like Tai Bai Yun Sheng, whom, after being injured, could not be healed easily.

Fang Yuan continuously breathed out dragon breath, probing and suppressing Ying Wu Xie and the others.

He quickly discovered: Bai Ning Bing was being heavily protected by Ying Wu Xie and the others. Unless he made his way in through brute force, he had no other routes to get to Bai Ning Bing.

“Activating an immortal killer move, huh...” Fang Yuan thought heavily. Since she was being so greatly protected by Ying Wu Xie and the others, Bai Ning Bing was definitely preparing an extraordinary immortal killer move.

Thus, as soon as he recovered, he directly dived in.

He was not restricted in the licorice regional wall and could move freely, when he burst with his speed, even Fang Yuan himself was not able to have complete control!

It was simply like a white ray of light!

Ying Wu Xie and the rest did not even have time to call out when Fang Yuan penetrated through their defensive lineup and charged in.

Bai Ning Bing broke out in cold sweat, almost failing her killer move’s activation.

Hei Lou Lan was heavily injured!

Her left arm was completely gone and even her left torso was injured, the injuries were so frightening that one could see her ribs.

Blood spurted out like a fountain and soon accumulated into a pool below Hei Lou Lan!

The injury was covered with dao marks, causing the blood to flow unceasingly!

If this continued, Hei Lou Lan would be the first person to die.

Under this critical situation, Hei Lou Lan immediately chose to transform into an immortal zombie.

Immortal zombies could bear this level of injury. The warm and bright red blood immediately turned into cold and gloomy green blood, blood was still flowing outside, but the speed had reduced by countless times.

“Hehehe...” Hei Lou Lan knelt on one leg, taking huge gasps of breath, but her lips were curled up.

She was actually laughing!

On the other hand, Fang Yuan got a peculiar feeling: “Hmm? I was actually hit! Not bad from Hei Lou Lan!”

The dragon claw he used to rip apart Hei Lou Lan’s left arm still had traces of flesh and blood.

Right now, this flesh and blood slowly turned into a blood colored fire, which followed Fang Yuan’s dragon claw to his scales.

Immortal killer move — Flesh Blood Fire!

This fire used flesh and blood as the fuel. As long as there was flesh and blood, the fire wouldn’t stop. Without any methods to counter it, it simply would not be extinguished.

Moreover, the stronger the flesh and blood were, the brighter and more powerful the fire would become!

Fang Yuan’s ancient sword dragon transformation had instead become the perfect target for flesh blood fire.

However, Fang Yuan reacted extremely quickly.

He immediately dispelled his transformation killer move, and returned to his human form.

The, he activated a time path healing Immortal Gu —

Man as Before!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1259: Fang Yuan versus Five (2/2)

Over twenty beads of red date immortal essence were expended.

The next moment, the blood colored fire completely disappeared and Fang Yuan went back to his previous state.

“Sigh!”

“Man as Before is effective only on human bodies, when I transform to other living beings, I cannot directly use Man as Before. This is quite inconvenient.”

“Moreover, Man as Before has quite a big restriction in terms of time, fortunately I have my investigative killer move, three breaths future vision!”

Fang Yuan inwardly sighed, as he activated another immortal killer move.

Convergence of enslavement and strength path — Myriad Self!

Whoosh whoosh whoosh.

Tens of thousands of Fang Yuans converged to create a vast human tide that charged towards Ying Wu Xie and the rest.

“How can this be? He actually recovered so quickly? He has already gotten rid of blood flesh fire?” Hei Lou Lan was extremely surprised.

Fang Yuan’s counterattack was too quick, and it still carried strong momentum, making Hei Lou Lan’s heart sink to rock bottom.

Hei Lou Lan knew Fang Yuan had Man as Before.

But Man as Before had rather stringent requirements regarding time. Even Fang Yuan would only survive by a hair’s breadth. After he was struck, he would have to first discover his state, then dispel his transformation killer move, during this time, he might hesitate before he finally used Man as Before. Activating this Immortal Gu, furthermore, required some time.

Under such a situation, Hei Lou Lan thought if it was herself instead of Fang Yuan, it would also be very difficult to get rid of this blood flesh fire.

Fang Yuan was not clear of Hei Lou Lan and Bai Ning Bing’s methods, likewise, Hei Lou Lan similarly did not know that Fang Yuan had three breaths future vision.

This investigative killer move could let Fang Yuan see anything wrong that would happen to him three breaths earlier. Because of this, Fang Yuan had much more time to react and take action accordingly.

In short, Hei Lou Lan was heavily injured but only managed to slightly affect Fang Yuan.

Red date immortal essence was consumed, but Fang Yuan was rich and his financial condition was rather good, thus, he did not care about this small expenditure.

Immortal killer move — Soul Howl!

Ying Wu Xie howled, countless phantoms of Fang Yuan around him burst at once.

Immortal killer move — Spike Forest.

Shi Nu stamped his right leg, countless spikes rose up from the ground, piercing through thousands of Fang Yuan’s phantoms.

Then, Shi Nu called out, the earth spikes shot to the air, instantly clearing large amounts of phantoms in the air.

This move hid a second stage within, and was extremely effective, almost completely destroying all of Fang Yuan’s phantoms.

Earth path rank seven Gu Immortal Shi Nu, he was the cornerstone in this battle, without his protection and contribution, how could Ying Wu Xie and the rest last until this moment?

“Your turn next.” Fang Yuan transformed back into a sword dragon, laughing sinisterly inwardly.

Roar!

At this moment, the tiger year beast beside him roared and suddenly retreated.

This ancient year beast had been summoned by Fang Yuan, although it had been fighting all along, Ying Wu Xie and the rest were on guard against it, thus it was not able to assist a lot and instead suffered many injuries.

The tiger year beast was not loyal to Fang Yuan, this could not compare to Ying Wu Xie’s soul beast summoning.

Once the year beast suffered severe injuries, it immediately retreated, penetrating space and returning to the River of Time.

But it did not matter.

Immortal killer move — Year Beast Summoning!

Fang Yuan activated this killer move again, this time he summoned a sheep shaped ancient year beast.

Although year beast summoning could only summon one year beast each time, there were many year beasts in the River of Time, if one left, he just had to summon another.

The sheep ancient year beast stampeded towards Ying Wu Xie and the others, Shi Nu gave a deep roar, his body suddenly bulged, turning into a giant that was as big as the year beast; he stood stably and countered it, using his profound fighting techniques to throw the year beast to the ground.

Boom.

The sheep ancient year beast fell to the ground, causing the ground to tremor for a while.

The year beast quickly stood up, and furiously charged towards Shi Nu with its horns.

Shi Nu sidestepped smoothly while grabbing the curved sheep horns at the same time.

The two giant beings tangled together, at a deadlock for the time being.

On Fang Yuan’s end, the amount of dragon breath he used was reducing.

He was starting to feel a burning pain in his throat, as if his throat was about to emit smoke!

Dragon breath was the ancient sword dragon’s strongest weapon. Even a true ancient sword dragon would not be able to continue using dragon breath more than twenty to thirty times.

However, Fang Yuan had already used his dragon breath over a hundred times, reaching the limits of his physical body.

If he continued breathing out, his throat would be damaged, and the sword light dragon breath’s power would reduce by a huge extent.

The battle had lasted up until now, the tiger year beast had retreated from severe injuries, and now Fang Yuan was showing some signs of fatigue.

Although he had become a rank seven Gu Immortal, with red date immortal essence, his battle strength rising sharply and reaching the upper level among rank sevens, the enemies he faced were also not minor characters.

Hei Lou Lan was a formidable person with the Great Strength True Martial Physique, she had annexed a strength path blessed land in Jade Pot Mountain, her dao marks increasing by a lot. At the same time, she also had Blazing Heaven Demoness’ true inheritance along with her Immortal Gu.

Bai Ning Bing had the Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique, and had changed into the mysterious dragonman, grasping Bai Xiang grotto-heaven and obtaining Bai Xiang’s true inheritance.

There was no need to say anything about Ying Wu Xie, he was one of the main split souls of Spectral Soul. He once had the eleventh extreme physique, he was the final hope of Shadow Sect, with astonishing attainment in soul path, and although his attainment in other paths was unclear, they should not be low. At least, it was the case for luck path.

Shi Nu was a rockman, this race innately had rich earth path dao marks, and with Shi Nu cultivating earth path mainly, it could be they complemented one another well.

The most useless was Tai Bai Yun Sheng, but even so, this old guy was becoming sharper as he grew older, he mainly cultivated time path, but perfectly dual-cultivated cloud path as well, and with the Immortal Gu on him, his cloud ring’s defensive ability was quite remarkable.

Although the majority of these five was rank six, they were similar to Fang Yuan when he was rank six, with battle strength that reached rank seven level.

And right now, these elites with outstanding disposition had allied and were working together, adding on the constant support of Shadow Sect’s remaining resources and methods emerging one after another, they were stronger than a lone Ye Lui Qun Xing and were even more difficult to handle.

When Gu Immortals battled, they could not rush things.

Because there were many types of Immortal Gu, immortal killer moves were endless in number, some were extremely mystical, some were powerful and unconstrained, some were tyrannical, and some were sinister and strange.

Fang Yuan was fighting alone against five, and was firmly holding an advantage, while Ying Wu Xie and the others were exhausted by just dealing with his attacks, and were unable to turn the situation around.

“Damn it, he has not used that move even now!” Ying Wu Xie thought as green immortal zombie blood flowed down from his nose.

Ying Wu Xie wiped the blood using the back of his hand, but the green blood flowed down again.

“Damn it!”

“I have been using immortal killer moves repeatedly, and have been bearing so much backlash that even this immortal zombie body is showing signs of reaching its limits.”

“Even I am like this, the others must be in even worse circumstances.”

Ying Wu Xie gazed at his allies, and saw they were all pale and their states were worsening.

Fang Yuan was unrestricted here, but they were not. They not only had to steady themselves constantly, resisting the repulsion and attraction force in the regional wall, they also had to fight Fang Yuan at the same time, using many immortal killer moves which caused heavy losses to their immortal apertures!

“My side has Shadow Sect’s remaining resources, it is normal for our battle strength to rise rapidly.”

“But, Fang Yuan’s battle strength also rose so quickly!”

“This speed is too astonishing. Even us five allied together are not his match.”

The more Ying Wu Xie thought, the more apprehensive he felt towards Fang Yuan. And in the depths of this apprehension was a trace of fear!

Right, it was fear.

Ying Wu Xie was beginning to feel afraid.

He could not help but admit Fang Yuan was strong, he was even more afraid of

Fang Yuan’s growth speed!

“Bai Xiang, activate.”

Bai Ning Bing who had been preparing the killer move all along, suddenly gave a cry, a soaring aura rose up from her body.

Ying Wu Xie was immediately filled with joy as he looked at Bai Ning Bing: “You finally succeeded!”

Bai Ning Bing’s appearance had a great change right now.

In the blink of an eye, she had transformed into a five meter giant.

She had three heads, six arms and bare feet, her body was covered in ice armor and frost aura flowed around her, like a long ribbon was revolving around her. She stood on two frost clouds that emitted light hints of blue.

Immortal killer move — Bai Xiang!

“Fang Yuan, come fight me!” Bai Ning Bing gave a shout, and suddenly sped up like a white light passing through the air. She had changed her defensive stance, taking the initiative to attack.

“Let our old and new enmity be resolved today.” Fang Yuan’s dragon eyes narrowed, and without dodging, he charged head-on.

A silver light and a white light passed by each other.

The inertia from their speed was too powerful, whether it be Bai Ning Bing or Fang Yuan, they each flew far away.

“A light injury.” Fang Yuan slightly looked down and saw a long but shallow sword mark on his body, the dragon scales along the sword mark were all cut, some even broke through the dragon skin, letting out some blood.

By contrast, Bai Ning Bing was much more miserable.

There was a hole in her chest, three of her arms were destroyed, and almost half of her body was gone.

But she did not bleed, cold air flowed on massively, restoring her back to normal in a blink of an eye.

“Bai Xiang. This immortal killer move is rumored to be undying. Even if there is only a nail sized fragment remaining, the user can immediately revive and recover back to normal. Because after the Bai Xiang transformation, the body is no longer a flesh and blood body, instead it becomes a certain mystical life form!” Ying Wu Xie was inwardly excited.

Sure enough, as the battle went on, Bai Ning Bing’s performance was like Ying Wu Xie estimated.

She was not Fang Yuan’s match. But relying on the Bai Xiang transformation’s special characteristics, she could immediately recover back to normal.

Most of Fang Yuan’s attention was absorbed in fighting with Bai Ning Bing.

As the battle continued, even Fang Yuan felt exhausted, after all, his was a flesh and blood body, while Bai Ning Bing was still energetic and lively.

Just as Fang Yuan intended to give up on Bai Ning Bing and target Ying Wu Xie and the rest...

“It is time!” Ying Wu Xie suddenly cried out, auras of countless Gu worms rose from his body...

He looked at Fang Yuan and spoke—

Lead soul into dream!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1260: Lead Soul Into Dream

Fang Yuan got a shock when he heard Ying Wu Xie say “lead soul into dream”.

Lead soul into dream was a rare and powerful dream path immortal killer move. In the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Ying Wu Xie’s lead soul into dream had made even Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord fall asleep, trapped within a dream realm.

Fang Yuan was also struck by this move in the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, if not for heaven’s will working secretly, he would have surely died.

In this current time period, dream path Immortal Gu were extremely rare, let alone dream path killer moves.

One skill to dominate all, facing lead soul into dream, Gu Immortals were basically defenseless.

Fang Yuan was not an exception.

He had unravel dream, but he also had the sovereign immortal body. Facing lead soul into dream, even if he spent only an instant in the dream realm, it was very likely there could be various changes during that instant, and he might even die.

Fang Yuan immediately soared up, retreating without hesitation.

While retreating, he had doubts in his mind.

Back then, Ying Wu Xie’s lead soul into dream was very powerful because of many Immortal Gu as well as the amplification from the eleventh extreme physique.

Right now, could Ying Wu Xie have those Immortal Gu to form lead soul into dream?

Fang Yuan did not know the exact details, but he was aware that Ying Wu Xie’s strength path immortal zombie body absolutely lowered the power of this move by several levels.

Fang Yuan quickly got a long distance away from Ying Wu Xie and the rest, but still did not see himself falling into a dream realm.

“Was Ying Wu Xie only trying to trick me?”

Fang Yuan just had this thought, when the scenery in front of him changed.

Southern Border, in his first life.

Qing Mao Mountain was already destroyed from Bai Ning Bing’s self-detonation. Fang Yuan threw himself in with a merchant caravan, earning primeval stones while continuing his cultivation.

The merchant caravan had reached a certain valley, when suddenly, two groups of bandits rushed from in front and behind.

“Kill!”

“Protect the goods!!”

The caravan was in a great uproar. In an instant, yells resounded throughout the valley, one side was the demonic path bandits, while the other was the caravan escorting the goods.

The young Fang Yuan was mixed in the merchant caravan, clenching his teeth, panicking at the sudden ambush.

...

“This is a dream realm. I am trapped in a dream realm!”

The confusion from just entering the dream realm disappeared quickly, and Fang Yuan immediately prepared to activate unravel dream.

However, right at this time, he inexplicably exited the dream realm and returned to reality, his ancient dragon body still in the regional wall.

“What’s going on?” Fang Yuan just had this question, when his vision changed once again.

He found he had once again entered a dream realm.

This dream was a continuation of the previous dream.

In the valley, the righteous and demonic sides were fighting a bitter battle.

“Strange, there should not be any bandit hideouts here.” The young master of the merchant caravan was looking down from his carriage in the center, puzzled.

The steward beside him was maintaining defense while replying: “Right, this trade route is an old route, who knows where these mountain bandits came from.”

The young master snorted: “The strongest demonic path Gu Masters among them are only rank two, our defense is rock solid, we don’t need to fear them.”

“Young master is right. We will make sure these bandits remain here forever.” The steward gave a malicious smile.

Right at this time, a rumbling noise came from above them.

The young master, the steward and others quickly looked above.

The sight immediately caused a great fright.

Countless boulders were rolling down from above the valley. The caravan was right at the base of a cliff, and these giant boulders were falling down right towards them, the power was not inferior to a rank two Gu Master’s attack.

Countless figures could be seen above the cliff. They were all mortals, but with meticulous planning and correct battle tactics, these mortals showcased the battle strength of rank two Gu Masters!

“Quick, retreat!” The young master’s face was pale.

“It is too late...” The steward called out miserably.

The boulders smashed onto the caravan’s Gu Masters, in an instant, the merchant caravan suffered many casualties, and the demonic path side’s morale was greatly raised.

...

“Damn it!” Fang Yuan shook his head fiercely, escaping from the dream realm again.

“This is indeed lead soul into dream, but it is incomplete, it can send me into a dream realm now and again, but it can’t keep me trapped in there. However, this is enough to pose a huge threat to me.” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

Ying Wu Xie and the rest were vigilantly looking at their surroundings, but even after guarding for a while, they did not see Fang Yuan, there were also no attacks coming towards them.

“He retreated?” Hei Lou Lan spoke, somewhat disbelievingly.

Bai Ning Bing gazed at Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie heaved a long sigh: “Sigh... such a pity.”

After the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Ying Wu Xie had secretly reconstructed lead soul into dream. During the time in Eastern Sea, Ying Wu Xie gave Immortal Gu to Hei Lou Lan and others, he naturally had even more gains.

But even until now, he was only barely able to assemble lead soul into dream.

Ying Wu Xie had intended to use lead soul into dream when Fang Yuan activated that trump card.

However, Fang Yuan did not use that trump card at all.

Fang Yuan would need a long time to activate that trump card, which would give Ying Wu Xie a very good opportunity to make a move. If Fang Yuan was struck by lead soul into dream at that time, he would be trapped in a dream realm. Even if it was only for an instant, it would still lead to failure in activating the immortal killer move.

The stronger an immortal killer move was, the greater the injury the Gu Immortal would have to bear after they fail in activating it.

There was no doubt that if Fang Yuan was trapped in the dream realm when he activated that killer move, he would fail and suffer a severe backlash.

Ying Wu Xie explained it in detail, Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan and the rest also felt regret.

However, in the situation earlier, Ying Wu Xie had no choice but to use lead soul into dream prematurely.

If he still did not use it, Fang Yuan’s successful attack would result in a qualitative change, causing the battle situation to shift greatly, which would finally result in their deaths.

Ying Wu Xie had a very sharp and accurate judgment of the situation.

“Looks like Fang Yuan won’t be able to attack for the moment. We should leave quickly. Lead soul into dream is not complete, its effect will continue to decrease with time.”

Ying Wu Xie gave the command, the five immortals set off immediately.

However, they had not walked far when Fang Yuan once again recovered and attacked.

The dream realm’s interference was becoming smaller and smaller, Fang Yuan was not willing to let Ying Wu Xie and the others slip away from right under his nose, so he immediately began his chase.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was still unconscious, the four immortals were harried by Fang Yuan, it was already difficult to move in the regional wall, but with Fang Yuan’s interference, it became even more difficult for them to move forward.

...

“Careful!” Suddenly, a familiar voice came from behind Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan could not react in time and only heard a muffled sound as stone debris hit him on the head.

“Uncle Big Beard, you saved me, thank you!” Fang Yuan saw Uncle Big Beard nearby, and immediately reacted. Just now, he was almost hit by a falling boulder, but Uncle Big Beard had acted in time, destroying the giant boulder before it could reach Fang Yuan.

“Kid, don’t be so hungry for battle, protect yourself properly.” Uncle Big Beard said with a concerned tone.

Right at this moment, from the center of the caravan came the caravan steward’s sharp scream — “Men, come quickly and protect young master!”

Out of nowhere, two rank three demonic path Gu Masters had already charged into the center and were surrounding the owner of the merchant caravan, that young master who had once humiliated Fang Yuan.

The young master was in a dangerous situation, even the righteous path Gu Masters were afraid.

“Wait here, I will go help!” Uncle Big Beard spoke this before quickly rushing to the center.

...

The dream realm appeared again and again, Fang Yuan was having a tough time.

The dream realm greatly influenced him, and he was only able to display twenty to thirty percent of his battle strength.

But looking at the battle situation, it was much more unfavorable to Ying Wu Xie and the rest.

They were clearly able to sense that the dream realm’s influence to Fang Yuan was becoming smaller.

And they were still unable to leave the regional wall.

“All of you go ahead, I will hold him back!” At the crucial moment, Shi Nu stood up.

Immortal killer move – Land Boundary!

His whole body emitted frightening cracking sounds, as cracks started appearing everywhere on his body.

At the same time, with him at the center, an enormous surrounding area of space underwent a mysterious change, being cut off from the space further out.

Fang Yuan wanted to retreat, but at the critical moment, the dream realm started, making him miss the chance to escape the range of the killer move.

Fang Yuan sent out dragon breath, but the sword light dragon breath disappeared like smoke before even flying five to six steps of distance.

Fang Yuan charged with his dragon body, but was actually unable to leave.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1261: Blood Path Demonic Immortal

“You are looking for death!” His dragon eyes stared at Shi Nu.

Shi Nu raised his head to look at Fang Yuan, shouting: “Master, leave quickly! Leave!”

“Shi Nu, I will remember your loyalty.” Ying Wu Xie took a deep glance at Shi Nu, before leaving.

He took the other two immortals and quickly retreated.

Because Shi Nu risked his life to hold back Fang Yuan, Ying Wu Xie and the others were able to smoothly leave the licorice regional wall and enter Northern Plains.

The moment they stepped on the grass of Northern Plains, Ying Wu Xie took out Tai Bai Yun Sheng from his immortal aperture.

The latter had already woken up, but his injuries were extremely severe, his life was still in danger.

Combining the four immortals’ power, they immediately activated the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel and disappeared from the spot.

...

Inside the dream realm.

The battle had already concluded.

The attacking demonic path bandits were all dead.

The merchant caravan did not have it easy as well, as they suffered many casualties and injuries.

Corpses were littered everywhere in the valley and blood filled the area.

“Uncle Big Beard, pull yourself together! Wake up!” The young Fang Yuan was beside Gu Master Big Beard, looking at the terrifying injury with shock and panic.

“Someone, someone save him!” Fang Yuan shouted, his voice somewhat hoarse.

But nobody came.

Fang Yuan quickly ran to the young master: “Lord, Uncle Big Beard was injured while saving you, he is going to die, please save him!”

“He cannot be saved, the injury itself is not a big problem, the main thing is that he has been struck by a poison Gu, we have no way of saving him.” The young master shook his head and gave a rueful smile.

“No, you have a way. Weren’t you also hit by the same poison Gu?” Fang Yuan persisted.

The young master’s expression sank: “You want me to use a precious Gu worm for a mere outsider? Do you know this kind of healing Gu worm can only be used for a limited number of times?”

“But, Uncle Big Beard was injured to save you.” Fang Yuan argued.

“Even if he did not save me, I have father’s secret guards who would have ensured my safety.” The young master sneered, waving his hand at Fang Yuan, “Get lost now, how could my healing Gu worm be used on ants like you guys?”

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth and stared at the young master with clenched fists, not moving from his spot.

“Are you looking to die?” The young master was getting furious.

“Fang Yuan...” At this time, Gu Master Big Beard woke up and softly called out.

Fang Yuan shook, quickly turning around and running to Big Beard’s side: “Uncle Big Beard, you are awake!”

Fang Yuan was surprised and happy.

“Don’t oppose young master, you will be the one to suffer. Don’t keep on begging, how could such a precious healing Gu be used on people like us?” Big Beard smiled mockingly.

“But uncle, your injuries...” Fang Yuan was very upset, choking as he sobbed.

...

Plop.

Shi Nu powerlessly dropped to the ground.

“Hehehe.” He looked at the sword dragon hovering in front of him and laughed: “I succeeded! Master was able to escape, haha... Shadow Sect won’t be defeated, long live Spectral Soul — ugh!”

Fang Yuan grabbed him with his claws and forcefully crushed him to pieces.

Loosening his dragon claws, rock fragments and debris were scattered over the ground with no signs of Shi Nu’s original appearance.

“You’re merely dying, what was the point of yelling.” Fang Yuan sneered, picking up the most crucial piece from among the rock fragments.

He then flew out of the licorice regional wall and returned once again to Northern Plains.

He threw the crucial piece of rock to the ground, immediately, the immortal aperture inside began to absorb Northern Plains’ heaven and earth qi and formed a blessed land outside.

Fang Yuan did not wait, instead activating qi luck sensation to check the locations of Ying Wu Xie and the others.

Fang Yuan immediately discovered that Ying Wu Xie and the rest were already extremely far away from him.

“Hmph! They used that ancient battle formation? But so what? You will all die at my hands, sooner or later.”

“But this location, it seems to be in that Earth Trench under Zombie Alliance.”

Fang Yuan returned to his human form, slightly frowning.

Of course, he was familiar with the location of Zombie Alliance’s Earth Trench. Dark Flow Giant City was still hidden there, unfortunately, no one had found it yet. It was not strange for Ying Wu Xie and the rest to enter it.

“Southern Border Zombie Alliance has already been destroyed, Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance’s headquarters were besieged, but Northern Plains Zombie Alliance is still hidden in the Earth Trench. Looks like Ying Wu Xie and the rest will once again go through a period of growth.”

This was an expected situation.

Dark Flow Giant City’s cultivation resources included all sorts of Immortal Gu from Northern Plains’ immortal zombies.

However, Shi Nu was already dead, and they were injured, if they fought again, even if it was in Northern Plains and not the regional wall, Fang Yuan would still have the upper hand.

Shi Nu’s blessed land had formed, Fang Yuan entered it but was unable to subdue the land spirit. His attainment in earth path was only at master level and not grandmaster, thus he could not annex this rank seven blessed land and could only leave it for the moment.

Inside the dream...

There was a kind of medicinal herb said to be able to relieve Gu Master Big Beard’s poison, the young Fang Yuan chose to sneak out of the caravan and climbed the cliff to pick the medicinal herbs growing there.

The cold mountain wind blew at him, causing his body to shiver greatly.

The cliff was steep, and a careless step could lead to a brutal death.

“I will definitely get the medicinal herb and treat Uncle Big Beard!”

“He saved my life, how could I not repay this debt of kindness?”

“Persevere, Fang Yuan, don’t be afraid, huff huff...”

Fang Yuan was breathing roughly as he stretched out his arm and after several attempts, he finally picked out a medicinal herb.

At daybreak, with a basket full of herbs and ragged clothes, he returned to the camp.

...

“Alright, this dream realm is finally over.” Fang Yuan woke up from the dream realm.

He finally got rid of the dream realm’s interference.

This dream realm was not completely without benefits, the dream path materials inside surpassed Fang Yuan’s imagination. In the final scene, the basket of herbs Fang Yuan carried were actually all dream path Gu materials.

“If I dreamed by myself, there is no way I would have had such huge harvests. Could it be that Ying Wu Xie’s lead soul into dream is not only an offensive ability, but is actually a killer move to get dream path Gu materials?”

Fang Yuan pondered over this as he flew.

Without the dream realm’s interference, he once again began to chase after Ying Wu Xie.

Even if Ying Wu Xie ran to the ends of the world, Fang Yuan would give chase to nip this great problem in the bud!

Snowy Mountain blessed land.

“Fairy Lian Yun, don’t use love Immortal Gu again. You have already paid the price and are now unable to speak. If you continue using it repeatedly like this, I really don’t know what kind of price you will have to pay next!” Shi Zheng Yi tried to persuade.

Zhao Lian Yun shook her head, her gaze firm and determined.

In the dangerous battle with Zhao Da Niu, love Immortal Gu had displayed its might. But that time, love Immortal Gu did not take immortal essence as the price, instead it seized away a certain thing from Zhao Lian Yun.

This thing was Zhao Lian Yun’s voice.

After the battle, Zhao Lian Yun was unable to let out any sounds. She was not even able to make crude grunts and noises that mute people could make.

“Hong Yun is still waiting for me! I cannot just wait here and watch from the sidelines. So what if I can’t speak? I can still converse with all of you through Gu worms. It is not a big problem.” Zhao Lian Yun transmitted her voice to Shi Zheng Yi.

Shi Zheng Yi sighed, unable to say anything, and could only let Zhao Lian Yun act on her will.

This time, however, no matter how Zhao Lian Yun called out, love Immortal Gu showed no signs of budging.

Helpless, Zhao Lian Yun could only walk out of the twelfth snowy peak’s range, along with Shi Zheng Yi.

Once they walked out of this range, Zhao Lian Yun was sent to another snowy peak, separated from Shi Zheng Yi.

Different from before, there were sounds of an intense battle on this snowy peak.

“Who is fighting here? It should be either Yu Yi Ye Zi, Bu Zhen Zi or Mu Ling Lan, right?” Zhao Lian Yun was surprised and happy, as she quickly rushed towards the peak.

She soon reached the hall at the peak.

The stench of blood assaulted her nose, inside the crimson hall, a gorgeous young Gu Immortal was fighting a bitter battle with a Snowy Mountain Gu Immortal.

It was refinement path Gu Immortal Yu Yi Ye Zi!

“Yu Yi Ye Zi, hold on, I am coming to support you.” Zhao Lian Yun transmitted her voice.

Yu Yi Ye Zi was both surprised and happy, quickly replying: “Be careful, this is a genuine blood path demonic immortal!”

“What? Blood path!” Zhao Lian Yun got a huge fright. She looked at the enemy with dread and wariness.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1262: Golden Sun Spear

Blood path Gu Immortal!

Because of Blood Sea Ancestor and other historical reasons, as well as blood path’s characteristics, any person who cultivated blood path would be judged as a demonic path member in the five regions.

In the battle between the alliance of Chu Sect and Bai Zu tribe against the allied Huang Jin tribes, Chu Du’s side could have brought in a strong reinforcement. Unfortunately, this person cultivated blood path, Chu Du had immediately refused with not the slightest bit of hesitation.

It was because Chu Du wanted to establish a righteous path force, if he collaborated with a blood path member, his side would be judged as demonic path, and all his painstaking effort would go down the drain.

However, Snowy Mountain blessed land did not have such concerns.

Because Snowy Mountain blessed land was a gathering point of Northern Plains’ demonic path Gu Immortals. It was not a tribe or a sect. Whether it be a tribe or a sect, both had the characteristics of nurturing its members, and both had mortal members as well. However, Snowy Mountain blessed land was an entity formed and linked purely through benefits.

Zhao Lian Yun arrived at the tenth snowy peak after leaving the twelfth snowy peak.

The demonic path Gu Immortal guarding this place was called Zhao Pu. He was wearing hemp clothes and cloth shoes, he was bald, had an ordinary appearance and was of a middling stature.

He was standing at the center of the hall, while Yu Yi Ye Zi was retreating back again and again, until he reached the edge of the hall.

His whole body was bathed in blood, his injuries were frightening.

When Zhao Lian Yun saw this companion, she was almost unable to recognize him. Yu Yi Ye Zi was a pretty and delicate looking man, but right now, it was like he had fallen in a boundless sea of blood and was pulled out by someone.

“His other abilities are normal, but he has one blood path immortal killer move that is extremely powerful! When activating it, all of his blood splashes out before turning into a stream of blood. Once the stream of blood touches your skin, you will start bleeding and as time passes, the bleeding will continue to worsen! You need to be careful.” Yu When Yu Yi Ye Zi saw Zhao Lian Yun in the middle of the fight, he quickly warned her.

“I understand! Take a rest first, I will deal with him.” Zhao Lian Yun stepped forward.

“Good, another person is here looking for death.” Zhao Pu stood at the same spot without moving, his hands folded across his chest. He let out a sinister smile, revealing his dense and sharp teeth, a demonic and bloodthirsty aura pounced forward.

Immortal killer move — Life Locking Silver Chain.

Zhao Lian Yun had been preparing this move since earlier, under the consumption of immortal essence, auras of large numbers of Gu worms rose from her body, and a silver light covered her.

Clang clang...

A series of chains clashing against each other could be heard coming from within the silver light.

Shortly afterwards, six long chains shot out from the silver light. The six chains were bright silver and extremely nimble, as they moved around Zhao Lian Yun, forming a strong defense.

Zhao Lian Yun had gone through intensive training and after the life and death battle with Zhao Da Niu, she seemed to have been reborn, her every move was decisive and did not have an inexperienced air like before.

The tenth snowy peak lord, Zhao Pu, noticed Zhao Lian Yun activating her killer move, but actually did not stop her and simply watched her.

Zhao Lian Yun saw this, and immediately activated another immortal killer move.

Meteor rain!

Immortal essence was expended once again, as a patch of deep blue formed above Zhao Lian Yun, above the dome of the hall.

Swish swish swish...

Countless meteors were falling from the sky, raining down like an army of arrows, it was a majestic sight!

These meteors were extremely thin and small, like countless hidden weapons, but their power was majestic as they fell down like a storm that could not be avoided.

If Zhao Pu kept on staying still, he would be turned into meat paste by these tiny meteors.

He indeed did not dare to be so prideful, suddenly a large bloody cloud floated above his head, it was like a huge umbrella that firmly protected Zhao Pu. The falling meteors were blocked by the bloody cloud, but the bloody cloud’s volume was shrinking at a visible speed.

Zhao Pu gritted his teeth and stamped his foot, as his body shot towards Zhao Lian Yun like a red ray of light.

Zhao Lian Yun’s mind shook, subconsciously taking a step back.

The silver chains moving around her reacted faster than her, one of the chains shot out towards Zhao Pu like a charging dragon.

Zhao Pu quickly dodged and chose another direction to attack.

But at almost the same time, another silver chain shot towards him.

Zhao Pu had no choice but to retreat and choose another direction again.

This repeated a few times, Zhao Pu shockingly realized these silver chains could attack on their own, these chains could be said to have both attack and defensive properties. Not to mention how agile these silver chains were, they could even coordinate with each other.

“Little girl, your defensive killer move is pretty good!” Zhao Pu could not see any results, he did not continue trying and retreated some distance, using his methods to replenish the thinning bloody cloud.

This was natural.

Zhao Lian Yun had many immortal killer moves, these methods were chosen specifically for Zhao Lian Yun by Spirit Affinity House and Heavenly Court.

They were especially suitable for a beginner like Zhao Lian Yun. Not only were the killer moves easy to control, the injuries from backlash in the case of failure were also not severe, the main thing was that these killer moves were extremely refined.

The meteors continued to fall down in torrents.

Zhao Pu was constantly replenishing the bloody cloud above him.

Yu Yi Ye Zi was in a corner, healing himself.

Zhao Lian Yun did not answer, she silently continued to prepare for a third immortal killer move.

It was just that these two killer moves, meteor rain and life locking silver chain, were the ones she had practised the most, this third move was slightly more complex than these two moves.

During the normal training, Zhao Lian Yun only had to spend some effort to activate it.

But in a real battle, she found she had to use a lot more effort.

Although, right now, with the protection of life locking silver chain, the environment was similar to the training field, her mental state was not the same, her few attempts had already ended up in failure.

“Another immortal killer move? Don’t you know immortal killer moves cannot be used easily? The more you use them, the more chances where you will expose a weakness. Let me teach you how to fight!” Zhao Pu smiled sinisterly and pounced forward.

But this time, when he had reached halfway, he opened his mouth wide.

Boom!

An enormous explosion occurred, Zhao Lian Yun felt the blood throughout her body shaking violently. A little less than half of the Gu worms that had soared up in Zhao Lian Yun’s phantom aperture fell down again because of the disturbance.

Among them, many mortal Gu were destroyed.

Zhao Pu was a blood path demonic immortal, but also had sound path methods which caught Zhao Lian Yun unprepared, even Yu Yi Ye Zi, who had been healing himself, was affected.

Like this, Zhao Pu continued to attack Zhao Lian Yun from all sides while life locking silver chain ensured her safety.

Zhao Lian Yun did not succeed in activating her third immortal killer move due to all sorts of interference from Zhao Pu.

She was filled with a sense of powerlessness, thinking: “This guy is indeed like what Yu Yi Ye Zi described him as, he has a number of methods which are all ordinary and cannot break my life locking silver chain. But he is extremely troublesome, he has all kinds of methods emerging one after another, causing me to repeatedly fail in activating the killer move. This won’t do, I need to continue to persevere!”

Zhao Lian Yun firmed her resolution and continued to attempt activating her immortal killer move.

Maybe due to being obstructed too many times and failing many times, it instead tempered her will and strengthened her conviction.

Finally, her eyes suddenly let out a piercing sharp light.

Zhao Lian Yun then stretched out her right arm, and spat at her right palm, spitting out a chain of fire.

The fire stopped at her palm, at first it was only a fireball hovering over her right palm.

But with Zhao Lian Yun continuing to spit out fire, the fire in her hand began to inflate.

It was quite strange, this fire was not inflating as a whole, but it was its left and right side that were enlarging.

Soon, a staff of fire formed in Zhao Lian Yun’s hand.

The staff grew until it was the side of an adult’s arm. The burning flames on the staff began to shrink.

Several breaths later, the raging fire was completely gone, as it condensed into a staff that seemed to be cast from crimson bronze.

Zhao Lian Yun closed her mouth before suddenly opening it, letting out a shrill scream: “Strike!”

Following her voice, a golden ray of light immediately shot out from her mouth and struck the fire staff.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1263: Blood Drain

The fire staff completely absorbed this golden light. The golden light quickly moved around in the fire staff before finally stopping at the head of the staff, gradually turning into a sharp spear.

Right now, the fire staff had changed into a short crimson-golden spear!

Immortal killer move golden sun spear had finally activated successfully!

“It is time for you to die.” Zhao Lian Yun let out a breath of air, she was filled with confidence. Her right hand slowly raised the golden sun spear and pointed at Zhao Pu, her willpower soaring high.

Zhao Pu was solemn as he fixed his gaze at the golden sun spear in Zhao Lian Yun’s hand, praising it: “Impressive spear, both its temperature and radiance are well restrained, once it bursts out, it will definitely be terrifyingly powerful. But...”

He suddenly changed the subject, revealing a smile as if his scheme had succeeded.

He said to Zhao Lian Yun: “Don’t you feel anything strange right now?”

“What?” Only then did Zhao Lian Yun sense something warm was flowing down the sides of her lips.

She lightly wiped with her left hand, it was blood!

Who knew when she had started to bleed.

“This is?!” Zhao Lian Yun’s pupils immediately shrunk to pin size and her body started shaking.

“This is my killer move — Blood Drain. Hehehe.” Zhao Pu laughed loudly.

“This can’t be... you clearly...” Zhao Lian Yun had only spoken a few words, when blood started to flow out of her mouth, dying her white teeth red.

“Hahaha, you want to say that I did not show any signs of activating an immortal killer move? Actually, I had already activated it, I only changed the method.” Zhao Pu laughed.

“Could it be the rumored technique — split move?” Yu Yi Ye Zi cried out in shock, his eyes wide open.

Zhao Pu glanced at him: “Kid, you are quite knowledgeable.”

Gu Masters nurtured, used, and refined Gu, no matter which aspect, they were all very profound and deep.

Refining Gu involved all sorts of refinement methods. Using Gu naturally was also the same.

Among immortal killer moves, there were many extraordinary methods and techniques. For instance, the consecutive moves of Blazing Heaven Demoness. She could use two or more fire path immortal killer moves one after the other, achieving a stronger effect in the end.

Another example was Fang Yuan’s variant moves. Myriad self, formed from the convergence of enslavement and strength path, could produce large numbers of strength path phantoms to battle. But Fang Yuan was able to create a variant move, myriad self first style, strength path giant hand. This variant move used myriad self as the foundation, but was able to produce an offensive effect that myriad self could not achieve by itself.

And the method Zhao Pu was using right now was a split move. If he directly activated blood drain, it would definitely be sensed by the highly vigilant Zhao Lian Yun, and she would either disturb him or evade. However, Zhao Pu split this immortal killer move into multiple parts, and used them as he fought. After he unleashed all of these split moves, he achieved the effect of blood drain.

The advantage of this method was clear. There was no indication of the move being used, which made it impossible to guard against!

“Damn it! So he had been hiding and pretending, he attacked multiple times but did not break my life locking silver chain’s defense, it was actually because he was secretly plotting!”

Right now, Zhao Lian Yun found that she was not only bleeding from her mouth, blood was starting to flow continuously from her nose and ears as well. Her eyes were also filled with some traces of blood, causing her vision to become blurry.

Zhao Lian Yun’s heart thumped loudly as she recalled Yu Yi Ye Zi’s appearance.

“I was still hit by that move!”

“If it continues like this, would not I end up the same way as Yu Yi Ye Zi?”

“He is truly crafty!!”

In her agitation, Zhao Lian Yun threw the golden sun spear towards Zhao Pu.

But Zhao Pu was already prepared, he was extremely vigilant against Zhao Lian Yun’s fire spear, Zhao Lian Yun’s shoulder had just started to move, when he had already begun to move.

The golden sun spear did not have the ability to lock onto the target, but it was extremely fast, brushing past Zhao Pu.

Zhao Pu got a great fright, the golden sun spear pierced through the hall, shooting towards outside the hall before it exploded. A boundless heat wave swept over all directions. The dazzling golden light and the flames instantly formed a small sun-like sphere. But soon, this small sun disappeared completely.

“Such power, if it truly struck me...” Zhao Pu’s body was soaked in cold sweat: “Fortunately, they have already been struck by my move.”

“Oh.” Yu Yi Ye Zi inwardly sighed, and walked towards Zhao Lian Yun, prepared to fight alongside her.

Zhao Lian Yun was downcast, her morale falling sharply. She had very little real battle experience, her state of mind was easily influenced. This immortal killer move, golden sun spear, was a valuable advantage, but now it was wasted by her.

“Your injuries...” Zhao Lian Yun worriedly looked at Yu Yi Ye Zi.

Yu Yi Ye Zi’s injuries showed no signs of getting better.

Zhao Pu laughed: “Did you think I was intentionally letting you off when I let you rest and heal? Hehehe, as long as you are hit by my move, unless I personally cancel the effect, normal methods won’t be of any use. You have already tried, do you see any effects?”

“But I am quite benevolent. I will allow you both to surrender, as long as you kneel and beg for mercy, giving me your Immortal Gu, I will take you as my slaves and spare your lives.”

“Stop dreaming!” Zhao Lian Yun gritted her teeth, refusing Zhao Pu’s invitation.

Zhao Pu ignored her and laughed: “The battle is decided, are you still unaware of your situation? A wise person submits to circumstances, you are still young, it is over if you die, but you will still have hope as long as you live.”

Yu Yi Ye Zi sneered: “I am indeed unable to heal my injuries and can only let the blood continue to flow. But I have made some gains. I have already deduced that as long as we kill you, the injuries on our body will heal by themselves.”

“Huh?” Zhao Pu’s expression slightly changed, he sized up Yu Yi Ye Zi once again: “Kid, I have changed my opinion about you.”

Yu Yi Ye Zi was a genius refinement path Gu Immortal, having extremely deep attainment level in refinement path. Even rank seven Gu Immortals often discussed Gu refinement matters with him, and even asked him for guidance.

Yu Yi Ye Zi was not only proficient in Gu refinement, he also was skilled in deducing Gu recipes.

Refinement path and wisdom path were close to each other and could coordinate with each other.

Yu Yi Ye Zi was able to deduce the truth from his injuries along with Zhao Pu’s various behaviors.

“We must kill him before all our blood is drained. If he doesn’t die, we will die!” Yu Yi Ye Zi transmitted his voice to Zhao Lian Yun.

They were already forced into a dead end. They had no options other than to fearlessly charge ahead and kill the enemy to have the right to survive.

“Charge!” Zhao Lian Yun called out, and charged forward without hesitation.

“Conceited brats, I will let you taste my true strength!” Zhao Pu laughed loudly, and valiantly charged forward, fighting as one against two.

Both sides went at each other, neither yielding a step.

Life locking silver chains shuttled back and forth, Zhao Pu had a bloody cloud above him and one below his feet, he avoided three chains and immediately spat blood towards the three chains coming from behind.

The blood dyed the silver chains, immediately turning them into a pool of blood.

“Eight refinement gates, third gate -hand gate – open!” Yu Yi Ye Zi took the chance to palm-strike towards Zhao Pu’s back from afar.

Immediately, two exquisite palm silhouettes struck Zhao Pu’s back with incredible speed.

Zhao Pu gave a muffled groan, blood suddenly splashed out from his back and covered his injuries.

A slightly surprised expression flashed past his face, as he thought: “Strange, why is this kid’s attack much stronger now?”

Yu Yi Ye Zi might be a refinement path Gu Immortal, but his battle strength was also extraordinary.

As long as he was given some time, he could target his opponent’s weaknesses properly. Especially his immortal killer move — Eight Refinement Gates, it could change according to the situation and unleash some properties that were specially effective against the enemy.

Yu Yi Ye Zi and Zhao Lian Yun knew they had no way to retreat, and instantly burst out with remarkable battle strength.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1264: Crying, Screaming

If humans staked their all, their danger would naturally increase explosively.

In contrast, the blood path demonic immortal Zhao Pu was not willing to fight to the death, he just needed to delay some time and he could obtain victory.

As such, for a moment, Zhao Pu was instead suppressed by Zhao Lian Yun and Yu Yi Ye Zi.

However, Zhao Pu’s battle experience was much greater than these two immortals of Central Continent.

He was extremely slippery, moving around all the time, Zhao Lian Yun and Yu Yi Ye Zi did everything they could but could not catch him at all.

As time passed, the situation inclined towards Zhao Pu.

Yu Yi Ye Zi was the first to weaken in his attacks.

He had been struck much earlier than Zhao Lian Yun and had suffered much greater injuries, now because of the high blood loss, he fell unconscious.

“Your friend might have died from blood loss, you are next. You also don’t have much time, why aren’t you attacking more frequently?” Zhao Pu laughed.

Zhao Lian Yun was in low spirits. She knew Zhao Pu was intentionally provoking her to disturb her mind, but she was unable to calm her mind and became more and more agitated.

Blood had started flowing out of her eyes, her sight was completely blurry and red.

More terrifyingly, blood was not only pouring out of her seven orifices, but also from the countless pores on her body.

“Damn it... damn it....” An intense dizziness constantly attacked Zhao Lian Yun, her whole body was starting to shake and waver.

Finally, Zhao Pu sent a long ranged attack which sent Zhao Lian Yun flying. She fell to the ground and rolled three times before stopping.

“Damn it!” Zhao Lian Yun pushed the ground with her hands and tried to stand up, but she had lost too much blood and had no strength left in her.

She could not even prop her body up anymore.

“It’s over.” Zhao Pu folded his arms across his chest, as he walked slowly towards Zhao Lian Yun and looked down at her.

Blood.

It was flowing out continuously from Zhao Lian Yun’s body.

Soon, a pool of blood had formed around her.

Zhao Lian Yun had become a blood soaked person in this pool, blood was flowing down from her eyes along with her tears.

“Is it over...”

“This is where I fall.”

“Blood... I am not in the least bit afraid this time, Hong Yun.”

Zhao Lian Yun recalled a scene of the past.

That was during the fighting for Imperial Court.

Zhao Lian Yun had lost the protection of her father, and was unwillingly turned into a political chip to be married to Wei tribe’s young master, and had no choice but to rely on Ma Hong Yun.

During one battle, Zhao Lian Yun was unfortunately shot in the thigh by a falling arrow.

Blood flowed.

“I am going to die, ahhh, so painful! I am going to die!” Zhao Lian Yun was lying inside a carriage, screaming and crying.

“Don’t make a fuss, Lady Xiao Yun, you are not going to die. This is only a little injury.” Ma Hong Yun proficiently dressed her injury while consoling her.

“Blood, so much blood! Don’t you know I get dizzy at the sight of blood?! I have never suffered such a heavy injury.” Zhao Lian Yun groaned.

“You, how could you be so squeamish? Injuries are normal for people of Northern Plains. Many times, the scars are a source of glory and symbol of our feats!”

Zhao Lian Yun rolled her eyes: “Do you know how to comfort people? Sigh, how could I be so unlucky...”

“Hahaha.” Ma Hong Yun laughed loudly, carelessly using a bit more strength.

Zhao Lian Yun cried out in pain: “Aaahh! Be softer! Also, what are you laughing at. I have suffered such a serious injury and you seem to be very happy.”

Ma Hong Yun quickly waved his hand, but was still laughing: “I’m not gloating, it is just that I feel Lady Xiao Yun is truly cute. You normally act like an elder, and fill people with awe. But only now do I truly feel you are a little sister younger than me.”

“You are getting truly arrogant...” Zhao Lian Yun was just about to erupt, when suddenly, Ma Hong Yun touched her forehead.

Zhao Lian Yun was dazed. For some reason, she got a feeling of warmth.

Ma Hong Yun ignored her: “There is no fever, this is good. Lady Xiao Yun, you cannot be so squeamish. Suffering some injuries and letting out some blood is nothing. If you scream so loudly again, people will ridicule you.”

Her recollection ended here.

“Ridicule?”

“You should not be able to ridicule me now, right?”

“You brat...”

“I really used up all my blood to save you.”

“It is truly strange, I actually willingly sent myself to death for someone.”

“So, even if I die, I am willing to do this!”

Such thoughts emerged in Zhao Lian Yun’s mind.

“Die!” Zhao Pu gave a loud shout and pierced forward with his hand like a sharp knife.

A fatal blow!

If this battle struck true, it would pierce through Zhao Lian Yun’s head like tofu.

But right at this time.

An intense radiance burst out from Zhao Lian Yun’s body.

The radiance was so glaring that Zhao Pu had no choice but to close his eyes and step back.

“This is...”

“Why is there such a strong light?”

“Impossible! This aura... so powerful!”

“Ahhhhhhh——!”

Zhao Pu let out a miserable cry.

His whole body did not budge in the light. Soon, he was like the melting snow under a hot sun, completely destroyed.

At the crucial moment, love Immortal Gu showed its might once again, directly killing Zhao Pu!

Northern Plains, in the depths of Earth Trench.

“Ying Wu Xie, where will you hide now?!” Fang Yuan’s sword dragon form roared in the Earth Trench, his voice, filled with killing intent, resounded everywhere.

Relying on qi luck sensation, Fang Yuan had moved at extreme speed and finally reached here.

From within the darkness, a giant city slowly rose up.

Ying Wu Xie was standing on top of the giant city.

“I have been waiting for quite some time.” Ying Wu Xie spoke, his gaze tranquil and his tone indifferent.

“Hmph! Shi Nu is dead, you want to fight me with just you four and this mortal Gu house?” Fang Yuan sneered.

Dark Flow Giant City was huge and looked majestic, but it was only a mortal Gu house, not an Immortal Gu House.

It was not easy to form an Immortal Gu House. Shadow Sect possessed many Immortal Gu, but they also could not casually upgrade Dark Flow Giant City to an Immortal Gu House.

If they had an Immortal Gu House, Fang Yuan would feel a lot of apprehension.

Because the power of an Immortal Gu House increased with the amount of immortal essence expended. Fang Yuan had once used Giant Sun’s immortal essence to control Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage and shined in the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain.

But Dark Flow Giant City was only a mortal Gu house, and it was absolutely not enough to put fear in Fang Yuan.

“Then what if you add me?” A second figure appeared on top of Dark Flow Giant City.

This person was only a rank six Gu Immortal, but he was an ‘old acquaintance’ of Fang Yuan.

It was the spy Shadow Sect had inserted in Lang Ya Sect, refinement path Gu Immortal Sixth Hair!

Fang Yuan’s gaze became slightly dark.

Fang Yuan did not think much of Sixth Hair’s strength. But Sixth Hair and Fang Yuan were members of Lang Ya Sect, both of them had an information path alliance agreement.

This made it extremely inconvenient for Fang Yuan to go against Sixth Hair, with just slight carelessness, he would suffer the backlash of the information path alliance agreement and be injured.

However, Fang Yuan had mentally prepared for Sixth Hair’s appearance.

“Die!” Fang Yuan swung his dragon tail, directly charging forward.

Dark Flow Giant City quickly moved back, and at the same time, a battlefield killer move rose up and large numbers of yaksha octopuses closed in.

“Your status has already made Fang Yuan hesitate. We just need to delay some time and we can use Omni-directional Travel again.” Ying Wu Xie patted Sixth Hair’s shoulder.

“Lord, you should go take a rest, let me handle this.” Sixth Hair said to Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie nodded and entered Dark Flow Giant City.

It was a slaughterhouse.

Despite there being large numbers of yaksha octopuses, they were not a match for Fang Yuan.

The ancient sword dragon raised a bloody storm, rampaging around the battlefield.

Dark Flow Giant City was within his sight, but Fang Yuan did not dare to carelessly use dragon breath, it would be bad if he killed Sixth Hair by mistake.

It would be himself who would suffer instead.

He might even be counterattacked by Ying Wu Xie and the rest due to that and lose his life here.

Ying Wu Xie and the others were in a bad situation, but Fang Yuan was not blindly optimistic. He knew he had the upper hand, but was not yet able to turn it into crushing dominance.

Especially when there was Bai Ning Bing, who could turn into the Bai Xiang state, and Ying Wu Xie, who had lead soul into dream. Even though the former only had rank six cultivation and the latter’s lead soul into dream was incomplete.

“Information path... when can I be free from its restrictions?”

Fang Yuan was vexed.

Information path was a pain that had repeatedly troubled him.

Fang Yuan had also tried hard, but lacking fortuitous encounters, he had not been able to solve this issue.

Sixth Hair presided over the battle, his strategy was not to win, but to not make any mistakes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1265: Nightmare Demonic Colts

After Fang Yuan killed the wave of yaksha octopuses, wall climbing demon apes started to appear. These apes similarly were beasts of Earth Trench, not inferior to yaksha octopus.

After this wave of wall climbing demon apes was eliminated, Fang Yuan was attacked by a large group of red flame snakes.

“These beast groups were probably all controlled by Northern Plains’ Zombie Alliance division. For example, yaksha octopuses probably belonged to the rank seven immortal zombie Dragon Commander Ye Cha.”

“The Zombie Alliance divisions in other regions were all besieged, only on Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s end did they rely on Earth Trench to remain until now.”

“Not only these desolate beasts, looking at Hei Lou Lan’s performance earlier, there probably are Immortal Gu as well!”

“If so, I will have to re-evaluate the battle strength of Ying Wu Xie and the others. However, it is not possible to grasp immortal killer moves in a short period of time, with just Immortal Gu, when there is conflict between dao marks...”

Fang Yuan analyzed the situation while fighting.

At this time, a large group of horse desolate beasts galloped towards Fang Yuan.

These horses were extremely strange, they had a pair of sheep horns on their heads, their whole bodies looked like they were burnt charcoal, they were letting out dense smoke from their noses and their tails and limbs were burning with a dull red fire.

“Huh?”

“Dream path desolate beast nightmare demonic colt!”

Fang Yuan was stunned, before recognizing it shortly afterwards.

“So it seems, nightmare demonic colts had already appeared during this time period...”

“Moreover, in such high numbers!”

Fang Yuan was greatly joyous.

Nightmare demonic colts were a dream path desolate beast, this desolate beast was extremely common during his first life of five hundred years. But now at this time, it was extremely rare, Fang Yuan thought this horse had yet to appear.

Times changed, humans were changing and the world was also changing.

Many Gu materials were extinct, leading to the decline of strength path, qi path and other paths. Similarly, many new Gu materials were constantly formed.

Dream path.

This path had just begun to flourish near the end of Fang Yuan’s first life. At present, the Gu Immortals were all researching it, although they made some gains, they were extremely small and almost could not be considered anything.

Only after a few hundred years would many dream path Gu materials start to appear, nightmare demonic colts were one of them.

Fang Yuan had thus believed nightmare demonic colts did not exist at this time. But this group of nightmare demonic colts made him realize his estimation was completely wrong!

“Good thing I was wrong! I must get these nightmare demonic colts!” Fang Yuan was extremely happy.

What did dream path desolate beasts signify?

Large amounts of dream path Gu materials!

Why was Fang Yuan painstakingly going deep into his own dreams?

It was to gather dream path materials!

If he had these nightmare demonic colts, Fang Yuan could cut the meat of these desolate horses and refine large numbers of dream path mortal Gu, and even dream path Immortal Gu!

When he was exploring the giant dream realm in Southern Border, why could he not use unravel dream as much as he liked? Why did he have to plan carefully every time he used it?

Simply put, wasn’t it because he did not have enough dream path mortal Gu?

The efficiency of refining dream path mortal Gu alone was truly too low.

“These nightmare demonic colts are all mine!”

Fang Yuan started to capture these nightmare demonic colts.

His ancient sword dragon form was extremely fast, maneuvering around these nightmare demonic colts with no obstruction.

Fang Yuan was trying to knock these nightmare demonic colt unconscious, and then raise them in the sovereign immortal aperture.

However, Shadow Sect had clearly prepared for it and had made some arrangements on these nightmare demonic colts.

Fang Yuan tried hard, but finally discovered he could not capture these nightmare demonic colt alive, at most, he could kill them and obtain their corpses.

But even so, Fang Yuan had a huge harvest.

After killing these nightmare demonic colts, Fang Yuan then slaughtered the next few waves of desolate beast groups, among which were ancient desolate beasts as well.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength was already at the upper layers of rank seven, whether it be the desolate beast groups or the battlefield killer move, they were not a threat to Fang Yuan.

Dark Flow Giant City did not have an endless supply of desolate beast groups.

After a while, Fang Yuan had killed all the beast groups, and he spent some time in breaking the battlefield killer move, wrecking Dark Flow Giant City.

However, a lot of his time had still been wasted, Ying Wu Xie and the others had already left.

Sixth Hair had remained behind, like Shi Nu, to hold back Fang Yuan.

Sixth Hair’s cultivation could not compare to Shi Nu’s, but he had a huge advantage.

He looked at Fang Yuan with no fear: “Do you dare to kill me?”

“What use is there in killing you? Wait till I kill Ying Wu Xie and let you fall into despair and suffering.” Fang Yuan gave a sinister smile, as his dragon body ascended and flew out of Earth Trench.

The ashen faced Sixth Hair was left behind, along with the ruined Dark Flow city.

Northern Plains was extremely huge, even though they had Omni-directional Travel, Snowy Mountain blessed land was at the extreme north-west.

Omni-directional Travel could not be used continuously, while Ying Wu Xie was hurrying towards Snowy Mountain blessed land, Fang Yuan caught up to them once again.

“Let’s see who will help you this time?” The ancient sword dragon rushed over.

Lead soul into dream!

Ying Wu Xie activated his immortal killer move.

Fang Yuan was hit again.

However, this dream realm was unexpectedly deep, he had to use unravel dream to break the dream realm and return to reality.

“What is going on?” Fang Yuan immediately sensed something fishy.

This was somewhat beyond what he had expected, causing him to suffer a minor loss.

Ying Wu Xie laughed: “I sacrificed all those nightmare demonic colts earlier. Do you think these dream path immortal materials can be taken so easily? I will give you advice, don’t chase us, if you continue chasing, even if you have the upper extreme heavenly eagle, you will lose your life.”

“Hmph, crafty guy!” Fang Yuan snorted.

Regardless of what intention Ying Wu Xie had, whether it was provocation or probing, Fang Yuan decided to give up chasing for now.

The dream realm was constantly pestering him, he had to get through the entirety of the dream realm, only then could he be completely free of worries.

Undoubtedly, lead soul into dream was truly troublesome. Even though Fang Yuan had unravel dream, he could not resolve it in one attempt, and had to pass through all the stages of the dream realm.

Inside the dream.

Southern Border, dawn.

The wet dew and the dense cloud-like mountain fog produced a depressing feeling.

The merchant caravan did not continue moving, moving in this dense fog on the mountain was very likely to create problems.

The young Fang Yuan was sitting beside a simple bed.

Gu Master Big Beard was lying on the bed, and was already on the verge of dying.

“Fang Yuan, thank you for the medicinal herbs.” Gu Master Big Beard spoke with an extremely weak voice.

Fang Yuan was feeling extremely stifled, as he sobbed: “Uncle Big Beard, you will get better.”

Gu Master Big Beard shook his head: “How could I not be clear of my injuries? Don’t cry, child, crying is of no use to us.”

“I was once young like you, and had big dreams.”

“Unfortunately, my aptitude was too bad, and I finally sank into this current state.”

“Hehe.”

“This world is too big, while we are too small.”

“When I was a child, I wanted to be a grand hero, like those legendary figures of the righteous path. When I was a youngster, I wanted to be a clan leader. When I was an adult, I was satisfied with becoming a clan elder. When I was a middle aged man, I was exiled from the clan, I felt that I could live by myself just as well, I was satisfied with just raising my Gu worms and myself.”

“Do you know what I want now?”

Fang Yuan wept softly: “What?”

“I just want to quietly lie down inside a quiet room and slowly recall the past, until death comes to take me.” Gu Master Big Beard had a self-mocking expression.

“Then, then should I leave?” Fang Yuan did not know what to do.

“Leave. Let me be here alone, I don’t want others to see my dying appearance.” Gu Master Big Beard said.

Fang Yuan slowly stood up and hesitantly walked to the door.

At this time, Gu Master Big Beard spoke once again: “You must have read <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>. There is a chapter which tells the story of the miniman walking out of Ordinary Abyss.”

“We are all minimen, and we all want to walk out of Ordinary Abyss.”

“Oh...”

“You must continue on, Fang Yuan.”

“Continue living, continue persevering.”

“It is a pity that all my Gu were destroyed in the battle. This is my advice to you, my only gift. To us minor characters, crying is of no use, no one will hear us even if we shout, we can only persevere by ourselves.”

“Persevere until you accomplish great feats, become extraordinary. Either that, or embrace death.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1266: I love him!

“Did we win?” Zhao Lian Yun had to use quite some effort to climb out of the blood pool.

Her injuries were severe, and she was blacking out.

Fortunately, Zhao Pu was already dead, and the blood drain immortal killer move on Zhao Lian Yun and Yu Yi Ye Zi also dissipated.

If it did not dissipate, Zhao Lian Yun and Yu Yi Ye Zi would undoubtedly follow Zhao Pu to death.

Huff, huff...

On the other side, Yu Yi Ye Zi was breathing roughly, standing up while leaning on the wall.

When he saw Zhao Lian Yun, this young Gu Immortal was dazed and turned pale: “Lian... Fairy Lian Yun... your face... no... your body...”

Yu Yi Ye Zi’s eyes were wide open, and he stuttered, not knowing how to express himself.

Zhao Lian Yun felt strange, transmitting her voice: “What’s wrong with me?”

She lowered her head to look at herself, the first thing she saw were her hands.

A pair of old and skinny hands.

Zhao Lian Yun’s heart gave a jolt as she found she had unknowingly become an elderly woman!

Her back was bent, wrinkles covered her body, her sight was blurry and her hair had turned white.

“What’s happening?” Zhao Lian Yun was shocked.

She grabbed her hair, easily pulling out strands of white hair. Her strong hair roots had degraded and become loose.

Yu Yi Ye Zi spoke with a heavy voice: “It is probably love Gu. Love Gu consumed your lifespan to burst out with the terrifying power that could directly kill Zhao Pu!”

“Is that so?” Zhao Lian Yun was dazed and at a loss.

Anyone who turned from the prime of their youth to an old and frail person the next moment, would definitely receive a huge shock in their mind.

“Yes.” Yu Yi Ye Zi nodded, and consoled, “But you don’t have to worry, you can restore your youth by using lifespan Gu. Normal Gu Immortals might not be able to gather lifespan Gu, but you are different, you are the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House, the sect will definitely provide you lifespan Gu.”

Zhao Lian Yun did not reply.

She was feeling complicated emotions. Shock, disappointment, disbelief, dazedness.

She was an otherworldly demon, but even before transmigrating, she had not experienced becoming this old.

After a while of silence, Zhao Lian Yun finally recovered from the shock.

“I will continue going forward!”

“Old age doesn’t matter, Hong Yun is still waiting for me.”

Zhao Lian Yun gazed at the distant first snowy peak through the window, her gaze becoming resolute once more.

“You cannot continue!!” Yu Yi Ye Zi was shocked, quickly walking over to Zhao Lian Yun and holding her arm.

“Love Immortal Gu is powerful but it is not stable. Maybe it will take your lifespan the next time as well. If so, you will definitely die!” Yu Yi Ye Zi persuaded.

“So what if I die?” The old Zhao Lian Yun looked at the young Yu Yi Ye Zi with a slight smile.

Her smile was not even a little beautiful, but Yu Yi Ye Zi was dazed.

Then, Zhao Lian Yun softly drew back her arm.

She clearly did not use much strength, but Yu Yi Ye Zi felt a formless strength attacking his heart, letting him voluntarily release his hand.

He then quietly stood on the spot, looking at Zhao Lian Yun’s hunched back, looking at her walking towards the outside of the hall with heavy and aged steps.

This scene was ordinary and nothing strange, but Yu Yi Ye Zi felt an intense tremor in his heart.

He even subconsciously held his breath, as Zhao Lian Yun’s weak receding figure imprinted deeply in him at this moment.

“What kind of spirit is this!”

“For her love, she is willing to make sacrifices, unafraid of death and destruction.”

“Zhao Lian Yun, I would have definitely died in Zhao Pu’s hands without you.”

“Alright, let me follow you, at worst, this life will be paid to you!”

Yu Yi Ye Zi was not old, he was still hot-blooded, and after firming up his mind, he quickly followed Zhao Lian Yun.

There was not much immortal essence left in her phantom aperture, Zhao Lian Yun was also worried that recklessly summoning love Immortal Gu would spend what little remained of her lifespan. As such, she chose to walk down the peak.

Under the effect of the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation, Zhao Lian Yun and Yu Yi Ye Zi separated, and she alone went to another snowy peak.

There was still a large hall at the peak, and the atmosphere was quiet.

“There was a battle here!” Zhao Lian Yun slowly walked to the hall, finding the inside of the hall in ruins, signs of an intense battle were everywhere.

“Fairy Lian Yun?” A voice suddenly transmitted to Zhao Lian Yun’s ears.

Zhao Lian Yun was slightly dazed, before shortly recognizing the voice as that water path Gu Immortal, Mu Ling Lan’s voice.

“This is the eighth peak of Snowy Mountain blessed land, I fought with the owner of this peak, Xiao Fei Fei, and now, we are both wounded.”

“We are both hiding right now, healing our injuries as quickly as possible.”

“You need to be careful, don’t be hit by her ability. She has an immortal killer move which can cause the target to continuously lose their memories.”

Just as he finished speaking, a ray of strange light flew and struck Zhao Lian Yun’s forehead.

“No!” Mu Ling Lan quickly called out, “Every time you lose your memory, the related memory will float in your mind. Use Immortal Gu to defend yourself, don’t use any immortal killer moves, that would be even more dangerous. If you forget an immortal killer move by any chance, you will suffer the backlash from the immortal killer move. Persevere, wait until I heal my injuries and recover some strength to fight!”

Zhao Lian Yun quickly agreed.

She hid in a corner and used Immortal Gu to protect herself, then waited for the killer move to activate.

“Damn it!” Zhao Lian Yun gradually felt unease. She knew her situation, she had just recently become a Gu Immortal, most of her battles came from during her training time. It would be an extremely huge blow to her if the memories of this period were erased.

Memories began to surface in her mind...

Northern Plains.

Ma tribe was defeated, and surrendered to Hei tribe.

“I didn’t think we could still live, Lady Xiao Yun!” Ma Hong Yun held Zhao Lian Yun’s hands and spun round and round on the spot, “Hahaha.”

“Let me down, you big fool!” Zhao Lian Yun shouted.

...

Imperial Court blessed land.

“You, kid, are truly lucky, you actually became Chang tribe’s son-in-law, hahaha.” Zhao Lian Yun patted Ma Hong Yun’s shoulder.

Ma Hong Yun chuckled while scratching his hair: “Lady Xiao Yun, don’t worry, you have helped me so much, I will treat you well.”

Zhao Lian Yun gave a sound of acknowledgement and nodded: “Then I will rely on you.”

Inside, however, she felt strange: Why do I have some feelings of loss and bitterness?

...

Inside Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

“To think that you are an otherworldly demon! You are actually lurking by Ma Hong Yun’s side! Hehehe, you have such guts, you are really daring. Unfortunately... you met me.” Giant Sun’s will exuded strong killing intent.

Zhao Lian Yun felt like she had fallen in an ice cave, shouting in her mind: “Damn it, there is still such an obstacle? Transmigrators are otherworldly demons? This world is too big of a trap! Oh no, my death is certain this time!! I am actually going to die here?”

But the next moment, Ma Hong Yun stood in front of Zhao Lian Yun.

He spread open his arms, protecting Zhao Lian Yun behind him.

“Boy, you want to protect an otherworldly demon?” Giant Sun’s will sharpened his tone, his expression becoming ice-cold.

“What otherworldly demon! I don’t know any otherworldly demon, I only know she is Lady Xiao Yun, without her help, I would likely have been killed already.” Ma Hong Yun tried his best to defend Zhao Lian Yun.

Zhao Lian Yun’s pupils shrunk as she looked at Ma Hong Yun in a daze.

“Even against Giant Sun’s will, this fellow will still stand up for me?”

“Why?”

“I am clearly an otherworldly demon, and not a person of this world!”

“You idiot, you are going to die. By protecting me, you are offending Giant Sun’s will, that is your ancestor, you idiot!”

Hei Lou Lan’s gaze towards Zhao Lian Yun started showing killing intent.

“No, Lady Xiao Yun is innocent, you must not harm her!” Ma Hong Yun was extremely determined, he wholeheartedly wanted to protect Zhao Lian Yun.

However, Giant Sun’s special will did not care about Ma Hong Yun, directly making a move against Zhao Lian Yun.

“No——!” Ma Hong Yun saw the situation going south, he called out in a moment of desperation, extending both his arms and hugging Zhao Lian Yun within his bosom.

During this moment.

Time seemed to have become endlessly slow.

Zhao Lian Yun was curled up in Ma Hong Yun’s chest, her heart beginning to beat wildly.

An unprecedented feeling of safety and warmth filled her heart.

Following that came a kind of panic.

This panic was not towards her life hanging by a thread, instead it was a strange feeling that came from the depths of her heart.

Zhao Lian Yun found at this moment that she had hopelessly fallen in love with the stupid Ma Hong Yun.

In this world, there could be guys who would watch the stars with her, accompany her to shout at the valley, heal her and give her flowers. But who would sacrifice their life for her?!

In this world, otherworldly demons were despised by even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, who would be so stupid to protect her?

Ma Hong Yun.

Ma Hong Yun!

...

The memories surfaced one by one in Zhao Lian Yun’s mind.

Then, they started to disappear one by one.

“No, stop it!” Tears filled Zhao Lian Yun’s face as she called out with incomparable sorrow.

Xiao Fei Fei’s voice transmitted: “Hehehe, when you are struck by my immortal killer move, you will lose your most precious memories. Do you feel pain? It doesn’t matter, the more you forget, the more relaxed you will be, maybe you will even smile. Hehehe....”

The memories disappeared, a smile suddenly appeared on Zhao Lian Yun’s face.

“Don’t smile. This is Xiao Fei Fei’s famous sinister killer move, it will kill people while they smile. The longer you smile, the more easily you will lose your life.” Mu Ling Lan quickly transmitted his voice to warn her.

However, Zhao Lian Yun seemed to have turned silly, as her smile became increasingly wider.

“Damn it!” Mu Ling Lan knew he had to take action.

He unleashed his killer move after a long period of preparation, creating an incredible effect!

“Ahh! You actually...” Xiao Fei Fei had exposed her location while attacking Zhao Lian Yun, and was struck by the fatal move while unprepared, losing her life miserably.

“Fairy Lian Yun, you need to persevere!” Mu Ling Lan quickly rushed over and helped Zhao Lian Yun.

Zhao Lian Yun still had a smile on her face, but she was no longer in a daze.

Two streams of translucent tears dripped down her face from her eyes.

Her eyes were blurry from age and her hair had turned white, she could only use Gu worms to transmit her voice.

“What should I do?”

“I have forgotten almost everything about him, even his appearance.”

“I only remember his name.”

“I only remember....”

“That I love him.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1267: Central Continent’s Reinforcements

Northern Plains, Snowy Mountain blessed land, first snowy peak.

“Once more.” Lady Wan Shou approached Ma Hong Yun step by step, holding a ball of lightning in her hand.

“Go ahead.” Ma Hong Yun nonchalantly rolled his eyes.

Lady Wan Shou snorted, throwing the ball to Ma Hong Yun’s chest.

Crackle crackle crackle!

Lightning sparkled all over Ma Hong Yun’s body, Ma Hong Yun was clenching his teeth, actually maintaining his consciousness amidst the lightning assault.

When the lightning assault ended, Ma Hong Yun did not faint, but was sweating all over, with a flushed face.

“I failed again!” Lady Wan Shou could not believe it: “What is going on? Something is not right!”

She had already failed who knows how many times in trying to lightning refine Ma Hong Yun.

Even though the success rate of rank eight Immortal Gu was extremely low, there was no reason for being stuck at this one juncture from the start.

Lady Wan Shou felt like vomiting blood.

Especially when she saw that Ma Hong Yun had already advanced to rank five peak stage, moreover, because of the repeated lightning refinement failures, many lightning path dao marks were engraved on his body.

If Ma Hong Yun cultivated lightning path, these dao marks would no doubt give him tremendous help.

“Aren’t you tired of always doing this? How about changing to another method, even I am bored.” Ma Hong Yun knew his death was certain, so he no longer cared at this point, making fun of Lady Wan Shou.

Lady Wan Shou’s eyes shot out cold light that shone on Ma Hong Yun, an incomparable pain immediately attacked his body and mind.

He no longer had the content expression, as he raised his head and cried out miserably, his whole body twitching non-stop.

Lady Wan Shou silently listened to Ma Hong Yun’s screams, but the cold light from her eyes did not stop flickering.

Ma Hong Yun yelled himself hoarse, finally, his eyes rolled back and he fainted.

Lady Wan Shou gave a cold snort, the cold light from her eyes gradually dissipated and revealed her thoughtful expression.

....

“Zhao Lian Yun is already close to dying.”

“The number of times love Immortal Gu can show its might has become limited.”

“It seems Lady Wan Shou has also noticed something.”

Far away in Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, South Desolation Immortal was well aware of the situation in Snowy Mountain blessed land.

Right now, he was also somewhat impatient.

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals had still not appeared, what on earth were they planning?

“Capturing love Immortal Gu was preparation Ancestor Giant Sun made in the past, we, his descendants, shall complete this perfectly.”

“Black Extremity, prepare to move!”

South Desolation Immortal sent his command to Longevity Heaven through information path methods.

In Longevity Heaven, the Eight Extremities were still controlling Calamity Luck Altar and besieging Five Elements Grandmaster.

As they heard the command, two rank seven Gu Immortals immediately separated from the formation, Black Extremity and Flood Extremity.

“We shall go now.” Black Extremity said to the others.

“Come back quickly.” Heaven Extremity did not dare to split too much of his attention, without two rank seven Gu Immortals, they were even more helpless against Five Elements Grandmaster, and could only maintain the current situation while they waited for Black Extremity and Flood Extremity to return.

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

“Everything is going according to plan, if this continues, love Immortal Gu and Ma Hong Yun will return to Longevity Heaven. Central Continent Gu Immortals, if you still don’t make a move, it will be too late.” South Desolation Immortal thought to himself.

Rumble!

A loud sound was heard.

The entirety of Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace shook violently and was actually forced to reveal itself.

“Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace! So all of it was your doing!!”

“Destroy this Heavenly Palace, take revenge for our companions!”

Two Immortal Gu Houses were floating in front of Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

One was giving off sounds of hundreds of canaries singing together, extremely agile, it was Canary Pavilion. The other was surrounded by strong winds and stood lofty and tall, it was Wind Sweeping Building!

The two Immortal Gu Houses had imposing air, but cracks could be seen on both of them, clearly, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals had to pay a huge price to get out from the spaceless tunnel.

“Hmph, all of you finally appeared?!” South Desolation Immortal gave a cold snort as he quickly controlled Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace to defend themselves.

The two Immortal Gu Houses from Central Continent pincer attacked Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace from in front and behind.

Although there was Giant Sun immortal zombie inside Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, he showed no intention of making a move. He had been sitting here for countless years, only retaining enough strength to make one attack, it was to repay a debt to someone.

Right now, even though Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace was being attacked, he was still sitting cross-legged at the center of the palace, aloof and indifferent.

Soon, sweat started forming on South Desolation Immortal’s forehead.

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace was strong, but it had one big weakness, it had to stay at this place and could not be moved. The moment it moved, even if it was just a hairsbreadth of distance, it would destroy its three hundred thousand years of effort.

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace had spent three hundred thousand years before it was able to influence black heaven and white heaven above Northern Plains. The moment it moved, this effort will be wasted and it would no longer be able to influence black and white heaven.

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace was like a huge defensive umbrella that firmly protected Northern Plains. This was the arrangement Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had left behind for his descendants.

How could South Desolation Immortal destroy Ancestor Giant Sun’s motives just because he was being attacked? He could only choose to face the attacks head-on.

Central Continent’s side had come prepared as they erupted in explosive offenses, actually gaining the upper hand against Luck Suppression Heavenly

Palace.

“Yao Huang, come help me in controlling this Immortal Gu House and fight off the enemies!” South Desolation Immortal spoke.

Yao Huang quickly agreed and moved to help.

With a second rank eight Gu Immortal controlling the Immortal Gu House, there was an immediate effect.

The battle situation stabilized.

South Desolation Immortal’s expression was filled with doubts: “Strange, why did these Central Continent Gu Immortals’ attacks suddenly fall off? Also, they seem to have met with an accident in the spaceless tunnel. I remember there were clearly three Immortal Gu Houses, where is that strongest one, Edge Link Camp? Was it destroyed in the spaceless tunnel?”

But at the next moment, South Desolation Immortal’s eyes opened wide as he received the latest information.

“Edge Link Camp has appeared above Snowy Mountain blessed land!”

Longevity Heaven had already infiltrated Snowy Mountain blessed land, thus South Desolation Immortal was extremely clear of the situation in Snowy Mountain blessed land.

Boom!

A huge explosion resounded, and a continuous and intense tremor spread.

The twelve snowy peaks of Snowy Mountain blessed land were all shaking violently.

Immortal Gu House Edge Link Camp’s power was extremely high, after all, this Immortal Gu House had two rank eight Gu Immortals.

One was Wei Ling Yang, the other was Bi Chen Tian.

Myriad Tidal Dragon was controlling Wind Sweeping Building while also using Canary Pavilion, restricting Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

Edge Link Camp had great might, even if it was in Snowy Mountain blessed land, it was contending with the power of the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation, firmly floating in the air like a nail.

“We are saved!”

“Reinforcements have come!!”

“Why is there only Edge Link Camp, what about the other two?”

The five Central Continent Gu Immortals who were at different snowy peaks, simultaneously raised their heads and looked at Edge Link Camp, their spirits greatly lifted.

Edge Link Camp also discovered these five Gu Immortals, especially Zhao Lian Yun who had love Immortal Gu.

Wei Ling Yang and Bi Chen Tian naturally wanted to save them, however, the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation was not for show, Edge Link Camp tried to charge down but was met with a very strong formless force.

"The super Gu formation here is not simple, it actually uses Reverse Flow River!"

"Reverse Flow River is actually in Old Ancestor Xue Hu's hands? But this Gu formation relies on Snowy Mountain blessed land, it is rooted to the blessed land. We cannot deal with the Gu formation, but we can destroy Snowy Mountain blessed land, thus destroying its roots. This Gu formation would then collapse by itself."

Wei Ling Yang and Bi Chen Tian discussed for a moment before deciding on the plan.

Boom boom boom...

Edge Link Camp let out fierce offense, giant horn shadows continuously bombarded at various areas of Snowy Mountain blessed land, causing extremely huge quakes.

Snowy Mountain blessed land turned into an apocalyptic scene.

Avalanches took place at all the snowy peaks, huge rifts opened on the ground, and countless birds and animals fled in panic.

"Husband." Lady Wan Shou had stopped Gu refinement for the moment. She was standing beside Old Ancestor Xue Hu with a worried expression.

"Dear, if we let this Immortal Gu House continue to attack, Snowy Mountain blessed land will be destroyed sooner or later. At that time, this refinement path Gu formation will also be destroyed. But you can relax, what can a mere Immortal Gu House do to me? Let me teach these meddlesome Central Continent Gu Immortals and make them have no way back!" Old Ancestor Xue Hu laughed loudly, as he boldly charged towards Edge Link Camp.

Both sides fought an intense battle in the air.

Edge Link Camp, which was being controlled by two Central Continent's rank eights, was actually suppressed, unable to obtain an advantage.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1268: Shadows in Snowy Mountain

Old Ancestor Xue Hu displayed the power that belonged to the strongest of Northern Plains!

In possession of such vast might that shook heaven and earth. His great power would drive off deities and scare off ghosts!

"Old Ancestor Xue Hu is indeed worthy of being called the strongest of Northern Plains!" Bi Chen Tian was not arrogant.

These experts were beyond ordinary. With just a few exchanges of moves, Bi Chen Tian knew he was not Xue Hu's match!

Edge Link Camp was shaking continuously and even looked like it could not bear

Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s tyrannical offense.

“Unfortunately, Old Ancestor Xue Hu, you are only one person, while we have two rank eight Gu Immortals.” Wei Ling Yang sneered, and said to Bi Chen Tian, “I will leave the Immortal Gu House to you.”

Bi Chen Tian transmitted his voice in reply: “You can rest assured, I can hold on! If something is wrong, I will call you back.”

Wei Ling Yang used his methods to quietly fly out of Edge Link Camp.

He naturally could not resist the strength of the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation by himself, but right now, most of the formation’s power was being used to protect Snowy Mountain blessed land, so the pressure on Wei Ling Yang had decreased, and he was confident he could use his methods to go to each snowy peak.

Because he was a rule path Gu Immortal.

Rule path possessed a huge advantage in this aspect.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was stronger than Wei Ling Yang, but he could not compare in this aspect.

However, Wei Ling Yang had only sneaked half the distance, when he was discovered by Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s powerful investigative killer move.

“Where are you going?” Old Ancestor Xue Hu furiously shouted, as he waved his hand.

Immediately, a boundless blizzard rose up from thin air, heaven and earth changed colors, all living beings went silent, Wei Ling Yang was immediately overwhelmed.

Wei Ling Yang was not discouraged by being obstructed, he constantly changed his directions to break through Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s obstruction, and with Bi Chen Tian’s cooperation, it was a very good tactic of distraction!

Lady Wan Shou was breaking out in cold sweat, she did not have any mood to refine currently and was concentrating on this crucial battle.

If Old Ancestor Xue Hu won, everything would be safe, any danger would also take a turn for the better.

If Old Ancestor Xue Hu lost, then everything was lost, all their efforts would burst like a bubble.

Although Old Ancestor Xue Hu had high battle strength, the other side had two rank eight Gu Immortals and an Immortal Gu House, Edge Link Camp. On the contrary, the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation was of limited help to a rank eight Gu Immortal like Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

Wei Ling Yang wanted to pincer attack, which no doubt attracted a lot of Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s attention, causing the latter to find it hard to use his full strength.

“If one of the rank eight Gu Immortals attacks the snowy peaks, the consequences will be unimaginable!” Lady Wan Shou was filled with worries.

Right now, Snowy Mountain blessed land was already in danger that threatened its very existence!

“Lady Wan Shou, I have an idea which can let you resolve this danger.” Right at this time, a message arrived in Lady Wan Shou’s immortal aperture.

“This is?!” Lady Wan Shou was greatly shocked.

Because the Gu worm that had transmitted the message was one which Lady Wan Shou had all along kept in her immortal aperture and never used.

Many years ago, not long after Lady Wan Shou had underwent immortal ascension.

Inside a cave.

“Senior, so you were already here, this junior will leave, I don’t dare disturb senior from taking this true inheritance.” Lady Wan Shou’s heart palpitated at the surging aura released by this mysterious Gu Immortal.

But who knew this mysterious Gu Immortal would suddenly say: “Little girl, you could become a Gu Immortal at such a young age, and also know your own limits, knowing when to retreat or advance, quite good. I don’t have the qualifications to take this true inheritance. I am willing to give this true inheritance to you, but, after you inherit it, you need to tell its contents to me. You will also owe me a favor, if there is a situation in the future, you must help the person who uses this information path Gu worm.”

Lady Wan Shou considered for just a moment before agreeing.

She actually had no other choice.

Because if she did not agree, she probably could not leave this place alive with her cultivation level.

If so, it was better to take a bet on this!

“Good. Come, we shall set the agreement.” The mysterious Gu Immortal smiled brightly while stroking his beard.

...

This scene of the past quickly flashed in Lady Wan Shou’s mind.

She immediately replied: “May I ask if you also have interest in fortune rivalling heaven Gu?”

That Gu worm quickly transmitted the reply: “Haha, Lady Wan Shou, it seems you have genuine feelings towards Old Ancestor Xue Hu. Rest assured, we don’t have any ill intention towards you, we only need you to refine a Gu material. If you can do this, we will help you and your husband to force back these Central Continent experts.”

“Then I shall welcome you, honored guests.” Lady Wan Shou nodded after a bit of pondering.

After a while, a group of four Gu Immortals appeared before Lady Wan Shou.

They were Ying Wu Xie and the others!

“Hei Lou Lan, Tai Bai Yun Sheng!” Lady Wan Shou immediately recognized two of them.

The destruction of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had caused the culprits to be hunted everywhere, Hei Lou Lan and Tai Bai Yun Sheng had become ‘famous’ together with Fang Yuan.

Right now, Lady Wan Shou was very surprised to see these two great culprits.

After all, previously, such a huge super force like Hei tribe had taken the blame for Hei Lou Lan, and was besieged by various Huang Jin tribes, before being annexed by Bai Zu tribe in the end.

As for Bai Ning Bing and Ying Wu Xie, Lady Wan Shou naturally did not recognize them.

However, what made her even more surprised was that the leader of these four Gu Immortals was the weakest strength path immortal zombie, Ying Wu Xie.

“Distinguished guests, I wonder how you can help us repel the enemies?” Lady Wan Shou asked.

Ying Wu Xie smiled brightly, and spoke with assurance: “Lady Wan Shou, I know Old Ancestor Xue Hu had invited people to remove the alliance agreement on you from back then. But we indeed came with no ill intent, we both have mutual enemies, these Gu Immortals of Central Continent. We are the best allies you can have.”

“At this moment, you let us in, it meant that you still acknowledge the favor from back then and that you realize the dangerous situation you are in. But as long as you help us refine an immortal material first, everything can be solved easily.”

“What immortal material, take it out.” Lady Wan Shou extended her hands.

However, Ying Wu Xie shook his head, giving a bitter smile: “This immortal material is inside your immortal aperture, Lady Wan Shou.”

“Oh?”

“It is that purple gold rock which Old Ancestor Xue Hu took from Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s graveyard in the past.” Ying Wu Xie replied.

Lady Wan Shou’s pupils shrunk slightly, letting out wisps of sharp light as she took out an immortal material: “This?”

The four immortals looked at it, this rock was only the size of a palm and was shining in purple-gold light.

Ying Wu Xie heaved a sigh: “Yes, it is this rock.”

“So you are members of Shadow Sect.” Lady Wan Shou exposed the identity of Ying Wu Xie and the group.

Ying Wu Xie was not surprised, admitting frankly: “Fairy, you have great knowledge, I will trouble you.”

Lady Wan Shou nodded.

As such, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were indeed enemies of her and these Shadow Sect Gu Immortals.

As the common saying went, the enemy of an enemy is a friend.

Also!

Lady Wan Shou glanced at the battle in the air, before turning her gaze to this purple gold rock: “What kind of immortal material is this? I was not able to identify it and even others did not know. I won’t hide it from you, I have already tried to refine this purple gold rock, but I had no results.”

Ying Wu Xie smiled brightly, his tone carrying some pride: “That is because this is a special method of my Shadow Sect, Lady Wan Shou, you don’t know the correct procedures and methods, I will teach you, you just need to follow them and you will succeed.”

....

An ancient sword dragon was flying above the clouds as it finally arrived at Snowy Mountain blessed land.

From the outside world, the scenes inside Snowy Mountain blessed land could not be seen.

Life and death battles were going on in the blessed land, storms and lightning razed the battlefield, but in the outside world, it was sunny and peaceful.

“They entered Snowy Mountain blessed land? Strange!”

Fang Yuan could not help but have some doubts.

He knew Old Ancestor Xue Hu had turned Snowy Mountain blessed land into a danger zone, to refine fortune rivalling heaven Gu.

Ying Wu Xie and the others actually entered it?

Was this true or an illusion?

Would it be like that time in Eastern Sea when Ying Wu Xie and the others made arrangements in the Gu formation, creating a facade and deceiving Fang Yuan’s qi luck sensation?

But if it was true...

It signified too many things!

Fang Yuan hesitated.

He had the upper extreme heavenly eagle, but it was not wise to rashly charge in.

He decided to not to charge in for the moment, and simply wait and see.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1269: Rank Eight Miniman

“Xue Hu, take this!” Wei Ling Yang softly pointed his right hand towards Old Ancestor Xue Hu, immediately, a grand beam of light shot towards Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu gave a light snort as he waved his hand, a large wall of ice appeared and blocked the beam of light easily.

Next, Old Ancestor Xue Hu breathed out cold air which flew towards Wei Ling Yang, resembling spiralling hatchets.

Wei Ling Yang’s expression immediately changed.

These spiralling ice hatchets were extremely difficult to deal with, he had already suffered from them, the main thing was, he did not have restrictive methods against them.

Helplessly, Wei Ling Yang could only fly back into Edge Link Camp, and use the powerful defensive ability of Edge Link Camp to protect himself.

Boom boom boom.

A series of soft sounds echoed as the ice hatchets followed Wei Ling Yang, and smashed into Edge Link Camp.

Edge Link Camp shook intensely, large amounts of cold air spread over it, instantly freezing many of its mortal Gu to death.

“Quick, repair the Immortal Gu House!”

“Someone is injured, heal them quickly.”

“Activate the Immortal Gu House, use offense as defense!!”

The Gu Immortals inside the Immortal Gu House were agitated.

Wei Ling Yang was breathing roughly, his right hand had frozen completely, who knew when it happened.

“When was I hit?” Even Wei Ling Yang himself was surprised at the condition of his right hand.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s methods were endless, even when they were not very powerful, they were sinister and insidious, making people unable to defend effectively.

Wei Ling Yang had been struck by Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s move unknowingly, and was injured.

He tried several methods, but the condition of his right hand showed no signs of improving.

“This injury is so troublesome...” Bi Chen Tian breathed sharply.

“It is not a big problem, I only need to seal my right hand for the moment. I am now worried about Myriad Tidal Dragon’s end. He is controlling two Immortal Gu Houses and also has the help of most of the Gu Immortals that came in this expedition, but what he is facing is Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace as well as Longevity Heaven! We must rescue Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun quickly, and join up with Myriad Tidal Dragon, then retreat to Central Continent!”

Wei Ling Yang’s gaze flickered continuously.

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals naturally had come prepared, although they met with an accident in the spaceless tunnel, Central Continent’s accumulation was more than enough, when these Gu Immortals reacted, they quickly and smoothly escaped the danger.

But the current situation was extremely unfavorable to them!

It was already difficult to deal with Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace. Now that they had split their forces, the decision maker, Wei Ling Yang, was facing great mental pressure.

Rumble!

Thunderous explosions occurred endlessly, Edge Link Camp was shaking continuously and was losing ground.

Central Continent’s two rank eight Gu Immortals were elites among rank eights and were qualified to be members of Heavenly Court, they were naturally very powerful.

However, Northern Plains excelled in battle strength among the five regions, and Old Ancestor Xue Hu was the strongest expert among the rank eights of the current Northern Plains.

Right now, he displayed such astonishing offense that Central Continent’s side was not able to gain the upper hand since the moment they had started fighting him!

“This won’t do! Treat your injuries and control the Immortal Gu House. I will go distract Old Ancestor Xue Hu!” Bi Chen Tian said through clenched teeth.

“You must be careful.” Wei Ling Yang said to Bi Chen Tian with concern in his voice, as he knew his injuries had yet to recover.

Bi Chen Tian flew out of Edge Link Camp and quickly used his immortal killer move, turning into a green ray of light, and flying down towards the snowy peaks.

Bi Chen Tian intended to destroy the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation.

With its destruction, Edge Link Camp would not be obstructed and could dive down without resistance, directly saving Zhao Lian Yun and perhaps Ma Hong Yun as well.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu might be powerful, but he would not be able to block Edge Link Camp’s charge.

“Stop daydreaming.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu had already seen through Central Continent’s tactics, he activated his immortal killer move, immediately, endless hailstones fell down from the sky.

Each of these hailstones was enormous, the size of a mound. They crashed down with loud sounds, and started turning into snow monsters.

These snow monsters were of at least desolate beast level and among them were ancient desolate beast snow monsters as well.

They stood on the snowy peaks and roared towards the sky.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu suddenly took in a deep breath, two lumps of cold air, so deeply blue that they were to the point of being black, were forming in his breath.

The cold air was emitted, giving rise to a powerful blizzard. The snow monsters were like fish in water in the blizzard, they were even able to soar with the help of the blizzard. Bi Chen Tian, however, was greatly restricted.

“So powerful!”

“Old Ancestor Xue Hu knows he cannot use battlefield killer moves inside the Gu formation, so he actually disassembled his signature battlefield killer move. His ice and snow path attainment is probably already at great grandmaster level!”

Whether it be Bi Chen Tian or Wei Ling Yang, they were both shocked at this scene.

At great grandmaster level, every killer move could be casually disassembled and interchanged at will, their understanding towards the path was already close to the Dao.

“But, what if you add me?” Wei Ling Yang sneered, the next moment, he also charged out of Edge Link Camp, towards the Gu formation.

The injury on his right had already healed completely.

He clearly had very high attainment in the healing aspect.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s expression slightly changed.

Facing two rank eight Gu Immortals at once, along with an Immortal Gu House, he clearly appeared to be stretched thin and had slightly lost his control over the battle situation.

After all, he was unable to destroy the Immortal Gu House for the moment, and the two rank eight Gu Immortals were also experts, most importantly, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had to protect the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation.

Rank six and rank seven Gu Immortals could not break this formation, but rank eight Gu Immortals were different.

Bi Chen Tian and Wei Ling Yang were attacking the enemy’s weak points, gradually turning around their situation and gaining slight initiative. Immortal Gu House Edge Link Camp was controlled by a group of rank seven Gu Immortals and was like a turtle shell in defense, not seeking glory on the battlefield but content with not showing flaws, not allowing Old Ancestor Xue Hu to make a fatal move for some time.

Boom boom boom.

Every now and then, the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation shook and emitted buzzing sounds.

This was the result of a small portion of attacks from Bi Chen Tian or Wei Ling Yang that had escaped Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s obstruction, striking Snowy Mountain blessed land.

“Amazing!”

“Hang in there, lords and our comrades of Central Continent!”

Zhao Lian Yun and the group no longer needed to take a risk, they were standing at the top of their respective snowy peaks, and gazing at the battle above.

Similarly, the surviving snowy peak lords were also gazing at the sky.

Their faces were filled with worry.

“The is the power of rank eight Gu Immortals... It is truly astonishing and terrifying!”

“Because of this formation, the aftereffects of the battle have not spread, otherwise we would have died miserably.”

“Lord Xue Hu is strong, but the Central Continent invaders are extremely crafty. If this goes on, the formation will be destroyed sooner or later...”

And, on the first snowy peak of Snowy Mountain, the refinement of the purple gold rock immortal material had reached its final stage.

“I didn’t expect that I had to use enshrouding fragrance to dissolve the purple gold rock.” Lady Wan Shou’s horizons had broadened at this moment.

Enshrouding fragrance was also an immortal material.

Using immortal material to refine immortal material, this method was rarely seen, and Lady Wan Shou also found that the essence of this method was food path!

Food path was rare, no wonder Lady Wan Shou had no ideas on how to deal with this purple gold rock.

The last layer of the rock surface was dissolved, and a dazzling purple light soared to the skies, forcing everyone to look away.

Lady Wan Shou narrowed her eyes to a slit, and was barely able to see a figure in the purple light.

This figure was very small, only about the size of an adult’s thumb, and it had two thin purple wings on its back.

“Miniman?” Lady Wan Shou was slightly stunned as she recognized this figure’s race.

Bathed in the purple light, the miniman slowly opened his eyes. His eyes were a bright and deep purple color.

As he opened his eyes, a powerful aura leaked out of him.

Rank eight Gu Immortal!

In an instant, this aura caused the fierce battle in the air to slow down.

“Why is there another rank eight Gu Immortal? And it... is the aura of Northern Plains!” Bi Chen Tian and Wei Ling Yang looked at each other, both feeling the situation going awry.

“We pay respects to Lord Purple!” Ying Wu Xie had already brought the Gu Immortals with him, to bow towards this rank eight miniman.

Only Bai Ning Bing was still standing upright.

“I have woken up again. Hmm...” The miniman Gu Immortal blinked his eyes, the expression of confusion quickly disappeared from his face, replaced by a cold and indifferent expression.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1270: Sub and Main Fate Reversing Sacrificial Refinement Formation

The miniman Gu Immortal thought briefly before using an immortal killer move, calling out: “Big, big, big.”

Thus, his body rapidly expanded like a balloon, soon, he reached a normal human size.

Furthermore, the wings on his back vanished as well, on the outside, he looked just like a normal human.

Right now, the Gu Immortals present could finally see the appearance of this mysterious rank eight Gu Immortal.

He was an unimpressive old man, even looking a little dishevelled. His only special feature was his purple hair, so messy that he resembled a beggar.

Plop.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had tears flowing down his face, he knelt down as he shook in excitement, shouting: “Master!”

“Oh? It is you, I remember I gave you a time path true inheritance.” The rank eight Gu Immortal smiled, exposing his uneven yellow teeth.

“Even though our sect’s plan succeeded, many unexpected mishaps occurred. This was what happened...” Fighting against time, Ying Wu Xie went forward and transmitted many wills and thoughts to the purple haired old man.

In a moment, the purple haired old man understood everything.

“It was a pity, heaven’s will won by a margin.”

“But all hope is not lost.”

“Ying Wu Xie, you did well, it has been hard on you.”

“And Tai Bai Yun Sheng, stand up.”

“Now, while I am still conscious, we will join with Xue Hu and take down these Central Continent Gu Immortals!”

The situation was dire, the purple haired old man noticed that the rank eight Gu Immortals were the key to this battle.

He did not hesitate, his body turned into a purple light as he flew into the sky, in a moment, he stood beside Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

“Friend, your name is?” Old Ancestor Xue Hu was not surprised, Lady Wan Shou had already used a Gu worm to inform him about everything that happened regarding the group from Shadow Sect.

With the help of the mysterious expert, Old Ancestor Xue Hu felt very excited.

“I have many names, but...” The purple haired old man said this and showed a smile with deep meaning: “Xue Hu, you may call me Purple Mountain True Monarch.”

At this point, Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Purple Mountain True Monarch collaborated, dealing with the two rank eights from Central Continent, as well as Edge Link Camp.

Purple Mountain True Monarch had incredible strength, even though he only attacked sparsely, each of his attacks were extremely effective in turning the situation around.

Any ordinary rank eight could already help Old Ancestor Xue Hu turn this around. Not to mention the mysterious and unfathomable Purple Mountain True Monarch!

Wei Ling Yang and Bi Chen Tian fought desperately, they exerted all their efforts, but they could not stop the situation from tilting towards Northern Plains’ favor.

After more than ten rounds of fighting, they were forced to return to Edge Link Camp, they could not defend against Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Purple Mountain True Monarch personally.

The peak lords saw this and cheered loudly.

Without Central Continent’s Gu Immortals attacking the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation, the result of this battle was obvious.

Zhao Lian Yun and the other four Gu Immortals who were trapped in Snowy Mountain blessed land had pale expressions. The battle had turned for the worse, their hopes of survival were dwindling.

What should they do?

Outside Snowy Mountain blessed land, an ancient sword dragon was hiding among the clouds.

“Shadow Sect actually has connections with Snowy Mountain...”

“Then why did Qin Bai Sheng not request for Snowy Mountain’s help when he was fighting against Feng Jiu Ge in Luo Po Valley?”

“Or perhaps their relationship is not as deep as I think.”

Qi luck sensation was telling Fang Yuan that Ying Wu Xie and the rest were inside Snowy Mountain blessed land, they did not leave.

Fang Yuan’s pursuit was obstructed, he was unwilling to give up, he was waiting outside, to see if there was a chance.

And at a certain place a thousand li away, two Gu Immortals descended from the sky.

They were none other than Longevity Heaven’s Black Extremity and Flood Extremity.

“This is the place.” Black Extremity said as he used his Gu worms, causing a huge commotion.

The small slope that was in front of them started to shine in rainbow light.

Flood Extremity realized at once: “So you have set up a Gu formation at this place, you need me to control the Gu formation now?”

Black Extremity shook his head: “Wait until we get inside.”

He took a large step ahead, entering the Gu formation, as Flood Extremity followed behind.

Once they were inside the Gu formation, Flood Extremity's expression changed, he said in shock: "This Gu formation has a grand aura, as expected of your personal arrangement, Black Extremity, I can tell that once activated, it will have incredible strength. But..."

Towards the end, Flood Extremity had a hesitant tone.

"But what?" Black Extremity looked at him with much interest.

Flood Extremity said in a profound tone: "But I feel that this formation is not complete, it is missing something. It is like a lake, there should be something connecting it to the sea."

Black Extremity heard this and his eyebrows rose, he praised and clapped: "As expected of a quasi-great grandmaster of water path, you are already proficient in comprehending other paths through your main path. That's right! This Gu formation is just a sub formation, there is a corresponding main formation."

"Then where is the main formation?" Flood Extremity frowned.

Before Black Extremity answered, he had an inspiration as he said in realization: "I understand! The main formation is the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation in Snowy Mountain blessed land!"

"Indeed." Black Extremity laughed: "I was tasked earlier to act as Sun Ming Lu and get near Lady Wan Shou. Eventually, I created the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation which used Reverse Flow River. Even though Old Ancestor Xue Hu is currently the strongest person in Northern Plains, he is not proficient in formation path, he could not tell that I had a backdoor."

"Right now, as long as I activate this sub formation, I can make the main formation in Snowy Mountain blessed land break apart, and draw the Reverse Flow River here."

"Once the Gu formation collapses, everyone and everything in the surrounding ten thousand li of Snowy Mountain blessed land would all be swept here."

Black Extremity said with an excited gaze.

Flood Extremity was shocked: "In this case, wouldn't those four rank eight great experts be sent here too?"

Black Extremity shook his head: "Reverse Flow River is a secluded domain of heaven and earth, it is not ordinary, it has an incredibly large number of dao marks. As long as one falls into Reverse Flow River, even rank eight great experts cannot use any Gu worms. In <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, when Ren Zu traveled up the Reverse Flow River, he did not use any Gu worms within the river."

"Then wouldn't they be meat on the chopping block for us?" Flood Extremity was excited.

But Black Extremity shook his head: "We are outside Reverse Flow River, if we make any attacks, it will be reversed and reflect back at us. This is Reverse Flow River, the word reverse naturally has deep meaning."

Flood Extremity was confused: "In this case, how can we save Ma Hong Yun and capture Zhao Lian Yun?"

“Hahaha.” Black Extremity laughed: “Did you forget that Reverse Flow River is still subjected to the influence of both my sub and main fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation.”

“When the main formation collapses, Reverse Flow River would flow towards us. By then, the order of everyone in Snowy Mountain blessed land would be arranged by me, Zhao Lian Yun and Ma Hong Yun would be at the front of Reverse Flow River.”

“Lady Wan Shou and the rest would be behind, while Central Continent’s Gu Immortals would be even further back, those rank eight Gu Immortals would be at the end.”

“Incredible!” Flood Extremity said with shining eyes, he clapped: “This way, in order to escape from Lady Wan Shou and the rest, Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun would desperately struggle and move forward, to pull ahead of the rest behind. But as long as they are ahead, we will be able to interact with them here and capture them alive.”

“However...” Flood Extremity frowned: “If Zhao Lian Yun and Ma Hong Yun are unable to persevere, would they be like Ren Zu and be washed away by the river? If that happens, they would fall behind the other Gu Immortals, wouldn’t it foil our plans?”

Black Extremity smiled bitterly: “This is the biggest flaw in the plan. But traveling in Reverse Flow River has nothing to do with cultivation level or strength, Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun are not at a disadvantage.”

“But this is not an assured result.” Flood Extremity was not satisfied with this.

Black Extremity shrugged: “Then what do you want from a rank seven Gu Immortal like me? This is the best way already, after all, we are not plotting against two rank seven Gu Immortals, but the entirety of Snowy Mountain blessed land and Central Continent’s Gu Immortal experts, involving multiple rank eight great experts, a total of four at that!”

Flood Extremity was speechless, he nodded helplessly, this was their limit indeed.

In fact, it was already very impressive that Black Extremity could achieve this much.

“Don’t worry, we are just part of the arrangements, Lord South Desolation has woken up, he definitely has other plans. We just need to do our part, that will suffice.” Black Extremity patted Flood Extremity’s shoulder in consolation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1271: Implicating Fang Yuan

Boom boom boom!

The silhouette of the giant horn shot around in the sky, sending out a barrage of attacks.

Around Old Ancestor Xue Hu, frost energy was oozing, turning into blue icy cold frost that swept at Edge Link Camp in layers.

The two Central Continent rank eights in Edge Link Camp were desperately gritting their teeth, the Gu Immortals behind them were trying to repair the Immortal Gu Houses, they were covered in sweat and had panicked expressions.

Meanwhile, beside Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Purple Mountain True Monarch was covered in dazzling purple light, radiating in the entire Snowy Mountain blessed land.

Central Continent’s group was attacking Snowy Mountain, Purple Mountain True Monarch was tasked to defend it. This blessed land was the foundation of the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation, as long as they defended it, Central Continent would lose.

“What should we do?” Bi Chen Tian had a frantic expression: “If this continues, not only will we fail to save Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun, we will also lose this Immortal Gu House and our own lives!”

Wei Ling Yang was the leader of this expedition, he had a grim expression.

The situation was very disadvantageous for the Central Continent Gu Immortals.

It could even be said they were hopeless.

According to the plans of Central Continent’s Gu Immortals, they were split into two, one group would restrain Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, while the other would save Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun, before they joined up and left Northern Plains together.

But now, the group that went to Snowy Mountain blessed land was already close to defeat, and the other group was also waiting for their rescue.

This was Northern Plains, not Central Continent.

Three rank eights and three Immortal Gu Houses, along with a band of Gu Immortals, were still a relatively small number of people.

Of course, this was also because the Northern Plains Gu Immortals were prepared. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s plan was not known to Central Continent.

Central Continent struck with a powerful attack, according to the planning of this assault, there was a huge chance of success.

But as the situation progressed, the targets of their sneak attack became strong foes, and with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s arrangements, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals fell into this dangerous situation.

Wei Ling Yang’s thoughts were churning rapidly.

A moment later, he gritted his teeth and gave his orders, seemingly exerting his last bit of strength: “We will retreat!”

Forget about Zhao Lian Yun and Ma Hong Yun.

After Purple Mountain True Monarch appeared, the situation went beyond Wei Ling Yang’s control.

If this dragged on, Central Continent would suffer even greater losses!

Wei Ling Yang decided to retreat back to black heaven, and join up with the other two Immortal Gu Houses and escape to Central Continent.

Edge Link Camp was directed to leave, Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Purple Mountain True Monarch could not stop it together. After all, they had no Immortal Gu Houses, they could not stop it from charging away.

However!

Just when Edge Link Camp was about to charge out of the Gu formation, a change occurred.

The entirety of Snowy Mountain blessed land was rumbling intensely.

A great earthquake!

“What is going on?”

“The blessed land is collapsing!”

Zhao Lian Yun and the others, as well as the remaining peak lords, were extremely shocked.

Rumble!

With a loud sound, the snowy peaks started to break apart.

“What is going on?!” Old Ancestor Xue Hu showed shock on his face.

“The entire formation is breaking apart.” Purple Mountain True Monarch’s eyes shined brightly, before he corrected himself: “No! This formation...”

Before he finished his words, the Gu Immortals present heard the sound of waves.

At the next moment, giant rushing waves appeared out of nowhere, sweeping the battlefield!

It was the secluded domain of heaven and earth — Reverse Flow River!!

“Oh no, my wife!” Everything happened too quickly, Old Ancestor Xue Hu wanted to charge back to the first peak, but he was engulfed by the river along the way.

Within Reverse Flow River, no Gu worms could be activated.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu could not defend himself, he was washed away by the rushing tides.

He had the highest battle strength in this place, if this happened to him, there was no need to mention the rest.

Immortal Gu House Edge Link Camp broke apart in the river, the Central Continent Gu Immortals were washed along the river like falling dumplings.

Zhao Lian Yun and the rest, the peak lords of Snowy Mountain blessed land, Lady Wan Shou, Ying Wu Xie’s group, and Ma Hong Yun, were all inside Reverse Flow River.

Snowy Mountain blessed land completely collapsed, only a framework was left as the winds of assimilation started to blow.

“They’re coming!” Far away, Black Extremity’s head was bulging with veins, he manipulated the sub formation with all his strength.

He was the culprit behind Snowy Mountain’s destruction.

And beside him, Flood Extremity was defending him vigilantly, at the final moment, Flood Extremity had to use his water path methods to direct Reverse Flow River.

“What?!” Fang Yuan felt his vision turning bright as a huge torrent engulfed him in an instant.

Once the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation broke, everyone and everything within the surrounding ten thousand li of Snowy Mountain blessed land was engulfed by Reverse Flow River.

Fang Yuan was within this range, he was not spared.

From the raging river water, Fang Yuan’s head emerged on the surface.

“This is — Reverse Flow River?!” He had a wide range of knowledge, after his shock, he realized the origin of the river that he was in.

“Snowy Mountain blessed land contains Reverse Flow River?”

“No wonder my ancient sword dragon transformation was removed for no apparent reason.”

This was natural.

Inside Reverse Flow River, Gu worms could not be used. Fang Yuan’s ancient sword dragon transformation was an immortal killer move, it needed Immortal Gu and mortal Gu to activate.

Thus, the moment Fang Yuan was swept in, all of his Gu worms stopped working, he returned to his original form.

“Thankfully, I can swim.” Fang Yuan moved his limbs, swimming skillfully.

He looked ahead, on the surface of the raging river, there were many things floating or swimming. Large numbers of wild beasts, trees and grass, and even rocks.

Reverse Flow River’s waves were extremely rough, gushes of currents caused rocks or trees to move around randomly, creating chaos in the river.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank, in this situation, he could not use Gu worms, his battle strength was at rock bottom, he could only rely on his own body’s defense.

At this time, Fang Yuan heard something that did not sound right near him.

He quickly turned around, he saw that a giant metal tree was flowing along the river, the trunk was as thick as an elephant, it rushed towards him.

“Danger!” Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, he wanted to dodge.

But in the torrential Reverse Flow River, he could not move easily, his speed was very slow, the metal tree crashed into his waist.

Fang Yuan was quickly knocked into the depths of the river.

Next, he rapidly moved his four limbs, before resurfacing above the river.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

He breathed raggedly, taking in fresh air as he inspected his body, checking his injuries.

He was shocked when he checked it.

Because he had no injuries.

He only had a bruise on his waist.

But soon, his bruise vanished.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined, he realized: “Oh right! My body is not normal, I have the sovereign immortal body!”

Inside Reverse Flow River, Fang Yuan could not use any Gu worms, he could only rely on his own body.

However!

His sovereign immortal body was not normal at all.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1272: What is that?

After the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain ended, Fang Yuan had tested this body’s limits.

He did not use any Gu worms, but he was fast like a charging horse.

By just leaping gently, he could jump ten meters of distance.

Jumping down from a hundred and eighty meters while pointing his head downwards, he felt a little dizzy but it only lasted for three breaths of time, and was gone before he knew it.

He had great strength and endurance as well, he ran for minutes without feeling any fatigue at all.

His five senses and visual acuity were beyond amazing! His vision was outstanding, looking ten thousand steps ahead, everything was clear to him.

His heartbeat returned to normal after exercising intensely, every time it beat, it was very strong and lively.

His thinking speed was extremely fast as well. Even if it was under the light of wisdom, he could maintain it for a long time. Even Gu Immortals could rarely reach this extent with only their bodies.

Not just a metal tree, even if a metal hill crashed at him, Fang Yuan would be intact.

This was the sovereign immortal body’s own physique, it had nothing to do with Gu worms, it had to do with his dao marks.

“Inside Reverse Flow River, I cannot use Gu worms, but the same goes for others!”

“Meanwhile, my sovereign immortal body is sufficiently strong, my dao marks are also high in quantity.”

Fang Yuan thought about it, his mood turned into excitement.

“Ying Wu Xie!”

He flung his limbs as he swam forward like a swordfish.

The whole Reverse Flow River was running quickly, but the overall flow was affected by the formation, it flowed towards Black Extremity and Flood Extremity.

Roar!

A striped tiger was climbing onto a plank with its limbs.

Fang Yuan swam to the tiger but it was unmoved. Meanwhile, Fang Yuan panted as he took a little rest on the plank.

But this plank could not endure the weight of both the human and tiger, it started sinking.

The tiger was anxious, it bore its fangs at Fang Yuan and wanted to bite him, but Fang Yuan snorted and stretched out his arm, crushing the tiger’s head as he raised his fist and punched this tiger to death.

“Thankfully, this is not a desolate beast but an ordinary beast instead.”

Against a desolate beast, the sovereign immortal body was not enough.

Snowy Mountain blessed land did not lack desolate beasts. But to refine fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, in activating the formation and defending against enemies, Snowy Mountain blessed land had already been modified. Gu Immortals with desolate beasts had kept them in their immortal apertures, they would not allow enemies to kill the desolate beasts, that would just be stupid.

Fang Yuan swam in Reverse Flow River, he wanted to find Ying Wu Xie.

Snowy Mountain blessed land collapsed, Reverse Flow River was pouring out, Fang Yuan did not know that Purple Mountain True Monarch had awakened.

He was still thinking of Old Ancestor Xue Hu as the main enemy. He estimated that Ying Wu Xie had some relationship with Snowy Mountain, but it was not close. Otherwise, why would Old Ancestor Xue Hu not help during the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain?

Fang Yuan’s analysis was not wrong.

But his information path methods were too lacking, he did not have enough intel.

“Right now, even if I meet Old Ancestor Xue Hu, I can survive. Because in Reverse Flow River, Gu worms cannot be used, it is a special environment!”

“Since Ying Wu Xie has some connection with Old Ancestor Xue Hu, if I miss this chance, they will definitely grow rapidly under his protection.”

“If I miss this chance, I might not have another opportunity to eliminate them again!”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan moved ahead after resting shortly.

But he met Bi Chen Tian.

A Central Continent rank eight Gu Immortal!

Fang Yuan was shocked.

“What is going on?”

“A rank eight Gu Immortal who isn’t Old Ancestor Xue Hu, and is from Central Continent?!”

Bi Chen Tian was in a terrible state, he was covered in injuries as he rested on a huge turtle’s back.

These injuries were not from Reverse Flow River’s journey, but were sustained in the battle earlier. He was a rank eight Gu Immortal, his dao marks conflicted and it was harder to heal from injuries once he sustained them.

But in that battle, he was in a weaker position, how could he have time to heal himself?

Thus, after the main formation collapsed, he was swept by Reverse Flow River and could not use his Gu worms to heal himself, all the way until now.

But fortunately, while being washed away in the river, he met a floating turtle and managed to get a chance to rest on it.

Fang Yuan discovered Bi Chen Tian, Bi Chen Tian also saw Fang Yuan.

But Bi Chen Tian did not recognize Fang Yuan.

Because Fang Yuan was in his sovereign immortal body’s appearance! His original appearance was exposed by Heavenly Court and was spread over all five regions.

Even though Bi Chen Tian did not know Fang Yuan, he frowned and became alert.

Because Fang Yuan’s aura showed that he was a Northern Plains Gu Immortal.

This was also because of the sovereign immortal body.

After passing the regional wall, Fang Yuan could change his aura into that of the region he was in, he was a Gu Immortal of the region and could perfectly fuse into it.

“Who is this? He is not one of the peak lords of Snowy Mountain blessed land, however, he could have been recruited by Old Ancestor Xue Hu secretly.”

Bi Chen Tian stood up on the turtle’s shell, looking at Fang Yuan’s every movement.

Inside Reverse Flow River, even though Bi Chen Tian had rank eight cultivation level, his Gu worms could not be used, he had limited battle strength.

Fang Yuan also looked at him alertly, he did not get close.

Even though Fang Yuan had the sovereign immortal body, he would be stupid if he thought he was the strongest person in Reverse Flow River!

Reverse Flow River did not allow Gu worms to be used, but his body was intact, his dao marks were effective.

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body was very powerful, because of the dao marks on the immortal body.

Similarly, if a Gu Master used black boar Gu to gain the strength of a boar, he would have the strength path dao marks carved into his body. If this Gu Master falls into Reverse Flow River, and is unable to use Gu worms, he would still be able to use his body and attack with the strength of a boar.

As for other Gu Immortals, over the long course of their cultivation journey, how could they not use any Gu worms like black boar Gu to increase the number of dao marks in their bodies?

This was natural!

Anyone who was not a fool would know the advantages of such dao marks.

Fang Yuan’s body had its advantages, so did other Gu Immortals, the extent simply varied from one person to another.

For rank eight Gu Immortals, they had deep foundations, Fang Yuan did not want to fight against Bi Chen Tian at the moment.

“You are a Central Continent Gu Immortal?”

“I am a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, but I have a grudge with Old Ancestor Xue Hu.”

“I saw him trying to refine the rank eight Immortal Gu, I did not want him to succeed, so I went to the outside of the blessed land and tried to find a way to break in.”

“Are you a helper for him to refine the Gu?”

Fang Yuan probed.

Bi Chen Tian’s frown eased a little, he answered: “Old Ancestor Xue Hu is also my enemy.”

“Not long ago, I was fighting against him in Snowy Mountain blessed land, but this unexpected surprise happened.”

“My injuries are all caused by Old Ancestor Xue Hu.”

The two talked and exchanged information.

Fang Yuan realized now that so many things had happened in Snowy Mountain blessed land!

But Bi Chen Tian was very vague about many things, Fang Yuan could not get much intel.

They did not trust each other after all.

This was natural.

They only had interacted a little, it was hard to tell what the other person’s intentions were.

And in this situation where Gu worms could not be used, both sides were at their highest alertness.

Fang Yuan knew he could not get more information from Bi Chen Tian and decided to leave.

He left that huge wild turtle.

Even during the conversation, he did not get closer, while Bi Chen Tian did not invite Fang Yuan to rest on the turtle’s back.

Bi Chen Tian saw that Fang Yuan was leaving and his expression relaxed a little.

But at this moment, an unexpected surprise occurred.

Ping.

A soft sound echoed.

A fist-sized thing was washed down by the river, landing on Fang Yuan’s face.

This thing was soft and tiny, like a jellyfish, it stuck to Fang Yuan’s forehead.

“What is this?” Fang Yuan was stunned, he wanted to pull it away.

But at this time, he heard Bi Chen Tian call out: “Be gentle, don’t crush it!”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan was surprised, what was it that made a rank eight Gu Immortal nervous?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1273: Affection Immortal Gu

Fang Yuan held this jellyfish-like Gu in his hand, looking at it.

At the next moment, his eyes shined.

This was an Immortal Gu.

But he did not know its rank.

Because in Reverse Flow River, no Gu worm could be used. These Gu worms that fell into Reverse Flow River were like fossils, they were sealed and their auras could not be felt.

This made Fang Yuan unaware of the nature of this jellyfish Immortal Gu earlier, when it was on his face.

Only when Bi Chen Tian reminded him did Fang Yuan realize.

If this were in the outside world, without Reverse Flow River, Immortal Gu aura would leak, Fang Yuan would detect it from far away, and determine what its rank was.

As for what Immortal Gu it was, that would depend on the Gu Immortal’s own knowledge.

“This Immortal Gu seems to be... affection Gu?” Fang Yuan’s knowledge was wide, after looking at it, he could guess this what this Gu was.

Wisdom path had three elements, thoughts, wills, and emotions.

Since there was love Immortal Gu, there was also affection Immortal Gu, of course 1 .

Fang Yuan’s guess was right.

Bi Chen Tian could not help but feel anxious. Affection Gu was very important to Central Continent’s Gu Immortals.

Why?

Because this Immortal Gu was temporarily used in Edge Link Camp, there were many mortal Gu along with it.

This affection Immortal Gu, along with many mortal Gu, could create a new effect in Edge Link Camp, that was to track the location of love Gu. Even if love Gu was in an immortal aperture, it would not be affected.

That was how Edge Link Camp managed to find Snowy Mountain blessed land.

Otherwise, inside the spaceless tunnel, when love Gu sent Zhao Lian Yun, Yu Yi Ye Zi, Shi Zheng Yi, Bu Zhen Zi, and Mu Ling Lan away, who would know where they went?

After adding affection Immortal Gu and other Gu worms, Edge Link Camp could detect love Immortal Gu and traced it to Snowy Mountain blessed land.

But afterwards, because they fought with Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Purple Mountain True Monarch, Edge Link Camp sustained great pressure, and took much damage. Before this, due to the long journey and the collapse of the spaceless tunnel, Edge Link Camp was not complete to begin with.

And now, after Flood Extremity and Black Extremity activated the Gu formation, destroying the main formation, Reverse Flow River flowed out and struck the heavily damaged Edge Link Camp.

This way, the Immortal Gu House broke apart and the Immortal Gu and mortal Gu inside were all swept away by the water.

If this were the outside world, these Immortal Gu and mortal Gu would fly towards the Gu Immortals who had their wills contained.

But inside Reverse Flow River, these Gu worms were restricted by the special environment, they were forcefully sealed, hibernating like they were no longer alive.

Affection Gu was one of the countless Gu worms that made up the Immortal Gu House.

Or rather, it was a very lucky one.

Because most of the Gu worms had flowed along the river and were destroyed by the waves, or crashed into rocks or trees.

Gu worms were very fragile.

Reverse Flow River became their grave.

Of course, there were different types of Gu worm body types.

Most were broken with one squeeze, but some were like jade or rocks, as tough as jade. Affection Gu was different, it had a soft body, it could survive even if there was an impact.

Evidently, this was how it survived in Reverse Flow River.

But after ending up in Fang Yuan’s hands, it was not in good shape.

The jellyfish body was very tattered, there was a huge injury that was about a quarter of its size, it was terrifying.

Bi Chen Tian’s eyes were very sharp, seeing that Fang Yuan was about to pull away this affection Gu, he called out in worry.

But after reminding him, he felt great regret.

If he did not say it, Fang Yuan might have thrown it away without care or concern.

But now, Fang Yuan’s eyes were shining, he realized the truth.

Bi Chen Tian withheld the unease in his heart as he cupped his fists at Fang Yuan: “Friend, this Gu belongs to Central Continent. Why don’t you give this Immortal Gu to me, you will gain the friendship of Central Continent. Is that alright?”

Fang Yuan squinted: “I can consider that, but what Gu is this? You need to tell me.”

Bi Chen Tian answered: “This is affection Gu, a wisdom path Gu worm.”

Wisdom path Gu Immortals were rare, Bi Chen Tian emphasized that this was affection Immortal Gu because he thought that Fang Yuan was not a wisdom path Gu Immortal. Affection Gu was not useful to most Gu Immortals after all.

It was a waste to give it away, but it was a burden in one’s hands.

Why?

Gu Immortals needed wills as their assistants. Be it in sect meetings or in treasure yellow heaven, any will Gu could be used widely.

But mortal level will Gu could achieve this.

There was no need to waste one’s effort in raising an affection Immortal Gu.

After all, if one was not a wisdom path Gu Immortal, with their conflicting dao marks, using the Immortal Gu of other paths would have lower effects. At the same time, just affection Immortal Gu could not form any immortal killer moves.

Unless it was an immortal killer move of other paths that needed affection Immortal Gu, or any special methods that needed it, then the Gu Immortal would desire it.

Not all Immortal Gu were popular with people.

Gu Immortals had different paths, so did Immortal Gu. Gu Immortals were of rank six, seven, and eight, so were Immortal Gu.

For Gu Immortals, only suitable Immortal Gu had value to them.

In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, during the five regions chaotic war, Gu Immortals often held trading sessions to exchange their Immortal Gu.

But Bi Chen Tian would not think that Fang Yuan was the most special Gu Immortal of all.

Firstly, he had grandmaster wisdom path attainment level, such a person had to be considered a wisdom path Gu Immortal.

Secondly, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body did not have conflicting dao marks, he could cultivate any path!

Lastly, Fang Yuan had been fretting over this matter, even though he had wisdom path attainment level and methods, he did not have relevant wisdom path Immortal Gu.

Thus, this affection Immortal Gu was very important to Fang Yuan.

Thus, he placed affection Immortal Gu into the pocket of his shirt.

Inside Reverse Flow River, the immortal aperture’s entrance could not be opened, he had to carry it with him.

Bi Chen Tian saw this and his heart sank, his tone was even more anxious: “Friend! Take out that Immortal Gu, we are not enemies, we can go through a transaction according to what we need.”

Fang Yuan looked at Bi Chen Tian: “We can have a transaction, but not here.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1274: Fighting Rank Eight in the River

If possible, Fang Yuan wanted to use affection Immortal Gu to trade for Immortal Gu that suited him more.

But in Reverse Flow River, transactions were impossible.

Because no Gu worms could be used, information path methods that allowed two parties to engage in transactions were unusable.

Fang Yuan wanted to exchange for Immortal Gu, but Bi Chen Tian could not take out any Immortal Gu, because Gu worms hibernated while inside Reverse Flow River, let alone those in an immortal aperture, they would not respond to any of a Gu Immortal’s summons even if they were inside their bodies.

Thus, Bi Chen Tian did not have any chips to use for trade.

Bi Chen Tian knew Fang Yuan’s concern, but should he give up this chance and wait for the future?

Who knew what would happen in the future?

After Black Extremity’s action, Snowy Mountain blessed land was gone, Central Continent’s Edge Link Camp was destroyed as well, if Central Continent’s group fought again, they would fall into an even deeper disadvantage.

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were barely able to defend themselves, once they escaped Reverse Flow River, wouldn’t they flee immediately?

Thus, there was no chance to undergo trade with Fang Yuan.

If they did not do the transaction now, what about in the future?

Fang Yuan was a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, while Bi Chen Tian was a Central Continent Gu Immortal, both were in different regions, even in treasure yellow heaven, Central Continent could not dictate Fang Yuan to do a transaction with them later.

What if he made a deal with someone else? What if he raised prices to an absurd level without fear?

There were worse situations possible.

Bi Chen Tian was someone with the foresight to consider bad outcomes in advance, seeing that he could not coax Fang Yuan to give the Immortal Gu, his killing intent rose!

“I am a rank eight Gu Immortal, even if I cannot use Immortal Gu here, with my dao mark foundation, how can I lose to a rank seven Gu Immortal?”

Thinking like this, Bi Chen Tian jumped into the river water and swam towards Fang Yuan.

At this moment, his hostility was obvious.

Fang Yuan sneered internally, as he charged towards Bi Chen Tian as well.

Bi Chen Tian saw this and became joyful, thinking: “This Northern Plains Gu Immortal looks like a battle maniac. He’s simply brainless!”

The river water moved rapidly, but both parties had extraordinary bodies, they quickly met in the middle.

Boom boom boom.

Fang Yuan raised his fist and punched at Bi Chen Tian thrice.

Bi Chen Tian was a wood path Gu Immortal, he had great stamina and eyesight, he blocked all three attacks.

He was shocked: “This person looks so young, how can he have such strength? Does he cultivate strength path?”

He felt that his arm was numb from blocking.

But while he was shocked, Bi Chen Tian still retaliated with his other hand.

Both sides exchanged fists, they quickly got into a scuffle.

Fang Yuan’s entire body was a weapon, his head, knee, elbow, and all sorts of jabs were used.

Bi Chen Tian was on the back foot, but soon, he held up evenly against Fang Yuan’s attacks. Because he had incredible foundation, and his close combat skills were very deep. Even though he had rarely used these techniques after becoming a Gu Immortal, currently in actual battle, he was recovering his combat skills.

As for Fang Yuan, he had become a Gu Immortal more recently, many years ago, he was a mortal Gu Master roaming Northern Plains and Southern Border, he was familiar with close combat.

The two fought in the water, at times, they lifted their heads above the water and breathed roughly, temporarily resting.

Reverse Flow River moved rapidly, most of their energy was spent in swimming, they did not actually fight too much.

When they fought, the environment was very complex.

Because at times, logs or wild beasts would float down the river and force the two to evade them.

As a result, after tens of rounds of battle, both sides were breathing roughly, but they could do nothing to the other party.

“This rank eight Gu Immortal is truly deep in foundation. I wanted to kill a rank eight in Reverse Flow River, but now it seems to be wishful thinking.”

Bi Chen Tian, however, was filled with shock.

“How can this be? This person is on par with me?!”

“I have used grass python Immortal Gu previously to gain a huge amount of strength.”

“I have also used immortal killer move wood armor to carve dao marks in my body, my body has naturally strong defenses.”

“I even turned my heart into a wood heart and turned my blood into green blood, giving me super healing abilities.”

“These immortal killer moves and Immortal Gu, along with my dao marks as a rank eight Gu Immortal who has so many calamities and tribulations, I definitely outclass this rank seven.”

“But why am I simply evenly matched with him?”

Bi Chen Tian stared at Fang Yuan, as if he was looking at a monster.

Speaking of which, Fang Yuan did not have as many dao marks as the rank eight Bi Chen Tian, but in fact, his dao mark accumulation surpassed most rank seven Gu Immortals. Even though he only became a rank seven Gu Immortal recently.

What resisted Bi Chen Tian was the sovereign immortal body.

The sovereign immortal body was not a normal human body, it was refined from a Gu worm. Be it Wei Ling Yang or Bi Chen Tian, they were humans. But Fang Yuan’s body was made from a Gu worm.

It could therefore be said that Fang Yuan being a complete otherworldly demon was one of the reasons.

The sovereign immortal body made up for the difference in dao marks between him and Bi Chen Tian, allowing them to fight evenly.

Fang Yuan decided to retreat.

Even though he did not lose, his intention was to kill the huge threat Ying Wu Xie.

Earlier, when fighting with Bi Chen Tian, he wanted to test his strength, to see if he could kill a rank eight Gu Immortal.

But in fact, Fang Yuan was overly optimistic.

He could do nothing to Bi Chen Tian, Fang Yuan had to give up. He did not want to stall it out with Bi Chen Tian, his objective had not been met yet.

Fang Yuan wanted to leave, but Bi Chen Tian did not allow him to.

Even though Bi Chen Tian could not do anything to Fang Yuan, affection Immortal Gu was still with Fang Yuan.

“Even if I cannot win, I need to keep him here. If my companions come later, we can encircle him together. I cannot let him escape!”

“Damn it, this guy.” Fang Yuan quickly frowned.

He wanted to retreat, but Bi Chen Tian’s speed and strength were not inferior to his, even though Fang Yuan wanted to leave, Bi Chen Tian was preventing him from doing so.

This gravely affected Fang Yuan’s plan.

“In that case, don’t blame me for being ruthless!” Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with cold light.

Obstructed by the wild beast corpse ahead, Fang Yuan’s speed fell and Bi Chen Tian reached him again.

Fang Yuan turned around to fight him.

Both were fighting with their fists and legs in Reverse Flow River, it was a draw, at the crucial moment, Fang Yuan stretched out his arm and placed affection Immortal Gu in front of himself.

Bi Chen Tian wanted to punch at Fang Yuan’s torso.

If he hit, Fang Yuan would lose his oxygen supply and would need to go to the surface and breathe in fresh air.

This was one of the key points of fighting underwater.

But Fang Yuan suddenly took out affection Immortal Gu, and put it in front of Bi Chen Tian’s fist.

Bi Chen Tian turned pale from shock, he quickly pulled back his fist and revealed a flaw.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly on the inside, he used this flaw and charged, Bi Chen Tian had made a mistake and could only block and defend himself, preparing to counterattack.

But Fang Yuan suddenly raised affection Immortal Gu in front of himself, causing

Bi Chen Tian to be unable to attack and exposing a flaw.

With two flaws exposed, Fang Yuan made use of his advantage and kicked at Bi Chen Tian’s stomach.

Bi Chen Tian was hit and immediately opened his mouth as air bubbles floated up.

He did not have enough oxygen now, he changed his tactics and wanted to escape to the surface.

But Fang Yuan did not allow this, he stretched out his arms and gripped with them like pincers, pulling Bi Chen Tian and preventing him from reaching the surface.

Bi Chen Tian suddenly twisted his waist and escaped with a difficult maneuver. He moved like a fish, bursting out with strength, Fang Yuan’s left arm could not catch him.

Fang Yuan praised on the inside towards this response.

Bi Chen Tian was a Central Continent Gu Immortal, but his rank eight foundation really held no weaknesses. In terms of fighting underwater, he even slightly surpassed Fang Yuan.

There was a need to mention, Fang Yuan had lived in Eastern Sea for a long time during the five hundred years of his previous life.

This way, Bi Chen Tian instantly swam until he was on top of Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1275: Kicking a Rank Eight Great Expert

Fang Yuan’s grasp earlier had failed, he raised his arms and grabbed upwards.

His left arm missed but his right arm grabbed onto Bi Chen Tian’s leg.

Bi Chen Tian was obstructed, his other leg kicked towards Fang Yuan’s head like a fierce dragon.

This blow was heavy, if it landed, Fang Yuan would become dizzy and Bi Chen Tian would easily escape.

But Fang Yuan took out affection Immortal Gu and raised it up.

Bi Chen Tian wanted to curse, his leg stopped.

Fang Yuan managed to obtain some time to react, he moved his head backwards as his entire body went upside down in the water.

Originally, he was like Bi Chen Tian, they were floating upright.

But now that he grabbed Bi Chen Tian’s leg, he became upside down.

Bi Chen Tian saw this and his heart sank, he gasped in his mind.

This was because Fang Yuan was grabbing onto his leg with one hand, while the other was holding affection Immortal Gu, he could not attack with strength.

But at this moment, in this scene, Fang Yuan had two legs to use.

Meanwhile, Bi Chen Tian's leg was held by Fang Yuan, he could only attack with one other leg.

Bi Chen Tian was shocked, the leg that was free moved around like a butterfly, it was extremely nimble, after kicking for several times, Fang Yuan could only see many shadows of his moving leg.

But Fang Yuan had no fear, he kicked with both legs, as he unleashed a flurry of kicks moving like shadows as well.

Both parties were fighting in the water, causing huge spirals to form around the river water, each time their legs collided, a loud sound was emitted in the river water.

Bi Chen Tian could only use one leg, how could he compete with both of Fang Yuan's legs?

During the process of fighting, he was often hit by Fang Yuan's legs.

Bi Chen Tian mainly defended himself, as he felt downcast: "I am a great rank eight Gu Immortal, to think that this would happen. Scoundrel! As long as I get to the surface and recover my breath, I will deal with you!"

His arms flailed furiously, dragging Fang Yuan towards the surface as well.

But at the next moment, Fang Yuan's eyes shined with brilliance, as he blocked Bi Chen Tian's kick with one leg, while his other leg kicked at a crucial location.

"Ah!"

Bi Chen Tian was kicked by Fang Yuan, it landed on his crotch.

In an instant, his entire face stiffened, he stared with wide opened eyes, he was about to gasp out his last bit of oxygen left.

Bi Chen Tian was a rank eight great expert after all, he had superhuman endurance, he forcefully endured it and moved his arms, wanting to swim up to the surface.

Boom!

Fang Yuan kicked again.

Bi Chen Tian's body shook, this time, he could not help but breathe out a chain of bubbles.

Boom boom boom.

Sensing his huge weakness, Fang Yuan continued to kick.

Bi Chen Tian's face was flushed red, his eyes were bloodshot, he no longer thought of getting to the surface, he wanted to kill Fang Yuan!

"Who would fight you to the death?" Fang Yuan let go, kicking Bi Chen Tian away with another blow.

At the same time, he was pushed away by the force, pulling some distance from Bi Chen Tian.

After getting free, Bi Chen Tian was dazed for a while before giving up on Fang Yuan, he went to the surface to recover his breath.

Fang Yuan turned around and escaped successfully from Bi Chen Tian.

Bi Chen Tian's head came up to the surface as he breathed in deeply continuously.

His crotch was hurting, waves of pain was assaulting his nerves, he felt himself getting dizzy.

"This accursed fellow! If I have a chance, I will tear out your tendons and burn you to ashes!" Bi Chen Tian watched at the river surface as Fang Yuan swam away rapidly, their distance was enlarging, he could not catch up.

Fang Yuan successfully escaped from Bi Chen Tian, he slowed down to recover his stamina.

His legs were numb.

Bi Chen Tian's crotch was not easy to kick. Fang Yuan had immense strength, but his legs still felt numb from kicking it.

Evidently, Bi Chen Tian had thought of defending his crotch, there were many wood path dao marks there.

At the final crucial moment, Fang Yuan did not fight with Bi Chen Tian.

He knew that with Bi Chen Tian's methods, even if he killed him, he would have to face a terrifying retaliation and would likely get heavily injured or end up dead.

Fang Yuan did not want this outcome.

He did not need to fight to the death with a rank eight Gu Immortal.

He had the sovereign immortal body, his future was bright. And his goal to begin with was Ying Wu Xie.

If he died with Bi Chen Tian, wouldn't Ying Wu Xie be laughing his head off? Even if only Bi Chen Tian died, Fang Yuan would still be heavily injured, he would lose the ability to kill Ying Wu Xie.

Of course, there was something crucial.

Even if he killed Bi Chen Tian, Fang Yuan could gain nothing!

Immortal apertures could not be opened here, Bi Chen Tian's corpse would be a burden. Fang Yuan could not carry this corpse around with him, even if he could, what if he met Ying Wu Xie? Even if he did not meet Ying Wu Xie, what would he do if he met Central Continent's Gu Immortals?

Rank seven Gu Immortal killing rank eight, this would be a grand feat that would grant him unparalleled honor and glory.

But this honor was worthless to Fang Yuan!

He continued to swim ahead, trying to find Ying Wu Xie.

“Fang Yuan, is that you?”

Ying Wu Xie heard this and turned around, expressing joy on his face.

“Come closer, I will pull you up.” He quickly said.

After a moment, Ying Wu Xie dragged Tai Bai Yun Sheng onto a huge lotus leaf.

“This is the leaf of the king lotus, it can float on the surface of the water, to think that you are so lucky.” Tai Bai Yun Sheng sighed deeply.

Ying Wu Xie laughed, thinking: “I am luck connected to Fang Yuan, how can my luck be bad?”

But soon, his smile faded as worry appeared on his face again.

He looked at the flowing river: “Reverse Flow River’s state is really strange now, we cannot escape. We have to meet up with Purple Mountain True Monarch now, we might be able to take back Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun, and even kill that ancient sword dragon that was chasing us!”

At the mention of Purple Mountain True Monarch, Tai Bai Yun Sheng showed admiration on his face: “Yes, we should meet up with master.”

“Achoo!”

Purple Mountain True Monarch sneezed loudly.

He had a bitter expression, sighing: “Oh, to think that I would end up like this so soon after waking up. Sigh, I am old, my body is weak now, I seem to be getting a cold just because of some water.”

He was sitting on Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s shoulder.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was swimming, he looked around, trying to find something in Reverse Flow River.

Hearing Purple Mountain True Monarch’s words, he snorted: “You are doing nothing but you are still complaining? Don’t you have wings? Why don’t you fly out of Reverse Flow River?”

Purple Mountain True Monarch was in his original form now.

Like how Fang Yuan turned back to a human from ancient sword dragon form, Purple Mountain True Monarch was a rank eight miniman Gu Immortal, he had turned large earlier using an immortal method. Now that he was in Reverse Flow River, he became a miniman again.

Precisely because of this, he could sit on Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s shoulder.

“You think I don’t want to? But this Reverse Flow River is affected by some power, it is very chaotic, I cannot leave the river. Hehe, who created this Gu formation for you?” Purple Mountain True Monarch asked.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu had a grim expression: “Sun Ming Lu.”

Purple Mountain True Monarch responded with an ‘oh’.

“It should be him. This was out of my expectations.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu said: “He is a member of Longevity Heaven!”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was astute, at this moment, it was not hard to guess where Sun Ming Lu came from.

Because Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were already in danger, in the entirety of Northern Plains, who could have the ability and guts to deal with Old Ancestor Xue Hu?

Other than Longevity Heaven, there was no one else.

Purple Mountain True Monarch said: “Longevity Heaven is definitely after Ma Hong Yun, as well as Zhao Lian Yun. They must be in front.”

“I need to find my wife!” Old Ancestor Xue Hu said.

Purple Mountain True Monarch patted his shoulder: “Then we need to go ahead, Lady Wan Shou was right beside Ma Hong Yun at the time, she was swept away by the river along with them, she should be near them.”

The fate reversing refinement sub formation was shining with a brilliant white-golden light.

The light burst into the sky, like a huge unconcealable pillar.

At this moment, Black Extremity was at the center of the Gu formation, manipulating it and directing the flow of Reverse Flow River. Flood Extremity was outside the Gu formation, preventing any intruders from approaching the pillar of light.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1276: Perseverance of the Miniman

“So impressive, this Gu formation can actually control Reverse Flow River.” Flood Extremity looked at the pillar of light and praised sincerely.

But Black Extremity shook his head: “This is not control, I merely created the fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation, it is like digging a river channel and letting Reverse Flow River move in it. We dug the river channel, thus, we can influence the direction that Reverse Flow River goes.”

“When we retrieve Reverse Flow River, Longevity Heaven will gain another secluded domain of heaven and earth.” Flood Extremity anticipated.

Black Extremity instructed again: “When we collect Reverse Flow River, the sub formation will be destroyed. You have to take note of the time and direction, opening your immortal aperture and letting the river flow in. You are a water path Gu Immortal, you have a big advantage in doing this.”

Flood Extremity was troubled: “What if Reverse Flow River changes direction? Are there really no Gu worms in this world that can control Reverse Flow River?”

Black Extremity frowned slightly: “Well no, there isn’t, but maybe not necessarily... there might be another possibility.”

“What do you mean?”

“You know the contents of <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>. It stated that: Ren Zu sighed, as long as he had that Immortal Gu, he would conquer Reverse Flow River.”

“You mean Immortal Gu — Perseverance? No way, perseverance Immortal Gu has never appeared before. In my opinion, that story is only telling us to persevere in cultivating and to never give up easily.”

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, chapter four, section twenty-six —

Ren Zu’s daughter, Boundless Forest Samsara, was trapped inside Ordinary Abyss.

She made friends with a miniman, the miniman brought Boundless Forest Samsara to see his home — City Well.

After Boundless Forest Samsara saw City Well, she raised her head at the sky.

“I understand now.” Boundless Forest Samsara looked above her.

She was trapped inside Ordinary Abyss, she was just like the minimen who were trapped under the well. The minimen raised their heads and saw the sky within the well, it was like the sky that Boundless Forest Samsara saw when she looked up at Ordinary Abyss.

“I have decided, I will work hard and get out of this abyss to meet with father again!” Boundless Forest Samsara raised her fists, making up her mind.

The miniman was overjoyed: “Sure. I want to leave Ordinary Abyss and see the world outside as well. I see that there are many trees here in Ordinary Abyss, we can chop them down and make a ladder to climb up.”

Boundless Forest Samsara gasped, looking at the miniman: “Oh miniman, don’t you have wings? Why can’t you fly out?”

The miniman smiled bitterly: “Oh human, I might have a pair of wings, but they are flimsy and weak. They can only carry me for a short distance. When I left City Well, I also used a ladder.”

“So that’s it.” Boundless Forest Samsara realized.

In the following days, she stayed with the miniman, chopping trees and creating a ladder.

Trees were chopped down one by one, wisdom Gu flew out from them.

Boundless Forest Samsara was shocked: “Wisdom Gu, why are you here?”

“Wisdom is hidden in the ordinary, of course I can be here.” Wisdom Gu answered.

Next, wisdom Gu said: “You are all very smart, you know how to use the achievements of predecessors to escape from being ordinary. But if you two want to leave Ordinary Abyss, you need to build your own ladders and complete them alone. Otherwise, you cannot leave.”

Boundless Forest Samsara quickly nodded: “Oh wisdom Gu, thanks for reminding us, we will take note.”

She and the miniman made their own ladders.

The ladders became taller and taller, soon, Boundless Forest Samsara’s ladder surpassed the miniman.

The miniman’s ladder was short and small, the distance between each step was also small.

In comparison, Boundless Forest Samsara’s ladder was long and tall.

Boundless Forest Samsara teased the miniman: “Miniman, oh miniman, the ladder I make in half a day is as tall as the one you make in half a month. At this rate, when can you make a proper ladder to step on and escape from Ordinary Abyss?”

The miniman was helpless: “I can’t help it, I am already doing my best, but this is all the wood I can carry after spending half a day, while you only need one hand to carry this over. I need to use a long time to chop down a small tree, but you only take three swings. I am already doing my best to reach this extent.”

Boundless Forest Samsara nodded: “It is a pity we can only make our own ladders.”

The miniman replied: “That’s right, to leave Ordinary Abyss, we can use our predecessors’ achievements, but we truly need to rely on ourselves. Let’s continue working hard.”

Boundless Forest Samsara and the miniman continued to chop down trees to make their ladders.

Trees fell one by one, from within, strength Gu flew out.

Boundless Forest Samsara was shocked: “Oh strength Gu, why are you here?”

“Strength is hidden in the ordinary, of course I can be here.” Strength Gu answered.

Boundless Forest Samsara thought about it and asked: “Oh strength Gu, can you give us any advice? Like wisdom Gu.”

Strength Gu said: “I have no advice to give you, but I can grant you great strength, as long as you give me your youth.”

Boundless Forest Samsara fell into hesitation.

Strength Gu said: “According to your current strength, when will you be able to build a ladder tall enough to escape Ordinary Abyss?”

Boundless Forest Samsara thought: “Very long, I will need twenty to thirty years.”

Strength Gu said: “Yes, by then, you will no longer be young, you will lose your youth and became middle aged, rather than that, you might as well give me your youth, even though you will become middle aged, you only need a few years to build the ladder.”

Boundless Forest Samsara thought about it and nodded: “You are absolutely right, strength Gu, I will rely on you.”

Thus, Boundless Forest Samsara obtained strength Gu, her speed in building the ladder became very fast, she could chop more trees at once. A year later, her ladder was extremely tall.

She stood at the top of the ladder and looked down.

She saw that the trees were very small, the grass was a field of green, she was very happy: “So when I stand at a high point, things that are big usually will become small. It is just like City Well.”

She looked down at the miniman’s ladder, it was very short, less than one percent of hers. She pouted.

Boundless Forest Samsara walked down and said to the miniman: “Why are you still so slow, my ladder is already so tall!”

The miniman looked at her ladder in admiration, saying helplessly: “I really admire you, your strength surpassed me to begin with, but now you also have strength Gu, it is too bad that I have no help, I can only rely on myself. I have already tried my best, everyday, other than eating and resting, I spend all my time building this ladder, but it cannot match yours.”

Boundless Forest Samsara nodded: “That is natural.”

Another year passed.

Boundless Forest Samsara continued to build the ladder even taller.

She stood at the peak and looked down.

The trees were like grass, while everything smaller than trees could not be seen clearly.

She looked at the miniman’s ladder, even though it was taller than most trees, it was less than one-thousandth of hers.

Boundless Forest Samsara walked down the ladder, laughing at the miniman: “Miniman oh miniman, stop wasting your efforts. Your strength is too low, you will not be able to build that ladder even if you spend an entire lifetime. You might as well use this time to enjoy your life.”

“Actually, you are already very amazing, compared to those minimen, you actually walked out of City Well, you should just enjoy your life now.”

The miniman thought about it and shook his head: “I am not satisfied with being ordinary. When I am not happy with being ordinary, being ordinary would be like an abyss to me, I want to go out. Even if I cannot succeed, I want to try, if I do not try hard enough, I will not be happy.”

Thus, the miniman continued building his ladder.

The third year passed.

Boundless Forest Samsara’s ladder was extremely tall.

She stood at the peak and looked down.

Only to see that clouds were blocking her vision.

She wanted to look at the miniman’s ladder, but she could barely see it, it was less than one ten-thousandth of her ladder.

Boundless Forest Samsara sighed, she felt lonely.

When the wind blew, she shuddered, feeling cold.

“So when I stand at this tall point, not only will I feel lonely, I will also feel cold.” Boundless Forest Samsara walked down the ladder and told the miniman about this.

The miniman shook his head: “My ladder is not tall enough, I don’t know how you feel.”

Boundless Forest Samsara felt bored.

She continued to build the ladder, but the time she spent on it was decreasing.

Strength Gu asked her: “Oh human, why are you not building your ladder?”

Boundless Forest Samsara answered: “The ladder is too tall and cold, I need to rest and regain warmth.

Another year passed.

Boundless Forest Samsara felt extremely bored.

She was still building her ladder, but she was spending less and less time on it.

Strength Gu asked her: “Oh human, why are you not building your ladder?”

Boundless Forest Samsara answered: “The ladder is too tall, when I look down, I get afraid. I need to rest and let my heart calm down.”

Another year passed.

Boundless Forest Samsara became even more lazy.

Strength Gu asked her: “Look at the miniman, he has never stopped building his ladder, he is giving it his all. If you continue being lazy, he will surpass you one day.”

Boundless Forest Samsara laughed: “How can that be possible? One day of work for me is a month of his. How can he ever surpass me?”

Like this, years passed without stopping.

Finally, one day, the miniman found Boundless Forest Samsara who was resting under a tree, saying to her: “Oh friend, my ladder is at the edge of Ordinary Abyss, tomorrow, I will step out and leave Ordinary Abyss.”

Boundless Forest Samsara laughed: “Oh miniman, don’t lie to me, this is too funny.”

The miniman shook his head, saying seriously: “Grandness and being laughable is merely an inch apart. But I am not laughable anymore, I am grand and can finally leave this Ordinary Abyss. If you do not believe me, watch as I leave.”

Thus, the miniman started to climb his ladder.

Boundless Forest Samsara was shocked at this, the miniman was really at the edge of the abyss,he could leave if he continued like this.

Boundless Forest Samsara shouted: “Oh miniman, do you not feel cold?”

The miniman said: “Of course, but I want to build my ladder and climb out of here.”

Boundless Forest Samsara shouted again: “Oh miniman, do you not feel lonely?”

The miniman said: “Of course, but I want to build my ladder and climb out of here.”

Boundless Forest Samsara shouted again: “Oh miniman, do you not feel afraid?”

The miniman said: “Of course, but I want to build my ladder and climb out of here.”

After saying those three lines, a bright light flashed on his body, rapidly forming into a Gu worm.

“My name is Perseverance, oh miniman, thank you for giving me life.” Perseverance Gu thanked the miniman.

The miniman laughed: “Great, even though I do not have strength, I have perseverance.”

The miniman said as he climbed out of Ordinary Abyss, stepping into the outside world.

He first saw someone.

It was Ren Zu.

The rate of time inside Ordinary Abyss was different from the outside world.

Ren Zu sighed as he saw the miniman: “This is perseverance Gu? What a pity, if I had it, I would have been able to conquer Reverse Flow River.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1277: Meeting of Ma and Zhao

Flood Extremity believed that perseverance Gu was only a Gu worm found in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

But Black Extremity shook his head, saying: “Perseverance Immortal Gu is not a fictitious Gu worm. In fact, it has existed before.”

Flood Extremity was shocked: “How did I not know that?”

“This was something I had learned while traveling Northern Plains. The person who refined perseverance Immortal Gu was the famous Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable. He was the one who entered the door of life and death and brought Reverse Flow River out into the world. He was the first owner of Reverse Flow River.”

“Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable! Is that so? Then why is Reverse Flow River in the hands of Old Ancestor Xue Hu?” Flood Extremity asked.

Black Extremity shook his head: “I am unsure about the details regarding this... what is going on?!”

At this moment, there was a loud sound.

Inside the fate reversing refinement sub formation, some mortal Gu had exploded.

The pillar of light that the sub formation emitted also shrunk by ten percent.

This sudden change disrupted their conversation, Flood Extremity became nervous: “A portion of the Gu formation was destroyed, aren’t you repairing it?”

Black Extremity shook his head: “This situation is within my expectations, even the fate reversing refinement sub formation cannot endure the might of Reverse Flow River, it will be destroyed. And this formation has a weakness, once it activates, it cannot be repaired, unless the entire formation stops functioning.”

Flood Extremity frowned deeply: “Reverse Flow River has not reached here yet, what do we do now?”

Black Extremity smiled: “Don’t worry, I created this formation, how could I not see this coming? In fact, there are benefits in destroying the Gu formation.”

Flood Extremity was confused: “The Gu formation being destroyed has benefits?”

“Every ten percent of destruction would reduce our influence on Reverse Flow River by ten percent. The back part of Reverse Flow River will return to normal and stop being drawn to us. That way, it will display its original might and wash out everyone and everything behind.” Black Extremity explained.

“Incredible!” Flood Extremity clapped and praised, his eyes were shining: “Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun are all at the front, that means, they will be the last to be washed away.”

Black Extremity nodded: “Precisely.”

Inside Reverse Flow River.

“Lord Bi Chen Tian!” Three Central Continent Gu Immortals greeted Bi Chen Tian.

Bi Chen Tian nodded, at this moment, there were five people gathered around him, with the addition of these three and himself, there were nine people.

“Did you see Ma Hong Yun or Zhao Lian Yun?” The Gu Immortals shook their heads.

“Then did you see this person?” Bi Chen Tian described Fang Yuan’s appearance and clothing to them.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals looked at each other, one of them said: “I think I saw him, but I did not stop him. I was hiding behind a floating plank, he swam ahead without noticing me.”

Bi Chen Tian nodded.

“Lord, this person is not in our information, is he an ally or foe?” Someone asked.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals were very perplexed, because Bi Chen Tian was a grand rank eight Gu Immortal, he would not ask for information about a rank seven Gu Immortal for no reason.

Speaking of which, Fang Yuan’s cultivation level was not outstanding. Most of the Central Continent Gu Immortals were rank seven.

But Bi Chen Tian’s following words made all of their hearts shake!

“He is a strong foe. If you meet him, be very careful, I am merely on par with him in terms of physical brawling.”

The Central Continent Gu Immortals nodded solemnly.

“What do we do now?” Someone asked.

“We have many people with us, we will swim up and get rid of our enemies along Reverse Flow River, that would be the best outcome!” Bi Chen Tian said this as killing intent surged in him.

This was a good tactic indeed.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals were not the match of Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Purple Mountain True Monarch if they fought normally. Right now, they had lost Edge Link Camp, they were completely outclassed.

The sudden change with Reverse Flow River gave them a good chance.

Bi Chen Tian felt that: As long as they could make use of this opportunity, they might be able to get rid of their enemies in Reverse Flow River and obtain victory.

“Hmm? What is going on?” At this moment, a certain water path Gu Immortal among the Central Continent Gu Immortals felt a change in the river water.

Next, these Central Continent Gu Immortals saw that the water of Reverse Flow River around them started to calm down rapidly from a turbulent state.

Finally, the river flow slowed gradually, before starting to have small ripples.

Large amounts of rocks and wild beast corpses, which were flowing along the river currents, were washed away rapidly.

It was five times faster than the speed of flow earlier!

“How can this be?” Some Central Continent Gu Immortals were caught off-guard and were washed away by the river, in the blink of an eye, they were three hundred steps of distance away from Bi Chen Tian.

Bi Chen Tian was the first to react.

“Quick, swim, do not stop for even a moment, Reverse Flow River has returned to its usual state, if we stop for a moment, we will be washed away by the currents.” He called out.

Getting Bi Chen Tian’s reminder, the remaining Central Continent Gu Immortals reacted and tried to swim earnestly.

“It is so difficult!”

“The water is flowing slowly and smoothly, but it is actually many times harder than the raging tides earlier!”

“These floating logs and corpses are annoying, they are blocking our paths.”

The Central Continent Gu Immortals quickly found that it was far more difficult to swim in this river that had returned to normal.

“What is this? The higher we swim up Reverse Flow River, the harder every step is! We need to persevere, we do not need to reach the upper part of the river, as long as we meet enemies, we can kill them. If we kill one rank eight Gu Immortal, we will be able to obtain victory later!” Bi Chen Tian raised the morale.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals cheered in response.

“This way, Reverse Flow River is our opportunity!”

“Lord Bi Chen Tian, look ahead, to the front, the river is extremely turbulent!”

Bi Chen Tian heard this and found something weird.

He frowned.

This was a nightmare.

Swimming in this calm part of Reverse Flow River was much harder than swimming in the strong currents. At this rate, as time passes, when the Central Continent Gu Immortals met the enemies that were washed down by Reverse Flow River, they would already be exhausted and out of stamina!

“Quick, we need to get in front and swim in the turbulent water!” Bi Chen Tian had a grave expression, he gave the most accurate instructions.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals increased their speed in response.

Fang Yuan swam in the river, he continued to pursue Ying Wu Xie, but he could not find any trace.

The river water was turbulent, huge waves were created from time to time. From within these waves, wild beast corpses and countless rocks would flow along them.

The situation in the river was very complex. And most importantly, the river was very wide.

Fang Yuan could not get on high ground for observation, even though he had good eyesight, he could not see much.

However, he had found many Gu Immortals, among which, there were Central Continent Gu Immortals and also Snowy Mountain blessed land’s peak lords.

Fang Yuan avoided them all, he did not deal with them.

Fighting these people would waste his time and would not reap any benefits.

“This river is too wide, I might have passed Ying Wu Xie earlier while I was diving, I might be in front of him. This is totally possible!”

But Fang Yuan did not give up.

Because Ying Wu Xie had a higher chance of being in front.

He swam with all his strength, moving agilely in the complex water like a fish. The sovereign immortal body gave him incredible eyesight, stamina, and his recovery speed was on par with rank eight Gu Immortals, and most importantly, he had practiced his own incredible swimming ability.

All these caused him to surpass many Gu Immortals.

In contrast, Bi Chen Tian had to keep searching in the river for the other Central Continent Gu Immortals, he was at the very back.

A leopard fox was swimming in the water, charging at Zhao Lian Yun.

The leopard fox was smaller than regular leopards, but it could swim, thus, even inside Reverse Flow River, it survived.

“Go away!” Mu Ling Lan slapped as he killed the leopard fox which came.

His other arm was grabbing onto Zhao Lian Yun.

Zhao Lian Yun was a false immortal created with a phantom aperture, she had low foundation and barely any dao marks. Without Gu worms, she was as weak as a mortal.

Thankfully, while she was inside Reverse Flow River, the rank seven water path Gu Immortal Mu Ling Lan was around her.

With Mu Ling Lan defending her, Zhao Lian Yun managed to survive until now.

Mu Ling Lan was covered in water path dao marks, he could actually breathe freely in water, he could also swim well, along the way, he protected Zhao Lian Yun and resolved crises, while swimming ahead and bringing her along.

“Quickly look, there is a mound in front.” Mu Ling Lan killed the leopard fox and suddenly said this with shining eyes, there was a mound floating ahead in the river.

“This mound is made of float soil, no wonder it can float on water and not sink! We will go rest there!” Mu Ling Lan dragged Zhao Lian Yun along and climbed onto the floating mound with much difficulty.

Zhao Lian Yun was extremely tired, she was barely alive.

Once she got on shore, she laid down on the mound and stopped moving entirely as she rested.

Mu Ling Lan was extremely tired, he was breathing roughly.

“Wait, there’s someone on the mound!” Mu Ling Lan suddenly stood up with a ruthless expression.

“Calm down, calm down!” A figure had to walk out of the forest on the mound.

Mu Ling Lan saw this person and became stunned.

Zhao Lian Yun was frozen like a statue.

Because the one who appeared in front of them was Ma Hong Yun!

All of the immortals were in terrible conditions, but Ma Hong Yun was wearing clean clothes as he chewed on a half eaten fruit.

“You are Ma Hong Yun!” Mu Ling Lan shouted in surprise.

Ma Hong Yun took a step back: “Are you also here to capture me?”

Zhao Lian Yun tried her best to get up, as she stood shakily.

She looked at Ma Hong Yun, her throat was moving but no voice came out. As the price for using love Gu earlier, she had been using Gu worms to speak, but inside Reverse Flow River, no Gu worms could be used.

At this moment, Zhao Lian Yun finally saw the lover that she had been thinking of for so long.

She was extremely agitated, she took a step forward.

But at the next moment, she hesitated.

How did she look like now? She was clear in her heart.

She was no longer young, she was an elderly woman. Her hair was white, her face had deep wrinkles, and she was dry like a twig.

In this appearance, could Ma Hong Yun recognize her?

Could she meet her lover in this appearance, could she bear to let him see her like this?

Zhao Lian Yun lost all of her courage.

She lowered her head, she did not dare to look at Ma Hong Yun's eyes.

Zhao Lian Yun was hesitant, but she suddenly heard Ma Hong Yun call out: "You, you are Lady Xiao Yun?"

Zhao Lian Yun's body shook.

She raised her head, only to see that Ma Hong Yun had thrown away the fruit as he ran towards her.

"Lady Xiao Yun, Lady Xiao Yun! I miss you so much!" Ma Hong Yun shouted loudly.

Mu Ling Lan saw this and felt a lot of emotions, he explained: "Fairy Lian Yun became like this because she rushed here from Central Continent to save you."

"Lady Xiao Yun!" Ma Hong Yun grabbed Zhao Lian Yun's hands as he stood before her.

He was also unable to speak, his words were choked in his throat.

At this moment, Zhao Lian Yun felt: This was truly immense bliss. All of her sacrifices were worth it!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1278: Dog Tail Life Extending Ferret

Boom!

A loud sound was heard in the fate reversing refinement sub formation.

Flood Extremity was no longer surprised, after taking a glance, he looked away.

During this period, the Gu formation's pillar of light had shrunken by fifty percent.

"This Gu formation is quite interesting." Right at this time, a voice entered Flood Extremity's ears.

"Who is it?!" Flood Extremity was shocked, his Gu Immortal aura burst out as he prepared to use his powerful methods.

“Little one, don’t be afraid, and don’t make a move.” The voice said again.

At this moment, Flood Extremity could not move.

He felt like he was in a frozen river.

This person was powerful beyond imagination. He was a rank seven Gu Immortal, one of Longevity Heaven’s Eight Extremities, but he could not react before he was suppressed completely!

“You are the descendant of master, as long as you do not attack me, I will not eat you. Hehehe.” The voice said again.

Next, Flood Extremity saw a huge, hill-like beast revealing its figure in front of him.

This was a four legged beast with purple fur.

It looked like a ferret.

It was covered in shiny purple fur, its eyes were shining with a purple crystal-like color.

The most eye catching thing was its tail.

This was not a ferret tail, but a dog tail.

A giant ferret with a dog tail?

Flood Extremity was stunned, before he thought of an existence.

Indeed, at the next moment, South Desolation Immortal’s letter came from an information path Gu worm in his immortal aperture — he could not leave now, this giant beast was sent here to help, it would deal with any enemy who dares to obstruct Longevity Heaven!

“You, you are the dog tail life extending ferret? Ancestor Giant Sun’s steed?” Flood Extremity stammered.

The giant beast nodded before opening its mouth, speaking: “Stop calling me a steed, I have my own name too. I am Mao Li Qiu, you can call me Grandpa Mao.”

“Mao, Grandpa Mao!” At the other end, Black Extremity was also tongue-tied, he was still in great shock.

“Okay, forget about this Gu formation. Let’s go to Reverse Flow River and retrieve Ma Hong Yun and that love Gu!” The dog tail life extending ferret, Mao Li Qiu, slashed with its claws.

Intense winds blew, countless Gu worm auras were exposed, forming an immortal killer move.

The fate reversing refinement sub formation that Black Extremity had created with much difficulty broke apart, turning into rubble.

“This?!” Black Extremity’s eyes almost popped out.

“Stop stammering, is it very fun to disrupt my sleep? Quickly finish this business, your Grandpa Mao has to go back to sleep!”

The giant ferret, Mao Li Qiu, said this as it breathed out deeply.

This breath flew rapidly, tying up Flood Extremity and Black Extremity.

The giant ferret jumped and its huge body flew into the sky.

Beside it, Black Extremity and Flood Extremity were pulled along by the special breath, going towards Reverse Flow River.

“What is going on?” The sudden change in Reverse Flow River affected all of the Gu Immortals in it.

After an intense change, the entirety of Reverse Flow River calmed down, the river water became smooth flowing and had small ripples in it.

“Reverse Flow River went back to normal?” Fang Yuan’s eyes shone brightly, he felt the pressure intensifying in the river.

There was a large amount of junk unable to move on their own, they were washed down by Reverse Flow River.

Seeing this, at once, many Gu Immortals chose to go downstream and leave Reverse Flow River by getting to the end.

This was the only way to get out of Reverse Flow River.

“The situation is not looking good.” Fang Yuan had not found Ying Wu Xie and gang, he continued moving forward.

In the sky, Bi Chen Tian and the other Central Continent Gu Immortals were looking down at Reverse Flow River.

These people were originally trying to swim forward, but Reverse Flow River kept returning to normal as the sub formation was destroyed.

Bi Chen Tian saw that this was not going well, he could continue, but the other Gu Immortals could not, they went downstream and left Reverse Flow River, flying towards the sky after they got out.

But this way, they became outsiders, any methods used on Reverse Flow River would be reflected back at them.

Bi Chen Tian soon found Fang Yuan, who was inside Reverse Flow River.

“Our fight can be disregarded, as long as you hand over affection Immortal Gu.” Bi Chen Tian spoke to Fang Yuan.

“This is the rank seven Gu Immortal who could fight evenly with Lord Bi Chen Tian? How did he cultivate?” The other Central Continent Gu Immortals looked at Fang Yuan with shock and curiosity.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, he ignored Bi Chen Tian.

One of the Central Continent Gu Immortals flew into a rage: “Such audacity! You dare to disrespect Lord Bi Chen Tian!”

Bi Chen Tian snorted coldly: “You think I can do nothing to you if you hide inside the river?”

“Before I get washed away, you should worry about yourselves. This is not Central Continent.” Fang Yuan replied fearlessly.

Bi Chen Tian’s key concern was pointed out, his face turned cold as he ignored Fang Yuan, he started to move in the upstream direction.

Fang Yuan was a small matter. What was important was Zhao Lian Yun and Ma Hong Yun.

Because the dog tail life extending ferret destroyed the sub formation, the complex situation at the surface of the river became easily observable now.

The junk was all swept away, only some Gu Immortals were left in the river.

Mu Ling Lan, Zhao Lian Yun, and Ma Hong Yun were at the front.

The second group were Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Purple Mountain True Monarch, and Lady Wan Shou.

The third group was rank eight Gu Immortal Wei Ling Yang, as well as some other Central Continent Gu Immortals.

The fourth group was Ying Wu Xie and gang, as well as some Snowy Mountain peak lords.

And the fifth group was Fang Yuan alone. When he was swept into Reverse Flow River, he was too far from Snowy Mountain blessed land, thus, he had fallen to the back of the river, even though he tried to swim upstream, the others were also working hard.

Honestly speaking, the situation was quite interesting.

“Quick, swim forward!” Mu Ling Lan looked at Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Purple Mountain True Monarch who were close behind, he spoke anxiously.

The floating mound earlier was already swept away, Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun had to swim forward to avoid getting captured by Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

The second group of Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Purple Mountain True Monarch were chasing after Ma Hong Yun to capture him.

The third group including Wei Ling Yang also did not want to give up. As long as they stalled Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Purple Mountain True Monarch, Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun would have the chance to go downstream and the crisis would be resolved.

Ying Wu Xie and the Snowy Mountain demonic path Gu Immortals also had the same idea as Wei Ling Yang, they were at the back but there was still hope.

“Quickly look, to the back!” Hei Lou Lan suddenly alerted.

Ying Wu Xie turned back and looked, his heart jumped: “He actually chased us to this place!”

This river was calm now, there was no junk left, everyone’s field of vision was clear, thus Ying Wu Xie easily saw Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan still did not know about Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Even though he could see Old Ancestor Xue Hu at this position.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was a miniman, he was the size of a thumb and was sitting on Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s shoulder, it was hard to see him clearly.

Fang Yuan had no idea what happened in Snowy Mountain blessed land. Even though he met Bi Chen Tian, he had only understood that a battle of rank eights happened here, as for who had the advantage, would Bi Chen Tian tell him?

Thus, Fang Yuan had always thought that killing Ying Wu Xie and gang would resolve his crisis regarding Shadow Sect.

Therefore, after seeing Ying Wu Xie, his eyes shone as he swam even more quickly towards Ying Wu Xie.

“He is our enemy?” A snowy mountain peak lord sneered at Fang Yuan: “Let’s work together and kill him! Outside, the situation is complex with countless Gu Immortal methods available. But here, he is all alone, he is just one person!”

Once he said that, the Gu Immortals were ready to attack.

Ying Wu Xie was moved too.

If they could kill Fang Yuan now, and obtain his sovereign immortal body, it would be a great opportunity.

“However... the sovereign immortal body is not easy to deal with. I should meet up with Lord Purple first. Our main body is still in the dream realm after all!” Ying Wu Xie thought about it and decided to play safe.

“Come with us, we will meet up with Ancestor Xue Hu. He is not important, our biggest enemy is Central Continent.” Ying Wu Xie did not expose Fang Yuan’s foundation, he successfully diverted the attention of the Snowy Mountain Gu Immortals.

“That’s right, let’s meet with old ancestor!” Snowy Mountain’s peak lords could not go downstream now.

Because a rank eight Central Continent Gu Immortal was in the sky. Once they left Reverse Flow River, they would need to face off against a rank eight Gu Immortal, they had to stay in Reverse Flow River for now.

But soon, they realized that it was not easy to stay in Reverse Flow River.

In this special environment, if they could not move forward, the river would push them backwards.

In the past, Ren Zu had failed in Reverse Flow River, he had failed at the final step before success.

Nobody thought that they could achieve what Ren Zu did. But in this situation, every wave of Gu Immortals had their own reasons to remain in Reverse Flow River!

“Ma Hong Yun... you cannot escape.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu had a cold gaze as Lady Wan Shou smiled continuously.

“Quick, quick. They are catching up.” Mu Ling Lan and Ma Hong Yun dragged Zhao Lian Yun along from either side.

“Fairy Lian Yun, hang on, we are going to reach soon!” Wei Ling Yang shouted.

Ying Wu Xie was behind them, waiting to strike. He felt a headache regarding Fang Yuan at the back, he needed to move forward more quickly, to fight for more time later.

“Ying Wu Xie!” Fang Yuan was shortening his distance with Ying Wu Xie.

Soon, the first person to be unable to persevere appeared.

It was one of Snowy Mountain’s peak lords.

He had used up all his stamina, he floated backwards with a pale expression.

Fang Yuan avoided him.

Now was not the time for that, if he stopped for a moment, he would be pushed backwards as well, even if he killed the enemy, his progress would be greatly affected.

“Be careful!” In the sky, Bi Chen Tian shouted.

“I finally caught up. You little rats.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu was already right behind Zhao Lian Yun’s group.

Zhao Lian Yun knew that she had no strength left, if this continued, she would only burden Ma Hong Yun.

She gave Ma Hong Yun one last affectionate look, she suddenly mustered her strength and broke free from his grasp, swimming towards Old Ancestor Xue Hu instead.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1279: Fervently Approaching Death!

“Mu Ling Lan!” Behind Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Wei Ling Yang shouted angrily.

Mu Ling Lan was already resolved, he gritted his teeth, moving even more quickly than Zhao Lian Yun, he pushed the weak Zhao Lian Yun into Ma Hong Yun’s arms.

“You have to live well!”

Saying this, he turned around and grabbed Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s waist.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu struggled intensely, but he still stop moving forward and was pushed away by the river.

The danger for Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun was averted.

“Quick, quickly go!” Ma Hong Yun held onto Zhao Lian Yun as his heart beat rapidly.

“Meddlesome fool!” Old Ancestor Xue Hu hated Mu Ling Lan to the core, he kicked Mu Ling Lan’s chest several times in the water.

His dao marks far surpassed Mu Ling Lan’s.

Mu Ling Lan was rank seven, how could he possible match him?

Soon, his bones were broken, he was spitting out blood, dying the water red.

More than ten breaths of time later, Mu Ling Lan could not take it anymore, he stopped breathing as he lost his life.

Seeing that their companion had died like this, the Central Continent Gu Immortals were all anguished.

“Mu Ling Lan, Central Continent will remember your sacrifice, Heavenly Court will remember it!” Wei Ling Yang called out, charging at Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was stalled by Mu Ling Lan, he had fallen behind to the third group.

He was immediately attacked by the furious and upset Central Continent Gu Immortals.

“Xue Hu!” Lady Wan Shou was worried about her husband, she quickly went to help him.

Both sides fought for a while, they were pushed backwards and quickly encountered Ying Wu Xie and the others, who were the fourth group.

As a result, a large number of Gu Immortals were fighting in this river, it was a chaotic scene.

Bi Chen Tian and the rest were watching in shock.

Grand Gu Immortals had lost their sagely demeanor, they were fighting in the water like brutish mortals.

But it was too late for Bi Chen Tian to interfere now.

Soon, blood dyed the surroundings as many Gu Immortal corpses flowed down the river.

“Ying Wu Xie!” Fang Yuan joined the group, he had finally arrived.

“Where is our lord?” Ying Wu Xie finally found Old Ancestor Xue Hu amidst the chaos, he asked this loudly.

“Upstream!” Old Ancestor Xue Hu answered.

It turned out that while Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Mu Ling Lan were fighting, Purple Mountain True Monarch had swam upstream to capture Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun.

Precisely because of this, Old Ancestor Xue Hu could fight with the Central Continent Gu Immortals, this was his plan to obstruct the enemies.

Ying Wu Xie got his answer and quickly swam with Hei Lou Lan and the rest, away from the fighting as he went towards Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Fang Yuan called out: “Ying Wu Xie, where are you going?”

Ying Wu Xie sighed, saying: “Tai Bai Yun Sheng.”

“All of you leave first!” Tai Bai Yun Sheng shouted, he charged at Fang Yuan with a resolute expression of someone disregarding death.

Fang Yuan was obstructed.

Ying Wu Xie, Hei Lou Lan, and Bai Ning Bing managed to escape.

Bam bam bam!

Fang Yuan’s attacks were powerful, Tai Bai Yun Sheng soon had broken bones and fractures.

But Tai Bai Yun Sheng was resolved, he stalled Fang Yuan and grabbed onto him, he even used his teeth to bite and head to slam.

Fang Yuan could not break free for a period of time.

In this urgent situation, he exclaimed: “Old Bai, do you still remember Imperial Court blessed land?”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was stunned, he exposed a flaw.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with a ruthless light, his fingers pierced into Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s eyes without mercy.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng was heavily injured, blood was pouring out of his eyes.

Fang Yuan used this chance to unleash the finishing blow as Tai Bai Yun Sheng stopped moving entirely.

He was dead.

“Hmph!” Fang Yuan shrugged off Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s corpse as he continued to swim, chasing after Ying Wu Xie.

During this period, the groups with Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Wei Ling Yang were engaged in fierce battle, they had finally separated as both sides suffered great losses.

Bi Chen Tian looked at Reverse Flow River from above, he could see the situation clearly.

Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun were still at the lead.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was at the second position.

Ying Wu Xie and the other two were the third.

Fang Yuan was fourth.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Lady Wan Shou were the fifth.

Wei Ling Yang and the other Central Continent Gu Immortals were sixth.

Bi Chen Tian was anxious, the Central Continent immortals were in an extremely disadvantageous position.

Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun were in front, but there was no longer anyone protecting them.

The second placed Purple Mountain True Monarch was an enemy, while Ying Wu Xie and gang were vicious members of Shadow Sect. The fifth placed Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Lady Wan Shou were also out of the question.

Without any choice, Bi Chen Tian could only approach Fang Yuan.

“You just need to protect the lives of those two in front, you will obtain the friendship of Central Continent and Heavenly Court!!”

“You can request anything, do you want Immortal Gu or cultivation resources, will my great Central Continent not be able to satisfy you?”

“As long as you help to protect Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun!”

“This again...” Fang Yuan heard this and sighed internally.

He thought of Imperial Court blessed land.

Back then, he had to make a choice too. If he chose to save Ma Hong Yun, it would have been extremely profitable for him!

And now, the situation was quite similar to back then in Imperial Court blessed land.

But Fang Yuan remained silent, he only continued swimming. He was bent on eliminating Ying Wu Xie and gang now, forget about Ma Hong Yun, he could bugger off.

But what followed was a long stalemate.

The further one traveled up Reverse Flow River, the harder it was to keep going.

Stamina and dao marks were secondary, it was a test of one’s will.

“Lady Xiao Yun, we need to persevere, I believe that there will be a chance!” Ma Hong Yun continued to speak, encouraging Zhao Lian Yun.

The river water was icy cold, but inside Ma Hong Yun’s embrace, Zhao Lian Yun felt immeasurable warmth.

This warmth was a huge driving force for her, she gritted her teeth and persevered on.

Behind them was Purple Mountain True Monarch.

“Ma Hong Yun! Zhao Lian Yun! Hehe! As long as I catch you, I will be able to restrain Old Ancestor Xue Hu. At that point, I will get him to deal with Southern Border’s super dream realm.” Purple Mountain True Monarch was planning deeply.

“Protect Lord Purple!” Ying Wu Xie was worried.

“Dear, dear, wake up!” Something happened to Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s group.

Lady Wan Shou had fainted. She was heavily injured in the battle, after enduring and persisting for a while, she fainted.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was flustered.

He gritted his teeth and stopped swimming, he carried Lady Wan Shou as Reverse Flow River swept them away.

Wei Ling Yang allowed him to leave, they wanted to have one less competitor.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu quickly left Reverse Flow River, he used his Gu Immortal methods to stabilize Lady Wan Shou’s condition.

Bi Chen Tian was nervous, he could not deal with Old Ancestor Xue Hu alone. The Gu Immortals around him, without any Immortal Gu Houses, could not interfere in a rank eight fight!

“I will kill you first!” Old Ancestor Xue Hu carefully placed the unconscious Lady Wan Shou in his immortal aperture.

Next, he charged at Bi Chen Tian.

He was the number one person in Northern Plains’ demonic path, he was a ruthless person, how could he give up this chance to deal with these weakened opponents?

“It’s only death at worst.” Bi Chen Tian was resolved to die, he neither evaded nor dodged.

But right when the two rank eights were about to fight, they felt an intensely strong aura.

The hill-like dog tailed purple ferret carried Flood Extremity and Black Extremity, as they arrived at the bank of Reverse Flow River.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1280: Perseverance

Outside Reverse Flow River.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu wanted to kill Bi Chen Tian, but at this moment, the dog tail life extending ferret, Mao Li Qiu, appeared.

“Why is this ferret here? Doesn’t it stay inside its cave all the time?” Old Ancestor Xue Hu was surprised.

This ferret had a huge origin, it was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s steed. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had subdued it in his later years, his motive was clearly to find a lifespan extension method.

The dog tail life extending ferret’s dao marks were very numerous and mystical.

As it grew older, the dog tail would shrink as its lifespan decreased. When its lifespan nears its end, the tail would vanish.

Thus, whenever it sensed that its life was ending, it would devour an immemorial desolate beast dog. After consuming it, the dog tail life extending ferret would gain the lifespan of this immemorial desolate beast dog, its tail would grow out and it would continue living.

Precisely so, even after Giant Sun Immortal Venerable died, the dog tail life extending ferret still lived until now.

This giant ferret was enlightened by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, it gained intelligence and learned to use Gu worms and even immortal killer moves.

It was an immemorial desolate beast to begin with, now that it had wisdom and could use Immortal Gu and other methods, it had unfathomably deep strength.

Even Old Ancestor Xue Hu was wary of it.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu had wanted to deal with Bi Chen Tian, but with the dog tail life extending ferret’s appearance, he discarded this plan.

“To think that Mao Li Qiu would save me!” Bi Chen Tian let out a breath of air, he relaxed slightly.

He also knew about the dog tail life extending ferret.

Immemorial desolate beasts of this level were too famous. It was like Central Continent’s Huo Kong, or that Evil Dragon Di Zang Sheng, they were unique existences, their battle strength was at the peak of rank eight!

Old Ancestor Xue Hu quickly focused his gaze on the two Longevity Heaven Gu Immortals accompanying the dog tail life extending ferret.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s gaze focused on Black Extremity.

He chuckled coldly: “As expected, Sun Ming Lu, you are a member of Longevity Heaven! To think that Longevity Heaven had targeted me since so long ago.”

He had already made a guess earlier, now that he saw Black Extremity, it was confirmed.

Black Extremity greeted Old Ancestor Xue Hu respectfully: “Old Ancestor Xue Hu, we meet again. I am one of Longevity Heaven’s Eight Extremities, Black Extremity, Sun Ming Lu is simply a name I use when I travel in Northern Plains.”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu chuckled coldly again, but he did not attack.

Because Black Extremity was beside the dog tail life extending ferret.

It was not like Old Ancestor Xue Hu feared Mao Li Qiu, but he knew that the crux of this issue was not the three of them, it was the events in Reverse Flow River.

With the situation in Reverse Flow River unconfirmed, it was not time to fight, a third party would benefit if he did.

After Black Extremity and Old Ancestor Xue Hu exchanged greetings, their gazes became fixed on Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun.

“Grandpa Mao, the two at the front are our targets!” Black Extremity reminded the dog tail life extending ferret.

Bi Chen Tian frowned slightly.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s cold laughter became even colder.

But Mao Li Qiu nonchalantly curled its lips, its beast face made a very human-like expression: “No rush! Wait for them to decide a victor. We are outside Reverse Flow River, we can use Gu worms but we cannot affect the river itself. Any method used on Reverse Flow River will be reflected back upon us, why would I waste my effort? Reverse Flow River would only lose some water when it reflects an attack, this river is huge, how long would it take to dry out this river? I would not do something so time consuming and pointless!”

Saying this, it paused before saying: “Don’t worry, these people can’t continue for long. The further they swim, the more it tests their will. Hehe, they are swimming in Reverse Flow River, any thoughts of persevering in this river would be reversed by the river, any sort of determination would waver, they would eventually be washed away by the river.”

The three rank eight existences were wary of each other, they did not fight.

Outside the river, there was a deadlock, the Gu Immortals thus looked towards Reverse Flow River.

Inside the river.

Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun were still at the lead.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was second, he was inching closer to them.

Ying Wu Xie, Bai Ning Bing, and Hei Lou Lan were third.

Next was Fang Yuan.

The fifth position was originally Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Lady Wan Shou, but earlier, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had given up the contest for the sake of his unconscious wife, he went outside the river.

Thus, the fifth position went to Heavenly Court's rank eight rule path Gu Immortal Wei Ling Yang, and several Central Continent Gu Immortals.

Purple Mountain True Monarch moved with all four limbs, flapping his thin wings at times.

Ma and Zhao were already close by.

“I need to persevere and capture these two, I will be able to control Old Ancestor Xue Hu and deal with Central Continent!”

Purple Mountain True Monarch was filled with determination.

Reverse Flow River's water continued to assault the will in his mind.

He shrugged his head, trying to get rid of his hesitation.

“Ninety thousand years ago, heaven's will attacked. I deduced with all my effort and found a trace of hope for survival. By sealing myself, I turned into a purple-gold rock. But to think that heaven's will would still harm me and I would go into a crazy state at times.”

“These last hundred thousand years, I woke up many times and experienced great danger, I only escaped from danger and survived with Shadow Sect's help.”

“Right now, my main body refined sovereign immortal aperture, but it was stolen from us.”

“My main body is stuck in the dream realm, being in great danger.”

“The great Shadow Sect is just a shadow of its past, I cannot fail in this situation, I need to persevere, I need to capture Zhao and Ma.”

“I am about to succeed!”

Purple Mountain True Monarch's eyes were shining, he was extremely close to the two.

“Oh no, Purple Mountain True Monarch is about to reach Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun!” The Central Continent Gu Immortals were shocked.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Ying Wu Xie had expressions filled with joy.

“What do we do?” Flood Extremity shouted.

“Nothing!” Mao Li Qiu rolled its eyes: “Unless they come out.”

“Ah——!” But at this moment, Purple Mountain True Monarch suddenly grabbed his head as he screamed, he struggled intensely as he showed intense pain on his face.

“What is going on?”

“What happened?”

The immortals were perplexed.

“At this very moment, damn it!” Ying Wu Xie internally cursed heaven’s will.

At the crucial moment, Purple Mountain True Monarch fell into madness, he went downstream with the currents.

Thankfully, Ying Wu Xie and gang were following Purple Mountain True Monarch as insurance if he went crazy, he quickly grabbed Purple Mountain True Monarch as the four swam upstream together.

Thus, Ma and Zhao escaped from the dangerous situation, they were still in first place.

Purple Mountain True Monarch had fallen behind, becoming second place with Ying Wu Xie and gang.

Third was Fang Yuan.

And fourth was Wei Ling Yang and his Central Continent Gu Immortals.

“Lord Wei Ling Yang, it all depends on you now!” Bi Chen Tian was overjoyed.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals also started cheering.

It was good news to Central Continent that something happened to Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Especially those Gu Immortals who did not know Fang Yuan, they felt that right now, only Central Continent’s rank eight Wei Ling Yang was left, even though he was in last place, he could still win!

Wei Ling Yang was gritting his teeth.

The difficulty of swimming was rising, and more importantly, the Reverse Flow River was affecting his every thought.

Any thoughts of persevering and swimming ahead would be obstructed by Reverse Flow River.

Many thoughts were washed away, but there was one thought that was rooted in Wei Ling Yang’s mind!

“I need to persevere!”

“I am the only hope left in Central Continent, if we capture Ma Hong Yun and save Zhao Lian Yun, we will be able to return victorious.”

“I cannot fail!”

“Central Continent’s pride, Heavenly Court’s honor, they cannot be lost because of me!!”

Wei Ling Yang swam ahead stably without any hesitation.

The Gu Immortals around him also followed.

These Gu Immortals formed the biggest force in Reverse Flow River, it was eye-catching.

Even the dog tail life extending ferret, Mao Li Qiu, said: “Oh? It seems that Central Continent has a huge advantage. Hmph, Heavenly Court still likes meddling so much, this will not do, Ma Hong Yun is a Northern Plainsman!”

Bi Chen Tian frowned.

He looked at Mao Li Qiu, and Old Ancestor Xue Hu whose face was cold as ice, he was worried: “Even if Wei Ling Yang defeats the competitors and obtains Ma and Zhao, what will happen after he leaves Reverse Flow River?”

Bi Chen Tian thought from all angles, he could not find a way to escape, he could only continue watching.

Time passed by the seconds and minutes.

The situation was still the same in Reverse Flow River.

Ma and Zhao were first.

Ying Wu Xie and gang were second.

Fang Yuan was third.

And Wei Ling Yang and the other Central Continent Gu Immortals were fourth.

The positions did not change, but their mutual distances had evidently shrunk.

“Oh? These people have all lasted until now, strange, why are there so many outstanding people here?” The dog tail life extending ferret, Mao Li Qiu, quipped: “As expected, the great era is coming, in an era which would create a venerable, a great number of geniuses and talented individuals would emerge like a tide.”

Bi Chen Tian’s eyes were shining too.

He was assessing the Central Continent Gu Immortals, and memorizing their faces.

These people had firm determination, if they grew without any accidents, they surely would be important pillars of each sect!

“Persevere! The mission of protecting Fairy Lian Yun is in my hands, I cannot give up!” Bu Zhen Zi frowned.

“Just like refining Gu, no matter how tough it is, or how unpredictable the results, as long as I persevere, I will be rewarded.” Yu Yi Ye Zi encouraged himself.

Shi Zheng Yi had an angry expression: “Lord Mu Ling Lan was sacrificed to protect Fairy Lian Yun, how can I back down? Work harder! Shi Zheng Yi! For the sake of love and justice, you cannot back down!!”

Fang Yuan was expressionless, he stared ahead at Ying Wu Xie: “Such a close relationship, that rank eight miniman Gu Immortal who went crazy must be a member of Shadow Sect. I must kill him, I must eliminate them all! Inside Reverse Flow River, it is the best opportunity for me to eliminate these threats once and for all!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1281: Washed Away

Reverse Flow River flowed silently.

The further they went ahead, the calmer the river surface.

However, to the swimmers, Reverse Flow River was like a torrential tide, it defied all thoughts of traveling ahead.

Destruction of the body was not scary, destruction of thoughts and the mind was scary.

In the past, even Ren Zu failed in Reverse Flow River. These Gu Immortals were doing the same thing as Ren Zu now.

“Damn it, I cannot continue anymore!” At the next moment, Yu Yi Ye Zi reached his limits, he could not continue anymore, he was washed away by the tides.

And the second Central Continent Gu Immortal, followed by the third.

Shi Zheng Yi gave it his all, but he failed and was washed away by Reverse Flow River.

Bu Zhen Zi was unwilling, but he could only float away.

Bi Chen Tian and the rest were showing ugly expressions as each Central Continent Gu Immortal got eliminated.

Not long after, out of the Central Continent Gu Immortals, only rank eight Wei Ling Yang was left.

Being able to reach rank eight, he truly had shocking willpower!

Wei Ling Yang showed the foundation of a rank eight great expert.

As for those Gu Immortals who were washed away, they were all gathered by Bi Chen Tian and went back to the group, they were not obstructed by Old Ancestor Xue Hu, or the dog tail life extending ferret Mao Li Qiu.

“Why is it that our Gu Immortals were all swept away, but these random people are still inside the river?” Some Central Continent Gu Immortals were very unhappy towards Ying Wu Xie’s gang and Fang Yuan.

“At merely rank six, their willpower is truly shocking. But we were all defeated, they will fail soon.” A Central Continent Gu Immortal who was just swept out of the river said.

But they did not managed to see Fang Yuan or Ying Wu Xie fail, before a situation occurred around Ma Hong Yun.

Ma Hong Yun, who was swimming forward, choked on the river water as he was nearly swept away.

“Be careful!” Bi Chen Tian couldn’t help but call out.

Ying Wu Xie was overjoyed, but soon, Ma Hong Yun continued to swim forward, moving his arms.

It was just a scare.

“It’s that girl, hehe, her willpower is shocking too.” Mao Li Qiu could see the subtle details.

At the crucial moment, Zhao Lian Yun had helped Ma Hong Yun and stabilized his condition.

The truth was, after Reverse Flow River went back to normal, the river surface became smooth, it did not challenge one’s physical stamina as much. Especially towards the upstream, the river became more shallow, but its reflective power against willpower and mental energy became stronger.

“Hong Yun, we cannot be separated anymore.”

“Do you know, in order to be with you again, how much have I experienced, how much hardship have I gone through, and how much I have lost?”

Zhao Lian Yun had lost her voice and could not speak, but at this moment, she had no such energy anyway.

Her aged body was unleashing strength that even Zhao Lian Yun could not believe she had.

Zhao Lian Yun had forgotten about her stamina and age, she was purely wanting to be together with Ma Hong Yun.

Even if they were swimming for their lives, and could not even look at each other.

Even if she could not speak, and danger was right behind them.

“No matter how bad the situation is, I need to persevere. Every minute and second that I spend with him, fighting alongside him, regardless of the situation, I have never been so blissful!”

Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun continued moving forward, even though they were slow, the situation was stabilizing.

It was just a scare.

Bi Chen Tian and the other Central Continent Gu Immortals, and even Flood Extremity and Black Extremity, were having their hearts shake from the shock.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu snorted coldly, he did not conceal his disappointment.

The immortals watched Reverse Flow River, every action caused deep emotions to form in their hearts.

Even though some of them were rank eight existences, and even though the rank six and seven Gu Immortals were experts among those with the same cultivation level, elites of their regions.

“Even my immortal zombie body is feeling tired?” Ying Wu Xie smiled bitterly.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was on his head, pulling Ying Wu Xie’s hair, he was causing a din as he cried or laughed at times.

“I am just a split soul of the main body, I have not lived for a long time.”

“But since coming to life, I knew that I had my own responsibilities!”

“Right now, Lord Purple is crazy, I cannot ignore him, he might choke to death in the river, I am Shadow Sect’s only hope.”

“Even if I die from exhaustion here, I cannot give up. Only by capturing Zhao Lian Yun and Ma Hong Yun can I stall for time until Lord Purple awakens again!”

His duty was making Ying Wu Xie persevere.

Bai Ning Bing gritted her teeth, her chest was pumping up and down.

“Hehehe,” she even laughed lightly, her face was distorted, excitement was in her eyes.

“Exciting!”

“This is truly exciting!”

“In Reverse Flow River, I have experienced a new type of excitement never felt before, this is the road that Ren Zu once walked on!”

“Interesting, this is simply too interesting!!”

“Even if I fail, this trip was worth it. Even if I die, this life was worth it!”

Hei Lou Lan was filled with anger.

“How can I stop here?”

“Mother, I have not avenged you yet!”

“I have not killed that man with my own hands yet!”

“Argh!”

“I need to persevere...”

Hei Lou Lan was trembling, she was showing indomitable willpower.

However, as time passed, some people could not persevere.

“Will my excitement end here?”

“I... have not... taken revenge yet...”

Bai Ning Bing and Hei Lou Lan were out of energy, they were washed away.

But their safety was ensured, Old Ancestor Xue Hu was already waiting for them outside.

This way, there were only six people left in Reverse Flow River.

Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun were still at first place.

Ying Wu Xie and the crazy Purple Mountain True Monarch were second.

Fang Yuan was third.

Wei Ling Yang was fourth.

“There is still hope!” Right now, Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s hopes were all on Ying

Wu Xie.

As long as Ying Wu Xie captured Ma and Zhao, Old Ancestor Xue Hu's side would gain the initiative, they would be able to threaten Bi Chen Tian and the others, as well as Longevity Heaven's dog tail life extending ferret.

But if Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun were swept away, then everyone would have a chance, a huge battle would occur, it was unclear who would win. It would depend on their strength and also luck.

"Lord Wei Ling Yang, it will depend on you now." Bi Chen Tian thought, he clenched his fists that were full of sweat.

The dog tail life extending ferret was laughing.

Its eyes were staring at the river, thinking of something.

"Ah! The glory of Heavenly Court..." A moment later, Wei Ling Yang sighed out loud as he reached his limits, despite his unwillingness, he was washed away by Reverse Flow River.

Central Continent's Gu Immortals were shocked, they were completely stunned.

Someone screamed in disbelief: "How can this be? Lord Wei Ling Yang is a rank eight Gu Immortal, how could he lose to these people?"

"Swimming in Reverse Flow River has nothing to do with cultivation level, it depends on your willpower." Someone explained.

Central Continent's Gu Immortals were silent, did this mean that the great rank eight Central Continent Gu Immortal, Wei Ling Yang's willpower, was inferior to these people?

Bi Chen Tian slowly spoke: "Don't forget, Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun had rested on the floating mound earlier, according to the information, they even had fruits to eat, when Reverse Flow River engulfed everything, they were at the front, the Gu Immortals behind them also went through many struggles, their stamina and willpower were greatly expended."

The Central Continent Gu Immortals finally realized.

"That's true."

"Even though Lord Wei Ling Yang lost, if they had the same starting point, he would definitely be the victor!"

Because of Bi Chen Tian's words, the Central Continent Gu Immortals' morale stabilized.

Bi Chen Tian was expressionless, his mood was heavy.

"What do we do now?" Bi Chen Tian was hesitant.

The Central Continent group had a huge disadvantage.

The wise choice was to retreat and preserve their strength. They could go to black heaven and try to meet with Myriad Tidal Dragon, using the Immortal Gu House to see if they could turn this around.

There was a third option, it was to stay here and contest for Ma and Zhao with Old Ancestor Xue Hu and the dog tail life extending ferret.

“We should discuss this after Wei Ling Yang returns.” This was a huge matter, Bi Chen Tian could not make the decision, he was not the leader, Wei Ling Yang was.

But while they were waiting, another change occurred in Reverse Flow River.

“I... will not give in!” Ying Wu Xie bellowed as he raised his head, but Reverse Flow River engulfed him as he was swept away.

“Is it finally ending! Ying Wu Xie, die!!” Fang Yuan screamed internally, he was waiting for this moment all along.

He collided heavily with Ying Wu Xie.

Both sides were fighting in the water, they stopped advancing.

This way, Fang Yuan and Ying Wu Xie, as well as Purple Mountain True Monarch, could not help but be washed downstream by Reverse Flow River.

Sovereign immortal body versus the strength path immortal zombie.

Undeniably, Ying Wu Xie was at a disadvantage, he was quickly beaten until he suffered bone fractures by Fang Yuan’s punches and kicks.

But the immortal zombie body was dead to begin with, its only weakness was the brain. Even the heart was not a weakness.

Fang Yuan had become an immortal zombie for some time, he naturally knew this, but Ying Wu Xie was defending his head, he disregarded the rest of his body and only protected his skull.

Undeniably, this was a wise decision.

Once he stalled for time and Fang Yuan was swept out of Reverse Flow River, Ying Wu Xie would counterattack.

Don’t forget, Hei Lou Lan, Bai Ning Bing, and Old Ancestor Xue Hu were already outside the river.

Among everyone here, Fang Yuan was the only one who was truly alone.

He was racing against time!

Fang Yuan wanted to kill Ying Wu Xie and Purple Mountain True Monarch before they got out of Reverse Flow River.

While Ying Wu Xie was stalling for time, trying to survive.

Fang Yuan was not able to do anything to Ying Wu Xie at the moment.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1282: Surpassing Ren Zu?

The most important reason was: Fighting in water greatly affected Fang Yuan’s ability to attack consecutively.

Because he needed to breathe outside the water at certain intervals.

In this aspect, Fang Yuan was inferior to the dead Mu Ling Lan. He was a water path Gu Immortal, he had special water path dao marks that allowed him to breathe underwater.

On the other hand, the immortal zombie did not need to breathe, as it was dead to begin with.

“Hmph!” Fang Yuan could not attack successfully, he changed his target towards Purple Mountain True Monarch, who was in Ying Wu Xie’s arms.

Ying Wu Xie was worried about Purple Mountain True Monarch’s safety, he wanted to try and save him.

But Fang Yuan changed his target again, poking at Ying Wu Xie’s eyes.

This was a vicious move.

As long as he succeeded, Fang Yuan would be able to stab into Ying Wu Xie’s brain and end his life for good.

Ying Wu Xie’s heart was jumping, it was too late to defend himself, he fell into despair.

However, a change occurred right at this moment.

Purple Mountain True Monarch suddenly stood up and charged at Fang Yuan’s face.

Fang Yuan had the initiative, he could easily defend himself. He grabbed Purple Mountain True Monarch and tried to squeeze his fist and kill Purple Mountain True Monarch.

But Purple Mountain True Monarch had unfathomable capabilities, and was a wisdom path Gu Immortal with deep wisdom path dao mark accumulation, Fang Yuan felt like he was grabbing an eel, it was so slippery, Purple Mountain True Monarch somehow managed to squeeze himself out of his fist.

Purple Mountain True Monarch escaped Fang Yuan’s demonic clutches, he moved agilely in the water, his wings gave him more mobility, Fang Yuan actually missed all of his attacks.

Next, Purple Mountain True Monarch flew to Ying Wu Xie and grabbed his shirt, swimming desperately and managing to get free from Fang Yuan.

Ying Wu Xie was shocked and overjoyed, seeing Purple Mountain True Monarch regain clarity in his eyes, he knew that at this crucial moment of life and death, Purple Mountain True Monarch had regained his senses!

“This is great!” Ying Wu Xie was overjoyed, with Purple Mountain True Monarch now clear-headed, they could capture Ma and Zhao again.

“Quickly leave!” Purple Mountain True Monarch carried Ying Wu Xie as they moved downstream, rapidly escaping.

He was tiny but he had great strength.

“Lord Purple!” Ying Wu Xie understood something immediately, as soon, Purple Mountain True Monarch fell into insanity once again.

“Oh!’ Ying Wu Xie sighed deeply, he knew why Purple Mountain True Monarch wanted to retreat, because his condition was not stable.

Because of Purple Mountain True Monarch, Fang Yuan could not eliminate Ying Wu Xie.

Furthermore, he was lagging behind.

He was far from Ma and Zhao.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu had an unhappy expression.

Because Ying Wu Xie and Purple Mountain True Monarch left, only three people were left in Reverse Flow River.

They were Ma Hong Yun, Zhao Lian Yun, and Fang Yuan.

“Who is this? He is a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, but he dares to foil my plan?” Old Ancestor Xue Hu had deep killing intent towards Fang Yuan.

Hei Lou Lan was already standing beside Old Ancestor Xue Hu, hearing Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s words, her heart jumped.

Fang Yuan clearly had deep enmity with Ying Wu Xie, she had to answer this question now.

Hei Lou Lan was a member of Shadow Sect, at this moment, she could not expose Fang Yuan’s true identity, but thankfully, he had another identity, so she said: “He is Liu Guan Yi.”

“Liu Guan Yi? The demonic path Gu Immortal who killed Ye Lui Qun Xing and cultivates ancient sword dragon transformation?” Old Ancestor Xue Hu was stunned before replying.

He knew about Liu Guan Yi.

Even though he was refining Gu in Snowy Mountain, he still paid attention to the situation in Northern Plains.

Because the rank eight Gu Immortals in Northern Plains were all obstacles for him in refining Fortune Rivalling Heaven. As for Liu Guan Yi, and Chu Du, Old Ancestor Xue Hu was not too concerned about them.

But to think that this insignificant character was actually foiling his plan at this moment.

“Hahaha, luck is truly on our side.” The dog tail life extending ferret laughed loudly, waves of noise billowed.

Bi Chen Tian and Wei Ling Yang had gathered together, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals waited solemnly. They had chosen to stay and wait for a chance.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Hei Lou Lan, and Bai Ning Bing stood together.

The three parties were all at the starting point, waiting for Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun to be swept away.

“Fairy Lian Yun, Ma Hong Yun, you can come out now, even if us Gu Immortals of Central Continent have to sacrifice our lives, we will defend you.” Wei Ling Yang called out.

“Laughable! You Central Continent fellows want to snatch them from me, Grandpa Mao?!” The dog tail life extending ferret, Mao Li Qiu, was furious and spoke in displeasure.

Black Extremity was worried that Mao Li Qiu’s scary appearance would frighten Ma Hong Yun, he quickly added: “Ma Hong Yun, you are acknowledged by fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu and have Giant Sun’s bloodline, you are a member of Longevity Heaven. Longevity Heaven is the origin of our bloodline, it is the grotto-heaven of Ancestor Giant Sun. We are here to bring you home.”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu snorted, pressuring Fang Yuan: “Liu Guan Yi, if you can capture Ma and Zhao, I will allow you to become the third peak lord of Snowy Mountain. I, Xue Hu, am one to hold my word, you can rest assured. If you succeed, I will back you up, your future cultivation journey will be smooth sailing.”

Hearing this, the other Gu Immortals started to look at Fang Yuan again.

Fang Yuan lost the chance to kill Ying Wu Xie.

There was no other way.

He had tried his best.

But the foundation of rank eight was immense, the advantage of the strength path immortal zombie body in Reverse Flow River and most importantly, Purple Mountain True Monarch’s moment of clarity, pushed him towards the abyss of failure.

“I failed again!”

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth.

The situation was horrible for him. Out of the three rank eight existences outside the river, he could only join Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

But Old Ancestor Xue Hu was with the members of Shadow Sect.

“If I leave Reverse Flow River, these three rank eights will attack me. My speed cannot match Hui Feng Zi, even with myriad self and familiar face, the hope of escaping from them is likely very slim.”

Fang Yuan was very clear on his current situation.

“However, if I can capture Ma and Zhao, I will have the best bargaining chips. Central Continent and Longevity Heaven will be willing to transact, not to mention Old Ancestor Xue Hu as well, by then, I could use them to help eliminate Shadow Sect!”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan stared at Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun.

He swam upstream, charging towards the two of them.

Ma and Zhao saw Fang Yuan’s movement, they were the only ones ahead of him now, his animosity was obvious.

Ma and Zhao could only grit their teeth and continue swimming.

“Persevere!”

“I have just escaped from Snowy Mountain, I cannot be captured again!”

“There is also Lady Xiao Yun, she became like this because of me, I need to save her!!”

“Thus, I need to persevere.”

“Ma Hong Yun, you can do it, work hard!”

Ma Hong Yun gritted his teeth, he desperately swam, even though he was very tired, he had strong driving force in his heart.

Fang Yuan’s speed was faster than Ma and Zhao.

But because he had fought with Ying Wu Xie earlier, he was pushed back by Reverse Flow River for some time.

Thus, Ma and Zhao were very safe, unless they could not hold on anymore.

As time passed, this mystical competition was reaching its end.

Outside the river, large numbers of Gu Immortals were observing the three people in Reverse Flow River.

“Hmm?” At this time, Zhao Lian Yun’s expression suddenly changed.

While swimming, her legs had touched the ground.

Next, she subconsciously stepped on the ground and stood up from Reverse Flow River, her head and shoulders was exposed above the water.

This change made both her and Ma Hong Yun extremely joyful.

“How could this happen?” Flood Extremity was extremely shocked.

The dog tail life extending ferret yawned: “Are you ignorant! Upstream in Reverse Flow River, it gets shallower and shallower, did you people not read <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>? Back then, Ren Zu wanted to walk out of Reverse Flow River, he failed at the last step.”

“So it is like this!” Mao Li Qiu spoke loudly, the Central Continent Gu Immortals finally realized it.

“Unknowingly, the two of them have already reached the end.”

“Look, they are only a hundred steps away from the shore.”

“Does this mean Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun will be able to break the record and achieve what Ren Zu could not do, forcefully getting out of Reverse Flow River from the front?!”

“That might not be, Ren Zu had swam from the bottom of the river, Ma and Zhao had a much easier time.”

“Even so, this is a grand feat!”

“That’s right, their willpower is simply shocking!!”

The Gu Immortals were all discussing this.

Even Mao Li Qiu was moved: “This is true, Ma Hong Yun is really something! He might be able to charge out of Reverse Flow River. Hehe.”

Black Extremity and Flood Extremity looked at each other, the former said arrogantly: “As expected of the person chosen by fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan was still swimming, trying to reach them, when Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun were already walking in Reverse Flow River.

Almost all the Gu Immortals were looking at Ma and Zhao.

The immortals wanted to know if these two could break the record of human history, and in a sense, surpass Ren Zu and walk out of Reverse Flow River from the front!

One step at a time.

Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun supported each other, as they walked forward shakily but with determination.

They were extremely tired, their bodies were numb, but they still persevered.

Almost every step, their bodies would shake like tree branches in the wind. It would not be strange if any of them fainted at the very next moment.

But in this condition, they continued to advance.

This situation created a huge impact on these immortals’ hearts.

“What sort of willpower is this!”

“Is this the power of love?”

“The two of them are supporting each other through thick and thin, and are walking side by side. Regardless of the result, I feel deep admiration towards the two of them.”

The river water’s turbulence gradually stopped, as Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun finally approached the end of the river, everyone held their breaths in anticipation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1283: Immemorial Secrets of Reverse Flow River

“Am I going to fail...” Fang Yuan was still swimming, seeing this, his heart sank: “No, until the final moment, I still have a chance, I cannot give up!”

“The final step!” Bi Chen Tian cried out.

The immortals did not dare to breathe loudly, they were nervous, staring at this grand moment.

“Grandpa Mao, get ready to save Ma Hong Yun, we will fight for them the moment they get out!” Black Extremity transmitted, reminding the dog tail life extending ferret.

But the latter replied: “No need.”

“Grandpa Mao, what do you mean?” Black Extremity was anxious.

Because now, Ma Hong Yun was holding Zhao Lian Yun’s hand, taking the final step.

His left leg was still in Reverse Flow River, but right now, the river water was not even at the sole of his left foot. Meanwhile, his right foot was already in the air, about to step out of the river.

At this moment, nobody could stop Ma Hong Yun, unless Zhao Lian Yun went crazy or if Ma Hong Yun gave up.

But none of these happened.

Ma Hong Yun took a step forward!

Ping.

With a soft sound, water splattered.

He stepped on water.

“Why is there water?” Ma Hong Yun was stunned, Zhao Lian Yun was also dazed.

They saw clearly that when Ma Hong Yun took the final step, the river water also moved forward by a little.

Thus, Ma Hong Yun was still in Reverse Flow River.

“How can this be?” Ma Hong Yun could not believe it, he gritted his teeth and took a second step.

This time, a similar thing happened, Reverse Flow River moved ahead again, causing him to remain in the river.

The immortals were shocked.

How could Reverse Flow River do this?

This was simply too shameless!

“Hahaha!” Mao Li Qiu suddenly laughed out loud: “This is too fun, this is too fun! Look at your faces, hahaha, this is too funny, too funny.”

The immortals’ expressions changed.

Black Extremity understood something after recalling Mao Li Qiu’s earlier words, he realized at once that Mao Li Qiu was sure Ma Hong Yun could not step out of Reverse Flow River, that was why it was so calm and did not try to snatch them.

“Grandpa Mao, what is going on?” Flood Extremity was impatient, he asked curiously.

“Hahaha, you fools, look at your faces!” Mao Li Qiu was laughing as his claws slammed on the ground, he was extremely overjoyed.

“Reverse Flow River itself is like this!”

“It has upstream and downstream parts, but it is impossible to try and forcefully leave the river from upstream. Because Reverse Flow River has no end. Every step you take at the final stretch of the river would just create a new extension of the river.”

“During the immemorial era, Ren Zu wanted to save his son, but fate Gu dictated the life and death of all beings. How can a dead person have a second life? That was against the rules of heaven and earth, thus, wisdom Gu did not tell Ren Zu that there was such a mystical aspect in Reverse Flow River."

"Hahaha, this is too funny, to think that we would encounter something so funny!"

Mao Li Qiu said this as it laughed maniacally, it even rolled on the ground, patting its tummy.

The immortals' expressions completely changed.

This was an immemorial secret.

Everyone was hearing it for the first time.

"This means that in the legends, wisdom Gu entrapped Ren Zu?"

"Ren Zu failed at the final step, but the truth is there was no final step. Because Reverse Flow River is endless to begin with."

"This is a scheme. Wisdom Gu specially set this trap!"

"Wait, does that mean that Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun are trapped inside Reverse Flow River forever?"

Someone said that and reminded everyone.

The immortals turned their gazes towards Reverse Flow River.

But this time, they paid no attention to Ma and Zhao, they were looking at Fang Yuan who was not far behind.

Fang Yuan!

He did not give up. As a result of his perseverance, there was a huge opportunity now!

"This Liu Guan Yi was not swept away, he is still persevering, he is very close to Ma and Zhao now!"

"That means with his speed, he can definitely catch up to Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun?"

"Liu Guan Yi has immense battle strength, the battle earlier states everything. He had fought Lord Bi Chen Tian evenly in Reverse Flow River!"

The other Gu Immortals were all eliminated!

Only Fang Yuan, Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun were left.

Right now, even if the Gu Immortals outside Reverse Flow River wanted to catch up to them, there was no time. And more importantly, they were all eliminated, all of their mental energy regarding swimming upstream had been consumed, they had no determination to swim in Reverse Flow River anymore for this period of time.

"Damn it, the only hope now is that Liu Guan Yi will overly exert himself?" Bi Chen Tian thought about it, his forehead was full of sweat.

He suddenly reminded Ma and Zhao, "Walk slowly, don't rush, as long as you maintain your current speed, you can stay in Reverse Flow River!"

Bi Chen Tian had fought with Fang Yuan, he knew about Fang Yuan’s immense strength when fighting in Reverse Flow River!

On this point, Ying Wu Xie, who had just escaped from Reverse Flow River, could prove it with his injuries. He had Purple Mountain True Monarch’s help and was an immortal zombie, but he was still one step away from dying.

Thus, with Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun on Central Continent’s side, they should avoid meeting with Fang Yuan.

They needed to stall for time until Fang Yuan could no longer persevere.

This was Central Continent’s only hope of victory!

But Fang Yuan continued moving ahead, he was not fast, but compared to the turtle-like speed of Ma and Zhao, he was like a rocket.

Not long after, he also stood on the riverbed, he was just a hundred steps away from Ma and Zhao.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu suddenly spoke: “Very good, Liu Guan Yi, capture the two of them, you can ask for any request from me. Right now, you are wanted by both Liu tribe and Ye Lui tribe, but if you hand them to me, I will be your ally! Anyone who tries to deal with you will have to face me, Xue Hu!”

Wei Ling Yang was stunned, he also spoke: “Liu Guan Yi, we are Central Continent’s ten great sects, as well as Heavenly Court’s members. If you can protect them, you can join Central Continent, we can modify your immortal aperture and let you adapt to Central Continent’s heaven and earth qi! You will become a true Central Continent Gu Immortal! After this merit, Central Continent will not disappoint you, whatever Old Ancestor Xue Hu can give you, we can give you several times that, or even tens of times as many benefits to you.”

“Hmph! Liu Guan Yi, even though you do not have the Huang Jin bloodline, as long as you protect both Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun, and hand them to Longevity Heaven, we can make an exception and allow you to become our external supreme elder! Joining Longevity Heaven will grant you unthinkable benefits. You will be in Northern Plains’ righteous path and not demonic path. Not only will you no longer be wanted by anyone, all the Huang Jin tribes will welcome you.” Flood Extremity also said in response.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1284: Ma Hong Yun’s Death

This was indeed a funny situation.

All three sides gave Fang Yuan attractive offers.

Fang Yuan’s position was too advantageous, if he succeeded in this attempt, regardless of which side he joined, he would gain great benefits.

However, Fang Yuan did not respond.

He had no spare energy to speak.

He stepped on the riverbed as he stood up and walked ahead.

He knew that talking was pointless, only by capturing Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun could he qualify to make conditions and negotiate with the three forces outside.

The distance was shrinking.

The people outside Reverse Flow River were watching Fang Yuan's movements, some were speaking and trying to raise their offers.

But there was something strange.

Nobody said anything to threaten Fang Yuan!

Because everyone knew that Fang Yuan's public identity, Liu Guan Yi, was someone who could kill Ye Lui Qun Xing, he had outstanding battle strength and even dared to offend Liu tribe, he was a vicious and lawless person. Threatening such a person would only have negative consequences.

“I must live, I want to be together with Hong Yun!” Zhao Lian Yun sobbed, she chanted in her heart, every step was difficult for her, she was inching forward slowly.

“I am here, I am right here. Don't be afraid, Xiao Yun, I will protect you...” Ma Hong Yun was pale as paper, he was holding Zhao Lian Yun's arm as his vision turned dark, every step he took, he felt an assault of intense dizziness, he felt that he would collapse at any moment.

“Where are you two going?” Fang Yuan's voice came from behind Ma Hong Yun.

Ma and Zhao shook, they turned around.

Fang Yuan's hands were already on the shoulders of both Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun.

“No—!” At this moment, Ma Hong Yun shouted loudly, pushing Zhao Lian Yun away as he charged at Fang Yuan.

But how could Fang Yuan allow Ma Hong Yun to succeed?

Earlier, he failed to deal with Ying Wu Xie and Purple Mountain True Monarch, Fang Yuan was already furious. Dealing with Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun, a mortal and a false immortal, it was too easy.

After some dazzling moves that made Ma Hong Yun's head spin, the two were subdued by Fang Yuan in turn, they were carried in each of his arms, unable to move.

Ma and Zhao reacted, struggling intensely. But at this moment, Fang Yuan's cold voice spoke: “Move and I will kill the person you love!”

Instantly, Ma and Zhao shuddered, they looked at Fang Yuan with immense fear.

Fang Yuan's words targeted their greatest weakness.

Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, he carried these two captives as he walked forward.

In this dangerous situation, Fang Yuan had finally found a way to survive.

He looked outside the river, saying: “We can negotiate now!”

“Hahaha, lad, you are quite good. You are like me back in the day, we can talk it through!” Old Ancestor Xue Hu laughed.

“Don’t be rash, Central Continent can satisfy your needs.” Wei Ling Yang also said.

“Boring.” Mao Li Qiu pouted, lying on the ground as it wagged its tail, relaxing.

Black Extremity smiled bitterly: “Liu Guan Yi, just tell us what you want... hmm!”

At this moment, a change occurred.

Ma Hong Yun suddenly stopped breathing!

He was dead!!

The immortals were shocked, there was pure silence.

At once, even Fang Yuan was shocked.

“I did not exert any strength. Oh wait, Ma Hong Yun died of exhaustion! He carried Zhao Lian Yun as they traveled in the river, he was completely overexerting himself, surpassing his limits. Eventually, not only was he out of stamina, he was also drained of mental energy. After I caught him, his body relaxed and he died immediately.”

Fang Yuan quickly understood.

This change caught him off guard.

Ma Hong Yun was dead!

The immortals gasped.

“Damn it! Liu Guan Yi, you actually killed him, I will tear your bones and tendons out, I will make sure you die a terrible death!!” Old Ancestor Xue Hu fell into a rage, he screamed loudly as his eyes turned red.

Ma Hong Yun died, the effect of Fortune Rivalling Heaven also completely dissipated.

Only a living Ma Hong Yun had value as an immortal material. A dead Ma Hong Yun was just a rank five Gu Master corpse.

This was why Lady Wan Shou had been keeping Ma Hong Yun alive and did not kill him before trying to refine the Gu.

Like the spring dream fruit tree, luck path immortal materials also had a special trait, if it was a living luck path immortal material, it had to be alive. Refining the luck path Immortal Gu would require a living refinement in that case.

“Ma Hong Yun...” Bi Chen Tian and Wei Ling Yang were downcast.

“Little worm, you actually killed Ma Hong Yun, you squeezed him to death!!” Mao Li Qiu shouted even more loudly than Old Ancestor Xue Hu, it was furious and bared its sharp fangs, it was agitated and its hair was standing, it was ready to pounce to devour Fang Yuan alive.

“Ma Hong Yun actually died?! Never mind, I still have Zhao Lian Yun.” Fang Yuan held in his shock.

Zhao Lian Yun was covered in tears.

“Hong Yun!”

“Hong Yun—!”

The person she loved had died right in front of her.

Unparalleled grief and sadness assaulted her and overwhelmed her like a tsunami!

But she could not scream, she could not shout, she was unable to emit any sound.

She could only scream in her heart and cry!

She had spent so much effort to reach this step, she had just reunited with Ma Hong Yun, when they were separated for good.

What was Zhao Lian Yun going to do now?

Her tears flowed like a river, the pain was engraved in her soul, extreme grief was causing her to tremble intensely.

“Oh no.” Fang Yuan quickly made a move, wanting to knock out Zhao Lian Yun.

It was to prevent Zhao Lian Yun from dying on the spot as well from grief.

However, right when Fang Yuan was about to hit Zhao Lian Yun’s neck, a blue light burst out from Zhao Lian Yun’s body.

Rank nine love Immortal Gu!

At the most critical moment, it displayed its might again.

“This aura... rank nine love Gu?! Wait, aren’t Gu worms unable to be used in Reverse Flow River?” Flood Extremity called out.

Mao Li Qiu rolled its eyes: “Are you stupid? How can anything be absolute in this world? Reverse Flow River is a secluded domain of heaven and earth, it is filled with dao marks, preventing Gu worms from being used. But if it is a rank nine Immortal Gu, they are not dao marks but fragments of the Great Dao. And a fragment of the Great Dao cannot be suppressed by Reverse Flow River’s dao marks, the Immortal Gu’s power can be used.”

“Save him, save him, even if I have to sacrifice my life!” Zhao Lian Yun was overjoyed, she screamed in her heart.

But love Immortal Gu could not be controlled, the blue light brought Zhao Lian Yun into the sky, escaping Reverse Flow River. It then went to Wei Ling Yang and Bi Chen Tian, the speed was simply too fast to react to.

Meanwhile, Ma Hong Yun’s corpse remained.

Fang Yuan was holding onto it.

Even though Ma Hong Yun died, his soul was still in his body.

But Old Ancestor Xue Hu lost all interest in this corpse already. If reviving Ma Hong Yun would help, Lady Wan Shou would not have used this difficult living refinement method.

Mao Li Qiu was staring at Fang Yuan, ready to attack.

Fang Yuan had grasped the chance earlier, but to think that this sudden change would cause Fang Yuan to fall into even bigger danger than before.

“Such a mishap, it is definitely heaven’s will!”

Instantly, Fang Yuan understood.

He had fallen into Reverse Flow River, his Immortal Gu were ineffective, after such a long time passed, heaven’s will had already started its plotting.

He was first swept into Reverse Flow River, followed by the events of Purple Mountain True Monarch and Ying Wu Xie, and finally, Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun.

Heaven’s will!

Fang Yuan raised his head.

At this moment, he was completely trapped.

Not just Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Mao Li Qiu, and Central Continent’s Gu Immortals, even heaven’s will was everywhere, trying desperately to eliminate this biggest uncontrollable factor!

“A desperate situation... then, what should I do?”

Fang Yuan’s mouth was dry.

But from start to finish, he was expressionless.

He could not think of a way, just Old Ancestor Xue Hu alone was an enemy Fang Yuan could not face.

That giant purple ferret was unfathomable, it was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s steed!

Not to mention the other Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan had no way, he could only continue moving in Reverse Flow River.

The clamoring of the Gu Immortals around him continued.

“Liu Guan Yi, you cannot escape death today.”

“You committed so much evil, you have done yourself in today, the fact that you are in this state is truly heaven’s judgment!”

“Kill him, we need to kill him, he actually foiled our plans!”

“Do you know that you killed someone you could not touch. You will die for sure today!!”

“Howl—!” The dog tail life extending ferret howled, sound waves resounded endlessly, if not for Reverse Flow River, it would have attacked Fang Yuan already.

“I have no choice now... if Reverse Flow River sweeps me out, with my current methods, there is little chance of escaping.” Fang Yuan was completely stumped.

He could only continue moving forward in Reverse Flow River.

Step by step.

He was at the front already, every step he took, Reverse Flow River would move forward by a bit, causing Fang Yuan to stay in the river forever.

Reverse Flow River had no end.

This was a form of despair.

But Fang Yuan did not feel anything.

“In my life, I have experienced too many instances of despair.” Fang Yuan sighed internally.

His gaze was clear, he was still expressionless.

“In the current situation, I can only wait for the three sides to fight, I will then be able to escape. I can only persevere in this river.” Fang Yuan thought.

Step by step.

Time passed, the Gu Immortals who were waiting for Fang Yuan to be swept out became frustrated.

“Is he going to stop?”

“What’s the point of moving forward in Reverse Flow River? You will still die.”

“Come out you coward! I will kill you with one slap!”

“It is hopeless now, Liu Guan Yi, suiciding is the only way you can retain your honor.”

Some Gu Immortals were laughing, some were watching coldly.

In their opinion, Fang Yuan was just struggling futilely.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1285: Fang Yuan’s Perseverance!

“If you think that there will be a chance to escape when we fight, you can forget about it. Today, I only have one target, that is you. Do you know how much of a price I’ve paid to refine fortune rivalling heaven Gu? You foiled my cultivation plan, you are the person I hate most in my life. If I do not kill you, I will never be appeased!” Old Ancestor Xue Hu looked at Fang Yuan with deep hatred, his words were like an icy river pouring on Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan was still expressionless.

He was like a rock, a deaf person, anyone’s words, be it threats or promises, had no effect on him.

As time passed, Fang Yuan continued to move forward.

Unknowingly, the growling of the dog tail life extending ferret, Mao Li Qiu, became softer.

This giant purple ferret’s expression had changed.

It spoke in a weird and incredulous tone, looking at Fang Yuan: “No way...”

“What?” Black Extremity was confused.

At this moment, Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Bi Chen Tian, and Wei Ling Yang also had changes in their expressions.

They sensed something.

Soon, the other Gu Immortals present were stirred up, they quickly shouted.

“Hmm?”

“This is a Gu worm’s aura? But it doesn’t seem like it!”

“What Gu worm? Impossible, does he also have a rank nine Immortal Gu?”

“This is weird, this is not an Immortal Gu’s aura, or rather, it is not complete, this is so strange!”

Suddenly, Yu Yi Ye Zi’s eyes shined, he guessed the truth as he said: “This situation, he is refining Gu!”

A Gu Immortal immediately mocked: “How can that be? Refining Gu in Reverse Flow River?”

That was true.

Gu worms could not be used in Reverse Flow River, unless it was a rank nine Immortal Gu.

Even though Fang Yuan had wisdom Gu, it was inside Lang Ya blessed land, he could not use any Gu worms, not to mention refining Gu.

Fang Yuan also felt the change inside his body.

He was expressionless, but he was shocked on the inside: “It seems... I really am refining Gu? What is going on? Every step I take, the aura in my body strengthens. What is going on?”

Even though Fang Yuan did not understand it, he knew that this was a turning point!

The situation was at its worst, no matter what, Fang Yuan wanted to try.

He continued to move forward.

Step by step.

He walked steadily, he was expressionless, but it gave others a feeling of strength.

“Why does he show no expression?” A Gu Immortal suddenly asked.

The immortals finally reacted.

That was true.

Other than Fang Yuan, everyone else who had been in this situation had distorted expressions, they were in pain, or they were going crazy or sobbing.

But why was Fang Yuan expressionless from start to finish?

The immortals were silent.

They all knew that the person who asked this question actually was asking about something else.

And that was —

“Why is this Liu Guan Yi able to persevere for so long? Furthermore, he seems to be able to continue, it seems like he can persevere forever!”

How was it possible?

Everyone was eliminated, swept away by Reverse Flow River.

How could he remain here with so much remaining strength?

Why was it him?

Why was it him!

Nobody could answer that, the Gu Immortals were all silent.

A moment later, as Fang Yuan continued to advance, the Gu worm aura in his body continued to strength, it was at its peak.

Soon, from inside Fang Yuan’s body to the outside, he started to shine in a bright pure white light.

“It really... it really became like this!” Mao Li Qiu saw this and his eyes were staring wide open, he was gaping, unable to believe the sight in front of him.

“Grandpa Mao, what is going on?” Black Extremity could not endure it, he asked.

“Sigh! At this point, there is no reason in me hiding it anymore.” Mao Li Qiu sighed deeply, showing a defeated look on his face.

“There is an Immortal Gu nurturing inside his body. This Immortal Gu’s name is Perseverance!” Mao Li Qiu said some shocking things.

“Perseverance Immortal Gu?!” Black Extremity was extremely shocked.

The other Gu Immortals were too.

“It is said in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> that perseverance Immortal Gu was the crucial Immortal Gu that could allow the user to conquer Reverse Flow River? Isn’t it just a legend?” Yu Yi Ye Zi asked.

“No, it exists.” Bi Chen Tian said, he was a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal, he knew many ancient secrets.

“There was a person who had once owned it, that person was a former leader of Heavenly Court, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable!” Wei Ling Yang added.

“What?!” The immortals went into shock again.

“But we had never expected the refinement method of perseverance Immortal Gu to be like this. Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had never mentioned it.” Bi Chen Tian sighed and shook his head.

“Of course he didn’t. This is a shameful event in his life. Hehehe.” Mao Li Qiu interjected, it was very interested in anything that would ruin Heavenly Court’s reputation.

These words made Shi Zheng Yi shout: “Rubbish, how dare you slander the reputation of an Immortal Venerable?!”

Daring to yell at a legendary immemorial desolate beast, Shi Zheng Yi was truly courageous, many Central Continent Gu Immortals were worried for him.

Mao Li Qiu did not get angry: “Little boy, what do you know? Immortal Venerable or Demon Venerable, even if they have high cultivation level, they are still human. Humans have emotions, they have flaws, they have weaknesses.”

“Back then, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable charged through Reverse Flow River and was trapped inside, unable to escape. Eventually, he painstakingly traveled to the end of the river and refined perseverance Immortal Gu in his body. From then on, he conquered Reverse Flow River and became the first Reverse Flow River Lord in history.”

“The first Reverse Flow River Lord?” Even Old Ancestor Xue Hu was shocked. This Reverse Flow River had been his for so long, he did not think there were such secrets.

“This means...” At once, the immortals’ gazes landed on Fang Yuan.

Mao Li Qiu sighed, with his gaze fixed on Fang Yuan who was bathed in white light, he said helplessly: “That is true. At this rate, he will refine perseverance Immortal Gu and become the second Reverse Flow River Lord!”

The immortals were lost for words, they looked at Fang Yuan, who continued moving forward.

He was expressionless, no matter how many steps he took, Reverse Flow River was always still below his feet, as if fate was mocking and laughing at him.

But he continued walking.

He had traveled through five hundred years of experiences over his previous life, he did not know how much longer he would have to walk.

But he knew where he needed to go.

As if... nobody could stop him.

At least... inside this river, nobody could stop him.

In the five hundred years of his previous life.

Fang Yuan sat inside the bamboo house, he looked at the village, he looked at Qing Mao Mountain.

His fists were clenched, hope was displayed all over his young and tender face.

“It is time to give up the past.”

“Transmigrating here is my greatest opportunity! Because here, I can attain eternal life.”

“I have to make good use of this rare opportunity! Otherwise, how can I live with myself, how can I give up this chance?”

“Of course, right now, I need to improve the living conditions of me and my brother. Hehe, that little fellow...”

After the aperture awakening.

On the battle stage, Fang Yuan lowered his head, he was filled with shock and anger.

“I was set up!”

“Who set me up? Who does not want me to win in battle? The answer is obvious!”

“Brother, give up, you are not my match. Because of our differing aptitude, we are fated to be different.” Gu Yue Fang Zheng said with glee and smugness in front of him.

Fang Yuan turned around and left, he was filled with determination.

“Since the village refuses to nurture me, since my aunt and uncle are purposely pushing me aside, what is the point of staying here?”

“If I stay here, will I be able to get stronger and gain eternal life?”

“Why don’t I leave?”

Inside the caravan.

Gu Master Big Beard died, Fang Yuan stood in front of his grave.

The youngster was filled with tears, he sobbed: “Uncle Big Beard, rest in peace.”

“Thank you for the final present.”

“You said: When you were a child, you wanted to be a grand hero, like those legendary figures of the righteous path. When you were a youngster, you wanted to be a clan leader. When you were an adult, you were satisfied with becoming a clan elder. When you were a middle aged man, you were exiled from the clan, you felt that you could live by yourself just as well, you were satisfied with just raising your Gu worms and yourself.”

“But I am not like this, I will not forgo my dreams just because of age.”

“This world is too big, but we are all minor characters... I will work hard! I will definitely do my best!”

...

Childhood, adolescence, adulthood.

Qing Mao Mountain, caravan, he walked all along.

Middle age, old age, and eventually, lifespan Gu.

Southern Border, Western Desert, Eastern Sea, and Central Continent.

After his rebirth using Spring Autumn Cicada, Qing Mao Mountain, Three Kings blessed land, Hu Immortal blessed land, Imperial Court blessed land, Yi Tian Mountain, and Reverse Flow River!

Step by step, through difficulties and ordeals.

Bi Chen Tian frowned, he stared at Fang Yuan’s figure, thinking: “What sort of willpower is this! Why does he persevere? What makes him persevere to this extent?”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu snorted coldly, solemness showed in his eyes, he no longer looked down on this rank seven Gu Immortal: “This means, there was Genesis Lotus three hundred thousand years ago, and now, there is Liu Guan Yi... the Reverse Flow River Lord.”

Mao Li Qiu looked at the light on Fang Yuan’s body, there was nothing it could do, it bore its fangs and scratched the ground with its claws, causing deep marks to form.

Bai Ning Bing’s and Hei Lou Lan’s eyelids were twitching, they were evidently moved.

Zhao Lian Yun had woken up, she looked at Ma Hong Yun’s corpse, held in Fang Yuan’s arm, her tears were flowing out.

She cried in her heart: “Hong Yun, Hong Yun, how could you leave me like this. Without you, I am all alone in this world. What is the point of living? Do you know, the perseverance of one person is so difficult!”

How difficult is the perseverance of one person?

All of the Gu Immortals here could answer that question.

Because among them, some persevered because of responsibility, some persevered because of hatred, some persevered because of excitement, and some persevered because of love...

And Fang Yuan’s answer?

He was still expressionless, he continued to move forward relentlessly.

I had once screamed, gradually, I lost my voice.

I had once cried, gradually, I lost my tears.

I had once grieved, gradually, I became able to withstand everything.

I had once rejoiced, gradually, I became unmoved by the world.

And now!

All I have left is an expressionless face, my gaze is as tough as a monolith, only perseverance remains in my heart.

This is my own, an insignificant character, Fang Yuan’s — Perseverance!

A dazzling light erupted out.

Perseverance Immortal Gu, at this moment, was refined successfully!!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1286: Wisely Urging Old Ancestor Xue Hu

Perseverance Immortal Gu, at this moment, was refined successfully!

Outside Reverse Flow River, the immortals who saw this all fell into dead silence.

They watched as Reverse Flow River continued to flow slowly. A rank seven Gu Immortal, with the appearance of a young man wearing a long white robe, with long hair and deep dark eyes, was standing in the water, he was as free as the wind.

“He actually managed to refine perseverance Immortal Gu!” Bai Ning Bing muttered, having complex emotions.

“He actually did the same thing as Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable?” The Central Continent Gu Immortals could not believe this.

“Look guys, he is no longer moving forward, he is standing on the spot, Reverse Flow River is no longer sweeping him away!” Shi Zheng Yi pointed and shouted.

Fang Yuan shut his eyes, half his attention was inside his immortal aperture.

A brand new Immortal Gu had formed completely, appearing in his immortal aperture.

Perseverance Immortal Gu!

It was like a monolith, it was huge, at the size of a giant whale. The bottom was wide while the top was thin, it was squarish and metallic black, the sides were very straight. At one glance, it looked like a rock that could not be eroded by the sea in the span of ten thousand years, it was like a huge rock that could not be melted by magma over the ages.

It was really a very special Immortal Gu.

Because in terms of size, it was the largest Immortal Gu Fang Yuan had ever seen.

“Rank seven Immortal Gu...”

Fang Yuan could tell this Immortal Gu’s rank from the aura it was emitting.

It was not rank eight, nor rank nine.

Fang Yuan was happy about this.

Having a higher rank Immortal Gu was not always better, this was something that every Gu Immortal knew.

Rank seven perseverance Immortal Gu best fit Fang Yuan’s rank seven cultivation level.

“What is the food of this perseverance Immortal Gu? What effect does it have? How can I make use of it?” Questions appeared in Fang Yuan’s head.

He did not think any further, he placed his focus on the outside world again.

Outside Reverse Flow River, the three rank eight Gu Immortals were still waiting to strike, the other Gu Immortals were also ready to attack any time.

“By owning perseverance Immortal Gu, I really conquered Reverse Flow River!” Fang Yuan soon found that Reverse Flow River was as obedient as a pet dog around him.

The immense pressure it gave him earlier had vanished.

Fang Yuan stood here without moving, Reverse Flow River no longer worked against him.

Not just that, Fang Yuan also found that he could use Gu worms freely in the river, he could even open his immortal aperture’s entrance easily.

“Good!” Fang Yuan was excited, he first placed Ma Hong Yun’s corpse in his immortal aperture.

Ma Hong Yun’s soul was also inside Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

His soul contained the luck path true inheritance of all living being’s luck, Fang Yuan paid attention to this. During Imperial Court blessed land, Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun were protected by the all living being’s luck true inheritance, they had each gained a portion of the inheritance.

“Right now, Ma Hong Yun’s soul is in my hands, the portion of all living being’s luck that he has belongs to me. It is a pity Zhao Lian Yun had rank nine love Immortal Gu, I could not capture her.”

In Fang Yuan’s opinion, Ma Hong Yun’s soul had great value, but his body was merely a Gu refinement material, even though it had gone through many living refinement attempts.

But Fang Yuan frowned slightly.

If he could capture Zhao Lian Yun, he might have been able to use her and negotiate with the Gu Immortals outside.

But earlier, Zhao Lian Yun had escaped from danger due to love Immortal Gu, she had returned to Bi Chen Tian and Wei Ling Yang.

“Northern Plains’ Liu Guan Yi, to think that this battle would establish your fame.” Wei Ling Yang sighed.

“I want you to die, I want you to die!” Zhao Lian Yun screamed in a shrill voice, her gaze towards Fang Yuan was filled with hatred and grudge.

The love she had for Ma Hong Yun became hatred for Fang Yuan!

“Liu Guan Yi, even if you become the Reverse Flow River Lord, so what?” Old Ancestor Xue Hu smiled coldly.

“Lad, you are quite capable. But this is it, you killed Ma Hong Yun, you caused me to fail before even trying. Walk out of Reverse Flow River and let me kill you in one slap, I will let you off without much pain! Howl!” Grandpa Mao said with a ruthless expression.

“Damn it.” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth secretly.

He was the only person in Reverse Flow River now, but the situation did not turn around for him.

He was trapped inside Reverse Flow River.

Even though he refined perseverance Immortal Gu and conquered Reverse Flow River, he could not gain the initiative and escape with his life.

Especially after killing Ma Hong Yun and losing Zhao Lian Yun, Fang Yuan was in a passive state.

“Three rank eight Gu Immortals, many experts, as well as heaven’s will...” Fang Yuan looked around, he was trapped. Refining perseverance Immortal Gu made him the target of everyone now, he had attracted too much attention.

“Huff!”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu suddenly breathed out, he grunted as he spat out a mouthful of cold air.

The cold air soon landed on Reverse Flow River, the water was still flowing slowly, the surface of the river was flickering with light as the cold air was reflected back at him.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu dodged it, staring at the river water as he laughed: “Liu Guan Yi, you foiled my plans, if you surrender now and hand over Reverse Flow River, I can spare your life, you can become my slave. But if you insist on resisting us, I will make sure you cannot die even if you want to!”

Saying this, he spat out more cold air, attacking Reverse Flow River.

Reverse Flow River continued to reflect all of the attacks back, but Old Ancestor Xue Hu dodged them all, he continued threatening: “Liu Guan Yi, you can forget about it if you want to use Reverse Flow River to protect yourself. Reverse Flow River is a secluded domain of heaven and earth, it has immense might, but it is not a living being, reflecting attacks consumes its water. Eventually, the river will dry up, by then, you will die.”

As Old Ancestor Xue Hu continued to attack, Reverse Flow River started being expended, even though only traces of the water were used, eventually, it would run out.

But Fang Yuan retorted: “Old Ancestor Xue Hu, you are the number one rank eight Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, how can you not know that Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were the ones who foiled your Gu refinement plan? Furthermore, Longevity Heaven’s trap might also be involved. I just happened to be here due to a coincidence, are you ignoring these great enemies and targeting an insignificant character like me?”

As he said this, Bi Chen Tian and Wei Ling Yang became extremely alert, they moved back by a bit.

Mao Li Qiu pouted: “This lad is good at sowing discord.”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu stared slightly in surprise: “Liu Guan Yi, you seem to be forgetting that the Reverse Flow River under your feet belonged to me. You stole my secluded domain of heaven and earth, you are an enemy of mine. You caused the death of Ma Hong Yun and ruined my hope, if I do not kill you, my anger will not be appeased!”

Fang Yuan quickly said: “Old Ancestor Xue Hu, we are both Northern Plainsmen. Among everyone present, this ferret is from Longevity Heaven, while these Central Continent Gu Immortals are all from the ten great ancient sects or Heavenly Court. They are all righteous path, only we are in the demonic path. Righteous path and demonic path cannot intermingle, we can work together.”

“Yes, I took away Reverse Flow River and by chance became the Reverse Flow River

Lord. But we can cooperate, I can lend Reverse Flow River to you, with my help, Reverse Flow River will be much more useful to you now.”

“Yes, I killed Ma Hong Yun, but everyone knows that I did not intend to do that. I only held him lightly and Ma Hong Yun died. He was completely worn out, he was mentally exhausted, or maybe he suffered too big of a shock and could not endure it. Without me, he was going to die anyway, I was merely implicated.”

“Now that he is dead, Fortune Rivalling Heaven’s effect vanished, I can understand that you want to seek revenge with me. But you need to undergo tribulation, will killing me and venting your anger help you pass the tribulation?”

Saying this, Fang Yuan shook his head, he continued: “Not just that, your tribulation might even become more dangerous. Because of how vast Reverse Flow River is, you will exert a lot of effort in draining its water, and yet, you cannot refine Fortune Rivalling Heaven to deal with your tribulation.”

“Old Ancestor Xue Hu, you have a family, you are a grand overlord, the number one demonic path overlord in Northern Plains. If you die from tribulation, or even if you are just heavily injured, all of your enemies, and the righteous paths of Northern Plains and Central Continent, will be overjoyed. At the same time, Lady Wan Shou would grieve.”

“Even though Snowy Mountain blessed land was destroyed and this refinement failed, as long as you are around, you can build another Snowy Mountain blessed land. If the refinement fails, you can snatch resources from others and get enough materials to refine Gu again.”

“These righteous path Gu Immortals have ill intentions, we can take them down!”

“I, Liu Guan Yi, am a demonic path member of Northern Plains, I am willing to cooperate with you to achieve our grand ambitions!!”

Fang Yuan spoke with confidence and assurance, he had a glib tongue.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu heard these words and felt that Fang Yuan was not so detestable anymore!

Because what he said was right, even though Old Ancestor Xue Hu was furious, he had not lost his reasoning yet. Furthermore, Fang Yuan was considering him and putting himself in his perspective while making plans.

How could Old Ancestor Xue Hu not be moved?

He was a rank eight Gu Immortal, even after this major setback, his ambitions had not wavered. He was still going to refine Gu later, where would he get the materials?

Old Ancestor Xue Hu subconsciously looked towards Bi Chen Tian and Wei Ling Yang, as well as the dog tail life extending ferret.

Seeing Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s gaze, Wei Ling Yang and Bi Chen Tian became nervous, while Mao Li Qiu felt offended, his hair stood on end as he opened his mouth, revealing his sharp fangs to Old Ancestor Xue Hu, not showing any weakness.

“This fellow is still as crafty as ever!” Ying Wu Xie was frustrated.

If this was earlier, he might encourage Old Ancestor Xue Hu to cooperate with Fang Yuan. After all, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body was the fruit of Shadow Sect’s efforts after a hundred thousand years, it could not be lost.

But now, after being hunted down by Fang Yuan, and seeing him conquer Reverse Flow River, Ying Wu Xie’s wariness towards Fang Yuan had reached an extreme level.

If there was a chance, Ying Wu Xie would definitely kill Fang Yuan, and eliminate this terrifying foe!

But Ying Wu Xie did not speak.

Purple Mountain True Monarch had fallen into deep sleep in his hands.

When he awakened, he would regain clarity for some time.

Currently, Ying Wu Xie had to keep a low profile, it would be best if everyone forgot about him.

This was Shadow Sect’s weakest moment.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals were also like this, even though they got back Zhao Lian Yun, they did not dare to retreat easily. If they did, they might attract unwanted attention and become everyone’s targets.

The situation was in a deadlock.

It was quite peculiar.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Shadow Sect, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals, Longevity Heaven, Fang Yuan, none of them dared to make a move, they had their own considerations and perspective, and most importantly, none of them had overwhelming strength that could suppress the situation.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s attitude became the crucial thing now.

Everyone stared at him.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu thought for a moment and suddenly said, “Sure, we can make an alliance!”

Fang Yuan was overjoyed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1287: Myriad Self Second Style!

Seeing that Fang Yuan was about to successfully convince Old Ancestor Xue Hu, be it Central Continent or Longevity Heaven, their expressions all changed.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was the number one rank eight in Northern Plains’ demonic path, if he fought with his full strength, he could definitely bring Fang Yuan away even against the dog tail life extending ferret Mao Li Qiu, Bi Chen Tian, and Wei Ling Yang.

However, Old Ancestor Xue Hu gave Fang Yuan very strict alliance agreement rules.

Fang Yuan’s joy vanished, according to this alliance agreement, he was not an equal ally of Old Ancestor Xue Hu, he was a slave!

“Old Ancestor Xue Hu, such an alliance agreement... are you joking?” Fang Yuan’s expression was ugly.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu started to laugh: “Of course I am not!”

“Liu Guan Yi, didn’t you analyze this thoroughly earlier? Among the people present, only we are from the demonic path, we are natural allies.”

“You killed Ye Lui Qun Xing, you killed a Liu tribe Gu Immortal and plundered their resources, are you going to hand yourself in to Longevity Heaven?”

“Or will you leave your homeland and go to Central Continent? And be the lackey of the ten great ancient sects and Heavenly Court?”

“I am your only option.”

Saying this, he paused before looking at Ying Wu Xie: “You know, I have my own difficulties. I have an agreement with these people, but it seems that you are enemies too. I cannot offend another rank eight existence just because of a rank seven Gu Immortal and Reverse Flow River, right?”

Ying Wu Xie’s heart jumped.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was indeed trying to convince Fang Yuan, but he was also probing Shadow Sect’s and Purple Mountain True Monarch’s background.

After all, everyone saw that Purple Mountain True Monarch went crazy.

If this Purple Mountain True Monarch was truly crazy and unable to control himself, Old Ancestor Xue Hu might attack them. After all, killing a crazy rank eight Gu Immortal would grant enough benefits that would move Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

Furthermore, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had failed the Gu refinement and Snowy Mountain blessed land was destroyed, all of his investments were wasted.

Fang Yuan’s expression was grim.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was a demonic path overlord, he was not easy to fool.

His words earlier had truly moved Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

But Old Ancestor Xue Hu had his own schemes and plans, he used Fang Yuan’s words to deal with him in return.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s words were filled with suspicion and probing.

But Fang Yuan knew that he could not cooperate with Mao Li Qiu or Wei Ling Yang.

Longevity Heaven was defensive in regard to its descendants, Fang Yuan killed Ye Lui Qun Xing, he offended the Huang Jin tribes, and after killing Ma Hong Yun, going to Longevity Heaven was courting death.

On the other hand, he could not go to Central Continent.

Even though he had methods to defend against wisdom path, they could not be relied upon. Normally, he was relying on the isolation of being inside an immortal aperture or the Southern Border super Gu formation to defend himself from the deductions of Central Continent’s Gu Immortals.

If he went to Central Continent, Heavenly Court’s Fairy Zi Wei would know about it, by then, his identity would be exposed, he would be put on trial. After all, he was listed on the Demon Judgment Board.

As for Shadow Sect, because of sovereign immortal fetus Gu, it was even more impossible.

Thus, among everyone here, Old Ancestor Xue Hu was Fang Yuan’s only choice.

But now, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had stated that he could help Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan had to accept these conditions. If he did, he would be signing a slavery agreement, he would become Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s slave.

“If you agree, I will ensure your safety. If you do not, I will attack Reverse Flow River, you will die here today, there is no other option.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu was domineering, he stared at Fang Yuan fixedly, forcing him to make a decision.

Fang Yuan had a struggling and hesitant expression: “Let me think!”

“I will give you three breaths of time.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu had a cold expression, he breathed out cold air as he gave Fang Yuan three breaths of time to consider.

It was truly merciless!

Fang Yuan smiled, he knew that he could not deceive Old Ancestor Xue Hu, there was no way to stall for time, he stopped acting: “Then, Old Ancestor, I will have to see your methods.”

“Hahaha.” Old Ancestor Xue Hu laughed loudly, he had a ruthless expression: “I knew it, how can someone who is qualified to be the Reverse Flow River Lord submit to others so easily? Therefore, I will beat you until you beg for mercy!”

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was happy to have this prey, he seemed to be unwilling to kill Fang Yuan.

But who knew if this was his plot?

Old Ancestor Xue Hu attacked, waves of cold air assaulted, unceasingly with grand might.

Reverse Flow River’s water was raging, reflecting Xue Hu’s attacks, while consuming the river water.

Fang Yuan did not move, it was still too early to affect him, even though he was bound to lose, because he could only take attacks passively and could not counterattack.

“I need to find a way to get out of this predicament and escape with my life.”

Fang Yuan smiled, looking at Central Continent’s group: “Guests from Central Continent, what are you waiting for? Do you want Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals to collaborate and take care of you?”

Wei Ling Yang’s and Bi Chen Tian’s hearts jumped.

Zhao Lian Yun cried out shrilly: “Murderer! You should worry about yourself! I will only leave after I see you die right in front of me!”

The other Central Continent Gu Immortals were silent, they looked at the two rank eight Gu Immortals.

But Wei Ling Yang and Bi Chen Tian did not move, they were like statues, not making a response.

Fang Yuan was about to speak to the dog tail life extending ferret.

Mao Li Qiu suddenly laughed: “Little boy, no need to say anymore, sowing discord is pointless. I am right here, even if Xue Hu doesn’t want to kill you, I will kill you!”

Saying this, it attacked.

It spat out traces of purple aura, it was like mist that was reflected by Reverse Flow River, intensifying Reverse Flow River’s expenditure.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly on the inside, these rank eight existences, be they human or beast, were astute, words could not cause them to waver.

“It seems that I can only rely on myself now.”

“The new move that I created is powerful, but in front of four, no, five rank eight existences, it will be too difficult to escape.”

Five rank eight existences, they were Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Mao Li Qiu, Bi Chen Tian, Wei Ling Yang, and the crazed Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Fang Yuan looked at the water below his feet, he actually went into a daze for a moment.

The attacks outside the river were powerful and unceasing, incredible might could be felt.

But Fang Yuan had no regard for the surroundings, because in his current state, an inspiration had formed in his mind.

Activating an Immortal Gu, the river water below his feet started to create ripples according to his will.

“It seems that if I continue activating perseverance Immortal Gu, I will be the Reverse Flow River Lord. Inside this river, I can use other Immortal Gu as well!”

Earlier, he had tried to use strength path Immortal Gu Pulling Water.

Under the effect of Pulling Water, Fang Yuan found that he could move Reverse Flow River just like any other river or stream.

But with just this, Fang Yuan could not leave the place.

Pulling water Immortal Gu was just rank six, it could move rivers and bodies of water, but it moved very slowly, trying to escape with this was impossible.

“Old Ancestor Xue Hu seems to have a way to make use of Reverse Flow River and create a formation, why can’t I do the same? I am the Reverse Flow River Lord, I have perseverance Immortal Gu, I can freely manipulate this river. Or maybe, I can form an immortal killer move...”

This idea appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind and began to take root deeply.

Perseverance Immortal Gu allowed Fang Yuan to get Reverse Flow River’s compliance, and pulling water Immortal Gu could manipulate rivers and water. This was the basis of an immortal killer move.

Adding more Gu worms to form a complete immortal killer move, it seemed... that it was nothing too hard.

Fang Yuan felt that he could do it!

This was not a random guess.

It was his attainment level!

Fang Yuan had incredible attainment levels, one of them was water path.

He had just become a water path grandmaster.

After adding more water path Gu worms in, he quickly compiled this immortal killer move.

But it was not enough.

“Not enough... strength!” Fang Yuan realized.

The framework, the skeleton of the killer move was created, the wings were spread, but he lacked the crucial muscles for strength. Just two Immortal Gu were not enough.

Then he would add more!

Fang Yuan first thought of strength path.

Myriad self!

His most familiar technique, and also a unique immortal killer move that he had created after rebirth.

A solution was found.

Strength path grandmaster attainment level and water path grandmaster attainment level, they allowed him to naturally reach success.

But wait!

Fang Yuan suddenly thought of an unrelated immortal killer move.

This killer move came from Ye Lui Qun Xing, he used star fragments to create a powerful killer move, it was like Fang Yuan trying to use Reverse Flow River, they were using external forces!

And now, he even had the blood vessels.

Skeleton, muscles, wings, and blood vessels, he had them all.

Fang Yuan actually created an immortal killer move in this short period of time.

“This is myriad self second style.” Fang Yuan’s eyes were shining brilliantly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1288: Practising the Killer Move

With sufficient attainment level, Fang Yuan created an immortal killer move on the spot.

Because he used myriad self killer move as the foundation, Fang Yuan named this move myriad self second style.

But because this move was just created, it was far from being usable.

Bam bam bam!

Old Ancestor Xue Hu and the dog tail life extending ferret Mao Li Qiu, these two rank eight existences continued to attack Reverse Flow River, causing huge ripples in the water, countless attacks were reflected as the water level started to fall.

Fang Yuan’s actions had gone past their bottom line. And because he was unwilling to give up, Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Mao Li Qiu were expending their energy to attack Reverse Flow River, in order to kill Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan looked at the river water, thinking: “At this rate, I still have a lot of time.”

His heart eased slightly.

Reverse Flow River was a secluded domain of heaven and earth indeed, it endured the attacks of two rank eight existences, only falling a little in water level.

Of course, a reason was that Xue Hu and Mao Li Qiu did not use their full strength.

They were wary of each other, and Wei Ling Yang and Bi Chen Tian were together with the other Central Continent Gu Immortals, awaiting their chance. These people restrained each other, they guarded against each other, how could they use their full strength on Fang Yuan?

Because of this complex situation, a lot of pressure was lifted off Fang Yuan, he could test his killer move without rushing.

The first activation.

Fang Yuan was careful.

First was perseverance Immortal Gu, it had been expending red date immortal essence to allow Fang Yuan to move freely in Reverse Flow River, remaining unrestricted by the secluded domain of heaven and earth.

Next were a large number of water path mortal Gu, they flew up in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture, surrounding the huge perseverance Immortal Gu as they moved in the air.

Soon, large amounts of water vapor rose, as faint blue light appeared in them.

But soon, this blue light vanished, some of it had even turned red, the originally ice-cold water vapor had turned warmer.

“I failed.” Fang Yuan immediately stopped.

The scene in front of him was out of his expectations.

This was not what he wanted.

He stopped his immortal essence expenditure, crack crack, large numbers of water path mortal Gu exploded, destroyed on the spot.

Fang Yuan calmed down and started to think.

According to his planning, there should be blue light shining as the water vapor became colder, why was there red light and warmer temperature?

Fang Yuan deduced in his mind, soon, because of his wisdom path attainment level, he found the source of the problem.

It was because he had used two conflicting water path mortal Gu.

Fang Yuan immediately changed one of them, in Reverse Flow River, he could open his immortal aperture and connect to treasure yellow heaven to purchase water path mortal Gu easily.

After modifying the entire immortal killer move, Fang Yuan tried to activate it again for the second time.

Perseverance Immortal Gu was still in use.

The surrounding water path mortal Gu started to rise and fly around it.

First was water vapor and blue light, he soon passed this stage as Fang Yuan used Immortal Gu Pulling Water.

Rank six strength path Immortal Gu Pulling Water.

This was the second core of the immortal killer move.

The first core was undeniably rank seven perseverance Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan was careful.

While activating perseverance Immortal Gu, he activated Pulling Water, it was a very risky thing.

If he could not manage it well, these two Immortal Gu might interfere and cause harm to each other, they might even get destroyed.

Testing immortal killer moves was not just risky to the Gu Immortal, the Immortal Gu and mortal Gu involved were also in danger. And because Immortal Gu themselves were fragments of the Great Dao, when they suffered a backlash, the damage was much more severe.

Fang Yuan was very vigilant, he was quickly rewarded for it.

He met with difficulty.

Although pulling water Immortal Gu was activated and its mystical power was used, it could not integrate into the framework of the move.

“What is the problem?”

Fang Yuan stopped.

A lot of water path mortal Gu were destroyed.

Experimenting with immortal killer moves had a price.

A complete and effective immortal killer move needed conceptualization and experimentation, the Gu Immortal needed to put in a lot of effort and resources.

As the attacks in the outside world continued, Fang Yuan ignored them, he had the sovereign immortal body, his thoughts were produced rapidly as they moved around and collided.

With his wisdom path grandmaster attainment level, wisdom path dao marks, as well as wisdom path methods, his deductions were progressing rapidly.

It was faster this time!

In just a few breaths of time, Fang Yuan found the problem.

The powers of perseverance Immortal Gu and pulling water Immortal Gu could not fuse together, it was because the quantity and types of water path mortal Gu were not appropriate. These mortal Gu were the bridge between the two Immortal Gu, they had the effect of linking them.

Fang Yuan thought about it, he reduced a portion of some water path mortal Gu and while increasing others, at the same time, he added in new water path mortal Gu.

The third activation.

This time, it was smooth sailing, he successfully fused pulling water Immortal Gu into the killer move.

The moment he succeeded, there were waves forming in the Reverse Flow River water below him.

It was finally starting to work!

But he was still far from reaching his goal.

Fang Yuan did not rest, he could not waste time in this situation, he continued experimenting, activating the immortal killer move, his aura strengthened and weakened at times, flickering continuously.

“What is Liu Guan Yi doing?”

“Gu worm auras are appearing on his body from time to time, it looks like he is experimenting with an immortal killer move?”

Other than Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Mao Li Qiu, the other Gu Immortals were just watching.

Every time Fang Yuan experimented with his immortal killer move, the Gu worm auras would leak, it could not be concealed from the Gu Immortals.

If he wanted to conceal the auras, he needed a special immortal killer move.

These types of immortal killer moves were very rare, like Fang Yuan’s dark assassination, it was among these immortal killer moves.

Fang Yuan reached his limits in conceptualized myriad self second style, he could not consider adding aura concealment to it.

But it did not matter.

Gu worm auras alone could not determine the types of Gu worms.

Furthermore, he had just created myriad self second style, it was complex and used many different Gu, it was not possible for them to find out its flaws by watching.

Fourth time, fifth time...

Fang Yuan continued to activate the immortal killer move, sometimes he made great progress, while sometimes, because of some adjustments, he backtracked by several steps.

Fang Yuan was not dejected, he persevered on without any expression.

“He is really testing an immortal killer move.”

“Hehehe, is this Liu Guan Yi an idiot? Creating an immortal killer move on the spot, does he think he is an Immortal Venerable or Demon Venerable?”

“Even if he creates an immortal killer move, I want to see if he can use it to deal with all of us?”

The Gu Immortals watching all commented on Fang Yuan’s naivety and mocked him in disdain.

If immortal killer moves were so easy to create, would they still be immortal killer moves?

But soon, some of their expressions changed.

They found that some mystical changes were occurring in Reverse Flow River.

“Twenty-first try.”

Fang Yuan stretched out his arm, grabbing towards at river below his feet.

“Rise.” At the same time, he muttered lightly.

Bam.

A soft sound occurred as a huge ball appeared on the river surface near him.

This ball was completely made of Reverse Flow River’s water, after rising, it burst as water splattered everywhere.

The killer move activation failed!

Fang Yuan’s nose was bleeding as two streams of blood flowed down.

“His immortal killer move has effect on Reverse Flow River?” Yu Yi Ye Zi saw this and his eyes shined with sharp light.

“No, more accurately speaking, he is using Reverse Flow River to create an immortal killer move!” Bu Zhen Zi said.

“Hmph, laughable.” Black Extremity smiled coldly: “Back then, I used Reverse Flow River to create the sub and main fate reversing refinement formation, it used up several years of my time. Liu Guan Yi, even if you are the Reverse Flow River Lord, you are simply too arrogant, you think you can create an immortal killer move using it in such a short amount of time?”

Evidently, none of the Gu Immortals here thought highly of Fang Yuan’s chances.

But soon, Fang Yuan started his testing again.

Pew!

This time, a small mound appeared on the river surface near him.

The mound quickly collapsed as the water doused Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned pale, his body wavered, not only did he have a nosebleed, even his ears were bleeding.

“I failed again, Man as Before!” At the next moment, he was completely healed.

“I should find the reason for the failure. It seems that a small problem occurred at the final juncture...” Fang Yuan fell into deep contemplation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1289: Reverse Flow Protection Seal

A moment later, Fang Yuan opened his eyes, activating the killer move again.

This time, a segment of Reverse Flow River’s water was moved by him, causing huge waves.

The immortals’ expressions changed.

Even Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s attacks stopped.

But at the next moment, Old Ancestor Xue Hu shouted loudly and erupted with even stronger attacks.

“This is so hard. Because I added in many Gu worms of different types, many problems occurred. But this is already my current limit. To create a concise version, I will need years to deduce, or an increase in my attainment level once again.”

Fang Yuan knew that this myriad self second style had too many Gu worms involved, it was too complex and had many issues to deal with.

While Fang Yuan was sighing at the difficult progress, the other Gu Immortals were filled with shock.

Even though they did not speak, their gazes were flickering.

“Liu Guan Yi, this fellow...”

“Such fast progress! He could really mobilize Reverse Flow River.”

“Unbelievable! Is he really human? He could achieve such progress in this short period of time.”

“No, there is no way he can succeed. How can he really create an immortal killer move in such a short amount of time?”

Undeniably, Fang Yuan’s rapid advancement had broken the common sense of these immortals.

They had never seen a person create an immortal killer move in such a short period of time and gain such rapid improvements through experimentation.

But right now, they were seeing it live.

Fang Yuan continued.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu and the dog tail life extending ferret, Mao Li Qiu, subconsciously increased their attacking power.

But Reverse Flow River was too huge, even after their endless attacks, they consumed less than five percent of the entire river.

“Once more! Rise.” Fang Yuan had a serious expression, he grabbed at the air towards the river below him as he called out.

This time, the entirety of Reverse Flow River was affected, it was like a long dragon awakening from its slumber, it started to stretch its entire body freely.

“How could this happen?!” Someone cried out subconsciously.

The entirety of Reverse Flow River started to fly in the sky like a rising dragon, ready to soar and roam the five regions and nine heavens.

“Wishful thinking!” Old Ancestor Xue Hu shouted, slamming with his palms as an icy light shot out towards Reverse Flow River.

Reverse Flow River was hit and reflected it, the icy light seemed to have collided into a mirror, it was sent right back at him, in the blink of an eye, all of the vast surrounding grassland turned into an icy plain.

Frost energy permeated, the sky was snowing, the temperature was falling.

Strong winds blew intensely, the entire world seemed to have changed colors.

This was the power of a rank eight!

Fang Yuan could not help but feel shocked.

He was temporarily safe in Reverse Flow River, and the other Gu Immortals were protected by their rank eight existences.

Ying Wu Xie was covered in cold sweat, Purple Mountain True Monarch had awakened again at the crucial moment, if not for him, Ying Wu Xie and the rest would not have survived.

“We will leave.” Purple Mountain True Monarch said.

“But this...” Ying Wu Xie hesitated, but Purple Mountain True Monarch waved his hand and several rings of light appeared, capturing Ying Wu Xie and gang, sending them towards the sky.

To think that Shadow Sect was the first to retreat.

Purple Mountain True Monarch left rapidly without saying a word, the Gu Immortals present were stunned.

“Lord, that is the sovereign immortal aperture...” Ying Wu Xie was anxious, he transmitted to Purple Mountain True Monarch.

“Don’t worry, I have already deduced that he won’t die! He can definitely escape.” Purple Mountain True Monarch said confidently.

Ying Wu Xie was not very convinced of Purple Mountain True Monarch’s words, but he could not express his doubts.

But at the next moment, he saw that all of Reverse Flow River started to glow in a bright blue light.

Blue light flickered like rumbling clouds or raging currents.

The immortals’ gazes were all attracted to it.

Fang Yuan stood in the middle, great winds were blowing, causing his hair and sleeves to flutter in the sky.

His eyes were eerie, he said softly: “Rise.”

Instantly, the river water surged and the immortals could hear the sounds of the waves, it resembled the roaring of a thousand men, the scene was domineering and grand.

Immediately after, the blue light condensed, Reverse Flow River shrank, it became a tiny dot in an instant.

The huge Reverse Flow River vanished, it condensed towards Fang Yuan and turned into a light blue colored robe.

This long robe had wide sleeves, it was white like snow. On the surface of the robe, there was slow flowing water, it was the same appearance as Reverse Flow River earlier.

Not just that, the surface of the white robe had faint mist surrounding it. There was also a strip of light that was deep azure, it was curvy and wavy, resembling a long sash, it coiled around Fang Yuan’s arms, the back of his neck, and around his waist again.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Self Second Style — Reverse Flow Protection Seal, had been successfully activated at this moment!

“He succeeded?!”

“Impossible!”

“He actually used Reverse Flow River to create a new immortal killer move in this short time?”

The immortals saw this and became tongue-tied, Old Ancestor Xue Hu was staring fiercely: “I refuse to believe this!”

He thrusted with his palms in Fang Yuan’s direction.

Immediately, an icy light shot out at incredible speed towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was prepared to face it.

The icy light landed on his body, but it was fully blocked by reverse flow protection seal.

Reverse flow protection seal flickered as the terrifying icy light was reflected back at its creator, Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

“Success!” Fang Yuan’s heart was jumping, it gradually calmed down.

Even though the immortal killer move was activated successfully, he needed to test it.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s attack confirmed that Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal was incredibly powerful!

Old Ancestor Xue Hu dodged the icy light, his expression turned ruthless and harsh as he looked at Fang Yuan.

“Let me try.” Mao Li Qiu shouted.

Its body vanished on the spot, at the next moment, it appeared behind Fang Yuan.

Its ruthless claws were raised and they landed harshly.

Boom!

A loud sound could be heard, Fang Yuan flew out like a cannonball that was shot out.

His field of vision changed, Fang Yuan had landed on the ground a breath of time later.

Next, with a loud explosion, a huge crater was formed on the icy ground.

Under everyone’s watchful gazes, Fang Yuan slowly stood up in the deep crater, he was expressionless and his body was intact, there was not even a graze on his skin!

Reverse flow protection seal had turned into a snow-white robe with an azure sash, there were almost no changes to it, but the mist on the surface of the robe had dissipated to a large extent. If one observed closely, the snow-white robe seemed to be covered in a layer of dust, it was no longer as bright as before.

Mao Li Qiu looked at Fang Yuan before turning to look at its claws.

Its right paw was covered in blood, its flesh was exposed now!

Fang Yuan suffered no injuries, while Mao Li Qiu was quite severely injured.

“Gasp...” Sounds could be heard coming from the Gu Immortals present.

“What immortal killer move is this? Even Mao Li Qiu suffered a loss!!”

Seeing this, even Bi Chen Tian’s eyes were twitching rapidly.

“He actually did it!” Black Extremity was speechless, his expression was of utter shock.

“Even an immemorial desolate beast’s physical attack was reflected back?” Old Ancestor Xue Hu frowned deeply.

“How can this be?” Ying Wu Xie, who was far away in the sky, saw this and felt like he was dreaming.

There had never been a case where a rank eight Gu Immortal attacked a rank seven Gu Immortal and resulted in the rank seven Gu Immortal being unharmed, while the rank eight Gu Immortal was actually injured!

Rank eight and rank seven, the former always suppressed the latter.

In the last few thousand years, Feng Jiu Ge was the sole monster who had overwhelming talent, he was unparalleled and could battle rank eight existences.

But now, after Fang Yuan created myriad self second style, and successfully used it, Feng Jiu Ge no longer held this title alone.

From now on, this supreme glory was shared with another person.

Liu Guan Yi!

“Central’s Feng Jiu Ge, North’s Liu Guan Yi...” Bu Zhen Zi muttered in a daze.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu smiled lightly: “Lad, I underestimated you after all.”

His arms were behind his back, he stopped attacking.

But Mao Li Qiu was furious: “Little lad, you are courting death, you dared to make me lose face!!”

The immemorial desolate beast attacked Fang Yuan furiously.

Fang Yuan was not its match, he was slammed away like a rubber ball.

But after dozens of blows, Fang Yuan was unharmed, he still had a pristine air, but Mao Li Qiu was panting roughly, bleeding profusely.

Every one of its attacks was reflected back at itself.

Mao Li Qiu was staring furiously, thinking: “This lad is a porcupine, I’m hurting myself, since when did Northern Plains have such a monster?”

Fang Yuan saw that Mao Li Qiu was at a loss against him and laughed, charging at the Central Continent Gu Immortals.

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were like frightened birds, they dispersed at once.

The two Central Continent rank eights stayed and attacked Fang Yuan.

But it was no use!

Reverse flow protection seal was reflecting their attacks back at them, they landed on Mao Li Qiu, who was chasing after him.

Mao Li Qiu was suffering greatly, so angry it was about to blow up, it spat out a vast amount of purple light, its attack engulfed an enormous surrounding range.

This attack caused a huge battle.

The situation became chaotic, the Gu Immortals of all three sides were attacking.

This was the last thing Ying Wu Xie saw.

He was in deep admiration towards Purple Mountain True Monarch’s decision of retreating.

At the same time, he understood: After this battle, Liu Guan Yi’s name would spread throughout the five regions, it would shock the world, his reputation would rival Feng Jiu Ge!

More than ten days later, a figure in a sorry state passed the regional wall, arriving at Eastern Sea.

It was Fang Yuan.

“I finally got free from that crazy animal.” Fang Yuan sighed deeply.

More than ten days ago, Old Ancestor Xue Hu, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals, and Longevity Heaven engaged in fierce combat, they fought with all they had.

Fang Yuan managed to escape from this chaotic battle, but Mao Li Qiu refused to stop chasing him.

Fang Yuan was not Mao Li Qiu’s match, but after he entered Northern Plains’ regional wall, Mao Li Qiu could only watch helplessly.

It was a wild beast born in Northern Plains, it was restricted by the regional wall.

Fang Yuan managed to escape from these pursuers.

“Time to go back to Southern Border.” Fang Yuan did not stay, he flew into the clouds.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1290: Truce Between Shadow Sect and Fang Yuan?

On the dark stone wall, eerie flames were burning.

The flames were not big, they were like fireflies or lanterns in size.

They were green flames that were cold and icy, the pale flames reflected on the faces of Purple Mountain True Monarch, Ying Wu Xie, Bai Ning Bing, and Hei Lou Lan.

Being the first to leave the Reverse Flow River battle, they were brought here by Purple Mountain True Monarch.

But after that, Purple Mountain True Monarch returned to a state of insanity.

Looking at Purple Mountain True Monarch, who was nibbling on his toes, Bai Ning Bing sneered at Ying Wu Xie: “This is your plan? This is the rank eight great expert who will kill Fang Yuan?”

In this trip to Snowy Mountain blessed land, even though Ying Wu Xie saved Purple Mountain True Monarch, he lost a lot, Shi Nu and Tai Bai Yun Sheng died in battle.

Hei Lou Lan was silent.

This rank eight Gu Immortal was unreliable.

But due to Shadow Sect’s alliance agreement, Hei Lou Lan kept quiet.

Ying Wu Xie was mocked by Bai Ning Bing, but his expression remained the same.

After so many setbacks, he had gained a disposition of being calm no matter the situation.

He slowly spoke: “I underestimated Fang Yuan, to think that he would refine perseverance Immortal Gu and become the Reverse Flow River Lord. No wonder heaven’s will chose him as a tool. This person can only be killed, he cannot be defeated.”

Ying Wu Xie praised Fang Yuan without hesitation.

Even though they were enemies, Ying Wu Xie had an open mind, he admitted that Fang Yuan had both the advantage and superior strength.

Bai Ning Bing snorted coldly, thinking about the scene where Fang Yuan conquered Reverse Flow River, she no longer said anything.

In the tiny cave, only Purple Mountain True Monarch’s screaming echoed throughout the place.

A moment later, Purple Mountain True Monarch stopped shouting, his tiny body shook before he stood up calmly.

He straightened his back, clarity returning to his eyes.

“Lord, you are awake!” Ying Wu Xie was overjoyed, he quickly got closer.

Purple Mountain True Monarch held his forehead, feeling pain in his head, his expression was distorting from the pain.

“Earlier in Reverse Flow River, I forced myself to awaken, thus it was only for a moment. But now is different, I have quite some time left. How long has it been? How did the battle end?”

“It has already been half a month. Fang Yuan escaped Northern Plains through the regional wall, I assume he entered Eastern Sea. After all, he has some foundation in Eastern Sea. As for the battle, the result has yet to be determined. Central Continent’s Gu Immortals wanted to leave, but Old Ancestor Xue Hu pursued them, during the dangerous situation, an Immortal Gu House descended from the sky, as both parties went to fight in white heaven.” Ying Wu Xie answered.

Purple Mountain True Monarch nodded: “This time, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals will likely lose, in the past, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable chose Northern Plains as his domain, how could he not make arrangements here? For example, none of Longevity Heaven’s rank eight Gu Immortals have shown up yet.”

“Lord, what do we do from now on?” Ying Wu Xie asked.

He was once in charge of Shadow Sect, now that Purple Mountain True Monarch woke up, this rank eight great expert was naturally going to lead Shadow Sect, Ying Wu Xie had to step down.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was about to speak when the sound of winds echoed in this cave.

Next, the eerie fire on the cave walls started flickering intensely, as if a strong wind was blowing.

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s gaze flickered: “I arranged this cave as one of our escape methods. These eerie fires were nurtured by me to create a natural Gu formation, it allows us to defend against deductions from others. When I was insane, how many times did they flicker?”

“A hundred and seven times.” Bai Ning Bing said plainly.

“I am afraid Fang Yuan’s deductions are included in this. His investigative killer move can use the profundities of luck path and find our locations. Even inside an immortal aperture, we cannot hide from him.” Ying Wu Xie said grimly.

Purple Mountain True Monarch nodded: “Fang Yuan is indeed worthy of being the person nurtured by heaven’s will, as the crucial key to deal with our Shadow Sect. This person is very daring and has incredible talent, his willpower is unparalleled, he is truly an absolute genius seen once in ten thousand years.”

Purple of Shadow Sect actually gave Fang Yuan such a high evaluation.

But the three Gu Immortals present were silent, they agreed with Purple Mountain True Monarch’s words.

Purple Mountain True Monarch continued: “And now, our plan is to reach a truce with Fang Yuan.”

These were shocking words.

“What, a truce?” Ying Wu Xie and the rest were shocked.

“Is that very strange?” Purple Mountain True Monarch looked at the three.

He was very clear of the current situation. When he woke up, Ying Wu Xie had used information path methods to inform Purple Mountain True Monarch of everything he knew.

“You are all too young, you know too little. Our biggest enemy now is not Fang Yuan but Heavenly Court.” Purple Mountain True Monarch shook his head, looking at Ying Wu Xie: “Do you think rescuing our main body’s soul is easy? Other than the super Gu formation in Southern Border, and that giant dream realm, I can assure you that when we strike, Heavenly Court will interfere! Like on Yi Tian Mountain, they used Heaven Overseeing Tower and attempted to thwart our plan. Or like this time, when they went to Snowy Mountain blessed land to save Ma Hong Yun.”

Ying Wu Xie’s expression was grim: “Lord, I considered that before, but our main body is in great danger, he is trapped by the dream realm and is being consumed by it, that’s why I was so anxious...”

“That is exactly why we need to cooperate with Fang Yuan.” Purple Mountain True Monarch added.

“Firstly, Fang Yuan’s strength is already extraordinary, that immortal killer move alone can stand up to rank eight Gu Immortals.”

“Secondly, Fang Yuan is a complete otherworldly demon, he is listed on the Demon Judgment Board, and is a common enemy of Heavenly Court.”

“Finally, cooperating is a win-win situation for us. Our Shadow Sect has huge amounts of cultivation resources, while he has the killer move to unravel dreams, he can help us conquer the giant dream realm and save our main body’s soul.”

Ying Wu Xie frowned deeply, he cast aside his personal emotions and tried to consider the possibility of this.

But soon, he expressed his worries: “Fang Yuan is scheming and vicious, he thinks of us as huge threats, he wants to eliminate us all. Now that he is the Reverse Flow River Lord, he is already able to contest with rank eight existences. We desperately need methods to unravel dreams, while he needs cultivation resources less urgently. It is hard for us to cooperate.”

Purple Mountain True Monarch nodded: “You are completely right, but do you know about the biggest flaw of the sovereign immortal body?”

“What do you mean? You mean the non-conflicting dao marks of the sovereign immortal body?” Ying Wu Xie asked in confusion.

“Of course not. Non-conflicting dao marks are the sovereign immortal body’s biggest advantage, far surpassing the weaknesses that they bring. What I mean is that hidden problem!” Purple Mountain True Monarch shook his head.

“There is an important hidden problem?” Ying Wu Xie was shocked.

“Our original plan was to refine a rank ten sovereign immortal fetus Gu. Only rank ten sovereign immortal fetus Gu can be considered perfect without any flaws. But evidently, we only refined a rank nine version, that huge drawback has not shown itself yet, but it will force Fang Yuan to cooperate with us regardless.” Purple Mountain True Monarch said.

The sovereign immortal body had a major flaw!

As for what flaw it was that made Purple Mountain True Monarch so certain that it would restrict Fang Yuan?

Ying Wu Xie and the rest were curious, but Purple Mountain True Monarch did not answer it.

At the same time, Purple Mountain True Monarch had his own questions and suspicions.

“Strange.”

“From Ying Wu Xie’s information, our sect refined sovereign immortal fetus Gu very hurriedly. It is not like our original plan.”

“What is the reason that made our main body act so urgently?”

“It seems that alongside getting in contact with Fang Yuan, I need to make a trip to the River of Time!”

Eastern Sea.

Above the blue sea, Fang Yuan rapidly moved through the white clouds, his target was Southern Border.

“Happening again!” While flying, Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

He could sense that the power of Dark Limit on him was rapidly consumed. This consumption was so fast that it was going to be used up soon.

Evidently, a great expert was deducing matters about him.

When he saw that no one was around, Fang Yuan quickly placed his immortal aperture.

After entering the immortal aperture, isolating him from the outside world, and preventing the deduction of the other party, Fang Yuan's danger of getting exposed was alleviated.

Fang Yuan sighed.

After the battle of Reverse Flow River, he was met with countless deductions.

Liu Guan Yi's identity became extremely famous.

Not just Northern Plains and Central Continent, even Eastern Sea, Southern Border, and Western Desert Gu Immortals were very curious about Liu Guan Yi, they wanted to deduce more information about him.

Liu Guan Yi was a fake identity, but he was still Fang Yuan.

This way, Fang Yuan endured all of the pressure.

Even with dark limit Immortal Gu, he had to constantly stop and hide inside his immortal aperture.

Along the way, Fang Yuan met with about four to five hundred deductions.

This greatly interfered with his traveling, he had to constantly stop, and resulted in him still being in Eastern Sea now.

With his usual speed, he would be in Southern Border already.

“If not for dark limit Immortal Gu, the situation would be worse.”

“However, it is to be expected that I created such a huge commotion. After all, people are putting me in the same class as Feng Jiu Ge.”

“When I destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and Imperial Court blessed land, I had Shadow Sect's help and felt no pressure, but now I do. It seems that getting an immortal killer move to deal with these deductions is necessary.”

Fang Yuan was a wisdom path grandmaster, deducing an immortal killer move was not impossible. But it would not be as easy as creating reverse flow protection seal.

After all, when deducing reverse flow protection seal, there were many elements involved other than his water path attainment level.

Most importantly, he had the appropriate Immortal Gu along with a strong foundation, thus he met with no problems.

But currently, the Immortal Gu that suited this was Dark Limit, it was not wisdom path but dark path instead.

Fang Yuan's dark path attainment level was not outstanding.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1291: Huge Assets

While evading deductions, Fang Yuan did not waste time, he inspected his immortal aperture.

Five regions, nine heavens.

The sizes were incredible, beyond this world’s common sense.

335000km2 of space was already shockingly huge, nobody would believe it if they heard of it.

But now, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture had exceeded 335000km2 of space already.

This was because he had been slaughtering Gu Immortals and annexing their immortal apertures recently.

Because of the sovereign immortal body’s special characteristics, Fang Yuan could completely annex other people’s blessed lands and absorb all their dao marks without any wastage.

These immortal apertures added up to create many unique areas in the sovereign immortal aperture.

These areas were mainly managed by land spirits, Fang Yuan could save a lot of effort. They were like tiny pearls scattered all over the five regions and nine heavens.

“I have incredible amounts of space path resources. Normal Gu Immortals try by all means possible to expand their immortal apertures, but I have so much space that I have yet to develop.”

Fang Yuan was satisfied with this, on the other hand, regarding the time path resources, he had a different feeling.

The sovereign immortal aperture’s rate of time had slowed a lot.

It was one-to-sixty earlier, this was simply unmatched!

But now, it was below normal standards.

This was something he had no other way to deal with.

Before Fang Yuan changed his cultivation method, in order to stall calamities and tribulations, he had to do this.

He used the time path methods in Hei Fan’s true inheritance to slow the time in his immortal aperture, with fewer time path resources now, Fang Yuan’s immortal essence production fell greatly, not just that, all of his gains in his other resources also fell.

Thinking over it in detail.

Inside Mini Central Continent, there was the blood zhi forest, and mirror willows, they were from Hu Immortal blessed land. Other than these, there was a small jade light pit.

This small jade light pit had light path mortal Gu in it, the quantity was large.

This was created in his immortal aperture after Fang Yuan took reference from the jade light pit resource point of Northern Plains’ Liu tribe.

Not long ago, Fang Yuan ransacked the jade light pit and took away all of the light path mortal Gu in it.

A portion of the light path Gu worms were placed into the aurora lights in the nine heavens, but the rest could not be sold easily.

Fang Yuan thus created a small jade light pit to temporarily store these light path mortal Gu.

Of course, this small jade light pit could not compare with the genuine article. The latter was a true resource point, it had a lot of light path dao marks and any insect group placed in it would become Gu over time. But the former was only created by Fang Yuan haphazardly to store his light path Gu worms, it had no production capabilities.

Mini Central Continent had the least development among the five mini regions.

Mini Northern Plains was at a higher level.

Mini Northern Plains had flat terrain that was mostly covered in snow and ice, becoming an icy plain.

But snow and ice were not its only features.

Closer to Eastern Sea, there was a shallow green beach, pieces of rocks were piled together to form a special lake. The aquatic plants inside were growing well, as spirit snakes lived in it.

This shallow beach was the blessed land of transformation path Gu Immortal Han Dong, after Fang Yuan annexed it, even the pinkish red spirit snake land spirit was moved over and managed the area for him.

Nearer to Western Desert, there was a bone burial field.

There was a mountain of skeletons here of all types, collarbones, skulls, leg bones, even those from flying animals, there were lots of immortal materials that were very valuable.

This bone burial field was the bone burial field that Fang Yuan took from Liu tribe.

After killing Liu tribe Gu Immortal Liu Yong, he moved this bone burial field directly into his immortal aperture.

Thus, he had this resource point that could generate bone path Gu worms.

“But compared to the original bone burial field, my bone burial field may have a lot of bones, but the bone path dao marks cannot match the original. In the original bone burial field, even the surrounding soil had bone path dao marks. Liu tribe can rebuild their bone burial field with no problems.”

Fang Yuan knew this deeply.

Of course, Fang Yuan had already taken eighty percent of this bone burial field, the most valuable thing were these bones.

The remaining twenty percent was the soil terrain, Liu tribe could rebuild their bone burial field, but to regain its former scale, they would need to expend a lot of resources.

And closer to Central Continent.

This was a sparse grassland with all sorts of wildflowers and grass, there were mainly blood sickle grass and red axe flowers.

These were from Hu Immortal blessed land too.

This grassland was huge, surpassing Han Dong blessed land. There were some pink flower rabbits, fox groups, water wolf groups, earth skin boar groups, poison beard wolf groups, and others, there was even a shark fin wolf and a desolate beast giant horned sheep, they were living in this grassland.

Mini Western Desert had the highest temperature.

Because most of the fire path dao marks were gathered here, the soil was sandy.

There were three main resource points here.

The first were the eerie fire dragon python dens, there were a lot of them in a particular area.

The second was the the sand gull soil beach.

It produced sand gull soil.

Sand gull soil was a Gu material, it was also the food of connect luck Immortal Gu.

But Fang Yuan did not have connect luck Immortal Gu anymore, sand gull soil was now a resource sold to help Fang Yuan earn immortal essence stones.

At the center of the sand gull soil, there was the dead egg of the worldly sand gull. It was filled with cracks, there were several small holes on it, as transparent egg white flowed out of the cracks slowly. Using the life essence in this egg, one could turn ordinary sand into sand gull soil.

The third was the rotten black swamp. This was formed when Fang Yuan went through tribulation, it was filled with dark path dao marks. Fang Yuan had already modified it to become a dark path Gu worm resource point now, but because it had just been made, its production was low.

Other than these three resource points, there were two blessed lands.

One was an earth path blessed land resembling a rotting swamp, there were five desolate beast mud monsters inside, and all sorts of earth path mortal Gu, it was managed by the small mudman land spirit.

The other was Liu Yong’s enslavement path blessed land, there were more than twenty dog desolate beasts in it. These desolate beasts were all purchased in treasure yellow heaven by Fang Yuan. This was because Liu Yong blessed land’s ownership requirement was to have twenty hound type desolate beasts. Among those were his six bone armor hounds. The entire blessed land was managed by a black hound land spirit.

Mini Eastern Sea’s development was about the same as Mini Western Desert.

Wu Yi Hai’s blessed land was here.

This was a sea that was well managed by Wu Yi Hai, there were three ancient desolate beast horned divine tortoises, a huge field of ancient desolate plant silent corals, and six desolate beast white letter blue feather seagulls, managed by the sea turtle land spirit.

Other than that, there was the original dragonfish group and two desolate beast dragonfish, air bubble fish group, as well as some rare literature carps and some oil water. There were large numbers of blue jade carps, blood jade carps, and an ancient desolate beast hidden room oyster (obtained in the turbulent flow sea area).

There was another blood lake, it had a large amount of desolate beast blood and Gu Immortal blood, Fang Yuan had once placed blood asset Immortal Gu here to recover.

Right now, blood asset Immortal Gu had fully recovered, but this blood lake remained.

In the five mini regions, Mini Southern Border was the richest.

Five Light Mountain, Immortal Succession Mountain, Heaven Sealing Mountain and others, for a total of more than ten mountains here.

Stalactite cave, regretful spider group, a small number of rockmen, a huge forest with musical trees, tea streams, and qi death birds singing.

There was a Become Dragon Mound, Fang Yuan had used pulling mountain Immortal Gu to move it into his immortal aperture from Northern Plains.

And in the nine heavens.

A small field of aurora lights were in Mini Orange Heaven. There were a lot of floating flowing light fruits in the aurora lights, and because he had obtained a lot of light path Gu worms from the jade light pit, the scale of the aurora lights and flowing light fruits expanded greatly on its original foundation.

And in Mini Yellow Heaven, there was a small gold fragment current.

In Mini Azure Heaven, there was a lot of pill azure incense, this was the food of change soul Immortal Gu. There was a heavenly crystal storage pool, it came from Hei Fan grotto-heaven and had no use for now.

Mini Black Heaven had the walking meat tree, Mini White Heaven had multicolored overlord flowers, three ancient remnant heavenly dogs, one ancient eagle hound, and seven desolate beast eagle hounds.

Mini Purple Heaven had the upper extreme heavenly eagle, although it had only desolate beast strength. More than eighty eagle nests were floating here. These were the loot from attacking Iron Eagle blessed land. The original eagle nest had already been fully eaten by the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

In Mini Blue Heaven, there was a lot of cloud soil, on top of them were the arrow bamboo forest, a star fragment grass field, and an infant falling star hound. The two desolate beast spinefin star dragonfish had already been sold, during the battle to defend Hei Fan grotto-heaven.

There was also a meteorite pit that produced stellar fire Gu and falling meteor Gu. After killing Ye Lui Qun Xing and obtaining his blessed land, Fang Yuan also placed it here, it was a floating island filled with star fragments, the star core land spirit was managing it.

There were also some blessed lands scattered around, and some other desolate beasts and desolate plants, there was no need to discuss them in detail.

As for Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley, they were in Lang Ya blessed land.

Reverse Flow River was temporarily placed in Mini Eastern Sea by Fang Yuan.

As for Gu worms —

Rank nine wisdom Gu was in Lang Ya blessed land. Sovereign immortal fetus Gu had already been used, it would not be counted.

Rank eight Immortal Gu: Attitude, Wisdom Sword, Years Flow Like Water (sealed).

Rank seven Immortal Gu: Sword Eyebrows, Wave Sword, Flying Sword, Sword Escape, Calamity Beckoning (with Chu Du), Year, After, Dragon Breath, Affection, Perseverance.

Rank six Immortal Gu: Unravel Mystery, Woman’s Heart, Blood Asset, Dark Limit, Dog Shit Luck, Change Form, Strength Qi, Self Strength, Flying Bear Strength, Pulling Mountain, Pulling Water, Landscape as Before, Man as Before, Star Eyes, Spring Autumn Cicada (contains heaven’s will, stored in the immortal zombie body), Bone Spike, Perceivable Dao.

The mortal Gu were of all different types, they will be skipped.

Hei Cheng’s dark arrow Immortal Gu had self-detonated, Fang Yuan did not obtain it.

In terms of captives, there was Fang Zheng (in Lang Ya blessed land), Hei Cheng (intact body), Ma Hong Yun’s soul, Liu Yong’s soul, Ye Lui Qun Xing’s soul. As for Shi Nu’s soul, Fang Yuan did not obtain it. Shadow Sect had incredible attainment in soul path, Fang Yuan could not stop the soul from dissipating even though he captured it.

As for the rest, like Dong Fang Chang Fan’s soul, the featherman Gu Immortal’s soul, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals’ souls, they were all sold to Lang Ya land spirit for sect contribution points. They were probably absorbed by Dang Hun Mountain and made into guts Gu by now.

There was also the featherman Gu Immortal slave Zhou Zhong, he was sent to Western Desert by Fang Yuan to establish another plan.

Huge assets!

This was Fang Yuan’s current portfolio, it was no exaggeration.

In total, even though he was rank seven, he could fully rival ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals in assets.

Just those secluded domains of heaven and earth were incredibly valuable. And his Gu worms were plentiful, the number shockingly high!

Look at Gu Immortal Hei Fan, he was a rank eight Gu Immortal. how many Immortal Gu did he have?

But many Immortal Gu would create the problem of feeding them.

Fang Yuan was still at this stage, trying to provide food for his Immortal Gu.

The rank six and seven Immortal Gu were basically fine. The problems were attitude Gu and wisdom sword Immortal Gu, these two rank eight Immortal Gu.

The new perseverance Gu that he obtained fed on Reverse Flow River’s water, Fang Yuan could easily feed it. Affection Gu fed on the same thing as love Gu, hope and fear, Fang Yuan could easily resolve that, he bought a large number of hope Gu and fear Gu from treasure yellow heaven.

For Fang Yuan, developing his immortal aperture was not the main point now.

As long as he slaughtered Gu Immortals and annexed their immortal apertures, his immortal aperture’s foundation would continue to grow.

He was facing the problem of insufficient immortal essence.

Pursuing Ying Wu Xie and gang, the Reverse Flow River battle, and escaping from Mao Li Qiu, Fang Yuan expended a lot of immortal essence.

This caused his red date immortal essence storage to fall to a critical level.

“Originally, with my time path resources, the rate of time was fast, my immortal aperture produced a lot of red date immortal essence.”

“But after using my time path methods, the immortal aperture’s time is close to the five regions’ time, I can only replenish my immortal essence through transactions.”

Reverse flow protection seal used a lot of the Gu Immortal’s mental energy and immortal essence.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan was a rank seven Gu Immortal now, if he was still using green grape immortal essence, he would have ran out of them.

Without red date immortal essence, Fang Yuan did not have much confidence.

While resting, he sold all of the desolate beast corpses in treasure yellow heaven.

These desolate beast corpses were immortal materials of high quantity. Fang Yuan had exterminated these desolate beast groups while he was pursuing Ying Wu Xie in Earth Trench.

Among them were a group of nightmare demonic colts, if these dream path immortal materials were sold in treasure yellow heaven, a huge commotion would arise, many Gu Immortals would fight for them.

But Fang Yuan kept all of these nightmare demonic colt corpses with him, he had better use for them.

After resting for a while, he made several transactions.

After subtracting the transaction fees of treasure yellow heaven, Fang Yuan earned a lot of immortal essence stones.

One immortal essence stone could convert to one bead of green grape immortal essence.

Fang Yuan was a rank seven Gu Immortal, using a hundred immortal essence stones would create one bead of red date immortal essence.

While he was replenishing his red date immortal essence stockpile, he received some information.

“This is a letter from Sixth Hair.”

Fang Yuan felt strange.

After checking it, he felt shocked: “Shadow Sect wants to negotiate a truce with me, they even want us to work together?”

Author’s Note: Collating Fang Yuan’s assets was too tiring!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1292: Attitude Gu’s Problem

Fang Yuan’s gaze was flickering.

Shadow Sect’s letter was out of his expectations.

But thinking about it, it was completely logical.

In the battle of Reverse Flow River, even though Fang Yuan did not obtain a lot of cultivation resources, his battle strength rose drastically, he was at the level of the strongest person under rank eight, on par with Feng Jiu Ge.

The increase in his battle strength gave rise to his heightened status.

Actually, before this letter, he also received others.

Like the one from Chu Du. Chu Du spoke very politely in the letter, congratulating Fang Yuan for his victory and expressing regret at not being there. Next, he talked about his own situation, Chu Sect was now Chu tribe, and the supreme elders were now all external supreme elders. The disciples of Chu Du were his god-children now, and finally, Chu Du talked about his own difficulties, because he created a tribe and became part of the righteous path, he had to expel Fang Yuan from Chu Sect. This was not his own wish, he was forced to do so.

There was also one from the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics. Other than congratulating Fang Yuan, they invited him enthusiastically to explore Crazed Demon Cave. They said: Even if Northern Plains did not welcome him, Crazed Demon Cave would always be his home. These words were very mushy, it showed their brand new attitude towards him.

Regarding Longevity Heaven, they were putting up arrest warrants for Fang Yuan. After all, he killed Ma Hong Yun.

However, Liu tribe and Ye Lui tribe, who were pursuing Fang Yuan earlier, had quietened down.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength shocked them completely. They quickly recalled the members they sent out to find him.

Instead, they were afraid that Fang Yuan would take revenge on them. After all, Fang Yuan’s strength was incredibly famous in Northern Plains now, well beyond Chu Du.

“And now, Shadow Sect has sent a letter seeking cooperation. Hehe.”

“Shadow Sect has a rank eight Gu Immortal, but he has a major weakness, he becomes insane at times.” Fang Yuan thought about it, he had fought Purple Mountain True Monarch in Reverse Flow River, he learned something about his condition.

Actually, if Fang Yuan did not refine perseverance Gu and create the immortal killer move reverse flow protection seal, he would have likely lost in the battle of Reverse Flow River, he would have fallen into Ying Wu Xie’s trap.

All along, Shadow Sect’s remnant forces were Fang Yuan’s biggest threat. Heaven’s will set an arrangement using Fang Yuan to steal sovereign immortal fetus Gu, causing Fang Yuan and Shadow Sect to have unresolvable enmity.

If Shadow Sect wanted to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu again, they would follow a method similar to what Old Ancestor Xue Hu was using to refine Fortune Rivalling Heaven, he used Ma Hong Yun as the main material for the Gu refinement.

If Fang Yuan ended up in Shadow Sect’s hands, he would not escape that fate, he would be used as the immortal material for that Gu refinement, he would be better off dead.

But now, Fang Yuan’s strength grew to a point where he could stand up to rank eight Gu Immortals, thus, Shadow Sect sought cooperation with him.

This difference in attitude made Fang Yuan sigh deeply.

Reverse flow protection seal was like a weaker Immortal Gu House, he could be unscathed against rank eights, this gave Fang Yuan a lot of confidence.

“But cooperating with Shadow Sect is like walking on a tightrope!”

Even though Sixth Hair was saying the truth, and the reasons he gave were legitimate, there were indeed benefits to all of them if they cooperated. Disregarding anything else, just the soul path trap in Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body, and the secret of the sovereign immortal body, could be settled if they cooperated.

However, Fang Yuan could not trust Shadow Sect!

It was still the same problem.

Fang Yuan and Shadow Sect could not trust each other.

They were mortal enemies, how could they easily turn into allies?

Even if they were rational people who prioritized benefits, the basis of cooperation between Gu Immortals was not a person’s reputation, but their information path methods instead.

However, Fang Yuan was lacking in information path, this was his weakness. And Shadow Sect possessed powerful information path methods.

Spectral Soul was a great grandmaster in all paths, ignoring everything else, just looking at Zombie Alliance and the organization ‘Defy’ in Central Continent, they had used very powerful information path methods. Any organization was built upon the basis of alliance agreements.

Fang Yuan could not trust Shadow Sect and did not dare to. If by cooperating, he was plotted against by them using information path methods, he would be an idiot.

However, Fang Yuan did not reject them.

He sent back a letter to probe Shadow Sect’s sincerity. In the letter, he listed a request — Give me attitude Gu directly if you want to cooperate.

Speaking of which, even though Fang Yuan had been using attitude Gu all along, it was not his, it was borrowed from Hei Lou Lan.

Back then, when lending the Immortal Gu, both sides had an agreement, there was a time when he needed to return it.

If he went past the time limit, Fang Yuan would not be able to use attitude Gu. That was because Hei Lou Lan’s will was inside attitude Gu, not Fang Yuan’s.

And now, there was little time until the deadline.

Attitude Gu was a legendary Gu worm that could be used with mental energy alone, it had outstanding effects with relatively low costs. Ever since Fang Yuan obtained it, he had passed many difficulties with its huge help. Even though attitude Gu had no offensive methods, it was legendary in the support aspect, it had unlimited uses.

Without attitude Gu, the influence on Fang Yuan would be huge.

Firstly, familiar face would be unusable. Even though Fang Yuan could use his transformation path grandmaster attainment level to redesign this immortal killer move, without that rank eight core, the entire immortal killer move would weaken severely. The chance of getting exposed when he pretended to be Wu Yi Hai would be huge, it was very dangerous.

“If I can use this opportunity to resolve attitude Gu’s problem, that would be best.” Fang Yuan was feeling somewhat hopeful.

It was about time, Fang Yuan used dark limit Immortal Gu to increase its effect on him.

Next, he stored his immortal aperture and set off.

Towards the southwest direction.

Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

Inside the hall, Fairy Zi Wei sat as she used her immortal killer move.

Her entire body was emitting faint purple smoke from all of her pores.

She was using wisdom path methods to deduce.

Soon after, Fairy Zi Wei’s forehead was full of sweat as she opened her eyes.

“I have already used seven killer moves, but I could not deduce the location of our Gu Immortals.” Fairy Zi Wei sighed.

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals attacked Northern Plains, after the battle of Reverse Flow River, Fang Yuan fled the scene as Central Continent fought against Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Longevity Heaven in an intense battle.

Central Continent wanted to reinforce them and send help.

But this first batch of Central Continent Gu Immortals had gone missing in black heaven. Fairy Zi Wei could not deduce their locations, how could she save them? There was nowhere to send these reinforcements to!

Duke Long beside her opened his eyes.

He was still very weak, he was thin and frail like an old man.

“It seems that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made many arrangements in Northern Plains, have you deduced Liu Guan Yi’s location?” Duke Long asked.

Fairy Zi Wei shook her head: “He seems to have defensive methods to resist wisdom path deductions, but they are not strong. However, we know too little about him. If we had some crucial information, he would be exposed to us.”

Duke Long heard this and nodded, after a while, he spoke: “So be it, continue deducing the location of our Gu Immortals, as well as Liu Guan Yi. Also, send me to Hidden Dragon Cave.”

Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan sighed helplessly, he had to place his immortal aperture down again.

Liu Guan Yi was famous in all five regions, Dark Limit’s power was constantly being consumed on Fang Yuan’s body, at a rapid rate.

To maintain his secret, Fang Yuan had to stop many times.

His immortal aperture’s entrance opened, he drew in large amounts of heaven and earth qi.

The sovereign immortal body could absorb heaven and earth qi from all five regions.

Ordinary Gu Immortals could only absorb the heaven and earth qi of their region, if they placed their aperture in other regions, even though they could absorb it forcefully, because of the differing heaven and earth qi, their immortal apertures would shake and many resources would be destroyed.

Right now, the sovereign immortal aperture had too many resources, along with desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts. Each time he absorbed heaven and earth qi, the commotion was huge, it was like a typhoon occurring.

Especially after he obtained Reverse Flow River, this secluded domain of heaven and earth had a heavy burden on the immortal aperture.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1293: Thoughts of Trading Gu

It was fine if Reverse Flow River was outside, but if it stayed in the immortal aperture for long, it would consume a lot of heaven and earth qi. Once he lacked heaven and earth qi, his immortal aperture would be unstable.

Thus, Fang Yuan had to constantly place his immortal aperture outside to absorb heaven and earth qi and replenish it.

After he finished his absorption, Fang Yuan closed his immortal aperture’s entrance.

Arriving at Reverse Flow River, he held an immortal zombie body.

It was his original body.

He tossed the immortal zombie into Reverse Flow River.

The immortal zombie body flowed along it.

Using perseverance Immortal Gu and Reverse Flow River, Fang Yuan made his experiments, he used all of the methods he could think of.

However, it was pointless.

“As expected.”

“The immortal zombie body’s soul path dao marks cannot be destroyed or suppressed by Reverse Flow River. After all, these are soul path dao marks, not Immortal Gu.”

“Rank one to eight Immortal Gu cannot be used in Reverse Flow River. But dao marks still work. It is like before, before I conquered Reverse Flow River, my dao marks still defended me. Thus, rank eight Gu Immortals were the strongest in that river.”

Fang Yuan continued to analyze and think about his failed experiment.

He wanted to use Reverse Flow River to resolve his soul path trap, it was impossible.

Fang Yuan was not disheartened, in fact, he had expected this before trying it.

He placed the immortal zombie body back inside Heaven Sealing Mountain, using the Gu formation to seal it again.

Next, he refined Gu.

A nightmare demonic colt corpse was in front of him.

Fang Yuan’s fingers moved like blades, golden light shone as he move them.

The golden light entered the nightmare demonic colt’s body and vanished. The nightmare demonic colt’s front leg was cut off.

There was no blood.

These nightmare demonic colts died in battle, Fang Yuan asked his immortal aperture’s land spirits to process these materials first. The blood had been drained and kept elsewhere.

Fang Yuan lifted the leg and immediately tore it away.

Next, he breathed out fire and started to process this leg.

Three days later, the leg was finally melted into a dark purple liquid.

Fang Yuan continued to throw in Gu worms to refine Gu.

Over a dozen steps took up only fifteen minutes.

The dark purple liquid exploded, as a hundred dream path mortal Gu flew around chaotically in the sky.

But Fang Yuan willed and they quickly went back to Fang Yuan’s side.

A hundred dream path mortal Gu!

This was only a leg of this nightmare demonic colt.

Processing this immortal material took the most time. This step took three days. The rest of the steps only took less than an hour.

Such efficiency was very high, it was a clear contrast to Fang Yuan refining Gu in his dream realm previously.

In the dream realm, Fang Yuan had to collect dream path Gu materials before refining Gu. There was a risk in entering the dream, he even sometimes had to use the immortal killer move, unravel dream, to pass the dream realm. Refining dream path mortal Gu but using immortal killer moves, the cost was very high.

But now, Fang Yuan had these nightmare demonic colts, refining these dream path mortal Gu was no longer like before.

“It is like earlier, when I used the spring dream fruit to refine mortal Gu, the efficiency was great.”

“Actually, my Gu refinement method can be improved. Like the cutting method earlier, I used metal path methods, it was not the best, some of the dream path dao marks were consumed. When processing immortal materials, I can try other methods to see if there is a better way.”

While he was refining Gu, Sixth Hair sent another letter.

Using Lang Ya blessed land, Sixth Hair was already the middleman between Fang Yuan and Purple Mountain True Monarch.

In the letter, Purple Mountain True Monarch did not give in, he said bluntly: If Fang Yuan wanted to control attitude Gu, he would need to cooperate first. As long as they worked together, attitude Gu would be his. This time, Shadow Sect even mentioned the sovereign immortal aperture’s drawback, as for what it was, they did not say it.

“Rank eight Gu Immortals are truly hard to deal with.”

“Drawback? Is Shadow Sect lying, or is it true?”

This information had a huge impact on Fang Yuan.

But soon, he calmed down.

He had gone through many difficulties, this scheme or threat was nothing to him.

“It seems I can only work hard myself.”

Fang Yuan sent a letter, he bargained and continued negotiating with Shadow Sect.

But he had already realized that Shadow Sect would not give attitude Gu to him before cooperating.

Fang Yuan started to design a new immortal killer move.

He wanted to use this immortal killer move to refine attitude Gu.

He was soon met with a problem, the reason was that even though he had many Immortal Gu, they were not suitable for this purpose.

It was not like the creation of reverse flow protection seal.

Fang Yuan had pulling water Immortal Gu and perseverance Immortal Gu, they were suitable as the two cores of this immortal killer move.

But now, Fang Yuan’s other Immortal Gu were not especially useful for refining attitude Gu, they had limited connection to it and a lot of mortal Gu were needed.

“If only there is a chance to trade Gu.”

This thought appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind and rooted itself deeply.

Trading Immortal Gu!

Fang Yuan had too many Immortal Gu now, it was shocking.

But in fact, a portion of the Immortal Gu were not suitable for him, or rather, they did not have much use for the time being.

Wisdom Sword, Years Flow Like Water, even though they were not usable now, they were rank eight, Fang Yuan would not exchange them.

Fang Yuan did not have many sword path dao marks, his sword path attainment level was ordinary as well, but Sword Eyebrows, Wave Sword, and Sword Escape, these sword path Immortal Gu sustained a portion of his battle strength, he could not lose them.

Looking over the situation, change soul Immortal Gu could be traded.

Woman’s Heart was poison path, it had little use as well.

Flying bear strength Immortal Gu was strength path, but Fang Yuan used ancient sword dragon transformation, this Immortal Gu was not useful.

There was also bone spike Immortal Gu, it was completely irrelevant to Fang Yuan’s current circumstances.

Perceivable dao Immortal Gu could inspect dao marks, it had a mystical use, but to Fang Yuan, it was not very useful, he had to weigh up its value later.

All in all, Woman’s Heart, Flying Bear Strength, and Bone Spike, these three Immortal Gu had little use to Fang Yuan, if they could be traded for other Immortal Gu, that would be best.

But trading Gu, how difficult was that?

During the five regions chaotic war, it was very common. But now, there were few opportunities for Gu Immortals to undergo high end trading sessions.

This way, Fang Yuan continued to travel and stop.

He wanted to go faster, but it was too difficult.

Along the way, when placing his immortal aperture, he refined dream path mortal Gu and deduced immortal killer moves, attempting to refine attitude Gu to make it his own.

This time, as Fang Yuan stored his immortal aperture and prepared to set off, his expression suddenly changed, he noticed traces of Gu Immortals fighting.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1294: Reappearance of Chu Ying

“We’re finally past the regional wall.” Ying Wu Xie let out a breath of air, looking at the sea, he felt mentally fatigued.

Hei Lou Lan and Bai Ning Bing, who were beside him, were in no better condition.

After leaving Northern Plains, Shadow Sect’s group left for Eastern Sea. They did not have the sovereign immortal body, each time they passed the regional wall, it was a huge test.

Thankfully, they were all powerful and were elites among Gu Immortals. Even though their immortal apertures were damaged, they did not die.

They were not leaving urgently.

After entering Eastern Sea, they chose a random island.

On this nameless island, Ying Wu Xie directed Bai Ning Bing and Hei Lou Lan to start arranging a refinement path Gu formation.

The Gu formation succeeded in activation, Ying Wu Xie came to the center and took out the purple gold rock, processing this immortal material.

As for Bai Ning Bing and Hei Lou Lan, they were outside the Gu formation, standing to defend against any intruders.

Not long after, the purple gold rock melted as the miniman Gu Immortal, Purple Mountain, True Monarch woke up again.

He was a rank eight Gu Immortal, if he wanted to cross the five regions, he would normally have to use black heaven or white heaven. But now, the parts of black heaven and white heaven above Northern Plains were influenced by Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, it was controlled by Longevity Heaven.

Shadow Sect’s group were not going to enter a trap. The outcome of Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were displayed to them.

Shadow Sect had deep foundation, Purple Mountain True Monarch went into hibernation again as a purple gold rock formed around his body.

His aura was completely concealed, his vitality was indiscernible, he was just like a dead object.

Using such incredible methods, Ying Wu Xie brought Purple Mountain True Monarch through the regional walls and arrived in Eastern Sea.

The thin layer of purple gold rock was easily refined by Ying Wu Xie, who had the right method, it was way easier than the time when Lady Wan Shou had to process it.

“Eastern Sea...” Purple Mountain True Monarch woke up and sighed as he looked at the vast sea area.

Under his lead, Shadow Sect’s group first dismantled the Gu formation and stored its components, wiping all traces of it.

Then, the four Gu Immortals started to use the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel.

A moment later, they arrived in the turbulent flow sea area.

Purple Mountain True Monarch led the way, none of the sea currents could pose as obstacles.

Soon, Shadow Sect’s group arrived at the center of the turbulent flow sea area.

“Hmm? Where is the tributary of the River of Time?” Unable to find the thing they needed, Ying Wu Xie asked this in confusion.

“Don’t tell me this tributary of the River of Time is already gone, it is at the fringe of the turbulent flows?” Hei Lou Lan guessed.

After some investigation, Purple Mountain True Monarch found some clues.

“That tributary of the River of Time has been taken away by someone.” He said grimly.

“How can that be? Who did it? Is it Fang Yuan?” Ying Wu Xie first thought of Fang Yuan.

But Purple Mountain True Monarch shook his head: “This method should not be his. It is someone else, forget about it. Since we cannot use this tributary of the River of Time, we will go to the next location, there is a tributary of the River of Time there too.”

Shadow Sect’s group left the turbulent flow sea area again.

Elsewhere in Eastern Sea.

There was a vast sea and sky.

Above the sea, a life and death battle was unfolding.

“Quickly leave, I was hit by his lightning soul needle, he can sense my location, I cannot escape, I cannot implicate you.” Immortal Hua Die lay in a man’s arms, speaking weakly.

This woman was dressed in a raiment, her sleeves were fluttering, she wore light pink. Her eyes were showing signs of weakness, blood was flowing out of the corner of her mouth, her injuries were severe.

Especially on her skin, there were tiny sparks shining at times, it was the sign of the immortal killer move lightning soul needle’s effect.

“No.” The male Gu Immortal rejected unhesitantly.

He had broad shoulders and a thin waist, he wore a suit of battle armor, and even though he was covered in injuries, his valiance could not be concealed.

“How can I abandon you? If I escape now, how can I face Lord Miao Ming Shen?” Even though he said that, when he looked towards Immortal Hua Die, there was love in his eyes.

He was Feng Jiang.

Feng Jiang, Immortal Hua Die, Gui Qi Ye, these three were subordinates of the Eastern Sea space path expert Miao Ming Shen.

Miao Ming Shen wanted to find a tributary of the River of Time in the turbulent flow sea area, thus these three Gu Immortals would take turns to guard the turbulent flow sea area. When they saw any Gu Immortals approaching the turbulent flow sea area, they would talk to them and ask for their help.

“Then you lovebirds can die together!” There was only one person in pursuit, he had rank seven cultivation level.

He was named Ge Wen, he wore a blue robe and had tough, dry skin, like tree bark. His eyes were shining with red light, his teeth were sharp, he had a sinister expression.

This person was quite a senior and had some reputation in Eastern Sea.

He was a lightning path grandmaster, but once when he was using an immortal killer move, he failed and suffered a backlash, leading to him having no choice but to become an immortal zombie.

Even so, he had outstanding battle strength, he possessed two Immortal Gu, the rank six Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang were forced to flee.

“Hand over the year cycle powder, you two are quite daring to snatch my immortal material. If you hand it over, I might leave you a proper corpse!” Ge Wen chuckled as he approached with overwhelming demonic aura.

Immortal Hua Die was anxious: “We found this year cycle powder first, how can it be yours?”

“I have been here for half a month already, but the moment I looked away, you two took it!” Ge Wen growled.

Immortal Hua Die was incensed: “Lord Miao Ming Shen found this year cycle powder three years ago and set a Gu formation here. Once every few months, I would come there and take care of it. No matter how you distort the facts, you cannot change them.”

Immortal Hua Die said the truth, Ge Wen stopped denying it, his expression turned grim: “Hmph, you have a sharp tongue, you will be the first one I kill.”

“Demonic scoundrel, don’t be cocky!”

At this moment, there was a clear voice that resounded in their ears.

“Who?” Ge Wen’s expression changed, he shouted.

The moment he said that, the sea level rose up like a small mound.

Next, from within the ‘mound’, a fierce beast charged out, causing winds to blow and water the splatter.

A blue scaled sea dragon appeared before the three immortals, speaking: “Demon, hand over your life!”

The three immortals saw this and understood that this blue scaled sea dragon was a Gu Immortal’s transformation.

Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang were happy and shocked.

Ge Wen was furious: “Why are you a busybody! Take my killer move.”

Saying this, he breathed in deeply, spitting at his right palm.

He did not spit out saliva, of course, it was an egg-sized flash of lightning.

The lightning entered Ge Wen’s right palm and exploded into a beam of lightning that shot out from his palm.

The blue scaled sea dragon did not dodge, it opened its mouth towards the approaching beam of lightning.

Dragon’s breath!

Ge Wen saw this and laughed in his mind: “My move can last for several minutes, while dragon breath needs to be used breath by breath, how can he last?”

But the blue scaled sea dragon’s breath did not end!

The dragon’s breath was like a beam of water colliding with the beam of lightning, next, the powerful dragon breath smashed through the lightning pillar.

In a few breath’s time, it got to Ge Wen.

“How can this be? What dragon breath is this?!” Ge Wen showed disbelief and shock on his face.

He quickly dodged.

But the blue scaled sea dragon turned around and its dragon breath continued to sweep the battlefield.

Ge Wen frowned deeply, grunting: “You guys are lucky, I will spare you this time!”

Saying this, he retreated, turning into a flash of lightning with incredible speed.

The blue scaled sea dragon did not give chase, it watched as Ge Wen left.

“He wants to return to the Gu formation, a lot of the year cycle powder is left.” Immortal Hua Die pointed out Ge Wen’s plan.

Feng Jiang placed Immortal Hua Die down and cupped his fists at the blue scaled sea dragon: “Virtuous friend, you defeated the powerful foe, we will not forget the gratitude of saving our lives. I would like to know your esteemed name!”

The blue scaled sea dragon suddenly transformed into an ordinary looking Gu Immortal, he smiled: “I am Chu Ying, Fairy Hua Die, have you been well?”

Immortal Hua Die was surprised and joyful: “To think that you are Chu Ying!”

Seeing Feng Jiang’s gaze, Immortal Hua Die explained: “It was thanks to Chu Ying that we found that tributary of the River of Time in the turbulent flow sea area. He was the reason Lord Miao Ming Shen could take away that tributary of the River of Time.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1295: Eastern Sea Trading Convention

“So there was such a connection!” Hearing Immortal Hua Die’s words, Feng Jiang’s expression turned to joy, his suspicions were dispelled.

This Chu Ying was naturally Fang Yuan in disguise.

After he stored his immortal aperture, he found that there were traces of Gu Immortals fighting in the sea areas around him.

Out of curiosity, he followed the traces and wanted to see if there were some gains for him. In the end, he found that Immortal Hua Die and another person (Feng Jiang) were being pursued by an enemy.

And the pursuer was a rank seven immortal zombie. At this point, such a person was a weakling to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had helped Immortal Hua Die some time ago, he wanted to get in contact with the space path Gu Immortal expert, Miao Ming Shen, who was behind Immortal Hua Die.

This person knew of a method to enter and explore the blue dragon whale.

And this blue dragon whale was not ordinary either, it was nurtured by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable and awakened its immortal aperture, it possessed a huge treasury.

It was like the dog tail life extending ferret Mao Li Qiu of Northern Plains.

But the blue dragon whale’s wisdom was not enhanced, it could only swim freely in the ocean according to its instincts.

Not only did Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable awaken its immortal aperture, he also used an immortal killer move on its body. Thus, this blue dragon whale had almost no predators or dangers.

The blue dragon whale was mild in temperament and posed no danger, but its defensive power rendered all of those who wanted to harm it helpless.

This was the style of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

According to a secret rumor in the five hundred years of his previous life, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had left a true inheritance in the blue dragon whale’s body.

Fang Yuan remembered that Miao Ming Shen had explored the world inside the blue dragon whale many times. However, even though he had gains each time, he did not obtain the true inheritance from start to finish.

Fang Yuan naturally cared about this. Thus, when he saw Immortal Hua Die being pursued, he realized that this was a rare chance, he could express goodwill to Miao Ming Shen again.

Thus, he intervened and chased the lightning path immortal zombie Ge Wen away.

He did not transform into an ancient sword dragon.

The ancient sword dragon form could not be used openly now.

Because Liu Guan Yi had used it to kill Ye Lui Qun Xing in Northern Plains.

Right now, Liu Guan Yi was the Reverse Flow River Lord that was able to go unscathed against rank eights. His reputation was renowned all over the world, almost everyone knew of him.

Countless people were interested in Liu Guan Yi, they tried to deduce his origins.

The fact that Liu Guan Yi possessed an ancient sword dragon transformation was known to all.

Thus, once Fang Yuan used the ancient sword dragon transformation, other Gu Immortals would immediately think of Liu Guan Yi.

This was the burden of reputation.

Even though Fang Yuan could not use ancient sword dragon transformation, he had change form Immortal Gu, he could turn into countless things in this world at will.

Thus, he transformed into the blue scaled sea dragon that was exclusive to Eastern Sea.

This was also an ancient desolate beast.

But its might could not rival the ancient sword dragon.

However, Fang Yuan’s dragon breath Immortal Gu could still be used.

Worth mentioning was that the dragon breath of the blue scaled sea dragon was also used breath by breath. Earlier, he could defeat the lightning path immortal zombie Ge Wen because Fang Yuan had used perseverance Immortal Gu at the same time.

Rank seven perseverance Immortal Gu, after obtaining it, Fang Yuan had tried to learn more about its ability.

Gu Immortals nurture, use, and refine, these three aspects needed a lot of time and investment.

After being in Eastern Sea for several days, Fang Yuan had already understood some of the uses of perseverance Immortal Gu.

Other than conquering Reverse Flow River, perseverance Immortal Gu could allow other Immortal Gu or immortal killer moves to last for a longer time.

For example, the blue scaled sea dragon’s breath.

If Fang Yuan used dragon breath Immortal Gu solely, it could not break away from the normal limits of dragon breath, it would be used breath by breath, it could only be increased in strength.

But if he used perseverance Immortal Gu along with the dragon breath, then the dragon breath would be used for a long time without stopping!

Of course, he could not sustain it for too long. Dragon breath had a huge burden on the throat, even real blue scaled sea dragons breathed it out breath by breath. This was the self-defense mechanism of lifeforms after a long process of evolution.

Thankfully, although that Ge Wen had some fame, he retreated wisely after a short battle with Fang Yuan, realizing that he was a strong opponent.

After all, demonic path Gu Immortals focused on profits.

“This friend is?” Fang Yuan looked at Immortal Hua Die.

“I am one of Lord Miao Ming Shen’s subordinates, Feng Jiang. Lord Chu, you are my savior, I wonder how I can thank you.” Feng Jiang immediately introduced himself, it was very passionate and filled with gratitude towards Fang Yuan.

“No need to thank me, it was just a helping hand. I met you two coincidentally, thus I stepped in. Even though I am a secluded cultivator in Eastern Sea, I have been moving around recently, I cannot stand these demonic acts. I have this personality, and because Fairy Hua Die is an acquaintance, I had no reason not to help.” Fang Yuan was very humble.

Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang heard these words and felt closer to Fang Yuan.

The three immortals talked for a while as Immortal Hua Die sighed: “It is a pity. There was so much year cycle powder, they are mostly in Ge Wen’s hands now. Our efforts have been in vain. We should have made that Gu formation even more hidden.”

Feng Jiang consoled: “Alright, Little Die, don’t blame yourself. Eastern Sea is so big, but Ge Wen found this Gu formation so coincidentally. We are not skilled in formation path, this Gu formation is already the best that can be done. If we hide it even more deeply, we will need Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan smiled: “I have something to say, even though the year cycle powder is lost, your lives are preserved, this is hope. Don’t be disheartened, there are losses and gains in life, aren’t our lives just a cycle of losing and winning anyway.”

Feng Jiang laughed: “Lord Chu speaks deeply, this is truly insightful.”

Immortal Hua Die’s brows were locked, she was sorrowful: “I understand this too, and at a different time, so be it if this year cycle powder was lost. But right now, Lord Miao Ming Shen is attending a trading convention, one of his Gu Immortal friends need this. Lord Miao Ming Shen has already agreed to his request, there are only a few days left until the convention, but the year cycle powder was taken away, what should we do?”

Hearing this, Feng Jiang’s expression sank: “That’s right, we are going to return empty handed. Even if Lord Miao Ming Shen does not blame us, we will be at fault, we failed in our task. And most importantly, we will cause Lord Miao Ming Shen’s reputation to suffer, this is our fault!”

“Trading convention?” Fang Yuan was moved.

Earlier, he was thinking about trading away some of the unsuitable Immortal Gu that he had.

To think that this would come in such a timely manner, he actually encountered one of Eastern Sea’s trading conventions.

Eastern Sea was the most abundant in resources out of the five regions, even Central Continent could not match it.

Eastern Sea Gu Immortals were usually more affluent.

This resulted in Eastern Sea’s trading conventions to be very famous in the five regions, they involved high-end items and often, Gu Immortals would exchange Immortal Gu with each other.

Of course, this was not to say that the other four regions had no trading conventions. But they were too few of them, Fang Yuan could not join them either.

Only Eastern Sea's trading conventions served as his opportunity.

"I have Immortal Gu that I want to trade away, is it possible for me to join this trading convention?" Fang Yuan did not hide his intention, he asked directly.

Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang looked at each other, the former said: "This trading convention is very high class, we are not qualified to join it, nor do we have the rights to recommend others. But Lord Chu Ying is different, you are our benefactor. How about this, can you follow us to meet with our lord, and see what he says?"

"Alright." Fang Yuan nodded: "Shall we set off now?"

He was very rushed.

Because time was limited.

Dark Limit's power was dwindling as other Gu Immortals deduced matters about him.

Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang were a little hesitant, their mission to collect the year cycle powder had failed, they actually wanted Fang Yuan to help them take back the year cycle powder, but they could not ask it outright.

Actually, Fang Yuan was aware about their intentions, but during their conversation, he held the initiative of the topic and did not give them any chance to ask.

Right now, even though Fang Yuan could go unscathed against rank eight Gu Immortals.

There was a flaw, it could not be used openly.

Be it ancient sword dragon transformation or reverse flow protection seal, they could not be easily used. Once he did, he would have to consider how to keep them a secret.

If too many traces were leaked out, Fang Yuan's identities and secrets might get deduced.

By then, Wu Yi Hai's identity would be exposed too.

Fang Yuan had gone through so much to enter the super Gu formation and interact with the giant dream realm. If he lost this opportunity, it would be a terrible setback to his future cultivation.

Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang had no choice, they could only bring Fang Yuan away from here.

They really had no courage to ask him.

He had saved their lives, but they still wanted their benefactor to fight against a strong foe. They really had no face to ask him to do that.

The three immortals moved quickly without stopping.

But along the way, they talked and conversed a lot.

As a matter of fact, Immortal Hua Die had seen Fang Yuan twice and had a deep impression of him, but she was unclear about the background of this Chu Ying.

Fang Yuan knew about her intention to probe him, thus he gave her half-truths about his origin.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, he had stayed in Eastern Sea for some time. Thus, his words were not lies. Especially some small details and experiences that he had, they were realistic, these experiences resonated deeply with Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang.

How could Fang Yuan show a flaw here?

By the time they met Miao Ming Shen, Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang already had very good feelings towards this ‘easygoing’ rank seven secluded cultivator, Chu Ying.

But they did not know that Fang Yuan was the true demon. Compared to him, what was immortal zombie Ge Wen’s act of snatching some year cycle powder?

Not long ago, Fang Yuan had taken Reverse Flow River directly from Old Ancestor Xue Hu!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1296: Light Shine Fungi

Eastern Sea.

In an ordinary sea area, there was a nameless mountain, it was desolate and barren, there were only rocks and caves in it.

Several Gu Immortals descended from the sky.

Among them were Fang Yuan, Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang.

“To think that this trading convention would be held on such an empty island.” Fang Yuan stepped on the island as he sighed to himself.

“Brother Chu, you might be unaware that large trading conventions like this usually have their locations decided several days before the meeting, to prevent others from having ill intentions.” A Gu Immortal beside Fang Yuan said.

This male Gu Immortal was neither tall nor short, neither fat nor thin. In terms of appearance, he looked ordinary, only his flat and wide nose left a heavy impression on others.

This person was a famous rank seven space path Gu Immortal expert in Eastern Sea — Miao Ming Shen.

In terms of appearance, he was not outstanding, but after Fang Yuan interacted with him, even though it was a short time, he could feel that this person was impressive, his appearance was deceiving.

Fang Yuan had saved Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang under the identity of Chu Ying, learning about the trading convention.

Next, he followed Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang to meet Miao Ming Shen.

Miao Ming Shen had no hesitation as he agreed to Fang Yuan’s request of joining the trading convention: “Friend, you have helped me twice, you are also the benefactor of Little Die and Little Feng. This is just a trading convention, how can I reject you? Please do grace us with your presence!”

He was a rank seven Gu Immortal expert, but Chu Ying was a secluded cultivator with no reputation. Yet Miao Ming Shen did not put on airs, he was very amiable. He spoke politely and warmly to others.

Thus, Fang Yuan and Miao Ming Shen came to attend the trading convention.

The four of them had just stepped onto the island when a Gu Immortal came out of a rock.

“Miao Ming Shen, you are here.” A midget Gu Immortal with a big head and small body welcomed them.

“Haha, Tu Tou Tuo, long time no see!” Miao Ming Shen said warmly, he laughed as he quickly went up to the person.

“Come, let me introduce the two of you. This is a secluded cultivator of Eastern Sea, Chu Ying, this is a rare earth path grandmaster in Eastern Sea, Tu Tou Tuo.” Miao Ming Shen said.

“Greetings to you.” Fang Yuan was polite but his expression was stiff, he pretended to be a secluded cultivator who was not good at interacting with people, it was flawless.

Tu Tou Tuo looked at Fang Yuan with several glances, he smiled with his yellow teeth: “You received Miao Ming Shen’s recommendation and are here for the first time? Haha, in the past, I also joined in after Miao Ming Shen’s recommendation.”

Tu Tou Tuo was also quite polite.

He thought: “Miao Ming Shen has good foresight, the people he invites are all talented experts. This Chu Ying looks unassuming and has no reputation, but since he has Miao Ming Shen’s recommendation, he is not simple.”

While thinking of that, Tu Tou Tuo said: “Follow me, I was the first to arrive, there is nothing much to do but wait now, we can create a space underground first.”

“I will trouble Brother Tu. After all, this time, I am the host of the trading convention...” Miao Ming Shen said courteously.

“Haha, it is just an underground cave, it is nothing much. Come!” Tu Tou Tuo looked at Miao Ming Shen like an old friend, he grabbed his arm and led him underground.

Everywhere he went, the tough ground melted like flowing water, opening a wide path that extended underground.

Tu Tou Tuo and Miao Ming Shen walked ahead while Fang Yuan, Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die walked behind them.

Tu Tou Tuo and Miao Ming Shen talked along the way.

Miao Ming Shen had incredible interpersonal skills, Tu Tou Tuo was laughing as he talked, his laughter was reverberating in the cave.

Furthermore, Miao Ming Shen did not give the cold shoulder to Fang Yuan, he turned around to talk to Fang Yuan.

His words seemed ordinary, but they felt natural and did not make Fang Yuan feel like he was alone, or that he was neglected.

The underground cave was very ordinary, but it was wide enough.

There was a platform, and several chairs in front of it, they were huge. There were carvings on the chairs, they were fluid patterns. This showed Tu Tou Tuo’s incredible skills, and the meticulous aspect that he had.

Fang Yuan counted, there were six chairs.

“It seems that this trading convention only had six people originally. Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang are not part of this, they will leave when the trading convention starts and guard the area.” Fang Yuan guessed.

“There is a new member, I will add a chair.” Tu Tou Tuo stomped lightly as a mound appeared on the ground, it started to rotate like a ball.

In the blink of an eye, a chair was carved out like it was made by an artisan.

Fang Yuan and the rest sat down while waiting for the other immortals.

Not long later, two Gu Immortals appeared.

The former was a girl, she looked like a child with two ponytail braids, her eyes were round and watery, but there was deep maturity in them.

She was Tong Hua.

A rank seven light path Gu Immortal famous in the north of Eastern Sea.

The latter was a male immortal. He had an aquiline nose, his gaze was dark and he wore a black robe, having messy hair.

He was Wu Ma Yang, a dark path Gu Immortal, having exemplary battle strength among rank seven Gu Immortals. His immortal killer move, dark arrow veil, had once defeated three rank seven Gu Immortals working together, this battle caused his reputation to surge in Eastern Sea for some time.

Tong Hua talked a lot, while Wu Ma Yang was uncommunicative.

The two sides continued to mingle, and under Miao Ming Shen’s intentional guidance, the atmosphere became congenial.

Fifteen minutes later, a third Gu Immortal entered this space.

He was Gong Liang Bai, a wisdom path Gu Immortal who also cultivated wood path. Wisdom path was his main focus, but wisdom path Gu Immortals were few in numbers, especially those like Fang Yuan who possessed a complete wisdom path Gu Immortal true inheritance.

However, not only did Gong Liang Bai have a complete wisdom path true inheritance, he even had some achievements in his cultivation, even though he could not match the top three wisdom path experts, among lone immortals, he had a huge network and was willing to deduce for people in exchange for payment.

The saying goes: Jia Dan sits in twin polar, Hua An hides in Nan Gong, there is also Dragon Head Tortoise, living inside adversity sea.

This saying refers to the publicly recognized three most powerful wisdom path Gu Immortals in Eastern Sea currently.

Song Jia Dan, Hua An, they were righteous path members, they rarely deduced for lone immortals. And Dragon Head Tortoise was always inside adversity sea, his traces were hard to find, it was hard for people to seek help from him.

“Gong Liang Bai, after these trades, let’s have a good talk. I have some things for you to deduce.” While talking, Miao Ming Shen said.

“Is it that Liu Guan Yi? I have received many requests from others, they are all after this person.” Gong Liang Bai said.

“Of course not.” Miao Ming Shen denied.

Gong Liang Bai nodded: “Then that is fine. Speaking of which, I have already made five deductions, I failed each time. There are simply too few clues, and that Liu Guan Yi has methods to defend against deductions.”

Fang Yuan listened by the side, his expression did not change, though he felt a little awkward.

This topic attracted everyone’s attention.

Tu Tou Tuo shouted: “This Liu Guan Yi is so popular now, he is completely famous!”

“Anyone who can render rank eight Gu Immortals unable to deal with them as a rank seven will go down in history.” Tong Hua sighed.

“Resisting rank eight with rank seven cultivation level, this is truly a goal to set.” Miao Ming Shen smiled bitterly: “It is a pity that I’ve had no opportunity to befriend such a person.”

Fang Yuan was sitting right beside him, hearing this, he said expressionlessly: “I heard that Liu Guan Yi could resist rank eights as a rank seven because he became the Reverse Flow River Lord. This Reverse Flow River is a secluded domain of heaven and earth, but how can it be so powerful as to leave rank eight existences without options?”

Thus, the immortals’ topic of discussion turned from Liu Guan Yi to Reverse Flow River.

Fang Yuan had subtly changed the conversation’s direction.

The Gu Immortals talked until night time.

When night appeared and the moon rose, the trading convention began.

The other two Gu Immortals also had arrived.

The trading convention officially began.

According to the rules set earlier, Tong Hua stood on the platform.

“This is a desolate plant, I found it when exploring a deep sea. That place was dark as an abyss, but I saw some light far away. When I found the source, I took several minutes to reach it. The place was like a paradise of light path. It was so dazzling with rays of light extending immeasurably far.”

“Initially, I thought that it was light from the corals. But soon, I found some green fungus on the surface of the corals. This green fungus is a desolate plant seen all over that place, I named it light shine fungus, it contains light path dao marks and can emit strong light.”

Tong Hua talked about her findings, and the process of her naming.

Fang Yuan was surprised, to think that he found something he wanted when the trading convention had just started.

Light shine fungi!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1297: Divination Tortoise Shell Immortal Gu

Fang Yuan needed light.

He had first used aurora light, he had bought large numbers of dazzling light Gu to increase the aurora light in his immortal aperture. The more intense the aurora light, the more flowing light fruits could be formed. And rank eight attitude Gu fed on these fruits.

Light shine fungus was a type of desolate plant that provided light which was not like the multicolored aurora light.

But this was not absolute.

Humans had the highest intelligence, they were most skilled in adapting flexibly. There were methods to modify and graft plants in this world.

Wood path Gu Immortals excelled at this.

Each path has its own specialties, and wood path Gu Immortals were often skilled at managing immortal apertures.

Thus, if Fang Yuan brought in light shine fungi, he might be able to modify them in the future using wood path methods into aurora light shine fungi, it was possible.

Other than attitude Gu, there was wisdom sword Immortal Gu.

Wisdom sword Immortal Gu fed on multicolored overlord flowers.

If Fang Yuan wanted to plant multicolored overlord flowers on a large scale, he needed to fulfill three conditions. Illumination, sweet scents and pearl soil.

The latter two were easy to achieve, but illumination was hard.

Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture had light path dao marks, and he had also annexed a light path blessed land, but it was far from Fang Yuan’s goal.

If he used light shine fungi, he would be able to solve the problem of mass production of multicolored overlord flowers.

But there was an uncertainty in this.

Light shine fungi grew in the deep sea, could they still survive in other environments?

“This should not be a problem, after all, light shine fungus is a desolate plant.”

“Even ignoring aurora lights, earlier, I plundered Liu tribe’s jade light pit, I gained a lot of replenishment. Even though I am still not at the required standard, I am close.”

“But multicolored overlord flowers are different, their scale is far from optimal. I have too few light path dao marks currently, and not all of my light path dao marks can gather at the multicolored overlord flowers. My other lifeforms need light too.”

“Oh, that’s right, I have transformation path dao marks, in crucial moments, I can convert them to light path dao marks temporarily.”

While Fang Yuan was thinking, Tong Hua spoke: “I am willing to trade these desolate plant light shine fungi for storey building water elephants, three of them.”

Once she said that, a Gu Immortal responded: “Storey building water elephants... I have a few, how many storeys do you want from the water elephants?”

Storey building water elephants were a special type of beast in Eastern Sea, they had varying sizes, with white tusks and blue skin. Water elephants with one storey buildings were like boats and had blue jade exoskeleton on their backs resembling buildings. Two storey building water elephants were larger, with two floors of blue jade exoskeleton on their backs.

Similarly, six storey building water elephants had wide backs and were like huge boats, they were desolate beasts. Seven storey building water elephants were ancient desolate beasts, and eight storey building water elephants were immemorial desolate beasts, they were extremely rare. Nine storey building water elephants did not exist.

Be it beasts or plants, or even variant humans, there were no rank nine versions of them. Among humans, there were only ten of them, rank nine Gu Venerables, they were unique among all lifeforms.

Tong Hua showed the scale of her light shine fungi and told the Gu Immortals that she wanted a total of three six storey building water elephants.

This was not expensive, it was very standard.

But that Gu Immortal frowned: “I only have one six storey building water elephant, the light shine fungi can be split up, would you like to trade?”

Tong Hua hesitated.

He might not be speaking the truth.

After considering it, Tong Hua nodded: “Then let’s trade.”

Thus, the first deal was made, both sides transacted quickly.

“I would like some light shine fungi, but I do not have storey building water elephants, do you accept immortal essence stones?” Fang Yuan asked.

Tong Hua shook her head, but she did not reject him entirely: “If there are no storey building water elephants, never mind. But my light shine fungi will be sold in treasure yellow heaven, you can buy them then.”

In fact, Eastern Sea had mostly water path Gu Immortals.

And light shine fungi suited Eastern Sea Gu Immortals a lot. Like Wu Yi Hai for example, his immortal aperture was a sea.

Tong Hua was only testing the waters with this new discovery, seeing if she could gain benefits from it.

As for selling them for immortal essence stones, Tong Hua did not want that.

Because she did not know the market price.

This was a new finding, she was selling it for the first time, Tong Hua did not know its value.

However, she was very expectant about it.

Thus, she rejected Fang Yuan without hesitation. What if this light shine fungus was very popular in treasure yellow heaven, then wouldn’t her sale price be at a loss now?

But if she sold it for too high of a price, the other party would not trade. Treasure yellow heaven was the best place for that.

Tong Hua did not want to sell it, Fang Yuan was helpless.

But he understood her.

This was a new desolate plant, she could use some methods to raise the prices later.

Even though this world’s economy was not developed, Gu Immortals were astute people, they knew how to jack up prices.

Especially this light shine fungus, in the world, currently only Tong Hua had it.

If it were Fang Yuan, he would also elevate the price at the initial stage to earn a huge profit.

This light shine fungus was just a rank six desolate plant, once it was in the market for some time, people would research about it, and Tong Hua’s monopoly would be gone.

After all, Eastern Sea was so big, light shine fungi would not grow in only one place.

Gu Immortals could create a method to seek out light shine fungi after some research. That would cause the supply of light shine fungi to rise sharply.

Seeing that no one else was interested, Tong Hua stepped down.

Next, the second Gu Immortal went up onto the platform.

This was the rule of the trading convention.

In each round, the Gu Immortals would go up in order that was decided earlier. They could only put up one resource each round.

This ensured relative fairness.

As for Fang Yuan, a newly joined member, he could also transact and go on the platform, but he was the last person.

“This is marrow sucking stone, rank seven immortal material, I want some thousand year floating wood.” The Gu Immortal who went up expressed himself quickly, explaining his item.

Once he said that, he displayed it.

This marrow sucking stone was black and looked like an ordinary rock by the beach. But in fact, as long as a life form that had bone marrow got close to it, they would be sucked inside.

Thus, marrow sucking stone was known as a demon stone.

Demon stone was a name coined by mermen.

Mermen were a type of variant human, most mermen in the world lived in Eastern Sea.

Mermen could live underwater and breathe, when they met marrow sucking stones, they had suffered from them, thus, they feared and called them demon stones.

In Eastern Sea’s history, there were some merman tribes who treated these demon stones as deities to worship.

But to Gu Immortals, this marrow sucking stone was just an immortal material.

This transaction was successful as well.

Thousand year floating wood might be rare in the market, but the Gu Immortals here were all affluent, otherwise, they would not have gathered for this trading convention.

Birds of a feather flock together, Gu Immortals who associated with Miao Ming Shen were not simple.

One could say, this small trading convention was a rare gathering of experts in Eastern Sea.

After the second Gu Immortal, Tu Tou Tuo went up.

“I have an ancient desolate beast queen toad. It can command all huge toads at rank six level and below. If raised well, it can nurture enslavement path Immortal Gu as well. Anyone interested?”

The queen toad had a lot of enslavement path dao marks.

But Tu Tou Tuo’s transaction failed.

The fourth Gu Immortal: “I am looking for clues to qi sea. Anyone know how to find qi sea and how to get in? I am willing to pay a high price for relevant information.”

It was also possible to trade information, but the Gu Immortals present stayed silent.

This transaction also failed.

Qi sea was a special and mysterious sea area in Eastern Sea.

The Gu Immortals present might be unsure of it, or some might know but did not want to trade.

The Gu Immortals went up one by one.

The first round was about to end.

Fang Yuan was the final one.

And Miao Ming Shen was second last.

He went up: “I have a rank seven divination tortoise shell Immortal Gu, anyone wants to trade?”

Fang Yuan heard this and his eyes shined!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1298: Trading Gu

The trading convention was underway.

As the host of this trading convention, Miao Ming Shen originally was to be the final person to get on the stage.

But because Fang Yuan joined in, he became the last person.

Miao Ming Shen was now the second last to trade.

In this aspect, Fang Yuan could see Miao Ming Shen’s great interpersonal skills.

Gu Immortals who got to trade first had the bigger advantage. Miao Ming Shen, as the final person, was expressing goodwill to everyone.

But he could not place Fang Yuan before him.

This was against the rules.

Newcomers had to be last.

If he went against this, everyone would be unhappy. After all, Miao Ming Shen was the host of this session, but what about the next?

Interpersonal skills were nothing much, it was just one’s attitude when interacting with people.

Miao Ming Shen had a good grasp of this, he made the people that he interacted with feel friendly towards him.

However, Fang Yuan’s mind was not on Miao Ming Shen, his gaze was shining as he looked at the Immortal Gu that Miao Ming Shen was holding — Rank seven, divination tortoise shell Gu!

Fang Yuan was greatly enticed.

Why?

Because Fang Yuan had many methods that he could not use. Like ancient sword dragon transformation or reverse flow protection seal, if they were used, Fang Yuan had to make sure there were no survivors. Otherwise, intelligence on him would leak and Gu Immortals would be able to find out more information about him, he would be forced into a corner.

This was quite awkward, actually.

As Fang Yuan got stronger, the problems he created were getting bigger.

Shadow Sect, Heavenly Court, Longevity Heaven... looking at his opponents and enemies, all of them were colossal forces.

Recently, he even made enemies with Old Ancestor Xue Hu, the number one rank eight in Northern Plains!

Thus, Fang Yuan was facing great pressure, he had not reached rank nine.

Only after reaching rank nine would Fang Yuan be able to announce his identity openly, nobody would be able to stop him.

Before reaching rank nine, even if Fang Yuan cultivated to rank eight, Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court could still find trouble with him.

Currently, rank seven Fang Yuan had to act with a low profile, he had to disguise himself and cultivate rapidly to accumulate strength.

“Becoming Wu Yi Hai has a weakness, or rather, I have a flaw...”

Fang Yuan could not fight when he was Wu Yi Hai.

Because he was not the real Wu Yi Hai!

After soul searching Wu Yi Hai, Fang Yuan found that Wu Yi Hai had three transformation killer moves. One was a coral form, one was a seagull form, and the third was a tortoise.

Earlier, during the battle in the regional wall, Wu Yi Hai had turned into a tortoise to defend himself.

Fang Yuan remembered clearly that it was a horned divine tortoise. An ancient desolate beast with a tough shell, it was top ten in that regard among Eastern Sea’s ancient desolate beasts.

Actually, this could be seen from Wu Yi Hai’s immortal aperture.

Wu Yi Hai’s immortal aperture was a sea. There were three types of lifeforms inside, sea turtles and tortoises with the ancient desolate beast horned divine tortoise, corals with the ancient desolate plant silent coral, and seagulls with the desolate beast white letter blue feather seagull.

As a transformation path Gu Immortal, he would often raise the species that he transformed into.

Firstly, these lifeforms were resources that could help with his transformation path cultivation. Like the horned divine tortoise that Wu Yi Hai cultivated, if he needed any Immortal Gu in the future, he could kill these horned divine tortoises to refine it.

Secondly, transformation path Gu Immortals had to have a clear understanding of these lifeforms that they transformed into to raise their battle strength. Raising them in the immortal aperture would allow them to observe the lifeforms and eventually have realistic transformations with greater battle strength.

As for Fang Yuan, this was just a method.

Fang Yuan's transformation path attainment level was raised from dream realms and tribulations.

Once his attainment level rose, it would influence all these cultivation aspects, including this.

Thus, Fang Yuan saved a lot of trouble, he could skip a long time of observation and practice.

"If I can have this Immortal Gu, it would be very useful to me."

Fang Yuan became more enticed as he thought about it.

The divination tortoise was a wisdom path ancient desolate beast, it had one ability, to defend against deductions. Many Gu Immortals wanted to capture this ancient desolate beast, but using wisdom path methods to deduce its location was too difficult.

If Fang Yuan became a divination tortoise, it would help him greatly when traveling.

This, he concluded that this Immortal Gu was extremely useful.

Or rather — it was too useful!

For others, rank seven divination tortoise shell Immortal Gu might be useless. After all, it could only defend one's back. But if one wanted its deduction prevention ability, it was instead not as effective as other methods.

Thus, it had little use. Furthermore, why would a Gu Immortal face deductions all the time? Was everyone Liu Guan Yi?

Fang Yuan, however, was different.

He was extremely famous in the five regions now, even his fake identity was.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan could transform into a divination tortoise and use the transformation path dao marks, it was an immortal killer move. The ability to defend against deductions would be far stronger than using divination tortoise shell Immortal Gu alone.

Fang Yuan looked around, what made him happy was that these people were not very interested in the Immortal Gu.

Transactions of Immortal Gu were only done through exchange.

This was because Immortal Gu were unique, their value could not be determined easily. The value of Immortal Gu completely depended on the person. The same Immortal Gu could be a burden to someone, after all, the price of feeding Immortal Gu was huge, but to others, they would pursue it relentlessly, they would treat it like a treasure if they got it.

"Immortal Gu."

“To think that he is trading Immortal Gu in the first round.”

The Gu Immortals sighed, they spoke softly, but they stayed on their seats, not moving.

Miao Ming Shen smiled.

He had anticipated this.

They were few transformation path Gu Immortals, among those present, Chu Ying was the only one. And even Chu Ying might not be very interested in this Immortal Gu.

Transformation path Gu Immortals usually cultivated two or three transformations, too many was pointless. Unless they had the essence of transformation path — change form Immortal Gu, it could allow them to turn into any form.

But Miao Ming Shen had his intentions in doing this.

He was the host of this trading convention. If news that an Immortal Gu trade had occurred in the first round got out, it would elevate the status of this trading convention, it would attract more Gu Immortals with greater wealth here.

“I am willing to trade for this Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan stood up from his seat.

At once, the Gu Immortals looked towards Fang Yuan with surprised expressions.

Miao Ming Shen was slightly dazed, before reacting and smiling even wider now.

“I wonder what you would like to trade for?” Fang Yuan asked.

Miao Ming Shen chuckled: “Chu Ying, this is your first trading convention, and you are my benefactor. How about this... I do not have much use for this Immortal Gu, we can trade anything.”

This time, Fang Yuan was dazed, he did not expect Miao Ming Shen to list such an easy condition.

But even so, Immortal Gu transactions could only be done with Immortal Gu, other things were not usable.

Fang Yuan thought about it: “I have flying bear strength Immortal Gu...”

“Deal.” Before Fang Yuan finished his words, Miao Ming Shen agreed without hesitation.

Fang Yuan could not help but look at Miao Ming Shen, realizing why this person was doing so well in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world. He was a lone immortal, but he actually had several Gu Immortals that were so loyal to him!

But some things had to be stated clearly.

He smiled bitterly: “Friend, I am in admiration towards your intentions, but I have not finished my words, my flying bear strength Immortal Gu is only rank six.”

Miao Ming Shen’s expression changed.

The other immortals’ expressions also turned grim, they looked at Fang Yuan with dark gazes.

Flying Bear Strength was a strength path Immortal Gu, while divination tortoise shell Immortal Gu was transformation path.

Strength path was declining, but transformation path was still popular and strong. Between the two, flying bear strength Immortal Gu was already less valuable than divination tortoise shell Immortal Gu.

And now, Flying Bear Strength was only rank six.

How could a rank six Immortal Gu and rank seven Immortal Gu be traded?

The value was completely different.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1299: Another Trade

The difficulty of refining one rank six Immortal Gu was very different from refining a rank seven Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan wanted to use rank six flying bear strength Immortal Gu to exchange for rank seven divination tortoise shell Immortal Gu, if spoken nicely, he was dreaming, but to be blunt, he was simply too greedy, he was trying to take advantage.

This ‘taking advantage’ also gave a feeling of disdain.

Who did he think Miao Ming Shen was?

Was he easy to bully?

Or did he think the others were fools?

Thus, the Gu Immortals having grim expressions was understandable.

Fang Yuan smiled.

He saw these immortals’ attitude and expressions, he knew why these people had a change of emotion.

But he still asked: “Will you exchange it?”

Miao Ming Shen smiled forcefully, but he nodded: “Yes! You have helped me twice, these will suffice.”

The other Gu Immortals heard this and looked at Miao Ming Shen in a different light, their disdain towards Fang Yuan increased.

One of them even snorted coldly, expressing his unhappiness towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan suddenly laughed.

He said: “Everyone has said how incredible Lord Miao Ming Shen is, I was disbelieving, but after today, I completely agree. How can I take advantage of you? I will compensate you with something else, you will definitely be pleased!”

Saying this, Fang Yuan transmitted to Miao Ming Shen secretly.

Miao Ming Shen heard this and his expression changed, he became excited: “Chu Ying, are you serious?”

“Hahaha, let’s do the deal now, you will know if it’s true or false.” Fang Yuan laughed again.

“Sorry, we need to do this transaction alone.” Miao Ming Shen said as Fang Yuan followed him to leave the cave.

They went outside for the transaction, afterwards, the two returned with smiles on their faces.

Fang Yuan was relaxed, while Miao Ming Shen was smiling in a pleased manner.

The two were walking together closely, everyone could tell that their relationship had gotten closer.

After sitting down, Miao Ming Shen cupped his fists at Fang Yuan: “I owe you a third favor.”

“Your demeanor is truly magnificent. This is merely a transaction, there is no favor.” Fang Yuan was very polite.

These words made the Gu Immortals very perplexed.

At once, they started guessing: What did Chu Ying trade to make up for the difference, and make Miao Ming Shen so happy?

Miao Ming Shen sat down but Fang Yuan did not.

After this transaction, it was Fang Yuan’s turn, he went on the platform.

The immortals looking at him had different gazes now, they were solemn and curious, with probing intentions.

At the same time, they were curious about what Fang Yuan was going to offer.

This was because they did not know Fang Yuan, he was a stranger.

According to Fang Yuan’s offer, they would be able to guess some information about him. Like what immortal materials he had in abundance, they were often produced in their own blessed lands. This way, some intelligence could be deduced, like how developed Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture was, and what types of dao marks he had inside.

If it were one or two damaged ancient desolate beast corpses, they were often the Gu Immortal’s spoils of battle. If an ancient desolate beast reared in the immortal aperture died, the corpse would not be damaged. Such corpses would allow the immortals to assess Fang Yuan’s battle strength as well.

Gu Immortals focused heavily on gathering intelligence.

On this aspect, information path Gu Immortals had the greatest advantage.

But what Fang Yuan took out shocked them.

“Everyone, take a look, this is a bone path rank six Immortal Gu, Bone Spike. I obtained it by chance, but I am not a bone path Gu Immortal, I want to trade with it, does anyone want this? As for what I want in return, I am like Lord

Miao Ming Shen, I have no specific preference.” Fang Yuan smiled.

“An Immortal Gu again.”

“This is the first round, there are actually two Immortal Gu transactions.”

“This Chu Ying is quite rich, he is a transformation path Gu Immortal but he had two Immortal Gu of other paths.”

“The first transaction is done, but this one might not succeed. There are no bone path Gu Immortals here.”

The Gu Immortals talked to each other secretly, they were close with one another.

“None?” Fang Yuan waited for a while, but no Gu Immortal spoke.

He felt no disappointment.

The rank seven Immortal Gu, Divination Tortoise Shell, was worth coming to this trading convention.

Just when Fang Yuan was about to step down, a voice said: “Wait, I think... we can trade with this Immortal Gu.”

The immortals turned to look, it was Wu Ma Yang.

“Strange, he is a dark path Gu Immortal, why does he want a bone path Immortal Gu?” This question appeared in everyone’s minds.

Bone spike Immortal Gu had no relation with dark path.

But if Wu Ma Yang had any immortal killer moves that needed bone spike Immortal Gu, then it was possible for him to want this Immortal Gu.

Everyone had their own secrets, even though the Gu Immortals were puzzled, they held in their questions and watched quietly.

“There is a Gu Immortal who wants bone spike Immortal Gu?” Fang Yuan was also curious.

He asked: “I wonder what you would like to trade with?”

Wu Ma Yang frowned, he hesitated a little before gritting his teeth: “I will trade this Immortal Gu.”

He displayed this Immortal Gu.

It was a rank six Immortal Gu, on the same rank as bone spike Immortal Gu.

The Gu Immortals looked as someone cried out: “This is day Immortal Gu.”

That’s right, this was the rank six time path — day Gu!

Fang Yuan was stunned.

“I did not expect this, this trading convention was really worth it!” Fang Yuan rejoiced internally, but his expression was blank, he seemed to be in deep thought.

There was no need to think!

The moment Fang Yuan saw this Immortal Gu, he wanted it.

The reason?

Because he had Hei Fan’s true inheritance, he had rank seven year Gu, after Immortal Gu, and Years Flow Like Water, as well as a bunch of time path immortal killer moves.

He remembered that in the true inheritance, Hei Fan had been talking about immortal level day Gu and month Gu non-stop.

He remembered those four immortal killer moves, days pass like years and the rest.

“If the inheritor can obtain immortal level day Gu or month Gu, these four immortal killer moves would not need to expend so many mortal day Gu and month Gu, the effect would even rise greatly.”

These were the words recorded in Hei Fan’s true inheritance.

Fang Yuan saw this and did not think much of them.

He was not overly ambitious, year Gu was enough to satisfy him.

But destiny was very mystical, when Fang Yuan had placed no attention on immortal level day Gu and month Gu, day Gu appeared right in front of him like this.

“Let’s exchange it.”

“Even though I am not familiar with time path, feeding bone spike Immortal Gu is certainly a burden.”

Fang Yuan said.

“My day Gu consumes the water of the River of Time, it has no feeding problems. However, I cannot use this Immortal Gu, I might as well trade it for bone spike Immortal Gu, to add into my immortal killer moves.” Wu Ma Yang said.

The two traded quickly.

The original wills inside the two Immortal Gu left as the other party’s immortal essence entered.

The Gu Immortal’s will inside the immortal essence was the true key to refining Gu.

In Earth’s terms, wills were like a preset program to Gu worms.

Wills could think. Wild Gu worms had their own wills. Refining wild Immortal Gu was simply using the Gu Immortal’s will together with immortal essence to erase the wild will.

Wild wills had the instinct to survive, they could not destroy themselves, thus, even though it was tough for Gu Immortals to refine Immortal Gu, it was not risky.

Other people’s Immortal Gu were different.

A Gu Immortal’s will was vastly different from wild will.

Trying with brute force to refine someone else’s Immortal Gu would only destroy it. For example, Fang Yuan could recall his Immortal Gu with just a special will set inside them. Basically all Gu Immortals would not allow another person to refine their Immortal Gu directly.

Once that was happening, the will inside the Immortal Gu would destroy the Gu worm.

Unless wisdom path methods were used to suppress the Immortal Gu’s will. But usually, it would be hard to suppress all of it in an instant. With a small flaw, the Immortal Gu would be destroyed.

Precisely because of this, even though Fang Yuan captured Hei Cheng, he did not obtain dark arrow Immortal Gu.

And because of this, even though Fang Yuan and Hei Lou Lan’s alliance agreement was gone, he could not directly refine attitude Gu, it was a problem.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1300: Refining Attitude Gu

“This particular trading convention is very different.”

“That’s right, it is truly not normal. In our usual trading conventions, even though there are Immortal Gu trades, they will not appear in the first round.”

It was traditionally hard to trade Immortal Gu, most of the members in the trading convention had limited chances. Thus, they would usually put up the items which were unlikely to be traded to the end.

Thus, even if they wanted to trade away their Immortal Gu, the Gu Immortals would choose to do it in the last few rounds.

This was normal in trading conventions.

But this time, it was different.

Not only was there an Immortal Gu trade in the first round, it happened twice. And more importantly, both times succeeded!

And in these two transactions, Fang Yuan played a pivotal role.

Even though this was the first time he came to a trading convention, the Gu Immortals present did not dare to underestimate this newcomer, Chu Ying, anymore.

“We will start the second round now, Fairy Tong Hua, please.” Miao Ming Shen said.

He was very happy.

The trading convention had just started and Immortal Gu were already traded, this result would help him a lot when he traveled over Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.

Tong Hua went onto the platform, she wanted to trade another type of desolate beast.

“It seems that she is trying to develop her blessed land.” Fang Yuan, who was sitting beside Miao Ming Shen, spoke to him.

Miao Ming Shen smiled: “Brother Chu, you might not know, but Fairy Tong Hua had just passed a tribulation recently.”

“So that’s it.” Fang Yuan understood.

After a Gu Immortal passed a tribulation, their immortal aperture’s resources would be greatly damaged, but they would gain a lot of dao marks too. These new dao marks would modify the immortal aperture’s environment, causing it to be more accommodating to different types of resources.

Thus, Fairy Tong Hua tried to trade for all sorts of resources in this convention, planning to develop them in her immortal aperture.

“This Immortal Tong Hua is very affluent. Not only is her immortal aperture managed well, she also has a personal sea area, called rainbow aurora sea. Whenever it is dawn or dusk, aurora light shines above the sea area, weaving with the sky, it is extremely beautiful. This sea area is not far away. After the trading convention ends, Fairy Tong Hua will invite everyone to her sea area for a gathering. By then, Brother Chu can go with us.” Miao Ming Shen said, giving Fang Yuan some information about Tong Hua.

Fang Yuan gained more understanding of her.

“Then I will thank you for a recommendation. To speak the truth, I am interested in her light shine fungus.” Fang Yuan said directly.

“No problem, I can help you with that.” Miao Ming Shen was someone who knew the best way to interact with someone, he gladly took on this task.

After the trading of Immortal Gu, his relationship with Fang Yuan improved greatly.

Fang Yuan knew why Miao Ming Shen’s attitude had changed.

The reason was none other than — lifespan Gu!

What could interest Miao Ming Shen was undoubtedly lifespan Gu. Fang Yuan used a rank six Immortal Gu to trade for a rank seven Immortal Gu, and he even used a declining strength path Gu.

But Miao Ming Shen was very satisfied with the transaction. This was because Fang Yuan used a hundred years of lifespan Gu to make up for the difference.

Lifespan Gu was only a mortal Gu, but it was really rare.

Many Gu Immortals would keep them in their hands and refuse to trade them. They would keep these lifespan Gu for the time when they really needed it.

Miao Ming Shen’s lifespan was not near its end, but he did not have a lot left.

Thus, he was looking for the tributary of the River of Time, he wanted to find some methods to extend lifespan.

In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, Miao Ming Shen had entered the blue dragon whale many times to look for the lifespan Gu inside.

Fang Yuan offered him lifespan Gu, why would Miao Ming Shen not be happy with it?

Furthermore, Fang Yuan took out a hunded years of lifespan Gu, what did that mean?

Miao Ming Shen was not dumb, he thought: This meant that Chu Ying had more lifespan Gu. Otherwise, why would he use them so ‘unsparingly’?

Thus, Miao Ming Shen wanted to improve his relationship with Fang Yuan.

But he did not know that this was Fang Yuan’s intention.

Fang Yuan’s motives were deeper.

The blue dragon whale!

According to his previous life’s information, Fang Yuan had a greater understanding of this opportunity than Miao Ming Shen currently.

The transactions continued.

During the second round, Gu Immortals went up one by one, and most of their transactions succeeded.

Soon, it was Fang Yuan’s turn.

Immortal Gu Woman’s Heart.

Fang Yuan was about to trade this rank six Immortal Gu away when his expression suddenly changed.

“Sorry, something happened, everyone, I need to leave early.” Fang Yuan said.

The Gu Immortals were shocked.

This trading convention was a rare chance, to think that Fang Yuan was giving up now.

But the trading convention was not a restricted event, it was fine if Fang Yuan wanted to leave, they could not stop him.

“What happened? Do you need my help?” Miao Ming Shen sent Fang Yuan off.

“It is not a big matter, but it is urgent. This is such a waste, I am missing out on the trading convention!” Fang Yuan sighed.

Miao Ming Shen quickly said: “Don’t worry, when such a trading convention happens again, I will inform you.”

“I will thank you in advance, goodbye.”

“See you again.”

Fang Yuan flew off into the clouds, vanishing from sight.

Miao Ming Shen sighed, looking at Fang Yuan vanish, he turned around and went back into the cave.

While flying in the clouds, Fang Yuan’s expression was ugly.

He had left earlier because a wisdom path great expert had suddenly tried to deduce his whereabouts.

The power from Dark Limit was almost used up, with this huge expenditure now, Fang Yuan was forced to leave the trading convention prematurely.

“Damn it, which Gu Immortal is deducing me? I wonder if they are deducing Fang Yuan or Liu Guan Yi?”

Fang Yuan felt some regret.

If he had some more time, he might have traded woman’s heart Immortal Gu away.

Such opportunities were incredibly rare.

After one convention, many Gu Immortals would lay low for many years before wanting to trade again.

After he got to a safe distance, Fang Yuan used the new divination tortoise shell Immortal Gu, as well as change form Immortal Gu.

Immortal killer move — Divination Tortoise Transformation!

Transformation path killer moves were so simple and straightforward.

Because he lacked the help of mortal Gu, this killer move’s effect was not outstanding. But because of change form Immortal Gu, this panacea, although the transformation had none of the battle strength from the divination tortoise, Fang Yuan could use it.

This divination tortoise transformation was to give Fang Yuan more time.

A while later, he found a safe environment and placed his immortal aperture.

For several days, he stayed inside the immortal aperture.

He started to think about how he could refine attitude Gu.

Even though he had two new Immortal Gu, they were not useful for refining attitude Gu.

Fang Yuan was helpless about this.

Maybe the third Gu for Woman’s Heart could have been a suitable Immortal Gu.

But Fang Yuan missed this opportunity.

He needed to stay inside the immortal aperture for some time so that Dark Limit could be used again.

By then, the trading convention would be over.

“This means I can only borrow Immortal Gu from Lang Ya blessed land.” Fang Yuan had a backup plan.

But this was a secondary method.

The best situation was for Fang Yuan to settle it himself.

Borrowing Immortal Gu was not a feasible plan.

If Fang Yuan used his own Immortal Gu to deduce an immortal killer move to refine attitude Gu, it would help him greatly, he could even fuse this immortal killer move into reverse flow protection seal.

Think about it, by then, Reverse Flow River would flow around Fang Yuan’s body, and any Immortal Gu that flew inside would be refined by Fang Yuan. How tempting was that?

Fang Yuan had a long term goal regarding this.

But it was a pity, even though he joined the trading convention, he did not gain any progress in this aspect.

But thankfully, Lang Ya blessed land had no lack of refinement path Immortal Gu.

Through treasure yellow heaven, and after expending Lang Ya Sect contribution points, Fang Yuan borrowed some Immortal Gu.

A commotion occurred in treasure yellow heaven again, but Fang Yuan had no choice but to do this.

Using these refinement path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan came up with an immortal killer move using Reverse Flow River to refine attitude Gu.

Fang Yuan purposely slowed his movement, half a month later, he successfully refined attitude Gu.

And now, he finally owned this legendary rank eight Immortal Gu..

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1301: Approach of the Great Era

Central Continent, Hidden Dragon Cave.

“Greetings to superior immortal from Heavenly Court.” Two Gu Immortals knelt on the ground.

One old and one young.

A grandfather and a grandson.

They were Gu Immortals from Wind Cloud Manor.

The young Gu Immortal was Feng Chan Zi, while the elderly man was Old Man Bei Feng, with rank eight cultivation level. Among the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, he was famous, and without any mishaps, he would have become a member of Heavenly Court already.

It was not easy or normal to become a member of Heavenly Court.

Rank eight cultivation level was not enough, they had to be elites among rank eights. This standard had never been lowered since Heavenly Court was created. Heavenly Court did not waver in this aspect, too few was better than too many!

And this Old Man Bei Feng was now kneeling on the ground, expressing his reverence.

The person he was kneeling to was an extremely weak old man, he was shaking as if a gust of wind could blow him away.

But this old man was not ordinary, he had a huge origin, he left a deep mark in Heavenly Court’s history.

He was — Duke Long!

“Get up, bring me inside.” Duke Long said plainly.

“Yes.” Old Man Bei Feng acknowledged.

A moment later, Duke Long came to the deepest part of Hidden Dragon Cave.

This was a deep earth trench, it was larger than the Earth Trench that Northern Plains’ Zombie Alliance had.

It was possible to stuff thousands of cities into it easily.

Duke Long and Old Man Bei Feng were tiny like dust specks compared to it.

From their view, the entire Earth Trench was covered in darkness, this darkness was so deep that one could not see through it.

Rumble...!!

Suddenly, the entire Earth Trench started shaking intensely.

The two sides of the Earth Trench started to have falling rocks.

The earthquake caused incredible sound waves that would make people shell-shocked.

Old Man Bei Feng’s expression changed, he quickly used the Immortal Gu in his immortal aperture. Suddenly, bright lights shone as countless auroras and flowing water weaved together dazzlingly.

There was actually a huge super Gu formation here!

In contrast to this Gu formation, the one that surrounded Southern Border’s dream realm was just a kitten compared to an elephant.

Old Man Bei Feng controlled the Gu formation, his expression quickly changed as his forehead was covered in sweat.

“The commotion is so huge!” As a great rank eight Gu Immortal, he was actually feeling difficulty now.

This super Gu formation was suppressing a terrifying lifeform, Old Man Bei Feng could only barely deal with it using the super Gu formation.

“Hehehe, it seems that after so many years, you are still so lively. Di Zang Sheng.” At this time, Duke Long spoke plainly.

“Roar!!!” At the next moment, an overwhelming dragon roar filled the entire Earth Trench.

The super Gu formation’s aurora lights were dispersing, flowing water was disrupted.

Old Man Bei Feng’s forehead was dripping with sweat, he thought: “This is after the super Gu formation's isolation, the volume is still so loud. If I have to face this Evil Dragon directly, I am afraid...”

Duke Long was unmoved, he assessed: “It seems your temper has not changed, you are still so feisty.”

“Accursed old man!!” This time, a voice came from inside the Gu formation.

The voice was just as loud.

At the next moment, a huge dragon head appeared from within the aurora light and flowing water.

It was Evil Dragon – Di Zang Sheng!

This immemorial desolate beast had a huge origin, it was a legendary immemorial desolate beast created from endless hatred, anger, and grudges, all these negatives emotions in Central Continent's earth veins.

It was born of nature, because it was created from the collective negative emotions of humans, after it was born, it had intelligence that matched humans.

Initially, it could only roar and growl, but after learning, it could use hope Gu to awaken its aperture, it learned human language, and for some time, it turned into a human and tried to master Gu Immortal methods.

For some time, it wreaked havoc in Central Continent, it caused great distress and chaos in the world.

But eventually, it was suppressed by Duke Long.

It was suppressed for countless years.

But Heavenly Court could not kill it.

Because it was formed from the negative emotions of humans. As long as humanity still flourished, the Evil Dragon would continue to grow stronger every day. Even if its body was destroyed or completely decimated.

Soon, it would form from new earth veins, and continue to cause chaos in the world.

That was why Heavenly Court used a super Gu formation to suppress this Evil Dragon.

The people guarding the place were rotated from time to time. This time, Feng Chan Zi sold immortal materials for his own profits, he was punished to guard Hidden Dragon Cave. And his grandpa knew that he could not do this alone, so he gave up the chance to join Heavenly Court and came to look after this Evil Dragon.

After the Evil Dragon saw Duke Long, it became incredibly furious.

The meeting of enemies with filled with animosity.

“Why are you roaring and growling, you cannot escape from this prison.” Duke Long said plainly.

Di Zang Sheng heard this and no longer raged, it laughed: “Hahaha, I almost forgot. Accursed old man, you are going to die soon. Your lifespan is reaching its limit, you only have one last chance of extending your life. Even lifespan Gu cannot save you. Haha, this is hilarious, so what if you suppressed me? I am alive, while you are dying.”

Duke Long nodded: “You are right. Sometimes, I envy you, you have a long lifespan from birth, you innately have longevity. This might be the last time we meet, let me borrow ten years of life from you.”

Saying this, Duke Long sucked in a breath.

Old Man Bei Feng was shocked to find out that as the guardian, he instantly lost control of this Gu formation.

Di Zang Sheng was suppressed by Duke Long, this super Gu formation was created by Duke Long personally.

Duke Long was the true owner of this super Gu formation!

“Roar!” Di Zang Sheng let out a painful cry.

Duke Long was still sucking.

Old Man Bei Feng could not tell what Duke Long was actually sucking.

It seemed to be a sort of life essence that could not be seen with the naked eye, it was forcefully extracted from Di Zang Sheng’s body, sucked into Duke Long’s own body.

“It seems that this super Gu formation is not purely for suppressing Di Zang Sheng, it has this kind of effect.” Old Man Bei Feng had an epiphany.

During the process of sucking, Duke Long’s body inflated like a balloon from its twig-like appearance. His pale yellow ragged face faded to a normal color. His pale white hair also turned dark.

He was hunchbacked earlier and had fragile bones that emitted cracking sounds, but it had straightened now.

Most evidently, the pair of horns on his head were originally shriveled like two lumps of meat, but now, they shined with a metallic luster, piercing towards the sky.

Bam.

His peak rank eight aura burst out like an invisible wall, pushing outwards.

Old Man Bei Feng took a step back uncontrollably, looking at Duke Long’s majestic background, he had a sense of admiration in his heart.

In contrast to Duke Long was Evil Dragon Di Zang Sheng.

It said in a hoarse voice: “Damned old man, that is merely ten years of lifespan. It’s like I’m giving a pool of piss to you. Hahaha...”

It was still laughing, but it was very weak now.

Duke Long clenched his fists, saying nonchalantly: “Evil Dragon, you do not understand, how can I, Duke Long, fear death? I woke up this time to make up for my previous mistake. Ten years is more than enough.”

“Enough for? What are you trying to do?” Evil Dragon asked.

“What else? The great era is coming.” Duke Long said with deep meaning.

“Great era? Great era! Don’t tell me, the earth veins will merge, the regional walls will vanish, and the five regions will become one... wait, accursed old man, don’t go, tell me everything!” Di Zang Sheng shouted.

But Duke Long sneered, why would he care about a captive? He turned around and left Hidden Dragon Cave without any hesitation.

Southern Border.

A nameless place.

River water was surging.

This was a tributary of the River of Time!

Ying Wu Xie and the rest had been waiting by the riverside for a long time.

A figure emerged from the tributary of the River of Time.

“Quick! Let’s quickly give lord a helping hand!” Ying Wu Xie saw this and shouted.

Hei Lou Lan and Bai Ning Bing worked together beside him, activating the Gu formation.

Under the effect of the Gu formation, Purple Mountain True Monarch escaped from the tributary of the River of Time, he was like a drowning person, he barely managed to crawl ashore, he breathed roughly and was soaked to the bones.

“Purple Mountain True Monarch actually managed to return safely after entering the River of Time!” Bai Ning Bing was expressionless, but she was shocked on the inside.

“Lord, did you succeed?” Seeing Purple Mountain True Monarch regain his composure, Ying Wu Xie asked this.

Purple Mountain True Monarch nodded: “I went into the red lotus and interacted with that will, my gains were phenomenal!”

“Is that so?” Ying Wu Xie was overjoyed.

But Purple Mountain True Monarch had a solemn expression: “I used Red Lotus’ true inheritance to observe the past and future. Before Fang Yuan was reborn, our Shadow Sect had succeeded, we delayed the great era by five hundred years, we exterminated the future Great Dream Immortal Venerable before she matured, we even had Heavenly Court completely under our control! It is a pity that Fang Yuan changed everything. Shadow Sect cannot stop it anymore, the great era is coming!”

Ying Wu Xie had an extremely shocked expression.

Bai Ning Bing and Hei Lou Lan looked at each other, feeling puzzled.

The former asked coldly: “What is the great era?”

Ying Wu Xie breathed in deeply and answered: “The earth veins will merge, the regional walls will vanish, the five regions will become one, and Great Dream becomes venerable. This is the great era!”

Hei Lou Lan and Bai Ning Bing were stunned.

At the same time.

Fang Yuan went back to Southern Border using Wu Yi Hai’s appearance, he was back in Wu clan.

“I am finally back.”

“This time, I must absorb the dream realm and go all-out in raising my attainment levels.”

“There is enough time.”

“After five hundred years, during the five regions chaotic war, I might become a great grandmaster of every path already. I am looking forward to it.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1302: Divination Tortoise Transformation

Southern Border, Wu clan.

Fang Yuan entered Southern Border, using ‘Wu Yi Hai”s appearance, he went all the way back to Wu clan’s headquarters.

Knowing that he was back, Wu clan’s current first supreme elder, Wu Yong, summoned him.

“Brother, these are the Immortal Gu that I borrowed from the clan, I am returning them now.” Fang Yuan returned the Immortal Gu in his hands.

Wu Yong received them and smiled as he sat in the main seat: “Was your journey to Eastern Sea fruitful?”

Every Gu Immortal had their own secrets, especially someone with a special status like Wu Yi Hai, Wu Yong could not probe excessively. His question was really just small talk.

“I had great gains.” Fang Yuan showed some joy on his face, it was very realistic.

“That is good.” Wu Yong nodded.

He would not be able to imagine how great Fang Yuan’s gains were.

After leaving Southern Border, Fang Yuan chased after Shadow Sect’s remnant forces, even though he did not succeed in killing them, his gains were huge.

Not only did Fang Yuan obtain perseverance Immortal Gu and become the Reverse Flow River Lord, his battle strength surged and he could go unscathed against rank eight Gu Immortals. Liu Guan Yi’s reputation was renowned in the entire world!

Furthermore, while returning, he participated in an Eastern Sea trading convention. He obtained divination tortoise shell Immortal Gu and rank six day Gu.

“Thank you for the concern, brother. I wonder when can I return to the Gu formation to cultivate? Please arrange it for me.” Fang Yuan said with a polite and humble tone.

Wu Yong was very satisfied with Fang Yuan’s performance.

These last days, he had control of Wu clan, because Fang Yuan backed down, there were few obstacles in Wu clan, he successfully took over the clan and obtained the highest authority.

Right now, Wu Yong was already different from when he first took over. He was more composed and grand, he gave off an indomitable aura, he had great authority.

He was very happy about Fang Yuan’s attitude.

Clans were different from sects, bloodline was very important.

Wu Yi Hai’s status in Wu clan made him very special among Wu clan’s Gu Immortals. In terms of bloodline, he was solely inferior to Wu Yong, and was above everyone else.

Wu Yi Hai wanted to cultivate in seclusion, Wu Yong was sure to satisfy it.

Thus, he agreed: “Return to your residence and rest first. I will arrange this, in a few days, it will be ready.”

“Thank you, brother, I will take my leave.” Fang Yuan left after seeing that his objective was achieved.

He had a home in Wu clan.

When he first joined Wu clan, he was assigned by Wu clan to live on this Bear Mountain.

“Wu Yong is starting to be in control of Wu clan.”

“Wu Yi Hai’s identity is very sensitive, if he worked with an ambitious clan like Qiao clan, to create lots of problems, Wu Yong would have a huge headache.”

“Thus, to play safe, Wu Yong would not let Wu Yi Hai roam around and make contributions for the clan, and increase his reputation.”

Other Wu clan Gu Immortals were fine, but Wu Yi Hai was not.

Or rather, not for now.

Wu Du Xiu had just died, Wu Yong was in control of Wu clan but it was not a stable position.

Fang Yuan was very aware of Wu clan’s situation.

He was not worried that he would be unable to return to the super Gu formation.

While staying on the mountain, he cultivated.

But his immortal aperture could not be placed down.

Not to mention opening the immortal aperture’s entrance and taking in heaven and earth qi.

“My sovereign immortal aperture’s foundation is too deep, each time it absorbs heaven and earth qi, the commotion is huge, winds would surge and clouds would move.”

“But Reverse Flow River really consumes a lot of heaven and earth qi. It seems that I will need to go to Yi Tian Mountain later to take in heaven and earth qi, only by replenishing it will I sustain the sovereign immortal aperture and prevent my foundation from falling.”

This was a form of burden.

But it was a good one.

Even though Wu Yong asked him to rest, Fang Yuan did not rest.

He continued to cultivate, he was fighting against time.

During this period, many Gu Immortals from the clan came to visit Wu Yi Hai, who had a special status, but Fang Yuan rejected them all.

This attitude made Wu Yong very pleased. He felt that Wu Yi Hai was not trying to interfere in the clan affairs. Thus, he gave Fang Yuan a lot of immortal materials under his own name. Not only was he trying to reward and appeal to him, he was also trying to gain reputation for ‘being a caring brother’.

At the peak of the mountain, Fang Yuan, who was inside his huge house, had turned into a tortoise.

This tortoise was as large as a house, it was black and had a thick and tough shell, there were countless markings on its shell, it was difficult to observe but it had a certain order.

It was a divination tortoise.

This ancient desolate beast was associated with wisdom path, after transforming, Fang Yuan’s transformation path dao marks turned into wisdom path.

With his wisdom path dao mark accumulation, there was a huge quantitative change.

With this foundation, Fang Yuan could use wisdom path deduction methods with greater efficiency. It was at least several times or even more than ten times that of before!

Simply divination tortoise shell Immortal Gu, in terms of the Gu worm itself, it could not compare to attitude Gu or wisdom sword Immortal Gu, even Flying Sword, Sword Escape, and Dragon Breath were better than it.

But regarding Fang Yuan, it was extremely useful!

Suddenly, a brilliant light shined in the divination tortoise’s eyes.

“After ten or so days of hard work, I finally succeeded in deducing the killer move, divination tortoise transformation.”

At Fang Yuan’s will, he turned back to human.

Next, he tried to use the newly completed divination tortoise transformation killer move.

Once, twice, thrice...

After more than ten times, he finally finished making his adjustments.

A new divination tortoise transformation!

He added in a lot of transformation path mortal Gu, like tortoise head Gu, tortoise tail Gu, tortoise leg Gu, and others. There were also some wisdom path Gu worms, to increase the divination tortoise's ability to block deductions, until Fang Yuan reached his limits. There were also many defensive Gu worms.

Of course, there were only two cores.

One was rank seven divination tortoise shell Immortal Gu, the other was change form Immortal Gu.

The brand new divination tortoise was larger than before, it was lifelike like an actual ancient desolate beast divination tortoise.

Especially the tortoise shell, countless dao marks were weaved together in a criss-crossing fashion, there were an enormous number of them.

"Very good, I have reached my current limit." Fang Yuan experimented and felt very pleased.

This was all thanks to his wisdom path and transformation path grandmaster attainment levels.

Deducing these killer moves was as simple as drinking water.

Similar to the ancient sword dragon transformation, which combined transformation path and sword path. This divination tortoise transformation was the combination of transformation path and wisdom path.

And now, Fang Yuan had a new fighting method. It was not an incomplete version like before, this could be fully used in battle.

And most crucially, the killer moves ancient sword dragon transformation, reverse flow protection seal, and myriad self could not be used in battle, but this divination tortoise transformation covered the flaw, it solved Fang Yuan's current problem.

Fang Yuan stopped the transformation and rested to regain his mental energy.

He closed his eyes and his mind entered sovereign immortal aperture.

Landscape as Before!

The rank six Immortal Gu was used, targeting Reverse Flow River in the immortal aperture.

Red date immortal essence was expended rapidly, while Reverse Flow River started to produce river water under the power of Landscape as Before.

"The efficiency is too low." Fang Yuan sighed.

This was not his first experiment, he was quite disappointed.

Landscape as before Immortal Gu, even though it was effective on Reverse Flow River, the effect was mild.

This formed a clear contrast to Luo Po Valley and Dang Hun Mountain.

"Why is it that using Landscape as Before on Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley had such incredible effects, but on Reverse Flow River, it barely works?"

Fang Yuan was puzzled.

Was Reverse Flow River more special than the other two secluded domains of heaven and earth?

What other reasons were there?

If he could repair Reverse Flow River immediately, that would be great. He would have an unceasing supply of Reverse Flow River’s water.

But reality was less than perfect for Fang Yuan.

“Wait! Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley were once in the possession of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. And Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was the creator of sovereign immortal fetus Gu. Maybe... these two secluded domains of heaven and earth were modified by Shadow Sect, just like how Hei Lou Lan and the others could use Immortal Gu of other paths without being restricted by dao marks.”

Fang Yuan had a flash of inspiration.

His guess was right.

Not only did Shadow Sect have a method to allow Gu Immortals to cultivate other paths without facing conflicting dao marks, they could also modify secluded domains of heaven and earth, to allow Immortal Gu of certain paths to be very effective on the secluded domains of heaven and earth and not face conflicts from dao marks.

And time path Immortal Gu were fully effective on Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley, they would not be resisted by the vast number of soul path dao marks in them.

This was because Landscape as Before and Man as Before belonged to Shadow Sect. They were passed to Tai Bai Yun Sheng through Purple Mountain True Monarch.

As for Reverse Flow River, Shadow Sect did not have it, they had no interest in this river either.

Thus, Reverse Flow River was not modified, when Fang Yuan used Landscape as Before on Reverse Flow River, it was weakened by its vast number of dao marks, and had little effect. And this was already because Fang Yuan was the Reverse Flow River Lord, otherwise, Landscape as Before’s effect would be reflected upon him.

“Reverse Flow River lost a lot of water, the rank eight existences depleted a good amount. But thankfully, it is recovering, even though the speed is very slow.”

“Can I use reverse flow protection seal to resist immemorial year beasts?”

Fang Yuan shook his head.

Using Reverse Flow River, he could at most defend himself. If an immemorial year beast tried to destroy the immortal aperture, he could do nothing against it.

He thought about this because Fang Yuan was concerned about the sealed rank eight Immortal Gu, Years Flow Like Water.

Even though his battle strength surged greatly, Fang Yuan was still unable to unseal Years Flow Like Water currently.

Like this, Fang Yuan cultivated silently, waiting for Wu Yong’s arrangement for returning to the giant dream realm.

But a few days later, a minor mishap occurred.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1303: Divination Tortoise’s Power

Southern Border, Wu clan.

In the hall, Fang Yuan, Wu Yong, and another Gu Immortal were present.

He had a tall body, he wore a black and white coat, he had a long beard that extended downwards to his chest. His eyes were slim and long, a mysterious light was hidden in them, his body was covered in mist.

Wu clan Gu Immortal, Wu Yu Bo, a prideful person with peak rank seven battle strength, it was only slightly lower than Old Treeman Ba De.

“Gu Immortal Yan Huang challenged Yu Bo, the reality is that Xia clan is after Moon Bowl. This place produces moon path Gu worms, it is one of the most important resource points of our clan, we cannot lose.” Wu Yong said.

“Since I am going, there is no need to worry. If I can defeat Yan Huang twice, I can win a third time.” Wu Yu Bo said coldly.

Moon Bowl was not a bowl, it was a valley.

But this valley had a peculiar shape, resembling a bowl, and because it produced moon path Gu worms, people called it Moon Bowl.

Moon Bowl had a village in it.

But when Wu clan expanded, in order to take over Moon Bowl, they eradicated this village. There was a Gu Immortal in this village, he was known as Immortal Yan Huang.

Wu clan sent out Wu Yu Bo and defeated him. Immortal Yan Huang could not defeat them and had to escape in tears, abandoning his home.

Wu clan was a righteous path clan, they needed a proper reason to take over Moon Bowl, they could not kill Immortal Yan Huang directly.

This was the rules of the righteous path.

Immortal Yan Huang left with hatred, to take revenge, he hid his identity and practised his killer moves, but he still lost to Wu Yu Bo a second time.

After Wu clan learned of his whereabouts, they knew that this enmity was unresolvable, they gathered Gu Immortals to assassinate Immortal Yan Huang.

But at the crucial moment, Immortal Yan Huang was saved by an unknown force.

Wu clan wanted to pursue it, but at that time, Wu Du Xiu died, Wu clan was in chaos and Wu Yong had just taken over, he needed to suppress the situation. This gave Immortal Yan Huang some time to recover.

Until now, a few days ago, Immortal Yan Huang sent a challenge to Wu Yu Bo with Moon Bowl as the stake. Whoever wins would obtain Moon Bowl.

Wu clan was the number one super force in Southern Border, how could they not accept it?

But Wu Yong's worry was that Immortal Yan Huang was here after joining Xia clan, a super force, he was no longer all alone.

This meant that the mysterious force which helped Immortal Yan Huang earlier was undoubtedly Xia clan.

On the surface, this was Immortal Yan Huang challenging Wu Yu Bo. But the truth was, this matter was significant, it was the contest of two super forces.

This challenge had been spread widely, the attention of many Southern Border forces and Gu Immortal experts were drawn to it.

After Wu Du Xiu died, even though Wu clan was still the number one force, its reputation had fallen. Xia clan was the first challenger of Wu clan's dominance. If Wu clan lost this, the other clans would smell weakness and everyone would be tempted to target Wu clan, there would be huge problems.

This was Wu Yong's worry.

Immortal Yan Huang's open challenge was now the first hurdle of Wu Yong's rule.

“Yu Bo, don't be careless, you know how important this is for our clan.” Wu Yong sighed: “That Yan Huang joined Xia clan, he is given aid by them, they must have ill intentions and be amply prepared this time if they are challenging you.”

“First supreme elder, you only need to wait for good news.” Wu Yu Bo had a nonchalant expression, he glanced at Fang Yuan and said: “In my opinion, we don't need to bring so many people. This Yan Huang is just a loser, I can easily capture him.”

“We should play safe, my brother is skilled in three transformations, he is a rank seven expert, with him guarding you, I can rest assured.” Wu Yong said.

Wu clan had a huge territory, even though there were many Wu clan Gu Immortals, they were split up in many places, they lacked manpower.

Originally, Wu Yong was planning to send Fang Yuan to the super Gu formation.

But now that this happened, Wu Yong had to send Fang Yuan to guard Wu Yu Bo. After all, Immortal Yan Huang was not alone, he was accompanied by Xia clan Gu Immortal Xia Qing Cang.

Fang Yuan had joined Wu clan, although he could reject this, there was no harm in going, Fang Yuan agreed.

This was a good task, he only needed to stay on guard, after it was over, the clan would reward him for the help.

Wu Yu Bo did not care, but Wu Yong insisted on it, he could not reject it.

This matter was decided, a few days later, Wu Yu Bo went to the designated location with Fang Yuan.

Over there, Xia Qing Cang and Immortal Yan Huang were waiting already.

Immortal Yan Huang looked like a middle aged Gu Immortal, he had a mature expression and ordinary appearance, after seeing Wu Yu Bo, his expression changed, he stared with wide opened eyes, like they were spewing fire.

But that Xia Qing Cang had a special disposition, his body stood tall and straight like a mountain peak. He had a square face and white hair. Especially his beard, it was tough like needles, his eyes were shining brightly.

“Wu Yu Bo, you destroyed my village and killed my descendants, I will return all this humiliation to you today!” Immortal Yan Huang growled.

Wu Yu Bo sneered: “Simply slander! I did that to find traces of blood path and uphold justice, eliminating evil for this world. You are not a righteous person, and you dare to smear me, you deserve death!!”

The two fought immediately.

Fang Yuan and Xia Qing Cang watched at the two ends of the battlefield, staying on guard for their respective Gu Immortals.

There was nothing to say, everyone knew the real reason, but the righteous path had to put a front of righteousness over their intentions.

Immortal Yan Huang was a fire and earth path dual cultivator, on one hand, his flames were like rising dragons, emitting tremendous heat. On the other hand, rocks were rumbling, there was a huge commotion.

Meanwhile, Wu Yu Bo cultivated water path, he moved like falling leaves, he was grand and swift ,there was grace in his actions. His body was covered in water vapor, there was drizzle from the sky, but the rain was able to dissolve all of Immortal Yan Huang’s flames and rocks.

Evidently, Wu Yu Bo had the upper hand.

However, the battle had just started, both sides were probing, they had not used their Immortal Gu or immortal killer moves yet.

Fang Yuan watched as he investigated the surroundings, he was defending against Xia Qing Cang, in case he used any sneak attacks.

Xia Qing Cang seemed very relaxed, he looked at Fang Yuan at times, smiling when his gaze met with Fang Yuan’s eyes.

This made Fang Yuan feel uneasy.

Xia Qing Cang was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he was famous in Southern Border, he was a high-level character.

The battle continued.

Both sides started to use Immortal Gu and immortal killer moves.

Immortal Yan Huang was always suppressed and pressured by Wu Yu Bo, the advantage the latter had was becoming clearer.

Victory was near, Fang Yuan did not dare to be careless. If he failed his job, he would be punished when he returned to the clan.

“Yan Huang, die. It is your honor to die from my signature killer move!” Wu Yu Bo had deep killing intent, a cold light was shining in his slim and long eyes.

He activated his immortal killer move, rain poured down as clouds gathered, dark winds were howling, the three fused together to form a ball-shaped cage capturing Immortal Yan Huang.

Immortal Yan Huang was trapped inside and could not leave, he was in a desperate situation, he was about to die.

Fang Yuan closely observed Xia Qing Cang, guarding against his intervention.

But Xia Qing Cang had a smile on his face, he watched casually, seemingly having no intention to interfere.

But at this time, Immortal Yan Huang suddenly laughed loudly, the aura of countless Gu worms appeared from his body, a bright light was shining from his body.

Immediately, the cage that trapped him broke apart.

“How can this be?!” Wu Yu Bo was shocked, he was caught off-guard, his signature killer move was broken, he immediately suffered huge injuries.

The lava under Immortal Yan Huang’s feet gathered and formed a battlefield.

This was an immortal battlefield killer move.

Wu Yu Bo had a pale expression, he was trapped inside the battlefield.

The situation had turned around, Wu Yu Bo was in grave danger.

With this sudden change, Fang Yuan wanted to help, but Xia Qing Cang flew to him, warning him: “Wu Yi Hai, don’t be the shame of Wu clan!”

Fang Yuan chuckled: “How can an outsider like you determine if our Wu clan is shameful?”

Saying this, he turned into a divination tortoise and charged into the lava battlefield.

Xia Qing Cang praised Fang Yuan’s resolute decision internally, but he did not move slowly: “In that case, have a taste of my killer move, scattering mind!”

A wisdom path immortal killer move.

Xia Qing Cang used his signature killer move right away, it was a powerful method.

Any Gu Immortal hit with this would feel their mind wandering, there would be random thoughts colliding in their mind, their battle strength would be greatly affected, if they were careless, they would fall into confusion and be unable to help themselves.

Fang Yuan chuckled, he kept charging towards the battlefield killer move without caring.

“Fool!” Xia Qing Cang mocked coldly.

At the next moment, his scattering mind hit Fang Yuan, but it dissipated, while Fang Yuan was unscathed.

Xia Qing Cang’s cold smile froze on his face.

“How can this be? This is... divination tortoise?” Xia Qing Cang finally recognized Fang Yuan’s transformation, he had a bitter expression.

The divination tortoise was a wisdom path ancient desolate beast, it was skilled against the deductions of wisdom path Gu Immortals. This wisdom path killer move was created from the concept of deduction, it was completely countered by the divination tortoise.

Bam.

The battlefield killer move was broken by Fang Yuan as the divination tortoise entered, immediately saving Wu Yu Bo, who was in danger.

Xia Qing Cang was about to interfere, but Fang Yuan said: “Our Wu clan has lost, this battle is over, Moon Bowl is yours!”

After hearing this, Xia Qing Cang stopped.

Immortal Yan Huang wanted to attack, but Xia Qing Cang stopped him.

The former had no choice but to watch with hatred as his enemy escaped.

“Why did you let him go?” Immortal Yan Huang roared.

Xia Qing Cang looked at him coldly: “We have already won Moon Bowl, our objective has been met. It is not the time for you to kill Wu Yu Bo yet. Don’t forget that you are an external supreme elder of Xia clan, you have to think about our clan’s benefits first!”

This time, Xia clan had won, if they pursued this matter, Wu clan would fight back with force.

Xia clan did not want to be Wu clan’s target and lose in the end, allowing the other forces to benefit.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1304: Happily Getting Immortal Gu

The Wu clan rank seven Gu Immortal, Wu Yu Bo, lost to Immortal Yan Huang.

This matter was intentionally spread by Xia clan, soon, the whole of Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world knew about it, everyone was moved!

“Wu Yu Bo is a rank seven expert, a famous battle strength of Wu clan, he lost to Immortal Yan Huang?”

“Immortal Yan Huang is not weak, now that he has Xia clan’s help, it is not that hard to defeat Wu Yu Bo.”

“Wu Yu Bo is arrogant and prideful, it is quite shocking that he lost to a person he defeated before.”

“The important thing is that Immortal Yan Huang broke through Wu Yu Bo’s signature killer move, this is impressive. Perhaps Xia clan’s Xia Liu Pei helped him to deduce it.”

Xia clan had a wisdom path Gu Immortal who was famous for being a deduction expert in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world.

It was Xia Liu Pei.

“This time, Wu clan lost face. Not only did Wu Yu Bo lose to Immortal Yan Huang, he even nearly lost his life. If not for Wu Yi Hai, who broke through the battlefield killer move, Wu Yu Bo would not have survived.”

“Seriously?”

“Yes, all sorts of Gu worms have been passed around, they record the scene of that battle.”

“Wu clan actually lost Moon Bowl, hehe, this is a huge joke.”

“Well if we trace the origin, Wu clan had snatched Moon Bowl previously. This is what Wu clan deserves!”

“Hahaha, now that Wu Du Xiu is dead, Wu clan cannot keep its title of number one.”

Losing Moon Bowl was not a problem for Wu clan, which had vast territory and wealth.

But Fang Yuan had intervened to destroy the battlefield killer move and save Wu Yu Bo, this made Wu clan fall into a passive spot.

This was the difference between righteous path and demonic path.

Fang Yuan had saved Wu Yu Bo, this was against the rules of the fight, Wu clan had lost face as a result.

And the problem was, there was hard evidence regarding this, they could not deny it.

Xia clan’s wisdom path Gu Immortal Xia Qing Cang was the one guarding Immortal Yan Huang. He was a meticulous person and had used information path Immortal Gu to record the scene. They were targeting Wu clan, they naturally came prepared.

Wu clan had to admit their fault, after Fang Yuan returned with Wu Yu Bo, Wu Yong gave orders to punish Fang Yuan, because he had gone against the rules of the fight, he was punished to be secluded and had to compensate some immortal essence stones.

Fang Yuan had saved Wu Yu Bo, this was a merit. But for Wu clan, they had lost face, even though they saved a rank seven Gu Immortal, and it was much more important to them than face!

Fang Yuan had merit, but Wu Yong punished him.

But he had no grudges, he accepted his punishment and returned to Wu clan’s headquarters, staying in his mountain and not leaving.

The incident of Moon Bowl was still escalating, the impact was increasing.

Wu Yu Bo was a prideful person, after losing to Immortal Yan Huang, he felt incredibly ashamed, he declared that he was going into secluded cultivation after returning, he would claim victory in the future.

Eve though Wu clan lost Moon Bowl valley and Wu Yong punished Fang Yuan, who broke the rules, Wu clan’s reputation had unavoidably declined.

And most importantly, Xia clan’s actions were an inspiration to the other super forces.

Righteous path and demonic path were different.

The righteous path had its own rules.

Xia clan used these rules, even though Wu clan lost Moon Bowl, they did not object.

Xia clan was special in Southern Border, and even among the five regions. Because this super force mainly cultivated light path and wisdom path. Even though wisdom path Gu Immortals were rare, Xia clan had five wisdom path Gu Immortals, and some of them were strong experts.

Among the wisdom path Gu Immortals of Southern Border, Xia clan was the domineering force, having a huge proportion of them.

It was not strange that Wu clan was plotted against by Xia clan.

The other forces saw Xia clan's success and were all moved, wanting to imitate them.

When Wu Du Xiu was alive, Wu clan was domineering, taking over resource points from others, expanding their territory, incidents like Moon Bowl were numerous. They had many enemies like Immortal Yan Huang.

This was what other forces could use to deal with Wu clan.

All sorts of intelligence was arriving, Wu Yong had an ominous sensation, he felt like a storm was brewing towards Wu clan.

As expected, after Moon Bowl, Luo clan approached Wu clan with similar reasons as Xia clan.

Next, Chi clan and Chai clan also attempted to get a share of Wu clan's inspiration cocoon cave and spring sun mountain range.

Wu Yong oversaw the situation from the base, deploying people outside, but Wu clan's territory was too big, they lacked manpower, they could only maintain the situation at best.

Wu clan was in trouble, Wu Yong had a huge headache, but his brother 'Wu Yi Hai' was living a comfortable life.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

"Let me go, please let me go. Ahh—!" Ma Hong Yun's soul screamed in pain.

But Fang Yuan ignored him, continuing to soul search him.

Ma Hong Yun's soul could not endure such torture, he quickly became very weak.

Guts Gu.

Fang Yuan used one Gu worm to replenish Ma Hong Yun's soul, before continuing his soul search.

"You evil fiend!!"

"Kill me, kill me..."

The intense pain in his soul made Ma Hong Yun unable to endure it, he continued to curse, scold, cry, and beg, but Fang Yuan was unmoved.

A moment later, he stopped.

Ma Hong Yun’s soul was very diffuse, like mist that was about to vanish.

But next, Fang Yuan smashed one guts Gu and Ma Hong Yun’s soul healed.

“I have finally excavated all of the luck path true inheritance that Ma Hong Yun had.”

“But Zhao Lian Yun is not dead yet, I can still continue to keep Ma Hong Yun’s soul, it has value. Hehehe.”

Fang Yuan had killed Ma Hong Yun by accident in Reverse Flow River and obtained his soul.

These last days, he had been soul searching.

After confirming that he had fully excavated everything, Ma Hong Yun had no secrets in front of him anymore.

Fang Yuan thus obtained a portion of the all living being’s luck true inheritance.

Self luck, all living being’s luck, heaven and earth luck, these were Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s three true inheritances. Self luck was in Lang Ya blessed land, all living being’s luck was in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, and heaven and earth luck was in Longevity Heaven.

As Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed, and the all living being’s luck true inheritance was destroyed as well.

However, back then, Ma Hong Yun and Zhao Lian Yun were protected by the all living being’s luck true inheritance, they each received a portion of it.

After so many events, Fang Yuan soul searched him and obtained this portion of the all living being’s luck true inheritance.

“Thankfully, Old Ancestor Xue Hu wanted to use Ma Hong Yun to refine Fortune Rivalling Heaven and needed a healthy Ma Hong Yun, thus he did not do anything to his soul.”

“When Ma Hong Yun left Imperial Court blessed land, he was captured by Shadow Sect’s Qin Bai Sheng. Since he learned about the all living being’s luck true inheritance, Shadow Sect also knows.”

Fang Yuan analyzed, in this portion of the true inheritance, the greatest value was fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu’s recipe!

Ma Hong Yun remembered the details.

This was the core essence of the all living being’s luck true inheritance.

It was not strange.

It was because Ma Hong Yun knew of this Immortal Gu recipe that Old Ancestor Xue Hu learned of it after buying him, resulting in him having the intention to refine fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu.

“Fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu...” Fang Yuan smiled bitterly.

According to this Immortal Gu recipe, even if he used up all of his wealth, he could not complete ten percent of the recipe’s needs.

Unless he had a living Gu material like Ma Hong Yun, he could save a lot of precious refinement materials, Fang Yuan could barely give it a go.

But how would Fang Yuan dare to refine fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu.

This was a rank eight Immortal Gu!

Brazenly trying to refine a rank eight Immortal Gu, what would happen? Old Ancestor Xue Hu’s outcome was an example.

This was the number one Gu Immortal with the highest battle strength in Northern Plains, but he was not doing well now. Not only did his refinement of Fortune Rivalling Heaven fail, he lost Reverse Flow River and Snowy Mountain blessed land, even his beloved wife Lady Wan Shou was injured.

“Even though I have a lot of assets now, and the sovereign immortal aperture’s foundation can rival rank eight Gu Immortals, my immortal essence stone and red date immortal essence storage is low, and most importantly, I have few resources that are high in value.”

This time, Fang Yuan chased after Ying Wu Xie, from Southern Border to Eastern Sea to Northern Plains, it consumed a lot of immortal essence. And inside Reverse Flow River, he created an immortal killer move. Reverse flow protection seal was the most costly immortal killer move that he had.

“The sovereign immortal aperture’s production was incredible, but because I reduced the rate of time to stall calamities and tribulations, the efficiency fell drastically.”

“Even though I am still earning profits, my expenditure is huge too. Especially the feeding of Immortal Gu, wisdom sword Immortal Gu and attitude Gu have not had their feeding settled yet, I still need more funds for them.”

Fang Yuan wanted to solve the problem of food, he also needed to store immortal essence for emergencies, his current situation was quite awkward.

A while ago, he had to pay immortal essence stones for saving Wu Yu Bo against the rules, it added to his problems.

“Slowing the rate of time causes my immortal aperture to produce more slowly. This way, I can only expand production to emphasize on quantity instead.”

“But what resources do I expand production of, this is an important consideration. Some resources are already oversupplied in the market, if I expand production, it would only harm me.”

While Fang Yuan was thinking about this, Wu Yu Bo’s will brought an Immortal Gu and flew towards Fang Yuan’s mountain.

“Thank you for saving my life. Lord Wu Yi Hai, this rank six vajra thought Immortal Gu will be my expression of gratitude.” Wu Yu Bo’s will actually gave Fang Yuan an Immortal Gu.

Vajra thought Immortal Gu!

Evidently, this was a wisdom path Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan had benefited from this Moon Bowl incident — he gained an Immortal Gu!

Even though it was rank six, Immortal Gu were unique, they were priceless.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1305: Vajra Thought

This vajra thought Immortal Gu was fist sized, it looked like a translucent glass, shining with golden lights, it looked very appealing.

Fang Yuan held it in his hands, it was heavy, as if he was holding a piece of gold.

The process of changing owners was very fast.

When Fang Yuan refined this vajra thought Immortal Gu successfully, Wu Yu Bo’s will said goodbye and flew away.

Obtaining a rank six Immortal Gu like this, Fang Yuan was not surprised.

Because he had merit!

Fang Yuan saved Wu Yu Bo, it was a huge merit in Wu clan. Even though he broke the rules and Wu clan lost face, they preserved a precious rank seven battle strength. Evidently, his merits surpassed the problems he caused!

Even though Wu Yong punished Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan understood why. This was the righteous path, they had to do it on the surface.

Wu clan had to reward Fang Yuan, but Wu Yong could not do it himself.

Once he did, the political implications would be different, if it were found out, others would use it to attack his reputation.

Thus, Wu Yu Bo’s will had to do it.

This vajra thought Immortal Gu was supposedly Wu Yu Bo’s personal gift to Fang Yuan, but it was actually Wu clan paying for it. There had to be this middleman, it was the righteous path’s way.

“Another Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan smiled bitterly.

Ordinary Gu Immortals might be happy, but to Fang Yuan, the implications were different.

He had too many Immortal Gu!

The burden was huge.

“But vajra thought Immortal Gu is a wisdom path Immortal Gu, I can use it to make up for some of my weaknesses.”

Fang Yuan did not lack wisdom path attainment level, he lacked wisdom path Immortal Gu.

In the past, he only had attitude Gu and unravel mystery Gu, but now he had affection Gu and vajra thought Gu.

Four wisdom path Immortal Gu, this was enough, with Fang Yuan’s wisdom path grandmaster attainment level, he could use them well.

Fang Yuan instilled red date immortal essence, attempting to activate this vajra thought Immortal Gu.

Immediately, golden thoughts appeared in his mind. These thoughts were small and exquisite, they shined with a metallic luster, giving off a tough feeling.

When the thoughts collided, they created clanking sounds.

Fang Yuan tried to use these newly produced vajra thoughts to deduce.

But he found that these vajra thoughts were not good at thinking. The thoughts were hard to fuse, they often broke apart.

Fang Yuan thought ‘as expected’, he was not surprised.

Vajra thought Immortal Gu itself was not good for thinking, it excelled in fighting.

Fang Yuan mobilized these vajra thoughts in his mind, these thoughts were small and exquisite, when they left his mind, they expanded in the outside world, becoming fist sized golden balls, there was bright light shining on their crystal-like surface.

Fang Yuan sat on a cushion, hundreds of vajra thoughts were floating around him, at once, golden light shined and gave him an extraordinary air.

At his will, a vajra thought flew out.

Swoosh!

It was very fast.

Thoughts moved rapidly to begin with, thoughts moved faster than light in one’s mind!

When the vajra thought was in the outside world, it was not as fast as in the mind, but it was still rapid.

“This speed is half of sword escape Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan’s eyes twitched, he was satisfied with this speed.

Sword Escape was a rank seven Immortal Gu, and one with great speed. Vajra thought Immortal Gu was only rank six, but the vajra thoughts could have half of Sword Escape’s speed.

Of course, for Immortal Gu like Vajra Thought, even if it was raised to rank seven or eight, the quality of the vajra thoughts produced would not change, only the quantity would vary.

In theory, mortal vajra thought Gu could produce vajra thoughts no different from those produced by the Immortal Gu. The difference was the quantity. Rank five mortal vajra thought Gu could produce a hundred vajra thoughts at once. But vajra thought Immortal Gu could produce thousands or even tens of thousands of vajra thoughts at once.

Then what was the power of one vajra thought?

Fang Yuan aimed at a tile on the ground and shot out the vajra thought.

Bam, the vajra thought created a trail of golden light as it crashed into the tile, drilling deep underground.

Fang Yuan nodded.

The power was decent.

This place was a mortal Gu House, the defensive power was too weak for Gu Immortals, but it was not useless.

The power of the vajra thought made Fang Yuan think of bullets from Earth.

But it was much larger than bullets.

“One use of vajra thought Immortal Gu can create thousands of vajra thoughts, if they are all shot out together, it is quite a sight.”

“Wait a second...”

A flash of inspiration appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind.

He thought of two Gu Immortals, one was Dong Fang Chang Fan, the other was Ye Lui Qun Xing. The former had an immortal killer move called myriad star fireflies. The latter also had an immortal killer move, it used star fragments as the core, the longer he fought, the stronger he became.

“I have vajra thought Immortal Gu, why don’t I imitate myriad star fireflies and create an immortal killer move?”

Fang Yuan considered it.

Intuition from his wisdom path grandmaster attainment told him that this would not be tough.

Thus, Fang Yuan stopped activating vajra thought Immortal Gu, he pondered and began to deduce the immortal killer move.

He was imitating myriad star fireflies, using vajra thought Immortal Gu as the core.

The process was smooth, there was little difficulty, it all went according to Fang Yuan’s intuition.

An hour later, this immortal killer move was half complete.

A day and a night later, Fang Yuan turned into a divination tortoise to deduce it without rest, finally obtaining the complete immortal killer move.

Fang Yuan did not name this immortal killer move, because he had a new inspiration.

“Just this immortal killer move with rank six vajra thought Immortal Gu as the core is not powerful enough. Maybe I can use divination tortoise transformation to modify this immortal killer move and raise its strength!”

This modification would not be easy.

Even though he had grandmaster wisdom path and transformation path attainment level, combining the two paths would not be an easy task.

The modification took a long time.

But Fang Yuan was not anxious.

The outside situation was quite calm now.

Even though Shadow Sect was around, and Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven were pursuing him, as long as he used the dream realm, Fang Yuan’s foundation would continue to grow rapidly.

Undeniably, with reverse flow protection seal, his confidence had risen greatly.

Three days later, the modification of the killer move was not done, he was only at thirty percent, but Wu Yong had summoned Wu Yi Hai.

In the hall, the two brothers talked, Wu Yong told Fang Yuan: If he was not happy with vajra thought Immortal Gu, he could choose a rank six Immortal Gu from the clan’s treasury and exchange it.

The reason was, after Fang Yuan accepted vajra thought Immortal Gu, he did not make a move, Wu Yong thought that Fang Yuan was a lone immortal and did not know how the righteous path worked, he might have really assumed that it was a gift from Wu Yu Bo.

This would not do.

Wu Yong summoned Fang Yuan and hinted to him that this vajra thought Immortal Gu was all because of this elder brother’s efforts. And using the excuse of exchanging Gu, he expressed goodwill to Fang Yuan.

He did not know that Fang Yuan understood the entire situation, he was just pretending to be unaware.

“It seems that Wu clan is in trouble now, because they lack Gu Immortals, Wu Yong wants to make use of me.” Fang Yuan immediately understood Wu Yong’s intention.

Fang Yuan did not want to interfere in Wu clan’s matters.

But recently, many super forces were cooperating to emit pressure on Wu clan subtly.

There were many problems, Wu Yong was busy dealing with all of them.

And over at the giant dream realm, Ba clan was leading the Gu Immortals in giving trouble to Wu clan.

Originally, Wu Yong wanted to send Fang Yuan there, but Ba clan was creating problems, the pressure at the super Gu formation was increasing. To play safe, Wu Yong did not want to change people now, thus, Fang Yuan’s plan of going to the super Gu formation was stalled.

“Thank you for the concern, brother, I would like to take a look at the inner treasury as well.” Fang Yuan had created an immortal killer move using vajra thought Immortal Gu, but he still wanted to look at the Immortal Gu inside the inner treasury.

Last time, he had chosen Immortal Gu from the outer treasury, the Immortal Gu inside the inner treasury were much better and had greater value.

As the number one force of Southern Border, Fang Yuan was excited about what was inside Wu clan’s inner treasury.

There were few Immortal Gu in the inner treasury, but they were all the best of the best. But Fang Yuan had too many Immortal Gu now, he mainly wanted to probe Wu clan’s foundation and gain more information about them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1306: Immortal Gu Reputation Restriction

Among them was an Immortal Gu called Reputation Restriction, it was a rare information path rank seven Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan was very interested.

After all, he was too weak in terms of information path, it was greatly restricting his development.

Reputation restriction Immortal Gu had an incredible effect.

After it was used, it would turn into a rope to restrict any desolate beast or desolate plant, and even ancient desolate beasts or ancient desolate plants.

Indeed, even though it was an information path Immortal Gu, it had an enslavement path effect.

It was very special and unique.

What moved Fang Yuan was, this reputation restriction Immortal Gu’s effect varied according to its owner’s reputation.

This suited Fang Yuan very well.

Be it Fang Yuan himself or Liu Guan Yi, they were characters who shook all five regions, they were widely known. In recent times, who had the most prominent reputation? It was none other than Fang Yuan!

“But...”

“My information path attainment level is ordinary, even if I get this reputation restriction Immortal Gu, what use is it?”

“Enslaving ancient desolate beasts and desolate plants is not useful to me. Only if I can enslave an immemorial desolate beast.”

“And just this rank seven Immortal Gu Reputation Restriction will be impossible to enslave immemorial desolate beasts with. The only possibility is to use it as a core to create an immortal killer move.”

“But that will take forever. My information path and enslavement path attainment levels are not at grandmaster. Regarding immemorial desolate beasts or plants, grandmaster attainment level is already very limited.”

Fang Yuan thought about it, he did not exchange it, he kept vajra thought Immortal Gu.

This choice surprised Wu Yong a little.

“I made some gains in Eastern Sea, from now on, the divination tortoise transformation that uses wisdom path will be my main cultivation.” Fang Yuan explained.

This was in preparation for him using divination tortoise transformation in the future.

Wu Yong nodded: “I called you here for an additional matter.”

Fang Yuan was calm: “Please tell me.”

Wu Yong smiled bitterly: “The Frosty Peak that my clan controls is targeted by Xia clan. There are some historical reasons, they are all recorded in this information path mortal Gu. Brother, I hope you can help defend Frosty Peak for our clan.”

“I am willing to solve your problem, brother.” Fang Yuan agreed before accepting the information path mortal Gu, inspecting it.

Fang Yuan’s attitude made Wu Yong very pleased.

Fang Yuan looked at the information in the Gu worm, he understood this matter.

As it turned out, after Immortal Yan Huang defeated Wu Yu Bo, Xia clan obtained Moon Bowl, becoming the greatest beneficiary. Thereafter, other super forces went to trouble Wu clan. After Xia clan gained this profit, they decided to continue plotting against Wu clan, to obtain greater gains for the clan.

This time, they targeted Frosty Peak.

Frosty Peak was not Wu clan’s resource point originally, it belonged to a lone cultivator Gu Immortal.

Very long ago, this lone immortal sought help from Wu clan, and Wu clan wanted his territory, but the lone immortal did not want to give it away.

After a long and arduous negotiation, the lone immortal lent this place to Wu clan for several hundred years.

More than a hundred years later, this lone immortal died from tribulation, this Frosty Peak officially became Wu clan’s property, it had great production output each year.

Xia clan was able to request for it because they found a descendant of this lone immortal.

The lone immortal’s descendant wanted Wu clan to return Frosty Peak, this was very reasonable, there was undeniable evidence.

With Xia clan’s backing, they created a lot of commotion, attempting to take back Frosty Peak by creating a ruckus.

“The lone immortal’s descendant is a mortal Gu Master, they actually dare to challenge Wu clan.”

“Xia clan has many wisdom path Gu Immortals, they are good at plotting.”

“But this time, I must defend Frosty Peak. This is the best chance for me to display my strength. Wu Yong does not want me to go to the super Gu formation, he is afraid I cannot suppress the situation if I have inferior strength.”

Fang Yuan received the mission, but he did not set off urgently.

He knew: Even though he was strong, his methods could not be exposed. Divination tortoise transformation was good at defense but lacked offense, thankfully, he had vajra thought Immortal Gu, but he had to deduce that new immortal killer move first.

Thus, for more than ten days afterwards, Fang Yuan stayed inside his house, trying to deduce and modify the immortal killer move.

This was not a peaceful time.

Xia clan saw that Wu clan did not move and repeatedly urged them, spreading the news everywhere.

Wu clan faced great pressure, Wu Yong also came to urge Fang Yuan, but he stalled for time.

“No rush.”

“If we do not show up, Xia clan cannot take over Frosty Peak by force.”

“Xia clan is causing a commotion? It is no problem, let them make a scene, we will remain unmoved.”

“Be steady, when I was a secluded cultivator in Eastern Sea, I learned that this was the meaning of life.”

“Be slower, the slower we work, the better the results.”

Fang Yuan gave a lot of reasons, he had a reply to everything.

In the end, even Wu Yong became anxious, Wu Yi Hai did not face much pressure, but as the head of Wu clan, his pressure was getting heavier by the day.

“The clan’s affairs are my affairs.”

“Since this is entrusted to me, I will definitely succeed, I will not let you down, brother, I will meet your expectations.”

Fang Yuan still willfully did things his way.

Wu Yong had no choice, he had no more Gu Immortals to send.

Only when Fang Yuan deduced the immortal killer move and experimented with it successfully did he start to leave, heading towards Frosty Peak.

Wu Yong let out a sigh of relief.

Xia clan had been focusing on Wu clan all along, the moment Fang Yuan moved, they received news of it.

On Frosty Peak.

“Wu clan sent Wu Yi Hai this time.” Rank six wisdom path Gu Immortal Xia Zhuo Mo spoke.

“This Frosty Peak is on par with Moon Bowl, Wu clan did not send Wu Yu Bo or Wu Zhen here? This is a terrible move.” Rank seven Gu Immortal Xia Fei Kuai could not believe it.

Xia Zhuo Mo thought about it: “Wu clan has nobody to send anymore. Wu Yu Bo is a prideful person, after losing to Immortal Yan Huang, unless he can kill Immortal Yan Huang and regain his reputation, he would not come out of seclusion. As for Wu Zhen, he is busy defending Phoenix Peak, how can he leave? During this period, all the different phoenix birds are going there to produce their eggs.”

“Hahaha. Wu Yong has no choice, he sent Wu Yi Hai after having no other alternatives. How is this person’s battle strength?” Xia Fei Kuai asked.

Xia Zhuo Mo thought about it: “His battle strength is unclear, he used to be a secluded cultivator in Eastern Sea, there is little information on him. But he could escape threats and return to Wu clan, he can defend himself. Recently, he saved Wu Yu Bo and used a divination tortoise transformation, due to a coincidence, he managed to counter Lord Xia Qing Cang’s scattering mind.”

Saying this, he smiled bitterly: “The divination tortoise has naturally defense against wisdom path methods, against him, I may not be of use. It will depend on you.”

Xia Zhuo Mo was a rank six wisdom path Gu Immortal, while Xia Fei Kuai was a rank seven light path Gu Immortal.

The latter laughed: “I see that this Wu Yi Hai is stalling for so much time, he has no confidence. Don’t worry, I will go ahead and suppress this person, after we take down Frosty Peak, our Xia clan’s territory will expand, this will be a huge merit!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1307: Four Seasons Tea

The sky was dark, it was drizzling.

Fang Yuan flew to the sky, mist surrounding him.

“I’m here.” At his will, he descended as the mist in his vision vanished, showing the land.

Southern Border had many mountains, Fang Yuan was above many mountains, it was a scene of greenery.

In this sea of greenery, Frosty Peak was unique, it was completely white and different in height, standing out from the rest.

At the apex of Frosty Peak, there was a mortal Gu House, at the entrance of the Gu House, Xia clan’s two Gu Immortals, Xia Zhuo Mo and Xia Fei Kuai, had already sensed Fang Yuan’s arrival.

Fang Yuan was here to negotiate, he did not purposely conceal his presence.

It was normal for the two Xia clan Gu Immortals to notice him at once.

“He is finally here. This Wu Yi Hai is really amazing, he took half a month to travel on a three day route.” Xia Fei Kuai frowned deeply.

“Forget it, he’s here, let’s go.” Xia Zhuo Mo smiled.

The two sides met in the sky.

Both sides were smiling, they had a grand demeanor, after all, they were representing two super forces.

The two Xia clan Gu Immortals assessed Wu Yi Hai, thinking: “He looks really similar to Wu Du Xiu.”

Fang Yuan was also assessing these two Gu Immortals, Xia Fei Kuai was rank seven, he was the person in charge of this negotiation.

According to Wu clan’s information, Xia Fei Kuai was a rash and resolute person, he had great battle strength. Meanwhile, Xia Zhuo Mo was a wisdom path Gu Immortal who considered many aspects and liked to think deeply.

Xia Zhuo Mo’s personality had to do with his childhood experiences, whenever he encountered an important situation, he would think about the possibilities over and over.

Meanwhile, Xia Fei Kuai’s personality was the backlash of a certain immortal killer move that he had tried to use.

This was the first time both sides were meeting, Xia clan’s Gu Immortals led Fang Yuan to the apex of Frosty Peak.

“Please enter for some tea.” The two Gu Immortals acted like the hosts of the place, as if they were declaring their ownership, the contest had already begun, but Fang Yuan was unmoved, as if he did not sense it.

He smiled as he sat down, drinking.

“The tea is not bad.” After one sip, he praised.

Xia Zhuo Mo smiled: “This is our Xia clan’s four seasons tea, our first supreme elder had created it personally. With one sip, you will taste four different flavors, making people feel the four seasons of spring, autumn, summer, and winter. Therefore, it is called four seasons tea.”

Xia clan first supreme elder was a time path great expert, the four seasons tea that she created showed her incredible attainment in time path.

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals used this tea to assert dominance, but after Fang Yuan drank it, his smile intensified.

“This is a great tea, I wonder if you have any extra. I would like to ask for a few more portions, may I have them?” Fang Yuan smiled as he squinted.

The two Xia clan Gu Immortals looked at each other.

Xia Zhuo Mo thought: This Wu Yi Hai is really greedy. However, even if they were enemies, their righteous path demeanor was important. Furthermore, politics was always changing, right now, everyone was opposing Wu clan, but maybe they would soon have to cooperate with Wu clan.

Xia Zhuo Mo decided and was about to speak, when Xia Fei Kuai said: “Whatever! This is nothing much, we have a lot of four seasons tea, if you want them, you can have them.”

Saying this, he gave out over ten portions of four seasons tea.

“Then I will accept it.” Fang Yuan laughed heartily, receiving the tea leaves.

Xia Fei Kuai quickly added: “Let’s talk about Frosty Peak.”

Fang Yuan raised his cup and sipped slowly, before putting it down as he said: “Please tell me.”

Xia Fei Kuai quickly spoke, his mouth opened and closed rapidly: “This matter takes very long to explain. Since we all know the origin, let’s cut to the chase, Little Zhang, come out.”

As he said that, a rank five Gu Master walked out of a door inside the Gu House.

“This descendant of Zhang San Feng, Zhang Kai Zui, greets the three immortals.” This Gu Master was old and had white hair, he greeted the three immortals without excessive reverence.

“This Little Zhang’s bloodline is absolutely correct. Come, come, come, Wu Yi Hai, quickly test it.” Xia Fei Kuai left his seat, walking to Zhang Kai Zui and pulling his arm, bringing him to Fang Yuan with an expression that seemed to be in a hurry.

Zhang San Feng was that lone cultivator Gu Immortal who was the owner of Frosty Peak.

Of course, Zhang San Feng was not his original name, it was sort of a title[1] . Because he owned three mystical peaks, Frosty Peak was one of them.

His real name was unknown, ever since he appeared, he had never revealed his true name, only mentioning his surname of Zhang. As a result, everyone called him Zhang San Feng. Even his bloodline descendants did not know his true name.

Fang Yuan knew this, Wu clan’s information was quite comprehensive.

But he suddenly waved his hand, acting confused: “Wait, who is this Gu Master?”

Xia Fei Kuai was stunned.

Zhang Kai Zui was about to speak, when Xia Fei Kuai said: “He is Zhang Kai Zui, he introduced himself earlier, we all know it.”

“I know he is named Zhang Kai Zui.” Fang Yuan nodded.

But he paused and drank tea, continuing: “But what does this mortal Gu Master have to do with Frosty Peak?”

“It is like this, his ancestor Zhang San Feng had once...” Xia Fei Kuai added.

“Wait.” Fang Yuan stopped him: “Who is Zhang San Feng?”

Xia Fei Kuai was stunned: “Wu Yi Hai, after so long, you have no idea who Zhang San Feng is?”

Fang Yuan gave an embarrassed looking smile: “The clan wants me to protect Frosty Peak, but I arrived in a hurry, I have no idea what the cause of all this is. Please do not mind it.”

Xia Fei Kuai thought: “You arrived in a hurry, reaching here after half a month. That’s arriving in a hurry?”

He thought that, but he spoke politely: “Then let me tell you the reason.”

"I am listening."

Xia Fei Kuai spoke rapidly, he explained the historical reason in the blink of an eye.

Fang Yuan drank his tea and nodded.

Xia Fei Kuai said: "Are you clear now?"

Fang Yuan placed down his cup, standing up from his seat and cupping his fists at Xia Fei Kuai.

Xia Fei Kuai had no idea why Fang Yuan was cupping his fists, it was a bit out of nowhere, but they were in the righteous path, a polite demeanor was everything, no matter what, he had to cup his fists in return.

Next, he saw that Fang Yuan smiled again in embarrassment.

Fang Yuan said: "Thank you for telling me that, but it was described too quickly, I could only understand the story roughly, I did not understand a lot of it. Can you tell me again?"

"Again?" Xia Zhuo Mo, who was beside him, frowned.

Xia Fei Kuai did not repeat it once again, he said: "Which part are you unsure about? I can explain that to you."

His tone was unhappy.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1308: Shameless!

Fang Yuan seemed to have not noticed, he smiled: "The first line, I did not hear it clearly."

Xia Fei Kuai explained it.

Fang Yuan nodded: "And the second line..."

Xia Fei Kuai frowned.

Fang Yuan continued: "I did not hear it clearly either."

Xia Fei Kuai repeated it and said in an unhappy tone: "Is there anything else?"

"The third line..." Fang Yuan said.

Xia Fei Kuai's eyes were about to bulge out, he said directly: "Pardon my words, but did you not hear the first three sentences? Are you toying with us?"

"Please, you have misunderstood." Fang Yuan waved his hands: "The third line..."

"I heard it clearly."

Xia Zhuo Mo’s expression turned dark.

Xia Fei Kuai’s brows were lifted high, his eyes were popping, rage showed on his face: “Then what do you want?”

Fang Yuan said: “Actually, the fourth line...”

Xia Fei Kuai waved his hand: “I will say it again, listen closely and carefully.”

He talked about it again, this time, he said it very slowly, word by word, it was crystal clear.

Fang Yuan stood up and cupped his fists at Xia Fei Kuai again.

Xia Fei Kuai felt perplexed, he had a bad feeling but he quickly cupped his fists.

He spoke calmly: “Are you clear on it now?”

“Clear, it’s clear now. Thank you for explaining, everything makes sense now. Oh, so that is what happened.” Fang Yuan patted his forehead, sitting down.

“Thus, your clan has to return Frosty Peak, it is the logical thing to do. Our Xia clan is upholding justice, this Zhang Kai Zui is without doubt the descendant of Zhang San Feng, please test it.” Xia Fei Kuai requested again.

But Fang Yuan only took a glance at Zhang Kai Zui before smiling as he waved his hand: “No rush, no rush.”

“What is it that do you not understand now?” Xia Fei Kuai’s expression was grim, he asked in a dark tone.

“I have troubled you for the description, but was the situation really like this? I cannot confirm it.” Fang Yuan said.

Xia Fei Kuai was about to laugh from anger: “I am speaking the truth, you can go ahead and seek verification!”

“Haha.” Fang Yuan laughed, clapping his hands together: “You are a straight talker, I will seek verification from my clan.”

Saying this, he shut his eyes, as if his consciousness had entered his immortal aperture, to use his information path methods.

After a long time, Fang Yuan did not open his eyes.

Xia Fei Kuai urged him: “Wu Yi Hai, are you done?”

Fang Yuan opened his eyes, he smiled in embarrassment: “Brother is too busy with his work, let’s wait a while.”

Regarding a rank eight Gu Immortal, Xia Fei Kuai could not say anything, so Xia Zhuo Mo interjected: “Lord Wu Yong is busy indeed, he has no choice. But Wu Yi Hai, you may ask other Wu clan Gu Immortals for verification.”

Fang Yuan immediately laughed, giving Xia Zhuo Mo a thumbs up: “Worthy of a wisdom path Gu Immortal indeed, good idea!”

This praise made Xia Zhuo Mo’s expression freeze.

Next, Fang Yuan said: “But I am not close with any other Gu Immortal. Do you have any recommendations?”

“Recommend your sister!” Xia Fei Kuai was listening by the side, he shouted out of anger.

“My sister? I only have an elder brother, I have no sister. You must have remembered wrongly?” Fang Yuan smiled while squinting.

“...” Xia Fei Kuai was speechless.

He looked at Xia Zhuo Mo, they communicated with their gazes, they could tell that Fang Yuan was wasting time.

“To think that Wu clan actually sent such a person over! They are too shameless!” Xia Fei Kuai was filled with anger.

He wanted to negotiate properly, but Fang Yuan refused.

And because they were righteous path characters, Xia Fei Kuai could not go overboard.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s smiling appearance, he really wanted to throw out a punch and send Fang Yuan plummeting to the ground.

“Don’t be anxious, don’t be angry, you will fall for his trap. This person is very experienced, he is purposely angering us so we will expose a flaw.” Xia Zhuo Mo quickly urged.

Xia Fei Kuai could only breath roughly, taking in huge breaths.

Fang Yuan spoke as he looked at Xia Fei Kuai seriously: “Do I really have a sister? Please let me know.”

Xia Fei Kuai: “...”

He took in a few more breaths before he said: “No, it was a slip of the tongue, please do forgive me.”

“Oh? Is that so.” Fang Yuan nodded, saying in concern: “I see that your tongue is dry, and your chest is moving rapidly, it seems you have symptoms of getting a fever. You need to drink tea, otherwise you will get sick. In fact, this four seasons tea is great, you should take a few more sips.”

Xia Zhuo Mo: “...”

Xia Fei Kuai screamed: “Drink what, we are talking about important business!”

Fang Yuan had a solemn expression: “Friend, that is not the right attitude, what do you mean important business? Is being concerned about your health not important business? This Frosty Peak is just a resource point, these are just resources. You cannot fall ill just because of these resources, you will harm yourself.”

He urged heartfully, but it seemed to be adding fuel to the fire, Xia Fei Kuai slammed the table angrily.

“Wu Yi Hai!” He screamed: “Don’t think that you can deceive us like this, and keep Frosty Peak for your Wu clan. Hmph!”

Fang Yuan’s expression quickly changed, saying sincerely: “What are you trying to say? I am innocent. We have to follow the rules for Frosty Peak’s matter. This is Zhang San Feng’s possession, if this Zhang Kai Zui is a true descendant, we will return it. On behalf of Wu clan, we will do this fair and square, we will not be corrupt, and ruin the rules of the righteous path just for some benefits!”

“You are an understanding person.” Xia Zhuo Mo smiled forcefully, saying with deep intentions.

Xia Fei Kuai frowned, he stopped shouting, he said: “That’s right, quickly test his bloodline, Zhang Kai Zui really is Zhang San Feng’s descendant!”

“No rush, no rush.” Fang Yuan smiled and started to drink tea: “Let me seek verification from my clan first, it is not that I do not trust you, but this is a major task, I do not dare to decide recklessly on my own.”

“Then quickly verify it!” Xia Fei Kuai shouted.

“But brother Wu Yong has not responded.” Fang Yuan looked troubled.

“Then find others!” Xia Fei Kuai shouted.

Fang Yuan slapped his own leg: “That is right, but I just returned to the clan, I do not know anyone else. I am not sure who to find for verification. Earlier, I asked you two to help me, but you gave me no help, I am very troubled too.”

Once he said that, the two Xia clan Gu Immortals were shocked, they looked at each other.

After such a long time, giving so many excuses, it was now Xia clan’s fault?!

The rank five Gu Master Zhang Kai Zui listened as he stared at Fang Yuan with wide opened eyes.

This was... the demeanor of a Gu Immortal?

He was shameless to the max.

Zhang Kai Zui was awestruck, his good impression of Gu Immortals had shattered completely.

“Forget it, I can tell now, this person is clearly stalling for time.” Xia Zhuo Mo transmitted.

“Stalling for what?” Xia Fei Kuai asked.

“Evidently, Wu clan has no justification here, they are in a passive spot. Wu Yi Hai has to continue wasting time here by giving all sorts of excuses. When Wu clan is no longer so tight on manpower, they will be able to deal with us, it will be difficult then. Let alone other matters, when the phoenix birds lay their eggs, Wu Zhen will be free to come here. If he comes, the situation will be different.” Xia Zhuo Mo analyzed.

“You are right. What do we do? This Wu Yi Hai is stalling for time, but he speaks so justifiably, we have no way of finding problems with him. There are many ways to stall for time. For example, he needs time to verify this, and he also needs time to test his identity. Then what about after he tests Zhang Kai Zui’s bloodline? Will he ask if Zhang San Feng only has one descendant? All these questions will be endless if he wants to bring them up!” Xia Fei Kuai realized the severity of the problem.

“I have a plan.” Xia Zhuo Mo said.

“What plan?” Xia Fei Kuai asked quickly.

Xia Zhuo Mo answered, as Xia Fei Kuai became overjoyed, he quickly turned to look at Fang Yuan: “Wu Yi Hai, I have long since heard that you are extremely strong, you are the glory of Wu clan. I would like to represent Xia clan and challenge you to a spar!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1309: Spar

Spar?

That was just a nicer way of talking about resolving the problem by fighting.

But this fight was different from the intense battles of the demonic path. When demonic path members fought, it was mortal combat. For righteous path Gu Immortals, they had a lot of assets, why would they fight to the death? Just deciding a winner was enough.

This was also why Fang Yuan purposely stalled for time, preventing the resolution of Frosty Peak’s issue. This forced the two Xia clan Gu Immortals to go on the offense and deal with the matter through force.

The truth was, on Earth, when negotiations fail, stronger countries would send their troops over.

It was the same thing.

Xia Fei Kuai’s words were quite interesting, he was representing Xia clan and also claimed Wu Yi Hai to be Wu clan’s glory, he said this was a spar, but this was actually a contest between both clans.

Just these words forced Fang Yuan into a corner. If he avoided battle, it would harm Wu clan’s reputation, this was something that the righteous path would look down upon, he would be treated as a coward.

But the two from Xia clan did not know that Fang Yuan was not Wu Yi Hai, he did not care about Wu clan’s reputation or glory.

However, he was acting as Wu Yi Hai now, he still wanted to go to the super Gu formation, Fang Yuan had to accept this challenge.

He thought briefly before saying: “If it is a spar, both of you will be fighting against me, I am outnumbered, I will definitely lose.”

Xia Fei Kuai’s expression changed.

These were vicious words!

In fact, requesting for the spar had already caused him to be in a passive spot. If he lost, it would be humiliation. If the two Xia clan Gu Immortals fought together and won, they would be using numbers for an unfair advantage, it would make them lose face, they could not spread news about this.

Actually, Xia Fei Kuai had not thought of fighting together with Xia Zhuo Mo, he said: “I will fight you alone, don’t worry.”

Fang Yuan had a reluctant expression, he said: “Since you want to spar so urgently, I cannot reject you. But since this is a spar, there has to be a time limit, right, we cannot fight on forever.”

“What do you have in mind?” Xia Fei Kuai asked.

Spars had their rules, it was different from a life and death battle.

Fang Yuan said: “You attack and I defend, as long as you can break my defense within ten moves, I lose.”

Xia Fei Kuai’s eyelids were twitching, he said: “Okay.”

Xia Zhuo Mo frowned, he felt something amiss. But since Xia Fei Kuai had already agreed, they might as well spar. He had confidence in Xia Fei Kuai.

Frosty Peak was not the place to fight, destroying it would ruin the point of the task.

Both sides flew to a desolate valley.

Fang Yuan quickly stood opposite Xia Fei Kuai.

“Start.” Xia Fei Kuai could not wait, he wanted to teach Fang Yuan a lesson.

Among Southern Border’s rank seven Gu Immortals, he was a famous expert. In the entire Wu clan, other than the rank eight Gu Immortal Wu Yong, the strongest rank seven Gu Immortal, Wu Yu Bo, was only slightly superior to him. Now that Wu Yu Bo was in secluded cultivation, who would Xia Fei Kuai fear?

One had to say, getting Immortal Yan Huang to defeat Wu Yu Bo was indeed a well executed move.

In terms of real battle strength, Immortal Yan Huang was not Wu Yu Bo’s match, but Xia clan had managed to crack Wu Yu Bo’s signature killer move.

Wu Yu Bo was targeted, his immortal killer move was broken and he suffered an intense backlash, causing Immortal Yan Huang to win the battle.

“Wait.” Fang Yuan gestured with his hand.

Xia Fei Kuai was ready to fight, Fang Yuan’s words made him feel very uncomfortable, he called out: “Wu Yi Hai, what else do you want?”

“I almost forgot, since this is a spar, we can’t do it so casually, right?” Fang Yuan smiled.

Xia Fei Kuai thought: “How is it casual? Teaching you a lesson is this battle’s most important point!”

He was thinking that, but he could not say it out loud.

Gu Immortals had all sorts of methods to record scenes. Like earlier, when Immortal Yan Huang challenged Wu Yu Bo, Xia clan’s Xia Qing Cang recorded everything, it was widely spread over Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world.

Xia Fei Kuai held in his anger: “What do you want?”

“Simple, if I manage to win, then the status quo for Frosty Peak will remain, it will belong to us." Fang Yuan said.

"How can we do that?!" Xia Zhuo Mo, who was far away, was anxious. He rushed to Xia Fei Kuai and spoke loudly.

Right now, Xia clan was finding trouble, having the descendant of Zhang San Feng, they had justification and a huge advantage, Wu clan was forced into a passive position. If they agreed to this, they would lose their advantage, it was not wise.

Xia Fei Kuai curled his lips, thinking: "I'm not stupid."

At the same time, he rejected: "No way."

"In that case, I cannot fight. This spar is voided." Fang Yuan waved his hand, turning around and walking away.

Xia Fei Kuai almost wanted to curse at him upon seeing this.

We left Frosty Peak and came all this way, after so much trouble, and selecting a proper valley to spar. And now, you want to cancel the fight?

Are you toying with us?

His expression turned grim: "Wu Yi Hai, leaving without fighting, is this the courage and glory of Wu clan?"

Fang Yuan stopped moving.

Xia Fei Kuai smiled coldly.

Fang Yuan turned around, looking at Xia Fei Kuai with a serious expression, saying shamelessly: "You are wrong. I am not avoiding the spar, but you two are not agreeing to my request. Since our negotiation failed, it does not mean I am running away. Look, I even chose the location for it."

"What the f*ck!" These words made Xia Zhuo Mo, who was watching by the side, feel anger.

Xia Fei Kuai stared with furious eyes, he was fuming.

He stared at Fang Yuan fixedly, how could Wu clan produce such a shameless person, weren't Wu clan Gu Immortals brash and usually eager to fight to resolve problems? Where was the bravery and spirit of Wu clan? Where was it!

But soon, Xia Fei Kuai thought of Fang Yuan's origin.

Indeed, Wu Yi Hai was not a Wu clan Gu Immortal from birth, he was a secluded cultivator in Eastern Sea.

This damned secluded cultivator!

Fang Yuan showed a deeper smile: "Since we cannot spar, let's continue talking and drinking tea. I have to say, your four seasons tea is really delicious, I am looking forward to it as we speak."

"Drink tea? Talk about what!" Xia Fei Kuai felt an intense urge to strangle Fang Yuan to death in his mind, his chest was burning with rage.

Xia Zhuo Mo looked at Xia Fei Kuai bitterly, thinking: "Weren't you the one who gave him a lot of tea leaves earlier?"

Fang Yuan suddenly muttered to himself before saying: “How about this, if I win, for the next five years, we will maintain the status quo, you will not harp on the Frosty Peak issue, how about that?”

“This...” Xia Zhuo Mo started to ponder over it.

Fang Yuan suddenly raised this condition, compared to before, it was much more acceptable.

“But Wu Yi Hai likely has a plan for giving us this condition.” Xia Zhuo Mo was still thinking.

Xia Fei Kuai spoke: “Okay, I agree.”

Xia Zhuo Mo was stunned, transmitting: “Lord Xia Fei Kuai, you...”

“Are we going to let this bastard continue wasting time? I will bear full responsibility for this, it has nothing to do with you! I cannot waste so much time, the less time I spend with this guy, the better.” Xia Fei Kuai replied resolutely, he had a firm attitude.

Xia Zhuo Mo smiled bitterly.

“If this battle is lost, even if you, Xia Fei Kuai, take responsibility, can I run away from it? The clan sent me here to help you, it was to give you advice, right? Sigh!”

He sighed deeply in his mind, transmitting helplessly: “Then I will hope for lord to emerge victorious!”

“Are you two sure?” Fang Yuan asked.

His condition was just delaying the problem for Wu clan, it did not solve it.

But after five years, Fang Yuan would be done with his matters, by then, who cares about Wu clan?

“We are sure.” This time, Xia Fei Kuai did not speak, Xia Zhuo Mo did.

“Okay.” Fang Yuan slowly flew back, speaking in an obnoxious way: “Actually, I did not want to spar, it hurts our relationship either way. But Lord Xia Fei Kuai is so insistent, on behalf of the four seasons tea leaves that you gave me, I will agree to this.”

“Stop mentioning that tea and fight.” Xia Fei Kuai bellowed, his eyes were bloodshot.

Before he finished his words, Fang Yuan’s body shined and turned into a divination tortoise.

Xia Fei Kuai was stunned, Fang Yuan was wasting so much time earlier, but he transformed so quickly now, it was quite a contrast.

“Divination tortoise again!” Xia Zhuo Mo frowned.

The divination tortoise’s huge body stood in the valley with its four pillar-like legs, it filled up this entire valley.

The entire divination tortoise was dark in color, the shell had all sorts of markings, thousands or tens of thousands of them, they were very eye-catching, Xia Zhuo Mo looked at them for a while before feeling dizzy, he quickly stopped.

Xia Fei Kuai did not expect Fang Yuan to use an immortal killer move now.

Normally, when Gu Immortals spar, they would probe first. Fang Yuan skipped it and used his trump card immediately.

“The tough shell shows this divination tortoise’s defensive power. No wonder he chose this style of sparring.” Thinking of this, Xia Zhuo Mo frowned even more deeply.

“What do I do?” Xia Fei Kuai hesitated, he did not know what Wu Yi Hai specialized in, but Fang Yuan knew what he was good at.

Xia Fei Kuai only hesitated for a moment, before attacking.

First move.

He raised his fist and clenched it, floating in the sky, he aimed at the divination tortoise in the valley and punched.

His fist shot out light, it was dazzling. Pure white light gathered in Xia Fei Kuai’s fist as it turned into a large ball of light, crashing down.

Auras of Immortal Gu and mortal Gu mixed together.

This was an immortal killer move — Soaring Essence Strike.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1310: So Embarrassing

Since Fang Yuan had used an immortal killer move, Xia Fei Kuai had no choice but to use an immortal killer move as well.

A pure white ball of light moved with an average speed, not showing any signs of light path’s speed advantage.

But as it flew in the air, it pushed the air aside, emitting a buzzing noise.

Boom!

The wine vat sized ball of light smashed down like the weight of a mountain on the divination tortoise’s back, smashing the tortoise into the ground.

The enormous divination tortoise had sunken by over a foot in the ground.

Xia Fei Kuai’s move was indeed powerful. Light path was famous for speed, but this soaring essence strike of Xia Fei Kuai was the complete opposite, it was like a heavy fist, and the enemies would often be caught off-guard by its powerful strength.

However, Fang Yuan’s divination tortoise was perfectly unharmed.

“Huh?” Xia Fei Kuai’s eyes almost popped out when he saw the result of his attack.

The divination tortoise was intact with not even a slight dent on it.

This was the obvious result.

Xia Fei Kuai’s move used light path to imitate strength path, it was considered a unique move.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan’s divination tortoise transformation was a rank seven immortal killer move, which used change form Immortal Gu and divination tortoise shell Immortal Gu as the cores. Especially the latter, just by activating it, Fang Yuan could obtain a tortoise shell that was not weaker than an ancient divination tortoise.

And now, it was an immortal killer move possessing many supplementary Gu worms, the tortoise shell’s defensive capability was stronger than a real ancient divination tortoise.

Ancient desolate beasts had extremely strong and sturdy bodies with vigorous vitality, and tortoises were one of the toughest life forms among all living beings.

It was not strange for Xia Fei Kuai’s soaring essence strike to show no effect.

But to the person involved, this was slightly ridiculous.

“Soaring essence strike had no effect, he has such a hard shell!” Xia Zhuo Mo was shocked.

Xia Fei Kuai stopped, he started to develop an unfamiliar feeling, that was a headache.

Looking at such a sturdy tortoise shell, he felt a headache and did not know where to start.

In fact, if he had attacked any other area, the result would not have been this bad, but he had to go and choose the hardest part, the tortoise shell. Naturally, this was also because he wanted to probe the depths of Fang Yuan’s strength.

“What should I do?” Xia Fei Kuai began to think rapidly.

Although he was irascible, he managed to quickly become cool-headed in the fight.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan activated a second immortal killer move.

Auras of Immortal Gu and mortal Gu rose. Fang Yuan opened his mouth and breathed out countless small tortoise shells.

The small tortoise shells had the same appearance as the divination tortoise’s shell, except that they were many times smaller.

The large numbers of small tortoise shells floated in the air, rotating at a very fast speed.

“What are these things?” Xia Fei Kuai stopped thinking and cautiously pulled apart some distance from Fang Yuan.

Boom!

He punched forward with soaring essence strike again.

But this time, the wine vat sized heavy light sphere did not even manage to touch the divination tortoise.

Those small fist sized tortoise shells seemed to be attracted like bees attracted to honey, as they looped towards the soaring essence strike.

Bam bam bam...

The seemingly hard tortoise shells shattered into hundreds of pieces in the collisions.

But the soaring essence strike also was completely consumed, finally turning into a dim fragment of light that helplessly dissipated in the air.

Immortal killer move — Vajra Shell!

This was the immortal killer move Fang Yuan had been perfecting earlier, combined with his divination tortoise transformation. This was the first time it had been displayed in Southern Border and even in the five regions.

The core of this immortal killer move was the rank six Immortal Gu Vajra Thought.

But it was combined with rank seven perseverance Immortal Gu as well as large numbers of mortal Gu.

Its might had naturally increased by a lot, it had not been a waste of Fang Yuan’s time and energy.

“Ah! These tortoise shells are actually thoughts.” Xia Zhuo Mo’s eyes emitted sharp light as he saw through the mystery.

He was a wisdom path Gu Immortal and was very sensitive to all kinds of thoughts. This was the area he was proficient in.

As for Xia Fei Kuai, he cultivated light path, not wisdom path, even though he was rank seven, he only realized after Xia Zhuo Mo’s notification.

“Xia Zhuo Mo, you are knowledgeable, the two of you are a good match.” The divination tortoise spoke human language, its tone filled with sarcasm.

In fact, Fang Yuan had not intended to conceal it, it was just that after combining with divination tortoise transformation, these golden thoughts turned into dark tortoise shells.

“Little Mo, be quiet, I will break his shell.” Xia Fei Kuai said.

Xia Zhuo Mo grunted, but did not speak anymore. Being ridiculed by Fang Yuan had made his expression unsightly.

Xia Fei Kuai closed his eyes.

He began to prepare.

All sorts of Gu worms’ auras started brimming and linking up, before quickly spreading.

Red date immortal essence was being consumed rapidly.

At the same time, he spread his arms and slowly put his hands together above his head.

Light surged up like a fountain from him, gathering between his palms.

He was still accumulating energy.

The radiance was restrained, but a powerful aura started rising up, becoming more and more dangerous.

Fang Yuan lowered his tortoise head and firmly rooted his limbs to the ground like a silent dark mountain. But at the same time, the small tortoise shells around him were continuing to fly, their numbers increasing extremely rapidly.

There were close to ten thousand at first, but the numbers soon surpassed twenty thousand, thirty thousand, forty thousand...

Their proliferation was extremely fast.

Rank six vajra thought Immortal Gu could create ten thousand vajra thoughts alone.

As an immortal killer move now, its effect had increased by another level.

The most crucial point was that Fang Yuan’s body was filled with wisdom path dao marks right now.

Actually, Fang Yuan did not have many wisdom path dao marks, but he had transformation path dao marks and there were quite a lot of them!

He had killed a lot of transformation path Gu Immortals and annexed all of their dao marks. The most significant harvest was when he had killed Wu Yi Hai and the two immortals inside the regional wall, just this alone gave Fang Yuan close to fifty thousand transformation path dao marks.

One thousand dao marks could double the effect.

Ten thousand dao marks could give ten times the amplification.

Fifty thousand dao marks meant fifty times the amplification.

What did that imply?

Ordinary rank seven Gu Immortals would have about ten thousand to thirty thousand dao marks of their main path.

Xia Fei Kuai was a rank seven expert, his light path dao marks exceeded thirty thousand in number.

But how could they compare to Fang Yuan?

As a result, Xia Fei Kuai and Xia Zhuo Mo could only stare wide-eyed at the rapid proliferation of the small tortoise shells that soon covered the whole valley, and were spreading further, the dark and dense numbers of tortoise shells were like locusts and ants.

Xia Fei Kuai’s expression sank.

These small tortoise shells had increased by such a quantity in just a short while, emitting a heavy mental pressure to others.

However, Xia Fei Kuai skillfully used the circumstances of the spar, according to the rule they decided upon, Fang Yuan could only defend and not attack, so Fang Yuan could not take the initiative to use these small tortoise shells to attack Xia Fei Kuai.

Xia Fei Kuai calmed his mind and activated his immortal killer move.

Light path immortal killer move — Saw Light Wheel!

His two hands, that were above his head, chopped down at once.

A dazzling wheel of light flew out from Xia Fei Kuai’s palms.

The wheel of light grew rapidly and soon was the size of a boat.

The wheel of light was continuously rotating, its edges were filled with sawteeth.

“Good!” Xia Zhuo Mo inwardly cheered: “The tortoise shells are hard, but this move saws through the target, even if the tortoise shells are very hard, they will still be sliced apart.”

However, at the next moment.

Swish swish swish...

Countless tortoise shells flew over.

Crack crack crack...

Under the tortoise shells’ self-destructive charge, the saw light wheel could only fly for a short distance before it was completely destroyed.

Xia Zhuo Mo: “...”

Xia Fei Kuai: “...”

Fang Yuan praised loudly: “Great killer move, this move is extraordinary, it actually destroyed over six thousand of my thoughts.”

These words were like a slap upon the cheeks of Xia Zhuo Mo and Xia Fei Kuai.

Xia Fei Kuai needed a lot of time to prepare for this immortal killer move.

Normally speaking, the shorter the preparation time for an immortal killer move, the better it was, because if it took longer, it could very easily be disrupted. Once the immortal killer move’s activation was disrupted, there would be backlash which often caused heavy injuries to the Gu Immortal.

Xia Fei Kuai had used the sparring rule, and was able to safely activate this immortal killer move.

However!

As he was activating the immortal killer move, Fang Yuan was also doing the same.

Xia Fei Kuai activated saw light wheel.

At the same time, Fang Yuan could create thirty-forty thousand small tortoise shell thoughts.

The outcome was obvious, the saw light wheel was besieged and destroyed by over six thousand small tortoise shell thoughts.

Even a fool could compute the numbers here.

The method which Xia Fei Kuai had placed his hopes in had ended up like this...

This was so embarrassing!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1311: Xia Clan Retreats

“Damn it!” Xia Fei Kuai gritted his teeth.

He had taken such efforts to activate saw light wheel, but now it seemed like a joke.

The small tortoise shell-like thoughts were still proliferating.

Fifty thousand, sixty thousand...

Their numbers were increasing rapidly, not only covering the valley, they were even spreading beyond.

Among the dense number of small tortoise shells, some were floating in the air while some were leisurely revolving. In the middle was Fang Yuan’s divination tortoise transformation, with its huge body that was like an iron hill.

“I can’t let it continue like this!” Xia Fei Kuai was feeling an increasing sense of urgency.

“The speed of growth is too fast. No wonder Wu Yi Hai set this sparring rule, but Lord Xia Fei Kuai still has abilities yet to be used, the outcome of this battle is not certain yet.” Xia Zhuo Mo thought, looking at Xia Fei Kuai with anticipation.

Xia Fei Kuai was already preparing his killer move.

Countless Gu worm auras rose and surged outwards.

An arrogant look flashed past his eyes as he looked down at the divination tortoise.

“No matter how numerous, they are only thoughts, what can they do?”

“Take this — Thirty-three Heavenly Lights!”

“Let me see how many layers of heavenly lights can your thoughts stop?”

Immortal killer move — Thirty-three Heavenly Lights!

It was one of the trump cards of Xia Fei Kuai and was renowned throughout Southern Border.

“Is he using it? Lord Xia Fei Kuai’s area-of-effect method!” Xia Zhuo Mo was inwardly excited.

This killer move was quite amazing.

Once activated, from Xia Fei Kuai at the center, intense light would shoot out to the surroundings.

Under the illumination of the light, all things would receive light path injuries.

Intense lights would continue to flicker thirty-three times, with the illumination range continuing to increase. They were like lights descending from heaven, therefore it was called thirty-three heavenly lights.

At the first flicker, the heavenly light’s damage was not high, it could at most only kill some insects.

But by the second flicker, its damage would increase and it could destroy plants and flowers.

By the third flicker, birds and animals would die when exposed to the light.

By the fourth flicker, large trees would be destroyed and boulders would crumble.

The fifth flicker, sixth flicker....

Like this, the power of the light would continue growing, until it threatened even desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts.

The small tortoise shell thoughts were hard, but they simply could not compare to desolate beasts, they would definitely be destroyed by the thirty-three heavenly lights.

There was no doubt about it.

Xia Fei Kuai was taking the easy route by using this move.

Thirty-three heavenly lights was actually not practical, because once it was activated, the Gu Immortal had to stop moving, if they budged even a little, the killer move would immediately stop.

Xia Fei Kuai would even suffer backlash.

Naturally, the level of backlash also had differences.

If the killer move was stopped before the tenth flicker, Xia Fei Kuai would suffer light injuries, stopping in-between the tenth to twenty-third flicker would inflict medium injuries, and stopping after the twenty-third flicker would cause heavy injuries. After the thirtieth flicker, the backlash would be even stronger, and Xia Fei Kuai might suffer fatal injuries.

The stronger the immortal killer move, the greater the danger from the backlash once its activation failed.

Soon, the light burst forth!

At the first flicker, Fang Yuan’s tortoise shell thoughts remained unmoved.

Second flicker, the thoughts were still growing and did not seem to stop.

Third flicker, the thoughts started shaking.

Forth flicker, some thoughts started to crumble apart by themselves.

Fifth flicker, hundreds of thoughts collapsed into nothingness.

Xia Zhuo Mo, who was watching from the side, could not help but smile at this scene.

This was only the fifth flicker.

The immortal killer move altogether had thirty-three flickers.

“But why am I still feeling some unease?” Xia Zhuo Mo pondered.

Sixth flicker, a thousand thoughts were destroyed, the tortoise shells on the periphery started to show signs of collapse.

“Seventh flicker, time to deal with you!” Xia Fei Kuai sneered inwardly.

But, right at this moment.

Swoosh!

Seventy-eighty thousand small tortoise shell thoughts suddenly surged towards Fang Yuan like a tide.

More accurately, they entered his mind.

The divination tortoise he had transformed into was a wisdom path ancient desolate beast, its mind was incomparably spacious and holding seventy-eighty thousand thoughts was nothing to it.

“What?” Xia Fei Kuai was stunned.

Xia Zhuo Mo patted his head as he hatefully exclaimed inwardly: “I finally understand what made me uneasy! These small tortoise shells are thoughts in essence, since they are thoughts, the Gu Immortal can store them back inside their mind.”

As a result, the seventy-eight thousand thoughts that filled the valley had completely disappeared and withdrawn into Fang Yuan’s mind.

Only an enormous divination tortoise was left, quietly lying on the ground.

In the air, Xia Fei Kuai’s immortal killer move still continued.

Seventh flicker!

Eight flicker.

Ninth flicker....

But there were no thoughts, there was no meaning to these powerful lights.

However, the immortal killer move was still in the activation process and could not be carelessly stopped.

As such, Xia Fei Kuai could only continue to activate the killer move. Tenth flicker, eleventh, twelfth....

It was an extremely awkward situation.

After the thirty-third flicker, Xia Fei Kuai had spent a large amount of immortal essence, while the divination tortoise hid inside its shell, motionless on the ground.

The mountain valley he was inside had now been turned into a flat land.

Thirty-three heavenly lights was indeed powerful, it forcefully changed a vast surrounding area into a flat plain. The hills from before were completely gone.

“This killer move is truly powerful.” Fang Yuan did not stint on his praise.

While speaking, he stretched out his head, tail and limbs from inside the shell.

These parts were not as strong as the tortoise shell, so during the stronger flickers, Fang Yuan hid inside, suffering no injuries.

Hearing Fang Yuan’s praise, Xia Fei Kuai immediately felt incomparably stifled.

“Too shameless!” Xia Zhuo Mo gritted his teeth, looking at Fang Yuan hatefully.

This was especially the case when he saw over a hundred thousand small tortoise shell thoughts surge out of Fang Yuan’s mind and spread out, surrounding the divination tortoise. The hatred and fury in his eyes deepened by several degrees.

“How are we supposed to break his defense?” The two Gu Immortals of Xia clan were pondering over this difficulty.

“You have used three moves.” Fang Yuan indifferently reminded.

Xia Fei Kuai shouted: “Then take my following move!!”

As he said so, he turned into a ray of light and pounced forward, attacking the divination tortoise from all directions. Countless tortoise shell thoughts were destroyed as they moved to defend him.

But Xia Fei Kuai displayed an expert’s demeanor, he moved back and forth around the thoughts, and could not be stopped.

Fang Yuan saw that Xia Fei Kuai was serious and going at full force, he withdrew his head, tail and limbs back inside the shell.

Xia Fei Kuai was stifled.

This Wu Yi Hai was too wretched, leaving behind only the shell for him to target. A gigantic tortoise shell on the ground and countless small tortoise shells in the air, Xia Fei Kuai was increasingly beginning to feel hatred for tortoise shells.

The tenth move was over, Xia Fei Kuai’s efforts gave no result, while only some slight injury marks had appeared on Fang Yuan’s tortoise shell.

“You win this time.” Xia Fei Kuai directly left the scene with this sentence, flying into the sky.

Xia Zhuo Mo, who was left behind, sighed, he had to clear the mess; at least, he had to take away that Gu Master Zhang.

“Five years. After five years, I will have to come back and find you.” Xia Zhuo Mo also left, feeling somewhat indignant.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1312: Ransacking Frosty Peak

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals lost the spar and left without making a fuss.

Fang Yuan stopped his transformation and returned to human form, returning to Frosty Peak.

The mortal Gu house at Frosty Peak was taken away, now only a snowy mountain remained with cold air emanating everywhere.

Fang Yuan sighed softly.

His heart was calm, like a well without a ripple. Victories were not worth him treasuring and bragging. The so-called sense of glory had already left him long ago.

“For such an easy victory to have happened, it is because I had the advantage.”

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated.

The two Xia clan Gu Immortals did not know Fang Yuan’s strength, they could only estimate it. On the contrary, Fang Yuan knew a lot about them. Whether it be their killer moves, temperament or so on, he was thoroughly aware of them with the information from Wu clan.

One could see how important information was in a battle between Gu Immortals!

In fact, Fang Yuan’s spar with the Xia clan Gu Immortals was like Immortal Yan Huang defeating Wu Yu Bo.

Both won due to better intel.

Wu Yu Bo was powerful, but his trump card killer move was seen through by others, as a result, one careless move and all was lost.

Fang Yuan had even more information, he advanced step by step through his layers of planning, finally making the Xia clan Gu Immortals retreat.

“Immortal killer move vajra shell is quite effective. But it won’t be easy to have such a good result in the future.”

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals would definitely compile their experiences and insights to think of a way to restrict or even decipher and counter vajra shell.

Deciphering and countering was difficult, but creating a restrictive method was often easy.

“Wu Yi Hai will also become more famous.”

“This divination tortoise transformation and immortal killer move vajra shell are quite remarkable. But once I use them a lot of times, there is a high chance someone will find a way to restrict or even nullify it.”

“Actually, the same applies to reverse flow protection seal, after the battle in Northern Plains, it is definitely being analyzed by the ten great ancient sects, Longevity Heaven, Old Ancestor Xue Hu and others. I should be somewhat careful the next time I use it, especially against these people.”

Fang Yuan was vigilant.

Wu Yu Bo was a clear example to him.

It was not easy to create an immortal killer move, but a powerful immortal killer move could not remain stagnant, it needed to be advanced and modified along with time, as such, when others use restrictive measures or even fully resolved your killer move, you could effectively face them.

But modifying and advancing an immortal killer move was naturally also a difficult matter.

Other than a burst of inspiration, what was truly put to test was the Gu Immortal’s attainment level.

“And the best way to raise one’s attainment level is through dream realms.” Fang Yuan’s thoughts could not help but turn towards that giant dream realm again.

Because of the widespread emergence of dream realms, there were all kinds of characters emerging one after the other during the five regions chaotic war in Fang Yuan’s previous life, creating a great era filled with chaos and disorder.

“Unfortunately, it has not been long since I joined Wu clan, making a firm request to go to the super Gu formation would be suspicious.”

“Although the matter of this Frosty Peak has ended, who knows when I can go back to the giant dream realm. It is better to deal with the matters at hand and otherwise go with the flow.”

Fang Yuan pondered while landing on Frosty Peak.

This mountain peak was abundant in ice path resources, he still had not properly searched it.

Fang Yuan had gotten this rare opportunity after chasing away the Xia clan Gu Immortals, he naturally would not give it up.

Snow filled Frosty Peak and the air was frighteningly cold.

In the depths of this accumulated snow dwelled large numbers of insects, including many wild Gu worms, as well as cold-resistant vegetation. They mutually formed a balanced ecology.

“Frost jades.” Fang Yuan soon had harvests.

A large number of frost jades appeared in his investigative perception.

These frost jades were hidden below the thick snow, below the rocky ground.

“Frost jades are only a rank five Gu material, but they have some frost jade essence inside, which is a rank six immortal material.”

Without any hesitation, Fang Yuan began collecting them!

Rumble!

The snow splattered everywhere, revealing the bare surface of the rocky ground.

Soon, these rocks also flew everywhere and revealed the frost jades hidden in the mountain.

These frost jades were white, with some green hue mixed within. They released intense frost energy, but naturally they were harmless to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan picked up the frost jades in this area.

Fang Yuan naturally did not give up the frost jade essence inside, it was just that he did not extract them and they were still inside the center of the giant frost jades.

Next, Fang Yuan started searching throughout Frosty Peak.

Enormous frost jades were dug out one after the other. The smallest frost jade was already the size of an elephant, while the bigger ones were the size of large ships.

Almost every frost jade had frost jade essence inside it.

Some frost jade essences were bigger, and there were even thousand year frost jade essences, which were rank seven Gu materials.

It was not that no one had discovered these frost jades, but they were intentionally preserved by Wu clan to maintain the foundation of this Frosty Peak. It was these frost jades that formed the foundation of Frosty Peak, without them, Frosty Peak would not be such a special and remarkable resource point.

Fang Yuan took away most of the frost jades.

Not only this, he also plundered many wild Gu worms.

There was no need to think about Immortal Gu.

Normally speaking, Frosty Peak could only produce rank six Immortal Gu once in several hundred years to a thousand years.

If there were really wild Immortal Gu, Xia clan’s Gu Immortals would not have accepted their defeat so easily.

The majority of these Gu worms were of ice path, there were also some of earth path and water path. Among the ice path Gu worms, most of them were called cold wave Gu.

This type of Gu worm formed groups and would often roam around in Frosty Peak. Thus, a severe wave of cold would spread out from Frosty Peak.

This was also the reason for Frosty Peak’s name.

After he finished plundering, Fang Yuan flew to the air and took a last glance at this Frosty Peak.

The picturesque Frosty Peak filled with white snow was now filled with pits of different depths, with rocks and debris filling the area.

Not only was the scenery destroyed, the value of resources in Frosty Peak had dropped by over half, and because of the huge deficit, Frosty Peak’s foundation was greatly damaged.

“If I use pulling mountain Immortal Gu, I might be able to pull this mountain and store it in my sovereign blessed land.”

“Unfortunately, I can’t do that at the moment. My identity is Wu Yi Hai, a Wu clan member, I made huge profits this time by embezzlement, this has already reached the limits of the righteous path’s unwritten rules and cannot be continued. If I really pulled the mountain, not to mention exposing my true identity, I definitely cannot justify my actions to Wu clan.”

Fang Yuan inwardly sighed and did not dwell on this as he flew away rapidly.

Soon, his figure disappeared in the clouds.

Several days later, Fang Yuan returned to Wu clan’s headquarters and met Wu Yong.

“It is all thanks to you, brother, for protecting Frosty Peak for the clan and deterring those thieves.” Wu Yong revealed an appreciative look towards Fang Yuan.

“You flatter me, it was only a fluke.” Fang Yuan replied modestly.

“Elder Wu Fa, have you evaluated it? My brother’s contribution was not a simple one, we should think in the perspective of the bigger picture.” Wu Yong turned towards another Wu clan Gu Immortal.

This Wu clan Gu Immortal had an ordinary appearance but his status was anything but ordinary.

He was Wu Yong’s trusted aide and was in charge of calculating the rewards and punishments for all the Gu Immortals in the clan.

Wu Fa spoke with a slight frown: “We have already seen Lord Wu Yi Hai’s bravery. With this battle, lord’s name will definitely spread throughout Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world. But if we talk about rewards, on one hand, Lord Wu Yi Hai has not completely settled this problem and only set a five year agreement, on the other hand, Frosty Peak has been viciously plundered, its foundation has been damaged and its value has greatly reduced...”

“Oh? Such a thing happened to Frosty Peak?” Wu Yong turned towards Fang Yuan with a surprised look.

Fang Yuan sighed: “I also did not expect Xia clan’s Gu Immortals to be such horrible people!”

Wu Yong frowned slightly: “Brother, did you personally see Xia clan’s Gu Immortals looting Frosty Peak?”

“I did not, it is just my guess. Maybe it was other lone cultivators?” Fang Yuan replied with no flaw in his argument.

Wu Yong nodded and spoke after a brief silence: “Since that is the case, Elder Wu Fa shall make the final decision.”

Elder Wu Fa calculated for a while before giving a detailed list to Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1313: Dragon Scale Sea Area

Fang Yuan took the list and skimmed through it, the list was filled with various kinds of Gu materials, most of them were naturally mortal Gu materials, but there were a few immortal materials as well.

Fang Yuan was well aware that if he had handed the frost jades, the frost jade essences and so on, the reward would not just be this.

Wu Yong and Wu Fa were actually acting now, they were not scheming against Fang Yuan, but giving Fang Yuan a way to resolve this issue peacefully.

Fang Yuan had plundered Frosty Peak, although it did not cross the bottom line, Wu clan would rather have an intact Frosty Peak.

Fang Yuan, however, seemed to not know this and was silent for a while before he replied: “I wonder if I can exchange these rewards for a mortal Gu material, dragon scale soil?”

Wu Yong was slightly stumped, and looked at Wu Fa.

The latter thought briefly and nodded.

Returning to his home, Fang Yuan continued to cultivate.

This time, he had obtained a lot of frost jades and frost jade essence, Fang Yuan might even be able to build a Mini Frosty Peak in Mini Southern Border within his sovereign immortal aperture.

But this was not the important point.

The important point was the dragon scale soil.

This special type of soil was only an ordinary Gu material, grainy and tough. If a layer of dragon scale soil was viewed from afar, it would resemble overlapping dragon scales.

Dragon scale soil was the soil that dragon type desolate beasts, ancient desolate dragons, or even immemorial desolate dragons lived on, thus it had the aura of dragons.

Fang Yuan had purchased this soil before, because this soil gave his dragonfish greater impulse to propagate.

Right now, he did not take the other rewards, instead exchanging them for this Gu material because he had the same idea.

“The rate of time in the sovereign immortal aperture has slowed down by many times, this has led to a huge decrease in the production of resources.”

“I don’t have enough immortal essence reserves currently, the same goes for immortal essence stones, but the pressure in this aspect can be relieved if I expand the scale of my resource production.”

After Fang Yuan thought over it, he set dragonfish as the first resource point to be expanded.

Desolate beast dragonfish as well as ordinary dragonfish were always traded in huge numbers in treasure yellow heaven.

Dragonfish seemed to be a product of food path, they could be used as supplementary ingredients to feed many Gu worms.

Not every Gu Immortal possessed Immortal Gu.

But every super force would purchase large numbers of dragonfish at set intervals of time.

The dragonfish trade was one of the largest markets in treasure yellow heaven.

During the following period of time, Fang Yuan would mainly concentrate on creating a sea area.

Currently, Mini Eastern Sea of the sovereign immortal aperture was no longer filled with shallow pools and lakes like before. Because Fang Yuan had annexed large numbers of water path immortal apertures, Mini Eastern Sea was filled with raging waves, although the water level was not deep, it was a boundless aquatic expanse.

There were almost no islands, and sea areas themselves were indistinguishable.

Fang Yuan’s plan was to construct a dragon scale sea area.

A man-made sea area!

This was not Fang Yuan’s innovation or creation. In fact, there were many Gu Immortals in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world creating man-made sea areas.

On the current ranking list for Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world, many famous sea areas were man-made, built step by step.

Of course, the naturally formed sea areas still held most of the positions in the ranking.

Constructing a sea area artificially was not easy.

Fang Yuan spent a large amount of time and energy to lay out the dragon scale soil, then he constructed a mortal Gu formation in that area and used the Gu formation’s power to isolate this sea area and make it a special sea area.

Then, he led his dragonfish group to this sea area.

The dragonfish group was indeed more satisfied in this sea area, and there was a lot more mating.

However, this was not enough.

Next, Fang Yuan started to prepared an immortal killer move — Bountiful Year!

This immortal killer move came from Hei Fan’s true inheritance, but as a matter of fact, Hei Fan did not create it, he had traded for it with a Gu Immortal great expert named Pill Immortal.

He created this immortal killer move, and Hei Fan had exchanged for it with other resources.

This was a quite rare killer move, as it was an immortal killer move that was specially used to manage the immortal aperture and did not have any offensive ability.

But its practicality was extremely high, even Hei Fan had left words of praise towards this immortal killer move in his true inheritance.

Gu worms rose one after the other, a mysterious aura swelled up and gradually thickened.

The bountiful year Fang Yuan was using right now had gone through some modifications.

The original bountiful year’s core Immortal Gu was year Gu, with tens of thousands of supplementary Gu worms. But now, Fang Yuan had obtained a rank seven Immortal Gu – Perseverance, and he ingeniously added perseverance Immortal Gu into the killer move as the first supplementary Gu worm.

More than ten days later, bountiful year was fully activated.

A mysterious power spread throughout the whole dragon scale sea area, but its effects would take some time to be seen.

“Even Hei Fan required two to three days of time to activate the original bountiful year. This is already quite long. After I modified it by adding in perseverance Immortal Gu,the time required has become even longer, approaching half a month. Fortunately, the activation succeeded and there was no backlash.”

Fang Yuan constantly reflected on his experiences.

“My time path attainment level is still ordinary, I was barely able to add in perseverance Immortal Gu. This is the main reason for the enormous extension of time.”

The shorter the activation of an immortal killer move, the simpler the process, the higher the probability of the killer move’s successful activation. And, as far as Gu Immortals were concerned, it was safer.

However, Fang Yuan’s action had more advantages than disadvantages.

With perseverance Immortal Gu’s support, the duration of bountiful year’s effect had doubled!

The original bountiful year could only influence the immortal aperture for a year. But now, a single activation from Fang Yuan could last for two years. This had also covertly saved Fang Yuan a portion of red date immortal essence.

“There is still plenty of room for improvement in bountiful year. Adding in perseverance Immortal Gu along with day Immortal Gu could raise bountiful year’s effect. But, with my current attainment level in time path, I have reached my limit. Forget it!”

The matter was settled, this construction was Fang Yuan’s first big project.

Right now, in Mini Eastern Sea, the first special sea area — dragon scale sea area, had completely formed.

Large numbers of dragonfish lived here, and there were one or two extremely conspicuous desolate beast dragonfish among the dragonfish group.

Bountiful year’s effect did not just cover the dragon scale sea area, it also included a vast range of this sea area’s surroundings.

According to what was written in Hei Fan’s true inheritance: The expenditure of immortal essence to activate bountiful year was huge, but for the next year, starting right from the moment of successful activation of the killer move, all of the resources inside the immortal aperture would be produced at a higher rate!

However, the result was not like this.

Fang Yuan’s bountiful year’s effect only covered a portion of Mini Eastern Sea.

On one hand, this was because Fang Yuan had added perseverance Immortal Gu, which reduced the effective range of the killer move. On the other hand, the sovereign immortal aperture was simply too vast, wanting bountiful year to cover the whole sovereign immortal aperture was no different to a fairy tale.

From dragon scale lake to dragon scale sea, this was an enormous leap, and its significant was profound.

But after this project, Fang Yuan's immortal essence stones and immortal essence reserves were almost dried up.

To be safe, Fang Yuan began to sell all the unnecessary resources in his possession.

Like the frost jades and frost jade essences he had plundered in Frosty Peak, as well as large numbers of ice path mortal Gu.

Where there are gains, there are losses. His current management focus was on dragonfish.

After selling some resources, Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, he used a portion of the gains to buy many dragonfish from treasure yellow heaven.

He placed these dragonfish in dragon scale sea area.

One could say he was staking a lot on this project.

No doubt, this had some risks. But if he went at it safely, the efficiency would be lower. Moreover, he was in a safe and stable environment right now, so Fang Yuan chose to be slightly aggressive and took bigger steps.

But like this, because his immortal essence reserves had become scarce, Fang Yuan appeared to have his hands tied, not being able to casually cultivate, comprehend, train any immortal killer moves and so on.

Days seemed to pass with difficulty.

After half a month, the first batch of dragonfish was sold, the situation began to turn for the better.

After over a month, Fang Yuan sold the second batch of dragonfish directly to Wu clan!

“Who could have thought you would be so proficient in managing dragonfish!” Even Wu Yong was slightly surprised.

Wu clan did transactions of dragonfish to begin with, but previously, they had to buy from outside, now, they could be considered internal sales.

Besides Wu clan, there were also Qiao clan and some other super forces which had close relations with Wu clan.

Fang Yuan's third batch of dragonfish was sold.

Because of his identity as Wu Yi Hai and the low price, Fang Yuan's dragonfish smoothly entered the market of Southern Border's Gu Immortal world.

After the third batch of dragonfish was sold, Fang Yuan's situation had turned a lot better, his immortal essence reserves were expanding bit by bit. Fang Yuan was out of his financial predicament, and started to continue his cultivation with a brand new stance.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1314: Purchasing Divine Deer Fruits

Southern Border, Wu clan.

In a secret cultivation room, Fang Yuan was floating in the air, his expression solemn.

His long hair was fluttering in the air, and all kinds of Gu worm auras rose from his body, mixing with each other.

“The crucial step...” Fang Yuan mumbled, his gaze turning sharp.

He carefully activated a mortal Gu.

This was a metal path mortal Gu and was only rank one.

Activating just this Gu alone naturally had no risks. But the situation now was different.

Bam.

A muffled sound spread from Fang Yuan’s body.

Fang Yuan’s body shook violently like he had been electrocuted, his expression was pale and a trace of blood flowed out from the corners of his lips.

“I failed again.” He heaved a long sigh.

He landed on the ground and held his chest while checking his injuries.

“Fortunately, I only used a rank one mortal Gu, these injuries are not much of a problem and there is no need to use Man as Before. I will recover in a couple of days with the sovereign immortal body’s recovery speed.”

Fang Yuan was attempting to further improve the killer move vajra shell.

Immortal killer move vajra shell used rank six Vajra Thought as a core. Fang Yuan had relied on this killer move and strategy to defeat Xia clan’s Gu Immortal, Xia Fei Kuai.

After the matter, Fang Yuan had felt this killer move was still not satisfying enough and still had room for improvement.

Fang Yuan paid attention to this feeling.

He knew his wisdom path and transformation path were both at grandmaster level, such a feeling did not emerge from nowhere and had great value to him.

“Unfortunately, although I have made some progress over these days, there have been little to no results. It seems my attainment level is still not enough, I can only let it be for now.”

Fang Yuan let out a sigh.

In fact, his speed of progress was extremely remarkable compared to other Gu Immortals.

In the past, Vicious Lightning Fiend had used up several years to deduce the immortal killer move lightning deity. He was not even at ten percent of Fang Yuan’s current speed.

However, it was also a wise choice for Fang Yuan to give up.

Because he had a way to rapidly raise his attainment, as long as he raised his attainment levels, he could improve the killer move vajra shell at once.

After Fang Yuan’s transactions of dragonfish, his financial condition had improved, and as such, he had spare energy to try modifying immortal killer moves.

Deducing an immortal killer move was actually very resource consuming. For instance, if the attempt failed, Gu Immortal could suffer backlash and be injured. Gu worms would also be destroyed and would need to be replenished. And if Immortal Gu were damaged, that would be even more troublesome.

But if the attainment level was enough, the killer move could be improved at once, saving large amounts of time, effort and resources.

Fang Yuan’s attainment level barely met the requirements of improving vajra shell, although he could improve it, he would have to pay quite a heavy price.

He thought it over and resolutely gave up on this small project.

After resting for a while, Fang Yuan activated his Gu worms and sent his divine sense into treasure yellow heaven.

Inside treasure yellow heaven, his divine sense moved nimbly and reached a Gu Immortal’s will to converse.

“I will pay one thousand three hundred immortal essence stones for all your divine deer fruits.” Fang Yuan spoke.

This Gu Immortal will’s shook its head and said helplessly: “The price I quoted is already low. You have already come here three times, if you really want to buy, add two hundred immortal essence stones and you can take them away.”

Divine deer fruits were rank six immortal material.

It was not a rare Gu material, but there were few people who sold it because there was not much demand for it.

Fang Yuan, however, needed it to feed vajra thought Immortal Gu.

He had obtained vajra thought Immortal Gu and had to solve its feeding problem.

Fang Yuan did not reply, instead, he sized up the products.

The divine deer fruits in this stall were of good quality, Fang Yuan had strolled several times around treasure yellow heaven and had found the divine deer fruits here were of top quality.

The price was also quite reasonable.

Thus, he had visited this stall several times.

Divine deer fruits were about the size of a baby’s fist and did not grow on trees or plants, instead growing on the antlers of a type of deer desolate beast, fruit deer.

It was a deer that bore fruit.

Fang Yuan had already inquired about the specific name of this desolate beast, and also saw them being sold in treasure yellow heaven.

However, even if he bought a batch of them, the number of divine deer fruits they could produce was a question that needed to be explored.

Any resource had its own cultivation methods.

For instance, Fang Yuan’s dragonfish production was not a result of casual attempts, but was from the insights and experiences of Dong Fang tribe.

This was the accumulation of a super tribe. As a result, Fang Yuan’s dragonfish were of the best quality, and the production was also smooth, giving higher profits while requiring slightly lower capital.

“I should just buy a portion of divine deer fruits for now to deal with the first feeding of vajra thought Immortal Gu.”

“When I have sufficient funds in the future, I can consider how to raise fruit deers and be able to be self-sufficiently provide for vajra thought Immortal Gu.”

“As for whether I can turn this divine deer fruit’s production into another source of income, that would depend on future opportunities.”

Fang Yuan pondered while communicating with that Gu Immortal will: “Then, let me check again.”

But at this time, the Gu Immortal will in front of Fang Yuan suddenly shook and spoke: “My main body’s divine sense has entered, he says he can discuss the price with you. You should talk it out between yourselves.”

Saying this, the Gu Immortal’s will took a back seat.

Fang Yuan was overjoyed.

He was waiting for this situation.

The Gu Immortal who was selling the divine deer fruits had left the divine deer fruits in treasure yellow heaven and also left a will to look after them.

But although this will could think and communicate, it had to strictly abide by the bottom-line price set by its main body, and this was not negotiable.

But now that the Gu Immortal’s divine sense had come over, Fang Yuan could properly communicate with him about many things.

There were many contents up for discussion.

“I want the divine deer fruits to feed Immortal Gu.”

“If we can reach a consensus, this absolutely won’t be the last transaction.”

“How about it? I will offer one thousand three hundred immortal essence stones.”

Fang Yuan started to negotiate.

The Gu Immortal hesitated: “This is our first interaction, how can I believe you based on just empty promises? Hehehe, forget it, we can reach a deal for one thousand four hundred immortal essence stones.”

“Once we have transacted three times like this, the price can be lowered to one thousand three hundred. What do you think?”

Clearly, this Gu Immortal was not foolish and was quite astute.

Fang Yuan refused: “If I had ample funds, I would not be haggling with you like this. How about one thousand three hundred and fifty?”

That Gu Immortal forced a smile: “Alright. If not for my urgent need for funds and the fact that these divine deer fruits are selling slowly, I would not have agreed to your price.”

One gave the money and the other handed the goods.

Fang Yuan let out a sigh of relief after the transaction was completed. The feeding problem of vajra thought Immortal Gu was settled for the moment.

Now, it was divination tortoise shell Immortal Gu’s turn.

This Immortal Gu fed on kelp.

Naturally, it was not common kelp, but ancient ink kelp, which was a rank six immortal material.

This kelp was complete black like ink, and when its skin was torn, it would dye the surrounding water into pitch-black ink.

Fang Yuan was currently short on funds, so he intended to purchase and store some ancient ink kelps to feed divination tortoise shell Immortal Gu.

He would consider more in the future.

In the aspect of food, day Immortal Gu was much more pleasant. Because it fed on the water of the River of Time, there was no need to think about obtaining its food.

In comparison to divine deer fruits, there were many more sellers of ancient ink kelps in treasure yellow heaven.

But Fang Yuan was not able to make a deal with any of them.

The issue was the price.

But he was not in a hurry, there was still some time left before the next feeding of divination tortoise shell Immortal Gu.

“Fortunately, dragon scale sea area’s construction is finished, as long as it continues to develop like this, I will have plenty of funds in the future.”

“Next is the construction of coiling thread caves to produce regretful spiders on a large scale.”

Fang Yuan had considered it, the market for regretful spiders was huge, especially over in Western Desert. Although the demand was not as large as dragonfish, it was still a lot.

But for the moment, Fang Yuan was tight on funds and needed some time to accumulate his wealth before he could start this project.

“According to this situation, I estimate that it will be over a month before I am able to gather the first sum of funds and start on the construction of coiling thread caves.”

“Hopefully, Wu clan would have stabilized by then and would let me return to the giant dream realm.”

Wu Yi Hai’s identity restricted Fang Yuan’s freedom. Especially under the current situation of Wu clan, it was not good for him to voice out his intention.

Over the course of this month, Wu Yong had led Wu clan to deal with the problems created by the various super forces. There were losses and gains, Wu clan’s prestige sank, but in truth, there was not much damage to their benefits.

Thus, this situation was still continuing.

Wu Yong wanted to regain their reputation, while other super forces were not satisfied and wanted to seize some material benefits.

The confrontation between righteous path forces was different from the demonic path.

Confrontations in the demonic path were fierce and violent, while righteous path confrontations were light like drizzle and often lasted for a long time. Especially when it was a confrontation between super forces with huge assets, it was difficult for them to fight against each other without reservations, they would not fight to the death.

Fang Yuan’s idle cultivation lifestyle did not last for long.

Some days later, he received another task from Wu Yong.

“Mount Snail? Mountain Moving Old Monster?”

Fang Yuan’s brows slowly started to furrow.

It was not that he did not have the confidence to complete this task, but the current trend of situations was not looking good.

Previously, though Fang Yuan had resolved Frosty Peak’s matter, he had in fact withheld his strength and methods, obtaining a barely passable result. He had only created an agreement of five years and had plundered the resources of Frosty Peak.

Although this was an unwritten rule of the righteous path, he had touched the bottom-line.

This was naturally Fang Yuan’s intent, to leave a bad impression on Wu Yong. Higher-ups did not like using such people, and if they sent Fang Yuan away to the super Gu formation earlier, it would match Fang Yuan’s wish.

But Wu clan was indeed short on manpower at present, while its territory was too large. A matter concerning Mount Snail had happened suddenly, Wu Yong had no choice but to use Fang Yuan to deal with this problem.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1315: Convincing Old Monster

Southern Border.

Light rain was drizzling on a range of verdant mountains.

Fang Yuan wore a blue robe, and was gazing at these grand rivers and mountains from atop a rock, before his gaze finally settled on a mountain.

This mountain was rather special.

The mountain peaks beside it were either tall or short, steep or slanted.

But this mountain was round in shape.

This was Mount Snail.

Or it could be considered a snail mountain.

It was an immemorial desolate beast! It was an enormous river snail with a tall, tower-like spiral shell drenched with green moss.

When it stayed still, its body would hide in the shell, looking like a towering mountain.

Right now, it was awake and was slowly moving.

Rumble...

As it moved, all the surroundings quaked slightly, birds and beasts fled in disorder.

Fang Yuan was calmly looking at the movement of this immemorial desolate beast, Mount Snail, from another mountain peak.

Its speed was slow.

Mount Snail might be an immemorial desolate beast, but its temperament was simple and mild, it was hard to anger it, it could even be said to be harmless.

Not only harmless, it also provided benefits.

Because Mount Snail’s body was full of enslavement path and earth path dao marks, which created a special environment around it that would spawn many enslavement path and earth path resources.

Mount Snail’s ownership had all the while been an unsettled issue.

Few Gu Immortals could control Mount Snail, it was very difficult for even rank eight enslavement path Gu Immortals.

Because Mount Snail itself was full of enslavement path dao marks.

There were already seven known Mount Snails in Southern Border. Long ago, Southern Border’s super forces had set an agreement: As long as these Mount Snails were not controlled by anyone, that is to say, they were wild Mount Snails, they would be considered as a resource of the clan whose territory it was staying in.

This Mount Snail was originally living in Wu clan’s territory, naturally it belonged to Wu clan.

There was no doubt about this.

But now, it was time for the Mount Snail’s migration, it was currently leaving Wu clan’s territory for other territories.

Mount Snail’s original location was at the periphery of Wu clan’s territory.

In fact, during Wu Du Xiu’s time, Wu clan had intentionally expanded their territory to include this Mount Snail.

Currently, Mount Snail was leaving Wu clan’s territory, but the place it was going to did not have other righteous path super forces.

This also meant this Mount Snail was going to become wild again.

Wu Yong naturally did not want to see such a situation happening, and under the situation where he did not have enough manpower, without other options, he could only assign this task to his younger brother, Wu Yi Hai.

“Wu Yi Hai? I am Qin Jin Sheng, I am also called Mountain Moving Old Monster.” A Gu Immortal flew over from another mountain peak.

Fang Yuan gazed at the Gu Immortal.

This old Gu Immortal was adorned in a suit of rocky grey armor, his hair was a mix of black and white, looking messy like straws. He looked slovenly, with the corners of his clothes being in shreds.

But the rank seven aura he gave out was majestic and forceful, especially his eyes which shone with sharp light. Right now, as he looked at Fang Yuan, it was like a senior sizing up a junior.

“It is me indeed, Wu Yi Hai, I greet Senior Mountain Moving.” Fang Yuan bowed slightly, his greeting had the style of the righteous path.

This Mountain Moving Old Monster’s title had ‘old’ in it, it naturally was because he was an old veteran, an old senior, having lived for over two thousand years.

He had lifespan Gu and also had unique lifespan extension methods.

His battle strength was also very high and he was a famous expert among lone immortals, almost at the level of Old Treeman Ba De and Wu clan’s Wu Yu Bo.

Rank seven Gu Immortals like Xia Fei Kuai could not compare to Mountain Moving Old Monster.

Thus, when Mountain Moving Old Monster sized up Fang Yuan, he was not humble and treated himself as a senior, even if Fang Yuan came from Wu clan.

“Hehehe, considering the time, it was time your Wu clan sent someone as well. Let’s sit and talk.” Mountain Moving Old Monster laughed and sat on a rock.

Fang Yuan smiled and also sat down.

Mountain Moving Old Monster saw that Fang Yuan had no objection to sitting on a rock and also did not have a high-and-mighty attitude, his impression of Fang Yuan improved: “I almost forgot you were a lone cultivator, although you have joined Wu clan, you don’t have the hypocritical attitude of those righteous path members.”

Fang Yuan slightly shook his head: “The righteous path has to act like the righteous path, as for me, I spent most of my time as a secluded cultivator in Eastern Sea, these habits cannot be changed.”

“Hahaha.” Mountain Moving Old Monster laughed heartily, “I hear you chased away the two Gu Immortals from Xia clan, but plundered the resources of Frosty Peak.”

Fang Yuan revealed a surprised expression: “Senior, these are groundless rumors, I have never stated that.”

Mountain Moving Old Monster laughed loudly, before heaving a deep sigh: “The righteous path Gu Immortals can’t understand you, but I understand. How difficult is it for us lone cultivators to become an immortal? We have to earn every cultivation resource with our own hands. There won’t be future opportunities, so we need to grasp the present benefits with all our strength. Who knows what will happen in the future?”

“As for those righteous path Gu Immortals, even if they stay in their homes, plenty of resources are provided to them. How could they understand the pain and difficulties we lone cultivators face?”

Fang Yuan’s expression was calm, he did not praise nor did he retort.

He knew that Mountain Moving Old Monster’s words were absolutely not just to get close to him, but to express his resolve — he, Mountain Moving Old Monster, was a lone cultivator, and the present benefit in front of him was this Mount Snail. His resolve could not be shaken, and the former lone cultivator, Wu Yi Hai, should be aware of it.

“I am clear of your intention, senior, but I still have to ask you to have some understanding, I have my own difficulties in coming here.” Fang Yuan spoke.

Mountain Moving Old Monster snickered: “Everyone has their own difficulties.”

With age and experience, one’s words would carry deeper meaning.

Everyone has their own difficulties; not only was it replying to Fang Yuan’s words, it also meant he, himself, had his own difficulties, and more importantly, it was also indicating that Wu clan was currently in a difficult situation.

Fang Yuan did not speak anymore.

Sometimes, silence was a tactic which could be used in a confrontation between words.

Sure enough, Mountain Moving Old Monster could not sit still and handed an information path mortal Gu to Fang Yuan: “Take a look at it.”

The contents listed in this mortal Gu had high value. If Fang Yuan obtained them, he could directly construct coiling thread caves!

“We will cooperate, I will take Mount Snail and you will get these, what do you think?” Mountain Moving Old Monster smiled.

He was actually trying to bribe Fang Yuan!

But this was not strange.

Instead, it fell within Fang Yuan’s expectations.

Mountain Moving Old Monster was a lone cultivator, and from his point of view, he naturally did not want to offend the number one righteous path super force, Wu clan. Despite Wu clan currently being in a predicament, such a colossal force was not something Mountain Moving Old Monster could threaten by himself.

More importantly, if Mountain Moving Old Monster obtained this Mount Snail, he would no longer be a person who could freely move.

Mount Snail could not be stored inside an immortal aperture, unless it was completely subdued.

Mountain Moving Old Monster was an earth path Gu Immortal, he clearly did not have such attainment. Like this, he would become the ‘owner’ of this Mount Snail, and would have to defend it if someone attacked it in the future.

If he offended Wu clan, Wu clan’s Gu Immortals would attack in waves, how could he defend against them by himself?

Even if he could defend once, what about the second time, the third time?

Even if he was able to defend against them all, there would be losses in battle. Would Mountain Moving Old Monster still have time to cultivate if he were to be disturbed repeatedly?

As such, there was only one option in front of Mountain Moving Old Monster.

That was to negotiate with Wu clan.

Wu clan did not want to let go of this Mount Snail, but even the large Wu clan was an organization formed by its clansmen. And so long as it was an organization, it could not be an airtight fortress, there would naturally be chinks in the armor.

Wu Yi Hai’s arrival gave even greater hope to Mountain Moving Old Monster.

“Senior, you want to use these to exchange for an immemorial desolate beast?” Fang Yuan held the information path mortal Gu and said with a faint smile.

“The resources inside are very valuable! This Mount Snail might be an immemorial desolate beast, but who can control it? If I become its owner, I will also only be taking the resources produced by it. Naturally, we can talk if you have any conditions.” Mountain Moving Old Monster’s eyes glimmered brightly, his attitude turning much warmer.

Since Fang Yuan had not directly refused, Mountain Moving Old Monster cheered inwardly and had much higher hope.

“The contents inside this list needs to be doubled at least.” This was Fang Yuan’s first condition.

Mountain Moving Old Monster immediately frowned.

“Mount Snail cannot be yours in name, it will still belong to Wu clan.” This was Fang Yuan’s second condition.

Mountain Moving Old Monster’s eyes opened wide, his warm expression suddenly changing to that of anger.

“But in truth, senior, you will be this mountain’s owner, the benefits will mostly go to you, but you need to hand over a portion of the resources to our Wu clan every year.” This was Fang Yuan’s third condition.

Mountain Moving Old Monster began to sneer, his expression had turned dark: “Wu Yi Hai, are you playing with me?”

“Of course not.” Fang Yuan had a sober expression, he stood up and looked at Mountain Moving Old Monster’s eyes with no fear: “Senior, may I ask three questions?”

Mountain Moving Old Monster barely restrained his anger: “Speak.”

“Senior, first, you are a lone person not affiliated with any super force, how could my Wu clan leave Mount Snail in your hands? It would be alright if it were a super force, but letting a lone cultivator take benefits would negatively affect my Wu clan’s prestige.”

“Second, even if you can take possession of this Mount Snail for the moment, how long can you defend it? Even if my Wu clan doesn’t interfere with you, what about the other super forces?”

“Third, senior, do you think that by only bribing me, the whole of Wu clan will simply watch from the sidelines?”

Mountain Moving Old Monster fell into silence.

After a long while, he sighed and spoke with a hoarse voice: “Then if we go with your idea, wouldn’t I become the guard for your Wu clan’s mountain?”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “It is just some insignificant reputation. How could everything go perfectly? The conditions I mentioned are actually not excessive, it is because I considered how I was also once a lone cultivator. The question is, do you want face or real benefits, please consider it properly.”

Mountain Moving Old Monster fell into silence.

This time, the silence lasted an even longer time, only when the light drizzle gradually stopped, he spoke: “Alright, we will go according to your idea.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1316: Moon Festival

A few days later.

Looking at Mount Snail loudly moving away, and Mountain Moving Old Monster standing on top of it with an owner’s air, Fang Yuan retracted his gaze and started to leave.

Mount Snail’s matter had been settled.

With Fang Yuan as the representative, Wu clan had reached an agreement with Mountain Moving Old Monster. Mountain Moving Old Monster obtained most of the benefits of Mount Snail, but this immemorial desolate beast still belonged to Wu clan in name.

Wu Yong had assigned Fang Yuan to retain Mount Snail.

Fang Yuan had retained it, although it was only a portion, it could be considered as completing the task.

“Mountain Moving Old Monster agreed to my conditions because of Wu clan’s force behind me.”

“As for Wu Yong, he is currently worn out by dealing with the difficulties created by other super forces. He has no choice but to forcibly acknowledge the resolution of Mount Snail.”

“Wu clan is in a grave situation at present, as Wu Yong’s brother, I should not idle around outside and must return as quickly as possible.”

Fang Yuan was thoroughly satisfied with the outcome of this matter.

He had an explanation to hand to Wu clan, and more importantly, he had reaped many benefits from this task.

He could already begin the construction of coiling thread caves.

Because of these resources, Fang Yuan immediately had spare funds to engage in a large scale expansion of his second major resource.

According to the previous development speed, he would have had to wait more than half a year. And in this duration, there could not be any unexpected mishaps, for instance, intense battle would consume a lot of red date immortal essence. The rate of time in Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture was slowed down at present, the amount of red date immortal essence he produced was a lot less than before, and Fang Yuan needed to use immortal essence stones to turn them into red date immortal essence.

Now, his immortal essence was no longer green grape immortal essence, one hundred immortal essence stones were required to turn into one bead of red date immortal essence.

“I need to arrange the Gu formation to construct the coiling thread caves, I also need rank six immortal material dark soft silk and rank seven immortal material regret water rocks.”

“With these funds, all this can be completed and it is only a matter of time.”

“The important thing is, when can I return to the dream realm? Wu Yong’s attitude is the crucial factor!”

Fang Yuan thought as he moved forward.

Right as he was on his way back, in the headquarters of Wu clan, two Gu Immortals were currently talking about him, Wu Yi Hai.

One was Wu clan’s rank eight Gu Immortal, first supreme elder Wu Yong.

The other was Wu Yong’s trusted aide, Wu Fa.

“Who could have thought my brother would resolve Mount Snail’s matter so quickly? Elder Wu Fa, as per the clan rules, how should we reward him?” Wu Yong asked.

Wu Fa was silent for a moment.

He knew that Wu Yong’s question was not superficial, he was asking about his attitude towards Wu Yi Hai.

He was testing Wu Fa.

Because Wu Yi Hai's identity was special, he and Wu Yong were half-siblings!

Wu Fa quickly thought and replied: "Lord Wu Yi Hai has a lone cultivator background."

One sentence.

But Wu Yong laughed heartily: "Right, your remark is correct. Yi Hai has a lone cultivator's disposition, even after returning to the clan, he has not changed and is always thinking of quickly making cash and eyeing up cheap benefits."

Wu Fa, however, did not agree: "Frosty Peak and Mount Snail are not small benefits."

Wu Yong's laughter stopped, and a sharp light flashed in his eyes as he nodded: "That is indeed not good, if everyone were to be like this, how would Wu clan continue to exist? But he did not overstep the bottom line and has not left behind any weaknesses that could be exposed."

As he said this, Wu Yong sighed and remarked: "He has some ability."

How could Wu Fa not realize Wu Yong's meaning?

Wu Yong naturally could not be pleased at seeing Fang Yuan use the situation to his advantage.

But the situation left him no choice, he was lacking manpower and sometimes had no choice but to send Wu Yi Hai to deal with some matters.

Fang Yuan had also revealed his ability by handling these two matters.

This ability had obtained Wu Yong's acknowledgement, so Wu Yong would still continue to use Fang Yuan. But when the time arrives and Wu clan's situation eases up, Fang Yuan would be cast aside by Wu Yong, to the extent that if Fang Yuan were to leave behind any evidence, Wu Yong would grasp the opportunity and deal a huge blow to Fang Yuan.

After all, no higher-up would feel comfortable with someone like Fang Yuan, who sought after personal gains.

Fang Yuan successfully returned to Wu clan.

He met with Wu Yong and described the whole matter briefly, and obtained a reward from Wu clan once again.

Fang Yuan chose to exchange for immortal essence stones.

Naturally, this sum of immortal essence stones could not compare to what he had obtained from Mountain Moving Old Monster, it was far too few.

Over the following days, Fang Yuan cultivated in peace.

The construction of the coiling thread caves was slowly progressing. This was his current focus.

Every set interval of time, Fang Yuan would have to place his immortal aperture to absorb heaven and earth qi, stabilizing the sovereign immortal aperture.

After all, Reverse Flow River was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, it was extremely taxing on the immortal aperture.

This matter was slightly troublesome.

Fang Yuan could not directly absorb heaven and earth qi, because the amount he absorbed every time was huge and the interval between them was also short.

As such, Fang Yuan had to search for some immortal materials in treasure yellow heaven, disintegrating them into heaven and earth qi to infuse into himself.

This no doubt consumed a lot of Fang Yuan’s spare energy and finances, but he would rather do this carefully. This was the only way he could stick around long enough and avoid showing any flaws that could let others expose his identity.

Days passed by, Fang Yuan started to feel somewhat impatient.

“The problems on the giant dream realm’s end have already settled down. But Wu Yong does not seem to show any signs of letting me return. Looks like what I was worried about happened after all. Sigh!”

Fang Yuan sighed.

In this world, people often had no choice.

Wu Yong was busy dealing with difficulties from all sides, doing everything to stabilize the situation. If he let Fang Yuan return, and a problem occurred on the super Gu formation’s end, would he not be creating trouble for himself?

Moreover, Wu Yong saw Fang Yuan had some ability and wanted to continue letting him deal with some problems.

As for Fang Yuan embezzling resources while doing the tasks, Wu Yong was turning a blind eye to it for now and did not look into it.

He did not pursue it, but Fang Yuan wanted him to.

Looking at the reason Fang Yuan disguised as Wu Yi Hai and entered Wu clan, wasn’t it for the dream realm?

“It seems I need to make a move.”

On this day, Fang Yuan left his residence.

For the policies of higher-ups, there were countermeasures.

Fang Yuan was an old fox, how could he not have a method to respond to this?

Around twelve days later, in a pavilion on Yue Hua Mountain, several Gu Immortals were seated around a stone table.

Warm moonlight flowed down like water.

Night birds cried out in the lush green hills.

Soft wind brushed past, the view was beautiful beyond imagination.

“Today is Southern Border’s yearly moon festival 1 , it is my fortune to enjoy this festival with all our honorable guests.” Qiao Si Liu said with a smile.

Her voice was beautiful like the soft murmurs of mountain springs, giving a pure feeling.

Her appearance was even more beautiful, dressed in a pure white brocade dress, along with her exquisite features, it gave a feeling of a fairy from mortal tales.

“Being able to receive Fairy Si Liu’s invitation to enjoy the moon festival together is my, Luo Mu Zi’s, honor.” A Gu Immortal with the looks of a young man spoke.

His smile was glowing with enthusiasm, particularly the gaze he had when looked at Qiao Si Liu, it was scorching hot.

Qiao Si Liu was one of the three publicly recognized top beauties in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, what stood out even more was her background.

Qiao clan, although affiliated with Wu clan, was also a righteous path super force.

Among the six Gu Immortals present, there were two women and four men, other than the one couple, Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei were pursuers of Qiao Si Liu.

There were many pursuers of Qiao Si Liu, but being able to receive an invitation to this festival from her showed these two were not at the same level as the rest.

Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei were naturally happy, they came rushing over immediately when they received Qiao Si Liu’s invitation.

But at this moment, Qiao Si Liu spoke to another male Gu Immortal: “Yi Hai, you said you wanted to integrate yourself into Southern Border, tonight’s moon festival is a custom of Southern Border.”

“Southern Border has a lot of mountains, separated from each other, but the moon festival is a common custom. Every year, at this time, we will all appreciate the moon.”

Her eyes were glistening with light, her soft voice and her smiling rosy lips created an extraordinary image.

Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei immediately frowned, as they rigidly stared at Fang Yuan with eyes that could burst into flames.

Qiao Si Liu’s differing attitude could be clearly seen by anyone who had eyes, moreover, the seating arrangement had already put Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei in a bad mood.

Because on the main seat was Qiao Si Liu and on her right seat was Fang Yuan, while to her left was her best friend, Fairy Tian Lu.

As for the other male Gu Immortals, their seats were arranged quite far away.

“Moon festival?” Fang Yuan’s expression was indifferent, he asked even though he already knew: “Interesting, what do we do besides appreciating the moon?”

“We drink tea, recite poems, and also dissect rocks.” Qiao Si Liu explained with a smile.

“Dissect rocks?” Fang Yuan looked puzzled.

Qiao Si Liu did not reply, instead she handed a cup of fragrant tea to Fang Yuan: “First, please taste my personally brewed tea.”

Luo Mu Zi almost stood up at this sight!

Lun Fei’s eyelids twitched violently, wishing he could be in Fang Yuan’s place.

Fang Yuan took a light sip of the tea and commented: “This tea is not bad.”

“Only not bad? This is Fairy Si Liu’s renowned willow spiral tea!” Luo Mu Zi almost yelled.

“Is there something special that I am unaware of?” Fang Yuan looked at Qiao Si Liu.

Qiao Si Liu met Fang Yuan’s gaze, before her eyes turned and she laughed softly.

Lun Fei’s heart started beating faster at the fairy’s charming laughter.

At this moment, Fairy Tian Lu aptly chirped: “This willow spiral tea, if you lightly shake it, a whirlpool will form on the surface of the tea in the appearance of a willow leaf. You will only get the true extraordinary taste of the tea when you drink it at that time.”

“Oh? So it was like that?” Fang Yuan shook the cup in his hand, and immediately, there was a change on the surface of the tea.

He drank it then, and felt the fragrance overflow in his mouth, giving him a pleasant aftertaste and satisfaction.

“Great tea.” Fang Yuan praised.

“Of course it is a great tea, Fairy Si Liu’s personally brewed tea is not something just anyone can get to drink!” Luo Mu Zi sourly said.

“To be able to receive your praise, Si Liu’s efforts were not wasted. You should know that you need to spend six hours to make this tea and you cannot be even the slightest bit careless during the whole process.” Fairy Tian Lu said.

Lun Fei was extremely moved: “It is truly my lifetime’s honor to be able to taste Fairy Si Liu’s personally brewed willow spiral tea tonight!”

Fairy Tian Lu’s eyebrows immediately rose: “Who said you can taste the willow spiral tea? Si Liu took out some time from her busy schedule to make this one cup.”

“Ugh.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1317: Tea Competition

Qiao Si Liu only made one cup of willow spiral tea, which was given to Fang Yuan.

Such a brewing method immediately changed the significance of this cup of willow spiral tea.

Fang Yuan’s expression slightly changed, showing flattered joy on his face, but his mind was tranquil with no ripples.

“This is truly a pity. No matter how beautiful you are, without eternal life, you will just be a pile of bones in the end.”

“Beauty is superficial, but people cannot stop indulging in it.”

“But this Fairy Tian Lu is indeed Qiao Si Liu’s best friend, their coordination is remarkable.”

The only cup of brewed tea was given to Fang Yuan by Fairy Si Liu, Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei, who were still thinking of tasting the tea, however, obtained such a reply.

Their expressions had become quite stiff at this moment.

Qiao Si Liu smiled: “The willow spiral tea was only a token of goodwill. I have brought bewitching tea for everyone, please have a taste.”

She waved her silk sleeve, five servings of tea appeared on the table.

This tea was different from willow spiral tea, it was not in a cup, but in a white porcelain dish.

At the center of this dish was a fist sized dewdrop.

This dewdrop was lustrous like a jade, its surface wobbling slightly against the night wind, looking delicate.

“Bewitching tea is a renowned tea of Qiao clan, to think I could have a taste tonight.” Luo Mu Zi gave himself an excuse, but in fact, his gaze was still fixed on that cup in front of Fang Yuan.

Lun Fei had already tightly clenched his fists below the table, grinding his teeth as he raised the small porcelain dish and took a sip of the bewitching tea.

“Good tea.” He exclaimed, but his expression was slightly rigid.

In fact, bewitching tea was multiple grades higher than willow spiral tea, the latter was only Qiao Si Liu’s creation, while the former was Qiao clan’s signature tea. A super force’s signature tea was naturally more outstanding than the tea created by Qiao Si Liu, a single Gu Immortal.

However, as far as Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei were concerned, they would rather give up a hundred servings of bewitching tea to drink a serving of willow spiral tea.

“Bewitching tea is really refreshing and has endless aftertaste. Si Liu, how can I take out my aurora tea when you brought out this tea?” Fairy Tian Lu smiled.

Qiao Si Liu, however, was not the slightest bit polite to this best friend of hers: “Just don’t take it out then, I am already tired of drinking your aurora tea. Right now, I am anticipating Sheng Liu’s drunken flowers tea. It is rumored this tea was a creation from his inspiration when he fell in love at first sight with you. I wonder if I might have the opportunity to taste it today?”

“I am ashamed, ashamed.” Sheng Liu rubbed his nose, giving a bitter smile, “My drunken flowers tea is a crude creation, it is not exquisite enough for today.”

Fairy Tian Lu also smiled while covering her mouth: “Si Liu, you are making things difficult for my darling Liu, this won’t do! Only I can drink drunken flowers tea, outsiders can stop dreaming about it.”

Her face showed pride and love as she said this.

Gu Immortal Sheng Liu who was beside her, looked lovingly at Fairy Tian Lu, they were already holding their hands below the table.

Qiao Si Liu gave a deep sigh: “Oh, I wonder when I will meet a person who will create a tea for me?”

There was a sense of dejectedness in her soft query.

At this moment, moonlight shone into the pavilion.

A beauty sighing softly under the moonlight was truly a very loveable sight.

Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei felt their bodies heating up, Luo Mu Zi even stood up: “Fairy Si Liu, I have a tea which is called nine recollecting fragrances. It is my own creation, fairy, I would like to offer it to you on this auspicious occasion.”

Not willing to be left behind, Lun Fei also quipped in: “I also have prepared my tea, this is yin-yang tea, there is a clear distinction between yin and yang, fairy, please have a taste.”

These two Gu Immortals only offered the tea to Qiao Si Liu, just like Qiao Si Liu had given her willow spiral tea to Fang Yuan.

Qiao Si Liu took a sip of both tea, and said with a smile: “Nine recollecting fragrances is aptly named, the moment the tea enters the mouth, fragrances coil around the tongue. Tasting it carefully, there are actually nine moments when the fragrances intensify, it is really extraordinary.”

“Haha, fairy, it is not worthy of such praise from you.” Luo Mu Zi laughed heartily, his previous bad mood swept away completely.

Qiao Si Liu then said to Lun Fei: “Yin-yang tea, although it is not a unique creation, I have heard of it before. There are three levels to brewing this tea. First level is when yin and yang are obscure. Second layer is when yin and yang are separate. Third level is when yin contains yang, and yang contains yin, yin and yang revolving around each other. Lun Fei, your skill can be seen for being able to achieve the second level of brewing this tea, there are probably less than ten people who can achieve that in the whole of Southern Border, worthy of a food path Gu Immortal like you.”

Tea, wine, delicacies, in this world, they were naturally not ordinary.

There were countless ways to brew tea. It was not as simple and shallow as putting tea leaves in hot water.

Like the tea discussed by the immortals in the pavilion: Willow spiral tea, bewitching tea, drunken flowers, nine recollecting fragrances and yin-yang tea, they were all incomplete Gu recipes.

And when these Gu recipes were completed, and the Gu Immortal brewed tea at that time, they could refine food path Gu worms.

Food path was one of the many cultivation paths, it was just that it had never flourished. Although it was extremely significant and there was a lot of interests in it, unfortunately, because of historical reasons, there were very few food path inheritances left in the world.

“This Lun Fei’s main cultivation is actually food path?” Fang Yuan gave Lun Fei a quick glance, feeling slightly surprised inwardly.

“What is this guy’s origin? I have many Immortal Gu, if I could obtain his food path inheritance, it might be a huge help to me.” Fang Yuan immediately had malicious intent.

Even if you had no intention to harm others, they might still want to harm you.

Fang Yuan was somewhat moved.

His current strength was already among the best below rank eight. When he activated reverse flow protection seal, although his offensive methods were still weaker, he could stand toe to toe with Feng Jiu Ge.

“I need to first check Lun Fei’s background and see if I can make a move against him or not.”

“If I can, Wu Yi Hai’s identity must not be implicated!”

With Wu Yi Hai’s identity, Fang Yuan definitely could not brazenly kill Lun Fei. Because he was a righteous path Gu Immortal Gu, and could not adopt demonic path methods.

A super force had much more robust strength than a lone immortal, but these forces usually did not lightly offend any Gu Immortal.

The same went for Wu clan.

A super force had huge assets and businesses, if a Gu Immortal could not be killed and escaped, they could destroy many resources of the super force and be a huge headache to the super force.

Wu Yong had this consideration as well when he accepted Fang Yuan’s idea of giving some concessions to Mountain Moving Old Monster in regards to Mount Snail.

“Hmm... it is better to probe and determine the value of Lun Fei’s inheritance. If it is not high, forget it.”

“If the value is high and I am to make a move, I need to be absolutely careful to not let his soul self-detonate.”

There was no need to think about Immortal Gu, they could not be obtained.

But Fang Yuan could kill Lun Fei and capture his soul, to obtain the food path inheritance by soul searching.

Fang Yuan had always held food path inheritances in high expectations.

Unfortunately, due to a lack of fortuitous encounters, he could do nothing about it.

Since there were no fortuitous encounters, then he had to make a move himself and rob others.

Fang Yuan did not have any feeling of guilt!

Many Gu Immortals were particular about not attacking others if others did not attack them.

However, Fang Yuan was someone who, even if others did not attack him, would go attack them.

“I brewed this tea over seven days and seven nights, fairy, now being able to receive your praise, it was all worth it.” Lun Fei’s tone was slightly shaking with excitement.

He then looked at Fang Yuan and said with a hint of challenge: “I wonder what tea Lord Wu Yi Hai is going to show us?”

He had not even the slightest idea that Fang Yuan was already brewing thoughts of killing him.

“Eastern Sea is the most plentiful region in terms of resources. Wu Yi Hai has lived in Eastern Sea for many years, any tea he brings out will definitely surpass others and be the top tea.” Luo Mu Zi sat back and spoke with enthusiasm.

Fang Yuan smiled.

These two were Qiao Si Liu’s pursuers, after realizing Fang Yuan’s ‘threat’, they had tacitly allied to put Fang Yuan in an awkward situation.

They praised Fang Yuan highly, making it difficult for him to refuse their request.

Qiao Si Liu slightly frowned.

Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei’s thoughts were slightly devious. If Wu Yi Hai could not showcase such a tea, the situation would be awkward. Even if he could, his reputation would suffer.

The reason?

Because this event was hosted by Qiao Si Liu. Qiao clan’s bewitching tea was the main tea, while other Gu Immortals’ teas were supplementary.

The guests should not overshadow the host, this was an unwritten rule of the moon festival. Qiao clan might not care about it, but Wu Yi Hai’s reputation would suffer.

The righteous path was very concerned about reputation!

Fang Yuan, however, had no hesitation.

He directly took out five cups of tea and indicated to the others: “Please enjoy.”

Fairy Tian Lu’s eyes brightened, being the first to pick up a cup: “I am very curious as to what Lord Wu Yi Hai’s tea is like?”

But the first person to drink the tea was not her, but Lun Fei.

He looked somewhat hurried.

This was the best opportunity to knock down his rival, as a food path Gu Immortal, he was proficient in this aspect, how could he not take this opportunity?

But with just one sip, he immediately frowned and spat it out: “Pshaw, what rotten tea is this?”

“Awful, too awful.” Luo Mu Zi also took a sip before placing the cup down: “This is the most revolting tea I have ever had in my life, it might even be worse than mortal tea.”

His tone was extremely impolite, with no hint of respect towards a rival.

The two had firmly grasped the opportunity to attack Fang Yuan’s reputation.

Fairy Tian Lu wanted to help mediate the situation, but after drinking it, she gave a helpless smile: “This tea is salty and bitter, it is like seawater.”

Fang Yuan smiled and unexpectedly admitted: “It is seawater.”

“What?”

“You actually brought seawater? Are you trying to shame Fairy Si Liu!”

Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei quickly sent verbal attacks.

The smile on Fang Yuan’s face disappeared, replaced by solemness: “I don’t like to drink tea, if I had to choose, this seawater would be my tea.”

“You do not understand.”

“I lived the life of a secluded cultivator in Eastern Sea, an orphan with no one to rely on and with calamities and tribulations pressuring me at all times.”

“Every day, I would wake up early and scoop a bowl of salty seawater to drink, this was to remind myself to not slack and continue persevering.”

The pavilion immediately fell into silence.

Qiao Si Liu slowly lifted her cup amidst this silence and took a sip, before slowly putting the cup down.

She smiled, her rosy lips and white teeth seemed brighter than the beautiful moonlight: “This is the most special tea I have had in my life, thank you, Yi Hai. This tea is good, I am truly moved.”

Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei fell into silence seeing that the person they loved had responded like this.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1318: Story of the Moon Festival

“Are you kidding me! My nine recollecting fragrances cannot even compare to a cup of seawater?” Luo Mu Zi roared inwardly, while maintaining his calm appearance on the surface.

“Damn! This Wu Yi Hai is playing tricks and pulled a fast one, we are offering tea, yet he offers seawater? He is too shameless! Fairy Si Liu even approved of him, this is too infuriating!” Veins started to bulge in Lun Fei’s clenched fists below the table.

Fairy Tian Lu quickly calmed the situation: “The moon is high in the sky, since we have already drunk tea, if there are no poems to accompany this festival, it would not be complete.”

Fang Yuan pretended to not understand: “Are we really going to recite poems?”

He looked like he had heard it for the first time.

Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei’s eyes immediately brightened. This was another opportunity!

Another opportunity to knock down their rival.

“You managed to get away with it the previous time, duping your way through. This time, I am going to push you down from the limelight, then fiercely step on you a couple times.”

Luo Mu Zi’s mind was revolving around this thought, but on the surface, he was still wearing a smile and had a graceful demeanor.

The same went for Lun Fei, having similar thoughts.

However, they did not know what kind of person Fang Yuan was.

Competing in poetry?!

Heavens!

This was worse than showing off in front of an expert.

Fang Yuan came from Earth, he had a large stockpile of traditional poems in his head, including those renowned works as well as earthshaking masterpieces. He could easily use one of them and these two would be unable to save face.

“Yes, we are going to recite poems, there is a story behind this.” Qiao Si Liu answered Fang Yuan.

“Oh? Please explain.” Fang Yuan continued to ask.

“This is a story that has been passed down in Southern Border, and is also the origin of the moon festival.” Qiao Si Liu said with eloquence.

Once upon a time, at a certain village in Southern Border.

A young man fell in love with an old Gu Master’s daughter, and this Gu Master’s daughter also was in love with this mortal youth.

The youth mustered up his courage to propose the marriage, but he was met with the old Gu Master’s rejection.

“You are only a mortal, while my daughter is a Gu Master with a bright future, how could you be worthy of my daughter? Get lost!”

The young man implored and begged, but the old Gu Master sneered: “You are daydreaming, thinking I will let my daughter marry you! You, a mere mortal who cannot even brew tea? What use do you have?”

The youth replied: “Isn’t it just tea? What is so difficult about it, if I brew it, will you marry your daughter to me?”

The old Gu Master felt a headache.

He knew his daughter loved this youth deeply, forcefully breaking them up would only make his daughter hate him.

“If you can make a cup of tea that meets my expectations, I will give you a chance.”

The youth was joyous and agreed immediately: “Sir, I will definitely make it.”

The Gu Master daughter was extremely worried when she heard about this: “My family is reputed for our famous tea, and you have to make a tea which can satisfy my father. You are only a mortal with no Gu Master abilities, how can you brew a good tea?”

The young man, however, replied: “Don’t worry. Who says mortals cannot brew tea? Let me tell you three principles.”

“The first principle: the law of the jungle, big fish eats small fish, and small fish eats shrimps.”

Saying that, the young man walked to a stream and hooked a big fish, he cut the fish, retrieving a small fish inside, he then cut the small fish, and took out a shrimp from the inside.

“The second principle: humans need to eat and also need to defecate.”

The young man then ate the shrimp and pooped out a pile of faeces.

“The third principle: faeces can nourish vegetation to grow better.”

The young man buried his faeces under the soil, and sure enough, flowers and plants started to flourish and grow.

The young man plucked a kind of flower from among them and soaked it in the stream, the entire small stream turned into tea.

The old Gu Master could not speak for a long while after he took a sip of this tea.

His daughter said, “Father, you are not thinking of reneging on your promise, right?”

Only then did the old Gu Master nod reluctantly: “Boy, you have passed the first test. But it is still impossible for you, a mortal, to marry my daughter. You are too crude and lack talent, you cannot recite poems.”

The youth scratched his head and spoke worriedly: “Although I have not recited poems before, I can give it a try.”

The old Gu Master scoffed: “You?”

The youth asked back: “Why can’t I?”

“Boy, reciting poems is not just casually chanting a few phrases. We Gu Masters can cause heaven and earth to change by reciting poems, we can make humans dance with joy. Can you do that?”

The youth said in a low tone: “How would I know if I don’t give it a try?”

“Alright, then try, don’t say I didn’t give you a chance. If you fail, then you need to leave and never see my daughter again.”

The youth had no choice but to agree, he began to pace around, thinking of a poem to recite.

But he had never recited a poem before, he had no clue how to start.

At this moment, he saw the ants on the ground, he saw the birds and the setting sun outside the window. Suddenly, he patted his head.

He began to recite: “Sparrows fly low and snakes slither around, ants move their homes as it rains down.”

Southern Border had many rainy days, and it was currently springtime as well.

The youth had just finished speaking, when light rain began to appear in the sky.

The old Gu Master’s expression changed.

The youth continued: “A drop of spring rain resembles a drop of oil, too much of it sends us into turmoil.”

The rain got heavier and the sky turned dark.

The old Gu Master’s expression was slightly unsightly.

The youth grabbed his head and scratched his cheek: “Elm trees droop as farming commences, hair falls as seeds scatter.”

At this point, the youth was stuck and for the life of him, he could not recite the final line.

“I will give you some more time.” The old Gu Master sneered.

The youth’s eyes brightened as he pointed at the old Gu Master and said: “Lord took away all the grains, our hungry stomachs are all in pain.”

The old Gu Master immediately stomped his foot in anger and stood up, breaking the teacup in his hand.

Then, he pointed at the young man and shouted: “A mere mortal dares to be so audacious!”

But his daughter laughed and clapped: “Amazing, this song changed heaven and earth, and even made father dance.”

The old Gu Master was furious at seeing his daughter side with her boyfriend, but was unable to retort.

“Good, good, good, consider that you have passed the second test, but there is still the final one. You want to marry my daughter, what about the betrothal gift? Can you take out a betrothal gift that can satisfy me?”

The youth lowered his head dejectedly, he lived in a thatched cottage, slept on a straw mat and only had one set of patched clothes.

“I will use all my assets as the betrothal gift.” The youth spoke in a serious tone.

“Let me see them!” The old Gu Master said.

The young man brought the old Gu Master to his residence, to that old thatched cottage.

He then said: “These are all my assets.”

“This old hut with holes everywhere?” The old Gu Master pointed with disdain.

“This straw mat that is about to break?” The old Gu Master threw the straw mat.

“These rocks used as stools?” The old Gu Master kicked the rocks and broke them.

The youth lowered his head.

Every sentence the old Gu Master said made the young man’s head lower further down.

When the old Gu Master said his third sentence, the youth’s head had almost hung down to his chest.

But right at this time, from a rock the old Gu Master has kicked open, a beautiful Gu worm that looked like the moon flew out leisurely, shining brightly.

The old Gu Master was stunned.

The youth was also stunned, he had picked up this rock casually from the base of the mountain.

The old Gu Master’s daughter cried out happily: “This Gu worm is definitely enough as the betrothal gift, right?”

The old Gu Master was unable to retort, he could not say anything and finally, he could only rub his nose and marry his daughter to this mortal lad.

Fang Yuan had already heard of this story before, it was indeed interesting.

The story portrayed a conflict between a mortal and a Gu Master, and actually ended up with the mortal’s victory.

The youth had braved through the three hurdles, finally getting together with the beauty, who was also a Gu Master. The old Gu Master had not used strength from start to finish, this did not conform to logic. It, however, showed a lowly mortal’s thirst towards a better life, as well as pursuing happiness.

Qiao Si Liu narrated the story to Fang Yuan, conveniently explaining the customs of the moon festival as well.

Why it was that during the moon festival, the people in Southern Border, be they Gu Immortals or mortals, would make tea, recite poems and dissect rocks.

Naturally, the tea brewing of mortals was done with ordinary tea leaves, and as for dissecting rocks, it was replaced by breaking pebbles as a way of receiving auspicious blessings.

“This is quite an interesting story, thank you, Fairy Si Liu, for answering my doubts.” Fang Yuan said, politely.

Qiao Si Liu smiled: “Why are you so polite, you can just call me Si Liu.”

“Huh?!” Luo Mu Zi’s eyes opened wide.

Qiao Si Liu’s attitude towards Wu Yi Hai was completely different from how she treated the two of them.

“We have had tea already, now let us recite poems.” Lun Fei said, his gaze towards Fang Yuan flashed with some coldness and his tone had also turned somewhat icier.

Qiao Si Liu’s beautiful eyes turned towards Lun Fei: “Lun Fei, you are already eager, I am very interested to listen to your masterpiece.”

Lun Fei laughed happily, the coldness on his face completely dissipated as he replied: “Then let me recite my simple work.”

He stood up and slowly walked outside the pavilion as he recited –

Stepping into society as an ignorant youngster,

Step by step I walk by myself.

But tonight I do not drink alone,

Because my dream beauty is here under the moon.

Lun Fei, in his blue robe and with fair appearance, recited slowly.

The first two lines described his cultivation experiences, hinting at his lonely journey.

The last two lines described the current situation, especially the last line, it was an implicit confession.

He had walked out of the pavilion, and after his recital, he returned inside, gazing deeply at Qiao Si Liu.

Qiao Si Liu sensed the passion in his eyes and quickly turned around to look at Fang Yuan.

However, Fang Yuan neither looked at her nor showed hostility towards Lun Fei, he was just quietly drinking tea.

A trace of disappointment flashed past Qiao Si Liu’s eyes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1319: Poem Competition

“Good poem, good poem.” Fairy Tian Lu laughed charmingly: “Especially the last line, my dream beauty is here under the moon, it was truly beautiful. I think it is definitely talking about me, hehe.”

She improvised a humorous remark, easing the atmosphere in the pavilion.

Lun Fei gave a helpless and bitter smile, sitting down again: “Please don’t mind my crude creation, it is hardly presentable.”

“Lun Fei, you are too modest, I have a poem as well.” Luo Mu Zi said.

“Oh? We would love to hear it.” Qiao Si Liu smiled, looking at Luo Mu Zi with anticipation.

Luo Mu Zi turned silent for a moment before slowly reciting.

Climbed mountains to seek immortality,

Danger present in every step.

Dust specks float like light,

Dark Gu lurk in heart.

A dream like golden jade,

Thousands of years of loneliness.

Five regions and nine heavens,

Everything is in one breath.

The concept and imagination in this poem with five words in each line immediately moved the Gu Immortals.

They carefully savored it.

Climbed mountains to seek immortality, referred to a Gu Immortal’s cultivation.

Danger present in every step, Gu Immortals needed to deal with calamities and tribulations in their cultivation, devoting all their effort in managing their immortal aperture. It was like climbing a mountain, the higher they reached, the more dangerous it became.

Dust specks float like light, the meaning was that time was always passing by, and in the mortal world, dust gathered on people and people were like floating dust.

Dark Gu lurk in heart, on the surface, it referred to Gu Immortals storing Immortal Gu and mortal Gu in their immortal apertures. But the Gu Immortals present had deep background in literature, they could already savor the deeper meaning.

Dark Gu referred to darkness, setbacks, failures, compromises, disappointments, and other negative feelings.

Mortals thought immortals had good lives, but immortals faced difficulties they did not know. Just look at the living beings in the world, who was truly free and unfettered?

Gu Immortals endured huge pressure in their cultivation, it was unavoidable for them to have negative feelings, even Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables were not an exception.

Climbed mountains to seek immortality, danger present in every step. Dust specks float like light, dark Gu lurk in heart. These phrases were brief but contained profound meaning, which when carefully considered, resonated greatly with Gu Immortals.

The lines after this, ‘a dream like golden jade, thousands of years of loneliness’; it referred to gold and jade, all kinds of wealth, being superficial objects and just like dreams. As time passes, love, hatred, and all feelings disappear. It showed how the poet looked indifferently at the changes in the world, that their mind was free from mortal emotions.

The final phrase ‘five regions and nine heavens, everything is in one breath’ was filled with vigor and majesty, sweeping away the gloominess and heaviness from the previous lines. There were several other meanings to it, as long as humans had one breath left in them they were living, when they lose this breath, they would die. People strived and fought for that one breath. Using the world as an analogy, Gu Immortal cultivation was just like the pillars holding up the five regions and nine heavens, everyone was just working hard to support themselves.

The entire poem was slow at first before it became faster in momentum, creating a majestic scene that filled the listeners with admiration.

For a moment, the pavilion was filled with silence, the immortals quietly ruminating over this poem.

Qiao Si Liu thought to herself: “Strange, from my understanding of Luo Mu Zi, how could he create such a poem with his nature? He probably stole someone else’s work, hmm, he also did not say it was his creation.”

She sized up Luo Mu Zi.

Luo Mu Zi looked calm on the surface, sitting upright as he quietly drank his tea, but the smile on his lips gave away his inner feelings.

Qiao Si Liu inwardly smiled, but did not expose him.

She then turned her sight towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s expression was unexpectedly strange!

“This is Qi Jue’s Five Words Poem? How is it possible! Didn’t Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s grotto-heaven only appear when dream realms flourished in the five regions chaotic war?”

‘Strange! Strange! Strange!’

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was a great expert from the Olden Antiquity Era, a rank eight Gu Immortal with immense battle strength who had once fought Limitless Demon Venerable three times, the results were a win, a draw, and a loss.

Naturally, the first two battles were when Limitless Demon Venerable had yet to advance to rank nine.

And, in the final battle, Limitless Demon Venerable had advanced to rank nine, surpassing Demon Immortal Qi Jue. But the battle had still lasted for nine days and nine nights, before the latter was defeated. However, Limitless Demon Venerable did not kill Demon Immortal Qi Jue and let him go.

Limitless Demon Venerable had said this at the time: “You were my biggest enemy, but without you, I would not have trained so desperately. You also had a hand in pushing me towards my current cultivation level.”

Having received the recognition and praise of a grand Demon Venerable, Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s name was marked in history.

The grotto-heaven left after his death had lasted until the present.

In Fang Yuan’s first life, dream realms manifested one after another during the five regions chaotic war, regional walls disappeared and the five regions turned into one. Such a huge change created a turbulence in heaven and earth qi, exposing many hidden blessed lands and grotto-heavens to the outside world.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s grotto heaven was revealed in such a situation.

Undoubtedly, the moment it appeared, it caused an uproar in the five regions.

“That shouldn’t be.”

“Simple logic is that Qi Jue’s Five Words Poem was engraved in Qi Jue grotto heaven. How did Luo Mu Zi know of it at this time?”

‘Could it be, he has already entered Qi Jue grotto heaven?!’

Fang Yuan’s thoughts became somewhat chaotic for a moment.

Qi Jue grotto heaven contained the Demon Immortal’s true inheritance. This Demon Immortal was on the same level as Sword Immortal Bo Qing, even Hei Fan paled in comparison to him!

“If I could obtain this true inheritance...”

“Will I obtain Qi Jue’s true inheritance by killing this Luo Mu Zi?”

Intense killing intent rose in Fang Yuan’s mind once again.

Without knowing Fang Yuan’s thoughts, Luo Mu Zi gave a challenging glance to Fang Yuan: “I wonder what great work Wu Yi Hai has? We are really looking forward to it.”

“That is natural.” Lun Fei quickly chipped in: “Lord Wu Yi Hai’s origin is not ordinary, he has plenty of experiences and what’s more, Eastern Sea is very rich in resources. I can’t compare to the scholarly attainment of Wu Yi Hai.”

These two praised Fang Yuan with pleasant words, but their thoughts were anything but good.

Qiao Si Liu was well aware of it, at this moment, she did not protect Fang Yuan but stared at Fang Yuan and encouraged him: “I also really want to listen to your poem, I am sure it will definitely be interesting and special.”

“Yes, yes.” Fairy Tian Lu quickly agreed.

For a moment, Fang Yuan was pressured by everyone, he rubbed his nose and gave a forced smile: “Friends, you are all overestimating me, how could I have poems, I don’t know how to make any.”

“Wu Yi Hai, you are modest! Too modest!” Luo Mu Zi laughed.

Fang Yuan shrugged: “I am telling the truth, I did not even know we would have to recite poems to appreciate the moon.”

“Since that is the case, Wu Yi Hai, why don’t you make one right now, it should be a wonderful work, don’t worry if it takes a bit of time, we are all willing to wait.” Lun Fei said, not letting Fang Yuan off.

Fang Yuan heaved a deep sigh.

Of course, he had a lot of poems in his head.

There was many poems praised since ancient times from Earth, he could casually copy any of those famous stanzas, it would be enough for this occasion and resolve the difficulties from these Gu Immortals.

But...

But so what?

Fang Yuan gazed around.

Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei loved Qiao Si Liu, they naturally considered Fang Yuan an eyesore, both had come to a tacit agreement to work together and knock down their rival. What good would it do for him to contend with such losers?

Fairy Tian Lu was Qiao Si Liu’s best friend and was indeed working hard, helping Qiao Si Liu wholeheartedly. As for her lover, he did not speak much and was silent most of the time, quietly drinking tea from the side, this showed how astute he was.

As for Qiao Si Liu...

This fairy had both appearance and background, and was one of the three great beauties of Southern Border, she naturally had her pride.

Qiao clan might have ordered her to approach Fang Yuan, but she had her own methods.

She had thought meticulously in hosting this moon festival today. She had thought out everything, not only taking care of small details like seating order, she had also brought her best friend to help her, and an even more brilliant move was that she had invited Lun Fei and Luo Mu Zi to take part in the event.

When two men compete with each other over a girl, even if she was a pig, they would think she is awesome. Only when one wins and the other is out of the competition, and when the victor looks at this pig, he will then realize: oh, this was a pig after all!

This was rather exaggerated, but the logic was similar.

When a competitor appears, it would make the girl who is being pursued seem even more precious and more valuable.

Qiao Si Liu was well aware of this logic, so she made this arrangement to evoke Fang Yuan’s thoughts and make him take the initiative to pursue her, then she could conveniently agree and hook Fang Yuan in.

If it were the real Wu Yi Hai, perhaps he might have already fallen into the planning of beauty.

Unfortunately, the one she was facing was Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan remained unmoved the whole time because he knew the relation between Wu clan and Qiao clan, and also the scheme of Qiao clan’s higher-ups.

With this understanding, Fang Yuan was in a strategically superior and stable position, while Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei were no more than roadside clowns.

When Fang Yuan sized up the Gu Immortals in the pavilion, the Gu Immortals were also focusing their gazes on him.

There was silence in the pavilion, this silence was no doubt a kind of pressure.

“Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei want to embarrass me. Qiao Si Liu also wants me to accept the challenge, hmm....maybe she is feeling a little upset. After all, for such a beauty, the seawater was too rude. As for Fairy Tian Lu, she is completely on Qiao Si Liu’s side, and is nothing to worry about...”

Fang Yuan thought of all this, smiling inwardly as he said: “Then let me recite one, don’t laugh at me.”

“We are all ears!”

“We are looking forward to it!”

Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei were all smiles.

At the next moment, the immortals heard Fang Yuan’s poem —

“Oh great sea, you are made of water.”

“Oh horse, you have four legs.”

“Oh beauty, you have large eyes and a mouth!”

The poem ended.

The entire pavilion was silent!

Everyone’s expression seemed to have stiffened.

Even Qiao Si Liu and Fairy Tian Lu were no exception.

“This, this, this... what the f*ck!”

“This is a poem? This is rubbish!!”

“This Wu Yi Hai is an utter boor.”

“What nonsense is this? Appreciating the moon and reciting poems, it was an elegant event, now it is completely ruined!”

The Gu Immortals were unanimously screaming internally.

Fang Yuan was all smiles as he looked at Qiao Si Liu: “I wonder if Fairy Si Liu is satisfied?”

“Satisfied? Screw you!”

“You still have the nerves to ask this question? You are simply too outrageous!!”

Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei roared inwardly, but being mindful of their bearing, they showed nothing on the surface. The pavilion was still a scene of silence.

“Heh... hehe...” Qiao Si Liu laughed, even though it sounded very forced: “This poem is really special, to tell the truth, I... I have never heard such a poem. It is indeed worthy of being your creation... now that I carefully consider it, it is actually quite funny.”

Luo Mu Zi:”...”

Lun Fei:”...”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1320: Please ‘Evaluate’

Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei were utterly speechless.

They wanted to criticize Fang Yuan, but Qiao Si Liu had made such a remark, if they criticized now, would they not be embarrassing Qiao Si Liu?

Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei felt like they had swallowed a housefly but were unable to spit it out, it was unbearable.

Fang Yuan was laughing on the inside as he gazed around.

Qiao Si Liu was forcefully maintaining her smile, while Fairy Tian Lu gazed at her concernedly, her gaze seemingly containing some sympathetic feeling. As Qiao Si Liu’s best friend, how could Fairy Tian Lu not know of her intention? It was just that Fang Yuan did not take the bait at all, making them be unable to do anything.

As for Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei, they had such stiff expressions that it was quite funny.

Fang Yuan looked at these two: “How was it? My poem was not bad, right?”

“Not bad?!”

Luo Mu Zi’s and Lun Fei’s eyes immediately opened wide as they looked at Fang Yuan, seemingly wanting to see how shameless this person could possibly get.

But immediately afterwards, they heard Fang Yuan speak: “Although I had a flash of inspiration, it seems a true masterpiece poem is also created like this. Si Liu really approves of my poem, but I still would like to hear your constructive feedback.”

“Constructive feedback? This dogshit thing can be considered a poem? You want feedback?!”

“Si Liu, Si Liu... why are you speaking of her so closely? You scumbag, hey! Who let you address her so intimately!”

Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei were madly raving inside their minds.

But they could not lose their temper, they had to evaluate it and give good remarks just like Qiao Si Liu’s words so that they would not embarrass her.

This disgusted them even more than eating a housefly.

Fang Yuan was clearly their rival in love and it was also garbage that could not be considered a poem, but Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei still needed to ‘evaluate’ it and give nice comments!

“This poem, ah... it is clear, easy to understand... and easy to read...” Luo Mu Zi stammered, his expression was becoming increasingly unsightly and he felt like he was going to vomit!

Fang Yuan nodded with a smile, then turned towards Lun Fei: “What do you think?”

Lun Fei saw Fang Yuan staring at him, the corners of his lips were raised slightly in a smile and seemed to be twitching, he insipidly remarked: “This is a good poem.”

Fang Yuan’s eyebrows rose, how could he let this person off so easily, he pursued: “What is so good about it?”

Lun Fei was furious, his face flushed red with anger as he screamed internally: “How would I know what’s good about it? There is nothing good about it! You created this garbage and still want to be praised! You scumbag!!”

Looking at Fang Yuan’s smiling expression, Lun Fei had an intense urge to smash the teacup on Fang Yuan’s face.

It would really appease his anger!

But he could not do that.

Qiao Si Liu was right beside them, if Lun Fei did that, what would happen to Qiao Si Liu’s face? Wouldn’t he embarrass this fairy?

Moreover, he was not like Luo Mu Zi, he was a lone immortal. By contrast, Wu Yi Hai had a noble status, he was in Wu clan, and was the younger brother of Wu Yong!

Lun Fei could only restrain his anger as he racked his brains to think of words for ‘evaluating’ Fang Yuan’s ‘poem’.

“I am really pleased with this moon appreciation festival, never had I thought I am talented in composing poems.” Fang Yuan smiled at Qiao Si Liu, his gaze full of deep meaning.

Qiao Si Liu’s mind shook slightly as she smiled: “Next is rock dissecting, maybe you will have a huge harvest.”

“Indeed, indeed. I am also most expectant towards this event, let us dissect rocks.” Fairy Tian Lu quickly helped to change the subject.

“I have prepared a huge amount of rocks here for everyone to choose. Please.” Qiao Si Liu naturally had come prepared, with Qiao clan as her background, gathering some rocks was of course not a troubling matter.

The mood in the pavilion eased.

Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei also let out sighs of relief, at least they no longer needed to praise Fang Yuan’s poem against their own will.

The rocks prepared by Qiao Si Liu were of all sizes, the Gu Immortals chose them one after the other and dissected them on the spot to see if there were any Gu worms inside.

As far as mortal Gu was concerned, it was very easy for Gu Immortals to get them.

As such, the atmosphere was relaxed, unlike the seriousness when Gu Masters dissected rocks.

Naturally, this only applied to mortal Gu, if Immortal Gu were involved, this rock dissecting activity would be given serious attention by Gu Immortals.

Gu Immortals had a lot of methods to check whether a rock had mortal Gu or not. However, in today’s event, they naturally would not use their methods to cheat and only relied on their insight and luck.

As for rocks that had Immortal Gu, they could only be found by chance and not through seeking, the investigative methods of Gu Immortals were deficient and without options in regard to such rocks.

Trying to get an Immortal Gu in tonight’s event would be wishful thinking and unrealistic.

No one present had such expectations as this was only meant to be an entertaining event.

It was just that this entertainment held different meaning to Luo Mu Zi and Lun

Fei compared to the past.

They were secretly contending with Fang Yuan, but the result was they were almost at the verge of coughing out blood, Fang Yuan’s rock dissecting results had maintained first place from start to finish.

Rock dissecting relied on the Gu Master’s discerning eye, Fang Yuan naturally did not lack in this aspect, he had even started his own rock gambling den in his first life.

As for luck, was Fang Yuan’s luck bad?

Not to mention he had connected his luck with several other lucky people, he himself had dogshit luck Immortal Gu to help him.

However, although Fang Yuan obtained victory, it was a rather close one. He maintained superiority from the start, but this superiority was not obvious at times.

The one who exerted such strong pressure on him was Luo Mu Zi.

This person was not a lone immortal, he came from one of Southern Border’s super forces — Luo clan.

His insight was very sharp, and most importantly, his luck was quite good, his results were only slightly inferior to Fang Yuan.

“Looks like his luck is quite good.”

“Otherwise, he would not have known about Qi Jue’s Five Words Poem, isn’t that right...”

Fang Yuan thought to himself.

It would not be troubling for him to make a move against Lun Fei, but to target Luo Mu Zi, he had to worry about Luo clan.

Naturally, no matter what he decided to do, Wu Yi Hai’s identity absolutely could not be implicated.

By the time the moon appreciation festival ended, it was already deep into the night.

Everyone bid their farewells one after the other, the scene was quite lively.

“I will see you off.” Qiao Si Liu took the initiative to see Fang Yuan off.

Luo Mu Zi’s and Lun Fei’s eyes flushed red.

“Let’s go!” Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei were originally competitors and found one another an eyesore, but through the course of tonight’s event, they had instead reached a tacit agreement.

The four Gu Immortals left the pavilion successively, leaving behind Fairy Tian Lu and her lover.

“Sigh.” Fairy Tian Lu sighed: “Tonight’s moon appreciation festival was so tiring.”

“Nothing to be done about it.” Her lover also sighed, his gaze clear and bright.

Both held each other’s hands and smiled as they stepped on the clouds and left.

“This Wu Yi Hai is a complete boor. What in the world did he compose? Can that thing even be called a poem?!” Luo Mu Zi was burning with rage.

“But Fairy Si Liu actually has a completely different view of him!!” Lun Fei gritted his teeth.

“Hmph, what different view, his greatest worth is his identity.” Luo Mu Zi said in a slightly envious tone.

Lun Fei’s expression was malevolent: “I cannot take this lying down, I cannot let Wu Yi Hai continue living so happily!”

On their way, Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei conversed heatedly.

“Oh? What idea do you have? Wu clan might be facing difficulties from all sides and they might lack the initiative, but they still have the ability to maintain their status. If you want to make a move against Wu Yi Hai, you will have to consider Wu clan. Whether it be publicly or privately, Wu Yong will stand behind Wu Yi Hai. We need to take this relationship properly into account.” Luo Mu Zi spoke, he was a righteous path Gu Immortal and was aware of the difficulty here.

If they overestimated their relationship, they would not be able to cause any harm to Wu Yi Hai. But if they underestimated it, who would be able to bear Wu clan’s retribution?

Lun Fei curled his lips as he thought: Righteous path Gu Immortals have to worry about everything. On the other hand, the demonic path can directly take action.

However, Lun Fei was not a demonic cultivator, he was a lone cultivator who was more inclined towards the righteous path.

Lun Fei sneered as a sinister light flashed in his eyes: “We don’t need to personally make a move. Fairy Si Liu has a lot of pursuers, not just us two. We can inform that person, he will definitely be furious because Fairy Si Liu did not invite him this time.”

“You are talking about that guy from Chi clan?” Luo Mu Zi’s expression became slightly complex.

That Gu Immortal from Chi clan was the biggest pursuer of Qiao Si Liu. Before tonight, Luo Mu Zi greatly loathed him. But now, he was about to make use of his strength to teach a lesson to Wu Yi Hai.

“Although Wu Yi Hai won against Xia Fei Kuai, it was because he relied on his knowledge of the enemy. If he was strong, why would he have to discuss any conditions with that Mountain Moving Old Monster, he could have directly seized back Mount Snail. That guy from Chi clan is definitely stronger than Wu Yi Hai, moreover, he hates it when others have any desire towards Fairy Si Liu.” Lun Fei continued.

Luo Mu Zi’s gaze became resolute: “Alright, we will inform Chi Shang of today’s matter!”

Qiao Si Liu accompanied Fang Yuan for a distance before she bid a reluctant farewell to Fang Yuan.

But she did not directly return to Qiao clan’s headquarters, instead returning to the pavilion.

Inside the pavilion, there was a Gu Immortal sitting on a rock chair and quietly drinking bewitching tea.

This person was Qiao clan’s first supreme elder.

The crucial character who had helped Fang Yuan return to Wu clan previously!

Qiao clan’s first supreme elder slowly put down the teacup: “Although Wu Yi Hai grew up in Eastern Sea, he is after all Wu Du Xiu’s son. So what do you think?”

Qiao Si Liu’s gaze was slightly dim as she softly said: “I agree.”

Fang Yuan targeted Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei, forcing them to say his poem was good, but in fact it was an indirect attack on Qiao Si Liu.

Qiao Si Liu was well aware that this was the way of a righteous path confrontation, it was all smiles and jovial on the surface, but was actually a maelstrom of dark undercurrents.

Qiao clan’s first supreme elder sighed: “Our Qiao clan has all along been allies with Wu clan, but we have never been able to penetrate deep into their core. For the sake of Qiao clan, Wu Yi Hai is a huge opportunity, do you understand?”

Qiao Si Liu bit her lips, her gaze containing reluctance, but she still nodded in the end: “I understand.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1321: Can Be Used, But Unreliable

The moon festival passed, but Fang Yuan was still moving about outside.

He took the initiative to get close to Qiao Si Liu, although the latter was angry at his attitude during the moon festival, due to her clan’s orders, she was unable to refuse Fang Yuan.

Gradually, rumors began to spread —

Wu clan’s Wu Yi Hai and Qiao clan’s Qiao Si Liu were very close and often made trips to scenic spots.

Whether it be Wu Yi Hai, Wu Yong’s brother, or Qiao Si Liu, one of the three great fairies of Southern Border, they were no doubt famous people in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world.

Their actions soon led to rumors.

While Qiao Si Liu’s pursuers were indignant, they had to admit Wu Yi Hai was an extremely strong rival. Regardless of everything else, just based on Wu clan’s and Qiao clan’s relations, Wu Yi Hai had an enormous advantage.

Fang Yuan was slightly helpless regarding this.

He actually did not want to become famous, it was better to keep Wu Yi Hai’s identity low profile.

A pity that the circumstances went against his wishes, because of Qiao Si Liu, Fang Yuan’s fame soared in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world!

This situation soon influenced Fang Yuan.

The number of times someone tried to deduce him, which had just showed signs of decreasing, rose rapidly and even became frequent.

It was very difficult to deal with this situation with just dark limit Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan had to often place his aperture down and hide inside his sovereign blessed land.

The immortal aperture was an independent world, isolated from the outside, as long as Fang Yuan did not reveal crucial clues, deductions would become extremely difficult.

Unless someone had clues like those from ‘Connect Luck’, or had information that could deduce his specific location.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan himself could make use of frequently placing down his aperture in absorbing heaven and earth qi. With the addition of Reverse Flow River, the consumption of heaven and earth qi was truly huge.

Besides placing his aperture, Fang Yuan had to handle Qiao Si Liu while also using Wu clan’s channels to get information about Luo Mu Zi and Lun Fei.

It was still not the time for him to make a move.

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated.

Gu Immortals had endless mysterious methods. With just slight carelessness, one could fail miserably in carrying out a task.

For example, Fang Yuan had actually been able to resist the offense of rank eight Gu Immortals with Reverse Flow River. Before the battle in Snowy Mountain, who could have imagined such a result?

Fang Yuan was cautious, even if he had a plan to take Luo Mu Zi’s and Lun Fei’s lives, he would only start on the plan after sufficiently understanding their details.

Afterwards, he would accumulate strength, so that when there was an opportunity, he would immediately deal the fatal strike!

Only then would the risks be the lowest, and it would best suit his interests.

Lions used all their strength even when hunting rabbits, let alone Lun Fei and Luo Mu Zi, whom were not weak themselves.

Half a month passed like this, on this day, Wu Yong summoned Fang Yuan.

“Brother, I have few tasks here, choose one of them.” Wu Yong said without beating around the bush.

“Brother, please tell me, it is my duty to contribute to the clan.” Fang Yuan calmly replied.

An information path mortal Gu flew out of Wu Yong’s sleeve, Fang Yuan took a glance and saw this Gu had three tasks recorded.

The first task was related to Xuan Ming Mountain.

Recently, someone discovered that in the depths of Xuan Ming Mountain, there seemed to be the aura of a wild Immortal Gu.

This information had already attracted many lone immortals to make a trip.

More importantly, Yang clan, a super force, had also mobilized its members.

If the information was true, they could obtain an Immortal Gu, which, to any super force, was a joyous matter of being able to increase their foundation, Wu clan naturally would not let go of such a good chance.

Currently, Wu clan’s situation was normal, neither good nor bad. Under Wu Yong’s command, the clan had already stabilized itself.

Moreover, Xuan Ming Mountain was near Wu clan’s territory, although not inside Wu clan’s territory, it bordered on it.

If Wu clan did not send its Gu Immortals for this, other super forces would probably think Wu clan had weakened.

As such, Wu Yong intentionally included: If they could not seize the wild Immortal Gu, they must destroy it and could not let it go to Yang clan.

The second task was that red dragon river’s water level was rising sharply recently, if it was not controlled, it was very likely to lead to a flood disaster.

If there was a flood, it would be of extreme threat to the nearby living beings. Resources would deplete and it could even change the surrounding environment.

The super forces near red dragon river were paying heavy attention to it.

A portion of red dragon river flowed past the territories of Qiao clan and Wu clan.

They had to send Gu Immortals to inspect the situation and attempt to control the situation to prevent a huge flood.

As for the third task, Yi clan’s second supreme elder was holding a banquet for his one thousand two hundredth birthday.

Wu clan needed to send a Gu Immortal to represent the clan in the banquet and deliver the birthday gift.

Yi clan was a powerful clan, its headquarters were in Lin Chi Mountain, which was located in the north-east corner of Southern Border and was the closest to Eastern Sea.

In fact, Yi clan had all sorts of close connections to Eastern Sea.

As for Wu clan, it was located in the southwest area of Southern Border, although it was not at the southwest corner, it was to the farthest south among all the super forces.

Such locations determined that the relation between Yi clan and Wu clan was always maintained at a good level.

Befriend the distant enemy and attack the near ones, this not only applied to the politics and diplomacy of super forces, it was a fundamental principle.

Even though many clans were creating difficulties for Wu clan, Yi clan had never participated in it. To preserve this layer of relation, Wu clan had to send a Gu Immortal to Yi clan second supreme elder’s banquet to give well-wishes.

“What do you think, have you decided?” After a while, Wu Yong asked.

Fang Yuan nodded: “I have thought it through, and I choose the second task. My battle strength is not high, choosing to go to Xuan Ming Mountain will probably result in fighting with Yang clan’s Gu Immortal, Yang clan is specialized in soul path while I do not excel in dealing with this path.”

“Then why not choose the third task?” Wu Yong smiled, “Actually, your status is the most suitable for this task, because you are my brother. You will be very warmly received in Yi clan.”

Fang Yuan shook his head, giving a bitter smile: “Brother, spare me. Although it is a birthday banquet, there will definitely be representatives from other super forces. With our Wu clan’s current situation, if I go to the banquet, the other Gu Immortals will definitely create difficulties for me. I won’t be able to deal with all of them, my own embarrassment is nothing, but more importantly, I would be losing face for Wu clan, that would be too big of a sin.”

Wu Yong laughed: “Since you have thought of everything, it will be improper for me to insist. Then let’s do it according to your decision.”

“Brother, if there aren’t other matters, I will bid farewell.”

“Go, go.” Wu Yong waved his hand.

Fang Yuan turned around, but when he reached the entrance, Wu Yong asked: “Ah, right, when are you going to set off?”

Fang Yuan turned around, standing close to the door: “If red dragon river overflows and turns into a calamity, it will definitely cause countless living beings to suffer. I would not dare to be slow on this important matter, I will simply pack up my things and leave shortly afterwards.”

“Good, I can rest at ease then. This matter shall be left to you, you must handle it properly.” Wu Yong seemed to be fully confident in Fang Yuan.

“I will certainly do my best!” Fang Yuan solemnly assured, then turned around and left.

However, he did not see that after he left, the smile and confidence in Wu Yong’s face slowly disappeared.

Replacing them was a shade of gloominess.

“Success.” Fang Yuan’s heart was shaking with joy, but he showed no expression on the surface. Just like he said to Wu Yong, he packed some things and immediately set off towards the north.

He was moving rapidly on his way, but when he had just flown across yellow dragon river, Gu Immortal Wu Fa called him to stop: “Lord Wu Yi Hai, please slow down, I have new orders from first supreme elder.”

Fang Yuan was laughing on the inside: “Here it comes.”

On the surface, however, he showed a surprised expression. He stopped in the air and asked the quickly arriving Wu Fa: “Elder Wu Fa, what’s the matter?”

“Oh!” Wu Fa heaved a deep sigh, his aged face filled with anxiety: “There is truth in the saying, when it rains, it pours, there has been an accident over on the super Gu formation’s end. Ba clan has been creating difficulties for our clan, Elder Wu Bei, who was stationed there, is injured and is unable to stabilize the situation. Lord, didn’t you want to be sent back there? The opportunity is here!”

“First supreme elder was mindful of this and decided to swap Elder Wu Bei with you, to let Elder Wu Bei return to recuperate his injuries. Lord Wu Yi Hai, you will be back in command over at the super Gu formation.”

Fang Yuan frowned deeply, looking like he was caught unprepared: “How could this happen? I still...”

As he said this, he seemed to subconsciously glance to the north-west, and said with hesitation: “But red dragon river’s issue is quite severe, it needs to be resolved quickly.”

“First supreme elder has already made proper arrangements for this matter, Lord Wu Yi Hai, you do not need to worry. Lord, you need to quickly go and stabilize the situation over there. This is a letter Gu that Lord Wu Yong has personally sent you, you can directly go to Yi Tian Mountain without returning to Wu clan.” Wu Fa handed an information path mortal Gu to Fang Yuan as he spoke.

Fang Yuan received the letter Gu and immediately scanned it with his consciousness.

The contents of the letter Gu were naturally Wu Yong’s voice, saying a serious situation had occurred on the giant dream realm’s end and required Fang Yuan to immediately move over there.

Fang Yuan gave a deep sigh: “Looks like I have no choice but to go.”

“Please make haste, Lord Wu Yi Hai.” Elder Wu Fa looked anxious.

Fang Yuan shook his head, glancing towards the north-west once more before he turned around and flew towards the north-east.

Elder Wu Fa kept on looking at Fang Yuan till he disappeared in the horizons.

He then sneered as he looked at the north-west. Everyone knew there was a mountain in the north-west, Da Peng Mountain, which was Qiao clan’s main headquarters.

Elder Wu Fa returned to Wu clan’s Wu Yi Mountain and reported to Wu Yong: “First supreme elder, the matter has been handled, Lord Wu Yi Hai is already moving towards the super Gu formation.”

Wu Yong was current in the study, he stood up straight, his hand holding a brush which made vigorous movements on a piece of paper.

He slightly nodded at Wu Fa, and suddenly stopped his actions.

There were five large words written on the paper: Can be used, but unreliable.

“A long time ago, when I was still young, mother asked me about my opinion of Qiao clan, I replied with these five words, I can still remember mother’s smile very clearly.” Wu Yong sighed: “It’s a pity my brother has not understood this.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1322: Restrictions of the Righteous Path

Southern Border, at the location of Yi Tian Mountain, in the super Gu formation.

“Wu An (Wu Liao) pays respects to Lord Wu Yi Hai.” Inside the super Gu formation, Wu clan’s Gu Immortals, Wu Liao and Wu An, greeted Fang Yuan respectfully.

Fang Yuan nodded: “Sit down and explain what happened. Elder Wu Bei actually suffered such heavy injuries?”

Wu Liao and Wu An glanced at each other; Wu Liao kept quiet, letting Wu An, who was good with words, report: “Lord, this is what happened...”

Originally, Ba clan was already eager to make a move against Wu clan, and after Wu clan was involved in all kinds of difficulties, the Gu Immortal leading Ba clan here, Old Treeman Ba De, made a move against Wu clan.

Ba De had already been scheming for a long time, and when he made the move, it was so shocking that it put Wu clan into a passive situation.

Wu clan naturally would not just sit still, Wu Bei set forth, but was schemed against by Ba De and had no choice but to have a spar with him.

The result of the spar was naturally Ba clan’s victory and Wu clan’s defeat.

“It is just that we did not expect Lord Wu Bei’s injuries to be so severe. Although Lord Wu Bei lost in the spar, he still had a fearsome air.”

“Yes, although he lost to Ba De, Lord Wu Bei was still able to engage in the secret discussion with Qiao clan’s and other clan’s Gu Immortals. We all thought his injuries were not serious.”

When Wu An finished speaking, Wu Liao added in a couple of sentences.

Fang Yuan sneered inwardly, but had a concerned expression on the surface: “I understand the situation, Wu Bei has left and I am here now, everything will be like before, I won’t move if the enemy doesn’t move.”

“Yes, lord.” Wu Liao and Wu An immediately responded.

They were not surprised at such a command.

As far as others were concerned, how could Wu Yi Hai’s battle strength compare to Ba De’s?

Although Wu Yi Hai had recently gained some limelight, his victory against Xia Fei Kuai was only in a spar, furthermore, the rules were decided by him.

Although he had resolved the conflict over Mount Snail, there was no show of might during the whole process and it was resolved through discussion with Mountain Moving Old Monster.

Finally, the rumors with Qiao Si Liu carried the feeling of illicit love, and would not engender respect in others.

“If there is nothing, the two of you may leave. I hurried to get here, I am slightly tired.” Fang Yuan waved his hand.

Wu Liao immediately excused himself and left, but Wu An hesitated and said softly: “Lord, there is something I need to report....”

“Speak.” Fang Yuan already knew what Wu An wanted to report.

Sure enough, Wu An’s words did not deviate from Fang Yuan’s expectation, it was related to the matter of dream realm business which Wu clan and other super clans were engaged in.

“The situation is tense now, the other clans are also anxious and fearful, should we stop this business for some time?” Wu An worriedly asked.

Fang Yuan was silent for a moment: “You don’t need to worry, I have already said everything will be like before. If there is nothing else, you may leave.”

“Yes, lord.” A trace of joy flashed past Wu An’s face as he bowed and left.

As long as this dream realm’s business continued, Wu An could continue to gain profits from it. Why would he not be happy?

Even if the matter turned south and the business was exposed by Ba clan, Wu An’s responsibility was still very low. Because his superior, Fang Yuan, had allowed the business to continue like before.

Fang Yuan was obviously well aware of Wu An’s thoughts.

He sneered inwardly: “This Wu An is simply shortsighted.”

It was true that Wu clan’s situation was not too good at the moment, but it was still the number one clan of Southern Border.

Ba De was very astute, although he made a move, he did not target this dream realm business. He knew his limits, because these benefits were not solely enjoyed by Wu clan, but also by other clans.

If he had laid a hand on this business, it would lead to hostility from the other clans, who would then ally with Wu clan to deal with this common enemy.

It was due to his clear insight towards the situation of the whole of Southern Border that he did not target this weakness to create difficulties. This was a significant weakness, but if he used it now, the results would not be optimal at this time. If some day in the future, Wu clan’s prestige truly crashed, that would be the time to use this and add fuel to the fire.

Ba De saw this accurately, Fang Yuan did as well.

The matters of the world were like games of chess, the best chess players always planned their future moves, knew when to use certain tactics and what chess pieces would achieve the best result.

As such, the dream realm business could continue to run, what truly decided whether Ba De would make a move or not was not this business itself, but Wu clan!

The matters of the world were often this strange.

The deciding factors of many matters were not the matters themselves, but something that was outside of them.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan subconsciously gazed at the direction of Wu clan.

Wu Yong might be a rank eight Gu Immortal, but was still schemed against by Fang Yuan.

Because this was not a contest of cultivation and battle strength, but experience and methods.

The reason Fang Yuan took the initiative to approach Qiao Si Liu was naturally not for Qiao Si Liu herself, but for something else, that was — to return to the giant dream realm!

Wu Yong could endure Wu Yi Hai’s greed, but he could not stand Wu Yi Hai contesting for authority.

This was an expected situation.

The seed had already been planted before Wu Du Xiu passed away. Before she passed away, her last words were that she wanted to give her Immortal Gu to Wu Yi Hai.

Wu Yi Hai’s bloodline and origin were already approved, once he gained some authority, he would become a huge threat to Wu Yong’s rule.

Just like when Wu Du Xiu was in power, she was wary and on guard against Qiao clan, within Wu clan, Wu Yong was on guard against two threats – Qiao clan and Wu Yi Hai.

Right now, these two were close to each other, even looking like they would wind up together, how could this not make Wu Yong vigilant?

Previously, when Wu Yi Hai had joined Wu clan, Qiao clan had mobilized its agent inside Wu clan, whom unexpectedly was Wu clan’s third supreme elder. Many perceptive people were given a fright, how could Wu Yong not be wary?

And now, it looked like Wu Yi Hai was going to collaborate with Qiao clan, how could Wu Yong not make a move early?

Wu Yong’s action was quite extraordinary.

He did not directly question if Fang Yuan still wanted to return to the giant dream realm.

He gave Fang Yuan three choices, Xuan Ming Mountain, red dragon river and Yi clan’s banquet.

There was deep meaning behind these three choices.

The first task of Xuan Ming Mountain was naturally the most intense task, there was definitely going to be conflict since it concerned a wild Immortal Gu. If Fang Yuan chose this task, it would show he did not fear taking risks for the clan, and Wu Yong could make great use of him in the future.

The third task of Yi clan’s banquet was a test. Yi clan had close relations with Eastern Sea, if Fang Yuan chose this task, it would mean he still had attachment towards Eastern Sea in the depths of his heart.

The second task of preventing red dragon river’s flood was a trap.

Wu clan and Qiao clan both had territories near red dragon river. Wu clan wanted to prevent a flood, Qiao clan naturally would also do the same.

As such, there would be an opportunity to collaborate with Qiao clan’s Gu Immortals.

When Fang Yuan chose this task, Wu Yong’s heart had immediately chilled, even if he had been all smiles at that time, he had already made the decision to transfer Wu Yi Hai away as soon as possible! He could not let Wu Yi Hai be in contact with Qiao clan any longer.

Qiao Si Liu was one of the three great fairies of Southern Border, she had astonishingly enchanting beauty. Even if Wu Yi Hai’s heart was not moved yet, what about in the future?

Even outstanding men might be unable to resist the charms of a beautiful woman, let alone a beauty like Qiao Si Liu!

Let alone when besides beauty, she was also tied to extraordinary benefits for him.

Once Wu Yi Hai married Qiao Si Liu, it was a hugely profitable matter to both him and Qiao clan.

Wu Yi Hai could use Qiao clan to greatly increase his authority inside Wu clan. And Qiao clan could also finally break their historical limit, with a son-in-law like Wu Yi Hai, this vine that was Qiao clan could truly penetrate deep into the inner core of the giant tree that was Wu clan.

How could Wu Yong make such a mistake?

It was not feasible for him to forcefully break the relationship between the two, it might even backfire if he did not handle it well.

Moreover, the righteous path had to do things according to rules. He could not act willfully like in demonic path.

Wu Yong had thought for a while, but found it was difficult to handle Wu Yi Hai. Despite having evidence of Wu Yi Hai’s corruption, Wu Yi Hai was his own brother in the end.

After thinking for a while, Wu Yong thought of the giant dream realm.

He could use this dream realm to ‘exile’ Wu Yi Hai for as long as possible, after all, wasn’t it peaceful when Wu Yi Hai had stayed in the Gu formation earlier?

This past success finally made Wu Yong come to a decision.

He immediately took action after making up his mind. Although he gave Fang Yuan three choices, in truth, he did not let Fang Yuan have any power to choose, they were just a way of testing him.

“The righteous path is like this.”

“If one is not at the top, there is no freedom.”

“But even when one is at the top, the whole organization will become the shackles that bind them.”

Fang Yuan sighed inwardly, but he quickly sorted out his mood and began looking at the dream realm in front of him.

He had returned to this familiar place once again, and there were still two Immortal Gu that belonged to him here.

The dream realm was always expanding and always moving.

“Oh? This dream realm is pretty good, it is a dream realm made of true memories and experiences, and not from absurd imagination.”

Soon, Fang Yuan finished inspecting it and entered a shiny bright blue dream realm.

His vision changed.

In a gently sloping hill, a middle-aged Gu Immortal had his back towards Fang Yuan: “My son, do you know why our Tu clan has dominance over this mountain range?”

Fang Yuan inspected himself, he found he had already turned into a child.

“Father, I don’t know.” He replied after giving it a thought.

“Formation path!” The middle-aged Gu Immortal’s voice rose, carrying strong pride within it.

“Formation path?” Fang Yuan mumbled.

“Right! Formation path.” The middle-aged Gu Immortal turned around, revealing his aged face and resolute eyes, giving off the air of an authority figure.

“Among the numerous paths, formation path might be the most complicated path. Son, starting today, father will impart to you the essence of formation path and guide you in cultivation.” The middle-aged Gu Immortal said with a burning gaze.

“Yes, father, I will definitely study properly.” Fang Yuan replied.

The middle-aged Gu Immortal shook his head: “Studying is not enough, you must achieve success, put in all your effort to be the best, be better than all your peers and even those young Gu Immortals. Because you are my, Tu Shi Cheng’s son, because you are the future leader of the clan!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1323: Formation Path Contains Countless Paths

“Tu Shi Cheng? I have never heard of this name...” Fang Yuan thought to himself.

Since his father’s surname was Tu, this boy Fang Yuan was acting as naturally was surnamed Tu. Being able to leave behind a dream realm meant he indeed had remarkable skill in formation path, but there seemed to be no formation path great experts with the surname Tu in the history of Gu Masters.

Fang Yuan scanned through his memories, but did not have any findings.

Naturally, his knowledge could not encompass the whole of Gu Master history. Maybe this was the dream of a hidden expert.

“Come, sit by me.” The middle-aged Gu Immortal sat on the ground, and patted the area beside him.

Fang Yuan quickly sat down beside him.

“My son, do you know how many Gu Master paths there are in this world?” Tu Shi Cheng asked with a warm smile on his face.

Fang Yuan pondered, there were naturally many Gu Master paths, and looking at the trend, even more were starting to thrive. For instance, when Gu Master cultivation had just started to flourish, space path and time path were the mainstream paths, afterwards, wisdom path, qi path, strength path, rule path and other paths emerged one after the other, and now, there were even more paths like fire path, water path, metal path, bone path, poison path and so on.

“Five hundred years later, there is also dream path... innovation never stops, Gu Immortal paths will continue to increase.” Fang Yuan pondered inwardly, while replying: “According to what I know, there is space path, time path, hmm, and also qi path, wisdom path and so on.”

Tu Shi Cheng nodded: “You are correct, but it is still not detailed. Let me tell you, in Ren Zu’s time during the Immemorial Antiquity Era, there were space path and time path, these two paths researched and expounded on the profundities of time and space.”

“In the Remote Antiquity Era, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable created qi path and enslavement path, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable created wisdom path and star path, and our formation path was also created during the later period of the Remote Antiquity Era. But its true founder could not be verified. Refinement path and fire path were also created during this period.”

“In the Olden Antiquity Era, Limitless Demon Venerable created rule path, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable created transformation path. Strength path, wind path, light path and dark path were also created in this era.”

“In the Medieval Antiquity Era, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable created wood path, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable created theft path, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable created luck path. Moreover, metal path, water path, ice and snow path, cloud path, earth path, lightning path, information path and sound path emerged one after another, this was an era where all kinds of diverse paths appeared.”

“And in our present era, bone path was created, there are also phantom path and restriction path. Naturally, what I mentioned are only the mainstream Gu Master paths, minor paths like enchantment path, illusion path, and others will be omitted for now.”

Fang Yuan immediately came to an understanding when he heard these words.

“So this dream realm is set in the Late Antiquity Era. Right now, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable has yet to appear, otherwise Tu Shi Cheng would have mentioned him.”

Tu Shi Cheng continued: “Son, I have elaborated on so much because I want to tell you our formation path is one of the longest standing paths in history. Although it cannot be compared to space path and time path, it was created in the same era as qi path and wisdom path. Just based on seniority, it appeared even before transformation path.”

As he said this, Tu Shi Cheng asked: “The essence of transformation path is to project countless paths, son, what do you think is the essence of formation path?”

Although Fang Yuan’s attainment in formation path was extremely ordinary, this question was fairly simple and common, he knew about it.

He replied: “Formation path contains countless paths.”

“Haha, good answer!” Tu Shi Cheng did not stint on his praise, and gave a deeper explanation: “Our formation path can set up Gu formations, which can use Gu worms of space path and time path, we can also use Gu worms of metal path, wood path, fire path, water path and so on. Just because of this, formation path can be said to be the most complex path among all the paths.”

“Setting up a Gu formation is very difficult, because it might need to use Gu worms of many other paths. As such, when cultivating formation path, we need to have some understanding of other paths, even if the understanding is not deep, we need to have basic knowledge of them, at the least, we need to have deep understanding of the Gu worms we are using.”

Fang Yuan continued to nod while listening.

This was one of the difficulties of formation path cultivation.

Actually, every path had some areas which it was proficient in and weak in. For instance, cultivating enslavement path allowed one to fight many by oneself, but it had an extremely huge demand on resources.

Cultivating and learning formation path was a large obstacle, because it involved Gu worms of other paths. Formation path Gu worms were only the foundation and framework of a Gu formation, the rest of the content required large numbers of Gu worms from other paths.

Because of this, it was difficult to learn and master formation path.

Nurturing a formation path expert was not easy. On one hand, it had high demand towards resources, time and knowledge, on the other hand, the Gu Master needed to have talent for it and put in effort as well.

As such, in the Gu Immortal world, there had always been very few Gu Immortals who specialized in formation path.

Naturally, this rarity was only relative, at the very least, there were more formation path Gu Immortals than wisdom path Gu Immortals.

This was also the reason why Fang Yuan had not involved himself in formation path in the five hundred years of his previous life.

The barrier to entry was high, and it was difficult to learn.

“Son, since you have become a Gu Master today, I will give you your first Gu worm.” At this time, Tu Shi Cheng’s palm slowly opened, revealing a small Gu worm.

This Gu looked like a ladybug, its carapace was glossy and round, it was as small as a little finger, and it had a glistening yellow shine, giving a cute appearance.

“This is formation heart Gu, come, refine it first.” Tu Shi Cheng said.

With Tu Shi Cheng’s help, Fang Yuan directly refined this rank one Gu worm.

Formation heart Gu’s carapace opened up, the thin wings inside continuously flapped as it merrily flew around its new master, Fang Yuan.

This Gu worm was not precious and could even be said to be extremely ordinary.

Because it was one of the most basic Gu worms to lay a formation, and was commonly available throughout the five regions.

“Alright, let’s play a game.” Tu Shi Cheng smiled, taking out four Gu worms.

“They are all rank one Gu, I will lend them to you temporarily. Come, use your formation heart Gu as the core, choose the Gu worms from here and arrange them, see if you can form a Gu formation.”

Fang Yuan’s eyebrows slightly rose, glancing at Tu Shi Cheng in surprise.

Was this a joke?

This boy had just become a Gu Master, and he wanted him to construct a Gu formation on the same day?

Although Fang Yuan had not truly cultivated formation path, he had some superficial knowledge of formation path. For instance, normally speaking, this youth should only be involved in constructing a Gu formation after at least two to three months, After all, he had just become a Gu Master, controlling a Gu worm was strenuous, everything was new to him, calculating primeval essence, nourishing the aperture, feeding Gu worms, and other aspects, they all required him to adapt and train.

Now, in this dream, this Tu Shi Cheng was actually asking his son, a boy who had just become a Gu Master, to construct a Gu formation?

“Hah, this style of education is truly ‘original’... fortunately, it is a dream realm and it is all up to me. How could a normal child accomplish this task? Or maybe... it is because he could not accomplish this, his obsession turned into this dream realm?”

While guessing, he sized up the four Gu worms.

But, he actually was not able to recognize them all!

With his knowledge, he only recognized three of them, and could not identify the remaining one.

It was somewhat awkward.

But when he thought of it, it was also not strange.

The time period of this dream was the Late Antiquity Era, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had not appeared yet, thus the situation compared to the present was very different.

Moreover, there were countless Gu worms, unique and mysterious. There were also many innovated Gu worms and many secretly guarded Gu worms, of which little were known by others. How could Fang Yuan know of all the Gu worms?

Even though he was not able to recognize them all, Fang Yuan was still aware of the paths of these four Gu worms.

They were of earth path, water path, wind path and fire path.

The one that Fang Yuan did not recognize was the earth path Gu worm.

“To construct a Gu formation, I need to first understand these Gu worms. There is no need to worry about formation heart Gu, but what use does this earth path Gu worm have?” Fang Yuan intended to test this Gu and see its ability.

But this action was stopped by Tu Shi Cheng.

Tu Shi Cheng spoke with solemness: “Use your heart to sense it, listen to the sound of your heart, rely on your feelings. Construct the Gu formation according to your feelings. Remember, you only have one chance."

Fang Yuan was immediately dumbfounded.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1324: Fang Yuan's Two Trump Cards

Although Tu Shi Cheng was the father of this boy that Fang Yuan was disguised as, he was completely unreliable.

What did he mean by rely on feelings?

Innate talents could not be embodied like this.

If the construction of the Gu formation failed, in a minor case, the Gu worms would be injured or destroyed, and in a severe case, the Gu Master themselves would suffer the backlash. If one could create a Gu formation just by relying on feelings, formation path Gu Immortals would not be so rare in the present five regions.

Arranging a Gu formation was a precise and rigorous task, like deducing Immortal Gu recipes. They both were similar, requiring a process, detailed consideration and continuous tests.

However, since the dream realm was like this, Fang Yuan calmed his mind, and continued to ponder how he should tackle this situation where it seemed he truly had to do it in the way Tu Shi Cheng said.

Fang Yuan asked: "Do I need to use all the four Gu worms?"

"Of course not. But you need to at least select two to set up a Gu formation." Tu Shi Cheng replied.

"I simply don't know about this earth path Gu worm, so it will be better to give it up." Fang Yuan continued to think, as such, he had three choices in front of him.

"Hurry up, don't think too much, rely on your feelings!" Just as Fang Yuan had spent slightly longer in thinking, Tu Shi Cheng's expression sank a little, urging: "I will give you three breaths of time."

Three breaths of time?

And there was only one chance!

Wasn't he purposely making it difficult?

A thought flashed past Fang Yuan's mind: "Do I need to use unravel dream?"

His current accumulation was already different from the past. Last time, when he explored the giant dream realm, he had limited quantities of dream path mortal Gu, which led to a limited number of times that unravel dream could be used, Fang Yuan had to be very efficient when using it.

But it was different now.

Fang Yuan had enough confidence.

Because he had captured many nightmare demonic colts, using these natural dream path immortal materials along with his persistent refinement, he now possessed very many dream path mortal Gu.

Thus, the number of times he could use unravel dream was at a peak now.

Precisely because of this, Fang Yuan had an unprecedented amount of confidence.

“Forget it. This is only the first layer of the dream realm, even if it fails, I can continue to explore. Although I can use unravel dream much more now, I cannot waste it like this.”

Fang Yuan thought for a moment and gave up on using unravel dream.

He began to activate the Gu worms.

First was formation heart Gu.

This yellow ladybug was already refined by him, his primeval essence was consumed, it immediately hovered and stopped in front of Fang Yuan, shining with pale yellow light.

“Fire path, water path, wind path...”

Fang Yuan mumbled, since he had given up on the earth path Gu worm, then he only had these three choices remaining.

He chose the rank one water path Gu worm.

The reason for this choice was simple, his fire path and wind path attainment levels were ordinary, but in water path, he was a grandmaster!

Grandmaster attainment was not for show.

The water path Gu worm was successfully activated, it was bathed in the yellow light and revolved around the formation heart Gu, flying up and down.

“Fire path and wind path...”

Fang Yuan chose wind path.

The wind path Gu worm also mixed in, and like the water path Gu worm, it flew around the formation heart Gu. It was just that the wind path Gu worm was in the periphery, while the water path Gu worm was nearer to the formation heart Gu.

Fang Yuan waited for a bit. Among these three Gu worms, one was hovering in the air while the other two were continuously flying around, they were all activated but were still extremely stable.

“Although they have not formed a true Gu formation, this progress is quite good.” Fang Yuan was slightly pleased.

To use an analogy, arranging a Gu formation was like building blocks.

Each Gu worm was a strangely shaped building block, the Gu Master needed to arrange these building blocks into the shape they wanted. These scattered building blocks would form high towers, buildings and other shapes, creating an effect that far surpassed the individual building block.

Although Fang Yuan had not successfully arranged these building blocks into a shape, these three Gu worms were at least mutually compatible and did not collapse.

This was quite good progress.

However, a trace of gloominess and disappointment flashed past Tu Shi Cheng’s eyes.

Fang Yuan, who was focused on setting up the Gu formation, did not notice it.

“Now, I need to adjust it.”

“Does the formation heart Gu need to stay in the center?”

“Can the positions of the water path and wind path Gu be swapped? Water path inside, and wind path outside, can I adjust it to water path outside, and wind path inside?”

“Or maybe, the water path Gu and the wind path Gu can be together, should I let the wind path Gu revolve around the water path Gu instead of the formation heart Gu?”

As Fang Yuan pondered, all kinds of plans emerged in his mind.

He did not know what results these plans could give, or what effects would they have.

His formation path attainment was truly too lacking.

“Rely on your feelings, stop hesitating.” Tu Shi Cheng urged, looking somewhat impatient.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, actually, he didn’t need Tu Shi Cheng’s urging, he also knew he had to take action.

If nothing else, his primeval essence was about to dry up.

In the dream realm, he had just become a Gu Master, although he had A grade aptitude, he was activating three Gu worms at the same time, which intensely burdened on his primeval essence.

He already did not have much time to think.

“Let’s give it a try then.” Fang Yuan inwardly gritted his teeth, as he activated the fire path Gu worm as well, putting it inside the newly created structure.

He made no changes to the previous foundation.

Because he did not know what use making changes would have, and also did not know if there was a need to make changes.

He was a pure beginner with no feeling for the right action, the attempt was done blindly.

“But my luck is good, maybe I can succeed by chance?” Fang Yuan still had some hope.

But soon, his hope was ruined.

The moment the fire path Gu worm was added in, it immediately led to a chain reaction.

The fire path Gu's strength joined with the wind path Gu, immediately increasing the power. This immediately conflicted with the water path Gu that was inside, water and fire were opposing forces, immediately creating an explosion.

A soft explosion echoed, it was not intense, but it still exploded, covering Fang Yuan's face with black soot.

His hair stood up on end, white smoke was rising.

At the same time, the formation heart Gu was directly destroyed, the other three Gu worms were also injured to various degrees; the water path and fire path Gu worms were on the verge of death, while the wind path Gu worm was also heavily injured.

“You have failed!” Tu Shi Cheng's expression changed, he said with a cold tone: “You truly disappoint me.”

Guh.

Fang Yuan's vision changed as he was expelled out of the dream realm.

The first exploration had failed.

His soul returned to his body, his body slightly shook, his healthy complexion suddenly paled.

Fang Yuan immediately inspected his injuries, and found that the injury to his soul was much more severe than he expected.

But it did not matter.

Guts Gu!

Fang Yuan took out a guts Gu and crushed it, the injuries of his soul were immediately relieved greatly. Fang Yuan used another guts Gu, and immediately his soul injuries were completely healed.

The slight sense of vertigo had disappeared at once.

Because he had guts Gu, Fang Yuan was not afraid of failing in his dream realm exploration and his soul being injured.

“Right now, I should be the first person to explore the dream realm. Even Shadow Sect's remnant forces won't be able to catch up to me.” Fang Yuan calculated.

This was because he had two great trump cards to explore dream realms.

First was guts Gu, it could heal soul injuries.

Second was unravel dream. Once used, it would get one straight to solving the problem, its usefulness was somewhat unreasonable.

Guts Gu came from Dang Hun Mountain, Fang Yuan had placed Dang Hun Mountain in Lang Ya blessed land, and was even cooperating with Lang Ya Sect in trading guts Gu.

They had a monopoly on guts Gu business, they were the only ones producing it, and its demand was always higher than its supply.

Recently, Fang Yuan had not been selling his portion of the guts Gu for profit, instead, he was accumulating them.

He had a single objective, to be fully prepared in exploring the dream realm.

Thus, he had large numbers of guts Gu with him. Because of this, he was short on money, and had no choice but to expand the scale of some of his resources to improve his finances.

The first failure did not matter.

With guts Gu, Fang Yuan’s soul immediately recovered, and could go for a second exploration.

But he was not hurried, instead using connecting heaven Gu to let his divine sense enter treasure yellow heaven.

He began to gather information.

First was that earth path mortal Gu.

Fang Yuan did not recognize it, so he needed to understand it.

Fang Yuan soon bought a set of <<The Encyclopedia of Earth Path Gu Worms>> from an earth path Gu Immortal.

This was an information transaction and was among the businesses in treasure yellow heaven.

There were transactions of methods to target against Gu worms, there were introductions and understandings of Gu paths, there was news of the present political situation, there were also deductions of time path and wisdom path Gu Immortals on the past, present and future.

Fang Yuan naturally could rely on his five hundred years of experiences to sell information that could definitely attract people.

But this kind of information was normally very cheap, and not long after selling them, Fang Yuan’s rebirth advantage would weaken, so Fang Yuan had never even considered it.

Fang Yuan was not satisfied with just this Gu Immortal’s work, <<The Encyclopedia of Earth Path Gu Worms>>, and bought some relevant information, naturally including some mortal formation path inheritances.

These cost him close to ten immortal essence stones.

To Fang Yuan, this was just peanuts.

He soon learned of that earth path mortal Gu from the information he bought. This was a Gu worm that appeared in the early stages of the Late Antiquity Era. It was soon extinct, because the Gu materials required to refine it had been wiped out. The information recorded briefly introduced this earth path Gu worm’s ability. Fang Yuan even obtained the recipe of this earth path mortal Gu from another information source.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1325: Four Elements Concept

Naturally, the practicality of this Gu recipe was extremely low.

Because most of the materials for this Gu no longer existed.

If Fang Yuan wanted to refine this mortal Gu, he would have to modify the recipe.

He naturally would not do such a pointless thing. With the information he gathered, he already had a deep understanding of this mortal Gu.

Next, Fang Yuan read those mortal formation path inheritances.

This enriched some of his formation path foundation.

Despite him not having taken the initiative to research formation path, he had come into contact with it indirectly in his first life, or come across some formation path contents in fortuitous encounters.

As such, this enrichment was limited and not high in scope.

It was just that he was only focusing on the test in the dream realm this time.

He had an objective when gathering the formation path information, and he knew from some information: In the Late Antiquity Era, formation path had a prevailing concept.

This concept stated that the four basic elements of earth, water, wind and fire could make a Gu formation stable, they could make most basic Gu formations and were the most inclusive.

Naturally, this concept only prevailed for some time, after dozens of years, it went out of favor. Compared to the whole history of formation path, dozens of years was too short, this concept was like a small ripple that disappeared in the long river of history.

“It is just like the origins of mankind. On Earth, people once believed that humans were made by divine beings, be it the Chinese concept of Nüwa creating mankind, or the Western concept of God creating mankind. This was an ideology that lasted for a long time, and after it dominated people’s thinking for a long period, it was broken by Darwin’s theory of evolution. But in regards to whether Darwin’s theory of evolution pointed precisely to the truth or not, as science develops, people over time may find flaws in it.”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts were wandering.

This earth, water, wind and fire concept was similar.

Following formation path’s development, people started to find that the Gu formations created by the four basic elements of earth, water, wind and fire were not the most inclusive formations.

People made new discoveries, continuously deepening their knowledge and continuously progressing. Even though this concept was abandoned not long after, back then, it was progress of some kind.

This information was quite valuable, it directly gave Fang Yuan the correct way to pass the first stage of the dream realm.

“It turns out that I had to use all the Gu worms to truly create a Gu formation.” Fang Yuan gained an epiphany.

At the same time, he sighed: “This Tu Shi Cheng is really quite deceitful, clearly all four Gu worms had to be used, but he actually played dumb and said I needed to use at least two mortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan fell into deep thought.

Even though he knew this, he still did not know how to make the four Gu worms revolve around formation heart Gu to build an effective Gu formation.

If these four mortal Gu could be refined, Fang Yuan could test it out in reality.

This was also a common method used by laymen in deciphering dream realms in the early stages.

But now, that earth path Gu worm was difficult to refine, even if he refined an earth path mortal Gu by modifying the Gu recipe, could it truly be the same as the one in the dream realm?

This was a dream realm, sometimes there would be some differences in the dream realm from reality, and it was not a direct reproduction of reality.

Fang Yuan pondered, and decided it was better to test it in the dream realm.

The second attempt played out like before. But this time, Fang Yuan chose to activate all these four mortal Gu at the same time and coordinate them with formation heart Gu.

It failed.

The four mortal Gu self-detonated simultaneously, Fang Yuan was injured and kicked out of the dream realm.

The third attempt, Fang Yuan chose to use the earth path Gu worm first, and water path Gu worm second, but it failed again.

Following the fourth attempt and fifth attempt... only by the seventh attempt did Fang Yuan succeeded.

The four mortal Gu were flying around formation heart Gu. The water path and fire path Gu worms were flying in an elliptic orbit, sometimes near and sometimes far from formation heart Gu. Earth path Gu was hovering below formation heart Gu, while the wind path Gu was hovering above, both were still.

Under the control of formation heart Gu, these four Gu worms formed a mysterious force that continuously let out hazy rainbow colors.

A Gu Master’s primeval essence would recover at twice the speed inside this light.

“To Gu Masters, this is an extremely practical Gu formation!” Fang Yuan thought to himself.

“Hahaha, good, very good, you are truly my son, you have natural talent for formation path after all!” Tu Shi Cheng laughed loudly and happily at Fang Yuan’s success.

Fang Yuan: “...”

The hill, the sky, and the land slowly disappeared from Fang Yuan’s vision.

The first stage of the dream realm was over, the second stage was starting.

Fang Yuan breathed out a sigh of relief, he had persisted on not using unravel dream in the first stage, in the end, only about ten or so guts Gu were consumed, the total expenses were still low.

Without checking how much his formation path attainment had risen, Fang Yuan focused his attention on the surroundings.

He discovered he was in a cage.

And inside this enormous cage, there was a smaller cage.

Inside this cage was a pitch black panther, it was skinny and its eyes shined with mad hunger, indicating how dangerous it was right now.

“What’s going on?” Fang Yuan was bewildered.

Right at this moment, Tu Shi Cheng, who was standing outside the cage, said to Fang Yuan: “I will give you five minutes to arrange these Gu worms into a Gu formation. After five minutes are over, this panther will be released, I absolutely won’t make a move at that time, and will only see if you can use the Gu formation to resist this panther.”

“What?!” Fang Yuan’s eyes opened wide.

This method of education, hey, are you really this kid’s father?

“You are the son of Tu Shi Cheng, you can definitely do it. If you can’t do it, then you are not worthy of being my son!” Tu Shi Cheng continued with an expressionless face.

“My goodness!” Fang Yuan thought, lips twitching as he looked at himself.

He found that he had not grown much and not much time had passed since the first stage, he was at most about the age of fourteen.

“This Tu Shi Cheng looks like he should be a righteous path Gu Immortal, why is he so heartless? Maybe this is intimidation to force his son to fully release his potential?”

Fang Yuan speculated inwardly.

“Regardless of who this Tu Shi Cheng’s son is, he is truly unlucky.”

Time was limited, Fang Yuan calmed his mood and began to inspect the Gu worms he had.

The caged panther was only an ordinary beast, but with his current young body, he definitely could not oppose it.

He could only make a Gu formation to resist it.

There were five Gu worms, they were still rank one. Among them, one was formation heart Gu, while the other four belonged to earth path, wind path, water path and fire path.

It was almost the same as in the first stage.

The difference was that although the paths were the same, the four Gu worms were different ones from the first stage.

How should he group these Gu worms to form a Gu formation?

Fang Yuan began to try.

With the precious experience from the first stage, Fang Yuan was quite proficient.

The first attempt quickly failed, Fang Yuan spat out a mouthful of blood in the dream realm due to the backlash, but fortunately, the Gu worms were not injured.

He was also not expelled from the dream realm.

“Looks like I can continue to try until the limit of five minutes is reached?”

“Although there are still chances to continue, there is in fact almost no hope.”

Fang Yuan frowned.

Because of the injuries, although nothing happened to the Gu worms, his own state was very bad, his primeval essence had depleted and he was injured.

Fang Yuan soon discovered that because of the injuries, when he continued to try again, he was unsteady, and although the Gu worms flew up, they were shaking.

The second attempt also failed.

There was more time left, but Fang Yuan was unable to continue attempting, because a Gu worm had died in the second failure.

If it were any of the other paths mortal Gu, it would not be the end, but it just happened to be the formation heart Gu.

“Father, my Gu worm is destroyed, can you give me another formation heart Gu?” Fang Yuan quickly asked.

But the reply he got was a ruthless shake of the head from Tu Shi Cheng: “What if you were in a battle, who would give you a substitute Gu worm? Son, you disappointed me, you have no chances left.”

Sure enough, the moment the time limit was reached, the small cage opened up and the panther pounced forward, biting at Fang Yuan’s throat instantly.

This dream realm was extremely realistic, Fang Yuan could clearly sense his throat being torn, his breathing becoming difficult, the heartrending pain that came when his skin was ripped apart by the panther’s sharp fangs.

Blood spewed out rapidly from his wounds, and the panther drank it contentedly.

Tu Shi Cheng shook his head, sighing: “You are not worthy of being my son.”

He then turned around and left.

“Not giving the solution even at the end, is this Tu Shi Cheng of the righteous path or demonic path?” After being expelled from the dream realm, Fang Yuan’s soul returned to his body, he was naturally gloomy.

After using guts Gu to heal his injuries, he continued to explore.

Second failure, third failure, forth failure...

Every time he failed, Fang Yuan would be killed by the panther and relive the miserable pain from being eaten alive.

If it were any other person, their mind might have already collapsed.

However, Fang Yuan was not afraid, he had suffered pain beyond this an uncountable number of times.

He only treated the pain as a cool breeze blowing across his face, his mind still focused on constructing the Gu formation.

Tenth failure, eleventh, twelfth...

This second stage was much more difficult than the first stage. After Fang Yuan was expelled from the dream realm, his soul injuries were also much more severe than what he suffered in the first stage.

His soul would be healed using just two guts Gu in the first stage, but in the second stage, he needed at least three guts Gu and sometimes even four to be healed.

Fang Yuan calmly calculated his expenses.

“If this continues, the cost will become steeper, do I have to use unravel dream?”

“Wait.”

While he was feeling troubled, he suddenly had an inspiration.

He entered the dream realm and continued to attempt it.

There was a way!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1326: Rise in Formation Path Attainment Level

A while later, after two tries, Fang Yuan successfully constructed a Gu formation in the dream realm.

This Gu formation still used formation heart Gu as the core, it was just that the earth path Gu worm was hovering above the formation heart Gu, while the fire path and wind path Gu worms revolved around the water path Gu worm. And the water path Gu worm spanned the distance of a hand below the formation heart Gu, continuously moving up and down.

The Gu formation made by these Gu worms emitted a hazy white light that shrouded the panther.

That’s right.

This Gu formation was an entrapment Gu formation targeted at the panther, and did not protect the Gu Master themselves.

Constructing it was not easy. The panther continuously moved around, influencing the construction of the Gu formation. Occasionally, Fang Yuan had to stop and wait for the panther to move away from a specific location 1 .

This was also the reason why Tu Shi Cheng gave five minutes, Fang Yuan needed the time to arrange the formation.

“Hahaha, good, you are indeed my son! You will continue to study with me in the following days. In a month, there will be an even stricter test which will concern your life and death. If you cannot pass, you shall die.” Tu Shi Cheng laughed, his laughter containing madness.

Fang Yuan’s young body was standing inside the cage, he glanced at the panther that was constantly struggling inside the Gu formation, and then glanced at Tu Shi Cheng, sighing softly.

This formation path dream realm’s second stage was passed.

Next was the third stage.

Fang Yuan followed Tu Shi Cheng to a riverside where the tides were coming in fast.

Looking at the water of this river that was flowing to the east and was red like blood, Fang Yuan immediately realized: this was Southern Border’s red dragon river.

Southern Border had three great rivers that passed through the whole region, red dragon river, jade dragon river and yellow dragon river.

Fang Yuan immediately had a bad feeling when he saw this river.

Sure enough, at the next moment, he heard Tu Shi Cheng’s voice: “I have already lent you the Gu worms, now you can only depend on yourself, if you cannot construct a Gu formation, you are well aware of the consequences.”

Fang Yuan was just about to speak to stall for time, but he was slapped on the back by Tu Shi Cheng.

Fang Yuan was simply unable to resist the enormous strength and was immediately pushed into red dragon river.

“F*ck!” Fang Yuan cursed inwardly as he fell into the surging river and was immediately swept away by the current helplessly.

Fang Yuan struggled with all his might, he only had a young body, fortunately, Fang Yuan’s swimming ability was carried over, and after struggling for a while, he was able to raise his head out of the water and took in large breaths.

Making the best use of his time, Fang Yuan inspected the Gu worms he had.

“Damn it!” Soon, he mentally cursed once again, because this time, it was not just the four mortal Gu like he expected, but twelve.

He had to arrange them in such a short period of time?

There were too many ways to arrange them, and under such terrible conditions, hope was slim.

Fang Yuan did not hesitate this time, and directly activated unravel dream!

Immediately, an answer appeared in his mind.

He immediately understood the first three steps of how to activate the Gu worms and arrange the Gu formation.

“Only the first three steps?” Fang Yuan had no choice but to continue to activate unravel dream, the fourth step, fifth step and sixth step also appeared in his mind.

It was an accurate and precise answer.

But there were still some steps from being able to construct the Gu formation.

Fang Yuan was just about to activate unravel dream for the third time, when suddenly a change occurred in the river, and he was swallowed by a whirlpool.

Bam, a muffled sound echoed.

Fang Yuan crashed head-first into a tree floating in the whirlpool, falling unconscious immediately.

The next moment, Fang Yuan woke up, he had returned to reality.

His soul was severely injured, making him see stars.

He quickly used guts Gu, one, two... six guts Gu before he finally recovered.

“The third stage is even more difficult, the environment to arrange the formation is so hazardous.”

“But...”

“My formation path attainment has already advanced to quasi-master level.”

After Fang Yuan realized it, he slowly opened his eyes with a trace of joy.

What was attainment level?

Attainment level was a Gu Master’s unique cognition, involving their sensations and experiences, their insights towards nurturing, using, refining Gu and so on, summed up and condensed. It was their comprehension of the Great Dao of heaven and earth.

Attainment levels were divided into five levels, ordinary, master, grandmaster, great grandmaster and supreme grandmaster.

Naturally, in-between these, there were small levels like quasi-master, quasi-grandmaster and quasi-great grandmaster.

Ordinary attainment was the level that most Gu Masters would reach in their lifetimes.

Quasi-master attainment was already rare. Young Gu Masters with outstanding aptitude or experienced old Gu Masters could reach this.

Master level was when the use of Gu worms went beyond superficial workmanship to the level of an art. It was rare to find even one master among ten thousand Gu Masters. For example, during the contest of Imperial Court, there were only five enslavement path masters – Jiang Bao Ya, Yang Po Ying, Ma Zun, Chang Shan Yin (Fang Yuan) and Nu Er Tu. Naturally, the one in ten thousand was referring to mortals, to rank six Gu Immortals, their main paths were this level at minimum.

Those who possessed quasi-grandmaster attainment were often elites among rank six Gu Immortals.

Grandmaster level was when one had a very profound grasp of the path, having deep foundations and being able to mimic the effects of other paths. Specifically, the main path’s Gu worms could be used to imitate the advantages of other paths. Hei Fan’s true inheritance had an immortal killer move, hundred years harmony, which was a classic example. It used time path Gu worms to produce an effect of information path. This also showed that Hei Fan’s time path attainment level was at least grandmaster.

Normally speaking, there were few Gu Immortals that could attain grandmaster level. It often required a hundred years or even hundreds of years of accumulation, along with natural talent. In Fang Yuan’s first life, he had attained grandmaster in blood path only in the latter stage of his five hundred years of life.

Those whom were able to have grandmaster attainment level were mostly rank seven Gu Immortals.

Above grandmaster was quasi-great grandmaster, which was even rarer, they were often rank seven experts or certain rank eights.

As for great grandmaster level, most rank eight Gu Immortals would attain this in their lifetimes.

Those whom were able to attain quasi-supreme grandmaster were scarce, few produced even in thousands of years.

The rarity of supreme grandmasters need not be explained, for instance, in refinement path, there were only three supreme grandmasters in history. Among them was a hairy man — Long Hair Ancestor.

Fang Yuan’s formation path attainment level could not even be counted as ordinary, but now it had soared to quasi-master level.

Most Gu Masters would find it difficult to reach this in their lifetimes, no matter how much effort they put in.

Fang Yuan had attained this just by using up a few days of time and exploring two stages of the dream realm.

This was the power of dream realms.

They contained true meaning, once a Gu Immortal successfully explored a dream realm and obtained the true meaning, their attainment level would be directly raised and their understanding of part of the Great Dao would be deepened.

“Just two stages were enough to advance to quasi-master level in formation path, this dream realm is extraordinary.”

“No wonder it has such difficulty.”

“But I really haven’t heard of Tu Shi Cheng...”

His method of education was truly unique, leaving Fang Yuan speechless. But the person he was educating was this dream realm’s source. This youth was clearly a major character.

Fang Yuan could clearly sense he was only a step away from master level in formation path.

“As long as I complete the third stage, my formation path attainment level will soar to master!”

Fang Yuan excitedly licked his lips.

A successful exploration of the dream realm raised his foundation, this increase was so huge, allowing Fang Yuan to go through an extraordinary shortcut, and he was unable to stop desiring for more.

But since he had already left the dream realm, Fang Yuan was not in haste to go back in.

He recalled all the scenes in the third stage, especially the Gu worms with him.

He had only recognized sixty percent of them, thus he was now searching for information on these Gu worms to increase his understanding.

These were all mortal Gu, it was just that most of them had long since vanished in history.

Fang Yuan soon found the information he wanted, and gained an understanding of these mortal Gu.

Then he began to re-read those mortal formation path inheritances he had bought before.

The feeling he got from reading this time was a completely different experience from before!

Previously, Fang Yuan only saw the surface of most of the contents of the inheritances, but now, he was able to see their deeper meanings with just one look. They were clearly things he had already read, but Fang Yuan made new discoveries this time.

This feeling was extremely mysterious, like sudden enlightenment.

However, there were things which Fang Yuan could not completely comprehend.

After all, he was only at quasi-master, some outstanding characters among mortal Gu Masters could reach master level. The inheritances they left behind naturally had some things Fang Yuan could not understand properly at the moment.

Fang Yuan was immersed in the profundity of formation path, unaware of the passing time.

If he was thirsty, he drank water, if he was hungry, he ate some fruits.

Many thoughts emerged and disappeared like waves in his mind, he was using wisdom path methods to help quicken his progress of learning formation path.

Formation path’s contents were truly vast, having connections with every path. Thus, it was considered the most complicated path.

Only when Wu An requested an audience did Fang Yuan slowly come back to his senses.

“Unknowingly, eight days have already passed...” Fang Yuan was in a daze for a moment before his gaze slowly cleared up.

In his mind, most of the disordered thoughts gradually faded.

For the last ten days, Fang Yuan was lost in the learning process, not only did his formation path attainment level receive a boost, his comprehension of various basic contents of formation path had also strengthened.

“What is he here for?” Fang Yuan impatiently furrowed his brows.

But after thinking for a moment, he still decided to see this Wu clan Gu Immortal.

As it turned out, Wu An brought over Lady White Rabbit, who reported the situation of the dream realm business and gave concrete accounts to Fang Yuan for inspection.

Despite Fang Yuan not placing attention on this business, he was, after all, the leader of the whole business.

As a subordinate, Lady White Rabbit had to hand over the report.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1327: Letter of Challenge to Chi Shang

Fang Yuan roughly skimmed through the accounts, increasing his understanding of the forces around him. He then asked Wu An and Lady White Rabbit to leave.

“Lord, there is a matter, I don’t know if I should speak of it or not.” Before leaving, Wu An spoke with some hesitation.

“Speak.” Fang Yuan was straightforward.

Wu An reported to Fang Yuan that there were some rumors recently saying that Chi clan Gu Immortal Chi Shang was coming over to inspect the super Gu formation.

Fang Yuan immediately understood Wu An’s meaning, and waved for him to leave.

“Qiao Si Liu has many pursuers, this Chi Shang is the most important one among them.”

“He has never taken the initiative to do an inspection, this time, he is most likely coming over to find trouble with me.”

However, righteous path Gu Immortals could not disregard all considerations and engage in life and death battle. At most, there would be a drop in reputation.

“At worst, I will give up my reputation and avoid fighting.” Fang Yuan rubbed his chin: “But I also need to prevent my secrets from being exposed. After all, this super Gu formation was built under the leadership of Chi clan. Among Southern Border’s super forces, Chi clan is absolutely the number one force in formation path.”

Fang Yuan already understood those mortal formation path contents clearly, and there were only a few things which he could not understand completely.

However, when he looked at this super Gu formation he was in, there was still no change, he was still dazzled like an ant facing a vast river of stars.

Chi clan’s first supreme elder had personally set up this super Gu formation, he was a great grandmaster in formation path!

Chi Shang’s arrival was quicker than everyone’s expectations.

A banquet to welcome him was essential.

Because Chi Shang represented Chi clan in this trip, what’s more, he was responsible for inspecting around the super Gu formation to see if there were any defensive flaws and so on.

During the banquet, everyone interacted with each other, portraying a cohesive gathering on the outside, but secretly, there were undercurrents brewing.

The perceptive people knew this was not originally Chi Shang’s task, but he had taken the initiative for this duty. Everyone in Southern Border knew Chi Shang was pursuing Qiao Si Liu, but in these recent times, there were rumors of Wu Yi Hai being very close with Qiao Si Liu.

Chi Shang’s objective in this trip was self-evident.

But unfortunately, Fang Yuan did not partake in this banquet, instead holed up in the Gu formation, continuing to explore the dream realm.

Many people interested in this could not help but be disappointed at not being able to see a good show.

Ba De slowly put down his cup: “Nephew Chi Shang, I have already introduced all the Gu Immortals here to you, they are all elites. Unfortunately, there is still one person who has not appeared today, this person is even more outstanding. He came from Eastern Sea, and later on, became a part of our Southern Border. Recently, he has defeated Xia Fei Kuai and Mountain Moving Old Monster, and is the head of Wu clan here.”

All the Gu Immortals in the banquet felt a jolt in their minds, they all knew precisely whom Ba De was talking about.

Chi Shang wore a white robe, he had a handsome face, deep eyes and an aquiline nose, giving him a dark and devious aura. He was a hundred and sixty years old by now.

Old Treeman Ba De was much older than him. Chi clan and Ba clan were also united by marriage, thus Ba De was not randomly addressing Chi Shang by calling him nephew.

Chi Shang smiled: “I have also heard of the great name of Wu Yi Hai. It is truly regretful that I could not meet him today. But I will be here for some time, and I will also be inspecting all around the Gu formation. At that time, I will definitely meet Wu Yi Hai.”

Chi Shang showcased initiative, immediately making everyone think over this: Fang Yuan, who was hiding away, looked quite weak-willed, compared to Chi Shang.

The banquet ended, Wu An and Wu Liao were aggrieved, and both requested to have an audience with Fang Yuan.

They had a very uncomfortable time in this banquet. They were cast aside by the others and even taunted, the only thing missing was nobody asking them for a spar.

“Oh? Since that is the case, then I shall hold a banquet tomorrow, send an invitation to Chi Shang.” Fang Yuan thought for a bit, before speaking.

Wu An and Wu Liao glanced at each other, they felt excited as they retreated with Fang Yuan’s order.

Only Fang Yuan, alone, remained in the large hall.

He walked to the depths of the hall and looked at the dream realm.

He had already explored more than half of this formation path dream realm.

After using unravel dream, Fang Yuan had passed through the third, fourth and fifth stages.

The main contents of the dream realm were Tu Shi Cheng teaching his son about formation path. His education style was brutal and harsh, using survival to forcefully stimulate his son’s potential, Fang Yuan had suffered so much from this that he no longer had the energy to curse.

Unravel dream had outstanding effects indeed, these stages were no obstacle to Fang Yuan, letting Fang Yuan’s current formation path attainment soar once again. He had not only stepped into master level, he even went one step further, becoming a quasi-grandmaster.

“But I still am a long way from truly reaching formation path grandmaster level.” Fang Yuan had an extremely clear sensation of this.

Towards the later stages, attainment levels became increasingly difficult to raise.

“This dream realm is still not over, according to its size, there are at least two stages left!”

“This Tu Shi Cheng’s son was truly amazing, his formation path attainment was definitely above grandmaster level.”

“But recently, Chi Shang has been inspecting the various places of the Gu formation, I should restrain myself a bit and stop exploring the dream realm.”

After all, this super Gu formation was constructed mainly by Chi clan, Fang Yuan was still not able to thoroughly understand this super Gu formation, so it was better for him to be careful.

Fang Yuan knew that once the secret of him being able to effectively explore dream realms was exposed, it would create an extremely huge impact.

At that time, not only Southern Border, the other four regions would also be shaken and would mobilize their forces to find him.

“Wu Yi Hai is inviting me to a banquet tomorrow?” Looking at Wu An, Chi Shang smiled.

“I appreciate Wu Yi Hai’s good intention, but... forgive me, I am on official business and have to prioritize it, wait for me to finish inspecting the Gu formation, after that, I can visit to thank him for his hospitality.” Chi Shang refused Fang Yuan’s invitation with a slight smile on his face.

Wu An felt helpless, as he left with a face filled with anger and embarrassment, he reported this to Fang Yuan.

Chi Shang’s action was slightly overboard and had slapped Wu clan’s face. This made both Wu Liao and Wu An indignant.

The other clans’ Gu Immortals, however, were secretly laughing at this, anticipating a good show.

Regardless, Fang Yuan was calm the whole time.

He indifferently looked at Wu An and Wu Liao: “Since that is the case, then we shall wait.”

He did not look the least bit angry.

“But...” Wu An and Wu Liao were inwardly anxious, feeling like their face had been torn by Chi Shang, but since Fang Yuan did not look anxious at all, they could only take their leave.

Although Fang Yuan could not continue exploring the dream realm, he still had a lot of other things to do.

For instance, constructing coiling thread caves to expand the scale of regretful spiders.

This was to be the sovereign immortal aperture’s second large scale resource expansion.

Fang Yuan had been preparing for it these last days.

It was all to construct an environment that was suitable for ordinary spiders to qualitatively transform into regretful spiders.

According to Dong Fang tribe’s method, constructing coiling thread caves required setting up a Gu formation, and it also required a rank six immortal material, dark soft silk, and a rank seven immortal material, regret water rock.

Fang Yuan had already gathered dark soft silk and regret water rocks, he had paid a large amount of immortal essence stones as well as some other immortal materials for them.

Next was setting up the Gu formation.

This was clearly a Gu formation that concerned immortal materials.

Normally speaking, this kind of Gu formation which relied upon immortal materials could only be deduced and created by a grandmaster level formation path Gu Immortal. And a great grandmaster formation path Gu Immortal could construct a Gu formation using the natural dao marks in the world as the foundation.

Prior to exploring the formation path dream realm, Fang Yuan felt like he was looking at an illegible book when he considered this Gu formation. But now, he understood it clearly, after all, he had quasi-grandmaster attainment.

Moreover, Fang Yuan still had some inspiration.

“Maybe I can improve this Gu formation and add in perseverance Immortal Gu! According to the principle of this Gu formation, if I add in perseverance Immortal Gu, the production of regretful spiders will at least multiply by eight.”

Fang Yuan’s heart thumped with excitement at such a concept.

If he could achieve this target, then the regretful spider business would surpass the dragonfish. The profits it could bring Fang Yuan could surpass even the guts Gu business.

This seemed to be exaggerated, but if looked at carefully, it was true!

Guts Gu’s production was restricted by the quality and the quantity of souls.

Currently, Lang Ya Sect was killing desolate beasts in Tai Qiu and using their souls as the resources to produce guts Gu. They were also bringing in some souls from treasure yellow heaven as well as the northern icy plain as replenishment.

The key point was there was Western Desert’s Xiao clan, which could take in all the regretful spiders even if its supply was much higher.

There was no need to worry about the sales of regretful spiders, furthermore, Fang Yuan had a collaborative relationship with Xiao clan.

Fang Yuan started deducing.

But soon, he ran into a problem.

He was unable to arrange a part of the Gu formation, this already surpassed his limits regardless of how many wisdom path methods he used.

“I am only a quasi-grandmaster, if I were a grandmaster, I would have the foundation to modify this Gu formation.” Fang Yuan realized.

“But although I am not a formation path grandmaster, there is someone nearby who has this attainment level.”

This person was none other than Chi Shang!

After Chi Shang refused Fang Yuan’s invitation, he started patrolling all the places around the super Gu formation.

Every stationed Gu Immortal welcomed Chi Shang warmly.

Chi Shang was intentionally delaying his inspection. Everyone knew that the longer he delayed, the more Wu clan’s face would be lost.

Naturally, it was Wu Yi Hai that Chi Shang held hostility towards, not Wu clan.

A love rival!

“Wu Yi Hai, you think of yourself as so high and mighty, you look down on me. By inviting me, do you think I will scuttle towards you? Hmph! I want you to come look for me personally!” Chi Shang had such an intention in his mind.

But soon, this plan of his was destroyed.

Because Fang Yuan’s letter of challenge was in his hands.

In the letter, Fang Yuan wrote: I once toured scenic spots with Fairy Si Liu, and in that time, your name was mentioned. Fairy Si Liu praised you as a genius in formation path, but I, Wu Yi Hai, don’t accept that. I have created a formation path problem, let’s see if you can answer it. If you can, then it is your win. If you can’t, it is your loss, I will be informing Fairy Si Liu of this result when I return.

Chi Shang completely lost it!

“Wu Yi Hai, as expected, you could not take it any more.”

“But you actually want to use formation path to trouble me?”

“You, a transformation path Gu Immortal, want to use formation path to embarrass me? What gave you the guts?!”

“You are asking for your own humiliation! I will definitely tell Fairy Si Liu of your loss and prove my, Chi Shang’s, strength!!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1328: Fang Yuan’s Shamelessness

Chi Shang felt he was humiliated.

Yes, humiliated!

At present, in the entire Southern Border Gu Immortal world, who did not know of Wu Yi Hai’s identity? Who was not aware he cultivated transformation path? But now, Fang Yuan did not use his primary cultivation to trouble Chi Shang, but instead picked Chi Shang’s most proficient domain.

This was like saying: I don’t need to use transformation path to trouble you, because you simply can’t compare to me!

The disdain overflowed in this challenge.

He could not take it!

This could not be endured!

Chi Shang’s eyes were wide open as he pinched Fang Yuan’s information path Gu worm and mumbled: “Let me see what problem you brought out.”

“Eh? This is quite something...”

Soon, a trace of solemness appeared on Chi Shang’s face.

As far as he was concerned, Fang Yuan’s question was quite challenging.

But soon, Chi Shang settled himself: “No wonder he is confident of using formation path to harass me. This problem is slightly difficult.”

“He made this problem? That should not be possible! His main cultivation is transformation path, it should be a Wu clan formation path Gu Immortal behind him who created this problem. Hmph, with his identity as Wu Yong’s brother, how could Wu clan’s Gu Immortals not help him?”

Although Wu clan was not specialized in formation path, as long as it was a super force, they would have some involvement in formation path.

Because super forces needed to guard their resource points, and had a large scale demand for Gu formations.

“But even if a Wu clan Gu Immortal helped you, so what? In terms of the clan’s strength, my Chi clan is indeed slightly inferior. But if just comparing formation path attainment, my Chi clan is undoubtedly in first place in Southern Border!”

Chi Shang felt intense pride towards his clan.

He gathered all his senses and dived into Fang Yuan’s problem.

The more he pondered, the more he lost himself.

With his analysis, he had divided the problem into dozens of segments.

“Normal methods cannot be used to solve the issue of water and fire opposing each other.”

“The whole Gu formation demands a circular formation, a square formation can be discarded...”

“How to solve this difficulty?”

“Hiss... this is slightly difficult.”

“But this can’t defeat me!”

Chi Shang’s fighting spirit soared high like he had been injected with adrenaline, he inwardly told himself that he had to teach Fang Yuan a fierce lesson!

Let him know that he, Chi Shang, could not be humiliated!

“Lord, the evening banquet that Luo clan’s Gu Immortals invited you to is going to start soon. We should be on our way.” At this time, a rank six Gu Immortal of Chi clan, Chi Liu, reminded Chi Shang from outside the door.

“Not going, not going!” Chi Shang did not even raise his head, he refused while continuing to deduce the problems in his mind.

“But, we already agreed...” Chi Liu hesitated.

“I said I am not going. Leave.” Chi Shang impatiently replied.

Chi Liu could only helplessly leave.

Chi Shang took in a deep breath, looking at the formation path problem Fang Yuan sent him, his eyes brightened as he mumbled: “What good is there in a banquet? The important thing is to defeat him! The faster I can solve this problem, the better it is. You, you dare to humiliate me!”

The night passed like this.

Chi Shang had not slept the whole time, his eyes were bloodshot, his hair was in a mess and he was extremely tired.

With a Gu Immortal’s physique, it did not matter if they stayed up all night. But Chi Shang was rather exhausted, he had not rested even a moment during this night, and had put in all his effort to deduce and plan, taxing both his mind and energy.

“This problem is indeed slightly difficult. But... I have already solved it. Hahaha, you dare to mess with me! I will let you taste my awesomeness!”

Despite being exhausted, Chi Shang was extremely excited and laughed heartily.

He could not wait to see how Fang Yuan would respond.

“I will go right now and enjoy your expression!”

Chi Shang walked to the entrance when he suddenly stopped.

“Hmm? No! I am standing against Wu Yi Hai right now, we are like generals, how could I take the initiative to visit him? My reputation will be lost! I need to send a subordinate...”

Soon after, Chi clan rank six Gu Immortal Chi Liu arrived in Chi Shang’s study.

“Little Liu, send this to Wu Yi Hai. Haha, I want to teach him a lesson!” Chi Shang instructed.

Chi Liu quickly agreed.

His cultivation level was lower than Chi Shang, and he knew Chi Shang was the hope of Chi clan in formation path. Chi clan’s first supreme elder, Chi Qu You, had said a few times in the past that Chi Shang would inherit his legacy.

The significance of these words was huge.

Chi Qu You was a formation path great grandmaster, him acknowledging Chi Shang meant Chi Shang was very likely to become a formation path great grandmaster as well.

Chi Shang also did not let down the clan.

He had displayed his talents and aptitude in formation path since a young age, and with the clan’s resources being poured into him, he cultivated hard all year round and did not slack. After receiving Chi clan’s nurturing, his current formation path attainment was not to be underestimated.

“Hmm... relaxing.” Fang Yuan slowly woke up and stretched out his arms.

Although his soul had the protection of guts Gu, it would become agitated when used too much.

Guts Gu was not able to resolve this, but sleep could restore the soul’s calmness.

After Fang Yuan had a night’s sleep, his exhausted state was swept away, and his mind was vigorous again.

Chi Shang’s information path mortal Gu had already been delivered while he was asleep.

When Fang Yuan glanced at it, a look of pleasant surprise flashed past his eyes: “Oh? He indeed solved it!”

“This speed is quite fast.”

Fang Yuan sighed as he then immersed himself into the information and started studying it.

His eyes shined repeatedly as he gained great enlightenment from Chi Shang’s solution.

“So it was like this!” Fang Yuan rubbed his chin, this was a completely new thought process and it opened a new window to him.

“According to this thought process, this answer is still not suitable for my entire Gu formation, I need to make slight adjustments in some areas.”

Fang Yuan inwardly pondered.

He did not give the whole Gu formation to Chi Shang, and only took out parts of it for Chi Shang to solve.

Chi Shang’s answers had no errors, but there would still be deviations when the entire Gu formation was arranged.

However, Fang Yuan’s formation path attainment level was already at quasi-grandmaster, and using the foundation of these answers, he fully could make some adjustments.

Chi Shang was a grandmaster, and Fang Yuan a quasi-grandmaster, there was not a huge difference between the two. If the difference was too high, it would be impossible to modify the formation.

It was just like how Fang Yuan currently saw this super Gu formation that covered the dream realm, it was still a mystery to him, he could not understand a thing.

Fang Yuan made huge gains by receiving the answer to the issue that was troubling him.

“Indeed worthy of being Southern Border’s Chi clan.” He mumbled, praising Chi Shang’s formation path attainment.

With this problem solved, Fang Yuan could continue his plan to modify the Gu formation.

His mind was calm and serene, as he began deducing once again.

A few days passed like this.

Chi Shang was very anxious.

After he sent the answer, he had been waiting for Fang Yuan’s reply. But, even after some days, he had not received a response, he did not even feel he could taste his food and drinks properly.

“What is Wu Yi Hai playing at?” Chi Shang mumbled.

“Chi Shang, what did you say?” In the banquet, a Luo clan Gu Immortal asked in confusion.

Chi Shang slowly came to his senses, only then realizing he was still in the banquet.

He had refused a banquet invitation from Luo clan before, but after solving Fang Yuan’s problem, he came to attend one.

He had to attend it, otherwise, was it not the same as not giving face to Luo clan?

Gu Immortal Chi Gui, who was sitting at the side, quickly mediated: “Forgive us, Chi Shang has always been like this. His mind often wanders, sometimes he even forgets to eat when he is thinking of a formation path problem. He would stand still all of a sudden, and it can happen even while he is walking.”

Chi Gui had rank seven cultivation, and was the leader of the Chi clansmen stationed here.

The Luo clan Gu Immortal laughed loudly: “I have heard about Chi Shang’s behavior. He is indeed a formation path genius. Sigh, if my Luo clan could produce one or two geniuses with just twenty or thirty percent of Chi Shang’s talents, I would be content.”

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan’s brows were tightly furrowed.

He ran into another problem.

“It seems modifying this Gu formation is already beyond my limits.”

Fang Yuan had encountered a new problem, and this one was much more difficult than the previous one.

He could still make an attempt for the previous one, but this time, he did not even think to attempt it as his ideas were too unreliable.

“Since that is the case, let’s hand it to Chi Shang.” Fang Yuan smiled.

“It’s here, it’s here.” When Chi Shang returned to Chi clan’s station, he soon got Fang Yuan’s information path mortal Gu.

His eyes brightened in excitement.

“Do you think it was easy for me!”

“Even I was getting impatient from waiting.”

Chi Shang sneered while feeling proud. Right now, he was like a winner picking up his battle spoils.

However, after his consciousness entered and he learned of the contents in the information path mortal Gu, his eyes opened wide in anger.

“What is Wu Yi Hai saying!”

“He is actually acting so shamelessly?!”

Chi Shang immediately cursed.

In the letter, Fang Yuan did not mention a single word about the previous challenge letter, instead, he casually admitted Chi Shang had some ability. Naturally, it could also be Chi Shang getting lucky.

“If you can solve this problem, I will admit you have the qualifications to pursue Fairy Si Liu.” This was what was written in the letter.

At the mention of Qiao Si Liu, Chi Shang was even more unable to endure it.

“Are my qualifications up to you to decide?”

“Wu Yi Hai, I misjudged you. You shameless guy!”

Chi Shang felt like Fang Yuan was standing in front of him, sneering in disdain and looking down on him.

He suddenly had a strong impulse to rip apart Fang Yuan!

“Still mentioning going on a sightseeing tour with Si Liu. Even I have only traveled once with Si Liu. Damn this guy...”

Chi Shang paced around the study, gritting his teeth in resentment.

He almost crushed the information path mortal Gu in his hand.

But he thought for a moment and withstood this impulse.

“If I crush this Gu, wouldn’t it be satisfying Wu Yi Hai’s wish?”

“Hmph, he was not able to create difficulties for me, he is definitely afraid of me now, so he is intentionally saying this.”

“Right! Me giving up is probably what he wants to see.”

“I can’t let that happen, I will continue to win and make him completely admit his defeat. Make him fully realize my strength!”

“Of course, to prevent him from acting shamelessly again, I must make this matter public, the more people that know of it, the better.”

Chi Shang learned from his mistake.

The origin of this matter was a dispute about a girl, Chi Shang had also found it slightly embarrassing, but now, he was willing to throw caution to the wind against Fang Yuan!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1329: Fang Yuan Admitting Defeat

Chi clan’s area, in the study room.

Chi Liu had been summoned, and after hearing Chi Shang’s intention, he said with an awkward expression: “Lord, is that good? Our Chi clan and Wu clan’s relation... is still quite good. At least, even with Wu clan’s current situation, our Chi clan has been maintaining neutrality.”

“So what? Other clans can make a move, but our Chi clan can’t?” Chi Shang was getting angry.

Chi Liu thought to himself: “Lord Chi Shang is truly like what the rumors said. What should I do now?”

While thinking, Chi Liu said: “I understand lord’s mood, but over here, hehe, we have some business where we have been closely collaborating with Wu clan. If we just suddenly fall out...”

Chi Shang immediately came to a realization.

“Oh.”

“You are talking about the dream realm business?”

Chi Liu nodded: “Lord is wise.”

Wu clan wanted to do dream realm business for some income under the table, but how could their actions be unnoticed by Chi clan?

The Immortal Gu used in this super Gu formation belonged to Southern Border’s super clans, but the Gu formation itself was personally set up by Chi clan’s first supreme elder.

Although Chi clan contributed few Immortal Gu, as far as this super Gu formation was concerned, they had an enormous influence.

Thus, Wu clan had to bring in Chi clan if they wanted to do this dream realm business. Chi clan’s Gu Immortals had much more understanding of the Gu formation, if they were not brought in, this business could not be done.

Chi Shang sighed inwardly: “No wonder first supreme elder had once said that it is hard to fathom the minds of people. Sigh, Chi Liu is a fellow Chi clan Gu Immortal, but for personal gains, he is actually not standing on my side.”

His expression was gloomy, it was hard to resolve the matter now.

He wanted to publicly fall out with Fang Yuan, but he encountered an obstacle in the first step. What should he do now?

For a moment, Chi Shang was quite helpless.

Because he had taken a position here all of a sudden and had always taken cultivation as his main goal. He had very little contact with other Chi clan Gu Immortals and was always focused on researching formation path, his influence in Chi clan was quite small and could even be said to be the smallest influence among rank seven Gu Immortals.

It was also the first time he had come to this super Gu formation, now, with his lack of connections, as a grand rank seven Gu Immortal, he was actually unable to mobilize Chi Liu.

Chi Liu’s mood was quite bad, disobeying a rank seven Gu Immortal, especially when the latter was an important future hope of the clan, he naturally did not feel good.

However, people in low positions naturally had their own survival methods.

Chi Liu thought for a bit and said: “Lord, it is not that I don’t want to do this matter on your behalf. It is just that your status is high, once this matter is proclaimed, it will have a great impact. How about this, please let me inform Lord Chi Gui about this matter. He is the leader here, we will listen to his decision, what do you think?”

Chi Liu’s tone was humble and polite, and was even subtly flattering Chi Shang.

Chi Shang felt extremely comforted upon hearing this, and nodded: “Alright, then let’s see what Lord Chi Gui says.”

Chi Gui’s brows furrowed when he heard Chi Liu’s report.

A fight over a woman, nobody would feel good about involving themselves in a dispute merely over this.

Chi Gui felt quite troubled.

On one hand, his clansman was Chi Shang, he had to show respect because Chi clan’s first supreme elder was behind Chi Shang.

On the other hand, if they really escalated this matter, it would no longer be a personal matter, but a political one which could affect the diplomatic relations between Wu clan and Chi clan.

This was a world where the strong were respected and where one individual’s strength could surpass a group’s.

Thus, politics was also determined by individuals.

Chi Shang and Wu Yi Hai had very high status, a conflict between them was a conflict between Wu clan and Chi clan.

This was not exaggerated at all.

“Especially Wu clan, it is in a difficult situation, being harassed from all sides. If, at this time, my Chi clan joins in, it will damage the neutrality of Chi clan, and not to mention that we will gain poor reputation for kicking someone when they are down, it will also worsen our relation with Wu clan, harming my clan’s interests.”

“But I also have to appease Chi Shang...”

Chi Gui racked his brains for a while before he actually thought of an idea.

He then secretly gave his idea to Chi Shang: “We cannot make this a big issue, otherwise, the impact will be very bad. Even if we win, we will be making a joke of ourselves. This is, after all, a personal matter, we should deal with this privately. You can tell Fairy Si Liu about the situation. Wu Yi Hai also has affection towards Qiao Si Liu, if you can ask her to be the witness, Wu Yi Hai would absolutely not dare to act shamelessly.”

Chi Shang slapped his thigh and shouted: “Great idea!”

Chi Gui smiled, slightly pleased with himself.

From what Chi Gui saw, this method had even more allure to Chi Shang — who did not want to ruthlessly crush their love rival in front of the girl they loved, and gain her attention.

Soon, Chi Shang informed Qiao Si Liu of the matter through an information path Gu worm.

Regardless of what was going on with Fang Yuan, Chi Shang immediately felt enormous pressure.

“Now, Fairy Si Liu knows of this. This is a duel between gentlemen and it was he, Wu Yi Hai, who sent the challenge, she should not feel disgusted, right?”

“I need to quickly complete Wu Yi Hai’s challenge!”

“This is my specialty, I absolutely cannot lose.”

The enormous pressure became a huge motivation for Chi Shang.

He started concentrating on the problem.

“Is this another part?”

“It has a slight relation to the previous part of that Gu formation.”

“It is likely the whole Gu formation was divided into two parts. Damn it, if I knew the whole Gu formation, it would have been much easier. Now, I can only deduce according to this part.”

He was getting a headache!

Chi Shang began to use his methods.

He was a formation path Gu Immortal who knew a mystical Gu formation taught to him personally by first supreme elder.

This Gu formation used wisdom path Gu worms as the core, while the supplementary

Gu worm was an Immortal Gu.

Normally speaking, be it an immortal killer move or an immortal Gu formation, both used Immortal Gu as the core and mortal Gu as supplementary. However, this Gu formation actually did the opposite.

The supplementary Immortal Gu used was a water path Immortal Gu named Sweat.

The Gu formation’s name was wisdom sweat formation. It slowly activated as Chi Shang poured in his immortal essence.

There were no gorgeous lights or sparkles, instead, an intriguing smell that seemed somewhere between fragrant and foul was formed.

The smell grew more intense, shrouding Chi Shang. Gradually, the smell condensed into a fog which covered Chi Shang’s face, making him unable to see anything.

For three days and nights, Chi Shang did not sleep or rest, continuing to deduce.

Finally, the fog dissipated and the Gu formation stopped, some mortal Gu were expended and dead, only about ten percent of them remained, which Chi Shang stored back into his immortal aperture, among them was sweat Immortal Gu.

Chi Shang’s whole body was soaked with sweat, as if he had been drenched in a rainstorm, his face also looked pale.

But his eyes were shining brightly.

All of a sudden, he raised his head and laughed loudly: “Hahaha. I finally solved it, I will see how you can get out of this, Wu Yi Hai!”

After a while, Fang Yuan received the letter.

“Oh, he got smarter, using Qiao Si Liu to create difficulties for me?”

“Unfortunately, my goal is not her, this little threat is useless.”

Fang Yuan soon praised once again.

“Interesting, interesting, this solution is indeed a good method!”

“But why could I not think of it?”

Although Fang Yuan obtained the answer, he did not focus on it, instead he started to evaluate himself.

There were many areas in Chi Shang’s solution that Fang Yuan had not been able to grasp. Formation path was extremely vast, the inheritances Fang Yuan obtained were only of mortal level, it was natural for him to not be able to grasp them.

As for Chi clan, they would not lack immortal level formation path inheritances. Moreover, with generations of development, and innovating new things based on the original foundation, they were Southern Border’s number one force in formation path.

“But even if I don’t have immortal inheritances, if my attainment level can reach grandmaster, I should also be able to solve this problem.”

Attainment level was one’s understanding of the essence of the Great Dao.

A simple analogy would be the solving of a mathematical problem.

Fang Yuan wanted to modify the Gu formation and achieve his goal, it was like he wanted to reach a number, for example 5.

Despite having the Gu worms, he did not know how to obtain 5. At this time, Chi Shang’s answer was 2+3=5.

Fang Yuan came to a realization that he could achieve his target like this.

If his attainment level was enough, even if he did not know, he could rely on his instincts to understand the question from parts, to extrapolate information and obtain the answer of 2+3=5, or 10/2=5.

Naturally, Gu formations were not as simple as this, especially when there were many Gu worms involved, it became harder to arrange them successfully.

The contents of Gu formations were complicated and varied. There were simple Gu formations, compound Gu formations as well as formations within formations, depending on the form, there were square formations, circular formations and so on, depending on the activation style, there were instant activation formations and delayed activation formations. Then, they were divided further according to paths, fire formations, water formations and so on. Some Gu formations were like towers, with layers upon layers of designs. Some Gu formations were easy to modify and were like a set of clothes, modifying them were like sewing a patch. Some Gu formations could not be modified, they were like building blocks and changing one of them could cause the whole Gu formation to collapse. If one sub-divided the Gu formations, the Gu worms involved would become even more complicated. For example, some Gu worms needed to be used together, while some had to be dispersed to influence their respective targets.

By the night of the second day, the eagerly waiting Chi Shang received Fang Yuan’s reply.

“This time, with Fairy Si Liu as the witness, I want to see how you will act shamelessly!” Chi Shang impatiently sent his consciousness into the information path mortal Gu.

His face soon brightened up.

Because Fang Yuan had admitted his capabilities in the letter and that he was indeed worthy of Fairy Si Liu’s admiration. But, Fang Yuan had also written that Wu clan had people that could do this, and it was not anything strange.

Chi Shang frowned when he saw this, but he was unable to retort since Wu clan indeed had people who could solve the problem.

At this moment, he saw the last paragraph of the letter.

Fang Yuan had put forward a problem again. Moreover, he promised that if Chi Shang could solve this, he would admit Chi Shang was superior to him, even in front of Fairy Si Liu, he would admit he was inferior.

Chi Shang started to breathe in deeply.

He imagined the situation, when he and Wu Yi Hai appeared in front of Qiao Si Liu at the same time, with Wu Yi Hai cupping his fists and saying: I am inferior to you.

A love rival admitting he was inferior.

The more Chi Shang thought of this, the more moved he became.

“Wu Yi Hai has a high status, he is my biggest rival.”

“I can win this and defeat him.”

“More importantly, Fairy Si Liu is the witness, I don’t have to be afraid of Wu Yi Hai reneging on his promise!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1330: So It Cannot Be Solved

Wisdom sweat formation.

Chi Shang set up this Gu formation again, doing his utmost to deduce the formation.

But this time, he met with an unforeseen challenge!

Difficult, it was really difficult, even the first two rounds added together and multiplied by ten could not match this.

Chi Shang felt like he was a baby trying to ascend a tall mountain.

“This difficulty... no wonder Wu Yi Hai is so confident!”

“It is related to the contents of the first two Gu formations.”

“No, I must use this chance to humiliate Wu Yi Hai. I will make him admit that he is inferior to me in front of Fairy Si Liu!”

After a day and a night, Chi Shang’s eyes were filled with blood vessels, he was doing his best to try and tackle this problem.

At the same time, Fang Yuan was thinking.

“This difficulty, it has likely surpassed the limits of grandmaster attainment level?”

Not long ago, Fang Yuan received Chi Shang’s help, he was able to modify the Gu formation of the coiling thread caves, he took a huge step forward, there was an immense breakthrough.

However, right before succeeding, Fang Yuan was met with an unprecedented obstacle.

If the first problem was a pit, the second was a mound, and this final obstacle was a mountain.

Only by climbing to the top and removing the obstacle could he complete the modification of this Gu formation.

This obstacle greatly surpassed Fang Yuan’s expectations.

“Hmm... my initial estimation was that if the Gu formation could be deduced, the regretful spider production would be doubled three times.”

That was not the same as three times as much. It would increase by seven times, becoming eight times the production of the initial size.

This growth was terrifying. When the Gu formation was created, he would have seven extra coiling thread caves out of nowhere.

Fang Yuan’s plan was wonderful, but the realization of it was met with great difficulty.

The first two steps, he managed to complete, but now, he had no clue.

He was just a step from success, how could Fang Yuan give up now? Thus, he placed his attention on Chi Shang.

Many days later, the wisdom sweat formation stopped.

Chi Shang’s expression was pale.

His gaze was drifting, there was no light in his eyes.

“Damn it!!” His hair was messy, like growing weed, his expression was of frustration, he gritted his teeth.

Even though he gave it his all, he did not succeed.

This way, he could not beat Fang Yuan, and worse, Qiao Si Liu knew of this third challenge, Chi Shang had already bragged that he would resolve this problem.

If he failed, forget about Wu Yi Hai, but how would he face Qiao Si Liu from now on?

Chi Shang felt an unforeseen pressure weighing on him.

He quickly ate and rested before going back to his deductions again.

Chi clan.

It was to the west of Southern Border, or rather, it was towards the west of all the super forces currently in Southern Border.

Yang clan was the neighbor of Chi clan.

This clan was a neighbor of Wu clan, and was finding trouble with Wu clan recently, conflict arose due to a wild Immortal Gu.

Chi clan, Yang clan, Wu clan.

Following the basic rule of making friends with those far away and making enemies with those close by, Chi clan and Wu clan had always had a good relationship.

The newest information was sent to Chi clan’s first supreme elder, Chi Qu You.

Chi Qu You took a look and frowned.

This intel was talking about none other than the challenge from Fang Yuan to Chi Shang in the super Gu formation.

Inside the super Gu formation, Chi clan’s leader, Chi Gui, was afraid that conflict between Fang Yuan and Chi Shang would escalate, he had wisely reported this incident to Chi Qu You.

This way, even if the situation worsens, Chi Gui’s responsibility would be lowered, after all, he had informed them.

Chi Qu You would divert a portion of his attention to this conflict while he was dealing with complex political matters.

After all, both sides had extraordinary statuses, if this was handled improperly, it would escalate further.

“Chi Shang is troubled, this Gu formation problem is... beyond the abilities of a grandmaster.”

The information had recorded Fang Yuan’s third formation path issue.

Chi Qu You was a great grandmaster, he only needed a look to spot the difficulty of this problem.

“Together with the first two problems, Wu Yi Hai is trying to create a Gu formation to farm resources. But this person who made the Gu formation is too greedy, they have insufficient attainment level and cannot notice it.”

“If I do not say anything to him... with Chi Shang’s obsessive nature, he would continue to research it, if he gets injured from this, he might even die.”

“Is this Wu clan’s scheme?”

“They can see Chi Shang’s potential, so they are trying to eliminate our future hope?”

“Mm... with Wu clan’s current situation, it is unlikely. But I cannot be careless.”

Chi Qu You thought of this, a sharp light shined in his eyes, he muttered: “It seems I have to do something.”

A moment later, Chi Gui visited Chi Shang, bringing with him an information path Immortal Gu from Chi Qu You.

“This is first supreme elder’s instruction, I have to pass this Immortal Gu to you.” Chi Gui said.

Chi Shang blankly received the Immortal Gu, after looking into it, he saw the details and his expression changed, he cried out in surprise: “This is the immortal inheritance left by secluded cultivator Tu Yuan. His earth water wind fire four elements formation is unique to him alone. But it had little reputation, because he kept a low profile, few people knew of it. First supreme elder actually gave this immortal inheritance to me! I asked for it so many times but I did not succeed in the past.”

Chi Shang was so excited, he looked into the immortal true inheritance without caring about the outside world.

When he snapped back to awareness, a long time had passed, it was night time already.

“Time passed really quickly, hmm? When did supreme elder Chi Gui leave, hmm, forget it.” Chi Shang’s eyes shined brightly, unable to be looked at directly.

Chi clan first supreme elder’s true inheritance came at a timely moment, it was what Chi Shang needed most right now.

Chi Shang was filled with admiration and gratitude towards Chi Qu You.

"So first supreme elder has been taking notice of me all along."

"He saw that I was in trouble, so he helped me."

"Is this cheating?"

"Probably not. First supreme elder did not help me directly, he only gave me a true inheritance. The inspiration to solve the problem was thought of by me."

"Mm, that's it! I have wasted enough time, I need to quickly resolve this problem and show Wu Yi Hai what I'm capable of!"

Chi Shang was excited and driven, he used the wisdom sweat formation again.

Two days passed, the Gu formation stopped working as Chi Shang walked out angrily.

"So this Gu formation problem cannot be solved!"

"Wu Yi Hai, you dare to scam me!"

"Too devious, too scheming!!"

"Thankfully, with first supreme elder's guidance, I exposed this truth."

Thinking of this, Chi Shang gritted his teeth, he had suffered a lot these last days, he barely slept at all, he was invested in the problem.

But then, he realized this was unsolvable.

Chi Shang felt that Wu Yi Hai had toyed with him, he was very angry.

But soon, he laughed: "That's right, this problem cannot be solved, as long as I expose this fact, I win. In fact, I can tell Fairy Si Liu about this, and embarrass this devious Wu Yi Hai."

Chi Shang immediately acted upon it, sending out two information path mortal Gu.

Fang Yuan received two information path mortal Gu immediately.

The first one was from Qiao Si Liu.

It was not unexpected that Qiao Si Liu sent a letter, after looking at it, he was a bit puzzled.

But then, he thought of something and looked at Chi Shang's letter.

Fang Yuan realized at once.

"This Chi Shang has improved, he actually went to complain about me, telling Qiao Si Liu about the result of this challenge, before sending me this letter. This way, he can prevent me from retaliating? He really has improved."

Fang Yuan's smile faded.

The result was unexpected.

His Gu formation had no solution!

This was a common situation.

Before a deduction succeeds, any new Gu recipe, killer move, Gu formation, they could be unsolvable, they could be impossible to complete. They were merely illusions, there was no possible way of success.

Some problems were easy to tell, but others were not so obvious.

Especially formation path, it used too many Gu worms and paths, it was too complex. Some ideas could not be exposed as unsolvable until the very end.

“Multiplying my production eight times, this idea is hoping for too much, it is not possible.”

“Since it is unsolvable, I can only abandon it and find a new modification.”

“But forget about it now.”

“Since I lost the challenge, I should invite Chi Shang over. This person is quite interesting.”

Chi Shang did not even think about it, he agreed to go over for the banquet.

His attitude was different from before.

Initially, he thought that Fang Yuan was too arrogant, he refused to go. But now, he was the winner, he felt that this was an apology banquet, he had to go with the attitude of a winner, to savor the feelings of the loser.

Thus, when he saw Fang Yuan, his first words were: “Wu Yi Hai, will you relent now?”

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose, smiling: “Of course, of course, you are a genius, why would I not relent?”

Chi Shang was shocked, he did not expect Fang Yuan to act like this, he admitted his defeat.

He did not know what to do now. Before this, he had thought of many possible outcomes, and how to deal with Fang Yuan’s excuses.

But now, Fang Yuan admitted his defeat, he relented.

Chi Shang felt like he had nothing to say now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1331: Inviting Chi Shang Over

The banquet started.

In this small hall, there was only Fang Yuan, Wu An, and Chi Shang, three Gu Immortals. Wu An naturally did not play a key role, the only important thing was that Fang Yuan and Chi Shang were interacting.

Fang Yuan toasted Chi Shang, speaking politely with a smile, he expressed a lot of admiration and praise towards Chi Shang’s formation path attainment.

After smiling and admitting defeat, could Chi Shang bear to give him a hard time?

Chi Shang was straightforward and unguarded, unschooled in interacting with others, he drank a lot of wine.

He assessed Fang Yuan, looking at him in a different perspective.

“This Wu Yi Hai is quite a friendly guy. What happened earlier? Was he trying to purposely anger me? Or does he have a request of me?” Chi Shang thought to himself.

“I will not hide it, Chi Shang, talented people like you are the people I admire the most!” Fang Yuan laughed, toasting.

Chi Shang raised his cup and drank before Fang Yuan even drank.

The toasting from earlier had already made Chi Shang used to this subconsciously.

But Fang Yuan’s words were nice to hear. Especially when they were love rivals, such praise made Chi Shang feel deep accomplishment.

“No.”

“I must be alert!”

“This Wu Yi Hai might be acting, he is very scheming.”

Chi Shang did not let down his guard, but no matter how he looked at it, Fang Yuan’s smile was full of sincerity.

Hehe, forget about Fang Yuan’s acting skills, but don’t forget attitude Gu.

“Chi Shang, take a look.” Fang Yuan stretched out his arm, handing over an information path mortal Gu to Chi Shang.

“What is this?” Chi Shang muttered, he looked into it and his expression changed.

As it turned out, this was an information path mortal Gu that Fang Yuan was going to send to Qiao Si Liu. He praised Chi Shang in the letter, his admiration was overwhelming, he admitted his own insufficiencies, using formation path questions to challenge Chi Shang was just him overestimating himself, he was truly ignorant and could not see Mount Tai, Chi Shang was a true Southern Border hero.

There was no such thing as ‘Mount Tai’ in this world, but the meaning was the same.

After Chi Shang saw this letter, he felt embarrassed.

Fang Yuan’s praise was too exaggerated.

“Am I really so good?”

“Southern Border hero, why have I never thought of that.”

“What would Fairy Si Liu think after she sees this?”

All sorts of thoughts appeared, Chi Shang could not contain his emotions.

When he looked at Fang Yuan again, his gaze transformed.

Fang Yuan directly sat beside him, Chi Shang did not feel any dislike towards this closeness.

“Chi Shang, throughout the Southern Border Gu Immortal world, only you are talented enough for Fairy Si Liu, I am truly in admiration!” Fang Yuan laughed loudly.

“Oh?” Chi Shang did not know what to say, he had joy on his face but also suspicions.

Fang Yuan said again: “But I will not give up, all gentlemen may pursue beautiful and clever women, even though I am less talented than you, I will work harder. You won this time, but we will compete fairly again in the future! What do you think?”

Hearing this, Chi Shang’s suspicions faded, he raised his cup for the first time and tasted Fang Yuan: “Yes, fair competition! A contest between gentlemen should be fair and square.”

Saying this, he treated Fang Yuan as a gentleman.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, patting his shoulders: “To speak the truth, I hate the other competitors, but you are different. You are so talented and upright, I admire you. If you can get Fairy Si Liu’s love, I will bless you two, because I know that I did not lose unfairly! As for the others, they are just clowns.”

Chi Shang was embarrassed from being praised, he rubbed his nose, saying: “Actually, some of them are quite strong.”

“Friends are often made after a fight, come, drink!” Fang Yuan raised his cup.

Chi Shang acted even more openly: “Drink!”

He raised his head and gulped, drinking all of the wine in one mouthful.

Next, he burped, his face turned red.

“Awesome!” Fang Yuan gave a thumbs up, pouring wine for Chi Shang again.

He smiled sincerely and enthusiastically, he was very friendly.

But the truth was, he was calm in his mind, he thought about Chi Shang’s information.

Wu clan’s intelligence was very reliable.

Fang Yuan knew long ago: This Chi Shang had been noticed by Chi Qu You when he was young, he saw the talent that Chi Shang had in formation path, thus he nurtured him deeply.

Chi Shang was known as the ‘formation devotee’.

He was chosen when he was a youth, he was sent into a cave in Myriad Snake Mountain to study. He stayed there for thirty years.

When he was forty, he came out and had rank three cultivation level, but he surpassed rank four and five Gu Masters in creating formations, his formation path attainment shocked the entire Chi clan.

Next, his clansmen realized that Chi Shang had actually come out of seclusion because he lost his way and accidentally left the mountain.

His performance resulted in great fame, fortune and women came to him, but he rejected them all, his only request was to return to the cave and continue his formation path research.

This alerted the supreme elders.

Chi Qu You permitted Chi Shang’s request, creating a cave solely for him, with attendants and servants to cater to him.

Chi Shang continued his research, he was so engrossed in it, it was shocking, as if formation path was the only joy in his life.

He was invested in it, regardless of what happened outside, he only stayed in his cave, engrossed in his formation path cultivation without seeing daylight.

When his hair turned white and his lifespan was ending, Chi Qu You came to see him and asked: “In this life, did you regret anything? Do you have any requests before dying?

Chi Shang cried loudly, saying: “Life is too short, a hundred years passes by too quickly, my formation path research still has many things left to do, how can I rest in peace? This is my biggest regret.”

Chi Qu You sighed in admiration, granting him a lifespan Gu.

Chi Shang obtained it, regaining his youth and lifespan.

Chi Qu You talked to him about formation path, guiding him for three days and three nights before confirming that Chi Shang was the clan’s future hope, his formation path attainment could reach great grandmaster in the future!

Chi Qu You did not just say it, he acted on it, nurturing Chi Shang with a lot of resources from the clan.

With the clan’s help, Chi Shang’s cultivation level rose rapidly, he became an immortal. In a few decades, he became a rank seven Gu Immortal.

Even though he became an immortal, his living habits did not change at all.

He was still invested in formation path, he continued to research it endlessly, his closed cultivations lasted from years to over a decade.

The only shocking thing was that he pursued Qiao Si Liu with a firm attitude.

When news got out, Chi clan was taken aback, to think that other than formation path, Chi Shang actually liked women!

After getting Wu clan’s intelligence, Fang Yuan thought that Chi Shang was an interesting person.

With this knowledge, he used a special method to deal with Chi Shang instead.

He did not meet with Chi Shang earlier, it was part of Fang Yuan’s scheme. He purposely used the formation path problem to challenge him, that was the second step, and this third step was the banquet.

Chi Shang’s performance was not out of Fang Yuan’s expectations.

Everything progressed according to plan.

Not long ago, Qiao Si Liu had sent a letter according to Fang Yuan’s expectations. As the person involved, Qiao Si Liu had to express her attitude clearly.

Even though she did not state it, in the letter, she talked about her first encounter with Chi Shang.

According to Qiao Si Liu, back then, she visited Chi clan with Qiao clan’s orders, she was attended to by Chi clan first supreme elder’s son, Gu Immortal Chi Bang.

But to think that this Chi Bang was hitting on Qiao Si Liu by using the beautiful scenery and some poems.

If this were normal times, Qiao Si Liu might not get mad, but now, she was the envoy from Qiao clan, Chi Bang’s actions were disrespectful to Qiao clan, Qiao Si Liu felt resentment towards him.

To deal with him, Qiao Si Liu purposely got closer to Chi Shang.

Chi Bang was Chi Qu You’s son, the supposed next first supreme elder of Chi clan, he had the second highest authority in the clan, nobody dared to trifle with him except the formation devotee Chi Shang.

Chi Shang did not know about the issue, he had no interest in Qiao Si Liu initially, but she purposely talked to him about formation path, and even explained some of Qiao clan’s formation path knowledge.

Chi Shang was deeply attracted, he gained a lot of interest.

Qiao Si Liu used Chi Shang to deal with Chi Bang, Chi Bang could not do anything, he could only apologize to Qiao Si Liu secretly.

Qiao Si Liu completed the clan’s mission and returned in success, also gaining a suitor in Chi Shang.

Qiao Si Liu’s letter gave Fang Yuan important information, he gained a clearer understanding of Chi clan’s internal affairs.

“Chi clan’s first supreme elder has limited lifespan, he can no longer use lifespan Gu, but his son, Chi Bang, became an immortal due to his protection, he has limited capability.”

“Chi Qu You knows about his son’s abilities, but he wants him to become Chi clan’s future first supreme elder, thus, after noticing Chi Shang’s personality and talent, he decided to invest in him and nurture this formation devotee.”

“As long as the formation devotee protects him, Chi Bang will have a good chance of staying first supreme elder. And the formation devotee’s admiration and gratitude towards Chi Qu You will make him unable to escape the control of Chi Bang.”

“Kinship... hehe.”

Qiao Si Liu’s letter showed Chi clan’s internal political conflicts to Fang Yuan.

And because of this problem, a genius like Chi Shang emerged. At the same time, some questions that Fang Yuan had was answered.

“Come! Wu Yi Hai, let me toast you.” At this time, Chi Shang toasted Fang Yuan for the first time, breaking his train of thought.

Chi Shang continued: “You are a very sincere person, when Fairy Si Liu and I get together, you do not need to be too upset. You are very talented, there are lots of women in the world, but few are well learned about formation path!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1332: Happy Host and Guest

Chi Shang drank a lot, his face was red, he spoke a lot.

It seemed that after defeating Fang Yuan in this contest, his confidence had risen sharply, he felt that he could obtain the love of his life.

Gu Immortals had all sorts of methods to prevent getting drunk. But that way, the joy of drinking would be gone, and it was very rude to their drinking buddies.

Fang Yuan quickly raised his cup, drinking the wine as he smiled: “If that is the case, I will admit I am unlucky, it was too bad that I had a competitor like you! Sigh...”

Fang Yuan sighed to himself, as if lamenting that the heavens saw fit to put someone so gifted in his way, he expressed that sentiment fully in his act.

Chi Shang laughed loudly, stretching out his arm and patting Fang Yuan’s shoulder, consoling him.

Fang Yuan laughed internally.

This Chi Shang was so innocent and pure.

This matter was decided long ago.

As long as Fang Yuan agreed, Qiao Si Liu would enter his embrace, this was a certain thing.

But Qiao Si Liu did not express her intention clearly, because this fairy had her schemes and pride, she wanted to play hard to get, so as to raise her own value.

Actually, Fang Yuan could tell very clearly.

Like this time, Qiao Si Liu’s letter was the expression of her attitude.

“Qiao Si Liu is seeing that Chi Shang and I are competing, she is very happy about it. Earlier, she had been watching on the fence, this suited her intentions.”

“When I lost, she then took the initiative to tell me about the situation between her and Chi Shang. She wants to console me and let me know that she has no feelings for Chi Shang. It was his one sided affection.”

“But this clever woman did not state her attitude clearly, she just talked about a fact to show her purity, while showing that she had a lot of value to her suitors.”

It was natural instinct for men to pursue women. How many men pursued her, and the type of men that went after her, these somewhat determined the perceived value of a woman.

“Qiao Si Liu is seeking to be with me, this is not her personal wish, but the political desire of Qiao clan.”

“And with just this, I am already ahead of all her suitors.”

“No matter how many times I fail, no matter how many women I go after, no matter how weak I am, even if I make a scene like during the moon festival, so what?”

“I am already victorious!”

“In fact, even if I go after another woman instead of Qiao Si Liu, she will turn around and pursue me instead.”

“Of course, this is not love, this is... politics!”

Fang Yuan sneered in his mind, he had seen through everything.

But he could not accept this ‘love’ from Qiao Si Liu.

Once he accepted it, he would be dragged into this vicious political spiral, he would no longer be simply Wu Yi Hai, he would be the key pawn that Qiao clan had inserted into Wu clan to fight for their own benefits.

Wu Yong would no longer give him such a relaxed environment like now, he would keep Fang Yuan under close observation, suppressing him and maintaining alertness against this brother.

If that happened, would Fang Yuan be able to enter the dream realms easily?

Evidently, he could not, he might even get exposed.

And that would lead to greater problems.

Once Fang Yuan’s identity was exposed, he would face the attacks of Qiao clan, because they were a righteous path force, they had to keep a clear distance from Fang Yuan, and Wu clan and Qiao clan would try to defend their own reputation by going after Fang Yuan with all their effort, far more than the other clans.

“However, even though I cannot accept it, and won’t accept it, I can make use of this ‘love’.”

Using Qiao Si Liu, Fang Yuan would make Wu Yong more alert, he would arrange for Fang Yuan to be sent back to the super Gu formation, Fang Yuan’s goal would be achieved.

Of course, there was nothing perfect in this world, even though this method was brilliant, it had its drawbacks.

Wu Yong’s alertness, Luo Mu Zi, Lun Fei, and Chi Shang, as well as Qiao Si Liu’s other suitors were all lingering problems.

There was pure love in this world, but it was indeed rare.

When people lived in this world, they had to consider many things.

Qiao Si Liu’s beauty, background, cultivation level and others, these were alluring temptations.

Among her suitors, Chi Shang was the purest, but he still considered the element of formation path, not to mention the others.

As for Fang Yuan, he was the most special one.

Chi Shang’s arrival was not out of Fang Yuan’s expectations.

In fact, he was mentally prepared.

Even without Chi Shang, others were going to come and find problems. Even if they did not come now, they would in the future.

Because Fang Yuan was approaching Qiao Si Liu, and the benefits associated with her, he angered many people. Among these people, there were suitors, and there were forces behind them after the benefits.

As the saying goes, beautiful women are trouble.

A beauty was not easy to pursue.

Only a naive person would think of using love and emotions to conquer a beauty.

Actually, there was far more.

A woman’s beauty was her natural dowry.

This dowry was extremely valuable, it was a huge amount of wealth.

Who would not want such wealth?

But not everyone could protect this wealth.

If a beauty was willing to give this wealth to her partner out of pure love, then this lucky person should treat her well.

But the truth was, such situations were too few.

If it happened, treasure it, if it didn’t, don’t bank on it.

This was not ‘unseemly’.

This was — reality.

When Fang Yuan returned to the super Gu formation, he started to think of how to settle the aftermath of this.

A true chessmaster would consider many steps ahead before even moving.

In fact, when Fang Yuan decided to use Qiao Si Liu’s ‘love’ to achieve his goals, he had already started to think of how to resolve the fallout of this issue.

If he handled it badly, Chi Shang would be only the first one here. The second, third, and so on, these people would be unending.

This would be huge interference for Fang Yuan’s exploration of the dream realm.

At the same time, Wu Yi Hai’s identity restricted Fang Yuan greatly in dealing with these challenges, he could not expose himself during the process.

Fang Yuan needed to resolve this problem carefully and accurately.

How?

It was difficult, and yet easy.

He would create a target, someone who would attract the attention of those suitors.

Fang Yuan had been expecting people to find trouble with him.

Chi Shang came here at such an opportune time, Fang Yuan was secretly happy about it.

When he looked through Chi Shang’s information, his joy increased by several times!

His opponent’s stupidity was his own fortune.

Of course, there was a point: Such stupidity had nothing to do with IQ or EQ.

There was a clear example from Earth, it was Yue Fei 1 .

Yue Fei went on a campaign, and when he was about to succeed, the emperor he served used twelve golden plaques to recall him back to the capital, and executed him on false charges.

The reason?

Was the emperor being stupid?

He was!

But were the emperor and officials idiots?

They were not!

If Yue Fei succeeded in his campaign, the reputation of his personal army would rise greatly, the emperor’s authority would be lower than this general, the threat was too big. And most importantly, if Yue Fei won, he would bring back the former emperor. Then what would the current emperor do?

And now, Chi clan’s first supreme elder, Chi Qu You, intentionally nurtured a Gu Immortal like Chi Shang, was he senile, did he not know that a person like Chi Shang, who was focused on researching formation path and had no capabilities in political conflicts, would eventually become a tool that was used?

He was not senile of course, he nurtured Chi Shang extensively precisely because he knew this.

Because his son needed to be the first supreme elder, he needed a ‘tool’ to assist his son, Chi Shang was the chosen one.

Many people thought that Chi Shang was Fang Yuan’s problem.

But that was not the case from Fang Yuan’s perspective, he felt like this was an opportunity.

If he handled this well, he would resolve all the future problems ahead, he would be able to peacefully explore the dream realm and raise his foundation for the following period of time.

Thus, Fang Yuan had to lose.

If he did not lose, how would he create the bigger threat than himself, Chi Shang?

Without this meat shield, how would he divert all of the attention away?

Chi Shang was the easiest to plot against.

From his information, Fang Yuan knew that Chi Shang loved to research formation path, he was most skilled in answering problems, and creating the necessary Gu formations.

Fang Yuan thus challenged him using this.

As a researcher, Chi Shang had his unique pride in this domain he was specialized in.

He could ignore everything else, he did not pay attention to his appearance, nor did he have any interest in fortune, but he cared about this. Because this was the meaning of his life!

Fang Yuan, a transformation path Gu Immortal, was using this to challenge him, this was a huge slap on Chi Shang’s face to begin with.

How could Chi Shang endure this?

He could not.

Thus, he fell into the trap that Fang Yuan had set, he could not climb out.

Not only was he stuck in the trap, he even toasted Fang Yuan, feeling that Fang Yuan was a very sincere person!

“You are a competitor, but, but what can I say? We are truly friends made after a fight, haha...” Chi Shang laughed, placing his arm around Fang Yuan’s shoulder.

“Enough talking, let’s drink!” Fang Yuan gulped.

Chi Shang stared at Fang Yuan with wide eyes, he gave a thumbs up and said: “Brother, you are so cool! Let’s drink!”

Both sides continued to empty their cups.

“Good wine.” Chi Shang sighed: “Sigh, to speak the truth, this is the first time I am drinking so much...”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, but he was unmoved inside.

The wine of the righteous path was not so easy to drink.

The demonic path fought and killed, they were direct in their actions. The banquets of the righteous path was shrouded in rumors and suspicions, they were filled with schemes and plots, all sorts of devious thoughts were like undercurrents, waiting to sweep unknowing prey into the abyss.

Fang Yuan lost the challenge to Chi Shang, but he was very happy, he spread news about this.

So what if he lost?

Sometimes, losing was a way to achieve one’s goals.

Chi Shang was also very happy, he felt that this was the happiest he had ever been in a banquet.

At once, both the host and guest were happy.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1333: Plunder Shadow

A joyous banquet was not the end, it was the beginning.

Fang Yuan and Chi Shang became good friends.

For the next few days, Fang Yuan frequently invited Chi Shang, and Chi Shang often came to Wu clan’s territory to visit Fang Yuan.

It was both easy and difficult to get close to someone and create a good relationship.

The key was simply lowering the status of oneself and accommodating to the other party’s wishes.

Fang Yuan was an old schemer, with attitude Gu in his possession, how could Chi Shang be his match?

Chi Shang was the ‘formation devotee’, he was not interested in ordinary Gu Immortals. But Fang Yuan was a formation path quasi-grandmaster, he had a connection to this formation path grandmaster.

Both parties conversed on the topic of formation path.

Chi Shang was soon amazed with Fang Yuan’s formation path attainment, he expressed his doubt at this. Because Fang Yuan was a transformation path cultivator.

But Fang Yuan told him: “I had always been interested in formation path, when I was a mortal, I researched formation path and primarily cultivated it due to some fortuitous encounters. But circumstances in life force twists and turns, later, I had to become a transformation path Gu Immortal. But I am already very lucky, after all, how many lone cultivators can become immortal?”

This helplessness made Chi Shang sigh deeply, he felt a deep sense of compassion towards Fang Yuan.

“If you want to cultivate formation path, I can help you. Chi clan has a few formation path Gu Immortals, I can intervene and transact formation path Immortal Gu for you.” Chi Shang stated.

It was not easy for him to offer this. This proved that Fang Yuan’s hard work had paid off.

It was possible to change paths, but the vital Gu had to be changed too.

Fang Yuan looked very moved: “If I want to change paths in the future, I will find you for help.”

Chi Shang nodded: “By then, just tell me!”

He knew that it was not easy for a Gu Immortal to change paths, it could not be done quickly, this was a huge matter and needed a lot of aspects to be considered. There were also negative repercussions on the immortal aperture as well.

While interacting with Chi Shang, Fang Yuan gained a lot of benefits.

Even though his attainment level did not increase, Fang Yuan’s knowledge did, his basic understanding of formation path had been supplemented, it was of huge help to him.

Fang Yuan gained a more comprehensive and deeper understanding of formation path.

What was the difference between Gu formations and killer moves?

Chi Shang told Fang Yuan: “Gu formations are a type of killer move. Killer moves use multiple Gu worms at the same time, Gu formations are the same. Gu formations are the killer moves of formation path, each Gu formation is a different killer move. Thus, formation path is the path with the most killer moves among all paths. Of course, Gu formations and killer moves have slight differences in details. For example, Gu formations last a longer time. And after a Gu formation is set up, the amount of mental energy the Gu Master uses up also decreases...”

“What is the essence of formation path?” Fang Yuan asked Chi Shang.

Chi Shang shook his head: “Even though I am a formation path grandmaster, I have insufficient attainment level to talk about the essence of formation path. But my clan’s Lord Chi Qu You had once told me, the essence of formation path is to create environments.”

Fang Yuan heard this and felt deeply enlightened.

The Gu formation of the coiling thread caves was precisely to nurture more regretful spiders by creating a new habitat and environment for them, right?

“It seems that formation path great grandmasters can use the natural dao marks of the surroundings to use fewer Gu worms in setting up their Gu formations. In some places with abundant natural dao marks, just using mortal Gu can form an immortal Gu formation. Is that true?” Fang Yuan asked Chi Shang again.

Chi Shang nodded, explaining patiently: “That is true. But actually, at our level, we can only use dao marks. Some Gu formations are not just built on the foundation of Gu worms but also Gu materials. But we can only use the dao marks inside the immortal materials to set up the Gu formation. After a long time passes, these immortal materials will be destroyed. Formation path great grandmasters are one step ahead, not only can they use immortal and mortal materials, they can also use the dao marks of the surroundings according to the environment.”

...

This conversation was a huge inspiration to Fang Yuan.

Thereafter, he attended to Chi Shang even more enthusiastically.

Fang Yuan soon realized that banquets were not very effective at improving their relationship, he might as well converse with him about formation path.

Sometimes, an intense discussion would incite the passion in Chi Shang's heart, and make him feel closer to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan also had another trump card, he wrote letters to Qiao Si Liu.

Every time he wrote a letter, he would praise Chi Shang and exclaim about his shocking formation path talent, and his incredible ingenuity.

Chi Shang was getting embarrassed from being praised, he looked at Fang Yuan in a different light, he thought that this person was truly a gentleman, conducting himself uprightly and with an open mind.

Returning the favor, he also wrote letters to Qiao Si Liu, praising Fang Yuan deeply, saying that he cultivated transformation path and even formation path alongside it, his attainment was so deep that he felt great admiration and surprise at it.

Qiao Si Liu: "..."

She looked at the letters she received, she felt that these two suitors were praising each other so much that they had forgotten about her!

She did not expect to see this situation, while she rolled her eyes to herself, she also wrote back letters of praise, especially towards their open-mindedness.

Undeniably, Fang Yuan and Chi Shang turned from enemies to friends, this transformation made everyone watching from the side feel deeply shocked.

Southern Border, Plunder Shadow Earth Trench.

This was a famous Earth Trench in Southern Border, because it had countless fierce dark path beasts, as well as shadow monsters that were renowned in Southern Border.

At the same time, this was also one of the most dangerous places in Southern Border.

Right now, deep within this Plunder Shadow Earth Trench, inside a certain cave.

"Ahhhhh..." A crazed old man with purple hair and messy clothes was running around barefoot in the cave, while screaming and making a din.

Plop.

Suddenly, he fell to the ground, and his body started to twist as he started to crawl like an earthworm.

After moving for a while, he suddenly stood up, laughing sheepishly.

But a moment later, his laughter stopped, his cloudy eyes regained clarity.

"Lord Purple, you are awake." Ying Wu Xie suddenly appeared in the cave, he sighed with a complex expression.

This crazed old man was Purple.

Shadow Sect's party of four had vanished after the battle of Reverse Flow River, they had returned to Southern Border at some point in time. They had even entered deep into Plunder Shadow Earth Trench.

Purple sighed deeply, he patted the soil on his body, his body shrunk to his miniman form with miniature wings.

“Call me Purple Mountain True Monarch, this will help our future actions.” Purple Mountain True Monarch said: “What information do you have now?”

Ying Wu Xie said: “Southern Border’s political situation is progressing according to our plan. But it is a pity, Chi Shang and Wu Yi Hai did not have an intense conflict, they even became good friends.”

“Oh?” Purple Mountain True Monarch was slightly surprised.

After looking at the information, he nodded: “This Wu Yi Hai is quite interesting, he primarily cultivates transformation path but also has enough formation path attainment to gain Chi Shang’s approval.”

“This would help him, but he could not defy Wu Yong, he was sent to the super Gu formation again.”

Ying Wu Xie nodded: “Wu Yong is a rank eight Gu Immortal with great authority now, Wu Yi Hai had just returned not long ago, he did not even join with Qiao clan, and cannot get their full support.”

“But this proves further that even though Wu Yi Hai is a lone cultivator, he has great ambitions. Because he got close to Qiao Si Liu, yet he did not get together with her, it shows that he has not agreed on the profit distribution with Qiao clan yet. Is his ambition something we can make use of?”

“Hmm...” Purple Mountain True Monarch thought about it: “We might be able to make use of this, but we know too little about this person. Right now, our plans on Wu clan should focus on Wu Yong. Wu clan is the number one force in Southern Border, they are the pillar of the righteous path, if they fall, Southern Border would have huge political turmoil. By then, we will take advantage of it and destroy the super Gu formation, we will be able to save our main body.”

It turned out that Wu clan’s political problems were not simple, Shadow Sect was behind them, causing many of the situations!

“Hmph! So what if Southern Border’s politics get into chaos?” Bai Ning Bing appeared outside the cave, having a cold expression: “With just the four of us, even if the super Gu formation only has four Gu Immortals defending it, it will be difficult. Furthermore, our main fighting strength is so unstable.”

Bai Ning Bing spoke without any politeness.

Even against the rank eight Purple Mountain True Monarch.

She was fearless, because when Fang Yuan chased after them, she had already set a new alliance agreement with Ying Wu Xie and the others, they were of equal status.

And Purple Mountain True Monarch’s constant insanity made the respect in her heart dwindle.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was unmoved, smiling: “Political unrest is not enough, of course, these righteous path forces are not stupid. But this is just to weaken the strength of the righteous path in the super Gu formation. The four of us are not enough, we are too short on manpower, so now, we will recruit people.”

“Recruit people?” Ying Wu Xie was surprised: “There are still hidden cards in Southern Border that I do not know about?”

Because he knew that Southern Border’s Shadow Sect forces were heavily crippled. If they wanted to attack the super Gu formation, these new members needed to have high power level, ordinary rank six Gu Immortals were simply useless.

But such people would definitely have been recruited when Ying Wu Xie was facing Fang Yuan's pursuit earlier.

Or even further back, if such people existed, when Spectral Soul defied heaven to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, they would have been used already, to deal with Central Continent's Gu Immortals."

Purple Mountain True Monarch nodded, before shaking his head: "Do you two know why I fall into insanity sometimes?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1334: Assimilating with Heaven's Will

Purple Mountain True Monarch suddenly changed the topic.

Bai Ning Bing did not speak, while Ying Wu Xie asked: "Is it not the interference of heaven's will?"

Purple Mountain True Monarch nodded: "It is heaven's will indeed, but I was the one who initiated it."

"What do you mean?" Bai Ning Bing heard this and showed shock on her face.

Hearing Purple Mountain True Monarch's words, it seemed like his insanity was due to his own actions.

Purple Mountain True Monarch sighed eerily, scenes of the past drifted in his mind: "In the past, along with the other first generation split souls, we found the major enemy was heaven's will, and tried to find ways to deal with it."

"I cultivated wisdom path, I was the leader of the split souls, I had to be the one to find a way to deal with heaven's will."

"Using a part of the true inheritance of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable that we found, and together with my wisdom path attainment, I devised a method, that was to assimilate with heaven's will."

"Assimilate with heaven's will?" Bai Ning Bing and Ying Wu Xie looked at each other, frowning.

"That's right, heaven's will is vast and immense, it is everywhere, back then, we had just started to interact with it, we did not know as many secrets and weaknesses of it as now. Back then, we were greatly restricted, the situation was worsening and getting more dangerous every day. More and more members died after being targeted by heaven's will, hope was turning bleak."

Purple Mountain True Monarch continued: "Left without a choice, I used this method that was not a proper solution. Since the enemy was so powerful, I pretended to surrender and infiltrate the enemy to obtain intelligence about it. After all, know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated."

Bai Ning Bing and Ying Wu Xie's eyes shone.

Even now, they could see the innovation of this method.

Heaven’s will was formless, Purple Mountain True Monarch actually wanted to infiltrate heaven’s will, it was truly an incredible idea.

Purple Mountain True Monarch did not just think about it, he did it!

Purple Mountain True Monarch continued explaining: “Heaven’s will, you must be clear of it. When grotto-heavens devour fragments of the nine heavens, heaven’s will enters, and any heavenly spirit inside would turn dull and robotic. The heavenly spirit becomes like this, it’s similar for Gu Immortals. Every time I assimilate with heaven’s will, I will become crazy and lose my sense of reason.”

“However, this is also why I can greatly reduce heaven’s will’s intention of killing me, and am able to live until now.”

“There is also one benefit of this, when I fuse with heaven’s will, I can clearly understand it and learn about its strengths and weaknesses.”

“When I learn about heaven’s will’s thoughts, I can see the planning of heaven’s will and am able to plot for myself and Shadow Sect.”

“The principle of heaven is to be merciless, it treats all beings as pawns. From the perspective of heaven’s will, all beings in this world are its chess pieces. And in this chessboard of destiny, there are some crucial points that attract my attention.”

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s explanation made both Bai Ning Bing and Ying Wu Xie deeply interested.

Because they had already sensed that Purple Mountain True Monarch’s following words were going to be very important.

As expected, Purple Mountain True Monarch continued: “I assimilated with heaven’s will, I found that in heaven’s will’s arrangements, there were some very crucial pawns. So every time I went crazy, I would use heaven’s will to get close to these pawns, and by the time I regain my senses, I would try to turn them over to my side, and use my own power to make them my pieces.”

“And in the battle not long ago, I believe you have already seen the use of one of these pawns.”

Bai Ning Bing’s body shook.

Ying Wu Xie said in realization: “Lord Purple Mountain True Monarch, you are talking about Tai Bai Yun Sheng?”

Purple Mountain True Monarch nodded: “That’s right, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was a crucial pawn in the chessboard of destiny, even though heaven’s will arranged it, I managed to influence him and eventually used his power to allow you all to escape.”

Tai Bai Yun Sheng had once met Purple Mountain True Monarch when he was a Gu Master, obtaining his true inheritance.

There were heaven’s will’s arrangements on him, and also Purple Mountain True Monarch’s influence.

Thus, when Fang Yuan was used by heaven’s will to return to the past and overturn Spectral Soul’s plan, Fang Yuan received Tai Bai Yun Sheng’s help during the process.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng submitted to Fang Yuan.

One of the reasons was Fang Yuan’s own intelligence. The other factor was heaven’s will.

But later, Tai Bai Yun Sheng separated from Fang Yuan, helping Shadow Sect instead.

This was because Fang Yuan betrayed heaven’s will, at the crucial moment, he did not destroy sovereign immortal fetus Gu, he used it for himself. Tai Bai Yun Sheng thus helped Shadow Sect greatly as a result of Purple Mountain True Monarch’s influence.

Tai Bai Yun Sheng died in battle, on the surface, it was due to Fang Yuan, but from another perspective, this was the sacrificial piece from the conflict between Shadow Sect and heaven’s will.

Ying Wu Xie heard this and finally understood Purple Mountain True Monarch’s intent.

He called out: “I get it, all these years, Lord Purple Mountain True Monarch has traveled the world, you influenced many crucial pawns, and now, they will be the strength to break the super Gu formation and rescue our main body!”

Purple Mountain True Monarch smiled lightly: “Precisely.”

Southern Border, super Gu formation.

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Central Continent.

An intense jade green light shot into the sky with an alluring fragrance.

Countless Gu worms were flying around in the jade light, just one look would make a person dizzy.

Fang Yuan maintained a high level of concentration, as time passed, a portion of the Gu worms stopped flying, they landed and fell underground.

More and more Gu worms went underground, they started to shine and resonated with the previous Gu worms, creating a mystical power.

The jade pillar of light shrunk and got fainter, at Fang Yuan’s will, an Immortal Gu flew out.

This Gu resembled a round pearl, it was as large as a goose egg, the pearl had countless markings on it that were moving around, they were brilliant like a blooming field of lotuses, or the rumbling of clouds.

It was rank six Immortal Gu Blood Asset.

Fang Yuan breathed roughly, the arrangement of the Gu formation had reached its most crucial moment.

Blood asset Immortal Gu slowly floated into the jade light.

Almost instantly, the jade light was dyed by blood asset Immortal Gu and turned blood red.

The red light got stronger and stronger, several breaths later, it reached an intensity that was on par with the jade light earlier.

Fang Yuan let out a breath, the most crucial step was over, he just had to follow the routine now.

The bright red pillar weakened before dissipating, but the fragrance still remained in the air, permeating the cave below.

This cave was huge, it was around 200000m2.

Deep underground, there was a few li of distance.

The cave was not completely sealed, there were a hundred tunnels that resembled air vents, connecting the cave to the outside world. On the surface of the ground, there were countless holes that were dark and deep, but they gave off fragrance.

“The Gu formation for the coiling thread caves is arranged! The creation of the coiling thread caves is half done.”

“Next, I have to move those regretful spiders over and start nurturing them.”

“This process would require the modification of the Gu formation, in a month or two, I will be done.”

Fang Yuan was filled with joy.

Chi Shang left this place and returned to Chi clan, as Fang Yuan continued his dream realm exploration.

In the formation path dream realm earlier, there were two scenes left, they were solved by Fang Yuan’s unravel dream killer move.

As he had expected, Fang Yuan’s formation path attainment level reached grandmaster!

Using his formation path grandmaster attainment level, as well as the immense gains from interacting with Chi Shang, Fang Yuan easily deduced a brand new coiling thread Gu formation.

This coiling thread Gu formation still used blood asset Immortal Gu, and the effect was only doubled.

Fang Yuan’s initial Gu formation concept could multiply his gains by eight, but this was not solvable. There was no way of setting it up.

Doubling it made Fang Yuan satisfied already.

He still had a lot of accumulations left, he could use unravel dream many times, and with Chi Shang leaving and diverting attention away for him, he could secretly explore dream realms now.

Fang Yuan treasured this rare opportunity, in the following days, he gave an excuse of going into closed cultivation in order to to delve into dream realms.

Right as he was laboriously exploring dream realms, shocking news came out that shook the Gu Immortals of all five regions.

Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects and Heavenly Court had lost!

They sent a powerful group to Northern Plains, but they did not manage to save Ma Hong Yun and even had a crushing defeat.

Out of the three rank eight Gu Immortals, Wei Ling Yang, Myriad Tidal Dragon and

Bi Chen Tian, two died while one went missing.

The one who killed the rank eight Gu Immortals was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s former steed, legendary immemorial desolate beast — Dog Tail Life Extending Ferret.

But Central Continent had survivors too.

Zhao Lian Yun, Yu Yi Ye Zi, Shi Zheng Yi and the rest were saved by Wei Ling Yang risking his life, they managed to hair-raisingly escape with their lives under the reinforcements of Central Continent later.

This news made the entire world shocked!

Central Continent’s foundation and strength was publicly recognized as the strongest in all five regions.

The ten great ancient sects were super forces which governed Central Continent, any one of them could defeat the average level of super clans or tribes in all five regions.

And Heavenly Court was in charge of the ten great ancient sects, not only did it rule Central Continent, its influence extended to the other four regions.

Its status in the hearts of Central Continent’s people was unshakeable. In the hearts of the people in the other four regions, it was the number one force in the world.

After all, it had three Immortal Venerables that were in it, which force in this world could match it?

But this extremely powerful Heavenly Court actually lost in Northern Plains.

After their shock, everyone learned about more information and expressed their understanding.

Because it was traditionally known that Northern Plains was tough and had high battle strength, and this time, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s descendants, Longevity Heaven, were the ones who fought!

As for Heavenly Court’s defeat, they had ventured into another region, their true strength had not been used.

In fact, the group from Heavenly Court that went to Northern Plains was not just fighting Longevity Heaven, they also fought against Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

But regardless of the reasons, they had lost, the reputations of Longevity Heaven and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable soared, while those of Heavenly Court and the ten great ancient sects fell drastically.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1335: Heavenly Court’s Countermeasure

“Wei Ling Yang and Bi Chen Tian died while Myriad Tidal Dragon escaped...”

Fang Yuan muttered.

Information was transmitted to him, in this super Gu formation, he was the person with the clearest understanding of that situation.

“Looking at the date, it is about time.”

“Heavenly Court went to Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world, which was represented by Longevity Heaven, Central Continent was dealt a huge blow as a result.”

“Dog tail life extending ferret... as expected of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s steed, its battle strength is truly fearsome.”

“Even though this raises Northern Plains’ morale, it is not a problem for Heavenly Court.”

With the five hundred years of his previous life, and experiencing the first half of the five regions chaotic war, Fang Yuan knew that Heavenly Court had immensely deep foundation. Compared to it, Longevity Heaven was just Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s grotto-heaven, its foundation was far less abundant.

“This kind of event is incredibly rare. It had never happened in my previous life.”

“After this, Northern Plains and Central Continent are basically enemies, or rather, Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court are on opposite sides.”

“And now, will Heavenly Court take revenge? If they do, it will be very interesting.”

Fang Yuan thought in his mind, continuing to deduce and try to find out the possible political outcomes.

Longevity Heaven came from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, while Heavenly Court had three Immortal Venerables, they were all righteous path forces, to think that they would attack each other so harshly.

Right now, the Gu Immortals of all five regions, and all the different forces, were focused on this matter.

They were focusing on Heavenly Court’s reaction.

According to conventional reasoning, Heavenly Court had to counterattack, because it was the number one Gu Immortal organization in the five regions. If it did not do anything, its reputation would fall.

But the five regional walls prevented any large scale war between Gu Immortals.

And most people did not know about Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

It was too difficult for Heavenly Court to attack.

Thus, whether it attacked or not, it had its own excuses.

And no matter what Heavenly Court chose, its next step would decide the direction that the five regions would progress towards.

Fang Yuan let out a sigh.

He had predicted this long ago.

Heavenly Court sent Gu Immortals to save Ma Hong Yun, they would definitely face the obstruction of Northern Plains' Gu Immortals. After Central Continent's Gu Immortals failed the rescue, they escaped back to Central Continent, and this battle, which had lasted a long time, finally reached a conclusion.

But when he received news of this, Fang Yuan felt something amiss.

There was something wrong.

But he could not state what the problem was.

“Perhaps, because everyone has changed so much because of my actions, there were too many chain reactions, and the advantage of my rebirth is shrinking, so I am feeling increasingly uneasy?”

The radiance of dream realm shone on Fang Yuan's face, his expression became dark and uncertain.

“No matter what, increasing my strength is most important.”

“Dream realm, here I come!”

Regardless of the situation outside, or how treacherous or uncertain it was, as long as he got stronger, Fang Yuan would feel safer.

His soul entered the dream.

Regaining his senses, Fang Yuan quickly found out that he was in the wilderness.

Night time.

The crescent moon emitted a cold light.

Wild dogs were barking, Fang Yuan was immobile, he was carried by two people from the front and back.

“What is the matter?” Realizing that he could not move, Fang Yuan started to assess the situation around him.

Grunt grunt...

Sounds that resembled a pig eating entered Fang Yuan's ears.

He soon realized that this weird sound came from the two who were carrying him.

These two weird people carried Fang Yuan until halfway up the mountain.

The dark clouds in the sky faded, using the cold moonlight, Fang Yuan found that the two strange people holding him up were not humans, they were two boar headed beastmen.

“In the current world, beastmen are extinct. Since beastmen appeared in this dream realm, what era is this?” A question appeared in Fang Yuan's mind.

Fang Yuan felt something amiss, he started to struggle but he soon realized that he was extremely weak, he was heavily injured.

He struggled intensely, but he only managed to move his body slightly.

“Grr! Grr!”

The two boar headed beastmen noticed Fang Yuan's movement and started to growl.

“Oh no!!” Fang Yuan cried out internally.

But the two beastmen were faster, they suddenly let go, Fang Yuan fell to the ground.

The intense pain almost made Fang Yuan faint on the spot.

Using his firm determination and willpower, Fang Yuan forced his eyes open and saw that the boar headed beastman in front of him raised his leg.

He stomped on Fang Yuan’s face as the shape of the boar leg enlarged in Fang Yuan’s vision.

Bam.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan’s entire head was smashed like a watermelon, blood flowed out with brain matter scattering everywhere.

“F*ck!” The dream realm exploration ended, Fang Yuan’s soul was injured, he was forced out.

“This means, I need to wait for my chance, I cannot act rashly?” Fang Yuan thought as he used guts Gu to heal himself.

Unravel dream had limited usage in numbers, the nightmare demonic colt immortal materials had already been expended.

But guts Gu was different, as long as he had Dang Hun Mountain, guts Gu was infinite in supply.

Thus, Fang Yuan was more willing to use guts Gu and suffer soul injuries than use unravel dream unnecessarily.

Soon, Fang Yuan’s soul healed, and he entered the dream realm again.

This time, Fang Yuan did not move, he allowed the two boar headed beastmen to carry him halfway up the mountain.

“Grr grr.” At a certain point, the boar headed beastmen stopped as one of them grunted.

The other one lifted Fang Yuan’s legs as he walked up.

Using the moonlight, Fang Yuan could see that these two boar headed beastmen were on the edge of a cliff.

“Oh no!” Fang Yuan was about to struggle when these two boar headed beastmen tossed Fang Yuan down the cliff.

Fang Yuan rapidly fell down the cliff.

“This is?!” His eyes were wide opened, the bottom of the cliff was a mass grave.

Countless corpses were casually lying around, the rotten corpses had a thick mist of foul smelling odor around them.

Before Fang Yuan could think anymore, plop.

With a loud sound, Fang Yuan fell to the bottom of the cliff.

He was crushed into meat paste, he was dead with a ruined corpse left behind.

Fang Yuan was forced out of the dream realm again.

“This dream realm, what is it exactly?”

While Fang Yuan was exploring the dream realm, in Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

“Lord Duke Long, please.” An old woman spoke, she had a hunched back, she was bending down, her hair was yellow like wheat, her face was wrinkled and her eyes were blurry.

She wore a yellow-brown robe, there was a ring of sand around her waist, she was standing before Duke Long reverently.

Duke Long was no longer in a weak state after taking away Di Zang Sheng’s life force, he was mighty and commanding now, he had regained his demeanor as the apex of a legend.

At this moment, he was looking at the tower in front of him as he nodded: “Granny Sha, you did well.”

This tower was Heaven Overseeing Tower.

A rank nine Immortal Gu House!

It had incredible reputation, it was famous throughout history.

Even though it was shattered in Southern Border, most of the Immortal Gu were preserved, after it was sent back to Heavenly Court, Gu Immortal Granny Sha woke up and had been refining Gu, repairing Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Right now, her work was done, Heaven Overseeing Tower was repaired completely!

“Lord Duke Long, please.” Granny Sha led the way.

Duke Long and Fairy Zi Wei followed, entering Heaven Overseeing Tower.

The white jade stairs spiralled upwards, it was no different from before.

But Heaven Overseeing Tower had not activated, so Duke Long and the others went up without anything happening.

When they got to the top of Heaven Overseeing Tower, the three Gu Immortals saw an Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu gave off an intense rank nine aura, it was like a spider, colored in black and white, there was a scarlet wound on its body that almost cut it in two.

What else was it but rank nine fate Immortal Gu?

This fate Immortal Gu was damaged by Red Lotus Demon Venerable using the power of love Immortal Gu, it almost died. But after the hard work of generations of Heavenly Court’s members, it had finally recovered to fifty percent during the last Central Continent Refinement Path Convention.

After reaching this point of qualitative change, fate Immortal Gu’s recovery speed was many times that of before.

Right now, even without success dao marks, it had recovered to sixty percent due to Granny Sha’s hard work.

“Good, very good, Granny Sha, you have contributed greatly to Heavenly Court, you have contributed greatly to humanity. I am sure that when Heavenly Court rules the five regions, your merits will be recorded in history and be revered by all descendants in the future.” Duke Long sighed with an appreciative tone.

Granny Sha smiled: “I am flattered, Lord Duke Long, I was merely contributing my meager strength. Furthermore, repairing Heaven Overseeing Tower was that old man’s wish too. Hehehe...”

Granny Sha laughed continuously as her body turned into sand while she laughed.

A wind started blowing from nowhere, causing the sand to scatter in the air.

Rank eight Gu Immortal Granny Sha, refinement path great grandmaster, had died at this moment!

She had little lifespan to begin with, when the previous generation Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord died, she woke up from shock, and contributed the last spark of her life to Heavenly Court.

Silence.

Another Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortal had sacrificed herself, during this period of time, Heavenly Court had sacrificed many members.

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes were slightly red.

Duke Long’s expression did not change, his body was straight like a ruler, he spoke: “In the passage of history, generations of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals have sacrificed themselves like this, to give a bright future to our descendants. Wei Ling Yang, Bi Chen Tian, they were sacrificed, Granny Sha was sacrificed, and in the future, the two of us will do the same.”

“Why has Heavenly Court always been the top Gu Immortal force? Other than the three Immortal Venerables, there is another important reason, that is, us Heavenly Court Gu Immortals are not afraid of sacrificing ourselves. Because we know that humanity needs us, everyone needs us, heaven and earth need us!”

Fairy Zi Wei breathed in deeply, trying to regain her calmness: “Then, Lord Duke Long, what do we do now?”

Duke Long shut his eyes, before opening them again: “The great era is beginning, some people cannot be allowed to live anymore.”

“But that Fang Yuan, Ying Wu Xie, Purple, and others are all crafty, we have no idea where they are now. It is too tough to deduce their locations with the obstruction of regional walls.” Fairy Zi Wei had a worried expression.

“No need to worry.” Duke Long waved his hand: “No matter where they are now, we both know that they will go to one place, the giant dream realm in Southern Border.”

“Forget about Northern Plains and Longevity Heaven, they are small problems.”

“We have to get rid of these largest threats first!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1336: Part Man Part Beast, Zuo Ye Hui

Cold moon and desolate mountain.

Two boar headed beastmen carried Fang Yuan up the mountain from the front and back.

Fang Yuan continued to observe, he did not act rashly.

“My body is a rank four Gu Master, I have an aperture and primeval essence but I have no Gu worms.”

“And I am heavily injured and extremely weak, even if I am in a healthy state, without any Gu worms, I am no match for these two boar headed beastmen.”

“However, once we get to the cliff, these two boar headed beastmen will toss me down. From this height, I will definitely die without the protection of any Gu worms, unless I had the sovereign immortal body.”

“Thus... my only hope of survival is on this road up the mountain?”

Immortal killer move — Unravel Dream!

After analyzing this, Fang Yuan used this trump card.

After activating unravel dream, Fang Yuan saw immediate effect.

He felt like he regained some strength at this instant. For example, he was like an adventurer who was about to die of thirst in the desert earlier, but now, he drank a few drops of water.

“There was an effect, but isn’t the strength I recovered too little?”

Fang Yuan had no choice, he could only use unravel dream again.

This time, some of his injuries had instantly formed scabs, the pain he was feeling became less intense.

But on his chest and back, there were still several deep wounds where bones could be seen, they were not recovering.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Fang Yuan had to use this immortal killer move continuously, his major injuries healed drastically, though they did not form scabs, his bleeding condition had ceased. He regained quite a bit of strength, his body had regained some warmth from its initial icy state.

But this did not give Fang Yuan any notable battle strength.

He was still a mortal now, he had primeval essence but he could not fight any of the boar headed beastmen alone.

Moreover, there were two boar headed beastmen, not just one.

“What is going on?”

“Immortal killer move unravel dream’s effect was so little?”

“I used it five times but this is all I got?”

Fang Yuan looked at the cliff that he was reaching, he made up his mind: “Forget it, I should take action first!”

His body bounced up like a lobster.

The two boar headed beastmen were caught by surprise and he managed to get free from them.

Fang Yuan landed on the ground, the tough rocks stabbed into his wounds as he almost fainted from pain.

The two boar headed beastmen had already reacted, they shouted as they pounced at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan used his profound fighting skills to dodge while escaping and running down the mountain.

The two beastmen chased after him.

In a while, the two boar beastmen found Fang Yuan.

Plop.

Two white boar tusks stabbed into Fang Yuan’s injuries on his back, penetrating out of his chest.

Fang Yuan stopped moving, blood flowed out of his mouth.

Soon after, his vision turned dark.

When he opened his eyes, he was in a hall.

He had returned to reality again, sent out of the dream realm.

His face was pale, his soul was injured, but what made Fang Yuan surprised was this strange dream realm.

“This dream realm is the most difficult one I have ever been in.”

“Even though it is a realistic dream realm, the difficulty is incredibly high.”

“As of now, I have not even finished exploring the first scene, and I have already died multiple times.”

“Unravel dream is also extremely weak in there, what is going on?”

This problem made Fang Yuan very perplexed.

He thought about it and could not deduce anything, he had to take a step back and think about how he could deal with the two beastmen and escape alive.

“The boar headed beastmen have huge bodies, if I can enter the forest, it would be easier. But this desolate mountain has no trees around, there are not even any piles of rocks.”

“I can only use unravel dream five times, any additional tries would have no effect.”

“Even though it can allow me to regain my strength and stabilize my wounds, the effects are not much, it would be better to have a single Gu worm.”

“Furthermore, even if I have Gu worms and a forest around, my stamina is limited, I cannot get far.”

After some analysis, Fang Yuan finally realized: “So this dream realm forces me to fall to the bottom of the cliff?”

Entering the dream realm again.

This time, Fang Yuan did not act rashly, he used unravel dream and preserved his strength and mental energy.

When he was at the cliff, the two boar headed beastmen tossed him over the cliff.

But the point of difference was, in midair, Fang Yuan started to adjust his body, getting close to the cliff.

Several breaths later, he saw some strange rocks on the wall, they were protruding out. There were also some trees that lived tenaciously on the cliff face.

Bam.

With a loud crash, Fang Yuan landed on a rock, his bones broke and he died.

“The speed of descent was too fast, my injuries were too severe, I died the moment I landed on a rock, it seems I need to land on the trees.”

Entering the dream realm again.

Using this experience, Fang Yuan landed on a tree.

Crack crack.

Following the sounds of some breaking branches, Fang Yuan fell downwards after his body broke some branches.

But this time, he fell much slower.

He used his soles and arms to grab at the cliff wall and adjust his direction.

The second tree.

Plop!

Fang Yuan landed on the tree trunk, he was pierced thoroughly by countless sharp leaves that were as long as an arm.

He died on the spot.

“What, what is this tree?” Fang Yuan was expelled from the dream realm again.

After many tries, continuously using guts Gu and unravel dream.

After dying eighteen times in the dream realm, Fang Yuan finally landed at the bottom of the valley.

But his injuries were too severe, his four limbs were unusable, only his right arm had some sensation left. He was batched in blood as his injuries tore open again, his warm blood was flowing out continuously. His bones were mostly fractured, the intense pain was assaulting him like burning fire.

But this was the best result that Fang Yuan could achieve after countless tries.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Unravel dream.

Fang Yuan used unravel dream, after he got to the bottom of the valley, it could be used again.

Fang Yuan’s injuries healed a little, he could exert strength in his right arm, his left leg also regained some sensation, but his right leg was completely broken, it was twisted by his ankle at an awkward angle.

Fang Yuan quickly inspected the situation around him as he looked around.

There was a pile of corpses, like a mountain, flesh was rotting, the stench of corpses was dense as a mist, assaulting his nose.

“What do I do now?” While Fang Yuan was dazed, he felt a strong Gu Immortal aura above his head.

Two variant human rank seven Gu Immortals appeared in the sky.

They were both beastmen, one had a boar head and human body, while another had a snake body and human head.

“Be careful, it’s a big one down there!” The Gu Immortal with a snake body and human head said in a cold voice.

“Hahaha, big fellow, why are you sleeping, wake up!!” The boar head and human body Gu Immortal laughed loudly.

The two were not quiet, they purposely amplified their voices, they sounded like rumbling thunder, reverberating in the valley.

Incited by this voice, an overwhelming aura burst out of the mist-like stench of corpses.

Rumble!

An intense aura burst out in the surroundings, all of the stench in the valley was blown away.

A giant figure appeared in front of Fang Yuan.

It was a giant.

Seven to eight stories tall.

It was black in color, its black hair flowed like a cape, extending to its waist. Hidden by its hair were two bright red spots.

It had awakened!

The two beastman Gu Immortals were stunned by this aura, they were no longer arrogant, they were filled with anxiety and fear.

Fang Yuan was the same.

Because this monster’s aura showed him: “Rank eight peak Gu Immortal aura! But it seems like a man, and an immemorial desolate beast at the same time.”

“Big fellow, go eat.”

“That’s right, this flesh and blood was obtained by our clan after many battles.”

The two beastman Gu Immortals urged.

“How many times have I said it, I have a name, I am Zuo Ye Hui.” The black giant actually spoke, but it went back to eating after saying that.

It stretched out its arms, corpses were grabbed by its monstrous hands as it stuffed them into its mouth.

“This is not good.” Fang Yuan thought, at this rate, he was going to be eaten.

...

Southern Border, black demon pit.

Southern Border had many mountains and many pits.

Black demon pit was not eye catching among all the pits, it was small and did not have many dao marks.

It produced some dark path resources, but for super forces, it was not useful, and for normal forces, the excavation was too tough.

Thus, nobody came here.

But at this moment, Purple Mountain True Monarch and the others came to black demon pit.

“What are we doing here?” Bai Ning Bing looked around, she used the investigative method from Bai Xiang’s true inheritance but could not see anything.

Purple Mountain True Monarch did not answer her, he spoke seemingly at the air: “I am here, act according to our agreement, previously, I passed you my true inheritance, you owe me a favor.”

“Favor? What favor?!” A voice came from within the pit.

Afterwards, an intense aura burst out, from weak to strong, in the blink of an eye, Bai Ning Bing’s, Ying Wu Xie’s, and the others’ expressions changed.

Only Purple Mountain True Monarch remained calm as before: “Haven’t you always wanted to be human? Zuo Ye Hui.”

“Human? Oh, I remember now, you are that guy from back then.”

“Right, back then, I helped you, you owe me a favor.”

“Mm! I, Zuo Ye Hui, want to be human, I need to return the favor. Tell me, what help do you need.”

“What you are most skilled at — eating humans.”

“Hahaha, I am sick of eating normal humans.”

“Don’t worry, they are immortals, there might even be rank eight Gu Immortals.” Purple Mountain True Monarch smiled.

“That’s good!!!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1337: Mushroomman Paradise, Dark Grandmaster

Southern Border, giant dream realm.

“Zuo Ye Hui?!” Hearing the name of this giant monster, Fang Yuan’s heart shook intensely.

This was an immemorial desolate beast with a mysterious origin, it had existed since a million years ago, during the Olden Antiquity Era.

Every time it appeared, there would be endless slaughter and fighting. In terms of seniority, the dog tail life extending ferret from Northern Plains was merely a newcomer that rose to fame three hundred thousand years ago.

Zuo Ye Hui, You Tian Guang, these two names were once placed side by side in human history. They were the nightmares of the Olden Antiquity Era, Medieval Antiquity Era, and Late Antiquity Era.

They were immemorial desolate beasts, but they possessed human forms, nobody knew why.

Whenever they appeared, they would create endless slaughter, no matter which region, they would whip up a bloody storm.

Even Central Continent’s Heavenly Court could not exterminate them.

They were extremely crafty, they worked together and whenever a Demon Venerable or Immortal Venerable was alive, they would hide and not show up.

Thankfully, when it was Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s era, the kindest Immortal Venerable throughout history was determined to get rid of these evils, he spent a lot of time and effort, finally locating these two legendary immemorial desolate beasts’ hiding spot.

After an intense battle, You Tian Guang died, while Zuo Ye Hui was heavily injured, it managed to escape but it went missing, it was unknown if it was dead or alive.

“Zuo Ye Hui... I actually encountered this legendary immemorial desolate beast in a dream realm?” Fang Yuan held in his shock, he continued to climb.

Zuo Ye Hui was eating all of the corpses around it, in the surroundings of this beast, the mountain-like pile of corpses was pouring into its bloodthirsty mouth.

Immortal killer move!

This was obviously an immortal killer move.

Its chewing alone could not allow it to eat at such a rapid speed.

Fang Yuan was having a tough time.

He was heavily injured and could not move fast, the speed of his climbing could not match the speed of suction by Zuo Ye Hui, he was dragged towards the center by these moving corpses.

Suddenly, Zuo Ye Hui breathed in deeply.

Intense winds blew, Fang Yuan was caught off guard and the winds blew him away, into Zuo Ye Hui’s mouth.

Zuo Ye Hui chewed rapidly, Fang Yuan was chomped up into meat paste by its sharp teeth.

“I died again!” Fang Yuan returned to reality with his soul injuries.

“How do I pass this dream realm?” This problem was like a giant boulder blocking Fang Yuan’s advancement.

He fell into deep contemplation.

While he was brought up the mountain by the two boar headed beastmen, Fang Yuan tried many ways but could not escape.

He knew now that this dream realm was forcing him to enter the valley.

But this valley was more dangerous than the boar headed beastmen.

Because a legendary immemorial desolate beast was there.

Immemorial desolate beasts rivaled rank eight Gu Immortals, but most of them had low intelligence, they were not the match of rank eight Gu Immortals.

But there were exceptions to everything, among immemorial desolate beasts, there were a certain few unique individuals.

Due to all sorts of fortuitous encounters, they had wisdom akin to that of humans, they learned the ways of Gu cultivation and had immortal apertures, they knew how to manipulate Immortal Gu and could even unleash immortal killer moves.

Their danger was extremely large, thus, every legendary immemorial desolate beast had its own name.

Like dog tail life extending ferret Mao Li Qiu, Central Continent’s Evil Dragon Di Zang Sheng as well as Huo Kong, along with Zuo Ye Hui and You Tian Guang. These were all legendary immemorial desolate beasts.

Such existences were often stronger than most rank eight Gu Immortals.

This could be seen from how the dog tail life extending ferret, Mao Li Qiu, killed two Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortals.

Man is the spirit of all living beings, but they had weak bodies and could not compare to other lifeforms if Gu worms were not used. Be it speed, strength, lifespan, recovery speed, vision, hearing, and others, humans were inferior.

Immemorial desolate beasts possessed extremely dense dao marks, they had longer lifespan than humans, their recovery, strength, and others surpassed an ordinary human. Once they could use Immortal Gu and immortal killer moves, possessed an immortal aperture and had wisdom like humans, their strength would naturally surpass rank eight Gu Immortals.

“Does this dream realm want me to try and escape from getting eaten by Zuo Ye Hui?”

Fang Yuan entered the dream again.

Using unravel dream along the way, he went to the bottom of the giant corpse pile with a shred of life remaining.

“Good.” Fang Yuan gathered his focus, and pushed away all of the corpses before Zuo Ye Hui started eating, burying himself.

As Zuo Ye Hui started to suck, intense winds blew.

The surface of the corpse mountain started to fly away towards it.

Fang Yuan was intact as he had dug into the corpses.

But soon, the intense winds continued unceasingly as he was swept into Zuo Ye Hui’s mouth again.

“F*ck!” Fang Yuan’s final view was a row of sharp teeth stabbing into his body.

...

Entering the dream again.

“I’ll dig, dig and dig more.” Fang Yuan continued as he used unravel dream to find some easy spots to drill into, allowing his progress to be faster.

Zuo Ye Hui continued to breathe in, after a long time, the winds stopped.

Fang Yuan was also on his last breaths, hiding among the corpses.

“I finally endured it.” While he was rejoicing, one of the two beastman Gu Immortals in the air spoke.

“Zuo Ye Hui, good appetite.”

The dark giant said: “Too few, too few! I want to eat more humans, the more humans I eat, I closer I am to becoming human.”

“Don’t worry, there’s more.” The beastman Gu Immortal laughed as it opened its immortal aperture, a large number of human Gu Master corpses fell down like a waterfall.

“F*ck.” Fang Yuan’s expression changed, he uncontrollably cursed.

At the next moment, he was squashed to death by the pile of corpses.

...

Entering the dream again.

Fang Yuan dug into the corpse pile, but this time, he did not use his full strength.

After the intense winds vanished, he was at the top layer of the remaining corpses.

Corpses rained down as Fang Yuan quickly climbed towards the walls, trying to find some mountain rocks as his shelter.

After the corpses rained down, he was intact.

“What should I do now?” Fang Yuan looked at the pile of corpses in front of him as he thought rapidly.

Currently, he was still buried among the corpses, he was about six meters away from the top layer.

And now, he felt a numb sensation in his chest.

Fang Yuan could not see in the pile of corpses, he used his hand to touch it.

Next, he touched a slippery tail, it seemed like a snake or a centipede.

Next, this tail drilled into his chest.

“Am I dying again?” This question had just appeared in his mind when he was kicked out of the dream realm yet again.

...

“Earlier, that seems to be a Gu worm?” Fang Yuan thought in real life.

“There are so many mortal Gu Master corpses, it seemed like a huge battle occurred and some mortal Gu were not taken away, that is normal. Even if Gu Immortals find them, those tiny mortal Gu are not of significance to them.”

“Of course, in an extreme environment like the sea of corpses, wild Gu might be created, it is not strange.”

Fang Yuan acutely sensed that this Gu worm was his opportunity.

After his injuries healed, he entered the dream realm again.

Refinement of the Gu worm failed, he died.

Refining again, this time, he was in a deadlock as Zuo Ye Hui started to eat again, Fang Yuan was interrupted and failed, he died.

Finally, after refining the Gu worm, he realized that it was a rank two Gu worm used for offense, Fang Yuan cursed as once again, he died.

Again, he died.

And died.

And died.

“What sort of rotten dream is this?” There were an uncountable number of failures, even one time, because of his actions, the two Gu Immortals took notice and waved their fingers, causing Fang Yuan to die from a mystical light.

Despair.

In this dream realm, Fang Yuan was too weak.

Any mishap or wind was a fatal danger to him that caused him to die.

“Should I give up on this dream realm?” Thoughts continuously appeared of giving up.

Fang Yuan’s investment in this dream realm was beyond the rest, but hope was bleak, he could not see any chance of success.

This dream realm was unimaginably difficult!

“Let’s try once more.”

“I can persevere once more.”

“I died again... should I give up?”

There was another chain of deaths, Fang Yuan wanted to give up, but he could not bear to because he had invested so much, more importantly, he had never seen such a dream realm, if he succeeded, it would be a huge accumulation of experience to him!

Even if he gave up now, would he encounter such a dream realm again in the future?

Gritting his teeth and persevering.

Until the final time.

There were about sixty corpses in the ground in the valley, Fang Yuan struggled for a long time before preserving his life, he was mixed among them.

A Gu formation appeared.

Fang Yuan discovered that Zuo Ye Hui was trapped by this super Gu formation, its lower body was buried in the ground, only its upper body could move.

“This damned four elements formation, let me break you!” After it ate enough, Zuo Ye Hui roared at the sky as it burst out with a powerful dark grey light.

The grey light enveloped the entire valley.

“Oh no, this is the immortal killer move grey night! Let’s retreat!” The two beastman Gu Immortals flew into the sky.

The four elements formation activated, as earth, water, wind, and fire, four mystical lights burst out and resisted the grey light, limiting it to the valley.

Zuo Ye Hui growled in anger and unwillingness to give in, but it was useless.

“What the, how can I dodge this?!” The grey light was everywhere, enveloping the valley, the beastman Gu Immortals could run, but Fang Yuan could not.

He watched as the surrounding grass and rocks were eliminated by this grey light, he himself was no exception.

Fang Yuan fell into deep despair: “This is an unsolvable dream realm?! The grey light cannot be dodged! If I had known this, I would’ve given up long ago, that was the wiser decision!”

Feeling deep regret, Fang Yuan returned to the real world.

His soul injury was much more severe than any of his previous attempts.

But...

What made Fang Yuan joyful was that his dark path attainment level had risen to grandmaster level all of a sudden.

“What happened?” Fang Yuan quickly inspected.

He was shocked to find out that this dream realm had vanished.

“So lasting until the final moment meant passing this dream realm! I succeeded! This is a survival type dream realm, I only needed to last till the end.”

“This dream realm only had one scene, but after passing it, my ordinary dark path attainment level rose up to grandmaster level!”

“Is it because of Zuo Ye Hui’s existence?”

Many questions were left unanswered.

Fang Yuan’s knowledge of dream realms was too shallow. After all, he had not invested effort into dream realms in the five hundred years of his previous life.

At the same time, Bai Ning Bing and Hei Lou Lan were filled with questions.

“Where is this?” Hei Lou Lan looked at the world of birds and flowers that was shrouded in thin fog as she asked.

“This is the Mushroomman Paradise.” A variant human Gu Immortal appeared from within the fog.

“Mushroomman Gu Immortal?” Bai Ning Bing’s dragon pupils shrunk.

Mushroommen were a type of variant humans, they resembled humans but there was a mushroom cap on their heads, resembling a hat.

Below the mushroom cap were the mushroomman’s brows and eyes, as for nose, ears, and other features, they were all present.

“Mushroomman... Paradise?” Hei Lou Lan muttered these two words: “Don’t tell me, this is Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s...”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1338: Seven Illusions True Inheritance, Chakra Melons

Before Hei Lou Lan finished her words, Purple Mountain True Monarch interrupted: “That’s right, this blessed land has been modified by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, it faces no calamities and tribulations, the Mushroomman blessed land has turned into the Mushroomman Paradise. Of course, there are many paradises in this world, but this one is very special, because Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had cultivated here before he became a venerable.”

“Oh!” The mushroomman Gu Immortal sighed deeply: “Ever since I obtained that true inheritance, I knew that one day, I would have to pay a huge price. But if you want me to help you with evil deeds, that is impossible, you can just kill me.”

“I won’t kill you.” Purple Mountain True Monarch showed a crafty smile: “I want you to bring them into the melon cave, where Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had once stayed in and cultivated for some time. You won’t refuse this request, right?”

The mushroomman Gu Immortal’s expression became even more bitter, he thought for a while before nodding solemnly: “Alright, I agree.”

Mushroomman Paradise, melon cave.

This cave was guarded by the mushroomman Gu Immortal.

Purple Mountain True Monarch assimilated with heaven’s will, he could sense heaven’s will’s plotting, he used this mushroomman Gu Immortal to successfully send Hei Lou Lan and Bai Ning Bing into this magical place.

“These are the chakra melons that my tribe grows. You can cultivate here secretly, but don’t damage a single melon.” The mushroomman Gu Immortal said.

Chakra melons?

Bai Ning Bing and Hei Lou Lan looked at each other, seeing the shock on their faces.

Chakra melons were rank seven immortal materials, containing refinement path dao marks, they could be used in any Gu refinement.

Thus, this immortal material was very widely used.

And now, both of them saw the scale of this melon plantation cave, it was simply terrifyingly huge. How many chakra melons were there?

Purple Mountain True Monarch explained from the side: “No need to guess, this is the largest chakra melon production area in treasure yellow heaven, they have almost sixty percent of the market share.”

“Of course, I did not bring you here for the chakra melons, the important thing is this super Gu formation.”

“This super Gu formation uses rule path ripe Immortal Gu as the core, and it also uses rank seven dew Immortal Gu as a supplementary Immortal Gu. When you train your immortal killer moves here, the effectiveness will rise sharply, you will become more proficient in them.”

“And because of dew Immortal Gu, your immortal essence recovery speed will be very fast inside the Gu formation.”

Hei Lou Lan and Bai Ning Bing heard this and showed great joy.

Such a cultivation paradise simply suited them perfectly.

Hei Lou Lan cultivated strength path primarily along with fire path, she had few strength path Immortal Gu, and many fire path Immortal Gu, she also had countless fire path immortal killer moves left by her aunt in the fire path true inheritance.

Bai Ning Bing had just obtained Bai Xiang’s true inheritance, she was not weak either, she had many Immortal Gu and immortal killer moves.

Right now, what restricted them was the fact that they had just obtained their true inheritances and did not have the time to fully convert these gains into battle strength.

In the regional walls, when they fought Fang Yuan, this weakness was very obvious.

Purple Mountain True Monarch woke up and took charge, in order to raise his side’s battle strength, he brought these two here, using this paradise to train the two immortals.

Melon cave had a huge space, the mushroomman Gu Immortal easily provided an area for Bai Ning Bing and Hei Lou Lan to cultivate.

After making arrangements for them, Purple Mountain True Monarch left the Mushroomman Paradise.

Days passed by.

Fang Yuan was still in the super Gu formation, exploring dream realms.

On the surface, he was cultivating in seclusion, he had deceived everyone, nobody knew that he was exploring dream realms, his gains were immense.

Chi Shang was a good benchmark.

Chi Shang was the formation devotee, after more than a hundred years of researching formation path, he reached his formation path grandmaster attainment level. At his age, his talents and achievements were considered rare among Gu Immortals.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan only spent a month or two to pass a dream realm with formation path true meaning and become a formation path grandmaster.

Because dream realms were so amazing, and could reduce the time needed for accumulations, during the five regions chaotic war, all sorts of Gu Immortal experts appeared, they were like shining stars in the sky, there were countless geniuses.

Right now, Fang Yuan was not only a formation path grandmaster, he was also a dark path grandmaster.

With such attainment level, Fang Yuan had new ideas towards the use of dark limit Immortal Gu.

“Right now, I can use dark limit Immortal Gu as the core to form an immortal killer move targeting myself, to prevent the deduction of others. Along with my dark path dao marks, this immortal killer move’s power will be very terrifying.”

“I can even use dark limit Immortal Gu as the core to form an immortal killer move that can unleash an attack resembling dark arrow Immortal Gu.”

“There is also another idea, I can use dark limit Immortal Gu in other immortal killer moves to conceal all of the auras of these killer moves. After using them, I can catch people off guard, and achieve incredible effects.”

Actually, for Fang Yuan, he needed food path and information path dream realms most.

Food path would allow him to feed Immortal Gu more easily with lower costs. The savings could be used to assist in his cultivation or development of resources.

Information path was even more important.

Fang Yuan had many information path alliance agreements right now.

This made him lose a lot of freedom, when he did things, he was restricted, it was inconvenient.

There was another point, if his information path attainment level rose, Fang Yuan would be able to decipher many information path traps and methods, he would be able to cooperate with Shadow Sect.

But things in this world did not come according to one’s wishes.

The place that Fang Yuan was guarding was like a window. After he finished his exploration, Zuo Ye Hui’s dream realm vanished, the new dream realms that filled up the space were all strange and absurd types.

Fang Yuan did not want to try these types of dream realms, even if he had unravel dream.

Fang Yuan patiently waited.

Dream realms changed among themselves occasionally.

But because he met with absurd dream realms consecutively, Fang Yuan could only divert his efforts elsewhere.

Developing his immortal aperture was the key goal, secondly, his newly obtained dark path attainment level allowed him to create some useful immortal killer moves, and finally, he had to collect information.

After Heavenly Court lost three rank eight Gu Immortals, they kept a low profile.

The five regions were in a state of peace.

But Wu clan’s troubles did not end. Even with Wu Yong suppressing the situation, sending people to resolve conflicts, the other super forces were causing all sorts of problems, Wu clan was extremely busy in dealing with them.

There was a troublesome matter recently.

The cause was the Immortal Gu recipe of bathing flames Immortal Gu, a mortal Gu Master had by chance excavated it.

Once news spread, Yao clan’s and Wu clan’s attention was drawn.

This Immortal Gu recipe was part of the content of the fire path true inheritance left by Stunning Immortal.

A thousand years ago, Wu clan and Yao clan had lingering enmity after fighting over this fire path true inheritance. Eventually, both sides suffered losses, but they did not obtain this fire path true inheritance.

The fire path true inheritance was said to be destroyed, but since the recipe of bathing flames Immortal Gu appeared, everyone started to have hope.

Especially Wu clan and Yao clan, due to historical reasons, these two super forces had to get this Immortal Gu recipe. Even if they could not get it, the other party was not allowed to get it.

Thus, Wu Yong sent out Wu Yi Ran, he gave up on defending blood tide pit, a resource point.

Wu Yi Ran had rank seven cultivation level, he had outstanding battle strength, he obeyed the orders as he wanted to quickly settle the matter, but soon, he found that there was no Stunning Immortal true inheritance, only this bathing flames Immortal Gu recipe was left.

As a result, many Gu Immortals left, they did not want to offend two super forces just for an Immortal Gu recipe.

Yao clan was not going to give up, they sent a powerful person, Yao Geng.

Wu Yi Ran and Yao Geng fought four times, they had two wins and losses each, the final match was the crucial one.

During this crucial moment, Purple Mountain True Monarch secretly arrived at a meeting point.

On a nameless mountain, he met a mysterious Gu Immortal.

The mysterious Gu Immortal was covered in rainbow light, concealing his appearance: “You called me here?”

Purple Mountain True Monarch nodded: “That’s right, regardless of how you obtained the complete Seven Illusions true inheritance, you have already made an alliance agreement, you need to do seven things for me.”

“Alright, which seven?” The mysterious Gu Immortal answered openly.

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s lips curled: “First, kill Wu Yi Ran.”

The mysterious Gu Immortal was stunned: “Are you sure?”

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s smile widened, continuing: “Second, kill Yao Geng.”

The mysterious Gu Immortal was wary: “What are you trying to do?”

“You don’t need to care about that. Just kill the two of them.” Purple Mountain True Monarch chuckled.

The mysterious Gu Immortal snorted coldly, his body vanished on the spot as he left.

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s smile gradually faded, his arms were behind his back as he looked at a far away mountain with a deep gaze.

“There is not much time left, I need to take action.” He muttered softly.

A few days later, shocking news emerged.

Wu Yi Ran and Yao Geng both went missing, the result of their fight was unknown.

Wu clan and Yao clan were shaken, because from their life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu, Wu Yi Ran and Yao Geng were already dead!

Who was so ruthless?

Wu Yong was enraged, right when he sent Gu Immortals to investigate this, blood tide pit erupted, a huge blood tide caused great destruction.

Wu clan quickly sent Gu Immortals to suppress the situation, but they found traces that an immortal killer move, collapsing art, was used at the scene.

Collapsing art was a killer move self-created by Yao Geng. The traces at the scene were indisputable.

The situation became complex.

“Did Yao Geng die after all?”

“Is this Yao clan’s scheme?”

“Other than Yao clan, is any other clan striking?”

Wu Yong felt something amiss, he could sense a dangerous storm brewing!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1339: Framing, Blood Tide Pit

Splash splash splash.

Sounds of waves were unceasing, the air was filled with a bloody smell, assaulting everyone’s noses.

The two Gu Immortals from Wu clan, Wu Yuan Ju and Rong Hao, were flying in the sky now, looking at the sea of blood below, the former’s expression was solemn while the latter’s was bitter.

“The blood flood has spread an enormous distance, more than ten mountains were flooded, if we do not seal it now, this calamity will cause even greater damage later.” Wu Yuan Ju said solemnly.

Blood tide pit was originally defended by Wu Yi Ran, but after he died, blood tide pit was taken down and the Gu formations inside were destroyed. This caused the blood tide to burst out and flood the surrounding area, causing this huge disaster.

Rong Hao had a worried expression: “It will not be easy for the two of us to create a new Gu formation and seal the blood tide again. If we had another rank six, with three Gu Immortals, we would barely be able to do it.”

These two had rank six cultivation level, it was not difficult to handle this blood tide disaster, but Wu Yong gave them a limited amount of time. Two people were not able to resolve this in a short period of time.

There was no choice, Wu Yong could not deploy more people to handle this troublesome situation.

During Wu Du Xiu’s era, Wu clan rapidly expanded without obstruction, because Wu Du Xiu could suppress the entire situation alone.

Once Wu Du Xiu died, Wu Yong took over, Wu clan only had one rank eight left, even though Wu Yong had great capabilities, Wu clan’s territory was just too big.

Due to Purple Mountain True Monarch’s scheme, the super forces could not control their desires, Wu clan was faced with obstacles created by many of the super forces.

Wu Yong stayed in their headquarters and was maintaining the situation and deciding on who to send.

But this time, Wu Yi Ran had died, with him gone, a huge gap formed instantly in Wu clan’s defense line.

Sending out Wu Yuan Ju and Rong Hao was already Wu clan’s limit.

“Give it our all, even if we exceed the time limit, we have already tried our best.” Wu Yuan Ju sighed, starting to act.

Rong Hao cooperated.

He was not a Wu clansman, he was an external supreme elder recruited by Wu clan.

Southern Border’s clans were very unwelcoming to outsiders, it was not easy for Wu clan to break tradition and recruit an external Gu Immortal into Wu clan.

Under the two Gu Immortals’ methods, the blood tide continued to push backwards, the blood tide pit was like a huge monstrous mouth, devouring the blood outside.

The situation was under control.

It was getting better.

Wu Yuan Ju sighed: “After suppressing this blood tide and rebuilding the Gu formation, Rong Hao, you will have to take over the position of guarding this place. I hope you can be careful, the situation is quite tense now.”

Rong Hao nodded:”I understand. I heard that this blood tide pit was not naturally formed, it was created by Blood Sea Ancestor on purpose?”

Wu Yuan Ju nodded: “Blood Sea Ancestor left behind seven true inheritances, this is one of the seven true inheritances that he had meticulously arranged. It was not eye-catching earlier, similar to normal pits, but when a Gu Master from Shang clan entered, he obtained a Blood Sea true inheritance, obtaining blood handprint Gu. This person is Shang clan’s previous clan leader, Shang Yan Fei, he had died on Yi Tian Mountain.”

After Shang Yan Fei took away the Blood Sea true inheritance, blood tides started to appear in this pit unceasingly.

Wu Du Xiu sent Gu Immortals here and made this part of Wu clan’s territory.

Due to Wu clan’s management, blood tide pit quickly became a blood path resource point. Wu clan was developing blood path, this resource point made great contributions.

“You two sure are happy.” At this time, Rong Hao heard a voice in his mind.

“Who?!” Rong Hao was shocked.

He wanted to use his methods to defend himself, but he could not move at all.

He quickly looked over at Wu Yuan Ju to seek help, but he was soon met with despair, as Wu Yuan Ju was also immobilized, in the same state as him.

A small figure had appeared on Rong Hao’s shoulder.

He was the size of a thumb, he had wings on his back, resembling dragonfly wings, his purple hair was very eye catching.

It was none other than rank eight wisdom path Gu Immortal Purple Mountain True Monarch!

“Miniman Gu Immortal?” Wu Yuan Ju was shocked, but he quickly calmed down, Purple Mountain True Monarch’s aura was concealed, he did not expose his rank eight aura.

Rong Hao quickly added: “As a variant human, you must know that humans are the rulers of the world. No matter who instigated you, I hope that you will not act rashly. Because we are not only human Gu Immortals, we are also members of Wu clan. Wu clan is the number one righteous path force in Southern Border, if you kill us, the consequences will be severe.”

“We have no grudges between us. We of Wu clan would not bully people, if you have any requests, we can help you with them, we can become friends.” Wu Yuan Ju continued.

He had great chemistry with Rong Hao, both threatening and urging at the same time.

But before he finished his words, he started to stutter as his gaze turned hollow.

Rong Hao was shocked, he blurted out: “Wisdom path Gu Immortal?!”

At this point, he also became incoherent.

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s wisdom path methods interfered with Wu Yuan Ju’s and Rong Hao’s thoughts, they could not even think and speak now, they were completely defenseless.

When Gu Immortals manipulate Gu worms, thoughts were needed, their body actions also needed thoughts to act.

Purple Mountain True Monarch directly interfered with their thoughts, controlling them from this aspect, these two rank six Gu Immortals had no way of resisting him.

Easily controlling the situation, Purple Mountain True Monarch looked at the blood tide pit and smiled.

Next, his rank eight aura burst out, in the blink of an eye, it engulfed the surroundings.

The blood tide below his feet became calmer.

After some time, Purple Mountain True Monarch opened his mouth, letting out a breath.

His breath floated into the blood tide pit, it was not eye catching, quickly devoured by the rushing blood tide, vanishing.

At this point, Purple Mountain True Monarch turned around, looking afar and saying: “Your turn.”

Light in seven colors appeared as a voice said in a trembling tone: “You are a rank eight great expert! With your strength, you can move unhindered in Southern Border, why must you find trouble with a minor character like me?”

“I have my own plans. You have to pay for what you owe. When you inherited Seven Illusions true inheritance, you should have expected this day.” Purple Mountain True Monarch said.

“But the inheritors before me have never received any orders. Why me?” The mysterious Gu Immortal covered in rainbow lights said in a reluctant tone.

Purple Mountain True Monarch sighed, looking at Heavenly Court: “Maybe this is your fate. Alright, use Qiao Zhi Cai’s method to kill this person.”

Wu Yuan Ju and Rong Hao were still dazed, unable to move.

Purple Mountain True Monarch captured these two alive, but he still wanted the mysterious Gu Immortal to kill them.

The mysterious Gu Immortal did not dare to disobey Purple Mountain True Monarch, he used his profound light, as it transformed and landed on these two Wu clan Gu Immortals, destroying their souls, and even their bodies turning into wooden statues.

Purple Mountain True Monarch released control on them, as these two statues fell into the blood tide.

“Let’s go.” Purple Mountain True Monarch said plainly.

How could the mysterious Gu Immortal defy Purple Mountain True Monarch? Even if he was not a rank eight great expert, with just the information path alliance agreement in the true inheritance, it could restrict the mysterious Gu Immortal.

Both of them left as quickly as they came.

Of course, Purple Mountain True Monarch did not forget to clean up his traces in the battlefield.

A moment later, intense winds blew in the air, countless clouds were scattered, clear skies could be seen everywhere.

A grand and vast rank eight aura enveloped the area.

Wu Yong’s expression was of rage, his eyes were slightly red as he descended.

Who was it?

Who had killed them?!

Wu Yi Ran died earlier, and now, Wu Yuan Ju and Rong Hao were dead. Because of life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu, Wu clan received news almost immediately.

Wu Yong was enraged, he decided to go out himself.

Wu clan lost three Gu Immortals at once, one rank seven and two rank sixes, the losses was tremendous, Wu Yong felt both loss and anger.

He wants to see who it was that could step past this bottom line and anger Wu clan!

But next, after seeing Wu Yuan Ju’s and Rong Hao’s corpses, Wu Yong was stunned.

“Wooden statue murder?” His pupils shrunk to pin size: “Qiao Zhi Cai?”

A moment later, Qiao clan Gu Immortal Qiao Zhi Cai rushed to the scene.

Blood tide pit had been suppressed, the ground was completely covered in blood, and there were also two Wu clan Gu Immortal corpses.

“Qiao clan first supreme elder, what do you have to say?” Wu Yong had a calm expression, his tone was very plain.

But the calmer he was, the more fearful Qiao Zhi Cai was.

He was Qiao clan’s first supreme elder, his signature immortal killer move was wooden statue murder, if any ordinary Gu Immortal was hit by this, their souls would crumble and disperse, they would lose their life, their bodies would turn into wood, and the remaining life force could be used to grow trees.

Ignoring the cold sweat on his forehead, Qiao Zhi Cai explained: “Lord Wu Yong, please listen, I did not do this, someone is trying to frame me. Qiao clan and Wu clan have a long relationship, we are closely related...”

Before Qiao Zhi Cai finished his words, Wu Yong interrupted him.

His eyes were shining, he stared at Qiao Zhi Cai: “Of course I am willing to trust you. Qiao clan and Wu clan, we have marriage connections, we are in an alliance, how can our relationship be ruined by this?”

Qiao Zhi Cai let out a breath of air, bowing deeply: “Lord Wu Yong is wise!”

Wu Yong continued: “If someone is trying to frame you, this is way too obvious. Who is it? What motives do they have? What plans do they have next? This is what I am concerned about. Wait a while, I have already invited Tie clan Gu Immortal Tie Mian Shen!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1340: Ghost Summoning, Tie Mian Shen

Southern Border, Tie clan, Wan Cheng Mountain.

Rumble...

A chain of low sounds enveloped this unassuming valley.

At the bottom of this valley, there was a girl.

She had a tall body, her legs were more than sixty percent of her total height, she looked heroic and agile. Right now, her eyebrows were sharp like swords, her eyes were shining like stars, she looked upwards.

Giant rocks that were the size of houses were crashing down towards her by the cliff.

The girl breathed in deeply, at this moment of life and death, she shut her eyes.

Hundreds of giant rocks were about to land on her, but at this moment, she opened her eyes.

In an instant, golden light radiated, it was extremely dazzling, as if a miniature sun had appeared in the valley!

The light lasted for a while before vanishing.

The loud sounds also vanished, endless white powder scattered down, slowly descending.

The young woman was bathed in the rock powder, joy showing on her determined face.

“Good, Tie Ruo Nan, you succeeded in this killer move I taught, passing the final test. From now onwards, you will follow me and cultivate, I will teach you the ways of becoming an immortal.” A grand voice echoed in this valley.

The young girl knelt on the ground: “Thank you for the guidance, lord supreme elder!”

“You hate evil so much and have great talent, you are suited for my Iron Mask true inheritance. Originally, your father was one of my chosen seeds, but to think that his daughter had countless times his talent... hmm?” The grand voice suddenly stopped.

But soon, Tie Ruo Nan heard: “There is a sudden issue, stay here and cultivate. The killer move I taught you might have succeeded, but you are not proficient enough. During this period, you need to practise more, when I return, we will have further plans.”

“Yes.” The girl respectfully bowed, excitement could not be concealed on her face.

“Finally, I finally did it. Father, I surpassed you. Watch me in heaven, I will become a Gu Immortal and obtain true strength.”

“This world is too dark and chaotic, only with greater strength can I punish evildoers and reward those who carry out good deeds, justice will prevail and the world will be a better place!”

...

“Zhang Li, you bitch who murdered your own husband, to think that my brother treated you so well, and in the end, you actually acted so ruthlessly and killed him. Today, I will cut you into pieces, you will die without a proper corpse!” A young Gu Immortal shouted, his rage was unstoppable, his rank seven aura was bursting.

Fang Yuan: “...”

Ever since he passed the dream realm regarding Zuo Ye Hui, his dark path attainment level had risen to grandmaster level. But next, there was an absurd dream realm.

Fang Yuan played safe and did not explore this dream realm full of uncertainties.

After waiting for a while, he finally encountered a realistic dream realm.

But in the end, he became a female Gu Immortal in this dream realm, and was very... risque.

Because this female immortal cultivated enchantment emotion path.

This was a tiny path, derived from wisdom path as a minor path. It used emotions to fight, and enchantment to allure enemies.

Right now, Fang Yuan was a female immortal, he wore a pink dress, there were two huge treasures on his upper body, the corners of his skirt were open and exposed until his upper thigh. When he smiled, it was incredibly seductive.

Fang Yuan was helpless about this.

This was another person’s dream realm, he had to be a character in it if he wanted to take part in the dream.

Of course, becoming a woman would not disrupt Fang Yuan’s impassive mental state.

He was vigilant against his enemy as he concentrated on his immortal aperture.

What made Fang Yuan glad was that this female immortal had many Immortal Gu.

“I’ll try this Gu first.” Fang Yuan instilled immortal essence as he heard an alluring cry from it.

This voice that appeared was not controlled by Fang Yuan, it was a woman’s voice filled with seduction and temptation.

The young Gu Immortal was very angry earlier, but after hearing this sound, his body went limp, his killing intent faded.

His momentum was lost as he gritted his teeth, clarity returning to his eyes: “Vicious woman, you dare to toy with me! Take this move!!”

Saying this, he pushed with his hands as a huge tornado swept towards Fang Yuan with countless wind blades.

Fang Yuan quickly retreated, dodging as he used his second Immortal Gu.

Immediately, Fang Yuan’s skirt turned into a pink fog as it coiled around him, bringing Fang Yuan away quickly.

The speed was impressive, Fang Yuan sighed, it was not inferior to sword escape Immortal Gu, the only regretful part was, the farther he flew, the thinner the pink fog on his body, it was able to cover his entire body earlier, but now, his tender white thighs and arms were exposed already.

Fang Yuan was not afraid of running naked, this mindset of being embarrassed was no longer in him, moreover, this was a dream.

The regretful thing was, this Immortal Gu could not be used for long, otherwise, with just this speed, his enemy was not a problem.

“Slut, you ran quickly. But you will die today, in order to kill you and avenge my brother, I will do anything and pay any price!”

The young Gu Immortal shouted loudly with blood red eyes.

At the same time, he used his immortal killer move.

Jade green wind gathered into a small dagger in his palm.

The dagger shone with jade light, Fang Yuan took a look at it and felt fearful.

“Oh no!” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

“Just these one or two Immortal Gu alone cannot stop the immortal killer move. But I do not know what immortal killer moves this Zhang Li possesses.”

As he felt troubled, Fang Yuan quickly used unravel dream.

Suddenly, a mysterious power moved in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture. An Immortal Gu and dozens of mortal Gu were activated under this mysterious power.

“This is?” Fang Yuan sensed this and felt great joy.

He quickly continued to use unravel dream, under its influence, the mysterious power continued to exert its strength, many Gu worms in his immortal aperture were used.

Next, a completely unknown immortal killer move was activated.

Fang Yuan did not know what this immortal killer move did, or what effect it had.

There was no time to lose, right now, the young Gu Immortal had already blown at his hand with his lips. That jade wind dagger shot out like an arrow, flying towards Fang Yuan, fast and ruthless!

Fang Yuan sighed to himself, at this moment, it was all up to chance.

Would unravel dream use an effective immortal killer move to defend against this jade wind dagger, Fang Yuan had no idea.

But under the effect of this killer move, Fang Yuan could not help but pinch his fingers, waving at this young Gu Immortal as he whispered bewitchingly: “Ghost summoning!”

This voice was enchanting to the limit, even Fang Yuan shuddered upon hearing it.

Next, a ghost really came.

This Gu Immortal soul had rank seven battle strength, it flew towards the jade wind dagger relentlessly.

That young Gu Immortal saw the ghost and his expression changed, he shouted: “Brother!!”

It turned out that this female immortal, Zhang Li, had killed her husband and refined his soul into an immortal killer move.

Fang Yuan saw this and had a flash of inspiration, he called out: “As long as I stop this killer move, your brother’s soul can be saved, destroy it if you dare!”

The young Gu Immortal was enraged, but he was afraid of harming his brother, he could not fight properly.

Fang Yuan was intensely joyful, he quickly attacked and stabilized the situation.

A moment later, he found a flaw and killed him.

He passed the dream realm!

“Huff.” Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, returning to reality.

“This dream realm only had one scene.” Fang Yuan was slightly surprised.

This was a tiny dream realm.

Fang Yuan passed it in one try, inspecting himself, he found that his attainment level for wisdom path and soul path had risen.

“Enchantment emotion path had never left wisdom path, there are no enchantment emotion path dao marks in this world, only wisdom path dao marks. Thus, my wisdom path attainment level grew.”

“As for soul path... perhaps that Zhang Li cultivated soul path too. Her ghost summoning immortal killer move belongs to soul path.”

He analyzed and looked at his attainment level.

Right now, he had eight grandmaster level paths, they were blood path, strength path, transformation path, star path, wisdom path, water path, dark path, and formation path.

Refinement path was quasi-grandmaster, luck path was master, phantom path was empty. His sword path attainment level was ordinary, his soul path was also ordinary, but after Zhang Li’s dream realm, it had risen to quasi-master level.

“That immortal killer move, ghost summoning, is quite interesting, even though I do not have enough soul path attainment level, my wisdom path is grandmaster. It was from a realistic dream realm, I very likely can use this same killer move again, with a portion of its strength. Even if I cannot replicate it, I can create a similar immortal killer move.”

“But even if I replicate this immortal killer move, it is inferior to improving vajra shell.”

Ordinary Gu Immortals would be happy if there was a possibility, they would try to deduce the immortal killer move.

But Fang Yuan was different.

Recently, his attainment level had risen a lot, he had countless inspirations, he could only choose to modify the immortal killer moves with the highest value to him.

This was a good problem to have.

His dark path attainment level was grandmaster, he could use dark limit Immortal Gu and perseverance Immortal Gu as the cores to create a new immortal killer move. This immortal killer move would allow him to conceal himself.

His formation path attainment level rose, Fang Yuan had a new idea about vajra shell.

This made him extremely moved. The original vajra shell used vajra thought Immortal Gu and perseverance Immortal Gu as the cores, but in his concept, if he could add in precaution Immortal Gu and some formation path mortal Gu, the power would rise by multiple times.

After Zhang Li’s dream realm, the following ones were not suited for exploration.

Fang Yuan started to shift his focus, modifying the immortal killer move vajra shell.

Just as Fang Yuan rapidly increased his strength, Tie Mian Shen arrived in front of Qiao Zhi Cai and Wu Yong.

This rank seven Gu Immortal wore a martial uniform, his chest and legs were covered in light armor, there was a thick iron mask on his face.

He had not brought a mask to wear, it was the trait of cultivating the Iron Mask true inheritance.

All the Gu Immortals who cultivate this true inheritance must have a heart of justice, they also were often people most skilled in Southern Border in investigating the truth.

After seeing those two corpses, Tie Mian Shen declared: “It was not Qiao Zhi Cai.”

Qiao Zhi Cai let out a breath of air.

“Who was it?” Wu Yong asked.

“Someone mimicked his immortal killer move wooden statue murder. This is something seen before in history.” Tie Mian Shen answered: “Lord Wu Yong, I wonder if you have heard of Seven Illusions Demon Immortal?”

Wu Yong frowned: “You mean the inheritor of the Seven Illusions true inheritance? It is said that the Gu Immortal who inherits it will have a method to mimic almost any method used by Gu Immortals in this world, Tie Mian Shen, is that true?”

Tie Mian Shen nodded: “Our clan’s Demon Suppression Tower had once contained a Seven Illusions Demon Immortal. We did not manage to get the contents of the Seven Illusions true inheritance, but we know a lot of its secrets. This Seven Illusions true inheritance has seven different layers. The inheritor can choose to inherit any of the layers or get the complete Seven Illusions true inheritance. But after inheriting one true inheritance, they will have to agree to one condition, in the future, they would need to do something for someone. Taking all seven layers would mean seven conditions.”

“Our clan has already devised methods to locate a Seven Illusions inheritor, and differentiate their methods. I used it earlier, this was undoubtedly a Seven Illusions Demon Immortal.”

“Interesting.” Wu Yong nodded, frowning deeply.

Even if they knew the truth, so what?

Who was the Seven Illusions Demon Immortal? Which force or person was behind them?

Wu Yong still did not know the answer to this problem!

But at the next moment, Tie Mian Shen’s words eased Wu Yong’s frown.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1341: Purple Blood River Traps Wu Yong

“I can locate the Seven Illusions Demon Immortal.” Tie Mian Shen’s words eased Wu Yong’s frown.

As it turned out, after capturing one Seven Illusions Demon Immortal, Tie clan had started to make arrangements against the Seven Illusions true inheritance.

Among the Southern Border super forces, Tie clan was the force that targeted the demonic path most fiercely. Especially after they built the Demon Suppression Tower, they were the pillar of the righteous path in pursuing demonic path Gu Immortals.

Right now, Tie Mian Shen was using his immortal killer move to investigate the area for clues.

“This way!” After finding the direction, Tie Mian Shen flew towards the east.

Wu Yong and Qiao Zhi Cai looked at each other for a second before following after him.

The clues were broken, but found again time after time, with the experienced Tie Mian Shen leading the way, the three immortals had great progress.

But an hour later, they returned to the blood tide pit.

Qiao Zhi Cai was shocked: “Why are we back here?”

Tie Mian Shen smiled coldly: “The most dangerous place is the safest place...”

Qiao Zhi Cai reacted as he praised: “Such guts.”

Wu Yong looked around coldly, after a few breaths, his gaze was locked onto an area in the blood tide pit.

Roar—!

The peaceful lake suddenly raged with waves, countless blood beasts emerged from it.

Large numbers of desolate level blood beasts, with a small number of ancient blood beasts, formed into an army as they charged at Wu Yong and the others fiercely.

Blood beasts were a type of path beast.

They did not reproduce normally, but were born from heaven and earth, created using natural blood path dao marks.

Similar to blood beasts were snow monsters, mud monsters, cloud beasts, soul beasts, year beasts, and rock dragons.

“Blood tide pit had such an incredible thing? A blood beast breeding ground?” Tie Mian Shen said softly as he looked at Wu Yong.

Wu Yong expressed surprise on his face.

Blood tide pit contained a true inheritance of Blood Sea Ancestor, it was obtained by mortal Gu Master Shang Yan Fei, and was later taken by Wu clan. Wu clan turned the blood tide pit into their possession, and explored it, but did not find anything special. It was only treated as a resource point after that.

“So many blood beasts in ambush, no wonder the Seven Illusions Demon Immortal is hiding here.” Qiao Zhi Cai said.

Blood beasts formed into an army and attacked, they had all sorts of forms, some had tiger heads and horse bodies, some had snake heads and rabbit bodies, some had tortoise shells and dragon tails, some were like trees, while some were giant fruits...

The pungent smell of blood assaulted the nose as these blood beasts growled sinisterly.

This force suddenly attacked, even super clans would be caught off guard.

But Qiao Zhi Cai’s and Tie Mian Shen’s expressions were unchanged, they did not intend to retreat.

Because at this moment, Wu Yong was standing in front of them.

“A bunch of trash.” Wu Yong snorted, rage flickering in his eyes.

He was very angry.

Because during this period, he was staying in Wu clan, deploying members everywhere to deal with all sorts of situations, he was extremely repressed. And now, this Seven Illusions Demon Immortal had vile intentions, they actually caused the deaths of Wu clan’s Wu Yuan Ju and Rong Hao!

Tiny traces of wind was gathering around him.

The gentle green wind had unknowingly surrounded the growling blood beasts as well.

The blood beasts were still rampaging, their speed did not fall at all.

Just when they were about to reach the three immortals, blood beasts started to explode!

The explosions were not loud, they were very gentle, like the bursting of bubbles.

Blood beasts detonated one after another, even though they were close to the immortals, they were no threat, unable to deal any damage.

The growling and attack was like a joke.

Hundreds of rank six battle strength and dozens of rank seven battle strength beasts had disintegrated in front of Wu Yong, fragile like toys made of paper.

This was the power of a rank eight!

“What immortal killer move is this... the aura is completely concealed, I cannot detect anything!” Qiao Zhi Cai was full of shock.

Tie Mian Shen had a solemn expression, staring at Wu Yong’s back.

Wu Yong’s expression was dark, he stared at the blood tide below him.

The blood beasts did not form out of nothing, the blood tide had dried out, the blood tide pit that was oozing with blood earlier was now drying up.

Qiao Zhi Cai sighed, it was a pity. He could see that the dense blood path dao marks in blood tide pit had vanished. From now on, blood tide pit no longer existed, it was only an ordinary pit now.

Wu Yong did not care.

This pit, unfathomable to the eyes of normal people, was completely exposed to him.

A rainbow colored figure appeared in Wu Yong’s investigative range.

“You are the daring person who is trying to challenge Wu clan’s authority?” Wu Yong said calmly, but everyone could hear his killing intent and rage.

The mysterious Gu Immortal in the pit smiled bitterly: “Lord Wu Yong, I had no choice, I was forced to. Now... I seek your understanding!”

“Hmm?” Wu Yong’s expression changed.

At the next moment, his environment changed abruptly!

The blue sky and mountainous ground had vanished, the surroundings had turned into a color of purple.

The three immortals could not sense their distances, their sense of space had been severely disrupted.

Rumble...

Tides could be heard, the blood beasts that were destroyed earlier turned into bloody water as they gathered into a river, flowing below the three immortals.

The blood colored waves and ripples appeared, countless purple thoughts rained down and assaulted the immortals.

“Damn it! These blood beasts were just the prelude and trap. So vicious!” Qiao Zhi Cai cursed.

Tie Mian Shen looked around nervously: “What immortal battlefield killer move is this, is it a super Gu formation?”

With his investigative abilities, he could not see through this place!

Wu Yong was unhappy, he snorted coldly and waved his sleeves.

Boom, intense winds blew as a giant tornado surrounded the range of one li, encircling the three immortals.

Purple thoughts rained down furiously, landing on the ball of wind as they splattered, but could not break the defense.

Wu Yong did not move, his expression was cold, he raised his right arm and flicked.

A crisp sound echoed.

A dark jade worm flew out of his finger tips.

The small worm got out of the ball of wind and flew towards the blood river rapidly.

While flying, it grew larger as its body expanded to ten feet, fifty feet, a hundred and fifty feet.

After a few breaths of time, it turned into a vicious wind dragon that was two hundred and twenty feet long, it bared its fangs and claws, breaking the rain of purple thoughts, crashing into the blood river.

The blood river gushed and formed a spiral, trying to devour the wind dragon like a giant beast.

Wu Yong’s eyes flashed with a green light, the wind dragon roared and turned into countless jade wind blades, shooting everywhere.

The blood river spiral was broken by the wind blades, but the wind blades continued to cut as the red blood river was split into two.

Qiao Zhi Cai and Tie Mian Shen watched with wide opened eyes, they had shocked and chaotic emotions.

Wu Yong’s every attack was an immortal killer move with outstanding power, far beyond rank seven. If they were his opponent, they would not last for a move.

Wu Yong could actually use such a powerful immortal killer moves, it was like his instinct, it was as easy as breathing.

“Every killer move of Lord Wu Yong had its aura concealed to the limit, he was truly hiding his strength.” Qiao Zhi Cai’s heart was still in a commotion.

“This wind dragon killer move actually has a second style variation move, turning into countless wind blades... Wu Yong is definitely not as useless as the rumors say, he has such incredible battle strength... this person is hiding so deeply!” Tie Mian Shen’s eyes shone with brilliance.

He looked at Wu Yong’s back, feeling glad that Tie clan and Wu clan were allies, they had not turned on each other.

Wu Du Xiu and Wu Yong were mother and son, the former was like a fierce wind blowing on the top of a mountain, while the latter was a powerful tornado at the bottom of a valley. They acted differently and had opposite personalities, but they were equally powerful and domineering!

However, even with Wu Yong’s fierce attacks, the surroundings did not change.

The split river turned into two, expanding and forming two blood rivers, both were equally big as before.

Qiao Zhi Cai’s expression changed, to be able to remain under the attack of a rank eight Gu Immortal and trap all three of them, what sort of method was this?

His doubts did not last long, because a figure soon emerged from the blood river, speaking and giving them the answer.

“This is my purple blood river formation. Wu Yong, if you do not use the two rank eight Immortal Gu that your mother left you, with just that rank eight gentle wind Gu, you cannot break this formation.” Purple Mountain True Monarch said.

He was not in his miniman body, he was as large as a human now.

When he spoke, his body rose up as an ‘island’ floated below his feet.

Qiao Zhi Cai and Tie Mian Shen’s expressions changed, Wu Yong was also moved. This was because Purple Mountain True Monarch did not conceal his aura, he was undoubtedly a rank eight.

“Who are you? What do you want?” Wu Yong called out.

Purple Mountain True Monarch smiled, looking at Wu Yong with his clear purple eyes: “Of course, it is to kill you. Once you are dead, Wu clan will go into a commotion, other clans will attack it, it will break apart.”

Wu Yong was stunned, he suddenly laughed as he raised his head.

He was laughing from anger.

After laughing, he lowered his head, a fierce light shooting out of his eyes: “Such guts, in that case, I will kill you and raise my prestige as a rank eight.”

Saying this, a strong aura burst out of his body.

Countless Gu worms were activated in his immortal aperture.

Qiao Zhi Cai and Tie Mian Shen both retreated, they could feel unparalleled threat coming from Wu Yong’s body.

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s smile faded.

Wu Yong’s immortal killer moves earlier were undetectable, their auras were concealed completely. But now, the immortal killer move he was conjuring had incredible aura, it was like a raging storm.

From this perspective, Wu Yong was using his full strength to fight!

What immortal killer move was it that made Wu Yong unable to conceal the aura?

No matter what killer move it was, once activated, an incredible power would be unleashed, the might would be unstoppable.

How could this be allowed?

At Purple Mountain True Monarch’s will, countless purple thoughts burst out like a storm, gushing out...

Wu clan.

Ancestral hall.

“This, this! This!!” The Wu clan Gu Immortal guarding the ancestral hall had a change of expression as sweat rolled down his face, his expression was deathly pale.

He shouted in shock: “Lord Wu Yong’s life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu were destroyed! Lord Wu Yong... is he dead?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1342: With Elder Brother Gone, Younger Brother Takes Over

Ancestral hall.

The ancestral hall on top of Wu Yi Mountain was a mortal Gu House. Using a large number of rank five mortal Gu, even though it was inferior to Immortal Gu Houses, it was extremely significant to Wu clan.

Essentially, every super force and normal force would have an ancestral hall.

Inside, life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu would be used, or even blood rope Gu.

The former two were common, while blood rope Gu was rare, because it was blood path.

Even the small and big sects in Central Continent had buildings similar to the ancestral hall, storing life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu.

At this moment, Wu Ba Chong was standing in the ancestral hall, looking at the Gu worm fragments blankly.

After the life tablet Gu shattered, it would be like wood scraps, while soul lantern Gu would become a cracked ladybird, it would not be shining with a dark blue light anymore.

Wu Ba Chong was old, but he had a muscular body resembling a bear, his hair was white and his nose was wide, he had thick brows and sharp eyes, he was a steady and responsible person.

He was the second supreme elder of Wu clan, he had gone through many ordeals, resulting in his calm nature, but now, his forehead was full of sweat, his breathing was ragged, his gaze was chaotic and in a mess.

“Lord Wu Yong died?!” Wu Ba Chong stared at the two mortal Gu fragments, he had already stood here for a while, but his mind was in a mess.

“How could this happen? A great rank eight existence, the pillar of our Wu clan, he died like this?!” Wu Ba Chong did not dare to imagine this or believe it.

“Did Lord Wu Yong die or not???” He kept asking himself.

After all, life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu were mortal Gu, it was possible to interfere with them using some methods.

But Wu Yong was uncontactable now, no matter how Wu clan tried to communicate with him, none got through, this was an undeniable fact!

Regardless of whether or not Wu Yong was dead, his situation was definitely not good.

“Being able to make a rank eight Gu Immortal end up in such a state, who is it?”

“A rank eight existence among the demonic path and lone cultivators?”

“Or is it the other super clans, are they collaborating to deal with our Wu clan?”

Wu Ba Chong continued to guess.

The more he thought, the more messy his mind was.

Wu Du Xiu died, Wu Yong went missing, in this huge Wu clan, the number one super clan in Southern Border, there was actually no rank eight existence guarding it now.

This was a severe situation, Wu clan was in a disastrous state, and the most fearful thing was, the perpetrator was still unknown!

After his shocked emotions returned to normal, fear and loss filled Wu Ba Chong’s heart.

Normally, there was Wu Du Xiu or Wu Yong suppressing the situation, he did not feel anything.

But now that the two rank eight great experts were gone, Wu Ba Chong realized that his stable and firm shoulders could not bear the weight of Wu clan.

During Wu Du Xiu's era, he was the second supreme elder, after Wu Yong ascended to her role, he continued to assist him. In terms of seniority, he was among the oldest and most experienced Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals.

However, it was pointless.

He was only rank seven in cultivation level, his battle strength was not outstanding, if he fought against Old Treeman Ba De, he could not win. Even among Wu clan, there were many rank seven Gu Immortals who could fight him evenly.

However, he was the first person to return among Wu clan's higher-ups.

Thus, he had the initiative.

“What do I do?”

“Even if Lord Wu Yong is not dead, he has gone missing and his life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu have shattered, once news gets out, there would be a huge commotion, everyone's hearts would waver.”

“Should I hide the information?”

Wu Ba Chong quickly shook his head.

This shocking news had already been exposed to many Wu clan Gu Immortals by the Wu clan rank six Gu Immortal who was guarding the place.

If Wu Yong was confirmed to be dead, the mastermind who attacked Wu clan would not give up this chance to target their morale.

Thus, he could not seal this news even if he wanted to.

“Is the matter at hand to find the missing Lord Wu Yong, or should we shrink our defensive lines and recall the supreme elders who are outside to guard our base?”

Wu Ba Chong frowned.

Both choices were dangerous.

Searching for Wu Yong would definitely be dangerous, to be able to destroy Wu Yong's life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu and have him disappear, the mastermind was definitely powerful. Sending rank seven Gu Immortals to find him was like sending sheep to a tiger.

And if they retracted their defensive lines and called back the elders, it would be a huge political loss, many of their resource points would be lost. If the surrounding super forces tried to take over at this time, Wu clan would suffer immense losses.

What should he do?

Wu Ba Chong was hesitant, he was stuck between two tough options.

After a long time, he licked his dry lips, he decided to put both options on hold, he was going to hold a meeting with the Wu clan Gu Immortals as the second supreme elder, they would execute the plan after coming to a consensus.

Wu Yong was missing and uncontactable, a huge storm surrounding Wu clan was quietly forming.

Southern Border, super Gu formation.

Fang Yuan sat on his bed, cultivating with his eyes closed, he was multitasking as he listened to Lady White Rabbit’s report.

Lady White Rabbit had inherited the White Rabbit true inheritance.

This true inheritance was quite famous in Southern Border, the inheritor had to be pure hearted. And when they cultivate in the future, they had to maintain the same pure heartedness. Otherwise, most of the true inheritance’s methods could not be used, using them forcefully would result in backlash.

Precisely so, Lady White Rabbit was naturally trustworthy, she was a popular person among lone immortals and demonic cultivators.

Wu An had noticed this initially, thus he convinced Lady White Rabbit to be the intermediary in hosting this immortal opportunity business.

Once in a while, Lady White Rabbit would enter the super Gu formation and report the situation of the immortal opportunity business to Fang Yuan.

Even though Fang Yuan did not gain any benefits from the immortal opportunity business, he listened to the business situation as it could help him learn about the changes in the area surrounding the giant dream realm.

Lady White Rabbit spoke softly, her voice was like smooth water, she reported with a gentle gaze on Fang Yuan’s face.

Fang Yuan was in Wu Yi Hai’s appearance now, his face was handsome, his nose was tall and wide, his manly heroic aura was completely displayed.

Lady White Rabbit had fallen for him already, she purposely spoke slowly, treasuring this precious time she could spend with Fang Yuan alone.

Unfortunately, each time Fang Yuan met with her, he spoke only twice, the first sentence was to ask Lady White Rabbit to sit as she gave her report, and the second was for her to leave.

But even so, Lady White Rabbit was very satisfied.

She knew deeply that Wu Yi Hai had a high status, she felt like she was a lowly person and could not match Fang Yuan. She was very happy to spend this time with him once in a while, she felt very blissful.

Right at this time, Lady White Rabbit’s voice halted.

Because she saw Fang Yuan’s expression change.

This situation was very rare, Lady White Rabbit’s heart clenched, what happened to Wu Yi Hai? Did he encounter any problems?

Fang Yuan gradually shut his eyes, willing as he opened the hall.

“Yi Hai, at this point in time, you still have the mood to relax and spend time with a woman?” A female immortal barged into the hall.

Lady White Rabbit turned around and looked, this was a young woman wearing green clothing with wavy sleeves. her skin was smooth like snow, her body was curvy and she resembled a delicate willow.

She had an extremely beautiful face, especially her attractive eyes, concealed by her long eyelashes, they seemed clear as water.

“She is Qiao clan’s Qiao Si Liu!” Lady White Rabbit recognized this person as she flustered, lowering her gaze in panic.

She knew this person’s relationship with Fang Yuan.

Some time ago, there were rumors about Fang Yuan and Qiao Si Liu circulating around.

“Fairy Si Liu is so beautiful, as expected of one of the top three fairies in Southern Border.”

“Only someone like this can be with Lord Wu Yi Hai.”

Lady White Rabbit thought this, as she felt pain in her heart nurturing and fermenting.

Qiao Si Liu took a look at Lady White Rabbit who was lowering her head, she seemed to be nonchalant but she was actually very attentive.

Qiao Si Liu was trying to seduce Wu Yi Hai into becoming Qiao clan’s son-in-law, Qiao Si Liu had to look at all of Fang Yuan’s information.

And in Fang Yuan’s information, Lady White Rabbit was present.

This was the first time Qiao Si Liu was meeting Lady White Rabbit.

She saw that Lady White Rabbit had a delicate body, her eyes were like rubies, she had fluffy rabbit ears that were drooping, her eyes were looking down, it was cute and endearing. Even though under close examination, her appearance was slightly inferior to Qiao Si Liu, men loved these tiny pitiful creatures that were full of cuteness.

“But now is not the time to deal with her.” Qiao Si Liu snorted internally, passing White Rabbit as she went up to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had opened his eyes, standing up from his bed as he smiled towards Qiao Si Liu: “Fairy, this sudden visit is truly joyful.”

Lady White Rabbit looked at Fang Yuan in a daze, thinking: “Wu Yi Hai is smiling again, I have not seen him smile for a long time. He looks like the sun shining in spring when he smiles, if only he could smile at me!”

Qiao Si Liu looked at Fang Yuan, disregarding pleasantries: “It seems you really do not know! Sigh... my next words will only be shocking, there is no joy.”

Fang Yuan’s expression changed: “What happened?”

Qiao Si Liu did not answer him, she turned around and said to Lady White Rabbit: “Little lady, please leave first, I need to talk to your lord.”

“What?” Lady White Rabbit was dazed.

Fang Yuan waved his hand: “White Rabbit, please.”

Lady White Rabbit did not dare to defy Fang Yuan, she acknowledged as she left the hall.

As the doors closed, Qiao Si Liu said: “Wu Yong is missing, his life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu are destroyed, news has not spread in Southern Border yet, but Wu clan is in chaos now.”

“What?!” Fang Yuan was deeply shocked.

This was simply too shocking.

With the destruction of his life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu, Wu Yong was likely to have died.

He was the pillar of Wu clan, if he died, would Wu clan be able to defend its territories?

Qiao Si Liu continued: “Yi Hai, I am here to lend you a hand. You are Wu Yong’s brother, the person closest to him in bloodline, and you have sufficient cultivation level. With Wu Yong gone, you have to take over as first supreme elder! From today onwards, you will hold the authority of Wu clan.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1343: Gaining Authority Without Even Moving

Taking over Wu clan?

Qiao Si Liu’s words made Fang Yuan moved.

How could he not be moved?

After all, Wu clan was a super force, and it was not an ordinary super force, it was already very powerful, having the number one position for years after years in Southern Border’s history.

Wu clan had a huge territory with all sorts of resource points, it had a deep foundation and an incredible rich treasury. If he could control this super force, becoming the person with the highest authority, Fang Yuan’s future cultivation resources would be unrestricted!

Right now, Fang Yuan had a lot of assets.

The trading of Dang Hun Mountain’s guts Gu, dragonfish, regretful spiders, eerie fire dragon pythons, star fragment grass, star dart Gu, star river Gu, stellar fire Gu, falling meteor Gu, as well as the spirit snake trade which had started recently.

It was not an exaggeration to say that Fang Yuan was raking in gold every day.

If the rest of the resources in Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture were included, he had an ordinary rank eight Gu Immortal’s foundation. If he also included Lang Ya blessed land’s wisdom Gu, and Dang Hun Mountain located inside it, and City Well in the turbulent flow sea area, Fang Yuan had surpassed ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals!

But he paled in comparison if he placed his resources against those of a super force.

Any super force had an incredibly deep foundation, even if they currently did not have a rank eight great expert, they had them in history. In addition to the resource points that the super forces controlled in the five regions, Fang Yuan’s assets were truly inferior in comparison.

For example, Wu clan’s blood tide pit produced more profits than Fang Yuan’s dragonfish transactions.

Wu clan had twenty to thirty resource points similar to blood tide pit.

And resource points inferior to blood tide pit, like Northern Plains’ Liu tribe’s bone burial field or jade light pit, were countless.

There were also about ten top tier resource points better than blood tide pit.

And don’t forget, the resources in the immortal apertures of Wu clan’s Gu Immortals, and also the blessed lands and grotto-heavens of Wu clan’s predecessors.

Of course, super forces had lots of earnings and also spending. Wu clan was currently in a state of having more assets than manpower, they were barely able to defend these resources when Wu Yong was around. But with him gone, they were sure to have losses, they had to give up some.

But even so, if Fang Yuan could control Wu clan, his gains would be immense, far beyond him working alone.

Fang Yuan quickly calmed down.

He took a look at Qiao Si Liu, immediately realizing her intention.

Like what Qiao Si Liu said, with Wu Yong gone, the role of Wu Yi Hai, whom Fang Yuan was acting as, was the best choice of becoming Wu clan’s first supreme elder.

This was an unbelievably rare chance!

Fang Yuan did not doubt that Qiao Si Liu was speaking the truth, because it was too easy to verify.

Qiao Si Liu was here in a rush, she showed her sincerity.

Fang Yuan frowned and smiled bitterly: “Such a huge thing happened! I had no idea.”

“The urgent matter at hand is to get back to Wu clan. Wu Ba Chong has already gathered the supreme elders, many Gu Immortals have already returned, even if they did not return, their wills are present. But they purposely left you out, I wonder what their intentions were.” Qiao Si Liu said anxiously.

Using Wu Yi Hai was the best chance that Qiao clan had in interfering with Wu clan.

Fang Yuan sighed deeply: “Sigh! I have only been in Wu clan for a short time, I have no foundation or network. It is too difficult to take over and become the first supreme elder. They purposely left me out, it shows that my chances are way too slim.”

“No, you have a big chance. Yi Hai, don’t forget that you have me, Qiao clan is backing you up!” Qiao Si Liu looked at Fang Yuan with deep emotions.

Fang Yuan blinked: “How will Qiao clan help me? What will Lord Qiao Zhi Cai do?”

Qiao Si Liu’s expression froze, she hesitated for a while, but she did not dare to hide it from Fang Yuan, she said the truth: “Our first supreme elder went with Lord Wu Yong, he has vanished as well, his life tablet Gu broke and we cannot contact him. Other than them, Tie clan’s Tie Mian Shen also went missing. They were investigating the deaths of Wu Yuan Ju and Rong Hao, but now we do not know if they are alive or not.”

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk: “What is going on?”

Qiao Si Liu smiled bitterly: “Trust me, this is all I know.”

Fang Yuan showed hesitation: “Such a shocking event, we cannot hide it from the world for long. Who was it? Without Lord Qiao Zhi Cai, how will Qiao clan help me?”

“Don’t worry about that, Qiao clan has already come to a consensus, I am the chosen representative.” Qiao Si Liu said.

Fang Yuan was slightly shocked.

Qiao clan was the weakest among Southern Border’s super forces. Despite that, they were united, even with Qiao Zhi Cai missing, they still carried out their plans accordingly, as expected, any super force had its extraordinary aspect.

But Fang Yuan did not want to go.

He sensed that there were undercurrents brewing a huge vortex, the mastermind was a powerful force!

Even if he took over as Wu clan’s first supreme elder, so what?

No resources could match his gains in exploring dream realms.

Fang Yuan did not need more resources, he needed attainment level from the dream realms.

The latter was the truly precious fortuitous encounter!

Even if he became Wu clan’s most authoritative figure, which was alluring and beneficial to him, Fang Yuan knew that there were countless choices in life, if one wanted to progress further, they could not be blinded by profits, they needed to be clear about what were the most important things!

“Once I become first supreme elder, I would need to return to the clan and hold the fort, back at Wu Yi Mountain. How can I leave the giant dream realm? I had put in so much effort to come here.”

“But rejecting Qiao Si Liu is not wise. If I anger Qiao clan and ruin our relationship, I will gain nothing.”

“But the most important thing is, in the eyes of everyone, if I stay here and do not return to gain control of the clan, it would be very strange and suspicious. After all, I also displayed a level of political ambition earlier.”

Fang Yuan thought as he paced around the hall.

Qiao Si Liu was stomping her feet in anxiety: “Yi Hai, why are you hesitating?”

“This is too shocking, I need some time to think.” Fang Yuan waved his hand.

“There is no time, we need to leave now, you can think along the way.” Qiao Si

Liu said.

“No, this is not as simple as you think!” Fang Yuan shook his head, having a grim expression: “Do you know? You have already fallen for their trap.”

Qiao Si Liu was stunned: “What?”

Fang Yuan said: “If we return openly like this, what would Wu clan’s supreme elders think? They are not stupid, if I, Wu Yi Hai, goes back with Qiao clan and take over as first supreme elder, leaving my brother in the lurch and instead, bringing in outsiders to fight for benefits in the clan, the entire clan will be torn apart, without sufficient strength and reputation, how can I take over as first supreme elder?”

Qiao Si Liu blinked, thinking: Wu Yi Hai’s words made sense.

“Then do we stay here while Wu Ba Chong controls the situation and takes over as first supreme elder?” Qiao Si Liu retorted.

Fang Yuan thought that this Qiao Si Liu was not easy to get rid of, but he smiled: “We can wait, there is no rush.”

“No rush?” Qiao Si Liu stared with wide eyes.

Fang Yuan’s smile deepened, he looked at Qiao Si Liu with a sharp gaze: “I believe that even if I do not return, Wu Ba Chong cannot control the situation, am I wrong?”

Qiao Si Liu was stunned again.

Wu clan, discussion hall.

Boom!

Wu Ba Chong slammed the table, dust flew upwards from the damage.

He shouted: “Wu Qiao 1 , what do you mean?! No matter what suggestions I bring up, you object, are you trying to find trouble with me?”

Wu Qiao smiled coldly, standing in the middle of the hall as he looked at Wu Ba Chong: “Second supreme elder, you are too hasty. We do not know if Lord Wu Yong is dead or alive, just the life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu cannot determine it. Look at you, you are sitting in his seat already, I was warning you earlier out of kindness, you should sit in your own seat.”

“Supreme elder Wu Qiao, Wu clan is in grave danger now, we should discuss the important matters and not bother with these small details.”

“I feel that there is no issue with Lord Wu Ba Chong leading the discussion, he is the second supreme elder after all. And now, Wu clan needs a leader!”

“Do you think we do not know what intentions you have, Wu Qiao? I just want to remind you, you are a Wu clansman, not a Qiao clansman.”

In the hall, some Gu Immortals spoke, helping Wu Ba Chong target Wu Qiao.

Wu Qiao sneered: “In terms of bloodline, the most qualified person to become first supreme elder is Lord Wu Yi Hai! Should the second supreme elder take over the position? Are we in a Central Continent sect?”

There was silence.

"That makes sense."

"As clans, we emphasize on bloodline."

"Why did Wu Yi Hai not come? Wu Ba Chong, did you inform him?"

Some Gu Immortals spoke out, most of them were defending their territories, only their wills were participating in this.

Wu Ba Chong observed their expressions, even though he showed anger on his face, he was calm as ice in his heart.

"I did not succeed." He sighed internally.

On the surface, he stood up, patting his forehead as he sighed: "I was rash, I was too worried about the clan. You are right, Lord Wu Yi Hai should be leading us, I will welcome his return! I am willing to listen to him."

"Huh?"

Once he said that, the Gu Immortals were shocked.

Wu Qiao was also evidently surprised.

What was this Wu Ba Chong planning?

The contents of Wu clan's discussions soon got to Fang Yuan.

Qiao Si Liu showed joy as she looked at Fang Yuan: "Great, even though we did not return, we can still take over Wu clan."

Fang Yuan had a grim expression, the situation was progressing at an unpleasant rate.

Wu Qiao's actions were understandable. After all, this former Wu clan third supreme elder was already bribed by Qiao clan.

But Wu Ba Chong's action of taking a step back was truly brilliant, Fang Yuan was quite impressed.

"The situation is not good." Fang Yuan shook his head and sighed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1344: Troubled Thoughts, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Building

"What is it?" Qiao Si Liu did not understand.

Fang Yuan did not answer her, he paced around, using wisdom path methods as he fell into deep thought.

The situation was very complex now, the mastermind was hidden, while Wu Yong was missing, everything was shrouded in mystery. But Fang Yuan had no choice but to decide his course of action now.

He had no choice.

Fang Yuan could deeply feel how helpless he was in this situation.

Wu clan’s Gu Immortals, Qiao clan’s Gu Immortals, as well as Southern Border’s situation and the mastermind, they all forced him to leave the super Gu formation.

This was the helplessness of the righteous path.

Fang Yuan was faced with a difficult test.

He did not want to be a chess piece of Qiao clan and Wu clan, he wanted to keep his benefits amidst this complex situation.

What to do?

Fang Yuan had already guessed Wu Ba Chong’s intention and desire.

“Maybe I can make use of this?” Thinking of this, Fang Yuan decided to make use of it.

He stopped walking around, he faced Qiao Si Liu: “Since they want me to lead the clan, I will give my orders.”

“Yi Hai, this is the demeanor of a heroic man!” Qiao Si Liu’s eyes shone, she praised.

Fang Yuan continued: “With the mastermind hidden, we need to play safe now. I will order Wu clan’s Gu Immortals to give up on the faraway resource points and return to Wu Yi Mountain, we will activate our Immortal Gu Houses to defend against the unknown.”

Qiao Si Liu was very satisfied with Fang Yuan’s action.

Fang Yuan informed her of his thoughts regarding Wu clan’s internal affairs, he did not treat her as an outsider.

Qiao Si Liu was joyful, she said: “This is the best method to play safe. But it is a severe loss, by giving up the defense of so many resource points, the surrounding super forces will take over them.”

“We have no choice, Wu clan’s strength is too dispersed, with this uncertain situation, we can only regroup and defend against future challenges.” Fang Yuan sighed.

“That makes sense too, let’s go, we should return to Wu Yi Mountain.” Qiao Si Liu approved of Fang Yuan’s idea, she said.

Fang Yuan shook his head: “No, we are not leaving.”

“This will be too dangerous.”

“Even my brother was ambushed, we are just rank seven, wouldn’t that mastermind easily deal with us?”

“If this mastermind wants to deal with Wu clan, their next target is me. How can I leave now? The route back to Wu clan is too dangerous!”

Fang Yuan’s excuse was very reasonable.

Qiao Si Liu’s expression turned grim, nodding: “That is true! We need to be safer, it will be best if we can be escorted by an Immortal Gu House.”

After spending so much effort, he finally convinced Qiao Si Liu, Fang Yuan let out a sigh of relief.

But he was still frowning.

He had finally managed to stay in the super Gu formation, but now, how long could it continue?

Wu Yong’s survival was uncertain, this situation made even Fang Yuan, who knew about certain future events, feel helpless.

Inside the purple blood river formation.

There were over a dozen blood rivers now.

In this dim place, countless purple thoughts were pouring out unceasingly.

Tie Mian Shen shouted loudly, iron sand that resembled fog was surrounding him, forming a huge veil that defended him.

But the purple thoughts turned from solid to phantom, entering the iron sand veil towards Tie Mian Shen unobstructed.

“Damn it!” Tie Mian Shen gritted his teeth, he had no options against such a phantom path method.

But at the moment of crisis, a clear wind blew.

The purple thoughts that had turned into phantom burst like bubbles.

“So close...” Tie Mian Shen looked around, giving Wu Yong a look of gratitude.

Purple thoughts formed into a storm around Wu Yong, there were countless blood beasts mixed among them.

But even in this intense battle, Wu Yong was uninjured, he still had the spare energy to take care of Tie Mian Shen and Qiao Zhi Cai, who were far away in the battlefield.

“This purple blood river formation has phantom path effects, if we do not get rid of the ruin bat corpses, these phantom path effects will not end!” Qiao Zhi Cai shouted.

He needed to shout.

Because voice transmissions would not work here.

Wisdom path methods like communicating with thoughts were also unusable.

Tie Mian Shen had a cold gaze, sharp as a dagger, he looked around and saw that there were thirty to forty ruin bat corpses, most were desolate level, but there were some ancient ruin bats and even an immemorial ruin bat, defended by two blood rivers.

In fact, at this point, Tie Mian Shen could understand some things already.

These ruin bat corpses were rapidly melted in the blood river. Especially when the purple thoughts turned from solid to phantom, these ruin bat corpses were being consumed at a rapid rate.

But so what if he knew about the importance of the ruin bat corpses?

Not long after they fought, that rank eight Gu Immortal (Purple Mountain True Monarch) had vanished.

Wu Yong was greatly restricted now, he was defending against Purple Mountain True Monarch’s sneak attack.

“It is unwise to get Lord Wu Yong to destroy the ruin bat corpses, that purple haired rank eight will use it to his advantage.”

“In this situation, Qiao Zhi Cai and I need to work together to clear the ruin bat corpses.”

“If that purple haired enemy attacks, Lord Wu Yong would be able to block him and save our lives...”

But what if he could not?

Or rather, even if he could save their lives, if he had to give up a chance to destroy the Gu formation, what would Wu Yong do?

Tie Mian Shen was hesitant, because trust between the three was lacking.

But at this time, a complex aura burst out from the very center of the battlefield.

Great winds blew, Wu Yong’s sleeves were fluttering like the king of the wind. At this moment, his ordinary appearance had turned into one of grand boldness and authority.

“Since you want to see the rank eight Immortal Gu that my mother left me, I will show you.” Wu Yong called out coldly.

A vast number of purple thoughts were blown away, the blood rivers were in turbulence, several rivers were cut apart from this intense wind.

Qiao Zhi Cai was shocked and joyful.

Tie Mian Shen’s iron mask was also shaved off slightly from this commotion, he called out in surprise: “This is an... Immortal Gu House?!”

Wu Yong had struck without warning, making a truly shocking move.

He did not use any immortal killer moves, he took out an Immortal Gu House from his immortal aperture.

This Immortal Gu House was not glorious or grand, it had the appearance of a bamboo building.

This was a very commonly seen type of building in Southern Border, it existed in the other four regions as well, but it was only built on mountainous terrain.

This bamboo building had two stories, made entirely out of bamboo, there were even bamboo leaves growing on the bamboos, drops of dew were dripping down from the leaves, green as jade.

Wu Yong’s sleeves billowed, flying into the second story of the bamboo building.

He sat by the window, flicking his finger as the bamboo building shook, more than ten drops of jade dew fell off the roof.

At that moment, the jade dew shot out from the bamboo building at lightning speed.

Everywhere they went, clear wind blew, sweeping everything. Be it the purple thoughts or blood red tides, they were all disintegrated by the wind.

“So impressive!” Qiao Zhi Cai praised, the jade dew had flown over and resolved his crisis.

“Wu clan had three Immortal Gu Houses initially, but now they have a fourth! And this Immortal Gu House has the aura of two rank eight wind path Immortal Gu... Wu Yong had truly hidden it very deeply.” Tie Mian Shen was deeply shook.

The two Gu Immortals were saved one after another, they flew into the bamboo building, standing beside Wu Yong.

“This is the Immortal Gu House that my mother constructed, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.” Wu Yong sat by the window, looking at the Gu formation outside as he explained clearly.

“Amazing! With this building, we will not lose. It is only a matter of time until we escape.” Qiao Zhi Cai was overjoyed.

If Wu Yong was using Wu Du Xiu’s two rank eight Immortal Gu to activate an immortal killer move, Qiao Zhi Cai would be very worried.

Because activating immortal killer moves had a chance of failure. The stronger the killer move, the greater the backlash if he failed in activating it.

But Wu Du Xiu had died, Wu Yong had only inherited these two rank eight Immortal Gu for a short amount of time.

Especially when Wu Yong was the first supreme elder of Wu clan, he had high status, how much time did he have to practise his killer moves? This was a huge problem.

But now, these two rank eight wind path Immortal Gu were used with other Gu worms to construct an Immortal Gu House!

Everyone knew that Immortal Gu Houses had fixed abilities, but they were easy to use and would not normally have backlash.

Tie Mian Shen’s emotions were much more complex, he thought: “Wu clan actually had a fourth Immortal Gu House, and it is a rank eight Immortal Gu House, it is far more powerful than the first three. Each Immortal Gu House will greatly raise a clan’s overall strength. With a rank eight Immortal Gu House, and some Gu Immortals, as long as they had enough immortal essence, Wu clan would basically have the equivalent of a second rank eight Gu Immortal. Wu Yong had truly concealed this deeply!”

He could not help but assess Wu Yong again in a new light.

Wu clan was not having an easy time recently, they were facing the threat of many forces around them. As the only rank eight Gu Immortal left in Wu clan, Wu Yong was busy sending out people to deal with problems, he was in an awkward state.

But as long as he used this Immortal Gu House, all his problems would be resolved, Wu clan’s reputation would soar and they would become the number one force in Southern Border again without doubt, all of the other forces would stop having greedy thoughts.

But Wu Yong did not.

He had been using his own strength to deal with Wu clan’s problems. He hid this Immortal Gu House very deeply, even Wu clan’s Gu Immortals did not know of it.

If he was not trapped inside this purple blood river formation, nobody would be able to find out that Wu Yong actually had a fourth Immortal Gu House, and it was a rank eight Immortal Gu House at that.

“With just this, Wu Yong is definitely not inferior to his mother Wu Du Xiu! Thankfully, my Tie clan is at the northeast of Southern Border, while Wu clan is at the southwest, we are far apart. And earlier, my clan did not join in on making problems for Wu clan.” Tie Mian Shen let out a breath, feeling relieved.

All of the super forces dominated an area, they had been in Southern Border for countless years.

They understood each other very clearly, each of their strengths were balanced with the amount of territory they had, it was in a deadlock.

But once Wu Du Xiu died, this balance was upset, thus, the other super clans worked together to find trouble with Wu clan.

But the moment they displayed this Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, it would replace Wu Du Xiu and suppress Southern Border once again.

Wu Yong’s simply had been scheming so deeply, he had been hiding it from view. One could easily tell, the moment he took out this Immortal Gu House, the other clans would suffer, they would be met with a great defeat!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1345: Worsening Situation, Fang Yuan Moves

The morning sun rose into the sky, it was dawn, the air was still moist and damp.

Two Hou clan Gu Immortals stood above the clouds, looking down at the canyon below them.

Golden Cloud Canyon!

This canyon was filled with mist. At night, the mist would obscure vision and had no special trait. but when the sun rises, and sunlight shines into the canyon, the mist would give out sharp golden light.

These fragments of gold light were not glaring, the mist filled this golden canyon, making it grand and imposing.

“This is Golden Cloud Canyon, it produces metal path and cloud path resources. Long ago, Wu clan had taken it away from us forcefully.” A Hou clan Gu Immortal sighed: “But now, it is time to take back our assets!”

The other Hou clan Gu Immortal nodded, a faint light shining from his body.

The light lasted for a few breaths of time, after it faded, his appearance had changed, he now resembled a famous expert in the demonic path.

The Hou clan Gu Immortal beside him nodded, before rushing down towards Golden Cloud Canyon silently.

Golden Cloud Canyon was originally defended by a Wu clan Gu Immortal, but because of Wu Yong’s disappearance, Fang Yuan had ordered everyone to return to Wu clan’s headquarters.

This news could be concealed for a while, but it was eventually noticed by everyone.

However, Hou clan was a righteous path force, they could not attack directly. There were righteous path rules, thus, Hou clan needed an excuse. Therefore, they said that they were pursuing a demonic path Gu Immortal and charged into Golden Cloud Canyon openly.

Once they took down Golden Cloud Canyon and established that fact, it will not be easy for Wu clan to reclaim Golden Cloud Canyon.

By then, Hou clan can come up with lots of excuses, like ‘we helped Wu clan defend Golden Cloud Canyon, we want some compensation’, it would be a problem for Wu clan.

Coming up with excuses was the greatest ability of righteous path forces.

Unless Wu clan had superior battle strength and forced Hou clan to back off.

The demonic path expert that the Hou clan Gu Immortal transformed into flew towards the golden mist like a huge bird.

Sensing his aura, the mist inside Golden Cloud Canyon changed, metallic sounds could be heard from it, causing vibrations in the eardrums.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

At the next moment, countless blades, spears, swords, halberds, in the form of golden phantoms, shot out endlessly.

Even though the Wu clan Gu Immortal left, the resource point’s Gu formation was still around.

At this moment, it was activated automatically, defending itself.

The gaze of the Hou clan Gu Immortal was stern, he called out as a strong blade qi shot down, slicing sharply. Everywhere it went, space shattered, winds were moving rapidly.

Evidently, Hou clan came prepared, he used blade qi Immortal Gu.

Wu clan’s Gu formation was just a mortal Gu formation, how could it match a rank seven Gu Immortal? Not only did the countless golden phantoms shatter, even the Gu formation was completely destroyed from one attack.

At once, the golden mist in the canyon was split in the middle, a large amount of the golden mist parted as the canyon’s true appearance was exposed.

The two Gu Immortals from Hou clan had heated gazes.

“Demonic path scoundrel, where are you going?” One of the Hou clan Gu Immortals shouted as he charged ahead.

...

A purple waterfall descended like a mist, it was a hundred and eighty feet tall.

Poisonous waterfall!

On a mountain close to this waterfall, there was a mortal village that Wu clan specially arranged.

“Die, die!” A large group of mortal Gu Masters charged into the mountain.

Wu clan’s Gu Masters retreated, they were at their final line of defense.

Wu clan’s leader, a rank four Gu Master, stood at the crossroad as he shouted at his enemies: “Your Yang clan is really despicable, you actually assaulted our Wu clan!”

“Hmph! We have been putting up with you for a long time. You have been too overbearing in occupying this place. My father and mother just wanted a Gu worm to cure their poison, but they actually died in this mountain. Today, we will settle the score!” The leading Yang clan Gu Master was still quite young, he charged into the mountain with rage and hatred.

“Damn it!” Wu clan’s Gu Masters were in a defensive location, but Yang clan came prepared, they had great numbers.

Wu clan’s Gu Masters were bound to lose, they could only escape from a secret cave.

Yang clan’s Gu Masters defeated Wu clan, they cheered in the rubble of the village.

Above the clouds, the Yang clan Gu Immortals watching this expressed joy on their faces.

This was the area where Yang clan and Wu clan bordered. Yang clan had been planning for a long time, sending a group of Yang clan mortals here, and allowed them to live here, causing conflict to occur between them and Wu clan.

Because of this excuse, Yang clan could invade and occupy Wu clan’s territory openly now.

With the righteous path’s rules, these were just mortal conflicts, unless Gu Immortal seeds were killed, there were no consequences.

Poisonous waterfall was just an ordinary mortal resource point, it produced some mortal poison path Gu, it was not important to Gu Immortals.

But once this opening was made, from now on, Yang clan only needed to move forward to reach their destination, the truly valuable — Corpse Mountain!

...

Rumble!

River water raged like thunder, resounding in the ears of a Yao clan Gu Immortal.

He stood at the peak of Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian, looking at the raging red river.

Not far from here, two rivers were connected. Red dragon river and yellow dragon river, these two rivers merged together, forming a huge whirlpool that created great waves, it was extremely dangerous.

Southern Border’s three rivers were not simple. Be it red dragon river, yellow dragon river, or jade dragon river, spirit springs would form in these rivers sometimes. And these spirit springs would be mixed in the river water, once they were washed away, the river water would be full of natural essence, allowing more Gu materials to be created.

Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian!

This was a very special mountain. During ancient times, a Southern Border rank eight Gu Immortal had turned into a zombie and fought against the combined forces of many super clans.

After the rank eight immortal zombie died, this place became a wasteland, it had no value.

But to think that as time passed, gradually, on the mangled corpse of this rank eight immortal zombie, due to the nourishment of the natural essence from the river, along with the aquatic plants in the river that rooted themselves, this place turned into a corpse mountain.

This corpse mountain was thousands of feet tall, there were large numbers of zombies living in it, and it produced transformation path zombie Gu, as well as qi path zombie qi Gu.

Before the headquarters of Southern Border’s Zombie Alliance was exposed, they had targeted this precious area and wanted to pay a high price to buy it from Wu clan to make it their headquarters, but Wu clan rejected them.

“Zombie Alliance did not get it, but now, this belongs to my Yao clan!” The Yao clan Gu Immortal was very excited.

He looked afar, away from the river and towards the shore.

That was Wu clan’s territory.

After taking over this Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian, Wu clan’s territory east of red dragon river and north of yellow dragon river would be completely lost.

Yao clan took down Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian, this was like a bridgehead, they could finally start going after Wu clan’s other territories.

News that Wu Yong had died spread out of nowhere.

After getting such news, several super forces colluded secretly, thus, they did not act alone this time.

Yao clan, Yang clan, and Hou clan, they were just three of these clans.

Wu clan’s headquarters were in chaos.

“Damn it! These three clans are simply too daring!”

“We lost three resources at once, especially Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian, this is a huge loss. In the past, Wu clan from top to bottom spent such effort and a huge price to obtain it.”

“Retaliate, we need to retaliate! We have our Immortal Gu Houses, what are we afraid of?”

Wu clan’s Gu Immortals bellowed in anxiety, some were arguing endlessly, some raised their arms in objection, some were remaining silent.

More than ten days had passed since Wu Yong went missing, it was unknown whether he was dead or alive.

Wu clan had been trying to conceal this information, but like Wu Ba Chong had guessed, the mastermind had already spread news of it.

Initially, the super clans did not believe it.

Because Fang Yuan had already expected this situation, he gave out a lot of false information to mislead others.

But his actions were not normal.

Super forces were not stupid, after some observation and probing, they finally acted. The moment they did, Wu clan went into a difficult spot, they lost a lot of territory.

In the discussion hall, because Wu Yong was missing, the main seat was empty. Wu Ba Chong, who was second supreme elder, sat by the side, he was silent, quietly observing the surrounding Gu Immortals' expressions, even though he had a heavy heart, he felt a bit smug.

Especially when he looked at Wu Qiao, his lips could not help but curl up.

Because Wu Qiao was the Wu clan Gu Immortal in charge of guarding Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian. Once they lost that resource point, it was a huge loss to Wu Qiao.

Wu Qiao was solemn and had a cold expression.

Even though he sensed Wu Ba Chong's provocative gaze, he pretended not to be aware, sitting like a statue.

“Stop arguing, be quiet.” Wu Ba Chong said.

This time, nobody rebuked him, the discussion hall quickly became silent.

Wu Ba Chong was very pleased at this, under the immortals' anxious gazes, he sighed: “Such a huge matter happened to Wu clan, but we still cannot make a decision, let's ask Lord Wu Yi Hai to make his decision.”

Wu Qiao frowned.

The other Wu clan Gu Immortals looked at each other.

Some were unhappy with Fang Yuan, grumbling: “Such a huge matter happened to our clan, but Lord Wu Yi Hai is still staying inside the super Gu formation.”

“I heard that Fairy Si Liu went there more than ten days ago. I also heard that there is a Lady White Rabbit...” The Gu Immortal who said this had vile intentions.

Wu Qiao frowned even deeper now, he wanted to speak up for Fang Yuan, but he was in a dangerous state himself, he hesitated and did not speak.

Wu clan's letter soon got to Fang Yuan.

Such a thing had happened, Fang Yuan was not surprised, he expected it.

“It seems that I cannot stay here anymore.” Fang Yuan looked at the dream realm, sighing deeply.

These last days, he wanted to continue exploring dream realms.

But his luck was bad, he kept getting those absurd dream realms, there was no way to explore it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1346: Qiao Clan’s Trouble, Rabbit’s Deep Love

Of course, over these last days, Fang Yuan was not doing nothing.

The biggest batch of regretful spiders in his possession had been sold, Fang Yuan’s red date immortal essence storage was no longer lacking.

As for vajra shell, Fang Yuan had completed its modification, he only needed to test it.

Because his dark path attainment level had risen to grandmaster, he successfully created an immortal killer move, extended dark concealment. This move used rank six dark limit Immortal Gu and rank seven perseverance Immortal Gu as the cores, and several hundred mortal Gu to greatly lengthen the effect of dark limit Immortal Gu.

At this time, Qiao Si Liu requested to meet him.

At Fang Yuan’s will, the doors opened.

Qiao Si Liu had a grim expression, worry could be seen on her face.

She brought bad news with her.

Other than Yao clan, Hou clan, and Yang clan taking over Wu clan’s territories, Ba clan and Xia clan had also moved at the same time, but against Qiao clan.

Looking at Southern Border’s map, Ba clan and Xia clan were to the north of Qiao clan, they bordered Qiao clan.

Qiao clan lost their wedding dress lake and empty origin pit, they were annexed by Ba clan and Xia clan respectively.

After Qiao clan’s first supreme elder, Qiao Zhi Cai, went missing, Qiao clan also did the strategy of gathering their Gu Immortals and defending their base, in anticipation of the enemy.

This made Ba clan’s and Xia clan’s actions very successful.

Qiao clan lost a lot just now.

Wedding dress lake and empty origin pit were resource points that were more valuable than blood tide pit.

Qiao clan was the weakest righteous path super force. After losing two resource points, Qiao clan was furious and upset.

Fang Yuan had also heard of these two resource points.

There was a folklore about this wedding dress lake in Southern Border. According to legends, a fairy in heaven weaved clothing, making her own wedding dress, whoever received it would become the husband of this fairy.

After the fairy made the wedding dress, she tossed it into this lake, and it was picked up by a fisherman who lived by the lake.

The immortal and mortal loved each other, staying inside the lake, living happily ever after.

This story was mostly fiction, but wedding dress lake had all sorts of clothing Gu. Like fire cloak Gu, water armor Gu, wood armor Gu, and so on.

In its history of being in Qiao clan’s control, it had produced three wild Immortal Gu!

As for empty origin pit, it was known by the mortals living in the mountains nearby as the final resting spot, it could communicate with the immortal realm.

After the ignorant mortals died, their corpses were tossed into this pit.

Before these corpses landed, they would be torn to shreds by the space path dao marks here.

These ignorant mortals thought that the reason was because they had ascended to the immortal realm after dying.

The truth was, this place was excellent in producing space path resources. Xia clan had wanted it for a long time, and even though Qiao clan was not their match, they were backed by Wu clan.

Right now, with Qiao Zhi Cai and Wu Yong missing, this was a great opportunity, how could Xia clan miss it?

Qiao clan and Wu clan had been in an alliance for a long time, their fortunes were tied together.

Qiao clan was invaded by Ba clan and Xia clan, it was like Wu clan getting attacked.

This way, including Yao clan, Hou clan, and Yang clan, a total of five super forces were attacking Wu clan.

The situation was at its worst.

If they could not stop this, Wu clan and Qiao clan would lose even more territory later.

“I will arrange it now, Wu Qiao will bring the Immortal Gu House here and escort us back!” Fang Yuan said to Qiao Si Liu.

Qiao Si Liu nodded, this was the reason she came. With Qiao clan’s predicament, Qiao Si Liu had to look for help from Fang Yuan.

Actually, because of Fang Yuan’s delay, Qiao Si Liu was very unhappy already. If not for the fact that Qiao clan only had one Immortal Gu House, they would have already sent out one to bring Fang Yuan away.

“Go arrange it too, gather Qiao clan’s Gu Immortals, we are leaving together.” Fang Yuan said again.

Qiao Si Liu was stunned: “Together? What about here...”

“We can only give it up temporarily.” Fang Yuan made up his mind, he did not hesitate.

“Then what about the Immortal Gu we used to set up this formation?” Qiao Si Liu frowned.

“We will bring them away. Otherwise, some Gu Immortals with ill intent will forcefully refine them or even destroy them. We know what these people are capable of. Excuses are too easy to find.” Fang Yuan said plainly.

“Don’t forget that my formation path attainment is not low. I am capable of taking out some Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan added.

Qiao Si Liu thought of Fang Yuan and Chi Shang’s competition, she nodded, thinking: “Wu Yi Hai’s formation path attainment is indeed not low, Chi Shang had once praised him for it.”

In fact, she underestimated Fang Yuan.

Right now, his formation path attainment level was at grandmaster, he was comparable to Chi Shang.

In the past, this super Gu formation was completely indecipherable to him, he could not see anything.

But after becoming a formation path grandmaster and staying here for so long, Fang Yuan had gained a rather deep understanding of this super Gu formation.

Modifying this Gu formation was out of his ability, but taking away some Immortal Gu was possible.

After the decision was made, Qiao Si Liu called Qiao clan Gu Immortal Qiao Bo: “Pack up, when Wu clan’s Immortal Gu House arrives, we will leave and return to our base.”

Qiao Bo quickly acknowledged, asking in succession: “When are they coming? I need to arrange the clansmen.”

Qiao Si Liu looked at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan waved his hand: “No rush, I had just contacted them, it will take some time.”

Qiao Bo expressed joy on his face as he left respectfully.

“Even though Wu clan’s base is near Yi Tian Mountain, if they are sending an Immortal Gu House, it will take four to five days to reach here. In this case, I can do the final round of the business.” Qiao Bo left and started to think.

The business he thought of was naturally the immortal opportunity business.

Qiao clan and Wu clan were in dire straits, this caused Qiao clan’s and Wu clan’s Gu Immortals to feel worried, the immortal opportunity business was taking a huge hit.

Two of Qiao clan’s Gu Immortals were stationed to guard the super Gu formation here.

Qiao Bo was one of them, he had rank six cultivation level, when he was sent here, he begrudged the decision, but the immortal opportunity business changed his mind.

“Now that we are returning, the immortal opportunity business cannot continue, there might even be fights later. Since we are leaving anyway, I will make this a big one!” Qiao Bo gritted his teeth, making up his mind.

A day later.

Qiao Bo met with demonic path Gu Immortal Fairy Miao Yin.

“Fairy, we meet again.” Qiao Bo had an excited expression, his eyes were darting around as he observed Fairy Miao Yin.

Even though Fairy Miao Yin was in the demonic path, her strength and appearance was top tier, she was one of the three great fairies of Southern Border, on par with Qiao Si Liu.

All along, Fairy Miao Yin had been entering the giant dream realm to find opportunities in the dream realm.

Even though her soul was often injured, the dream path materials that she gathered were not few.

Even though Wu clan and Qiao clan, and other super forces tried to buy these dream path materials from her, Fairy Miao Yin rejected them all without hesitation.

“Let’s go in and speak.” Qiao Bo said as he looked at the two Gu Immortals behind Fairy Miao Yin.

According to the rules, each business would only have one demonic cultivator or lone immortal.

But this time, because Qiao Bo was going to leave, he made this a big one and went ahead to bring in three Gu Immortals at once.

At the same time, in Wu clan’s area.

Lady White Rabbit looked at Wu An: “Lord Wu An, is it true that everyone is leaving? And so urgently?”

Wu An nodded: “The situation is not looking good, I’m sure you’ve heard some rumors. But it is not a problem, don’t worry, Wu clan will not fall. Just stay here and manage the immortal opportunity business, wait for us to return.”

Lady White Rabbit pondered for a moment before asking weakly: “Before you leave, I want to meet Lord Wu Yi Hai again, is that possible?”

“This...” Wu An had a difficult expression: “Lord Wu Yi Hai is in seclusion now, he is trying to deduce an immortal killer move, he might not have time for you.”

Lady White Rabbit had a sad expression: “I don’t know why but I have a bad feeling, I want to meet Lord Wu Yi Hai, I just want to take a glance at him. Isn’t he leaving too? I will wait here for a few days until he comes out, is that okay?”

Wu An sighed deeply.

It was obvious at a glance that Lady White Rabbit had affection towards Wu Yi Hai.

“It is a pity that the feeling is not mutual, I am afraid that in Lord Wu Yi Hai’s eyes, Lady White Rabbit is just a tool, what a shame.” Wu An felt some sympathy in him.

He nodded: “Alright, you can stay here, Lord Wu Yi Hai will see you after he ends his closed cultivation.”

“Thank you, thank you!” Lady White Rabbit was overjoyed, she quickly thanked him profusely.

Cultivating in the secret room, Fang Yuan held a rank seven Immortal Gu.

Immortal Gu Precaution!

This Gu worm was the size of two hands, it was like a long-horned beetle with a black exoskeleton, it was very heavy. Even with Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body, he could not hold it.

But it had already been refined by Fang Yuan, it was floating in the air now as Fang Yuan observed it.

This Immortal Gu was one of the two Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan had taken after joining Wu clan as Wu Yi Hai.

As the name suggested, the Immortal Gu’s effect was to protect the Gu Immortal.

It was rule path and had one weakness, when used alone, it needed some time to activate. It could only activate its effects after ten breaths of time.

Ten breaths of time was not short for Gu Immortals. Especially in intense battles, ten breaths of time was enough for a dozen round of fights, with countless attacks unleashed.

And most importantly, if a Gu Immortal sneak attacked, life and death would be decided in an instant. By then, activating precaution Immortal Gu would be too slow.

However, once precaution Immortal Gu was activated, ten breaths of time later, its defensive effect would be incredible, it was one of the top rank seven defensive Immortal Gu, it had status equal to sword escape Immortal Gu.

Not long ago, Fang Yuan had a new idea, he wanted to fuse precaution Immortal Gu into the immortal killer move vajra shell.

And now, he had already designed the killer move, he just needed to test it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1347: Chai Clan Has Human Smoke

He started.

The first step, Fang Yuan turned into a divination tortoise.

The second step, he started to activate a large number of mortal Gu, followed by vajra thought Immortal Gu and more mortal Gu.

The third step, and the most important one, he activated precaution Immortal Gu.

Puff!

Fang Yuan turned into a divination tortoise, spitting out a huge amount of blood. In his immortal aperture, large numbers of mortal Gu were destroyed, but thankfully, precaution Immortal Gu was sturdy and did not get damaged.

Fang Yuan's head was dizzy, his immortal killer move failed, his organs were damaged, he suffered heavy injuries.

Thankfully, he had transformed into a divination tortoise, an ancient desolate beast, he had a tough body and incredible recovery speed. If he did this with a human body, his injuries would have been worse, his organs and intestines might have disintegrated on the spot.

“Why did this happen?” Fang Yuan was dazed.

This was different from what he conceptualized.

In fact, before precaution Immortal Gu could use its power, this immortal killer move broke apart.

Fang Yuan did not expect this.

Fang Yuan had used affection Immortal Gu and other wisdom path Immortal Gu to deduce this modified immortal killer move, such a severe error should not have occurred.

This was truly a huge blow to him.

After Fang Yuan's injuries healed, he calmed down and looked at the killer move.

After several deductions, Fang Yuan was even more troubled: “There are no problems, though?”

Suddenly, he had a flash of inspiration: “I understand!”

Fang Yuan instantly understood where the problem was.

He had misunderstood precaution Immortal Gu.

When precaution Immortal Gu activated, it continued to expend red date immortal essence, but it could only unleash its power after ten breaths. It did not activate at the tenth breath, but at the eleventh breath. Because of this small mistake, the entire immortal killer move failed and Fang Yuan suffered a backlash.

“To think that the problem was here, it was truly a blind spot!”

“It seems that I need to add some time path Gu worms to make up for the time difference.” Fang Yuan's time path attainment level was ordinary, it had never risen much. Because he had never encountered any time path dream realm.

However, he had Hei Fan's true inheritance and wisdom path deduction methods, it could make up for some of his weaknesses.

But because of this, the deduction could not be completed instantly.

One day passed, Fang Yuan did not rest.

Two days passed, Fang Yuan was still deducing.

Three days passed, Wu clan’s Immortal Gu House had already completed most of its journey.

Fang Yuan’s deduction finally had some progress.

After his qualitative advancement, his future deductions went smoothly.

Southern Border, Human Smoke Mountain Range.

This place had the most living mortals in Southern Border. Villages after villages were seen on the mountains here. On some mountain peaks, there were even several villages, they were neighbors.

This was a bountiful sight.

The population had multiplied to its limit, there were a vast number of humans here. Of course, in terms of battle strength, a Gu Immortal would be able to wipe this place out, no mortal could resist their unstoppable might.

And at the center of this mountain range, it was the political core of all the villages — Human Smoke Mountain.

The base of one of the super clans, Chai clan!

The person who created Chai clan was called Chai Fu, he had left his mark in human history.

During his era, he was the number one person in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, he cultivated fire path along with earth path, because he had gained a lot of insight from reading <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, he had a human path killer move. During his later years, he chose this place to create Chai clan, after modifying the mountain range, he created Human Smoke Mountain.

In fact, most Gu Immortal experts and great experts would read <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

A true inheritance of human path was hidden within <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, this was indeed the first true inheritance in the history of the Gu Master world.

It had a unique inheritance method.

Normal inheritances were like Hei Fan’s true inheritance and Bai Xiang’s true inheritance.

But Ren Zu’s human path true inheritance was just one book, <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, it was information. The profundities of human path were concealed in this information, and whatever a Gu Immortal learned would depend on their affinity and talent.

Everyone had different gains, after all, the benevolent see benevolence, the wise see wisdom. But every Immortal Venerable and Demon Venerable had their gains, and those were huge gains. For example, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had created all living being’s luck and heaven and earth luck after reading <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

After Chai Fu read <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, he left behind the human path method that he learned after death, passing it down to his Chai clan descendants.

Precisely so, Chai clan’s development strategy was different from other super clans. Chai clan focused on increasing population, to increase the number of mortals.

As for other super forces, they basically only focused on a portion of their clansmen and allowed them to develop and grow in the five regions. These clansmen would have the bloodline of certain authoritative figures in the super force, they were also called the main bloodline.

And a portion of the people would stay inside their blessed lands or grotto-heavens and would not go outside. These people were often the branch bloodlines. Only when unexpected mishaps occur and the main bloodline dies out, or when a ruling figure dies without an inheritor, would the branch bloodlines take over.

Chai clan expanded the population, but they did not have Chai clan bloodline.

If any other clan did this, they were courting trouble. Spending great effort to nurture mortals of other surnames, with greater population, more Gu Masters would emerge among them. These Gu Masters would not have the clan’s bloodline, their loyalty was greatly reduced, they had no value in being nurtured to become Gu Immortals. If they became Gu Immortals on their own, it would cause conflict between them and the main clan.

But Chai clan was different.

They nurtured so many mortals, but these mortals all had low aptitudes, there were few Gu Masters among them, not to mention Gu Immortals.

In contrast, highly talented people continuously emerged from Chai clan’s own descendants, there were many who were talented enough to be nurtured into Gu Immortals.

This formed a clear contrast to the other super forces.

According to their conjectures, Chai clan’s abnormal situation was likely due to the human path method that Chai Fu had left behind.

However, no matter which generation it was, even though Chai clan had lots of genius descendants, because of limited resources, these Gu Immortal seeds eventually remained as only rank four or five Gu Masters.

There was a need to talk about Southern Border’s geography at this point.

Southern Border’s biggest features, other than mountains, were the three great rivers.

Red dragon river, jade dragon river, and yellow dragon river, each of them passed through the whole of Southern Border, cutting it up into many segments.

Red dragon river started from the extreme northwest, moving east towards the south, all the way until Southern Border’s extreme southeast.

Jade dragon river started above it, it had a downward slope if a bird’s-eye view over the region was used.

Yellow dragon river had the shape of the character ‘几’, there was a protrusion at the top, it was far more steep than jade dragon river.

Jade dragon river and yellow dragon river did not intersect, but red dragon river intersected with both jade dragon river and yellow dragon river[1].

At the point of intersection between red dragon river and yellow dragon river, it was Wu clan’s territory, towards the northeast shore of the huge whirlpool there was Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian.

As for the intersection between red dragon river and jade dragon river, the huge whirlpool there was dozens of times as large. Natural essence was incredible dense there, at the center of the whirlpool, there were huge numbers of spirit springs, tens of thousands of them. These spirit springs were not stable, almost every breath of time, dozens would be destroyed.

Thus, a great amount of natural essence poured onto the river banks.

When Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable traveled to this place, he had once commented that throughout the whole of Southern Border, this place had the greatest density of primeval energy.

Over there, the air was filled with primeval energy, large amounts of resources were produced, on par with grotto-heavens and blessed lands.

And at this place, the bases of three super forces were gathered!

For example, red dragon river and jade dragon river formed a cross shape, with the center being the spiral whirlpool. Chai clan’s Human Smoke Mountain was north of it, Ba clan was south, while Xia clan was to its east.

For the last three days, Chai clan’s discussion hall had been in chaos.

Now was no exception.

Chai clan’s first supreme elder sat before everyone as his gaze flickered, showing a hesitant expression.

Not long ago, Fang Yuan had sent him a letter. In the letter, Fang Yuan, who was Wu Yi Hai, represented Wu clan and was willing to work with Chai clan to attack Xia clan and Ba clan.

This was an incredibly important matter, Chai clan’s first supreme elder had to gather the clan’s Gu Immortals and discuss about it.

The discussion hall’s chaos was due to this.

“We cannot attack Ba clan and Xia clan! Wu clan’s intention is just to make use of us to get rid of their external pressure. The moment we attack, our Chai clan will have to face two super forces at once. If these two super forces ignore Wu clan and turn around to target us, we will be on the losing end, we will not be able to overturn it.” A Chai clan Gu Immortal shouted loudly, standing at the center of the discussion hall.

He had just finished his words when a Gu Immortal at a corner proposed: “We can choose to attack one clan. Even though Wu clan gave the request of fighting both clans, we can negotiate about this matter. This will not determine what we do, after all.”

“Sigh... the matter is severe. Our Chai clan has so many mortals around, if we fight, the other party just needs one Gu Immortal to wipe out all of our mortals, we will suffer huge losses.” An elderly Gu Immortal from Chai clan sighed, he was very apprehensive.

Because of the human path method’s limitation, these humans could not leave Human Smoke Mountain Range. This way, they needed an immortal Gu formation or an Immortal Gu House to defend the place.

“Precisely so, we need to fight for more resources.”

“That’s right! Our Chai clan’s advantage is that we have a human path method to allow geniuses to appear in our descendants. But we do not have enough resources to nurture them. Once we chase away one clan or even two, we will gain a vast amount of resources, we will become the number one force in Southern Border in no time.”

These were the arguments of the side that wanted to fight.

Chai clan’s first supreme elder remained silent, after a while, he looked at a Gu Immortal in the hall, asking: “You Yan, tell us about your view.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1348: Easing the Situation

The discussion hall became quiet, everyone’s gazes turned to this Gu Immortal.

This Gu Immortal looked young and had a normal appearance, it was not outstanding, but he was an important Gu Immortal in Chai clan, he was the trusted and capable aide of Chai clan’s first supreme elder.

Chai You Yan, who was an information path Gu Immortal, thought for a while before saying: “The things I consider might be different from everyone. These last days, I have been pondering over Wu Yi Hai.”

“Wu Yong went missing and is presumably dead, regardless of whether this is true or who the culprit was, Wu Yi Hai is currently the leader of Wu clan. I am thinking about his personality, and how sincere he actually is.”

“We all know about Wu Yi Hai’s origin. We know too little about him, he did not grow up in Southern Border after all.”

“Hmm, continue.” Chai clan’s first supreme elder showed interest in his eyes.

Chai You Yan smiled before continuing: “Actually, we know about the information regarding Wu Yi Hai already, I will skip that. From this information, we can more or less understand this person’s attitude and personality. I will mention something that everyone ignored.”

“Oh? We all ignored something?”

Chai You Yan rubbed his nose: “I mean that letter. In Wu Yi Hai’s letter, he wanted to ally with our clan to attack Ba clan and Xia clan. He did not choose either Ba clan or Xia clan, he chose to target them both.”

“Wu clan has always acted so domineering, isn’t this their usual style of doing things?” Some Chai clan Gu Immortals did not understand.

“No no no. Wu Yi Hai is different.” Chai You Yan shook his head: “We can tell from how he dealt with Frosty Peak and the agreement with Mountain Moving Old Monster. His actions are similar to lone cultivators, after all, how long has it been since he returned to Wu clan?”

“Wu Yi Hai lacks the dominating disposition of Wu clan, but he has the astuteness of lone cultivators, he knows how to make agreements, from what I see, he is talented as a part of the righteous path.”

“Why did he list Ba clan and Xia clan as his targets? Like what was mentioned earlier, why did he not choose one of them and seek peace with the other? Because when we ally with Wu clan, if we choose one of them to attack, would the other stay still? They would definitely work together and resist both Wu clan and us!”

Chai clan’s Gu Immortals heard this and nodded, agreeing with Chai You Yan.

Chai clan, Ba clan, Xia clan, these three clans were gathered around the red and jade rivers, their relationship was complex. If one clan became strong, the other two would join up to resist it.

The three were in a power balance, restraining each other, this was also why Chai clan had never made any progress after so many years of development.

If Chai clan worked with Wu clan, this balance would shift, would Ba clan and Xia clan not cooperate?

Thus, Fang Yuan directly listed both of them as his targets. Because he knew that it was bound to happen!

“This means that Wu Yi Hai has quite good foresight. Since he suggested for us to cooperate with him, he must have made many preparations. We do not need to worry about Wu clan toying with us.” Someone said.

Chai You Yan nodded: “What I want to say is, Wu Yi Hai has a lot of talent in politics. From all these details, I can see that he has a lot of sincerity in this cooperation.”

“The truth is, our Chai clan needs to act.”

“After developing until now, we finally suppressed Xia clan and Ba clan, it was not easy, this is the hard work of countless generations, mixed in with some luck.”

“Once Ba clan or Xia clan devours more resources, their foundations would grow, our advantage will be gone.”

“Of course, we need to be careful of Wu clan as well if we work together.”

“As for how we will fight, and how we will restrict the extent of this battle? That will be first supreme elder’s decision.”

“But at the very least, we need to send some Gu Immortals to attack. We cannot let Ba clan and Xia clan expand their territories so easily, right?”

His words were met with the nodding of Chai clan’s Gu Immortals.

At almost the same time.

Southern Border, Myriad Snake Mountain, Chi clan’s base.

Chi clan’s first supreme elder held a letter Gu and remained silent.

Chi clan was at the extreme west of Southern Border, southwest of it was Yang clan, and towards its east was Qiao clan.

Chi clan bordered on these two clans, but Yang clan was farther from its base and had a longer border with it.

Making friends with those far away and making enemies with those close by, this was a common foreign policy.

Thus, Chi clan and Yang clan had poor relationships. Yang clan’s Ghost Hand Mountain was at the source of yellow dragon river, it had abundant resources and was a strategic location, Yang clan Gu Immortals mostly cultivated soul path, they had incredible battle strength and was a threat to Chi clan.

In the past, Yang clan and Chi clan had many conflicts, this had accumulated throughout history.

Towards the east of Yang clan, all the way along yellow dragon river, was Wu clan’s territory.

Actually, Wu clan and Chi clan were close by. Even though they did not border each other, Qiao clan and Chi clan did.

Qiao clan was heavily supported by a Wu clan first supreme elder of a certain generation. Qiao clan was at the central area of Southern Border, bordering Ba clan, Xia clan, and Chi clan, it could even restrain the southwest Yang clan.

Chi clan and Qiao clan had conflicts, but everyone knew that Qiao clan was Wu clan’s guard dog, thus, Chi clan’s and Wu clan’s relationship was good or bad at times, depending on the situation.

If there was one phrase to describe Chi clan’s and Wu clan’s relationship, ambiguous would be a rather appropriate term.

Not long ago, Chi clan had found trouble with Wu clan. But inside the super Gu formation of Yi Tian Mountain, Chi clan worked with Wu clan, creating the immortal opportunity business.

“Wu Yi Hai, you are giving me a tough problem.” In his study room, Chi clan first supreme elder Chi Qu You sighed deeply.

Fang Yuan had requested to work with Chi clan and deal with Yang clan.

Chi Qu You was moved, because he knew this was a good opportunity. This chance was rare even in his lifetime.

Any force needed to grow larger. Trying to annex Yang clan’s resources, even if they could not succeed, would weaken Yang clan, this was something beneficial to Chi clan no matter what.

Chi clan had a lot of spare energy for this.

Not only because Chi clan’s base was located far from the action, but also because Chi clan specialized in Gu formations. By setting up many immortal Gu formations, Chi clan’s base and all their resource points had incredible defense.

Chi clan had little to worry about. They also had two Immortal Gu Houses, and don’t forget, Chi Qu You was a rank eight Gu Immortal.

Wu Yong had died, this news sent Southern Border into chaos.

In this chaotic situation, what would Chi clan do, Chi Qu You needed to decide quickly and resolutely!

Several days later, in the super Gu formation, Fang Yuan came out of his seclusion.

He had a bit of joy on his face.

His closed cultivation bore fruit, he had completed the deduction of vajra shell and tested it several times.

And during these few days, the situation in Southern Border had undergone a huge change.

Chai clan sent Gu Immortals to the river and showed a threatening stance. Ba clan and Xia clan had to gather a portion of their strength and defend themselves.

Chi clan’s Gu Immortals directly invaded Yang clan’s territory. The two clans were neighbors for so long, it was easy to find an excuse to do so.

Both sides were fighting near their mountain range.

Chi clan’s great expert was very active, he brought an Immortal Gu House and attacked personally. This made Yang clan very nervous, they had to send their Immortal Gu House and many Gu Immortals to face him. Yang clan had no rank eight Gu Immortal, they were in a passive state.

Other than that, Luo clan, Tie clan, and Yi clan also made their movements.

Because Fang Yuan sent these clans letters as well. Of course, the contents were all different from Chai clan and Chi clan.

After all, these four clans were too close to each other, they were all towards the east of Southern Border.

But even so, these clans’ movements had attracted the attention of Hou clan and Yao clan, they were drawn away. Because they knew that even though these clans were unlikely to strike, they were afraid of taking that chance, they had to defend against it.

As for Shang clan, this clan had always scrupulously followed neutrality, even though Fang Yuan sent a letter, they replied instantly, rejecting his suggestion.

Because of this sudden change, Wu clan’s and Qiao clan’s dangerous situation had become much more relaxed.

Wu clan’s and Qiao clan’s Gu Immortals were very shocked at this result.

Even though Fang Yuan just sent a few letters, to be able to convince super forces to act, it was not a simple thing. Especially when the letter had to be very precise on the amount of resources Wu clan was willing to give up to express their sincerity.

Fang Yuan dealt with this perfectly, it was far beyond many people’s imaginations.

Very few people knew about the content of his letters, but everyone knew that these letters moved many Gu Immortals in these super forces. This allowed Wu clan and Qiao clan to have an opportunity to retaliate!

“It seems that my skills have not fallen much.” In the five hundred years of his previous life, Fang Yuan was once the leader of an organization, during the five regions chaotic war, the political situation was far more chaotic, all five regions were linked together, all sorts of deceptions, schemes, betrayal were endless.

The current political chaos was just surrounding Wu clan and Qiao clan, as well as the western part of Southern Border.

It was not too complex in Fang Yuan’s opinion.

He did not need to be careful, he could directly target the problem.

“Wu clan’s Immortal Gu House is finally arriving?” Fang Yuan received more information.

Originally, the Immortal Gu House was supposed to move earlier, but a mishap occurred midway and it was stalled for some time, no matter who did it or what their intention was, Fang Yuan had to wait an extra day before this Immortal Gu House arrived.

“It seems I need to leave this place now.” This dream realm gave Fang Yuan an incredible boost, many things happened during this period, Fang Yuan felt a bit of unwillingness to leave this treasure.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1349: Fang Yuan Wants To Kill White Rabbit

Fang Yuan started to settle the matters that piled up while he was in closed cultivation.

“Lady White Rabbit wants to see me? For what?” Fang Yuan asked Wu An using information path methods.

Soon, Fang Yuan understood Lady White Rabbit’s intention.

“Not seeing her, get her to leave.” Fang Yuan rejected mercilessly.

Wu clan’s Immortal Gu House would arrive in a day.

Fang Yuan was not going to bring Lady White Rabbit with him, he needed a chess piece to stay here. Even if she was not in the super Gu formation, having one outside was fine too.

Of course this carried huge risks, after all, Lady White Rabbit’s and Wu Yi Hai’s ‘relationship’ was quite close, everyone knew about it.

But chess pieces needed to display their worth. When Fang Yuan took in Lady White Rabbit, it was not because of her beauty or love, he just wanted to extract all of her value.

“Even with one day left, I cannot waste it, I might be able to gain something in the dream realm.”

But unfortunately, Fang Yuan still only met with absurd dream realms.

It was a real pity.

During this final period, he kept meeting absurd dream realms, his luck was quite bad. If they were realistic dream realms, he would at least obtain some growth.

“I heard that Qiao clan has many realistic dream realms. It is a pity... those demonic path Gu Immortals have no methods to use, but they are able to encounter realistic dream realms.”

Fang Yuan could not go to Qiao clan. It was their territory, if he exposed his method of exploring dream realms, it would be a huge problem to Fang Yuan.

At this moment, Qiao clan’s area.

“One more day before we leave, your dream realm exploration is going to end. Make good use of your time, also, our Qiao clan is very willing to purchase the dream path materials that you find.” Qiao Bo transmitted to Fairy Miao Yin and the other demonic path Gu Immortals.

“No need for more explorations, we can end now.” Fairy Miao Yin smiled at Qiao Bo.

Qiao Bo was dazed.

He had brought Fairy Miao Yin here to explore the dream realm many times, but this was the first time he saw Fairy Miao Yin smiling at him so deeply.

At once, his heart jumped, he showed a dazed expression.

But soon, his body shook.

A soft sound echoed.

Qiao Bo’s pupils shrunk to pin size, he looked down at his chest.

There, a hand with sharp fingernails had pierced through his back, directly destroying his heart, a cold frost was also spreading around his injury.

“You, how dare you...” Qiao Bo did not finish his words, he lost his life and turned into an ice statue.

Qiao Bo died!

Behind him, Bai Ning Bing drew back her hand expressionlessly.

In the air, crystal shards were scattering.

Her hand was white as snow, the blood traces were all removed along with the frost.

“The time is now, let’s begin.” The third Gu Immortal walked out, her appearance changed as she revealed her true form.

Who else could it be but Hei Lou Lan?

“Is Lord Wu Yi Hai really unwilling to meet me?” Lady White Rabbit had teary eyes as she looked at Wu An.

Wu An sighed, shaking his head: “Leave, there is no rush, you will meet again in the future. As long as you manage the immortal opportunity business well, maybe Lord Wu Yi Hai might reward you in the future.”

“Manage it well? Hehe!” Lady White Rabbit’s eyes suddenly turned black, a cold light was shining in her dark eyes.

Seeing this change, Wu An became alert, he took a step back: “Lady White Rabbit, what are you doing? Don’t act rashly.”

Lady White Rabbit’s voice changed too: “Don’t talk about White Rabbit! I am not that weak fool, blindly loving this cruel and heartless man. Remember, I am Black Tigress.”

“Hmph, what Black Tigress, it is time to teach you people a lesson. Even though my Wu clan is in a difficult spot, you minor characters should forget about... urgh!” Before Wu An finished his words, his angry face turned into one of extreme fear.

He found that he could not move, not only that, his body and soul were melting, turning into black water on the ground.

“What, what killer move is this? When was I hit?!”

At this time, Black Tigress’ cold voice entered Wu An’s ears: “Enjoy it, this was meant for Wu Yi Hai. It is a pity I did not get to see him.”

Once she said that, Wu An completely melted into a puddle of black water.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Right after Wu An had died from Black Tigress’ powerful killer move, the super Gu formation started to shake intensely.

The super Gu formation was under attack!

“What is going on?” The righteous path Gu Immortals here immediately reacted.

“Someone is attacking the Gu formation, they are inside the Gu formation!” Soon, Chi Gui, who was the leader of Chi clan here. found the problem and informed the righteous path Gu Immortals.

The immortals’ hearts sank.

The super Gu formation had incredibly strong defense, but it was split into inside and outside. Attacking the super Gu formation from the inside and from the outside were two different situations.

Undeniably, attacking it from the inside would be much more destructive.

“The problem is at Qiao clan’s area.” The righteous path Gu Immortals near Qiao clan’s area quickly transmitted.

“Damn it, I said that this immortal opportunity business was going to create problems. Qiao clan is toying with fire! See what happened!!” Ba Quan Feng shouted, after all, Ba clan did not participate in this immortal opportunity business.

Once he said that, many righteous path Gu Immortals went silent.

“No need to worry, even in this situation, my Chi clan ancestor had prepared against this, this super Gu formation has formations inside formations, for a total of four layers. Just these demonic path Gu Immortals cannot break our outermost layer.” Chi Gui tried to raise the morale and relieve his own awkwardness. Because Chi clan was one of the instigators of the immortal opportunity business.

“That’s right, they are just some rats.” The righteous path Gu Immortals calmed down.

But at this moment.

Boom!

Several loud explosions occurred as the Gu formation shook again, the intensity was many times stronger than before. Many Gu worms died, quite a few Immortal Gu were destroyed.

“What is going on, what is going on?!”

Chi Gui was shocked: “They actually found our formation core? Oh no, the other party came prepared, they are not attacking abruptly.”

“They are attacking from both inside and outside, the outside of the Gu formation was hit by a strong attack earlier!”

“Stop them!”

“Quickly activate the Gu formations.”

“Send some people to the site, exterminate those demonic path scoundrels!”

“Did Wu clan’s and Qiao clan’s Gu Immortals all die? Is anyone there?!”

The righteous path Gu Immortals transmitted to each other, it was a chaotic scene.

“What is going on?” In the hall at Wu clan’s area, Fang Yuan’s brows were locked, he was observing the situation that had just occurred using the Gu formation.

He had just practised his killer move, the event happened too quickly, he was caught unprepared.

Information was transmitted to Fang Yuan from the Gu formation. Lady White Rabbit’s transformation and the killing of Wu An, he learned about everything.

“Lady White Rabbit is a traitor, she seemed to have become another person! And her target was actually me.” Fang Yuan frowned even deeper now.

He immediately decided to go ahead and kill White Rabbit to take revenge for Wu An.

Not just because of Wu Yi Hai’s identity, but also because Fang Yuan needed to maintain the stability of the super Gu formation, he needed to kill Lady White Rabbit.

“To think that there was such a huge slip-up, Yi Hai, my side of the Gu formation is completely out of control, come lend me a hand!”

Qiao Si Liu transmitted to Fang Yuan a cry for help and also the scene of Bai Ning Bing killing Qiao Bo.

Receiving this information, Fang Yuan’s intention of acting was dispersed!

“Bai Ning Bing? Hei Lou Lan! Why are they here? I get it, this is the act of Shadow Sect!” Fang Yuan’s heart shook.

He stayed on the spot, his eyes bursting with bright light.

After discovering Shadow Sect, even though he had killing intent, his thoughts of going out vanished.

What a joke!

Shadow Sect had a rank eight existence.

Fang Yuan saw this from the battle of Reverse Flow River.

Who knew where that Purple Mountain True Monarch was. He might be close by, waiting to attack Wu Yi Hai if he came out!

“Even though I have the immortal killer move reverse flow protection seal, which can defend against rank eight existences, once I use it, my identity will be exposed. Since Shadow Sect sent Lady White Rabbit to kill me, undoubtedly, they did not discover that I am impersonating Wu Yi Hai. Otherwise, they would not send just Lady White Rabbit.”

“What to do?”

Fang Yuan went into rapid contemplation.

Using his wisdom path methods, thoughts moved rapidly in Fang Yuan’s mind, raging like a storm.

“Shadow Sect’s intention is obvious, they want to save Spectral Soul’s main body.”

“Shadow Sect must have their trump cards, I need to quietly observe for now! This super Gu formation is not a joke, using this super Gu formation, we can defend against the attacks of rank eight Gu Immortals. I should not expose myself.”

Fang Yuan quickly made his plan.

As for Qiao Si Liu?

You can die for all I care!

“Yi Hai, come quickly.” Qiao Si Liu urged again.

Fang Yuan had a cold expression, immediately rejecting: “Hang on, I have some problems here. Wu An was murdered by Lady White Rabbit, I cannot spare this murderer!!”

“What? Be careful yourself.” Qiao Si Liu was shocked, but she still gave Fang Yuan some words of concern, not knowing that he had already abandoned her in his mind.

Qiao Si Liu was facing against Fairy Miao Yin, Hei Lou Lan, and Bai Ning Bing.

She was a rank seven Gu Immortal, similar to Fairy Miao Yin, while Hei Lou Lan and Bai Ning Bing were rank six.

Thus, in Qiao Si Liu’s perspective, the situation was not out of control. Her gaze was focused on Fairy Miao Yin: “You are all finished, the super Gu formation has already been activated, you are all trapped here, surrender now and be my clan’s slave Gu Immortals, you might be able to survive.”

“Hehehe.” Fairy Miao Yin laughed: “Is that so?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1350: Grey Night Breaks The Formation

Right at this time, an intensely strong aura burst out from outside the super Gu formation.

Soon, the righteous path Gu Immortals controlling the Gu formation noticed.

“There is a strong aura ahead!”

“Such intense aura, so, so powerful! A rank eight Gu Immortal?”

The righteous path Gu Immortals were gasping.

“Is it Purple Mountain True Monarch?” Fang Yuan, who was inside the hall, watched attentively.

“No, it is not a Gu Immortal, it is an immemorial desolate beast... ah, it is actually?!”

Before he finished his words, bam—!

The entire super Gu formation was faced with an unprecedentedly intense attack.

The entire Gu formation shook intensely, the halls created inside the Gu formation were destroyed, they crumbled and disintegrated.

At once, it felt like doomsday.

The entire Gu formation was cracked open, but there were not many injuries in the righteous path Gu Immortals.

This was the difference between a Gu formation and a killer move.

Even though Gu formations were the killer moves of formation path, after a Gu formation is set up, it works based on the Gu worms and the environment. When they are destroyed, the Gu Immortal would suffer a less intense backlash.

Of course, ancient battle formations were different. Once ancient battle formations were destroyed, the Gu Immortals would suffer severe backlashes, especially the main controller of the formation.

“Cough, cough.” Dust and smoke was clouding the place.

The hall that Fang Yuan was in had completely collapsed, the corners were turning back into mortal Gu, dead Gu worms poured down like rain.

A huge hole was created in the super Gu formation, the dream realm that was completely concealed earlier was now exposed.

Many righteous path Gu Immortals stood by the opening, looking outside blankly.

Over there, a huge figure was rampaging.

It was a human shaped immemorial desolate beast, it stood on both legs and had two huge monstrous claws, its hair was messy and its body was black like ink.

“Gu Immortals, so many Gu Immortals, I want to eat, I want to eat you all! After eating you, I will be closer to being human.” This human shaped immemorial desolate beast growled in a low tone, extremely excited.

“This, this is...” A righteous path Gu Immortal pointed at the immemorial desolate beast, stammering in a shocked state.

“Zuo Ye Hui!” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth subconsciously, feeling great pressure.

The moment he saw this immemorial desolate beast, Fang Yuan felt like he was in the dream, but the shouting of the Gu Immortals around him, the destroyed halls, and the super Gu formation that was breaking apart reminded him that this was not a dream.

Fang Yuan had not expected Zuo Ye Hui to come here!

This legendary immemorial desolate beast had caused too much suffering and deaths in Southern Border. All of the righteous path Gu Immortals in Southern Border knew about it.

With the appearance of Zuo Ye Hui, the hearts of the righteous path members wavered, their morale fell to rock bottom.

This was a powerful existence on par with rank eight Gu Immortals. Especially after the super Gu formation was destroyed, how could these righteous path rank six and seven Gu Immortals defend against it?

With their bodies?

In this huge world of the five regions, there were only two people who could resist rank eight as rank seven, they were Feng Jiu Ge and Liu Guan Yi.

“We need to hold on! Don’t panic, our Gu formation has four layers! That was just the outermost fourth layer which broke. Start to move, come into the next layer of the Gu formation.” At the crucial moment, Chi Gui spoke up.

He was the leader of Chi clan in this place, this super Gu formation was created by Chi clan’s first supreme elder, Chi Qu You, Chi Gui naturally knew some information that others did not.

As expected, the Gu formation activated and shined with a bright light. The collapsing stopped, and the outer formation was completely abandoned, a new line of defense appeared inside.

The third layer of the Gu formation appeared before Zuo Ye Hui.

It did not cover the entire dream realm, it was visible, but most of the dream realm was still concealed by the Gu formation.

The righteous path Gu Immortals quickly went inside.

Fang Yuan was not an exception.

He had to, Shadow Sect did not know about Wu Yi Hai’s true identity, otherwise, Shadow Sect, which had a wisdom path rank eight Gu Immortal, would not send just Lady White Rabbit to assassinate Fang Yuan.

The enemy was in the open while he was hidden, this was a clear advantage. At the same time, Fang Yuan had another advantage, that was the Immortal Gu House.

An Immortal Gu House from Wu clan was on the way.

Most Gu formations could not move, but Immortal Gu Houses could!

And the power of Immortal Gu Houses could increase the more immortal essence was used, they could resist rank eight Gu Immortals.

With an Immortal Gu House to defend and escort him, Fang Yuan would have a greater chance to leave this place.

“But earlier, Wu clan’s Immortal Gu House was delayed along the way due to an unexpected mishap, was it Shadow Sect?” Fang Yuan considered this as his thoughts turned dark.

“Tsk, so troublesome.” Bai Ning Bing looked at the Gu formation’s third layer of defense, frowning.

“This is hard to destroy.” Hei Lou Lan sighed.

At this time, Ying Wu Xie smiled coldly, transmitting to them: “Don’t worry, just dodge.”

Fairy Miao Yin’s, Bai Ning Bing’s, and Hei Lou Lan’s bodies shook as they quickly flew back and retreated.

Roar!

At the next moment, Zuo Ye Hui roared and emitted a thunderously loud wave.

Its voice burst out and created a sonic wave, pushing out the surrounding air and uprooting the trees and rocks, whipping up a storm.

Next, Zuo Ye Hui breathed in deeply, its stomach bulged up.

Its entire body expanded to double its size!

Next, it opened its bloodthirsty mouth filled with sharp teeth, and a huge beam of light shot out fiercely.

The grey colored beam of light shot out extremely quickly, in the blink of an eye, it landed on the third layer of the Gu formation.

There was a creepy silence.

The third layer of the Gu formation was hit by the grey beam of light, as it was dyed grey rapidly.

Earlier, Zuo Ye Hui had attacked the super Gu formation as well. The first few attempts were just trials, but the previous time was also the killer move grey night, together with Hei Lou Lan, Bai Ning Bing, and Fairy Miao Yin, they destroyed the fourth layer of the Gu formation.

Most of the righteous path Gu Immortals did not manage to see these attacks clearly.

But this time, they witnessed it firsthand, they saw how terrifying Zuo Ye Hui was!

As if heaven and earth became still, monochrome color enveloped the place, time seemed to be moving slower.

For one breath of time.

Boom—!

Another thunderous explosion resounded in the world, the immortals’ eardrums were bursting.

The entire world shook, the third layer of the Gu formation was ripped apart, as if the previous attack was going to be played out again.

The righteous path Gu Immortals were pale, they instilled their immortal essence into the Gu formation desperately.

When the tremors ended, the third layer of the Gu formation was only half destroyed, it still existed!

This was a super Gu formation personally created by rank eight Gu Immortal Chi Qu You, together with a vast number of Immortal Gu and mortal Gu from Southern Border’s righteous path forces, it was displaying its power now.

It managed to block the signature move of legendary immemorial desolate beast Zuo Ye Hui!

There were no injuries or deaths among the righteous path Gu Immortals.

“I am actually still alive!” Someone almost cried from joy.

“This is Zuo Ye Hui’s signature method, immortal killer move — Grey Night! We actually defended against it!!” Someone shouted loudly.

Chi Gui’s forehead was full of sweat, he said: “This is the super Gu formation that my clan’s first supreme elder set up, why would it be destroyed? If not for them attacking from both inside and outside earlier, the fourth layer might still be around.”

“Immortal killer move grey night, it is different from the one in my dream realm, was its form changed? After so many years, grey night must have been modified. Did Zuo Ye Hui modify it? Or did it have help? Is this help from Shadow Sect? Strange! If they had Zuo Ye Hui as a tool, why did Shadow Sect not use it when they were refining sovereign immortal fetus Gu? Was it because they could not control it? Or is this all because of that rank eight Gu Immortal?” Fang Yuan fell into deep contemplation.

Fairy Miao Yin, Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, they came to the super Gu formation again.

Looking at the damaged third layer of the super Gu formation, they were not shocked nor disappointed.

Because they did not come alone, there was Ying Wu Xie, as well as many demonic path Gu Immortals and lone immortals.

Shadow Sect lacked manpower, but not resources.

Normally, demonic path Gu Immortals and lone cultivators lacked cultivation resources, they would pursue resources over their whole lives.

Purple Mountain True Monarch endured the huge costs of spending resources to recruit a batch of demonic path and lone immortals.

Humans die for wealth and birds die for food, money makes the world go round.

Of course, these Southern Border Gu Immortals were not stupid, only after Zuo Ye Hui appeared and used grey night did they start to follow Ying Wu Xie and show up.

On the other hand, this showed that Shadow Sect had a good grasp on timing and human emotions.

From these demonic path and lone immortals’ perspectives, not only was there the wisdom path rank eight great expert Purple Mountain True Monarch, there was also the legendary immemorial desolate beast Zuo Ye Hui, this battle was decided already, they were going to win.

“It is all as Purple Mountain True Monarch predicted, we will attack using these holes in the Gu formation. Whoever can kill enemies and expand the hole would get several times the reward!” Ying Wu Xie shouted, Shadow Sect’s side started to clamor as they attacked the super Gu formation.

The righteous path side also reacted.

“Quickly, seal the hole.”

“We cannot let them in.”

“I need time to activate the second layer of the Gu formation, everyone, try to stall and fight for time.” Chi Gui called out.

“Zuo Ye Hui has already used grey night twice, this is the limit. It needs to rest for a while, it is time to teach these demonic path scoundrels a lesson!!” Ba De shouted.

Fang Yuan squinted, he had been assessing Zuo Ye Hui, he also saw that after Zuo Ye Hui used grey night, it was in a state of exhaustion, it panted as it remained on the spot, unmoving.

This made Fang Yuan feel slightly relieved.

There were so many Southern Border Gu Immortals here, many people were familiar with history, they knew a lot about Zuo Ye Hui. After all, every time Zuo Ye Hui appeared, it would cause disaster in Southern Border, lots of Southern Border Gu Immortals would need to work together, defending against and battling it.

Southern Border’s righteous path super clans had accurate information about Zuo Ye Hui from their historical records.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1351: Chaotic Battle

“Kill!”

“Charge!”

“Block them, we need more time.”

“Don’t be afraid, so what if this is Zuo Ye Hui, the Gu formation is around, we can last until reinforcements arrive from our clans.”

Shadow Sect attacked, while Southern Border’s righteous path defended desperately.

The third layer of the Gu formation was already half destroyed, cracks could be seen everywhere, it was of little help to the righteous path Gu Immortals, a chaotic battle ensued.

Rumble...

Unceasing explosions, the collisions of wind, fire, water, and lightning, unfolded like fireworks in the sky.

There was no probing, Immortal Gu and immortal killer moves were used from the start, the battle became heated almost instantly.

“You cannot defend this place.” Fairy Miao Yin smiled as she flew in the air.

Qiao Si Liu was in front of her.

Qiao Si Liu was silent, the situation had changed too quickly, earlier, the righteous path had the advantage, but now they were at a disadvantage. Even with the super Gu formation, they could only defend passively, they lost their initiative. For the righteous path Gu Immortals, their only chance was to wait for reinforcements.

“Who are you people? You can actually mobilize the legendary immemorial desolate beast Zuo Ye Hui.” Qiao Si Liu asked, paying close attention.

Fairy Miao Yin laughed: “The ones to end your life.”

Her killing intent rose, a crescent moon shadow appeared in her eyes.

Immortal killer move — Curved Moon!

This was a sight based attack, because the aura was completely concealed, once it was used, one would not be able to react in time, it was very difficult to guard against.

Qiao Si Liu was hit immediately.

But soon, on the surface of her dress and skin, jade green light shone. Within the faint light, long willow branches formed, it was like ribbons made of branches coiling around her, she resembled a fairy from heaven.

Swish swish swish.

The jade willow branches were not just defensive, they quickly flew towards Fairy Miao Yin with impressive mobility.

Fairy Miao Yin was stunned, she quickly retreated.

She avoided the willow branches but could not defend against the shadow below them. One of the shadows shot up like a venomous snake, slapping Fairy Miao Yin’s body.

“This is... an attached move?” Fairy Miao Yin could not conceal the shock on her beautiful face.

Attached moves were like consecutive moves, split moves, and variation moves, they were special techniques in activating killer moves, they were hard to master for normal people.

What was an attached move?

Normally speaking, it meant two different immortal killer moves, one primary and one secondary. Like the willow branch attack that Qiao Si Liu used, it was the primary move. The shadows below the branches were the secondary move, attached to the primary move.

When the primary move was used, the secondary move would have a certain chance of getting activated as well, unleashing its effects.

Fairy Miao Yin did not expect that Qiao Si Liu would actually master such a difficult technique like attached move, she was caught off guard and was hit by the willow branch’s shadow.

A long wound appeared as blood started to flow out.

On Fairy Miao Yin’s beautiful face, it was really apparent.

Qiao Si Liu tittered: “Oh no, I lost my concentration and disfigured you. If we fight anymore, you’ll no longer be on par with me in beauty.”

Fairy Miao Yin snorted.

Qiao Si Liu took the initiative and attacked, there were countless jade willow branches around her, these rootless willows were formed from the killer move, they were agile and resembled dozens of long whips, lashing at Fairy Miao Yin.

The attacks became more frequent, it was like a jade storm.

Fairy Miao Yin was shrouded in whips, not only did she need to defend against the whips, she also had to guard against their shadows.

After all, a whip might come out at any time and attack Fairy Miao Yin.

Splat splat splat...

Lashing sounds were endless, even though Fairy Miao Yin was putting up her defense, her clothes were still torn by the whips.

Fairy Miao Yin retreated as she used her hands to shield herself from the willow branches.

A moment later, her clothes were torn and her snow white body was exposed, it was beautiful and alluring, men would have a nosebleed upon seeing her.

Qiao Si Liu pursued her along the way.

But good times did not last, her opponent suddenly cried out as a pair of slender hands appeared on her back.

Fairy Miao Yin had four arms now.

Her four arms defended herself as Fairy Miao Yin restored her steady position, it was easy for her to block those willows now.

Qiao Si Liu sighed to herself.

This was immortal killer move — Wondrous Hand Profound Sound, Fairy Miao Yin’s signature killer move, Qiao Si Liu knew of it.

She had attacked rapidly earlier to catch Fairy Miao Yin off-guard, to maintain her pressure and prevent her from regaining her composure.

However, Qiao Si Liu’s tactic failed, Fairy Miao Yin managed to use this move in the end.

Even though Fairy Miao Yin was facing huge pressure, she was not a newbie like

Zhao Lian Yun, Fairy Miao Yin did not make an error, she withstood the pressure and used her killer move successfully.

With her success, the situation changed.

Qiao Si Liu slowly flew backwards, stopping her attacks and starting a battle of attrition using the damaged Gu formation as she retreated.

She had left the super Gu formation when pursuing Fairy Miao Yin, it was wise to return.

“It is my turn now, Sister Si Liu, you have to endure it.” Fairy Miao Yin smiled, but her gaze was very dark.

Four hands started to move rapidly.

Her smooth, long fingers were moving in a dazzling motion.

Ding ding, dang dang...

Cling cling, clang clang...

With the movement of her fingers, sharp sounds could be heard whenever they touched.

The sounds even caused sound waves to start appearing in the surrounding air.

The sound waves were moving rapidly, with Fairy Miao Yin at the center, it quickly spread to the radius of a few hundred steps.

The damaged third layer of the Gu formation was breaking apart many times as quickly with the effect of the sound.

The sound waves appeared quickly and vanished just as quickly.

Qiao Si Liu had a solemn expression, she quickly defended herself, as willow branches surrounded her entire body.

The two were in a deadlock.

And at another hole.

Shang clan Gu Immortal Shang Guai Li crossed his arms as he stood in front of the hole, looking at Hei Lou Lan.

He had arrogance and disdain on his face: “Just a rank six Gu Immortal, you dare to attack us, you are truly courting death. I will kill you first before reinforcing my allies.”

Saying this, he vanished on the spot.

At the next moment, he appeared behind Hei Lou Lan.

Next, he stretched out his right hand as it turned into a white bone claw, scratching at Hei Lou Lan’s back.

Plop.

A soft sound echoed.

The white bone claw ripped apart Hei Lou Lan’s defensive method, stabbing into her back as blood splattered upon impact.

Hei Lou Lan shouted in anger, turning around to retaliate.

Shang Guai Li vanished on the spot again, appearing in the damaged formation once more.

Hei Lou Lan missed her attack, she growled in anger, her expression was twisted, there were five deep wounds on her back.

Shang Guai Li mocked in disdain: “You’re nothing much, I will take your life in the next hit... hmm?”

But suddenly, his expression changed.

On his white bone claw, Hei Lou Lan’s flesh and blood were burning in flames.

The fire was extremely special, it grew as it burned, in the blink of an eye, it covered Shang Guai Li’s entire right hand.

“You fell for it so easily.” Hei Lou Lan laughed.

Immortal killer move — Flesh Blood Fire!

...

“Dragonman?” A middle aged Gu Immortal with huge nostrils, Chai Huo Xiong, was bare on his upper body, he had a wide back and waist, his body’s muscles were glowing red, like he was on fire.

Every time he breathed, smoke came out of his nostrils.

He was brutish and domineering, he stood on the spot and blocked the hole in the Gu formation behind him.

“At least you are knowledgeable.” Bai Ning Bing had a plain expression, she stretched out her right arm, her jade fingers were covered in frost energy, as snowflakes descended from the sky.

Boom!

A loud sound occurred around Chai Huo Xiong, the ground caved in as he shot out like a cannonball, charging towards Bai Ning Bing.

“Take this!” Chai Huo Xiong shouted in the air, large amounts of flames flew out of his nose and nose, even his pores were flaming.

In an instant, raging flames filled Bai Ning Bing’s vision.

Bai Ning Bing had a cold gaze, she did not dodge, she watched as Chai Huo Xiong got closer.

Her lips curled up, she called out in excitement: “Come at me.”

Before she finished her words, she charged forward!

Her body was tiny compared to Chai Huo Xiong, this was like the collision of a fly towards a flame.

Boom!

An intense explosion.

Both sides attacked and were locked in the middle, dividing this battlefield into two.

Half was flame and half was frost, they were repelling each other.

Flames flickered with the power to burn all lifeforms, while the frost solidified the earth into an icy domain, freezing all lifeforms.

Flames could not melt the frost, and the frost could not freeze the flames, there was no clear victor.

When the flames and frost vanished, two figures appeared on each end.

Bai Ning Bing stood on the spot, excitement and concentration was evident in her dragon eyes.

On the other end, the domineering Chai clan Gu Immortal took several steps back, looking at Bai Ning Bing in disbelief: “Impossible, you are only a rank six Gu Immortal!”

Bai Ning Bing smiled and her icy white teeth were exposed: “I praised you for being knowledgeable earlier, it seems that I need to... take that back!”

The moment she said ‘need to’, Bai Ning Bing charged ahead again, when she finished her words, she was right in front of Chai Huo Xiong.

She jumped into the sky and her right arm was raised up, she was like a deity of snow descending to the world, bringing with her an endless blizzard, her divine might was unstoppable.

Next, Bai Ning Bing’s right arm slashed down at Chai Huo Xiong like a giant sharp blade!

...

“White Rabbit, you slut, die!” Wu Liao had bloodshot eyes, filled with rage and hatred.

Even though he was not on good terms with Wu An as they disliked each other, they were still Wu clan Gu Immortals.

Now that White Rabbit killed Wu An, Wu Liao attacked with hatred, wanting to avenge Wu An.

But it was a pity, Lady White Rabbit who had transformed, or rather, Black Tigress, had rank seven cultivation level, her battle strength had surged dramatically.

Wu Liao was just a rank six Gu Immortal, he could do nothing to Lady White Rabbit, instead, his own life was in danger.

“Step down Wu Liao, you are not her match.” Fang Yuan blocked Wu Liao, who was going to fight, he had cold killing intent as he stood in front of Lady White Rabbit.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1352: Fang Yuan versus Black Tigress

“Hehehe.” Black Tigress had a strange laugh, her beautiful appearance looked very twisted.

Her clear innocent eyes were filled with sinister light, there were deep bags under her eyes, like she had not slept for a long time. Her eyeshadow was thick, like the wings of a black butterfly, extending from her eyes to her brows.

Even though her appearance did not change much, she had turned sinister and vicious, her demeanor had changed completely, the innocent and weak form was worlds apart from this.

“White Rabbit true inheritance... interesting.” Fang Yuan’s body shined in bright light.

When the light faded, Fang Yuan had turned into a huge tortoise.

Immortal killer move — Divination Tortoise Transformation!

Guh.

The rank seven formation path Gu Immortal Chi Gui coughed out a mouthful of blood.

“Damn it, damn it!” He cursed continuously, looking ahead at the fragmented corpse of the Immortal Gu floating in front of him.

This Immortal Gu was originally damaged by Zuo Ye Hui’s attack.

Earlier, when Chi Gui wanted to activate the second layer of the super Gu formation, this Immortal Gu reached its limit and broke.

The Gu formation activation failed, there would be a chain reaction and cause other Immortal Gu to be damaged.

Chi Gui had to use his own body to endure the backlash of the collapsing Gu formation, in order to keep it from being destroyed.

But he got injured in the process.

“Is the injury severe?” Ba De quickly came to check.

Chi Gui swallowed the blood in his mouth, he had a pale expression like that of a dead person: “Very severe! This destroyed Immortal Gu is one of the main pillars. The second layer of the Gu formation has three hundred thousand Gu worms, but there are only four Immortal Gu of such importance. We need to find a replacement and activate the second layer of the Gu formation. This Gu formation has many linked layers, without the second layer, the first layer will not be able to activate.”

After pausing for a while, Chi Gui shouted with a frantic expression: “Anyone who has earth path Immortal Gu, I need one passed to me. Now is the moment of life and death!”

Beside him, Ba Quan Feng and Ba De looked at each other helplessly.

The former was a wind path Gu Immortal, while the latter was wood path, they did not have earth path Immortal Gu.

Chi Gui had to heal his injuries, Ba Quan Feng and Ba De went to ask around.

The reason why they had to ask one by one was because he needed to try and conceal this disastrous information. After all, mental state affected battle strength, the fewer people who knew, the better.

Thankfully, among the five regions, Southern Border had the most earth path Gu Immortals.

Soon, some people spoke up, they were willing to contribute their earth path Immortal Gu.

Chi Gui had to choose, it was not easy to choose the earth path Immortal Gu, but he had to try and find the one closest to the one that was destroyed.

Chi Gui's injuries had not healed, but he could not care.

“Next, I need to deduce this and try to add that earth path Immortal Gu into this Gu formation. My safety will be in your hands.”

This act was very risky, he was placing his life in the hands of others.

But Chi Gui had a determined expression, he did not hesitate.

He knew that there was no other way now, time was pressing, he needed to gamble!

Ba De had a solemn expression, nodding: “I promise that I will defend your life. Even if Zuo Ye Hui comes, he will have to step over my corpse first.”

He was sincere, these were not lies. In this situation, even if Ba De had high battle strength, he could not resist Zuo Ye Hui, the battle could not be turned around.

He was not Feng Jiu Ge or Fang Yuan, who had reverse flow protection seal.

Ba De did not know that Wu clan's Immortal Gu House was on the way.

But the moment Shadow Sect attacked, he had immediately used his information path methods to inform Ba clan.

There were other Gu Immortals who did the same thing.

Defending with all they had, that was the only way for everyone to survive.

Like this, Chi Gui's attention and concentration was focused on the Gu formation. And Ba De, who had the highest battle strength, was leading the group in defending the place. With Wu clan and Qiao clan in trouble, their reputation had fallen greatly, Ba clan's Ba De became the most suitable leader.

Ba De did not let go of this chance.

As the most important person to protect Chi Gui, he stayed at the back and observed the battlefield.

All in all, the righteous path's defense was quite stable.

The righteous path Gu Immortal elites were using the damaged Gu formation, they could retreat in time.

Meanwhile, even though the demonic path Gu Immortals arrived imposingly, they lacked strong experts. It was not that Southern Border had no demonic path or lone immortal experts, but most of them had died in Yi Tian Mountain.

Even though the righteous path also suffered great losses in that battle, compared to the demonic path, the righteous path was more stable, it was easier to produce Gu Immortal experts with abundant resources.

One could imagine, unless something happened, at this rate, for the following period of time, Southern Border’s righteous path would greatly suppress the demonic path and lone cultivators.

Ba De’s gaze swept past Fairy Miao Yin, Hei Lou Lan, and Bai Ning Bing’s battlefield, eventually looking at Fang Yuan.

“Wu Yi Hai.” He muttered this name, feeling some emotions.

In the past, he wanted to suppress Wu Yi Hai and teach Wu clan a lesson. But now, they had to work together, Ba De had a lot of ambition, he wanted to replace Wu clan and make Ba clan flourish. But now, with this strong enemy, he was willing to work with Wu Yi Hai, he had an open mind.

Of course, this was temporary, once the crisis ended, Ba De would deal with them again.

With this event, Ba De had a huge hold on Fang Yuan. Before the mishap occurred in Wu clan and Qiao clan, Ba De had been holding himself back, he did not use the immortal opportunity business to find trouble with him. He had endured until now, there were finally results to be shown.

Black Tigress jumped around, she was very agile, evading many vajra thoughts.

After her personality changed, this former Lady White Rabbit started to use dark path methods.

Not just that, her rank six cultivation level turned to rank seven, it was simply unreasonable!

But no matter how fast she moved, she was merely a bit faster than Fang Yuan’s thoughts.

Times were different now.

If this was Fang Yuan had just obtained vajra thought Immortal Gu, he might not have been able to handle Black Tigress. But now, Fang Yuan was very familiar with this move, thoughts scattered like rain, assaulting her and cooperating with each other, forming a huge web of attacks, even though Black Tigress dodged them, she was still going to be overwhelmed by the countless thoughts.

Immortal killer move — Cornered Tiger!

Realizing that she was in a disadvantage, Black Tigress’ aura burst out as her toes landed lightly on the ground.

Black liquid started to spread on the ground.

A breath of time later, the water expanded to the size of a pond.

Two breaths of time later, the black water started to bubble.

Three breaths of time later, a lizard 1 with the size of a horse emerged from the black water.

This lizard was black in color and had shiny eyes, it was not real, it was made from the dark path killer move.

The lizard moved rapidly, spreading its limbs and moving like the wind, bringing Black Tigress to its back as she charged away.

Compared to Black Tigress, Fang Yuan, who had turned into a divination tortoise, looked very slow.

After he transformed, he stopped moving, he blocked the hole of the Gu formation.

Even though Fang Yuan did not move, the vajra thoughts he created were like tiny tortoise shells, they moved agilely and circulated around the divination tortoise’s body with an incredible number.

Since the battle started, Fang Yuan had been using vajra shell.

The tortoise shell thoughts few rapidly, Fang Yuan had a composed plan, he first used these thoughts to defend himself before sending the new ones outside.

Black Tigress stood on top of the black lizard, she could move with ease but she gritted her teeth.

On the surface, her speed was an advantage, she had the initiative, but the truth was, she needed to get past Fang Yuan’s obstruction to attack the damaged formation.

But Fang Yuan was blocking her way.

Black Tigress tried to move every which way, trying to get past Fang Yuan.

She moved around these tortoise shell thoughts and exposed vulnerability on purpose, but Fang Yuan did not fall for it, he defended himself firmly and continued to push Black Tigress out.

Fang Yuan was a bit wary of Black Tigress’ trump card.

Even though Fang Yuan did not know its name, he saw how Wu An had turned into a puddle of black water after he got hit by it unknowingly.

“Black Tigress prepared that move for me.”

“She wanted to meet me but I rejected her, thus she used it on Wu An.”

“This means that the move has a small range, it is quite limited. Like dark assassination, even though the aura is concealed and it has great power, the flaw is evident.”

Fang Yuan created more and more thoughts, the tortoise shell thoughts were moving around without any gaps, it was terrifying.

Black Tigress had to retreat, seeing so many tortoise shells, she was so angry her chest was moving up and down.

“This tortoise transformation really suits you, Lord Wu Yi Hai.” She grinned, showing a cruel smile filled with killing intent.

“However, don’t think my methods are just these. Take this!”

Saying so, Black Tigress opened her mouth and aimed at Fang Yuan, sticking out her tiny tongue.

Her tongue was cute and pinkish, but her lips were black like ink, it was a clear contrast of black lips and pink tongue.

Her tongue moved rapidly.

It was like a cute neighbor’s daughter making a funny face.

But Fang Yuan felt a chill down his spine, he suffered a heavy injury.

He quickly turned around and looked, he saw a tiny hole on his shell.

This hole was only the size of a basin, it was nothing compared to the giant tortoise’s size.

But it was very deep, the wound was spreading outwards, black smoke could be seen rising from the hole, making a cracking sound.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1353: Tiger Lick

Fang Yuan’s heart shook.

“What killer move is this?!”

“The divination tortoise’s shell is the hardest thing on its body, yet it could not endure this attack.”

“Even though my sovereign immortal body has the trait of non-conflicting dao marks, my tough ancient desolate beast body still suffered such injuries?”

Black Tigress’ battle strength was out of Fang Yuan’s expectations. Her method was peculiar and could bypass even the divination tortoise’s defense.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan did not dare to hold back, he quickly used rank seven Immortal Gu Precaution.

This rule path Immortal Gu had already been added into vajra shell by Fang Yuan.

Immediately, the original vajra shell killer move stopped working, a brand new vajra shell killer move was activated.

Whoosh.

Wind was created out of nowhere, the divination tortoise’s aura changed.

The brand new vajra shell killer move used a large number of time path mortal Gu, their effect was to eliminate the weakness of precaution Immortal Gu needing ten breaths of time.

Thus, once vajra shell was activated, precaution Immortal Gu’s effect became active at once.

The small tortoise shell thoughts expanded and became firmer, at the same time, the divination tortoise’s main body started to shine in a metallic light, it also became darker.

Black Tigress saw this and her expression changed, she licked again.

The two were far away, but Fang Yuan still suffered injuries despite the distance.

There was another hole on the tortoise shell, but this time, it was only the size of an adult’s fist, the injury was light and there was no black smoke.

The wound earlier had already stopped producing black smoke, the injury was expanding very slowly.

Black Tigress snorted coldly, feeling unresigned, she muttered: “In that case, I will attack there!”

At the next moment, Fang Yuan felt his tortoise head go numb.

Immediately, pain assaulted him, there was also a numb feeling as well.

The injuries were not light.

Fang Yuan quickly placed his head into the shell.

“Damn it!” Black Tigress saw this and her eyes spewed fire from rage.

Fang Yuan was very shameless, not just his head, his limbs and tail also went into the shell.

Only the tortoise shell thoughts were still spinning and increasing in numbers, raising his defensive power and range once more.

Black Tigress licked the tortoise shell continuously, but there was little use.

She was in a predicament, there was nothing she could do to Fang Yuan.

Wu Liao healed his injuries as he watched the battle, seeing this, he broke out in sweat, he thought: “At this rate, when will Lord Wu Yi Hai be able to take revenge for Wu An, how many years would it take?”

Ba De snorted in unhappiness.

The other holes had intense battles, but Fang Yuan was calm and composed, there was little commotion.

Fang Yuan easily hid inside his shell.

He was thinking rapidly about Black Tigress’ killer move.

Killer moves could be directed to targets in certain ways. For example, a fireball killer move may need to form in the hands first, before being shot out towards the target, to have any form of impact.

But where it flew, in what direction and towards what target, that would depend on the direction that the killer move was designed to move.

Wherever the move was directed towards, the fireball would fly there.

If the targeting was not impressive, the fireball would move straight, after leaving the hands, its direction could not be changed anymore.

If the targeting ability was stronger, the fireball would be able to move in a curved manner. After leaving the hands, its direction could be tweaked slightly.

And even stronger ones would have automatic homing abilities.

“Black Tigress’ killer move must also have a targeting ability.”

“It is formless after activation, it is not as obvious as a fireball. But it definitely has a targeting ability, because it is not a wide ranged attack, the damage is concentrated.”

“Then how does it do that? By sight?”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan activated his Gu worms, creating a thick fog around the divination tortoise, surrounding it.

“What is this Wu Yi Hai trying to do? Hmph.” Black Tigress was suspicious that Fang Yuan was using a new killer move, she quickly stretched out her tongue and licked towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was hit again.

“Not sight? Is it smell?”

Fang Yuan used his method again, the fog became extremely smelly.

Wu Liao who was close by to him, had a twisted expression as he quickly used his Gu worms to breathe internally.

The smell spread in the air, soon, other battlefields were looking over.

“Wu Yi Hai is actually trying to break the other party’s killer move.” Ba De’s eyes shined, he could see Fang Yuan’s motive.

He snorted as the displeasure in his heart grew.

There was usually little hope of breaking an enemy’s killer move on the spot, experimentation was needed, and even if the reasoning was understood, there might not be the necessary Immortal Gu or method to counter it.

Trying to break a killer move, it would result in a drawn out battle.

“This is an emergency, but he still has the time to break the killer move? Hmph! If he has time, he should try to kill the enemy!” Ba Quan Feng expressed the unhappiness in his heart.

Ba De did not say anything, now was not the time for internal conflict.

Black Tigress hesitated for a moment, she stretched out her tongue and licked again.

Another hole appeared on Fang Yuan’s shell.

Fang Yuan had a flash of inspiration: “I get it, this is her sense of taste.”

Normally speaking, taste was experienced through the tongue, and Gu Immortals’ tongues were able to taste things from afar through Immortal Gu or killer moves, it was not hard.

“Every time she activates it, Black Tigress needs to stretch out her tongue.”

“She and Shadow Sect are aligned, while Shadow Sect has food path true inheritances. Only such a non-standard path can deal such damage to my defensive divination tortoise transformation.”

“Let me test it.”

The divination tortoise turned red, especially the shell, it was red as molten iron.

Black Tigress licked and immediately cringed: “Argh... so hot!”

The divination tortoise’s redness faded, there was a strange smell in the sky.

Black Tigress stretched out her tongue and licked, she almost puked from disgust, she frowned: “So salty!”

The divination tortoise transformation changed again.

Black Tigress stopped trying, she understood Fang Yuan’s intention: “This guy! He is actually trying to counter my killer move, he is not trying to use any immortal killer moves. Damn it!!”

Black Tigress thought earlier that the divination tortoise’s changes were the start of Fang Yuan’s new immortal killer move.

Thus, she interfered with him time and time again, once she succeeded, Fang Yuan would suffer an intense backlash. She would have hope of passing this huge tortoise shell obstacle.

“Under such a situation, he still has time to try to deduce and counter my killer move?!” Fang Yuan’s movements were not logical, the battle was so intense now, nobody had any time for this.

But precisely so, Black Tigress fell for it.

After realizing this, Black Tigress stopped using this move, she started to use other long range methods.

She punched with both fists as dark green fist qi moved around the troublesome tortoise shell thoughts, some were wiped out but some managed to land on the divination tortoise shell.

Even though the damage was little, each time the punches landed, Fang Yuan’s body shook uncontrollably. Evidently, this immortal killer move had rule path Gu worms. Black Tigress was trying to prevent Fang Yuan from using an immortal killer move, it was a good strategy.

“It was taste, huh.” Fang Yuan’s head was still inside his shell.

Even though he had a result, it was still far from truly breaking Black Tigress’ move.

Fang Yuan, however, was not in a rush.

Black Tigress could not use this move anymore, her punches were of little harm to Fang Yuan.

The original Wu Yi Hai had other methods, but they were all defensive in nature.

Black Tigress was really over-thinking it when she guarded against Fang Yuan’s attacking moves, even though he had them, with this identity, he could not use them. If he tried, he would incur huge suspicions, his identity was likely to be exposed.

Thus, this battle slowed down tremendously.

Fang Yuan did not want to attack, or rather, he had no attacking moves, while

Black Tigress could not go past this shell.

After a long time, there were already a hundred thousand tortoise shells around Fang Yuan.

Black Tigress felt like she was helpless, the vast number of tortoise shells made this an incredibly eye catching sight in the battlefield.

Ba De’s expression became even colder, he could not help but transmit: “Wu Yi Hai, I heard you have two more transformations. Why are you still holding back? Quickly kill her and reinforce the others! Unless, you really have some relationship with this White Rabbit? You can’t bear to kill her?”

Fang Yuan heard Ba De’s transmissions but ignored him, pretending not to hear anything.

Ba De did not get a reply, he gritted his teeth in anger, his gaze towards Fang Yuan turned colder.

Fang Yuan was thinking about his situation.

“Shadow Sect is definitely attacking to save Spectral Soul’s main body.”

“They control Zuo Ye Hui, but the extent is limited, and the rank eight Gu Immortal Purple Mountain True Monarch has not shown up yet.”

“The righteous path has the super Gu formation, we can hold on for a while. As long as we stall for time, reinforcements will come from all over.”

“And I have reverse flow protection seal, I can resist rank eight existences, they will not be able to defeat me.”

“Purple Mountain True Monarch is a wisdom path Gu Immortal, how can he not have a trump card? And these righteous path Gu Immortals are far from being desperate now.”

“I should conceal my identity and wait for a chance to take action. Maybe this time, I might have some great gains!”

Fang Yuan thought about it and realized this was a great opportunity.

He had sufficient strength, but he needed to wait for the right timing.

Shadow Sect was a huge threat to him, he wanted to exterminate them all. But Fang Yuan had not succeeded in any of his attempts so far. It was not that he did not try, or that he was not determined enough, but Shadow Sect’s group was made of elites and geniuses.

But now was a grand opportunity.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1354: The Might of Hei and Bai

Fang Yuan had thought that his pursuit would have no chance, but to think that

Shadow Sect personally presented Fang Yuan this great opportunity!

Because of sovereign immortal fetus Gu, Shadow Sect would not let Fang Yuan off. If Fang Yuan did not get rid of them and allowed Shadow Sect to grow further, he would end up like Ma Hong Yun in the end.

After he got rid of Shadow Sect, who would know about Fang Yuan’s identity? Eliminating this biggest threat was Fang Yuan’s best option, he could even get rid of the weakness of Connect Luck.

After that, he would slowly develop and cultivate using the dream realm, because of the sovereign immortal aperture, Fang Yuan had the greatest foundation in the world!

Five hundred years later, Fang Yuan would have incredible strength, be it his cultivation level, battle strength, or wealth, it would be unimaginable! (Fang Yuan does not know that the great era is already impending.)

During the five regions chaotic war, he could either take advantage of the situation for opportunities or fight with brute strength, Heavenly Court might not even be able to do anything to him.

If the situation developed well, by the time he reached rank nine, he would be one step closer to his goal of eternal life.

This was Fang Yuan’s cultivation plan, it was very realistic.

Now was the best chance to get rid of Shadow Sect, how could Fang Yuan give it up?

And Shadow Sect had no idea Fang Yuan was here.

Fang Yuan was the one concealed.

Who knew that Wu Yi Hai was him? Nobody in the righteous path knew, even his ‘brother’ Wu Yong had no idea.

Undoubtedly, eliminating Wu Yi Hai and impersonating him to join Wu clan was a brilliant move.

Even though there was a risk, if he did not do that, how would Fang Yuan get this prime opportunity?

Fang Yuan had to make use of it.

“I might even be able to capture Spectral Soul’s main body!”

“With Spectral Soul’s main body, I would be able to interrogate the soul and obtain all of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s cultivation memories and experiences. All of his soul path experiences, his perspective and gains in the door of life and death, countless Gu recipes, killer moves, and secrets...”

Fang Yuan’s greatest desire was lead soul into dream.

With this killer move, as well as unravel dream and guts Gu, Fang Yuan would be the number one person in this world in terms of dream realm exploration, he would have an immense advantage, the entire world would be left in the dust, even Heavenly Court!

Ding ding ding!

Sound waves could be seen as ripples all around Qiao Si Liu.

Fairy Miao Yin’s arms had grown to six in number, her fingers were moving elegantly, her attacks were much more intense than before.

Qiao Si Liu, however, was able to defend herself well.

Her pupils had turned jade, her black hair had turned into willow branches that extended to her waist.

The two Southern Border fairies were still in a deadlock.

...

“Damn it, I can’t block it! I need to escape!!” A demonic path Gu Immortal retreated as resolution flashed in his eyes.

Boom!

An intensely strong aura burst out from behind him.

“Cowardly rat, die!!” A righteous path Gu Immortal shouted, stretching out his hand and grabbing the demonic path Gu Immortal’s head.

Next, lightning flashed and thunder roared, deep blue lightning bolts shrouded this battlefield.

The lightning flashes lasted for a moment before stopping.

The opponent that the righteous path Gu Immortal was holding onto had turned into a charred skeleton, with a barely observable human shape.

“Hmph, rat that doesn’t know his limits, he dared to act arrogantly in front of me, Yi Hei Ting.” The righteous path Gu Immortal relaxed the grip of his hand as the demonic path Gu Immortal’s corpse fell to the ground, shattering into tiny black pieces.

...

“Everyone, your attacks are only like this?” A righteous path Gu Immortal with a slender body and tall nose bridge spoke with arrogance and disappointment.

“Don’t be smug!”

“Tie clan’s Tie Xin Jian, we have been suppressing you all along, you have the face to say... urgh.”

The three Gu Immortals who were attacking Tie Xin Jian ridiculed him, but their expressions suddenly changed.

A strong and sharp aura burst into the sky, emitted from Tie Xin Jian’s body.

The three Gu Immortals quickly moved back, feeling on guard.

Wind was blowing all around him, causing his clothes to flutter, but Tie Xin Jian had calm emotions, he shut his eyes as he said slowly: “It is useless, I have already seen all your moves, all of your weaknesses are right before me with no secrets left.”

“F*ck your mother...” A Gu Immortal cursed but before he finished, his body shook intensely.

Puff puff puff.

Three sounds later, three waves of sword qi flashed, so quickly that it felt like an illusion.

Heads flew, the three Gu Immortals who were attacking Tie Xin Jian were beheaded, losing all their vitality.

...

“Hahaha!” Hei Lou Lan laughed loudly, she had severe injuries.

Shang Guai Li had rank seven cultivation level, but he looked at Hei Lou Lan with shock and wariness, he was no longer as relaxed as before.

“As expected of a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, you are a battle maniac.” Shang Bu Li was unwilling to give in, but his injuries were already close to his bottom line.

“Retreat.” This thought appeared in his mind.

Hei Lou Lan seemed to have noticed it as she mockingly smiled: “Where do you want to escape to?”

“What do you mean?” Shang Guai Li immediately felt something amiss, a strong sense of danger filled his heart.

Whoosh.

Flames burst out of his mouth, before spewing out of his eye sockets, ears, nose, and other orifices.

Blazing rampantly!

Instantly, Shang Guai Li was turned into a pillar of fire.

His anguished cries resounded in the battlefield before he died.

Hei Lou Lan stared with a cold expression: “So what if you are rank seven?”

...

“Quick, quick, I need more reinforcements!” Chai Huo Xiong retreated as he screamed.

Compared to his earlier demeanor, he had lost all his fighting spirit, fear and anxiety filled his eyes.

Before him, dragon lady Bai Ning Bing walked slowly, approaching him step by step.

She was extremely beautiful, it could move one’s soul, but in Chai Huo Xiong’s perspective, she was extremely dangerous, he wanted nothing more than to escape the battlefield.

But in this situation, at this time and place, if he tried to leave the battlefield, wouldn’t he just become Zuo Ye Hui’s food?

Chai Huo Xiong could only fight reluctantly.

Bai Ning Bing’s battle strength was even higher than Hei Lou Lan. Because she had Bai Xiang’s true inheritance, and all of the ice and snow path Immortal Gu were compatible with her Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique.

Meanwhile, even though Hei Lou Lan had the Great Strength True Martial Physique, she used fire path Immortal Gu, and the fire path methods her aunt left behind, she did not have much dao mark amplification.

Chai Huo Xiong had already requested for help once, but Bai Ning Bing killed the backup already.

Of course, Bai Ning Bing paid a price for it.

Ba De was commanding the battle, upon hearing Chai Huo Xiong’s yells, his attention was drawn over.

“Tie Xin Jian, please go and help Chai Huo Xiong.” Ba De thought before transmitting.

“Okay.” Tie Xin Jian immediately flew into the sky, towards Bai Ning Bing.

His aura was stunning, he immediately attracted Bai Ning Bing’s attention. Her dragon pupils shrunk to pin size as an immortal killer move was activated.

“My aid is here.” Seeing Tie Xin Jian’s figure, Chai Huo Xiong felt great joy.

But at this moment, because he relaxed his mind slightly, Bai Ning Bing noticed his weakness and her immortal killer move was unleashed.

“I want you to die!” Tie Xin Jian who was one moment late burst out with rage. He could only watch helplessly as Chai Huo Xiong turned into a popsicle, breaking apart into countless ice fragments.

Bai Ning Bing smiled but her expression was plain, she looked at Tie Xin Jian, saying calmly: “My move is called ice shatter death. Do you want to try it?”

...

“Chai Huo Xiong has been sacrificed, even though this dragon lady is rank six, her battle strength is first rate even among rank sevens.” Ba De’s heart sank.

He rapidly looked around the battlefield, the defensive line was still being maintained.

The righteous path had the advantage, even though they were relying on the damaged third layer of the Gu formation.

Even though there were sacrifices, Shadow Sect had even more deaths, their morale had fallen, some were wavering.

“The enemy only has four true experts. They are Lady White Rabbit, Demoness Miao Yin, the dragon lady, and that fire path rank six (Hei Lou Lan). As long as we eliminate one of them, their morale will suffer a huge blow.”

Thinking of this, Ba De’s attention fell on Fang Yuan again.

Fang Yuan had turned into a divination tortoise, he was still at the same spot with his limbs and head inside the shell. But there were already three hundred thousand tortoise shell thoughts, they swept through the battlefield, Black Tigress was pushed far away.

Ba De snorted again in anger, transmitting to Fang Yuan: “Wu Yi Hai! Stop defending, as a Wu clan Gu Immortal, do you have no courage to fight? Are you so afraid of dying? Let me tell you, you are an important person in this fight, you are the best hope to create an opening in this battle. As long as you kill Black Tigress and reinforce other areas, there will be a qualitative change, the balance will tilt towards our favor!”

Fang Yuan: “...”

The divination tortoise was like a mountain, not reacting to his words.

“Damn it, this fellow is still acting like this now, I simply cannot believe it!” Ba De gritted his teeth, feeling stifled.

“I’m done.” At this moment, Chi Gui opened his eyes, he stood up from the ground with a joyful expression.

“Success?” Ba Quan Feng asked excitedly.

“Yes, I have already finished the deduction, now, we have to arrange the Gu formation and activate the second layer. This super Gu formation has greater defense as we get deeper into the layers, it is not a problem to block grey night.” Chi Gui nodded.

“Good!” Ba De heard this and let out a sigh of relief.

He looked at Zuo Ye Hui, who was far away.

This legendary immemorial desolate beast was still exhausted, it did not move from its original spot, it was still breathing in deeply.

In Ba De’s heart, this legendary immemorial desolate beast was the greatest worry. Most of his pressure came from it.

“The situation is favoring our righteous path.” Ba De felt joy and gladness.

But Fang Yuan was far less optimistic.

“Purple Mountain True Monarch has not shown up, what is he planning?” Fang Yuan was getting more and more on edge.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1355: Crucial Traitor

At Yi Tian Mountain’s location, around the super Gu formation, while the demonic and righteous paths were fighting, another battle had come to an end.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was undamaged, it was radiating with vitality, floating silently.

The huge purple blood river formation was near the brink of collapse, the blood river was no more, only a lump of red blood was left floating around randomly in the dark purple space.

In front of Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, the Seven Illusions Demon Immortal was trapped in a ball of wind, unable to escape, he had no choice but to surrender.

Victory was assured.

“Let me see your true identity.” Wu Yong was unharmed, green light flashed across his eyes.

Immediately, the rainbow colored lights surrounding the Seven Illusions Demon Immortal vanished like clouds blown by wind, dispersing.

His true identity was exposed.

The three righteous path Gu Immortals were all stunned.

Qiao Zhi Cai stared with wide opened eyes, gasping: “Yao Geng?”

It turned out that this Seven Illusions Demon Immortal was none other than a member of a super force, Yao clan Gu Immortal Yao Geng.

He had originally fought with Wu Yi Ran over Stunning Immortal’s inheritance, during the fifth time, he had died together with Wu Yi Ran.

His life tablet Gu in Yao clan had shattered, everyone thought he was dead.

But to think that he was the Seven Illusions Demon Immortal!

“Good, very good. Yao clan is actually like this.” Tie Mian Shen said coldly.

Yao Geng smiled bitterly: “This is my personal action, it has nothing to do with Yao clan.”

Wu Yong saw that he was defending his clan to the end, he was not as demonic as they had expected, he asked: “What made you think of the method to trap us?”

Yao Geng’s smile became even more bitter: “I already have said that I am a minor character. Or rather, I am just a pawn, I was manipulated and forced to do this, my clan has nothing to do with it.”

Wu Yong’s expression sank slightly: “Then, the one who manipulated you is that rank eight Gu Immortal from earlier? Tell me everything about him.”

Yao Geng laughed loudly, tears rolling down his face: “If I say that I do not understand that person, or rather, I have spent just about as much time with him as you, will you believe me?”

Tie Mian Shen interjected: “Is it because of the Seven Illusions true inheritance?”

Yao Geng nodded with a bitter expression.

Tie Mian Shen sighed: “To obtain the Seven Illusions true inheritance, you need to accept an information path alliance agreement. My clan analyzed and concluded that this is a trap. But what we do not understand is, there were many Seven Illusions true inheritance inheritors who did not have to execute the contents of the alliance agreement, you are the first victim.”

Saying this, Wu Yong and Qiao Zhi Cai understood, they looked towards Yao Geng with a hint of pity.

“At this point, what is there to say. Winner takes all, whether you want to kill me or whatever else, it is up to you.” Yao Geng sat on the ground, devoid of any fighting spirit.

“Where is that rank eight Gu Immortal?” Wu Yong asked, he felt something amiss.

Yao Geng said all that he knew: “I know as much as you do, I thought he was hiding inside the formation. Only until you found the crucial formation core and captured me did I realize that he had left long ago.”

Wu Yong heard this and the bad feeling in his heart intensified.

He quickly grunted, immobilizing Yao Geng and suppressing him in the bamboo building, before using this Immortal Gu House to unleash a terrifying attack.

Rumble!

The purple blood river formation was completely destroyed, the clear sky could be seen again.

The three Gu Immortals were freed, but at this moment, before joy showed on their faces, their bodies shook.

“Oh no, so many days had passed!”

“This purple blood river formation not only has wisdom path, blood path, phantom path, and information path effects, it even has time path methods.”

In this Gu formation, the three Gu Immortals’ sense of time was affected, they misjudged it.

Even Wu Yong fell for it.

He had always thought that the time he spent in the purple blood river formation was not long.

But after breaking out of the Gu formation, he realized that so much time had passed.

“Oh no! It seems that the rank eight Gu Immortal was not trying to fight us to the death, he merely wanted to trap us. Don’t tell me, his real motive is?” Wu Yong’s heart sank, he quickly contacted his clan.

The purple blood river formation isolated them from the outside world, they could not even connect to treasure yellow heaven, not to mention their clans.

Immediately, the three immortals contracted their clans and soon, their expressions changed.

Large amounts of information entered their minds, the three immortals were stunned, to think that so many things had happened these last days!

Gu Immortals from Wu clan, Yang clan, Qiao clan, Chi clan, Chai clan, Xia clan, Ba clan and others were engaged in a chaotic battle.

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s plan was to trap Wu Yong’s group, creating a false image that he had died, so that Southern Border’s politics would go into chaos.

He had succeeded.

Yang clan, Qiao clan, and Wu clan whipped up a storm for their own benefits.

Right when they were engaged in a battle for profits, over at the super Gu formation, large numbers of people assaulted it.

After receiving a huge amount of distress letters, the clans fell into panic.

“What is happening?”

“What guts did these demonic path Gu Immortals grow, how could they attack the super Gu formation?”

“Not just that, even a Northern Plains Gu Immortal appeared.”

“Even a legendary immemorial desolate beast like Zuo Ye Hui was controlled?!”

These righteous path clans felt that it was unthinkable.

But among them, there were astute people, after realizing this fact, they quickly reacted: What happened recently could be put together as a huge shocking scheme.

The mastermind’s goal was the giant dream realm!

“Go, we will go straight to the super Gu formation!” Wu Yong was resolute.

“They were actually able to cause a storm in Southern Border, I want to see who the mastermind is.” Tie Mian Shen followed after.

Wu Yong had an anxious expression: “My brother is still there, I hope nothing bad happened to him.”

At this crucial moment, Wu Yong still did not forget to maintain his reputation.

Qiao Zhi Cai quickly cooperated: “Lord Wu Yong, you care so much for your brother, you are truly loving towards your family and have a big heart, truly a role model of the righteous path.”

Rank eight Immortal Gu House Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building tore through the sky, flying towards Yi Tian Mountain.

Chi clan first supreme elder was also doing the same thing. After receiving Chi Gui’s distress letter, he immediately stopped contesting with Yang clan, he brought a Chi clan Immortal Gu House towards the super Gu formation.

Yang clan was doing the same, Hou clan, Yao clan, and Shang clan sent either Gu Immortal experts or brought their Immortal Gu Houses along.

These people did not know why Shadow Sect was attacking the super Gu formation.

Because from start to finish, they were unclear of what truly happened on Yi Tian Mountain.

They only knew some of the information that Heavenly Court purposely leaked, they knew that Heavenly Court had interfered and that the destruction of Zombie Alliance was related to the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain.

They did not know the reason for the giant dream realm’s creation, or that Spectral Soul’s main body was inside the dream realm.

Heavenly Court hid this information because it was afraid that some Southern Border super forces would help Spectral Soul.

Even though they did not know the reason, this did not stop the super forces from placing great emphasis on the super Gu formation.

Not only because the giant dream realm was there, but also because of Zuo Ye Hui!

This legendary immemorial desolate beast caused great losses and gave Southern

Border’s Gu Immortal world painful memories whenever it appeared.

Thus, Southern Border’s super forces sent their people, and even Immortal Gu Houses, to deal with Zuo Ye Hui!

“Currently, even though they were attacked by surprise, they have Chi clan’s Gu formation and Chi clan’s Gu Immortals there, they can defend themselves for the time being.” While flying, Qiao Zhi Cai said.

Tie Mian Shen was silent.

Wu Yong shook his head: “To speak the truth, I am very worried. The other party has plotted this very deeply, their pawns are extremely well selected. If Yao Geng was not exposed, who would’ve guessed that he was the Seven Illusions Demon Immortal? The other party could infiltrate a rank seven member of a righteous path super force, I am afraid...”

Saying this, Wu Yong stopped.

Tie Mian Shen realized as he spoke: “Afraid that they have an insider within the super Gu formation?”

...

Boom!

The sneak attack was so sudden, it caught everyone unprepared.

“Ba Quan Feng, what are you doing?!” Ba De shouted, attacking with rage.

Ba Quan Feng was sent flying with Ba De’s attack, he was on the verge of death.

Ba De quickly struck and suppressed him before going towards Chi Gui.

Chi Gui was heavily injured, his face was purple-gold in color, blood flowed out of his seven orifices.

Just earlier.

His deduction succeeded, when he was at a crucial moment of activating the second layer of the Gu formation, Ba Quan Feng, who was behind him, attacked suddenly with a vicious blow.

Chi Gui greatly trusted these two Gu Immortals from Ba clan, because earlier when he deduced the Gu formation, they were guarding him wholeheartedly.

But to think that Ba Quan Feng attacked at this crucial moment.

Ba Quan Feng was just a rank six wind path Gu Immortal, while Chi Gui was a rank seven formation path Gu Immortal, he was stronger without doubt. But earlier, Chi Gui was completely focused on the Gu formation, he could not defend himself, he was hit by Ba Quan Feng when unguarded.

Chi Gui not only suffered from Ba Quan Feng’s attack, the Gu formation activation failed and he suffered a huge backlash.

At the next moment, he was near death, unable to do anything anymore.

“Ba Quan Feng!!” Ba De screamed, his eyes were red, he stared at Ba Quan Feng.

If he did not witness this, he would never believe that Ba Quan Feng was a traitor of the enemy.

“Surrender, Lord Ba De, just surrender, you do not know how the enemy truly is!”

Ba Quan Feng was in poor shape, his aura was weak and his expression was pale, he was close to dying.

Ba De, however, saved him from the brink of dying.

“You will not die so easily, trust me, the clan will place judgment upon you, living will be scarier than dying, you will have a fate worse than death!” Ba De gritted his teeth, hearing his words, he truly hated this traitor to the max.

Ba Quan Feng was very vicious.

Undoubtedly, his choice of timing was impeccable.

Right when they were about to succeed, he struck and destroyed the righteous path’s hope.

Not only did he hurt Chi Gui, he even destroyed the newly added earth path Immortal Gu.

Without the second layer of the super Gu formation, the righteous path was bound to lose!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1356: Fang Yuan Salvages The Situation!

“Damn it! This tortoise won’t stop hiding.” Black Tigress gritted her teeth.

Hundreds of thousands of tortoise shell thoughts surrounded the divination tortoise in countless layers, Black Tigress had no way of getting close, with the increasing number of tortoise shell thoughts, she was pushed farther away by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan defended like an unmovable mountain, but he did not relax his mind.

Because Purple Mountain True Monarch had not shown up yet.

Fang Yuan used his investigative methods to observe the entire place.

Fairy Miao Yin and Qiao Si Liu were two of the three current generation great fairies of Southern Border, they were fighting on par with each other, still stuck in a deadlock.

Hei Lou Lan and Bai Ning Bing also displayed battle strength that shocked Fang Yuan.

Previously, when Fang Yuan was chasing them, they were still not familiar with their immortal killer moves, but now, they were extremely proficient, using them easily.

This made Fang Yuan sigh once again, Shadow Sect’s foundation was truly deep. Even in this terrible state, with Shadow Sect’s help, Hei Lou Lan and Bai Ning Bing still obtained such an increase in their battle strength.

If Fang Yuan did not have such gains in Reverse Flow River, and used dream realms to raise his attainment levels after coming here, the speed of his growth would definitely not match these two immortals.

However, even though Hei Lou Lan and Bai Ning Bing were strong, there were no lack of experts in the righteous path.

Tie Xin Jian and Yi Hei Ting were first rate experts among rank sevens, even though they were inferior to Wu Yu Bo, they were still able to deal with Bai Ning Bing and Hei Lou Lan.

The two pairs of Gu Immortals engaged in intense battle, thunder roared as lightning flashed, a blizzard was blowing with countless shining figures.

“However... Zuo Ye Hui has almost recovered.” Fang Yuan looked at the battlefield, he did not forget about the strongest existence here.

“Wu Yi Hai, quickly return.” At this moment, Ba De’s words were transmitted to Fang Yuan.

“What is it?” Fang Yuan could hear something wrong from Ba De’s tone, he hesitated: “I am defending the opening.”

“Quickly come, we need you.” Chi Gui’s weak voice was also transmitted.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank, he quickly entered the hole and got to the inside.

Seeing Ba Quan Feng and Chi Gui on the verge of death, Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk.

An information path Gu flew over, Fang Yuan grabbed it, instantly understanding the situation.

“Ba Quan Feng was a spy from Shadow Sect?! Shadow Sect truly is everywhere.” Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, his eyelids were twitching.

The situation was horrible.

The earth path Immortal Gu was destroyed too.

Just earlier, the righteous path had fallen into a hopeless situation, when Ba De had almost lost all his confidence, he heard Chi Gui say: “We still have our final hope, even though I can’t do anything, there is still Wu Yi Hai. His formation path attainment is something that our clan’s Chi Shang had praised, his formation path attainment level is similar to me, at formation path quasi-grandmaster. Let him in, we still can give it a try.”

Ba De knew that Fang Yuan and Chi Shang had a close relationship, but this was the first time he heard confirmation from Chi clan that Fang Yuan’s formation path attainment level was actually so high.

Normally, Ba De would be wary and envious, but now, he was extremely glad about it, he quickly transmitted to Fang Yuan.

Precisely so, he asked Fang Yuan to come back, the opening was filled by other righteous path Gu Immortals.

“This information is known only to us, Wu Yi Hai, do you have any confidence?” Ba De had a nervous expression.

At this crucial moment, he could not spread news of this. Once everyone became disheartened and lost their morale, the righteous path would definitely lose.

“Confidence my ass.” Fang Yuan cursed.

He stared at Ba Quan Feng, his eyes filled with anger.

Zuo Ye Hui would only rest for some time. Earlier, Chi Gui had already spent most of it deducing the Gu formation, Fang Yuan had less than thirty percent of the original duration left.

To deduce a way to use a new Immortal Gu for this Gu formation, in addition to countless supplementary mortal Gu, and arrange them together to form the second layer of the Gu formation, the difficulty was huge, extremely immense.

Chi Gui knew about the difficulty, thus he said they could give it a try, the hope was indeed slim.

“Even if you are not sure if you can succeed, we can only rely on you. Give it your all, if the Gu formation fails, grey night will kill us all. Don’t think you can escape, Zuo Ye Hui is extremely ferocious, it is recorded in our bloody history. Our only hope is to defend ourselves using the super Gu formation.” Ba De urged.

Fang Yuan was silent, rapidly thinking in his mind.

Ba De and Chi Gui did not know about Fang Yuan’s true identity, but the truth was, Fang Yuan’s situation was much better than theirs.

“I have reverse flow protection seal, as long as I use it, I can leave freely.”

“Even if Zuo Ye Hui pursues me, I can use the five regional walls to escape from him.”

“But if I do that, my true identity will be exposed, not only will I lose my opportunity here, I will be hunted by Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world. Ignoring anything else, Wu Yong will become a mortal enemy!”

“I should first give it a try.”

“Hmm, there is still some time, I do not have to make that final decision yet.”

Fang Yuan thought of this and quickly walked to Chi Gui: “Tell me about the secrets of the Gu formation’s second layer.”

Chi Gui’s eyes were seeing darkness, he was pale as paper. His injuries were too severe, he was barely staying awake by using his Gu worms: “Firstly, we lack an earth path Immortal Gu. This information path mortal Gu has all of the details of this super Gu formation.”

After saying that, his eyes closed as he fainted.

“Damn!” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

Chi Gui fainting was the icing on the cake. Even though Ba De used his methods, it was useless.

Fang Yuan almost wanted to use reverse flow protection seal and flee. In his opinion, without Chi Gui’s guidance, with the need for an earth path Immortal Gu, and also the time needed to deduce the modification, there was basically no hope.

But he still looked into the contents of the information path Gu worm first.

After seeing it, Fang Yuan was staring wide-eyed, he felt extremely glad that he looked at it!

Four elements Gu formation?!

Out of his expectations, this second layer of the Gu formation was established on the concept of the four elements.

Earth, water, wind, fire, it was a Gu formation constructed of earth path, water path, wind path, and fire path Immortal Gu.

Without the earth path Gu, the three Immortal Gu of fire path, water path, and wind path were left. Earlier, Chi Gui was working hard to replenish that earth path aspect.

“Why is it so coincidental?”

“I am not very familiar with other contents of formation path, but I had deeply researched the four elements concept.”

Back then, Tu Shi Cheng’s training of his son in the formation path dream realm was quite traumatic to Fang Yuan.

“The four elements concept was known as an overly strict concept by later generations, even without the earth path Immortal Gu, I can use other Immortal Gu to replace it, earth path is not necessary.”

“Dark path it is!”

“Dark, water, wind, fire, these are also four elements, I can definitely construct the Gu formation’s second layer.”

Fang Yuan was feeling firm intuition regarding this.

He believed in this.

Because he was a formation path grandmaster!

“My concept will definitely work. Furthermore... with a dark path Immortal Gu, we can also defend against grey night more effectively!”

Fang Yuan suddenly realized that his understanding of Zuo Ye Hui’s signature killer move was also not small.

The reason?

Because he had entered a relevant realistic dream realm.

This dream realm was too difficult, Fang Yuan died countless times. He barely passed it using a vast number of uses of unravel dream.

Fang Yuan had experienced grey night in the dream.

Different from now, back then, Zuo Ye Hui’s signature killer move was different, it was a wide ranged attack that filled the entire valley.

But now, it was a dark grey beam of light, this was a modified version.

No matter how many times it was modified, the core was still the same, grey night was still grey night.

Precisely because Fang Yuan had experienced the original grey night, he was confident of creating a super Gu formation that could defend against it.

“However... this means I will need to contribute dark limit Immortal Gu. This is my only dark path Immortal Gu.”

“Dark limit Immortal Gu is very useful in concealing my identity. Should I retreat now and leave, or stay here and take a risk, to see if I can find an opportunity to benefit?”

Fang Yuan hesitated before making up his mind.

“I want to fix the Gu formation, but I do not trust anyone, take Chi Gui and Ba Quan Feng and leave me. Block anyone from getting close to me!”

Ba De knew what was important now, he said nothing, grabbing the two Gu Immortals and moving away a distance of a few hundred steps.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, turning into a divination tortoise.

A wisdom path ancient desolate beast, his transformation path dao marks turned into wisdom path, along with his wisdom path methods, Fang Yuan started to deduce.

His progress was rapid.

Because he not only had the information on the Gu formation, he also knew about the four elements Gu formation, and he was even familiar with dark limit Immortal Gu and grey night.

Roar—!

Zuo Ye Hui suddenly raised its head, growling loudly.

Shadow Sect’s members had joyful expressions, quickly retreating and abandoning their enemies.

“Oh no, grey night is coming!”

“Quick, enter the Gu formation.”

The righteous path Gu Immortals did not know about the truth, they thought that this was the strongest defense.

“Quicker, are you not done yet?” Ba De could not help but urge, he was the most nervous one, if Fang Yuan did not succeed, he would die.

“I’m done.” Fang Yuan’s huge tortoise head let out a breath of air.

Joy flashed in his eyes, dark limit Immortal Gu flew out along with many mortal Gu.

Ba De was stunned before panicking, deep fear was concealed in his voice: “This is a dark path Immortal Gu, this Gu formation needs an earth path Immortal Gu!”

“I don’t have earth path Immortal Gu, I only have dark path.” Fang Yuan replied unhappily.

Ba De’s eyes turned, he almost wanted to hit Fang Yuan, he screamed: “Tell me if you do not have earth path Immortal Gu, I can lend to you!!”

“You know nothing, shut up!” Fang Yuan rebuked.

“You—!” Ba De had lost all hope, he was about to berate Fang Yuan when his eyes suddenly enlarged, like someone had slammed the back of his head.

Next, he was stunned to see that the second layer of the Gu formation activated, having an imposing aura that was vast as the sea.

“He actually succeeded?!” At once, Ba De felt like he had gone to heaven from hell.

He was dazed on the spot with his mouth wide open.

Qiao Si Liu and the rest arrived, seeing this peculiar scene.

Ba De lost his composure, he was in a daze, it was quite surprising.

“Ba De, what’s wrong? Why are you perspiring so much?” Someone coughed and notified of this.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1357: Controlling The Righteous Path

Ba De shuddered, when he regained his senses, his face went red as embarrassment flashed on his face for a second.

Fang Yuan concentrated on manipulating the second layer of the Gu formation, before Chi Gui fainted, he had already lent the entire Gu formation to Fang Yuan, he was now the user of the super Gu formation.

Ba Quan Feng’s sneak attack, Chi Gui fainting, they all helped Fang Yuan.

“Very good, now, using the super Gu formation, I have a huge hold over others in this battle!”

It was not a waste of Fang Yuan’s dark limit Immortal Gu.

This way, he had enough strength to wait for an opportunity.

Earlier, if Fang Yuan used reverse flow protection seal to escape, he would allow Shadow Sect to escape too. But now, he chose to stay and had increased control over the situation, he only had to wait for an opportunity now.

Of course, Fang Yuan did not let down his guard.

He spoke to these righteous path Gu Immortals solemnly: “Get away from me, if anyone gets close, I will consider them a traitor and expel them from the formation.”

“What do you mean?” The righteous path Gu Immortals looked at Fang Yuan, who was vigilant, their expressions changed.

At this moment, Ba De explained for Fang Yuan: “I agree with Wu Yi Hai, nobody is to get near him. Chi Gui fainted from his injuries, it was because of the attack by traitor Ba Quan Feng!”

He told the righteous path Gu Immortals all about the incident earlier.

The righteous path Gu Immortals were all shocked, they knew now: If Fang Yuan did not salvage the formation earlier, the second layer of the Gu Immortal could not be formed, these righteous path Gu Immortals were glad about this, but were also increasingly wary of the Gu Immortals around them.

Ba De looked at Fang Yuan before managing the situation, giving his orders.

There were many righteous path Gu Immortals, Ba De could not awaken Chi Gui who had fainted, but that did not mean that the others could not.

Ba Quan Feng was also interrogated.

The other righteous path Gu Immortals rested and healed their injuries in the meantime, preparing for the intense battle ahead.

At this time, far away from the super Gu formation.

Zuo Ye Hui’s aura finally became calm again.

Its huge black body was like an unmoving mountain.

It slowly raised its head and opened its mouth, breathing in deeply.

There were intense currents in the air, countless Gu worms mixed together into a complex aura, spreading outwards with explosive force.

Its body began to expand like a balloon, it had an intense aura.

When it reached its peak, it opened its mouth, as a dark grey beam of light shot out.

The beam of light was incredibly fast, it landed on the second layer of the Gu formation with the speed of lightning!

There was no sound or explosion.

It was completely silent.

But at the second layer of the Gu formation, there was also a grand, bright light. Red representing fire path, green representing wind path, blue representing water path, and black representing dark path, four colors fused together, defending against the grey beam of light.

The Gu formation was creaking.

The righteous path Gu Immortals were all nervous.

If this super Gu formation could not hold on, they would be meat on the chopping block, they might survive the attack if they were lucky, but the unlucky ones would disintegrate immediately.

Many astute people started to observe Fang Yuan’s expression.

Fang Yuan was the person manipulating the Gu formation, his every action would affect their mood.

Fang Yuan’s expression was calm all along, nobody could read anything from him.

But his calmness meant confidence and safety. The righteous path Gu Immortals gradually relaxed.

A while later, the dark grey beam vanished, while the colorful lights from the Gu formation’s second layer also faded.

“We blocked it!”

“Hahaha...”

“Good job, Lord Wu Yi Hai!”

The righteous path Gu Immortals cheered, looking at Fang Yuan in a new light.

“I was not wrong after all, Wu Yi Hai, you saved us all.” Chi Gui woke up and muttered, feeling glad.

He was in poor shape now, he still needed Fang Yuan to continue controlling the super Gu formation.

Qiao Si Liu’s eyes also turned to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had saved everyone in the righteous path this time and became a hero. Qiao Si Liu did not have good feelings for Fang Yuan earlier, but now, looking at Fang Yuan who was standing straight, her heart was pounding as she has a wondrous feeling.

Immortal killer move grey night against the super Gu formation, it was the contest of spear and shield.

Eventually, the latter won and defended against this terrifying attack.

As the light faded and dust settled, Zuo Ye Hui, who was breathing roughly, looked at the super Gu formation with wide open eyes.

The dream realm was not affected.

It was huge, like a giant pot, with the bottom pointed at the sky, covering the vast land.

In the second layer of the Gu formation, Fang Yuan, Ba De, Qiao Si Liu, and the other righteous path Gu Immortals were protected. This Gu formation had lost its third and fourth layers, it could not conceal the dream realm like before, it could only shield a portion of the dream realm.

“We did not break through?!” Ying Wu Xie, Hei Lou Lan, Bai Ning Bing, and the rest were greatly surprised, this was not what Purple Mountain True Monarch had told them.

Not long ago, they had received Purple Mountain True Monarch’s transmission, he said that the Gu formation would be destroyed, they had to attack during that opportunity to secure victory.

“Chi Gui had already lost consciousness, what could be the cause.” Far away, at the edge of the dream realm, Purple Mountain True Monarch sighed deeply.

This was troublesome!

They had lost the greatest opportunity, but he had no choice but to strike regardless.

Purple Mountain True Monarch, who concealed his figure, could not be detected by the others. After arriving at the dream realm, he had already prepared for a long time.

At this moment, he activated his method!

At once, the world changed colors.

Rainbow light shot into the sky beyond the clouds.

An unparalleled aura, grand and vast like a tsunami, cracked the Gu Immortals' mental fortitude, leaving them in a state of shock.

“What is going on?!” The Gu Immortals on Shadow Sect's side closed their eyes.

The super Gu formation was shaking intensely.

The righteous path Gu Immortals were all flustered: “What is going on? What killer move is this?!”

Fang Yuan's face flashed with nervousness as he announced: “This immortal killer move is not targeting us or the Gu formation, it is targeting the dream realm.”

After an intense eruption, the rainbow lights did not fade away. Instead, cocoons of light were formed.

“The... the dream realm is vanishing, condensing into countless cocoons of light.”

“Oh my, what method is this? It is causing such a huge commotion.”

“Normal methods have no effect on the dream realm, except dream path killer moves!”

“So that's it, these demonic path Gu Immortals are after the dream realm.”

The righteous path Gu Immortals called out.

Among them, one looked at Fang Yuan sinisterly: “I said that the immortal opportunity business was a bad idea! It allowed those demonic path Gu Immortals to think of an immortal killer move to make use of the dream realm. This definitely has huge benefits, otherwise, how could so many Gu Immortals disregard all consequences to attack us?”

These words made most of the righteous path Gu Immortals' expressions change.

Fang Yuan heard it and had no reaction.

Ba De snorted angrily, looking at the Xia clan Gu Immortal as he shouted: “Shut up!”

At this moment, he was still trying to sow discord with the enemy right in front of them, and most importantly, he was angering the key person, Fang Yuan, this was simply too stupid, Ba De was furious.

But at the next moment, this Xia clan Gu Immortal vanished on the spot, appearing outside the Gu formation.

“Why, why did he go out?” The righteous path Gu Immortals were stunned, they asked this.

Fang Yuan sneered as he said: “This person has ill intentions, he tried to sow discord, so I sent him outside, after all, trash can be recycled, he can probe out the enemy's ability.”

“Rubbish, who gave you the authority to do this, you are disregarding our rights!”

“Quick, let our clan’s Gu Immortal back in.”

“Quick!”

Fang Yuan smiled coldly as the other Xia clan Gu Immortal who was screaming also vanished.

At the next moment, he appeared outside the super Gu formation, in the outside world. Looking at the huge dream realm and the flickering super Gu formation, he was stunned.

“Wu Yi Hai!” Ba De was anxious, almost jumping up: “Are you messing around on purpose?!”

Fang Yuan looked at him lightly and said: “Make a din and you will leave too.”

Ba De was dumbfounded.

The other righteous path Gu Immortals: “...”

Ba De’s chest was moving up and down from rage, his face was flushed red, but he spoke: “Don’t forget, the Immortal Gu of all our super clans were used to create this super Gu formation!”

He was making a threat.

But Fang Yuan chuckled: “Do you think that at this moment, you can still recall your Gu worms? Haven’t you noticed that you have already lost your connection to these Immortal Gu?”

The immortals’ expressions changed.

Chi Gui said solemnly: “Sigh, everyone, don’t bother. This was the Gu formation created by our clan’s Lord Chi Qu You. Earlier, when designing this formation, to guard against traitors and prevent the Gu formation from being destroyed from the inside, the first and second layers can only be controlled by one person, others cannot interfere. Even I cannot control the Gu formation now, unless Wu Yi Hai transfers the ownership back to me again.”

Saying this, Chi Gui looked at Fang Yuan sincerely and earnestly.

“Chi Gui, you are heavily injured, you have contributed too much for us, you should heal yourself now.” Fang Yuan smiled coldly, crushing Chi Gui’s hopes immediately.

Ba De was fuming with rage.

The immortals were also flustered.

In this situation, weren’t they at Fang Yuan’s mercy?

Qiao Si Liu and the others who were close to Wu clan were fine, but in Ba clan, Yao clan, Yang clan, and others, their Gu Immortals had conflict with Wu clan, their expressions were very ugly.

“Chi Qu You, this old fool!” Some people cursed in their minds.

Chi Qu You had secretly dealt a blow to these super clans, under the justification of defending this dream realm and Gu formation, to keep it safe. But because of this change of events, Chi clan lost control and an outsider took over as the person in charge.

“Don’t worry, I, Wu Yi Hai, am not a person who acts without reason. In this situation, us righteous path clans need to work together through thick and thin to get through this crisis.”

“My Wu clan is still number one in the righteous path, with such a situation occurring, we will definitely come forward and take on this responsibility.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1358: Reappearance of Pure Dream Reality Seeker

“I have good news to share, my Wu clan has an Immortal Gu House secretly on the way here, to bring me back to Wu Yi Mountain. It is not far now, it is our closest reinforcement.”

“As long as we work together and cooperate well, we can definitely leave unscathed, we might even do a merit for the righteous path, for everyone living in Southern Border, we will contribute greatly to this region!”

Fang Yuan spoke rapidly.

Ba De’s expression turned very ugly.

Qiao Si Liu’s eyes were shining, looking at Fang Yuan, her gaze did not shift, she was filled with admiration towards him.

Chi Gui had once gave Fang Yuan the information path Gu worm and told him all about the super Gu formation. Thus, when Fang Yuan realized he could control this Gu formation by himself, he decided to lead all of the righteous path Gu Immortals.

Xia clan’s two Gu Immortals were unlucky people that Fang Yuan had used to assert his dominance.

After that, he gave great news regarding the Immortal Gu House.

With both the stick and carrot, he successfully got the righteous path Gu Immortals under him, becoming a force that he could manipulate.

There were no lack of elites in the righteous path, but Fang Yuan had the initiative, his advantage was too large, because of this situation, they had no choice but to obey him.

Fang Yuan’s actions turned the situation around, right now, even Ba De had to listen to him.

After successfully controlling these righteous path Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan turned his attention towards the outside world.

Many cocoons of light had already formed, quietly floating in the sky.

The price for creating these light cocoons was the dream realm.

Large pieces of the dream realm vanished entirely. The originally round and intact giant dream realm now had holes in it, it was like cheese that was eaten by rats with holes all over.

More than twenty cocoons of light had formed, and more of them were gradually condensing.

Seeing this, Fang Yuan sighed: Shadow Sect’s methods were truly endless. Indeed worthy of the super force created by a Demon Venerable which had a hundred thousand years of accumulation!

Crack...

At this time, waves of cracking noises could be heard from the first cocoon.

Next, cracks appeared on the light cocoon.

Bam.

The cocoon of light broke as a nude person fell out!

Before landing on the ground, Purple Mountain True Monarch, who had waited for a long time, acted rapidly.

Large numbers of Gu worms flew out and surrounded the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body, before entering their immortal aperture.

Soon, this person opened their eyes, their entire body was covered in clothing as they flew towards the edge of the dream realm without stopping.

“This?!”

The other righteous path Gu Immortals were stunned, but Fang Yuan’s eyes were wide open.

“This is the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique!” Fang Yuan had seen it before, seeing it again, he was still stunned.

In the past, Ying Wu Xie had the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique.

This immortal body was a man-made extreme physique. Shadow Sect’s Old Man Yan Shi had researched it for a long time, how did Purple Mountain True Monarch get a hold of this method?

Don’t forget, Ying Wu Xie was still alive, and Purple Mountain True Monarch had entered the River of Time through great risks, interacting deeply with Spectral Soul’s will inside the Red Lotus true inheritance.

Purple Mountain True Monarch had wanted to cooperate with Fang Yuan, but because of his low information path foundation, he rejected it.

Thus, even though Purple Mountain True Monarch knew that Fang Yuan had methods to deal with the dream realm, he could not make use of them.

He wanted to save Spectral Soul’s main body, other than the super Gu formation, there was also the huge obstacle, the giant dream realm.

Fang Yuan was not helpful, thus, Purple Mountain True Monarch placed his focus on the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique.

This way, with the bulk of the dream realms vanishing, he could get to the center of the dream realm and save Spectral Soul.

“This means, the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique is created like this?”

“Shadow Sect’s methods... are truly fearsome!”

Even though Fang Yuan had fought against Ying Wu Xie back then, he did not know about his origin.

After finally seeing it, Fang Yuan shouted loudly, ordering the righteous path Gu Immortals: “Quick, destroy all these cocoons! We need to kill the one who just left!!”

“What is going on?”

“Wu Yi Hai, what do you know? Tell us!”

The righteous path Gu Immortals asked.

But at the next moment, they were teleported by Fang Yuan, to the outside of the super Gu formation.

“The f*ck!”

“Not even saying a word, who does he think we are?”

“Wu Yi Hai, you are using our clan’s Immortal Gu, don’t go overboard!!”

Even Qiao Si Liu was sent out, this Southern Border fairy was a little dazed, she could not accept it.

Xia clan’s two Gu Immortals saw that so many righteous path Gu Immortals had landed in their plight, they felt extremely satisfied, they shouted loudly to take down Wu Yi Hai.

But nobody gave them any attention. In this situation, who would dare to offend Fang Yuan, who controlled the super Gu formation?

Fang Yuan transmitted: “If you do not want to die here, listen to me. These enemies will grow stronger with time, now is the best time to eliminate them!”

While the others hesitated, Wu Liao had already listened to Fang Yuan and acted.

Next, Gu Immortals close to Wu clan including Qiao Si Liu also moved. But because Fang Yuan shifted her out along with the others, this woman, who was one of the three great fairies of Southern Border, had an ugly expression and mood.

These people acted quickly, soon, the righteous path Gu Immortals started to fight.

One one hand, Fang Yuan controlled the super Gu formation, he controlled their safety. Secondly, the righteous path forces had deep interest in exploring the dream realm. They had desire towards these immortal bodies created from the dream realm. As long as they captured one of them and researched it, their clan’s dream path development would rise rapidly.

Only Xia clan’s two Gu Immortals were hesitant.

But Fang Yuan did not forget them, he transmitted: “As long as you each kill a cocoon, I will spare you and let you return to the Gu formation.”

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals were furious, they gritted their teeth, but they had no choice! After looking at each other, they acted according to Fang Yuan’s words.

Almost all the righteous path Gu Immortals had moved, killing and destroying the cocoons of light.

Only Fang Yuan stayed in the super Gu formation alone, overseeing the battle from the base, it was truly relaxing.

Strive for every second!

The Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies broke out of the cocoons of light as they flew out.

At the same time, when the cocoons were destroyed, the dream realms that had vanished appeared again.

“Spectral Soul’s main body is inside the dream realm. Shadow Sect has planned this well, creating Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies to obscure our vision. Among these flying Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, there might be Spectral Soul’s remnant soul!”

Fang Yuan stared as he controlled the super Gu formation, manipulating the battlefield intently.

This super Gu formation was built around the giant dream realm originally. Even though only the second layer of the Gu formation was active now, Fang Yuan could still control half of the battlefield, he could teleport Gu Immortals nearby.

Not only did the righteous path Gu Immortals act, Fang Yuan also manipulated the Gu formation, using its power to destroy the cocoons.

Unfortunately, this super Gu formation was built on the basis of defense, it was pitifully weak in attack, far weaker than Fang Yuan’s own attacks.

“Kill!” At this moment, shouting could be heard.

With Fairy Miao Yin, Hei Lou Lan, and Bai Ning Bing leading, Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals had arrived.

This wave of Gu Immortals were far less in numbers, but in this complex battle situation, the disadvantage in numbers was easy to cover.

The original giant dream realm was intact, resembling a turned over pot covering the ground.

Next, because of the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies forming, large pieces of the dream realm went missing.

Some cocoons of light were destroyed by righteous path Gu Immortals, and the dream realm appeared again, but it was much smaller than before, this caused the dream realm to not be as complete as before, there was a difference.

Some of the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were killed and created a huge dream realm on the spot. Because the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies had flown away and were not at the original spots, this caused patches of dream realms to be formed outside of the original dream realm.

Don’t forget, this giant dream realm itself had movement.

Thus, large patches of dream realms were all over the place, some overlapped while some were isolated, and some were only a thin line away from being connected, they were in the sky and on the ground, the terrain was truly very complicated.

When fighting here, Gu Immortals had to be very wary, they had to guard against the dream realms and could not fall into dreams.

“Creating so many Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, it must be Purple Mountain True Monarch. But where is he?”

Fang Yuan looked around using the super Gu formation, but he could not find Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Rumble!

With an intense sound, the super Gu formation burst out with power, as a shadow flew towards a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body that had just broken out of its cocoon, crashing onto it like a mountain.

Suppressed!

Without Gu worms to help them, the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body was easily suppressed, before the super Gu formation teleported them to Fang Yuan.

The Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body stared at Fang Yuan fiercely, tied by black chains and unable to move.

Fang Yuan sized it up, his eyes shined brightly.

“Interesting, if I can capture a few more, I might be able to deduce this method of Shadow Sect and create my own Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.”

“This is the extreme physique of dream path, even though it has a short lifespan, it might be able to help me resolve huge issues in critical moments!”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan searched for Purple while using the super Gu formation to capture newly formed Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

The second layer’s coverage was less than half of the dream realm, while the domain he controlled was even smaller.

But cocoons of light continued to form, as Fang Yuan struck multiple times, he actually captured close to ten Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

He soon had a shocking discovery — these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies did not have rising cultivation levels as time passed. Among them, some had rank six immortal bodies while others were mortals, only a very small number had rank seven cultivation level.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1359: Heavenly Court’s Interference

Fang Yuan also found something interesting.

The time that these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies could live was inversely correlated to their cultivation level. The higher their cultivation level, the shorter the duration they could live. In contrast, those Gu Master Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies could live for two to three years, they were good research material for Fang Yuan, he had ample time to do so.

“Earlier, I was wondering why Shadow Sect did not use the method to mass produce

Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies during the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain if possible.”

“Now it seems, the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique that created Ying Wu Xie was not this simple.”

“In order to save their main body, Shadow Sect had to use this method to create many Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, to disperse and get rid of the dream realms. They have great determination!”

Fang Yuan sighed as he realized Shadow Sect’s firm and determined attitude.

Not only did Fang Yuan capture some Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, the other righteous path Gu Immortals were not stupid, they also had some captives.

These Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were the dream path fruits of Shadow Sect’s research. Once anyone successfully researched on them, they would have an explosive breakthrough in the exploration of dream realms.

Shadow Sect did this without hesitation in order to save Spectral Soul’s main body.

The scene was very chaotic.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was not discovered, he was still continuing to create more Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

More and more cocoons of light were starting to appear in the dream realm area.

Pieces of dream realms were cluttered together in a messy fashion, creating a complex terrain. Both the righteous path and demonic path were surrounding the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, engaging in fierce battles.

Even though Fang Yuan’s side was doing their best to obstruct them, because the battlefield was too chaotic, some Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies managed to leave the battlefield amidst the confusion.

“Damn it! Spectral Soul’s main body might be hiding among these bodies.” Fang Yuan observed and was about to attack from afar, when suddenly!

Light that was sharp as a needle descended from the sky.

Instantly, the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body’s skull was pierced.

This white light that was extremely thin was very sharp, it moved down from the skull of the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body and penetrated his entire body.

It appeared instantly and vanished just as quickly.

The Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body that was hit was rank six.

He instantly felt that his body had no strength, he was extremely weak. He showed suspicion on his face as he raised his hand to touch the top of his head.

Next, he placed his hand in front of him and saw that there was blood mixed with brain matter.

His expression changed abruptly, there was disbelief and fear.

Next, his vision turned dark as he lost his life. His corpse fell onto the ground from the sky like a rag doll.

Instantly, blood sprayed out, bones were broken, it was almost a pile of mush, the body was completely dead.

“Hmm? Who is it?!” Fang Yuan saw this and his pupils shrunk.

He was the person in charge of the situation, among the righteous path, he was the first to observe this.

Meanwhile, on the demonic path’s side, Purple Mountain True Monarch was creating cocoons of light while managing the situation.

Seeing this, he was not confused, he frowned deeply: “Heavenly Court finally acted!”

He had expected this, he had some arrangements in white heaven, Heaven Overseeing Tower was obstructed for a while.

But unfortunately, Fang Yuan salvaged the situation, Purple Mountain True Monarch’s plan was greatly disrupted.

The super Gu formation and the righteous path Gu Immortals greatly hindered Purple Mountain True Monarch’s plan to saving his main body.

The best timing was lost, Heaven Overseeing Tower broke free of the obstruction and finally acted, joining this huge battle.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

After several soft sounds, several small traces of white light shot out and easily killed all of the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies who tried to leave the battlefield.

Next, a grand Immortal Gu House appeared from the sky with shining light, as if a deity had descended upon the battlefield.

Such an incredible sight attracted the attention of many Gu Immortals, they quickly looked up at the sky.

A few of them were dazed, but most Gu Immortals instantly recognized Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Heavenly Court’s Heaven Overseeing Tower, it was too famous!

Heavenly Court?!

Almost all the Gu Immortals were intensely shocked.

Heavenly Court’s imposing entrance made this chaotic battle go into even more uncertainty.

At the top of Heaven Overseeing Tower, Duke Long crossed his hand and stood upright like a tower, observing the entire battlefield.

“Spectral Soul is too devious, we cannot let a single Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body off, they need to die! Of course, these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies could just be distractions, Spectral Soul might be lurking in other Gu Immortals’ bodies to escape. Thus, all of the Gu Immortals present need to be killed too, it is better to be safe than sorry!”

“Yes!” Behind Duke Long, Fairy Zi Wei and the Gu Immortals she led responded in unison.

Duke Long pondered before saying: “We will kill Shadow Sect before eliminating the righteous path. But if anyone tries to leave the battlefield, no matter who, we will exterminate them!”

Heaven Overseeing Tower pressed down on the battlefield like an imposing mountain with vast power.

The chaotic battlefield froze.

Heaven Overseeing Tower had the greatest battle strength, its movement decided the flow of this battle.

The righteous path Gu Immortals’ hearts were pounding.

Heavenly Court... these were Central Continent Gu Immortals, were they reinforcements?

Shadow Sect’s side fell into panic.

Evidently, Heavenly Court and Shadow Sect were enemies.

Fang Yuan’s expression was grim, looking at rank nine Immortal Gu House Heaven Overseeing Tower, he frowned deeply.

He had somewhat expected this to happen.

“Heavenly Court appeared again, the situation is horrible. They actually rebuilt Heaven Overseeing Tower in such a short time! I wonder how many rank eight Gu Immortals came this time!”

Heaven Overseeing Tower’s appearance was a huge blow to Fang Yuan’s plans.

But thankfully, Fang Yuan was inside the super Gu formation, it could defend against Heaven Overseeing Tower’s might.

Fang Yuan had the experience of battling against Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Even if the strongest attack from fate Gu was used, Fang Yuan estimated that this super Gu formation could endure one attack!

Fang Yuan decided to observe for now, but Purple Mountain True Monarch could not do nothing.

He was a rank eight wisdom path Gu Immortal, how could he not have backup plans?

Purple Mountain True Monarch transmitted: “Zuo Ye Hui, according to our agreement, your enemy is here, what are you waiting for? They are from Heavenly Court!”

“Heavenly Court?!” Legendary immemorial desolate beast Zuo Ye Hui heard this as its body shuddered, intense rage and hatred could be seen in its eyes.

This rage and hatred was embedded into its soul, even after a million years, it still felt this deeply.

“Heavenly Court!!” Zuo Ye Hui roared, the sound waves burst out and swept an immense surrounding area.

Boom!

At the next moment, vast darkness burs tout from Zuo Ye Hui’s body. Its body was huge to begin with, now, under the cover of the dark mist, it became increasingly terrifying.

Next, its legs bent as its body arched, it bared its teeth and stomped the ground.

Bam.

There was an intense sound, the ground shook harshly.

A huge pit was created under Zuo Ye Hui, while it shot out like an arrow, through the sky, towards Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Heaven Overseeing Tower burst out with power, but Zuo Ye Hui was covered in dark mist, it was evidently an immortal killer move, allowing it to fly and defend itself.

Zuo Ye Hui moved like a bamboo spear or a huge meteorite, in a few breaths of time, it traveled a hundred li, arriving at Heaven Overseeing Tower.

“Hmph! Insolent fool.” Duke Long snorted in disdain, his majestic body shook as his thoughts collided, Heaven Overseeing Tower burst out with an intense white light.

At once, the world turned white.

Heaven Overseeing Tower’s strongest method — Fate Vanquish!

Rank nine Immortal Gu Fate’s power was unrivaled.

There was no way of dodging. As long as one was not rank nine, no matter how powerful, they would lose to this move.

Light was everywhere.

White light.

Filling the world from all directions.

The Gu Immortals exposed to the light, be it righteous path or demonic path, coughed out blood. They were instantly heavily injured, most fainted on the spot.

At once, half the battlefield was cleared.

There were some Gu Immortals who were shielded by the dream realm, they were not exposed to the light and were saved.

With a loud sound, even Zuo Ye Hui could not block the attack of Fate, it crashed to the ground.

It coughed out blood, but soon, it crawled up and opened its mouth, roaring at Heaven Overseeing Tower.

In Heaven Overseeing Tower, the Central Continent Gu Immortals all had shocked expressions.

Even Duke Long was surprised.

Zuo Ye Hui did not die from fate vanquish, that was normal. It was far sturdier than normal Immortal Gu Houses, and had incredible regenerative properties.

Zuo Ye Hui was the problem of Southern Border for ages, Southern Border’s Gu

Immortal world had mobilized Immortal Gu Houses to kill it, but could not, they only defeated it.

But Zuo Ye Hui’s injury was far less severe than Duke Long’s expectations.

Gu Immortals could cultivate, so could Zuo Ye Hui. After all these years, Zuo Ye Hui had been getting stronger. Moreover, it was helped by Shadow Sect this time. Purple Mountain True Monarch purposely lent it a lot of Immortal Gu and large numbers of immortal killer moves, Zuo Ye Hui was fully armed.

Zuo Ye Hui stood up again, half of its injuries had healed.

This was a terrifying recovery speed!

It pounced at Heaven Overseeing Tower again fearlessly.

A cold light shined in Duke Long’s eyes, he used fate vanquish again.

Zuo Ye Hui was hit and landed on the ground again, but soon, it stood up, even though it was injured again, it was full of vitality.

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were intensely shocked.

“This is the battle strength of a legendary immemorial desolate beast? It is truly stunning!”

“It is a bit troublesome.” Fairy Zi Wei had a grim expression. Zuo Ye Hui’s battle strength was out of her imagination, even though Heaven Overseeing Tower had fate vanquish, it could not be used consecutively.

After all, rank nine Immortal Gu Fate still had injuries on it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1360: Fang Yuan’s Desperate Situation

Roar!

Zuo Ye Hui growled, this time, it flew to the sky, and stayed in midair to attack Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Duke Long sneered, activating Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Turn phantom!

Zuo Ye Hui missed its target.

The entirety of Heaven Overseeing Tower, including the Gu Immortals inside, turned phantom. Normal methods could not hit them at all.

“This is on purpose? To lure me to attack?” Purple Mountain True Monarch, who was concealed, saw this as bright light flashed in his eyes.

Shadow Sect had methods to counter the phantom form.

But Purple Mountain True Monarch did not act against the phantom Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Because he was not Spectral Soul’s main body, he did not have all the Immortal Gu needed to counter the phantom form. Even if he used them, against Heaven Overseeing Tower, it was too inefficient.

“He did not act?” Duke Long thought to himself.

In the past, during the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Spectral Soul had sealed the phantom Heaven Overseeing Tower and prevented it from returning to solid.

Duke Long had specially prepared well against this killer move, but Purple Mountain True Monarch was really patient, he did not do anything.

Duke Long controlled the phantom Heaven Overseeing Tower and tried to get closer to the dream realm.

Once the huge Heaven Overseeing Tower entered the dream realm, it started to fade from its phantom form, some Gu worms by the fringe were devoured by the dream realm.

“Phantom methods are useless too.” Duke Long’s heart shook, bringing Heaven Overseeing Tower away from the dream realm.

This was the first time Duke Long was seeing an actual dream realm.

This was something related to Great Dream Immortal Venerable, Duke Long was quite surprised.

Even though Heaven Overseeing Tower was in phantom form, the dream realm still devoured a corner of it. The Central Continent Gu Immortals in Heaven Overseeing Tower were quickly trying to repair it.

“Without any dream path methods, even Heaven Overseeing Tower will get lost inside the dream realm.” Duke Long concluded.

One skill to dominate the world!

Back then, Ying Wu Xie with Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique could use lead soul into dream killer move and directly make Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord go to sleep.

Evidently, even the powerful rank nine Immortal Gu House could not defend against the might of dream path.

Unless it was an Immortal Gu House with dream path Immortal Gu, normal Immortal Gu Houses would get lost in the dream realm without resistance.

“This means, this battlefield is not good for Heaven Overseeing Tower to fight. Heaven Overseeing Tower is too big, it is far less agile than Gu Immortals fighting alone.” Duke Long looked at the growling Zuo Ye Hui as light flashed in his eyes.

At this moment, Heaven Overseeing Tower returned to solid form as Zuo Ye Hui chased after it.

Heaven Overseeing Tower turned and accelerated, rushing towards a dream realm.

Zuo Ye Hui flew in the sky, moving even more quickly, its huge body was like a black cloud, winds were wild as it moved towards Heaven Overseeing Tower.

“Oh no!” Purple Mountain True Monarch saw this and quickly stopped it.

A mystical light flew out and landed on Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Heaven Overseeing Tower’s speed slowed, it became illusory as ripples appeared, like it was the surface of water.

“Fake?” Zuo Ye Hui quickly stopped.

It almost went into the dream realm.

The dream realm was incredibly dangerous to Zuo Ye Hui as well.

Behind it, the real Heaven Overseeing Tower appeared.

“Hehehe.” Duke Long stood at the top of the tower, his dragon eyes looking coldly at a certain place.

Purple Mountain True Monarch sighed, knowing that this was a trap.

Duke Long was seemingly trying to trap Zuo Ye Hui, but the truth was, he wanted to find out Purple Mountain True Monarch’s location.

But even if Purple Mountain True Monarch knew of Duke Long’s plans, he had no choice but to act.

Because Zuo Ye Hui was too valuable of a fighting force, it could not be lost, Shadow Sect needed it to defend against Heaven Overseeing Tower.

“Lingering split soul of Spectral Soul, hmph, I will kill him. Fairy Zi Wei, go deal with that super Gu formation and kill Fang Yuan. The others will control Heaven Overseeing Tower and leave this place. Zuo Ye Hui will surely follow, I do not need success, I just do not want failure.” Duke Long ordered, as everyone responded.

With the roar of a dragon, Duke Long turned into a mystical light and charged at Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Meanwhile, Fairy Zi Wei charged at the super Gu formation.

Heaven Overseeing Tower brought the Central Continent Gu Immortals and flew into the sky, leaving the battlefield.

Zuo Ye Hui looked at Duke Long, Fairy Zi Wei, and finally, Heaven Overseeing Tower.

It knew that it was highly restricted in this battlefield because of its size, and because it liked to move around fast.

Meanwhile, Heaven Overseeing Tower had an aura that it detested, and was the symbol of Heaven Overseeing Tower, it had a deep desire to destroy this tower.

Duke Long flew in the sky, turning into a phantom shadow as he appeared before Purple Mountain True Monarch instantly.

He had a tall and majestic body, the dragon horn on his head was sharp and imposing, his dragon pupils revealed dominance and indifference.

Boom boom boom!

Purple Mountain True Monarch fought Duke Long.

A few breaths later, Purple Mountain True Monarch could not fight on par with him, he had to run away.

“You will die today.” Duke Long roared, chasing relentlessly.

In the super Gu formation, Fang Yuan was breaking out in cold sweat.

He realized that he had fallen into a trap!

“Heaven’s will! It was actually hiding in... no, rather than that...” Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk to pin size, sweat poured down his face.

At this moment, Fairy Zi Wei had already arrived in front of the super Gu formation.

Fang Yuan calmed himself down, activating the super Gu formation and defending against this enemy.

“This Gu formation is not bad.” Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes shined with purple light, she observed the super Gu formation and nodded: “It is a pity, there is a flaw, these Gu worms are of different sources, the user of the Gu formation is borrowing other people’s Immortal Gu, but this can be used by me.”

As she said that, she raised her right hand, which was holding an Immortal Gu House.

Star Constellation Chessboard!

This Immortal Gu House was personally created by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, it was possibly the smallest Immortal Gu House in the world.

When the chessboard was activated, it changed into crystal starlight that filled the sky.

Starlight moved around like fireflies, surrounding Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei’s human body was assimilated by this starlight, turning into starlight and joining them.

The starlight expanded slightly, pouncing at the super Gu formation.

Fang Yuan was already vigilantly waiting, he activated the Gu formation and attacked the starlight.

But the starlight completely ignored the Gu formation’s attack, it started to infiltrate the super Gu formation.

Originally, this super Gu formation was shining in four profound colors of red, green, blue, and black. But now, with the invasion of the starlight, these four lights weakened as starlight mixed in, Fang Yuan felt a sense of sluggishness from the super Gu formation.

“Fang Yuan, you were an otherworldly demon chosen by heaven’s will and tasked to save the people of this world. Even though you destroyed Shadow Sect’s heaven defying plan, you took a wrong step and betrayed the righteous path, entering the demonic path and becoming enemies with the world. If you admit your mistake now and surrender, I will leave you with a complete corpse, I will make a biography for you after death so that your name will go down in history as a lesson for the future.”

At this time, Fairy Zi Wei’s voice came from the super Gu formation.

Fang Yuan laughed as he said: “This is truly an incredible scheme by heaven’s will!”

As he said that, he tried to activate the super Gu formation.

The Gu formation was still under his control, but it was getting incredibly hard to use, some mortal Gu by the fringe were vanishing from Fang Yuan’s control.

Evidently, Fairy Zi Wei was fighting with him over the control of this super Gu formation.

“Stubborn fool.” Fairy Zi Wei had a cold voice, seeing Fang Yuan’s struggle, she put in more effort.

The starlight shining in the super Gu formation became brighter.

“Heavenly Court knows my identity, this proves my conjecture.”

“I cannot take back dark limit Immortal Gu anymore, as time passes, the super Gu formation will go under Heavenly Court’s control.”

“What do I do? Do I discard the super Gu formation and activate reverse flow protection seal to escape?”

“No!”

“Heavenly Court has fought with me before, they definitely know about reverse flow protection seal.”

“Since they want to eliminate both me and Shadow Sect, how could they not consider the element of reverse flow protection seal?”

“Heavenly Court wants to see me rely solely on this move. If my killer move is broken, I will face a backlash, I will lose all my battle strength and even die immediately!”

“What should I do?”

Thoughts moved in Fang Yuan’s mind like a huge storm was brewing.

It was a desperate situation.

Fang Yuan thought of how he could leave the battlefield.

There was no way!

He could not otherwise escape. His only hope was reverse flow protection seal.

“Should I bet that Heavenly Court has no method against reverse flow protection seal?”

Fang Yuan had a bitter expression.

He knew that the chances were slim in this regard.

As for the upper extreme heavenly eagle?

Fang Yuan did not have heavenly crystals, the upper extreme heavenly eagle could not become an immemorial desolate beast.

Even if he had a lot of heavenly crystals, an immemorial desolate beast upper extreme heavenly eagle may not be under his control.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was prideful and only submitted to strong experts, there was a huge chance of betrayal. Just that slight relationship it had with Fang Yuan was fragile and unreliable.

“There are two ways of stalling.” Fang Yuan thought of two methods.

The first was to bring out Reverse Flow River and placed himself inside like a fortress.

The second was to put himself in his immortal aperture, placing in Southern Border and closing his immortal aperture’s entrance shut.

But both methods only stalled for time, they could not change the situation.

If Fang Yuan used these methods, he would be giving up the initiative.

This was very dangerous.

The only hope in these two methods letting Fang Yuan escape was Southern Border’s righteous path reinforcements.

If Southern Border’s Gu Immortals could repel Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan might be able to escape.

But Heavenly Court was not stupid or weak.

The overall strength of Southern Border’s righteous path was definitely stronger than the group from Central Continent that was here. But whether the reinforcements could handle Heaven Overseeing Tower and Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, that was uncertain.

Even if they won and Heavenly Court was chased away, could Fang Yuan continue to be Wu Yi Hai?

How could that be possible!

Since Heavenly Court knew his identity, they just needed a few words to get Southern Border to turn on Fang Yuan.

Wu Yi Hai’s identity could not last if the entire Southern Border righteous path was investigating it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1361: Purple Mountain True Monarch versus Duke Long

Swish, swish!

Killing intent surged, two figures flew rapidly between dream realms.

Purple Mountain True Monarch against Duke Long!

They were extremely fast, like meteors in the sky, but they were incredibly agile like snakes.

Boom boom boom!

As both sides fought, explosions could be heard.

Waves of air currents crashed imposingly, but after getting to any dream realm, they dissipated.

The two rank eight Gu Immortals fought, one was a first generation split soul of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, having cultivated for a hundred thousand years. The other was unknown in history, but was a legend of Heavenly Court, having quasi-rank nine power.

Undeniably, the fight between these two was the core and essence of this battle of the giant dream realm battle, and was the most intense.

Heaven Overseeing Tower and Zuo Ye Hui collided, it was far less important than the fight between those two.

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s eyes flickered with crystal purple light, his arms were stretched out as small rocks resembling charcoal appeared around his body.

The rocks flew out and became larger in the air, the surface of the rocks burned with raging red flames.

Thousands of fiery rocks charged at Duke Long like a meteorite storm.

Duke Long took the attack head on, not dodging.

As the fiery rocks hit his body, he was surrounded by a light resembling a cloud.

The cloud light did not move, but soon, Duke Long found that a fire was burning inside his mind.

His thoughts were moving, but the fire was burning up these thoughts.

The cloud light needed to be maintained by Duke Long, thoughts about it were constantly created. Now that they were burned, this defense was gone.

The fiery rocks thus landed harshly on Duke Long’s body.

At once, there were loud sounds as fiery rocks landed on Duke Long’s muscular and tall iron-like body, like eggs, these fiery rocks broke and shattered, exploding as sparks poured out along with rock fragments.

Duke Long continued to charge, his body had a terrifying accumulation of dao marks, he also had defensive methods similar to Bi Chen Tian’s wood armor and Fang Yuan’s ghostly concealment.

His aura was shocking, like a wild dragon in human form, he endured Purple Mountain True Monarch’s attacks as he moved unceasingly.

His dragon eyes were cold and indifferent, Duke Long had no expression except a cold look.

He did not frown, Purple Mountain True Monarch’s immortal killer move seemed like a gust of wind, harmless and weak.

Duke Long had a very powerful disposition, Purple Mountain True Monarch was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he focused on his tactic, he retreated as he fought.

The fiery rocks could do nothing to Duke Long, but Purple Mountain True Monarch was smirking.

He stretched out his left index finger, pointing at Duke Long who was chasing after him.

Immediately, flowers bloomed.

On Duke Long’s body, countless flowers grew out of nowhere.

Fresh flowers blossomed, thousands of them covered Duke Long’s body.

Duke Long had a strong body with shocking defense, but when the flowers bloomed, his expression finally changed.

“Consecutive move.”

For the first time, Duke Long stopped his chase as he floated in the air.

Even though he was flying at a rapid speed, he could immediately stop moving, anyone would sigh at his amazing movement method, and his incredibly strong physique.

The flowers were blooming at an increasing rate on Duke Long’s body.

The petals were tender and fragile, but they were a huge problem to Duke Long.

Duke Long stretched out his right hand, he grabbed into a fist and after a while, opened his hand.

Poof.

With an explosive sound, his right hand burst out with countless faint pale air currents.

These air currents were like threads flying in the sky, circulating around Duke Long’s entire body continuously.

Waves of air currents were like sharp blades, getting rid of the flowers on his body.

At once, flower petals floated in the air, as these flowers were eradicated.

The air currents seemed weak, but were extremely sharp, after a few breaths of time, the flowers on Duke Long were all wiped out.

Purple Mountain True Monarch saw this and his pupils shrunk.

Duke Long’s killer move was incredible sharp, it was not about the mass of the air currents, but the technique involved in manipulating them that was extremely profound.

Originally, this was a method to deal with enemies, but Duke Long controlled it for use on himself. If he was careless, he would get injured.

But Duke Long was proficient and daring, he was extremely confident in this move, he could use it like moving his fingers, many of the air currents grazed his skin and clothing, but he was completely unharmed, he had complete control of his actions, it was truly superb.

However, with this amount of time, Purple Mountain True Monarch was ready with his move.

Immortal killer moves had difficulties in activation. If Zhao Lian Yun was in Purple Mountain True Monarch's position, she might likely fail her activation of the killer move.

But Purple Mountain True Monarch was incredibly experienced and resolute, he used this chance without doubt.

An immortal killer move was activated.

Illusions appeared, surrounding Purple Mountain True Monarch, there were dozens of purple light illusions.

These illusions were still increasing, one turned into four while four turned into ten, they formed into a huge army.

Purple Mountain True Monarch's true body was concealed as the purple light illusion army charged at Duke Long.

Duke Long snorted coldly, his right hand turned into a dragon claw as he waved.

Claw marks appeared in the air out of nowhere, they were several meters long, everywhere they went, purple light illusions collapsed.

Next, Duke Long's left hand also turned into a dragon claw, he slashed at another area as the marks extended, almost creating wounds in space.

The purple light illusions were quickly eradicated, Duke Long's dragon eyes shined as a mystical light surrounded a secluded space.

Purple Mountain True Monarch knew that his location was exposed, he came out.

Both sides were standing in the air, with the backdrop of countless messy dream realms, they were a thousand steps apart.

“It seems that after such a long time of sleeping, you're still able to keep up with the times.” Purple Mountain True Monarch said plainly, he was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, his long robe was fluttering as his purple hair swayed, his gaze was focused and he was in his top condition.

“I practised a bit recently. The times are always changing, there were too many geniuses in the last million years, there are simply too many new incredible methods now.” Duke Long sighed.

He sighed before continuing: “Alright, enough with these petty tricks, the probing is over, let's use our real methods now.”

Purple Mountain True Monarch smiled, nodding: “Indeed.”

At the next moment, both of them collided like two flashes of lightning.

Boom boom boom...

Dazzling rainbow lights shone like fireworks, when used, the surrounding dream realms became even more illusory and enchanting.

“These two fellows, seriously...” Fang Yuan was observing the battlefield with the super Gu formation.

After observing Purple Mountain True Monarch's and Duke Long's fight, Fang Yuan was speechless.

“Both of them are rank eight Gu Immortals, and not ordinary ones at that, they are simply too strong!”

“Normally speaking, when Gu Immortals first fight, they would use mortal Gu and mortal killer moves. Only when they fight seriously will they use Immortal Gu and immortal killer moves. But these two directly used immortal killer moves to probe each other.”

“These two have at least great grandmaster attainment level. Be it the fiery rocks, flowers, or the air currents and cloud light, they are all mimicry of other paths.”

“If I do not use reverse flow protection seal, I would lose terribly in one move.”

“So intense!”

“The two of them are fighting with greater intensity now, their firepower has increased!”

Information was very important to Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan used the super Gu formation to observe them, he had huge gains.

Be it Purple Mountain True Monarch or Duke Long, Fang Yuan was not their match. Even if he used reverse flow protection seal, he would only passively take a beating.

As a matter of fact, during the battle of Northern Plains’ Reverse Flow River, Fang Yuan was able to escape because of the chaotic situation.

Eventually, Fang Yuan used the regional wall to escape from dog tail life extending ferret Mao Li Qiu.

“With my own strength, it is hard to escape from such a situation, hope is slim!” Fang Yuan’s frown deepened.

At this moment, his expression changed.

It turned out that in his immortal aperture, an information path Gu worm brought words from Wu Yong.

“Wu Yong did not die, Qiao Zhi Cai and Tie Mian Shen are alive too, they are only trapped for the time being. They are trying to get here with an Immortal Gu House!”

Wu Yong told Fang Yuan to hold on and hold onto his life, it was fine even if he escaped.

He even told Fang Yuan that Chi clan’s first supreme elder, Chi Qu You, was also bringing an Immortal Gu House here as backup, but he was still farther away than Wu Yong.

Not just the two of them, the other super forces also sent their Immortal Gu Houses.

Southern Border’s righteous path super clans were in conflict, but after hearing Wu Yong’s words about the giant dream realm’s situation, they immediately went into ceasefire and worked together, gathering and moving towards the giant dream realm.

Looking at the entirety of Southern Border from a bird’s eye view, Yi Tian Mountain was at the center of Southern Border towards the west, while the super forces were scattered in all directions, all heading towards the center.

Fang Yuan had a complex expression.

If he was Wu Yi Hai, upon hearing this, he would be overjoyed and have improved morale.

But he was not.

He was Fang Yuan.

Once Southern Border’s reinforcements came, Heavenly Court would expose his identity, chaos would ensue, Fang Yuan would be all alone.

“As for Wu Yong...” Fang Yuan sighed.

This brother, his biggest backer, would turn into an extremely strong enemy chasing after him in the future.

Fang Yuan killed the real Wu Yi Hai, even if Wu Yong did not care about his brother and did not want revenge, because of his righteous path status, he needed to take revenge and kill Fang Yuan.

One could say, Fang Yuan and Wu Yong had an unresolvable conflict.

“Wu clan actually had another Immortal Gu House! Wu Yong was really good at concealing himself. But even though he is very fast, as the closest reinforcement around, he still needs at least a day to get here.”

Fang Yuan rapidly calculated.

When the reinforcements arrived and Heavenly Court exposed Fang Yuan’s identity, would he be able to escape amidst the chaos?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1362: For Now... Cooperate

Hope was slim.

It was a chaotic three-way battle now.

Heavenly Court’s forces were number one.

Shadow Sect was number two because of their rank eight battle strengths, Purple Mountain True Monarch and Zuo Ye Hui.

Southern Border’s righteous path forces were third, even with the super Gu formation, it was stationary and even Fairy Zi Wei’s Star Constellation Chessboard could infiltrate it.

As for Fang Yuan, he was a Southern Border righteous path member on the surface, but the truth was, he was closer to Shadow Sect’s side, he was a unique person.

Based on the battle situation, Heavenly Court and Southern Border’s righteous path were attacking Shadow Sect.

Shadow Sect was unable to rival Heavenly Court, now that they were attacked by another side, they were in the worst position.

“One day, it takes at least one day to get here.”

“In this current situation, if the situation continues like this, I cannot hold on until then.”

“Moreover, once Shadow Sect falls, Heavenly Court and Southern Border’s righteous path would deal with me, the traitor, together.”

“Shadow Sect’s loss is just one aspect, this super Gu formation is also unable to hold on for a day!”

Fang Yuan retracted his gaze, he looked at this super Gu formation worriedly.

Because of Chi Qu You’s design, this super Gu formation’s second layer could only be controlled by one person, others were useless. Thus, even if Fang Yuan intended to recall the Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals, they were unable to resist Fairy Zi Wei’s invasion.

Moreover, Fang Yuan’s identity was a problem.

If these Southern Border Gu Immortals learned about Fang Yuan’s true identity from Heavenly Court, regardless of whether they believed it or not, or whatever action they take, it meant there would be unknown danger for Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had naturally thought of the first layer of the Gu formation.

This super Gu formation had four layers, Fang Yuan was only controlling the second layer, there was still a first layer.

If Fairy Zi Wei succeeded, Fang Yuan would destroy the second layer of the Gu formation, in theory, he could activate the first layer and resist her.

But, according to Chi Gui’s information path Gu worm, the user of this first layer must be a Chi clan Gu Immortal.

This was Chi Qu You’s personal arrangement, from his perspective, he naturally placed his clan’s benefits first.

The first layer of the Gu formation had many ways to detect identities, Fang Yuan could disguise himself if it was bloodline.

But unfortunately for him.

One of the methods was about life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu.

Fang Yuan did not leave any life tablet Gu or soul lantern Gu in Chi clan.

Regarding this, Fang Yuan could only sigh, he cursed helplessly in his mind: “Chi Qu You, this old dog!”

A rank eight Gu Immortal, how could he be simple?

When Chi Qu You designed it, he naturally did not think of this complex situation. But now, it was Fang Yuan’s greatest restriction. It was like a dead end, Fang Yuan was getting closer and closer to it.

But Chi Qu You’s move was undoubtedly the best one he could have made.

It was a huge assurance to Chi clan.

Fang Yuan had to ensure that Chi clan’s Gu Immortals did not die out completely, especially Chi Gui, if anything dangerous happened, he needed to teleport him back using the super Gu formation.

With Chi Gui, there would be the first layer of the Gu formation.

As for what attitude Chi Gui would have and how he would treat Fang Yuan, it was a mystery.

Unless he was completely helpless, Fang Yuan would not make use of Chi Gui.

The situation was complex, three sides were fighting, Fang Yuan had a special status, even though he was in the Southern Border righteous path camp, it was not reliable.

There were too many variables now.

He was using wisdom path methods too.

Fang Yuan’s mind was full of churning thoughts, his brain was going to emit smoke at this rate!

How could he escape?

This was an unsolved problem.

“Spring Autumn Cicada?” A thought appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind before he denied the possibility.

He could not use Spring Autumn Cicada no matter what.

Heaven’s will was inside it, the risk of failure was nearly certain.

A few times, Fang Yuan was able to rebirth successfully because of the secret help of heaven’s will. But now, he was standing on the opposite side, heaven’s will wanted to eradicate him.

Using Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth in this situation was simply deluding himself!

The heaven’s will in Spring Autumn Cicada would directly kill him.

Using Spring Autumn Cicada was suicide!

Unless he used Shadow Sect’s method to reverse refine it. But now, how could Fang Yuan find time for that?

“Wait, no!”

“I can use time path methods to accelerate the time of my immortal aperture. This way, I can give up the super Gu formation and hide inside my immortal aperture, to refine Spring Autumn Cicada.”

“No, this won’t do, there are calamities and tribulations.”

“If I accelerate the immortal aperture’s time, calamities and tribulations will descend, heaven’s will would control them and make it much more difficult.”

“And my time path attainment level is too low, I have no guarantee in this, to successfully purify Spring Autumn Cicada under such restrictions.”

“And this method requires me to give up the super Gu formation, it is simply an idiotic way of crippling myself.”

This would not do.

Fate was too vicious, as if there was no way to survive.

But Fang Yuan did not give up.

He continued to persevere.

His determination did not waver, even though his pressure was intense, even though Fairy Zi Wei had not stopped her invasion of the super Gu formation.

Persevere!

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with vigor, he was not afraid, he was very calm in his mind.

This was not his first desperate situation, in fact, he had many such encounters.

In this world, cultivating and fighting for one’s life, no matter what choices one made, there were risks involved.

Once one started moving up, like climbing a mountain, how could there be gains and growth without any risks?

Even the powerful Old Ancestor Xue Hu, the number one battle strength in Northern Plains (publicly), had taken a risk, causing Snowy Mountain, hundreds of years of his hard work, to be destroyed. His plan of refining Fortune Rivalling Heaven completely failed, Reverse Flow River was taken away, and even his wife, Lady Wan Shou, was injured.

Or look at Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, Bi Chen Tian and Wei Ling Yang, these rank eight great experts, they were such high and mighty existences. But in the end, they died in another region, even their ruined corpses were lost, unable to return home.

And Sword Immortal Bo Qing, as well as Feng Jiu Ge, who died from attacking Lang Ya blessed land back in the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life...

Fang Yuan was not Ma Hong Yun, he was not the child of luck, compared to everyone above, he was extremely ordinary.

In fact, Ma Hong Yun died too, even with Fortune Rivalling Heaven’s protection.

Heaven and earth were impartial, treating all beings as pawns. No matter how talented one was, or how extraordinary the Gu Immortal was, in this world, they were just a life form, ordinary and simple, they were all treated equally.

His five hundred years of experience, compared to heaven and earth, what could it amount to?

His experience and deep schemes were just the result of having experienced the callous nature of this world, and having understood the ways of human minds.

Humans had limits, who had never made a mistake? Even rank nine venerables were no exception, even Ren Zu was deceived by wisdom Gu.

Conversely, heaven’s will was vast, it controlled the situation, the power of heaven and earth was limitless.

Defying heaven as a human, how hard was that!

Such feelings were not just in Fang Yuan’s heart.

Ying Wu Xie felt very similarly.

He was fighting.

His enemy was a rank seven righteous path Gu Immortal, at this moment, the rank six immortal zombie Ying Wu Xie had the disadvantage.

Even though he had incredible immortal killer moves, his opponent was so strong, Ying Wu Xie was just barely able to stay on par with him.

After an intense chaotic battle, Ying Wu Xie was left to fight alone, the situation was dangerous.

Soul beast summoning!

Ying Wu Xie unleashed his immortal killer move, three ancient soul beasts surrounded his body again.

But his enemy, a Xia clan rank seven Gu Immortal, laughed mockingly.

Not long ago, when he first faced the soul beast summoning killer move, he was flustered.

But now, after gaining experience, the Xia clan Gu Immortal found a way to counter the ancient soul beasts.

Using the dream realms.

Ancient soul beasts had low intelligence, with just some schemes, the Xia clan Gu Immortal was able to lure these soul beasts towards dream realms.

Once the soul entered the dream realm, they were meat on the chopping block.

Soul beasts were souls that became solid bodies.

Making full use of the battlefield was part of the qualities that made up a Gu Immortal’s battle strength.

Soon, the ancient soul beasts that Ying Wu Xie painstakingly summoned were dealt with by the Xia clan Gu Immortal.

Ying Wu Xie smiled bitterly on the inside, he could not get free, he had to rely on external help now.

But at this moment, his expression froze, he received Sixth Hair’s letter — Fang Yuan wanted to cooperate with Shadow Sect!

Ever since Purple Mountain True Monarch awakened and took over control, he had contacted Fang Yuan, asking to work together.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan had been wary of Shadow Sect’s information path methods, even though they had their respective needs, they did not make any progress in cooperation.

Ying Wu Xie did not expect that Fang Yuan would seek cooperation with Shadow Sect now.

“It’s too late!” The bitterness in Ying Wu Xie’s heart intensified.

Too late.

It was too late.

He did not know where Fang Yuan was, but Shadow Sect had already started the mission to save the main body!

Sixth Hair transmitted that Fang Yuan needed an information path Gu worm to communicate with Ying Wu Xie.

Fang Yuan could not interact with Shadow Sect directly, they needed Sixth Hair as the middleman.

This was because communication information path Gu came in pairs.

This way, clues to each others’ whereabouts were left behind. It was easy to deduce their locations from this.

“Give it to him.” Ying Wu Xie thought and did not reject it.

Next, Fang Yuan’s voice resounded in Ying Wu Xie’s mind: “You are in a sorry state, Ying Wu Xie, the Xia clan immortal is about to kill you. What about lead soul into dream? Aren’t you using it?”

Ying Wu Xie heard these words and his eyes widened, he was extremely shocked.

“Fang Yuan!” He transmitted: “You are here in this battlefield?”

“What do you think?” Fang Yuan chuckled: “Stop using soul beast summoning randomly, you have already used it three times, the effect is getting worse, you are only increasing the risk and wasting your immortal essence.”

Ying Wu Xie shook: “Fang Yuan, you are here indeed! Damn it, you actually made your way in, since when? Wait, is my opponent you?!”

“If that was me, you would be dead already. Enough idle chatter, let’s...” Fang Yuan paused: “Cooperate!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1363: Biggest Traitor in Southern Border’s Righteous Path

“Cooperation?”

Hearing Fang Yuan’s suggestion, a complex expression appeared on Ying Wu Xie’s face uncontrollably.

Fang Yuan’s and Shadow Sect’s relationship was very intertwined and complex.

As a half otherworldly demon, Fang Yuan was once heaven’s will’s tool, sent back to destroy Shadow Sect’s plan in a last ditch attempt.

Fang Yuan, who successfully obtained the sovereign immortal aperture, was enemies with Shadow Sect, they were at a complete conflict.

During the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Shadow Sect lost entirely, they wanted to tear Fang Yuan to pieces.

But Fang Yuan made good use of his time, and the advantage of the sovereign immortal body to get stronger, he started to hunt Ying Wu Xie and gang.

If Ying Wu Xie and the others did not have a good grasp of time or excellent methods to escape, they would have died at Fang Yuan’s hands already.

After the battle of Reverse Flow River, Fang Yuan was already able to match rank eight Gu Immortals.

Shadow Sect was now led by Purple Mountain True Monarch, they changed their tactics, seeking cooperation with Fang Yuan. This was a crucial turning point in their relationship.

Precisely because of this, at this moment, when Fang Yuan initiated the cooperation, Ying Wu Xie nodded, replying: “Then let’s work together.”

Ying Wu Xie was not against working together.

Or rather, he was once against and hated the idea when Purple Mountain True Monarch mentioned it, he did not understand why.

But people change.

If this was during the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Ying Wu Xie was new to life, he knew nothing, he would not consider working with his enemy.

When Shadow Sect was strong, Fang Yuan was weak as an ant, Ying Wu Xie would never work with Fang Yuan.

After losing in Yi Tian Mountain, Ying Wu Xie hated Fang Yuan, there was no way for them to cooperate. Ying Wu Xie only wanted to regain Shadow Sect’s former glory.

But as Fang Yuan grew stronger and went after Ying Wu Xie multiple times, Ying Wu Xie started to feel deep wariness in his heart. Recently, when Fang Yuan chased them to Northern Plains, other than wariness, Ying Wu Xie also felt fear towards Fang Yuan.

After the battle of Reverse Flow River, Ying Wu Xie developed a new emotion towards Fang Yuan.

That was — admiration.

Fang Yuan did what Ying Wu Xie was unable to do, he was truly worthy of being chosen by heaven’s will to return to the past and disrupt Shadow Sect’s plans.

“It is not that I am not strong, but that my enemy is Fang Yuan!” Ying Wu Xie had such a thought and realized that his losses were not that unacceptable.

“How are we going to cooperate? I can’t hang on anymore.” Ying Wu Xie said directly.

Fang Yuan frowned, Ying Wu Xie had a very direct attitude, Fang Yuan was slightly surprised.

“Of course I will help you people first, Heavenly Court is too strong, there is only hope if we work together.” Fang Yuan sighed, transmitting to the Xia clan Gu Immortal who was fighting Ying Wu Xie.

“Retreat? Why must I retreat? I already know about my enemy’s weaknesses, I can win this.” The Xia clan Gu Immortal was very confused.

“A Yao clan Gu Immortal is in great danger, you need to help him. Quickly go, I am overseeing the entire battlefield, how can you understand the big picture like me?” Fang Yuan said without politeness.

The Xia clan Gu Immortal was very unhappy, but because of Wu Yi Hai’s status, and the fact that he was in control of the super Gu formation, he snorted in his mind before leaving.

“How are you going to help me? Quickly do something!” Ying Wu Xie urged, but suddenly, his eyes widened as he looked at his opponent in shock, he retreated while having a discontent gaze at Ying Wu Xie, rapidly flying away.

“Stop making a fuss, I already helped you.” Fang Yuan said at an appropriate timing.

Ying Wu Xie heart shook, asking: “Didn’t you say that was not you?! Is he one of your subordinates?”

“Enough pointless chatter, tell me, what is Shadow Sect’s plan? Don’t tell me you have no backup plans.” Fang Yuan immediately asked.

Ying Wu Xie smiled bitterly, replying: “Of course we do, our backup is me.”

Rumble!

An intense explosion occurred, from the raging air currents, Purple Mountain True Monarch flew out of the endless profound lights as he charged down.

“Why are you escaping? Fight me!” Behind him, Duke Long chased.

His long hair was fluttering, his muscular body had changed, not only were his dragon horns sharper and longer now, his hands had turned into dragon claws, his dragon tail was waving behind him, his skin was covered with a layer of dragon scales.

Purple Mountain True Monarch looked pathetic, but his gaze was clear like water.

“Duke Long, history states that he cultivated qi path primarily, but because of his lacking lifespan, he also cultivated transformation path.” Purple Mountain True Monarch analyzed in his mind.

“Just his transformation path methods are already so powerful, as expected of someone on par with Bo Qing.”

“Let him try this move.”

Thinking of this, Purple Mountain True Monarch’s body shook, he turned around agilely, flying upwards.

At the same time, his ten fingers fluttered like he was playing a zither.

Swish swish swish...

And endless stream of purple starlight specks shot out of his fingers, piercing through space and attacking Duke Long.

These starlight specks were extremely dazzling, not only were they fast, they flew in the air with a trail of light behind them, it was extremely beautiful.

Duke Long grunted, he felt that these purple starlight specks were not simple.

He quickly used his attacking methods against them.

But these purple starlight specks were very agile, they quickly dodged Duke Long’s attacks as they aimed directly at him.

Duke Long saw this and praised in his mind: “As expected of a wisdom path cultivator, his immortal killer moves are agile and nimble, especially this move, it is extremely refined. I cannot compare to him in this aspect.”

Wisdom path Gu Immortals had endless thoughts, they were most skilled in controlling immortal killer moves, and creating attacks of varying styles.

“Why must I get bogged down? It is wiser to make use of my advantages.” Duke Long ignored these purple starlight specks, using his powerful defense to take on the starlight specks and charging ahead fearlessly.

Seeing this, mysterious light shined in Purple Mountain True Monarch’s eyes.

“He finally fell into my trap.”

It turned out that his move had a hidden effect. Upon contact with any immortal killer move, it would transmit some fragmented information to Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Countless fragmented pieces of information would combine and expose the secrets of the immortal killer move.

With enough information, Purple Mountain True Monarch would be able to target Duke Long’s defensive method and retaliate against it.

Duke Long’s offensive approach after confirming the power of the purple starlight specks suited Purple Mountain True Monarch’s tactic.

Purple Mountain True Monarch had always been feeling troubled by Duke Long’s defense. After getting enough information, Purple Mountain True Monarch used a new immortal killer move.

He pushed with both palms as large amounts of cloud mist appeared, blocking Duke Long from advancing.

Duke Long’s dragon eyes flickered with sharp light, after looking at it, he instantly saw the power of this immortal killer move.

He laughed heartily as he charged into the purple mist.

Instantly, he lost his sense of direction entirely.

Duke Long immediately stopped, staying motionless as he opened his mouth, emitting a loud dragon roar.

The dragon roar reverberated in the entire area, the purple mist became thinner until it faded away.

Duke Long saw Purple Mountain True Monarch again, he was still retreating, attempting to pull away from Duke Long.

Duke Long laughed, his figure vanished and appeared before Purple Mountain True Monarch instantly!

“Eat my fist.” Duke Long shouted loudly, striking with his right fist directly.

This was not an immortal killer move.

In such a short time, Duke Long had to maintain his concentration on his various defensive killer moves, he did not activate any other immortal killer moves.

But with his physical toughness, his normal fist had incredible offensive power.

Bam.

Purple Mountain True Monarch could not dodge in time, he was directly hit by Duke Long’s fist.

But his chest that was punched flickered with profound light, his body was basically unharmed.

Purple Mountain True Monarch had incredible defensive methods too.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was uninjured from Duke Long’s punch, he even used the force of the fist to accelerate his retreat backwards.

But at the next moment, Duke Long appeared beside Purple Mountain True Monarch again, punching.

Bam.

The same scene appeared again, but Duke Long chased relentlessly, no matter where Purple Mountain True Monarch flew to, he could instantly teleport over and punch with his fists.

Duke Long’s punches rained down endlessly, countless fist shadows enshrouded Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was like a rubber ball, thrown around by Duke Long constantly, he was taking a beating without being able to retaliate.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was flickering with profound light, defending against Duke Long’s fists.

Soon, Duke Long’s punches were no longer so simple.

Chaotic dragon fist!

An immortal killer move was activated.

But the effect was low.

Duke Long thought: “My chaotic dragon fist will cause the thoughts in my enemy’s mind to become chaotic if it hits. With a flurry of punches, my opponents will not be able to think, they will only take hits passively. But this effect does not appear on him at all.”

At Duke Long’s level, he can already achieve the traits of other paths. Duke Long’s transformation path killer move had wisdom path effects.

But when it was used on a wisdom path Gu Immortal, Purple Mountain True Monarch, it was simply child’s play.

Duke Long could punch his other enemies with death with chaotic dragon fist, but against Purple Mountain True Monarch, he only had the upper hand.

While Duke Long was probing Purple Mountain True Monarch’s wisdom path attainment, Purple Mountain True Monarch was also analyzing Duke Long.

Even though he was taking hits, he was calm in his mind, with no hint of panic.

Wisdom path had three aspects, thoughts, wills, and emotions. Purple Mountain True Monarch had methods to eliminate his negative emotions in battle.

“Duke Long’s movement is evidently an immortal killer move, allowing him to teleport continuously.”

“Inside his dragon eyes, there is another immortal killer move with powerful investigative effects.”

“With my initial deduction, his teleportation does not depend on where he looks. Don’t tell me...”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1364: Duke Long Enters Dream

At the next moment, Purple Mountain True Monarch snapped his fingers.

An immortal killer move was used, purple halo spread to the range of thousands of steps.

Duke Long’s figure came to a stop, he could no longer use teleportation to get close to Purple Mountain True Monarch.

“He saw through it, that reaction speed is really fast... wisdom path Gu Immortals are as troublesome as always.” Duke Long stopped his attacks, sighing.

His movement killer move was used with the dragon roar earlier.

Wherever the dragon roar reached, he could teleport over using the killer move.

But there was a time limit.

Purple Mountain True Monarch saw through this and used his wisdom path methods to mimic the effect of sound path, cleansing his surroundings.

Duke Long’s movement method could no longer be used, it was ineffective.

“In that case, try this move.” Duke Long opened his mouth in the air.

Two teeth fell out, they grew larger with the moving wind.

In an instant, his two teeth became snow-white dragon fangs that resembled curved blades.

Duke Long breathed in deeply and after a few breaths of time, used his immortal killer move — Spiraling dragon fang!

Two snow-white dragon fangs shot out rapidly, the speed far surpassed Purple Mountain True Monarch, rapidly approaching him.

The two curved dragon fang blades spiraled around Purple Mountain True Monarch, each time they hit, there was a dazzling sharp light on Purple Mountain True

Monarch’s body.

“Trying to use this method to restrain me?”

“Dragon fangs... they are solid, this is different from normal killer moves.”

Purple Mountain True Monarch felt his pressure intensifying.

The power of the dragon fangs was no small matter, Purple Mountain True Monarch quickly realized that he had to deal with this immortal killer move!

...

“Lord Purple has already used his personal methods, but he is still suppressed by Duke Long.” Ying Wu Xie flew as he observed Purple Mountain True Monarch’s and Duke Long’s battle.

He had a good angle of the battle, in this complex battlefield, he could actually watch the battle of two rank eight Gu Immortals.

At the moment, the two were still probing.

Evidently, Duke Long was stronger than Purple Mountain True Monarch.

In terms of battle strength, Duke Long was on par with Bo Qing, Purple Mountain True Monarch was naturally weaker. Even though the latter actually had peak rank eight battle strength!

“Lord Purple’s strength will continue to weaken, because he is constantly using the immortal killer move to create more defective Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies and clear the dream realm. During this process, he would need to split his own soul, it is extremely painful!”

Ying Wu Xie watched with worry.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was not Duke Long’s match to begin with, but he still had to create Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies now. By the time Purple Mountain True Monarch’s methods were fully understood by Duke Long, he would lose.

“Quick, quick, quick!” Ying Wu Xie urged himself.

He would not tell this to Fang Yuan of course.

Even though they were working together, they did not set any information path agreements, Ying Wu Xie did not trust Fang Yuan fully.

But if they wanted to set an agreement, the situation did not allow them to, and even if they could, Fang Yuan would not do it.

Both sides wanted to cooperate, but they did not trust each other. But because of the enemy, Heavenly Court, they had to work together!

“Found it, towards your southeast, there is a cocoon of light about to form, get there quickly.” At this time, Fang Yuan transmitted.

Ying Wu Xie looked in that direction and felt hesitant.

If he followed Fang Yuan’s instructions, he had to get deep into the territory of Southern Border’s righteous path. There were many Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals there.

Was Fang Yuan reliable? Was this a trap?

Ying Wu Xie could not help but hesitate.

“If I wanted to harm you, you would have died earlier.” Fang Yuan transmitted, as if he knew what Ying Wu Xie was thinking.

Ying Wu Xie had to admit that Fang Yuan was right, but he thought: “Maybe Fang Yuan doesn’t want me dead, and wants to capture me alive? If he wants to capture me, he would need to make arrangements, is there a Gu formation or a battlefield killer move there?”

But this time, Ying Wu Xie shook his head, no longer hesitating.

He wanted to gamble.

At this moment, he had to gamble!

Following Fang Yuan’s instructions, he flew.

Soon, he saw a Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortal.

“Damn it!” Ying Wu Xie’s heart jumped.

The Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortal also found him.

But when he was about to pounce on Ying Wu Xie, his face changed, after hesitating, he flew away with a complex expression.

“Why did that happen?!” Ying Wu Xie was shocked.

This was the second time.

Was he also Fang Yuan’s subordinate?

If so, why did he had that expression, he strangely looked unwilling and slightly angry?

Ying Wu Xie was getting more confused.

He continued to move forward and met with the third person, and then a fourth. The two Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals he met also left him alone.

This was naturally Fang Yuan’s manipulation.

Using the excuse of the big picture, he sent all those Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals away with simple reasons.

For example, ‘that place needs you more’, ‘an ally is in danger, if you do not go, they will die’, and ‘ignore that rank six immortal zombie, I have sent others to deal with him ahead’...

All sorts of reasons allowed Ying Wu Xie to move unhindered.

Nobody would expect Wu Yi Hai to work with Shadow Sect.

Among the righteous path Gu Immortals in Southern Border, who would think of that?

At this time, Heavenly Court had not yet exposed Fang Yuan’s true identity.

With Fang Yuan’s help, Ying Wu Xie got closer to his destination.

“Hmm? There is actually a cocoon of light here?” Rank seven expert Yi Hei Ting had a sudden discovery.

His body flickered with lightning, bringing his body towards the cocoon.

“Stop it!” Ying Wu Xie who had just arrived suddenly shouted out loud.

Yi Hei Ting felt strange: “Who is this? He actually made it here!”

Ying Wu Xie’s yell did not disrupt him, he was already very close to the light cocoon, he was about to succeed.

But at the next moment, Yi Hei Ting’s vision changed.

He was forcefully teleported by the super Gu formation.

“Lord Wu Yi Hai! I was about to...” Yi Hei Ting realized this and suddenly bellowed.

He was truly a hindrance rather than help! He was clearly about to succeed!

“I know, but another place needs you more. Don’t worry, I have already noticed the enemy by the cocoon, I will deal with it.” Fang Yuan interrupted Yi Hei Ting’s words.

Yi Hei Ting wanted to say more, but his vision changed, he was teleported out again to another place.

“This Wu Yi Hai, he thinks he can use me as a pawn because he controls the Gu formation? Hmph!” Yi Hei Ting was extremely unhappy, but he did not suspect Fang Yuan’s true intentions.

Fang Yuan did not randomly teleport him, because around him, there was a Southern Border Gu Immortal about to die from Fairy Miao Yin.

Yi Hei Ting quickly entered the battle, forgetting about the displeasure towards Fang Yuan.

Ying Wu Xie felt like he was in a dream!

Seeing that Yi Hei Ting was about to succeed, he almost despaired.

But at the next moment, he went from hell to heaven, this change was too sudden, he was overjoyed.

Ying Wu Xie was a little dazed.

But when he came to his senses, he contacted Fang Yuan with his information path Gu worm, crying out: “You, you actually control the entire super Gu formation! What is your current identity?”

Fang Yuan knew this could not be concealed, he exposed it: “Who else? I am currently Wu Yi Hai.”

Ying Wu Xie heard this, his eyes almost popped out.

This answer was too stunning, since when and what methods did Fang Yuan use to get to this position?

After accepting this fact, Ying Wu Xie understood everything.

No wonder those Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals gave way to him, Ying Wu Xie thought that their expressions were rather funny now.

But soon, he felt some worry.

“Fang Yuan has unravel dream, staying here for so long without any detection, he definitely has a huge scheme! He definitely made great gains!”

“So close. If not for Lord Purple’s plan to catch the righteous path off guard, Fang Yuan might have been able to continue staying here for a long time, it would be a huge problem for Shadow Sect.”

Ying Wu Xie’s emotions were changing, from shock to realization and to worry, he finally reached the cocoon of light.

“This aura! A rank seven cocoon.” Ying Wu Xie was excited.

“How can I choose wrongly? What are you waiting for?” Fang Yuan laughed.

Ying Wu Xie nodded, using his immortal killer move.

This killer move took effect rapidly, in an instant, the cocoon that had not formed yet stabilized completely and took shape.

Ying Wu Xie’s soul and Gu worms entered the cocoon of light.

Meanwhile, his rank six immortal zombie body was abandoned.

The cocoon of light broke apart as a rank seven Ying Wu Xie appeared!

“Don’t resist, I will send you off.” Fang Yuan’s voice entered Ying Wu Xie’s mind again.

At the next moment, Ying Wu Xie was teleported away, watching Duke Long and Purple Mountain True Monarch’s battle again.

Without hesitation, Ying Wu Xie used his trump card.

Immortal killer move — Lead Soul Into Dream!

“Urgh!” Duke Long’s expression changed, in an instant, he was dragged into a dream.

At the next moment, he lost contact with the outside world.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was stunned: “What is going on? A scheme?”

But next, he received Ying Wu Xie’s transmission: “I am here, Lord Purple, I am a rank seven dream path Gu Immortal now!”

“Good.” Purple Mountain True Monarch was overjoyed, this trump card was finally activated.

“After some hurdles, I obtained this immortal body due to Fang Yuan’s help. He is currently acting as Wu Yi Hai, he is controlling the super Gu formation of Southern Border’s righteous path, he wants to cooperate with you.”

“Oh?!” Purple Mountain True Monarch’s eyes shined brightly: “Excellent, send my information path Gu worm to him, we need to talk.”

With Fang Yuan and Shadow Sect starting their cooperation, the situation finally appeared to be turning around!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1365: Star Constellation Heaven’s Will Appears

Duke Long entered a dream!

Ying Wu Xie had a rank seven immortal body, he burst out with great strength, changing the battle situation between two rank eight Gu Immortals.

Duke Long fell into a dream realm and could not escape.

Purple Mountain True Monarch used this great chance to retaliate.

Rumble...

Explosions continued unceasingly, but countless dragon shadows appeared on Duke Long’s body, there were also countless dragon-shaped tattoos moving around his skin.

“Such an amazing defensive killer move...” Purple Mountain True Monarch could not do anything to Duke Long for the time being.

Similar to Purple Mountain True Monarch, Duke Long had a lot of defensive methods, among them were incredibly useful killer moves. These killer moves were like the wood armor that Bi Chen Tian was so proud of.

This type of killer move turned into dao marks and became engraved on the Gu Immortal’s body. They were normally dormant, but when attacked, they would activate themselves and would not need any thoughts for manipulation, only using immortal essence.

This was somewhat like Fang Yuan’s ghostly concealment.

Ghostly concealment was a top-tier killer move created by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable. But this move was much more refined than Bi Chen Tian’s wood armor, or Duke Long’s and Purple Mountain True Monarch’s defensive methods.

Because ghostly concealment not only melded with oneself and had an active effect all the time, most importantly, it did not cost any of the Gu Immortal’s immortal essence.

A killer move that was active permanently without using any immortal essence.

This was a supreme method of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable! From the perspective of Central Continent’s ten great sects and Fang Yuan, it was unthinkable, they had no way of understanding such a mystical method.

Swish swish!

Two white lights were spiraling and landing on Purple Mountain True Monarch’s body.

It was the spiraling dragon fang killer move that Duke Long had used earlier.

After the two flashes of light burst out, the two dragon fangs met with no success, but they still circled around Purple Mountain True Monarch, ready for an opportunity.

“This killer move also needs no manipulation from the Gu Immortal? Troublesome.” Purple Mountain True Monarch frowned slightly.

“But thankfully, I have been keeping purple thought perception starlight activated!” Purple Mountain True Monarch let out a loud shout as countless starlight specks emerged from the pores of his body.

Starlight specks flew around Duke Long, they gathered, shooting at Duke Long’s layers of defense and being broken continuously.

But soon, all sorts of information was transmitted into Purple Mountain True Monarch’s mind.

“Quickly kill him!” Ying Wu Xie observed the battle from afar, calling out in his mind.

In the super Gu formation, Fang Yuan was also watching Purple Mountain True Monarch’s battle closely.

“Truly unrepentant!”

“Fallen demon, you are beyond saving!”

Fairy Zi Wei’s voice could be heard from the super Gu formation again. Fang Yuan had helped Ying Wu Xie and indirectly caused Duke Long to enter his dream, Fairy Zi Wei saw all of these.

“However, if you think Lord Duke Long will fail because of this, you are completely wrong.”

Saying this, Fairy Zi Wei actually laughed: “I need to thank you, the many times you used the super Gu formation allowed me to see many of the operations of the super Gu formation, haven’t you noticed that you are gradually losing control of this super Gu formation?”

“Your invasion speed is getting faster, but there is no need to try and bluff me.” Fang Yuan sneered.

Fairy Zi Wei was dazed: “Hmm?”

“Even though you people came here imposingly, your true battle strength is only at this level.” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly.

“The truth is, as long as another rank eight Gu Immortal like you shows up, you would be able to sweep the battlefield. Unfortunately, Heaven Overseeing Tower did not send anyone else.”

“Instead, you had to come here secretly to invade the super Gu formation, and Duke Long had to go battle personally.”

“Even though you know my true identity, you have not exposed me, my identity is still a secret.”

“Other than having no evidence, your intention is to use the strength of Southern Border’s righteous path to deal with Shadow Sect, right?”

“And also, there is another reason, even if you expose my identity and convince Southern Border’s righteous path, this super Gu formation will still be in my control. This crucial point will not change because of my identity.”

"You came to the super Gu formation in order to get this huge bargaining chip too."

"All these show that your Heavenly Court is putting up a false front, your rank eight battle strength is lacking."

Fairy Zi Wei went silent.

She recalled the scene a few days ago.

Back then, she was researching Star Constellation Chessboard.

This Immortal Gu House had always been in Heavenly Court's treasury, after Duke Long woke up, he had the authority to take it out and let Fairy Zi Wei use it.

After interacting with and using it, Fairy Zi Wei felt the supreme brilliance of this Immortal Gu House.

"This Immortal Gu House was indeed the wisdom path Immortal Gu House created by Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, it could actually allow my deduction ability to rise by many times."

Thinking of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, Fairy Zi Wei had a look of admiration.

Her wisdom path deduction ability was originally amazing. Now that it grew by several times, Fairy Zi Wei felt as if this was an illusion of her being the number one wisdom path immortal in the current world.

"It is a pity that even though my deductions are more powerful now, I still need crucial information. The clues are too few, it is hard to make deductions." Fairy Zi Wei had a dim gaze.

She thought about earlier, when Central Continent's Gu Immortals were pursued by Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Longevity Heaven, they managed to conceal the clues and prevent Fairy Zi Wei from deducing the location of where the Central Continent Gu Immortals were trapped. The reinforcements thus had no place to go and could not be sent.

She also thought about Fang Yuan, all along, Heavenly Court had been trying to kill this person.

But they lacked the clues to him.

When deducing, because Fang Yuan had preventive measures, he could always hold out and get informed of the deductions.

Thus, Fang Yuan's whereabouts were not in Heavenly Court's grasp.

Fairy Zi Wei sighed eerily.

But right at this moment, the Star Constellation Chessboard in her hands started to absorb her immortal essence and activated on its own.

A lump of heaven's will gushed out of Star Constellation Chessboard, floating in the air and turning into Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's appearance.

Seeing this, Fairy Zi Wei was extremely shocked.

Star Constellation Chessboard was the possession of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, but she had died long ago. Fairy Zi Wei was able to control this Immortal Gu House now, she was merely borrowing it.

“Zi Wei, this is Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, why are you not paying respects?” Duke Long arrived and stood behind Fairy Zi Wei.

“But this is heaven’s will.” Fairy Zi Wei was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, she could naturally tell what this will was.

“Of course this is heaven’s will. You are too young, you do not know this secret. Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had assimilated with heaven’s will long ago. Even though her body is gone, her will resides in the world of the five regions, she is one with heaven and earth!” Duke Long exposed some truly terrifying secrets.

Fairy Zi Wei was in a daze, feeling unparalleled shock.

“This means Star Constellation Immortal Venerable achieved eternal life? If heaven’s will is Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, then wouldn’t the entire world be on Heavenly Court’s side?”

But Duke Long shook his head: “You should say, Heavenly Court is on the side of heaven’s will. After assimilating with heaven’s will, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable is no longer herself. This was a major and selfless sacrifice! Back then, for the sake of humanity, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sacrificed herself to modify heaven’s will. Since then, heaven’s will gained the form of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, but it is still heaven’s will in essence.”

Fairy Zi Wei’s gaze flickered, she was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, she immediately understood.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had sacrificed herself for the entire human race, she assimilated with heaven’s will.

The core of heaven’s will did not change, but some things were modified by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. For example, the form that it took, and maybe... a hint of human-like concern towards Heavenly Court?”

This was perhaps the reason why Heavenly Court followed and executed the will of heaven, and after countless eons, it was still standing strong!

“The great era is coming, the five regions will become one, destiny has already reached a crucial point.” Star Constellation heaven’s will spoke while stretching out her right hand.

On her right hand, a lump of heaven’s will flew out and floated in the air, turning into the form of Southern Border’s super Gu formation.

“Here.”

“A crucial battle is about to unfold, the result of this battle will affect the entire world.”

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable is extremely weak, all of Shadow Sect will be gathered here, Fang Yuan is disguised as Wu Yi Hai, mixing in with Southern Border’s righteous path.”

“These are a bunch of fate defying people, the source of all chaos and turmoil. Eliminating them will help towards the repairing of fate Immortal Gu.”

“However, Heavenly Court will only allow the two of you to fight this time.”

Star Constellation heaven’s will said plainly.

“Why?” Fairy Zi Wei did not understand.

Heavenly Court had very deep foundations, earlier in the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, they had found out too late, and the awakened Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortals were not enough to turn the situation around.

But now that they had the reminder of Star Constellation heaven’s will, time was ample, Heavenly Court had lots of time to prepare. Heavenly Court could totally gather its power and crush the enemies.

But Star Constellation heaven’s will told Fairy Zi Wei and Duke Long that only the two of them could go.

“This is something fated to happen.”

“After the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, the uncertainties of luck have greatly decreased. Now that fate Immortal Gu is recovering, fate is regaining control of the world.”

“You will undoubtedly win this time.”

“Do not bother the hibernating Gu Immortals in Heavenly Court, they serve a greater purpose. Heavenly Court’s foundation cannot be weakened further, otherwise, the consequences will be severe.”

“Bring Heaven Overseeing Tower and Star Constellation Chessboard, the Gu Immortals of Central Continent’s ten great sects should not be mobilized unnecessarily. Keep in mind to preserve their lives, in the next ten years, Heaven Overseeing Tower will need even more rank eight Gu Immortals to hibernate. Remember, remember this.”

...

Star Constellation heaven’s will gave them many instructions.

Fairy Zi Wei obtained a lot of information, but she became much more confused now.

She found out that even though she was a member of Heavenly Court, she, in fact, knew too little about it.

Such a huge organization had deep foundations, but it could not use them recklessly like she had imagined before.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were hibernating, other than to extend their lifespan, there seemed to be an even greater purpose.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1366: Duke Long Awakens

Heavenly Court had its concerns, but what these concerns were, Star Constellation heaven’s will did not state clearly.

After saying everything, Star Constellation heaven’s will vanished into thin air.

“Oh Zi Wei, don’t look at me. Even though I have lived longer, I do not know as many secrets as you think I do. I’ll tell you the truth, this is only the second time I’ve seen Star Constellation heaven’s will appear on its own.” Duke Long sighed deeply.

After pausing for a while, he continued: “We need to believe in Star Constellation heaven’s will and do as she says. We will definitely win this time, this is our fate!”

Duke Long’s unwavering determination rubbed off on Fairy Zi Wei.

In Heavenly Court’s actions later, it went according to Star Constellation heaven’s will’s instructions, Duke Long and the rest did not defy her.

While Heaven Overseeing Tower moved in white heaven, it was obstructed by Purple Mountain True Monarch’s methods. It was carrying Duke Long, Fairy Zi Wei, and other Gu Immortals of the ten great ancient sects, joining in this crucial battle.

Fang Yuan’s analysis was correct.

Even though he did not understand why Heavenly Court refused to send more Gu Immortals, this did not stop him from seeing through this detail.

Precisely so, Fang Yuan made the decision to use the super Gu formation to help Ying Wu Xie and affect the battle between Duke Long and Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Using treasure yellow heaven, Fang Yuan successfully obtained an information path Gu worm from Ying Wu Xie.

This information path Gu worm allowed him to talk directly to Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Fang Yuan helped Ying Wu Xie so as to gain Shadow Sect’s initial trust, otherwise, how could he get this Gu worm?

This Gu worm and Purple Mountain True Monarch had a close relationship, with it, he would have a crucial clue and would be able to deduce matters on Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Thus, these Gu worms were usually kept very closely to oneself.

Only in this situation would Purple Mountain True Monarch give this information path Gu worm to Fang Yuan.

During normal times, they would definitely need to set an information path alliance agreement.

After getting the information path Gu worm, Purple Mountain True Monarch contacted Fang Yuan and said: “Fang Yuan, I need to thank you. Purple Mountain True Monarch is a great title, thanks for bestowing it, I like it.”

Fang Yuan did not expect that the lie he used to deceive Tai Bai Yun Sheng would become reality one day.

Purple Mountain True Monarch had well honed interpersonal skills, once he said that, the relationship between him and Fang Yuan became much closer.

Fang Yuan laughed: “Then I’ll call you Purple Mountain True Monarch. You have already felt my sincerity, we are working together, I am not the only one putting in effort. Now, it is time for your side of the deal.”

Purple Mountain True Monarch attacked Duke Long fiercely while answering: “Okay, what do you want?”

He knew what strength Fang Yuan had, but in this crucial moment, he did not hesitate at all.

Fang Yuan answered: “Heavenly crystals! I want a large amount of heavenly crystals!”

Heavenly crystals were too hard to obtain. Even though they were sold in treasure yellow heaven, they were rare and in small quantities, Fang Yuan’s needs were not satisfied.

But Shadow Sect had them.

Fang Yuan did not doubt that.

Even though Shadow Sect was greatly damaged and lost a lot, it did not lack resources. Fang Yuan could see this during his pursuit of Ying Wu Xie and gang.

As expected, Purple Mountain True Monarch answered: “Okay, I have a lot of heavenly crystals, they can be given to you to express my sincerity.”

“You want heavenly crystals to nurture the upper extreme heavenly eagle?”

“This is a sound idea, reverse flow protection seal cannot be used recklessly. But even if you turn the upper extreme heavenly eagle into a true immemorial desolate beast, you might not be able to control it, I know about your enslavement path method.”

“But don’t worry, I have a method for you to control the upper extreme heavenly eagle.”

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s words made Fang Yuan overjoyed and also incredibly amazed.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was very generous, he gave up the heavenly crystals to gain Fang Yuan’s support without hesitation.

He was already in a passive state, thus, when he said his later words, the method to control upper extreme heavenly eagle, he lured Fang Yuan. This was turning his position from passive to active.

As expected of a rank eight wisdom path Gu Immortal, his words were filled with wisdom, Fang Yuan felt the aura of an intense opponent.

Fang Yuan was silent before saying: “Adding in another method to control the upper extreme heavenly eagle is fine. But now, I have something more important to do!”

He said that as if he had some way to control the upper extreme heavenly eagle himself.

This way, Purple Mountain True Monarch’s bargaining chip was not as significant.

Purple Mountain True Monarch smiled: “What is more important?”

“That is, both of us need to enter a ceasefire now!” Fang Yuan said.

Shadow Sect would benefit from this matter, it was good for Fang Yuan too, only

Heavenly Court would not stand to gain from it.

Immediately, Purple Mountain True Monarch gave his orders, recalling the Gu Immortals of Shadow Sect.

Fang Yuan also sent orders, even though the Southern Border Gu Immortals did not understand it, due to Wu Yi Hai’s identity and his control of the Gu formation, they listened to him.

Both sides began to separate.

Shadow Sect had many losses, only Ying Wu Xie, Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, Fairy Miao Yin and so on were left.

Over at Southern Border, even though there were losses, they were not significant, their numbers were not lacking.

However, Shadow Sect’s Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were still breaking out of the cocoons, the numbers were increasing as the dream realm continued to weaken and vanish.

This situation was the worst for Heavenly Court.

“The difference in strength between both sides is shrinking, now, what will Heavenly Court do?” Fang Yuan was vigilant against Heavenly Court’s actions.

Duke Long was still sleeping, while Fairy Zi Wei was increasing her speed of taking over the super Gu formation.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was still entangled with Zuo Ye Hui.

Boom!

Zuo Ye Hui raised its left claw and jumped up, slamming Heaven Overseeing Tower to the ground.

Heaven Overseeing Tower flickered with white light, being undamaged.

Zuo Ye Hui opened its mouth and let out grey night.

Heaven Overseeing Tower used fate vanquish again.

The two killer moves faced off, grey night vanished in the white light as Zuo Ye Hui was pushed away with broken bones and tendons.

But almost instantly, it used an immortal killer move and its injuries vanished.

Regaining its peak condition, Zuo Ye Hui growled again and attacked Heaven Overseeing Tower with fury and hatred.

There was a sigh in Heaven Overseeing Tower, before it flew into the sky.

Zuo Ye Hui had its flying killer move too, it flew into the sky and chased after Heaven Overseeing Tower.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals in the tower had nervous and anxious expressions.

“Damn it! This immemorial desolate beast is too sturdy, it is able to use killer moves, Heaven Overseeing Tower cannot deal with it in a short time.”

“What do we do? Lord Duke Long was targeted and fell into a dream realm, being attacked by the rank eight demon.”

“We need to go! We need to send reinforcements to Lord Duke Long, if this goes on, it will not be good.”

“But Lord Duke Long instructed before leaving that we need to stay inside Heaven Overseeing Tower, we cannot move rashly.”

“Times are different now.”

“There are rank eight Gu Immortals among us, now that Lord Duke Long is in danger, he has lost control of the battle. If we do not help him, Lord Duke Long will be in danger.”

After a short discussion, Heaven Overseeing Tower attacked, temporarily pushing Zuo Ye Hui back and creating a chance.

Two Central Continent Gu Immortals took the chance to fly out of Heaven Overseeing Tower and move towards Duke Long.

“Hahaha, two rats came out!” Zuo Ye Hui laughed, a sinister light shining in its bestial eyes.

It opened its bloodthirsty mouth.

The two Central Continent Gu Immortals’ bodies shook, as if they had encountered a predator, they felt an incredible danger and could not control themselves.

Crack!

Zuo Ye Hui shut its mouth, even though it was far from these two Central Continent Gu Immortals, when its teeth connected, it was as if it had bitten these two Central Continent Gu Immortals.

Blood flowed out of its mouth.

At the same time, the two Central Continent Gu Immortals were spurting out blood, they were covered in terrifying wounds, their organs were punctured, their entire bodies looked completely deformed.

“This is a food path killer move! It is hard to defend against.”

“Zuo Ye Hui has human intelligence, it knows how to use the tactic of targeting an enemy’s weakness.”

“Quick, bring the two back.”

Heaven Overseeing Tower quickly tried to save them, and because the two Central Continent rank eights had methods to help themselves, they narrowly escaped death and were not eaten by Zuo Ye Hui.

After escaping that danger, the Central Continent Gu Immortals realized the terrifying power of Zuo Ye Hui!

“Indeed worthy of a legendary immemorial desolate beast, the beast that Reckless Savage left behind!”

“But this way, how can we save Lord Duke Long?”

“Bring Heaven Overseeing Tower in.”

“It is too dangerous. If we are sent into a dream realm, we will lose Heaven

Overseeing Tower, can any of us bear that responsibility?”

While Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were discussing, Duke Long was in the greatest danger he had ever been in.

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s methods were finally working, he broke through Duke Long’s defenses.

“Break!” Purple Mountain True Monarch flew to Duke Long and spat out some purple gas.

This mystical breath landed on Duke Long and dissolved all of his defenses.

Immortal killer move — Brilliant Will Dissolution!

“Die!” Purple Mountain True Monarch’s eyes shined with bright purple light, he used his killer move on Duke Long.

But at this moment, Duke Long opened his eyes.

Boom!

There was a thunderous explosion.

Purple Mountain True Monarch flew out from the dust and smoke as Duke Long stood on the spot.

He had woken up.

“How could he escape so quickly?” Ying Wu Xie was greatly shocked, he quickly used lead soul into dream.

Purple Mountain True Monarch had a bad feeling, Duke Long had woken up at a very coincidental time, he wanted to stop Ying Wu Xie, but it was too late.

Duke Long vanished instantly and Ying Wu Xie received the backlash of the killer move.

He had fallen into the dream himself!

“This move seems to be called lead soul into dream? It is a good move. If I had more time, I would be able to decipher its profundity.” Duke Long spoke.

As the vigilant appearance of Purple Mountain True Monarch was reflected in his cold dragon eyes, Duke Long continued speaking: “As for you, if your methods are only at this level, you will not be able to handle my next move.”

“Because this was created by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable!”

Duke Long cultivated qi path primarily and transformation path secondarily. At this moment, he was finally going to use his true methods!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1367: Triple Qi Retraction

After Duke Long said that, his aura changed abruptly.

He had just forced Purple Mountain True Monarch back, and caused Ying Wu Xie’s lead soul into dream to be ineffective, his aura was overwhelming, he was like a giant dragon soaring into the sky.

But now, it was decreasing.

‘Decrease’ was not an appropriate word.

It was condensing and solidifying.

His overwhelming aura earlier was condensing now, in a few breaths’ time, Duke Long’s shocking aura was completely concealed. He was like a deep abyss, unfathomable and mysterious.

Purple Mountain True Monarch acted like he was facing a strong foe.

He could sense that Duke Long in this condition was much more dangerous than Duke Long with overwhelming aura!

Roar!

Duke Long opened his mouth and roared.

Next, he vanished entirely on the spot.

“Oh no!” Purple Mountain True Monarch’s heart sank.

Duke Long was doing the same thing again.

He had once used this method to teleport to Purple Mountain True Monarch and use chaotic dragon fist, suppressing Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Ordinary Gu Immortals would not be able to react even if they knew about Duke Long’s intention. But Purple Mountain True Monarch was different, he cultivated wisdom path, he could think rapidly.

Almost at the same time as Duke Long roared, Purple Mountain True Monarch finished thinking and reacted.

In their earlier combat, Purple Mountain True Monarch had seen through the secret of Duke Long’s teleportation, at this moment, he used the same method again, eradicating the sound of the dragon’s roar around him.

Indeed, at the next moment, Duke Long stopped moving, he reappeared in front of Purple Mountain True Monarch.

But this time, he did not succeed in getting close, he was still several hundred steps away from Purple Mountain True Monarch.

But to Duke Long, this was enough distance.

“Human qi retraction!” He shouted, waving at Purple Mountain True Monarch.

His movement was very ordinary, like a friend waving to another friend.

But Purple Mountain True Monarch suffered a huge blow.

A huge amount of human qi gushed out of his body and flew towards Duke Long uncontrollably.

In the blink of an eye, it entered Duke Long’s palm and vanished!

After losing such a huge amount of human qi, Purple Mountain True Monarch’s eye sockets sank in, his expression turned pale and his bright purple hair became dull, he felt an intense feeling of weakness in his head and throughout his entire body.

Deep within Purple Mountain True Monarch’s eyes, a mysterious light of shock could be seen. When he heard Duke Long’s shout, he thought of a famous qi path killer move.

Triple qi retraction!

This killer move was created by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, it had two very well known traits.

The first was that it was very difficult to learn.

This killer move was incredibly complex and used a lot of Gu worms, they were used interchangeably with countless steps, even wisdom path Gu Immortals would have a headache in attempting it.

The second was that the risks were huge.

Because this killer move was very complex, when Gu Immortals used it and made a mistake, the huge backlash would be inflicted on them.

If the killer move succeeded and could not hit the enemy, this killer move would return and harm the user.

Triple qi retraction had incredibly terrifying power.

The explanation started at the process of immortal ascension.

When humans underwent immortal ascension, there were three qi involved — heaven qi, earth qi, and human qi.

When Gu Masters cultivate from rank one to rank five, they would accumulate human qi in this process. When they undergo ascension, they would take in heaven and earth qi, the three qi would become one and the Gu Master would concentrate in controlling them, tossing their vital Gu in and creating the immortal aperture through an explosion.

The more human qi the Gu Master had, the more heaven and earth qi they would be able to fuse, and the higher the grade of the immortal aperture they would get.

Normally speaking, the ten extreme physiques meant incredibly abundant human qi, far beyond normal people. Or perhaps a Gu Master could make accumulations by themselves, regardless of what path, as long as one had grandmaster attainment level, their human qi would be very abundant.

After creating the immortal aperture, be it cultivation or managing the immortal aperture, Gu Immortals had to keep a balance between the three qi.

Heaven qi, earth qi, human qi, not one of the three could be lacking and break the balance.

Like Fang Yuan, after getting a secluded domain of heaven and earth like Reverse Flow River, the heaven and earth qi expenditure of the sovereign immortal aperture became extremely high. Thus, he had to place his immortal aperture often to take in heaven and earth qi of the outside world, to replenish himself and maintain balance.

Regarding the three qi, no matter which Gu Immortal or Venerable, they could not be careless about it.

In the world of the five regions, heaven and earth qi varied. If Gu Immortals who were not native took in foreign heaven and earth qi, their immortal apertures would suffer great losses, even though they could do that in an emergency situation, it could not happen a lot of times.

When Gu Immortals die, blessed lands would form. For example, in Luo Po Valley, many Central Continent Gu Immortals died in the battlefield, their immortal apertures became blessed lands in Northern Plains, but because they took in heaven and earth qi of another region, the foundation and resources inside the blessed lands were greatly damaged.

All of these explanations served to prove a point: Heaven, earth and human qi, they were incredibly important to the immortal aperture and Gu Immortals. Any imbalance would cause great damage to the immortal aperture.

And this immortal killer move, triple qi retraction, targeted this point, it directly attacked the foundation of the immortal aperture.

It was the combination of a consecutive move and variation move. Thus, the Gu Immortal who used this killer move had to be extremely skilled.

Triple qi retraction had three styles.

The first style, human qi retraction. After the target was hit, they would lose a lot of human qi, their foundation would fall. of course, if the target had no human qi, like a desolate beast, this move would have no effect.

The second style, earth qi retraction. If hit, the Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture would be drained of earth qi, with a severe loss of earth qi, the three qi would completely be out of balance, the immortal aperture would be in grave danger.

The third style, heaven qi retraction. This would extract heaven qi, if a person was hit by all three moves, their immortal aperture would break apart instantly.

Purple Mountain True Monarch retreated.

He was already hit by human qi retraction. If he was hit by earth qi retraction too, the disadvantage would be too severe.

Even though Purple Mountain True Monarch knew about this move, this was his first time seeing it, he could not see through it in this short period.

This move was too complex, the more complex a move was, even though it was more difficult to use in battle, it was also harder for opponents to unravel.

After all, everything had advantages and disadvantages.

Purple Mountain True Monarch could not resolve it, he could only use his methods as he created countless clones.

At once, hundreds of Purple Mountain True Monarchs flew out randomly.

At the same time, his main body vanished.

Triple qi retraction was powerful, but if it could not hit, it was useless.

However, Duke Long was unmoved, he was completely prepared for Purple Mountain True Monarch’s response.

Next, he laughed coldly as his voice spread throughout the battlefield, even though he was not loud: “It is too late, Purple Mountain True Monarch, you were hit by human qi retraction, there is no way for you to dodge the next two styles, you can only endure it!”

“Come, earth qi retraction.” Duke Long paused before waving again.

He was not trying to deceive him.

Duke Long’s waving motion was not in the right direction, and he did not make any investigations, he had no idea where Purple Mountain True Monarch was now, but he was still hit instantly.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was greatly shocked!

A vast amount of earth qi flew out of his immortal aperture, raging on like a storm towards Duke Long’s palm, before vanishing without a trace.

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s immortal aperture was greatly damaged, his foundations were crippled and his three qi had lost balance long ago, his immortal aperture was going to break apart in a few breaths’ time.

At this moment, one final choice was presented to Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Placing his aperture.

Placing his aperture here.

This way, he could take in heaven and earth qi to regain balance.

But Purple Mountain True Monarch gave up on this option immediately.

This was a horrible idea!

Once Purple Mountain True Monarch placed his aperture, his main body would be stuck in his immortal aperture, he would leave the battlefield immediately and lose all initiative.

And most importantly, the immortal aperture could only take in heaven and earth qi by opening the entrance.

A passage was necessary.

And outside, Duke Long was waiting for him.

If this immortal aperture’s entrance opened, Duke Long would charge in and easily deal great damage to the immortal aperture. Furthermore, he could fight or retreat at will, while Purple Mountain True Monarch would be trapped inside his immortal aperture.

“Even if I place my aperture and replenish my earth qi, the balance was long since lost due to my lack of human qi. I do not have the human path methods needed to replenish human qi, I can only buy large numbers of humans or variant humans.”

Countless thoughts flashed inside Purple Mountain True Monarch’s mind.

In a short time, he made his choice!

He stretched out his arm and grabbed at his stomach, before an eerie purple light shined in his hand, as his hand pulled away from his stomach slowly.

With his movement, the immortal aperture was taken out.

Seeing this, Fang Yuan felt a familiar feeling in his mind.

He thought of Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Blazing Heaven Demoness had a fire path method that could take someone else’s immortal aperture.

This move left a deep impression on Fang Yuan.

“How does Purple Mountain True Monarch know this?” Fang Yuan was a little puzzled but he soon understood.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was a member of Zombie Alliance to begin with, and Hei Lou Lan was firmly controlled by Shadow Sect, it was not strange for Purple Mountain True Monarch to know this method.

All the paths in the world, with a deep enough attainment, could mimic other paths and achieve their effects.

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s move was evidently a wisdom path method, it could also be that he created it himself and it had nothing to do with Blazing Heaven Demoness.

Purple Mountain True Monarch took out his immortal aperture and placed it in the outside world.

The immortal aperture’s entrance opened and began to take in earth qi.

But this grotto-heaven had little hope of salvation, even if the earth qi was regained, human qi was too lacking.

Seeing Purple Mountain True Monarch’s resolution, Duke Long was slightly shocked, a look of admiration flashed on his face for a moment.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1368: Capturing Spectral Soul

Purple Mountain True Monarch lost his immortal aperture, he lost his cultivation foundation. Without his immortal aperture, his future was bleak.

Forget about the future, even now, after his immortal aperture left his body, he lost a huge amount of dao marks.

Even though he kept most of the Gu worms and immortal essence with him, without the amplification of dao marks, his battle strength fell to rock bottom.

This was something he had no other way to deal with.

If his heaven qi was extracted, Purple Mountain True Monarch’s immortal aperture would break apart, the winds of assimilation will blow and he would be in even greater danger of losing his life.

Triple qi retraction was simply too incredible.

It directly targeted the Gu Immortal’s foundation, even the great Purple Mountain True Monarch had to discard his own immortal aperture. It was like an Iron Palm 1 martial arts expert breaking his own two arms!

Fang Yuan watched this, filled with shock.

Throughout history, there were only ten who became venerables.

Anything related to these ten existences could become extraordinary.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s formless hand was like this, so was Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s reincarnation battlefield, and so was Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s triple qi retraction.

“What can we do?!” Fang Yuan thought hard on how to change the situation.

There was nothing he could do.

He could only feel glad now.

Glad that Purple Mountain True Monarch had already given him all the heavenly crystals earlier.

While manipulating the super Gu formation and resisting Fairy Zi Wei, he started to nurture the upper extreme heavenly eagle. He had a lot of heavenly crystals now, far more than the heavenly crystal eagle nest earlier, even if the upper extreme heavenly eagle became an immemorial desolate beast, the same thing would not happen again, it would not starve to death.

“Indeed worthy of Duke Long.” Purple Mountain True Monarch spoke, expressing his admiration towards Duke Long.

Duke Long was too powerful.

He definitely had quasi-rank nine battle strength.

Against ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals, he could crush them. Only people like Purple Mountain True Monarch, at the peak of rank eight, and being one of the original split souls of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, having cultivated for a hundred thousand years, had the foundation and qualifications to challenge him.

But after dozens of rounds, after Duke Long’s probing ended, he realized that Purple Mountain True Monarch had no true way of countering him, so he started to use his qi path trump card.

Triple qi retraction was incredibly powerful, but such a strong killer move would leave the user in horrible condition if it was countered. It was like lifting a rock and smashing it on one’s own head!

Thus, any Gu Immortal would be very careful with such a killer move.

Like how Fang Yuan would rather nurture the upper extreme heavenly eagle than use reverse flow protection seal.

“In this battle, I am bullying a junior, if you were not someone who is defying fate, we might be able to sit down and have a nice conversation. After all, in this world, there are too few people who can register my interest.”

“However, I believe that in the near future, the entire world will brighten up, it will become incredibly exciting.”

“And I will be the person to unveil this great new era!”

Duke Long sighed, starting to chase after Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Purple Mountain True Monarch fought and retreated, he was completely suppressed.

He was hit by the first two styles of triple qi retraction, his battle strength fell drastically, he was not Duke Long’s match originally, the situation was worse now.

Duke Long’s attacks were powerful and unceasing, at this moment, he surpassed Purple Mountain True Monarch in every aspect.

Purple Mountain True Monarch could only hold on desperately while trying to use the killer move to create Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, but he had no choice other than to stop it.

Ying Wu Xie was still stuck in a dream realm, the other Gu Immortals only watched helplessly.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, having a heavy heart.

He quickly looked around the battlefield, Duke Long had a great advantage, Purple Mountain True Monarch was a lost cause. The only way now was to target the enemy’s weakness to salvage the situation.

However, Duke Long had predicted this when he sent his forces. All of the people he sent out were powerful beings.

Ignoring Duke Long, Fairy Zi Wei had Star Constellation Chessboard, while Heaven Overseeing Tower was tough as a fortress, even though Zuo Ye Hui was attacking, it could only damage the exterior.

There were many Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals, but they could not interfere in a battle of such intensity.

“Oh no!”

“This cannot go on.”

“Once Purple Mountain True Monarch loses, the entire battle will tilt in Heavenly Court’s favor.”

“By then, there will be too little hope for me to escape!”

“Should I retreat now?”

“Should I take a gamble on whether Heavenly Court has already found a way to counter reverse flow protection seal?”

Fang Yuan could not help but hesitate.

This was something hard to decide on.

But at this time, the battle between Purple Mountain True Monarch and Duke Long had a new development.

A blessed land’s entrance suddenly opened, as a huge soul beast army appeared from within.

Purple Mountain True Monarch relied on these soul beasts to block Duke Long’s attacks as he retreated into the blessed land.

“This is Shadow Sect’s blessed land!”

Fang Yuan saw this as his eyes shined brightly, flashing with dazzling light.

During the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Shadow Sect’s blessed land was moved here by Shadow Sect. Shadow Sect’s blessed land contained the door of life and death, Spectral Soul had emerged from it to resist the heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities, unleashing his great power and killing Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, Heaven Overseeing Tower was destroyed and sovereign immortal fetus Gu was refined.

After the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Shadow Sect met with failure as Fang Yuan snatched the fruits of their labor. The dream realm covered the entire place and Shadow Sect’s blessed land had to shut its entrance, defending from the outside.

Purple Mountain True Monarch led Shadow Sect here and had been using his killer move to turn dream realms into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

After trying hard, unknowingly, the blessed land was freed, as the surrounding dream realms were removed.

Thus, the entrance of Shadow Sect’s blessed land could open again.

There were countless soul beasts inside the door of life and death, they were all mobilized now to attack Duke Long.

These soul beasts were of a massive scale, there were countless desolate beasts, with many ancient desolate beasts and even immemorial desolate beasts among them.

The soul beast army disregarded sacrifices, attacking Duke Long in a suicidal manner.

Purple Mountain True Monarch passed through the immortal aperture’s entrance with the help of the soul beasts, entering Shadow Sect’s blessed land.

The appearance of the soul beast army did not turn the situation around, it only gave Purple Mountain True Monarch some time to regain his footing.

“Fang Yuan, let out your upper extreme heavenly eagle, what are you waiting for?” At the same time, Purple Mountain True Monarch continued to ask Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan snickered.

This was already the fiftieth time he had asked.

Ever since he was hit by the qi path killer move, he had been urging Fang Yuan to no avail. The upper extreme heavenly eagle was his final trump card, even if it was uncontrollable, he could let it out to cause chaos.

How could he release it according to Purple Mountain True Monarch’s words?

“Charge in, this blessed land is Shadow Sect’s base camp.” Fang Yuan thought, he wanted to see Duke Long enter the blessed land and fight to the death with Shadow Sect. He wanted Shadow Sect’s blessed land to be full of traps, so that Duke Long could meet with trouble.

But Duke Long did not pursue him, he stopped his movement.

Fang Yuan was disappointed, while Purple Mountain True Monarch was slightly flustered.

Duke Long’s lips curled upwards, for the first time, he showed a natural smile.

He suddenly turned around, charging somewhere with the speed of lightning.

“You finally decided to come out? Spectral Soul!” He shouted, attacking as air currents raged, turning into a huge claw that grabbed at an area in the soul beast army.

“He found out!” Purple Mountain True Monarch felt like he had fallen into an icy river.

From the soul beast army, a human shaped soul emerged, he did not evade Duke Long, he attacked.

Boom!

Even the powerful Duke Long was sent flying, while that human shaped soul remained unmoved.

“Hahaha.” Duke Long spat out blood but he laughed: “Spectral Soul, you are truly at your weakest.”

“Damn it!” Purple Mountain True Monarch quickly charged ahead, trying to reinforce him, panic showed on his face for the first time.

Fang Yuan saw this and finally understood everything.

“Shadow Sect is truly cunning!”

“Purple Mountain True Monarch created a huge amount of Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, seemingly wanting to let Spectral Soul escape, but this was all a distraction.”

“His true intention was to let out the soul beast army for Spectral Soul to devour and strengthen himself.”

Spectral Soul had the supreme method of devouring souls, that was the only way he could recover his strength rapidly, he might even be able to help Purple Mountain True Monarch defeat Duke Long!

But all this was predicted by Duke Long in advance.

Duke Long attacked while Spectral Soul was still weak, Purple Mountain True Monarch had to intervene.

“Too late!” Duke Long laughed, stretching his arms as his dragon claws tore through space, forcing Purple Mountain True Monarch to retreat.

Duke Long attacked Spectral Soul again, air currents raged like dragons, entangling with Spectral Soul’s main body.

Spectral Soul’s main body was originally very powerful, it was considered a quasi-rank nine immemorial soul beast, it could even use Gu worms and the immortal essence he had left behind in his lifetime.

But after the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Spectral Soul only had a trace of his remnant soul left.

And this trace of his remnant soul was surrounded by dream realms, constantly consumed.

The human shaped soul roared, forcefully defending against Duke Long's methods.

Duke Long's dragon eyes shined with intense fighting spirit: "You want to resist me?"

"Oh Spectral Soul, if you were still a rank nine, I would avoid you at all costs, I would escape to the ends of the world."

"But now, you are just a remnant soul. Your Gu worms and immortal essence are not with you."

"I have been waiting for you for a long time!"

"I'll tell you the truth, I am here to capture and imprison you within Heavenly Court. So that the entire world will understand the supreme might and glory of my Heavenly Court!!"

The human shaped soul was still struggling, while Purple Mountain True Monarch attacked Duke Long like he had gone mad.

Duke Long defended against the latter easily while he looked at the human shaped soul.

He said arrogantly: "Still going to struggle pointlessly?"

"In the past, even Red Lotus Demon Venerable was stopped by me!"

"Now, surrender to me!!"

As he said that, Spectral Soul's main body was unable to defend against Duke Long's methods, he was trapped by a cage created from countless air currents.

Like what Duke Long had said, he actually managed to capture Spectral Soul's main soul body!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1369: Elder Brother, Quickly Lend Me Immortal Gu

Seeing this, Fang Yuan could not help but stare with wide eyes.

A rank nine venerable, with overwhelming prestige that flowed into every Gu Master's and Gu Immortal's heart, like a river of fame.

But now, Fang Yuan saw that Spectral Soul was actually captured by a rank eight Gu Immortal.

"As a matter of fact, who is this Duke Long? He is actually so strong!"

"However, thinking about it, Spectral Soul had died long ago, this is only his soul remaining."

"If his soul was in top condition, Duke Long would not be able to take him down. But unfortunately, Spectral Soul had resisted the tribulations and made great sacrifices to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu. Even though he succeeded and forced back Heaven Overseeing Tower, the result of his hard work was taken by me, Shadow Sect only had some remnant forces remaining while Zombie Alliance was wiped out, their losses were severe.”

“And his own soul was depleted until only a trace was left in Yi Tian Mountain. After falling into the dream realm and being weakened for so long, it is already unthinkable that he could last this long.”

Fang Yuan thought about himself, if his soul was thrown into such a massive dream realm, weakened and depleted by it, without using any dream path killer moves, he would only be able to last for a few days.

Even though Spectral Soul only had a trace of his soul left, the quality was superb, he could endure such a long period of time, even now, he could still struggle.

It was not strange that Duke Long could capture him.

After all, Duke Long was strong while Spectral Soul was currently weak.

Spectral Soul’s era was over!

He had once slaughtered the world and his demonic might spread over the five regions and two heavens, it was a chaotic time period.

In his life, he was invincible in the world, he was the strongest being alive, and had the greatest status in heaven and earth.

However, time flowed like water, he eventually died.

After death, and with the appearance of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s influence was greatly reduced, peace and blessings were brought to this world.

Even after Spectral Soul died, he was not resigned to failure.

He built Shadow Sect and Zombie Alliance, attempting to defy heaven again.

Sword Immortal Bo Qing was his first attempt, but he only managed to become a pseudo-Immortal Venerable, and his corpse sank into Falling Heavenly River.

Sovereign immortal fetus Gu was his second attempt, but the world schemed against him, his hard work of a hundred thousand years was taken away by Fang Yuan.

The failure of Yi Tian Mountain and Spectral Soul’s terrible loss had consumed all of his foundation. But with just Shadow Sect’s remnant forces, he still whipped up a storm.

Until now, Spectral Soul failed completely and was captured by Heavenly Court’s Duke Long.

“The great era is coming, antiques like myself should quietly lie down and stop trying to become the main characters of the current era. Oh Spectral Soul, your era is long gone.”

Duke Long sighed as he stretched out his hand, air currents moved and carried Spectral Soul as it entered his phantom aperture.

“Ah—!” Purple Mountain True Monarch screamed at the sky, his eyes were bloodshot.

Seeing how Spectral Soul had fallen into captivity, he almost went crazy.

Even the main body was captured, all hope was lost.

A complete loss!

But Purple Mountain True Monarch was a wisdom path Gu Immortal after all, he held in the urge to seek out Duke Long for a suicidal attack.

That would truly be giving up!

He breathed in deeply and moved towards a deeper part of Shadow Sect’s blessed land.

“Running? Why do you think you’re going?” Duke Long floated in the air, his dragon eyes looked towards Purple Mountain True Monarch with a cold gaze.

The entrance of Shadow Sect’s blessed land closed, and the soul beast army stopped charging out, they returned to defend it.

Duke Long laughed arrogantly, he turned around to look at the super Gu formation and saw that Fairy Zi Wei was making good progress, he aimed at the location of Shadow Sect’s blessed land and used an immortal killer move —

Dragon Gate!

This dragon gate was majestic and huge, there were two red pillars by the side with a dragon coiling around each of them, their dragon claws were holding up the top of the gate, firm as a mountain. There were flickering dragon scales and two tough dragon bodies. The dragon bodies coiled around the huge pillars, as the dragons’ upper bodies looked at each other, the dragon mouths were open with a dragon pearl in each of them, shining like radiant suns, forming a scene of two dragons and two pearls.

The dragon gate opened, the interior of Shadow Sect’s blessed land could be seen.

This immortal killer move, dragon gate, could forcefully open blessed lands!

Duke Long laughed, stepping in as the dragon gate closed, before vanishing.

There was an intense battle in the blessed land, but there was no commotion outside, the entire battlefield fell into a peculiar silence.

But it could be easily imagined that Shadow Sect’s blessed land was definitely not peaceful, with Duke Long inside, the soul beast army was definitely attacking him endlessly!

“What do we do?” Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals looked at each other.

Suddenly, they realized that they had no enemies left.

Purple Mountain True Monarch against Duke Long, they were inside Shadow Sect’s blessed land. Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, Ying Wu Xie, and the rest were hiding inside the dream realms with the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

The only things moving in the battlefield were soul beasts.

Countless soul beasts were rampaging the battlefield.

A portion of them were inside dream realms, unable to escape, they were quickly dissolved by the dream realms.

Most of the soul beasts saw the dangers of the dream realms and escaped due to their survival instincts.

Soul beasts could hunt for all lifeforms with souls and devour them to strengthen themselves.

Southern Border's righteous path Gu Immortals quickly became the targets of these soul beasts, even though they did not want to fight.

“Wu Yi Hai, quickly send us into the Gu formation.” The Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals quickly requested.

They did not want to leave.

Because now, Shadow Sect lost, Heavenly Court was likely to win. And Heavenly Court had not shown any killing intent towards Southern Border's righteous path.

Southern Border's righteous path Gu Immortals subconsciously thought that Heavenly Court was on their side.

After all, they were all in the righteous path, one was Central Continent's righteous path, and the other was Southern Border's righteous path.

Of course, there was also another important element that affected their judgment.

The dream realm.

This dream realm might be extremely scattered now, but from the perspectives of Southern Border's Gu Immortals, it was their resource, it belonged to them.

Furthermore, they had witnessed the battle between Duke Long and Purple Mountain True Monarch, as well as Spectral Soul's main body, they finally experienced some of the hidden details of the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain.

The huge secret of a rank nine venerable was here, there might be a fortuitous encounter, who would want to leave?

This was Southern Border's super Gu formation, and all sorts of reinforcements from the super clans were rapidly getting closer.

As for Heaven Overseeing Tower and Zuo Ye Hui, they were still fighting, with both sides in a deadlock.

Fang Yuan ordered: “Everyone, work hard to kill these soul beasts! Our reinforcements are coming closer. These soul beasts were sent by the enemy, killing them is weakening the enemy. If we let these soul beasts leave, there would be a huge problem, this is the responsibility of the righteous path!”

These words made sense, but the Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals did not listen to him.

“Aren't the reinforcements arriving? Let them handle it.”

“That's right, I am so tired, I need to rest.”

“Even if we are not injured currently, our immortal essence expenditure was huge, we need to save up our battle strength and not waste it.”

Fang Yuan snorted: “I'm telling you to go, enough nonsense.”

Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals scolded and cursed, but Fang Yuan ignored them.

He was doing something very exciting.

That was asking Wu clan for help.

“Quick, it is very dangerous here, the situation is very complex, quickly send the Gu worms I need over with treasure yellow heaven!”

“No worries, I will bear all the cost myself.”

“Why do I want bloodline Immortal Gu? I need to use it in the super Gu formation and increase its power!”

“It is difficult because I am borrowing so many Immortal Gu? Why are you troubled? This is not my first time borrowing Gu!”

“What? Borrowing Immortal Gu in Wu clan’s internal treasury requires the first supreme elder’s approval?”

Fang Yuan contacted Wu Yong.

“Elder brother, quickly lend me a hand!”

Wu Yong was controlling the Immortal Gu House and rapidly moving, hearing his brother’s words, he replied: “What happened? What help do you need?”

“I am sure you know about the situation, brother, I am controlling the super Gu formation now. This is a great opportunity! It can allow our Wu clan to control this resource point and suppress the other clans, we will be free from our difficult situation!” Fang Yuan spoke sincerely.

Wu Yong was silent for a moment.

This battlefield was not sealed, Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals could communicate with their clans using information path methods.

Over at Wu clan, they only had Fang Yuan and Wu Liao, along with Qiao clan’s Gu Immortals.

Thus, all of the reinforcements were familiar with the battlefield’s situation, Wu Yong was no exception.

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan salvaged the situation and took over Chi Gui’s spot in the super Gu formation, Wu Yong naturally knew about this.

When he first heard it, he was a little surprised, he did not expect his own brother to have such a strong formation path attainment. But Wu Yong quickly accepted it.

Why?

Because earlier, Fang Yuan had competed with Chi Shang in terms of formation path, among them, Qiao Si Liu was involved, rumors about them had caused a commotion in Southern Border for some time.

Fang Yuan exposed his formation path attainment, everyone was shocked about it, but because of that, everyone could accept this result easily.

If Wu Yi Hai were a Gu Immortal born and bred in Southern Border, he would face great suspicion. The great thing was, Wu Yi Hai came from Eastern Sea, the Southern Border Gu Immortals did not know much about him.

Therefore, Fang Yuan had ample room to act and perform.

Wu Yong heard Fang Yuan’s words: He could use reputation restriction Immortal Gu to reinforce the super Gu formation and gain more benefits for Wu clan.

He hesitated.

But his hesitation had no suspicion in it.

He believed Fang Yuan.

He had not suspected that Wu Yi Hai was an impostor from the very start.

His hesitation was about how reliable Fang Yuan’s plan was, and how successful it could be? If the chances of success were low, and if they failed, what would Wu clan’s political situation become?

These were all things that Wu Yong had to consider, as a person in power, he needed to have foresight, he could not focus solely on immediate benefits.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1370: Shadow Sect’s New Leader?!

Wu Yong’s hesitation did not last long, he quickly decided to act according to Fang Yuan’s plan.

This was a great opportunity!

It was a good chance for Wu clan.

Wu Yong had been defending Wu clan and resisting the challenges sent by all the other clans earlier, it was quite a tough time, he did not want to face it again.

And he also understood, as long as he, as a rank eight Gu Immortal, did not die, Wu clan would have enough foundation in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, they would never truly fall!

Lend him!

Fang Yuan wants reputation restriction Immortal Gu, he will get to borrow it.

Bloodline Immortal Gu?

Lent.

But his action was not blindly decided.

Wu Yong and Wu clan’s Gu Immortals listened to the reasons for Fang Yuan’s borrowing. If there was any inconsistencies or illogical points, they would retort and reject him.

Such vigilance was the tradition of all the super forces.

Immortal Gu were unique, any Immortal Gu, even rank six, counted as the foundation of a super force.

Immortal Gu could not be lent out easily!

Fang Yuan had to make up logical reasons in this short time period, it was not easy.

But eventually, he still borrowed six Immortal Gu!

“Six Immortal Gu is about enough, if we lend more, do you have enough immortal essence to use them?” Wu Yong rejected Fang Yuan’s request in a nice manner.

Six Immortal Gu lent to one person, it was a huge risk.

Not that Wu clan suspected Wu Yi Hai’s identity, but if anything happened to him, these Immortal Gu would be lost, it would be a huge loss to Wu clan’s foundation.

Never put all your eggs into one basket, everyone understood this logic.

Fang Yuan sighed deeply: “Oh! Brother, your reminder is true, I do not have much red date immortal essence left. Brother, lend me some immortal essence stones, I need to replenish my immortal essence!”

He decided to get some more benefits.

Wu Yong did not hesitate, he approved of it. An emperor has no use for hungry soldiers, without immortal essence, all those Immortal Gu were useless. After lending out so many Immortal Gu, they had to make sure they were used properly, right?

Fang Yuan obtained a hundred thousand immortal essence stones.

Wu clan was a super force indeed, this showed their tremendous foundation.

“Use it sparingly.”

“The immortal essence stones and Immortal Gu are all lent to you, remember to be vigilant and careful!”

Wu Yong told Fang Yuan concernedly.

Fang Yuan quickly acknowledged it.

Immortal Gu and immortal essence stones were transmitted over through treasure yellow heaven rapidly into Fang Yuan’s hands.

Treasure yellow heaven went into a commotion!

Once Fang Yuan obtained them, he quickly turned the immortal essence stones into his immortal essence, while tossing those six Immortal Gu into Reverse Flow River.

Suppressed entirely!

After this battle, Wu Yi Hai’s identity would definitely be exposed.

Just a few words from Heavenly Court would attract sufficient suspicion. Fang Yuan could not pass intense investigations, just soul searching or checking his immortal aperture would expose him.

Thus, before running, he had to dig out the last bit of benefits possible!

“It is a huge pity I could not borrow any Immortal Gu House.” Fang Yuan pursed his lips, even though he scammed Wu clan to this extent, he was not fully satisfied.

For any super force, Immortal Gu Houses had much greater significance than Immortal Gu.

They could not be lent out to Fang Yuan no matter what!

Similar to nuclear weapons on Earth, they were the last resorts of certain countries, they could not be lent out.

Unless Fang Yuan became someone like Wu Yong who had the greatest authority in Wu clan, then nobody would say anything about him having an Immortal Gu House.

Like how Hei Cheng borrowed Dark Prison due to the four Hei tribe supreme elders being forced to stay together as a result of cultivating Green City Rampage and being unable to go out alone. Hei Cheng only managed to gain his authority as a result of this.

If Fang Yuan asked to borrow Immortal Gu House, Wu Yong’s first thought would be: “My brother wants to borrow an Immortal Gu House, after this battle, if he does not return it, and uses this Immortal Gu House together with Qiao clan’s help to resist me, what would I do?”

Also, Immortal Gu Houses could not be completely sent over using treasure yellow heaven.

Immortal Gu Houses were Gu formations, nobody could use Gu formations or killer moves in treasure yellow heaven.

Thus, to send an Immortal Gu House over, it had to be split apart, but reconstructing an Immortal Gu House was very difficult.

Immortal Gu Houses were the apex of formation path, to create an Immortal Gu House, even if one knew about the steps involved, a formation path Gu Immortal still needed to focus entirely and put in hard work.

Any carelessness and the creation would fail, this was similar to setting up a formation, the Gu Immortal would face a backlash and the Gu formation and Immortal Gu House would also end in the same result.

The risks were too great, lending Fang Yuan so many Immortal Gu and immortal essence stones was Wu clan’s limit.

This was also due to Fang Yuan being Wu Yong’s brother, and the fact that he had contributed a lot to Wu clan recently. If not for Frosty Peak, Moon Bowl, and Mount Snail, Fang Yuan would not be able to borrow it.

Fang Yuan was profiting on the side, watching Shadow Sect and Heavenly Court go against each other while he reaped benefits.

Even though he tried very hard, the situation did not go according to his wishes, Heavenly Court’s Duke Long was too powerful, beyond his imagination.

Shadow Sect lost and Heavenly Court won, this was basically assured.

Even Spectral Soul’s main body had been captured, if Shadow Sect had any other methods, they already would have been used up.

Speaking of which, Shadow Sect’s foundation was truly deep. It was a pity that their losses were too severe on Yi Tian Mountain when they tried to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu!

The loss was too great, they were unable to recover.

On their last breaths, they were still faced with Fang Yuan’s pursuit, they could not develop properly.

“But I have captured Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, and gained a lot of heavenly crystals, the upper extreme heavenly eagle is currently being nurtured. And now, I scammed six Immortal Gu and a hundred thousand immortal essence stones from Wu clan, my gains are actually huge!”

Fang Yuan was good at reaping benefits.

Until this point, he did not fight to the death, he did not put in much effort, but his gains were still stunning.

“Unfortunately, dark limit Immortal Gu cannot be retrieved, I cannot take it out recklessly now, if the Gu formation breaks apart, I will need to face Fairy Zi Wei.”

“There is also another problem, that is Wu clan’s alliance agreement. I joined Wu clan and underwent an agreement, there is also the life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu, they are still inside Wu clan’s ancestral hall!”

This final problem gave Fang Yuan a headache.

The reason why he scammed six Immortal Gu was for this problem as well. If Wu clan used this relationship to try and harm Fang Yuan, he could use the six Wu clan Immortal Gu that he possessed to negotiate with them on that basis.

A great chess player would need to plan multiple steps ahead when making a move.

Even though Fang Yuan was still stuck in the battlefield now, he was planning for the future.

“Demonic path members are truly insidious and greedy beyond hope. Even before death, you are still scamming others. Oh Fang Yuan, your crimes are too severe, you will die today without doubt! Forget about running away, because with me around, you have no hope of escaping.” At this time, Fairy Zi Wei’s voice resounded from the super Gu formation.

Fairy Zi Wei must have known about the matter of Fang Yuan borrowing Immortal Gu and immortal essence stones from Wu clan.

There was no helping it, treasure yellow heaven was like this, it was an open market, any transaction could be exposed easily.

How could Heavenly Court not have methods to observe treasure yellow heaven and keep it under surveillance?

Fang Yuan sneered: “This is the result of Heavenly Court not exposing me earlier. It seems that you have no conclusive proof. Actually, even if you do, so what? Will Wu clan believe you? Will Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world believe you abruptly? They will only believe in what they have verified themselves. These righteous path forces are like this, any sort of matter would be a political scheme in their eyes.”

Fairy Zi Wei was silent, she did not speak.

She understood thoroughly that Fang Yuan was completely immersed into the demonic path, his mind was firm and determined, words could not sway him.

Fairy Zi Wei chose not to waste her effort on pointless attempts.

Her speed in invading the super Gu formation became quicker now.

Fang Yuan’s expression changed, realizing that this was bad.

At this rate, even if the upper extreme heavenly eagle matured, it would be too late. The super Gu formation would break apart in advance.

He had the information path reputation restriction Immortal Gu now.

His plan was to use this Immortal Gu to control the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

But Fang Yuan did not have much confidence in this.

Because the upper extreme heavenly eagle was an immemorial desolate beast, it had rank eight battle strength, while reputation restriction Immortal Gu was just rank seven. The only thing that gave Fang Yuan hope was that he indeed had strong reputation, he could hopefully use it to allow reputation restriction Immortal Gu to display incredible power.

If it did not work, he would need to release the rampaging upper extreme heavenly eagle and create chaos, to find a chance to escape.

The battlefield was divided into four parts now.

The first and most crucial area was the battle between Purple Mountain True Monarch and Duke Long. They were fighting inside Shadow Sect’s blessed land, the situation was unknown, but Duke Long had the advantage, it was highly likely that he would emerge victorious.

The second area was Heaven Overseeing Tower and Zuo Ye Hui, they were unable to defeat each other. Both sides were injured now, even with Zuo Ye Hui’s incredible recovery speed, it was still covered in wounds, Heaven Overseeing Tower’s edges were also breaking apart, it was no longer as grand as before.

The third area was the fight between the Southern Border Gu Immortals and soul beasts, nothing much was happening.

The fourth area was Fairy Zi Wei’s and Fang Yuan’s fight over the super Gu formation’s control. This battlefield was the most secretive, even the Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals were kept in the dark.

In Fang Yuan’s opinion, it was a foregone conclusion, Heavenly Court was sure to win. In this situation, he could only escape and his plan of fishing for benefits was over.

But Fang Yuan was an old demon, even if he was about to be defeated, his gains were tremendous.

“Now, it is time to see if I can escape!”

Right when Fang Yuan was working hard on this goal, he received Purple Mountain True Monarch’s words: “Fang Yuan, can we continue to cooperate?”

Fang Yuan’s interest was roused: “Of course.”

“Hehehe, very good, I was not wrong about you!”

“I will entrust everything to you. My Immortal Gu, my killer moves, my experiences... and you will not need to bear any responsibility or task.”

“Ying Wu Xie, Hei Lou Lan, White Rabbit, Miao Yin and Sixth Hair, they will all be your subordinates!”

“From now onwards, you will be the leader of Shadow Sect!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1371: Demise of Purple (1/2)

“Letting me become the leader of Shadow Sect?” Fang Yuan was deeply shocked.

Unbelievable!

He had never imagined the situation would develop like this.

“I am enemies with Shadow Sect, I even took their sovereign immortal fetus Gu.”

“Why is Purple Mountain True Monarch doing this?”

“What scheme does he have?”

Countless thoughts were moving and colliding in Fang Yuan’s mind.

“Purple Mountain True Monarch, what is the meaning of this?” Fang Yuan was silent before asking.

Purple Mountain True Monarch explained: “Hehehe, Fang Yuan, no need to worry that this is a scheme, there is no such thing. Because I am about to die! Spectral Soul was captured, Duke Long is here personally, he will not let me off.”

“The great era is coming, Fang Yuan!”

“Heavenly Court wants to be the leader of the five regions and rule all of humanity.”

“Heavenly Court will not let you off, because you are not Zhao Lian Yun, you are a complete otherworldly demon, you have the sovereign immortal aperture as well as the luck path true inheritance.”

“You do not belong to this world, you are a defier of fate, a source of chaos, the biggest uncertainty in heaven and earth.”

“You are the target of Heavenly Court’s extermination, if you do not get rid of Heavenly Court, they will eradicate you!”

“My Shadow Sect had once wanted to defy the way of heaven and become a venerable again. But Heavenly Court was our greatest obstacle, even though we lost, I would rather pass you everything than give them to our enemies. Hahaha.”

Purple Mountain True Monarch said this and laughed.

Fang Yuan pondered: “Even in death, not letting enemies have an easy time? This makes sense. However, I need to probe something.”

Thinking of this, he asked Purple Mountain True Monarch: “You have once said that the sovereign immortal body possessed a huge flaw, what is it?”

Purple Mountain True Monarch chuckled: “Haven’t you noticed this flaw? It is not hard to guess, the answer is food. Your sovereign immortal body was not created by human reproduction, even though it has flesh and blood, the origin is different. The essence of a rank nine Immortal Gu remains. Since it is like a rank nine Immortal Gu, it definitely needs to be fed!”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly, “I had guessed this long ago, what I want to ask is, what exactly does sovereign immortal fetus Gu eat?”

Purple Mountain True Monarch laughed loudly: “Didn’t you guess it? You are merely testing my sincerity. I will tell you.”

Purple Mountain True Monarch said his answer, Fang Yuan sucked in a deep breath after hearing it.

Like what he had expected, sovereign immortal fetus Gu’s food was what he had guessed earlier.

“In that case, I have a huge problem!”

“But Purple Mountain True Monarch actually told me directly, he indeed seems sincere...”

Inside Shadow Sect’s blessed land.

Countless soul beasts formed into an army and charged at Duke Long like a shocking tide.

Duke Long was encircled by the soul beast army, his body was smaller than any of the soul beasts, but he had terrifying battle strength, even though the soul beasts were numerous, regardless of their cultivation level, they all fell to Duke Long.

Duke Long waved his dragon claws.

Swish!

With a soft sound, a claw mark could be seen, it almost pierced space, along the way, soul beasts were torn apart, without putting up any resistance.

Among these dead soul beasts, there were desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts, but under Duke Long’s claws, they were like tofu, soft and mercilessly slaughtered.

“A bunch of trash, no matter how many you send, it is useless.” Duke Long floated in the sky, his body was tall and straight, resembling the peak of a mountain, his dragon horns were sharp and ruthless, his dragon eyes were shining with a cold light.

With him at the center, in the radius of a thousand steps, there was no living beings, a vast number of soul beast corpses were piled up.

Purple Mountain True Monarch had already hidden in the soul beast army, his whereabouts were unknown.

Duke Long was besieged by the soul beast army for so long, yet he was unharmed.

He was expressionlessly looking at a certain location on the ground. Over there, the door of life and death was opened, countless soul beasts were coming out from inside like a geyser.

Soul beasts had the natural survival instinct to avoid danger, but after such a long time of being inside, the door of life and death was Spectral Soul's domain.

The soul beasts inside the door of life and death were controlled by Spectral Soul to an extent, they were incredible loyal to Shadow Sect and would not care about sacrifices, they listened to Purple Mountain True Monarch's orders and attacked Duke Long, even though it was hopeless.

"Door of life and death..." Duke Long pondered.

This was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, unique in this world.

It was also one of Duke Long's targets in this journey.

"After taking the door of life and death, when fate Immortal Gu recovers completely, any life form's soul upon death, without exception, would need to enter the door of life and death."

"By then, with this secluded domain of heaven and earth, Heavenly Court's rule will be absolute!"

From Duke Long's perspective, once he used a strong move like triple qi retraction, Shadow Sect's blessed land would be incredibly fragile.

But now, in order to not destroy the door of life and death, Duke Long decided to use another method.

Boom!

Duke Long flew out rapidly, he moved like a flying dragon, rampaging without fear, all the soul beasts around him were sent flying, before countless air currents sliced them into pieces.

"Just a tiny split soul, where do you think you're hiding?" Duke Long spoke as he slammed with his hand.

Rumble!

A huge translucent mountain created from air currents descended and pressed down immediately.

Purple Mountain True Monarch gritted his teeth, he had to show up and resist it.

Both sides fought as the air current mountain was expended by half, Purple Mountain True Monarch coughed out blood, he was tossed away like a kite with its strings cut.

"What are you resisting for? Do you still have hope?" Duke Long snorted coldly, he attacked again mercilessly with an imposing aura.

"Hope, huh..." Purple Mountain True Monarch knew that he could not survive this battle. This was his final moment in life. His gaze couldn't help but become slightly hazy.

More than a hundred thousand years ago.

Seven people emerged from the door of life and death.

“Huff! We finally got out of the door of life and death, we revived!”

“There are only seven of us now.”

“Thankfully, Reverse Flow River is not around, otherwise, how could we have left?”

“Now that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable is dead, let’s go, we carry the hope of our main body to return to rank nine!”

That year, Shadow Sect was established, the first generation split souls were known as Red, Orange, Yellow, Green, Azure, Blue, and Purple.

“That means, I am Purple.” Purple Mountain True Monarch looked at the water, seeing his reflection, he looked far away: “Let’s start cultivating, we need strength!”

...

Many years later.

Rumble!

A huge explosion occurred as the Gu formation shattered, smoke started to appear.

“We got through, as expected of Purple, you are really amazing. We actually managed to destroy the Gu formation that Limitless Demon Venerable created.” Yellow laughed loudly.

Yellow patted Purple’s shoulder, asking: “Purple, among us, you cultivate wisdom path, what is your wisdom path attainment level now?”

“Great grandmaster.” Purple answered plainly.

Yellow’s mouth was opened mouth: “Heavens, you are the first great grandmaster among us!”

Purple looked at Yellow: “What is there to be surprised about? Don’t forget, we are the main body’s split souls, we carry a portion of his cultivation experiences.”

Yellow nodded: “That’s right, the best thing to be happy about is this Limitless true inheritance. We got past Limitless Demon Venerable’s final test, this true inheritance is ours.”

“That’s right, this way, our hope of executing our major plan has increased.” Purple smiled lightly: “If it develops like this, we will continue to gain more true inheritances and resources, we will grow stronger and pave the way for our main body.”

...

Many years passed again.

“Heaven’s will! To think that it has such great power. Even Azure suffered a loss, what do we do now?”

“The higher our cultivation level, the stronger Shadow Sect’s forces become, and the more heaven’s will targets us. At this rate, we will have huge problems.”

“It is not hard to settle Azure’s matter, I have a way, that is to refine wisdom sword Immortal Gu. As for heaven’s will... I will think of a way.” Purple said this as he squinted.

...

“Even though Azure is no longer bounded by love, his second venerable ascension attempt failed completely.”

“What else can we do?”

“How can we resist heaven’s will?”

Purple started to enter deep seclusion, trying his best to find a way.

Finally, he found a method.

“Assimilate with heaven’s will? Let myself become part of heaven’s will temporarily.”

“Even though it is dangerous, the idea is good, we will enter the enemy’s base and learn about a portion of heaven’s will’s plans.”

“But there is something to note, if the assimilation is long term, heaven’s will might take me over and I will truly become part of heaven’s will entirely.”

“I need to find a way to maintain my own consciousness.”

After a long and difficult deduction.

“Hmm, I finally deduced it... I will name this method purple gold rock. Against heaven’s will, even though hope is small, there is still a trace of it! Cough, cough, cough.”

He suddenly covered his mouth, coughing violently for some time, as blood flowed out from the gaps between his fingers.

...

Time continued to pass, at some point in time.

The purple gold rock broke as Purple woke up.

“Where is this? How long has it been?” Looking at the unknown environment, Purple was dazed.

“Most of the first generation split souls have died. Only a few are left, they are like me, barely alive. Sigh... thankfully, Shadow Sect is developing well.”

Purple let out a deep sigh as he looked at the sky.

“Heaven’s will.” He had a solemn gaze.

...

“Grandpa, drink some water.” One day, Purple woke up and found a pair of master and servant beside him.

A young girl wearing elegant clothes along with a muscular female servant.

“Third young miss, don’t bother with this old beggar, oh, you are too kindhearted, this old beggar is not a member of our village, why are you involved with him?” The female servant looked at Purple, her Gu Master aura unconcealed.

Purple looked at himself, smiling bitterly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1372: Demise of Purple (2/2)

Purple Mountain True Monarch realized that his clothes were extremely tattered, he had a wrinkled face covered in dust and mud, he was scrawny and dirty.

But soon, he looked at the female Gu Master in front of him, thinking: “It’s her? The crucial person in fate? No, this feeling is not her, it is her descendant.”

The female Gu Master left behind some food before leaving with the servant.

That night, Purple went to her and left a true inheritance in her dream.

“This true inheritance is a little messy, it has wisdom path, transformation path, and also food path. I’ll call it Black Tigress true inheritance.”

“Oh, I wonder if it will be effective, can I influence anything?”

“But there is still hope at least, right?”

Purple left silently.

...

Northern Plains, in a cave.

“She’s here.” Purple Mountain True Monarch thought to himself.

A young Lady Wan Shou charged into this place, upon seeing Purple Mountain True Monarch, her heart sank to rock bottom: “So senior, you were already here, this junior will leave, I don’t dare disturb senior from taking this true inheritance.”

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s aura made Lady Wan Shou’s heart palpitate.

Purple Mountain True Monarch looked at her, thinking: “This is the girl.”

He said: “Little girl, you could become a Gu Immortal at such a young age, and also know your own limits, knowing when to retreat or advance, quite good. I don’t have the qualifications to take this true inheritance. I am willing to give this true inheritance to you, but, after you inherit it, you need to tell me of its contents. You will also owe me a favor, if there is a situation in the future, you must help the person who uses this information path Gu worm.”

...

“Hmph, you can kill me however you want! But I will never beg for mercy.” The female Gu Master lying on the ground said stubbornly.

Purple laughed.

“Little girl, you are quite interesting. You remind me of the past. Meeting me is your great fortune.”

Saying this, Purple stretched out his index finger, pointing on the female Gu Master’s forehead.

“This is a fire path true inheritance, I am giving you the first half. When you reach rank five and become a Gu Master expert, you can find the second half somewhere in Northern Plains, if you manage to obtain it, you might be able to become an immortal.”

Saying this, Purple vanished.

“Immortal ascension? This old beggar is crazy, is he a Gu Immortal?!” The female Gu Master recovered after a long time.

She left this place filled with shock and suspicion.

Purple stood on the cloud, looking at the departing female Gu Master, he muttered: “This girl is quite special, not only is there the smell of fate, she is also receiving heaven’s will’s attention. I’m afraid that one of her close relatives becomes a pawn of heaven’s will in the future.”

...

“Hehehe, young man, I have three true inheritances here.”

“The first can allow you to bathe in flames and step on fire, surpassing the mortal realm. The second can allow you to control wind and fly in the air, roaming the world freely. The third can allow you to surpass life and death, gaining the ability to assist the world’s people. Which one will you chose? Think about it and tell me.”

The young Tai Bai Yun Sheng thought for a while and said: “The third one!”

“Another source of hope.”

“Sigh... it has been almost a hundred thousand years.”

“I hope that the seeds of hope that I spread will accumulate sufficiently to help our main body’s plan.”

...

Roar!

A dragon roar resounded in the entire blessed land.

Duke Long spat out dragon flames and directly hit Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Purple Mountain True Monarch sacrificed his own arm to block his attack, before retreating.

Duke Long grabbed, Purple Mountain True Monarch felt intense pain in his heart. After some struggling, half of his skeleton was smashed to bits by Duke Long.

Purple Mountain True Monarch endured the pain, even though he could not move, he still tried to use Gu worms to dodge.

Duke Long’s expression was still cold: “Want to know why you lost?”

He looked at Purple Mountain True Monarch like a cat looking at a mouse.

Purple Mountain True Monarch coughed as he spat out some blood, looking at Duke Long: “I am listening.”

Duke Long smiled coldly, vanishing on the spot before appearing in front of Purple Mountain True Monarch.

A tough fist!

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s stomach was hit by the fist, the unparalleled force directly broke through his abdomen and created a huge hole.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was like a cannonball, crashing into the ground and creating a deep pit.

“You tried to partially assimilate with heaven’s will, the truth is, Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had done that eons ago. She is the creator of wisdom path, how could you possibly play tricks before her very eyes?”

“The latter half of your life was spent doing one thing, that was to fight for pawns against heaven’s will. But unfortunately, you were assimilated with heaven’s will, you are one of heaven’s will’s pawns too.”

Duke Long said this as he descended.

Purple Mountain True Monarch gritted his teeth, exerting his strength to fly out of the pit.

He flew backwards and landed on the ground, coughing out blood again.

His stomach was held together by two pieces of skin, but he no longer bled, he had used healing methods already.

Purple Mountain True Monarch had a pale expression, his body was wavering, all he saw was darkness, using only his will to maintain his consciousness, he tried not to faint.

Duke Long gradually landed on the ground, he did not pursue him, stretching out his index finger to point at Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Boom!

A grand beam of light shot out intensely.

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s entire body was flickering with purple light, but under Duke Long’s unstoppable attacks, he was thrown into the sky, before crashing onto the ground, his body covered by a pool of blood.

“As for the second reason you failed, I am sure you have guessed it. That’s right, this dream realm has been taken over by heaven’s will. The longer the dream realm manifests, the deeper the infiltration of heaven’s will in this place.”

“This time, my Heavenly Court was blessed to have gained the guidance of Star Constellation heaven’s will, we have already understood the condition and location of Spectral Soul’s main body.

“Oh, and that Fang Yuan, it is quite ironic, if he hid somewhere else, we would not have been able to find him, but because he was here to explore the dream realm, he was completely exposed to heaven’s will.”

“He attempted to defy the will of heaven, he deserves death, he will die today without doubt.”

Duke Long stepped forward.

During which, countless soul beasts gathered, it was a completely dark area filled with endlessly killing intent against Duke Long.

Duke Long continued moving forward, without looking above himself, he raised his left arm and grasped lightly.

Rumble!

There was a huge explosion, during that period, countless soul beasts broke apart, smashed into smithereens.

Duke Long had quasi-rank nine battle strength indeed, primarily cultivating qi path and transformation path secondarily. He was now using his qi path methods, in front of him, the soul beast army was like a fragile toy army.

He moved forward, his body was tough and his hair was fluttering.

Getting to Purple Mountain True Monarch, Duke Long stood and observed Purple Mountain True Monarch by his feet.

Purple Mountain True Monarch lay on the ground, his arms were trembling, he was trying to sit up, he wanted to stand.

He wanted to continue fighting.

Thus, Duke Long looked at him quietly, seeing him exert all his strength to stand up against him.

But Purple Mountain True Monarch was too heavily injured, he had no way of fighting back.

Even the action of standing was too tough for him.

But just when he was about to fall, Duke Long attacked and grabbed Purple Mountain True Monarch’s neck.

Duke Long used his pincer-like hand to grab Purple Mountain True Monarch, holding him up towards the sky.

“How does it feel to have your hopes dashed? Attempting to defy fate will result in such a pitiful ending. Even a venerable’s soul is no different.” Duke Long said coldly.

Purple Mountain True Monarch grabbed Duke Long’s arms weakly: “Cough, cough, cough, I... indeed... have no hope... but that does not mean that others... have... no... hope... hehehe.”

Duke Long’s expression changed, his sharp dragon eyes gazed at Purple Mountain True Monarch’s body.

“No wonder you are so weak.”

“You sent a portion of your Immortal Gu away!”

“You are truly unrepentant.”

“Even you could not succeed, what can the rest of Shadow Sect do?”

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s face was purple, he could not breathe, he could not speak.

He could only think to himself: “This person, is different...”

“Oh Fang Yuan!”

“You are definitely different!”

“You are a complete otherworldly demon, the best person to resist fate.”

“You are the greatest pawn chosen by heaven’s will to deal with Shadow Sect, but now, you have already escaped the manipulation of heaven’s will.”

“I assimilated with heaven’s will to spread hope in this world and influence fate. Unfortunately, I failed. Like what Duke Long said, I had unknowingly become the pawn of heaven’s will. In the process of assimilating with heaven’s will, heaven’s will also assimilated me.”

“I have no hope left, but Fang Yuan, you carry the biggest hope.”

“Let me exert my final influence at the last moment of my life!”

“Hehehe, I am really curious, after gaining the entirety of Shadow Sect, how far can you go?”

“Go ahead and wreak havoc in this world, Fang Yuan!!”

All of his internal thoughts were transmitted to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan sighed deeply: “A person near death...”

He held no more suspicions: “I understand you, even though we were enemies... I will accept this and become the leader of Shadow Sect!”

“Very good, very... good.” Purple Mountain True Monarch closed his eyes weakly.

He grabbed onto Duke Long’s hands in the end, even though his movement was stiff, he did not let go.

He did not go down without a fight!

At this moment, Purple Mountain True Monarch truly died from combat!

His messy purple hair was no longer shiny. After a hundred thousand years, his journey had come to an end.

This person who had fought endlessly in his life, he had finally rested.

Even though he failed and lost his life, at the final moment of his life, he still continued to spread hope.

He died with great expectations, perhaps this was the reason why he was still carrying a smile upon death.

This was truly –

A hundred thousand years of living in this world, being in a state of half clarity and half insanity.

Staring at heaven without bowing down, before his death he gifts the source of chaos 1 .

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1373: Acknowledging Fang Yuan as the Leader

Purple Mountain True Monarch had no more life force, he was now a corpse.

“What a clean death.” Duke Long snorted, his cold dragon eyes could see both the inside and outside of Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Purple Mountain True Monarch had many Immortal Gu originally, but he had sent most of them away, while the rest had died along with him.

Not just that, his soul was dissipating quickly.

Duke Long wanted to stop him but he could not.

The more surprising thing was that Purple Mountain True Monarch’s corpse had many dao marks originally, but now, they were all dissipating.

He truly left no resources to Heavenly Court.

Duke Long let go with his hand, as the Purple Mountain True Monarch corpse with zero value fell to the ground.

Soul beasts roared and surrounded Duke Long.

But because of his great power, none of the soul beasts dared to attack him.

The soul beasts were far bigger than Duke Long’s body, but he could actually moved confidently and slowly, unhindered.

“As expected of the door of life and death, there are a great number of soul beasts here, even if I kill some, more will appear, they are endless.” Duke Long sighed softly.

The door of life and death was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, it had existed since the creation of the world 1 . Thinking about it, throughout history, the souls of all living beings that died would reside here.

Only after Red Lotus Demon Venerable damaged fate Gu did souls gain the ability to remain in the outside world.

Thus, deep inside the door of life and death, only Spectral Soul Demon Venerable would know how many soul beasts or souls there truly were.

Duke Long did not pay attention to these soul beasts.

Even immemorial soul beasts were just small issues to Duke Long. Unless it were a legendary immemorial desolate beast like Zuo Ye Hui or Mao Li Qiu, then he would have to deal with them seriously.

“Spectral Soul has been captured and most of the split souls are dead. It is time to go outside and sweep the battlefield.”

Duke Long had the immortal killer move dragon gate, he could freely enter and exit blessed lands and grotto-heavens.

Even if Shadow Sect’s blessed land closed its entrance, it could not trap him.

But when he was about to move, the entire blessed land started shaking, cracks were forming in the sky, like a shattering mirror.

“Hmm?” Duke Long frowned slightly: “The entirety of Shadow Sect’s blessed land is self-detonating? As expected of a demon.”

This way, Duke Long had no choice but to give up his earlier plan.

He had to take out the door of life and death before the blessed land was destroyed.

If the blessed land was destroyed, it would create the winds of assimilations, this important secluded domain of heaven and earth would not be safe.

Grrr!

The soul beast army growled with fear in their vocalizations.

This world was getting destroyed, these soul beasts felt that a calamity was coming.

More and more soul beasts went into chaos.

Duke Long went against the tide and slaughtered a bunch of soul beasts, ending up in front of the door of life and death.

At the same time, outside Shadow Sect’s blessed land.

“We cannot take it anymore!” Several Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies flew out of dream realms one by one.

They were not complete extreme physique bodies, they had flaws.

Even though they had dream path dao marks, they could not stay inside dream realms indefinitely.

Once time was up, they would have to come out.

But when the righteous path Gu Immortals in Southern Border wanted to kill them, the super Gu formation activated and the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were teleported away.

These Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were created using the cocoons of light by Purple Mountain True Monarch, who expended his own soul.

In terms of identity, they were considered Shadow Sect split souls, they were the lingering split souls of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

However, their battle strength was unreliable, Purple Mountain True Monarch had only given them some mortal Gu before dying.

And their thoughts and foundation were vastly different from Purple Mountain True Monarch, they were like new entities.

“Greetings to Shadow Sect’s new leader!” After seeing Fang Yuan, they paid respects to him.

Before Purple Mountain True Monarch died, he had arranged everything.

Hei Lou Lan, Bai Ning Bing, Ying Wu Xie, Fairy Miao Yin, Black Tigress, they all came out of the immortal apertures of the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

Facing Fang Yuan, these people had interesting expressions.

“Miao Yin pays respects to lord sect leader!” Fairy Miao Yin spoke first.

She and Qiao Si Liu were among the three great fairies in Southern Border, her voice was alluring, her clothes were a beautiful pink, her body was alluring and her eyes were deep set, her nose was tall and her eyes were seductive.

“Lord sect leader!” Black Tigress followed.

Her expression was stiff, not long ago, she had fought and wanted to kill Fang Yuan.

But now, fate worked in mysterious ways, Fang Yuan became her leader in such a short time.

Hei Lou Lan gritted her teeth, sighing deeply: “Hei Lou Lan pays respects to lord sect leader.”

She had worked together with Fang Yuan, became enemies with him, and was even saved by him before.

She also used her aunt, Blazing Heaven Demoness, to trap Fang Yuan.

But later, during the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, because of a change of events, she had to join Shadow Sect and undergo a tough alliance agreement.

Precisely so, after Fang Yuan took over Shadow Sect, he could decide her life and death.

Hei Lou Lan had to lower her head.

“To think that the day would come when we work together again.” Bai Ning Bing stood alone, she crossed her arms as her dragon eyes shined with cold light, she sighed as she looked at Fang Yuan.

Her relationship with Fang Yuan went even further back.

From Qing Mao Mountain, they had traveled together. And now, both of them had their respective fortuitous encounters, they met again and became allies once more, it was truly interesting.

As for Ying Wu Xie, he was still in a dream realm.

Fang Yuan looked at these Gu Immortals.

His gaze swept past the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies. They had short lifespan, they would detonate when time was up. The higher their cultivation level, the shorter their lives.

Thus, these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were cannon fodder.

Among the members of Shadow Sect, the only ones important to Fang Yuan were Ying Wu Xie, Hei Lou Lan, Bai Ning Bing, Fairy Miao Yin and Black Tigress.

There was also Sixth Hair, the spy of Shadow Sect inside Lang Ya blessed land, he counted as the sixth person.

Among these six, Hei Lou Lan was the most trustworthy one to Fang Yuan, because she could not betray him. Fairy Miao Yin and Lady Black Tigress were members of Shadow Sect due to Purple Mountain True Monarch’s true inheritances. After inheriting everything from Purple Mountain True Monarch, Fang Yuan had a good grasp over these two.

Ying Wu Xie and Sixth Hair were split souls of Spectral Soul, since Fang Yuan became the new leader of Shadow Sect, they had to acknowledge him. As for whether they would follow his orders and act with enthusiasm, that would depend on Fang Yuan’s leadership skill.

Bai Ning Bing was the hardest to control.

She had set an alliance agreement with Shadow Sect, they had equal status. Even when Purple Mountain True Monarch was still around, Bai Ning Bing did not show them much respect, not to mention Fang Yuan, who had just become the leader of Shadow Sect.

In this instant, all sorts of thoughts flashed through Fang Yuan’s mind.

Next, he said: “Hei Lou Lan, look after the super Gu formation for me, I need to wake Ying Wu Xie up.”

He was controlling the super Gu formation to resist Fairy Zi Wei, it was very hard for him to split his concentration on any complex killer moves.

The reason why he chose Hei Lou Lan was because she was the most trustworthy among the five.

Immortal killer move — Unravel Dream!

Fang Yuan succeeded in saving Ying Wu Xie, allowing him to escape the dream realm.

However, even though Ying Wu Xie was awake, his condition was not normal.

He was listless, he had no fighting spirit at all, he was lying down on the ground like his back was removed.

He had been completely broken.

Spectral Soul was captured, Purple Mountain True Monarch died, Ying Wu Xie’s hopes and dreams were shattered.

He felt like there was no future left, it was bleak and there was absolutely no hope.

Since his life began, the goal of saving his main body had always motivated him and driven him forward. But now that this goal was crushed, Ying Wu Xie lost all his drive.

“Even though they were all split souls, he is still too young. He has not lived as long as Purple Mountain True Monarch, since the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, how long has passed?”

Fang Yuan realized as he urged: “Where are the inheritances that Purple Mountain True Monarch left in your immortal aperture? Pass them to me.”

Even though Ying Wu Xie was dejected, he still acknowledged Fang Yuan’s identity and opened his immortal aperture’s entrance, letting out a purple will.

The will was surrounded by rank eight immortal essence as well as Immortal Gu, floating in the air.

“Purple Mountain True Monarch?” Fang Yuan took a step back, feeling vigilant.

Even though Purple Mountain True Monarch only had a will left, his immortal essence and Gu worms were a threat to him.

The purple will slowly formed into Purple Mountain True Monarch’s appearance as he passed all of his immortal essence and Gu worms to Fang Yuan, like what he had promised earlier.

Immediately, Fang Yuan refined all of the Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan finally let out a sigh of relief.

Earlier, even though he communicated with Purple Mountain True Monarch, that was all he could do, he could not let Purple Mountain True Monarch send all of his inheritances into Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

Purple Mountain True Monarch had to pass these inheritances to Ying Wu Xie before Fang Yuan could take them.

Of course, Purple Mountain True Monarch did not request anything from Fang Yuan, but his intention was clear.

Purple Mountain True Monarch wanted Fang Yuan to save these people.

Of course, if Fang Yuan refused, he would not be in danger.

“To think that my gains this time will be this huge!” After getting the inheritances, Fang Yuan sighed.

In his original plan, he wanted to exterminate Shadow Sect and get rid of Shadow Sect’s remnant forces. If he was lucky and went one step further, he would be able to capture Spectral Soul’s remnant soul.

Of course, he did not bear much hope in that aspect.

He knew how hard it was to capture souls. And even if he succeeded, the soul search would be extremely difficult.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1374: Flying Away

Spectral Soul was, after all, the founder of soul path, a rank nine venerable, one of the ten cultivators at the apex in the long span of history.

It would be a joke if his soul could be easily searched!

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable cultivated space path and created divine concealment and ghostly concealment, which were in a permanently active state and did not use any immortal essence.

Although Spectral Soul’s main body did not have immortal essence and Gu worms, he absolutely was not to be underestimated.

When Purple Mountain True Monarch handed all his inheritances to Fang Yuan, making Fang Yuan the leader of Shadow Sect, Fang Yuan’s gains naturally greatly surpassed his previous expectations.

“Purple Mountain True Monarch wants me to save these people, even though he did not express this verbally. He was afraid I would be suspicious and not agree to accept his gift?”

“He really put in a lot of effort for this.”

“But if I can make good use of these people, they will indeed be a great help to me. They already have no other options, they are my natural allies.”

“Heh, I’ll bring you all with me then.”

Fang Yuan had never been a narrow-minded person.

Even when he had just transmigrated to this world, he had been like this. His experiences in his previous life and this life made it such that he was much more open-minded than normal people.

Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, and Black Tigress had all betrayed him.

But so what?

Fang Yuan completely understood their actions.

All these thoughts flashed in his mind for only a moment.

Fang Yuan stored Purple Mountain True Monarch’s will into his sovereign immortal aperture as well.

Without immortal essence and Immortal Gu, the threat level of this will of Purple Mountain True Monarch was close to zero.

In the future, unless he had no choice, Fang Yuan would absolutely not give immortal essence and Immortal Gu for this purple will to use.

The situation was pressing, Fang Yuan did not have time to inspect his gains, immediately communicating with the purple will in his immortal aperture.

The question he asked was naturally about the method of controlling the upper extreme heavenly eagle that Purple Mountain True Monarch had mentioned before.

It was very risky for Fang Yuan to use reverse flow protection seal right now. As such, the upper extreme heavenly eagle naturally became his first choice.

The advantages of the upper extreme heavenly eagle in place of reverse flow protection seal was that it was faster and could move penetrate space. Moreover, it was an immemorial desolate beast and had an extremely tough body.

Naturally, the precondition was for Fang Yuan to be able to control it.

Although Fang Yuan had reputation restriction Immortal Gu, it was not his and he had only borrowed it from Wu clan, secondly, this Immortal Gu was rank seven and would probably not have enough strength to control the rank eight upper extreme heavenly eagle.

Fang Yuan soon learned of Purple Mountain True Monarch’s method.

And surprisingly, he actually also knew of this method.

This was an enslavement path method and had a relation to a person, this person’s name was somewhat strange, he was called Hundred and Eighty Slaves.

He was an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal who had a rough childhood, he was born as a slave. He used every opportunity he got and took risks to continuously grow, finally climbing to the peak of his life.

He was an absolute genius of enslavement path in his generation.

Normal enslavement path methods were to use a higher status to rule over lower status. But he did the opposite, using beasts of lower status to rule over those of a higher status.

Eastern Sea’s Zombie Alliance had grasped Hundred and Eighty Slaves’ inheritance, and put a portion of its contents on sale to Zombie Alliance’s members.

Shark Demon had once purchased a portion of Hundred and Eighty Slaves’ true inheritance content. He wanted to use groups of sharks to gain control over that one finger flow shark.

Unfortunately, he was routed by Blazing Heaven Demoness, and with Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance’s headquarters being schemed by Shadow Sect, not only him, even his wife Su Bai Man was turned into Gu materials to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

Shadow Sect’s foundation was extremely deep, Purple Mountain True Monarch was a first generation split soul, he definitely did not have just one method to enslave the immemorial desolate beast upper extreme heavenly eagle. But what Purple Mountain True Monarch could offer right now was only this method of Hundred and Eighty Slaves.

To speak of it, it was actually quite fortunate.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was in possession of many Immortal Gu, but earlier on, he had set up the purple blood river formation. And in his one hundred thousand years of life, he had been spreading true inheritances everywhere. It was not easy for his current variety of Gu worms to use a method of enslaving the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

“This immortal killer move is called hundred and eighty slaves, he used his own name for it, it seems that Hundred and Eighty Slaves regarded it as his main trump card and his proudest method.”

“This killer move is not difficult, and I have all the required Immortal Gu as well. Its mortal Gu are common and can be bought from treasure yellow heaven. It seems... Shadow Sect had already modified hundred and eighty slaves.”

“What I lack now are eagle type desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts.”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts moved rapidly, the upper extreme heavenly eagle continued to mature while large amounts of heavenly crystals were expended.

Fang Yuan began to wantonly buy eagle type desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts from treasure yellow heaven.

Transactions of live desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts had always had a huge market in treasure yellow heaven.

But eagles were somewhat rare among these.

Time was pressing, Fang Yuan did not have much choice, he hesitated slightly before making a decision.

He recklessly proclaimed in treasure yellow heaven: “Purchasing eagle type desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts at a high price, we can trade with Immortal Gu as well!”

In an instant, this caused an uproar.

Using Immortal Gu to purchase desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts?

Immortal Gu were unique and extremely difficult to refine, while desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts were easy to raise and cultivate.

He was clearly trading at a loss.

However, Fang Yuan had to disregard it.

Soon, he attracted the attention of many Gu Immortals.

“I have both desolate beast and ancient desolate beast mixed heavenly eagles, what Immortal Gu are you selling?” The first Gu Immortal asked.

The mixed heavenly eagle was not a normal eagle, it had an eagle head and a human body, a pair of hands with five human fingers and sharp nails, its feet were that of an eagle, and it had eagle wings. It liked to use a long bone as a staff to fight.

“This mixed heavenly eagle might have a peculiar appearance, but it is indeed an eagle, I can use it.” Fang Yuan thought, before inquiring: “How many do you have?”

“I have thirty-three desolate beast mixed heavenly eagles and seven ancient mixed heavenly eagles.” That Gu Immortal responded.

Fang Yuan nodded and said without hesitation: “I will buy them. I have a rank six Immortal Gu here.”

“Only a rank six Immortal Gu? These are seven ancient desolate beasts.” The Gu Immortal said in a dissatisfied tone.

Fang Yuan was even more dissatisfied, directly shouting: “Get lost if you are not selling!”

That Gu Immortal’s attitude immediately changed: “Oh, don’t get so angry. I will sell, I will sell them! How could I not sell?”

The moment this transaction was completed, it immediately created even more uproar in treasure yellow heaven.

Treasure yellow heaven’s transactions were open, everyone had personally seen both sides transacting.

“He actually used an Immortal Gu to buy the desolate beasts? This is an unprecedented event!”

“There is something wrong with this Gu Immortal’s brain! Although there are a lot of mixed heavenly eagles, how many immortal materials could they be turned into? Using equivalent immortal materials, they would only be barely enough for ten attempts in refining that rank six Immortal Gu he used.”

Refining Immortal Gu was truly too difficult with extremely low success rate.

Ten times looked like a lot, but in truth, there were many Gu Immortals who had to attempt fifty or sixty times to refine Immortal Gu.

“It is not a fraud, right? Does this Immortal Gu has hidden problems?” A Gu Immortal was doubtful.

“No chance! This is treasure yellow heaven, who can deceive it? The treasure light it emitted was genuine.”

“My turn, I have rainbow chasing eagles, over a hundred of them.” Someone came to transact.

Rainbow chasing eagles were rather small and were all desolate beasts, there had never been an ancient desolate beast level rainbow chasing eagle.

This eagle did not have strong battle strength. Wild rainbow chasing eagles liked to chase after rainbows, there was little to comment on their other aspects, but in terms of speed, they were outstanding.

“Alright, this rank six Immortal Gu is yours.” Fang Yuan directly was ready to buy it.

The seller asked awkwardly: “Can we change it to another Immortal Gu? I had to raise these rainbow chasing eagles for over a hundred years before they could grow to this scale.”

Fang Yuan’s stance was firm: “Get lost! Trade if you want, or screw off somewhere!”

“Don’t, don’t, don’t.”

“Are you trading or not?”

“Trading, trading.”

Fang Yuan’s divine sense snorted: “If I were not in urgent need of eagles, would you people be able to get such benefits? Hurry up, here, take your Immortal Gu, my time is precious.”

Thereupon, the following Gu Immortals all started addressing Fang Yuan as senior.

The scene was getting crowded, even the Gu Immortals who did not have eagle type desolate beasts gathered to watch this show, to see this eccentric character who was using Immortal Gu to buy desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts.

Treasure yellow heaven’s commotion naturally attracted the attention of many forces in the five regions.

Among them was naturally Heavenly Court, as well as Longevity Heaven and so on.

However, they were unable to stop Fang Yuan.

Treasure yellow heaven had always maintained neutrality, no one could find its location and no one was able to exert influence on it.

In just a short while, Fang Yuan had gathered enough eagle type desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts.

For this, Fang Yuan paid four Immortal Gu, three rank six and one rank seven.

In return, the number of eagles he obtained was shocking, reaching over four hundred. Most of them were desolate beasts while twenty percent were ancient desolate beasts.

At the same time, he had also gathered enough of the necessary mortal Gu.

Fang Yuan began to try activating the immortal killer move hundred and eighty slaves.

He was careful because this was the first time he was using this move.

His speed was slow, even though he could not afford to waste a single second in this current situation!

Gu worms after Gu worms were activated, Fang Yuan's progress was quite steady.

Guh.

Suddenly, his body shook as he coughed out a mouthful of blood.

The activation had failed and the backlash caused him injuries. Large amounts of mortal Gu were destroyed and his mental energy was also expended by a lot.

Man as Before!

Instantly, Fang Yuan recovered.

He had no expression on his face as he continued to activate the killer move hundred and eighty slaves.

Failure.

Another failure.

After repeatedly failing for three times, by the fourth time, Fang Yuan resisted an intense headache, finally activating the killer move.

A bunch of strange lights covered the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle raised its head and gave a clear and resonant cry, submitting itself to the rule of Fang Yuan.

“Success!” Fang Yuan had no time to be happy as he heard Hei Lou Lan's voice: “Quick, I am about to lose control over the Gu formation.”

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, immediately letting out the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

“You will not escape!” Fairy Zi Wei's slightly dismayed voice resounded.

Fang Yuan had, under her nose, become the new leader of Shadow Sect, and was still trying to escape, he was truly disregarding Fairy Zi Wei.

But right at this time, Fang Yuan let out Purple Mountain True Monarch's will, along with immortal essence and a few Immortal Gu.

“Fang Yuan, remember what I told you. Leave quickly.” The purple will said this and activated a killer move, pouncing at the super Gu formation and colliding into it.

At the next moment, the upper extreme heavenly eagle carried Fang Yuan and the rest, piercing into space, appearing outside the Gu formation.

With one flap of its wings, it immediately soared to the sky.

With another flap, it had already become a tiny dark dot in the horizon, flying out of everyone’s vision.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1375: Battle Ceases

“Another immemorial desolate beast!”

“Someone left the battlefield!”

“It looks like it was from the super Gu formation’s direction.”

“What had actually happened?”

The upper extreme heavenly eagle carried Fang Yuan, Ying Wu Xie and the rest, quickly leaving the battlefield, stupefying all the Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals present on the scene.

In fact, when Ying Wu Xie and the others were transported by the super Gu formation, many among them had felt something wrong.

“Almost all those Gu Immortals on the eagle’s back are the demonic path scoundrels who attacked us!”

“What exactly is Wu Yi Hai playing at?”

“Quick, let us in!”

The Southern Border Gu Immortals began to protest.

However, there was not even a trace of Fang Yuan left in the super Gu formation.

He had already changed his appearance and fled right under everyone’s noses.

“Chi Gui, something seems to be off.” At this moment, in the battlefield, an expert among Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals, Old Treeman, went up to Chi Gui’s side.

It did not matter if the other clan’s Gu Immortals failed to contact Wu Yi Hai.

The main thing was Wu clan and Qiao clan, especially Fairy Si Liu failing to get a response from Wu Yi Hai, there was definitely a problem!

Wu Yi Hai had control over the whole super Gu formation, if he made a mistake, it would definitely be a big and fatal one!

Chi Gui nodded solemnly, he also knew the severity of this matter.

This super Gu formation was, after all, personally arranged by Chi clan’s first supreme elder, Chi Qu You. Although Chi Gui was not able to control the Gu formation, he still could inspect the state of the Gu formation.

It was just that this would use up his energy and time, and it was rather troublesome.

This inspection immediately turned Chi Gui’s expression ashen.

Ba De had been observing Chi Gui, and seeing the latter’s expression change to that of shock and terror, his heart jolted and he quickly transmitted his voice: “What happened?”

“Lord Wu Yi Hai is missing, the whole super Gu formation is forcibly controlled by two forces and they are fighting against each other. One has a Central Continent aura and the other has a Northern Plains aura. Just based on their auras, they are both rank eight Gu Immortals.” Chi Gui said with distress.

Ba De was immediately dazed.

The impact was too heavy.

He took a few deep breaths, as sweat started to appear on his forehead.

Too dangerous!

This situation was too dangerous.

“Wu Yi Hai has mysteriously gone missing, he is very likely to have been killed. Regardless of how the two rank eights infiltrated the super Gu formation, Wu Yi Hai has no chance with his rank seven cultivation.”

Ba De started to make deductions.

Right now, he could not even imagine Fang Yuan was a traitor!

This was also the result of Fang Yuan paying attention to small details like changing his appearance before leaving.

More importantly, they could not even imagine that Wu Yi Hai (Fang Yuan) would mix in with Shadow Sect.

Why?

Because not long ago, Ba Quan Feng, this mole in the Southern Border righteous path forces, had caused the super Gu formation to be unable to activate. At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan had saved the day and with his help, Southern Border’s righteous forces were able to bring up the second layer of the super Gu formation.

This matter had left a very deep impression on the Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals.

If such a person was Shadow Sect’s mole, how could he hinder Shadow Sect’s plan at the crucial moment?

“It probably bodes ill for Wu Yi Hai, oh, now that I think of it, I am lucky I was plotted against by Ba Quan Feng. If it were me controlling the super Gu formation right now, Wu Yi Hai’s ending would have been my ending. I should be grateful to Wu Yi Hai for replacing me.” Chi Gui was inwardly thankful to Fang Yuan.

Whether Wu Yi Hai was dead or not, Ba De soon accepted it.

Ba De had already found Wu Yi Hai an eyesore, even if Wu Yi Hai had a miserable end, he would still look at it like a joke.

But now, Ba De could not laugh.

“The super Gu formation is already out of our control, Shadow Sect has retreated but Heavenly Court is still here, what is their stance?” Ba De pondered over this serious issue.

Previously, Heavenly Court and Southern Border’s righteous path had stood together to fight Shadow Sect.

Now Shadow Sect had left, while Spectral Soul’s main body was captured by Duke Long.

What stance would Heavenly Court have?

Ba De did not have any answer to this question.

Because, not long ago, Heavenly Court had organized a secret group to invade Northern Plains and destroy Snowy Mountain blessed land, but they had to retreat in defeat because of Longevity Heaven.

The current situation was extremely similar.

Heavenly Court had organized another expedition group to Southern Border. It was not easy to say what their stance was!

Although both belonged to the righteous path, Ba De, who had held a high position in the righteous path for a long time, knew something: Politics never placed significance on moral integrity, it was all about benefits.

How could they protect their benefits?

One word, strength!

If the super Gu formation was still in their control, Southern Border’s righteous forces would still have some confidence to negotiate with Heavenly Court.

But Wu Yi Hai was gone now, and the super Gu formation was seized by others.

It seemed to be two rank eight Gu Immortals who had seized control, and neither of them were from Southern Border.

At this time, in this situation, the more Ba De thought, the more unsightly his expression became.

But he did not waste too much time thinking.

In just a short while, he opened his dried lips and made a difficult decision: “Retreat.”

“Retreat? We are giving up the super Gu formation? Our clans’ Immortal Gu are all here.” Chi Gui then pointed at those patches of dream realms: “Look at these dream realms, Heavenly Court might have a way to collect them. If we retreat, all the Immortal Gu and the dream realms will be lost, who will bear the responsibility for that?”

Ba De coldly glanced at Chi Gui: “Retreat if you want to retreat, if you want to remain, then remain.”

Leaving behind this sentence, he recalled the last remaining Ba clan Gu Immortal and left.

Ba De’s decision immediately created a commotion among the Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals.

Before Ba De left, he had informed all of them regarding their current situation.

Wu clan and Qiao clan naturally suffered a huge blow when they heard about Wu Yi Hai being missing.

The super Gu formation was no longer in their control, most of the Southern Border Gu Immortals imitated Ba De and started to retreat.

Wu Liao, however, did not leave.

Wu Yi Hai was Wu Yong’s brother, he was now missing, his whereabouts unknown. As a Wu clan Gu Immortal, how could Wu Liao easily retreat?

“I believe Lord Wu Yi Hai is alive and well.” Qiao Si Liu thought for a bit, before leaving with Qiao clan’s Gu Immortals.

Most of the Southern Border Gu Immortals left, leaving behind Chi Gui, Wu Liao and a few other Gu Immortals. They chose to believe in Heavenly Court, after all, it led Central Continent’s righteous path.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was still tangled up with Zuo Ye Hui, neither were able to get the upper hand.

Zuo Ye Hui held deep hatred towards the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, it was not just a desire to hunt for food.

This point had clearly been calculated by Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Among Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals, those that wanted to leave had left.

“A mere will dares to obstruct me!” In a short while, Fairy Zi Wei was covered in the power of Star Constellation Chessboard, finally completely destroying Purple Mountain True Monarch’s will.

This rank eight wisdom path expert finally completed her goal, grasping control over this super Gu formation.

However, she was not in the least bit happy.

Fang Yuan had become the leader of Shadow Sect and escaped right under her nose.

Fairy Zi Wei was well aware of the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s speed, she definitely would not be able to catch up to it if she were to give chase now.

Fairy Zi Wei’s mood was extremely bad.

After gaining control over the super Gu formation, she immediately contacted Duke Long: “Lord Duke Long, how is the situation there?”

All she heard was a loud sound.

Space cracked open like a mirror, and from within the tear, a rank eight Gu Immortal flew out.

Who else could it be but Duke Long?

It was just that, if originally, he had an aloof and domineering aura, now, his face was filled with a dark and ferocious grimace, seemingly enduring something.

Fairy Zi Wei’s heart jolted, immediately activating the super Gu formation to bring Duke Long in.

“Lord Duke Long, what’s wrong?”

Duke Long said with clenched teeth: “Spectral Soul Demon Venerable is indeed Spectral Soul Demon Venerable! I had just moved the door of life and death into my phantom aperture, when that remnant soul of Spectral Soul actually used the door of life and death’s power to try to devour my soul. We need to return to Heavenly Court quickly, and use the power of Heavenly Court to separate Spectral Soul’s remnant soul from my body and suppress it!”

Fairy Zi Wei’s heart sank, she had not expected the situation to be this serious.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had been a grand rank nine when alive, even though he was schemed against by heaven’s will and taken captive by Heavenly Court, the moment he was given the slightest chance, the retaliation he unleashed was actually so ferocious.

“Yes.” Fairy Zi Wei quickly responded, she naturally would carry out Duke Long’s order without doubt.

“But how should we handle Zuo Ye Hui, along with these Southern Border Gu Immortals and Fang Yuan, who has already escaped?” Fairy Zi Wei thought for a bit and asked.

Duke Long said with no hesitation: “Don’t worry about Zuo Ye Hui, it cannot catch up to Heaven Overseeing Tower. Forget about these Southern Border righteous forces, Spectral Soul’s main body is already within me. From start to finish, we have not fallen out with Southern Border, both of us belong to righteous path, massacring righteous forces is not beneficial to Central Continent’s future grand unification of other regions. As for Fang Yuan....”

As he said this, Duke Long paused and looked at Fairy Zi Wei.

An ashamed look flashed past Fairy Zi Wei’s face: “I did not handle it properly.”

However, Duke Long smiled instead: “I don’t believe you didn’t use any method.”

Fairy Zi Wei answered: “Lord Duke Long is wise, that thief Fang Yuan has already been struck by my investigative method, as well as the rest of Shadow Sect’s members.”

“Good, Southern Border’s righteous path reinforcements are coming from all directions, we need to retreat.” Duke Long nodded.

Finally, the reinforcements of Southern Border’s super clans successively arrived at the remains of Yi Tian Mountain.

What they saw was a ruined battlefield.

Dream realms were everywhere, piled up messily. They were no longer round like before, but were like a range of mountains, scattered here and there.

The super Gu formation had already disappeared without a trace.

Since Fairy Zi Wei had already gained control of the super Gu formation, she naturally could break it down, many of the Immortal Gu of Southern Border’s righteous forces were taken away by Heavenly Court.

Duke Long and Fairy Zi Wei then entered Heaven Overseeing Tower and flew to white heaven.

Zuo Ye Hui did not intend to let them off, charging into white heaven.

More and more Southern Border Gu Immortals gathered here, the scale was so large that it was rarely seen even once in a hundred years.

Wu Yong, Chi Qu You and the others looked at the battlefield with ashen expressions.

They had suffered tremendous losses this time!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1376: Evaluating Battle Strength

Whoosh whoosh whoosh.....

Wind howled by his ears, Fang Yuan was sitting on the back of the upper extreme heavenly eagle, his hair flowing behind due to the wind.

Despite the wind having enormous force, Fang Yuan did not budge and remained as stable as a mountain.

Any Gu Immortal definitely had the ability to resist the wind.

Behind him were Ying Wu Xie and the others, they were either slumped, standing, looking at the scene below, or recuperating with closed eyes.

Fang Yuan did not have any injuries on him.

Even when he had failed several times in activating the killer move hundred and eighty slaves, he had healed perfectly with time path Immortal Gu Man as Before.

“This killer move, hundred and eighty slaves, is indeed amazing, it actually lets me command the immemorial desolate beast upper extreme heavenly eagle.” Fang Yuan inwardly exclaimed.

“According to the contents of this killer move, the more desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts I have, the more freely I can control this upper extreme heavenly eagle.”

“That means, I should purchase more eagle desolate beasts later on, and nurture them properly.”

Not long ago, Fang Yuan had used four Immortal Gu to wantonly purchase a large group of eagle type desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts from treasure yellow heaven.

It could not be helped, the situation was urgent.

If there was enough time, Fang Yuan absolutely would not make such stupid transactions.

Currently, the commotion due to this transaction had yet to fade in treasure yellow heaven, many Gu Immortals were discussing this event and how foolish Fang Yuan was.

Possibly only Fang Yuan knew the truth, maybe Heavenly Court could also have guessed something.

Fang Yuan inspected his sovereign immortal aperture.

Those desolate eagles and ancient desolate eagles were flying in the Mini Nine Heavens.

There were also some eagle nests in Mini Purple Heaven. Fang Yuan had obtained these eagle nests by looting the headquarters of Northern Plains' Hei tribe, Iron Eagle blessed land.

There were ordinary baby eagles in the nests that were still growing.

Using Hei tribe's method of raising, after these baby eagles matured, they would likely become desolate eagles or even ancient desolate eagles.

However, Fang Yuan had already used time path methods to slow down the rate of time in the sovereign immortal aperture. This led to these baby eagles growing up very slowly.

As such, Fang Yuan would have to wait a long time for them to grow up into desolate eagles or ancient desolate eagles.

"For now, it is better to buy from outside."

"The more eagle beasts I have, the more control I would have over the upper extreme heavenly eagle. Right now, I have over four hundred eagles, but I can just barely control it and can only order it to fly."

"It is not a big problem to make it fight against weak opponents, but it won't obey if I order it to fight strong enemies like Zuo Ye Hui, there is even a possibility of backlash."

Now that they had escaped from the battlefield, Fang Yuan could calmly think.

It was not just this, Fang Yuan also needed to consider and deal with the issues of what these desolate eagles and ancient desolate eagles ate, and what influence they would have to their surroundings.

To raise these eagle beasts, Fang Yuan would need a large amount of basic life forms to feed them. This meant he would have to build a complete food chain, and this food chain had to be of a large scale!

"Fortunately, my sovereign immortal aperture has a very large space, it is more than enough for this large group of eagle beasts. Moreover, the territory is vast but the population is sparse, I can construct independent ecologies without worrying about them being influenced by the inherent environment. It is like a piece of white paper that can be easily painted."

"I am quite well-off right now, with over a hundred thousand immortal essence stones, purchasing and raising the eagle beasts is only one aspect, the other thing is to improve reverse flow protection seal!"

Fang Yuan had become the leader of Shadow Sect after the giant dream realm incident.

This greatly surpassed his expectations.

Shadow Sect had lost badly, Spectral Soul's main body was captured, leading Fang Yuan to become the biggest eyesore to Heavenly Court.

Even if Fang Yuan did not accept the leadership, he would still be targeted by Heavenly Court.

Just like Purple Mountain True Monarch said, Fang Yuan was a complete otherworldly demon, Heavenly Court absolutely needed to kill him!

As such, Fang Yuan might as well accept the responsibility over Shadow Sect.

“Wait until I have complete control over the upper extreme heavenly eagle and an improved reverse flow protection seal, I would then have some ability to defend myself against Heavenly Court.”

As he thought of this, Fang Yuan could not help but think of that majestic Heaven Overseeing Tower, as well as that domineering quasi-rank nine expert Duke Long.

A formless pressure inevitably spread in Fang Yuan’s mind.

“I am still too weak! Even though I have reverse flow protection seal protecting me, it can only let me stand in front of rank eights and block their attacks. But if they attack endlessly, Reverse Flow River will be completely consumed in the end.”

“Even though I have the immemorial desolate beast upper extreme heavenly eagle, it does not have enough intelligence and is not as convenient as me making a move myself. Moreover, hundred and eighty slaves... this enslavement path killer move can be unraveled.”

“Sigh, my strength is actually increasing rapidly. But what I am facing is Heavenly Court, the strongest Gu Immortal force in the whole world.”

“I need to devour immortal apertures and increase my cultivation level quickly. I can take a slight breather when I am at rank eight, rank seven cultivation is too low! But if I advance to rank eight, the sovereign immortal body’s flaw will enlarge, it is hard to resolve.”

Fang Yuan was facing a dilemma.

“It is difficult for me to raise my strength, under this situation, do I rely on them?” Fang Yuan’s gaze scanned around.

Ying Wu Xie, Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, Black Tigress, Fairy Miao Yin as well as many Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies.

Purple Mountain True Monarch had left behind information path Gu worms in his inheritance which recorded these people’s situations in detail.

Fang Yuan had also just read them.

The Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies were all defective goods, Purple Mountain True Monarch had refined them only as a veil to cover the actions of Spectral Soul’s main body.

These Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies contained remnant souls of Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Unfortunately, after they were refined, the remnant souls had merged into the Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies, unable to be separated. The Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies had a time limit, and when that limit was reached, they would self-detonate into dream realms, and these Purple Mountain remnant souls would disappear along with them.

This defect could not be resolved even if Purple Mountain True Monarch came back to life.

This was also the reason why Spectral Soul’s main body had never put its soul into these Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies.

Ying Wu Xie had also obtained a rank seven Pure Dream Reality Seeker body from a cocoon of light, but he was an exception.

Because he was once the original Pure Dream Reality Seeker, so the flaw of these defective goods did not affect him.

His soul could still freely leave the Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies.

As such, although there were many of these Pure Dream Reality Seeker immortals, they were not worth nurturing. (Fang Yuan had also captured nearly ten using the super Gu formation, but they were all released now since they had become his own men).

Fang Yuan had originally prepared to put in a lot of effort to research and study this dream path attainment of Shadow Sect, but now that he had Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance, he understood them all, saving countless hours of research and trials.

The remaining five Gu Immortals were the true manpower that Fang Yuan could use.

“Currently, the strongest is undoubtedly Bai Ning Bing, who has inherited Bai Xiang’s true inheritance, unfortunately, we are only allies.”

“Fairy Miao Yin cultivates the Profound Sound true inheritance, she is one of the three great fairies of Southern Border and is a rank seven, her battle strength is reliable.”

“Black Tigress...” Just as Fang Yuan thought of this, dense black fog started to pour out from Black Tigress’s whole body.

The fog was immediately blown away by the strong wind.

The black fog dissipated, revealed a girl with tender skin and large watery eyes.

Her whole face was covered with innocence, Lady White Rabbit was back.

“Lord Wu Yi Hai... no, what should I call you?” Lady White Rabbit asked Fang Yuan with a servile tone.

Hei Lou Lan, Bai Ning Bing, and the others looked at her in astonishment

After recovering, Lady White Rabbit’s cultivation fell from rank seven to rank six. This situation was truly hard to understand.

However, Fang Yuan had inherited Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance and understood this Black Tigress true inheritance.

A Gu Immortal who cultivated this true inheritance would normally accumulate strength and burst out with outstanding battle strength when in a fight, beyond their usual limits.

However, there was a flaw in it, the user would develop two personalities; one was a dark, sinister side, and the other was a pure, innocent side.

The Gu Immortal would have the pure, innocent nature when living a normal life, having weak strength. When they face danger to their life or their mood gets intensely agitated, they would turn to the dark, sinister nature. This dark side had strong battle strength, but could only be maintained for a short period of time.

Both sides shared the same senses and memories, but they usually had different thought processes.

However, this was not a problem to Fang Yuan.

Because Lady White Rabbit already admired Wu Yi Hai, while Black Tigress was recruited by Purple Mountain True Monarch to be a member of Shadow Sect.

No matter which side it was, they were both loyal to Fang Yuan.

“Don’t be afraid. I also had my own problems, so I had to hide my true identity from you. You can call me Fang Yuan.” Fang Yuan warmly smiled at Lady White Rabbit.

Lady White Rabbit seemed to be unable to accept it completely, as she acknowledged timidly.

Fang Yuan sighed inwardly: “Black Tigress has first rate battle strength among rank seven, but it is not stable. Now, only Hei Lou Lan and Ying Wu Xie remain.”

“Hei Lou Lan is the most ‘loyal’, but she only has rank six cultivation. She has the Great Strength True Martial Physique, but this natural talent is wasted by cultivating fire path, and she is bent on avenging her mother. Relying on the exquisite Blazing Heaven true inheritance, her battle strength can barely reach first rate in rank seven, but she is definitely the weakest.”

“As for Ying Wu Xie...”

Fang Yuan gazed at Ying Wu Xie, who was slumped down on the back of the eagle and was looking at the sky with a dazed look.

He seemed to have had his back removed, his whole body was limp like jelly, and his expression was extremely dark.

Fang Yuan shook his head.

Actually, Ying Wu Xie, who possessed lead soul into dream, could erupt with battle strength that could stably occupy the number one position in strength. Even Fang Yuan had to be apprehensive of him.

But such a person had no fighting spirit left, even if he had lead soul into dream, what could one hope from him?

“Ying Wu Xie, hand over all your Gu worms to me.” Fang Yuan suddenly spoke.

Ying Wu Xie did not speak, there was no response as if he was a statue.

Fang Yuan’s voice became sharp: “Ying Wu Xie, I am the leader of Shadow Sect, are you disobeying me?”

Ying Wu Xie did not budge, his heart seemed to be withered in grief.

A sharp light flashed past Fang Yuan’s eyes, and he was just about to take action when suddenly, a strong pressure erupted from overhead.

An Immortal Gu House appeared.

“Shadow Sect remnants, Yi clan is here, where do you think you are escaping to?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1377: Immortals versus Immortal Gu House

A vast aura descended and swept across them.

Fang Yuan, along with Shadow Sect’s immortals, got a jolt as their gazes focused.

“One of Yi clan’s Immortal Gu Houses — Bay Pavilion!” Fang Yuan blurted out the name of this Immortal Gu House.

He had laid low in Wu clan for a long period of time in Wu Yi Hai’s identity. During this period of time, besides managing his immortal aperture and exploring dream realms, he naturally did some other things as well.

For instance, using Wu clan’s channels to get detailed information of Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world.

As such, when Bay Pavilion appeared, Fang Yuan immediately recognized it.

Bay Pavilion was not tall, it only had two stories and looked flat. The pavilion was covered with ocean blue tiles, and it looked like a hawk spreading its wings. Golden islands were portrayed on the white walls, and blue waves were painted freely on the exposed columns.

It had the style of Eastern Sea.

Although Yi clan was one of Southern Border’s super forces, it was located in the north-east corner and had a close relation with Eastern Sea.

This Bay Pavilion’s strongest ability was to cross long distances, it could shoot through over seventy thousand li directly.

Southern Border’s super Gu formation was invaded by Shadow Sect and Heavenly Court also took part. Yi clan chose to mobilize Bay Pavilion, which was specialized in long range chases, it was the best choice.

Fang Yuan used the upper extreme heavenly eagle to escape from the dream realm battlefield and was planning to go to Plunder Shadow Earth Trench.

But Bay Pavilion just happened to move towards the direction of Fang Yuan and the group. Bay Pavilion’s investigative range was extremely large, the Gu Immortals in the pavilion had already learned of the situation in the dream realm battlefield, and when they found traces of the upper extreme heavenly eagle, they immediately gave chase.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was extremely fast, but Bay Pavilion could travel through space and cross tens of thousands of li in an instant.

After a few warps through space, Bay Pavilion finally caught up with Fang Yuan and blocked their path.

Although Fang Yuan and the rest were shocked, they soon reacted. After all, they had just escaped from a battlefield, their nerves were still tense and they were on guard.

“Move!” Fang Yuan controlled the upper extreme heavenly eagle to shoot towards Bay Pavilion.

At the same time, he took a step and nimbly jumped from the eagle’s back.

Before jumping, he did not forget to grab below him.

Ying Wu Xie was grabbed by Fang Yuan, he was like a living corpse, his eyes were still open and did not even blink.

At the same time as Fang Yuan, Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan and the rest also jumped.

Boom boom!

There were two strong sounds, the upper extreme heavenly eagle waved its strong wings directly at Bay Pavilion.

Bay Pavilion was immediately pushed quite a distance by the strong force, but there was no damage.

A warm light blue radiance started to spread from it.

When it just spread, this light blue radiance was only a layer of thin light covering Bay Pavilion.

But soon, the blue light quickly spread outwards, dyeing the surrounding space of Bay Pavilion into a blue world.

The blue light kept on surging and getting denser, and was also producing gushing sounds, like water waves.

Suddenly, an elephant trampled out of the blue light.

This elephant’s size was slightly inferior in size to the upper extreme heavenly eagle, but a normal person would be as small as a cat when compared to it. It had a wide back and looked like a seven storey building, with doors and windows, it was truly strange.

“This is a wild beast specific to Eastern Sea — storey building water elephant. There are seven stories on its back, which means it is an ancient desolate beast.” Fang Yuan immediately recognized it.

He was very familiar with the storey building water elephant, because he had personally seen it before in the Eastern Sea trading convention.

However, this storey building water elephant in front of him was not a real lifeform, but a certain defensive method used by Bay Pavilion.

As for its battle strength and how it compared to a true ancient storey building water elephant, it still needed to be tested out.

Fang Yuan retreated with Ying Wu Xie and the rest, while using hundred and eighty slaves to command the upper extreme heavenly eagle: “Kill this storey building water elephant.”

The upper extreme heavenly eagle accepted the command and let out a sharp cry.

It descended on the storey building water elephant, then grabbed at it.

Plop.

The storey building water elephant could not resist the sharp eagle claws and was directly pierced through, collapsing instantly; it turned back into a blue light that returned to Bay Pavilion.

“Such strength!”

“It is indeed an immemorial desolate beast.”

Inside Bay Pavilion, Yi clan’s Gu Immortals were also paying attention to this probe, but the result made them exclaim in shock.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was already fostered, although its growth was quickened, there were enough heavenly crystals, letting it gain true rank eight battle strength. It was not like last time.

Hei Lou Lan, Fairy Miao Yin and others let out sighs of relief.

“This storey building water elephant is weaker than normal ancient desolate beasts.”

“Even a true ancient storey building water elephant is not the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s match, let alone this one which is much weaker.”

Fang Yuan’s mood, however, was somewhat heavy.

“This ability, it should be the immortal killer move water life resurrection! This move can create countless water lifeforms and use them for battle. Its strength is that even if the formed beasts are destroyed, as long as the blue light returns, the loss will be very small. Bay Pavilion can recreate them easily.”

Sure enough, in just a short while, storey building water elephants condensed from Bay Pavilion again.

They all had seven storeys with ancient desolate level battle strength, moreover, there were even more of them this time, five in total.

Five water elephants condensed by the blue light charged towards the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

Fang Yuan thought: “Water life resurrection, according to Wu clan’s analysis, not only involves transformation path and water path Immortal Gu, it also has light path Immortal Gu. It is impossible to break this move right away, this move can greatly expend its enemy’s battle strength. I cannot get caught up in Yi clan’s flow.”

The moment this thought flashed through Fang Yuan’s mind, he controlled the upper extreme heavenly eagle to directly attack Bay Pavilion, disregarding the storey building water elephants.

At the same time, Fang Yuan gave a command to the Shadow Sect immortals: “We need to help the upper extreme heavenly eagle and destroy these five water elephants.”

Hei Lou Lan was the first to respond.

She stretched out her right arm, her five fingers moved together without any gaps between them, and lightly jabbed at a storey building water elephant.

Boom!

A burning crimson ray of light erupted from between her fingers, and with breakneck speed, it pierced through the air towards the water elephant.

This immortal killer move’s speed was truly astonishing!

The crimson ray completely pierced through the storey building water elephant, destroying it instantly.

Fairy Miao Yin was the second to strike.

Another two pairs of arms suddenly grew out from her body, and along with her two original arms, the six arms spread out like a blooming lotus.

The six hands moved by themselves, the smooth long fingers were moving in a dazzling motion.

Ding ding, dang dang...

Cling cling, clang clang...

With the movement of her fingers, sharp sounds could be heard whenever they touched.

At the same time, concentrated, translucent sound waves appeared around three water elephants.

The sound waves appeared quickly and vanished just as quickly.

The three water elephants were covered in the sound waves, the injuries on them quickly accumulated. They charged left and right, trying to throw off the sound waves, but the sound waves followed them like shadows.

Soon, these three water elephants were killed, turning into three blue lights that returned to the Immortal Gu House.

Earlier, Fang Yuan had only seen information on these two immortal killer moves, he did not witness their effects. But now, it was different.

“Hei Lou Lan is using the fire path killer move crimson ray.”

“Fairy Miao Yin is using her trump card — Wondrous Hand Profound Sound.”

These two immortal killer moves had originated from Purple Mountain True Monarch, and Purple Mountain True Monarch had given all his inheritances to Fang Yuan, thus Fang Yuan knew them clearly.

However, Fang Yuan did not thoroughly understand Bai Ning Bing’s killer move.

Four water elephants were already destroyed. Bai Ning Bing, in her white robe, was crossing her arms across her chest, her dragon eyes flashing with cold light.

She seemed to have not made a move, but she had actually already activated her killer move.

The final storey building water elephant had soundlessly already frozen into a giant ice block.

But soon, the frozen storey building water elephant turned back into a blue light that passed through the ice layer and returned to Bay Pavilion, unobstructed.

Bai Ning Bing coldly snorted when she saw this.

Fang Yuan’s expression slightly shifted as he thought of many things, gaining a deeper understanding of the Gu Immortals on his side.

“Hei Lou Lan is restricted by the alliance agreement, and has no choice but to follow me completely, so she had the fastest response and had no hesitation.”

“Fairy Miao Yin did not hesitate on using her trump card, handling three storey building water elephants by herself, as if she wants to prove her loyalty towards me.”

“As for Bai Ning Bing, she inherited Bai Xiang’s true inheritance and we are only allies. The killer move she used should be cold eyes, she tried to freeze the storey building water elephant and prevent the blue light from returning. Unfortunately, it is of no use.”

All kinds of thoughts flashed through Fang Yuan’s mind, as he threw Ying Wu Xie behind him.

Behind him was Lady White Rabbit.

Right now, she still had rank six cultivation, and had a terrified expression as she looked at the fight between the upper extreme heavenly eagle and Bay Pavilion.

“Take him and retreat to the back.” Fang Yuan said to Lady White Rabbit, without turning around.

Lady White Rabbit quickly agreed and obediently retreated far away.

Fang Yuan slightly flew forward and took a deep breath, his body suddenly let out dazzling silver light.

Red date immortal essence was consumed rapidly as Immortal Gu were activated.

Rank six change form Immortal Gu.

Rank seven dragon breath Immortal Gu.

Rank six dragon scales Immortal Gu.

Rank seven dragon strength Immortal Gu.

At the same time, a large amount of mortal Gu like dragon scales Gu, dragon horn Gu, dragon claws Gu, dragon eyes Gu, and so on were also activated.

Immortal killer move — Ancient Sword Dragon Transformation!

The bright silver light suddenly dissipated, Fang Yuan had disappeared, in his place was an elegant silver sword dragon that was emitting a sharp, awe-inspiring aura.

The sword dragon growled lightly, it grabbed two Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies with its claws, and then swung its tail.

Immortal Gu Sword Escape!

Whoosh!!

The ancient sword dragon Fang Yuan had transformed into disappeared from the spot.

Fang Yuan’s whole field of vision suddenly blurred, the next moment, his sight was mostly covered with the roof of Bay Pavilion.

He was already above Bay Pavilion.

There was no hesitation.

Fang Yuan flicked the two Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies down like bullets.

Under the astonished gazes of Lady White Rabbit and the group, two Pure Dream Reality Seeker immortals detonated, turning back into two dream realms that covered Bay Pavilion.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle lightly turned its body and quickly moved away from the range of the dream realms.

Bay Pavilion was in a commotion.

“Oh no, this is... dream realm!”

“This is bad, Bay Pavilion cannot block the dream realms, the entire Immortal Gu House will be corroded and break down!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1378: Wu Yong’s Chase

Even Heaven Overseeing Tower, which had rank nine fate Immortal Gu, was corroded when it fell into a dream realm. In the battle of the giant dream realm, Duke Long had personally tried it and Heaven Overseeing Tower had been in its phantom state as well, but it was not spared.

Heaven Overseeing Tower faced such a situation, there was no need to discuss the rank seven Immortal Gu House, Bay Pavilion.

The moment it was trapped in the dream realms, the whole of Bay Pavilion began to slowly break apart. Yi clan’s Gu Immortals sensed they had lost control over a large amount of Gu worms.

This situation immediately gave these Yi clan Gu Immortals an unprecedented shock.

Without any hesitation, they began to activate Bay Pavilion’s strongest method.

Immortal killer move — Boundless Sea and Sky!

Bay Pavilion rumbled and burst out with dazzling blue light, but it could not pierce through the dream realms.

However, the immortal killer move was still activated, the next moment, Bay Pavilion suddenly disappeared.

It crossed a whole seventy thousand li and arrived at another area, completely leaving the battlefield.

The whole of Bay Pavilion was in ruins, and no longer looked as majestic as before.

The Yi clan Gu Immortals took large breaths, some were even soaked in sweat.

“We escaped! That was truly dangerous, if we were just a little slower, we might have truly been trapped.”

“The dream realms are too terrifying. Even an Immortal Gu House has no resistance.”

“No wonder someone prophesied that Great Dream Immortal Venerable would be the strongest venerable.”

“Damn it, we could not catch those Shadow Sect scoundrels!”

Yi clan’s Gu Immortals rejoiced for a while before they clenched their teeth. They had retreated, it was too late for them to go back. Shadow Sect’s members would have definitely used the upper extreme heavenly eagle to escape.

Not long ago, when Bay Pavilion had discovered traces of Fang Yuan and the others, they had to spend quite a bit of effort before they were able to catch up.

According to both sides’ strength, Yi clan, which had the rank seven Immortal Gu House, should have been slightly stronger. Even though the upper extreme heavenly eagle was rank eight, it had no way to deal with Bay Pavilion in a short period of time. Yi clan could attack, defend, advance or retreat freely, on the other hand, Fang Yuan’s side was a motley crew of Gu Immortals, they could be dealt with one by one.

What increased the confidence of Yi clan’s Gu Immortals even more was that as long as they delayed for some time, they could wait for reinforcements from other super forces.

They possessed a rank seven Immortal Gu House, they only had to make no mistakes and they would be able to delay Fang Yuan and the others.

In fact, Yi clan Gu Immortals did exactly that.

They had activated the immortal killer move water life resurrection for a prolonged battle.

It was just that Fang Yuan’s reaction was too fast, he directly used two Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies as immortal killer moves and sent them at Bay Pavilion.

This had completely caught Yi clan off-guard!

Yi clan Gu Immortals also knew of some details about the battle of the giant dream realm, but they had never expected Fang Yuan would be so vicious, sacrificing his own allies so ruthlessly!

Another thing was that Fang Yuan had transformed into an ancient sword dragon, which had an extremely fast speed.

His transformation path dao marks turned into sword path dao marks, added to the sword path dao marks from the continuous use of sword eyebrows Immortal Gu, along with sword escape Immortal Gu as well as the ancient sword dragon’s own speed, it produced an extremely extraordinary burst of speed.

If Fang Yuan had moved with his own body, using only sword escape Immortal Gu and carrying two Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies, he would still have been fast, but Yi clan’s Gu Immortals would be able to react and respond.

Yi clan’s Gu Immortals had unsightly expressions.

They had Bay Pavilion, but were still attacked by Fang Yuan, Bay Pavilion was in a ruined state and had suffered much damage.

More importantly, they had lost face, having already notified other Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals, when they arrived, how would the Yi clan Gu Immortals face them?

Bay Pavilion was a scene of silence.

A while later, the leader of this group of Yi clan Gu Immortals spoke: “Let’s quickly repair Bay Pavilion, although we fell into the dream realms, there is no damage to the Immortal Gu. The spare mortal Gu we brought over can restore Bay Pavilion completely within a few minutes!”

“The enemy is powerful, he can actually control the upper extreme heavenly eagle to such a degree. What’s even more terrifying is that he doesn’t even frown at killing his own allies, such a nature is simply too ruthless.”

“We tried hard, but how could we resist the dream realms. I had wanted to fight these demons to death, but looking at the big picture, we had no other choice than to escape and send this information to other righteous path Gu Immortals.”

Yi clan’s leader poured out words after words, while the other Gu Immortals nodded in agreement.

The facts could not be changed. But with these words, it gave them a completely different feeling.

After the Yi clan leader said his words, he began to contact Wu Yong and other righteous path Gu Immortals, informing them of the situation here.

“What? They were actually defeated!”

“Didn’t they have Bay Pavilion? They could still lose?”

“Hehe, look at their excuses, Yi clan is truly shameless.”

“But we have the information now. For instance, upper extreme heavenly eagle as well as ancient sword dragon transformation...”

At the mention of the ancient sword dragon transformation, these righteous path Gu Immortals in the dream realm battlefield looked at each other.

They unavoidably thought of a person.

Liu Guan Yi!

“Liu Guan Yi is a demonic path Gu Immortal who also cultivates ancient sword dragon transformation. Do you think this Shadow Sect Gu Immortal is him?”

“Not necessarily. Transforming into an ancient sword dragon is only an immortal killer move. Moreover, in the battle of Reverse Flow River, Liu Guan Yi clearly was hostile towards Shadow Sect.”

“Liu Guan Yi is a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, but that person had Southern Border aura. But this is not a clear indication, if he is a Shadow Sect member, then it is not strange for him to have methods to conceal his aura. For instance, doesn’t Wu clan have an immortal killer move to change their aura to other regions?”

Some people looked towards Wu Yong.

Wu Yong had a serious expression.

“Whether that person is Liu Guan Yi or not, we need to find my brother, Wu Yi Hai’s whereabouts! Who wants to chase Shadow Sect with me?” He spoke clearly, his voice spreading throughout the whole scene.

“Lord Wu Yong is kindhearted, you are still worried about your brother, it truly makes me emotional.”

“We will go!”

“I am willing to see Lord Wu Yong’s divine might.”

The other Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals responded one after the other.

Wu Yong’s performance in the purple blood river formation had been spread throughout Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world by Tie Mian Shen.

This information circulation speed could not be doubted.

Any Gu Immortal, as long as they had cultivated to rank eight, would become the center of attention no matter the location. Because their every move, even if unintended, would cause huge and long-lasting repercussions to their surroundings.

Wu Yong was the leader of Wu clan, and he had revealed their fourth Immortal Gu House, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, making Southern Border’s Gu Immortals acknowledge his power.

Adding on that Wu clan held the number one position, Wu Yong’s call was immediately responded to by many.

“This bunch of people are still crafty, they want to hide behind me and make my Wu clan the vanguard.” Wu Yong sneered internally.

Wu Yong, naturally, was a person who went after practical interests, but he could not do that now!

He had to show some effort on the surface.

His little brother was missing, as an older brother, he had to look like he had done his best to save his brother. Especially since the life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu related to Fang Yuan in Wu clan’s ancestral hall had not shattered.

Moreover, as the head of the righteous path, he must take charge of the whole situation, otherwise with the interests of Southern Border’s righteous path being infringed, if he did not stand up, his and Wu clan’s prestige would fall sharply.

Naturally, the more important reason was that Fang Yuan had borrowed six Immortal Gu from Wu clan.

A total of six Immortal Gu!

As well as the huge sum of a hundred thousand immortal essence stones!

Among these Immortal Gu was bloodline Immortal Gu, which Wu Yong had personally approved before it was lent to Fang Yuan.

Even those one hundred thousand immortal essence stones were personally initiated to be given to Fang Yuan by Wu Yong.

Now that Wu Yi Hai was missing, the greatest responsibility fell on Wu Yong’s head.

If Wu Yong did not give chase, not only could he not have any explanation to give to Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals, he would not even be able to give an explanation to Wu clan.

Immediately, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building led the Southern Border experts and gave chase in the direction of the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

Although Yi clan was beaten back by Fang Yuan and lost track of the upper extreme heavenly eagle, Wu Yong had another method.

He immediately sent a message to Wu clan: “Supreme elder Wu Fa, take out the relevant Immortal Gu from the treasury and assemble the life location searching Gu formation, put Wu Yi Hai’s life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu in the formation and deduce his location!”

Wu Fa was Wu Yong’s trusted aide, he immediately accepted the order and quickly took action.

Wu Yong gathered battle information, according to Heavenly Court’s performance, they did not make a move against Southern Border’s Gu Immortals, but they had plundered the battlefield before leaving, sweeping away many Immortal Gu belonging to the Southern Border forces.

Southern Border would definitely want to settle the score with Central Continent.

However, at present, Wu Yong needed to prioritize saving Wu Yi Hai.

Heavenly Court was powerful, it would be difficult to try getting back the Immortal Gu from them. It was better to just give chase after Shadow Sect, which was not that strong, and since Wu Yi Hai’s life tablet had not shattered, he might have indeed been captured by them.

“Naturally, since Shadow Sect has information path methods to break my life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu to create a false image of my death, they likely can kill Wu Yi Hai without letting the life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu shatter. Their aim would be to lure us into chasing them.”

Wu Yong considered carefully, this thought also flashed past his mind.

However, he still chose to give chase regardless of this.

Because this time, there was not only him, there were countless other Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals, rank eight Gu Immortal Chi Qu You and several Immortal Gu Houses. With such a battle force, Wu Yong was confident of crushing Shadow Sect even if they laid an ambush.

In front of absolute power, all schemes and plots were useless.

At the same time, the upper extreme heavenly eagle was flying with all its strength.

On the eagle’s back, Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged, his eyes closed as he quietly activated a mysterious Immortal Gu.

Perceivable Dao!

Soon after, Fang Yuan stopped activating it, his expression solemn: “There are indeed many information path dao marks added on my body, I have probably been struck by some information path killer move. The probability of Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals having done this is low, it is more likely to have been done by Central Continent’s Heavenly Court, particularly Fairy Zi Wei.”

“No matter what, I need to quickly get to Plunder Shadow Earth Trench and use information path methods to resolve this information path killer move!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1379: Star Constellation’s Method

White heaven.

Boom—!

A tower broke through the air, flying rapidly in white heaven while leaving behind a long trail of wind.

Wherever it went, the surrounding beast groups would feel threat and flee, because this tower was releasing an intense rank nine aura.

It was Heaven Overseeing Tower!

After the battle of the giant dream realm, Heavenly Court plundered Southern Border’s super Gu formation, taking away all the Gu worms with them.

Right now, Heaven Overseeing Tower had already been repaired to its original condition by the many Central Continent Gu Immortals.

At the top of the tower, there was only Duke Long and Fairy Zi Wei.

“It seems Southern Border’s white heaven has not been influenced by Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.” Fairy Zi Wei stopped looking at the outside world, and turned towards Duke Long.

A trace of worry was revealed on her beautiful face.

Duke Long was sitting cross-legged on the ground, his brows tightly knotted and his face ashen, his expression turning ruthless from time to time.

His strong body was like a monolith, even though he was sitting down, he gave a feeling of a huge pillar that could support the sky.

“Truly worthy of being Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, even just a small remnant soul could be a huge trouble to Lord Duke Long. Lord Duke Long wanted to take the door of life and death for Heavenly Court, but who could have thought it would be used by Spectral Soul.”

Fairy Zi Wei was worried on one hand, while also being full of admiration towards Duke Long.

In this journey, Heavenly Court had swept away the disgrace from the defeat in Northern Plains. They had rampaged through the battlefield and taken Spectral Soul captive.

This was mostly the contribution of Duke Long.

Without Duke Long fighting, they absolutely could not have such an impressive result.

Just as she was thinking, Duke Long slowly opened his eyes.

“Lord Duke Long, is there anything I can help you with?” Fairy Zi Wei quickly came forward and asked.

Duke Long slowly shook his head: “Don’t worry, Spectral Soul is putting up his futile final resistance now, I have already gained control over the situation. As long as we return to Heavenly Court and use Heavenly Court’s power, we can easily suppress him.”

“That’s good. According to this speed, we should have more than enough time.” Fairy Zi Wei let out a breath of relief.

However, Duke Long continued: “But we need to prepare for unexpected mishaps. If my soul is devoured by Spectral Soul, he will most likely pretend to be me. So, once we return to Heavenly Court, immediately confine and seal me, then use every method in Heavenly Court to carry out a detailed inspection.”

“If I suppress Spectral Soul, I will naturally cooperate. If Spectral Soul has devoured me, he will give himself away at that time. If he continues to pretend and does not resist being sealed by Heavenly Court, he would become a lamb waiting to be slaughtered.”

Duke Long had considered everything, not giving even the slightest opportunity to Spectral Soul.

Fairy Zi Wei quickly acknowledged.

After a while of silence, Duke Long asked: “What’s the situation regarding Fang Yuan?”

Fairy Zi Wei answered: “Some time ago, Immortal Gu House Bay Pavilion of Southern Border’s Yi clan unexpectedly ran into Fang Yuan’s group. Unfortunately, they could not stop him.”

“Fang Yuan is too crafty, he guessed Bay Pavilion might have found them due to him being tracked, so he used Immortal Gu to inspect himself and he truly did find something fishy.”

“But....” Fairy Zi Wei revealed a confident smile, “Even if he found out, so what? My investigative killer move was activated with the help of Immortal Gu House Star Constellation Chessboard. This was the method Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used in the past.”

“That’s good.” Duke Long felt assured, and slowly closed his eyes again.

Southern Border.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was flying quickly while carrying Fang Yuan and the others.

A sharp eagle cry resounded throughout the sky, scaring away all the birds in a huge surrounding area.

The journey was unimpeded, they did not see Bay Pavilion again.

Shadow Sect’s immortals slightly let down their guard.

An Earth Trench gradually appeared in their sights.

The Earth Trench was deep and dark, its depths unable to be seen. Even though it was a sunny day, the Earth Trench was filled with darkness.

“This is Plunder Shadow Earth Trench.” Fang Yuan stood up and looked down at the full view of Plunder Shadow Earth Trench.

When Ying Wu Xie had led Shadow Sect, Fang Yuan had chased them to Northern Plains, where they awakened Purple Mountain True Monarch. After the battle of Reverse Flow River, Purple Mountain True Monarch led Shadow Sect’s remnant forces to Eastern Sea from Northern Plains, before coming to Southern Border.

This Plunder Shadow Earth Trench was their temporary headquarters.

After the battle of the giant dream realm, Fang Yuan’s identity of Wu Yi Hai was already exposed. Even if Heavenly Court had not exposed it, this false identity could not be used anymore. And after a strange series of coincidences, Fang Yuan had become the new leader of Shadow Sect, so he brought the remnant forces of Shadow Sect here to rest and reorganize.

Swoosh.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle folded its wings and began to swoop down to Plunder Shadow Earth Trench.

Soon, it entered the Earth Trench with Fang Yuan and the others, disappearing into the boundless darkness.

Although the upper extreme heavenly eagle was enormous, it could not be compared to Plunder Shadow Earth Trench.

Entering the depths of Plunder Shadow Earth Trench, the upper extreme heavenly eagle was like a small bird by the side of a warship.

All kinds of strange and ghastly sounds entered the ears of Fang Yuan and the group.

Amongst the shadows were auras of many desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts.

Most of them were shadow monsters.

Shadow monsters were a type of beast usually born in areas with dense dark path dao marks.

Plunder Shadow Earth Trench was undoubtedly such a place.

Although shadow monsters were beasts, they still had the innate instinct to avoid danger. The upper extreme heavenly eagle’s immemorial aura frightened them, and they dispersed by themselves without needing Fang Yuan to drive them away.

Fang Yuan and the others smoothly arrived at their destination.

This was not the deepest area of Plunder Shadow Earth Trench, but a cave in a steep mountain wall.

The cave entrance was wide, even the upper extreme heavenly eagle could squeeze in, albeit with some difficulty.

After they entered the cave, Fang Yuan and the others got off the eagle; Fang Yuan put the upper extreme heavenly eagle back in his immortal aperture as he moved inside the cave.

With Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance, it was a piece of cake for Fang Yuan to reach the main area and he had no obstruction in getting control over the Gu formation here.

“This Gu formation is pretty good.”

“It is arranged by using the dense dark path dao marks here. Only mortal Gu are used, but it has the might of an immortal Gu formation, and its best effect is to prevent the deductions of others.”

Those who were able to use the natural dao marks in the environment to construct a Gu formation definitely had great grandmaster attainment level.

This was not hard for Shadow Sect.

With Fang Yuan’s current formation path grandmaster attainment, he could only see through this formation roughly and did not deeply understand its workings. It was impossible for him to construct this formation currently.

Fang Yuan was able to let out a sigh of relief here.

He did not immediately try to remove the investigative killer move on him, instead, he summoned the other Gu Immortals one by one to have discussions with them alone.

As the leader of Shadow Sect, Fang Yuan naturally needed to do such a matter.

Lady White Rabbit was extremely obedient, she would answer whatever Fang Yuan asked.

Fairy Miao Yin was somewhat bold, after quickly replying to a question from Fang Yuan, she often asked Fang Yuan back. Her eyes occasionally gave off coquettish glances, and she even asked who was prettier between her and Qiao Si Liu.

And, in the discussion with Hei Lou Lan, Fang Yuan took the initiative to mention that if Hei Lou Lan made a huge contribution, he could consider removing her alliance agreement and restoring her freedom.

Speaking of which, Hei Lou Lan’s awkward situation was actually somewhat because of Fang Yuan.

After Fang Yuan had reborn, he had changed many of the original events. Before his rebirth, Hei Lou Lan had already killed Hei Cheng with the help of Blazing Heaven Demoness, and completed her revenge, she found her true self and with attitude Gu, she sought to gain control of Hei tribe, her future prospects had been bright and clear.

After the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Hei Lou Lan lost her aunts, and with a strange combination of many factors that were not in her control, she finally ended up becoming Fang Yuan’s subordinate.

Just like how Ying Wu Xie considered Hei Lou Lan to be a talent, Fang Yuan thought similarly.

Then there was Bai Ning Bing.

“Even if you didn’t look for me, I would have looked for you.” Bai Ning Bing spoke first.

Her attitude was completely different from the others, she was holding her arms across her chest and looking down at Fang Yuan.

“You have made Heavenly Court your enemy, Southern Border’s righteous path also won’t let you go, what is your plan now?” Bai Ning Bing asked.

She had taken part in the battle of the giant dream realm as well, and was now in the same camp as Fang Yuan. Southern Border’s righteous path similarly would not let her off.

“I will first process the gains of Shadow Sect’s resources, then I will think about it step by step.” Fang Yuan said.

The giant dream realm was gone and Wu Yi Hai’s identity was exposed, Fang Yuan had lost this cultivation shortcut.

However, after becoming the leader of Shadow Sect, what Fang Yuan gained was much greater than his losses!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1380: Location Exposed

Shadow Sect might have been thoroughly beaten, with Spectral Soul captured and only Ying Wu Xie and Sixth Hair remaining as viable split souls, but it still had many resources left behind.

Immortal Gu and immortal materials only occupied a small portion, the keys were Immortal Gu recipes, immortal killer moves, Immortal Gu Houses and so on.

There were massive amounts of Immortal Gu recipes, countless immortal killer moves, and even twelve construction plans of Immortal Gu Houses.

Profound Ice House, Unbreakable Iron Fortress, Blood River Chariot, Nightmare Castle, Green Wave Pavilion, Weaving Cocoon Manor, Golden Altar, Regret Pool, Sacred Feather City...

There were also clues to all kinds of true inheritances.

For instance, Bai Xiang’s true inheritance, even the secret of five Xiangs, the true inheritance of Paradise Earth in the blue dragon whale, clues to Red Lotus’ true inheritance, clues to Reckless Savage’s true inheritance....

Naturally, these true inheritances were hard to obtain, if not for this, Shadow Sect would have already taken them and used them to increase their foundation, and help in refining sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

Even without these clues, just Spectral Soul’s own true inheritances were an enormous gain.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had used all kinds of soul path methods to massacre life forms of the five regions. His soul devouring method could absorb the experiences and memories of its prey. His split soul technique created generations of Shadow Sect members. His soul replacement technique could create a masterpiece spy like Sixth Hair, and he had even inserted a spy in Heavenly Court. Furthermore, his own soul cultivation, his final form, Fang Yuan could clearly remember how Spectral Soul had used his soul alone to resist the tribulations in the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain!

Right now, there were two most important matters in front of Fang Yuan.

First was information path, he needed to resolve the investigative killer move on him as well as various alliance agreements, and regain his freedom.

Second was wisdom Gu. Fang Yuan had now already grasped the method to undo the soul path dao marks in his immortal zombie body. At that time, he could regain wisdom Gu's acknowledgement and obtain the massive help of the light of wisdom!

Bai Ning Bing continued: "I already have yin yang rotation Gu now, but I need to advance it to immortal level before I can reverse this female body. But refinement path is too vast and profound, yin yang rotation Gu is also not my vital Gu, I don't have confidence in doing so."

Fang Yuan nodded: "I understand. Shadow Sect will help you refine it, this is what your agreement with Shadow Sect was. I am now the leader of Shadow Sect, I can also acknowledge the previous agreement. Because we will need to rely on each other for a long time now, isn't that right?"

"It is good you have such awareness." Bai Ning Bing lightly glanced at Fang Yuan, before leaving in satisfaction.

To speak of it, Shadow Sect had more women than men.

Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, Lady White Rabbit and Fairy Miao Yin were all female immortals, only Ying Wu Xie and Fang Yuan were males.

After this round of discussions, Fang Yuan, the new Shadow Sect leader, had obtained true acknowledgement.

As for Ying Wu Xie, he was still in a dispirited state.

He turned a deaf ear to everything Fang Yuan said.

Killing intent surged in Fang Yuan's mind and he wanted to end Ying Wu Xie's life, taking all the Immortal Gu as well as grasping an excellent method like lead soul into dream.

However, Fang Yuan thought of it and decided there was no hurry for now.

He had already grasped all the contents of lead soul into dream, and only lacked the Gu worms, but this move had a huge burden on a Gu Immortal's mind, it was also complex and very difficult to learn, and there were other aspects that were even more difficult to take into consideration.

Even if Fang Yuan took the Immortal Gu, he would have to spend some time before he could be proficient in it.

Naturally, he also had other methods.

For instance, the soul devouring method.

As long as he devoured Ying Wu Xie’s soul, Fang Yuan would have memories and large amounts of experience related to lead soul into dream.

Back then, when Ying Wu Xie had just been born, he was able to quickly use lead soul into dream, it was because the original split soul contained large amounts of memories pertaining to it.

There was another reason as well, Sixth Hair.

Sixth Hair was a spy placed in Lang Ya blessed land by Shadow Sect, Fang Yuan already knew of that.

But, after Fang Yuan became Shadow Sect’s leader, he could not say for sure if he would obtain Sixth Hair’s acknowledgement.

Sixth Hair was one of the split souls of Spectral Soul, which had infiltrated into Lang Ya blessed land and slowly grew up into a refinement path Gu Immortal. He and Fang Yuan had a hostile relation, now all of a sudden, Fang Yuan had become the leader of Shadow Sect, although it was Purple Mountain True Monarch’s will, would Sixth Hair accept it?

Fang Yuan did not have confidence.

More importantly, Sixth Hair was not bound by an alliance agreement of Shadow Sect.

He could not have that.

If he had an information path alliance agreement, it could easily be seen through by Lang Ya land spirit, his identity would be exposed.

After all, no matter which Lang Ya land spirit it was, they were both refinement path experts, they naturally had all kinds of methods to see the dao marks in immortal materials.

Fang Yuan did not know what Sixth Hair’s stance would be, but he understood that if he casually sacrificed Ying Wu Xie and took away his Gu worms, there would be little hope of Sixth Hair acknowledging him.

Sixth Hair did not have high value himself, but he was a member of Lang Ya Sect. If used properly, who was to say that he would not be of help to Fang Yuan in the future to topple the whole of Lang Ya Sect!

Fang Yuan did not want to lose this possibility for the moment.

The gains could not match the losses, as such, Fang Yuan chose to let Lady White Rabbit look over Ying Wu Xie, while he entered closed cultivation to resolve the investigative killer move on him.

When Purple Mountain True Monarch’s Immortal Gu ended up in Fang Yuan’s hands, they were no longer a comprehensive set.

However, these Gu worms could barely form an immortal killer move called wisdom balances calamity, which could dispel the hidden dangers to oneself. Although it was not specially suited to his needs, it was the strongest method Fang Yuan could use currently.

Fang Yuan had never used wisdom balances calamity, but fortunately, its structure was simple, it used few Immortal Gu and its steps were uncomplicated as well.

If it were a complex killer move, Fang Yuan would not have chosen to attempt it so lightly.

Red date immortal essence started to be expended as Gu worms activated according to Fang Yuan’s thoughts and will.

Shortly after, a mysterious light spread out from Fang Yuan’s body.

Bam.

The next moment, the mysterious light suddenly collapsed, producing a muffled sound.

Fang Yuan’s body slightly shook, two streams of blood flowing down his nose.

The activation had failed.

However, this situation was within Fang Yuan’s expectations.

New killer moves needed to be attempted many times before they could be successfully activated.

Man as Before!

Fang Yuan quickly recovered to his prime state and began to try again.

Second try, failure.

Third try, failure.

...

Fifth try, sixth try, failure.

...

While Fang Yuan was activating the killer move, in Southern Border’s Wu clan.

Supreme elder Wu Fa was facing a small Gu formation.

This Gu formation was only the size of a water vat, but it used as many as a thousand Gu worms. The Gu formation was spread on the ground and was controlled by three other Wu clan Gu Immortals, who were continuously pouring in their immortal essence.

The Gu formation activated, and started revolving quickly like a whirlpool.

“Ready?” Wu Fa asked.

The three Wu clan Gu Immortals nodded slightly, their attention completely on controlling this immortal Gu formation.

Wu Fa slowly spread his hand open, revealing two mortal Gu in it.

A life tablet Gu and a soul lantern Gu.

He carefully tossed these two Gu worms into the Gu formation.

These two mortal Gu were quickly engulfed and disappeared in the whirlpool.

The rotation speed of the whirlpool suddenly increased by several times.

Sweat covered the foreheads of all three Wu clan Gu Immortals, their expressions turned pale and their bodies started trembling.

After continuing for a while, two Gu Immortals directly collapsed on the ground, unconscious. The only remaining one slowly opened his eyes and gave a location with extreme exhaustion.

Wu Fa quickly transmitted this location to Wu Yong.

“Wu Yi Hai is likely to have been taken captive by Shadow Sect, since his life tablet Gu has not shattered, we can use this crucial clue to find Shadow Sect’s hideout. Plunder Shadow Earth Trench...”

Thinking of this, Wu Yong called out to the Southern Border righteous forces: “I have a clue, follow me!”

Plunder Shadow Earth Trench.

Fang Yuan’s expression was unsightly.

“Wisdom balances calamity actually cannot break the investigative killer move on me?! It seems I need to use a stronger method.”

At this time, Hei Lou Lan’s urgent voice reached Fang Yuan’s ears: “The situation is not good! Plunder Shadow Earth Trench’s Gu formation suddenly broke. It can prevent others’ deductions, it seems our location is exposed.”

“Hmm, I already know.” Fang Yuan was not surprised. He was in control of this Gu formation, any problem in the Gu formation would be immediately known by him.

Fang Yuan was not panicking at the incoming peril, he had already thought of a way.

“Everyone, come over.”

“We need to practise the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1381: Heavenly Court’s Letter

The super Gu formation in Plunder Shadow Earth Trench might be broken, but it had warned Fang Yuan and the group.

At this time, the Southern Border Gu Immortals were rushing over, but there was still some distance before they reached.

Fang Yuan could use the upper extreme heavenly eagle to immediately escape.

However, after he carefully considered it, he decided to try using Omni-directional Travel, and familiarize with this method early to prevent any accidents in the future.

Because Fang Yuan’s methods could not break the investigative killer move, that meant his location would always be in an exposed state.

It was likely that they would be ambushed by enemies while escaping.

For instance, Fang Yuan's group had ran into Yi clan's Immortal Gu House, Bay Pavilion, earlier, while they were on the run.

Under this situation, it was actually risky for Fang Yuan and the others to escape with the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

Because the upper extreme heavenly eagle was not an Immortal Gu House, it and the Gu Immortals were not a single entity, and it did not provide a unified combination of offense and defense like Immortal Gu Houses. This meant the Gu Immortals on the eagle's back could easily be targeted.

But if they grasped the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel, they could teleport instantly, crossing an extremely large distance and leaving the danger area.

Ying Wu Xie and the others were able to escape even Heavenly Court's pursuit because they had this method. Fang Yuan's repeated chases brought no results because of this ancient battle formation.

Now, Fang Yuan was the new leader of Shadow Sect, his enemy's advantage had now become his advantage.

Fang Yuan summoned all the Gu Immortals, and passed on the contents of the ancient battle formation to every person.

Among them, Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan and Ying Wu Xie had already grasped this formation path killer move.

But it was the first time for Fang Yuan, Miao Yin and Black Tigress.

In any case, only three of them had grasped Omni-directional Travel, and among them, Ying Wu Xie's mind was in a turmoil and could not be relied on. As such, Fang Yuan needed to gather everyone and practise together.

This formation path method needed each Gu Immortal to coordinate, so there was not much meaning in practicing alone.

While Fang Yuan and the group were urgently practising Omni-directional Travel, Wu Yong was marching ahead majestically with the Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals.

"Wu Yong, according to your information, the enemies are likely to be in Plunder Shadow Earth Trench. We are not that far from the Earth Trench now, please give your orders to plan the situation." Chi Qu You said.

He was also a rank eight Gu Immortal, like Wu Yong, and based on seniority, he was from the same generation as Wu Du Xiu, highly senior to Wu Yong.

However, Wu clan was at the height of power, while Chi clan was satisfied in ruling over their area and had far less reputation than Wu clan.

Adding on the information revealed by Tie Mian Shen about Wu Yong, Southern Border's Gu Immortals were starting to feel apprehensive towards this Wu clan first supreme elder.

And even some fear.

After all, before this, many righteous path forces had looked to trouble Wu clan, some even openly invaded Wu clan's external resource points.

If they had known about Wu Yong’s strength and Wu clan’s Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, they would have restrained themselves and not have acted so recklessly.

“Wu clan lost much territory, Wu Yong is absolutely going to settle the score later.”

“After exterminating Shadow Sect’s remnant forces, Wu Yong will probably start taking actions.”

“Sigh! We were all mistaken. This Wu Yong is very scheming, completely unlike Wu Du Xiu, he actually hid himself so well. Now that I think back, this was probably his plan, to show weakness first so that he can counterattack later with justification on his side, gaining even more benefits.”

On the way, the Southern Border Gu Immortals continued to discuss with each other.

Theories about Wu Yong soon became the common topic in the group.

As for Fang Yuan and the rest of Shadow Sect’s members, Purple Mountain True Monarch had already died, even Spectral Soul’s main body was captured by Heavenly Court, to the Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals, only that upper extreme heavenly eagle was worth noting.

They had mobilized six Immortal Gu Houses in this trip, what was there to fear about an upper extreme heavenly eagle?

Plunder Shadow Earth Trench.

“Ugh!” Bai Ning Bing suddenly coughed softly, a pained expression flashing past her eyes.

The activation of Omni-directional Travel had failed again.

Bai Ning Bing suffered the most severe backlash. But her expression soon recovered.

Man as Before!

Fang Yuan was successively activating this time path Immortal Gu, healing himself and others.

A complicated expression flashed past Hei Lou Lan’s eyes, as she once again enjoyed the healing effect of Man as Before.

Man as Before was still alive, even she was once again in Fang Yuan’s camp, the only pity was Tai Bai Yun Sheng who had died.

Moreover, he had been personally killed by Fang Yuan.

The training stopped.

Fang Yuan healed his injuries using Man as Before, and began to think and summarize the reason for the failure.

As for the others, they were still healing.

Man as Before had been used on all of them, but its effect on them was far less than on Fang Yuan.

The sovereign immortal body had the properly of non-conflicting dao marks, this slightly weakened Fang Yuan’s defense, but at the same time, it gave him a great boost in the healing aspect.

The injuries to others were not serious, and adding on their outstanding inheritances, they soon recovered completely.

“Alright, let’s try again.” Fang Yuan called.

Ancient battle formation — Omni-directional Travel.

Radiance spread out from every person’s body. The radiance soon linked together, but it started to waver and lose its stable state.

Bam.

There was a crack as the light dissipated, turning into countless little sparks that filled the sky.

Fairy Miao Yin groaned, her face flushed red as she suffered the heaviest injury this time.

Fang Yuan did not suffer any injuries, he activated Man as Before and healed Fairy Miao Yin first.

“Our movements need to be united. Again.” After a while, Fang Yuan said while clapping his hands.

Ancient battle formation — Omni-directional Travel!

Another failure.

Hei Lou Lan gave a muffled groan, her brows slightly furrowed, and a trace of pain flashed past her beautiful face.

After resting again, Fang Yuan said: “Let’s adjust a little, follow my movements and then move accordingly. Understood?”

The three women nodded without a sound.

After a while, although Fang Yuan had to taste the bitter fruit of failure again, the progress was much better than before.

“Good.” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined.

The crucial key to successful activation of the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel was closely united movements of all parties.

After all the initial suffering and hard work, they finally started to find rhythm.

But, right at this time, the formation suddenly emitted a thunderous sound.

“Not good, there are several Immortal Gu Houses above the Earth Trench!” A Pure Dream Reality Seeker body who was in charge of controlling the Gu formation hurried over to report.

At once, all the female immortals’ gazes gathered on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was Shadow Sect’s leader, they were waiting for Fang Yuan’s decision.

“Quite fast, but no worries.” Fang Yuan smiled: “This situation is within my expectations. We will follow the plan.”

“Yes.” The Pure Dream Reality Seeker body quickly retreated.

“Continue.” Fang Yuan said to the female immortals: “Immortal Gu Houses have locked onto Plunder Shadow Earth Trench, we have limited time, we need to hurry.”

Inside Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, Wu Yong was looking down at Plunder Shadow Earth Trench through the windows.

After observing for a while, a sharp light flashed past his eyes: “This super Gu formation is quite profound. The creator used the natural dao marks in the Earth Trench to construct an immortal Gu formation with just large numbers of mortal Gu.”

“There are shadow monsters as well. Amazing, this scale is enormous, they have all been gathered into one area by this super Gu formation.” Qiao Zhi Cai exclaimed from the side.

At this time, Chi Qu You’s excited voice came from within Chi clan’s Immortal Gu House: “Good formation, good formation, how about letting this old man deduce this formation’s weakness and break it?”

“No need.” Wu Yong lightly refused, “This extermination trip should be finished quickly. Just this Gu formation, so what? Even if there were several times more shadow monsters, they won’t be able to block our Immortal Gu Houses’ attacks.”

As he said this, Wu Yong paused, before sending a command: “Everyone, attack.”

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building immediately took the lead, charging down amidst the fierce wind.

It killed all the shadow monsters on its way, paving a path of massacre and chaos.

Southern Border’s Gu Immortals were visibly shocked as they looked at this sight, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building’s might had greatly surpassed their expectations.

“This is Wu clan’s might!” Many Gu Immortals sighed internally, as if they were seeing a scene of the past where Wu Du Xiu fought her way through all.

Wu Yong was of Wu clan’s bloodline in the end, ferocity was already deep within his blood and bones.

At once, the Southern Border Gu Immortals felt a sense of invigoration in their hearts.

“Kill!”

“Charge.”

“Kill these demonic scoundrels!!”

Several Immortal Gu Houses rampaged like unstoppable beasts, the countless layers of shadow monsters felt like weak sheep in contrast.

Cries of massacre had already reached Fang Yuan’s ears, and they were getting louder.

Fairy Miao Yin’s expression changed slightly.

Hei Lou Lan took several glances at Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan showed no reaction.

Bai Ning Bing was still aloof and indifferent.

The super Gu formation would not be able to stop the intense attacks of several Immortal Gu Houses, and would collapse in a short while.

The highest cultivation of the shadow monsters was only rank seven, and they were already killed or had dispersed in all directions.

Just as Southern Border’s Gu Immortals were advancing boldly into the cave, the Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies stood up.

Bam bam bam...

A series of self-detonations resounded, dream realms formed instantly.

“This move again, retreat!” Yi clan Gu Immortals had suffered from this move before, they immediately retreated far away with Bay Pavilion.

Other Immortal Gu Houses also had no choice but to stop, and look on from the side.

The dream realms had formed into an all-around defense over Fang Yuan and the others.

Wu Yong and the rest had complex expressions, how could they break through such a defensive line?

It was as if they were being bullied for being ignorant in dream path!

These righteous path Gu Immortals, who had been advancing with surging momentum, were dumbfounded.

Wu Yong suddenly chuckled: “Having to use such a defense means Shadow Sect is already at its wits’ end. They are blocking us, but we are also trapping them inside. Let me see how long they can keep this defense.”

Both sides were in a stalemate.

Right at this time, Wu Yong’s expression changed slightly as he received a letter Gu.

It was from Heavenly Court!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1382: Wu Yong’s Anger and Hatred

In the battle of the dream realm, Shadow Sect lost entirely, and Southern Border’s righteous path similarly suffered devastating losses.

They lost the super Gu formation they had arranged, the Immortal Gu each clan had offered, as well as countless mortal Gu.

They had invested so much, but their earnings were so little, moreover, in the exploration of the dream realm, they had suffered direct attacks and lost several Gu Immortals.

The true profiteer, besides Fang Yuan who had become Shadow Sect’s leader, was Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court had not only captured Spectral Soul’s main body, they had also walked away with the remaining second and first layer of the super Gu formation.

The Immortal Gu inside these two layers all belonged to Southern Border’s righteous path, besides dark limit Immortal Gu which belonged to Fang Yuan.

Southern Border’s righteous path was extremely indignant at such behavior, they wanted to demand an explanation from Heavenly Court.

After all, they all belonged to the righteous path; Heavenly Court’s actions were too unreasonable!

When they had just started chasing after Fang Yuan and the others, Wu Yong had also started looking for Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals. Although Southern Border and Central Continent were two different regions, super forces often transacted with each other.

The credit for this went to treasure yellow heaven. It was because of treasure yellow heaven that Gu Immortals could transact easily and more often with each other.

Continuous circulation of goods meant frequent exchange and communication.

As such, Wu Yong was able to look for Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects without much obstruction.

However, he was not able to contact Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals.

If he could not interrogate Heavenly Court, just tangling with the ten great ancient sects would not solve their problems.

“Fairy Zi Wei...” Wu Yong mumbled while holding an information path mortal Gu.

He had not expected Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals to take the initiative to seek him out.

And this hidden Heavenly Court wisdom path Gu Immortal had used just a mere information path mortal Gu to put Wu Yong in a difficult spot.

The contents of this information path mortal Gu were about Fang Yuan and the others.

Heavenly Court had information about Ying Wu Xie, Purple Mountain True Monarch, Bai Ning Bing, Fang Yuan and the rest.

Including the information that they possessed on the ancient battle formation, Omni-directional Travel.

The information that shocked Wu Yong the most was — the real Wu Yi Hai was long since dead, the person who had mixed into Wu clan as ‘Wu Yi Hai’ was the otherworldly demon Fang Yuan!

“It was actually like this! Fang Yuan is Wu Yi Hai, Wu Yi Hai is Fang Yuan?” Wu Yong had still been thinking about saving his little brother, but now, he found that his half-sibling had died long ago, and the enemy had been disguising as him all along.

Wu Yong first felt shock at this information, after all, this was beyond his expectations.

He then felt anger!

Anger towards Fang Yuan.

This blasted criminal was the true killer of Wu Yi Hai, and was actually so audacious that after committing the murder, not only did he not escape, he joined Wu clan instead.

This was simply a slap towards the entirety of Wu clan, including Wu Yong.

More importantly, Fang Yuan had managed to pull it off perfectly.

This was a disgrace, a humiliation!

Fang Yuan not only looked down on the great Wu clan, he still ran to Wu clan and gave them resounding slaps.

What kind of force was Wu clan?

Southern Border’s publicly recognized number one righteous path force!

What kind of person was Wu Yong?

Wu Yong was the current person in charge of Wu clan, he was the first supreme elder with rank eight cultivation, he was a powerhouse with a number of rank eight Immortal Gu and even possessed an Immortal Gu House!

Fang Yuan’s action was simply toying with Wu clan and Wu Yong like they were a joke.

However, besides anger towards Fang Yuan, Wu Yong was also furious at Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court had taken away all the Immortal Gu of Wu clan from the super Gu formation, this was one reason.

The second was that Heavenly Court had sent this information to Wu Yong.

What did this imply?

They were telling Wu Yong wordlessly — We have blackmail material on your Wu clan, you should consider your next course of action properly.

As far as Wu Yong was concerned, this was a threat.

Why was it that information of Fang Yuan being disguised as Wu Yi Hai was a threat to Wu Yong?

This was the difference between the righteous path and demonic path.

The righteous path had its own rules.

The righteous path paid attention to reputation and face, even if they took something by force, they would need a proper reason. They all needed to stand on the side of righteousness.

Previously, many clans created difficulties for Wu clan, seizing Wu clan’s resource points.

How did Hou clan do it?

They first sent one of their Gu Immortals to pretend to be a demonic scoundrel, while another Hou clan Gu Immortal pretended to chase him down, and with this reason, they forcibly occupied the resource point.

How did Yang clan do it?

They had planned and prepared for a long time, they first inserted themselves in a nearby mortal village of Wu clan, then through the friction and contradictions between the mortals, they obtained justification.

Wu Yong clearly had high battle strength, and also possessed Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, why did he have to act so passively before?

Hehe.

This was Wu Yong’s scheme.

He knew Wu clan had an enormous territory. If he directly showed his strength, other clans would only be wary and perhaps restrain themselves, but they would still be itching to take action.

After all, Wu clan only had one rank eight Gu Immortal.

But if Wu clan passively defended first, letting other clans bully it, Wu Yong could later retaliate with justification and sufficient excuses, and get a bite out of every clan.

Only like this would every force remember the pain, and not dare to infringe upon Wu clan’s might for several decades.

This was Wu Yong’s plan, even his closest aide, Wu Fa, was not aware of this.

In fact, before this, everything had been gradually progressing according to Wu Yong’s plan. It was just that he had not expected the appearance of a disrupter like Shadow Sect.

The demon Fang Yuan had mixed into Wu clan, and even Wu Yong himself treated Fang Yuan as his own brother.

Don’t forget that before this, Wu Yong had used Wu Yi Hai many times to elevate his reputation by showing care for him.

Such a matter had happened to Wu clan, which was the number one righteous path force of Southern Border, this would absolutely lower their reputation sharply, and even cause other clans to have thoughts of turning on them.

Wu Yong had wanted to use his planned excuses to get back at the other clans. But with this matter, as long as Southern Border’s great clans stubbornly pressed on this issue, Wu clan’s prestige would be gone.

Your Wu clan is the head of Southern Border’s righteous path, but a demon mixed in and even left unharmed.

What face does your Wu clan have to command the righteous path?

What qualifications does your Wu clan have to occupy these resources? Are you occupying these resources so you can supply them to the demons you are hiding inside your clan?

On Earth, this was akin to when celebrities were discovered to have taken drugs, successful people who always proclaimed they loved their family were found to have extramarital affairs, or when traitorous undercover agents were found within the police force.

Prestige could not be seen and could not be touched, but it was indeed a kind of strength that could influence all aspects.

The way Wu Yong saw it, those resource points Wu clan lost were nothing.

Since they could be lost, he could also seize them back.

In truth, he was trying to take the opportunity to elevate his prestige, show his powerful strength, and leave behind his story in the history of Southern Border.

However, this changed because of Fang Yuan.

Once this matter was found out, it would be a huge blow to Wu clan!

The prestige and reputation that countless generations of Wu clan members had built and maintained painstakingly would suffer enormous damage.

Once this matter was spread, what face would Wu Yong still have to go seize back the lost resource points? Wu clan would not be able to raise its head for a long period of time.

“This damned Fang Yuan!”

Wu Yong clenched his teeth.

He had never hated a person to this extent.

It was actually quite ironic. He had himself to blame for using Wu Yi Hai to increase his reputation, by showing his benevolence and familial love.

But the result? This familial love would turn into Wu Yong’s incompetence for being toyed around by Fang Yuan.

This was a lifetime stain on Wu Yong.

“This blasted Fairy Zi Wei!”

Wu Yong was full of hatred towards this female wisdom path immortal of Heavenly Court as well.

Her intention was clear. By informing Wu Yong of this, she was warning Wu Yong, as well as using him as a tool to make him do his best to eliminate Fang Yuan and the others!

Wu Yong had to kill Fang Yuan.

As long as he secretly killed Fang Yuan, Wu Yi Hai’s death could be blamed on Shadow Sect, it was undoubtedly logical.

By then, even if Heavenly Court exposed this matter, Wu Yong would have nothing to fear.

This matter also would not be his life’s disgrace.

“Fairy Zi Wei...” Wu Yong mumbled this name.

He knew clearly that Fairy Zi Wei wanted him to exert himself to kill Fang Yuan and the others, she was blatantly using him. Yet Wu Yong had no choice but to do it.

Most importantly, this letter Gu from Fairy Zi Wei only had information about Fang Yuan and Shadow Sect, it did not have any words of negotiation or threat towards Wu Yong, this made Wu Yong unable to grasp any information that could be used against Fairy Zi Wei.

“Lord Wu Yong, what happened?” Qiao clan’s first supreme elder, Qiao Zhi Cai, asked with concern when he saw Wu Yong’s expression turning odd.

Wu Yong glanced at him, immediately feeling hatred towards him as well.

“It was this old geezer.”

“Ordering Qiao clan to cling onto and climb up my Wu clan.”

“Without him, how could Fang Yuan have joined my Wu clan so easily?”

On the surface, however, Wu Yong smiled, speaking warmly to Qiao Zhi Cai: “It is nothing, I was just concerned about my brother, who knows what would happen to him in Shadow Sect’s hands?”

Qiao Zhi Cai felt strange inwardly, there were no outsiders here, why was Wu Yong still concerned about Wu Yi Hai? Why was he acting like this?

Previously, Wu Yong’s concern over Fang Yuan was just a show, but it was real this time.

His concern over Fang Yuan now was the desire to kill him immediately!

“You still cannot contact Wu Yi Hai?” Wu Yong secretly contacted Wu clan’s Gu Immortals back at headquarters.

The group of immortals were silent.

Among them, one spoke: “The last time we communicated with Lord Wu Yi Hai was when he borrowed Gu from the clan.”

Another continued: “Lord Wu Yi Hai has six Immortal Gu he borrowed from the clan, nothing must happen to him!”

Wu Yong’s anger immediately flared by several degrees.

He had personally approved Fang Yuan’s request of borrowing these six Immortal Gu from the treasury. Moreover, there was still the provision of a hundred thousand immortal essence stones, Wu Yong himself had taken the initiative to give them to Fang Yuan.

Wu Yong really wanted to slap himself.

At the same time, his hatred towards Fang Yuan deepened even more.

It was this guy!

This guy really could act.

Even at the verge of being exposed, he still did not forget to reap profits. Truly insidious and extremely crafty!

I, the grand Wu Yong, was actually scammed by this guy!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1383: Hidden Confrontation

Wu Yong had considered that Heavenly Court might have sent false information.

However, Fairy Zi Wei had provided a lot of evidence, moreover, back then, after Fang Yuan had changed his appearance, many Southern Border Gu Immortals had witnessed him leaving the battlefield with Hei, Bai and other immortals on the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

Wu Yi Hai’s disappearance was too sudden and strange, if Wu Yi Hai was Fang Yuan, then everything could be explained.

“Send over Wu Yi Hai’s life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu through treasure yellow heaven. Also, Wu Fa, take out some Immortal Gu from the treasury for me.” Wu Yong was looking at the layers of dream realms through the window, while secretly sending his orders.

At the same time, he said to the far away Chi Qu You: “Chi clan first supreme elder, please construct a formation around this area, to prevent the enemy from escaping with space path methods.”

“Oh? The enemy has such a method?” Chi Qu You was surprised, before nodding: “I can arrange a Gu formation to disturb space path transportations, but I don’t have enough Immortal Gu with me.”

“No worries.” Wu Yong laughed, “Right now, we have so many allies with us, no need to worry about not having enough Immortal Gu.”

No one retorted to Wu Yong, all of them followed Chi Qu You’s request and looked at what Immortal Gu they had that could be arranged into a Gu formation.

If they truly did not have the required Gu, they could get them sent over with the help of treasure yellow heaven.

Despite the huge cost of doing so.

But after Fang Yuan had started this trend, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals had already started to imitate it.

Fang Yuan soon found out about the matter of Wu clan transporting Gu worms to Wu Yong. After all, treasure yellow heaven was extremely open, any Immortal Gu transaction could cause a huge commotion.

“These Immortal Gu, they are almost all from Wu clan’s treasury. Looks like they are transporting them through treasure yellow heaven.”

“There are also my life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu! Hmph!”

Fang Yuan immediately had a bad premonition.

Unfortunately, he could do nothing to stop it even after knowing this.

Transactions in treasure yellow heaven were extremely safe. Fang Yuan had once relied on this aspect, but now, his enemies were using this advantage.

Soon, Fang Yuan’s information path mortal Gu received Wu Yong’s message.

“Wu Yi Hai, or should I call you Fang Yuan? We can discuss and do a transaction. Use your Immortal Gu to buy your life. How about it?”

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk: “Looks like Heavenly Court has exposed this secret. Those Gu worms must have been all sent to Wu Yong’s hands. Directly threatening me to buy my life? It seems he should have some method...”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan stopped training with the other Gu Immortals.

“All of you continue practising, I need to deal with a slight annoyance.” Throwing out these words, he immediately stepped aside and began to activate reverse flow protection seal.

Inside Wu Yong’s immortal aperture, Gu worms flew one after another like layers of clouds, almost covering the sky of the aperture.

“This is the signature killer move that Wu clan 1 , a former super clan of Southern Border, had used to inflict darkness and terror to Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world. After my Wu clan obtained it, we have been keeping it a secret, worried that we would be excluded by the joint forces of the other clans should they find out. Now, Fang Yuan, have a taste of it.”

Cold light erupted in Wu Yong’s eyes.

The immortal killer move activated!

However, using his methods, he restrained the aura of the killer move, even Qiao Zhi Cai, who was standing beside him, did not sense it.

At the next moment, Wu Yong’s expression changed, his body shook fiercely as he coughed out a large mouthful of blood.

“Lord Wu Yong, what’s wrong?” Qiao Zhi Cai was pale with fright, quickly running over to support Wu Yong.

“How could this be?! Fortunately, I only wanted to warn and probe, and did not use its full might.” Wu Yong was filled with shock, he had clearly targeted Fang Yuan, but he was the one who suffered.

Wu Yong lightly shook off Qiao Zhi Cai’s hand.

His expression quickly recovered, coughing a few times: “No worries. It is a hidden injury from my battle at the purple blood river formation.”

Qiao Zhi Cai immediately showed a moved and admirable expression: “Lord Wu Yong hurried over to save his little brother, disregarding his injuries. You are truly the model example of our righteous path!”

Wu Yong:”...”

He was silent for a moment, before saying to Qiao Zhi Cai: “You are amazing.”

How could Qiao Zhi Cai have expected Wu Yong’s words to be sarcastic, he was still thinking his flattery had worked and was inwardly feeling pleased.

Wu Yong’s injury was because of Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal.

“Reverse Flow River’s water has decreased a little, Wu Yong indeed has some kind of terrifying method that can directly attack my physical body through my life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu. It’s a pity he encountered my reverse flow protection seal, and his killer move was completely reflected back.”

Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, and started thinking: “This is a little strange. Since Wu Yong knows I am Fang Yuan, how could he not have considered my reverse flow protection seal?”

“Could it be... he does not know my other identity, Liu Guan Yi? Did Heavenly Court not inform him? Or maybe, even Heavenly Court does not know of it?”

Fang Yuan thought of the dream realm.

This time, his identity had been exposed because the external manifestation of the giant dream realm was invaded by heaven’s will.

He had entered the dream realm many times to explore, and when his soul entered the dreams, it was without the disguise of familiar face and dark limit Immortal Gu, as such, heaven’s will could see his true body and find his location.

If it was like this, then Liu Guan Yi’s identity had not been exposed!

“Damn it.” Fang Yuan’s heart suddenly sank when he thought of this: “I have activated reverse flow protection seal now, and with the investigative killer move on me, am I not telling others that I am Liu Guan Yi?! Whether or not Heavenly Court discovered this identity before, now that I have activated reverse flow protection seal, they definitely know of it.”

This was a small hidden confrontation.

A brand new battle.

It involved three sides, Fang Yuan, Wu Yong and Heavenly Court.

Wu Yong suffered backlash from his own method, but his injuries were not serious. Fang Yuan did not suffer any injuries, but had exposed a lot of information. Heavenly Court was manipulating from behind the scenes, making Wu Yong and Fang Yuan fight each other, without using their own strength.

This was Fairy Zi Wei’s scheme.

This Heavenly Court wisdom path Gu Immortal grasped crucial clues and information, and immediately displayed her powerful scheming ability, moreover, she handled it with extreme finesse.

Wu Yong sent another letter to Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan paid no more attention to it.

The training of the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel finally showed results and they were getting closer to success.

However, Fang Yuan had now become a ‘burden’.

He needed to maintain reverse flow protection seal at all times to guard against Wu Yong’s attacks, his focus was mostly placed on this, and so, it was difficult to pay attention to Omni-directional Travel.

However, after Fang Yuan intentionally slowed down the pace, they were finally able to activate it little by little.

A resplendent radiance illuminated their surroundings.

The light quickly dissipated, Fang Yuan and the rest had disappeared from the spot.

The intense turbulence of space path was more or less sensed by the Southern

Border Gu Immortals outside the dream realm.

“They have left. Maybe, one or two are left behind.” Wu Yong was not surprised.

“But our Gu formation has yet to be constructed fully. They actually had such methods? Why didn’t they use it earlier on? It definitely has some serious flaws.” Qiao Zhi Cai guessed.

Chi Qu You stroked his beard: “No worries. Although my super Gu formation has not been arranged perfectly, it has produced some results. I believe that right now, they should have already been separated.”

Many Southern Border Gu Immortals were clueless, but Wu Yong did not stint on his praise: “Chi clan’s first supreme elder is truly formidable!”

Since Wu Yong knew Fang Yuan and the rest had Omni-directional Travel, he had predicted they would use this method to escape, how could he not have arranged a method to deal with it?

He had already secretly transmitted the information to Chi Qu You and had him arrange a countermeasure against it.

Chi Qu You was a rank eight Gu Immortal, a formation path great grandmaster, with a concrete goal and information, he could make an appropriate response.

Huff!

Bai Ning Bing had just stepped on the ground, when she coughed out a large mouthful of blood, she felt exhausted and her face was deathly pale.

“This is not our intended destination!” Bai Ning Bing’s dragon pupils slightly shrunk.

She quickly contacted the others.

The ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel had been disrupted, the Shadow Sect Gu Immortals were separated, far from each other.

Besides Fang Yuan, each of them were injured to some degree.

“What should we do, sect leader?” Fairy Miao Yin quickly inquired.

Fang Yuan hesitated.

Should he escape by himself using the upper extreme heavenly eagle? Or should he waste time to regather the Shadow Sect immortals?

By now, the Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies had basically all detonated into dream realms back in Plunder Shadow Earth Trench.

There were still a few who were left in the immortal apertures of Hei Lou Lan and the others, including Ying Wu Xie, who was in Lady White Rabbit’s immortal aperture.

Dream realms were invaded by heaven’s will, the Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies were also paid attention to by heaven’s will at all times, keeping them near oneself was the same as leaking their location.

However, Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies could self-detonate into dream realms at crucial times and be used to obstruct Immortal Gu Houses. As such, Fang Yuan was keeping them with him.

The investigative killer move on him had not been broken. There was also his life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu, which were in Wu clan’s hands, more importantly, Wu clan actually had methods to attack Fang Yuan through them.

The situation could be said to be extremely bad and dangerous!

It was difficult for Fang Yuan to deal with even one Immortal Gu House. The upper extreme heavenly eagle was not reliable, although it had rank eight strength, it would not risk its life if it encountered a strong enemy. Fang Yuan’s control over it had yet to be improved.

Dark limit Immortal Gu was also lost, heaven’s will could now monitor Fang Yuan at all times and easily make arrangements.

“Moreover, they might also have been struck by investigative methods as well.” Fang Yuan’s gaze turned gloomy.

After coming out of Plunder Shadow Earth Trench, Fang Yuan’s next destination was Western Desert.

Among the five regions, Western Desert had the highest quantity of Shadow Sect’s remaining resources. Because Ying Wu Xie, Purple Mountain True Monarch and the others had traveled the other four regions, and plundered all the remaining resources and Immortal Gu that they could plunder. Only Western Desert remained.

“Should I go to Western Desert alone?”

“It is a pity to sacrifice them like this. Also, as long as I don’t break the investigative method on me, my whereabouts will always be grasped by others.”

“Lang Ya Sect...”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1384: Respective Trials

Rumble...

Air currents surged and great waves billowed. Glorious radiance shined, creating a magnificent scene.

From within the light, a figure gradually walked out.

He was extremely tall, about nine feet, with a well-built body. He had long and dense black hair that draped behind him like a cloak, slightly waving as he walked forward.

The most eye-catching part was this Gu Immortal had a pair of spiral dragon horns on his forehead, which seemed to be made of purple gold, shining brightly.

Fairy Zi Wei had already waited for a long time, she went up and bowed with joy: “Lord Duke Long.”

This person was none other than Duke Long.

He had personally led the Central Continent immortals in Heaven Overseeing Tower, becoming the biggest winner of the battle of the dream realm.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was extremely fast, it returned to Central Continent after quickly crossing two regions in white heaven.

The immortals of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects left by themselves, while Duke Long and Fairy Zi Wei returned to Heavenly Court.

As per Duke Long’s instructions, Fairy Zi Wei activated Heavenly Court’s Gu formation to screen Duke Long’s identity and prevent him from being possessed by Spectral Soul.

From the current situation, it looked like Spectral Soul did not succeed in possession, and Duke Long was still Duke Long.

But...

His face was ashen, his brows were deeply knotted, and every step he took, his soul felt a tremor.

“As expected of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, even after death, his soul path attainment is still unrivaled. I will use our Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard to thoroughly suppress him.” Duke Long said, “Fairy Zi Wei, you shall continue to lead Heavenly Court, do your best to completely eliminate Fang Yuan and the rest.”

Fairy Zi Wei nodded: “I have already notified Wu Yong and have borrowed the strength of Southern Border’s Gu Immortals to separate Fang Yuan and the rest of Shadow Sect members. Not long ago, I sent another letter to Wu Yong, informing him of the specific location of these Shadow Sect members. I estimate, we will receive news of success within a few days.”

Duke Long nodded lightly, a trace of admiration flashing past his eyes as he looked at Fairy Zi Wei.

This was the incredible power of a wisdom path Gu Immortal!

They could pry into the secrets of heaven and earth with just one event. They could appraise people’s hearts, and make others fight for them while they watch from far away.

Fairy Zi Wei herself had extraordinary talent, and was an elite among rank eight Gu Immortals, this was the reason why she had been accepted into Heavenly Court. And with the use of Star Constellation Chessboard, she could be said to be among the top three wisdom path experts in the present.

The reason why she could not be said to be number one, was because the world was vast, there were many experts who lived in seclusion. Even Heavenly Court did not know the specific details. Chaos had to descend, the world had to be turned upside down, before these experts made their appearance.

Previously, Fairy Zi Wei had not been able to make many achievements because she lacked crucial clues.

At that time, Fang Yuan’s defense was too good.

But it was different now.

Duke Long continued to instruct: “This demon Fang Yuan, we must take his life. He is a complete otherworldly demon, the only natural enemy of fate Gu. But, he is also the long-awaited inheritor of Red Lotus. He not only has Giant Sun’s true inheritance, but also will gain Red Lotus’ true inheritance.”

“The great era is coming, our Heavenly Court needs to have our fourth Immortal Venerable, Great Dream Immortal Venerable. To receive and guide her, we need to put in all our effort to remove all obstacles. Fang Yuan, Giant Sun, Red Lotus, all of them.”

“Everything is for Great Dream Immortal Venerable, Zi Wei, do you understand?”

“I understand.” Fairy Zi Wei nodded, “Just like you arranged, that person is now in Southern Border.”

“Good.” Duke Long nodded, he did not speak any further, turning around and leaving.

Fairy Zi Wei stood on the spot, quietly seeing off Duke Long with her gaze, until his tall body completely disappeared into the immortal graveyard.

She slowly breathed out a sigh, her eyes glittering as she thought of the huge task.

“Heavenly Court is to be the strongest. For all... eternity!” She softly mumbled.

Southern Border.

A white figure quickly streaked through the air.

Soon after, thunder and fire arrived, exploding in a line behind the figure.

It was a small error, but it resulted in a large discrepancy.

The white figure dodged in time, coming out safe and sound. It then stopped and casually waved backwards.

Whoosh!

In an instant, ice and snow flew, and cold wind roared.

A figure came out of the thunder and fire, and had wanted to chase, but it quickly stopped and used defensive methods.

Several breaths later, this small valley turned into a land of ice and snow, ice crystals could be seen everywhere, shining brightly under the sunlight while releasing cold air.

“Having rank six cultivation level but rank seven battle strength? Terrifying, truly worthy of a Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique Gu Immortal.” Chai clan rank seven expert Chai Po Jun inwardly praised, before increasing his strength.

Bam.

The thick ice that had formed on his body could not resist his fierce power, immediately shattering into pieces.

He was thin and shriveled, his skin was slightly black as if he had been forged in iron, his fierce eyes staring at his opponent, who was standing on a high slope.

His opponent was dressed in white, and had an extremely graceful figure.

Bright silver hair flowed down to her waist. Her pale blue dragon eyes emitting a cold aura to the outside world. Her skin was white as snow, her expression was cold, and with an unparalleled appearance, even Chai Po Jun’s soul was stirred when he first saw this beauty!

The more eye-catching part was the pair of small and cute red dragon horns that were growing on this female immortal’s forehead.

She was dragon lady Bai Ning Bing.

She had activated the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel with Fang Yuan and the rest, but because of Chi Qu You’s Gu formation, the battle formation was disrupted and the Gu Immortals were separated in all directions.

Bai Ning Bing had been teleported to this place and had immediately treated her injuries. She then moved towards the gathering point which Fang Yuan had set, but was intercepted by Chai Po Jun.

An intense battle began as a result.

They fought for dozens of rounds and had battled through hundreds of li, but were unable to determine a victor.

Two pairs of eyes gazed at each other. Chai Po Jun did not immediately initiate the attack.

Bai Ning Bing stared at Chai Po Jun’s skin with her blue dragon eyes, pondering: “This is the neutralize wood body created by Chai Po Jun? Even if it is an immortal killer move attacking this body, as long as they are not powerful enough, their strength will be sharply reduced and end up at the level of a mortal killer move.”

Chai Po Jun’s neutralize wood body was a unique move, it directly destroyed Bai Ning Bing’s cold eyes immortal killer move.

Bai Ning Bing’s cold eyes immortal killer move was a move that was quite troublesome to deal with. In the past, Fang Yuan had been struck by this move when he was chasing Ying Wu Xie and the rest.

However, Chai Po Jun’s neutralize wood body could directly disregard cold eyes.

Naturally, Bai Xiang’s true inheritance did not just have cold eyes, as such, while fighting with Bai Ning Bing, Chai Po Jun had been inflicted with quite a few injuries.

“Amazing.” Chai Po Jun suddenly spoke: “I have to hand it to you, Bai Ning Bing.”

His tone was flat, without any fluctuation in his pitch. In this silent battlefield, this strange tone seemed to fade into the cold air.

“You are only a rank six, but I am actually finding trouble dealing with you.”

“I have been famous for a long time, and have long been a reputed rank seven fire path expert in Southern Border. But look at me now, I am actually unable to dispel this frost energy on me!”

“One of the ten extreme physiques, Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique, as well as Bai Xiang’s true inheritance... it really makes people envious.”

“If you were kind and walked the righteous path, you would definitely have a place in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world. A pity that you have fallen to the demonic path, bringing disaster to countless beings, your ending can only be death.”

As he said this, Chai Po Jun paused, slightly turning his head to look at the horizon.

Thunder rumbled.

Crackle.

Lightning spread far and wide, cleaving ice and rocks, another rank seven expert had suddenly descended.

“Bai Ning Bing, you think you can escape after attacking Southern Border’s righteous path?” This expert’s eyes shined fiercely as he bellowed.

Chai Po Jun let out a breath of air when he saw the reinforcement.

He had intentionally spoken a lot of superfluous words to stall for time.

After fighting with Bai Ning Bing, he deeply realized it was difficult for him to win against Bai Ning Bing, let alone take her life.

He needed backup.

Fortunately, Wu Yong was in charge of the whole situation, and with Fairy Zi Wei’s swift information, he immediately dispatched Gu Immortals to besiege the scattered Shadow Sect members.

“Be careful, this woman is extremely strong, we can’t be careless.”

“Relax, I have the information given by Lord Wu Yong. As long as we hold her here for some time, an expert specialized in battlefield killer moves will come to help us.”

Just as the two were secretly communicating, Bai Ning Bing suddenly spoke.

Her nature was cold as ice, she had remained silent during the whole battle. This was the first time she spoke.

“Idiots.”

It was a cold and arrogant voice, but at the same time, it was very pleasant to listen to, making the two rank seven experts slightly dazed.

At the next moment, Bai Ning Bing suddenly erupted with a powerful aura.

“Damn! What immortal killer move is this? Its aura alone is so terrifying.”

“I was delaying to wait for backup, I didn’t expect Bai Ning Bing to also be delaying for time so she could prepare her killer move!”

The backup’s heart shook, while Chai Po Jun shouted and blamed himself for walking into a trap.

...

“There is the eerie fire tunnel ahead. As long as I enter it, I can guard against deductions and wait for help.” Hei Lou Lan moved quickly.

In her vision, trees turned into afterimages as she quickly moved past them.

Hei Lou Lan had ended up in this place after the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel failed, but she had immediately received Fang Yuan’s instructions, to move to a hidden location about a hundred li ahead and take refuge while waiting for others.

Without doubt, Hei Lou Lan’s luck was pretty good, as not far from her was the eerie fire tunnel.

This was a formation set up by Purple Mountain True Monarch while he was alive, it was constructed with eerie fire immortal materials and had the effect of concealment by blocking wisdom path deductions.

After a while of running, the eerie fire tunnel was already within five li.

However, right at this time, Hei Lou Lan suddenly stopped.

She gazed at the inconspicuous small tree ahead, her brows furrowed and all kinds of Gu worm aura gradually rose from her body.

“You only saw my Gu formation now, Hei Lou Lan, your vision is quite poor.” A jesting voice came from nowhere.

The next moment, the Gu formation activated.

Hei Lou Lan’s vision suddenly changed, the mountains and grassy lands disappeared, only a desert remained where not even grass grew.

Hei Lou Lan’s pupils contracted.

Being trapped in an immortal formation was the worst situation.

If she had encountered an enemy, she could escape. But in a Gu formation, she was caged.

There was another thing Hei Lou Lan suspected.

“My speed was not slow. I have been moving according to Fang Yuan’s instructions.”

“The enemy actually knew my movement route, and also set up a Gu formation earlier.”

“Did Fang Yuan sacrifice me, luring the enemy to me so that he had time to escape?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1385: Fang Yuan’s Judgment

Boom!

A huge explosion occurred, flames raged everywhere.

Scalding air currents gathered into a solid air wall that fiercely repelled everything.

At once, yellow sand filled the Gu formation, and smoke rose up.

Dust gradually settled down, revealing a lone figure.

It was Hei Lou Lan.

She was gasping heavily, her body covered in a fiery dress. This gorgeous dress that was originally filled with flames now only had some bits of fire remaining.

“Even this move cannot destroy the Gu formation?” Sensing she was still inside the Gu formation, Hei Lou Lan’s heart sank to rock bottom.

The fight had been ongoing for over an hour, Hei Lou Lan had used all her methods but was unable to destroy this Gu formation.

She was completely in a disadvantageous and passive state.

In fact, during the whole fight, she did not even know what her opponent looked like.

This Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortal was controlling the Gu formation from behind the scenes, and had never revealed himself.

“I must admit... Hei Lou Lan, you are really strong.”

“It is a pity that you do not possess even a meager amount of formation path attainment.”

“I will be honest with you, even if your battle strength doubled, you still won’t be able to forcibly break my signature Gu formation.”

As he said this, the formation path Gu Immortal let out a long laugh of satisfaction.

Hei Lou Lan snorted, sighing inwardly: “I don’t have much immortal essence left and I have used all my methods. To think that I, Hei Lou Lan, would finally die here. Oh! Mother, I could not avenge you, although Hei tribe is already destroyed, Hei Cheng is still alive, this is my biggest regret!!”

Right at this time, the formation path Gu Immortal’s laughter abruptly stopped.

“Damn it!” He let out a shout in which his fright could be clearly heard.

“A chance?!” Hei Lou Lan roused herself.

At the next moment, she saw the grey world of the Gu formation suddenly brightening up with long rays of light.

Sword light!

The sword lights flashed by, but they left behind long lines of white marks in the dark sky.

As the white marks rapidly enlarged, Hei Lou Lan heard a resonant dragon roar that quickly turned louder and louder until it was the only thing she could hear.

Hei Lou Lan’s mind jolted.

She was extremely familiar with this dragon roar.

She had a heavy impression of it.

Because not long ago, Hei Lou Lan had been hunted down miserably by the creator of this sound, and was only able to barely survive with the combined strength of Ying Wu Xie and the rest.

“Fang Yuan!” Hei Lou Lan almost called out in joy.

Never before had she felt Fang Yuan’s dragon roar would sound so beautiful.

The white sword marks were exceptionally conspicuous in the dark sky.

The sword marks were enlarging rapidly, and like tearing open a mouth, bright light poured inside this enlarging mouth.

“No——!” That formation expert Gu Immortal let out an unresigned cry.

At the next moment, the immortal formation that made Hei Lou Lan suffer indescribably shattered loudly.

Light filled her vision.

Hei Lou Lan was on guard, her squinting eyes slowly opened up, and after adapting to the light, she saw Fang Yuan standing right beside her.

And that Southern Border Gu Immortal was being jointly attacked by Fairy Miao Yin and Black Tigress.

“I am safe!” Hei Lou Lan immediately let out a breath of relief and relaxed her mind.

The joy of escaping from death soon faded.

She, who had an ambitious and ruthless nature, only glanced at Fang Yuan once, before sitting cross-legged on the ground and healing her injuries.

As far as Hei Lou Lan was concerned, the situation just before was extremely dangerous.

Her injuries were serious, proving that her life had been hanging by a thread.

Fang Yuan did not help to heal her, Fang Yuan did not have any presentable healing method other than Man as Before.

If it were Fang Yuan who was injured, apart from using Man as Before, he could also transform into an ancient desolate beast and rely on the ancient desolate beast’s self recovery ability to heal himself.

But for Hei Lou Lan, this transformation path method was not feasible.

The battle soon ended.

Fairy Miao Yin and Black Tigress were rank seven experts, and they were jointly attacking a rank seven Gu Immortal, they naturally had the advantage.

And this rank seven Southern Border Gu Immortal’s main cultivation was formation path. He was best at setting up Gu formations, but close combat was his weakness.

More importantly, his immortal formation had been destroyed by Fang Yuan, he suffered a backlash, immediately suffering heavy injuries.

With injuries from both this and the attacks, this rank seven Gu Immortal quickly lost his life.

This was a rank seven formation path Gu Immortal, they were rather rare, Fang Yuan stored the corpse in his sovereign immortal aperture and did not immediately annex it.

He called out to the upper extreme heavenly eagle: “Go! We will reinforce Bai Ning Bing.”

The group of immortals knew the urgency of the situation, with just a slight delay, they could be besieged by a large Southern Border group.

It was because of this Fang Yuan did not hastily merge this corpse’s immortal aperture into his sovereign immortal aperture, and instead hurried on the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

By the time they saw Bai Ning Bing, the battle had ended.

In all the surroundings, it was a world of ice and snow.

Bai Ning Bing was in Bai Xiang form, proudly standing on top of a snowy peak. And her opponents – two were dead and one was injured.

Bai Ning Bing actually won in a one versus three!

“Bai Xiang, right, this is the killer move Bai Xiang! The killer move that once brought white terror to the whole of Southern Border, who could have thought it would reappear in Bai Ning Bing!”

The injured Southern Border Gu Immortal was filled with fright, and used all his strength to retreat.

But when he saw the upper extreme heavenly eagle appearing in the horizon, he almost lost hope.

However, Fang Yuan did not chase him, instead taking Bai Ning Bing and immediately leaving.

Right now, they had become fugitives and had to fight for every second, they could not waste their precious time on this rank seven Gu Immortal.

Since this rank seven Gu Immortal could escape death while his other two allies had already died, he definitely had methods to flee, and it would not be easy to kill him in a short time period.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle changed directions, flying towards Western Desert.

Bai Ning Bing canceled the killer move Bai Xiang, and immediately collapsed on the eagle’s back.

She was already spent, the killer move Bai Xiang was abnormally powerful, but it was very taxing on the mind and its consumption of immortal essence was also extremely fast. To Bai Ning Bing, it was an extremely heavy burden.

If that fleeing Southern Border Gu Immortal had continued to fight, he might have been able to see through Bai Ning Bing’s facade.

A pity he was frightened badly by Bai Xiang.

This immortal killer move was terrifying in all aspects, its user could revive from just a small fragment, they were almost an invulnerable white monster.

Unless someone could break this killer move, or kill Bai Ning Bing instantly without leaving behind even a fragment.

Bai Ning Bing fell unconscious immediately after canceling the killer move.

If Fang Yuan and the rest had not come to her rescue, she might have died from mental exhaustion. Fortunately, Fang Yuan had a good knowledge of wisdom path methods and could heal this side-effect.

When Bai Ning Bing slowly woke up, the upper extreme heavenly eagle had already flown over a hundred thousand li.

“You actually came to save me?” Bai Ning Bing gazed at Fang Yuan and spoke without any politeness, expressing her astonishment.

Bai Ning Bing could not be any more clear of Fang Yuan’s nature, and had not even thought of being rescued by Fang Yuan.

Hei Lou Lan was also doubtful of Fang Yuan’s objective, and had previously wondered if Fang Yuan had sacrificed her. Bai Ning Bing thought even further, and was sure Fang Yuan would sacrifice them and escape by himself!

Fang Yuan glanced at Bai Ning Bing expressionlessly and said lightly: “The situation is more serious than you imagine. We have all been struck by investigative killer moves. Which is why you were all intercepted by Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals when you were escaping.”

Although Fang Yuan had perceivable dao Immortal Gu, which could detect dao marks on a Gu Immortal’s body, he was not aware of how many dao marks other Gu Immortals originally had.

Without this number, even if Fang Yuan inspected the dao marks on Hei Lou Lan, Bai Ning Bing and the rest, what use would it have?

However, from the enemies’ actions, he could clearly see that they had also been struck by similar investigative killer moves.

“Which Southern Border Gu Immortal was it? Fang Yuan, you are now Shadow Sect’s leader and have inherited Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance, even you cannot break it?” Bai Ning Bing asked.

“I already tried.” Fang Yuan sighed.

He did not have all of Purple Mountain True Monarch’s Immortal Gu, as many of them had been lost in battle. Although he had several good methods to deal with this situation, Fang Yuan could not use them without the respective Immortal Gu.

Hei Lou Lan’s gaze flickered when she heard this, immediately thinking of Lang Ya Sect!

Since they did not have enough Immortal Gu, they could refine them, and she knew Fang Yuan’s and Lang Ya Sect’s relationship was extremely close.

Fang Yuan could use the help of that connection.

In fact, Fang Yuan had also wanted to do so.

Not long ago, when he decided to rescue Bai Ning Bing and the rest, he had contacted Sixth Hair.

However, Sixth Hair did not acknowledge Fang Yuan’s status, he was doubtful of Fang Yuan’s motive and asked Fang Yuan to save Ying Wu Xie. After all, only these two split souls remained of Spectral Soul.

However, Ying Wu Xie and Lady White Rabbit were both staying in Fairy Miao Yin’s

immortal aperture.

This was one of the reasons why Fang Yuan went back to rescue them.

Sixth Hair was not willing to cooperate, so Fang Yuan looked for Lang Ya land spirit. What made Fang Yuan happy was that Lang Ya Sect and Lang Ya land spirit were no longer difficult to communicate with like before, he only needed sect contribution points and he could borrow Lang Ya Sect’s strength to refine Gu.

Fang Yuan handed some contents of Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritances, causing his sect contribution points to sharply increase, he exchanged them for the chance of having Lang Ya land spirit personally refine Immortal Gu for him.

Under Fang Yuan’s request, Lang Ya land spirit used the human isolation style to refine Gu instead of the hairy man heaven and earth style.

Heaven’s will was observing them, if the land spirit used the hairy man heaven and earth style, he might not be able to refine Gu successfully no matter what because of interference from heaven’s will’s.

Although Lang Ya Sect had begun refining Gu for Fang Yuan, Gu refinement was a series of processes. Moreover, Immortal Gu were difficult to refine and could not be rapidly created.

“The situation is even more complex, I suspect Heavenly Court has already collaborated with Southern Border’s righteous path to eliminate us. Heavenly Court is using Southern Border’s righteous path as a tool, but they won’t just watch from the sidelines the whole time. Besides the Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals, we need to be careful of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals lying in ambush and waiting for a chance to deal with us!” Fang Yuan said in a heavy voice.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1386: Wu Yong’s Arrival!

Strong winds blew past.

Below, luxuriant mountains steadily moved towards the rear like an endless herd of elephants.

Fang Yuan and the group of Gu Immortals, on the back of the upper extreme heavenly eagle, had no mood to enjoy this grand scene of rivers and mountains.

They were in a perilous situation.

The entirety of Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals were trying to get them. There might even be lone immortals and demonic cultivators waiting to see if they could reap some benefits.

They were unable to fight Southern Border’s righteous path, any rank eight Gu Immortal or Immortal Gu House meant enormous trouble and danger to Fang Yuan and the rest.

However, besides this, the most worrying thing was — Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court had left after taking away the super Gu formation.

Although Fang Yuan and the rest were not aware, the reason for this was for Duke Long to suppress Spectral Soul’s main body. But even after leaving, Heavenly Court’s influence still remained and their intention to eliminate Fang Yuan and the rest had not disappeared, instead it was getting even more intense.

Fang Yuan’s speculation was unitedly approved by Hei Lou Lan, Bai Ning Bing and the others.

If they were in Heavenly Court’s position, they would also not let go of Fang Yuan and the group. Aside from leaking information to Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals to make use of them, Heavenly Court would definitely have left some hidden cards to make sure nothing went wrong.

However, their hidden cards were currently unknown.

And the unknown creates pressure in people’s minds.

Heavenly Court’s hidden cards were like an executioner’s blade hanging above everyone’s head, who knew when they would suddenly slash down.

Even if Fang Yuan and the rest escaped to Western Desert, Heavenly Court’s hidden cards might follow behind them.

“Heaven’s will can actually infiltrate externally manifested dream realms.”

“By exploring the dream realms, I was simply exposing my secrets. I was still constantly maintaining Dark Limit and familiar face to disguise myself, thinking I was deceiving heaven’s will.”

“This was my biggest problem in this battle of the dream realm.”

Fang Yuan was standing on the eagle’s back, reverse flow protection seal had already been deactivated as maintaining it was very costly. Currently, Fang Yuan was currently using all kinds of investigative methods, including three breaths future vision.

While inspecting his surroundings, he reflected on himself, finding his mistakes and errors.

To err is human.

Making mistakes was a normal thing, even rank nine venerables made many mistakes in their lives. One’s vision was limited, being trapped in their nature, encumbered by their environment and other various reasons made it such that no one could make the best decisions all throughout their lives.

After making a mistake, realizing the mistake and correcting it was the behavior of an outstanding person!

If Fang Yuan had known this information earlier, he would absolutely not have casually explored the dream realms.

Now that he recalled, Fang Yuan found many arrangements of heaven’s will.

For instance, his gains in the giant dream realm were grandmaster attainment level in water path, formation path and dark path.

However, what Fang Yuan needed the most was an increase in the attainment level of information path and time path. If his information path attainment level rose, even if he did not have information path Immortal Gu, he could gradually solve his problems. His time path attainment had all along remained at ordinary level, if it rose and was combined with Hei Fan’s true inheritance, Fang Yuan’s battle strength could definitely rise sharply.

Even if it were not information path or time path, it would be very helpful if his attainment level in sword path, refinement path, luck path or soul path reached grandmaster.

Especially sword path.

Fang Yuan currently had several sword path Immortal Gu, and also had Bo Qing’s true inheritance. If his sword path reached grandmaster level, his battle strength would soar madly.

Unfortunately, none of them appeared.

“At the latter stage of exploring the dream realm, I only encountered absurd dream realms.”

“Heaven’s will invaded the dream realms and controlled their rotation, it probably did not want me to progress anymore.”

“In my memories of the five hundred years of my first life, there was not any mention of dream realms being contaminated by heaven’s will?”

Maybe this was a secret no one had discovered yet in Fang Yuan’s first life, but even more probable was that when Fang Yuan used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth, his will was tampered with by heaven’s will so that he forgot this information.

“I have lost dark limit Immortal Gu.”

“Right now, the others and I are exposed to heaven’s will. Fortunately, since the upper extreme heavenly eagle is extremely fast, heaven’s will does not have much time to make specific arrangements.’”

Southern Border righteous path, Heavenly Court and heaven’s will, these three were pursuing, encircling and intercepting as they tried to take Fang Yuan’s life.

However, Fang Yuan was not panicking.

He meticulously planned and prepared as to how he could protect his life under this situation.

In fact, after the destruction of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, Fang Yuan had been pondering over this matter. He had ample mental preparation.

Being exposed now was far better than if he were exposed before. Because Fang Yuan had many hidden cards to deal with the situation.

It depended on how he used them.

Currently, he was using wisdom path methods, thoughts were emerging and colliding in his mind. He continuously played out various situations, how to resolve them and how to protect himself while expending the least resources.

“An Immortal Gu House is flying over from the southeast side!” Bai Ning Bing suddenly warned.

She had inherited Bai Xiang’s true inheritance, her long distance investigative methods were much more suitable for this situation than Fang Yuan’s three breaths future vision.

Shortly afterwards, Fairy Miao Yin’s expression changed as well: “I also see it, this is Hou clan’s Flying Sand Pavilion!”

She had a greater understanding of Southern Border’s details, immediately recognizing the Immortal Gu House.

Fairy Miao Yin immediately added in shock: “They are so fast!”

Flying Sand Pavilion was one of the fastest Immortal Gu Houses in Southern Border, it was even faster than the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

If Fang Yuan and the rest relied solely on the upper extreme heavenly eagle to escape, Flying Sand Pavilion would catch up to them sooner or later.

However, Fang Yuan had already planned ahead and expected such a situation, so he had practised the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel with the others. Although it had been disrupted by Chi Qu You’s Gu formation, it was only a small setback. Right now, they had all gathered together and could use this method again.

Flying Sand Pavilion was rushing between the mountains.

This was its unique method, it could use earth path dao marks to reduce the immortal essence expenditure and increase its speed.

Undoubtedly, in Southern Border which was filled with mountains and forests, earth path dao marks were extremely dense, Flying Sand Pavilion was like a fish in water.

While moving at full speed, Flying Sand Pavilion was like rumbling sand, yellow-brown sand was constantly moving inside, while dust clouds surged on the outside. The Gu Immortals inside were not just from Hou clan, there was also a rank eight Gu Immortal, Shang Wu Jie!

Shang clan was among the top super forces in Southern Border, it naturally had a rank eight Gu Immortal.

Shang clan’s first supreme elder Shang Wu Jie had all along maintained the tradition of neutrality in Shang clan, and had good relations with all clans.

If it were Yao clan, Luo clan or even Tie clan, Hou clan Gu Immortals would absolutely not have given them face and invited them into Flying Sand Pavilion.

“Hmm?” Suddenly, Shang Wu Jie’s expression shifted slightly as Fang Yuan and the rest suddenly disappeared from his perception.

“They used that ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel?” Shang Wu Jie’s mind jolted, before a map of Southern Border appeared in his mind.

After combining various information, Shang Wu Jie soon deduced several areas where Fang Yuan and the rest were most likely to appear.

And these areas all had Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals.

“Wu Yong’s plan is not bad.” Shang Wu Jie lightly remarked, but suddenly his brows furrowed.

He realized that according to this layout, Fang Yuan and the rest would eventually be chased to the north-west of Southern Border.

And over there, Wu Yong was already lying in wait.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building’s speed could be ranked as number one among the current Southern Border’s Immortal Gu Houses.

However, Wu Yong had used an Immortal Gu House of Tie clan, Beacon Tower, to travel there.

This Immortal Gu House was made of Beacon Towers scattered all over Southern Border, and it was by using this mystical Immortal Gu House that Southern Border's righteous path were able to quickly spread a large net.

Fang Yuan and the rest were like large fish covered by this net.

Swoosh!

Under the sunny sky, four Gu Immortals suddenly appeared.

They were Fang Yuan and the rest, who had teleported using Omni-directional Travel.

"This is already the fifth time."

"A lot of my dao marks have been consumed."

"This is not looking good, the enemy knows our position and has been encircling, pursuing and intercepting us, like they have laid out a large net and are now rapidly tightening it. Should we change our direction and catch them off-guard?"

Bai Ning Bing and the rest were discussing.

Fang Yuan shook his head: "The investigative killer move on us is the root cause, they will catch up to us sooner or later if we don't remove it. The current plan is to strive for every second and rush out of this net to Western Desert."

They could go to Western Desert, Heavenly Court would not be able to easily mobilize Western Desert's righteous path to hunt Fang Yuan and the rest.

"Go." Fang Yuan let out the upper extreme heavenly eagle and ordered it to fly away.

The true ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel could cross a very large distance. Unfortunately, Ying Wu Xie's method was not the complete version. And in the series of battles, the core Immortal Gu of Omni-directional Travel were destroyed. What Fang Yuan and the rest were currently using was actually an incomplete Omni-directional Travel.

This incomplete Omni-directional Travel not only had a shorter teleportation range, even worse was that it spent dao marks of the Gu Immortals.

"Shadow Sect remnants, where do you think you are going?" After flying for a distance on the upper extreme heavenly eagle, Fang Yuan and the rest suddenly heard Wu Yong's voice!

"What?!" Fairy Miao Yin immediately paled.

"Don't be afraid, this is just wind whisper Immortal Gu." Fang Yuan snorted and reassured.

Wind whisper Immortal Gu had an extremely large range, as long as it was activated continuously without caring for immortal essence expenditure, it could theoretically cover the whole of Southern Border.

But soon, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building appeared in the horizon.

This rank eight Immortal Gu House was alarmingly fast!

Even though the upper extreme heavenly eagle was an immemorial desolate beast with first rate flying speed, the distance between Fang Yuan and Wu Yong was rapidly shrinking.

“Use Omni-directional Travel!” Fang Yuan instantly knew this was bad, although they were still far away, he firmly chose to activate the ancient battle formation.

Facing a rank eight Gu Immortal, he would not feel safe even if they were farther away.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was stored away. Omni-directional Travel was activated successfully, the four Gu Immortals suddenly disappeared from the spot.

However, when Fang Yuan and the rest appeared again, their expressions were extremely unsightly.

“What’s going on? We only teleported such a small distance? It is not even ten percent of the previous distance!”

Wu Yong’s voice resonated in the immortals’ ears once again: “You are trapped in my air lock, Omni-directional Travel will not work anymore.”

The voice had just been heard when Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building appeared in the horizon once again.

The Shadow Sect immortals felt an enormous rock pressing down on them.

An unprecedented danger was hanging above their heads!

Rank eight Gu Immortal Wu Yong, together with rank eight Immortal Gu House Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1387: Heavenly Eagle’s Escape

“Air lock?!”

“When were we hit by this killer move?”

“I didn’t feel anything at all!!”

Shadow Sect’s immortals were all taken aback.

They were not aware when this killer move had struck them. If it were not for the sub-par result of Omni-directional Travel and the facts in front of their eyes, they would have thought Wu Yong was bluffing.

Never underestimate a rank eight Gu Immortal’s methods.

Wu Yong did not have high seniority, his seniority was even lower than most other rank eight Gu Immortals in Southern Border.

But he was well-learned and talented, and having inherited Wu Du Xiu’s legacy, he had plenty of available methods.

Fang Yuan frowned deeply.

“How does this killer move, air lock, work?”

“How long does it last?”

“How can I find out flaws of this move and target them?”

His mind was rumbling like the sea as thoughts surged like huge waves. These questions perplexed him, more importantly, he had to resolve them quickly as it concerned his life.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building continued to approach closer, Wu Yong’s laughter could be heard, he clearly would not give Fang Yuan enough time to think.

The situation was extremely pressing, Fang Yuan needed to make a decision immediately.

He thought for a moment and immediately sent his order: “All of you enter my immortal aperture!”

“Why?”

“You are all too weak, you will just be sending yourselves to death by trying to fight a rank eight Gu Immortal. It is better for you all to enter my immortal aperture and research air lock, try to find a method to restrain it as quickly as possible!” Fang Yuan spoke bluntly, and opened the entrance to his immortal aperture.

The immortals looked at each other.

But quickly, Hei Lou Lan was the first to enter. If she did not need to send herself to death, it naturally was a good thing. Hei Lou Lan had been worried Fang Yuan would use the alliance agreement on her to send her to face Wu Yong and sacrifice herself so Fang Yuan could get some time to escape for his life. But unexpectedly, Fang Yuan did not do so.

Fairy Miao Yin and Black Tigress hesitated for a moment before following in.

They had made their accomplishments because of Purple Mountain True Monarch’s true inheritances, and were now Shadow Sect’s members. However, the main reason for them accepting Fang Yuan’s order was because Fang Yuan was Shadow Sect’s leader.

On the contrary, Bai Ning Bing remained behind.

She naturally was not concerned about Fang Yuan, instead, her gaze turned towards Wu Yong and carried an expression of eagerness to fight him.

Bai Ning Bing chased after excitement in life, it was like Fang Yuan chasing after eternal life. This feeling burned like fire and could even be said to be madness.

“Don’t be foolish, even if you have Bai Xiang form, Wu Yong could easily kill you in an instant.” Fang Yuan’s tone was impatient.

Bai Ning Bing snorted, but still entered the sovereign immortal aperture in the end.

Fang Yuan quickly closed the entrance, then commanded the upper extreme heavenly eagle to fly quickly.

Wu Yong’s sigh came from behind: “Fang Yuan, you are also an outstanding genius, you were actually able to hide in my Wu clan for so long under Wu Yi Hai’s disguise. You are truly a daring person who will make great achievements. It is a pity, it would have been great if you really were Wu Yi Hai.”

Wu Yong’s sigh was sincere, he really cherished talented individuals.

Fang Yuan was fleeing ahead while Wu Yong was chasing from behind.

The immemorial desolate beast upper extreme heavenly eagle erupted with an extremely fast speed under such a desperate situation.

However, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was still faster than it.

After all, it was a rank eight Immortal Gu House!

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building had another huge advantage – Immortal Gu Houses would not get tired.

As long as there was enough immortal essence, an Immortal Gu House could maintain a stable condition for eternity.

However, the upper extreme heavenly eagle was different.

It would get tired and fatigued after flying for a long time.

However, Fang Yuan did not even consider this point.

Because, according to the current speed of the two, long before the upper extreme heavenly eagle gets tired, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building would catch up.

“Who else did you bring, bring them all out!” Fang Yuan turned towards Wu Yong, all kinds of Gu worm auras quickly rose from his body and lingered around him.

“Relax, I came alone.” Wu Yong smiled as he activated the Immortal Gu House.

The verdant bamboo leaves on Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building turned into arrows as they shot towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan controlled the upper extreme heavenly eagle to swerve up and down, continuously flying in the air while adeptly dodging the arrows.

“Not bad. You have a solid foundation in flying. This enslavement path skill is even more amazing.” Wu Yong did not stint on his praise.

Fang Yuan realized something wrong.

Light wind was lingering around his body, it could not be detected at first, but it was growing larger now.

Not only him, even the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s wings were entangled by two lumps of blue wind, greatly affecting its flying speed.

“Wu Yong’s constant attacks are forcing me to dodge and change directions rapidly. Although the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s speed has not decreased, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building is moving in a straight line.”

“There is also this air lump on me, it is probably the killer move air lock. It can actually absorb the scattered winds to increase its power!”

Wu Yong’s attacks were not able to touch Fang Yuan, but had still achieved his objective.

The distance between the two sides was rapidly shrinking.

“You still haven’t found a way to break it?” Fang Yuan questioned Shadow Sect members inside his immortal aperture.

“Difficult!”

“There is only a little progress.”

“This is clearly a rank eight killer move, it is no trivial matter.”

Nothing but words.

As Fang Yuan inwardly clenched his teeth, he heard Wu Yong’s voice: “You must be thinking of how to break my killer move, right? No harm in telling you, once this move is set up, it cannot be shifted, but its range is quite large and can cover all the surrounding hundred thousand li. It also has a time limit, as of now, it can still last for eight minutes.”

Wu Yong spoke honestly.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank at this information.

Wu Yong’s behavior clearly showed his strong self-confidence. He already felt Fang Yuan was in the palm of his hands, unable to escape!

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building continued to attack endlessly, finally catching up.

Wu Yong gave a slight smile as he lightly flicked his index finger towards Fang Yuan from the second floor window of the bamboo building.

Immortal killer move — Finger Wind Dragon!

A crisp sound echoed.

A dark jade worm flew out of his fingertips.

The small worm shot at Fang Yuan with an extreme speed.

While flying, it grew larger as its body expanded to ten feet, fifty feet, a hundred and fifty feet.

After a few breaths of time, it turned into a vicious wind dragon that was two hundred and twenty feet long, baring its fangs and claws as it fiercely collided against the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was not able to react in time and just as it was about to be struck by the finger wind dragon, Fang Yuan walked forward and actually took the initiative to collide against the finger wind dragon.

Wu Yong felt astonishment that quickly turned into shock!

Because after the finger wind dragon collided against Fang Yuan, it actually did no damage, and even more bizarre was that it turned its direction and flew back, lashing at him, its owner!

Boom!

There was a huge sound as the finger wind dragon collided against Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

The Immortal Gu House shook intensely, its speed immediately decreasing by more than half.

And the finger wind dragon had completely crumbled.

Fang Yuan took the chance to get back on the upper extreme heavenly eagle and pull apart a large distance.

Wu Yong saw Fang Yuan wearing a long robe, with a sash floating in the wind, while giving off an ethereal and majestic aura. Wu Yong’s astonishment immediately reached an extreme level.

“This killer move, could it be?!” Wu Yong blurted out.

Although he had not personally taken part in the battle of Reverse Flow River in Northern Plains, the information of this battle as well as Liu Guan Yi’s name had become famous in the five regions.

Wu Yong recognized this killer move, it was reverse flow protection seal!

This meant he now knew the secret that Fang Yuan was Liu Guan Yi and Liu Guan Yi was Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan saw Wu Yong’s surprise and inwardly thought: “It seems Heavenly Court did not inform Wu Yong of my Liu Guan Yi identity. Or maybe Heavenly Court was still not aware of it?”

Fang Yuan felt a slight pity, his Liu Guan Yi identity was exposed now and could no longer be used, this would affect his connections in Northern Plains.

However, there was nothing he could have done about this!

Facing a rank eight great expert, Fang Yuan could only maintain his footing by using reverse flow protection seal. If he used other methods, he would be easily killed by Wu Yong.

Although Wu Yong suffered a setback, his gaze towards Fang Yuan became incomparably fiery.

Fang Yuan not only was Wu Yi Hai with Shadow Sect as his background, he also possessed Reverse Flow River and reverse flow protection seal. As long as he was captured, his accumulations and wealth could absolutely elevate Wu clan’s strength to a whole new level.

This enormous profit moved Wu Yong.

Moreover, Fang Yuan was also the greatest humiliation to Wu clan over these years.

“Good, all my plans in mobilizing the entire righteous path to create this situation where I could fight you alone were not a waste.” Wu Yong mumbled while controlling the Immortal Gu House to bombard at Fang Yuan and give chase.

The effect of air lock on Fang Yuan had been reflected back to Wu Yong. But the upper extreme heavenly eagle was still plagued by it, while Wu Yong was inside Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and was simply not affected.

At this moment, Wu Yong controlled the Immortal Gu House to collide against the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh as he moved forward to block the Immortal Gu House.

Wu Yong chuckled, and flew out of the Immortal Gu House to face Fang Yuan.

At the same time, Immortal Gu House Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building targeted the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

Although Wu Yong was not inside Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, he had left his will behind along with large amounts of immortal essence.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle quickly fell into a disadvantage against Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

Fang Yuan’s situation was even worse, he thoroughly experienced the power of a rank eight Gu Immortal.

He was only able to react passively against Wu Yong’s attacks and had no way to fight back.

After ten or so rounds, Wu Yong thoroughly experienced Fang Yuan’s powerful defense. He got a headache dealing with reverse flow protection seal, as any attacks at Fang Yuan would only be reflected back, even punching and kicking.

Wu Yong’s gaze then landed on the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

This immemorial desolate beast was the critical point of this battle.

Realizing this, Wu Yong split some attention to firmly suppress Fang Yuan, then used his immortal killer move to bombard the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle wailed in pain, it had an astonishing speed but how could its master let it easily escape when he himself was trapped here?

But an immemorial desolate beast had a tough physique, the upper extreme heavenly eagle was still alive and healthy even after taking on Wu Yong’s attacks.

“Not good!” But at this moment, Fang Yuan’s expression suddenly changed.

Facing a powerful enemy, the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s original will had been gradually taking control and was trying to flee for its life. Right at this moment, this will reached a qualitative change and broke free from the restraints of Fang Yuan’s hundred and eighty slaves, it immediately shook its wings and escaped.

Fang Yuan was thrown aside, and now had to face Wu Yong and Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building by himself.

“You still haven’t made any progress?!” Fang Yuan called in an urgent tone towards the Shadow Sect immortals inside his immortal aperture.

“How can we have any results in such a short time!” Bai Ning Bing and the rest were also in low spirits.

Wu Yong charged forward: “With me here, don’t even think of letting them out and using Omni-directional Travel.”

Sure enough, in the following battle, he gave Fang Yuan no chance.

After several more rounds, Wu Yong suddenly spread his arms, activating an immortal killer move which he had been preparing for a long time.

Fang Yuan’s vision suddenly changed, he was trapped in a strange battlefield and was unable to escape.

“If you give yourself up and offer all your cultivation accumulations, I can still spare your life, Fang Yuan.” Wu Yong gave his ultimatum.

Fang Yuan’s expression was ashen.

This was truly a hopeless situation!

His only hope now was for Bai Ning Bing and the rest to be able to find an opportunity to use Omni-directional Travel and escape this battlefield.

But, just as Wu Yong was about to make a move, his expression changed slightly as he looked at a certain direction: “Who is it? Come out!”

A sigh was heard, following which, a Gu Immortal who was brimming with Central Continent aura appeared.

Both Fang Yuan and Wu Yong were surprised at the sight of this person.

“You are... Feng Jiu Ge?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1388: This is Feng Jiu Ge!

A middle-aged Gu Immortal appeared in front of Fang Yuan and Wu Yong.

This person was dressed in a red and white robe, standing straight like a spear or sword. His eyebrows were sharp like swords, mysterious light was flashing in his eyes, a gentle smile was on his face, and there was an elegant and invincible aura in him.

But at this moment, his expression carried a trace of melancholy.

He was a Central Continent Gu Immortal whose name was spread throughout the five regions, a pillar of Spirit Affinity House, a sound path rank seven who could battle rank eight, he was Feng Jiu Ge!

Why was he here?

Wu Yong and Fang Yuan were surprised and astonished.

Feng Jiu Ge’s appearance and achievements had long spread throughout the five regions. Thus, although Wu Yong was seeing Feng Jiu Ge for the first time, he quickly recognized him.

After all, a rank seven Gu Immortal who could fight rank eight was a peerless genius that was rarely seen even once in a thousand years!

Were it not for Fang Yuan’s other identity, Liu Guan Yi, Feng Jiu Ge would probably still be the only one to hold this achievement.

Wu Yong quickly restrained his surprise and sneered at Feng Jiu Ge: “A Central Continent Gu Immortal actually dares to appear in front of me. Good, good!”

In the battle of the dream realm, Heavenly Court reaped the most benefits, taking away many Immortal Gu from Southern Border’s righteous path.

Right now, Feng Jiu Ge was being implicated by this matter and provoked Wu Yong’s hostility.

Fang Yuan’s gaze also focused on Feng Jiu Ge.

This was not his first time seeing Feng Jiu Ge.

In his first life of five hundred years, Feng Jiu Ge’s appearance had already been imprinted in the depths of his heart. The radiance Feng Jiu Ge emitted in the five regions chaotic war had even surpassed ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals. Unfortunately, he died in Lang Ya blessed land.

His death had led to a great disturbance, shaking Central Continent while the other four regions danced in joy.

Even after being reborn, Fang Yuan had seen Feng Jiu Ge as well.

It was in that strange space inside the Thieving Heaven true inheritance in Luo Po Valley. Under some strange combination of coincidences, Fang Yuan had saved Feng Jiu Ge.

Originally, he would have perished inside the Thieving Heaven true inheritance’s strange space because of Qin Bai Sheng’s suicidal attack. But it all changed after Fang Yuan’s rebirth.

Although Fang Yuan had done it completely unintentionally, he was indeed Feng Jiu Ge’s savior.

But so what if he saved Feng Jiu Ge’s life?

In this world, how many times had kindness been reciprocated with ingratitude?

Fang Yuan fixed his gaze on Feng Jiu Ge, he did not dare to relax as he shouted coldly: “Feng Jiu Ge, you are the person Heavenly Court arranged to ambush me?”

Feng Jiu Ge glanced at Wu Yong before fixing his gaze at Fang Yuan.

Seeing Fang Yuan again, moreover in such a situation, made Feng Jiu Ge sigh inwardly.

Fang Yuan’s progress was too fast!

The first time Feng Jiu Ge knew of Fang Yuan, the latter had seized Feng Jin Huang’s opportunity and became the new owner of Hu Immortal blessed land.

Because of his daughter, Feng Jiu Ge knew of Fang Yuan’s name.

But he was not even in the least bit concerned.

The reason?

Because back then, Fang Yuan was only a mere mortal. The difference between an immortal and a mortal was like the difference between heaven and earth, the difference between cloud and mud, they were not even at the same level. It could even be said to be the mortal Fang Yuan’s greatest glory for being able to attract a trace of attention from the grand Gu Immortal Feng Jiu Ge.

However, the development of later events went far beyond Feng Jiu Ge’s expectations.

Fang Yuan continued to be involved in major events, repeatedly bringing calamity to the world. His identity was exposed, an otherworldly demon who was the owner of Spring Autumn Cicada, inheritor of Giant Sun’s true inheritance and so on, the whole world was shocked. Especially when Fang Yuan’s progress was extremely fast, he rapidly ascended from a mortal to an immortal, and then to an expert among Gu Immortals, everything happened in a flash.

Many Gu Immortals could not have such accomplishments even after putting in effort for countless years.

But Fang Yuan seemed to have easily achieved this.

The first time they truly met, Feng Jiu Ge was actually saved by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smoothly inherited one of the Thieving Heaven true inheritances – ghostly concealment, then in the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Fang Yuan played a huge role.

“I did not expect Liu Guan Yi to be Fang Yuan. The great era is coming, heroes and experts are emerging, and Fang Yuan is currently the one who is shining the brightest.” Feng Jiu Ge sized up Fang Yuan while thinking to himself.

At the same time, he had a wry smile on his face: “I hurried over from Central Continent to pursue an Immortal Gu that Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had once used, but unintentionally ran into this matter.”

“Is he saying he is not the person arranged by Heavenly Court?” Fang Yuan frowned.

Based on Feng Jiu Ge’s nature and way of doing things, he would not deceive Fang Yuan at such a juncture.

Wu Yong, however, sneered in disbelief: “Who could have thought Feng Jiu Ge to have a hypocritical side as well. When I activated the battlefield killer move, you could have easily left if you did not want to participate in this matter.”

Feng Jiu Ge nodded: “Right. I entered of my own accord, it is because I owe my life to Fang Yuan. It would not matter if I had not come across this, but since I ran across this matter, I have to help him.”

“What?” Wu Yong was astonished.

Fang Yuan was also dumbstruck.

Wu Yong asked back in an incredulous tone: “I didn’t hear wrongly? You owe him your life, so you want to help him? Hahaha.”

Wu Yong started laughing.

Feng Jiu Ge was a Central Continent Gu Immortal, a person from the ten great ancient sects, everyone believed he would definitely become a member of Heavenly Court in the future.

He was actually going to save Fang Yuan?

Who was Fang Yuan? An otherworldly demon, a demon listed at the top of the Demon Judgment Board.

Feng Jiu Ge actually wanted to save him?

This was simply a huge joke.

Wu Yong laughed, but not only him, even the smile on Feng Jiu Ge’s lips started becoming bigger.

As Wu Yong looked at Feng Jiu Ge’s smile, his laughter gradually stopped, slowly replaced by solemness.

He knew.

Feng Jiu Ge was serious!

This person was simply a lunatic!

A righteous path Gu Immortal wanted to help a demon.

Feng Jiu Ge was not just an ordinary righteous path Gu Immortal, he was a huge star of the righteous path, despite having only rank seven cultivation, he was treated as a quasi-rank eight expert by the world. His reputation in Central Continent and in the five regions was extremely huge.

And Fang Yuan was similarly not an ordinary demonic character. Over these last years, he held the biggest spotlight in the whole world! He was a complete otherworldly demon, possessing Spring Autumn Cicada, Reverse Flow River... Giant Sun’s true inheritance, Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance... In Central Continent, he had seized Hu Immortal blessed land under the noses of the ten great ancient sects. In Northern Plains, he had destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he then went to Southern Border and thwarted Spectral Soul’s heaven-defying plan, and seized the fruits of victory. And recently, he had successfully infiltrated Wu clan, and after the battle of the dream realm, he became the leader of Shadow Sect!

Feng Jiu Ge wanted to help a person like Fang Yuan?

Wu Yong was a righteous path Gu Immortal, he tried putting himself in Feng Jiu Ge’s shoes, even if Fang Yuan saved his life, how much pressure would he face if he helped Fang Yuan?!

This pressure did not only come from his faction, it came from his family, his sect, Heavenly Court and even all the Gu Immortals in the world.

“No! Feng Jiu Ge is different from me. He is not born of the righteous path, and was once a demonic path Gu Immortal.” Wu Yong suddenly recalled.

“Demons are truly insane, they cannot be reasoned with!” Wu Yong raged inwardly.

Fang Yuan thought of Feng Jiu Ge’s past.

Feng Jiu Ge had been an unremarkable secluded cultivator with no fame in his early years.

He cultivated sound path and committed to it his entire life.

One time, he sang loudly in a nameless valley, which attracted two other Gu Immortals to sing in chorus.

Back then, it was night time with the moon hanging high and light wind blowing gently, causing ripples in a glittering lake in the valley.

As the three Gu Immortals sang in harmony, time flew by rapidly, and they had sung till dawn.

The three stopped singing and started laughing. They did not greet each other, but left full of joy.

Only after a few years did Feng Jiu Ge learn of these two’s names and origins. At that time, there was news in Central Continent’s Gu Immortal world that these two were demonic Gu Immortals who had seized a rank seven Immortal Gu from Black Heaven Temple, and were hunted down by the allied forces of the ten great ancient sects.

Feng Jiu Ge immediately set off to help them.

Those two Gu Immortals were at a dead end, opposed by the masses, so when they saw Feng Jiu Ge coming to aid them, they were both moved and surprised, asking Feng Jiu Ge why he did this.

Feng Jiu Ge had replied: “A few years back, we sang together, I sang about the bright moon, while you sang about the verdant mountain and a white lake. The clear moon and gentle breeze showed your human hearts. How could those capable of singing such a song be petty people who covet others’ Immortal Gu? I trust you two.”

The two were so touched their tears started flowing down.

One of them spoke: “You... understand us. We had inherited this rank seven Immortal Gu from a true inheritance, but how could we have imagined Black Heaven Temple to falsely accuse us. Black Heaven Temple is one of the ten great ancient sects, whatever it says, others believe them.”

The other persuaded Feng Jiu Ge: “We have only sang one song together, we are complete strangers. The two of us are in great danger and have no hope left. It is still not too late for you to leave.”

Feng Jiu Ge, however, shook his head and insisted on helping them.

The two immortals said worriedly: “If you do not leave, you will also be branded as a demon.”

Feng Jiu Ge laughed: “Neither demonic nor righteous, there is only Feng Jiu Ge in this world. To leave or to stay, I decide my own life and death.”

The two immortals were moved, and teared up in admiration.

Feng Jiu Ge’s poems were not famous back then. But as he repeatedly forced back Black Heaven Temple’s Gu Immortals and was victorious time and again, the matter soon got out of hand.

When the other nine ancient sects heard of the matter, they expressed support for Black Heaven Temple and created the huge pressure of public opinion.

As a result, Feng Jiu Ge proclaimed that he would challenge Central Continent’s champions as he traveled the world.

The ten sects sent their experts to challenge Feng Jiu Ge in single battles, but were all defeated.

Feng Jiu Ge was not afraid, fighting as he continuously traveled a huge distance, suddenly changing his tactic and going for the enemy headquarters, causing the ten sects to lose miserably. The scene was total chaos and there was nothing anyone could do.

Finally, Spirit Affinity House made their move, the fairy of that generation, Fairy Bai Qing, moved Feng Jiu Ge with love and turned him into a member of

Spirit Affinity House.

Back then, Feng Jiu Ge could put himself on the line to save two complete strangers who had only sung a song with him, becoming labeled as a demon as a result.

Now, why would Feng Jiu Ge not help the demon Fang Yuan?

Especially when Fang Yuan had saved his life!

Feng Jiu Ge was still the same person be it in the past or present.

Fang Yuan suddenly realized the meaning behind Feng Jiu Ge’s earlier sigh.

Feng Jiu Ge had already wanted to help Fang Yuan, but he thought of his wife and daughter as well as his situation. He was probably intending to help secretly.

But unfortunately, his presence was sensed by Wu Yong.

Feng Jiu Ge had to make a choice after that.

And just like what he did back then.

He made a similar choice.

Neither demonic nor righteous, there is only Feng Jiu Ge in this world.

To leave or to stay, I decide my own life and death.

Demonic path or righteous path, these two factions and identities could not restrain Feng Jiu Ge!

To leave or to stay, as far as Feng Jiu Ge was concerned, if he left, his heart would not be free, only by remaining would his heart be at ease.

His actions simply came from his inner heart.

I am always me.

I am Feng Jiu Ge.

For all eternity!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1389: Fang and Feng Versus Wu Yong

“Hahaha.” Wu Yong suddenly started laughing loudly.

His laughter was filled with anger.

He was obviously angry at Feng Jiu Ge for wanting to help Fang Yuan.

“Good.”

“Good.”

“Both of you are only rank seven Gu Immortals, but have rank eight battle strength.”

“Let me experience what level of strength you two have!”

A rank eight Gu Immortal’s pride and confidence made the killing intent inside Wu Yong flourish and intensify.

He was absolutely confident of his victory.

So what if it was one against two?

He, Wu Yong, was a rank eight Gu Immortal, while his opponents were only rank seven.

How could the gulf between rank seven and rank eight be so easy to bridge?

Let alone when he had an Immortal Gu House with him.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building — a rank eight Immortal Gu House!

A rank eight Gu Immortal with a rank eight Immortal Gu House, how could he lose?

Wu Yong could not think of any way he would lose.

The battle started again, the atmosphere immediately tensed.

Feng Jiu Ge slowly moved towards Wu Yong, while saying to Fang Yuan without turning his head: “You once saved my life, now I am saving yours. The favor has been repaid, you should leave, whether you can break through and get out of here alive will depend on yourself.”

Fang Yuan was surprised.

By the looks of it, Feng Jiu Ge was not going to fight together with him, and was instead going to fight Wu Yong by himself!

“Okay.” Fang Yuan immediately retreated to a corner.

Who was he?

How could he forgo such a chance?

Seeing that Feng Jiu Ge was facing him alone, Wu Yong felt a trace of admiration inwardly and spoke: “Alright, let me experience the power of the famous Central Continent genius.”

He then stored the Immortal Gu House Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building back into his immortal aperture.

This rank eight Immortal Gu House was his trump card.

It was constructed with multiple rank eight Immortal Gu, naturally it consumed an enormous amount of immortal essence. Wu Yong had already activated it for a long time to set up the situation and chase Fang Yuan.

Now, Wu Yong stored it.

It was like a sheathed divine sword, the enemy would never know when Wu Yong would activate this trump card, and would always feel apprehension and pressure.

At the same time, this also showed Wu Yong’s self-confidence and pride.

He wanted to fight Feng Jiu Ge fairly.

Battle intent soared as both sides readied themselves!

Fierce wind suddenly blew around Wu Yong before subsiding rapidly.

Feng Jiu Ge and Fang Yuan both watched with focused gazes.

This was a sign of Wu Yong activating his immortal killer move.

It was extremely fast!

Moreover, the aura before activation had been concealed to an extreme degree, be it Feng Jiu Ge or Fang Yuan, both were unable to sense it.

Feng Jiu Ge quickly retreated, cautiously pulling apart some distance from Wu Yong.

How could he dare to be conceited against a rank eight Gu Immortal?

Especially against an immortal killer move which was completely unknown, facing it head-on was absolutely reckless.

The fierce wind subsided turning into gentle breeze which then rotated endlessly, transforming into enormous figures in a blink of an eye.

They were shaped like humans, but were tall like elephants, with bulging muscles like piles of stones. Their whole bodies were bluish-black, sharp fangs protruded out of their mouths, and they had a pair of thick monstrous arms that drooped down to their feet. Their eyes were completely black, and green hair grew all over their bodies.

Immortal killer move — Soft Vajra Wind Chief!

Wu Yong created six wind chiefs at once.

Some of the wind chiefs were shouting, producing loud wheezing noises, while some screamed with an almost ear-piercing pitch.

They divided into two groups with each group having three wind chiefs, one group charged at Feng Jiu Ge while the other chased after Fang Yuan.

Feng Jiu Ge wanted to fight Wu Yong, while Wu Yong had his own pride and wanted to deal with both Feng Jiu Ge and Fang Yuan together.

A light flashed in Feng Jiu Ge’s eyes when he saw the killer move’s form. Instead of retreating further, he unleashed his long range palm attacks.

Ding — Ding — Ding!

Each of his palm strikes produced a resonant sound.

The sound waves vibrated and spread, striking the six soft vajra wind chiefs one after the other.

The soft vajra wind chiefs had an imposing momentum earlier, but they were completely stopped by this immortal killer move of Feng Jiu Ge. They were even sent back and looked like they were unable to resist the attack!

Both Fang Yuan’s and Wu Yong’s pupils shrunk at such a sight.

They were both shocked!

Feng Jiu Ge only had rank seven cultivation level, but the power of his immortal killer move did not lose to Wu Yong’s.

Whether it be Fang Yuan or Wu Yong, they could both see that this was because of the extremely abundant amount of sound path dao marks on Feng Jiu Ge’s body.

His sound path dao mark accumulation was so immense that it was actually on par with Wu Yong!

How did he cultivate to this extent?!

Fang Yuan was endlessly astonished as he observed the battle from afar.

The reason he could fight with rank eights was because of reverse flow protection seal. But Feng Jiu Ge was able to fight rank eights because he possessed an extremely deep sound path foundation.

When these two were compared, Fang Yuan was naturally inferior to Feng Jiu Ge.

“How did he cultivate? Having such a foundation, it is no wonder he was able to fight against Central Continent’s ten ancient sects back then, and has the confidence to fight Wu Yong!”

“Does he truly have this foundation or is it some temporary method that can only last for a short time?”

Fang Yuan began to ponder.

Naturally, his main attention was still on Wu Yong’s immortal battlefield killer move as well as analyzing and deducing the killer move air lock.

At the same time, the Shadow Sect Gu Immortals inside his immortal aperture were also doing their best at this.

Crack crack crack!

Wu Yong saw that the soft vajra wind chiefs were ineffective, and activated another killer move.

He grasped a thin and long wind whip in his hand and continuously lashed it at Feng Jiu Ge.

The wind whip seemed to have no end to it and could also be immediately contracted. Every lash could break the air and produce a crisp explosion.

Feng Jiu Ge showed no weaknesses, his left hand sent palm strikes against the soft vajra wind chiefs, while his right hand clenched into a fist and dealt against the wind whip.

His left palm struck the air, every strike bringing with it a long and resonant bell sound.

His right fist pummeled in front of him, every fist producing a rumbling explosion like striking a war drum.

Dang dang dang...

Bam bam bam...

For a moment, Feng Jiu Ge was actually equally matched against Wu Yong.

Even Fang Yuan was almost dazed.

The main reason was because Feng Jiu Ge’s dao marks accumulation did not lose to the rank eight Gu Immortal Wu Yong.

How did he cultivate to the point where he was able to go against the common sense of Gu Immortal world!

The biggest difference between a rank eight and a rank seven was the amount of dao marks.

An earthly calamity could, on average, give two hundred and fifty dao marks (250) to a Gu Immortal.

A heavenly tribulation was seven hundred and fifty (750).

A grand tribulation was seven thousand two hundred and fifty (7250).

A myriad tribulation was eighty-six thousand seven hundred and fifty (86750) dao marks.

The difference between the dao marks of a rank seven Gu Immortal and a rank eight was extremely huge. While the difference between a rank nine Gu Immortal and a rank eight was like heaven and earth.

This was one of the main reasons why rank nine was invincible, and rank eight Gu Immortals could crush rank sevens.

As Gu Immortals advanced further, the amount of dao marks they gained would increase explosively.

Even though everyone knew this, it was simply too difficult to do anything about it.

Rank eight Gu Immortal themselves signified higher quantity and quality of tribulations than rank seven.

Hence, it was almost impossible for a Gu Immortal at rank seven cultivation to possess a rank eight Gu Immortal’s dao mark accumulation. If not for this, there would have been abundant examples of rank seven fighting rank eight in the Gu Immortal world.

However, Feng Jiu Ge was able to achieve this.

“If this is his temporary power-up method which increases his dao marks, it would be slightly easier to accept. But if he actually has such a dao mark accumulation, that is too terrifying!” Fang Yuan thought to himself while observing the battle.

Wu Yong did not get angry at Feng Jiu Ge being able to fight him equally, instead his expression became more calm.

“Good.”

“Truly worthy of Feng Jiu Ge.”

“Well then, how about this move?”

Wu Yong pointed his finger.

His fingertip aimed at Feng Jiu Ge.

A crisp sound echoed.

A dark jade worm flew out of his fingertip.

The small worm shot at Feng Jiu Ge with an extreme speed.

While flying, it grew larger as its body expanded to ten feet, fifty feet, a hundred and fifty feet.

After a few breaths of time, it turned into a vicious wind dragon that was two hundred and twenty feet tall, baring its fangs and claws as it showed a ferocious imposingness, as if it was going to swallow Feng Jiu Ge.

It was Wu Yong’s specialty immortal killer move — Finger Wind Dragon!

Feng Jiu Ge’s pupils shrunk slightly, and he immediately retreated back!

Finger wind dragon was extremely powerful, Feng Jiu Ge could not face it head-on, hence he retreated to create some distance and attack from afar.

It could not be helped.

Wu Yong’s finger wind dragon killer move had rank eight Immortal Gu as its core.

Feng Jiu Ge’s dao mark accumulation was similar to Wu Yong’s. But he did not have any rank eight Immortal Gu.

Wu Yong’s rank eight killer move, finger wind dragon, was extremely powerful, Feng Jiu Ge could not face it with his killer moves that used rank seven Immortal Gu as their cores.

Or, he could use quantity to make up for the quality.

Feng Jiu Ge had this idea.

He retreated while sending out endless punches and palm strikes, using rank seven killer moves as he weakened the finger wind dragon until it completely dissipated.

But this undoubtedly was an intense burden on Feng Jiu Ge’s rank seven red date immortal essence!

On the other hand, Wu Yong’s immortal essence was something only rank eight Gu Immortals had – white litchi immortal essence.

Feng Jiu Ge was far inferior to Wu Yong in this aspect.

Rank eight Gu Immortals were stronger than rank seven, not only in dao marks, but also their other aspects that were of qualitative difference, immortal essence was only one of them.

Just by using one finger wind dragon, Wu Yong had immediately broken the stalemate, suppressing Feng Jiu Ge.

“This killer move is dangerous. I can sense the violent strength hiding inside it, I must not let it get close to me!”

Feng Jiu Ge had an extraordinary perception.

Wu Yong had indeed stacked another move on top of this move, it was chaotic shooting blades.

Once this move was activated, the finger wind dragon would self-detonate, turning into countless jade wind blades which would shoot everywhere. The power was terrifying and had shown its might in the purple blood river formation.

Although it was the first time Feng Jiu Ge saw the finger wind dragon, with his plentiful battle experience, he intuitively sensed this follow up of Wu Yong.

This discovery let Feng Jiu Ge avoid danger, but he became even more passive.

He could only retreat while weakening the finger wind dragon with long range attacks.

This gave Wu Yong enough opportunity and time to prepare a new immortal killer move.

This was very dangerous.

Feng Jiu Ge also knew this, but unfortunately, finger wind dragon was extremely fast and gave him huge pressure, adding on the six soft vajra wind chiefs, Feng Jiu Ge was unable to interrupt Wu Yong.

“This is troublesome!” Feng Jiu Ge’s brows began to furrow.

At this rate, the situation would become increasingly disadvantageous for him.

Once Wu Yong activated another immortal killer move, it would definitely make Feng Jiu Ge’s situation even more unbearable.

However, right at this time, a figure suddenly joined the battlefield!

Boom!

The finger wind dragon directly collided against Fang Yuan’s body.

Then, it was reflected back by reverse flow protection seal.

The finger wind dragon which had troubled Feng Jiu Ge for some time was sent flying back to Wu Yong.

Wu Yong, who was preparing a new killer move, immediately frowned deeply!

“Reverse flow protection seal is truly amazing!” It was Feng Jiu Ge’s turn to look at Fang Yuan in a new light.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1390: Four Clear Transforming Winds

Reverse flow protection seal immediately showed extraordinary effect.

The finger wind dragon was reflected at Wu Yong, but right at this moment, Wu Yong gave a firm shout, his whole body erupting with a powerful aura.

The immortal killer move he had been preparing, was finally activated.

Yin wind ghost sickle hand!

He stretched out his right arm and grabbed towards the finger wind dragon.

Almost instantly, with no prior indication, an enormous ghost hand suddenly appeared on the finger wind dragon’s body.

The ghost hand formed completely by yin wind, it was extremely large, grabbing the finger wind dragon like grabbing an earthworm.

The ghost hand was pitch black and had long sharp claws that were like five sickles. At this moment, as it grabbed down, it looked like it had the power to slaughter immortals!

The finger wind dragon gave a miserable cry and struggled fiercely. Several breaths later, it completely broke apart, turning into gusts of wind which soon dissipated.

Feng Jiu Ge’s expression turned solemn.

Finger wind dragon was undoubtedly a rank eight killer move, but Wu Yong’s yin wind ghost sickle hand clearly appeared to be much more powerful!

If this hand had grabbed Feng Jiu Ge, the consequences were too miserable to imagine.

If Fang Yuan had not interfered at the crucial moment, Feng Jiu Ge would still be being chased by the finger wind dragon and would also have to face yin wind ghost sickle hand, his situation would have been extremely precarious!

Wu Yong’s expression was similarly unsightly.

He had been preparing yin wind ghost sickle hand for a long while, and had thought of defeating Feng Jiu Ge with this.

But with Fang Yuan’s interference, he had no choice but to change the target to finger wind dragon, wasting this great killer move.

In fact, yin wind ghost sickle hand had a subsequent transformation as well, it was called yin wind rope and its ability was to capture Gu Immortals.

After all, Feng Jiu Ge was from Central Continent, Wu Yong had spent such a large amount of effort and immortal essence to prepare yin wind ghost sickle hand so as to capture Feng Jiu Ge alive.

If he achieved his goal, he would have gained huge benefits.

Firstly, if Wu Yong captured a person like Feng Jiu Ge alive, it would be a huge boost to his own fame and would have a huge influence on Southern Border’s righteous path as well.

Secondly, just capturing Feng Jiu Ge and not killing him would mean they would not have to fall out with Central Continent and Heavenly Court.

Finally, after capturing Feng Jiu Ge, Wu Yong could not only extort him, he could also blackmail Spirit Affinity House and even Heavenly Court.

If he could make Heavenly Court compromise and hand over those Immortal Gu they took from the super Gu formation, even if it was just a portion of them, Wu Yong’s prestige in the whole of Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world would definitely rise to unprecedented heights!

It could even directly stabilize Wu clan as the number one force of the righteous path in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world!

But now, Fang Yuan had disrupted his plan.

“These two guys...”

“If I use ordinary rank seven killer moves, Feng Jiu Ge could easily resist them and even counterattack.”

“If I use rank eight killer moves, although I would be able to force back Feng Jiu Ge and suppress him, I would have to go through Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal. If the killer move is reflected, I would be the one to suffer losses.”

Wu Yong’s eyelids twitched slightly at his present situation.

It was problematic.

He felt a little troubled.

If he was just facing Fang Yuan, Wu Yong could completely treat him like a sandbag and have full initiative. If he was facing just Feng Jiu Ge, he could also forcefully suppress the latter.

But if he was to face both of them...

Wu Yong was troubled.

“There is not much hope in breaking reverse flow protection seal in a short period of time. This is the first time I am witnessing this move and I am also not a wisdom path Gu Immortal.”

“Maybe Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven have already researched and made countermeasures against reverse flow protection seal.”

“But the only way now is to continue attacking them until they are unable to cope with the attacks, then find an opportunity to kill them.”

If there was no opportunity in battle, he would create it himself.

Thinking of this, Wu Yong suddenly concealed himself, disappearing from Fang Yuan’s and Feng Jiu Ge’s sights.

“He disappeared, where is he?” Fang Yuan looked at Feng Jiu Ge.

Wu Yong was taking a step back for the sake of advancing further, Fang Yuan’s investigative methods were no good and was simply unable to sense Wu Yong’s location.

Feng Jiu Ge also shook his head: “He seems to be using this battlefield to hide himself.”

He could only detect some vague details.

Feng Jiu Ge had just finished speaking, when there was a sudden change in the whole battlefield!

Whoosh whoosh whoosh...

Fierce wind rose from nowhere, making whizzing noises as it moved around the battlefield like formless pythons.

Then, wind blades formed out of the wind.

Each wind blade carried the piercing power of a rank eight killer move, they maneuvered around in the air and charged towards Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge.

“Good.” Fang Yuan was happy instead of startled, his robe fluttered behind as he charged ahead.

The wind blades, however, nimbly passed around him and shot towards Feng Jiu Ge.

Wu Yong wanted to get rid of Feng Jiu Ge first before he dealt with Fang Yuan.

This choice was extremely wise.

Because only Feng Jiu Ge had the ability to counterattack. Once he was dead or captured, what could Fang Yuan do with just reverse flow protection seal?

Feng Jiu Ge smiled brightly at this: “Interesting, I am being treated as a pushover.”

His tone was not furious, instead it had some joy and curiosity.

He had never experienced such a feeling.

Feng Jiu Ge sent out punches and palm strikes, destroying the wind blades.

But after being destroyed, the wind blades turned into gusts of fierce wind which whizzed around before condensing into new wind blades.

The wind blades shot forward continuously and with an increasing amount.

Feng Jiu Ge did not dare to let these wind blades touch him, but despite destroying them as early as possible, he was now in a passive situation.

Fang Yuan quickly rushed forward to help.

This time, Fang Yuan lingered beside Feng Jiu Ge.

Many wind blades struck Fang Yuan, but were immediately reflected back.

However, they did not shoot back at Wu Yong, instead striking back at this battlefield.

Although Wu Yong was the controller, he had manipulated the immortal battlefield killer move to send out the attacks. Hence, he was not the direct attacker.

Wu Yong became the mastermind manipulator, while Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal could only reflect the attack to the attacker, as such, the wind blades could only target this battlefield.

Wu Yong, who was hiding in a corner, was inwardly joyous when he saw this, and put in even more strength into the battlefield killer move.

Fang Yuan was passively defending, his frown getting deeper as time passed.

Feng Jiu Ge’s situation had already turned for the better with Fang Yuan’s protection. He thought for a moment before transmitting his voice to Fang Yuan: “Protect me while I prepare a move to destroy this battlefield.”

Fang Yuan was stunned, before quickly agreeing.

Previously, he had already deduced it would be difficult to break this battlefield killer move. It was very difficult to see any effects based on his strength and attainment. On the other hand, it was better to wait for air lock to dissipate and use Omni-directional Travel with Bai Ning Bing and the rest to leave this battlefield.

So he needed to stall for time to the greatest extent possible.

If he let Feng Jiu Ge fight with Wu Yong alone, Wu Yong would soon gain the upper hand and suppress Feng Jiu Ge, even getting rid of him, and then be free to deal with Fang Yuan.

Feng Jiu Ge might have rank eight battle strength, but he was still rank seven after all.

Hence, Fang Yuan came to help.

Feng Jiu Ge began to prepare his killer move, he did not resist, leaving his defense to Fang Yuan.

Such trust made Fang Yuan feel a little uncertain.

Seeing this, Wu Yong hastened the battlefield killer move even more.

The wind blades were unable to do anything to Fang and Feng. Another change occurred in the battlefield, crackling of thunder could be heard.

This thunder was extremely peculiar.

Normal thunder sounded like an explosion or rumbling.

This thunder, however, sounded bright and sharp, like knocking a gourd on a large hundred year old bamboo flute.

Several breaths later, lightning bolts flickered as they struck down at Fang and Feng.

“Careful, this is clear jade lightning.” Feng Jiu Ge warned.

Clear jade lightning emitted dazzling blue light, it was extremely fast and emitted such glaring light that Fang Yuan had to close his eyes.

He quickly activated his transformation method to change his eyes to dragon eyes, only then was he able to resist the dazzling lightning.

Fang Yuan was actively maintaining reverse flow protection seal, which took almost all of his attention, so he was not able to use ancient sword dragon transformation. But if it was just transforming his eyes, he could still do it.

Clear jade lightning struck down, Fang Yuan took it head-on. The jade lightning hit his body and was reflected back, wreaking havoc to the battlefield.

But some of the jade lightning struck towards Feng Jiu Ge.

However, these clear jade lightning bolts disappeared without a trace when they had just neared Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge was preparing a killer move, he naturally would not fully rely on Fang Yuan and had laid down some defensive methods.

Fang Yuan felt relieved at this, he could defend much more calmly now and even counterattack.

Wu Yong saw the lightning did not work and changed the battlefield again, lightning disappeared, strong wind weakened and changed into drops of beautiful green water pearls which then formed a thin drizzle.

“Be careful, this is clear jade dripping wind.” Feng Jiu Ge warned once again.

This water pearl-like wind sprinkled on Fang Yuan’s body but were similarly reflected back, Fang Yuan was completely safe.

Feng Jiu Ge, however, did not fare well.

As clear jade dripping wind neared him, they continued to disappear, but many water drops still landed on his body.

Feng Jiu Ge had defenses all over his body as well.

The clear jade water drops splashed on him, producing clear sounds.

The water continued to land on him, Feng Jiu Ge’s body seemed to have turned into a human shaped musical instrument, as delightful melodies echoed continuously.

Wu Yong laughed loudly and even revealed himself because he saw victory within his grasp: “My move still has another variation, its name is profound immortal sound. Feng Jiu Ge, you cultivate sound path, why don’t you evaluate this move.”

As his voice stopped, low murmurs of wind started to resound in the battlefield.

The sound of the wind was mild and clear, resounding within Fang Yuan’s mind. In an instant, the robe on Fang Yuan started shaking and billowing.

“Not good, this profound immortal sound has the strongest offensive power among the four variation moves. Although I have reverse flow protection seal, I can only protect myself, how can I help Feng Jiu Ge?” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

Wu Yong’s battlefield killer move was four clear transforming winds, it was created by a rank eight Wu clan ancestor and was passed down from generation to generation.

This four clear transforming winds had four variations, clear wind blades, clear jade lightning, clear jade dripping wind and profound immortal sound.

It was Wu clan’s trump card killer move with awe-inspiring might, and had helped Wu clan to dominate Southern Border for countless years.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1391: Separation Song Forces Wu Yong Back!

Whether it be clear wind blades, clear jade lightning, clear jade dripping wind or profound immortal sound, the essence of these variation moves was wind path.

The Wu clan ancestor whom had created this immortal battlefield killer move had clearly cultivated wind path to the extent of being able to imitate other paths with it, touching upon sword path, lightning path, water path and sound path.

In Wu Yong’s hands, this move had outstanding effect, Fang Yuan was helpless, while Feng Jiu Ge was in a dangerous situation.

Profound immortal sound became more concentrated and sonorous, while the musical sounds on Feng Jiu Ge were suppressed until they were almost inaudible.

Fang Yuan was helpless.

He had a lot of Immortal Gu and immortal killer moves, countless desolate beasts, ancient desolate beasts and so on. But when facing the rank eight Gu Immortal Wu Yong, these things appeared to be superficial, they were not useful enough to serve any purpose.

Only reverse flow protection seal could be relied upon by Fang Yuan to maintain his unharmed state. Unfortunately, even this trump card could not resolve this dangerous situation.

Profound immortal sound was becoming clearer and louder, Fang Yuan's reverse flow robe was shaking while the Reverse Flow River continued to decrease in volume so fast that it was startling him.

But Fang Yuan was more anxious about Feng Jiu Ge.

Red blood was flowing out of Feng Jiu Ge's nose, mouth and eyes.

His body was shaking and it was getting more intense.

"Damn it! If this goes on, Feng Jiu Ge's killer move will be broken and will definitely backlash, causing heavy injuries, adding on Wu Yong's attack, he might even die immediately."

Fang Yuan understood this but was powerless to do anything.

He naturally was not worried about Feng Jiu Ge, but if Feng Jiu Ge died, it would be his turn to face Wu Yong.

Even if air lock's effect dissipated later on and he could use Omni-directional Travel again, he would not have the chance to do so in front of Wu Yong.

However, just as the situation was gradually tilting in favor of Wu Yong, Feng Jiu Ge suddenly let out a breath of air, his body relaxing.

Soon afterwards, a unique aura rose from his body.

Feng Jiu Ge slowly opened his mouth and started singing in a weak voice.

The tone of his voice was not high, it was soft and low, but it was clearly heard by Fang Yuan and Wu Yong.

His singing gradually became slightly louder, like a low murmur or like soft sleep-talking on a quiet night.

A sudden emotion rose in Wu Yong's heart.

Wu Yong's expression rapidly changed!

He had protected himself with layers of powerful immortal level defenses, but when he heard this song, these defenses actually seemed to be non-existent, letting the song evoke emotions within him.

Fang Yuan's expression also changed.

Although he did not feel anything, intense ripples were set off on the surface of the reverse flow robe.

This situation was even more serious than when he had faced the profound immortal sound's attack!

“Incredible, he possesses such a powerful sound path killer move! It targets anything and everything near it, I am also within its range, I should get away from Feng Jiu Ge.” Fang Yuan quickly retreated.

He was doing this not only for himself, but was also trying to help Feng Jiu Ge.

Wu Yong made the same choice and was even more thorough in his retreat, his body disappeared without a trace.

Being able to retreat or advance at will, this was the superiority of having territorial advantage.

The immortal battlefield started attacking even faster and more wildly. Profound immortal sound, clear wind blades, clear jade dripping wind and clear jade lightning, these four variation moves appeared together and covered Feng Jiu Ge in multiple layers.

Feng Jiu Ge ignored them, using his body to firmly resist all the attacks, while continuing to sing.

The song was a pure and simple tune, but it contained the boundless profundities of sound path.

The song gradually became louder, it was not an instant rise, but a gradual and gentle one, alternating between low and high pitch as it rose.

Emotions coiled around Wu Yong’s heart, making him even more puzzled.

“What sound path killer move is this? What kind of power is this?”

The song suddenly dropped to a low pitch, an incomparable gloominess and sentimental feelings attacked Wu Yong’s heart, making him have an urge to cry!

Without any warning, a word emerged in Wu Yong’s mind — Separation.

The pain of separation, the sadness of separation, the gloominess of separation, and the reluctance of separation.

Splitting up with your lover, never seeing your friends again, and the death of your loved ones.

Separated, but the past remains the same.

Separated, as old friends bid farewell.

Separated, like the setting of the sun.

Separated, like falling flowers that convey deep sadness.

The song was sometimes mournful, like it was complaining about the injustice of fate, sometimes sad, as if it was questioning the cruelty of reality, sometimes resentful, like it was screaming internally, and sometimes gloomy, like crying without tears falling out, kept deep within oneself.

Huff!

Wu Yong’s body suddenly shook fiercely as he coughed out a large mouthful of blood.

His expression looked incredulous, because he shockingly discovered that immortal battlefield killer move, four clear transforming winds, was actually disintegrating and breaking apart!

None of the Gu worms that formed this battlefield killer move were destroyed because of the song, even the mortal Gu were intact.

Naturally, some Gu worms had been destroyed when Fang Yuan had reflected the attacks with reverse flow protection seal, but Wu Yong had immediately replenished them, and there was no actual harm done.

What made Wu Yong astonished was these Gu worms had not received the slightest of damage, but they were no longer under his control and had begun to separate from each other, not willing to cooperate and work together.

This was absurd!

If the coordination of one or two Gu worms was in chaos, it did not matter as long as they were not the cores of the killer move.

If a part of the Gu worms were destroyed, as long as they were not the cores, the killer move could still be maintained.

But now, all the Gu worms had separated and were leaving. Wu Yong was simply unable to control them.

The culprit behind this was the song from Feng Jiu Ge.

Soon, Fang Yuan also sensed what had happened, he detected that the whole battlefield was in the midst of crumbling apart.

Fang Yuan was inwardly very surprised.

Wu Yong sensed the situation was awry and wanted to abort the battlefield killer move four clear transforming winds, but it was too late.

At the very next instant, the whole battlefield disintegrated, the three immortals saw the clear sky and the white clouds once again.

Wu Yong coughed out a mouthful of blood, he was forced out of hiding, his expression was pale as he staggered back due to the heavy injuries.

An immortal battlefield killer move was different from a Gu formation, if a Gu formation was destroyed, the Gu Immortal would usually not suffer heavy injuries, but when an immortal battlefield killer move was destroyed, the backlash would normally be heavy and severe.

The stronger a killer move was, the greater the power of the backlash.

Four clear transforming winds!

This was a grand killer move that Wu clan had used to subdue Southern Border, it was terrifyingly powerful, hence when it disintegrated, the backlash on Wu Yong was extremely severe.

“What an amazing killer move! What is its name?” Wu Yong gazed at Feng Jiu Ge and asked.

Feng Jiu Ge did not reply him, instead he continued singing.

Wu Yong’s expression changed again, at this moment, he could not hold back anymore, he took out the Immortal Gu House Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

Wu Yong entered this rank eight Immortal Gu House which had powerful defenses, healing himself calmly inside it.

The matter of immortal essence expenditure was no longer the main issue.

Wu Yong had no choice but to do this.

But soon, the result that had shocked him occurred once again.

Under the effect of the song, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building actually started to shake and showed a slight sign of disintegrating.

This was an actual rank eight Immortal Gu House!

This meant that Feng Jiu Ge’s killer move was at rank eight level!

Seeing this, Wu Yong’s eyes shined with a terrifying light and without tending to his injuries, he directly controlled the Immortal Gu House to collide into Feng Jiu Ge.

An Immortal Gu House had no clear weakness, it was the essence of formation path. Immortal Gu Houses could rampage and destroy everything in a battlefield.

This was not just a fact from past human history, it was also tried and tested common wisdom that Fang Yuan learned in the five hundred years of his previous life.

Naturally, every Immortal Gu House had its own unique power.

For instance, Hei tribe’s Dark Prison could tame ancient desolate beasts.

Another example was Thirty-three Heavenly Halls of Bai Xiang grotto-heaven, it was an Immortal Gu House with extraordinary defense and it was most proficient in storing and preserving immortal materials. But unfortunately, Thirty-three Heavenly Halls was only an incomplete Immortal Gu House; it had suffered serious damage in the past and had now already lost its movement ability.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building naturally had its own killer moves, but Wu Yong’s act of directly colliding into Feng Jiu Ge was also a wise choice.

After all, activating killer moves required time.

Direct collision would spend the least amount of time and was also the most straightforward.

Feng Jiu Ge’s immortal killer move might be shockingly powerful, but he seemed to be unable to move from the spot and could only passively face attacks.

This flaw had already been noted by Fang Yuan and Wu Yong.

The defenses on Feng Jiu Ge were almost exhausted, if Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building collided into him, he would definitely turn into meat paste.

At this precarious moment, Fang Yuan could not just watch from the sidelines. When Wu Yong finished with Feng Jiu Ge, it would be his turn next.

Air lock’s time limit had not been reached yet, Fang Yuan moved forward and blocked the path of Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

Fang Yuan could not activate strength path giant hand, most of his attention was on maintaining reverse flow protection seal, he was only able to transform his arms and hands into dragon arms and claws, cover them with dragon scales, then activate rank seven dragon strength Immortal Gu.

These Immortal Gu were all ‘borrowed’ from Wu clan, and now they were being used against Wu Yong.

Wu Yong felt his chest tightening at this sight, and intensely poured in his immortal essence into the Immortal Gu House.

Boom!

Both sides collided, and without any surprise, Fang Yuan was sent flying.

His strength was inferior to Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, he was like a cannonball that was shot far away.

But he suffered no injuries because of reverse flow protection seal.

On the contrary, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building lost many mortal Gu from the collision.

With this opening created, Feng Jiu Ge’s song became even more effective.

Wu Yong seized the chance, continuing to control the Immortal Gu House to collide into Feng Jiu Ge, while at the same time, he began to concentrate on activating a killer move of Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

The Immortal Gu House was about to collide into Feng Jiu Ge, but Fang Yuan could not return in time.

However, right at this moment, Feng Jiu Ge suddenly moved and flew to the sky.

Wu Yong’s attack missed, his expression immediately showed shock and fury. Feng Jiu Ge could clearly move since the start, and had intentionally done this to deceive the enemy!

The song was still continuing, Immortal Gu House Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was disintegrating.

From the surface, it looked like a two-storied bamboo stilt building. Although it was a rank eight Immortal Gu House, it used few Gu worms. It was not like those Immortal Gu Houses which were huge, they had a large number of Gu worms.

With only so few Gu worms, Feng Jiu Ge’s song was clearly even more effective.

First, bamboos began to separate, the bamboos on the edges even directly left the Immortal Gu House.

These bamboos were naturally not real bamboos, soon after leaving the main body, they emitted bright jade radiance as they disintegrated into countless little Gu worms.

Wu Yong’s expression turned gloomy.

The situation was extremely unfavorable to him!

At this time, Fang Yuan neared once again.

Wu Yong coldly snorted, gazing deeply at Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge before he mobilized Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building to leave.

In just a few moments, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building left the battlefield, becoming a small black dot in the horizon.

He had actually taken the initiative to retreat!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1392: So It Was the Scheme of Heaven’s Will

Wu Yong took the initiative to retreat, Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge were not happy, their hearts sank.

Wu Yong could move ahead to attack, he could naturally retreat too.

Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge both hoped that Wu Yong would fight against them to the death.

But Wu Yong did not do that, he chose to retreat in a logical and wise manner.

He was a rank eight righteous path Gu Immortal, against two rank sevens, he actually chose to retreat.

If news got out, Wu Yong would lose a portion of his reputation.

The reason why it was only a portion was because his opponents were the famous Feng Jiu Ge and Liu Guan Yi (Fang Yuan).

Wu Yong needed a lot of courage to do this.

Of course, he needed great wisdom!

Immortal battlefield killer move four clear transforming winds was broken, Wu Yong suffered a backlash from the killer move and was heavily injured.

But he had Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, he could still fight.

But when he found out that Feng Jiu Ge could move, and he could do nothing to Fang Yuan, he sensibly chose to retreat.

This was a great move.

In fact, this was even more powerful than his fierce attacks earlier, Fang Yuan’s and Feng Jiu Ge’s weaknesses were immediately targeted.

Firstly, only a few edges of Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building had broken, it was still incredibly fast.

It was impossible for Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge to chase after Wu Yong. Especially when Fang Yuan’s upper extreme heavenly eagle was no longer under his control.

Secondly, Wu Yong obtained precious time to calmly heal himself.

After all, his wounds were not light, his battle strength was severely affected.

And finally, Wu Yong could repair Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, and even add in more Gu worms to the Immortal Gu House, he would not be so passive when facing Feng Jiu Ge’s immortal killer move again.

Wu Yong’s sound path attainment level was only ordinary, but his wind path attainment had long reached the level of mimicking other paths. He could totally use wind path methods to weaken the effects of Feng Jiu Ge's killer move.

That was to say, when Wu Yong pursued them again, Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge would have a face a fully healed rank eight Gu Immortal with a peak condition Immortal Gu House, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, that was completely prepared for Feng Jiu Ge!

Wu Yong could retreat as he pleased, he did not need to desperately fight with Fang Yuan or Feng Jiu Ge, he could wait for a better opportunity later.

In contrast, Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge could do nothing to him, they were in the passive position.

Fang Yuan only had reverse flow protection seal, while Feng Jiu Ge might have an immortal battlefield killer move, but even if he had time to set it up, he could not trap Wu Yong, because he had the rank eight Immortal Gu House Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

The difference in strength!

Even though Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge worked together, there was still a huge gap in strength between them and Wu Yong.

If it were only Wu Yong, they might have some hope of winning.

But Wu Yong had the Immortal Gu House Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, his battle strength had risen immensely, the two of them were helpless.

“Fang Yuan, leave first.” At this moment, Feng Jiu Ge said to Fang Yuan.

He spoke very plainly.

Fang Yuan's pupils shrunk a little.

Feng Jiu Ge looked at Fang Yuan deeply, he was expressionless, but he soon turned to look at the small black dot in the sky (Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building).

“Back then, you saved my life, today, I will save your life, from now on, the favor has been repaid completely.” Feng Jiu Ge continued.

Fang Yuan raised an eyebrow: “That is not right. If not for my help, Wu Yong would have already killed you, you helped me and I helped you, you still owe me a favor.”

But Feng Jiu Ge continued in a light tone: “If I say I owe you nothing, that means my heart is at ease, I have no obligations remaining, what you think is your business. Remember, if I survive this time, I will pursue you as my target, even if you escape to the ends of the world, I will not let you escape, be careful.”

“Haha.” Fang Yuan could not help but laugh.

He understood Feng Jiu Ge's intention.

Feng Jiu Ge saved him to repay that favor, but this way, it would go against his righteous path status, his wife and daughter would be in an awkward position.

Thus, after Feng Jiu Ge saves Fang Yuan, he would need to pursue him and kill him, to prove his own allegiance and to protect his wife and daughter.

“Alright, the next time we meet, we will be enemies.” Fang Yuan said, opening his immortal aperture’s entrance, letting Hei Lou Lan and the others out.

Ancient battle formation — Omni-directional Travel, started to activate.

Feng Jiu Ge did not respond, he did not even turn to look at Fang Yuan, he directly flew towards Wu Yong.

If Fang Yuan used Omni-directional Travel to escape, Wu Yong might chase after all. Thus, to repay this debt, Feng Jiu Ge had to take a risk and personally obstruct Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

Looking deeply at Feng Jiu Ge for the last time, the ancient battle formation activated and Fang Yuan along with the other immortals vanished on the spot.

Wu Yong, who had been watching Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge, smiled bitterly as he saw him leaving.

He slightly regretted his arrangement earlier. If he did not come alone, he would be able to take down both Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge.

But for the reputation of Wu clan, he had been planning hard to divert the rest of Southern Border’s righteous path forces away, he had spread a net so that Fang Yuan would come right at him.

This was not far from Western Desert.

Fang Yuan’s escape was almost certain at this point.

“I was careless.”

“I did not think that Heavenly Court would help the demon Fang Yuan!”

Wu Yong watched as Feng Jiu Ge flew towards him, showing a cold and icy gaze.

This was the guy who ruined his plans, he deserved death!

But...

The opponent had immense talent and status, Wu Yong was a little hesitant.

There was greater value in capturing Feng Jiu Ge alive than killing him.

If he killed Feng Jiu Ge, Wu Yong would be enemies with Heavenly Court and Central Continent, and Heavenly Court currently held the secret that Wu Yi Hai was Fang Yuan.

If he captured him, Wu Yong would be able to negotiate with Central Continent using this bargaining chip.

In fact, Wu Yong had been thinking about this earlier, if he wanted to kill Feng Jiu Ge, he would not have attacked like that.

Wu Yong was not a hired killer, he was the leader of a super force, he needed to think of many things, not just this battle alone, but also the consequences that would follow.

Immortal killer move — Separation Song!

Feng Jiu Ge was still a distance away from Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, he used this special move again.

Wu Yong snorted, he had already added many Gu worms into this Immortal Gu House, even though the Gu worms were still being separated, it was far weaker now.

The intense battle continued.

Wu Yong quickly gained the upper hand, even though he was still injured.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was too domineering, Feng Jiu Ge could only fight from a distance and use separation song against it.

Wu Yong was an experienced schemer, after retreating once, he had no problems with retreating again.

As long as the Immortal Gu House was broken apart to an extent, he would retreat and repair it.

Feng Jiu Ge’s separation song did not have any offensive power, the Gu worms that were removed were quickly regained by Wu Yong and he placed them back in again.

The only problem for Wu Yong was that Immortal Gu Houses were not easy to assemble.

But this battle was already set.

Feng Jiu Ge could not win.

If they clashed without either side falling back, Feng Jiu Ge might have some hope of victory.

But Wu Yong was not a brute nor a fool, after fighting for some time, he abandoned the pride of a rank eight.

In return, he could easily retreat and hold the initiative in his hands.

Even the genius Feng Jiu Ge could only be suppressed, he had no chance of victory.

At the same time, in Central Continent’s Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei held onto Star Constellation Chessboard as she looked at the battle situation of Feng Jiu Ge fighting Wu Yong.

“It is about time.” Fairy Zi Wei muttered.

It turned out that Feng Jiu Ge’s encounter with Fang Yuan was planned by Star Constellation heaven’s will! With the help of Heavenly Court, Feng Jiu Ge managed to meet Fang Yuan ‘coincidentally’ while chasing the theft path Immortal Gu.

Even Feng Jiu Ge was kept in the dark.

In fact, even Heavenly Court was confused, not knowing why Star Constellation heaven’s will planned this.

Feng Jiu Ge’s aura was weakening.

He was covered in injuries, he could only use one more attack.

In contrast, Wu Yong was inside Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, he was in good condition, the Immortal Gu House had only lost some of its outer layer.

Fighting before retreating, before fighting once again.

Humans were the most intelligent of all living beings, Wu Yong’s proper strategy made Feng Jiu Ge unable to make a comeback.

“Feng Jiu Ge, if you surrender, I can keep you alive and send you back to Central Continent for Heavenly Court’s judgment.” Wu Yong said plainly.

Feng Jiu Ge smiled: “Oh Wu Yong, if you can take my next move, I will surrender to you, why not?”

Wu Yong’s expression froze slightly.

Even at this point, Feng Jiu Ge still had a trump card unused!

“Back in the day, the reason why I became famous, after receiving the acknowledgement of a rank eight Gu Immortal who accepted that I had rank eight battle strength, was because of this move. Listen to it, my seventh song — ”

“Wait, Feng Jiu Ge.” At this moment, two figures appeared in the battlefield.

They both had rank eight aura.

They were Gu Immortals from Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects!

“Hmm?” Wu Yong was surprised, Heavenly Court actually still had such hidden cards, this was out of his expectations.

In his opinion, if they had such strength remaining, why did they not use it earlier?

“Was it because they could not make it in time?” Wu Yong guessed.

While thinking, Wu Yong sneered: “Central Continent’s people, you came just in time, I have something to tell you! Not only did you snatch the Immortal Gu of our Southern Border’s righteous path, your members are even defending demons!”

Wu Yong had no fear.

He was defended by the Immortal Gu House, and other Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals were coming to reinforce him.

But these two Central Continent Gu Immortals came prepared.

One of them said: “Even though we are in two different regions, we are all righteous path members, we need to work together. We took the Immortal Gu away earlier because we were afraid the demon would destroy them. We are already prepared to return these Immortal Gu back to their original owners.”

“Oh?” Wu Yong was surprised.

The other said: “As for defending the demon, we will deal with that. Feng Jiu Ge, are you willing to swear upon Heavenly Court’s orders to pursue Fang Yuan forever, and to not rest until you take his life?”

Feng Jiu Ge thought for a moment before replying.

“I am willing.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1393: Fang Yuan Eats People

A boundless sea of sand, reaching as far as the eye could see.

The sky was blue with white clouds and clear rays of the sun.

“I am finally in Western Desert.” A figure emerged from Western Desert’s regional wall, instead of slowing down, he accelerated towards the sky.

This youthful looking person was dressed in a white robe with long sleeves, he had black hair and dark eyes, his face was clear as jade.

It was Fang Yuan!

Feng Jiu Ge blocked Wu Yong for him, allowing him to escape.

The sovereign immortal body was adept at traveling between regional walls, be it Southern Border’s regional wall or Western Desert’s regional wall, they could not stop Fang Yuan.

In fact, the regional walls were where Fang Yuan was safest, he was like a fish in water.

Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, and the rest were inside Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture, thanks to him, they were able to travel through the regional walls, arriving in Western Desert as well.

Thankfully, none of them were rank eight Gu Immortals, and because Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture had annexed many blessed lands and had sufficient dao marks and foundation, he could contain these Gu Immortals.

If ordinary Gu Immortals crossed regional walls, they would need to rest for some time, but with his sovereign immortal body, Fang Yuan traveled through them easily, there were no losses.

After the battle of the giant dream realm, even though Fang Yuan became the new leader of Shadow Sect and inherited Purple Mountain True Monarch’s many inheritances, he had lost the identity of Wu Yi Hai, his Liu Guan Yi identity was exposed, and the crucial dark limit Immortal Gu had fallen into Heavenly Court’s hands. And most important, he lost a rank eight battle strength — upper extreme heavenly eagle!

Along the way, Fang Yuan had been thinking about this battle, summing up his gains and losses.

“To think that the manifested dream realm would be invaded by heaven’s will. If I did not explore the dream realm, heaven’s will might not have found me.”

“However, Shadow Sect was going to attack the dream realm eventually.”

“Even though I am inside Western Desert now, I lost Dark Limit and was hit by Heavenly Court’s investigative killer move, and most importantly, heaven’s will is watching me, my traces are completely exposed.

Escaping from Southern Border and arriving in Western Desert was only temporarily alleviating the situation.

If Heavenly Court or heaven’s will had enough time to plan, Western Desert would become a dangerous place too, Fang Yuan would be assaulted by countless Gu Immortals or forces here.

Thus, his urgent needs now were to get rid of the investigative killer move on him and find a way to hide from heaven’s will.

“Western Desert’s Zombie Alliance was destroyed, but there are still a lot of resources left deep within translocation desert.”

“Other than that, there are two places that naturally form Gu, and can also produce Immortal Gu, like Southern Border’s Jade Pot Mountain.”

Bai Ning Bing’s ice soul Immortal Gu was a wild Immortal Gu naturally created in Jade Pot Mountain.

Because of Shadow Sect’s secret operation, Western Desert had many secret spots, two such spots were like Jade Pot Mountain, there were wild Immortal Gu about to spawn from them.

Undoubtedly, Fang Yuan had to rush to these three locations.

“Feng Jiu Ge saved me, the favor is used up.”

“His appearance was too coincidental, it might be part of Heavenly Court’s plan.”

“If he chases after me, even if I have reverse flow protection seal, I cannot do anything to him. And most importantly, Central Continent is going to send more experts, after all, it is only a matter of time.”

“Thus, I need to act fast!”

Thinking of this, a bright light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Immortal killer move — Ancient Sword Dragon Transformation!

White light flashed, at the next moment, Fang Yuan turned into a slender silvery sword dragon.

The sword dragon waved its tail and moved elegantly with rapid speed.

Soon, Fang Yuan used sword escape Immortal Gu on top of the ancient sword dragon transformation.

Whoosh!

He flew like a silvery light, tearing through space, the speed was unthinkably fast.

Several days later, in translocation desert.

This was one of the more famous deserts in Western Desert.

Like how Eastern Sea had ice flow sea area, twin polar sea strait, air bubble sea area, shark sea, elegant splendorous sea area and other mystical sea areas.

Western Desert had a large number of deserts scattered all over. They normally had special traits that differentiated them from the others, becoming famous among Western Desert Gu Immortals.

Rank six transformation path Gu Immortal Yi Zuan, known as “Fiend Mosquito”, was currently floating above translocation desert.

He wore thin black leather armor, he had a sharp nose and small eyes, his black hair was messy like weeds, not only was it sticking upwards, it also extended to his shoulder.

“Hehehe, I am tailing Three Feather Boy, I might be able to find that Corpse City of Zombie Alliance.”

He was smug internally, sniffing as he tried to smell.

“Found it.” His eyes shone as he followed the smell, rushing down towards translocation desert.

Seeing that he was getting closer to the ground, Fiend Mosquito did not dodge.

When he was almost in contact with the ground, his black armor flickered with eerie light.

Boom.

With a soft sound, he drilled into the desert like he was jumping into water, vanishing.

His field of vision turned dark, Fiend Mosquito had closed his eyes already.

The hot sand surrounded his entire body, the temperature was very high, it could instantly cook an egg, before turning it into char.

But Fiend Mosquito had his defensive methods, this environment was not unbearable for him.

Even if his vision was dark, that was not a problem, Fiend Mosquito was most skilled at pursuing smell, the clues were more evident when traveling in the sand.

He continued to travel across the desert.

Guh.

Suddenly, he pierced out of the sand and arrived in a cave.

Fiend Mosquito was not surprised.

There were many such caves under translocation desert.

During the Remote Antiquity Era, two immemorial desolate beasts fought here, one of the immemorial desolate beasts, an earth qi bat camel, lost the battle and died here.

The earth qi bat camel was a rather unique immemorial desolate beast, it had two forms, bat and camel. When it traveled in the desert, it would become a brown camel large as a mountain, moving slowly. When it wanted to fly, it would turn into a jade bat, small as a fist, and would move extremely quickly.

This unique immemorial desolate beast was quite similar to the sun-moon kun-peng from Eastern Sea, many Gu Immortals compared the two.

The sun-moon kun-peng was a type of immemorial desolate beast living in Eastern Sea.

Under the sun, the sun-moon kun-peng would turn into a giant bird and soar the skies.

When under the moon, the sun-moon kun-peng would turn into a giant fish and devour the seas, having a grand aura.

After the earth qi bat camel died, its dao marks spread out and were carved in this desert, creating translocation desert.

Inside the desert, large amounts of earth qi moved, this earth qi was like bubbles in water, creating tiny caves.

Fiend Mosquito was now inside one of those caves.

There was no air here, mortals would die if they came here. They would not die of suffocation, but the earth qi would turn them into stone.

Gu Immortal Fiend Mosquito was naturally immune to it.

In fact, he could collect the earth qi as it was a type of resource as well.

But now, he was tailing Three Feather Boy, he was afraid that taking the earth qi would alert the former, thus, he did not do so.

He continued to sniff until he sensed Three Feather Boy’s scent, continuing to move forward.

Along the way, he passed many caves.

These caves were varied in sizes, some were like rooms while others were like palaces.

Finally, he came to a special cave.

“The aura here is so dense! Three Feather Boy must be nearby.”

Fiend Mosquito tried to open his eyes, but soon he was filled with shock.

“My goodness, this cave is too huge, it is like a mortal town!”

“The earth qi here is so dense that an earth qi sandstorm is brewing?”

Fiend Mosquito soon found that at the center of this cave, there was a dark and heavy lump of moving sand, oozing with immortal material aura.

“This sandstorm is made from earth qi, it is a rank seven immortal material, extremely valuable.”

Fiend Mosquito was happy but worried.

He was happy seeing such a huge immortal material, as a Western Desert lone immortal, this was a huge profit.

His worry was that the sandstorm was very wild and had great power, it was hard to take it.

“Wait!”

“Three Feather Boy’s aura is nearby, that means he came here. Why did he not take this huge piece of earth qi essence?”

Fiend Mosquito’s pupils suddenly shrunk, feeling something amiss.

At this time, a boyish voice came from behind him: “Fiend Mosquito, you are finally here. Hehe, I have been waiting for you, go and test the formation for me.”

“Oh no!” Fiend Mosquito heard this and shuddered, wanting to dodge.

But it was already too late.

A storm of feathers made from blue light landed on his body.

Fiend Mosquito was unable to help himself, the blue feathers brought him into the sandstorm.

Fiend Mosquito’s screams could be heard from inside the sandstorm.

Three Feather Boy finally appeared now, he was rosy and tender, his young face was plump and very cute, he looked at the sandstorm as he laughed.

Soon, Fiend Mosquito’s cries came to a stop, blood leaked into the sandstorm but the moving sand quickly devoured it entirely.

Three Feather Boy’s laughter came to a stop as he had a worried expression.

“So powerful.”

He breathed in deeply: “As expected of the defensive formation of Western Desert Zombie Alliance’s branch. Fiend Mosquito was a rank six expert, but he only lasted so long. Who is it?”

Three Feather Boy turned around and stared ahead with a fixed gaze.

Over there, a figure suddenly appeared.

“Damn, a rank seven Gu Immortal!” Three Feather Boy sensed the newcomer’s aura and felt bitter internally.

He observed carefully, seeing that this Gu Immortal had a handsome and gentlemanly appearance, he wore white clothes and had black hair. Even though he was a young man, and even though they were both guys, Three Feather Boy felt amazed at such an appearance.

“What a handsome person!”

“Seeing his demeanor, he seems to be a righteous path Gu Immortal.”

Just as Three Feather Boy was guessing, Fang Yuan looked at him and squinted, having some joy in his tone: “Good, this is the third person I’ve met, after eating you, my appetite will be appeased for some time.”

“What?!” Three Feather Boy was shocked, he quickly retreated: “What righteous path is this! He wants to eat me? Sister, save me!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1394: Retrieving Western Desert Zombie Alliance’s Inheritance

Fang Yuan’s words made Three Feather Boy pale with horror, he immediately called for help.

A figure rapidly appeared, going to Three Feather Boy and consoling him: “Little brother, don’t be afraid, big sister is here.”

This female Gu Immortal had a small and dainty body, she was like a little girl wearing a flowery green dress, there were two pearl earrings hanging on her ears, as if water was inside the pearls, there were green ripples inside when they shook.

“I am Cui Bo, who might you be? Is scaring my brother so fun?”

Fang Yuan assessed this Fairy Cui Bo.

She was emanating rank seven Gu Immortal aura, she thought that she was on equal status with Fang Yuan, who was also rank seven.

Her skin was white as snow, but the green rippling light from her earrings made her look eerie, her face was quite delicate, but her nose was slightly sharp, ruining her image.

Fang Yuan rubbed his tummy, sighing: “I am speaking the truth, what do you mean by that? Hehe, since you have come to me, I shall eat both of you then.”

The sovereign immortal body’s flaw was the need to devour apertures.

Fang Yuan had understood this from Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Originally, according to Shadow Sect’s plan, they sought to refine the rank ten sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

Sovereign immortal fetus Gu was known as ‘Sovereign’, it naturally surpassed rank nine, this was the ambition of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Unfortunately, he only managed to refine the rank nine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, and it was snatched away by Fang Yuan.

According to Spectral Soul’s concept, rank ten sovereign immortal fetus Gu had no weakness, it was nearly perfect. But at rank nine, it had one flaw that was not a flaw.

Sovereign immortal fetus Gu was an Immortal Gu, Immortal Gu needed to be fed.

Sovereign immortal fetus Gu’s food were immortal fetuses.

What was an immortal fetus?

Immortal fetus was an ancient term.

For example, apertures were also known as Essence Pools or Purple Residences, but most people called them apertures.

What was the biggest difference between immortal and mortal?

Immortal apertures were also known as immortal fetuses. Except that immortal apertures were a more widely known name.

To feed sovereign immortal fetus Gu with others’ immortal apertures, the paths did not matter, but the cultivation level did.

For example, as a rank seven, Fang Yuan needed to annex rank seven immortal apertures now to feed sovereign immortal fetus Gu. When he becomes rank eight, he would need rank eight immortal apertures.

The perfect rank ten sovereign immortal fetus Gu did not need any food, it could create a truly perfect immortal body from the Gu. Unlike Fang Yuan currently, even though he had the sovereign immortal body, he could still be turned back into the sovereign immortal fetus Gu if an appropriate method was used.

Right now, even though Fang Yuan used sovereign immortal fetus Gu and obtained the sovereign immortal body, the flaw was still left behind.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan changed his cultivation plan earlier, the time in the immortal aperture was slowed, by giving up some time path resources, he avoided heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities, annexing other people’s apertures to raise his cultivation level.

This way, through a stroke of luck, he managed to feed the sovereign immortal body.

Fang Yuan did not lie to Three Feather Boy, on the way here, Fang Yuan met three rank six Western Desert Gu Immortals and killed them, capturing their souls and annexing two of their immortal apertures, Fang Yuan could not annex the final one because of attainment level, he let it become a blessed land.

Fairy Cui Bo and Three Feather Boy were a strong duo.

They schemed and deceived Fiend Mosquito into entering the Gu formation, testing it for them while Fairy Cui Bo waited in ambush nearby.

When they met ordinary rank seven Gu Immortals, Fairy Cui Bo could talk to them equally, but unfortunately, they met Fang Yuan.

“Coincidentally, a rank seven Gu Immortal who cultivates water path appeared, after eating her, I will not need to worry about sovereign immortal fetus Gu’s food for some time.”

Fang Yuan was filled with killing intent, it was rare to find someone whose immortal aperture he could annex.

Especially in Western Desert where fire path and wind path were the most popular paths, while water path was very rare, forming a clear contrast to Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan was a water path grandmaster, but his fire path and wind path attainment levels were just ordinary.

Rumble!

Fang Yuan struck rapidly, using his immortal killer move, myriad self first style — Giant Hand.

Immediately, a huge hand pushed away the air and charged at Fairy Cui Bo and Three Feather Boy with an overwhelming aura.

Three Feather Boy shouted in shock as he dodged.

Fairy Cui Bo also showed a look of surprise, she waved her hand as green acid appeared.

The acid moved like a snake, landing on the giant hand and corroding it by twenty percent.

However, the giant hand still had eighty percent of its power left, under Fang Yuan’s manipulation, it ignored Three Feather Boy and rushed towards Fairy Cui

Bo.

Fairy Cui Bo retreated as she called out: “Hold on, I am the third concubine of Thousand Transformations Ancestor. Why don’t you give ancestor face, becoming allies with us and sharing this Zombie Alliance treasure?

Even though Fairy Cui Bo had rank seven cultivation level, her strength was not impressive, it was very ordinary.

But her status was quite extraordinary.

She was related to Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

Even though Fang Yuan had little information of Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world, he knew about the reputation of Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

This ancestor cultivated transformation path solely, when he was young, he obtained a portion of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s true inheritance, he had a thousand transformations. Thus, he was called Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

Even though he inherited a Demon Venerable’s true inheritance, he was not a demonic path Gu Immortal, he was a famous lone immortal in Western Desert.

His personal interest was similar to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he loved beautiful women and had hundreds or even thousands of wives and concubines. Among them were nearly ten Gu Immortals!

Fairy Cui Bo was one of them.

“If I take Western Desert Zombie Alliance’s inheritance, I will also get Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s animosity?” Fang Yuan frowned.

Fairy Cui Bo dodged as she observed his expression, before saying: “I came here due to ancestor’s orders. Sir, you have such battle strength, but it is not possible to get through the defensive Gu formation using brute force. The treasure has not appeared yet, why must we fight to the death now? If we waste time, unexpected mishaps might occur.”

Fairy Cui Bo was quite talented at speaking, Fang Yuan nodded: “You make sense.”

Fairy Cui Bo and Three Feather Boy were overjoyed upon hearing this, but immediately after, Fang Yuan opened his immortal aperture’s entrance and let out Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, and Fairy Miao Yin.

“Go kill these two, I will take the inheritance here.” Fang Yuan said.

Bai Ning Bing snorted, even though she was unhappy with Fang Yuan giving orders, she still charged towards Fairy Cui Bo.

Hei Lou Lan fought against Three Feather Boy.

Fairy Miao Yin smiled lightly, watching from the side to reinforce them.

Fairy Cui Bo and Three Feather Boy were truly in fear now.

They did not expect that Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture would have three Gu Immortals, and all of them were from other regions.

This was very rare.

Gu Immortals would not let other Gu Immortals hide inside their immortal apertures for no reason.

Soon, Fairy Cui Bo and Three Feather Boy were heavily suppressed, they could not retaliate against Hei and Bai.

“These two are ten extreme immortals! Their methods are impressive, I have never seen them before!”

“I remember now, they are fugitives! Demonic scoundrels! This person is one of the culprits behind the fall of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!”

Three Feather Boy and Fairy Cui Bo realized some information about Fang Yuan and the others, they were even more shocked now, they lost their morale and tried to escape.

Hei and Bai chased after them, quickly getting out of this cave.

Fang Yuan stood before the sandstorm, using his method that had been brewing for some time.

In a few breaths’ time, the sandstorm weakened, splitting in the center and revealing a path.

Fang Yuan entered without hesitation.

Fairy Miao Yin was still standing guard outside against any intruders.

The sandstorm became larger after Fang Yuan entered, the path vanished as it returned to the original state.

A city soon appeared in Fang Yuan’s vision.

Corpse City.

Looking at it, this was a city made from yellow clay, it was not impressive.

But the truth was, this city was a huge mortal Gu House, it was like the Dark Flow Giant City in Northern Plains Zombie Alliance’s branch.

However, Western Desert Zombie Alliance’s branch was different from the one in Northern Plains.

The true base of Western Desert Zombie Alliance’s branch was an earth path blessed land.

Corpse City was inside the blessed land.

Back then, when Shadow Sect activated their hundred thousand year plan to defy heaven and refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, they lost nearly everything.

The blessed land base of Western Desert Zombie Alliance’s branch was discarded, the resources inside were hidden in Corpse City, the entire mortal Gu House was moved to underneath translocation desert, and a defensive Gu formation was activated.

This method allowed Western Desert Zombie Alliance to preserve most of its foundation, not long after the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, the former earth path blessed land of Western Desert Zombie Alliance was broken into by Western Desert Gu Immortals.

But when they plundered it, these Western Desert Gu Immortals were not satisfied, they became angry from this.

Because they did not get the loot that they planned to get.

After their constant investigation and deduction, along with the secret help of heaven’s will, they finally found this translocation desert, and confirmed that Western Desert Zombie Alliance’s inheritance was hidden here.

But to find the exact cave was not easy. Not only were these caves numerous like the stars in the sky, most importantly, these caves were constantly moving.

At every moment, old caves vanished while new caves appeared.

This made the Western Desert Gu Immortals’ search difficult.

Fang Yuan was different, he was the leader of Shadow Sect, he got here and entered Corpse City, it was simply too easy for him.

“However, meeting Fairy Cui Bo here was likely the plot of heaven’s will. To make me oppose a rank eight great expert the moment I enter Western Desert.”

“Along with me, Bai Ning Bing and the others have been hit with investigative killer moves.”

“I need to relocate these inheritances as soon as possible!”

Fang Yuan opened his immortal aperture’s entrance and waved his hand, as the entire Corpse City entered his immortal aperture.

Corpse City did not have Immortal Gu stored up, but the defensive Gu formation used Immortal Gu as the core.

There were a total of two Immortal Gu, one of them was Fang Yuan’s main objective in this journey.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1395: Scaring Away Three Rank Sevens

From the appearance, this resembled a rhinoceros beetle.

Fang Yuan held it in his palm, feeling the heavy stone-like weight.

It had a huge carapace and a thick head, giving people the feeling of strength. Its tall and long forked horn seemed like a spear stabbing towards the sky.

Rule path rank seven Immortal Gu — Fight!

This Immortal Gu was Fang Yuan’s biggest gain this time.

With his status as Shadow Sect’s leader, Fang Yuan quickly refined this Gu and kept it in his immortal aperture.

Other than that, there was another Immortal Gu.

It was rank six earth path, called Yellow Sand.

This Immortal Gu looked like a ladybug and had a round carapace with six yellow stars on it.

With rank seven Immortal Gu Fight and rank six Immortal Gu Yellow Sand, as well as some mortal Gu,the dense earth qi inside these caves, and earth path dao marks, Western Desert Zombie Alliance created this defensive Gu formation.

But as Fang Yuan gathered Gu worms into his immortal aperture, the Gu formation broke apart and collapsed.

Fang Yuan took another look at the treasury of Corpse City.

Within the mortal Gu House, there were lots of immortal materials.

The most precious one was the cold moon divine bravery, it was a rank seven immortal material condensed from moonlight at the center of the desert, taking ten thousand years to form.

Inside treasure yellow heaven, it was priceless.

The quantity was so few that even rank eight Gu Immortals did not have much.

The one with the most quantity was a rank six immortal material, phosphorescent wood, this grew in fierce ghost desert, in the territory of Western Desert Zombie Alliance.

There was a lot of phosphorescent wood, this was the accumulation of the Western Desert Zombie Alliance branch after countless years.

“This shows the massive foundation that Shadow Sect once had!”

“Unfortunately, to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, they invested too much, after the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, their remaining forces were targeted by heaven’s will, Heavenly Court, as well as me.”

Fang Yuan sighed internally.

Ying Wu Xie and gang had already visited the other branches, Central Continent, Northern Plains, and Southern Border’s Zombie Alliance inheritance had already been used up.

Over at Eastern Sea Zombie Alliance branch, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals had taken over and were in control of it.

And now, the final Western Desert inheritance was in Fang Yuan’s hands.

This was the final bit of fortune that Shadow Sect had.

Other than this, there were some minor things, but in Western Desert, the only things that Fang Yuan cared about were the resource points similar to Jade Pot Mountain, Shadow Sect had secretly nurtured them to spawn wild Immortal Gu.

In the underground cave, Fairy Miao Yin and Fang Yuan waited for some time.

A white clothed person walked in, it was dragon lady Bai Ning Bing.

She was cold like an icy mountain, her robe was white as snow, she was holding a captive in her hands.

It was Fairy Cui Bo from earlier!

Right now, she was a frozen popsicle, her eyes were shut and her body was covered in frost, she did not move, she was at Bai Ning Bing’s mercy.

Bai Ning Bing actually captured Fairy Cui Bo.

This result made Fairy Miao Yin praise her as Fang Yuan’s eyes shone.

Even though Bai Ning Bing had rank six cultivation level, her battle strength was truly at rank seven, and one of the stronger experts among rank seven too.

Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique of the ten extreme physiques complemented Bai Xiang’s true inheritance to display many times the original effect!

And most importantly, Bai Ning Bing did not fear death, she was someone with incredible talent.

Back in Southern Border, she had fought against three and killed two while heavily injuring the last one, the results were incredible. And now, she forcefully captured a rank seven Gu Immortal, her battle strength was only second to Fang Yuan now.

“Even though we captured Fairy Cui Bo, I am in no rush to annex her immortal aperture.” Fang Yuan thought.

Firstly, this place was filled with earth qi and did not have heaven qi, it was not suitable to place immortal aperture.

Earlier, the rank six Gu Immortal Fiend Mosquito in the defensive Gu formation had turned into sand, both his immortal aperture and corpse were of no value now.

Fang Yuan was not hungry now, he was not at the point of needing food yet.

And most importantly, Fairy Cui Bo was related to the rank eight Gu Immortal Thousand Transformations Ancestor. He could use her to alleviate some of heaven’s will’s schemes.

“Since you captured her, you can keep her inside your immortal aperture.” Fang Yuan said to Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing nodded.

She could not turn back now, she was pursued by both Heavenly Court and Southern Border, she also needed Shadow Sect’s help to refine Gu, she had to cooperate with Fang Yuan.

Hei Lou Lan returned too.

There were traces of blood on her: “That boy was burned to ashes, his immortal aperture was destroyed too. Additionally, the battle attracted a bunch of Western Desert Gu Immortals, but I did not fight them, I returned immediately. Their aura shows they are not simple.”

Fang Yuan nodded.

Even though Hei Lou Lan had just undergone her immortal ascension, she already had very keen insight.

Her evaluation was unlikely to be wrong, these Western Desert Gu Immortals should be experts among rank sevens.

It was no wonder.

Western Desert Zombie Alliance was a super force after all. It was normal for the Western Desert Gu Immortals to come to search for its inheritance. Even super forces would pay attention to it, moreover, don’t forget heaven’s will was here trying to cause more problems for them.

“We will leave now.” Fang Yuan said but before he finished, three figures emerged from left, right, and above him.

“Friend, you are dreaming if you want to leave after getting Zombie Alliance’s inheritance.” At the left, a thin young-looking Gu Immortal with rainbow feathers laughed shrilly.

He was a rank seven Gu Immortal who cultivated enslavement path, known as Peacock Deity.

“You can leave, but you need to leave a portion of Zombie Alliance’s inheritance for us.” A female immortal above him wore a traditional Western Desert white dress, her face was half concealed by a veil, her beautiful eyes had thick and long eyelashes on them.

This beauty was a famous fairy in Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world, her status was on par with Qiao Si Liu and Fairy Miao Yin, she was called Beautiful Camel Immortal.

To the right was a Gu Immortal with a beard and bare chest, his muscular body and strong arms, along with his bronze skin and deep breathing, made him seem like a powerful person.

He had a huge background, because his surname was Dong.

Dong clan was a super clan of Western Desert.

Dong Lie Feng, wind path rank seven expert, most skilled at tracking and following people.

“Two Southern Border, one Northern Plains, and one Western Desert Gu Immortal, why such a motley crew!” Dong Lie Feng frowned.

Fang Yuan had the sovereign immortal body and was in Western Desert, he had the aura of a Western Desert Gu Immortal. Hei Lou Lan underwent immortal ascension in Northern Plains, she was a Northern Plains Gu Immortal. Bai Ning Bing and Fairy Miao Yin were both Southern Border Gu Immortals.

Gu Immortals of other regions were usually ostracized.

In this regard, Eastern Sea displayed it the least, but the other four regions normally hated outsiders. Gu Immortals of other regions usually acted with a low profile because any strife or conflict would cause them to be ganged up upon by everyone.

Be it Peacock Deity, Beautiful Camel Immortal, or Dong Lie Feng, they had ugly expressions.

Because Fang Yuan and the others took away Zombie Alliance’s inheritance. This belonged to them in their minds.

“These are Gu Immortals of other regions, we can put down our differences and work together, to kill all of these outsider Gu Immortals first!”

“That’s right, Western Desert is ruled by us Western Desert natives, these outsiders want to steal our treasures in our territory.”

“Hand over Zombie Alliance’s inheritance and we might spare your lives!”

The three Western Desert Gu Immortals shouted.

At the same time, they communicated secretly.

“Be careful, they have two rank seven and two rank six Gu Immortals.”

“Those two rank sixes are not simple, their auras are strange.”

“That rank seven youngster seems quite familiar, where have I seen him before... hmm?!”

Dong Lie Feng’s pupils shrunk as he realized Fang Yuan’s identity.

Fang Yuan was currently using his real appearance. Since he knew about the investigative killer move on him, and since familiar face used up mental energy and immortal essence, he decided to stop concealing his identity since it was pointless.

“He is Liu Guan Yi!” Dong Lie Feng thought in shock, he immediately retreated.

Swoosh, he spiraled away.

Vanishing in an instant.

Beautiful Camel Immortal and Peacock Deity were stunned!

What happened?!

They were still filled with battle intent earlier and discussing about battle tactics, but now, Dong Lie Feng ran away?

Was he hit by a peculiar killer move from the enemy?

Or... did he retreat on his own?

“Wait!” Beautiful Camel Immortal’s expression also changed, she realized that Fang Yuan was Liu Guan Yi.

After the battle of Reverse Flow River, Liu Guan Yi became famous in all five regions, his appearance was known to all. This level of popularity varied in the five regions.

Northern Plains was the most informed about it, while Central Continent also knew a lot because Heavenly Court participated in the battle.

As for the other three regions, some knew about Liu Guan Yi’s appearance, but others only heard about about the matter, they did not have much information.

After all, in their minds, Liu Guan Yi was a Northern Plains Gu Immortal, he was not in the same region as them.

Like earlier, Fairy Cui Bo did not manage to recognize Fang Yuan, ending up as a captive.

Beautiful Camel Immortal recognized Fang Yuan and immediately gasped, why would she stay here?

She escaped immediately!

What a joke, this person could rival rank eight experts.

How could she fight him? Trying to find trouble with him was courting death!

At the same time, Beautiful Camel Immortal scolded Dong Lie Feng in her mind, he ran so quickly without informing them.

But in his perspective, if Beautiful Camel Immortal found out about Fang Yuan's identity first, she would do the same.

After all, when escaping, not only did you and your enemy's speed matter, the important thing was the difference in speed between you and your allies.

Peacock Deity was dazed.

Beautiful Camel Immortal fled too?!

Oh no!!

At this moment, Peacock Deity felt something amiss, even though he did not understand why, he had a lot of life experience, he immediately reacted.

His body shook as he flew away like lightning, he was even faster than Beautiful Camel Immortal.

Before Fang Yuan did anything, these three Western Desert rank seven experts fled in fear.

Fang Yuan looked at the sky as he snickered.

Even if heaven's will plotted, so what?

As long as Fang Yuan was strong enough, no matter who was instigated, their survival instincts would take over at the crucial moment.

Earlier, when he escaped around Southern Border, it was because his enemies were too strong.

But in fact, Fang Yuan was already a Gu Immortal expert. Ordinary rank seven Gu Immortals could not even face him directly!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1396: Soaring Fighting Spirit

"Hmph, a bunch of clowns." Bai Ning Bing snorted coldly.

Hei Lou Lan was silent, feeling deep emotions.

Peacock Deity, Beautiful Camel Immortal, and Dong Lie Feng were rank seven experts, even in Southern Border, although they could not compare to Old Treeman Ba De and Wu clan's Wu Yu Bo, they could match Wu Yi Ran.

That Beautiful Camel Immortal had status similar to Fairy Miao Yin and Qiao Si Liu in Western Desert's Gu Immortal world.

But against Fang Yuan, who could rival rank eights, they were simply too weak.

"Unknowingly, he had already grown to this extent. Such terrifying growth speed!!" Hei Lou Lan's heart was truly in a commotion.

Her battle strength had surged greatly as well. But after her immortal ascension, she had been pursued constantly, she rarely had time to flaunt her strength. This time, when the enemies ran away from them, she finally realized, their side was truly powerful.

Their earlier encounters were because the enemies were too powerful.

Heavenly Court, Longevity Heaven, and the entire righteous path alliance of Southern Border.

The truth was, as long as there were no rank eight Gu Immortals, with their power, they could rampage unhindered!

"In the entire Gu Immortal world, rank eight Gu Immortals are very few, as long as we get rid of the investigative killer moves on us, we can hide ourselves and develop quietly. With such strength, most Gu Immortals cannot obstruct our development!"

Hei Lou Lan thought of this as her ambitions grew again.

She was a bold and formidable person, her ambitions were huge.

Even though she was restrained by Shadow Sect's alliance agreement, she was not going to be an obedient subordinate of Fang Yuan forever.

"Alright, we got what we want, let's go." Fang Yuan said.

Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, and Fairy Miao Yin gathered together.

The four immortals worked together and used the ancient battle formation, Omni-directional Travel.

Whoosh!

With a bright light, they vanished.

When they opened their eyes, they were above an ordinary sand dune.

The sun was hanging in the sky, as the sand below them were heated and the air was distorted from heat, they felt a strong wave of hot air blowing at them.

Fang Yuan looked afar.

Translocation desert was over there. They were far away now.

"We will rest here. Guard the surroundings." Fang Yuan said as he opened his immortal aperture's entrance, letting Lady White Rabbit out.

He was now the leader of Shadow Sect. He had Shadow Sect's information, all these members, wandering other regions, chose to obey Fang Yuan.

The four immortals flew out and concealed themselves, using their investigative methods.

Fang Yuan entered the desert and went deep underground, creating a small cave in the sand.

This cave was very simple, but Fang Yuan used some mortal Gu to create a Gu

formation.

Not only did he reinforce this cave, he even allowed fresh air to come in.

Fang Yuan was a formation path grandmaster, such a mortal Gu formation was as easy as breathing to him.

After creating it, Fang Yuan did not waste time, he sat down and shut his eyes.

He raced against time and quickly used an immortal killer move.

This move was called soaring fighting spirit, it was a non-mainstream wisdom path killer move that Fang Yuan got from Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance.

This move only had one core Immortal Gu, it was the rule path rank seven Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan obtained from Corpse City’s defensive Gu formation — Fight.

The other supplementary Gu worms were all mortal Gu, and most were wisdom path.

It was a rank seven immortal killer move after all, even though time was pressing, Fang Yuan was not overly rushing it.

He moved step by step, meticulously.

Gu worms were activated as profound lights formed, enveloping the sky of Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

As the number of mortal Gu increased, the profound lights became deeper in color.

After reaching the limit, Fang Yuan started to instill red date immortal essence into fight Immortal Gu.

The immortal essence expenditure was not high, only using three beads, the back of fight Gu opened up as it started to fly, drawing a silver trace in the sky using its body.

This trace entered the profound light, it shined instantly with a blinding glare.

Boom.

The profound light exploded, fading instantly.

A large number of mortal Gu were destroyed, even fight Gu fell to the ground.

The killer move activation failed!

The backlash made Fang Yuan’s soul shake as he suffered major injuries.

Thoughts were rampaging in his mind, countless thoughts collided or destroyed themselves uncontrollably.

Fang Yuan started to think about random things as absurd thoughts filled his mind.

But he was prepared for it, he held on and endured it.

After a dozen breaths, the thoughts in his mind settled down.

Fang Yuan was pale and let out a breath of air, healing his injuries.

The injuries on his body were mild, but his soul was heavily injured and his mind was also hurt badly.

It was not surprising.

This immortal killer move was used for the first time, even though Fang Yuan simulated it earlier, the actual use of it would definitely be different from his deductions.

The stronger the immortal killer move, the greater the backlash when its activation fails.

And backlash also had different types.

Like this time, Fang Yuan’s body was not injured much, his soul and mind were the ones which suffered.

After some healing, Fang Yuan recovered from his injuries.

Currently, although Fang Yuan did not have any strong immortal healing methods, he had sufficient ways. If his body got injured, he had time path Immortal Gu Man as Before. If his soul was injured, he had guts Gu.

His mind was injured this time, but Fang Yuan also had many wisdom path methods to heal himself.

These were all inherited from Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body had non-conflicting dao marks, the healing effect was very good.

Of course, with an injured mind, just these small methods could not completely resolve the issue, but the lingering symptoms were of no concern.

Fang Yuan ignored these, he continued to try and activate the immortal killer move, soaring fighting spirit.

He failed the second time but finally succeeded on the third time.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture, a profound light flowed like water, turning from a spread out cloud to a condensed basin-size shape.

“Go.” At Fang Yuan’s will, this round profound light shot down and landed on Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie was still in the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body, but he had suffered too big of an impact, he was like a corpse lying on the ground, lifeless and dull.

The profound light landed on him like water going into the soil, it directly went into Ying Wu Xie’s brain.

Not just that, a big portion went into his soul.

The entire process was very fast, it completely fused into him with just a few breaths of time.

Ying Wu Xie’s body shook.

Next, his eyes burst out with sharp light.

“Ahh!!!” He opened his mouth and shouted, before jumped and sitting up.

“Damn it... damn it!” He clenched his fists, veins were popping on his arms, his fingers were cracking.

“Heavenly Court captured my main body, this is unforgivable!”

“I must get back my main body, I must save him, even if it is Heavenly Court, I will smash them to bits!”

“Ahhhhhh!”

Ying Wu Xie continued to shout, he stood up and screamed at the sky.

“I want to fight!”

“I must persevere!!”

“I was too weak-willed earlier, that was not right.”

“Oh Fang Yuan, you are a complete otherworldly demon, since Lord Purple acknowledged you, I will do the same!”

“In this world, who has a chance of destroying fate Gu? You are the most likely person!”

“I believe that you can lead us and charge into Heavenly Court, destroy fate Gu and rescue my main body!!”

Ying Wu Xie was no longer as depressed as earlier, he was like a new person.

“Good.” Fang Yuan nodded in satisfaction.

Ying Wu Xie’s display showed he had not wasted his efforts.

Ying Wu Xie’s battle strength was rank seven, but he had the ultimate lead soul into dream killer move, even rank eight Gu Immortals could not defend against him, or even Immortal Gu Houses.

If Ying Wu Xie helped them during the battle against Wu Yong, Wu Yong might have died.

Ying Wu Xie regained his fighting spirit, not only did it increase Fang Yuan’s strength, it also involved another person.

Sixth Hair!

Inside Lang Ya blessed land, in a refinement hall.

Rumble!

Earth fire burst up and exploded like thunder.

From the flames, a figure jumped out.

This person was covered in black hair, had a brawny figure and was coughing pathetically.

It was Lang Ya land spirit.

“Cough, cough, I failed again.”

“Damn it!”

“If I used the nature refinement method of my race, the Immortal Gu refinement would have succeeded already. But that Fang Yuan wants to use the human isolation style to refine the Immortal Gu, isn’t he just making things difficult for me?”

Lang Ya land spirit complained incessantly.

At this moment, a voice came from outside the door: “I am Sixth Hair, requesting to meet lord first supreme elder!”

“Sixth Hair, what is it?” Facing his fellow hairy man, Lang Ya land spirit had an amiable disposition.

“I want to help first supreme elder refine Gu, it will help with raising my refinement path attainment!” Sixth Hair answered, bright light shining deep in his eyes.

Lang Ya land spirit was most skilled at the hairy man heaven and earth style Gu refinement method.

But this method would never succeed in refining Fang Yuan’s Gu. Because this method attracted heaven’s will and even heavenly tribulations or earthly calamities.

Only the human isolation method had a chance of success.

Lang Ya land spirit did not know this, and as a matter of fact, he did not excel at the human isolation style.

As a hairy man supremacist, he scoffed at the human isolation style, looking down on it. In terms of success rate, the hairy man heaven and earth style was far superior to the human isolation style.

Lang Ya land spirit was not familiar with this method, but Sixth Hair was.

Sixth Hair was a split soul of Spectral Soul, he was skilled at the human style. But when he lived in Lang Ya blessed land all these years, he did not expose that talent.

Until now.

“Oh Fang Yuan, since you obtained the acknowledgement of Ying Wu Xie, I will try and accept you as the leader of Shadow Sect!”

“Let me help you to refine the Immortal Gu.”

This was where Sixth Hair could help Fang Yuan the most.

Even though exposing his talent would be risky and attract Lang Ya land spirit’s suspicion, putting Sixth Hair in danger, he could not care about it now.

Being able to help Shadow Sect would be good enough!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1397: Switching Souls with Ying Wu Xie

His wavy black hair flowed down to his shoulders.

He had a tall nose, his lips were sharp like blades, he was currently pressing his lips together lightly, showing a cold and cool demeanor.

It was Ying Wu Xie’s soul.

Now, he had already left the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body, his soul was floating in the air.

“This body?” Ying Wu Xie frowned, looking at the ice coffin in front of him.

This ice coffin was emitting frost energy at all times, it was translucent like a crystal, a Gu Immortal was sealed inside.

Her body was small and dainty, she was like a little girl wearing a flowery green dress, there were two pearl earrings hanging on her ears, as if water was inside the pearls, there were green ripples inside when they shook.

Her eyes were shut, with Bai Ning Bing sealing her in the ice, even the thoughts in her mind were frozen, her life was in their hands.

This female immortal was none other than the Western Desert Gu Immortal who, out of lack of knowledge, did not flee from Fang Yuan immediately and got captured by Bai Ning Bing — Fairy Cui Bo.

Seeing Ying Wu Xie’s hesitation, Fang Yuan urged: “In this situation, how can we find another suitable body for you? Just use this for now.”

Ying Wu Xie nodded: “Sigh, this is the only way, let’s start!”

Fang Yuan waved his right hand as a rank seven Immortal Gu flew out from his hand.

This Immortal Gu was like a swan’s egg, it was translucent, and from the outside, jade light could be seen in it. When it was close, Fang Yuan could feel a bone chilling coldness emitting from this Immortal Gu.

This cold was different from the frost of the ice coffin.

The ice coffin’s coldness was bone piercing, but this Immortal Gu’s coldness was targeted directly at the soul.

Ying Wu Xie’s soul shuddered uncontrollably when this Immortal Gu came out.

On the other end, Bai Ning Bing watched quietly, her gaze was attracted to this rank seven Immortal Gu.

“This is change soul Immortal Gu?” Bai Ning Bing thought to herself.

Indeed, it was change soul Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu’s history was quite complex.

It was first refined by Green of Spectral Soul’s first generation split souls.

It was then passed to Spirit Affinity House’s Fairy Mo Yao.

To save her lover Bo Qing, Mo Yao used Change Soul to swap her soul with Bo

Qing.

Bo Qing’s remnant soul was saved by Shadow Sect and hidden inside Central Continent’s Earth Abyss, they tried healing him but his injuries were too severe, he was captured by Heavenly Court in the end.

Meanwhile, Mo Yao’s remnant soul was left inside Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body, and change soul Immortal Gu, as well as Bo Qing’s sword path Immortal Gu, were all left behind.

After this, Fang Yuan went into Falling Heavenly River and used Mo Yao’s will to lure out some Immortal Gu, including change soul Immortal Gu.

But even though Fang Yuan used the light of wisdom to refine these Immortal Gu, he knew nothing about change soul Immortal Gu.

Only when Star Constellation heaven’s will directed Fang Yuan and gave him a powerful killer move for switching souls, did Fang Yuan learn about its effect.

Fang Yuan switched souls in his dream and took over Ying Wu Xie’s body at the most crucial moment, he successfully plotted against Spectral Soul and took away sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

One could say, during the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Shadow Sect lost completely and Fang Yuan managed to turn it around for himself, this change soul Immortal Gu played a crucial role!

And now, this Immortal Gu was used once again, but this time, Fang Yuan was not dealing with Shadow Sect, he was helping it. He had even become the leader of Shadow Sect himself!

Events in life were truly unpredictable.

Before this, be it Fang Yuan or Shadow Sect, who could have expected this outcome?

Under the effect of Change Soul, Ying Wu Xie’s soul and Fairy Cui Bo’s soul were switched.

“What are you doing? What have you done with me?” Fairy Cui Bo’s soul left the ice coffin and woke up, screaming in terror.

But she lacked a body, even though her soul was screaming, the only thing that came out would be meaningless screeches to a person’s ear.

Of course, Fang Yuan understood them.

He had soul language Gu worms, they were mortal Gu and he possessed a huge quantity of them, inherited from Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Fang Yuan snickered, waving lightly towards Fairy Cui Bo’s soul.

Fairy Cui Bo felt an irresistible force as she floated towards Fang Yuan’s hand.

“No—!” She screamed loudly, her voice was so shrill that even Bai Ning Bing frowned lightly.

At the next moment, she was stuffed into the sovereign immortal aperture by Fang Yuan’s method.

Even though Bai Ning Bing had already soul searched Fairy Cui Bo and she had no secrets left, her Gu Immortal soul itself could be used.

Dang Hun Mountain was an effective way to use her.

Gu Immortal souls, especially human Gu Immortal souls with higher cultivation level, would have deeper foundations, after they were smashed on Dang Hun Mountain, the guts Gu produced would be higher in quantity.

But now, Fang Yuan had other methods to deal with her.

Thanks to Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance, there were many soul path methods recorded inside, one of them was a way to refine a Gu Immortal soul into a human shaped soul beast.

Fairy Cui Bo, with rank seven cultivation level, would become an ancient soul beast.

If Fang Yuan refined her into a soul beast, he did not need to use any enslavement path methods, he could make her obey him with absolute loyalty.

After becoming the leader of Shadow Sect, Fang Yuan’s greatest gain was in methods and killer moves. Even though there were many immortal materials and Immortal Gu, their value in total was still lower.

But these methods needed time to be converted into true battle strength.

And Fang Yuan was now facing the pursuit of enemies, he lacked time.

Fairy Cui Bo’s soul was suppressed, and Fang Yuan stored away change soul Immortal Gu, at this time, Bai Ning Bing let out ‘Fairy Cui Bo’ from the ice coffin.

Or rather, it was Ying Wu Xie inside Fairy Cui Bo’s body.

“So cold.” Ying Wu Xie muttered, he was still covered in frost.

Bai Ning Bing gave a wave, the frost on Ying Wu Xie’s body vanished.

Ying Wu Xie expressed his gratitude before receiving a large number of Gu worms from Fang Yuan.

He received a large amount of mortal Gu and Immortal Gu, as well as immortal essence stones.

“You still want me to use lead soul into dream?” Ying Wu Xie saw these Gu worms and was surprised.

“Take them, I already know about lead soul into dream. This killer move is too complex, I cannot master it in a short time, we were hit by Heavenly Court’s investigative killer move earlier, we need your battle strength!” Fang Yuan said calmly.

Ying Wu Xie nodded deeply, his eyes were shining as he clenched his fists: “Sect leader, you are right, I will not let you down!”

Bai Ning Bing had a look of suspicion in her gaze.

Even though Ying Wu Xie regained his morale, his personality seemed to have changed.

Fang Yuan nodded in agreement, but he understood.

Wisdom path had thoughts, wills, and emotions. Ying Wu Xie was originally depressed, but because his fighting spirit was renewed, his personality had changed slightly, it was natural.

“Sect leader, what are we going to do next? Tell us!”

“Even if we are attacking Heavenly Court, I will follow you!”

“Damn these righteous path scoundrels, I will kill all of them!!”

Ying Wu Xie said as he waved his arms, he was extremely excited, his huge plump chest was bouncing up and down in response.

Fang Yuan pondered: “Heavenly Court’s pursuit is the problem I want to address. They are the people most familiar with our information, the Gu Immortals they send will definitely be too strong for us to resist.”

Fang Yuan thought of this as he frowned.

He thought of Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge said that he had met Fang Yuan and the others because he was pursuing an Immortal Gu related to Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

But their encounter was simply too coincidental.

Was Feng Jiu Ge the back up plan of Heavenly Court?

It seemed like it, yet not really.

Fang Yuan thought in their shoes: “If I were Heavenly Court, I would do my best to deal with the remnant forces of Shadow Sect, and deal a fatal blow. Sending Feng Jiu Ge seems to be a poor decision.”

Fang Yuan did not understand this.

There was little chance of Heavenly Court making a mistake.

Heavenly Court dealt with Shadow Sect and attacked twice with great effect. The first was during the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, and the second was the battle of the giant dream realm.

These were two crucial battles, because of Heavenly Court’s interference, Shadow Sect lost and Spectral Soul’s hundred thousand year plan was foiled.

“I became the leader of Shadow Sect and Heavenly Court immediately makes a careless mistake? No, there is something that I am not understanding.” Fang Yuan thought to himself.

At the same time, someone emerged from Western Desert’s regional wall.

He had a tall body, sharp brows and bright eyes, his expression was warm and he had a graceful demeanor, making people feel admiration towards him.

It was Feng Jiu Ge!

“With such a rank eight Immortal Gu, crossing the regional wall is countless times easier now.” Feng Jiu Ge looked behind, recalling the scene earlier.

Two Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortals suddenly appeared and stopped Feng Jiu Ge’s and Wu Yong’s battle.

Heavenly Court returned the Gu worms of Southern Border’s righteous path, and because Wu Yong was already injured, he accepted this result and left.

“Feng Jiu Ge, you have already vowed upon it, from now on, go pursue Fang Yuan and Shadow Sect.”

“This rank eight Immortal Gu will be lent to you, in the future, when you face rank eight Gu Immortals, it will not be so difficult.”

“But against Fang Yuan, you need to be careful of one thing.” The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals instructed Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge was confused, asking: “What do you mean?”

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had dark gazes: “Fang Yuan is a complete otherworldly demon, he needs to be killed. But it is not enough to kill him.”

“Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s chosen pawn is Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan has Spring Autumn Cicada and is now the leader of Shadow Sect, he will definitely head to the River of Time and find the stone lotus islands to inherit Red Lotus’ true inheritance.”

“Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s true inheritance is hidden deep in the River of Time, it is incredibly concealed.”

“Pursue Fang Yuan and force him to find Red Lotus’ true inheritance, before destroying him along with Red Lotus’ true inheritance!”

Feng Jiu Ge’s gaze flickered, he finally understood Heavenly Court’s true objective.

“Fang Yuan, Red Lotus’ true inheritance...”

Back in reality, Feng Jiu Ge muttered as he flew into the sky, directly towards the location where Fang Yuan and the others were hiding.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1398: Thousand Transformations Ancestor

The sun was blazing, the rays were like countless arrows shooting down at this majestic desert.

On this desert, there were countless sand statues.

These statues made from sand had the forms of humans or beasts, some were fighting while some were lying down, looking like they were on their final breaths.

There were larger and smaller sand statues, but the smallest one was tens of feet tall.

Countless statues formed a forest of sand statues, it was a grand sight.

It was the myriad statue desert!

This desert was huge, there were countless sand statues in it, everyone in Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world knew about it.

It had a long history, it was formed during the Olden Antiquity Era, and had been around for over a million years.

This desert was formed from a particularly important situation in human history.

It was during Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s era, a huge battle was fought here between humans and variant humans, after a hundred days and night, rivers of blood flowed, almost turning into a sea.

During that era, transformation path was the mainstream path.

In the battle, humans won a pyrrhic victory, be it the humans or the variant humans, large numbers of Gu Immortals died here.

Their immortal fetuses formed into blessed lands, their dao marks spread out and changed the environment.

Gradually, this became the myriad statue desert. The sand moved on its own, growing like trees at a slow rate each year, eventually turning into huge statues.

This was the former location of the great battle where the different races fought from day until night, countless life forms died. But fortune and disaster coexisted, this place became a sanctuary for cultivation as it was now filled with resources.

Every sand statue was an immortal material filled with transformation path dao marks if it was at least sixty feet tall.

There were no longer any blessed lands here, after a million years, these blessed lands were either destroyed by tribulations or taken by Gu Immortals.

But here, there were countless wild Gu worms and even wild Immortal Gu.

Nobody would step here rashly.

Because the environment was too dense with dao marks, mortals could not traverse the desert, it was too dangerous for them.

As for Western Desert Gu Immortals, they would also make a detour when they came here.

Because of one person.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor!

This rank eight Gu Immortal, specialized in transformation path, had been here for a thousand years.

The might of rank eight deterred everyone from antagonizing him.

Myriad statue desert was Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s territory, any Gu Immortal who entered without his permission would need to prepare to face the fury of a rank eight.

Deep below the desert, in Myriad Statue Palace.

Deep within the palace, in an eerie dark corner, there was a painful cry that could be heard.

“Ahhhhhh—!”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor raised his head and screamed, he seemed to be in great pain, his expression was terrifying.

Every time he shouted, sound waves could be seen spreading outwards.

But when these sound waves landed on the palace walls, there would be a veil of light that absorbed all the sound waves rapidly.

Because of these walls isolating him, all of the commotion from Thousand Transformations Ancestor could not be felt outside.

Pain!

Intense pain!

An unbearable pain was assaulting Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s mind and body.

His forehead had popping veins, he could not take it anymore, he rolled around the ground in pain.

If any other Gu Immortal saw this, they would be deeply shocked. What was the reason that made Thousand Transformations Ancestor suffer such intense torture, to have lost all of his rank eight demeanor?

Cling, clang!

More than ten thick chains coiled around Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s body, his four limbs were connected to chains that stabbed deeply into the surrounding walls.

Seeing this, Thousand Transformations Ancestor was actually imprisoned?!

“No, this cannot continue, I am going to go crazy completely, the intense pain will engulf all my reason and make me a lunatic! Rank eight myriad tribulation, even the first one is so terrifying, how can I deal with the next two?”

Damn it!

The final bit of clarity in Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s eyes struggled.

Using this last bit of sanity, Thousand Transformations Ancestor made his choice!

Immortal killer move — Cutting Flesh Transformation!

He activated his killer move, he was extremely familiar with this move, at the crucial moment, even though he was in deep pain, the activation did not fail.

This rank eight immortal killer move had grand aura.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s immortal body started to expand.

Like he was a balloon, he became larger and larger, from a muscular middle aged man into a round and fat meatball.

The fat Thousand Transformations Ancestor shook his body as soft sounds could be heard from within him.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh...

Along with the sound, a meat lump appeared on the side of his neck.

The meat lump became larger and larger, it inflated like a balloon.

His pain intensified!

Thousand Transformations Ancestor gritted his teeth, his face had swollen up, his eyes could not be seen anymore.

Guh.

Soon, after the meat lump on his neck grew to the size of a face, it reached its limits and exploded.

The meat lump exploded as yellow pus splattered, a year beast jumped out and landed on the ground.

Woof woof woof!

After this year beast landed, it started to bark, it was a dog year beast.

And its aura was not weak, it was a desolate year beast.

After the dog year beast landed on the ground, Thousand Transformations Ancestor felt a bit of relief. It was as if he was carrying a mountain on his back, and now, a rock had been lifted off that mountain.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh...

Next, on Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s body, more meat lumps appeared.

Puff puff puff.

In a short time, these meat lumps expanded and exploded, as pus oozed out and year beasts appeared.

Chicken, monkey, sheep, rabbit, all sorts of year beasts appeared.

These year beasts were not just desolate beast level, there were also some ancient year beasts.

After some time, the year beasts gathered and attacked Thousand Transformations Ancestor!

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was not surprised, his expression became more relaxed instead.

His pain was greatly reduced, even though it was still painful, it was at a bearable level now.

Against the attack of a dozen year beasts, Thousand Transformations Ancestor snorted as he willed.

Cling clang!

Countless thick chains shot out from the surrounding walls at lightning speed.

In the blink of an eye, all of the year beasts were captured and suppressed, no matter how they struggled inside the palace.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor let out a breath of air: “I can finally catch a breather.”

He grabbed the snake year beast closest to him and observed it with his methods.

The snake year beast continued to hiss as it exposed its tongue, it wanted to bite Thousand Transformations Ancestor but was restrained and could not move.

A moment later, Thousand Transformations Ancestor's expression was unchanged, but he was deeply shocked.

"I used all my methods earlier, but this snake year beast still has such great animosity against me, it wants me dead."

"My cutting flesh transformation is one of the styles of an immortal killer move from Reckless Savage true inheritance, suicide transformation. Whenever I use it, life forms would be produced from my body, regardless of form, they will be manipulated like my limbs, I can use them freely. Because they are a portion of my body to begin with."

"But these year beasts were produced from my body, yet I cannot control them, even with all my methods, they are useless."

"Such an amazing myriad tribulation!"

Thousand Transformations Ancestor's forehead produced a drop of sweat.

He thought about his tribulation half a month ago, he was still feeling lingering fear from it.

Rank eight Gu Immortals had to go through three myriad tribulations.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor had just gone through the first.

"If not for this Immortal Gu House left behind by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, I would not be able to survive the first myriad tribulation at all. Even though I passed it now, I am still severely injured, I had to use cutting flesh transformation to cut my losses short."

Thousand Transformations Ancestor wanted to find some other way around it, but after half a month, he reached his limit and could not endure it anymore.

Without a choice, he could only use cutting flesh transformation to discard a portion of his immortal body, and get rid of the part of his body that was heavily injured.

This time, he met with a time path myriad tribulation, the injuries on him were all of time path dao marks.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor got rid of all these time path dao marks using cutting flesh transformation, abandoning them.

This way, the cutting flesh transformation turned them into year beasts.

And because they were filled with heaven's will, these year beasts were not under his control, they were his enemies.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor felt great loss.

The costs were too severe.

Not just the near catastrophic damage to his immortal aperture from the myriad tribulation.

Looking at the dao marks he lost from cutting flesh transformation, not only did he lose the time path dao marks, he even lost his own transformation path dao marks.

The dao marks losses were too huge.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor counted, after this myriad tribulation, not only did he not have any growth in dao marks, he even made a small loss instead!

“This means, I was better off not going through the tribulation?”

Thinking of this, the experienced Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s heart felt some bitterness.

He sighed deeply.

It could not be helped.

In the past, he had cultivated boldly and advanced quickly, facing his myriad tribulation, he had stalled it until recently, when he could no longer stall it anymore.

Even though he passed the myriad tribulation, Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s foundation did not grow, he even became weaker in terms of dao marks.

“I was wrong.”

“A thousand years ago, by relying on this Reckless Savage true inheritance, I thought I would progress unhindered.”

“Earthly calamities, heavenly tribulations, grand tribulations, I got through all of them easily, but the myriad tribulation is a completely different story!”

“I underestimated the myriad tribulation’s power. These last years, I had unknowingly gotten more arrogant, this injury is both a blessing and a disaster to me.”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was a rank eight expert, he was naturally an incredible person.

He recalled his experiences and reflected on himself after this severe loss.

Right at this time, outside the palace, a female immortal’s voice could be heard: “Lord husband, something happened. Sister Cui Bo’s life tablet Gu was broken, her soul lantern Gu has turned dim. She went to translocation desert, but none of us can contact her now, this is too important, I had no choice but to inform you!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1399: Selling Year Beasts

“What?”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor heard this and became furious.

Even though he had many wives and concubines, among them, he doted on his third concubine, Fairy Cui Bo, the most.

Who did not know that in Western Desert's Gu Immortal world?

Now that Fairy Cui Bo was in trouble, if it was intentional, then these Gu Immortal culprits were simply looking down on Thousand Transformations Ancestor!

There were two possibilities.

The first was that the attacking Gu Immortal had a strong background, similar to that of a rank eight great expert, they were not afraid of Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

The other possibility was that the inheritance of Western Desert Zombie Alliance's branch was too alluring, the value was tremendous, greed led to killing intent, and they took that risk at the spur of the moment.

"I'll repress it." Thousand Transformations Ancestor breathed in deeply, holding down his anger for now.

He could not go out in this situation.

There were still meat lumps growing on his body, continuing to produce year beasts.

He needed to heal himself.

If he left now and met any rank eights, his weakness would be exposed.

"I occupy myriad statue desert, everyone knows I obtained Reckless Savage's true inheritance. If my weak state is exposed, everyone will want to attack me, I need to lay low for now, I'll let Hong Yun 1 deal with it."

Thinking of this, Thousand Transformations Ancestor transmitted outside: "Hong Yun, set off now, find Cui Bo and save her."

The female immortal outside said in fear: "Lord husband, I have low battle strength, my safety is secondary, but if I fail to achieve your objective, that will be worse."

"No worries, I will lend you a rank eight Immortal Gu along with my will and immortal essence. Don't worry and go." Thousand Transformations Ancestor said as a slit opened in the door, a lump of will carrying a rank eight Immortal Gu as well as some immortal essence flew out.

The female immortal, Hong Yun, was overjoyed, she bowed three times: "This concubine understands."

Thousand Transformations Ancestor asked Hong Yun to leave as his thoughts went back to his problem.

Even though he loved Fairy Cui Bo, the bigger concern was himself. There were more and more year beasts in this palace, Thousand Transformations Ancestor frowned deeply.

"These year beasts are either desolate beasts or ancient desolate beasts."

"But they are filled with heaven's will and are my enemies, I cannot use them!"

"Rather than killing them for immortal materials... I might as well sell them inside treasure yellow heaven."

Thousand Transformations Ancestor had no other choice.

This myriad tribulation expended almost all of his foundation. His immortal aperture was a mess now, and so was his body, his battle strength was lower than before he went through the myriad tribulation.

And the most infuriating thing was, even though he passed the myriad tribulation, he had lost dao marks instead of gaining them.

“Gu Immortal cultivation is truly increasingly difficult.”

“Even though I had Reckless Savage’s true inheritance, I still faced such great danger during the myriad tribulation.”

“No wonder there are only ten rank nine Gu Immortals throughout the long history of humanity. Sigh!”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor sighed deeply as he stuffed a desolate level year beast into his immortal aperture.

Using the immortal aperture, he sent this year beast into treasure yellow heaven.

Any item, when placed into treasure yellow heaven, would emit treasure light.

Although Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s desolate level year beast was not a genuine one, being formed from his flesh, and created from heaven’s will and time path dao marks, after entering treasure yellow heaven, it emitted an incredibly large treasure light.

This treasure light attracted the attention of many Gu Immortals.

Some were Gu Immortal wills while others were the divine senses of Gu Immortals undergoing transaction.

“How are you selling this year beast?” Soon, Gu Immortals approached him.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor smiled and replied: “No hurry, no hurry.”

Soon after, he stuffed a portion of the year beasts into treasure yellow heaven again.

Year beasts were rare in the first place. Especially when they lived inside the River of Time. Be it the five regions or the two heavens, they were rarely seen. Entering the River of Time was far harder than entering black heaven and white heaven. Only time path rank eight great experts could enter freely.

Right now, Thousand Transformations Ancestor wanted to sell so many year beasts, and they were not ordinary beasts, they were all desolate beasts or ancient desolate beasts, treasure yellow heaven went into a commotion.

“There is a Gu Immortal selling large numbers of year beasts suddenly, go take a look.”

“These year beasts have such high quality, it is astounding.”

“It is hard to imagine that someone raised so many year beasts. This person must be a time path great expert!”

The Gu Immortals conversed and guessed.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was rather satisfied, he created such a commotion and watched as it spread, soon, more and more Gu Immortals will pay attention to this.

“These year beasts are pure and natural. I have not used any enslavement methods on them from the start. You can see for yourselves.” Thousand Transformations Ancestor explained.

The Gu Immortals took a look and found that it was true, they quickly asked for the price.

“No rush, no rush.” Thousand Transformations Ancestor stalled.

He was waiting.

These year beasts were not true wild beasts, they were flesh of his body, formed from the might of the myriad tribulation. There were differences between them and natural year beasts.

Normal year beasts could be enslaved, but these year beasts filled with heaven’s will could not. Even if anyone could do it, they would have to be incredible experts, having extraordinary methods.

Thus, Thousand Transformations Ancestor needed to sell them all in the shortest time possible.

This could not be a sustained trade.

As time passes, everyone would find out this problem and announce it, his business will suffer greatly.

“Hopefully, one buyer offers a high price and buy all these year beasts!” Thousand Transformations Ancestor was thinking about the best case scenario.

He wanted to sell it to those super forces or rank eight Gu Immortals.

More and more year beasts were put up in treasure yellow heaven by Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

The Gu Immortals were gasping, thinking that this was a huge trade, for the last fifty thousand years, this was an extremely large number of year beasts sold.

Seeing that more people were coming, Thousand Transformations Ancestor announced: “I don’t like trouble, whoever buys more, I will sell to them first. For the price, I will sell according to the treasure light of each year beast, this is a fair and impartial trade.”

Once he said that, the secluded cultivators and lone cultivators begrudged.

But some emerged to ask about the transaction and price.

They were either rank eight great experts or representatives of super forces.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor negotiated with these people closely, his mind went back to a calm state, at this rate of sales, after he sells all the year beasts, he would earn quite a bit!

He might even be able to recoup his losses.

Feng Jiu Ge was flying in the sky.

It was a clear sky with no clouds anywhere.

Looking down, he saw that sand dunes were moving around, flowing slowly. What made Feng Jiu Ge comfortable was that this desert was not void of life, there was vegetation in it.

Some were cactus pointers, some were arrow shrubs, and some were white teeth flowers, bringing some life to the desert.

These were all common vegetation in Western Desert.

The cactus pointer was very much like a cactus, there were pin-like leaves on it. The cactus pointer had the shape of a human hand, some were clenched while others were pointing their index fingers, some were curling their pinky or raising their middle fingers, they pointed in all directions.

Arrow shrubs were the most common shrub in Western Desert. They had long and thick branches, they were about ten feet tall while some could reach thirty feet, even taller than houses. Under the arrow shrubs were some sand worms, and even wild Gu.

As for white teeth flowers, they were like sunflowers at the size of a face, looking at the sun to absorb sunlight. Around the flowers, there were orange-yellow petals, and at the center of the flower, there were rows of white teeth, lined together in a packed fashion. Under the light of the sun, they shined with a milky luster.

This was the special scenery of Western Desert, Feng Jiu Ge enjoyed it very much.

His main attention was ahead of him.

“I am close, Fang Yuan and the rest are nearby.” Feng Jiu Ge started to descend.

Soon, he went down and landed on the hot desert surface.

He flew down rapidly, but from start to finish, there was no commotion, no wind had formed at all.

Feng Jiu Ge looked around, a brilliant light flashed in his eyes, he had a discovery.

“There is an illusion formation here!”

This illusion formation could not be destroyed, even though it was a mortal formation, destroying it would alert them.

Feng Jiu Ge thought about it, he found that this illusion formation did not isolate the air of the inside and outside.

A gust of wind blew.

Feng Jiu Ge stretched out his arm and squeezed.

He actually grabbed the wind with his hand.

Next, an immortal killer move was secretly activated in his hand, the aura was completely concealed.

Finally, Feng Jiu Ge opened his hand as the wind in his grasp was placed towards his chest.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh...

Next, wind moved around his entire body, it was no different from the earlier natural breeze.

Under the force of this wind, he moved quickly and went past the illusion formation, getting to the core of the Gu formation.

His field of vision changed.

A huge sand whirlpool took over Feng Jiu Ge’s sight.

Loud crashing noises could be heard around his ears, Feng Jiu Ge felt like he was in the middle of a waterfall.

The rising smoke felt like the water vapor of the waterfall.

The entire sand whirlpool was huge and grand.

Feng Jiu Ge looked around, he did not discover Fang Yuan and the rest, he directed his gaze towards the center of the sand whirlpool.

There was a deep dark hole there.

After investigating it, Feng Jiu Ge did not hesitate, he jumped into the hole.

The hole was formed from spiraling sand, Feng Jiu Ge flew downward alone, the tunnel was quite big for one person.

Deep into the sand hole, Feng Jiu Ge soon found himself in darkness.

Feng Jiu Ge could not see anything but it did not matter, his investigative methods were not few, they were very useful.

This darkness could not stop him.

“Time path aura!” Feng Jiu Ge’s heart jumped, he knew he was at the right place.

This could be a tributary of the River of Time. If Fang Yuan followed the tributary of the River of Time, he could enter the River of Time and find Red Lotus’ true inheritance!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1400: Year Beast Army

The tunnel deep within the center of the sand whirlpool seemed to extend endlessly underground.

The deeper Feng Jiu Ge went, the more he could feel the time path aura getting denser.

Suddenly, from the darkness, there was a shining spark.

Inside the darkness, this light was extremely eye catching, it was shining in a brass color.

“A wild mortal Gu?” Feng Jiu Ge flew closer and saw a rank three day Gu.

Day Gu looked like a shell with a size of a child’s palm, it was round with two fins on its sides. The fins moved around as the shell swam in the darkness gently.

Compared to year beasts, day Gu was much more common, it could be found anywhere in the five regions and two heavens.

What got Feng Jiu Ge’s attention was the fact that the River of Time was filled with a vast number of day Gu, month Gu, and year Gu to begin with.

There were wild day Gu here, was there a tributary of the River of Time like he thought?

Tributaries of the River of Time were a commonly seen yet rare cultivation resource.

Commonly seen because every Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture had a tributary of the River of Time, it allowed time to flow within the immortal aperture’s world.

But rare because inside the five regions and two heavens, there were few tributaries of the River of Time, yet their scale was much larger than those inside immortal apertures. Once they appeared, super forces would fight for them using great strength. If lone immortals found them, they would try to conceal them and use them to gain a fortune themselves.

Not only were time path Gu worms needed by time path Gu Masters or Gu Immortals, they were very widely used in Gu refinement.

For example, day Gu, this rank three day Gu has three days worth of time in it.

If one had the relevant refinement path method, by expending this rank three day Gu, they could shorten the time needed for Gu refinement by three days.

There were also time path lifespan extension methods using day Gu, month Gu, and year Gu to increase lifespan. Of course, these methods had flaws and would carve time path dao marks in the person’s body. When these dao marks accumulated, they would not be able to use lifespan Gu in the future.

But lifespan Gu were hard to find, if one did not have any, and their lifespan was at its end, would they not use these methods?

“If there is a tributary of the River of Time here, Shadow Sect must have found it and secretly hid it here.” Feng Jiu Ge continued to delve deeper.

Soon, he saw more and more wild time path Gu worms.

Day Gu, month Gu, year Gu and more.

A white ripple of light appeared in front of Feng Jiu Ge.

This ripple was the size of a bed, it was like the ripples on the surface of a lake, completely silent.

Feng Jiu Ge slowed down cautiously.

This was a ripple of time.

A special phenomenon.

Like wind in the desert, fog in the mountains, and rain from the sky.

Ripples of time were a natural phenomenon as well.

Any life form which entered a ripple of time would be affected. Their time would become faster, they would grow older more quickly. They could also become slower, the world would seem to ‘move faster’ from their perspective.

But regardless of fast or slow, their lifespan would be shaved away.

Feng Jiu Ge did not dare to test it, he slowed down and detoured around it.

After leaving the ripple of time, Feng Jiu Ge let out a breath of air, he was even more certain now that there was a tributary of the River of Time here.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals have already pointed out to him that Red Lotus’ true inheritance was hidden in the stone lotus islands, if Fang Yuan wanted to inherit it, he would need to enter the River of Time, and to get into the River of Time, the best way was to find a tributary of the River of Time.

This tributary of the River of Time was like an entrance, it had to be big enough to enter. The tributary of the River of Time in a Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture was not big enough.

Only a tributary of the River of Time in the five regions and two heavens had an almost similar rate at which time flowed as the River of Time, it could allow Gu Immortals to enter.

More and more ripples of time started to appear in front of Feng Jiu Ge.

The deeper he went, the larger the tunnel became.

At first, there were only a few time path mortal Gu, but they increased in numbers, when he got to the deepest part, there were Gu worm groups of at least a hundred per group.

The time path aura was getting denser, Feng Jiu Ge could even hear the sound of flowing water.

Next, in his vision, he saw a long line.

As Feng Jiu Ge got closer, this line got larger, until it became the form of a river.

“A tributary of the River of Time!” Feng Jiu Ge’s heart shook, it was indeed here.

“But where are Fang Yuan and the others?” Feng Jiu Ge had just thought of this when a figure emerged from a ripple of time near him, pouncing at him.

Feng Jiu Ge immediately dodged as bright light shined in his eyes.

An immortal killer move was instantly activated.

Sound path — Silence Surpasses Sound!

Feng Jiu Ge cultivated sound path and aspired to create nine songs to represent everything in this world. He had already created seven songs currently, separation song was one of them.

But other than his seven songs, he also had other sound path methods.

Sound path killer move silence surpasses sound was one of them.

Feng Jiu Ge had practised it a lot, he was extremely familiar with it, his activation succeeded instantly.

He started to punch with his fist and strike with his palm, attacking the black shadow from a distance.

This was a killer move, with his fist as the drum fist, and his palm as the bell palm, it was the content of Spirit Affinity House’s Three Sounds true inheritance.

Within the Three Sounds true inheritance, other than drum fist and bell palm, there was also whistle finger. But Feng Jiu Ge had not learned it yet, he had only practised this with the aim of covering some shortages of methods in battle.

That huge shadow monster was growling from Feng Jiu Ge’s attacks.

But the strange thing was, its growling vanished the moment it opened its mouth.

Feng Jiu Ge’s drum fist created drumming noises, while his bell palm created bell chimes. But at this moment, there was no sound produced here.

Soon, Feng Jiu Ge had the upper hand, his attacks became fiercer as the monster became dazed from the attacks, it could not retaliate.

Feng Jiu Ge also saw that the thing that assaulted him was a year beast.

Monkey year beast.

And it was only a desolate beast, it was not an ancient desolate beast. Otherwise, it would not be suppressed so easily.

Feng Jiu Ge squinted.

In the River of Time, not only were there wild time path Gu worms, there were also wild beasts and plants. Year beasts were rare in the five regions, but they were common in the River of Time.

But...

Was this desolate level year beast arranged by Fang Yuan, or was it truly wild?

Feng Jiu Ge was considering this problem.

The answer to this would mean that Fang Yuan had either found his traces or not.

“Year beast...” Fang Yuan watched the battle as he connected to treasure yellow heaven.

In treasure yellow heaven, there were actually people selling year beasts openly, this was very rare.

Fang Yuan was deeply enticed.

These year beasts were either desolate beasts or ancient desolate beasts, if he could buy them and enslave them, they would be a huge force.

Don’t forget about his hundred and eighty slaves immortal killer move.

By then, using these year beasts and hundred and eighty slaves killer move, Fang Yuan could even enslave immemorial year beasts!

Even though he lost the upper extreme heavenly eagle, if he could get immemorial year beasts, Fang Yuan would get another rank eight battle strength.

But the problem was, the seller wanted to make huge transactions.

Fang Yuan naturally wanted to buy all of the year beasts, but he was not the only one.

His greatest weakness was that he did not have enough funds, if he wanted to buy the year beasts, he would need to sell the desolate beast eagles and ancient desolate beast eagles he bought earlier.

Of course, Fang Yuan could sell Immortal Gu.

But he would not do that unless he had no choice.

During the battle of the dream realm, Fang Yuan had to do that to survive, but now, it was not a situation of life and death.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was making his decision now.

He received many offers, but there were only three that moved him.

One directly offered immortal essence stones, a vast number of them, it was hard to imagine that someone would actually have so many immortal essence stones, even Thousand Transformations Ancestor was shocked.

The second one offered a lot of immortal materials of all kinds, what moved Thousand Transformations Ancestor was that among them were a lot of transformation path immortal materials.

The third buyer was also very sincere, he wanted to use eagle beasts to exchange for year beasts. Thousand Transformations Ancestor was currently cultivating a type of eagle transformation, this buyer’s offer suited him.

While Thousand Transformations Ancestor was hesitating, one of the three buyers offered a new high price.

“They are willing to offer Immortal Gu?!” Thousand Transformations Ancestor was shocked and surprised, he did not hesitate anymore, he agreed to the transaction.

All of the year beasts were sold to one Gu Immortal.

The transaction ended quickly, be it the buyer’s deep foundation and offer, or Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s quick decision, they were shocking.

Western Desert, inside the moving sand tunnel.

Chirp chirp chirp!

The monkey year beast screamed shrilly.

But its screams vanished due to Feng Jiu Ge’s killer move.

In this silent battle, the monkey year beast could not resist Feng Jiu Ge, it was brutally slaughtered.

Feng Jiu Ge inspected and found that this monkey year beast was truly a wild desolate beast, he took it as his spoils of battle and kept it in his immortal aperture.

The entire battle only lasted for a short while.

Feng Jiu Ge had evidently not used his true power, eliminating a desolate level year beast was too simple.

He did not need to rest, he continued to travel towards the tributary of the River of Time.

The closer he got, the clearer the tributary of the River of Time became.

River water was flowing, ripples were shining, the river was silently moving in this darkness.

Howl! Howl!

Suddenly, from the tributary of the River of Time, several year beasts flew out and attacked Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge was slightly shocked.

“I was discovered?” Earlier at that instant, he felt the aura of an immortal killer move.

The year beasts that attacked were quite powerful, there were five desolate level year beasts and three ancient year beasts!

Feng Jiu Ge snorted, his battle intent surged.

Since he was discovered, he no longer needed to restrain himself in battle.

“Come out Fang Yuan.” Feng Jiu Ge lightly called out.

But at the next moment, his pupils shrunk.

More year beasts were coming out from the tributary of the River of Time. In an instant, there were more than ten year beasts.

And more were continuing to attack as they came out of the tributary of the River of Time!

“What is going on? Is there a group of year beasts near this tributary of the River of Time?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1401: Enslavement After Victorious Fight

Large numbers of year beasts, chicken, sheep, monkey, dog, pig, horse, tiger, rabbit, they bore their fangs and claws as they attacked Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge was soon encircled.

But he was daring and courageous, his expression did not change, he was still calm and composed.

“Come at me!” He shouted, his body shook as he used an immortal killer move.

Ding ding ding...

There was a clear crisp sound in the battlefield.

It was like countless jade pearls landing on a jade plate.

Immortal killer move — Green Jade Song!

The year beasts closer to him suffered injuries, they were corroded by the song as they quickly turned into green jade stones.

The year beasts' ferocious attacks were immediately resisted.

But soon, from the year beast group, eight ancient year beasts emerged.

Dragon, snake, tiger, ox, they attacked Feng Jiu Ge from four directions.

Feng Jiu Ge snorted, the sound waves around him grew more intense, around him, a green jade sound wave pushed towards his surroundings.

Boom boom boom!

The eight ancient year beasts were pushed back to their original places by these intense sound waves.

Before they landed, they were turned into jade statues as they shattered, dying as they broke into small jade pieces.

"Green jade song is so powerful!" The Shadow Sect immortals lying in ambush saw this and expressed their shock.

Only Fang Yuan's expression did not change.

He knew some intel.

He knew about the battle between Qin Bai Sheng and Feng Jiu Ge thanks to Purple Mountain True Monarch's inheritance.

"Feng Jiu Ge's green jade song has gotten much stronger since the battle of Luo Po Valley. It seems he has improved it a lot."

"Green jade song is secondary, but if he uses submission song, half of the year beasts here would likely turn into my enemy."

"However, even if that happens, hehe!"

Fang Yuan laughed internally.

There was a lump of water in his right palm.

This ball of water was emitting a weak eerie ripple, looking at it, it seemed to be the water of the River of Time.

But in truth, it was a rank eight Immortal Gu —

Years Flow Like Water!

Indeed, this Immortal Gu obtained from Hei Fan's true inheritance had always been sealed.

But now, Fang Yuan had unsealed and used it.

Immortal killer move — Year Beast Summoning.

It was the same name, but the current year beast summoning was completely different from before. This was because the core was no longer year Gu, but the rank eight Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water!

Hei Fan's true inheritance was very detailed about this. There were two versions, year beast summoning using year Gu as the core, as well as using years flow like water Immortal Gu as the core.

The ordinary year beast summoning could only summon one year beast. But the one that Fang Yuan was using now could summon an army of year beasts!

Immortal killer move — Submission Song!

Indeed, as the battle continued, Feng Jiu Ge used this incredible killer move.

The entire place was silent.

The song could not be heard with the ears, it was heard in every Gu Immortal's and year beast's mind directly.

The year beast army went into chaos.

Because many year beasts submitted to Feng Jiu Ge and fought against their former allies.

Submission song encompassed wisdom path, enslavement path, sound path, and soul path, it affected the mind. The inspiration was obtained during the battle with Qin Bai Sheng when he used five finger fist heart sword.

Many desolate level year beasts and ancient year beasts switched sides and obeyed Feng Jiu Ge.

The battle changed intensely.

Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit, who were watching the battle, gasped in shock.

But Fang Yuan was still calm.

He continued to use immortal killer move year beast summoning.

Rank eight Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water could be used by even rank six Gu Immortals. And Fang Yuan was already experienced with using this immortal killer move, year beast summoning, he had practised it so that he could use it in battle one day!

If one did not have huge worries, they would worry about smaller things.

Fang Yuan was a vigilant person, he had preparations in advance, at this moment, he benefited greatly from it, thus he had no problems.

"Year beast summoning will continue to summon year beasts, I want to see how many your submission song can control."

"At a certain stage, even immemorial year beasts will respond and come here."

Year beast summoning was a time path method that had the effect of enslavement path.

And enslavement path excelled in battles of attrition.

Feng Jiu Ge was a strong enemy, Fang Yuan was not counting on being able to kill him currently. Moreover, Feng Jiu Ge was backed by Heavenly Court, there might be other rank eight Gu Immortals hiding somewhere.

Because of these two reasons, Fang Yuan decided to hide himself and use the year beasts to attack and expend his energy.

An endless stream of year beasts continued to rush out of the tributary of the River of Time, responding to Fang Yuan’s call and attacking Feng Jiu Ge.

Soon, the number of year beasts on this battlefield reached a hundred and more.

A large number of year beasts made a circle and surrounded Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge relied on submission song to control the year beasts and avert the crisis, creating his own defensive circle within the encirclement.

The battle was in a deadlock.

This scene was clearly observed by Fairy Zi Wei.

She was in Central Continent’s Heavenly Court, but using the investigative killer move, and Star Constellation Chessboard, she could observe the entire battlefield clearly.

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes were flickering with thoughts.

Killing Fang Yuan, and taking or destroying Red Lotus’ true inheritance was her main objective now.

She had already made all the plans, Feng Jiu Ge was just a part of them.

Even though the battle was in a deadlock, Fairy Zi Wei was aware that Feng Jiu Ge was not using his full strength. Even if he was, he still had the rank eight Immortal Gu that Heavenly Court had lent him!

“Right now, everything is under my control.” Fairy Zi Wei willed as the image on Star Constellation Chessboard changed to another battle.

Two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were fighting against an upper extreme heavenly eagle.

This upper extreme heavenly eagle was the one which had escaped from Fang Yuan’s control and flew away.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle cried out, it had injuries on it.

It did not have any Immortal Gu, even though it was an immemorial desolate beast, it was too hard to fight against two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

The battle was not in its favor.

“This upper extreme heavenly eagle has Fang Yuan’s tracking method on it. As long as we capture it, I will be able to reverse-deduce his location.”

“Of course, right now, Fang Yuan and the others have been hit by my investigative killer move. Capturing the upper extreme heavenly eagle is to prevent Fang Yuan from regaining control of this immemorial desolate beast in the future.”

Fairy Zi Wei planned.

Fang Yuan was a complete otherworldly demon, he was no longer under fate’s control, he was the biggest uncertainty in this world.

Right now, he had Giant Sun’s true inheritance, the combination of otherworldly demon and luck path meant that these uncertainties were stacking up, leading to greater unknowns.

Spectral Soul was captured already, Fang Yuan was now Heavenly Court’s biggest threat.

But Heavenly Court could not use its full strength against Fang Yuan.

Firstly, Fang Yuan had extremely strong luck, if too many people went after him, he would benefit from the misfortune instead. Only someone of similarly high luck could stop Fang Yuan’s luck path advantage from showing.

This was the reason why Fairy Zi Wei arranged for Feng Jiu Ge to deal with Fang Yuan.

Secondly, Heavenly Court also needed to develop.

The great era was coming, the five regional walls would dissipate and the five regions would become one. Without any geographical obstacles, Gu Immortals could travel freely, there was sure to be chaos.

During such unprecedented chaotic battles, Heavenly Court would be in an awkward spot.

Because it was encircled by Southern Border, Northern Plains, Eastern Sea, and Western Desert, Central Continent was right in the middle, bordering all four regions.

Once battle erupted, Central Continent would face great pressure, it might get into great trouble.

Thus, Heavenly Court needed to prepare itself.

At the same time, Star Constellation heaven’s will also instructed Duke Long and Fairy Zi Wei that she needed many rank eight Gu Immortals to hibernate in the future.

Even though Fairy Zi Wei did not understand why this was needed, she trusted Star Constellation heaven’s will and Duke Long.

“Lady Zi Wei, there is great news!” At this time, a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal sent a letter Gu to Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei knew that this person was recently recruited, originally being a supreme elder in one of the ten great ancient sects, Yuan Qiong Du.

Ever since the battle of the dream realm, Fairy Zi Wei had elevated multiple Gu Immortals from the ten great ancient sects to become members of Heavenly Court.

The two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals who informed Feng Jiu Ge and were now chasing the upper extreme heavenly eagle were also such people.

As for this Yuan Qiong Du, because he cultivated refinement path, Fairy Zi Wei tasked him with the mission of repairing fate Gu.

“What good news?” Fairy Zi Wei asked.

“I have bought a batch of year beasts in treasure yellow heaven. The seller might not know, but these year beasts are different from normal year beasts, they are filled with heaven’s will. I can use these year beasts as immortal materials to repair fate Immortal Gu. Not only can we save time, we can use the heaven’s will inside to increase the effects.” Yuan Qiong Du was extremely excited.

“Very good.” Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes were shining: “Continue working hard.”

“Yes, Lady Zi Wei.”

This was indeed great news.

Fairy Zi Wei was quite happy.

“This way, fate Gu can be repaired even more quickly, until its wounds are healed.”

“With Spectral Soul captured now, once news gets out, it will shake the world and deter all the forces.”

Thinking of this, Fairy Zi Wei felt deep admiration towards Duke Long.

Duke Long’s wise and resolute attack created Heavenly Court’s current huge advantage.

If the five regions chaotic war started, Central Continent could definitely benefit the most in the initial period.

However, the true deciding factor of this chaotic war was one person.

Great Dream Immortal Venerable!

Western Desert.

Fang Yuan was at a crucial moment.

Fight Immortal Gu was activated, around it were a large number of supplementary Gu worms.

Immortal killer move — Enslavement After Victorious Fight!

The killer move activation succeeded, Fang Yuan’s gaze turned sharp, he looked towards the year beast army.

Countless strength path giant hands flew out and defeated these year beasts.

The defeated year beasts no longer ran away, due to the effect of enslavement after victorious fight, they became Fang Yuan’s slaves, gathering towards him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1402: Farewell, Feng Jiu Ge

Under the effect of immortal killer move enslavement after victorious fight, any life form defeated by Fang Yuan would have a high chance of being enslaved by him.

The core of this move was the new rank seven Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan just got, Fight. By using all sorts of wisdom path supplementary Gu worms, this rule path Immortal Gu displayed its unique value.

Enslavement after victorious fight was created by immortal zombie Da Li.

Immortal zombie Da Li was a second generation split soul of Spectral Soul, he was known as the Martial Duel Heavenly King. He cultivated strength path and wisdom path together, he had the Great Strength True Martial Physique.

After the first generation split soul, Purple Mountain True Monarch, turned into a purple gold rock, he took over as the leader of Shadow Sect.

However, afterwards, a mysterious Gu Immortal with a Red Lotus insignia on their forehead appeared, after an intense battle, he lost and was suppressed by Immortal Gu House Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

This was the origin of the killer move enslavement after victorious fight, it was an incredible killer move that combined both the profundities of strength path and wisdom path.

Fang Yuan inherited Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance, he learned about this killer move.

Of course, he was not familiar with it, he was only starting to use it now.

However, unlike the other moves, this one only needed Fang Yuan to activate it in advance, he could sustain it very easily during the battle.

Most immortal killer moves could not be used by Fang Yuan during battle because he was not familiar with them, if he failed in using them, he would be hurting himself.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan had the initiative, he plotted to harm the Heavenly Court pursuers. Thus, he had enough time to prepare and after some failures, he successfully used enslavement after victorious fight.

Next, Fang Yuan sustained enslavement after victorious fight as he multitasked, using year beast summoning to summon an army of year beasts from the tributary of the River of Time.

However, even though there were many year beasts, year beast summoning’s flaw was still around.

That was, the year beasts would not risk their lives for Fang Yuan. If they were injured, or if the enemies were too strong, they would retreat.

This was different from soul beast summoning.

The soul beast summoning that Spectral Soul created could force any soul beast to fight to the death for the Gu Immortal, disregarding its own life.

Year beast summoning was created by Hei Fan, even though Hei Fan was a time path great expert, he was far inferior to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Of course, even so, the strength of year beast summoning could not be denied.

All in all, this move was very useful.

With rank eight Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water as the core, the Gu Immortal could summon an army of year beasts. Against the enemy, such a huge number would result in a powerful encirclement, unless the enemy was a special rank seven Gu

Immortal like Feng Jiu Ge or rank eight Gu Immortal.

But in the Gu Immortal world, how many rank eight great experts and Feng Jiu Ges were there?

Clap clap clap.

Strength path giant hands flew around, pushing the year beasts which were retreating onto the ground.

These year beasts were under the effect of year beast summoning, fighting against Feng Jiu Ge. But after facing the power of Feng Jiu Ge, they wanted to retreat through the tributary of the River of Time.

But Fang Yuan had already blocked their path of retreat, he used the giant hands to slam these year beasts to the ground.

These year beasts were all subdued with enslavement after victorious fight and became Fang Yuan’s slaves.

But a portion of them were still resisting.

Against these stubborn ones, Fang Yuan’s response was to attack with more strength path giant hands.

Clap clap clap.

With several more slaps, very few of the year beasts stayed adamant. After all, they were not in good shape, most of them were injured from Feng Jiu Ge’s attacks.

Fang Yuan enslaved more and more year beasts.

He opened his immortal aperture’s entrance and kept these year beasts in his immortal aperture.

As well as some year beast corpses.

These unlucky ones were already injured and were killed by Fang Yuan’s strength path giant hands when he slammed at them with too much force.

Even though they died, they were still rank six and seven immortal materials.

Fang Yuan did not let go of any!

On the battlefield, Feng Jiu Ge killed most of the year beasts, before Fang Yuan used year beast summoning again to call more year beasts into battle.

Next, he stayed concealed by the Gu formation and used Feng Jiu Ge’s strength to capture these year beasts.

A moment later, Fang Yuan had seventy to eighty year beasts in his immortal aperture.

Most of them were desolate level year beasts, a small portion were ancient year beasts.

“At this rate, I will be able to accumulate several hundred year beasts.” Fang Yuan was joyous.

Even though he did not have the batch of year beasts sold in treasure yellow heaven, he farmed for them himself, he had quite a good harvest.

“However... with my soul foundation, I can enslave a hundred year beasts at most.” Fang Yuan estimated.

His soul foundation was strong, but don’t forget, he already had a group of eagles under his control.

“Maybe I should sell these eagles?” Fang Yuan was hesitant, but he suddenly felt a shiver as his body tensed up.

A strong and aged aura emerged from the tributary of the River of Time behind him.

“An immemorial year beast! It was lured here by Years Flow Like Water.” Fang Yuan understood.

Fang Yuan did not place years flow like water Immortal Gu in the sovereign immortal aperture, thus, the immemorial year beast was lured here by the Immortal Gu, arriving through the tributary of the River of Time.

After sensing the aura of the immemorial year beast, the year beasts on the battlefield became frenzied, they suddenly fought more boldly.

Feng Jiu Ge felt his pressure intensifying, especially when the difficulty of enslaving those year beasts with submission song increased by many times now.

Rumble!

A huge tiger claw emerged from the tributary of the River of Time.

Creating a huge wave made of river water, the tiger claw struck at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was prepared for it, he had kept the year beasts and Shadow Sect’s immortals in his immortal aperture. When the tiger claw arrived, he had already flown away.

The huge tiger claw crashed down like a mountain, the formation that Fang Yuan created was destroyed by the tiger claw easily.

Roar—!

The tiger immemorial year beast did not hit, but it sensed that the delicious Years Flow Like Water was leaving it, it roared as the sound waves produced spread out like thunder.

Swish swish swish!

The tributary of the River of Time created huge waves that crashed outwards, the tiger immemorial desolate beast was unhappy, it wanted to try and get out of this tributary of the River of Time.

But it was too huge, its foundation was too deep, this tributary of the River of Time was too small for it.

But it was not a problem, the tiger claws slashed around the place as the tiger immemorial year beast tried to expand this tributary of the River of Time.

The tributary of the River of Time quickly became wider as its size increased.

This superb time path resource point was ruined.

Even though the size of it was going to increase by many times, it had lost its balance. After a while, this tributary of the River of Time would entirely return to the main river.

Of course, this was nothing to the immemorial year beast, it did not care.

Feng Jiu Ge saw that Fang Yuan approached him, his eyes shined with brilliance as he stayed vigilant.

Fang Yuan had Feng Jiu Ge blocking him in front and the immemorial year beast behind him, he seemed to be in great danger.

But in reality, he was smiling lightly, feeling extremely confident.

He did not even use reverse flow protection seal, he activated rank eight Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water again.

“Fang Yuan has a rank eight Immortal Gu.” Feng Jiu Ge’s pupils shrunk.

But he was not surprised. Fang Yuan took over Shadow Sect, it was normal to have such an inheritance.

“I wanted to get rid of all the Heavenly Court pursuers, too bad only Feng Jiu Ge came here. Hmph!” Fang Yuan smiled coldly, years flow like water Immortal Gu stared to shine in a pure white light in his hands.

The white light shone over the area, turning this dark tunnel into a bright place.

Under the strong light, a Gu formation started to activate.

“This is?!” Feng Jiu Ge found that he was trapped in the Gu formation. But earlier, this huge Gu formation did not activate, it was hidden perfectly, fusing with the environment flawlessly.

Rank eight Years Flow Like Water, it was the core of this Gu formation, under its lead, the Gu formation activated.

Feng Jiu Ge was on guard, but this Gu formation’s power did not seem to target him.

Rumble!

Like a dam that had accumulated for years unleashing the floodgates, the tributary of the River of Time turned into a raging river in a few breaths’ time.

It turned out that this Gu formation’s true target was this tributary of the River of Time itself!

Feng Jiu Ge subconsciously held his breath.

At this instant, the tributary of the River of Time was overflowing, it seemed to have become the main River of Time!

The river water surged and created huge waves that blocked out the sky!

The unstoppable waves devoured Fang Yuan instantly, before moving towards Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge naturally wanted to escape, even though there were many year beasts, with his nimble movement, they were of no obstruction to him.

But the River of Time could not be comprehended by normal standards.

“So fast!”

Feng Jiu Ge was dazzled, he found that the River of Time’s waves were already directly above him.

The River of Time was a time path secluded domain of heaven and earth, wherever it flowed towards, there was no concept of flow speed, only time itself mattered.

The water of the River of Time only needed an instant to travel ten million li, or it could take a million years to travel an inch.

“I cannot evade it...” Feng Jiu Ge instantly understood this, he used his defensive methods to protect himself.

Rumble!

Hearing the sound of crashing waves around him, Feng Jiu Ge’s body was engulfed by the huge waves, completely submerged.

But Fang Yuan managed to emerge from the water of the River of Time using the Gu formation.

“Flood discharge formation, break!”

Fang Yuan called out in his mind as the Gu formation broke apart.

Without the Gu formation, the tributary of the River of Time was instantly attracted towards the main River of Time.

This was because the flood earlier had surpassed the limits of this tributary of the River of Time, such a tributary was not going to flow out of the main river.

This was no longer the power of the Gu formation, it was the power of heaven and earth, the supreme power of the River of Time itself.

Rumble rumble!

Amidst the loud crashes, Feng Jiu Ge was swept into the main river, even the tiger immemorial desolate beast that wanted to come out was obstructed by the main river.

After a few breaths of time, the tributary of the River of Time vanished completely, only a large area of the ripples of time were still flickering silently.

The year beasts in the battlefield had all returned to the River of Time.

“Farewell, Feng Jiu Ge.” Fang Yuan said lightly as he stored the Gu worms used in the formation and left the place.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1403: Self Love Immortal Gu

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

In the refinement hall, after months of refining Gu, the most crucial moment was here.

Lang Ya land spirit stood at the edge of a refinement path super Gu formation, his eyes observed the Gu formation that was blazing with fire.

This fire was icy blue in color, it was not hot, but cold instead.

Even the super Gu formation could not isolate this blazing ice fire completely.

Lang Ya land spirit stood at the side of the Gu formation, his brows and beard were covered in a thin layer of blue frost.

But he did not care, he was concentrated on that fire.

Or rather, the profound ice at the center of the fire.

The profound ice was still melting, but it was also continuing to form. The initial profound ice had sharp edges, but under Lang Ya land spirit’s refinement, it was already smooth and had a rather round appearance now.

“Five traces of fan door wind.” Lang Ya land spirit suddenly said.

Hairy man Gu Immortal Sixth Hair was currently assisting him, he quickly worked as he heard that, using a special method to take out five traces of the fan door wind from the immortal material inventory.

This fan door wind was a rank seven immortal material.

It was very special.

It did not grow in deep forests or mountains, or even the sky, it grew in the doors of the homes of mortals.

Whenever this immortal material was produced, the mortal’s door would not be able to close, it could only stay open.

This special phenomenon attracted the attention of Gu Masters very quickly, and caused Gu Immortals to come and collect it.

But initially, this fan door wind immortal material could not be used, nobody understood its use. But now, there were profound methods and plans to make use of it.

The five traces of the fan door wind were carefully sent to the center of the ice fire by Lang Ya land spirit.

Soon, the five traces of the wind surrounded the profound ice, circling it like five delicate hands, hastening the transformation of the profound ice.

“Oh no.” But the success was short-lived, Lang Ya land spirit’s expression suddenly changed as he called out.

Sixth Hair had a feeling as he looked over.

He saw that the ice fire had extinguished, the profound ice broke as the five traces of the fan door wind also vanished.

“Ahhh! I failed again!!!” Lang Ya land spirit stomped his feet, shouting loudly in deep anger and unhappiness.

Sixth Hair sighed deeply.

It was a pity.

They were at the final few steps.

But they failed.

Their months of hard work had gone down the drain.

“If I used the hairy man heaven and earth style, this would not have happened!” Lang Ya land spirit snorted coldly.

Sixth Hair quickly reminded: “But first supreme elder, according to the sect rules, elder Fang Yuan paid a huge amount of contribution points for this, we need to follow his request.”

“Sigh! This Fang Yuan has lost his mind, why does he want to use the human Gu refinement method. Is he trying to mess around with me?!” The failure of the Gu refinement gave Lang Ya land spirit a horrible mood.

Sixth Hair quickly spoke up for Fang Yuan: “Elder Fang Yuan has always been mysterious. Even though I do not like him, it seemed like he had used up all his assets for this, using a vast amount of sect contribution points to refine Immortal Gu. He even needs three Immortal Gu, if he wants to purposely trouble first supreme elder, he would not have paid such a huge price, right?”

“Sigh! I was just venting.” Lang Ya land spirit was dejected, he waved his hand: “Let’s rest first for a while. This is the fifth failure already. Fang Yuan’s sect contribution points are not enough, contact him and tell him the result of the Gu refinement, if he wants more attempts, he will need enough sect contribution points!”

“Yes.” Sixth Hair replied.

Fang Yuan flew like an arrow shooting rapidly in the sky.

He had no mood to admire the beauty of this desert, at this moment, his mind was on the battle against Feng Jiu Ge.

That tributary of the River of Time in the sand whirlpool was a secret cultivation resource of Shadow Sect, it was listed in Shadow Sect’s map.

“Before Purple Mountain True Monarch died, he had instructed me to go to the River of Time and interact with Spectral Soul’s will inside the ghost face red lotus.”

Even though Fang Yuan inherited Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance and obtained a lot of killer moves, Immortal Gu recipes and secrets.

He had only gotten about half of Shadow Sect’s assets.

The ghost face red lotus in the River of Time contained Spectral Soul’s will, it had almost all of Shadow Sect’s cultivation details. It even had a portion of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s true inheritance.

Shadow Sect had existed for a hundred thousand years, when Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was alive, he had slaughtered the world and caused deep despair in everyone. Even though Shadow Sect was destroyed, the cultivation information it had was unthinkably vast and grand.

For example, Immortal Gu Houses.

Fang Yuan currently knew the complete construction details of twelve Immortal Gu Houses. But in actuality, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and Shadow Sect had far more than twelve.

The rest of the information could only be obtained when Fang Yuan went to the ghost face red lotus.

“As for Red Lotus’ true inheritance, it is also inside the River of Time. I have Spring Autumn Cicada, I hold the key to the true inheritance.”

Fang Yuan was definitely going to the River of Time.

The tributaries of the River of Time in the five regions were his entrances.

Even though Fang Yuan lost one to eliminate Heavenly Court’s pursuers, it was not a problem, Shadow Sect had left behind five or six of them.

“However, in Western Desert, Shadow Sect only has control of one final tributary of the River of Time.”

“To play safe, I should head to the two resource points first. Before I am completely ready, I should not go there.”

Fang Yuan made his decision.

Right now, he was in Western Desert, it bordered Northern Plains, Southern Border, and Central Continent.

But Fang Yuan could not go to these three regions.

Central Continent had Heavenly Court and the ten great ancient sects, Fang Yuan could not head there.

Northern Plains had Longevity Heaven, which was hunting Fang Yuan.

Southern Border had the righteous path Gu Immortals who were chasing after Shadow Sect earlier.

Western Desert was the best place to hide.

As for Eastern Sea, Shadow Sect only had the location of one tributary of the River of Time. And unfortunately, this tributary of the River of Time was already taken by Miao Ming Shen.

Speaking of which, it was Fang Yuan’s fault. He was the one who found it and told Miao Ming Shen.

Back then, Purple Mountain True Monarch had tried to use the tributary of the River of Time to meet the ghost face red lotus. When he was in Eastern Sea, he could not find that tributary of the River of Time, he had to go to Southern Border for that.

“My biggest problem now is the investigative killer move on me, it is exposing my location to Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals.”

“And without dark limit Immortal Gu’s protection, heaven’s will is plotting at all times to get rid of me.”

“The problem is, I lack Immortal Gu, I have so many killer moves, but I lack the core Immortal Gu. With the core Immortal Gu, I will be able to dispel this investigative killer move and hide from heaven’s will again!”

While thinking, Fang Yuan received Sixth Hair’s letter.

He looked into it and the contents made him frown.

The Gu refinement failed again.

Damn it!

Even though he succeeded in plotting against Feng Jiu Ge, Heavenly Court was not only going to send him alone against Fang Yuan.

Heavenly Court had other methods, it was only a matter of time.

“This wisdom path Immortal Gu, self love Immortal Gu, needs to be refined as rank seven from the start. It is quite difficult. I have been observing the Gu refinement all along, Lang Ya land spirit has been giving it his all, he is not working half-heartedly.” Sixth Hair said.

Fang Yuan did not suspect his words.

Lang Ya land spirit was straightforward and honest, Fang Yuan believed it.

The failure was normal.

After all, the success rate of a rank seven Immortal Gu was too low.

But this self love Immortal Gu was necessary to Fang Yuan, and he needed it as soon as possible.

With it, Fang Yuan would be able to use a killer move from Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance to get rid of the investigative killer move on him.

This was possible.

Fang Yuan had confidence in that.

“Refine it, we need to refine it, even if I go bankrupt, we must do it.” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, firming his mind.

It was too easy to get Lang Ya Sect contribution points now, because Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance was too plentiful.

“But...”

“I cannot remain passive now.”

“I succeeded against Feng Jiu Ge because I caught him by surprise and used the rank eight Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water. Heavenly Court had not gotten information about it yet.”

“But it has already been exposed, I need to hurry up!”

“It seems I need to use that method.”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with determination.

He replied: For this refinement, Sixth Hair will do the refining while Lang Ya land spirit will help out on the side.

Sixth Hair received Fang Yuan’s reply and saw it, feeling rather surprised.

He knew that his Gu refinement technique was inferior to Lang Ya land spirit, and since he was not purposely failing, why did Fang Yuan want Sixth Hair to do the Gu refinement?

In the River of Time.

Raging water could be heard around him.

Feng Jiu Ge was swept into the river by the raging waves.

“This is the River of Time?” He tried to regain his footing, but he felt the power of time path invading his immortal body.

Strong.

Incredibly strong!

The protection of Feng Jiu Ge’s immortal body was quite exemplary.

But in just a moment, he felt that he was heavily resisted by the surrounding environment.

Feng Jiu Ge understood that because he was full of sound path dao marks, he could not coexist with the time path dao marks.

“As expected of the River of Time, I need to get out as soon as possible!” Feng Jiu Ge wanted to leave, but looking back, the tributary of the River of Time was already destroyed, only a thin ripple of time was left behind.

This ripple was huge, but for Feng Jiu Ge, it was not an exit.

“This is a problem. I am not a time path Gu Immortal, I cannot get out using the ripple of time alone, what can I do?”

While he was uncertain, Feng Jiu Ge heard an explosion.

A tiger’s roar could be heard, as a huge tiger year beast emerged from the bottom of the river.

With a loud sound, river water spattered.

Feng Jiu Ge’s pupils shrunk to pin size, his body was like an ant beside an elephant compared to the tiger year beast.

“An immemorial year beast!”

The shadow of death engulfed Feng Jiu Ge.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1404: Zi Wei Controls The Situation

Ding ding ding...

Hearing the sound around him, Feng Jiu Ge exerted his full power at this moment.

Immortal killer move — Green Jade Song!

The range of his song extended for several hundred steps, the immemorial tiger year beast’s claw was covered in green jade color.

But the claw was too huge, it still charged at him unhindered.

Feng Jiu Ge gritted his teeth, dodging quickly.

At the moment of crisis, he narrowly avoided the year beast’s claw, even though he was not hit, the intense shock wave created from the attack assaulted Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge was like a kite with its strings cut, he was blown away.

Guh.

He was tossed up and flew above the River of Time in an arc, spitting out blood in the process.

“No, my battle strength is too suppressed if I fight here.”

“The River of Time is filled with time path dao marks, it has the most time path dao marks in the world. With the conflict between dao marks, my sound path killer moves have less than ten percent of their original power!”

Feng Jiu Ge endured the intense pain and used his killer move to heal his injuries.

His healing methods that were effective in the outside world had barely any effect here.

Not only his healing methods, Feng Jiu Ge’s movement killer move also became very slow. His green jade song originally had great power, but now, the tiger year beast only shook its claw to break that layer of jade rock around it easily.

Evidently, green jade song was suppressed to the limit.

Feng Jiu Ge only had rank seven cultivation level, the reason why he had rank eight battle strength was because his sound path dao marks reached a quantity on par with rank eight Gu Immortals.

But because of Fang Yuan’s plot, he was thrown into the River of Time, his greatest advantage became his greatest weakness!

The sound path dao marks were far inferior in quantity compared to the River of Time’s dao marks.

This was also why Fang Yuan was confident that Feng Jiu Ge would suffer here.

The immemorial tiger year beast stretched out its tongue and licked its wound on the right claw, it had a ferocious gaze as it charged at Feng Jiu Ge.

It was very strong to begin with, it lived in the River of Time, the time path dao marks in it complemented the River of Time, its territorial advantage was obvious.

There were no rank nine year beasts, immemorial year beasts were the overlords of the year beasts.

The tiger roared and whipped up a storm.

The huge tiger year beast sprinted and assaulted Feng Jiu Ge fiercely.

Feng Jiu Ge tried to block it.

But soon, he was injured again.

He was completely suppressed, there was no chance to win. If he wanted to live, he had to find a tributary of the River of Time and escape.

But hope was too small.

Because it was not easy to find a tributary of the River of Time. Even if he found one, it had to be big enough for him to cross over.

Feng Jiu Ge was a sound path Gu Immortal, he was not time path and did not have methods to escape from the river.

“Am I going to die here?” Feng Jiu Ge had such a thought.

But at this moment, a female immortal’s voice resounded in his mind: “Use that rank eight Immortal Gu.”

“Rank eight Immortal Gu — Fate Armor?” Feng Jiu Ge hesitated.

Heavenly Court gave him this Immortal Gu to protect his life.

This was a defensive rank eight Immortal Gu.

But Feng Jiu Ge had always been doubtful.

Why?

He did not have any weakness in defense, even against Wu Yong, his defense could last for some time.

Instead of lending this Immortal Gu to him, they might as well have given him an Immortal Gu for offense or movement.

After all, Feng Jiu Ge’s movement methods were lacking. And his seven great songs, even though they were extremely powerful, they were killer moves, it was not as convenient as using one rank eight Immortal Gu directly to attack.

After Feng Jiu Ge received this Immortal Gu, he had tried to activate it.

Fate Armor was very powerful indeed, but it also expended a huge amount of immortal essence. Even someone like Feng Jiu Ge could barely endure the cost.

“If I stall for time, I will have to use my defensive methods while healing myself. If I use fate armor Immortal Gu, my immortal essence will not last for fifty breaths of time.”

Feng Jiu Ge calculated.

But now, the immemorial year beast had already arrived in front of him.

Feng Jiu Ge gritted his teeth, at the crucial moment, he chose to listen to that mysterious female voice.

Rank eight Immortal Gu — Fate Armor!

At once, his red date immortal essence was rapidly expended, while a thin layer of armor made of light appeared on Feng Jiu Ge’s body.

But this armor made of light was completely unfazed by the immemorial year beast’s attacks, it protected Feng Jiu Ge completely.

Feng Jiu Ge was uninjured, but from the attacks of the immemorial year beast, he was slammed into the River of Time.

Once he fell into the depths of the river, a vast amount of the water of the River of Time pressed towards Feng Jiu Ge.

But Fate Armor was very impressive, it did not waver, only some small cracks appeared on the surface.

But this was very impressive.

It was just a rank eight Immortal Gu.

And this River of Time was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, its dao mark accumulation was on par with rank nine Immortal Gu.

The immemorial year beast flowed along the river, charging at Feng Jiu Ge again.

Feng Jiu Ge sighed in his mind: “This is tough!”

He tried to struggle to fly and escape the River of Time.

But the immemorial year beast had wisdom too, it did not let Feng Jiu Ge achieve his goal.

Feng Jiu Ge was trapped in the river by the immemorial year beast’s attacks, and he was also affected by the flow of the river.

The situation was getting worse for Feng Jiu Ge, he had lost all initiative, if this continued, by the time his immortal essence ran out, he would die.

“Did I make a wrong decision earlier? That woman’s voice was just a trap?”

While Feng Jiu Ge was unsure, a vortex of flowing water assaulted and surrounded him.

Feng Jiu Ge was caught by surprise and wanted to struggle, when he heard a voice: “Don’t struggle, Feng Jiu Ge, I am a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal, Lord Huang Shi, I am here to help you!”

As he said that, the vortex expanded, until it was dozens of times as large as before.

Countless bubbles obstructed the immemorial year beast’s vision.

Feng Jiu Ge did not dare to deactivate Fate Armor, but he allowed himself to flow along the tornado, returning to the surface of the River of Time.

Over there, a bald Gu Immortal with yellow clothes was waiting for him.

Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei let out a breath of air.

In the Star Constellation Chessboard in front of her, the scene of Feng Jiu Ge being saved was displayed.

At the crucial moment, the voice who reminded Feng Jiu Ge was naturally her, Fairy Zi Wei.

Rank eight Immortal Gu Fate Armor, its true use was to give Lord Huang Shi an accurate clue to find out Feng Jiu Ge’s location.

The River of Time was hard to enter.

It was harder for Gu Immortals to get in there compared to black heaven or white heaven.

Because rank eight Gu Immortals were rare to begin with, and time path rank eight Gu Immortals were just a small portion of them.

But even so, Heavenly Court had its time path rank eight Gu Immortals.

Lord Huang Shi was part of Fairy Zi Wei’s arrangements.

Originally, Fairy Zi Wei planned to have Feng Jiu Ge force Fang Yuan into the River of Time to find the Red Lotus true inheritance.

By then, the time path rank eight great expert Lord Huang Shi could go and attack him.

But Fairy Zi Wei did not expect Fang Yuan to give up a tributary of the River of Time to set a trap and try to kill Feng Jiu Ge.

“Fang Yuan, this otherworldly demon, he is truly crafty.”

“But after this battle, we have probed most of the content of Hei Fan’s true inheritance.”

“Even though he gave up a tributary of the River of Time to make a trap, it affirmed my conjecture — Fang Yuan will definitely enter the River of Time and take Red Lotus’ true inheritance!”

“With Fang Yuan’s vigilant nature, it seems like he still has control of at least one tributary of the River of Time in Western Desert.”

“It is not a problem, with my investigative killer move, Fang Yuan’s location is still exposed to me.”

Feng Jiu Ge kept his life, Fairy Zi Wei immediately used Star Constellation Chessboard to see another battlefield.

Fang Yuan’s upper extreme heavenly eagle was injured and was flying in black heaven.

The two newly ascended Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were chasing it, they had suffered only minor injuries.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was powerful, but against two rank eight Gu Immortals with immortal killer moves emerging one after another that coordinated with each other, it could not rival them.

Feeling the threat of death, the upper extreme heavenly eagle moved according to its instincts, flying towards black heaven to try and shake off these enemies.

Unfortunately, its actions were predicted by these two enemies.

Boom!

A killer move landed on the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle screamed in pain, it almost fell towards the ground but it tried to flap its wings and rise into the sky.

The eagle blood spurted out, a long line of blood was drawn in black heaven.

Immemorial desolate beasts had incredible healing speed, but the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals' killer moves were not simple either.

"The outcome is set." Fairy Zi Wei's gaze flickered.

Even though the upper extreme heavenly eagle was struggling, the course of battle was obvious, the two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals could not fail.

One of them even used an immortal killer move to follow behind the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

The faster the upper extreme heavenly eagle flew, the faster he would be. He could fly to wherever upper extreme heavenly eagle was without much effort.

How could the wisdom of an upper extreme heavenly eagle match humans?

Even human Gu Immortals could not counter immortal killer moves easily in battle.

The two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were afraid of the upper extreme heavenly eagle's last ditch effort in attacking, and because they wanted to capture it alive, they kept dealing small injuries to weaken its battle strength.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle could sense its bleak future, but it did not give up, it flapped and flew into the sky.

Past black heaven, it came to white heaven.

The heavenly wind qi wall was not an obstacle to it.

But for the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, it was a different story.

The two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals could not pass the qi wall easily. But they were prepared for it, how could Fairy Zi Wei not lend them an Immortal Gu House in advance?

"You will stay here and prevent it from making a detour, I will chase it." The two Gu Immortals cooperated perfectly, the upper extreme heavenly eagle had nowhere to flee.

"Even though some mishaps occurred, everything is within my expectations. Be it the humans, eagle, or Red Lotus' true inheritance, nothing can escape my control." Inside Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei's eyes squinted as she fully displayed the might of a wisdom path Gu Immortal.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1405: Burning Soul Bursting Luck!

Western Desert.

It was night time, stars were shining in the sky.

In the desert, the difference in temperature during each day was larger, it was hot in the day and cold at night.

Fang Yuan landed on a nameless sand dune softly.

“After flying for so long, there are no Heavenly Court pursuers coming. Was Feng Jiu Ge really the only one sent after me?”

Fang Yuan was suspicious.

“Forget it, I’ll ignore that for now.”

Fang Yuan calmed down and opened his immortal aperture’s entrance, letting out Hei Lou Lan, Bai Ning Bing, and the rest.

“Next, I will use a killer move with Ying Wu Xie, our battle strength will fall, our safety will be in your hands.” Fang Yuan said to Bai Ning Bing, Lady White Rabbit, Fairy Miao Yin, and Hei Lou Lan.

The four immortals acknowledged it and moved out to patrol the surroundings.

Fang Yuan set up an immortal Gu formation.

With precaution Immortal Gu as the core, the entire Gu formation’s original form was a mortal formation from Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance.

Fang Yuan was a formation path grandmaster, it was not hard to modify a mortal formation. After adding in precaution Immortal Gu, the defense of this Gu formation could not be underestimated.

Of course, there were weaknesses and flaws in this formation, but it was only needed for the time being.

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance had four immortal Gu formations, the strongest one was purple blood river formation! Unfortunately, Fang Yuan lacked certain Immortal Gu for all of these immortal Gu formations, he could not set up any of them.

If the Gu formation was modified and used a vast number of mortal Gu to replace the missing Immortal Gu, the deduction would take two to three days.

Because of many reasons, Fang Yuan chose to set up this Gu formation.

This Gu formation was enough for now, it was to defend against sneak attacks from the enemies.

Most importantly, Fang Yuan needed to race for time.

Heavenly Court not sending any more pursuers instead made Fang Yuan more worried.

The Gu formation closed, creating a simple temporary space.

The Gu formation’s space was very simple, it could not compare to the Southern Border super Gu formation’s array of palaces.

In this empty space, there was only Fang Yuan and Ying Wu Xie.

“Sect leader, let me do it! For Shadow Sect, for our goal, I will do my best!”

Ying Wu Xie was filled with fighting spirit.

Fang Yuan nodded: “Then you can go first.”

Ying Wu Xie sat down and instilled his immortal essence.

A moment later, his aura shook, immortal killer move burning soul bursting luck was successfully activated.

At once, Ying Wu Xie’s luck rose by many times, at the same time, he felt dizzy and nauseous.

Burning soul bursting luck was a killer move that expended the foundation of the soul to temporarily increase the Gu Immortal’s luck. Thus, when the killer move activated, not only did Ying Wu Xie’s luck rise sharply, his soul was also extremely weakened.

But it was not a problem, Fang Yuan took out guts Gu.

In the process of cultivation, Fang Yuan had been accumulating his storage of guts Gu to prepare for the worst.

His vigilant act was very helpful to him, it was shown now when used on Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie rapidly recovered, he was no longer dizzy, he was just a little pale.

Even though his soul was healthy now, his soul path dao marks had reduced sharply.

Burning soul bursting luck permanently used up soul path dao marks.

And this killer move had requirements towards soul path dao marks, to activate it, one had to use a certain number of soul path dao marks.

Because of this, out of Fang Yuan’s side, only he and Ying Wu Xie were able to use this killer move.

The rest might have strong battle strength, but their soul foundation was weak.

Experts had their field of expertise, not anyone could cultivate as widely as Fang Yuan. In fact, Fang Yuan could tackle so many paths because of the sovereign immortal body, and also because the dream realm raised his attainment level of many paths rapidly.

After Ying Wu Xie, it was Fang Yuan’s turn.

This killer move, burning soul bursting luck, used the soul path Immortal Gu, Soul Howl. With Ying Wu Xie’s guidance, even though this was Fang Yuan’s first use, after failing twice, he succeeded in using it.

Rumble!

Instantly, Fang Yuan witnessed a mirage, he could see the luck above his head surging and growing, soaring towards the heavens.

He nodded and informed Sixth Hair to refine Gu.

Sixth Hair and Ying Wu Xie had their luck connected.

And before the battle of Reverse Flow River, while Fang Yuan was chasing Ying Wu Xie and the others, they had gone from Eastern Sea to Northern Plains.

And in the Earth Trench in Northern Plains Zombie Alliance, Ying Wu Xie was aided by Sixth Hair to escape, while Sixth Hair used Dark Flow Giant City to obstruct Fang Yuan.

Ying Wu Xie and Sixth Hair had their luck connected at this time.

Naturally, Ying Wu Xie still had connect luck Immortal Gu.

To delay Fang Yuan, Ying Wu Xie tried all kinds of ways to strengthen Sixth Hair. Luck was one aspect.

Of course, in the end, Fang Yuan’s pursuit was stopped, and Sixth Hair did not die, he managed to return to Lang Ya blessed land safely.

Now, Fang Yuan wanted to use this connection to raise Sixth Hair’s luck!

Initially, when Ying Wu Xie was in Earth Abyss, he tried to use this move to refine Fixed Immortal Travel. Too bad Heavenly Court refined it first.

But his efforts were not in vain, it helped Fang Yuan to refine change form Immortal Gu.

This information was obtained by Fang Yuan from Purple Mountain True Monarch, he thought of using it in this situation.

After all, luck was the best method to help in Gu refinement.

There was evidence of this.

In the past, it was because of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path assistance that Long Hair Ancestor could refine so many Immortal Gu for him and create Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Perceivable dao Immortal Gu!

After using burning soul bursting luck, Fang Yuan used this Gu to inspect the number of soul path dao marks in his soul.

The numbers had truly been shaved off, his soul foundation was nearly crippled, he was back to square one.

Fang Yuan had cultivated his soul for a long time.

When he acted as Chang Shan Yin and roamed Northern Plains, before joining the imperial court contest, he had already started. Using Luo Po Valley and Dang Hun Mountain, Fang Yuan’s current soul path cultivation was very efficient and fast.

After a long period, his soul had accumulated a great number of soul path dao marks.

But today, after using burning soul bursting luck once, all of Fang Yuan’s effort had been obliterated.

Fang Yuan did not feel much of a pity or shame, he could always regain the dao marks later. But if he lost his life now, then it would all be over.

If other Gu Immortals like Bai Ning Bing tried to use this move, how could they have enough soul path dao marks for the expenditure?

Fang Yuan suddenly thought of something, asking Ying Wu Xie: “With your soul path foundation, how many times can you use it?”

Ying Wu Xie replied: “I can use it two more times, but sect leader, you have Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance, you should know that the same person cannot use burning soul bursting luck repeatedly to raise its effect. It is useless even if I try it again.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “I am just asking.”

He had a feeling of admiration towards Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Ying Wu Xie was a split soul of Spectral Soul, but he actually had the soul foundation to use burning soul bursting luck four times.

Spectral Soul was indeed the legendary person who created soul path and cultivated to rank nine!

“Burning soul bursting luck has been activated, this is all we can do. Let’s go.” Fang Yuan settled his thoughts and stood up.

Soon, he stored away the immortal Gu formation and the other Gu Immortals into his immortal aperture before setting off again.

He had to continue moving.

Not only did Heavenly Court know his location and would send Gu Immortals at him, even heaven’s will was plotting.

If Fang Yuan and the rest stayed at a place for long, they would meet with many problems.

In white heaven.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle shook off its blood and flew up.

Behind it, an Immortal Gu House carrying two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals chased relentlessly.

“This upper extreme heavenly eagle is reaching its limit.”

“That’s right, it was really good at enduring and flying.”

“Alright, let’s end it, this move will let you rest!”

The Immortal Gu House rapidly grew in aura as a golden beam of light shot out.

The golden light was extremely fast, landing on the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle suffered a huge blow, it quickly flapped its wings and tried to escape.

But the golden beam of light was long and thin, it was like a shadow, homing in on the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle’s injuries got more severe, its body was covered in a layer of golden light, making its movement even slower.

But at the next moment, a change occurred.

A white cloud formed in the path of the falling upper extreme heavenly eagle.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle fell into the cloud and vanished.

“Oh no, this is a black-white overturning cloud!”

“Quickly stop the killer move, don’t destroy this cloud!!”

The two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals shouted in shock, but it was too late, everything had happened too quickly.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle vanished in the cloud, while the golden beam of light landed on the white cloud, dying it golden.

The golden cloud became extremely heavy and fell downwards.

At this time, the golden beam of light vanished as the two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals stopped the killer move.

But now, their smug appearance was gone, replaced by a dumbfounded look.

“How could this happen?!”

“Wasn’t it too coincidental?”

“The black-white overturning cloud can connect between black heaven and white heaven, anything that enters will be able to move between the two heavens.”

“We were concerned about this, so we had already destroyed all of the clouds that could potentially be black-white overturning clouds already.”

“To think that a new one would appear and the upper extreme heavenly eagle had to crash into it.”

“This damned luck!!”

The two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were going frantic, they wanted to spit blood, after so much hard work, and expending a great deal of immortal essence, right before success, this happened!

“Chase!”

“The upper extreme heavenly eagle still has our investigative killer move. We will return through the heavenly wind qi wall and go back to black heaven.”

“That’s right, this is our first mission after joining Heavenly Court, how can we fail? Even if we have to chase it to the ends of the world, we will capture this upper extreme heavenly eagle!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1406: Self Love Refined

“The upper extreme heavenly eagle actually escaped, how could this happen?” In Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei used Star Constellation Chessboard to observe white heaven’s situation.

She frowned as a bright light flashed in her eyes.

"Luck path."

A guess appeared in her mind.

She thought of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the culprit that destroyed it was Fang Yuan, what was the possibility that Fang Yuan obtained Giant Sun's true inheritance?

"Unfortunately, my investigative killer move can only locate Fang Yuan and the others, it cannot show their current situation."

Fairy Zi Wei sighed and used Star Constellation Chessboard again.

At the next moment, the scene of the River of Time appeared in Star Constellation Chessboard again.

Feng Jiu Ge and Lord Huang Shi had already flown to a nearby tributary of the River of Time.

"This tributary of the River of Time is not small, it is enough for you to leave." Lord Huang Shi smiled, pointing forward, "Let me use my immortal killer move to send you out, don't resist."

Feng Jiu Ge nodded, cupping his fists gracefully: "I will trouble you."

Lord Huang Shi was about to speak when his expression changed.

"That tiger year beast is coming again?" Feng Jiu Ge's expression also changed.

"No!" Lord Huang Shi's eyes looked ahead, in the river in front of them, there was a dense fog that emerged.

"Strange, why is there fog in the River of Time?" Feng Jiu Ge frowned.

Lord Huang Shi was extremely excited, there was huge expectation in his eyes: "This fog, don't tell me?"

At this moment, the two saw a faint silhouette in the fog.

The figure was vague and concealed by the fog, it could not be seen clearly.

Lord Huang Shi's expression became even more heated, but Feng Jiu Ge was completely confused.

Soon, the fog moved and exposed a corner of the huge silhouette, Feng Jiu Ge finally saw what it was.

"This looks like an island?"

"That's right, this is a stone lotus island! Legends says that Red Lotus' true inheritance is inside!" Lord Huang Shi's tone was trembling.

Even though Red Lotus Demon Venerable and Heavenly Court were enemies, he was the absolute peak of time path, nobody could match him. Lord Huang Shi, who specialized in time path, felt an unparalleled allure towards Red Lotus' true inheritance!

"Stay here, I will return shortly." Lord Huang Shi said that before flying out at a rapid speed.

However, the fog seemed to respond, when Lord Huang Shi got closer, the fog retreated.

After a long time, Lord Huang Shi did not manage to shorten the distance, it was lengthening instead.

A moment later, the fog vanished, and the mysterious stone island went missing too.

Lord Huang Shi returned dejectedly, his expression was quite ugly.

Even Fairy Zi Wei, who was watching this in Heavenly Court, had a look of disappointment.

But soon, she frowned.

She fell into deep thoughts: “Why did that stone lotus island appear? Was it because Fang Yuan destroyed a tributary of the River of Time? But Lord Huang Shi and Feng Jiu Ge had already left that place already, and most importantly — how can someone enter the stone lotus island? Must they have the key, Spring Autumn Cicada?”

Southern Border, Wu clan headquarters.

A super Gu formation was created.

Wu Yong stood in front of the Gu formation, observing it, he nodded, showing a satisfied expression.

Beside him, a Wu clan supreme elder said: “Elder Wu Bei, we have troubled you.”

“It is my job to work for the clan, this was no trouble at all.” Elder Wu Bei said respectfully and humbly.

Among Wu clan’s Gu Immortals, he cultivated formation path.

Not long ago, he even took over Fang Yuan’s position to defend the super Gu formation.

After the battle of Reverse Flow River, Fang Yuan returned from Northern Plains and plotted to get Wu Bei away from here so that he could return to the super Gu formation.

Elder Wu Bei actually managed to escape from danger because of this and did not join in the battle of the dream realm.

In this battle, Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals suffered huge losses, even the Immortal Gu used to create the super Gu formation were taken by Heavenly Court.

However, not long ago, even though Wu Yong failed to kill Fang Yuan, he managed to make a secret agreement with Heavenly Court.

Wu Yong let go of Feng Jiu Ge, and Heavenly Court returned the taken Immortal Gu back to Wu Yong.

Wu Yong returned to Southern Border’s righteous path and returned all the Immortal Gu back to their owners.

This act raised his reputation to the peak in Southern Border’s righteous path!

Southern Border’s clans were all grateful to Wu Yong, not only could he negotiate with Heavenly Court and succeed, he even returned every Immortal Gu without taking any for himself, they were all in admiration.

Furthermore, Wu Yong exposed his rank eight Immortal Gu House Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, and after he showed his tremendous battle strength in the battle of the purple blood river formation, all of the Southern Border super forces were apprehensive against him.

Thus, even though he did not kill Shadow Sect’s remaining members, Wu clan’s status had changed drastically.

The clans that took over Wu clan’s resource points earlier retreated back to their own territories and even offered some compensation in a roundabout manner.

Qiao clan was Wu clan’s affiliate force, their territory, which was taken by Ba clan and Xia clan, was also returned on the basis of Wu clan’s reputation.

Wu Yong was not happy with such a result, after returning, he had been controlling the situation, negotiating with the super forces, getting them to hand over more benefits.

Currently, both sides were still negotiating, even though Wu clan was very forceful, the other super clans were not made of paper, they were adamant in defending their own interests.

Wu clan’s losses were indeed severe.

All in all, they lost multiple Gu Immortals, and Fang Yuan even cheated them of six Immortal Gu and a hundred thousand immortal essence stones.

But this matter could only be withheld by Wu clan, they could not openly seek Fang Yuan for trouble.

Wu Yong wanted to compensate his losses from the other super forces, but he was not going to forget the demonic path scoundrel Fang Yuan!

The super Gu formation here was made based on Wu Yong’s instructions, not only did he put Elder Wu Bei in charge of everything, he even asked Chi clan’s Gu Immortals for help.

“Alright, you can act now.” A sharp light flashed in Wu Yong’s eyes, he spoke to Wu Bei in a calm tone.

Wu Bei’s heart shook as he felt the anger and hatred underneath Wu Yong’s calm expression.

“To think that Wu Yi Hai was an impostor all along. Hmph, he was too daring, he actually deceived Wu clan! We will show you now, there are some people in this world that you cannot offend!” Wu Bei snorted coldly as he used his Gu formation.

This immortal formation used an earth vein as the foundation, and Fang Yuan’s life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu, as well as more than ten Immortal Gu and an uncountable number of mortal Gu to create.

Its effect was to find trouble with Fang Yuan. Every time it was activated, it would create a formless force that would cross Southern Border and be inflicted on Fang Yuan.

This immortal formation was very powerful, it far surpassed the killer move that Wu Yong used against Fang Yuan earlier.

At the same time, it was lasting.

This was the advantage of a Gu formation.

Once the Gu formation was created, the activation and deactivation process was very easily. It was not like a killer move, every use would have a complex process and every step would need to be accurate. Otherwise, the activation would fail and there might be a backlash on the user.

Gu formations were different, after they were created, unless they were destroyed, there would be no threat of backlash.

“Let’s try half of the power.” Wu Yong added.

Wu Bei nodded.

Wu Yong was not doing this because he was magnanimous, it was so that he could conveniently negotiate with Fang Yuan.

Don’t forget that Wu clan’s Immortal Gu were still in Fang Yuan’s hands.

Wu Yong naturally wanted them back.

Even if Fang Yuan ran to Western Desert, Wu Yong did not give up on that idea.

“Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal is powerful, and can deflect all attacks, but too bad! This move uses too much mental energy, and the immortal essence expenditure is high, how can Fang Yuan keep it active at all times?”

“With this Gu formation, we can attack any time we want, and stop it at any moment, we hold the initiative.”

“Let him suffer first before we negotiate.”

Wu Yong was already preparing his tactics.

The Gu formation activated, and was about to unleash its power when suddenly, the ground started to shake.

Rumble!

The entirety of Wu Yi Mountain was shaking.

“What is going on?”

“Why is there an earthquake? Which Gu Immortal is undergoing tribulation?”

“This is not a tribulation, the earth vein is shaking, the entirety of Southern Border is implicated, this is far more severe than just an earthquake!”

“Oh no, Elder Wu Bei!!”

The surrounding Wu clan Gu Immortals gasped as they realized something.

Boom—!

The immortal formation exploded as Wu Bei coughed out blood, after an anguished scream, he fell to the ground, unconscious.

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

Sixth Hair was covered in sweat, he was completely drenched, his hair was stuck together, it was a sad sight.

“The final step!” Sixth Hair’s eyes were red, filled with blood.

Lang Ya land spirit heard this and handed the processed immortal material over to Sixth Hair.

Even though he was the first supreme elder, since Fang Yuan made the request, and the rules were set by Lang Ya land spirit himself, he had to follow it.

Thus, he did not mind helping Sixth Hair, he at most had some grievances against Fang Yuan.

Ding—!

A long crisp sound came from the ice fire.

Like the sound of clashing silver coins.

Soon, the sound stopped as the blazing ice fire extinguished, only the round profound ice was left.

Sixth Hair breathed roughly as he muttered: “Come out, rank seven Immortal Gu Self Love.”

Crack crack.

Cracks appeared on the profound ice before it broke apart, as an Immortal Gu flew out.

Rank seven Immortal Gu Self Love was finally refined!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1407: Leaving Wu Clan Completely

Rank seven Immortal Gu Self Love!

Fang Yuan held this Immortal Gu, he felt joy in his heart.

It was not a waste that he expended all of his soul foundation, he obtained some useful results.

Luck path, after all, had helped a Gu Immortal to reach rank nine.

“I have dog shit luck Immortal Gu, and have connected my luck to Ye Fan, Hong Yi, and Han Li, these three lucky people. Furthermore, after the two uses of burning soul bursting luck, my luck must have reached an unprecedentedly high level.”

“It is not strange that self love Immortal Gu was successfully refined.”

This self love Immortal Gu was refined by Sixth Hair and sent to Fang Yuan using treasure yellow heaven.

Treasure yellow heaven had a small commotion.

But it was not as impactful as before.

Because situations of using treasure yellow heaven to transport Immortal Gu had happened many times already, it was no longer as rare. Especially recently, Wu Yong used treasure yellow heaven to send a batch of Gu worms, and Thousand Transformations Ancestor also sold year beasts and created an even bigger commotion that was still ongoing.

“This is self love Immortal Gu?” Bai Ning Bing asked.

Before Fang Yuan replied, Ying Wu Xie said: “Of course! This Immortal Gu came at a perfect timing, with this Immortal Gu, we can use immortal killer move self cleansing, we will not be afraid of any investigative killer move! Hahahaha!”

Ying Wu Xie said as he laughed loudly with his hands at his waist.

He was currently using Fairy Cui Bo’s body, his chest was huge and he had a beautiful face, but he laughed with his mouth wide opened like a foolish hot-blooded teenager, it was quite amusing.

Bai Ning Bing shook her head as she watched, the lingering bit of pity she felt towards Ying Wu Xie vanished without a trace.

“That’s right, this Immortal Gu, Self Love, is the core of immortal killer move self cleansing. This move can cleanse dao marks on the Gu Immortal’s body, getting rid of the unfavorable ones and only keeping the beneficial ones. Be it the investigative killer move or alliance agreements, as long as they are harmful to us, they can be cleansed.” Fang Yuan explained.

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes shined brightly, she thought: “This means that the killer move formed from this Immortal Gu can break the restraints of Shadow Sect’s alliance agreement on me?”

She saw some hope.

She did not join Shadow Sect willingly, she wanted to leave, but there was no way.

Self love Immortal Gu had a unique shape, it was not like a worm, but a horn shaped rice dumpling, there was a layer of bamboo leaves around it, and there were even grey-white threads on it. 1

But this was not true.

If one observed carefully, they would see that the surface of the bamboo leaves was completely one with the inside, the grey-white threads were the markings of self love Immortal Gu, they flickered and changed locations every few breaths of time.

Hei Lou Lan memorized the appearance of self love Immortal Gu deeply in her mind.

Fang Yuan touched the surface of self love Immortal Gu as he said: “Let’s move first before using this self love Immortal Gu to get rid of the investigative killer move.”

The immortals chose a direction randomly and moved for a hundred thousand li, arriving at the back of a huge sand dune.

Fang Yuan started to use his killer move, while Ying Wu Xie and gang went around the place to guard him.

First, he activated self love Immortal Gu.

This rank seven Immortal Gu was inside the sovereign immortal aperture, floating in the air and emitting a sweet smell without any lights shining.

Allured by the scent, large numbers of mortal Gu were activated, moving around self love Immortal Gu as they formed into a river of Gu worms.

This was the first step of using self cleansing.

Evidently, self love Immortal Gu was needed to make the first step.

Fang Yuan was stuck here previously, undoubtedly, even with a vast number of immortal killer moves, they were useless without the core Immortal Gu.

Next, Fang Yuan started to use some crucial supplementary Gu worms.

These Gu worms were all Immortal Gu.

Wisdom path Immortal Gu obtained from Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance.

Most of them were rank seven.

This immortal killer move’s difficulty was that the addition of every wisdom path Immortal Gu would cause a disturbance to the original Gu worm river.

Only skilled technique and extraordinary control could allow this step to be done.

A wisdom path rank six Immortal Gu was carefully placed in.

The river of Gu worms shook intensely, but it returned to normal soon.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank, this was just a rank six Immortal Gu, but was so difficult already. If he placed a rank seven Immortal Gu, the result would be worse.

But the second Immortal Gu was a rank seven Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan waited for a while, after savoring that precious experience from earlier, he placed the second Immortal Gu in.

Progressing slowly like this, when he got to the third Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan failed.

The entire Gu worm river broke apart as Fang Yuan spat out blood from his mouth.

Man as Before!

Once this Immortal Gu was used, his injuries were healed.

But the killer move’s activation failed, they had to leave now.

Fang Yuan and the rest packed their things and left the place.

They could not remain at one place for too long, they needed to keep moving so that Heavenly Court and heaven’s will could not deal with them easily.

Along the way, Fang Yuan thought about and collated his experiences.

One could say that the entire group was relying on his killer move. This was the key to solving their problem. Even though this killer move had no offensive power.

After the activation failed, they would leave, along the way, he would learn from his mistakes, until the fourth time, Fang Yuan finally succeeded in activating rank seven immortal killer move self cleansing.

It was not easy!

A watery and gentle light flowed down from Fang Yuan’s head, into his body and mind.

Initially, the water was shiny and crystal clear, but when it got to Fang Yuan’s feet, it became extremely murky.

“How was it?” After the killer move was used, Ying Wu Xie asked.

The other immortals looked over with concern.

Fang Yuan used perceivable dao Immortal Gu to inspect himself.

But the result was not satisfactory.

“We have a problem.” His expression turned grim.

Southern Border.

The super Gu formation was dealt with, supreme elder Wu Bei, who had fainted, was also treated.

Wu Yong looked at the huge pit with a dark expression.

“Why did the earth vein shake here all of a sudden?”

“This super Gu formation used the earth vein as the foundation, and it had a once in ten thousand years tremor, to think it would happen at this moment.”

“Thankfully, I salvaged Fang Yuan’s life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu at the crucial moment, but we lost a rank six Immortal Gu in the process.”

Wu Yong had a deep gaze, after this matter, his hatred towards Fang Yuan intensified.

“Lord Wu Yong, something is wrong.” At this moment, Wu Fa reported: “Not only was there a tremor here, Tie clan, Yi clan, Chai clan, Chi clan, and the rest have all faced an earthquake.”

Wu Yong’s eyebrows rose: “You mean this earth vein tremor involved the whole of Southern Border?”

“That is likely the case.” Wu Fa frowned deeply.

The earth vein was very important, an earthquake of such magnitude was unprecedented in Southern Border!

This change was truly not normal.

“Hmm?!” Wu Yong turned his gaze towards his hand, the two mortal Gu he was holding cracked and broke apart, they were completely destroyed.

Wu Yong was shocked: “Fang Yuan’s life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu were destroyed? Did he use some method against it?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1408: Inextinguishable Star Target

On this day, in Southern Border, regardless of mortal or immortal, they went into panic and shock.

The earth vein was shaking, affecting the entirety of Southern Border, important areas were devastated, mountains collapsed as rivers were blocked, pits were buried. The power of heaven and earth was displayed openly with unparalleled might at this moment.

Countless unfortunate mortals died in this vast calamity, the super forces were all collating their losses.

Many mortal forces were exterminated. Even for super forces, they lost quite a few resource points, they had suffered great setbacks.

This sudden earth vein earthquake made the tense Southern Border political situation go silent.

The super forces placed their conflicts aside as they started to investigate the cause of the earth vein commotion together.

Such an earthquake had not happened in the last ten thousand, or hundred thousand years, or even during the Olden Antiquity Era or Remote Antiquity Era.

Throughout history, this was the first time.

Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, be it righteous path, demonic path, or lone immortals, they were all nervous and curious about the cause of this huge commotion in the earth vein.

“The indication of the great era has appeared.” Fang Yuan, who was far away in Western Desert, collected information about the commotion in Southern Border as he sighed deeply.

At this moment, he had moved away again.

To another location.

When night faded away, light started to shine from the horizon.

It was dawn.

Soon, the sun rose up and restored the world to a bright state, shining down on the vast desert.

It was a new day.

Fang Yuan wore his white robe, he had a deep gaze as he looked at the rising sun with a deep mood.

Compared to the rising sun, his future was not this smooth and hopeful.

In the past, he was kept in the dark, but after getting Purple Mountain True

Monarch’s inheritance, he learned of the relationship between the great era and Spectral Soul, as well as Shadow Sect.

The great era originally should have approached at this time.

But in the five hundred years of his previous life, Spectral Soul succeeded in defying fate, he resisted Heavenly Court and heaven’s will, using his supreme methods to forcefully stall the great era by five hundred years!

Heaven’s will was forced into desperation by Spectral Soul, it had to take a big risk and use Fang Yuan as a tool to send him back to the past, using Spring Autumn Cicada and attempting to thwart Shadow Sect’s plans.

Thus, the entire world went back to its original path.

Without Shadow Sect and Spectral Soul, the great era started to unveil itself.

The tremor of the earth vein was the signal for the start of this great era.

“The great era is coming, the five regional walls are going to vanish. But before that, the earth veins of the five regions, Southern Border, Northern Plains, Central Continent, Western Desert, Eastern Sea, they will unify and combine into one.”

“For the following period, earth vein tremors will continue to happen. Not just in Southern Border, the other four regions will also face it.”

“The reason why Southern Border was the first to have these earth vein tremors is because Southern Border has the most earth path dao marks in all five regions. Therefore, Southern Border’s earth vein is also the deepest among the five regions. Precisely so, when the great era descends and the world changes, it will be the first one affected.”

Fang Yuan had a pondering gaze.

The great era descended like this, it greatly interrupted his former cultivation plan.

In his original plan, he had a lot of time.

Fang Yuan would continue to cultivate and use the dream realm to raise his attainment levels and accumulate wealth, while rising up in cultivation level. When the five regions chaotic war starts during the great era, he would have rank eight cultivation level and deep foundations and wealth, even if he did not reach great grandmaster in every path, he would be close.

That way, he would gain the most benefits during the five regions chaotic war.

But that was not possible now.

The great era was coming too quickly, Fang Yuan’s plans were completely disrupted.

Not just that, he was currently chased by Heavenly Court and was plotted against by heaven’s will, he had to run every minute and stay alert, a strong enemy might appear at any time to kill him.

“This is a huge change!”

“Currently, only I, Heavenly Court, Shadow Sect, and a few other forces know the truth behind the earth vein tremors.”

“However, the other Gu Immortals are not stupid, after some investigation, they will realize this sooner or later.”

“After a while, this will turn into a consensus and every Gu Immortal would understand: An unprecedented change is occurring in the world.”

“Sigh, my rebirth advantage is going to dwindle again.”

“If not for the dream realm battle, I would still have my identity as Wu Yi Hai. Southern Border’s earth vein tremors will cause large amounts of earth trenches, pits, and countless rare beasts and plants to appear.”

“This is a great harvest, all forces and Gu Immortals will compete for them. Such things will occur often in the five regions, but Southern Border will be the most affected, because Southern Border’s earth vein has the biggest foundation, it has the most valuable treasures. The worst is Eastern Sea, because these are earth vein tremors, Eastern Sea would have the least number of fortuitous encounters from them.”

Fang Yuan recalled.

Eastern Sea has always had the most resources among the five regions. Because of this, Gu Immortals from the other regions took risks to go there and explore it, trying to find ways to advance their cultivation.

But Eastern Sea had the least gains from the earth vein tremors.

There was a theory in the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life: This fortuitous encounter of countless treasures was like the gift of heaven and earth, to purposely balance the five regions.

If Fang Yuan was still using Wu Yi Hai’s identity now, he would be able to gain great benefits. With his memories, he remembered many places where precious resources emerged, and even wild Immortal Gu!

Unfortunately, because his identity was exposed, these great fortuitous encounters were no longer available to him.

Fang Yuan felt that it was a pity, but he did not know that this earth vein tremor helped him instead.

Because of the earth vein tremor, Wu clan’s immortal formation was destroyed, Wu Yong’s plan failed and Fang Yuan dodged a crisis, he did not fall to Wu clan’s scheme.

The earth vein tremors were bound to happen eventually, but it had to happen at that precise moment, that was because of Fang Yuan’s burning soul bursting luck.

“Thankfully, I obtained rank seven Immortal Gu Self Love. After using immortal killer move self cleansing successfully, I got rid of all the detrimental dao marks on me, including Wu clan’s alliance agreement.”

This way, Fang Yuan left Wu clan entirely, they were no longer connected.

“By now, my life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu must have shattered. Wu Yong cannot use this to deal with me anymore.”

Even though his worries were lifted, Fang Yuan also saw a weakness of self cleansing.

Self cleansing was extremely unique, it could cleanse all of the dao marks that were unfavorable to the Gu Immortal, but the choice was not according to Fang

Yuan’s intentions.

For example, Fang Yuan had gotten rid of the alliance agreement with Wu clan completely, but his alliance agreement dao marks with other forces like Chu Du, Lang Ya land spirit, the variant humans, and Crazed Demon Cave, were unaffected.

This was because these alliance agreement dao marks were not ‘harmful’ to Fang Yuan, self cleansing would not get rid of them.

However, the moment Fang Yuan betrays them, these alliance agreement dao marks would activate and punish Fang Yuan, it would be too late for him to use self cleansing on them.

And most important was Fairy Zi Wei’s investigative killer move.

These dao marks were very detrimental to Fang Yuan, self cleansing naturally got rid of them. But the shocking thing was, even though the killer move was effective and removed these dao marks, they soon started to recover and grow again.

At this speed, in just six hours, the dao marks of Heavenly Court’s investigative killer move would completely be restored.

“Self cleansing is the strongest method in this aspect that Purple Mountain True Monarch had.”

“Even though it is effective on me, the enemy this time is too powerful.”

“The investigative killer move on me is likely created by Fairy Zi Wei using Star Constellation Chessboard.”

Even though Fang Yuan was guessing, he was quite sure of it.

Because he had seen such self-producing dao marks before.

It was his original body, the rank six strength path eight armed heavenly immortal zombie body.

Currently, in this body, the second aperture had completely broken down, while the first rank five aperture still had Spring Autumn Cicada sealed inside.

Spring Autumn Cicada could not be used, because heaven’s will was inside.

And in the body, Ying Wu Xie used his soul path method to set a vicious trap.

Once Fang Yuan sends souls inside, the trap would activate and kill it, before nourishing itself and producing more soul path dao marks, becoming even harder to deal with.

This was the first time Fang Yuan saw self-regenerating dao marks.

Even though it was Ying Wu Xie’s killer move, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had something similar.

After getting Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance, Fang Yuan learned that only rank nine venerables could create killer moves with regenerating dao marks.

Thus, Fang Yuan guessed that Fairy Zi Wei used Star Constellation Chessboard to activate the investigative killer move.

Because Star Constellation Chessboard belonged to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Thanks to Fang Yuan’s current identity, he had a deeper understanding of

Heavenly Court than before.

Fang Yuan recalled, it was true, the other Immortal Venerables or Demon Venerables had such methods.

Dao marks replenished themselves without expending immortal essence.

For example, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s rank eight Immortal Gu Fortune Rivalling Heaven. After Ma Hong Yun used it, the lucky effect had lasted the entire time until he died.

The true essence of his luck were luck path dao marks.

Ma Hong Yun had luck path dao marks on his body, he absorbed the luck of those around him, causing his fortune to rise. In the entire process, he did not have to expend any immortal essence or primeval essence.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable also had such killer moves.

Divine concealment and ghostly concealment.

These two defensive killer moves created a thin cloak of dao marks on the soul. The former allowed the user to be free from heaven’s will and deductions, while the latter made one unnoticeable to souls.

This killer move’s effect had always lasted without using any immortal essence. At the same time, if there was any damage, the dao mark cloak would regenerate itself.

“It is publicly recognized that every rank nine venerable’s main path is at supreme grandmaster.”

“According to the cultivation experience from Purple Mountain True Monarch: Grandmaster attainment level is imitation of other paths, great grandmaster is the use of natural dao marks, while supreme grandmaster is the regeneration of dao marks and even self-sustenance, breaking free from the restriction of immortal essence?”

The classification was clear now.

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance gave Fang Yuan a clear recognition of all the Gu Immortal attainment levels.

Now, with his own experiences, Fang Yuan gained a lot of insight.

The eight arm heavenly zombie body’s soul path trap could be resolved now. But the investigative dao marks on the sovereign immortal body were hard to deal with.

“Using self cleansing, I can get rid of a number of investigative dao marks, but the more I reduce them, the faster they regenerate!”

“Using self cleansing killer move once will get rid of ten percent of these dao marks. But in half a day, they will completely grow back.”

“This means that if I want to get rid of the investigative killer move, I will need to sustain self cleansing all the time, for about half a month without any pauses in the middle.”

Fang Yuan estimated based on all the information that he had.

It was problematic, the investigative killer move was far more troublesome than

Fang Yuan had expected.

And the most important thing was, this was unrealistic.

Self cleansing was not a sustained killer move, it had to be used each time. Each time he used it, there was a certain duration that it lasted.

Even though he had self love Immortal Gu and successfully used self cleansing, Fang Yuan did not get rid of the harmful dao marks completely.

He met with another problem.

What should he do?

“If you are given enough time to prepare, you might be able to resolve it. But too bad, you have no chance now.” In Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei smiled.

She was very confident in the investigative killer move used on Fang Yuan and the rest.

Because this was Star Constellation Chessboard’s method, and also the killer move created personally by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable — Inextinguishable Star Target.

Compared to other investigative killer moves, inextinguishable star target could only locate the position of its target, this effect alone was inferior to the method that Fairy Zi Wei used on Feng Jiu Ge,

The latter allowed Star Constellation Chessboard to display the scenes of the target’s situation, one could easily understand what was going on.

But inextinguishable star target’s greatest effect was that it could regenerate endlessly, normal methods could not get rid of it properly.

One could say that as long as this killer move still lasted, Fang Yuan would be a pawn on Fairy Zi Wei’s board, he could not escape her grasp. To eliminate him was only a matter of time.

Against Fang Yuan and the others, Fairy Zi Wei had the complete advantage, she was unshakeable in this situation.

As long as Fang Yuan had no time or freedom to develop, as time dragged on, Fairy Zi Wei and Heavenly Court’s advantage would get bigger and bigger.

One could say, Fairy Zi Wei was in an invincible position!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1409: Lu Wei Yin

“Compared to fate, luck cannot last.”

“Even though there were some mishaps, so what?”

Fairy Zi Wei smiled gracefully and elegantly.

The Star Constellation Chessboard in her hands displayed the figures of the two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

The Immortal Gu House was flying.

The two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had grim expressions, conversing with each other.

“The upper extreme heavenly eagle used the black-white overturning cloud to escape to black heaven. But according to the current time, it is already daytime in the five regions, we are in white heaven now, so black heaven is above us. Therefore, we need to fly upwards past the heavenly wind qi wall to enter black heaven.”

“That’s right, we have already used investigative methods on the upper extreme heavenly eagle. As long as we get into black heaven, we will be able to sense it, there is no problem.”

“If we meet the upper extreme heavenly eagle again, we cannot repeat the same mistake, we will to try hard and prevent it from escaping again.”

The two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were deeply confident, they had recovered from the setback earlier.

Their confidence came from their great strength.

With such strength, even if the upper extreme heavenly eagle had a few lucky breaks, so what?

Could it rely on luck every time?

As long as it failed once, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals would win, the upper extreme heavenly eagle would be captured with no way of escaping.

Star Constellation Chessboard shook lightly, the scene changed as Feng Jiu Ge was shown.

At this moment, Feng Jiu Ge had already left the River of Time, he was in Western Desert.

But this time, because he used a different tributary of the River of Time, even though he was in Western Desert, he could not return using the same way.

Fairy Zi Wei gave him advice, Feng Jiu Ge was currently very far away from Fang Yuan.

“Feng Jiu Ge is a Dao Guardian.”

“His luck is firm like an unmoving mountain, only people with such intense luck can counter a person like Fang Yuan.”

“If I send other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals over, it would be a mess, Fang Yuan would suppress their luck and he would benefit from the situation instead.”

“Fang Yuan’s upper extreme heavenly eagle was a clear example. It could escape from two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, not to mention Fang Yuan himself.”

“I will let Feng Jiu Ge chase after Fang Yuan and force him to find Red Lotus’ true inheritance. Even if he cannot find it, he will continue to expose his trump cards, by the time he expends them, I will go after him personally.”

Thinking of this, killing intent shined in Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes.

It was not that she did not think highly of Fang Yuan, instead, she placed a lot of emphasis on him.

To kill this complete otherworldly demon, Fairy Zi Wei had to act personally to feel assured.

But now was not the time.

Firstly, Fang Yuan still had hidden trump cards, he was not in a desperate situation.

Secondly, Heavenly Court needed to be defended because Duke Long was deep in Heavenly Court trying to suppress Spectral Soul’s main body. Fairy Zi Wei needed to oversee the entirety of Central Continent and send out orders to control the situation.

Thirdly, the great era was coming, Southern Border was already having earth vein tremors, Central Continent’s location was too disadvantageous, they had to make ample preparations.

Even though Fang Yuan obtained self love Immortal Gu, he did not leave Fairy Zi Wei’s control.

Even though the upper extreme heavenly eagle escaped, it was still being pursued, it was not out of danger.

Fairy Zi Wei was more concerned about the stone lotus island in the River of Time rather than these two.

“Why did Red Lotus’ true inheritance suddenly appear and disappear again?” Fairy Zi Wei frowned, she did not understand.

With Star Constellation Chessboard, she was one of the three strongest wisdom path great experts in the current world.

But against the most mysterious Red Lotus Demon Venerable in human history, Fairy Zi Wei could feel her own inability and weakness.

“Oh Red Lotus...” Fairy Zi Wei sighed.

She knew that among the Demon Venerables, this Red Lotus Demon Venerable had the deepest connection to Heavenly Court.

In fact, he was once thought to be the future Red Lotus Immortal Venerable and to become in charge of Heavenly Court...

Black heaven.

The yellow-green grass looked like a giant carpet, growing at a part of black heaven.

Heaven attached fungi.

This was a rank six immortal material that only grew in the immemorial nine heavens.

It grew in very specific locations.

They had to grow alone without any other dao marks around them, other life forms, or even any meteorites.

But thankfully, the immemorial nine heavens was huge, even though there were lots of ancient desolate and immemorial desolate life forms around, there was enough room for the heaven attached fungi to grow.

However, there were two people on this heaven attached fungi now.

Chirp chirp!

Sounds of anxious bird chirping could be heard.

A Gu Master with the appearance of a young man raised his right hand with difficulty, there was a layer of rainbow aurora light covering his forearm and right hand.

This light was very active, it seemed to want to escape from the young man, but it could not.

The young man was gritting his teeth, holding on desperately with sweating covering his forehead.

“Go, aurora bird!” The young Gu Master was at his limit, he knew he had to take a risk, he shouted as he pushed forward with his arm.

Chirp chirp chirp!

At the next moment, the aurora light and chirping became even louder and sharper.

Next, the rainbow aurora light jumped out of the young Gu Master’s arm, jumping into the sky and turning into a bird.

The bird wings flapped as the rainbow aurora light shot out at an incredible speed.

Boom!

With a loud sound, the rainbow aurora bird landed on the heaven attached fungi nearby and destroyed all of the fungi.

After the aurora light faded, there was a tiny pit in the heaven attached fungi.

The young Gu Master saw this and was surprised and joyous.

He was happy that his hard work after so much training and dangerous situations had paid off, he succeeded in this killer move.

He was surprised that this killer move was so powerful, just like what his master said.

“Master, I succeeded!” The young Gu Master went to another person and greeted, saying excitedly.

“Mm, not bad.” His master commented plainly.

The young Gu Master saw his master’s expression and the excitement in his heart calmed down.

His expression became normal as he paid his respects, saying plainly: “I had lost my composure.”

“No worries.” The young Gu Master’s master waved as he walked away slowly.

A few steps later, he stopped as he looked up at the sky.

He wore a grey hemp garment, it was very simple and plain, but his muscular body could not be concealed.

He wore a conical hat 1 that was large and wide, it covered his face under the shadow, concealing his appearance.

Even though he was the young Gu Master's master, his appearance had never been seen.

The truth was, only now when he looked at the sky, the young Gu Master could see his appearance.

But he only saw his chin.

His chin was wide and thick, it gave people the feeling of steadiness and unwavering determination.

"Master, thank you for your guidance, if I cultivated alone, how could I have reached such a level." The young Gu Master said.

His master was silent for a while before speaking slowly: "Ye Fan, you are incredibly talented and have great insight. This killer move was created by you using the transformation path and light path understanding that you have, I was only guiding you along. Even though you succeeded in this move, you need to practise it more, beware of your safety, I cannot stay by you."

"Master, we are going to be separated?" The young Gu Master asked anxiously in shock.

He was Ye Fan of Southern Border.

He admired Shang Xin Ci and when she became the clan leader, he stood up and helped her resolve many problems of the mortal Shang clan.

But there is always someone better than you, Ye Fan met Bai Ning Bing and suffered a terrible loss, he even went through an experience of being at the brink of life and death.

He survived, but was extremely shocked.

This unforgettable experience made him contemplative, pondering about life and about himself.

Through an unexpected surprise, he met his current master and became master and disciple.

To think that his master was a Gu Immortal.

To nurture this disciple with great talent, he brought Ye Fan to black heaven to train him.

Even though they spent a short time together, Ye Fan admired this mysterious master deeply.

Affinity was needed between people. Some people could live together for a lifetime and still be strangers. Some people could be together for a short while and easily become soulmates.

Even though Ye Fan did not see his master's appearance, he could feel the sincerity and kindness from his master.

He had complete confidence in his master, he did not suspect that his master had any ulterior motives.

“Affinity comes and goes, we do not have much of a connection to begin with. After using it up today, our relationship will end tomorrow. We might as well use it slowly and await the future. Ye Fan, do you know why I brought you here.” His master said.

Ye Fan blinked: “Master, didn’t you say that black heaven restricts my light path, so that it is safe to cultivate here even though it is hard.”

“This is just one of the reasons. The second reason is that I deduced that you have some karma here.” His master said in a low tone.

“Karma?” Ye Fan showed a perplexed gaze.

“In this world, every cause has an effect and every effect has a cause. Look, your karma has arrived.” Saying this, the mysterious Gu Immortal pointed at the sky.

Ye Fan looked over and gasped.

Over there, an upper extreme heavenly eagle flew towards the heaven attached fungi here.

“What a strong divine eagle! Ah, it is injured.” It was getting closer as Ye Fan could see upper extreme heavenly eagle’s heavy injuries.

Even though Ye Fan met with a good teacher, he was still not a Gu Immortal himself. The truth was, even ordinary rank six Gu Immortals would not know about the immemorial desolate beast upper extreme heavenly eagle.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was currently not clearheaded, its wounds were healing and had not healed.

Even though it shook off Heavenly Court’s pursuers, black heaven and white heaven were very dangerous, it was not safe anywhere.

When it saw the heaven attached fungi, it flew over, trying to get precious time to rest.

But it did not manage to land on the heaven attached fungi, it fainted a few thousand steps away.

However, Ye Fan’s master acted rapidly and grabbed this upper extreme heavenly eagle.

His palm was open and using some unknown method, under Ye Fan’s surprised gaze, this upper extreme heavenly eagle became smaller and smaller by some effect, landing in Ye Fan’s master’s palm like a baby chick.

Ye Fan’s mysterious master stretched out another hand to caress the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

Suddenly, the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s injuries vanished, it went into deep sleep in a relaxed state.

“Ye Fan, you are bound by the karma on you, this upper extreme heavenly eagle might be the key to resolving it in the future for you.”

“Bring it by your side, when it wakes up, it will bring you out of black heaven and back to Southern Border.”

“Master is leaving now.”

Saying this, the mysterious Gu Immortal in a conical hat and grey clothes flew away towards the sky.

“Master, stay safe.” Ye Fan received the little bird upper extreme heavenly eagle and rapidly chased.

He had tears in his eyes, he was quite upset.

He chased until he got to the edge of the heaven attached fungi, seeing his master’s shrinking figure, he shouted: “Master, may I know your name?”

“My name is Lu Wei Yin.”

His master’s voice could be heard softly in his ears.

“Master... Lu Wei Yin...” Ye Fan muttered in a daze.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1410: Formation Path Immortal Gu, True Inheritance

Western Desert.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes, he saw a jade green forest.

There was a blue lake, it was like a sapphire in a sea of yellow sand, it was extremely beautiful.

This was a small oasis, there was a natural spirit spring here.

Oases like this were usually the foundation of a mortal clan. If a Gu Master stayed here and preserved the spirit spring, if it developed well, it could become a mid size or even a large size oasis.

Humans chose environments that were suitable for living, and at the same time, they would modify the natural environment to suit their needs.

This was the coexistence between people and nature in Western Desert.

However, now, this newly formed oasis was going to be destroyed.

Because Fang Yuan and the rest would destroy all the traces left behind when they left for a new location.

Even though they were hit by Heavenly Court’s killer move, they had to guard against enemies in Western Desert, especially when heaven’s will was plotting all the time.

“This deduction finally has some results.” Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, feeling slightly happy.

Ever since he saw the power of inextinguishable star target, he started to resolve this problem.

Immortal killer move self cleansing was good, it had to be used time and time again with fixed durations, but Fang Yuan could modify it to be a lasting move.

Fang Yuan had the foundation for this.

Because he was a wisdom path grandmaster, and self cleansing was a wisdom path killer move, he could modify it.

And he had a crucial Immortal Gu.

It was because of this Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan had great confidence.

This Immortal Gu was Perseverance.

Rank seven perseverance Immortal Gu's effect was to supplement other Immortal Gu or killer moves in their duration. For example, when Fang Yuan became an ancient sword dragon, his sword light dragon breath had to be breathed out each time. But if he used perseverance Immortal Gu, he could use the sword light dragon breath continuously, until his throat reached its limit.

Perseverance Immortal Gu was suited for the modification of self cleansing.

Recently, Fang Yuan had been moving around while deducing, he had finally gotten some results now.

He succeeded in making Immortal Gu Perseverance the second core of this self cleansing killer move.

This way, self cleansing could be used for longer durations, it would get rid of Fang Yuan's unfavorable dao marks continuously.

"But this would not be enough to clear all the dao marks." Fang Yuan had a deep gaze, he did not relax.

He knew that another tough problem was coming.

Even if self cleansing could be used continuously, Fang Yuan did not have the time to wait.

He was currently being pursued, even though Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals were nowhere to be seen, they might be tailing him already.

At any time, it was possible for Fang Yuan and the rest to be pursued and sneak attacked.

Using self cleansing, it would take a month at least to get rid of Fang Yuan's inextinguishable star target dao marks.

In this month, he had to use the killer move non-stop.

Inextinguishable star target was hard to deal with, the more dao marks removed, the faster they regenerated.

Fang Yuan had done his best to reach this stage, he could not raise self cleansing's effect anymore.

"According to the situation, I need to be on the run at all times, it is impossible for me to get a month's time. And even if I have a month, what about the others? They were also hit by inextinguishable star target."

There was no chance of doing so.

Fang Yuan’s biggest worry was that Heavenly Court would come out and ruin everything when he was about to succeed.

If that happened, he would have expended a lot of immortal essence without getting rid of inextinguishable star target. Next, if he fought the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals or escaped, inextinguishable star target would regenerate, the dao marks would grow and Fang Yuan’s efforts would be in vain.

“And self cleansing is an immortal killer move, using it would expend not only a lot of immortal essence, but to sustain it, I need to use up a lot of mental energy on it.”

“I have not used this killer move much, I am not proficient with it. Including the times when I will fail, not only will I waste immortal essence and need to heal myself, even without Heavenly Court’s interference, I will weaken greatly if this goes on.”

“Escaping to Lang Ya blessed land is impossible too. Not only I am under Heavenly Court’s surveillance and would expose Lang Ya blessed land’s location, the journey is too long, there is too much danger in going there, there is not only Heavenly Court and heaven’s will, Northern Plains even has Longevity Heaven.”

Of course, there were difficulties and also solutions.

Fang Yuan soon thought of a counter measure for this.

He had enough strength to execute this plan as well.

That was to use formation path.

He needed to modify the killer move, self cleansing, into an immortal Gu formation.

This was not out of this world.

As mentioned earlier, Gu formations were in essence killer moves, but they were formation path killer moves.

If Fang Yuan had a self cleansing Gu formation, it would be much easier. He would need to expend much less immortal essence and mental energy to sustain the Gu formation compared to using killer moves.

Furthermore, the killer move self cleansing was effective on Fang Yuan alone, other Gu Immortals needed to learn the move to use it themselves later.

But if it was an immortal Gu formation, then Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals could enter the formation and get rid of the inextinguishable star target dao marks on their bodies.

“Thus, not only do I need to modify the killer move and turn it into an immortal Gu formation, I also need Gu worms like formation plate Gu, formation flag Gu, or formation chart Gu, and it would be great if they were Immortal Gu.”

Immortal level formation plate Gu, Lang Ya Sect had one.

This Immortal Gu’s effect was to use all sorts of Gu worms to set up a Gu formation on its own. The Gu Immortal only needed to provide immortal essence for it, they did not need any formation path attainment.

Formation flag Gu was used to manage a Gu formation that was already set up. When Gu Immortals use formation flag Gu, they can choose a Gu formation and directly keep it inside formation flag Gu.

Next, within their line of sight, the Gu Immortal can bring formation flag Gu and teleport away.

After finding a suitable location, they can activate formation flag Gu to set up the Gu formation again at a new location.

As for formation chart Gu, it was a type of consumable Gu.

Formation chart Gu recorded the information of a Gu formation, it has a similar effect to formation plate Gu, but the chances of error were much smaller compared to formation plate Gu.

These three Gu worms suited Fang Yuan greatly.

Tremor desert.

This special desert would have intense tremors from time to time.

Deep under tremor desert, an immortal Gu formation was slowly activated.

Han Li walked in with a nervous expression, he encouraged himself: “This is the final test of the formation path true inheritance left by Gu Immortal Zhen Yuan Zi. Han Li, work hard!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1411: Green Claw Ghost Winged Lion

This was a bronze hall.

At the center of the hall, there was a metallic lamp hanging on a crane neck. The neck was long and curvy, at the tip of its beak, there was a flame that was the size of a peach.

This flame shone over the entire hall.

The flame was weak, the corners of the bronze hall were still covered in darkness.

A thin young Gu Master was standing on a huge concrete tile of the palace. There was a huge pillar beside him, it was red and thick, to encircle it, three grown men would need to stretch their arms out.

When the light shined, the pillar blocked a huge portion of it, the young Gu Master’s body was half concealed in darkness and shadows.

It was Han Li.

Han Li was currently covered in sweat, he was uncertain in his heart.

“I was too overconfident!”

“This senior Zhen Yuan Zi might be a righteous path Gu Immortal, but someone like me has no qualifications to take his true inheritance.”

“I could get to this point after exerting all my energy, some of the steps were through pure luck!”

Han Li had gone through a lot, he was clear about the danger of this bronze hall.

Thinking about it, he felt great lingering fear.

Actually, righteous path inheritances were usually not dangerous, demonic path was the one with vicious set-ups and schemes.

Although Zhen Yuan Zi’s inheritance test had its dangers, they were nothing of concern for Gu Immortals. But for the Gu Master Han Li, it was too dangerous.

Han Li was someone with great luck, and because his luck was connected to Fang Yuan, he had endless fortuitous encounters, he had rank four cultivation level now.

Such cultivation speed, at this age without any Gu Immortals helping him, was really rare.

Han Li stood on the spot, he did not take a step ahead, he tried to turn around and look at the path he had walked on, he wanted to retreat.

This Zhen Yuan Zi’s Gu Immortal true inheritance was too high level for him, even though it was alluring, Han Li had already woken up and faced reality.

He thought for a while before moving his right leg towards the back.

At the next moment, his field of vision changed.

“I went ahead instead?”

Han Li looked around, his expression turning pale.

He found that the red pillar was far behind him, he had advanced by more than ten steps ahead.

He had become much closer to that metallic crane neck lamp now.

As long as he can get there, Han Li would be able to inherit Zhen Yuan Zi’s true inheritance.

But right now, Han Li had already decided on retreating.

His advancement was just because of pure chance, he had accidentally done it. His true intention was to leave the place, but he actually went forward instead.

It was obvious that if he wanted to advance and chose other directions to move, the result would be disastrous.

Han Li as a lone cultivator had shallow foundations in formation path, he was nearly clueless. To put it nicely, he was an unschooled cultivator with just some cheap tricks.

He could get here because of his intelligence, his calm decisions, and pure luck.

Out of these elements, luck was the most prominent aspect.

And this made Han Li increasingly less confident.

Because luck was not dependable. If a logical person does things solely based on luck, that was just gambling.

“Sigh! I am betting my life now... it seems that moving back towards the right is safer.” Han Li observed, at this point, he was clueless, he was moving based on feelings.

So he moved back.

Swoosh.

His field of vision changed again, the result was shocking, because his advancement was even greater now, he was dozens of steps ahead!

The metallic crane neck lamp that represented success was very close to him now, Han Li could barely touch it with his arms outstretched now.

Of course, he was still a small distance from success.

And this tiny distance meant everything.

Han Li hesitated.

Facing this situation, he was sure to waver. After all, success was right in front of him, there was just one step left.

“But is this really correct?” Han Li fell into difficult contemplation.

Time passed quickly, but in his perception, he felt like it was only one instant.

The difficult decision made him sweat profusely. But in the end, his reason surpassed the greed in his heart.

“How can one blindly rely on chance in the road of cultivation?” Han Li let out a breath of air, he relaxed his body, his entire mental state settled.

He started to find the way to retreat.

This bronze hall was just created by the formation space. It was like the palace that Fang Yuan lived in at the Southern Border super dream realm Gu formation.

Han Li was currently at the center of the Gu formation.

However, the path of retreat was very obvious now.

Even Han Li with little formation path foundation could tell.

Han Li had a clear mind, following this path of retreat, he went back and got further away from the metallic crane neck lamp.

“I hope my following journey is as simple and smooth as this.” Han Li thought that when his field of vision changed suddenly.

He was shocked to find out that he had directly appeared before the metallic crane neck lamp!

“What, what happened?” Han Li could not understand.

A will slowly woke up in the lamp.

An old voice spoke in Han Li’s head in a groggy tone, like it had just woken up: “Not bad, not bad, fated one, you were able to get past the formation and arrive before me, it shows that you are qualified to inherit the true inheritance.”

Han Li was extremely embarrassed: “I, I actually wanted to leave.”

The voice became clearer and smoother: “Hehe, this was Zhen Yuan Zi’s intention when he made the formation. When the metallic crane neck lamp is extremely close to you, any decision of moving forward is wrong. Only a Gu Immortal with incredible wisdom and deep formation path attainment will understand this. The only way forward is backwards. Or perhaps those Gu Immortals who had low formation path attainment but knew when to retreat, they would have a chance of getting the true inheritance because of their wise choice.”

Han Li understood finally: “This means that I am the second type. And, aren’t you senior Zhen Yuan Zi’s will?”

“Of course not, I am formation spirit Immortal Gu. I was created by senior Zhen Yuan Zi, nobody knew about me.” The voice continued.

Han Li did not understand: “Formation Spirit?”

“Don’t you get it? Blessed lands have land spirits, grotto-heavens have heavenly spirits, Gu formations naturally can have formation spirits... hmm? Why are you a Gu Master? You are not a Gu Immortal?!” Suddenly, the formation spirit shouted.

“I am sorry, I really am here by chance. If I am not qualified to get the true inheritance, can I leave?” Han Li smiled awkwardly.

The formation spirit was confused: “Unbelievable, you are not a Gu Immortal, how did you pass the middle steps? With just luck, how lucky must you be... oh no!”

“Oh no?!” Han Li thought that the formation spirit was going to praise his luck.

The formation spirit said loudly: “This is really bad! Zhen Yuan Zi had planned to pick a Gu Immortal inheritor. You do not have immortal essence, you cannot suppress the immemorial desolate beast green claw ghost winged lion under the formation. You obtained the true inheritance, this Gu formation is going to break apart, but you cannot subdue this green claw ghost winged lion, aren’t you going to run? No, you can’t possibly run away, right? We’re finished, you’re finished, to think that my new master who has just obtained the true inheritance is going to die like this!”

“No, there must be a way!” Han Li did not want to give up like this.

“There is no hope, the difference in strength is too great. Sigh...” The formation spirit that had manifested from formation spirit Gu was very pessimistic about this.

Like what it said, the Gu formation started to break apart, the entire bronze hall started to turn hollow.

The lamp floated and landed on Han Li’s shoulder.

The true environment showed itself.

This was a huge hole under the desert.

Large amounts of sand started to fall, without the immortal Gu formation's support, this artificially created cave started to collapse.

Han Li had nowhere to escape.

Before him was a huge hill-sized green claw ghost winged lion sprawling on the ground.

It was sleeping now, if he was a Gu Immortal, he would be able to subdue it according to Zhen Yuan Zi's arrangements, even if he could not, he could make it sleep and prevent it from troubling the inheritor.

This was actually part of Zhen Yuan Zi's test too.

The green claw ghost winged lion was an immemorial desolate beast, if the inheritor was skilled enough, they would be able to control this green claw ghost winged lion.

But Han Li was not.

Not just that, he might get eaten by it instead.

Sand continued to fall, landing on the green claw ghost winged lion and waking it up.

Han Li attacked fiercely, but his mortal killer move landed on the green claw ghost winged lion like a gust of harmless wind.

The green claw ghost winged lion leaped forward and opened its mouth, devouring Han Li entirely!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1412: Dancer Hong Yun

A beautiful red cloud was flying in the sky.

“Green ghost desert is ahead.” Dancer Hong Yun lay down on her red cloud as she shut her eyes in a relaxed manner.

She had a curvy body and was wearing a red dancing dress with yellow threads, her belly was exposed as well as her arms and legs.

There were golden jade bracelets on her wrists and ankles.

On her fingers, there were many jeweled rings, blue, green, and red, enhancing one another's beauty.

Her eyes had a deep gaze, her brows were thick and long, there was a faint green light in her eyes, even though they were half closed, she was still very alluring.

A translucent red veil was covering half her face, her tall nose and red lips were covered by the veil, it made people have the urge to explore what was truly behind that veil.

Dancer Hong Yun, she was a seductive rank seven female Gu Immortal.

She was once a demoness that roamed Western Desert, but unfortunately she trifled with a righteous path rank eight great expert, during the critical moment, Thousand Transformations Ancestor saved her.

Using that opportunity, Dancer Hong Yun became one of Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s concubines.

But unfortunately, she was not his type, even though she was very beautiful and sexy, her status was lower than Fairy Cui Bo in Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s heart.

Wild winds were blowing by her ears, the red cloud was soft like cotton but also very bouncy, it was very comfortable for Dancer Hong Yun to lie down on it.

This was Dancer Hong Yun’s signature method, immortal killer move — Dancing Red Cloud.

Even though she did not normally have a good relationship with Fairy Cui Bo, they even competed very fiercely in secret, Fairy Cui Bo was in trouble now, Dancer Hong Yun had to go rescue her using her fastest method.

She was unwilling, of course, but now, there was Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s will with her.

This will was here not only to help Dancer Hong Yun, but also to supervise her.

As long as this will was around, Dancer Hong Yun would need to do everything to save Fairy Cui Bo.

The red cloud traveled along the way, arriving in the sky above green ghost desert, soon, the weather changed.

Dark clouds started appearing.

Once she entered green ghost desert, dark clouds joined together and became even thicker, covering the sky entirely.

Ordinary deserts were hot and open.

But in green ghost desert, there was barely any sunlight, it was dark and gloomy.

There were many trees in this desert.

Ghost crying trees were one of the types that had the highest numbers.

This ghost crying tree was very twisted in shape and full of natural holes inside. It had deep tree bark markings, resembling the faces of crying humans.

Every time the wind blew on the ghost crying tree, it would shake slightly and emit a shrill scream, or terrifying cry.

Even during the day, this place was cold and dark, soul beasts roamed freely. When it was night time, cold bone-chilling winds would blow as countless ghosts wandered.

Dancer Hong Yun rode on her dancing red cloud as she moved past the dark clouds with a repressed feeling.

She was no longer as relaxed as before, she sat cross-legged and opened her eyes, staying vigilant at all times.

Green ghost desert was a famous place of danger in Western Desert.

It was related to a Demon Venerable in history.

That was the famed Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Before Spectral Soul Demon Venerable became a venerable, he had fought with a super clan here, he murdered all of the Gu Immortals in this Western Desert wood path clan overlord that were here.

The aftermath of the battle turned area this into green ghost desert.

This place seemed to be filled with the hatred and anger of the losers, they were filled with unhappiness and grief towards their horrible fate.

This was an ominous land.

There were a vast number of soul beasts living here. Even immemorial soul beasts were not rare.

After a hundred thousand years, there were many Western Desert Gu Immortals who died here.

Dancer Hong Yun had the guts to travel here, it was not because of her rank seven cultivation level or battle strength, it was because she had Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s will and rank eight Immortal Gu.

And her travel route was just a corner of green ghost desert, she did not truly enter it deeply.

Thus, she chose to advance like this.

The cloud continued flying ahead, across the dark sky, it was very eye-catching.

Howl—!

There was a long howl resembling a wolf’s cry, a huge hill-like soul beast appeared above Dancer Hong Yun, emerging from the deep dark clouds.

This was an ancient soul beast, it thought of Dancer Hong Yun as prey, opening its mouth and pouncing at her.

Dancer Hong Yun’s pupils shrunk, she gritted her teeth and was about to strike.

At this time, Thousand Transformations’ will spoke: “Let me handle it, Hong Yun, just advance.”

Dancer Hong Yun heard this and became overjoyed, she listened to him.

Dancing red cloud did not stop at all, it continued forward without changing directions.

The rank eight Immortal Gu activated, as a strange resonance targeted the ancient soul beast.

The ancient soul beast opened its mouth, its huge body covered Dancer Hong Yun under its shadow, but at the crucial moment, its attack stopped eerily.

Next, its head exploded as a monkey jumped out, its claws turned into vines, its fur turned into grass, and from its flesh, countless crocodiles jumped out.

At once, the ancient soul beast broke apart and turned into countless random things.

Next, they fell from the sky, it was like a drizzle.

“So, so impressive, this is the power of rank eight mutation Immortal Gu?” Looking back, Dancer Hong Yun was filled with shock.

Killing an ancient desolate beast like killing a chicken.

It was too simple.

Dancer Hong Yun was aware that if she had to act personally, she would need to fight for a hundred rounds to force this ancient soul beast to retreat, if she was lucky, she might be able to kill it.

Once the ancient soul beast died, the ancient soul beasts near its territory became stirred up, they emerged from the dark clouds.

Thousand Transformations’ will snorted coldly, he stopped concealing it as the rank eight Immortal Gu aura leaked out.

Feeling this aura, many ancient soul beasts returned to their hiding spots in the dark clouds, they did not want to mess with this troublesome foe.

Of course, a portion of the ancient soul beasts still wanted to attack Dancer Hong Yun, they were not deterred.

This was not a rank eight Gu Immortal’s aura, after all, it was just a rank eight Immortal Gu.

Soul beasts did not have high intelligence, but after killing all the ancient soul beasts that attacked, Dancer Hong Yun felt relieved and increasingly relaxed.

After experiencing her power, the remaining ancient soul beasts left her alone.

These wild soul beasts had survival instincts, after feeling a life-threatening danger, they would choose to back off.

Roar—!

Just as Dancer Hong Yun relaxed her mind slightly, a loud beast roar resounded in her ears like thunder.

A huge lion with grey-white ghost wings on its back pounced at her fiercely.

Seeing this, Dancer Hong Yun’s heart shook as she shouted: “Oh no, this is a green claw ghost winged lion, an immemorial desolate beast!!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1413: Rank Eight Mutation Immortal Gu

Green claw ghost winged lion!

This lion had a huge size, it ate souls as food.

Currently, this type of immemorial desolate beast was very rare. During Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s era, it was very common.

In fact, back then, green claw ghost winged lions were a huge hurdle for Spectral Soul in his youth.

After all, this immemorial desolate beast countered soul path. And even before Spectral Soul became a Demon Venerable, he used soul path as his main method.

However, in the end, Spectral Soul was superior, not only did he kill green claw ghost winged lions, he even excavated and obtained their innate talent.

Thereafter, when Spectral Soul had rank eight cultivation level, he often captured green claw ghost winged lions and finally managed to create the unprecedented soul devouring method!

The green claw ghost winged lion was very famous, when it appeared in front of Dancer Hong Yun, the latter could not help but be shocked.

But at the crucial moment, Thousand Transformations’ will told her: “Don’t worry, this lion’s ghost wings are not outstanding, it is still very weak. This shows that it is not in a good condition, we can fight it.”

Dancer Hong Yun heard this and calmed down instantly.

She took a look, indeed, the ghost wings of the green claw ghost winged lion were very thin, they were rather unfitting with the green claw ghost winged lion’s huge body.

Dancer Hong Yun felt slightly ashamed, thinking: “Husband’s will only has one rank eight Immortal Gu and a great amount of immortal essence, he has no investigative immortal methods, but he could expose the green claw ghost winged lion’s weakness immediately. In contrast, I had the methods but was stunned and petrified, that should not have happened.”

As she calmed down, she rode on the dancing red cloud and flew in an arc to avoid the green claw ghost winged lion.

Soon, she pulled some distance away from it.

“Hehe, this green claw ghost winged lion is really not in good condition, if it was even at thirty percent of its prime, you would not have been able to escape.”

Thousand Transformations’ will laughed, floating out and appearing beside Dancer Hong Yun.

Thousand Transformations’ will directed its immortal essence into the rank eight Immortal Gu.

The Immortal Gu aura suddenly became extremely dense.

A mystical wave suddenly shot out, landing on the green claw ghost winged lion.

At the next moment, the green claw ghost winged lion screeched in pain as its tail turned into a venomous python.

The python had a long body, it coiled around the green claw ghost winged lion’s body and bit on its face with its venomous teeth.

The green claw ghost winged lion quickly waved its black claws towards the python’s body and head.

But the python was very tough, it actually went into a deadlock with the green claw ghost winged lion.

At once, the green claw ghost winged lion flapped its wings as it moved about in the sky, fighting with the python.

Dancer Hong Yun sat on her red cloud as she rose into the sky, staring at the battle vigilantly.

Thousand Transformations’ will was beside her, using that mysterious rank eight Immortal Gu on the green claw ghost winged lion continuously.

With the mystical wave, soon, on the fur of the green claw ghost winged lion, tree buds started growing.

These were the ghost crying tree’s buds.

The roots of the ghost crying trees started to grow in the flesh of the green claw ghost winged lion, absorbing nutrients.

The green claw ghost winged lion screeched in pain, it went berserk as it smashed the buds growing on its face and also destroyed the head of the python.

Even though the python’s body was still coiled around the green claw ghost winged lion, it had thoroughly died with no strength remaining.

The green claw ghost winged lion was in a terrible state, its injuries were severe now.

“This is Thousand Transformations’ signature Immortal Gu, Mutation! It can mutate everything, the green claw ghost winged lion’s fur and tail became trees and python respectively.”

“The green claw ghost winged lion destroyed them, but it was actually damaging itself since they had the same origin.”

Dancer Hong Yun watched the battle as her heart shook, even though she had some understanding towards mutation Immortal Gu, after seeing this battle personally, she was still deeply impacted.

Thousand Transformations’ will said solemnly: “As expected, this green claw ghost winged lion is not normal, it has deep injuries in its body, it only has ancient desolate level battle strength, and its ghost wings are useless. Strange... it should not lack food inside green ghost desert.”

Even though he was suspicious, Thousand Transformations’ will did not stop attacking.

Rank eight Immortal Gu Mutation activated again.

This time, the green claw ghost winged lion’s right eye mutated, it turned into a venomous bee.

The bee did not fly away, it raised its venomous stinger and stabbed into the green claw ghost winged lion’s eye socket, before piercing into its brain.

Howl!

The green claw ghost winged lion screamed desperately, causing huge sound waves to push away the dark clouds above it.

But its torture had not ended.

Soon, under the might of rank eight Immortal Gu Mutation, its claws and teeth grew rapidly, into ancient desolate plants.

The green claw ghost winged lion moved its wings rapidly and rushed down, trying to escape.

But Dancer Hong Yun did not let it go, she brought Thousand Transformations’ will along with her.

Eventually, the green claw ghost winged lion crashed into the desert, creating a huge dust cloud several tens of feet in height.

When the dust settled, the mangled green claw ghost winged lion was motionless on the desert, it was dead.

“Go clean up the battlefield.” Thousand Transformations’ will informed as it went back into Dancer Hong Yun’s body along with the Immortal Gu.

Dancer Hong Yun’s eyes shone, she almost pounced at the green claw ghost winged lion’s corpse.

“I’m rich!”

“This is the corpse of an immemorial desolate beast, rank eight immortal materials are rare even in treasure yellow heaven, it can refine rank eight Immortal Gu.”

Dancer Hong Yun started to process the corpse with difficulty.

Even though she was a rank seven expert, faced with the corpse of an immemorial desolate beast, she could not dissect it easily.

After a lot of effort, Dancer Hong Yun managed to dissect half of it.

“It is a pity that the mutated portions of the green claw ghost winged lion cannot be used, they have no value. Hmm?”

When she tore open the green claw ghost winged lion’s stomach, Dancer Hong Yun unexpectedly found Han Li.

Han Li had already fainted, he was barely alive.

“Why is there a mortal Gu Master here?” Dancer Hong Yun found it strange, she laughed: “Should I call you lucky or unlucky? You met an immemorial desolate beast, but it was the green claw ghost winged lion that devoured souls, because you have a physical body, you survived until now inside its stomach. If this was a normal immemorial desolate beast, you would have turned into meat paste already.”

Dancer Hong Yun stretched her arm out and soul searched Han Li.

It was strange that a mortal Gu Master appeared here out of nowhere. Dancer Hong Yun was curious and wanted to know information about Han Li.

“Hmm? This fellow is called Han Li? Even though he has no background, his luck is really good.”

“This... is Zhen Yuan Zi’s formation path true inheritance?!”

Suddenly, Dancer Hong Yun’s pupils expanded, her eyes shined brightly as her breathing became rough.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1414: True Inheritance Changes Owners

Dancer Hong Yun primarily cultivated cloud path, but because of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, soul searching methods became easy to learn, almost every Gu Immortal knew them.

Right now, as she soul searched Han Li, she learned about his experiences, and also his time inside the Gu formation.

“Interesting!” Dancer Hong Yun grabbed Han Li and went beneath the desert, quickly arriving at the underground cave.

The cave was nearly collapsed, but Dancer Hong Yun found that a small Gu formation was at a corner of the cave.

She arrived in front of it, a path opened to the Gu formation, the formation spirit was inside, saying: “Master!”

The formation spirit was calling for Han Li, of course.

“What a formidable formation spirit! The Gu formation had broken apart earlier, but it managed to assemble it again, this must be the work of the formation spirit.” Dancer Hong Yun was moved.

“This way, Zhen Yuan Zi’s true inheritance is also intact. Haha, this immortal opportunity is mine!” Dancer Hong Yun was extremely happy as she laughed.

Bright light shone across her eyes, carrying Han Li, she said: “Little fellow, I saved your life, in return, you will hand this true inheritance over to me completely.”

Han Li opened his eyes: “Alright.”

“You heard him, formation spirit, your master has given everything to me.” Dancer Hong Yun turned around and said to the formation spirit.

“This...” The formation spirit was hesitant.

“What? You want to defy your master’s orders?” Dancer Hong Yun frowned slightly.

The formation spirit was silent.

Dancer Hong Yun sneered: “Formation spirit, your original owner was Zhen Yuan Zi, he created the true inheritance to pass it down to future individuals, now that Han Li has met the requirements to become your new master, are you going to go against that?”

“Of course not.” The formation spirit said without hesitation.

“Then will you listen to your new master Han Li’s words?” Dancer Hong Yun asked.

“I will.” The formation spirit said without hesitation again.

“In that case, Han Li is giving you to me to repay my act of gratitude, will you resist?” Dancer Hong Yun pressured.

The formation spirit was silent for a while, it felt that something was amiss, but it did not know what.

In the end, it sighed as it said: “No denying it, you are my new master.”

“Hahaha, that is it, submit to me without any resistance.” Saying this, Dancer Hong Yun injected her immortal essence.

The formation spirit did not resist, it was refined easily by the immortal essence.

It was the core of this Gu formation, it could manipulate the formation in place of the Gu Immortal, as long as there was enough immortal essence storage.

The formation spirit submitted to Dancer Hong Yun, the other Gu worms also went along with it, the immortal Gu formation quickly changed owners.

Dancer Hong Yun received several Immortal Gu, a large number of mortal Gu, as well as Zhen Yuan Zi’s complete formation path true inheritance from the formation spirit.

The immortal formation was completely open to Dancer Hong Yun without any concealment now.

Dancer Hong Yun laughed loudly, she did not go in immediately, instead, she waved at Han Li.

Guh.

With a soft sound, Han Li turned into a pile of flesh, he was completely dead, even his soul was decimated.

It turned out that Han Li did not actually wake up, Dancer Hong Yun used her immortal level methods to instill her will and manipulate Han Li, having him agree to hand over the true inheritance to her.

It was very difficult to take Immortal Gu.

But Han Li was a mortal, while Dancer Hong Yun was a Gu Immortal.

The difference between immortal and mortal was too big, Dancer Hong Yun completely suppressed him with her strength, he could not resist at all.

Of course, if a mortal truly owned an Immortal Gu, it would not be easy for the Gu Immortal to take their Immortal Gu.

If they were not careful, the mortal will destroy the Immortal Gu with them, there would be nothing to gain.

Dancer Hong Yun’s situation was very special.

Even though Han Li passed the test and became the true inheritance’s inheritor, because of the green claw ghost winged lion, he did not refine the formation spirit or any of the other Gu worms.

Thus, the Gu worms left by Zhen Yuan Zi were still filled with Zhen Yuan Zi’s will.

This was a loophole that Dancer Hong Yun made use of.

There was another special reason, it was the formation spirit.

Formation spirit Immortal Gu was a unique creation of Zhen Yuan Zi, he replicated land spirits and heavenly spirits, to create a formation spirit for the Gu Immortal, to assist in manipulating it.

Formation spirit Immortal Gu was a one time consumable Gu worm, the Immortal Gu would vanish after using it once, instead, a formation spirit would be born.

In the future, if a Gu Immortal wanted to use formation spirit Immortal Gu again, they would need to refine a new one.

The formation spirit had a certain level of intelligence, it was similar to land spirits and heavenly spirits, it could not lie, it was quite artless.

This gave Dancer Hong Yun the chance to lie and deceive it, attempting to convince it.

If there was no formation spirit and only a bunch of Gu worms, they could not talk to Dancer Hong Yun, she could not convince them.

But all in all, Dancer Hong Yun inherited Zhen Yuan Zi’s formation path true inheritance.

“Zhen Yuan Zi was a Gu Immortal from the super force Che clan, to think that as a righteous path member, he actually left his true inheritance here instead of giving it to his clan.” Thousand Transformations’ will sighed: “It seems that the rumors were true, Zhen Yuan Zi was not on good terms with the clan, he was pushed aside by their Gu Immortals.”

“This was all thanks to you, husband, that we could obtain this fortuitous encounter.” Dancer Hong Yun smiled.

“Mm, after we save Cui Bo, and return to myriad statue desert, you will hand the true inheritance over to my main body. Don’t worry, you will get your benefits.” Thousand Transformations’ will said plainly.

Dancer Hong Yun’s felt some loss, she knew that if the true inheritance was handed over, the essence of it would be taken by Thousand Transformations Ancestor, it was uncertain how much would be left to her.

But she had to give it to him.

Throughout the process, Thousand Transformations’ will was with her, watching everything.

Dancer Hong Yun had good strength, but against a rank eight existence, she had no strength to resist.

“But in the first place, if I was alone, I would not have taken this risk. We could encounter Zhen Yuan Zi’s true inheritance because of husband’s will.”

Thinking of this, Dancer Hong Yun’s mind became more peaceful.

She inspected her gains, there were three Immortal Gu, two were formation path Immortal Gu. Even though it was just a few, they were all rank seven.

And the formation spirit was considered half an Immortal Gu.

If not for the fact that this Gu formation broke apart once, Dancer Hong Yun would have even greater gains.

After changing her location, Dancer Hong Yun internally cursed at Han Li for being trash, a mere mortal who dared to try getting a Gu Immortal true inheritance, he truly deserved death!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1415: Fixed Luck

“Master, you cannot dismantle the Gu formation. Once this Gu formation is destroyed, I will also be destroyed.” At this time, the formation spirit said to Dancer Hong Yun.

Dancer Hong Yun nodded.

This formation spirit was really useful.

When the Gu formation collapsed earlier, without anybody controlling it, it should have just broken apart entirely. But because of the formation spirit, a portion of the Gu formation was salvaged and made into a smaller incomplete formation, it managed to last until now.

Just like how land spirits could fix their blessed lands when they had holes, formation spirits could do the same.

Dancer Hong Yun was not going to give up such a useful formation spirit.

The formation spirit said again: “Thankfully, there is a formation flag Gu in the Gu formation. Master should first use formation flag Gu, keep this Gu formation in formation flag Gu, before placing it into your immortal aperture.”

Back then, since Zhen Yuan Zi created formation spirit Immortal Gu, he naturally understood its limitations, thus, he created formation flag Gu to supplement it.

Earlier, when the Gu formation collapsed, the formation spirit first salvaged formation flag Immortal Gu, thus, Dancer Hong Yun only needed to learn to control it now.

Some days later.

The night sky was filled with bright stars.

The air was cold, there was fog.

In Western Desert, on a very ordinary sand dune, the light on Fang Yuan slowly faded.

Eventually, all of his aura was concealed as the light turned into tiny specks that got drowned in the darkness of the night.

Fang Yuan let out a breath of air and suddenly opened his eyes.

“I wonder what is the final effect of this immortal killer move, fixed luck...”

These last days, while Fang Yuan was escaping, he had been using this immortal killer move from time to time.

He obtained fixed luck from Ma Hong Yun.

Fang Yuan found fixed luck from Ma Hong Yun’s soul, of course, it meant that the killer move, fixed luck, was a part of all living beings luck from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s true inheritance.

Fixed luck was very suitable for Fang Yuan.

Its effect was to make one’s luck unwavering and not easily influenced.

All along, Fang Yuan had been afraid of the weakness of Connect Luck.

After all, back then when he used Connect Luck on Han Li, Hong Yi, and Ye Fan, it was because they had strong luck. But things changed, after obtaining Dog Shit Luck, Fang Yuan’s luck was superior to them.

This meant that Fang Yuan had to split his good luck to Han Li and the others.

This was detrimental to him.

Especially when using burning soul bursting luck, the luck he gained would not fully benefit him, a portion would be split to the rest of them.

In the past, Fang Yuan did not have a choice, but after killing Ma Hong Yun, he had a method now.

Fixed luck was the solution.

The core of this killer move was stubborn Immortal Gu, and rule path Immortal Gu ‘Main’. But after Fang Yuan’s modification, this killer move used precaution Immortal Gu and rule path Immortal Gu ‘Big’ instead.

Fang Yuan had precaution Immortal Gu long ago, while ‘big’ Immortal Gu was obtained from Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was a miniman Gu Immortal. After using ‘big’ Immortal Gu, his body would expand and he would become a human Gu Immortal.

However, Fang Yuan’s luck path attainment was not at grandmaster level, the modification of the move only succeeded partially.

This killer move still had some flaws, when activating it, even if Fang Yuan made no mistakes, there was still a chance of failure.

That was the say, this killer move, fixed luck, was not reliable upon activation.

Fang Yuan knew the weakness, but because of his low attainment level, he could not fix it or modify it properly.

In the past, Fang Yuan had been desiring break luck Immortal Gu, but now, even though he did not have break luck Immortal Gu, he had fixed luck, he could defend his own interests.

Fixed luck’s effect could not be seen physically, he was unsure of the effect.

But according to the content of all living beings luck, Fang Yuan knew: When two people had a close relationship, their luck would be joined together. If two people were on the same side, their luck would unify, they would rise together or go down together. This was what it meant to enjoy fortune and endure misfortune together.

However, through Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s research, he found that even if luck was unified, there were subtle profound differences.

Even though fortune could be shared, and misfortune could be endured together.

Some people would get more fortune and suffer less misfortune.

Why?

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable realized that the person with greater luck between these two would gain more benefits, the one with weaker luck would suffer more hardship, and even bring great benefits to the other person when they gain benefits themselves.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable named this relationship as the main luck and sub luck, creating their respective luck path Immortal Gu. However, Fang Yuan did not have main luck Immortal Gu and sub luck Immortal Gu now.

Even without them, Fang Yuan could fix his own luck and create differences between his own luck and others, becoming the main luck.

After resting for a while, Fang Yuan put fixed luck behind him as he went back to modifying the killer move, self cleansing.

In terms of formation path, Fang Yuan was much more confident, after all, he was a formation path grandmaster.

With his advantage, his progress in this aspect was rapid.

Thus, turning the entire self cleansing killer move into a Gu formation was only a few steps away from finishing.

Success was around the corner, but Fang Yuan’s worry was that he lacked the crucial formation path Immortal Gu.

Lang Ya Sect’s formation plate Immortal Gu could be borrowed, but it was only rank six. Meanwhile, the self cleansing immortal formation was at rank seven.

Using rank six formation plate Gu for a rank seven immortal formation, the chances of failure were high.

There was another point, the formation plate Gu recorded the sub-main teleportation Gu formation of Lang Ya Sect, if Fang Yuan wanted to use it to make the self cleansing formation, he would need to erase the content of the sub-main teleportation Gu formation.

Next, he would need to set up the formation using formation plate Gu, after one success, formation plate Gu would have the ability to set up the self cleansing formation itself.

This was a problem.

Fang Yuan had negotiated with Lang Ya land spirit before.

The sub-main teleportation formation was too important to Lang Ya land spirit and Lang Ya Sect, it affected their development.

Lang Ya Sect had no formation path Gu Immortals, the teleportation formations were created relying on this formation plate Immortal Gu.

If Fang Yuan wanted to erase the information in formation plate Immortal Gu and put in new details, it would mean that Lang Ya Sect would lose the ability to set up the sub-main teleportation Gu formation.

This was unacceptable to Lang Ya land spirit.

They did not have information path methods to extract the information recorded in formation plate Gu.

Simply looking at the process of formation plate Gu setting up the immortal Gu formation could not explain all of its profundities, there were many hidden details like instilling immortal essence, or the cooperation of Gu worms.

Fang Yuan had to reassure Lang Ya land spirit that as a formation path grandmaster, he could recreate the sub-main teleportation formation.

Lang Ya land spirit was hesitating now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1416: Hong Yun’s Pursuit

Fang Yuan was helpless.

He could not force Lang Ya land spirit to do anything.

Right now, he was stuck here, even if he wanted to continue deducing the self cleansing formation, without the crucial Immortal Gu, it would not work.

“And most importantly, I need to borrow Lang Ya Sect’s strength to refine Gu.”

Fang Yuan obtained Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance, he lacked many Immortal Gu, he had a bunch of plans for what Immortal Gu to refine next.

If Lang Ya land spirit thought about it for a long time and still rejected him, what would he do?

Fang Yuan had considered this problem.

He always did things by considering the worst possible outcome first.

“If Lang Ya land spirit refuses to lend formation plate Immortal Gu, I will need to use other people’s immortal apertures.”

Fang Yuan had a lot of dao marks, it was hard to get into the immortal apertures of the other Shadow Sect Gu Immortals.

Unless they placed their immortal aperture to form a blessed land with deep foundation, then it would be possible.

After Fang Yuan entered another immortal aperture, he could use time path methods to expand the tributary of the River of Time and increase the rate of time inside.

That way, one day in the outside world would be half a month inside the immortal aperture.

This would allow him to obtain a huge amount of precious time to work with.

Next, he would set up the self cleansing immortal Gu formation in the blessed land, and Fang Yuan would enter it to cleanse his detrimental dao marks.

This was the plan that Fang Yuan would use if he had no alternatives left.

Because its flaw was equally big.

After placing the immortal aperture, the position would be fixed, by then, it would be dangerous if Feng Jiu Ge pursued them. Did Feng Jiu Ge have any method to break into an immortal aperture?

It was possible.

Even if Feng Jiu Ge did not, he was backed by Spirit Affinity House and Heavenly Court, they would not let him have this limitation.

There was another important point, once the time path method was used, the tributary of the River of Time would change. And this modification could not be adjusted against for a period of time.

For example, if Fang Yuan made the time in Hei Lou Lan’s immortal aperture accelerate, for a few months, he would not be able to change the tributary size again.

Inside Hei Fan’s time path true inheritance, be it days pass like years or months pass like years, they had this problem when trying to modify the tributary of the River of Time to affect the rate of time.

Because these killer moves were one time activation moves with lasting effects. If one tries to influence the tributary of the River of Time consecutively over a short period, time path dao marks would be disrupted, the tributary would be in disastrous turmoil.

Fang Yuan already knew the time of arrival for the Gu Immortals’ calamities and tribulations, after calculating, he realized that if he used this method, one of them would need to undergo their immortal aperture’s tribulation.

This was troublesome.

All along, heaven’s will has been trying to find ways of killing Fang Yuan.

Even though Fang Yuan could choose other people’s immortal apertures, heaven’s will could see everything, and everyone that is linked to Fang Yuan. During the tribulation, heaven’s will would definitely use all its power to kill the Gu Immortal undergoing tribulation.

Fang Yuan and the rest could collaborate to deal with the calamities and tribulations.

But Heavenly Court had pursuers.

Looking at the time and their speed, placing the immortal aperture would not be able to get rid of the investigative killer move at once. That way, Fang Yuan would need to endure an immortal aperture's tribulation and face the assault of Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals together.

It was too risky!

If Fang Yuan used his sovereign immortal aperture for it, it would be even more dangerous.

Fang Yuan had another concern: “Last time, only Feng Jiu Ge came, I wonder how many Heavenly Court Gu Immortals would show up next time!”

Thus, during this period, Fang Yuan had been moving around, not giving these Heavenly Court Gu Immortals a chance to encircle him.

Western Desert was so huge, while Heavenly Court had to enter another region to fight, with Fang Yuan and the others using Omni-directional Travel, it was very difficult to find and kill him.

When time was up, several figures flew towards him in the sky.

They were Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan and the others.

Usually, when Fang Yuan cultivated or made deductions, they would spread out and guard the surroundings for him.

“Fang Yuan, when will that immortal Gu formation be completed? How long must we continue to run around?” At this moment, Bai Ning Bing flew down, frowning as she asked impatiently.

Fang Yuan did not need to look around, he could feel that the rest of the Gu Immortals had looked towards him because of the questions.

“Wait a bit more.” Fang Yuan said plainly.

Bai Ning Bing snorted coldly, her expression was of displeasure.

She was the most impatient person among them, this type of lifestyle was not exciting, she felt extremely bored.

“Aren't you able to create that immortal Gu formation? Set up another one and kill all of the Heavenly Court pursuers again.” Bai Ning Bing suggested.

Fang Yuan shook his head: “Do you think the immortal Gu formation is easy to set up? We need a tributary of the River of Time.”

The immortal Gu formation used to harm Feng Jiu Ge earlier came from Hei Fan's true inheritance.

Hei Fan created this formation to defend against immemorial year beasts.

Because the use of years flow like water Immortal Gu would attract immemorial year beasts that would enter the Gu Immortal's immortal aperture through the tributary of the River of Time, Hei Fan used this immortal Gu formation on the tributary, so that when an immemorial year beast entered and the Gu Immortal could not deal with it, they could detonate the formation and destroy the tributary of the River of Time, forcing that immemorial year beast back into the river.

Of course, this method was a trump card that could only be used when there were no other options.

With the destruction of the tributary of the River of Time, the immortal aperture’s time would freeze, it would be extremely difficult to draw in another tributary, they would need one from the outside world.

“I have the same feelings as you, I do not like being hunted down.”

“But I would rather accumulate the hatred in my heart, to wait for a proper time to counterattack and deal a fatal blow to those people.”

“Isn’t that what you want, the excitement of the future?”

“Hmph.” Bai Ning Bing stopped speaking.

“Alright, let’s move. This place is not safe anymore.” Fang Yuan had just said that when the expressions of Bai Ning Bing and the others changed.

In the sky, a red cloud descended, Dancer Hong Yun was on it.

Her face was pink and rosy, her gaze was on Fang Yuan and gang who were near the sand dune.

“Concubine Cui, who are these people? Why are you with them?” Dancer Hong Yun asked in a reprimanding tone.

Concubine Cui was naturally Fairy Cui Bo.

“Hong Yun?” Ying Wu Xie was surprised, before showing an appropriate joyful expression, asking: “Why are you here?”

The red cloud descended slowly, as Dancer Hong Yun observed this ‘Fairy Cui Bo’.

Ying Wu Xie was currently using the body of Fairy Cui Bo, which he had possessed with his soul. There were naturally flaws now, after all, his soul was not completely compatible with the body.

If it were an ordinary Gu Immortal possession, Dancer Hong Yun would be able to see the flaws, but this was Ying Wu Xie she was looking at.

Who was Ying Wu Xie?

He was a split soul of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, his soul foundation was many times that of Fang Yuan.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was the creator of soul path, he had countless split souls with many identities, they lurked in the five regions and created a force, without showing any flaws. Ying Wu Xie naturally had ways to conceal his possession method.

As expected, after Dancer Hong Yun used her investigative methods, she did not find anything amiss with ‘Fairy Cui Bo’.

Her expression became warmer: “You were in huge trouble, your life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu were affected, thus, I came to help you. But it seems that you are in good shape, husband and I were worried for nothing.”

Next, Dancer Hong Yun asked again: “Who are they? Hmm, they seem familiar.”

Dancer Hong Yun’s gaze turned to Fang Yuan.

Suddenly, her expression changed, she was shocked: “Liu Guan Yi?”

Dancer Hong Yun was backed by Thousand Transformations Ancestor, her intel was far wider than normal Gu Immortals. After the battle of Reverse Flow River, Liu Guan Yi’s appearance was known to the world, as time passed, more and more Gu Immortals knew about him.

And Liu Guan Yi’s appearance was the original appearance of Fang Yuan in his sovereign immortal body.

This time, Dancer Hong Yun came very abruptly, Fang Yuan did not manage to change his appearance.

“That is me, how should I address you?” After being exposed, Fang Yuan asked coldly and calmly.

Dancer Hong Yun did not answer yet, she first rode the red cloud and moved back by a distance.

Facing Liu Guan Yi, she had a heavy expression, feeling great pressure in her heart.

This was someone who could fight with rank eight existences!

Some time ago, his name became renowned in the world, gaining the same status as Feng Jiu Ge.

“Thankfully, I have husband’s will and his rank eight Immortal Gu, otherwise...” Dancer Hong Yun felt relieved while her eyes darted around as she said: “Concubine Cui, despite husband’s and my concern, you mixed with Gu Immortals from other regions and worse, you did not even send us a letter.”

Dancer Hong Yun had her own objective, she was saying this to sow discord between Thousand Transformations Ancestor and Fairy Cui Bo.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor doted on Fairy Cui Bo normally, Dancer Hong Yun was very jealous, she would not give up this chance to attack Fairy Cui Bo.

Her words were addressed to Ying Wu Xie, but it was meant for Thousand Transformations’ will.

Fang Yuan’s gaze became solemn, while Bai Ning Bing and Hei Lou Lan subtly looked at each other.

Dancer Hong Yun’s words were simply disregarding Liu Guan Yi, she had this level of confidence, she was definitely relying on more than just her battle strength.

Fang Yuan, Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan understood this, but Ying Wu Xie, Fairy Miao Yin, and Lady White Rabbit did not realize this.

“Alright, tell us your encounter, Concubine Cui, I am very curious.” At this time, Thousand Transformations’ will emerged from Dancer Hong Yun’s body.

“There was a trump card indeed.” Ying Wu Xie thought.

“This is the crucial moment, let’s see how Ying Wu Xie gets through this!” Bright light shined in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest were slightly worried.

Ying Wu Xie had grown quickly, but he was still young, his acting was inferior to Fang Yuan, it would be quite hard for Thousand Transformations’ will to not sense a flaw in his acting!

Could he do it?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1417: Cooperating with Thousand Transformations

“This was basically what happened...” As mild wind blew across the sand dune, ‘Fairy Cui Bo’ explained her side of the story.

According to her, she was trying to find Western Desert Zombie Alliance’s inheritance, but she met with Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals seemed to be familiar with her, knowing that she was Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s concubine.

Even though Fairy Cui Bo used his name as deterrence, their animosity grew deeper.

In the process of fighting, Fairy Cui Bo was hit by the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals’ killer moves, most of her Gu worms were destroyed.

Fortunately, she met with Liu Guan Yi and the others.

It turned out that Heavenly Court was chasing after Liu Guan Yi.

The enemy of an enemy is a friend, Liu Guan Yi thus saved Fairy Cui Bo and fought to escape from Heavenly Court’s pursuit.

But because they were hit by Heavenly Court’s investigative killer move, during this period, they had been escaping. They could not split up as the enemy would just attack them separately.

All in all, Ying Wu Xie described it with great detail, and some of his words almost could make others feel they personally experienced the situation.

The truth was, ever since Fang Yuan and the rest captured Fairy Cui Bo, they had excavated most of the information about Thousand Transformations Ancestor from her soul, Fang Yuan and the others came up with many plans to deal with all the possible situations.

Ying Wu Xie’s description was a mix of truths and lies, Fang Yuan and the others turned from enemies to benefactors, while Feng Jiu Ge also appeared, his description was very realistic and did not have much tampering in it.

The story was flawless, because Fang Yuan and the others had thought about it intensely.

The only problem was, Fairy Cui Bo had lost all of her Immortal Gu and a large portion of her mortal Gu in battle.

This was too coincidental.

But there was no choice.

If Thousand Transformations’ will wanted Ying Wu Xie to show his Immortal Gu, that would be a disaster.

After all, the Gu worms that Fairy Cui Bo had were filled with her will, Ying Wu Xie could not use them.

The truth was, when Fairy Cui Bo got captured by Bai Ning Bing, she had already detonated all of her Gu worms.

Leaving no resources to the enemy!

Thus, Fang Yuan and the rest had to say this to make up for the huge flaw.

Dancer Hong Yun had a shocked expression on her face.

She looked at ‘Fairy Cui Bo’, not expecting her to have met with such incredible danger.

And the truth was, Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan and the others were very surprised.

Because Ying Wu Xie’s acting was excellent, he showed no flaws, it was natural and believable.

“When did Ying Wu Xie acquire such a skill?” Hei Lou Lan was slightly surprised.

Only Fang Yuan was not surprised at Ying Wu Xie’s performance.

Because he had already lent attitude Gu to Ying Wu Xie. With this rank eight Immortal Gu, Ying Wu Xie’s acting was naturally flawless.

Especially when he was up against a rank seven Gu Immortal and the will of a rank eight.

If Thousand Transformations Ancestor was here personally, it might be a problem, but Ying Wu Xie could completely handle these two right now.

Success!

Be it Dancer Hong Yun or Thousand Transformations’ will, they did not doubt Ying Wu Xie’s words.

Fang Yuan saw this and said: “Lord Thousand Transformations and Fairy Hong Yun, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals came after us, but Fairy Cui Bo was saved by us, that is the truth, right?”

He spoke plainly with no expression, he showed the arrogance of an expert, even against a rank eight existence, he displayed no fear.

Fang Yuan did not have attitude Gu, but his acting was profound and skillful, he could easily do it.

He was the cause of Fairy Cui Bo’s death, but he ended up acting like her benefactor.

This was shameless, but Fang Yuan acted like it was the truth.

Thousand Transformations’ will went silent.

Even though Fang Yuan had rank seven cultivation level, the fame of Liu Guan Yi allowed him to speak on equal terms with Thousand Transformations’ will.

If Thousand Transformations Ancestor was here personally, Fang Yuan might not have such a status.

But Thousand Transformations' will and Thousand Transformations Ancestor were two different things.

After thinking about it, Thousand Transformations' will broke the silence: "How do you want to be rewarded?"

Fang Yuan's lips curled up, he smiled.

His smile was bright like the sun, he was truly handsome, even Dancer Hong Yun was dazed as she looked at him.

"I do not need a reward, but I have a suggestion." Fang Yuan said.

"What is it?"

"Alliance." Fang Yuan said.

"Alliance?" Thousand Transformations' will went silent again.

Fang Yuan urged: "Thousand Transformations Ancestor, you obtained Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's true inheritance, you are an eyesore to Heavenly Court. Their attitude towards you is clear from their attack on Fairy Cui Bo."

"Because of Reverse Flow River, I was chased by Heavenly Court until I got here. We have a common enemy, that is Heavenly Court."

"Helping each other is helping ourselves, isn't that true?"

"I have a good time path method in my possession, I can slow down the rate of time in Lord Thousand Transformations' immortal aperture, to delay your tribulations."

"Furthermore, I have a luck path true inheritance. Ma Hong Yun died in my hands, I have his portion of all living beings luck. This is Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's true inheritance."

"Husband?" Dancer Hong Yun was greatly moved by Fang Yuan's glib tongue.

"Lord husband, I think that we can make an alliance." Ying Wu Xie said, trying to convince Thousand Transformations' will as well.

Eventually, Thousand Transformations' will spoke, but this was what he said.

"We can have an alliance."

"But our cooperation must be gradual."

"Liu Guan Yi, you want to make use of me to deal with the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, why would I not know your plan?"

"We can cooperate mildly first, before we deepen it slowly. If our cooperation goes well, I can go and block the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals for you. If our cooperation is less than satisfactory, I will need to see your sincerity before we continue working together."

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was a rank eight Gu Immortal, he was not easy to deceive.

He was an old schemer, not only did he expose Fang Yuan's plan, he even used the pressure of Heavenly Court to force Fang Yuan to relinquish some benefits.

“Sincerity?” Fang Yuan smiled: “Sincerity goes both ways, we saved Fairy Cui Bo, that is our biggest sincerity. What is yours?”

Fang Yuan avoided the topic of Heavenly Court, and retaliated against Thousand Transformations’ will.

Thousand Transformations’ will thought for a while, “We can cooperate first, like making transactions, what do you need, I will try to satisfy you.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1418: Trap Succeeds!

“Transactions?” Fang Yuan raised his eyebrows.

He instantly understood the intention of Thousand Transformations’ will.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor obtained Reckless Savage’s true inheritance, after so many years of development, he definitely had the foundation to transact with Fang Yuan, even though he had great losses in his recent tribulation.

But because of the tribulation, Thousand Transformations Ancestor did not want to fight. If he agreed to ally with Fang Yuan, he would need to face Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was not stupid, how could he become the shield of Fang Yuan and the others now?

But...

Fang Yuan’s suggestion was extremely tempting.

Be it the time slowing methods in Hei Fan’s true inheritance, or his luck path true inheritance, they were rare ways to alleviate his problem of impending tribulations.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor had just suffered a terrible loss from his tribulation, he had a huge need for such methods.

Thinking about it, Thousand Transformations’ will felt that working with Liu Guan Yi was beneficial. But this benefit would become a huge problem in the future when Liu Guan Yi faces Heavenly Court, and Thousand Transformations Ancestor did not want to be a part of that problem.

He was heavily injured now, if he engages in fierce fight, he would expose his currently weakened state.

Thus, Thousand Transformations Ancestor wanted to transact with Fang Yuan, it was another form of cooperation.

This way, he would fund Fang Yuan and the others, not only will he repay the favor of saving Fairy Cui Bo, he would even improve his relationship with Fang Yuan.

There were clear benefits in this.

Firstly, his concubine was saved by him, he had to reward him for it. Otherwise, who would help to save Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s friends or family in the future?

Secondly, after improving his relationship with Fang Yuan, in the future, if he needs help, he can use this incident as a reason.

Rank eight Gu Immortals were all old schemers, even if this was just Thousand Transformations’ will, he had great wisdom and calculated his own gains and losses clearly.

Fang Yuan was silent for a while before nodding: “Okay, I need formation path Immortal Gu now, do you have any?”

Actually, Fang Yuan bore little hope in this.

But Dancer Hong Yun was stunned.

Thousand Transformations’ will smiled: “This is very coincidental, I do not cultivate formation path so I did not have any. But on the way here, we obtained a Gu Immortal true inheritance, it was left by a formation path expert.”

“Oh?”

“Hong Yun, take out your gains and let Liu Guan Yi choose.” Thousand Transformations’ will informed.

He was clear about Zhen Yuan Zi’s formation path true inheritance. The formation path Immortal Gu was useless to the main body, it was perfect for this purpose.

Dancer Hong Yun would not defy Thousand Transformations’ will.

Even though she was upset, she did not hesitate, she took out that incomplete immortal formation from her immortal aperture and placed it on the sand dune.

Fang Yuan and the others were shocked.

This immortal formation could actually be moved.

This was very rare.

Because this was the framework of an Immortal Gu House!

Immortal Gu Houses were the essence of formation path, they were immortal killer moves and also mobile immortal Gu formations.

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, seeing this, he felt like something good was about to happen.

Indeed, from Dancer Hong Yun’s description, Fang Yuan learned that this incomplete immortal formation actually contained formation flag Immortal Gu!

Rank seven Immortal Gu Formation Flag, this was one of the Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan needed!

“Amazing!”

“With this Gu, I will not need to negotiate with Lang Ya land spirit, or borrow formation plate Immortal Gu.”

“It will be very convenient to set up the self cleansing immortal Gu formation, in time, all of the investigative killer move dao marks will be cleansed.”

At this moment, Fang Yuan saw hope in the future.

But he was still very calm on the surface, he only exposed a bit of joy.

He looked at Thousand Transformations’ will as he said: “This incomplete immortal Gu formation is not bad. To speak the truth, I need such a Gu formation to defend against the pursuit of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, and gain a safe location to rest. I am willing to pay a huge amount of immortal materials in exchange for this incomplete immortal formation.”

“What?” Dancer Hong Yun’s expression changed: “Liu Guan Yi is so greedy, he wants the entire immortal Gu formation?”

Next, Fang Yuan thought about it and gave a list of immortal materials to Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

“Lord Thousand Transformations, there are only a few immortal materials in my list, but that cannot be helped, this is all I can give, and I really need this immortal formation!”

“If this transaction goes through, I will remember this forever. In the future, if you have any needs, I will do my best to help.”

Fang Yuan spoke earnestly.

Dancer Hong Yun also took a look at this list, she was so furious, on the edge of exploding, she looked towards Fang Yuan with deep animosity.

She was very unhappy: “This Liu Guan Yi is too shameless! He actually said such things.”

But Thousand Transformations’ will agreed after some consideration: “Alright, I will accept the immortal materials, you can have the incomplete Gu formation. We have no debt to each other, your saved Fairy Cui Bo, and I did this transaction with you, this is our connection.”

After some pause, Thousand Transformations’ will continued: “Liu Guan Yi, even though you are a junior, I have heard of your name long ago. You will definitely be extraordinary, there is no harm in befriending you. This is my information path Gu worm, if you want to make any deals in the future, contact me directly. Goodbye.”

“Lord Thousand Transformations is truly magnanimous, I am in awe! This is my information path Gu worm, I hope you will keep it.” Fang Yuan changed his tone, not only was his expression sincere looking, he even gave his information path Gu worm.

“Concubine Cui, let’s go.” Thousand Transformations’ will said.

Ying Wu Xie looked at Fang Yuan deeply as he smiled at the rest: “Thank you for the concern these last few days.”

“See you again.”

They departed.

Fairy Cui Bo sat on the dancing red cloud and soon flew into the sky.

When Dancer Hong Yun and the rest left Fang Yuan’s vision, he retracted his gaze with deep battle intent in his eyes.

“Ying Wu Xie has already sent back the information, they are returning through the same path, their destination is myriad statue desert. Come, let’s execute our plan.” Fang Yuan said.

Lady White Rabbit went into Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture as Hei Lou Lan, Fang Yuan, Bai Ning Bing, and Fairy Miao Yin remained behind.

Ancient battle formation — Omni-directional Travel!

With a sharp light, at the next moment, Fang Yuan and the rest appeared in green ghost desert.

Fang Yuan started to set up his formation while Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit helped him out.

Hei Lou Lan was patrolling the area, preventing wild soul beasts from causing trouble.

Bai Ning Bing flew into the sky, in the blink of an eye, she went out of Fang Yuan’s vision, she was going after Dancer Hong Yun.

Dancer Hong Yun returned on the same route, but Fang Yuan and the others had used Omni-directional Travel, they were already ahead of her.

An immortal formation from Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance was rapidly set up.

Fang Yuan moved proficiently while Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit cooperated with him with great chemistry.

This immortal formation had been used multiple times already.

Ying Wu Xie could not be discarded.

Not only because of his strong battle strength due to the killer move, lead soul into dream, but also because of Sixth Hair.

If Ying Wu Xie died, Sixth Hair would not work with Fang Yuan this closely. He might even think that Fang Yuan tried to get Ying Wu Xie killed, and would disregard his own safety to try and get Fang Yuan killed at all costs.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan needed Sixth Hair to refine Gu for him.

And there was another thing, the mental state of his allies.

If Fang Yuan gave up on Ying Wu Xie now, he would also give up on Lady White Rabbit and Fairy Miao Yin in the future. Even if they showed no response to it externally, they would definitely be full of doubts and suspicion in their hearts.

Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit were not like Hei Lou Lan. Fang Yuan did not have strong control over them.

Using Omni-directional Travel to ambush Thousand Transformations’ will and Dancer Hong Yun, luring them into the immortal formation to kill them, that was the plan.

Of course, this plan was based around Ying Wu Xie getting the trust of Thousand Transformations Ancestor first.

Other than this plan, Fang Yuan had many other plans to deal with other situations.

The more prepared he was, the greater the chances of winning.

Be it Fang Yuan, Hei Lou Lan, or Ying Wu Xie, they were not going to fight unprepared.

However, when Fang Yuan finished sixty percent of this immortal formation, Bai Ning Bing transmitted: “No need to set up, Ying Wu Xie has already succeeded!”

Fang Yuan and the rest stopped setting up the formation as they got to Bai Ning Bing’s side.

Over there, in the sky, there was a huge dream realm floating in the air.

“Hahaha, Ying Wu Xie did very well this time!” Bai Ning Bing laughed: “He took down Thousand Transformations’ will and that rank seven Gu Immortal, Dancer Hong Yun, without fighting, incredible, exciting!”

Fang Yuan also smiled lightly.

This was a scheme.

They had planned it long ago.

Be it Thousand Transformations Ancestor or anyone else, as long as they gained their trust, this plan would work.

The method used was not lead soul into dream.

This killer move could not conceal its aura, once activated, it would be found out immediately.

Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were the best tools for a sneak attack.

Back then, Fang Yuan used the immortal bodies to force the Immortal Gu House of Southern Border’s Yi clan to escape.

One skill to dominate the world!

Even rank nine Immortal Gu House Heaven Overseeing Tower did not dare to enter the dream realms.

When everyone’s research of dream path was still at the initial stage, using dream path methods against enemies was unstoppable.

Because being at the forefront of this era had huge advantages.

Even Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s main body would have no answer to it, not to mention his mere will.

Going back to two hours ago.

On the dancing red cloud, ‘Fairy Cui Bo’ suddenly started laughing.

“It seems that Concubine Cui got some benefits, otherwise, you would not laugh like this.” Thousand Transformations’ will said.

“Husband understands me best. Even though I lost my Immortal Gu, my gains were huge. Husband, Hong Yun, look at this.” Ying Wu Xie took out a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body.

“This is... dream path?” Thousand Transformations’ will was shocked: “Concubine Cui, where did you get this?”

“Heavenly Court is mainly pursuing Liu Guan Yi for this immortal body, it seems. I obtained this by chance, Liu Guan Yi and the others have no idea.” Ying Wu Xie said coquettishly: “Lord husband, I made such a huge contribution, how will you reward me?”

Dancer Hong Yun scolded: “Shameless slut!”

Thousand Transformations’ will laughed loudly: “I really need to reward you well.”

Boom!

The Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body exploded at once.

All of them were engulfed by the newly created dream realm, none flew out or escaped.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1419: Pure Dream Reality Seeker Achieves Success

“Alright, save Ying Wu Xie first, Hei Lou Lan, it will depend on you.” Fang Yuan instructed as he opened his immortal aperture’s entrance.

Hei Lou Lan nodded, her soul came out of her body and entered Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture. Meanwhile, her body floated in the air, unmoving.

Soon, a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body flew out.

It was Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan flew into the dream realm and quickly pulled Ying Wu Xie out after a while.

Ying Wu Xie was still dreaming, he had not woken up yet.

This Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body self-detonated, Ying Wu Xie was at the very center, he suffered the greatest impact from the explosion. Thus, even though his body escaped the dream realm, his soul was still trapped inside the dream. It was like he had been hit by lead soul into dream, or during the time of Hei Lou Lan’s dream path tribulation.

At this moment, Fang Yuan’s unravel dream killer move was very useful.

He could not use it earlier because Thousand Transformations’ will and Dancer Hong Yun were trapped here.

If he used unravel dream, these two would escape.

Without the dream realm, they would wake up rapidly.

If he wanted to unravel a portion of the dream realm, Fang Yuan could not control it so meticulously yet.

All in all, there were huge risks in this.

Fang Yuan had the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, he naturally chose to use this superior method.

The Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique was created by Old Man Yan Shi, it contained dream path dao marks, Old Man Yan Shi wanted to create the eleventh extreme physique, he succeeded to an extent, but not fully, because the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique had a huge flaw, it was limited by time, once time was up, it would detonate into a dream realm.

However, the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique had its unique advantages.

The greatest advantage was that the body could enter and exit dream realms at ease, the soul was protected and would not be lost inside dream realms!

Back then, during the battle of the dream realm, Hei Lou Lan, Bai Ning Bing, and the rest had escaped into the immortal apertures of the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, before entering dream realms to escape from danger.

After the crisis was over, they came out safely.

Fang Yuan saw this clearly back then, it left a deep impression in him.

Now, Fang Yuan was reenacting the same scene.

After using unravel dream, Ying Wu Xie woke up but his soul suffered some injuries.

Fang Yuan used guts Gu to heal all of his soul’s injuries, he went back to perfect condition.

Now was the important part.

If he did it well, not only would Fang Yuan capture Dancer Hong Yun, he would even obtain that rank eight Immortal Gu!

Dancer Hong Yun, Thousand Transformations’ will, rank eight Immortal Gu, out of these three, the easiest one to deal with was Dancer Hong Yun.

She was only a rank seven Gu Immortal, even if she was dragged out now, she would be like Ying Wu Xie earlier, deep inside her dream.

At this time, Ying Wu Xie just needs to use lead soul into dream to seal the deal.

Dancer Hong Yun was fish on the chopping block, she was not a concern.

The things to consider were Thousand Transformations’ will and that rank eight Immortal Gu.

Wills were expended in the dream realm. But different from the soul, the reason why wills got weaker was because they had to think in the dream realm.

Any will would shrink as they thought about things.

The more things they thought about, the faster the will is depleted.

But the moment the will leaves the dream realm, they would recover, unlike souls.

Thus, if Thousand Transformations’ will was not fully depleted, if Hei Lou Lan got it out, it would use the rank eight Immortal Gu on Fang Yuan and the others!

By then, Fang Yuan and the others would face the attack of a rank eight Immortal Gu.

And more terrifyingly, Fang Yuan and the others did not know what this rank eight Immortal Gu could do, he could not defend against it. There was nothing to prepare against it.

Thus, they had to wait until Thousand Transformations’ will was depleted before dragging Dancer Hong Yun out, that would be the best situation.

However, the use of immortal killer moves of other paths would not affect the dream realm at all. Even if Hei Lou Lan found Dancer Hong Yun, who was trapped in the dream realm, she could not check if Thousand Transformations’ will was fully depleted yet.

On the other hand, lead soul into dream had no effect on Thousand Transformations’ will.

Thousand Transformations’ will was just a will, lead soul into dream had to be used on targets with a soul.

Thus, the crux of this plan was time.

If he waited three to five years, this will of Thousand Transformations would definitely be depleted.

But by then, Thousand Transformations Ancestor would have arrived!

Thus, for Fang Yuan and the others, not to mention years, they could be in grave danger if they stayed for three days.

Because Fang Yuan and the rest were constantly being pursued, heaven’s will was planning to encircle and trap them, the longer they stayed here, the greater the danger!

Thus, Fang Yuan’s plan was to wait for a day, that was the limit.

A day later, Hei Lou Lan would bring Dancer Hong Yun out of the dream realm and he would use his investigative methods to see if Thousand Transformations’ will was still around.

There were risks of course.

Thus, Fang Yuan and the rest were hiding far away, only Hei Lou Lan was around.

If they succeeded, Fang Yuan would gain a new rank eight Immortal Gu!

The risks were taken up by others, while the benefits were his own. This was what Fang Yuan was doing.

“My only concern is that Heavenly Court or Thousand Transformations might come here during this period.” Fang Yuan thought to himself as Fairy Miao Yin’s expression changed.

“Feng Jiu Ge is here, he is rapidly moving towards us!!” Fairy Miao Yin alerted.

“He actually escaped from the River of Time?” Lady White Rabbit called out in dismay.

“At this particular timing...” Hei Lou Lan gritted her teeth.

Bai Ning Bing had a cold gaze: “If we had known this, we would have set up that immortal Gu formation earlier, Feng Jiu Ge would get to taste its power.”

“Forget it.” Fang Yuan was decisive: “Feng Jiu Ge is backed by Heavenly Court, it is not strange that he escaped from the River of Time. We will leave now, this can stay here, after all, even if Heavenly Court’s Duke Long comes here, they cannot do anything to the dream realm!”

Ancient battle formation — Omni-directional Travel!

The immortals immediately teleported away with Fang Yuan at the lead.

“So resolute.” Feng Jiu Ge arrived to see nobody, he smiled as he praised.

Next, his gaze landed on the dream realm: “This is a dream realm?”

Without need for him to report, the current situation was seen by Heavenly Court’s Fairy Zi Wei.

“Why is there a dream realm here?”

“What is the reason? I am afraid that this is not simple, we need to investigate it.”

As she thought about it, Fairy Zi Wei transmitted to Feng Jiu Ge, telling him about the location of Fang Yuan and the rest.

Feng Jiu Ge immediately chased after them with rapid speed.

Fang Yuan and the rest quickly felt the pressure.

When they used Omni-directional Travel, they realized that Feng Jiu Ge would chase them quickly.

“Feng Jiu Ge is getting faster, what immortal killer move is he using?”

“With Heavenly Court’s help, what is impossible?”

“The important thing now is, other than Feng Jiu Ge, who else is coming?”

Both sides chased and ran for half a day, while they were in a desert, Fang Yuan and the others frowned deeply.

Omni-directional Travel could not be used endlessly, it expended the Gu Immortals’ own dao marks.

If this continued, without fighting Feng Jiu Ge, their battle strength would fall drastically.

But fighting Feng Jiu Ge was too risky.

Not just his battle strength, but also the fact that there might be others. If there was a rank eight Gu Immortal, Fang Yuan and the rest would have a low chance of winning.

“Feng Jiu Ge is only rank seven, Heavenly Court’s rank eights cannot enter his immortal aperture. As for Heavenly Court’s rank eight phantom apertures, they cannot contain living things. Furthermore, we have teleported to so many places, after such a distance, even if someone was behind Feng Jiu Ge, they would be left in the dust already.” Bai Ning Bing said.

She wanted to fight.

Fang Yuan nodded: “I think so too, let’s wait for him here. If we do not beat him, he will catch up eventually.”

Bai Ning Bing was stunned, she started to look around vigilantly.

She understood Fang Yuan, since he wanted to fight Feng Jiu Ge, and since there was not enough time to set up an immortal Gu formation, the location he chose to fight in would be a special one.

However, before Bai Ning Bing noticed anything, the music of an ancient zither was heard.

Next, following some light ripples, a golden door appeared.

From within the door, Feng Jiu Ge walked out, facing Fang Yuan and the others again.

“Everyone, we meet again.” Feng Jiu Ge smiled as he greeted.

Bai Ning Bing was expressionless, while Hei Lou Lan, Miao Yin, and White Rabbit were solemn.

A person’s reputation provides shelter like the shadow of a tree.

The mental pressure that Feng Jiu Ge imposed on them was huge!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1420: Shadow Sect Fights Feng Jiu Ge

Feng Jiu Ge wore a red and white robe, he was extremely handsome, while looking at Shadow Sect’s immortals, he smiled warmly with great flair and elegance.

He showed no battle intent or killing intent, but Shadow Sect felt great pressure from him.

“Feng Jiu Ge...” Fang Yuan walked out and muttered.

He was graceful and elegant, his robe was white as snow, his face was pure as jade, his eyes were dark and unfathomably deep.

Seeing this, Lady White Rabbit’s heart jumped, she thought: “The two strongest people under rank eight in the current world are finally going to fight!”

Speaking of which, even though Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge had not interacted for a long time, the interactions between them were quite deep and long lasting.

Years ago, Fang Yuan snatched Hu Immortal blessed land and took away Feng Jin Huang’s fortuitous encounter, he became noticed by Feng Jiu Ge as a result.

But at that time, Feng Jiu Ge was a great rank seven Gu Immortal, an established expert who had high fame. But Fang Yuan was just a mortal, he was like an ant, even if he was quite impressive, that was nothing much.

Who could have thought that after a few years, not only did Fang Yuan become a Gu Immortal, he was even the owner of Spring Autumn Cicada and destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he joined the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Reverse Flow River, and the Southern Border dream realm. Right now, he was extremely famous and was pursued by Heavenly Court, his reputation was on par with Feng Jiu Ge!

Fang Yuan saved Feng Jiu Ge, and Feng Jiu Ge saved him in return, their debts to each other had all been settled already.

Right now, these two were fighting for their respective factions using their true strength.

“Feng Jiu Ge, you chased us all the way to this place, did you know that you are handing your life over to me?” Fang Yuan snickered, he shot out like lightning, pouncing at Feng Jiu Ge.

Saying so, a robe and sash appeared around his body, his black hair swayed in the air as his eyes shone like lightning, he rapidly engaged in this climactic battle.

Immortal killer move — Reverse Flow Protection Seal!

Feng Jiu Ge’s gaze was fixed on him.

He had already seen the power of this world famous killer move before.

He could guess that reverse flow protection seal was very complex and hard to activate, it needed a lot of time to set up. If he sneak attacked, Fang Yuan would not have time to use this move, the battle would be in his favor.

But unfortunately, Fang Yuan did not give Feng Jiu Ge this opportunity.

And because Shadow Sect had superb investigative killer moves, Feng Jiu Ge could not find a chance to attack.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s assault, Feng Jiu Ge broke into a wide smile.

He spoke openly: “I could teleport here because of my self-created immortal killer move, yang pass tune. And more importantly, my yang pass tune has not ended yet.”

As he said that, he burst out in golden light.

The golden light had no offensive power, but the light flickered and vanished rapidly, along with Feng Jiu Ge himself.

“What?” At almost the same time, Fang Yuan could hear the tune of an ancient zither getting louder.

The sound became loud and soft at times, it was as if the person playing it was moving around him.

Fang Yuan’s heart shook, he suddenly remembered that this was Feng Jiu Ge’s movement method that had displayed great power during the five regions chaotic war.

It allowed Feng Jiu Ge to turn into formless sound waves and move around before turning back into human again. Sound path was not a mainstream path, and because this move was extremely unique to itself, normal methods could not restrict Feng Jiu Ge’s movement.

“Be careful!!” Hei Lou Lan alerted.

They had also heard the tune of the ancient zither, they all retreated subconsciously.

But their speed was slower than yang pass tune, they did not know Feng Jiu Ge’s exact location, they could only retreat towards a random direction.

Lady White Rabbit suddenly heard an explosion of zither music as Feng Jiu Ge formed towards the right of her instantly.

Clang!

Feng Jiu Ge had a curious gaze as he pointed at Lady White Rabbit, as sounds of clashing weapons could be heard.

Lady White Rabbit screamed in a shrill voice, at this instant, she felt an intense threat of death.

She rapidly retreated.

But the sharp sound waves stabbed into her chest.

At the next moment, blood spewed as black fog appeared from Lady White Rabbit’s body.

Within the black fog, Black Tigress appeared, she flew into the sky while atop a lizard.

Rank six Lady White Rabbit was not Feng Jiu Ge’s match. At the crucial moment, her other self, Black Tigress, appeared to save their life.

Even so, Black Tigress was heavily injured, she quickly escaped and tried to heal herself.

Feng Jiu Ge did not pursue her.

He knew that his sneak attack had not succeeded, he had lost his initiative, now that everyone was alert, it would not be as effective anymore.

And most importantly...

Feng Jiu Ge frowned as he looked at the desert below: “This is?”

“Anti-sound desert, the place where you die!” Saying so, Fang Yuan pounced at him again.

“So that’s it.” Feng Jiu Ge realized, at the next moment, he turned into sound waves as yang pass tune allowed him to dodge again.

However, Feng Jiu Ge, who reappeared elsewhere had an ugly expression.

His smile had faded mostly, there was seriousness in his gaze.

Western Desert’s anti-sound desert had the same fame as Southern Border’s silent hill. They were famous in the world, and were extremely unfavorable for sound path Gu Immortals.

Because at these two places, sound path dao marks were extremely suppressed, all sound path killer moves were greatly weakened.

Earlier, Feng Jiu Ge wanted to teleport behind Lady White Rabbit to kill her.

But in the end, he was exposed when he got a hundred steps near her.

This allowed Lady White Rabbit to escape from her fatal danger.

“Anti-sound desert, in the past, this special area was stolen by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable. To think that it ended up here. How did Fang Yuan know? Heh, I almost forgot that he is the new leader of Shadow Sect, it is natural that he knows some secrets.” Feng Jiu Ge guessed.

He had guessed wrongly, Shadow Sect did not know about this place.

Fang Yuan knew because in the five hundred years of his previous life, during the five regions chaotic war, this place was exposed and made use of.

“Hmm?” Feng Jiu Ge’s expression suddenly changed as he looked at his arms.

He did not know when it started, but there was a thick layer of frost on his arms and back.

“That dragon lady Bai Ning Bing?” Feng Jiu Ge looked at Bai Ning Bing with an admiring gaze.

Immortal killer move — Cold Eyes!

This was Bai Ning Bing’s method.

Even though Feng Jiu Ge moved quickly, cold eyes killer move was even faster, he just had to be in Bai Ning Bing’s field of vision, it was nearly instantaneous.

Feng Jiu Ge laughed heartily as he stretched out his palm, touching the frost.

Instantly, the sound of bells rang as the frost melted.

Bai Ning Bing snorted as the light in her dragon eyes intensified.

“Troublesome.” Feng Jiu Ge frowned slightly, he used yang pass tune to teleport away.

But at the next moment, when he reappeared, not only was he met with Bai Ning Bing’s cold eyes, he was even attacked by Fairy Miao Yin’s curved moon.

Immortal killer move — Curved Moon!

Fairy Miao Yin’s eyes have two curved moons in them.

Similar to cold eyes, this was a sight based attack, it was extremely quick to activate.

Feng Jiu Ge was hit and his body shook.

Fairy Miao Yin was shocked, she was confident in curved moon’s power, but it only made Feng Jiu Ge’s body shake.

Feng Jiu Ge’s foundation in defense was extremely deep.

Back then, even against Wu Yong’s battlefield immortal killer move, he lasted such a long time. This curved moon killer move was nothing much.

Chirp chirp!

Suddenly, the chirping of birds could be heard.

A group of fire birds flew towards Feng Jiu Ge.

Bam bam bam bam!

At the next moment, the fire birds self-detonated and exploded loudly, but they soon turned silent.

Because this was anti-sound desert.

The explosions engulfed Feng Jiu Ge, the heat caused powerful currents to push out towards the surroundings.

At once, red light shone on the faces of Fang Yuan and the others.

The temperature of the place went up rapidly.

Hei Lou Lan stood far away, battle intent surging in her eyes. This was the immortal killer move that she used — Angry Bird.

Feng Jiu Ge reappeared at a distance.

He was unharmed, the exploded angry birds did not affect him.

Fang Yuan charged towards him while the other Shadow Sect immortals attacked from all directions.

Feng Jiu Ge laughed soundlessly: “Enough dodging, take this.”

Immortal killer move — Heaven and Earth Song!

At once, the world sang.

Music entered the ears of the immortals, their bodies shook, they felt like the sky was tall and the earth was wide, they felt themselves becoming more insignificant and minuscule, they felt like ants, they felt like dust.

The feeling of being small and lowly emerged in them.

Compared to heaven and earth, they were such insects, what could they possibly amount to?

This was the might of heaven and earth song!

Not only were Gu Immortals affected, even their immortal killer moves were influenced, while suppressed by heaven and earth song, they would become weaker as they dissipate after a few breaths of time.

This move was one of Feng Jiu Ge’s signature killer moves, back then during the battle of Luo Po Valley, Qin Bai Sheng and his group suffered from it.

Now, it was time for Fang Yuan and the rest to face it.

Hei Lou Lan and the rest did not feel good, but Fang Yuan was relentlessly moving forward.

Reverse flow protection seal was unmoved, only some ripples appeared on the surface, not just that, it even reflected a portion of heaven and earth song’s power back to Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge tasted the power of his killer move for the first time!

Seeing Fang Yuan, who approached brazenly, he frowned as he used yang pass tune to teleport again.

Reverse flow protection seal rendered Heavenly Court, Longevity Heaven, and Purple Mountain True Monarch without options, Wu Yong was also unable to get past it, not to mention Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge felt a headache seeing Fang Yuan.

He had finally understood how Wu Yong felt.

“Forget about Fang Yuan, I should get rid of his subordinates first!” Feng Jiu Ge did not want to fight with Fang Yuan, he placed his target on the rest.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1421: Myriad Dragon!

Feng Jiu Ge was backed by Heavenly Court, he did not lack information, he knew a lot about Shadow Sect’s immortals.

Other than Fang Yuan, there was also Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, Ying Wu Xie, Black Tigress, and Fairy Miao Yin, a total of five other targets.

Bai Ning Bing was a beautiful dragon lady, she had the fiercest offense and was likely to be the inheritor of Bai Xiang’s true inheritance.

Hei Lou Lan had sharp eyebrows and eyes, even though she was a woman, she had a bold air and attacked with powerful flames, she had the Great Strength True Martial Physique.

Ying Wu Xie was now using Fairy Cui Bo’s body, he wore a green dress and had alluring eyes, his methods were still concealed for the moment, Feng Jiu Ge did not recognize him and felt a little suspicious.

Black Tigress had a ruthless gaze, her injuries had mostly healed now, she moved rapidly and cultivated dark path, she was like an assassin, moving in the periphery and staring at Feng Jiu Ge as she waited for a chance to take revenge.

As for Fairy Miao Yin, she had already displayed her signature killer move, wondrous hand profound sound, she was beautiful and elegant, her eyes had curved moons in them, she also cultivated sound path like Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge used yang pass tune as he evaded Fang Yuan. On the other hand, he was assessing these Shadow Sect immortals.

Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal could not be countered, but it had advantages and disadvantages, if Fang Yuan wanted to maintain it, he could not use other immortal killer moves.

Fang Yuan had weak offense and strong defense, if Feng Jiu Ge wanted to fight Shadow Sect, he had to target the rest.

This was the best strategy!

But who would Feng Jiu Ge target?

This question was on Fang Yuan and everyone else’s mind.

Feng Jiu Ge was not going to be stupid and fight with Fang Yuan, but similarly, they had also guessed what tactic he would employ.

It was common sense.

Reverse flow protection seal was too powerful, there was no way for Heavenly Court to come up with ways of dismantling it in a short time.

It was very hard to dismantle killer moves.

But resisting and alleviating them was much easier.

Despite this, Reverse Flow River was on par with rank nine Immortal Gu, it was a secluded domain of heaven and earth written inside <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, how could it be easily countered or weakened?

Thus, only after Heavenly Court deduced a method to unravel it would they be able to deal with reverse flow protection seal. Before that, even if Duke Long showed up, he could do nothing.

“Among everyone, Hei Lou Lan has the lowest cultivation level at rank six, will Feng Jiu Ge target her?”

“Fang Yuan is out of the question, but he might target Fairy Miao Yin too. After all, they both cultivate sound path, with Feng Jiu Ge’s deep foundation, he should have very effective methods against Fairy Miao Yin.”

“He attacked Lady White Rabbit earlier, he might also attack Black Tigress while she’s still injured.”

“What about Bai Ning Bing? She has the strongest offense among us, she is the strongest spear, if she is taken down, Feng Jiu Ge’s advantage in this battle will increase drastically.”

“Ying Wu Xie is also a possible target, he is using Fairy Cui Bo’s body, Feng Jiu Ge is most unfamiliar with him, he might attack to probe him.”

All sorts of analysis and guesses were in the heads of Fang Yuan and the others.

If they managed to guess Feng Jiu Ge’s goal, they would be able to gain the initiative in battle and move more freely.

Who would Feng Jiu Ge choose?

At the next moment, they got their answer.

Feng Jiu Ge jumped as yang pass tune activated, he went to the center of the battlefield.

Next, the immortal killer move yang pass tune did not fade, but its aura changed abruptly.

Feng Jiu Ge called out: “Why don’t you listen to my green jade song?”

This was his signature method, the immortals heard that and retreated. Only Fang Yuan laughed as he moved forward towards Feng Jiu Ge: “Feng Jiu Ge, you are finally using some proper methods.”

Ding ding ding...

Music that sounded like pearls landing on a jade plate was crisp and sharp.

Fang Yuan ignored it, he got closer to Feng Jiu Ge and used reverse flow protection seal to reflect a portion of green jade song’s power back to Feng Jiu Ge.

But unexpectedly, Feng Jiu Ge’s green jade song killer move completely collected and preserved its power.

Fang Yuan moved without obstruction, there was no reflected damage inflicted.

The immortals were surprised, a vague figure emerged from Feng Jiu Ge’s body.

This person looked like Feng Jiu Ge, but it was green in color, as if it was made of green jade.

“What killer move is this?!” The Shadow Sect immortals felt a strong sense of threat from this mysterious figure.

“Song warrior!” Fang Yuan’s heart sank, he remembered the information in his previous life.

This was a powerful method of Feng Jiu Ge, it allowed the nine songs that he creates to gather into human form and attack enemies.

In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, Feng Jiu Ge’s original nine songs were incredibly powerful, but they had one weakness, only one could be activated at a time, they were not flexible and lasted for only a short time.

After countless battles, Feng Jiu Ge realized this weakness and went into a short period of seclusion. When he came out, he created the killer move song warrior.

Thereafter, he could split the nine songs into temporary clones to fight strong enemies, they were flexible and agile, his battle strength surged and sent many of his enemies into deep danger.

“To think that this famous song warrior is actually a variation move of yang pass tune. It is similar to my myriad self and strength path giant hand.”

“In my previous life, he only created song warrior after five hundred years, why was it so early this time?”

“No, in the five hundred years of my previous life, because Shadow Sect succeeded, the great era was stalled by a long time, maybe Feng Jiu Ge was affected by that?”

“Or maybe, he created song warrior in advance because of Heavenly Court’s help?”

Countless thoughts churned in Fang Yuan’s mind, he had many guesses at once.

The green jade song warrior did not attack Fang Yuan, it pounced at Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie’s eyelids were twitching, he quickly retreated, not willing to fight head on.

Feng Jiu Ge used yang pass tune again, moving far away from Fang Yuan, after several times, he had already used another signature killer move.

Heaven and earth song!

The heaven and earth song warrior attacked Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing shouted: “Come!”

She faced with the heaven and earth song warrior, clashing as frost splattered.

“Damn it, this cannot go on!”

“Bai Ning Bing and Ying Wu Xie are kept busy now, we cannot suppress Feng Jiu Ge.”

“So Feng Jiu Ge’s target was not one of us, but everyone except Fang Yuan!”

After understanding Feng Jiu Ge’s tactic, the Shadow Sect immortals felt immense danger.

The battle was tilting in Feng Jiu Ge’s favor, but there was nothing they could do.

The reason was because Fang Yuan’s side was strong on defense while weak on offense, and also because Feng Jiu Ge used the optimal tactic.

In fact, song warrior had strengths and weaknesses. If the nine songs were used on their own, they were formless and had a huge range, the power was vast and hard to defend against.

After turning into song warriors, they would be condensed entities that could be attacked and avoided, long ranged attacks could even weaken the power of the song warriors.

But in this battle, Feng Jiu Ge’s concerns were completely different from before.

Firstly, he did not need to deal with Immortal Gu House Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building. This Immortal Gu House was extremely fast, if he used song warrior, it would just dodge the attacks.

Secondly, Feng Jiu Ge did not need to attack the tributary of the River of Time.

This time, while chasing Fang Yuan, he made sure there was not enough time for him to set up an immortal Gu formation.

By using song warrior, even if he could not defeat them all, he could keep the Shadow Sect immortals busy, and be unable to attack together.

Using certain tactics in certain situations, this was the decision of a Gu Immortal with the experience of countless battles.

Feng Jiu Ge was a person who had extremely rich experience from actual battles.

Together with his immense talent, this battle was very difficult for the Shadow Sect immortals.

After green jade song and heaven and earth song, he used submission song and separation song.

Four song warriors attacked, either alone or together, sending the battlefield into chaos.

“Bastard!” Hei Lou Lan gritted her teeth, she retreated as she attacked with angry bird from afar, but when the move landed on the green jade song warrior, the fiery birds turned into jade birds, they shattered when they fell to the ground.

“Penetrating ice blade.” Bai Ning Bing muttered, holding a huge ice blade as she attacked the submission song warrior, but at the crucial moment, the separation song warrior appeared to take this blow.

The huge ice blade broke apart, separation song could separate everything, including immortal killer moves.

The heaven and earth song warrior had the power of suppression, Ying Wu Xie and Fairy Miao Yin fought against it evenly.

Fang Yuan had a heavy heart.

“When Feng Jiu Ge started cultivating, he aspired to create nine songs, to express himself, to express life, and to express heaven and earth. Right now, he has already created separation song, according to my previous life’s information, he already possesses seven songs.”

Among them, four of the songs were for offensive purposes, green jade song, heaven and earth song, submission song, and separation song. Fang Yuan had witnessed them already.

There were two more songs, obtain treasure and towards heaven, these were used to assist in cultivation, they were not of concern to him.

The most worrisome one was the final song.

“That song is not easy to control, if he fails, the backlash is almost fatal. But if Feng Jiu Ge gets a chance to use it, our losses will be severe...”

Fang Yuan was worried, but there was no way around it, his offense was too low, he could not exert pressure on Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge had high battle strength, he was skilled in manipulating the four clones, this showed that his enslavement path attainment was deeper than even Fang Yuan!

He had already been a Gu Immortal for many years, even with Fang Yuan’s five hundred years, he could not match Feng Jiu Ge’s foundation.

“And this is the result of fighting in anti-sound desert, Feng Jiu Ge is already suppressed. Of course, our Fairy Miao Yin is also suppressed.”

“I need to take a risk, otherwise, if we miss this chance, we will not even have a chance to take a risk in the future.”

Resolution shone in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

At the next moment, he deactivated reverse flow protection seal!

Immortal killer move — Ancient Sword Dragon Transformation.

Fang Yuan turned into an ancient sword dragon, next, he calmed his mind and breathed in deeply, using another signature killer move.

Convergence of enslavement and strength path — Myriad Self!

This was not simply ‘using myriad self on top of activating ancient sword dragon transformation’, this was a famous technique involving immortal killer moves — a combination move.

Ancient sword dragon transformation combined with myriad self, creating — Myriad Dragon!

Roar roar roar roar...

At once, myriad dragons appeared, they roared as sword qi burst out rampantly, it was like a sea of silver scales.

“This killer move... it is the one he used when he destroyed our sect’s immortal Gu formation in Eastern Sea! It has appeared again.” Ying Wu Xie was shook.

“Fang Yuan.” Bai Ning Bing muttered, a feeling of reliance emerged in her heart.

“Impressive.” Even Feng Jiu Ge was greatly moved.

At once, his field of vision was covered by flying sword dragons. The sea of sword dragons submerged the four song warriors, including Feng Jiu Ge himself!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1422: Battle Result

Fang Yuan’s current dao mark quantity was at the peak of rank seven. Myriad dragon killer move was amplified by his transformation path, sword path, and other dao marks, its power reached the very limit of a rank seven killer move.

The dragons attacked the four song warriors fiercely.

The green jade song warrior was surrounded by countless crumbling jade dragons, but it was unable to hold on for long as it got drowned in sword dragons.

The heaven and earth song warrior attacked grandly with overwhelming pressure, but the dragons were too numerous, it was eventually eaten by one of them.

The submission song warrior lasted the longest, it managed to make some of the ancient sword dragon clones submit to it, but it could not turn this situation around.

And finally, the separation song warrior separated some ancient sword dragon clones, it charged out but was still surrounded by more sword dragons, it could not resist the tide of endless waves of dragons.

All along, Fang Yuan’s myriad self had been high in quantity and low in quality. Especially against Gu Immortal experts, it was useless. As Fang Yuan’s enemies got stronger, myriad self had turned into a method for him to escape while using familiar face.

But now, after creating this combination move, using myriad self on top of ancient sword dragon transformation, the effect had been elevated to achieve a qualitative change.

Ancient sword dragon transformation used rank seven dragon breath Immortal Gu and dragon scale Immortal Gu, as well as rank six dragon strength Immortal Gu, he had the constitution of an ancient desolate beast.

The clones of the ancient sword dragon were not comparable with the myriad self killer move clones at all!

This was the strongest attacking method that Fang Yuan currently possessed.

The myriad dragons engulfed the four song warriors, before encircling Feng Jiu Ge tightly.

Fang Yuan did not hesitate, he directly mobilized the dragon group, attacking Feng Jiu Ge from all directions.

Feng Jiu Ge’s admiration faded from his gaze as he clenched his right fist and punched forward.

Bang!

A loud drum sound shook heaven and earth, it was like rumbling thunder, five or six ancient sword dragon clones were destroyed.

At almost the same time, Feng Jiu Ge’s left hand palm slapped towards the side.

Ding!

The chimes of the bell caused several ancient sword dragons to stop their movement, before their bodies shook and they disintegrated into nothingness after a breath’s time.

Drum fist!

Bell palm!

Feng Jiu Ge continued to attack, there were unceasing sounds as he attacked to defend himself, forcing the ancient sword dragons to stay away from him.

Myriad dragon could send most rank seven Gu Immortals in this world into mortal danger. But against Feng Jiu Ge, it was not enough.

Feng Jiu Ge’s accumulation of sound path dao marks was simply too deep, even inside the anti-sound desert, his power could not be fully suppressed.

But Fang Yuan felt some surprise upon seeing this.

“It is a bit strange.”

“Why is Feng Jiu Ge not using yang pass tune?”

“In this situation, the song warriors are already destroyed, Feng Jiu Ge can totally move away and avoid my attacks, he would be able to expend less immortal essence at a steady rate.”

“Unless he is preparing a certain immortal killer move...”

“But he is using drum fist and bell palm already, there is a low possibility of him using other killer moves. And he is not going to use a killer move under such a dangerous situation, right?”

“This means, there is likely to be one reason. The information in the five hundred years of my previous life was not without reason, it seems.”

All sorts of thoughts collided and sparked in Fang Yuan’s mind.

At the next moment, he turned back to human and told the Shadow Sect immortals:

“We will retreat!”

Ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel activated again as Feng Jiu Ge smiled bitterly, watching Fang Yuan and the others leave without giving chase.

It turned out that even though his movement killer move, yang pass tune, was very superb, it could even contain a variation move, song warrior, it had one weakness.

That was a time limit.

Each activation of yang pass tune lasted a limited amount of time.

Once it was up, yang pass tune’s effect would vanish, and Feng Jiu Ge would only be able to use it after fourteen hours.

Thus, for Feng Jiu Ge, this was a very precious immortal killer move, he would not use it casually in normal battles.

Because once he used the killer move, he would be faced with a time limit.

Once he could not end the battle within the time limit, Feng Jiu Ge would not have a better movement method to leave the battlefield.

In the battle with Wu Yong earlier, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was too fast, even if Feng Jiu Ge used yang pass tune, he could not escape.

Earlier when chasing Fang Yuan, because he used Omni-directional Travel, Feng Jiu Ge had to use yang pass tune to catch up.

When Fang Yuan used myriad dragon, yang pass tune’s time limit was up, Feng Jiu Ge could only smile bitterly in his heart as he used drum fist and bell palm to defend against myriad dragon.

After Fang Yuan and the rest left, myriad dragon slowly faded away.

In the huge battlefield, only Feng Jiu Ge was left.

He was completely unharmed, he was still graceful and elegant, as if he had not fought in the battle earlier.

Fang Yuan successfully retreated, Feng Jiu Ge did not feel dejected, he even smiled lightly.

“Fighting with Fang Yuan, how can it be settled in one battle?”

“There has to be lots of probing, after finding out all his trump cards, I will be able to kill him. But before that, there is Heavenly Court’s mission to force Fang Yuan and give us a chance of destroying Red Lotus’ true inheritance.”

“Fang Yuan seems to know a lot about me, is it because of Spring Autumn Cicada?”

“That new female immortal looks like Fairy Cui Bo from Western Desert, but she uses soul path methods, it is quite strange.”

The result of his probing was very fruitful.

Especially regarding Ying Wu Xie.

In the previous fight, because of Fang Yuan’s ample arrangements, Feng Jiu Ge did not notice Fairy Cui Bo.

But now was different.

“Ying Wu Xie has lead soul into dream, he is the greatest threat, Fang Yuan might have the move now, but it could also be with Ying Wu Xie.”

“In this battle, there was no Ying Wu Xie, but there was a new member, Fairy Cui Bo.”

“If I remember correctly, Fairy Cui Bo is the concubine of Thousand Transformations Ancestor, why is she hanging out with Fang Yuan now?”

“Is it because Fairy Cui Bo is a member of Shadow Sect, or did she... get possessed by Ying Wu Xie?”

Even though Feng Jiu Ge was not a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he was intelligent and nearly reached the truth in a short amount of time.

And at the other side.

“Feng Jiu Ge indeed didn’t chase us.” Fang Yuan looked at the sky, even though his retreat had elements of probing, he had already obtained the truth.

Yang pass tune had a time limit.

After knowing this, the other Shadow Sect Gu Immortals let out a sigh of relief.

“Feng Jiu Ge is powerful, true to his reputation!”

“I can feel that he has methods left, he has not used all his trump cards.”

“All in all, this was just a test run, we did not use our trump cards either, right?”

The Gu Immortals conversed.

It was indeed so.

Be it Black Tigress’ tiger lick killer move, or Bai Ning Bing’s Bai Xiang, or Ying Wu Xie’s lead soul into dream, they were not used.

In this battle, both sides reserved strength, but they also used many of their methods.

Like Feng Jiu Ge’s yang pass tune, song warrior, and Fang Yuan’s myriad dragon.

When they fight again, these killer moves would be countered, or at least, they would be defended against.

Several days later, on an ordinary sand dune.

The wind of the desert blew up clouds of sand and smoke.

The sun was setting, the clouds were red like blood.

Camel bells rang with the wind, far away, there was a merchant caravan made by a group of mortal Gu Masters.

These people were naturally unable to detect Fang Yuan and gang.

At this moment, Fang Yuan’s consciousness was in his immortal aperture.

An immortal Gu formation was set up in Mini Central Continent.

Self cleansing immortal Gu formation!

Using self love Immortal Gu as the core of the rank seven Gu formation, and formation flag Immortal Gu as the supplement, once activated, it would cleanse all of the harmful dao marks constantly. And because of formation flag Immortal Gu, this immortal Gu formation could be moved temporarily.

That was to say, when Fang Yuan wanted to, he could take out this immortal formation and use it himself.

If he did not need to use it, he could place it back into the sovereign immortal aperture, it was very convenient.

“This immortal formation has a lot of room for improvement. For example, I can add time path Gu worms to increase the rate of time. Unfortunately, my time path attainment level is too low, I cannot make deductions on that.”

Fang Yuan felt it was a pity.

“However, I am at least able to relocate the formation spirit over to become the formation spirit of this immortal formation.”

This was not strange.

Fang Yuan only needed to combine that incomplete immortal formation with the self cleansing immortal formation.

And this was a type of immortal killer move technique, combination move.

Fang Yuan was skilled in this and was a formation path grandmaster.

He was very confident in this, he estimated that three days was all he needed.

“With the formation spirit, I will not need to activate the immortal Gu formation myself, I can spend my time and energy on other things.”

“But before that, I need to elevate myriad self to another level first!”

When he fought against Feng Jiu Ge in the anti-sound desert, Fang Yuan gained a huge amount of inspiration.

That was the elevation of immortal killer move myriad self!

At the same time.

“This is a dream realm indeed!”

“But husband’s will, rank eight Immortal Gu Mutation, and Dancer Hong Yun, are they still inside?”

In the air, two rank seven female immortals looked at each other.

They were Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s concubines, one was called Night Temptress, the other was Immortal Concubine Qing Lan.

Dancer Hong Yun and his will were trapped, Thousand Transformations Ancestor naturally felt it. Not long ago, he received information that Fang Yuan and the others had plotted against him and even possessed Fairy Cui Bo.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was furious, but because his injuries were not healed yet, and without actual facts, he sent his two concubines to investigate it.

Be it Night Temptress or Immortal Concubine Qing Lan, they were rank seven experts, but against the dream realm, they were helpless.

When they were feeling lost, a mysterious voice entered their heads: “If you cannot explore the dream realm, why don’t you find the culprit, Fairy Cui Bo is with them.”

“Who?”

“Come out!”

The two female immortals shouted, they used their investigative methods but they could not find the source of the voice.

“Such impressive sound path methods.” The expressions of Night Temptress and Immortal Concubine Qing Lan changed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1423: Brand New Myriad Self

Western Desert.

In the clear sky, the blazing sun was shining down.

A red dream realm was floating in the air, it was extremely conspicuous.

Dancer Hong Yun and Thousand Transformations’ will were trapped inside the dream realm, unable to escape.

Night Temptress and Immortal Concubine Qing Lan surrounded the dream realm, flying around it.

Gu worms flew out of their hands as they were set up around the dream realm.

Similar to the Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals, they were creating an immortal Gu formation to surround the dream realm and prevent others from getting it.

There was no other way, all the super forces in the five regions and two heavens, including some lone immortals and demonic path experts, were researching dream realms, but they were still at the elementary stages.

During this period, few Gu Immortals would have methods against dream realms.

Even though Thousand Transformations Ancestor was a rank eight Gu Immortal, and inherited a true inheritance of Reckless Savage, he was also without options against the dream realm.

But concerning Dancer Hong Yun and his own rank eight Immortal Gu Mutation, he could not give up.

Thinking about it, he could only seal this dream realm first and wait.

“It is about time.”

“I will defend us, you can finish the final few steps.”

Night Temptress and Immortal Concubine Qing Lan conversed for a while, Night Temptress was going to defend them while Immortal Concubine Qing Lan was going to set up the immortal Gu formation.

Among Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s concubines, Night Temptress had the highest status and strength, Immortal Concubine Qing Lan was second to her.

Earlier, when the two heard the mysterious voice telling them about Fairy Cui Bo’s location, they became incredibly alert.

Red date immortal essence was instilled as the Gu worms were activated, forming a vague shadow of the Gu formation.

The light was orange-brown, sand was dancing in the sky, as the shadows of beasts roamed around.

Next, Immortal Concubine Qing Lan took out a crucial Immortal Gu.

This was a rank seven Immortal Gu, it seemed like a flightless cockroach, it had the size of a fetus’ fist, it was flat and shining in a metallic color, giving off a feeling of toughness.

“Rule path Immortal Gu — Pass?” Seeing this Immortal Gu, Feng Jiu Ge, who was hiding, felt moved, his gaze turned heated.

He had been looking for this rule path Immortal Gu for the longest time.

“If I had pass Gu, I would be able to extend the duration of immortal killer move yang pass tune, and with this Immortal Gu, I can remove most of the mortal Gu, and reduce the difficulty and time needed to use this move.”

“To think that Thousand Transformations Ancestor has this Immortal Gu.”

Feng Jiu Ge sighed.

“Even though I created obtain treasure song, which can refine wild Immortal Gu, in this situation, the chances of getting it are too low.”

Night Temptress and Immortal Concubine Qing Lan were very vigilant, it was really difficult to snatch someone else’s Immortal Gu, only Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable could achieve it with great success in his time. After him, even theft path Gu Immortals could not replicate his achievements.

Pass Gu was the core of this immortal formation, it activated and went into the yellow sand.

A moment later, the shadows stopped transforming, turning into a light yellow cloud that floated in the air.

Immortal Concubine Qing Lan and Night Temptress let out sighs of relief.

“Alright, we created the immortal Gu formation.”

“With this Gu formation, we can come here almost instantly, let’s see who dares to trifle with us!”

The two female immortals were full of killing intent.

But Feng Jiu Ge did not show up from start to finish.

Seeing that nobody came, the two women were relieved but also disappointed.

Next, they left the place and returned.

Feng Jiu Ge tailed them for a while, realizing that their destination was obvious, they were returning to myriad statue desert.

“Strange, why are they not looking for Fairy Cui Bo? According to Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s personality, how could he do nothing? Don’t tell me something happened to Thousand Transformations Ancestor?”

Feng Jiu Ge had lots of information from Heavenly Court, he knew about Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s mentality, he was an overbearing person who would always take revenge, therefore he created this plan. But Thousand Transformations Ancestor did not fall for it, he completely disregarded Fairy Cui Bo.

This was strange.

Feng Jiu Ge’s plan of using Thousand Transformations to pressure Fang Yuan failed entirely.

At this moment, Feng Jiu Ge obtained a transmission.

He left secretly and met with two Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortals behind a sand dune.

Feng Jiu Ge was not unfamiliar with these two.

Because in Southern Border, these two had appeared to block Wu Yong for him.

After that, Feng Jiu Ge went to chase Fang Yuan while they went after the upper extreme heavenly eagle. Unfortunately, the upper extreme heavenly eagle had the effect of connect luck Immortal Gu due to Fang Yuan.

Back then, because Fang Yuan relied heavily on this precious rank eight battle strength, he used Connect Luck to ensure its safety and also used qi luck sensation to find its whereabouts.

Even though Fang Yuan had other investigative killer moves, considering that Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals could destroy them, he chose luck path to be safe.

After all, the only force excelling in luck path was Longevity Heaven.

Even though Giant Sun was known as an Immortal Venerable, he had never joined Heavenly Court, or passed his luck path true inheritance to Heavenly Court.

Thus, after Fang Yuan and the others used burning soul bursting luck, the upper extreme heavenly eagle gained a boost of luck and escaped. Next, Lu Wei Yin saved it and also removed all of Heavenly Court’s investigative killer moves that were used on it.

Because of that, the two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals chased it for a long time, expending a lot of effort, but did not manage to capture the upper extreme heavenly eagle that had escaped.

They failed in their task and were reprimanded by Fairy Zi Wei.

After that, Fairy Zi Wei sent them to reinforce Feng Jiu Ge.

“We already know about the matter of the dream realm. Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s attitude is really strange now. We have received orders from Lady Zi Wei, we will go to probe Thousand Transformations Ancestor.” The two Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortals said.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor had a different response than usual to Fairy Cui Bo’s matter.

Feng Jiu Ge could sense something, the wisdom path great expert Fairy Zi Wei naturally deduced more things.

She deduced that there was a huge chance that Thousand Transformations Ancestor was injured and weakened, he could even be dead.

Thus, if they probed him, they might be able to get Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s true inheritance of Reckless Savage. Even if there was no gain, causing internal strife in Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world and getting rid of a rank eight Gu Immortal was very beneficial for them.

After all, the five regions chaotic war was coming.

Central Continent was facing four regions, it had to prepare early and weaken the rest, such situations were favorable to them.

Fang Yuan flew in the sky.

These last days, Feng Jiu Ge did not chase them, Fang Yuan decided to stop using Omni-directional Travel.

After all, the price of using this ancient battle formation was the dao marks of the Gu Immortals’ bodies.

And because Feng Jiu Ge’s location was unknown, using Omni-directional Travel recklessly might even shorten their distance.

Omni-directional Travel was only meant for emergencies.

The rest went into his sovereign immortal aperture as Fang Yuan flew and pondered.

A moment later, bright light flashed in his eyes as he slowed down and descended.

When he landed, he opened his immortal aperture’s entrance and let out Bai Ning Bing and the rest.

“Defend me, I have already conceptualized it, we can set up the self cleansing immortal Gu formation now.” Fang Yuan said.

Next, he sat in the group and concentrated.

The truth was, the self cleansing immortal Gu formation had already been set up and was inside Mini Central Continent.

But this immortal formation was not up to his expectations.

According to his concept, Fang Yuan started to activate self cleansing immortal formation, at the same time, he split his concentration to activate the incomplete Gu formation.

This incomplete immortal formation was taken from Dancer Hong Yun, the formation flag Immortal Gu inside was taken out too, becoming a part of the self cleansing immortal formation.

And now, Fang Yuan was trying to fuse these two immortal formations into one.

Two hours later, Fang Yuan was covered in sweat, he opened his eyes and let out a breath of air, relaxing.

The two immortal formations had fused into one.

His main motivation for doing this was the formation spirit.

The incomplete immortal formation with the formation spirit was fused into the self cleansing immortal formation, the formation spirit also moved into it.

After achieving this goal, Fang Yuan removed some of the Gu worms from the incomplete Gu formation and simplified the self cleansing immortal formation.

At this point, the entire immortal formation was completed, it could remove unfavorable dao marks for Fang Yuan and the rest.

However, Fang Yuan was not in a rush to get rid of dao marks, he took out self love Immortal Gu from the immortal Gu formation instead.

Self love Immortal Gu was the first core of the self cleansing immortal formation, once it was taken out, the immortal formation would collapse. However, the current immortal formation was still intact.

It turned out that the formation spirit’s ability to manipulate Gu formations was above Fang Yuan. When self love Immortal Gu was taken out, the immortal formation was near the brink of collapsing.

But the formation spirit acted in time, adding a large number of self love mortal Gu into the formation and replacing self love Immortal Gu.

But this method could only be used in emergencies, self love Immortal Gu was the core after all, it was like the pillar holding up a building. With self love Immortal Gu taken away, the large number of mortal Gu used to hold up the building was just a temporary pillar.

As time passes, this immortal formation would break apart eventually.

Fang Yuan estimated that he had about fourteen hours.

If he returned self love Immortal Gu before the time limit, it would not break apart.

Fang Yuan took out self love Immortal Gu not to test the formation spirit’s ability.

He had other objectives.

Self love Immortal Gu and affection Immortal Gu, these two Immortal Gu flew in his immortal aperture as Fang Yuan instilled red date immortal essence and activated many mortal Gu.

At the next moment, a vast amount of self will was created by Fang Yuan like a huge tidal wave.

Self will formed into a giant of over a hundred feet, it resembled Fang Yuan’s appearance, it stood on the ground with a majestic body.

“Next...” Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, activating immortal killer move myriad self.

At the next moment, the self will giant vanished, as ten thousand myriad self clones appeared in Fang Yuan’s Mini Central Continent.

“Success! Myriad self has been elevated to a new level, my battle strength has risen along with it!” Fang Yuan was overjoyed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1424: Refining Cleanse Soul Immortal Gu Again

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

Working even at night, staying for months in the Gu refinement hall, the light of the fire was reflecting on Sixth Hair’s face.

His face was covered in dust and soot, his eyes were bloodshot, he was staring at the burning flames intensely.

Warm temperatures scorched the surroundings, Sixth Hair’s hair was burnt, but he did not care, he was concentrating on his task.

The Gu refinement was at the final crucial steps.

“Luck path is indeed really helpful in Gu refinement, I am at this step again! I must succeed this time!!”

Sixth Hair gritted his teeth, making up his mind.

Suddenly, his vision darkened.

“Oh no, is my body at its limit? Never mind, ‘moving of a single thought, blossoming of the red snake’.” Sixth Hair had a thought as red snake tattoos appeared on his body, moving rapidly from his waist to his chest area.

At the same time, a surge of strength appeared out of nowhere, filling Sixth Hair up like he was an inflating balloon.

Sixth Hair became energetic again.

“I used this move again, when the red snake gets to the top of my head and surrounds my whole body, I will die.”

“But so what? All I need to do is refine this Immortal Gu and be of help to Shadow Sect!”

“Let’s do it, thousand li soul thread.”

Sixth Hair encouraged himself as the hairy man Gu Immortal behind him passed a long immortal material.

It was the thousand li soul thread, it was an immortal material created in the bodies of ancient soul beasts.

The value of soul threads depended on their length.

The thousand li soul thread that Lang Ya Sect had was extremely valuable, it was on par with rank eight immortal materials!

It was a quasi-rank eight immortal material, but because it was too rare, it was not usually sold even in treasure yellow heaven, thus its market value was at rank eight immortal material level.

For Fang Yuan’s Gu refinement plan, not just Sixth Hair, even Lang Ya land spirit was helping out, it could be said that the whole of Lang Ya Sect was refining Gu for Fang Yuan.

After becoming the leader of Shadow Sect, he inherited Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance and had deep foundations, he used a portion of the cultivation experiences and immortal killer moves, as well as Immortal Gu recipes, to exchange for a vast number of sect contribution points from Lang Ya Sect.

Next, he used these sect contribution points to make the whole of Lang Ya Sect refine Gu for him.

After refining self love Immortal Gu, his next target was cleanse soul Immortal Gu.

Sixth Hair was already at the final few steps.

He carefully received the thousand li soul thread.

The soul thread was like a strip of seaweed, it was dark green, but there was golden light shining in it, it looked like fireflies were inside this seaweed.

Thousand li soul thread was very light, Sixth Hair held it like a feather.

He used refinement path methods and quickly cut down one section of it.

Refining cleanse soul Immortal Gu only needed a small part of the soul thread. In fact, even without thousand li soul thread, just hundred li soul thread was sufficient.

But to raise the success rate of the Gu refinement, and to save time, Fang Yuan paid a huge price to exchange for Lang Ya Sect’s thousand li soul thread, he was truly rich.

The soul thread was tossed into the flames.

In a split second!

The blazing flames turned into eerie ghost fire as screams and cries could be heard.

Sixth Hair breathed in deeply, his eyes were bloodshot as he controlled the temperature of the fire.

An hour later, in Western Desert.

A huge immortal Gu formation was making loud noises.

The Gu formation was about sixteen acres large, while activating, it created huge dark green illusory figures. In this yellow desert, it was very conspicuous.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest were surrounding this immortal Gu formation, patrolling and staying vigilant.

The immortal formation’s activation had reached a crucial point.

However, Fang Yuan, who was at the center of the formation had the time and energy to deduce other things at this moment.

“At this speed, in about four hours, I will succeed and get rid of all the unfavorable dao marks.”

“Heavenly Court’s pursuers must be coming now? I am trying to get rid of the investigative killer move, there is no way they cannot sense it.”

“Hmm, failed again?”

At the next moment, Fang Yuan frowned as he received Sixth Hair’s transmission, regarding the failure to refine cleanse soul Immortal Gu.

And this time, when the Gu refinement failed, Sixth Hair suffered a heavy backlash and has to rest for a period of time.

Sixth Hair was currently the most trustworthy person in Lang Ya Sect for Fang Yuan, more so than Lang Ya land spirit. Him needing to rest was bad news.

“Including this time, cleanse soul Immortal Gu’s refinement has failed about ten times?”

“Immortal Gu refinement is a pit with no end in sight, while the hairy man Gu Immortals specialize in the nature Gu refinement technique, to prevent heaven’s will from interfering, I can only use the human isolation style Gu refinement method.”

It was not surprising that cleanse soul Immortal Gu’s refinement failed, it did not waver his strong determination to continue refining this Gu.

Speaking of which, he had cleanse soul Immortal Gu in the past, but he lost it.

Back then, cleanse soul Immortal Gu was a core of myriad self, but now, Fang Yuan did not seek to refine it for myriad self.

His true goal was the strength path immortal zombie body.

This eight armed immortal zombie body had the soul path trap left behind by Ying Wu Xie.

Now that Fang Yuan became the leader of Shadow Sect, he had the method to remove the trap, but this method needed rank seven cleanse soul Immortal Gu as the core.

As long as he refined cleanse soul Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan would be able to use the strength path immortal zombie and gain wisdom Gu’s acknowledgement, he would be able to use the light of wisdom and influence the great era.

Even though the dao marks of secluded domains of heaven and earth like Dang Hun Mountain and Reverse Flow River were on par with rank nine Immortal Gu, in terms of profundities, rank nine Immortal Gu were superior.

Especially wisdom Gu, this rank nine Immortal Gu was famous in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, it appeared many times and even scammed Ren Zu!

“Southwest direction, we have enemies!” At this time, Fairy Miao Yin transmitted.

“Oh? They appeared after all.” Fang Yuan was not surprised, he stood up.

The immortal Gu formation was still active, it was manipulated by the formation spirit, this was simply too convenient to Fang Yuan.

The only flaw was, this self cleansing immortal formation used a lot of immortal essence, Fang Yuan could barely sustain it. Along the way, with all these battles, Fang Yuan’s immortal essence supply was dwindling, but thankfully, he had Wu clan’s hundred thousand immortal essence stones.

But now, the immortal essence stones storage was reducing.

A moment later, Heavenly Court’s pursuer came.

It was Feng Jiu Ge.

“Why are you alone again?” Fang Yuan smiled as he looked at Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge looked around and did not see Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals, he smiled too: “Aren’t you alone too?”

“Hehehe. That is because I am sufficient to deal with you. Feng Jiu Ge, you will regret coming here.” Fang Yuan laughed heartily.

Feng Jiu Ge frowned slightly.

This was out of his expectations.

Fang Yuan was too confident.

“Strange, what is he relying on? Is there a scheme or plot?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1425: Beating Feng Jiu Ge Till He Spat Blood!

Fang Yuan directly charged at Feng Jiu Ge.

Of course, his special robe was already present, glittering light was shining on his robe, he had a long sash that coiled around his waist and arms.

As Fang Yuan charged out, the robe moved along with him.

Immortal killer move — Reverse Flow Protection Seal!

“This move again.” Feng Jiu Ge saw this and sighed internally, he very much was unable to break past this move.

Thus, Feng Jiu Ge chose to retreat.

He easily pulled some distance from Fang Yuan.

“Controlling reverse flow protection seal uses up too much mental energy, Fang

Yuan cannot distract himself to use other moves, even if he has movement killer moves, he cannot use them. This means that when he uses reverse flow protection seal, other than defense, his other aspects are very ordinary.”

Feng Jiu Ge thought as he smiled.

Fang Yuan could not catch up to Feng Jiu Ge, who was actively avoiding him, even after many tries.

A glimmer of thought flashed in Feng Jiu Ge’s eyes, he had not stopped thinking: “Why is Fang Yuan still alone?”

In this battle against Feng Jiu Ge, Fang Yuan was not aided by Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, or the others. Thus, Feng Jiu Ge’s earlier tactic of dealing with them could not be utilized on Fang Yuan alone.

“But even so, Fang Yuan has no hope of winning. Even if he has good defense, he is a moving target board. Be it attack or movement, he is inferior to me, the battle is in my control.”

“No, Fang Yuan is not so stupid! He must have other schemes.”

Feng Jiu Ge was not careless, he became increasingly vigilant.

When Fang Yuan approached, he would retreat to a safe distance.

“Feng Jiu Ge, you chased me up to here, are you going to run now?” Fang Yuan sneered.

Feng Jiu Ge’s smile faded: “Is there a point in taunting me? Fang Yuan, catch up to me first. It is not easy to use reverse flow protection seal, as time passes, your mental energy will be used up, won’t your immortal essence also be depleted? Such a strong method must have a huge price.”

Feng Jiu Ge held the initiative, he had a hold over Fang Yuan in both speed and battle tactic.

This battle was very different from the previous.

In the previous fight, they engaged in fierce combat. This time, both sides chased and escaped, other than some words, there was silence.

Fang Yuan snorted, he had a way to deal with Feng Jiu Ge’s actions.

Five hundred years of experience was not a joke, in terms of battle experience, he had his fair share.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan charged down and landed on the ground.

Feng Jiu Ge did not pursue him, he floated in the sky vigilantly, observing this desert.

He had suffered a territorial disadvantage last time when Fang Yuan used the anti-sound desert.

Feng Jiu Ge remembered this lesson and had done his homework before coming, this desert was nothing special.

Plop.

With a soft sound, Fang Yuan drilled into the desert, moving underground.

Feng Jiu Ge continued to investigative using immortal methods, but there were no suspicions, he used drum fist and bell palm to attack.

Bang... bang... bang!

Clank clank clank!

At once, drum fist and bell palm created huge holes in the desert, large amounts of sand splattered and created a huge cloud of dust in the radius of several li.

But Fang Yuan ignored him, he continued digging deeper.

Feng Jiu Ge frowned slightly.

The deeper he went, the denser the earth path dao marks, it would be disadvantageous to Feng Jiu Ge.

At the same time, he had a suspicion: “Fang Yuan is so confident now, did he have a set up here in advance? Or does he know about some special trait of this place that he can use?”

Feng Jiu Ge had all sorts of thoughts as he flew down.

He shot out like an arrow, stabbing into the desert, pursuing Fang Yuan.

He had to.

Because Fang Yuan could stay underground and use the immortal formation to remove the investigative killer move, Feng Jiu Ge had to pursue him.

Even if he did not get rid of the investigative killer move, he could also set up Gu formations or battlefield killer moves, if Feng Jiu Ge remained hesitant and did not chase him, Fang Yuan would have a lot of time to prepare amply. In that situation, Feng Jiu Ge would be stupid to wait.

Thus, he had to chase and give Fang Yuan pressure. He had to force more trump cards to be used and ruin his battle momentum.

Drum fist, bell palm!

Even deep underground, Feng Jiu Ge’s sound path killer moves were still very powerful.

Explosions happened around Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s face was stern.

Without the help of anti-sound desert, Fang Yuan could feel Feng Jiu Ge’s terrifying attack power at its fullest.

Even deep underground with rich earth path dao marks, Feng Jiu Ge’s killer moves were still overbearing.

This was the advantage of sound path.

Every path had its own specialty, in both advantages and disadvantages.

Sound path was a minor path, but it had an advantage.

The advantage was, sound path could travel easily, with relatively little conflict of dao marks. For example, for ordinary paths like earth path, the killer moves would be weakened by fifty to sixty percent in places filled with water path dao marks. A sound path killer move of the same power would only be weakened by twenty to thirty percent.

“Without reverse flow protection seal, I would not be able to last until now facing these attacks.”

“How did Feng Jiu Ge cultivate? How can his dao mark accumulation be on par with rank eight as a rank seven?”

“Forget about this, it is time to retaliate!”

Immortal killer move — Ancient Sword Dragon Transformation!

Instantly, a sharp light shone on Fang Yuan’s body.

But deep underground, light could not spread out.

“Hmm?” The moment Fang Yuan transformed, Feng Jiu Ge’s investigative killer move sensed something amiss.

Next, in a breath’s time, the soil in front of Feng Jiu Ge exploded as a large dragon head appeared.

Feng Jiu Ge was like a rat in front of an elephant, facing this huge dragon head.

“Ancient sword dragon! Fang Yuan!” Feng Jiu Ge’s pupils shrunk to pin size at this moment.

Fang Yuan’s counterattack was so sudden and so powerful!

The dragon head opened its mouth and shot out a wave of silvery light.

Sword dragon breath!

At once, silvery light shot out like countless arrows, it was powerful and made the entire area glow silver.

The sharp breath was still far away, but Feng Jiu Ge could already feel sharp pain, like hundreds of needles were stabbing his face.

Boom!

Sword dragon breath landed on Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge’s body had clanging sounds, his defensive methods were activated, sound waves were forced out and destroyed by the powerful and destructive dragon breath.

Ordinary dragon breath could only last a moment, but Fang Yuan had perseverance Immortal Gu, his dragon breath was unceasing and continuous!

Feng Jiu Ge was forced back, under the impact of the sword dragon breath, he used his methods as he flew into the sky, escaping from the sword dragon breath’s range.

But at the next moment, Fang Yuan raised his head.

The thick sword dragon breath shot up like a silver pillar, it was like the sharpest sword that pierced the heavens.

“It’s coming!” Feng Jiu Ge was not smiling anymore, his face was silver from the reflected light.

Seeing the sword dragon breath, he retreated once again.

Immortal killer move — Yang Pass Tune.

Swoosh, he vanished on the spot, before appearing a thousand steps away.

Fang Yuan stopped his dragon breath as he roared, attacking towards the sky.

His sleek dragon tail swung, as ancient sword dragon’s speed burst out. At the same time, he used sword escape Immortal Gu.

Tens of thousands of sword path dao marks amplified the effect, giving Fang Yuan incredible speed!

Boom!

With a loud sound, he broke through air and went at supersonic speed.

Instantly, Fang Yuan appeared in front of Feng Jiu Ge.

He was so fast that Fang Yuan himself could not react in time, his vision blurred for a moment and Feng Jiu Ge who was a tiny black dot appeared in front of him, they were only a dozen steps apart.

The dragon opened its mouth again but this time, Feng Jiu Ge was amply prepared.

He called out: “Go ahead.”

Next, against the impending sword light dragon breath, he did not dodge, he attacked instead.

Boom!

With a loud explosion, Feng Jiu Ge flew backwards like a cannonball.

For the first time, there was shock on his face as he felt deep suspicion: “How can this be? Fang Yuan has reverse flow protection seal active?”

In the earlier battle, when Fang Yuan transformed into an ancient sword dragon, he could not maintain reverse flow protection seal.

In the earlier clash, Feng Jiu Ge focused on this and attacked fiercely, but now, reverse flow protection seal reflected his entire attack to himself.

Guh.

Feng Jiu Ge felt pain in his chest as he spat out blood, he struggled to maintain his position in the air.

The earlier attack not only had the force of Fang Yuan’s attack, there was also the reflected power of Feng Jiu Ge’s attack, the combination of both made him spit out blood!

Fang Yuan had the advantage, he roared and charged forward.

It was too fast earlier, but now, Feng Jiu Ge could see properly, the ancient sword dragon’s silvery and shiny body actually had a layer of light, like a thin layer of clothing resembling flowing water.

“It really is reverse flow protection seal?”

“He can maintain both immortal killer moves now! How did he do it?”

Yang pass tune!

Fang Yuan missed and Feng Jiu Ge appeared elsewhere.

The ancient sword dragon that Fang Yuan turned into could not tear open space, it could only travel rapidly in a straight line.

Meanwhile, Feng Jiu Ge’s yang pass tune had the power of space path, it could teleport him to an entirely new location.

From this point, even though Fang Yuan turned into an ancient sword dragon with sword escape Immortal Gu, he could not match Feng Jiu Ge’s yang pass tune.

Unless Fang Yuan used the sword path movement killer move from Bo Qing’s inheritance.

But so what?

Yang pass tune had a time limit.

Once the time was up, Feng Jiu Ge would be at a disadvantage in terms of movement.

“I need to find a way around this while yang pass tune is still active.” Seeing Fang Yuan attacking yet again, Feng Jiu Ge’s heart sank..

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1426: Feng Jiu Ge Retreats

Roar!

Fang Yuan opened his dragon mouth and shot out his sword light dragon breath.

The dragon breath was like waves of silvery lightning, shooting out towards Feng Jiu Ge at incredible speed.

Feng Jiu Ge continued to dodge with yang pass tune.

But usually after he uses yang pass tune killer move, it would imply that song warrior was up next.

Both sides fought from underground to the sky.

They fought as they retreated and advanced, the dragon roared as drums rolled.

Green jade song warrior!

Along the way, Feng Jiu Ge summoned a clone.

The jade clone charged at the ancient sword dragon.

Feng Jiu Ge relied on yang pass tune to gain an advantage in movement, and with his rich battle experience and calm analytical mind, he did not fail the activation of a single killer move.

Fang Yuan snorted internally, he charged at Feng Jiu Ge without feeling distracted.

Feng Jiu Ge knew that the green jade song warrior was not Fang Yuan’s match, it could not break his reverse flow protection seal in the first place. Without getting past this, there was no way of defeating Fang Yuan.

Thus, Feng Jiu Ge controlled the green jade song warrior mainly to distract Fang Yuan.

The green jade song warrior was like a fly moving around Fang Yuan, disrupting his movements.

After a while, Fang Yuan could not take the disturbance anymore and turned around to deal with the green jade song warrior.

Feng Jiu Ge’s pupils shrank, Fang Yuan had changed targets too quickly, but Feng Jiu Ge responded rapidly as well.

Fang Yuan arrived at the green jade song warrior!

The huge ancient sword dragon body against the small green jade song warrior.

The dragon roared as intense winds blew, its ruthless dragon claws slashed at the green jade song warrior.

Cracks started to surface on the green jade song warrior’s body, there was a crisp sound as it was sent flying like a cannonball.

But the green jade song warrior was not on the verge of breaking down yet, it was still able to fight.

“Crafty.” Fang Yuan snorted coldly.

In the earlier skirmish, the green jade song warrior did not attack, it was taking hits passively. Thus, reverse flow protection seal could not reflect any attacks back to it, just the ancient sword dragon’s claws alone could not shatter the green jade song warrior.

After all, Feng Jiu Ge had rank eight level dao marks, the green jade song warrior’s defense was at the top of his song warriors.

After sending the green jade song warrior flying, Fang Yuan turned to Feng Jiu Ge.

But at this time, Feng Jiu Ge had already unleashed his second song warrior — Heaven and Earth Song Warrior.

After dozens of rounds, Feng Jiu Ge continued to dodge with yang pass tune, while summoning song warriors to fight Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan fought against five enemies, but he was still energetic and full of fighting spirit, Feng Jiu Ge could not help but retreat continuously.

“What is going on?”

“Fang Yuan was at his limit activating reverse flow protection seal last time.”

“But now, he can maintain both reverse flow protection seal and ancient sword dragon transformation, while fighting for such a long time, and he is still not at his limit?”

Feng Jiu Ge had a deep gaze, he purposely used song warrior to create a complex battle environment so that Fang Yuan would need to think constantly and expend his thoughts to deal with these problems.

If Fang Yuan was barely using these two killer moves, he would not have enough thoughts in his mind, he would not be able to display such great strength now.

“This means, he had an incredible breakthrough in terms of sustaining killer moves?” Feng Jiu Ge guessed.

At this moment, Fang Yuan’s body shook.

Feng Jiu Ge was paying great attention to Fang Yuan, he saw this and turned joyful: “Don’t tell me, he reached his limit?”

But at the next moment, Feng Jiu Ge tossed this thought away into the bin.

Because Fang Yuan activated immortal killer move — Myriad Dragon!

At once, dragons flew and formed into a silvery sea, their aura was grand and imposing, it was a terrifying sight.

A scene similar to earlier appeared again.

Myriad dragons flew as the four song warriors were encircled and attacked.

The four song warriors were outmatched and destroyed.

Feng Jiu Ge ignored them, he used yang pass tune to escape from the myriad dragons’ range.

Yang pass tune’s time limit was not up yet, Feng Jiu Ge had a lot of room to maneuver.

“Then what about this move?” He looked at the myriad dragon group, Fang Yuan was mixed inside, he could not be found.

Next, Feng Jiu Ge placed his right palm on his left chest, by his heart. Next, his five fingers strung on his chest, creating light and deep drumming sounds.

Thud thud thud...

The drumming continued, spreading to the entire battlefield.

Feng Jiu Ge did not need to discern who Fang Yuan was among the dragons. Because this immortal killer move was an area attack, it had a huge range.

Fang Yuan was within the range of the attack, he was immediately affected, his heart started pounding as he felt his momentum going out of control.

Fang Yuan was shocked.

After all, he had reverse flow protection seal’s defense, but he could not block this immortal killer move.

“No, most of the effect of the killer move was reflected back, only a small bit penetrated the seal and got to me. It seems that Heavenly Court has obtained some gains in deciphering reverse flow protection seal killer move.”

Fang Yuan sighed internally.

There was no helping it, he had already used reverse flow protection seal multiple times, Heavenly Court had wisdom path great experts like Fairy Zi Wei, together with Star Constellation Chessboard, it was not strange she had such advancement.

Boom boom boom.

Following the loud sounds, the dragons around Fang Yuan started to self-detonate, exploding into nothingness.

“This immortal killer move chaotic heart drumming sound was given to me by Heavenly Court, it has wisdom path effects. Once hit by it, the Gu Immortal’s thoughts will be disrupted, their killer moves would not be sustainable. Fang Yuan, how long can you last?” Feng Jiu Ge was in anticipation.

“An impressive killer move, it was designed to target me.” Fang Yuan considered the effects of this incredible move.

Right now, in the sovereign immortal aperture, large numbers of human shaped myriad self clones were self-detonating, the number of clones destroyed surpassed the number of his myriad dragons.

Looking at them, the myriad self clones were different from before.

Their appearance was much more lively, and they even had vivid expressions.

At this moment, they were sitting on the ground, thinking deeply.

After being hit by chaotic heart drumming sound, these myriad self clones self-detonated as they turned into white smoke and faded.

“After adding in self will, these myriad self clones gained wisdom path cognition, but this made them susceptible to Feng Jiu Ge’s killer move.”

Fang Yuan placed a portion of his attention into the sovereign immortal aperture, looking at his losses.

Almost every breath of time, dozens of myriad self clones died.

“However, these vanishing myriad self clones were not harmed by Feng Jiu Ge’s killer move. Most of them died from sustaining my reverse flow protection seal and ancient sword dragon transformation. When I activated myriad dragon earlier, a thousand of my myriad self clones died after all.”

That’s right.

The reason why Fang Yuan was able to use reverse flow protection seal along with other killer moves was because of these myriad self clones in the sovereign immortal aperture.

All along, Fang Yuan had been troubled by this, even though reverse flow protection seal was powerful, it took too much of his concentration and mental energy.

While fighting against Feng Jiu Ge, he was inspired by song warrior, he had an idea.

“I also have myriad self clones, if I can make these clones think for me, my battle strength would rise sharply!”

There were two difficulties in achieving this.

The first problem was that myriad self clones could not think. To think, he would need to use wisdom path thoughts, wills, or emotions.

The second problem was that even with a large number of thoughts, wills, and emotions, after dispersing them into his clones, it could not collectively benefit him alone.

Fang Yuan’s first breakthrough in this was using self love Immortal Gu and affection Immortal Gu, these two were very compatible, Fang Yuan supplemented them with a few mortal Gu to form an immortal killer move that produced a vast amount of self will!

The second difficulty was solved by Fang Yuan using a method from Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance, immortal killer move — Collective Thinking!

Of course, even though these two problems were solved, Fang Yuan still had to rely on his wisdom path grandmaster attainment level to modify myriad self to a whole new level.

“Feng Jiu Ge, your killer move is not enough.” Fang Yuan snickered in his heart.

Because he had prepared amply before the battle.

He had prepared more than a million myriad self clones in his sovereign immortal aperture!

The death of a few thousand was inconsequential.

Immortal killer move — Three Breaths Future Vision!

Immortal killer move — Myriad Dragon!

Immortal killer move — Sword Marks Targeting Death!

At once, the aura of countless Gu worms emerged from Fang Yuan’s body.

These auras were messy and disorganized, countless mortal Gu and a large number of Immortal Gu flew out and created a grand arrangement!

“How can this be?!” Feng Jiu Ge was utterly shocked: “Fang Yuan can use so many immortal killer moves at the same time!!”

He was completely taken aback.

It was unimaginable!

He had always thought that Fang Yuan could only barely activate two or three killer moves, he was at his limit already.

But seeing this now, Feng Jiu Ge finally realized that Fang Yuan’s improvement in this aspect was so huge that it went beyond his imagination.

This weakness that Fang Yuan had earlier was no longer a weakness, it was a huge strength that he had now!

There were many clones remaining from the first myriad dragon killer move, after using it again, a silvery sea of dragons appeared again.

Three breaths future vision allowed Fang Yuan to have sharp senses, while sword marks targeting death was boosted by his sword path dao marks, it was a huge threat to Feng Jiu Ge as well!

Feng Jiu Ge gritted his teeth, he advanced instead of retreating, charging into the dragon group.

Bam bam bam...

A thunderous explosion resounded in the surroundings.

Feng Jiu Ge rampaged within the myriad dragon group.

He was increasingly shocked now.

“It was not a fluke, Fang Yuan has complete control now, he has not even used his full strength yet! I cannot stay here, I need to leave!” While yang pass tune was still activated, Feng Jiu Ge decided to retreat.

He was actually forced to retreat by Fang Yuan alone!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1427: Planning to Obtain Red Lotus’ True Meaning

The orange light shone on Feng Jiu Ge and faded immediately.

This meant that Feng Jiu Ge’s immortal killer move, yang pass tune, had reached its time limit. He had to wait fourteen hours to use it again now.

But that was not important.

Feng Jiu Ge had already left the battlefield, yang pass tune’s time limit no longer mattered.

This Central Continent genius rarely seen in a thousand years landed on the ground slowly as he looked at the sky. He still had an elegant face, but he was frowning now, a long while later, he sighed deeply.

“Truly an amazing person!”

He was naturally not talking about himself, but Fang Yuan instead.

Some time ago, Fang Yuan was still an ant in Feng Jiu Ge’s eyes, not long ago, even though Fang Yuan gathered the strength of a group of immortals, he could not match Feng Jiu Ge, he had to retreat.

But in the earlier battle, Feng Jiu Ge was outmatched and had to retreat from the battlefield.

This change was too rapid, Feng Jiu Ge could not believe it even now.

“Fang Yuan had deep foundations to begin with, he was reborn from the future and possesses Spring Autumn Cicada, Giant Sun’s true inheritance, and is now the leader of Shadow Sect, possessing Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s accumulation. He is like a dormant volcano, given enough time, he would erupt with lava that gushes towards the heavens!”

“His eruption this time was not a fluke, it was bound to happen.”

"Such a person truly needs to be killed with all our strength to prevent future trouble. But Heavenly Court is trying to make use of him to obtain Red Lotus' true inheritance. This is quite unwise..."

For the first time, Feng Jiu Ge felt doubts and disagreement with Heavenly Court's plan.

In Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei was thinking.

She watched the earlier battle through Feng Jiu Ge.

Fang Yuan's battle strength surged, not only did Feng Jiu Ge feel shocked, even this great wisdom path great expert was startled.

A similar emotion to Feng Jiu Ge emerged in Fairy Zi Wei as well.

Fang Yuan's foundation was too deep, he was related to three venerables. And with his rebirth advantage, he only spent a number of years to become a Gu Immortal from a mortal. And more than that, after the earlier battle, he fought Feng Jiu Ge evenly, he was someone that even rank eight existences could not ignore.

His improvement was too rapid.

If he only had fortuitous encounters, like Ma Hong Yun, so be it, that was not worth worrying over.

The scary thing was Fang Yuan's personality!

Such a demonic path cultivator with deep ambitions, along with his lack of any weak point in morality, he had always worked his hardest without giving up or feeling dejected, he could endure hardship and could keep a low profile to achieve his goals, taking no account of sacrifices or immoral methods.

It was hard to imagine what experiences turned him into this person.

"Since rebirth, Fang Yuan had been mostly under heaven's will's control. After the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, he tried to leave the grasp of heaven's will, but he exposed himself in the dream realm. His cultivation journey has always been filled with difficulties and hurdles. If he is given some time to cultivate in peace, his growth in strength would be unimaginable!"

Wariness.

Fairy Zi Wei started to feel a trace of wariness towards Fang Yuan in her heart.

Fang Yuan's existence was a threat to her now.

She wanted to eliminate him!

The earlier she could eliminate him, the better!

Thinking like this, Fairy Zi Wei's killing intent rose sharply.

"Zi Wei, don't be so nervous." At this moment, a low voice entered Fairy Zi Wei's ears.

She had a deep impression of this voice.

She turned around and saw Duke Long indeed.

“Lord Duke Long, you are out of seclusion?!” Fairy Zi Wei was surprised and overjoyed.

Duke Long smiled: “Yes.”

“That means, Spectral Soul has been...”

“That’s right, I suppressed him completely already. But it is troublesome to soul search him. I need some time to have any effect.” Duke Long smiled lightly.

“Ah!” Fairy Zi Wei had a happy expression, her eyes were shining with life.

Such great news made her mood better, she was no longer as stressed as before.

Duke Long continued: “Compared to Red Lotus true inheritance, Fang Yuan is really nothing.”

“But he is a complete otherworldly demon...” Fairy Zi Wei hesitated.

“That is because you do not understand Red Lotus Demon Venerable.” Duke Long sighed, deep feelings were contained in his words.

“Red Lotus set up seven true inheritances, but our Heavenly Court could not find one with all our efforts. Spectral Soul Demon Venerable obtained one of them, as long as we have this clue, we can find the rest of Red Lotus’ true inheritances and get rid of them all!”

“I understand, Lord Duke Long.” Fairy Zi Wei had a solemn gaze: “We have a time path rank eight, Feng Jiu Ge, and two more rank eights in the River of Time now, what do you think of that?”

Duke Long smiled: “You are the wisdom path great grandmaster, not me. I am assured if you are the person arranging it. Next, I will mentor the great era’s Great Dream Immortal Venerable. Oh right, announce to the world that we have captured Spectral Soul alive.”

“Heavenly Court has stayed silent for too long, it is time for the world to know that Heavenly Court will always be the number one super force in the world!”

“I understand.” Fairy Zi Wei sighed deeply, watching as Duke Long took his leave.

Western Desert.

Inside the self cleansing immortal Gu formation, Fang Yuan was concentrating in the sovereign immortal aperture.

Inside the immortal aperture, there was also an active immortal Gu formation.

Compared to the self cleansing formation, this immortal formation was far smaller, but it still had two core Immortal Gu.

One was a wisdom path Immortal Gu from Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance, the other was bloodline Immortal Gu from Wu clan.

Along with thousands of mortal Gu, an immortal Gu formation was formed — Blood Red Immortal Essence Formation.

Large numbers of immortal essence stones were sent into the immortal formation and turned into red date immortal essence beads rapidly.

Fang Yuan was replenishing his immortal essence storage.

In the earlier battle, even though he forced Feng Jiu Ge to retreat, he had expended a lot of immortal essence. His biggest expenditure came from reverse flow protection seal, followed by myriad dragon. The new myriad self killer move also had higher expenditure than before, because he was using self love Immortal Gu and Affection, these two Immortal Gu, to produce self wills.

This was not a disadvantage. Stronger immortal killer moves used more immortal essence, it was common sense.

But this was Fang Yuan’s weakness.

Fang Yuan had become a rank seven only recently, he did not have much accumulation, because of worries about the immortal aperture’s calamities and tribulations, his immortal aperture’s rate of time had also slowed to its limit.

Blood red immortal essence formation was very efficient, soon, Fang Yuan used up all of the immortal essence stones he obtained from Wu clan.

Fang Yuan also sent the immortal essence stones he obtained from Lang Ya Sect into the blood red immortal essence formation.

His red date immortal essence storage gradually rose again.

“My battle strength rose, I am on par with Feng Jiu Ge now.”

“The only flaw is that myriad self needs prior preparation, if I am caught in a surprise battle, it would be a problem.”

Against Feng Jiu Ge, Fang Yuan could take a risk and activate myriad self in battle. But against rank eight Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan would need to use reverse flow protection seal immediately.

That way, if he activated reverse flow protection seal without myriad self’s help, he could not use other killer moves anymore. He would only be able to take a beating passively.

“When the investigative killer move is completely removed, I should head to the tributary of the River of Time and obtain Red Lotus’ true inheritance. Even though Spectral Soul Demon Venerable took that true inheritance, the true meaning of Red Lotus in it is endless, if I can obtain it, I will raise my time path attainment level to at least grandmaster level!”

In Shadow Sect’s information, Western Desert had two tributaries of the River of Time in their control.

But earlier, Fang Yuan already used up one to set a trap for Heavenly Court. Only one was left now.

And this tributary of the River of Time was Fang Yuan’s target now.

Right now, Central Continent was somewhere Fang Yuan could not enter. As for Southern Border, he was currently pursued by Wu clan and others. In Northern Plains, Longevity Heaven and the Huang Jin tribes would attack him.

Only in Western Desert and Eastern Sea did Fang Yuan have less pressure moving about.

Of course, he could go to Eastern Sea, but to get there, he would need to get past either Central Continent, Northern Plains, or Southern Border.

Eastern Sea had tributaries of the River of Time, but compared to going there, Fang Yuan might as well try to use the one in Western Desert instead.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1428: Fishing for Year Beasts

This sky was extremely wide, it was filled with bright red light, as if the entire sky was filled with an aurora.

Originally, there was nothing here, but now, a giant immortal Gu formation was floating around.

This immortal Gu formation gave off the grand aura of time path, it was evidently a time path immortal Gu formation.

Inside this formation, Fang Yuan, Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, Fairy Miao Yin, Lady White Rabbit, and Ying Wu Xie were waiting vigilantly.

This time path immortal Gu formation had been activated for a long time.

It used rank seven year Gu as the core, with supplementary rank eight time path Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water. Not all immortal formations' cores were necessarily the higher rank Gu, for example, this immortal Gu formation had rank eight Years Flow Like Water as the supplementary Immortal Gu instead.

This immortal Gu formation came from Hei Fan's true inheritance.

Its main purpose was to connect with the tributary of the River of Time in the immortal aperture, sending out the aura of rank seven year Gu and rank eight Years Flow Like Water to lure in year beasts.

This immortal formation was named as the immemorial year beast fishing formation by Hei Fan.

The name was quite interesting, others fished for fish, while Hei Fan fished for year beasts, and in fact, he went after immemorial year beasts!

Ever since Hei Fan created rank eight Years Flow Like Water, he had learned about the flaw of this Immortal Gu, its aura was too tempting to immemorial year beasts. It could possibly cause immemorial year beasts to enter his immortal aperture by following the scent of the Immortal Gu using the tributary of the River of Time.

Thus, Hei Fan tried many ways and thought of many solutions.

He first thought of the time path immortal Gu formation that Fang Yuan had used earlier on Feng Jiu Ge, causing him to be trapped in the River of Time. This formation could destroy the tributary of the River of Time and sealed the time in his immortal aperture to prevent immemorial year beasts from coming in.

However, there was a huge weakness in that.

Once the time no longer moved, all resources could not grow. Gu worms also could not be used in the immortal aperture, because activating any Gu worm needed time, even if it was only an instant. Any progress required time.

Thus, once this method was used, the Gu Immortal would have to move the Gu worms out of the immortal aperture and host them in their body.

This was very dangerous.

Especially in battle, it was easy for them to get destroyed by the enemy.

Hei Fan was extremely talented, he created this move only as a last resort. But he was not satisfied with it, he continued researching.

He soon found that as long as an immemorial year beast lived in his immortal aperture, other immemorial year beasts would sense it and think that this was the territory of the immemorial year beast. Even if Years Flow Like Water was extremely attractive, other immemorial year beasts would not try and barge in.

Thus, Hei Fan first thought of a way to mimic the aura of an immemorial year beast.

But his transformation path attainment level was just ordinary, he did not succeed.

Next, he considered nurturing his own immemorial year beasts.

But his grotto-heaven was not large, it was already filled with resources, it was hard to create an environment for an immemorial year beast to live. Furthermore, to nurture an immemorial year beast, he would need to start by raising ancient year beasts, treasure yellow heaven did not sell immemorial year beasts after all.

And this process needed too much time. Hei Fan already had little lifespan left at that time.

Both ways did not work, Hei Fan thought of another way, he wanted to use Years Flow Like Water to summon an immemorial year beast as his slave.

Therefore, he created an immortal killer move.

His enslavement path attainment level was at grandmaster, it was not as bad as transformation path, he managed to create year beast summoning.

But this killer move could only summon ancient year beasts, it was not easy to attract immemorial year beasts.

At the final moments of his life, he created immemorial year beast fishing formation.

This immortal Gu formation could attract immemorial year beasts, but could not control them. He was merely ‘fishing’ and not ‘summoning’.

The immemorial year beasts fished could not be controlled.

Hei Fan’s original concept was to summon an immemorial year beast under his manipulation.

Even after his death, he did not achieve his goal.

It was quite a shame.

If he had more time, he might have succeeded.

Beauty could not withstand the trials of time, the truth was, even geniuses were the same.

If Fang Yuan had time, he would follow Hei Fan’s idea and progress along this route, in time, he would be able to create an immortal killer move that directly summoned immemorial year beasts.

This was a true inheritance.

The inheritor would take over the predecessor’s true inheritance and instead of just mimicking it, they would refine and improve upon the details within, adding in their own flavor to the inheritance before passing it on again.

A true inheritance was not just a gift, one had to contribute as well.

However, Fang Yuan had no time to improve the true inheritance now.

He needed to use this immemorial year beast fishing formation to lure an immemorial year beast, before using the killer move hundred and eighty slaves to forcefully subdue it.

“If Hei Fan had hundred and eighty slaves, he would have obtained an immemorial year beast.”

“It is too dangerous for me to go to the River of Time now, not only is it a dangerous place, Heavenly Court might have some arrangements there.”

Earlier when Fang Yuan trapped Feng Jiu Ge, sending him into the River of Time, Feng Jiu Ge managed to escape in the end, but Fang Yuan had his gains from this.

“Feng Jiu Ge managed to survive, it might be due to his own ability, or Heavenly Court’s arrangements inside the River of Time.”

“No matter which one, when I enter the River of Time, the worst case is that I will be obstructed and attacked by them.”

“And inside the River of Time, I have no territorial advantage, I am not adept at fighting in it. Unless I have an immemorial year beast to defend and ensure my safety.”

Fang Yuan planned meticulously, he was not going to put himself in danger, he needed ample preparation.

Chirp chirp chirp...

At this time, sound came from the tributary of the River of Time.

“It seems that an immemorial year beast was finally lured in!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shone, he quickly activated the immortal Gu formation.

Inside the Gu formation, the tributary of the River of Time manifested.

A huge monkey was observing the Gu formation through this tributary of the River of Time.

It had huge eyes with the size of an elephant. It peeked through the tributary of the River of Time like it was a small peephole, observing the scene behind the door.

Inside this darkness, the immemorial year monkey could not find Fang Yuan and the rest, its gaze was completely stuck to Years Flow Like Water.

Once it saw the rank eight Immortal Gu, the immemorial year monkey’s appetite rose, it started salivating.

Year beasts ate year Gu as food, while years flow like water Immortal Gu could produce year Gu. The immemorial year monkey saw Years Flow Like Water, it was the same as seeing a buffet with never ending food!

Chirp chirp chirp!

It started to jump around in the River of Time while scratching its ears and body.

Next, it breathed in deeply and attempted to enter Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

Year beasts had the ability to travel from the River of Time to anywhere in the world. Fang Yuan used year beast summoning earlier, he summoned them from the River of Time. These year beasts were able to come out and enter the battlefield immediately.

As long as the River of Time flows in that area, year beasts could enter.

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture was no exception!

But entering it was harder than going to the five regions and two heavens.

Once space tore open, the immemorial year monkey stretched out its two arms.

Next, its furry arms pulled outwards, creating a huge hole. The colossal immemorial year monkey squeezed its way in.

“My sovereign immortal aperture is only a blessed land, but it can already contain immemorial year beasts. But for the immemorial year beast, this cage is too small, it is very inconvenient to enter or leave.”

Seeing this, Fang Yuan felt great joy.

Since it was hard to enter or leave, when they fight, the immemorial year monkey would not be able to escape easily.

After the immemorial year monkey entered, the space behind it mended.

Chirp chirp chirp!

The immemorial year monkey growled as it sniffed, smelling Years Flow Like Water’s strong and dense aura, it pounced at the immortal formation.

Rumble!

The immortal formation had strong defenses, even though the immemorial year monkey slammed into it, it did not shake.

Back then, Hei Fan designed this formation, he naturally considered this situation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1429: Gaining Another Rank Eight Battle Strength

The immemorial year beast fishing formation had strong defenses, it remained unmoved by the immemorial year monkey’s attack.

But this intensified the immemorial year monkey’s fighting spirit.

Boom boom boom!

It raised its fists and slammed down, its fists were like shooting stars, landing on the immortal formation each time.

The immortal formation started shaking, the interior was having tremors, each attack by the immemorial year monkey caused large numbers of mortal Gu to be destroyed.

White Rabbit, Hei Lou Lan, and Ying Wu Xie, they were rapidly replenishing mortal Gu.

Some Gu formations would break apart after losing ten percent of its Gu worms. Better Gu formations would still remain intact even if half were destroyed.

But the immemorial year beast fishing formation would remain intact as long as the core Immortal Gu was still around, and if it had sixty percent of its Gu worms left.

But its defense would collapse eventually, Fang Yuan could not allow the immemorial year monkey to continue attacking it.

Immortal killer move — Bai Xiang!

At the next moment, a crack opened in the immortal Gu formation as Bai Ning Bing flew out rapidly.

Boom!

She was extremely fast, shooting out like an ice arrow towards the immemorial year monkey.

Both were quite close together to begin with, and because of Bai Ning Bing’s speed, the immemorial year monkey could not react in time, its throat was immediately struck by Bai Ning Bing.

The immemorial year monkey took a small step back, it felt pain and growled, it grabbed towards Bai Ning Bing with its huge hands.

Instantly, Bai Ning Bing felt her vision turn dark as two huge monkey hands approached to slam down on her, casting dark shadows.

Bai Ning Bing was not fazed, she snorted as she flew away.

The immemorial year monkey’s hands slammed from above, while Bai Ning Bing flew out from under its crotch.

Originally, with her speed, she could definitely escape the monkey, but strangely, the moment she got to the immemorial year monkey’s stomach, she was caught.

The immemorial year monkey grabbed with its hands, holding Bai Ning Bing like a crystal ball.

Next, it gripped tightly before extending its palms after some grinding.

If Bai Ning Bing was in her normal body, she would have turned into meat paste. But she had used the killer move Bai Xiang already, she had turned into a five meter tall snow giant. She wore ice armor and had three heads and six arms, she was barefooted and stood on two pale blue clouds.

The immemorial year monkey opened its palms, Bai Xiang was already crushed to bits.

“Chirp chirp!”

The immemorial year monkey saw that its enemy was eliminated, it laughed happily as it threw away the ice in its hands, before slamming at the immortal Gu formation again.

The bits and pieces of Bai Xiang floated in the air, slowing gathered with the wind and in a few breaths’ time, the complete Bai Xiang had recovered, returning to a five meter giant.

This was the profundity of the killer move Bai Xiang.

Bai Ning Bing, who had turned into Bai Xiang form, was no longer contained in a flesh body, even if she had a fingernail sized piece of ice left, she could instantly return back to the giant form.

“But this time, not only did my flying speed fall, my Bai Xiang’s recovery speed has fallen too.” Bai Ning Bing thought as she flew towards the immemorial year monkey again.

Immemorial year beasts had plentiful time path dao marks in their bodies, their actions had time path effects, they could carve time path dao marks in the surroundings, they were not a force to trifle with.

Immortal killer move — Penetrating Ice Blade!

Boom!

The ice blade filled with frost energy landed on the immemorial year monkey’s shoulder, but could not pierce into its skin. Compared to the huge immemorial year monkey, the ice blade was like a tiny fruit knife.

The immemorial year monkey caught Bai Ning Bing again, she tried to dodge but failed again.

But no matter how many times she was destroyed, as long as fragments of her body remained, she would rapidly recover.

Of course, they had already checked that the immemorial year beast did not have any wild Immortal Gu, otherwise, Bai Ning Bing would not be so daring as to challenge the immemorial year beast’s battle strength.

The immemorial year monkey had a large number of wild mortal Gu, but these Gu worms were nothing to Bai Ning Bing.

The true threat was the immemorial year monkey itself.

After a dozen rounds, Bai Ning Bing got progressively slower and Bai Xiang was taking longer to recover.

In contrast, the immemorial year monkey was barely injured, there was some frost on its body, but it easily shrug it off. Bai Ning Bing’s attacks could penetrate its skin, but the immemorial year beast’s recovery speed was too strong, it completely healed in a few breaths’ time.

Even Bai Ning Bing was feeling a little dejected.

She felt like she was an annoying fly buzzing around the immemorial year monkey. Most of its attention was still on the immortal formation.

Boom boom boom!

Often, the immemorial year monkey would ignore Bai Ning Bing’s attacks as it slammed down on the immortal Gu formation.

“This immemorial year beast has great strength!” Fang Yuan observed the battle and concluded.

Like how rank eight Gu Immortals differed in strength, the same went for immemorial year beasts. This immemorial year monkey had incredible strength, Bai Ning Bing could not deal any major damage even if she used her full strength.

Even though Bai Ning Bing had incredible talent, having the Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique and Bai Xiang’s true inheritance, her foundation could not compare with the immemorial year monkey which had lived for tens of thousands of years.

The immemorial year beast fishing formation was suffering greater losses, the speed of replenishment by Fang Yuan and the others was starting to be unable to keep up.

As the immemorial year monkey got more agitated by Bai Ning Bing’s attacks, it started to attack more rapidly, the immortal formation was starting to have cracks emerging.

As the one with the strongest battle strength, Fang Yuan was not going to fight.

Letting the immemorial year monkey attack the immemorial year beast fishing formation was a form of tactic to weaken it first.

Among immemorial year beasts, they had different strengths and weaknesses according to their respective zodiac animal. In terms of strength, the immemorial year monkey was merely mid tier among them. Immemorial year dragons, bulls, and tigers had far greater strength under the same circumstances.

But even against this immemorial year monkey, the immortal Gu formation was starting to collapse.

“Miao Yin, go help Bai Ning Bing.” Fang Yuan ordered.

Fairy Miao Yin nodded as she flew out of the immortal Gu formation.

Having watched the battle for a long time and knowing the power of this immemorial year monkey, she did not dare to fight at close range, she immediately flew to a distance away.

Immortal killer move — Curved Moon!

Curved crescent moons appeared in both her eyes as she stared at the immemorial year monkey’s eyes.

After a long time...

The immemorial year monkey had no reaction, as if Fairy Miao Yin had not attacked! It continued to attack the immortal Gu formation.

Sweat appeared on Fairy Miao Yin’s forehead.

Immemorial year monkeys lived in the River of Time, their eyes were submerged in the river water, the eyes had the most dense concentration of time path dao marks.

Fairy Miao Yin’s sight attack was completely useless.

“Fine.” Fairy Miao Yin’s fighting spirit was ignited as she used another immortal killer move — Lingering Tune.

This was not an offensive killer move, it was to supplement her other move.

Next, Fairy Miao Yin started to sing.

Immortal killer move — Soft Bone Music.

The music flew towards the immemorial year monkey’s arms, and with the help of lingering tune, it coiled around the monkey’s arms without fading away.

Affected by this music, the immemorial year monkey’s arm bones started to turn soft.

The immemorial year monkey was slightly confused as it stopped for a second and looked at its arms.

Then...

It continued to send a flurry of punches, each hit made the immortal formation shake intensely.

Fairy Miao Yin’s eyelids were twitching.

She activated two killer moves in a row, but it merely made the immemorial year monkey feel a little confused.

“The difference between rank seven and eight is too huge. Our attacks are simply ineffective.”

“For the last few thousand years, the only people who could resist rank eight as rank sevens were Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge in this whole wide world.”

Similar feelings of admiration appeared in the Shadow Sect immortals’ hearts.

Immortal killer move — Crimson Ray.

Immortal killer move — Angry Bird.

Immortal killer move — Fire Phoenix.

Hei Lou Lan also flew out, she was familiar with the fire path killer moves, she activated them smoothly as they landed on the immemorial year monkey. They caused a huge commotion but did little damage.

Fang Yuan, Ying Wu Xie, and Lady White Rabbit were still inside the immortal Gu formation.

“Rank seven killer moves, even if they are profound, can barely have any effect on rank eight existences.” Fang Yuan understood this clearly, in his battles against Wu Yong and Feng Jiu Ge earlier, reverse flow protection seal dealt the most damage.

Fang Yuan used many methods to be able to fight rank eight Gu Immortals, but to kill them, it would be too hard. Not only could these rank eight Gu Immortals escape, with just Fang Yuan’s current offensive methods, he only used rank seven Immortal Gu as the cores, his defense far surpassed his offense.

If he could not, forget about the Shadow Sect immortals.

Only Ying Wu Xie’s lead soul into dream was unstoppable, it threatened even rank eight Gu Immortals.

But Fang Yuan would not use it now.

Firstly, fighting the immemorial year monkey could allow everyone to gain experience on how it felt to fight rank eight existences.

Secondly, by defeating the immemorial year monkey in a frontal battle, Fang Yuan could use hundred and eighty slaves more easily later. After subduing it, this immemorial year monkey would be more obedient.

“It is almost time.” After some time, the immortal Gu formation was at the brink of collapse as Fang Yuan flew out.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Self.

Immortal killer move — Ancient Sword Dragon Transformation.

Immortal killer move — Reverse Flow Protection Seal!

After several breaths, Fang Yuan turned into an ancient sword dragon, his silvery scales shined brightly and outstandingly.

But against the immemorial year beast, he was simply like a tiny snake beside a human.

But it was not a problem.

Next, Fang Yuan activated a rule path Immortal Gu —

Big!

Big, Big, Big.

Ancient sword dragon’s body rapidly expanded, it quickly became the same size as the immemorial year beast.

The immemorial year monkey looked at Fang Yuan with deep wariness.

Fang Yuan charged ahead and fought the immemorial year monkey directly.

Fang Yuan had strength path methods, but his strength could not compare to the immemorial year monkey. Rule path Immortal Gu Big could only make him larger.

Fang Yuan was often sent flying by the immemorial year monkey, but it suffered greater injuries than him.

This was because the attacks it dealt to the ancient sword dragon were reflected fully by reverse flow protection seal, landing back on itself.

This battle lasted for several hours.

Fang Yuan focused on attacking while the others supplemented him. Even if rank seven killer moves were ineffective, the damage still added up eventually.

The immemorial year monkey was covered in injuries, it breathed roughly as it tried to escape.

It tore through space and wanted to escape into the River of Time, but Fang Yuan blocked it with his ancient sword dragon body.

The immemorial year monkey was obstructed and could not escape.

Eventually, Fang Yuan used hundred and eighty slaves, after the third time, it lowered its head, submitting to Fang Yuan.

The immemorial year monkey was subdued!

After losing his upper extreme heavenly eagle, Fang Yuan obtained another rank eight battle strength once more!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1430: Entering the River

Sovereign immortal aperture, mini green heaven.

A huge area of rainbow dream realm floated in the sky, turning slowly as time passed.

A lump of self will was here, turning into Fang Yuan’s appearance, it was very realistic.

Within the self will, there was some red date immortal essence and several Gu worms.

“This is the final attempt for now.” Fang Yuan’s self will muttered as he started acting.

As the red date immortal essence was expended, at the same time, self love Immortal Gu and affection Immortal Gu were activated, followed by some supplementary mortal Gu.

Soon, a large amount of self will gushed out, turning Fang Yuan’s self will into a several meter tall giant.

After stopping his Gu worm activation, Fang Yuan’s self will went to rest for a while.

The entire self will giant had shrunk by ten percent, it was more dense and had greater ability to think for itself.

Next, Fang Yuan’s self will activated another immortal killer move.

This move had no name, Fang Yuan had created it recently to deal with the dream realm.

The immortal killer move shined with bright lights, stabbing into the dream realm as if it was made of sharp swords.

A few minutes later, Fang Yuan stopped his killer move, the entire self will giant shrunk until it was a baby’s size. The pile of red date immortal essence was almost fully expended.

“I failed after all.” Fang Yuan’s self will sighed deeply.

During the battle of the dream realm, Fang Yuan obtained a lot of Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies. But on the way to Western Desert from Southern Border, he sacrificed a large number of them to block the enemies.

After that, the remaining Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies that he still had turned back to dream realms when they reached their time limit as they were incomplete bodies.

Fang Yuan kept all these dream realms in mini green heaven.

Fang Yuan’s sovereign blessed land had the arrangement of five regions and nine heavens. The area was so huge that it would scare Gu Immortals to death.

But most of these areas were filled with resources due to Fang Yuan’s management. Only two places were empty, one was mini red heaven, the other was mini green heaven.

Not long ago, Fang Yuan had chosen to fight the immemorial year monkey in mini red heaven.

As for mini green heaven, it was used to contain dream realms.

These dream realms were all invaded by heaven’s will, they were not uncontaminated, they were dangerously filled with heaven’s will.

When heaven’s will lurked inside Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture, heaven’s will would be able to connect with the outside world, even if the immortal aperture isolated it. Even if Fang Yuan had Dark Limit, he would be detected.

Fang Yuan had learned this not too long ago.

However, Fang Yuan was affected by the investigative killer move of Heavenly Court’s Fairy Zi Wei earlier, and he did not have Dark Limit, since he was exposed anyway, he placed these portions of heaven’s will in his sovereign immortal aperture, there was no big deal.

Fang Yuan had been thinking of how to use this heaven’s will to gain benefits.

Exploring dream realms, taking the true meaning inside and raising his attainment levels. This was advantageous to Fang Yuan. Especially when he chose these dream realms, they suited him very much.

But they were currently being pursued while the dream realms were full of heaven’s will, all sorts of reasons made Fang Yuan unable to explore the dream realms properly.

“But what if I get rid of all the heaven’s will inside these dream realms?”

This thought appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind and rooted itself firmly.

Theoretically, it was possible.

Because true meaning was contained within dream realms, when people explore them successfully, they could take the true meaning and increase the attainment levels.

And because the heaven’s will invaded these dream realms, since it could enter, it could naturally be removed as well.

Or rather, if heaven’s will could invade the dream realms, why couldn’t his self will do the same?

In the five hundred years of his previous life, Fang Yuan had heard of a certain wisdom path great expert who invented a wisdom path method to use wills or emotions to invade dream realms and explore them.

All sorts of reasons confirmed to Fang Yuan that this was a possible way.

But his progress was not smooth.

He used many methods and created immortal killer moves, but they were not effective.

Not only did he fail to even touch heaven’s will, the self will’s invasion of the dream realm even failed completely.

“It seems that my advantage in dream realms is only due to rebirth. If I look at it properly, I had no deep dream path research even in my previous life. Maybe when my wisdom path attainment level rises again in the future, I would have more progress.”

Fang Yuan calmly realized his insufficiency, he stopped hesitating.

He started to use another immortal killer move on the dream realm.

Soon, these dream realms turned into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies!

Fang Yuan inherited Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance, he naturally knew the way to turn dream realms into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies. Of course, the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies refined were incomplete. And because he lacked some Immortal Gu, these bodies were inferior to the ones Purple Mountain True Monarch created during the battle of the dream realm.

However, Fang Yuan was satisfied.

He only wanted to move these dream realms out of his sovereign immortal aperture.

Next, the dream realms in Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture were all turned into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies and extracted.

Next, under Fang Yuan’s arrangements, these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were all placed into the positions that Fang Yuan planned earlier.

Next, he ordered them to self-detonate and turn into dream realms again.

These dream realms formed a tight defense that could block enemies. Even if Heavenly Court’s rank eight Gu Immortals came, they would not be able to do anything to these dream realms.

After his arrangements, Fang Yuan started to set up the immortal Gu formation.

Right now, he was deep under a nameless desert.

There was a huge natural solutional cave, the sand here had mixed with gold, forming gold rocks, they were shining brightly.

But the most attractive thing to Fang Yuan was that at the center of the cave, there was a tributary of the River of Time.

The size of this tributary of the River of Time was smaller than the previous one, but it was more stable. Using Fang Yuan’s immortal Gu formation, he would be able to reach the River of Time using this tributary.

Indeed, this tributary of the River of Time was the final one that Shadow Sect had in Western Desert.

Fang Yuan started to set up his immortal Gu formation.

His formation path attainment level was at grandmaster, when he was chased by Heavenly Court, he had interacted with formation path the most, be it the time exile formation, self cleansing formation, or immemorial year beast fishing formation, they were all immortal Gu formations. These experiences made him more proficient in creating formations.

Thus, he set up this immortal Gu formation calmly and with great confidence.

And as expected, Fang Yuan created the immortal Gu formation in merely a few minutes.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest who were patrolling the area were immediately called back.

Next, they went into his sovereign immortal aperture as Fang Yuan ordered Ying Wu Xie: “You can act now.”

Immortal killer move — Burning Soul Bursting Luck!

Ying Wu Xie used this immortal killer move once more, because of Connect Luck, Fang Yuan and the rest would become very lucky for the following period of time.

Fang Yuan wanted to use it himself too.

But burning soul bursting luck greatly expended the soul foundation, he had used it once before, he had no foundation to use it again.

Ying Wu Xie was Spectral Soul’s split soul, he had a deep soul foundation and could use burning soul bursting luck multiple times. But Fang Yuan could not let his soul foundation fall too drastically.

Lead soul into dream needed Ying Wu Xie to have a strong soul foundation, otherwise, it would easily result in a killer move backlash. If Ying Wu Xie tries to use lead soul into dream on a rank eight and faces a backlash, he would end up in the dream realm himself and be unable to escape.

Strength came with a price.

One had to pay a price for everything they gained.

The immortal Gu formation resonated, under its influence, the flowing tributary of the River of Time started to become turbulent, the waves were becoming fiercer.

There were a huge number of myriad self clones in Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

Together with burning soul bursting luck and the immemorial year monkey.

He had done all the preparations he could.

He knew that this trip to the River of Time was dangerous, but he had to go.

Immortal killer move — Reverse Flow Protection Seal.

Immortal killer move — Ancient Year Beast Transformation!

At the next moment, he turned into an ancient desolate beast as the immortal formation burst out with strong light, charging into the tributary of the River of Time and creating a huge hole.

Fang Yuan went in immediately.

Swish swish swish!

Huge waves caused countless ripples to form.

The hole behind him only lasted a few breaths of time before vanishing.

Fang Yuan's gaze was completely attracted to the sight in front of him.

The River of Time!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1431: Wild Gu Come

Legend says there was a river in this world, known as the River of Time!

It flowed through the past, the present, and the future.

Everything in the world was like fish in the river, and under the currents, the fish could only flow downwards.

Without the River of Time, the world would be still, becoming a drawing. Only with this river can change occur, and the world can move, either prospering or withering.

“I am in the River of Time again.” Fang Yuan sighed.

He looked around, the river was huge and wide, even though it was called the River of Time, it was as vast as the sea.

In the darkness of this space, a huge river was flowing unceasingly.

The river water was pale white, but countless ripples were colliding and creating beautiful colors at all times.

The lights were dazzling and reflecting off Fang Yuan's face.

Fang Yuan was dazed for a moment before recovering.

He opened his immortal aperture's entrance and let out the immemorial year monkey.

“Ook ook ook.” This huge beast returned to its home, it was very excited.

Plop!

It landed in the river water and created a huge splash.

Fang Yuan also turned into an ancient year monkey, he was much smaller than the immemorial year monkey. He was floating in the air now as he was not a true year beast. Even though his transformation path dao marks had turned into time path dao marks for him to adapt to this place, it was better to not touch the water of the River of Time if he could.

“Let’s go.” Fang Yuan ordered, as the immemorial year monkey started to swim.

The benefit of beating it earlier was showing, it was much more obedient than the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

However, even though he used hundred and eighty slaves, because Fang Yuan’s soul foundation had fallen greatly, it was quite hard to control this immemorial year monkey.

“Even though we are in a peaceful situation now, the enslavement is already difficult, my soul feels very heavy. If we are in intense battle, I may not be able to order the immemorial year monkey.”

Fang Yuan was alerted inwardly.

This was a flaw, but there was no helping it, Fang Yuan had done his best.

They moved on quietly.

Swish swish swish...

Tides continued to crash.

Fang Yuan was here for the first time using his physical body.

The last few times, he used Spring Autumn Cicada to send his will into the river, because of influences like heaven’s will, he only had a glimpse of the River of Time, he could not observe it in full, but now, he had an eye-opening experience.

The River of Time was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, it was widely known and was inside <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

But to enter with one’s physical body, they had to be Gu Immortal experts with deep time path foundation. Fang Yuan could enter even though he lacked that because of transformation path, as well as Purple Mountain True Monarch’s and Hei Fan’s inheritances.

The River of Time was not without life.

Fang Yuan first saw a couple of wild year Gu chasing each other before entering the river water again.

Next, he saw groups of wild time path Gu worms flying in the sky, they were like countless flies.

“Hmm?” Five to six wild year Gu approached Fang Yuan and quietly landed on him without moving anymore.

“So that’s it.” Fang Yuan’s thoughts shifted as he realized why.

He was now an ancient year monkey, because of rank eight attitude Gu and familiar face, wild Gu could not discern his aura, they treated him as a wild ancient year monkey.

These few time path mortal Gu were all attracted to Fang Yuan’s time path dao marks, they felt that it was the best place to live, so they went to him.

It was indeed so.

In nature, Gu worms were fragile. Even though wild Gu worms could absorb the natural essence of heaven and earth, they were still in danger even if they had strong abilities.

Thus, living in strong lifeforms was their way of survival.

Fang Yuan moved for a few minutes and already had several hundred wild mortal Gu in him.

Most were day Gu and month Gu, there were no year Gu.

As for the immemorial year monkey, it had greater gains.

This immemorial year monkey had wild mortal Gu in it, but they were destroyed when fighting Fang Yuan, there were few left.

And now, they were greatly replenished.

The immemorial year monkey was naturally more attractive than Fang Yuan, it was very popular with the wild time path mortal Gu, as it swam in the river, swarms of time path Gu worms surrounded it like a black cloud.

But this situation only lasted for a moment before slowing down rapidly.

Like how beasts occupied territories, when Fang Yuan and the immemorial year monkey had a large number of wild mortal Gu on them, other mortal Gu would feel that it was crowded and stop coming to them.

Fang Yuan thought about it, he did not do anything to these wild mortal Gu.

With his current capabilities, it was easy for him to refine these wild mortal Gu.

However, that would ruin Fang Yuan’s disguise.

Furthermore, these wild time path mortal Gu were nothing special. Unless they were Immortal Gu, they had little attraction to Fang Yuan.

“Roar!”

While they were traveling, an ancient year tiger emerged from the water, but it left without even pausing, escaping far away.

This situation had happened many times.

The immemorial year monkey was simply like an express pass on their journey.

In fact, other than year beasts, there were also month beasts and day beasts. Similar to year beasts, they fed on month Gu and day Gu respectively.

After two hours, the River of Time was still turbulent while darkness surrounded them.

The scenery had not changed, it was almost as if everyone was still at the same spot where they started.

Half the body of an immemorial year monkey was submerged in the water, moving forward slowly like a floating hill.

As for Fang Yuan, he turned into an ancient year monkey and floated in the air above the river, moving slowly.

Fang Yuan was certain, because he had Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance, the feeling in his heart intensified. As long as he followed this feeling, he would definitely find that Red Lotus true inheritance that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable obtained.

The thing that obstructed him other than the treacherous River of Time was Heavenly Court’s pursuit and ambush.

Rumble!

Suddenly, with a loud sound, a current shot out of the raging River of Time.

The current shot out towards the left of Fang Yuan, in front of him.

“Grrrr.” The immemorial year monkey growled as a hint of seriousness showed on its relaxed face.

“This is a sudden spring.” Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk slightly.

The River of Time was not safe, some river segments were very dangerous with many uncertainties.

Sudden springs were one of them.

When traveling in this river segment, one had to be wary of suddenly rising springs. If they are hit by it, a vast number of time path dao marks would be carved on the target, they might suffer heavy injuries or die, they might even lose lifespan.

Fang Yuan vigilantly moved towards the immemorial year monkey’s head, he lacked methods to deal with sudden springs, he could only use this immemorial year beast’s tough body to resist it.

They had to cross this river, it was necessary to get to Red Lotus’ true inheritance.

Just when Fang Yuan was fully focused on traveling in the river, near the tributary of the River of Time in Western Desert, three Gu Immortals arrived.

One rank seven Gu Immortal with great elegance and two rank eight Gu Immortals that were stable like mountains.

It was Feng Jiu Ge, as well as the two rank eight Gu Immortals from Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei’s plan was to find Red Lotus’ true inheritance using Fang Yuan as the key.

Now that Fang Yuan had entered the River of Time to obtain Red Lotus’ true inheritance, she was definitely going to send people after him.

“To think this otherworldly demon is so powerful, he could actually fight

Brother Feng evenly.”

“With our help, no matter how talented he is, he cannot escape.”

The two rank eight Gu Immortals had not met up with Feng Jiu Ge for a long time, and he was not someone who would conceal information for the sake of reputation, he directly explained Fang Yuan’s sharp rise in battle strength to them.

“If we work together, we should be able to kill Fang Yuan.” Feng Jiu Ge nodded slightly.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength was similar to his. Against one rank eight Gu Immortal, it would be barely enough, against two, it would be extremely difficult.

Especially now, Feng Jiu Ge’s chaotic heart drumming sound was modified by Fairy Zi Wei again, it was the trump card to deal with Fang Yuan.

“Hmm? These are dream realms!” A moment later, Feng Jiu Ge and the rest could not help but land, looking helplessly at the dream realm defensive line.

“It seems we can only wait.”

“The dream realms move constantly, a gap will appear in the defense soon, we will be able to enter.”

“Other than us, Lord Huang Shi is in the River of Time. He is the person most skilled with fighting in the River of Time for the last ten thousand years! Fang Yuan is not his match.”

The three immortals discussed, deciding to stay and wait for an opportunity.

In the River of Time.

“Grrrrrr.”

The immemorial year monkey growled, its body was covered in injuries.

Fang Yuan turned around, looking at the river segment behind him, he felt a little fearful.

“Thankfully, the immemorial year monkey is here to defend me, otherwise, how could we get past this place so easily?”

The sudden springs had great power, they had at least rank seven killer move strength, with most being rank eight, Fang Yuan even saw a sudden spring that had rank nine power.

The eruption of this sudden spring was like a huge waterfall that flowed upwards towards heaven.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan was far from it when it burst out, he was safe.

“The immemorial year monkey is quite injured, but my methods are limited, I cannot heal it.” Fang Yuan inspected and mentally sighed.

Other paths’ healing methods were restricted here. In terms of time path methods, Fang Yuan only had Man as Before, but this Immortal Gu only worked on human bodies.

Fang Yuan could only let the immemorial year monkey recover on its own.

“Should I stop for a moment and rest? For the immemorial year monkey to recover fully?”

Fang Yuan could not help but hesitate.

The sudden springs were just the first hurdle to Red Lotus' true inheritance, Fang Yuan still had to face the dark web spiders, one finger flow sharks, and a special blade river segment.

These three hurdles were more dangerous than the sudden springs.

"Sudden spring river segment?" Lord Huang Shi looked at the river in front of him as he frowned.

"According to Lady Zi Wei, Fang Yuan is right ahead." Immediately after, Lord Huang Shi's eyes shined brightly as he flew towards the sudden spring river segment resolutely.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1432: Huang Shi's Pursuit

Boom!

A huge sudden spring burst out of the peaceful river surface.

Compared to this sudden spring, Lord Huang Shi, who was flying in the air, resembled a tiny mosquito.

Even before the sudden spring hit him, Lord Huang Shi felt like it was getting faster and faster!

That was not true of course, the sudden spring actually became slower as it got higher and higher, the reason why Lord Huang Shi felt that was because his own relative speed had fallen.

This was the River of Time, the eruption of sudden springs will cause everything around it to slow down. In that case, the target would find it harder to escape.

"Hmph." Lord Huang Shi was not fazed, at the crucial moment, bright light shone from his head.

At the next instance, he was completely restored to normal condition as he retreated, causing the sudden spring to miss its target.

Rumble!

With another loud sound, the sudden spring crashed back into the river and created a huge wave.

Lord Huang Shi wiped the sweat off his forehead.

"This sudden spring has the power of a rank eight killer move, even I have to be careful, if I got hit, I would suffer great injuries."

"If I encounter a rank nine level sudden spring, I would definitely be gravely injured, I might even die."

Lord Huang Shi felt pressured in his heart.

Even though he was a rank eight Gu Immortal and had territorial advantage when fighting in the River of Time.

He knew that Fang Yuan had luck path methods, and even a rather comprehensive all living beings luck true inheritance.

Being at the sudden spring river segment, other than one’s strength, one had to depend on their own luck.

“I am chasing after Fang Yuan now, this is not beneficial to him. According to the profundities of luck path, my journey will not be smooth, it will be filled with problems.”

“Fang Yuan chose this route to trouble me, this is a good plan.”

“However...” Lord Huang Shi frowned, feeling doubts: “No matter how lucky Fang Yuan is, he can’t avoid all the sudden springs, right? Even if rank nine sudden springs are rare, those rank seven sudden springs are countless, and there are also many rank eight sudden springs. How did he pass them? Did he use reverse flow protection seal the entire time?”

If he was using reverse flow protection seal, this would be great news to Lord Huang Shi.

Because this sudden spring river segment was very long, if Fang Yuan used his killer move the entire time, his immortal essence would be greatly expended. This would be helpful when Lord Huang Shi fights him later.

Lord Huang Shi did not expect that Fang Yuan would enslave an immemorial year monkey to act as his shield.

Even though Fang Yuan could control the upper extreme heavenly eagle, Heavenly Court attributed that to Hei Fan’s true inheritance. Fang Yuan was controlling a rank eight existence with rank seven cultivation level, it was a shocking accomplishment.

But the truth was hundred and eighty slaves, and years flow like water Immortal Gu’s flaw.

Especially the latter, Hei Fan did not expose his own weakness. This secret was unknown to Heavenly Court, they could not deduce that Fang Yuan had a way to lure immemorial year beasts to him.

Because of such reasons, Heavenly Court did not manage to learn that Fang Yuan could control an immemorial year beast.

After a few minutes, Lord Huang Shi flew out of the sudden spring river segment.

Fairy Zi Wei’s guidance was transmitted to him again.

Lord Huang Shi changed directions, raising his speed as he flew towards Fang Yuan.

A moment later, his figure paused as he looked ahead uncertainly.

“Dark web spider!” Lord Huang Shi had a grim expression as he muttered this.

In front of him, there was a huge spider with a pale-white body, it was unmoving on a huge web.

The spider was larger than the sudden spring earlier, it was like a mountain, its four limbs were like ridges.

Compared to the spider, Lord Huang Shi was tiny, he was like an ant in front of an elephant.

Larger than the dark web spider was the huge web it was on.

This huge web was made of a crystal-like substance, some threads were thin, while others were thick like tree trunks. The web was not flat, it was weaved into a forest-like cage.

Countless spider threads stabbed into the water of the River of Time like roots. No matter how the water flowed, these threads remained stationary.

A vast number of spider threads weaved together into a huge crystal nest. Each of the connectors had many complex threads linking to different directions.

Lord Huang Shi’s heart sank.

He did not dare to believe it, Fang Yuan and the rest managed to get past here to head to Red Lotus’ true inheritance?

He confirmed it again, Fairy Zi Wei’s directions were not wrong.

This made him even more confident of his conjuncture now, Fang Yuan had designed this route to target him!

“Fang Yuan wants to use this dangerous place to force me to retreat?” Lord Huang Shi had a cold expression, he snorted before flying into the huge crystal nest.

Each dark web spider was an immemorial desolate beast, they had their own territories in the River of Time, in their territory, even immemorial desolate beasts would not dare to rampage.

It was a predator at the top of the food chain.

The dark web spider relies on its unimaginable great strength besides its huge body, as well as its sharp mouth and this crystal nest.

Each crystal nest thread is extraordinary, Gu Immortals of the past gave it a fanciful name, used until today —

Peaceful time thread.

Any rank seven or below existence would be in a state of frozen time if they touch the thread. They cannot move and would end up being eaten by the dark web spider which moves slowly towards it.

For someone like Lord Huang Shi, one single thread of peaceful time thread cannot affect him, but with a hundred of them together, even he would be in grave danger.

And in the entire crystal nest, how many peaceful time threads were there? Simply uncountable!

Lord Huang Shi moved very very slowly.

He carefully moved past each of the threads that had weaved into a web.

He had thought of detouring this dangerous place to pursue Fang Yuan.

But this way, he would need to travel a long route, Fang Yuan would gain a lot of time instead.

And what if this Red Lotus true inheritance was inside the crystal nests to begin with?

Thus, Lord Huang Shi had to step into this dangerous place and pursue Fang Yuan.

“As long as I remain careful and avoid touching any peaceful time thread, I will be able to get through this safely.” Lord Huang Shi thought as a loud explosion occurred, there was incredible sound resembling the crashing of heaven and earth.

The crystal web nest shook along with the loud sound waves.

The dark web spider was alerted, its hundred and eighty compound eyes stared at Lord Huang Shi!

“Damn it!”

“It must be Fang Yuan’s trap!”

Lord Huang Shi was furious, but he felt little shock. If he was Fang Yuan, he would have set the same trap against his enemies.

“Since I am able to get here, I have my assurance, I am able to get past this dangerous area while the dark web spider is alerted!”

With a cold snort, Lord Huang Shi started to use his immortal killer move on the crystal threads.

These crystal threads were not easy to destroy even though they were fragile, because any killer move would freeze in time as long as they got closer to the threads.

Of course, against rank eight killer moves, the peaceful time threads had an upper limit in terms of defense.

Lord Huang Shi started to act, using his rank eight killer moves to attack the crystal threads, at an increasingly fast speed.

He was a time path great expert, he had effective methods against the peaceful time threads.

Furthermore, that dark web spider moved slowly, it could not catch up to Lord Huang Shi.

Lord Huang Shi did not want to fight the dark web spider, he had a huge responsibility on him.

But his path of retreat was not smooth, there were often immortal killer moves, sound waves, frost, and flames obstructing him.

Lord Huang Shi’s speed was greatly obstructed, he was eventually caught up by the spider as they fought intensely.

Bam bam bam...

After an intense battle, Lord Huang Shi broke free from the dark web spider and left its territory.

But now, he was in a more sorry state than before, not only was he covered in dust, he even suffered minor injuries.

“This damn Fang Yuan, how many traps did he set! And these traps all activate at the perfect timing, there is deep planning in this!”

Lord Huang Shi suffered a loss, he was filled with rage, he would not let Fang Yuan off.

He flew while he treated his injuries.

Not long after, he entered a weird river segment.

“What is going on? I can feel a strong sword path and blade path aura in this river segment?” Lord Huang Shi was surprised as suspicion flashed on his face.

He slowed down and observed, this river segment had permeating sword qi and blade light.

“Wait, don’t tell me, this is...”

Lord Huang Shi frowned.

“I traveled upstream towards the past, in terms of distance, I probably went back to a hundred thousand years ago, I am at the Late Antiquity Era!”

“Late Antiquity Era, sword path, blade path...”

“I know! Western Desert’s Xi Yuan, this person cultivated sword path, created sword abyss, and killed three rank eight Gu Immortals. There is another blade path demonic immortal, he is known as Dao Jiu Lang, he had overwhelming demonic might, rampaging in Western Desert, he managed to break the expulsion formation and shook the world. These two fought before, it was an intense fight that led to great destruction.”

Lord Huang Shi used his investigative methods, and as expected, this segment of the river was affected by the battle between these two rank eight great experts, causing this to become a blade river segment.

It was more dangerous to get past here compared to the sudden spring river segment, because it was possible that Dao Jiu Lang’s or Xi Yuan’s immortal killer moves would suddenly appear and attack.

When sudden springs occur, there is a process in their eruptions. But this blade river segment did not have that.

“Fang Yuan and the rest actually came here? Are they trying to die!” Lord Huang Shi gritted his teeth, entering.

Since Fang Yuan and the rest could enter, as a rank eight great expert, he could not back down.

Fairy Zi Wei guided him as Lord Huang Shi got closer to his target.

Roar!

The immemorial year monkey fought in turbulent waves, it was covered in injuries, blood was flowing as the surrounding area was dyed red.

On the immemorial year monkey, Bai Ning Bing, Fairy Miao Yin, and the rest were defending themselves.

“I finally found you all!” Lord Huang Shi’s eyes shined brightly, he charged ahead without thinking!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1433: How Shameless Could It Get?!

Bai Ning Bing and the rest were trapped in the blade river segment, they could not escape, Lord Huang Shi saw this great opportunity, how could he let it go?

He had chased them along the way, he was extremely furious, now that he saw his prey, he immediately pounced forth.

Swish swish swish!

The River of Time had surging waves.

Mixed within were sword qi and blade light, shooting towards the Shadow Sect immortals.

Lord Huang Shi was not exempted, he was ‘taken care of’ by the sword qi and blade light, but his defensive methods were not weaker than Shadow Sect’s immortals, he had an easier time.

Immortal killer move — Sun Moon Divine Shuttle.

Lord Huang Shi looked down as he pushed with both hands, countless arrowhead shuttles shot out like a storm, towards the Shadow Sect immortals.

“Enemy!” Bai Ning Bing shouted to alert them.

Sun moon divine shuttle was very powerful, even though Bai Ning Bing and the rest defended themselves, they were heavily suppressed by the killer move.

Roar!

This angered the immemorial year monkey, it growled as it exerted force in its lower body, its entire body left the river water as it jumped towards the sky.

Sun moon divine shuttle landed on its body and created small bleeding holes, but for this huge immemorial year monkey, that was only a light wound.

The huge monkey hands grabbed towards Lord Huang Shi while whipping up fierce winds.

Feeling this terrifying power, Lord Huang Shi’s eyelids twitched, he expressed shock on his face.

“This immemorial year monkey is the real deal, it is not Fang Yuan’s transformation?!”

“They actually control a rank eight battle strength like this immemorial year monkey?”

Lord Huang Shi was not a strength path or transformation path Gu Immortal, he was not good at close combat. Even though he was a Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortal, against the immemorial year monkey, he had to retreat.

He moved rapidly, getting to an area far away in an instant.

In here, there were dense time path dao marks, he could fight with great strength.

The immemorial year monkey missed and landed back into the river, but it growled and leaped again, jumping into the sky and attacking Lord Huang Shi.

Lord Huang Shi’s eyes shined brightly.

He saw that the immemorial year monkey was covered in wounds, it was not in its best condition. But that was natural, the immemorial year monkey must have played a huge part for Fang Yuan and the rest to get here, it had likely lost thirty to forty percent of its strength.

“In that case.” Lord Huang Shi’s battle intent became firmer.

He breathed in deeply and used another immortal killer move.

Immediately, a yellow soil rock appeared above his head. The rock moved slowly, it made the time around Lord Huang Shi move slowly too.

Next, dust and sand emerged from the rock and landed on the immemorial year monkey in a flash.

Affected by the yellow dust, the immemorial year monkey’s rate of time reduced rapidly, it became slower and slower, the time it took to jump became much longer.

Lord Huang Shi saw this and let out a breath of air, feeling joyful.

He was very confident in his method, as the dust accumulates, the immemorial year beast would get even slower.

At this rate, Lord Huang Shi would control the situation very soon.

But right at this moment!

Bam!

A huge wave shot towards the sky, directly towards Lord Huang Shi.

From within the pale wave of the River of Time, a strong blade light shot out with blinding light.

The blade light landed on Lord Huang Shi as his body shook, he spat out a mouthful of blood!

Lord Huang Shi was injured, the dust and sand shook as the immemorial year monkey struggled from within.

Lord Huang Shi quickly held his breath and used his immortal killer move more intensely, making the dust thicker to trap the immemorial year monkey.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest used their methods to unleash frost, flames, and sound waves on the immemorial year monkey, but they could not affect this sand and dust.

In the River of Time, time path lifeforms were greatly strengthened, Bai Ning Bing and the rest were weaker than Lord Huang Shi to begin with, due to these time path dao marks, their battle strength was even lower than usual.

At the crucial moment, Ying Wu Xie's expression turned grim, he was about to use the invincible lead soul into dream.

"Hmm?" But at this moment, Ying Wu Xie lost his target.

He could not sense the existence of Lord Huang Shi.

"Lead soul into dream needs to sense the other party to activate. Otherwise, it is useless. This Lord Huang Shi already has a way to hide from my soul path senses?"

"Oh? The defensive killer move that Lady Zi Wei gave me activated... hehe." Lord Huang Shi snickered coldly.

The moment Ying Wu Xie wanted to use lead soul into dream, he had a feeling.

Even though lead soul into dream was powerful, it had flaws too, it was not a perfect killer move.

Fairy Zi Wei sent Lord Huang Shi on this mission alone to pursue Fang Yuan and the rest, she naturally had measures against lead soul into dream. After all, Heavenly Court had suffered greatly from it.

People learn from their mistakes, not to mention Fairy Zi Wei from Heavenly Court.

Lord Huang Shi came prepared, lead soul into dream could not be used.

"Oh no!" Ying Wu Xie and the rest had a change of expression, they felt strong pressure in their hearts.

They could not salvage the situation, they could only rely on Fang Yuan now.

But where was Fang Yuan?

Lord Huang Shi considered this problem.

He had thought that this immemorial year monkey was Fang Yuan's transformation to scare him, but after fighting, he realized it was a real immemorial year monkey.

Since the battle started, Fang Yuan had not shown up. He who possessed reverse flow protection seal and had battle strength equal to Feng Jiu Ge was the biggest target that Lord Huang Shi was wary of now.

The longer Fang Yuan stayed hidden, the more alert he felt.

"Fang Yuan, you're still not coming out? If you wait any longer, hehe... hmm?" Lord Huang Shi was shocked.

At this moment, a huge wave from the River of Time swept towards him.

"Again?!" Lord Huang Shi was stifled.

This huge wave avoided the immemorial year monkey and came after him instead, time and again.

His luck was too horrible!

Rumble!

The huge wave hit Lord Huang Shi as he spat out blood once more, increasing the severity of his injuries.

He could not dodge. Not only because he was using this immortal killer move, but also because the wave slowed time when it approached, even if he dodged the water, he could not dodge the sword qi and blade light that were incredibly fast.

Lord Huang Shi chose to resist the wave, to find a chance to capture the immemorial year monkey, Bai Ning Bing, and the rest.

“Right now, I have the advantage, I don’t believe that Fang Yuan will continue to watch!” Lord Huang Shi made up his mind.

Swish swish swish!

Three waves swept towards Lord Huang Shi.

“What? At me again?!” Instantly, Lord Huang Shi stared with wide eyes, he wanted to scream.

Normally speaking, the huge immemorial year monkey would have a higher chance of getting hit by the waves. But since the battle started, only Lord Huang Shi had gotten hit by them.

“Their luck is too good? Not a single wave hit them?”

“Wait.” Lord Huang Shi shook: “Is this the effect of Fang Yuan’s luck path methods?”

He thought of a possibility.

“Hmph! Even so, luck path cannot change the outcome of this battle.”

“Luck path is suppressed in here to begin with. It is impossible for Fang Yuan to manipulate the waves here using luck path, only supreme time path methods can do it.”

“I have the territorial advantage here!”

Lord Huang Shi calmed down as he continued to suppress the immemorial year monkey, Bai Ning Bing, and the rest, forcing Fang Yuan to show up.

“Lord Huang Shi fell for it.”

“This is like what sect leader predicted... let’s continue attacking, don’t expose any flaws.”

Bai Ning Bing and the rest had grim expressions, but they were conversing secretly.

At the same time, on an island deep under the river.

The image was moving in front of Fang Yuan, it was displaying the scene of Lord Huang Shi fighting against the immemorial year monkey.

This was a stone lotus island, the one on which Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had obtained the Red Lotus true inheritance. Fang Yuan had arrived here long ago!

The investigative killer move used by Fairy Zi Wei on Fang Yuan had been removed already, as for Bai Ning Bing and the rest, even though there was the self cleansing immortal formation, they could not make it in time.

If he brought them, Fang Yuan's traces would be exposed. Even inside the sovereign immortal aperture, they would be found out.

It was like Fang Yuan using qi luck sensation to find out the locations of Ying Wu Xie and the rest. They could not escape even if they went into the immortal aperture.

Even though immortal apertures were small worlds isolated from the outside world, if there were clues inside the immortal aperture, deductions were still possible.

Fang Yuan could do it, Fairy Zi Wei could too, and so could heaven's will.

As long as heaven's will was in the immortal aperture, the heaven's will in the five regions and two heavens would be able to sense Fang Yuan's location.

Fang Yuan learned about this long ago.

Even though it was a weakness, in Fang Yuan's perspective, he could make use of it.

He used Ying Wu Xie and the rest to deceive Fairy Zi Wei so that Lord Huang Shi underestimated Fang Yuan's actual distance traveled, even though it was nothing much, after getting Red Lotus' true inheritance, Fang Yuan could use this advantage to its limit.

That's right.

Red Lotus' true inheritance had the ability to manipulate the nearby river segment.

In fact, this blade river segment was purposely chosen by Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

But when this ability was used, it would expend the stone lotus island's foundation. After this battle, the tattered stone lotus island would break apart entirely.

"Spectral Soul's will, let me lend you a hand." Fang Yuan looked at Spectral Soul's will, it was thin and had a hard time controlling the waves, thus he helped.

Immediately, a huge amount of will gushed out and entered Spectral Soul's will.

Spectral Soul's will became strengthened and growled.

At the same time, a huge wave appeared on the battlefield.

"This, this, this!" Lord Huang Shi's eyeballs were almost popping out.

The size of this huge wave was unprecedented, the blade light and sword qi inside had not shot out yet, but Lord Huang Shi also felt a strong threat to his life.

Lord Huang Shi gritted his teeth, even though this colossal wave would hit him, it would also implicate the immemorial year monkey and force out Fang Yuan.

"I will see who can last longer!" Lord Huang Shi was thinking of that, when suddenly, a small part of the wave split to allow the immemorial year monkey to pass through before it headed towards Lord Huang Shi entirely.

"What!?"

Lord Huang Shi was about to scream in anger.

How shameless could it get?!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1434: Huang Shi's Death

Rumble!

The enormous wave moved past the immemorial year monkey, encircling and attacking Lord Huang Shi.

Lord Huang Shi's heart instantly chilled at that moment.

He was a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal, an elite among rank eight experts, right now, he finally realized it.

“Fang Yuan and these people can actually control this river segment?!”

He was immensely shocked.

This meant the scene of the immemorial year monkey being trapped in the sword-blade river segment before was a trap. And he had entered head-first into the trap, and was still unaware of it during the earlier fight!

As far as Lord Huang Shi was concerned, this was humiliating!

“But how is it possible? Fang Yuan might have inherited Hei Fan's true inheritance, but he still should not have the ability to control a segment of the River of Time! This was what Lady Zi Wei had deduced.”

Shock gradually disappeared as suspicions rose in Lord Huang Shi's mind.

As the giant wave approached him, countless thoughts emerged in his mind.

“This might be the power of Red Lotus' true inheritance.”

“Only a person like Red Lotus Demon Venerable could use methods to control a segment of the River of Time.”

Seeing that the giant towering wave was already before him, Lord Huang Shi's expression turned resolute.

“Never mind!”

“I shall let you all know my, Lord Huang Shi's, true power!”

“Ahh——!” Lord Huang Shi suddenly roared towards the sky, countless Gu worm auras emerged from his body, yellow lights were continuously shining on his body.

His bald head shone and sparkled.

The large yellow soil rock above his head enlarged and turned into a hill, suppressing the water of the River of Time.

His aura turned deep and unfathomable, under his gaze, the river wave gradually returned to its original state.

At the same time, countless ripples of time jumped out of his body and moved towards Bai Ning Bing and the rest, with seemingly slow speed but actually being really fast!

The anger in his heart together with the dangerous situation caused Lord Huang Shi to erupt with his full strength!

“Amazing! He activated at least four immortal killer moves in an instant.” Fang Yuan’s heart jolted at such a sight.

Since Lord Huang Shi could obtain Fairy Zi Wei’s trust to move in River of Time alone and attack Fang Yuan, he naturally had ample strength.

Right now, he erupted with his full strength, immediately blocking the giant time river wave and ensuring his safety, while also sending strong attacks towards Bai Ning Bing and the rest.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest turned pale, they were trapped in the yellow dust and were unable to free themselves.

Even the immemorial year monkey struggled intensely, its growling showing its fear and panic.

The might of the ripple of time was unpredictable, but its terror was well-known. Even Feng Jiu Ge did not dare to easily come in contact with it, let alone Bai Ning Bing and the rest.

“He is forcing me to appear.” Fang Yuan mumbled as he looked towards Spectral Soul’s will beside him.

He turned Bai Ning Bing and the rest into bait, it would be an enormous loss to him if he sacrificed them at this moment.

However, among them was the split soul, Ying Wu Xie, whom Fang Yuan had intentionally left behind, he was guarding against Spectral Soul’s will just in case.

Spectral Soul’s will laughed loudly: “Don’t worry, Fang Yuan, this stone lotus island was personally constructed by Red Lotus Demon Venerable. Although Lord Huang Shi resisted the time river wave, the wave also contains the peerless killer moves of both sword path and blade path.”

“Look, this was the most powerful offensive killer move of Dao Jiu Lang back then, its name is nine-nine reincarnation blades. Once it is activated, it continues on endlessly. If a layer of the blade light is broken, there is another layer, with a total of nine layers of blade lights, every layer has the power to slaughter ghosts and deities. After the blade lights strike down, they will cycle back and attack again, a layer of blade light will attack for nine times, altogether, the nine layers of blade light will attack for a total of eighty-one times. This move is extremely terrifying, even Dao Jiu Lang only used it three times in his lifetime, every time he used it, it would consume a hundred years of his lifespan! And the move I am triggering right now is his pinnacle masterpiece used when fighting Xi Yuan!”

Shortly after Spectral Soul’s will’s explanation, Fang Yuan saw nine layers of blade light shooting out of the suppressed River of Time wave.

The blade lights were extremely radiant like fragments of the sun, it was so bright that even Fang Yuan, who was watching it through an image, felt piercing pain in his eyes and had to squint.

Even outside of the battlefield he reacted like this, it was unimaginable what the immortals who were in the battlefield felt.

Seeing these blade lights, Lord Huang Shi’s expression changed rapidly to that of horror and despair.

He felt an intense threat to his life from these nine layers of blade light. This was no joke, if Dao Jiu Lang was born in Central Continent, he could absolutely join Heavenly Court.

He was a blade path legend who stood at the peak of Western Desert, he was an influential rank eight figure.

This attack was his greatest display of power, it was the killer move he had used in his deathmatch with Xi Yuan.

Lord Huang Shi was extremely terror-stricken, he did not care anymore about the river wave, the immemorial year monkey or Bai Ning Bing.

He shouted with all his strength as he used his hidden trump card to defend himself.

Bam bam bam...

Huge explosions sounded continuously as layers of blade light bombarded on his body. The dazzling blade lights continued to strike layer after layer, encircling and slashing at the pitiful Lord Huang Shi, while interweaving together into a large ball of scorching white light.

In the center of this light ball, Lord Huang Shi was curled up in the large yellow rock above his head, defending with all his might.

The blade lights’ bombardment lasted for a while before they gradually dissipated.

The large rock around Lord Huang Shi had disappeared, he looked extremely haggard with no color on his face. There were even large injuries on his body that spread throughout his chest and back.

There was no blood flowing out from the injuries, but this instead signified the miserable situation, because the injuries were filled with blade path dao marks which were continuously emitting blade qi that invaded Lord Huang Shi’s organs.

“Hahaha, look, he is finished.” Spectral Soul’s will laughed heartily.

“Now, take this move!” Spectral Soul’s will furrowed its brows while moving its hands: “This move is Xi Yuan’s main trump card, haha, I don’t believe you can survive this!”

Saying this, a powerful sword qi started to slowly rise from the giant River of Time wave.

This sword qi was deep and powerful, its depths unfathomable, and it carried an unmatchable might that could bury countless living beings!

Lord Huang Shi’s pupils shrunk to pin size. Only one thought emerged in his mind

— Run!

But, he found he was locked on by this sword qi and was unable to budge from his position.

“This, this is Xi Yuan’s signature killer move, sword burial abyss! Damn it, damn it!!”

Lord Huang Shi’s heart thumped wildly in panic.

He had used up all his methods in resisting nine-nine reincarnation blades, he was in an extremely weak state right now with his defenses falling to almost zero.

“Am I going to perish here?” Lord Huang Shi felt a strong sense of death.

Right at this time, Spectral Soul’s will called out in the stone lotus island: “Not good, the stone lotus island cannot endure this burden. If we insist on killing Lord Huang Shi, this stone lotus island’s foundation will be used up. If we let go of Huang Shi, it can still last for a few years.”

“Kill him.” Fang Yuan’s gaze shined eerily as he spat out these two words without any hesitation.

“Understood!” Spectral Soul’s will acknowledged and stopped speaking.

Lord Huang Shi struggled bitterly, but was unable to get rid of the shackles of the sword qi.

His expression had turned savage and frightening as he roared.

“Who could have thought I, the grand Huang Shi, would actually die here.”

“My sacrifice is not important, but I have let Heavenly Court’s plan fail, letting this otherworldly demon Fang Yuan continue to roam free.”

“I am not reconciled... Ahhh! I am not resigned...”

Lord Huang Shi roared repeatedly, but his voice suddenly came to a stop.

His life force completely dissipated, that sword qi was like a legendary beast in the dark swallowing his life force completely.

Lord Huang Shi, a rank eight time path Heavenly Court Gu Immortal, was dead!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1435: Spectral Soul’s True Inheritance!

A moment later, Bai Ning Bing and the rest brought Huang Shi’s corpse to Fang Yuan.

Spectral Soul’s will gazed at the corpse and sighed: “This person was also an amazing character, a genius when he was young and became a famous expert as he grew. His name had spread throughout Central Continent and the five regions, now, he has perished in this place.”

Fang Yuan and the rest were silent.

Spectral Soul’s will controlled this stone lotus island and watched the past and present, it knew of many secrets. This was the power of Red Lotus’ time path true inheritance, able to gain information through the River of Time.

When Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had obtained this inheritance back then, he had praised it as ‘inconceivable’ and acknowledged the superiority of Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s time path methods.

At rank eight, all Gu Immortals would touch upon other paths, rank nine venerables were even more so with extremely comprehensive abilities.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s own time path methods could compare to rank eight time path Gu Immortals, but he was far inferior when compared to Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

Each rank nine had their respective specializations. They had their own areas of expertise with their specific strengths.

If Red Lotus Demon Venerable compared his soul path attainment with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, it would be Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s turn to be in great awe.

Gurgle gurgle...

The water of the River of Time gushed out from below Fang Yuan and the rest.

The stone lotus island was beginning to crumble.

But only one or two areas were collapsing, the hole created was the size of a teacup.

Spectral Soul’s will stiffened before sighing: “After a while, this stone lotus island will be completely destroyed, we don’t have much time left.”

Red Lotus Demon Venerable had arranged all his seven true inheritances on stone lotus islands which were located at different areas of the River of Time.

After Spectral Soul Demon Venerable obtained this stone lotus island, he remodeled it to become the greatest information channel of Shadow Sect. Not only this, Shadow Sect were able to use the power of Red Lotus’ true inheritance multiple times, and recently, they had used it to let Spring Autumn Cicada activate smoothly as well as to help Ying Wu Xie and Purple Mountain True Monarch.

The stone lotus island’s foundation had already been close to drying up, and it had further exhausted all its power to kill the time path expert Huang Shi in the battle earlier. It was crumbling apart now.

“Where there are gains, there are losses.” Fang Yuan sighed.

“Although we lost this stone lotus island, being able to cause the death of Lord Huang Shi is a huge gain. This person has outstanding battle strength, and is like a fish in water inside the River of Time. If we had let go of this perfect opportunity, even if we lay in ambush again, we probably wouldn’t have another chance to kill him.”

The group of immortals nodded in agreement to Fang Yuan’s decision.

In fact, even Spectral Soul’s will was not an exception.

It looked at Fang Yuan and nodded: “In the battle of the giant dream realm, Purple’s choice at the last moment was correct. Fang Yuan, I have to admit you have already become the final chance my Shadow Sect has. The great task of saving our main body is yours now, naturally, this will depend on your decision. Even if you are bent on eliminating our main body, we won’t blame you.”

All of the Gu Immortals present were visibly moved at these words.

Ying Wu Xie’s expression changed, he opened his mouth several times, but was not able to let out any words.

Who could have thought of this situation?

Right now, between Shadow Sect and Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan held the complete initiative. He was indeed the last hope of Shadow Sect, even if it was presumed they invaded Heavenly Court in the future, whether he saved Spectral Soul’s main body or not was completely up to Fang Yuan.

The words of Spectral Soul’s will had the feeling of helplessness and a last resort.

It was precisely because he knew the most information, he had a clear understanding of the situation.

When Fang Yuan entered Red Lotus’ true inheritance, Spectral Soul’s will created no obstructions or difficulties and even completely coordinated with Fang Yuan when killing Lord Huang Shi.

Fang Yuan glanced at the immortals before replying to Spectral Soul’s will: “You can rest assured. Heavenly Court is an enormous force, you and I are natural allies. I will definitely help if I can.”

Spectral Soul’s will nodded: “I believe you.”

Shortly, he smiled: “We are not allies, but a collective force. You are currently the leader of Shadow Sect, appointed by Purple, and have received the approval of the various split souls. Even if you meet our main body in the future, he will also definitely agree. Because we are him, our decision is his decision.”

“Alright, I am going to pass on all my main body’s soul path true inheritance along with other things to you.”

Fang Yuan nodded and used a wisdom path method to send out a lump of self will.

The large sphere-like self will charged at Spectral Soul’s will.

Spectral Soul’s will did not evade, allowing the self will to merge with it.

Information exchange between wills was extremely fast, and after a few breaths of time, Fang Yuan’s self will returned and entered Fang Yuan’s mind.

Instantly, an unimaginable amount of information assaulted Fang Yuan’s mind!

Fang Yuan closed his eyes, accepting all the information in an orderly way. He was a wisdom path grandmaster who could not be compared to ordinary Gu Immortals. right now, his expression was calm.

Among all the information, the most valuable was no doubt Spectral Soul’s true inheritance.

This was the most comprehensive cultivation content created by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Fang Yuan’s mind shook with just a slight look at some of its contents, inwardly praising Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, who created this true inheritance.

Undoubtedly, in the whole world and the long history of humans, no, since time immemorial, this was one of the most valuable true inheritances!

Since ancient times until now, only ten venerables had appeared in this world. Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was one of them.

This true inheritance of Spectral Soul that Fang Yuan obtained was comprehensive, as long as he cultivated according to it, he could approach the heights that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had once reached.

Speaking of which, Fang Yuan had connections to quite a few venerables.

Spring Autumn Cicada was the earliest to end up in Fang Yuan’s hands, it was the most crucial key to Red Lotus’ true inheritances, but until now, Fang Yuan had only inherited one of the seven true inheritances of Red Lotus. Moreover, although the inner contents were complete, Red Lotus’ true meaning had already been absorbed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had three true inheritances – Fang Yuan had obtained the essence of ‘self luck true inheritance’ from Lang Ya Sect, and some contents of ‘all living beings luck’ from Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and Ma Hong Yun, but it was not as much as the rumor said.

Of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritances, Fang Yuan had only inherited ghostly concealment, while divine concealment was taken by Zhao Lian Yun.

“To think that the most complete venerable true inheritance that I obtained was Spectral Soul’s true inheritance originating from my former great enemy.”

“Unfortunately, my soul path attainment is not enough, and cultivating soul path would require a huge amount of time, energy and resources.”

“Among these, soul path has the most terrifying requirement for resources. Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had once massacred countless living beings for his cultivation. If I were to repeat his way, I would also need to slaughter countless living beings, otherwise I simply would not be able to satisfy the resource requirements for my soul path cultivation.”

Second to Spectral Soul’s true inheritance was Red Lotus’ true inheritance.

Although the true meaning of Red Lotus in this stone lotus island was already absorbed by Spectral Soul to raise his time path attainment, its true inheritance contents were handed down.

The most important contents of this inheritance were the Immortal Gu recipes of Spring Autumn Cicada.

Not just rank six Immortal Gu recipes, there were recipes of rank seven, rank eight and even rank nine!

This meant Fang Yuan now had the entire set of Immortal Gu recipes for Spring Autumn Cicada from rank six to rank nine!

There was a huge amount of content in this set of Immortal Gu recipes, amounting to several hundreds of thousands of words. Merely the rank six Spring Autumn

Cicada Immortal Gu recipes totaled to seventeen or eighteen. The recipe Fang Yuan had obtained in his first life of five hundred years was only one of them.

Rank seven Immortal Gu recipes were even more numerous, reaching eighty-six. Rank eight Immortal Gu recipes totaled to forty-three.

And there were three rank nine Immortal Gu recipes.

An additional Immortal Gu recipe meant a new method to refine Spring Autumn Cicada.

As far as Fang Yuan was concerned, this would definitely be a huge help. Later on, when he refines Spring Autumn Cicada, he would not only have many more choices, but could also be more flexible in his methods.

“To think Red Lotus Demon Venerable had researched so deeply about Spring Autumn Cicada.”

“So it is true that Spring Autumn Cicada was Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s vital Immortal Gu!”

Fang Yuan naturally wanted to advance Spring Autumn Cicada, he was deeply aware of Spring Autumn Cicada’s power, and would absolutely not let go of this trump card that could overturn the situation!

Besides Spectral Soul’s true inheritance and Red Lotus’ true inheritance, there were also large numbers of other true inheritances.

Some of these inheritances were incomplete, while some were perfectly intact.

This was the collection of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable when he was alive, and the continual gathering by Shadow Sect throughout a hundred thousand years. Now, all of these belonged to Fang Yuan!

Although Purple Mountain True Monarch’s legacy was also abundant, he was only one of the split souls in the end. The content he grasped was not even one-hundredth of the total amount here.

Especially because there was also the rule path true inheritance of Limitless Demon Venerable, and a formation path true inheritance of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, which were not in Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance.

The value of all these contents was so high that it could not be estimated!

As long as Fang Yuan had sufficient time and resources, Fang Yuan was confident he could use these contents to create an organization that was not weaker than Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan’s gains had reached an unimaginable amount such that even he himself was shaken. The frightening advantage of being the leader of Shadow Sect had finally been shown.

Spectral Soul’s will spoke once again: “Sect leader Fang Yuan, you have now completely inherited Shadow Sect. Unfortunately, although there are a lot of true inheritances, you would need an unimaginable amount of time, energy and resources to cultivate them. And right now, what we lack the most is time, and there is also a huge scarcity of resources!”

“Our main body had once successfully defied heaven, hiding from Heavenly Court, and delaying the great era by nearly five hundred years! But now, our main body has failed, everything has returned to its original path. Approximately ten years later, the great era will completely descend, the five regions will merge, which will definitely result in the largest chaotic war in history.”

"And among the five regions, Central Continent's foundation is the deepest with the most amount of Gu Masters and Gu Immortals. Furthermore, they also have a unified leader – Heavenly Court! This is something none of the other four regions have. Whether it be Eastern Sea, Western Desert, Southern Border or Northern Plains, they are all controlled by independent super forces and are disunited. Northern Plains does have Longevity Heaven, so their situation will be slightly better, but when compared to Central Continent's Heavenly Court, their influence in the whole region is significantly lacking."

"And the most terrifying thing about Heavenly Court is their control of rank nine fate Immortal Gu. This Gu has extremely terrifying might, the reason why Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was able to make arrangements that could resist three Demon Venerables after her death was mostly because of the power of this Gu!"

"The three great Demon Venerables are all within the confines of fate, this was already decided upon their birth and cannot be changed. Only an otherworldly demon is not restrained by the shackles of fate Immortal Gu. Fang Yuan, you are a complete otherworldly demon, and thus the greatest hope in destroying fate Immortal Gu. In fact, you are the inheritor that Red Lotus Demon Venerable had been most anticipating!"

"Ten years, you only have ten years. Fang Yuan, don't let Heavenly Court restore fate Immortal Gu! Otherwise, Heavenly Court will become invincible, even if the four regions attack it together, they will not be able to bring it down. If that happens, there will be no hope of invading Heavenly Court and rescuing our main body."

"You don't have much time, Fang Yuan."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1436: Return

Stone lotus island.

The voice of Spectral Soul's will started to become choppy as his whole body turned increasingly translucent.

Fang Yuan wanted to help and replenish it, but was stopped.

"Let me disappear, I am Spectral Soul's will, my main body is being suppressed by Heavenly Court, I will be found out by Heavenly Court sooner or later."

"As for the split souls... there is no need to worry about them within a short period of time."

"The stone lotus island is no more, my mission has also been finished."

"Now, while I still have some strength left, let me speed up time for you and make one last contribution."

Fang Yuan was silent, before slowly nodding: "Alright."

After he agreed, he took out the self cleansing immortal Gu formation.

Shortly afterwards, Bai Ning Bing and the rest entered the immortal formation, the immortal Gu formation started operating while letting out deafening rumbling noises.

Spectral Soul’s will smiled as the stone lotus island let out its final frail afterglow.

“Lord Huang Shi is dead!”

When this news was transmitted, Feng Jiu Ge and the two rank eight Gu Immortals from Heavenly Court felt an intense shock.

Shortly afterwards, more detailed information was transmitted to them by Fairy Zi Wei.

“Fang Yuan lost the upper extreme heavenly eagle, but has actually gotten control of an immemorial year monkey?!”

“That Red Lotus true inheritance is truly beyond belief, it can actually control a segment of the River of Time!”

“If it were not for the stone lotus island, even if Fang Yuan had strength that rivaled rank eight along with the protection of the immemorial year monkey, he would not be able to take Lord Huang Shi’s life. Sigh...”

Right now, the three immortals had already gotten past the defense line of dream realms and arrived in front of the tributary of the River of Time.

The dream realms which Fang Yuan had meticulously arranged, because of their own circulation, showed a gap, letting the three immortals easily pass by it without wasting any energy.

Dream realms could obstruct enemies for some time, but they could not be relied on for a long time.

Especially when these dream realms were already infiltrated by heaven’s will. Their circulation would clearly favor Heavenly Court.

This was also the reason why Fang Yuan did not use the dream realm defense line to make a last-ditch struggle when escaping earlier.

The three immortals’ expressions turned unsightly upon hearing the news of Lord Huang Shi’s death.

According to their original plan, Lord Huang Shi would make a move inside the River of Time, destroying Red Lotus’ true inheritance, and forcing out Fang Yuan and the rest, then with the three immortals outside, they would encircle and eliminate Fang Yuan and the remaining Shadow Sect members.

But now, their strongest member, Lord Huang Shi, was instead the first to fall, this caused the situation of Feng Jiu Ge and the others to become rather awkward.

Should they wait or not?

If they continue waiting, would Fang Yuan and the rest eventually be forced to appear in front of them?

The three immortals hesitated, they had come well-prepared, but who could have expected their morale to receive a strike before they even fought.

“Continue waiting.” Fairy Zi Wei sent them new instructions.

“I have already deduced that in the information Fang Yuan has, only this tributary of the River of Time is remaining.”

“Lord Huang Shi was sacrificed, but his sacrifice has provided us a lot of valuable information regarding the ins and outs of Fang Yuan and the other Shadow Sect members. Especially regarding Red Lotus’ true inheritance, our Heavenly Court is now no longer completely in the dark about it!”

“Fang Yuan and the others cannot continue to hide in Red Lotus’ true inheritance. They must come out eventually.”

Fairy Zi Wei’s tone was resolute, causing the fighting spirit of Feng Jiu Ge and the two immortals to soar.

Fairy Zi Wei was one of the few wisdom path great experts in the current five regions, her deduction absolutely would not err.

“Then we shall continue to wait!”

“Damned otherworldly demon, a calamity to all living beings, I will definitely take your life this time; I will tear off your skin, pull out your tendons, and grind your bones till they turn to dust!!”

The two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were furious, while Feng Jiu Ge’s expression was calm as he gazed at the turbulent tributary of the River of Time in silence.

However, a day passed, two days passed, soon, five, six days passed.

But the tributary of the River of Time showed no commotion.

Ten days went by, half a month passed, but the waiting immortals did not even see a trace of Fang Yuan!

However, they were not shaken.

They were either current or future Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, how could such people lack patience?

Especially Feng Jiu Ge, who had battled Fang Yuan a few times and knew of his terrifying growth rate, he had already marked Fang Yuan as a great threat to the world. He had already made up his mind to eliminate Fang Yuan as early as possible, or else he would not be at ease.

“Where is Fang Yuan?”

“Are they still on the stone lotus island?”

“Why do I feel a sense of unease?”

In Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei, however, was starting to feel puzzled.

Not long after Lord Huang Shi’s sacrifice, she had completely lost the information of Fang Yuan and the rest. The Shadow Sect members had used the self cleansing immortal Gu formation along with the power of Red Lotus’ true inheritance to speed up time, they had completely gotten rid of the investigative killer move on them.

Although there was no evidence to prove Fang Yuan and the others had escaped from the River of Time, Fairy Zi Wei vaguely sensed something wrong.

This attracted Fairy Zi Wei’s attention.

Wisdom path Gu Immortals were not just about intellect, wisdom path cultivation emphasized on three main points – thoughts, wills and emotions.

Among them, emotions and feelings were also specialty methods of wisdom path Gu Immortals.

Thus, the unease in Fairy Zi Wei’s heart had not just appeared out of nowhere, it was a premonition.

“In the worst case scenario, Fang Yuan has already escaped the River of Time?’

“But Feng Jiu Ge and the group had already blocked the entrance, so how did he succeed in escaping?”

“Did he gain some extremely powerful concealment method from Red Lotus’ true inheritance? Or... did he use another tributary of the River of Time?”

Fairy Zi Wei suddenly had a flash of inspiration. The two tributaries of the River of Time that Fang Yuan had access to were already exposed.

This information was definite because its source was Spectral Soul’s main body!

Spectral Soul’s main body had been suppressed by Duke Long, Heavenly Court naturally would not let him go and had conducted soul searching on him. However, Spectral Soul was a peak expert of soul path, even if there was only a tiny fraction of his soul remaining, how could he be easily soul searched by ordinary methods?

Heavenly Court had exhausted all their means to extract information, but Spectral Soul’s main body was still struggling stubbornly, and as such, they had not obtained much information.

“If Fang Yuan did not use this tributary of the River of Time, then which exit did he choose?’”

Tributaries of the River of Time were exits, Feng Jiu Ge and the group were blocking the final exit. Even if Fang Yuan did not investigate it, he would have already expected this situation and might have taken the risk to charge through another tributary of the River of Time. Because rather than fighting with the sufficiently prepared Heavenly Court forces, it might be better to break through other, unaware forces.

‘”And in Western Desert, there are altogether three forces who have control over a tributary of the River of Time.”

“First is Tian clan. This clan mainly cultivates wood path and earth path, and are mainly renowned for their immortal aperture management, and even have good reputation in the other four regions. In the current Western Desert Gu Immortal world, it is one of the super forces with the most solid foundations.”

“Second is Gong clan. Gong clan Gu Immortals are proficient in long range fighting methods, especially their curse related killer moves, which are imperceptible and can silently take their enemy’s life even when they are separated by an enormous range. Their most famous immortal killer move, bow shadow cup, had terrorized the whole of Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world. They only need a trace of the target’s shadow, after which, they can activate the killer move and can kill their target no matter how far apart the distance.”

“Third is Tang clan. Tang clan is a declining clan, its strength is mid-lower tier among Western Desert’s super forces. But they still have an Immortal Gu House and has control over a tributary of the River of Time, which is right by their headquarters. With their powerful defensive strength, other forces cannot easily seize it.”

“If Fang Yuan were to forcibly charge through, which clan would he choose?”

“If I consider this, along with no movement from the three clans, Fang Yuan might still be in River of Time.”

Fairy Zi Wei was in deep contemplation.

She was deeply aware of the situation of Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world. The power of Heavenly Court’s information gathering was clear from this.

Tang clan.

The remnant afterglow of an immortal killer move successively condensed on Fang Yuan and the rest.

“This move will provide us three months of time. Not only can it defend against the deductions of Gu Immortals, it can also avert the attention of heaven’s will.” Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes, which shined briefly with joy.

Other than Fang Yuan, there was also Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, Ying Wu Xie, Black Tigress and Fairy Miao Yin, no one was missing.

Fairy Zi Wei’s conjecture was only half-correct.

Fang Yuan indeed had no plans to engage in a desperate battle with Heavenly Court’s forces, and had given up on that tributary of the River of Time. But Fang Yuan’s group had already left the River of Time ten days ago, returning to Western Desert.

“Let’s go. It is time to leave Western Desert.” Fang Yuan moved forward while the other immortals followed closely behind.

They were deep below the ground, the group kept on moving until they reached the surface.

Two Western Desert Gu Immortals were already waiting for them at the entrance.

“Tang Fang Ming (Tang Lan Ke) pays respects to Shadow Sect leader.” The two Gu Immortals looked young, and after seeing Fang Yuan, they elegantly bowed.

Fang Yuan laughed: “I have troubled you two, these are the Immortal Gu I borrowed from your esteemed clan.”

Fang Yuan waved his hand; several Immortal Gu slowly flew into Tang Fang Ming’s hand.

Tang Fang Ming carefully examined and after determining there was no damage to the Immortal Gu, he cautiously stored them into his immortal aperture.

He said with some embarrassment: “Please forgive my actions, I borrowed these Gu from the clan personally, this is a huge responsibility, I have no choice but to be more careful.”

Fang Yuan smiled, Tang Fang Ming’s words had deep meaning. After all, Tang clan was a righteous path force but was cooperating with the demonic path’s Shadow Sect, if this was exposed, they would be denounced and there would be immense trouble.

But factions did not represent anything, benefits were the only things that everyone chased after.

Tang clan was weak, the external pressure on them was enormous. Such an environment made almost all the Tang clan Gu Immortals possess the spirit of going all out, taking risks, bearing hardships, and enduring patiently.

Tang clan’s grand strategy was to develop dream path.

In Fang Yuan’s first life of five hundred years, Tang clan had moved to the top by exploiting dream realms. During the five regions chaotic war, they had made countless achievements, their strength rose explosively, and became the number one righteous path force of Western Desert in one leap!

Fang Yuan had thus contacted Tang clan, to use Shadow Sect’s research results in dream path in exchange for Tang clan opening up their tributary of the River of Time, so that there was a final retreat path for him. Moreover, he was willing to cooperate with Tang clan in the future, to jointly research the dream realm, and also obtained their financial help to produce guts Gu.

Such enormous benefits moved all the Tang clansmen!

The support of guts Gu, Fang Yuan’s unravel dream and Ying Wu Xie’s lead soul into dream, they were all greatly desired by Tang clan’s Gu Immortals.

Naturally, the latter two would absolutely not be easy for Tang clan to obtain.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1437: This Man is Going Against Heaven

Western Desert.

Blazing sunlight shone down upon all lifeforms.

The blue sky was cloudless, distorting hot-air was rising up from the golden desert.

“Farewell.” Fang Yuan’s group bid farewell to the two Tang clan Gu Immortals.

“Shadow Sect friends, please take care.” Tang Lan Ke smiled.

She was a rank seven time path Gu Immortal, and was in charge of the tributary of the River of Time. She was the main person who helped Fang Yuan come out of Tang clan’s tributary of the River of Time.

Fang Yuan smiled: “You have already accompanied us for ten thousand li, there is no need to send us off anymore.”

Tang Lan Ke’s smile became even brighter, but she was inwardly laughing bitterly. Their cooperation with Fang Yuan was not just about the guts Gu trade, but also Shadow Sect’s various research gains in dream path.

But ever since Fang Yuan returned to Western Desert, he did not mention anything about this. He seemed to have completely forgotten about it.

Although both sides had formed an alliance agreement and were restrained by it, they had yet to truly cooperate, even Tang clan was starting to feel somewhat anxious.

Tang Fang Ming, who had been silent the entire time, suddenly spoke, inquiring directly: “Shadow Sect leader and friends, I wonder how will we collaborate from now?”

Fang Yuan glanced at Tang Fang Ming, an admiring expression flashing past his eyes: “I am very interested in Thieving Heaven’s dream realm, we can deepen our collaboration in this. But right now, we are being chased by several rank eight Gu Immortals of Heavenly Court, it is not a good time to collaborate, we can only look forward to it in the future. Rest assured, we have formed an alliance agreement, haven’t we? Of course, if your clan truly insists, we can remain here. It is just that our camps are different and with Heavenly Court’s chase, there is huge pressure on us.”

Tang Fang Ming and Tang Lan Ke looked at each other, both seeing bitterness in each other’s eyes.

Fang Yuan’s words meant that if they want to collaborate and obtain dream path research gains, then they have to help resist the pursuing forces of Heavenly Court. Moreover, when the matter of Tang clan colluding with the demonic path is exposed, they will have to bear the consequences of their righteous path reputation going down the drain!

Tang clan could not bear this consequence.

They could not take a hard approach as well.

Because Fang Yuan was sufficiently strong, such that he had no fear of Tang clan, who possessed Immortal Gu House.

“Then I can only wish you a safe journey.” Tang Fang Ming bowed slightly.

“Okay, farewell.” Fang Yuan nodded, leaving with an indifferent expression, while the other immortals followed behind him.

Tang Fang Ming and Tang Lan Ke stood on the sand dune, watching Fang Yuan and the rest leave until they turned into black dots in the horizon.

“Little Ming, you are letting them go like this?” Tang Lan Ke frowned.

Tang Fang Ming glanced at Tang Lan Ke calmly: “I am not letting them go, it is that our Tang clan cannot force them to stay.”

Tang Lan Ke was silent for a long while before sighing: “Sigh, I am uneasy about this, I don’t know if this alliance is beneficial or harmful to our clan.”

Tang Fang Ming: “I only know that all things have advantages and disadvantages. Often, the greater the risks, the greater the profits. What’s more, the decision of collaborating with Shadow Sect was agreed upon by several supreme elders.”

Tang Lan Ke immediately showed a serious expression: “This has no relation to the clan, only you and I contacted Shadow Sect! If there is a mishap, only we will bear the responsibility!”

Tang Fang Ming chuckled, but was inwardly rolling his eyes.

Tang clan threw him and Tang Lan Ke out as scapegoats to maintain their righteous path identity. They would be the cover to hide the clan’s disgrace if this matter was exposed in the future.

This was a righteous path’s trick, and Tang Fang Ming was well aware of it.

“What kind of person is Fang Yuan? He had long seen through Tang clan’s trick! The tributary of the River of Time is near the clan’s headquarters, and they stayed for ten days, but even the first supreme elder did not show up. How could there be sincerity in such a collaboration? Since we are cooperating, we should make up our minds, how can we achieve anything by being so hesitant?”

Tang Fang Ming was thinking to himself, when Tang Lan Ke asked: “What do you think of Fang Yuan? He said he was being chased by several rank eight Gu Immortals of Heavenly Court, could he be exaggerating?”

Tang Fang Ming knew Tang Lan Ke’s question had deep meaning, his best choice would be to keep silent.

If he said bad things about Fang Yuan, Tang Lan Ke would report to the clan that Tang Fang Ming was filled with ill feelings towards Shadow Sect and made them unhappy, she could use this to push the responsibility of this matter to him.

If he said good words about Fang Yuan, Tang Lan Ke would collect this evidence. In case the matter were to be exposed in the future, Tang clan would sacrifice them to protect itself; Tang Lan Ke could then present the evidence to say that she had been enticed by a certain Gu Immortal of the clan, and lighten her punishment.

Tang Fang Ming was not a fool, he might not have been used to it when he had just returned to the clan.

But now, he was an expert in the righteous path’s tricks.

However, at this moment, as Tang Fang Ming gazed at Fang Yuan’s figure disappearing gradually in the horizons, he had a complex feeling.

He sighed and bluntly said his innermost thoughts: “Although I haven’t seen his splendor in battle, through these several days of contact, I am certain his reputation is not false. Fang Yuan is a legend of this generation, his elegant demeanor and grand ambition fill people with admiration. He... is a man who is going against heaven. Just based on this, we will not be able to compare to him.”

A trace of joy flashed past Tang Lan Ke’s eyes, she kept silent upon hearing Tang Fang Ming’s words.

Fang Yuan was also thinking about Tang Fang Ming as he flew on his way.

In his five hundred years of memories, this Tang Fang Ming was a legendary figure of Western Desert!

His status was almost equal to Northern Plains’ Ma Hong Yun of that time.

Tang Fang Ming had been stripped of his status and mercilessly abandoned by Tang clan’s Gu Master higher-ups when he was young.

He and his sister, Tang Miao, led a vagrant life, suffering much hardship. But due to a fortuitous encounter, he cultivated to Gu Immortal level, while his sister Tang Miao became a rank five peak stage Gu Master.

To recruit a Gu Immortal, Tang clan’s multiple supreme elders sacrificed the Gu Master higher-ups of the clan in exchange for the return of Tang Fang Ming.

The later events proved that Tang clan’s supreme elders made a wise decision.

After Tang Fang Ming returned to the clan, not only did he help his sister to become a Gu Immortal, he also actively explored Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.

He had an extraordinary talent and aptitude in dream realm exploration.

He started to create dream path Gu worms, making huge contributions to the rise of the whole of Tang clan.

During the five regions chaotic war, dream realms manifested everywhere, dream path flourished, and Tang clan seized this opportunity to rise to become Western Desert’s strongest super force.

It was mighty and powerful, even throughout the five regions, it was a peak level super force. As Tang clan’s prestige spread in Western Desert, there were many who started to call Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world to be in — Tang clan’s era!

And in Tang clan, the most eye-catching and charismatic legend was the Gu Immortal who turned to cultivating dream path, Tang Fang Ming!

“Currently, Ma Hong Yun has already died in my hands, but with the coming collaboration, Tang Fang Ming will grow up even faster. The comparison and contrast between the two is truly quite amazing.”

“But according to the true path set by fate, Ma Hong Yun was meant to die.”

A dark light flashed past Fang Yuan’s eyes as he thought of this.

On the stone lotus island, what Fang Yuan obtained was not only true inheritances and Spectral Soul’s rank nine immortal essence, but also some valuable information Spectral Soul’s will had deduced with the help of Red Lotus’ true inheritance.

In Fang Yuan’s first life, Shadow Sect had succeeded in defying heaven, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had resurrected, and also succeeded in infiltrating Heavenly Court.

Later, the great era descended and the five regions chaotic war started.

Shadow Sect’s influence had expanded into the five regions and two heavens, manipulating everything in the dark.

Shadow Sect had interfered multiple times to save Ma Hong Yun, before he finally became a symbolic character of the Northern Plains Gu Immortal world, in order to resist Heavenly Court.

And Tang clan was also a target for Shadow Sect to support secretly!

That’s right.

In Fang Yuan’s first life too, Tang clan had collaborated with Shadow Sect. The reason Tang clan could create ‘Tang clan’s era’ was because Shadow Sect was supporting it from behind the scenes to fight against Central Continent’s Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan chose to collaborate with Tang clan mainly because of this.

In Western Desert, Tang clan was not the only one who possessed a tributary of the River of Time. But compared to the other two super forces, Tang clan had more basis for sincere collaboration.

The later events proved Fang Yuan’s choice was a success.

Borrowing Tang clan’s tributary of the River of Time, Fang Yuan escaped River of Time, leaving Feng Jiu Ge’s group back at the original spot as they waited fruitlessly.

“But...”

“In my first life, even though Shadow Sect’s grand plan succeeded and Spectral Soul revived, he seemed to have been unable to regain the status of a venerable. Moreover, Shadow Sect had retained its strength but Spectral Soul still chose to fight Heavenly Court in the dark, while supporting other forces. This proved Heavenly Court’s strength was difficult for even Spectral Soul to confront head-on at that time!”

“In this life, Spectral Soul’s grand plan failed because of me, Spectral Soul’s main body was even captured, Shadow Sect is in rough condition, and the only ones remaining are us. This situation is many times worse than in my first life.”

“Now, I also might have to follow Spectral Soul’s strategy, keeping in hiding while supporting several forces like Tang clan to create trouble for Heavenly Court.”

“But what do I do against fate Gu?”

Fang Yuan’s brows unavoidably furrowed at this issue.

In his first life, fate Gu was not restored successfully. Because Zombie Alliance still existed, and Spectral Soul, the one fated to die long ago, had revived. Not only did he revive, he hid from Heavenly Court, manipulating and brewing countless schemes in secret, obstructing Heavenly Court in restoring fate Gu.

But it was different now.

The situation facing Fang Yuan was much worse!

Spectral Soul’s main body was captured and Zombie Alliance was gone, many fate defying existences were already eliminated, which made the restoration of fate Gu much easier.

Fate Immortal Gu was the executioner’s blade hanging above Fang Yuan’s head.

Spectral Soul’s will had deeply reminded Fang Yuan to be careful of fate Immortal Gu, if it was really restored completely, the result would be disastrous.

Fang Yuan firmly engraved this warning in his mind, but he could not imagine or think of ways to go about destroying fate Immortal Gu.

Could he surrender if he could not win?

As far as Shadow Sect was concerned, they did not have this option at all.

And it was even more so for Fang Yuan.

“In my first life, I was constantly on the go, wandering, enduring hardships, being schemed against, tormented and suppressed by heaven’s will, I already have no route to retreat.”

“Heaven’s will chose me as its tool, but when I did not destroy sovereign immortal fetus Gu and used it on myself, I went on the path to go against heaven, there is no other option left.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan looked at the sky.

The boundless heavens and the vast will of heaven!

Compared to them, he was so insignificant.

Going against heaven?

“Interesting.” Fang Yuan smiled silently.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1438: Heavenly Court Shocks the Five Regions

Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

Halls made of white jade stood majestically in the clouds, while the majestic silver sky shone brightly and grandly.

Among these halls was a pitch black hall that was very conspicuous.

Three large words were carved on the plaque of the door — Soul Suppression Hall!

The aura emanating from this hall exposed its extraordinariness, undoubtedly, this was a rank eight Immortal Gu House!

At the center of this hall were five enormous pillars.

Purple-gold chains were connected around the scarlet pillars to form a giant web.

And a remnant soul was shackled at the center of this giant web.

It was Spectral Soul’s main body!

Fairy Zi Wei stood expressionlessly at the edge of the five pillars: “Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, you were a rank nine Gu Venerable when alive, you did not accept your death and acted in defiance against heaven. Your current outcome is entirely the negative consequence of your own actions. Do you admit your wrongdoing?”

Her voice was crystal clear as it resonated in the large hall.

On the contrary, the remnant soul remained silent, not even letting out a grunt.

Fairy Zi Wei continued: “In the past, you had rampaged around the whole world, slaughtering countless beings to satisfy your desires and attain your personal achievements. Now, you have become a prisoner, are you still not going to repent and strive for the well-being of all lifeforms to atone for your crimes?”

The remnant soul was still silent.

Fairy Zi Wei sighed, activating Soul Suppression Hall.

Immediately, the vast auras of Gu worms surged like rolling tides, and like lava, the five giant pillars started radiating light and heat.

The giant web formed by countless purple-gold chains subsequently shone with a dazzling and bewitching light.

Spectral Soul's main body began to tremble, and as time passed, his trembling grew more intense.

When the trembling reached a certain degree, bits of information was extracted, which followed the countless purple-gold chains into Soul Suppression Hall.

Images started to emerge on the surface of the giant pillars, playing out some scenes of Spectral Soul's life back in the day.

There were scenes of his cultivation, his valor in battles, conversations with others, and so on.

The whole soul search lasted for fifteen minutes before it slowly stopped.

Fairy Zi Wei, however, was not pleased. The extracted information was only superficial, and there was almost no truly valuable information.

Her gaze turned grim as she sneered: "Oh Spectral Soul, since ancient times it has always been winners who take all, what is the point of doing this? You already have no hope, are you still hoping someone will attack Heavenly Court and save you? Hehe. What can you achieve by putting up this resistance? Your outcome is set and it cannot be changed."

Spectral Soul was still silent, like a piece of steel or rock.

Fairy Zi Wei snorted, turning around and leaving.

Boom!

The large door of Soul Suppression Hall closed heavily behind her.

Looking at the empty Heavenly Court and the silent halls, Fairy Zi Wei's brows furrowed slightly.

Over these days, the uneasy feeling in her had become increasingly intense.

And over on Feng Jiu Ge's end, they still had not found any traces of Fang Yuan's group.

Not only this, in the information that Heavenly Court gathered regarding Western Desert, there was no news of anyone coming out of a tributary of the River of Time.

Everything was peaceful.

However, Fairy Zi Wei sensed something wrong from this peace.

"Unfortunately, Spectral Soul is still putting up a resistance even after falling to this state! The information extracted from him is of no help in deducing Fang Yuan's tracks."

"He was after all a rank nine venerable, a peak legendary expert of soul path. Even if this is just a trace of his soul, it is actually able to resist the search of Soul Suppression Hall. Truly amazing! If it were my remnant soul, not to speak of an Immortal Gu House, it won't be able to resist even a rank six Immortal Gu."

“Forget it. Even if Spectral Soul won’t cooperate, Soul Suppression Hall can still continue to soul search, it is just that the progress is rather slow. But given some time, there will be a day when all the information will be extracted from Spectral Soul.”

“As for now...”

Fairy Zi Wei gazed at the sky, her lips curling upwards as she revealed an extremely beautiful smile.

“It is time for the world to know of Heavenly Court’s might.”

Heavenly Court, which had been keeping silent for several months after the battle of dream realm, suddenly revealed astonishingly terrifying news!

The former Spectral Soul Demon, Venerable left with merely a remnant soul, was captured by Heavenly Court, his heaven-defying scheme was ruined by Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals.

The moment this news spread, the whole Gu Immortal world went into an uproar.

Countless Gu Immortals were shaken.

Rank nine venerables were invincible existences who ruled an era.

No one could have imagined Heavenly Court to be able to capture a rank nine venerable. Moreover, it was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, who had the most murderous nature among all the venerables!

Despite it being only a remnant soul, it was still enough to shake the world.

Naturally, there were voices who questioned the authenticity of this news, but they soon vanished.

Heavenly Court had naturally made sufficient preparation, listing out all kinds of evidence, spanning from Zombie Alliance, Shadow Sect as well as the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, the battle of the super dream realm, and so on.

The ironclad evidence completely convinced the people.

In an instant, the whole world’s attention was gathered on Heavenly Court.

The past glory of Heavenly Court was dug up by countless Gu Immortals.

It was the number one force in the Gu Immortal world, the strongest force since the start!

It was founded by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, and was inherited by multiple Immortal Venerables later on, standing tall throughout countless generations.

Even when three Demon Venerables invaded it, they had to leave without success.

It was mysterious, it was powerful, it stood high above, it was unfathomable!

This was Heavenly Court!!

...

Northern Plains, Longevity Heaven.

South Desolation Immortal was lying on a sickbed, his aged face showing his final remaining bit of vitality.

“Sigh, who could have thought that the grand Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s reputation to be lost after death, actually ending up in Heavenly Court’s hands.” South Desolation Immortal heaved a deep sigh.

Yao Huang, who was standing beside the sickbed, comforted: “Lord South Desolation, you should focus on recuperating and resting.”

South Desolation Immortal chuckled: “It doesn’t matter, I only have a few days remaining. Remember the things I instructed you, you will take the position of South Desolation after my death.”

“Yes, lord.”

South Desolation Immortal showed some worry: “Times are changing, the five regions are descending into an unprecedented state. I have already sensed the surging waves of time, and it is not an ordinary wave, it is a tsunami that far surpasses even the venerables’ eras. Even my Longevity Heaven will be swallowed by this tsunami if we take a wrong step. Heavenly Court is our biggest enemy, be careful.”

“Lord, this junior has firmly engraved your words in mind.”

...

Southern Border, Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian.

This was an extremely peculiar mountain peak. In ancient times, a rank eight Southern Border Gu Immortal turned into an immortal zombie, and fought against allied attacks of super forces in this peak, finally dying here. As time passed, on the mangled corpse of this rank eight immortal zombie, due to the nourishment of the natural essence from the river, along with the aquatic plants in the river that rooted themselves, this place turned into a corpse mountain.

Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian was as high as several hundreds of meters, it was close to the whirlpool in the intersection of red dragon river and yellow dragon river where natural essence was extremely dense, and as such its resource productivity was huge and it by itself was a place of strategical importance.

Right now, Wu Yong was standing at the peak of Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian, gazing at the vast whirlpool in the intersection of red dragon river and yellow dragon river.

Behind him was a Wu clan Gu Immortal, Wu Zhen.

Wu Zhen gazed at Wu Yong’s back, not in the least concealing the admiration in his heart.

This Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian originally belonged to Wu clan, but not long ago, it was seized by Yao clan. After the battle of dream realm, Wu Yong had brought out Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and displayed his powerful strength, aweing the experts of Southern Border’s righteous path. Moreover, after he had successfully negotiated and got back the lost Immortal Gu from Heavenly Court, he had returned them to their respective righteous path clans.

As a result, Wu Yong’s prestige had risen greatly, and although Wu clan had suffered severe losses, this swept away their declining state and stabilized their throne at number one in Southern Border.

A stick in one hand and a carrot in the other, Wu Yong benefited in every way, he successfully retrieved the lost territories, making many righteous forces retreat without much fight.

Now, in Wu clan, many were comparing Wu Yong to Wu Du Xiu. Wu clan’s morale soared, and they believed Wu Yong would definitely sustain Wu clan’s glory!

“Wu Zhen, this Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian is a strategic place. Among all the clansmen, I can only be at ease handing this to you.” Wu Yong said without looking back.

“Yes, I will not disappoint first supreme elder.” Wu Zhen’s tone was slightly trembling.

“Lord...” He paused before continuing, “Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian is our final lost territory, do we counterattack now?”

Wu Yong frowned.

He had all along been scheming about counterattacking.

But after the news of Heavenly Court capturing Spectral Soul, Wu Yong decided to give up this plan.

“This time, Wu clan lost many Gu Immortals. Since we have already recovered all the lost territories, our manpower, which was already barely able to control our vast territories before, has an even bigger issue now. It is time to recuperate and cultivate the next generation of clansmen to become Gu Immortals.”

“Yes, I shall follow first supreme elder’s decision.” Wu Zhen said respectfully.

The current Wu Yong’s prestige was extremely high, his decision was supported by all the Wu clan Gu Immortals.

“However, we cannot settle the matter of infringing on our Wu clan so easily. Although we won’t expand our territories, we will get resources as compensation.” Wu Yong continued, his voice containing a trace of battle intent.

Wu Zhen’s spirits immediately rose: “First supreme elder is wise!”

...

Western Desert, Tang clan’s headquarters.

“Heavenly Court’s might really is frightening.” Tang clan’s second supreme elder was worried.

Tang clan’s first supreme elder indifferently glanced at him, well aware of why the other had come.

Previously, when they discussed collaboration with Fang Yuan’s group, the second supreme elder was opposed to it. Now that the news of Heavenly Court capturing Spectral Soul was publicized, Tang clan’s Gu Immortals felt huge pressure.

“Will Heavenly Court hold us accountable for cooperating with Shadow Sect?” Second supreme elder sighed.

“So what if they do? So what if they do not?” First supreme elder smiled.

Second supreme elder frowned and said while pacing around: “If they don’t blame us, it is naturally a matter of great joy, and we can continue to collaborate with Shadow Sect. But if they hold us accountable, our Tang clan is after all a super force of Western Desert, we can collaborate with other clans to resist Heavenly Court. Of course, we must strictly keep the secret and not let out any evidence. Otherwise, with justification on their side, Heavenly Court can interrogate us while our clan won’t be able to seek reinforcements.”

“Also, if that doesn’t work, we can only sacrifice Tang Fang Ming and Tang Lan Ke for the clan.”

First supreme elder laughed: “Haha, look, you already know how to deal with the situation, so what are you panicking for?”

“Ugh.”

First supreme elder restrained his laughter, and said in a serious tone: “If Tang clan wants to rise, we must take such risks. Riches and fortune are found in danger, if we cannot grasp Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s dream realm, would we be worthy of this great opportunity? As for Tang Fang Ming and Tang Lan Ke, they are already aware. Sacrificing for the clan is the greatest honor.”

Second supreme elder sighed: “First supreme elder is wise!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1439: Zhao Lian Yun’s Ascension

“Hahaha, elder Fang Yuan, you are back!” Lang Ya land spirit laughed heartily, walking towards Fang Yuan with open arms.

Fang Yuan also laughed: “I feel like I have returned home, my heart truly feels much more secure.”

The two strongly hugged each other, their attitude was extremely warm.

“Elder Fang Yuan, your name has shaken the whole world now, congratulations.” Lang Ya land spirit’s gaze towards Fang Yuan was completely different from before.

Fang Yuan now possessed rank eight battle strength, this was his own battle strength, and was enough for Lang Ya land spirit to pay heavy attention to him.

Moreover, Fang Yuan had escaped from Heavenly Court’s chase and safely returned to Lang Ya Sect.

This battle achievement would shake the world if it was publicized.

From Lang Ya land spirit’s perspective, he was naturally willing to see Fang Yuan have irreconcilable hatred towards the number one human force, Heavenly Court.

The more Fang Yuan was hunted down, the more happy he would be.

Because he was a hairy man, and his obsession was to make hairy men the rulers of the world.

Naturally, Lang Ya Sect’s safety was much more important. If he had not been convinced that Fang Yuan was ‘clean’ and had not left behind any clues for Heavenly Court to track down, Lang Ya land spirit would not have been so welcoming.

“Elder Fang Yuan, what are your plans now?” Lang Ya land spirit asked while walking.

Fang Yuan spoke bluntly without hesitation: “The situation is quite dangerous now, I intend to rest and reorganize for some time. I have already inherited Spectral Soul’s true inheritance and become the new leader of Shadow Sect, as long as I have enough time, I can increase my cultivation and strength continually. Heavenly Court is not able to investigate me anymore. Now that I think of it, it was truly dangerous, I was fortunate to have first supreme elder fully supporting me!”

Lang Ya land spirit felt somewhat embarrassed, he could only laugh loudly.

He naturally did not fully support Fang Yuan, and only helped Fang Yuan refine Gu according to the sect rules he had set.

If he did, he would have already sent hairy man Gu Immortals to aid Fang Yuan.

The two conversed while walking.

Along the way, they saw many hairy man Gu Masters who bowed towards them respectfully.

Lang Ya Sect’s development was also progressing rapidly.

Ever since Lang Ya land spirit changed the development strategy, promoting the hairy man war of the three continents, many outstanding hairy man Gu Masters had risen.

These hairy man elites were selected and brought to live in Cloud Cover Continent to guide them in further cultivation.

Murals of Lang Ya Sect’s supreme elders were in each cloud city of Cloud Cover Continent.

And the cloud city belonging to Fang Yuan was much taller and had a giant statue of him.

As such, these Gu Masters were familiar with all Gu Immortal elders.

After discussing for a while, Fang Yuan bade farewell to Lang Ya land spirit.

The two had conversed cheerily, Lang Ya land spirit was of course extremely interested in Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, while Fang Yuan wanted to use Lang Ya Sect’s power to help him refine Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan had some ability in refinement path, but against Lang Ya Sect, he paled in comparison.

Both sides set up many agreements, Lang Ya land spirit left in satisfaction.

Fang Yuan walked to a Gu refinement hall and saw Sixth Hair.

“So it was second supreme elder, sorry for not receiving you.” Sixth Hair smiled.

He looked withered and haggard, and in a miserable state. When he saw Fang Yuan, complicated expressions were shown through his eyes.

There was joy, surges of emotions, loneliness, and sighs.

Events in life were mystical things, before, Sixth Hair had been wishing for Fang Yuan’s death!

Now, Fang Yuan had become the leader of Shadow Sect, and was also the only hope in rescuing Spectral Soul’s main body.

Since Fang Yuan protected Ying Wu Xie’s life and had irreconcilable enmity with Heavenly Court, Sixth Hair also chose to acknowledge Fang Yuan’s position.

“Sixth Hair pays respect to lord sect leader, please forgive me for not being able to pay full respects.” Sixth Hair transmitted his voice.

This was Lang Ya blessed land, Lang Ya land spirit could observe everything clearly.

“It is just superficial etiquette, how could I mind these things?” Fang Yuan transmitted his voice: “I still need to thank you for your effort in helping me by refining Immortal Gu. Heavenly Court is my sworn enemy, there will be a day when I will invade Heavenly Court and use all my strength to rescue Spectral Soul’s main body!”

Sixth Hair nodded, a radiant splendor flashing past his eyes as he turned around to lead the way: “Please, this way.”

Actually, he was aware Fang Yuan’s words did not have any assurance. If Fang Yuan wanted to break his word, he would suffer no punishment nor pay any price.

But for a human to live, they needed hope. Even if this hope was minuscule.

Moreover, Sixth Hair was aware that if Fang Yuan had not been recruited, just based on the remaining Shadow Sect Gu Immortals, they simply would not be Heavenly Court’s match and would soon be wiped out.

Heavenly Court would not even need to make a move, Fang Yuan might be the first to move against Shadow Sect’s remnant forces to gain benefits.

Purple Mountain True Monarch had already predicted the future situation, and so to preserve the remaining Shadow Sect forces and to sustain hope, he handed the whole of Shadow Sect to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan knew Purple Mountain True Monarch’s intention, but he accepted it and was quite happy in doing so.

Fang Yuan followed Sixth Hair and walked some distance before arriving in front of a refinement path immortal formation.

There, flames were raging, but they were radiating extremely cold air.

The extreme coldness soon covered Fang Yuan’s brows and the tips of his hair with a layer of frost.

“Lord sect leader, cleanse soul Immortal Gu’s refinement has already reached its crucial stage. But I have failed several times in this step. My luck is inferior to yours, sect leader, you are more suitable to complete these final few steps.” Sixth Hair transmitted his voice.

He then started to explain the steps of Gu refinement in detail, as well as many key points among them, his own experiences and insights.

Fang Yuan listened attentively, not missing even a single word.

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu was the crucial key to his next cultivation plan.

Almost at the same time, far away in Central Continent’s Spirit Affinity House.

A peak rank five female Gu Master was faced with an important moment of her life.

At this moment, she wore combat armor, she had clear white skin and her eyes shone like stars, her arched eyebrows were slightly furrowed right now as she concentrated.

“You can begin.” Spirit Affinity House’s wisdom path Gu Immortal Xu Hao spoke.

At his side was a female immortal; she was Xu Hao’s wife, Li Jun Ying.

Zhao Lian Yun nodded and took a deep breath as she started her immortal ascension!

In her rank five peak stage aperture, primeval essence surged like fierce waves and struck at the surrounding aperture walls.

Soon, cracks began to appear on the aperture walls.

Following the increase in cracks, a formless heavenly power began to slowly lift Zhao Lian Yun’s body.

When she was raised over ten feet from the ground, Zhao Lian Yun stopped.

Currently, Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes were closed, her whole concentration was on controlling the primeval essence in her aperture to fiercely smash at the aperture walls.

She was unaware that as the cracks on her aperture walls increased, the aura she revealed was becoming more dense and had already attracted two enormous waves of qi.

Heaven qi surged, dark clouds rolled in the sky, and thunder started booming.

Vast earth qi caused ground to shake and dust to rise.

Heaven qi and earth qi were increasing in intensity.

Suddenly, a crisp sound echoed as Zhao Lian Yun’s aperture completely fragmented.

Immediately, an extremely dense human qi flowed out of her body!

Heaven qi, earth qi and human qi began to mutually attract each other and soon gathered together, forming a giant qi sphere that covered Zhao Lian Yun.

“You must persevere.” Li Jun Ying mumbled.

Helping Zhao Lian Yun ascend to Gu Immortal was not just a task from Spirit Affinity House, even more, it concerned her and her husband Xu Hao’s benefits in the sect.

Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying belonged to the Anti-Feng faction which was unable to get along with Feng Jiu Ge’s faction.

And Zhao Lian Yun was the most crucial person in the Anti-Feng faction.

Xu Hao was solemn and cautious.

Zhao Lian Yun’s ascension was different from others. Because she had divine concealment, she could not be deduced and calamities and tribulations could not descend upon her.

Such an immortal ascension was unprecedented in history. Even Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had only created the first version of divine concealment after becoming a Gu Immortal.

As such, Xu Hao was extremely careful, paying full attention to Zhao Lian Yun’s condition, he would immediately help if there was anything wrong.

However, at this moment, despite Xu Hao having an intense desire to help, he was unable to do so.

Three qi gathered, Zhao Lian Yun had to personally control its fusion process, outsiders could not interfere.

Before she underwent immortal ascension, Zhao Lian Yun had done large amounts of preparation and practice. With Gu Immortals training and instructing her, she was extremely familiar with the whole process of immortal ascension.

The qi sphere formed by the three qi became increasingly smaller.

This was a good change.

It showed Zhao Lian Yun was successfully condensing the three qi.

After a while, the three had shrunken to an extreme degree, Zhao Lian Yun opened her eyes and gave a cry as she sent her vital Gu into the center of the three qi.

Rumble!

A huge sound resounded, like the booming of thunder.

For an instant, Zhao Lian Yun was completely dazed, her gaze going blank.

But she came to her senses the very next moment, quickly looking at her aperture.

There was no longer an aperture, replacing it was an immortal aperture.

Rank six immortal aperture!

“I have succeeded!” Zhao Lian Yun wept from extreme joy.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1440: Great Dream Immortal Venerable Feng Jin Huang

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land, Gu refinement hall.

The refinement path Gu formation slowly operated, the eerie blue cold fire had already turned into an iceberg.

Fang Yuan stood at the edge of the refinement path immortal formation and raised his hands, closely pressing his palms onto the iceberg.

His eyes shone brightly as he put almost all his concentration into the Gu refinement.

All kinds of Gu worm auras fluctuated in his body, there were auras of mortal Gu as well as Immortal Gu. He was using large amounts of refinement path methods as well as killer moves.

Under Fang Yuan’s effort, the blue cold fire was still quietly burning inside the iceberg.

Gu materials were constantly refined by the fire, their impurities were removed, leaving behind only the purest essence.

An Immortal Gu embryo was beginning to form little by little.

Sixth Hair, who was standing at the side, was observing with a joyful look.

This progress had already surpassed his previous records.

This was naturally not because Fang Yuan’s refinement path attainment was higher than Sixth Hair, but because of luck.

And an even more important reason was the refinement path method.

“To think that our sect had an inheritance of a refinement path great expert of the Remote Antiquity Era, Bei Luo.” Sixth Hair inwardly sighed.

Bei Luo was a renowned historical figure, he was a rank eight refinement path Gu Immortal, and he was most specialized in the ice refinement method. Even until now, his ice refinement specialization was at a level where later generations could only look up to.

Right now, Fang Yuan was using Bei Luo’s ice refinement killer move. Thus, he could easily surpass Sixth Hair’s previous progress, and was only a step away from successfully refining cleanse soul Immortal Gu.

Even though Sixth Hair was a split soul and a member of Shadow Sect.

Back then, Shadow Sect had used soul replacement to place him in Lang Ya blessed land and had not given him a lot of memories regarding cultivation.

Because once these memories exceeded a limit, it could easily reveal some flaws when cultivating.

And in Lang Ya blessed land, Lang Ya land spirit was almost all-knowing, able to observe every small change in any part of the blessed land.

Now that Fang Yuan had become Shadow Sect’s leader and obtained all the inheritances of Shadow Sect, his Gu cultivation foundation had risen explosively.

This increase could be said to be earthshaking. Even Fang Yuan himself felt a little dazed by it.

If Fang Yuan’s foundation was like a lake earlier, after getting Shadow Sect’s inheritances, it was like an ocean now.

Even Lang Ya Sect’s foundation was below Shadow Sect’s. Lang Ya Sect was established extremely long ago, but it was only created by the rank eight Gu Immortal Long Hair Ancestor, while Shadow Sect’s founder was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, who had massacred countless beings over the world!

So, when Fang Yuan understood the Gu refinement steps of cleanse soul Immortal Gu, he selected the most suitable refinement method from the large amounts of inheritances in his mind — Bei Luo Ice Refinement Method.

“Good. The Immortal Gu embryo has already mostly formed, success is very close!”

As time passed, Sixth Hair became increasingly excited.

His gaze moved to Fang Yuan once again.

“This man...” Sixth Hair’s eyes flickered with a complex gaze.

“He has a solid foundation in refinement path, and also ample talent in it. More importantly, the ice refinement method seems to suit him greatly!” Sixth Hair thought to himself.

There were thousands upon thousands of refinement path methods; fire refinement, ice refinement, group refinement, time refinement, and so on. Some people were suited for fire refinement methods, while some were innately suited for water refinement methods.

Fang Yuan also discovered that the ice refinement method suited him very well.

“Looks like I should practice ice refinement method in my spare time. It seems to suit my personality even more than blood refinement.”

While thinking, Fang Yuan mobilized his Gu worms, preparing for an immortal killer move.

There was already a huge number of myriad self clones in his immortal aperture.

While he was refining Gu, these clones were helping him set up the killer move.

When this immortal killer move was activated, Fang Yuan immediately felt warmth spreading throughout his whole body, resisting the bone-chilling coldness coming from the outside.

The intense coldness continually spread from the iceberg. This was a disadvantage of the ice refinement method, Gu Immortals had to refine Gu while resisting the coldness.

If myriad self had not been upgraded, it would be quite difficult for Fang Yuan to deal with many aspects.

But with the new myriad self, he was able to easily pass this difficulty.

Just as Fang Yuan was continuing to refine Gu, far away in Central Continent, Feng Jin Huang had climbed to a mountain peak.

It was dawn and there was still some darkness in the sky with a few scattered stars.

Feng Jin Huang breathed out as she gazed far away, but her face was filled with worry.

Being raised under the protection of Gu Immortal parents, the previous her did not know the taste of sorrow. Now, however, she had tasted setbacks and experienced the difficulties of life.

Especially in recent times, as Zhao Lian Yun succeeded in her immortal ascension.

This greatly increased the Anti-Feng faction’s reputation in Spirit Affinity House, and with Feng Jiu Ge far away in Western Desert, Fairy Bai Qing was unable to deal with this alone, allowing Xu Hao’s group to gain a lot of support.

From these events, Feng Jin Huang experienced difficulties and bitterness which she had not felt before. In her eyes, the sect had completely transformed.

“Sigh!” She sat down on a rock and sighed.

She started thinking of Zhao Lian Yun.

This girl came from behind and robbed Feng Jin Huang of her goal — the position of Spirit Affinity House’s fairy. Now, she had succeeded in her immortal ascension, and was now different from mortals.

The scene of Zhao Lian Yun begging her was still clear in her mind.

“Zhao Lian Yun is an otherworldly demon, Fang Yuan is also an otherworldly demon. Why am I always losing to otherworldly demons?” Feng Jin Huang’s thoughts were wandering, that unforgettable scene emerging from the depths of her mind.

It was at the peak of Dang Hun Mountain, when she first saw Fang Yuan...

Feng Jin Huang’s face immediately flushed, she quickly shook her head and suppressed these scenes and memories.

“What use is there in thinking about this?”

“Feng Jin Huang, Feng Jin Huang, you need to keep on working harder! You need to put in more effort, become a Gu Immortal, and help father and mother.”

Feng Jin Huang collected her thoughts and began to summarize her most recent dream realm experience.

That was the dream realm of the refinement path great expert Bei Luo.

“After passing this dream realm, my refinement path has already broken through to great grandmaster. Senior Bei Luo was most proficient in ice refinement, let’s give it a try.”

Feng Jin Huang spread her arms, her ten fingers twitched rhythmically and quickly, creating multiple layers of blurred images.

A gust of cold air immediately swirled around her hand, becoming more vigorous.

Feng Jin Huang was a refinement path great grandmaster, with such an outstanding attainment level, a Gu worm soon appeared out of the cold air.

This was an ice path rank three mortal Gu, it flew to Feng Jin Huang’s shoulder and sat there motionlessly.

Following it, a second and third Gu worm flew out.

Moreover, their ranks were gradually climbing from rank three to rank four and five.

Feng Jin Huang’s expression revealed joy, her eyes were gradually brightening and her finger movements became even faster.

But at the next moment, the cold air suddenly exploded, the Gu refinement failed and Feng Jin Huang suffered a backlash!

“Damn it!” Feng Jin Huang’s heart sank and her face paled. She subconsciously closed her eyes and gritted her teeth to endure the incoming pain.

But nothing happened.

“What’s going on?” Feng Jin Huang slowly opened her eyes.

She saw a tall man in front of her with one hand stretched before her eyes. That cold air which had exploded was now actually condensed into an ice sphere in his hand.

The man was truly tall, Feng Jin Huang’s head only reached above his knees.

His long hair fluttered in the wind, his posture was grand and powerful, his gaze contained wisdom and the vicissitudes of life. What attracted Feng Jin Huang’s attention was the pair of coral-like dragon horns on his forehead.

“Senior, you are? Thank you for saving me.” Feng Jin Huang quickly bowed.

The tall man smiled: “There are countless refinement path methods, ice refinement, however, does not suit you, Feng Jin Huang. Your nature is active and bright, so you are more suited for metal refinement and fire refinement. As for ice refinement, those who are proficient in it usually have a patient and persistent nature.”

The tall man then lightly clenched his fist, destroying the ice sphere in his palm.

Feng Jin Huang clicked her tongue in surprise, she was deeply aware of the might of this cold air, it was enough to severely injure an ordinary rank five Gu Master.

Her eyes suddenly brightened: “Senior, you are a Gu Immortal? You know my parents?”

Feng Jin Huang had come in contact with many Gu Immortals, so she did not feel uncomfortable. Normally speaking, those Gu Immortals were quite pleasant to her, mostly because they admired Feng Jiu Ge’s great reputation.

Sure enough, the tall man nodded his head: “I know your parents, but right now, I came specially for you.”

“For me?” Feng Jin Huang was surprised.

“Indeed.” The tall man continued: “Oh Feng Jin Huang, in the future you will become Great Dream Immortal Venerable, you are destined to join Heavenly Court and lead this era, stunning the world and standing proudly at the peak of Gu Immortals! I am Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal Duke Long, I came here to take you in as my disciple, to lead you to the grand throne of a rank nine venerable.”

“What?!” Feng Jin Huang’s mouth opened wide as she looked at the tall man in a daze.

Duke Long smiled at Feng Jin Huang, his expression was peaceful and amiable.

Feng Jin Huang, however, had a look of ‘I think this guy is a scammer’ towards this legendary character who had defeated Spectral Soul.

She did not recognize Duke Long.

Duke Long’s appearance was familiar to the Gu Immortals of the ten great ancient sects, but Feng Jin Huang was a mortal, and had no access to this knowledge.

Immortals and mortals were in two different worlds.

“Uncle, do you know that since ancient times, there were only ten people who became Gu Venerables. I know the prophecy regarding Great Dream Immortal Venerable, but how can I possibly be that Great Dream Immortal Venerable?” Feng Jin Huang asked.

“Don’t doubt yourself.” Duke Long smiled: “You are the future Great Dream Immortal Venerable. When you were young, a dream path Immortal Gu chose you, this was the sign! Your life should have been smooth sailing with dazzling achievements. Regretfully, some obstacles appeared.”

“Those otherworldly demons who are not bound by fate, they stole your fortuitous encounters.”

“Like Hu Immortal blessed land, and also the position of the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House.”

“But none of these are important.”

“Fate Immortal Gu will be completely restored in ten years. You will definitely become Great Dream Immortal Venerable, because this is all predestined by fate!”

Duke Long’s expression was serious as he said this, his gaze was extremely firm like he was telling an absolute truth.

Nothing in this world could shake or change this truth.

Feng Jin Huang was also affected by his words, she was stumped for a moment, unable to say anything.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1441: Snow Lotus Essence

Pieces of ice fell to the ground.

“Cough, cough.” Fang Yuan pressed on his chest as he coughed out blood clots from his heart and lungs.

These blood clots had solidified into small pieces, letting out intense coldness.

Fang Yuan’s expression was unusual, his face looked purple, he had suffered a huge injury.

The Gu refinement had failed, the giant iceberg exploded, and Fang Yuan had to forcibly endure the backlash.

Immortal Gu Man as Before!

Fang Yuan immediately activated his Immortal Gu, restoring himself to his previous state.

The purple tint on his face disappeared, and his injuries were almost all gone. But there was still large amounts of frost energy solidifying inside his body, making him feel uncomfortable.

The frost energy was not a result of the Gu refinement failure, but had accumulated in Fang Yuan's body throughout the refinement process.

Because the time duration was long, Man as Before was not able to produce perfect results.

"Speaking of which, I have mainly been relying on Man as Before as my healing method. This rank six Immortal Gu is extremely useful, and is the core to many killer moves in the Shadow Sect inheritances."

"Given some time, after I train and get proficient in these killer moves, my healing ability will definitely rise sharply!"

Fang Yuan started pondering when suddenly a flash of inspiration hit him.

"Wait. Since there is Man as Before, why is there no Gu as Before?"

A Gu worm to heal Gu worms!

This was possible.

"If there is an Immortal Gu like Gu as Before, can't I use it as the core to design an immortal killer move to help me refine Gu?"

"If there is truly such a killer move, then I could have used it just before to immediately recover the damage and return back to the final step of the Gu refinement."

Fang Yuan's eyes shone as he began to inspect the storage of Shadow Sect inheritances in his mind.

The true inheritance contents of Shadow Sect was as vast as a sea. After Fang Yuan looked through them, he found that this idea had already been envisioned by predecessors.

And there were many who thought of this.

Most of them were refinement path Gu Immortals, and there were also those of time path.

There were many inheritances where predecessors had recorded their thoughts and results regarding Gu as Before.

However, they were all incomplete Immortal Gu recipes, and not one was deduced completely.

It was very difficult to realize this concept.

As far as most Gu Immortals were concerned, Man as Before had a limited range of use. Rank six Man as Before had a very weak effect on rank seven Gu Immortals, and often the activation would fail. Rank seven Man as Before also did not have outstanding effects on most rank seven Gu Immortals.

Unless the target was a time path Gu Immortal with a lot of time path dao marks, then they would not conflict with Man as Before, and also be able to amplify its ability.

Since Man as Before was like this, Gu as Before was even more troubling.

To Gu Immortals, using Gu as Before to restore mortal Gu had small significance because Gu Immortals did not lack mortal Gu. The matter of mortal Gu was only a problem of quantity for them.

Naturally, lifespan Gu was an exception.

But using Gu as Before to restore Immortal Gu was even more difficult than restoring Gu Immortals. Because every Immortal Gu was a fragment of the Great Dao in their respective paths.

There was a strong conflict between Immortal Gu of different paths.

Immortal Gu could coordinate with each other, but using their effect on another Immortal Gu was a completely different concept.

Unless they had dominance in rank. For instance, using rank seven Gu as Before to restore rank six Gu had some likelihood. But using it on rank seven would definitely fail.

The concept of Gu as Before was extremely enticing, but it was too difficult to create in reality.

There were many Gu Immortals who had such inspirations, and there was not a lack of refinement path and time path great grandmasters among them. Unfortunately, none of their efforts succeeded.

Gu as Before was not a viable concept, but Fang Yuan had other ways around it.

For instance, some refinement path immortal formations.

These immortal formations had short-term effects of backtracking through time. Gu Immortals could activate these immortal formations to restore any mistakes.

In Shadow Sect’s inheritances, there were over ten such immortal Gu formations.

But each of them had some disadvantages – some had enormous demand on immortal essence, some had limited numbers of times they could backtrack through time, and some were only limited to refining rank six Immortal Gu.

Among these immortal Gu formations, the greatest one was Immortal Gu House Regret Pool.

One of the three legendary pools of the world.

“Unfortunately, be it Regret Pool or those immortal Gu formations, I only have the inheritances but lack the suitable Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan sighed, feeling troubled at having the knowledge but not having materials to put it to use.

Actually, in his current situation, there were too many options laid in front of him!

When ordinary people came across immortal opportunities and inherited some predecessor’s inheritance, they would jump in joy, their cultivation journey would also brighten up and their prospects would widen.

Fang Yuan’s Shadow Sect inheritances were gathered by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable in his life, and even continued for one hundred thousand years after his death.

It could be said Fang Yuan had obtained a sea of inheritances. He had countless choices in his cultivation journey.

And among these choices, the most attractive were soul path, time path, earth path and space path. Because they were inheritances of venerables, even a small portion could create chaos and cause Gu Immortals over the five regions to engage in mortal combat.

With these in his hands, needless to say, Fang Yuan’s future prospects were limitless.

But the things that could truly provide the greatest help to Fang Yuan were not these new choices.

Because although these choices had immense prospects and were extremely tempting, the amount of time, energy and resources they consumed were astronomical.

The one thing that could greatly help Fang Yuan currently was wisdom Gu.

The light of wisdom could provide an incomparable help to cultivation. Fang Yuan had already tasted the benefits of this, and had an extremely deep impression of it.

And to obtain wisdom Gu’s acknowledgement once again, he had to use his original rank six strength path immortal zombie body.

Fang Yuan already had the method to get rid of the soul path trap in the immortal zombie body, he was only lacking the core Immortal Gu, Cleanse Soul.

It all simmered down to refining cleanse soul Immortal Gu!

Regretfully, they had already tried to refine cleanse soul Immortal Gu over ten times, but all the attempts failed.

“Although the ice refinement method suits me really well, I have not focused on ice path before, moreover these final few steps are truly difficult.” Fang Yuan sighed.

“That’s true.” Sixth Hair went up to Fang Yuan’s side and sighed as he looked at the ground filled with ice pieces.

The success rate of refining an Immortal Gu was too low, it was a pit with no end in sight.

Only the current Fang Yuan had such accumulation and resolution to continue the attempts to refine cleanse soul Immortal Gu.

Currently, Fang Yuan had one big concern, whether someone had already refined cleanse soul Immortal Gu.

Immortal Gu were unique. If that was the case, he would not be able to succeed in the refinement no matter what.

However, this could be investigated to some degree.

If the Immortal Gu refinement had no mistakes during the whole process, but failed inexplicably at the moment of success, it would imply someone had already refined cleanse soul Immortal Gu.

But cleanse soul Immortal Gu’s recipe was a secret, and the range of its circulation was quite small, adding on that it had not been long since it had been destroyed, Fang Yuan's chances were still high.

“Hmm... maybe we can modify the last few steps. We can use snow lotus essence to replace those ice path immortal materials.” Sixth Hair said.

“Modifying the Immortal Gu recipe?” Fang Yuan mumbled, slightly nodding his head.

The final few steps were truly too difficult. After replacing the immortal materials, these few steps could be broken down, although it would lengthen the procedures and time of the entire refinement process, the difficulty would decrease by a lot.

“Then let's try modifying the Immortal Gu recipe.” Fang Yuan considered for a moment before deciding.

Modifying an Immortal Gu recipe could not be done casually, and required continuous attempts, it contained huge risks and would waste many resources.

“But snow lotus essence, this rank seven immortal material, is quite difficult to obtain, and is rarely seen in treasure yellow heaven.” Fang Yuan was slightly worried.

Sixth Hair smiled: “That's of no concern, snowman tribes produce a lot of this immortal material. Don't forget that we have already joined Northern Plains' variant human alliance. I have asked around and found that the snowman tribe below the northern icy plain has plenty of snow lotus essence.”

“Let's purchase them then.” Fang Yuan put his mind at ease.

Although he had few immortal essence stones currently, he had countless Shadow Sect inheritances, just taking out some of these could lead to terrifying chaos and carnage.

Thus, Fang Yuan was simply not worried that the snowman tribe would be unmoved!

“I must obtain the snow lotus essence!” A sharp light flashed past Fang Yuan's eyes.

He had to refine cleanse soul Immortal Gu as fast as possible, for this, Fang Yuan would not hesitate to pay any cost.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1442:

Duke Long's Disciple

Over a month later.

Central Continent, Spirit Affinity House’s headquarters.

A daoist temple was floating on the clouds.

Immortal Gu aura permeated all around it, this daoist temple was Spirit Affinity House’s time path Immortal Gu House — Sun and Moon Temple.

The archway, the main hall and the side halls were all integrated into one. This daoist temple was one of the foundations of Spirit Affinity House, its biggest effect was to facilitate in cultivation of Gu Immortals.

In normal times, Sun and Moon Temple would be in the control of Spirit Affinity House’s supreme elders, they would take turns in using it to help in their cultivation.

But right now, Sun and Moon Temple was taken out and placed in the air. Moreover, it was activated, every corner and tile of the daoist temple was alternating between emitting the light of the sun and moon.

The beautiful light shone on the surrounding clouds, making them look auspicious, and creating a scene of an immortal sanctuary.

In the main hall of the daoist temple, Gu Immortals had already gathered.

Almost all the Spirit Affinity House’s supreme elders were present, along with Feng Jiu Ge, Fairy Bai Qing, Xu Hao, Li Jun Ying, and the recently turned Gu Immortal – the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House, Zhao Lian Yun.

But currently, the main character was not any of them, but Feng Jin Huang.

Feng Jin Huang was dressed in neat and sharp white clothing, while her expression was solemn.

She was kneeling on the ground, kowtowing to Duke Long who was on the main seat.

This was the ceremony of Feng Jin Huang becoming the disciple of Duke Long!

Normally speaking, Feng Jin Huang, who was already in a sect, could not easily acknowledge another Gu Immortal as her master.

But who was Duke Long?

Everyone in Spirit Affinity House complied with this, they were jubilant. Several supreme elders of Spirit Affinity House had even discussed to make this ceremony of the highest standard, and also publicize this widely to raise the sect’s prestige.

However, this suggestion was refused by Duke Long.

Duke Long had notified them: Everything should be kept simple, they should not publicize it, but the standards should be kept high.

The first supreme elder of Spirit Affinity House personally took charge, she devoted all her effort to consult ancient texts and spent painstaking care to follow the master-disciple acknowledgement ceremony that was popular in Duke Long’s era.

Duke Long did not show anything on the surface, but was inwardly quite satisfied with this grand ceremony.

Especially when his gaze landed on Feng Jin Huang, his eyes revealed even more joy.

After the kowtowing ceremony was finished, Feng Jin Huang stood up and took out a cup of tea, offering it to Duke Long with both hands.

In the silent hall, Feng Jin Huang spoke in a clear voice: “Lord Duke Long, please accept my golden jade dew tea.”

Duke Long took the teacup and lifted the lid.

Instantly, the tea let out a gorgeous and gentle golden light, shining upon the ceiling, creating a magnificent scene.

Duke Long slowly closed his eyes and brought the teacup to his nose, taking a light sniff.

The fragrance was subtle and extremely clear like the smell of dew on the grass in the morning of spring, pure and without blemish, and also gave off a smell of brightness and liveliness.

“This tea is good.” Duke Long smiled, slowly opening his eyes as he took a sip.

The tea entered his throat, and it indeed was not ordinary. Even Duke Long had rarely come across such an excellent tea in his life.

“Feng Jin Huang, you are a refinement path great grandmaster, your tea brewing is naturally extraordinary. Good, from now onwards, you shall be my second disciple.”

The great hall immediately started buzzing with his words.

Every Gu Immortal was smiling happily, even Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying were no exception.

“Play the immortal music.” Spirit Affinity House’s first supreme elder said softly; the next moment, clear and wonderful immortal music started playing without lacking solemness and grandness.

“Disciple pays respect to master!” Feng Jin Huang kowtowed once again, this time she addressed Duke Long as ‘master’, and herself as ‘disciple’.

This grand master-disciple acknowledgment ceremony had finally finished after over two hours.

The significance of this grand ceremony was extremely huge.

Spirit Affinity House’s supreme elders were red with excitement.

This was the leader of Heavenly Court, Lord Duke Long, he had personally taken in a disciple!

The whole of Spirit Affinity House felt honored.

As Feng Jin Huang’s mother, tears fell out of Fairy Bai Qing’s eyes in excitement.

Feng Jiu Ge stood by her and lightly held her hand, he was also extremely gratified.

“Tomorrow, Feng Jin Huang will return to Heavenly Court with me and cultivate there.”

“Feng Jiu Ge and Bai Qing, remain behind, others can leave now.”

Duke Long waved for the others to leave, only Feng Jin Huang and her parents still remained.

“Feng Jiu Ge (Bai Qing) pays respects to Lord Duke Long.” The two bowed respectfully.

Duke Long slightly nodded, taking a glance at Fairy Bai Qing before looking at Feng Jiu Ge.

“The task of killing Fang Yuan failed?” Duke Long said with an indifferent tone.

Feng Jiu Ge: “I am ashamed.”

A few months back, Feng Jiu Ge and the others had been guarding that tributary of the River of Time in Western Desert, but where could they see Fang Yuan?

As time passed, Fairy Zi Wei also felt something wrong, and because of Feng Jin Huang’s master acknowledgement ceremony, Feng Jiu Ge was called back to Central Continent. But the other two Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortals still remained back in Western Desert, and had even began setting up an Immortal Gu formation.

Duke Long continued: “Fang Yuan is an otherworldly demon, and also the only complete otherworldly demon, he is the worst enemy of Heavenly Court, and also the target that you, Feng Jiu Ge, must eliminate.”

“I have only taken in two disciples my whole life, you should be clear of the significance. Feng Jin Huang is the prospective Great Dream Immortal Venerable, and you, Feng Jiu Ge, are her Dao Guardian.”

“What? I am Huang Er’s Dao Guardian?” Feng Jiu Ge was surprised.

“This is a heavenly secret, it should not have been revealed. But this has already been learned by Shadow Sect, so it doesn’t matter now. The great era is coming, Great Dream Immortal Venerable will be born, and heaven and earth shall experience an unprecedented transformation! Fang Yuan is the obstacle blocking the path of Heavenly Court, and is also the inevitable enemy of you two, father and daughter. You need to shoulder this heavy task that fate has assigned to you, lead all living beings to a brand new era.”

Saying this, Duke Long paused to give the three time to digest it.

Feng Jin Huang’s family calmed down only after a while.

Duke Long then said to Feng Jin Huang: “Huang Er, my disciple, you will follow me and accept my guidance. You are going to be separated from your parents in some time, you can spend some time together now, tomorrow, at dawn, I will come to take you to Heavenly Court.”

Duke Long instructed, his figure quietly disappearing from the main seat.

“Huang Er, to think that you are the chosen one. You must cultivate hard in Heavenly Court. You bear the task of the new era, the well-being of the people in this world will depend on your decisions in the future.” Fairy Bai Qing’s eyes reddened, slightly reluctant to separate.

“Mother, I still cannot believe it. This is just like a dream.” Feng Jin Huang threw herself into Fairy Bai Qing’s arms.

“When I heard that Lord Duke Long wanted to take you as his disciple, I had already predicted some matters about you. It is just that I did not expect your father to be your Dao Guardian.” Fairy Bai Qing was filled with emotions.

“Father, mother, what is a Dao Guardian?” Feng Jin Huang asked curiously.

Feng Jiu Ge explained: “In an Immortal Venerable’s or Demon Venerable’s cultivation journey, they would always have a Dao Guardian. Every Dao Guardian plays an important role in the development of the venerable.”

“Oh.” Feng Jin Huang then asked again: “Master said that he has two disciples. I am the second, that means there is a first disciple? Who is it?”

Feng Jiu Ge’s and Fairy Bai Qing’s expressions changed slightly.

The two quickly glanced at each other.

Fairy Bai Qing instructed Feng Jin Huang in a heavy tone: “Huang Er, this is a taboo, when you arrive in Heavenly Court, never mention it. Especially in front of your master.”

“Why?” Feng Jin Huang became even more curious.

At this time, Feng Jiu Ge gave the answer: “Because Duke Long’s first disciple, your senior brother, was the most mysterious Red Lotus Demon Venerable in history!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1443: Cleanse Soul Refined!

“This is the snow lotus essence?” Fang Yuan looked at the immortal material in his hand and murmured in admiration.

Snow lotus essence was extremely exquisite, it was only the size of an adult fist, its pink petals, bright red stamens, and the whole flower surface, was covered in a layer of ice as thick as a fingernail.

This ice layer was pure and transparent, radiating bursts of coldness. This coldness was not a chilling cold, but was more like the coldness of spring, despite being cold, it contained vigorous vitality.

It was the first time for Fang Yuan to come across and see this rank seven immortal material. Because it was so rare that even in treasure yellow heaven, it was a scarce item.

The reason for this was that this immortal material only grew in large scale snowman tribes. And the current five regions were ruled by humans, while the various variant human tribes were forced to live in some corners of the world.

Fang Yuan was able to easily obtain this immortal material, mainly due to the variant human alliance.

Not only did Fang Yuan obtain snow lotus essence, it was moreover a huge amount.

“I am really surprised, I did not think the snowman tribe would have amassed so much snow lotus essence.” Sixth Hair said from the side.

“Snow lotus essence is very rare even in treasure yellow heaven, it will definitely cause a bidding war if it is put up for sale. Unfortunately, strength decides the rules in this world. The snowman tribe is worried about the risks of exposing themselves, so they only sell small amounts of immortal materials like snow lotus essence every once in a while.” Fang Yuan said with a gaze that was clear of the underlying reasons.

“It is indeed the case.” Sixth Hair nodded: “Actually, our Lang Ya Sect also has such resources which are rare in the human Gu Immortal world, but we also cannot casually bring them out, for fear that we would leave behind clues and lead to an invasion by human Gu Immortals.”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly.

He saw a business opportunity.

Maybe later on, he could be a middleman for the transactions, after all, he was a human.

He really needed these profits.

With the frequent Gu refinement attempts recently, Fang Yuan had already paid an enormous price. Although most of the cost was paid using all kinds of inheritance contents, be it him or other Gu Immortals of Shadow Sect, they would need more resources to continue cultivating and managing their immortal apertures.

Fang Yuan looked at Sixth Hair as he shook his head.

He knew Sixth Hair’s words had deep meaning. Since he raised this issue, he not only reminded Fang Yuan, but also used an implicit way to offer himself to take on the assignment. If Fang Yuan had plans on doing something in this area, then Sixth Hair could mediate between the two sides, and help Fang Yuan fight for benefits.

But this was not important now.

“Right now, what I want is to refine cleanse soul Immortal Gu as soon as possible. Since we have obtained snow lotus essence, then we shall start on modifying the Immortal Gu recipe next. We will first separately modify the recipe, then combine them later to overcome the shortcomings on both sides, and finally obtain the most optimal Gu recipe.” Fang Yuan instructed Sixth Hair.

Sixth Hair did not forget to put on an act to deceive Lang Ya land spirit: “How many sect contribution points will you give me then?”

After a round of haggling, Sixth Hair obtained a satisfactory price, while Fang Yuan left the Gu refinement hall and returned to his cloud city.

He had personally examined the snow lotus essence, and just like the type that Sixth Hair had recommended, these were superior immortal materials.

The flowers were ice-cold, but they contained warm life force within, they would be an extremely good replacement for that flowing fire core in the original Gu recipe.

The main reason was that Fang Yuan was using the ice refinement method. Snow lotus essence naturally suited the ice refinement method more than flowing fire core.

An Immortal Gu could have a lot of different Immortal Gu recipes. There was not just one way to reach the same goal.

And when an Immortal Gu recipe was given to an expert refinement path Gu Immortal, they first distinguished which Gu refinement method was closer to the Immortal Gu recipe and had a higher probability of success.

Then in the Gu refinement process, the Gu Immortal might discover that some procedures in the Immortal Gu recipe did not suit them, or maybe they found better replacements for immortal materials.

Like this, they could further increase the success rate.

Fang Yuan and Sixth Hair were currently doing this.

However, the task of modifying the Immortal Gu recipe was mainly given to Sixth Hair. After all, Sixth Hair’s refinement path attainment was higher than Fang Yuan’s.

What Fang Yuan was exceptional in was his wisdom path attainment level and his wisdom path methods.

The only pity was that both Fang Yuan and Sixth Hair had ordinary attainment in soul path.

In the following days, Fang Yuan began cultivating while modifying the Immortal Gu recipe of Cleanse Soul.

Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley.

He was once again using these two great secluded domains of heaven and earth to cultivate soul path.

His soul path cultivation progressed by leaps and bounds, even Fang Yuan felt it was somewhat inconceivable.

“Truly the sacred lands of soul path, of course the main reasons are these cultivation methods. These are from Spectral Soul’s true inheritance!” Fang Yuan was quite moved.

Back then, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had also cultivated in these two secluded domains of heaven and earth. He had summed up and formulated a complete set of comprehensive, complementary, and orderly cultivation methods.

Fang Yuan was just following it word-by-word.

Previously, he had used burning soul bursting luck once in Western Desert, and it had been enough to deplete his soul path foundation entirely.

But after just a few days, he had almost restored his foundation with terrifying efficiency!

“This is still considering that I lack the crucial Immortal Gu and cannot use many immortal killer moves, only able to use these mortal methods. Fortunately, my sovereign immortal body has no conflict in dao marks, so mortal methods are also effective.”

Fang Yuan was cultivating soul path, raising his soul foundation once again.

The main reason was naturally to refine cleanse soul Immortal Gu.

Burning soul bursting luck could immediately cause his luck to increase sharply, and this had a mystical effect when refining Immortal Gu.

As to making Ying Wu Xie use burning soul bursting luck, it was not that it was not effective, but there were too many who were luck connected, only a part of the luck would be effective on Fang Yuan. It was far better for Fang Yuan to use burning soul bursting luck himself, and then fix his luck.

There was also another reason, Ying Wu Xie could use lead soul into dream, if his soul path foundation was too low, this killer move’s power would be limited.

Of course, Fang Yuan was definitely going to master this killer move later on.

However, now that he was in Lang Ya blessed land, there was no hurry.

Time went by quickly, over half a month had passed in Lang Ya blessed land.

Fang Yuan and Sixth Hair had collated their gains and created a modified Immortal Gu recipe.

There was nothing to talk about, next was to continue the Gu refinement.

First attempt, failure.

Second attempt, failure.

Third attempt, failure.

Large amounts of immortal materials were wasted, however they were not in vain, after the failures, Fang Yuan and Sixth Hair adjusted the Immortal Gu recipe and perfected it to the limit of their abilities.

During the fourth attempt, Fang Yuan activated burning soul bursting luck, causing his luck to increase greatly.

This time, he refined to the final juncture, but regretfully, still failed.

Fifth attempt, failure.

Sixth attempt, another failure.

Seventh, eighth, ninth...

Fang Yuan continued to attempt it, persevering without giving up.

After every failure, he would bitterly practise his refinement path skills, and at the same time, enter the two sacred lands of soul path and use the cultivation methods in Spectral Soul’s true inheritance to quickly increase his soul path foundation.

When his soul foundation was of standard, Fang Yuan used burning soul bursting luck once again, and continued attempting the Gu refinement.

Thirteenth attempt, failure.

Fourteenth attempt, failure.

Fifteenth...

Success!

Success came unexpectedly and somewhat suddenly. Fang Yuan held cleanse soul Immortal Gu in his hand.

He succeeded at the fifteenth attempt, adding on Sixth Hair’s previous failures, the refinement had been attempted close to thirty times in total!

The resources spent were in an incomparably enormous amount, just to refine one rank six Immortal Gu.

If it were an ordinary Gu Immortal, they would have gone bankrupt long ago.

Even the past Fang Yuan with his sovereign immortal aperture would not be able to bear such a price.

Having inherited Shadow Sect’s true inheritances and having a buyer that could afford them, Lang Ya Sect, as well as having enough supply of the crucial immortal material, snow lotus essence, and a refinement path Gu Immortal’s committed support, all these reasons finally created Fang Yuan’s success.

“Cleanse soul Immortal Gu has finally been refined.” Fang Yuan inhaled deeply before sighing.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1444: Qing Si’s Dismay

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu.

It looked like a tadpole but with the size of Fang Yuan’s fist, and was completely grayish white. Right now, it was floating above Fang Yuan’s palm.

“I finally succeeded, it was not easy.” Fang Yuan inwardly sighed.

Refining Gu was truly a huge gamble.

They had attempted close to thirty times before barely succeeding. The resources consumed were already in enormous numbers.

Fang Yuan was not able to bring out these resources, but he could take out Shadow Sect’s inheritances and exchange them for Lang Ya Sect’s sect contribution points, and use these sect contribution points to exchange for plentiful resources from Lang Ya Sect’s warehouse.

But these resources did not include the crucial immortal material snow lotus essence.

The fact in front of them proved this rank seven immortal material was greatly helpful.

After the Immortal Gu recipe had gone through modifications, it would become much better than before, or more accurately, it would become much more suitable for Fang Yuan’s refinement method.

The only mild disappointment was that this cleanse soul Immortal Gu was only rank six.

If it were rank seven cleanse soul Immortal Gu, it could directly be used to set up the immortal killer move which could start breaking the soul path trap in the immortal zombie body.

Rank six cleanse soul Immortal Gu could be used as well, but its effect was much lower, and required at least eight years before it could completely get rid of the soul path trap.

This was of course without counting those time path methods.

If time path methods were used to supplement the killer move, Fang Yuan estimated the eight years of time could be reduced to three years.

Three years was referring to the time in five regions, this was the limit of Fang Yuan’s current ability.

“Three years is too long!” Fang Yuan’s gaze was deep.

If it were rank seven cleanse soul Immortal Gu, he would require at most half a year of time, in five region’s time, to resolve the soul path trap in the immortal zombie body.

However, refining rank seven cleanse soul Immortal Gu was much more difficult than refining rank six cleanse soul Immortal Gu. Moreover, rank six cleanse soul Immortal Gu had to be used as the main material to refine it.

After all, Immortal Gu were unique.

Since rank six Cleanse Soul existed, there could be no rank seven, rank eight or even rank nine cleanse soul Immortal Gu in the world.

The risk, however, would become much higher.

When Fang Yuan was refining Cleanse Soul and failed, only some immortal materials were destroyed. But if the refinement of rank seven Cleanse Soul failed, the rank six cleanse soul Immortal Gu might be the one destroyed, and everything would have to be started over again.

Naturally, Fang Yuan could ensure the safety of the immortal materials to some degree with his blood asset Immortal Gu. But it was unknown if he could protect the rank six cleanse soul Immortal Gu during the highly risky refinement process.

Moreover, Fang Yuan would have to research the method first.

Fang Yuan had attainment level in blood path, but his refinement path attainment was slightly sub-par.

“Lord sect leader, do we continue refining? Maybe I could change my vital Gu to cleanse soul Immortal Gu.” Sixth Hair transmitted his voice.

After becoming a vital Gu, cleanse soul Immortal Gu could be refined to advance to rank seven and even if the process failed, it would still continue to exist as long as Sixth Hair did not die, at most it would suffer heavy injuries and be on the verge of dying.

But Fang Yuan refused: “That’s not appropriate. Not to mention that changing vital Gu is extremely dangerous and could harm you severely, Lang Ya land spirit is not easy to deceive. Our relationship on the surface is not enough for you to make such a sacrifice.”

“Then how about letting someone else change it to their vital Gu. Ying Wu Xie and Hei Lou Lan are both eligible candidates. I suggest Ying Wu Xie.” Sixth Hair suggested.

This was indeed a good suggestion.

Bai Ning Bing could be excluded, Lady White Rabbit and Fairy Miao Yin were not as reliable as Hei Lou Lan and Ying Wu Xie, and could also be excluded. The remaining ones were Ying Wu Xie, who was a split soul of Spectral Soul, and Hei Lou Lan, who was restricted by the alliance agreement and was unable to rebel.

Comparing the two, Ying Wu Xie was naturally slightly better, after all, he had high soul path attainment. Moreover, when Fang Yuan took his lead soul into dream in the future, cleanse soul Immortal Gu could replenish some of his strength.

Fang Yuan, however, shook his head.

He had refined cleanse soul Immortal Gu after so much effort, how could he give it so easily, at most he would only lend it.

Moreover, cleanse soul Immortal Gu was practical, and when used in soul path cultivation, it could slightly cover up some insufficiencies of Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley.

Fang Yuan already intended to firmly hold Cleanse Soul himself.

However, Sixth Hair's words reminded him of some things.

"Although I am Shadow Sect's leader, my control over the sect is rather poor."

"Bai Ning Bing is not controlled by me, we can only be considered allies who are using each other. Lady White Rabbit likes me, and because of the true inheritance as well, she is following me. Fairy Miao Yin is also cultivating a Shadow Sect inheritance, and is chased by Southern Border's righteous path forces, so she can only stand by my side."

"Hei Lou Lan is bound by our alliance agreement and is unable to betray me, but she is ambitious, she absolutely won't be content with the current state. It is just that she has no way to revolt for the moment."

"As for Ying Wu Xie and Sixth Hair, they are Spectral Soul's split souls, and are always thinking of saving the main body. But this hope is too minuscule, and they are too weak, so they can only depend on me."

If Fang Yuan were to listen to Sixth Hair and hand cleanse soul Immortal Gu to Ying Wu Xie, in the future, if they had a great opportunity to save Spectral Soul's main body but it did not align with Fang Yuan's plans, what would they do?

Ying Wu Xie and Sixth Hair's decision absolutely would not incline towards Fang Yuan.

At that time, Fang Yuan's action of handing cleanse soul Immortal Gu to Ying Wu Xie would be a foolish move of supporting the enemy.

Hence, Fang Yuan said another plan to Sixth Hair.

"Although it is only a rank six cleanse soul Immortal Gu, there are some unique methods in Shadow Sect's inheritances that can speed its growth. But it requires sacrificing a rank seven Gu Immortal's soul."

Sixth Hair was dazed before tensing up immediately: "Sect leader is thinking of? You should know that you are wanted by both Longevity Heaven and every Huang Jin tribe."

“Relax, I have it under control.” Fang Yuan patted Sixth Hair’s shoulder, and slowly walked away.

...

The morning sun passed through the window and shone in the room.

Murong Qing Si’s mood was great as she sat before a table and hummed a song while playing with the flowers in the pot.

The flowers were in full bloom, and under the sunlight, the red petals looks tender and joyous.

Today was a joyous day for Murong Qing Si.

Because her lover Yun Liang, according to their previous agreement, was going to come to Murong tribe today to formally ask for her hand in marriage!

Actually, it had not been long since the two were acquainted.

Murong Qing Si was an immortal from Murong tribe, while Yun Liang was a famous lone cultivator in Northern Plains with the nickname of Cloud Gentleman.

Although both were famous characters, the two first saw each other at Hei tribe’s Iron Eagle blessed land. They had gotten into a conflict because of immortal material affinity wood.

Affinity wood was a rootless tree that grew in the air. It was extremely fragile, there could be no disturbance when gathering it, otherwise this highly valuable immortal material would be destroyed.

When Murong Qing Si had discovered the affinity wood, Cloud Gentleman Yun Liang had already begun collecting it.

Murong Qing Si did not attack, quietly waiting for him to finish collecting.

Yun Liang was very elegant, showing willingness to spar with Murong Qing Si, with the winner taking all the affinity wood.

Destiny was truly a mysterious thing.

The two were acquainted like this, and in the following days, came across each other many times because of some coincidences.

As time continued to pass, because of their similar opinions in many things, feelings began to grow between them, and they even pledged to marry each other.

Unfortunately, their identities were an obstruction to this marriage.

The woman was a Huang Jin tribe Gu Immortal, while the man was a lone cultivator.

Their relationship was reported by someone, they became extremely anxious, but soon, the situation turned better unexpectedly.

After Longevity Heaven knew of this situation, they actually approved of Yun Liang’s and Murong Qing Si’s marriage.

Because of Heavenly Court’s strength, Longevity Heaven was beginning to make plans to deal with the wave of the incoming great era.

And to unite even more Gu Immortals of the Northern Plains Gu Immortal world, Longevity Heaven was happy to see this marriage happen.

Yun Liang could be said to be a symbolic figure among lone immortals, the political significance of him marrying into the Huang Jin tribes’ Murong tribe was extremely huge.

If it succeeded, Longevity Heaven would even encourage this matter in the future.

Murong Qing Si naturally did not know of these schemes, she only felt surprised and happy, and was even more thankful towards Longevity Heaven, rejoicing at her hard-earned love.

“Yun Liang is coming to propose marriage today, the immortal materials are prepared and confirmed; I have checked the list of presents and there are no issues. The clan’s supreme elders have received Longevity Heaven’s instructions, and will not obstruct this marriage. As long as the marriage proposal succeeds, I will be getting ready for the marriage a month later. But... why is there an indescribable feeling of unease lingering in my heart?”

Murong Qing Si’s delicate brows rose slightly, she pressed her palm on her chest as she felt an inexplicable unease.

“Am I getting insecure because of extreme joy?”

“Hehehe, there are no issues, what more obstructions can there be?”

“Maybe, because I am filled with joy and blissfulness, this feels very surreal to me?”

“Hehehe.”

Murong Qing Si blushed as she let her thoughts wander.

She laughed, her face shining from the bright light inside the room.

However, at the next moment!

She suddenly stiffened, her face turning deathly pale.

At this moment, a soul lantern Gu and a life tablet Gu had shattered inside her immortal aperture. These two Gu worms were the tokens that she and Yun Liang had given to each other!

“Yun Liang, he...”

“No... no way!”

“This is not possible!!”

Crack, Murong Qing Si burst out of the window and flew frantically towards the sky.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1445: Culprit Fang Yuan?

Murong Qing Si flew with all her might, her reckless action immediately attracting the attention of other Gu Immortals.

“What happened?”

“Looking at Murong Qing Si’s expression, something seems wrong!”

“Qing Si, wait a moment, why are you so panicked?”

A tribe Gu Immortal inquired, but Murong Qing Si just kept on flying, her heart was filled with panic and terror as she was desperate to verify the truth.

“Move, let’s go take a look.”

“Today is the day that Yun Liang is coming to propose a marriage, but Murong Qing Si is so anxious, unless.....”

Soon, three Gu Immortal figures flew out from Murong tribe’s headquarters and followed after Murong Qing Si.

The life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu on Murong Qing Si had already shattered, so she was unable to rely on them to determine Yun Liang’s location, but she knew the route Yun Liang was going to take to come to Murong tribe. Right now, she only needed to check this route.

After madly flying for few minutes, a ruined battlefield suddenly appeared in Murong Qing Si’s vision.

Her whole body shook violently as she quickly descended.

“Yun Liang? Yun Liang!”

“Where are you?”

Murong Qing Si called out repeatedly, but only the sound of wind replied her in this battered battlefield.

“Oh no!”

“There was a huge battle here.”

“How could this happen?!”

The three Murong tribe Gu Immortals who had followed from behind, saw this scene and immediately realized the severity of the situation as they began to search as well.

The four Gu Immortals turned over the whole battlefield, finally making some discoveries.

An information path mortal Gu was deeply buried under the ground, and seemed to be a dying message left behind by Yun Liang.

“Qing Si, you need to mentally prepare yourself.” A Murong tribe Gu Immortal worriedly looked at Murong Qing Si.

Her condition was clearly not good, and looking at this information path mortal Gu, her mind started shaking as fear filled her heart.

But finally, she still clasped this mortal Gu with her trembling hands.

She then transferred her mental sense inside, and the moment she read the contents, she shouted: “Fang Yuan, I won’t forgive you!”

Her voice was so sad and contained such hatred that it even shook the hearts of the other Murong tribe Gu Immortals.

Guh.

At the next moment, Murong Qing Si coughed out a mouthful of blood, and fell down on her back. But the anger and sorrow in her heart were so great that she fainted.

The other Murong tribe Gu Immortals quickly moved to support her.

She was not injured, it was just that her heart had suffered a huge trauma.

They discussed for a moment, and decided that waking her up now would not be good for her.

The three Gu Immortals then took turns in inspecting the contents of the Gu worm.

This crucial information path mortal Gu recorded the scene of the final battle of Yun Liang’s life. His opponent was an ancient sword dragon!

This ancient sword dragon could use immortal killer moves, and also possessed an extremely powerful defensive method that could reflect attacks.

Its identity was almost certain, the three Gu Immortals immediately thought of a name — Liu Guan Yi!

But what relation did Liu Guan Yi have with Fang Yuan?

They continued to read the contents before coming to a realization. Towards the end of the battle, the ancient sword dragon transformed into a human, he was Liu Guan Yi, and he struck Yun Liang with a fatal move.

Yun Liang cursed: “Liu Guan Yi, we have neither hatred nor grievance between us, but you are going after my life, I won’t let you go even if I turn into a ghost!”

Liu Guan Yi sneered: “So unfortunate, you won’t even have the opportunity to turn into a ghost. Go die, oh, that’s right, Liu Guan Yi is only my alias, my real name is Fang Yuan!”

“Fang Yuan...” Yun Liang’s gaze slowly dimmed.

Fang Yuan sneered: “Heh, being able to know my name before dying is your honor. Because in the future, my name will resound throughout heaven and earth, countless beings shall tremble at my name!”

Merciless, savage, and domineering aura assaulted the three Murong tribe Gu Immortals.

“So Liu Guan Yi is actually Fang Yuan, and Fang Yuan is Liu Guan Yi, they are both the same person!”

“Bastard! Liu Guan Yi, no, Fang Yuan, he actually dared to kill Yun Liang, this is a complete disregard for my Murong tribe!!”

One Gu Immortal clenched his fists, unable to restrain his fury.

But the other two immortals fell into a strange silence.

“Why are you not speaking?” The furious Gu Immortal asked.

Those two Gu Immortals sighed at the same time, one of them said: “Fang Yuan is an otherworldly demon who destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he is also Liu Guan Yi who subdued Reverse Flow River and has rank eight battle strength. He offended both Ye Lui tribe and Liu tribe, but look at how they are behaving now.”

“Although they had issued arrest warrants against Fang Yuan, after the battle of Reverse Flow River, these two tribes ceased all activities and don’t dare to find trouble for Fang Yuan. I am afraid our Murong tribe...”

The furious Gu Immortal’s eyes opened wide as he shouted: “Afraid of what?! We belong to the grand Huang Jin tribes, descendants of Giant Sun, with so many Gu Immortals, how can we fear a measly otherworldly demon?! We need to take revenge! We need to show them the might of Northern Plains’ righteous path!”

The other two Gu Immortals could only look at each other bitterly.

“Even after so many years, Murong Xing Sheng is still the same.” The two secretly conversed.

“Ignore him, this matter is not so simple. Murong Qing Si’s and Yun Liang’s marriage is not just a matter of our Murong tribe, Longevity Heaven is also paying attention to it. If this is not handled properly, it might raise a huge turbulence! There is more than meets the eye, it is not something that rank six minor characters like us can take part in, if we are not careful, we might get engulfed by this whirlpool and die without a corpse.”

“You are right, the urgent thing now is to report this situation and this crucial clue to first supreme elder.”

...

Lang Ya blessed land, inside a cloud city.

Inside a secret room, Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged on a cushion with his eyes shut tightly.

Almost all of his attention was on his sovereign immortal aperture.

Cleanse soul Immortal Gu, which had been refined not long ago, was floating in the air. Large amount of mortal Gu as well as several supplementary Immortal Gu were surrounding it.

All these Gu worms activated, emitting faint white radiance.

The radiance gathered on an immortal zombie body.

It was Fang Yuan’s eight armed strength path immortal zombie body!

The faint white radiance had already covered it for a long time now, but the immortal zombie body showed not even the slightest movement.

But Fang Yuan was not anxious or surprised, because he had still not taken the crucial step.

He had only been getting familiar with this immortal killer move, and stabilizing the situation.

After few minutes of time, Fang Yuan inwardly nodded.

He took out a rank seven Gu Immortal’s soul.

It was the soul of Ye Lui Qun Xing, a rank seven expert of Ye Lui tribe.

Maybe it felt the danger of destruction, Ye Lui Qun Xing’s soul struggled intensely, letting out ear-piercing soul howls.

But that was it.

Not to mention the current Fang Yuan who had Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, even if it were before, he could easily suppress this measly soul.

Ye Lui Qun Xing was very powerful when he was alive, but this was just a soul, what could he do?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1446: Soul Path Trap Dispelled

Soon, Ye Lui Qun Xing’s soul entered the range of the faint white radiance.

Ye Lui Qun Xing’s soul strangely quietened, not moving at all, as if it had suddenly lost its ability to think.

Then, specks of faint-green light started to fly out of the soul.

The amount of these lights grew rapidly, and drifted in the air like a drizzle of rain.

Fang Yuan willed as these specks of light found a direction, they surged towards the strength path immortal zombie body.

Layers of light covered the immortal zombie body, destroying the soul path dao marks in it.

As time passed, the soul path dao marks on the immortal zombie began to decrease gradually, while Ye Lui Qun Xing’s soul also began to weaken constantly.

Fang Yuan’s mind was calm as still water, maintaining the killer move stably without any hesitation.

This killer move needed to be maintained for over three days and three nights before the soul path trap in the immortal zombie body could be completely removed.

The whole process would spend over twelve hundred beads of red date immortal essence.

This was the case after using a rank seven Gu Immortal soul and cleanse soul Immortal Gu, with the exact method recorded in Spectral Soul’s true inheritance. If Fang Yuan were to envision it himself with trial and error, the amount of time, effort and resources required would be astronomical.

Fang Yuan was not worried about lacking immortal essence, he had made ample preparation.

Time slowly passed like this.

Three days and three nights passed, Fang Yuan slowly stopped the killer move.

He calculated for a moment, the amount of red date immortal essence used had passed thirteen hundred, and it was after he used some Immortal Gu to replace several original procedures.

This huge immortal essence expenditure emptied his immortal essence storage at once.

But Fang Yuan was instead filled with joy.

Perceivable dao Immortal Gu!

He activated this unique information path Immortal Gu, and after inspecting the dao marks, he smiled in satisfaction.

“It’s finally gone! The soul path trap on the immortal zombie body is completely removed!!”

It had not been easy.

It truly had not been easy.

The issue of the soul path trap had troubled Fang Yuan for a long time. Now, he had finally resolved it.

For a moment, the joy of success filled Fang Yuan’s heart.

But...

After he calmed down, he did not personally test it.

He was cautious, he chose to use other Gu Immortal souls to inspect the body.

After several tests, he verified there was indeed no issue.

Fang Yuan then moved his soul into the immortal zombie body.

At the next moment, the immortal zombie body opened its eyes and slowly stood up. Fang Yuan gazed at his eight huge arms and stretched his whole body.

“I can finally use my body again.” Fang Yuan’s feelings were somewhat nostalgic at this moment, as if he had returned home after a long journey.

Fang Yuan softly rubbed his stomach.

Only a rank five aperture remained there. The previous rank six strength path dead aperture had already crumbled, and the strength path dao marks had moved into Fang Yuan’s physical body.

From this perspective, Fang Yuan’s strength path immortal zombie was a genuine rank six strength path immortal material!

The rank six strength path dead aperture was the aperture Fang Yuan gained after using second aperture Gu, raising it to an immortal aperture.

The rank five peak stage aperture was his original aperture.

Spring Autumn Cicada was still firmly sealed inside this aperture.

The purple crystal walls of the aperture were already filled with cracks. After all, Spring Autumn Cicada was a rank six Immortal Gu which put huge pressure on the mortal aperture.

However, Fang Yuan was not worried about the aperture walls shattering under the pressure. He could already deal with it before, and he could do it even better now that he had Shadow Sect’s inheritances.

Fang Yuan absolutely would not give up Spring Autumn Cicada.

However, Spring Autumn Cicada was filled with heaven’s will currently, Fang Yuan would have to get rid of all the heaven’s will in it to use it.

Obtaining a pure rank six Spring Autumn Cicada was far from Fang Yuan’s target.

Fang Yuan’s next plan was to use this foundation to refine rank seven Spring Autumn Cicada!

“But before refining rank seven Spring Autumn Cicada, I should first advance this body to rank six.”

Rank six time path Gu Immortal, this had been Fang Yuan’s initial plan.

Fang Yuan did not intend to give up on this plan.

After the successful attempt, Fang Yuan’s soul moved out and returned to his sovereign immortal body. As for this immortal zombie body, it was still suppressed in the Gu formation. After all, Spring Autumn Cicada contained heaven’s will, Fang Yuan had to be prepared just in case.

“Let’s test wisdom Gu!” When he thought of this, Fang Yuan actually felt a trace of impatient eagerness.

He came out of the secret room and directly flew towards wisdom Gu.

Ever since Hu Immortal blessed land had been attacked and captured by Heavenly Court, wisdom Gu had been transported to Lang Ya blessed land by hairy man Gu Immortals using some secret method.

From then on, it had been fed and raised by Lang Ya land spirit and had not been transferred to other places.

Fang Yuan soon went in front of wisdom Gu, this movement naturally attracted Lang Ya land spirit’s attention.

Lang Ya land spirit’s expression was somewhat strange: “Fang Yuan, someone has framed you.”

“What do you mean?”

“Hehe, Yun Liang is dead, there was a crucial clue left behind in the battlefield which directly points to you as the killer. Moreover, your Liu Guan Yi identity was also completely exposed. Now, the whole of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world, hmm, no, the Gu Immortal world of all five regions, is shaken because of this news.” Lang Ya land spirit laughed.

Although Fang Yuan needed to use a rank seven Gu Immortal’s soul to get rid of the soul path trap, he already had such souls in his possession. Not only of Ye Lui Qun Xing, he also had souls of Fairy Cui Bo, Liu tribe’s Liu Yong, Ma Hong Yun’s soul, and even the whole living body of Hei Cheng.

Previously, Sixth Hair had been worried that Fang Yuan wanted to go to Northern Plains to kill a Gu Immortal.

Fang Yuan had replied that it was under control.

He naturally would not take such risks, he already had Gu Immortal souls which could be used for this purpose.

What Fang Yuan wanted to do was to rest, striving for time while he strengthened himself, he did not want to go fight outside.

After Fang Yuan inquired about the details, he soon realized: “This is probably Heavenly Court’s doing. Yun Liang is a lone immortal, but Longevity Heaven actually agreed to his and Murong Qing Si’s marriage, and even showed a trace of joy in seeing it happen. This is Longevity Heaven’s preparation to face the coming great era. But how could Heavenly Court allow it? They naturally would try to wreck this plan.”

“Fang Yuan, your analysis is logical.” Lang Ya land spirit nodded, shortly smiling strangely, “Now, Longevity Heaven is extremely furious, and the newly appointed South Desolation Immortal Yao Huang has even declared he will capture you and bring you to justice. You are currently not only a sworn enemy of Northern Plains’ righteous path, even demonic path and lone immortals are hostile towards you.”

Fang Yuan grunted in acknowledgement, this was understandable.

In the battle of Reverse Flow River, Fang Yuan had offended Northern Plains’ righteous path, as well as Old Ancestor Xue Hu, who represented the demonic path.

Yun Liang was a symbol of Northern Plains’ lone immortals, and Fang Yuan, who was proclaimed to be his killer, would naturally suffer hostility from this faction.

“Alright, forget this, make a move quickly, let me see if you can summon the light of wisdom or not?” Lang Ya land spirit urged impatiently.

“Okay, I am also looking forward to this.” Fang Yuan took a deep breath.

The probability of success was high, if it succeeded, he would grow at an immense rate!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1447: Regaining What He Lost

Fang Yuan sat cross-legged on the ground and brought out the eight armed immortal zombie body from his immortal aperture.

Then, under Lang Ya land spirit’s gaze, he moved out his soul and entered this immortal zombie body.

The immortal zombie body slowly opened its eyes and stood up.

Fang Yuan took a glance at the sovereign immortal body before turning towards wisdom Gu.

“Wisdom Gu.” He spoke in his hoarse and unpleasant voice: “Do you still remember our agreement?”

Wisdom Gu had been playing around, but when it heard these words, it immediately stopped and floated in the air, quietly looking at Fang Yuan.

Time slowly passed, Fang Yuan could not help but hold his breath.

Even though the immortal zombie did not need to breathe.

Wisdom Gu seemed to be unconvinced as it began circling around Fang Yuan.

It circled again and again while continuously observing Fang Yuan. After a while, it stopped and rested on a huge tree leaf.

Then...

A multi-colored light which became increasingly bigger began to gradually spread from wisdom Gu’s body.

The light of wisdom!

“Success. I finally succeeded!” Fang Yuan could not hold back his laughter.

Lang Ya land spirit, who was at the side, was dumbstruck, this was the first time he was seeing this sight.

“Light of wisdom! This is truly the light of wisdom...” Lang Ya land spirit walked to the light of wisdom, immediately sensing his thoughts becoming extremely sharp.

For an instant, he became extremely intelligent.

But he cautiously retreated out of the light of wisdom’s range, then enviously looked at Fang Yuan, who was inside the light.

“Fang Yuan actually succeeded in summoning the light of wisdom. Amazing, this kid is truly amazing!”

After the shock, Lang Ya land spirit looked at Fang Yuan with a complex expression, he was in a daze.

Although there were two land spirits, they both shared the same memories.

Lang Ya land spirit still remembered that time several years ago, when Fang Yuan was still only a Gu Master, a trivial mortal who came to Lang Ya blessed land for the first time.

But in these few years, Fang Yuan had not only become a Gu Immortal, his name was now infamous throughout the five regions, and he had the strength to battle rank eight!

And now, he could summon the light of wisdom and even use it!!

His growth had skyrocketed, he had truly burst into the sky.

If Fang Yuan had not inherited the Shadow Sect inheritances, and only obtained the light of wisdom, he could only be considered a tiger with wings at most. But Fang Yuan possessed Shadow Sect's inheritances, as such, the help that the light of wisdom could give Fang Yuan reached an unimaginable level.

Lang Ya land spirit had gone through countless years and had seen all kinds of characters, but now, he could no longer estimate Fang Yuan's growth.

There was no way to estimate it.

He absolutely could not predict Fang Yuan's following cultivation and progress!

Any accomplishments Fang Yuan made in the future would be understandable and acceptable now.

Fang Yuan soon restrained his laughter.

He calmed down, and spoke to wisdom Gu: "Alright, wisdom Gu, please stop, let me take a break."

The light of wisdom slowly shrunk and disappeared.

Fang Yuan took a deep breath before saying: "Wisdom Gu, let us continue."

At the next moment, the light of wisdom spread once again.

Fang Yuan clenched his fists tightly, he was extremely excited.

This fact completely proved that the light of wisdom was back once again, from now on, barring any accidents, he could continue using light of wisdom till eternity.

Fang Yuan then turned around and smiled towards Lang Ya land spirit: "First supreme elder, let us exchange inheritances."

Lang Ya land spirit inwardly praised: Fang Yuan's mind is still so clear.

"Okay." He agreed, not hesitating even a little.

If it were the previous Lang Ya land spirit, he might have refused because he only liked refining Gu. But the current Lang Ya land spirit wanted hairy men to rule the world, so he issued ironclad policies, actively promoting talents, and doing everything to turn Lang Ya Sect into a powerful sect.

And such a sect naturally had to be widely involved in many paths, it would not do to just have refinement path, after all, refinement path's battle strength was lacking compared to other paths.

So Lang Ya land spirit was extremely desirous of the many inheritances in Fang Yuan's possession.

Especially Spectral Soul's true inheritance.

Back then, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable slaughtered countless beings, he was the venerable with the deepest killing nature. His soul path true inheritance naturally had absolute power. If Lang Ya Sect obtained it, it would fill the sect's deficiency.

Both sides soon completed the exchange.

Fang Yuan obtained almost all the inheritances of Lang Ya Sect, which included the complete self luck true inheritance and Long Hair Ancestor’s refinement path true inheritance.

And Lang Ya land spirit obtained Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, Limitless’ true inheritance, Red Lotus’ true inheritance, Paradise Earth’s true inheritance, as well as countless other true inheritances.

The inheritances that Shadow Sect bothered to collect were naturally beyond outstanding.

Thus, based on value, Fang Yuan had paid more than Lang Ya Sect.

To make up for this discrepancy, Lang Ya land spirit handed Luo Po Valley to Fang Yuan once again.

Currently, Fang Yuan was a public enemy of the whole world, adding on his previous acts, Lang Ya land spirit’s trust in him increased by a lot.

“Fang Yuan is one of us, anyway, my sect’s members can still use Luo Po Valley even if I give it to him.” This was Lang Ya land spirit’s secret calculation.

And to Fang Yuan, he had already obtained a portion of the essence of self luck true inheritance – one of the three great true inheritances of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. Now, he had obtained its complete essence.

Long Hair Ancestor’s refinement path true inheritance mostly talked of the hairy man heaven and earth style refinement path method, which was not very helpful to Fang Yuan directly.

In this transaction, both sides bought and sold inheritances, it did not involve any Immortal Gu.

Naturally, Fang Yuan really wanted to take some Immortal Gu in Lang Ya Sect. For instance, Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.

Unfortunately, Lang Ya land spirit was strict about not selling these Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan did not leave immediately, instead he continued bathing in the light of wisdom and began thinking of all sorts of issues.

Lang Ya land spirit left in sadness at this sight.

Obtaining the help of the light of wisdom once again, Fang Yuan was no longer the same as before.

All kinds of wisdom path methods activated in coordination, causing his thoughts to collide endlessly. The immortal killer move which used affection Immortal Gu and self love Immortal Gu allowed Fang Yuan to possess immortal level self will Gu, giving him an endless supply of wills.

In this way, the light of wisdom could unleash its mystical effects to its limit, and soon, Fang Yuan obtained a satisfying answer.

Immortal killer move — Ghost Official Garment!

This was a set of immortal killer move in Spectral Soul true inheritance, its effect was to defend against heaven’s will and other Gu Immortals’ deductions.

It was a defensive killer move.

It was classified into four levels, corresponding to rank six, rank seven, rank eight and rank nine.

With the original foundation, Fang Yuan modified this immortal killer move so that even without the core Immortal Gu, he could use other Immortal Gu as the replacement!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1448: Ghost Official Garment

The modified immortal killer move, ghost official garment, used rank seven change soul Immortal Gu and rank six cleanse soul Immortal Gu as the cores. After several failures, Fang Yuan succeeded in activating it.

He directly moved out his soul from his sovereign immortal body.

His soul floated in the air, it was not very condensed.

His soul foundation had been expended several times because of burning soul bursting luck, and was now only at hundred man soul level.

The difference was that his soul was now covered in a broad garment, with long sleeves and a lower hem that was dragging on the ground.

This was the manifestation of the killer move ghost official garment.

Its general term was ghost official garment, but if it was subdivided, rank six level ghost official garment was called ghost soldier garment, rank seven was ghost general garment, rank eight was ghost king garment, and rank nine was ghost venerable garment.

At rank nine level, it could defend against rank nine venerable’s deductions. Naturally, this was only in theory, even Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had not raised this killer move to rank nine in the past.

Because he did not need to.

He was a grand Demon Venerable when alive, slaughtering countless beings, he simply did not need to defend against deductions.

As such, the highest level of his ghost official garment was only rank eight.

Fang Yuan’s soul inspected it and was puzzled: “Huh? Why is it only rank six ghost soldier garment?”

After he modified the killer move, the core was replaced by rank seven Change Soul and rank six Cleanse Soul, that meant this was a rank seven killer move, why was it ghost soldier garment instead of ghost general garment?

“Is it because of my modification?” This guess had just appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind before he denied it.

He had used the light of wisdom to modify it, how could it be wrong?

“Oh, I understand.” Fang Yuan thought for a moment before he realized.

The answer was in his body.

Beneath ghost official garment was another layer of clothing.

If ghost soldier garment was said to be made of hemp and was a shoddy product, then this inner garment was like silk, it was extremely compact, giving an exquisite and smooth feeling.

This clothing of dao marks was the rank nine immortal killer move ghostly concealment, just based on their ranks, ghost soldier garment could never compare to it.

“The original ghost official garment was meant to directly attach to my soul. But now, it has been separated by a layer, thus it fell from rank seven to rank six.”

Fang Yuan had never expected such a problem.

He had all along been enjoying the advantage of non-conflicting dao marks of the sovereign immortal body. He had never expected to stumble slightly on this matter.

“There is no conflict of dao marks in my sovereign immortal body.”

“But there is still a conflict between killer moves of different paths.”

“Ghostly concealment has ghost in its name, but it is a theft path killer move, while ghost official garment is a soul path killer move, the two conflict with each other. To solve this issue, the most fundamental method is to combine both into one move.”

Fang Yuan bitterly smiled when he thought this.

The difficulty was too big.

Fang Yuan had no understanding of ghostly concealment. Moreover, he lacked attainment in theft path and soul path. Even with the light of wisdom to help him deduce, the progress would be extremely slow, according to the current conditions, he would have to keep on deducing for hundreds to thousands of years without rest, and even then he might not deduce a successful outcome.

After all, it was a rank nine killer move, and to Fang Yuan, rank nine was far away. Despite him possessing rank eight battle strength, he was not even a rank eight Gu Immortal.

“Then let’s do this.”

Fang Yuan put his soul back in his body.

He did not intend to further improve his method.

He had obtained all the inheritances of Shadow Sect, and just earlier, he had exchanged them with almost all the inheritances of Lang Ya Sect.

It was only ‘almost’, there were some crucial contents which both sides did not exchange. This applied to both Lang Ya Sect and Fang Yuan.

Even so, the near-complete collection of inheritances in Lang Ya Sect had reached an enormous amount, only slightly inferior to Shadow Sect's collection.

After all, Long Hair Ancestor was from the Medieval Antiquity Era, he had lived three hundred thousand years ago. Lang Ya blessed land had also existed for three hundred thousand years.

Based on just time alone, Lang Ya Sect was much older than Shadow Sect.

But the inheritances in Lang Ya Sect were basically all related to refinement path, even inheritances of other paths mostly touched upon refinement path. Moreover, Lang Ya Sect's collection ability definitely could not match Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and Shadow Sect.

Fang Yuan was able to get both the collections for his own use, just based on inheritances, he had already surpassed any one ancient sect of Central Continent. Two or three ancient sects would have to collaborate to match the amount of inheritances he had.

As for Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan could not compare to them. Heavenly Court had been governed by three Immortal Venerables, and its history was extremely long, it was established three million years ago, in the Remote Antiquity Era.

Combining the inheritances Fang Yuan held currently, ghost official garment was the most suitable to him and also had the highest growth potential. In the future, it would be the most useful immortal killer move that could defend against others' deductions as well as deceive heaven's will.

It could be said that ghost official garment killer move was a key part of Spectral Soul's true inheritance.

It was very special.

Once activated, it could last forever, it did not spend immortal essence, instead it expended the Gu Immortal's soul foundation to maintain itself.

Theoretically, as long as the Gu Immortal's soul existed, and ghost official garment was not directly attacked, it could last for eternity.

Precisely because it was linked to a Gu Immortal's soul foundation, it had another huge advantage.

Its might would change according to the Gu Immortal's soul foundation.

When the Gu Immortal's soul foundation increased, ghost official garment's might would also increase. And similarly, if the soul foundation fell, ghost official garment would also weaken.

“Previously, I used dark limit Immortal Gu, and had to reactivate it after every set interval of time to replenish its effect, it was really inconvenient, especially when escaping. But ghost official garment can last forever with just one activation, and its strength grows with my soul foundation.”

This was a practical immortal killer move.

In fact, there were other soul path killer moves that could be used together with it.

For instance, the killer moves soul shaking flag and soul shackle.

These two moves could be used with ghost soldier garment, once activated, when Fang Yuan's soul leaves his body, not only would it be covered with the ghost garment, it would also have weapons, the soul shaking flag in its right hand and soul shackles in his left hand.

With this, even Fang Yuan’s soul would possess offensive prowess.

This was also an important characteristic of Spectral Soul’s true inheritance — to allow a person’s soul to possess powerful battle strength.

However, Fang Yuan only chose ghost official garment, and did not choose soul shaking flag or soul shackle.

After testing the effect of ghost official garment, Fang Yuan continued to bathe in the light of wisdom.

Borrowing the help of the light of wisdom, he began to ponder over his current situation.

“With ghost official garment and Lang Ya blessed land, I am currently safe. Even if Heavenly Court attacks, I can rely on my own strength to escape.”

“But what I need to do is to completely destroy Heavenly Court’s fate Immortal Gu.”

“Ten years! After ten years, Heavenly Court will have definitely restored Fate, by then I probably would have no hope of winning.”

This was the most troubling issue Fang Yuan was facing.

Heavenly Court had terrifying strength, let alone attacking Heavenly Court, it was extremely dangerous for Fang Yuan to even enter Central Continent. Heavenly Court only needed to send out one or two rank eight Gu Immortals to make Fang Yuan’s situation miserable.

Even by relying on the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan was unable to think of how to resolve this greatest issue.

“Fortunately, I still have Red Lotus’ true inheritances. Red Lotus Demon Venerable had damaged fate Gu back then and left behind his true inheritances. With Spring Autumn Cicada, the crucial key, in my hand, I have a huge possibility of obtaining his true inheritances.”

Fang Yuan had used Red Lotus’ true inheritance to kill a Heavenly Court rank eight time path Gu Immortal, Lord Huang Shi. So perhaps he could use other true inheritances of Red Lotus to find hope of destroying fate Immortal Gu.

Relying on fate Gu, Heavenly Court stood unshaken to this day.

Relying on fate Gu and Star Constellation’s arrangements, Heavenly Court had resisted three Demon Venerables.

Relying on fate Gu, Heavenly Court had all along occupied the throne of the number one Gu Immortal force in the whole world.

There was no doubt that destroying fate Immortal Gu was the key to defeating Heavenly Court.

If Fang Yuan did not destroy Fate, after ten years, it would be time for Heavenly Court to take Fang Yuan’s life.

Fang Yuan had inherited Shadow Sect’s legacy, and had a profound awareness of this point.

“But now is not a good time to go after the true inheritances of Red Lotus.”

“Heavenly Court has slipped up once, but they have obtained a huge amount of precious information, next time, they will utilize much more strength and even more rank eight Gu Immortals.”

“I can only continue to develop first and raise my battle strength before I go to inherit Red Lotus’ true inheritances, only then will I have some hope of destroying fate Gu.”

There was no doubt about this general plan.

Fang Yuan currently lacked immortal essence, while his immortal essence stone storage was also almost empty. Reverse flow protection seal was already being targeted, in the previous battle, Feng Jiu Ge’s sound path killer move had already begun to penetrate reverse flow protection seal and affected Fang Yuan’s main body. During the battle inside the River of Time, he had barely been able to kill Lord Huang Shi after using the strength of a stone lotus island.

Now, Fang Yuan had Spectral Soul’s true inheritance along with countless inheritances, he also had Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley and the light of wisdom.

In this situation, if he did not develop and strengthen himself, running around and causing trouble instead, he would truly be asking for death!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1449: Borrowing Immortal Essence Stones

A flat and boundless plain was in her sight.

Zhao Lian Yun’s divine sense continued to spread before finally covering the whole blessed land.

She had succeeded in her immortal ascension not long ago and became a wisdom path rank six Gu Immortal of Spirit Affinity House, forming this blessed land.

Lian Yun blessed land.

It had a total of 5700km2 of land, a large tributary of the River of Time, with time flowing thirty-three times faster than the outside world, which meant the immortal aperture would produce over thirty green grape immortal essence every year.

“Half grassland and half plain?” Zhao Lian Yun mumbled.

The blessed land’s topography was closely connected to the Gu Immortal’s specific situation.

The grassland topography might be because Zhao Lian Yun’s heart was connected to Northern Plains, having spent most of her time there since her transmigration. As for the plain, it might be because she had inherited Central Continent’s customs.

Even without any cultivation and plantation, the grassland was already filled with green grass. While the plain had fertile land and water, with some cultivation, it could produce plenty of products.

Besides the blessed land, there was also Immortal Gu.

Rank nine love Immortal Gu went without saying, but because of her immortal ascension with a high grade blessed land, Zhao Lian Yun had obtained her second Immortal Gu – Remembrance.

This was a wisdom path Immortal Gu. Its appearance was like a flying ant, and had astonishing flying speed. Its whole body was silver, and when it was still, it emitted an illusory white halo.

“Hong Yun, do you know that I am now no longer a mortal, I have become a Gu Immortal!”

Zhao Lian Yun retracted her divine sense and slowly opened her eyes, looking at the outside world.

She sighed lightly.

After becoming an immortal, she did feel joy, but even more than that, she felt empty and lonely.

In the battle of Reverse Flow River, Ma Hong Yun might have been killed by Fang Yuan, but his soul still existed.

This was not random speculation by Zhao Lian Yun, but had been deduced by a wisdom path Gu Immortal of Spirit Affinity House, Xu Hao.

Zhao Lian Yun chose to believe him, and thus this became her motivation and hope for putting forth effort in cultivation.

Thinking of a trace of hope to revive Ma Hong Yun, Zhao Lian Yun restrained her feelings and stood up, leaving this closed secret room.

Today was an important day.

Zhao Lian Yun walked past a corridor, Li Jun Ying had been waiting for her at the end of the corridor.

“Greetings to Sister Jun Ying.” Zhao Lian Yun immediately bowed in greeting.

Li Jun Ying smiled: “Sister Lian Yun, no need to be so polite, let’s go, I will accompany you to secret inheritance peak.”

Secret inheritance peak was a place where Spirit Affinity House’s Gu Immortals often set foot in.

Zhao Lian Yun was going there for the first time, sure enough, the peak was extraordinary. It was floating in the air, surrounded by vast emptiness. It seemed to be close but was actually far away, the aura on the mountain was thick and condensed, a high level immortal Gu formation was set up in it.

The one in charge of this peak was a supreme elder of the neutral faction, her name was Fairy Liu Fang.

In this trip, Zhao Lian Yun did not see Fairy Liu Fang herself, but was welcomed by a will left behind by her.

Zhao Lian Yun did not think anything of it, but Li Jun Ying frowned slightly.

According to convention, Zhao Lian Yun who was the current generation fairy of

Spirit Affinity House would be heavily nurtured by the sect, and in this first visit to secret inheritance peak to receive financial assistance from the sect, she should have been personally welcomed by the secret inheritance peak master.

But Fairy Liu Fang did not follow this convention.

“Junior Lian Yun pays respects to Senior Liu Fang.” Zhao Lian Yun bowed to Liu Fang’s will.

“No need to be so courteous, you are the current generation fairy of the sect. Please take a look at this Gu.” Liu Fang’s will smiled, her attitude was extremely polite as she handed an information path mortal Gu to Zhao Lian Yun.

Zhao Lian Yun looked through the contents in the Gu, there was a long list of wonderful items inside which dazzled her eyes for a moment.

“I do not know much, Sister Jun Ying, could you please check for me.” Zhao Lian Yun was a smart person, she quickly handed this Gu to Li Jun Ying.

Li Jun Ying looked through the list, and nodded slightly.

There was no reduction in items listed in this information path mortal Gu, it was the real deal.

She transmitted her voice to Zhao Lian Yun: “Lian Yun, since you have become a Gu Immortal, and have Immortal Gu Love and Remembrance, as well as a high grade blessed land, your starting point is already extremely high.”

“You now need to manage your immortal aperture and increase your foundation. The first task is to feed Immortal Gu. Fortunately, even though your love Immortal Gu is rank nine, it does not have any issue regarding its food.”

“So, what you need to consider now is remembrance Immortal Gu. This Gu feeds on bright eye flowers, and in this list of benefits, there is a method to raise bright eye flowers, you should choose it.”

Zhao Lian Yun continued to nod as she transmitted her voice: “You are right, sister. Then what about the other two choices?”

There were extraordinary benefits in being the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House.

According to the sect rules, once the current generation fairy’s cultivation makes a breakthrough, she can choose three resources free of charge from secret inheritance peak.

While other Gu Immortals, besides the ones who have made huge contributions, could only use their sect contribution points to exchange for these resources.

Li Jun Ying smiled and said: “Besides this, I recommend you to choose clear chance grass. Since you are a wisdom path Gu Immortal, you will have to manage your immortal aperture from the wisdom path aspect. Clear chance grass is a wisdom path resource, and its nurturing is also rather easy, moreover it fetches a high price in treasure yellow heaven, you won’t make a loss if you choose this.”

“Then I shall choose it, sister, your choice won’t be wrong.” Zhao Lian Yun quickly said.

Li Jun Ying was greatly pleased with Zhao Lian Yun’s attitude, her tone becoming warmer by several degrees.

“Then what should I pick for the final choice?” Zhao Lian Yun asked.

“Naturally the first item.”

“Immortal essence stones?”

“Right.” Li Jun Ying could not help chuckling at Zhao Lian Yun’s puzzled look: “Whether it be bright eye flowers or clear chance grass, the amount provided by the sect won’t be enough for you to plant them on a large scale. If these resources are not planted on a large scale, they will lose their significance. So, you need a large amount of immortal essence stones to purchase their seeds and plant them.”

“Immortal essence stones are an important resource which Gu Immortals must have reserves of. Because they are not only the most common currency in transactions of Gu Immortals, they also have value in being turned into immortal essence for your own use.”

“I see. Then I shall choose immortal essence stones.” Without any hesitation, Zhao Lian Yun quickly exchanged for the three items from Liu Fang’s will.

The two left secret inheritance peak and flew outside.

Before they parted, Li Jun Ying gave a sum of immortal essence stones to Zhao Lian Yun: “Sister Lian Yun, Xu Hao and I are lending you these three thousand immortal essence stones. Feel free to use them as much as you like, because there is no time limit for this loan.”

“Ah!” Zhao Lian Yun softly exclaimed, revealing a moved expression: “The sect only gave me one thousand immortal essence stones, but sister, you are directly giving me three thousand, how should I use it?”

Li Jun Ying patted Zhao Lian Yun’s shoulder: “Silly girl, the sect has already given you a lot. You have the sect’s support. You should know those lone cultivators and demonic immortals have to fight for even a piece of immortal essence stone.”

“Speaking of immortal essence stone storage, a newly ascended rank six Gu Immortal is almost completely broke. Those with a hundred immortal essence stones are already in the mid level of rank six. Having one thousand immortal essence stones is very rare among rank six Gu Immortals.”

“Your situation is different, because you are not only a Gu Immortal from one of the Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, you are also the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House, you will be heavily prioritized by the sect, thus you are an exception.”

“In normal situations in the five regions and two heavens, most rank six Gu Immortals don’t have more than one hundred immortal essence stones, few have several hundred, and very few have a thousand immortal essence stones.”

“And among rank seven Gu Immortals, they have at least several hundred immortal essence stones, most have over one thousand, and very few have several tens of thousand immortal essence stones.”

“This is just common knowledge, you can simply remember it.”

“Many thanks for your guidance, sister!” Zhao Lian Yun gave a deep bow with a grateful look.

Li Jun Ying’s words were telling her that the sect did not mistreat her, and that she and her husband were also actively supporting her.

“I will definitely work hard.” Zhao Lian Yun said solemnly.

Li Jun Ying nodded: “Go cultivate, if you have any doubts, don’t hesitate to write me a letter, you can also ask Xu Hao.”

“Yes.” Joy flashed past Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes, having someone for guidance and learning by oneself were naturally two different concepts.

Looking at Zhao Lian Yun’s receding figure, Li Jun Ying’s smile slowly disappeared.

Ever since Feng Jin Huang was taken under Duke Long, her life had become increasingly difficult.

She and her husband Xu Hao were of the famous Anti-Feng faction. But now, the supreme elders of Spirit Affinity House knew that Feng Jin Huang was an Immortal Venerable seed with infinite future prospects!

Fairy Liu Fang’s attitude this time clearly showed the political direction of Spirit Affinity House.

Li Jun Ying had also expected this and had thus accompanied Zhao Lian Yun to prevent anyone from reducing Zhao Lian Yun’s sect benefits. Fortunately, that did not happen.

It could be foreseen that this couple would have to face some political cold shoulders next. And in this coldness, they could only unite anyone they could, for instance Zhao Lian Yun, and then huddle together for warmth.

Northern Plains, Chu tribe.

The famous strength path Gu Immortal Chu Du put down an information path Gu worm in his hand.

“Fang Yuan, it is really not easy to be your friend.” Chu Du gave a bitter smile.

This letter Gu was sent by Fang Yuan, he was asking for immortal essence stones!

Fang Yuan had once cooperated with Chu Du using the alias of Liu Guan Yi, and their relationship had not been shallow. Not long ago, Heavenly Court assassinated Gu Immortal Yun Liang, destroying Longevity Heaven’s plan as well as publicizing the secret that Fang Yuan and Liu Guan Yi were the same person, while incriminating the crime on Fang Yuan.

Hence, Chu Du already knew Liu Guan Yi was Fang Yuan.

But Chu Du was not too surprised, in fact, he had once had suspicions regarding this, and had even sang a poem to test Fang Yuan.

Whether it be Liu Guan Yi or Fang Yuan, Chu Du wanted to collaborate with both.

However, the current Chu Du’s identity was different from before.

He was now the first supreme elder of Chu tribe, he had a lot of Gu Immortals under him, and was a member of the righteous path.

As a Northern Plains righteous path Gu Immortal, if he continued to collaborate with Fang Yuan, the moment it was exposed, all his previous effort in creating his force would turn into naught.

Collaborating with Fang Yuan was extremely risky.

Chu Du had planned to ignore it at first and maintain a vague attitude, but Fang Yuan did not give him this opportunity, and directly sent a letter asking for immortal essence stones.

And in this letter, Fang Yuan only mentioned of borrowing immortal essence stones, he intentionally did not mention the specific amount, the meaning was for Chu Du to decide how much to lend.

This made Chu Du feel even more troubled!

“As expected of someone like Fang Yuan.” Chu Du sighed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1450: One Million Seven Hundred and Thirty Thousand!

“Oh, Chu Du is lending me a hundred and fifty thousand immortal essence stones?”

Fang Yuan soon received Chu Du’s reply, moreover the amount Chu Du was lending had slightly surpassed Fang Yuan’s expectation.

In Chu Du’s reply letter, he had written in euphemistic words. He talked about their pleasant past collaboration, then talked of how unexpected events and circumstances in life toyed with people and how their camps differed, which created an awkward situation. Moreover, lending one hundred and fifty thousand immortal essence stones was already his limit, and the time for returning it could be determined by Fang Yuan himself.

“Looks like Chu Du still wants to continue collaborating with me. Reckless Savage’s true meaning is tempting after all.” This reply immediately let Fang Yuan know of Chu Du’s attitude and intention.

Chu Du was originally born a lone cultivator, later he went against Liu tribe and was accused of being in the demonic path. Now, he had established Chu tribe and was in the righteous path.

But by nature, he still prioritized his own benefits.

So despite the high risks of collaborating with Fang Yuan, due to the huge profits, Chu Du did not hesitate to take the risk, not only lending one hundred and fifty thousand immortal essence stones, but also personally writing a reply letter.

This letter Gu might only be a mortal Gu, but its significance was not ordinary. If Fang Yuan took it out, it would be strong proof that Chu Du was collaborating with the demonic path.

But this was done intentionally by Chu Du. He used this method to give Fang Yuan a hold on him, to express his sincerity in collaborating.

And Fang Yuan felt this sincerity fully.

“I can continue to collaborate with Chu Du.”

"Of course, the calamity beckoning Gu I lent him before is also a strong foundation of collaboration between us."

Fang Yuan was rather pleased.

One hundred and fifty thousand immortal essence stones was already a high amount.

Normally, a rank six Gu Immortal would have at most one thousand immortal essence stones as reserve.

Rank seven Gu Immortals would have roughly ten thousand. Most rank seven Gu Immortals usually had several thousands of immortal essence stones as their reserve.

And at rank eight level, having several tens of thousands in reserve was the minimum, they would often have over a hundred thousand, and those senior rank eights would even have a million.

As for rank nine, their immortal essence stones would reach ten million, or even one hundred million!

Of course, it depended on the Gu Immortal's individual circumstances.

As far as organizations were concerned, an ordinary super force would have around a million immortal essence stones in reserve.

Wu clan had such reserves, which is why in the battle of the dream realm, Wu Yong did not hesitate to lend Fang Yuan one hundred thousand immortal essence stones. This was within the capability of Wu clan. Of course, Wu clan could lend much more, but Wu Yong thought this amount was enough for Fang Yuan to stabilize the immortal formation.

And Chu tribe was a recently established super force, although they had many Gu Immortals, most of them were of strength path and had few assets to themselves. According to Fang Yuan's estimate, it was good if Chu tribe had six hundred thousand immortal essence stones in reserve.

And Chu Du had lent one hundred and fifty thousand from this reserve of six hundred thousand immortal essence stones, and with no time limit to return it. His sincerity was truly high.

There was no doubt that immortal essence stones was also a factor to weigh a Gu Immortal's and a force's strength.

But it was not that the more money you saved, the better. Just piling up money without making use of it was like collecting dust.

Storage of immortal essence stones followed the same logic.

With Chu Du's support, Fang Yuan's originally emptied immortal essence stone storage jumped to one hundred and fifty thousand!

But Fang Yuan was not satisfied.

He continued to patiently wait for replies.

He had not only sent the letter to Chu Du, but also sent them to the three eccentrics of Crazed Demon Cave, as well as Miao Ming Shen of Eastern Sea, asking for immortal essence stones.

The request for immortal essence stones was only one objective, Fang Yuan had another goal as well, it was to know their attitudes.

Especially in this sensitive time when his Liu Guan Yi identity was exposed.

The replies of the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics and Miao Ming Shen came almost at the same time.

Both sides agreed to Fang Yuan’s request, each lending a sum of immortal essence stones. The former gave two hundred thousand immortal essence stones, while the latter gave one hundred thousand.

The Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics’ attitude towards Fang Yuan had gotten even more warm than before, with no issues regarding Fang Yuan’s true identity. As far as these three were concerned, they did not care about the fight between the righteous path or demonic path, from their perspective, there was only Limitless’ true inheritance! They would acknowledge anyone that could help them achieve this desire.

And the stronger Fang Yuan became, the higher their acknowledgement of him.

As for Miao Ming Shen, he had a pleasant interaction with Fang Yuan’s other identity ‘Chu Ying’. In the trading convention, Fang Yuan had taken the initiative to sell lifespan Gu to Miao Ming Shen, this sharply elevated Fang Yuan’s status to Miao Ming Shen.

Therefore, Miao Ming Shen had specially written in the letter: His funds were quite tight recently, one hundred thousand was his current limit, but if it was not enough, he could borrow from his friends to aid Fang Yuan.

Like this, Fang Yuan got three batches of immortal essence stones, the total amount reaching four hundred and fifty thousand.

Whether it be his previous life or currently, he had never possessed such an enormous sum of immortal essence stones.

However, Fang Yuan did not stop borrowing, he then discussed with Lang Ya land spirit and borrowed a sum of immortal essence stones, and also used his sect contribution points to exchange for another sum until it reached Lang Ya land spirit’s bottom-line.

“I cannot exchange anymore. Although you have a lot of sect contribution points, the sect also needs to have some in reserve to prepare for any unexpected situations.” Lang Ya land spirit firmly refused.

In these recent few years, because of his development plan for the blessed land, the rich foundation was being constantly expended. Adding on the previous time when Fang Yuan used large amounts of sect contribution points to exchange for immortal materials as well as make Lang Ya Sect refine Immortal Gu, Lang Ya Sect’s foundation was further expended sharply.

When Lang Ya land spirit refused Fang Yuan, Lang Ya Sect had no more than three hundred thousand immortal essence stones left in reserve.

Fang Yuan then asked Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing had inherited Bai Xiang grotto-heaven, it should have had a huge immortal essence stone reserve.

Among the Shadow Sect Gu Immortals, Bai Ning Bing was the richest.

Hei Lou Lan was the poorest, and Ying Wu Xie was similar, although he had possessed Fairy Cui Bo’s body, her immortal aperture and resources were all taken by Bai Ning Bing as battle spoils.

After Lady White Rabbit and Fairy Miao Yin heard of Fang Yuan’s action, they took the initiative to lend some immortal essence stones, although the amount was rather small.

Among all the lenders, Lady White Rabbit’s terms were the most lax, she had even said with a flushed face that it would not matter even if Fang Yuan did not return the immortal essence stones. At second were Fairy Miao Yin and Chu Du who did not put a limit on the time of return.

The Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics wanted to make use of Fang Yuan, but their friendship was shallow after all, so they lent according to the market rate. Lang Ya land spirit did the same. Among them, Miao Ming Shen’s time limit was the most lax.

The harshest loan term was from Bai Ning Bing. She mentioned a rather interesting condition, she could lend a large amount of immortal essence stones to Fang Yuan, but the more Fang Yuan borrowed, the higher the interest and shorter the return time.

Fang Yuan then borrowed most of her immortal essence stones.

After borrowing from here and there, Fang Yuan’s immortal essence stones had reached an astonishing amount of over one million seven hundred and thirty thousand!

A huge sum.

This reserve had already surpassed what Chu tribe, Lang Ya Sect, and most of the super forces could take out. Among Gu Immortals, almost no rank six and rank seven Gu Immortals had such capital, even among rank eight Gu Immortals, only few possessed such capital, they were usually long time rank eight experts with a reserve of more than a million immortal essence stones.

Naturally, this was purely comparing quantity.

The truly ‘healthy’ form of assets was to maintain balance between income and expenditure. Fang Yuan might be holding this huge sum, but it was not his, he had only borrowed it.

In an instant, Fang Yuan was deep in debt.

However, he was not nervous at all, he was fully confident he could use these immortal essence stones to earn even more!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1451: Year Gu Price War

A few days later.

Central Continent, Spirit Affinity House.

Zhao Lian Yun spread her divine sense, inspecting her immortal aperture.

Lian Yun blessed land already looked different from before.

A flower field was planted with a large amount of bright eye flowers, this was the food of remembrance Immortal Gu, it had to be planted.

Besides this, there was also a small grassland where clear chance grass was planted, stalks of the grass was small and pointy, and were light green. Swallows were flying above this grassland.

They were labor swallows, extremely hardworking and nimble birds. Their wings had three colors, in black, white and red. Zhao Lian Yun had specially brought in a batch of them to kill any insects on the clear chance grass.

When clear chance grass grew, it would produce a kind of pest that would corrode the grass leaves, greatly reducing the profits.

“I have already spent most of my immortal essence stones.” Zhao Lian Yun sighed as she looked at the scene in front of her.

At the beginning, she had felt the number of immortal essence stones to be extremely huge, but when she started using it, she discovered that it was not much at all. Because she was not only nurturing two resources, she also had to create two complete ecological systems.

Not only the seeds of bright eye flowers and clear chance grass, she had to spend on soil, water, climate construction and so on as well.

“Bright eye flowers can only satisfy the food requirement of remembrance Immortal Gu after a year in immortal aperture time. After two years, the clear chance grass and bright eye flower transactions could give me several hundreds of immortal essence stones. After three years, I can repay Li Jun Ying’s loan.”

“This progress and profit can only be achieved under the most ideal situation. And I have yet to calculate my other cultivation expenses.”

Zhao Lian Yun fully sensed that Gu Immortal cultivation was not easy.

She was only cultivating two resources, and both grew separately and did not disturb each other. At the same time, the difficulty of nurturing plants was much less than raising beast groups or variant humans.

Moreover, Zhao Lian Yun had a high grade blessed land which had plenty of space path and time path resources. Most importantly, she was protected by divine concealment, and was exempted from calamities and tribulations, she did not need to worry about this huge issue!

“The number of labor swallows is somewhat small, they cannot look after the whole grassland, I should buy some more.” Zhao Lian Yun connected to treasure yellow heaven and sent her divine sense.

Over these days, she realized the convenience of treasure yellow heaven.

“Guts Gu!” Zhao Lian Yun quickly discovered someone selling guts Gu.

She knew guts Gu was produced by Fang Yuan alone, but because its supply did not match demand, it had all along been sold in the black market of treasure yellow heaven, that is, someone would purchase a large amount of guts Gu then sell them at a higher price. So the one selling this guts Gu was not necessarily Fang Yuan. Moreover, the wills and identities of Gu Immortals could be casually changed, treasure yellow heaven gave safety and full freedom, so even Heavenly

Court could only watch as Fang Yuan sold guts Gu.

“Even if I can sell bright eye flowers and clear chance grass after a few years, there will be other competitors as well, my products will be influenced by the market. Their prices also won’t be able to compare to guts Gu.”

Fang Yuan was Zhao Lian Yun’s enemy, so she had been paying attention to the guts Gu trade.

But the more attention she paid, the more she realized Fang Yuan’s strength, which inevitably caused her to feel depressed.

“According to my current accumulation speed, I simply won’t be able to catch up with Fang Yuan, instead I will continue to be left in the dust by him. Damn it...” Zhao Lian Yun gritted her teeth.

Right at this time, for some reason, there was a huge uproar ahead. Large amounts of Gu Immortal wills, which were originally scattered throughout treasure yellow heaven, were gathering in that direction.

Zhao Lian Yun’s heart jolted: “Could it be a large transaction? Li Jun Ying said large transactions that can cause such an uproar are rare in treasure yellow heaven. Previously, it was when someone sold large amounts of year beasts. I did not expect my luck to be so good, to encounter one not long after becoming an immortal.”

Zhao Lian Yun naturally did not want to give up on this chance to broaden her horizons, she also sent her divine sense to experience this event.

Soon, she arrived at the scene.

A Gu Immortal will, which had an enormous physique looking like a fatty, was sitting cross-legged in air, surrounding him were year Gu.

A vast number of year Gu!

“So many year Gu? It looks like there are over one hundred thousand.” Zhao Lian Yun got a shock. This was the first time she had seen so many year Gu piled up together.

The huge quantity had quite a visual impact.

“Sister Li Jun Ying was right, mortal Gu is only a matter of quantity to Gu Immortals.” Zhao Lian Yun sighed inwardly.

“What price are you selling these year Gu for?” A Gu Immortal’s will inquire about the price.

That fat will replied with a smile, quoting a fair price which immediately led to a discussion between the Gu Immortals.

“If there are no issues with these year Gu, I definitely want to purchase some.”

“This is time path mortal Gu, they have a wide range of uses and can be used in refinement path or other aspects. The price is also fair, maybe I should buy a bit more. Even if I don’t use it for myself, I can resell it later. I don’t have to worry about not being able to sell it.”

“Who is this seller? Selling year Gu at this time is an extremely good decision. According to the usual routine, it is not yet the time for the biggest sellers of year Gu to bring out their products.”

Gu Immortals discussed with each other.

All kinds of divine senses and wills conversed together without maintaining secrecy, which allowed Zhao Lian Yun to learn of a lot of things.

She listened attentively and soon found this year Gu seller might be a newcomer in treasure yellow heaven. Although the current time of sales was slightly early, it would still be hard for him to avoid colliding with the traditional sellers.

It was still okay if this seller was only selling this one time, but if he wanted to run this business for a long time and squeeze into treasure yellow heaven’s market, it would definitely lead to bloodshed.

Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes brightened at this thought.

If it was the latter situation, then this would no doubt be an event to pay attention to and learn from.

“I will also be selling my resources in the future and will have to make my way into treasure yellow heaven’s market. My resources are not unique, so I will definitely have to go through this obstacle. There are only a few monopolistic businesses in the whole Gu Immortal world, not everyone can have luck like Fang Yuan! I need to observe this properly, especially this year Gu trade. I might learn a lot of things.”

Zhao Lian Yun instructed herself.

The scene was bustling, many Gu Immortals started purchasing year Gu.

Time path Gu worms had a wide range of usage, so they always had a high demand in the market.

After each transaction was completed, the profits quickly accumulated to an extent which caused some of the Gu Immortals to become red with envy.

“Just by a rough estimation, this seller has at least profited fifty thousand immortal essence stones in this short period of time.” Zhao Lian Yun was inwardly shocked.

But the real shocking thing came later.

This seller was selling continuously, while also continuously replenishing the products. Many year Gu were sold, but in the surroundings of the fat will, the quantity of year Gu did not decrease and was instead increasing!

“Oh heavens, how many year Gu does this man have?”

“My goodness, this is a huge transaction.”

“This person is here for blood! The main sellers of year Gu have always been Xie Bao Shu, Rong Xin and Wang Ming Yue. If this is not handled well, it will definitely lead to a price war.”

Zhao Lian Yun felt increasing anticipation as she listened to the discussions.

This mysterious seller was strongly putting his foot in the market, the three main sellers definitely would not take this lying down.

A price war concerning year Gu was going to start!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1452: Three Sellers

Eastern Sea.

Clear sea area.

A jade pavilion stood by itself in the depths of the sea, emitting aura of a rank six Immortal Gu House.

Inside the jade pavilion, Gu Immortal Xie Bao Shu was hosting his close friend, You Xian Zi.

Looking at the large patches of vicissitude trees outside the jade pavilion, You Xian Zi said with a moved tone: “It is time to harvest year Gu once again, the growth of these vicissitude trees is much more vigorous than the previous year. Looks like your method of growing these resources has made another breakthrough.”

Xie Bao Shu was handsome and had a warm nature, he rubbed his nose, smiling: “You don’t need to flatter me.”

You Xian Zi laughed: “I am just worrying about you, don’t you know someone is already selling year Gu in treasure yellow heaven?”

Xie Bao Shu was silent as he took out a mortal year Gu and handed it to You Xian Zi.

You Xian Zi received it and took a glance: “Hmm, good, this rank five year Gu’s quality is pretty good. It is glossy and healthy, it is quite appealing.”

Xie Bao Shu slightly shook his head: “This year Gu was not raised by me, it is from that seller.”

“I see.” You Xian Zi was slightly surprised, before quickly accepting this fact.

He knew his friend very well.

Xie Bao Shu was a well-known lone cultivator in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.

He had unique insights on growing vicissitude trees.

Vicissitude trees were an immortal material, but their usage was very narrow. Despite being an immortal material, because they had many kinds of dao marks, they were very impure.

So few Gu Immortals paid attention to this tree.

But Xie Bao Shu found new ways of using them, he planted this tree on a large scale, and using an ingenious method, he used vicissitude trees to raise and attract wild year Gu.

Now, he was one of the three giants of the year Gu market!

He only put a small portion of these year Gu in treasure yellow heaven, the larger portion was sold to various super forces of Eastern Sea.

Even so, Xie Bao Shu would not easily give up treasure yellow heaven's market. Because this was the whole world's market, and from a certain aspect, treasure yellow heaven could be said to be much more significant than those Eastern Sea super forces.

Now that someone was suddenly entering the year Gu market, making huge transactions, how could Xie Bao Shu just watch from the sidelines?

Although it was still not time for him to sell year Gu, he had always been paying attention to the situation of the year Gu market.

“I have examined this year Gu, it is indeed a high grade item. This time, the opponent is not a simple one.” Xie Bao Shu sighed.

You Xian Zi nodded: “With such a huge amount, some region's super force might be involved in this, it is very difficult for an individual to take out so many of them. Didn't you also climb up by accumulating your strength step by step?”

Xie Bao Shu smiled: “Oh you, why are you encouraging me in a roundabout way? Among the three sellers, only I am a lone cultivator. Because of this, I could only move step by step, facing setbacks along the way and getting past them to create a solid foundation, what difficulties have I not encountered? This time will also not be an exception. Moreover...”

You Xian Zi finished his words: “Moreover, you three have already reached an agreement. Every business has its own hidden rules, this newcomer might have come aggressively, but he has broken the hidden rules, he will probably be suppressed and forced out by you three, right?”

“Hahaha, I really cannot hide anything from you, you rat who specializes in stealing oil.” Xie Bao Shu jokingly scolded while pointing at You Xian Zi's nose.

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

Cloud city, inside a secret room, Fang Yuan had been sitting cross-legged without moving for several days.

These last days, he had been activating rank eight time path Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water.

He had obtained this Immortal Gu from Hei Fan's true inheritance, even rank six Gu Immortals could activate it, but the effect would be limited.

Now, Fang Yuan was continuously pouring his rank seven red date immortal essence into Years Flow Like Water, constantly producing mortal year Gu.

And these year Gu were then moved to treasure yellow heaven's market.

He let his will stabilize the situation and carry out year Gu transactions with other Gu Immortals.

Indeed, he was the newcomer who had been selling large amounts of year Gu. He was extremely aggressive, not only creating an uproar in treasure yellow heaven, he even made Xie Bao Shu and the others feel apprehension.

Fang Yuan had borrowed over one million seven hundred and thirty thousand immortal essence stones, he turned them into red date immortal essence, which he made full use of in the year Gu business.

Rank eight Years Flow Like Water was too amazing, it not only produced a lot of mortal Gu, their quality was also good.

The market response had been extremely good these few days. After buying some, many Gu Immortals felt that the goods were pretty good, they would find Fang Yuan to purchase another batch.

“Hmm?” Right at this time, Fang Yuan’s activation of Years Flow Like Water paused for a moment.

He had all along been maintaining his connection to treasure yellow heaven, and had just received a message from his will, which he had placed in treasure yellow heaven, that there was a super force which wanted to purchase Fang Yuan’s goods in bulk quantity, but was afraid Fang Yuan would not be able to supply them, so they wanted to discuss with his main body. If it was possible, they could establish long-term cooperation.

This news could be true but could also be false.

“There is a higher chance that this message is sent by those traditional year Gu sellers using a disguised identity.” Fang Yuan sneered, completely disregarding this message.

Long-term cooperation? Fang Yuan was not interested. He wanted to wage war this time!

Central Continent.

Rong Xin was silent.

“The seller is actually not interested in my proposal?” Rong Xin was quite surprised.

He had disguised as a huge buyer to try to communicate with Fang Yuan personally and glean his background. But Fang Yuan actually ignored him.

“How can this be? Even if he is a representative of a super force, they would also hope that their year Gu would have much larger buyers. Unless... he does not have many year Gu left?”

Rong Xin was a member of the ten great ancient sects, and as a righteous path member, he naturally understood the thoughts of righteous path Gu Immortals and super forces.

He pondered and felt this guess was very likely.

“It must be because of this that this mysterious seller is selling year Gu this early. It is to avoid us three sellers?”

“He refused even my proposal, he probably really does not have much stock left. Actually, the amount of year Gu he has sold is only one-tenth of what I have in stock.”

“Hehe.”

Rong Xin chuckled when he thought of this.

“This is a good method to gain attention.” He commented in his head on Fang Yuan’s action: “Unfortunately, what use is it if you don’t have enough strength?”

Southern Border.

Dragon Return Valley.

The rumbling of a waterfall echoed in the valley.

Mist permeated and the vegetation thrived.

Wang Ming Yue, an external supreme elder of the righteous path super force Yao clan, was standing on a giant boulder, gazing at the waterfall.

This waterfall was not ordinary, it was a tributary of the River of Time!

“Year Gu has three great sellers. Eastern Sea’s Xie Bao Shu uses vicissitude trees to nurture year Gu. Central Continent’s Rong Xin uses refinement path methods to periodically refine countless year Gu. But only I have a grasp over a tributary of the River of Time, I can capture natural wild year Gu.”

Wang Ming Yue inwardly compared herself to them.

This tributary of the River of Time was rather special, it was a tributary that had forked from the middle of the River of Time.

The River of Time had many special river segments.

For instance, the sword-blade river segment, it was a special river segment that was personally set up by Red Lotus Demon Venerable using the past Xi Yuan’s sword aura and Dao Jiu Lang’s blade aura to protect one of his stone lotus islands.

The year river segment was filled with countless wild year Gu.

Wang Ming Yue had discovered this tributary back when she had been a lone immortal, and had secretly managed it. But several years later, Southern Border’s righteous path forces discovered it and were naturally covetous.

After a secret exchange, Yao clan won, and Yao clan Gu Immortal Yao Tian Ze married Wang Ming Yue. With this reason, Yao clan openly took this Dragon Return valley as their territory.

“This year’s harvests are pretty good, the amount of year Gu captured is actually thirty percent higher than normal.”

“The other two are not making a move, then I shall start first. If I continue letting that newcomer sell his year Gu, it will probably not be easy for me to sell all these wild year Gu.”

Wang Ming Yue put her thoughts into action, and began selling her year Gu in treasure yellow heaven.

Her move immediately caused an uproar in treasure yellow heaven.

“One of the three main sellers of year Gu, Wang Ming Yue, has made a move.”

“If that mysterious seller is allowed to continue selling year Gu, the sellers after him definitely won’t have an easy time selling year Gu.”

“This will be quite a show.”

“Right. That mysterious seller is selling so many year Gu, the three main sellers definitely have a hard time being patient. Now that Wang Ming Yue has made a move, the other two won’t stand still.”

“Let’s wait and see, there might even be a price war, us buyers can pick up some benefits.”

Many Gu Immortals secretly communicated.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1453: Price War

Wang Ming Yue took out her stock.

Only Fang Yuan alone had been supplying year Gu in a large amount in treasure yellow heaven over these last days, now with one more competitor, it immediately caused a stir.

“Women are women after all, not even having this bit of patience.” Central Continent’s Rong Xin scoffed when he obtained this news.

“With this, many Gu Immortals will probably choose to watch.” He had plentiful experience in selling year Gu, and could immediately guess the changes in the market.

Sure enough, the fervor of buying year Gu in treasure yellow heaven suddenly fell.

Wang Ming Yue became Fang Yuan’s competitor, which all of a sudden caused the supply of year Gu to be greater than demand, other Gu Immortals were now keeping patient, waiting to see a good show.

A storm was brewing in treasure yellow heaven

In previous years, the sale of year Gu had always been a hot business. This year, with year Gu being sold ahead of time, the situation had now become ‘desolate’ with almost no one showing any interest.

Wang Ming Yue was helpless about this.

There was no other way, she had a huge stock of year Gu, if she did not start now and waited for the other two sellers to start selling, there would be a much smaller market for her goods.

“Wang Ming Yue is actually selling ahead of time?” Different from Rong Xin’s passive stance, Xie Bao Shu was hesitating.

Xie Bao Shu understood Wang Ming Yue, this person was a veteran seller with plenty of experience, how could she not see the disadvantage of selling early?

“Most probably, she also has a lot of year Gu on her.” Xie Bao Shu did not show anything on the surface, but was inwardly getting worried.

A day later, he finally decided to take action, putting year Gu for sale in treasure yellow heaven.

"Xie Bao Shu has also made a move."

"Two of the three main sellers are already selling their goods ahead of time."

"Of course! This year is different from the past, there is now a fourth gladiator in the arena."

Within treasure yellow heaven, the Gu Immortals discussed.

"Damn it. These two..." When Rong Xin obtained news of this, he could only follow while gritting his teeth.

The situation was already different from before.

Previously, Fang Yuan was selling by himself, Rong Xin could endure this and remained unmoved. When Wang Ming Yue joined, Rong Xin only felt slightly tensed, but with Xie Bao Shu also joining in, the pressure on Rong Xin had increased.

Among the four sellers, if he alone did not take action, then the one who suffered the most would no doubt be him.

It was just that he had his own difficulties.

His year Gu were the results of refinement.

Because there was not a set time like past years, his stock had not been accumulated enough. So he had the least amount of stock among the four sellers.

Forced by the situation, Rong Xin could only grit his teeth and put his year Gu for sale in treasure yellow heaven.

"I have the least amount of stock, I cannot act forcefully." Rong Xin already had a hunch, what he needed now was time to refine much more year Gu.

Thinking of this, he contacted Xie Bao Shu and Wang Ming Yue.

These three knew each other for many years, competing and communicating with each other about year Gu business, and naturally had each other's information path Gu worms.

"Although there is a newcomer, I think us three should still act according to the old agreement, isn't that so?" Rong Xin reminded the two.

Xie Bao Shu and Wang Ming Yue naturally agreed.

They had already broken some terms of the old agreement by selling year Gu early. But since this was a special situation, it could be understood.

But if they broke other terms, especially the one about price of year Gu, that would be breaking the rules!

With more sellers, there would naturally be a price war.

This was a powerful method of a price war.

But if it was used too strongly, it would hurt themselves.

Xie Bao Shu, Wang Ming Yue, and Rong Xin had already competed with each other countless times, but they never changed the agreed price. Besides not being able to do anything to the other party, the main reason was to protect their benefits.

This created a problem.

If Fang Yuan's side suddenly dropped the price, what should they do?

These three could obey the agreement, but Fang Yuan was a newcomer, even if Rong Xin persuaded him, he might not listen.

But Rong Xin, Xie Bao Shu, and Wang Ming Yue were seemingly not worried about this.

With four sellers supplying year Gu, Fang Yuan immediately felt his sales becoming stagnant.

“I am a newcomer after all. Although my goods are of top quality, how could my status compare to those three main sellers in other Gu Immortals' hearts?”

Wang Ming Yue, Xie Bao Shu, and Rong Xin were in this business for many years already, they had good reputation among the public. Fang Yuan could absolutely not compare in this aspect.

This was where Fang Yuan was disadvantaged in.

But Fang Yuan had his methods to resolve it.

Soon, at almost the same time, Rong Xin, Xie Bao Shu, and Wang Ming Yue obtained a significant news.

That mysterious seller was beginning to drop the price of year Gu!

“He went for this after all.”

“Hmph, I still thought he had some other methods!”

They were not anxious, even feeling somewhat disdainful. They had long grown out of this action of decreasing the price, and had even suffered a lot because of this.

In a price war, taking the initiative to reduce the price was a double-edged sword, it would hurt others and hurt oneself as well.

But as far as buyers were concerned, Fang Yuan reducing the price was no doubt good news.

Weren't they waiting for this kind of opportunity?

They were like hungry sharks that immediately swarmed in.

Fang Yuan's year Gu began to sell in large amounts, forming a stark contrast with Xie Bao Shu, Wang Ming Yue, and Rong Xin's.

“The other side seems to be an experienced veteran, this price reduction is quite to the standard. It gives a feeling of being a lot, but actually is not that much.” Wang Ming Yue had been observing the situation.

“But so what?”

“The year Gu market of the whole of treasure yellow heaven is extremely big, how can you supply to the buyers of the whole five regions by yourself? In the end, the one to suffer will be yourself. We can clearly sell at a higher price.”

The three main sellers maintained their price, but several days later, they could not sit still!

“What’s going on? This guy has so many year Gu? It almost seems to be endless.”

“How could he accumulate so many year Gu? Something’s wrong here.”

The moods of the three main sellers had become slightly heavy.

But should they follow and reduce their price? They were hesitant.

In the end, they had different mentalities.

Fang Yuan was a newcomer, however much he earned would be fresh income. But these three main sellers were old veterans, and had a rough estimation of their profits every year.

So if they were to reduce the price, their expected profits would decrease.

Hesitation was natural.

Several days later, Fang Yuan’s sales were still going on fiercely, the three main sellers saw the situation was going in an unfavorable direction, Wang Ming Yue was the first to discuss with the other two if they should also reduce the price.

Xie Bao Shu had a cold expression: “Looking at this situation, this guy probably has enough stock. If we don’t reduce our price, we simply won’t be able to sell.”

“That’s right.” Wang Ming Yue added, “This person’s methods are not simple, he reduced the price just enough to suppress us three.”

Rong Xin snorted: “Whether we lose profits or not, it will have to be seen after selling all the year Gu. If we decreased the price too much, even if we sell a lot, we will still lose massive profits overall, what is the point of that?”

He did not approve of this method, still wanting to wait patiently for a while more.

There was no other way, he did not have much stock. If he reduced the price, there would be a lot of buyers and his goods would be all sold, when others learned he was out of stock so early, his image and reputation would be damaged.

But he could not do anything about it, since the other two wanted to reduce the price, Rong Xin could only follow them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1454: Commotion in Treasure Yellow Heaven

The price fell!

As Fang Yuan’s price fell, Xie Bao Shu and the other sellers had to lower their prices too after a few days.

However, they did not lower their prices much, they were in sync — at the same price as Fang Yuan.

“I am a newcomer in the year Gu business, my identity is mysterious and unknown, compared to me, Xie Bao Shu, Rong Xin, and Wang Ming Yue are reputed figures with many years of experience, they are deeply trusted. Thus, as long as they lower their prices to match me, those who want to buy year Gu will approach them instead.”

Fang Yuan knew deeply about the plan of Xie Bao Shu and the rest.

This was the advantage that Xie Bao Shu and the rest had over Fang Yuan, their years of being in the business had deeply affected the buyers, it was not a joke.

“However... so what if they do this?” Fang Yuan smiled lightly.

On the day Xie Bao Shu and the rest lowered their prices, Fang Yuan lowered his price again.

The Gu Immortals in treasure yellow heaven were focusing on this huge price war, the moment Fang Yuan lowered his price, news spread rapidly, before long, many of the forces and Gu Immortals concerned about this matter learned about it.

“After hearing that Xie Bao Shu lowered his price, I wanted to buy from him. After all, I do that every year.”

“True, except I prefer Rong Xin’s goods.”

“But that fourth seller lowered his price again, he is truly rich, he wants to challenge the three main sellers.”

The buyers were overjoyed and relaxed, in this price war, they were the ones who benefited the most.

Staying on the fence and watching this show, it was a very joyful thing to see.

At the same price level, Fang Yuan was not their match, but the moment he lowered his prices, his advantage became huge.

After all, Fang Yuan’s goods were very high quality and cheap, would those Gu Immortals be so stupid as to buy expensive goods instead?

Thus for the following day, Fang Yuan’s business was booming, the other three sellers had no business.

After hearing this, Central Continent Gu Immortal Rong Xin laughed, coldly of course.

He spoke with the other two: “Very interesting, this person really wants to challenge us to a price war.”

Wang Ming Yue smiled: “All these years, nobody could match our status. This time, I want to see how strong this person is.”

Xie Bao Shu added: “Then let us lower our prices too.”

There was nothing to say, since Fang Yuan reduced his prices, the other three sellers followed, their price was the same as Fang Yuan’s year Gu.

They had hesitated earlier already. Since Fang Yuan was initiating the ‘war’, the three Gu Immortals were confident in their finances, they followed relentlessly.

During the second price reduction.

There was a small commotion in treasure yellow heaven.

The rest of the Gu Immortals started to get excited, because they knew that this was only the second price fall, the war had just started, there was going to be a third and fourth time later.

“But it will depend on the mysterious fourth seller on when he reduces his price again.”

“Any price reduction is a fall in profits for the seller himself. Earlier, the fourth seller initiated the war, while the three main sellers have no fear in joining in, they had full confidence in themselves.”

“That’s right, the third reduction might be coming soon, but we do not know when.”

The Gu Immortals conversed among each other.

Normally speaking, it was very common to reduce prices in such situations, but there was an interval between each reduction.

Because the seller needs to observe the market and think about the decisions to make.

Reducing the price was a double-edged sword, it could undercut the competitors, but it would harm one’s own benefits.

If the seller saw good prospects in the market, they might not reduce prices anymore. They needed to defend their own benefits, if they reduce the prices further, even if they increase the quantity sold, they would not earn much profits, after all, competitors would reduce prices too.

If the sellers refuse to give in and constantly reduce prices, competing without restraint, they would collapse together.

There were basically no Gu Immortals who would do this and ruin the market for everyone.

The sellers were not stupid, they wanted to earn profits, if they only cared about competition and disregarded profits, why would they sell anything?

Sellers were smart, but buyers were intelligent too.

After the three sellers reduced their price to Fang Yuan’s level, they stopped buying, the sales of year Gu became very ‘pathetic’. Because the most crucial person in this price war was Fang Yuan.

And the moment Fang Yuan reduced his price, they would buy a bit.

Why?

Firstly, in terms of prices, Fang Yuan selling at a lower price would be more beneficial to them. Of course, they were encouraging him to continue competing with the three sellers and reduce prices. Eventually, Fang Yuan will be unable to endure it, because the one to lower the prices will suffer losses. But after the prices reach the lower limit, the buyers would benefit the most.

If the four sellers end up at the same price, they would not buy the year Gu from Fang Yuan.

A price war made good use of such psychological tactics.

After the second price reduction, the four sellers reached the same price again. Fang Yuan’s actions were out of expectations, he was paying close attention to treasure yellow heaven, the moment the three sellers reduced their price, he reacted and reduced his own price again.

“Hmm?!” Many people were astonished, Fang Yuan’s reaction was simply too fast.

And from his speed, many people could sense his firm and determined attitude.

“He is well prepared for this.” Rong Xin sighed, he felt a little pressure as he had the least stock among the sellers.

Towards the later stages of this price war, when the commodity prices are low, sales would boom. By then, if he had low stock, it would be very awkward.

There are buyers but no goods?

Not only would he be out of the game, buyers would think of him as unreliable, his reputation accumulated over the years would be ruined.

Rong Xin did not want that to happen.

He asked others to refine year Gu at full speed to replenish his stock while thinking if he should reduce prices again.

More specifically, if he should reduce the price until his competitors could not and dare not try to follow him, because it would result in major losses.

But he would not lower prices by too much, buyers must continue to think that they could continue watching without doing anything.

In that case, as long as he had enough time, Rong Xin could replenish his stocks and win at the final moments of the price war.

“However, in this case, if I reduce prices drastically, the other two parties will know that I do not have much stock now.” Rong Xin was very hesitant.

Since he could think of this to alleviate his crisis, the other two parties were also experienced sellers, they could naturally deduce his current situation.

Deductions were not hard to do.

People with experience were sensitive to such changes.

That way, if Rong Xin did this, he would be exposing his weakness, he would likely get kicked out of the game earlier.

Thus, not only was he hesitant, he had a headache.

A huge headache.

Because he needed to think about the buyer and seller mentality while also paying attention to his competitors.

Right when he was hesitant and indecisive, Xie Bao Shu and Wang Ming Yue lowered their prices again.

The price fell like earlier, maintained at the same level as Fang Yuan.

They had sufficient stock, especially Wang Ming Yue, they were not anxious. Since Fang Yuan wanted to compete and reduce prices, they would follow. After all, they would gain the market share if prices were equal, they had a huge advantage.

This was the third drop in prices.

After hearing news, Fang Yuan laughed heartily as cold light shone in his eyes: “In that case, I will speed things up.”

This time, he lowered prices again. And this fall was drastic, far beyond the earlier rounds.

This time, there was a huge commotion in treasure yellow heaven!

The buyers were excited, this was the result that they wanted, they had waited so long for this victorious moment.

“It fell by this much?!” Xie Bao Shu had a solemn expression, he could feel Fang Yuan’s overpowering attitude. If the earlier few rounds were light punches, this was a heavy kick.

But Xie Bao Shu had to react to it.

If not, he would be kicked out of this war.

Buyers had no loyalty after all, price wars were very cruel.

Xie Bao Shu was the first to lower prices, followed by Wang Ming Yue as they reached the same prices again.

Rong Xin had a huge headache!

He had wanted to drop his prices drastically earlier, but in his moment of hesitation, the opponent acted before he did anything.

This way, not only would his earlier plans be ruined, if he wanted to go ahead with it, he would need to reduce his prices even further.

But that would be a dangerous price, because if it becomes lower than the usual year Gu sale price of previous years, the buyers would start buying enthusiastically.

“Or maybe that mysterious seller has little stock? He has the same plan as me?” Rong Xin had his final bit of hope.

He was the last to reduce his price, following the other three.

“They all lowered their prices. Hahaha.” The buyers were very happy, but the happiest part had yet to come.

When Rong Xin lowered his price, Fang Yuan continued to lower his year Gu price again.

And this time, it was even larger than before.

Treasure yellow heaven was in a commotion!

The three sellers were shocked!

“This fellow... this will be a tough one...” Xie Bao Shu had a grim expression, he was originally relaxed and cool, he acted casually and without emotions, but now he could not contain himself anymore.

Fang Yuan reduced the prices and shrunk the profits of the year Gu business, for the three sellers, if they followed, they would suffer great loss of profits!

“He is going all-out.” Wang Ming Yue was tongue-tied, she had a chilly feeling.

She had not felt this for a long time already.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1455: Victor

Rong Xin’s lingering bit of hope was smashed!

Because he knew that the other party was not like him, they had ample stock and this price would definitely create a huge commotion in the sale of year Gu this time round.

“I lost this time.” Rong Xin smiled bitterly, he had no choice but to give up due to his low quantity.

Forget about excuses, losses were often justified with reasoning, but people in this world did not care about reasons, they did not need your excuses!

They only cared about victory or loss.

Like what Rong Xin expected, after Fang Yuan lowered his price, there was a huge wave of commotion and purchases.

Many buyers started to purchase year Gu.

Such a cheap price was rarely seen. If they did not make use of this chance, how could they?

Huge transactions were ongoing, Fang Yuan was raking in huge profits!

But the other three parties did not follow him.

Xie Bao Shu and Wang Ming Yue were hesitant.

Earlier, Rong Xin hesitated, it was now their turn.

If they followed Fang Yuan and lowered their prices too, their year Gu would be sold rapidly as well. But if they did that, the profits would become too small. It would be far from their original expectations.

But if they did not follow him, Fang Yuan would steal their business away, what should they do?

The key to this was how much stock Fang Yuan had left.

If Fang Yuan had excessive stock, Xie Bao Shu and the rest would need to follow him. The market was only this big, there was only a limited amount of demand, the more Fang Yuan sold, the less they would sell.

But if Fang Yuan had insufficient stock, Xie Bao Shu and the rest would not need to lower prices, they just need to wait. After he finishes his stock, they would be able to sell at a higher price later, their profits would be retained. They would win this fight after all.

Thus, Xie Bao Shu and the rest started to think, who was this Fang Yuan exactly!

Was he a man or a woman?

Was he part of a force? Or an individual?

Why was there no information about him earlier? Why did he appear out of nowhere?!

They could not understand.

He appeared too suddenly.

Actually, other than the three of them, the year Gu market had other smaller sellers. But these people were quickly eliminated by them, because they could not be the seller now.

“Right now, those small business owners probably have pale expressions while watching this intense price war.” Thinking of this, Rong Xin’s mood became slightly better. He was unlucky and would likely be the first person out of this race, but there were even more unlucky people besides him, it made him feel a little better in comparison.

But he was just consoling himself.

It could not affect the reality of things.

No matter how they thought about it, the three sellers could not decipher Fang Yuan’s background.

To play safe, Xie Bao Shu and Wang Ming Yue decided to follow after Fang Yuan and reduce prices too, until they match him.

But Rong Xin did not follow them.

“It seems that Rong Xin thinks the seller does not have much stock.” Xie Bao Shu thought.

But he did not know that Rong Xin was out of options.

He had little stock, if he reduced prices by that much, the heated sales would deplete his stock, he would be out of the competition. He would rather keep his prices and take a gamble.

If Fang Yuan had little stock, he would win and continue to stay in this.

If not, he would lose, but that was no different from lowering prices anyway.

Xie Bao Shu did not know about Rong Xin’s problem, he felt that he was gambling on Fang Yuan not having enough year Gu.

But Xie Bao Shu had a stable mindset, he wanted to follow because that was the safest option.

As for Wang Ming Yue, after some consideration, she also made the same choice as Xie Bao Shu.

But with her woman’s intuition, she had more suspicions.

She thought: “Why did Rong Xin not lower his price? Is he making a gamble, or does he know the other party’s background, or does he have any evidence or news about it?”

If Rong Xin knew about Fang Yuan’s background, it was possible that he would not tell the two of them about it.

He was sitting on the fence and watching, this was advantageous to Rong Xin.

Thus, Wang Ming Yue contacted Rong Xin and tried to probe him.

Rong Xin received Wang Ming Yue’s transmission and felt helpless about it, he felt some sympathy towards her. Overall, he had a complex emotion now.

Thus, the current situation was: Fang Yuan, Xie Bao Shu, and Wang Ming Yue had the same price, while Rong Xin’s price was higher than them.

At this time, large numbers of Gu Immortals started to buy year Gu, or started to prepare to buy them.

Everyone was moved.

This price was lower than ever before, it was an alluring price.

Wait for an even lower price?

The buyers shook their heads, it could not go much lower anymore, the buyers were smart, but the sellers were not stupid either.

Thus, when Fang Yuan lowered his price again, everyone was stunned.

“Did I hear wrongly? They lowered the price again? And by such a huge amount?!”

“Oh my, what is going on?”

“Is this new seller stupid?”

The buyers were in disbelief.

“I do not care if he is stupid or has other objectives, I know that his year Gu are genuine products, and he is selling at this price indeed. If I do not buy now, I will be the fool!”

A Gu Immortal cried out in his mind.

But others were like this too.

A huge amount of Gu Immortal divine senses or wills surrounded Fang Yuan’s stall.

The heated scene was unprecedented!

Buy, buy, buy!

The Gu Immortals were filled with this thought.

It had never been this cheap before, if they wait until that fool realizes his prices are too low, it would be too late.

The buyers felt a strong sense of urgency.

“What is this person doing?!” After seeing this, Xie Bao Shu lost his cool.

If he followed this price, his profits would be reduced to just a sliver.

For example, in previous years, if a year Gu could earn a hundred each, if he follows Fang Yuan’s price, he would only get single digit profits per Gu.

Why did he spend so much effort on growing vicissitude trees? Wasn’t it to nurture year Gu and earn profits?

If he reduced his prices to Fang Yuan’s level, his profits would be gone!

This price was way below his bottom line, if he had to sell at this price, he would rather keep the goods.

“But...” Xie Bao Shu frowned, he fell into deep contemplation.

At the same time, Wang Ming Yue was worried.

Her situation was the same as Xie Bao Shu, if she followed Fang Yuan, her profits would be unacceptable.

But should she stop selling?

It was not so simple!

If they did not follow and Fang Yuan’s stock was huge, the market in treasure yellow heaven would be completely taken over by Fang Yuan.

There was another possibility, Fang Yuan was purposely lowering the price as a tactic.

It was possible that he had only purposely lowered it this much to probe the other sellers, or to raise his own reputation.

“If I do not follow, I would be showing weakness, but I can preserve my strength. If I follow him, I would be clashing with that newcomer in a crazy manner.”

After thinking about it for a while, Wang Ming Yue decided to follow him.

But at this time, Xie Bao Shu had already stopped.

The sale price of the year Gu in the market was lowest at Fang Yuan and Wang Ming Yue, followed by Xie Bao Shu and Rong Xin at the highest.

Evidently, nobody was buying from those two shops. Most of the buyers were at Fang Yuan’s and Wang Ming Yue’s shops.

Xie Bao Shu was observing the situation. He needed to know if Fang Yuan was putting up a front or if he really had the foundation.

Wang Ming Yue was very nervous, because this sale price was losing her a lot of profits. And among the three sellers, she was the only one left.

Rong Xin became the most relaxed person, he was watching them fight.

“It is about time to deal the final blow.” Fang Yuan was very calm.

At this point, he had probed the bottom line of these three sellers, even though Wang Ming Yue was still contesting with him, according to the usual market situation, the three sellers were about the same level, even if Wang Ming Yue was superior, it was not by much.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan lowered his price again.

But this time, he only reduced it by a tiny little bit.

However, this small drop in price was like a sharp blade stabbing into the three sellers' hearts.

"This?!" Rong Xin turned pale.

Xie Bao Shu squinted with a dark expression on his face.

Wang Ming Yue clenched her fists, she gritted her teeth and said in shock: "Why? Why go this far?"

Fang Yuan's drop in price was small, but very fatal, it was lower than the cost price of these three sellers.

Since year Gu was being sold, there were costs involved in obtaining them.

Rong Xin needed Gu materials, he spent immortal essence to refine them using Gu refinement methods. Xie Bao Shu had vicissitude trees, he also needed manpower and resources. Even though Wang Ming Yue could capture year Gu from the tributary of the River of Time, the method used required immortal essences, and funds were needed to manage the tributary of the River of Time.

Selling below the cost price, that would be a true loss.

This was a move usually done by those who had a surplus of stock and could not sell them, or if they had an urgent need for funds, this was a desperate choice.

If one did this in a price war, the competitors might be fine, but the person themselves would suffer a major loss first.

This was too harsh, it was harsh to others, and also harsh to themselves.

Wang Ming Yue was shocked, she did not dare to follow him.

She would be an idiot if she did!

This was year Gu, the Gu was actually sold at a loss, what did that mean?

The buyers were shocked too.

This price was out of their imaginations, they were tongue-tied, completely in disbelief.

But soon, the Gu Immortals present reacted.

Treasure yellow heaven was in a huge commotion!

Countless Gu Immortals surrounded Fang Yuan's stall tightly, the situation was completely chaotic and heated.

This was no longer about buying.

They were earning profits.

Buying year Gu at this price, according to usual market prices, they were buying it at a profit.

Countless transactions were undergoing, even those who already bought year Gu came back and purchased from Fang Yuan again.

Fang Yuan’s business was unthinkably booming, the other three sellers were completely ousted, they were in pathetic states.

But at this time, the three sellers stopped being anxious.

“Who is this newcomer? He is so fierce in his moves, but I am afraid he has messed up now. Hehe.”

“Observe! I will observe.”

“I refuse to believe that he can maintain the price of the year Gu at this low level.”

The three sellers were waiting, for the time when Fang Yuan’s losses became too severe.

But Fang Yuan could go on endlessly.

Because he was using rank eight Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water, the cost behind the production of year Gu was merely his immortal essence used to activate the rank eight Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan’s production had costs of course. But his cost was far lower, compared to the three sellers, if their cost price was ten, his was only three or four.

Anyone could sell year Gu, the quality of the goods was similar in most cases, the competition here was really only dependent on their cost.

Fang Yuan sold at this price, but he could still earn profits, while the three sellers would sell at a loss. They were unable to sell, but Fang Yuan could dump his stock, the victor of this price war was decided from the start, it was undoubtedly Fang Yuan!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1456: Good News Upon Good News

“It is finally over, this price war was truly interesting!” Zhao Lian Yun sighed internally.

The sale of year Gu ended in Fang Yuan’s victory. Many Gu Immortals were shocked by the results.

Such situations were rare, the newcomer actually defeated three seniors in this market.

Most of the people were originally thinking that the newcomer was a wolf while the three sellers were tigers and lions. But in the end, the newcomer was not a wolf but a dragon. The three sellers were not his match, they lost terribly and could not sell their year Gu.

For the following period, this year Gu competition’s influence will continue to spread, it will become a tale for people to talk about, Gu Immortals would reminiscence over it.

Zhao Lian Yun started to think about this price war.

She wanted to gain knowledge from this price war, so as to learn something useful for herself.

“Then, why did the newcomer win in this battle while the long time sellers lost?” Zhao Lian Yun asked herself.

Next, she answered herself: “Because the newcomer has great strength, even if the three sellers worked together, they were not his (her) match.”

“Using absolute strength to sweep the market?” Zhao Lian Yun was slightly dazed before smiling bitterly.

She wanted to learn how to enter the market as a newcomer.

Even though Fang Yuan’s method seemed ingenious and meticulous, he had unparalleled strength to sweep the market and suppress all his competitors, Zhao Lian Yun could learn nothing from him.

Because he used absolute strength!

“Since the newcomer has such strength, why did he not reduce the price from the start?” Zhao Lian Yun asked herself, she felt like Fang Yuan’s actions were a bit pointless.

But soon, when she thought again, realization flashed across her eyes.

“I understand.”

“Starting at a high price and gradually reducing it can earn more profits than dropping the prices immediately, he can also probe the three sellers’ bottom lines. Finally, he is trying to assert dominance.”

The thoughts in Zhao Lian Yun’s mind clashed continuously.

“After this competition ended, the newcomer won. It was no surprise he won with such strength, but he is definitely not satisfied with just one win.”

“The newcomer wants to dominate treasure yellow heaven’s market, not only does he want to defeat the three sellers, he wants to drive these people out of the market.”

“This person is so overbearing...”

“Sigh, when can I possess such strength too?”

Zhao Lian Yun thought of this and sighed deeply to herself.

She had just started managing an immortal aperture, she was very far from Fang Yuan’s level of development.

No matter what, she had already etched Fang Yuan’s fatty will to her mind. Zhao Lian Yun saw him as a mountain, she who had just become a Gu Immortal could only watch and admire him.

Rong Xin, Wang Ming Yue, and Xie Bao Shu were discussing among themselves.

“Sigh, where did this person come from? They have such great strength, able to satisfy the entire market in treasure yellow heaven alone, our year Gu are literally unsellable now!” Wang Ming Yue sighed.

“It is not so simple, he is trying to get rid of us entirely!” Xie Bao Shu was pale, his voice was turning shrill.

“Brother Xie is right, this person is selling year Gu at such a low price, for the next few years, the market for year Gu will shrink immensely. No matter who it is, they are going overboard. Not only did they take the bulk of the profit, they also refuse to leave us any leftovers.” Rong Xin had a grim expression.

The three sellers had year Gu, but they could not sell any.

Year Gu was needed by everyone, Fang Yuan supplied this huge quantity, it caused a tremendous amount of sales, but these three could not get rid of any of their stock.

Since year Gu were easy to raise, they only fed on the water of the River of Time, it was not hard to accumulate them at all.

This way, not just now, for the next few years, the three sellers would not be able to sell their year Gu.

And for the buyers, since they had year Gu themselves, why would they buy more? Unless the price was even lower, they might want to accumulate a bit more.

But the three sellers could naturally not sell their year Gu at Fang Yuan’s price.

The three sellers stored their year Gu up for now.

But what was the use of that?

After two to three years, when the market regains its demand for year Gu after fully digesting Fang Yuan’s sales, the price of year Gu will rise again.

By then, the three sellers would be able to sell it, but Fang Yuan could do the same.

If he did the same thing again, the three sellers would not be able to sell off their year Gu once more.

This was strength!

With such a difference in strength, no plots or schemes could work.

Fang Yuan was a very intelligent person, but this time, he acted straightforwardly, it was most effective to directly crush them.

The three sellers became quiet after a while of discussion.

The atmosphere was very heavy.

Because they knew clearly that as long as Fang Yuan had this strength, they would not have an easy time in the future. Even though the sale of year Gu would not disappear, their profits from this business would shrink drastically, they would need to give up on the market in treasure yellow heaven.

“Right now, we can only hope that this person is putting up a front, that his actions were all just to scare us off.” Wang Ming Yue smiled bitterly and broke the silence.

The other two immortals shook their heads.

This was very unlikely.

“We can work together.” Rong Xin said quickly.

This was a solution.

In the past, the three of them fought and competed, only after a while did they set an agreement to work together and gain profits together for a long time.

“But how can we cooperate with him? The difference in strength is apparent.” Wang Ming Yue sighed.

Xie Bao Shu analyzed calmly: “That will depend on our ability. If year Gu cannot convince him, we will need to discuss other things.”

“What if he does not agree?” Wang Ming Yue asked again.

Xie Bao Shu was silent.

Rong Xin sighed bitterly: “If he does not agree and wants us out of the business, we can only give up on the year Gu business.”

There was nothing that could be done about it.

Competition was cruel.

Fang Yuan’s strength made it impossible for the three sellers, they could only give up on year Gu.

But how could they give up so easily?

The profit of the year Gu business was sustaining them and the super forces behind them, now that it was destroyed, who could handle the outcome?

“No! I cannot give up on the year Gu business!!” Xie Bao Shu gritted his teeth, he was a lone cultivator, he had been relying on year Gu to support his cultivation and connections to others.

With this loss, it was a detrimental blow to him.

Wang Ming Yue’s situation was slightly better than Xie Bao Shu, she was once a lone immortal, she had turned over to the righteous path and joined a super force.

Even if there were no profits here, it was not her responsibility. On the other hand, she could rely on her husband and the clan behind them.

Rong Xin had the smallest pressure.

Because he was also a member of a super force, it was a Central Continent super force with deep foundations.

And most importantly, he obtained year Gu from refining Gu. If he did not need year Gu, he could just stop refining it. It was easy for him to change businesses.

“Cooperate with me?” Fang Yuan soon received their transmissions, he sneered.

Why would he cooperate?

He could easily devour the market alone, why would he hand over the profits to them?

Fang Yuan rejected them immediately.

Twelve million immortal essence stones!

These were Fang Yuan’s gains in the price war.

Even though his price was low, the quantity sold was too immense, he still accumulated a huge sum.

“When I drive these three sellers out of the market, I will be able to raise prices slightly.”

“But for the next few years, the three sellers will likely still stay in here.”

Fang Yuan evaluated.

On one hand, they were unwilling to give up, on the other hand, they wanted to probe Fang Yuan’s foundation and see if he was scamming them.

And finally, even though treasure yellow heaven’s market was taken by Fang Yuan, not everyone bought things from treasure yellow heaven.

For example, Wang Ming Yue’s super force behind her would buy a huge portion of her year Gu. Other than that, there were many forces which would buy their year Gu even if prices were higher to maintain relationships.

Of course, as long as Fang Yuan continued to dominate the market of treasure yellow heaven using such methods, in five to six years, these three sellers would have an even harder time. After all, the prices were too low, even with their deep relationships, buyers would want to buy from Fang Yuan.

In the entire Gu Immortal world’s market, treasure yellow heaven was a huge proportion of it.

From now on, Fang Yuan only needed to dominate treasure yellow heaven, he would eventually influence the other markets and become the biggest seller of the year Gu business in the entire Gu Immortal world. As for the others, even if they could do some year Gu business, they could not compare to him.

“After repaying my debts, I still have ten million immortal essence stones left. But for the next two to three years, this way of getting profits cannot be used.”

While Fang Yuan was thinking of how to use these immortal essence stones to manage his immortal aperture, Sixth Hair approached him.

He gave Fang Yuan some excellent news —

“Elder Fang Yuan, the food path Immortal Gu that you wanted me to refine has been created!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1457: Food Path Immortal Gu Snack

A small food path Immortal Gu was in the center of Fang Yuan’s palm.

It was green throughout, about the size of an adult’s thumb, but its body was split into six segments like a caterpillar.

And on its forehead, there was a silver horn.

At this moment, it was lying around in Fang Yuan’s palm, rolling around according to Fang Yuan’s will, it had been refined already.

When refinement path Gu Immortals successfully refine Immortal Gu, in most situations, the Immortal Gu would have already been refined by them. That meant Sixth Hair was the owner of this food path Immortal Gu.

But due to Sixth Hair handing it over to him, Fang Yuan could easily refine this food path Immortal Gu compared to wild Immortal Gu.

Rank six food path Immortal Gu — Snack.

This was one of the Gu that Fang Yuan wanted Lang Ya Sect to refine.

After inheriting Purple Mountain True Monarch’s inheritance, he had requested Lang Ya Sect to refine three Immortal Gu for him.

And right now, they had already been completed, they were rank seven Immortal Gu Self Love, rank six Immortal Gu Cleanse Soul, and rank six Immortal Gu Snack.

These three Immortal Gu were needed by Fang Yuan urgently.

Self love Immortal Gu was very useful, it was the core of self cleansing, it was necessary to him. Fang Yuan could get away from Heavenly Court’s investigative methods due to it.

Even though cleanse soul Immortal Gu was rank six, the difficulty of refining it was the biggest among the three. But after refining it, Fang Yuan solved the soul path trap on the eight arm immortal zombie body, he could use the light of wisdom once again. It was incredibly useful to him.

As for snack Immortal Gu, it was a food path Immortal Gu. Fang Yuan needed it to solve the problem of feeding his Immortal Gu.

The Immortal Gu recipe of snack Immortal Gu came from Shadow Sect. The source was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, in his life, he had killed the beastman Gu Immortal and obtained his food path true inheritance.

That beastman Gu Immortal was the legendary figure who created food path.

Seniors pave the way for juniors, the food path true inheritance in Fang Yuan’s hands was the most authentic one in the world.

After injecting red date immortal essence, snack Immortal Gu’s caterpillar body shook like it had gotten drunk, its lower half sprawled out on Fang Yuan’s palm while the upper half stood up and shook its head.

In the process, its green body turned red, until it turned into a lava-like color.

At the same time, its slim body became thicker gradually.

Plop.

Eventually, it spat out a large amount of sticky yellowish liquid from its mouth, before it shriveled and shrunk until it was smaller than normal. Its body also turned from red to pale white, like it had been weakened.

With the food path true inheritance, Fang Yuan knew clearly that snack Immortal Gu had a restricted usage, after each usage, it needed time to heal before it could be used again. If Fang Yuan used it continuously beyond its limits, it would spit out a large amount of yellowish water before dying rapidly.

Only when it recovers and its leaves turn green again could it be activated once more.

Fang Yuan placed snack Immortal Gu into his immortal aperture before turning his attention to the yellowish liquid.

This liquid was very special, it floated in the air and did not land, it shrunk into a small ball.

It was like an egg that has the white and yolk mixed together.

This yellowish liquid was what Fang Yuan wanted to get.

With it, he could feed his Immortal Gu in place of a portion of the food they needed.

For other rank six Immortal Gu, this yellowish liquid could make up six percent of their food (the effect was weaker for rank seven Immortal Gu). Six percent seemed little, but snack Immortal Gu could be used again in a few days, it would squirt out another glob of yellowish liquid.

If he accumulated it, it would be very helpful towards the feeding of his Immortal Gu.

Of course, there was a limit to the amount of yellowish liquid that he could use.

It could replace a maximum of forty percent of the Immortal Gu’s food, beyond that, it would not have any effect.

Fang Yuan took out an Immortal Gu as it quickly devoured the yellowish liquid.

The test was completed perfectly.

Fang Yuan nodded in satisfaction while sighing internally.

He had wanted food path methods long ago, because since rebirth, he had many Immortal Gu with him, he had a huge burden of feeding them. Before now, Fang Yuan had been very busy in feeding his Immortal Gu.

“To think that I would obtain a food path true inheritance from my great enemy Shadow Sect. And it is actually the best food path true inheritance in the world!”

“And the process of refining snack Immortal Gu was much easier than Cleanse Soul and Self Love.”

The refinement of Immortal Gu was really hard to estimate.

In order to refine Cleanse Soul, Fang Yuan failed many times, but when refining snack Immortal Gu, he only made five attempts.

Success on the fifth try was a huge surprise.

With this snack Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan’s pressure of feeding Immortal Gu was much smaller, by reducing the food of rank six Immortal Gu by forty percent and replacing it with immortal essence. Even though the effect was weaker on rank seven and eight Immortal Gu, his burden was much lighter now.

After all, Fang Yuan had a huge number of Immortal Gu with him now.

Snack Immortal Gu held huge value to him.

A few days later, Fang Yuan successfully bought a batch of desolate plants from treasure yellow heaven.

This batch of desolate plants was a thin layer of green fungal lawn, it lived on the surface of multicolored coral groups.

It was light shine fungi.

Light shine fungi lived deep in Eastern Sea, it was pure darkness there without any light.

Due to the profundities of nature, the light shine fungi grew in that area and emitted an intense light, turning the dark sea into a shining area, like it was daytime.

Fang Yuan had once tried to buy a batch in the Eastern Sea auction, but back then, Tong Hua only wanted to trade them.

Afterwards, she sold them in treasure yellow heaven, and after some evaluation, the price got lower and lower.

Initially, the Gu Immortals were very interested in this desolate plant.

But afterwards, the buyers found out that this desolate plant was most suited to live in the completely dark deep sea. There was immense water pressure at that depth as well.

After leaving this environment, even though the light shine fungi would not die, they would shrivel and emit a weak candle-like light.

In this situation, Fang Yuan negotiated with Tong Hua and bought all the light shine fungi that she had at the lowest price possible.

Fang Yuan first placed a portion into his immortal aperture’s Mini Eastern Sea to nurture them.

Next, he experimented on the remaining amount.

He needed to modify this desolate plant so that it would change its characteristics and be usable to him.

Fang Yuan’s wood path attainment level was ordinary, but he was very confident.

On one hand, he had too many methods, Shadow Sect’s inheritances along with Lang Ya Sect’s true inheritances gave him a large number of modification methods, among which involved wood path, soul path, refinement path, and others.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan had the ultimate trump card, the light of wisdom. Even if these methods were not useful, he could deduce his own way.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1458: Light Shine Fungi Business

In the vast Eastern Sea, waves were rumbling.

Wind and waves swept towards a nameless island, it was not dusk yet, but the sky was already dark.

Tong Hua flew as she raised her head, seeing the dark clouds looming over her in the sky, she sensed that a storm was brewing.

She was feeling vexed, but her expression was calm, she quickly flew above the nameless island as she saw one person standing at the highest part of the island, looking at the sea and sky.

“I have kept you waiting.” Tong Hua landed towards the Gu Immortal as she bowed.

The mysterious Gu Immortal turned around and revealed his appearance.

He was an elderly man with a tall nose and thin eyes, he was smiling now as he said calmly: “No worries. Fairy Tong Hua, I need to congratulate you, I heard that you sold all of your light shine fungi in treasure yellow heaven.”

This elderly Gu Immortal was an Eastern Sea rank seven enslavement path Gu Immortal, Ren Xiu Ping.

Fairy Tong Hua nodded as she handed Ren Xiu Ping a large amount of immortal essence stones.

Ren Xiu Ping inspected it before hesitating purposely: “Fairy, if I counted correctly, the sum is a little lacking.”

Fairy Tong Hua had a grim expression, she nodded: “I will return you most of it first, I will repay the rest at a later time.”

Ren Xiu Ping nodded: “Very wise. According to our agreement, the lower your remaining debt is, the less interest you pay. It seems that you will be able to repay it soon.”

Fairy Tong Hua snorted: “Of course.”

She had gone through a tribulation earlier, the rebuilding of her immortal aperture took a lot of funds, she had to borrow. Ren Xiu Ping was one of the lenders, he lent her the most amount of immortal essence stones.

But her agreement with Ren Xiu Ping was also the strictest one with the highest interest rate.

Originally, Fairy Tong Hua was in a terrible condition, but to think that Fang Yuan actually bought all of her light shine fungi, she regained some funds.

Returning most of the debt at once, her crisis was greatly alleviated.

Fairy Tong Hua had little pressure in returning the rest of the debt including the interest.

After the transaction, Fairy Tong Hua did not want to stay anymore, she was about to leave when Ren Xiu Ping said: “Fairy, wait.”

“What matter do you have? If you want to lend more immortal essence stones, forgive me, but I will not borrow any.” Fairy Tong Hua frowned lightly as she said coldly.

Ren Xiu Ping smiled: “Don’t worry fairy, that is not it. I have an incomplete true inheritance in my hands, it is from a wood path great expert long ago. Don’t you want to modify the light shine fungi? I believe this true inheritance will be of great help to you.”

Fairy Tong Hua became suspicious: “How did you know that I was modifying the light shine fungi?”

Ren Xiu Ping chuckled: “You did not conceal this matter, I easily found out about it with some investigation.”

Fairy Tong Hua had a grim expression, matching the terrible weather.

Splash splash splash.

Great winds blew, waves crashed on the shore of the nameless island, creating huge ripples.

Ren Xiu Ping was right, Tong Hua had invested too much into modifying the light shine fungi, causing her finances to crumble, she was forced to borrow funds to maintain her financial situation.

If not for that, with her foundation, she could sustain the cost of rebuilding the immortal aperture.

After a while of silence, Fairy Tong Hua asked: “Which wood path great expert are you referring to?”

Ren Xiu Ping smiled: “Wood path Gu Immortal Kui Wu Zi, have you heard of him?”

Fairy Tong Hua was slightly surprised: “He is a wood path great expert indeed with rank eight cultivation level. But in history, he was famous for battle strength, his immortal aperture management was not good.”

Ren Xiu Ping shook his head, saying in a confident tone: “Fairy, that is not true. You have that impression because Kui Wu Zi’s battle strength was too stunning, it overshadowed his ability to manage the immortal aperture. The truth is, he was quite impressive. Without immortal aperture foundation, battle strength is pointless to some degree. Furthermore, even if his management was not good, he was still a rank eight Gu Immortal, and was from wood path, he is definitely very useful to you, that is undeniable.”

Tong Hua was moved, she thought: “I had been facing problems with modifying light shine fungi earlier, the reason was not my light path attainment level but wood path instead. If I can get this incomplete true inheritance, it would likely help me in this problem and the modification of the light shine fungi would succeed!”

Thinking of this, Tong Hua hesitated before asking Ren Xiu Ping: “What is the price of Kui Wu Zi’s true inheritance?”

Ren Xiu Ping thought ‘the fish has taken the bait’ but he said: “Not high, not high at all.”

Both sides negotiated but eventually, Fairy Tong Hua bought the true inheritance of Kui Wu Zi from Ren Xiu Ping and left the nameless island.

The moment she left, a storm started.

Both the sky and sea were of the same dark murky color.

Crack.

A loud thunder and a snake-like lightning flashed across heaven and earth.

At this instant, the lightning reflected on Ren Xiu Ping’s face.

He was smiling like his scheme had succeeded.

“I succeeded.”

“Tong Hua was deceived by the reputation of Kui Wu Zi, his true inheritance is actually not very helpful to her. Especially after I took out some crucial information from it.”

“Light shine fungus is a desolate plant, how can it be easy to modify a desolate plant? Especially when Tong Hua cultivates light path instead of wood path, how can she succeed without years of research?”

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

Fang Yuan’s divine sense entered his sovereign immortal aperture.

Immortal killer move — Light Fungus Radiance.

Fang Yuan activated his immortal killer move, creating a burst of orange-yellow light.

The orange light shone on the green light shine fungi as it started to transform. The light shine fungi was dyed at a rapid rate, it gradually changed colors from green to pure white.

A moment later, the immortal killer move was successfully activated, Fang Yuan only saw pure white light shine fungi in front of him.

The light shine fungi was different from before, instead of wilting, they radiated with strong light.

Fang Yuan used his investigative methods to check it before nodding in satisfaction.

“Excellent, the light shine fungus modification was quite successful, I can start a wide scale plantation now.”

Fang Yuan’s wood path attainment was even lower than Fairy Tong Hua. But he had the light of wisdom to assist his thinking. He also had Shadow Sect’s and Lang Ya Sect’s inheritances, he had a vast amount of foundational knowledge. He also had access to a huge number of Immortal Gu, and could even borrow more.

Due to many reasons, he managed to create the immortal killer move light fungus radiance.

This move used perseverance Immortal Gu, self love Immortal Gu and wood sprout Immortal Gu as the cores, with snack Immortal Gu supplementing them, to allow green light shine fungi to transform into pure white light shine fungi, suited for the environment of the sky.

Among them, wood sprout Immortal Gu was borrowed from Lang Ya Sect. Perseverance and Self Love were Fang Yuan’s to begin with. As for snack Immortal Gu, he had just refined it, it was quite a surprise that it was useful so quickly.

Afterwards, Fang Yuan placed the light shine fungi into Mini Orange Heaven and Mini White Heaven.

There was a field of aurora lights in Mini Orange Heaven, within the aurora lights were fruits known as flowing light fruits.

As for Mini White Heaven, there was a field of multicolored overlord flowers.

After placing the light shine fungi there, the two places started to shine intensely.

Due to this influence, Mini Orange Heaven’s aurora lights started to expand. Even though the extent was mild, as time passes, this would be a substantial change.

As for Mini White Heaven, the multicolored overlord flowers also became energized.

Be it the aurora lights or multicolored overlord flowers, they needed intense lights. The modified pure white light shine fungi could float in the sky, they were very helpful to the areas.

Fang Yuan was satisfied after inspecting them.

“As long as these two areas are developed, at this rate, I will be able to satisfy the food requirements of attitude Gu and wisdom sword Gu.”

Fang Yuan had three rank eight Immortal Gu, Years Flow Like Water consumed the water of the River of Time, there were no issues with its food. Attitude Gu and wisdom sword Immortal Gu were harder to deal with.

All along, Fang Yuan had been worried about this, and now, he saw hope of finally resolving this.

“Furthermore, the light shine fungus can reproduce by itself, when the scale of my light shine fungi increases in the future, it will become another business that I can engage in.”

This was highly possible.

The pure white light shine fungus that Fang Yuan modified was marketable, it was much better than the original light shine fungus. If he sold it, it would receive much attention and interest.

Fang Yuan had already planned, he was going to nurture both versions of the light shine fungus. He would place a portion of the green light shine fungi into Mini Eastern Sea, while putting most of his attention on the pure white light shine fungi. After satisfying his own needs, he would sell the rest.

“Let me count.”

“To get the light shine fungi into a scale that satisfies my needs, I will need to invest two million immortal essence stones.”

“To make it into a business and sell it to others, I will need to invest another 1.8 million immortal essence stones.”

The feeding of rank eight Immortal Gu was too high of a burden.

In total, he would need four million immortal essence stones. But if he succeeds, he would have a monopoly over this market, it was extremely profitable.

For the next two to three years, the year Gu market would be oversupplied. Even for the next four to five years, treasure yellow heaven’s market would be very lacking in demand. Because Gu Immortals already had a lot of year Gu stocked up in their inventories.

Just earlier, Fang Yuan created a huge commotion, the sale of year Gu also affected the market of month Gu and day Gu.

Fang Yuan wanted to create a new business, light shine fungi was a good choice.

Of course, the prospects could not match guts Gu. After he sells the modified light shine fungi for some time, people will learn about the details and modify it themselves. Meanwhile, only Dang Hun Mountain could produce guts Gu.

“Next, I will release the restraints and restore the sovereign immortal aperture’s rate of time back to normal!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1459: Marriage with Fang Yuan

Northern Plains, northern icy plain.

A blizzard was blowing, snow was falling above the glacier. Under this glacier, a negotiation filled with heavy atmosphere was underway.

The two groups of variant humans who lived here in seclusion — the rockmen and snowmen, were engaging in negotiation due to a territorial dispute earlier.

Right now, this negotiation had been going on for six days and six nights.

“Moli Region belongs to my rockman tribe, it had been part of our territory since four hundred years ago. This is the bottom line of our rockman tribe, I hope the snowmen can understand us!” Shi Zong spoke loudly, his voice echoed in the room.

The rockman Gu Immortals who were engaged in the negotiation were extremely stubborn.

Meanwhile, the snowman Gu Immortals had dark and unsightly expressions.

The rockman tribe was very firm on this topic, it was an immense pressure on the snowmen.

Snowman Gu Immortal Bing Yuan said: “That was the case four hundred years ago. But afterwards, a senior Gu Immortal in our tribe won a bet against you, first supreme elder Shi Zong, and this Moli Region was the wager.”

Shi Zong waved his hand rapidly: “That was just a joke, it should not be taken for real.”

Bing Yuan smiled coldly: “An agreement was set back then.”

Shi Zong had a solemn expression, countering: “Where is the agreement now?”

Bing Yuan was so angry she could not speak.

This Shi Zong, not only did he use information path methods to get rid of the agreement, he even denied the bet, as the first supreme elder of the rockman tribe, he was simply too shameless.

But the snowman Gu Immortals understood why, even though they were furious.

Because there was just too little territory in this icy plain, after living here for so long, the rockmen and snowmen had propagated beyond the sustainable number for this place.

Shi Zong was being so shameless to get back Moli Region, it was for the sake of the rockmen, and for their overall benefit.

But in this case, the snowman tribe’s benefits were infringed.

Eventually, this difficult negotiation had a result.

The snowmen lost while the rockmen won, they gained control of Moli Region.

Immediately, the rockmen ordered the snowmen to leave Moli Region, to hand over the space to the rockman in charge.

After returning to their territory, rank seven Gu Immortal Bing Zhuo said angrily: “These rockmen are too much, how can they distort facts just because they have the rank eight battle strength immemorial rock dragon?!”

Bing Yuan consoled him: “Stay calm Bing Zhuo, haven’t we known about the rockman tribe’s attitude for the last thousand years?”

The snowmen and rockmen were living together in the northern icy plain, but the rockmen had the advantage over them.

There was only one reason, the rank eight battle strength immemorial rock dragon.

With such powerful strength, the rockmen gained the advantage in many conflicts between the two tribes and defended their own benefits.

Upon hearing the immemorial rock dragon, Bing Zhuo’s rage faded, he sighed helplessly: “Sigh! Rank eight battle strength, immemorial rock dragon... if we had rank eight battle strength too, we would contest them evenly, that would be great.”

Bing Yuan was silent for a moment before saying: “It is not impossible to gain rank eight battle strength. I have a plan, if we succeed, the immemorial rock dragon will be nothing compared to it.”

Bing Zhuo heard this and his eyes shone: “What plan, tell me.”

“Actually, I have been planning this for some time, at this current moment, we have an opportunity, I will tell you.” Bing Yuan said.

Bing Zhuo heard this and called out: “You mean Liu Guan Yi, wait no, Fang Yuan?”

Liu Guan Yi’s true identity, which was Fang Yuan, had been exposed by Heavenly Court long ago to the world. Even though the snowman tribe were isolated, they still learned of such important details.

“Fang Yuan undoubtedly has rank eight battle strength. He even has the upper extreme heavenly eagle, and we’ve had a relationship for some time, if we let Xue Er be married to him, we would have a marriage connection with him, he will be tied to our tribe. With this, our tribe will no longer be bullied by the rockmen. Furthermore, having a rank eight to defend us will be extremely helpful for our development.” Bing Yuan said.

Bing Zhuo thought while nodding: “Indeed, Fang Yuan is a human but he has countless enemies, he has also joined Lang Ya Sect, there is no problem with his allegiance. But wait...”

Bing Zhuo looked at Bing Yuan: “We have a relationship with him? Why do I recall that we only fought him and ambushed him. Even though we made up later, we are far from having an actual relationship.”

Bing Yuan smiled: “Bing Zhuo, you were in seclusion to modify your killer move earlier, therefore you are unaware. During this period of time, Fang Yuan used all of Lang Ya Sect’s strength to refine Immortal Gu, he met with difficulty in the process and needed the immortal material snow lotus essence. I made the decision to sell a lot of our snow lotus essence to Lang Ya Sect’s Sixth Hair to help him out.”

“So that’s it.” Bing Zhuo realized, but he soon frowned: “Since it is a transaction, we gained from it too, why did we not just gift him the snow lotus essence?”

Bing Yuan smiled bitterly: “This matter had many implications, I had no choice but to do that. Firstly, I did not have a strong desire towards the marriage connection, secondly, if we gifted it to him without cost, Fang Yuan is not a stupid person, he might not accept it. Thirdly, if everyone knows about it, the rockman tribe would become suspicious of our intentions.”

Bing Zhuo nodded and did not speak.

He understood that rather than a relationship, they had only barely started to build one with him. It was very difficult to have a marriage connection with him.

Because earlier, when Fang Yuan had the upper extreme heavenly eagle, the snowmen had expressed goodwill to Fang Yuan, but he was extremely cold to them.

And right now, Fang Yuan had rank eight battle strength with the upper extreme heavenly eagle as well, his status had elevated even further. If the snowmen wanted to ally with him through marriage, they were not the ones helping him, they were trying to raise their own status.

The snowmen did not know that Fang Yuan had lost the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

But Bing Yuan had more confidence than Bing Zhuo, she said: “Don’t worry, my granddaughter has incredible looks and is a Gu Immortal, she is the perfect person to marry. How can the rockmen surpass us in this? We have the advantage.”

“Even though our marriage connection ends in us relying on him, Fang Yuan can also receive our help, it is beneficial to him. Let alone anything else, we at least have snow lotus essence.”

“Or rather, even if this plan fails, there are no problems, our relationship with Fang Yuan will not worsen. We can try.”

This ‘try’ reasoning finally moved Bing Zhuo.

The latter nodded: “Let’s try it.”

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Swoosh swoosh!

The water of the River of Time splashed with a grand commotion, reverberating in Fang Yuan’s ears.

Fang Yuan’s divine sense swept around, after some observation, there were no issues, he retracted his divine sense.

Using the time path methods from Hei Fan true inheritance, Fang Yuan restored the rate of time in his sovereign immortal aperture back to its original speed.

The rate of time in the sovereign immortal aperture was very fast, it far surpassed super grade blessed lands.

In terms of space path, there was more than 335000km2 of space in it.

In terms of time path, the speed was one-to-sixty compared to the outside world. The ten extreme physique blessed land only had about a one-to-forty rate of time. As for high grade blessed lands, the time was about one-to-thirty, half of the sovereign immortal aperture.

At the same time, the immortal aperture origin core had a deep foundation, ninety-six immortal essence beads were produced in the immortal aperture each year. In terms of outside time, it was sixteen immortal essence beads per day. Fang Yuan was a rank seven Gu Immortal now, so he obtained sixteen red date immortal essence beads daily.

Sixteen red date immortal essence beads, in terms of immortal essence stones, that was sixteen hundred immortal essence stones!

That was to say, even if Fang Yuan did nothing everyday, his immortal aperture would still produce the equivalent of sixteen hundred immortal essence stones for him daily!

That was terrifying.

And in fact, that was not all. When Fang Yuan’s time path dao marks increase, his immortal aperture’s rate of time would accelerate. When his immortal aperture origin core’s foundation becomes deeper, the number of beads of immortal essence produced would increase too.

At rank eight cultivation level, it would be even more terrifying!

At the most basic level, sixteen immortal essence beads per day of rank eight white litchi immortal essence would be the equivalent of a hundred and sixty thousand immortal essence stones!

Fang Yuan managed to earn millions of immortal essence stones from selling year Gu. But when he reaches rank eight cultivation level, he could obtain sixteen million immortal essence stones worth of immortal essence beads every hundred days without doing anything.

The higher the cultivation level, the deeper the growth in resources. This was not a linear growth, the increment was far greater.

Of course, that was for Fang Yuan’s case.

The sovereign immortal aperture was a unique situation in the world. Shadow Sect spent a hundred thousand years to accumulate resources and used it all to refine this Gu, it was understandable why this was so terrifying.

Earlier, Fang Yuan was forced by heaven’s will and tribulations to reduce his immortal aperture’s rate of time.

But now, with his surge in battle strength, Fang Yuan was confident in getting past calamities and tribulations, with the immortal killer move exposing heavenly secret created by Old Man Yan Shi, he could obtain the details of calamities and tribulations in advance.

And together with his own development needs, he had to restore the rate of time.

In fact, Fang Yuan even planned to use time path methods to further increase the speed.

“But I need to wait now. The time path methods in Hei Fan’s true inheritance have a cooldown period before I can use them again to influence the tributary of the River of Time.”

“With my accelerated rate of time, the light shine fungi can reproduce rapidly now, I should place wisdom sword Immortal Gu and attitude Gu outside the immortal aperture.”

Fang Yuan calculated, at this rate, he would be able to satisfy the feeding of attitude Gu and wisdom sword Gu.

It was about time to feed them.

But rank eight Immortal Gu were too hard to feed, this problem had been in Fang Yuan’s mind for a long time, and as time passed, his pressure intensified.

Now that he could settle this problem, Fang Yuan finally let out a sigh of relief.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1460: Million Man Soul

Heavenly Court, Soul Suppression Hall.

Fairy Zi Wei looked at the lump of Spectral Soul’s main body in front of her as she frowned: “Spectral Soul, at this point, can’t you see reality?”

Spectral Soul did not answer, he was silent like a rock.

Fairy Zi Wei sneered, she activated her rank eight Immortal Gu House.

Immediately, purple lightning emerged from the chains, as Spectral Soul who was restrained tightly started shaking.

His memories were forcefully extracted, appearing before Fairy Zi Wei as a multicolored image.

It was a scene of the past.

Spectral Soul had yet to become a Demon Venerable, he only had rank seven Gu Immortal cultivation level.

Luo Po valley.

Spectral Soul stumbled into Luo Po Valley and fell on the ground.

Guh.

He opened his mouth and spit out a mouthful of blood.

His expression was pale as paper, the situation was terrible, he was near death.

A figure descended from the sky, he landed and said: “Oh Spectral Soul, you cannot escape, today, you will die.”

The person had rank eight aura, he had a cold expression, his strength was far higher than Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul barely managed to sit up as he looked at the sky: “I do not understand, this is the first time we are meeting, we have no grudges, why are you paying such a huge price to kill me?”

The person called out: “Because you will create bloodshed in the world, you will massacre the people of the world and bring disaster to all.”

Spectral Soul sneered: “You have killed far more people than me, isn’t it laughable for you to say that?”

The rank eight enemy shook his head: “It is different. You are inherently worse than me.”

Spectral Soul was silent for a while before saying: “Because I want to create soul path?”

The rank eight Gu Immortal had a flash of surprise in his eyes, but he recovered quickly and said solemnly: “That’s right, soul path should not be created. In the current world, fate Immortal Gu has been damaged, if soul path is created, the world will change drastically, the dead will not rest in peace, ghosts will roam the world freely.”

“Hehehe... hahaha.” Spectral Soul laughed: “That’s wonderful, I will definitely create soul path. In the future, countless people will cultivate soul path, let’s change this entire world!”

He laughed as he stood up, he had recovered to an extent already.

“With me around, that is wishful thinking!” The person sneered and charged down.

Spectral Soul raised his hands and a huge formation appeared, trapping the rank eight Gu Immortal inside.

But the enemy reacted rapidly, he quickly broke the Gu formation.

“Did you think I did not notice the hidden Gu formation? I purposely came here to talk to you, because I had already unraveled this Gu formation!” The rank eight Gu Immortal charged towards Spectral Soul relentlessly.

But Spectral Soul was extremely confident, he stood on the spot as the rank eight Gu Immortal came at him.

He laughed: “You merely unraveled that Gu formation at the surface level, don’t you find this valley unusual?”

He had just said that when the Gu formation unleashed its full power, the rank eight Gu Immortal was immediately affected as his momentum came to a halt.

“This is... Luo Po Valley?!” The rank eight Gu Immortal said in shock.

“That’s right, this secluded domain of heaven and earth is the ultimate sacred land for cultivating soul path. Hehe, it is also your final resting place!” Spectral Soul declared with the tone of a victor.

“Ah!” The rank eight Gu Immortal screamed, Spectral Soul’s immortal formation used the power of Luo Po Valley, it was akin to a rank nine Gu formation.

The rank eight Gu Immortal resisted for a while, before he could not take it anymore and died.

Spectral Soul looked at his feet, towards the corpse of the rank eight Gu Immortal, his hair was messy and his seven orifices were bleeding, but he was still filled with killing intent, he sneered: “Hmph, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, interesting. I, Spectral Soul, swear that I will create soul path in the future, I will let more people cultivate it. Even if I fail and die, there will be an endless number of soul path Gu Immortal experts emerging in the future. Hahahaha!”

The image vanished.

Fairy Zi Wei had a dark expression.

She looked at Spectral Soul’s main body, which was immobilized, she left after staring at him for a short while.

Even though she extracted Spectral Soul’s memories, they were useless. In fact, it was as if he was replying to her earlier words.

If it was the latter, it meant that Spectral Soul could still resist Heavenly Court’s soul searching method.

Even though he could not block the power of Soul Suppression Hall, he could selectively hand certain memories over.

“That way, it will be a long time before we can get any useful information from him.” Fairy Zi Wei sighed deeply in her mind.

Lang Ya blessed land, Luo Po Valley.

Fang Yuan was sitting deep in the valley.

He willed and activated Luo Po formation.

This formation came from Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, it was created by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable personally, the foundational Gu worms used for it were a vast number of white lotus giant silkworm Gu.

White lotus giant silkworm Gu was the food of cleanse soul Immortal Gu, it was also created by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

After Fang Yuan obtained the Gu recipe, he made Lang Ya Sect refine a huge number of white lotus giant silkworm Gu for him.

And now, he had cleanse soul Immortal Gu again, not only could he feed it with sufficient white lotus giant silkworm Gu, he could even use them as the foundation of many soul path Gu formations in Spectral Soul’s true inheritance.

Right now, Luo Po formation was activated, the originally unorganized Luo Po winds and bewilderment fog started to gather with the Gu formation’s activation.

Fang Yuan’s soul left his body as he endured the trial of wind and fog.

Before this, he had already expended a huge amount of guts Gu, his soul was quite bloated now.

A moment later, Luo Po formation stopped activating as Fang Yuan’s soul became thinned out from the tempering, he returned to sovereign immortal body with deep fatigue.

“With Luo Po formation, my cultivation efficiency in Luo Po Valley has increased by thirty percent.” Fang Yuan assessed.

This was not the first time he was using this formation.

Luo Po formation was specially used to cultivate soul path, but he could add other Gu formations in to modify it. It was a very inclusive Gu formation, that was its most useful trait.

For example, Qin Bai Sheng and the rest resisted the group from Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, the Gu formation they used during the battle was Luo Po formation.

However, their Luo Po formation was not for cultivation, it was for defense.

According to Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, when he was alive, he had killed a rank eight Gu Immortal from Heavenly Court with only rank seven cultivation level, back then, he also used Luo Po formation, but he added in many Gu formations that were offensive in nature.

The Luo Po formation that Fang Yuan was using now focused on refining his soul. It used rank six Immortal Gu Cleanse Soul, and a vast number of white lotus giant silkworm Gu, along with many supplementary Gu to assemble it.

“Alright, after this cultivation session, my soul has already reached million man soul level.”

In Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, soul foundation was classified into many levels.

From low to high, there was single man soul, ten man soul, hundred man soul... million man soul, ten million man soul, hundred million man soul...

Ten man soul meant that the soul foundation was the total of ten grown men’s souls.

A normal Gu Master with twenty years of soul path cultivation could reach thousand man soul if they worked hard. But using guts Gu, Fang Yuan could reach that instantly.

Before this cultivation session, Fang Yuan’s soul foundation was at three million man soul.

But after the tempering of Luo Po wind and bewilderment fog, his soul foundation stabilized at million man soul level.

First using guts Gu to strengthen the soul, before cultivating in Luo Po Valley to temper the soul like iron and removing impurities. Finally, he would sleep and rest the soul, getting rid of any agitation.

These three steps repeated would raise Fang Yuan’s soul foundation like a rocket.

Only a short time had passed, but he had already reached million man soul, the speed was too shocking!

When he reaches hundred million man soul, his soul would turn from phantom to solid. Back then in the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Spectral Soul’s main body was huge and majestic, Fang Yuan was very enticed to reach such a level.

With a stronger soul foundation, there was a greater benefit, it was the immortal killer move ghost official garment.

This move could conceal him from heaven’s will and other Gu Immortals’ deductions, the deeper his soul foundation, the stronger it became.

At this moment, Fang Yuan could feel vividly: the ghost official garment on his soul had thickened, he felt an increased sense of security.

“As my soul foundation grows, I would be able to control more year beasts, I can even control a second immemorial year beast!”

“However, although I can invest effort into increasing my soul foundation, those soul path killer moves are not worth investing into.”

There was only one reason, Spectral Soul had been captured by Heavenly Court already.

He would definitely get soul searched.

That meant that in the future, Heavenly Court would also gain Spectral Soul’s true inheritance. By then, it would be easy for them to deduce his killer moves.

After this cultivation session, Fang Yuan left Luo Po Valley.

Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley, these were the two sacred lands of soul cultivation, they were placed in Lang Ya blessed land. Firstly, it was easy to use there, secondly, secluded domains of heaven and earth required a lot of heaven and earth qi, Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture already had Reverse Flow River, the burden of adding these two was too huge.

Once he left Luo Po Valley, Fang Yuan saw a snowman girl.

“Snowman Xue Er greets Lord Fang Yuan.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1461: Weirdly Prosperous

The sovereign immortal aperture was filled with serenity and peace.

Because without changes in weather or day and night, this place was completely still.

Fang Yuan had rank seven cultivation level, the sovereign immortal aperture was only a blessed land, there were no weather phenomena in blessed lands. Only at the brink of becoming a grotto-heaven would such phenomena emerge.

Even without atmospheric changes, the sovereign immortal aperture was not a dead land, it was filled with life.

Mini Northern Plains was colder, especially towards the extreme north, there was nothing there. After annexing Han Dong's blessed land, there was a spirit snake resource point managed by the pink spirit snake land spirit. Other than that, he had the bone burial field with lots of bone immortal materials. And to the south, Fang Yuan was trying to create a blood red grassland with blood sickle grass and red axe flowers as the foundation, to let those pink flower rabbits, wolves, and foxes live in.

In Mini Central Continent, there was a blood zhi forest and mirror willow forest, they were grown here casually by Fang Yuan, he did not nurture them purposely, their scale was not big. There was also a jade light pit that had light path mortal Gu.

In Mini Western Desert, his focus was on the eerie fire dragon python pit, the sand gull beach, rotten black swamp, rotting swamp, black hound mound (belonged to Liu Yong blessed land, managed by the black hound land spirit). There was also a new mortal Gu House, Corpse City, which Fang Yuan had obtained from Western Desert's translocation desert. Most of the immortal materials inside were traded to Thousand Transformation's will, little was left.

In Mini Eastern Sea, it was no longer a shallow body of water, it had a trace of an ocean's capacity. Especially the two sea areas, dragon scale sea area and Wu Yi Hai's sea area, for the former, Fang Yuan had invested a lot of finances and energy into creating this large scale resource point, and for the latter, after annexing Wu Yi Hai's blessed land, the sea turtle was managing it for Fang Yuan, there were three ancient desolate beast horned divine tortoises, a field of ancient desolate plant silent corals, and six desolate beast white letter blue feather seagulls.

Other than the two sea areas, there was a blood lake, it was not too big, Fang Yuan had used it to repair blood asset Immortal Gu earlier, he had kept it for now, the water of the lake has collected a lot of desolate beast and Gu Immortal blood.

Below the blood lake, there were many shallow seas, arranged by Fang Yuan specially to raise the air bubble fish, literature carps, jade carps, blood jade carps and others, there was even an ancient desolate beast hidden room oyster, Fang Yuan had obtained it in Eastern Sea.

The secluded domain of heaven and earth, Reverse Flow River, was also placed here.

Mini Southern Border was the region with the most development among all of them.

There was Five Light Mountain, Immortal Succession Mountain, Become Dragon Mound, Heaven Sealing Mountain, and a dozen other nameless mountains, as well as coiling thread caves and the stalactite cave. In the forest and underground, a small number of rockmen were living here, the vegetation included musical trees, tea streams, qi death birds and others, creating an ecosystem with great vitality.

As for the miniature nine heavens, Mini Red Heaven had a large number of year beasts and that immemorial year monkey.

Fang Yuan had been paying attention to Mini Orange Heaven recently, there was the light shine fungi that made the scale of aurora lights expand rapidly, and more flowing light fruits were being nurtured within.

Mini Yellow Heaven was very empty, there was only a tiny gold fragment current.

Mini Green Heaven was completely empty, but Fang Yuan had placed dream realms in it previously.

Mini Azure Heaven had the pill azure incense, this was the food of change soul Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan had stored a batch in here last time. There was also a heavenly crystal storage pool, it was at the center of Mini Azure Heaven, but it was useless.

Mini Blue Heaven had the most development among the miniature nine heavens. There was a lot of cloud soil here, with lots of star path resources planted here, like arrow bamboo forest and the star fragment grass field, meteorite pit, and a huge floating star fragment island, it was Ye Lui Qun Xing’s blessed land, Fang Yuan had annexed it with the star core land spirit managing the place.

There was also a falling star hound infant living here. It was very lonely but it would clash with other desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts elsewhere, after keeping it here, Fang Yuan rarely took care of it.

In Mini Purple Heaven, there were groups of eagles. These eagles were desolate beasts and also ancient desolate beasts, Fang Yuan had sold Immortal Gu during the dream realm incident to purchase them. They had helped him to enslave the upper extreme heavenly eagle to survive the danger, they were extremely useful. Fang Yuan had wanted to sell them, but he could definitely not get Immortal Gu with them, it would be a huge loss. And since he took more than eighty eagle nests from Hei tribe’s headquarters, he could raise these eagles in them, even though it was not as amazing as the heavenly crystal eagle nest.

In the remaining two heavens, Mini White Heaven had an eagle hound group, three ancient remnant heavenly dogs, and the plantation field of multicolored overlord flowers. Mini Black Heaven had no light at all, it was a special environment, there were only a few ancient desolate plant walking meat trees there.

After collating all these assets, Fang Yuan was already on par with some rank eight Gu Immortals.

But for the size of the entire immortal aperture, these resources were too little.

The reason?

The sovereign immortal aperture was simply too large. In the 335000km2 of space, these resources only occupied a small amount of space.

And in terms of the entire sovereign immortal aperture’s development, assuming a hundred percent of the space could be used, Fang Yuan was merely slightly above three percent now.

Three percent development.

This was naturally not bad, it was a good thing.

The sovereign immortal aperture had unparalleled prospects, but from another perspective, Fang Yuan had no confidence in when he would reach a hundred percent development. This would be a huge task, he would need an extremely huge amount of time.

Throughout history, Gu Immortals had created an evaluation of immortal aperture development.

There were seven levels.

The first level was establishing mortal resources, to produce mortal Gu, mortal Gu materials, and ordinary beasts and plants.

These resources were in huge scales. Mortals could only raise five to six mortal Gu at a time. But Gu Immortals raised millions of mortal Gu at once. Fang Yuan even sold more than a hundred million year Gu earlier.

The second level was to create immortal level resources and produce immortal materials. When this level is accomplished, the Gu Immortal will be able to produce food for their Immortal Gu self-sufficiently.

The third level was to create an ecology to raise immortal beasts and plants.

The fourth level was to use excess immortal materials, beasts, and plants to trade and earn profits.

...

Looking at this, Fang Yuan was at the fourth level because he had a lot of business that were doing well to earn him lots of profits. Earlier in the year Gu business, Fang Yuan used his great strength to dominate the market in treasure yellow heaven, the three sellers were completely helpless against him.

“But from another perspective, I am still at the second level, because I have not reached self-sufficiency in feeding my Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan knew why.

He had simply too many Immortal Gu.

Rank eight: Attitude, Wisdom Sword, Years Flow Like Water.

Rank seven: Sword Eyebrows, Wave Sword, Flying Sword, Sword Escape, Year, After, Divination Tortoise Shell, Dragon Breath, Dragon Scale, Precaution, Big, Fight, Affection, Self Love, Perseverance, Reputation Restriction, Change Soul, Bloodline, Dragon Strength, Formation Flag, and others.

Rank six: Self Strength, Pulling Mountain, Pulling Water, Strength Qi, Spring Autumn Cicada, Landscape as Before, Man as Before, Day, Unravel Mystery, Vajra Thought, Dog Shit Luck, Qi Luck, Woman’s Heart, Blood Asset, Change Form, Star Eyes, Perceivable Dao, Yellow Sand, Cleanse Soul, Luck Inspection, Connect Luck, Time Luck, Star Thought, and others.

For the last four including Luck Inspection, Fang Yuan had owned them before, but after the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, due to Change Soul, Ying Wu Xie took them away. Fang Yuan used his special will to destroy a few, but Ying Wu Xie managed to preserve some of them in the end.

Furthermore, there were some wisdom path Immortal Gu that Purple Mountain True Monarch left him, and the time path Immortal Gu that made up a portion of Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, they would not be specified.

Just counting these, there were more than fifty!

A shocking number!!

Most Gu Immortals were still desperately trying to find an Immortal Gu.

In the Gu Immortal world, there were the most number of rank six Gu Immortals, and most of them had no Immortal Gu at all!

Among the rank seven and rank eight Gu Immortals, some had two or three Immortal Gu, while others had five to six.

But there was a rule — rank six Gu Immortals desire rank six Immortal Gu, rank seven Gu Immortals desire rank seven Immortal Gu, and rank eight Gu Immortals desire rank eight Immortal Gu, while rank nine venerables wanted rank nine Immortal Gu.

But Fang Yuan?

He had more than fifty Immortal Gu!!!

They encompassed rank six, rank seven, and rank eight.

And this was excluding Calamity Beckoning lent to Chu Du, wisdom Gu in Lang Ya blessed land, and dark limit Immortal Gu taken by Heavenly Court. There was also the formation spirit, it was created by an Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan’s situation was too special.

An otherworldly demon who had reborn, the hope of Red Lotus Demon Venerable, a former pawn of heaven’s will, and the current leader of Shadow Sect having countless true inheritances.

Even though the journey was dangerous and filled with despair, one had to say, immense risk brought about immense benefits.

Fang Yuan was weirdly prosperous now.

Because of countless fortuitous encounters, he had the economic foundation of level four development, but he had not fulfilled the requirement of level two.

Feeding Immortal Gu had always been a huge burden and problem to him.

“But now, after so much hard work, I have finally gotten some hope of resolving this problem.”

“Rank nine wisdom Gu is fed by the profligate Lang Ya land spirit, and I have already solved the problem of food for the three rank eight Immortal Gu.”

“Next, I will complete my basic development and solve the feeding problem of the rank six and seven Immortal Gu, to reach self-sufficiency.”

Looking at it, Fang Yuan still did not have enough immortal essence stones!

“Marriage connection with the snowmen?”

Fang Yuan pondered.

When Xue Er brought him the snow lotus essence, she also expressed the intention of a marriage connection.

These variant humans spoke outrightly and directly.

“If I work by myself to solve the food issue, it will take a long time. But if I use the snowmen, my progress will be rapid.”

“What I lack most now is time.”

“I am not against a marriage connection with the snowmen.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1462: Lang Ya Missions

On Dang Hun mountain, there were guts Gu everywhere.

Fang Yuan picked them along the way as he strengthened his soul.

His soul foundation started to increase, after a while, from one million man soul, it rose to five million man soul level.

Fang Yuan felt an extremely bloated feeling, like he was going to burst.

Fang Yuan knew he was at his limit, he left Dang Hun Mountain and came to Luo Po Valley.

After some cultivation, his soul was refined like tempered steel, it became purer and more condensed.

After this, his soul foundation stabilized at one million five hundred thousand man soul.

“After million man soul, each cultivation session raises it by five hundred thousand man soul?”

“Including the time needed to rest my soul, and the production of guts Gu, I need half a year to reach ten million man soul.”

Fang Yuan estimated and frowned.

This was too slow for him.

Ten years, after ten years, Heavenly Court would completely repair fate Immortal Gu. By then, Heavenly Court would have the absolute advantage, Fang Yuan and Shadow Sect would have no hope.

He needed half a year out of ten years to reach ten million man soul, there was also hundred million man soul and higher levels after that.

Fang Yuan was not satisfied with the speed.

“If I can increase the production of guts Gu, I could increase my cultivation speed even further.”

The production of guts Gu was limiting his soul foundation growth.

Dang Hun Mountain was undoubtedly his money tree, but it needed good quality souls to produce more guts Gu endlessly.

According to the agreement back then, a portion of these guts Gu belonged to Lang Ya Sect, Lang Ya land spirit had to sell them for profits, with a portion of the revenue going to Fang Yuan.

Right now, Fang Yuan was using a portion of the guts Gu to cultivate his soul path. It caused his revenue to fall sharply in this business.

But thankfully, the year Gu business earlier earned him a lot, Fang Yuan had a lot of funds left now.

Fang Yuan assessed it, it was not wise to negotiate with Lang Ya land spirit now to increase his portion of the guts Gu production. Because he needed Lang Ya Sect now, be it staying inside Lang Ya blessed land to develop or using them to refine Gu.

In the batch of Immortal Gu refinement earlier, the three Immortal Gu were extremely useful to Fang Yuan, they were now at the second batch of Gu refinement, focusing on mortal Gu like the white lotus giant silkworm Gu, and two Immortal Gu. One was Heavenly Secret, it was created by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, and was obtained by Old Man Yan Shi, he created an immortal killer move with it, known as exposing heavenly secret.

This move had a mystical effect, it could predict the contents of the following calamity or tribulation!

If Lang Ya Sect could refine heavenly secret Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan would be able to use exposing heavenly secret, it would help him in undergoing tribulations tremendously.

“However... placing a mission for Lang Ya Sect to refine Immortal Gu has been depleting my sect contribution points, I need to check this!”

Thus, after the soul cultivation ended, Fang Yuan used his information path mortal Gu to check Lang Ya Sect’s missions.

Undoubtedly, the current Lang Ya land spirit was far more suited for managing Lang Ya Sect than the previous land spirit.

Under his management, the entire sect was excavating its potential fully, they were bursting with life.

At this moment, Lang Ya Sect had many missions, most of them were the Gu refinement missions that Fang Yuan handed out. Below that, the one of great importance was the exploration of Tai Qiu.

Ever since Lang Ya Sect created the teleportation formation, it had been exploring Tai Qiu and excavating the natural resources within.

This was the main development route that Lang Ya Sect was taking.

But Tai Qiu was a dangerous place, ordinary Gu Immortals did not want to enter it, even though there were abundant resources, fierce beasts and dangerous plants grew inside. And the problem was, Lang Ya Sect’s Gu Immortals were skilled at refinement but weak at fighting.

Even though they had been raising their strength recently, there were few who could fight.

Thus, when they encountered overly strong beasts or plants, these hairy man Gu Immortals would be in trouble. The exploration of Tai Qiu was unsuccessful.

Seeing these missions, countless thoughts moved about in Fang Yuan’s mind rapidly.

In a few breaths of time, he chose over a dozen missions with the highest returns.

At the next moment, he accepted all of these missions.

“First supreme elder.” Fang Yuan communicated with Lang Ya land spirit using the information path mortal Gu.

Lang Ya land spirit learned of Fang Yuan’s actions as he said in joy: “Fang Yuan, with your strength, these missions will be extremely easy!”

But Fang Yuan shook his head: “This is what I wanted to discuss with you. I want to send my subordinates to deal with these missions for me. This does not go against Lang Ya Sect’s rules, right?”

Lang Ya land spirit was slightly dazed, he did not think of this when he created the sect rules.

Speaking of which, this was not a loophole. Why couldn’t the Gu Immortal who accepted the mission be allowed to get help?

Lang Ya land spirit replied to Fang Yuan: “Then you need to ensure that these subordinates will not harm Lang Ya Sect!”

Fang Yuan smiled: “Of course.”

After communicating with Lang Ya land spirit, Fang Yuan started to dispatch the members of Shadow Sect.

Hei Lou Lan, Ying Wu Xie, Fairy Miao Yin, and Lady White Rabbit, it was a waste to let them idle around. Now, they could be fully utilized.

Eventually, even Bai Ning Bing joined in.

Because from her perspective, she allied with Fang Yuan to regain her male body, she needed to refine immortal level yin yang rotation Gu.

But when she realized that Fang Yuan was relying on Lang Ya Sect to refine Gu, she turned her attention to Lang Ya Sect.

Regretfully, Lang Ya Sect did not trust the outsider Bai Ning Bing. Fang Yuan also secretly disrupted their communication, causing Bai Ning Bing to be forced to rely on him.

She was Fang Yuan’s ally, he had no rights to order her, but why would Fang Yuan waste her battle strength?

Under Fang Yuan’s special negotiation, Bai Ning Bing believed Fang Yuan: As long as she killed more beasts and plants, she would obtain the sect contribution points that Fang Yuan was getting for them, he would use them to place a sect mission to refine yin yang rotation Immortal Gu.

Several days later.

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Northern Plains.

Large pieces of round snowflakes were descending from the sky.

This special snowflake was pure white with the size of an adult’s palm.

This was rank six immortal material dancing snow, it was formed naturally, and would not melt as long as the temperature was kept at a certain level. It would always stay afloat, even if it landed to the ground, it would fly upwards instead.

Fang Yuan inspected and saw no problems, he thought: “These days, I finally finished arranging the snowmen’s betrothal gift, this project has been completed.”

The snowmen wanted to have a marriage connection with Fang Yuan, Xue Er would not come empty-handed of course.

She brought a gift.

The main portion was the snow lotus essence. This was a specialty immortal material of the snowmen, it was rare in treasure yellow heaven, Fang Yuan obtained quite a bit of it as he stored it in Mini Northern Plains.

The second highest quantity was the dancing snow. It was coincidentally a rank six wisdom path Immortal Gu’s food, Fang Yuan could feed it four to five times with this batch.

The difficulty of feeding rank six Immortal Gu was very different from feeding rank eight Immortal Gu.

This was a small surprise, Fang Yuan did not need to waste his effort going to treasure yellow heaven to purchase dancing snow.

Other than that, there were some resources that were not so useful. Fang Yuan sold some and kept some, he perfectly utilized them.

“This is too little, if I can get more resources, my immortal aperture’s development will be even faster.”

“Since the snowmen want a marriage connection with me, just these gifts are insufficient.”

Fang Yuan sneered inside.

He accepted all of the gifts but did not respond directly to the snowmen’s request for a marriage connection.

When the guts Gu accumulated to a certain scale, Fang Yuan started his soul path cultivation again.

Day after day, he immersed himself in cultivation. His soul foundation was growing at a rapid rate, other than soul path, he even used the light of wisdom to modify killer moves.

He had a great number of killer moves, they involved almost all paths. He needed to modify the useful killer moves from within them so that he could use them with his available Immortal Gu. This would greatly increase his methods and battle strength!

Fang Yuan was deep in cultivation, while Shadow Sect’s members were exploring Tai Qiu and fighting. Sixth Hair and Lang Ya land spirit were refining Immortal Gu for Fang Yuan, almost everyone was busy with their goals, but Xue Er became the most anxious one now.

This beauty of the snowman tribe had an important mission from the snowmen, but Fang Yuan took the gifts without even seeing her. She was left hanging here without any attention given.

Xue Er had asked to meet Fang Yuan several times, but she was only a rank six Gu Immortal while Fang Yuan had rank eight battle strength, the two of them were too different in strength, and because he was in Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan rejected her each time.

This way, Xue Er could not meet him, she felt extremely dispirited, the worry and anger on her face became deeper each day.

On this day, the snowmen sent her a letter to rush her again, but Xue Er had hope now.

Because the snowman tribe saw that Xue Er was making no progress, they discussed among themselves.

They came to a consensus: Since Fang Yuan accepted the gifts, he wanted the marriage connection. But why did he not meet Xue Er, it was because the gifts were not enough for his high status.

Thus, the snowmen gathered some more gifts and sent it along with the letter to Xue Er.

“What is this?”

“I am the pride of the snowmen, my beauty is renowned. This time, I requested for a marriage connection and even brought sufficient gifts. But it was not enough to meet him even once!”

With heavy emotions, Xue Er requested to meet Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan finally met her.

But what he said to her was something out of her expectations.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1463: Testing Xue Er

Fang Yuan looked down towards Xue Er.

She was young and beautiful, she was tall and vibrant, she had blue eyes and hair, she had the icy trait of her variant human race.

Her tender skin and plump chest would make countless men pay attention towards her.

She was undoubtedly the number one beauty of the snowman tribe.

But Fang Yuan was unmoved by her beauty. Not just that, he even found trouble with her: “This is the sincerity of the snowmen?”

Xue Er could not understand what Fang Yuan meant, she quickly said: “Lord Fang Yuan, please do not misunderstand.”

“Such a small gift and you want to have a marriage connection with me? Your tribe is dreaming if they think it is so easy to gain help equivalent to that of a rank eight.” Fang Yuan sneered.

Xue Er was dazed.

Fang Yuan spoke so plainly she could not accept it.

She also felt some shame and anger in her heart.

She was the cream of her generation, the publicly recognized number one beauty, she was bringing gifts to request for a marriage connection, she was lowering her head and status.

To think that Fang Yuan was so prideful and looked down on her, he was also extremely greedy, thinking that the snowmen gift was insincere.

How could it be little?

The gift was very precious, the snowman tribe had picked all of it from their inventory specially for Fang Yuan.

Originally, Xue Er had a good impression of Fang Yuan. After all, he had incredible talent and had rank eight battle strength, it was an achievement that not many could attain. But now, her impression of him became rock bottom.

With her temper, she would have left long ago. But now, it was not about her alone, she was tasked by her tribe for this important mission.

Xue Er breathed in deeply, asking: “Lord Fang Yuan, you have already taken two sets of gifts, I am sure you agree to our marriage connection. If you are unhappy with the gifts, you can give us your requests. I will bring them back for our elders to discuss.”

Fang Yuan had prepared the list long ago, an information path mortal Gu flew out of him and went to Xue Er.

“This?!” Xue Er took a look and her eyes popped out.

Fang Yuan’s greed was too shocking.

But even when she was shocked, she was very beautiful, her eyes were wide open, even though she lost a portion of her coolness, she became quite cute.

“Not just this list.” Fang Yuan added.

“You have other requests?” Xue Er had an unsightly expression as she held down her anger.

But Fang Yuan was confident and unabashed. He spoke matter of factly: “If your tribe can meet my requirements, that would be enough. But you yourself have not expressed enough sincerity.”

“My sincerity?”

Fang Yuan raised his head as he smiled: “Not just anyone can become my wife, Fang Yuan’s wife. Even though the snowmen recommended you, your qualifications will depend on my test.”

“Test?” Xue Er gritted her teeth: “Please explain to me, Lord Fang Yuan.”

Fang Yuan said: “Go to Tai Qiu and collect souls for me. When you leave, someone will arrange it for you.”

Xue Er felt anguished, how could a genius like her be treated in such a cold manner?

But due to the mission from her sect, she had to nod and agree.

Seeing Xue Er leave, Fang Yuan pondered deeply.

With this arrangement, he could make use of Xue Er’s battle strength, there would be another person helping him cultivate faster.

But that was not important.

He was actually trying to probe them.

Accepting the second gift while expressing his displeasure and wanting to test Xue Er, he showed his pride fully, this was to test the bottom line of the snowmen.

Since they wanted a marriage connection, how much determination did they have?

Or rather, the higher their determination, the more benefits Fang Yuan could squeeze out from them.

Fang Yuan was not anxious.

A marriage connection could not be decided in such a short time. Both sides were not familiar with each other yet, even though Fang Yuan was probing them, the snowmen were also probing Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan was sure that there were benefits to be gained here!

The marriage connection was not the main thing.

Fang Yuan quickly set it aside and placed his attention on his cultivation.

Soul cultivation was one aspect, managing his immortal aperture was another, other than that, Fang Yuan also used the light of wisdom to modify his killer moves.

Fang Yuan’s strongest method was undoubtedly immortal killer move reverse flow protection seal, but he was not modifying that now.

Even though this move was not safe against Heavenly Court now, Fang Yuan was in no immediate danger. Not only was he in Northern Plains, he was also inside Lang Ya blessed land, he had the concealment of ghost soldier garment, Heavenly Court could not find him in the meantime.

And there was another reason, modifying reverse flow protection seal would take too much time, it was too slow.

Fang Yuan thought about it and decided to modify Purple Mountain True Monarch’s wisdom path killer moves.

Why did he choose those?

Firstly, these killer moves were very powerful and exceptional. Secondly, Fang Yuan had grandmaster wisdom path attainment level, he was qualified to modify them. Finally, Fang Yuan had a batch of wisdom path Immortal Gu with him, they were left behind by Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Purple blood river formation, purple thought light shield, ignited thought flying rock, single thought flower blossom, purple thought perception starlight, directional confusion fog, thought body defense, single thought myriad flow elimination, and others, when Purple Mountain True Monarch was not in his peak condition, he used these methods to face Duke Long.

Who was Duke Long?

He was the master of Red Lotus, he had a huge background and unparalleled battle strength, he was at the peak of rank eight!

When Fang Yuan was modifying his killer moves, Ying Wu Xie approached Xue Er.

“You are Xue Er?” Ying Wu Xie asked.

Xue Er saw that Ying Wu Xie was smaller in stature than her, resembling a young girl. He had pale snow-like skin,he was wearing a flowery green dress, there were two pearl earrings hanging on his ears, as if water was inside the pearls, there were green ripples inside when they shook.

Ying Wu Xie was in Fairy Cui Bo’s body, he was very enchanting. If not so, Thousand Transformations Ancestor would not have made her his third concubine and adored her deeply.

“Who is this beautiful immortal? What relationship does she have with Fang Yuan? This is not in our tribe’s information, and she is a rank seven Gu Immortal.” Xue Er had lots of suspicions, but she smiled: “I am Xue Er, beautiful sister, may I know what your name is?”

Ying Wu Xie frowned.

He was initially very excited about using Fairy Cui Bo’s body. But after a while, he felt like it was getting very uncomfortable.

Not long ago, he requested to Fang Yuan to change this body, even if he changed to a rank six body, it was fine as long as he could cultivate soul path.

“Don’t call me sister, you can call me brother Wu Xie.” Ying Wu Xie waved his hand: “Let’s go, I will bring you to Tai Qiu and meet up with them. This is sect leader’s test to you, we will see who obtains higher quality souls in the same period of time.”

“Yes.” Xue Er quickly answered, but she had many questions in her.

She walked at the back as she stared at Ying Wu Xie, thinking: “This female immortal is so weird, she wants me to call her brother?”

The two left Lang Ya blessed land and reached Tai Qiu using the teleportation Gu formation.

Once they entered Tai Qiu, Xue Er felt nervous, after all, this was a famous place in Northern Plains for its danger level.

At the same time, she felt uneasy towards the test, she only had rank six cultivation level and her investigative methods were her forte.

“Come with me, quick quick quick!”

“Time is very precious, we need to treasure every moment and use it to cultivate.”

“We need to continue working hard, that is the true meaning of life.”

Ying Wu Xie continued to nag at Xue Er, he was very determined. This was the effect of immortal killer move soaring fighting spirit.

Xue Er felt that Ying Wu Xie was really weird, she was so beautiful, but she acted like a rash lad, it was unimaginable.

“But are we too careless by flying like this?” Xue Er was worried, this was Tai Qiu, fierce beasts roamed everywhere, danger was everywhere. Flying around openly like this made them open targets.

While flying, Xue Er felt very nervous, she was afraid of a fierce beast assaulting her out of nowhere.

But after flying for a while, her worry did not become real.

In fact, her worry was fading, she felt deeply shocked internally.

“The area around the teleportation formation has been cleared by Lang Ya Sect and is in their control. They have actually explored Tai Qiu to this extent!”

“It seems that Lang Ya Sect’s strength surpasses my tribe’s estimations.” Xue Er immediately sent this information back to the snowmen.

“Oh? There are a group of dragon-elephants.” Suddenly, Xue Er said.

Ying Wu Xie who was traveling with her looked with surprise, he thought that this woman had some of her own worth.

Ying Wu Xie’s methods only found those dragon-elephants a few breaths of time after Xue Er.

Shadow Sect’s investigative methods were naturally superior to Xue Er’s, but in Ying Wu Xie’s current body, those methods were restricted.

“These dragon-elephants are needed by sect leader, let’s capture them.” Ying Wu Xie changed his flying direction.

Xue Er was not surprised, because she had looked at Fang Yuan’s list, there were dragon-elephants listed on it.

This group of dragon-elephants was quite ordinary, there were only two or three desolate level dragon-elephants.

Ying Wu Xie quickly landed as he used his soul path immortal killer move.

His soul howl reverberated among the dragon-elephant group as they all fainted and fell unconscious.

“An impressive technique.” Xue Er was slightly shocked, but a new question arose within: “She has water path aura, why is she using a soul path method?”

Ying Wu Xie was most skilled in lead soul into dream, but the Gu worms to construct this move were kept by Fang Yuan.

Only a few soul path Immortal Gu were left for Ying Wu Xie. Thus, his main methods were soul path.

Ying Wu Xie kept these dragon-elephants in his immortal aperture as he continued on the journey with Xue Er.

A moment later, they met with Hei Lou Lan.

“Another great beauty!” Xue Er first frowned before her brows relaxed.

She observed secretly: “Compared to Wu Xie, this person only has rank six cultivation level, she is the same as me.”

Xue Er let out a sigh of relief inside.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1464: No Wonder Fang Yuan Thinks Little of Me

Xue Er was a talented descendant of the snowman tribe, she was a genius, but the snowman tribe undoubtedly had little resources.

Xue Er was able to become rank six at such an age, it was quite incredible. But after meeting with Ying Wu Xie, she could not match this rank seven, although she showed nothing on the surface, she felt great pressure in her heart.

Now that she saw a rank six immortal, her heavy heart became slightly lighter.

“Hi, you can call me Xue Er.” Xue Er first introduced herself, she felt that she should be friendly to the people under Fang Yuan, to create a good relationship with them.

“Hello, you can call me Lou Lan.” Hei Lou Lan smiled, her gaze flickered as she assessed Xue Er subtly.

She thought: “Snowman Gu Immortal? Why did she approach us? Fang Yuan... what is he thinking?”

The snowmen wanted a marriage connection with Fang Yuan, he did not inform anyone other than Ying Wu Xie. Thus, Hei Lou Lan only knew that Fang Yuan wanted the Shadow Sect immortals to take Xue Er along and work together in the meantime to explore Tai Qiu.

“Alright, now that you’ve done the introductions, let’s leave first.” Ying Wu Xie said.

He took out an information path Gu worm and used his method to learn about Fairy Miao Yin’s and Lady White Rabbit’s location.

“Hei Lou Lan, go ahead with your work, I will bring Xue Er to the others.”

Seeing the two of them leave, Hei Lou Lan had a thought.

Her instincts told her that Xue Er joined them very suddenly and mysteriously, her goal was not simple.

Hei Lou Lan was an ambitious person, even though she was under the alliance agreement and lost her freedom, she had been wanting to break free of Fang Yuan’s control all along.

Who would not want freedom?

“Wait, I’ll go with you. I am in charge of finding the sharp tusk boars, but I can’t find any. I will ask Miao Yin to help me find them.” Hei Lou Lan said as she flew towards them.

Xue Er was very happy, she wanted to get closer to Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan also wanted to probe information from her, she acted very warmly and kindly.

Thus, with Ying Wu Xie at the lead, Xue Er and Hei Lou Lan traveled together behind him.

“Elder sister Lou Lan, I am very happy to meet you.” Not long later, Xue Er addressed Hei Lou Lan as elder sister, placing herself at a lower status.

“This dumb woman...” Hei Lou Lan snorted in her heart.

She was once the victor of the imperial court contest, she had a deep hatred and lived with difficulty under her father’s shadow, she was skilled at scheming. Compared to her, Xue Er lived peacefully in the snowman tribe, due to her past, she was quite innocent in nature.

Hei Lou Lan soon found that Xue Er wanted to know about the Shadow Sect immortals desperately.

She made use of Xue Er’s intention, she exposed some useful information while probing her.

Xue Er was guarded of course, but she could not match Hei Lou Lan’s scheming, just as she was about to expose herself, Ying Wu Xie interjected: “Isn’t that a sharp tusk boar? Hei Lou Lan, you are very lucky, you will not need to owe Miao Yin a favor now.”

Following Ying Wu Xie’s direction, Xue Er indeed saw an ancient desolate beast.

It was huge and had bulky muscles, it was lying on the ground as it slept, it had a powerful aura.

Xue Er’s heart jumped, with her battle strength, she was not the sharp tusk boar’s match.

Hei Lou Lan was interrupted, she felt angry but she could not retort to Ying Wu Xie, she snorted and flew towards the sharp tusk boar.

“Sister Lou Lan, be careful.” Xue Er said in concern, she praised in her heart, this sister Lou Lan that she had just met was really courageous. But with her rank six cultivation level, how could she deal with the sharp tusk boar? She had to rely on this Fairy Cui Bo after all.

But the following scene made Xue Er completely stunned.

Hei Lou Lan was even fiercer than the sharp tusk boar, when she fought, her aura changed instantly, she was blazing in flames, her heaven blazing flames were terrifyingly powerful.

“Rank six Immortal Gu, rank seven Immortal Gu... so many Immortal Gu!” Xue Er watched the battle and her eyelids twitched, she saw how rich Hei Lou Lan was.

Hei Lou Lan had obtained Blazing Heaven Demoness’ inheritance and Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan did not take them since he had enough Immortal Gu, leaving them for Hei Lou Lan would allow her to fight effectively and obtain more souls.

Under Hei Lou Lan’s terrifying attacks, the sharp tusk boar was first furious before going into a frenzy and escaping after losing.

Xue Er was very shocked.

Hei Lou Lan exploded with battle strength that was on par with rank seven experts, it was out of Xue Er’s expectations.

“Sister Lou Lan is so strong! Her immortal killer moves are so powerful and overwhelming.”

“But she clearly has strength path aura, why is she using fire path methods?”

Mixed in with her shock was suspicion.

Xue Er did not understand!

Fairy Cui Bo had water path aura, but she used soul path methods. And now this Hei Lou Lan was a strength path Gu Immortal but used fire path instead!

“Alright, let’s continue.” A moment later, Hei Lou Lan collected the sharp tusk boar corpse, including its ancient desolate soul as well.

“Sister Lou Lan, you are amazing!” Xue Er looked at Hei Lou Lan with an incredulous gaze.

Hei Lou Lan shook her head: “This is nothing.”

“No, no, you are really amazing. You have rank six Gu Immortal cultivation level but rank seven battle strength. This is not achievable by normal Gu Immortals.” Xue Er waved her hands.

Hei Lou Lan smiled bitterly: “This is really nothing, in Shadow Sect, I am very ordinary.”

Xue Er heard Hei Lou Lan’s reply and her heart jumped.

Hei Lou Lan: “When you see them, you will understand. Let’s go.”

Hei Lou Lan had completed her mission, but she did not return directly, she decided to find the other Shadow Sect Gu Immortals with Xue Er.

A while later, they successfully met up with Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit.

Lady White Rabbit had rank six cultivation level normally, she did not have Hei Lou Lan’s battle strength, it was dangerous for her to explore Tai Qiu alone.

Thus, Fang Yuan let her and Fairy Miao Yin work together.

Of course, when she became Black Tigress, her cultivation level and battle strength would rise to rank seven. However, her Black Tigress state was unstable and could not last long, it had its drawbacks.

“Hello Xue Er.” Fairy Miao Yin smiled kindly.

“You are a snowman Gu Immortal? This is the first time I am... seeing one.” Lady White Rabbit said faintly.

“What situation is this?” Xue Er was suspicious and depressed.

Fairy Miao Yin was a publicly recognized fairy in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world. She had a beautiful body and alluring face, she wore a pinkish-red dress and looked extremely enchanting.

As for Lady White Rabbit, she had pale white skin and huge innocent eyes, she was completely pure. Her aura was different from Fairy Miao Yin, even at first glance, Xue Er felt that she was very cute, she had a feeling of adoration and trust towards her.

Xue Er analyzed closely.

She found that Fairy Miao Yin had rank seven cultivation level while Lady White Rabbit had rank six, similar to her.

But after the matter of Hei Lou Lan, Xue Er no longer dared to look at Lady White Rabbit as an ordinary rank six Gu Immortal.

The Gu Immortals conversed for a while, everyone was very kind and warm to Xue Er, but they were naturally curious about her.

Xue Er was very tight-lipped.

It was not that she became scheming, but because there were many people who were all beauties, Xue Er felt incredibly pressured.

Why was she here?

To have a marriage connection with Fang Yuan.

Now, she had to proclaim herself as Fang Yuan’s future wife in front of so many people, wasn’t that just provoking them? Wasn’t she too shameless?

At the same time, a question pressed down on Xue Er like a mountain.

“What relationship do these female immortals have with Fang Yuan?”

Actually, Fang Yuan had a clear and simple relationship with them.

But Xue Er was an outsider, she could not help but assume wrong things the first time she met them.

This was not strange.

It was normal mentality.

“Alright, you have already met us Shadow Sect Gu Immortals. Other than us, there is one final person, a special one.” Ying Wu Xie said.

“Special?” Xue Er’s heart tensed.

She wanted to ask: “Special as in the relationship they have with Fang Yuan? Are they a male or a female?”

But Xue Er did not ask directly, as Ying Wu Xie continued to speak.

“This person is Bai Ning Bing, she is not a member of Shadow Sect, but she is our ally, we have fought together, even though she only has rank six cultivation level... among us, she has the highest battle strength.”

Ying Wu Xie hesitated a little at the final sentence.

But the other Gu Immortals said nothing about it.

Hei Lou Lan’s battle strength was weaker than Bai Ning Bing. After all, Great Strength True Martial Physique was incompatible with a fire path inheritance.

Fairy Miao Yin’s battle strength was about the same as Hei Lou Lan.

Lady White Rabbit could be disregarded, as for after becoming Black Tigress, she would be vicious but lacking in methods.

Originally, Ying Wu Xie had the highest battle strength, but his reliance was on lead soul into dream, whose Immortal Gu have been taken by Fang Yuan.

Thus, Bai Ning Bing, who inherited Bai Xiang’s true inheritance and had the Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique, was the strongest among them.

“Even stronger than sister Lou Lan?” Xue Er could not believe it.

Hei Lou Lan said: “I merely have mid tier battle strength among us.”

Xue Er opened her eyes in shock, thinking: “My heavens, why are there a bunch of monsters here? Rank six cultivation level but having the highest battle strength, who exactly is this person? How high is their battle talent?”

“Now, let us bring you there. I told you these things in advance so you can take note, she has a different relationship with us.” Ying Wu Xie continued to lead the way.

Soon, they arrived at Bai Ning Bing’s location.

Boom boom boom!

Intense explosions resounded in the immortals’ ears like thunder.

Roar—!

Next, the immortals heard a loud and pitiful sound that resembled the cry of a dying beast.

“This, this is!” When the immortals arrived, Xue Er was shocked to see that Bai Ning Bing was alone in the battlefield, around her was a ring of ancient desolate beasts.

“All of you came at a right time, I found a good place.” Bai Ning Bing stopped the killer move Bai Xiang as she went towards the immortals.

Xue Er was greatly shocked.

“So beautiful!”

Bai Ning Bing’s beauty and aura was simply breathtaking.

Even the genius Xue Er was shaken, she thought: “There is such a beautiful person that exists?”

If she knew that Bai Ning Bing was a male turned into a female, who knew how she would feel.

Xue Er thought: “Why is Fang Yuan surrounded by so many beauties? And they are such talented people! Now wonder he thinks little of me.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1465: Explosive Growth in Battle Strength

Lang Ya blessed land, Cloud Cover Continent.

Fang Yuan was alone, in a huge field of cloud soil.

Taking in a deep breath, he calmed his mind and started to use his immortal killer move.

“Ignited thought flying rock.” Fang Yuan called in his mind.

His eyes flickered with crystal purple light, thoughts clashed in his mind as small rocks resembling charcoal appeared around his body.

These rocks seemed to be burning in flames, but they had no heat.

“Go.” Fang Yuan willed as the rocks floating around his body shot out.

The rocks tore through the sky, but there was silence during the attack.

At the same time, these rocks expanded and became larger, turning from thumb size to basin size in a moment.

Next, they expanded to the size of horse carriages.

The rocks became giant rocks, the surface was blazing with red flames.

The blazing rocks numbered from hundreds to thousands, at once, the entire sky was dyed red.

Next, the blazing rocks landed on the cloud soil and created a field of flames that had neither heat nor made a sound.

These were not real blazing rocks, they were formed from thoughts in actuality.

This was Purple Mountain True Monarch’s main attacking method, ignited thought flying rock, it could burn the target’s thoughts.

There was a consecutive move with it, called single thought flower blossom.

After the blazing rocks exploded, Fang Yuan pointed with the index finger of his right hand.

Instantly, the flames extinguished as flowers bloomed in the pits created, countless flowers were fighting to emerge and blossom.

The flowers were vibrant and colorful, the surrounding area was dyed by a multicolored field of rainbow flowers.

“It is a pity my target is not a Gu Immortal, but this cloud soil without thoughts, these flowers are useless and exist only as decorations.” Fang Yuan willed as the flowers vanished instantly.

Fang Yuan’s body shook.

Immortal killer move — Single Thought Endless Clones!

Instantly, he was surrounded by countless figures.

Initially, there were only a few dozen purple silhouettes, but after a few breaths’ time, they had grown to the number of several hundred thousand!

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan’s true body was concealed within them, he could not be found without a powerful investigative killer move.

This move was very similar to Fang Yuan’s own original tactic.

That was to use myriad self and familiar face to act as one of the strength path phantoms, concealing himself to become indiscernible.

Purple Mountain True Monarch’s move was superior in that it was just one move, but had the effect of Fang Yuan’s two moves, myriad self and familiar face. Therefore, it expended less immortal essence.

There was another advantage, the speed of the purple silhouettes grew at a faster rate than the strength path phantoms.

But the disadvantage was that these purple silhouettes did not have offensive power, they were purely for concealment. Meanwhile, the strength path phantoms had offensive power themselves.

Fang Yuan stopped using single thought endless clones as he stretched out both palms, pushing out a wave of fog.

This was immortal killer move directional confusion fog, it could make Gu Immortals lose their sense of direction.

Next, Fang Yuan used thought body defense, single thought myriad flow elimination, and others, he got familiar with them and used them successfully.

He placed his focus towards the end.

Immortal killer move — Purple Thought Perception Starlight!

This move was the most complex, but it had a powerful and incredible effect.

It could allow the user to learn about the profundities of the enemy’s killer move with every hit, and continuously gain information about them.

Once they collect enough information, Fang Yuan would be able to use wisdom path methods to deal with the enemy’s killer move during the battle itself.

Next, the immortal killer move brilliant will dissolution would be used to unravel the enemy’s killer move and attain victory.

Fang Yuan tried to use it.

Purple thought perception starlight was indeed filled with many steps, Fang Yuan only succeeded after three tries.

During this process, he suffered injuries.

But with Man as Before, Fang Yuan was not afraid of such injuries.

“After these days of practising, I have already grasped most of Purple Mountain True Monarch’s methods.” Fang Yuan thought.

At this time, half a month had already passed since Xue Er approached him.

During these days, Fang Yuan mainly cultivated soul path to increase his soul foundation. Right now, he had ten million man soul already.

The immortal aperture’s development was progressing smoothly and steadily.

Other than this, he was practising killer moves.

Killer moves needed practise, because each activation carried a risk. If the activation failed, one would be causing harm to themselves.

Fang Yuan had countless inheritances, and had a vast number of killer moves.

However, the foundation of killer moves were Immortal Gu. Fang Yuan decided to first train Purple Mountain True Monarch’s wisdom path killer moves.

Purple Mountain True Monarch was a first generation split soul Purple, his methods could contest Duke Long, they were naturally very powerful.

Furthermore, before his death, he left most of his wisdom path Immortal Gu to Fang Yuan.

Thus, Fang Yuan had the foundation to use Purple Mountain True Monarch’s immortal killer moves.

Of course, he did not have all of Purple Mountain True Monarch’s Immortal Gu, there were quite some missing. But it was not a problem for Fang Yuan, with his grandmaster wisdom path attainment level, and the most important light of wisdom to rely on, he could rapidly modify killer moves.

Right now, the wisdom path killer moves that he was using were modified to some extent.

After this session, Fang Yuan went to wisdom Gu.

He sat beside wisdom Gu and bathed in the light of wisdom, thinking and concluding his gains from this training session.

Every time after practise, he would think about the experience and use his gains to modify the killer moves even further.

The creation of many killer moves relied on the Gu Immortals’ own experiences, habits, and personality.

These killer moves were other people’s killer moves, they were not as fitting to Fang Yuan as his self created myriad self and strength path giant hand. Thus, Fang Yuan had to continue modifying them.

A moment later, Fang Yuan finished his thinking session, there was nothing he could do to modify Purple Mountain True Monarch’s immortal killer moves anymore.

“After these days of practicing and modifying, I have finally reached the limit. Only when my wisdom path attainment reaches a qualitative change can I continue to modify these moves.”

After understanding this, Fang Yuan did not force it anymore.

His deductions today were not focusing on this, he was trying to complete immortal killer move eat strength.

Originally, Fang Yuan had Immortal Gu Eat Strength, he could expend immortal essence to activate the Immortal Gu and increase his strength path dao marks. It was a pity that such a useful Immortal Gu was destroyed.

But it was not a problem, all of the different paths led to the same origin. Fang Yuan had so many Immortal Gu and the light of wisdom to help him, he could rapidly deduce immortal killer move eat strength.

Such an immortal killer move could totally replace the use of eat strength

Immortal Gu.

“My deductions succeeded!” A few minutes later, Fang Yuan left wisdom Gu with a feeling of satisfaction.

He started deducing immortal killer move eat strength six days ago, he had finally succeeded.

This rank six immortal killer move used snack Immortal Gu as the core, with other strength path Immortal Gu as the supplementary Gu, a Gu Immortal could expend strength path immortal materials to help them increase their strength path dao marks.

The result of one cultivation session was better than rank six Immortal Gu Eat Strength. But the expended immortal essence was higher too, because too many Gu worms were involved, it was not as convenient as using eat strength Immortal Gu alone.

In conclusion, there were advantages and disadvantages.

For the following days, other than practising Purple Mountain True Monarch’s wisdom path killer moves, Fang Yuan used eat strength to increase his strength path dao marks.

He had the most number of transformation path dao marks now, about fifty thousand. After that were ice and snow path, luck path, qi path, and sound path, they all had over ten thousand dao marks.

He had few strength path dao marks, he did not undergo any strength path related tribulations, and the immortal apertures that he annexed were not from strength path either.

This time, he focused on fixing this problem.

Fang Yuan had considered it deeply before choosing strength path.

His strongest methods now were reverse flow protection seal and myriad dragon. The former was defense while the latter was offense. Both were related to strength path, raising strength path dao marks would raise the upper limit of his battle strength very evidently.

As for the wisdom path killer moves from Purple Mountain True Monarch, they were meant to increase Fang Yuan’s variety of methods, what truly decided his upper limit of strength was reverse flow protection seal.

Fang Yuan trained with hard work and used his time to the limit, every second of his time was spent purposefully.

This safe environment was really rare.

Since rebirth, this was the first time Fang Yuan had such a prime opportunity to raise his strength and deepen his foundation.

Immortal aperture development, practising killer moves, cultivating soul path, almost every day, Fang Yuan progressed further.

His speed of improvement was unheard of, even Lang Ya land spirit was secretly shocked.

This was what Heavenly Court had predicted: After getting Shadow Sect’s inheritance, Fang Yuan’s foundation was unfathomably deep, now that he could make use of it, his strength would grow explosively!

Ever since Xue Er joined up with the Shadow Sect immortals, she had acted very obediently and diligently. Even though her battle strength was lacking, she was skilled in the investigative aspect, she worked with the Shadow Sect immortals and hunted many souls for Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was cold towards the marriage connection, causing some conflict in the snowman tribe. Xue Er’s grandmother, Bing Yuan, proposed to send Fang Yuan another gift to express their goodwill. But some of the snowman Gu Immortals led by Bing Feng objected to it. They felt that the price of a marriage connection with Fang Yuan was too big, they would rather endure the suppression of the rockmen.

Because of Shadow Sect’s members, Lang Ya Sect’s development in exploring Tai Qiu became quicker, Lang Ya land spirit was extremely happy, he became very pleased with Fang Yuan.

On this day, Fang Yuan was sitting with his eyes closed, his consciousness working on developing his immortal aperture, when he suddenly received a request for help.

At the same time as when he opened his eyes, Lang Ya land spirit also teleported towards Fang Yuan.

“Elder Fang Yuan, quickly go help. An immemorial desolate beast has appeared in Tai Qiu, it has trapped several Gu Immortals from our sect!” Lang Ya land spirit had a nervous expression as he spoke anxiously.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1466: A Bit Weak

Roar—!

A loud sound resembling thunder exploded around the hairy man Gu Immortals.

At the same time, a huge dragon head charged towards them like a hill.

A huge shadow was casted over the immortals, before it even hit, the strong air currents blew out with threatening aura, making everyone lose their confidence in defending themselves.

“We’re finished!” Three hairy man Gu Immortals were covered in sweat, one of them was lying on the ground.

Seeing that they were about to die, at this moment, the three hairy men heard a cold voice: “Useless.”

The three hairy man Gu Immortals were overjoyed even though they were insulted, they shouted: “We are here, Fairy Ning Bing, save us!”

During the moment of danger, a white figure flew towards them, it was dragon lady Bai Ning Bing.

She snorted coldly and raised her hands.

Crack!

At the next moment, an ice wall emerged and shielded the three hairy man Gu

Immortals.

Bam.

In just a breath’s time, the giant dragon head crashed into the ice wall.

The ice wall could not take it and shattered.

But Bai Ning Bing had already pulled the three hairy man Gu Immortals back as they retreated, at the same time, cold light shot out of her eyes and landed on the dragon head.

The vicious dragon head was soon covered in a layer of white frost, its speed had fallen drastically.

Bai Ning Bing internally let out a sigh of relief.

After that instance of combat, she had already deduced that the dragon head was only rank seven level, with her battle strength, she could easily deal with it.

But...

“Immemorial desolate beast myriad head coiling dragon has ten thousand heads. I can deal with one head, but if the other dragon heads join in the battle, I will be outmatched, after all, two fists cannot rival four hands.”

Bai Ning Bing looked at the sky as she frowned.

This was not the ordinary Tai Qiu world, it was a dark formation path space.

The myriad head coiling dragon was a formation path immemorial desolate beast, it could create formation path spaces just like how the upper extreme heavenly eagle could enter and exit grotto-heavens, it was the immemorial desolate beast’s latent ability.

“I need to get out of this place and return to the outside world.”

“I hope Ying Wu Xie and the rest can hold on!”

At this moment, in the outside world of Tai Qiu.

Hei Lou Lan and the others were flying around in the sky, facing hundreds of dragons on the ground. They used their methods and unleashed an array of attacks endlessly.

It was a grand scene.

The green giant grass in Tai Qiu were as tall as trees, they grew in large numbers, resembling a forest.

Within the giant grass, hundreds of dragons had varying forms, they either had golden scales, horns on their foreheads, three dragon eyes, or sharp teeth. Their bodies were wavering, but their heads were high in the sky, much taller than the grass here.

These were all dragon heads part of the myriad head coiling dragon, the tails were deeply buried under the soil, all of the ten thousand dragons were of the same origin.

Meanwhile, Hei Lou Lan flew in circles like an eagle, she continued to unleash killer moves that rained down like fireworks.

Dragon roars resounded, they were not passively taking hits, they retaliated continuously. Most of them were breathing out dragon breaths, some were spitting out poison, while some had dragon eyes shooting out light.

“Ignoring the dragon head that went to deal with Bai Ning Bing, there are three rank seven dragon heads! The rest are rank six level.”

“We have not found any wild Immortal Gu yet, but be careful.”

“Don’t get close, you will be dragged into the formation path space of the myriad head coiling dragon!”

Hei Lou Lan, Ying Wu Xie, and the rest conversed while they fought at the same time.

Lang Ya land spirit asked Fang Yuan for help, he had to respond. Firstly, this rescue mission had a lot of rewards, it was quite enticing. Secondly, Fang Yuan was a supreme elder of Lang Ya Sect, he could not ignore this, it would violate his alliance agreement.

Thus, while rushing there, Fang Yuan ordered Ying Wu Xie and the rest to help first and stall for time.

As the battle got more intense, not much time had passed, but Ying Wu Xie and the rest were already feeling great pressure.

“Oh no! More and more dragon heads are awakening.”

“If this goes on, the immemorial dragon head will awaken, not only will we fail to save them, we will lose our lives!”

“When will sect leader arrive?”

“We are deep within Tai Qiu, the teleportation formation is far away, he needs some time. Be careful!”

While conversing, a rank seven dragon head woke up and emerged from the ground, roaring as it shot out a silver dragon breath.

Hei Lou Lan narrowly avoided it as Ying Wu Xie pondered and said to Lady White Rabbit and Xue Er: “Stay back and help us out from a distance.”

Xue Er only had rank six cultivation level, her mind was shaking and she was barely putting up a fight.

Even though she was the genius of the snowmen, she could not be compared to Hei Lou Lan and the rest, she did not try to force herself, she retreated with Lady White Rabbit.

“Is it fine for us to retreat?” Lady White Rabbit was very worried.

Xue Er rolled her eyes at her: “Let’s listen to Fairy Wu Xie, with our battle strength, we will only hold them back.”

The immortals resisted for a while longer, more dragon heads were awakening and joining the combat.

A thousand dragon bodies were moving about, dragon heads were roaring, Hei Lou Lan and the rest were fully suppressed.

Thankfully, myriad head coiling dragon was a very special type of immemorial desolate beast, once it was born, it could not move, even though there were many dragon heads, they could only defend their territory, they could not pursue enemies.

Even so, a thousand dragon heads' breaths were incredibly powerful, Hei Lou Lan and the rest retreated time and again, they could barely resist it.

“Oh no, the situation is getting worse.”

“Bai Ning Bing is still not out yet, I'm afraid she's unable to escape from the enemy's trap!”

Hei Lou Lan and the rest were right, Bai Ning Bing was fighting desperately inside the formation path space. To defend those three hairy man Gu Immortals, she was very restricted.

But right at this time, an indescribable aura spread throughout the place.

A huge dragon head that surpassed all others slowly rose up.

The immemorial dragon head had awakened!

Its eyes were hazy, its eyelids were drooping, it had yet to awaken fully, but it already created immense pressure in the Gu Immortals.

“Damn it...”

“What should we do?”

The immortals were hesitating when Ying Wu Xie ordered: “We will retreat.”

They were only rank six and seven, how could they resist rank eight. They could only retreat, giving up on Bai Ning Bing and the three hairy man Gu Immortals.

But right at this moment, the immemorial dragon head opened its mouth and sucked in.

Instantly, the world changed, Ying Wu Xie and the rest were all dragged into the formation path space without putting up resistance.

“Immemorial dragon head!!” Bai Ning Bing was shaken, she turned to looked at Ying Wu Xie and the rest, frowning and asking: “Where is Fang Yuan?”

Ying Wu Xie and the rest smiled bitterly.

Thankfully, the immemorial dragon head only trapped the Shadow Sect immortals and did not attack, the dragon head faded into the formation path space in a few breaths of time.

It had rank eight battle strength, from its perspective, rank six and seven Gu Immortals were insignificant, it did not need to fight.

It let the other dragon heads handle this battle.

Thus, a thousand dragon heads appeared all around the Shadow Sect immortals.

Ying Wu Xie and the rest fell into a difficult battle.

The scene now was different from before, these dragon heads could move easily in the formation path space, they could appear and vanish at times, they were no longer trapped at their original spot.

The immortals tried and could not break out of the formation path space, they could only unite and fight together, resisting a desperate battle.

In the dangerous battle, all of the immortals suffered injuries. The three hairy man Gu Immortals, Xue Er, and Lady White Rabbit barely managed to survive.

Gradually, the Shadow Sect immortals could no longer care about the weak.

One hairy man Gu Immortal was the first to die.

Xue Er gasped as she could not escape in time, she was surrounded by several dragon heads.

“To think that I will die here!” Xue Er could not stop them, she could only shut her eyes and wait for death, but a dark figure flew in and dragged her out.

“What are you all doing? Why did I have to come out and salvage the situation!” The pressure of survival made Lady White Rabbit turned into Black Tigress again, she was the one who saved Xue Er.

Xue Er was dazed: “You, you are Lady White Rabbit?”

“I am not that weakling.” Black Tigress smiled coldly, she looked at Xue Er in disdain.

Xue Er was speechless.

She finally understood: Fang Yuan’s subordinates, the members of Shadow Sect, were all monsters! Compared to them, she was the weakest.

With Black Tigress’ help, the scene finally stabilized.

But good times did not last, more and more dragon heads appeared, the immemorial desolate beast myriad head coiling dragon was finally starting to show its terrifying battle strength.

The immortals could only defend themselves, they could not escape.

Their hope was all in Fang Yuan.

But when was Fang Yuan going to arrive?

After such a long period of fighting, Fang Yuan should have arrived already. But soon, the Shadow Sect immortals realized that this formation path space had time path elements in it, the rate of time was very different from the outside world. This realization was like a huge rock that weighed on the Gu Immortals’ hearts.

But gradually, Ying Wu Xie and the rest found out that the number of dragon heads in the formation path space was shrinking.

Their pressure was decreasing, they stabilized in this dangerous situation again.

“Fang Yuan must be here!” After realizing this, the immortals rose in morale.

But Xue Er could not help but feel worried: “I wonder what the battle outside is like, even though Fang Yuan has rank eight battle strength, can he resist this rank eight myriad head coiling dragon?”

While thinking about this, the formation path space broke and everyone returned to the outside world.

“Ah!” Looking at the scenery, Xue Er could not help but gasp in shock.

The ground was covered in rivers of blood, countless dragons were lying on the ground, the surrounding area was covered in corpses.

That immemorial dragon head was growling in pain, it was no longer as imposing as before.

And Fang Yuan was... everywhere.

“Single thought endless clones.” Ying Wu Xie muttered, recognizing Fang Yuan’s immortal killer move.

Fang Yuan was concealing himself among the countless silhouettes, but that immemorial dragon head had no way to figure out where Fang Yuan was.

Ignited thought flying rock!

Countless flaming rocks were landing on myriad head coiling dragon’s body, making a large number of dragon heads fall to the ground.

They had thought of getting up, but the thought was extinguished instantly by the flames.

Single thought flower blossom!

Fang Yuan shifted his thoughts, countless beautiful flowers bloomed on the dragon bodies.

They felt that their strength was sapped away as the strong dragon heads fell into weakness, the flowers were used as fuel to strengthen the flames in their mind.

These attacks quickly defeated the rank six and seven dragon heads, they sprawled on the ground like fat earthworms.

Only the immemorial dragon head had a powerful aura, but as it could not find Fang Yuan’s main body, its battle strength was useless.

“This is the power of wisdom path killer moves, I can see how powerful Purple Mountain True Monarch was from this.” Fang Yuan sighed to himself internally.

At this moment, the immemorial dragon head saw Ying Wu Xie and the rest, it changed target and assaulted them.

The remaining two hairy man Gu Immortals shrieked uncontrollably.

Fang Yuan’s main body emerged and blocked the dragon head’s path.

“Be careful!” Xue Er shouted as she saw the immemorial dragon head crash into Fang Yuan’s body with much fear.

The huge force sent Fang Yuan flying but he quickly flew back again.

In contrast, the immemorial dragon head was covered in blood, it was in a pathetic state.

Reverse flow protection seal rendered Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals without options, the power of it was not a joke.

Using this chance, the Shadow Sect immortals managed to retreat to a safe distance.

Without any lingering burden, Fang Yuan engaged in a fight with the immemorial dragon head.

“So, so strong!” Xue Er was completely dazed from watching, she watched how Fang

Yuan gained the upper hand and killed the immemorial dragon head eventually.

“This immemorial desolate beast is a bit weak.” When the battle ended, Fang Yuan looked down at the immemorial dragon head that was cut off, and the thousand dragon heads lingering on the ground as he sighed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1467: The View of a Rank Eight

“We’re saved!”

“Lord Fang Yuan is invincible!”

The two hairy man Gu Immortals saw Fang Yuan defeating the myriad head coiling dragon, they cheered loudly and expressed their joy of surviving the ordeal.

But the Shadow Sect immortals were silent.

Bai Ning Bing snorted.

Ying Wu Xie had a look of nostalgia, after seeing these wisdom path killer moves again, he thought of the sacrificed Purple Mountain True Monarch.

Hei Lou Lan was silent, the stronger Fang Yuan became, the smaller her chances of escaping.

Xue Er blinked in succession, she was mentally shaken, looking at the ravaged battlefield, she understood why the tribe wanted to have a marriage connection with Fang Yuan.

“This is rank eight battle strength?”

“Ordinary immemorial desolate beasts cannot deal with Gu Immortals that have rank eight battle strength. Because humans possess intelligence and wisdom, we can use countless immortal killer moves.”

“Being married to this man, even if we only rely on this connection, our tribe will no longer be bullied by the rockmen. If we can use his help, the entire tribe will be lifted, we will definitely prosper!”

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan stared at the dragon corpse and the fallen dragon heads, collating his gains and losses.

Immemorial desolate beasts had rank eight battle strength, but they were still classified into different tiers. This myriad head coiling dragon was one of the weaker ones among immemorial desolate beasts.

It was not in good condition, it had just woken up from sleep and was countered by Fang Yuan’s wisdom path killer moves.

If Fang Yuan used other methods or fought by charging in, he might have had to spend more effort. But ignited thought flying rock had an incredible effect that dealt with it easily.

“How should I deal with this myriad head coiling dragon? Without the immemorial dragon head, it is only ancient desolate level now. But it still has its foundation, in time, a new ancient dragon head will become immemorial level.”

This type of formation path immemorial desolate beast was very rare, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture was in its development stage, he first thought of moving this myriad head coiling dragon into his immortal aperture.

But regretfully, once the myriad head coiling dragon is in the ground, it could no longer be moved. It was not just deep underground, it was connected to the earth vein, it grew from extracting nutrients from the earth vein.

Thus, if the surrounding soil was dug up, the myriad head coiling dragon would lose its connection to the myriad head coiling dragon, it would lose its life.

Ordinary Gu Immortals might be without options, but Fang Yuan had methods.

Be it Shadow Sect’s inheritances or Lang Ya Sect’s inheritances, they had countless methods to relocate the myriad head coiling dragon.

But Fang Yuan gave up this alluring idea after considering it.

The reason was simple, these methods needed Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan did not have. Even if he used the light of wisdom, the time, effort, and resources needed were huge, it was not worth it for just this immemorial desolate beast.

But to kill it and sell off its body parts was a huge waste.

After all, an immemorial desolate beast that was alive had greater value than a dead one.

Thoughts clashed in Fang Yuan’s mind as he thought of the best way to resolve this — Lang Ya Sect!

He had just prepared to contact Lang Ya land spirit when Lang Ya land spirit already contacted him using information path mortal Gu.

Lang Ya land spirit was also very happy, Fang Yuan was able to defeat the immemorial desolate beast and save two hairy man Gu Immortals, he wanted to thank Fang Yuan and had a warm tone.

Fang Yuan smiled silently.

The status of a rank eight Gu Immortal was totally different.

In the absence of rank nine, rank eights were the dominating overlords!

Each rank eight Gu Immortal caused great influences in their every action. Even though Fang Yuan did not have rank eight cultivation level, having only rank eight battle strength and being considered a quasi-rank eight, he could already feel how amazing it was to be a rank eight at this moment.

Fang Yuan said to Lang Ya land spirit: “This myriad head coiling dragon is still alive, a new immemorial dragon head will regrow in the future. I want to sell this immemorial desolate beast to Lang Ya Sect, first supreme elder, how many sect contribution points can I get for this?”

Lang Ya land spirit was dazed before shouting: “Great idea!”

Lang Ya Sect was exploring Tai Qiu, they could use an immemorial desolate beast’s corpse to create a teleportation immortal formation. This was a base point for them. Using this base, they could explore outwards and gain more resources from Tai Qiu.

But in the huge Tai Qiu, just one base was not enough. Like this time, because of the distance, it was not easy to rescue them.

“This myriad head coiling dragon is a natural immortal formation, we do not need to do anything, as long as we subdue it, we will be able to create a second base. As for sect contribution points...” Lang Ya land spirit considered before giving Fang Yuan a number he was satisfied with.

Fang Yuan had to refine a large number of Immortal Gu earlier, his sect contribution points had dwindled, he needed to replenish them so that he could refine Gu again.

Right now, Fang Yuan was handing out a Gu refinement mission, his main goal was heavenly secret Immortal Gu!

After settling his loot, Fang Yuan led the immortals back victoriously.

The Shadow Sect immortals were all injured, Hei Lou Lan had the heaviest injuries. Even though the fire path methods were good, it was not compatible with her Great Strength True Martial Physique.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan needed to develop his strength path too, there was a conflict between them.

Fang Yuan had to satisfy his own needs first before he could pass down excessive Gu worms to raise the Shadow Sect immortals’ strength. After all, Heavenly Court was too strong, their strength was needed for Fang Yuan to gain a decisive victory in the future.

“However, I can modify her fire path killer moves to make them more compatible. I can even modify this strength path immortal killer moves for her to use.” Fang Yuan thought.

Hei Lou Lan was still very loyal due to Shadow Sect’s alliance agreement. But in Fang Yuan’s mind, Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit were more trustworthy.

At the same time, Fang Yuan had a way to restrict Hei Lou Lan, that was her father cum enemy, Hei Cheng.

This huge trump card had always been in Fang Yuan’s hands, Hei Lou Lan was kept in the dark.

“I can nurture Hei Lou Lan slightly, modifying these killer moves is very easy, the expended time and effort is low, I can do it rapidly.”

Thus, for the next few days, Shadow Sect’s immortals healed themselves while Hei Lou Lan’s injuries slowly recovered, she was only mildly injured.

Fang Yuan handed star eyes Immortal Gu to her and let her use it to refine the stars in the sky.

Fang Yuan chose a huge star, when he was in Southern Border disguised as Wu Yi Hai, there were too many people, he could not casually refine the stars.

There was little development in this, it kept dragging on until now.

Fang Yuan did not have the time or energy for this. He passed star eyes Immortal Gu to Hei Lou Lan and made her use her time to refine the star, allowing star eyes Immortal Gu to display its worth.

When Hei Lou Lan succeeded, Fang Yuan would give her the modified immortal killer moves as the reward.

Fang Yuan had created an organization in his previous life. To nurture a person, they could not be given rewards for no reason and at a rapid pace. Breaking the rules of advancement was a huge problem for organizations. Any act of promotion or demotion needed to have appropriate reasons.

If there was no reason for it, then he should create a reason.

Fang Yuan was very experienced in this.

After the matter of the myriad head coiling dragon, Fang Yuan realized that the Shadow Sect immortals also needed more battle strength. When they got stronger, they would be more helpful to Fang Yuan.

However, the most important thing now was Fang Yuan’s own development.

The most reliable person was himself, a truly mature person would never rely on others in times of need. The Shadow Sect immortals were merely icing on the cake for Fang Yuan.

After returning to his cloud city, Fang Yuan took out a rank six strength path immortal material.

Next, he used immortal killer move eat strength.

A moment later, this pure strength path immortal material had melted, a small portion of the dao marks in it had been transferred to Fang Yuan.

Using perceivable dao Immortal Gu to check it, his strength path dao marks did not grow by much.

Fang Yuan was not disappointed, this was an expected result.

The main way for Gu Immortals to increase their dao marks was through tribulations. For Fang Yuan, he had another immortal aperture annexing method. As for eat strength killer move, it could only slowly accumulate, there would only be effect after a long time.

Thus now, when dealing with the myriad head coiling dragon, even though he gained some strength path dao marks, his battle strength did not rise much.

“However, if I can refine snack Immortal Gu into the rank seven Big Snack, I can modify eat strength so that the gain in my strength path dao marks will be more evident and achieve a qualitative change.”

This thought appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind before rapidly vanishing.

Refining snack Immortal Gu into big snack Immortal Gu was alluring, but it was not the appropriate time to do that now.

Refining heavenly secret Immortal Gu was the main priority, and Fang Yuan was continuing his immortal aperture development to satisfy the needs of his Immortal Gu in terms of food. The latter expended almost all of his finances.

How long had it been? His ten million immortal essence stones had already started depleting.

But his great efforts also gave him great rewards, he had already completed more than half of his basic development.

“My soul foundation has already reached ten million man soul, let’s continue like this.”

“In terms of killer moves, I am already familiar with Purple Mountain True Monarch’s wisdom path killer moves, next, I will modify Bo Qing’s sword path killer moves.”

In terms of wisdom path, Fang Yuan had grandmaster attainment level, he also had wisdom path Immortal Gu, it was naturally his priority.

In terms of sword path, even though he had several sword path Immortal Gu, he lacked the attainment level for it, it was lower on his priority.

In terms of soul path, not only did he lack attainment level, he also lacked Immortal Gu, he only had rank seven Change Soul and rank six Cleanse Soul, it was even lower on the priority list.

Fang Yuan had been preparing himself, he had considered his options thoroughly.

“At the same time as modifying Bo Qing’s sword path killer moves, I will also modify some killer moves for Hei Lou Lan. The only problem is that after completing my basic development, my finances will be at a dangerous level.”

Fang Yuan was a little worried, but after three days, the snowman tribe sent the third set of gifts to him.

The third set of gifts was the most valuable one among the three.

After getting this, Fang Yuan’s basic immortal aperture development no longer had the problem of lacking funds for the time being.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1468: Ice Path Crystal Essence

Southern Border.

A mild rain was drizzling, there was serenity amidst the cold winds, it was dusk on the green mountain ridge.

On a nameless mountain, a huge pine tree with a cone shape had already grown for six years on this location.

“Soon, soon, in an hour, I will be able to refine rank seven pine needle Immortal Gu. Six years of hard work...” Rank seven secluded cultivator Zheng Qing thought in his heart with anticipation.

He was a wood path Gu Immortal, he was using a wood refinement method this time.

Even though it took a long time, he was using the technique of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, the success rate was very high.

Zheng Qing was originally a mortal, when he was finding firewood one day in the mountain, he fell off the cliff and landed on a huge lotus that was within the valley.

Through a fortuitous encounter, Zheng Qing inherited one of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s wood path inheritances.

After working hard on cultivation, he became a Gu Immortal. He slowly cultivated and rarely went out, after hundreds of years, he became rank seven.

He had a peaceful nature, one had to say, Genesis Lotus' true inheritance was really suited for him. When refining Gu this time, he turned into a pine tree and stayed here for six years, through rain and shine, slowly cultivating while ignoring the changes in the environment.

Rumble...

At this time, from deep under the earth, he heard a loud sound, like the screaming of countless beasts.

"What is going on?" Zheng Qing heard the sound and became alert.

"No way, my Gu refinement method comes from Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, be it the process of refining Gu or the final moment, the process is natural and mystical, there is no way I will be exposed. Thus, this cannot be a case of enemies coming to snatch it, wait..."

Zheng Qing was first suspicious before his heart jumped.

He thought of an answer.

Months ago, he had also experienced such a situation.

That time, there was a huge earthquake, it was as if there was a huge python rolling around in the ground. Even though he was unharmed, the event shocked Zheng Qing deeply.

After that, Zheng Qing connected to treasure yellow heaven and learned that there was an unprecedented earthquake that involved the entire Southern Border.

"Is this the same thing?"

Zheng Qing's guess soon got confirmed.

Like what he had expected, this was the same type of earthquake as before. But the size of it was far beyond Zheng Qing's imagination.

Rumble!

A terrifying earthquake seemed to devour everything, the world was shaking like the apocalypse was here. Huge trenches were created that extended for millions of li.

Zheng Qing was very unfortunately, the nameless mountain that he was on was being devoured by a trench.

The mountain collapsed, Zheng Qing wanted to hold on but he reached his limits, he had to return to human form.

Even with his superb mental state, he still wanted to vomit blood, his six years of hard work had gone up in smoke.

"What is this earthquake! Why am I so unlucky... sigh!"

Suddenly, his bloodshot eyes widened immensely.

He saw that the immeasurably wide trench had a mountain-like rock. This rock was orange in color, it was also crystallized, the surface had countless holes that were large as houses, while some were small as fists, a large amount of yellow smoke was spewing out of these holes unceasingly.

The smoke became thicker and soon turned into soil. the original orange-yellow crystal rock was covered in a thick layer of soil in a dozen breaths of time.

Zheng Qing breathed roughly, he had Genesis Lotus true inheritance, he knew what this was with his knowledge.

“This is the earth path crystal essence in ‘Hu’ land! This is a rank eight immortal material... ah wait!”Zheng Qing’s investigative killer move looked further.

His eyes became wider as he shouted: “Did I see wrongly? Not just the earth path crystal essence, there are also jade scales, earth hole traveling flame, spring thunder condensed dewdrops...”

These immortal materials were very valuable, they were also of a huge quantity.

The feeling of failing the Gu refinement had already been forgotten by Zheng Qing, he started to get busy collecting these precious resources.

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

Fang Yuan cultivated his sword path killer moves.

Sword path killer move — Triple Layered Sword Wave!

Swish swish swish!

The dazzling silvery waves were crashing unceasingly, three layers of waves swept forward with unparalleled sharpness and power.

Immortal killer move — Formless Flying Sword!

Flying sword Immortal Gu shot out rapidly, it vanished in an instant due to the extreme speed.

Fang Yuan could accurately sense the location of flying sword Immortal Gu, but others could not. This was one of Bo Qing’s signature killer moves.

Immortal killer move — Cloud Flying Sword!

Fang Yuan clapped as a large amount of cloud fog appeared and rapidly expanded. The power of the sword had no form or limits, it could not be intercepted, without any solid matter, it could not be resisted.

Immortal killer move — Ten Thousand Li Flying Sword!

Fang Yuan pointed as sword light flew out like a rainbow, shooting towards the sky, traveling several thousand li in the blink of an eye, it was extremely accurate.

And the final move, immortal killer move — Five Finger Fist Heart Sword!

Fang Yuan clapped and placed his palms in front of his chest together, before his right hand’s fingers curled up, as if he was grasping endless sword light in his hand. Next, he raised his right hand up towards the top of his head.

First, his thumb straightened, with a swoosh, an extremely sharp sword light flew out and pierced a hole in Cloud Cover Continent.

Next were his index and middle fingers, they extended and two sword lights shot out with terrifying night.

But his last two fingers could not be stretched, after three sword lights, Fang Yuan had to stop the killer move.

After some practice, Fang Yuan stood on the spot, collating his experiences.

“These last days, I have already finished modifying the sword path killer moves, there are a total of five moves. Other than triple layered sword wave originating from Lang Ya Sect, the other four moves came from Bo Qing, and I have already modified them.”

“Sword path’s situation is inferior to wisdom path. I do not have as many sword path Immortal Gu compared to wisdom path, and my attainment level is far lower, my modification is limited, the power is about the same as Bo Qing’s original version. Especially the final move, five finger fist heart sword, it used to be renowned throughout history, it was a move that shocked the world. But I can only use three finger sword lights, that is my limit. At the same time, the power of the move is only at the peak of rank seven.”

“If I can use rank eight wisdom sword Immortal Gu as well, the sword path killer move will reach the power level of rank eight.”

Unfortunately, wisdom sword Immortal Gu was very hard to use, he needed rank eight immortal essence.

Fang Yuan was not rank eight, he could not produce rank eight immortal essence at all.

Fang Yuan had three rank eight Immortal Gu, they were attitude Gu, Years Flow Like Water, and wisdom sword Immortal Gu. Among them, attitude Gu was a legendary Immortal Gu written in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, it had a very low requirement to use. Years Flow Like Water was slightly worse, but its effect depended on the quality of the immortal essence used instead. Wisdom sword Immortal Gu was a normal rank eight Immortal Gu, even though it belonged to Fang Yuan, it needed rank eight immortal essence to activate.

Thus, Fang Yuan had a lot of room for improvement in sword path. But at the current moment, he had reached the limit of development in this path.

After finishing the practice of his killer moves, Fang Yuan did not want to waste time, he returned to the cloud city and started to work on his immortal aperture development again.

Sovereign immortal aperture, at the extreme north of Mini Northern Plains.

Snow was falling, the air was cold, snow was deep and thick, the atmosphere was entirely different from before.

Howl! Howl!

Occasionally, several snow monsters would pace around the snow and emit strange screams.

And at the extreme north, there was a mountain-like crystal rock.

This rock was blue in color, it had crystallized texture, the surface had countless holes of varying sizes, a large amount of cold and icy smoke was spewing out of these holes unceasingly, they were changing the environment to a great extent.

Ice path crystal essence!

It was an extremely rare rank eight immortal material that originated from the secluded domain of heaven and earth, ‘Hu’, it was rarely seen in the market.

The first time he saw this ice path crystal essence, Fang Yuan sighed: “To think that the snowman tribe had such a valuable thing in their treasury!”

But Fang Yuan soon understood why.

Even though they were living in difficulty now and were in a tough spot, the truth was, after so many generations of cruel competition, how could the remaining snowmen be simple characters?

At least, among all of the snowman tribes, this was a high quality batch. They were merely trapped here now, even though their current situation was bad, they had their former glory.

The ice path crystal essence was the important part of the third gift from the snowmen.

As for why these snowmen suddenly showed such sincerity, Fang Yuan knew without needing to guess that it was because he defeated the immemorial desolate beast myriad head coiling dragon, the scene was recorded by Xue Er who sent it back to the tribe.

Of course, this was Fang Yuan purposely allowing her to do it, he wanted to see that happen.

“With this ice path crystal essence, I can create a production line of snow monsters, in time, this will be a new source of revenue for me!”

While he was thinking of the future, Sixth Hair transmitted to him: “Sect leader, heavenly secret Immortal Gu’s refinement has reached the crucial step, please come over to refine the Gu personally!”

Fang Yuan was instantly alerted.

If he could refine heavenly secret Immortal Gu, he would be able to learn about the following calamities and tribulations in advance.

Any Gu cultivator would know how important and significant this was!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1469: Too Weak

The Gu refinement hall was filled with bright white light.

The light was glaring, nobody could look at it directly.

An intense aura that was in-between mortal Gu and Immortal Gu showed that the Gu refinement was at its most crucial step.

Fang Yuan was bathed in the white light, his concentration was fully invested. Beside him, refinement path Gu Immortal Sixth Hair had a look of solemness and nervousness.

“Now is the time!” Suddenly, Sixth Hair spoke and dispelled the entire refinement path Gu formation!

Originally, the best way to refine heavenly secret Immortal Gu was to use light path refinement method. Other than that, other paths would only exert more effort for a weaker result, some even caused an opposing effect.

And at this final step, the refinement path Gu formation needed to be shut down, the Gu Immortal had to personally complete this final step.

This was the most unique part of heavenly secret Immortal Gu’s refinement, almost all other Immortal Gu had no such requirement.

Only heavenly secret Immortal Gu could not be restricted by any rules, it had to be refined when it was in a state of freedom.

Undeniably, this was a huge test to the Gu Immortal refining the Gu.

Because the Gu Immortal needed to take the place of the immortal formation at that instant and complete the final step of the Gu refinement himself.

But the Gu Immortal’s control could not be excessive. Otherwise, it would be a form of restriction and heavenly secret Immortal Gu would not be refined.

This step required a peculiar balance, the intricacy could not be expressed in words, only the Gu Immortal undergoing the refinement could experience it.

At the final step.

Fang Yuan’s mind had countless thoughts, using wisdom path methods, he perfectly took over the immortal formation’s workload.

The surrounding white light was blinding, but Fang Yuan guided it back to a condensed form.

Gradually, these lights formed into a circular shape around Fang Yuan.

The huge circle had Fang Yuan at the center, initially, there was only light, but after a few breaths of time, there was a material form.

After a dozen breaths, the refinement hall’s light had returned to normal, the ring had materialized and was the size of a house, it was white-gold in color.

The ring was quietly floating.

Fang Yuan was at its center.

Sixth Hair held his breath as he felt excited internally: “Refinement path killer move — Heavenly Light Ring, it has finally formed. But we need it to rotate seven times to refine the rank seven heavenly secret Immortal Gu.”

The first rotation.

Fang Yuan willed as the ring started to rotate slowly.

This first rotation took fifteen minutes to complete.

“The first rotation is complete.” Sixth Hair let out a breath of turbid air.

Second rotation.

Fang Yuan’s eyes which were shut slowly opened.

Within his eyes, a profound light shot out towards the ring.

The ring which had stopped moving started to move with his gaze, it rotated again.

This rotation was faster than before.

In just seven minutes, it finished rotating.

“The second rotation is done too.” Sixth Hair clenched his fists.

Third rotation.

Fang Yuan breathed roughly, he continued to regulate his breath.

He was not breathing normally of course, he was using a refinement path killer move.

His breath and the ring resonated as it started to spin again.

This rotation was even faster now, it finished in an instant.

“The third rotation is done.” Sixth Hair’s heart was pounding.

The fourth rotation.

Fang Yuan opened his mouth and started to hum.

Under the effect of his voice, the ring started to spin violently.

Soon, the fourth rotation was completed.

“We are already past half of the seven rotations! But it will get even harder now, because the rings will rotate even faster, it will not be easy to control.” Sixth Hair was oozing with sweat now.

After the fourth rotation, Fang Yuan did not continue recklessly, he rested for a while before using his refinement path killer move to make the ring rotate.

The fifth rotation.

Fang Yuan’s arms were naturally lowered, but at this moment, he slowly raised his arms.

As if his arms were tied by two mountains, Fang Yuan slowly lifted them like he was carrying something very heavy.

The ring started to rotate on its own, but this was different from before, while rotating, it also started to ascend.

It became further and further away from the ground, when it reached Fang Yuan’s shoulder, there was a sudden pause!

“Oh no!” Sixth Hair’s expression changed as the ring exploded on its own.

Boom!

A huge explosion was suppressed by the refinement hall before it caused any severe damages.

But Fang Yuan who was at the center suffered the full extent of the explosion’s force.

Puff!

Fang Yuan’s expression was pale, he spat out a mouthful of blood.

Heavily injured!

Immortal Gu Man as Before!

Fang Yuan immediately activated this Immortal Gu, his ever-useful method started to display its effect. Fang Yuan’s heavy injuries became light injuries, but he had not completely healed.

Fang Yuan was injured from refining rank seven Heavenly Secret, even though rank six Man as Before had some use, its time path effect could not completely get rid of his injuries.

Fang Yuan’s injuries this time were not simple.

Heavenly secret Immortal Gu’s refinement failed.

This was not the first time.

For the past several times, Sixth Hair failed in the middle of the refinement, this time, they reached the end, but Fang Yuan still failed despite doing it himself.

At once, Fang Yuan and Sixth Hair had ugly expressions.

Fang Yuan had practiced a lot for this, before the Gu refinement, he had used many luck path methods, but he still did not succeed.

Gu refinement was like this, it was not easy to succeed. Even if one invested a lot into it, they might not gain anything, their efforts might end up in vain.

And most importantly, Fang Yuan’s calamities and tribulations were impending. If he did not refine Heavenly Secret in time, Fang Yuan would not be able to do it before the tribulation.

“It is a pity.” Sixth Hair sighed.

“No worry, even without Heavenly Secret, I am confident of passing.” Fang Yuan waved his hand, his mind had returned to normal in an instant.

Several days later, Fang Yuan came to a desolate area using the teleportation immortal formation and started to undergo his tribulation.

Placing his immortal aperture, he opened the immortal aperture door.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

A vast amount of heaven and earth qi rushed in like a waterfall, replenishing sovereign immortal aperture.

The scene was simply too grand, Ying Wu Xie and the rest were dazed.

This time, in order to ensure that the tribulation went without a hitch, Fang Yuan brought the Shadow Sect immortals along, Bai Ning Bing was also here, while Xue Er was inside Lang Ya blessed land.

Xue Er was not trusted by Fang Yuan, as for the rest, they had entered the sovereign immortal aperture before.

When Fang Yuan underwent tribulations, they could help him. When other Gu Immortals were attracted here and tries to attack him, they could go out and block those enemies for him.

This was the human calamity.

When Fang Yuan underwent tribulations, he would be noticed by heaven’s will, there was no helping it.

Heaven’s will tried all means possible to exterminate Fang Yuan, it would naturally plot and after some time, his human calamity would appear.

“Unless we see it ourselves, it is absolutely hard to imagine that a person’s immortal aperture could absorb this much heaven and earth qi at once!”

“Sovereign immortal aperture... it is too powerful. I believe that even rank nine venerables would not create such a scene when absorbing heaven and earth qi.”

The Shadow Sect immortals conversed and praised.

Bai Ning Bing snorted, her gaze was flickering uncertainly.

She was shocked in her mind, but she said: “You are underestimating the rank nine venerables. Even though I have never seen a rank nine immortal aperture absorb heaven and earth qi, after obtaining Bai Xiang’s true inheritance, I learned that Bai Xiang’s absorption of the heaven and earth qi when he placed his immortal aperture was far bigger in commotion.”

Ying Wu Xie looked at Bai Ning Bing plainly: “Bai Xiang was rank eight, he had a rank eight grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan is only rank seven now, he only possesses a rank seven blessed land, the two cannot be compared. Furthermore, the sovereign immortal aperture is too huge, there are many places that have not been developed, its potential is unimaginable. In contrast, Bai Xiang grotto-heaven was already filled up back then, the resources were occupying the entire immortal aperture, these resources naturally expended a lot of heaven and earth qi.”

Bai Ning Bing was silent.

“Wu Xie is right.” Fairy Miao Yin laughed curtly.

The other Gu Immortals nodded in agreement.

After a long time, the sovereign immortal aperture completed the absorption of heaven and earth qi, the tribulation began to form in Mini Red Heaven.

Fang Yuan’s current body was inside Mini Red Heaven, this tribulation was targeting Fang Yuan, it would not show up elsewhere.

As for why he chose Mini Red Heaven, it was because this place was empty, it was once the place where he fought the immemorial year monkey, there were no resources here, his losses were minimized when fighting here.

If they were in Mini Northern Plains or Mini Southern Border, the tribulation would destroy countless resources, that was not favorable to Fang Yuan.

“The sovereign immortal aperture is too huge, if we were the ones undergoing tribulation, how could we avoid destroying resources? But inside the sovereign immortal aperture, the tribulation cannot even cover the whole of Mini Red Heaven!” Hei Lou Lan sigh with a tone of admiration.

“My Shadow Sect accumulated resources for a hundred thousand years before refining sovereign immortal fetus Gu, of course it is extraordinary.” Ying Wu Xie snorted coldly, saying proudly.

“A pity it all went to Fang Yuan.” Bai Ning Bing said casually, making Ying Wu Xie stare at her in anger.

“What? Did I say something wrong?” Bai Ning Bing was fearless, she looked at Ying Wu Xie provocatively, defending her face.

Ying Wu Xie breathed in deeply, he turned his head over: “So what if sovereign immortal fetus Gu was used by Lord Fang Yuan? He is the leader of Shadow Sect, he is on the same boat as us.”

“Hahaha.” Bai Ning Bing laughed in a mocking tone.

Ying Wu Xie ignored her and stared at the newly formed tribulation.

Only to see that around Fang Yuan, there was a dense poisonous fog.

The poisonous fog was rumbling and had five distinguishable colors.

“This is a poison path tribulation.” Lady White Rabbit said meekly.

“Or rather, the five poison tribulation!” Ying Wu Xie said, he had more depth of knowledge.

Like what he had just said, the five colored poisonous fog formed into five giant monsters, a snake, scorpion, spider, toad, and centipede respectively.

The five monsters encircled Fang Yuan in a threatening manner but did not attack yet. They were gathering strength, as time passed, their bodies got larger.

“Why is Fang Yuan not attacking yet?” Bai Ning Bing frowned.

Now was the best time to strike, as time passed, the poisonous beasts would get stronger.

But Fang Yuan’s tactic was different from normal people’s mentality.

He waited until the five poisonous beasts reached their maximum strength.

All five pounced towards Fang Yuan with bodies like mountains!

Bai Ning Bing and the rest held their breaths, the tribulation was so powerful that they were stunned even as just spectators.

This was not an ordinary rank seven tribulation, it was enhanced by heaven’s will, it had the maximum power allowed by this world!

“Just this?” Fang Yuan’s eyes rolled as he vanished on the spot.

Boom boom boom!

At the next moment, thunderous sounds erupted continuously.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest watched with pin-sized pupils as Fang Yuan rampaged on the battlefield, the five poisonous beasts were completely suppressed by his countless attacks.

A while later, the poisonous fog faded, only Fang Yuan was left standing in the battlefield like a demonic god.

He looked around the battlefield and stared at his own hands, muttering: “Rank seven heavenly tribulation... is too weak.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1470: Intention to Trade

“Even though heaven’s will wants to get rid of me, the otherworldly demon, and raised the strength of the heavenly tribulation to its limit, it could do nothing against me.”

This tribulation was not hard for Fang Yuan.

He had prepared amply for this tribulation and had a lot of trump cards left unused.

Ying Wu Xie and the rest were watching Fang Yuan’s solo show and ended up being useless, they were in shock and amazement towards the sovereign immortal aperture.

Rank seven Gu Immortals had to go through twenty-four earthly calamities, three heavenly tribulations, and three grand tribulations.

Fang Yuan patiently waited for the five poisonous beasts to reach their peak before dealing with them, he wanted to probe the limit of the heavenly tribulation’s power. A rank seven heavenly tribulation no longer had any threat towards him. Earthly calamities were even weaker, only grand tribulations were an uncertainty.

As for how strong grand tribulations could become, Fang Yuan did not know, he had not gone through it once.

His rank seven cultivation level was obtained by annexing apertures, he seized their cultivation level. This was the first time he was going through a rank seven heavenly tribulation.

Afterwards, Fang Yuan used perceivable dao Immortal Gu to deduce that he obtained a thousand poison path dao marks from this heavenly tribulation.

From now on, whenever Fang Yuan used poison path Immortal Gu, he would gain a hundred percent amplification.

Heavenly tribulations on average gave about seven hundred and fifty dao marks. Fang Yuan obtained a thousand, it was because heaven’s will had raised its power to the limit.

But these gains were not what he needed now.

Firstly, he did not have poison path resources to nurture, his poison path attainment level was very low, he only had one poison path Immortal Gu, Woman’s Heart.

Evidently, heaven’s will had purposely chosen poison path to slow down Fang

Yuan’s growth.

“The next time I undergo heavenly tribulation, heaven’s will might reduce the power of the heavenly tribulation to its limit.”

Fang Yuan could guess this without thinking.

This heavenly tribulation made heaven’s will realize that it could do nothing to Fang Yuan, it would no longer raise its power to the limit. After all, that would only give him more dao marks, other than making him stronger, there was no point in doing it.

“This means that my dao mark gains will be very low when I pass tribulations in the future. Annexing apertures is the proper way to advance now.” Fang Yuan understood.

Annexing apertures was the advantage of the sovereign immortal aperture, it would be definitely used in the future. But now that he lacked the upper extreme heavenly eagle, and due to Fang Yuan cultivating in seclusion, he had no opportunities for that.

The River of Time flowed endlessly, time passed rapidly, a month had gone by.

During this period, Fang Yuan went through an earthly calamity, as he expected, the gain in dao marks was very few.

But in other aspects, Fang Yuan’s improvements were huge, his gains were enormous.

In terms of soul path, his soul foundation reached fifty million man soul! His soul was so condensed that it was already showing signs of turning solid.

And most importantly, his immortal killer move ghost official garment was getting thicker, it was shielding Fang Yuan with even greater strength now.

Over on Hei Lou Lan’s end, she had already refined the star. Fang Yuan tried to use star eyes Immortal Gu, the investigative effect was great. With this Immortal Gu, his investigative aspect was greatly supplemented.

In terms of immortal aperture management, the basic development was already completed.

He expended almost all of his immortal essence stone storage, and the three gifts from the snowmen, in the end, he even borrowed some resources from Lang Ya Sect to complete his foundations.

But now, even though Fang Yuan had not fed them yet, the foundation was already set, it was like having dishes on the table even before eating, while the rice was still cooking in the pot. As long as he continued to develop, he would gain success in the future.

There were seven levels of immortal aperture development.

The first level was to create mortal resource points.

The second level was to have immortal material resources to feed Immortal Gu.

The third level was to raise and produce immortal beasts and plants, completing the ecosystem.

The fourth level was to produce resources for external trade and profits.

...

Fang Yuan had crossed into the fourth level earlier, but he still had one foot in the second level.

Now that the second level was done, Fang Yuan’s other foot stepped into the third level.

The third level was to raise and produce immortal beasts and plants, completing the ecosystem.

This level’s criteria was: These immortal beasts and plants had to perfectly assimilate into the immortal aperture’s ecosystem, they had to form a food chain with the living beings within.

Fang Yuan had done this in the past, but now it was lacking.

Because his two biggest groups of beasts, the eagle group and the year beast group did not perfectly assimilate into the immortal aperture.

The eagles needed to hunt for food on their own. But currently, Fang Yuan was purchasing the food from Lang Ya Sect and treasure yellow heaven.

Year beasts consumed year Gu as food, Fang Yuan produced it himself. Rank eight Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water played a huge part in this, without it, Fang Yuan could not raise such a huge population of year beasts.

“The third level’s development needs to wait.” Fang Yuan wanted to continue but he had to stock, he did not have enough funds now, to develop his immortal aperture, he needed to work on the fourth level and increase his trading capabilities.

Right now, Fang Yuan had nine sources of revenue.

The first was guts Gu. It was a monopoly with huge potential, but he had to invest a lot into it and split the revenue with Lang Ya Sect. Right now, Fang Yuan’s guts Gu were all used to cultivate his soul path, his profits were zero at the moment.

Next was year Gu. Fang Yuan has not taken over the market for year Gu yet, and because of his actions earlier, the revenue of year Gu would be horrible for the next couple of years.

But undeniably, the market for year Gu was huge in potential because Fang Yuan possessed rank eight Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water.

This Immortal Gu was created by the Northern Plains time path great expert Hei Fan, it was a top tier Immortal Gu among rank eights. Not only was it easy to use, owning it meant that one had a steady supply of year Gu at a low cost. But it had weaknesses too, it would attract immemorial year beasts to wreak havoc in the immortal aperture.

After Hei Fan created years flow like water Immortal Gu, he tried to solve the problem. But unfortunately, due to his limitations as a time path great expert, he was not as skilled in other aspects. he was also lacking in fortuitous encounters, if he had the hundred and eighty slaves killer move like Fang Yuan, he would have solved the problem. And thirdly, his lifespan was limited, he had already started solving the problem using the immemorial year beast fishing formation as the flood discharge formation, but his lifespan was used up before they could be used.

Thus, years flow like water Immortal Gu could not shine in its creator’s hands.

When it went into Fang Yuan’s hands, its amazing effect was finally used.

Fang Yuan also sighed when he thought of this, this was truly the twists and turns of life.

After year Gu were the dragonfish and regretful spider resource points, they were in the sovereign immortal aperture’s dragon scale sea area and coiling thread cave. Back then, in Southern Border, Fang Yuan had thought of using Wu clan’s strength to develop them, it was a huge effort.

But now, the dragonfish business was heavily affected. Because the secret of Fang Yuan disguising as Wu Yi Hai was exposed, and his dragonfish business was done through Wu clan’s network, his main targets were the righteous path forces of Southern Border, this business was naturally stopped after he got exposed. Thus, regretful spiders became Fang Yuan’s biggest source of revenue now. The main buyers were Western Desert’s Xiao clan, their relationship was getting firmer.

After the dragonfish and regretful spider were eerie fire dragon python, a series of star path resources (star dart Gu, star fragment grass and more), spirit snakes, snow monsters, and light shine fungi.

The eerie fire dragon python business had started when Fang Yuan obtained some in Imperial Court blessed land, afterwards he used Hei tribe’s unique raising method to develop them to this scale. The production was not big nor small, it was inferior to the dragonfish and regretful spiders.

His star path resources were inherited from Star Lord Wan Xiang, he did not focus on them at all. The reason was simple, they were getting less important because most of his resources were larger in scale. And this was obtained from a rank six Gu Immortal, its initial scale was not big either.

The spirit snakes were about the same as the star path resources, they came from Han Dong blessed land which was annexed by Fang Yuan, he did not develop it purposely.

Finally, the snow monsters and light shine fungus were future projects, the former used the ice path crystal essence to modify Mini Northern Plains’ environment, while the latter had great importance now and could not be sold.

In conclusion, Fang Yuan’s business situation was not promising.

Guts Gu had no profits, dragonfish was heavily affected and earning little, even though regretful spiders were the same as before, it could not hold up his situation alone. The remaining eerie fire dragon pythons, star path resources, and spirit snakes were important to rank six Gu Immortals, but for Fang Yuan, they were too small in scale. These three and the regretful spider business barely managed to help Fang Yuan maintain his finances.

And finally, for the snow monsters and light shine fungi businesses, the former still needed more investment, while the latter needed to expand in size first.

The profits from year Gu earlier had been depleted, in this situation, Fang Yuan needed to promote his other businesses urgently.

He had a lot of resources, even though he completed the basic development, the immortal aperture’s development only went from three percent to four percent, but be it the immortal aperture’s development, modifying of killer moves, or soul path cultivation, he needed to invest even more resources into them.

To improve further or increase his earnings, he needed to put in capital. The more he put in, the faster his growth.

And for Fang Yuan, he had a vast number of inheritances, he had countless ways to farm resources, he even had many unique techniques, there were too many choices.

And among them, which was the most suitable and helpful choice?

Fang Yuan fell into deep contemplation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1471: Split Soul

Lang Ya blessed land, inside a secret room in a cloud city.

Fang Yuan’s soul came out of his body.

His soul was already much stronger than before, he was at seventy million man soul level. Fang Yuan sacrificed his guts Gu profits and used Ying Wu Xie and the rest to farm souls, he cultivated used the two secluded domains of heaven and earth specialized in cultivating soul path, he naturally improved at a shocking speed like a rocket.

“I am thirty million man soul away from hundred million man soul!”

Fang Yuan evaluated his soul.

It was clear and lifelike, his face was exquisite, his body size was normal, there was a light from deep within the soul that made people feel it was solid and pure.

Rank nine killer move ghostly concealment was like a silk inner garment sticking to his soul, above it was a layer of ghost official garment.

The modified immortal killer move ghost official garment used rank seven change soul Immortal Gu and rank six cleanse soul Immortal Gu as the cores. In the past, it was just a loose shirt. The sleeves were long and extended to his feet, the shirt was very thin. But as his soul foundation continued to increase, this ghost official garment became thicker.

Looking at it now, this ghost official garment had changed forms, not only did his loose shirt turn into a martial uniform, there was even a battle armor covering his shirt, it was a grand scene.

This was the true appearance of the rank seven ghost official garment — Ghost General Garment!

Earlier, because of the layer of ghostly concealment, ghost official garment and his soul had a weakened connection, it became the rank six level ghost soldier garment.

But now that his soul foundation rose by many times, it regained its rank seven power.

“But I am still a bit of distance away from the true ghost general garment.” Fang Yuan looked at his back.

The complete form of ghost general garment not only had the martial uniform but also three war flags on his back. These flags were not evident now.

But Fang Yuan’s cultivation session today was not just to inspect his soul path gains.

Even though his soul left his body, his body’s mind still had wills in it, they started to use an immortal killer move —

Split Soul!

This move came from Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, after Fang Yuan modified it, he could use it.

An intense pain assaulted Fang Yuan’s soul.

His soul suffered a huge injury!

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth and his soul entered his body again.

This was the first time he was activating the killer move split soul.

Split soul was different from usual killer moves, it needed the Gu Immortal’s soul to leave the body and leave behind thoughts, wills, or emotions to manipulate Gu worms, it was harder to use than normal immortal killer moves.

After the activation failed, Fang Yuan wordlessly used guts Gu to heal himself.

If split soul succeeded, he would not feel any pain in splitting his soul, it would be as easy as drinking water. But if he failed, the consequences would be severe, his soul would directly collapse under normal situations. Thus, Gu Immortals with weak soul foundations could not blindly use this move, it would be suicide.

Fang Yuan only started to try this after reaching ten million man soul.

Right now, his sword path killer moves were already modified, he had become familiar with them, he started to modify the soul path killer moves and practised them.

Other than split soul, there was also soul suppression, soul howl, soul explosion, devour soul, soul replacement, soul beast summoning, and others.

Fang Yuan did not have many soul path Immortal Gu, he could use these moves again but the effects would be greatly lowered.

What decided Fang Yuan’s upper limit of battle strength was reverse flow protection seal, be it soul path methods, sword path, or wisdom path, they were only meant to increase Fang Yuan’s variety of moves.

Modifying and practising soul path killer moves used up a lot of Fang Yuan’s time and energy.

And for his immortal aperture development, Fang Yuan decided his focus.

He thought about it and chose the dragonfish.

Firstly, the dragonfish business had its foundation, and during this period, Fang Yuan accumulated a lot of dragonfish in his immortal aperture, he had a lot of stock.

Secondly, Fang Yuan had involved himself in the dragonfish business and had experience before. It was not like the year Gu business where he was a neophyte.

Finally, dragonfish had transformation path and food path dao marks, according to rumors, dragonfish were life forms created by a food path Gu Immortal.

Fang Yuan had the most authentic food path inheritance now, there were many ways within it to breed dragonfish on a massive scale.

Dragon scale sea area.

Fang Yuan first expanded this sea area again, he also modified the immortal Gu formation in this sea area.

A brand new immortal Gu formation using rank six snack Immortal Gu, rank seven Dragon Scale, rank seven Dragon Breath, and rank six Dragon Strength as the cores, as well as one hundred and thirty thousand mortal Gu as supplementary Gu.

Just by modifying this giant immortal formation, Fang Yuan spent three days. These three days, Fang Yuan did not sleep or rest, he was bathed in the light of wisdom.

Constructing the immortal formation took him twelve days.

Half a month later, Fang Yuan successfully raised this dragonfish resource point from a large sized resource point to a giant resource point.

This way, the dragonfish would breed even faster, and with the sovereign immortal aperture’s rapid time flow, they would reproduce rapidly.

Fang Yuan started to find new sellers for the dragonfish business.

Lang Ya Sect was easily convinced, the snowman tribe also agreed to purchase dragonfish from Fang Yuan at regular intervals.

Western Desert’s Xiao clan also became a large customer of Fang Yuan’s dragonfish business due to their relationship with the regretful spiders.

As for Northern Plains’ Chu tribe, Chu Du secretly negotiated with Fang Yuan to create a ten plus year business agreement.

The start was good, but next was the main activity.

Fang Yuan placed these dragonfish into treasure yellow heaven.

He naturally placed different wills in and changed his identity, people could not find out who he was.

This time, Fang Yuan used a different strategy from the year Gu business.

Fang Yuan had a decisive advantage in the year Gu business, he could charge in with brute force and destroy all of his obstacles.

But in terms of dragonfish, Fang Yuan’s cost of raising them was not any cheaper, even though he had good methods. Thus, this time, he slowly increased the scale of his dragonfish sale.

He was purposely doing this, there was little commotion and treasure yellow heaven was the same as usual.

Fang Yuan cultivated as he quietly observed the market trend.

Eastern Sea.

Gu Immortal You Chan was holding onto a dragonfish and observing it.

Under the lantern, her beautiful face was solemn as she frowned.

She carefully inspected the dragonfish for several times before placing it in her immortal aperture, sighing softly to herself.

“Who knows where this person came from, they are really strong, not only are their dragonfish really outstanding, there is also an unceasing stock coming from them.”

You Chan was the number one seller for the dragonfish business in treasure yellow heaven.

The year Gu business had three big sellers, but the dragonfish business was led by You Chan alone, she was far above the other Gu Immortals, she had been the number one for decades.

On one hand, she was a water path Gu Immortal, she had a natural advantage in raising dragonfish. On the other hand, she occupied the famous dragonfish sea area, this was a natural breeding ground, the scale was massive.

You Chan not only produced dragonfish in her immortal aperture, she even occupied an area in Eastern Sea, with both production grounds, her dragonfish stock was unsurmountable.

Other than these external factors, You Chan was a cautious person with many acquaintances, she could acutely observe people and had very perceptive senses.

You Chan naturally had her special traits to be able to dominate the dragonfish business.

This time, Fang Yuan secretly increased the stock of his dragonfish and was immediately sensed by You Chan.

You Chan bought a batch of dragonfish from Fang Yuan and after observing them, she realized that Fang Yuan was a huge foe!

You Chan placed a lot of attention on it and immediately tried to probe Fang Yuan’s background.

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated.

But even though she tried to disguise as a buyer and wanted to probe information from him, Fang Yuan’s will left behind no flaws. Even when You Chan expressed her will to communicate with Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan did not show up.

After several days, You Chan felt increasing pressure, she found that Fang Yuan’s stock was gradually increasing.

And in treasure yellow heaven’s market, there were already many Gu Immortals observing this change.

Even though Fang Yuan did not create a commotion, You Chan was starting to feel greater pressure.

“I cannot continue like this.” You Chan could not wait anymore, she left the dragonfish sea area.

She did not fly, she was swimming, after several hundred li, she found an undercurrent.

You Chan went into the undercurrent and used this natural phenomenon to accelerate her journey.

This was Eastern Sea’s special trait, the other four regions did not have it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1472: Fang Yuan’s Engagement

You Chan was a water path Gu Immortal to begin with, she used the undercurrent to travel, it was faster than normal Gu Immortals flying.

She went through many undercurrents, after some days, You Chan arrived in Nan Gong clan’s sea territory.

Nan Gong clan was a righteous path super force of Eastern Sea, after You Chan came to their territorial border, she stopped and landed on a nameless island.

She was here in Nan Gong clan to seek help, she had already used information path methods to inform him before coming.

As expected, You Chan did not wait long, a Nan Gong clan Gu Immortal was waiting for her.

“Fairy You Chan, Master Hua sent me here to welcome you, he is already waiting at Hua Qiao Pavilion.” The Nan Gong clan Gu Immortal was very respectful, he did not display the prideful nature of a super force member.

On one hand, he only had rank six cultivation level, while You Chan was rank seven. On another hand, You Chan was a lone cultivator but had many connections, she was also one of the six publicly recognized great fairies in Eastern Sea, her reputation was well known, the Nan Gong clan Gu Immortal had to give her ample respect.

“Thank you.” You Chan smiled lightly, she instantly made the Nan Gong clan Gu Immortal’s heart beat faster.

“Fairy, follow me.” The Nan Gong clan Gu Immortal regained his cool and led the way.

You Chan entered the sea along with him into the undercurrent, after several transitions, You Chan saw an Immortal Gu House in the sea.

This Immortal Gu House was specially constructed, there was a pavilion in the center, there were stone tables and chairs in it, a Gu Immortal was brewing tea.

You Chan followed the Nan Gong clan Gu Immortal to enter the pavilion.

The man inside smiled as he said: “Fairy You Chan, you came from afar, sorry that I could not welcome you.”

You Chan smiled: “Hua An, you are one of the three wisdom path experts in

Eastern Sea, what can I do if you act so arrogantly?”

You Chan and Hua An were very good friends, they were just playing with each other.

The truth was, Hua An was originally a Hua clan Gu Immortal, but due to certain reasons, he left Hua clan. Hua clan was a righteous path super force, while escaping, Hua An obtained You Chan’s help, the two became good friends.

After that, Nan Gong clan took in Hua An and he cultivated until he became reputed in Eastern Sea for wisdom path.

There was a poem about it: Jia Dan sits in twin polar, Hua An hides in Nan Gong, there is also Dragon Head Tortoise, living inside adversity sea.

The second verse was talking about him, Hua An.

Even though Hua An was in Nan Gong clan, he was threatened by Hua clan all along, he had faced their assassination attempts multiple times. Thus, he usually stayed inside Nan Gong clan’s headquarters and rarely went out. Now that he took the risk to meet You Chan, it displayed his sincerity.

You Chan knew about Hua An’s predicaments, she was satisfied that he met with her, she even felt a little joyful.

Hua An laughed before pointing: “Fairy, take a seat.”

You Chan did not stand on ceremony, she sat down and drank tea, before sighing: “The tea is good, but my heart is full of worries, I cannot appreciate it fully.”

Hua An nodded: “Tell me in detail, fairy, I will do my best to plan for you and resolve your worries!”

You Chan was drinking tea, while Fang Yuan drank wine.

He was not drinking ordinary wine, this was engagement wine.

And this engagement wine was not anyone else’s but his own!

“Congratulations Lord Fang Yuan and Fairy Xue Er, it is truly wonderful that both of you lovers could get together. Hahaha!” Bing Zhuo laughed loudly as he spoke and toasted.

Fang Yuan smiled and raised his cup in response, he looked around the place.

This hall had two or three banquet tables, they were all filled with Gu Immortals.

Most of them were variant human Gu Immortals, there were snowmen, hairy men, inkmen, and rockmen. Other than that, there was the Shadow Sect members led by Fang Yuan. Bai Ning Bing was not among them.

Fang Yuan had rank eight battle strength, this was his engagement ceremony, he had an important status in the Northern Plains variant human alliance, almost all their Gu Immortals joined in.

The snowman Gu Immortals cheered, while the rockman Gu Immortals had stiff expressions.

This engagement ceremony was a good thing for the snowman tribe, but for the rockmen, seeing their neighbor that had been suppressed gaining a rank eight battle strength was simply a huge nightmare!

“Elder Bing Yuan, you really did something amazing. I am truly impressed, I am very, very impressed.” At the banquet, the rockman first supreme elder Shi Zong said in a grim tone towards Bing Yuan.

Bing Yuan was the grandmother of Xue Er, she was the one who initiated and planned the marriage with Fang Yuan, they had finally seen some results now.

“This is the blessing of my granddaughter, sigh, to speak the truth, our tribe is the unworthy party.” Bing Yuan pretended not to notice Shi Zong’s mocking tone and responded while looking at the main table.

Over there, Fang Yuan was sitting at the main seat, Xue Er was close beside him, having an uneasy expression.

Bing Yuan sighed, she seemed to be having a glamorous time, but she was internally worried.

This was not the wedding that she wanted, it was merely an engagement ceremony. Bing Yuan could fully feel Fang Yuan’s shrewdness, just this engagement ceremony alone made the snowmen pay a hefty price.

This was her negotiation with Fang Yuan, after many difficult negotiations, they finally obtained this result.

Both sides gave in a little, Fang Yuan obtained a new batch of resources, the snowmen could finally make use of Fang Yuan’s authority.

“But to get this Fang Yuan to become one of us, such a person... did I do the right thing?” Bing Yuan thought about her discussion with Fang Yuan as she started doubting this entire thing.

But on the surface, Bing Yuan did not show any emotions, she smiled and interacted in the banquet, it was a great atmosphere.

Eastern Sea.

Hua An had a look of shame as he said to You Chan: “Fairy, I have disappointed you, I could not deduce this person’s background.”

“Even you, Master Hua, could not?” You Chan felt very surprised.

Hua An had a solemn expression: “Firstly, just simply having the dragonfish clues make it hard to deduce. Secondly, this person has a killer move to conceal themselves that resists wisdom path deductions.”

You Chan heard this and felt even more alerted. The other party had wisdom path methods to defend against deductions, but she did not.

The enemy had it but she did not, they either came prepared or had a force behind them. No matter which one, it showed that the enemy was very powerful.

“Don’t tell me the other party’s wisdom path attainment is even greater than yours? You are one of the three greatest wisdom path experts in Eastern Sea, you could not deduce it?” You Chan was unresigned.

“Fairy, you are mistaken, wisdom path is different from water path. In this scene, it is like a river, the enemy has set up a dam at the narrowest part. No matter how wide the river is, after this dam, the water would become shallow and slow. We wisdom path Gu Immortals can create huge waves in deep rivers but after this crucial dam, we cannot use any of our abilities, the effort is not worth the results." Hua An explained patiently, thinking that You Chan was a water path cultivator, he used water as an analogy.

"Not just me, any other wisdom path Gu Immortal will not succeed in the deduction unless they break this layer of defense. Even though this defense is only at rank six level."

You Chan was distressed. She did not know much about wisdom path, in fact, most Gu Immortals did not know about wisdom path details.

On one hand, wisdom path Gu Immortals had always been rare, on the other hand, wisdom path Gu Immortals who knew about wisdom path profundities would not want to tell the world about their specific details and inheritances.

You Chan originally thought that with Hua An's help, she would be able to find Fang Yuan's information, but to think that she failed here.

But the more this was the case, the more You Chan did not want to give up.

Hua An understood her personality.

You Chan was not only beautiful, she also had the tenacity of water, she could reach her status and gain such accomplishments due to her hard work.

Thus, Hua An suggested: "We can probe even further, as long as we have more information and clues, I will have a greater chance of getting past his defenses. Even if one clue is minor, if we have a lot of them, we will eventually find our way to success."

You Chan nodded: "Wait a moment."

She immediately sent her consciousness into treasure yellow heaven as she looked for Fang Yuan's will.

Her earlier probes did not succeed, but now she still wanted to try.

"You Chan, stop trying to test me. I am interested in the dragonfish business, or rather, I definitely want to be involved in this business." Fang Yuan's will told You Chan immediately.

You Chan was shocked!

Her expression changed, her consciousness returned to her body and she informed Hua An.

Hua An's expression changed too: "This... I'm afraid he has a huge background!"

"I am the number one person in the dragonfish business, how can someone competing with me have no background?" You Chan rolled her eyes at Hua An.

Hua An shook his head, he had a solemn expression: "I am talking about his wisdom path attainment. My earlier deduction was noticed by him and he did a reverse deduction on us, that's how he found out your identity. I was already very careful, but he could actually deduce your identity with such limited information, his wisdom path attainment is definitely not lower than mine. In fact... it could be higher!"

"Is that so?!" You Chan was shocked yet again.

She did not expect that after finding Hua An for help, not only did he fail to find out their background, she even got exposed in advance!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1473: Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence Physique

The banquet was extremely lively, this engagement ceremony had an extremely heavy political impact.

Not only for the variant human alliance, but also for Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not reject any of the toasts from the variant human Gu Immortals, with his interpersonal skills, he greatly improved his relationship with all the variant human Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan’s original status was quite awkward.

He was a pure bred human, inside the variant human alliance, he was a loner by nature. The variant humans were suspicious towards Fang Yuan from the start.

But this time, Fang Yuan had an engagement with Xue Er, the feeling was different now. He had squeezed his way into the variant human Gu Immortal circle. Before this, he was only part of Lang Ya Sect.

“Of course, the true reason is because I have rank eight battle strength.” Fang Yuan was crystal clear about this.

In the Gu Master world, an entity could rule above the group. As long as one had high cultivation level and battle strength, they would be unstoppable.

“If she knew I had rank eight battle strength, would You Chan have backed off?” Fang Yuan suddenly had a thought in his mind.

The dragonfish business was Fang Yuan’s next focus in his immortal aperture development.

If You Chan backed off now, it would be perfect for Fang Yuan. But unfortunately, You Chan would not do that.

Fang Yuan shook his head secretly.

You Chan was currently one of the beneficiaries, it was too difficult to get her to give up her share of the cake. In treasure yellow heaven, even rank six Gu Immortals dared to contest rank eight Gu Immortals openly in business, or even provoke them.

Treasure yellow heaven was a place not even Heavenly Court could take over!

“You Chan... Eastern Sea’s six beauties... Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence Physique...” Fang Yuan entertained the guests as he thought in his mind.

Others did not know You Chan’s secret, but after gaining Shadow Sect’s inheritance, Fang Yuan learned about many crucial details. One of them stated that You Chan had one of the ten extreme physiques, the Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence Physique!

This was You Chan’s greatest secret, she had hidden it well, but Shadow Sect had a specialized method to search for the ten extreme physiques.

In order to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, Shadow Sect needed to gather all ten extreme physiques, during this process, they found out about You Chan’s secret.

But back then, Shadow Sect already had the Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence Physique, so they did not target You Chan.

As for why You Chan had the Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence Physique but cultivated water path, that was the difficulty faced by lone cultivators. You Chan obtained a water path inheritance in the past, without other options, she had to cultivate it solely.

And later, it was too hard to change paths due to the risks involved, You Chan thus went on with it until now.

Fang Yuan could deduce that You Chan was deducing him because he had a lot of information about her, he knew that she was his biggest competition in the dragonfish business. On the other hand, Fang Yuan had ghost official garment and many of Purple Mountain True Monarch’s killer moves, he even had the methods from Shadow Sect and Lang Ya Sect.

As for the Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence Physique, it was written in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, chapter four, section twenty-seven —

Legend says that the miniman surpassed Boundless Forest Samsara and persevered to build the ladder and made his way out of Ordinary Abyss.

When the miniman saw Ren Zu, Ren Zu sighed, if he had perseverance Gu back then, he would have conquered Reverse Flow River and would not have created such a mess.

Ren Zu wanted to save his children, but until now, he had not achieved anything.

Ren Zu saw that the miniman had perseverance Gu and gained new hope, he said to the miniman: “Miniman, oh miniman, I need your help.”

The miniman asked: “Oh Ren Zu, how do you want me to help you?”

Ren Zu told the miniman that he wanted to borrow and use perseverance Gu.

The miniman said: “Oh Ren Zu, the reason why I could leave Ordinary Abyss was because I used the trees that you planted. I chopped down those trees and built my ladder, thus, I owe you a favor.”

The miniman agreed to lend perseverance Gu to Ren Zu.

But after Ren Zu gained perseverance Gu, he realized he could not use it.

“This is the perseverance of the miniman, not yours, Ren Zu.” Cognition Gu appeared at this time and told Ren Zu this fact.

Ren Zu was anguished, he sighed deeply.

He asked cognition Gu: “Then what should I do? I know that perseverance Gu can help me but I cannot use it. I know the feathermen can help me but love cannot control them.”

Cognition Gu told Ren Zu: “Nobody can force anyone to love them, but you can create a Gu to lure the feathermen into helping you do things. Think about it, how did the miniman gain perseverance Gu?”

Cognition Gu’s words were a huge inspiration to Ren Zu.

Ren Zu was overjoyed: “Oh cognition Gu, thank you for the great idea. I know what to do now, I want to create my own Gu.”

Cognition Gu was curious: “What Gu is that?”

Ren Zu shook his head: “I am not sure, but I have an idea. I want this Gu to be something everyone in the world wants.”

Thus, Ren Zu left Ordinary Abyss and went to the blue sea.

This was the blue sea that formed life Gu, it was the source of all life in the world.

Ren Zu had walked ashore from the blue sea, he was back here again.

Ren Zu was thirsty, he scooped up the blue sea water and drank a few mouthfuls, he got more thirsty as he drank it, but Ren Zu was satisfied: “I want to use the blue sea water to refine Gu. After I succeed, no matter who obtains it, they will never be satisfied, they will want more.”

Thus, Ren Zu took away a lot of blue sea water.

After the sea level reduced, the beach was exposed. Ren Zu found that there were many sea urchin-like Gu on the beach.

This was not life Gu, it was difficulty Gu.

Any life would face difficulties.

Ren Zu’s eyes shone, he said: “I want to refine Gu that everyone needs, but to obtain it, there will be difficulties.”

Thus, he took many difficulty Gu.

After doing all these, Ren Zu left the blue sea and headed to the door of life and death.

After entering it, Ren Zu did not go deeply into the door of life and death, but only walked one round around the road of life.

He gathered a lot of worry Gu as he said: “I want to refine Gu that after getting it, people will not abandon easily, they will be worried that it will go missing.”

After leaving the door of life and death, along the way, Ren Zu met with sadness Gu.

Ren Zu laughed happily: “Excellent, I want to refine Gu in which once people lose it, they will be very sad. This way, people will not abandon it easily.”

Thus, he collected the sadness Gu.

Ren Zu had gathered everything, he started to refine Gu.

The flames of the Gu refinement raged on, a lot of black smoke was produced, attracting many Gu and lifeforms to come and watch.

“Oh Ren Zu, what Gu are you trying to refine?” Stupidity Gu was lured here as it asked curiously.

Ren Zu smiled: “Oh stupidity Gu, if you want to know, go into the fire and see for yourself.”

Stupidity Gu went inside and never came out again.

Not long after, wisdom Gu came here as well, it asked: “Oh Ren Zu, what are you trying to refine?”

Ren Zu laughed: “Oh wisdom Gu, if you want to know, go into the fire and see for yourself.”

Wisdom Gu flew in too.

But it only flew into the black smoke, once its vision was obscured, it flew around randomly and flew out again.

“Ren Zu, oh Ren Zu, I was almost deceived by you. I already know what you are refining, I am leaving.” Saying this, wisdom Gu flew away.

Ren Zu felt that it was a pity, he sighed: “This way, after my Gu is refined, it can enslave stupid people, and blind wise people for some time.”

Days passed one by one.

The Gu refinement flame continued to burn, but he did not succeed.

The black smoke did not fade away, it gathered in the sky and created huge black clouds.

“Oh Ren Zu, you must have felt it, we are just one step away. This final step is the most crucial one.” Cognition Gu said.

Ren Zu nodded, he stood up with determination and walked towards the fire: “It seems that this Gu needs to be created with human hands.”

Saying so, Ren Zu chopped off both hands and threw them into the fire.

Boom!

The flame exploded as the endless dark clouds in the sky faded, under the golden sunlight that shone down, a little girl appeared before Ren Zu.

“Oh father, thank you for giving life to me, I am Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence.” The girl was radiating an aura of prosperity, she smiled towards Ren Zu.

Ren Zu looked at her and laughed: “Hahaha, I have another daughter now. But wait, did my Gu refinement succeed?”

Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence opened her right palm as she held the Gu towards Ren Zu: “Look father, this is the Gu that you refined, it is called — Wealth.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1474: Wealth Gu

Western Desert.

This was a desert, the terrain was flat and endless towards the horizon.

There was a cracked rocky terrain with no vegetation growing.

But deep underground, it was another world. There was a huge mine built in an area full of natural ore.

A hundred thousand rockmen were living here as miners, excavating all sorts of materials for Gu Immortals.

This was the famous myriad ore desert in Western Desert, it was in the control of the super force Shi clan.

The ore here were of various types and had huge quantity.

Other than the mortal resources excavated by the rockmen, a lot of the immortal ore needed Gu Immortals to excavate themselves.

Like the subterranean adamantite, it was the hardest rank six immortal material. Or the dark inkstone, even the ancient sword dragon’s claws could not leave a mark on it.

And deep below this myriad ore desert, there was a huge gold fragment river current.

The gold fragment current was a metallic river in immemorial yellow heaven, a fragment of the immemorial yellow heaven had fallen into the myriad ore desert back then.

The immemorial yellow heaven fragment was once a land of treasures explored by Gu Immortals and Gu Masters. But as time passed and eras changed, the fragment got smaller and smaller before dissipating.

In the process of dissipating, the dao marks that left it turned the surrounding desert into the myriad ore desert. And this gold fragment current was part of that fragment in the past, it had not dried up even until today.

Fang Yuan’s Mini Yellow Heaven also had a gold fragment current, but it was very small, it was like an ant compared to the myriad ore desert’s gold fragment current.

And in this huge gold fragment current, there was an immortal Gu formation.

The Gu formation had been active all the time, monitoring the myriad ore desert and controlling the countless rockmen miners.

Boom!

Suddenly, there was a huge explosion as a blinding light emerged from the immortal formation, a crack was created in it as a door opened.

Thick smoke came out from within the door.

“Cough, cough.” From the colorful smoke, a rockman Gu Immortal walked out.

But as he walked out, the rock skin on him fell off as his true identity was revealed.

He was a pure bred human Gu Immortal.

He was middle aged and had a mature gaze, his appearance was ordinary, he seemed like an easy going person.

Right now, he was covered in soot as he coughed.

“The eighty-ninth Gu refinement failed as well!” The middle aged Gu Immortal sighed as he coughed out blood.

The blood clumps he coughed out were very special, after landing on the ground, they turned into all sorts of jewels, there were pearls, agate, jade, gold, silver, bronze, and more.

If Fang Yuan was here, he would be shocked if he saw this, even with his knowledge.

What was the reason this middle aged Gu Immortal suffered such a weird injury?

The middle aged Gu Immortal looked at the jewels around him as he had a peaceful appearance, not feeling surprised.

Because he knew what he was doing, he was refining wealth Gu!

Wealth Gu, it was a legendary Gu written in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

According to Ren Zu’s biography, it was made from blue sea water, Ren Zu’s hands, worry Gu, difficulty Gu, sadness Gu, wisdom Gu, and stupidity Gu.

However, it was basically impossible for the Gu Immortal to refine this Gu according to that recipe now.

This was not just because it was a story, but because a lot of details were subtle and not literal. And these materials were already extinct in the current world.

Fang Yuan had rank nine wisdom Gu even though it was not refined by him yet.

But the blue sea was already missing, how could anyone find blue sea water?

Even if they had it, what about Ren Zu’s hands?

Then why was this middle aged Gu Immortal trying to refine wealth Gu?

It was the usual saying, man is the spirit of all living beings, Gu is the essence of heaven and earth, humans could create countless recipes to refine an Immortal Gu.

The method in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> could not be used, but the Gu Immortal could modify the recipe themselves!

This middle aged Gu Immortal cultivated earth path, but he had a fortuitous encounter in his early days, he obtained an incomplete Immortal Gu recipe.

It was unknown who was that person who left this incomplete recipe of wealth Gu in his research to refine it.

The middle aged Gu Immortal obtained it and treated it as his treasure, because he knew that it was a precious Gu recipe and the predecessor’s contribution was huge, if he worked on this recipe, he could likely refine wealth Gu.

From this wealth Gu recipe, the predecessor managed to deduce the effect of wealth Gu.

If he could refine wealth Gu, he would be able to turn it into anything in this world. That thing could be gold, silver, or bronze, it could be rank six immortal material or even rank nine immortal material.

But wealth Gu could not turn into any living being, including animals, plants, humans, variant humans, and Gu.

“If I refine wealth Gu, I will be able to turn it into any immortal material in the world, it is a hugely profitable business. I only need to convert it into an extinct Gu material to gain immense wealth, I can even increase my cultivation foundation and surpass the entire Shi clan!” The middle aged Gu Immortal was extremely moved, he wanted to refine wealth Gu desperately.

He did not tell anyone about this, he was afraid of people’s greed.

This middle aged Gu Immortal was Shi Zhong.

Shi clan was a righteous path super force in Western Desert.

Shi Zhong had an awkward position in Shi clan. Even though he had rank seven cultivation level, he was ostracized by Shi clan’s Gu Immortals.

There was a historical reason for this, Shi Zhong’s father betrayed the clan and caused huge losses to them, not just in resources but also Gu Immortals’ lives.

Thus, since a young age, Shi Zhong had not been well treated by the Shi clan Gu Immortals.

In order to gain trust, Shi Zhong changed his name to Shi Zhong 1 to express his loyalty to the clan. But that did not change anything.

He was sent away by Shi clan’s first supreme elder to defend this myriad ore desert.

This place had abundant resources, but it bordered other super forces that were enemies of Shi clan, Shi Zhong was in great danger here. And there was little profits to be gained because this immortal formation was monitored the entire time, it was so strict Shi Zhong had no chance to do anything.

The truth was, even if it was not strict, Shi Zhong would not try anything. If he was found out, his circumstances would be much worse.

Precisely so, Shi Zhong held great anticipation towards wealth Gu.

“The basis of Gu Immortal cultivation is the management of one’s immortal aperture. Without deep assets and foundation, no matter how much your battle strength is, that is only temporary, it is like building a skyscraper on a ground of sand.” Shi Zhong had this realization, he had been working hard, even though the process was tough, he had never given up.

Thinking about his Gu Immortal cultivation journey, other than preparing for the necessary tribulations, he had invested all of his resources into the project of refining wealth Gu.

“Eighty-nine failures, I do not have enough humans now.” Shi Zhong healed his injuries and checked his inventory, he realized that his human Gu material was insufficient, he had to collect more.

Shi Zhong was a righteous path Gu Immortal, but he actually used humans as Gu material, that was a demonic act.

But as long as he kept it a secret, nobody would know, Shi Zhong did not leave any evidence behind, nobody could target him.

Shi Zhong was very cautious in this, he would not let anyone find any clues to his actions. The human slaves that he bought were all from treasure yellow heaven, they were very safe purchases.

“I am using humans in place of the blue sea water in wealth Gu’s recipe as well as Ren Zu’s hands. This is not wrong. But was it not enough, do I need to add in lifespan Gu as well?”

Shi Zhong considered.

He had lifespan Gu, but he did not dare to waste them.

“<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> wrote that even though wisdom Gu was not sacrificed like stupidity Gu, it was part of the refinement process, I do not have wisdom Gu, I used other wisdom path Gu worms in place of it, I can improve upon this aspect.”

Worry Gu, difficulty Gu, sadness Gu, Shi Zhong had all of these mortal Gu, they were not hard to get.

He could even refine stupidity Gu himself.

“The Gu recipe is getting more and more complete.” Shi Zhong healed his injuries and inspected the blood he spat on the ground.

His blood had turned into jewels and ore.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1475: Heavenly Secret Gu Refined!

Shi Zhong had been immersed in this for a long time, he could tell that he had improved by observing his blood clumps.

“Even though I improved this time, I am still far from success, there are a few missing steps. I need to work harder!” Shi Zhong was very experienced in this, he had a strong instinct developing.

He calculated and it was time to feed his Immortal Gu again.

Shi Zhong inherited his family’s inheritance, he had multiple Immortal Gu, that made the other Shi clan Gu Immortals very envious. It was a pity that taking over the inheritance had rules and could not be broken.

Shi Zhong owning these Immortal Gu was also a reason why he was targeted and ostracized by other Shi clan Gu Immortals.

He inspected his inventory and felt a huge headache.

“It is a little troublesome, I lack some food. I forgot that when refining wealth Gu, because I was missing some materials, I sold some of the food for my Immortal Gu that I had prepared earlier.”

“At this time... it is too difficult to gather more food. I should buy some dragonfish in place of the food, and feed my Immortal Gu first.”

Thinking of this, Shi Zhong did not hesitate, his consciousness went into treasure yellow heaven.

“Dragonfish...” He had a clear objective, he found that many Gu Immortals were selling dragonfish.

As a buyer, he had to compare the goods of multiple sellers.

The dragonfish business was not like year Gu, it was sold all year round. Because dragonfish bred in all seasons, its market was lively at all times.

Shi Zhong first went to You Chan’s stall.

As everyone knew, You Chan was the number one dragonfish seller in treasure yellow heaven.

But she did not sell only dragonfish, she also sold other products, though primarily fish species.

In the past, when Shi Zhong wanted to buy dragonfish, he would get them from You Chan because her reputation made her very trustworthy.

If things went as expected, he would buy dragonfish from her this time as well.

After seeing You Chan’s goods, Shi Zhong did not buy them yet, he went to look around.

He soon found Fang Yuan’s stall.

“Hmm? Someone is selling dragonfish here too? There is a quite a high quantity.” Shi Zhong looked around and felt quite surprised.

He inspected and found that the dragonfish sold here were high in quantity and quality, they were on par with You Chan’s dragonfish.

“And this stall seems more popular too.” Shi Zhong looked around, there were several Gu Immortal wills here, as well as some divine senses communicating here.

“To think that after being in secluded cultivation for so long, the dragonfish business in treasure yellow heaven has a new strong contender.” Shi Zhong was thinking when a Gu Immortal will went to him and spoke.

“Friend, you are here to buy dragonfish too? Why don’t we buy it together, it will be cheaper.” This divine sense said.

“Oh? What is going on?” Shi Zhong asked.

That divine sense explained: “You do not know? The dragonfish seller here has different rules. As long as you purchase beyond a certain quantity, the price will be lower. There are several classifications, but the point is that the more you buy, the cheaper it is.”

Shi Zhong heard this and praised in his mind: “This method is great.”

Next, he thought of himself: “Maybe I can use this method when I sell things in the future.”

Shi Zhong considered it and felt the brilliance of this method.

Even though it was essentially a drop in prices, with a higher quantity sold, the overall profits would still increase. Compared to the year Gu price war earlier, this method was much more subtle and profound.

“Using this method not only makes the sales of the dragonfish higher, it can raise their reputation. If someone really wants to buy dragonfish, to make it cheaper, they will invite their friends or even strangers to buy it together, it is a form of publicity for the seller.”

Shi Zhong kept thinking about it, he felt that the dragonfish seller truly had amazing ideas.

“No wonder the Gu Immortal stall here has more people compared to that number one seller.”

“Hehe, there might be proxies here set by the seller, not here to buy dragonfish but only existing to create a crowd.”

Shi Zhong instantly felt interest about this seller.

“Forget it, I will buy it from here. The price is cheaper after all!” Thinking about this, Shi Zhong communicated with the unknown immortal and worked together.

Both sides were very happy, after both sides negotiated, they purchased a hundred thousand dragonfish together.

After the purchase, they split the goods in treasure yellow heaven and returned satisfied.

Setting aside how Shi Zhong is going to feed his Immortal Gu, the Gu Immortal who cooperated with Shi Zhong immediately left treasure yellow heaven after getting the goods and returned to the sovereign immortal aperture.

Shi Zhong guessed right, the person who bought it with him was a proxy, they were not Fang Yuan but one of the other Gu Immortals from Shadow Sect.

Even if people could guess this, how could they prove it in treasure yellow heaven?

There was no way.

Actually, this was not a method invented by Fang Yuan.

Shi Zhong had been focused on Gu refinement and did not pay much attention to treasure yellow heaven, this method had been used by people long ago.

The novelty of the idea was not important, only the effect mattered.

Ignoring anything else, Fang Yuan was very successful at doing this.

These last days, as he increased the quantity of his goods in treasure yellow heaven, he had gotten much more attention.

A huge quantity represented his capabilities. Buyers were naturally more willing to buy from a more reliable seller.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan used the appropriate method to sell them, his reputation was slowly climbing.

Fang Yuan’s dragonfish were of high quality, with the food path immortal formation, their quality would only continue to increase.

Initially, there were few Gu Immortals who bought from him and they only bought a few each time. But gradually, more and more Gu Immortals bought dragonfish from him, the quantity sold was rapidly increasing as well, in fact, he was getting recurring customers.

As Fang Yuan’s greatest dragonfish business competitor, Eastern Sea’s You Chan was still selling her dragonfish calmly without any commotion.

“You Chan’s inaction is correct, because in the short term, my method cannot threaten her. In fact, if she tries to use a similar tactic, it would greatly erode her earnings. After all, she is selling much more dragonfish than me.” Fang Yuan thought to himself.

You Chan was acting very calmly in this situation, she had a great disposition.

“But after a while, she will start getting worried. Hehe.” Fang Yuan was very confident.

The food path immortal formation he created only used a few Immortal Gu and some immortal essence to use, it was extraordinary.

But this method needed at least several or even a dozen generations of dragonfish breeding to see effect.

You Chan was not anxious, neither was Fang Yuan, the longer this dragged on, the greater his advantage in the dragonfish business.

After retrieving his divine sense from treasure yellow heaven, Fang Yuan came to the Gu refinement hall and saw Sixth Hair.

Sixth Hair was thin and haggard, in order to refine Gu for Fang Yuan, he had gone all out, he was exhausted both mentally and physically.

Now, he was at the final step of heavenly secret Gu’s refinement.

It was time for Fang Yuan to act.

White light filled the Gu refinement hall, nobody could open their eyes in such intense light.

Fang Yuan shut his eyes and entered the white light, he stopped when he got to the center.

An intense aura assaulted him, it was neither mortal nor immortal, it was in-between, at the final step before a qualitative change.

“We can start now.” Fang Yuan cleared his mind as he transmitted to Sixth Hair.

After counting down, Sixth Hair deactivated the refinement path immortal formation in the hall.

Fang Yuan immediately took over!

Countless thoughts emerged from his mind, he used wisdom path methods concurrently, he took over the immortal formation successfully, under his hard work, the surrounding white light condensed and formed into a huge ring.

The ring was parallel to the ground, it surrounded Fang Yuan with him in the center.

Refinement path killer move — Heavenly Light Ring!

The first rotation.

Fang Yuan willed as the ring started to rotate slowly.

The first rotation succeeded, at the second rotation.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes and used his gaze to move the ring, it started to rotate even faster.

After several minutes, the second rotation succeeded, and at the third rotation.

Fang Yuan used his breath to move the ring, after a moment, he succeeded.

The fourth, fifth, and sixth rotations also succeeded as time passed, Fang Yuan was at the final seventh rotation.

“It seems that sect leader put in a lot of effort after that failure.” Sixth Hair watched from the side with anxiety, he sighed.

Seventh rotation.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth and did his best to rotate the ring.

Right now, the ring had already shrunk to basin-size, it floated above his head.

Boom!

With a soft sound, the ring shrunk into a tiny speck.

This was a Gu.

Rank seven heavenly secret Gu landed on Fang Yuan’s head.

“I actually succeeded.” Even the person himself, Fang Yuan, was surprised.

He failed the first refinement, but actually succeeded on the second try.

After his surprise, Fang Yuan felt intense joy.

“Maybe it was because I used luck path methods and had really good luck.”

Fang Yuan took heavenly secret Gu down from his head and looked at it.

This Immortal Gu resembled a dragonfly, but upon closer inspection, it looked more like a twig.

The entire heavenly secret Immortal Gu was very long, it was half the length of an adult arm.

Its body was thin and long like a twig, it was very soft. There were seven feathered wings on each of its two sides, they were thin and green, resembling leaves.

It was flying casually in the air, or rather, it was so slow it looked like it was floating.

Fang Yuan observed it for a while before letting out a breath of air, sighing: “I finally refined heavenly secret Immortal Gu!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1476: Heaven’s Will Dissipation

Deep under Eastern Sea.

“I am ashamed, you came all this way but I could not help you.” Hua An smiled bitterly as he said to You Chan.

The two were parting now.

You Chan came to find Hua An for help, but because of Fang Yuan’s superior wisdom path defense method, not only did Hua An fail to find out anything, You Chan even got exposed in the process.

After hearing Hua An’s words, You Chan shook her head, she looked at Hua An’s strands of white hair as she said sincerely: “Hua An, don’t say that. You expended your own lifespan for my matter when doing the deduction, I will engrave this in my mind. The reason we did not succeed was because the other party was too strong.”

Hua An nodded: “Your opponent this time is not simple. But no matter what, I failed to help you this time, if you need any help in the future, come and find me, as long as you do not mind my low attainment in wisdom path.”

“Hehehe, oh you.” You Chan smiled, Hua An’s words made her eyes shine, the gloominess in her heart dissipated.

The two bid farewell.

You Chan flew in the sky.

The wind brushed against her face and clothes.

While feeling this cold wind, she was calm as ice.

“Even though the opponent is very strong, I will not give up!”

“Even though Hua An failed to deduce anything, that does not mean I do not have strength. It is time to counterattack in my own way.”

You Chan made up her mind, looking at the sky and sea, her face was filled with determination.

Fang Yuan soon caught wind of You Chan’s new actions.

He had been paying attention to her.

You Chan added a new rule when selling the dragonfish. As long as returning customers bought from her, they would get a discount. For a period of ten years, as long as they bought dragonfish from her across consecutive years, they would get higher discounts.

Once she did that, she stabilized the situation. Many of the buyers who were lured to Fang Yuan earlier returned to her quickly.

You Chan’s method made full use of her advantage, she was bullying Fang Yuan for being a complete newcomer in this business!

Fang Yuan could not employ this same method with the same effectiveness as her.

Not only did You Chan do this, she also increased her stock of dragonfish in treasure yellow heaven, they piled up into a mountain, her desolate beast dragonfish could form into an army.

She was blatantly displaying her huge wealth and foundation.

With this, she obtained great results.

Treasure yellow heaven's discussions were all regarding You Chan.

"You Chan is the number one seller after all, to think that she had so much dragonfish for sale."

"That challenger must be stunned now, no matter who he is, there is a difference between him and You Chan."

"You Chan has been in this business for so long, her number one throne is not so easy to take down."

"Let's wait a while, I feel like the mysterious challenger is not so simple."

A small group of Gu Immortals were awaiting Fang Yuan's response.

But for the following period of time, Fang Yuan did not do anything, it was as if he did not hear about You Chan's actions.

Fang Yuan still sold his dragonfish like before, even though his business was just starting to take off, he had suffered a huge blow.

"You Chan's current strength far surpasses me. My current strength is too low, if we compete, it will not be wise." Even Fang Yuan himself had to admit that after seeing You Chan's assets, his foundation in the dragonfish business was much lower than You Chan.

Fang Yuan had only raised his dragonfish for so long, You Chan had been in this for a longer period. This was Fang Yuan's weakness in accumulation, he could not catch up to her in the meantime.

Fang Yuan endured You Chan's counterattack and provocation.

Those Gu Immortals who were watching the show gave up on their expectations towards Fang Yuan.

Only You Chan did not put down her wariness.

Fang Yuan's inaction was a surprise to her, she felt a little worried.

A sheathed sword was the scariest, if Fang Yuan had reacted to her actions, You Chan would be able to counterattack based on his actions. But Fang Yuan refused to do anything, You Chan did not know what to do now, she was naturally feeling vexed and worried.

"Should I go on the offensive? Should I force him to react?" You Chan thought about it, she decided to use the most stable method.

"Forget it, this situation is greatly advantageous to me, at this rate, in a few months, this mysterious opponent's business will completely collapse, he will lose all of his customers."

“In this situation, why should I be worried? He should be the anxious one.”

You Chan cultivated water path, she knew the saying ‘water benefits all things but does not contend with them’, there was no need to act excessively 1 .

Fang Yuan observed her for a few days, he soon found that You Chan started to stay passive now.

He praised her in his mind, he realized: he had met with a troublesome opponent this time in the dragonfish business.

But Fang Yuan felt no anxiety.

He had a revised plan for this dragonfish business.

“The longer we drag on, the greater my advantage, I should wait for now.”

His immortal aperture development was stuck at the dragonfish business, but that did not stop him from cultivating other aspects.

His soul foundation had already accumulated to eighty million man soul, he should have gone to hundred million man soul, but during this period, Fang Yuan practiced immortal killer move split soul, his soul was often injured and his foundation was lowered.

But this way, Fang Yuan’s gain was that split soul became more and more complete. He even used the light of wisdom during this period to modify the steps of activating split soul.

Other than split soul, Fang Yuan also practiced other soul path killer moves.

But these killer moves had weaker strength than the original version because he lacked Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan’s current focus was on heavenly secret Immortal Gu.

Different from most Gu Immortals, whenever Fang Yuan obtains a new Immortal Gu, his strength would rise sharply. This was because he had a vast number of inheritances, including the usage of many Immortal Gu.

Heavenly secret Immortal Gu was created by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, it was later refined by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s split soul Old Man Yan Shi, and was destroyed in the battle of Yi Tian Mountain.

Right now, Fang Yuan had refined it again.

Fang Yuan took out heavenly secret Immortal Gu.

Heavenly Secret had seven pairs of feather wings, it was floating before Fang Yuan.

Even until now, when Fang Yuan saw this Immortal Gu, he would sigh at his own good luck.

He did not expect that he had only tried to refine this Gu twice and succeeded on the second try!

This was a rank seven Immortal Gu!

His success was very lucky, it felt like a dream to Fang Yuan. If he had to try again, he had no confidence at all, he could not replicate this success.

Refining Immortal Gu was like this, it could make a Gu Immortal feel a roller coaster of emotions.

Sometimes, one could fail a hundred times without success. But sometimes, they could succeed after one or two tries!

Fang Yuan had refined Gu countless times, he had chains of failures, and also a lucky success like heavenly secret Immortal Gu, refining Gu was really an uncertainty.

It was truly a gamble!

Different from other Immortal Gu, there were only a few immortal killer moves involving heavenly secret Immortal Gu.

This was because Old Man Yan Shi had not created heavenly secret Immortal Gu for a long time, and due to Shadow Sect's plans, Old Man Yan Shi needed to spend a lot of time on the overall plans, and only created a few killer moves for it.

And most importantly, the most valuable move was exposing heavenly secret.

This killer move could predict the contents of heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities, the usefulness of it was immense!

As long as the prediction succeeds, one could put up defensive measures against it, the success rate of the tribulation would rise greatly, this was an Immortal Gu that would greatly shook the Gu Immortal world.

“Or maybe, I can start a business on this?” Fang Yuan had a thought.

Once this business gets on track and becomes reputed, it might not have a stream of profits all year round, but each time he had a deal, the profits would be immense!

There was definitely a market for it.

However, in his current situation, Fang Yuan thought about it and gave up.

Because he did not want to expose the Immortal Gu.

His greatest enemy was Heavenly Court.

He had ten years to stop Heavenly Court from repairing fate Gu completely.

Right now, even though he developed rapidly, he was still endlessly far away from this goal, there was no hope of success.

In this situation, Fang Yuan needed to keep heavenly secret Immortal Gu as his trump card, if he did business with it, Heavenly Court's wisdom path Gu Immortals were not fools, they would learn about this.

Thus, Fang Yuan intended to conceal heavenly secret Immortal Gu and not expose news of it.

Wasting no time, Fang Yuan started to practise his killer moves.

This killer move used heavenly secret Immortal Gu as the core, it was not exposing heavenly secret, but was called heaven's will dissipation.

For the short period of time, Fang Yuan did not need to urgently practise exposing heavenly secret.

Because earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations were no longer problems for him, he could easily pass them.

At rank seven, the only risky one was grand tribulations.

But he was far away from a grand tribulation.

Heaven’s will dissipation was a wisdom path killer move, it used heavenly secret Immortal Gu as the core, it targeted heaven’s will and could get rid of heaven’s will completely.

This move was created by Old Man Yan Shi, but he did not succeed, heaven’s will dissipation was only an incomplete move when Fang Yuan obtained it.

Fang Yuan practised it for a while, the incomplete move could not succeed in activation of course, but the process allowed Fang Yuan to learn about the profundity of heaven’s will dissipation.

He praised Old Man Yan Shi’s talent in his mind.

With heavenly secret Immortal Gu’s help, heaven’s will could be directly attacked by the Gu Immortal and eliminate it.

But there were many factors in this, he was still far from actually succeeding.

But that was not a problem for Fang Yuan.

He had lower wisdom path attainment level than Old Man Yan Shi, but he had his own foundation, and he could use the greatest advantage he had, the light of wisdom!

Wisdom Gu showed the power and value of a rank nine Immortal Gu once again.

Several days later, Fang Yuan completed the incomplete heaven’s will dissipation.

After getting this move, he started to use it on Spring Autumn Cicada!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1477: Copper Dragonfish

This Immortal Gu looked like a cicada, its head and stomach were brown and yellow, there were tree bark rings on its surface. The wings on its back were huge, they were translucent and resembled two overlapping tree leaves.

It was emitting rank six Immortal Gu aura at all times.

It was the rank six time path Immortal Gu — Spring Autumn Cicada.

The current Spring Autumn Cicada was sealed by Fang Yuan within the immortal zombie body’s aperture.

Its body was warm and shiny, its wings were green like fresh leaves, this showed that Spring Autumn Cicada had completely recovered, it could be used already.

If it was right after rebirth, Spring Autumn Cicada's body would have no shininess, it would be dark and withered like rotting wood. Its wings would be yellow like the wilting leaves of autumn. The tips of its wings would curl up and look like fallen leaves.

Spring Autumn Cicada had a huge background, it was the Immortal Gu created by one of the ten venerables in human history, Red Lotus Demon Venerable, personally. It was also his vital Gu, it had an important status.

Its effect was to let a Gu Immortal sacrifice everything they had as fuel to move in the River of Time, carrying their will upstream towards the past.

Spring Autumn Cicada's ability was incredible, but it had a major flaw too.

The owner of Spring Autumn Cicada would have their luck weakened at all times. Simply speaking, Spring Autumn Cicada attracted bad luck.

At this moment, Fang Yuan looked at Spring Autumn Cicada with complex emotions.

It had been with him since his previous life, without Spring Autumn Cicada, there would not be Fang Yuan.

There was a question, which Immortal Gu had the biggest significance to a Gu Immortal? This question's answer varied among people, every Gu Immortal had their own answer. But Fang Yuan only had one answer, it was Spring Autumn Cicada!

Forget about his past life, looking at his current life.

Qing Mao Mountain, Three Kings blessed land, Yi Tian mountain, Spring Autumn Cicada displayed its might each time, it was Red Lotus Demon Venerable's vital Gu indeed, Fang Yuan managed to turn the situation around and escape from danger each time.

But after the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, he had lost Spring Autumn Cicada. Even though Fang Yuan regained Spring Autumn Cicada later, it was filled with heaven's will and he could not use it anymore.

Fang Yuan left the control of heaven's will and became its enemy, the Spring Autumn Cicada filled with heaven's will was completely unusable to Fang Yuan.

To display Spring Autumn Cicada's ability again, Fang Yuan would need to get rid of the heaven's will within. If not, even if he tried to rebirth, heaven's will would directly kill him.

"Now let me see how this move works." Fang Yuan muttered as bright light shone in his eyes.

Immortal killer move — Heaven's Will Dissipation!

After some preparation, Fang Yuan's body was covered in a grey-white light.

Next, he used his hand that was covered in the grey-white light to touch the immortal zombie body.

The grey-white light was like flowing water, it flowed down from his body and arm to cover the entire immortal zombie body.

The grey-white light lasted for a while before changing.

Eyes appeared in the grey-white light.

These eyes were multicolored, resembling a rainbow.

They first appeared around Fang Yuan’s palm, before they increased in numbers and spread to the surroundings.

Soon, these multicolored eyeballs covered the immortal zombie body. They blinked as they changed colors with each blink.

Next, the multicolored eyeballs spread towards the aperture.

Eventually, Spring Autumn Cicada’s surface was covered by a small layer of colored eyeballs.

The colored eyeballs blinked continuously, each time they blinked, it was an attack against heaven’s will.

Spring Autumn Cicada started to shake.

The multicolored eyeballs were created and destroyed continuously, Fang Yuan continued to expend his red date immortal essence to allow an unceasing stream of multicolored eyeballs to grow.

Spring Autumn Cicada started to shake intensely.

After a while of shaking, Fang Yuan saw that Spring Autumn Cicada’s surface had a mild crack.

His heart sank as he quickly stopped the killer move.

Guh.

His body shook like he was zapped by lightning, he had stopped the move too quickly, Fang Yuan was injured from it.

But this mild injury could not compare to the safety of Spring Autumn Cicada.

Fang Yuan ignored his injuries, he quickly checked his Spring Autumn Cicada.

The crack on Spring Autumn Cicada was not evident, but Fang Yuan had a vigilant nature, the moment it appeared, he noticed it.

The crack meant that Spring Autumn Cicada was injured.

Almost all Gu worms were fragile, be they rank six, seven, or even nine. Even if Spring Autumn Cicada was Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s vital Gu, it was no exception.

After inspecting it, Fang Yuan’s expression was solemn.

“Heaven’s will...” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth.

Spring Autumn Cicada’s injury was not severe, because he had discovered it early, such a mild injury was easy to handle.

But he could not continue using heaven’s will dissipation.

At this rate, cracks would enlarge and increase in numbers, Spring Autumn Cicada would be destroyed.

Heaven’s will’s influence on Spring Autumn Cicada was far deeper and more severe than Fang Yuan had expected.

Fang Yuan thought about it for a moment and found his solutions.

He had two ways now.

One was to continue modifying immortal killer move heaven’s will dissipation until it could get rid of heaven’s will without harming Spring Autumn Cicada.

The second was to use Shadow Sect’s method, using refinement path methods to refine Spring Autumn Cicada before reverse refining it. During this process, he would get rid of the heaven’s will.

These two methods were flawed.

Modifying heaven’s will dissipation was quite hard. The truth was, it was not easy for Fang Yuan to deduce heaven’s will dissipation, it was near his limit. It was not impossible to continue progressing in this aspect, but he would need to spend a huge amount of time, effort, and resources.

And Shadow Sect’s Gu refinement method was only a concept, it was hard to execute in real life.

Heaven’s will had such a huge influence on Spring Autumn Cicada, along with the risk that came with Gu refinement, as long as it wreaked havoc, accidents would occur during the refinement process.

“It seems that I need to combine both methods, that would be the safest method.” Fang Yuan thought about it, he decided to go ahead with both ways.

Fang Yuan moved quickly, coming to wisdom Gu.

“I’ll rely on you.”

Wisdom Gu flew around Fang Yuan before emitting the light of wisdom.

Bathing in the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan easily used many wisdom path methods. Thoughts moved in his mind like huge waves, countless thoughts were produced and destroyed, they collided and created major fireworks.

Red date immortal essence was expended rapidly, Fang Yuan’s forehead was soon covered in sweat.

The difficulty of the deduction was huge, it was evident from Fang Yuan’s tightly knitted brows.

Fifteen minutes, thirty minutes... after two hours, Fang Yuan stopped.

He let out a breath of air, his expression was pale.

He had given it his all in his deduction, his brain was hurting now, his soul had turned dim, his vision also turned dark.

After resting for some time, Fang Yuan recovered and used the light of wisdom for deductions again.

The deduction was very difficult, his wisdom path grandmaster attainment level was useless here, it was beyond his current capability.

Fang Yuan was forcefully using the light of wisdom to breakthrough.

But Fang Yuan had a determined personality, he refused to give up, he had no such thoughts of backing down.

He even placed his soul path cultivation and killer move practice aside, he placed all his time and energy into the wisdom path deduction.

Even without any sleep or rest, working as hard as he could, progress was slow.

But Fang Yuan persevered.

“It is fine as long as there is progress, even if a day has little progress, what if I spend days, tens of days or even months on this?”

With such determination and perseverance, Fang Yuan went on to tackle this problem head on.

During this period, his dragonfish business was starting to find a breakthrough.

Sovereign immortal aperture, dragon scale sea area.

Countless dragonfish formed into groups as they swam in the sea.

Dragonfish looked like red carps, but much larger. Desolate beast dragonfish had even larger bodies, they were giants in the sea.

But the battle strength of the dragonfish was bottom tier, nothing of value.

After this period of breeding, a special type of dragonfish had appeared in Fang Yuan’s dragon scale sea area.

This dragonfish was smaller than normal dragonfish, at the same time, the scales were a bit dimmer, having a metallic luster to it, resembling red copper.

“The copper dragonfish has finally been bred.” Fang Yuan inspected it and felt satisfied.

Dragonfish were not a natural life form, they were created by a food path Gu Immortal.

The person who created the dragonfish was none other than the beastman who created food path itself.

Fang Yuan obtained the inheritance of this beastman Gu Immortal from Shadow Sect, he had a deep understanding of dragonfish.

The dragonfish in the market might have food path dao marks, but they also had a mix of dao marks from countless other paths. But if he used the method in the inheritance to breed them, after many generations, a higher quality breed of dragonfish would come about.

Like the copper dragonfish, it was a new species superior to normal dragonfish.

What created this situation was the food path immortal Gu formation that Fang Yuan had set up painstakingly!

Fang Yuan saw that there were a lot of copper dragonfish, he placed a portion of them into treasure yellow heaven.

“If I had just started the dragonfish business, this small quantity of copper dragonfish would not gain any attention.”

“But earlier, I had already started selling dragonfish and even received You Chan’s counterattack, the other Gu Immortals all know that I am in this business now.”

“Hehe.” Fang Yuan thought of this and laughed.

He did not need to guess to know that these copper dragonfish would create a huge commotion when they enter treasure yellow heaven.

“Oh You Chan, this is my true trump card, how will you deal with it?” Fang Yuan thought expectantly to himself.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1478:

Success

Several days after the copper dragonfish was put up for sale.

Treasure yellow heaven went into a commotion.

“What dragonfish is this?”

“Copper dragonfish? A brand new species?”

“I heard the seller saying that the copper dragonfish has a better effect compared to normal dragonfish.”

“Haha, this will be quite a show.”

“Indeed, I thought that this seller was defeated by You Chan. But to think that he waited so long just for this powerful counterattack!”

“We are all going to benefit from the appearance of this new copper dragonfish species. I can deduce that this seller has a food path true inheritance.” Some Gu Immortals were jealous and envious, especially those experts.

The feeding of Immortal Gu was a problem that troubled not just Fang Yuan alone.

Food path true inheritances were something that most Gu Immortal experts wanted, they just did not have the fortuitous encounters.

However, treasure yellow heaven was a safe place that even Heavenly Court was without options against, these Gu Immortal experts went to approach Fang Yuan’s will instead.

They directly talked about the food path true inheritance, they expressed their strong intentions to buy it.

But Fang Yuan ignored all of them.

He had so many inheritances in his hands, if he sold them, it would cause a huge commotion in the market, he would earn a ton of profits.

But that was fueling his enemies.

In the following great era, when the five regions chaotic war starts, anyone could become Fang Yuan’s enemy. In fact, Heavenly Court was already an irreconcilable enemy!

“Find him, find out the identity of this seller.” After being rejected by Fang Yuan, some did not give up.

Some rank eight Gu Immortals decided to collect Fang Yuan’s intel and try to deduce themselves, or hire wisdom path Gu Immortals to help.

An innocent man attracts greed because of his wealth.

Those who were troubled by the feeding of Immortal Gu were usually the ones who had more Immortal Gu in their possession.

And these people who had lots of Immortal Gu were basically the stronger ones among their peers. Food path true inheritances were not just the solution to this problem.

There was also the dragonfish business!

With the appearance of the copper dragonfish, Gu Immortals saw how much potential this business had as a result of the food path true inheritance!

But they were bound to fail.

Fang Yuan’s wisdom path defense method made even one of the three wisdom path expert in Eastern Sea, Hua An, fail his deductions. Heavenly Court and heaven’s will were also unable to deal with him.

In the past, Fang Yuan had gone into hiding because he needed to avoid deductions, but now, he no longer cared about this problem.

An ordinary copper dragonfish was held in You Chan’s hands as it struggled from time to time.

You Chan’s hands were trembling slightly, her expression was unsightly.

This tiny insignificant copper dragonfish was a huge threat in You Chan’s eyes. This was far more terrifying and severe than Fang Yuan lowering his prices.

“To think that the enemy is able to retaliate like this. Impressive, truly impressive, my worry was completely correct.”

After a long while, You Chan calmed down and sighed repeatedly.

The appearance of the copper dragonfish was detrimental to her dragonfish business, it was a fundamental threat.

The severity was extremely high for You Chan, she was in great danger!

In fact, not just her dragonfish business, dragonfish businesses in the entire world was challenged by this copper dragonfish!

“I’ve already tested it several times, the copper dragonfish is indeed better than ordinary dragonfish, the reason is that its body has a higher proportion of food path dao marks. What should I do?”

You Chan bit her lips, she had a solemn expression.

She had a tough personality, but after accepting the facts, she felt an intense indignant feeling in her heart.

“I cultivated so hard for countless years, how can I admit defeat so easily?”

“The dragonfish business is my main source of revenue, if it goes under, my cultivation will be in huge danger.”

“I cannot lose like this!”

“Right, I, You Chan, am not a weak woman, how can I admit defeat so easily?”

“Copper dragonfish, since he can nurture it, why can’t I?”

You Chan clenched her fists, bright light shone in her eyes as fighting spirit burst out of her.

She wanted to compete, she wanted to try and create her own copper dragonfish.

That was the only way she could contest this mysterious enemy, otherwise, ordinary dragonfish would not allow her to even be in the competition.

You Chan was not blindly confident, she had her own assurance in food path.

She had once obtained a food path inheritance, but it was not as authentic as Fang Yuan’s.

Even though food path was barely circulated, it was not cultivated by only the creator himself.

Precisely because You Chan had the food path inheritance, she chose the dragonfish business as her main source of income.

In fact, she had been trying to modify the dragonfish’s quality too, but she had not succeeded yet.

“But now, the modified dragonfish is right in front of me.”

“I had no progress earlier because my food path attainment was too low. Now that I have this copper dragonfish as reference, I will be able to reverse deduce it, I will rather kill myself if I can’t even do that.”

“Hehe, you might not realize it, but your copper dragonfish will become my fortuitous encounter instead!”

You Chan was full of vigor, she researched the copper dragonfish thoroughly, for the following period of time, she was like a crazed researcher, she worked so hard she even forgot to eat her meals.

On the other side, Fang Yuan was also working hard, he continued to deduce the solution to Spring Autumn Cicada’s problem.

He moved forward with difficulty like a person who had just healed from illness trying to climb a steep mountain with his weak body.

It was filled with difficulty.

But no matter how difficult it was, Fang Yuan’s ambitions could not be doused.

He progressed stably, even though each step was very difficult and yielded little result, he slowly accumulated his gains, they became increasingly useful.

In this process, Fang Yuan gained a deeper understanding of how powerful the light of wisdom truly was.

The more he used it, the deeper his inspiration.

Bathing in the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan had unlimited inspiration, and these inspirations led him towards the proper answer.

Fang Yuan’s wisdom path grandmaster attainment level was also barely holding him together.

Time passed quickly, half a month went by rapidly.

On this day, Fang Yuan stretched his arms as he yawned loudly.

Success!

He had finally succeeded in finding the solution to Spring Autumn Cicada’s problem.

At almost the same time.

In Eastern Sea, the dragonfish sea area that had no wind suddenly had huge waves and ripples.

Under the deep sea, You Chan waved her arms around happily, she was extremely excited and joyful.

“I succeeded!”

“I finally recreated the brand new species of copper dragonfish.”

“Even though I need to use his copper dragonfish as the breeding point, once I have several of these copper dragonfish, I will be able to breed even more of them.”

“I will not lose this dragonfish battle!”

“What other moves do you have left, go ahead and use them all.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1479: Parallel Refining Spring Autumn Cicada

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Southern Border, Heaven Sealing Mountain.

This was a short and unassuming mountain. The core of the mountain was hollow, there was a Gu formation in it, used to seal the strength path immortal zombie body.

Therefore, it was called Heaven Sealing Mountain, it was meant to seal heaven’s will.

Right now, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body was floating in the air, he was looking down at Heaven Sealing Mountain. Beside him, there was a Gu Immortal, it was the variant human Gu Immortal Sixth Hair.

Letting Sixth Hair into his sovereign immortal aperture was something that Fang Yuan had thought about deeply.

Normally speaking, the immortal aperture was an important place that needed to be kept as a secret, it was the foundation of the Gu Immortal’s cultivation, it would not be shown to others.

But Fang Yuan had already let the Shadow Sect Gu Immortals into his immortal aperture, Sixth Hair was a member of Shadow Sect too, he was worth trusting.

During this period of time, Sixth Hair had done all he could to refine the Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan saw this and remembered it deeply.

There was another point, Sixth Hair and Ying Wu Xie were in contact, they were both members of Shadow Sect, they knew about the sovereign immortal aperture in the first place, and since Ying Wu Xie had already gone inside, there was no need to hide it from Sixth Hair.

“I am going to start refining the Gu.” Fang Yuan breathed in deeply and said.

Sixth Hair nodded: “Sect leader, go ahead, I will do my best to assist you!”

This Gu refinement involved Spring Autumn Cicada, it was extremely important. Fang Yuan needed the help of this refinement path Gu Immortal Sixth Hair.

In fact, Fang Yuan had borrowed a number of refinement path Immortal Gu and mortal Gu from Lang Ya Sect a few days ago.

He set up a refinement path Gu formation using all of these Gu worms.

This refinement path immortal formation had already been set, Fang Yuan only needed to activate it now.

Fang Yuan willed as red date immortal essence was expended continuously, the immortal Gu formation started to activate.

Waves of white light soaked Heaven Sealing Mountain like flowing water.

A moment later, Fang Yuan multi-tasked and used a refinement path killer move.

Boom!

With a loud sound, air was pushed out as a giant golden pillar of light shot down from the sky.

The golden light pillar had a grand aura, everywhere it went, the flowing water white light was repelled, it directly penetrated Heaven Sealing Mountain and stabbed deep into its core.

Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body was inside the mountain, the golden light pillar landed on the immortal zombie body and completely suppressed it.

The immortal zombie body was creaking, as time passed, it was starting to break.

Fang Yuan used his time well and stabilized the golden light pillar before taking out a living desolate beast.

Crack.

A sword light flew over and cut off the desolate beast’s head, killing it on the spot.

Puff!

A large amount of blood spewed out of the desolate beast’s neck, it was like a huge red fountain.

The smell of blood permeated, but the golden light pillar emitted a strong attractive force due to Fang Yuan’s manipulation.

The blood from the desolate beast was instantly drawn towards the golden light pillar by a formless force.

That desolate beast corpse soon became dried up as its blood was completely sucked away.

The golden light pillar absorbed the blood and had a hint of red mixed into it.

This addition made the originally grand light pillar more sinister and bloody.

Kill, kill, kill!

Next, Fang Yuan killed seven desolate beasts with a tough expression, he was merciless.

The golden light pillar absorbed all of their blood and became a completely red light pillar, it had completely changed.

Sixth Hair nodded as he watched.

He recognized that the method Fang Yuan used was called the seven kill blood path Gu refinement method. This method came from Lang Ya Sect, Sixth Hair had heard of its name but did not know the details. Fang Yuan used Shadow Sect’s inheritances to exchange for Lang Ya Sect’s inheritances, obtaining this Gu refinement method.

He disassembled this method and only took the essence of it, after modifying it, it became very useful here.

Even Sixth Hair was nodding in approval when he saw it.

Fang Yuan focused on controlling the blood light pillar, while Sixth Hair also started acting.

This time, Sixth Hair was assisting Fang Yuan in the Gu refinement, he had a huge task.

Both sides had communicated amply before this, Sixth Hair did not need Fang Yuan’s reminder, he knew what to do.

He took out the appropriate Gu materials.

These Gu materials were all flowers, there were ghost face sunflowers, wire cotton, heavenly flowers, seven treasure flowers, milk tea flowers, iron shell flowers, boat flowers, blood poison kerria, multicolored overlord flowers, green beetle water lotuses, red axe flowers, smelly fly flowers, and others.

These flowers were of a variety of species, they were either big or small, some were mortal Gu materials, while others were immortal materials.

Sixth Hair started to use refinement path methods to process these flowers.

The handling of Gu materials required a great wealth of knowledge.

Every flower had its own way of processing.

Thankfully, Sixth Hair was a refinement path cultivator, he had a lot of experience in refining Gu, as a split soul of Spectral Soul, he had deep foundations. It was very wise to get him to process these flowers.

Time passed, after several minutes, Sixth Hair finished handling all of the flowers.

He handled them well, the flowers were specially chosen and were not wasted, their essence was extracted and fused into a hundred flowers concentrate.

At this moment, Fang Yuan condensed the blood light pillar as it shrunk from a giant to a tree trunk-like length and thickness.

“The liquid is here, catch.” Sixth Hair pushed as the floating flower concentrate flew towards Fang Yuan like a translucent bubble.

Fang Yuan stretched his hand and easily grabbed this hundred flowers concentrate in his palm.

Next, he breathed in deeply and created a new change.

Winds blew as dark clouds appeared in the sky.

Fang Yuan cried out abruptly as he waved his hands, throwing all of the hundred flowers concentrate into the sky.

The hundred flowers concentrate entered the dark clouds as they immediately turned pink.

Splash splash splash.

A huge rain started to drizzle down.

Fang Yuan had a solemn expression, his fingers moved rapidly, only the afterimages of his fingers could be seen waving around.

The pink flower rain was drawn by the formless force, a portion fused into the blood pillar, the other was fused with the immortal zombie body, absorbed by the refinement path immortal formation.

The air was filled with an intense smell of flowers.

The blood light pillar that was like a tree trunk became smaller and smaller, it shrunk until it disappeared completely.

Fang Yuan willed as the refinement path immortal formation activated rapidly, it was no longer as slow as before.

When refining Immortal Gu, a refinement path immortal Gu formation was very convenient.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, Fang Yuan did not obtain one, but now he possessed the details of a great number of refinement path Gu formations, he could even use his formation path grandmaster attainment level to modify them using the light of wisdom, he could make them the most suitable formations for the Gu that he wanted to refine.

The refinement path immortal formation continued to work, using the flower concentrate, there was a temporary connection among the immortal zombie body, Spring Autumn Cicada, ad as well as Gu materials.

Using this chance, Fang Yuan opened the door of the immortal formation.

From the door, a wooden log flew out.

This wooden log was like shining gold, but upon closer inspection, it was made of wood. There were dewdrops on the log, they looked like amber. Several delicate clouds were forming and getting destroyed on the surface of the log.

This was the immortal material, golden cloud divine wood.

Like the other Gu materials, it had been kept in the refinement path immortal formation by Fang Yuan and was nourished by the hundred flowers concentrate.

The refinement path immortal formation worked as the golden cloud divine wood quickly broke apart and disintegrated into nothingness.

At the same time, wooden markings appeared on the immortal zombie body, similar to the golden cloud divine wood, dewdrops were forming on it, resembling amber. The delicate clouds were forming on the immortal zombie body’s forehead, as well as its stomach.

Fang Yuan let out a breath of turbid air, telling Sixth Hair: “Take my place.”

After processing the hundred flowers concentrate, Sixth Hair had been resting, until he heard Fang Yuan’s orders to take over the immortal Gu formation.

Fang Yuan was relieved as he quickly sat down to rest using every second of his time.

Even though the refinement process seemed very smooth, it was not, every step was like treading on thin ice. His immortal essence expenditure was huge, and his mind was under immense pressure.

Even with Fang Yuan’s abilities, at this stage, he could barely continue.

It was dangerous to continue in this state, thus, Fang Yuan chose to rest now and let Sixth Hair take his place in the Gu refinement.

Normally speaking, the Gu Immortal refining the Gu cannot be changed easily.

Because a different person would have different immortal essence and aura, there were many flaws in this when refining Gu.

But Fang Yuan had deduced this step amply, he specially designed it, there were no problems with it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1480:

A Slight Smile

Fang Yuan rested for a few minutes before opening his eyes.

His stamina had recovered, his eyes were no longer seeing stars, he had a clear mind and his condition was much better.

Sixth Hair let out a sigh of relief when he saw Fang Yuan taking over.

Both of them exchanged roles perfectly, they had practiced this step many times.

Right now, Fang Yuan’s strength path immortal zombie body had completely turned into a human shaped golden cloud divine wood, Fang Yuan moved to the next step.

The refinement path immortal formation opened its door again as a huge sea urchin flew out.

This sea urchin was large as a house, there were sharp spikes on its surface, like it was made of purple-gold, there were countless shining spots on its body surface.

This was the purple star urchin, it was a rare immortal material.

Under the effect of the immortal formation, the purple star urchin could be seen shrinking gradually, progress was smooth.

But suddenly!

From the purple star urchin, there was a dazzling starlight.

The starlight bounced around like a ball, moving randomly.

The refinement path immortal formation shook intensely, Fang Yuan had a stern expression as he tried to keep it under control.

But there was little effect, the bouncing starlight had increased from one to three, with greater disturbances, the refinement path immortal formation shook even more intensely, there were creaking sounds coming from it.

“Oh no!” Sixth Hair cried out in dismay, before shouting: “Moving of a single thought, blossoming of the red snake!”

Sixth Hair willed in his mind as red snake tattoos appeared on his skin, moving about upwards. The snake tattoos were originally at his chest, but it had moved up towards his neck now.

At this moment, Sixth Hair’s strength rose drastically, his eyes were bursting with brilliance, even Fang Yuan was greatly shocked.

Sixth Hair charged towards Fang Yuan and helped him to control the refinement path immortal formation.

With his help, the bouncing starlight specs were destroyed one after another.

“Crisis averted.” A while later, Sixth Hair let out a breath of air, he was in a fatigued condition.

“Sect leader, it is up to you now.” Saying this, he fainted on the spot.

Fang Yuan was silent, he looked at the red snake tattoos on Sixth Hair’s neck before turning his attention to the Gu formation before him.

Because of Sixth Hair’s desperate save, the crisis of the Gu refinement was resolved, Fang Yuan could move to the next step.

The third door of the immortal formation opened, a new immortal material flew out.

This was a rock, but the rock had natural carvings of faces. These were human faces, with men, women, young, old, they had varying expressions, some cried, laughed, screamed, or had serious expressions.

Thousand face human rock.

This was the most crucial step.

Fang Yuan invested all his concentration into the Gu refinement, the thousand face human rock soon disintegrated due to the refinement path immortal formation.

But the faces turned into illusory shadows and flew into the immortal zombie body’s aperture.

Fang Yuan’s aperture was full of cracks originally, but now, it changed.

The cracks on the aperture walls were filled up with a thick purple gold rock, there were countless stars shining on it, there were even sharp spikes protruding from them, looking like the purple star urchin.

The human faces flew around the aperture, under Fang Yuan’s control, they went towards the Spring Autumn Cicada at the center.

Spring Autumn Cicada was sealed by Fang Yuan, it could not move.

The human faces rapidly went past Spring Autumn Cicada before flying away again.

Spring Autumn Cicada shuddered but was as stable as before.

The human faces flew for a while as they slowly melted like snow exposed to sun, they faded into nothingness with only a small thread remaining.

This thread-like thing was heaven’s will.

Every time the human faces flew past the Spring Autumn Cicada, it would be a quick refinement process that took away a portion of heaven’s will from Spring Autumn Cicada.

Human faces flew past Spring Autumn Cicada one after another, drawing out the sealed heaven’s will.

These threads of heaven’s will were soon taken out by Fang Yuan and melted by the refinement path immortal formation.

This process lasted a long time until the human faces were no longer able to bring out heaven’s will.

“Heaven’s will is too stubborn, far more than I had expected.” Fang Yuan sighed, he directly mobilized several human faces to attack at once.

The human faces surrounded Spring Autumn Cicada as they gritted their teeth, dragging out the threads from Spring Autumn Cicada.

Heaven’s will was sealed into the thread-like state, dragged out forcefully time and again.

Spring Autumn Cicada continued to shake but it was in safe hands, no cracks were developing.

Fang Yuan had painstakingly created the refinement path immortal formation, it was the best method against this.

After dozens of times, even if Fang Yuan controlled an army of human faces, they would no longer draw out heaven’s will from Spring Autumn Cicada.

But Fang Yuan could sense that at the deepest part inside Spring Autumn Cicada, a small bit of heaven’s will was lingering.

This bit of heaven’s will was almost negligible, but Fang Yuan did not dare to let it remain.

“Heaven’s will is truly pesky, I have to do this after all.” Fang Yuan sighed, activating the refinement path immortal formation to its limits.

The spikes on the aperture that resembled the purple star urchin grew furiously as they stabbed towards Spring Autumn Cicada from all directions!

There were hundreds of spikes that stabbed into Spring Autumn Cicada.

Spring Autumn Cicada was not destroyed, instead, it was melted into a green jade liquid. The spikes absorbed this liquid instinctively.

Eventually, there was only that bit of heaven’s will left at Spring Autumn Cicada’s original spot.

Fang Yuan quickly destroyed it.

Finally, the green liquid was forced out of the spikes and gathered at the center, into a lump.

Fang Yuan stared with bloodshot eyes, he felt extreme pressure to maintain this situation. The refinement path immortal formation was at its maximum capacity, a large amount of red date immortal essence was expended at this moment!

The green liquid slowly took shape, turning back into Spring Autumn Cicada.

It was safe and sound, the only difference was that after melting and reforming, there was no longer any of heaven’s will inside its body.

Originally, Shadow Sect planned to raise Spring Autumn Cicada’s rank through refinement before reverse refining it to get rid of heaven’s will. But after Fang Yuan modified it, it became a parallel refinement.

Parallel refinement had a much higher chance of success than normal refinement.

But even so, the process was filled with difficulty, there was even a crisis that was resolved only by Sixth Hair’s timely action.

Seeing the Spring Autumn Cicada that was floating quietly in the aperture, Fang Yuan felt extremely pleased.

At this point, rank six Spring Autumn Cicada had succeeded in the parallel refinement! Fang Yuan finally had full control of this legendary Immortal Gu!

Crack, crack.

The aperture was emitting this sound.

The cracks were not appearing on Spring Autumn Cicada but the purple-gold rock and spikes instead.

Fang Yuan watched this, he could not, and did not want to stop this.

The rock and spikes shattered and at the same time, even the aperture itself broke.

Fang Yuan’s aperture had truly gone through lots of turmoil, it was first pressured by Spring Autumn Cicada, forcing Fang Yuan to turn it into a stone aperture and dead aperture.

At this moment, it had reached its limit, it shattered.

This was the result of parallel refining Spring Autumn Cicada, it could not be avoided, and Fang Yuan did not want to avoid it either!

“I’ll undergo tribulation like this.” Fang Yuan laughed, a lump of soul appeared beside the immortal formation.

The soul moved rapidly, entering Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body.

The immortal zombie body opened its eyes and nodded at Fang Yuan.

It was Fang Yuan’s soul who occupied the body, he had used his split soul method to divide a portion of his soul, this was his first split soul.

Fang Yuan smiled as he used an immortal killer move on the immortal zombie body — Strength Reversing Life and Death!

This was a method that he had created long ago, it was modified from Blazing Heaven Demoness’ nirvana fire, it could allow an immortal zombie to return to human form.

At this moment, the strength reversing life and death that Fang Yuan used was modified and even better than before, it was not inferior to nirvana fire.

The immortal zombie body returned to life as two lifespan Gu were tossed out by Fang Yuan.

The immortal zombie body grabbed them and used them immediately.

This body had been bathed in the light of wisdom for too long back in Imperial Court blessed land, its lifespan was near its end.

Now that he used lifespan Gu, it gained a large amount of lifespan, it would not die immediately after coming back to life.

The aperture shattered as a storm developed in the sovereign immortal aperture, heaven and earth qi were starting to move.

Fang Yuan did not want his clone to undergo tribulation in sovereign immortal aperture, he opened his immortal aperture door.

The clone flew out and faced the calamities and tribulations head on.

Afterwards, Fang Yuan’s main body kept sovereign immortal aperture and appeared in the outside world too.

This was a nameless place in Northern Plains, Fang Yuan had chosen it after close inspection, there was nobody here and it was very safe.

The immortal ascension calamities and tribulations were terrifying to most Gu Masters, it could be said to be a near death experience.

But for Fang Yuan, it was a piece of cake.

Be it the balancing of heaven, earth, and human qi, or the assault of the tribulations, Fang Yuan was very familiar with them.

Heaven was extremely furious!

Fang Yuan had actually gained complete control over Spring Autumn Cicada, this was truly the tipping point for heaven’s will.

It unleashed calamities and tribulations of the highest level possible.

But that was completely pointless!

Fang Yuan easily dispersed the calamities and tribulations in a few attacks, ensuring that his clone got through the tribulation easily, becoming an immortal.

The last time, it was strength path, now, it was time path.

The first aperture became a high grade time path blessed land, Fang Yuan named it Spring Autumn blessed land, the space in it was not large, but it had a lot of time path resources.

The dark clouds pressuring him had faded, the sky was clear and sunlight shone down brilliantly.

Fang Yuan and his clone stood in the air, looking at the huge grassland silently.

The bitterness and difficulty faced in the five hundred years of his previous life, the helplessness against heaven’s will’s arrangements after rebirth, the desperate struggle to survive, the tiredness he felt from trying to save Dang Hun Mountain, feeding Immortal Gu, managing his immortal aperture, and deducing killer moves...

All of these feelings turned into a slight smile that appeared on both of Fang Yuan’s faces.

The past was like a passing smoke, all of his difficulties and pain were converted into this faint smile.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1481: The Use of a Clone

The clone passed the tribulation, becoming a time path rank six Gu Immortal. Meanwhile, Fang Yuan’s main body was still the rank seven Gu Immortal with the sovereign immortal body that cultivated all paths.

Having a clone was very beneficial to Fang Yuan.

Many things, especially the management of his immortal aperture, could be left to the clone to handle.

Fang Yuan trusted himself absolutely, he was far more useful than any Shadow Sect member.

Especially when they were the same person to begin with, their thoughts and wills were completely the same, there would not be any conflicts when they communicate, there would not even be small mistakes.

Looking at how strong Shadow Sect was, it was not hard to imagine the usefulness of split souls.

Shadow Sect had many members, but they were united and did not fear sacrificing themselves, that was because they were the same person to begin with.

Fang Yuan paid a huge price to make his clone a rank six Gu Immortal.

Firstly, the deduction used up a lot of his time and effort, the parallel refinement of Spring Autumn Cicada also used a bunch of immortal materials, and after creating the clone successfully, it also needed to cultivate, even though that was not too important, it was something he had to invest in.

And because he used split soul, Fang Yuan’s soul foundation fell from ten million man soul to nine million man soul, it had shrunk greatly.

Fang Yuan had to accumulate his soul foundation again, but thankfully, with the two soul path sacred lands, he could progress quickly, Fang Yuan’s development was not obstructed.

As for Fang Yuan’s clone, because it had Fang Yuan’s split soul, it was half an otherworldly demon.

The body originated from this world, it was still restricted by fate, Fang Yuan could not do anything about that.

Unless he could mimic Shadow Sect and create another sovereign immortal fetus Gu for his clone.

But Shadow Sect spent a hundred thousand years to refine one sovereign immortal fetus Gu, it was basically impossible to make a second one.

For the following days, Fang Yuan’s main body rested while his clone got rid of the lingering strength path dao marks inside the self cleansing immortal Gu formation.

Fang Yuan had originally ascended his second aperture to become a strength path Gu Immortal. After that, he turned into an immortal zombie and the immortal aperture disintegrated, all of the strength path dao marks were left on his body.

Fang Yuan decided to use the self cleansing formation to get rid of the clone’s unnecessary strength path dao marks.

The clone’s body was not special, dao marks of different paths conflicted, after careful consideration, Fang Yuan decided to let his clone cultivate time path.

Earlier, Fang Yuan considered dual cultivating strength path and time path, because he did not have the sovereign immortal body.

Now that he had the sovereign immortal body and aperture, his focus was on cultivating that, the clone was only supplementary.

Thus, the plan to refine second aperture Gu for the clone was canceled.

Another aperture meant that it would turn into an immortal aperture when he ascends to immortal. Since Fang Yuan chose time path, this immortal aperture would cultivate time path, but what use was that?

Another high grade or super grade blessed land was useless to Fang Yuan now.

Rather than developing this blessed land, he should divert all of his effort into the sovereign immortal aperture. And Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture was only at four percent development now, there were too few resources in it, he needed to put in a lot of work on it.

“Maybe the biggest use of second immortal aperture is the availability of another vital Gu.” Fang Yuan thought.

The biggest advantage of a vital Gu was that even if refinement fails, it would not be destroyed.

The life of the vital Gu was connected to the Gu Immortal themselves.

Of course, if the Gu Immortal dies during the Gu refinement, the vital Gu would also be destroyed.

Currently, Fang Yuan did not have a need for vital Gu.

Among his Immortal Gu, the most important, Spring Autumn Cicada, was already a vital Gu.

Other than handling his mundane tasks, the clone could ensure that Spring Autumn Cicada would never be destroyed when trying to refine it in the future.

“You are awake?” Fang Yuan looked at Sixth Hair.

Sixth Hair opened his eyes slowly, he still felt weak, after seeing Fang Yuan, the first thing he asked was: “Sect leader, did the Gu refinement succeed?”

“Yes.” Fang Yuan nodded.

“Great.” Sixth Hair smiled and said: “That means our second round of Gu refinement has been completed.”

During the first round, Fang Yuan refined Cleanse Soul, Self Love, and Snack. During the second round, he refined Spring Autumn Cicada and Heavenly Secret.

Fang Yuan paid a huge price to refine Gu. But all in all, his luck was very good, there were some Gu Immortals who could not succeed after a hundred tries after all.

Of course, the luck path true inheritance and luck path Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan had were of a huge assistance to him. On the other hand, Lang Ya Sect played a crucial role, if not for Lang Ya land spirit and Sixth Hair’s help, how could Fang Yuan’s Gu refinement attempts have been so smooth?

“What are the red snake tattoos on your body?” Fang Yuan had a dark gaze.

“This... it’s nothing.” Sixth Hair’s gaze flickered.

“When you were unconscious, I had already inspected it. This refinement path killer move seems to expend your lifespan to increase your refinement path abilities. If I am not wrong, when the red snake tattoos reach your head, you will die.” Fang Yuan said directly.

Sixth Hair was silent for a while before saying: “Sect leader is right. My life is not important, I only hope that you can attack Heavenly Court and save my main body.”

“Heavenly Court...” Fang Yuan sighed as he looked at the sky.

Sixth Hair quickly added: “Sect leader, no need to be discouraged, the enemy is strong indeed, but you have already regained Spring Autumn Cicada, you will inherit Red Lotus’ true inheritance soon. Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s true inheritance likely contains the method to defeat Heavenly Court, after all, he was the Immortal Venerable seed chosen by Heavenly Court.”

Fang Yuan nodded, he knew the things that Sixth Hair knew. It was hard for him to stop Heavenly Court from repairing fate Gu alone in just ten years. But with Red Lotus’ true inheritance, there was a sliver of hope.

Since Spring Autumn Cicada was now Fang Yuan’s completely, the next step of his plan should be to find Red Lotus’ true inheritance.

But Fang Yuan shook his head: “I am in no rush to find Red Lotus’ true inheritance, I can continue to increase my strength now. Heavenly Court will not allow me to take Red Lotus’ true inheritance so easily, they must have arrangements inside the River of Time.”

Even though Heavenly Court could not find Fang Yuan, they knew that he would enter the River of Time and find Red Lotus’ true inheritance.

Fang Yuan did not need to think to know that Heavenly Court had already laid an ambush in the River of Time.

It was necessary to find Red Lotus’ true inheritance, but before that, not only did he need Spring Autumn Cicada, he also needed enough battle strength to break through Heavenly Court’s ambush.

In this aspect, Fang Yuan had more work to do.

“Tell me everything about this refinement path killer move that you created, I will deduce for you and resolve the problem of this killer move for you.”

“Sixth Hair, don’t sacrifice yourself unnecessarily, I will need your help in the future to control Lang Ya Sect.”

Sixth Hair’s heart jumped, he had the same thought too. Even though he was helpless against the backlash, it did not mean Fang Yuan could not resolve it.

Especially with the light of wisdom.

The parallel refinement of Spring Autumn Cicada and the tribulation of his clone was naturally done in the wilderness.

After keeping the clone in his sovereign immortal aperture, Fang Yuan went back to Lang Ya blessed land with Sixth Hair using the teleportation Gu formation.

After entering Lang Ya blessed land, they would be under Lang Ya land spirit’s supervision, Sixth Hair and Fang Yuan could not talk, they parted as supreme elders of the sect.

Fang Yuan did not return to his cloud city to rest, he came to wisdom Gu.

He opened his immortal aperture door and his clone flew out.

The clone was a living being, wisdom Gu did not respond.

But soon, after the clone used strength reversing life and death to become an immortal zombie again, wisdom Gu flew around him in uncertainty.

“What?” Fang Yuan’s heart jumped.

Wisdom Gu was only flying around, it did not emit the light of wisdom.

Fang Yuan’s clone spoke: “Oh wisdom Gu, I was the one who made the agreement with you. Did you forget what we agreed upon?”

Wisdom Gu was floating in front of Fang Yuan’s clone, it was assessing him while hesitating.

After a while, it went back to the tree leaf and landed, emitting the light of wisdom.

Fang Yuan finally let out a sigh of relief.

It was quite a shock, wisdom Gu almost did not acknowledge Fang Yuan’s identity.

“I became a time path Gu Immortal, my cultivation level rose and my strength path dao marks were removed, and also due to the split soul, wisdom Gu became very hesitant.”

“No matter the reason, I need to be careful in the future, even if my clone’s cultivation level remains stagnant, I need to maintain this, I cannot lose the light of wisdom!”

Fang Yuan was a little gloomy, the wisdom Gu in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> was extremely intelligent, it even scammed Ren Zu several times, why was it so stupid here? It did not show the intelligence of wisdom Gu at all.

Was this because <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> was a story, or was there any other reason?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1482: Iron Dragonfish

Sixth Hair’s problem was more difficult than Fang Yuan had thought.

The refinement path killer move he created was called refinement snake lifespan flower, it not only contained the essence of refinement path, it also involved the karma of rule path.

Sixth Hair created this move using an incomplete Gu refinement method from Lang Ya Sect’s treasury as the inspiration.

Fang Yuan deduced it and realized: refinement snake lifespan flower was not so easy to fix, if he was careless, Sixth Hair might lose his life.

Thus, Fang Yuan changed his tactic and slowed down.

“If my refinement path attainment level is higher, I will need much less time to deduce refinement snake lifespan flower.”

Fang Yuan would not concentrate on this problem like he did with heaven’s will dissipation refinement path immortal formation, because Sixth Hair’s problem needed a lot of time to resolve.

And Sixth Hair was not in any rush.

As long as he did not use this move anymore, he would not lose his life.

Fang Yuan continued his soul path cultivation while deducing.

Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley were truly the sacred lands of soul cultivation, the soul foundation of Fang Yuan’s main body started to rise rapidly again.

But the clone did not cultivate this.

The reason was conflicting dao marks.

Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley were filled with soul path dao marks, be it guts Gu or Luo Po winds, they were in essence adding soul path dao marks to Fang Yuan’s soul.

The clone’s soul had already received the maximum portion from Fang Yuan, if the soul foundation increased, it would disrupt his time path cultivation.

Thus, Fang Yuan did not even give the clone ghost official garment.

As for how to defend against heaven’s will, Fang Yuan had his time path method, even though the effect was inferior to ghost official garment.

But the time path method complemented the clone’s cultivation, the advantages outweighed the disadvantages.

Even though Fang Yuan’s main body had non-conflicting dao marks and could cultivate all paths, in such a special situation, he still needed to pay attention to killer moves of different paths. For example, ghost official garment was greatly weakened due to ghostly concealment.

Other than deducing Sixth Hair’s problem and the killer move to protect the time path clone from heaven’s will, Fang Yuan had to modify his luck path killer moves.

Wisdom path, sword path, and soul path killer moves had already been modified to his limit, now was luck path.

Fang Yuan had many useful luck path true inheritances, among these assorted inheritances, the most prominent ones were Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s self luck and all living beings luck true inheritances.

Fang Yuan had the complete content of the former and an incomplete version of the latter.

He had many luck path Immortal Gu, Dog Shit Luck, Qi Luck, Luck Inspection, Connect Luck, and Time Luck were all rank six, they were not very suitable to Fang Yuan now since he was already rank seven.

Fang Yuan was not going to rank up his luck path Immortal Gu for now, his focus was to refine one Gu, it was Spring Autumn Cicada!

Rank six Spring Autumn Cicada could only allow rank six Gu Immortals to rebirth, Fang Yuan had rank seven cultivation level now, he needed rank seven Spring Autumn Cicada. Either that or rank six Spring Autumn Cicada used as a core of a rank seven immortal killer move.

He was still at the initial stage of Spring Autumn Cicada's refinement, Sixth Hair was in charge of the entire Immortal Gu recipe, he was collecting the necessary Gu materials.

Fang Yuan did not forget to practise his killer moves.

He had modified his soul path killer moves long ago, he was very skilled with them now. Fang Yuan would practice the sword path and wisdom path killer moves from time to time, revising their usage.

Fang Yuan knew that he had to work hard during peaceful times, by the time he fights, these killer moves would be instinctive to him. If his killer move fails during battle and he loses his momentum, that would be a disaster.

Among the killer moves he practised, wisdom path killer move exposing heavenly secret was the most important.

This killer move used heavenly secret Immortal Gu as the core to deduce the contents of the following tribulation. Of course, there was a limit to it, Fang Yuan could not deduce the content of his next grand tribulation yet, he needed to wait for some time.

Other than exposing heavenly secret, Fang Yuan also needed to practise heaven's will dissipation.

This killer move was Fang Yuan's greatest success during this period of time, he was not going to give it up.

Exposing heavenly secret allowed Fang Yuan to learn about the thinking of heaven's will. Heaven's will dissipation was a countermeasure that needed to be modified further, because it took a long time to prepare, it could only be used in the background now, it could not be utilized in an actual battle.

His red date immortal essence was barely enough for use.

His immortal essence stone storage had run dry already.

The members of Shadow Sect were all developing well. Making use of Tai Qiu, they were accumulating resources, replenishing the amount they lost while escaping from Southern Border, they even improved in some aspects.

Fang Yuan only took away the souls of the desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts that they captured, the remaining corpses were immortal materials that could be sold for a high price.

Fang Yuan did not go after their gains, on one hand he was not attracted to this small amount, on another hand he wanted to maintain the rules of Shadow Sect. At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan could borrow resources from them for emergencies, Fang Yuan was not shy to do that.

But if he tried that now, he would ruin their momentum and growth, the cost was too high compared to the benefits in this situation.

Even though he obtained Shadow Sect’s inheritance and gained a deeper understanding of Heavenly Court, there were many things that Fang Yuan did not know. Against such a huge organization, the tactic of Shadow Sect that they used in the five hundred years of his previous life were worth mimicking.

Thus, other than his own cultivation, Fang Yuan started plotting.

He had some relationship with the five regions in some way or another now, even though he was wanted by the righteous path forces of Northern Plains including Longevity Heaven, he had become part of the variant human alliance due to the engagement, his relationship with the variant humans was very close now.

The problem now was that Fang Yuan lacked funds.

Consecutive Gu refinement, cultivation, and practise of killer moves made his funds run dry. Even though he scrimped and saved, and his red date immortal essence also replenish on its own, Fang Yuan’s advancement was too fast, he was operating at a deficit now, his funds could not catch up to his expenditure.

For this problem, Fang Yuan’s solution was the dragonfish business.

But not long ago, You Chan also started to sell copper dragonfish, Fang Yuan was slightly surprised.

But Fang Yuan soon accepted the fact.

Dragonfish was different from guts Gu, new products could be deduced and created by his competitors too.

This was like how Fang Yuan modified the light shine fungi.

He could modify people’s products, they could do the same to him.

It was not like the guts Gu business, other than him, nobody else could produce it, that was truly the monopoly that Gu Immortals dreamed of.

Thus, it was not strange that others could sell copper dragonfish. Fang Yuan was only surprised that You Chan did it so quickly.

Days passed by.

Immortal killer move — Years Pass Like Days!

The tributary of the River of Time in sovereign immortal aperture expanded rapidly, the river water started to flow faster.

The sovereign immortal aperture originally had very high rate of time to begin with, after using this killer move, the time flow became even faster.

This way, calamities and tribulations would occur more rapidly.

But Fang Yuan had no fear.

He was already unmoved by calamities and tribulations at this point. As for grand tribulations, he had heavenly secret Gu and exposing heavenly secret, what was there to fear?

The increase in his rate of time also led to the increased production of other resources.

Especially dragonfish.

In dragon scale sea area, a large number of dragonfish were swimming around. Most were ordinary red dragonfish, thirty percent were copper dragonfish, and the rest were black in color.

“This is my iron dragonfish.” Fang Yuan smiled.

With this huge formation, his dragonfish did not need to be researched on, the modification was automated.

“This time, after I sell the iron dragonfish, I wonder how You Chan will react?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1483: Silver Dragonfish

“Iron dragonfish...” You Chan breathed in deeply, she wanted to calm her mind down, but she soon gave up despondently.

Her gaze flickered, her expression was in a daze.

Fang Yuan placed the iron dragonfish into the market and caused a small commotion in treasure yellow heaven.

The dragonfish market was very big to begin with. There were Gu Immortals who tried to modify dragonfish, but they all ended in failure.

This was because food path had never been well circulated in history.

But this time, Fang Yuan actually modified the dragonfish twice!

The Gu Immortals were all astute figures, they understood the meaning behind this modification, Fang Yuan was very likely to have very high food path attainment, or had inherited a food path true inheritance.

The others could understand this, You Chan was the same.

This was why she had suffered a huge blow, her mind was in turmoil.

A small iron dragonfish was nothing, but the meaning behind it was like a huge mountain pressing down on her, she could barely breathe.

“No matter what, I cannot give up like this.”

“However, the previous copper dragonfish modification already expended all of my foundation. In the short time, I cannot succeed in modifying iron dragonfish.”

“What should I do?”

You Chan knew her limits, she was sure that she could not deal with Fang Yuan alone.

Soon, a figure appeared in her mind.

“Don’t tell me... I need to get help from her?” You Chan was hesitant, there was a dark air deep in her eyes.

Several days later, in white crane sea area.

This place had a clear breeze and a calm sea that resembled a mirror. There was blue skies and white clouds, there was a clear horizon between the sea and sky, countless white cranes were flying around or standing elegantly on the small islands and resting.

It was a scene of serenity and peace.

At the center of this sea area, the owner of this place was laughing loudly, evidently happy.

“Hahaha, You Chan, oh You Chan, you finally thought it through.” Qin Bai He was extremely happy, she laughed as she looked at Fairy You Chan, her gaze was invasive and extremely provocative.

You Chan snorted coldly, turning her gaze away from Qin Bai He, feeling rather unhappy.

Qin Bai He was the owner of white crane sea area, she was extremely beautiful and tall, she had an elegant neck and long legs, she was one of the six beauties of Eastern Sea, like You Chan.

However, different from the other beautiful fairies, Qin Bai He did not like men, she only liked female immortals.

She had a rank six Immortal Gu House in white crane sea area, it was called Bai He Palace 1 , there were countless women living in it, this was her harem which stayed with her at all times, engaging in unspeakable activities.

Qin Bai He walked forward and held You Chan’s hands, she had an extremely indulgent expression as she said: “So smooth, so smooth, oh You Chan, you know that I want you for the longest time! I desire to have you! From today onwards, you will be the empress of my Bai He Palace!”

“Hmph!” You Chan wanted to pull her hand away, but Qin Bai He grabbed them tightly.

You Chan had a cold expression, she snorted: “Let go.”

Qin Bai He obediently let go, the two had an agreement already, she knew that You Chan was hers and could not escape anymore. There was no need to force her now, she had lots of time and energy to slowly savor You Chan.

After You Chan pulled her hands away, she took two steps back: “Qin Bai He, don’t forget what you promised me.”

Qin Bai He chuckled: “Of course, neither of us can solve the problem of the iron dragonfish alone in the short run. But as long as we worked together, if we put our hearts into it, we will definitely be able to resolve this! That guy who tried to challenge you will not be smug for long.”

You Chan nodded slightly.

Qin Bai He was not spouting nonsense. You Chan had known her for many years, she knew a lot about her foundation.

Immediately, You Chan stayed inside Bai He Palace and the two worked together for days and nights, using all of their energy to resolve the iron dragonfish issue.

You Chan needed to try her best!

Her main source of revenue was the dragonfish business, she could not give up on it, otherwise, her cultivation would be greatly affected.

When Gu Immortals cultivate, they need to gain strength continuously. If anything goes wrong, they would be in danger against calamities and tribulations.

Even if they did not die from calamities and tribulations, as long as they suffered heavy injuries, it would be a vicious cycle and the Gu Immortal would get weaker, they would eventually die from future calamities and tribulations.

More than ten days later, an iron dragonfish appeared in Bai He Palace.

Looking at this iron dragonfish, You Chan wanted to shed tears of joy.

Because this dragonfish was not bought in treasure yellow heaven, it was forcefully bred by Qin Bai He and her cooperating together!

This iron dragonfish meant that You Chan also had the method to breed her own iron dragonfish now.

“I have not lost in this battle of dragonfish yet!” You Chan cheered herself on.

“Mm, I was not wrong about you, You Chan, do you know that you are the dreamiest when you are serious.” Beside her, Qin Bai He was looking at You Chan with enchanted eyes.

You Chan’s joy faded from her face as it turned cold: “We cannot be careless, the other party is very mysterious, he created the iron dragonfish and copper dragonfish, he had very deep food path foundation. We have merely just created this new species, and gotten on the same level as him.”

“I understand what you mean. You are afraid that the other party will bring out even more superior dragonfish?” Qin Bai He had a solemn expression.

The worry that they had came true a few days later.

Silver dragonfish!

Fang Yuan’s third attack.

The silver dragonfish had even more food path dao marks than iron dragonfish.

This time, the commotion in treasure yellow heaven was larger and wider than before.

Many Gu Immortals noticed this and started to investigate Fang Yuan at full force.

Of course, they would not be able to find anything.

The appearance of the silver dragonfish was an immense blow to Qin Bai He and You Chan.

These two Eastern Sea beauties were stunned.

After researching it, the silver dragonfish’s superiority made them feel deeply pressured. They had gone all out for the iron dragonfish earlier, with the difficulty of this silver dragonfish, they needed several years of hard work on it or there would be no hope.

Furthermore, You Chan and Qin Bai He could not place all their energy on the silver dragonfish, they needed to interact with people and rest, they also needed to cultivate, manage their immortal aperture, and practice killer moves.

The silver dragonfish was bound to appear in Fang Yuan’s case. But for You Chan and Qin Bai He, they needed to put in lots of research.

Silver dragonfish had a much higher difficulty to deduce compared to iron dragonfish.

“It’s over, I am no longer his match, I can only give up the dragonfish business, and I need to let go completely without any reservations.” Even with You Chan’s determined personality, she was completely in despair now.

The difference in their strength made You Chan unable to see any hope of victory.

Qin Bai He was also helpless, she also bit her lips until it bled, she was very unhappy that she was unable to help her beloved, given her prideful personality.

But just as the two female immortals were in despair, an unexpected force came in to interfere.

This colossal organization was none other than Heavenly Court!

It turned out that Heavenly Court had never given up searching for and trying to kill Fang Yuan.

Even though they could not find Fang Yuan now, Heavenly Court’s Fairy Zi Wei was not useless.

The moment Fang Yuan sold the copper dragonfish, her attention was drawn to it.

When Fang Yuan sold the iron dragonfish and silver dragonfish in treasure yellow heaven, Fairy Zi Wei focused her attention on it.

Even though she was not absolutely certain that the seller of the new dragonfish species was Fang Yuan, she would rather be safe than sorry.

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had obtained the most original food path inheritance back then, Fang Yuan is the new leader of Shadow Sect, after getting its inheritance, he naturally has that food path inheritance too.”

“Dragonfish is the most signature product of food path, the dragonfish species has never changed over many years. The Gu Immortal that modified it time and again is likely to be Fang Yuan.”

Fairy Zi Wei knew: Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had lots of avenues and did not need the dragonfish profit, with his personality, he also did not favor business management, he used killing to resolve all his problems. But Fang Yuan was different.

The more she learned about Fang Yuan, the more attention Fairy Zi Wei placed on him.

This otherworldly demon had brains and brawn, he could lower his status if needed, if given enough time to develop and resources to use, he would be an immense threat.

Thus, Fairy Zi Wei did not hesitate, she interfered and helped You Chan and Qin Bai He.

On one hand, Fairy Zi Wei did not want to expose herself openly.

On the other hand, helping these two would allow her to interfere in Eastern Sea, in the future five regions chaotic war, this would be a hidden card, she was killing two birds with one stone.

A wisdom path Gu Immortal was most clear on how to maximize their benefits.

Heavenly Court was extremely affluent after all, its foundation was unfathomably deep, even for food path, they had lots of foundation in it. Even though they lacked the inheritance of the source of food path, they had a lot of other inheritances.

After getting Heavenly Court’s help, You Chan and Qin Bai He had a boost of morale, they did not sleep for dozens of days, they actually created the silver dragonfish.

This way, You Chan also had the silver dragonfish.

This was out of Fang Yuan’s expectations.

He had thought that the silver dragonfish would decide the competition of the dragonfish business, but his hopes were dashed, the dragonfish business went into a deadlock again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1484: Fang Yuan’s Kindness

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Eastern Sea.

Dragon scale sea area.

A Gu Immortal was floating in the air with fluttering sleeves, looking down at the sea below him.

He had a common face but extraordinary aura, he had abyss-like eyes that gave off deep wisdom and experience.

It was Fang Yuan’s rank six Gu Immortal time path clone.

Right now, the seawater was in turbulence and waves were rumbling, but there was no wind at all.

“My sovereign immortal aperture has no atmospheric changes, there are neither winds nor clouds here. The reason this dragon scale sea area has waves is because my main body set up that immortal formation.”

The time path clone thought.

Right now, dragon scale sea area was the number one sea area in the sovereign immortal aperture. It was Fang Yuan’s current focus for development, he had invested a huge sum of funds.

The time path clone looked over, seeing that within the tides and waves, countless dragonfish were swimming about, they were densely packed and the number was terrifying.

Fang Yuan had put in a lot of investments, along with the sovereign immortal aperture’s high rate of time, and his food path methods, the dragonfish bred rapidly, the numbers soared.

Not just the ordinary dragonfish, there were even many copper dragonfish, some iron dragonfish, and a few silver dragonfish.

Fang Yuan’s clone looked beyond these dragonfish, towards the depths of the dragonfish group.

Soon, his expression turned to joy, he found his target.

This was a dragonfish shining like gold, it had densely packed golden scales, its eyes were not as dull as the other dragonfish, there was sharpness in them.

Compared to the other dragonfish, it was the smallest, it was not even the size of a person’s palm, it was tiny.

But Fang Yuan’s clone could sense that this golden scaled dragonfish had only food path dao marks in it and no other path’s dao marks.

Even though it was small, it gave off a true ancient desolate beast aura!

The other dragonfish could only reach desolate beast at most, but the golden dragonfish could become ancient desolate beast!

This was not to be underestimated, it meant that after becoming golden, the dragonfish had gone beyond the limits of its species and reached a brand new level.

“At this point, the golden dragonfish is the limit of development.” Fang Yuan’s clone sighed.

The ancient golden dragonfish swam in the sea, be it the ordinary dragonfish, desolate beast dragonfish, copper dragonfish, iron dragonfish, or silver dragonfish, they were all moving around it.

The ancient golden dragonfish was the king of the dragonfish, once it appeared, all of the lower dragonfish species would all defend and follow it.

“Even I, the owner of these dragonfish, have lower control of the dragonfish group compared to the ancient golden dragonfish.” Fang Yuan’s clone nonchalantly watched with a flickering gaze.

It could be said that if Fang Yuan and the ancient golden dragonfish fought for control over these dragonfish, Fang Yuan would lose to it.

This ancient desolate beast only needed to exist to gain the loyalty of all the dragonfish without question.

“But that is not a problem, the ancient golden dragonfish controls the dragonfish while I control the ancient golden dragonfish itself. Unfortunately, dragonfish have no fighting strength, even the ancient golden dragonfish is bottom tier in battle strength compared to other ancient desolate beasts. Therefore, these dragonfish can only be used as goods.”

Time passed quickly, half a month passed.

You Chan had a tough time during this period.

Even though she succeeded in breeding the silver dragonfish, she had used the help of Qin Bai He, Heavenly Court, and Fang Yuan’s silver dragonfish.

Thus, even though she could produce silver dragonfish, in terms of production, she could not compare to Fang Yuan, the originator.

Fang Yuan was currently dominating her in terms of dragonfish business in treasure yellow heaven.

The silver dragonfish was simply too useful, and since Fang Yuan did not raise prices by too much, the other dragonfish competitors were outmatched.

And Fang Yuan sold silver dragonfish at a far larger scale than You Chan.

The difference in their strength was evident, Fang Yuan had the clear advantage.

However, You Chan did not give up, she was still persevering and putting up a fight.

White crane sea area.

Qin Bai He laughed loudly: “Hahaha, I finally got through this difficult part, our method has improved again. This way, our silver dragonfish production will increase greatly!”

You Chan had a haggard look, but joy was in her eyes.

She had worked with Qin Bai He for half a month without resting, along with the use of Heavenly Court’s findings.

“But... even with such a result, our production still cannot match that person.” You Chan sighed.

“Little Chan Er, don’t worry, as long as we work together, we can resolve this, that silver dragonfish is not guts Gu after all. By then, our production will be on par with him.” Qin Bai He was quite optimistic.

“But even then, we will only be equal with him. It is too difficult to continue innovating, we do not have the strength. That means we can only be at a stalemate with him at best. And this is under the assumption that he does not produce any newer species of dragonfish.” You Chan shook her head.

Qin Bai He opened her mouth and wanted to comfort You Chan but no words came out.

The truth was, at this point in the battle, the result was already quite clear.

You Chan was not Fang Yuan’s match, she could only act passively and try to catch up to him to balance the situation.

They did not have any way of winning, unless there was strong help given to them by external influences.

Like Heavenly Court.

It had a large number of food path inheritances.

But why would Fairy Zi Wei help Qin Bai He and You Chan unconditionally?

Both sides were from different regions, Qin Bai He and You Chan were very alert when working with Heavenly Court.

But Fairy Zi Wei's intention was to lure these two into becoming pawns of Heavenly Court that infiltrated Eastern Sea's Gu Immortal world.

The five regions chaotic war was about to start, Heavenly Court had to start planning before the great era.

"I am afraid this person selling dragonfish is Fang Yuan."

"Using him, I can pressure You Chan and Qin Bai He to become the pawns of my Heavenly Court."

"But..."

Within Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei was paying close attention to treasure yellow heaven.

The thing that stifled her was that Fang Yuan was not doing anything, after putting up the silver dragonfish, he stopped doing anything, he only sold the dragonfish normally.

This situation made Fairy Zi Wei feel a sense of unease.

She knew that Fang Yuan was not a person to take matters lying down.

"If that really is Fang Yuan, he definitely has a trump card."

"He is a ruthless person, he does not leave others a way out. The current situation of this dragonfish business is not something he'll accept."

While Fairy Zi Wei was thinking of this, Eastern Sea's You Chan suddenly had a change of expression.

"What is it, Chan Er?" Qin Bai He asked in concern.

"Oh, oh no. My dragonfish sea is being attacked by a Gu Immortal! The Gu formation has been destroyed, I must return!!" You Chan screamed in anxiety.

Even though her immortal aperture had a lot of dragonfish, the bulk of them were in the dragonfish sea area.

The dragonfish sea area was the foundation of her finances, most of her assets were there, how could she let anyone destroy it?

Qin Bai He realized the severity of the issue, she grabbed You Chan's hand: "There is no time, I will go with you. Don't worry, I want to see who has the guts to act so arrogantly in front of us!"

The Immortal Gu House flew out like a rainbow, carrying the two fairies' rage as it went from white crane sea area to dragonfish sea area.

The two sea areas were not too far away, this was why You Chan could stay at Qin Bai He's place without too much worry.

Thus, when they reached dragonfish sea area, the attacker had not left yet.

You Chan's immortal Gu formation had already been half destroyed, that Gu Immortal was still taking the dragonfish into his immortal aperture.

“Such guts!” Even with You Chan’s great disposition, she became furious upon seeing her dragonfish, which were raised with such difficulty, taken away in front of her.

“Who are you, you dare to attack my woman’s place, today will be your death date!!” Qin Bai He shouted as she transmitted to You Chan.

“Chan Er, be careful, this person is quite weird, his method to take the dragonfish is very skillful.”

Even though Qin Bai He was angry, she had not lost her reason, she assessed the place and had a clear understanding of the current situation.

You Chan looked over following Qin Bai He’s guidance and her heart jumped.

The mysterious Gu Immortal did not use any immortal methods, he was only controlling an ancient desolate beast, but the dragonfish that You Chan raised obediently followed him into his immortal aperture.

You Chan took a closer look and felt even more shocked: “What is going on? This tiny golden scaled ancient desolate beast is a dragonfish? Golden... dragonfish? Don’t tell me this person is my opponent in treasure yellow heaven? Wait, according to Heavenly Court, this person is likely to be Fang Yuan?!”

You Chan had just thought of this when the person taking the dragonfish closed his immortal aperture’s entrance and turned around to face the two furious fairies.

“You are finally here, my effort to wait here was not wasted, you managed to come. Hehehe, I am Fang Yuan, remember this name.”

“To be able to know the name of your murderer before death, this is my act of kindness towards you.”

Fang Yuan said this as the entire world changed, an immortal battlefield appeared and trapped You Chan and Qin Bai He.

Qin Bai He and You Chan were immensely shocked, they looked at each other with pale faces.

Fang Yuan was a vicious fiend with rank eight battle strength, why was he here?

Wasn’t he hiding somewhere in seclusion because of Heavenly Court’s pursuit?

Why did he dare, why did he dare to come out!

And why was he so arrogant and vicious, he dared to attack another Gu Immortal’s territory in broad daylight?!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1485: Purple Star Broken Life

Looking at the panicking Qin Bai He and You Chan, Fang Yuan had a cold gaze.

“It seems that the Gu Immortal world has been peaceful for too long, and this Eastern Sea has been too prosperous and peaceful due to their abundant resources, they were completely caught off guard by my attack.”

If this was during the five regions chaotic war, the world would be in turmoil, every Gu Immortal would be extremely alert, but before this, there was lasting peace, Gu Immortals cultivated on their own, focusing on their immortal apertures, very few would go out and fight to the death.

Firstly, the immortal aperture would have calamities and tribulations once in a while.

Secondly, Gu Immortals had all sorts of complex relationships, attacking one would attract more enemies.

Thirdly, information was not perfect, Gu Immortals could hide deeply and often, one unknown immortal killer move could turn the situation around.

The risks were high and rewards were little, Gu Immortals normally did not want to engage in life and death battles.

But this was different for Fang Yuan’s case.

“I have rank eight battle strength, why would I care about your friends and network, what is there to fear even if I kill you?”

Battle strength was Fang Yuan’s assurance, as well as his wisdom path attainment.

After committing a crime, at worst he could run away!

The world was huge, even Heavenly Court and heaven’s will could not do anything to Fang Yuan now, not to mention the rest.

And the third aspect, information. Shadow Sect had a lot of information across all five regions, Qin Bai He and You Chan did not know about Fang Yuan’s background, but he knew a lot about them.

“As long as I kill You Chan, the dragonfish business will be mine alone, the profits will be immense!”

Even if Heavenly Court wanted to obstruct Fang Yuan, they could not succeed easily.

Because these resources needed to grow in specific environments, results would only show after some time.

Fang Yuan was like a tortoise doing his best to develop and absorb his gains, raising his strength. He was like a venomous snake digesting all the food he ingested, he was feeling a bit of hunger now, he acted shockingly, directly going to Eastern Sea and sneak attacking suddenly.

He caught You Chan and Qin Bai He off guard with this move.

The two fairies here were very juicy loot. Especially You Chan, she cultivated water path and had a water path immortal aperture. Fang Yuan’s water path attainment level was grandmaster, he could annex her immortal aperture, it was very useful.

You Chan and Qin Bai He looked at Fang Yuan, they could sense his deep killing intent, mixed in with greed and ruthlessness, the situation was terrible now, the two women panicked, their hearts were beating, they knew that they were in danger.

Qin Bai He forced herself to calm down, telling her companion: “Chan Er, even though we are rank seven, our strength will not increase much if we work together, our compatibility in battle is quite low. This enemy is too powerful, we cannot fight him directly, we need to escape.”

Qin Bai He wanted to retreat before even fighting him.

There was no helping it, Fang Yuan’s reputation was renowned in the five regions now.

You Chan and Qin Bai He were famous people in Eastern Sea, but how could they compare to Fang Yuan?

You Chan agreed with Qin Bai He’s words deeply, she frowned and transmitted: “I think the same! But we are trapped inside the immortal battlefield killer move, how can we escape?”

This immortal battlefield was completely flawless, like a dark red egg trapping the three immortals. There were countless purple stars in the egg shell, shining dazzlingly. The scene was beautiful, but You Chan did not have the mood to appreciate it.

She wanted nothing more than to smash the egg and create a hole so that she could escape!

Qin Bai He quickly replied: “I have a method to penetrate the immortal battlefield, to communicate with the outside world and draw in reinforcements.”

“That’s great!” You Chan was joyful.

Normally speaking, once a person was trapped in an immortal battlefield, they would be isolated from the outside world, they could not connect to treasure yellow heaven.

But this relationship was like a spear and a shield, one side was stronger than another. If the spear was stronger, it would penetrate the defense, but if the shield was stronger, the spear would be helpless.

Qin Bai He was one of the six fairies of Eastern Sea, similar to You Chan, if she sought for help outside, she would get lots of responses. In fact, the two of them were even slightly linked to Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals.

Even though asking for help would make them owe favors and leave debts behind, their lives were at stake, they did not care.

“Alright, go ahead, I will defend you!” You Chan had a determined expression, she stood in front of Qin Bai He.

Qin Bai He breathed in deeply, her lustrous black hair spread out as countless flower petals descended, it was a beautiful scene. Within the fragrant flower petals that rained down, Qin Bai He with pale white skin was like a fairy of flowers, it was a moving scene.

Over at You Chan, her aura was rising, it was becoming stronger.

The immortal killer move was activated, droplets of rain filled the sky, before turning into a misty fog that shielded both her and Qin Bai He.

Fang Yuan stood in the air, watching them with a nonchalant attitude, purple light flickered in his eyes as he smiled: “Qin Bai He, you want to communicate with the outside world, this killer move fragrant flowery words will not work, don’t waste your effort.”

Saying so, he willed as countless purple stars descended and filled the world.

The purple stars crashed down as You Chan’s rain shield and Qin Bai He’s flowers suffered terrible damage.

Fang Yuan controlled the immortal battlefield killer move, after creating a wisdom path environment, he had a huge territorial advantage, he suppressed both water path and wood path.

“My immortal battlefield was created by deduction using three rank eight battlefield killer moves and eighteen killer moves as reference. I named it purple star broken life, it only has one ability, that is to conceal traces and isolate you from the outside world. The space in here is huge, but it only occupies one tiny spot in the outside world, even if anyone came here, they would not notice the battlefield.”

Fang Yuan spoke casually, but these two fairies felt their hearts turning cold.

Qin Bai He was shocked and uncertain.

She was shocked because Fang Yuan actually exposed her plan. She was uncertain because she did not know if he was speaking the truth.

“So amazing! This Fang Yuan is so scheming, he is definitely not someone who has brawn without brains!”

Qin Bai He thought about it for a while, she was covered in sweat, she could see how tough Fang Yuan was to deal with.

Regardless of the truth behind his words, she had already wavered, this was more effective than most wisdom path killer moves.

You Chan was someone with a firm attitude, she shouted as she pushed with her palms.

Instantly, raindrops moved as countless crystal clear water threads gathered into a huge fish monster.

Immortal killer move — Whale Form Rain!

Fang Yuan snorted as his gaze shifted, countless purple stars crashed down and completely suppressed the fish monster and two fairies.

This immortal battlefield killer move had many of Fang Yuan’s wisdom path Immortal Gu, it had great power.

However, You Chan and Qin Bai He desperately held on like tough rocks facing impending waves.

That huge fish monster was in poor shape after the purple stars’ attack, but You Chan sustained her killer move and replenished it with rainwater.

Immortal killer move — Soul Beast Summoning!

Fang Yuan willed as he summoned five ancient soul beasts, attacking the two fairies.

He did not use year beast summoning because soul beast summoning was superior. The ancient soul beasts were under Fang Yuan’s control, they were obedient, but the suppression of the battlefield made them feel uncomfortable.

Inside this wisdom path battlefield killer move, the effect would be better if Fang Yuan used wisdom path Immortal Gu or killer moves. Other paths would still face suppression and conflict, it was not like the sovereign immortal body.

“After this, I should modify a soul path battlefield killer move and use it with soul beast summoning, the effect would be great.” Fang Yuan thought.

The wisdom path battlefield killer move was more useful for concealment and preventing deductions, this was the advantage of the path itself, so Fang Yuan deduced a wisdom path battlefield killer move first.

The ancient soul beasts were ferocious, assaulting the two female immortals and fighting against them.

They were controlled by Fang Yuan, they ignored the fish monster and directly attacked Qin Bai He and You Chan, causing them to be in great danger.

During the intense battle, You Chan’s heart sank: “Fang Yuan has not attacked yet, but we are already desperately trying to stay alive, if he attacks, we are dead meat!”

Fang Yuan was still far away, watching the two females in tough combat.

After a long time of resting and practising, his methods were now abundant, he had no clear weaknesses. Even without using any signature methods, he forced these two rank seven Gu Immortals into a corner.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1486: Death of Beauties

Under Fang Yuan’s ferocious attacks, after a dozen breaths, You Chan felt fatigued, she could not carry on much longer.

“Sigh...” Qin Bai He sighed deeply as she stopped the immortal killer move fragrant flowery words that had been active.

Fang Yuan did not lie to her, fragrant flowery words was useless here, Qin Bai He had tested it, she joined the battle with a heavy heart.

She was a wood path Gu Immortal, she used her killer moves consecutively. Only to see that flowers were falling everywhere, some of her moves had corrosive gases, some of her moves had endless flower petal blades.

Qin Bai He’s long dress was fluttering with her black hair, she seemed to be dancing in the battle, her body was elegant and extremely attractive.

On the other hand, You Chan shouted heroically but seductively at the same time 1 .

The two women were famous fairies in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world indeed, they had incredible elegance and were very attractive. If any ordinary Gu Immortal met these two precious gems, they would already be melted by their appearance, why would they find problems with them? Not to mention killing them.

It was a pity that the two girls met Fang Yuan!

Immortal killer move — Ancient Sword Dragon Transformation!

Immortal killer move — Reverse Flow Protection Seal!

“Roar—!”

The sword dragon roared and suddenly appeared, charging at the two girls without stopping.

“Oh no!” You Chan shouted loudly.

Qin Bai He’s heart was about to jump out, she gritted her teeth: “Evil fiend, take this move!”

Saying so, flower petals gathered around her and formed into a tornado, sweeping towards the ancient sword dragon.

You Chan also reacted as she shouted: “I will lend you a hand!”

Saying so, she used her water path killer move and shot out a tidal current.

The current fused into the petal tornado and instantly, the tornado grew by several times, its power and multiplied.

“What a great fusion of water and wood!” Qin Bai He praised as her confidence level rose.

The flower petal tornado crashed into the ancient sword dragon as after a moment, the ancient sword dragon was completely destroyed by the tornado.

Such an incredible result did not make these two fairies happy, they showed an expression of shock instead.

“Oh no, this ancient sword dragon is fake!” Qin Bai He had just thought of this when a huge silver dragon appeared behind her soundlessly.

Time seemed to have stopped at that moment!

Qin Bai He turned around with difficulty, with the corner of her eyes, she could see that the ancient sword dragon had opened its mouth, biting into her tiny body. Those sharp dragon fangs shining with cold light were like spears, Qin Bai He felt a chill upon seeing them!

“Fang Yuan, you are a reputed person with rank eight battle strength, you actually sneak attacked!” At the other side, You Chan shouted with deep anger in her.

Fang Yuan had such an advantage but he still sneak attacked, he was truly too shameless, he did not have the disposition of an expert, he was too shameless!

Seeing that Qin Bai He was about to end up in his mouth, at the moment of crisis, You Chan attacked with unprecedented ferocity!

A huge rain started to drizzle, the raindrops shot towards Fang Yuan like countless arrows.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly in his heart, he bit hard without concern.

Thump!

Because he used too much force, when his teeth collided, there was a dull and loud sound.

“No—!” You Chan screamed in shock.

Almost at the same time, her strong attacks were all reflected back to her by reverse flow protection seal.

You Chan defended herself in a panic, at this moment, she truly felt how weak she was.

“How can I beat him?”

“His defensive method uses Reverse Flow River, all of my attacks are reflected back at me, he is too shameless!”

You Chan felt like she was in an icy abyss.

However, when Fang Yuan opened his mouth, there were no bones or flesh, only some petals were in between his teeth.

And on the other end, the flying petals gathered and formed a human body.

The body quickly moved away, it was a naked Qin Bai He, without any clothes.

At this moment, she had used her lifesaving killer move and rendered Fang Yuan’s attack useless, Qin Bai He managed to escape with her life.

“Bai He!” You Chan shouted happily.

Qin Bai He had an ashen expression, her lips were trembling. She had escaped from death, the situation was so dangerous earlier, she was only a second away from actually dying.

The flower petals flew towards her and gathered on her body, instantly turning into a beautiful dress.

You Chan quickly flew over and regrouped with her.

The two girls had alerted gazes as they looked at Fang Yuan, from the depth of their eyes, there was deep fear and shock.

The ancient sword dragon’s attack missed but it did not attack again, its dragon pupils were observing the surroundings.

“I understand now, so that’s it.” Suddenly, the ancient sword dragon’s mouth opened as its voice reverberated in the two girls’ ears.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Countless purple stars shot down again, all of the petals in the battlefield were decimated.

Qin Bai He’s body shook intensely.

Fang Yuan’s act left her with no way out, she could not use that lifesaving method again.

Ancient sword dragon roared again as it pounced.

The two fairies were pale and were biting their lips, fighting for their lives.

This was truly a battle of survival.

The two fairies did not dare to hold back anymore, they used their trump cards.

Boom boom boom!

The intense attacks resulted in dazzling lights, it was like a fireworks display.

The ancient sword dragon crossed the fireworks and moved smoothly, reverse flow protection seal reflected all attacks away from it, it was truly unstoppable!

The two girls were injured, and their injuries were deepening rapidly.

However, Fang Yuan could not take their lives in the meantime.

These two fairies were rank seven Gu Immortals, they had many methods to protect themselves, being famous people with deep foundations, they were not so simple.

“Fang Yuan, don’t attack, we surrender!”

“We acknowledge your strength, I swear that we will step out of the dragonfish business from now on. Please let us off.”

After a while of fighting, the two girls were bathed in blood and panting, they begged for mercy.

There was no hope of victory for them in this battle at all.

From start to end, Fang Yuan had the upper hand, the two girls were resisting desperately, but they could not last much longer.

“We can pay resources and large amounts of wealth, as long as you let us off.”

“That’s right, if we fight to the death, we will detonate our Immortal Gu, you will get nothing.”

“We should not have been enemies with you, these dragonfish are all yours, we have learned a lesson already, if we see you again, we will take a detour.”

“We swear that after this battle, we will not be enemies with you or initiate any acts of revenge.”

The two girls said one after another, their opinions were the same.

“Truly intelligent and perceptive of the situation.” The ancient sword dragon stopped attacking and floated elegantly in the air.

His cold dragon eyes looked at the two women as Fang Yuan said: “Then offer one Immortal Gu each to me, that will express your sincerity.”

The two girls’ hearts tightened, they looked at each other, feeling that Fang Yuan was truly hard to deal with!

Once they lost their Immortal Gu, their battle strength would fall rapidly.

But if they did not hand over their Immortal Gu, they would be in mortal danger.

After a bit of hesitation, You Chan said: “We will agree to this condition, but to prevent any accidents, let’s set an agreement to not harm each other, we will use information path methods from both sides.”

“Let’s do it.” Fang Yuan nodded.

However, during their negotiation, they met with obstruction.

Qin Bai He and You Chan emphasized that once Fang Yuan violates the agreement, he would be faced with death. He would not accept that.

Fang Yuan had his own schemes, he had the self cleansing immortal formation, he planned to use this immortal formation to get rid of the alliance agreements that were not favorable to him.

But Fang Yuan could not control this method himself, it would take some time to get rid of these dao marks.

If it was an instant death rule, self cleansing immortal formation could not help him.

Fang Yuan did not want to let these two Gu Immortals off.

If he did, it would be very hard to capture them again like this.

Furthermore, Heavenly Court might remove the alliance agreement for them, that would aggravate the situation. In this dragonfish business, Fang Yuan would still have a strong contender in that case.

The two did not reach an agreement, the two girls understood Fang Yuan’s intentions completely.

“Fang Yuan, it seems you really want us to die.”

“Even if we die, we will not let you gain anything!”

Filled with rage, these two girls chose to fight to the death.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, his killing intent surging. After some fighting, he found a chance and his attack landed, half of Qin Bai He’s body was torn apart.

The entire left side of her body was slashed apart, her organs and bones could be seen inside.

“Bai He, I will help you!” You Chan was extremely worried, she came to help but did not know that Fang Yuan’s true target was her.

You Chan was caught unguarded and was bit by the ancient sword dragon.

Plop.

Thick blood oozed out of the crevices between his sharp teeth.

Crack, crack.

Fang Yuan chewed and swallowed, this beautiful You Chan had turned into a pile of mushy flesh and blood, she had died.

“Ah, Chan Er!” Qin Bai He saw that her beloved was killed, she screamed in grief, her eyes were red as tears flowed out.

“Fang Yuan, you murderer, I will not let you off!” Qin Bai He did not dodge anymore, she charged at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan sneered, he used the immortal killer move purple thought perception starlight to break Qin Bai He’s defense.

Next, he opened his mouth and breathed out his sword light dragon breath.

After the dragon breath passed, Qin Bai He’s body was completely decimated, only her head was left, staring angrily at Fang Yuan, her beautiful face was still intact, but it was twisted and covered in blood.

Fang Yuan flew over slowly and slashed with his dragon claws.

Splat.

Like watermelon landing on the ground, the dragon claw tore Qin Bai He’s head into pieces as brain matter and blood splattered on the ground.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1487: Searching for Loot

With the flash of a bright light, ancient sword dragon returned to human form.

You Chan and Qin Bai He were dead, from now on, Eastern Sea only had four out of six fairies left.

Fang Yuan slaughtered them mercilessly without a change in expression, he targeted them and used his immortal method.

Soon, two immortal apertures were taken out and sealed temporarily.

Fang Yuan inherited Shadow Sect, he gained Blazing Heaven Demoness’ immortal aperture retrieval method, he also had many other methods that were useful against immortal apertures.

Before coming to Eastern Sea, Fang Yuan had already deduced a method to temporarily seal immortal apertures and carry them with him.

Thus, Fang Yuan was not busy dealing with the immortal apertures yet, he retracted his immortal battlefield killer move purple star broken life before calling out Ying Wu Xie, Bai Ning Bing and the rest.

In order to guard against unexpected mishaps, all of Shadow Sect’s members were brought with him to Eastern Sea inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Ancient battle formation — Omni-directional Travel!

This killer move originally had flaws and was not very useful, but Fang Yuan had modified it greatly. Thus, once he used it, Fang Yuan and the other three immortals immediately left dragonfish sea area and arrived at white crane sea area.

White crane sea area had a clear breeze and a calm sea, there was blue skies and white clouds, there was a clear horizon between the sea and sky, countless white cranes were flying around or standing elegantly on the small islands and resting.

Fang Yuan did not stop here, he plunged into the deep sea.

The rest of the Shadow Sect Gu Immortals followed Fang Yuan’s instructions and started to capture the white cranes in the area.

Fang Yuan went to the bottom of the sea, his eyes were sharp as he noticed an Immortal Gu House straight away.

It turned out that he had given up a portion of dragonfish sea area to rush to white crane sea area just for Qin Bai He’s rank six Immortal Gu House Bai He Palace.

When Qin Bai He left, she did not bring this Immortal Gu House with her. For one, peace was too ingrained in her, she was too careless, and on the other hand, she left behind the Immortal Gu House to defend white crane sea area from accidents.

Fang Yuan directly approached Bai He Palace.

The door opened, it actually allowed Fang Yuan to enter!

Because he had turned into Qin Bai He’s appearance, familiar face’s effect was too amazing, and only Qin Bai He’s will was left in this Immortal Gu House.

Fang Yuan successfully entered Bai He Palace and withdrew Qin Bai He’s will.

The will did not suspect anything until it entered Fang Yuan’s mind.

But Fang Yuan was prepared for it, with his mind as the battlefield, he quickly captured this will. And using the will, he slowly took over this Bai He Palace.

Even with his wisdom path Immortal Gu and methods, he had to spend a day and night to successfully gain ownership of Bai He Palace.

And now, Fang Yuan finally had his own Immortal Gu House!

“But this Bai He Palace is not complete, it lacks a lot of things and has low power, it only uses two rank six Immortal Gu as the cores, this was specially designed to house Qin Bai He’s concubines.”

Bai He Palace was not reliable, it was quite fragile and was far weaker than Hei tribe’s Immortal Gu House Dark Prison.

After controlling it, Fang Yuan took a good look at the structure and memorized its profundities before taking it apart, obtaining a large number of Gu worms and two rank six Immortal Gu, one was wood path and the other was food path, named Eat Fragrance.

This was out of Fang Yuan’s expectations.

The Gu worms on You Chan and Qin Bai He, be it Immortal Gu or mortal Gu, were not left to Fang Yuan.

Thus, the Gu worms that constructed Bai He Palace were all of Fang Yuan’s gains in terms of Gu worms.

Eat fragrance Immortal Gu was like a wooden box, small and exquisite, with the size of an adult’s index finger. It had a useless ability, that was to help the Gu Immortal eat fragrance qi and fill their stomachs.

“But in this world, there are no useless Gu worms, only useless Gu Masters.” Fang Yuan had a food path inheritance, with a shift of these thoughts, he found many ways to make use of eat fragrance Immortal Gu.

Even though this Immortal Gu was useless when used alone, it could be paired with other Gu worms and display a useful effect that was worth expecting.

Currently, Fang Yuan only had one food path Immortal Gu, named Snack. With the addition of Eat Fragrance, his insufficiency in food path Immortal Gu was reduced to an extent.

This was a joyful surprise to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan disassembled Bai He Palace and killed all of the concubines inside it, only their souls were left behind.

After returning to white crane sea area, the Shadow Sect immortals were still busy fighting against time, capturing and taking the resources inside the sea area.

The cranes had formed into groups, there was a huge number of them.

There were countless ordinary white cranes, twenty one desolate beast cranes, and four ancient desolate beast cranes.

After spending some effort, Fang Yuan and the rest captured all of the white cranes and even took all of the resources in the sea. There were two types of resources in the sea, one was great history iron, it was a rank seven immortal material of metal path and wisdom path, there was also an egg crystal rock, it was the life essence of eggmen after death.

There were a lot of egg crystal rocks, showing that long ago in white crane sea area, there was a huge group of eggmen living here.

Fang Yuan stored away all of these as he used Omni-directional Travel to return to dragonfish sea area.

There were still many dragonfish left here, the scale was far larger than the ones Fang Yuan owned.

Fang Yuan kept all of them in his immortal aperture, this fortune made his dragonfish quantity increase by dozens of times!

You Chan was the number one seller in the dragonfish business indeed, her foundation was so deep even Fang Yuan felt shocked.

After emptying dragonfish sea area, Fang Yuan looked at the sky, but nobody was coming.

“Heavenly Court is making no movement... to think that I still stalled for time purposely to lure out Heavenly Court’s reinforcements.” Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, his expression was icy.

He had prepared amply, even against a rank eight Gu Immortal, he had no fear.

Heavenly Court could guess Fang Yuan’s identity and help You Chan to resist Fang Yuan. Similarly, he could deduce that Heavenly Court was behind her.

Fang Yuan came here, it was an assault on You Chan and Qin Bai He, but he was also probing Heavenly Court.

And after probing, Heavenly Court still took no actions.

This was a little surprising.

“Heavenly Court actually sent nobody? Did Fairy Zi Wei fail to predict this, did she not react in time? Or maybe... Heavenly Court does not have the manpower after all.”

Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered, as an experienced schemer, he guessed the problem Heavenly Court was facing now.

Heavenly Court did lack manpower now.

Fang Yuan had felt this back when he was escaping in Western Desert. But now, he had confirmed his guess!

Since Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals did not come, Fang Yuan was not going to wait in vain. Using Omni-directional Travel to leave dragonfish sea area, he landed You Chan’s and Qin Bai He’s immortal apertures in an unnamed sea area in Eastern Sea.

A rank seven water path immortal aperture and a rank seven wood path immortal aperture.

While the immortal aperture was turning into a blessed land, Fang Yuan went inside.

Inside You Chan blessed land, the acknowledgement requirement was to kill Fang Yuan. He was very crafty, he changed his appearance and disguised himself before going in.

Immortal killer move — Blood Light Spirit Suppression!

You Chan’s land spirit was suppressed by Fang Yuan, the water path immortal aperture was soon annexed by Fang Yuan.

And in Bai He blessed land, the land spirit’s condition had to do with Bai He Palace.

But Fang Yuan ignored it, he used blood light spirit suppression to subdue the land spirit.

However, he could not annex a wood path blessed land, he could only let it stay here now. Since the blessed land could not be found easily when its entrance was closed, this place was still quite safe.

Like what Fang Yuan had expected, the two blessed lands had no Gu worms, even the resources inside were all destroyed already.

You Chan and Qin Bai He did not want to leave anything to this murderer.

Thankfully, not everyone could trigger the winds of assimilation.

After doing all these, Fang Yuan did not want to stay in Eastern Sea anymore, he left.

The crimes he committed this time, killing both You Chan, Qin Bai He and ransacking their sea areas, would soon be exposed and create a huge commotion in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.

It was not an exaggeration.

Be it Qin Bai He or You Chan, they were people with huge influences.

And because the Gu Immortal world had been peaceful for too long, it would cause some panic with the death of two rank seven experts, Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals would be worried for their safety.

There would also be a lot of Gu Immortal coming with various reasons, like taking revenge for You Chan and Qin Bai He, upholding justice, greed over their assets, or to establish their fame, a lot of Gu Immortals were going to track down Fang Yuan.

Why would he not leave?

Even though Fang Yuan was fearless with rank eight battle strength, he did not want to engage himself in these troublesome affairs.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1488: Crimes Exposed

Several days later.

A Gu Immortal was flying above white crane sea area.

This Gu Immortal wore a green shirt and had a young appearance, his nose was sharp and his face was wide, his eyes were shining like stars.

Rank seven aura emanated from his body, his name was Qing Yue Zhi Cheng, he had a huge origin, being a Gu Immortal from the Eastern Sea super force Qing Yue clan, he was the bloodline descendant of the first supreme elder, Qing Yue An.

“This is?” Seeing the barren state of white crane sea area, Qing Yue Zhi Cheng’s expression sank.

He had affection towards Qin Bai He, even though he knew she was into women, he could accept it.

Even though he could accept Qin Bai He, she did not accept him.

It was truly a one-sided affection, Qing Yue Zhi Cheng was rejected from the start but he had never given up, he had persevered for the last decade.

Even though Qin Bai He disliked him, she did not want to be on bad terms with Qing Yue clan, thus, she always replied to Qing Yue Zhi Cheng’s letters, albeit half-heartedly.

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng would write her a love letter once in a while, but Qin Bai He would only reply with one word – read, or okay.

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng was satisfied with receiving ‘read’, but if he got ‘okay’, he would be smiling for the next few days.

Humans were not emotionless, even Gu Immortals had lust and feelings of love towards others.

But recently, he had not been getting any responses to his letters.

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng tried to contact her but they all failed.

He had a bad feeling in his heart, he could not wait any longer, he directly came to white crane sea area.

Once he saw the barren state of white crane sea area, Qing Yue Zhi Cheng’s brows became tightly locked.

In the past, white crane sea area had a serene environment with flying white cranes, it was filled with vitality, but now, it was robbed bare, there was literally nothing left.

“Fairy Bai He, where are you?” Qing Yue Zhi Cheng’s bad feeling was getting worse, he immediately dived into the sea.

He had been here many times, even though Qin Bai He did not welcome him, he often found many appropriate reasons to find her.

This time, after entering the sea, the image that he saw was far different from the image in his mind.

He saw a huge trench with countless crevices and broken rocks, Qing Yue Zhi Cheng’s heart sank to rock bottom: “Oh no, looking at the situation here, this place was robbed!”

After checking for a while, Qing Yue Zhi Cheng was filled with rage.

“They have such guts!”

“They dare to rob Fairy Bai He’s sea area, the great history iron and egg crystal rocks were all plundered, this person is so arrogant.”

“Fairy Bai He, you must be safe!!”

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng thought of the person he loved as he felt shocked and scared.

He looked around but did not find that rank six Immortal Gu House Bai He Palace.

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng was unresigned, he used his investigative method to look at the surroundings again.

He found nothing.

Qin Bai He seemed to have vanished into thin air, Bai He Palace was missing too, and even more strangely, Qing Yue Zhi Cheng could not find any traces of battle in this place at all!

Fang Yuan did not kill Qin Bai He or You Chan here, that was in dragonfish sea area.

But even if Qing Yue Zhi Cheng went to dragonfish sea area, he would not find any traces.

Fang Yuan’s methods to erase traces were simply too outstanding! And the battle was even conducted in the battlefield killer move purple star broken life.

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng could not find anything, he felt suspicious.

“Fairy Bai He is an expert among rank seven Gu Immortals, it is unlikely that anyone can kill her stealthily. Unless it is a rank eight Gu Immortal...”

“But rank eights usually govern a domain and restrict each other, any movement from them would cause a huge commotion, how could they come to kill Fairy Bai He without reason? Hehe.”

Thinking of this, Qing Yue Zhi Cheng’s worries lifted.

But soon, his expression turned stiff: “Don’t tell me Fairy Bai He got sick of me and decided to change locations and moved all her resources with her?”

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng thought about it, the possibility was slim.

White crane sea area produced a lot of resources, how could Qin Bai He give up on it? Even if she found a better area, there was no reason to leave this place alone.

“Unless, she encountered an unbeatable enemy? Against such a strong foe, she had no choice but to give up and retreat?”

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng had another thought.

But soon, he shook his head: “If she met with a strong enemy, why would Fairy Bai He not seek help? With her network, with just one word, she would receive a lot of help from various Gu Immortals.”

“So what happened exactly? Why did Fairy Bai He vanish so mysteriously?”

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng frowned deeply.

He did not think that Qin Bai He was dead, firstly, he did not want to think in that direction, secondly, that possibility was too bizarre.

Qin Bai He was a famous person in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world, her strength was not weak, she was rank seven.

Who could easily kill such a person?

Like what Qing Yue Zhi Cheng had said, unless it was a rank eight Gu Immortal.

But this possibility was even slimmer.

The five regions have been in peace for too long, Qing Yue Zhi Cheng subconsciously felt that such a cruel murder would not occur, and it would definitely not happen to his beloved fairy.

But after his investigation, Qing Yue Zhi Cheng had a conclusion.

“Regardless of what happened, Fairy Bai He must be in trouble, I need to find her and help her!”

At once, the thought of the hero saving the beauty appeared in Qing Yue Zhi Cheng’s mind.

“If there are no clues here, I will find the nearby Gu Immortals and ask them.” You Chan’s name soon appeared in Qing Yue Zhi Cheng’s mind.

You Chan’s dragonfish sea area was famous too.

And in terms of distance, You Chan was closest to Qin Bai He.

They were basically neighbors.

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng moved with lightning speed, he immediately left white crane sea area and spent some effort to reach dragonfish sea area.

Dragonfish sea area was in a worse state than white crane sea area, this place used to have countless dragonfish swimming about in millions per group, it was one of the most amazing sights in Eastern Sea, but now, it was empty.

A breeze was blowing as the seawater became turbulent, waves were created endlessly.

“What is happening?”

“Even dragonfish sea area was robbed?!”

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng was tongue-tied, he expressed shock in his eyes.

Qin Bai He and You Chan’s sea areas were in such states, who was the one who caused this?

After all, both You Chan and Qin Bai He were powerful rank seven experts, they were not weak at all!

This time, Qing Yue Zhi Cheng not only felt suspicion, he felt fear.

He came extremely alert, he went deep into the sea to investigate, but the sad thing was he found out nothing.

“How can this be? What happened exactly? Not just Fairy Bai He, even Fairy You Chan also encountered this. Wait, the dragonfish business, treasure yellow heaven!”

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng’s body shook as he connected to treasure yellow heaven.

You Chan’s dragonfish business was famous in all five regions, she definitely had her will in treasure yellow heaven to manage the dragonfish business.

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng’s consciousness entered treasure yellow heaven as he quickly contacted You Chan’s will.

Once they conversed, Qing Yue Zhi Cheng found out that You Chan’s will had no idea what happened!

“You Chan and her will communicate quite frequently, the interval is at most three days each time. This means that in the last three days, she and Fairy Bai He have encountered a mysterious attack!”

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng’s felt sweat dripping off his forehead.

The more he investigated, the more he uncovered the truth, it was mysterious and terrifying.

Be it You Chan or Qin Bai He, they would not take away the resources randomly and run away. All this showed that they had met with an unstoppable threat!

An intense worry filled Qing Yue Zhi Cheng’s heart.

“No, I need to get home and get help from the Gu Immortals in my clan!” Qing Yue Zhi Cheng looked at the empty dragonfish sea area as he felt a chill down his spine, he quickly returned and did not dare to stay any longer.

Qin Bai He’s and You Chan’s murder was exposed. Even though there was no evidence pointing to the two fairies’ deaths, with Qing Yue clan’s great strength, they quickly unveiled a portion of the truth.

Meanwhile, the culprit behind this murder case was scot-free, flying casually in Western Desert.

After leaving Eastern Sea, Fang Yuan did not go to Northern Plains, instead, he went past Southern Border and arrived in Western Desert.

Above the clouds, Fang Yuan’s consciousness entered the sovereign immortal aperture as he inspected his gains from Eastern Sea.

After killing You Chan and Qin Bai He, Fang Yuan’s gains were huge.

He gained a large number of dragonfish, the scale far surpassed dragon scale sea area, they were living all over Mini Eastern Sea now.

He also got a high quantity of great history iron and egg crystal rocks.

There were also two rank six Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan had already started arranging their food.

Qin Bai He’s wood path immortal aperture was left in Eastern Sea, he could not annex it or bring it with him. You Chan’s water path immortal aperture was already annexed, he gained a huge sea area and a large number of water path dao marks!

But these gains were far inferior to City Well.

Indeed, the secluded domain of heaven and earth, City Well, was now in Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

After Fang Yuan went to Eastern Sea, he first went to turbulent flow sea area and moved the City Well that was left there into sovereign immortal aperture. After that, he went to dragonfish sea area and killed You Chan and Qin Bai He.

Secluded Domain of Heaven and Earth — City Well!

Fang Yuan had wanted to get City Well long ago, but back then, pulling mountain Immortal Gu was ineffective against it, he could not relocate it into his immortal aperture.

But now, using the light of wisdom, he created an immortal killer move using pulling mountain Immortal Gu as the core, to target and move City Well, after a long time of hard work, he succeeded!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1489: Variant Human Raising Plan

The well was squarish on the outside, but it was circular on the surface inside.

City Well!

Fang Yuan thought about it, he placed City Well in Mini Central Continent.

After Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley, and Reverse Flow River, this was Fang Yuan’s fourth secluded domain of heaven and earth.

Throughout history, there were few Gu Immortals who could achieve the feat of collecting four secluded domains of heaven and earth.

City Well was written in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, it was formerly the living environment of minimen.

Right now, that mini city in City Well had been destroyed by Fang Yuan. Originally, Miniscule Mountain was inside it, but it had already been removed from City Well and destroyed in Northern Plains.

However, Fang Yuan’s City Well was not empty, there were many blessed lands inside it.

The owner of these immortal apertures were the ones who were killed by Fang Yuan using City Well.

After the immortal aperture becomes a blessed land, it needed to absorb heaven and earth qi, the entrance had to be opened to connect to the outside world.

Fang Yuan had taken the chance to enter and explore these blessed lands.

Those without land spirits that could be ransacked were already looted. The remaining blessed lands had a lot of cultivation resources left behind, Fang Yuan did not take them yet.

“Now that I have blood light spirit suppression, I can suppress these land spirits, but without the upper extreme heavenly eagle, I cannot enter.”

These immortal aperture’s entrances were closed now, Fang Yuan could not enter for the time being.

“If I can annex these immortal apertures, and take all of their resources away, my dao marks will rise sharply and my immortal aperture development will also increase.”

This was a huge amount of profits that Fang Yuan could not devour yet, but it was already his, so there was little chance of getting stolen, Fang Yuan was quite pleased.

“Other than these blessed lands, City Well has huge value, it cannot be underestimated.”

With City Well, Fang Yuan could raise variant humans and even pure bred humans.

This was a good thing.

The Gu Immortal world classified the development of immortal apertures into seven levels.

The first level was establishing mortal resources, to produce mortal Gu, mortal Gu materials, and ordinary beasts and plants.

The second level was to have immortal material resources to feed Immortal Gu.

The third level was to raise and produce immortal beasts and plants, completing the ecosystem.

The fourth level was to use excess immortal materials, beasts, and plants to trade and earn profits.

The fifth level was to produce Immortal Gu naturally in the immortal aperture.

The sixth level was to raise variant human and humans, and produce Gu Immortals among them.

The seventh level was to produce lifespan Gu.

These seven levels were in order, they were the summation of the Gu Immortal world’s experiences throughout time, until now, it was the golden rule of Gu Immortal cultivation.

It was not that Gu Immortals could not raise variant humans or humans in their immortal aperture from the start, but if they did, the results would not be optimal, and they would be wasting their own foundation instead.

These seven levels were in order, it was created by generations of geniuses in the Gu Immortal world for countless years. If one progressed using this template, their immortal apertures would be very stable and healthy.

Fang Yuan was currently at the third and fourth level, he was quite far from the fifth level.

But he had City Well now, he could directly jump into the sixth level of development.

City Well could allow a Gu Immortal to jump levels and raise variant humans and even humans easily.

What was the advantage of raising variant humans or humans?

The benefits were too immense.

Each variant human race has its own unique resources.

For example, snowmen had ice tears and snow lotus essence, rockmen had rock dragonx, while feathermen had freedom Gu.

If these resources were produced on a large scale, they would be sold in the market for huge profits.

Other than these unique resources, there was also one common resource.

That was — Human Qi!

Heaven qi, earth qi, human qi.

Balancing these three qi was the crucial point of immortal ascension.

During the process of immortal ascension, the higher the human qi, the greater the Gu Master’s foundation, and the better the quality of the immortal aperture formed.

After becoming a Gu Immortal, human qi’s usage would fall by a lot. The Gu Immortal only needed to balance heaven and earth qi, replenishing them once in a while to stabilize their immortal aperture world.

But that did not mean that human qi was useless.

Conversely, human qi was extremely important to Gu Immortals!

But the method to use human qi had been lost long ago. Qi path was created earlier than strength path, it was strong in the past, but had declined by now.

At the moment, there were quite a few methods to use human qi as a Gu material. Especially some qi path Gu Immortals with some exotic methods, even though these qi path Gu Immortals were quite rare already.

Be it variant humans or normal humans, they could produce human qi.

The higher the number and strength of the variant humans and normal humans, the higher quantity of the human qi.

Of course, under the same circumstances, the human qi produced by a variant human is lower in quantity than a pure bred human.

Other than human qi, there would also be a lot of ‘special’ immortal materials that would be produced by variant humans and humans.

For example, fan door wind.

This rank seven immortal material only grew on the doors of mortal houses, instead of in nature like forests or mountains. Whenever this immortal material is produced, the mortal’s door would not be able to close, it could only stay open.

Such a special immortal material could not be found in the wilderness.

“And there is a hypothesis in Shadow Sect’s inheritance.”

“The more human qi one accumulates, the more likely that Gu Immortal can comprehend the profundity of human path!”

Thinking of this, bright light shined in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Human path!

This was the path created by Ren Zu.

Throughout history, some rank eight great experts or rank nine venerables would comprehend some of the profundities inside <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> in their lives.

For example, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable studied <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> and created all living beings luck and heaven and earth luck.

Or for example, the Ancestor Chai Fu from Southern Border’s Chai clan, he had created the human path killer move from studying <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> in his later years, allowing Chai clan to become a super force.

Such instances were innumerable.

“In my situation, if I start raising variant humans and humans, it would only destroy my immortal aperture’s environment, I would waste too much time and effort, my foundation would be expended.”

“But with City Well, I will be able to raise them in isolation, it will not interfere with my immortal aperture development. Furthermore, raising variant humans or humans in City Well will be more effective than usual due to the special environment.”

“Forget about humans, their intelligence is too high, and they expend too many resources. Now, I should choose one type of variant humans to raise in here.”

There were ten variant human races in the Gu world.

They were: hairy men, rockmen, snowmen, feathermen, mermen, inkmen, eggmen, beastmen, miniman, and mushroommen.

Each had their own specialty.

“Which one should I choose?” Fang Yuan had not decided.

There was only one City Well, he could only choose one type of them to raise. Because variant humans needed different living environments, raising more than one would only result in losses to him.

“Forget about beastmen, they are extinct.”

“Hairy men? I do need them to refine Gu for me.”

“Rockmen? I had raised a batch before, with guts Gu, I can raise them very easily.”

“Snowmen are good too, I am related to them by marriage now, the snowman tribe is supporting me.”

“As for miniman, they are suited for this City Well to begin with, my immortal aperture development also needs these miniman to nurture my immortal plants.”

“As for feathermen, mermen, inkmen, eggmen, and mushroommen... either one of them would give me huge benefits too.”

Fang Yuan thought about it, by the time he reached his destination, he did not come up with an answer.

This problem was not urgent.

Because even if Fang Yuan considered it, he did not have the funds to start this huge project now.

His immortal essence stone storage was quite low now.

But thankfully, he had a lot of red date immortal essence, even though he had just fought against You Chan and Qin Bai He.

This was due to the sovereign immortal aperture’s time flow, after being restored and further raised by Fang Yuan’s time path method, the rate of time was much higher than one-to-sixty now!

Thus, Fang Yuan’s red date immortal essence was accumulating rapidly.

“In this Eastern Sea trip, I collected City Well and killed You Chan. I have no rivals in the dragonfish business now, I am earning huge profits every day, that is certain. As long as I continue to sell dragonfish, my problem of low funds will be solved soon.”

“The important thing now is Thieving Heaven’s dream realm!”

Fang Yuan thought about it as he descended from the clouds, landing on the desert.

On the blazing desert, a Gu Immortal was standing and waiting.

He smiled as he cupped his fists at Fang Yuan: “Tang Fang Ming greets Lord Fang Yuan.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1490: Thieving Heaven’s Dream Realm

Fang Yuan met Tang Fang Ming again.

This person was not simple, in the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, he had become extremely famous during the five regions chaotic war, he was almost like the Ma Hong Yun of Western Desert.

Of course, now that Fang Yuan inherited Shadow Sect, he learned about many things.

During the five hundred years of his previous life, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable successfully revived and had sovereign immortal fetus Gu, he lurked in Heavenly Court and secretly controlled the five regions, plotting against the world.

Ma Hong Yun’s rise was manipulated by Shadow Sect secretly.

Tang Fang Ming and even the rise of Tang clan were also due to the actions of Shadow Sect.

“Even though Heavenly Court lacks manpower now and seems unable to cope, once the dream realms expand and the five regions get into war, all sorts of people will awaken in Heavenly Court, they will shake the world once again.”

Heavenly Court’s foundation was too deep, even Shadow Sect could not contest it.

Fang Yuan was starting to understand why Shadow Sect reacted in that way.

He was now following Shadow Sect’s old path, Ma Hong Yun was killed but Tang clan was still around, he had to support it.

Fang Yuan had decided on this long ago. Back then, when he and Tang clan interacted and worked together, he was not just trying to use their tributary of the River of Time, he also wanted to work with them sincerely.

Heavenly Court was now aggressively plotting for the future, when the great era arrives.

You Chan and Qin Bai He were almost used by Fairy Zi Wei as pawns, therefore Fang Yuan had to eliminate them.

Be it for the dragonfish business’ profits, or the situation of the future.

To contest with a powerhouse like Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan’s schemes needed to be elevated to encompass all five regions, he needed to plot against the world!

Tang Fang Ming was extremely happy that Fang Yuan had arrived.

The last time Fang Yuan left Western Desert, he was escaping, Tang Fang Ming did not expect him to return so quickly.

“Bring me to Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.” Fang Yuan spoke directly regarding his goal.

“Lord Fang Yuan acts quickly, I am in deep admiration, please follow me.” Tang

Fang Ming led the way.

The two flew for a while before arriving on top of an unassuming desert.

Tang Fang Ming stopped and stretched out his finger as a crack opened in the air, immortal aura permeated from it.

Fang Yuan was a formation path grandmaster, he had deep foundations, after seeing this immortal formation, his eyes shined as he praised: “What a good immortal Gu formation!”

This immortal formation’s concealment was incredible, even if Fang Yuan had his investigative killer move active, he could not detect it.

“Lord Fang Yuan, follow me.” Tang Fang Ming entered the crack first.

Fang Yuan did not hesitate, he followed.

After entering it, Fang Yuan found out that the space created by this immortal formation was like a grassland.

His field of vision was very wide, there was lush greenery all around, and the most attracting thing was Thieving Heaven’s dream realm at the center of the plain!

Thieving Heaven’s dream realm was huge, like a mountain.

It was emitting a blue eerie light, radiating the entire formation path space.

The five regions chaotic war had not started yet, but this dream realm of Thieving Heaven was uncovered earlier and found by Tang clan, they secretly kept it and had been researching it.

Even though Tang clan obtained this precious treasure, they were clueless about dream path, their progress was very slow in it.

And this progress was already built on Tang Fang Ming’s great talent and ingenuity.

Even so, he nearly died in the dream realm, if his sister had not given up the clues to Paradise Earth’s true inheritance and got help from White Sea Shatuo, Tang Fang Ming would have died.

And White Sea Shatuo was a split soul of Spectral Soul, during the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, he led the Western Desert Shadow Sect members and died in the battlefield.

Fang Yuan did not mention the incident with White Sea Shatuo to Tang clan or Tang Fang Ming, the clue of Paradise Earth’s true inheritance was also in Fang Yuan’s hands currently.

Paradise Earth’s true inheritance was not Fang Yuan’s focus now, he was looking at the huge dream realm of Thieving Heaven now.

This blue and dazzling dream realm was very dangerous!

Because it contained heaven’s will.

Heaven’s will could invade dream realms, Fang Yuan had suffered from this during the Southern Border dream realm incident.

Long ago, when he explored the dream realm of Starry Sky grotto-heaven, he also met with heaven’s will. Heaven’s will appeared in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s form to advise him, and allowed him to outwit Spectral Soul during the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain.

As the saying goes, people learn from mistakes, an old demon like Fang Yuan drilled this lesson into the depths of his heart.

“Once the dream realm manifests for too long, heaven’s will would invade it, that happened in Southern Border’s giant dream realm, Thieving Heaven’s dream realm, in Western Desert, has been around for even longer, I’m sure heaven’s will has already completely taken over.” Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with an eerie light.

“If it were before, I would need to avoid it. But now... hehe.” Fang Yuan’s lips curled up as he stretched out his arm, aiming at Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.

Immortal aura surged as Fang Yuan’s body was covered in a grey-white light.

His palms were also enveloped by this grey-white light.

Fang Yuan took a step forward and let both palms approach the dream realm, eventually, the grey-white light came into contact with Thieving Heaven’s dream realm while Fang Yuan’s palms were merely an inch away.

Fang Yuan had the sovereign immortal body, not Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique. If he really touched it, his soul would be trapped inside the dream realm. He was very vigilant about that.

The grey-white light flowed like water, entering Thieving Heaven’s dream realm without obstruction.

The grey-white light continued to permeate as it spread out towards the surroundings from Fang Yuan’s palms as the center.

This phenomenon lasted for a while, it was as if the mountain-like dream realm was covered by a grey-white light.

The light continued to expand, but Tang Fang Ming only watched quietly by the side.

He could not tell what it was, but he knew it was an immortal killer move.

“Lord Fang Yuan is truly formidable, he actually created an immortal killer move against the dream realm! Compared to him, I have only created several dream path mortal Gu. There truly is a mountain above a mountain, a man standing above another man!” Tang Fang Ming felt deep admiration, he felt how unfathomable Fang Yuan was.

Fang Yuan was expressionless, but he was quite nervous internally.

He was activating the immortal killer move, heaven’s will dissipation! Even though it was not his first time, this was his first attempt at using it on a dream realm.

Heaven’s will dissipation used heavenly secret Immortal Gu as the core, it could eliminate heaven’s will. He had used it against Spring Autumn Cicada earlier, now that he was using it on a dream realm, who knew what would happen.

Time passed, ten minutes went by quickly.

The grey-white light had expanded quite a lot, not only on the surface, but also into Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.

Thieving Heaven’s dream realm was like a mountain, but one-tenth of it was already covered by grey-white light.

Just when Tang Fang Ming thought that the grey-white light was going to expand further, it stopped moving as multicolored eyes started to appear from the grey-white light.

These eyes were very special, they changed colors with each blink.

The number of multicolored eyes increased rapidly, after a few breaths of time, they went from tens to hundreds, and to thousands in a flash.

After several tens of breaths, there were millions of multicolored eyes, they filled the grey-white light, not only on the surface, but also inside the light itself.

“There is an effect!” Fang Yuan was excited internally but remained expressionless, Tang Fang Ming could not sense the fluctuation of his emotions.

The multicolored eyes continued to blink as Fang Yuan’s red date immortal essence was expended rapidly. The heaven’s will in Thieving Heaven’s dream realm was also getting wiped out along with it.

The multicolored eyes blinked for several times before vanishing, but new eyes would grow in their place.

Heaven’s will was rapidly destroyed, after a while, there was no heaven’s will left in the grey-white light.

At this time, the grey-white light would expand as the multicolored eyes moved in for more destruction.

Fang Yuan activated heaven’s will dissipation for three days and nights.

Eventually, in Thieving Heaven’s dream realm, there was none of heaven’s will remaining.

Fang Yuan continued to activate the killer move and kept a veil of grey-white light around Thieving Heaven’s dream realm at all times. This way, as long as heaven’s will tried to invade it, it would be destroyed by the multicolored eyes in the white light.

And now, Thieving Heaven’s dream realm was finally safe!

“Next, I will explore this dream realm.” Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, he was filled with joy in his heart.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1491: Pitiful Young Man

Ying Wu Xie, Hei Lou Lan, White Rabbit, and Fairy Miao Yin came out of Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

“Next, I will personally explore the dream realm.” Fang Yuan turned around and said to Tang Fang Ming.

Tang Fang Ming’s heart shook, but he soon understood Fang Yuan’s words, he smiled bitterly: “Fairies, please come with me.”

This immortal Gu formation that concealed Thieving Heaven’s dream realm was controlled by Tang Fang Ming. But now, Tang Fang Ming was giving up a portion of the control to Shadow Sect’s immortals, so that they could control it along with him.

This was part of the content of Fang Yuan’s and Tang clan’s alliance agreement.

When Fang Yuan explores the dream realm, his soul would leave his body and enter the dream realm, his body would be left unguarded.

That was quite a dangerous situation.

Thus, Fang Yuan brought out Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals, they were in charge of protecting him.

This immortal Gu formation could not be left under the control of outsiders, thus, Shadow Sect’s Gu Immortals had to take part of the control of this formation.

This way, be it Shadow Sect or Tang clan, they could restrict each other, neither could do anything vicious to Fang Yuan’s body.

Fang Yuan always did things with utmost caution.

After the formation was half controlled by Shadow Sect, he went out of his body and entered Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.

Tang Fang Ming did not blink, he watched in concentration.

“This is the truly important method!” His breathing became rough, his mind was filled with thoughts of learning.

But what crucial technique could he learn from just watching Fang Yuan like this?

“Where... am I?” Fang Yuan entered the dream as his vision changed.

He found himself in a young male body, he was inside a tattered tent.

The tent was very simple, it was merely a tattered tarp.

Wind blew and the tent shook, a cold chill could be felt as Fang Yuan’s vision shifted towards the hole on the tent.

The tent was torn.

“Damn this guy, not only did he beat me, he even tore my tent!” The young man that Fang Yuan was acting as gritted his teeth as he muttered to himself.

Next, this young man lowered his head, inspecting his injuries.

Fang Yuan’s vision was turned again as he looked at his dirty and tattered clothes, he was really pitiful and poor, his chest was covered in blue-black wounds.

The young man touched the injuries on his body, waves of pain could be felt by

Fang Yuan.

“To think that I, the great Ben Jie Sun, would end up in this ridiculous world, growing up as a kid again, and being bullied by a bunch of youngsters. This is too much!”

“This world is absurd, humans actually control Gu worms to gain mysterious powers, this is just like a nightmare.”

“Sigh! If this was really a dream, why have I not woken up after more than a decade?”

Fang Yuan listened to the young man’s words, his heart shook.

He knew of many secrets, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was an otherworldly demon like him, he had transmigrated from another world.

“Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s name is Ben Jie Sun. That means that in this dream, I am acting as Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable himself! But he is still a mortal youngster now, he has not started his Gu cultivation journey.” Fang Yuan understood.

At this moment, the young man muttered again: “But thankfully, the tribe will open the sacred land tonight. Once I enter it, I will be able to awaken my aperture and start cultivating, I will gain Gu Master powers.”

“Oh! I hope this power can allow me to escape this place and return to my homeland!”

The young Thieving Heaven said this as he felt pain, he gritted his teeth and stood up, moving towards his tent flap as he walked outside.

Fang Yuan was like a will attached to this young Thieving Heaven, he could only watch but could not manipulate his actions.

This was a rare situation even for Fang Yuan.

After trying all his methods and failing, Fang Yuan could only watch as an observer as the dream realm went on.

Young Thieving Heaven went out of his tent.

Immediately, in Fang Yuan’s vision, he saw a green oasis under the moon.

It was night time, the round moon was high in the sky, its pure moonlight raining down on the entire oasis.

This oasis was very small, there was a pond at the center, with many tents surrounding it.

These tents were of varying sizes and colors, most were grey and white, some were yellow, gold, and purple.

These tents with brighter colors were usually larger, signifying the higher status of their owners.

Young Thieving Heaven looked at the area with admiration, before turning around to look at his own tent.

His tent was tiny and ugly, it was covered in black soot, there were even holes in it, cold wind blew in at night.

The young Thieving Heaven frowned as arrogance flashed in his eyes, he snorted: “After tonight, I will not stay in such a horrible place anymore!”

Saying so, he walked towards the central tent.

Along the way, many youngsters came out of their tents.

They had stiff expressions, nobody dared to say a word.

Today was the most important day of their lives, it was the most sacred moment, according to Western Desert’s customs, all of the youngsters had to be reverent and not speak unnecessarily.

Whoever spoke too much or showed too much emotions, either joy or sadness, would cause the ritual to lose its elegance, they would be severely punished and even exiled by the clan.

Once they were exiled, any mortal youngster would die without doubt.

The severity of the punishment was evident.

More and more youngsters gathered towards the center of the oasis, a crowd was forming.

Along the way, young Thieving Heaven naturally met the youngsters who beat him.

Fang Yuan turned to look, they were all tall and muscular, their bodies were much larger than the surrounding youngsters, their clothes were also evidently more expensive, showing that they had extraordinary background.

These youngsters also saw young Thieving Heaven, even though they did not dare to speak, their fierce and provocative gazes were clearly seen.

Young Thieving Heaven snorted, feeling no fear.

Both sides walked with fierce gazes until they arrived at the pond in the middle of the oasis.

There were common reeds growing around the pond, these white reed were flowering, swaying along with the night winds, while moonlight poured down warmly, all of the wild hope Gu were living in the reed, there were countless hope Gu here based on the number of flickering lights.

This made Fang Yuan remember the scene of his awakening ceremony back on Qing Mao Mountain.

Even though Western Desert’s traditions were different from Southern Border’s, they were both using hope Gu to awaken the aperture, the process was quite similar.

One by one, the youngsters walked into the reed field as wild hope Gu flew around in shock.

Their apertures awakened one by one, they were worried, sad, happy, and depressed respectively. For most mortals, the aptitude of the aperture decided their life’s achievements.

But different from Southern Border’s heated atmosphere, Western Desert had a solemn and quiet atmosphere during this ceremony.

Even if one felt immense joy or sadness, they had to control themselves, their expressions could distort, they could shed tears, but they could not make a sound.

Soon, it was young Thieving Heaven’s turn.

He could not wait, he went into the reed the moment permission was granted.

But the aptitude that he had was only the worst D grade. D grade aptitude Gu Masters had only twenty to thirty percent primeval essence in their apertures, most could become rank one but few could reach rank two.

Gu Masters with such aptitudes had basically no potential or future.

It was basically confirmed that Gu Masters with D grade aptitudes would end up being at the bottom of the Gu Master hierarchy in their lives.

“How! How can I have D grade aptitude?” Young Thieving Heaven screamed immediately.

“Shut up!” The Gu Master in charge of the event immediately captured Thieving Heaven and sealed his mouth.

Young Thieving Heaven struggled intensely, the Gu Master snorted coldly and chopped with his palm.

Young Thieving Heaven immediately fainted.

Fang Yuan’s field of vision also turned dark.

He found that he could not do anything, even unravel dream had no effect.

“The larger the dream realm, the more restrictive power it has. However, unravel dream had no effect likely because this dream realm that I am in is very special.”

Fang Yuan estimated.

He tried again and upon seeing no effect, he had to helplessly wait for the next scene.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1492: Thieving Heaven’s Fortuitous Encounter?

In the vast darkness, Fang Yuan’s soul was suffering.

This dark space had an immense corrosive effect on his soul. This was something Fang Yuan had never seen when exploring dream realms.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan’s soul foundation was extraordinary, he was over ten million man soul, he could endure the corrosion of the dream realm.

Time in the dream realm could not be estimated.

He only felt like a long time had passed before a white light appeared in the vast darkness.

The white spot extended into a white line, before the line expanded up and down, light burst out as it filled Fang Yuan’s vision.

Young Thieving Heaven gradually awakened.

The white light was the blazing sun.

Young Thieving Heaven quickly used his hand to shield his eyes.

“Why am I here?” He soon found himself lying on the desert, night had already passed, it was noon now.

Young Thieving Heaven’s doubts did not last long because soon, he found some information in his mind.

This information was left behind by the clan’s Gu Master.

The content was that Young Thieving Heaven had defied the clan rules and was exiled as punishment. But because he was young and ignorant, he only needed to stay in this desert for three days, as long as he returned to the clan after that, he would be able to join the clan again and live there.

“F*ck!” After understanding what had happened, young Thieving Heaven cursed as his saliva shot out.

“I had merely said a few words and you guys exiled me, this is abusing children, you simply disregard lives!”

“You bastards! I curse you...”

Young Thieving Heaven raised his middle finger but he did not know where to point.

He did not even know his directions now, he did not know where the clan was at.

This discovery made young Thieving Heaven lose all his vigor.

He sat on the ground: “What do I do now? Even though I became a Gu Master, I have no Gu worms. I have no water or food, by night time, without any warm clothes or tents to shield me from the wind, I will freeze to death!”

“No, I must live.”

“I will survive in this accursed world and find a way home!”

Young Thieving Heaven gritted his teeth, two flames of ambition were burning in his eyes.

At the same time, Fang Yuan felt his body relaxing, the restraints on him vanished suddenly.

When he moved his arms and legs, young Thieving Heaven also moved his arms and legs.

“Oh? I can control it now?”

“It seems that I need to take the place of young Thieving Heaven and survive in this desert.”

Fang Yuan immediately realized.

Struggling to survive in a desperate situation, Fang Yuan had experienced that many times, but he was in a difficult spot now.

There was simply one reason, he had nothing to work with!

Young Thieving Heaven had nothing on him, he only had twenty to thirty percent primeval essence without a single mortal Gu. Asking him to survive in the desert was harder than ascending heaven.

“The clan exiled him like this, they want him to die. No, more accurately, they do not care about a Gu Master like him.”

Normally speaking, every Gu Master was precious, but Fang Yuan thought about the scene before, he realized the reason.

“The clan that young Thieving Heaven is in is not strong, they have few resources. Thus, even if they have potential Gu Masters, they need to nurture the talented ones.”

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly, this discovery was useless for the problem he was facing.

Looking around, all he saw was sand, there was no greenery anywhere.

Immortal killer move — Unravel Dream.

Fang Yuan used it, but after a while, he saw nothing happening.

This useful trump card that had helped him countless times was completely restricted in Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.

Fang Yuan sighed deeply: “I can only test my luck.”

He chose a direction and started moving.

One and a half days later, Fang Yuan encountered nothing, he died of thirst along the way.

After that, Fang Yuan’s soul suffered a huge injury.

He was forced out of the dream.

The exploration of the dream realm failed, his soul was heavily injured and returned to the sovereign immortal body.

Fang Yuan felt dizzy and saw darkness, he quickly used guts Gu to heal his injuries.

“Guts Gu!” Tang Fang Ming saw this and had a look of envy.

He watched as Fang Yuan used many guts Gu to heal his soul rapidly.

Guts Gu was the best supporting Gu for exploring dream realms.

Fang Yuan went into Thieving Heaven’s dream realm again as his soul left his body.

Arriving in the desert again.

Fang Yuan sighed, he chose a different direction and moved forward.

After walking for a day, there was still nothing in his vision, Fang Yuan was tired and thirsty, he felt his body reaching its limit.

“If Thieving Heaven was in the same situation in history, he had no way of surviving, he needed external help or fortuitous encounters.”

“This means, one direction will have a fortuitous encounter. But my luck was bad, I did not encounter it.”

“This round seems to depend on the explorer’s luck. It is a pity my luck path methods cannot be used in the dream, unless I can combine dream path and luck path to create an immortal killer move or Immortal Gu of both paths, that will have effect.”

Fang Yuan continued to analyze.

His second exploration failed again.

After resting, he started his third try.

This time, he chose a different direction, soon, he encountered a pit.

This was a quicksand pit, Fang Yuan was stuck and could not escape.

“Am I going to die again?” Fang Yuan was a little stifled, he could only watch as the sand devoured him.

But unexpectedly, before the quicksand covered his head, sand started to spew upwards like a geyser, shooting Fang Yuan towards the sky.

After Fang Yuan landed, the quicksand pit had turned into a hole, it was blowing out cold air.

It was a cool and comfortable breeze.

“This might work!” Fang Yuan quickly got close to the pit and saw that there were winged fish flying out of the hole along with the breeze.

These were not fish, they were mortal cool wind Gu.

Fang Yuan quickly wanted to subdue these mortal Gu, but the cool wind Gu were very fast, they ignored Fang Yuan.

The edges of the hole were blowing air and repelling Fang Yuan, pushing him away.

Fang Yuan had low strength and was very hungry, he could not get close to the hole and interact with these cool wind Gu.

But Fang Yuan was not dejected, he patiently waited.

Not long after, his chance appeared, a cool wind Gu was injured when colliding into its companions, it fell to the ground and left the cool air, landing at the fringe of the hole.

Fang Yuan quickly grabbed this cool wind Gu.

But in his excitement, he squashed it to death!

Fang Yuan was speechless, he could only wait.

Soon, his chance appeared again, two cool wind Gu flew out.

But before Fang Yuan captured them, they flew up again and went into the cool air tunnel.

Fang Yuan sighed, but he suddenly had an inspiration: “What if I use unravel dream at this time?”

He used immortal killer move unravel dream again, at the next moment, he saw an effect, a cool wind Gu flew out.

Fang Yuan grabbed it and before he refined it, a second cool wind Gu flew down and was quite injured, it tried to move its wings but could not fly.

Fang Yuan captured it as well and after some effort, he refined both cool wind Gu.

When the cool air vanished, these wild cool wind Gu flew with it and left Fang Yuan’s vision, but he already had five cool wind Gu in his aperture.

“I finally have some methods.”

Even though the issue of survival was not solved, this was a good start.

And most importantly, this quicksand pit was a sign that Fang Yuan chose the right direction.

And something that boosted Fang Yuan’s morale was that unravel dream was not useless here, it had some specific uses in Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.

Fang Yuan continued past the quicksand pit and moved forward, not long after, he saw a small oasis.

There was a well in the oasis, even though there were some wild beasts guarding it, and the leader of the beasts even had a mortal Gu.

Fang Yuan was energized, he used the five cool wind Gu to fight this group of beasts.

Eventually, using the terrain and his schemes, he killed the beast group, and also subdued the wild Gu worm on the leader’s body. This was a poison path Gu worm resembling a scorpion.

The battle was decided, Fang Yuan quickly came to the well, but to his disappointment, it had dried up.

But that was not an issue, the beast corpses here were precious provisions.

Fang Yuan drank the beast blood and ate some meat to fill his stomach. Next, he collected the stomachs of some beasts and collected all of their blood, he also pulled apart some meat and used the beast intestines to tie them onto his body.

By now, the dream realm was already at night time, the desert temperature was getting low.

Fang Yuan had a plan, he was not rushed or anxious.

He held the beast skins and bones that he had and came to the dried well, creating a structure with the bones and placing the skin above them.

These beast skins still had some fat layers on them, they were quite heat retaining.

After his arrangements, Fang Yuan entered the empty hole and carefully explored the well.

He placed his his feet on the sides of the well, preventing his body from falling down, he pulled on the beast skin and completely covered the hole on top.

Next, he slowly got down to the bottom of the well.

When he got to the bottom of the well, Fang Yuan wanted to survive a night in here, but he had a new discovery.

It turned out that there was a small hole at the bottom of the well, and there was quite the thing there!

Looking at the edge of the hole, it was man-made.

Fang Yuan’s heart shook, he quickly entered this hole by controlling young Thieving Heaven’s body.

Following this hole, after fifty to sixty steps, Fang Yuan came to a small underground space that was the size of a room.

This place was quite simple, but there was a bowl made from soil, and there was a spring, it was tiny, but clear water was accumulated there.

There was also a dried corpse on the ground.

“Don’t tell me that this is Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s true fortuitous encounter in his early days?”

Fang Yuan was intrigued.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1493: Mysterious Sheepskin Map

Inspecting it carefully, Fang Yuan did not find any traps.

He slowly got closer to the dried corpse, when he was five or six steps away from it, a change occurred.

Fang Yuan cursed internally because he had lost control of young Thieving Heaven once more, he became a spectator again 1 .

The young Thieving Heaven muttered: “This person died in the well, was he trapped by the wild beasts and could not escape?”

Next, he came to the corpse, he lowered his head in respect before searching the corpse.

No unexpected mishaps occurred, it was an ordinary corpse, there were no harmful traps.

While searching it, Young Thieving Heaven found that this corpse was a Gu Master during his life, his rank was not low, he seemed to have a high status.

He had no Gu worms left, but within the clothes that he wore, there was a sheepskin map.

Young Thieving Heaven did not gain anything but the sheepskin map.

In this underground hole, light was quite dim, young Thieving Heaven only saw that the map had lines, but they were not clear.

He stored the map carefully and searched the area again, but he had no discoveries.

But young Thieving Heaven was very satisfied.

Because there was a precious water source here.

He was quite careful, he first checked the water quality and slowly drank a little of it after finding no problems with it.

This water source was deep underground, the corpse had spent a lot of effort to create it.

Young Thieving Heaven drank a mouthful of water, he felt a cold refreshing flow as the taste of blood in his mouth from consuming beast blood faded by a lot.

Young Thieving Heaven’s gulped, this mouthful of water drew out his inner desire, he lowered his body and buried his face in the spring.

Gulp, gulp, after drinking several mouthfuls, he raised his head as water splattered everywhere.

He sat on the ground with a thud, young Thieving Heaven did not speak, his hands were supporting the ground, his eyes were shut, after a while, he sighed deeply.

After resting for a while, he stretched out his hand, wiping the water from his face as he stood up, returning to the bottom of the well.

Young Thieving Heaven shuddered, the bottom of the well was much colder than the underground hole.

But young Thieving Heaven had his reasons to come here.

He looked up at the well, even though there were several beast skins as cover, the night winds were very strong, one beast skin had been blown away already, a gaping hole was created.

From the hole, young Thieving Heaven could see those stars shining high up in the night sky.

He sighed as he took some beast skin and wood, quickly creating a fireplace, next, he tried to start a fire by using friction on the wood, succeeding after several minutes.

The flame was not large, the smoke flew out of the well while the heat was retained, allowing young Thieving Heaven to stay warm.

Young Thieving Heaven first cooked some meat, before eating them when they were cooked.

After eating cooked food and filling his stomach, he felt very drowsy.

But young Thieving Heaven controlled his sleepiness and used the dim light to observe the sheepskin map that he had gotten.

“This sheepskin map must have existed for a very long time.”

“Hmm? Isn’t it pointing out my clan’s oasis?”

Young Thieving Heaven was shocked.

The small oasis was the focus of this sheepskin map, there were even several Western Desert words on it.

The words were tiny and due to the effects of time, most of them were blurry already, only the first few words and some characters were still clear.

Young Thieving Heaven could barely decipher them, he said uncertainly: “Land of buried immortal... inauspicious... curse...”

“Strange!” After a long time of observation, he could not excavate more clues, he frowned tightly.

“I’ve been in this world for over a decade, I’ve heard about stories of immortals from the clan elders. But these are just legends, are there really immortals in this world?”

“This might not be impossible. Looking at Gu Masters, I can see the peculiarity and mystery behind this world, anything is possible.”

“Land of buried immortal... don’t tell me that the place where I live has an immortal buried there?”

“But why curse? And inauspicious?”

“This sheepskin map is really strange. This world has information path Gu worms to store maps and information. That corpse must have been a strong Gu Master back then, why did he use the sheepskin map instead of Gu worms?”

“This sheepskin map was sewn into the inner layer of his clothes, if his clothes were not torn, I would not have found it.”

“He hid it so carefully, it must be very important, but this is too risky, it is far safer to store it inside an information path Gu worm.”

Young Thieving Heaven muttered, his eyes flickering with deep thoughts.

Fang Yuan was watching by the side, he had thought of young Thieving Heaven’s questions long ago, they were all suspicious, especially the sheepskin map.

“Forget about this now, this sheepskin map also points out the location of the well. If I follow it, I will be able to return to the clan.”

Even though young Thieving Heaven had no sense of belonging to the clan, he knew that it was impossible to live alone in the desert.

Not only was it dangerous, nobody could tell where threats could come from, and in terms of food, young Thieving Heaven had a very limited amount of meat now.

This small oasis was too weak.

His eyes felt very heavy, young Thieving Heaven’s vision soon blurred as he fell into deep sleep.

He was simply too tired, not just physically, but also the mental exhaustion of all that had happened.

Once he slept, Fang Yuan’s vision went black.

In the darkness, Fang Yuan felt that the corrosion of the dream realm became several times stronger, his soul was rapidly expended.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan had experienced this before, he endured it until the darkness faded.

The time in the dream realm was hard to estimate, when the darkness faded, his soul foundation had been shaved by half!

When his vision cleared, Fang Yuan was shocked to find out that young Thieving Heaven was tied up at the bottom of the well.

And in front of him was an elderly Gu Master with a grim expression.

This elderly Gu Master had a wrinkled face, his hair was fully white, he was very old, right now, his crooked hands were holding onto a sheepskin map.

He used his hands to caress this sheepskin map as he showed heated and greedy emotions in his eyes.

His expressions made young Thieving Heaven shudder, he might have met a lunatic.

“Who are you? Why did you tie me up?” Young Thieving Heaven asked.

He felt very aggrieved, he woke up tied and was now a captive.

“You should be glad that I, Sha Xiao, have not killed you yet.” The old man spoke with a hoarse voice.

He carefully placed the sheepskin map into his pocket as he looked at young Thieving Heaven: “Lad, you are a member of this clan?”

Young Thieving Heaven did not answer.

Because he understood that the elderly Gu Master understood the secret and value of this sheepskin map, he did not kill him but tied him up instead because he wanted to make use of him.

The elderly Gu Master saw that young Thieving Heaven was staying silent, his expression became darker as he floated towards young Thieving Heaven like a phantom.

“Lad, don’t think that I do not know what you are thinking if you stay silent. Heh, you have probably never heard of my name, I will teach you a lesson first.”

The elderly Gu Master laughed sinisterly as he kicked with his leg.

His leg landed on young Thieving Heaven’s chest as the intense pain almost made him fall unconscious.

Young Thieving Heaven was sent flying like a rock, he crashed onto the wall of the well and fell to the ground.

But the pain had just begun, young Thieving Heaven started to scream.

Because the elderly Gu Master’s kick was not so simple, young Thieving Heaven felt his entire body going numb, at the same time, his muscles and organs felt like they were pricked by countless icy needles.

The intense pain made young Thieving Heaven suffer immensely, soon, he was covered in snot and tears as he curled up like a cooked prawn.

“Lad, do you know how powerful I am now?” The elderly Gu Master smiled sinisterly.

He was very happy.

Young Thieving Heaven’s screams and cries made him feel a deep sense of satisfaction.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1494: Old Grandpa

The louder young Thieving Heaven screamed, the brighter the elderly Gu Master’s smile.

But soon, young Thieving Heaven realized this and gritted his teeth, not uttering a sound.

“Eh? Brat, you still want to resist?” The elderly Gu Master was furious and stomped young Thieving Heaven’s chest.

Crack!

Young Thieving Heaven’s ribs immediately fractured into pieces which then pierced into his heart and lungs, immediately causing him to be on the verge of death.

But he still did not utter a sound, he had almost crushed his teeth with his intense grinding, and his eyes were opened wide with anger, but he did not scream.

“Hehehe!” The elderly Gu Master started laughing from anger, and directly used Gu Master methods against young Thieving Heaven.

This time, it was not as simple as a sharp pain, young Thieving Heaven felt a kind of numbing pain with all kinds of sensation attacking him in turns.

“Ahh—!” He could endure it no longer, he let out a piercing scream and started struggling fiercely, he rolled on the floor while crazily scratching his skin.

The elderly Gu Master laughed heartily: “Suffered enough? Actually daring to defy the great Sha Xiao, hmph, even if you have strong pride, you will still have to kneel before me. Beg for mercy, as long as you call me grandpa Sha, grandpa will forgive you, grandson, ahahaha!”

But young Thieving Heaven’s heart was filled with nothing but fury.

Sha Xiao’s words triggered his pride, he inwardly vowed that even if he died from the itch, died from pain, died by rotting, or died from numbness, he would not beg for mercy!

Sha Xiao waited for a while, young Thieving Heaven was still rolling on the ground, tearing his clothes and skin, crying out in deep pain, but he did not beg for mercy.

Until young Thieving Heaven could not endure anymore, a fierce light flashed past his eyes as he smashed head-first into the wall of the well.

“He actually wants to die?!” Sha Xiao was surprised, quickly moving to stop this.

Young Thieving Heaven’s strength was useless, he could only let Sha Xiao manipulate him.

Sha Xiao not only saved him, but also healed him, soon, his heavy injuries had turned into light injuries.

“Kid, you have quite the backbone, even I am feeling some admiration.” Sha Xiao changed his tone, green light flickering in his eyes.

He looked at the powerless young Thieving Heaven lying on the ground, and said with a soft and slow voice: “But if you die, what will your family do? I won’t feel distressed about it, but what about your parents? What about your siblings? Hehe, do you have a girl you love, does she know your feelings? If you die, what about her?”

Young Thieving Heaven’s expression began to change.

He had lived for over ten years in this world, yet he had a wanderer’s mentality without any restraints. However in his original world, he had a family, healthy parents, and a beloved fiancée.

“I cannot die.”

“I need to live on!”

“I need to find a way to leave this world and return home. There are people waiting for me there!”

Sha Xiao was an old schemer, the corners of his lips curling up slightly as he saw the change in young Thieving Heaven’s expression.

Young Thieving Heaven fearlessly gazed at Sha Xiao: “You have not killed me because you want to make use of me. Speak, what do you want me to do?”

Sha Xiao laughed heartily, giving a thumbs-up to young Thieving Heaven: “Kid, you have guts, you actually dare to speak to me like that.”

The moment he finished speaking, Sha Xiao’s expression changed, his laughter was gone without a trace, replacing it was twisted fury.

He ruthlessly kicked young Thieving Heaven’s face, and sent him flying.

He then pointed with his finger, a strange light shot out and struck young Thieving Heaven’s body.

Chii Chiii Chiii...

A series of soft sounds echoed within this old well.

Young Thieving Heaven’s expression rapidly changed as he felt intense pain all over his body, he tried to stand up but due to a lack of energy, he could only sit on the ground.

His face was bloody, his nose bridge had been smashed by Sha Xiao’s kick.

Young Thieving Heaven started blacking out and almost fainted from the pain.

With his remaining consciousness, he squinted at his hand but immediately received a huge shock.

He saw his hand was festering and corroding like it had touched powerful acid.

Not just the hands, his face, his arms, his neck, his whole body was starting to rot.

Soon, young Thieving Heaven’s eyes also started to corrode, losing his sight.

Sha Xiao’s sinister voice floated to his ears: “You think I need you? Hehehe, it is your fortune to be used by me! You dare show me such an attitude, so what if you die? At worst, I will just find another puppet. Hahaha!”

“Now, this is your final chance! I shall give you one final opportunity, if you don’t want to die, kowtow to me and call me grandpa, obediently follow my orders.”

“Take your time. You have been struck by my killer move anyway, your whole body will continue to rot, in a dozen or so breaths, your whole body will rot completely and only your skeleton will remain. Hehe, I will give you a few kicks then and see how hard your backbone really is.”

Young Thieving Heaven was silent.

Sha Xiao did not speak anymore after this, only looking at young Thieving Heaven with his sinister gaze.

Young Thieving Heaven was slumped on the ground, motionless like a statue.

The muscles on his whole body were beginning to rot, the stench of it had already filled the well.

The terrifying injuries, intense pain, and more importantly the entanglements in his heart, caused his face to distort.

“I, the great Ben Jie Sun, a noble army general, how could I beg for mercy?”

“But... if I die here, do I let my loved ones in the other world wait in vain?”

“Sigh!!!”

Young Thieving Heaven let out a heavy sigh inwardly.

He slowly adjusted his posture and knelt down, then he lowered his head till his forehead touched the ground.

He spoke with a weak and rough voice: “You win.”

“Hahaha.” Sha Xiao laughed wildly, his eyes opened wide as he stared at young Thieving Heaven: “Then what should you call me?”

“Gran... grandpa.” Young Thieving Heaven gritted his teeth, his whole body shook and hot tears rolled down from his corroded eyes.

“Hehehe, my good grandson!” Sha Xiao was satisfied, his voice turned sharp like a crow’s cry high above the graveyard.

Young Thieving Heaven reached his limits and completely fell unconscious.

Darkness descended upon Fang Yuan once again.

And the dream realm fiercely corroded his soul.

Fang Yuan passed this period with difficulty, his ten million man soul had already fallen to million man soul.

Exploring this dream realm of Thieving Heaven had an extremely high demand on soul foundation! Were it not for Fang Yuan cultivating his soul painstakingly before, he would not have the qualifications to explore this dream realm.

With the passing of time, the darkness disappeared, Fang Yuan could see once again.

The blazing sun was high in the sky, young Thieving Heaven was moving across the desert while dragging his extremely weak body.

Those terrifying injuries on him were all gone without a trace. But there were several new injuries which looked like lacerations inflicted by fangs and claws of wild beasts.

“Kid, listen properly, when you return to the clan, probe the situation for your grandpa.”

“Wait, grandpa will bring a few desert wolves to you, hehe, if you are going to put on a show, you should go all the way. Grandpa will not help you, if you can’t escape the wolves, you can only blame yourself.”

“Oh, remember not to speak carelessly. Grandpa’s killer move is in your body, you have already tasted the feeling of a rotting body. As long as I will it, your internal organs and your brain will immediately rot, hehehe, be obedient, grandpa won’t mistreat you, my good grandson!”

Sha Xiao’s figure was nowhere to be seen, but young Thieving Heaven’s ears were resonating with his voice.

The moment his words finished, several desert wolves rushed out from a sand dune.

These desert wolves had short and thin fur, they were pale brown and not that big but were extremely ferocious. They howled to signal the attack as they rushed towards young Thieving Heaven.

Young Thieving Heaven did not budge as he looked at the distance between him and the desert wolves shrinking rapidly.

Fang Yuan was baffled before suddenly reacting, he cursed inwardly while quickly attempting to control young Thieving Heaven.

Just like he expected, he had once again gained control of this body.

Fang Yuan quickly ran while looking into his aperture to see if there were any Gu worms that he could use to fight.

A sandpit Gu, a chimney smoke Gu, and a clear water Gu.

There was only over ten percent of green copper primeval essence left.

Those cool wind Gu and other Gu he had gathered after painstaking efforts were all gone.

“Looks like Sha Xiao did not want to expose that small oasis and the well, so he destroyed all the relevant clues on Thieving Heaven.”

“Damn it, clear water Gu is of no use here. Only sandpit Gu and chimney smoke Gu can be relied upon.”

Just as Fang Yuan thought of this, he suddenly felt wind at the back of his head.

Without even thinking, he leaped to the left.

At the next moment, a desert wolf had pounced on Fang Yuan’s previous location, it fell unstably to the ground, rolling some distance away.

Fang Yuan almost fell to the ground, if he fell down, those rushing desert wolves would definitely pounce at him and give him no chance to get up.

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan propped his arms up on the sand and exerted strength on them to forcibly push his weak body forward, he barely maintained his balance and continued to run.

Not even a few steps later, another desert wolf had caught up to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan quickly activated sandpit Gu, this rank one Gu expended five percent of his green copper primeval essence, instantly forming a pit in the desert.

The second desert wolf had just been about to exert strength on its legs to pounce at Fang Yuan’s back, but a sandpit appeared out of nowhere as it stepped into it.

Because it had exerted too much strength, this desert wolf lost its balance and fell face flat on the ground.

But the third desert wolf quickly rushed over and had already leaped to the air. This desert wolf was extremely cunning, it had wild Gu on it which caused its movement to be without any sound.

Fang Yuan simply didn’t have time to look back, but he saw the shadow on the desert’s surface ahead.

The third desert wolf’s shadow was pouncing at his shadow’s head.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, there was no use in activating Gu worms at this moment and he also had no time to dodge.

However, his rich battle experience helped him make the most sensible choice at this moment.

Evading the worst!

Although he could not dodge properly, he had to evade the worst.

Fang Yuan intentionally inched his right shoulder to the wolf.

Puff!

The third desert wolf pounced at Fang Yuan, its sharp claws piercing through Fang Yuan’s right shoulder and cutting out few pieces of flesh.

But Fang Yuan did not stop at all, he continued to run madly.

By this time, the first and second desert wolves had already regained their footing and caught up.

At this critical juncture, Fang Yuan put all his primeval essence in chimney smoke Gu.

This Gu worm was originally used to smoke food, but right now, it was being used by Fang Yuan to cope with this emergency and it furthermore produced a brilliant effect.

The dense smoke obstructed the three desert wolves' eyes and noses as Fang Yuan took this chance to pull apart some distance from the wolves.

But this was only a dying struggle.

The three desert wolves soon broke through the smoke and caught up to Fang Yuan.

"Am I going to fail?"

"This difficulty is too high!"

Fang Yuan was already at his wit's end, but right at this time, an electric chain brushed past Fang Yuan's cheek and struck the three desert wolves, instantly roasting them.

"The clansmen!" Fang Yuan was joyous as he recognized who had arrived.

But young Thieving Heaven was already at his physical limits, fainting once again.

The expected darkness did not appear, Fang Yuan surprisingly discovered his soul was floating in the air, out of the dream realm.

More accurately, this scene of Thieving Heaven's dream realm that had shrouded his soul had already disappeared.

"So it's like this, I successfully explored the first stage of the dream realm!" Fang Yuan was stumped before quickly realizing.

"Amazing, my theft path attainment has directly soared to grandmaster level!!"

Fang Yuan was overjoyed.

Although his soul foundation had greatly reduced, the harvest was similarly huge.

Indeed worthy of being Thieving Heaven's dream realm, just passing the first stage raised Fang Yuan's theft path to grandmaster level!

How terrifying would it be if he continued the exploration?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1495: Resting

Inside the immortal Gu formation, Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged with closed eyes, cultivating quietly.

Hei Lou Lan and the rest along with Tang Fang Ming were in control of this immortal formation.

Fang Yuan was calculating his gains and losses.

“The gains from exploring Thieving Heaven’s dream realm were huge. Not only did I test heaven’s will dissipation and obtained a satisfactory result, my theft path attainment has soared to grandmaster level!”

“But, I had to pay a huge price for this. My ten million man soul has now fallen to million man soul, the loss is great.”

“I had thought I would use unravel dream frequently, but who could have expected unravel dream to not provide me much help in this dream realm.”

From this dream realm exploration, Fang Yuan realized one point.

He might have unravel dream, but this method was not all-powerful.

“Unravel dream was used very few times, so my immortal essence expenditure is little, but my guts Gu expenditure has instead increased enormously!”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes and took out guts Gu, using them on the spot.

“So many guts Gu!” Tang Fang Ming’s eyes opened wide, revealing clear envy and desire.

He had also explored the dream realm many times, knowing the outstanding advantage of guts Gu. He was barely able to purchase some guts Gu as supply was lower than demand, but now he was looking at Fang Yuan using guts Gu as casually as eating candy.

“Oh, he is the sole guts Gu seller after all.” Tang Fang Ming lamented inwardly.

At the same time, his gaze landed on Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.

Thieving Heaven’s dream realm was enormous like a mountain and was still letting out eerie blue radiance, but right now, a large piece of the base of this mountain had disappeared.

This was the result of Fang Yuan successfully passing through the first stage.

Tang Fang Ming heaved a sigh.

He had already explored and researched this dream realm of Thieving Heaven for hundreds of times, maybe even a thousand times, but his accumulated achievements were not even a fraction of Fang Yuan’s one exploration.

Tang Fang Ming was recognized in Tang clan as a pioneer of exploring dream realms, he had a lot of accomplishments, creating many dream realm mortal Gu. But compared to Fang Yuan’s achievements, he paled in comparison.

Tang Fang Ming felt ashamed, but beyond that, he felt even more admiration towards Fang Yuan.

After a moment of stillness, Fang Yuan suddenly opened his eyes!

A sharp light flashed past his dark eyes.

By using guts Gu without regarding the expenditure, Fang Yuan’s soul foundation once again rose to ten million man soul.

He previously had nine million man soul, but with the corrosion from this dream realm, his soul quality had risen once again and gave a slight feeling of being even more condensed.

“Looks like the dream realm’s corrosion of the soul has some supplementary effect in soul cultivation. But if it is examined carefully, the effect is not high, and is far inferior to Luo Po Valley.”

Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley were the two sacred lands of soul cultivation proclaimed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, they were not resources that ordinary things could replace.

But it did not matter, Fang Yuan had brought Luo Po Valley with him in this trip to Western Desert!

Before he made this trip from Eastern Sea to Western Desert, he had considered everything properly. With his astute nature, how could he not make ample preparations?

“As for Dang Hun Mountain, there is treasure yellow heaven to transport guts Gu, it is the same whether I bring it or not.”

Actually, it was not that Fang Yuan did not want to bring it.

But it had a huge demand on heaven and earth qi in the immortal aperture.

Currently, his sovereign immortal aperture had Reverse Flow River, Luo Po Valley, and City Well, every three days, he had to devour large amounts of external heaven and earth qi to replenish his expenditure.

If they were not replenished in time, the sovereign immortal aperture’s foundation would weaken, causing a reduction in resource production, including time and space aspects. In severe cases, it might even cause sovereign immortal aperture to crumble.

“The difficulty in exploring Thieving Heaven’s dream realm is too high, the first stage is already so troubling, the second stage will definitely be even more difficult.” With this comprehension, Fang Yuan decided to first increase his soul foundation by another level before he continued exploring the dream realm.

As such, over the next period of time, he quietly concentrated on cultivating soul path.

Because of the continuous supply of guts Gu, Fang Yuan’s soul foundation rose rapidly.

Just as Fang Yuan was cultivating soul path in preparation for exploring the second stage, in Eastern Sea, Qing Yue Zhi Cheng was meeting Qing Yue clan’s first supreme elder to request for help.

“Zhi Cheng, looks like you are really determined to take the risk for Qin Bai He.” The old first supreme elder looked at this descendant who he was rather fond of and said with a sigh.

“Yes, I have made up my mind, I hope first supreme elder can help me!” Qing Yue Zhi Cheng said firmly.

But first supreme elder slowly shook his head: “It is not yet the time for me to be involved in this matter. Moreover, the truth is not out yet, even if I make a move, I won’t be able to give you much help.”

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng felt strange, how could first supreme elder, a grand rank eight Gu Immortal, be unable to give much help in this matter?

But first supreme elder told him of something which immediately made him understand.

“Junior thanks first supreme elder for the guidance, I shall now go ask for help.” Qing Yue Zhi Cheng was joyous.

“Go, go.” First supreme elder chuckled, waving his hand.

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng immediately flew out of the clan’s headquarter and moved towards Nan Gong clan’s territory.

Qing Yue clan’s first supreme elder had told him that whether Qin Bai He and You Chan were alive or not was unclear at this moment, what situation they encountered was also unclear, so what he should do was to find a wisdom path Gu Immortal to help investigate the truth. Only by knowing what happened to these two female immortals could they find the culprit and take revenge.

And the wisdom path Gu Immortal who was most suitable for this was none other than one of the three current wisdom path experts, the one hiding in Nan Gong, wisdom path Gu Immortal Hua An. This person had a close relationship with You Chan, if You Chan was in trouble, he would definitely help.

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng felt first supreme elder’s analysis was correct, he immediately moved to request help from Hua An.

But midway, he came across a rank six Gu Immortal of Nan Gong clan.

This Gu Immortal brought a message from Hua An: “Young master Zhi Cheng, Lord Hua An already deduced that you would look for him, so he sent me to welcome you. He is waiting just ahead.”

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng was overjoyed while also sighing in admiration of Hua An’s ability.

After a while, the two met.

Hua An spoke: “I will be honest with you, Fairy You Chan came to request my help not long ago, but unfortunately I was unable to be of help.”

Hua An and Qing Yue Zhi Cheng exchanged information, and naturally, their first suspect was Fang Yuan.

Because with You Chan’s death, Fang Yuan, who was in the dragonfish business, would benefit the most.

Unfortunately, they did not have Heavenly Court’s guidance, and only knew that mysterious Gu Immortal who was selling dragonfish in treasure yellow heaven was the most suspicious and had motive as well, but they did not know this person was Fang Yuan.

“I have been continuously deducing the past few days, I am afraid You Chan and Qin Bai He’s situation is less than optimistic.” Hua An said with a heavy expression: “This time, I am going to request help from the other two wisdom path experts, we will combine our strength and attempt to deduce the culprit.”

Qing Yue Zhi Cheng however shook his head at Hua An’s words.

“No, I believe the two fairies are still alive, they are not dead! Lord Hua An, please think carefully, the two fairies are rank seven experts, who could easily kill them?”

Hua An understood Qing Yue Zhi Cheng’s feelings and mood, nodding consolingly: “Your words are also reasonable.”

He then changed the topic and said: “I have a plan, we might as well spread news about the deaths of the two fairies. If they are still alive, they will definitely know we are looking for them and want to help them. If they are being hunted by the culprit, once these rumors spread, the culprit will be confused and will turn his attention towards us.”

“Great plan!” Qing Yue Zhi Cheng clapped his hands and praised.

Time passed, soon, half a month went by.

Fang Yuan’s soul foundation had increased to ninety million man soul, only a slight distance away from hundred million man soul.

In this period of time, he did not practise any immortal killer moves, instead spending his energy and time mainly in soul path cultivation. With this, his progress was naturally much higher than before.

Although guts Gu were being constantly expended, causing him to lose huge profits and also wasting his capital, Fang Yuan’s financial situation was instead slowly turning better.

The reason for this was the dragonfish business.

Fang Yuan killed You Chan and Qin Bai He, even if Heavenly Court wanted to stop his progress, they were powerless to do so for some time.

In treasure yellow heaven’s market, Fang Yuan was now the number one overlord in terms of dragonfish business, no one could rival him.

Thus, his dragonfish business was becoming increasingly bustling, especially the silver dragonfish which spurred crazed sales, the individual price was increasing at an alarming rate.

“The noteworthy thing is that news of You Chan’s and Qin Bai He’s deaths has already spread in Eastern Sea, looks like someone is plotting from the shadows.”

“Forget about it, the important thing now is Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.”

With ninety million man soul, Fang Yuan was very confident. After resting for one more day, he entered the dream realm again to explore the second stage of Thieving Heaven’s confusing dream realm.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1496: Blurred Grey Eyes

After he was done resting and making sufficient preparation, Fang Yuan entered Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.

There was the clamoring of people around the pool where a market gathering was being held.

Western Desert actually had a lot of resources, more than Northern Plains. There were large amounts of resources hidden in the desert, including Gu worms and wild beasts. They only had scarce amounts of plants which was their biggest shortcoming.

So this market mainly sold food products like milk and wine; Gu materials like beast skins, bones; and only three stalls were selling Gu worms.

Young Thieving Heaven was roaming around in the crowd, he observed the transactions in the surrounding while moving closer to the pool at the center of the clan.

“Stop! Unauthorized people are not allowed entry here.”

“Kid, get lost.”

When young Thieving Heaven got near to the pool, two guards guarding the area immediately responded and stopped him.

Young Thieving Heaven could do nothing other than to pretend to have received a shock and leave.

He sighed inwardly: “That pool is the only water source in the oasis, it is strictly guarded and even though they opened a market gathering, the guards are quite alert, I simply cannot get in.”

At the same time, Sha Xiao’s sinister voice resounded in his mind: “Hmph, think of whatever ways you can to get in. Don’t forget, there is only a month or so left from our agreed time limit. If by then, you have not made any progress, that will be the time of your death.”

Young Thieving Heaven’s pupils shrunk as he replied inwardly: “Aren’t you powerful? Why don’t you directly charge in or sneak in? Why let a weak guy like me gather information?”

“Hmph, you want to goad me? How could I fall for your plan? Moreover, you don’t understand anything, heh, I also don’t have the patience to explain to you. Grandson! Quick, do as grandpa says, talk less and do more work, then you can live a bit longer.”

Young Thieving Heaven could only let himself be manipulated, the enemy was strong while he was weak, he did not speak anymore, except that sharp light flickered in his eyes.

Previously in the well, to survive and for the hope of returning to his home, he was forced to give in to Sha Xiao. But inwardly, he had never accepted this fate.

“I know when to yield and when not to, there will be a day when I will find a chance to not only escape the shackles of this old demon Sha Xiao, but also reciprocate all my sufferings.”

“But right now, I need to endure, I need to put on a show and wait for my chance.”

Over the next few days, young Thieving Heaven thought of every way possible and exhausted all his strength to gather intel and try to get near the oasis’ pool.

But all his attempts failed.

The pool was the most important area in the clan, it was guarded extremely tightly.

Young Thieving Heaven had only just advanced to rank one, his means were truly lacking.

Just as he was unable to find a way, news spread among his peers.

“What, half a month later, the clan is holding a small scale competition, and the winner can choose a Gu worm from the pool as a reward?” Young Thieving Heaven also heard of this news.

He immediately realized his opportunity was here.

Moreover, this was probably the best opportunity for him to complete Sha Xiao’s task!

“I need to participate in this small competition and also obtain victory!” Young Thieving Heaven said to Sha Xiao in his mind.

Sha Xiao snickered: “Silly kid, don’t think I don’t know what plot you are scheming inside. You want to use this to raise your strength to overturn my control?”

Young Thieving Heaven sneered, admitting frankly: “So what? Who doesn’t thirst for freedom?”

“Good!” Sha Xiao was unfazed, instead praising: “You are quite straightforward, haha, if you call me grandpa, I can help you seize this victory.”

“You!” Young Thieving Heaven stiffened, his eyes revealing anger.

“What, you don’t want to? Think properly, without my help, with your strength and aptitude, how can you win this competition?” Sha Xiao sneered.

Young Thieving Heaven’s expression darkened.

“I was born as a noble, my life was filled with glory, but I have to bend my back and beg for mercy! This is a humiliation to my ancestry, I am ruining the reputation of my Sun clan.”

“But...”

“If I don’t do this, I truly won’t have any hope.”

“I am too weak, returning home is an uncertainty. If I can’t even get through this juncture, there is no need to talk about the future.”

“Damn it!”

Young Thieving Heaven clenched his fists, falling into extreme hesitation.

Although he had called Sha Xiao ‘grandpa’ before, that was during the moment of life and death. Right now, he and Sha Xiao were separated, and there was also not much external pressure which made young Thieving Heaven waver, the choice became extremely heavy and painful.

“Grandpa...” Finally, he chose to yield, squeezing out this word through clenched teeth.

“Hahaha.” Sha Xiao’s crazed laughter filled young Thieving Heaven’s mind: “My good grandson, since you called me grandpa, grandpa won’t let you fail. Grandpa is giving you this method to succeed, accept it and turn it to your strength, you shall definitely win this competition.”

Right as Sha Xiao finished speaking, a huge amount of information charged into young Thieving Heaven’s brain.

Young Thieving Heaven immediately gave a low gasp, his expression distorted and he subconsciously held his head. The huge amount of information continued to strike his brain, he felt so much pain that his head felt like it would burst.

The information attack only lasted for a short nine breaths of time, but young Thieving Heaven felt like a year had passed.

He endured it with difficulty, his whole body was covered in sweat, his face was deathly pale like paper, and he was shaking, looking extremely miserable.

Sha Xiao’s method was violent, but the transferred information were all authentic and of great value.

Most of the contents were about fighting techniques, they were exquisite and concise. A portion was about Gu recipes and usage method of Gu worms, and there was even a killer move.

Mortal killer move — Blurred Grey Eyes.

This move was formed by using sandpit Gu, chimney smoke Gu, and clear water Gu. There were eight steps to it, and once it was activated successfully, it could puff out white smoke.

When this smoke landed in someone’s eyes, it would cover their eyes in white ash, making them lose their sight.

The person who was struck absolutely should not use water to clean their eyes, if water was used, the white ash would produce high heat that would burn the target’s eyes and make them go blind.

“This move is so insidious, it is not my style.” Young Thieving Heaven’s heart sank, he did not look happy.

Before his transmigration, he had been born in a noble family, receiving good education since childhood. He was upright and honest, he abhorred evil.

Because of this, when he transmigrated and became a poor orphan, he still abided by rules and maintained his morals, even when he had an adult’s wisdom and things were unsatisfactory.

“Blurred grey eyes needs three Gu worms, and they just happen to be all the Gu I have.”

“Looks like Sha Xiao had already planned to increase my strength. Hmph!”

Young Thieving Heaven did not want to practice blurred grey eyes, he put his whole concentration in the fighting techniques.

He had been a warrior in his previous life as well, although he did not specialize in close-combat, he had some foundation. His true battle attainment was deep enough.

Thus, he was able to smoothly progress with these fighting techniques.

After a few days of practicing, young Thieving Heaven felt his battle strength had soared!

“This world’s fighting techniques are not simple, but a complete set of moves involving Gu worms.”

“Different kind of moves for different kind of Gu worms.”

“I had no one to instruct me before, so I was too weak to do anything. Now that I have obtained this skill and have practiced it diligently, I have a sixty percent chance of winning the clan’s competition.”

“Even if I don’t use blurred grey eyes, I can take care of most competitors.”

Young Thieving Heaven had an aversion to this unscrupulous move and did not want to use it.

He was confident in himself, and soon welcomed the clan’s small competition.

When he first stepped on the stage, the audience did not think highly of him.

There were even some who ridiculed him.

And his opponent had an expression of arrogance as he pointed towards young Thieving Heaven’s nose: “So it is you, trash, surrender now and I won’t break your leg.”

Young Thieving Heaven was dazed, standing on the spot without moving.

The audience started laughing loudly.

“He is afraid, he can’t even move.”

“Look at him, how did he pass the clan’s exile test?”

“Probably luck. I heard that at the crucial moment, he was rescued from the wolves’ mouths by the clan’s Gu Master.”

Under this atmosphere, young Thieving Heaven’s opponent seemed to be even more disdainful.

But at the next moment, young Thieving Heaven clenched his fists, feeling the strength in his fingers.

“I finally have control again.” Fang Yuan was inwardly happy.

It turned out that young Thieving Heaven’s dazed expression was because Fang Yuan had just gained control and had not reacted.

Now that he came to his senses, he immediately attacked.

Mortal killer move — Blurred Grey Eyes!

Whoosh, a large clump of white ash was puffed out at his opponent’s face.

The opponent could not defend in time, quickly retreating three steps before crying out: “Ahhh! I can’t see anything, what is this thing!”

“Get lost!” Fang Yuan took a few large strides before giving a fierce kick to his opponent’s face.

His opponent was directly kicked out of the stage.

Victory!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1497: Deep Pain Despite Victory

“Despicable, too despicable, he is actually sneak attacking!”

“This guy is too nasty, he is truly hateful.”

“According to both sides’ strength, he was clearly slightly weaker.”

The surrounding people started denouncing young Thieving Heaven.

“You, you, you!” That opponent climbed up from the ground, and stuttered due to anger while pointing towards the air: “You’re shameless! If... if you have guts... then... let’s compete again!”

However, his sight was blurry because of the killer move, and he did not know where Fang Yuan was at all, so his finger was pointing at a completely wrong direction, making for a hilarious situation.

Fang Yuan sneered: “Winner takes all, what is there to compete about. Eh...”

Fang Yuan could not speak anymore, because he once again turned into an observer, losing control over this body.

Thieving Heaven’s dream realm continued once more.

Young Thieving Heaven gazed at the surrounding crowd and at the raving opponent below the stage, his face was pale and his whole body was shaking!

He slowly raised his hands in shock.

“Why? Why did I directly use that killer move blurred grey eyes?”

“I clearly have strength to compete with him fairly, then throw him off the stage. But why, why did I choose to sneak attack?!”

Young Thieving Heaven abhorred actions like sneak attacking, he felt this was a shameful thing.

Why did he sneak attack?

He liked fighting openly, and would not resort to such insidious schemes.

He did not like, or more accurately, he disdained this kind of action.

But then why did he do so!

Sha Xiao’s mad laughter resounded in his mind: “Hahaha! Too funny, too entertaining, my good grandson, you indeed resemble your grandpa me. You clearly had not trained blurred grey eyes killer move, but you were still able to use it so smoothly, the sneak attack timing was also quite good, clinching victory at once. Good, very good!”

Sha Xiao repeatedly praised.

Young Thieving Heaven was stunned.

That’s right, he had not practised this killer move, so why did he use it? And why was his usage so skillful?!

“This is ridiculous!” Young Thieving Heaven roared inwardly.

“Hahaha, my good grandson, let grandpa tell you the reason. You were originally such a person, your nature is like this, don’t restrain yourself, let out your true nature.” Sha Xiao laughed loudly, adding insult to the injury.

Young Thieving Heaven was deeply shocked, but soon his eyes flashed brightly: “No, this is not my doing. It is you right? You controlled my body!”

“Hehe, although I can do that, I did not do it. This was your own choice, you should be clear of it.”

“No, it was definitely you, how could I do such a thing!” Young Thieving Heaven clung to his own view.

“Bullshit!” Sha Xiao scolded loudly.

But young Thieving Heaven’s expression looked quite firm on the surface, as he walked off the stage while quarreling inwardly.

However, in the audience’s view, his behavior looked quite arrogant and seemed like he did not regard their criticisms, thus they started scolding even louder.

It was the observer Fang Yuan’s turn to feel shaken.

He had been the one in control during the fight, but the outcome had directly influenced the following event of the dream realm.

Young Thieving Heaven’s shock and the change in the audience’s attitude would no doubt influence the way the dream realm would play out and progress.

This was a situation Fang Yuan had never encountered before while exploring dream realms.

In his past explorations, although his participation rate was higher than in Thieving Heaven’s dream realm, the dream realm as a whole did not change.

The dream realm’s outcome was set, and the passing standard was also fixed.

“But this dream realm of Thieving Heaven gives me a feeling of living through it! This is not ordinary!”

According to its categorization, this kind of dream realm was a realistic dream realm, it restored Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s life experiences. But following Fang Yuan’s continuous participation, this dream realm might deviate and change. As these deviations accumulated, would the final outcome of the dream realm be different from the original?

Fang Yuan realized this and could not help but become more wary and cautious.

Soon, it was his turn to battle again.

“You don’t look like a vile person. But in the previous round, why did you use despicable methods to plot against my younger cousin?” This time, young Thieving Heaven’s opponent was a girl who looked to be full of heroic spirit.

Young Thieving Heaven frowned, he did not want to explain but still said: “There is a misunderstanding.”

“Heh, misunderstanding?”

“Hmph, you clearly sneak attacked, you actually don’t admit it?”

“So many people witnessed it, this guy actually wants to deny it!”

The crowd, outside of the stage, shouted in fury.

The young girl frowned: “I don’t care whether it was a misunderstanding or not, I am going to avenge my cousin. So not only am I going to defeat you, I am going to make sure you suffer enough! Come!”

The young girl charged forward.

“Wait a moment.” Young Thieving Heaven suddenly held out his hands: “I still have something to say, hear me out before you make a move.”

“What is it, speak up, I will make you admit your defeat completely.” The young girl snorted, stopping her footsteps.

But at this moment, young Thieving Heaven’s eyes suddenly shone sinisterly as he raised his hand.

Mortal killer move — Blurred Grey Eyes!

The young girl had been on guard, but this white ash actually passed through her defensive methods and directly covered her eyes.

“Damn it, again!”

“This kid is playing dirty again!!”

“Careful, he is coming, quickly defend yourself!!”

The crowd started shouting with all their strength.

But by now, young Thieving Heaven had already neared the young girl and raised his right leg, about to kick this girl out.

The young girl actually had good battle experiences, although she could not see, her ears were moving as she listened to the wind to determine his position!

“I cannot see, if this match is dragged on, it will be unfavorable to me. I must finish this quickly.” At this instant, the young girl made a wise choice.

She gave a soft cry and instead of retreating, she directly punched at young Thieving Heaven.

Whoosh.

The wind blew from the impact of her fist, moving young Thieving Heaven’s hair.

This attack was fierce, it clearly used a Gu worm and was not something that could be produced by just a mortal body.

If young Thieving Heaven had really kicked at the previous moment, he would not have been able to restrain his momentum right now, he would have been heavily injured by these two punches.

But at this moment, young Thieving Heaven was not himself, but was controlled by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s thoughts were sinister, he looked like he was about to kick the girl, but it was in fact just a feint.

On one hand, he was probing the young girl, after all even if sight was blurred, there were other investigative methods, the Gu world was not lacking in all kinds of fantastic methods.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan was using the audience.

These people’s shouts and reminders were actually misleading the girl.

The young girl’s sight was blurred, and in the intense battle, she likely did not have time to think much and would subconsciously feel the surrounding people’s reminders to be correct.

After all, there were a lot of people in the audience while the young girl was alone.

Humans had a herd mentality, when many people believe something was correct, the young girl would likely believe it to be true as well.

Sure enough like Fang Yuan expected, the young girl started punching and going on the offense.

Fang Yuan scoffed, calmly pulling back his right leg and easily dodging, then he smoothly caught the young girl’s hand and pulled her to the side.

The young girl wanted to win immediately and had used too much strength which was instead used by Fang Yuan to counterattack.

Fang Yuan took this chance to strike the young girl’s lower abdomen fiercely with his knee.

Bam.

A soft sound was heard, as the young girl was badly hurt! Her shut eyes opened in pain, her gorgeous fair face flushed red at that instant, and blue veins popped up on her forehead.

She felt her large intestine and internal organs were tangled together, the pain almost causing her to stop breathing.

But before she could experience this intense pain again, Fang Yuan landed a chop at the back of the young girl’s neck.

In an instant, the young girl lost her consciousness.

Thud, she fell to the ground and did not move.

Fang Yuan won.

The surrounding crowd was silent for a moment before they erupted.

“Despicable, too despicable!”

“He actually won like this, this is so shameless.”

“He is too shameless, a pity that his opponent was so innocent, she clearly had higher strength but actually fell for his trick!”

The audience was furious and contemptuous towards young Thieving Heaven, while feeling pity and regret for the young girl. Their loud shouts could be heard without end for a while.

“What have I done? Was it me again?!” Fang Yuan was once again an observer, while young Thieving Heaven was once again stunned.

“Hahaha, it is you, you did it all.” Sha Xiao laughed freely: “I haven’t done anything, you have understood it, right? The whole battle process was your own choice.”

“No, this is not true. How could I be such a... scumbag?!” Young Thieving Heaven closed his eyes from the agony, even his eyelids were slightly twitching.

“You are indeed a scumbag, but grandpa appreciates that! You quickly and efficiently resolved the battle, victory was clean and fast. Your shamelessness and despicable nature is just like me back when I was young.” Sha Xiao started laughing loudly once again.

“What the hell is going on? What’s wrong with me?” Young Thieving Heaven almost cried, all his glory and values accumulated from his previous life received a huge impact.

“I once heard a saying, some people possess innate battle talent. When they enter battle state, they would often have creative thoughts as well as keen intuition, all kinds of factors could let them dig out their deepest self, and make the most natural choice, striving for victory with all their strength.”

Young Thieving Heaven: “...”

Like this, young Thieving Heaven continued to win in the small competition.

Every battle, Fang Yuan would replace young Thieving Heaven and take control of the whole battle.

Although the opponents were vigilant, what kind of person was Fang Yuan? His battle experiences could be said to be as vast as the sea, these small fry opponents, even just a shift in their gaze would let Fang Yuan see through their schemes and thoughts.

As far as Fang Yuan was concerned, these victories were without any difficulty.

But to young Thieving Heaven, it was an extremely painful journey.

“Could it be that deep down inside, I am really such a person?”

“In my previous life, because I was protected in a mecha, I did not receive enough stimulation? So in this world, now that I am personally fighting, my true nature has emerged?”

“I have such a nature... I have shamed my clan, shamed my teacher’s teachings, and shamed my family name!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1498: Desire To Lose

Inside the dream realm.

On the stage, Fang Yuan was controlling young Thieving Heaven, fighting a rather difficult battle.

This time, his opponent was a tall and sturdy youngster. The youngster’s hands were in a knife-hand pose and with each chop, his hands would let out a flash of lightning that shot towards Fang Yuan.

This youngster was one of the most popular candidates to win the contest.

If he were fighting an ordinary boy, they might already be struck by the lightning and piss themselves, losing the match immediately.

But he was facing Fang Yuan.

Young Thieving Heaven’s methods were simply not enough to dodge the lightning attacks. But Fang Yuan’s experienced eyes were paying close attention to every movement of his opponent.

When his opponent raised his hand, Fang Yuan could deduce the direction of the attack by observing the change in his shoulder movement, the direction of his sight, and the center of his body weight.

As a result, Fang Yuan was able to dodge every lightning attack, making strange dodging movements in others’ eyes.

“Do you only know how to dodge?” His opponent shouted impatiently.

“Hehe, catch me if you can! Come, beat me!” Fang Yuan mocked his opponent.

Sure enough, the immature opponent got furious, charging towards Fang Yuan: “Fight me if you have guts, you rascal!”

Bit Fang Yuan still kept on dodging.

Even the audience could not endure this, as they hooted and criticized Fang Yuan’s actions as cowardly.

Someone even shouted: “The strength difference is so big, just surrender! You despicable guy!”

However, Fang Yuan just kept on continuing his way like he had heard nothing.

Although he was dodging, he was in fact controlling the tempo of the battle.

His opponent did not have rich battle experience, after all, he was too young, and fell into Fang Yuan’s rhythm without even being aware of it.

The youngster fought for long, his primeval essence was mostly consumed as he gasped for breath from exhaustion.

“Nice, time to counterattack.” Fang Yuan finally got the opportunity he was waiting for, and immediately went on the offensive.

“What?!” His opponent reacted too late, and was soon receiving a beating from Fang Yuan.

But the youngster still had some primeval essence, he was able to resist with difficulty.

Fang Yuan inwardly realized the situation was bad. Young Thieving Heaven’s aptitude was too low, only having D grade aptitude, so he had small primeval essence reserve.

After this long, the amount of primeval essence Fang Yuan had was even lower than his opponent who had been fiercely attacking since the start!

“I must finish this quickly!” At this thought, Fang Yuan immediately shouted: “Come, you stupid kid, have a taste of my spit!”

He then opened his mouth, spitting out his phlegm directly at his opponent’s face.

His opponent’s eyes immediately opened wide.

If this landed on his face, it would be too disgusting!

The youngster quickly dodged.

But this was what Fang Yuan wanted.

He wanted to force his opponent to dodge in this direction.

“Time to go down.” Fang Yuan suddenly moved forward like a nimble cat and appeared in front of the opponent before he threw a powerful high kick.

That youngster already brought up his arms like a shield to block Fang Yuan’s kick.

But Fang Yuan was too powerful and directly sent him flying out of the stage.

Fang Yuan won.

“This kid actually won!”

“How can this possibly happen?”

“Disgusting, he actually spat, this is too uncouth.”

“Right, even though he won, I also despise him. He doesn’t even have a little demeanor, he is simply not qualified to be a Gu Master!”

The audience engaged in heated discussions.

Sneers and criticisms gathered into sounds that entered Fang Yuan’s ears wave after wave.

Fang Yuan, however, had already lost control of the body, and it was the reappearance of the true young Thieving Heaven.

Young Thieving Heaven experienced this battle personally, victory had truly not been easy.

After all, young Thieving Heaven was alone, while his opponent had some background, probably having Gu Master parents, or at least one of them being a Gu Master.

Those who could participate in this small competition were all youngsters who had just become Gu Masters. They had almost non-existent foundation and were only rank one, so they could easily use external force to raise their battle strength.

Thus, those born with golden spoons or silver spoons had more or less received support and guidance from their seniors who raised their battle strength.

This was the reason Fang Yuan faced difficulty in the battle, there was also another reason: Fang Yuan’s fighting style was already widely known, his opponents were very vigilant and would make meticulous preparations for the battle, making it hard for Fang Yuan to fight properly.

“I, how could I have spat?” Young Thieving Heaven stood at the center of the stage, almost crying from shame.

In the previous life, he had all along paid heavy attention to his bearing, he absolutely would not do an uncivilized thing like spitting everywhere.

But in this battle, not only did he do it, but also did it so grandly and brazenly in front of so many people.

What was young Thieving Heaven supposed to feel now!

“How could I be this kind of person? Is this really me in the depths of my heart?” Young Thieving Heaven fell into a profound self-doubt and denial.

The audience was still ridiculing.

“This kid must be feeling thrilled, right!?”

“This kind of garbage is actually entering the top eight.”

“Hmph, social morals are degrading day by day, this kind of person should be thrown out of the competition!”

“But top eight is the limit, I really don’t want to see him continue to win.”

Young Thieving Heaven: “...”

He really wanted to clarify the situation and tell everyone that he was not that kind of person. But he could not say anything, because even he was shaken and doubting himself.

His values and the sense of glory ingrained in him in his previous life were being struck time and again, right now, they were already distorted beyond recognition.

“This is good too, I also don’t want to continue. With this win, I am now in top eight and can enter the pool.” Young Thieving Heaven was tired, mentally tired!

He did not want to continue fighting any longer.

Bu Fang Yuan had another thought on this.

“Top eight, top four, top two, and the winner; they are clearly structured and will obtain different rewards from the clan.”

“Although this is a dream realm and not reality, if I help young Thieving Heaven obtain a better ranking, I can no doubt obtain a better reward.”

“And these rewards will probably continue on to the next events, making this dream realm’s young Thieving Heaven stronger.”

This dream realm of Thieving Heaven was extraordinary, it was very flexible and did not have a fixed endpoint.

Thus, the stronger the young Thieving Heaven got, the bigger his influence in the dream realm, and the more convenient Fang Yuan's exploration of this dream realm will be.

Unravel dream did not have good effect in exploring Thieving Heaven's dream realm, which was akin to handicapping Fang Yuan!

So Fang Yuan wanted to increase the chances to raise his success in exploring the dream realm.

"This second stage is much lengthier than the first stage, I should attempt to fight for first place. This is also a test towards this dream realm."

Fang Yuan pondered for a while and made up his mind.

But although his idea was good, the opportunity and time to control young Thieving Heaven were limited.

Fang Yuan could only patiently wait for the opportunity.

The dream realm continued.

Young Thieving Heaven had obtained victory, but what he gained were a bad reputation and huge external pressure.

Other youngsters were actively preparing for the competition, gathering information on their opponents, but young Thieving Heaven was immersed in self-reflection.

In fact, he was afraid to face himself, this self-doubt was torturous.

This caused young Thieving Heaven to become thinner day by day, slowly becoming depressed.

Sha Xiao's voice was transmitted: "Grandson, you should refine Gu. Without a new Gu worm, it will be difficult for you to deal with your upcoming opponents, your chances of defeat will be higher."

Refining mortal Gu and refining Immortal Gu were two completely different concepts.

Especially when refining a rank one Gu worm, the success rate was rather high.

"I can't directly supply you with any physical materials, I cannot give you Gu worms as well. You need to refine it yourself to deceive the others and not let them discover me." Sha Xiao added.

When he finished speaking, he transferred a huge amount of information to young Thieving Heaven's brain.

Young Thieving Heaven's expression, however, changed to agitation when he looked at the contents: "No, this Gu worm is too sinister, it actually needs me to kill an infant and use their soul as a Gu material. I won't commit such an heinous act!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1499: Thieving Heaven’s Bottom Line

Sha Xiao gave a Gu recipe to young Thieving Heaven, but the latter’s expression changed and refused to refine the Gu.

Sha Xiao’s gloomy voice transmitted: “Grandson, you don’t want to listen to grandpa? Do you want to live or not?”

Young Thieving Heaven, however, persisted: “Who doesn’t want to live? But I have my bottom line. This Gu recipe is too vicious, I refuse to follow it. Sha Xiao, didn’t you want me to get near that pool? Now that I am in top eight, I have the qualifications to enter it, don’t you think it is a pity if you kill me now?”

“Hahaha.” Sha Xiao laughed, “Yeah, it is a pity.”

The words had just landed when young Thieving Heaven’s pupils shrunk rapidly as he felt an intense pain attacking his body.

Pain, pain, pain!

At that instant, he almost collapsed on the ground.

But he endured with all his strength and rushed to a dark corner. He then leaned his back to the wall and endured with clenched teeth.

Sha Xiao’s voice once more transmitted: “You are just a small pawn, you really think you can talk terms with me after entering top eight? You think you have such a high value? Hmph, there are countless people who want to be my grandson! It is your honor to be able to call me grandpa, do you understand?”

Sha Xiao paused before continuing: “Let me hear you call me grandpa.”

Young Thieving Heaven’s face had a distorted expression, he clenched his fists so tightly that his nails had dug into his flesh.

He was trembling and sweating all over; this was caused by the pain, but also by the sense of humiliation and fury which he count not vent.

“Gran, grandpa...” After a long while, young Thieving Heaven squeezed out this word.

“Yes, my good grandson. Your voice is too soft, grandpa is old and did not hear you clearly.” Sha Xiao laughed sinisterly.

Young Thieving Heaven immediately felt his pain lightening by a lot.

Sha Xiao had reduced the effect of his method.

Young Thieving Heaven’s brows tensed as the resolve to die flashed past his eyes, but he then recalled his family and his beloved woman, he took a huge breath and called out: “Hello, grandpa!”

“Hahaha, as long as grandson is obedient, grandpa will be satisfied.” Sha Xiao’s laughter was filled with smugness.

“Now, grandpa wants you to refine Gu, can you do it?”

“Can... not!” Young Thieving Heaven’s face was deathly pale from the pain, but he still persisted in his bottom line.

“Scumbag!” Sha Xiao was furious, intensifying his method.

Young Thieving Heaven cried out and fell to the ground.

Even after torturing him for a while, Sha Xiao felt a headache when he saw young Thieving Heaven refusing to compromise: “You brat, you have quite the sense of justice. A pity, a pity, I thought you were raw talent when I saw you fight so efficiently. I did not think you don’t even understand the logic of ‘every man for himself’. So what if you have to kill an infant? If they do not die, then you will die. If you die, then any wealth or desire will fade out of existence. Think carefully.”

Young Thieving Heaven was slumped to the ground, curled up like a shrimp, his whole body was soaked with sweat, and he had almost lost consciousness; he did not have any energy right now.

But, the corners of his lips still rose slightly: “Sha Xiao, you can forget about it. I am different from you, I won’t build my happiness and bliss on others’ suffering.”

“Laughable persistence! A lot of things in this world need to be fought for, if you don’t fight or kill, how can you continue to live? What are you thinking in that head of yours?” Sha Xiao’s voice was icy and disdainful: “Just think of why you were banished by the clan? Hehe, wasn’t it because there were too little resources in the clan, and they felt raising you was a waste, so they used clan rules to openly try to kill you.”

Young Thieving Heaven’s eyes shone brightly: “I understand this logic now, but what others do is their issue. If I do it, then it would become my issue, and I won’t do this!”

“Ignorant! Then let me send you to your death!!” Sha Xiao’s fury had reached its limit, but just as he was about to attack, he suddenly paused.

“Ahhh, my poor son, how could you pass away like this!” Young Thieving Heaven who was slumped near the wall, suddenly heard a woman’s cry from inside the house.

Then, there was a clamor inside the house.

Someone also started crying, and someone was furiously cursing the doctor for being incompetent.

Young Thieving Heaven and Sha Xiao listened attentively before understanding the reason.

It turned out the owners of this house had a baby, but the baby was congenitally deficient and was barely hanging on to life. The house lord spent a heavy price to invite a rank three Gu Master, but the Gu Master was also unable to save the baby who finally died today.

“Hehe, kid, your luck seems to be pretty good. This baby is enough to refine Gu, he has already died, you can collect his corpse and use it to refine the Gu.” Sha Xiao laughed, but it was filled with killing intent: “If you don’t agree, you can go die. At worst, I will just change to another pawn.”

Young Thieving Heaven was silent for a long while before replying: “Okay.”

“Hmph, that’s good.” Sha Xiao did not speak anymore.

Young Thieving Heaven rested for a good while before standing up with difficulty.

Through this event, young Thieving Heaven thoroughly realized Sha Xiao’s nature was extremely forceful, he meant what he said and did not allow for any disobedience.

To return to his home, young Thieving Heaven decided to swallow this humiliation.

According to the clan’s common practice, the small competition would halt for a few days.

Almost all the remaining competitors would remain in their house in this brief period, training and receiving guidance from their seniors.

Over the next few days, young Thieving Heaven began to gather the Gu materials recorded in the Gu recipe.

Although the gathering process was filled with obstacles, he managed to find them all.

After that baby’s corpse was buried, young Thieving Heaven dug it out in the middle of the night.

There were two more days before the competition resumed.

This night, in a remote hut, young Thieving Heaven started refining Gu.

“This Gu recipe was already clear and concise, but grandpa thought of your tiny primeval essence storage and added in many steps. Grandpa is so considerate, grandson, you need to succeed in this Gu refinement!” Sha Xiao’s voice transmitted, he was going to guide young Thieving Heaven throughout the whole process.

The Gu refinement officially began.

Under Sha Xiao’s guidance, young Thieving Heaven followed the steps and began to process the Gu materials one by one.

Because it was his first time refining Gu, young Thieving Heaven’s performance was extremely bad at the start, he repeatedly made mistakes even in the most simple procedure like using fire to process the materials. Were it not for Sha Xiao’s timely guidance in correcting young Thieving Heaven, this Gu refinement would have already failed.

Sha Xiao was hurling all kinds of abuse in anger.

But as the Gu refinement progressed, Sha Xiao’s curses became fewer and fewer.

“So this is the talent of a Demon Venerable?!” Fang Yuan who had been observing all along from the side was also shaken.

Young Thieving Heaven displayed an extremely powerful Gu refinement talent, adapting very quickly, from the stumbling around at the beginning, to gaining his footing, and then becoming stable, and in the later stage of the Gu refinement, he even looked to be at ease.

“There are final four steps remaining to refine this Gu worm.” Sha Xiao actually encouraged young Thieving Heaven: “My good grandson, do well, refine this Gu worm and give your grandpa face in the competition!”

Young Thieving Heaven took a deep breath and gazed at the baby’s corpse in front of him.

A resolute light flashed past his eyes.

“Although this baby did not die by my hands, if I use it to refine Gu, how can I bear it in my heart? Anyway, Gu refinement can easily fail, if I fail here, Sha Xiao also won’t blame it on me.”

“Child, forgive me, even after death, you could not rest in peace. But I had no choice, this is all I can do. I hope your soul can ascend to heaven through this fire.”

“If you can reincarnate, please don’t return. This world... is too cruel!”

While murmuring this inwardly, young Thieving Heaven made a mistake, the fire immediately burned fiercely and engulfed the baby’s corpse.

“The intensity of the fire is too high, lower it quick.” Sha Xiao said in a startled tone.

“I am trying!” Young Thieving Heaven pretended to panic, immediately controlling the fire, but the fire instead burned even hotter!

“Such audacity! You purposely failed, you are going against me!!” Sha Xiao’s gaze turned furious as he realized young Thieving Heaven’s intention.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1500: Sneak Attack Gu

“No, grandpa, you misunderstood me! I truly cannot control this fire’s intensity.” Young Thieving Heaven was still continuing with the act.

“Hehehe. You dare to deceive me, you are truly looking down on me. Alright, I won’t take your life. Let this fire devour you as well. You think Gu refinement is so simple and safe? You are seeking your own doom by intentionally failing the Gu refinement! Die, die, this is the result of your persistence, this is your own doing.” Sha Xiao snickered.

Before he finished his words, that fire immediately soared and covered young Thieving Heaven.

“Why did this happen?” Young Thieving Heaven wanted to charge out, but the fire was emitting an enormous attractive force that kept him on the spot.

Looking as he was about to be buried in the fire, Fang Yuan discovered he could control young Thieving Heaven’s body once again.

“Why do I feel like I am cleaning up young Thieving Heaven’s mess?” Fang Yuan felt frustrated.

But he did not panic.

Fang Yuan had already come across the Gu recipe Sha Xiao had given to young

Thieving Heaven.

This was a rank one Gu recipe, while Fang Yuan was a refinement path quasi-grandmaster, so the principles of the Gu recipe were clear to him.

Although young Thieving Heaven had already made a mistake, in Fang Yuan’s view, it was not irrecoverable.

Sandpit Gu.

Fang Yuan controlled young Thieving Heaven’s body to throw sandpit Gu to a certain position in the fire.

He did not activate this Gu worm, instead throwing it in as a Gu material.

The delicate Gu immediately attracted the fire and was soon burnt into a pile of powder.

The fire’s attraction force decreased sharply, Fang Yuan took this chance to jump out.

He rolled on the ground for a few times to extinguish the remaining fire on him.

His injuries were severe.

Young Thieving Heaven’s face, neck, arms and other areas were burnt to a miserable degree.

But Fang Yuan ignored the injuries, and put all his attention on that fire.

Young Thieving Heaven was still not out of danger, because the Gu refinement process had yet to truly stop.

If this fire continued to burn, it would definitely engulf young Thieving Heaven again.

So Fang Yuan activated chimney smoke Gu, smoke came out and covered the basin sized fire.

Layers of smoke shrouded this fire.

As the danger decreased gradually, Fang Yuan felt his connection with the fire was rapidly weakening.

“Like this, the smoke can extinguish the fire and stop this Gu refinement. Although there will be some backlash, this body’s life will be preserved.”

In this state, Fang Yuan had done all he could.

After all, young Thieving Heaven was too reckless, actually trying to intentionally fail the Gu refinement.

This Gu refinement had instead lowered his strength because he now lost the precious sandpit Gu.

However, a change occurred right at this moment.

The smoke was suddenly absorbed into the fire.

“What’s going on?” Even Fang Yuan had not expected this.

But shortly, when he saw that baby’s phantom in the fire, he realized: “There is an issue with this baby, their constitution is probably not ordinary, it is quite bizarre!”

The baby had been added to the fire as a Gu material.

Fang Yuan had been observing from the side and had not carefully inspected the baby, so he did not know if there was anything strange with it.

This anomaly had surpassed Fang Yuan’s expectation.

The fire soared once again, the baby’s phantom jumped about in the fire and pounced towards young Thieving Heaven.

“Damn, this is dangerous.” Fang Yuan sighed, if young Thieving Heaven died, his dream realm exploration would also fail subsequently.

Looking at the fire about to pounce at young Thieving Heaven’s body, Fang Yuan suddenly had an inspiration.

“Got it!”

He first threw the chimney smoke Gu.

The chimney smoke Gu immediately attracted the baby phantom in the fire, it made babbling noise as it charged at the chimney smoke Gu and started eating it.

Taking this chance, Fang Yuan quickly retreated a few steps, pulling apart some distance from the fire.

But soon, the baby had finished eating chimney smoke Gu and charged towards Fang Yuan again.

Fang Yuan laughed: “Come, there is also clear water Gu!”

Clear water Gu was thrown out, and was also devoured by the baby.

The fire suddenly dimmed, the clear water Gu turned into a lump of emerald green water that could not be evaporated by the fire.

And the red fire turned into orange-yellow, shrouded in light. It was no longer fiery as before, and was deeply concealed instead.

The emerald green water and orange-yellow fire circulated around each other in the air.

Fang Yuan moved young Thieving Heaven’s body to advance instead of retreating, and went in front of this strange water and fire.

“Sandpit turned into powder, consolidating the body. Chimney smoke shrouded and restrained the fire. Clear water toppled the world. Using blood to integrate yin and yang. Wonderful!”

Fang Yuan bit his tongue and spat out his blood into the strange water and fire.

“Eeeek.” After the strange water and fire was touched by the blood, it suddenly turned into a blue baby phantom that screamed and pounced at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not dodge, letting it attack.

The blue baby phantom directly entered young Thieving Heaven’s aperture, turning into a rank two Gu worm.

“What is this?” Young Thieving Heaven came back to his senses and was stumped.

“What the, again?!” Fang Yuan was speechless, the moment young Thieving Heaven was safe, he was thrown to the side and turned into an observer.

“You actually refined a completely new Gu worm under a series of coincidences?!” Sha Xiao also shouted out in surprise.

“No, that’s wrong.” Shortly, he came to a realization, “Brat, you seem to have a hidden nature which only takes control when you encounter fatal danger, and then makes you intuitively make the best choice. It was like this in the competition, it seems to be the same in Gu refinement as well.”

“You are naive and stubborn, as well as hopelessly stupid, but this hidden nature of yours is quite pragmatic and extremely cunning, having talents that you can’t reach! I quite admire this nature, very impressive!!”

Sha Xiao started laughing.

“I refined a... new Gu?” Young Thieving Heaven still had not completely reacted to this situation and was dazed.

“That’s right, give it a try. This new Gu is a rank two Gu, it seems to be a new innovation, even I can’t make out its effect.”

Activating an unknown Gu worm was a dangerous thing.

For instance, Spring Autumn Cicada was the best example.

But young Thieving Heaven had just started cultivating and was ignorant, and Sha Xiao, who knew about the risks, did not have any concern for young Thieving Heaven’s safety.

So young Thieving Heaven dumbly activated this Gu worm.

The moment it was activated, this Gu worm turned back into a blue baby phantom that gave a strange scream before exiting young Thieving Heaven’s aperture and charging ahead.

There was a stone stool ahead, the blue baby phantom directly entered the stone stool, then exited and returned to young Thieving Heaven’s aperture, turning back into its Gu appearance.

The stone stool looked undamaged.

Young Thieving Heaven walked to the stool and touched it.

Bam.

A crisp sound echoed as the stone stool turned into crushed stone pieces.

Young Thieving Heaven was taken aback and took a step back, looking at the pile of pebbles on the ground in shock.

“Wonderful!” Sha Xiao praised: “This Gu worm has extremely high power, it is a top tier rank two Gu worm. More importantly, it seems to be able to pass through defenses, take a look, the stone stool crumbled from the inside.”

Sha Xiao was astute, seeing many of its profundities in an instant.

Young Thieving Heaven was still somewhat muddled.

Sha Xiao looked at his aperture and praised again: “Amazing! Look at your aperture, only ten percent primeval essence has been expended in activating this Gu worm, this is unimaginable. This is a rank two Gu worm with so much power, but it only needs ten percent of rank one green copper primeval essence!”

“But I only have D grade aptitude, my primeval essence is just a bit more than twenty percent. I can only use this Gu worm twice.” Young Thieving Heaven was worried.

“You know nothing. With this Gu worm, the first position in the competition is yours. No one can defend against your Gu worm.” Sha Xiao scoffed.

“I can be first with this Gu?” Young Thieving Heaven’s eyes opened wide.

“Once this Gu worm is activated, it will turn into a blue baby phantom that will attack the enemy. You have seen its speed, it is extremely fast. Rank three Gu Masters might be able to dodge it with difficulty, but against rank one and rank two Gu Masters, as long as you close some distance, they will be struck and have no time to dodge.”

Sha Xiao continued to analyze, mumbling: “Hmm... looking at this Gu worm’s power and effect, we might as well call it sneak attack Gu.”

The Gu worm was created by young Thieving Heaven, but Sha Xiao took the liberty to name this Gu worm.

“Sneak attack Gu...” Young Thieving Heaven immediately frowned and wanted to object.

“Yes, call it sneak attack Gu, my naming sense is still good. Hahaha!” Sha Xiao said domineeringly, young Thieving Heaven could only roll his eyes helplessly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1501: Quasi-Great Grandmaster

Western Desert, Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.

Young Thieving Heaven stepped on the stage once more.

His appearance startled the surrounding clansmen.

“What is the meaning of this?”

“Why is this despicable kid covered in bandages?”

“It seems like he suffered a heavy injury!”

Nothing could be done about it, although young Thieving Heaven refined sneak attack Gu with Fang Yuan’s help, his injuries from the Gu refinement process had not been healed. So even if young Thieving Heaven continued to participate in the competition, he was heavily injured.

Young Thieving Heaven bitterly laughed inwardly.

In fact, he did not want to continue to take part in the competition, but Sha Xiao forced him to continue.

With no other way, young Thieving Heaven could only enter the battle.

And his opponent this time was a clan elder’s grandson. When he saw young Thieving Heaven’s heavily injured appearance, he instead retreated several steps, looking at young Thieving Heaven with extreme cautiousness.

“What scheme are you plotting?” The elder’s grandson shouted: “You think by disguising as heavily injured, I will be tricked by you? You are underestimating me too much.”

“That’s right. You need to be careful when dealing with him, don’t be deceived.”

“This method of appearing weak is too childish. But looking at his age, it can be understood.”

“This kid is ignorant, he doesn’t have much strength at all, completely relying on tricks to enter the top eight.”

The surrounding crowd erupted in discussion.

Young Thieving Heaven rolled his eyes, speechless.

The Gu Master presiding over this match was also speechless. He had investigative Gu and had already ascertained that the heavy injuries on young Thieving Heaven were real.

But Fang Yuan’s fraudulent performances before had left such a deep impression on others that even though young Thieving Heaven was injured currently, they did not dare to believe it. Young Thieving Heaven’s opponent even retreated several steps, appearing extremely cautious!

“Since it is so...” Young Thieving Heaven smiled bitterly, the corners of his lips suddenly rose as his gaze and expression changed a little.

Fang Yuan had once again gained control over young Thieving Heaven’s body.

“Come, let me test sneak attack Gu in a real fight.” Fang Yuan willed and activated this rank two Gu worm.

A blue baby phantom jumped out of young Thieving Heaven’s aperture.

“What the...” The elder’s grandson gave a startled cry, he was not able to react in time and the blue baby phantom pounced at his body.

“Thankfully, I played safe and had immediately activated my defensive Gu worm earlier, not giving any chance to my opponent!” The blue baby phantom’s speed was extremely fast, the elder’s grandson could only squeeze out two words while his mind was filled with thoughts.

But this thought was the final thought before he fainted.

Guh.

At the next moment, the elder’s grandson coughed out blood, and his eyes opened wide with an incredulous look.

Then, he fell down to the ground, immediately losing his consciousness.

Fang Yuan won!

Silence fell among the crowd.

Almost everyone’s eyes were opened wide as they saw a blue baby figure drill in and out of the elder’s grandson’s body which then jumped up and down before entering back into young Thieving Heaven’s aperture.

“Despicable! He used a dirty trick again.”

“What did he use? The speed was too fast, I actually could not see it clearly.”

“It seems to be a rank two Gu worm!”

“What exactly was that? I only saw a blue baby phantom.”

“My intuition tells me this blue baby phantom is not simple!”

This time, not only the observing mortals, even those rank two Gu Masters were visibly moved.

Sneak attack Gu’s first appearance had shocked everyone!

In the following matches, young Thieving Heaven repeatedly used sneak attack Gu.

His battles were clean and quick, they could be summarized in a few steps — step on the stage, activate sneak attack Gu, opponent faints, and victory comes.

Young Thieving Heaven’s dominance was so big that he suppressed all the competitors instantly.

The crowd was overwhelmed.

There was no unexpected mishap, young Thieving Heaven smoothly grasped first place. This result raised many eyebrows.

“He was actually concealing this trump card!”

“This kid was actually pretending to be weak, he is too crafty and sinister.”

“Yes, he clearly has such strength, but actually resorted to such tricks. Hmm... but this also shows his true nature!”

Young Thieving Heaven was first place in the competition, but the clansmen were dissatisfied.

With Fang Yuan causing disaster from the start, young Thieving Heaven had lost everyone’s favor.

Ordinary people pointed at young Thieving Heaven and whispered to each other, but the clan’s higher-ups had their attention on sneak attack Gu.

“This Gu is so powerful, what is its origin?”

“That kid is a commoner, a penniless brat, how could he get such a top tier Gu worm?”

“I have investigated it, he has been living in the clan since his birth. But earlier this year, he was exiled, and this Gu worm was very likely obtained by him during the exile.”

“You are saying this kid has inherited some senior’s inheritance?”

“Yes, that is very likely to be true!”

“This brat doesn’t matter, the crucial thing is that this rank two Gu worm is really powerful. You have already seen its remarkable offensive power. It can be activated by a rank one Gu Master which means its primeval essence consumption is small, this is a top tier Gu worm. As long as our clan can arm ourselves with this Gu worm on a large scale, our strength will definitely soar. At that time, we can definitely expand our operations and seize larger oases.” The clan leader excitedly spoke, a fire of ambition flickering in his eyes.

Sneak attack Gu was a rank two Gu, after its might was displayed, it immediately attracted the covetous gaze of the clan’s higher-ups.

This was already expected by Fang Yuan.

With him controlling young Thieving Heaven, he could naturally avoid using sneak attack Gu in the competition, but he took the initiative to use it and openly at that. He had his own plan for this.

“I want to see what this dream realm will look like because of my decisions!”

“Sneak attack Gu has been exposed and attracted the clan’s covetous gaze, the higher-ups will definitely want to mass produce this Gu and arm the clan’s Gu Masters.”

Sneak attack Gu was a rank two Gu, this rank was just perfect.

A rank one Gu was too low, it had weak strength and there was no meaning in using them on a large scale.

Rank three was too high, they were too valuable and were difficult to mass-produce, also there were few rank three Gu Masters in the clan.

Only rank two which was in the middle, was suitable to mass-produce and suitable to equip the clan’s Gu Masters!

The clan’s higher-ups could not help being moved.

“So they want the Gu recipe more than the Gu worm. After all, there is only one sneak attack Gu, they can only mass-produce it by obtaining the Gu recipe.”

“The clan’s higher-ups want to get the Gu recipe, so they will most likely try to appease young Thieving Heaven and try to recruit him, they will not try to obtain it by force or pressure.”

This was a simple logic.

If pressured, it might instead lead to young Thieving Heaven rebounding and resisting.

If he died and did not hand over the recipe, the clan’s plans would all be in vain. If he had grievance, he could hand over an incomplete or a tampered Gu recipe, the clan would then suffer huge losses.”

So the best situation was for young Thieving Heaven to willingly and voluntarily hand over the Gu recipe.

Just like Fang Yuan expected, as the dream realm continued, the clan’s higher-up forces extended offers to young Thieving Heaven. They were either trying to invite him to visit their homes, or offer money and goods to get closer to him. Furthermore, some even wanted to marry their daughter to young Thieving Heaven.

Young Thieving Heaven instantly became popular like a hot product.

“My good grandson, you have made it! You won’t be able to hold on to this sneak attack Gu recipe, but you can use this to exchange for a large amount of benefits. Use it properly and you can even squeeze into the clan’s higher-up circle. Hehehe!” Sha Xiao’s voice echoed.

Young Thieving Heaven, however, was dead set on not handing over the Gu recipe.

“If I hand over the Gu recipe, a lot of babies will be implicated!”

Although young Thieving Heaven was upright and honest, he had his bottom line, he was an otherworldly demon, he had previous life’s experiences and knew that behind the strength of an organization, there was often darkness and dirtiness.

“Then you can delay it for a while, after a few days, you will be going to the pool to select the reward of the competition winner. Don’t forget grandpa’s instructions.” Sha Xiao contained his laughter, his voice turning cold and detached.

“Don’t worry, I won’t forget.” Young Thieving Heaven promised.

After three days in the dream, he along with seven others were led by clan elders across the blockade and to the pool.

This was the most important resource area of the clan. There was also a natural spirit spring in the pool which produced primeval stones, and was the basis for survival of the clan.

Young Thieving Heaven’s clan had not only planted a lot of Gu materials around the pool, they had also excavated underground caverns where they stored large amount of Gu worms.

Because young Thieving Heaven was the winner, he was brought to an underground cavern to choose a high quality Gu worm from inside.

He had just stepped inside when Sha Xiao’s excited voice was heard: “It’s here, it’s here. I sense a dense Immortal Gu aura!”

“What Immortal Gu?” Young Thieving Heaven asked.

Fang Yuan also had doubts, and was also somewhat shocked that the inheritance here actually involved Gu Immortals!

But right at this time, Fang Yuan’s sight suddenly turned dark.

His soul was once again being rapidly corroded by the dream realm.

After waiting for a seemingly endless time, Fang Yuan’s soul had unknowingly left the dream realm.

“Why am I out?” Fang Yuan felt a trace of surprise.

“This means I have passed the second stage?” Fang Yuan immediately came to a realization when he thought of this.

“Quasi-great grandmaster! My theft path attainment has actually soared to just a step before great grandmaster level!” Fang Yuan’s soul entered his physical body, he opened his eyes, which shined brightly with surprise and joy.

Quasi-great grandmaster realm!

This was a new personal record for Fang Yuan.

Among Fang Yuan’s various paths, some were at grandmaster realm, even in his first life of five hundred years, he had not achieved such an accomplishment in a path!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1502: Lacking Souls

Western Desert, inside Tang clan’s immortal formation.

Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged with closed eyes.

He was inspecting his soul, his ten million man soul foundation level had now already fallen to million man soul, moreover, it was just a little over a million.

“When I passed the first stage, my soul foundation was over nine million man soul. But after passing the second stage, I actually only have just over one million man soul, almost falling down to hundred thousand man soul range.”

Fang Yuan inwardly compared the differences between the two.

The second stage was longer than the first stage, and the soul corrosion rate was also much more severe.

An ordinary Gu Immortal with even a little less soul foundation would have no way to endure such a corrosion. Not to mention a whole stage, they would not even be able to pass half a stage of the dream realm.

This made it clear that the difficulty of this dream realm of Thieving Heaven was too high. No wonder Tang clan and Tang Fang Ming’s many years of effort was like a newborn baby trying to gnaw on an iron-hard boulder.

“Tang Fang Ming was still able to create so many dream path mortal Gu, this person indeed has quite remarkable talents and aptitude.”

Fang Yuan thought of his first life of five hundred years, Tang Fang Ming had created a dream path immortal killer move — Steal Dream.

Previously, Fang Yuan had thought this was because of Shadow Sect’s help, but now that he had explored two stages of Thieving Heaven’s dream realm, he felt steal dream was more likely to have been created by Tang Fang Ming himself.

The first stage of Thieving Heaven’s dream realm had increased Fang Yuan’s theft path to grandmaster level.

While the second stage had raised it to quasi-great grandmaster.

“I am just a step away from genuine great grandmaster level.” Fang Yuan quietly comprehended and sensed that beautiful prospect that was close at hand.

“If I successfully pass one more stage of Thieving Heaven’s dream realm, I definitely can reach great grandmaster attainment!” Even Fang Yuan, with his extraordinary calmness, felt traces of fiery anticipation.

There was a huge difference between grandmaster and great grandmaster.

Grandmaster level could understand about yin-yang and heaven and earth, they could learn about the profoundness of the universe, surpassing the mortal realm and become immortals among immortals, sages among sages.

At grandmaster level, a Gu Immortal could use their path to imitate the specialties of other paths. For instance, in Hei Fan’s true inheritance, hundred years harmony, a time path killer move, had the effect of information path.

As for great grandmaster attainment, it meant that the Gu Immortal’s understanding of a path was very close to being complete, their knowledge of the path had already reached the limits of the world. They could be considered to be approaching on digging out all the profundities of their path!

The dead Blazing Heaven Demoness was a fire path great grandmaster. The present day’s rank eight Gu Immortal Old Ancestor Xue Hu was a snow path great grandmaster.

At this level, Blazing Heaven Demoness had an extreme sensitivity towards fire path dao marks. Previously, she had added a trace of fire path dao mark in every fire path immortal material and plotted against Fang Yuan.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu could casually disassemble all kinds of immortal killer moves. Previously, in the battle of Reverse Flow River, he had nimbly disassembled his trump card battlefield killer move to deal with Heavenly Court and other enemies, even gaining the upper hand.

And a formation path great grandmaster could directly use the natural dao marks in the world to set up formations. They often needed only some mortal Gu to set up immortal Gu formations in some specific areas.

As for above great grandmaster attainment, there was supreme grandmaster.

Great grandmaster was a level where the profundities of the path were being dug out, if Fang Yuan became a theft path great grandmaster, he would understand the profundities of theft path that existed in the world, and there would be almost nothing about theft path that he could not comprehend.

That was to say, great grandmaster was a level where one deciphered just about everything about a certain path.

Supreme grandmaster was to innovate beyond that, to obtain mysteries of the path that did not even exist in the world, to be one step ahead of heaven and earth!

Normally, grandmaster attainment required hundreds of years of accumulation, in Fang Yuan’s first life, he had attained grandmaster in blood path.

Great grandmaster often required a thousand to several thousands of years, a number of rank eight Gu Immortals possessed this level of attainment.

As for supreme grandmaster, that was not just a matter of simply accumulation, but concerned talents and natural aptitude as well. Without having awe-inspiring talent and natural aptitude, even if the Gu Immortal lived for ten thousand years, they would not be able to reach supreme grandmaster attainment.

Therefore, supreme grandmasters were extremely rare since ancient times.

The ten venerables were all supreme grandmasters. There were also some legendary characters, like the three refinement path supreme grandmasters — Long Hair

Ancestor, Old Eccentric Tian Nan and Old Immortal Kong Jue.

“Grandmaster and great grandmaster attainment level can be achieved through dream realms. But supreme grandmaster cannot be obtained with dream realms.” Fang Yuan realized this.

This was obvious.

Supreme grandmasters needed to pioneer in creating something from nothing, while dream realms were legacies left by predecessors. So the highest attainment level that could be reached through dream realms was great grandmaster.

“Once I attain great grandmaster level in theft path, even if there are still more stages in Thieving Heaven’s dream realm, I won’t be able to increase my theft path attainment level through them.”

This was also the foundation for collaboration between Fang Yuan and Tang clan.

Thieving Heaven’s dream realm was too large, Fang Yuan’s stomach had a limit. Once he was full, there would still be a large portion left for Tang clan.

Tang clan had only been willing to collaborate with Fang Yuan after he made this reason clear.

If Thieving Heaven’s dream realm was small enough for Fang Yuan to devour alone, how could Tang clan collaborate with Fang Yuan?

In the coming days, Fang Yuan prepared for his third exploration of Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.

He was mainly cultivating his soul.

But in his spare time, Fang Yuan taught the secrets of dream path to Tang Fang Ming.

Tang Fang Ming benefited a lot.

Despite Fang Yuan only imparting some superficial dream path knowledge, as far as Tang Fang Ming was concerned, what he lacked was this lighthouse to guide him.

The first step was always the most difficult. The creation of any path was the most difficult at the beginning.

Once the first step was taken, the following steps could be taken rapidly.

For Fang Yuan, guiding Tang Fang Ming, besides fulfilling the agreement to make it convenient for him to continue exploring the dream realm, was to make arrangements for the future. He was imitating Spectral Soul’s strategy of fostering forces in four regions, to surround Central Continent and go against Heavenly Court.

Time flew by, over twenty days passed just like this.

Fang Yuan’s soul foundation had once again reached ten million man soul level.

“The third stage of Thieving Heaven’s dream realm is sure to be even more difficult. Ten million man soul level might not be safe enough.” After Fang Yuan pondered, he decided to continue cultivating his soul to break through to hundred million man soul.

If his soul foundation was not sufficient and the soul was corroded completely in the dream realm, it would be akin to death. Even if there was still a physical body left, he would be just like a vegetable without a soul.

“Maybe I can deduce a dream path killer move to reduce the corrosion of the soul in the dream realm.”

This idea only flashed past Fang Yuan’s mind before he quickly denied it.

Fang Yuan’s dream path attainment level was only ordinary, not even at quasi-master. Creating a dream path immortal killer move? Forget about it.

As such, there was only one path in front of Fang Yuan currently, to raise his soul foundation to hundred million man soul.

But this plan soon met an obstacle.

He was lacking guts Gu!

Fang Yuan had put Dang Hun Mountain in Lang Ya blessed land, Lang Ya land spirit personally took charge of using this secluded domain of heaven and earth to produce guts Gu.

But, guts Gu did not appear out of thin year, it required souls.

The higher the quality and the quantity of the souls, the more guts Gu that Dang Hun Mountain could produce.

The problem appeared in this aspect.

Fang Yuan required a huge amount of guts Gu, Lang Ya land spirit, however, did not have enough souls to produce them.

Previously, Fang Yuan had ordered Shadow Sect members and others to explore Tai Qiu and kill desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts, so guts Gu could be repeatedly produced on a large scale.

But now, Shadow Sect’s members were with Fang Yuan, and the souls stored in Lang Ya Sect had been completely used up these last few days.

Fang Yuan thought over it, right now, it was better for him to get materials from nearby than return to kill Tai Qiu’s desolate beasts.

Western Desert was similar to Northern Plains in that it was similarly incomparably vast.

Western Desert had a place that was rather special and suited Fang Yuan.

“You Chan is dead, my dragonfish business is already dominating the whole of treasure yellow heaven’s market. For the next few years, there should be no one that can compete with me.”

Fang Yuan intended to use these profits to manage his immortal aperture and not to purchase souls.

It was a loss to use them to purchase souls, Fang Yuan recalled a famous saying — one’s own hands can produce ample food and clothing.

Thereupon, Fang Yuan briefly informed Tang Fang Ming of the situation. Then, he left the immortal formation with the Shadow Sect members, towards that special desert.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1503: Soul Beast Army

Fang Yuan controlled the auspicious cloud to move through the sky.

His speed was not fast, but his surroundings were permeating with dense Immortal Gu aura.

The auspicious cloud below him was not ordinary. It originated from a luck path true inheritance in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, after Fang Yuan’s modifications, its effect had improved sharply.

The auspicious cloud did not follow Fang Yuan’s will, but moved according to the profundity of luck path.

Even Fang Yuan did not know when this auspicious cloud would change direction or where it was moving to, but Fang Yuan was clear that this ‘spontaneous auspicious cloud’ killer move flew along the path of highest luck.

After leaving Tang clan, Fang Yuan had spent several days to come here.

This was green ghost desert.

A famous danger region of Western Desert. For the last hundred thousand years, there were many Western Desert Gu Immortals who died here.

Green ghost desert’s sky was covered with dense dark clouds all year round, with barely any sunlight, it was dark and gloomy.

The ground was covered with large amount of vegetation.

Ghost crying trees were the largest in number, this tree was not tall and had twisted branches that looked like they were demons and monsters brandishing their claws. Every time the gloomy wind blew on the tree, it would shake slightly and emit a shrill scream or a terrifying cry.

Moan moan moan...

The ghost crying tree wailed mournfully, a soul beast quietly moved out and approached Fang Yuan from behind while slowly raising its two sickle arms.

The front half of this soul beast resembled a cockroach with long sharp pincers, while its back half had a long tail like a python.

Fang Yuan seemingly failed to sense it, the soul beast’s two sickle arms were raised up to its limit, it then rushed out towards Fang Yuan’s back and slashed down its sickle arms!

Victory or defeat was already determined at that instant.

The soul beast’s body stiffened in the air and fell down head-first to the ground.

But Fang Yuan acted in time, softly waving his sleeve which sent out a formless force that wrapped around this desolate beast level soul beast’s corpse, and brought it before him.

The soul beast’s corpse turned into whiffs of dark grey smoke and was constantly dissipating with the wind. Fang Yuan was unable to stop it, and after a while, only a glass-like soul core remained in his hand.

The soul core was heavy and was dark blue to the point of appearing black. As Fang Yuan held it, it was like holding a completely filled wine vat.

This was a rank six immortal material.

It was the essence of the soul beast.

Just like a mud monster only left behind its mud core after its death, soul beasts also had soul cores.

Soul beasts, mud monsters, blood beasts, shadow monsters and phantom beasts were all path beasts, their whole bodies contained plentiful and dense amounts of dao marks of their specific paths.

Fang Yuan inspected and confirmed that there was nothing wrong with the soul core, before throwing it inside his sovereign immortal aperture.

Inside his immortal aperture, there was already a small basin of soul cores.

Most were rank six soul cores, and a portion was rank seven. But there were no rank eight soul cores which came from immemorial soul beasts.

With Fang Yuan’s battle strength, it was easy for him to kill these desolate level soul beasts and ancient soul beasts.

After he arrived in green ghost desert, many desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts came to find trouble with him. Fang Yuan was charging through their territories, so he would naturally be attacked by them.

Most of these beasts were soul beasts.

Fang Yuan had ghostly concealment, auspicious cloud, however, was not concealed, the target of these soul beasts was the auspicious cloud while neglecting Fang Yuan, unfortunately they all fell to Fang Yuan’s sinister scheme.

The emergence of soul beasts was related to two Demon Venerables.

One was Red Lotus Demon Venerable; he damaged fate Gu, creating a loophole in the Great Dao of the world which allowed many beings to escape from the restrictions of fate. After dying, not all souls were sucked into door of life and death, many souls stayed behind in the world.

The second was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable; he created soul path, causing souls to manifest and transform into soul beasts.

But at present, a portion of soul beasts were naturally formed in some places with dense soul path dao marks.

Times were constantly changing.

From Immemorial Antiquity to Remote Antiquity, Olden Antiquity to the present age, the world of five regions had already changed many times.

So these soul cores could completely substitute for souls to be fed to Dang Hun Mountain and produce large amounts of guts Gu.

But the quality of these soul cores could not be compared to Gu Immortal souls. At most, they could only match the souls of other beasts and plants.

“It hasn’t even been long since I entered green ghost desert, and I have already obtained so many soul cores. How I wish I could have complete control over this place.” Fang Yuan thought to himself.

If he could control this place, it was akin to having an endless supply of guts Gu.

It could completely push his soul foundation to the peak level, and even be used to help others.

Whoosh!

Just as Fang Yuan was immersed in thinking, a sharp ear-piercing sound came from behind him towards the left.

A giant scorpion was flying towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s pupils immediately shrunk when he took a glance.

This scorpion was completely black and had a peculiar shape, its whole body resembled a huge round disc, its long tail was behind the disc and its two huge pincers flickered with eerie light. It was charging straight at Fang Yuan with terrifying momentum!

“This is an immemorial desolate beast disc scorpion, it is a wisdom path beast and its favorite food is soul beasts.” A line of information instantly appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind.

Fang Yuan’s ghostly concealment could conceal him from the senses of soul beasts, but it had no effect on other beasts.

Fang Yuan jumped out of the auspicious cloud and escaped.

Fang Yuan had rank eight battle strength, he was not helpless against this immemorial desolate beast.

However, his goal in this trip was not to fight a drawn out battle with the disc scorpion, but to gather as many soul cores as possible.

Fang Yuan retreated, but the disc scorpion did not let go. However, after a while of being chased, Fang Yuan was able to successfully throw off the disc scorpion by using his ample methods.

Danger lurked everywhere in green ghost desert, even Fang Yuan was not safe here.

Over the next few days, Fang Yuan hunted soul beasts while cultivating soul path, increasing his soul foundation. If he ran into any existences like the disc scorpion, Fang Yuan would prioritize escaping as much as possible.

Fang Yuan was not the only one hunting, the Shadow Sect members were also doing the same.

The soul cores obtained by the immortals were given to Lang Ya land spirit to produce large amounts of guts Gu.

In less than half a month, Fang Yuan’s soul foundation had reached the range of ten million man soul again.

“My soul foundation is enough, it is time to change battle tactics.” Fang Yuan instructed the Shadow Sect immortals to stop killing soul beasts, instead, they would start capturing, subduing or enslaving them.

Fang Yuan had Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, he possessed large amounts of methods to enslave soul beasts.

The only thing limiting him was that he lacked soul path and enslavement path Immortal Gu.

Under everyone’s efforts, they soon controlled a large group of soul beasts, there were roughly over sixty desolate level soul beasts, and around twenty ancient soul beasts.

Soul beasts of all kinds of grotesque shapes formed a majestic army that rampaged around in green ghost desert.

When they encountered lone soul beasts or small groups of soul beasts, Fang Yuan would command the enslaved soul beasts to charge at them. Those that could not be controlled were killed for their soul cores, and those soul beasts that were on their last breaths would be enslaved by Fang Yuan and the rest.

A dozen or so days passed, the enslaved soul beast army expanded by three times the original size!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1504: Meeting a Benefactor

In green ghost desert, the sky was always covered with dark clouds and there was barely any sunlight.

A small group of soul beasts were moving in the desert.

Different from the rest, there were three Gu Immortals in this soul beast group.

Two were captives and one was the master of these soul beasts.

“Hehehe, you two lads from Fang clan, have you thought it through?” The Gu Immortal in charge was dressed in a grey robe. He had a sharp nose, thin eyes, and had a goatee. He was sitting on the back of a bull shaped ancient soul beast and was looking at the two Gu Immortal captives beside him with a dark and pleased expression.

Fang Leng and Fang Yun had rank six cultivation, they looked clean and tidy, but in fact, their souls were completely bound by dark grey soul chains and could not even budge.

Fang Leng, who was slightly older, had a square face. He kept quiet and did not reply.

The slightly younger Fang Yun had a handsome appearance, he had a rather lively nature as he replied: “Old Ghost Bai Jun, it is not that we cannot write a letter to the clan for you, but you have bound our souls, we cannot even activate our communication means. How about loosening the chains a little so I can message the clan.”

Old Ghost Bai Jun snorted: “You are so sneaky, wanting to deceive this Old Ghost? You only need an instant to escape with your body cloud killer move. It was not easy for me to capture you, you think I can be so easily fooled?”

Fang Yun quickly said: “How could I dare to fool senior? It is just that what I said is the truth. You see, it is like this... ahh!”

Before he finished speaking, Fang Yun’s whole body started shaking as he let out a terrifyingly miserable scream.

Old Ghost Bai Jun snickered, while Fang Leng called out furiously: “Stop, don’t hurt my junior brother.”

Old Ghost Bai Jun was annoyed: “Looks like you guys are accustomed to acting without consequences, you still don’t recognize your situation? Hmph, then let me teach you.”

He then activated his method, tormenting Fang Leng as well.

Fang Leng grunted, his brows tightly furrowed but he did not utter a sound, except his trembling was growing increasingly intense.

Old Ghost Bai Jun tortured them for a while and only stopped when he saw Fang clan’s two immortals turning pale as paper, their bodies shaking and covered in sweat.

He inwardly frowned: “If it were ordinary lone cultivators, I could have killed them without consequences. But these two have quite the background, Fang clan is a super force of Western Desert. If I rashly kill them, Fang clan will definitely be able to find that I am the culprit. Fang clan’s second supreme elder Fang Di Chang is a famous wisdom path expert of Western Desert. Also, if Fang clan comes to search green ghost desert, it will hinder master’s plan.”

“But if I just let them go and master asks me later, he might blame me for being cowardly. The only thing I can do now is capture these two to demand ransom from Fang clan, and then set an agreement. With this, I can satisfy both sides.”

Old Ghost Bai Jun thought things through and looked at these two captives again.

Fang Leng and Fang Yun were gasping and sweating, collapsed on the ground because of the torture.

Old Ghost Bai Jun sneered: “Even an iron forged man won’t be able to endure my methods. To tell you the truth, I am not afraid of you not giving in! What do you think? Want to try it again?”

Fang Leng said through clenched teeth: “Old ghost, just kill us.”

Fang Yun however shouted: “Don’t, don’t, I will contact the clan, okay?”

Old Ghost Bai Jun looked at Fang Yun’s terror-stricken look and laughed: “You should have said so before, then you wouldn’t have to suffer so much pain. Do it quickly.”

Fang Yun gave a miserable cry: “Senior Old Ghost, I am telling the truth, if you don’t loosen your chains a little, junior truly is unable to message the clan.”

Old Ghost Bai Jun was furious: “Still making excuses!”

He once again activated his methods, tormenting the two Fang clan Gu Immortals.

After another while of torture, Fang Leng and Fang Yun could not endure it any longer, their bodies collapsed on the soul beast's back like a pile of mud.

“Have you thought it through?” Old Ghost Bai Jun sneered.

Fang Leng did not utter a sound, while Fang Yun said: “Yes, yes. But I wonder if Senior Old Ghost has thought it through?”

“Me? What do I have to think about?” Old Ghost Bai Jun asked in surprise.

“Senior, we are Fang clan's Gu Immortals. Senior is a lone cultivator, if you provoke Fang clan, your life will probably become turbulent, right? How about letting us go and getting on good terms with our Fang clan. Wouldn't that be better?” Fang Yun smiled.

Old Ghost Bai Jun was immediately filled with anger: “Kid, you think I am afraid of your Fang clan? Hmph! If I were afraid of your Fang clan, would I have captured you for ransom?”

“Senior is thinking of making a non-aggression pact with our Fang clan by doing this. Junior admits today's matter is our fault, and we have offended senior. We have committed much offense, but please forgive us, senior.” Fang Yun spoke weakly.

“Hmph, now you admit defeat, why did you find trouble with me repeatedly earlier? It is too late for that now!” Old Ghost Bai Jun's voice was firm, but was inwardly shaken.

His intention was already guessed by the two Fang clan Gu Immortals, so it was going to be difficult to force them to give in.

Fang Yun continued to persuade: “Senior can punish me, and I will accept the punishment. Actually, I have a lot of assets in the clan, so long as senior lets us go, we can immediately set a nonaggression agreement, we will take it as this matter did not happen and we will even heavily compensate senior. With this, we also don't need to let the clan know of this scandalous matter as that would truly decrease our prestige in the clan.”

Old Ghost Bai Jun scoffed: “You think I was born yesterday? What prestige do you, Fang Yun, have in Fang clan? It is your senior brother Fang Leng who is a talent among rank sixes, and is a possible successor of Fang clan.”

Fang Yun's heart sank, he had not expected Old Ghost Bai Jun to have such detailed information on them.

But he still continued: “Wouldn't resolving this privately be better? If we escalate this, it might not have a good ending.”

Old Ghost Bai Jun shook his head: “No, what status do you two have? I will discuss with your Fang clan's first supreme elder, and besides getting my compensation, you will not be allowed to take a single step in green ghost desert for the next few hundred years.”

Fang Leng and Fang Yun's expressions immediately changed.

Fang Leng said: “Old Ghost Bai Jun, you are still after this green ghost desert? Your appetite is too big, be careful or your stomach might burst.”

Old Ghost Bai Jun laughed in a strange tone: “Although I have rank seven cultivation, I am close to rank eight.”

Fang Leng shook his head: “So what? Do you dare to undergo the tribulation?”

Old Ghost Bai Jun stroked his goatee: “Of course, I don’t. But, not daring now doesn’t mean I won’t dare in the future.”

He hesitated before making up his mind.

“Alright, let me destroy all your hopes, take a look at what Gu this is!”

Fang Yun and Fang Leng immediately raised their heads to look at a ladybird like Gu in Old Ghost Bai Jun’s hand.

This Gu was like sapphire, it was the size of small bowl, and its thick carapace was dotted with countless golden star specks. These golden star specks constantly twinkled with various lights, giving a dazzling sense to others.

Fang Yun’s and Fang Leng’s minds shook fiercely, their eyes could not conceal their panic.

Fang Leng’s eyes widened and he was speechless momentarily.

“This is, this is a rank eight Immortal Gu!!” Fang Yun cried out in shock.

Old Ghost Bai Jun said, pleased: “Let me teach you, this rank eight Immortal Gu’s name is Soul Beast Token, it can directly allow me to enslave soul beasts. Rank eight Soul Beast Token can enslave immemorial soul beasts and what it requires is not rank eight immortal essence. I can use it now! Do you understand what this means?”

Fang Leng and Fang Yun looked at each other in shock.

The meaning behind this was too big.

With this rank eight Immortal Gu, Old Ghost Bai Jun could go about his plan slowly, he could control an immemorial soul beast, then use it to control a huge soul beast army and even control this whole green ghost desert.

Green ghost desert had an inestimable number of soul beasts. This was a dangerous land to others, but it was a paradise to Old Ghost Bai Jun.

“No wonder you have such an ambition, you want to grasp this place then use an immemorial soul beast to help you smoothly pass your tribulation and become a rank eight great expert!” Fang Leng’s voice turned hoarse.

Fang Yun quickly spoke: “But our Fang clan is the nearest super clan to green ghost desert. As long as senior reaches an agreement with our Fang clan, you will have gained the safest cultivation environment.”

“Indeed, it is good you know.” Old Ghost Bai Jun’s eyes flickered sharply: “Actually, I need to thank you two, you came at such a time. One is a direct great-grandson of Fang clan’s first supreme elder, while the other is the second supreme elder’s adopted son, although both of you are only rank six, you two have sufficient weight to be put into a negotiation.”

Fang Leng and Fang Yun were silent.

Fang Leng inwardly thought: “This Old Ghost Bai Jun is indeed a schemer. Everything is different now with this soul beast token Immortal Gu. With an immemorial soul beast beside him, Old Ghost Bai Jun will need to be treated as a quasi-rank eight existence. The clan needs to be very careful when dealing with him. More importantly, with us as captives, Old Ghost Bai Jun indeed has the best chips to talk terms! Sigh, if I knew this, I would not have listened to junior brother’s instigation to adventure here.”

Just as he was thinking, Fang Leng suddenly heard Fang Yun’s shout.

“Senior brother, look over there!” Fang Yun’s voice was filled with pleasant surprise.

Fang Leng curiously looked over, seeing the dark clouds above green ghost desert covering the sunlight, but right now, a white cloud was slowly flying under the dense dark clouds, and was gradually nearing them.

Fang Leng was slightly stumped as he suddenly recalled the conversation he had with Fang Yun before leaving.

Fang Leng: “You have such big guts, you actually want to adventure in green ghost desert.”

Fang Yun laughed: “Be at ease, senior brother, I had requested father to make deductions on this adventure. He had deduced that this trip will be threatening but not dangerous, we will meet a benefactor along the way and reap huge harvests.”

Fang Leng frowned: “Not to mention that few people tread in green ghost desert, even if we meet someone else, how would you know if this person is the benefactor?”

Fang Yun patted Fang Leng’s shoulder: “I had asked father, he said that the benefactor will come on a white cloud.”

Fang Leng was dazed, before scoffing: “White cloud? Everyone knows, green ghost desert is shrouded by layers of dark clouds, how can there be white cloud?”

Thinking of this conversation, Fang Leng looked at the white cloud and thought: “Could it be the benefactor as told by second supreme elder?”

Old Ghost Bai Jun also stared at the white cloud with a gloomy expression: “This white cloud emits luck path aura, but it is not only luck path, clearly someone has used an immortal killer move. Who is it? Who owns such rare luck path methods?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1505: Directly Attacking

Rumble...

A vast soul beast army was moving in green ghost desert, raising dust clouds in their way.

And ahead of the soul beast army was a white auspicious cloud flying gently.

The white cloud was Fang Yuan’s immortal killer move spontaneous auspicious cloud, Fang Yuan had come to green ghost desert to only search for soul cores, and did not have any precise goals. So over these days, he let spontaneous auspicious cloud lead the way.

The effect was pretty good, as he added some small scale soul beast groups.

As a result, this soul beast army’s scale had enlarged further, the numbers were astonishing.

“But this amount is already my limit.” Fang Yuan was riding a soul beast, his body moving slightly along with the soul beast’s movements.

He felt some regret.

All beings had big or small capabilities, there was some form of limit in terms of capabilities.

Controlling so many soul beasts was Fang Yuan’s current upper limit, he could not control any more.

On one hand, controlling these soul beasts depended on his soul foundation, which was at ninety million man soul. On the other hand, Fang Yuan had too few soul path Immortal Gu, they were rank seven Change Soul, and rank six Cleanse Soul.

Change soul Immortal Gu had to be left as a trump card, because it was the core Immortal Gu of switch soul in dream killer move, and could not be used casually. While rank six cleanse soul Immortal Gu was very useful, it was used by Fang Yuan in myriad self, as well as his own soul path cultivation. He was using it as a replacement now, and was just barely able to control these soul beasts, it was being used in many things simultaneously.

In the case of cleanse soul Immortal Gu, it had a lot of different uses, Fang Yuan was able to do different things by raising just this one Gu. It was much better than raising change soul Immortal Gu.

But like this, cleanse soul Immortal Gu could not handle many situations at the same time as a single Gu.

“I need more soul path Immortal Gu, best would be rank seven ones.”

Gu refinement was out of the question.

Refining rank seven soul path Immortal Gu was indeed a tempting thought, but Fang Yuan was lacking resources and would not be able to bear the cost of large scale Gu refinement. After all, he had invested in many things in this recent period, and had also refined many Immortal Gu. And in terms of his earnings, there were few, only the dragonfish business was worth anticipating.

“I have a lot of wisdom path Immortal Gu, I can use them as replacements. It is just that the killer moves would have to be modified. After returning to Lang Ya blessed land, I will use the light of wisdom to modify suitable killer moves.”

Fang Yuan’s expression was calm as he continued to plan.

The Shadow Sect immortals were at the four corners of the beast group, commanding the soul beast army for Fang Yuan, while also scouting their surroundings.

Green ghost desert had countless soul beasts, these soul beasts were an extremely desired resource for Fang Yuan.

“My soul is at ninety million man soul currently, the soul cores harvested in this trip will be enough to advance me to hundred million man soul level.”

“But even if I attain hundred million man soul, it is only midway in the soul cultivation records in Spectral Soul true inheritance, it is far from the peak.”

Hundred million man soul was the limit of a human soul, after reaching this point, they had reached the peak and could not progress further.

But this situation was before Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s period. When Red Lotus Demon Venerable broke fate Gu, this limit was also destroyed.

The human soul could continue to advance, but no one found the way to advance. In fact, it was already amazing for someone to have a million man soul back then.

When Spectral Soul Demon Venerable created soul path, he innovated new ideas with his soul path supreme grandmaster attainment level, and found the way to continue advancing beyond hundred million man soul.

As stated by Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, above hundred million man soul was desolate soul!

Hundred million man soul could solidify the human soul, and the soul could directly interfere with the real world and would not simply be an illusory body like before. But even so, hundred million man soul was still fragile.

This was an inherent deficiency of humans.

Man was the spirit of all living beings and had extremely high comprehension, but their physical bodies and souls were far inferior to other beings.

However, once they cross hundred million man soul and step into desolate soul, just their soul alone would have the strength of a desolate level soul beast!

Cultivating the desolate soul further until the limit, that would be hundred million desolate soul.

This level was the peak of soul cultivation, and also the limit that the world could contain.

Fang Yuan had personally witnessed this level before, it was that terrifying giant form of Spectral Soul’s main body. As recorded in Spectral Soul true inheritance, it was three headed thousand arms demon soul!

Reaching this level meant possessing quasi-rank nine battle strength, the soul could directly resist calamities and tribulations, defying the heavens and stamping the earth, slaughtering deities and ghosts, shocking the world.

So Fang Yuan had an extremely huge demand for guts Gu.

The soul cores he obtained in this trip to green ghost desert could push him to hundred million man soul level, but what about later?

If Fang Yuan wanted to cultivate his soul to the peak, he definitely required much more and an unceasing supply of soul cores.

“The best scenario is to get control of this desert and become its owner.”

Like many Gu Immortals did, controlling an area was to make the natural resources in the area into one’s own assets. Battle strength was required to accomplish this.

With Fang Yuan’s current strength, he had the qualifications to occupy this region. Especially since this green ghost desert was an unowned land.

But there was a problem in this.

“Once I expose my identity and govern this area, it will be the same as asking Heavenly Court to attack me.”

“Reverse flow protection seal cannot be disguised, and myriad dragon is also the same. Then I can only disguise my identity and use rank seven battle strength to fight for this place.”

“After I get this place, I could arrange Ying Wu Xie to station here and let him command the soul beast army, supplying me with soul cores.”

Among the people he had, Ying Wu Xie was the most suitable choice.

“To do this, I need more soul path Immortal Gu and to also raise Ying Wu Xie’s soul foundation.”

“The important point is Fang clan.”

“This Western Desert super force is the nearest to green ghost desert. If I control this place, Fang clan would be my neighbor and is a barrier that I can’t get around.”

Getting rid of Fang clan was not realistic.

Fang Yuan’s current battle strength could fight rank eight, but winning against a rank eight great expert was difficult. Furthermore, Fang clan not only had a rank eight first supreme elder, this generation’s second supreme elder, Fang Di Chang, was a wisdom path great expert who had been renowned in Fang Yuan’s first life. Fang Di Chang had an extremely deep wisdom path attainment, possessing wisdom path great grandmaster attainment level, and was also marked in Shadow Sect’s information.

So Fang Yuan only had one path before him.

“Disguise as a lone cultivator, get close to the righteous path, then build a good relationship with Fang clan...”

It was not easy to conspire for a resource area, there were many things to be considered. Fortunately, green ghost desert was rather special as most of the Western Desert Gu Immortals and clans lacked methods to develop it. This gave Fang Yuan the best opportunity possible.

However, he did not know that he was not the only one who had an intention to occupy green ghost desert.

“Hmm, there are people ahead?” Fang Yuan’s expression suddenly changed, his current investigative methods were no longer like before, he immediately sensed Old Ghost Bai Jun and the rest the moment they entered his investigative range.

“Is the benefactor coming?” Fang Yun was inwardly going crazy with excitement.

Fang Leng also had a look of anticipation.

Old Ghost Bai Jun’s gaze was frosty, when he made out some details of the white cloud, he restrained himself and waited for the other side.

Soon, the three Gu Immortals sensed the ground starting to softly tremor.

Then they saw dust clouds surging on the horizon, as one soul beast after another appeared in their sight.

A large amount of soul beasts appeared, causing the three immortals’ expression to change.

And when the whole soul beast army was revealed, all three were shaken.

“This!” Old Ghost Bai Jun lost his voice, he had thought his soul beast group was of a large enough scale, but now he discovered that he did not even hold a candle to Fang Yuan’s soul beast army.

The Shadow Sect immortals had already entered Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture, while Fang Yuan had changed into another appearance.

He looked like a skinny middle-aged man, with long grey hair, a pair of black eyes which seemed to contain vicissitudes of life and ambition. His sight would make anyone feel like this person was absolutely a formidable person!

Right now, Fang Yuan was dressed in a black robe, and his hands were clasped behind his back. He was standing proudly on the back of a soul beast while controlling the soul beast army, an awe-inspiring demonic aura lingering around him.

Old Ghost Bai Jun and the rest were shaken, and subconsciously held their breath.

Fang Leng turned to look at Fang Yun, his gaze filled with doubts — why does your benefactor feel even more demonic than Old Ghost Bai Jun?

Fang Yun rolled his eyes, his meaning was — you are asking me, but who should I ask? Perhaps he is the case of men cannot be judged by their looks, he could be of righteous path?

Fang Yuan had used familiar face to disguise himself, so there was not even a little flaw.

Old Ghost Bai Jun was awed by Fang Yuan’s aura, he coughed, then clasped his hands in greeting: “Greetings, I wonder how I should address you?”

Fang Yuan’s cold gaze swept past the three immortals, chilling their hearts. He did not reply, he only waved his hand.

Roar—!

The soul beast army started roaring and howling, their voices reverberating everywhere.

Then, the large army, like a surging tide, charged towards Old Ghost Bai Jun’s group. Their momentum was like countless horses and soldiers running in the battlefield.

As the saying went, a slightest disagreement of words could result in a fight. But Fang Yuan did not even speak a word, and instead straightforwardly made a move, his intense killing intent causing the three immortals’ hearts to sink.

Fang Leng once again looked at Fang Yun, as if shouting: “Are you saying this is not a demon?! Now, your ‘benefactor’ is about to take our lives!”

Fang Yun innocently looked at Fang Leng, as if replying: “Why blame me? I am innocent too!”

Old Ghost Bai Jun was stunned, before becoming furious.

He thought: “I am trying peaceful measures so as to not to add troubles to master’s plan. I did not think this maniac would directly make a killing move without even any greeting! When did this maniac appear in Western Desert? He is simply disregarding me! Alright, I will let you know that not everyone can be so easily bullied!”

At this thought, Old Ghost Bai Jun shouted and flew to the sky like a flash of lightning.

“Come, let’s battle!” He opened his arms wide, his sleeves expanded like two black holes from where countless dark currents surged out.

The dark currents moved towards Fang Yuan like black pythons.

Fang Yuan pointed his finger.

Wisdom path immortal killer move — Ignited Thought Flying Rock!

Rumble!

Using offense against offense, the dark currents resisted for a while but could not endure it any longer as they dispersed.

The red meteorites’ power was decreased by half, but still continued to smash towards the ground, Old Ghost Bai Jun’s soul beast army cried miserably from the bombardment, many were killed instantly or heavily injured.

Old Ghost Bai Jun’s pupils shrunk in fright: ‘”Such power!”

“He is a wisdom path Gu Immortal?” Fang Leng was astonished.

“Don’t kill me, we are Fang clan’s Gu Immortals, we are Old Ghost Bai Jun’s enemies and not friends!” Fang Yun shouted loudly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1506: Soul Explosion!

“Fang clan’s Gu Immortals?” Fang Yuan’s ears twitched at Fang Yun’s shout.

Although he had investigated that the relation between Fang Yun, Fang Leng, and Old Ghost Bai Jun seemed to be rather tense, Fang Yuan had not expected they were hostile towards each other, moreover Fang clan’s Gu Immortals seemed to be captives.

The reason Fang Yuan immediately made a move was because he recognized Old Ghost Bai Jun.

This person was a rank seven soul path Gu Immortal, by killing him, Fang Yuan could take the aperture to increase his sovereign immortal aperture’s resources and also increase his soul path dao marks. If he could be captured alive, Fang Yuan could give his body to Ying Wu Xie.

After all, Ying Wu Xie was proficient in soul path methods but was using water path Gu Immortal Fairy Cui Bo’s body, which did not suit him and limited his capabilities.

To disguise himself and make it more convenient to fight for green ghost desert while also hiding from Heavenly Court and other forces, Fang Yuan did not use his true appearance.

Instantly, thoughts started moving like lightning in Fang Yuan’s mind before getting in order.

“Looks like this spontaneous auspicious cloud is pretty good, I had just thought of communicating with Fang clan and building a good relationship, who could have thought it would send me such a good opportunity at the next moment!”

“Of course, this is also because of my high luck.”

Fang Yuan had used burning soul bursting luck before coming to green ghost desert. He did not ask Ying Wu Xie to use it, instead personally activating it. Although it expended a lot of his soul foundation, the current Fang Yuan could completely bear it.

“Save the two Fang clan Gu Immortals and take this Old Ghost Bai Jun as a captive!” Fang Yuan’s gaze brightened sharply.

He had thought of killing them all, then annexing Old Ghost Bai Jun’s soul beast group.

But now, he changed his plan.

“Fang clan? Although I had never interacted with Fang clan, it has some credit in regards to my current cultivation level. Oh well, since you encountered me, I shall save you and repay the kindness.” Fang Yuan spoke, although his voice was cold, Fang Leng and Fang Yun felt joyous.

Fang Yun’s eyes opened wide, his lips parted in a green, as he repeatedly raised his brows at Fang Leng, as if saying: “Look, he is indeed the benefactor!”

Fang Leng ignored him, as he looked at Fang Yuan and Old Ghost Bai Jun, frowning.

He thought: “This Gu Immortal’s origin is mysterious, there is no such person in my memories. If he really wanted to save us, he should have hidden his intention and saved us later. But he intentionally mentioned it, why? Either he does not want to save us and is only intentionally saying it to attract Old Ghost Bai Jun’s attention. Or, he truly wants to save us, but his nature is aloof and has complete confidence in himself; he has absolute assurance that he can save us even if he informs the enemy of his intention!”

“You want to save them from me, it will not be easy!” Old Ghost Bai Jun was furious at Fang Yuan’s words, a powerful aura burst out from his body as it brushed aside the ignited thought flying rocks and charged towards Fang Yuan.

“Commendable courage, but poor foresight.” Fang Yuan sneered, as he flew to the sky and pointed his finger.

In an instant, dozens of strange lights shot at Old Ghost Bai Jun, turning him into a sieve of holes.

Old Ghost Bai Jun did not let out any blood, instead his body gradually turned into nothingness.

“Hahaha, you fell right into my trap!” Old Ghost Bai Jun’s true body appeared at another direction. He had used an illusion to lure Fang Yuan’s attention, while his true body was hidden.

Old Ghost Bai Jun did not choose to sneak attack Fang Yuan, instead he approached Fang Leng and Fang Yun.

Didn’t Fang Yuan say he would save these two? Old Ghost Bai Jun immediately had an idea to use these two as shields.

This was the first time Old Ghost Bai Jun had seen Fang Yuan, but through the exchange earlier as well as the size of Fang Yuan’s soul beast army, Old Ghost Bai Jun knew Fang Yuan was powerful, and he was not Fang Yuan’s match in a head-on fight.

So he wanted to use Fang Leng and Fang Yun to threaten Fang Yuan, who wanted to save them.

“Crap!” Looking at Old Ghost Bai Jun approaching them rapidly, Fang Yun shouted in dismay.

But right at this moment, a figure appeared before the two immortals from the thin air.

It was the transformed Fang Yuan!

“Old Ghost Bai Jun, who is the one who has fallen into a trap?” The corners of Fang Yuan’s lips slightly rose to reveal a demonic smile.

“Oh no!” Old Ghost Bai Jun’s mind jolted fiercely as he realized he had fallen into the enemy’s trap, and quickly tried to escape.

But it was already too late.

About ten soul beasts suddenly appeared in the air, surrounding Old Ghost Bai Jun.

“Detonate.” Fang Yuan commanded with a thought.

Boom boom boom!

The soul beasts self-detonated, the terrifying power of the detonation shocking Fang Leng and Fang Yun.

The air wave that rose from the explosion, formed into a shock wave which spread in all directions.

Dust clouds rose everywhere in the desert, the dark clouds in the sky billowed outwards.

Fang Yuan had intended to use wisdom path methods to capture Old Ghost Bai Jun.

But soon after, he thought about the fact that the wisdom path method originated from Purple Mountain True Monarch. The ignited thought flying rock he had used earlier could be hidden. After Fang Yuan had modified this move, its effect had changed a lot. But if he used other wisdom path methods, it was very likely to be found out by others.

So Fang Yuan gave up wisdom path and used soul path.

His soul path methods were slightly inferior to wisdom path. After all, he only had a few soul path Immortal Gu.

But among them was a soul explosion method, which was an action of mutual destruction and had terrifying might.

Back when Qin Bai Sheng had first fought Feng Jiu Ge, Qin Bai Sheng had yet to recover his original memories and was not Feng Jiu Ge’s match. But Feng Jiu Ge was wary of his soul explosion method and did not deal any fatal blows, letting Qin Bai Sheng go.

Even Feng Jiu Ge was wary of soul explosion, Fang Yuan naturally had to grasp this method.

But he would not explode his own soul, at most it would only be for burning soul bursting luck. However, he could use soul beasts, these soul beasts’ soul explosions was a little impure and even their soul cores would be destroyed, but the resulting power was truly impressive.

“Cough cough!”

Dust clouds dissipated, Old Ghost Bai Jun was floating in the air; the greater part of his body was gone, his limbs were destroyed with only his left arm remaining, and he looked like he was at the end of his life.

“He is still alive?” Fang Leng exclaimed in surprise.

Fang Yuan sneered, it was good he was alive, he could be captured and his body could be given to Ying Wu Xie.

“But, I can’t do that in front of the Fang clan Gu Immortals.” All kinds of thoughts jumped around in Fang Yuan’s mind. The sovereign immortal body had ample aid to the mind to begin with, now that Fang Yuan had both wisdom path attainment and methods, any issue was clearly and properly analyzed.

Fang Yuan said: “You have some skills in soul cultivation. You are still alive after falling into my trap. Forget it. I, Suan Bu Jin, have a rule, that is to not take things too far and always leave room for peace, since you are still alive, then go. I won’t make a move today, now scram.”

Old Ghost Bai Jun was panting and his face was pale, he fiercely stared at Fang Yuan.

He had regretted it the moment the soul beasts appeared and surrounded him.

The enemy clearly emitted wisdom path aura, why did he think of playing tricks with such a person? Even if he wanted to plot, he should have planned carefully.

The soul beasts’ self-detonation was out of his expectations.

At that instant, Old Ghost Bai Jun’s mind was completely blank, with just one thought, that was to defend and preserve his life.

After the explosion, Old Ghost Bai Jun did not even think of the intense pain and only felt extreme joy at being alive.

But after the joy came fear and anger.

He had almost died!

His chest was filled with the fire of this anger, as well as fear towards Fang Yuan’s schemes and methods.

“Either you die or I die!” With such a thought, Old Ghost Bai Jun was just about to use rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token, but Fang Yuan actually let him go.

According to Fang Yuan’s nature, he would always wipe out and eradicate the nine generations of his enemies, but today’s situation was somewhat special, Fang Yuan was trying to obtain Old Ghost Bai Jun’s body and was also mindful of Fang clan, so he chose to let Old Ghost Bai Jun go for the moment.

Old Ghost Bai Jun had been afraid and furious, feeling that he only had a chance of survival if he fought to the end, but he had never expected Fang Yuan to actually spare him!

Old Ghost Bai Jun was immediately confused.

“Is he deceiving me to lower my fighting spirit and make me let go of my vigilance?” Old Ghost Bai Jun had been tricked by Fang Yuan once, so he doubted everything now.

Fang Yuan looked at his expression and knew what he was thinking: “You are still here! I already gave you a chance, are you really looking for your death? Hmph.”

Old Ghost Bai Jun forgot his rage, he just stared at Fang Yuan.

At the side, Fang Leng and Fang Yun who were collapsed on the back of the soul beast were also looking at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was standing tall like a spear on the back of the soul beast, his hands were clasped behind his back, and his gaze was like cold lightning that arrogantly looked down on the world. He showed absolute confidence that even if he let his enemy go, he would not be afraid of the troubles the enemy might bring him!

Fang Leng lowered his eyes and thought: “This person is full of demonic aura, he is confident and arrogant, but has a bottom line and principle. So he is this kind of person, only such a person could take the initiative to expose his intention of saving us.”

Fang Yun, however, was watching with a stupefied expression.

Old Ghost Bai Jun slowly narrowed his eyes which flickered with a gloomy light.

Although his injuries were severe, most of his strength still remained, especially when he still had a huge trump card remaining – rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token!

But there was a huge price to pay to activate this Gu, Old Ghost Bai Jun did not want to use it lightly. Just now, he wanted to activate it disregarding the costs to have a chance at survival, but Fang Yuan instead let him go.

“No matter if he is truly letting me go, I need to try to escape first and see what he will do.”

“If he is just pretending, I will just turn back and stake my life against him. If he is truly letting me go, then I will just escape!”

Old Ghost Bai Jun was extremely wary towards Fang Yuan.

Even if he activated the rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token, Old Ghost Bai Jun did not have confidence to win against Fang Yuan. And it was also because he had another concern — what if he revealed he had a rank eight Immortal Gu, making Fang Yuan change his mind and attack him to seize the Gu?

All kinds of thoughts lingered in Old Ghost Bai Jun’s mind, before he scoffed and left.

He was quite fast, his broken body was like a loose arrow that quickly flew into the dark clouds and disappeared from the immortals’ sights.

“Benefactor, you are truly letting him go? He has a rank eight Immortal Gu!” Fang Yun was dazed for a while before crying out in shock.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1507: Qing Clan’s Inheritance

“Oh? There was such a thing. Looks like he had a fortuitous encounter. But since I already said it, I will let him go, do you want me to go against my own words?” Fang Yuan’s expression changed slightly as he looked at Fang Yun and Fang Leng with a sharp and cold gaze.

Fang Yun and Fang Leng looked at each other, feeling Fang Yuan’s sharp gaze piercing into their hearts. He quickly looked away, not daring to meet Fang Yuan’s gaze.

At the same time, he exclaimed inwardly: “This benefactor is so domineering, he is really not easy to interact with.”

On the contrary, Fang Leng’s mind calmed: “Good, this person is a man of his word, even with such a huge temptation like a rank eight Immortal Gu in front of him, he still stands by his words, he can be said to be extremely conceited. But only like this can the two of us have a chance of survival.”

Thinking of this, Fang Leng struggled to get up: “I am Fang Leng and this is my junior brother Fang Yun, we thank senior for saving us.”

“Mm.” Fang Yuan lightly nodded, before suddenly stretching out his hands.

A formless force burst out, sucking both Fang Leng and Fang Yun to Fang Yuan’s hands.

Fang Leng’s heart jumped but he restrained himself, while Fang Yun cried out in shock and panic.

But shortly, when the two saw that Fang Yuan was getting rid of their shackles, they put their minds at ease.

To Fang Yuan, Old Ghost Bai Jun’s methods were not anything novel. He soon saw through it completely, then started removing it.

A move that could bind Fang Yun and Fang Leng was naturally an immortal method, but Fang Yuan had a killer move like ‘purple thought perception starlight’ and was able to easily get rid of it.

Fang Leng and Fang Yun soon regained their freedom.

The two gave thanks once again, but their minds were fluctuating as they thought: “This person is so domineering, although he saved us, he never asked us our opinions and immediately made a move.”

They could hardly imagine this was all done intentionally by Fang Yuan. He succeeded in ingraining a self-conceited and domineering image in these two Fang clan Gu Immortals’ minds.

“You can address me as Suan Bu Jin.” Fang Yuan said, introducing himself.

But with his second sentence, Fang Yuan drove them off: “I mainly cultivate wisdom path, and have inherited Zheng Jing Shen’s inheritance which is why I saved you two. You can leave now.”

“Ah?” Fang Yun was dazed.

“Junior shall deeply remember senior’s kindness, and will report it to the clan. Senior, will you remain in green ghost desert?” Fang Leng pulled Fang Yun’s sleeve, then respectfully inquired.

“I have a use for these soul beasts, I saved you two not for any benefits, go now.” Fang Yuan waved his hand coldly, his gaze revealing a trace of impatience.

Fang Leng and Fang Yun did not dare to disturb him again. Both bowed in respect before flying away.

After a while, the two had disappeared over the horizon.

“I did not expect Old Ghost Bai Jun to have a rank eight Immortal Gu. I wonder what Gu it is, how did those two Fang clan Gu Immortals know of it, did Old Ghost Bai Jun use the Gu in front of them?” Fang Yuan pondered.

Old Ghost Bai Jun only had rank seven cultivation but could use rank eight Immortal Gu, this signified he had some special method, or this rank eight Immortal Gu was a top-tier Gu like attitude Gu.

Regardless of the reason, Fang Yuan was moved.

“But...”

“There is no hurry to find trouble with Old Ghost Bai Jun.”

Fang Yuan slightly drooped his eyebrows as he had a sensation in his mind which showed Old Ghost Bai Jun’s location.

With his cautious nature, Fang Yuan had already planted an investigative method on Old Ghost Bai Jun the moment he made a move. Although Fang Yuan let Old Ghost Bai Jun go, he actually had a firm grasp on the latter’s whereabouts.

In the past, Fang Yuan did not have such methods. But recently, he had whole-heartedly immersed himself in cultivation, he had a lot more methods than before.

“Senior brother, do you think that benefactor knew Old Ghost Bai Jun had a rank eight Immortal Gu, so he wanted to save us quickly before going after Old Ghost Bai Jun?” While flying, Fang Yun suddenly asked.

Fang Leng thought for a moment before shaking his head: “With my understanding of Senior Suan Bu Jin, that should not be the case.”

Fang Yun could not hold back his laughter: “From your words, you sound like you are familiar with senior. Aren’t you the same as me, meeting senior for the first time before being driven away?”

Fang Leng glanced at Fang Yun: “The rank eight Immortal Gu is indeed a huge matter, but this senior is extremely proud and aloof by nature. I am probably not wrong in this. Furthermore, we did not specifically inform him of what that rank eight Immortal Gu was. If senior truly wanted to go capture Old Ghost Bai

Jun, wouldn’t he have asked us about what this rank eight Immortal Gu is and what its ability is?”

Fang Yun smacked his forehead: “Your analysis makes sense, looks like senior really is not going to hunt Old Ghost Bai Jun. Sigh! That Old Ghost Bai Jun tormented us so badly, I was hoping senior would put him in his place.”

Fang Leng shook his head: “That rank eight Immortal Gu soul beast token can command soul beasts. If senior led his soul beast army to fight, he would probably suffer huge losses. We should first return and inform the clan, let the other supreme elders decide.”

Green ghost desert was near Fang clan’s territory. After flying for a while, Fang Yun and Fang Leng arrived before an immortal formation.

Using this immortal formation, they teleported a long distance, arriving directly at the clan’s headquarters.

Fang Yun and Fang Leng bade farewell. Fang Leng went to report to first supreme elder, while Fang Yun went to report this to second supreme elder Fang Di Chang.

Fang clan’s affairs were basically decided by first supreme elder and second supreme elder.

After hearing of this matter, the two elders first placated Fang Leng and Fang Yun, before meeting to discuss this matter.

Second supreme elder asked: “Does first supreme elder know of Zheng Jing Shen?”

First supreme elder slightly nodded: “This person was a legendary lone cultivator tens of thousands of years ago, and had quite some relation with our Fang clan. In his earlier years of cultivation, he had received financial support from our clan, and he even had a love affair with a clan ancestor. Unfortunately, the ancestor died in a battle and Zheng Jing Shen did not join Fang clan.”

Second supreme elder immediately came to a realization.

Although super forces paid heavy importance to familial relations and bloodline, they would often take in new blood. Especially if they discover some Gu Immortal seeds, these super forces would often support these seeds with resources.

If these people truly became Gu Immortals, the super force would then recruit them as their members.

Naturally, such situations were rare.

On one hand, they were only giving casual support in the first place as the probability of a mortal becoming an immortal was tiny.

On the other hand, even if they became a Gu Immortal, most of them were geniuses and elites with their own plans, they might not be willing to join a super force.

But even if these people did not want to join, the kindness of the past was enough to build a close relationship.

Just by being able to draw lone immortals to their side, all the previous investment the super force made would be worth it.

Zheng Jing Shen was a remarkable example of this, if not for the accident, he would have joined Fang clan.

Naturally, he would have to marry into Fang clan.

His children would also be surnamed Fang.

“Zheng Jing Shen’s matter is rather concealed, many are not even aware of him. This Suan Bu Jin is probably not lying.” First supreme elder added.

Second supreme elder slightly frowned: “Nothing can be said before the matter is verified. There is also the possibility of him teaming up with Old Ghost Bai Jun.”

First supreme elder’s gaze turned heavy: “If that is truly the case, then Suan Bu Jin probably collaborated with Old Ghost Bai Jun to get close to my Fang clan for Qing clan’s legacy.”

Fang Yuan of course had his scheme by intentionally showing goodwill and saving the two Fang clan Gu Immortals.

But in the discussion between the two Fang clan supreme elders, they had instead grouped him together with Old Ghost Bai Jun and even mentioned Qing clan.

This Qing clan was also a super force, but a long exterminated one.

The one who slaughtered the entire Qing clan was none other than the young Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Before Spectral Soul Demon Venerable became a venerable, because of a certain irreconcilable conflict, he fought against the entirety of Qing clan alone.

If Qing clan had known Spectral Soul would become a venerable in the future, they would definitely not dare to go against such a person. Unfortunately, Qing clan belittled Spectral Soul because of their superiority in numbers and assets.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable grew up step by step, fighting again and again, getting stronger the more he battled. In the end, he arrived at Qing clan’s headquarters and fought an intense battle, slaughtering the entirety of Qing clan. Many Qing clan Gu Immortals perished in the battle. The dao marks of Spectral Soul’s killer moves, the Gu Immortals’ corpses, and the dao marks from the destruction of immortal apertures were all engraved on the battlefield which became the current green ghost desert.

It was called ‘green1 ghost’, because it referenced ‘Qing clan’, the former super force.

Although Qing clan was exterminated, it was rumored that Qing clan’s first supreme elder, before his death, sealed all the clan resources and buried them in a certain location in green ghost desert, leaving behind an inheritance.

There was only one condition to inherit this inheritance, it was that the inheritor must take revenge for Qing clan by killing Spectral Soul! If Spectral Soul was already dead, then the target of revenge moved to Spectral Soul’s family, friends, and disciples.

Regretfully, Spectral Soul became a Demon Venerable, the whole world was not his opponent, and that era groveled at his feet. Qing clan’s inheritance became a joke.

Fang clan was the nearest super force to green ghost desert, and thus was much more informed. When Qing clan was exterminated, Fang clan’s ancestors began to actively search for the clues to Qing clan’s inheritance.

After generations of effort, the fragmented clues were pieced together, becoming increasingly valuable.

Now, in this generation, the clues were already completed, and with a vague responsive method, the clan had begun searching green ghost desert.

First supreme elder sighed: “We don’t have enough strength to control green ghost desert, not to mention that we have no methods to restrict soul beasts, the number of Gu Immortals we can mobilize is also few. If not for this, we would have no need to let Fang Leng and Fang Yun take the risk. Who could have expected their adventure would involve people like Old Ghost Bai Jun and Suan Bu Jin.”

“I have heard of Old Ghost Bai Jun, and he actually has the rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token! And that Suan Bu Jin’s appearance is too sudden, his origin is covered in mystery and he has powerful methods. Regardless of what the relationship of these two is, they are obstacles that our Fang clan needs to go through to search for Qing clan’s inheritance.”

Second supreme elder nodded.

Fang clan had many assets and networks, their Gu Immortals needed to defend the territories. But Qing clan’s inheritance was tempting, especially when the clues mentioned that Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace, which was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable and left in Western Desert! Its value was extremely high and left behind a heavy mark in history.

Fang clan was famous for its Gu houses, Divine Bean Palace had a high importance to them. Their resolve to explore Qing clan’s inheritance and obtain Divine Bean Palace was not a matter of a generation or two, but was carried by generations after generations!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1508: Divine Bean Palace

Green ghost desert.

A battered figure was flying past the surface of the desert.

“Suan Bu Jin! You actually did not chase me, such arrogance! Hmph, I will settle this debt with you sooner or later!!” Old Ghost Bai Jun’s expression was distorted and furious as he thought of Fang Yuan.

Three of his limbs had been destroyed in the soul explosion, but they were already recovered now.

It was clear that Old Ghost Bai Jun had powerful healing methods.

Suddenly, his body shook as he coughed out a mouthful of blood.

Old Ghost Bai Jun’s face was once again filled with hatred, as he said through clenched teeth: “My soul beasts, it was not easy to gather them, but now they have all been killed. Damn it! The loss this time is too huge, more importantly, the timing is delayed now, what will I do if master blames me?”

At the thought of his master, Old Ghost Bai Jun’s body shook involuntarily as fear and panic surged in his heart.

“No, I did not handle the matters properly this time, I will definitely be severely punished by master. What to do? No, I can’t let master know. I better conceal this and report after I accumulate another group of soul beasts.”

“Sigh, although I am tight on time, as long as I disregard the costs and activate soul beast token, what soul beasts can’t I enslave?”

Just as he was thinking this, a female figure suddenly appeared in front of Old Ghost Bai Jun.

“It is you, Eagle Concubine! Why are you here?” Old Ghost Bai Jun immediately panicked when he saw this person.

Eagle Concubine was dressed in a tight black clothing, perfectly displaying her seductive figure. Her face was pale white, as if she had never seen sunlight, not only was there no rosiness, her eyes even shone with a gloomy light.

She sneered: “Old geezer, you still don’t understand why I came? You have spoiled master’s plan, returning in defeat, master has specially ordered me to bring you back for questioning!”

“What?!” Old Ghost Bai Jun trembled, shock and fear clouding his face.

Sweat dripped down his forehead: “How did master know?”

Eagle Concubine sneered: “You think master handed you a rank eight Immortal Gu without any monitoring means? You are really underestimating master.”

“How could I dare to underestimate master! Hmph, Eagle Concubine, don’t try to drive a wedge between us!” Old Ghost Bai Jun shouted furiously, “Yes, I admit I didn’t handle things properly this time and caused a setback to master’s plan. But I will make up for it, there is still time, I can definitely give master a satisfying answer.”

Eagle Concubine shook her head: “You still want to make up for your mistake? Hmph, you already have no opportunity. You think I am deceiving you? It was truly master who ordered me to take you back.”

“Master personally gave the command?” Old Ghost Bai Jun was deathly pale, as he cautiously asked with a trace of hope.

Eagle Concubine nodded: “You can forget about it, how could I deceive you in this matter? Let’s go, don’t make me take action, you know master’s divine might, just return with me obediently.”

“Okay, I will return with you.” Old Ghost Bai Jun gave a sad smile as he became dispirited. He did not have any thoughts of rebelling against his master.

The two immortals set off, and after traveling an immense distance, they entered a quicksand pit.

After entering the sandpit, they continued to move down for close to a thousand li before they entered a mysterious space filled with green lights.

The two immortals used their methods familiarly, the green lights immediately changed and a golden staircase appeared from the lights.

In the green lights, the two could not fly, and had to move up the stairs step by step.

After walking nine thousand nine hundred and ninety nine steps, the two arrived in front of a palace door.

This palace was lofty like a mountain, liveliness mixed in its solemnity, its green bricks and golden tiles emitted dense fragrance of plants and trees.

And carved on the plaque on the palace door were three large words – Divine Bean Palace!

It was the Immortal Gu House of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable that Fang clan had been conspiring to obtain for generations after generations!

The two immortals did not dare to open the door, instead kneeling on the ground, kowtowing with incomparable respect.

The palace door slowly started opening, revealing an extremely spacious hall.

There were dozens of large pillars in the hall, they were thick and sturdy, glittering with bronze radiance.

An enormous soul beast was lying inside the hall, it had a tortoise shell, four tiger paws, dragon tail, snake neck, and a human head.

Seeing this monster, the two Gu Immortals hurriedly bowed and paid respects: “Bai Jun (Eagle Concubine) greets master.”

Eagle Concubine was very respectful, while Old Ghost Bai Jun’s face was dripping with sweat as his body shook in fear.

That soul beast with disheveled hair had a ferocious expression as it let out an angry howl while staring at Old Ghost Bai Jun.

Old Ghost Bai Jun had never seen his master so furious, he plopped down to the ground and shouted: “Master, please spare me, please spare me!”

But the soul beast paid no heed to his plea, it raised its huge right paw and suddenly grabbed Old Ghost Bai Jun.

Old Ghost Bai Jun’s expression distorted from fright: “Master, master, please listen to me, soul beast token Immortal Gu is still with me, I did not lose it. This failure was my mistake, but please give this servant a chance to redeem himself!!”

“This smell, it is him! Right, it is him!!” The soul beast sensed with closed eyes, before suddenly opening its bloodshot eyes.

That long snake neck was stretched out like a pillar due to anger, the scales on it were emitting cold-eerie light.

The hall rang with the soul beast’s shout.

Eagle Concubine’s face turned pale as she keenly sensed the anger and hatred contained within this shout.

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable... the enemy who eliminated my clan, I finally have caught you. Although you are dead, there is no mistake with this scent, it is your inheritor or descendant. Hehehe, hahaha!” The soul beast began to laugh madly.

The crazed laughter shook the air, forming airwaves that struck the hall repeatedly.

Eagle Concubine had to retreat repeatedly, this laughter shook her very soul.

Old Ghost Bai Jun, who was held by the tiger claws, was even more shocked, his eyes rolling up. But he could already sense that his master did not bring him back to punish him, it was because of that Suan Bu Jin, who seemed to have a connection to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

Suddenly, the whole of Divine Bean Palace erupted with glaring rays of green light.

The green rays pierced through the soul beast’s body like countless sharp arrows.

The soul beast’s crazed laughter stopped abruptly, as it gave a muffled groan: “This damned Divine Bean Palace!!”

It roared in agitation, and was about to go berserk.

Old Ghost Bai Jun was afraid he would be crushed to death in a moment of carelessness, he quickly shouted: “Master, please calm your raging anger. Please take good care of yourself, taking care of your body is most important!”

The soul beast was persuaded, gradually calming down and mumbled: “Your words are correct, I need to take care of my body. I am going to kill all the inheritors and descendants of Spectral Soul, to take revenge for the hatred from back then!”

At the same time, Heavenly Court.

Countless halls shone with dazzling white light.

Suddenly, green aurora lights shone in the pure white sky.

The aurora lights lasted for a moment before gradually dissipating.

“Heavenly Court’s atmospheric changes are never a small matter, this seems to involve Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable.” Fairy Zi Wei was in Heavenly Court, she quickly made deductions when she saw this unusual phenomenon.

After a while, she opened her eyes which had a trace of joy: “So it was Divine Bean Palace, which was put in Western Desert by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable. This Divine Bean Palace is a rank eight Immortal Gu House and has outstanding might. It is about to appear in the world, we can’t let it fall into Western Desert’s hands.”

Fairy Zi Wei slowly closed her eyelids and continued to deduce.

After obtaining the results, she called a Gu Immortal of Central Continent.

This rank eight Gu Immortal was dressed in a green robe, emitting an aura of a scholar. From his appearance, he looked young, but his eyes were deep and wise, he was already some thousands of years old.

“Chen Yi, you are the first supreme elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect, Divine Bean Palace is making an appearance in Western Desert, follow my plan and go subdue it.” Fairy Zi Wei instructed.

“Okay.” Chen Yi bowed slightly with no changes in his expression.

Fairy Zi Wei nodded: “Do this and you can resign from your position to enter Heavenly Court.”

Chen Yi was slightly moved, revealing a trace of joy. He once again bowed, and said in a clear voice: “Then, I shall thank Lady Zi Wei.”

Several days later, Western Desert.

Fang Yuan’s soul left his body.

He moved the soul and grasped a handful of sand!

“From phantom to solid, interfering with the material world, haha, I have finally reached hundred million man soul!” Fang Yuan was inwardly jubilant.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1509: Third Entry to Thieving Heaven’s dream realm

Fang Yuan sighed, he had finally reached hundred million man soul after several setbacks.

“Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley are indeed the sacred lands of soul cultivation, and adding in the world’s top soul cultivation techniques written in Spectral Soul true inheritance, my soul foundation has soared rapidly.”

“But... I am only at one hundred million man soul, I will need to continue to accumulate further, two hundred million, three hundred million, four hundred million... until nine hundred million.”

After nine hundred million was not one billion, but was a breakthrough to desolate soul. After attaining desolate soul, Fang Yuan’s soul would have the strength of a desolate level soul beast.

Although Fang Yuan’s current strength could easily play around with desolate beasts, being able to fight them with just his soul would be a qualitative transformation!

After all, a human’s soul was inherently weaker than other lifeforms. Being able to make up for this weakness afterwards and even surpass them, that showed the power of Spectral Soul’s true inheritance.

Fang Yuan did not return after getting one hundred million man soul, but continued to stay to capture soul beasts.

After knowing Old Ghost Bai Jun and Fang clan, Fang Yuan no longer intended to find an immemorial soul beast. He was not afraid of such an existence, but if it really came to a fight, not only would his soul beast army suffer huge losses, his main methods would also emerge.

Once his trump card killer moves like reverse flow protection seal and myriad dragon were exposed, it would mean Fang Yuan’s identity would also be revealed.

There were many immemorial soul beasts in green ghost desert. But under the lead of spontaneous auspicious cloud, Fang Yuan did not encounter any of them.

“Of course it is not only because of spontaneous auspicious cloud, but also because my own luck is being maintained in a powerful state. So my recent endeavors have all been smooth sailing, somewhat like getting everything I want.” Fang Yuan was aware of the reason.

Fang Yuan continued to stay in green ghost desert, he did not even have to make a move and could just make his soul beast army fight.

If he encountered soul beasts, he would command his soul beast army to charge at them, he would take out the soul cores of the dead ones, while adding in the remaining captives to replenish any losses.

Besides, Fang Yuan did not have to spend anything to control the soul beasts other than mental energy and immortal essence. And it also had an extremely high return.

When Gu Immortals did things, they would consider investment and returns. Fang Yuan was deeply aware of this, and would always take advantage of it.

This method of hunting soul beasts could exert his abilities to the limit, he could optimize his gains.

Like this, dozens of days passed, Fang Yuan’s soul foundation had increased to two hundred million! His soul was even more solid and lifelike, his four limbs became even tougher, much superior to the previous one hundred million man soul.

In this period, whether it be Fang clan, Old Ghost Bai Jun, or immemorial soul beasts, none appeared.

Fang Yuan went through this period peacefully.

Speaking of Old Ghost Bai Jun, Fang Yuan wanted to seize his rank eight Immortal Gu. But when he used his wisdom path methods to deduce, he found that it still was not the time for it, and there were even a lot of risks in trying to do so now. Furthermore, with Fang clan staying at the side, Fang Yuan did not make a move, even though he knew Old Ghost Bai Jun’s location.

“Two hundred million man soul should be enough to explore the third stage of Thieving Heaven’s dream realm, right?” Fang Yuan was impatient to return.

He stored the soul beast army in his sovereign immortal aperture, and concealed his tracks before quietly leaving green ghost desert.

After spending some time hurrying back, he arrived in front of Thieving Heaven’s dream realm once again.

Tang Fang Ming quickly came to welcome him.

His gaze towards Fang Yuan was filled with respect.

Over the period when Fang Yuan left, he had made great progress in exploring the dream realm because of Fang Yuan’s guidance, gaining huge harvests.

After greeting Tang Fang Ming, Fang Yuan followed the previous arrangements, he let out the Shadow Sect immortals to control the immortal formation, before entering Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.

The surroundings suddenly changed.

An oasis in the desert.

Fang Yuan was once again an observer.

“It is this place, it is this place!” Sha Xiao’s voice was trembling from excitement.

In the previous two stages: Thieving Heaven was banished by the clan, encountered Sha Xiao, refined rank two sneak attack Gu, became the champion of the small competition, and came to the clan's important area, which was the pool in the center of the oasis to choose Gu worms as the reward for winning the competition.

Sha Xiao naturally had arranged investigative methods on young Thieving Heaven's body, right now, he sensed an inexplicable aura from near the pool and knew he had found the place.

However, Young Thieving Heaven's heart sank, Sha Xiao getting his wish was not something he wanted to see.

"Quick, throw that sheepskin map into the pool!" Sha Xiao commanded Young Thieving Heaven with a clear impatience.

Young Thieving Heaven was extremely doubtful: "Didn't you take my sheepskin map? How would I have it?"

Sha Xiao laughed darkly: "I have already made all the preparations, I have stitched that sheepskin map in your clothes. My good grandson, you only need to take off that piece of clothing and throw it to the pool!"

Young Thieving Heaven's heart sank further, as he thought inwardly: "This Sha Xiao is a scheming demon, he definitely has a huge plot in throwing that mysterious sheepskin map to the pool. How can I do a thing like helping him commit a crime? Although the clan banished me before, they have after all shown me kindness by raising me for many years. I cannot repay this kindness with ill-intent!"

"Quick, grandson, throw that clothing into the pool." Sha Xiao shouted: "Don't forget that my method is still marked in your body, if you don't do it, I will make sure you die a painful death."

Young Thieving Heaven's pupils immediately shrunk at the threat of death.

He thought of his family and returning home, falling into deep hesitation.

If he did not follow Sha Xiao's words now, he probably was going to truly die. His wish of returning home and reuniting with his family would just become wild wishes.

"Do I give up my moral conduct to return home? No, I can't do this. Sha Xiao might be incomparably strong, but I still have hope, I will fight to the end and will never lower my head to evil! I won't let down my, Ben Jie Sun's, name!"

Young Thieving Heaven's eyes shined brightly.

"Grandpa, this timing might not be suitable. I have yet to choose the Gu, the clan's Gu Masters are observing me from the side. If I rashly throw my clothes into the pool, it will be intercepted by the guards before it can even land in the pool. This pool is our clan's most important water source after all." Young Thieving Heaven inwardly said to Sha Xiao.

Sha Xiao was stunned for a moment, before slowly speaking: "I was impatient grandson, you are right. But you must find an opportunity when others are unaware and finish this task. If you cannot accomplish it, you can go die! If you can complete it, hehe, grandpa will give you unimaginable benefits!"

Sha Xiao threatened as well as enticed, young Thieving Heaven quickly agreed but was not even a little moved inwardly.

The clan’s Gu Masters led young Thieving Heaven to the underground cavern: “You are the winner of the competition, go choose your Gu. Remember, you only have fifteen minutes.”

Young Thieving Heaven thanked them and walked into the cavern. There were countless square holes in the walls.

The square holes were of all sizes, most of them containing Gu worms.

These rank one Gu worms were of all kinds and shapes, dazzling young Thieving Heaven.

He inwardly exclaimed: “Although I heard there were countless Gu worms in the world, now that I am personally seeing the storage of the clan, I am truly sensing how magical this world is!”

“Eh? There is a door there?”

Young Thieving Heaven pushed open the small door and entered another underground cavern.

This small cavern’s size was only about one-third of the previous cavern. There were similar square holes carved in the walls, but the Gu worms in the holes were rank two.

Young Thieving Heaven sighed in his mind as he looked at the Gu worms: “Oh! I have no one to guide me, I simply don’t know what Gu worm is better and suits me. Also, that demon Sha Xiao is plotting a huge scheme, what should I do? Ask for help from the clan?”

Young Thieving Heaven shook his head repeatedly in worry.

Sha Xiao had investigative methods which could sense matters around young Thieving Heaven, the moment young Thieving Heaven revealed the secret, he would immediately be killed by Sha Xiao.

“Hmm?” Young Thieving Heaven’s expression suddenly changed into that of surprise.

Then, like the person had changed, he began to move around his arms and legs, adapting to the body.

“I am once again in control of young Thieving Heaven’s body, but I have some leisure time now unlike the previous urgent situations.” Fang Yuan was once again in charge of young Thieving Heaven’s actions.

“So I have to resolve young Thieving Heaven’s issue again?” Fang Yuan mumbled.

“How to deal with Sha Xiao? From my conjecture, this demon’s cultivation is at least rank four, rank five is also very likely.” Fang Yuan scanned his surroundings, looking at the large numbers of Gu worms: “It seems the breakthrough for this difficulty lies in the Gu worms here.”

Young Thieving Heaven did not recognize these Gu worms, but Fang Yuan had broad experience and vast knowledge. He knew almost all of these Gu worms, even if there were some which he did not recognize, he could roughly guess them through various checks.

“Also, even though Sha Xiao has investigative methods, they clearly stopped working when young Thieving Heaven entered the underground cavern.”

“Looks like Sha Xiao’s methods can’t breach the defense of this underground cavern.”

This underground cavern was heavily protected, this was the clan’s important area where Gu worms were stored. If it could be easily inspected, it would definitely attract enemies, and the clan would suffer disastrous losses.

“Sha Xiao does not know what I am doing now. So he wanted young Thieving Heaven to take the risk and finish his matter earlier.”

“Also, even in the outside world, his investigative methods are probably relying on young Thieving Heaven’s senses. As long as I can glean the mysteries of his method, I can deal with it.”

Fang Yuan analyzed in his mind.

This third stage had just begun, he was given a test but it was not actually too difficult.

Even if he failed, he could try it again.

At most, his soul would be injured.

Were it before when his soul foundation only was ten million man soul level, he might be worried this injury would be beyond the limit he could endure.

But now that he had two hundred million man soul, he was confident that no matter how much injury he suffered, his soul could not be directly destroyed.

“But!”

“If I follow the dream realm’s route, it might be safe, but it would be just that.”

“Instead, how about...”

Fang Yuan had a flash of inspiration, he wanted to test his plan and see how much change this dream realm of Thieving Heaven could support!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1510: Fang Yuan Gets Captured

Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.

“The Gu worm has been selected. Now, let me take a look.” Fang Yuan took a deep breath and controlled young Thieving Heaven’s body.

He first activated sneak attack Gu.

Immediately at the activation, a blue baby figure jumped out and pounced towards the front.

In the blink of an eye, the blue baby phantom entered the cavern wall. The whole process was silent as if nothing had happened.

Fang Yuan mentally sighed: “This sneak attack Gu is indeed a top-tier Gu, not only is its power outstanding among rank two, it is silent as well. According to the dream realm, this cavern definitely has defensive methods arranged in it. But sneak attack Gu simply did not touch the defenses. I might as well refine some sneak attack Gu in the future.”

Fang Yuan had relied on the dream realm to create sneak attack Gu. In the outside world, Fang Yuan could create the Gu recipe for every mortal rank after some modifications.

Fang Yuan could use the rank two sneak attack Gu recipe to deduce its rank one to rank five recipes, he could even use the light of wisdom to deduce rank six and rank seven sneak attack Immortal Gu recipes!

Because Fang Yuan’s current theft path attainment level was already as high as quasi-great grandmaster!

After using the sneak attack Gu, Fang Yuan sped up the process, activating the Gu worms which he had chosen in the cavern.

According to the rewards of the competition, the champion could select three rank one Gu, or one rank two Gu.

Fang Yuan had checked all the rank two Gu in the small cavern, although they were quite good, they were not suitable for his use. Fang Yuan then chose three rank one Gu from the large cavern, immediately refining them and combining them into a killer move.

This killer move was activated, immediately forming a giant rhino strength path phantom.

The rhino strength path phantom moved its limbs and directly charged towards the cavern wall.

This part of the cavern walls had already been internally destroyed by sneak attack Gu’s power. Now, as the rhino phantom smashed into it, it immediately collapsed loudly.

Following, large amount of water surged out of the hole.

Although Fang Yuan had been a bystander, he had already observed clearly and found this area of the underground cavern was right next to the oasis pool.

This arrangement made sense.

The pool had a spirit spring, the nearer the storage was to the pool, the denser the primeval energy that could seep into the mud and spread. And to this underground cavern where the clan stored Gu worms, it was greatly beneficial.

There were some disadvantages, but the clan had already arranged defensive methods here, and those that could normally enter here were their own people.

Even young Thieving Heaven was only trusted by the clan because he had lived and grown in the clan for over ten years.

But right now, under Fang Yuan’s control, young Thieving Heaven acted opposite and went mad, directly opening a hole in the wall to finish Sha Xiao’s task.

Water surged in large amounts, a layer of light membrane suddenly shone on the wall, blocking most of the water.

“What happened?”

“Move quickly, something happened!”

Shocked voices came from outside the cavern, the guards immediately rushed in after sensing something wrong.

“What use is it in discovering now?” Fang Yuan sneered, activating sneak attack Gu along with other two Gu to form a killer move.

The rank two killer move covered him with a layer of blue light, increasing his speed sharply.

Fang Yuan moved quickly towards that membrane of light blocking the water, directly passing through it and entering the pool!

This membrane of light had also been in Fang Yuan’s consideration, the clan’s defensive methods were only mortal level in the end, and to a Gu Immortal like Fang Yuan, they were filled with flaws.

As for the incoming fierce current, even though it had huge force, Fang Yuan’s killer move easily opened a way through it.

By the time the two guards entered, they only saw Fang Yuan’s receding figure entering the pool.

“This is a traitor!” One guard shouted furiously with bloodshot eyes: “The clan nurtured and raised you, how could you dare to do this?! Was your conscience eaten by the dogs? Die!”

He immediately attacked.

But the other guard quickly stopped him: “Are you crazy? What would we do if your move kills the Gu worms in the cavern? The important thing is to repair the defense as quickly as possible to reduce the losses. The smaller the losses, the lighter our punishment would be!”

That guard did not want to continue listening to the advice, he shook off his companion’s arm.

“You repair the defenses, I will capture this thief!” He threw behind these words, before passing through the light membrane to chase Fang Yuan.

“An enemy?” Fang Yuan’s heart tensed.

He was extremely vigilant, immediately sensing the guard entering the water.

But even if he sensed the guard, it was of no use.

Young Thieving Heaven was only rank one with a poor aptitude, having limited primeval essence that was almost finished after Fang Yuan repeatedly activated Gu worms.

Thus, even though Fang Yuan was a Gu Immortal, he had nothing to work with against the rank three guard.

“Thief, how dare you do this! Did you do this because you hated the clan for banishing you, or were you ordered by someone?” The chasing guard could speak even in water.

Fang Yuan held his breath and used all his strength to fight.

But in just two-three moves, he was captured by the guard.

The guard was full of hatred towards Fang Yuan, and seeing him still daring to retaliate, he immediately struck Fang Yuan’s chest with his palm.

Fang Yuan’s seven orifices started bleeding, the blood spreading in the pool.

“How could your filthy blood pollute my clan’s spirit spring?” The rank three guard revealed hatred as he activated a Gu worm to collect all the blood.

“Damn it, I just had to run into a water path rank three Gu Master.” Fang Yuan revealed a bitter smile, after being captured, he could not even budge and had to take the palm strike head-on, his soul suffering an unprecedented level of damage.

Fang Yuan endured the pain, after his soul stopped shaking, he carefully inspected it and was astonished.

“So powerful! This one strike cut down my soul foundation by fifty million!”

He thought rapidly, guessing: “There are few water path Gu Masters in Western Desert, was this person specially sent by the dream realm to target me? Fifty million man soul was immediately cut away. If it were anyone else, this one strike might have killed them! Even if it were me previously, with ninety million man soul foundation, over half of my soul would have been destroyed instantly in this situation. And this third stage has just started, the later events definitely look like they will be more problematic!”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan could not help but rejoice that he had stably accumulated until two hundred million man soul before entering Thieving Heaven’s dream realm.

He then continued to speculate: “If I had not rashly charged in and followed the dream realm development, there probably would not have been this kind of attack. But... by doing this, I likely spared myself of many steps in-between. This dream realm change is worth studying.”

Fang Yuan explored the dream realm not only for theft path attainment, but also to accumulate experience and make exploring other dream realms more convenient.

Although the action this time was slightly risky, Fang Yuan had gained a lot.

He might be captured, but a flash of inspiration appeared in his mind, giving him new thoughts: “Wait a moment! This fifty million man soul foundation was not random. Other than soul path Gu Immortals, most other Gu Immortals don’t even have such level of soul foundation. If other paths’ Gu Immortals were to explore this dream realm of Thieving Heaven, what would happen?”

Fang Yuan thought of Tang Fang Ming, more accurately, he thought of the steal dream killer move that Tang Fang Ming created in his first life.

“In my first life, as dream realms continued to be explored, endless numbers of dream path Gu worms as well as dream path killer moves were created to provide targeted help against different dream realms.”

“Thieving Heaven’s dream realm has a huge demand on soul foundation, which absolutely could not be explored before the chaotic era. If an ordinary person were to explore it, they would need to have enough dream path accumulation. The best case would be to create a killer move related to dream and soul which can neutralize the corrosion of the soul in dream realm, or greatly reduce the corrosion!”

This dream realm of Thieving Heaven came from a Gu Immortal Venerable and was so huge, the difficulty of exploring it was extremely high. During the early and middle periods of the five regions chaotic war, it was simply a graveyard for Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan was able to explore it by forcibly facing it with his soul foundation.

The most terrifying thing about this dream realm was the intense corrosion of the soul, but Fang Yuan directly crossed this hurdle with his robust soul foundation.

The spirit spring started burbling in the pool like it was boiling.

“What’s going on?” The rank three guard was moving to the surface while holding Fang Yuan in one hand, when he saw this situation.

“Sure enough, my action greatly reduced the steps, I have already reached the most crucial juncture of the third stage!” Fang Yuan, however, was jubilant, his gaze shined brightly as he looked at the changes in the pool.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1511: Theft Path Great Grandmaster!

The water in the pool burbled, the water temperature also rose rapidly.

“Traitor, what the hell did you do?!” The rank three guard glared and grabbed Fang Yuan’s neck.

Despite feeling an intense pain, it was nothing to Fang Yuan.

He did not even glance at the guard and just concentrated on the water that was going through the change.

“Just like I guessed before, that sheepskin map is definitely an immortal material, it could not be detected as it was processed. But now, it immediately reacted after soaking in this pool water.”

“I had been curious as to why this oasis was so small, but it seems now that it was tampered by someone to form a Gu refinement area.”

In Western Desert, a normal oasis would not be small. All the oasis which could last for long were of large sizes, having at least a lake’s size.

A small oasis with a pool like this was like a meteor in the sky, they would disappear after a short moment, buried under the desert sand.

Young Thieving Heaven’s clan was able to prosper by relying on this oasis, it was clear this oasis had already existed for many years. Even though it had the protection of Gu Masters, mortals could not defend against nature’s power for long, so it was strange for this small oasis to have survived for such a long time.

“Are you going to talk or not? I will kill you if you don’t speak!” The rank three Gu Master was almost spewing fire from his eyes because of anger.

The water temperature continued to rise, already at a level which an ordinary person could barely endure.

The rank three Gu Master held Fang Yuan’s neck and floated to the water surface, then he exerted strength and directly jumped ashore.

“They’re back!”

“This is the traitor?”

“A backstabbing traitor! Speak, who ordered you?”

The clan’s higher-ups were already gathered on the shore, the elders, the clan leader with rank four cultivation, and even the old and retired clan leader was present.

Fang Yuan was completely soaked, he was immediately restrained as soon as he got ashore. He was then repeatedly interrogated, with no strength to resist or struggle.

Fang Yuan only coughed, remaining silent.

“The pool is already boiling, there is red light coming from inside!” At this time, someone cried out in surprise.

The clan’s higher-ups were all nervous, some were even sweating.

This pond contained a spirit spring which produced primeval stones, it was the basis for the clan to survive in the desert. If this was destroyed, it was akin to the destruction of the clan!

Several breaths later, the red light passed through the pool’s surface and soared to the sky, dying the sky above the oasis red. The light could be seen from the surrounding hundred li.

The clan’s higher-ups appeared to be caught by surprise, how could they stop this without even knowing the reason?

The clan leader had a malevolent expression on his face as he was about to interrogate Fang Yuan again, but was suddenly stopped by someone.

It was the old clan leader.

The old clan leader’s legs were gone due to injuries from battles, his upper body floated before Fang Yuan.

He gave a deep sigh and persuaded kindly: “Child, you were likely enticed by someone. If the clan has wronged you before, I will apologize to you. I will agree to whatever compensation you want. This matter before us is not a small thing, it concerns the lives of all our clansmen! Tell us everything you know. If there is an accident, many families will die.”

“Hehe.” Fang Yuan snickered.

He was now outside of the cavern and was no longer hidden, Sha Xiao was definitely aware of this situation.

If he did not speak, the clan’s higher-ups will interrogate him by torture, but there would be some delay. If he spoke, Sha Xiao would probably immediately kill him on the spot.

If young Thieving Heaven died, Fang Yuan's exploration would be a failure.

Taking the lesser of the two evils, Fang Yuan remained silent.

"Damned bastard! How could the clan have produced such a vile spawn like you!!" The clan leader was furious at Fang Yuan's attitude, he immediately kicked him down.

Fang Yuan chuckled coldly: "Yes, kill me! Kill me and you won't know anything!!"

"You!!" The clan leader immediately stiffened.

"Kekeke! My good grandson, grandpa likes this inner nature of yours." Sha Xiao's mad laughter rang in Fang Yuan's ears.

"It can't be helped." At this moment, the old clan leader stopped the current clan leader. He looked at Fang Yuan, his affable look from earlier replaced by a cold and cruel expression: "This kid is unrepentant, use soul search methods on him. Even if his soul gets destroyed, no one will be blamed."

The old man had revealed his true nature.

"Yes!" Immediately, a rank three elder went forward and grabbed Fang Yuan's head, soul searching him with no hesitation.

Intense pain spread, Fang Yuan's pupils shrunk and his whole body started shaking from the pain.

The dream realm started wearing down his soul at an intense rate.

Fang Yuan's soul foundation was directly falling by ten million each time.

He still had one hundred and fifty million man soul left, but it was rapidly decreasing now, one hundred and forty million, one hundred and thirty million, one hundred and twenty million...

In just a few breaths of time, Fang Yuan's soul foundation had actually fallen to ninety million, falling below hundred million man soul level!

Even Fang Yuan involuntarily took in a sharp breath at this.

This dream realm's might was too savage, it was fortunate he had a robust foundation. Were it others, including ordinary rank eight existences, they would probably be in danger of dying by now!

After falling to ninety million man soul, the dream realm's corrosion stopped abruptly.

This was because there was another change in the pool, the glaring red light shot out, completely evaporating the water in the pool. The enormous red light turned into a pillar of light that charged towards the skies.

The sky suddenly turned dark as dark clouds appeared above.

The earth shook like a behemoth that had woken up underground.

"Heaven qi is surging, earth qi is rising, this is the phenomenon of an Immortal Gu's creation. I wonder who arranged this, this is definitely not a small matter." Fang Yuan was also surprised.

Other mortal Gu Masters were even more shocked and terrified, even forgetting about young Thieving Heaven.

The old were still the most experienced, the old clan leader immediately said in a decisive voice: “Retreat! Don’t bring anything, just save your lives!”

Before even finishing his words, he flew away, even without legs, he escaped quicker than others!

The other Gu Masters gave cries of alarm before quickly running away as well.

Only Fang Yuan remained behind in the pool.

Soon, Fang Yuan lost his control and turned into an observer once again.

Young Thieving Heaven slumped down on the ground in fright, crying tears of regret.

“What did I do?”

“What in the world did I do?!”

“How could I do such a thing! I am worse than a beast!!”

Slap slap slap.

Young Thieving Heaven slapped himself.

“How could I be this kind of person! Sob sob...” His cheeks were red and swollen. Looking at his similarly red hands, he began to cry.

Rumble!

Thunder crackled, the red light suddenly flashed intensely

In an instant, the enchanting red light covered several thousands of li, shining upon the stupefied clansmen as well as the quickly escaping ones.

Then, the red light suddenly retracted, as if thousands of arrows were shot out before flying back to the bows like time was reversed.

Such a bizarre scene caused young Thieving Heaven to stare, dumbfounded.

“This is...”

“How could this be?!”

In the blink of an eye, the red light’s changes finished. However, the people who the light had contacted, be it mortals or Gu Masters, found to their horror that they had turned extremely old.

Then they took one last breath before all of them fell to the ground, dead.

Young Thieving Heaven was no exception, he had turned from a young boy to an old man with wrinkled face and grizzled hair.

“I should die, all my troubles will end once I am dead!” Young Thieving Heaven closed his eyes and waited for death, but Sha Xiao’s voice resounded in his ears.

“Hahaha, you want to die? You are the owner of steal life Immortal Gu, how could you die?”

“Demon, what do you mean?”

Young Thieving Heaven shouted in his mind, just at this time, the red light concentrated into a lump of essence, turning into a scarlet bee that flew before him.

Young Thieving Heaven immediately sensed a close feeling, he and this bee had the most intimate connection!

He involuntarily extended his palm, and when the bee entered his hand, his extracted lifespan returned to his body.

Young Thieving Heaven turned young once again!

Sha Xiao laughed sinisterly: “My good grandson, this rank six Immortal Gu is grandpa’s gift to you. Take it and roam the world. This world is big while you are too insignificant. If you truly want to return home, make use of this opportunity well!”

“Immortal Gu?! Who are you? What are you trying to do?” Young Thieving Heaven did not feel any joy of obtaining an Immortal Gu, instead cold sweat soaked his body.

Sha Xiao’s voice, however, gradually turned faint: “When the time is ripe, you will know...”

At this point, the third stage of the dream realm concluded.

Fang Yuan returned to reality, his soul returning to his body.

He carefully inspected, and as expected, he became a theft path great grandmaster!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1512: Fallen Flower Hall

“Theft path great grandmaster attainment level...” Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, having a complex expression.

The day had finally arrived, his attainment level finally reached great grandmaster. To think that it was neither blood path, strength path, wisdom path, nor time path, but theft path instead.

Fang Yuan’s theft path attainment level was originally empty like a piece of blank paper. But because of Thieving Heaven’s dream realm, it rose all the way to become his number one path in attainment level.

Evidently, dream realms were able to make Gu Masters and Gu Immortals gain foundation rapidly.

This was also the cause of the five regions chaotic war.

Because too many people explored dream realms and gained attainment levels, they had a much greater urge for cultivation resources and status, their desires rose dramatically.

Of course, dream realms were not so easy to explore.

Even though Fang Yuan had great gains, he paid a huge price to get here, even some rank eight Gu Immortals could not bear such a cost.

Great grandmaster attainment level!

This was the limit that Fang Yuan could reach, and it was also the limit of the five regions.

Fang Yuan who has such an attainment level would be extremely familiar with all of the theft path profundities in the world, even if he was misled by external influences, he could easily understand tough questions with some thinking.

But beyond theft path great grandmaster was supreme grandmaster.

This was difficult, it meant that Fang Yuan would need to surpass Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s achievements!

Thinking of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, Fang Yuan sighed deeply.

Even though the dream realm was illusory, this realistic dream realm showed what had happened in history.

Fang Yuan helped Thieving Heaven many times to allow the dream realm to continue. But Thieving Heaven’s personality was quite a shock to Fang Yuan, way out of his expectations.

What truly happened in history, what was the reason that made young Thieving Heaven a Demon Venerable? Fang Yuan felt that Sha Xiao was the crucial factor.

After reaching theft path great grandmaster attainment level, the rest of Thieving Heaven’s dream realm was useless to Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan did not need to mention this.

“It is a pity.” Fang Yuan said his goodbyes to Tang Fang Ming, having a regretful tone: “Something urgent happened, I need to go and settle it. I will explore Thieving Heaven’s dream realm next time!”

Tang Fang Ming asked earnestly: “I wonder what is the matter, can my Tang clan assist you?”

Tang Fang Ming was not being kindhearted, he was following the agreement between Tang clan and Fang Yuan, if he provided Fang Yuan assistance, he would gain an appropriate reward in return.

Tang Fang Ming had gained a lot from Fang Yuan’s guidance, as a result, he was deeply attracted to it now.

Fang Yuan saw Tang Fang Ming’s attitude, he nodded in his heart. This was what he wanted to see.

As long as Fang Yuan continued to help Tang clan, during the five regions chaotic war, it would grow tremendously and become a huge obstacle that hinders Heavenly Court’s advancements!

“It is fine, I can settle this myself.” Fang Yuan nodded, his reply made Tang Fang Ming very disappointed, his gaze turned downcast.

But soon, Fang Yuan took out an information path mortal Gu and handed it to Tang Fang Ming.

“This, is this?” Tang Fang Ming had a feeling, he excitedly received this information path mortal Gu with both hands.

“Within this Gu worm, there are some shallow insights that I learned in exploring dream realms, I hope it can help you.” Fang Yuan smiled, he started to leave, while Tang Fang Ming sighed in admiration behind him.

Giving is the prerequisite of receiving, this saying would not go wrong.

Plotting against the world, Fang Yuan could only compete with Heavenly Court if he had such magnanimity.

“But... my tactic still cannot match Heavenly Court after all.” After leaving, Fang Yuan looked towards Central Continent’s direction as he sighed.

Heavenly Court was strong not just in strength, but also foresight and strategy.

Having fate Gu, Heavenly Court possessed an immense advantage. Fang Yuan was currently making use of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s plans, it was already very effective, but compared to Heavenly Court, he was at a disadvantage.

As long as fate Gu was repaired, Heavenly Court would be unstoppable in the five regions chaotic war.

If Duke Long actually succeeds in nurturing Great Dream Immortal Venerable, they would be the victors of this era, the rulers of all five regions.

This tactic was reliable and consistent, it had almost no flaws, the only weakness was otherworldly demons, because they were not bound by fate.

The only complete otherworldly demon was Fang Yuan. Zhao Lian Yun was half an otherworldly demon, but she was already a dog of Heavenly Court, going up against Fang Yuan.

Therefore, Fang Yuan was the greatest hope against Heavenly Court, but even Fang Yuan himself did not know how he could win.

“If I act alone, even with Shadow Sect, Lang Ya Sect, Tang clan, and others, we are not Heavenly Court’s match. The only hope is Red Lotus’ true inheritance. But now is not the time to get Red Lotus’ true inheritance yet!”

Earlier, Fang Yuan headed to the River of Time, it was because he knew of Shadow Sect’s plans, he was confident. But going now would be a blind exploration, he did not know what could happen.

Without the help of the stone lotus island, Fang Yuan could likely lose his life to Heavenly Court’s ambush.

In this situation, Fang Yuan could only play safe and not act rashly.

“I need to try and raise my strength, until I am able to travel the River of Time alone, to see if I can obtain Red Lotus’ true inheritance.” This was Fang Yuan’s current plan.

To gain strength, Fang Yuan first thought of the blessed lands in City Well.

But these immortal apertures were hard to enter now.

Even though Fang Yuan had methods, the price of using them was too high, it was far easier to retrieve the upper extreme heavenly eagle instead.

Fang Yuan’s upper extreme heavenly eagle was in Southern Border, that was not a problem.

Because before this, Fang Yuan had planned ahead and used Connect Luck on the upper extreme heavenly eagle, they were connected by luck.

Right now, Fang Yuan only needed to use qi luck sensation to locate the upper extreme heavenly eagle. He would find it if he spent time on it.

“But now, I should not rush to Southern Border. The immortal apertures are inside City Well, they cannot run away from me!”

Fang Yuan’s plan was to cultivate in green ghost desert for the time being.

“Earlier, I saved Fang Yun and Fang Leng, I have already interacted with Fang clan. As they are a super force, they will definitely investigate and test me. Unfortunately, during this period, I hid my traces and secretly came back to explore Thieving Heaven’s dream realm, most likely, Fang clan could not find anything. The time is about ripe now, Fang clan is going to send an envoy to meet me.”

Fang Yuan was very clear of the actions that righteous path forces took.

Because Fang Yuan saved Fang clan’s Gu Immortals, if they did not thank him, they would be ungrateful. This would ruin their reputation in the righteous path.

And more personally, if Fang clan was so ungrateful, if their Gu Immortals get into danger, who would save them?

Thus, even if they do not give much of a reward, they needed to put on a show.

This was the game of the righteous path.

Other than this, there was something else, Fang Yuan’s strength was quite threatening. He could control so many soul beasts, and was a wisdom path Gu Immortal trying to develop in green ghost desert, even Fang clan did not dare to underestimate him.

Fang clan’s territory bordered green ghost desert, Fang Yuan was their neighbor. How could Fang clan not pay attention to him? How could they not approach him?

If the interaction went well and they communicated smoothly, Fang clan might even spend a lot of effort to recruit Fang Yuan.

Of course, all this was built upon the fact that Fang Yuan’s true identity was not exposed. If Fang clan knew that this was Fang Yuan, they would not approach him, and definitely not recruit him.

Fang Yuan’s plan was to disguise himself and become acquainted with Fang clan, it would help him in managing green ghost desert and make this place his soul core farming ground.

This had a huge impact on Fang Yuan’s soul path cultivation!

Several days later, in green ghost desert.

The soul beast army rampaged, Fang Yuan was sitting at the center of an ancient soul beast’s back, free and relaxed.

He was experimenting with all sorts of theft path Gu worms now.

For example, rank five sneak attack Gu!

Fang Yuan willed as he activated it, several hundred blue baby phantoms jumped out and surrounded him.

These baby phantoms were not only fast, they were very concealed, if he lost track of one, he would not be able to find them anymore.

At once, hundreds of blue baby phantoms flew around Fang Yuan, moving rapidly between the soul beasts, they were very agile, some were playing and jumping around on the soul beasts’ backs.

They moved without a sound, in this gloomy desert, it was quite a scary scene.

Fang Yuan was a theft path great grandmaster, deducing rank five sneak attack Gu was basically instantaneous. Fang Yuan even had the recipe of rank six sneak attack Gu now, he did not need the light of wisdom, it was too simple.

Other than sneak attack Gu, Fang Yuan also conceptualized many theft path Gu recipes.

Fang Yuan was already at the peak of this world in theft path, the feeling was quite amazing, it was not the use of inspiration, he had the ability inside him to begin with. Every time Fang Yuan thought of new theft path Gu recipes, he was excavating this ability, and materializing it!

After several days, all of the theft path Gu recipes that Fang Yuan thought of were all handed to Lang Ya Sect for refinement.

Lang Ya land spirit expressed deep interest in this matter.

Fang Yuan obtained a huge number of rank five theft path mortal Gu.

For Gu Immortals, mortal Gu were all expendable, even rank five ones.

Other than getting these theft path mortal Gu, Fang Yuan also killed soul beasts and raised his soul foundation back to hundred million man soul.

Not only that, he even placed these theft path mortal Gu into the killer moves that he used, making huge progress.

Just when Fang Yuan was about to shut his eyes and modify his killer moves further, an Immortal Gu House descended from the clouds, flying towards him.

Fang Yuan looked at it, this Immortal Gu House was not big, it was quite small, resembling a log cabin.

But this cabin was not simple, it had the mixed aura of rank seven Immortal Gu, it was a rank seven Immortal Gu House.

It seemed to be made of wood, on the surface, there were countless beautiful flowers of varying colors.

“This is Fang clan’s Immortal Gu House, Fallen Flower Hall.” Fang Yuan smiled lightly, as he had expected, Fang clan had approached him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1513: Immortal Gu Reward

As Fallen Flower Hall descended, flower petals rained down in the air, they were of different colors, the fragrance of flowers permeated the air.

And most importantly, when these petals fell onto the sand, they vanished like water droplets entering a lake.

Next, the sand turned into mud in almost a few breaths of time.

Seedlings began to grow, emerging from the soil and forming flower buds, before blooming.

When Fallen Flower Hall landed on the desert, it was no longer a green ghost desert, it was a sea of multicolored flowers.

Fang Yuan restrained his soul beast army as he watched without moving.

The door of Fallen Flower Hall opened, as three Gu Immortals came out.

The first one was Fang clan’s rank seven Fang An Lei, she had an ordinary appearance, she was a bit fat but her smile was amiable, she gave off a warm feeling.

Fang Yuan had investigated long ago, he knew that this person often handled external affairs in the clan, she had a lot of experience in interacting with forces and experts.

Beside Fang An Lei, there were two rank six Gu Immortals, they were familiar faces.

The left one was handsome with eyes resembling stars, he was chirpy and lively, called Fang Yun. The right one was stable and mature, having an air of nonchalance, it was a rising star in Fang clan — Fang Leng.

“I am Fang An Lei, greetings.”

“Fang Yun (Fang Leng) thanks senior for saving our lives!”

Three Gu Immortals walked out and spoke politely to Fang Yuan as they greeted.

Fang Yuan was seated within his soul beast army, he had a solemn attitude and was expressionless. His fierce soul beasts were terrifying, even though they did not move, killing intent permeated.

Over at Fang clan, they were warm like flowers, sincere and extremely polite, these two sides were polar opposites.

Fang Yuan nodded lightly, saying coldly: “I said before, I saved you because I wanted to, I am not after any reward. But I know how you righteous path people think.”

“You indeed understand us, I am representing Fang clan, not only to thank you, but also to initiate cooperation.” Fang An Lei smiled.

“Oh, cooperation?” Fang Yuan acted slightly surprised.

Fang An Lei took a step back and invited: “We have already prepared tea in the hall, would you like to discuss this with us inside?”

Immortal Gu Houses were strong outside and weak internally, very few were strong inside while weak outside, one example was Hei tribe’s Immortal Gu House Dark Prison.

Fallen Flower Hall was obviously the former, Fang An Lei’s invitation to Fang Yuan expressed good faith sincerity.

But even if this Fallen Flower Hall had any traps in it, with Fang Yuan’s current cultivation level, there was nothing to fear.

“Alright.” Fang Yuan nodded, opening his immortal aperture’s entrance as the soul beast army was kept inside, he strolled into Fallen Flower Hall with his arms behind his back.

Fallen Flower Hall had many decorations, all sorts of things could be seen.

There was a huge circular table at the center of the hall, tea was already prepared.

After asking Fang Yuan to take his seat, Fang An Lei sat down.

“Please evaluate this, our clan’s seven li fragrant tea.” Fang An Lei smiled as she said.

Fang Yuan looked at it and nodded.

This tea was like clear water, but when drank, it was hot. And the taste was exactly like warm water.

This seven li fragrant tea was the signature tea of Fang clan, it was naturally not so simple.

The true essence of the tea was that after drinking it, for some time, their mouth and entire body would emit the fragrance of tea.

If they drink seven cups, they would emit tea fragrance for seven days and night, the smell would spread seven li. But if they drink more, there would be no further effect, this was the reason for its name as seven li fragrant tea.

Fang Yuan had heard of it in his previous life, but this was the first time he enjoyed it, he only took a sip before asking directly: “What does your clan want to do, please tell me.”

Fang An Lei heard Fang Yuan’s icy tone and thought: “This person is exactly as Fang Yun and Fang Leng said, he is aloof and arrogant, he speaks on equal status even against super forces.”

Fang An Lei was not upset.

She had seen many experts, some were even weirder, some were bloodthirsty, Fang Yuan was quite normal compared to them.

She smiled even more deeply as she spoke in a clear tone, describing the contents of the cooperation Fang clan wanted to have.

“You want me to collect impermanence rocks?” Fang Yuan tapped his finger on the table as he thought about this cooperation project.

Impermanence rocks were a rank six immortal material, it existed in green ghost desert, and had quite the quantity.

This rock was half black and half white, it only formed in places that constantly had battles. Therefore, impermanence rocks only grew at places where lifeforms died.

Evidently, those were dangerous places.

But dangerous places were nothing much for the current Fang Yuan.

“I have the soul beast army, I am displaying peak rank seven battle strength, collecting the impermanence rocks is an easy matter. The only problem is that they are scattered and I will need to expend a lot of time collecting them and moving around.”

Fang Yuan thought in his mind.

This project was really a matter of convenience for Fang Yuan.

He needed to hunt for soul cores, while traveling around, it was normal to see impermanence rocks. In fact, he had a batch of them now, he had gathered them casually while moving about in green ghost desert.

What Fang Yuan needed to consider was, why did Fang clan want this cooperation, what was their true motive?

“Is it like what Fang An Lei had said, impermanence rocks are rarely seen in treasure yellow heaven, they are hard to buy, so they want me to handle this?”

“Or are they trying to use this to recruit me? Or to spread news of Fang clan being grateful to their benefactors?”

The content was that once Fang Yuan hands over the impermanence rocks, he would gain a rank six Immortal Gu as the reward.

The reward was huge!

Immortal Gu were unique, and Fang clan were giving him one! As long as he collected the impermanence rocks, if anyone heard about it, they would think that Fang clan was trying to repay Fang Yuan’s kindness of saving their members’ lives.

Fang Yuan was somewhat moved.

Not only the reward of a rank six Immortal Gu, but also because he wanted to cooperate with them!

As long as he cooperated with Fang clan and established an agreement, his arrangements in green ghost desert would be recognized by Fang clan.

“But, I feel that Fang clan is plotting something, the matter is not so simple.” Fang Yuan was quite suspicious.

Fang An Lei looked at Fang Yuan, seeing that he was deep in consideration, she felt increasingly confident.

“The clan is putting in a huge investment by giving him an Immortal Gu, he will definitely be enticed!”

“As long as we set an alliance agreement, Suan Bu Jin will take the place of the clan and explore green ghost desert, he will be harvesting impermanence rock on the surface, but if he finds the inheritance of Qing clan, our trailing Fang clan Gu Immortals will also find it.”

“Even if he encounters enemies like Old Ghost Bai Jun, Suan Bu Jin would have to fight against them. If he finds out about Qing clan’s inheritance, because of the alliance agreement, he cannot fight with our clan over it.”

“Second supreme elder’s plan is truly detailed!”

Thinking of this, Fang An Lei felt an increased sense of admiration towards Fang Di Chang.

“Alright, I agree to it.” Fang Yuan thought about it and agreed.

Even though he had wisdom path attainment, there was too little information, he could not deduce Fang clan’s objective. Furthermore, he also wanted to work with them.

“Alright, friend, you are very decisive. You will not regret cooperating with our Fang clan.” Fang An Lei laughed loudly: “Next, let us discuss the content of our cooperation... hmm?”

But right at this time, Fang An Lei paused, surprise was expressed on her face.

Soon, thunderous sounds could be heard outside.

To make sure Fang Yuan could feel assured, the door of Fallen Flower Hall was not closed, this sound was quite clear to him.

Fang Yun and Fang Leng also had a change of expressions.

“Countless soul beasts are attacking from all directions, we are encircled.” Fang An Lei said: “Old Ghost Bai Jun has attacked, he actually subdued multiple immemorial soul beasts!”

“Immemorial soul beasts?” Fang Yuan was slightly surprised, he did not know that the rank eight Immortal Gu was Soul Beast Token yet.

Fang An Lei’s eyes shined with a dim light, after thinking about it, she told Fang Yuan about this information.

Fang Yuan was greatly moved.

“This Soul Beast Token is a rank eight enslavement path Immortal Gu, this is great, it is extremely useful for my soul core harvesting plan!”

Once he thought of this, Fang Yuan felt a strong urge to design a theft path killer move to steal this rank eight Immortal Gu!

He controlled himself as he said to Fang An Lei: “Old Ghost Bai Jun dared to come here even though we are in an Immortal Gu House, he is truly confident. Next, it is time for your clan’s Immortal Gu House to shine!”

Fang An Lei was dazed, she wanted to see Fang Yuan fight, but he spoke before her and sealed the possibility.

“Earlier, friend offended this person to save our juniors, he is here for revenge. We will definitely punish this evildoer. But if the battle goes wrong later, friend, we hope you can help us out, after all, those soul beasts are immemorial level.” Fang An Lei said with deep meaning, without losing any politeness in her words.

Fang Yuan laughed: “Of course!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1514 Simultaneous Ambush

Roar!

While Fang Yuan and Fang An Lei were speaking, an immemorial soul beast with a bull body and leopard tail extended its limbs and sprinted, like a mountain charging over.

Almost at the same time, there was a shrill noise in the sky, an immemorial soul beast resembling a black python with two wings also descended with a strong burst of air.

“Two immemorial soul beasts!” Fang Yun was shaken, this intense attack made his heart waver, he was almost unable to control himself.

“No, there’s three.” Fang An Lei was calm and even smiled.

As expected, at the next moment, the ground shook as three huge monstrous fingers emerged from the ground, grabbing towards Fallen Flower Hall.

This was the third immemorial soul beast!

“Rise!” At the crucial moment, Fang An Lei shouted as the Immortal Gu House flew into the sky like a rainbow.

The monstrous hand grabbed thin air, colliding into the bull body leopard tail immemorial soul beast.

But even though it evaded two immemorial soul beasts, there was still a winged black python in the air.

The black python hissed and pounced at the Fallen Flower Hall.

Fang An Lei’s eyes shined brightly, she moved the Immortal Gu House Fallen Flower Hall, directly slamming into it instead of dodging.

Boom!

With a loud bang, both sides suffered injuries.

Immortal Gu House Fallen Flower Hall had cracks all over, the flowers growing on the exterior were falling off.

Meanwhile, that winged black python immemorial soul beast fell and crashed onto the ground, creating a huge crater upon impact.

Fang An Lei had a pale expression, she quickly stabilized Fallen Flower Hall, making it stay still in the air as she used a method to create a shining light around Fallen Flower Hall.

The light shined for a few breaths of time, when it faded, Fallen Flower Hall was completely restored, the cracks had vanished, the flowers were reborn.

“Oh? She can rapidly fix the Immortal Gu House? This method is quite impressive, I wonder how they did it? Did they replace the Gu worms with spares? Or did they refine Gu worms on the spot?”

Fang Yuan was intrigued, as he deduced with countless thoughts in his mind.

Fallen Flower Hall was an Immortal Gu House, it was constructed using countless Gu worms. It was able to repair itself rapidly, most Immortal Gu Houses did not have such an ability.

If they rapidly replaced Gu worms, it was formation path. If they refined mortal Gu, it was refinement path.

Fallen Flower Hall was likely to possess an immortal killer move from either of these two paths.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan had too little information now, his deduction was met with an obstacle very quickly, he gave up on it.

“Hehehehe!” Old Ghost Bai Jun’s laughter filled the battlefield: “So what if you have an Immortal Gu House? Obediently surrender, I might spare your lives!”

Saying so, the winged black python immemorial soul beast shook its head and flew up again.

Immemorial soul beasts had rank eight battle strength, they had strong bodies, the attack earlier did not have much effect.

Fang An Lei was not surprised, she expected this.

Her collision earlier was just a probe, after all, immemorial soul beasts varied in strength too.

Fallen Flower Hall was controlled by her, she dodged in the sky as she fought against the winged black python immemorial soul beast.

As for the other two immemorial soul beasts, the bull body leopard tail and the one eyed giant with two hands, they could only growl on the ground, they could not fly.

Old Ghost Bai Jun made a sharp noise as the two immemorial soul beasts started to walk towards him.

“A chance!” Fang An Lei’s eyes flashed with sharp light, she was about to use Fallen Flower Hall to charge at Old Ghost Bai Jun by getting past the winged black python.

These three immemorial soul beasts had deep battle strength and stamina, she could not sustain a long fight, the best way was to capture the enemy leader, and kill the crucial Old Ghost Bai Jun who was controlling these beasts.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan sneered: “Don’t be hasty, I have deduced that this is a trap.”

“Oh?” A flash of surprise appeared in Fang An Lei’s eyes.

But because of the hesitation, she lost her opportunity, the winged black python challenged Fallen Flower Hall again, preventing it from flying away.

Meanwhile, the two immemorial soul beasts arrived at Old Ghost Bai Jun’s side, putting up a strong defense for him.

Old Ghost Bai Jun had no smugness, his expression was grim.

“I purposely left an opening for the enemy to attack, to think that Fang An Lei could resist the urge to use this battle opportunity!”

“Forget it! Activating Soul Beast Token expends my soul foundation rapidly, I cannot sustain it, I need to settle the battle fast!”

Thinking of this, Old Ghost Bai Jun had a ruthless expression as he growled, the fourth immemorial soul beast attacked Fallen Flower Hall.

This fourth immemorial soul beast was like a spider with spikes all over, it could also fly and was the smallest among them, only at the side of a normal tiger.

But it was extremely fast, it shot out like an arrow in the sky.

Fang Yun exclaimed: “So close, this is Old Ghost Bai Jun’s scheme to lure the enemy!”

Fang An Lei gave Fang Yuan a look of gratitude, before her expression turned solemn as she faced the enemy with Fallen Flower Hall.

The flying spider immemorial soul beast created huge pressure in the Fang clan immortals.

The winged black python immemorial soul beast was powerful and heavy, but the flying spider immemorial soul beast was fast as lightning, the two worked together, one slow and one fast, one big and one small, pressuring Fallen Flower Hall and keeping it suppressed

“To think that Old Ghost Bai Jun could really control immemorial soul beasts!”

“How did he do it? Is Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token really that impressive? He could actually gain control of four immemorial soul beasts in such a short period of time?”

Fang Yun and Fang Leng were uncertain, they wanted to retreat.

Fang Yuan laughed: “I have already deduced that he is at his limits. Using rank seven cultivation level to control four immemorial soul beasts, it is far beyond his abilities. In just a while longer, the situation will turn around.”

“Oh?” Fang An Lei’s gaze shined, she had another thought, she decided to trust Fang Yuan again.

As expected, as the battle progressed, Fallen Flower Hall’s pressure fell.

The flying spider and winged black python immemorial soul beasts were cooperating much more poorly now, they were interfering with each other now.

And on the ground of the desert, Old Ghost Bai Jun had a pale expression, his body was shaking as his aura weakened greatly.

But he stared with wide eyes, forcefully holding on.

As time passed, Old Ghost Bai Jun’s condition got worse.

“I will spare your lives today! The next time we meet, I will tear you to pieces!” He threatened as he started to leave with his soul beast army.

“Where are you going?” After taking a beating for so long, Fang An Lei was unwilling to let Old Ghost Bai Jun off.

Both sides fled and chased, Fallen Flower Hall attacked as countless soul beasts died.

However, the flying spider and winged black python immemorial soul beasts were still trying hard to stall Fallen Flower Hall.

Old Ghost Bai Jun defended himself tightly, although his condition was worsening, he did not reveal any fatal flaws.

Fang Yun shouted with great smugness: “Old Ghost Bai Jun, where has your arrogance

gone?”

Old Ghost Bai Jun shouted: “If not for the fact that I am still unfamiliar with Soul Beast Token, how could you people survive?”

“Wait, something is wrong.” Fang Yuan frowned lightly.

At this time, the sound of an eagle tore the sky, even though the four immortals were in the Immortal Gu House, they felt a piercing sound.

This figure was like phantom, emerging from dark clouds.

It was a female immortal.

She wore tight black clothing, her face was pale and white. Her hands had turned into eagle claws, her body was emitting black smoke, as she charged, a trail of smoke appeared behind her.

Rank seven demonic path Gu Immortal — Eagle Concubine!

Boom!

Eagle Concubine slashed as she passed Fallen Flower Hall without slowing down.

Fallen Flower Hall was heavily damaged, three claw marks appeared on the roof, almost piercing the interior.

“So he has help, hmph.” Seeing Eagle Concubine, Fang An Lei frowned tightly.

She spoke to Fang Yuan: ‘I would like your assistance, friend, I cannot deal with this situation alone.”

Fang Yuan knew that she still had not gone all out, but he wanted to work with Fang clan, he could not continue watching on the sidelines.

Immediately, he nodded: “I will deal with Old Ghost Bai Jun, I hope you can stall this eagle claw female immortal.”

Fang An Lei agreed: “Go ahead, I will do my best!”

At the next moment, the Immortal Gu House’s door opened as Fang Yuan stepped into the battlefield.

Immortal killer move — Ignited Thought Flying Rock.

Fang Yuan had prepared it long ago, he stretched his finger as meteors rained down from the sky, the attack was incredible.

yn

Old Ghost Bai Jun squinted his eyes, his aura was extremely weak, he used the two immemorial soul beasts as his shield to block Fang Yuan’s killer move.

Bam bam bam...

Ignited thought flying rocks crashed into the desert, creating a sea of fire for several li of radius, but without any heat.

This was a unique thought fire, it spread and burned on Old Ghost Bai Jun.

Old Ghost Bai Jun smiled bitterly, he wanted to dodge, but he could not spare the effort.

“Oh?” Seeing this, Fang Yuan’s heart jumped.

Boom!!!

At the next moment, the ground cracked open, monsters were growling, resounding in one’s ears like rumbling thunder.

Next, a huge palace shining in green radiance flew out and crashed towards Fang Yuan fiercely.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House — Divine Bean Palace!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1515 Exposing His True Body

“Rank eight Immortal Gu House!” Facing Divine Bean Palace’s assault, Fang Yuan expressed shock on his face.

“Thi... This is...?!”

“Divine Bean Palace!!”

“Seriously?”

Within Fallen Flower Hall, the three Fang clan immortals were immensely shocked.

Generations of Fang clan descendants had searched for it endlessly, but now, they finally had enough clues that pointed them to it, they were about to search green ghost desert when suddenly, Divine Bean Palace appeared in front of them like this.

The Qing clan inheritance that Fang clan had coveted for generations appeared right in front of them.

The three immortals’ eyes were about to pop out, they could not believe this!

How could this happen!!

“Descendant of Spectral Soul, die!” Within Divine Bean Palace, the immemorial soul beast roared. Its anger reverberated in the palace, dozens of sturdy pillars were shaking, its killing intent filled the surroundings.

This immemorial soul beast was the master of Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine, the body was large and mountain-like, it had a weird appearance, having a tortoise shell, tiger claws, dragon tail, neck like a snake, and a human head.

Its hair was messy, its human face could not be seen clearly, but Fang Yuan could feel deep hatred that was converted into killing intent that burst out endlessly.

It controlled Divine Bean Palace, but the palace shined with a green light that suppressed it instead.

No matter how it roared, its voice was contained within the palace, unable to leave.

Divine Bean Palace crashed towards Fang Yuan, while the rank seven demonic path female immortal Eagle Concubine also charged at Fang Yuan from behind him.

Old Ghost Bai Jun screeched as he went all-out, calling on the two immemorial soul beasts.

The flying spider immemorial soul beast shot out like lightning, while the winged black python immemorial soul beast crashed down from above like a mountain.

At once, a rank eight Immortal Gu House, two immemorial soul beasts, and two rank seven demonic path Gu Immortals attacked Fang Yuan.

Fatal danger!

Fang Yuan’s heart was pounding, his eyes were flickering with uncertainty, his mind was filled with surging thoughts, resembling a tsunami!

He did not expect that the moment he left the Immortal Gu House, he would face such a terrifying assault.

“Senior, be careful!”

“Oh no!!”

Fang clan’s three immortals screamed, the situation was dire, they were very worried for Fang Yuan.

The soul beast attackers had been preparing for a long time, their real target was Fang Yuan, they attacked all of a sudden, Fang clan’s three immortals could not help Fang Yuan in time. At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan could only rely on himself!

Of course, Fang Yuan had never thought of relying on others.

He had a vigilant nature, he had already prepared myriad self clones within the sovereign immortal aperture. And not long ago, reverse flow protection seal was modified by him, the activation time was greatly shortened.

“But even so, it is too late now for me to activate reverse flow protection seal!”

Fang Yuan was after green ghost desert, he was with the three Fang clan immortals now, he could not display reverse flow protection seal so easily.

Once he uses it, even if Divine Bean Palace crashes into him, he would be intact.

If he did not use it, forget about Divine Bean Palace, even the immemorial soul beasts could turn Fang Yuan into pulp.

Reverse flow protection seal was a qualitative change in terms of battle strength for him.

At the moment of life and death, Fang Yuan's alertness was maximized, but having lived for hundreds of years, he did not panic, determination and fighting spirit soared within him!

“Hahaha.” At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan laughed loudly.

Fang clan's immortals heard this and felt Fang Yuan's arrogance and self-confidence.

Immortal killer move – Single Thought Endless Clones!

Fang Yuan activated the killer move successfully in one try.

Swish swish swish.

Dozens of blue light silhouettes emerged from his body, scattering to the surroundings.

This was the method gained from Purple Mountain True Monarch, but the original version created purple light silhouettes, Fang Yuan had changed it.

SI

SS

The underlying reason was the countless sneak attack Gu he had added in, causing the silhouettes to turn blue, and also gain some sneakiness in movement.

At the same time, the blue light phantoms were still splitting continuously.

One turned into four while four turned into ten, they formed into a huge blue silhouette army.

Fang Yuan's true body was hidden among the silhouettes, he could not be discovered.

“Great countermeasure!” Fang Yun praised, while Fang An Lei and Fang Leng stayed silent.

Divine Bean Palace crashed towards him like a meteor.

Crack crack crack!

Wherever it went, the blue shadows were shattered like bursting bubbles, without any resistance.

Eagle Concubine and the flying spider immemorial soul beast dodged it quickly, not wanting to face a rank eight Immortal Gu House's charge.

That winged black python immemorial soul beast was the slowest, it was still on the way there.

Be it Eagle Concubine or Old Ghost Bai Jun, they had lost their attack target because of Fang Yuan’s clones.

“Oh?” Surprise flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

He was scheming and did not go far away, he was hiding nearby, but Divine Bean Palace did not stop to use any immortal killer moves, it went directly for him.

“Coincidence?” Fang Yuan manipulated the shadows as he flew away while hidden among them.

But Divine Bean Palace turned around and went for him again.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly, he spat out a huge amount of fog, covering the area.

Immortal killer move — Directional Confusion Fog!

The Gu Immortals within the battlefield were enveloped by it.

Eagle Concubine screeched as she stopped her movement.

Old Ghost Bai Jun made his immemorial soul beasts get close to him, he was extremely nervous.

“This fog can interfere with your sense of direction, we were affected by it even though we have the Immortal Gu House’s protection, this is really impressive!” Fang Leng exclaimed.

Divine Bean Palace entered the fog but it still managed to chase down Fang Yuan, the directional confusion fog had no effect.

Fang Yuan’s move had been modified.

Originally, the fog was purple and was not big, although it could confuse even rank eight Gu Immortals.

After modification, this move had no effect on rank eight Gu Immortals, but it had an amplified effect on rank seven and below Gu Immortals. Not only did the color change, the range was greatly expanded, but the duration shortened drastically.

Because of this ineffectiveness, Divine Bean Palace came very close to Fang Yuan, it almost hit him.

Originally, due to the attack from underground, it was far from Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan used two killer moves but could not deceive the mysterious soul beast in Divine Bean Palace, it moved very quickly and finally caught up to him.

Fang Yuan tried to dodge, he was fast as lightning, but could not compare to Divine Bean Palace, he could only watch as this Immortal Gu House filled his vision and was about to crash into him.

They were about to collide!

At this time, reverse flow protection seal was not ready yet.

Fang Yuan’s lips curled up.

Boom!

With a loud sound, an intense collision occurred.

But it did not involve Fang Yuan, Divine Bean Palace and the immemorial soul beast winged black python crashed.

“Even though I cannot confuse you, I can confuse others!” Eerie light shined in Fang Yuan’s eyes, he used this chance to activate reverse flow protection seal!

In a flash, he used single thought endless clones again, while activating familiar face, turning into a blue shadow and mixing in among them.

“Incredible!” When the fog faded, Fang An Lei looked at the scene and praised involuntarily.

There were many enemies, but Fang Yuan made use of the numbers to resist them, he was truly displaying the might of a wisdom path Gu Immortal.

“Damn it!!” Inside Divine Bean Palace, the mysterious soul beast roared, its voice was like a tsunami that shook the entire palace.

The winged black python immemorial soul beast was sent flying by Divine Bean Palace, because it had hit the sharp edge of Divine Bean Palace, its body was also snapped into two. The power of the rank eight Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace was evident!

Divine Bean Palace was chipped because of this impact, it became much slower, but due to the mysterious soul beast’s control, it still pursued Fang Yuan’s true body.

“What is going on? I used familiar face, but the enemy can still sense me?” Fang Yuan was deeply shocked.

Ever since Fang Yuan obtained rank eight attitude Immortal Gu, and after modifying familiar face, he had relied on it mostly without ever failing.

But currently, the enemy ignored it and pursued Fang Yuan’s true body, it was a first for him.

“Even during the tribulation, I deceived heaven’s will, what method is the enemy using to find me?”

Fang Yuan could not understand.

“No, it is not wisdom path.”

“I have ghost official garment to protect against deductions. If anyone wants to deduce matters about me, they would need to get past ghost official garment. But now, there are no signs of deductions.”

“How in the world is the enemy doing this?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1516: Karma Divine Tree

Just as Divine Bean Palace chased after Fang Yuan, far away on a small mound, a young looking Gu Immortal was sitting with his legs crossed.

He wore a green robe, he had the aura of a scholar, he looked young but his eyes were deep and wise.

It was the person sent by Heavenly Court’s wisdom path great expert Fairy Zi Wei, the first supreme elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect, one of the ten great ancient sects, Chen Yi.

At this moment, his eyes were shut, his aura was almost entirely concealed, he seemed to have fused with heaven and earth.

As he continued to use his immortal killer move, green smoke rose from his shoulders and head.

The smoke gathered six feet above his head, gradually slowing down and circulating within itself, forming into the shape of a tree.

This tree had a thick trunk and lush green leaves, there were dozens of fruits hanging on it.

But these fruits were very weird, they were in all kinds of shapes, colors and sizes. Some were like black peaches, some were pink but large like a basin, some had spikes on them, some had transparent skin, the flesh and core could be seen from the outside.

A moment later, Chen Yi stopped using his killer move as the green smoke divine tree faded away.

He opened his eyes slowly and thought with certainty: “So that’s it.”

He had already understood the entire flow of events.

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable came after Red Lotus Demon Venerable and was before Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, he was one of the leaders of Heavenly Court.

Three hundred thousand years ago, during the Medieval Antiquity Era, Genesis Lotus was journeying in the west.

At that time, he had already become an Immortal Venerable, he was invincible in the world, but he hid his name and disguised himself as a mortal Gu Master, traveling the world.

One day, he came to an oasis in the desert and was welcomed warmly by the young and old in the village.

He met a child, upon seeing that he was a Gu Master, the child begged him to revive his deceased mother.

“People cannot be resurrected after they die.” Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable rejected, he was about to console the kid.

“Forget it if you won’t help!” The child turned around and left with hatred.

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable did not mind it, but suddenly, green smoke emerged above his head, almost about to burst out.

He was shocked as he thought: “I created this rank nine immortal killer move karma1 divine tree after gaining inspiration from Limitless Demon Venerable’s true inheritance. I can use fate as the soil to take root and use luck as the water to nourish the leaves. I can ignore all disturbances and confusion in this world to find the root cause and effect of matters.”

“I rejected the child earlier, it was a small cause, on the surface, it is a small matter. But karma divine tree reacted to it, this shows that the small cause will turn into a great and disastrous effect.”

Even though Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable knew this, he did not go to kill the child immediately.

“Everything in this world is like a seed planted into the soil, it will eventually grow into a huge tree. With myriad lifeforms, there will be countless trees, creating a dense forest of destiny.”

“Letting the tree grow naturally without interfering, that is the most natural way, it will allow the world to prosper and stay good.”

“If I interfere forcefully, it is the same as humanity disrupting the order of heaven, we would be creating trouble for ourselves.”

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable was the leader of Heavenly Court, he followed the decree of fate.

Humans could not be resurrected, this was the rule set by fate, therefore, even if Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable could do it, he would not revive dead people.

Similarly, his encounter with this child was the arrangement of fate, there was no need to resist it.

“However, once the tree matures and develops the bad fruit, we will have to pluck it and stop evil from spreading. We immortals are merely the pesticide of this world.”

Thinking of this, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable sighed and left behind his Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace.

He did not hand Divine Bean Palace to the child, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable tossed it into the well in the village.

But in later developments, the village was buried by a sandstorm, Divine Bean Palace happened to fall into the hand of mortals, and after countless transfers within the mortal world, it ended up in the hands of Qing clan.

Qing clan obtained it and recognized this to be Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s possession, they were extremely happy and arrogant. This angered Spectral Soul, who had yet to become venerable, he engaged in a huge battle with them and slaughtered the entirety of Qing clan, shocking the world.

Qing clan’s first supreme elder sent the inheritance of Qing clan into Divine Bean Palace at the brink of destruction, concealing it. He also set up a revival method in the hopes of attempting to find a chance of survival.

Qing clan was wiped out, but the grudge and hatred in them, the countless Gu Immortal fragment souls were drawn and stored into Divine Bean Palace.

As time passed, green ghost desert slowly formed. In this environment, the soul fragments could not revive, but they slowly gathered and fused, into an unprecedented legendary immemorial soul beast.

The soul beast had a human nature and deep wisdom, it wanted to take revenge on Spectral Soul, thus, it kept its Qing surname, and called itself Chou1, its name was — Qing Chou!

It was a pity that when Qing Chou was formed, not only had Spectral Soul become venerable, he also disappeared.

Qing Chou wanted to take revenge on Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s friends and family, but it was imprisoned within Divine Bean Palace.

Initially, Qing clan’s first supreme elder wanted to find a chance of survival, he made an arrangement within Divine Bean Palace, but had not understood the profundities of Divine Bean Palace.

Three hundred thousand years ago, the owner of Divine Bean Palace, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, had made his arrangements, to use this to eliminate a bad effect for the world.

The cause of this bad effect was the rejection by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, when he was traveling, to a child who wanted to revive his mother.

As times changed, the small cause grew larger and larger, eventually nurturing the legendary immemorial soul beast Qing Chou.

Qing Chou was born from Divine Bean Palace, but it was also imprisoned within it.

Qing Chou was unwilling to stay imprisoned, for countless eons, it tried to unravel the profundities of Divine Bean Palace and control this rank eight Immortal Gu House.

As time passed, Qing Chou spent all its effort on it, and eventually gained some results.

It could forcefully manipulate Divine Bean Palace for some time and open an entrance for outsiders to enter.

Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine were unlucky people who had ventured into Divine Bean Palace and were suppressed by Qing Chou, turning into its slaves.

“This Qing Chou is truly lucky, not only is it a legendary immemorial soul beast, it can cultivate and nurture many wild Immortal Gu on its body naturally, among them is rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token.”

“It refined this Gu and gave it to Old Ghost Bai Jun, wanting to use the soul beast army to help suppress Divine Bean Palace.”

“It is a pity that the moment Old Ghost Bai Jun moved, he met with Fang clan’s immortals, as well as Suan Bu Jin, not only did he fail, the matter was exposed.”

“That Fang clan also wants to get Qing clan’s inheritance, Qing Chou might have noticed it and set up this ambush.”

Chen Yi’s gaze flickered uncertainly, he thought in his mind.

This situation was much more complex than he had imagined.

Originally, he wanted to take over Divine Bean Palace using his predecessor’s inheritance, but now, a super force and a legendary immemorial soul beast were involved.

“It is a pity.”

“My wood path killer move karma divine tree is still at rank eight level. If it is rank nine, the divine tree would create karma fruits according to my wishes.”

“By then, I will pluck some good fruits and reverse deduce the cause. I will be able to resolve this problematic matter by targeting its root cause easily.”

Chen Yi sighed before he concealed his figure, vanishing on the spot.

He could only watch this situation now and wait for a chance to strike.

In the battlefield, one chased while the other ran.

“How is the enemy finding out my true body?” Fang Yuan was filled with questions.

He did not know that Divine Bean Palace belonged to Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, and was placed here due to the killer move karma divine tree, it seemed to be a random action, but there was profound reasoning behind it.

Legendary immemorial soul beast Qing Chou was birthed in Divine Bean Palace, it gained some of karma divine tree’s power, turning into obsession that was deep rooted in Qing Chou’s thirst for revenge.

Thus, Qing Chou could easily discern anyone who was closely related to Spectral Soul.

In essence, this was not a wisdom path method but wood path instead.

Forget about ordinary wood path methods, but this was a wood path killer move from Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, he had created this incredible move after becoming a venerable.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan inherited Spectral Soul true inheritance, it was a burden here.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable slaughtered the whole of Qing clan in the past, that cause was now becoming a bad effect that had been passed on to Fang Yuan.

However, even though Fang Yuan’s disguise did not deceive Qing Chou, he managed to hide from Chen Yi who was outside the battlefield.

Fang Yuan did not materialize reverse flow protection seal, he had modified most of his wisdom path methods too, they changed greatly after the addition of theft path mortal Gu, with the protection of ghost official garment, and the fact that Chen Yi was focused on Divine Bean Palace, it was normal for Fang Yuan to remain concealed.

But the problem now was, Divine Bean Palace still chased after Fang Yuan.

“Isn’t this enemy too obsessed? The encirclement was broken by me, but they still want to kill me?” Fang Yuan flew rapidly.

Earlier, Divine Bean Palace had crashed into the winged black python immemorial soul beast, it became much slower, Fang Yuan pulled apart by a huge distance as a result.

It had regained its speed now, but it was still far from catching up to Fang Yuan.

“Even though I have reverse flow protection seal, there is no need to continue fighting this enemy. The enemy is after Fang clan, I almost died when I came out to fight, this is sincere enough. And now, this is Fang clan’s problem.” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly, he flew towards Fang clan’s rank seven Immortal Gu House Fallen Flower Hall.

Within Fallen Flower Hall, Fang An Lei breathed in deeply, she felt great pressure against Divine Bean Palace.

But her expression was determined, she instructed the two beside her: “Fang Yun and Fang Leng, assist me in controlling Fallen Flower Hall. We will save Suan Bu Jin first, before fighting with this Divine Bean Palace!”

The situation was quite amusing.

Qing Chou wanted to kill Fang Yuan, but he did not know that.

Fang Yuan thought that Qing Chou was after Fang clan.

Fang clan also thought that Qing Chou was after them, Suan Bu Jin was already sincere enough in his actions. In all fairness, they had to fight against Divine Bean Palace now!

Even the Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortal Chen Yi had the same thought. In his perception, this Suan Bu Jin was quite unlucky, he actually got implicated in this matter!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1517: Fallen Flower Hall versus Divine Bean Palace (1/2)

Seeing that Fang Yuan had escaped the ambush and entered Fallen Flower Hall, legendary immemorial soul beast Qing Chou roared furiously, its eyes were blood shot, its killing intent was surging, it wanted to devour its enemies.

Its hatred towards Fang Yuan had existed since it was created.

It was originally made from Qing clan’s Gu Immortals’ soul fragments, it had an immense hatred towards Spectral Soul, overwhelmingly so.

Thus, even though it had humanlike intelligence, when it met Fang Yuan and could not kill him, the hatred within took over.

Within Divine Bean Palace, green light flickered, suppressing Qing Chou, but it ignored the light and used Divine Bean Palace to charge at Fallen Flower Hall.

“Master, I can’t continue anymore...” Old Ghost Bai Jun screamed in agony.

“Kill, kill him, otherwise, you can all die!” Qing Chou roared.

Old Ghost Bai Jun’s and Eagle Concubine’s expressions changed, they had never seen their master so angry, and so filled with hatred against one person!

This overwhelming hatred assaulted them and made them shudder, they subconsciously wanted to escape.

But they were enslaved by Qing Chou, they could not resist, they had no choice but to grit their teeth, the former mobilized his immemorial soul beasts, while the latter prepared immortal killer moves against Fallen Flower Hall.

Once Fang Yuan entered Fallen Flower Hall, Qing Chou was left with only one target, it naturally attacked them.

The enemy came imposingly, Fang An Lei steered Fallen Flower Hall as they escaped.

This rank seven Immortal Gu House was even faster than Fang Yuan, even though it could not match the upper extreme heavenly eagle.

The winged black python immemorial soul beast was gradually left behind, but the flying spider immemorial soul beast was too fast, it tried to enter from Fallen Flower Hall’s roof.

At the same time, Eagle Concubine screeched as her eagle claws waved, slashing and creating countless marks on Fallen Flower Hall like a rain was pouring down.

Fallen Flower Hall could not dodge it now, but Fang An Lei was not anxious, she was patiently waiting.

She said to Fang Yun and Fang Leng: “Manipulate Fallen Flower Hall and fly, I will use a killer move against the enemy.”

Saying this, Fallen Flower Hall burst out with snow-white light under her manipulation.

On the surface of Fallen Flower Hall, the countless blooming flowers wilted and died.

The snow-white light faded slowly, turning into a huge flower on the roof of Fallen Flower Hall.

This flower was even bigger than the roof, the petals were like mirrors, reflecting the light. With a crisp sound, the flower bloomed entirely, it was a beautiful sight.

Immortal killer move — Mirror Flower1!

The frenzied claw that attacked was about to land on Fallen Flower Hall, when the mirror flower on the roof burst out with a strong attractive force.

Ding ding dong dong!

With a chain of crisp sounds, the dark claw marks were absorbed into the mirror flower.

After absorbing the claw marks, several petals on the mirror flower shattered, but the remaining dozen petals closed up.

At this moment, Divine Bean Palace got close.

The remaining mirror flower bloomed again, shooting out all of the claw marks.

The claw marks landed on Divine Bean Palace and created intense metallic sparks.

Divine Bean Palace’s advancement was halted, using the propulsion force of shooting the claw marks, Fallen Flower Hall increased its speed and got away from Divine Bean Palace.

“Oh no, that immemorial soul beast flying spider is about to get in!” At this time, Fang Yun shouted.

Even though Fallen Flower Hall forced Eagle Concubine and Divine Bean Palace back, that flying spider had the advantage of a small body, it was attached to a corner of Fallen Flower Hall and tried to squeeze in.

Fallen Flower Hall was an Immortal Gu House after all, as a complete structure, the flying spider could not get in even after so long, it was far from reaching the crucial area.

But the situation was very dangerous.

Once it broke through the surface, the flying spider could get inside.

Immortal Gu Houses were made of countless Gu worms, if the immemorial soul beast got in, it would cause great destruction.

Gu worms were extremely fragile, the consequences would be severe then.

Even though Fallen Flower Hall could self-regenerate, the speed of regeneration could not match the destructive power of an immemorial soul beast.

At the crucial moment, Fang An Lei made her move.

Immortal killer move — Fleeting Bloom!

The mirror flower on the roof had already wilted, but in its spot, another flower grew.

The flower was not big, it was quite delicate, once it appeared, it turned into light shadows as it dissipated with the wind.

But this mysterious power was locked onto the flying spider. Its speed drastically fell.

“This wood path Immortal Gu House Fallen Flower Hall is amazing! No wonder it had such an incredible effect during the five regions chaotic war in the five hundred years of my previous life.”

“The mirror flower earlier was a wood path killer move, but it had the power of rule path, able to reflect attacks. The fleeting flower now is also a wood path killer move, but it has the power of time path!”

Fang Yuan was watching inside the hall, his gaze was flickering.

Fang An Lei first used mirror flower to force back Divine Bean Palace and Eagle Concubine, before using fleeting bloom to alleviate the flying spider crisis. Her expression was pale and her eyes were seeing stars now, using two consecutive killer moves expended more than just immortal essence!

These two killer moves had incredible power, even though they were rank seven, when used by Fallen Flower Hall, they had a trace of rank eight power. Especially against that flying spider which was an immemorial soul beast.

But the stronger the move, the greater the cost of using it. Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered, he could tell that Fang An Lei had expended her own lifespan!

“My Fallen Flower Hall is among the top of rank seven Immortal Gu Houses, but against two immemorial soul beasts, Divine Bean Palace, and two rank seven demonic path Gu Immortals, they are too much to handle! Even after going all out, I could only temporarily defend us!”

Fang An Lei’s heart jumped, she turned to look at Fang Yuan, thinking: “This person has incredible methods, his pressure was even greater than mine earlier, but he could think calmly during the moment of crisis and find a way out of that desperate situation. Right now, we need his help, otherwise, I would not last long.”

Thinking of this, Fang An Lei activated her method and transmitted to Fang Yuan.

She was too busy dealing with the enemies, she could not speak to Fang Yuan normally, she had to communicate like this.

Fang Yuan received this information and saw that Fang An Lei wanted to formally ally with him, to resist this powerful enemy!

Fang An Lei talked about the benefits and costs, the two parties had to work together sincerely now, to delay the enemies until Fang clan’s reinforcements could arrive.

Fang An Lei felt that Fang Yuan could not escape, but the truth was, not only could he run, he had reverse flow protection seal to fight the enemies if he wanted to.

But now, Fang Yuan chose to stay for the sake of getting closer to Fang clan and establishing a relationship, so that he could plan for the future.

“I can escape but Fang An Lei cannot. Thus, this alliance agreement is quite good for me, I need to thank this powerful enemy who ambushed us. If not for them, Fang clan would not ally with me so easily and with such loose conditions too.”

Originally, Fang clan had suggested the project of impermanence rock, this was still written inside the alliance agreement.

Even though they already found Divine Bean Palace, and the impermanence rock was just an excuse, Fang An Lei was quite astute, she retained that original project.

Other than the rank six Immortal Gu, Fang An Lei also promised Fang Yuan quite a lot of immortal materials as compensation.

“The rank six Immortal Gu is not very useful for me, but if I suggest a rank seven Immortal Gu, it would seem like I am extorting them. Immortal Gu are unique, Fang An Lei also is not necessarily qualified to promise it on behalf of Fang clan. Forget it! This is a prime opportunity, I do not need to be greedy and ruin it.”

Fang Yuan thought about his plan and made up his mind, he told Fang An Lei: “I will join this alliance!”

He considered questions rapidly as thoughts surged in his mind, he only took a moment.

Fang An Lei was extremely joyful, she was afraid that Fang Yuan would be arrogant and suspicious, but seeing that he decided in an instant, she praised: this was truly a wisdom path expert, he is decisive and knows how to judge the situation well.

Fang clan had prepared the Immortal Gu and method for this alliance when they came, the two sides made the alliance agreement rapidly.

But now, Fallen Flower Hall was encircled heavily.

Boom!

Divine Bean Palace came crashing, Fallen Flower Hall’s path was blocked and could not dodge in time, it fell towards the ground like a shooting star.

“Kill! Kill! Kill!” Within Divine Bean Palace, Qing Chou roared, the joy of taking revenge filled its heart. The green light around it had taken solid form and was stabbing into its body, but it completely ignored it...

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1518: Fallen Flower Hall versus Divine Bean Palace (2/2)

Fallen Flower Hall was inferior to Divine Bean Palace, with this impact, a huge hole formed on its west wall.

Qing Chou descended with rage as Divine Bean Palace attacked again.

At the same time, that flying spider also penetrated the surface of Fallen Flower Hall, Fang clan was in great danger now.

At the crucial moment, Fang An Lei screamed shrilly as she used the strongest method.

Immortal killer move — Empty Valley Orchid!

The entire Immortal Gu House started shrinking, in the blink of an eye, it became as small as a child’s toy.

The moment it landed on the desert, the hole created in contrast to Fallen Flower Hall’s original size, was like a tiny fish compared to the lake.

At this moment, on the surface of Fallen Flower Hall, countless flower petals appeared, becoming stalks or orchids as fragrance spread out.

Divine Bean Palace came crashing, but even though Fallen Flower Hall was right in front of it, it actually had to travel a huge distance to get to Fallen Flower Hall.

This rank eight Immortal Gu House was affected, along with Eagle Concubine and the winged black python immemorial soul beast as well.

Space was greatly expanded and stretched by several times.

Fang An Lei had her eyes shut as sweat rolled down her forehead, her expression was pale, she was trying hard to sustain the move.

“Amazing! I will deal with the flying spider.” Fang Yuan praised, coming out of the hole and flying towards the spider by taking a detour.

Under the effect of empty valley orchid, Fang Yuan was temporarily safe, he was in no danger of exposing reverse flow protection seal.

Immortal Gu Houses were different from ancient battle formations, within the Immortal Gu House, Fang Yuan could not use his methods, he was an observer. He could only act after he went outside.

“Let me see if rank eight Soul Beast Token is stronger than my hundred and eighty slaves!”

Immortal killer move — Hundred and Eighty Slaves!

Fang Yuan’s enslavement path killer move was very special, it enslaved higher ranked beasts. Fang Yuan had a soul beast army, he could enslave an immemorial soul beast.

But this flying spider was under the effect of rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token.

Fang Yuan wanted to enslave the flying spider, he was competing hundred and eighty slaves killer move against Soul Beast Token.

Once he used this move, the flying spider immemorial soul beast shook, its speed of infiltrating the Immortal Gu House became very slow.

“Impressive!” Fang Yun was joyful.

Fang Leng’s spirits also lifted.

Fang Yuan was surging with immortal aura, he activated the killer move hundred and eighty slaves to its limit, instilling the effect into the flying spider.

The flying spider struggled intensely, its control was contested between Fang Yuan and Old Ghost Bai Jun, it could not help itself.

Hundred and eighty slaves was rank seven, it could not match rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token. But the power of this move did not come entirely from Gu worms, it also depended on the number of soul beasts.

Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture had a large number of soul beasts, this increased the power of hundred and eighty slaves, allowing it to reach rank eight and rival Soul Beast Token.

Both sides were in a stalemate!

Fallen Flower Hall had landed in a deep pit in the desert, above it were Divine Bean Palace, an immemorial soul beast and Eagle Concubine, far away, there was a soul beast army with Old Ghost Bai Jun hidden behind two immemorial soul beasts.

Within Fallen Flower Hall, Fang An Lei had her eyes shut, she was frowning deeply, her body was shaking intensely, about to fall down.

She activated empty valley orchid and resisted a band of rank eight enemies, she was already going all out. Immortal Gu House Fallen Flower Hall was creaking, it could not last against so many enemies.

“The battle is really disadvantageous to my side.” Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with brilliance.

He did not display much of his battle strength, most of his methods were still unused. If he went all out, this battle would change drastically.

However, if he was careless and exposed reverse flow protection seal, Fang Yuan’s identity would be found out, that was detrimental to his plans.

“I need to disguise my identity while resolving this crisis, what should I do... hmm?” Suddenly, Fang Yuan had a sensation.

He saw the flying spider stopped shaking, it accepted the enslavement of hundred and eighty slaves. The power of Soul Beast Token, that was fighting with Fang Yuan earlier, had already disappeared.

“What is going on?” Fang Yuan turned to look, over ten li away, he could see that Old Ghost Bai Jun was coughing out blood.

The reason was, Old Ghost Bai Jun had reached his limits, even though he was trying desperately to continue, he had no energy to spare.

Using rank seven cultivation level to manipulate four immemorial soul beasts, even though he was using rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token, it was still an incredible display. But now, he could not continue anymore.

Rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token was on par with hundred and eighty slaves, but Old Ghost Bai Jun was not, he rapidly lost in the contest.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, after a few dozen breaths of time, he completely subdued the flying spider and obtained an immemorial soul beast.

“Senior, good job!” Fang Yun and Fang Leng felt a surge of morale.

Fang Yuan enslaved the flying spider, it was out of their expectations, but they did not feel any suspicions.

After all, Fang Yuan had manipulated a soul beast army earlier, it was understandable that he had a method to enslave immemorial soul beasts.

After getting the flying spider, Fang Yuan controlled it to attack Divine Bean Palace.

This immemorial soul beast was not Divine Bean Palace’s match, but it had an advantage in its small build, under Fang Yuan’s control, it was very useful.

However, it was difficult for the flying spider to travel as well.

It turned out that empty valley orchid did not differentiate enemy and ally, its effect also affected Fang Yuan’s immemorial soul beast.

“Is it because this move cannot be controlled freely, or has Fang An Lei reached her limits already, like what happened to Old Ghost Bai Jun?” Fang Yuan had a sense of worry.

At this moment, he felt something and turned around, seeing two Immortal Gu Houses flying towards them!

Eagle Concubine shouted in shock: “Master, let’s retreat!!”

At the crucial moment, Fang clan’s reinforcements arrived.

“Kill, kill him!” Qing Chou was completely shrouded by rage, it could not think logically, it did not care about the situation or what Eagle Concubine was saying, it only wanted to kill Fang Yuan.

Eagle Concubine saw that her master refused to retreat, her expression was pale, thinking that she was going to die here today.

Far away, Heavenly Lotus Sect’s first supreme elder Chen Yi had been observing the situation secretly, but he was also worried now.

“Oh no, oh no! Fang clan’s reinforcements have arrived, they are all high tier rank seven Immortal Gu Houses, Chicken Dog Coop and Inquiry Dock, if these two join with Fallen Flower Hall, they would create the battlefield killer move peach blossom maze. If I am trapped inside, I would not be able to escape, I would die. Not to mention Qing Chou who is trapped inside Divine Bean Palace, it is unable to use the full power of Divine Bean Palace.”

Thinking of this, Chen Yi sighed, he showed a helpless expression “To think that my first action in this trip is not to deal with Qing Chou but to help it instead.”

Saying so, green smoke appeared above his head, forming into the divine tree rapidly.

Immortal killer move – Karma Divine Tree!

The fruits on the karma divine tree shook, Divine Bean Palace shone with green light, turning the sky jade green.

Within the palace, countless green lights expanded, turning from twigs to spears, stabbing Qing Chou from all directions!

Qing Chou roared in anger, its hoarse voice carried a feeling of sadness, hatred, anger, and bitterness!

“I feel anger, I feel hatred, I am unwilling to give up, I want him dead!!!”

It was in a state of madness, an aura of power burst out within it, countless auras of Immortal Gu surged from its body, mixing together into an immortal killer move.

Boom—!

This killer move was terrifyingly powerful, it shot out and destroyed several huge pillars of Divine Bean Palace, next, the strong impact forced the door of Divine Bean Palace open!

Qing Chou roared, it finally saw the outside world through this door.

It mustered its strength and tried to get up, its snake neck was outstretched, it opened its mouth and almost extended all the way to its head, it was quite scary.

Swoosh!

With a soft sound, its purple tongue extended like a sharp blade, stabbing at Fang Yuan with a rapid speed.

The surroundings of Fallen Flower Hall were guarded by the killer move empty valley orchid, but this peculiar purple tongue sword was unrestricted, it pierced many layers of space, arriving at Fang Yuan’s forehead in an instant.

Intense killing intent assaulted him.

“I’ll dodge it!” A sinister light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes, he followed the hole that was created and went inside Fallen Flower Hall.

Puff!

The purple tongue sword chased him, crashing into Fallen Flower Hall and creating a hole.

But it did not slow down at all, it continued to extend, until it stabbed into Fang An Lei’s chest.

Fang Yun and Fang Leng were shocked.

Fang An Lei stared with her eyes wide open, her body was stiff, she slowly looked down at her chest.

“Friend!” Fang Yuan cried out in dismay.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1519: Finding Trouble After Plotting Against Them

Fang An Lei was hit by the purple tongue sword, she turned stiff as a rock, her face was started to turn purple as well.

That purple tongue sword pierced her body, but it was incredibly agile, it turned around and pierced towards Fang Yuan.

But at this point, Fang Yun and Fang Leng had already reacted, they controlled the Immortal Gu House as profound lights shined, suppressing the purple tongue sword and slowing it down.

Vines extended and coiled around Fang An Lei’s body, the fragrance of flowers permeated as colorful flowers grew, flower petals stuck to her flesh as light flowed into Fang An Lei’s body through the vines, healing her.

Fang Yuan had a grim expression, but coldness was concealed in his eyes, he was thinking rapidly.

Fang clan’s reinforcements had arrived, there were three Immortal Gu Houses now, Fallen Flower Hall, Chicken Dog Coop, and Inquiry Dock. These three Immortal Gu Houses could form the battlefield killer move peach blossom maze, it was incredibly powerful.

In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, during the five regions chaotic war, this move was extremely famous and threatening. Shadow Sect’s information also emphasized on this point, informing him to be careful.

After fighting for some time, Fang Yuan could tell that this Divine Bean Palace was strange.

Earlier, Qing Chou opened the palace door and attacked with its full power, Fang Yuan learned about some truths due to that.

It seemed to be an immemorial soul beast controlling this rank eight Immortal Gu House! And it could only fly around, it could not unleash the full power of this rank eight Immortal Gu House.

Immortal Gu Houses possessed both offense and defense, a charging attack was the most direct and time-saving method. But Immortal Gu Houses had all sorts of abilities, like Fallen Flower Hall’s mirror flower, fleeting bloom, and empty valley orchid, they were all killer moves. Hei tribe’s Dark Prison Immortal Gu House also had a method to enslave and store ancient desolate beasts.

Northern Plains’ Hei tribe was destroyed, it could not compare to a top super force of Western Desert like Fang clan.

Immortal Gu Houses were different in power levels too. If the rank eight

Immortal Gu House could not use its methods and could only move around and charge, it was not the match of Fang clan’s three Immortal Gu Houses.

But if Fang clan won and suppressed this rank eight Immortal Gu House, or even obtained it, what could Fang Yuan gain from that?

According to their alliance agreement, Fang Yuan would only get a rank six Immortal Gu and some immortal materials.

And possibly, after Fang clan obtains the rank eight Immortal Gu House, all four Immortal Gu Houses would forcefully make Fang Yuan sign a new alliance agreement!

In this current situation, with the Immortal Gu House in front of him, how could Fang Yuan not have any intention to reap profits?

But to do that, he needed to balance the strength of both sides, therefore, Fang Yuan improvised to use the purple tongue sword to weaken Fang clan, getting rid of Fang An Lei.

Having set an alliance agreement, how could Fang clan and Fang Yuan plot against each other like this?

But the truth was, the alliance agreement was very lax on this term, they barely covered it.

Therefore, Fang Yuan was safe after plotting against Fang An Lei!

Did Fang An Lei not know about this loophole?

Of course she knew!

In fact, this was Fang clan’s ill intention to begin with.

Fang An Lei was thinking of making use of Fang Yuan, the collection of the impermanence rock was a plan to make use of Fang Yuan.

Thus, because she had such plans, if she added that clause into the alliance agreement, she would be harming herself!

Therefore, Fang An Lei was intentionally lax on that aspect and did not create much restriction on it, moreover, the situation was urgent, even if Fang Yuan found out and raised objections, she could make use of this excuse.

Of course Fang Yuan found out!

He was so crafty, he had the same plans too, but he pretended to not notice and act dumb.

During the intense battle, Fang An Lei did not manage to succeed in her scheme against Fang Yuan, instead, she became the victim.

“Such guts!”

“We need to kill this scum!!”

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals screamed furiously in the two Immortal Gu Houses, they had already learned of Fang An Lei’s injury.

Chicken Dog Coop and Inquiry Dock rushed into the battlefield rapidly like shooting stars.

But before they even did anything, Divine Bean Palace shined with dazzling light.

Qing Chou tried its best but could not kill Fang Yuan, it was extremely weakened now, Divine Bean Palace suppressed it forcefully.

Divine Bean Palace started to activate on its own, green light spread in the battlefield, sending the fainted Old Ghost Bai Jun, the pale Eagle Concubine, and the remaining soul beasts into the palace and flying into the sky.

It retreated!

This was out of everyone’s expectations.

Even Fang Yuan was a little shocked, this was not in line with the enemy’s usual actions.

Divine Bean Palace flew rapidly, Fang clan’s Gu Immortals hesitated for a moment, Chicken Dog Coop stayed behind while Inquiry Dock flew into the sky, chasing after Divine Bean Palace.

This Chicken Dog Coop Immortal Gu House had a strange design, it looked like two buildings side by side, the left building was yellow and had a round plaque that had ‘chicken’ written on it, the right building was red and had the word ‘dog’ on its plaque.

The building’s entrance opened as a Fang clan Gu Immortal flew out, entering Fallen Flower Hall and shouting in anxiety: “An Lei, An Lei!”

But Fang An Lei’s face was purple, she was unconscious.

Fang Yun and Fang Leng had tired and worried expressions, the latter expressed his guilt: “We did not react in time, it was our fault.”

This Fang clan Gu Immortal stared at them fiercely: “Of course it’s your fault!”

Next, his expression changed as he inspected and found that Fang An Lei was about to die, he shouted: “An Lei, An Lei, you need to persevere!!”

He tried using healing methods but they were ineffective.

Right at this time, an orange profound light shot out of Chicken Dog Coop, entering Fang An Lei’s forehead.

The purple miasma on Fang An Lei’s face eased as her life was saved, but she was still unconscious, barely hanging onto life.

“This killer move is very peculiar, it is a soul path killer move but has poison path effect. She is poisoned, I can only suppress her injury, I cannot heal it!” At this time, an elderly Gu Immortal walked in, he had white hair and wore a yellow robe, showing a solemn expression.

“Greetings, third supreme elder.” Fang Yun and Fang Leng quickly greeted.

“Fang clan’s third supreme elder, Fang Hua Sheng...” Fang Yuan thought about this person’s intel.

“It’s you! You were the one who hid inside Fallen Flower Hall and lured the attack here, causing my An Lei to be hit by that attack, you are the culprit behind this!!” That Fang clan Gu Immortal who was holding Fang An Lei screamed at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan looked at him coldly, snorting arrogantly: “Who are you?”

“I am Fang Chen...” That Gu Immortal spoke.

But before he finished, Fang Yuan waved his sleeves: “I don’t care who you are, if you are unhappy, we can have a fight, do you want a martial duel or a literature duel, I will accept either. If you want to use Fang clan’s forces to deal with me, Suan Bu Jin, hehe, you can go ahead and do that.”

Saying so, Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with cold light, he looked around imposingly, his aura was overpowering.

“Oh no.” Fang Leng and Fang Yun’s hearts sank, Fang Yuan refused to back down, he was very overpowering, they were afraid that the two sides might get into a conflict.

There was nothing wrong with Fang Yuan hiding inside Fallen Flower Hall in their opinion.

After all, making good use of the Immortal Gu House on their side was a normal tactic. Not to mention that he was even a wisdom path Gu Immortal.

Fang Yuan had saved their lives, Fang Yun felt that he was their benefactor. And most importantly, Fang Yuan played a huge role in the earlier combat, if he did not subdue the flying spider immemorial soul beast, Fallen Flower Hall would have broken apart already.

As for the luring of the attack, Fang Yuan might not have expected Fang An Lei to get hit.

And in truth, even Fang Leng and Fang Yun did not expect that Fang An Lei could not dodge in time, that was also why they got stunned earlier.

“Fang Chen, watch your words. Friend Suan Bu Jin is an ally of our Fang clan, we have an alliance agreement and he even fought hard in the battle earlier, how can you slander him?” Fang Hua Sheng’s expression changed, he chided Fang Chen.

Next, he turned his gaze to Fang Yuan, saying sincerely: “Fang Chen is the husband of Fang An Lei, he is worried about his wife, he did not mean to offend you, friend, I hope you can forgive him.”

Fang Chen was the husband of Fang An Lei, but he had the same surname?

Fang Yuan instantly understood, this Fang Chen had married into Fang clan, he was a lone immortal that was recruited into their clan, after marrying Fang An Lei, he even changed his own surname.

After getting scolded, Fang Chen lowered his head and did not dare to scream at Fang Yuan anymore, he lowered his head to check on Fang An Lei, even though his methods were useless, he did not stop trying.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly, he thought: “Fang Yun and Fang Leng are worried, Fang Hua Sheng is an old sly fox, Fang Chen is not simple either, as an in-law of Fang clan, he is likely not overcome by emotions, he just had to play his part and act like that because his wife was heavily injured. But it is a pity, I do not fear them.”

Fang Yuan was fearless, because of that alliance agreement.

Fang An Lei had made that alliance agreement on behalf of Fang clan, she had interacted the most with Fang Yuan.

If Fang clan went back on their words, Fang An Lei would face the backlash of the information path dao marks. In her current condition, how could she take that?

Any bit of backlash would kill her on the spot!

This was what Fang Yuan wanted to see.

Of course, there were methods to break alliance agreements, but those methods carried risks, they were not completely safe.

And even if Fang clan had such methods, in Fang An Lei’s current condition, they would be apprehensive to use them.

It could be said that the fainted Fang An Lei was Fang Yuan’s greatest protection.

Fang Yuan was fearless, he sneered: “Friend Fang Hua Sheng, your Fang clan needs to give me a good answer. Otherwise, I will not let this go!”

“Hmm?” Fang Yun and Fang Leng looked at each other, what was Senior Suan Bu Jin doing by questioning Fang clan now?

Even Fang Chen, who was lowering his head, turned to look at Fang Yuan, his gaze had the meaning of ‘how could this person be so overbearing, even though I did not provoke you further, you are actually going overboard to find trouble with us?’

Fang Hua Sheng also had an appropriate display of confusion and coldness on his face: “What do you mean, friend? Does my Fang clan owe you anything?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1520: Negotiation Fails

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, he looked at Fang Hua Sheng without fear, his gaze was cold and his attitude was unyielding.

Under everyone’s gazes, he spoke: “I, Suan Bu Jin, am a wisdom path Gu Immortal, would I really be so easily deceived? Why did your Fang clan’s Gu Immortals fall into Old Ghost Bai Jun’s hands? In this battle, Fang clan’s reinforcements came at such a timing, you could casually bring out two rank seven Immortal Gu Houses and multiple Gu Immortals. Since when did Fang clan have so many Gu Immortals to mobilize at will?”

Fallen Flower Hall turned silent.

Fang Yuan had all sorts of wisdom path methods, earlier, he did not have enough information, but now, he could deduce many things from just the fragmented information he had gathered.

Fang Chen’s expression changed, his gaze turned dark.

Fang Yun and Fang Leng looked at each other with awkward expressions.

Fang Hua Sheng laughed loudly, worthy of a sly old fox.

He laughed heartily: “Friend Suan Bu Jin, you are absolutely right, I am not going to beat about the bush, I’ll tell you. This is Fang clan’s tactic, for generations, we have plotted to obtain this rank eight Immortal Gu House, we must have it! Friend, if you lend us a hand, we will express our deepest gratitude. See this.”

Saying so, he took out an information path mortal Gu and handed it to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan took a look, it was another alliance agreement.

The rules were: As long as Fang Yuan helped Fang clan to take the rank eight Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace, Fang clan would compensate him with a rank seven Immortal Gu, he would be allowed to choose one from their treasury. There would also be a lot of rank six and seven immortal materials given to him.

Of course, confidentiality was the most important point.

The information path Gu worm emphasized this, even if Fang Yuan did not undergo the agreement and gave up, Fang clan would not stop him. But he would have to go somewhere and cultivate in seclusion for some time, and follow another confidentiality agreement as well.

“Oh? Divine Bean Palace, is that the Immortal Gu House created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable?”

“Information about this Immortal Gu House is very rare, even within Shadow Sect’s true inheritance, there is little said about it.”

“Fang clan has been plotting for so long, they are actually after Divine Bean Palace.”

“Rank eight Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable... Fang clan has put in so much time, resources, and manpower, of course they need the confidentiality.”

Fang Yuan pondered.

The confidentiality agreement was not too much to ask, even Fang Yuan would do so.

Fang clan was already very polite, of course, the reason was that Fang Yuan had great strength and was a rare wisdom path Gu Immortal, Fang clan wanted to recruit him.

At the same time, because Divine Bean Palace was involved, Fang clan had to be very careful, during this period, any of their decisions had to be carefully thought out, they did not want to provoke Fang Yuan.

If this person had any special methods and ruined Fang clan’s plans, what would they do?

Right now, Fang Yuan’s problem was not about keeping confidentiality, but what could he gain from this entire event.

The biggest gain was the Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace, of course!

Fang Yuan could fight rank eight, thus, even if he was inside Fallen Flower Hall and was surrounded by Fang clan Gu Immortals, it was easy to fight his way out.

But to ruin his relationship with Fang clan for the Divine Bean Palace that had yet to be obtained, it was too big of a loss.

Let alone whether Fang Yuan could defeat the amply prepared Fang clan, even regarding Divine Bean Palace itself, it was hard for Fang Yuan to suppress it.

And Fang Yuan also needed a vast number of soul cores in green ghost desert to cultivate...

After thinking about it thoroughly, Fang Yuan decided to play around with them for now, it was too early to go against them. And alliance agreements were not unresolvable.

Even if he could not resolve them, Fang Yuan had methods to restrict, delay, and use immortal killer move self cleansing later. Even if it did not work, Fang Yuan could go to Northern Plains and borrow Immortal Gu No and Care to create immortal killer move ‘do not care’.

Thus, Fang Yuan spoke: “If your clan obtains the rank eight Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace, your strength will rise to the top of Western Desert. Your conquest is in sight, but you are only offering peanuts to me, isn’t it too little?”

Saying so, Fang Yuan paused and destroyed the information path mortal Gu, he placed his arms behind his back as he said: “Actually, I can be bought over, but this amount is simply too little.”

Fang Hua Sheng saw Fang Yuan’s look of arrogance as he thought: “The intel is right, this person is truly full of himself!”

He smiled and said to Fang Yuan: “Oh? Friend, this means you want to participate in this and help our Fang clan? This is naturally better!”

“After all, Divine Bean Palace originates from Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, it is legendary. How can I not participate in such an event? Moreover, if I do not join, would your Fang clan feel assured with me?” Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered.

Fang Hua Sheng praised: “Hahaha, you are very understanding. We are not misers, we can negotiate over what conditions you have. However... the compensation must match the amount of contribution, I am sure you agree with that?”

Fang Yuan smiled: “Of course, let’s settle the scores first. Firstly, even if I do nothing and watch, keeping confidential is already a form of contribution to Fang clan, you need to compensate me for that. Secondly, I saved Fang Yun and Fang Leng, even though I did that on a whim, I undoubtedly helped you in this plan to get Divine Bean Palace. Earlier, I did not want any rewards, but now, I do. Furthermore, I was attacked and helped to defend Fallen Flower Hall, fighting against such strong enemies in a dangerous fight, I need compensation for that too. And finally, even after my efforts, a member of your Fang clan accused me and slandered my goodwill, my mood has been ruined, I also need to be compensated for that.”

Fang Yun and Fang Leng heard Fang Yuan’s chain of words as they went into a daze.

“Why did he involve me?” Fang Chen was stunned: “And... bad mood also needs to be compensated?!”

Fang Hua Sheng’s old face was twitching, he noticed that negotiating with this wisdom path Gu Immortal would be a troublesome affair!

Fang Yuan listed endless demands, while Fang Hua Sheng tried to lower them.

But how could he be Fang Yuan’s match?

Fang Yuan purposely made all of his claims complex and unreasonable, after Fang Hua Sheng negotiated with him and changed a term, Fang Yuan would go back to a previous term and edit that in retrospect.

Using this method, Fang Hua Sheng was soon confused by Fang Yuan’s constant changes, he could not continue in this negotiation.

But Fang Yuan did not let him go, he continued to advance in his claims.

Eventually, their negotiations ended up exceeding Fang Hua Sheng’s bottom line.

“I cannot accept this condition. Friend Suan Bu Jin, you can consider it, I will be inside the Immortal Gu House Chicken Dog Coop, after you think about it, you can find me for the alliance agreement.” He left with a dark expression, waving his sleeves and leaving.

After leaving Fallen Flower Hall, Fang Hua Sheng entered Chicken Dog Coop.

The negotiation failed!

Fang Chen took a peek at Fang Yuan, in his eyes, gratification could be discerned.

Fang Yun and Fang Leng had complex emotions, Fang Yuan was their savior, but their clan’s benefits were involved. They decided to stay silent and did not speak.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, Fang Hua Sheng said that he could not accept it, but that did not mean Fang clan could not accept it. This matter was too important, Fang Hua Sheng left because he could not outmatch Fang Yuan in words, he purposely left, it was a tactic.

“Hehe, Fang clan is after Divine Bean Palace, regardless of success or failure, I need to set an alliance agreement that benefits me. Firstly, it would show my sincerity, secondly, if I fail to get Divine Bean Palace, this would be my backup compensation.”

Fang clan sent their third supreme elder, it gave him some leeway.

The current Fang clan was governed by the first supreme elder, while the second supreme elder was the strategist. These were the two people in power, Fang Yuan had to set the agreement with them.

“Fang clan’s first supreme elder has rank eight cultivation level, while second supreme elder Fang Di Chang is a wisdom path great grandmaster, but has rank seven cultivation level. He will likely be coming.”

As expected, a moment later, an Immortal Gu House appeared, it was Inquiry Dock.

While the Immortal Gu House was still in the sky, Fang Hua Sheng came out of Chicken Dog Coop and flew over.

Soon, Fang Hua Sheng entered Inquiry Dock: “Second supreme elder, how did it go?”

Fang Di Chang said: “Divine Bean Palace got faster and faster, we could not catch up, but we have already used a tracking method, it cannot run from us. Now, we need to repair Fallen Flower Hall and combine all three houses to create the battlefield killer move peach blossom maze and trap Divine Bean Palace, to ensure our victory.”

Fang Hua Sheng reported: “That Suan Bu Jin is a tough person to handle, he has gone overboard, our negotiation failed.”

“Not yet?” Fang Di Chang smiled, bright light flashing in his eyes.

Fang Hua Sheng smiled bitterly: “He has a glib tongue, his words are filled with traps, I am not his match. But he has been staying inside Fallen Flower Hall, that place is isolated from the outside world, he is purposely dispelling the suspicion that would come of leaving. Even though his conditions are absurd, he wants to make the alliance agreement with us, it shows his sincerity.”

Fang Di Chang pondered: “This might not be sincerity, he might be fearless. Fang An Lei was injured, he is quite suspicious. But for our clan’s plan, we can tolerate him for now. After all, a little impatience will spoil great plans, after the negotiation failed, this person remained in Fallen Flower Hall, he is likely waiting for me to negotiate with him. Fine, I will meet him.”

Inquiry Dock landed as Fang Di Chang came outside, going to meet with Fang Yuan inside Fallen Flower Hall.

This was the first time they met.

Fang Di Chang observed Fang Yuan, mentally nodding as he evaluated: “Arrogant and prideful, he must have his superior aspect. Just the act of escaping from the attack of Divine Bean Palace shows his strength. Moreover, he cultivates wisdom path, he is not to be underestimated.”

Fang Yuan assessed Fang Di Chang, seeing that he had a plain face and ordinary appearance, he was internally shocked: “This person is Fang Di Chang? His immortal aura is utterly concealed, even I cannot sense anything from him, he is deeply hidden, as worthy of a wisdom path great grandmaster!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1521: Peach Blossom Maze

Fang clan had a long history.

As a super force in Western Desert, Fang clan was famous in the world for the Gu house business. It had its own unique wisdom path inheritance.

Because both mortal and Immortal Gu Houses were essentially immortal killer moves, they were made from countless Gu worms, being comprehensive in both offense and defense.

Fang clan researched Gu houses and designed new Gu houses, they were deducing new immortal killer moves, they could not do that without deep wisdom path attainment.

One could say that Fang clan’s wisdom path inheritance was incredible, after generations of research, even Fang Yuan who obtained Spectral Soul’s true inheritance could learn much from it.

Of course, even though the wisdom path inheritance was superb, the inheritor needed to be of a certain caliber.

In the current generation, not only was Fang Di Chang compatible with it, he even made Fang clan’s wisdom path inheritance prosper, becoming a great grandmaster!

He did not use any dream realms to become great grandmaster after all, he had reached it through hard work and research, step by step.

Fang clan had wisdom path inheritors through each generation, but for the last thousand years, Fang Di Chang was the only great grandmaster that emerged.

To reach this attainment level, immense talent was needed, resources alone could not produce such a genius.

Fang Di Chang and Fang Yuan negotiated, the two fought with words, it was like two sword experts fighting in an enclosed space.

Fang Yuan was suppressed gradually, it was a troublesome opponent.

“As expected of a wisdom path great grandmaster, impressive.” Fang Yuan could make Fang Hua Sheng completely helpless in a contest of words, but Fang Di Chang resolved them without any problem, nothing that Fang Yuan said had any effect.

Fang Di Chang had a clear head and memory, his logic was smooth and reasonable, Fang Yuan could not confuse him.

When people spoke, it was like a game of chess, thinking three moves ahead, some things did not need to be said, while some were crucial to the conversation to prevent twisting of one’s words.

When wisdom path Gu Immortals talked, they were not three steps ahead, they were hundreds or even a thousand steps ahead.

Fang Yuan negotiated with Fang Di Chang not just regarding his own benefits, they even did analysis of the situation, discussing the matters of Divine Bean Palace, Fang clan’s current state, and even the entire trend of Western Desert.

It was simply a debate!

These things could not be understood by the human brain, they needed to use wisdom path methods and create countless thoughts, to deduce while debating.

Fang Yun and Fang Leng were completely dazed while listening to them, thinking that these two were monsters with incredible cognition speed, they could speak without any thinking time, their words were sharp like swords, listening to them made one feel extremely stupid.

“My wisdom path dao marks are insufficient, even though I have Immortal Gu, they were obtained recently. And they are not a complete set either, compared to the other party, my foundation is too weak.”

“In the future, if I fight against Fang clan, I need to find a way and kill this person first!”

In terms of wisdom path methods, Fang Di Chang surpassed Fang Yuan. But Fang Yuan had rank eight battle strength, far superior to Fang Di Chang.

Fang Di Chang thought: this person’s wisdom path cultivation is truly amazing. If he could be recruited into Fang clan, it would be their blessing!

He felt an urge to recruit this talented individual.

If he knew Fang Yuan’s true identity and the fact that Fang Yuan was planning to kill him, how would he feel?

“Hahaha.” While debating, Fang Yuan suddenly laughed.

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals were confused, why was he laughing for no reason.

Fang Yuan bowed to Fang Di Chang: “I have heard of senior’s name long ago, it seems you truly live up to your reputation, I have learned a lot.”

Fang Yuan’s sudden change of attitude made everyone feel surprised, they could not understand why Fang Yuan took the initiative to lower his requests.

“Earlier, I was merely finding trouble with your clan. Now that you have greater skills, how could I continue acting like so?” Fang Yuan had a cold expression, even when he apologized, he had an arrogant look.

“Oh? I understand now, this person is prideful, I have finally gained his admiration. Earlier, he was just trying to retaliate. But now that he saw my strength, he has been impressed.” Fang Di Chang’s gaze flickered, he felt a deep emotion: “With this personality and ability, he is not blindly arrogant, there is great benefit in getting him to join Fang clan. But now, Divine Bean Palace is most important, his matter can wait first.”

Since Fang Yuan took a step back, both sides did not need to argue further, they quickly set a new agreement.

This alliance agreement was very strict, there were no loopholes in it. Even Fang Yuan frowned secretly, all of the conditions were clearly listed, even the use of self cleansing could violate it. It would not be easy to get free from this restriction, he would need to prepare in advance and expend a lot of manpower and resources.

Of course, Fang clan was equally bound by this agreement.

Since the alliance agreement was made, both sides became closer, Fang Yun, Fang Leng, and the rest looked at Fang Yuan in a warmer light.

“The matter of obtaining Divine Bean Palace is of paramount importance, getting friend Suan Bu Jin’s help is our blessing. I hope you will come to Inquiry Dock with me, we need your help.” Fang Di Chang invited.

Fang Yuan rolled his eyes in his mind.

This Fang Di Chang was not trusting of him after the alliance agreement, he wanted to keep Fang Yuan by his side.

A wisdom path great grandmaster is truly a troublesome person.

But Fang Yuan’s confidence was in his battle strength, he was not afraid of Fang clan. In fact, he wanted Fang clan to attack him, that way he could execute the clause in the alliance agreement — if any side plots against the other, the other party would be able to retaliate without breaking the alliance agreement.

After settling Fang Yuan’s matter, Fang Di Chang went on to repair Immortal Gu House Fallen Flower Hall, while getting more reinforcements.

Half a day later, Fang clan’s Gu Immortals worked together and repaired Fallen Flower Hall completely.

If the Immortal Gu House was damaged, repairing would be hard. Fang clan had such efficiency, they were truly the number one super force in expertise of Gu houses within Western Desert, and perhaps even the world.

Not long after, Fang clan’s reinforcements came, two rank seven and one rank six.

After stabilizing Fang An Lei’s injuries, she was sent back to Fang clan’s headquarters by Fang Chen in an unconscious state.

One of the two rank seven reinforcements replaced Fang An Lei to control Fallen Flower Hall.

This way, Fang clan had more than ten Gu Immortals in green ghost desert, with half of them being rank seven! Among them, there was Fang clan’s second supreme elder Fang Di Chang, and third supreme elder Fang Hua Sheng, they were both strong experts famous in Western Desert. There were also rank six elites like Fang Yun and Fang Leng.

This was a huge lineup, one could say that Fang clan had mobilized most of their Gu Immortals in this expedition, they were truly adamant on getting Divine Bean Palace.

After all, super forces had a lot of territory, they needed Gu Immortals to guard their resource points. Like Wu clan, even as the number one Southern Border super force, it could not easily relocate Gu Immortals, Wu Yong was kept busy because of this matter.

“Fang clan brought out so many Gu Immortals now, they must have been planning this for so long, they should already be guarding their territories by appearing to make their forces deployed elsewhere, or making secret alliances.”

This was very risky for Fang clan.

If anything went wrong and they fell for the other super forces’ schemes, Fang clan would be severely weakened, they would suffer huge losses. They might even face extermination.

“But for the sake of getting rank eight Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace, this risk is worth it!” Fang Yuan nodded in his mind, he approved of this action.

After resting for a while, Fang clan’s Gu Immortals moved out.

The three Immortal Gu Houses flew together, within Inquiry Dock, Fang Yuan was standing beside Fang Di Chang.

Unexpectedly, Fang Di Chang actually let him participate in controlling Inquiry Dock!

The control of the Immortal Gu House was led by Fang Di Chang and several other Fang clan Gu Immortals. Letting an outsider like Fang Yuan take part in it was the same as exposing Inquiry Dock’s secrets to him.

If Fang Yuan could learn the profundities of Inquiry Dock now, it would be much easier to deal with it in the future.

Sensing Fang Yuan’s expression, Fang Di Chang smiled: “Friend, you wonder why I trust you so much? Hehehe, actually, it is not a problem for us even if you learn about Inquiry Dock’s profundities. Firstly, we have an alliance agreement, and secondly, some things are easier said in theory, and thirdly, the design of our Inquiry Dock does not stay stagnant over time. The truth is, our Immortal Gu

Houses develop as our clan progresses, they continuously get stronger.”

Fang Yuan was moved: “I have learned about Fang clan’s style of doing things today.”

Fang Di Chang laughed loudly: “Come to speak of it, I am not sure about your situation, have you been cultivating in green ghost desert all this time?”

Fang Yuan did not panic when he was asked, he had prepared for this long ago. He answered appropriately and even Fang Di Chang could not sense anything weird.

The two continued to talk while the other Gu Immortals in Inquiry Dock focused on controlling the Immortal Gu House.

“It seems that this Fang Di Chang wants to recruit me.” Fang Yuan could sense it from the other party’s tone and expression, feeling a little amused internally.

But he did not expose this, he pacified Fang Di Chang as much as he could.

“We have arrived, this is it.” After another while of flying, Fang Di Chang’s suddenly fixed his gaze as he ordered the three Immortal Gu Houses to stop.

This was still in green ghost desert, but below the three Immortal Gu Houses, there was an ordinary desert with no outstanding features.

Fang Di Chang squinted his eyes: “This Divine Bean Palace is indeed deeply concealed, set up the formation now!”

Immortal battlefield killer move — Peach Blossom Maze!

At once, the surrounding thousand li turned into a peach forest, the trees were extremely tall and the branches were extremely dense, there were no leaves or flowers, not to mention fruits, they were completely bare.

“Amazing!!” Fang Yuan’s heart couldn’t help but shake.

This immortal battlefield killer move could trap even rank eight Gu Immortals, it was very impressive.

After all, this could only be created by combining the effects of three rank seven Immortal Gu Houses.

“Oh? They are here?” Deep underground, Chen Yi’s heart also jumped.

At this moment, he had actually infiltrated Divine Bean Palace!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1522: Green Armor Vegetable Garden

Central Continent’s Heavenly Lotus Sect was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable. During his era, this sect was the number one sect in Central Continent without doubt!

But now, it was reduced to mid-tier among the ten great ancient sects.

Times changed, be it organizations or people, they would not remain constant, there were no force that stayed strong forever, nor would they stay weak constantly.

As the first supreme elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect, Chen Yi had Genesis Lotus' true inheritance, he had the ability to greatly interfere with Divine Bean Palace and influence it.

Fairy Zi Wei was adept at deploying people efficiently, she did not send anyone else to help Chen Yi, he could singlehandedly take over Divine Bean Palace and eliminate the legendary immemorial soul beast Qing Chou, it was highly likely that he could succeed.

But something happened along the way.

"Because of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, this Qing Chou was formed in Divine Bean Palace, it has some of the powers of karma divine tree. Thus, it can sense anyone closely related to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, if I can capture it, I will be able to research and increase my own understanding of karma divine tree, I can even use it to find the remaining Shadow Sect members!"

Chen Yi was moved.

It was not hard to take over Divine Bean Palace and kill Qing Chou. It was originally quite troublesome, but now that Qing Chou was weakened, it was completely suppressed by Divine Bean Palace.

Chen Yi was a rank eight Gu Immortal, the first supreme elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect, he had incredible strength, using Divine Bean Palace, he could easily get rid of Qing Chou.

However, Chen Yi had deeper considerations.

He was the first supreme elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect, he had the highest status there! Once this matter was settled, he would go to Heavenly Court, by then, he would no longer be the first supreme elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect, his status would fall greatly.

Heavenly Court was the strongest organization in the world, after Chen Yi joins, he would be a newcomer, he would have the lowest status.

Chen Yi had been the first supreme elder for so long, he had been used to the benefits of authority at the top. He would not feel comfortable with this fall in status, he would want to change this and elevate his status if possible.

And to raise one's status in Heavenly Court, it could be hard or easy depending on the situation, the method was always the same, one had to make contributions.

"If I can control Qing Chou, it would help in hunting down Shadow Sect, I would be very important in Heavenly Court. I would be able to make contributions and raise my status and strength rapidly, I would no longer be in this awkward spot of being a newcomer."

"Ancestor Genesis Lotus had karma divine tree, but this move was wood path after all, he might not have predicted today's situation. If he knew about the situation now, he would surely understand and acknowledge why I am doing this."

Chen Yi made up his mind, after infiltrating Divine Bean Palace, he cooperated with it in suppressing Qing Chou, while trying to subdue this legendary immemorial soul beast.

But just as he was still in the process of doing so, Fang clan’s Gu Immortals arrived and set up the immortal battlefield killer move peach blossom maze.

Once it was set up, Chen Yi immediately sensed it.

“They came after all.” Chen Yi had a calm expression, he was not flustered. He had already expected Fang clan’s arrival.

“Go.” Chen Yi stood within the palace, facing Qing Chou, he waved his sleeves and ordered Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine.

In such a short time, he had already subdued them.

Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine wanted to resist, but after knowing Chen Yi’s cultivation level and identity, along with Chen Yi’s control over Divine Bean Palace that suppressed their master, these two immediately defected and became Chen Yi’s lackeys.

Howl! Howl!

The entrance of Divine Bean Palace opened, a large number of soul beasts charged out.

Over at the other end, at Fang clan’s side.

As a wisdom path great grandmaster and the second supreme elder, Fang Di Chang was the leader of this expedition without doubt.

He ordered as several Gu Immortals flew out of the three Immortal Gu Houses, converging towards the Divine Bean Palace at the center.

“This peach blossom maze is truly profound! In reality, this Divine Bean Palace should be hidden deep down below the desert, but after the peach blossom maze was set up, it became exposed here in entirety.” Fang Yuan was still inside Inquiry Dock, his eyes were shining as he praised peach blossom maze in his mind.

Immortal battlefield killer moves could create an environment that benefited the user.

The peach blossom maze killer move was extremely amazing, it directly changed the terrain of the desert, forcing the hidden Divine Bean Palace to be exposed.

Fang Yuan could not understand the mechanics behind this, he could only make some guesses.

Fang clan’s three Immortal Gu Houses were concealed now, they were the cores that sustained the battlefield killer move peach blossom maze, the Gu Immortals inside them were constantly expending immortal essence.

This huge battlefield was filled with peach trees.

At the center of this peach tree forest, there was a majestic Immortal Gu House, Divine Bean Palace.

At this moment, Divine Bean Palace’s entrance opened, a larger number of soul beasts emerged. Countless desolate level and ancient desolate level soul beasts, along with three immemorial soul beasts!

These three immemorial soul beasts were naturally the ones that Fang An Lei and

Fang Yuan had fought before, the winged black python, bull body leopard tail, and single eyed giant.

Meanwhile, Fang clan had six Gu Immortals, two rank six, four rank seven, Fang Leng, Fang Yun and Fang Chen were included, while third supreme elder Fang Hua Sheng was the person in charge.

When the soul beasts came out of Divine Bean Palace, they did not charge at Fang clan, instead, they surrounded Divine Bean Palace and stood quietly in a circular formation, encircling it.

Boom boom boom!

When both sides fought, Fang clan’s Gu Immortals were deeply shocked.

The attacks that they unleashed on the soul beast army had great power, but when the commotion ended, these soul beasts suffered little injuries, and their injuries were even healing rapidly.

“What is happening?”

“These soul beasts seem to be in a peculiar formation, their locations are specially arranged.”

While feeling suspicion, Chen Yi suddenly shouted in Divine Bean Palace , the entire place shined in green light, while also emerging from the deepest part of these soul beasts.

Crack crack.

With a series of crisp sounds, these green lights formed into wooden armor that attached to these soul beasts, shielding them from head to toe.

Fang Yuan did not understand, but within Inquiry Dock, Fang Di Chang’s expression changed as he exclaimed: “This is Divine Bean Palace’s immortal killer move — Green Armor Vegetable Garden.”

“Green armor vegetable garden?” Fang Yuan asked.

Fang Di Chang looked at him and smiled bitterly: “This is all the information Fang clan has, we merely know the name and appearance, we do not know its exact effect.”

Fang Yuan showed deep interest in his eyes, he looked at the battlefield: “This move has to do with Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, it must not be simple. Let’s probe it first.”

Fang Di Chang nodded: “Indeed.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1523: Extorting Fang Di Chang

Fang clan continued to send out immortal killer moves that landed on the soul beast army. The scene was like a field of colorful fireworks.

Light shined on the Fang clan Gu Immortals’ faces, but they had ugly expressions.

“Even though there are some soul beasts killed, there is little effect overall. Their green armor can actually be linked together and split the damage evenly, that is amazing!”

The six Gu Immortals from Fang clan could not make an impact, at this time, a purple clothed female immortal flew out of Immortal Gu House Chicken Dog Coop.

“Let me try!” She shouted as she used the immortal killer move that she had already prepared.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

At once, poisonous clouds appeared in the sky.

The huge poisonous clouds casted their shadows downwards and shrouded Divine Bean Palace as well as the soul beasts.

Within the clouds, countless sparrows flew out like arrows, moving rapidly and agilely, they were formed from the immortal killer move.

Tens of millions of sparrows flew into the soul beast army, it was a chaotic mess.

But soon, Fang clan’s Gu Immortals developed grim expressions.

The killer move had quite a grand entrance, but its effect was low.

“Even Fang Zhi’s poisonous cloud arrow sparrow is useless, poison path does not have an effect, it seems this green armor vegetable garden has no weaknesses.” Within Inquiry Dock, Fang Di Chang frowned tightly.

He turned his head towards Fang Yuan: “I wonder if friend Suan Bu Jin has any ideas?”

Fang Yuan shook his head: “I cannot find any weaknesses either. But in my humble opinion, this Divine Bean Palace is acting differently from before, it is much more reactive now. Green armor vegetable garden is one aspect, but these soul beasts are also moving in sync and cooperating, they are defending Divine Bean Palace perfectly. The difference is too great now.”

Fang Di Chang nodded.

He knew that Fang An Lei and Fang Yuan had fought against Divine Bean Palace earlier, it could only charge around earlier and could not use killer moves, like a brute.

But now, this Divine Bean Palace was unmoving like a mountain, it was like a general in the battlefield, defending its formation and making Fang clan unable to advance.

The difference in performance was huge, the reason behind it was worrying Fang Di Chang.

“I set up peach blossom maze, but Divine Bean Palace has not reacted to it, it is merely defending, is it unable to move? Or is it stalling for time?”

Fang Di Chang was worried about the final possibility.

If they were stalling, there had to be a reason.

Because of this, Fang Di Chang made up his mind and told the Fang clan Gu Immortals who were fighting: “Come back, we will use peach blossom maze to attack!”

Peach blossom maze was an immortal battlefield killer move, it could trap rank eight Gu Immortals, it was not simple at all.

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals returned to the Immortal Gu Houses as peach blossom maze started to grow.

The empty branches started to bud as green color spread, in the blink of an eye, a lush forest had appeared.

An intense wind started to blow.

There was rustling among the trees, jade light waves started to develop.

These waves crashed towards Divine Bean Palace.

The soul beast army was forced to retreat, the desolate and ancient desolate level soul beasts at the periphery were all sent flying by the jade light waves.

Peach blossom maze suddenly changed as it became extremely offensive, the soul beast army could not resist it.

These soul beasts were roaring, but the jade light waves could not resisted by these individual beasts.

Chen Yi frowned within Divine Bean Palace: “This peach blossom maze is quite something.”

At this moment, he was still suppressing Qing Chou, he could not free himself to control Divine Bean Palace personally.

Divine Bean Palace burst out with profound light, enveloping all of the remaining soul beasts, these lights enveloped most of the soul beasts and gathered them into the bodies of the three immemorial soul beasts.

The three immemorial soul beasts seemed to have gotten a huge boost, their bodies expanded, they became gigantic monsters.

The three monsters were like mountains that blocked the jade light waves entirely.

Peach blossom maze transformed again.

The jade light waves faded as the greenery condensed into a red halo. Next, countless red halos emerged like stars in the night sky, they were blooming peach blossoms.

The peach blossoms were extremely vibrant, due to the intense winds, countless petals were flying around.

The petals slowly gathered as they formed into human figures in the sky.

“This killer move is called flowery wind warriors, friend, I would like to trouble you to control a part of them.” Fang Di Chang said to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan nodded, after getting the authorization, he could also control the human shaped flowers.

As for the quantity...

At Fang Yuan’s first attempt, he controlled twelve flowery wind warriors.

“Oh?” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with surprise: “Every flowery wind warrior can be instilled with a killer move that would be unleashed upon self-detonating them when ready.”

“You are very perceptive, this is the use of flowery wind warriors.” Fang Di Chang smiled as he said.

Fang Yuan tried to use immortal killer move ignited thought flying rock.

Immediately, he controlled a flowery wind warrior as it flew towards the top of Divine Bean Palace, self-detonating by itself.

After detonating, waves of thought rocks crashed towards the ground.

Divine Bean Palace did not move, but the three immemorial soul beasts were ignited with the flames of thoughts as their bodies shook.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined, he praised in amazement: “The killer moves are unleashed almost as quickly as by ourselves, it not only fixes an Immortal Gu House’s weakness, it allows us to use the advantage of numbers without fear of expenditure, many tactics need to be done carefully, but this move allows us to act rashly without consequences.”

While he said that, Fang Yuan moved a flowery wind warrior and rushed down, arriving at an immemorial soul beast.

Immortal killer move — Hundred and Eighty Slaves!

Once he used this move, the immemorial soul beast’s body froze, it was attacked by a formless force.

At the same time, another three flowery wind warriors descended, self-detonating into three immortal killer moves that blasted it into oblivion.

But at the next moment, Divine Bean Palace flashed with green light, the immemorial soul beast that was injured rapidly healed as its injuries were not heavy to begin with.

Difficult fight!

Even with a unique move like flowery wind warriors, Divine Bean Palace was too sturdy and firm in defense, the three immemorial soul beasts were like tough shields, regardless of their attacks, the fortress was unmovable and did not shake.

Fang Yuan had a lot of methods unused, he did not use his true trump cards, but Fang clan’s Gu Immortals did not do anything significant either, the situation went into another deadlock.

Fang Di Chang’s brows were furrowed, peach blossom maze only had three variations, they had already used the second move, but there was no change in the situation.

Divine Bean Palace’s defense was too strong!

Right when Fang Di Chang was about to use the third move, Fang Yuan made his move.

Hundred and Eighty Slaves!

Hundred and Eighty Slaves!

Hundred and Eighty Slaves!

Three flowery wind warriors exploded, Fang Yuan had instilled enslavement path killer move hundred and eighty slaves into all of them. All three moves exploded and landed on the winged black python immemorial soul beast.

This immemorial soul beast was stiff like a statue, after a while, Fang Yuan shouted and it broke free from the enemy’s control, it had been enslaved by Fang Yuan!

The second immemorial soul beast was obtained.

At once, both the enemy leader Chen Yi as well as Fang Di Chang were shocked.

Divine Bean Palace was supporting these immemorial soul beasts with green armor, they had strong defenses and could heal instantly, it was hard for Fang clan to advance.

But Fang Yuan ignored all these and directly took away the immemorial soul beast’s control.

“Friend, you have an amazing method, so enslavement path is the weakness of green armor vegetable garden. I hope you can continue to use the move.” Fang Di Chang changed his tone after pausing: “We will definitely compensate you heavily!”

Chen Yi snorted coldly: “He actually made use of this weakness, it is a pity that they are not the divine bean soldiers produced in Divine Bean Palace, we can only use the soul beast army for now. If I was using the divine bean soldiers, how could they enslave it so easily?”

Inside Inquiry Dock, Fang Yuan smiled bitterly: “I was just lucky. Earlier, I already used it to suppress one immemorial soul beast. This is the second one, I have reached my limits. To use it again, there will be a huge price to pay! I wonder... what compensation is second supreme elder referring to?”

Fang Di Chang’s eyes drooped, he tried to conceal the sharp light in his eyes as he became furious: “This Suan Bu Jin dares to extort me the moment he gets a chance! Pay a huge price? He means that he can use it again, but that will depend on the compensation that we give him. We have an alliance agreement, he cannot lie on this matter, but to think that we would be extorted by an outsider because our Fang clan lacks a strong enslavement path expert!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1524: Great Thief Immortal Gu

Even though Fang Di Chang was furious, Divine Bean Palace was right in front of them, this was their goal for generations, they could not fail. And Fang Yuan’s enslavement method was the best way to break the stalemate after all.

Fang Di Chang smiled: “What compensation do you want, friend? As long as you tell me, we will do our best to fulfill it.”

Fang Yuan asked for what compensation he would get, but Fang Di Chang flipped the question back at him.

Fang Yuan laughed: “Lord Fang is very straightforward, I am not greedy, I only want one rank seven Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan said this as he slowed down, his gaze flickered like he was embarrassed.

“Rank seven Immortal Gu!” Fang Di Chang’s heart jumped, he got more angry but his expression became sincere looking as he smiled: “With your ability to suppress all the immemorial soul beasts, the contribution is enough for a rank seven Immortal Gu. If my clan can obtain Divine Bean Palace in the end, we will promise you another rank seven Immortal Gu!”

Fang Di Chang not only agreed to Fang Yuan’s request, he even added in more temptation.

“I am ashamed.” Fang Yuan sighed deeply: “I need to get this rank seven Immortal Gu now, otherwise, I cannot make up my mind to pay that huge price and subdue the remaining immemorial soul beast.”

“How can you be so impatient? You don’t trust my Fang clan?!” A Fang clan Gu Immortal could not control himself, he shouted loudly.

Fang Yuan cupped his fists: “Everyone, the price that I have to pay is too huge, my foundation will be heavily damaged. I can only make up my mind after getting the rank seven Immortal Gu!”

“Fine, my Inquiry Dock has a method to communicate with the outside world, I will send over a rank seven Immortal Gu from our headquarters. This is our rank seven treasury, pick one.” Fang Di Chang said as an information path Gu worm flew out of his sleeve.

It was a rank seven information path Immortal Gu!

It was rare to see such Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan thought: “It is hard for me to acquire information, an information path Immortal Gu can help me gather information and find out many secrets. During rebirth, my past life’s memories were tampered by heaven’s will, there are traps in them, I cannot rely on these memories. During this period, I have been using Shadow Sect’s inheritance for information, but these things would become obsolete over time. This rank seven information path Immortal Gu is quite useful for me.”

Fang Yuan received the information path Immortal Gu and inspected it.

There were six rank seven Immortal Gu listed in it.

“Fang clan has such deep foundations! They definitely have more than six rank seven Immortal Gu, Fang Di Chang just hid those that he did not want me to take.”

Just these six Immortal Gu made Fang Yuan feel dazzled.

He was interested in each of these Immortal Gu, because he had Shadow Sect’s true inheritance, any Immortal Gu could be put to good use in his hands.

But soon, when Fang Yuan saw one of the Immortal Gu, his heart shook, he made up his mind and chose it!

“Rank seven great thief Gu?” Fang Di Chang heard Fang Yuan’s choice and was quite surprised.

This was a theft path Immortal Gu, but Suan Bu Jin was a wisdom path Gu Immortal.

Fang Yuan did not explain, he did not need to. Fang Di Chang displayed these rank seven Immortal Gu, it meant that they were disposable to him. In the current situation, Fang clan was in a rush for time, not Fang Yuan, if they wanted to stall for time and not give him the Gu, Fang Yuan would just do nothing.

“Or... is he afraid I will use this chance to stall him, so he purposely gave me a random answer? When I reject him, he will give it up immediately?” Fang Di Chang guessed, wisdom path Gu Immortals simply had too many thoughts in their minds.

“Friend, you really want this Immortal Gu?” Fang Di Chang confirmed again.

Fang Yuan hesitated before answering: “Yes, this Gu.”

Fang Di Chang nodded: “Alright, I will accept this request.”

Saying so, he used a killer move and retrieved this rank seven Immortal Gu from Fang clan’s headquarters, transporting it into Inquiry Dock.

The process was very fast, Fang Yuan soon obtained this great thief Gu, with Fang Di Chang’s help, he easily refined it.

This great thief Immortal Gu was like a beetle with a flat head and long horn, it was the size of an adult, its black exoskeleton had a metallic luster, giving off a tough feeling.

Fang Yuan obtained this Immortal Gu and felt secretly excited: “My gains are simply too great! I am a theft path great grandmaster now, I lack theft path Immortal Gu. To think that it would come to me now, this great thief Immortal Gu came at such great timing! Not only can it display my superiority in theft path, I can even start making use of ghostly concealment now!”

Fang Yuan had the theft path attainment level, it was very easy to create theft path immortal killer moves.

And the most important one was ghostly concealment!

This immortal killer move was created by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable himself, it was a rank nine killer move with incredible power. But all along, it had been relatively useless to Fang Yuan.

Why?

Even though it could protect Fang Yuan from the detection of ghosts and soul beasts, whenever he tried to use an immortal killer move, he would be exposed.

Nobody could see a firecracker buried underground, but when it is ignited and explodes, people would sense it.

Furthermore, ghostly concealment had been interfering with ghost soldier garment, weakening it and limiting its effect.

Ghostly concealment did not expend immortal essence, it operated on its own, that was the ability of a theft path supreme grandmaster. Only supreme grandmasters could surpass the limits and restrictions of this world to a certain extent.

Fang Yuan was a theft path great grandmaster, but he could not activate ghostly concealment himself. Even though he had a deeper understanding of it now, he still had many questions.

But these questions could not stop him from making use of the active ghostly concealment!

As for the way to use ghostly concealment, this rank seven great thief Immortal Gu was the key to solving the problem.

“As long as I add in some mortal Gu and spend some time, I will be able to draw out and use a portion of ghostly concealment’s power!”

Bright light flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

“But now, I need to get rid of the immemorial soul beasts, Fang clan’s patience is dwindling.” Fang Yuan wanted to establish a relationship with Fang clan in order to develop in green ghost desert, he did not want to become enemies with them.

Thus, within the sovereign immortal aperture, he killed the two immemorial soul beasts that he had just subdued!

These two immemorial soul beasts were hard to kill, but Fang Yuan had control over them, not only would they not resist him, they would cooperate with him in their suicide.

After dying, Fang Yuan obtained two huge soul cores.

Rank eight immortal materials, immemorial soul cores!

This was very rare.

If he was not in this situation, Fang Yuan would not have killed the two immemorial soul beasts. But there was no choice, hundred and eighty slaves relied on a huge number of soul beasts to work.

Fang Yuan had a vast number of soul beasts, including desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts, but they could only help Fang Yuan control two immemorial desolate beasts, that was the limit!

Now that Fang Yuan wanted to control more immemorial soul beasts, it was impossible.

He had no choice but to kill these two immemorial soul beasts!

This was the ‘huge price’ that Fang Yuan had mentioned to Fang Di Chang.

He was not lying, it was the truth, killing two rank eight battle strength existences, was it not a huge price?

However, after doing this, Fang Yuan used attitude Gu and made himself shake as his face turned pale, blood started flowing out of his mouth and nose.

“It seems that Suan Bu Jin was not lying, the method has a huge price to pay.” At once, the Fang clan Gu Immortals who saw this felt better psychologically.

“Even though this is not good, the situation is very urgent, friend, I hope you can do your best.” Fang Di Chang urged.

“Of course I will do my best!” Fang Yuan shouted, seemingly gathering his focus as he used hundred and eighty slaves on the flowery wind warriors again.

After three tries, Fang Yuan succeeded in subduing the bull body leopard tail immemorial soul beast like what he did before.

Guh.

Fang Yuan opened his mouth and spit out a mouthful of blood, his body could not stand firm, his face was pale as paper, devoid of any color, he almost fainted on the spot.

“Suan Bu Jin, be careful!”

“Mind your health, we still need your help for the final immemorial soul beast.”

“How are your injuries? I can heal you!”

Fang clan’s immortals spoke one after another.

“Don’t worry, don’t worry.” Fang Yuan waved his hand, there was nothing to be worried about, he was acting.

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals heard his words as their anger dissipated.

Next, Fang Yuan tried again and subdued the final immemorial soul beast.

The truth was, he needed to thank flowery wind warriors. If not for its ability to store killer moves and use multiple of them at once, how could Fang Yuan obtain the immemorial soul beasts?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1525: Myriad Life Spring Lightning

Thanks to Fang Yuan’s skillful actions, the two final immemorial soul beasts guarding Divine Bean Palace were taken away and enslaved.

The sovereign immortal aperture lost two immemorial soul beasts, but two more came in. One had a bull body and leopard tail, while the other was a one eyed giant.

“This Suan Bu Jin is truly a wisdom path Gu Immortal, our Fang clan has been plotting for generations, but now, this outsider has gained huge benefits while we have yet to obtain Divine Bean Palace. Not only did he get a rank seven Immortal Gu from us, he even subdued two immemorial soul beasts, obtaining rank eight battle strength!”

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals had varying expressions, Fang Yuan’s gains were too huge, even the third supreme elder Fang Hua Sheng felt a little envious, not to mention the rest of the Gu Immortals.

But this was normal mentality.

Fang clan put in the most effort, but now, Fang Yuan the outsider had the biggest gains, while Fang clan continued to invest in this. It was no wonder that Fang clan's Gu Immortals felt envious towards him.

"This Suan Bu Jin is very capable, he had a method to subdue immemorial soul beasts! But it is not a surprise, he was able to roam green ghost desert and gather a soul beast army after all. But... why does he want great thief Immortal Gu? Does he have a theft path inheritance?"

"This great thief Immortal Gu is one of the core Immortal Gu of theft path, it was created by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable personally. An ancestor of Fang clan had obtained it from a lone immortal by chance, hmph, how can our Fang clan's Immortal Gu be so easy to obtain? How can we stop until we work this Suan Bu Jin to the bones?"

Fang clan's second supreme elder Fang Di Chang thought, he was about to speak but saw that after subduing the two immemorial soul beasts, Fang Yuan shut his eyes and sat down, pretending that he was gravely injured and needed to attend to his injuries.

"Hmm?! Friend Suan Bu Jin?" Fang Di Chang called out.

Fang Yuan was silent.

"Friend Suan Bu Jin, how are your injuries?" Fang Di Chang's eyes shined with cold light.

Fang Yuan was silent.

"It seems that you are gravely injured, why don't I help to heal you?" Fang Di Chang continued to pursue.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes at this point, speaking in a hoarse and fatigued voice: "No need to worry friend, I am fine, I can suppress these two immemorial soul beasts. The important thing now is to take down Divine Bean Palace. This Divine Bean Palace has transformed drastically, it is stalling for time now, there must be a good reason. If you allow time to be wasted, something might happen."

"Since it is trapped in our peach blossom maze, what could possibly happen?" A Fang clan Gu Immortal snorted in disdain.

Fang Di Chang's eyes shone with cold light as he gazed at Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan gradually closed his eyes.

"This Suan Bu Jin is so shameless, I wanted to get him to attack Divine Bean Palace and probe for danger but he actually acted like this. It is a pity that the alliance agreement did not give me the right to command him. The big picture is more important now, this Divine Bean Palace has been our goal for generations, we cannot lose it." Even as a wisdom path great grandmaster, Fang Di Chang had to ignore him for now.

He continued to give orders as the three Immortal Gu Houses expended a huge amount of immortal essence, countless flower petals flew out like a storm.

Within the rain of flowers, a large number of flowery wind warriors formed, controlled by Fang clan's Gu Immortals as they attacked Divine Bean Palace.

"Go and prove your loyalty now." Within Divine Bean Palace, Chen Yi had a cold expression as he commanded Eagle Concubine and Old Ghost Bai Jun.

The two looked at each other with great worry and difficulty.

Eagle Concubine said grimly: “With our strength, going out to fight will kill us. Please reconsider it Lord Chen Yi!”

Chen Yi chuckled with a cold gaze: “If you defy my orders, you will die now. If you go out, I will reinforce you, there is a hope of survival. As long as I subdue this legendary immemorial soul beast in time, I will reward you. You know who I am, I will not lie. Make your decision in three breaths of time.”

Chen Yi was very forceful, Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine had to obey his orders and go out of Divine Bean Palace, facing the flowery wind warriors.

Boom boom boom!

Both sides fought near Divine Bean Palace heatedly.

Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine were rank seven Gu Immortals, they were smarter than immemorial soul beasts. Especially when they were experienced demonic cultivators, they had been pursued by righteous path members before and were very skilled at preserving their lives.

Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine were suppressed but they were very resilient, they managed to restrain these flowery wind warriors.

However, as time passed, Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine got more injured as the situation became dangerous.

Chen Yi was multitasking, reinforcing Divine Bean Palace while suppressing Qing Chou, and also observing the battle, he praised internally: “This move is amazing, it can store multiple immortal killer moves, allowing the Immortal Gu House to utilize countless methods, becoming as flexible as an ancient battle formation, it is not simple!”

Thinking of this, he stretched out his hand as Divine Bean Palace shook, two rays of profound light landed on Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine.

The profound lights moved quickly and entered both of their bodies.

The two of them were shocked, they inspected their bodies but did not find anything peculiar.

At this time, Fang clan attacked again, they had no time to check, they had to fight again.

But during the fight, something different happened.

Whenever they got injured, profound light would shine on their bodies, the damage would be shifted away from them.

“This is Divine Bean Palace’s method, immortal killer move graft wood, it allows all of the attacks you receive to be taken by Divine Bean Palace instead.” At this time, Chen Yi’s voice resounded in their heads.

Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine were joyful and surprised.

Joyful that they still had value and were not cannon fodder for Chen Yi, now that he helped them, they could last much longer.

Surprised that Chen Yi had already gained control of Divine Bean Palace to use a second move after arriving here for such a short time, it seemed like Divine

Bean Palace was already falling into his hands!

“Hmm?” Fang Di Chang soon sensed this change.

Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine were safe and sound regardless of any killer moves that hit them, profound light would flash on their bodies.

“What move is this? It is so mysterious! Not just attacks, even time path and space path supplementary killer moves cannot affect them.”

Fang Di Chang gradually developed a heavy mood, he ordered Fang clan’s Gu Immortals: “Go use a killer move to heal them.”

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals were stunned, how could they help their enemies?

But Fang Di Chang had high reputation, nobody questioned him, they quickly got to work.

Healing methods landed on Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine but had no effect.

“Oh? It seems that there is a capable person in charge of Fang clan.” Chen Yi’s eyes flashed brightly, he could tell that Fang Di Chang was probing the effect of graft wood.

“Even healing killer moves are useless...” Fang Di Chang soon used his method to make deductions before ordering: “Ignore them, target Divine Bean Palace instead.”

The immortals acted as commanded, flowery wind warriors self-detonated as a large number of killer moves with varying effects, either in power or specialty, landed on Divine Bean Palace.

Divine Bean Palace was shaking from the impact, but its core was untouched, only a large number of mortal Gu were destroyed.

Chen Yi nodded to himself.

Fang Di Chang’s tactic was very wise, he had deduced the relationship of Old Ghost Bai Jun, Eagle Concubine, and Divine Bean Palace. The two Gu Immortals might dodge or defend against any attacks on them, but Divine Bean Palace could not, it was only passively receiving hits.

And Fang clan’s killer moves were unleashed via flowery wind warriors, the effect was amplified by peach blossom maze itself!

If that was not the case, Divine Bean Palace would not have been affected.

Chen Yi frowned slightly, he could only influence Divine Bean Palace now, he did not have control yet. In some ways, he could not even compare to Qing Chou.

Qing Chou could influence Divine Bean Palace and manipulate this Immortal Gu House to fly around.

But this authority was currently in Qing Chou’s hands, Chen Yi could not make it move, therefore, it remained stationary.

Chen Yi could kill Qing Chou and take away this authority, he would be able to make Divine Bean Palace fly in that case.

But this way, Qing Chou would die, Chen Yi’s own plans would be greatly disrupted.

Therefore, Chen Yi was trying to get Qing Chou to surrender now. If he succeeded, not only would he gain Qing Chou’s help, he could also make Divine Bean Palace fly away, he would not be in a passive state.

Fang clan changed its tactic and gained the upper hand.

Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine became ignored.

These two had their own objectives too, they were forced out by Chen Yi to begin with, now that Fang clan ignored them, they were happy with that. They reserved strength and did not go all out to interfere with their actions.

Divine Bean Palace took the attacks of Fang clan for several minutes, before Chen Yi’s brows suddenly relaxed.

After some time, he gained deeper control of Divine Bean Palace, he could use another method now.

“Too bad it isn’t a defensive method, but if I use this, it can change the situation too.” Chen Yi thought.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Life Spring Lightning!

At the next moment, Divine Bean Palace shook intensely, countless sparks that resembled dragons or snakes coiled around the palace. Lightning gathered into beads of jade green lightning balls as they exploded around the palace.

Rumble...

After a series of explosions, only a few flowery wind warriors escaped, the rest were destroyed.

“This killer move!” Fang Di Chang’s gaze concentrated as his expression turned grim for the first time.

This spring lightning did not just destroy the flowery wind warriors, it also landed on the ground and destroyed countless peach trees.

These peach trees were formed from immortal battlefield killer move peach blossom maze, normally speaking, they could regenerate rapidly.

But the places where these spring lightning balls exploded turned into jade green grasslands.

Pine trees grew and took the place of the peach trees, becoming deeply rooted.

Every spring lighting ball created one pine tree, gradually, a sparse forest was created.

Even though this tiny forest could not compare to peach blossom maze, it was like a rocky reef by the sea, adamantly resisting the regeneration of the peach blossom maze.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1526: Chen Yi, Die

“What an amazing killer move, life and death is interlinked, destruction and creation are gathered into one move. Peach blossom maze is the trump card of our Fang clan, it was actually resisted by this move, if this goes on, the entire battlefield killer move will break apart!” Fang Di Chang was secretly shocked.

Once the battlefield killer move was broken, all three Immortal Gu Houses would suffer backlash, they would receive huge damage.

Fang Di Chang was originally confident in peach blossom maze’s power, but now, he saw a chance of it getting broken.

“Worthy of the rank eight Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace!” Fang Di Chang sighed deeply, his determination to obtain the Immortal Gu House became firmer!

The stronger Divine Bean Palace was, the greater the fighting spirit of the Fang clan Gu Immortals.

“We will use the third variation!” Fang Di Chang changed his mind as he ordered.

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals obeyed, the remaining flowery wind warriors self-detonated, the entire peach forest had falling petals that disintegrated into nothingness, the green leaves wilted and became yellow, the branches became barren once more. But different from before, peaches started to grow at the tip of these branches.

When myriad life spring lightning landed on these peach forests, most of the energy was absorbed by the forest and turned into nutrients that nurtured all these peaches.

“Oh? This variation move...” Chen Yi’s eyes shined, myriad life spring lightning’s attack quickly became slower.

Very soon, he noticed something.

This third variation move of peach blossom maze stored most of the power inside myriad life spring lightning and prevented it from unleashing its might.

Even though it could not resolve the issue, myriad life spring lightning could not display its effect immediately either.

It was a stalling method but in this situation, it was effective.

Because the forest was huge, it was hard to reach its maximum capacity, especially when Chen Yi was busy and could not focus on retaliating.

After using this move, Fang clan’s plan was to stall and reduce the effects of myriad life spring lightning.

Chen Yi could influence Divine Bean Palace to use three methods, they were green armor vegetable garden, graft wood, and myriad life spring lightning. Now, these three moves had all been countered by Fang clan, Chen Yi could not do anything.

“Oh no! Qing Chou is still resisting, I need to increase my influence and use the fourth method in Divine Bean Palace, but that needs a lot of time. Fang clan will definitely increase their firepower, they will not give me the chance!”

Chen Yi’s heart tightened, he felt a bit anxious now.

He was multitasking now, subduing Qing Chou while controlling Divine Bean Palace and facing the attacks of Fang clan.

He was within Divine Bean Palace now and could not freely attack, most of his methods conflicted with this rank eight Immortal Gu House.

Thus, all of his abilities were practically sealed!

Fang clan made use of the opportunity indeed, at this point, the peach blossom maze could no longer summon flowery wind warriors, to play safe, Fang Di Chang did not send Fang clan's Gu Immortals to fight, he directly used the three Immortal Gu Houses to attack Divine Bean Palace from three directions.

Boom boom boom!

Three Immortal Gu Houses were floating in the air, sending attacks towards Divine Bean Palace.

Divine Bean Palace shook intensely, mortal Gu were continuously destroyed, soon, even Immortal Gu were damaged!

At this point, Fang Di Chang had gone all out, the three Immortal Gu Houses in peach blossom maze attacked without holding back.

Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine were pale with fright, they did not dare to resist.

Chen Yi knew about their mentality and summoned these two back into Divine Bean Palace again.

The two of them could not resist the attacks of the Immortal Gu Houses with their bare bodies, it was pointless to sacrifice them now, they would be useful later when Divine Bean Palace was broken into, when the Fang clan Gu Immortals arrive, they could stall them for a moment.

Time!

Chen Yi needed time now.

If he had enough time, he could control Divine Bean Palace and subdue Qing Chou, turning the situation around.

If this was an ordinary opponent, they might fall into Chen Yi's trap, but he was facing the wisdom path great grandmaster Fang Di Chang, he had deduced Chen Yi's plan and attacked fiercely.

Chen Yi sighed bitterly in his mind, even though he resisted for so long, Fang clan's leader was very perceptive, his plan could not continue.

But even in this situation, this Heavenly Lotus Sect first supreme elder did not become dejected, he continued with his plan.

Because he had one method left.

Immortal killer move — Karma Divine Tree!

At the next moment, Chen Yi's eyes widened as he burst out with an overwhelming aura, green smoke appeared from his head and shoulders.

The green smoke rose above Chen Yi's head and formed into a huge karma divine tree!

Once this tree appeared, the entire Divine Bean Palace started trembling, like it was welcoming Chen Yi's presence.

At the same time, Chen Yi's influence in Divine Bean Palace grew rapidly, the pressure he emitted on Qing Chou also became denser.

Qing Chou had a bad feeling, it raised its head but that karma divine tree had a threatening aura, especially when a huge bad effect fruit had ripened within its lush leaves.

This bad effect fruit had covered by dark smoke that slowly turned into Qing Chou's appearance.

Qing Chou was created with a trace of karma divine tree's power, it had a feeling when it saw this: once this bad effect fruit's smoke stops moving and turns into its appearance entirely, it would be completely subdued by Chen Yi without any way of retaliating!

How could it allow that to happen?

How could it!

Roar—!

Qing Chou roared furiously.

Its head that was suppressed on the ground with barely any strength rose up now.

Its four limbs supported its heavy body, the scales on its neck protruded, its human hair was dancing in the air, its eyes were bloodshot and stared at Chen Yi furiously! Its mouth opened and its tongue broke, its roar was like an impending tsunami!

"Incredible! As expected of a legendary soul beast, this Qing Chou had been preserving strength all along earlier, now that I used karma divine tree, it has no choice but to retaliate!" Chen Yi was shocked.

This Qing Chou actually had the strength to scheme and try to turn the situation around.

Chen Yi quickly suppressed it.

Qing Chou's body immediately shook, its limbs bent, its tortoise shell had just lifted off the ground but it sank rapidly again.

But next, countless Gu worm auras emerged from its body, it used an immortal killer move.

It was formed from the remnant souls of humans, it could cultivate and use immortal killer moves.

Earlier against Fang Yuan, it had lost its reasoning, it was in a state of madness, it did not use any battle tactics. But against Chen Yi, it was logical and used the most appropriate method.

Qing Chou resisted!

Chen Yi breathed in deeply, his face turned green as he gritted his teeth, his upper body was shaking as he exerted himself to use karma divine tree.

The karma divine tree above his head became larger by thirty percent.

Qing Chou felt a deep pressure, it growled and used its second immortal killer move, continuing to fight.

Like this, both sides continued to increase the use of their methods, they were still in a deadlock, while their excessive strength had all been utilized.

“You want to enslave me, you are dreaming!” Qing Chou breathed in deeply, using all its strength to unleash the final move.

Rank eight Soul Beast Token was the core of the move as an intense light spread out.

This move’s name was unknown, the ripples of light penetrated Divine Bean Palace, through peach blossom maze, and into the entire green ghost desert.

The light was extremely fast, in the blink of an eye, it spread around the whole of green ghost desert.

The whole of green ghost desert turned silent before the ground started to shake.

Next, soul path dao marks burst out and manifested, countless marks lit up the entirety of green ghost desert.

Roar roar roar...

Next, all the soul beasts felt a summoning as they went to reinforce Qing Chou.

The expressions of Fang clan’s Gu Immortals changed.

“Oh no, what is this move? The whole of green ghost desert was affected!”

“Green ghost desert has an uncountable number of soul beasts! But this move actually made all of them respond.”

“Peach blossom maze is a battlefield killer move, it should isolate it from the outside world, but this move could not be blocked.’

At once, Fang clan’s morale plummeted, everyone was worried.

“I know!” Fang Di Chang expended his own lifespan to make the swift deduction, soon, he opened his eyes: “The immemorial soul beast inside Divine Bean Palace was formed from the remnant souls of Qing clan in the past. It is not simple, it has human wisdom, it is a legendary immemorial soul beast! And this green ghost desert was created after Spectral Soul Demon Venerable slaughtered the entirety of Qing clan, the soul path dao marks left behind created this environment.”

“If we see green ghost desert as an incomplete battlefield killer move, this legendary immemorial soul beast is the owner of this move! It is using a method now to activate all the dao marks in green ghost desert, creating this terrifying move. Countless soul beasts are going to attack us, peach blossom maze will be corroded by these soul path dao marks and eventually collapse!”

Fang Di Chang was a wisdom path great grandmaster indeed, he found the truth after some deductions.

He immediately ordered everyone to attack, they could not hold back anymore, Fang clan was racing against time!

Fang clan needed to break into Divine Bean Palace and kill Qing Chou to resolve this move and obtain victory.

Chen Yi needed to resist Fang clan while suppressing Qing Chou and gaining control of Divine Bean Palace, he was also fighting against time.

Qing Chou did not want to be enslaved, it resisted, but its most powerful move used soul beast token Immortal Gu as the core, the effect was not immediate.

At once, all three sides fell into a deadlock!

Any side could win or fail.

This battle involving Divine Bean Palace was at its climax, who would emerge victorious?

Boom!

With a loud explosion, Divine Bean Palace’s entrance was finally smashed apart.

“Charge!” Opportunity flashed as Fang Di Chang shouted uncontrollably.

Multiple Fang clan rank seven experts entered.

Once they went in, they were slightly stunned.

Chen Yi, Old Ghost Bai Jun, Eagle Concubine, and Qing Chou were undoubtedly present, there was no doubt that relationship between these four was quite complex.

Especially Chen Yi, he was emanating rank eight aura, it was shocking.

Chen Yi laughed, he looked at the Fang clan immortals in disdain: “You are here to die.”

Fang Di Chang stayed behind them and easily exposed Chen Yi’s bluff, he snorted and ordered: “Kill! This person is multitasking, he cannot do anything against us.”

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals immediately charged.

Eagle Concubine and Old Ghost Bai Jun had no choice but to block them, but Fang clan diverted more people to target Chen Yi.

Of course they had to get rid of this rank eight existence first!

“Take this!”

“Even a rank eight will die!!”

“Accept your death!”

With Fang Hua Sheng at the lead, multiple Fang clan Gu Immortals unleashed their strongest moves ever.

Chen Yi stood on the spot, he could not move, all of the rank seven killer moves landed on him!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1527: Fang Clan’s Rank Eight

Boom boom boom!

Fang clan’s rank seven Gu Immortal experts unleashed their might and attacked Chen Yi.

At once, lightning flashed and thunder roared, piercing light shined in the whole of Divine Bean Palace.

Air currents moved rapidly, but Chen Yi remained standing, unmoving.

He was covered in layers of shining light, they were thick and old, like old tree bark. Fang clan’s Gu Immortals attacked together, but the tree bark light blocked them all, they had no effect!

“What defensive method is this?!” Not only did the rank seven Gu Immortals take a deep breath of shock, even Fang Di Chang’s pupils shrunk.

“Not only is he a rank eight Gu Immortal, he is an expert among rank eights! We’ll attack again!!” Fang clan’s Gu Immortals were not dejected, Fang Hua Sheng shouted as he led an attack again.

Boom boom boom!

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals unleashed more attacks, but Chen Yi could not dodge or move away, he was hit by them all.

After the explosions faded, his body was still covered by the tree bark light, and it was even thicker than before.

Fang Di Chang’s gaze flickered, he finally recognized Chen Yi: “So you are Heavenly Lotus Sect’s first supreme elder Chen Yi! No wonder you have such an incredible defensive method!”

Chen Yi, the first supreme elder of one of the ten great ancient sects in Central Continent!

Even though the Fang clan Gu Immortals lived in Western Desert, they had some information about Gu Immortals of other regions.

When they heard Chen Yi’s identity from Fang Di Chang, their hearts sank.

Pressure!

A person’s reputation created pressure, just the title of Heavenly Lotus Sect’s first supreme elder demoralized all of Fang clan’s Gu Immortals.

“Divine Bean Palace originates from Ancestor Genesis Lotus, your Fang clan wants to obtain it, you are simply disregarding Central Continent.” Chen Yi spoke casually.

Fang clan’s rank seven Gu Immortals looked at each other, they were stunned by his attitude.

“Hmph, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable left Divine Bean Palace in Western Desert, this means that it belongs to Western Desert. You are merely a descendant, how dare you distort your ancestor’s decision?” Fang Di Chang snickered, he was very skilled at arguments as a wisdom path great grandmaster, he would not lose in such a fight.

Chen Yi laughed: “It is useless, my defensive killer move is called thickening wood armor, the more you attack it, the tougher it becomes. It is weak when I first use it, but unless you destroy it in one hit, it will only become stronger!”

Chen Yi said, he seemed to be exposing his move, but he was using words to reduce the fighting spirit of his enemies.

Right at this time, a change occurred!

An old and hoarse voice resounded: “Then let this old man try!”

As he said this, a rank seven Gu Immortal took a few steps forward and arrived in front of Chen Yi.

His appearance rapidly changed, from a young rank seven Gu Immortal into a muscular old man with white beard and hair.

This old man had bulging muscles that resembled rocks, he raised his huge fist that aimed at Chen Yi’s face.

This fist quickly filled Chen Yi’s vision, before it landed, Chen Yi’s heart was already pounding, he felt an immeasurable amount of strength path dao marks slamming towards him!

Chen Yi’s expression changed!

He could not dodge this move, he had to take it.

The fist landed on Chen Yi’s face.

Chen Yi instantly felt that a terrifying force crashed into his face like a colliding mountain!

At once, he was sent flying like a cannonball, with a loud sound, he crashed into Divine Bean Palace’s walls, he did not fall to the ground, he was fixed onto the wall.

Puff!

Chen Yi’s seven orifices were bleeding, his head was almost smashed, his bones were definitely broken but jade light soon shined on his body as he healed himself.

As for his defensive killer move, it was smashed by this old man in one punch!

“Fang Gong, as the first supreme elder of Fang clan, a rank eight great expert, you actually used a sneak attack! How shameless are you!” Chen Yi shouted, his anger was spewing out like fire.

He exposed this old man’s identity immediately, he was Fang clan’s first supreme elder, Fang Gong!

“This Fang Gong is indeed a strength path cultivator, among the rank eight Gu Immortals in the five regions, he is a rare one that cultivate strength path!”

“This person concealed himself so deeply, he had been following us the entire time, Fang clan is too determined this time, they even brought a rank eight existence here!”

“Earlier, the two rounds of attacks by the rank seven Gu Immortals were just a cover, they were setting up for Fang Gong’s attack. This must be Fang Di Chang’s plan.”

Fang Yuan had been watching the battle, he was quite shocked.

The grand rank eight Gu Immortal, first supreme elder of Fang clan, actually concealed his identity and used a sneak attack, this was more shameless than a government official stealing a chicken.

If news spread, his righteous path reputation would be ruined.

But precisely so, Fang Gong’s sneak attack was extremely effective, the situation was turned around with Chen Yi sent flying!

The stalemate had been broken.

Fang clan’s first supreme elder Fang Gong forced away Chen Yi, he had the upper hand now, Fang clan could control the situation.

Chen Yi fell for the scheme and was forced back, his accumulated control over Divine Bean Palace had been lost by half, he felt horrible!

Because his objective was heavily interrupted. But he still had a chance, his injuries were not severe.

Chen Yi’s defensive method was broken, but he had the killer move graft wood earlier to protect Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine, he naturally used it on himself too.

Thus, Chen Yi’s injuries were sustained by Divine Bean Palace instead.

Crack crack.

Divine Bean Palace took the damage for Chen Yi, cracks appeared on the walls of the palace.

At the same time, the cracks spread to the roof and the tall pillars.

Crack crack.

Several large pillars shattered into piles of Gu worm corpses.

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, he thought: “Fang Gong’s attack must have taken all his effort, even though that punch was very simple, it had actually concealed all of its aura. Therefore, after breaking Chen Yi’s defense, the remaining force still caused such great damage to Divine Bean Palace.”

But Fang Yuan added in his mind: “Of course, this is because rank eight Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace did not use any defensive methods and was taking the hit normally, and because the attack was dealt internally, the damage was this great!”

Roar—!

As Divine Bean Palace’s huge pillars collapsed, Qing Chou’s roars also reverberated the area.

Divine Bean Palace was heavily damaged, the suppression it felt also reduced, Qing Chou benefited from it.

It raised its head and tried to hold up its body, it shattered the spears of light stabbing its body, it was about to rise up again!

“Noisy!” Fang Gong frowned and leaped towards Qing Chou.

Qing Chou roared and faced Fang Gong.

Boom!

Both sides collided, Qing Chou cried out in pain as its mountain-like body was sent flying by the ant-like Fang Gong.

Fang Gong landed on the ground as he snorted, touching his fist as he jumped forward again.

Qing Chou was a legendary immemorial soul beast, but it actually lost to Fang Gong in a physical brawl!

“Who is the immemorial desolate beast here?” Fang Yuan was dazed.

Chen Yi frowned deeply, thinking: “Fang Gong is very powerful, I cannot allow him to gain an advantage and obtain control over the situation!”

“You have already attacked, now it is time to face my move as well!” Chen Yi joined the battle, reinforcing Qing Chou.

Fang Gong had been suppressing Qing Chou, but due to Chen Yi’s interference, that advantage vanished.

If Chen Yi worked together with Qing Chou, Fang Gong would not be able to match both of them, and because they had a common enemy, they could work together now, although barely.

“Fang Gong cultivates strength path, his power is deeply embedded in his body, he has a huge advantage in this battlefield. As for me, I can only unleash sixty percent of my methods!”

Chen Yi had a bitter and indescribable feeling.

Divine Bean Palace was something all of them wanted, in this rank eight battle, all of the people were suppressing their attacks and refused to use wide ranged methods.

The three rank eight existences were fighting within Divine Bean Palace, while Fang clan’s rank seven Gu Immortals had all left, staying here was courting death after all.

The difference between rank seven and eight was huge.

Fang clan’s rank seven Gu Immortals attacked Chen Yi and could not even penetrate his defenses, it was truly futile.

Even though these Fang clan Gu Immortals retreated, they did not return to the three Immortal Gu Houses, they fought in peach blossom maze.

On one hand, they were fighting Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine, on the other hand, a large number of soul beasts had already entered peach blossom maze, they needed to be dealt with.

“This is really bad!” Fang Di Chang had an ugly expression: “Green ghost desert’s dao marks are penetrating in here, the peach blossom maze battlefield has already been corroded, it cannot last much longer. Countless soul beasts are rushing in here, there are too many to kill. But first supreme elder is still fighting in there, unable to finish matters, what should we do?”

Even as a wisdom path great grandmaster, Fang Di Chang was only rank seven, he could not solve the problem.

And as time passed, Fang Di Chang’s analysis came true.

Peach blossom maze got weaker and weaker, loopholes started to appear in some areas, the desert outside could be seen.

And the view was terrifying, outside peach blossom maze were countless soul beasts. They were all summoned by Soul Beast Token, gathered into a sea of them, every moment, countless soul beasts entered peach blossom maze, there was no way to kill them all.

Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine felt a fall in pressure, they worked together and did not dare to leave. They could only focus on protecting themselves.

“The crucial thing now is within Divine Bean Palace!” Fang Yuan opened his eyes, he slowly stood up, having a clear understanding of the situation.

Within Divine Bean Palace, three rank eight existences were still fighting!

Qing Chou was roaring, Fang Gong was solemn, while Chen Yi was bitter, they all had ugly expressions.

Because even though they held themselves back, their attacks still affected Divine Bean Palace, this rank eight Immortal Gu House was about to break apart.

If Divine Bean Palace gets destroyed, what would be the entire purpose of this fight? They only wanted Divine Bean Palace!

And if this continued, this battle to fight for ownership of Divine Bean Palace was going to be the reason for its destruction!

“I can help your Fang clan obtain this Immortal Gu House.” At this moment, Fang Yuan spoke to Fang Di Chang..

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1528: Yama, Ghost Hand

Fang Di Chang was stunned!

Fang Yuan was Suan Bu Jin at the moment, as a rank seven Gu Immortal, how could he resolve the problem?

But Fang Di Chang quickly reacted, smiling brightly: “Go ahead and say your request friend, what do you need in order to help us now?”

He was a wisdom path great grandmaster after all, regardless of whether Fang Yuan had a plan, he had to try. And Fang Yuan said this on purpose to negotiate his compensation.

Fang Yuan smiled too: “This situation is urgent, we cannot talk slowly. But Divine Bean Palace is a rank eight Immortal Gu House, if I help you obtain it, what sort of compensation can match my contribution?”

Fang Di Chang did not hesitate, he bowed to Fang Yuan as he said earnestly: “Friend, I can guarantee on my reputation that Fang clan will give an appropriate compensation for your contribution!”

“Alright, then we will set an agreement, giving me a compensation worthy of my contribution.” Fang Yuan clapped.

Both sides made an agreement.

“Please open Inquiry Dock, I will go out personally.” Fang Yuan said again.

Fang Di Chang was surprised, he thought that Fang Yuan had found some weakness because he was a wisdom path Gu Immortal. But to think that he was going to act personally.

So be it if he was making a move, but he wanted to leave Immortal Gu House Inquiry Dock.

Once he left, the outside world would be very dangerous. Especially that Divine Bean Palace, three rank eight existences were fighting in it, the difference between rank seven and eight was huge, there was a chance of dying if he got involved.

Fang Di Chang hesitated: “It is not safe outside. Why don’t I use peach blossom maze’s variation move and summon flowery wind warriors for you to unleash your methods instead?”

Fang Yuan laughed: “I need to use this method personally. Don’t worry, I will not harm Fang clan’s interests.”

Fang Di Chang was not worried about this, be it the alliance agreement earlier or their new one, there were related rules.

Once Fang Yuan did anything against the interest of Fang clan, he would be breaking the agreement, he would face a fierce backlash!

But since Fang Yuan said this, Fang Di Chang could not stop him, he opened Inquiry Dock.

Fang Yuan flew into the sky, getting into peach blossom maze.

Fang Di Chang did not blink, he was focusing on Fang Yuan’s actions, he wanted to see what method Fang Yuan had to help Fang clan obtain Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace!

At the next moment, Fang Di Chang’s eyes widened.

Fang Yuan actually charged into Divine Bean Palace.

“Is he trying to die?” At once, Fang clan’s Gu Immortals could only think of this possibility.

But Fang Yuan came prepared!

Immortal killer move — Yama1!

He activated the immortal killer move that he had just created inside Inquiry Dock earlier.

Once he used this move, the ‘thin layer of silk clothing’ on the surface of his soul shined with a profound light.

This profound light interacted with the soul coat, which was his ghost official garment.

Ghost official garment expanded rapidly, covering Fang Yuan’s body and forming a huge imperial robe that was brown in color with pale green in it. The robe had wide sleeves and a jade belt on his waist, the left and right side of the robe was laced with golden threads that formed the images of ghostly monsters, he also wore a royal crown that had hanging beads at the front and back1.

Once this move was used, Fang Yuan’s aura changed completely, he became eerie, dark, and unfathomable.

“What is this person doing here?” Chen Yi squinted as cold light flashed in his eyes.

“That rank seven wisdom path Gu Immortal?!” Fang Gong recognized him, but did not understand why he was here.

But both parties were cautious, they did not attack yet.

Fang Gong was informed by Fang Di Chang while Chen Yi decided to observe the situation first. If he attacked now, Fang Gong might find a chance to attack him.

Fang Yuan officially entered Divine Bean Palace, the three rank eight existences had been fighting, their battle strength and concentration were mostly kept among themselves.

Chen Yi did not attack, Fang Yuan let out a sigh of relief, he increased his speed and flew towards Qing Chou.

“Hmm?” Seeing Fang Yuan’s action, Chen Yi and Fang Gong’s attacks became slower.

“What is he trying to do?” Fang clan’s Gu Immortals were all watching Fang Yuan.

“A wisdom path Gu Immortal approaching the legendary immemorial soul beast?! This, this, this...” Seeing Fang Yuan’s rash action, many Fang clan Gu Immortals were lost for words.

Qing Chou roared!

It pounced towards Fang Gong.

It roared again.

It pounced at Chen Yi.

Fang Yuan came directly to it, but it completely ignored him, it did not sense him at all!

This was the effect of the killer move yama!

This move was very special, its core was the immortal killer move ghostly concealment.

All along, Fang Yuan had not been able to use ghostly concealment well, because he could not pair it with his other moves. Qing Chou could detect Fang Yuan earlier because he used killer moves to fight, he had exposed himself.

But it was different now.

After gaining theft path great grandmaster attainment, even though Fang Yuan could not decipher all the profundities of ghostly concealment, he had enough ability to make use of this rank nine killer move!

Yama was one of his deduction results.

It combined ghostly concealment and ghost official garment, the two were no longer separate and did not conflict anymore. After Fang Yuan used the killer move yama, no matter what he did, Qing Chou could not detect him.

Seeing that Fang Yuan was on Qing Chou’s tortoise shell, be it Fang clan or the two rank eight Gu Immortals, they were stunned.

“What happened?”

“He got close to Qing Chou so easily?!”

“This Qing Chou is a legendary immemorial beast that has an immortal aperture, it is able to cultivate!”

Many Fang clan Gu Immortals could not believe it.

But next, what Fang Yuan did almost made their eyeballs pop out.

Immortal killer move — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

Fang Yuan directly stood on Qing Chou’s back as he grabbed at it with his right arm.

He was merely rank seven, but he dared to provoke a rank eight existence like this. Many Fang clan Gu Immortals had two thoughts.

The first thought was, is this person trying to die?

The second thought was, even though he was rash, one had no choice but to admire his courage!

Qing Chou roared!

It pounced towards Fang Gong.

Fang Gong: “Again?”

Qing Chou roared!

It attacked Chen Yi.

Chen Yi: “You idiot, there is someone on your back.”

Chen Yi felt something amiss, ever since Fang Yuan appeared, everything had been too strange. Therefore, he reminded Qing Chou.

Qing Chou was still able to think, it wanted to turn around but Fang Yuan’s great thief ghost hand had already activated, a huge black eerie hand entered Qing Chou’s body.

Qing Chou turned around to look at his back, Fang Yuan was there but it could not see him!

But soon, it roared as it pounced at Chen Yi after feeling angry from being deceived.

Chen Yi was furious too, he screamed: “You idiot, stop!”

Fang Gong was also moved, he thought: “This Suan Bu Jin is amazing! He is right there but Qing Chou cannot detect him no matter what! What method is this? And he is currently on Qing Chou’s back, his objective is definitely not simple, what does he want?”

At the next moment, Fang Gong’s questions were answered.

Fang Yuan’s expression changed as he pulled out the ghost hand that had entered Qing Chou’s body.

When the ghost hand flew in, the five fingers were opened like a fan. But now, it was extremely fast and clenched, like it was holding onto something!

“I got it!” Fang Yuan was very happy, he opened his immortal aperture as the ghost hand went inside.

Qing Chou’s huge body suddenly shook, his entire body cracked as the tortoise shell was on the verge of breaking apart on the spot.

It was a soul beast, it could not spit out blood, but this scene showed that it was heavily injured!

Rage! Anger!

Qing Chou roared as it raised its head.

Its furious voice turned into sound waves that reverberated Divine Bean Palace, the entire place was starting to shake.

“What is going on? What did Suan Bu Jin do?”

“That fellow seemed to have taken something!”

Fang Gong and Chen Yi were both uncertain and suspicious.

Chen Yi squinted and wanted to attack Fang Yuan but Fang Gong blocked him and defended against the attack.

Boom!

At the next moment, Qing Chou came crashing over.

Fang Gong and Chen Yi quickly dodged.

Qing Chou roared: “Who is it? Which one of you two stole my Soul Beast Token!”

“What?!” Upon hearing Qing Chou’s words, all of the Gu Immortals present felt their hearts shook intensely!

“He actually has a way to steal the rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token?! No wonder he wanted to take great thief Immortal Gu earlier, he had this method!” Fang Di Chang’s eyes were wide open, shock was all over his face.

“This person is not simple, he concealed himself so deeply! Qing Chou has an immortal aperture, he could actually steal the Immortal Gu from it, and it is rank eight!” At once, Chen Yi thought of a famous person in history — Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable!

“Did this person obtain Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance?” Chen Yi thought while shouting: “Qing Chou you idiot, I reminded you already that someone is on your back. We did not steal it, that fellow did, he is at the door!”

Qing Chou turned to look, Fang Yuan was flying towards the outside of the palace, but Qing Chou could not see anything!

Qing Chou used an investigative immortal killer move but also found nothing!

The investigative killer move managed to detect Fang Yuan, but Qing Chou could not perceive it at all.

Qing Chou was even angrier than before, it aimed at Chen Yi as he roared: “You coward, I am sure you are the one!!”

“You idiot!” Chen Yi was furious and felt maligned, he retaliated.

Both sides fought with greater intensity now, Fang Gong could tell that this was bad. Earlier, the three parties restrained themselves, but now, after losing a rank eight Immortal Gu, Qing Chou was going mad, it was filled with anger, why would it hold back?

Fang Gong persuaded them but it was useless. Not only so, Chen Yi did not want to face Qing Chou’s rage alone, he flew towards Fang Gong and the three rank eight existences fought once more.

But now was different than before, the three sides did not hold back, they started to use killer moves.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1529: Refining Soul Beast Token

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

A fan-like dark eerie ghost hand was flying around in the sky.

Its fingers were clenched, rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token was struggling inside, trying to escape.

The dark eerie ghost hand was met with this Soul Beast Token’s rampage, there were protrusions on the ghost hand as the five fingers trembled, it was about to give way.

However, even if Soul Beast Token escaped from the ghost hand, it was inside Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture, it had nowhere to run. It would merely go from a tiny cage to a bigger cage.

Fang Yuan thought: “This immortal killer move great thief ghost hand that I conceptualized uses rank nine killer move ghostly concealment as the core with rank seven great thief Immortal Gu and others as the supplement, therefore it could even steal a rank eight Immortal Gu like Soul Beast Token. However... this move cannot last long, it does not have any sealing properties. I need to work hard to refine this Soul Beast Token myself!”

While he was thinking, great thief ghost hand was increasingly weakening as soul beast token Immortal Gu did its best to escape from the restraint.

However, Fang Yuan’s goal had already been met at this point.

Heaven Sealing Mountain!

This was originally used to seal his immortal zombie body’s heaven’s will.

But now, Fang Yuan’s immortal zombie body had his split soul, it was a rank six time path clone now, Heaven Sealing Mountain was empty as a result.

“Go.” Under Fang Yuan’s manipulation, great thief ghost hand entered the cave inside Heaven Sealing Mountain and into the Gu formation.

Fang Yuan activated the Gu formation, great thief ghost hand stopped trembling, the soul beast token Immortal Gu inside was temporarily suppressed, even though it still struggled, it was already far less than before.

“I cannot constantly suppress Soul Beast Token like this, the urgent matter now is to find a place to refine this rank eight Immortal Gu!”

Fang Yuan thought about this, his speed did not fall, after getting out of Divine Bean Palace, he went out of peach blossom maze’s loophole and left the battlefield directly.

“He left?!” Fang Yuan’s action made all the Gu Immortals feel surprised.

Chen Yi gritted his teeth in hatred, he could not do anything about it, he was facing the attacks of Qing Chou and Fang Gong.

“Such resolution.” Fang Di Chang praised as he sighed deeply, watching Fang Yuan’s figure that gradually became smaller.

After Fang Yuan left, he met with countless soul beasts.

There were an uncountable number of soul beasts, Fang Yuan was deeply moved. But he had a thought and controlled himself, he did not kill them to harvest soul cores.

He needed to refine rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token now. As for the rank eight Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace, those three rank eight existences could continue to fight for it.

Fang Yuan understood his own abilities clearly.

Even with reverse flow protection seal, he was only able to fight rank eight and have rank eight battle strength. If he interfered in the battle of the three rank eight existences now, and competed to obtain Divine Bean Palace, there was little hope and a high chance for mishaps.

Once he exposes reverse flow protection seal, he would also expose his identity, he might even face Fang clan’s attacks.

This was not worth it for Fang Yuan, he wanted to have a working relationship with Fang clan and use green ghost desert to cultivate soul path.

His alliance agreement with Fang clan was also a factor. It was not easy to get rid of it, he needed time to prepare.

Even though Fang Yuan took away Soul Beast Token, the soul path dao marks in green ghost desert still continued to corrode peach blossom maze.

There was a sea of soul beasts around the entire battlefield.

But Fang Yuan left easily.

He had yama killer move, he could use ghostly concealment’s effect, even Qing Chou could not find him, not to mention these mere soul beasts.

He flew rapidly and left green ghost desert without looking back, after confirming his safety and the lack of people in the proximity, Fang Yuan landed on an ordinary desert.

Fang Yuan went underground and set up a temporary Gu formation, eliminating all of his aura and traces.

After that, he focused his mind to deal with rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token.

Soul Beast Token had been refined by Qing Chou, its will was inside, Fang Yuan had a lot of difficulty refining it.

This was the most basic part of Gu refinement — single refinement.

The single refinement of an existing Gu worm. The essence of it was to use one’s own will to replace the original will of the Gu worm inside.

Gu Masters use primeval essence to refine mortal Gu because the primeval essence belonged to them and contained their will.

When Gu Immortals use immortal essence to refine Immortal Gu, the same logic followed.

Wild Gu worms contained wild wills and were hard to tame, they were difficult to refine. But man is the spirit of living beings, trying to take away someone else’s Immortal Gu was even harder.

Fang Yuan had been planning in Inquiry Dock for a long time, he was not unprepared.

Rank seven Immortal Gu, Affection and Self Love!

Fang Yuan first took out these two Immortal Gu as he activated self love Immortal Gu on Soul Beast Token.

The will of Qing Chou inside Soul Beast Token was quickly affected, it started to love and treasure itself, no matter what Fang Yuan did from now on, this will would not take a risk and self-detonate Soul Beast Token.

Next, Fang Yuan used affection Immortal Gu, sending its will into the Soul Beast Token.

Both wills interacted and started to compete.

Affection was not a will that specialized in offense, it was quickly destroyed by Qing Chou’s will.

But there was lingering affection will that scattered in Soul Beast Token, it was not completely decimated.

This was the specialty of affection will, it allowed affection Immortal Gu’s effect to linger. But as time passes, the lingering affection will would be eradicated.

Fang Yuan continued to activate affection Immortal Gu as he sent in its will continuously into Soul Beast Token.

But no matter how much Fang Yuan sent in, Qing Chou’s will would destroy it, while suffering little losses.

Qing Chou’s will was very powerful inside Soul Beast Token, and was very stubborn!

Immortal essence was rapidly expended, but Fang Yuan could sustain the cost, he had already prepared a lot of immortal essence, his earlier development in the immortal aperture was paying off now.

After several minutes, Fang Yuan stopped instilling affection will into Soul Beast Token.

There was a lot of affection will left inside, even though most of it was erased by Qing Chou’s will, the remaining amount was quite a lot, after reaching its limit, there was no way of raising its quantity.

At this point, Fang Yuan sent his self will into Soul Beast Token.

Once self will went in, Qing Chou’s will became furious, charging at it like a frenzied beast. In comparison, the battle between Qing Chou’s will and affection will earlier was like a drizzle.

Fang Yuan’s self will fought with Qing Chou’s will, the fight was one-sided, the self will army could not match it at all.

For example, Soul Beast Token was like a camp that was the territory of Qing Chou’s will. Fang Yuan’s self will was like an invader traveling by boat, only able to send in a small number of troops each time. With such a small scale, it was easily wiped out by Qing Chou’s will each time.

But Fang Yuan ignored that, he continued to instill self will.

His advantage was that with enough immortal essence, self will was endlessly produced. Meanwhile, Qing Chou’s will could not be replenished.

Fifteen minutes, thirty minutes, forty-five minutes... as time passed, Fang Yuan’s advantage grew, he stabilized himself and eventually matched Qing Chou’s will, having half the control over Soul Beast Token.

Qing Chou’s will rumbled intensely, knowing that it was not Fang Yuan’s match, it wanted to detonate this Soul Beast Token.

But at this time, the lingering affection will activated, erasing the determination from Qing Chou’s will. Fang Yuan also sent in fake will and interfered with the decision of Qing Chou’s will.

Eventually, Fang Yuan sent in a large amount of self will and charged like an army, erasing all of Qing Chou’s lingering will.

“I finally refined soul beast token Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, his forehead was full of sweat.

This battle was like a major war involving countless troops, he was extremely tired.

Looking at the time, three days and nights had passed in the outside world!

“Thankfully I have wisdom path methods and compatible Immortal Gu, otherwise, I could not have refined this Gu.”

“Sigh, even though I have great thief ghost hand and ghostly concealment, I only managed to replicate a trace of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s capabilities. I was merely making use of his accomplishments. Legend says that Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable has a move, steal heart, it has the power to steal the will inside Immortal Gu and instantly refine them, it is truly amazing!”

Fang Yuan was sighing in his mind, he stored Soul Beast Token and quickly went back to green ghost desert.

“I have soul beast token Immortal Gu, together with hundred and eighty slaves, I can enslave that Qing Chou!”

“With Qing Chou, I would have a huge possibility of obtaining Divine Bean Palace, after all, it has huge control over Divine Bean Palace.”

“Even if I face the backlash of Fang clan, I have the ability to protect my life, and if I obtain Divine Bean Palace, I will gain immense profits!”

Fang Yuan analyzed in his mind.

After successfully getting Soul Beast Token, he started to work his mind on trying to get that rank eight Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace.

But when he flew to the periphery of green ghost desert, he was intercepted by a Gu Immortal.

“Please wait.” An ordinary looking female immortal had stopped him, she smiled politely, having rank seven aura.

“What is it?” Fang Yuan had a thought as he slowed down.

The female immortal smiled: “I am He Gu, I saw that you were flying fast, you must have an intended destination. With green ghost desert’s huge change, I heard that a precious treasure had emerged, I wonder if you have any information? I am willing to buy it.”

Fang Yuan’s expression did not change, but he felt something amiss in his mind.

Originally, Fang clan had caused a huge commotion when trying to get Divine Bean Palace, all of the soul beasts in green ghost desert were stirred, this could not be concealed, Western Desert’s Gu Immortals noticed it and came over.

Fang Yuan spent three days and night to refine Soul Beast Token, many Western Desert Gu Immortals had already arrived.

“I’m afraid the battle ended already!”

“If the three parties are still fighting, the power of rank eight cannot be concealed, the commotion would be grand, how can these Gu Immortals be clueless now?”

“I wonder how this battle ended? Who obtained Divine Bean Palace?”

Fang Yuan could not help but think.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1530: Plotting Against Qing Chou

“So that’s it.” Fang Yuan immediately contacted Fang clan’s Gu Immortals and found out what happened.

This battle over Divine Bean Palace had indeed ended. Fang clan obtained it!

Heavenly Lotus Sect’s first supreme elder Chen Yi said some words before leaving, he wanted Fang clan to take good care of Divine Bean Palace, he would return to retrieve it next time.

As for Qing Chou, it also escaped, it had deep foundations, it had more rank eight Immortal Gu than just Soul Beast Token.

Even though Fang clan obtained Divine Bean Palace, among their three Immortal Gu Houses, Chicken Dog Coop and Inquiry Dock were both heavily damaged, first supreme elder Fang Gong also suffered heavy injuries. And the Divine Bean Palace that they got was nearly half destroyed.

However, after Fang Yuan contacted them, Fang clan promised to pay the compensation that Fang Yuan was supposed to get. And it was very high according to their alliance agreement. But Fang clan wanted Fang Yuan to hold on first, because the commotion was too big now, news that Fang clan obtained Divine Bean Palace would be deduced very soon. By then, Western Desert would be in a huge commotion, many super forces would not want Fang clan to obtain this Immortal Gu House and became the number one super force in Western Desert!

By then, Fang clan would face pressure from all directions, they needed to raise their strength during this peaceful period and rest. Especially their Immortal Gu Houses, they needed to repair them.

Thus, Fang clan was tight on funds, they wanted Fang clan to give them some time.

Fang Yuan thought about it and agreed.

Firstly, the alliance agreement was not strict on the payment timing. And secondly, Fang Yuan wanted to maintain a good relationship with them.

The situation was different now.

Fang clan provoked Central Continent’s Heavenly Lotus Sect, it was the same as provoking Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan, who was acting as Suan Bu Jin, had also been part of this, from Fang clan’s perspective, he was their natural ally against such a strong enemy.

On another hand, Fang clan was facing great pressure and wary of Fang Yuan’s high battle strength. Suan Bu Jin was a wisdom path Gu Immortal with methods to enslave a soul beast army, during the battle in Divine Bean Palace, he even showed the ability to steal rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token, it was simply shocking!

Thus, Fang clan had a very vigilant attitude, they did not want to provoke him, especially at this timing, Fang clan was facing huge danger, they did not want to antagonize Fang Yuan, they even wanted to rely on him as external help.

Fang Yuan understood their intentions easily.

“First was Tang clan, and now this Fang clan is also a good pawn to resist Heavenly Court.” Fang clan was plotting against the world, his vision looked towards the future.

“Western Desert would definitely go into a commotion, the crucial thing is how much battle strength Fang clan still has left, how much of Divine Bean Palace’s power can they unleash?”

If Fang clan could endure all of the pressure, Fang Yuan would not mind helping them and stabilizing their relationship.

If Fang clan could not defend themselves or even faced extermination, Fang Yuan would not help them, in fact, he would go ahead and try to snatch Divine Bean Palace for himself.

Fang Yuan watched on the fence, he had a calm emotion.

He had gained a lot in this Divine Bean Palace battle. Firstly, he obtained rank seven great thief Immortal Gu, together with his theft path great grandmaster attainment level, he could start to use ghostly concealment, it was a qualitative breakthrough. Secondly, he obtained Soul Beast Token, such a rank eight Immortal Gu could not be obtained normally even if one had huge assets. And thirdly, his relationship with Fang clan improved drastically, they even owed him lots of compensation.

Even if Fang Yuan obtained Divine Bean Palace, he would need to invest a lot to repair it. In addition, his burden of feeding Immortal Gu would intensify.

This result was not necessarily suboptimal for Fang Yuan.

“But at the moment, there are lots of Western Desert Gu Immortals in green ghost desert, I cannot start my plans here.”

Originally, Fang Yuan was going to let Ying Wu Xie and the rest farm soul cores in green ghost desert to help his soul cultivation. But he could not do so now.

There were too many people now, he could not act.

And there was the biggest threat, Qing Chou, which had escaped.

This legendary immemorial soul beast had rank eight battle strength, Fang Yuan did not fight against it personally, but he could see how powerful it was, even with reverse flow protection seal, he could at best only fight evenly with it.

Right now, Qing Chou was missing, it could likely be hiding in green ghost desert, this way, whether Fang Yuan sent Ying Wu Xie to hunt or stayed here himself, there was great danger. If they fought, just the exposure of his identity would ruin many of Fang Yuan’s plans.

“I should leave.” Fang Yuan had many wisdom path methods, in just a while, he made the wisest choice, he decided to leave green ghost desert, and even leave Western Desert.

“Friend?” At this moment, He Gu was still beside Fang Yuan, seeing his silence, she asked again.

Fang Yuan chuckled as he looked at her, this woman was quite astute, she deduced many things just from his flying movement.

Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered as he said: “I have some precious information, if you want to buy them, you need to be able to pay for them.”

He Gu smiled: “No worries friend, even though I am a lone cultivator, I have some assets. As long as your information is accurate, I will definitely pay an appropriate sum.”

Fang Yuan created a simple agreement with He Gu before he told her some things about Qing Chou, they were all truthful words.

He Gu’s eyes shined brightly: “Oh? A soul beast that has to do with Qing clan? Qing clan’s inheritance seems to be with it?”

“I am unsure about the specifics.” Fang Yuan shook his head, not willing to say anything else.

He Gu was satisfied with the information, she paid Fang Yuan a lot of Western Desert immortal materials.

Even with Fang Yuan’s wealth, he was quite surprised. Among these immortal materials, one was ancient divine wood, it was a rare rank six immortal material. Even though it was rank six, it was very rare in treasure yellow heaven, it could be sold at the price of a rank seven immortal material.

This was a small surprise, Fang Yuan earned some profits while exposing Qing Chou’s information.

On one hand, he was helping Fang clan to divert the attention of the Western Desert Gu Immortals towards Qing Chou. Secondly, as long as Qing Chou was alive and hidden, Fang Yuan’s plans in green ghost desert were severely affected, he could make use of these Western Desert Gu Immortals to find out where Qing Chou was. If they really met and discovered this legendary immemorial soul beast, good luck to them.

“My information is true, wisdom path Gu Immortals will definitely deduce upon it to test its reliability. This involves Qing clan’s inheritance, even rank eight existences would be moved. If one or two rank eight Gu Immortals act, Qing Chou would be in trouble.”

As a wisdom path grandmaster, Fang Yuan used this opportunity to plot against Qing Chou.

But that He Gu was not satisfied, she asked to explore green ghost desert with Fang Yuan.

Lone immortals working together was common.

Of course, Fang Yuan rejected her.

Fang Yuan bid farewell to He Gu and left.

That He Gu wanted to follow him, but he easily took a turn and used familiar face to disguise himself, getting rid of this woman.

Fang Yuan did not enter green ghost desert, he left from the periphery of green ghost desert.

He flew for several days without rest, arriving at Western Desert’s regional wall.

After passing two regional walls, he reached Southern Border!

The blazing sun was replaced by dark clouds in the sky.

Western Desert had dry winds, but Southern Border was humid and moist.

Looking far away, mountains were covered in vegetation, the scene was dyed in a dark-green color.

“Southern Border...” Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with a mild light before becoming clear again. Within the five regions, he was the biggest impression of Southern

Border.

Immortal investigative killer move — Qi Luck Sensation!

Immediately, he used the killer move as cold light shined in his eyes.

He had connected his luck to upper extreme heavenly eagle earlier, now that he used qi luck sensation, he sensed its location to an extent.

Fang Yuan’s main objective in Southern Border now was to obtain control of the upper extreme heavenly eagle again.

This space path immemorial desolate beast was very useful to him. With it, Fang Yuan could annex all of the blessed lands within City Well, his immortal aperture’s foundation would rise sharply and his dao marks would increase in number.

“The southeast direction...” Fang Yuan stopped qi luck sensation as he flew into the clouds at lightning speed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1531: Smoky Warm Jade Field

Southern Border, southeast direction.

Yellow dragon river was to the north, while Bai Shou Mountain was to the south.

This was originally a mountain range with varying contours, but it had split apart now, a huge Earth Trench had been created here with immeasurable depth.

The great era was arriving, the five regions were becoming one, the first step was the turbulence in earth qi, and the connection of earth veins. Southern Border had the densest earth path dao marks in all five regions, therefore, after the first earthquake, several more huge earthquakes occurred throughout the region.

Each earthquake was a disaster to Southern Border’s mortals. But for Gu Immortals, they were all fortuitous encounters!

All sorts of immortal materials and even wild Immortal Gu would emerge from deep underground. The earth veins were the essence of the earth after all.

These last years, Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world had been in deep commotion.

First was the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, followed by the dream realm battle, be it lone cultivators, demonic path or righteous path members, many people had died, especially Wu clan, they had lost seven Gu Immortals!

Southern Border’s Gu Immortals became alert as a result, because of the danger, they tried hard to raise their strength.

This time, the earth vein tremors created Earth Trenches, countless Southern Border Gu Immortals invested themselves into this, trying to scavenge for resources and make up for their losses while raising their strength.

At this moment, in this newly developed Earth Trench, a group of Gu Masters were setting up a mortal Gu formation and setting up camp.

The leader had rank five cultivation level and was a woman.

Her eyebrows were thin like smoke, her eyes were as clear as the moon. Her skin was snow-white, and her lips were pink and tender, her silky jet black hair draping over her shoulders, accentuating her beauty.

Right now, she was wearing a plain white dress, she was elegant like an orchid and gentle like water, having an aura of royalty in her.

It was none other than Shang clan’s current leader, Shang Xin Ci.

Shang Xin Ci’s beautiful eyes were in a daze, staring at the field before her.

This field was deep within Earth Trench, it was extraordinary, the soil was black and firm like iron, colorful smoke was rising up from the soil, floating towards the sky and forming into clouds.

All of the Gu Masters in the field felt a warm feeling permeating their bodies and souls, they felt extremely comfortable.

“The great power of nature, this is truly incredible!” Shang Xin Ci sighed, feeling deeply moved.

A white robed young man was standing beside her, he had a heroic stature, sword-like sharp eyes and brows, a small eagle was resting on his shoulder, it was Ye Fan.

Ye Fan spoke: “This field is not simple, if I am not wrong, this is a smoky warm jade field, it can produce immortal material smoky warm jade, it is extraordinary. This field is actually a few square kilometers worth of land, it has extremely high value!”

Ye Fan still loved Shang Xin Ci in his heart, before this, he had taken it upon himself to help Shang Xin Ci handle the affairs of her clan.

But afterwards, when chasing away the Eighteen Lads of Wine Village, he met Bai Ning Bing and was almost killed.

Ye Fan managed to keep his life and changed drastically, becoming more mature. By chance, he met Lu Wei Yin and became his disciple.

He was nurtured by Lu Wei Yin, not only did he enter black heaven to cultivate, he was even given lots of knowledge by Lu Wei Yin, far surpassing Shang Xin Ci.

“So this place is called smoky warm jade field, thank you young master Ye for the explanation. I finally know why the immortal ancestors in our clan want me to lead the group to guard this place.” Shang Xin Ci expressed her gratitude.

She originally had low aptitude and cultivation level, but to fight for the smoky warm jade field this time, Shang clan’s Gu Immortals went ahead and used their unique methods to raise Shang Xin Ci to rank five regardless of the cost.

Worry flashed across Ye Fan’s eyes.

Shang Xin Ci’s enemies were Hou clan and Tie clan.

These two clans also sent their rank five cultivation level clan leaders here, they were bent on getting the smoky warm jade field.

Ye Fan’s current understanding of the world had surpassed the mortal realm, he could tell very clearly.

“This smoky warm jade field is a natural resource point. Whichever clan can control this place will gain a sizeable amount of smoky warm jade each year. Shang clan, Hou clan, and Tie clan, even the clan leaders of these three super forces are merely pawns, the Gu Immortals behind them are the true contesters.”

“Sigh! The position of Shang clan leader seems high and mighty, but it is merely a political tool for Gu Immortals. They have no freedom and are in danger, lone immortals and demonic cultivators might also be coming here. During the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Shang clan’s previous leader, Shang Yan Fei, the father of Shang Xin Ci, died as well. Wu clan’s leader Empress Wu Ji and other champions also faced the same fate... if one is not a Gu Immortal, no matter how amazing of a mortal they are, they are still mortals.”

Ye Fan felt deep emotions thinking about this, he affirmed his determination to become an immortal!

“Report—! Hou clan and Tie clan have sent large groups of troops of an unprecedented scale, directly towards us.” At this time, an investigative Gu Master reported.

A beautiful female Gu Master beside Shang Xin Ci said: “Clan leader was right, we set up a Gu formation and expanded our base, we triggered the bottom lines of these two clans.”

This beautiful woman was Wei De Xin, the wife of Wei clan leader, she was once bought as a slave by Fang Yuan and given to Shang Xin Ci. Right now, she was Shang Xin Ci’s personal guard, she was loyal and only wanted to repay her gratitude.

Shang Xin Ci nodded, smiling: “The Gu formation has been set long ago, we are pretending to set it up now so as to lure these two clans to attack us, so that we can take them down at once.”

Shang clan, Tie clan, and Hou clan had been in this conflict for a long time, they each had wins and losses, it was a tie between them. Thus, Shang Xin Ci came up with a plan to set up a Gu formation and amplify her side’s strength to win this contest. The other two clan leaders were experienced leaders and would not cause a commotion in their clans if they left for some time, but Shang Xin Ci was young and inexperienced, if she went out of the clan for too long, there would be a huge commotion internally. This was the reason why Shang Xin Ci had to take a risk.

Of course, she was not taking a risk blindly, Shang Xin Ci had devised her plan after thoroughly researching her enemies, she was confident of obtaining victory now.

“If I can defeat the two old clan leaders from Hou clan and Tie clan here, my reputation will rise sharply, when I return to the clan, things will change.” Saying so, Shang Xin Ci’s lips curled up as she said loudly: “I hope everyone can put in their effort and claim victory now.”

Everyone responded positively.

Shang Xin Ci had Wei De Xin as her guard, Xiong Tu, Xiong Huo, and Xiong Feng as her three experts, she even had Xiao Yan from Shang clan arena, an external Gu Master who had been recruited by her and became an important general. As for steward Zhou Quan, he was taking the place of Shang Xin Ci in Shang Liang

Mountain to maintain the situation in the clan.

Ye Fan was like a guest elder, he was not considered a subordinate of Shang Xin Ci.

“The position of clan leader is tiring and hard, but Xin Ci has learned a lot, she is not as weak now, she is becoming more bold.” At once, Ye Fan was dazed by Shang Xin Ci’s determined and elegant disposition.

“Shang clan leader, what is the meaning of this?” A moment later, Tie clan leader arrived.

Next, Hou clan leader also arrived with his men, questioning Shang Xin Ci: “Little lass, are you trying to take over this entire place by expanding your base?”

Shang Xin Ci smiled lightly: “Clan leaders, we have already wasted a lot of time here. Why don’t we decide the victor now, what is the point of stalling?”

Hou clan leader’s pupils shrunk.

Tie clan leader laughed heartily, showing Shang Xin Ci a thumbs-up: “Good, you are an amazing junior. The truth is, I am quite frustrated with being here for so long, let’s have a huge three-way battle today and decide the victor.”

Thus, all three sides sent out their troops and fought.

Shang Xin Ci, Ye Fan, and the other higher-ups were standing on the spot, waiting for the results of the battle.

“Activate the Gu formation.” Shang Xin Ci instructed.

The formation path Gu Master beside her was hesitant: “Isn’t it too early to activate the Gu formation now? They will have a lot of time to react to it.”

Shang Xin Ci shook her head: “Go ahead and set it up.”

The Gu formation activated as light filled the battlefield.

Hou clan and Tie clan’s Gu Masters immediately panicked.

Shang Xin Ci spoke loudly: “This formation can protect the lives of those heavily injured, Gu Masters from Hou clan and Tie clan, go ahead and fight.”

Once she said that, Hou clan’s and Tie clan’s leaders had changes of expressions.

Tie clan leader laughed loudly: “I’ve heard of Shang clan leader’s kindness long ago, it seems to be true after all, alright, let us fight until the end.”

Hou clan leader snorted coldly, thinking: “This lass is truly formidable, she said the incredible ability of this Gu formation to put our resolve in chaos, would we still get rid of the formation after hearing that? I truly underestimated her!”

“Looking at all the clan leaders of super forces and even Gu Master experts, Xin Ci is the kindest person I’ve ever seen. She could have created an offensive formation, but she chose this and reduced her own advantage. I need to lend her a hand later.” Ye Fan thought.

He did not mention his immortal fortuitous encounter to Shang Xin Ci and the rest.

But after cultivating in black heaven, Ye Fan was confident that even rank five Gu Masters were not his match!

The Gu formation activated, under its effect, whenever a Gu Master suffers great injury, they would be enveloped by light and sent out, safe from harm.

At the same time, the Gu formation amplified the power of Shang clan’s Gu Masters.

Tie clan and Hou clan had Gu Masters trying to unravel this Gu formation, but before they succeeded, Shang clan’s Gu Masters would have a huge advantage.

“Kill!” Xiong Tu, Xiong Huo, and Xiong Feng joined the battlefield, the three worked together closely, most elders were not their match.

Soon, three elders from Hou clan suffered heavy injuries and were sent out of the battlefield by the light.

“Damn it!” Hou clan leader clenched his fist: “I already convinced a crucial person in Shang clan to sabotage Shang Xin Ci, to think that she would initiate battle now. This Tie clan leader is too rash, he actually agreed and fell into her schemes. Hmm?”

At this time, a female Gu Master walked out of Tie clan’s formation, she was fearsome!

She fought valiantly, rampaging the battlefield unhindered.

The three Xiong brothers wanted to stop her, but they were sent out of the battlefield rapidly by her unstoppable advancement.

Hou clan leader’s eyes were bulging, he finally realized: “So Tie clan has such a person! Amazing, too amazing, even if I go and fight, I am not her match.”

At the moment of crisis, Ye Fan entered the battlefield, standing in front of this female Gu Master: “Lady, may I know your name?”

That woman’s eyes flashed like lightning as she assessed Ye Fan, showing a hint of sternness, she said in a cold tone: “Tie Ruo Nan!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1532: Ye Fan Versus Tie Ruo Nan

Boom boom boom!

Intense explosions resounded. Mortal killer moves were unleashed endlessly, two figures were clashing continuously as they fought.

One was Ye Fan with immense luck, he cultivated transformation path and light path, he obtained the guidance of a Gu Immortal of Shang clan and was also the disciple of the mysterious Gu Immortal Lu Wei Yin. And the rarest thing was that he did not rely on his fortuitous encounters alone, he was walking on his own cultivation path.

And for Tie Ruo Nan, even though she was born in the super clan Tie clan, her childhood was not fortunate, she lost her mother when she was a child, and her father when she was a teenager, she became one of Tie clan's eight young masters through her own hard work, she was skilled in both the pen and sword, she had a lot of suitors. Especially after getting the guidance of Tie clan Gu Immortal Tie Mian Shen, she became the inheritor of Iron Mask true inheritance.

These two were fighting like two geniuses competing, huge commotions were created, the backlash of their attacks created a large area that would injure ordinary Gu Masters if they went into the range of their attacks, everyone had to evade them.

The Gu Masters from all three clans were stunned from seeing their fight.

"Missy, young master Ye is so strong? Why did we not know?" Servant Xiao Die asked Shang Xin Ci.

Shang Xin Ci's eyes flickered as she pondered: "Young master Ye must have his own opportunities, his strength rose drastically. This is a good thing, but his opponent is not simple, young master Ye has to be more careful."

Xiao Die chuckled as she covered her mouth: "Young master Ye is indeed talented and handsome, everyone can see that he likes you, Missy. If he knows about your concern towards him, he would be so happy."

Shang Xin Ci shook her head, she wanted to say something but did not speak in the end.

Xiao Die had been observing her, she was Shang Xin Ci's confidant, extremely close to her, she was a servant back in Zhang clan, back then, she had followed the caravan along with Shang Xin Ci to Shang clan city.

Thus, others called Shang Xin Ci clan leader or city lord, but Xiao Die still addressed her as Missy, and Shang Xin Ci did not ask her to change her title, this showed how close the two girls were.

Right now, Xiao Die was full of worries, she thought: "It seems that Missy still cannot forget that demonic path Gu Master Fang Yuan. Sigh, what ill-affinity do they have, that Fang Yuan only escorted us to Shang clan city but he became Missy's crush. I wonder where he is now? I'm afraid he's already dead. Sigh, if he really died, I hope we can see his corpse so that Missy can give up and forget him."

Xiao Die had B grade aptitude, she was just a mortal Gu Master after all, she had not interacted with Gu Immortals, she did not know who Fang Yuan was now, she still thought that Fang Yuan was that mortal demonic path Gu Master.

Even though Shang Xin Ci learned about Fang Yuan's current situation from Shang clan Gu Immortal Shang Qing Qing, she did not need to tell Xiao Die about this.

"The new generation surpasses the old, I am truly old now." Hou clan leader watched Tie Ruo Nan and Ye Fan's fight, he felt incredibly shocked and also bitter.

Tie clan leader was more shocked than anything, he thought: "I thought that by sending Tie Ruo Nan, we would be able to sweep away the obstacles and claim victory, but now, it seems that the outcome has yet to be decided. To think that Shang clan has such a hidden expert!"

At the same time, in the sky above the battlefield where mortal Gu Masters could not detect, three Southern Border Gu Immortals placed their gazes on Tie Ruo

Nan’s and Ye Fan’s fight.

They were from Shang clan, Hou clan, and Tie clan, the three immortals were sitting on a white cloud, there was a round table in front of them as fragrant tea was placed before them.

The Gu Immortals drank tea as they used the mortals of their clans as chips to gamble, deciding the ownership of this smoky warm jade field.

This smoky warm jade field was a high grade resource point, even super forces placed a lot of attention on it. If they could get it, there would be huge profits for the entire clan.

But using mortals to compete without Gu Immortals fighting, was it too foolish? Or rather, if they lost, would the Gu Immortals deny the victory?

Using mortals to gamble on immortal level conflicts, it was not so simple after all.

Forget about the lone and demonic immortals that live alone, but for righteous path forces, they looked at the long term consequences. They focused on nurturing descendants, like how Shang clan had their young master competition to make them fight for top positions, they even brought in external Gu Masters in the arena. Tie clan also had eight main young masters, and other clans had their own systems, it was all to choose immortal seeds from their mortal descendants!

There was deep meaning in letting the clansmen fight, they represented the future achievements of the clan. Especially those Gu Immortal seeds, losing any one of them was a huge loss to the Gu Immortals.

But Gu Immortals needed to do this, the advantages far outweighed the costs.

Firstly, as long as Gu Immortals did not die in the clan, their foundations would not waver, the clan would not be destabilized. As long as Gu Immortals did not fight, anything could be negotiated.

Secondly, it was a test for these mortals too when they compete. Those who survive would emerge more experienced while those dead genius would not be considered real geniuses. The righteous path has been nurturing descendants for a long time, they could afford to lose Gu Immortal seeds.

Among the three, when competing, there were bound to be positive and negative relationships created, this would bond the clan together. When the Gu Immortal seeds grow in the future, they might have enemies in other super forces, by then, they would not be able to leave the clan, they would need to rely on it.

Any policy had its considerations, this was not just a shallow game where Gu Immortals used mortals as pawns. Those in power were not so simple.

At this moment, the three immortals were focusing on Tie Ruo Nan and Ye Fan, the three knew: the winner of this fight was the key to decide who would own smoky warm jade field.

The immortal from Shang clan, Shang Qing Qing, smiled from the seat to the left: “Congratulations Lord Tie Mian Shen, you found a good inheritor for your Iron Mask true inheritance.”

Tie clan had Iron Mask true inheritance, all the immortals in Southern Border knew about it. This true inheritance had a strict requirement, it was hard to find a suitable inheritor.

A true inheritance was a mature and superior set of cultivation content. Sometimes, not everyone could inherit it, there were certain requirements for them.

Tie clan’s Tie Mian Shen was sitting at the center.

He wore a martial uniform and his chest and legs were covered in armor, there was a thick iron mask on his face.

He had not brought a mask to wear, it was the trait of cultivating the Iron Mask true inheritance. All the Gu Immortals who cultivate this true inheritance must have a heart of justice, they also were often people most skilled in Southern Border in investigating the truth.

He had originally chosen the divine investigator, Tie Ruo Nan’s father, to become the inheritor of Iron Mask true inheritance, but he died on Qing Mao Mountain and recently, finding that Tie Ruo Nan also had the qualities and talent, she was chosen as his new inheritor.

This time, Tie clan sent him here to fight over smoky warm jade field, he brought Tie Ruo Nan along to use this chance to train her.

Among the three Gu Immortals present, the Gu Immortals from Hou clan and Shang clan were only rank six, as the only one with rank seven cultivation level, Tie Mian Shen sat at the center.

When they conversed, Shang Qing Qing and the Hou clan Gu Immortal also spoke respectfully to Tie Mian Shen.

Tie Mian Shen nodded slightly: “Shang clan’s fairy is right, this is my true inheritance’s successor. But she is still young, she needs to be trained.”

Hou clan’s Gu Immortal Hou Yao remained silent. He was watching the battlefield now, even though his clan was the weakest now, he had not lost yet. As long as Tie clan and Shang clan suffered losses together, the eventual result was still unknown.

Smoke and dust rumbled as Ye Fan took a step back, he breathed in deeply as his chest inflated and bulged.

Tie Ruo Nan pounced like an eagle from behind him, her fingers were extended like claws.

Ye Fan turned around and spat out a bright red arrow towards Tie Ruo Nan’s face.

Tie Ruo Nan was not panicking, her eyes shined brightly as she leaned backwards, evading like an elegant crane, dodging the red arrow.

But at this time, Ye Fan had already found his opportunity, he pushed forward with both hands and pounced.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1533: Underground Frost Heart Lake

Tie Ruo Nan grunted as she raised her fists, facing the attack.

Boom!

A loud sound resounded as fist and palm collided, erupting with white light.

Intense light burst out, the ground cracked from the impact.

Both sides collided intensely before retreating backwards rapidly. After ten or so steps, they stabilized their footing and looked at each other while panting roughly.

At this moment, they both had solemn expressions as they treated the other party as their biggest rival, they did not dare to be careless.

“Really amazing, these two have battle strength far surpassing normal rank fives, they are both Gu Immortal seeds!” Shang Xin Ci sighed in her mind, with her current knowledge, she knew some things about the Gu Immortal world from Shang Qing Qing.

Ye Fan looked around as he spoke: “Tie Ruo Nan, if you can handle this move, I will admit defeat!”

Tie Ruo Nan’s gaze focused as she nodded, agreeing: “Okay.”

Mortal Gu Masters had limited primeval essence, they did not fight for long, but the battle was intense, they used many mortal killer moves, their primeval essence was greatly expended.

Thus, there was little primeval essence left in their apertures. Tie Ruo Nan agreed the moment Ye Fan initiated a final move to decide victory.

Ye Fan breathed in deeply and started to activate his killer move.

Mortal killer move — Aurora Bird!

Chirp chirp!

Sounds of anxious bird chirping could be heard.

Light flowed like water on Ye Fan’s body, these rainbow lights rumbled and gathered on his forearms and right palm.

The aurora lights acted on their own, they chirped as they transformed into the shape of a small sparrow.

The aurora bird gathered energy and had a powerful aura, Tie Ruo Nan had a grim expression, black smoke was emerging from her body. The black smoke gathered on her face and slowly turned into a thin black iron mask.

Mortal killer move — Iron Mask Equipment!

This move came from Iron Mask true inheritance, if an Immortal Gu was used as the core, it would be an immortal killer move.

“Go.” Ye Fan called out as the rainbow light on his right arm seemingly gained life at this instant, leaving his body and flying into the sky, turning into a rainbow bird.

The bird flapped its wings as the aurora bird charged forward at an extreme speed.

“Come.” Tie Ruo Nan called out too as she charged forward instead of staying back.

At the next moment, she collided into the aurora bird.

Tie clan’s Gu Masters gasped, they were worried for Tie Ruo Nan, to think that she actually used her body to block the strongest attack from Ye Fan.

Above the clouds, Tie Mian Shen was calm and unmoved, he knew the power of iron mask equipment, he was confident in its defense.

Chirp chirp!

The aurora bird crashed onto Tie Ruo Nan and turned back into a lump of aurora light, enveloping Tie Ruo Nan.

Black smoke emerged from Tie Ruo Nan’s body as it defended against the corrosion of the aurora light.

Both sides were stuck in a deadlock, unable to decide the victor.

“Your Shang clan’s Gu Immortal seed is also quite good.” Tie Mian Shen praised.

Shang Qing Qing smiled: “It is a shame, he is an external seed.”

Tie Mian Shen nodded: “I see that this killer move he had is innovative, it is likely his own creation. To be able to create his own style at this age, he far surpasses ordinary geniuses.”

Hou Yao watched with envy by the side, sighing: “Such seeds are all future pillars for the clan.”

Shang Qing Qing was humble but she felt very suspicious. She had given guidance to Ye Fan before, but he did not display such talent back then.

“My Shang clan has an arena system, thus Tie Mian Shen and Hou Yao thought that he is an external Gu Immortal seed that we recruited, but that is not the case.”

“Ye Fan displayed such talent, he must have had some fortuitous encounters recently. Of course, he created his own killer move, such talent cannot be underestimated. He really is qualified to become part of our clan.”

“If we can investigate and find that his origins are not suspicious, we will recruit him. Right, he seems to like Shang Xin Ci, we can make use of that. If he can become a Gu Immortal, so what if we have to give him Shang Xin Ci? This would be a beautiful story in the future as well.”

Shang Qing Qing thought and made her plans, while at the same time, two Gu Immortals were conversing and plotting at a lake near the mountain.

These two Gu Immortals were concealing their traces, they had prepared for this long ago.

Among them, one of the Gu Immortals was a weak looking young man, he was called Yi Yu, he had a worried expression: “Will our actions really not alert those three Gu Immortals?”

“No.” His companion Yi Nan Men answered with certainty: “If not for my unique investigative killer move, I would not have found an ancient water monster under this smoky warm jade field! Our Yi clan is most skilled at water path, it is hard for these three Gu Immortals to find out.”

“And currently, we are not acting directly, we are luring this slumbering ancient water monster to wake up and rampage.”

Saying so, Yi Nan Men’s words shifted: “Of course, Gu Immortals have all sorts of methods, I cannot guarantee that they will not find out. But even if they find out and expose us, we can explain ourselves too, after all, Yi clan is also a super force, they might be suspicious, but they would not fight to the death with us.”

“If they do not discover anything, hehe, when the water monster rampages, they will definitely suppress it. By then, you can act and kill one of them to make the three clans suspicious of each other and fight!”

Yi Nan Men had rank seven cultivation level, while Yi Yu was only rank six, in their plan, Yi Yu was the one executing the assassination, he must have some unique method.

The weak looking young man Yi Yu had a worried expression: “I am not familiar with that move yet, what if the activation fails? What if they find out when I use it?”

Yi Nan Men had a solemn expression: “That is the worst possible scenario, if they find out, I will use my life to stall them and let you escape. I will not admit I am a Gu Immortal from Yi clan even if I die, you must do the same.”

“Mm!” This time, Yi Yu no longer had a worried expression, he was filled with solemnness and determination.

Yi Nan Men breathed in deeply: “I am going to make a move.”

He activated an immortal killer move with deeply concealed aura, there was not a hint of commotion from it, Yi Yu became more assured.

At the next moment, water ripples appeared deep underground, a slumbering water monster had been rudely awakened!

On the surface, Ye Fan and Tie Ruo Nan were still about to decide the winner when the ground shook.

Puff puff puff!

Gushes of water rushed out of the black soil on the ground and penetrated the battlefield, destroying the Gu formation that Shang clan had painstakingly created.

Dozens of huge water pillars that were tens of feet high appeared in smoky warm jade field.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1534: Fang Yuan Arrives

Those unlucky Gu Masters who were hit by the water pillars were quickly reduced to piles of mushy flesh.

Such a shocking change made all the Gu Masters incredibly flustered, they quickly stopped fighting and tried to leave the place.

“What is going on?” The three Gu Immortals above the clouds were about to respond when these water pillars gathered into one and turned into an ancient water monster that had a fish body, frog legs, and tiger head!

The water monster roared and pounced at the mortals.

It did not have much intelligence, it thought that these mortal Gu Masters had interrupted its sleep.

Its huge frog legs landed on the ground as a vast amount of water gushed out.

But the three immortals acted in time, three shields of light defended their respective clansmen.

“So this smoky warm jade field has an underground frost heart lake, there was an ancient water monster inside it.” Hou Yao had a solemn expression.

Shang Qing Qing gritted her teeth, looking at Tie Mian Shen: “I hope Lord Tie Mian Shen can take the lead, we will assist you to take down the ancient water monster, preventing it from rampaging and destroying the smoky warm jade field.”

Hou Yao and her were rank six Gu Immortals, they could not deal with the ancient water monster. Only Tie Mian Shen was a rank seven Gu Immortal, he was naturally going to take the lead.

Tie Mian Shen nodded, he was about to fly down when suddenly, a sharp eagle cry resounded in everyone’s ears.

At the next moment, everyone became shocked, the tiny eagle beside Ye Fan expanded rapidly and turned into a huge eagle!

Upper extreme heavenly eagle!

The huge eagle shrieked as it pounced at the ancient water monster.

Upper extreme heavenly eagle was rescued by the mysterious Gu Immortal Lu Wei Yin, it was restrained by his methods and was forced to stay with Ye Fan.

But when Ye Fan met with danger, Lu Wei Yin’s restraints would weaken greatly, the upper extreme heavenly eagle would be able to use its strength again.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle did not have the awareness of humans, it could not detect Gu Immortals in the area, it only felt threatened by the ancient water monster and its pride was provoked, it wanted to teach this monster a lesson.

Sensing the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s imposing aura, the ancient water monster backed off and turned into water, flowing out of the cave and escaping.

After the ancient water monster left, Ye Fan became safe again, the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s seal activated as it turned back into a tiny eagle, a formless force made it return to Ye Fan again.

Silence was around Ye Fan, countless Gu Masters looked at him with a shocked expression.

“Young... young master Ye, what is this eagle exactly...” Xiao Die was tongue-tied, she was completely stunned.

Ye Fan rubbed his nose: “If I say that this is the first time I’ve seen this eagle’s power, would you believe me?”

“Immemorial desolate beast!! Be it the three Gu Immortals in the clouds or the two Yi clan Gu Immortals hiding under the lake, they were completely lost for words.

“Why did this happen?” Those two Yi clan Gu Immortals only wanted to release the ancient water monster, they did not expect an immemorial desolate beast to appear.

“This is a good thing, we do not need to do anything. That immemorial desolate beast can kill these three immortals!” Yi Yu said.

Yi Nan Men had a grim expression: “Things are not so simple, can’t you see? That immemorial desolate beast is raised by someone, it is the pet of that young man who was fighting earlier!”

“Shang clan’s fairy, what is going on, this immemorial desolate beast is?” Tie Mian Shen’s gaze was bright like lightning, he turned around and questioned Shang Qing Qing.

Shang Qing Qing smiled bitterly, she was completely stunned earlier, her expression had given her away, even if she did not expose any loopholes earlier, she could not lie now.

Shang Qing Qing only had rank six cultivation level, she had to say: “I am not sure, it must be the young man’s fortuitous encounter.”

“What sort of fortuitous encounter can make a mortal raise an immemorial desolate beast as a pet?” Hou Yao exclaimed in a tone of shock and disbelief.

Tie Mian Shen smiled coldly: “This matter is too important, we cannot ignore it. Smoky warm jade field is no longer important in comparison! This young man must have obtained an immortal true inheritance, but our Southern Border righteous path has never had such a method to allow a mere mortal to raise an immemorial desolate beast, I need to investigate this and prevent the demonic path from rising again!”

Shang Qing Qing was furious but helpless, she smiled bitterly: “I am sure Lord Tie Mian Shen will investigate this matter and uphold justice.”

“Eagle, eagle, so you are this amazing!” Ye Fan sighed continuously, he stretched out his hand and wanted to touch the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s head.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle had struggled and attempted to break free but it could do nothing against the seal, after a long time, it gave up. It returned to Ye Fan’s shoulder and felt angry, but hearing his words, it showed a prideful expression, seeing Ye Fan’s hand, it stretched out its wing and slapped it away.

Ye Fan smiled bitterly.

Xiao Die watched with bulging eyes: “This eagle is so arrogant, but with that strength, the arrogance suits it. Young master Ye, you...”

Before she finished, Shang Xin Ci interrupted: “Xiao Die, this is young master Ye Fan’s secret, stop asking him.”

“No worry, no worry, this eagle was captured by my master.” Ye Fan saw that this was exposed and did not want to lie to Shang Xin Ci.

“Your master could subdue such an eagle?!” Xiao Die screeched.

Shang Xin Ci had a shocked expression too, she connected the dots, Ye Fan’s master was likely to be a powerful Gu Immortal!

While they were speaking, the upper extreme heavenly eagle suddenly showed great fright and became restless on Ye Fan’s shoulder, it was like a rat seeing a cat, or a sheep seeing a wolf.

“What happened?” Xiao Die and the rest were surprised, this arrogant eagle actually acted like this, it was a huge contrast to their impression of it.

“I don’t know!” Ye Fan shouted: “This is the first time I’ve seen the eagle act so flustered.”

The upper extreme heavenly eagle did not move from Ye Fan’s shoulder, but it shrieked at one direction. Its voice was no longer imposing as before, it was filled with fright and even had a begging tone, one could easily tell that fear was in its eyes, and even a trace of anger.

“What is going on?” At once, be it the mortal Gu Masters or Gu Immortals, they looked towards the direction that upper extreme heavenly eagle was crying out at.

Next, everyone saw a figure flying in the sky, moving like a sword piercing the air.

All of the white clouds in the sky were cut into two by this figure.

“It seems like a person?”

“Immortal?!”

The Gu Masters were shocked.

“Who is it?”

“This aura, it is not an ordinary immortal...”

The Gu Immortals were alerted and felt great surprise.

The figure stopped in the air as everyone saw this Gu Immortal’s true appearance.

Only to see that his complexion was as clear as jade, his nose was tall and his black eyes were shining with cold light. He had long hair that resembled a waterfall, hanging straight down to his waist. He wore a white robe that fluttered in the wind, he was handsome to the point of looking like a peerless beauty, his dominating aura was extremely intense.

All of the mortal Gu Masters looked up towards him.

In pure silence.

Before they heard him speak in a plain tone: “My bird, so you are here.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1535: Misplaced Love

“Who is this person?” Ye Fan raised his head to look at Fang Yuan, feeling suspicious.

At this moment, he could not help but recall his master Lu Wei Yin’s words.

“Master said before that this eagle can resolve the karma of one incident on me. I have always been wondering about it, is this Gu Immortal the owner of this eagle, and my karma involves him?”

Ye Fan did not know Fang Yuan because he was in the appearance of the sovereign immortal body, Ye Fan had never seen him like this.

Ye Fan knew about the appearance of Fang Yuan’s rank six time path clone, he had learned about it from the people around Shang Xin Ci. This was an easy task, back then, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were the Black and White Demons, they had arrest warrants on them.

Servant Xiao Die was shivering as her teeth clattered.

She could not recognize Fang Yuan, she only knew that he had such a powerful aura and was the owner of the upper extreme heavenly eagle. The eagle was already this powerful, how strong would its owner be?

Xiao Die could not imagine it, she only felt fear, Fang Yuan was likely here to find trouble with them.

Shang Xin Ci bit her lips, her gaze was fixed as she looked at Fang Yuan, there was not only shock in her eyes, there was even suspicion, there was an unclear feeling and sensation in her heart.

The mortals were confused and shocked, but the Gu Immortals were different, they felt a chill in their bodies!

“This, this is?!” Rank six Gu Immortal Hou Yao stared with wide eyes as he became tongue-tied. He knew who Fang Yuan was, but he could not say the answer even though it was right at the tip of his tongue.

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body appearance was the same as Liu Guan Yi when he roamed the world.

Back then in Southern Border, he entered the immortal formation and explored the super dream realm while disguised as Wu Yi Hai.

Liu Guan Yi and Wu Yi Hai had very different appearances.

However! After the battle of Reverse Flow River, in order to ruin Longevity Heaven’s political plan, Heavenly Court framed Fang Yuan to divide the Northern Plains Gu Immortal forces, announcing the truth behind Liu Guan Yi being Fang Yuan all along.

Thus, everyone learned that Fang Yuan was Liu Guan Yi and had also disguised as Wu Yi Hai. His sovereign immortal body’s appearance, which was the same as Liu

Guan Yi, was no longer a secret, it was known to all.

This time, Fang Yuan came to Southern Border without using familiar face or any concealment methods.

There were a few reasons.

Firstly, he had a clear objective, he wanted to reclaim the upper extreme heavenly eagle. There was no point in concealing his identity if he was going to make a move anyway.

Secondly, after the battle of Reverse Flow River, Fang Yuan obtained rank eight battle strength, and after such a long time of growth, his foundation was deep and his strength was unfathomable, he had sufficient confidence to roam Southern Border now.

Thirdly, Fang Yuan was purposely exposing his identity to probe the setup of Heavenly Court and the righteous path. But along the way, he was unobstructed.

As a result of several reasons, every Gu Immortal recognized who Fang Yuan was!

“Upper extreme heavenly eagle... Wu Yi Hai... so that’s it, this eagle is the upper extreme heavenly eagle!” Shang Qing Qing had countless thoughts, after linking them together, she understood the situation.

“Fang Yuan had rank eight battle strength, this is a widely known fact! A rank eight Gu Immortal is completely different from an immemorial desolate beast! We need to run!” Yi Yu who was hiding in the lake said.

This young and weak looking rank six Gu Immortal was very shocked, his expression was pale, his soul was shaking.

“Why are you so afraid, he might not have found us. Even if we leave now, it is too late, do you think we can outrun him?” Rank seven Gu Immortal Yi Nan Men had an ugly expression, he completely ignored the plans of Yi clan, he tried his best to conceal his aura to the limit.

The immortals were all helpless, but Tie Mian Shen floated up and showed himself openly, flying towards Fang Yuan: “Fang Yuan, you are currently wanted by Central Continent, Southern Border, and Northern Plains, you dare to show up?”

All the immortals saw this and felt deep admiration towards Tie Mian Shen.

“As expected of Tie Mian Shen!”

“Tie clan’s Gu Immortals are truly admirable.”

“At this point, there is no use in hiding, this is a desperate situation, we need to work together and unite, there will be a chance of survival.”

“That’s right! Fang Yuan could escape arrest and roam the world, he must have an extremely powerful movement method. If we split up, he would catch up and kill us one by one. Our only hope is to unite and wait for reinforcements to arrive.”

Gu Immortals were all not ordinary.

After hearing Tie Mian Shen’s words, the Gu Immortals present calmed themselves and understood the situation, they had to unite against this demonic path Gu Immortal who had been the center of attention recently, or they would not survive.

“If Fang Yuan finds us, we will have to fight to the death and resist this demon!” Yi Nan Men and Yi Yu conversed.

At the moment of crisis, Tie Mian Shen stood up and stabilized the righteous path, he was truly an elite of Tie clan, a heroic rank seven expert.

The mortals of the three clans went into a clamor.

“Look, another immortal appeared!”

“Oh heavens, am I seeing this wrongly?”

Everyone raised their heads, their eyes were filled with shock and curiosity.

Normally, immortals could not be found in all five regions, but now, two Gu Immortals appeared out of nowhere, they were deeply shocked.

“Wait, what did the second Gu Immortal say? Fang Yuan? Is he the person that Lady Xin Ci has been thinking of everyday? But his appearance is not the same.” Ye Fan’s heart shook, he subconsciously turned around and looked at Shang Xin Ci.

Shang Xin Ci raised her snow-white neck as she stared at Fang Yuan without looking away.

When Tie Mian Shen exposed Fang Yuan’s identity, she instantly understood why she had that mystical feeling in her heart.

The person she had been thinking of all the time was right in front of her, appearing in such a way, Shang Xin Ci looked at him fixedly as if time had stopped.

Her emotions that had accumulated for a long time erupted in her heart.

Was it because Fang Yuan helped her when she was at her most vulnerable and helpless moment?

Sometimes, she felt suspicious towards herself, was it really love that she felt towards Fang Yuan?

Or was it gratitude?

But now, when she saw Fang Yuan again, even though his appearance changed, the emotions inside her poured out like a waterfall.

At this moment, tears emerged in her eyes, she confirmed that this was love!

Love was absurd, there was no logic in it.

Trying to find an answer for love was stupid and foolish.

But Shang Xin Ci understood that she had met the wrong person at the right time.

She knew that she could not love him, she knew the difference between them. But how could she stop her own emotions?

Thus, Shang Xin Ci was helpless, she could only look up at Fang Yuan’s imposing figure.

She tried to open her eyes and see Fang Yuan’s appearance clearly, but she could not. Her commonly used investigative killer moves were all useless against Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body.

“The current me does not even have the qualifications to look at him?” Shang Xin Ci had complex emotions, there was joy, dejectedness, sadness, and most importantly, great worry over Fang Yuan’s safety.

But she knew her own identity and strength, she was Shang clan’s leader, a righteous path member and an insignificant mortal.

She had learned of Fang Yuan’s identity and history from Shang Qing Qing.

But she could not do or say anything, she could only endure while watching silently!

Ye Fan saw Shang Xin Ci’s expression, this was the first time he had seen this expression from her, his heart jumped, he had never felt such an intense pain that assaulted him to the core.

This pain was a mix of love towards Shang Xin Ci and hatred towards Fang Yuan!

At once, he confirmed that this Gu Immortal was Fang Yuan!

“Don’t tell me the karma master talked about is between me and Fang Yuan?” Ye Fan had another guess.

He was shocked by Fang Yuan’s Gu Immortal identity but he soon accepted it.

Because he had met Bai Ning Bing and almost lost his life. Afterwards, he met Lu Wei Yin and learned many things, thinking back, he felt that Bai Ning Bing was likely a Gu Immortal.

Back then, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing were known as the Black and White Demons, Bai Ning Bing had already become a Gu Immortal, while Fang Yuan refined an Immortal Gu in Three Kings blessed land, the whole of Southern Border knew that, he must have gotten an immortal opportunity. Why would it be strange that he was a Gu Immortal now?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1536: Floating Sinking Iron Sand

“Fang Yuan, I feel like I’ve heard of this name before?”

“Is that the Little Beast King who refined an Immortal Gu on San Cha Mountain?”

“Even though I cannot see clearly, I’m afraid that’s him!”

“He became an immortal? He had such a huge fortuitous encounter! Sigh, why was it not me?”

The Gu Masters from all three clans burst into commotion.

The mortals were discussing the matter and venting their emotions of shock and jealousy, the situation became extremely heated.

These mortals were stuck to old news, Fang Yuan’s true fame was only known among Gu Immortals now, mortals barely knew anything of him.

Tie Ruo Nan clenched her fists, gritting her teeth as she watched. She had a simple relationship with Fang Yuan, deep hatred!

The conflict between her and Fang Yuan was a long lasting one, the hatred did not reduce over time, it was like wine, becoming deeper as time passed.

But now, even though the enemy was in front of her, Tie Ruo Nan could do nothing against him!

Fang Yuan was an immortal now! If this was the past, before Tie Ruo Nan knew the difference between immortal and mortal, so be it. But after interacting with Tie Mian Shen, she was very clear of the difference. As a mere mortal, there was no hope in getting revenge on a Gu Immortal!

Now, Tie Ruo Nan's only hope was Tie Mian Shen. She wanted to see Tie clan's Gu Immortal Tie Mian Shen kill Fang Yuan publicly and uphold justice, to take revenge for Tie Ruo Nan's friends and family!

Fang Yuan looked at the three immortals as he laughed arrogantly: "I am here to take back the thing I lost, are the three of you going to try and stop me?"

Shang Qing Qing and Hou Yao had pounding hearts, Fang Yuan had only said a sentence without using any methods, but they felt that his demonic might was overwhelming, they lost all of their fighting spirit.

Fang Yuan's fame resounded in the world, his demonic might was a deterrence to the entire world! Even someone like Wu Yong was toyed around by him, and Heavenly Court could not even catch him after such a long time. These were merely rank six Gu Immortals, it was normal to feel this.

The mortals on the ground heard Fang Yuan's words clearly.

Tie Ruo Nan was filled with anger: "Demon, even after becoming an immortal, he is still a demon! It is a misfortune for everyone that he holds such power. He deserves death, this demon deserves death! The righteous path should eliminate such evil and kill this demon to protect the world!"

Thinking of this, Tie Ruo Nan looked at Tie Mian Shen expectantly.

In her heart, this Tie clan Gu Immortal expert could almost hold up heaven and earth, he could pick the moon and stars from the sky, he could definitely kill Fang Yuan.

After all, Fang Yuan was born in the same generation as her, how long had he been an immortal? How could he be Tie Mian Shen's match?

But at the next moment, Tie Ruo Nan's heroic eyes stared widely.

Tie Mian Shen sighed as he said: "Oh Fang Yuan, you rampaged unhindered over the five regions, you are renowned in the world, I am not your match. But even if I die, I will fight, this is the resolution of my Tie clan!"

"But I have something to say, we are both immortals, we should not implicate these mortals. Why don't we let these mortals leave first, we can have a good fight, even if I die, I will have no regrets."

"What, what did he say? Lord Tie Mian Shen admitted he could not match Fang Yuan? How, how could this be?" Tie Ruo Nan was tongue-tied, this shocking news almost destroyed her entire mental state.

Such words came from Tie Mian Shen himself, her entire worldview had been crushed.

“Let these mortals off? Why should I? Hehehe.” Fang Yuan smiled coldly as killing intent surged.

He gazed around and saw the mortals on the ground.

Tie Ruo Nan’s anger was not worth his attention, the rage of an ant was pointless rage.

The luck connected Ye Fan, a person who was blessed by fate and had strong luck, even though there was a main and sub luck relationship, Fang Yuan did not want to let him off. Killing this person was beneficial to him. After all, every time Fang Yuan used burning soul bursting luck, Ye Fan would obtain a portion of that luck.

And why was the upper extreme heavenly eagle with Ye Fan, Fang Yuan was very curious about this, he wanted to investigate.

As for Shang Xin Ci?

Fang Yuan’s cold gaze flickered slightly, he showed a strange emotion.

He had gotten close to Shang Xin Ci earlier in order to use her and gain footing in Shang clan. But now, Fang Yuan was shocked to find out that Shang Xin Ci’s luck was incredibly alarming!

Fang Yuan had methods to inspect luck, Shang Xin Ci was a mere mortal, her luck was clear to Fang Yuan.

Above her head, there was a thick gush of white and pure luck, it weaved and gathered into a beautiful cape, it seemed to be made of countless bird feathers, there was even a drizzle of luck near it, moving around this bird feathered cape.

“Such luck, such a phenomenon, even Ye Fan, Hong Yi, and Han Li cannot compare to her. What is going on? With such luck, Shang Xin Ci is not a simple person, she is definitely an important person in the great era. Strange... why is it that in the five hundred years of my previous life, Shang Xin Ci was only a mortal throughout?”

“Unless heaven’s will altered my memories inside Spring Autumn Cicada? Or was it because I ruined Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s heaven defying plan and became the leader of Shadow Sect, I changed many things and Shang Xin Ci got affected? But why Shang Xin Ci? I am afraid that according to the route of fate, she is truly an important person in the new era!”

Fang Yuan was thinking when he suddenly heard an eagle’s cry, it almost burst his eardrums.

Next, the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s seal weakened to its limit, as it pounced at Fang Yuan with bloodshot eyes.

“Hmm? Even though I have killing intent in me, I have been controlling it using wisdom path methods, it had not spread out. This upper extreme heavenly eagle is actually being controlled, not only is there a seal, its emotions are being affected to come and attack me!”

Fang Yuan snickered, he did not panic against the attack of an immemorial desolate beast.

Immortal killer move — Reverse Flow Protection Seal!

The upper extreme heavenly eagle was a space path immemorial desolate beast, it arrived in front of Fang Yuan with a flicker, its sharp eagle claws slashed at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not evade, he took this move head on!

The huge eagle claw larger than his body scratched at him mercilessly.

Shang Xin Ci gasped, the immortals were surprised, anticipating the results.

Fang Yuan was sent flying by this huge force but he was unharmed. In contrast, upper extreme heavenly eagle cried out in pain as its attack was reversed, it felt immense pain, even though it did not suffer heavy injuries, it was not far from it!

“We will attack now, this is the best opportunity!” Tie Mian Shen shouted as he attacked Fang Yuan.

He was incredibly brave, using killer move iron mask equipment to turn into a ten meter giant.

The iron giant pushed with its palms as black qi surged out like a tide, engulfing Fang Yuan like a tiger’s roar.

“Which life form would not want freedom? This upper extreme heavenly eagle is unwilling to be enslaved by Fang Yuan, it wants to escape, we will make use of its battle strength and attack Fang Yuan together, like this, we might be able to persevere.”

“Fang Yuan does not even want to let the mortals off, evidently, he is a demon even in the demonic path, he had no bottom line or principles. The mortals will die, we will also not be spared, we should fight for a chance of survival.”

Hou Yao and Shang Qing Qing had many thoughts, they attacked as well.

They unleashed their strongest methods from the start of the fight.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, he did not evade, he let the three moves land on his body.

At the next moment, these three moves were completely reflected back at Tie Mian Shen, Shang Qing Qing, and Hou Yao.

Shang Qing Qing and Hou Yao were in a difficult situation, they quickly dodged.

But that Tie Mian Shen’s eyes shone with brilliance, he shouted: “I’ll take this!”

He jumped and entered the rumbling black qi that was reflected back, it did not do any damage to him, instead, he slowly regained control over it.

“Fang Yuan, take this again!” Tie Mian Shen shouted, he burst out with Gu worm aura as black qi surged.

This immortal killer move floating sinking iron sand had both offense and defense in it, it was compatible with iron mask equipment, even if it was reflected, Tie Mian Shen could regain control over it.

And this floating sinking iron sand could be stacked and combined perfectly.

Tie Mian Shen was a rank seven expert, even though his attacks were all reflected by Fang Yuan, he felt that he had a chance of winning.

It was fine that the floating sinking iron sand was sent back, he could still control it and add more killer moves into it to increase the power of this move, he would become stronger as time passes!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1537: Fang Yuan Slaughters Immortals

“As expected of Iron Mask true inheritance.” Fang Yuan saw that Tie Mian Shen had used floating sinking iron sand again with increased strength, bright light shined in his eyes.

He had an understanding of the super forces in the five regions, because Shadow Sect’s information was very comprehensive.

Every super force had their signature inheritance like Iron Mask true inheritance, Shadow Sect had wanted to obtain them too, but all the super forces kept a close eye on them, it was hard for Shadow Sect to succeed.

Shadow Sect had not succeeded in getting Iron Mask true inheritance, they only had some information of it. The core Immortal Gu was called Justice, the Gu Immortal who inherits this true inheritance had to have a heart of justice, they needed to have the determination to uphold justice and punish evildoers.

Not just that, Fang Yuan still remembered that during the five regions chaotic war in his previous life, the rank seven Gu Immortal Tie Mian Shen had a great performance, he displayed battle strength at the peak of rank seven! But now, he was still a distance from the peak of rank seven.

Continuing to use wisdom path methods to deduce, Fang Yuan thought of many good ways to counter floating sinking iron sand.

Fang Yuan chose the most direct method.

Ancient sword dragon transformation plus myriad self, forming immortal killer move — Myriad Dragon!

Roar roar roar roar...

At once, myriad dragons appeared, they roared as sword qi burst out rampantly, it was like a sea of silver scales.

Tie Mian Shen was filled with fighting spirit, but suddenly, silver light flickered in front of him.

“What?” Shock was expressed on his face, he looked at the myriad sword dragons flew around like a tsunami, charging towards him.

Floating sinking iron sand!

During the critical moment, Tie Mian Shen breathed in deeply, he used all his strength and method to make the black qi around him surge and defend against the myriad dragons.

But in just less than two breaths of time, the iron sand black qi was completely wiped out by the silver dragons!

Tie Mian Shen coughed out a mouthful of blood, he wanted to escape but where could he go?

At the next moment, the myriad dragons engulfed him.

“Lord Tie Mian Shen!!!” Tie Ruo Nan watched this as she screamed shrilly.

The dragons roared in a colossal scale, they truly filled up the entire sky, the attack was terrifying and made all of the mortals on the ground soaked in cold sweat.

After a while, a small figure emerged from the dragon group and flew out, it was Tie Mian Shen.

He was extremely weak unlike before, his iron giant appearance had crumbled, but it was quite an impressive move to be able to defend against myriad dragon.

“This strength!” Tie Mian Shen had a solemn expression most of the time, but now, there was shock remaining on his face.

He wanted to stack the floating sinking iron sand killer move against Fang Yuan, but he retaliated with the most direct method, brute force!

Myriad dragon was created by fusing ancient sword dragon transformation and myriad self, both moves were very exceptional on their own, myriad dragon that fused both moves pushed Fang Yuan’s attack strength all the way to the peak of rank seven!

If this was in the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, Tie Mian Shen would have been able to block this move, but now, he was still lacking.

The difference between experts was usually by a margin. Just that bit of extra strength decided victory and defeat. Now that Tie Mian Shen’s offense was lower than Fang Yuan, while his defense was far inferior, Fang Yuan could completely suppress Tie Mian Shen in battle.

Tie Mian Shen could only retreat, he had to flee.

He was very fast, even myriad dragon could not catch up.

Fang Yuan did not set up an immortal battlefield killer move, he could not trap these people. Even though Fang Yuan could defeat him, he needed prior preparations to kill him.

“Even though I have an immortal battlefield killer move, it cannot be used immediately, since my rank eight battle strength is in the defensive aspect, it will be hard to kill Tie Mian Shen today.”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with cold light, he did not have much killing intent.

Tie Mian Shen was a metal path Gu Immortal, Fang Yuan did not need his dao marks. Furthermore, Tie Mian Shen was an important person in Southern Border to resist Heavenly Court during the five regions chaotic war.

“As for these two rank six Gu Immortals, hmph.” Fang Yuan did not move, he looked down.

Shang Qing Qing and Hou Yao were surrounded by the myriad dragons, they had no way to escape, life and death was right before them.

As rank six Gu Immortals facing this rank seven peak killer move, they were quite impressive to hold out until now, they were elites of super forces after all.

Boom boom!

With two loud sounds, Shang Qing Qing and Hou Yao could no longer resist the attack, their bodies were smashed to bits by the myriad dragons. As for their souls, they wanted to self-detonate, but why would Fang Yuan, who had Spectral Soul's true inheritance, let them? He directly imprisoned them, they were sent into Fang Yuan's hands by the myriad dragons very quickly.

"Fang Yuan, kill us if you dare!"

"Evil scoundrel, you are offending the three super forces of Hou clan, Shang clan, and Tie clan, you are courting death. You are arrogant now, but you will soon regret your actions!"

The two Gu Immortal souls screamed.

Suppressed!

Fang Yuan willed as these two souls were unable to emit a sound or move at all, they were completely immobilized.

Next, they were sent into Fang Yuan's sovereign immortal aperture.

It was easy for Fang Yuan to kill rank six Gu Immortals, afterwards, explosions occurred near him as the eagle cried out, the huge upper extreme heavenly eagle took the myriad dragon killer move head on as it charged at Fang Yuan.

It was an immemorial desolate beast with thick defenses, even though myriad dragon attacked and slashed its body, it ignored the attacks bravely.

Fang Yuan saw the bloodlust in its eyes, it had lost its cognition ability, Fang Yuan knew that this eagle was under external influence, otherwise, it would not dare to attack him like this.

After all, not only did Fang Yuan enslave it, he had also hatched it.

But in terms of defense, even the immemorial desolate beast upper extreme heavenly eagle lost to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly as he allowed the eagle to approach him, he only flew at a low altitude in spite of its pursuit.

Boom!

The eagle wings slammed on Fang Yuan's back, but under the effect of reverse flow protection seal, he was unharmed, this force made him even faster as he flew at Ye Fan and the rest.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle shrieked as its right wing broke, it fell from the sky, but the endless swarm of dragons forced it back into the air as they attacked it endlessly.

Fang Yuan had noticed it immediately when he arrived, he saw the upper extreme heavenly eagle on Ye Fan's shoulder.

He was naturally concerned about this anomaly.

Since Ye Fan seemed to be able to control upper extreme heavenly eagle, Fang Yuan decided to capture him first, he attacked Ye Fan.

Comparing the immemorial desolate beast and a rank five Gu Master mortal, the latter was much easier to deal with!

Before he arrived, Fang Yuan’s methods were already in effect.

Ye Fan, Tie Ruo Nan, and the rest watched as Fang Yuan approached, their bodies were stiff, they could not move.

“Oh no!” Ye Fan cried out in dismay, he wanted to explain himself, but he could no longer talk now.

In Fang Yuan’s opinion, any explanation could not match his own soul search.

“Am I going to die? I regret that I cannot continue to uphold justice!!” Tie Ruo Nan gritted her teeth, feeling rage and hatred.

“Brother Hei Tu...” Shang Xin Ci was the only person with a calm expression, her beautiful eyes flickered with deep emotions: “You saved me back then, you were the reason why I could gain influence in Shang clan and walk this far. Therefore, even if I die at your hands, I am... satisfied.”

But when Fang Yuan was about to succeed, a mysterious ripple appeared.

Instantly, between Fang Yuan and the mortal Gu Masters, the scene became a blur, like they were separated by an unclean mirror.

“Immortal battlefield killer move!” This change occurred too quickly, but Fang Yuan reacted rapidly too, when he was about to make a move, the world turned orange-yellow.

He was inside a mystical immortal battlefield killer move.

A rank eight Gu Immortal showed himself, standing in front of Fang Yuan and protecting the mortal Gu Masters behind him.

“Master!” Seeing this person, Ye Fan screamed from excitement.

“Who are you?” Fang Yuan’s eyes squinted as he emanated a cold aura.

“I am Lu Wei Yin. Oh Fang Yuan, living beings already live in difficulty, why must we kill each other? Why don’t you stop here?” The mysterious person smiled as he said.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1538: Fetus Earth Maze

“Master...” Ye Fan muttered, looking at Lu Wei Yin who was right in front of him, he had an expression of admiration.

After a long time, Ye Fan saw his master again, he looked the same as before. He wore a grey hemp garment, it was very simple and plain, but his muscular body could not be concealed. He wore a conical hat that was large and wide, it covered his face under the shadow, concealing his appearance. His chin was wide and thick, it gave people the feeling of steadiness and unwavering determination.

“A rank eight Gu Immortal?!” The two Yi clan Gu Immortals were forced to appear, they were hiding in the lake earlier, the moment this immortal battlefield was created, they were forced out.

“Who is he? He has Southern Border aura, but he is definitely not a member of the righteous path!” Tie Mian Shen had a grim expression.

“Oh? Life is hard so you want me to stop?” Fang Yuan smiled coldly at Lu Wei Yin, countless thoughts appeared in his mind, he was thinking at rapid speed.

“This guy is a hypocrite! He had created the immortal battlefield killer move long ago, he could have saved Shang clan and Hou clan’s Gu Immortals, but he chose to appear right after. Coming out and telling me that life is difficult and that I should stop, this is fake kindness!”

“However, he is a rank eight Gu Immortal after all, my three breaths future vision had already been active but it did not warn me. This move is too low ranked, the core time path Immortal Gu After is only rank seven.”

“And this immortal battlefield killer move that he set is very profound, my investigative methods could not find it.”

Fang Yuan thought to himself.

He had an array of methods, against most rank seven and rank six Gu Immortals in the world, he could suppress them, but against a rank eight Gu Immortal, he was still inferior.

The enemy was a rank eight Gu Immortal and he was inside an immortal battlefield killer move, Fang Yuan was in a passive situation.

But he was not worried.

Reverse flow protection seal was his greatest defense, he had modified it extensively during this period, even if Heavenly Court had a counter to it, they could only influence the initial version, it could not work on the current Fang Yuan.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Dragon!

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, using his strongest offensive method again.

Roar—!

Countless silver sword dragons flew out and filled the entire immortal battlefield killer move.

The dragons roared, they had a ruthless expression as they attacked Lu Wei Yin.

Lu Wei Yin smiled lightly, he was completely unconcerned.

“Friend, don’t be so angry, killing cannot solve all problems.” Saying so, aura burst out of his body as he used an immortal killer move.

This killer move made an effect immediately.

It started to rain.

But this ‘rain’ was not made of water, it was made of sand.

Sand rained down like a torrent, appearing out of nowhere.

The immortal battlefield resonated, causing the sand to be even heavier, as the entire battlefield was covered by a veil of sand.

Immortal killer move — Descending Sand!

The sword dragons were covered by the sand, their thunderous roars became very soft, their long and sharp bodies shrunk as their sinister claws became soft and fluid.

In a few breaths of time, the army of ferocious sword dragons was completely weakened, turning into tiny white earthworms that were the size of a human arm.

“This killer move!” Fang Yuan’s expression changed, he realized something.

“It seems he has already found out my identity.” Lu Wei Yin sighed as he watched: “This person is truly an otherworldly demon, a cause of calamities and tribulations, not only does he have great battle strength, he has also grown sufficiently now. The more worrying thing is that he has a vicious and scheming mind, he acts with precise ruthlessness, this is truly a misfortune for ordinary people and life.”

Thinking so, Lu Wei Yin called out: “Gu Immortal and Gu Master friends, the saying goes, heaven helps those who help themselves. Everyone is in danger now, you have to unite and work together to resist this demon, that is the only way to survive. In this battlefield killer move, if you do not have the determination to resist the demon, I will not be able to protect you. I will need your help in this following killer move.”

“Master, what do you want us to do? Go ahead and instruct us!” Ye Fan shouted loudly in an energetic mood.

Lu Wei Yin turned around and smiled as he nodded: “I only need all of you to have determination to fight against this demon.”

“I understand.” Ye Fan nodded, he looked at Fang Yuan angrily as battle will emerged from his body, rising up like smoke.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle also landed, its eyes stared at Fang Yuan with hatred, even though Fang Yuan hatched it, he had deprived it of freedom, even blood related parents who did that would be hated!

“In that case, we might as well cooperate.” Tie Mian Shen calmed his mind, even though Lu Wei Yin was mysterious, in this situation, Fang Yuan was the enemy. The enemy of an enemy was a friend, Tie Mian Shen responded to Lu Wei Yin’s call.

On the other hand, Yi clan’s two Gu Immortals discussed and also summoned their intent to fight against Fang Yuan.

As for the mortal Gu Masters, asking them to fight a Gu Immortal greatly challenged their courage, but because Lu Wei Yin was taking the lead, and Fang Yuan was simply too vicious, having the intent to kill them, they all summoned their fighting spirits.

Only Shang Xin Ci shook her head, she had a sorrowful gaze, Fang Yuan was her benefactor, how could she fight him?

“Clan leader, now is not the time for mercy. That Fang Yuan is an ambitious demon who acts viciously, he will not reciprocate your kindness.” Even Wei De Xin who was beside Shang Xin Ci urged.

“Enough, I will not be enemies with brother Hei Tu, even if he kills me.” Shang Xin Ci shook her head with firm determination.

The people around her sighed.

The other Gu Masters were unhappy with Shang Xin Ci’s attitude, but because of her status and the situation now, they did not dare to speak up.

Lu Wei Yin saw that everyone had summoned their wills, he smiled brightly.

“Good.” He said, turning to face Fang Yuan: “I would like you to evaluate my move, mud piled into a wall.”

Immortal killer move — Mud Piled Into a Wall!

Battle will surged from everyone, absorbed into this small world rapidly.

The immortal battlefield resonated again.

Fang Yuan had an alert expression, he did not attack randomly, he chose to watch the situation closely.

At the next moment, walls appeared out of nowhere, erected by his side.

Fang Yuan smiled and attacked, using all sorts of methods to smash these walls.

But the walls formed at an incredible speed, while Fang Yuan’s methods were affected by descending sand and became very weak.

The yellow walls did not have offensive power, but they formed and gathered, some were in front of Fang Yuan while others surrounded him in all directions, above, below, and on all sides around him.

Immortal killer move — Six Directional Maze!

Lu Wei Yin grunted as a third killer move was used.

Fang Yuan’s mind was stirred!

At this moment, Lu Wei Yin had finally bared his fangs.

The three killer moves, descending sand, mud piled into a wall, and six directional maze, rapidly activated and fused together, forming a huge maze that completely enveloped Fang Yuan.

This maze extended in all directions, it was like the core of a hollow mountain. All sorts of interweaving paths and walls were complex and confusing, people would feel dizzy just looking at them.

Fang Yuan’s myriad dragon killer move was created from the fusion of myriad self and ancient sword dragon transformation.

But Lu Wei Yin’s fetus earth maze was the combination of three rank eight killer moves, it had an incredible power!

Fang Yuan felt his sense of direction dwindling here, he could not tell where was up, down, left, or right.

He tried to move alongside the walls, but he completely forgot the path he came from.

He tried to attack the yellow walls, but any attack that landed on the walls became extremely weak, because these walls had the effect of descending sand.

“It seems that I cannot brute force my way out of here, I need to expose this immortal battlefield’s weakness and strike at it!” Realization appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind.

He sat down on the spot and closed his eyes, using all sorts of wisdom path methods.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1539

: Reforming Fang Yuan

Fang Yuan was temporarily trapped in the fetus earth maze killer move, the situation stabilized immediately.

Bright light flashed in Tie Mian Shen’s eyes, he flew down and greeted Lu Wei Yin, asking “Senior, how will we kill this demon Fang Yuan?”

Lu Wei Yin smiled, saying softly: “All life deserves to live, even though this Fang Yuan is an otherworldly demon, he is still a living being, how can we say things like taking his life?”

Tie Mian Shen was stunned, Yi clan’s two Gu Immortals also flew over, Yi Nan Men said anxiously: “Senior, how can we let him off, this demon has committed great sins, he disrupts the order of the world, now is the best time to kill him, how can we be wrongly merciful?”

Yi Yu also urged: “Senior, if we do not kill him today, he will harm the world and kill other living beings in the future, wouldn’t that be worse? His death is the fortune of this world.”

But Lu Wei Yin shook his head: “Everyone’s words make sense, but you are also biased. There is no absolute evil person in this world, nobody is born as a murderer. Otherwise, why would we need to learn methods to fight and kill? Humans have kindness and evil in their hearts, there is no pure evil or pure kindness. Even though this Fang Yuan is a demonic path Gu Immortal with blood on his hands, having committed great evil, he was not born as an evil person.”

“A hated person has reasons to be pitied, everything in this world has causes and effects. What created the Fang Yuan of today is the karma of yesterday. Since Fang Yuan could grow into this evil person now, why can’t he turn into a kind person in the future?”

“He is strong and has countless methods, if he is in the righteous path, he would bring blessings to this world, he would save countless people, isn’t that more helpful to the world?”

Lu Wei Yin’s words stunned Tie Mian Shen, Yi Nan Men, and Yi Yu!

This mysterious rank eight Gu Immortal wanted to reform Fang Yuan!

“Since senior has his objective, junior will wait for senior’s success.” Tie Mian Shen sighed.

Yi clan’s two Gu Immortals looked at each other, they saw the helplessness in each others’ eyes.

The three of them were not Fang Yuan’s match, they needed to depend on this mysterious rank eight Gu Immortal Lu Wei Yin to deal with Fang Yuan.

Lu Wei Yin had incredibly profound methods, even though he appeared abruptly and set up the immortal battlefield killer move in advance, showing his motive, all the signs pointed to the fact that he could eliminate Fang Yuan.

But to think that after a conversation, Lu Wei Yin still held the absurd objective of reforming Fang Yuan, to turn this huge demon into a kind immortal that would save the world.

“I am afraid this rank eight Gu Immortal has some method to change Fang Yuan’s personality?” Yi Yu guessed.

Yi Nan Men spoke directly “Thank you senior for saving us, I would like senior to open this battlefield and let us return to our clan.”

Yi clan’s Gu Immortals came here to deal with Tie clan, Shang clan, and Hou clan, but the situation developed too quickly, Fang Yuan’s appearance completely took matters out of their control.

The two Yi clan Gu Immortals were quite unlucky, they met both Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin, their objectives failed before they even started doing anything.

In this situation, they did not want to stay, it was normal to want to leave.

Tie Mian Shen looked at the two Yi clan Gu Immortals, his gaze flickered but he did not speak.

Lu Wei Yin shook his head: “Friends, don’t be anxious, I will not harm you, but now is not the time to open the battlefield. If everyone leaves, I’m afraid there may be reports to the clans and invitations for reinforcements to deal with Fang Yuan. This goes against my objective, you should all wait here for now.”

“This...” The three Gu Immortals looked at each other, they had no choice but to accept it.

Inside this immortal battlefield, they could not communicate with the outside world, since they were weaker than both Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin, they could only obey his arrangements helplessly.

“Master, can that Fang Yuan really be converted to the righteous path?” Ye Fan asked in confusion.

Lu Wei Yin turned around and patted Ye Fan’s head: “Anything can be possible in this world, right? I am willing to give him a chance to repent and turn over a new leaf. If he does, I am sure that this will be a huge blessing to the world, it would become a wonderful story for future historical records.”

“Can it... really succeed?” Shang Xin Ci asked hesitantly, anticipation shone deep within her eyes.

She was a righteous path Gu Master this entire life, she did not want the person she loved, Fang Yuan, to walk on this demonic path of no return.

Right now, from Shang Xin Ci’s perspective, Fang Yuan was already trapped, this showed that Lu Wei Yin was very powerful and that Fang Yuan was in danger. At this time, if Fang Yuan could turn over a new leaf, not only would it be a huge blessing, he would also preserve his own life.

“Of course it can. People can change, they can turn bad, but they can also become good. Oh Shang Xin Ci, do you think Fang Yuan is a bad person inherently?” Lu Wei Yin smiled and asked.

Shang Xin Ci shook her head, she had a firm attitude: “I will not lie to senior, I believe that Fang Yuan is not born evil, I can feel his cold attitude, but under that, I can sense endless sadness.”

Lu Wei Yin nodded: “Your understanding is quite hard to come by. I know that he has helped you before, do you know that now, he needs your help more?”

Shang Xin Ci was dazed before asking: “Senior, how can I help him?”

Lu Wei Yin smiled: “Very simple, I have already said that you need to encourage and urge him to renounce his evil ways and become righteous. My killer move is called fetus earth maze, it can allow a person to live three lifetimes, experiencing the mortal life fully and comprehending life and death, understanding the vicissitudes of human ways and forgetting the evil in his heart, turning over a new leaf.”

“All of us have an inherent nature, but our life experiences are very important too. Oh Shang Xin Ci, if your invest your will into fetus earth maze, Fang Yuan would definitely feel it, let him experience the beauty of life, and summon the kindness and brightness in his heart.”

“I understand, thank you senior for the guidance!” Shang Xin Ci had a look of realization, her gaze became firm. A lump of will emerged from her body, entering fetus earth maze like everyone else.

Seeing this, Lu Wei Yin’s mind eased, he thought: “With Shang Xin Ci’s luck on our side, we will not be fully suppressed by Fang Yuan’s luck. Next, it will depend on the other party.”

In immemorial white heaven, Chen Yi moved like lightning, flying rapidly among the clouds.

He was still injured, these were caused by Fang clan’s first supreme elder and immemorial soul beast Qing Chou, his injuries were covered by strength path and soul path dao marks, they were very deep.

Chen Yi had impressive healing methods, but these injuries could not heal so quickly.

Compared to his injuries, his heart was heavier.

"I actually failed!"

"Not only did I fail to get Divine Bean Palace, I lost in battle and could not kill Qing Chou. Sigh! I was too greedy, they took advantage of it, it was my fault, it was all my fault!"

Chen Yi was very regretful.

He could not answer to Fairy Zi Wei, and also as the first supreme elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect, he could not regain his sect ancestor's possession, he was very ashamed.

"After returning, I will quit my role as Heavenly Lotus Sect's first supreme elder and cultivate in seclusion! I will reclaim Divine Bean Palace after my cultivation breaks through!"

Chen Yi made up his mind, he needed to make up for this mistake, otherwise, he would not rest at ease.

He flew for many days, Central Continent was already in sight, but now, three rank seven Gu Immortals approached him.

"Lord Chen Yi, hold on, we have been waiting for you." The three rank seven Gu Immortals said.

Chen Yi took a gaze, they were familiar people, they were supreme elders from the other ten great ancient sects of Central Continent.

"Why are you..." Chen Yi could not understand.

One of the three rank sevens handed Chen Yi an information path mortal Gu.

Chen Yi looked into it, it was a letter from Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei requested for Chen Yi to make up for his failure, he needed to head to the immemorial white heaven of Northern Plains for his mission.

"Lady Fairy Zi Wei, as expected of a wisdom path great expert!" Chen Yi looked at the letter with a bright gaze, he nodded as he sighed deeply.

"Lord Chen Yi, please give us instructions." The three rank seven Gu Immortals asked. Their task was to hand Chen Yi this information path mortal Gu containing their mission, they did not know what they had to do next.

Chen Yi looked at the three of them: "Heavenly Court has already acted against Fang Yuan, follow me!"

TL Note: The more toxic you find this, the better you'll feel later.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1540: Attacking Lang Ya

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

On a plain and ordinary wetland, profound light suddenly emerged endlessly, the light was bright like jade, turning the surroundings green in color. Within the green light, countless butterflies were dancing around.

The light lasted for three breaths of time before fading into sparkles of jade light that dissipated rapidly.

But different from before, seven figures appeared on the ground that was empty earlier.

They emanated Central Continent Gu Immortal aura, the leader wore a red and white robe, he was the famous genius rarely found in thousands of years — Feng Jiu Ge!

These people were directly transported from Central Continent, even Feng Jiu Ge was a little dazed. At this moment, they were looking around and assessing the area.

Beside Feng Jiu Ge, a rank seven wisdom path Gu Immortal deduced as he said excitedly: “This is Lang Ya blessed land!”

Hearing his words, the surrounding Central Continent Gu Immortals felt deeply excited.

Feng Jiu Ge nodded in satisfaction, he opened his immortal aperture’s entrance and let out a will.

This will was very damaged, it was about to be destroyed after existing for a very long period of time.

Feng Jiu Ge cupped his fist as this will: “We were able to arrive here after crossing two regions thanks to senior’s immortal killer move.”

This will formed into a human shape with difficulty, it had the appearance of a scholarly teacher, he looked around: “You are all pillars that support Heavenly Court, my main body left this will behind to deal with situations like this. I hope you can all work together and complete your mission, do not let down Heavenly Court!”

“We will do our best.” The other six rank seven Gu Immortals said in unison.

This will heard the answer and laughed: “Great, our Heavenly Court will continue to advance with all of your help, we will exist for all eternity!”

As it laughed, the will dissipated in the wind, completely vanishing.

Gu Immortal Fang Yun Hua, who was behind Feng Jiu Ge, wore a white jade crown and had a young appearance, he knew some information as he sighed upon seeing this: “Senior Liang Liang’s final remaining will has been destroyed.”

Liang Liang was famous in history.

He was a rank eight Gu Immortal from Heavenly Court, a space path expert. He had once obtained Fixed Immortal Travel and elevated it to rank seven.

Later, when legendary immemorial desolate beast Huo Kong wreaked havoc, he participated in battle and died, the rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel was destroyed as a result.

Afterwards, Fixed Immortal Travel appeared in history several times, refined by people of different regions, but it was always rank six, the rank seven version had never appeared again.

Even during Fang Yuan’s refinement in Three Kings blessed land, he could not break out of this limitation.

But afterwards, Granny Sha from Heavenly Court refined rank six Fixed Immortal Travel, and with Fairy Zi Wei leading Heavenly Court, she had tried to raise the rank of Fixed Immortal Travel.

Heavenly Court had the greatest immortal material inventory in the world, they had started collecting materials since the era of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, three million years ago in the Remote Antiquity Era!

Fixed Immortal Travel was hard to raise to rank seven because of one crucial immortal material. But this problem was not that big for Heavenly Court.

Months ago, Fairy Zi Wei had used the method Gu Immortal Liang Liang left behind and awakened his final will.

With the help of this will, not only did Heavenly Court raise Fixed Immortal Travel to rank seven, they even collected a lot of Gu worms and created an immortal killer move, seven immortal doors.

This was the immortal killer move that transported Feng Jiu Ge, Fang Yun Hua, and the rest of the Central Continent Gu Immortals into Northern Plains’ Lang Ya blessed land directly.

However, the moment they reached, Liang Liang’s remnant will that had helped Feng Jiu Ge use the move dissipated after reaching its limit.

The final trace of this legend had finally vanished.

But Heavenly Court’s plan succeeded in return.

“Lang Ya blessed land...” Feng Jiu Ge muttered, he floated up as he used an immortal killer move to investigate the surroundings.

Only to see that the terrain was completely flat and empty for all the surroundings, it was a swamp everywhere, only some traces of vegetation grew here in clear view.

But Feng Jiu Ge saw more than that, he looked closely and found the traces of hairy men living in this huge area.

Feng Jiu Ge praised Fairy Zi Wei internally: “Amazing!”

Ever since Fang Yuan lost Fixed Immortal Travel, he had been guarding against this Gu. Even the current Dang Hun Mountain had completely been remodeled, it was to prevent anyone from using Fixed Immortal Travel to teleport into it.

But Fairy Zi Wei used some crucial clues to deduce the appearance of Lang Ya blessed land, using that, they used immortal killer move seven immortal doors to allow Feng Jiu Ge and the rest to arrive in here!

After the battle of Reverse Flow River, Fang Yuan had grown sufficiently to resist rank eight. Afterwards, he went into seclusion and developed on his own, growing rapidly and forcing Heavenly Court, which was pursuing him, to fail in capturing him.

Fang Yuan was a complete otherworldly demon, he was someone who could destroy fate Gu, a huge threat to Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei had always been mindful of him, she wanted to find any means possible to eradicate Fang Yuan!

But after failing to locate Fang Yuan, Fairy Zi Wei’s focus turned to Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya blessed land was the number one blessed land in the world, it had provided too much help to Fang Yuan.

Initially, when Lang Ya land spirit was still the white haired land spirit, he had helped Fang Yuan refine second aperture Gu, and even gave gruel mud Immortal Gu to him. It played a crucial role during the events of Imperial Court blessed land!

After the battle of Imperial Court blessed land, Fang Yuan turned into an immortal zombie and was very poor, his finances were in terrible straits. But with the help of Lang Ya blessed land, he deduced Immortal Gu recipes for income and rapidly got past the awkward stage of lacking initial funds.

Next, to protect Hu Immortal blessed land and resist the invasion of Immortal Crane Sect, Lang Ya land spirit lent Fang Yuan beast enslavement Immortal Gu as well as eight desolate beasts.

There was also unfamiliar face, it helped Fang Yuan a lot, this was also given by Lang Ya land spirit.

Next, when Shadow Sect attacked Lang Ya blessed land, they snatched many crucial core Immortal Gu of Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron, the white haired land spirit turned into the black haired land spirit, dog shit luck Immortal Gu was also destroyed in this battle.

The black haired land spirit created Lang Ya Sect, changing the original plan of the white haired land spirit, he gave Fang Yuan a lot of help.

Firstly, during the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, when Fang Yuan had just obtained the sovereign immortal body, he was in a dangerous and awkward spot, Lang Ya Sect used treasure yellow heaven to send him many crucial Gu worms and get through that difficult moment.

When Fang Yuan went back to Northern Plains from Southern Border, Lang Ya Sect went to bring him back, losing two hairy man Gu Immortals in the process.

Lang Ya land spirit had even relocated Fang Yuan’s Dang Hun Mountain, wisdom Gu and other items before Hu Immortal blessed land was attacked, preserving most of Fang Yuan’s assets. Especially wisdom Gu, Lang Ya blessed land had been bearing the burden of feeding it, expending a lot of lifespan Gu.

Next, Lang Ya land spirit asked Fang Yuan to be their external supreme elder, transacting with him and refining dog shit luck Immortal Gu for him, as well as the self luck true inheritance.

After getting Shadow Sect’s true inheritance, Lang Ya land spirit exchanged most of the true inheritances’ information with Fang Yuan.

And throughout the period of interacting with both land spirits, Lang Ya blessed land had refined a large number of Gu for Fang Yuan, countless mortal Gu and many crucial Immortal Gu.

All of this help came at timely intervals, giving Fang Yuan a huge amount of assistance.

One could say that Lang Ya blessed land had played a critical role in the outcome of Fang Yuan being able to reach this stage today!

And now, even Lang Ya land spirit did not want to offend Fang Yuan with rank eight battle strength, he wanted to improve their relationship.

After the marriage with the snowmen, Lang Ya land spirit became even more assured of Fang Yuan’s stance and attitude towards the variant humans. In other words, Lang Ya blessed land was already Fang Yuan’s base now!

However, this was also why Heavenly Court’s attention was brought to Lang Ya blessed land.

But for a long time, Heavenly Court was unsure of which force was helping Fang Yuan.

Until recently, when Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions made a breakthrough.

Thus, Lang Ya blessed land became their first target to attack!

“Such guts, you dare to invade my world!” Lang Ya land spirit suddenly shouted from within the wetlands, a silver giant appeared out of nowhere, it had overwhelming fighting spirit and disposition.

It was the number two ancient battle formation in the world — Heavenly Giant Solor!

Lang Ya blessed land was controlled by Lang Ya land spirit, he knew everything that happened inside it to great detail.

Feng Jiu Ge and the rest suddenly barged into Lang Ya blessed land, the land spirit found out almost immediately. But because they were very strong, Lang Ya land spirit gathered the hairy man Gu Immortals and assembled Heavenly Giant Solor first before going to face them.

A great battle was about to start!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1541: Fang Yuan’s Love

“Invaders of Lang Ya blessed land, die!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted as he attacked using Heavenly Giant Solor along with the band of hairy man Gu Immortals.

Retreat!

Seeing the approaching silver giant, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals rapidly retreated in all directions.

Even Feng Jiu Ge was retreating.

But he was moving slowly, it was not that he was slower than the rest, but he was purposely lagging behind.

Undeniably, Feng Jiu Ge had the greatest battle strength among the Central Continent Gu Immortals, he was the leader of this expedition, victory greatly depended on him, he needed to control the situation at all times.

“This is Feng Jiu Ge of Central Continent’s Spirit Affinity House!” Lang Ya land spirit controlled Heavenly Giant Solor, seeing Feng Jiu Ge, his pupils shrank, he had a grim expression.

The enemies had ill intent, Lang Ya land spirit felt great pressure.

Because Feng Jiu Ge appeared, it meant that Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, and thus Heavenly Court, were the enemies of Lang Ya blessed land!

Heavenly Court was the number one force in human history, it was also the number one grotto-heaven in the world!

How could Lang Ya land spirit not feel pressure facing such an opponent?

“Little Five!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted.

Gu Immortal Fifth Hair nodded: “Watch this!”

Saying so, he used an immortal killer move.

The killer move took effect immediately, appearing on Heavenly Giant Solor, the silver giant opened its mouth as a beam of light burst out.

The beam was very threatening, appearing before Feng Jiu Ge in an instant.

“Such speed!” Feng Jiu Ge was slightly stunned, the white light was right in front of his face but he suddenly smiled.

Swoosh.

He vanished in an instant, the light went through his former location and shot far away, creating huge ripples of distortion in the air.

Feng Jiu Ge appeared again, he advanced instead, arriving in front of the silver giant.

“He is above us.” Within the silver giant, the investigative hairy man Gu Immortal called out.

The hairy man Gu Immortals were flustered.

“Tit-for-tat, take my move as well.” Feng Jiu Ge laughed heartily, waving his sleeves as a grand aura burst out of his body.

Immortal killer move — Triple Extreme Sound!

Feng Jiu Ge punched with one hand, creating a drumming sound. He struck with his other palm and created the chiming of bells. He pointed with his finger and created a sharp whistle.

These were the signature methods of the Three Sounds true inheritance, drum fist, bell palm, and whistle finger.

Earlier, Feng Jiu Ge could only use the first two moves to supplement his methods. But after Fang Yuan escaped his pursuit, Feng Jiu Ge returned to Central Continent and thought about his own insufficiencies, he cultivated hard and learned the third move.

Thereafter, he learned all three methods, forming the triple extreme sound killer move.

Fist, palm, finger, fist palm, finger, using this fluid sequence, Feng Jiu Ge attacked and expended little immortal essence with each attack, the power even increased slightly with each use.

Even though the amplification was not high, Feng Jiu Ge attacked rapidly, alternating between fist, palm, and finger, he attacked for a hundred times in a short time! This way, as the number of attacks increased, triple extreme sound became even stronger!

The sound waves landed on the silver giant as it stumbled backwards, the hairy man Gu Immortals felt dizzy.

The silver giant waved its arms and scattered the clouds and winds, wanting to slam down on Feng Jiu Ge.

But Feng Jiu Ge's methods were too tough, he moved agilely in the air, even though the giant's arms were huge and moved fast, they could not hit Feng Jiu Ge.

"It seems that we need immortal methods against this person!" Lang Ya land spirit shouted with a serious expression: "Third Hair! Fourth Hair!"

The two hairy man Gu Immortals responded rapidly and used their immortal killer moves.

Third Hair used a killer move that created a dark green layer of wooden armor on the silver giant's body.

Feng Jiu Ge's triple extreme sound landed on the wooden armor and the sound waves were completely absorbed.

Fourth Hair's killer move created a golden qi spiral above the silver giant's head, these qi currents shot towards Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge's situation became dangerous all of a sudden.

His attacks were no longer effective, no matter how he flew, the golden spiraling qi currents gathered around his body, he could not shrug them off.

Not far away, Central Continent's Gu Immortal Fang Yun Hua saw this and thought: "According to the information, defeating this silver giant will decide our victory. Since Feng Jiu Ge is in trouble, I can help him."

Thinking of this, Fang Yun Hua was about to use a killer move when he heard his companion's warning: "Brother Fang, dodge!"

"What?!" At the next moment, Fang Yun Hua saw that the silver giant opened its mouth, shooting out a huge beam of light.

This beam of light was aimed at Fang Yun Hua, he quickly used his defensive methods.

But Heavenly Giant Solor had rank eight battle strength, even though Fang Yun Hua was a rank seven expert, he was not like Feng Jiu Ge or Fang Yuan, his defensive methods only lasted for three breaths of time.

But that was enough for Fang Yun Hua to turn into a white cloudy light and scatter, before gathering and forming high up in the sky.

Blood dripped out of Fang Yun Hua's mouth, he had a pale face and shock was in his eyes.

“I was distracted earlier and wanted to use a killer move, exposing a flaw, they were able to sense it immediately, what investigative method is that?”

Lang Ya blessed land had deep foundations, but it mainly focused on refinement path, the previous Lang Ya land spirit had no interest in anything but Gu refinement.

Thus, this investigative method came from Shadow Sect.

Fang Yuan exchanged true inheritances with Lang Ya land spirit back then, one on hand, he wanted the inheritances, and on the other hand, he wanted to increase Lang Ya Sect’s battle strength!

Lang Ya Sect had many Immortal Gu, they only lacked useful killer moves.

And now, Fang Yuan’s action finally saw some results.

Feng Jiu Ge’s heart also sank.

This investigative killer move could sense the weakness exposed by enemies, it was very useful in landing crucial attacks.

With such a killer move, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were greatly disrupted when attacking the silver giant together.

Because these people were from different sects, they rarely worked together, once they attacked the silver giant, their cooperation would have flaws. And these flaws would immediately be targeted by the silver giant.

“The more people here, the more problems there are. I will stall Heavenly Giant Solor myself then.” Feng Jiu Ge fought as he thought.

He quickly changed his battle tactic, instructing the other Gu Immortals: “Split up and set up the immortal Gu formation so that our reinforcements can come.”

“Such guts!” Lang Ya land spirit heard such words and shouted in anger.

Feng Jiu Ge smiled lightly.

He purposely said that, it was an open scheme that left Lang Ya land spirit no option but to face it.

Even though the silver giant had rank eight battle strength, it was only one entity while Central Continent had seven Gu Immortals, the silver giant could not deal with all of them, but if it sent out hairy man Gu Immortals to deal with them, they would fall into Feng Jiu Ge’s scheme.

The battle strength of these hairy man Gu Immortals had risen sharply, but they were not a match for these Central Continent Gu Immortal experts in one-on-one battles.

Thus, Lang Ya land spirit was in a difficult spot, he could neither split up his forces nor stay together!

While Lang Ya blessed land was in an intense battle, far away in Southern Border, in the fetus earth maze, there was serenity.

“Where am I?” Fang Yuan opened his eyes, realizing he was on a bed.

He wanted to get up but found that he was heavily injured.

He had a dazed expression as he muttered: “Who am I? I seem to have... forgotten some important matters.”

“Oh son, you are finally awake!” At this moment, an old lady heard the commotion and entered the house, tearing up after seeing Fang Yuan, who had woken up.

“You are?” Fang Yuan questioned.

The old lady was stunned for a second before crying loudly: “Son, did you hit your head and become stupid? I am your mother, you are Shen San, a few days ago, young master Shu sent a Gu Master of his family to beat you up because he did not want you and Xiu Niang to be together. Oh son, listen to mother’s advice, even though you and Xiu Niang are close, we are a small family, even though there were Gu Masters in our ancestry, we have already fallen from grace. You cannot beat young master Shu in fighting over Xiu Niang, give up, you should give up!”

“Xiu Niang...” Fang Yuan muttered: “Is this true, I have forgotten all these?”

Some days later, he gradually understood his identity.

He and Xiu Niang were betrothed from birth, but his father died when he was young, losing their only Gu Master in the family, thus they fell from grace. Originally, they matched Xiu Niang’s family, but now they were inferior. Xiu Niang’s family preferred that young master Shu instead. He had a huge clan and was influential and rich, there were dozens of Gu Masters in Shu clan, if the external Gu Masters were included, they numbered over a hundred!

Later, Xiu Niang came to see Fang Yuan.

“Darling San, how are your injuries? I’ve been thinking of you day and night, but my parents stopped me from coming, I could only come here today because I lied that I was cultivating with a Gu Master. Oh my darling San, my poor darling San...” Xiu Niang saw that Fang Yuan was lying down in bed weakly, she started sobbing, love was deeply etched in her eyes.

Fang Yuan looked at Xiu Niang, he felt like this was the first time he was seeing her, he assessed her closely. Xiu Niang was young and beautiful, her skin was pure and white, her green hair was long like a waterfall, she wore a white dress and had a slim figure, she was pure and innocent. With tears in her eyes, she was very alluring, she was truly a peerless beauty.

“No wonder that young master Shu likes Xiu Niang.” Fang Yuan sighed, he did not speak.

Xiu Niang was upset, but the old lady sighed and told her the reason.

Xiu Niang cried out in agony, she quickly held onto Fang Yuan’s hands and talked about the past, attempting to get him to remember who she was.

She talked of scenes of the past, they were ordinary and insignificant, but these were reflections of their love.

Fang Yuan’s love was slowly awakened, he looked at Xiu Niang’s eyes as he extended his hand, caressing her tender face, he said softly: “Xiu Niang...”

“Yes.” Xiu Niang quickly answered as she grabbed his hand, placing it closely on her face.

She looked at Fang Yuan’s eyes with deep emotion, saying: “My darling San, oh my dear Shen San.”

Outside fetus earth maze, in the immortal battlefield, Lu Wei Yin smiled as he spoke to himself: “I was right after all, how can anyone be so emotionless? This Fang Yuan is not an emotionless person, he still has love and affection in him.”

Lu Wei Yin looked around, since some time ago, be it the Gu Immortals like Tie Mian Shen, or the mortals like Shang Xin Ci, they were all floating in the air with their eyes shut.

Among them, Shang Xin Ci's eyes were shut but her pupils were moving around, her face was rosy, as if she was in a beautiful dream that she could not wake up from.

Lu Wei Yin sighed deeply: "The mortal world reflects normal life. To reform this demon, you will all have to forget yourselves in this fetus earth maze and live as another person to experience life again. This is an opportunity, as long as you have sufficient comprehension, you will definitely gain something useful."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1542: Merely Amounted To This

Within Lang Ya blessed land, intense battle was occurring.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals received orders and scattered, setting up the immortal formation. As long as it was created, they would be able to bring Central Continent Gu Immortals into Lang Ya blessed land and reinforce Feng Jiu Ge and the rest.

For Lang Ya land spirit, this was horrible news! They had to be stopped.

"This Feng Jiu Ge is truly devious! Our hairy man Gu Immortals have to work together to assemble ancient battle formation Heavenly Giant Solor and have rank eight battle strength. He wants me to divert my forces, how can I do that?" Lang Ya land spirit snickered in his mind.

If this was the previous land spirit, he would panic and experience complete chaos now.

But this black haired land spirit was adept at fighting, he saw through Feng Jiu Ge's schemes.

"I cannot split up my forces! In that case, I will kill some Central Continent Gu Immortals first, we will compete in speed. Let's see who's faster, your immortal formation setup or my slaughtering of you Gu Immortals!"

Lang Ya land spirit's eyes shined with determination.

Roar!

The silver giant suddenly shouted as sound waves spread out in all directions, pushing Feng Jiu Ge away.

Next, the silver giant raised its right foot, taking a step forward.

It moved very slowly, as if there was a mountain below its foot.

"Oh no!" Feng Jiu Ge's expression changed, because he sensed the strong aura of space path from this silver giant.

It was using a space path killer move!

Feng Jiu Ge wanted to stop it as he activated triple extreme sound, but the silver giant was unobliging and took these attacks head-on, in order to complete the space path killer move.

The silver giant finally stepped forward.

When the right foot landed on the ground, space below it shrunk by countless times, it moved over a hundred li instantly!

A Central Continent Gu Immortal was flying on a cloud, suddenly, the air around him was pushed away as he was completely shrouded by a huge shadow.

He turned to look, his pupils shrunk to pin size as the silver giant stood before him, its arms were grabbing towards him from his left and right.

The Central Continent Gu Immortal became alert, he gritted his teeth and tried to use a method to escape.

But a profound light emerged from each of the silver giant’s hands, the two profound lights landed on the Central Continent Gu Immortal as his killer move activation was broken!

“Quickly save me!” The Central Continent Gu Immortal was locked on by the two lights and could not move, he screamed and sought help from his companions.

At the next moment, he was completely surrounded by the two hands.

The silver giant grabbed as the two hands formed into a silver cage.

An immeasurable pressure assaulted the Central Continent Gu Immortal from all directions, his bones were creaking.

The Central Continent Gu Immortal’s expression changed, he could see his defensive methods crumbling, he could not resist the might of the silver cage!

“Save me!!” He could not keep calm anymore, he screamed.

Guh.

At the next moment, he turned into a pile of bloody flesh, he was completely squashed to death inside the silver cage!

This Central Continent rank seven expert from the ten great ancient sects had died pitifully in the silver giant’s hands.

“Good! Gu Immortals from Central Continent’s ten great sects are merely so.” Within the silver giant, Lang Ya land spirit laughed heartily: “We will continue! That Feng Jiu Ge had rank eight battle strength, he is a tough nut to crack, we will ignore him. Let’s kill all these weaklings first, I want to see if anyone will still dare to invade my hairy man sanctuary after this!”

Heavenly Giant Solor was the number two ancient battle formation in the world, it was the peak essence of ancient Gu cultivation. It had rank eight battle strength, but the hairy man Gu Immortals were too weak earlier, including the white haired land spirit, thus, when Shadow Sect attacked, they did poorly, Shadow Sect managed to damage Refinement Cauldron and leave unharmed.

But now was different, after the black haired land spirit’s reforms, Lang Ya Sect was created and with Fang Yuan’s guidance, the hairy man Gu Immortals’ fighting standards had gone up greatly. This way, after assembling ancient battle formation Heavenly Giant Solor, it could truly display rank eight battle strength, and because the black haired land spirit had always made the hairy man Gu Immortals practise the use of this ancient battle formation, even Central Continent rank seven Gu Immortal experts had to die!

Southern Border, fetus earth maze.

The mortal life continued to unfold.

“It seems that I really lost my memories.” Under the moonlight, Fang Yuan sighed.

He wore a thin shirt as he walked around the small garden made with piled up soil. There was a well in it, and half of the bricks around the well had broken, there was also a fruit tree with no leaves, it was dry and wilted.

“This is my home.” Fang Yuan looked around and sighed.

He looked at the room that the old lady slept in, it was even more torn than his room, the windows had lots of holes in it, seeing this, a sense of shame and embarrassment assaulted Fang Yuan.

Thinking of Xiu Niang, love emerged from Fang Yuan’s heart.

Undoubtedly, these two were the most important women in his life.

After resting for some months, his injuries had mostly healed, he could walk again.

At the moment, countless thoughts were in his mind, the pure moonlight shone down on his frowned brows, he had been thinking about his situation while lying on bed.

“Xiu Niang is truly in love with me, I must marry her, I cannot let her down!”

“Mother really likes Xiu Niang, but because of the situation, she had to painfully give up.”

“To marry Xiu Niang, there are two obstacles. One is Shu clan, it has a huge force and many people. The second are Xiu Niang’s parents, they are Gu Masters and they look down on a mortal like me.”

“The root cause is still my low aptitude, I cannot become a Gu Master. If I could cultivate to rank three, her parents would accept me.”

“Sigh!”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan sighed deeply.

This was a problem that he could not solve.

Even though in rumors there were Gu that could change aptitude, Fang Yuan was a poor lad, who would spend effort to help him to such an extent?

Even though Xiu Niang had Gu Master aptitude, she was only C grade and had low potential. If she had a bright future and could become a rank three Gu Master, she might be able to decide her own fate, she would not need to be so helpless.

“Then what should I do?”

Fang Yuan sighed as he looked at the moon, he was very troubled.

But at this time, he heard the sound of a zither playing.

“Oh? Why is there music?” Fang Yuan listened closely, the music was not just from a zither, there were also bells, flutes, and so on.

He listened closely, trying to find the source of the music, gradually approaching the well.

“Strange, this music is coming from my well, why is that?” Fang Yuan looked into the well, he only saw the reflection of the moon, it was bright and clear.

Fang Yuan looked at the walls of this well, there were dozens of bricks that formed into the shape of a door, it was shining with a white-jade luster, it was extraordinary.

He was very curious, he tied the rope of the water bucket to the fruit tree and climbed down the well.

When he was lowered to half of the well’s depth, he hung onto the rope as he pushed the bricks that looked like a jade door.

He used a small force, but the jade door vanished when he touched it, a form of suction dragged the helpless Fang Yuan into it.

A night later.

Fang Yuan got out of bed, his eyes shining brightly. He was completely different from before mentally.

It turned out that this well had the inheritance of a Gu Immortal, it was known as the Virtue true inheritance. Because of its long history, it was very incomplete.

Fang Yuan inherited this incomplete true inheritance, he awakened his aperture that night and became a rank one Gu Master, he obtained several mortal Gu and gained a huge burst in strength, his life had completely changed.

“Heaven pitied me, I obtained such an unparalleled fortuitous encounter! There is great hope in marrying Xiu Niang now!”

Fang Yuan was extremely joyous.

But he controlled himself, knowing that he could not expose this. The fortuitous encounter was too great, if he exposed it, he would get killed!

“I want to cultivate hard, I will accumulate my foundation and only expose my strength after being sufficiently strong enough.”

Cultivate this Virtue true inheritance!

Fang Yuan made up his mind but he frowned.

“But this true inheritance has a weird requirement. It needs the inheritor to maintain a heart of justice, to be a virtuous person. The greater my virtues, the easier it is when cultivating.”

“Virtue?” Fang Yuan hesitated.

He had a vague feeling of disdain towards this word in his heart, but after getting this true inheritance, the disdain vanished subtly.

In the following days, Fang Yuan worked hard on cultivation, accumulating strength.

The old lady advised him not to get close to Xiu Niang, he agreed but made up his mind internally.

Xiu Niang approached him and talked about their tough relationship, but Fang Yuan urged her to endure it, he would find a way around this.

What made Fang Yuan extremely glad was that Xiu Niang believed his words without doubt.

As he cultivated, one day, the old lady got sick and could not recover.

Fang Yuan was extremely anguished, normal medicine had no effect, Fang Yuan’s heart was burning with anxiety.

He found a Gu Master to heal her, but the rank two Gu Master looked down on his pitiful fees and did not want to help.

Fang Yuan heard that this Gu Master liked to eat fish, he walked for a dozen li to arrive at a lake.

Fang Yuan started a fire and melted the ice, entering the cold water to capture a fish before giving it to the Gu Master.

The Gu Master was extremely moved by Fang Yuan’s filial piety, he decided to heal this old lady.

The old lady was healed and Fang Yuan was extremely happy. His joy only increased when he found that there was a rank two accumulate virtue Gu in his aperture.

According to the true inheritance, this accumulate virtue Gu would refine and appear on its own when Fang Yuan did good deeds and acted kindly. The greater the accumulation of kindness, the higher the rank of the accumulate virtue Gu that is refined. This Gu had many uses, it was one of the core foundations of Virtue true inheritance, its greatest use was to change Fang Yuan’s cultivation aptitude, to turn him into the Righteous Virtue Physique1.

According to the vague description of the true inheritance, the Righteous Virtue Physique was only inferior to the ten extreme physiques, but it did not have any of the ten extreme physiques’ flaws, it represented an unparalleled future and potential!

Henceforth, Fang Yuan did good deeds and accumulated his virtues, he did not give up any opportunity to refine accumulate virtue Gu.

Soon, his kind reputation of committing good deeds spread.

Fang Yuan’s aptitude became better and better, his cultivation speed rapidly rose. Two years later, he became a rank two Gu Master.

During an incident, in order to save a child who had fallen into water, he exposed his Gu Master identity.

Coincidentally, an elder from Shu clan saw this, Fang Yuan’s secret was exposed.

The Shu clan elder thought, a mere mortal like Fang Yuan could actually improve his aptitude to become rank two, he definitely had a huge secret, thus, he attacked Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan fought with him in an intense battle, eventually, he surpassed his limit and used a mortal killer move — Virtuous Submission!

This moved used up all of his accumulate virtue Gu.

Shu clan elder was hit by this move but he suffered no injuries, he started to cry as he knelt on the ground, slapping his own face as he cried: “I am not human, I am not human, I actually had such evil thoughts, I dare to attack someone as virtuous as you! I am a beast, I am not human. Please forgive me, please give me a chance to redeem myself!”

Fang Yuan was dazed on the spot, he did not think this move would be so powerful.

Henceforth, he subdued this Shu clan elder, and gained a lot of crucial information about the Shu clan young master.

Meanwhile, he worked hard to do good deeds as his reputation spread among the mortals, even Gu Masters heard of his name.

Several years later, the truth could no longer be concealed, Fang Yuan’s Gu Master identity was exposed.

But he used other Gu worms to conceal his greatest secret. Xiu Niang’s parents changed their opinion of him, but they did not want their daughter to marry someone as poor as Fang Yuan.

Compared to Fang Yuan, the Shu clan young master was simply much superior.

But Xiu Niang loved Fang Yuan alone, this made the Shu clan young master upset as he found trouble with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s life was filled with hurdles, he was constantly framed and accused, but as long as Xiu Niang was around, he looked forward to each day with hope.

Eventually, when their conflict reached its max, Shu clan young master requested for Fang Yuan to fight him in a battle to the death.

Fang Yuan agreed to his request, this matter escalated and the surrounding forces and Gu Masters heard about it.

Right before the day of the fight, late at night, Fang Yuan was attacked by the joint assault of Shu clan’s Gu Masters.

Fang Yuan escaped to the mountains with heavy injuries, he was filled with rage and hatred.

Because he knew that he was heavily injured, he could not be Shu clan young master’s match. If he went to fight, he would die. But if he did not, he would lose the match and Xiu Niang would have no choice but to marry Shu clan’s young master.

“How can I allow Xiu Niang to marry this scoundrel? Even if I die, I will... what sound is that?” Fang Yuan was shocked, he turned around to see a huge beast tide approaching.

“Good! Heaven is not blind, let this beast tide destroy the city, Shu clan would not be prepared for it, they would lose terribly, I would be avenged!”

Fang Yuan was overjoyed, but his smile faded instantly.

He thought of his mother, he thought of Xiu Niang, he thought of his friends and neighbors. The cherished faces of these people surfaced in his mind and lingered.

If he allowed the beast tide to reach the city, how many people would die?

Even if he tried to save them, with his strength, how many people could he save?

“Even if I save Xiu Niang and my mother, what about these people? Don’t they have children? They have their own parents too! Not helping them when I know of this disaster, I am also an accomplice.”

“Also, no matter how bad the Shu clan young master is, not everyone in Shu clan is like him. There are also admirable people among them, why must I implicate them? Do they deserve to die?”

“Furthermore, I have already lived in this city for twenty years, I am indebted to it, without its protection, I would have been killed by wild beasts. Should I let the beast tide destroy this city? No, this is my home!”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan’s gaze firmed as he turned around, running to the city.

Even though he knew that in returning now, he would likely meet those Shu clan Gu Masters and get killed by them.

But he had to go!

Because having inherited Virtue true inheritance, these last few years, virtues were ingrained in him, his own mindset was changed, he felt that he had the obligation and responsibility to do this!

Fang Yuan returned to the city and informed everyone of the beast tide, it grew a lot of attention.

The beast tide was too sudden and concealed, but thanks to Fang Yuan, the Gu Masters in the city were prepared for it and managed to defend themselves.

The city lord heard of Fang Yuan’s circumstances, knowing that he had taken a huge risk to inform them, he praised Fang Yuan greatly.

With the city lord’s backing, Fang Yuan no longer feared Shu clan, his battle with the Shu clan young master was also postponed indefinitely.

Next, in the year-long defensive battle, Fang Yuan performed well and saved countless mortals and Gu Masters. He loved to help people and did not seek rewards, his strength grew drastically as he refined countless accumulate virtue Gu, people also praised him greatly and his reputation soared.

When the beast tide ended, Fang Yuan had undergone a qualitative transformation.

He fought with Shu clan’s young master fair and square.

And in this life and death battle, Fang Yuan obtained absolute victory.

But he spared the life of Shu clan’s young master.

“Oh Shen San, you repaid hatred with kindness, I am in deep admiration, from today onwards, I will follow your lead! Please accept my submission!” Saying so, Shu clan’s young master knelt down.

The people in the city were in deep admiration towards Fang Yuan.

Three years later, the city lord felt old and passed his position to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was already a rank five Gu Master, he was the new city lord. The day that he took over the role was also the day of his marriage with Xiu Niang.

Auspicious red characters, lively guests, delicious food and wine, and a comfortable wedding room.

Xiu Niang was dressed up and sat by the bed, looking at Fang Yuan with deep love: “Darling San, we are finally married. I knew I did not love the wrong person.”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Of course, but...”

He held his chest.

Xiu Niang was worried: “But what? Are you feeling unwell?”

Fang Yuan shook his head: “I feel a little empty inside.”

Xiu Niang smiled, she smiled like a blooming flower, looking truly beautiful: “Why do you feel empty? Darling San, do you know how many people admire you?”

Fang Yuan’s expression turned stiff: “They admire me? They merely admire my fortune, authority, strength, and love life.”

Saying this, his tone turned cold, a sharp light flashed in his eyes.

Xiu Niang’s expression changed: “Darling San, what’s wrong? Your words are making me uneasy.”

Fang Yuan looked at her seriously, he looked at this face that he thought about day and night, he could not stop loving this beautiful woman.

His gaze was so serious, but Xiu Niang felt more and more uneasy.

Afterwards, Xiu Niang saw Fang Yuan shaking his head as he sighed: “Everything that happened... merely amounted to this.”

At the next moment, everything collapsed!

Author’s Note: This is two chapters combined together.

TL Note: This is how you write an RI fanfic.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1543: Humanity’s Righteous Path

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

“You want to kill me, you will have to pay a price!” A rank seven Central Continent Gu Immortal shouted, he knew he could not escape, facing the silver giant, he retaliated with a final struggle.

The immortal killer move was grand and powerful, the silver giant took several steps back.

But that was it.

Snap.

The silver giant slapped with both palms as he turned into meat paste.

“Hahaha, the third Central Continent Gu Immortal is dead!” Lang Ya land spirit laughed heartily.

The silver giant turned around, looking at Feng Jiu Ge as it taunted: “Oh Feng Jiu Ge, even if you have rank eight battle strength, so what? Can you stop me from killing your companions? They dared to invade Lang Ya blessed land, I will turn this into their final resting place!”

Feng Jiu Ge’s gaze was spewing fire, he was furious, within Lang Ya blessed land, Lang Ya land spirit had the territorial advantage. Heavenly Giant Solor had true rank eight battle strength, even if he used his signature killer moves, he could not stop the silver giant from killing other Central Continent Gu Immortals.

“In that case, I can only do this now.” Feng Jiu Ge’s gaze became eerie and profound.

Lang Ya land spirit had a bad feeling in his heart: “What are you trying to do?”

Feng Jiu Ge smiled: “Nothing special, I am just imitating you.”

He flew down and rapidly went below Cloud Cover Continent, arriving at one of the three continents, Black Hair Continent.

Below Feng Jiu Ge, a hairy man city with countless hairy men living in it had no idea that disaster was about to strike.

“Stop!” Lang Ya land spirit moved the silver giant and quickly approached Feng Jiu Ge.

But Feng Jiu Ge used his immortal killer move forcefully, with a loud sound, this hairy man city instantly destroyed, countless hairy men were buried, tens of thousands of hairy men died instantly.

Lang Ya land spirit’s eyes turned red, screaming: “Feng Jiu Ge! You are a righteous path Gu Immortal, how can you act so viciously?”

Feng Jiu Ge smiled coldly: “My righteous path is the righteous path of humans, not variant humans. Since when did you variant humans consider yourselves equal to us humans?”

Feng Jiu Ge said this as he flew to another city.

Lang Ya land spirit tried to stop him but like how Feng Jiu Ge could not stop him from killing Central Continent Gu Immortals, he could not stop Feng Jiu Ge from killing these hairy men.

Feng Jiu Ge did not care much about the lives of the Central Continent Gu Immortals, they came from different sects and the ten great ancient sects were in constant conflict as well.

But Lang Ya land spirit cared about his hairy men, he had a grand ambition for the hairy men, it was his weakness!

Feng Jiu Ge’s attacks were all met with Lang Ya land spirit’s resistance, the other Central Continent Gu Immortals became safe as a result.

The situation turned bad for Lang Ya Sect.

Southern Border, inside the battlefield killer move.

“Hmm? Strange, very strange!” Lu Wei Yin had a look of shock and uncertainty.

“My killer move mimics reincarnation battlefield, it uses fetus earth maze as the base to create a dream realm. There are many participants in this dream realm, they are all elites, the dream is so powerful I can only influence and not control it.”

“This Fang Yuan had love and kinship in his heart, he also has desire towards fortune, authority, and strength, but why did the dream realm fail to restrain him in the end?”

This dream realm’s Virtue true inheritance was not fictional, it was a crucial setup by Lu Wei Yin.

His main objective was to direct Fang Yuan to commit good deeds and muster the virtues and righteousness in his heart, turning him from a demonic to righteous path Gu Immortal.

The entire process was very successful from its start to the middle. But right when Lu Wei Yin thought that he was going to succeed, Fang Yuan suddenly broke free of the dream’s route.

This situation confused Lu Wei Yin greatly.

He thought about it but could not understand why.

“Forget it. Even though one lifetime is over, there are two lives left. I will reform you once more.” Lu Wei Yin breathed in deeply, his expression turning austere.

During the second life’s dream realm, Fang Yuan became a young master.

His clan was a super force and dominated a territory, his grandpa was the first supreme elder and his parents were both Gu Immortals, they had supreme authority.

As the only child of his family, Fang Yuan was doted on from birth.

He enjoyed great fortune and luxury since he was young, when he was a teenager, he unavoidably became a good-for-nothing young master.

Even though he was very lazy and did not cultivate, with his family’s support, they expended a huge amount of resources to raise his cultivation level.

Thus, when Fang Yuan was sixteen years old, even though all he did was play and fool around, he had rank five peak stage cultivation level.

Fang Yuan forgot himself, he forgot the previous dream’s life, he lived happily and without worries.

Just when he thought that his life could carry on like this forever, his family was attacked by a demonic overlord.

This unparalleled demon had quasi-rank nine battle strength, he had immense might and a vicious heart, Fang Yuan’s clan was not his match.

The clan expended a huge amount of resources, they hired a lot of help and joined up with many righteous path forces to attack the demon.

In this battle, his grandpa and father died, the demon eventually lost and went missing, news that he died spread.

However, Fang Yuan's life took a drastically downturn, his mother could not hold the fort, soon, both of them were ostracized by other forces in the clan.

But survival was not an issue, he had his mother to protect him.

However, a few years later, the demon appeared again. The first thing he did was to approach Fang Yuan's clan and murder all of the clansmen in it.

The scene was very pitiful, their blessed land base that was safe from harm became ruins, corpses were everywhere.

Fang Yuan was lucky to be the sole surviving Gu Master.

“Demon, I will kill you!!” He was resolved to die, he attacked that demon without hesitation.

But the demon snickered and easily blew Fang Yuan to the ground with one breath.

He stepped on Fang Yuan's head as he laughed: “Little rascal, do you hate me? I can feel how much hatred you have, because your encounter today was the same as me back then. I was only a mortal living with my family back then, even though life was hard, we lived in bliss. But a Gu Master from your clan killed my entire family over a tiny Gu worm. I managed to survive and swore to take revenge, thankfully, heaven was not blind, I had a fortuitous encounter and became a Gu Immortal, I could finally take revenge today! Hahaha.”

Fang Yuan struggled intensely, but the demon laughed happily. Eventually, he stepped on Fang Yuan's skull and burst it.

Three days later, in a secluded cave, Fang Yuan opened his eyes.

“Didn't I die?” When he found that he was alive, he was extremely shocked.

But soon, a scene of the past surfaced in his mind.

His mother had used an immortal killer move on him with utmost secrecy, nobody knew about it.

“Son, this killer move can protect your soul and let you revive once. In the future, if this move activates, I want you to live well, do not take revenge for us.” His mother instructed warmly.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan was filled with tears.

He understood that he had revived because of his mother.

He revived but his mother did not, she had used her only chance of revival on Fang Yuan.

This was the noble love of a mother!

Fang Yuan sobbed in anguish, the hatred in his heart accumulated like the tidal waves raging in a vast sea.

The amount of love he had for his clansmen and family was equal to how much he hated that demon.

After crying for a while, Fang Yuan knelt on the ground, he swore to spend his life, regardless of what price he had to pay, to kill that demon and take revenge for his parents, clansmen, and for himself!!

Fang Yuan started to cultivate with great effort from this day on.

He worked very hard, he only slept the minimum amount each day, he even ate food with a very strict timer.

After reviving, even though his body had changed, his aptitude was still unparalleled, he could conceal his identity.

He had his clan’s inheritance and the full foundation of a super force.

Even though there were no Immortal Gu left, at this place where he revived, his mother had left him a lot of mortal Gu.

Just like this, he cultivated in the cave in seclusion. Eight years later, he successfully became a rank six Gu Immortal, obtaining a high grade blessed land.

But rank six was not enough against the demon.

Fang Yuan’s desire for revenge only grew firmer as time passed.

He had already expended the cultivation resources that his mother left, Fang Yuan ventured out of the cave and roamed the world.

At this time, almost the entire world had submitted to that demon’s authority. In the absence of rank nine, he was the number one person in the world!

Fang Yuan cultivated as he actively joined the forces that resisted the demon.

But the demon was too powerful, no matter how many forces resisted, they vanished from his immense might.

Gradually, the situation became worse, many Gu Immortals submitted to the demon and became his lackeys.

Fang Yuan’s strength grew, but even at rank seven, he was not the demon’s match.

He still had to face the assault of those lackeys. His cultivation journey was getting tougher, he got injured so many times he could not remember anymore. In many situations, he relied on luck and managed to survive. He had gone through so much hardship and pain, all the suffering was buried in his heart, hatred grew deeper in his heart.

He became experienced.

He started to talk less.

“I have little lifespan left.” Fang Yuan looked at his old face in the water’s reflection as he said anxiously.

“Please sell your lifespan Gu to me, I will pay you three rank seven Immortal Gu!” He found a Gu Immortal, this person has saved his life, he was also an enemy of the demon.

But this Gu Immortal shook his head: “Lifespan Gu is hard to get, I have little lifespan too, no matter how many Immortal Gu you offer, how can I use them if I am dead? Please go back.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1544: Boring

“I really need them, I have a reason to live!” Fang Yuan shouted, he persevered.

“In this world, everyone has their own reason to live, why must I die in order for you to live?” This Gu Immortal smiled: “Of course, I understand your reason. That demon is your mortal enemy and you want to take revenge. But he is also my enemy, I need to take revenge too. Why must I be sacrificed for you? Go find other lifespan Gu, I need these for myself.”

Fang Yuan could not rebuke him, this Gu Immortal made great sense. His begging ended in failure.

Fang Yuan had to go out and find lifespan Gu, in fact, during his cultivation journey, he had been paying attention to getting lifespan Gu. But his luck was bad, the demon scavenged for lifespan Gu and the number of lifespan Gu in the outside world became very few.

Fang Yuan had no alternatives, he knelt in front of his parents’ grave for an entire night. He first wailed, before he sobbed, and by daybreak, he stood up with a dangerous gaze in his eyes.

In order to get lifespan Gu, he took a risk and killed his benefactor, taking the lifespan Gu that he had.

Using the lifespan Gu, he lengthened his life and continued to cultivate, finding a chance for revenge.

He started to lose his bottom line, he became unscrupulous. Thus, he started to be branded as a dangerous person, he became part of the demonic path.

“Even if I become a demon, so what? I will do anything for revenge!”

The demon exterminated all the forces that opposed him, he had supreme authority, nobody could remove his status.

Fang Yuan could not find any chance to kill the demon, he started to lose his patience, his hatred was like a monster in the darkness of his heart, if this monster’s thirst for revenge could not be fulfilled, this monster would devour Fang Yuan himself.

Thus, Fang Yuan shifted his attention to the people around the demon.

The demon was human too, even though his family was murdered in the past, in recent years, he started a family, he had wives, subordinates, and many children.

Among his children, a young girl was doted on the most, she was turned into a Gu Immortal at the age of sixteen by the demon after paying a shocking price.

Fang Yuan started a deep scheme, he intentionally created a coincidence to get close to this female immortal.

“You can call me Little Shang, thank you for saving me.” The female immortal was very innocent, because Fang Yuan had saved her life, he soon gained her trust.

Fang Yuan started to act, after such a long time, his acting had improved drastically, he was very familiar with the human heart.

Initially, he got close to Little Shang to kill her and make the demon feel the pain of losing his family. But gradually, as he spent time with Little Shang, Fang Yuan’s emotions started to awaken from the deep darkness of his heart.

But when Little Shang confessed to him about her affection, Fang Yuan was panicked and quickly ran away.

He vanished from Little Shang.

He hid his traces and went back to his parents’ graves, kneeling with a face overflowing with tears.

Because he had understood his own feelings from this shock — unknowingly, he had fallen in love with Little Shang.

How could he fall in love with the daughter of the enemy that killed his entire family?

Fang Yuan was extremely anguished, while feeling deeply conflicted.

Eventually, he let Little Shang off, he only went after the demon for revenge.

He changed his appearance and did some robberies, after collecting enough cultivation resources, he cultivated by the grave and pushed to rank eight.

He succeeded in reaching rank eight but suffered heavy injuries too.

When he was recuperating, Little Shang appeared, she had found him.

She questioned him on why he ran away when she confessed. This was the first time she was confessing, but he acted like this. She was indignant, she needed to get an answer.

Fang Yuan could not explain himself, he brought her to his parents’ graves as he said: “This is the grave of my former lover.”

Little Shang’s expression paled, she apologized to Fang Yuan, asking: “Why are there no words on this grave?”

Of course there were no words, Fang Yuan was not going to leave this flaw that could expose his identity behind.

Thus, he sighed: “Because I did not know her name from start to end.”

Next, he spoke of a pitiful but beautiful love story.

Little Shang was crying profusely, she was deeply immersed in this story, she felt sympathy and sadness towards Fang Yuan.

She decided to accompany Fang Yuan and live together, to get out of this trauma. She was very firm on her reason: “What’s wrong with helping the person I love?”

Even though Fang Yuan loved Little Shang too, he did not want to stay with her.

He was afraid.

He was afraid that after his revenge succeeds, it would cause even greater harm to Little Shang.

He was also afraid that if he stayed with her, his determination for revenge would be eroded.

The night that Little Shang stayed with him, Fang Yuan saw the demon again.

His eternal enemy!

The demon used a method to make Little Shang fall asleep as he brought Fang Yuan over by force.

Fang Yuan concealed himself deeply, the demon did not find out his true identity.

The demon spoke with a forceful tone, but what surprised Fang Yuan was that he did not separate the two of them.

From the demon’s words, Fang Yuan could acutely sense the fatherly love that he had, he wanted them to live in happiness.

“You have rank eight cultivation level, you are somewhat worthy of my daughter. Treat Little Shang well, she really loves you.” The demon said before leaving.

Fang Yuan thought about it, continuing to ponder over the situation, he felt that the demon’s actions had deeper reasons.

Indeed, after some subtle probing, Little Shang exposed a shocking secret, the demon wanted to charge to rank nine realm, but he had little confidence in it.

Fang Yuan was overjoyed when he heard this.

He understood the demon more than he understood himself.

The demon was definitely going to try advancing to rank nine, but he had little confidence. Once he failed, if he did not die, he would be heavily injured. By then, Fang Yuan would be able to exact revenge!

At once, the thirst for revenge overwhelmed him.

The unprecedented hope made Fang Yuan extremely logical and calm. He decided to stay close to Little Shang to get closer to the demon.

The demon failed in his advancement to rank nine indeed, he hid in a valley to recuperate.

Before Fang Yuan found out his location, the information was exposed by his most trusted aide.

The demon had always ruled with an iron fist, he was very strict with his subordinates, it was understandable why his subordinates betrayed him.

Most Gu Immortals had not truly submitted to the demon, when they heard news of this, the five regions stirred and a large number of Gu Immortals ganged up and surrounded the valley.

The demon was in danger, Little Shang was worried about her father, she wanted to help him, Fang Yuan went with her during this trip, Little Shang was deeply moved.

Fang Yuan managed to get close to the demon and as battle started, the demon managed to kill many Gu Immortals even though it was evident that he was weakened.

The Gu Immortals saw hope and refused to leave even in death, Fang Yuan schemed and plotted against the demon, exposing precious information and making him land in a dangerous situation.

In the final battle, both sides exhausted their resources, due to luck, Fang Yuan obtained control of the immortal formation that would decide victory.

There was only one attack left in the immortal formation, it could decide the battle.

The Gu Immortals shouted at Fang Yuan: “Quickly kill this demon, uphold justice and save this world!!”

Little Shang was in a desperate situation, Fang Yuan was her only hope.

The demon said to Fang Yuan: “Quickly kill these Gu Immortals! I will let you become the second strongest person in this world, you will have an unlimited amount of riches and prosperity, my daughter will be yours for a lifetime.”

Fang Yuan hesitated and struggled.

The images of his parents appeared in his mind, they screamed: “Kill him, kill this demon, take revenge for our clan!”

Countless eyes were staring at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan controlled the immortal formation, whichever side he hit would be exterminated, the other would win.

If he attacked the righteous path Gu Immortals, the demon would win, Fang Yuan did not want this, but if he did not, Little Shang would die.

Or maybe he should save Little Shang now, there would be another chance to kill the demon in the future. After this matter, Fang Yuan would gain the demon’s trust, but that was not assured, and Fang Yuan did not have the confidence to kill the demon alone.

The demon was too powerful, as long as he had time to recover, he would become more vigilant and stronger, Fang Yuan’s hope of revenge would dwindle.

If he attacked the demon, that was the safest option, he would definitely die. Fang Yuan would be able to take revenge, it was the most correct answer.

But that would cause Little Shang to die, Fang Yuan was unwilling to see that happen.

Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered, he felt love and hatred conflicting in him, he was in immense pain and contradiction, due to the time limit, he had to make up his mind now.

Whichever decision he made, it would decide the fate of the world, and furthermore, it would enormously affect the rest of his life!

This final hit, would he attack or not?

If he attacked, where would he hit?

All of the Gu Immortals stared at Fang Yuan, many were cheering and urging Fang Yuan to make the most important decision.

Under everyone’s watch, the hesitation and struggle on Fang Yuan’s face suddenly vanished.

His lips curled up as he showed a mocking smile.

Next, he started to laugh lightly, he sighed deeply as his body relaxed entirely.

“Why are you laughing? Make up your mind!” The demon shouted, rushing him.

“I am laughing at myself, I am also laughing at all of you.” Fang Yuan looked at them with a calm gaze, it swept around as his eyes drooped down: “Love and friendship, killing and slaughtering, don’t you all find this very boring?”

At the next moment, the dream realm collapsed once again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1545: Fang Yuan Schemes Ahead, Feng Jiu Ge Faces Danger

Boom—!

With a loud explosion, another city in Black Hair Continent collapsed, countless hairy men died or got injured.

“Feng Jiu Ge, you deserve death!” Lang Ya land spirit screamed manically, intense pain could be heard from his voice.

Feng Jiu Ge smiled coldly, flying away again.

The silver giant continued to pursue him under the land spirit’s control. Profound lights were scattered before it left, the hairy men that were still alive in the city quickly healed after being bathed in this light, their lives were saved.

But this was pointless for the overall fight.

Both the silver giant and Feng Jiu Ge had rank eight battle strength, neither could stop the other party’s assaults.

Unless their battle strength differed greatly.

“Fang Yuan has not responded yet?” Lang Ya land spirit’s eyes were red, he shouted.

The hairy man Gu Immortals in charge of contacting him shook their heads.

“Damn it!” Lang Ya land spirit gritted his teeth, clenching his fists as he growled: “Uncontactable at the crucial moment! Is he trying to escape? No, he is not a person who lacks courage, as long as we join forces, these Central Continent Gu Immortals will die here. This means... he is being targeted by Heavenly Court now!”

Even though Lang Ya land spirit was furious, he still had a clear head.

“First supreme elder, what do we do? We cannot chase after Feng Jiu Ge like this!” Sixth Hair asked.

The hairy man Gu Immortals were not Lang Ya land spirit, even though they were born and lived here, after becoming immortal, their mindsets had changed, mortals and immortals had different statuses.

Even if all these mortal hairy men died, more could be nurtured as time passed. But if these Central Continent Gu Immortals were allowed to complete their formation, the entire Lang Ya blessed land would be in trouble.

The hairy man Gu Immortals wanted to urge Lang Ya land spirit but they lacked courage, only Sixth Hair who was Spectral Soul’s split soul could stand up now at this critical moment.

But out of their expectations, Lang Ya land spirit listened to Sixth Hair’s suggestion without rampaging or getting angry.

He smiled sinisterly: “Don’t worry! How can I forget about the Central Continent Gu Immortals? Even without Fang Yuan, we have reinforcements, hahaha! This Feng Jiu Ge thinks his scheme succeeded, but it is a futile struggle, these people will die, they will all die!!”

“Don’t tell me?” Sixth Hair’s eyes shone when he heard this.

The other hairy man Gu Immortals also reacted.

“That’s right, we are not alone.”

“Indeed, indeed! Our Lang Ya Sect is part of the four races alliance, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals have reinforcements, but so do we!”

In the past, Fang Yuan played a role in setting up the four races alliance, he had considered a situation like this.

Fang Yuan knew the importance of Lang Ya blessed land, the alliance was a safety net for Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya land spirit and the hairy man Gu Immortals were all lured away by Feng Jiu Ge. Most of the blessed land’s battle strength was inside the silver giant.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals thought that they were safe and sound, but in reality, Lang Ya Sect had reinforcements.

The truth was, the inkman, rockman, and snowman reinforcements had already arrived, they were just hidden.

“Is it finally time for us to strike?” Rank seven rule path rockman Gu Immortal Shi Xiong received Lang Ya land spirit’s transmission as he muttered.

“Let’s strike! What are we waiting for?” The rank seven snowman Gu Immortal Bing Feng could not wait any longer.

“It is a shame that I cannot fight in this battle.” The other rank seven close combat Gu Immortal Bing Zhuo said regretfully.

“We have such a grand formation, why would we need to fight?” An inkman Gu Immortal from Inkman City laughed.

Other than having four rank sevens here, there were also many rank six Gu Immortals.

Lang Ya Sect was attacked, according to their alliance agreement, the other three races had to help them and unite as one to resist the enemy. If they violated it, the punishment would be severe.

When Fang Yuan set the alliance agreement, he had emphasized on the speediness of reinforcements, he did not leave any loopholes behind.

But these three races did not come forcefully, they willingly came. These variant humans naturally did not favor humans, their only concern was the lives of their Gu Immortals.

But Lang Ya blessed land had a hidden immortal formation that completely alleviated their worries.

Ever since the rank eight Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron was destroyed by Shadow Sect and had its core Immortal Gu taken, Lang Ya blessed land could only sustain an incomplete Refinement Cauldron.

Lang Ya blessed land’s defenses were greatly weakened, with Fang Yuan’s wisdom, he had already noticed it. Thus, long ago, he exchanged a lot of inheritances with Lang Ya land spirit, there were a lot of formations inside that could replace Refinement Cauldron to defend the blessed land.

Lang Ya blessed land did not lack Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan, who had sufficient attainment level, modified some immortal formations, secretly setting up a super Gu formation encompassing the entire blessed land. It was hidden normally, but when enemies attacked, the Gu Immortals could use it to unleash great power!

Fang Yuan did this purposely.

He had deeply considered the hairy man Gu Immortals’ battle strength, as well as the reinforcements’ mindsets, this immortal formation was the most suitable.

And there was one more thing, this immortal formation could not be moved after it was created. Even though Lang Ya blessed land was strong, if something happened in the future and the sect turned on Fang Yuan, this immortal formation would be useless. In fact, within the immortal formation, Fang Yuan had already set a few back-doors...

After these variant human Gu Immortals arrived, Lang Ya land spirit sent them into the immortal formation. After getting familiar with the formation, they worked together, instilling immortal essence as this super Gu formation activated.

“What is going on?!”

“There, there is a hidden super Gu formation?”

“Impossible, how can Lang Ya still have manpower?”

The immortal formation activated with tremendous force, it was unstoppable, the immortal formation that the Central Continent Gu Immortals created broke apart at once, many of the immortals were heavily injured.

Bing Zhuo and the rest used the chance to target them without holding back, the formless force of the immortal formation was like a huge grindstone, under its pressure, two Central Continent Gu Immortals died.

Feng Jiu Ge’s expression changed.

“Lang Ya land spirit, I actually fell for your scheme!”

The cruel truth was like a slap on Feng Jiu Ge’s face.

This legendary person of the current era showed anger on his face.

In this situation, Feng Jiu Ge could no longer continue his tactic, he had to return and save the rest of the Central Continent Gu Immortals.

But the silver giant did not let him go, the entire blessed land still had another super Gu formation that exerted pressure on him.

Even though Feng Jiu Ge tried his best, he could only watch as the final Central Continent Gu Immortal died in vain.

“Our intel is severely lacking! Lang Ya blessed land has such a huge force, this is unbelievable!” Feng Jiu Ge had a grim expression, he was attacked by the silver giant and the super Gu formation.

Immortal killer move — Green Jade Song!

In this situation, Feng Jiu Ge, who was left alone, finally went all out, he started to use his signature methods.

Green jade song was clear and crisp, sounding like countless pearls landing on a jade plate.

The music spread out as a layer of green color appeared on the silver giant, before rapidly turning into solid jade.

As the music continued, wherever it spread, white clouds, yellow soil, and flowing water all turned into jade. As everything got converted, the surrounding hundred li became a frozen world made of jade.

Even the silver giant was frozen into a jade statue.

“This green jade song is truly extraordinary.” Within the jade statue, Lang Ya land spirit spoke.

Crack crack, the jade statue started to surface with cracks all over, the silver giant broke free as the jade was flung away, it attacked Feng Jiu Ge again.

Feng Jiu Ge was not surprised, this green jade song had rank eight power, but against the silver giant, it could only temporarily obstruct it.

But he had already obtained enough time for his second immortal killer move — Submission Song!

This move encompassed wisdom path, enslavement path, sound path, and soul path, it affected the mind. It was created by Feng Jiu Ge using five finger fist heart sword as inspiration. It could temporarily cause desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts to change sides, becoming subordinates of the singer.

The song soon spread throughout Lang Ya blessed land.

However, it was in vain!

Lang Ya land spirit laughed: “Feng Jiu Ge, do you think we would not prepare against it? Fang Yuan had already given me information of your submission song. In the battle earlier, I had already sent all our desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts into our immortals’ immortal apertures.”

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated.

Heavenly Court tried to obtain intel about Lang Ya blessed land, Lang Ya land spirit naturally did the same thing. Fang Yuan had warned Lang Ya land spirit regarding Feng Jiu Ge, he was something to guard against!

Feng Jiu Ge breathed in deeply, using immortal killer move heaven and earth song!

The song was loud and clear, it resonated with heaven and earth, drawing out its might and was able to exert pressure on people’s minds, it could weaken enemy attacks.

But this move was even weaker here.

This was the heaven and earth of Lang Ya blessed land, the base of Feng Jiu Ge’s enemy carrying deep animosity against him, how could Feng Jiu Ge resonate and use its power?

Immortal killer move — Separation Song!

Feng Jiu Ge dodged left and right and unleashed his trump card.

This song was extraordinary, it was the best method to break apart immortal formations and Immortal Gu Houses. Back then, against the rank eight Immortal Gu House Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, it had greatly shocked Wu Yong by nearly dismantling it!

The silver giant was an ancient battle formation, Bing Zhuo and the rest were controlling an immortal Gu formation now, they were also affected.

Once it was dismantled, these variant human Gu Immortals would need to fight individually, how could they be Feng Jiu Ge’s match?

Originally, Feng Jiu Ge could not move while using separation song. But after this period of time, he had improved greatly, he could move freely now while using separation song.

Once this song started, it was very weak like a low murmur or like soft sleep-talking in a quiet night.

Next, a sudden emotion emerged in all of the variant human Gu Immortals’ hearts.

The song gradually became louder, it was not an instant rise, but a gradual and gentle one, alternating between low and high pitch as it rose.

The Gu Immortals felt sadness and pain in their hearts.

The song suddenly dropped to a low pitch, an incomparable gloominess and sentimental feelings attacked the variant human Gu Immortals’ hearts, making them have an urge to cry!

The pain of separation, the sadness of separation, the gloominess of separation, and the reluctance of separation.

Splitting up with your lover, never seeing your friends again, and the death of your loved ones.

Separated, but the past remains the same.

Separated, as old friends bid farewell.

Separated, like the setting of the sun.

Separated, like falling flowers that convey deep sadness.

“I’ll separate your mother!!” Suddenly, Lang Ya land spirit screamed in a thunderous tone, resounding in the entire blessed land.

At this moment, his immortal killer move was ready.

Immortal killer move — Complete Silence!

The silver giant shone with boundless brilliance.

The silver light was extremely glaring, like a fragment of the sun, wherever it shone, the song faded into silence.

Feng Jiu Ge’s face finally expressed shock.

This move had rank eight power, it directly countered him!

“Feng Jiu Ge, your death anniversary will be in exactly a year’s time!” Lang Ya land spirit roared smugly, the silver giant stomped on Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge rapidly retreated, but he could only dodge for now.

His gaze flickered, the battle strength of Lang Ya’s forces greatly shocked him multiple times.

This complete silence killer move was extremely effective, but Lang Ya land spirit had kept it in reserve until the end. This move was too crucial, it threw Feng Jiu Ge into an absolute disadvantage.

This legendary figure of Central Continent finally felt the intense aura of death!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1546: Assimilation Wind of Central Feng

Northern Plains.

A boundless grassland extended into the horizons.

The clear skies had no clouds, it looked empty but three Gu Immortals were actually concealing themselves, floating in the air.

“According to Lady Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions, this place is the closest to Lang Ya blessed land.” The leader, a male Gu Immortal, thought to himself.

If Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals saw his appearance, they would gasp: “Prince Feng Xian!”

Indeed, he was one of the five openly known rank eight Gu Immortals in Northern Plains — Prince Feng Xian.

As times changed, the number one rank eight expert Old Ancestor Xue Hu had gone missing with his wife after the destruction of Snowy Mountain blessed land.

The first supreme elder of Yao tribe, Yao Huang, was chosen by Longevity Heaven and left his tribe, becoming the next generation South Desolation Immortal of Longevity Heaven.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was once a lone immortal, but he now occupied Hei tribe’s territory and created the super force Bai Zu tribe, becoming a righteous path member.

Five Elements Grandmaster was still trapped within Longevity Heaven’s Immortal Gu House, Calamity Luck Altar.

Because of Heavenly Court’s invasion, the reappearance of Longevity Heaven, the conversion of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu to the righteous path, and the disappearance of Old Ancestor Xue Hu, almost the whole of Northern Plains had turned into the world of the righteous path, the demonic path Gu Immortals had to lay low and keep out of the spotlight.

Out of the five rank eight Gu Immortals, only Prince Feng Xian was still intact without any changes in his circumstances.

This person had a special status, on the surface, he was an external rank eight supreme elder of Gong tribe and the husband of Gong Wan Ting, but he had a hidden identity, he was a spy sent into Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world by Spirit Affinity House long ago, and was now the most influential spy that Central Continent had in Northern Plains!

Fairy Zi Wei had been planning for a long time, she sent Feng Jiu Ge and the rest to attack Lang Ya blessed land, other than Chen Yi who was openly waiting to reinforce him, she also sent the hidden piece, Prince Feng Xian, secretly.

“Lord, one of Northern Plains’ ten great fierce areas, Loose Tail Ridge, is nearby, Lang Ya blessed land is likely hiding here.” Beside Prince Feng Xian, a rank six female immortal spoke.

Beside Prince Feng Xian, there were two servants of high status, because of his reputation, they also became famous in Northern Plains.

They were Le Yao and Swordmaster You Lan, these two were Gu Immortals from Spirit Affinity House, it was Le Yao who spoke this time, she wore a yellow dress and was extremely beautiful.

Swordmaster You Lan had stayed in the base this time, she did not follow Prince Feng Xian.

Prince Feng Xian nodded slightly, he guessed the same.

His gaze turned around and focused on the Gu Immortal beside him, there was a rank six hairy man Gu Immortal standing right beside him!

This hairy man Gu Immortal was dazed and not moving, like a statue, he was controlled by Prince Feng Xian’s supreme methods.

If Lang Ya land spirit or any Lang Ya Sect hairy man Gu Immortals saw this person, they would know of his identity.

Because this hairy man Gu Immortal was from Lang Ya blessed land.

Back then, after the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Lang Ya land spirit helped Fang Yuan to relocate his assets from Hu Immortal blessed land.

Fang Yuan obtained the sovereign immortal body and wanted to return to Northern Plains but he was chased down.

In order to help Fang Yuan, Lang Ya land spirit sent two hairy man Gu Immortals to receive him, but one of them died and the other went missing.

It turned out that the missing hairy man Gu Immortal met with some other situation, but he was recently captured by Prince Feng Xian alive, he obtained a lot of information from this hairy man Gu Immortal and that led to the crucial clues for Fairy Zi Wei to make her deduction on Lang Ya blessed land.

Because he knew of Lang Ya blessed land’s terrain, the Central Continent ten great ancient sects could use the immortal killer move to directly teleport Feng Jiu Ge and the rest inside.

Le Yao frowned slightly, she asked worriedly: “Looking at the time, Feng Jiu Ge and the rest have gone inside for some time already, why are they not sending out any information? Are they in trouble?”

Prince Feng Xian pondered: “There would be problems for sure, even if we have Lang Ya blessed land’s information and took the initiative, this is still the number one blessed land in the world originating from Long Hair Ancestor, it had unfathomable foundations, they would definitely possess certain trump cards.”

Le Yao frowned even more deeply now: “Central Continent only sent a number of rank seven Gu Immortals into Lang Ya blessed land, isn’t that too... overconfident?”

Prince Feng Xian laughed: “That is because you are unfamiliar with Feng Jiu Ge.”

“Oh?” Le Yao was surprised.

Prince Feng Xian looked afar as he sighed deeply: “I am a person considered to be enormously blessed with talent, I started cultivating when I was thirteen, I became rank four when I was sixteen, I reached rank five peak stage at eighteen. After accepting the sect mission, I went to Northern Plains to develop. After spending three years, I became a rank six Gu Immortal and all my tribulations after that were successful. I roamed Northern Plains and joined Gong tribe, after a hundred years, I became rank eight, even though I was treading on thin ice, who in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world could expose my true identity?”

“I had once been extremely prideful and arrogant, because I did not depend on the sect’s support, I worked hard and made use of opportunities and different forces to reach rank eight! Until one day, I met Feng Jiu Ge, I realized I was deeply inferior. Compared to me, he is the true supreme genius, his talent is so great it dominates this entire era!”

Le Yao was extremely astounded.

Among the higher-ups of Spirit Affinity House, there was the saying of ‘Northern Feng and Central Feng, both soar in the sky as Spirit Affinity’s pride’, they were talking about the rank eight Gu Immortal Prince Feng Xian and the rank seven Gu Immortal Feng Jiu Ge.

Spirit Affinity House knew about Prince Feng Xian’s supreme elder status, they felt that Spirit Affinity House would be in the hands of Feng Jiu Ge and Prince Feng Xian in the future.

They placed these two on the same level, but Prince Feng Xian was a rank eight with great strength, while Feng Jiu Ge was famous due to his potential.

Placing a rank seven Gu Immortal on the same level as their rank eight master, Le Yao and Swordmaster You Lan were once indignant about it, even Prince Feng Xian was not happy, he sent a letter and questioned the top supreme elders of Spirit Affinity House.

But as time passed, Le Yao and Swordmaster You Lan gradually reached a new opinion regarding this matter.

As for Prince Feng Xian’s change in mentality, it was because he had fought with

Feng Jiu Ge.

A number of years ago, when Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had just collapsed, Feng Jiu Ge led the Central Continent Gu Immortals to find out the truth in Northern Plains. As the biggest card of Spirit Affinity House in Northern Plains, Prince Feng Xian secretly met with Feng Jiu Ge.

Because of this meeting, both of them sparred. The results were shocking, even though Prince Feng Xian did not use his full strength, he only ended with a draw against Feng Jiu Ge!

Thinking about that scene where they fought, Prince Feng Xian sighed deeply: “Feng Jiu Ge having rank eight battle strength isn’t the thing that shocked me, what truly moved me was that immortal killer move that he used! This is an unprecedented creation, nobody in history has ever achieved such a feat.”

“What immortal killer move?” Le Yao asked.

Prince Feng Xian had a solemn expression, he said slowly: “Feng Jiu Ge named it — Assimilation Wind Song.”

Northern Plains, Lang Ya blessed land.

Feng Jiu Ge took a deep breath, separation song was useless, at this point, he only had one method left.

He would not use this move unless necessary.

Because once activated, not only would the risks be huge, the process would be dangerous and cause immense damage, there would be reduced gains after battle, Feng Jiu Ge had always used it cautiously.

But now, he had to admit this, he was forced into a corner.

He had obtained a lot of intel about Lang Ya blessed land from Fairy Zi Wei. But after fighting, he realized that Lang Ya blessed land’s strength greatly exceeded his expectations!

Not just this super Gu formation, but also those Gu Immortals hidden inside the immortal formation, as well as the killer move complete silence.

Feng Jiu Ge knew that Lang Ya Sect had an immortal killer move that countered sound path, it was called silent world.

But he did not know that Fang Yuan had specially modified this move into an even stronger version, complete silence!

Feng Jiu Ge had defensive methods against silent world, but against complete silence which was many times stronger, he was left without options.

Immortal killer move — Assimilation Wind Song!

Feng Jiu Ge dodged left and right, fighting for an opportunity to use the strongest offensive method that he had ever created in his life.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Intense winds blew, the world went through a transformation!

This was not golden wind, Luo Po wind, willow wind, immortal wind, profound eerie wind, star galaxy wind, or fan door wind.

Once this wind appeared, Lang Ya land spirit’s expression changed, the hairy man Gu Immortals were also deeply shocked, while the other variant human Gu Immortals were tongue-tied!

These were the winds of assimilation!

The number one wind in the world capable of assimilating everything, few methods could counter it.

When immortal apertures were destroyed, this wind would blow.

“How can this be the winds of assimilation? This is impossible!” Some hairy man Gu Immortals lost their composure and screamed.

“Unbelievable, a person can actually control the winds of assimilation?!” Bing Zhuo was so shocked his eyes were about to pop out, his cold demeanor had completely melted.

In human historical records, nobody had ever been able to manipulate the winds of assimilation personally. But now, this record was broken, Feng Jiu Ge became the first person throughout history to do so!

He could actually unleash the winds of assimilation!!

Feng Jiu Ge had seven songs currently, obtain treasure song and towards heaven song were used to assist his cultivation; green jade song, heaven and earth song, submission song, and separation song were his trump cards that he reserved for major fights. The final one was assimilation wind song, he would not use it unless necessary.

If he failed to activate this move, Feng Jiu Ge would be the first one to be destroyed by the winds of assimilation, it was extremely vicious.

Many of his songs could be turned into clones through song warrior, but this assimilation wind song could not, it was the most special one!

This move was too powerful, it turned the battle around instantly.

The variant human Gu Immortals were helpless, they were flustered.

Because ordinary methods would be assimilated by the winds of assimilation and turned into fuel to make it even stronger and larger.

“Lang Ya blessed land is the number one blessed land in the world, but against this wind, it will likely be destroyed!” A rockman Gu Immortal said in despair.

“It will not!!” Lang Ya land spirit screamed, he knew he had to stabilize the morale of his side.

He screamed: “These really are the winds of assimilation, assimilation wind song! I did not believe it when Fang Yuan told me about it, but the truth is in front of me, I need to trust him!”

“Everyone, don’t worry, we have a way to deal with the wind!”

“What? Fang Yuan could even have information about such a secret?” The other Gu Immortals heard this and felt hopeful.

At this moment, Fang Yuan, who also had rank eight battle strength, played a crucial role despite being away, he stabilized the morale of Lang Ya land spirit’s forces.

Fang Yuan had memories of the future, he knew about the ferocity of this move, during the five regions chaotic war, Feng Jiu Ge had used this move to slaughter countless beings and it was deeply feared, thus he had already told Lang Ya land spirit about it. Even when he fought against Feng Jiu Ge earlier, he was deeply cautious of this move.

This move was very powerful but it also had major flaws, for example, Fang Yuan could dodge it if he used it in the five regions’ world.

But in this situation, the winds of assimilation had started blowing in Lang Ya blessed land, the land spirit had to resolve it as soon as possible.

What method could actually resist the winds of assimilation?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1547: Lang Ya is Helpless, Jiu Ge Dominates

“Come, true stability branch transformation!” Against the winds of assimilation, Lang Ya land spirit growled as he used an immortal killer move.

Once this move was used, the silver giant underwent a huge transformation.

The huge human shaped body turned into a huge heavenly tree, its trunk was silvery-white, it had countless branches and leaves that resembled silver carvings, it was extremely dazzling as the leaves clashed with each other and created sharp sounds.

The branches and leaves grew rapidly and faced the winds of assimilation.

The winds of assimilation which were rampaging everywhere were obstructed by the huge tree, their speed of growth shrunk by half!

“This?!”

“The winds of assimilation were actually stopped!”

“Unbelievable! Lang Ya blessed land’s foundation is truly unfathomable!”

The snowman, inkman, and rockman Gu Immortals saw this and felt overjoyed.

“Oh? This is... true stability tree?” The flash of red and white light that shot out of the winds of assimilation was Feng Jiu Ge.

Even though he created assimilation wind song and could create the winds of assimilation, once it was used, Feng Jiu Ge would need to leave the center. Otherwise, when it spreads and fills up the space, Feng Jiu Ge would die.

Feng Jiu Ge could only summon the winds of assimilation, he could not manipulate it. He had tried to control it, but any method used on the winds of assimilation would cause it to become stronger as they get assimilated.

Feng Jiu Ge had immortal killer move song warrior, he could turn heaven and earth song, separation song, and the others into clones, but assimilation wind song could not be turned into a clone.

Feng Jiu Ge was far away from the battlefield, Lang Ya land spirit and the rest were busy dealing with the winds of assimilation, they could not bother with him.

“This is indeed true stability tree, to think that they could really counter the winds of assimilation.” Feng Jiu Ge watched from afar as bright light shone in his eyes.

This true stability tree was a legendary immemorial desolate plant, it was famous in history. It had existed since before Ren Zu’s birth, the Immemorial Antiquity Era, it lived through the Remote Antiquity Era, Olden Antiquity Era, and died in the hands of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable during the Medieval Antiquity Era.

This tree had many wild Immortal Gu, among which were several rank eight Immortal Gu. Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable was only rank eight back then, when he was traveling in Eastern Sea, there was a huge tsunami that caused great harm to the world, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s Immortal Gu could not stop this flood, he had to borrow two rank eight Immortal Gu, Peaceful Wind and Silent Wave, from the true stability tree.

But this legendary immemorial desolate plant had great status and strength, it refused to lend them to Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable. In Genesis Lotus’ rage, he fought against the true stability tree and killed it, retrieving the Gu to stop the flood and saving countless lives in the end.

Even though Genesis Lotus killed the true stability tree, he praised it immensely. After becoming venerable, he sighed occasionally: it was a pity that he had to kill the tree back then. This tree was unique in the world, it had the latent ability to counter the winds of assimilation!

Fang Yuan was reborn and knew of Feng Jiu Ge’s assimilation wind song. This move was shocking in the five regions chaotic war and killed countless Gu Immortals. Thus, many Gu Immortals tried to find ways to expose its weakness and stop it.

There was no unstoppable move in this world, there were only unstoppable people.

Even though assimilation wind song was powerful, it was just a move, it could be countered.

Western Desert’s rank eight Gu Immortal Thousand Transformations Ancestor tried to find its fundamental flaw and sought help from a rank eight time path great expert, they saw the power of the true stability tree in the River of Time, after returning, he created the transformation path killer move, true stability transformation!

This move could restrict the winds of assimilation.

At that time, Feng Jiu Ge was only rank seven, but he could make rank eight Gu Immortals research on how to deal with his move, it showed how powerful assimilation wind song was.

Fang Yuan remembered this matter, he prepared in advance thinking about how Feng Jiu Ge attacked Lang Ya blessed land in his previous life, to deal with this strongest move, he used the light of wisdom and his transformation path attainment level to deduce true stability branch transformation.

This move was the simplified version of true stability transformation, but the current assimilation wind song that Feng Jiu Ge had was not the complete version that he used during the five regions chaotic war.

Thus, after using this move, Lang Ya land spirit turned the silver giant into a branch of the true stability tree, it managed to block the winds of assimilation.

“Go deal with Feng Jiu Ge, don’t let him act freely. After I deal with the winds of assimilation, I will go and help you to kill him!” Lang Ya land spirit instructed, ordering the Gu Immortals of the three variant human races.

The variant human Gu Immortals responded as they used the super Gu formation to attack Feng Jiu Ge.

Lang Ya land spirit was covered in sweat, he spent all his effort to sustain the killer move and deal with the winds of assimilation.

He sighed bitterly to himself: “Fang Yuan taught me this move, but I found it too troublesome and did not practise much. To think that Feng Jiu Ge would really attack and use it against me! Sigh, if I knew this, I would have practised this move even more.”

Lang Ya land spirit was completely restricted by the winds of assimilation, he was barely holding on. Countless branches were destroyed when they interacted with the wind, but at the same time, new branches grew.

This move that could stop the winds of assimilation had a huge price to use, it expended a lot of immortal essence and the mental energy of the Gu Immortals sustaining it.

Soon, many hairy man Gu Immortals inside the giant silver tree became weak and mentally exhausted.

“Persevere, we must persevere!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted in encouragement.

“Lord, why can’t we give up a piece of the blessed land?” A hairy man Gu Immortal asked.

Lang Ya land spirit could naturally give up a portion of Lang Ya blessed land, that would prevent the winds of assimilation from affecting them.

Compared to the entire Lang Ya blessed land, that small piece of land was really nothing.

“No!” Lang Ya land spirit rejected immediately, he thought of Fang Yuan’s words as he explained: “If we do that, we will fall into their trap. Cutting off a piece of the blessed land means we will have to connect to the outside world, we would need to open the blessed land’s entrance, that would allow the enemies to find out our location! We cannot do that!!”

“Hmm? This Lang Ya land spirit would rather pay this huge price to deal with the winds of assimilation than give up a piece of the blessed land?” Feng Jiu Ge was surprised.

If Lang Ya land spirit did that, clues would be leaked, Prince Feng Xian, who was outside, would be able to notice it. The situation would be stabilized then.

With the rank eight Gu Immortal Prince Feng Xian’s help, these hairy man Gu Immortals could not stop them.

But Lang Ya land spirit desperately held on and refused to do that, Feng Jiu Ge’s plan could not succeed.

Crack.

An intense lightning appeared out of nowhere, landing on Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge moved like a trail of smoke, he vanished on the spot, evading the attack.

He looked at the sky as he thought rapidly: “Heavenly Giant Solor is restricted by the winds of assimilation, only the super immortal formation is left. It is easier to deal with than the silver giant.”

Immortal killer move — Separation Song!

Feng Jiu Ge activated separation song as the immortal formation started to break apart.

Even though separation song had no offensive power, it had an incredible effect, it could break up any Gu formation.

But thankfully, when Fang Yuan designed it, he had considered it and created many layers in the immortal formation.

Feng Jiu Ge’s separation song only broke up the outermost layer of this super Gu formation, the variant human Gu Immortals were at the center of the formation, they were safe.

Feng Jiu Ge had to use separation song again and broke up the second layer.

But the third layer appeared after that.

“Oh? I want to see how many layers this immortal formation has!” Bright light shone in Feng Jiu Ge’s eyes, he activated separation song continuously, after breaking up six layers, he stopped.

Even the powerful Feng Jiu Ge wanted to vomit blood now.

“How many layers are there?!”

Separation song expended a lot of immortal essence, after several uses, Feng Jiu Ge’s immortal essence storage was less than thirty percent.

Of course, his greatest expenditure was in assimilation wind song.

“Assimilation wind song can match the effect of countless separation songs, but the risk is too high...” Feng Jiu Ge shook his head, he dispelled the notion of using this move again.

Even though it was powerful, it was risky, Feng Jiu Ge rarely used it.

Back then, when he fought against Prince Feng Xian, even though he used it, that was in a spar. Prince Feng Xian had written to Spirit Affinity House that he was unhappy to be placed at the same level as Feng Jiu Ge, it created huge political pressure on Feng Jiu Ge. When Feng Jiu Ge went to Northern Plains, he met with Prince Feng Xian and suggested a single-move spar. In that battle, he had sufficient time to slowly activate his Gu worms without any outside interference, the risk was very low.

But right now, Feng Jiu Ge was in the middle of battle, there were many interferences, he needed to use his killer moves rapidly, earlier, he had taken the risk because there was no other choice. Against the super immortal formation now, he felt less pressure and necessity to use it.

Feng Jiu Ge did not use assimilation wind song, he looked around, the giant silver tree was still dealing with the winds of assimilation, it had already been reduced by half its size.

After some time, Lang Ya's side would be able to dispel the wind and find time to deal with Feng Jiu Ge.

"There is little time." Feng Jiu Ge sighed.

Heavenly Giant Solor had both offense and defense, even the winds of assimilation could not affect it, if Feng Jiu Ge attacked the giant tree now, it would be futile.

Lang Ya blessed land had shown great strength in this battle, far out of Heavenly Court's expectations, Feng Jiu Ge already had the intention to retreat.

"Before leaving, there is something I must do."

He smiled as he activated an investigative immortal killer move, moving rapidly like light. In the blink of an eye, he crossed a huge distance, appearing in front of Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

"Come with me." Before Gu Yue Fang Zheng responded, Feng Jiu Ge suppressed and sent him into his immortal aperture.

"And this place too!" Feng Jiu Ge flew in the air, seeing Dang Hun Mountain at a certain area of Cloud Cover Continent.

"Come!" He activated his immortal killer move that had been prepared, he kept this secluded domain of heaven and earth in his own immortal aperture.

"These cloud cities are all mortal Gu Houses, but there are many hairy man elites living in them, they are all Gu Immortal seeds of Lang Ya Sect. Good, good, they are all mine!" Next, Feng Jiu Ge struck and stored a lot of Cloud Cover Continent's cloud cities.

While he was doing this, he was attacked by the super immortal formation, but this formation had lost many layers due to Feng Jiu Ge, its power was greatly reduced.

As for Heavenly Giant Solor, it was restricted by the winds of assimilation, if it tried to leave, the winds of assimilation would grow stronger instantly, Lang Ya land spirit's hard work would be completely wasted, it could not stop him.

"What aura is this?!" While moving unhindered, Feng Jiu Ge found the aura of wisdom Gu as he felt immensely shocked.

He soon arrived in front of wisdom Gu, Feng Jiu Ge's pupils shrunk from shock: "If I was not seeing this personally, I would not believe it. This is a rank nine wisdom Gu?!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1548: Paradise Earth Inheritor

Even Feng Jiu Ge was dazed when he saw wisdom Gu.

This was wisdom Gu!

It was written in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, it was the vital Immortal Gu of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, it was known to nearly every living person, to think that in this time and place, it would appear before Feng Jiu Ge!

“Lang Ya blessed land actually has wisdom Gu!” Feng Jiu Ge was deeply shocked, he could not control himself.

But soon, he forced himself to calm down.

His eyes burst with bright light, he closely inspected the wisdom Gu before him, finding out that this rank nine wisdom Gu was actually wild!

A thought completely engulfed Feng Jiu Ge’s mind, that was — take this rank nine wisdom Gu away!

Immortal killer move — Obtain Treasure Song.

He activated this killer move with unprecedented force, erupting with rank eight might.

Obtain treasure song was able to help Feng Jiu Ge refine wild Immortal Gu directly, the song was warm and kind, filled with a peaceful aura.

As he sang, the wisdom Gu that was fluttering between the tree branches became still.

“Rank nine wisdom Gu?!” The variant human Gu Immortals who were controlling the super Gu formation were shocked.

Wisdom Gu was originally hidden in this valley by Lang Ya land spirit, the variant human Gu Immortals of the three races were outsiders, they were not informed of it.

But now, Feng Jiu Ge destroyed this area, wisdom Gu was exposed, they noticed it.

“We cannot let him obtain wisdom Gu! Quickly disrupt him!” Lang Ya land spirit screamed as he ordered in anxiety.

Next, he added: “But be careful, don’t destroy wisdom Gu!”

Even without his reminder, the variant human Gu Immortals from the three races knew how important this rank nine Immortal Gu was.

But now, to disrupt Feng Jiu Ge while not affecting the wisdom Gu close by, they needed intense control and it was quite difficult for these variant human Gu Immortals who had just started using this immortal formation.

The variant human Gu Immortals had to forcefully manipulate the immortal formation as they attacked Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge grunted as he used song warrior.

The obtain treasure song warrior flew towards wisdom Gu, while the other song warriors helped Feng Jiu Ge to block the attacks of the immortal formation.

The variant human Gu Immortals attacked with excessive force that implicated wisdom Gu, but Feng Jiu Ge would block them and defend wisdom Gu.

Wisdom Gu sensed danger, its survival instinct made it fly away.

Obtain treasure song warrior followed behind it but could not produce any effects.

Feng Jiu Ge saw this, his heart sank. Wisdom Gu was rank nine, even though obtain treasure song was good, it was only rank eight, it could not affect wisdom Gu.

“If I cannot get it, should I destroy it?” This thought emerged in Feng Jiu Ge’s mind before he denied it.

This was rank nine wisdom Gu, destroying it was a big waste.

And this Immortal Gu was formally the vital Gu of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, if he could get it, it would greatly benefit Feng Jiu Ge, the Central Continent ten great ancient sects, as well as Heavenly Court.

Feng Jiu Ge was unresigned, he did not want to give up.

“Don’t go.” Feng Jiu Ge pounced at wisdom Gu.

Wisdom Gu flew rapidly, but Feng Jiu Ge pursued it endlessly.

Wisdom Gu felt the threat of Feng Jiu Ge as it buzzed, emitting a strong light.

The light of wisdom.

Feng Jiu Ge was unavoidably covered by this light of wisdom, instantly, countless thoughts appeared in his mind and collided, his intelligence surged, his gaze became incredibly sharp.

All of the questions and difficulties he had in cultivation were all resolving, even though he did not get immediate answers, many crucial bottlenecks were easily broken through.

“Oh no!” Feng Jiu Ge was a legendary figure after all, after several breaths of time in the light of wisdom, he sensed something amiss. He bit his tongue as he forced himself to snap out of it and retreated.

After leaving the light of wisdom, he watched the escaping wisdom Gu with lingering fear.

“What an amazing wisdom Gu, after this short period, I already lost so much lifespan!” A strand of Feng Jiu Ge’s hair had turned white.

“My mission here is to capture Gu Yue Fang Zheng and reclaim Dang Hun Mountain, these were all instructed by Fairy Zi Wei. But to think that the rank nine wisdom Gu was hiding here! I already tried my best, but I cannot bring this Gu away. Lang Ya blessed land is also incapable of refining this wisdom Gu, otherwise, they would have done that already!”

Feng Jiu Ge’s thoughts moved rapidly.

Immortal Gu were unique.

A wild Immortal Gu had deep attraction to any Gu Immortal.

And it was a rank nine wild Immortal Gu in front of Feng Jiu Ge.

And most importantly, this Immortal Gu was actually wisdom Gu!

“If they refined wisdom Gu, I would not be able to snatch it. But now, it is wild. I need to go back and inform Heavenly Court and the sect about this. The next time we attack Lang Ya blessed land, we must get this Gu!”

Feng Jiu Ge breathed in deeply, he looked at wisdom Gu which was already at the edge of his vision with lingering desire as he used an immortal killer move.

This immortal killer move that used rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel as the core was called, ‘human come human go’, it was created by the space path great expert Liang Liang. Feng Jiu Ge was not familiar with this move, but it had an incredible effect.

Once activated, not only could it transport people to anywhere in the world, they could also return the same way back. The first half was hard, but the second half was extremely easy.

Liang Liang had already activated this successfully, Feng Jiu Ge was only completing the second half with ease.

Swoosh.

With a soft sound, Feng Jiu Ge vanished.

After a few breaths of time, Lang Ya land spirit mobilized the silver giant and arrived.

“Damn it, Feng Jiu Ge, you actually ran away! Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, I won’t let you off!” Lang Ya land spirit looked at the tattered Lang Ya blessed land as he shouted angrily, roaring.

Southern Border, inside the immortal battlefield killer move.

Lu Wei Yin sighed deeply.

Three lifetimes were over, but Fang Yuan was not reformed.

“I was wrong!”

“I thought that this Fang Yuan was a heartless person or was filled with hatred and rage, that was the reason for his evil actions.”

“But the truth is, he has abundant emotions, he does not lack anything. Even though he pursues strength, he is not obsessed with it.”

“What drives him to do this is his goal. This goal is deeply ingrained in his heart, not only three lifetimes, even after a hundred lifetimes, it cannot be eradicated.”

“This person cannot be reformed.”

“Master...” Ye Fan muttered lightly.

At this time, not just him, even Shang Xin Ci and the rest, including Tie Mian Shen and the other Gu Immortals had woken up.

Everyone was in a daze after three lifetimes, they were savoring the mystical feeling behind it.

Lu Wei Yin looked around as his gaze paused on Shang Xin Ci for a moment.

Her eyes were red, she almost cried, her sadness was evident. She had been emotionally connected to Fang Yuan during the three lifetimes.

Lu Wei Yin nodded secretly, saying to everyone: “I failed, this demon cannot be stopped, he is about to break out of the killer move and escape, let’s go.”

Ye Fan was shocked: “Master, we have the clear advantage.”

Lu Wei Yin smiled bitterly: “I’ve already tried my best, let’s go.”

The mortal Gu Masters were confused, but Tie Mian Shen and the two Yi clan Gu Immortals had their suspicions.

Tie Mian Shen asked directly: “Senior’s surname is Lu, and you are skilled in earth path, are you the inheritor of Paradise Earth’s true inheritance?”

Lu Wei Yin nodded: “That’s me.”

“So it was like that.” Yi clan’s Gu Immortals sighed, they paid their respects and greeted Lu Wei Yin.

At the same time, they no longer had any suspicions towards Lu Wei Yin’s words.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable did not have a single offensive method, his Paradise Earth true inheritance was the same. Lu Wei Yin was skilled at trapping and reforming enemies, this was the specialty of Paradise Earth true inheritance.

Among the ten venerables, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was the kindest and most merciful, he singlehandedly healed the world and stopped the chaos after Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s rule.

But for some reason, this Immortal Venerable did not choose to go to Heavenly Court, he stayed in Southern Border and even left his Paradise Earth true inheritance here.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1549: Soul Explosion!

Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

In the silver sky, amidst countless buildings.

Jade light shone, Feng Jiu Ge appeared in Zi Wei’s palace.

“Greetings to Lady Zi Wei.” Feng Jiu Ge instantly regained awareness of his surroundings, he cupped his fists.

In the grand palace, Fairy Zi Wei sat on her cloud bed as she turned to look at Feng Jiu Ge, slowly opening her eyes.

At an instant, boundless starlight shot out of her pupils, dazzling light filled the entire hall.

Feng Jiu Ge did not speak, an information path Gu worm flew out as Fairy Zi Wei received it, she understood what happened after looking into it.

“Feng Jiu Ge, you are indeed the Dao Guardian of Great Dream Immortal Venerable.

You did well.” Fairy Zi Wei praised.

Feng Jiu Ge smiled: “This is Gu Yue Fang Zheng.”

Saying so, he opened his immortal aperture’s entrance, taking out the captive.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s eyes were shut, he was affected by Feng Jiu Ge’s method and had fallen asleep. as for the will of Fang Yuan that was in him, Feng Jiu Ge suppressed it.

Feng Jiu Ge placed Fang Zheng on the ground as he sighed: “I already searched his soul, that Fang Yuan is a demon indeed, he is completely heartless and cruel, he wants to refine his own brother into Blood Deity. But I do not understand, he is only a mortal, even though he is related to Fang Yuan, why do you place so much importance in him?”

Fairy Zi Wei said slowly: “The way of heaven is to be balanced, yin and yang intertwine, the area around the cave of poisonous animals usually has plants that can act as antidotes to the poison. This Gu Yue Fang Zheng was born together with Fang Yuan, he is an obstacle specially set by heaven against Fang Yuan. If he is nurtured well, he will be useful in dealing with Fang Yuan in the future.”

“I see.” Feng Jiu Ge nodded.

“It is a pity.” Fairy Zi Wei said as she searched Fang Zheng’s soul, she sighed: “Fang Yuan actually did not refine Blood Deity and continue his blood path cultivation. Otherwise, I would be able to use the Demon Judgment Board to find his location. In my opinion, Fang Yuan has not noticed that his blood path cultivation in his previous life was a trap by heaven’s will. He did not cultivate blood path now probably due to the protection of his luck.”

“Fate Gu has not been repaired, the power of luck path is greatly amplified, it is very obvious. You were able to succeed and return this time because of your status as a Dao Guardian, your luck is strong and is not suppressed by Fang Yuan.”

Feng Jiu Ge nodded: “How will we deal with Dang Hun Mountain? What about the wisdom Gu inside Lang Ya blessed land?”

“Take it out.” Fairy Zi Wei smiled.

Feng Jiu Ge was dazed, he took out Dang Hun Mountain from his immortal aperture.

This pink crystal mountain was originally huge, but after entering Zi Wei Palace, it was suppressed into palm-size and was tiny and delicate looking.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable rampaged in the world and slaughtered countless beings, he created soul path. Heavenly Court was the leader of the righteous path, before Spectral Soul became venerable, they sensed his threat and fought against him, they understood each other well.

After Spectral Soul died, soul path continued developing, even though Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable suppressed it, Heavenly Court still had an incredibly profound grasp of soul path methods. In fact, Heavenly Court had many soul path Gu Immortals.

There were a vast number of soul path dao marks on Dang Hun Mountain, it was the soul path secluded domain of heaven and earth. Since Fairy Zi Wei could give Feng Jiu Ge the method to retrieve it, she naturally had an even more profound method to shrink it entirely.

Fairy Zi Wei stretched her arm out as Dang Hun Mountain floated towards her lightly.

“Amazing, amazing.” Fairy Zi Wei looked at it in amazement, she nodded happily: “With this mountain, we will have an endless supply of guts Gu, Jin Huang will benefit from it, her dream realm exploration will go very smoothly.”

Feng Jiu Ge smiled, he was very happy that he could help his daughter.

“As for wisdom Gu...” Fairy Zi Wei thought about it: “I must obtain this Gu, Jiu Ge, you can go and rest, I will need to plan this thoroughly.”

If they attacked Lang Ya blessed land again, the other party would be very alert, they would prepare amply, Fang Yuan might even have returned already, Fairy Zi Wei needed to plan.

“Yes.” Feng Jiu Ge took his leave, getting out of Zi Wei Palace and out of Heavenly Court, going back to Spirit Affinity House.

Fairy Zi Wei also left Zi Wei Palace, she held onto Dang Hun Mountain as she moved all the way into a dark hall.

Three large words were carved on the plaque on the door of this hall – Soul Suppression Hall!

It was the rank eight Immortal Gu House that imprisoned Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Fairy Zi Wei smiled as she carried Dang Hun Mountain and went in front of Spectral Soul.

“Oh Demon Venerable, look what this is?” Fairy Zi Wei smiled lightly, she asked.

Spectral Soul was completely silent.

Fairy Zi Wei nodded: “Truly stubborn and incorrigible! However... I did not bring this mountain here to stir your determination. I know you have used this mountain before, you had cultivated on it in the past. I have this move that can stir your mind as long as I have something closely related to you, I can draw out all your related memories.”

Spectral Soul was still silent.

Fairy Zi Wei’s smile faded, lightning flashed in her eyes.

All along, she had been troubled by Spectral Soul’s stubbornness, she wanted to excavate his precious memories, but there was little progress.

Now that she had Dang Hun Mountain, Fairy Zi Wei found a great opportunity, she wanted to use it on Spectral Soul now!

At the next moment, the immortal killer move activated, the whole of Soul Suppression Hall buzzed as intense lights shone.

The light shone on Dang Hun Mountain as they also shrouded over Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul resisted but this move was very powerful, his memories related to Dang Hun Mountain were drawn out and shown before Fairy Zi Wei.

When young Spectral Soul found Dang Hun Mountain by chance, he was shocked and intensely happy...

After many hurdles, he finally obtained Dang Hun Mountain, he cultivated in secrecy...

Spectral Soul thought about it hard and finally found a way to move Dang Hun Mountain, after some more hurdles, he stored this mountain for his own use...

Spectral Soul created soul path and gradually found more use for Dang Hun Mountain, it was no longer used for guts Gu creation solely. He created Dang Hun formation, he could use the vast amount of soul path dao marks on this mountain to give the immortal Gu formation incredible might...

“Oh? There is a Dang Hun immortal formation, why didn’t Fang Yuan set it up? Did he think it is safe inside Lang Ya blessed land or did this formation require too many Immortal Gu?” Fairy Zi Wei saw this and felt suspicious.

But soon, her suspicions were answered, it turned out that after using Dang Hun Mountain as part of the formation, it could no longer create guts Gu.

Fairy Zi Wei continued to watch.

Scenes concerning Dang Hun Mountain were shown, displaying Spectral Soul’s cultivation journey. Even though most were useless, some contained important cultivation information, even Heavenly Court could gain greatly from them.

When Spectral Soul became venerable, he placed Dang Hun Mountain inside City Well and used an immortal killer move to modify Dang Hun Mountain.

This memory made Fairy Zi Wei’s heart shake.

“This orderly well killer move is amazing! City Well is a rule path secluded domain of heaven and earth, using it, he could actually remove the conflict between Dang Hun Mountain’s soul path dao marks and external time path dao marks. This must be the profundity that led to the origin of sovereign immortal fetus Gu.”

Fairy Zi Wei had already deduced some special effects of sovereign immortal fetus Gu. After all, Fang Yuan fought many times, he exposed many precious clues.

She was not wrong!

The reason why sovereign immortal fetus Gu could have non-conflicting dao marks was because of City Well, and the killer move orderly well.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable paid a huge price to modify Dang Hun Mountain, but it was worth it. After that, he could use time path immortal killer moves to restore the mountain easily.

The following memories were the immortal killer moves that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable deduced using Dang Hun Mountain.

These immortal killer moves were very terrifying and powerful, but they would damage the mountain itself. Once in a while, Spectral Soul would use time path methods to restore Dang Hun Mountain back to normal.

“These methods are truly amazing, someone who was able to become a Demon Venerable truly had heaven-shaking talent!” Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes were shining with bright light, she praised continuously.

These immortal killer moves were precious cultivation information that could greatly help Heavenly Court.

Especially when they had just obtained Dang Hun Mountain, these immortal killer moves were all usable.

Among these killer moves, there was one move that Fairy Zi Wei placed great attention on.

“This move can actually ignite Dang Hun Mountain and create a terrifying soul explosion. Any living being’s soul can be ignited and create a soul explosion. The soul explosion of soul beasts usually have incredible might, but the soul explosion of Dang Hun Mountain would surpass limits, using this mountain’s soul path dao marks to ignite the mountain is truly ingenious. Hmm! Wait...”

Fairy Zi Wei’s pupils shrunk, she noticed something amiss!

Boom!!!

At the next moment, a shocking explosion occurred, the entirety of Dang Hun Mountain was blown to smithereens.

Be it Fairy Zi Wei or Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, they were both within range of this terrifying explosion!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1550: Discussing Compensation

Southern Border.

Myriad dragon!

Dragon roars reverberated throughout the air, the whole immortal battlefield was destroyed, silver scales shone as Fang Yuan shot out like lightning.

The moment he escaped, he received large numbers of messages requesting aid.

“What? Lang Ya blessed land was attacked by Heavenly Court? It was led by Feng Jiu Ge?” Fang Yuan was stunned.

He was trapped by Lu Wei Yin temporarily, but at the same time, Lang Ya blessed land was suddenly attacked by Heavenly Court; if one said that there was no connection between the two, even ghosts would not believe it!

“Oh? They have already been defeated? Many Central Continent Gu Immortals died, while only Feng Jiu Ge returned alive?” Fang Yuan looked at the message sent by Lang Ya land spirit, then looked at Sixth Hair’s message.

Sixth Hair was a spy placed in Lang Ya Sect by Shadow Sect. He was on Fang Yuan’s side and his message was the most trustworthy.

From Sixth Hair’s message, Fang Yuan quickly understood the whole matter.

“So Feng Jiu Ge saw the situation not going in his favor and retreated on his own initiative...”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined sharply, but this was not the place for him to ponder about this. Rank eight Gu Immortals of Southern Border’s righteous path forces might even be rushing towards here now.

Fang Yuan immediately retreated and on the way, he directly activated his prearranged methods and flagrantly detonated Dang Hun Mountain!

“Hehe, Heavenly Court attacked Lang Ya blessed land, they clearly planned a long time for this. Methods like pulling mountain are not common, but Feng Jiu Ge could directly take away Dang Hun Mountain, this is a scheme to cripple my foundation. But unfortunately... how could my Dang Hun Mountain be seized so easily?”

Fang Yuan put Dang Hun Mountain in Lang Ya blessed land. On one hand, it was to show his sincerity in their collaboration and make Lang Ya Sect actively manage guts Gu business, saving him time and effort, on the other hand, it was also because Fang Yuan had left behind preventive measures and was not afraid of Lang Ya Sect or any other Gu Immortals taking Dang Hun Mountain.

While flying rapidly, Fang Yuan put his attention into his immortal aperture.

Landscape as Before!

He activated the rank six Immortal Gu on a large piece of mountain rock.

This mountain rock was a piece of Dang Hun Mountain, it was stored by Fang Yuan long ago.

Right now, Dang Hun Mountain’s main body had already self-detonated, this mountain rock was the only remaining piece of Dang Hun Mountain in the world.

As Fang Yuan used Landscape as Before, this mountain rock started to slowly expand, beginning to grow towards the complete Dang Hun Mountain.

“Secluded domains of heaven and earth are like Immortal Gu, unique in their existence. Dang Hun Mountain was modified by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable in the past, now, under the illumination of Landscape as Before, this Dang Hun Mountain rock can definitely restore the complete Dang Hun Mountain.”

Fang Yuan was extremely confident.

Dang Hun Mountain might have been seized, but he had not lost it, in time, Dang Hun Mountain will be back in his hands.

But this process was going to take a long time.

Landscape as Before was only rank six after all, while Dang Hun Mountain was a secluded domain of heaven and earth that was akin to a rank nine Immortal Gu. And the size of this mountain rock that Fang Yuan had left behind was countless times smaller than the whole of Dang Hun Mountain.

Heavenly Court had plotted for a long time with Feng Jiu Ge personally leading the attack, Fang Yuan’s overall losses were significant.

First of all, he was not able to take back the upper extreme heavenly eagle, secondly, Dang Hun Mountain was destroyed for the moment and restoring it would take time and a huge amount of immortal essence, finally, Gu Yue Fang Zheng was captured, which means Fang Yuan’s blood deity cultivation plan was halted.

Fortunately, wisdom Gu was neither captured nor destroyed.

The situation was actually dangerous at that time.

If Feng Jiu Ge was set on destroying wisdom Gu, it had little hope of surviving on its own.

But Feng Jiu Ge did not strike a fatal move the entire time.

This made Fang Yuan feel a sense of joy, but at the same time, it also meant Heavenly Court's following attacks would be incessant. Feng Jiu Ge retreated on his own accord, which also signified Heavenly Court was definitely going to make another attack!

But when were they going to attack? During the next attack, who would Heavenly Court send? What kind of method would they use?

These were all issues to think about.

Fang Yuan landed in an ordinary valley.

He was already far away from the battlefield, and had been very careful on his way. He should be safe for now.

Fang Yuan concealed his aura and hid himself, he then set up warning Gu formations before sitting cross-legged and shutting his eyes as he started making deductions.

After a while, he opened his eyes, he was already aware of the whole matter as if he had personally experienced the battle between Lang Ya Sect and Feng Jiu Ge.

"It is certain that Fixed Immortal Travel is with Heavenly Court, it seems to have been raised to rank seven. It even has a set of immortal killer moves..."

Any changes in Lang Ya blessed land could not escape Lang Ya land spirit's observation. The scene of Feng Jiu Ge's group suddenly appearing was engraved in Lang Ya land spirit's mind, this along with similar clues were all sent to Fang Yuan.

With sufficient clues along with his wisdom path attainment, Fang Yuan immediately understood how Feng Jiu Ge suddenly attacked Lang Ya blessed land.

"To prevent Fixed Immortal Travel, I had already modified Dang Hun Mountain's appearance but Feng Jiu Ge's group appeared above the three continents. This information leak is probably related to the missing hairy man Gu Immortal."

"It would take some effort in changing the terrain of the three continents. Even if this is done, it might not obstruct Heavenly Court's invasions."

"If I am not wrong, although the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals did not succeed in setting up an Immortal Gu formation, just seeing how Feng Jiu Ge escaped so easily, they definitely have some measures left behind in Lang Ya blessed land."

All kinds of thoughts flashed rapidly in Fang Yuan's mind.

Heavenly Court was inactive most of the time, but when they made a move, it was earth shattering! If not for Fang Yuan arranging multiple precautionary methods against this, Lang Ya blessed land, which had lost the complete Refinement Cauldron, might have already been subdued by Feng Jiu Ge.

Fang Yuan had already made many preparations but Heavenly Court's foundation was too abundant. Like this time, by relying on the method left by space path great expert Liang Liang, Feng Jiu Ge's group was able to sneak in abruptly.

An opponent like Heavenly Court was the most difficult to fight against. Because nobody knew how many more trump cards they had!

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh, contacting Lang Ya land spirit.

He informed Lang Ya land spirit of his situation, also mentioning his guess that Lu Wei Yin was very likely Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s inheritor.

Lang Ya land spirit might still be discontented that Fang Yuan had not shown up to protect Lang Ya blessed land, but what Fang Yuan said were all truths, so Lang Ya land spirit could not easily pursue this matter.

“Heavenly Court did not succeed this time, but they have discovered wisdom Gu, they will definitely return. Fang Yuan, you are a supreme elder of Lang Ya Sect, the sect needs your strength, you should return to guard the sect.” Lang Ya land spirit said.

Fang Yuan smiled.

That was impossible!

Lang Ya blessed land had indeed helped Fang Yuan a lot, it could also be considered as his base, but it was impossible to bind him because of this.

The current Heavenly Court was powerful, and as long as they restored fate Immortal Gu, they would become invincible.

If Fang Yuan stayed to guard Lang Ya blessed land, Heavenly Court’s side would definitely have a good laugh. This was what they wanted.

Fang Yuan would not be able to advance further if he stayed in Lang Ya blessed land. He had to go out and roam to search for cultivation resources to grow rapidly.

Once he grew to a certain extent, Fang Yuan could then go take the Red Lotus true inheritances, no matter how much help the true inheritances provided, he had to destroy Heavenly Court’s plan of restoring fate Gu within ten years.

Only by doing this would he not die, this was also his only way out.

Otherwise, if he waited for fate Gu to be restored completely, almost all Gu Immortals in the world would be subjected to fate’s arrangements. How many otherworldly demons like Fang Yuan were there? Heavenly Court would once again reach the summit, at that time, Fang Yuan would have no hope of being its opponent.

“Even if Lang Ya blessed land is breached, even if wisdom Gu is destroyed, they won’t interrupt my cultivation plan.”

A ruthless light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Naturally, he would not say these words to Lang Ya land spirit.

Right now, his body was bound by alliance agreements. But he had been keeping the self cleansing immortal formation activated, it was not just for show.

“We still need to talk about compensation, right?” Fang Yuan continued with some useless banter before saying this to Lang Ya land spirit.

“Ah!” Lang Ya land spirit’s expression immediately sank, he had made an agreement with Fang Yuan back then. If Dang Hun Mountain or wisdom Gu were lost or destroyed, he would have to compensate ten times the value.

Wisdom Gu was not destroyed, Lang Ya land spirit let out a sigh of relief at this, but Dang Hun Mountain...

At least for now, it was really lost!

“You also know that if Heavenly Court obtains Dang Hun Mountain, they will have an endless supply of guts Gu, this is a huge boost to them.” Fang Yuan added pressure as he saw Lang Ya land spirit keeping silent.

“You... no need to say this. I will compensate you, don’t worry.” Lang Ya land spirit replied.

“I believe you, how could first supreme elder possibly go back on his words?” Fang Yuan chuckled.

“What kind of compensation do you want?” Lang Ya land spirit asked.

Fang Yuan’s gaze moved, there was a lot he wanted!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1551: Four Thousand Years Lifespan Gu!

Dang Hun Mountain was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, there was only one in the five regions.

Guts Gu produced by Dang Hun Mountain was a monopoly, as long as souls were supplied, it was an inexhaustible gold mine.

As such, its value was enormous, Lang Ya land spirit had to compensate Fang Yuan by ten times this value.

If this was an ordinary blessed land or even a grotto-heaven, it probably would not be able to pay such compensation even if the entire blessed land was added in. But Lang Ya blessed land had enough ability to pay this!

Back when Fang Yuan had set this compensation agreement with Lang Ya land spirit, how could he not have considered this point?

Lang Ya blessed land was the number one blessed land in five regions, especially after Imperial Court blessed land was destroyed. It had an extremely abundant foundation, Fang Yuan had no doubt that it was fully capable of bearing the compensation.

Putting everything aside, Fang Yuan first mentioned wisdom Gu to Lang Ya land spirit: “I need to move wisdom Gu to my immortal aperture. So I want the method to move wisdom Gu as my first compensation.”

This method was the core of Lang Ya Sect’s true inheritance, Fang Yuan had all along tried to obtain it, but even when both sides exchanged true inheritances, he was not able to get it.

Lang Ya land spirit firmly kept this method to himself, he was not an idiot, if he exchanged this method with Fang Yuan, would it not mean Fang Yuan could take away wisdom Gu himself?

Although wisdom Gu was untamed and did not belong to Lang Ya Sect, Lang Ya blessed land’s hairy man Gu Immortals had been able to take it out from Hu Immortal blessed land.

Lang Ya land spirit’s expression immediately changed.

Fang Yuan directly mentioned this request, it was like a sharp sword that pierced Lang Ya land spirit’s heart. Lang Ya land spirit had no choice but to agree.

What Lang Ya land spirit had been plotting all along was to attempt to control wisdom Gu by feeding it continuously with lifespan Gu. So he had been willing to part with lifespan Gu and help Fang Yuan raise wisdom Gu.

Unfortunately, even until now, Lang Ya land spirit was not able to get his wish. His plan showed no results.

Fang Yuan mentioning this request was the same as claiming back wisdom Gu. As such, all the investments Lang Ya land spirit made previously were in vain, and it instead seemed like he had slaved away for Fang Yuan.

He was of course not willing to!

But he was not able to explicitly retort.

After all, wisdom Gu might be a wild Immortal Gu, but it was taken out of Fang Yuan’s blessed land by hairy man Gu Immortals.

Lang Ya land spirit spoke hesitantly: “Is that... okay? Actually, if we can control wisdom Gu, we can use it as the core to construct Immortal Gu House Secluded Residence, not only can we defend ourselves, but also prevent deductions from almost everyone in the world!”

Fang Yuan smiled: “First supreme elder, your plan is good, but it is extremely difficult to materialize, do you have confidence in implementing it as quickly as possible?”

Lang Ya land spirit was reduced to silence.

Fang Yuan continued: “The current situation is dangerous, it is not favorable for you to protect wisdom Gu. Feng Jiu Ge has discovered wisdom Gu which means Heavenly Court is also aware of it, they absolutely won’t be willing to let it go and will attack Lang Ya blessed land again. At that time, what do we do if they seize wisdom Gu?”

Lang Ya land spirit heaved a deep sigh.

What Fang Yuan said was the truth, Secluded Residence was only a fantasy right now, while Heavenly Court’s attack was right in front of them.

In fact, Lang Ya land spirit had already hidden wisdom Gu to the best of his abilities, but what could he do when Feng Jiu Ge’s investigative method was so innovative and powerful.

Wisdom Gu had once been Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s Gu, now that it was discovered, it was clear Heavenly Court would place great importance on this. Their next attack was definitely going to be much more fierce and dangerous.

Fang Yuan was right, but Lang Ya land spirit was not resigned to give up his plans.

At this time, Fang Yuan added: “First supreme elder, Secluded Residence is a good idea, but it has its disadvantages. If we truly make Lang Ya blessed land into a place of absolute refuge and peace, would the hairy man Gu Immortals still have motivation to actively cultivate? We want to create the rule of hairy men, but if we make these hairy man Gu Immortals live under the protection of Secluded Residence, wouldn’t they start returning to their previous lifestyle over time?”

“Hmm?” Lang Ya land spirit was stumped, Fang Yuan’s words made sense.

Hairy man Gu Immortals lacked a sense of danger.

The previous Lang Ya land spirit was too protective of the hairy man Gu Immortals, causing these Gu Immortals to have almost no battle strength. When Shadow Sect had invaded, they were almost subdued.

They could not go back to the previous lifestyle!

Lang Ya land spirit took a deep breath, nodding heavily: “Fang Yuan, I will agree to your request. I will give you the complete method. Out of the ten Dang Hun Mountain compensation, this method is worth half a Dang Hun Mountain.”

“Okay.” Fang Yuan did not doubt Lang Ya land spirit’s words.

Lang Ya land spirit would not lie, it was extremely beneficial for Fang Yuan to transact with him.

“Next, I need some lifespan Gu.” Fang Yuan mentioned his second request.

If he took wisdom Gu into his sovereign immortal aperture, he would have to shoulder its feeding issue. Fang Yuan had lifespan Gu on him, but it was not safe to rely on these stocks.

“Okay.” Lang Ya land spirit agreed happily to this request.

He was a land spirit, he could live as long as Lang Ya blessed land existed, so he had no use for lifespan Gu.

Naturally, the hairy man Gu Immortals in Lang Ya Sect would need lifespan Gu to prolong their lives.

However, hairy men were variant humans, they had much longer lifespan than humans. Secondly, feeding wisdom Gu was clearly much more important than extending the hairy man Gu Immortals’ lives.

Thereupon, Fang Yuan used one and a half Dang Hun Mountain compensation to exchange for a large amount of lifespan Gu.

Long Hair Ancestor was a person from three hundred thousand years ago, Lang Ya blessed land had an extremely long history of three hundred thousand years, it had plundered an enormous amount of lifespan Gu.

Although Fang Yuan had taken away most of the stock of lifespan Gu, Lang Ya blessed land still had a lot left!

Fang Yuan calculated that if he used all the lifespan Gu he had on himself, he could prolong his life by over four thousand years!

Even Red Lotus Demon Venerable had only lived for over three thousand years.

This meant, if Fang Yuan used these lifespan Gu, he could live longer than Red Lotus Demon Venerable! Naturally, the precondition was he was not killed by someone in this period of time.

These lifespan Gu could clearly solve wisdom Gu’s feeding issue for a long period of time.

Among the venerables, Red Lotus Demon Venerable had the shortest lifespan. Limitless Demon Venerable and Reckless Savage Demon Venerable lived for over six thousand years. Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable lived for over seven thousand years, and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable for over eight thousand years. The longest lived three had all joined Heavenly Court. Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable lived for over twelve thousand years, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable for over nineteen thousand years, and Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s age surpassed twenty-five thousand years, he was the first Immortal Venerable in human history, and also was the longest lived venerable.

“All Immortal and Demon Venerables lived for a long time, but in history, many rank eight and rank seven Gu Immortals have also lived a long life, some even living for thousands of years. There is not a lack of people who have lived longer than some Immortal or Demon Venerables.”

“But with the five regions chaotic war incoming, the great era is about to open its curtains, lifespan Gu will become increasingly scarce. Especially, when Great Dream Immortal Venerable reaches rank nine, lifespan Gu will be extremely rare, heaven and earth will no longer produce it, until there is no stock of lifespan Gu left.”

Fang Yuan inwardly pondered. These lifespan Gu had extremely huge value, and this value would continue to increase with the passing of time.

According to the historical records, many great experts and old monsters would pay any price to extend their life by even a few days.

Lifespan Gu was only a mortal Gu, but there were many examples in history where lifespan Gu was exchanged with Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan’s current compensation was calculated by Lang Ya land spirit according to the current value of lifespan Gu. This no doubt allowed Fang Yuan to get a much cheaper deal.

Of course, if he developed Dang Hun Mountain well, his prospects would also be extremely remarkable.

After settling the lifespan Gu compensation, Fang Yuan used one Dang Hun Mountain compensation to exchange for a huge amount of Lang Ya Sect’s sect contribution points as well as beast enslavement Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan had borrowed beast enslavement Immortal Gu a few times before, it was extremely useful.

As for Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, it was a no-brainer, Fang Yuan knew Lang Ya land spirit would absolutely not part with this Immortal Gu.

As such, out of the ten Dang Hun Mountain compensation, seven remained.

Now, Fang Yuan was going for a big one!

“I want to use seven Dang Hun Mountain compensation to exchange for something in the sect.” Fang Yuan said to Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit was immediately tensed as he quickly asked: “Ah? What do you want to exchange with?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1552: Refinement Path True Meaning

“Exchange with what?” Fang Yuan smiled and continued: “Naturally, I want refinement path true meaning.”

“Ah! You actually know there is refinement path true meaning in the sect?!” Lang Ya land spirit almost jumped from shock, this was the greatest secret of Lang Ya Sect and also the most valuable treasure in the sect’s storage!

What was true meaning?

True meaning was considered a type of will, wisdom path has the three elements of thoughts, wills and emotions.

True meaning was the most valuable and enchanting thing sought after by everyone whether they were Gu Masters or Gu Venerables!

Northern Plains’ icy plain was created by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, it contained Reckless Savage true meaning. Thus, when a Gu Master underwent immortal ascension in the northern icy plain, they would evoke Reckless Savage true meaning. When a Gu Immortal obtained this true meaning, they could gain a huge boost in their transformation path or strength path attainment levels.

Dream realms also contained true meaning, Fang Yuan had explored several dream realms and was able to increase his attainment in all kinds of paths because he had absorbed the true meaning contained within them.

So true meaning usually signified a rise in attainment level.

Why was the five regions chaotic war an unprecedentedly magnificent era? The fundamental reason was the dream realms appearing everywhere in the world, many who explored these dream realms successfully obtained the true meaning contained inside, raising their attainment levels.

Accumulating attainment level normally took a long period of time. But true meaning greatly shrunk this process, this caused geniuses and elites to endlessly appear from every corner of the world, fighting and killing each other, giving birth to an unprecedented chaotic era!

The importance of true meaning went without saying, and the true meaning stored in the depths of Lang Ya Sect had an even greater origin.

This true meaning originated from Long Hair Ancestor.

Who was Long Hair Ancestor?

A refinement path rank eight great expert, known as the number one refinement path immortal of all times!

The long history of humanity spanned innumerable years, and throughout this time, there existed three most outstanding peak refinement path experts, Old Eccentric Tian Nan, Old Immortal Kong Jue, and Long Hair Ancestor.

Even Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had to concede to Long Hair Ancestor in terms of refinement path ability. The two venerables had requested Long Hair Ancestor to refine Gu for them.

In the statistics made by later generations, Long Hair Ancestor had refined at least thirty-eight Immortal Gu in his life, this was only the conclusive summary, it did not account for his many legends and rumors. If the rumors were noted, then this number would surpass one hundred!

Even more terrifying was that most of these Immortal Gu were not rank six, instead they were of high levels like rank seven and rank eight!

The refinement path true meaning in Lang Ya Sect was the true meaning of Long Hair Ancestor. It was extremely comprehensive, if Fang Yuan obtained it and absorbed it completely, his refinement path attainment level could immediately soar to quasi-supreme grandmaster!

This was akin to reaching heaven in one step, an ant instantly becoming an unprecedented giant beast. Or a starving beggar suddenly becoming the richest in the whole country.

It was exactly this concept!

The reason why it was ‘quasi’ was because supreme grandmaster required surpassing the foundation of the whole world, creating something out of nothing, achieving a new innovation.

Fang Yuan could not do this now.

If he obtained the refinement path true meaning, he was only completely inheriting Long Hair Ancestor’s attainment level, he was not going further from this foundation and surpassing the whole world’s refinement path foundation.

Fang Yuan did not have any extravagant hope towards supreme grandmaster, as far as he was concerned, this title was just a kind of supreme glory. Quasi-supreme was already enough for him to look down proudly at all refinement path Gu Immortals in the whole five regions. As long as he obtained this true meaning, he would transform from a small dune to the highest peak in one go!

Gu are the essence of heaven and earth, man is the spirit of all living beings. There were no strongest Gu worm in the world, only strongest Gu Immortal.

And how could a Gu Immortal be the strongest?

Attainment level was one of the most important judging criteria.

Having quasi-supreme refinement path attainment was akin to reaching a peak height and having the most abundant foundation, the rest would come along later.

Using seven Dang Hun Mountain compensation to exchange for a will?

Would Fang Yuan not suffer a loss?

Of course not.

Even if he had several Dang Hun Mountains, they only represented a huge amount of cultivation resources. And, what resource was the most precious?

Most would definitely answer attainment level!

“You want the refinement path true meaning left behind by my main body? That is impossible!” Lang Ya land spirit refused.

Fang Yuan was already mentally prepared for Lang Ya land spirit’s attitude, he smiled: “First supreme elder, our Lang Ya Sect has held on to this will for three hundred thousand years. If it is only preserved indefinitely, how different is it from a rock? Or maybe, do you want to leave this refinement path true meaning to the other hairy man Gu Immortals?”

Lang Ya land spirit shook his head: “Ever since the establishment of Lang Ya blessed land, the previous land spirit had been considering this issue, but these hairy man Gu Immortals still don’t have enough qualifications.”

“Then, give it to me.” Fang Yuan immediately said.

“You? You are even more unqualified!” Lang Ya land spirit said, firmly.

Fang Yuan gave a soundless laughter.

The current Lang Ya land spirit had the doctrine of hairy man supremacy, all along firmly believing hairy men were superior to humans, and hairy men should rule the world while humans should depend on them for survival.

Lang Ya land spirit did not even look upon those hairy man Gu Immortals, he would even more so not consider Fang Yuan, who was a human.

“Long Hair true meaning is the supreme treasure of my hairy men, even at worst, even if it goes to hairy man Gu Masters, it won’t be for you, a human, to enjoy.” Lang Ya land spirit’s inner thoughts were roughly like this.

Fang Yuan took a deep breath, his next persuasion was going to be crucial.

He had already thought properly, at this moment, he said in a serious tone: “First supreme elder, you are also aware of the current situation, it is extremely precarious! Heavenly Court’s first attempt failed, but there will be a second attack, a third attack... they absolutely won’t give up until they completely succeed or completely fail.”

“I understand this.” Lang Ya land spirit’s tone was solemn.

“If I have this refinement path true meaning, my strength will soar rapidly and I will have even more assurance in helping Lang Ya Sect resist Heavenly Court. Lang Ya Sect has helped me so much, this is my home, I won’t stand by and watch Heavenly Court destroy it!”

“If I become a refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster, I can refine Immortal Gu and improve the current super Gu formation of Lang Ya blessed land. You also know I have inherited Shadow Sect’s legacy, it contains a lot of information concerning Heavenly Court and Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects. Previously, we only exchanged true inheritances, now I am going to share this information with you. I have already deduced that Feng Jiu Ge’s group used a killer move with Fixed Immortal Travel as the core to invade Lang Ya blessed land. After we have resolved the compensation matter, I will use wisdom Gu to think of methods to guard against Fixed Immortal Travel. Besides these, don’t forget I have some subordinates, you also know that they are all elites in fighting.”

Lang Ya land spirit was silent.

Fang Yuan’s words were extremely reasonable, it did not matter during the peaceful times, but in this situation, Heavenly Court was gazing at them covetously. They did not even know when the next attack was going to arrive.

Lang Ya land spirit was not ignorant, he knew a lot about Heavenly Court and so felt even greater pressure.

Lang Ya Sect might have Heavenly Giant Solor which was comparable to a rank eight Gu Immortal, but in the earlier battle with Feng Jiu Ge, its various flaws had been exposed.

Lang Ya Sect urgently required even more assistance.

The snowmen, inkmen, and rockmen could barely mobilize a rank eight battle strength.

The strongest battle strength was still Fang Yuan.

Lang Ya land spirit already knew that Fang Yuan, who possessed reverse flow protection seal, was the strongest battle strength among them. Lang Ya land spirit and Lang Ya blessed land would need a source of strength like Fang Yuan in the future.

“Fang Yuan, if you need to refine Gu, I will personally take the task, don’t forget there are still other supreme elders, everyone will help you.” Lang Ya land spirit remained silent for a while, before saying.

Fang Yuan smiled: “Everyone’s strength cannot be underestimated, I already have a deep impression of this when I requested everyone to refine Gu. But can our refinement path ability be on par with a quasi-supreme grandmaster?”

Of course it could not!

“Moreover, there is a huge difference in asking others to refine Gu and personally refining Gu, isn’t that so?”

Lang Ya land spirit was silent once again.

These were all genuine reasons, Lang Ya land spirit wanted to refute but could not.

But reason alone could not persuade Lang Ya land spirit.

Fang Yuan knew he needed to use feelings as well.

“First supreme elder, our interactions have always been heart to heart. Are you still not aware of my current situation? Do you still not understand my current feelings? After I escaped the trap and heard Lang Ya blessed land was attacked, I was really anxious, it was like a fire burned in my heart, I really hate myself for not being able to immediately return.”

“Lang Ya Sect is my home, in such a huge world, only here can I feel at home. Although I am a human, I want to be a hairy man. But it is a pity that fate toys with people, I was born as a human, and not a noble hairy man.”

“But I am willing to permanently transform into a hairy man in the future! I am willing to eternally live in Lang Ya blessed land, marry Xue Er, unite the other variant human races, and assist you in your wish of making hairy man dominate the world!”

Fang Yuan spoke with such emotions that even he himself was filled with goosebumps.

Lang Ya land spirit heaved a long sigh: “Oh Fang Yuan, I understand your feelings, I already knew it. But... this is a huge matter, I need to think and consider it properly. Right now... I cannot make this decision.”

A sharp light flashed past Fang Yuan’s eyes, he could not give Lang Ya land spirit time to think. The more he thought, the smaller Fang Yuan’s hope would become.

As such, Fang Yuan said: “First supreme elder, you are right in wanting to consider it properly. No matter how long you take, I will wait for your reply.”

“In this period, I will keep an eye on Heavenly Court and try my best to probe information. I will immediately report to you when they make any suspicious movement.”

These words immediately made Lang Ya land spirit come to a decision.

He bitterly sighed: “The situation is perilous, if I still persist in preserving the true meaning, even Lang Ya blessed land might not be safe. Fang Yuan, you are one of us, I trust you. Honestly, if you were a hairy man, I might have already entrusted the whole Lang Ya blessed land to you. This refinement path true meaning... I will give it to you!”

“I will not let down first supreme elder’s expectations!!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1553: Thunder Ghost True Monarch

Central Continent, Heavenly Court!

“Huff... huff... huff...” Fairy Zi Wei was panting roughly, her pupils shrunk to pin-size.

Her expression was still filled with fear, it had yet to dissipate.

All around her was emptiness. The grand rank eight Immortal Gu House Soul Suppression Hall was already completely gone!

Dang Hun Mountain was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, and with its uncountable number of dao marks, it could rival rank nine Immortal Gu.

The power of its self-detonation was unimaginably terrifying. Soul Suppression Hall did not even have time to respond and with the explosion occurring from inside, it became a victim of Dang Hun Mountain’s explosion.

Fairy Zi Wei, however, was completely unharmed!

Dazzling starlight surrounded her, it was like she was covered in a thin veil made with stardust.

This was Immortal Gu House Star Constellation Chessboard — the Immortal Gu House personally created by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

“If Star Constellation Chessboard did not take the initiative to protect me, even if I didn’t die, I would have been heavily injured!” Fairy Zi Wei barely maintained her calm as her eyes narrowed to slits.

Her expression was extremely heavy: “Dang Hun Mountain was actually tampered with, I did not find anything even though I inspected it several times earlier. This was probably Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s doing!”

“To deal with Shadow Sect, I have roughly gone through all the soul path inheritances in Heavenly Court. But I was still played by Fang Yuan.”

“Heavenly Court’s soul path foundation still cannot compare to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.”

“Furthermore, Star Constellation Chessboard also suffered a lot of damage!”

Fairy Zi Wei was not injured, but she felt like spewing blood when she thought of the danger and the losses she suffered!

Her gaze moved towards the front.

Ahead of her was a lump of dense black shadow, it was extremely deep like a dark pool. It stayed there as black light continuously shone around it.

“Spectral Soul!” Fairy Zi Wei said hatefully while gritting her teeth.

Dang Hun Mountain’s soul explosion actually did not injure Spectral Soul, instead he benefited from it, hiding and nourishing himself within the countless soul path dao marks.

Dang Hun Mountain’s soul explosion method was originally created by him. After the soul explosion, Soul Suppression Hall was destroyed, while Spectral Soul obtained temporary freedom.

He did not try to make a blind escape, instead using this huge opportunity to hide himself within the countless soul path dao marks. Like this, who knew how long it would take before Heavenly Court could soul search him again.

Soul Suppression Hall had the ability to soul search, but now it was gone, completely destroyed.

And Spectral Soul was using this temporary territorial advantage to recover.

“Hmph, keep dragging it out until your end.” Fairy Zi Wei sneered.

As long as he was in Heavenly Court, Spectral Soul was like a fish in a jar, unable to escape.

Spectral Soul’s outcome would not change.

But it was rather troublesome for Heavenly Court to get rid of these soul path dao marks, they would need to spend a long period of time at least.

The abyss-deep dark whirlpool did not emit any sound, Spectral Soul still maintained silence.

Fairy Zi Wei’s fury rose even more.

Right at this time, a thunder-like rumbling sound was heard, then flashes of lightning illuminated Heavenly Court.

A thunderstorm brewed, lightning flashed and thunder rumbled!

“There is an abnormal reaction from the immortal graveyard. Back then, when Duke

Long woke up, the whole of Heavenly Court shook. I wonder which senior woke up this time?”

Fairy Zi Wei raised her head and looked at this scene, feeling stunned at first before turning joyous.

Rumble!

A huge burst of thunder echoed, tens of lightning bolts flashed in the sky before converging into a lump.

The dark blue lightning suddenly exploded, and a human figure jumped out of the lightning sphere.

This figure was extremely fast, appearing in front of Fairy Zi Wei almost in an instant.

“So I did not sense wrongly... Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, you were truly caught. Hahaha!” This Gu Immortal, who had just woken up, began laughing loudly.

Fairy Zi Wei carefully observed the person, she had a young girl’s appearance, she was clad in a pitch-black suit of armor, the armor was ferocious and flamboyant, having sharp curved spikes and lightning flashing above it. The chest portion of the armor had a dark-blue opened mouth like that of a giant ghost. And her helmet looked like a monster’s head, forming a stark contrast with the girl’s delicate and cute appearance.

The immortal graveyard was unfathomable, even Fairy Zi Wei did not know how many great experts were hibernating in there. As for this person, she knew her origin.

Immediately, Fairy Zi Wei bowed in greeting: “Junior Zi Wei pays respect to Senior Thunder Ghost True Monarch!”

“Eh? What era is this? There is still someone who knows my, Jing Lan’s, honorific title?” The black armored girl gave a slight exclamation of surprise, her gaze moving from the dark whirlpool to Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei’s spirits rose, this Jing Lan was a great expert selected from Black Heaven Temple. She mainly cultivated two major paths, lightning path and soul path, her two paths did not conflict with each other.

This non-conflicting method was her own creation, and she could only do this with lightning path and soul path.

She was an extremely lively Gu Immortal born in Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s time, she was extremely proficient in fighting and had been one of Heavenly Court’s most valuable experts in resisting Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

She had once given huge trouble to Spectral Soul, but after Spectral Soul became a venerable, he slaughtered countless beings and was unstoppable. She had to gloomily give up and hibernate in the immortal graveyard.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had the most murderous nature among the venerables, but Jing Lan was actually able to stay alive, she definitely had powerful methods!

“Senior is experienced in dealing with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, I, Zi Wei, ask for guidance in dealing with this situation.” After conversing a while, Fairy Zi Wei bowed again and asked.

Jing Lan narrowed her eyes, snorting: “If I had all my Immortal Gu, I could break this tortoise shell in thirty-three days!”

When Gu Immortals went to hibernation, almost all would hand over all their Immortal Gu, aside from some exceptions. After all, these Immortal Gu needed to be taken care of and fed.

Fairy Zi Wei closed her eyes and looked at the information path Gu worms in her phantom aperture, after which she looked embarrassed.

“What’s wrong?” Jing Lan asked.

“Some Immortal Gu which senior left behind were destroyed because of various reasons.” Fairy Zi Wei answered.

“They were of use to Heavenly Court, so be it if they are destroyed, they served their purpose.” Jing Lan smiled, not minding at all as she asked, “How many are left?”

Fairy Zi Wei gave a detailed account.

Jing Lan slightly frowned: “Three core Immortal Gu are gone, many methods can’t be used then. If I have to deal with Spectral Soul now, I will need at least three months.”

Fairy Zi Wei was slightly disappointed.

With her methods and the help of Star Constellation Chessboard, she would only need over two months to resolve this issue and recapture Spectral Soul.

“How about this, Spectral Soul is captured but his inheritor has been extremely active. Dang Hun Mountain’s explosion was also his inheritor’s work.” Fairy Zi Wei informed.

“Hmph! Demonic scoundrels, they should all be killed! So you want me to get rid of Spectral Soul’s inheritor? Tell me, where is this inheritor? I will flay his skin, pull out his tendons, and bring his head in front of Spectral Soul to let him enjoy the spectacle. Hahaha!”

Jing Lan laughed as her battle intent soared.

“With senior making a move, that Fang Yuan will have no hope left! As for his location...” Fairy Zi Wei smiled confidently: “As long as senior can wait a while, junior will deduce it for you!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1554: Location Exposed

Connecting heaven Gu.

Lang Ya land spirit connected to treasure yellow heaven and quickly completed the Immortal Gu transaction with Fang Yuan.

The exchange was extremely fast, in several blinks of an eye, they had both disconnected from treasure yellow heaven.

“This is perceivable dao Immortal Gu?” Lang Ya land spirit sized up the Immortal Gu in his hands.

This Immortal Gu had a round head and a black body, it had many segments in its body. When Lang Ya land spirit activated it, it started to shine in starlight.

After a while, Lang Ya land spirit’s expression turned unsightly.

“They had made secret arrangements indeed!”

Using perceivable dao Immortal Gu, Lang Ya land spirit discovered many new dao marks in the blessed land. These dao marks interweaved together to form a mystical effect.

This was a hidden arrangement done by Feng Jiu Ge’s group when they invaded Lang Ya blessed land.

Fang Yuan had once been struck by Fairy Zi Wei’s inextinguishable star target, he had learned from this setback. Adding on that Feng Jiu Ge had retreated so straightforwardly, with just a little deduction, Fang Yuan knew they had definitely left behind some secret measures to make the next invasion more convenient.

“Fang Yuan guessed right, we need to clean these dao marks completely! When he returns, we will immediately relocate Lang Ya blessed land.”

Lang Ya land spirit mumbled.

Although Feng Jiu Ge’s group arrived at Lang Ya blessed land with Fixed Immortal Travel’s help, Lang Ya blessed land was now no longer safe in its current location.

This decision was safe and also wise.

Prince Feng Xian had yet to leave, if Lang Ya land spirit rashly moved the blessed land, there would definitely be a huge commotion and it would expose its true location.

Wind blew at his face, Fang Yuan was like a sharp arrow that pierced through the sky, throwing the endless clouds behind him.

He had wanted to re-capture the upper extreme heavenly eagle, but his plan failed after running into Lu Wei Yin. But it was not that he had no gains, he had to thank Heavenly Court for this, if not for this external pressure, Lang Ya land spirit absolutely would not have agreed to give him the refinement path true meaning.

Even so, Fang Yuan had to use up all his breath on talking before he was barely able to persuade Lang Ya land spirit.

After the communication was completed, Fang Yuan immediately set off towards Lang Ya blessed land, preparing to take back wisdom Gu and the refinement path true meaning.

It was best for wisdom Gu to not be transferred through treasure yellow heaven, this famous rank nine Gu would incite an extremely huge response.

Although Heavenly Court knew about wisdom Gu currently, them knowing of it and the whole world knowing of it were two completely different concepts.

As for the refinement path true meaning, although Lang Ya land spirit agreed to give it Fang Yuan, he insisted on handing it to Fang Yuan in Lang Ya blessed land and not through treasure yellow heaven.

Lang Ya land spirit also knew the danger of rashly moving Lang Ya blessed land, and he was facing Heavenly Court on top of that, so he was facing huge mental pressure.

Not only did he ask Fang Yuan to return, he also discussed with the rockman tribe to borrow their rank eight battle strength immemorial rock dragon to guard Lang Ya blessed land.

“After returning, I am not only taking wisdom Gu and obtaining refinement path true meaning, I will also have to use light of wisdom to decipher the immortal killer move Feng Jiu Ge used to invade Lang Ya blessed land, and also repair the super Gu formation. Furthermore... I was trapped by Lu Wei Yin, but I also gained some insights. Especially at the third illusory dream. Maybe I can use the light of wisdom to completely comprehend these insights.”

Thinking of Lu Wei Yin, Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered.

He was almost certain Lu Wei Yin was an inheritor of Paradise Earth. Fang Yuan’s current ability was not enough to deal with him.

In fact, Fang Yuan only had rank seven cultivation, and he mostly relied on reverse flow protection seal to deal with rank eight Gu Immortals. His other methods were not up to par for this task.

“What?” Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s expression changed as he sensed ghost official garment shrinking rapidly and shaking like a candlelight in the wind.

“Not good, someone is deducing my location! And such a powerful wisdom path method, this is definitely the work of a wisdom path rank eight great expert!”

Fang Yuan quickly activated immortal killer move — Yama.

At the next moment, his whole body began to transform, ghost official garment and ghostly concealment began to link together.

Ghost official garment was only a rank seven immortal killer move, but after linking with the rank nine ghostly concealment, it was able to use a slight amount of rank nine’s power.

“Hmm?” It was Fairy Zi Wei’s turn to be surprised.

She had been fully confident, but who could have thought her deduction of Fang Yuan’s location to suddenly become countless times more difficult!

“How could this be?” Fairy Zi Wei frowned.

“What’s wrong?” Thunder Ghost True Monarch Jing Lan, who was at the side, asked.

“It is a bit complicated. I have Fang Yuan’s dark limit Immortal Gu and also Gu Yue Fang Zheng, these are both crucial clues, but I actually still can’t deduce Fang Yuan’s location.” Fairy Zi Wei smiled: “A pity, if it were before, I could only admit my defeat. But he caused Dang Hun Mountain to explode, although the origin is Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he also participated in it and caused damage to Star Constellation Chessboard, I will definitely be able to deduce him.”

Saying so, Fairy Zi Wei pinched her fingers, a translucent ripple suddenly appeared beside her from which a rank eight Gu Immortal walked out.

“Lady Zi Wei, what can I do for you?” This person was Chen Yi, he was originally meant to reinforce Feng Jiu Ge’s group, but with Feng Jiu Ge returning, his task also ended and was called back to Heavenly Court by Fairy Zi Wei.

“Come, use your karma divine tree, I want to use your strength to deduce Fang Yuan’s location.” Fairy Zi Wei commanded.

Chen Yi bowed and accepted the order, immediately activating karma divine tree.

With the power of this legendary killer move, along with star constellation chessboard, Fairy Zi Wei finally made a breakthrough and deduced Fang Yuan’s specific location.

“Damn it!” The moment Fang Yuan’s location was deduced, yama suddenly detonated, exposing his true body.

The link between ghostly concealment and ghost official garment completely collapsed, ghostly concealment was safe and sound, but ghost official garment was almost destroyed.

“My location is exposed!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1555: Fang Yuan Versus Jing Lan

“Being able to forcibly break my yama killer move, and also after Lang Ya blessed land was invaded, this is most likely Heavenly Court’s doing!”

At that instant, countless thoughts moved in Fang Yuan’s mind.

“Fang Zheng was captured, he is blood related to my rank six time path clone, but my clone is inside my sovereign immortal aperture. They should not be able to use this clue.”

“My dark limit Immortal Gu is in Heavenly Court’s hands, this is an extremely significant clue, but it is not enough to destroy yama with just this.”

“So what method did Heavenly Court use? What crucial clues do they have on me?”

Fang Yuan flew rapidly while thinking.

His location was exposed, staying at the same spot was definitely a bad decision. The important thing now was to constantly be on the move, while also restoring ghost official garment and thinking of ways to resolve this issue.

Crack!

Fang Yuan flew straight for many hours, when suddenly a thunderbolt flashed in the clear sky.

The thunderbolt directly cleaved towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was already on guard, quickly evading.

The thunderbolt crashed on the ground, the lightning concentrated into a human figure.

The human figure was soon revealed, Thunder Ghost True Monarch Jing Lan in her pitch-black malevolent armor was half-crouching on the ground.

Bzz bzz bzz....

Countless small sparks were tangled around her armor.

Her crash had formed a deep pit and the bottom of the pit was already scorched black by the heat, with tufts of white smoke rising from it.

Jing Lan slowly stood up, her petite body was over ten feet tall after wearing the armor, looking tall and bulky.

Boom!

Majestic rank eight aura, firm as a mountain, flowed out of her.

She slowly raised her head to look at Fang Yuan, saying frostily: “You are Fang Yuan? Where are you thinking of running to?”

“Central Continent rank eight Gu Immortal... moreover, looking at her attitude, she is likely from Heavenly Court!” Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk slightly as he raised his alertness to maximum vigilance.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Self!

A bright light flashed past Fang Yuan’s eyes as he valiantly made the first move against this unknown enemy.

In an instant, countless Fang Yuan clones filled the sky. Jing Lan had only blinked when the cloudless clear sky was filled with countless Fang Yuan’s strength path phantoms.

The large army shouted and charged towards Jing Lan like a tsunami.

Jing Lan closed her eyes then opened it again, her black pupils turned azure and inexhaustible lightning seemed to circulate in them like a whirlpool.

She looked all around her but did not discover Fang Yuan’s true body.

“Familiar face... hmph.” Jing Lan gave a displeased grunt, she suddenly opened her mouth.

“Arrrrrrrrrr—!”

With her roar, there were rumbles of thunder.

With her as the center, the sound wave containing waves of blue lightning spread in all directions. Wherever they went, Fang Yuan’s strength path phantoms would be destroyed within a breath of time.

In just one move, the sky was clear once again. Fang Yuan’s strength path phantoms were completely destroyed, only his true body remained.

“Rank eight lightning path? Why do I still sense soul path aura from her body?” Fang Yuan slightly frowned.

He was not startled at the destruction of myriad self, myriad self was only a probe. When facing a rank eight Gu Immortal, no matter how many myriad self phantoms there were, they would not do anything.

Immortal killer move – Ignited Thought Flying Rock.

Immortal killer move – Purple Thought Perception Starlight.

Fang Yuan pushed his palms forward, countless meteorites that had long blazing tails, immediately smashed towards Jing Lan.

After finishing this move, he clenched his right hand and suddenly waved it, instantly, innumerable bright purple starlight specks flew down.

Jing Lan's lightning eyes showed disdain when she saw ignited thought flying rock, but when she saw purple thought perception starlight, her pupils slightly shrunk.

"This is an extraordinary killer move, I must evade it." Jing Lan immediately turned into lightning, shooting straight towards Fang Yuan.

Fast!

She was so fast that even Fang Yuan showed a trace of astonishment.

Moreover, this lightning was extremely flexible and did not blindly rampage around; when it came across the ignited thought flying rocks, it charged straight through them, but when it encountered specks of purple thought perception starlight, it dodged and detoured around them.

Fang Yuan's attacks were endless, but Jing Lan was unstoppable. After turning around several times in the air, she arrived before Fang Yuan.

"Come." Fang Yuan gritted his teeth as he transformed into ancient sword dragon and ferociously clawed at Jing Lan.

Jing Lan was covered in a thick and huge armor, but when compared to Fang Yuan's sword dragon, she looked tiny.

But she was extremely fierce, with a deep shout, she did not dodge and instead used the horn on her helmet to stab at the dragon's claws.

Boom!

With a loud sound, both sides were forced back.

Fang Yuan's claws turned weak and numb from the recoil force.

And as for Jing Lan, the horn on her helmet was completely broken and the whole helmet was filled with cracks. She even felt slight dizziness.

"This is reverse flow protection seal!" Jing Lan was aware of it, she had set off from Heavenly Court and had obtained detailed information about Fang Yuan from Fairy Zi Wei.

As such, she was not surprised at this scene, everything was within her expectations.

She laughed as she once again charged forward, the lightning surrounding her bombarded Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan fought her with no fear.

Both sides exchanged moves, they fought intensely without any rest, even the sky turned colorless from their combat, the world was desolate.

Fang Yuan relied on reverse flow protection seal to fight evenly with Jing Lan, but he had to constantly retreat while fighting.

“This person clearly knows about reverse flow protection seal, she is using just enough power that I have to use reverse flow protection seal to block it, but it is not so high for the reverse flow protection seal to reflect it. That’s what makes this person dangerous!”

Fang Yuan had a bad feeling in his heart.

Although Jing Lan was unable to deal with Fang Yuan, this was only temporary.

She definitely had a wisdom path great expert behind her who was closely observing this battle and continuously analyzing Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal.

Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal was being constantly analyzed and deduced, once this reached a certain degree, they would be able to deduce a killer move that targeted reverse flow protection seal.

Once this killer move broke reverse flow protection seal, it would be Fang Yuan’s end.

“This person is constantly changing her methods, probing my reverse flow protection seal from every aspect, her intention is clear!”

“She dual cultivates lightning path and soul path, her lightning path attacks are incomparably swift and powerful, while her soul path methods are condensed into that armor which has powerful defense and rapid recovery.”

“Retreat!”

Fang Yuan activated myriad dragon, disguising himself as one of them with familiar face.

The myriad dragon did not attack Jing Lan, but scattered in all directions.

“Where are you running?!” Jing Lan shouted, thunder rumbled in the sky as countless lightning bolts fell down and destroyed the dragons.

Myriad dragon’s power was much higher than myriad self, but it was nothing when compared to this rank eight killer move.

Fang Yuan’s true body was quickly discovered.

Jing Lan gave chase, continuing to send attacks.

Fang Yuan began to constantly flee, rarely attacking back.

“This is truly a tortoise shell!” Jing Lan was rather vexed, Fang Yuan clearly had rank seven cultivation, but with reverse flow protection seal, it was like he was covered with reflective thorns that prevented others from using their full power.

“Still not done?” Jing Lan transmitted her voice to Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei was far away in Heavenly Court but was closely paying attention to the battle here, and was using Heavenly Court’s wisdom path formation to decipher reverse flow protection seal with all her strength.

As for Star Constellation Chessboard, it had suffered huge damage and would not be of much use for some time.

“There are some results, please listen, senior.” Fairy Zi Wei taught a killer move to Jing Lan.

Jing Lan immediately attempted the killer move. After a few failures, she was finally able to activate it which resulted in a mysterious light.

The grey profound light struck Fang Yuan, his reverse flow protection seal immediately started to ripple and shake.

“They have already deduced a method?” Fang Yuan’s heart tensed, but fortunately, this killer move was only rank six and was unable to damage reverse flow protection seal.

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes flickered with starlight, firmly memorizing the effect of the grey profound light. This was both a success and also a further probe against reverse flow protection seal.

“Hahaha, Fang Yuan, it was not easy for you to create such a killer move. A pity that you are going to die today!” Jing Lan laughed heartily.

Her speed was terrifyingly fast, way faster than Fang Yuan. If this situation continued to go on, Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal would be deciphered sooner or later.

“Don’t you have the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel? Are you not going to use it?” Jing Lan laughed.

With a rumbling sound, she threw a lightning bolt at Fang Yuan’s back once again.

Fang Yuan did not utter a sound, he concentrated fully on escaping.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1556: Fang Yuan’s Death?

Boom!

Thunder rumbled as a ten feet thick bolt of blue lightning fell down from the sky and cleaved at Fang Yuan’s back like an axe.

Fang Yuan was transformed into an ancient sword dragon and had reverse flow protection seal.

When this lightning struck him, an unstoppable force rushed in, knocking him down from the sky.

The lightning was reflected back at Thunder Ghost True Monarch Jing Lan, but Jing Lan just sneered as the whirlpool in her pupils spiraled and actually absorbed the reflected lightning.

Fang Yuan almost crashed into the ground, but he raised his head with all his might and swung his dragon body, after narrowly brushing past a tall mountain, he soared into the sky again.

“Little earthworm...” Jing Lan sneered, pouncing towards Fang Yuan once again.

She was extremely fast, Fang Yuan’s ancient sword dragon transformation, even with sword escape Immortal Gu, could not match her speed.

Fang Yuan’s speed was actually already extremely fast, it was at the peak level among rank seven Gu Immortals. Only Hui Feng Zi and a few other rank sevens could contest Fang Yuan in this aspect.

Jing Lan, however, was a genuine rank eight Gu Immortal who was highly proficient in movement. Her speed was at the peak of rank eight Gu Immortals.

Compared to her, Fang Yuan, who had peak rank seven speed, was simply too slow.

“Try this move.” Jing Lan easily flew to Fang Yuan’s back and aimed her palm at Fang Yuan’s dragon head, a pale mysterious light shooting out of her palm.

The power of this mysterious light simply could not compare to the earlier lightning axe, but when it struck reverse flow protection seal, it immediately incited a huge change.

Water splashed out of reverse flow protection seal, reverse flow protection seal’s thickness was reducing at a visible rate.

Fang Yuan’s expression changed intensely, he shook his tail rapidly, fleeing with all his strength.

Jing Lan laughed loudly while thinking: “This junior Zi Wei is amazing, in just a short while, she has already deduced a rank seven immortal killer move that is specially used to break this Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal! It is a pity that this move can only be used once in a while. There is a time restriction, otherwise I would have already decapitated this little demon!”

Just as she was thinking this, Jing Lan’s expression suddenly changed.

Far away in the horizon, an enormous wall, seemingly supporting the sky, was gradually being revealed.

This enormous wall was actually a regional wall.

The five regions were all covered with layers of membrane that formed each region’s heaven and earth, while also separating each other.

These were the regional walls.

The regional wall before Jing Lan was purple-black, it was misty and chaotic, and gave rise to a feeling of oppression.

Southern Border’s miasma regional wall.

“So this little demon wanted to escape into the regional wall!” Jing Lan immediately realized.

It was extremely difficult for Gu Immortals to cross regional walls, often, the higher their cultivation, the higher the difficulty in crossing the regional wall.

After entering a regional wall, Gu Immortals would not only be met with rejection force, they would also face backlash when using any method.

It was already not easy for rank six Gu Immortals to cross a regional wall. It was highly dangerous for rank seven. And for rank eight... the difficulty was extremely great, there were basically no rank eight Gu Immortals who would ask for trouble by walking into a regional wall, they were more willing to take a detour by going through black heaven or white heaven.

“This little demon is only rank seven, he will have the territorial advantage in the regional wall. I can’t let it happen!”

At this thought, Jing Lan’s brows stood up, her eyes shone with sharp light as she flew in front of Fang Yuan and blocked him.

Fang Yuan fell into a bitter battle.

He had been fleeing all along before to get close to the regional wall. He had a huge advantage in the regional wall, the sovereign immortal body could freely move about in the regional wall.

That meant he would be safe if he entered the regional wall.

But Jing Lan simply did not give him this opportunity, her attacks were like waves making Fang Yuan constantly change directions. However, Jing Lan’s speed completely outstripped his and would always obstruct him from ahead.

Right now, Fang Yuan was not far from the regional wall, but because of Jing Lan, it felt like the regional wall was far away in the horizon.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Dragon!

Immortal killer move — Familiar Face!

With no choice, Fang Yuan could only use these two moves together. He disguised his identity, lunging forward amidst the scattered dragons.

“This!!” Jing Lan’s eyes opened wide in anger, she had no good way to deal with this.

She had already tried before, her investigative killer move simply could not detect Fang Yuan’s disguise.

But she had a huge arsenal of moves, and soon slaughtered all the myriad dragons, forcing Fang Yuan’s true body out.

However, Fang Yuan’s true body had already taken the chance to move ahead by several li, and was much more closer to the regional wall.

Jing Lan turned into lightning and flashed by, appearing before Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan gave a bitter sigh, once again activating the two killer moves. Myriad dragon might be powerful, but in front of Jing Lan, it was reduced to a veil to disguise his body. Against the power of the domineering lightning, it looked increasingly fragile.

Like this, Fang Yuan continued to lunge forward, while Jing Lan continued to obstruct him.

There was not much distance from the regional wall, but both sides were constantly engaged in fierce battle, Fang Yuan had to use a lot of effort to move forward each time.

“Found you!” Jing Lan smiled malevolently as she destroyed all the dragons once again, exposing Fang Yuan’s true body.

She pushed forward her palm from which shot out a pale mysterious light.

The mysterious light immediately cut off a large portion of reverse flow protection seal, there was only a thin layer of reverse flow protection seal left.

“Good! There is much more improvement this time.” Jing Lan laughed, transmitting her voice of admiration to Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei smiled: “We have already been probing reverse flow protection seal long ago. The previous results along with the information from senior’s fight have already become a key to qualitative change. This kind of deduction is always difficult at first but easy later on, now I will deduce a rank eight killer move, making use of senior’s Immortal Gu, to restrain reverse flow protection seal.”

“Good, I am waiting.” Jing Lan responded to Fairy Zi Wei while looking at Fang Yuan entering the regional wall.

There was nothing that could be done about it.

Jing Lan could not detect Fang Yuan’s true body, his two killer moves were also greatly effective, although she obstructed him many times, she could only let him enter the regional wall in the end.

“But, you think you are safe in the regional wall?”

“A mere regional wall, how could it block me, Thunder Ghost True Monarch? Hmph!”

Black qi gushed out of Jing Lan’s nose, the black qi rapidly expanded and spread throughout her whole body, covering her in a thick black cloud ball.

Countless ghosts of the dead roared inside the black cloud and fought each other, every time they fought, they would produce firm blue lightning.

Jing Lan controlled the black cloud ball and entered straight into the regional wall, still chasing after Fang Yuan.

“She actually entered here!” Fang Yuan got a huge shock.

“Kid, your trick might have been effective against others. But against me, you are simply playing tricks in front of an expert. Back then, I used regional walls to fight Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. Other rank eights don’t have methods to enter deep into regional walls, but I have. It is your bad luck to have run into me!”

Jing Lan shouted non-stop while the black cloud ball let out countless lightning bolts that landed on Fang Yuan’s ancient sword dragon transformation.

Fang Yuan cried out in pain, reverse flow protection seal was already broken pretty badly and could no longer reflect all the damage.

But Jing Lan was also not any better off, blood flooded out from the corners of her lips as she felt bouts of dizziness.

Using killer moves in regional wall would result in backlash, fortunately she had a phantom aperture which only had Immortal Gu and immortal essence, unlike normal immortal apertures containing large amount of resources. If there were other resources, they would have definitely suffered greatly at this moment.

Boom boom boom!

Lightning bolts smashed at Fang Yuan’s body, mixed in among them was pale mysterious light that constantly broke down reverse flow protection seal.

Even in the regional wall, Fang Yuan was unable to escape from Jing Lan and was being chased closely.

Fang Yuan’s injuries became increasingly severe, his sparkling silver scales had already lost their luster by now, blood stained half of his body, his horn was broken, and his dragon claws were fractured at many areas.

The black cloud ball around Jing Lan had also mostly dissipated, exposing her armor.

Her face was pale, but her spirits were lively as she fixed her gaze on Fang Yuan, vowing to kill this demon.

“Okay, the rank eight killer move to break reverse flow protection seal has finally been deduced.” At this moment, Fairy Zi Wei’s voice came.

Jing Lan was joyous.

Fairy Zi Wei reminded her: “This move is very powerful, I have to ask senior to use it cautiously, the backlash won’t be small if the activation fails.”

“Don’t worry.” Jing Lan was doing multiple things at once, immediately beginning to attempt activating this killer move.

She activated it three times, but every time resulted in a failure.

Fortunately, she had plenty of experience, timely stopping whenever she felt something wrong.

The backlash was indeed powerful, her armor was mostly destroyed, revealing her body inside.

At the fourth attempt, she finally succeeded.

“Fang Yuan, go and die!!!” Jing Lan flew above Fang Yuan’s head, a vast beam of light shot down towards Fang Yuan’s head.

Fang Yuan simply did not have time to dodge it, he could only watch as this pillar descended!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1557: Counterattack

“Die!” Jing Lan gave a loud shout, her eyes shining with joy as she watched the beam of light bombard Fang Yuan.

She was a rank eight Gu Immortal with extremely high battle strength, but she had to live under Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s shadow her whole life. She had woken up because of Dang Hun Mountain’s self-detonation, and when she saw

Spectral Soul captured and resisting futilely, the feelings which she had hidden in the depths of her heart surged out.

“Shock, anger, pity, joy, and also... fear! Spectral Soul, you were once so tough, but now you have become a prisoner. I am going to kill your inheritor now, I awakened at a really good time. By killing your inheritor, I shall eliminate the fear towards you that is rooted in the depths of my heart!”

“Then, I will bring Fang Yuan’s head before you, and you will also be killed by me. Hahaha, there will be a day when you will die by my hands. This is unbelievable, it is like a dream, hahaha!”

Thunder Ghost True Monarch Jing Lan was laughing madly inside her mind.

“Something is wrong, quickly stop now!” Right at this time, Jing Lan suddenly heard a voice.

“It is too late!” Jing Lan’s eyes were filled with blood-thirst and killing intent, but soon she was slightly stunned.

“This voice is somewhat familiar... right, it is that junior Zi Wei! So it was not Fang Yuan’s backup, wait a moment, what did she mean?” This thought crossed Jing Lan’s mind.

The blood-thirsty intent in Jing Lan’s eyes immediately dissipated by a large degree, revealing clarity.

She quickly retreated.

“Too late!” Fang Yuan’s expression suddenly changed, his previously panicking and fearful look instantly disappeared, replaced by certainty of success and fighting spirit that soared to the skies!

He shook his dragon body, instead of dodging, he moved towards the sky, directly crashing towards Jing Lan’s fatal killer move!

The beam violently struck Fang Yuan’s body, but Fang Yuan’s dragon body was covered in a layer of reverse flow protection seal which had a completely different appearance at this moment, it had not only recovered its original state, it was also flowing with traces of mysterious light.

Reverse flow protection seal had a completely new transformation at this crucial moment!

Variation move!

The beam of light could not break this reverse flow protection seal and was reflected back smoothly.

“What?!” Jing Lan’s pupils shrunk, even though she had a lot of battle experience, her expression revealed a frightened look at this moment.

Earlier in the battle, she had fought Fang Yuan while holding back. Even if the abilities bounced back, she could absorb them or endure the damage.

But this attack was completely different!

She had used this move with all her strength, and this move by itself was a rank eight immortal killer move.

If she had succeeded in this move, it was certain to not only break reverse flow protection seal, but also kill Fang Yuan.

But now, her full-strength killer move was actually completely reflected.

Jing Lan wanted to give Fang Yuan no time to dodge, so the distance between the two were extremely close. Right now, Jing Lan wanted to dodge but did not have enough time, her mood was also intensely fluctuating because of the shadow of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable rooted deep in her heart, and there was also another important reason, her state was far from perfect!

She had rank eight cultivation, although she had the ability to enter deep into the regional wall, her body was not the sovereign immortal body after all, she would suffer damage from the backlash.

While chasing Fang Yuan and gaining the upper hand, she was filled with satisfaction and hatred, so she did not sense it. But now that she was trying to dodge, she shockingly discovered — her state was poor!

With all these reasons piled up, Jing Lan had no time to dodge and could only face the beam of light head-on.

Boom—!

The light bombarded Jing Lan’s body, erupting with glaring radiance like the sun had descended on the battlefield. Even Fang Yuan, who had transformed into an ancient sword dragon, had to firmly close his eyes.

But at the next moment, the radiance dimmed a little, Fang Yuan endured the pain to forcibly open his eyes.

Kill!

He barely managed to distinguish Jing Lan’s extremely tiny and fragile body within the endless white radiance.

Her ferocious and thick whole-body armor had completely disintegrated, revealing her physical immortal body.

Being hit by her own full strength attack, Jing Lan’s eyes rolled back into her head as she fell unconscious, blood flowing out from all the pores in her body.

Fang Yuan opened his mouth revealing sharp fangs, as he moved his dragon body and charged at Jing Lan.

With his limbs expanding to an exaggerated degree, Fang Yuan slashed down with his claws!

“Damn it! Damn it! I actually fell for his scheme.” In Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes were wide open in anger and self-blame: “He had actually modified reverse flow protection seal to this degree, creating a new variation move. The previous reverse flow protection seal was a trap to deal with me. Once I deduced it, he would use the variation move to form a completely different reverse flow protection seal. Fang Yuan... inconceivable... how could his wisdom path attainment be so deep?!”

Fairy Zi Wei had all along thought of Fang Yuan highly, but this fact in front of her was a huge slap to her face.

She had thought she held the upper hand. Since the battle of Reverse Flow River, she had begun gathering information and put great efforts in deducing reverse flow protection seal. In the later event when Feng Jiu Ge chased after and fought Fang Yuan, she had been deducing with all her strength from behind the scenes, until Thunder Ghost True Monarch set off this time.

She felt she had accumulated enough and it was finally time to reap the gains, but she had never expected it all to be Fang Yuan’s trap and scheme.

The wisdom path attainment Fang Yuan showed far surpassed Fairy Zi Wei’s expectations!

“But how is this possible? Wait, did he borrow the power of wisdom Gu? But wisdom Gu is clearly wild. Only rank nine venerables can refine this Gu and use it. Fang Yuan is only rank seven, and there is also no one with such capability in the whole of Lang Ya Sect. Even if they had rank nine immortal essence, it would require a venerable’s will to battle wisdom Gu’s will. In the records in Heavenly Court, after Star Constellation Immortal Venerable became rank nine, she had spent close to one hundred years to subdue and refine rank nine wisdom Gu!”

Fairy Zi Wei was baffled.

Thin beads of sweat covered her forehead, and in just a few moments, she was actually perspiring.

“Senior Jing Lan definitely suffered severe damage from this attack, she must hold on!” Fairy Zi Wei had deduced this rank eight killer move and was of course aware of its power. The investigative killer move she had put on Jing Lan was also destroyed by this attack, Fairy Zi Wei had already lost her surveillance of the battle situation.

She immediately sent Chen Yi and others to the regional wall battlefield to reinforce Thunder Ghost True Monarch.

She herself, however, stayed in Heavenly Court.

Duke Long was completely focused on nurturing Feng Jin Huang, he was not here. Spectral Soul was putting up stiff resistance and needed to be monitored at all times. Heavenly Court also needed Fairy Zi Wei to oversee the whole situation.

Crack crack!

A series of crisp sounds resounded from Jing Lan’s body.

Fang Yuan’s sharp dragon claws fiercely stabbed Jing Lan’s chest.

But at the crucial moment, armor interwoven with dense amounts of lightning appeared in front of Jing Lan’s chest.

When the dragon claws landed on this armor, it was like striking the hardest steel.

This was a rank eight passive defensive killer move, even if the Gu Immortal was unconscious, it could activate by itself if there was an attack.

If it were before, Fang Yuan would be like a rat fighting a bull. But now, this lightning armor already looked badly damaged from one attack, it was not in its complete form.

Thus, Fang Yuan used all his strength and tore down at it!

The dragon claws steadily slashed down, cutting down Jing Lan’s flesh from her left shoulder to the right side of her waist. Wherever the claws passed by, lightning flashed as the lightning armor was torn apart. Three of Jing Lan’s hard rib bones were also severed by Fang Yuan’s claws.

The dragon claws were completely intact!

Immortal essence was rapidly expended to maintain the reverse flow protection seal that steadfastly protected Fang Yuan.

Without this layer of protection, the dragon claws might have fractured into countless pieces just from cutting down half the way.

The intense pain woke up Jing Lan, she was indeed a highly experienced fighter, a rank eight great expert who had resisted Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, in that instant, she realized her situation and let out a shrill scream.

This scream was not a random scream, but an immortal killer move.

Fang Yuan only frowned, he was completely safe.

On the contrary, this attack was completely reflected back to Jing Lan by reverse flow protection seal.

Jing Lan’s eardrums immediately burst, her mind fell into chaos as a huge amount of blood surged internally in her head. Blood surged out of even her eyeballs, dyeing her vision red.

Jing Lan had extraordinary battle accomplishments but maybe because she had immediately set off to fight Fang Yuan after waking up from her hibernation without loosening up and retraining her skills. Or maybe because she was startled awake from the pain and after seeing her severe injuries, she subconsciously reacted to protect herself too quickly, forgetting Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal had already underwent a complete change, which led to her making this mistake and inflicting severe damage on herself!

Taking advantage of her situation to kill her!

Fang Yuan’s dragon eyes shone with a cruel and sinister light.

He swung his tail, ruthlessly knocking down Jing Lan from the air.

Boom, the ground shook, Jing Lan was smashed to the ground like a flesh ball, creating a ten feet wide deep crater.

“Damn it!” Jing Lan gritted her teeth, struggling to get up.

Her injuries were extremely severe, her armor was gone and three of her rib bones were split, her beating heart and the constantly expanding and shrinking lungs could be seen from outside.

Roar—!

At the next moment, Fang Yuan opened his mouth as wide as possible and let out his dragon breath.

Sword light dragon breath!

Dragon breath with unparalleled sharpness gushed out!

The silver-white dragon breath fell down heavily upon Jing Lan’s body like a waterfall.

Jing Lan had just stood up and the thoughts in her mind had mostly settled when the dragon breath bombarded her. With a plop, she was forced to kneel down on one knee.

“I was actually forced to kneel down by a rank seven Gu Immortal?!” A strong sensation of humiliation filled Jing Lan’s heart, anger and hatred surging within her mind.

“Ahhhhhhh!” Jing Lan roared towards the sky, and along with her furious roar, blue lightning erupted out of her countless pores.

Lightning interwove together before fiercely expanding.

Rumble...!!

Endless lightning formed into a hemispherical light barrier that repelled everything in the surroundings.

Within its area, be it Fang Yuan’s dragon breath or the surrounding miasma, they were all burnt to a crisp by the lightning.

“Rank eight might is indeed not ordinary. But this attack should be your last burst of strength, right? You are already a spent force! Myriad dragon!” Fang Yuan roared.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1558: Retreat

Fang Yuan activated his strongest offensive method!

Dragons roared and countless silver scales filled the sky. Myriad dragons flew and besieged Jing Lan who was at the center of the deep crater.

“Damn, damn it...” Jing Lan clenched her teeth, fury burning in her eyes.

After the attack just now, her aura fell to the bottom. Myriad dragons pounced at her, but she easily killed them.

“These little worms can’t do anything! Fang Yuan, you coward, come, let’s have a real fight!” Jing Lan roared.

Fang Yuan sneered, his true body deeply concealed in a corner.

Myriad dragon!

Myriad dragon!

Myriad dragon!

Myriad dragon....

Disregarding the expenditure of immortal essence, Fang Yuan activated myriad dragon killer move in a frenzy.

Jing Lan’s aura weakened rapidly, she kept on roaring and provoking Fang Yuan, but he did not move his true body.

Myriad dragon was a peak rank seven killer move, but it was indeed not much for Jing Lan.

Because Jing Lan still had abundant immortal essence and her Immortal Gu were also intact. But every time Jing Lan used a killer move, she would suffer backlash from the regional wall.

She had methods to weaken this backlash, but with her current severe injuries, any backlash could be fatal.

And also, she still had to use her healing methods, but how could her injuries be so easy to heal?

A Gu Immortal’s injuries were difficult to treat. Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body was the only exception in the world.

After failing to lure out Fang Yuan’s true body, Jing Lan could only choose to break through.

Myriad dragons could not stop her even when she was heavily injured. This was the Thunder Ghost True Monarch who had such astonishing battle strength that she had once stood up to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Fang Yuan sighed, knowing that he was stronger in defense. Although his battle strength had barely reached into rank eight level, it was not enough to take the life of an expert like Jing Lan.

Gu Immortals of this level could not die so easily. Unless they were ambushed and trapped in immortal battlefield killer move, moreover, they had to be killed before the battlefield killer move was broken.

Naturally, from another angle, Fang Yuan was unable to kill Jing Lan, but Jing Lan was also unable to kill Fang Yuan. Even if she was faster, she could not stop Fang Yuan from entering the regional wall.

But even so, Fang Yuan was clearly aware that even if he could not kill Jing Lan, he still had to hunt her down.

“I must weaken this person’s battle strength as much as possible so that I can gain as much time as possible later.” At this thought, Fang Yuan pointed his finger.

Immortal killer move — Directional Confusion Fog!

Originally, the fog was purple and was not big, although it could confuse even rank eight Gu Immortals.

After Fang Yuan modified it, this move had no effect on rank eight Gu Immortals, but it had an amplified effect on rank seven and below Gu Immortals. Not only did the color change, the range was greatly expanded, but the duration shortened drastically.

After the battle in green ghost desert, Fang Yuan had once again modified this move with his high theft path attainment level, adding in many theft path mortal Gu and even adding great thief Immortal Gu as its core to steal the enemy’s perception ability. Thus, its might had soared and could affect rank eight Gu Immortals once again!

In an instant, large amounts of fog spread around Jing Lan, messing up her sense of direction.

Fang Yuan took this chance to send out the myriad dragons once again to surround and attack her.

“Oh no! I lack many of my Immortal Gu, I cannot even break a killer move of this level now?” Jing Lan tried many methods, but shockingly found she could not deal with this killer move properly.

“‘Hm? What’s going on?” Fang Yuan was observing the whole situation, and was surprised when he saw Jing Lan unable to break through.

After this killer move was modified by Fang Yuan, its activation was slightly more convenient, but it was still only a rank seven move.

Fang Yuan did not even have the thought of obstructing Jing Lan with this move, his real thought had been to delay Jing Lan for some time.

But he was surprised to see that Jing Lan actually could not break out of the fog.

From outside the fog, Fang Yuan could clearly sense waves of Immortal Gu aura, this was Jing Lan constantly trying various methods to break the fog.

Her moves were not completely ineffective, but they had little effect, only thinning the directional confusion fog by a small degree.

Sharp light erupted in Fang Yuan’s eyes as he immediately continued to activate directional confusion fog!

The fog continued to pile up layer upon layers, firmly trapping Jing Lan inside.

“She really can’t break out.” Fang Yuan gave a bitter smile, if he had known this before, he would have already used this move and did not need to flee so miserably.

However, any killer move’s effect would decrease if they were used multiple times. Not only would it make others be on guard, it would also reveal traces that could be deduced and deciphered.

So Fang Yuan leaving this killer move until now was a wise choice. It was just that he had not expected it to actually be able to trap Jing Lan!

This was a pleasant surprise.

“This is problematic!” Jing Lan also realized this as she truly started to feel the aura of death approaching.

Kill!

Countless sword dragons pierced into directional confusion fog and attacked Jing Lan from all directions.

Jing Lan could not break out the fog, instantly falling in a bitter fight.

The regional wall was still rejecting her, every time she used a killer move, she would suffer a backlash.

“Am I, Jing Lan, the grand Thunder Ghost True Monarch, going to die here?” As time passed, Jing Lan’s heart started to sink as the situation turned increasingly unfavorable for her.

“No, I need to hold on, I can still fight! Even if I die, I will bring down Fang Yuan with me!” Jing Lan looked at her chest, her chest wounds were the largest and exposed her heart.

Her heart was extremely unusual, every time it beat, it let out threads of purple lightning.

This was her final trump card.

“Such valiant battle strength! Even after being so heavily injured, she can still persevere and it even looks like she has enough strength left. Moreover, her will is unbreakable, even though I secretly used so many wisdom path methods...”

After attacking for a good while, Fang Yuan heaved a sigh and gave up.

Time was extremely important now, Fang Yuan needed to deduce and modify ghost official garment as soon as possible.

Although the situation was completely advantageous to Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court would not just watch by. Once their reinforcements arrived, it would be Fang Yuan’s calamity then.

There was even the possibility that Thunder Ghost True Monarch came with other Gu Immortals, but that her speed was too fast and left her companions far behind!

Immediately making the decision, Fang Yuan left, but he did not forget to add in many uses of myriad dragon and directional confusion fog before leaving.

Retreat!

Fang Yuan immediately moved deeper into the regional wall.

The five regions’ regional walls were rather safe areas for Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan moved while deducing the modifications of ghost official garment.

But soon, he found that no matter how he modified ghost official garment, its limit was still rank seven. Instead, it was better to deepen the connection between it and ghostly concealment.

“Ghostly concealment is a rank nine killer move, although it belongs to theft path, it has ‘ghost’ in its name and is closely related to soul path as well since it blocks the perception of souls. Yama is the correct way to go, I can raise ghost official garment to a much higher level by borrowing the strength from ghostly concealment!”

After finding the correct direction, Fang Yuan immediately began to deduce.

He had plenty of wisdom path methods and his attainment level was also high enough, and his theft path attainment level was the one which gave him the most crucial support!

Like this, after several days and several nights, Fang Yuan finally finished his deductions, activating yama once again.

This completely new yama killer move made the connection between ghostly concealment and ghost official garment much more close.

Previously, these two killer moves rejected each other, but now, they were beginning to merge together, and the rejection between them was completely gone.

“Success!” Fang Yuan carefully felt the effects, and clenched his fists in joy.

He was once again shielded from Heavenly Court’s deductions, making his situation turn from dangerous to safe.

But if he canceled yama, he would once again be exposed to Heavenly Court's deductions.

Fang Yuan quickly moved towards Northern Plains.

Maintaining the new yama took a lot of immortal essence. And he had already spent an enormous amount of immortal essence in the fight with Thunder Ghost True Monarch, his immortal essence reserves were almost empty now.

In this battle, Fang Yuan had activated myriad dragon multiple times and also used directional confusion fog an unprecedentedly high amount of times.

These immortal killer moves expended immortal essence.

Furthermore, he had also spent a lot of immortal essence to deduce the new yama.

All together, Fang Yuan had suffered huge losses in this battle, but it was not that he had no gains. Preserving his life was the greatest gain, besides this, there was the new yama and three rib bones of Thunder Ghost True Monarch.

“These three rib bones were cut off by my dragon claws. Every one of them is a rare immortal material. But they originate from Thunder Ghost True Monarch, I don't dare to use them. It is better to put them in treasure yellow heaven!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1559: Number One Rank Seven Expert!

Heavenly Court.

In a vast hall, Fairy Zi Wei slowly opened her eyes, stopping her deductions as she heaved a sigh: “Fang Yuan's wisdom path attainment is remarkable. He is protected from my methods once again.”

Rank eight Gu Immortal Chen Yi was standing to the side, maintaining the killer move karma divine tree to help Fairy Zi Wei in her deductions.

At this time, he had a complex expression as he said: “Lady Zi Wei, there is something I need to report to you.”

“What is it?”

Chen Yi was only helping from the side, while Fairy Zi Wei was fully focused in deducing Fang Yuan, so Chen Yi was the first to discover Fang Yuan's action.

He immediately reported: “Three rib bones of Thunder Ghost True Monarch are being put for sale in treasure yellow heaven.”

“What?” Fairy Zi Wei's expression immediately changed.

She immediately connected to treasure yellow heaven and sure enough, saw the three rib bones being put for sale, it had already gathered the attention of many Gu Immortal wills.

“Unimaginable, this demon Fang Yuan already has such battle strength!”

“Sigh, his growth is too fast, he is already a demonic path overlord of this generation.”

“Fang Yuan is an otherworldly demon, and has used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth, he naturally has an enormous advantage in cultivation.”

“I recognize her, this is Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal Thunder Ghost True Monarch, who could have thought she would actually be suppressed by Fang Yuan!”

“Thunder Ghost True Monarch Jing Lan, this is an old senior, she is still alive?”

“So much for Central Continent’s Heavenly Court being regarded as the number one human force. They have all along been trying to capture Fang Yuan, and even sent a rank eight Gu Immortal, but look at this, Fang Yuan actually beat her so miserably.”

Gu Immortal wills were endlessly conversing with each other.

Fairy Zi Wei’s body began to tremble from anger!

Fang Yuan had not only put the rib bones for sale, he had also used some methods to continuously display his battle with Jing Lan on loop.

Naturally, he only chose to play the part where he had successfully counterattacked and pummeled Jing Lan.

“Do we report this to Thunder Ghost True Monarch?” Chen Yi inquired.

Jing Lan had beaten back the myriad dragons and got rid of the directional confusion fog with much difficulty, but when she came out, Fang Yuan had already long since left without even leaving behind a trace.

Although Fairy Zi Wei could still deduce Fang Yuan’s location at that time, Jing Lan’s battle strength had weakened extremely, her state was not optimal and she needed to recuperate urgently.

When the reinforcements arrived later and joined with her, she once again began to chase after Fang Yuan.

Unfortunately, the distance between her and Fang Yuan was already greatly enlarged. Fang Yuan was deep within the depths of the regional wall, Jing Lan continued to give chase but her reinforcements did not have methods to enter deep into the regional wall and could only stay at the boundary.

Jing Lan was not resigned to this defeat, filled with anger and humiliation, she continued to chase without rest. But right at that time, Fairy Zi Wei was unable to deduce Fang Yuan any more, Jing Lan also thus lost her target.

“Zi Wei! Where the hell is that demon Fang Yuan?” Jing Lan transmitted her voice, she was burning with rage so her tone was very blunt.

What should have been easy prey actually caused her to land in such an extremely miserable situation with serious injuries, how could the proud Jing Lan accept this fact?

She gritted her teeth, desperately wanting to kill Fang Yuan and erase her shame!

Fairy Zi Wei was silent for a moment before slowly informing Jing Lan.

“What? Even you lost him?!” Jing Lan was furious and discontented.

“Fang Yuan’s wisdom path attainment is already no longer the same as before. But he will go to Lang Ya blessed land no matter what. We have already made some arrangements there. Although we failed to capture this scoundrel, we have also made huge gains, not only did we waste a large amount of his immortal essence, we also forced him to reveal many trump cards. How could a Gu Immortal like him be dealt with in one battle?” Fairy Zi Wei gently persuaded Jing Lan.

Jing Lan was silent, standing on the spot.

After a while, she heaved a long sigh, her anger already gone.

“I underestimated him, this person is astonishingly talented, he is indeed worthy of being the person chosen by heaven’s will and Shadow Sect. Next time we fight, I won’t make the same mistake.”

Jing Lan was not a reckless person, after being reminded by Fairy Zi Wei, she immediately regained her calm and the demeanor of a Heavenly Court expert, frankly admitting her mistake.

“Compared to Fang Yuan, there is an even more troublesome matter...” Fairy Zi Wei tactfully informed Jing Lan of the matter in treasure yellow heaven.

The calm mind that Jing Lan just regained immediately surged with waves of anger.

“What? This guy actually dared to sell my rib bones? Outrageous, simply outrageous!”

Jing Lan immediately connected to treasure yellow heaven, and sure enough, saw her own rib bones being put for sale. Anger surged to her head, and her eyes turned bloodshot.

Soon after, when Jing Lan saw the projection of the scenes where Fang Yuan pummeled her, she almost crushed her teeth: “Damn that guy... when he ends up in my hands later, I will tear off his skin, pull out his tendons, and grind his bones till they turn to dust!”

“But... this kid Fang Yuan actually put them for sale, he is indeed very cautious. Also displaying only that small portion of the battle, this guy has no shame.”

Jing Lan breathed roughly, and with some effort, calmed down and began to think: “He definitely expended a lot of resources in this battle, did his foundation get damaged so he is selling these three bones to replenish it? Then let me fulfill your wish and buy them!”

On one hand, Jing Lan wanted to buy the rib bones to connect them back, they would have an extremely remarkable effect on the healing.

On the other hand, letting this scene and the rib bones stay in treasure yellow heaven for even a day would have a deep impact on Heavenly Court.

Since ancient times, Heavenly Court had all along been publicly acknowledged as the number one force. Now, Fang Yuan selling Jing Lan’s three rib bones was like a huge slap to Heavenly Court’s face!

It was not good for Fairy Zi Wei to make a move since Jing Lan was the one involved.

Jing Lan also realized Fairy Zi Wei’s intent, she swallowed this humiliation as she activated a will and concealed her identity before inquiring Fang Yuan’s will: “What are you selling these rib bones for?”

“Who might you be?”

“I am from Eastern Sea.” Jing Lan clenched her teeth, never having thought the grand Thunder Ghost True Monarch would have to be secretive like this: “I am very interested in these three rib bones.”

Fang Yuan’s will laughed: “There are many interested parties.”

Jing Lan’s will clenched her teeth: “But there are few who will be bidding a high price like me.”

Fang Yuan’s will did not act according to her expectations and inquire about the bid, instead shaking his head: “No matter how high a price you bid, I am not selling!”

“Not selling? If you are not selling, what are you putting these here for?” Jing Lan immediately had a bad feeling.

Fang Yuan’s will sneered: “For fun! You have a problem?”

Guh.

Jing Lan could not endure it, immediately spitting out blood: “Fang Yuan! I, Jing Lan, will do whatever it takes to kill you!!”

More than ten days later, Lang Ya blessed land’s immortal formation shone with radiance that soared to the skies.

The radiance gradually dissipated, Fang Yuan leisurely walked out of the immortal formation.

After defeating Jing Lan, Fang Yuan had maintained the immortal killer move yama throughout the way, moving without resting towards Lang Ya blessed land.

Because Fang Yuan still did not know Lang Ya blessed land’s true location, he had to rely on the immortal formation to directly teleport inside.

“Finally, I don’t need to maintain yama.” Fang Yuan let out a sigh of relief, as he canceled the killer move yama.

“Elder Fang Yuan, you have finally returned!” Lang Ya land spirit was already standing outside of the immortal formation. As Fang Yuan canceled yama and showed his true appearance, Lang Ya land spirit immediately came to welcome him with a smile.

Lang Ya land spirit was invaded and Fang Yuan had not contributed anything, why was Lang Ya land spirit’s attitude so cordial then?

Fang Yuan was clear of it, it was completely because he had put the three rib bones of Thunder Ghost True Monarch on display in treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan did not sell them, on one hand it was to strike Heavenly Court’s prestige, on the other hand, it was for Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya blessed land was invaded by Feng Jiu Ge’s group and was beaten miserably, as well as provoking Heavenly Court. Over these last days, the higher ups of the Northern Plains variant human alliance higher ups were in a constant state of anxiety and pressure.

After all, these variant humans had once dominated the world and suppressed humans. It was Heavenly Court who led the human race to defeat these variant human races, creating the current human dominance.

So these four variant human races were afraid of the human race, they survived by hiding in some corners of the world. Now that they had provoked Heavenly Court, it could be imagined how much pressure they were facing.

In such a situation, Fang Yuan had pummeled Thunder Ghost True Monarch mercilessly and put the battle scene on display in treasure yellow heaven for everyone to see. Jing Lan was a famous rank eight expert in the history, such a person was also beaten back by Fang Yuan, to variant human Gu Immortals, this was tremendously good news! As the news spread, it was like sunlight shone on them, removing the gloominess in their hearts!

“Elder Fang Yuan, you did a good job this time! Previously, I had been trying to borrow the immemorial rock dragon from the rockman race, but they had been acting ambiguous. But when the news of your battle spread, their attitude clearly changed.” Lang Ya land spirit gave an eye signal to Fang Yuan, transmitting his voice: “Now that you are back, we can intimidate the rockman race to lend their immemorial rock dragon. At that time, we will have three great rank eight battle strengths, and moving Lang Ya blessed land would not be an issue!”

Lang Ya land spirit was in high spirits.

Fang Yuan glanced at land spirit, he was not as optimistic as the latter. Heavenly Court definitely had made a lot of arrangements, it wouldn’t be an easy matter to relocate Lang Ya blessed land.

However, it was not urgent right now to explain this to Lang Ya land spirit.

Fang Yuan then looked at a group of variant humans behind Lang Ya land spirit.

These people were Gu Immortals of the four races. To promote Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan returned grandly, they came to welcome him, they all had smiles on their faces at this moment.

Snowman Gu Immortal Bing Yuan praised: “Elder Fang Yuan is indeed a heavenly genius, even that grand Thunder Ghost True Monarch is not your match. This battle has already set your throne as the number one rank seven!”

Bing Yuan was all smiles, Fang Yuan was engaged to a woman of the snowman race, he was considered half a snowman. She was the one who had initiated this, the stronger Fang Yuan was, the more happy she would be.

Previously, Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge held this throne collectively, after all both had rank seven cultivation but were able to fight rank eights.

But now, after Fang Yuan displayed the battle scene where he beat Thunder Ghost True Monarch so miserably, the whole world was shocked and in a clamor.

Feng Jiu Ge had invaded Lang Ya blessed land, but he naturally could not publicize it. As such, Fang Yuan’s reputation suppressed Feng Jiu Ge, officially recognized as currently the number one rank seven expert in the world!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1560: Refinement Path Quasi-Supreme!

The fight depended on who the opponent was.

If Fang Yuan had won against rank six or rank seven Gu Immortals, no one would be so surprised.

But when the opponent was the famous rank eight expert Thunder Ghost True Monarch, it became a completely different thing.

Truthfully, Fang Yuan did not have an easy time in this battle, but it was sufficient to establish his reputation as the number one rank seven in the world, bringing down Feng Jiu Ge.

After this battle, Fang Yuan’s name became truly renowned in the world!

After this battle, even those rank eight Gu Immortals would start paying heavy attention to this rank seven monster, Fang Yuan.

Naturally, this was all Fang Yuan’s scheme.

Although it was Fang Yuan’s defeat, as he took the initiative to retreat, he was not without any gains.

Victory and loss in a battle was not too important, only the losses and benefits derived from the battle mattered.

Although Fang Yuan was defeated in this battle, he had made a lot of gains. The three rib bones’ value did not lie in themselves, but in their significance.

Fang Yuan used this battle spoil to the limit, shaking the entire Gu Immortal world. This included Chu Du’s complicated feelings, Wu Yong’s displeased expression, and Lu Wei Yin’s sigh.

And when Fang Yuan returned to Lang Ya blessed land, he immediately felt a huge difference.

These variant human Gu Immortals, including Lang Ya land spirit, had a completely different attitude towards him, they held him in genuine awe.

Especially in this situation when Heavenly Court was waiting to attack them, Fang Yuan had become their pillar of support.

After all, the immemorial rock dragon was only an immemorial desolate beast, even though ancient battle formation Heavenly Giant Solor had rank eight battle strength, it still could not compare to a genuine rank eight Gu Immortal.

And now, Fang Yuan had pummeled a rank eight Gu Immortal, and this rank eight Gu Immortal was Thunder Ghost True Monarch who was an expert even among rank eights!

Right now, who would even care about Fang Yuan’s rank seven cultivation?

His battle accomplishment was displayed right in front of everyone!

Because of this, when Fang Yuan returned to Lang Ya blessed land, these people eagerly came to welcome him.

Fang Yuan’s attitude, however, was slightly cold, he only talked a little with

Lang Ya land spirit, Bing Yuan and others, while nodding towards Xue Er. Xue Er immediately lowered her head bashfully, the other snowman Gu Immortals beamed with pleasure at this.

The variant human Gu Immortals proposed holding a feast to welcome Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan declined without hesitation.

“The current situation is quite dangerous, the important thing right now is to make the best use of time to get through this danger.” Fang Yuan said this indifferently, but the variant human Gu Immortals nodded and exclaimed in agreement.

Fang Yuan’s status had truly changed.

These variant human Gu Immortals truly treated him as a rank eight Gu Immortal. Compared to their similar status with Fang Yuan before, they were now slightly lowering their heads and had a humble attitude.

On one hand, it was because of Fang Yuan’s powerful battle strength that could pummel Thunder Ghost True Monarch; on the other hand, a great enemy was in front of them, they needed Fang Yuan’s help.

“Everyone can leave now, I need to talk with first supreme elder in private.” Fang Yuan waved the immortals to leave without any politeness.

Fang Yuan then transmitted his voice to Lang Ya land spirit: “I am first a supreme elder of Lang Ya Sect, only after that am I a member of the alliance.”

These words were spoken with sincerity which immediately made Lang Ya land spirit feel good, thinking Fang Yuan had not forgotten his origin and was still their member. The gloominess he felt from Fang Yuan persuading him to hand over refinement path true meaning had also decreased by a lot.

The group of immortals was tactful, taking their leave.

Lang Ya land spirit grabbed Fang Yuan’s arm, vanishing from the spot and appearing in the first cloud city.

“With your perceivable dao Immortal Gu, we found that they had really made some arrangements in the blessed land. We need to get rid of these harmful dao marks first if we want to move Lang Ya blessed land.” Lang Ya land spirit was worried.

Fang Yuan felt slightly strange: “First supreme elder, with your refinement path attainment, isn’t refining these dao marks your specialty?”

Lang Ya land spirit said in a distressed tone: “Heavenly Court is indeed Heavenly Court, their methods are extremely unusual. I have used almost all methods, but am unable to do anything to these dao marks.”

A sharp light flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Heavenly Court had indeed made ample preparations with their extremely profound foundation. Since they made arrangements, they were not worried of it being discovered, and even more unafraid of it being broken. Perhaps Fairy Zi Wei had already taken Lang Ya land spirit’s skills into her consideration.

“I wonder if my self cleansing killer move will have any effect?” Fang Yuan was rather confident in this method, after all he had gotten rid of inextinguishable star target by using this move.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan did not want to immediately make an attempt.

He said to Lang Ya land spirit: “Since that is the case, then let me be direct. First supreme elder, please take out the refinement path true meaning, after I become a refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster, I will surely be able to resolve this problem.”

Lang Ya land spirit’s expression immediately changed, this refinement path true meaning was his ultimate treasure, he was going to take it out now and give to Fang Yuan, a human Gu Immortal. He naturally did not feel well, and was reluctant to part with it.

However, since he had already agreed to Fang Yuan before, and with the grave situation in front of them, even if he was reluctant, he could only nod at this moment.

After a while, Fang Yuan finally saw the refinement path true meaning of Long Hair Ancestor.

True meaning was an extremely special form of will.

This was the first time Fang Yuan was personally seeing a lump of true meaning. This true meaning had the appearance of Long Hair Ancestor sitting cross-legged, its whole body was shining and crystal-clear, it did not have a physical body and looked like it was purely made from diamonds.

The absolute majority of wills could move about themselves, continuously expending themselves to think and move. But the true meaning was completely still, like a statue.

However, it was because of this characteristic that this true meaning could exist for so long. If it was able to move around and think, it would have already been expended completely.

“You... take it.” Lang Ya land spirit had an extremely complicated expression as he looked at the Long Hair true meaning for a good while before sighing and saying to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan nodded and stepped forward, his eyes widened as an attractive force appeared that absorbed this Long Hair true meaning into his mind.

Long Hair true meaning entered Fang Yuan’s mind, immediately letting out brilliant radiance.

The diamond-like radiance shone upon Fang Yuan’s mind, forming an area of imposing light.

Fang Yuan immediately sat cross-legged and closed his eyes, his expression firm.

He began to use many wisdom path methods, immediately, shocking waves rose in his mind as countless thoughts and all kinds of wills charged at the Long Hair true meaning, constantly colliding, constantly absorbing, learning and comprehending.

Everything progressed smoothly, Fang Yuan completely absorbed this Long Hair true meaning in several hours, turning it into his own foundation.

This was the complete understanding of Long Hair Ancestor towards refinement path, now it completely turned into Fang Yuan’s cultivation resource.

Fang Yuan’s refinement path attainment level, which had been relatively unspectacular the entire time, now soared to quasi-supreme grandmaster in one step!

“This is truly ascending to heaven in one step! Even if it were the time of five regions chaotic war where dream realms manifested, I would not have such an accomplishment from exploring dream realms!” Even Fang Yuan felt extremely moved, his gain was truly enormous!

Although he had completely absorbed the refinement path true meaning, Fang Yuan still remained seated without budging, whole-heartedly savoring his advancement.

Refinement path!

This was a very special path.

Gu Immortals who cultivated this path were most proficient in refining Gu.

The way of Gu cultivation had three elements: nurture, use, and refinement.

Now, in terms of refining Gu, Fang Yuan had become extraordinarily skilled, among all the Gu Immortals in the entire five regions, there was almost no one who could match the current Fang Yuan in his understanding towards refinement path.

“But, just attainment level is still not enough. What I currently lack are experiences of refining Gu, refinement path Immortal Gu, and refinement path killer moves.” Fang Yuan had a clear understanding of himself.

“But as long as I practice these things, my progress will be extremely rapid, to the point of simply skyrocketing. After all, I am now a quasi-supreme grandmaster!”

“Who could have thought that after raising my theft path attainment level to great grandmaster, my refinement path would become quasi-supreme grandmaster in just a short time!”

Fang Yuan pondered with closed eyes, carefully comprehending the changes brought by refinement path attainment level.

He casually flipped through a Gu recipe, with just one glance, the mortal Gu recipe completely revealed its profundities to Fang Yuan, and with another thought, Fang Yuan could raise this Gu recipe to its most optimal level.

He looked at an Immortal Gu recipe, it naturally had much more contents than the mortal Gu recipe, and its difficulty also rose sharply. But this did not beat Fang Yuan, he discovered he only needed to concentrate on the contents and some problems would immediately become clear with just some thinking.

For some more complex rank eight Immortal Gu recipes, Fang Yuan needed to use wisdom path methods to constantly ponder. But because of quasi-supreme refinement path attainment, his thoughts would not have errors.

Sometimes, he did not even need to deduce, he could just refine an Immortal Gu based on intuition or determine if an Immortal Gu recipe was usable.

Looking at an Immortal Gu recipe which he understood completely before, he was now able to instantly think of a large number of improvements, the more he thought, the more modification plans he discovered.

And regarding incomplete recipes, unlike before when he had to deduce with the help of the light of wisdom, the difficulty had decreased by countless times now. Naturally, he was not all-knowing, and would still need the respective path’s attainment level to deduce many incomplete recipes.

“In the history of refinement path, there were only three supreme grandmasters. I now have quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level, not just in the current era, even throughout history, based on refinement path attainment level, I should be in the top ten.”

Fang Yuan’s battle strength might not have changed, but his view was no longer the same, it had almost been elevated to the highest point of Gu cultivation.

Standing at this height, Fang Yuan could simply look down upon the entire Gu cultivation process.

Countless insights emerged in his mind.

“The way of Gu contains nurturing, using, and refinement, they are actually one to begin with!”

“The nurturing of Gu worms has the element of refinement, the element of refinement contains the element of use, and the element of use also contains both nurturing and refinement.”

The current Fang Yuan could look at a complete Gu recipe and tell how this Gu worm should be nurtured and what its effects were.

With his comprehension, he could also reverse-deduce how the Gu worm should be refined from the way it was nurtured and used.

“Wait a moment, I understand now! Actually, any killer move, be it mortal or immortal killer move, can be considered as an incomplete Gu recipe.”

Fang Yuan’s body suddenly shook as he comprehended this maxim of refinement path!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1561: View At The Peak

This was one of the greatest pursuits of refinement path – combining all kinds of killer moves into one Gu worm!

For instance, mortal killer move self strength.

This move was a strength path killer move which Northern Plains Gu Immortal Su Xian Er had created for her daughter Hei Lou Lan. Its core was strength path, but it treaded on soul path and qi path, once it was activated, it could produce a human phantom, the phantom’s appearance was lifelike and was a portrayal of the Gu Master’s inner consciousness.

Moreover, this strength path phantom could act on its own and chase its enemies.

There were altogether fifty Gu worms used in forming this killer move.

According to Fang Yuan’s current comprehension of the refinement path maxim: any killer move, be it of mortal or immortal level, could be considered as an incomplete recipe.

That was to say, self strength killer move’s contents could be altered by taking out and adding in various kinds of Gu materials, continuously improving it until it becomes a Gu recipe for self strength Gu.

When the Gu recipe is perfected and self strength Gu is refined, activating just this Gu worm could produce a strength path phantom!

The benefits of this were clear as day.

A killer move condensed into a Gu worm reduced the amount of Gu worms used to only one. When the Gu Master activates it, not only would it be extremely convenient and fast, the primeval essence expended would also be much less than activating the killer move.

Another example was immortal killer move myriad self.

This move was Fang Yuan's unique creation, it combined enslavement and strength path, made from the merging of killer moves like dragon horse spirit, three heads six arms, rat epidemic, thunder explosion. leopard rush, horse barrage, three hearts combination soul, beast phantoms, six arm heavenly zombie king, and so on.

The core Immortal Gu were Self Strength, Pulling Mountain, Pulling Water, and Cleanse Soul. The supplementary Gu worms were all-out effort Gu, bitter strength Gu, borrow strength Gu, self-reliance Gu, refine essence spirit Gu, earth strength Gu, water strength Gu, wind strength Gu, lightning strength Gu, fire strength Gu, heavenly essence treasure king lotus Gu, lurking soul coat Gu, breath concealment Gu, group strength Gu, as well as all kinds of soul path mortal Gu.

This killer move clearly had lots of contents, it was extremely troublesome to activate.

It was because Fang Yuan had practised it frequently to the point where it had become a kind of instinct that he was able to use it freely in battle.

But in fact, it contained countless extremely complex steps.

What if this killer move was elevated and refined into a Gu?

Myriad self Immortal Gu!

It would clearly be extremely convenient and usable!

Fang Yuan would only need to transfer immortal essence and activate this Gu worm to produce tens of thousands of strength path phantoms, quickly and conveniently.

Fang Yuan did not have qualifications to do this before, but now with his quasi-supreme refinement path attainment, he had the ability to reach this level!

All kinds of killer moves refined into Gu worms!

Fang Yuan's heart thumped with excitement, but he did not lose his calm as he continued to ponder.

“I now have the ability to elevate killer moves into Gu worms.”

“However, even though there are killer moves that can be refined into a Gu worm like myriad self, some killer moves cannot, like purple blood river formation or ignited thought flying rock. If these killer moves are condensed to their limit, they will comprise multiple Immortal Gu. Later on, I will need to coordinate and activate these multiple Immortal Gu to use the killer move.”

“This method has benefits and demerits as well.”

“The benefits are that it will be much more convenient and quick, the exhaustion of mind is also sharply reduced. But there are disadvantages, first, when myriad self killer move is condensed into a myriad self Immortal Gu, other Immortal Gu might be required to be used as Gu materials to refine it. Moreover, the power of just myriad self Immortal Gu might not be as strong as myriad self killer move.”

Myriad self killer move used so many Immortal Gu and supplementary mortal Gu, while myriad self Gu would only be one Gu, if its rank was just rank six or rank seven, it would have limited dao marks, thus not enough power.

“Another thing is that when only a Gu worm is used, it will be easy to counter. Killer moves are complicated but they are also much more difficult for others to deduce and decipher.”

Killer moves could also be continuously adjusted and elevated. For instance, myriad self killer move had the variation moves strength path giant hand and reverse flow protection seal.

But myriad self Gu itself would not have the potential to be elevated further.

“Of course, the overall benefits in elevating killer moves to a Gu worm is still much higher. Simply because the Gu could be used as the core of the original killer move anyway, raising its power and also preventing it from being deduced easily.”

“Even if some Immortal Gu have to be used as Gu materials during the refinement process, I can refine them again!”

This ability would be extremely helpful to Fang Yuan.

Look at myriad self first, Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal was a variation move of this killer move. Since the start, it was extremely troublesome for Fang Yuan to activate reverse flow protection seal, he needed time to prepare for it because of the complicated procedures, and if there was even a slight mistake, the killer move would fail and inflict backlash to himself.

But if he had myriad self Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan could modify reverse flow protection seal, greatly simplifying its steps and activating it much faster.

With this, his battle strength would rise by another level!

Fang Yuan possessed a lot of killer moves, but the ones he used frequently were few.

Myriad self could be condensed and elevated, purple thought perception starlight could be condensed into multiple Immortal Gu, ancient sword dragon transformation could also be condensed into one Gu worm. By then, with myriad self Immortal Gu and ancient sword dragon Immortal Gu, he could use just two Immortal Gu to unleash the killer move myriad dragon!

Divination tortoise transformation, self cleansing killer move, hundred and eighty slaves, enslavement after victorious fight, and so on could also be condensed and elevated.

As Fang Yuan continued to ponder deep into this subject, he suddenly had another insight.

“Wait, be it killer moves or refining Gu, they are both basically the utilization of Dao.”

“Isn’t my reverse flow protection seal using Reverse Flow River? And didn’t Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s orderly well use City Well?”

“City Well and Reverse Flow River are not Gu worms, why could they be used? Isn’t it because they are secluded domains of heaven and earth, containing a huge amount of dao marks which are then used by us?”

Fang Yuan thought about it again, the nurture, use, and refinement of Gu worms were in essence, Dao.

There were too many Gu cultivation paths1, fire path, water path, metal path, wood path, strength path, wisdom path, soul path, rule path, poison path, theft path...

“These paths all involve the nurture, use, and refinement of Gu, all involving Dao, this is in fact a kind of Dao that connects us to heaven and earth!”

Suddenly, the most classic phrase of the Gu cultivation world appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind.

Man is the spirit of all beings, Gu are the essence of heaven and earth!

Never had Fang Yuan’s understanding of this phrase been as profound as this moment.

“I want to condense and elevate killer moves into Gu worms, I need to take out Gu worms, add in Gu materials, and merge them into one.”

“Immortal Gu are the fragments of the Great Dao, Gu materials are the accumulation of dao marks, as long as the path is the same, they can be substituted with each other.”

“The reason why killer moves like reverse flow protection seal and orderly well can be activated is because Reverse Flow River and City Well have an abundant amount of dao marks that can take the place of Gu worms. From this point of view, these two killer moves have actually progressed from killer moves to Gu recipes!”

As Fang Yuan continued to ponder, many of his questions from before were being clearly solved.

Refinement path was actually rather special, although it was one path, it was related to every path. The comprehension gained from becoming a quasi-supreme grandmaster was much broader and deeper than any of Fang Yuan’s accomplishments in other paths.

“Thinking about it, I am using landscape as before Immortal Gu to restore Dang Hun Mountain, it looks like I am using a Gu worm on the surface, but it can also be seen as using the killer move landscape as before. Any killer moves can be seen as an incomplete Gu recipe, thus from another angle, this is also Gu refinement.”

“Only that what I am trying to refine is not a Gu worm, but a rank nine immortal material — Dang Hun Mountain!”

Fang Yuan was only rank seven, but he could refine rank nine immortal material?

The important thing here was the orderly well killer move, which was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s method. And back then, the orderly well killer move that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable used on Dang Hun Mountain was of rank nine level.

Realizing this point, Fang Yuan immediately got many new ideas for the restoration of Dang Hun Mountain.

“Dang Hun Mountain can be restored, it can also be used as a core like Reverse Flow River and form an immortal killer move!”

“Oh! I understand! The peak of soul cultivation recorded in Spectral Soul’s true inheritance —the Three Headed Thousand Arms Demon Soul, isn’t it an artificial secluded domain of heaven and earth?”

“Also, the rank nine killer move ghostly concealment of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable has countless dao marks working together and can function endlessly without adding any immortal essence, this is also an artificial secluded domain of heaven and earth!”

All along, Fang Yuan did not understand why ghostly concealment did not need immortal essence and could continue working all the time.

But now, he came to a realization.

Did Dang Hun Mountain require immortal essence? No.

Did Luo Po Valley require immortal essence? Also no.

Spectral Soul forcibly resisted the calamities and tribulations, although he used immortal essence to activate killer moves, in essence, he did not require immortal essence to possess his extremely powerful battle strength.

But this did not mean all kinds of dao marks could be casually piled together with enough quantity to form a secluded domain of heaven and earth, or form a killer move like ghostly concealment.

Dao marks needed to coordinate together.

Wasn’t this coordination just Gu refinement? The required Gu materials needed to be selectively chosen.

Wasn’t it nurturing Gu? The required food materials needed to be of a certain standard.

Wasn’t it using Gu? The coordination between Gu worms was the coordination between dao marks.

Fang Yuan continued to ponder deeply for a long time before slowly opening his eyes.

Three days and three nights had passed.

He had absorbed the refinement path true meaning in a few hours, but his comprehension used up three days and three nights!

Fang Yuan’s black eyes shone brightly, he looked even more unfathomable now.

“You...” Looking at Fang Yuan’s eyes, Lang Ya land spirit became uncertain with shock.

“What’s wrong?” Fang Yuan asked.

Lang Ya land spirit sighed: “The air you gave off a moment ago made me feel like I was looking at Giant Sun Immortal Venerable or Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable... any Gu Venerable was publicly recognized as a supreme grandmaster of their own path.

Fang Yuan was already able to reach their boundary with his refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment.

He was no longer looking up at the towering mountains, from the level below, he was able to observe the scenery!

This was the view at the peak of Gu cultivation!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1562: Emperor Yama!

“Slumbering lightning python!” Lang Ya land spirit gave a loud shout.

At the next moment, lightning bolts flashed and interwove together, forming a huge dragon-like lightning python.

Lightning was yang, python was yin. The lightning python contained yin and yang, not only was the wild nature of the lightning curbed, it even showed some gentleness.

As a result, the lightning python was not ferocious, but graceful and lovely.

It moved in a zigzag pattern, slowly coiling around a mountain-like elephant shaped rock. The python constantly crushed the rocks into the finest powder.

Refinement path had four publicly recognized strongest immortal killer moves to deal with immortal materials. One of them was slumbering lightning python.

Lang Ya land spirit originated from Long Hair Ancestor, he naturally had extreme proficiency in them.

This killer move was elevated to rank eight by using rank eight refinement path Immortal Gu.

They could not process this rank eight immortal material elephant armor mountain without the rank eight slumbering lightning python.

This was an immemorial immortal material of information path.

Lang Ya land spirit had already been processing immortal materials for several hours now, over ten rank eight immortal materials had already been processed, these immortal materials were divided into various categories and were all of information path.

Slumbering lightning python gradually dissipated, elephant armor mountain had completely been turned into fine powder. The powder gathered with other immortal materials, and under Lang Ya land spirit’s methods, they all formed a constantly rotating multicolored whirlpool.

“It is done, you can stop the immortal formation.” Lang Ya land spirit let out a breath of relief, extremely exhausted.

Immediately, a hairy man Gu Immortal removed the refinement path immortal formation.

With the immortal formation gone, the aura of the multicolored whirlpool immediately started to spread, the distant wisdom Gu was like a kitten that had smelled fish as it flew over and jumped right into the whirlpool, looking drunk.

“So wisdom Gu had such a trait.” Fang Yuan said with a moved expression.

“According to legends, wisdom Gu’s recipe contains a large amount of information path immortal materials. In nature, a wild wisdom Gu can only complete its advancement in areas that are full of information path dao marks.” Lang Ya land spirit said.

Fang Yuan immediately understood.

Wisdom Gu’s Gu recipe was not recorded in both Spectral Soul’s true inheritance and Lang Ya true inheritance. Only Heavenly Court had some records.

Fang Yuan could not control wisdom Gu, but he could move this lump of multicolored whirlpool from afar.

As for those over four thousand years of lifespan Gu, he had already collected them after refinement path true meaning.

“I had to trouble first supreme elder to personally act, I will gradually repay this debt.” Fang Yuan spoke in a sincere way to Lang Ya land spirit.

Although the method of moving wisdom Gu was simple, the cost was not anything small.

Various rank eight immortal materials had to be merged to create this temporary multicolored whirlpool. And this whirlpool would gradually dissipate not long after, it had no use besides deceiving wisdom Gu to change location.

This cost was naturally borne by Fang Yuan.

After discussing with Lang Ya land spirit, both sides came to an agreement to let Fang Yuan owe the cost for the time being and not immediately pay. After all, Fang Yuan had just been through an intense battle, he urgently needed to fill his immortal essence reserves.

This was also because of the rise in Fang Yuan’s status. Before this, he would not have been able to enjoy such great benefits.

But now, after he had pummeled Thunder Ghost True Monarch, he had the dominant status when communicating and negotiating with Lang Ya land spirit.

“Time is tight, I will immediately go into closed cultivation and use all my strength to deduce a way as fast as possible to get out of this predicament.” Fang Yuan said.

“Good, good, then I won’t disturb you.” Joy flashed by Lang Ya land spirit’s eyes, his exhausted look easing by a lot.

Fang Yuan returned to his cloud city.

Feng Jiu Ge’s group had invaded Lang Ya blessed land and taken several cloud cities. But by some luck, Fang Yuan’s cloud city had evaded this calamity and was still safe.

This might also be related to Fang Yuan’s powerful luck.

Fang Yuan entered closed cultivation, the other variant human Gu Immortals wanted to get close to him, but Fang Yuan did not meet any of them including those of the snowman race.

Inside sovereign immortal aperture.

Immortal killer move — Strength Reversing Life and Death!

“This move is a strength path killer move, it is not too suitable for my time path clone, I need to modify it into time path in the future.”

Fang Yuan’s time path clone immediately turned back into an immortal zombie and arrived in front of wisdom Gu.

After a while, wisdom Gu erupted with the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan’s time path clone sat cross-legged and began to think rapidly in the light of wisdom.

The issue of the dao marks left by Feng Jiu Ge’s group in Lang Ya blessed land was shelved aside by Fang Yuan.

Comparing Lang Ya blessed land’s safety and his own, his was of course more important.

“Right now, the most crucial thing is to elevate yama. Otherwise, once I come out of the blessed land, the immortal essence to maintain yama is really too high.”

If yama was not elevated, Fang Yuan would be in an extremely passive situation.

If his location was exposed and Heavenly Court continued to make deductions, they would learn of even more secrets which Fang Yuan absolutely did not want to see.

Previously, Fang Yuan had thought it was much better to use ghost official garment along with ghostly concealment’s power to block Heavenly Court’s deductions.

The killer move yama was a successful result of his attempts.

But now, Heavenly Court had a lot of clues on Fang Yuan, the current yama was not enough to protect him.

This deduction continued for over a month.

Of course, the light of wisdom was not used the whole time.

The whole process went smoothly for the most part, because Fang Yuan had great grandmaster attainment in theft path, quasi-supreme in refinement path, and also had good grasp over ghostly concealment, ghost official garment and other killer moves. The process slowed slightly because of his slightly lacking soul path attainment.

The biggest difficulty was during the mid-late stage. But it was also resolved after Fang Yuan added rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token.

The killer move yama had a huge transformation, Fang Yuan renamed it to emperor yama!

Emperor yama had four main components. Ghostly concealment, ghost official garment, Soul Beast Token and myriad self.

“Although I have deduced emperor yama, it can only be considered an initial version, I will need to activate it and constantly adjust it.”

“My main body will be in charge of this. As for the clone, it will continue to deduce the way to deal with the dao marks left by Feng Jiu Ge.”

Just like this, Fang Yuan stayed in Lang Ya blessed land for about half a month.

Fang Yuan finally came out of his closed cultivation.

His clone had already completed its deduction task, Fang Yuan found the method to resolve the problem of the dao marks left by Feng Jiu Ge.

He gave this method to Lang Ya land spirit. The latter’s expression immediately changed at this, cursing Heavenly Court’s sinister craftiness.

It turned out that if refinement path methods were used to get rid of these dao marks, it would instead help these dao marks. The killer move self cleansing was also ineffective. Heavenly Court was not a match for Spectral Soul Demon Venerable in soul path, but their refinement path foundation was not any weaker than Lang Ya Sect. After all, among the three supreme grandmasters of refinement path, only Long Hair Ancestor was a hairy man, while the other two were humans, and most of their inheritances were gathered by Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan was a quasi-supreme grandmaster, he saw through this scheme and even provided the simplest way to deal with it.

Fang Yuan could quickly deal with these dao marks when Lang Ya blessed land was relocated. Other methods would require more than ten years.

So the question returned back to the starting point – Lang Ya blessed land’s relocation.

“What do we do? Maybe Heavenly Court intentionally made this arrangement to force us to relocate the blessed land.” Lang Ya land spirit was very worried.

Fang Yuan also had the same worry.

Heavenly Court had not made any movement in this period of time, but it did not mean they had given up. It was more likely that they had already made preparations and were waiting for Lang Ya blessed land to expose its location.

But if they didn’t relocate, Heavenly Court would find this location sooner or later.

“Looks like we can only prepare to relocate. This is the recipe for myriad self Immortal Gu, if it is refined, it will be a huge boost to my battle strength.” Fang Yuan said as he gave a Gu recipe to Lang Ya land spirit.

This was the result of his recent deduction.

Using his refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment, Fang Yuan was confident this was already the most outstanding recipe possible.

“Myriad self Immortal Gu?” Lang Ya land spirit’s attention was immediately attracted. Although his obsession was different from the previous land spirit, he had originated from Long Hair Ancestor after all.

“If your Immortal Gu recipe is refined, it will be at least a rank seven. But, several of the immortal materials are in scarce amounts in the sect’s storage. It will be difficult to purchase them in a short time period even from treasure yellow heaven.” Lang Ya land spirit gave a bitter smile.

“No worries, I will gather these immortal materials myself.” Fang Yuan waved his hand, giving a slight smile, his gaze deep and eerie.

With the new emperor yama killer move in his hands, he intended to use this chance to test out this move’s power in a real battle!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1563: Meng Tu

Southeast of the northern icy plain, north of Inkman City, northwest of poison grassland, and at the extreme south of Meng tribe, there was a place called autumn blade plain.

This was a special land created naturally, it was flat with no grass growing on it.

Meng Tu walked step by step in autumn blade plain.

He was tall and well-built, and had a bronze luster to his skin. He was wearing an armored vest that revealed his shoulders. His pants were rolled up, revealing his calves.

He was walking barefoot.

The plain and natural ground was as sharp as knives, as Meng Tu walked on this silver soil, it was like walking on a mountain of blades, as his every step left behind a trail of blood.

But his expression was without a change. He was silent, his eyes closed, and his brows slightly knitted as he pondered over a doubt in his mind.

“Autumn blade plain is full of blade path dao marks, forming countless edge Gu naturally. I have been walking back and forth barefooted for several years now, but what is it that I am lacking for which I am still unable to make a breakthrough in my blade path attainment level?”

Blade path was an extremely small path, it could not be compared to paths like metal path, fire path, earth path and so on.

Sword path could not be left out when mentioning blade path.

These two paths were deeply interconnected and yet conflicting with each other. Because the origin of these two paths was the same, that was edge Gu.

Regarding edge Gu, it was recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>. Ren Zu was walking in Ordinary Abyss where some places were swampy, it was easy to get stuck in the mud, and the stench was foul. Some places were full of thorns, sharp pointy tips were everywhere, Ren Zu suffered a lot of injuries. In some parts of the ground, there were also edge Gu. When Ren Zu stepped on the ground, his soles were injured by the sharp edges, his injuries became larger as blood flowed, when he walked, the pain could be felt striking deep within himself.

Edge Gu was the origin of both blade path and sword path.

Many wild edge Gu were produced in nature, autumn blade plain was one of the few edge Gu production areas in five regions, and was controlled by the super force Meng tribe.

Meng Tu was a rank seven Gu Immortal who cultivated blade path and had peak rank seven battle strength. He was a genius when he was young, and grew rapidly, becoming a famous expert of Northern Plains' Gu Immortal world, and was one of the pillars of Meng tribe.

Several years ago, he gave a request to the tribe's Gu Immortals, wanting to stay in this autumn blade plain. On one hand, he could look after this important resource point of the tribe, while on the other hand, he was doing this in consideration of his own cultivation.

His blade path had been stuck at quasi-great grandmaster level, he wanted to use this autumn blade plain, by imitating Ren Zu's actions, to truly step into great grandmaster level!

But over these years, although he made some gains, he was always obstructed by a thin veil from stepping into great grandmaster.

Meng Tu had a determined personality, he refused to give up even after not seeing results for several years.

"Sigh, breaking through to great grandmaster realm is truly difficult! The tribe's supreme elders all praised me as a blade path genius rarely seen once in a thousand years, but I am still only at quasi-great grandmaster level even after hundreds of years."

"Although I have already sensed the thin veil obstructing me which seems to be so near to me, it feels like it is far away in the horizon and is as difficult as stepping into heaven!"

"But I need to continue walking, this method still has some effect. Some day, I will definitely be able to become a blade path great grandmaster!"

"Huh? Who is it?"

Right at this time, the Gu formation that covered the whole of autumn blade plain was destroyed abruptly, revealing the clear blue sky.

A figure descended with overwhelming aura, directly charging at Meng Tu without even saying a word!

"Such guts!" Meng Tu shouted in fury, he did not dodge, instead counterattacking with a knife-hand stance.

A loud sound resulted from the collision, the attacker was stable like a mountain, while Meng Tu was sent flying from the force "My immortal killer move might look like it has no momentum, but all its power is contained within, I can easily break the ordinary defenses of rank seven Gu Immortals. But this person is uninjured after taking my attack head-on! This is a powerful enemy!"

Meng Tu was surprised, he quickly stabilized his footing and shouted at the attacker: "State your name. You dare to intrude on my Meng tribe's territory!"

"Hahaha." Fang Yuan laughed madly, saying in a completely altered voice: "Meng Tu, of course you don't recognize me, but that is not an issue, because the dead do not need to know too much."

Myriad self Immortal Gu’s recipe required an enormous amount of edge Gu, more importantly, it required a kind of special rank seven immortal material that was deep under autumn blade plain – drinking blade wine.

This wine was not produced naturally; it was an unusual product formed from the bloodstains left by Meng Tu, which had seeped deep into the ground and merged with this place’s blade path dao marks.

Fang Yuan knew from his first life’s memories that Meng Tu bitterly cultivated here to breakthrough to blade path great grandmaster, but was never able to meet with that opportunity.

Meng Tu failed to breakthrough, he imitated Ren Zu by inserting edge Gu in his heart to deepen his understanding of blade path. The killer move he created was incomplete and had serious hidden side-effects, Meng Tu’s mind gradually started to be affected and he would often fall into a mad demonic state.

Meng Tu also knew that this was not the ideal method, but he kept on insisting on cultivating relentlessly, hiding it from others.

When the five regions chaotic war started, Meng Tu took part in battles, however, the side-effect started up during a battle, he fell into a crazed demonic state, killing his own tribe’s Gu Immortals.

After Meng Tu regained his senses, he concealed all traces while also fabricating false reasons, concealing this from the tribe.

However, as this happened suddenly, Meng Tu was not able to deal with the traces completely, Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals slowly noticed some clues and found the truth.

Meng Tu faced huge pressure, Heavenly Court came and secretly instigated him.

Meng Tu had initially felt fortunate and wanted to use Heavenly Court to make contributions and make up for his mistakes, but how could Heavenly Court be schemed against by him, a blade path Gu Immortal?

Meng Tu was instead schemed against by Heavenly Court, he made mistakes again and again until he had no way out other than to side with Heavenly Court.

To support this chess piece, Heavenly Court deduced the opportunity to advance to great grandmaster, which was the drinking blade wine deep underground in this place.

Meng Tu followed Heavenly Court’s guidance and came to autumn blade plain, he dug the ground and extracted a large amount of drinking blade wine.

When he took a small sip, his organs felt like they were being cut by blades, when he took a large sip, he felt so much pain that he wished for death, by the time he took the third sip, he had advanced to blade path great grandmaster.

From then onwards, he completely devoted himself to Heavenly Court and became the spy with second highest status in Northern Plains after Prince Feng Xian.

Later on, due to a lucky coincidence, his identity was exposed by Ma Hong Yun, but that was another story altogether.

Fang Yuan had deduced and confirmed that this place contained drinking blade wine, although the quantity was not much, he only needed a small amount. As for this Meng Tu, Fang Yuan had carefully picked him to test his emperor yama killer move.

Fang Yuan could not find a rank eight Gu Immortal to test the might of his emperor yama, that would be looking for trouble. As for ordinary rank seven Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan had no use for them. However, Meng Tu, who had peak rank seven battle strength, and was already renowned as a blade path quasi-great grandmaster, was an extremely good choice.

So Fang Yuan made a long trip to autumn blade plain, directly looking for trouble with Meng Tu.

“The attack just now was Meng Tu’s hidden killer move, its power is beyond ordinary, but I could block it with just emperor yama. This defensive method is pretty good.”

Fang Yuan assessed in his mind.

He had already activated emperor yama.

He was covered in a yellowish-brown robe of an emperor, turning into a ten feet giant.

The giant had a crown on its head which had strings of pearls in front and back. Its face was deep and dark, as if it was shrouded by a layer of fog, or was a dark whirlpool. Its sleeves were long and wide, it had a jade belt on his waist, and a bronze armor was covering his chest and back. The surface of the robe was adorned with golden threads that had weaved into thousands of ghostly monsters who stood orderly and without moving, giving a dignified aura.

Meng Tu’s attack was not without any effect, the thin bronze armor on emperor yama’s chest had a dent.

But with a little consumption of Fang Yuan’s soul foundation, this dent immediately bulged up, restoring itself.

This was the specialty of emperor yama!

Rank nine ghostly concealment did not expend anything and also functioned on its own, while ghost official garment relied on soul foundation.

Emperor yama, which was a combination of the these two moves, did not require immortal essence, but spent Fang Yuan’s soul foundation!

“Meng Tu, you are nothing much. You have cultivated here for several years, what new killer moves have you created? It will be a real pity if you don’t use them before your death.” Fang Yuan provoked.

Meng Tu laughed from anger, then looked at Fang Yuan with pity: “No matter who you are, you are seeking your own death by challenging me here! There used to be a defensive immortal formation here, but do you know why I persuaded the tribe to take it back?”

“Because as long as I am here, there is no need for an immortal formation to guard this place!”

Meng Tu fiercely stomped on the ground with his right foot.

At the next moment, the ground shook as endless blade lights surged up, countless blade path phantoms gathered into a huge army, surrounding Fang Yuan tightly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1564: Decent, I Suppose

In a blink of an eye, Fang Yuan was already surrounded tightly by countless blade path phantoms. Not only this, the endless blade lights filled the whole sky, isolating inside from outside.

“Whoever you may be, your defensive killer move is indeed amazing!” Meng Tu was protected by many layers of blade path phantoms, he gazed at Fang Yuan deeply before smiling and rubbing his hands to ease the numbness from the previous force.

“But!” Meng Tu raised his head slightly at the tall emperor yama, his gaze filled with pity: “You should never have come to find trouble for me here in autumn blade plain.”

“Hehe, actually, it was not wrong to find trouble for me here, but your timing is really bad, if it were when I had just come here, you might still have some chance at survival. But now, hehehe...”

Meng Tu laughed, holding his hands behind his back as he shook his head.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan continued after Meng Tu’s words: “But now, this place is already filled with your traces. Since years back, you have been comprehending blade path here, trying to breakthrough to blade path great grandmaster realm. Thus, you can greatly influence the dao marks of this place to form an environment that is close to an immortal battlefield killer move1, like this scene in front of me.”

“You...” Meng Tu’s expression immediately changed. He had believed no one knew of his trump card, and thus had never expected Fang Yuan to not only be unsurprised, but also speak of his trump card in such a familiar way.

Fang Yuan’s low and deep voice continued: “Do you know why I am looking for trouble with you? It is precisely because you have this method which can form such a battlefield environment. This is close to an immortal battlefield, but it is still not a true immortal battlefield, with an essential difference that your influence is already at its maximum, you are unable to control it at will, so it might have trapped me, but aren’t you also trapped?”

Meng Tu’s pupils shrunk rapidly, his pleased mood had completely disappeared.

“Who exactly are you?” He asked Fang Yuan nervously.

Fang Yuan chuckled, looking at his surroundings: “Although your blade path phantoms are in high numbers, their quality is not up to par. It happens that I also have a similar method, why don’t we spar a little.”

Fang Yuan’s yellowish-brown emperor robe suddenly emitted countless howls and shrieks. Next, those ghostly monsters weaved on the surface of the robe came alive, and started to move, then jumped out of Fang Yuan’s emperor yama robe one by one, turning from small to large!

These ghostly monsters had human shapes, but they all had malevolent and terrifying faces, knife-like claws, and bloodshot eyes, looking quite horrifying.

“Kill!” Meng Tu narrowed his eyes, as he mobilized his blade path phantoms to charge towards these ghostly monsters.

These blade path phantoms all had his appearance, but their faces were vague, and compared to the size of the ghostly monsters, they were like rats against carriage wheels.

The ghostly monsters howled and spread their huge arms like a tall tree waving its branches.

Bang bang bang, all the blade path phantoms on their way were destroyed.

The monsters ran amok while letting out crazed screams and howls, easily crushing all the blade path phantoms on their way.

“These ghostly monsters are really powerful, each having rank seven battle strength!” Meng Tu had rich battle experience, as he noticed this with just a short observation. His heart immediately felt as heavy as a mountain, his eyelids twitched violently.

“But it doesn’t matter, my blade path phantoms are created from the natural dao marks in autumn blade plain which are almost endless. Although the quality is not good, it can be made up with the quantity!”

Meng Tu quickly calmed down.

“Hmm, these yama children have quite the battle strength.” Fang Yuan assessed inwardly and was pleased.

These ghostly monsters originated from the ancient soul beasts that Fang Yuan had gathered in green ghost desert.

After Fang Yuan deduced the killer move emperor yama, he modified these ancient soul beasts, changing them into human shapes and turning them into yama children.

This inspiration came from blood deity Immortal Gu’s recipe.

Fang Yuan was a grandmaster in blood path, with the light of wisdom’s help, he had already completed the blood deity Immortal Gu recipe.

The current Fang Yuan, with his refinement path quasi-supreme attainment, could change any Immortal Gu recipe into an immortal killer move.

So Fang Yuan was able to grasp the immortal killer move blood deity.

The killer move Yama child was deduced from consulting not only blood deity, but also some main contents of Spectral Soul’s true inheritance.

For example, soul beast modification.

Spectral Soul modified the soul beasts in the Door of Life and Death, causing them to become loyal to him, they even faced Duke Long without fearing death.

There was also another soul path immortal killer move — Life and Death Retrieval.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had created this immortal killer move by comprehending the secluded domain of heaven and earth, the Door of Life and Death.

What kind of place was the Door of Life and Death?

When any living being die, their soul would return to the Door of Life and Death. It was only when Red Lotus Demon Venerable damaged fate Gu that the Door of Life and Death's power weakened greatly, allowing countless souls to linger behind in the living world to gradually turn into soul beasts.

Life and death retrieval had the power to let the Gu Immortal retrieve souls from the Door of Life and Death.

Fang Yuan completely merged this move into emperor yama, giving his yama children the ability to instantly return.

Soon, a yama child gave a miserable shriek, its thigh was broken and it was knocked down onto the ground, countless blade path phantoms immediately flocked towards it.

But Fang Yuan willed: “Return.”

At the next moment, this yama child immediately turned into fog which flew back into Fang Yuan's emperor robe, turning back into a monster image that was motionless, but was filled with injuries and a broken thigh.

“It can do this?” Meng Tu was astonished once again, his hands, which had been held behind his back, were loosened as his gaze towards Fang Yuan turned somewhat stunned.

This was too outrageous!

Meng Tu had been intending to rely on quantity to kill every yama child, but had not expected them to be able to return like this.

Theoretically, any killer moves could be deciphered, but Meng Tu was a blade path Gu Immortal and not a wisdom path Gu Immortal. Even if he was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, against a rank eight killer move like emperor yama, unless he was a wisdom path great expert, how could he decipher it on the spot?

Even Fairy Zi Wei could not decipher it on the spot.

When deducing reverse flow protection seal, she had to repeatedly gather clues from battles, continuously accumulating them before she was able to gain some results.

Fang Yuan's emperor yama used ghostly concealment as its base. This rank nine killer move was an artificial secluded domain of heaven and earth at the same level as Reverse Flow River, how could Meng Tu break it?

Meng Tu simply could not deduce it, he could only summon his courage to continue fighting with Fang Yuan.

However, the yama children's quantity was limited, although they killed a large amount of blade path phantoms, the injuries accumulated to a serious degree and they were recalled by Fang Yuan.

On the battlefield, there were fewer and fewer yama children, while blade path phantoms seemed to be unlimited. After all, Fang Yuan had limited time, he was not able to modify enough soul beasts.

“This battle has likely weakened autumn blade plain's foundation by more than half.” Meng Tu's expression was gloomy.

The price he had to pay was high as he was using the whole of autumn blade plain, the future benefits of Meng tribe, to engage in a battle of attrition with Fang Yuan.

But regardless of how much he had to sacrifice, Meng Tu still persisted with this tactic.

Fang Yuan's previous words had truly scared him, he had already regarded Fang Yuan as the strongest enemy in his life, so he was cautiously using any available methods to deal with Fang Yuan.

But, this was also what Fang Yuan intended to attain with his words.

Only this Meng Tu could be the best whetstone to test his emperor yama killer move.

There were less than ten yama children left and they stood on guard beside Fang Yuan, while the unlimited number of blade path phantoms surged towards them like a tidal wave.

“The speed of recovery is passable.” Fang Yuan's expression did not change, he had been standing on the same spot from the start, unmoving like a millennium old tree.

By now, the first yama child he had recalled to his emperor robe had already recovered completely.

When these yama children modified from soul beasts returned to the robe, they would start recovering from their injuries. Naturally, it expended Fang Yuan's soul foundation.

This involved a profundity of Gu refinement.

The yama child was still a soul beast and the healing, from another angle, was like a Gu refinement process.

“If I bring out these recovered yama children, I wonder what expression Meng Tu will have.” Fang Yuan smiled inwardly, but did not do this, instead using another method.

“Let me see emperor yama's offensive prowess.” At the next moment, Fang Yuan inwardly called out: “Soul explosion!”

The emperor yama suddenly spread its arms, its whole body shook as vast waves of darkness erupted out from it.

The yama children were completely safe in the dark waves, only shaking like they were being blown at by a fierce wind.

But those blade path phantoms were like weak candle-flames under a storm, instantly extinguishing!

In an instant, the whole battlefield was cleared, the unlimited blade lights were instantly destroyed.

Meng Tu was sent back hundreds of steps from the soul explosion and was half-kneeling on the ground, a glaring radiance was being emitted by his whole body as he pushed his defensive killer moves to their limits.

“Such power!” Meng Tu quickly stood up and looked up at Fang Yuan with a shaken expression: “This killer move is truly amazing, it should be a combination move containing both offense and defense! Its defense is so strong, and there is also the powerful method of sending out troops, but its strongest point is its offensive power! I have never seen or heard of this killer move, was it created by this person? If so, then who in the world is this person who can create such a killer move?”

“This soul explosion effect is decent, I suppose.” Fang Yuan gave a nod of approval.

One yama child was completely used to create the power of a peak rank seven killer move, but it still did not reach rank eight.

“Defense, yama child, recovery, soul explosion... these aspects are all at the peak of rank seven. But emperor yama’s true power lies in two other aspects. Let’s try this.”

Just as Fang Yuan was thinking, Meng Tu had already charged over, shouting: “Come, try my killer move, heaven and earth blade!”

Immortal killer move — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

In an instant, a ghost hand, as if from the netherworld, that was as large as a handheld fan appeared behind Meng Tu and directly entered his body. It then came out, disappearing from sight once again.

Puff!

Meng Tu suddenly coughed out a mouthful of blood, the core Immortal Gu of heaven and earth blade was robbed, the killer move failed and the backlash immediately inflicted serious injuries on him.

“What’s going on? Where is my Immortal Gu?!” Meng Tu’s heart shook in unprecedented fright!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1565: Forced To Die

Previously, in green ghost desert, Fang Yuan had used great thief ghost hand to steal rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token.

Great thief ghost hand was only a rank seven move, and its core was rank seven great thief Immortal Gu. But with the help of the killer move yama, its power rose to the point where it could steal a rank eight Immortal Gu from the legendary immemorial soul beast Qing Chou’s body.

Back then, great thief ghost hand’s effective range was extremely short, which required Fang Yuan to get near the target.

After returning, Fang Yuan modified yama, adding in great thief ghost hand to form the completely new emperor yama killer move. Right now, great thief ghost hand not only had a long range of effectiveness, it also had the ability to conceal itself.

It was not strange for Meng Tu to be struck by it, instead it would be unusual if he was not struck.

“This is your blade path Immortal Gu? Oh, a white butterfly’s appearance and the size of a fist, is it bladewing Immortal Gu?” Fang Yuan recalled the great thief ghost hand, he was holding a rank seven Immortal Gu in his hand, which looked like a butterfly with layers of exquisite cloud patterns on its wings.

Cold sweat dripped from Meng Tu’s forehead, he was lying weakly on the ground, he looked at Fang Yuan with narrowed eyes and spoke in a hoarse voice: “You... you actually seized an Immortal Gu from my immortal aperture? Did you obtain a true inheritance of Thieving Heaven?”

“True inheritance of Thieving Heaven... hehe, your guess is correct, I obtained one indeed.” Fang Yuan sneered as he stored bladewing Immortal Gu into his immortal aperture right in front of Meng Tu, sealing it in Heaven Sealing Mountain.

Meng Tu’s eyelids twitched violently.

Bladewing Immortal Gu was not his vital Gu, but he had raised it from its rank five mortal Gu stage. He had failed dozens of times and expended a huge amount of resources, as well as time and energy to raise it. He had never expected there would be a day where it would be forcibly seized.

Anger surged in Meng Tu’s heart. But even more than anger was fear.

Why did Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable become a calamity of the world in the past? Wasn’t it because of his Immortal Gu stealing methods? Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable could even steal things that were hidden in immortal apertures. And now, Fang Yuan had reproduced Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s method, the nightmare that he had casted upon an entire era was like a thick layer of dark clouds that shrouded Meng Tu’s heart.

Meng Tu healed his injuries to the best of his abilities while speaking with a tensed expression: “Since you are a theft path Gu Immortal and have also inherited Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s true inheritance, then you should be aware of the rule set by your ancestor Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable back then. Thieves have their own honor, always leave room for appeasement and never act too overbearingly! Since you have taken my bladewing Immortal Gu, what else do you want? If you want anything else, I can lend them to you.”

Back then, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had rampaged throughout the world, with no one able to stop him.

But Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was not evil by nature, he was good natured at his core, he advocated honor and glory. All he wanted was to return home, his cultivation journey and resources stolen were meant for this purpose.

After the five regions’ Gu Immortals knew of his goal, as well as being aware that they could not defend against Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s methods, whenever they ran into Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, they would lend anything Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable wanted as long as it did not endanger their lives.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable did not have insatiable greed, after he obtained the things he wanted, he spared the lives of the Gu Immortals and let them off. In most cases, he only took what he wanted, he did not care about other Immortal Gu or immortal materials no matter how high their value was.

Since Fang Yuan inherited Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s true inheritance and was Thieving Heaven’s inheritor, Meng Tu knew he could not win, and since the situation was extremely bad, he directly asked for mercy.

Fang Yuan frowned, mumbling: “If you truly want to do this, it is also not impossible...”

Just as he was speaking, Fang Yuan’s eyes suddenly glinted, pushing his hands forward as he activated immortal killer move soul explosion!

A vast wave of darkness immediately surged towards Meng Tu.

Meng Tu did not dodge, instead laughing: “You really thought that I, Meng Tu, am a person who begs for mercy?!”

Just as he ended his words, he was submerged by the soul explosion’s dark waves. But shortly afterwards, his body let out bright blade lights as he boldly self-detonated!

Boom!!

A loud explosion with terrifying might threw chaos into the whole of autumn blade plain!

After the explosion, not even the corpse of Meng Tu remained, while Fang Yuan’s emperor yama was mostly destroyed.

The quasi-immortal battlefield that covered the entirety of autumn blade plain also completely disintegrated, and autumn blade plain’s surface sank by five to six feet.

Fang Yuan quickly used his investigative methods to scan the battlefield, and after several scans, he finally confirmed Meng Tu was truly dead.

“Meng Tu actually self-detonated!” Fang Yuan was surprised and had a strange expression, he had not expected Meng Tu would be so bold and direct.

This was clearly somewhat different from the memories in Fang Yuan’s first life.

If Meng Tu was someone who disregarded life and death, why would he have sided with Heavenly Court?

It was because of this, Fang Yuan had felt Meng Tu was not strong-willed, so when Meng Tu asked for mercy, Fang Yuan subconsciously chose to believe him.

Naturally, Fang Yuan never intended to let go of Meng Tu, but when he was about to make a move, Meng Tu had self-detonated one step ahead of him!

Such determination and will was truly too straightforward.

“Maybe Meng Tu’s nature was gradually changed by all kinds of events. After all, humans do change. Also, in my first life, it was Heavenly Court who made a move, they definitely used some exquisite methods and plans to instigate Meng Tu.”

Fang Yuan shook his head as he gave one final glance at autumn blade plain before flying away quickly.

Almost all the edge Gu in autumn blade plain were destroyed after this battle. But their growth potential had become bigger, because with Meng Tu’s self-detonation, all his blade path dao marks were engraved in this land.

Fang Yuan had obtained little benefit in this battle.

Besides testing out emperor yama and obtaining the rank seven bladewing Immortal Gu, he did not achieve his original intention, which was Meng Tu’s soul and immortal aperture.

Meng Tu’s firm resolution had decreased Fang Yuan’s benefits, his goal was achieved — even in death, he did not let the enemy obtain the maximum benefits.

After Fang Yuan displayed great thief ghost hand, Meng Tu knew that his Immortal Gu could be stolen one after the other by Fang Yuan, with his serious injuries and the fact he was trapped at this place, he had no hope of escaping so he resolutely chose to self-detonate. From his point of view, it was a rather sensible action.

“It has always been difficult to prepare oneself for death, this Meng Tu has true courage! In my first life, he sided with Heavenly Court, he was cast aside by his tribe and Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world, sullying his reputation as a shameless person. This life, although he died, he will definitely have the glory of a fallen hero.” Fang Yuan sighed inwardly.

Regardless, his goal was still achieved after the battle.

Before stealing bladewing Immortal Gu, he had secretly taken out the drinking blade wine from deep underground. In the process, he had casually stolen hundreds of edge Gu which was better than nothing.

Fang Yuan retreated extremely quickly.

Autumn blade plain was in the territory of Meng tribe, when Meng Tu saw Fang Yuan intruding, he would have definitely sent a message to the tribe.

So not long later, Meng tribe will sense Meng Tu’s death and many Gu Immortals would come to inspect autumn blade plain.

The items were already obtained, Fang Yuan was looking towards the future when Northern Plains obstructed Heavenly Court’s expansion, so it was not worthwhile to kill these Northern Plains Gu Immortals, as it would weaken Northern Plains and be basically helping Heavenly Court.

As he was not in a fight, emperor yama’s robe gradually shrunk to a silk-like clothing, while the thin bronze armor on Fang Yuan’s chest and back stuck to his muscles.

“Oh? Someone is deducing me.” After a while of flying, Fang Yuan’s expression suddenly changed.

Meng tribe was a super force and had specially nurtured a wisdom path Gu Immortal. They were definitely shaken by Meng Tu’s death and were sure to look for the culprit.

Fang Yuan held his breath, carefully looking at his emperor yama killer move.

Emperor yama’s robe gradually expanded and continued to expand along with the increase in intensity of the deduction of Meng tribe’s wisdom path Gu Immortal.

Fang Yuan was defending against the other side’s deduction while also calculating his soul foundation expenditure.

Meng tribe’s wisdom path Gu Immortal deduced for a while before stopping, gaining no results.

Fang Yuan nodded, greatly pleased: “Emperor yama’s defense against wisdom path deductions has become stronger and is at rank eight level. Even if Fairy Zi Wei deduces about me, I can block her!”

The conclusion was, emperor yama’s defense and offense were at peak rank seven level. The yama children were extremely difficult to deal with, not only could they act flexibly, they could also rapidly recover, and even if there were losses, they could easily be replenished with soul beast modification.

Even more amazing was great thief ghost hand, this method could steal rank eight Immortal Gu. In this battle, with just one attack, it had determined his victory, forcing Meng Tu, a peak rank seven expert, to self-detonate.

At a similar level to great thief ghost hand was emperor yama's defense against wisdom path deductions. This was also what Fang Yuan needed the most.

“However, emperor yama still has room for improvement.”

“I should design an immortal battlefield killer move with emperor yama as the core.”

“This time, Meng Tu sealed the area, isolating himself from the outside world. If he had not shot himself in the foot, he could have freely escaped, and it would have been much more difficult for me to kill him.”

“Also, if I had an immortal battlefield killer move, when Meng Tu wanted to self-detonate, I would have sensed it one step earlier.”

Fang Yuan was always striving for improvements, he believed emperor yama could still be elevated further.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1566: Meng Tribe's Pursuit

Two Gu Immortals were flying rapidly in the sky, they had rough appearances and were tall and well-built. They were Meng tribe Gu Immortals Meng Zi Zai and Meng Zhao.

Like Fang Yuan had expected, the moment he showed himself, Meng Tu sent the message of an attack to the tribe.

But later, Meng Tu had used the blade path dao marks to cover autumn blade plain with an environment similar to an immortal battlefield, he was no longer able to send messages.

With such an important message like an invading enemy, Meng tribe naturally would not ignore it. They immediately sent a rank seven Gu Immortal, Meng Zi Zai, and a young rank six Gu Immortal, Meng Zhao, to deal with the enemy.

“Uncle, who do you think this ignorant guy who dared to intrude on our Meng tribe is? Hehe, I think it is probably a demonic Gu Immortal who cultivates alone without any contact with the outside world.” Meng Zhao said with a smile towards Meng Zi Zai.

Meng Zi Zai was stone-faced, but his eyes revealed a relaxed gaze as he agreed: “Your guess is logical, but you need to plan for the worst in everything. Currently, Longevity Heaven has appeared in front of everyone to unite every Huang Jin tribe, Old Ancestor Xue Hu has disappeared somewhere, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu has turned to the righteous path, the righteous path is at its peak. But there is actually someone who dared to go against the general trend and came to find trouble with my Huang Jin tribe, this fellow is either a lunatic or has some background. This is why the tribe sent us as reinforcements to prevent against any accident.”

"Uncle, you are right. But..." Meng Zhao paused before laughing: "That person is truly unlucky, they went into autumn blade plain which is guarded by Lord Meng Tu. Lord Meng Tu cultivates blade path and has quasi-great grandmaster blade path attainment, he is ranked among the top three rank seven experts in the tribe!"

"He might not just be a quasi-great grandmaster anymore." Meng Zi Zai sighed.

Meng Zhao's eyes brightened: "Uncle, you mean that...?"

Meng Zi Zai smiled: "He is the senior brother whom I admire the most in my life, no one in the tribe can match his talent in blade path. He has been cultivating in autumn blade plain for the past years, with his talent, he should have reached great grandmaster realm."

"Blade path great grandmaster! He is indeed worthy of being Lord Meng Tu!" Meng Zhao said excitedly.

"Hahaha, that's right." Meng Zi Zai laughed, he had received a lot of care from Meng Tu in his cultivation, he held Meng Tu in the highest regard. So when Meng Tu messaged the tribe about the enemy, Meng Zi Zai requested to be sent to aid Meng Tu. In fact, he had utmost confidence in Meng Tu, and he only came to catch up on old times with Meng Tu and introduce Meng Zhao to him.

Meng Zhao had been carefully picked by Meng Zi Zai as a Gu Immortal junior to be nurtured by the tribe. Meng tribe also had various factions representing their respective political benefits.

Meng Tu and Meng Zi Zai were of the same faction, Meng Zhao was selected by Meng Zi Zai to draw in new blood to this faction.

Meng Zhao also knew the significance of this trip, so he was very excited.

"Autumn blade plain is not far away from here, we can see senior brother after a short while. Sigh, I have not seen him for a few years, if he could become a blade path great grandmaster, it will be a huge help to our faction." Meng Zi Zai inwardly thought.

But right at this time, his body suddenly shook violently, then his expression paled, and his eyes widened in extreme shock.

"Uncle? What's wrong?" Meng Zhao noticed the change in Meng Zi Zai's expression and was doubtful. Since meeting Meng Zi Zai, he had never seen this calm uncle show such an appearance.

But Meng Zhao saw Meng Zi Zai becoming even more abnormal.

Meng Zi Zai had unknowingly lowered his speed, before finally floating in the air without moving like a statue.

His expression was deathly pale, his eyes were red and tears actually dripped down.

Meng Zhao's heart shook even more, something huge had definitely happened, but he did not dare to continue asking. He could only accompany Meng Zi Zai as they faced the chilling wind.

Meng Zi Zai was dazed for a good while before his expression changed once again. He looked terrifying, his eyes filled with raging fury.

Meng Zi Zai gave a loud shout, the shout was like thunder, resonating over all the surroundings. He then shot forward at an extremely fast speed.

Meng Zhao was caught off-guard, but quickly followed after coming back to his senses.

But how could his speed compare to the rank seven Gu Immortal Meng Zi Zai?

Soon, he was thrown far behind.

Meng Zhao was very puzzled: “What’s going on?”

He had a bad feeling in his heart: “Wait a moment! Uncle’s direction is towards autumn blade plain. Has Lord Meng Tu met with danger?”

Meng Zhao’s whole body shivered at this thought.

If it were really like this, then this was no doubt like a nightmare to him, and was very bad news for Meng tribe as well.

If Meng Tu, who had peak rank seven battle strength, died, then it was an extremely great loss for Meng tribe!

Meng Zhao hurried to autumn blade plain with all his strength.

“This... what happened here?!” Meng Zhao was shocked, before even reaching autumn blade plain, he could sense the surging blade path dao marks in the air.

Autumn blade plain’s original layout was already completely destroyed, replaced by countless blade marks which crazily cut across the land, forming pits and trenches all over the area.

Meng Zhao soon saw Meng Zi Zai kneeling on the ground, still like a statue.

He carefully descended to the ground, the dense blade path dao marks here stabbed into his skin, causing him to feel bursts of pain.

He walked to Meng Zi Zai’s side and shockingly discovered streams of tears on the latter’s cheeks!

Meng Zhao only saw Meng Zi Zai in autumn blade plain, he did not see Meng Tu. That guess in his mind immediately became more distinct by countless times, causing his expression to involuntarily turn into that of fright.

Meng Zi Zai slowly opened his eyes and looked at Meng Zhao, saying in a deep and hoarse voice that let anyone that heard it know the intense pain and anger he was restraining in his heart.

“Brother Meng Tu... has died in battle!”

Meng Zhao’s whole body shivered, despite already guessing it, when he heard Meng Zi Zai verifying it, he still could not endure the extreme shock.

Meng Tu had actually died in battle?!

With his battle strength, who could kill him?

Meng Zhao opened his mouth, and after a long while, said: “Uncle, Lord Meng Tu is so powerful, how could he be so easily killed? Maybe he is still alive and has only shifted the battle elsewhere.”

But Meng Zi Zai slowly shook his head: “When we were on the way just before, the tribe sent me a message saying Meng Tu’s soul lantern was extinguished. But I still held hope... until I arrived here...”

His voice choked as tears flowed out of his eyes once again.

A man does not easily shed tears, unless it is truly a heart wrenching matter!

Meng Zi Zai continued in a weak voice: “I know he has a killer move called blade sacrifice which is a self-destruction method, it destroys his immortal aperture, Immortal Gu and other resources to let out an unprecedentedly terrifying might. Using this move means he is definitely dead.”

“If so...” Meng Zhao quickly looked at the whole battlefield, feeling even more shocked.

Meng Tu was dead!

Such a powerful Gu Immortal had actually died, forced to self-detonate within such a short period of time.

Who in the world was the enemy?!

All kinds of past events and memories surfaced in Meng Zi Zai’s mind.

He had never expected a situation where Meng Tu died.

Meng Zi Zai cried for a while before slowly standing up.

His face turned expressionless as he said to Meng Zhao: “You should return, our Meng tribe definitely won’t let the matter of Meng Tu’s death go. But this enemy is unimaginably powerful! Meng Tu had immediately sent a message when the enemy appeared, we also moved out at once, moving here without resting the whole journey. But in such a short period of time, Meng Tu was unable to protect himself and was forced to self-detonate by the enemy.”

“I know his temperament, he probably wanted to use this move to drag the enemy with him. But from the looks of it, there is no traces of the enemy’s death. This is a powerful enemy which even blade sacrifice could not kill!”

“I must give chase, I will catch the culprit even if I have to spend my whole life! This is beyond your ability, you should return to the tribe and cultivate, don’t let this news be exposed.”

Meng Zhao nodded with a heavy heart: “I understand, you must be careful, uncle.”

With Meng Tu’s death, Meng tribe had lost a capable expert and this was not a light loss to them. At the same time, they had got in trouble with a powerful enemy with a mysterious origin and unknown goal, Meng tribe would seal this news for the moment to maintain stability.

As for Meng Zhao, his cultivation was too low and his status was not high, which could be seen from how the tribe had still not informed him of Meng Tu’s death.

“Don’t worry. Second supreme elder is personally coming with the Immortal Gu House Investigation Courtyard.” Meng Zi Zai patted Meng Zhao’s shoulder.

Meng Zhao nodded his head, putting his heart at rest as he left.

With Immortal Gu House Investigation Courtyard, they did not have to fear even if they encountered a rank eight existence.

Meng Zhao did not have to wait for long as he saw Investigation Courtyard appear in the horizon.

Not long later, Investigation Courtyard came to a stop, Meng tribe’s second supreme elder walked out of the courtyard, nodding at Meng Zi Zai solemnly before immediately starting to inspect the battlefield.

But why would Fang Yuan leave behind any clues?

After Meng tribe’s second supreme elder finished inspecting, his expression turned even heavier.

Meng Zi Zai said: “This mysterious enemy is very clean with their methods, I have already inspected the battlefield earlier, they have dealt with the traces with extreme proficiency.”

Meng tribe’s second supreme elder nodded his head: “No worries, we have Investigation Courtyard here!”

Investigation Courtyard was an information path Immortal Gu House, its specialty was to gather information. Meng tribe’s second supreme elder immediately activated one of its killer moves.

They actually managed to find some clues.

“He went in that direction, chase!” Meng tribe’s two Gu Immortals entered the Immortal Gu House and chased after Fang Yuan with fury and hatred.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1567: Front-back Divine Obstruction Needles

“The clues end here!” Meng tribe’s Immortal Gu House Investigation Courtyard slowly stopped in the air.

Meng tribe’s two Gu Immortals looked at each other.

Meng Zi Zai looked ahead at a lush valley that was starkly different from the surrounding grassland.

Such a valley would not form naturally, but the two Meng tribe immortals were not surprised. Meng tribe’s second supreme elder said in a heavy voice: “This is Sleeping Lady’s Divine Needle Valley.”

Meng Zi Zai frowned: “Is it her?”

Meng tribe’s second supreme elder was silent.

Sleeping Lady was a rank seven lone immortal who cultivated sound path, she did not have outstanding battle strength but she controlled an immemorial desolate beast divine hedgehog. This divine hedgehog was a sword path immemorial desolate beast, and had an ability to shoot out all the spines on its body, which was extremely fast and had terrifying power.

Sleeping Lady created Divine Needle Valley, being in control of the area between Meng tribe and Murong tribe.

She not only had the powerful method to control an immemorial desolate beast, her political wisdom was also excellent. She lived right between the two super forces, so no side dared to truly go against her. Because if one side did that, Sleeping Lady could easily side with the other super force.

The two Meng tribe Gu Immortals were silent.

The situation could become messy.

They followed the clues here, but they had not actually obtained any specific information regarding Fang Yuan.

Sleeping Lady’s own strength was not Meng Tu’s match, but if she sent the divine hedgehog, she might be able to kill Meng Tu.

This indeed made her a suspect. But...

This matter was troublesome to handle.

Meng tribe and Murong tribe had quite a good relationship with Sleeping Lady, they had expressed goodwill to her since long ago, trying to win her over and preventing her from siding with the other party.

The relationship between Meng tribe and Murong tribe was obviously not good.

Every super force had an instinct to expand their territories. Meng tribe and Murong tribe were so close to each other, how could their relationship be good?

If Sleeping Lady was the culprit, how could she have such guts by herself? So it was very likely she had already sided with Murong tribe. As a super force and a righteous Huang Jin tribe, Murong tribe could not attack another righteous path super force for no reason, so it was entirely possible for them to have used Sleeping Lady as the front.

If Sleeping Lady was not the culprit, then how should the two Meng tribe Gu Immortals investigate? Slight carelessness might make Sleeping Lady develop thoughts of siding with Murong tribe, then Meng tribe’s losses would undoubtedly be even bigger.

The two Gu Immortals pondered for a long while before second supreme elder finally said: “Let’s go, we will make a visit to Sleeping Lady and inform her of Meng Tu’s death. Only by being open and direct will Sleeping Lady realize our Meng tribe’s intention. After all, the clues stop at her Divine Needle Valley.”

Meng Tu nodded his head.

Investigation Courtyard had not concealed its traces, so the two Meng tribe Gu Immortals’ arrival had already startled Sleeping Lady.

However, Sleeping Lady maintained her composure, she had the qualifications and the confidence to cope with all situations, patiently waiting for the two Meng tribe Gu Immortals to come to her.

When Meng tribe’s two immortals reached her residence, they immediately narrated the situation to her. She then understood the situation and also realized how serious this matter was!

First, she declared her innocence which was immediately verified by the Meng tribe Gu Immortals. Secondly, she herself was worried when she heard that the clues disappeared in Divine Needle Valley.

“This mysterious culprit could kill Meng Tu, he definitely has powerful methods and terrifying battle strength. Friends, please do me a favor by coming with me to inspect the whole Divine Needle Valley.”

Sleeping Lady took the initiative to ask for help.

Meng tribe’s two immortals were joyous, this was what they wanted so they immediately agreed.

The three immortals moved in a group, carefully searching Divine Needle Valley.

Sleeping Lady was afraid too.

She had some knowledge of Investigation Courtyard’s power, since the clues disappeared in Divine Needle Valley, it was very likely the culprit was still hiding in her valley. Since this mysterious culprit could so viciously kill Meng Tu, why would he not be able to deal with her?

The three immortals searched for a long while but gained no results.

Meng tribe’s two immortals glanced at each other, the second supreme elder intentionally saying: “We have searched almost the whole Divine Needle Valley, is the killer really not here?”

Meng Zi Zai pretended to unintentionally reply: “Isn’t there still an area which we have not searched?”

Sleeping Lady knew these two were putting on a show, but she was not the culprit and sincerely wanted to search this place, so she nodded: “I specially designed this Divine Needle Valley for the divine hedgehog, only the deepest area of the valley is left now, please follow me.”

Meng tribe’s Gu Immortals followed Sleeping Lady to the depths of the valley.

An enormous pure-white hedgehog was resting at the dark valley floor. It was sleeping in a curled up position, its breaths were long and slow. It was covered with extremely sharp spines which were full of sword path dao marks.

The divine hedgehog was as large as a hill, Meng tribe’s two Gu Immortals slowly flew to its side, they were like ants in front of a carriage wheel.

“Such an amazing immemorial desolate beast!” Meng tribe’s second supreme elder softly praised.

Sleeping Lady’s expression somewhat softened, this was her most important capital that allowed her to survive in between two super forces.

Meng tribe’s second supreme elder carefully inspected before saying: “This batch of front-back divine obstruction needles seems to have very high quality. Sleeping Lady, when are you picking them?”

The sharp spines on the divine hedgehog’s body were rank eight immortal materials that could be plucked. Every sharp spine was a front-back divine obstruction needle.

Every time the divine hedgehog encounters a dangerous situation, it would shoot out all its sharp spines to kill the enemy. These released spines naturally could not be put back. When the divine hedgehog goes to sleep, new spines would once again grow on its body.

Sleeping Lady had unique methods which could make the divine hedgehog fall into deep sleep constantly. Doing that after feeding it till its full, Sleeping Lady gained an economic pillar which was the business of front-back divine obstruction needles.

These front-back divine obstruction needles were mostly sold to Meng tribe and Murong tribe, while the remaining small portion was put on sale in treasure yellow heaven.

Sleeping Lady thus was quite well off. Northern Plains was poor in resources, but Sleeping Lady relied on this divine hedgehog to live a far better life than most of the Northern Plains' Gu Immortals.

“I will pick them up soon, there will be four hundred and thirty-six needles this time.” Sleeping Lady replied seriously.

There were over a thousand spines on the divine hedgehog, but Sleeping Lady needed to leave behind those short spines to continue growing. What she plucked were the longest spines. Also, she could not sell all the spines, because without these spines, the divine hedgehog's battle strength would fall severely.

“Let's start.” Meng Zi Zai suggested.

“Please examine carefully, I will make the divine hedgehog remain asleep.” Sleeping Lady said.

Meng tribe's two Gu Immortals began to search for clues with Investigation Courtyard, the commotion was huge but Sleeping Lady's sound path killer move made the divine hedgehog remain deep asleep.

If the divine hedgehog was startled awake, it would definitely become furious and vent its anger on them, attacking randomly. Sleeping Lady had not completely subdued this beast, after all, she was not an enslavement path Gu Immortal.

“We have a new clue!” After a long while of searching, Meng Zi Zai suddenly said with a spirited expression.

Sleeping Lady was terrified: “This person actually infiltrated this deep into the valley and I did not sense it?”

The three immortals followed the trails found that it continued deeper down.

The three immortals followed the trail all the way, unknowingly reaching deep underground where the clues increased further.

Not long later, the trail changed direction, winding up towards the surface.

The three immortals followed the trail cautiously, arriving at the surface after a while.

“This is the territory of Murong tribe, it is hundreds of li away from Divine Needle Valley.” Meng tribe's second supreme elder frowned.

The clues completely disappeared here.

Meng Zi Zai's gaze flickered, Sleeping Lady fell silent, she would not make any statements in such a delicate juncture.

The three immortals inspected the surroundings for a long while, but did not find any other clues.

Sleeping Lady proposed to return to her valley to rest, Meng tribe's two immortals had not found any clues, so after thinking for a moment, they agreed.

But how could they have known when they returned to the valley, there was a shocking discovery waiting for them.

The extraordinary divine hedgehog was still in a deep sleep, but its whole body was bare, all the front-back divine obstruction needles were gone!

“What’s going on? My divine obstruction needles! I had stayed guard in Divine Needle Valley without going out for a hundred years, spending a large amount of food to feed the divine hedgehog and not stinting on repeatedly using my killer move to make it sleep before I was able to get it to this scale!” Sleeping Lady was pale with shock as she shouted in an anguished voice.

Meng tribe’s two immortals looked at each other, cold sweat dripping from their forehead, because they suddenly realized they were used by someone!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1568: Sleeping Lady Spits Blood

“I want Meng tribe to give me an explanation, now! Otherwise, although I might be a lone cultivator, I won’t let this matter drop!” Sleeping Lady fiercely stared at the two Meng tribe immortals.

Her losses were truly disastrous. This caused her to be so anxious and furious that she directly demanded for an explanation even though the other side was Meng tribe.

She was not like Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan lost his guts Gu business but still had many income sources like dragonfish business, spirit snake transactions, regretful spiders, eerie fire dragon python and so on.

To Sleeping Lady, losing these front-back divine obstruction needles was the same as losing her main financial pillar. Although she still had the divine hedgehog, to regrow the front-back divine obstruction needles would require time as well as an enormous investment!

Sleeping Lady had a long-term plan, every time she harvested some front-back divine obstruction needles, she did not pick all of them, instead leaving behind most of them to continue growing.

But the person who stole the front-back divine obstruction needles was too vicious, they did not leave behind even one tiny spine for Sleeping Lady.

Sleeping Lady’s losses were not only those spines which had grown to the limit, her future prospects were also affected.

“A pity that I don’t have methods to move this immemorial desolate beast into my immortal aperture! Putting it outside is truly not safe!” Sleeping Lady’s fists trembled, she even had a passing thought of suiciding.

But actually, even if she could move it, it would be troublesome.

First of all, she did not have full control over the divine hedgehog, if this immemorial desolate beast acted up inside her immortal aperture, she would suffer severe losses.

Secondly, if Sleeping Lady was about to undergo tribulation, heaven’s will would send much more powerful calamities and tribulations that would specifically target the divine hedgehog.

Finally, the divine hedgehog was Sleeping Lady’s trump card to survive between Meng tribe and Murong tribe. If she placed it in her immortal aperture, and there was a fight in the future, she might not be able to release it in time to face the enemies.

“Sleeping Lady, calm down, please calm down for a second.” Meng tribe’s second supreme elder repeatedly persuaded.

“Calm down? How can I calm down? You said a murder happened, Meng Tu died in battle, alright, I believed your Meng tribe and without verifying the truth, I let you guys in and even warmly welcomed you. You said you found evidence, but I did not find anything and only relied on your Investigation Courtyard. Later, there were indeed obvious clues, but were they truly left behind by the culprit? Does Investigation Courtyard not have an ability to tamper with clues?”

As she said this, cold sweat dripped down Sleeping Lady’s forehead.

She calmed down and looked vigilantly at the two Meng tribe immortals, a large amount of Gu worm auras started spreading from her body.

Sleeping Lady fixed her gaze at the two Meng tribe immortals while slowly retreating.

Meng tribe’s two immortals could only smile bitterly, but also understood Sleeping Lady’s mentality.

Right now, the divine hedgehog had lost all its spines, its battle strength had fallen to an all-time low, which was like Sleeping Lady’s own battle strength falling down sharply. The trump card which she had used to have dealings with the two super forces was now mostly gone, how could Sleeping Lady not be vigilant?

Meng tribe’s second supreme elder sighed bitterly: “Sleeping Lady, if this was really planned out by my tribe to plot against you to secretly steal this divine hedgehog’s spines, why would we bother returning with you? If we were plotting against you, we should have already deceived you into a trap like an immortal battlefield using the excuse of finding the trails of the culprit, don’t you think so?”

Sleeping Lady was silent for a moment before moving her eyes upward: “That is probably because your Meng tribe belongs to the righteous path and has to abide by rules, so you can’t directly make a move against me. On the other hand, I have already set an agreement with your Meng tribe, so you made this plan of lowering my battle strength first and then using eloquent speech to deceive me!”

Meng tribe’s two immortals could not help but glance at each other.

Sleeping Lady’s words were not unreasonable, her quick thinking made Meng tribe’s two immortals not know of what to say.

“Hmph!” Sleeping Lady continued, “You thought I am not aware of your righteous path’s tricks? You started this, if your Meng tribe won’t give me an explanation... then alright, I will let the world be the judge of it!”

“Stop!” Meng tribe’s second supreme elder quickly shouted, his and Meng Zi Zai’s expressions were ashen.

But it was too late!

Sleeping Lady directly revealed this matter in treasure yellow heaven, she quickly informed Murong tribe through her contacts.

In an instant, the matter Meng tribe had tried hard to hide about Meng Tu being killed, them being unable to find the culprit, and even implicating Sleeping Lady in losing her front-back divine obstruction needles, were completely revealed.

“You, you, you!” Meng Zi Zai pointed towards Sleeping Lady, his eyes were almost spouting fire of anger.

Meng tribe’s second supreme elder was also ashen-faced as he gazed at Sleeping Lady with narrowed eyes and killing intent.

Sleeping Lady’s expression was impassive, but was inwardly smiling bitterly.

She of course knew her action had greatly harmed her and Meng tribe’s relationship. But she had no other options!

She had to do this.

Any alliance agreement had the chance of being broken by one side. Today’s matter was also too severe, Sleeping Lady had to protect herself.

How could she, whose battle strength had fallen to rock bottom, protect herself?

Even if Meng Tu died, the super force Meng tribe was still not something a rank seven lone immortal like Sleeping Lady could go against.

Sleeping Lady believed the best method was to borrow the strength of others, to attract the attention of other Gu Immortals and Meng tribe’s competitor, Murong tribe, to this matter and support her to some extent. Even if Meng tribe had some harmful intentions, they would have to restrain themselves, after all, they were a righteous path force!

“Sleeping Lady, at this point, any more words have no meaning. But I will tell you not to be so suspecting, we were likely used by that person!” Meng tribe’s second supreme elder said in a deep voice.

The situation was obvious now.

Even if the two Meng tribe immortals did not cultivate wisdom path, they could deduce that the culprit was extremely vicious, not to mention how they had inexplicably forced Meng Tu to self-detonate, they intentionally left behind clues to lead Meng tribe’s pursuers to Divine Needle Valley. They then used them to lead Sleeping Lady away, which allowed them to conveniently take away all the spines of the divine hedgehog!

“Our Meng tribe will give you an explanation!” Before leaving, Meng tribe’s second supreme elder left behind this sentence.

Meng tribe’s two immortals left, Sleeping Lady immediately began to arrange a Gu formation around the immemorial desolate beast divine hedgehog.

Meng tribe had lost their clues so they could only head back.

Even if they obtained any clues now, they would be doubtful if this was another trap by the enemy.

Inside Investigation Courtyard, Meng Zi Zai suddenly said with a fierce glint in his eyes: “This culprit is really crafty, the matter has been exposed now and the whole world knows of it, how about we just sentence Sleeping Lady as the culprit?”

Whether Sleeping Lady was the culprit or not, if Meng tribe attacked and killed her, they could regain their prestige, resolving this crisis to their reputation. And who is to say they won’t be able to get the immemorial desolate beast divine hedgehog.

Meng tribe’s second supreme elder sighed: “I also thought of this. But, firstly, Investigation Courtyard is not able to deal with Sleeping Lady and the divine hedgehog in a short period of time. This place is also close to Murong tribe, there is no guarantee of them not interfering. Secondly, we have an alliance agreement with her, and will suffer a heavy backlash if we rashly attack her. Finally, the current Northern Plains’ situation is not the same as before.”

At present, Longevity Heaven had appeared in front of the world, Yao Huang had taken the position of South Desolation Immortal, and Longevity Heaven was uniting all the Huang Jin tribes. In this period of time, they were dedicating themselves to integrate the strength of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

Righteous path forces were basically all Huang Jin tribes, there was almost no need to integrate them. Longevity Heaven’s first plan was thus to merge lone cultivators with the righteous path.

This plan was, however, slightly obstructed when Heavenly Court sent someone disguised as Fang Yuan.

But Longevity Heaven still had not given up, they continued to make effort in this plan.

Thus, as a Huang Jin tribe, if Meng tribe rashly attacked the lone immortal Sleeping Lady and did not handle it properly, they would be investigated and blamed by Longevity Heaven.

This was what Meng tribe’s second supreme elder had the most worries about.

As the two Meng tribe immortals were heading back, Fang Yuan was also rushing back.

A pile of front-back divine obstruction needles was quietly lying inside his sovereign immortal aperture. Indeed, he was the culprit behind the entire matter.

Fang Yuan knew a lot about Meng tribe, and with his wisdom path attainment, he arranged a simple but effective trap.

And with his powerful luck, Sleeping Lady was indeed drawn away, letting him immediately succeed in this plan.

Ordinary Gu Immortals might not be able to get near the divine hedgehog, after all, their auras were distinct.

But Fang Yuan had familiar face and could completely disguise as Sleeping Lady. Even when the divine hedgehog slowly opened its eyes, he did not panic.

The divine hedgehog went to sleep once again, Fang Yuan was able to pluck all its spines. After obtaining them, Fang Yuan did not do anything to the sleeping divine hedgehog, he directly left.

In his first life’s memories, Sleeping Lady was also one of the experts who resisted Heavenly Court. As for the divine hedgehog, why would he take it?

It was of little value to Fang Yuan, instead it was better to let it continue to remain in Sleeping Lady’s hands. When Sleeping Lady nurtures a new batch of spines again, Fang Yuan could then come again to steal it!

Fang Yuan had no guilt even when killing others, let alone just stealing things.

“Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was indeed amazing to be able to create a path like theft path.” Fang Yuan had tasted its sweet benefits and now had a whole new view of theft path.

In the battle with Meng Tu, it was great thief ghost hand which determined the victory at once. If it had gone normally, Fang Yuan could not have so easily taken Meng Tu’s life.

“Before theft path’s appearance, Gu Immortals could fight each other to death but still might not be able to obtain much battle spoils. But with theft path’s appearance, they could obtain resources without the need to fight a life or death battle. The costs are reduced while the efficiency is raised, this is simply too amazing!”

“Unfortunately, right now is not a good time for me to go around stealing. On one hand, I lack theft path Immortal Gu, and only have the rank seven Immortal Gu Great Thief to support my theft path moves. On the other hand, I have already exposed great thief ghost hand back in Western Desert, if I go around robbing all over the place, someone will probably connect the clues and deduce my true identity.”

“There is still a crucial immortal material lacking from the myriad self Immortal Gu recipe. After this, I will hurry back to Lang Ya blessed land and refine myriad self Immortal Gu.”

Although Fang Yuan had some theft path methods, he could not overdo it.

Because his soul cultivation was the more urgent matter.

Increasing his soul foundation meant he could make more use of emperor yama, his battle strength as well as plans would be guaranteed. But cultivating soul required guts Gu, required soul cores, and also required the goods from green ghost desert, Suan Bu Jin’s identity needed to be kept a secret. This was a chain of requirements.

“Oh right, I also cannot let this matter be easily revealed.” Fang Yuan snickered, immediately spreading rumors in treasure yellow heaven, saying Sleeping Lady was lying and scheming against Meng tribe, the front-back divine obstruction needles were kept by herself in preparation to undergo tribulation and advance to a higher level!

The truth was even more obscured now, which was even more helpful in concealing Fang Yuan.

As for Sleeping Lady, when she learned of these rumors, she immediately spat out blood from anxiety and anger!

Naturally, this was of no concern to Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1569: Fifty Percent!

Treasure yellow heaven.

A large lump of transparent fire was silently burning while letting out vast treasure light.

The fire immediately attracted the attention of many Gu Immortals the moment it appeared.

Many wills and a few divine senses were attracted towards the scene.

Black Heaven Temple’s Gu Immortal Zhang Ji smiled, he was the owner of this transparent fire.

“I never expected this expedition to give me a batch of a rare rank seven immortal material. Its profits should be enough to replenish my immortal essence reserves.”

While thinking, he responded to everyone’s questions about the price.

His price was only a slight bit higher than the norm, so many had the thoughts of purchasing.

“I want all of this.” One divine sense directly contacted Zhang Ji, offering a high price.

Zhang Ji’s heart thumped in excitement, somewhat disbelieving: “You want all of this? The price...”

“Make the deal.” The other side was extremely straightforward, directly giving a large amount of immortal essence stones.

“Okay!” Seeing such a huge amount of immortal essence stones, Zhang Ji’s eyes immediately brightened, agreeing immediately.

The transaction was completed quickly, the Gu Immortals who were observing the fire were somewhat caught off-guard.

“No need to worry, I still have stock left!” Zhang Ji’s divine sense was constantly fluctuating, he quickly proclaimed and took out another lump of transparent fire.

It was just that this transparent fire’s amount was much smaller than the previously sold lump.

The first transaction had stimulated other Gu Immortals’ desire to purchase, after all, this transparent fire was indeed rare in the market. Usually, they could only accumulate it over continuous purchase, and every purchase was normally only a fist sized or a basin sized lump of fire. They were different from now where the transparent fire was the size of a carriage! They could not lose this rare opportunity.

“But this time, I am going to raise the price.” Zhang Ji’s smile became brighter. He did not have much knowledge of the transparent fire. This was also his first time selling it and he did not have a proper understanding of the market situation, so the enthusiasm of other Gu Immortals was beyond his expectations.

He continued to raise the price, but few buyers gave up, so the starting price continued to become higher.

“Darn it, looks like I made a mistake in selling earlier!” Zhang Ji looked at this scene with some regret, while also admiring that buyer’s decisiveness.

Zhang Ji was not foolish, he had divided his stock of transparent fire into three portions. The first portion was to test the waters, while the one he was selling now was the second portion.

As the transactions continued to increase, he got a clearer grasp over the market situation.

“Floating life fire!” Fang Yuan looked at this lump of transparent fire in his sovereign immortal aperture with a delighted expression.

It was him who took the lead and purchased Zhang Ji’s goods.

This floating life fire was transparent and burned silently without any heat. But when it burns a living being, all kinds of past scenes of this living being would turn into images that would constantly replay in the floating life fire. At that time, the floating life fire would emit a multi-colored radiance, and would no longer be transparent.

Floating life fire needed to be preserved with special methods.

Zhang Ji had coincidentally obtained a large amount of floating life fire, he did not have such methods.

After Fang Yuan obtained it, he immediately used a method to preserve the floating life fire. This method was not from Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, but was obtained from Lang Ya true inheritance which he had exchanged Spectral Soul’s true inheritance for.

“I had thought I needed to travel far and find trouble with other people to seize this floating life fire. Who would have thought that someone was selling it in treasure yellow heaven in such a large quantity now. This luck is truly amazing!”

Fang Yuan smiled.

There were bound to be many Gu Immortals who wanted to purchase floating life fire.

But Gu Immortal wills were usually unable to make the decision, they could only follow the commands left by the Gu Immortal.

And to be able to take out so many immortal essence stones at once was also not something ordinary Gu Immortals could do.

Even if they had the capital, those observing Gu Immortals would want to bargain as the amount they required was usually not that big.

Because of many reasons, Fang Yuan was able to make the first move and gain it for a cheap price!

As for the risk?

This Zhang Ji was a Gu Immortal of Black Heaven Temple, a person of Heavenly Court, but he did not know the buyer was Fang Yuan, neither did Fang Yuan know of his identity.

Transactions in treasure yellow heaven were very secure. If Heavenly Court was able to use this to scheme against Fang Yuan, to have a such a deep influence even in treasure yellow heaven, then it was better for Fang Yuan to just surrender.

All in all, the chance of this was rather low.

Drinking blade wine, edge Gu, front-back divine obstruction needles, and floating life fire, these four main immortal materials were all gathered. Fang Yuan still had to purchase some more edge Gu, which could be completely satisfied by treasure yellow heaven, if not, he still had a channel left in Western Desert’s Xiao clan.

Since there was no meaning in staying outside, Fang Yuan hurried back to Lang Ya blessed land.

Passing through the immortal formation, Fang Yuan returned to Lang Ya blessed land. The process was smooth with no danger.

Fang Yuan’s return was much earlier than expected, this made Lang Ya land spirit extremely happy.

“Since you have returned, I will prepare for the refinement.” Lang Ya land spirit was extremely active, the pressure from Heavenly Court was really too huge.

“I still need to thank first supreme elder and the Gu Immortals of the other three races for lending me so many immortal essence stones.” Fang Yuan thanked.

Without their assistance, how could Fang Yuan take out such a huge sum?

“Don’t stand on ceremony. We are all on the same side, you getting stronger means Lang Ya blessed land will be even more safe. If Lang Ya blessed land is in danger, they also won’t be able to escape due to the alliance agreement!” Lang Ya land spirit’s reply was direct and frank.

Indeed, the present situation made it such that Lang Ya Sect as well as the snowmen, rockmen, and inkmen were in the same boat. If anyone encountered danger, the rest would not be able to escape.

Fang Yuan handed the four immortal materials to Lang Ya Sect to process.

These immortal materials required at least fifteen days of processing, the steps were extremely tedious, repetitive and complicated. This was the case when all the hairy man Gu Immortals of Lang Ya Sect put in their full effort.

The superiority of myriad self Immortal Gu’s recipe could be seen from this!

With his refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment, Fang Yuan’s myriad self Immortal Gu recipe was so outstanding that it could be said to have reached the limits of the world with no room left for improvements.

The crucial procedures of the Gu refinement were shortened to the limit, there were three in total. While the other procedures had over ten thousand steps, most of them were the processing of the immortal materials.

Fang Yuan processed the immortal materials to their best state, spending most of his effort in this. Even if the expenditure of the immortal materials increased because of this, he did not hesitate.

Because these procedures were the ones which Gu Immortals could control. While those crucial steps of the Gu refinement could only rely on the collision and interweaving of the dao marks, Gu Immortals could not control these changes.

Through this method and with the help of Lang Ya Sect’s Gu refinement abilities, the success rate of Fang Yuan’s myriad self Immortal Gu recipe was at an incredibly high fifty percent!

That meant Fang Yuan had an equal chance to succeed or fail in refining it.

Fifty percent success rate was truly too terrifying.

The absolute majority of Gu Immortals would be happy if they had even one percent success rate when refining Gu.

However, this was also mainly because Fang Yuan was a refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster!

How many refinement path quasi-supreme grandmasters were there in the world? Since ancient times until now, an expert at Fang Yuan’s level could be counted with one’s fingers. Those who surpassed his level only amounted to three people in the whole of history.

Moreover, there were extremely few Gu Immortals who cultivated multiple paths, and how many of them would cultivate refinement path?

From another angle, most Gu Immortals were actually amateurs in refining Immortal Gu. It would be preposterous if they could raise the success rate of the Gu refinement!

In fact, even Fang Yuan, who had deduced it, was in slight disbelief over the fifty percent success rate.

But then he thought of Long Hair Ancestor.

Long Hair Ancestor had refined many Immortal Gu in his life, including rank seven and rank eight Immortal Gu. He was a refinement path supreme grandmaster, if he did not have such a success rate, would Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable find him for help?

“Furthermore, I am making use of the whole of Lang Ya Sect’s strength to refine this Gu. In the present age, when comparing refinement path attainment, Lang Ya Sect should no doubt be the number one force.”

“Besides these, the third main reason is my powerful luck.”

First was his refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level, second was the number one refinement force’s all-out help, and third was the powerful luck obtained from Giant Sun’s true inheritance.

Three big reasons combined to form this fifty percent success rate of myriad self Immortal Gu’s refinement!

“I am finally free from the curse of refining Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan was extremely moved to the point of having the urge to tear up.

He knew the most important reason was him becoming a refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster!

The other two reasons were helpful, but they were more or less present in all the previous Gu refinements. His fifty percent success rate was mainly still brought by the refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment.

“And this is when I am only deducing and modifying the Immortal Gu recipe. In the future, when I make up for my lack of foundational skills in Gu refinement, I can personally take charge of the refinement process, the success rate will increase even more!”

“It is a pity that I don’t have enough time...”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1570: Myriad Self Immortal Gu!

Lang Ya blessed land, Cloud Cover Continent.

Lang Ya land spirit breathed in deeply, shouting: “Formation, activate—!”

Like millions of bees dancing and buzzing, the refinement path super formation activated. Soon, a huge stream of white-gold light burst out and filled the surroundings.

“Enter the formation!” Lang Ya land spirit ordered as he entered the immortal formation at the same time.

Next, Sixth Hair, Third Hair, Fourth Hair, Seventh Hair, and the other hairy man Gu Immortals entered the formation.

Fang Yuan stood at the periphery of the immortal formation as an observer.

He was not personally involved in this Gu refinement, he had handed it to Lang Ya land spirit and the other hairy man Gu Immortals.

Even though Fang Yuan had quasi-supreme refinement path attainment level, he could not compare to Lang Ya Sect’s Gu Immortals in terms of practice of refinement fundamentals.

“During normal times, I can still participate in the Gu refinement. But this time, Lang Ya land spirit is using the refinement path immortal formation that Long Hair Ancestor had created personally back then, this immortal formation can only be used by hairy man Gu Immortals. As a human Gu Immortal, if I enter, I will be killed by the immortal Gu formation.”

Lang Ya blessed land had deep foundations, this time, they took out one of Long Hair’s refinement path formations.

Of course, with Fang Yuan’s methods, he could use his transformation path attainment to turn into a hairy man Gu Immortal. But most likely, Lang Ya Sect wanted to keep this formation a secret and did not want to expose it to Fang Yuan.

“I used Spectral Soul’s true inheritance to exchange for Lang Ya true inheritance back then. Evidently, this Long Hair refinement path formation is something Lang Ya land spirit is keeping as a trump card, he will not trade it away. Like the lead soul into dream killer move within Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, I am also keeping it for myself.”

Fang Yuan watched from the side as bright light shone in his eyes.

Even though Lang Ya Sect pushed Fang Yuan to the side, he was quite satisfied with it.

Facing the huge pressure from Heavenly Court, Lang Ya Sect was very anxious, they even activated this Long Hair refinement path formation to quickly refine myriad self Immortal Gu for Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan was one of them after joining Lang Ya Sect, increasing his battle strength was very beneficial for relocating Lang Ya blessed land!

The Long Hair refinement path formation activated slowly, the light continued to change colors, it was originally white-gold, before turning orange-gold, and dark-gold.

The dark-gold light started to flicker with starlight specks, it was very bright.

The immortal formation’s buzzing got softer, after a few breaths of time, it became completely silent without any sound.

The hairy man Gu Immortals and Lang Ya land spirit were all standing in a big circle.

Lang Ya land spirit first acted as he activated an immortal formation, opening it and taking out a bunch of already prepared immortal materials.

This immortal material resembled chilled and dried sunflowers, the moment it appeared in the immortal formation, it turned into smoke and fused into the dark-gold light.

Fang Yuan watched solemnly, this was the first crucial step, after the smoke completely fuses into the dark-gold light, they would be able to continue.

Fang Yuan did not feel much pressure.

If this step failed, his losses would not be big, he could restart again.

But an hour later, the immortal material completely turned into smoke and fused into the dark-gold light perfectly.

Within the immortal formation, the dark-gold light continued to condense and shrink, it was everywhere earlier, but now it was the size of a house, trapped within the Long Hair refinement path formation.

When the starlight specks within the dark-gold light turned into ice stars, Lang Ya land spirit activated the immortal formation and started the second step.

As time passed, immortal materials were sent into the immortal formation by the hairy man Gu Immortals one by one, they were all fusing together.

Three days and nights later, Third Hair started tossing Gu worms into the immortal formation.

He first threw in self reliance Gu.

This Gu worm was only rank three, it was shaped like a cockroach, a dark brown colored flat body. There were feelers on its head, and wings on its back.

Self reliance Gu was a strength path Gu worm that had healing effects. The greater the Gu Master’s strength, the greater the healing effect.

This was a rare Gu worm, mortals could not find one even if they tried, but Sixth Hair tossed in several hundreds of them.

The quantity of self reliance Gu was strictly calculated.

Because this involved the quantity of dao marks, when refining Immortal Gu, the numbers had to be precise!

When all of the self reliance Gu were tossed in, Lang Ya land spirit shouted as he activated Long Hair refinement path formation fully.

At once, within the formation, fire pillars rose, hundreds or thousands of them that were meters tall blazed within the dark-gold light.

Strong air currents were blowing outwards, but the refinement path immortal formation perfectly trapped them. The hairy man Gu Immortals who were standing around the immortal Gu formation could not feel the temperature rising at all.

The Long Hair refinement formation was very exceptional!

The orange-red fire pillar continued burning for forty-eight hours before weakening. The dark-gold light was completely burned up, even the self reliance Gu were burned into an odd rock that was the size of a horse carriage.

After waiting for a while, the rock solidified completely, Fang Yuan let out a sigh of relief. The second step of refining myriad self Immortal Gu was finally over.

Next, Lang Ya land spirit and the rest started to rest and recuperate while Fourth Hair and Sixth Hair worked to sustain the immortal formation, carving this rock.

After some time, the rock was completely ground up and turned into a pile of rock fragments scattered on the ground.

Third Hair stopped resting and took out the drinking blade wine, pouring it over these rock fragments.

This drinking blade wine was obtained by Fang Yuan not long ago when he killed Meng Tu. It had great use now, turning the rock fragments into traces of grey smoke.

The grey smoke floated up and condensed into balls of smoke, resembling miniature lanterns that floated in the air.

Fourth Hair and Sixth Hair started to rest, while Third Hair took out a number of all-out effort Gu.

This Gu worm was shaped like a rhinoceros beetle, it was a mortal Gu. It had the size of an adult’s palm, and was very heavy. It was oval in shape, and had a strong armor exoskeleton. There was a strong horn on its head, looking heavy and powerful. It had several pairs of legs, all strong and thick. Its body was dark brown, and glistened with a metallic surface. People only needed one glance to know it was not ordinary.

Fang Yuan had not refined all-out effort Immortal Gu yet for now, these were all mortal Gu, from rank one to five.

The Gu worm entered the smoke and did not mix with it.

At this time, Lang Ya land spirit started to act, opening the inventory and taking out the floating life fire that had already been prepared.

Within the transparent fire, large numbers of all-out effort Gu and grey smoke started to fuse.

This was a long step.

Half a month later, the fusing was completed, be it the floating life fire, all-out effort Gu, or grey smoke, they all vanished, a drizzle was left.

This drizzle was restricted by the refinement path immortal formation, it was trapped at the center of the formation, raining down endlessly.

By now, the third crucial step was completed too.

Time was pressing now, the drizzle was not stable, it was becoming smaller rapidly.

All the hairy man Gu Immortals and Lang Ya land spirit started to act, they all had different methods, they were in charge of different segments of the Gu refinement.

Front-back divine obstruction needles and other immortal materials were all tossed in, as well as large numbers of mortal Gu.

The myriad self Immortal Gu recipe that Fang Yuan deduced did not expend any Immortal Gu, instead, a large number of immortal materials and mortal Gu were used.

This way, he would not lose Immortal Gu, but his immortal materials and mortal Gu expenditure would increase by tens of times, the amount of work needed for the refinement also increased drastically. This was also why Lang Ya Sect was using the Long Hair refinement path formation.

As time passed, all the crucial steps were passed without much danger or accidents.

After two months in Lang Ya blessed land’s time, the refinement of myriad self Immortal Gu reached the final crucial step.

Fang Yuan had time path methods of course, but he could not reduce the time needed. The shrinking of time by time path was essentially carving time path dao marks to influence it. During the refinement process, the addition of time path dao marks would disrupt the refinement itself.

Two months was Fang Yuan’s current limit already. He had used all of his time path methods that could be used to perfectly refine the Immortal Gu without additional disruption, by turning the dao marks into materials for the refinement.

The immortal formation resonated and shook, bright light burst into the sky.

Lang Ya land spirit let out a deep sigh, the rest of the hairy man Gu Immortals had tired expressions, but joy was on their faces.

The final step succeeded.

The light faded as a rank seven Immortal Gu appeared.

This Gu worm was more than ten meters long, it was like a centipede that shined in a metallic luster, the mouthpiece on its head looked dangerous while there was a pair of long antennas on its forehead, it had five thousand legs on either side of its body, having a total of ten thousand legs.

Rank seven Immortal Gu Myriad Self!

“To think that the first refinement succeeded!”

“Haha, we finally refined it.”

The hairy man Gu Immortals cheered, they were extremely happy.

Myriad self Immortal Gu was trapped at the center of the refinement path immortal formation, because Fang Yuan was not the person who refined it, it was currently still ownerless.

But soon, Fang Yuan refined it rapidly using the help of the refinement path immortal formation.

“Using one attempt to refine this rank seven Immortal Gu, haha.” Fang Yuan was also very happy, he had never even dared to dream of such a thing happening in the past!

Fifty percent success rate was too high.

Fang Yuan tried to inject immortal essence into myriad self Immortal Gu, it started to shine as countless Fang Yuan strength path phantoms appeared from within the light, it was like using the killer move myriad self.

“The effect is only slightly weaker, after all, the killer move myriad self uses too many Gu worms.” Fang Yuan could feel the difference: “The immortal essence expenditure has fallen greatly, the activation is also much easier now, it only needs one thought. The killer move back then needed time to prepare no matter how familiar I was with it, it also used a lot of mental energy!”

Fang Yuan tested it and was extremely satisfied with myriad self Immortal Gu!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1571: Luo Po Seal?

Lang Ya blessed land, Cloud Cover Continent.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Self Giant Hand!

Fang Yuan floated in the air, his aura exploded with a loud sound as a giant hand appeared out of nowhere, slamming towards the ground.

Instantly, air currents pushed out as the huge palm descended like a toppling mountain, slamming fiercely on the cloud soil ground.

Cloud Cover Continent was designed by Lang Ya land spirit personally, it was made of cloud soil, able to float in the air without ever landing.

The cloud soil was not tough, Fang Yuan’s myriad self giant hand had rank seven attacking power, this hand shattered the cloud soil of all the surroundings, falling down towards the vast sea below.

Fang Yuan was testing his killer move, he was not trying to destroy Cloud Cover Continent, thus when his hand landed on Cloud Cover Continent, Lang Ya blessed land’s super immortal formation activated, a silver light resembling flowing water appeared on Cloud Cover Continent.

After myriad self giant hand landed on the cloud soil, the silver light was destroyed as cloud soil scattered around, the surrounding terrain was completely altered, there was a huge handprint on the ground that was several meters deep.

Fang Yuan willed as the giant hand quickly vanished.

Seeing the effect, he nodded in satisfaction.

“With myriad self Immortal Gu, giant hand is much easier to use now!”

In the past, in order to use myriad self giant hand, Fang Yuan had to first activate the killer move myriad self and store countless strength path phantoms in his immortal aperture. Next, using these strength path phantoms, he had to use group strength Gu to unleash strength path giant hand.

The process was very tedious, if he did not store strength path phantoms in his immortal aperture, he could not use giant hand in a life-and-death battle. But strength path phantoms could not be stored for a long time, they would disappear after some time and disintegrate on their own.

It was usable for battles he was prepared for, but in unexpected situations, or when he was ambushed, myriad self giant hand could not be used.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan had deep wisdom and a cautious mind, he had always been keeping an eye out for such situations, he did not end up in an awkward spot.

“In the past, using myriad self killer move already needed self strength Immortal Gu, bitter strength Gu, borrow strength Gu, self reliance Gu, refine essence spirit Gu, amplify effect Gu, earth strength Gu, fire, water, wind, lightning strength Gu and countless other mortal Gu, but now I just need to use myriad self Immortal Gu.”

“But now, my myriad self giant hand only needs myriad self Immortal Gu as the core with some group strength Gu as the supplementary mortal Gu, it requires less than thirty Gu worms in total, and is very simple compared to the past.”

The former myriad self giant hand was evidently unusable now.

After refining myriad self Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan modified myriad self giant hand into a new version using myriad self Immortal Gu as the core, the core self strength Immortal Gu was no longer used.

This meant that self strength Immortal Gu could be used in other aspects.

Of course, he could also add it into the myriad self giant hand killer move to increase its strength.

That would depend on Fang Yuan’s further modification.

“Actually, myriad self giant hand has room for improvement. For example, if the speed is insufficient, I can add mortal Gu to fix that flaw. I can also add soul path Immortal Gu to allow giant hand to capture souls as well. Furthermore, the power of giant hand is merely limited by my strength path dao marks, I can continue to strengthen it. The current giant hand has rank seven power, but is not at the peak, it is because my sovereign immortal body’s strength path dao marks cannot sustain greater power.”

Fang Yuan had only started modifying myriad self giant hand, after changing the core Immortal Gu, there was still huge room for improvement.

In the past, the killer move was too complicated and expended too much thinking and time, adding more Gu worms would lower its usability.

But now, myriad self killer move was condensed into one Gu worm, the process was very simple, he could add more mortal Gu and Immortal Gu to make an even stronger giant hand.

Fang Yuan’s practice this time was not just on the strength path giant hand, he was also testing Lang Ya Sect’s defensive super immortal formation.

When Feng Jiu Ge invaded earlier, this immortal formation had been very useful, it preserved the lives of many variant human Gu Immortals and also helped Lang Ya Sect get through that tough situation.

Feng Jiu Ge used separation song on the immortal formation multiple times, but Fang Yuan had expected it and split the immortal formation into many layers, Feng Jiu Ge separated many layers but did not get to the core after all.

This time, Fang Yuan did not just modify myriad self giant hand, he also modified the immortal formation and allowed its range to extend throughout Lang Ya Sect.

Earlier, when the strength path giant hand landed on Cloud Cover Continent, this immortal formation was the reason why the destructive effect was reduced.

After testing strength path giant hand, he moved on to the more important matter.

Immortal killer move — Reverse Flow Protection Seal!

This killer move determined Fang Yuan’s upper limit, it was only through this he could contest rank eights.

Right now, the core of the killer move was the secluded domain of heaven and earth Reverse Flow River, myriad self Immortal Gu, perseverance Immortal Gu, pulling water Immortal Gu, and over a hundred mortal Gu. Even though it was more complex than myriad self giant hand, this was way simpler than the previous reverse flow protection seal!

After simplifying the killer move, the success rate of activation rose sharply, it was more usable in battle now.

“During the battle in green ghost desert, I was sneak attacked and could not use reverse flow protection seal in time. Now, the activation time has shrunk greatly, I should be able to deal with most assaults.”

“However... I can no longer conceal reverse flow protection seal’s modifications and set a trap. The trick I used on Thunder Ghost True Monarch only works once.”

Fang Yuan felt it was a pity.

Reverse flow protection seal killer move had become much easier to use now due to myriad self Immortal Gu, but this was Fang Yuan’s current limit. Adding more Immortal Gu would be difficult.

He could no longer set a trap like earlier and reveal a brand new reverse flow protection seal within a short period of time.

After some deductions, Fang Yuan went into seclusion again, deducing other killer moves.

Even though Fang Yuan was calm, he was filled with pressure.

Against a huge force like Heavenly Court, who would have no pressure?

The refinement of myriad self Immortal Gu, was not only to elevate several killer moves. Fang Yuan’s true motive was to create a third variation move — Luo Po Seal!

“I was affected by Lu Wei Yin’s immortal killer move and lived through three lifetimes. These dreams were very mystical, especially the third life, it was a huge inspiration for my Luo Po seal.”

“But I had a lot of obstructions earlier when deducing Luo Po seal, there was a huge hurdle to cross. This myriad self Immortal Gu is like a bridge that might allow me to cross this hurdle and attain success!”

Fang Yuan felt excitement and anticipation.

Even though he raised his reputation using the battle against Thunder Ghost True Monarch and suppressed Feng Jiu Ge, Fang Yuan knew that he was inferior to Feng Jiu Ge in many aspects.

Feng Jiu Ge could fight rank eight because he had a deep accumulation of sound path dao marks, evenly matching rank eight. Even without rank eight sound path Immortal Gu on him, his killer moves could reach quasi-rank eight because of the amplification of his dao marks.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan could fight rank eight because he was using the vast number of dao marks inside Reverse Flow River. His own dao marks in several paths reached rank seven, but he was still far from rank eight.

Even if he annexed the blessed lands inside City Well, he would still be far from rank eight.

Fang Yuan was not inferior to Feng Jiu Ge in talent.

Feng Jiu Ge was unprecedented in creating assimilation wind song, he was the first Gu Immortal able to summon the winds of assimilation. Meanwhile, Fang Yuan created myriad self and combined strength and enslavement path, it was also a revolutionary creation. The two of them were equally matched.

Now that Fang Yuan condensed the killer move into myriad self Immortal Gu, his status had risen again. Because he could create an entirely new path along this route of development! Compared to just a killer move, there was much more room for development.

Gu cultivation paths were created like this, some were the fusion of two paths, while others were sub-classification of existing paths.

Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge were only different in terms of age.

How many years had Fang Yuan cultivated since rebirth? Feng Jiu Ge had already lived for hundreds of years.

Fang Yuan made such achievements before the age of fifty, it was very rare that he could match Feng Jiu Ge. Compared to normal people, he was simply a monster, his cultivation level rose at an unbelievable rate, it could not be assessed normally. After all, Fang Yuan’s rebirth had huge advantages.

And the truth was, Fang Yuan’s own dao mark accumulation was quite high.

But now, heaven’s will was against him and made his tribulations weak so he could not get dao marks. Annexing immortal apertures was a way, but the upper extreme heavenly eagle had not returned to him yet, while other methods needed specific Immortal Gu and were troublesome to refine. Food path methods like snack Immortal Gu could be used for the killer move eat strength, but the efficiency of this increase in dao marks was too low.

While the grass grows the horse starves, Fang Yuan naturally placed his attention on the secluded domains of heaven and earth.

Fang Yuan had quite a few secluded domains of heaven and earth!

Luo Po Valley, Dang Hun Mountain, Reverse Flow River, City Well, a total of four secluded domains of heaven and earth.

Among them, Reverse Flow River had already been used for reverse flow protection seal, it allowed Fang Yuan to fight rank eight existences. Dang Hun Mountain had already been destroyed and was still in the middle of reparation. City Well was needed to raise variant humans, and in terms of rule path, Fang Yuan was lacking.

The most suitable target was Luo Po Valley.

Fang Yuan’s soul path attainment level was ordinary, but he had Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, the number one soul path inheritance in this world, nobody could deny that.

On that foundation, along with the inspiration that Fang Yuan obtained from the trials of the three lifetimes, and also with myriad self Immortal Gu...

“If I add in the light of wisdom, I should succeed in deducing Luo Po seal, right?” Fang Yuan pondered.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1572: Too Late

Time passed quickly, half a month went by.

On this day, Fang Yuan flew out of cloud city, the immortal formation around Lang Ya blessed land activated and burst out with golden light, enveloping Fang Yuan.

The golden light flashed as Fang Yuan vanished on the spot, when he reappeared, he was in a desolate place a thousand li away.

These days, Fang Yuan modified the super immortal formation again, it had the power to teleport other people.

Because earlier, when Feng Jiu Ge attacked the hairy men and killed them, Lang Ya land spirit was aggrieved but helpless.

Lang Ya land spirit remembered this painful lesson, after refining myriad self Immortal Gu, he suggested this modification to Fang Yuan.

Lang Ya Sect helped Fang Yuan to refine myriad self Immortal Gu, using the Long Hair Gu refinement immortal formation in the process, Fang Yuan naturally had to return the favor and modify the immortal formation as they wished.

Fang Yuan’s formation path attainment level was extraordinary, with the help of the light of wisdom, he had already finished the modification of the immortal formation long ago.

Arriving at an empty place, Fang Yuan breathed in deeply as he started to practice his killer move.

Immortal killer move — Emperor Yama!

Instantly, his appearance changed, he was tall and majestic, he wore a crown and his face was blurred, he became inscrutable. His imperial robe had ghost and monster embroideries, the numbers were no longer like before, there were over a thousand of them.

This was the result of Fang Yuan’s recent cultivation.

Immortal killer move — Soul Explosion!

Fang Yuan moved his finger as black smoke shot out, destroying everything in its path. But due to the immortal formation’s protection, Cloud Cover Continent shone in silver light, it defended against the power of the soul explosion to a great extent.

But even so, a killer move at the peak of rank seven could not be defended against by the silver light.

After a chain of explosions, the area around Fang Yuan was decimated, cloud soil scattered as a large number of crevices appeared in the area of several li.

Black smoke dissipated, the soul explosion ended as one yama child monster vanished on Fang Yuan’s imperial robe, after a few breaths of time, it faded as if it had never existed before.

This was the price of using soul explosion.

Fang Yuan did not mind the expenditure, after pondering through this, his eyes shone with brilliance.

Immortal killer move — Yama Battlefield!

Whoosh.

Intense wind blew as the world changed colors.

In three blinks of time, a huge surrounding area was enveloped by Fang Yuan’s immortal battlefield, the place was completely isolated from the outside!

Within this battlefield killer move, the surroundings were pale green and yellow, vision was blur like there was fog. Dark winds blew, creating wailing sounds, it was scary and chilly.

Fang Yuan let out the yama children, these monsters cackled and flew freely in yama battlefield, their power was amplified, they were like fish in water.

After some testing, Fang Yuan stored all of the yama children and stopped using yama battlefield, the sky turned clear again as he returned to Lang Ya blessed land.

Yama battlefield was the greatest achievement that Fang Yuan had made in this secluded cultivation!

Earlier, Fang Yuan had deduced the immortal battlefield killer move purple star broken life, it was set up using the wisdom path Immortal Gu that Purple Mountain True Monarch left behind, Fang Yuan used it to kill You Chan and Qin Bai He.

But the advantage of purple star broken life immortal battlefield was the effect of concealing itself and isolating from the outside world. The weakness was that it needed time to set up, prior preparation was often required. And Gu Immortals were not stupid, if one tried to use it in battle, they would run away before it was set up.

Yama battlefield was created by Fang Yuan after considering his own situation, using the many battlefield killer moves that were recorded within Spectral Soul’s true inheritance.

Yama battlefield was inferior to purple star broken life in terms of concealment and isolating from the outside world. Its advantage was that it only needed three blinks of time to activate.

Even though during that period of time, Fang Yuan could not move as well, it could quickly be used in battle.

In this three blinks of time, as long as Fang Yuan could grab the opportunity and catch his enemies off guard, they would not be able to run away.

After being enveloped by yama battlefield, Fang Yuan’s advantage would be huge.

“Currently, I can force the enemies to stay and lose their lives if they are rank six or seven!” Fang Yuan sighed.

Gu Immortals were easy to defeat, but capturing or killing would be hard.

Firstly, there were countless ways to escape, Gu Immortals could not deal with all possibilities, some escaping methods were bound to be effective. Secondly, Fang Yuan was fighting alone and was wanted by Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven, he had to defeat his enemies in a short amount of time.

Thus earlier, Fang Yuan was very vigilant when choosing opponents. If Meng Tu did not have an immortal battlefield that could trap both him and his enemies inside autumn blade plain, Fang Yuan would not want to fight such a person.

Once yama battlefield was completed, Fang Yuan thought of his other method — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

His theft path attainment level was at great grandmaster, using great thief Immortal Gu and ghostly concealment as the cores of the killer move, he could deduce great thief ghost hand which could steal rank eight Immortal Gu.

This move was modified by Fang Yuan and became even more effective. It was used twice but managed to steal rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token, as well as rank seven Immortal Gu Bladewing, the situation quickly turned around when Meng Tu lost this Gu, resulting in his loss.

“In the past, I could not use great thief ghost hand too often to prevent my identity from leaking. If information gets out, others would be more alert and they would try to deduce my great thief ghost hand, my arrangements inside green ghost desert would also be found out.”

“With yama battlefield now, I can trap my enemies and continue to use great thief ghost hand to steal Immortal Gu. There is little chance of the enemies running away, I can kill and plunder them, to accumulate my cultivation resources!”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with a ruthless light, deep killing intent was accumulating in him.

With yama battlefield, he could start walking on the bloody road of ‘killing enemies and stealing Gu while annexing their apertures to gain dao marks’.

Fang Yuan had no misgivings when it came to slaughtering innocent people, he did not feel any guilt or self-blame.

Fang Yuan licked his lips as he shook his head: “It is a pity... now is not the time yet.”

If Lang Ya blessed land did not get exposed, if there was no pressure from Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan would leave and go around killing people! But the crucial thing now was to protect Lang Ya blessed land.

At the current moment, the preservation of Lang Ya Sect was more important to Fang Yuan than stealing Immortal Gu!

There was no doubt about it.

As time passed, Fang Yuan’s mental pressure got larger.

Heavenly Court would not let this go, once they attacked Lang Ya blessed land again, even if Lang Ya blessed land prepared fully, it might not be able to resist.

This was because Lang Ya Sect’s trump cards and secrets were exposed in the previous battle. Meanwhile, Heavenly Court still had unfathomable foundations, it could use some trump cards that targeted Lang Ya Sect or come up with some brilliant schemes to endanger the whole of Lang Ya blessed land!

The best situation was to relocate Lang Ya blessed land before the second invasion of Heavenly Court.

But the relocation would definitely be ambushed by Heavenly Court, it might even be Prince Feng Xian most likely! Fang Yuan had already deduced this clearly.

Against a rank eight, Fang Yuan could defend himself but he lacked offense, that was quite awkward.

He had two ways now.

One was to use a secluded domain of heaven and earth to form a rank eight offensive killer move. The other was to use a rank eight Immortal Gu to create an attacking method as well.

Among the secluded domains of heaven and earth, Luo Po Valley was the best choice, and also his only choice.

Fang Yuan had the inspiration to deduce Luo Po seal, but unfortunately, his progress was quite slow, even after the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan was quite vexed.

In terms of rank eight Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan had four, Attitude, Wisdom Sword, Years Flow Like Water, and Soul Beast Token.

Attitude Gu was the core Immortal Gu of familiar face, Years Flow Like Water produced year Gu, it was not for fighting. Soul Beast Token was needed in emperor yama killer move, it could not be taken out.

Looking at it, he only had wisdom sword Immortal Gu left.

Speaking of which, Fang Yuan had obtained this rank eight Immortal Gu long ago, in order to feed it, he had spent a lot of resources. But he had never been able to use it.

Activating wisdom sword Immortal Gu needed rank eight immortal essence of the user. This was what Purple Mountain True Monarch had designed for Bo Qing back then, but Fang Yuan only had rank seven red date immortal essence now.

This was a fixed rule that could not be changed.

And in fact, most rank eight Immortal Gu used rank eight immortal essence, Fang Yuan’s three other Gu were exceptions.

Attitude Gu used mental energy, Years Flow Like Water could use any rank of immortal essence, but its strength depended on the essence used, Soul Beast Token expended the soul foundation of the user, and just looking at their activation requirements, all three Immortal Gu were top tier among rank eight Immortal Gu!

Thinking about it, even though Fang Yuan had many Immortal Gu and inheritances, his rank eight offensive killer move still required Luo Po Valley.

“I managed to deduce reverse flow protection seal earlier because of my water path grandmaster attainment level.”

“This time, to deduce Luo Po seal, my soul path is only master level, there is a huge obstruction!”

Fang Yuan had grandmaster attainment level in many paths, his theft path and refinement path were great grandmaster and quasi-supreme grandmaster respectively, but he could not transfer them to his soul path.

His soul path was only at master attainment level.

“But I have the light of wisdom, even though progress is slow, I can still slowly force my way through!”

“The biggest problem is time now, I hope I can make it... hmm?!”

At this time, the world started shaking, a huge dark spiral appeared out of nowhere.

“Oh no!” Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

He recognized that the source of this dark spiral were the dao marks that Feng Jiu Ge had left behind.

Fang Yuan had already investigated these dao marks long ago, Lang Ya land spirit did the same. Both felt that this was a tracking method that was hard to get rid of. But now, Lang Ya blessed land was isolated from the outside world, these dao marks possessed no threat.

But to think that without anyone controlling and instilling immortal essence, these dao marks actually gathered into a dark spiral.

“Smash it!” Fang Yuan screamed, Lang Ya land spirit also gave the same orders at the same time.

The defensive formation that Fang Yuan modified immediately activated.

But at the same time, four starlight beams shot out of the dark spiral.

With a loud sound, the dark spiral vanished.

The starlight faded as four Gu Immortals appeared.

Feng Jiu Ge, Chen Yi, and Thunder Ghost True Monarch were present. They were led by a female immortal, she looked around before fixing her gaze on Fang Yuan, she smiled: “Fang Yuan, I finally caught you.”

It was Heavenly Court’s current leader, the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal — Fairy Zi Wei!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1573: Star Cast

Heavenly Court invaded, four Gu Immortals appeared out of nowhere, Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk to pin-size.

Even with his knowledge and countless experiences, he felt that this was unbelievable!

“There is such a method? Sending four rank eight Gu Immortals in at the same time! If we did not destroy that dark spiral instantly, I’m afraid even more Gu Immortals would have entered.”

Even though Feng Jiu Ge was not rank eight, his dao marks were at rank eight level, Fang Yuan placed him at the same level as rank eights.

Rank eight Gu Immortals had incredibly dense dao marks, there were few methods that could transport them and they were very hard to use. Even the immortal killer move seven immortal doors that Feng Jiu Ge used earlier could not teleport rank eight Gu Immortals.

If rank eight Gu Immortals wanted to move, they had to either fly themselves through immemorial white heaven or black heaven, unless they were space path great expert who could teleport themselves.

But even so, such space path great experts could only teleport themselves, they could not move other rank eight existences.

And Heavenly Court seemed to have used a method to directly teleport four rank eight Gu Immortals over from Central Continent! Such a method was truly unthinkable.

“Even in the five hundred years of my previous life, during the five regions chaotic war, I did not hear that Heavenly Court had such a move!”

Transporting four rank eight Gu Immortals at once, which was not the limit, and it could even create a tracking effect. Such a method was truly scary, any defense could be ripped apart, the advantage of having such a move could even extend to large scale fights.

Think about it: During the five regions chaotic war, every rank eight Gu Immortal ruled over an area. At this time, if Heavenly Court mobilizes several rank eights to teleport to an enemy rank eight and attack that person as a group, they would have a huge advantage in numbers, they would likely win. Who could endure such attacks if they did it multiple times? Any force would be extremely concerned and feel helpless against this.

“In the five hundred years of my previous life, why did Heavenly Court not do this? Was it because the conditions were not right, or was it not time for this move yet? I think I understand now!”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts moved like lightning, he understood why.

If Heavenly Court revealed that they had such methods, once a few rank eight Gu Immortals died in the other regions, they would become alert, they would work together and form a large alliance against Heavenly Court!

It was common sense.

If they did not ally, as the situation progresses, any rank eight Gu Immortal would be in great danger at all times. Heavenly Court could attack any individual rank eight Gu Immortal at any time, they were not stupid, only by working together could they be safe against Heavenly Court.

Of course, Heavenly Court was not stupid, they had kept this move hidden and did not use it. They were afraid that this move’s great power would make the other regions work together and form a four region alliance that would target Heavenly Court solely!

But now, in order to attack Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court had to use this move in advance, it showed how determined Heavenly Court was in attacking Lang Ya blessed land!

“No, not just me, they are tempted by rank nine wisdom Gu. At the same time, annexing Lang Ya blessed land would greatly help towards repairing fate Gu!”

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly to himself.

Heavenly Court’s attack was too sudden, even though Fang Yuan was already mentally prepared for it.

But there was no helping it, Heavenly Court’s method was truthfully out of Fang Yuan’s wildest imagination.

“This is why such enemies are the scariest. Because they have too many trump cards from their immense foundation!” Fang Yuan sighed bitterly internally.

“Thief!” At the same time, while the other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals stayed motionless, Thunder Ghost True Monarch directly pounced at Fang Yuan.

She hated Fang Yuan to the limit, he had sold three of her rib bones in treasure yellow heaven, that video had been playing nonstop, it was the greatest humiliation of her life!

Thus, Thunder Ghost True Monarch directly charged at Fang Yuan and attacked, she was filled with intense killing intent.

But at the next moment, Fang Yuan vanished as golden light flashed.

Thunder Ghost True Monarch missed her target, she looked up and stared fiercely at the base of the super formation.

“Huff!”

Fang Yuan was inside the super formation now, controlling it personally. The first thing he did was to activate the formation and bring in all of the variant human Gu Immortals that were scattered over Lang Ya blessed land.

When he had just acted, Heavenly Court also did the same.

Immortal killer move — Separation Song!

Feng Jiu Ge used his signature killer move as separation song started, countering all Immortal Gu Houses and immortal formations in this world.

Bright light shone in Fang Yuan’s eyes, he multitasked as the immortal formation flew up and burst out with orange-red light.

Within the red light, separation song was weakening as his voice faded into nothingness.

To deal with separation song, Fang Yuan had made some modifications to the immortal formation! It was extremely effective when used now.

Feng Jiu Ge had once dismantled multiple layers of this immortal formation using separation song, but now, before separation song even got close to the core, it was exterminated, Feng Jiu Ge frowned deeply.

“Let me do it.” Fairy Zi Wei flickered her finger as a starry rainbow flew out.

The starry rainbow flew like an arrow, flying past the clouds and wind, shooting into the super immortal formation and turning into a cloud of star sand, it was very dazzling.

The immortal formation activated faster and faster, this star sand fused into the immortal formation’s activation and revealed several special forms, like clouds or dust, or even water vats...

Fairy Zi Wei smiled lightly, countless thoughts appeared in her mind, moving like waves of the ocean.

“Oh no! This wisdom path killer move can help her to deduce the workings of the immortal formation, it can also obstruct the cooperation of Gu worms and make the immortal formation slower and non-fluid.” Some of the variant human Gu Immortals who came could tell.

“What do we do?”

“What do we do?!”

Almost all of the variant human Gu Immortals were covered in sweat, they had nervous expressions, they were filled with fear and immense pressure of an apocalypse.

Heavenly Court’s group was too powerful, they were equivalent to four rank eights, even disregarding Feng Jiu Ge, the other three were rank eight elites and experts, one could be of immense threat to Lang Ya blessed land, not to mention three of them!

“Strange, why is Fairy Zi Wei not using Star Constellation Chessboard?” Fang Yuan had completely calmed down, suspicion flashed in his eyes.

His fight against Fairy Zi Wei was during Southern Border’s dream realm battle.

“It is a pity that Star Constellation Chessboard was left in Heavenly Court to sustain the killer move star cast, otherwise, I would be able to easily unravel this super immortal formation with dozens of times the efficiency!” Fairy Zi Wei sighed internally, she did not stop her actions.

Another wisdom path killer move was unleashed without any warning, Fang Yuan did not even know how to deal with it, but the formation was hit and the star sand that invaded expanded to twice of its size!

“Troublesome!” Fang Yuan frowned deeply.

“Heavenly Court, do you think our Lang Ya Sect are easily bullied? Kill them!”

At this moment, Lang Ya land spirit growled, the silver giant formed from ancient battle formation Heavenly Giant Solor descended into the battlefield.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1574: Chen Yi

The silver giant was tall and mighty, stretching its arms and sweeping at the four Central Continent Gu Immortals, strong air currents were generated.

Chen Yi’s eyes flashed with brilliance, snorting: “Let me!”

Compared to the silver giant, his body was very small, but his aura burst out and contested the silver giant evenly.

Immortal killer move — Immortal Binding Vine!

Chen Yi pointed as countless jade green light threads extended towards the silver giant and coiled around it.

The silver giant punched ferociously, but due to the obstruction of the jade light threads, it was too slow and changed directions, crashing into the cloud soil and creating a huge crater as soil scattered.

Chen Yi watched at the side without moving, he floated in the air as he pointed at the silver giant with his fingers.

The jade threads on the silver giant were increasing in number, surrounding it tightly, the threads got thicker until they reached their limits, becoming vines that were thick and long, binding the silver giant.

Within the battle formation Heavenly Giant Solor, Lang Ya land spirit was shouting in anger, this immortal binding vine seemed to have countered him entirely, even with great strength, he could not use any of it properly, this was quite a frustrating situation.

“Sixth Hair!” Lang Ya land spirit called out.

Sixth Hair immediately used an immortal killer move as golden light appeared on the Heavenly Giant Solor, the immortal binding vines were cut apart inch by inch, but they recovered quickly.

Chen Yi sneered as he used another killer move.

Countless vines were cut down, landing on the cloud soil, but with Chen Yi’s help, they grew rapidly, turning into huge trees.

The huge trees were scattered around the silver giant, turning into a huge circle that trapped the silver giant at the center.

Lang Ya land spirit sensed something amiss, but the silver giant was bound by the immortal binding vines, it could not move away.

At this time, between the giant trees, leaves and branches started to intertwine, the roots of the trees under the cloud soil also gathered into a ball and emerged from the soil. With the tree trunks as the main pillars, the branches and roots coiled together and formed a huge cage.

Immortal killer move — Ancient Tree Prison Cage!

The silver giant finally broke free from the immortal binding vines when it immediately got trapped in the ancient tree prison cage. Lang Ya land spirit shouted in anger and ordered the hairy man Gu Immortals to unleash their offensive killer moves.

But the ancient tree prison cage sustained those attacks and even used them as nutrients to strengthen itself.

Lang Ya land spirit saw this and quickly stopped, he tested for a while and found that the most effective way to destroy the cage was with the giant’s bare hands.

The hairy man Gu Immortals were helpless, they could only manipulate Heavenly Giant Solor to unleash punches and kicks, slamming at the ancient tree prison cage.

“Damn it!” Lang Ya land spirit cursed, his forehead was covered in sweat. He was trapped here and could not help Fang Yuan, he could only watch as Feng Jiu Ge and Fairy Zi Wei targeted the super immortal formation.

Without any choice, Lang Ya land spirit had to approach the rockman Gu Immortals: “Quick, let that old dragon out!”

Roar—!

There was the cry of a dragon as a huge figure appeared in front of everyone.

The immemorial rock dragon!

Its body was made of rocks, it was filled with dense earth path dao marks, its dragon body was heavy and thick, its dragon fangs were sharp like stalactites, it was majestic and large, having an impressive entrance.

The rock dragon seemed to move slowly, but it was actually fast as it flew into the sky, casting a huge shadow down onto the ground.

Heavenly Court’s four immortals were also under the shadow as they raised their heads, expressing shock on their faces.

“To think that Lang Ya blessed land has a hidden immemorial rock dragon!” Feng Jiu Ge sighed.

Fairy Zi Wei smiled: “It does not belong to Lang Ya blessed land, it is likely from those variant human Gu Immortals.”

As a wisdom path great expert, she had deduced the truth in an instant.

“Let me destroy this rock dragon!” Thunder Ghost True Monarch licked her lips as battle intent surged.

“No need!” Chen Yi grunted as he stretched his finger, using the same move again.

Immortal killer move — Immortal Binding Vine.

The immortal binding vines extended around the immemorial rock dragon as it became restricted, although it still charged at the four Central Continent immortals.

The four immortals dodged while the immemorial rock dragon hit the ground, next, Chen Yi used the ancient tree prison cage killer move again and trapped it!

“How can this be?!” The variant human Gu Immortals saw this and felt deeply surprised and disappointed.

Even Lang Ya land spirit took in a deep breath, he felt a chill down his spine.

The immemorial rock dragon that they were relying on was restricted so easily. Meanwhile, on Heavenly Court’s side, Chen Yi had a great display of prowess, while Fairy Zi Wei and Feng Jiu Ge suppressed the super immortal formation, and Thunder Ghost True Monarch has yet to fight!

Fang Yuan’s expression was ugly too, but he did not feel much surprise.

“The immemorial rock dragon is strong in defense and has no fear. Once injured, the rockmen can sacrifice themselves to heal it rapidly, this healing method is very absurd!”

When Gu Immortals get injured, it is very difficult and troublesome to heal them. The higher the cultivation level, the harder they are to heal.

For rank eight Gu Immortals, if they sustained injuries, they would need to pay full attention in healing themselves without distraction. But the immemorial rock dragon’s healing method could be done amidst battle, this often gave many Gu Immortals huge headaches when fighting them.

The immemorial rock dragon was also famous because of this.

But today was different, it was up against Heavenly Court’s rank eight Gu Immortal Chen Yi!

Firstly, Heavenly Court had been suppressing and killing variant human Gu Immortals, having been established on that foundation, they were very familiar with the rockman tribe’s rock dragons.

Secondly, the immemorial rock dragon did not have any wild rank eight Immortal Gu to use, while Chen Yi had rank eight killer moves and the best tactic against it, this led to the immemorial rock dragon’s greatest advantage becoming virtually useless.

And finally, Chen Yi’s killer move was truly profound, especially the ancient tree prison cage, it did not fear immortal killer moves, it was hard to get rid of.

It was no surprise that the immemorial rock dragon lost to Chen Yi.

Even though it struggled intensely, the restriction on it grew thicker and tighter, without external help, it could not break out of the immortal binding vines, and definitely not the ancient tree prison cage outside of that.

“Hairy men, we need to rely on ourselves!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted as the silver giant finally found an opening in the ancient tree prison cage and destroyed it.

“As expected of the second ancient battle formation, Heavenly Giant Solor.” Chen Yi evaluated as he smiled, muttering: “But do you think my ancient tree prison cage is so easy to break out of?”

The silver giant’s movements stopped.

Lang Ya land spirit was slightly dazed, he turned around to look and found a wooden hand grabbing the silver giant’s leg.

“What is that?” The silver giant turned around and chopped down on the hand with both arms resembling an ax that struck harshly.

The wooden hand was split by the ax but it was only half split, it was not entirely chopped apart.

The silver giant wanted to attack again, but an wooden giant appeared from under the soil.

The wooden giant let go out its hand and lowered its body, charging at the silver giant’s chest with its shoulder, slamming it to the ground.

Lang Ya Sect’s Gu Immortals were caught unguarded, they were about to make the silver giant stand up but the wooden giant attacked relentlessly, eventually, it jumped into the sky and crashed down on the silver giant with a loud thud.

Under the immense pressure, a hairy man Gu Immortal made a mistake and used an immortal killer move on the wooden giant.

The wooden giant was revitalized as the injuries on its body healed, at the same time, it grew to the same size as the silver giant.

Chen Yi snorted in self-satisfaction, this was his immortal killer move — Giant Tree Divine Statue, it inherited the property of the ancient tree prison cage, immortal killer moves were not of concern, only physical attacks were effective on it.

“So this is the power of Genesis Lotus’ true inheritance.” Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s eyes were flickering with bright light.

At this moment, Chen Yi displayed great power, suppressing both the silver giant and immemorial rock dragon!

This was his true power, as the first supreme elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect, and the inheritor of Genesis Lotus’ true inheritance, he had incredible battle strength that was extraordinary.

Earlier in green ghost desert, he had fought with much frustration. Most of the time, he was fighting inside Divine Bean Palace, afraid of damaging it, he could not fight freely, while his opponent, Fang clan’s first supreme elder, had a huge advantage with strength path, he could fight in close combat freely, making Chen Yi extremely furious but without options.

Now, Chen Yi could display his true advantage, he erupted with great battle strength, even without using his trump card, karma divine tree, he managed to suppress both the silver giant and the immemorial rock dragon.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1575: Fang Yuan’s Actions

Chen Yi displayed his true strength as Heavenly Court obtained the advantage. What worried Fang Yuan more was that they had not gone all out yet.

Even Chen Yi, who was doing most of the work had not used karma divine tree.

“Even though Chen Yi is inferior to Purple Mountain True Monarch and Duke Long, he is still a first rate expert among rank eights! Fairy Zi Wei and Thunder Ghost True Monarch are similar, while Feng Jiu Ge cannot be underestimated. I need to act myself!”

Chen Yi suppressed the immemorial rock dragon and silver giant, Feng Jiu Ge and Fairy Zi Wei were resisting the super immortal formation, Lang Ya Sect only had Fang Yuan left who had rank eight battle strength, if he did not act now, who could save them?

And the truth was, Lang Ya land spirit had already urged Fang Yuan multiple times.

Golden light flickered as Fang Yuan appeared in front Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei had expected this, she waved her hand as a gust of divine purple wind started to blow.

As the wind blew, it caused ripples on reverse flow protection seal.

“Oh? This killer move!” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

This divine purple wind matched the strength of its enemy, it was similar to reverse flow protection seal, it was a defensive retaliation type. Reverse flow protection seal did not have any offensive might, as both moves reflected the damage over and over again to each other, neither sides could do anything to the other, Fang Yuan was pushed out by this wind.

“Fang Yuan, you finally came out!” A flash of lightning flickered as Thunder Ghost True Monarch Jing Lan teleported and appeared behind Fang Yuan, smiling sinisterly and full of killing intent.

“Trident lightning dissolution!” Jing Lan shouted as three flashes of lightning appeared from her fingertips.

The lightning crackled and gathered in the air, forming into a trident made of blue lightning.

Trident lightning dissolution landed on Fang Yuan’s back but was blocked by reverse flow protection seal and reflected back at her.

Jing Lan laughed loudly as she swallowed this trident lightning dissolution before flying away with eyes crackling with sparks.

Fang Yuan's heart sank: "Oh no, this trident lightning dissolution killer move is meant to probe my reverse flow protection seal. Even though Thunder Ghost True Monarch is not a wisdom path Gu Immortal, with Fairy Zi Wei the wisdom path great expert here, they can try to unravel my reverse flow protection seal here!"

Last time, due to Fang Yuan's trap, Thunder Ghost True Monarch was beaten up and Fairy Zi Wei failed.

However, the trap that Fang Yuan set up was exposed, it could no longer be used.

During this period, Fang Yuan had planned and cultivated intensely, making many preparations, Heavenly Court did the same. Not only did they help Thunder Ghost True Monarch to replenish her Immortal Gu, Fairy Zi Wei even used Star Constellation Chessboard to deduce trident lightning dissolution for Thunder Ghost True Monarch, in order to deal with Fang Yuan's reverse flow protection seal!

Fang Yuan had a heavy heart but he did not fluster, the truth was, he had expected this.

He actively attacked and tried to fight with Fairy Zi Wei and Thunder Ghost True Monarch, in order to reduce the pressure on the rest.

Both sides fought continuously as Cloud Cover Continent's terrain was completely devastated. The sounds of their battle resounded throughout the skies, the countless hairy man mortals and Gu Masters were extremely fearful and in shock.

After the silver giant destroyed a giant tree divine statue, Chen Yi created another one.

The immemorial rock dragon was trapped in the immortal binding vines, it had little hope of escaping.

Even Fang Yuan could not help it. He had tried but the outer layer of the ancient tree prison cage was too thick and did not fear immortal killer moves, it was a pain to get through.

"This killer move is not immune to all immortal killer moves, we just lack the necessary method. If I had enough time, with my wisdom path methods, I can deduce and unravel this move!"

Fang Yuan sighed to himself.

This was the essence of Genesis Lotus true inheritance's killer moves, it was like reverse flow protection seal which rendered all of Heavenly Court helpless against it.

Now, Fang Yuan was on the receiving side, against this ancient tree prison cage, he had the same feelings as Fairy Zi Wei who had faced reverse flow protection seal earlier.

After some fighting, Heavenly Court still had the upper hand, and their advantage was growing.

Fang Yuan did not deduce Luo Po seal, he did not have an offensive rank eight killer move, he could defend using reverse flow protection seal, but he could not be of any threat to the four immortals.

Ancient battle formation Heavenly Giant Solor was the same, even though the hairy man Gu Immortals had many methods and deep chemistry, they were not fighting against Feng Jiu Ge this time, but Chen Yi instead.

Chen Yi had rich methods that were all at rank eight level, no matter how Lang Ya land spirit resisted, he was suppressed by Chen Yi.

After some more time, Fairy Zi Wei suddenly frowned as she ordered: “Senior Jing Lan, go around and find wisdom Gu.”

“Little thief, I will let you off for now!” Even though Thunder Ghost True Monarch hated Fang Yuan, the bigger picture was more important, she snickered at Fang Yuan before flying away from the battlefield like lightning.

Lang Ya’s side could only watch helplessly as she left.

The truth was, Heavenly Court’s invasion was not just to eliminate Fang Yuan and annex Lang Ya to repair fate Gu, their most important goal was to obtain the wild wisdom Gu.

This legendary rank nine Immortal Gu had been in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s hands long ago. Ordinary forces could not make use of it, but Heavenly Court had abundant methods. Forget about the rest, with just this wisdom Gu, Star Constellation Chessboard would become a rank nine Immortal Gu House, its power would rise sharply! Just this advantage was enough for Fairy Zi Wei to come personally.

Earlier, when Heavenly Court’s four immortals arrived, Fairy Zi Wei had already used her investigative killer moves, even though her search range extended throughout Lang Ya blessed land, she could not find wisdom Gu.

And now, she could only send Thunder Ghost True Monarch.

Seeing that Thunder Ghost True Monarch had left the battlefield, Lang Ya land spirit screamed in anger while fearing that the mortal hairy men would be targeted, but because he was trapped by Chen Yi, the silver giant was still restricted by the immortal binding vine and could not move, even though many layers were pulled off, it was quite frustrating.

“They are looking for wisdom Gu!” Fang Yuan’s eyes burst out with bright light.

His wisdom path methods were extraordinary, he had already deduced Heavenly Court’s intention.

It was a pity that Heavenly Court did not know wisdom Gu was already in Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture. Last time, they had failed to take it from Lang Ya blessed land, that was the best opportunity, the difficulty had risen by thousands of times now!

“In that case...” Bright light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes, he noticed that this was the best opportunity!

Immemorial year beast!

He opened his immortal aperture and let out the monkey immemorial year beast.

At the same time, he charged forward and used countless immortal killer moves to attack Fairy Zi Wei.

Among the four Heavenly Court immortals, the biggest threat was not Chen Yi who had Genesis Lotus true inheritance, rank eight expert Thunder Ghost True Monarch Jing Lan who could resist Spectral Soul, or Feng Jiu Ge who had assimilation wind song, it was Fairy Zi Wei.

The reason was simple, she was a wisdom path great expert!

Just this point alone made her the leader of this expedition. Given enough time, she could deduce and create countless miracles.

He had to eliminate this wisdom path Gu Immortal first!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1576: Yama Battlefield

Ancient sword dragon transformation!

Soul explosion!

Strength path giant hand!

Myriad dragon!

Fang Yuan used almost all his methods against Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei laughed: “Fang Yuan, you’re at your wits’ end.”

She also used multiple killer moves of all kinds, they were all profound and actually blocked all of Fang Yuan’s attacks! Some even countered his moves.

Fang Yuan’s methods had already been exposed long ago. Fairy Zi Wei had been collecting intel and did a lot of deductions, she created many methods that countered him.

This was the incredible power of a wisdom path Gu Immortal.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan’s killer moves still had some use, after all, he had also modified his moves to deal with Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions.

“But in terms of wisdom path attainment, I cannot compare to Fairy Zi Wei. At this rate, eventually, Fairy Zi Wei will deduce all of my methods and I will no longer be able to fight back.”

Thoughts flashed in Fang Yuan’s mind, battle intent surged in him but his mind was still cold as ice.

Fairy Zi Wei smiled as she breathed out some purple qi with imposing aura.

The purple qi was delicate like a baby’s fist, but it entered the immemorial year beast’s mind the moment it hit.

Howl—!

The immemorial year beast growled in pain, it was furiously holding its head, it lost its ability to fight as it rolled around on the ground.

The variant human Gu Immortals controlling the super immortal formation were all stunned!

Fairy Zi Wei’s own battle strength was even higher than Chen Yi. Earlier, she had not fought seriously, but now, her strong methods and imposing air were a huge shock to everyone.

Fang Yuan also felt a little discouraged.

He still had two immemorial soul beasts captured from green ghost desert, but he did not want to use them now.

Immemorial desolate beasts alone were often at a disadvantage against rank eight Gu Immortals. That was, unless they had rank eight Immortal Gu in them.

Against these rank eight Gu Immortal experts from Heavenly Court, even immemorial desolate beasts with wild Immortal Gu could not deal with them!

Like how Fang Yuan could capture those two immemorial soul beasts earlier, against Fairy Zi Wei, they held little threat.

“I am clear of this, in order to resist Spectral Soul Demon Venerable in the past, Heavenly Court had obtained many soul path methods. This is why I let the immemorial year beast out, if I summoned the immemorial soul beasts, they would be even weaker against her.”

Fang Yuan felt pressure rising in him.

The enemies were just too powerful, they were truly formidable. Fang Yuan did not even have the confidence to kill the weakest person among them, Feng Jiu Ge. Fairy Zi Wei and the rest were all experts among rank eight experts, any single one of them could match Fang Yuan or even defeat him.

To speak the truth, Lang Ya blessed land was already very powerful, it had three rank eight battle strength existences. This was already above the standards of most super forces in the five regions.

Among the five regions, only the top tier super forces had one rank eight Gu Immortal. In Southern Border, why could the number one righteous path super force Wu clan dominate the region for so long? It was because there was a point in time where they had two rank eight Gu Immortals simultaneously, and also at least one rank eight Gu Immortal throughout the generations to hold the fort.

Of course, Immortal Gu Houses could not be neglected, many Immortal Gu Houses had rank eight battle strength too.

The strength of Lang Ya Sect was equivalent to a super force or even above that.

But against Heavenly Court, it was just too weak in comparison!

The immemorial rock dragon was suppressed by Chen Yi, Heavenly Giant Solor was struggling but still at a disadvantage.

Feng Jiu Ge had been dealing with the super immortal formation that Fang Yuan modified, the formation path attainment of the variant human Gu Immortals inside could not match Fang Yuan, while Feng Jiu Ge’s separation song was absurdly fierce even though it was countered by the immortal Gu formation, the two sides were at a deadlock.

Fang Yuan’s fight against Fairy Zi Wei was locked in a deadlock as well without any breakthroughs.

He could not let this go on!

Once Thunder Ghost True Monarch fails to find wisdom Gu and returns to fight, unless Lang Ya land spirit exposes a new trump card, Fang Yuan would definitely lose.

“Lang Ya blessed land originated from Long Hair Ancestor, it must likely have other trump cards!”

“But now, I cannot depend on this possibility. Immortal killer move — Yama Battlefield!”

Fang Yuan suddenly flew and got closer to Fairy Zi Wei, before using his newly developed immortal battlefield killer move.

Because of the soul explosion earlier, there were large numbers of soul path dao marks in the battlefield, yama battlefield rapidly opened as it formed in a breath of time.

But even at this speed, Fang Yuan could not trap Fairy Zi Wei.

This wisdom path great expert noticed something amiss the moment fy got close to her, she immediately retreated.

Fang Yuan’s yama battlefield was created very quickly, one breath of time was faster than most of the immortal battlefield killer moves in this world.

But this amount of time was enough for Fairy Zi Wei to escape.

“I failed!” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

Not being able to trap Fairy Zi Wei, he had wasted his immortal essence.

“However, my efforts were not in vain!” Fang Yuan looked at Feng Jiu Ge who was inside yama battlefield as he surged with killing intent: “I’ll kill him first!”

Fang Yuan grabbed the opportunity, the position earlier was perfect, if Fairy Zi Wei had not retreated in advance, he would have trapped the both of them.

Yama battlefield was a new method, even if Fairy Zi Wei wanted to unravel it, she would need some time.

If Fang Yuan could trap both Feng Jiu Ge and Fairy Zi Wei, in the battlefield, there would only be the silver giant, immemorial rock dragon, Chen Yi, and the super immortal formation.

Now that Feng Jiu Ge was trapped, the super immortal formation was safe, if they could grab the opportunity to destroy the ancient tree prison cage, the immemorial rock dragon would also be free.

Chen Yi would have to deal with both the silver giant and rock dragon, as well as a super immortal formation, he would not be able to handle it.

If they could severely injure Chen Yi during that period, even if Thunder Ghost True Monarch returns, Lang Ya’s side would be able to regain their footing.

But now, Fang Yuan only managed to trap Feng Jiu Ge, that meant the super immortal formation and Fairy Zi Wei were competing with each other.

But even if Thunder Ghost True Monarch returns, for the time being, they would still be in a deadlock. After all, rank eight battle strength and sufficient foundation meant that they could not fall easily.

Thus, Fang Yuan’s target now was to kill Feng Jiu Ge!

And he had to do it quickly, the faster the better!

After killing Feng Jiu Ge, Fang Yuan would dispel yama battlefield and deal with the three Heavenly Court rank eights alongside the rock dragon and silver giant, Lang Ya’s side would be in less danger after that.

Thus, Feng Jiu Ge was a crucial point to break through!

“A soul path battlefield killer move? It seems to have theft path mixed in!” Fairy Zi Wei looked at the air in front of her, for the first time in this battle, she frowned.

The immortal battlefield isolated the inside from outside, thankfully, Fang Yuan had used it right in front of her, otherwise, she could not find the point of entry for yama battlefield that was just a tiny spot.

But even if she did, Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions were having huge problems.

Because yama battlefield not only contained the profundity of soul path, it also contained ghostly concealment! It was one with the killer move emperor yama.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1577: Fang Yuan Versus Feng Jiu Ge

Rumble!

The super immortal formation activated as countless lightning bolts attacked Fairy Zi Wei and Chen Yi.

Since the battle started, this super formation had either been suppressed by Feng Jiu Ge and Fairy Zi Wei or was in a deadlock with Feng Jiu Ge, it could finally displayed its might now.

Chen Yi quickly defended himself, he was quite troubled.

Lang Ya land spirit saw the chance and moved the silver giant, resisting the attack of the giant tree divine statue as it crashed into the ancient tree prison cage trapping the rock dragon.

Fairy Zi Wei quickly thought about it, choosing to attack the super immortal formation while deducing yama battlefield, ignoring Chen Yi’s situation.

Fairy Zi Wei chose the safe method.

If Feng Jiu Ge fought with Fang Yuan now, she might not assist him. If he really ended up in a dangerous spot, she might reinforce him, she would still make it in time.

But now, yama battlefield was isolated from the outside, Feng Jiu Ge and Fang Yuan were fighting alone, this was dangerous and accidents might occur.

Feng Jiu Ge was equally important to Heavenly Court, even more than Chen Yi and Thunder Ghost True Monarch, because he was the Dao Guardian of Great Dream

Immortal Venerable Feng Jin Huang!

Fairy Zi Wei did not want any mishaps to occur to him.

Fang Yuan wanted Feng Jiu Ge to die right now!

Immortal killer move — Emperor Yama!

Immortal killer move — Yama Child!

Immortal killer move — Soul Explosion!

At once, Fang Yuan attacked in a frenzy, turning into emperor yama form as the yama child army attacked Feng Jiu Ge from all directions, soul explosions were mixed in and caused great damage to Feng Jiu Ge, in just a short period of time, blood was already flowing out of his mouth.

“Great method!” Feng Jiu Ge felt an intense threat to his life, he used his killer move.

Immortal killer move — Yang Pass Tune!

At the moment of crisis, he had to use yang pass tune killer move despite there being a time limit.

Using yang pass tune, he dodged and dodged, but within yama battlefield, his method was greatly restricted, it was quite ineffective.

The yama children were amplified and moved even quicker and with greater force, they attacked without fearing death.

Feng Jiu Ge dodged with all his effort, but he could not shrug off the yama children.

Immortal killer move — Song Warrior!

Immortal killer move — Green Jade Song!

Immortal killer move — Heaven and Earth Song!

Immortal killer move — Submission Song!

Immortal killer move — Separation Song!

Four song warriors protected Feng Jiu Ge as he moved around the yama child army, trying to get close to Fang Yuan.

Capturing the king is essential, this was the most straightforward and wise tactic.

Fang Yuan in his emperor yama form flew around in yama battlefield with utmost ease and agility.

Even though his enslavement path attainment was not high, he could still order the yama children to attack Feng Jiu Ge fluidly.

After a while, Feng Jiu Ge had a grim expression.

Green jade song warrior often shattered the yama children which were turned into jade statues. But these yama children were all unfearing and were tougher to deal with than ancient desolate beasts.

Heaven and earth song had little effect within yama battlefield, separation song could break apart immortal formations, but the Immortal Gu used to sustain this battlefield were inside Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture, this was unlike immortal formations and Immortal Gu Houses which had their Immortal Gu House outside. Separation song could not affect the interior of Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture, it was useless.

Submission song that Feng Jiu Ge had entrusted his hopes to was the best method against enslavement path, it had been a great help against Fang Yuan in the past, but right now, this song was an example of ‘the bigger the hope, the greater the disappointment’. The yama children were merely affected in movement, they were completely unaffected by the enslavement effect of submission song.

“My yama child uses soul beast modification, soul beast summoning and other methods within Spectral Soul true inheritance, it also relies on ghostly concealment at the core, how can your submission song work against it?” Fang Yuan snickered in his mind.

“Do I need to use assimilation wind song?” Feng Jiu Ge gritted his teeth.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength was very shocking!

Even though he was mentally prepared, now that he was suppressed by Fang Yuan, Feng Jiu Ge felt a sensation of disbelief.

How long had it been?

Not long ago, he, Feng Jiu Ge, had chased Fang Yuan from Southern Border to Western Desert and put him in a difficult position .

“Fang Yuan’s growth speed is too fast! This time, even if we do not get wisdom Gu, we need to kill him!” Feng Jiu Ge sighed internally, he stopped the notion of using assimilation wind song.

Assimilation wind song was too dangerous.

Once he used it and made a mistake, the first person to die would be Feng Jiu Ge.

Unless he had no choice, Feng Jiu Ge would not use assimilation wind song. Especially in an intense battle like this, the interferences were too great.

“And my assimilation wind song has already been exposed, how can such a crafty person like Fang Yuan be unprepared against it?”

Feng Jiu Ge was very wary of Fang Yuan’s wisdom path attainment.

“This time, we attacked with a powerful force, because Fairy Zi Wei isn’t trapped inside this battlefield killer move, we have the absolute advantage in battle now.”

“I need to wait for Lady Zi Wei to deduce and break this immortal battlefield from the outside, that is the best method.”

“After all, this immortal battlefield contains soul path and theft path aura, but no time path aura, there should not be any problems with the rate of time.”

Feng Jiu Ge dodged as he fought, refusing to let the yama children surround him, he decided to wait for reinforcements after putting his trust in Fairy Zi Wei.

Fang Yuan had been thinking of ending the battle quickly, if Feng Jiu Ge fought against him directly, he would be extremely happy about it.

But was Feng Jiu Ge stupid?

He had a clear understanding of the situation, he chose the best tactic for now, Fang Yuan sighed deeply in disappointment.

“Unfortunately, even though I have time path methods and rank eight time path Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water, it cannot be fused into yama battlefield.”

Yama battlefield was not a killer move used on sovereign immortal body, it had the problem of conflicting dao marks.

Fang Yuan had always kept a balance between theft path and soul path, but the conflict had reached the limit, adding time path on top of it was too difficult!

Time path battlefield killer moves could alter the rate of time compared to the outside world, but yama battlefield could not.

In fact, even if Fang Yuan tried to use time path killer moves, any moves that were not theft path or soul path would be resisted by the dao marks of the immortal battlefield.

Immortal killer move – Triple Extreme Sound!

Feng Jiu Ge’s methods were unending, the yama children could not get close. Once his song warriors were destroyed, he would create new ones immediately.

But the biggest problem for Fang Yuan was yang pass tune, it allowed Feng Jiu Ge to teleport instantly. Even though this move was restricted in this battlefield, having a limited range and would not break out of yama battlefield, Fang Yuan’s great thief ghost hand was too slow, at least, when compared to Feng Jiu Ge.

Even though yang pass tune had a time limit, Fang Yuan could not wait, he needed to end this fast, he had to kill Feng Jiu Ge as soon as possible, in order to help in the battle outside.

Immortal killer move – Familiar Face!

Fang Yuan turned from emperor yama into a yama child as he sneaked into the army.

Feng Jiu Ge’s heart jumped, his teleportation became more frequent.

But Fang Yuan was still in the dark while he was exposed in the open, after a while, Fang Yuan found his opportunity.

Immortal killer move – Great Thief Ghost Hand!

The ghost hand was completely concealed, going past the four song warriors and aiming for Feng Jiu Ge directly.

Feng Jiu Ge was still using triple extreme sound, he did not sense its movement. Great thief ghost hand entered Feng Jiu Ge’s immortal aperture and grabbed an Immortal Gu tightly before leaving rapidly.

“Oh no, Fixed Immortal Travel!!” Feng Jiu Ge stared with his eyes wide opened, he was deeply shocked by the assault.

He quickly turned around and burst out with sound waves, forcing great thief ghost hand to reveal its appearance before him.

He was about to attack the great thief ghost hand but Fang Yuan was well prepared, a large number of yama children rushed up and sacrificed themselves, protecting the great thief ghost hand as it entered Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1578: Fang Yuan’s Rank Eight Offensive Method!

“To think that I would regain Fixed Immortal Travel one day!” Fang Yuan sighed deeply as he looked at the Immortal Gu that was captured by great thief ghost hand.

“Oh? It’s been raised to rank seven. It is indeed what I had deduced from the information earlier.” Fang Yuan was secretly joyful.

Even though he had ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel which could replace the use of Fixed Immortal Travel to some extent, it had many flaws, needing four Gu Immortals to execute. Furthermore, it had a smaller range than Fixed Immortal Travel, which was able to go anywhere in the world.

Rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel still had the same appearance as its rank six version.

Right now, this Gu was struggling in great thief ghost hand, but it did not move, holding onto Fixed Immortal Travel as it flew rapidly.

After flying into Heaven Sealing Mountain inside Mini Southern Border, great thief ghost hand opened and tossed Fixed Immortal Travel into the immortal formation.

This immortal formation used two Immortal Gu as the core, Self Love and Affection, along with countless mortal Gu, the main effect was to help great thief ghost hand refine the stolen Immortal Gu quickly.

Even though Reverse Flow River could be used here, it was already the core of reverse flow protection seal that Fang Yuan needed in battle.

Fang Yuan had already succeeded once in using Immortal Gu Self Love and Affection to refine other people’s Immortal Gu long ago.

His plan was originally to incorporate Affection and Self Love into great thief ghost hand so that after it steals Immortal Gu, the Gu can be refined instantly on the spot.

This seemed unnecessary but that was not true.

If he could refine it on the spot, great thief ghost hand would not need to suppress the Immortal Gu and bring it back to Fang Yuan, it could continue to steal more Immortal Gu consecutively.

After being put inside Heaven Sealing Mountain, Fixed Immortal Travel was suppressed and the refinement was automatically done, Fang Yuan could see results soon.

Fang Yuan placed his sights on Feng Jiu Ge again.

Feng Jiu Ge’s expression was one of alertness and solemness, a look of disbelief was hidden deep within his eyes.

“Fang Yuan actually has such a method to steal others’ Immortal Gu? Even those inside the immortal aperture are not spared?! Did he obtain another Thieving Heaven true inheritance?”

This method made Feng Jiu Ge feel an intense threat!

The sound wave attack that he used to force out great thief ghost hand was activated again, he did not want to cancel it.

“This move is too terrifying! If the stolen Immortal Gu earlier was the core Immortal Gu of my triple extreme sound killer move, wouldn’t my killer move activation fail, causing me to suffer backlash and receive severe injures?”

Feng Jiu Ge felt a bit of relief and also lingering fear.

Fang Yuan felt that it was a pity, but great thief ghost hand could not choose its target, if he really stole the crucial Immortal Gu again like when he fought Meng Tu, Feng Jiu Ge’s killer move would fail and the battle would turn around, he could even be killed quickly.

Even though Fang Yuan succeeded, Feng Jiu Ge was completely alert now, he used yang pass tune to teleport non-stop, refusing to stay at one spot. At the same time, he used his sound wave killer move without regard for immortal essence consumption. As for triple extreme sound, Feng Jiu Ge stopped using it, he did not dare to, his focus was all on escaping the pursuit of the yama children.

After Fang Yuan was exposed, he used familiar face again to disguise as a yama child to approach Feng Jiu Ge subtly.

This was an immense mental pressure to Feng Jiu Ge.

But Fang Yuan was not feeling great either.

Feng Jiu Ge was too slippery, he kept moving around the place, using his sound wave move and preventing Fang Yuan from getting any opportunities to attack.

“It seems that I will need to put some effort into the concealment of great thief ghost hand.” Feng Jiu Ge actually had a way to force out the great thief ghost hand to show itself, this was out of Fang Yuan’s expectations, he immediately thought of formless hand.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s signature method could interchange between phantom and solid, if it was used instead of great thief ghost hand, it would fear no sound waves. Formless hand was also extremely fast, once used, the enemies of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable could only watch as their Immortal Gu were all stolen one by one, they would spit out blood from anger and helplessness!

But Fang Yuan’s great thief ghost hand only had a small trace of formless hand’s glory.

Even so, it made the great Feng Jiu Ge fluster and escape in anxiety while feeling fearful.

Fang Yuan forced Feng Jiu Ge to move around the place but he felt no arrogance that he succeeded, he was clear that he only had hopes of victory if he killed

Feng Jiu Ge quickly now and went back to help out Lang Ya blessed land!

But in the following battle, Feng Jiu Ge did not leave any flaws for Fang Yuan, he was also a demonic path cultivator that shocked the whole of Central Continent, challenging all ten sects at once, he had rich battle experience.

As time passed, yang pass tune’s time limit finally arrived!

“A chance!” Fang Yuan was anxious and joyful. He was anxious because so much time had been wasted and Feng Jiu Ge was still alive, but he was joyful because the flaw had finally appeared.

Feng Jiu Ge’s heart sank!

In the past, his fierce attacks would render his enemies helpless. After becoming a famous person, he had never been faced with a situation where a rank seven Gu Immortal chased after his life.

Now, he had experienced this from Fang Yuan, he finally recognized his own weakness, that was the movement aspect.

With yang pass tune unusable, Feng Jiu Ge’s speed fell drastically, he was soon surrounded by yama children and could no longer dodge as easily.

Feng Jiu Ge was forced to defend himself at one location. His killer moves had great power as he attacked the yama children who surrounded him from all directions.

Fang Yuan hid among them perfectly, great thief ghost hand was prepared to strike the moment Feng Jiu Ge’s defenses revealed a flaw!

But at this moment, the entire yama battlefield started to shake as it emitted a sharp noise.

“Oh no!” Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

“Lady Zi Wei must have done it.” Feng Jiu Ge was very happy.

The entire yama battlefield started to shake with greater intensity, Fairy Zi Wei’s actions were extremely effective after this amount of time.

“So little time had passed, Fairy Zi Wei actually managed to deduce the workings of my yama battlefield, she is so fast! No, at this rate, yama battlefield cannot last for thirty breaths of time, I need to obtain victory now!”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with a ruthless light.

“I was saving this for Fairy Zi Wei and the rest, but I will use it on you first!” There was no time, if yama battlefield was broken, Fang Yuan would lose the chance to kill even Feng Jiu Ge, he made up his mind to use this trump card.

Immortal killer move — Soul Explosion!

It was still the soul explosion method, but Fang Yuan was not detonating any ordinary yama child, it was an immemorial yama child!

Fang Yuan had two immemorial soul beasts originally, during this period of cultivation, he turned the two immemorial soul beasts into yama children as well.

These two yama children were extraordinary, Fang Yuan had finally used them after hiding them for so long!

Ancient yama child soul explosion was a peak rank seven killer move, while immemorial yama child soul explosion was rank eight.

Even though Fang Yuan did not deduce Luo Po seal successfully, he still had another hidden rank eight offensive method!

Boom!

Immemorial yama soul explosion!

Feng Jiu Ge was directly hit!

Splat.

At a certain area in Central Continent, Feng Jin Huang went into a daze, the cup in her hand fell to the ground and shattered.

“Hmm?” Duke Long sent her an inquiring gaze.

Feng Jin Huang held her chest with an uncertain expression, just a moment ago, she felt an intense sensation in her heart.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1579: Fate Armor

“He didn’t die? What Immortal Gu is this!” Fang Yuan stared with slightly widened eyes as Feng Jiu Ge floated in the air.

Feng Jiu Ge’s seven orifices were bleeding intensely, but a thin light armor surrounded his body, this armor saved his life, allowing him to survive the immemorial yama soul explosion.

“Rank eight Immortal Gu — Fate Armor.” Feng Jiu Ge coughed out blood as he said.

Fang Yuan’s expression was very dark.

This was the first time he was seeing fate armor Immortal Gu, even though Feng Jiu Ge used it in the River of Time earlier, Fang Yuan had sent Feng Jiu Ge into the River of Time back then, he did not witness this personally.

Thus, Fang Yuan did not know the existence of fate armor Immortal Gu.

And precisely so, he miscalculated.

“Heavenly Court’s foundation...” Fang Yuan smiled helplessly, but at the next moment, his determination surged as he looked at Feng Jiu Ge with a menacing gaze: “This fate armor Immortal Gu can protect you once, but can it save you again?”

Fang Yuan still had another immemorial yama child.

Feng Jiu Ge was pale as paper, he had sustained severe injuries but he spit out some blood: “Cough, you can try. I’m not afraid to let you know, fate armor Immortal Gu’s effect is defense, its power varies but it only follows the results dictated by fate. If I am not meant to die now, fate armor Immortal Gu can protect me from any killer move in this world. If I am fated to die already, then Fate Armor’s protection will be as weak as paper.”

“Fate!” Fang Yuan frowned tightly, saying the name of one Immortal Gu.

“You are right, this has to do with fate Immortal Gu.” Feng Jiu Ge nodded as he sighed.

If fate Immortal Gu was destroyed, Fate would no longer restrict all living beings, Fate Armor’s power would be reduced greatly, restricted by its rank, rank eight Immortal Gu would only be able to unleash rank eight defensive power. But now, Fate was injured and not fully destroyed, fate still bound the people of this world, this allowed fate armor Immortal Gu to unleash defenses beyond rank eight.

“My reverse flow protection seal is a tortoise shell already, but this fate armor Immortal Gu is even more sturdy.” Fang Yuan was shook, but his attacks became even fiercer.

Feng Jiu Ge used Fate Armor with all his strength, his immortal essence expenditure was huge but he could last for some time. This time when attacking Lang Ya blessed land, Fairy Zi Wei had already provided him assistance in the form of immortal essence storage.

Rumble!

At this time, there was an intense explosion as a purple galaxy appeared in yama battlefield, it expanded and revealed the appearance of the outside Lang Ya blessed land.

“Why is she so fast?!” Fairy Zi Wei’s speed of deducing yama battlefield was way faster than Fang Yuan’s expectations.

Fang Yuan grunted as he bled from his nose and mouth, yama battlefield collapsed, he had to face the backlash of this killer move.

Fairy Zi Wei did not give Feng Jiu Ge fate armor Immortal Gu simply to protect him. Once it was activated, Heavenly Court would sense it. Back then in the River of Time, Lord Huang Shi had used Fate Armor to locate Feng Jiu Ge and save his life.

Now, Fairy Zi Wei was already close to breaking into yama battlefield and unraveling it. Fate Armor acted as receptor for Fairy Zi Wei to increase her deduction of yama battlefield, she could open up a pathway with a shorter amount of time.

In history, wisdom path deductions have been the hardest at the starting step. All the wisdom path Gu Immortals in the world were trying to deduce matters on Fang Yuan, but he used wisdom path protection methods, as long as they were intact, they could not find him. Among the three wisdom path Gu Immortal experts of Eastern Sea, Hua An was also helpless and even reverse deduced by Fang Yuan.

When she had just started to deduce it, yama battlefield was complete and had no loopholes, but now that she tore an opening in it, the hardest part was over, the difficulty had fallen greatly.

Tear, tear...

The sound was endless as streams of purple galaxies tore through the sky, creating countless tears in yama battlefield.

Boom!

With an intense explosion, yama battlefield broke apart entirely, Fang Yuan spit out a mouthful of blood as a large number of mortal Gu died in his immortal aperture, the Immortal Gu used were also injured to some extent.

Fang Yuan returned to Lang Ya blessed land while in emperor yama form.

“Be careful, he has a way to steal Immortal Gu from the immortal aperture!” Feng Jiu Ge escaped and managed to fly back to Fairy Zi Wei, the moment he came out, he gave this intel to all his teammates.

“It’s you!” Chen Yi was the first to speak, he shouted angrily with wide opened eyes.

He recognized that Fang Yuan was the one who fought him in green ghost desert, the one who stole Qing Chou’s Soul Beast Token right in front of him!

Fang Yuan’s heart sank to rock bottom.

He did not manage to kill Feng Jiu Ge, fate armor Immortal Gu ruined his hopes. And even worse, emperor yama and great thief ghost hand’s intel were exposed, the enemies found out about them.

This was something Fang Yuan had been trying to avoid. Since the start of the battle, he had been keeping this trump card hidden, hoping to use it in this battle to kill a strong enemy, using yama battlefield to conceal the traces and keep his secrets hidden, but his wishes were not answered, Fang Yuan did not manage to kill anyone while his trump cards were exposed.

“Fang Yuan, you are truly a source of chaos, Liu Guan Yi is you, Suan Bu Jin is also you.” Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes flickered with purple light, she instantly understood Fang Yuan’s plan: “So that’s it, you want to control green ghost desert to collect soul cores and use Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley to cultivate. It is a pity Dang Hun Mountain has been destroyed! Hmm? No, there is orderly well... you have a way to restore Dang Hun Mountain!”

Fang Yuan did not speak, this Fairy Zi Wei was a wisdom path great expert indeed, she exposed so many of Fang Yuan’s secrets in an instant.

Fairy Zi Wei was also feeling deep lingering fear.

“To think that Fang Yuan has such a method to steal other people’s Immortal Gu directly!”

“Thankfully, great thief ghost hand is much weaker than formless hand, it cannot choose what Immortal Gu to steal. Otherwise, if it stole a crucial Immortal Gu, Feng Jiu Ge’s killer move activation would fail, he would face a backlash and would need to use Fate Armor in advance. It would be a problem of whether he could last until I deduce and broke this immortal battlefield killer move.”

“Great thief ghost hand can steal rank eight Immortal Gu, thankfully it did not manage to take Fate Armor, otherwise, how could Feng Jiu Ge survive? Feng Jiu Ge is indeed a Dao Guardian, he has strong luck and was not suppressed by Fang Yuan’s luck.”

“However...” Fairy Zi Wei looked at Fang Yuan with an eerie gaze: “This demon managed to steal Fixed Immortal Travel, it means that his luck is very strong, even though he failed to kill Feng Jiu Ge.”

Fate Immortal Gu was damaged by Red Lotus Demon Venerable, even though it was not destroyed, it was greatly weakened. Thereafter, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable rose up and created luck path.

As long as Fate did not recover, luck path would continue to be this strong. Fang Yuan's luck path attainment level was not high, he did not have any strong offensive killer moves in luck path, but luck path had always been helping him subtly, like burning soul bursting luck.

Boom boom boom!

Explosions resounded as both sides fought again, ending up in a chaotic battle.

Feng Jiu Ge had lost a lot of his battle strength as he went under Fairy Zi Wei's protection. Fang Yuan was also without options against Chen Yi's ancient tree prison cage, he could only join up with the super immortal formation and Heavenly Giant Solor to deal with Chen Yi and Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei displayed the might of a rank eight expert now, her killer moves were used with great execution, far above Chen Yi.

Chen Yi had Genesis Lotus' true inheritance, while Fairy Zi Wei cultivated Star Constellation's true inheritance, it was not that Genesis Lotus' true inheritance was inferior to Star Constellation's true inheritance, but because wisdom path killer moves were fundamentally more complex and expended much more mental energy.

Fang Yuan still had one immemorial yama child, emperor yama and great thief ghost hand were already exposed, Fairy Zi Wei and the rest could counter it.

They did not put down their guard, they were covered by immortal killer moves that exploded continuously. If great thief ghost hand got close to them, the explosions would force them out, there was no opportunity to steal.

The truth was, Chen Yi and Fairy Zi Wei's investigative methods were very exemplary, but Fang Yuan stopped using great thief ghost hand frequently after fearing that it would be found out.

The more he used it, the more flaws he would expose. Especially against Fairy Zi Wei, the more intel he leaked, the more she could deduce.

Bam!

With a thunderous sound, Thunder Ghost True Monarch appeared in a flash, she had returned!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1580: Heavenly Court's Call to Surrender

The moment Thunder Ghost True Monarch returned to the battlefield, the expressions of both sides changed.

Heavenly Court's immortals were extremely happy while Fang Yuan's side turned grim.

The two sides were evenly matched, at this time, Heavenly Court gained a new rank eight battle strength who was a first rate expert, this would cause a huge change in the battle result!

But Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s report made Fairy Zi Wei’s gaze turn dark: “What, you did not find wisdom Gu?”

Wisdom Gu was refined by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and the refinement process was recorded in Star Constellation’s true inheritance, allowing Fairy Zi Wei to know a lot about it. But Fairy Zi Wei did not know that wisdom Gu had the trait of following after information path environments.

“Wisdom Gu is wild, did they refine it? Or did they destroy it? Or do they have any method to resist the light of wisdom and relocate wisdom Gu?”

Thoughts rumbled in Fairy Zi Wei’s mind, she was thinking at lightning speed.

She stood up and looked at Heavenly Giant Solor, gazing at Fang Yuan as she shouted: “Hand over wisdom Gu, I will allow you to surrender!”

Heavenly Court’s current invasion was mainly for rank nine wisdom Gu, Fang Yuan was only secondary.

Immortal Gu were unique and hard to refine, rank nine Immortal Gu were at the pinnacle of the pyramid, in the current five regions, in this entire world, there were likely less than ten rank nine Gu.

Rank nine wisdom Gu was too important for the growth of Heavenly Court’s strength, it was second to fate Gu! Ignoring anything else, just Fairy Zi Wei alone, with just her wisdom path attainment and Star Constellation Chessboard, she was already one of the three strongest wisdom path great experts in the world.

If she could obtain rank nine wisdom Gu, and use Star Constellation Chessboard to refine it, she would be the number one wisdom path great expert in the world, she would comprehend all of the profundities of wisdom path in this universe, she would stand at the very top, the second strongest person would be miles away from her, she would have an unthinkable deduction ability.

Even if Fang Yuan had emperor yama, or even a rank eight wisdom path method, he would not be able to block Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions. Only rank nine methods could work.

But how many rank nine wisdom path methods were there? At least in Fang Yuan’s true inheritances of Lang Ya and Spectral Soul, there were no such records!

“Surrender?” The hairy man Gu Immortals shook.

Lang Ya land spirit shouted in anger: “Surrender my ass! Lang Ya blessed land will only have hairy men dying in battle, we will not be kneeling slaves!”

Fang Yuan was quite curious: “I am a complete otherworldly demon, in order to get wisdom Gu, will your Heavenly Court spare me?”

Fairy Zi Wei smiled arrogantly: “So what if you are a complete otherworldly demon? Our Heavenly Court predecessors have known about otherworldly demons long ago, we have recruited them before, it was merely not written in history. Look at now, Zhao Lian Yun is the best example.”

“Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court is far more magnanimous and accepting than you think.

Even if you are an otherworldly demon who possessed Spring Autumn Cicada and Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, as long as you turn over a new leaf and contribute your sovereign immortal aperture into Heavenly Court, you will be one of us. And according to Heavenly Court’s rules, we will treat you equally as everyone else!”

After hearing these words, Fang Yuan’s expression did not change, he still smiled coldly, but Chen Yi had a complex expression, there was suspicion and jealousy in his eyes.

Chen Yi believed what Fairy Zi Wei said, because Heavenly Court’s rules were as such, regardless of who you were in the past, after joining Heavenly Court as a righteous path member, after giving up your immortal aperture, you would be a member of Heavenly Court, there would be no differential treatment.

“But it is so difficult to join Heavenly Court! I, Chen Yi, have worked hard my whole life, I only managed to join Heavenly Court because of my battle strength and the fact that I have Genesis Lotus true inheritance, how many years has this Fang Yuan cultivated? He killed people and caused havoc everywhere, but if he turned around now and become a righteous person, he would get to join Heavenly Court!”

At once, Chen Yi felt a strong sense of injustice, he even felt a little grievance in his heart.

But Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s expression was unchanged, because Heavenly Court had once tried to recruit someone else, this person slaughtered the people in the world, he was a much greater problem than the current Fang Yuan.

He was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

Before Spectral Soul Demon Venerable reached rank nine, Heavenly Court had tried to recruit him multiple times. After becoming rank nine, they also tried to recruit him once.

“Heavenly Court is the Heavenly Court of humanity! Fang Yuan, you are extremely talented, you managed to roam freely as a rank seven and evade Heavenly Court’s pursuit for so long, it shows your qualification to join us. I can swear on my life, after joining Heavenly Court, not only would you preserve your life, you would be able to cultivate and continue being a free Gu Immortal.” Thunder Ghost True Monarch said.

“Fang Yuan...” At once, the hairy man Gu Immortals looked at Fang Yuan with worry.

Even Sixth Hair did the same.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “To obtain wisdom Gu, you guys are willing to let me go and recruit me, it shows how important rank nine wisdom Gu is to all of you! Then how about this, if you do not let us off today, I will destroy wisdom Gu in your face, your attempt will end in failure.”

“Hmph, incorrigible! How can the grand righteous path be threatened by the likes of you? Since you want to die, I will grant you your wish!” Thunder Ghost True Monarch charged at Fang Yuan with deep anger.

Boom boom boom!

Fang Yuan fought against Thunder Ghost True Monarch on barely even grounds, thunder was rumbling, air currents were turbulent.

“Oh? That means wisdom Gu is on you now?” Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes flickered with brilliance, she started to act as well.

Fairy Zi Wei was suppressed by Thunder Ghost True Monarch and Fairy Zi Wei’s cooperation, he could only use reverse flow protection seal to defend himself, he could not fight back at all.

He transmitted to Lang Ya land spirit: “First supreme elder, this is an emergency! If you have any methods left, use it now, otherwise, there will be no time to regret!!”

Lang Ya land spirit shouted: “Forget it, I’ll show you the true power of Lang Ya blessed land!”

As he said that, the entire sea surface of Lang Ya blessed land started to bubble, it was as if the ocean was boiling.

Countless refinement path dao marks shone with the light of dao marks, be it Gu Immortals or mortals, they could see it with their naked eyes.

The aura of an immortal killer move burst out like a grand tornado, it rampaged in the entire Lang Ya blessed land, none of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were spared, they were all hit by the move.

“What is this?!” Chen Yi and the rest had changes in expressions, all of their defensive methods radiated with a brilliant light, forced to resist the move.

The mysterious killer move was incredibly powerful, even Fang Yuan was hit by it, there were countless ripples on his reverse flow protection seal.

“Quick, come inside.” Lang Ya land spirit transmitted, moving the silver giant towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan successfully fused into Heavenly Giant Solor formation, this was not the first time he was entering this ancient battle formation.

“What move is this?” A flash of joy sparked on Fang Yuan’s face.

Lang Ya land spirit’s move was very powerful, all four Heavenly Court immortals were all forced to defend themselves, they could not attack.

Lang Ya land spirit smiled bitterly: “These were the gains in battle that my main body had obtained when he killed a water path great expert in his life, using it, he comprehended the strongest refinement path killer move – Omnipresent Four Seas! This move expends an immense amount of seawater, unless we are refining rank eight Immortal Gu, we would not use it. Against the enemy now, it can only last for dozens of breaths.”

Fang Yuan observed carefully, Lang Ya blessed land’s sea level was truly falling, a vast amount of water was expended to maintain this omnipresent four seas killer move.

Fang Yuan had a realization: “So this Lang Ya blessed land’s terrain was carefully designed. The three continents float on the vast sea, but the seawater is not simple at all, it is actually the refinement path foundation of the blessed land, it is truly precious.”

Fang Yuan looked at Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals as he sighed: “It is a pity that this move cannot differentiate friend and foe, otherwise, if we can attack now, we can gain the upper hand!”

Actually, omnipresent four seas could be contained in an area, but that place needed to have a corresponding immortal formation to draw out the power of the killer move and refine Gu.

And this refinement path immortal formation is none other than the Long Hair refinement path formation used to refine Myriad Self for Fang Yuan.

Heavenly Court would naturally not be lured into such an obvious trap, and in this situation, Lang Ya land spirit had no choice but to use this move fully across the whole of Lang Ya blessed land, in the sky, land, and sea.

But this way, Fang Yuan’s super immortal formation would also be attacked by omnipresent four seas. Thankfully, Lang Ya land spirit was prepared for it and went towards the silver giant, disassembling as the Immortal Gu were collected back, the variant human Gu Immortals of the three races also entered the silver giant.

“What do we do now?” Fang Yuan looked at Lang Ya land spirit as he asked.

He felt that Lang Ya blessed land still had some trump cards left.

And this battle would be decided by those trump cards!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1581: Thunder Ghost’s Death!

Lang Ya land spirit had a look of pain.

As he looked at the falling sea level, he frowned tightly, feeling deep loss.

This seawater seemed ordinary but it was not, Long Hair Ancestor had painstakingly created this refinement water during his late years. Right now, there was only the quantity of one sea, if there were four seas, he would be able to use a secret method to cause a qualitative change and create a man-made secluded domain of heaven and earth!

For this goal, Lang Ya blessed land had been kept at crescent moon lake for a long time, using the water path environment and immortal tribulation tempering aperture killer move to trigger water path tribulations and increase water path dao marks for Lang Ya blessed land.

But now, in order to resist Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, Lang Ya blessed land’s accumulations were rapidly expended, after this battle, it would definitely be depleted.

“Ahhhh!” Lang Ya land spirit growled, leading the band of hairy man Gu Immortals to mobilize Heavenly Giant Solor.

The silver giant attacked with immortal killer moves as Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were faced with explosions.

The attacks were extremely powerful, they were at rank eight level, at once, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had no way to fight back, Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s armor was broken, while Chen Yi and Fairy Zi Wei spat out blood, Feng Jiu Ge’s state was even worse, his face was pale as paper as he gritted his teeth, he was holding on with fate armor Immortal Gu!

Omnipresent four seas was in essence a refinement path killer move, it used the refinement path dao marks of Lang Ya blessed land, it was the accumulation of Long Hair Ancestor’s entire life.

This move did not care about ally or foe, Fang Yuan would be hit if he was within range, but hairy men could move freely. The reason was that hairy men had refinement path dao marks naturally!

And when Lang Ya land spirit’s side uses killer moves, the refinement path killer moves would be amplified by omnipresent four seas, each hit would be extremely powerful, having first rate rank eight power.

As for the silver giant, it could also move freely as it was an ancient battle formation instead of an Immortal Gu House, Heavenly Giant Solor depended on the user, right now, with the hairy man Gu Immortals controlling it, it was a refinement path giant.

This was also why Fang Yuan and the variant human Gu Immortals of the other three races did not participate.

If he attacked, he would be restricted by omnipresent four seas, there would not be any point.

“Kill, kill them all!”

“Lang Ya’s foundation is truly unfathomable.”

The variant human Gu Immortals of the three races gasped, but Fang Yuan frowned deeply, telling Lang Ya land spirit: “First supreme elder, even though your all-out attacks are powerful, they cannot determine victory. Omnipresent four seas cannot last long, we have limited time, if you do not use any of your remaining methods...”

“I know, shut up!” Lang Ya land spirit growled, his eyes were bloodshot, he gritted his teeth, having a fierce expression, he was very uneasy in his heart.

On the surface, he had a great advantage, but Heavenly Court’s four immortals could not be killed, they were like rocks by the seashore, no matter how hard the waves crashed into them, they remained motionless.

After more than ten breaths of time, even though the silver giant burst out with immense might, Heavenly Court’s four immortals were still alive, while Lang Ya blessed land’s seawater had dried up, not a drop of water remained, even the seabed was exposed.

“It is time to retaliate.” Thunder Ghost True Monarch breathed in deeply, her expression was sinister, she started to condense her black armor again.

“As expected of Long Hair Ancestor’s legacy.” Chen Yi sighed deeply, healing his own injuries rapidly.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had deep foundations, they resisted the silver giant’s attacks with only mild injuries.

“You forced me, you all forced me!” Seeing the approaching Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, Lang Ya land spirit muttered as he screamed afterwards: “Come, come if you want to lose your life!”

Omnipresent four seas could not defeat the enemies, but Lang Ya land spirit took out another trump card.

Rumble!

Intense thunder rumbled and red lightning flashed, in an instant, the whole of Lang Ya blessed land was enveloped.

“This is?!” Heavenly Court’s four immortals’ expressions rapidly changed to great shock. Be it the plotting Fairy Zi Wei, or the Thunder Ghost True Monarch bursting with battle strength, or Chen Yi who was once the authoritative figure of a sect, or Feng Jiu Ge with immense talent, they all lost their cool.

Fang Yuan was also dazed, memories flashed in his mind as he spoke: “Steal Life?”

The other hairy man Gu Immortals were stunned, they did not know what this trump card was, even Lang Ya land spirit looked at Fang Yuan in surprise: “That’s right, this is Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s rank eight steal life Immortal Gu! You know about it?”

Fang Yuan was deeply shocked, Lang Ya land spirit actually had steal life Immortal Gu in his hands.

Fang Yuan knew about steal life Immortal Gu from Thieving Heaven’s dream realm, to think that Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had left this Immortal Gu to Long Hair Ancestor.

Defend!

Heavenly Court’s four immortals tried to defend themselves.

They were extremely nervous now, hundreds or thousands of times as before!

Because they could tell that this was the red light emitted by steal life Immortal Gu.

At the next moment, the overwhelming red light suddenly retracted, as if thousands of arrows were shot out before flying back to the bows like time was reversed.

The red light brought away the lifespan of all lifeforms!

In an instant, Feng Jiu Ge turned from a handsome young man to an old and wrinkled man with white hair.

Fairy Zi Wei spit out a mouthful of blood, wrinkles appearing on her face.

Chen Yi was extremely pathetic, his long hair broke as strands flew in the wind.

As for Thunder Ghost True Monarch, she held her chest, originally, she looked like a young girl, but after the red light retracted, she completely turned into an old lady, her hair was white and her eyes were blurry, she gasped in weakness as she tried to breathe, there were barely any teeth left in her mouth.

“Good!” Seeing this, Fang Yuan smiled.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were very powerful, but most of them were slumbering in the immortal graveyard, unless they had no choice, they would not wake up. Because they had already expended most of their lifespan, with their already limited lifespan, they would not be able to live long.

And now, Lang Ya land spirit used steal life Immortal Gu, this weakness was targeted, greatly influencing the Heavenly Court’s four immortals.

“However, Lang Ya land spirit is only using steal life Immortal Gu, it is not a killer move and has a singular effect. Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals activated their methods urgently, they were all defensive but could not block everything.”

“And this steal life Immortal Gu did not differentiate ally from enemy, even the silver giant was useless against it, our Gu Immortals were also affected.” Fang Yuan looked at himself, he was also covered in white hair and wrinkles.

But it was not a problem, he had four thousand years of lifespan Gu, he quickly used a few to become a young man again.

As for the other variant human Gu Immortals, they originally had longer lifespans than humans, even without lifespan extension methods, they could also continue to live. Even those mortal hairy men could survive.

This was also why Lang Ya land spirit had kept this steal life Immortal Gu until now without using it.

“Even if Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals are stronger, so what? We will compete with them using lifespan! First supreme elder, use Steal Life again!” Fang Yuan’s eyes burst with ruthlessness, he urged Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit smiled bitterly: “Back then, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was afraid that this steal life Immortal Gu would cause chaos in this world, even though he gave it to my main body, he set up methods to only allow it to activate thrice before self-detonating.”

“What? Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable is such a merciful person?” The variant human Gu Immortals were very surprised.

As for Fang Yuan, thinking about Thieving Heaven’s dream realm, he understood why.

“Who cares if it can be used thrice or twice, when else do you want to use it!” Fang Yuan urged again.

Lang Ya land spirit nodded deeply, using steal life Immortal Gu again.

In the blink of an eye, the red light retracted again.

“Urgh...” Thunder Ghost True Monarch sighed with a weak tone: “To think that I... Jing Lan... would die here.”

She tried to open her eyes, but she was too weak, her eyes closed again.

She — had died of old age.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1582: Time To Retreat

“Senior Jing Lan!” Fairy Zi Wei cried out in sorrow.

Chen Yi and Feng Jiu Ge also had expressions of sorrow, hatred, anger, and other emotions.

Jing Lan’s death was unexpected, because they did not expect that Lang Ya blessed land actually had steal life Immortal Gu!

“Wasn’t it said that before Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable vanished mysteriously, he had been worried that steal life Gu was too powerful and would cause great chaos in the world if it ended in others’ hands, so he destroyed it along with the Gu recipe?” Fairy Zi Wei frowned.

Evidently, this was false information, but Heavenly Court thought it was real.

If Fairy Zi Wei wanted to know the details, she could only interrogate Lang Ya land spirit after capturing him.

After all, in the past, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had asked Long Hair Ancestor to refine Gu for him, whatever internal transaction they had or whatever information they leaked to deceive Heavenly Court was known to only these two parties.

“Hahaha!” Lang Ya land spirit laughed heartily: “You think that Lang Ya Sect is so easy to bully? This time, you will all die!”

“Be careful!” Fang Yuan suddenly shouted in warning.

“What?” At the next moment, Lang Ya land spirit gasped.

Because even though Jing Lan died, her heart was still shining with lightning sparks. Soon, her aged body melted entirely from the lightning heart’s heat and current.

The electric current filled the black armor, this unmanned armor actually raised its head, bursting out with a grand aura that could trample heaven and earth!

“This?!”

“Isn’t she dead?”

“Not good, this is not good!”

The variant human Gu Immortals gasped in fear and shock.

Fang Yuan had a grim expression, saying his deduction: “Thunder Ghost True Monarch indeed died, but her black armor is soul path in essence. Even though she died, the armor remained, it is akin to a special soul. And most importantly, her heart seems to be the final trump card, it has great power, we need to be wary of it!”

But at this moment, Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s armor burst out like a shooting star, towards the silver giant.

A vast amount of blue electric currents leaked out of the black armor, forming a trail of electricity behind it.

Fast!

The armor was extremely fast, after hearing Fang Yuan’s words, the hairy men were forewarned, but they had no time to dodge or use killer moves.

Because it was too fast!

Thunder Ghost True Monarch was most skilled at movement, her strength overall was at high standard within rank eight, but her speed was at the peak of rank right.

Right now, the lightning armor flew with speed that surpassed the peak of rank eight, it was at quasi-rank nine!

The silver giant could not dodge, it was hit by the lightning armor.

“We will retreat!” Fairy Zi Wei’s eyelids were twitching, she wanted to escape but it was too late!

Boom—!

An intense explosion occurred.

Countless flashes of lightning weaved and danced, the central area turned into a pool of lightning plasma due to the dense electricity!

At once, the world turned white, the light was simply too blinding. Countless mortal hairy men looked at the sky, they were crying, holding their eyes as they rolled on the ground, they had all gone blind after taking one glance.

As the light faded, an unparalleled air current blew in all directions.

Even Fairy Zi Wei and the rest were pushed away, they could not help themselves, they were like rafts in the middle of a tsunami.

The entire Cloud Cover Continent’s central area was blown to bits, a huge hole of gigantic size was created.

The whole of Lang Ya blessed land shook intensely, originally, the refinement path dao marks emitted dense light of dao marks, but now within the range of the explosion, they were all destroyed. The refinement path dao marks that were near the explosion had decreased greatly in numbers, while the ones left faded and dimmed.

At the center of the explosion, there was an empty space, only several Gu Immortals remained in the vast area like tiny ants.

“Cough, cough!” The remaining variant human Gu Immortals all had rank seven cultivation level and were people with great battle strength. They continued to cough as they spat out blood, they were in a pathetic state.

Lang Ya land spirit was translucent now, fading like an illusory shadow, he was on the brink of collapsing.

Only Fang Yuan was unharmed, but his expression was very dark, the reverse flow protection seal on him had been almost depleted! The Reverse Flow River within sovereign immortal aperture had expended ten percent of its water from this one attack!

“Worthy of the rank eight expert that once resisted Spectral Soul Demon Venerable! Even in death, she could retaliate to this extent!”

“This move condensed all of her lightning path dao marks into her heart, detonating it at once and erupting with overwhelming might.”

“After that, the battlefield had no lightning path dao marks remaining, it shows how she had made use of every single dao mark, she definitely had lightning path great grandmaster attainment level.”

Fang Yuan’s mind flashed with thoughts.

Even though he was not injured, his losses were severe.

Thunder Ghost True Monarch's final attack had quasi-rank nine power. When the explosion occurred, the silver giant first resisted it, but after the silver giant broke apart, Fang Yuan's reverse flow protection seal resisted it. Even then, Reverse Flow River lost water amounting to ten percent of its total capacity.

Reverse Flow River sustained the reverse flow protection seal killer move, it was not unlimited, Fang Yuan had used it multiple times already, only sixty percent was left.

Fang Yuan was in a better shape, but the rest were in pitiful conditions.

The silver giant broke apart, the backlash coupled with Thunder Ghost True Monarch's final explosion caused half of the variant human Gu Immortals to die, their corpses were decimated, their souls had disintegrated, only their immortal apertures were left.

The remaining immortals who were alive had severe injuries, some showed shock on their faces, while others were emotionless, they were completely stupefied from the explosion.

Thunder Ghost True Monarch's explosion caused great damage to the entire variant human alliance!

“Protect Lang Ya land spirit, we still have steal life Gu, we can fight!” Fang Yuan shouted, at the same time, he flew in front of Lang Ya land spirit, protecting him. At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan had to control the situation.

“That's right, we have... steal life Immortal Gu!” The battle was at the most crucial moment, Lang Ya land spirit knew that he could not be angry or upset now, he immediately moved to use steal life Immortal Gu a second time.

“Quickly act!!” Fairy Zi Wei and Chen Yi charged.

Seeing that steal life Immortal Gu was about to be used again, how could they not be anxious?

Immortal killer move — Karma Divine Tree!

Chen Yi's body shook as green smoke emerged to form a huge divine tree.

Meanwhile, Fairy Zi Wei attacked fiercely.

Immortal killer move — Dead Inside From Sorrow!

She directly used her strongest method, the emotion of sorrow quickly spread, there were no bright lights from her method, but many of the variant human Gu Immortals defending Lang Ya land spirit twitched as they grasped their hearts, their eyes rolled over as they died mysteriously!

“Sixth Hair!” Fang Yuan called out, Fairy Zi Wei's attack could not be guarded against, Sixth Hair had barely survived the explosion earlier, he was almost dead, with this attack from Fairy Zi Wei, he could not take it anymore, he died.

Fang Yuan's expression changed, even though he was unharmed, Reverse Flow River lost another ten percent of its water, this meant that Fairy Zi Wei's offensive killer move was on par with Thunder Ghost True Monarch's final self-detonated explosion!

“No—! Save me!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted, grabbing Fang Yuan's arm as he used a defensive killer move against Fairy Zi Wei’s attack.

Fang Yuan looked at him helplessly.

Because reverse flow protection seal could only protect him, it could not defend Lang Ya land spirit as well.

“First supreme elder, you cannot use steal life Immortal Gu anymore in this state. The only way now is to move the entire Lang Ya blessed land into my immortal aperture, that is the only way left!” Fang Yuan urged with an earnest expression.

But Lang Ya land spirit rejected him, he stared at Fang Yuan angrily: “No, this won’t do, I can still fight!”

Bump.

At the next moment, he reached his limit, his defensive methods were all broken, his entire body shattered into countless shards, dying on the spot, disintegrating and breaking down!

“Killed him!” Fairy Zi Wei saw this and relaxed, she almost fell down and fainted on the spot.

Dead inside from sorrow had great backlash, Fairy Zi Wei laughed bitterly in her heart, after using it this time, she would have to rest for a very long time.

“Lang Ya land spirit, damn it...” Fang Yuan frowned, cursing: “But I have not lost my chance! Maybe...”

At the next moment, at the place where Lang Ya land spirit died, a figure appeared.

He had a white beard and eyebrows, it was the previous white haired Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya blessed land had two obsessions, causing there to be two land spirits, the black haired land spirit was killed, but the white haired land spirit appeared once again.

“What? A second Lang Ya land spirit appeared!” Fairy Zi Wei frowned deeply, she knew of this secret, but she was very confident in dead inside from sorrow, she felt that both land spirits could be killed together.

But the truth was, Lang Ya blessed land was more profound than her estimations.

Even though Fairy Zi Wei could use dead inside from sorrow killer move again, there was no time. And could ordinary methods kill Lang Ya land spirit defended by Fang Yuan?

Fairy Zi Wei was not flustered, instead, her lips curled up, she started to focus on defense, protecting her teammate.

That teammate was Chen Yi.

Chen Yi’s karma divine tree was already bearing a huge fruit.

“Every cause has an effect, the effect can eliminate the cause1!” Chen Yi shouted as he extended his right hand, grabbing this fruit and squeezing it.

Guh.

The fruit was instantly squashed as the purple fruit juice splattered on Chen Yi's face and body like poisonous venom.

Chii Chiii Chiii...

Intense pain assaulted him as Chen Yi cried out, his face and body was corroded by the fruit juice, pieces of flesh and skin rotted as his bones were exposed in a few breaths of time.

Chen Yi paid such a huge price, injuring himself gravely to use karma divine tree forcefully, he had his motive!

Lang Ya land spirit's expression changed as he said grimly: "They destroyed steal life Immortal Gu!"

"Sigh!" Fang Yuan sighed deeply, urging again: "Now, you can only fuse Lang Ya blessed land into my..."

Before he finished, white haired Lang Ya land spirit interrupted: "No need, my Lang Ya blessed land has its trump card! My former main body had made an agreement with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable in the past. If we face any danger of extermination, we can request help from Longevity Heaven to seek help from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's descendants. Afterwards, we will join Longevity Heaven and fuse into it while being on equal status!"

Saying so, a door opened deep within the blessed land.

A few breaths of time later, legendary immemorial desolate beast Mao Li Qiu charged out from deep underground.

Behind it, there were several Gu Immortals with rank eight aura approaching with battle intent.

"Lang Ya blessed land is now the territory of Longevity Heaven!"

"Heavenly Court! Your claws are even longer than mine, I, Mao Li Qiu, will chop them all off today, hahaha1."

"Fang Yuan is here too, kill him, we will take revenge for the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and reclaim the luck path true inheritance!"

At once, with strong reinforcements, the situation of the battle was turned around immediately.

"Sigh..." Fang Yuan let out a deep sigh, he told himself internally: "It is time to retreat."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1583: Bull Demon, Flower Lady

"First supreme elder, how can you say this!" Longevity Heaven's members were filled with animosity towards Fang Yuan, he retreated as he chided Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit snorted, not showing Fang Yuan any kindness: “I have not settled the score with you! You had ulterior motives and pushed Black Hair to the brink of destruction, haven’t you obtained enough benefits during this period?!”

Lang Ya land spirit turned on him.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned grim: “Aren’t you afraid of the alliance agreement...”

“Black Hair was the one who set the agreement with you, not me!” Lang Ya land spirit responded.

“As expected.” Fang Yuan sighed internally, the white haired land spirit’s decision showed some problems. Fang Yuan had guessed it already, he merely confirmed it with Lang Ya land spirit personally.

“Fang Yuan, where can you run to!” Saying so, Mao Li Qiu pounced and slammed its claw on Fang Yuan.

Boom!

The huge force impacted Fang Yuan as he was pushed away, he crashed like a meteor onto the dried seabed.

Even though Fang Yuan looked pathetic, he was unharmed, while Mao Li Qiu shrugged its claws and said with anger: “This Reverse Flow River is truly annoying!”

“Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, fight us!” A muscular brute with a thick beard said with a thunderous voice, he was extremely tall and strong, having a powerful aura.

There was another Gu Immortal, she was a little girl with a flower on her head, she sat on the muscular man’s shoulder, giggling as her crystal-like eyes on her innocent cute face stared at Fairy Zi Wei.

The two Gu Immortals had rank eight cultivation level but they did not attack Fang Yuan, they charged at Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, there was great risk for Longevity Heaven to keep her in the battlefield, she had to be eliminated first!

“Bull Demon, Flower Lady, you are both here...” Fairy Zi Wei’s pupils shrunk, she recognized who these people were as solemness flashed on her eyes.

“Hahaha, since you, Zi Wei, can move around, so can the two of us!” The brutish Bull Demon laughed maniacally.

Boom boom boom!

A chain of explosions occurred as Bull Demon and Flower Lady forced Fairy Zi Wei to retreat time and again.

Fairy Zi Wei had little lifespan to begin with, she was lucky to have Star Constellation true inheritance helping her, but after facing the effect of Steal Life twice, she was in a poor state now. In contrast, Longevity Heaven expended its foundation and summoned Bull Demon and Flower Lady in perfect condition, they had the advantage.

Fairy Zi Wei blocked their attacks while observing the battlefield.

When she saw that Mao Li Qiu slashed at Fang Yuan, she suddenly reminded: “Be careful, Fang Yuan had rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel, don’t let him escape!”

Even though Longevity Heaven wanted her dead, she was still calm as ice, she was not overwhelmed by them, her intention to kill Fang Yuan had never wavered.

Mao Li Qiu frowned immediately.

They had brought three rank eights, one legendary immemorial desolate beast, and one Immortal Gu House here, but they were not space path related.

Fixed Immortal Travel was a space path Immortal Gu, only space path Gu Immortals were the most skilled at countering it.

Mao Li Qiu had a change of mind as it charged at Fang Yuan, shouting at Lang Ya land spirit: “Old man, quickly act, deal with Fang Yuan, we will give you a lot of credit for it!”

Lang Ya land spirit was hesitant, but he quickly shouted: “Shut up Mao Li Qiu! Since Fang Yuan wants to leave, let him. What rights do you have to order me around? Even though I sought help from Longevity Heaven, according to our agreement back then, we are on equal status!”

Lang Ya land spirit had thought of killing Fang Yuan, but he soon thought of how Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven failed to kill Fang Yuan after hunting him down for so long, how could he succeed?

Fang Yuan knew everything about Lang Ya blessed land, he also had great thief ghost hand, reverse flow protection seal, Fixed Immortal Travel, and countless unscrupulous methods, Lang Ya land spirit did not want to aggravate such a demon.

“You!” Mao Li Qiu shouted in anger, but it could not do anything to Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit said to the remaining variant human Gu Immortals: “You are all clear of the situation now, even though Black Hair died, I am not restricted by the agreement. But don’t worry, as long as you all join my Lang Ya blessed land, I can ensure your safety!”

The variant human Gu Immortals had ugly expressions, they looked at each other and nodded.

There was no choice, they were exposed now and were under the alliance agreement, Lang Ya land spirit also knew a lot about them. There was no options left, if they did not want to die, they would need to surrender.

Ancient sword dragon transformation!

Myriad dragon!

Familiar face!

Fang Yuan used three moves at once, with myriad self Immortal Gu, he could be very efficient in using consecutive killer moves, before Mao Li Qiu got close to him, it had to face the myriad dragon army.

Mao Li Qiu growled, using immortal killer moves to summon wind, frost, and lightning, killing countless sword dragon clones.

But at this time, Fang Yuan had already gotten close to Lang Ya land spirit.

“Be careful, he is there!” Five Elements Grandmaster shouted, he found out Fang Yuan’s location in advance.

He had sneaked into Longevity Heaven but got trapped in Immortal Gu House Calamity Luck Altar after he was discovered. After a long time of resisting the Longevity Heaven Gu Immortals, Five Elements Grandmaster realized that he had no chance of escaping, he could only lower his head and join Longevity Heaven.

This time, Longevity Heaven came to reinforce Lang Ya blessed land, he was one of the ones who came.

“He actually found me! But... it is too late!!” Fang Yuan turned into the ancient sword dragon and roared, his dragon fangs were sharp and sinister.

“Fang Yuan, what are you trying to do?!” Lang Ya land spirit shouted in shock, he quickly used his defensive immortal killer move.

“Naturally to kill you! Immemorial yama child – Soul Explosion!” Fang Yuan shouted angrily.

Boom—!

The rank eight killer move erupted, pitch black smoke spread out as it engulfed everything, the entire Lang Ya land spirit was covered in the black smoke.

“Don’t!” The variant human Gu Immortals shouted.

“Quickly stop, we are allies by marriage...” Snowman Gu Immortal Bing Yuan screamed.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan could not care about their lives anymore, Lang Ya land spirit knew too much, since it did not want to join Fang Yuan, it had to die!

“Quickly save the land spirit! Don’t let him die!” Mao Li Qiu was so shocked its hair was standing, it resisted the soul explosion as it charged at Fang Yuan.

“Calamity Luck Altar!” Five Elements Grandmaster directly let out this Immortal Gu House and went inside, crashing towards Fang Yuan while moving it.

Calamity Luck Altar was one of the foundations of Longevity Heaven, they had actually brought it over to help Lang Ya blessed land!

“Hmph, he escaped quickly.” Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with a cold light.

He did not take Lang Ya land spirit’s life, at the crucial moment, Lang Ya land spirit teleported away.

If Five Elements Grandmaster had not reminded him, Lang Ya land spirit might not have reacted in time. But now, this was his domain, without using other methods to restrict him, he could teleport away from Fang Yuan.

“It is not so easy to take my life. Everyone, we will meet again.” Fang Yuan looked around as he left his final words, using Fixed Immortal Travel afterwards.

He was in the center of the soul explosion, it was like the eye of the tornado, he was safe and sound. To approach Fang Yuan, the rest had to resist the soul explosion which had dense soul path dao marks, their immortal killer moves were restricted.

Rank seven Immortal Gu – Fixed Immortal Travel!

Jade light flashed as Fang Yuan vanished on the spot before anyone could interfere, he retreated successfully.

“We did not manage to kill this demon!” Fairy Zi Wei felt regretful.

Mao Li Qiu roared in anger, its bloodshot eyes stared at Fairy Zi Wei.

Without Fang Yuan, only Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court were left.

Bam bam bam...

Continuous explosions resounded, the battle went into the climax right from the start.

“Stop, stop, don’t destroy my blessed land. Damn it!” Lang Ya land spirit stomped his feet in anger, moving away as he tried to gather the lucky survivors on the three continents.

Fang Yuan’s vision changed, when he regained his senses, he was in an underground cave.

“Fixed Immortal Travel is just so convenient.” Fang Yuan sighed.

After stealing this rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel, he placed it in Heaven Sealing Mountain’s immortal formation for refinement, it quickly became Fang Yuan’s.

After confirming that there were no traps, Fang Yuan used it and left Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya blessed land had rank eight Gu Immortals fighting, while outside there was Prince Feng Xian lying in ambush, Fang Yuan was an eyesore for both forces, he could not stay. If others were given enough time, or if he was hit by any special move and could not leave, it would be too stupid of him.

“Who is it?”

“Ah, it’s elder Fang Yuan!”

Several rank six Gu Immortals sensed the immortal aura as they ran over, after seeing Fang Yuan, they bowed and asked: “Elder Fang Yuan, how is the situation in Lang Ya blessed land?”

Fang Yuan smiled viciously, he did not speak, he spread his arms instead.

Immortal killer move — Yama Battlefield!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1584: Slaughter

“What happened?”

“Immortal battlefield... this, this is not funny.”

"Lord Fang Yuan, we are on the same side!"

Panic and shouting ensued, the rockman and snowman Gu Immortals screamed while revealing deep wariness in their eyes.

In the current world, humans were the dominant race, these snowmen and rockmen were living desperately in the icy plain, they had a huge pressure of survival. In this environment, those variant humans who could become Gu Immortals were not useless.

If not for Fang Yuan's rank seven aura and publicly recognized rank eight battle strength, these rank six variant human Gu Immortals might have attacked already.

Fang Yuan's expression did not change, he looked at the sole rank seven Gu Immortal among the variant humans as he sighed: "Don't panic, I am your ally, how can I harm you? Lang Ya blessed land lost the battle, only I managed to escape, we lost because there was a traitor among you."

"What? We lost!"

"Lang Ya blessed land has been taken over by Heavenly Court?"

"We have a traitor?"

Fang Yuan's words were shocking, all the variant human Gu Immortals were deeply shook.

The sole rank seven snowman Gu Immortal frowned deeply: "Lord Fang Yuan, please open the immortal battlefield, let us communicate with our tribe!"

But before he finished his words, his body shook, he screamed: "My Immortal Gu!"

It was Fang Yuan's great thief ghost hand, it had succeeded in stealing the Gu.

The other variant human Gu Immortals were confused, they asked in concern: "Lord Bing Zhuo, what happened?"

That's right, the snowman Gu Immortal guarding their base was Bing Zhuo. He had a rather good relationship with Fang Yuan, he had once invited Fang Yuan to drink his ice wolf wine.

Bing Zhuo stared at Fang Yuan angrily, he was about to scream with Fang Yuan took the initiative and pointed at him, saying with great certainty: "You are the traitor!"

The variant human Gu Immortals felt deep shock again.

"I am not a traitor! Fang Yuan, you stole my Immortal Gu and accused me, what is your intention?!" Bing Zhuo was furious, he grabbed the air as a pair of ice spears formed in his hands, emanating with deep frost energy.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly and said with deep anger and sadness: "I am right! You guys heard correctly, look, my alliance agreement did not trigger, this Bing Zhuo is a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal in disguise! The real Bing Zhuo died long ago."

The other variant human Gu Immortals looked at each other, female immortal Xue Er was Fang Yuan's fiancée, she asked: "Is there any misunderstanding? Lord Bing Zhuo has been with us all along."

"I am not a traitor! There has to be some misunderstanding, Lord Fang Yuan, you might have fallen for the enemy’s ploy. Quickly return my Immortal Gu.” Bing Zhuo said with a cold expression.

But at the next moment, Xue Er’s body shook as she revealed great fear: “My, my Immortal Gu!”

Bing Zhuo was covered in frost energy, great thief ghost hand could not approach him, but Xue Er was an easy target.

“Fang Yuan!” Xue Er looked at Fang Yuan in disbelief.

Bing Zhuo charged at Fang Yuan as he shouted in anger: “I knew you humans were all incorrigible!”

Fang Yuan snickered: “Clown.”

Saying so, yama children emerged from his emperor’s robe, dozens of them flew out towards Bing Zhuo and the other variant human Gu Immortals.

At this moment, Fang Yuan exposed his ill intent, the variant human Gu Immortals no longer had any illusions, they charged at Fang Yuan after a temporary shock.

But how could their strength match these yama children with rank seven battle strength?

After the first clash, the variant human Gu Immortals’ formation was broken by the yama children, they were separated and forced into their respective desperate fights.

Fang Yuan turned into emperor yama form and controlled the situation while he watched these variant human Gu Immortals fight the yama children.

Yama children were useless against Feng Jiu Ge and the rest, but against the variant human Gu Immortals, they were sufficient.

If not for Fang Yuan intentionally holding back, these rank six variant human Gu Immortals would have been killed by the yama children already.

The only rank seven Gu Immortal Bing Zhuo was also in a tough fight, he could not escape.

Great thief ghost hand!

Great thief ghost hand!

Great thief ghost hand!

Fang Yuan used great thief ghost hand consecutively, stealing the Immortal Gu of these variant human Gu Immortals one by one.

This was the reason why Fang Yuan held back, if he forced them too much, they would despair and destroy their Immortal Gu and resources, Fang Yuan would lose all his gains.

But now that they had hope, these variant human Gu Immortals would resist till the end, only few were as resolute as Meng Tu in suiciding.

Furthermore, the variant humans had been living in seclusion, they only sparred regularly, they had little experience with battles that involved life and death.

As a wisdom path Gu Immortal, Fang Yuan had already deciphered the thoughts of these variant humans, right now, even though his tactic was simple, it was incredibly effective.

The variant human Gu Immortals had their Immortal Gu stolen, their battle strength fell drastically, they were becoming weaker.

“Fang Yuan, I was wrong about you! How can you be so unscrupulous, you harmed your allies!” A rockman Gu Immortal shouted in anger and agony.

Bing Zhuo smiled coldly: “Haven’t you realized? This guy has gotten rid of the alliance agreement already, he is not an ally, he is an enemy!”

“Sigh, you speak too much crap.” Fang Yuan sighed lightly, making a yama child self-detonate.

Immortal killer move — Soul Explosion!

Bing Zhuo was a close combat specialist, the yama child was too close to him, he could not dodge, after getting hit, the explosion destroyed his corpse entirely.

“Lord Bing Zhuo!” A sorrowful cry resounded.

Xue Er almost fainted.

Fang Yuan had a cold expression, he had almost stolen all of these Gu Immortals’ Immortal Gu, the rest were well guarded and great thief ghost hand could not get close to them. Fang Yuan had limited time, he did not want to drag this on, he started to kill them.

Variant human Gu Immortals died one after another, only Xue Er was left eventually.

“You demon, I will not let you off even as a ghost!” Xue Er had a distorted expression, saying her final words with deep hatred.

At once, several yama children went up and tore her into pieces of shredded meat.

As for her soul, it was preserved in yama battlefield, imprisoned by Fang Yuan along with the other variant human Gu Immortals’ souls.

Soul search!

Using his extremely proficient soul search method, Fang Yuan quickly grasped the details of the snowman and rockman tribes.

Fang Yuan dispelled yama battlefield as he returned to the icy plain again.

This slaughter took some time, but the process was not hindered by any external forces, there were no deductions or attacks on yama battlefield. This showed that the variant human Gu Immortals were the final batch of Gu Immortals left here.

According to the soul search results, Fang Yuan went deep underground and found large numbers of rockman and snowman Gu Masters, and even more normal mortals.

Fang Yuan forcefully moved them all into his sovereign immortal aperture.

After a while, he excavated the treasury of these two tribes and moved them into his immortal aperture.

The snowman tribe’s ice tear and the rockman tribe’s bumpy rice were specialty immortal materials of the two tribes. Other than that, there were normal immortal materials left behind from the Olden Antiquity Era and Remote Antiquity Era, they were all nearly nonexistent by now, unable to be found in treasure yellow heaven. Among them, there was face changing silver, this metal could mimic any beautiful woman and turn into their face.

As for the immortal apertures of the dead variant human Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan sealed them temporarily, he did not want to land the apertures here.

Rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel!

Using this Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan left freely, leaving the empty crime scene behind. This paradise of the rockmen and snowmen had been destroyed completely.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan appeared in Southern Border.

“Who?!” The two Gu Immortals in Southern Border shouted as Fang Yuan activated emperor yama.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly as he pointed.

Soul explosion!

Soul explosion!

Soul explosion!

Soul explosion!

...

After five to six soul explosions, the two Southern Border Gu Immortals ran away in great fear. Who was this person, he was simply crazy! Attacking with a series of killer moves at once that were all at rank seven peak power!

The two immortals left using the immortal Gu formation, Fang Yuan could do nothing about it.

But soon, he destroyed this immortal Gu formation with brute force and destroyed the two Immortal Gu and countless mortal Gu inside.

Once the immortal formation was destroyed, the inside was exposed.

Fang Yuan smiled, this flowing light was bright and dazzling, it was a dream realm!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1585: Fang Yuan’s Attainment Levels

This dream realm was not very big.

The reason why Fang Yuan could find it was because he had thrown this dream realm out personally.

Back then, he disguised as Wu Yi Hai and entered the righteous path, secretly entering dream realms to raise his attainment level. When the battle started, Heavenly Court interfered and Purple Mountain True Monarch died, Fang Yuan inherited Shadow Sect and brought the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies and escaped for his life.

Along the way, he used the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies to resist the strong enemies and managed to escape safely.

But he used up all the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies in the process.

This place was where Fang Yuan fought against Yi clan’s Gu Immortals, he detonated two Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies and forced back Yi clan’s Immortal Gu House Bay Pavilion.

After the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies detonated, they formed into this dream realm. The Southern Border Gu Immortals were not going to let it go, after some contest, two clans won and created an immortal formation to develop using this dream realm.

Fang Yuan used Fixed Immortal Travel to arrive here and sent the guarding Gu Immortals running before he destroyed the immortal formation.

Even though using great thief ghost hand now could steal Gu worms, it could not target Immortal Gu specifically, with so many mortal Gu here, there was a big chance of great thief ghost hand stealing mortal Gu consecutively.

To prevent the immortal formation from sending reinforcements or self-detonating, Fang Yuan decided to strike first and destroyed it.

Even though Immortal Gu were unique, Fang Yuan did not really mind it now.

Fang Yuan had a lot of Immortal Gu, after slaughtering the rockman and snowman Gu Immortals, he gained a lot of rank six and seven Immortal Gu, there was going to be a headache later on how to feed them.

What Fang Yuan lacked were Immortal Gu that suited him, firstly, they had to be rank seven for him, rank six Immortal Gu were too low ranked now. And the path also had to be among the ones he was specialized in.

With Fang Yuan’s refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level, any Immortal Gu recipe could be turned into an immortal killer move, if he needed any specific Immortal Gu, he could use Immortal Gu to deduce recipes and use them instead. (Of course, the deduction’s difficulty would vary according to the specific situations. Even with the light of wisdom, some Immortal Gu recipes that needed decades or even centuries would be ignored by Fang Yuan in this case.)

“Hmm, the dream realm has shrunk a little.” Fang Yuan noticed when he took a second look.

The original dream realm was made of two Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, it was slightly smaller now.

“Because others explored it and consumed it...”

Other Gu Immortals did not have Fang Yuan’s advanced methods, but they could still explore it for dream path Gu materials.

But these materials could be harvested in their own dreams too. The true value of dream realms was the true meaning left behind by others, the Southern Border Gu Immortals were simply giving up the treasure for scraps. But they were happy to do this, the forces were busy gathering dream path Gu materials and buying them for high prices in treasure yellow heaven.”

“If I remember correctly, these two dream realms are ice and snow path along with space path.”

These dream realms originate from Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he was a great grandmaster in every path, his dream realms comprise all the different paths currently known.

Fang Yuan had specially chosen these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies. But because he was trying to escape, he gave up on them as they were not very useful to him.

But that was in the past, right now, they were very useful.

Fang Yuan needed space path attainment level, because he could design an immortal killer move for Fixed Immortal Travel so that the teleportation time was reduced.

Fang Yuan needed ice and snow path attainment level even more. He had just killed many variant human Gu Immortals, the immortal apertures that the snowman Gu Immortals left behind were mostly ice and snow path, he needed attainment level to annex them.

“Right now, among my paths, refinement path is the highest at quasi-supreme grandmaster.”

“Followed by theft path at great grandmaster.”

“The third group of strength path, wisdom path, star path, transformation path, blood path, dark path, formation path, and water path are all at grandmaster attainment level.”

“The fourth group are luck path, soul path, enslavement path, and earth path at master attainment level.”

“Below that are sword path, space path, time path, dream path, poison path, fire path, metal path, and others, they are all ordinary.”

“And finally, information path, ice and snow path, qi path, light path, sound path, phantom path, rule path, and others, I have not been involved in them in both lives.”

Among all his paths, Fang Yuan needed to raise time path the most!

His time path attainment level was only ordinary, Fang Yuan had to become a grandmaster at the very least.

“Heavenly Court is too big and strong, it had countless hibernating experts. Even now, with the wisdom path great expert Fairy Zi Wei leading them, with Chen Yi and the rest supporting her, they managed to invade Lang Ya blessed land without even Duke Long’s presence.”

“If not for Long Hair Ancestor’s and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s agreement, so that Lang Ya blessed land could gain Longevity Heaven’s assistance, it would have fallen already.”

Fang Yuan was not someone who did not know his limit, he knew clearly: even if he had reverse flow protection seal and emperor yama, or even if he deduced Luo Po seal, he was only counted as a rank eight Gu Immortal, against Heavenly Court, his strength as a single individual was useless.

In his previous life, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable led Shadow Sect and successfully defied heaven, mixing into Heavenly Court and concealing himself, becoming the mastermind that wreaked havoc in the five regions, secretly supporting Ma Hong Yun and Western Desert's Tang clan, even causing the death of Feng Jiu Ge in Lang Ya blessed land and Feng Jin Huang's death by Fang Yuan and the others, Shadow Sect was behind all these events, they had unfathomably deep influence.

But now, heaven's will used Fang Yuan as a pawn to rebirth and change the past, Shadow Sect lost the fight and Heavenly Court had the absolute advantage.

Fang Yuan was using Shadow Sect's inheritance to maintain his footing, but it was too difficult to deal with Heavenly Court. The loss of Lang Ya blessed land was a clear example.

"My only hope of defeating Heavenly Court is to obtain Red Lotus' true inheritance. Using the power of Red Lotus' true inheritance, I will resist Heavenly Court and destroy fate Gu!"

"But to inherit Red Lotus' true inheritance, I will need to enter the River of Time. Heavenly Court must already have a huge force in there waiting for me!"

Even now that Fairy Zi Wei and the rest were trapped in Lang Ya blessed land fighting against Longevity Heaven's experts, Fang Yuan did not think of exploring the River of Time.

How could Fairy Zi Wei leave out such a big flaw?

The River of Time contained countless time path dao marks, even though the sovereign immortal body was not restricted, when Fang Yuan uses killer moves of any other path, it would be greatly weakened. Rank six immortal killer moves would become as weak as mortal killer moves.

Earlier, Fang Yuan entered the River of Time to catch Heavenly Court off guard, because he had the immemorial year monkey, and because Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had already taken over one of the stone lotus islands. Eventually, he used the stone lotus island to kill Lord Huang Shi, but in the process, he did not truly fight.

And now, Fang Yuan wanted to find another true inheritance of Red Lotus, he wanted to find a new stone lotus island. The immemorial year monkey died in Lang Ya blessed land, while Fang Yuan's reverse flow protection seal, emperor yama and other killer moves were all weakened in there.

"In the River of Time, the most suitable methods are time path killer moves!"

"Even though I have Hei Fan's true inheritance and Spectral Soul's true inheritance has lots of time path details, the former lacks an offensive rank eight time path method, even though Years Flow Like Water is rank eight, its effect is to produce year Gu and create defensive killer moves. As for the latter, Spectral Soul's true inheritance has many time path offensive methods, including rank eight, but I do not have the necessary time path Immortal Gu."

Thus, Fang Yuan wanted to obtain time path grandmaster attainment level and use the light of wisdom to deduce killer moves that he could use personally. With these methods, he would be able to resist Heavenly Court in the River of Time!

Immortal killer move — Heaven's Will Dissipation!

While thinking, Fang Yuan multi-tasked and completed his killer move.

A grey-white light appeared on his body.

The grey-white light spread into the dream realm in front him as it spread their radiance everywhere, like ink entering clear water.

Soon, the entire dream realm was covered by grey-white light specks.

The multicolored eyes appeared from these specks.

These eyes were very special, they changed colors with each blink.

The number of multicolored eyes increased rapidly, after a few breaths of time, they went from tens to hundreds, and to thousands in a flash.

The colored eyeballs blinked continuously, each time they blinked, it was an attack against heaven’s will.

Eventually, the multicolored eyes fell in numbers until they vanished entirely.

Immortal killer move — Pure Dream Reality Seeker Transformation!

Fang Yuan used a second move as this dream realm condensed into two human figures, one was intact while the other was handicapped.

Fang Yuan opened his immortal aperture’s entrance and sent these two Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies inside.

Using Fixed Immortal Travel, he vanished in a few breaths of time, leaving behind an empty space.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1586: Snow Crystal Formation

The two Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies entered the sovereign immortal aperture and settled down in Mini Green Heaven.

The sovereign immortal aperture had five regions and nine heavens, among all the nine heavens, Mini Green Heaven was the least developed. Thus, Fang Yuan used it as the storage area of dream realms.

Shadow Sect’s members, Ying Wu Xie, Lady White Rabbit, Hei Lou Lan, Fairy Miao Yin, and Bai Ning Bing were all cultivating in Mini Yellow Heaven.

Lang Ya’s battle was too high end, everyone who participated had rank eight battle strength. Even the variant human Gu Immortals relied on the super immortal formation to fight, once it was destroyed, they could not fight anymore.

In a crucial moment, Fang Yuan would possibly need the Shadow Sect members to use ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel, so they did not join that fight after all.

As for Fang Yuan’s time path clone, he was at the most northern part of Mini Northern Plains.

“Tch!”

With a soft click, as the time path clone placed the final mortal Gu in, the Gu formation activated.

This Gu formation had a huge range of a few dozen square kilometers of land, there were tens of thousands of mortal Gu used to create it from rank one to five, they were of all paths but most of the Gu worms were ice and snow path. The core was made of two ice path Immortal Gu, they were obtained from the snowman Gu Immortals, refined into Fang Yuan’s property.

The cores of the Gu formation were three of the rank eight immortal material, ice path crystal essence!

Each ice path crystal essence was large like a mountain peak.

The entire crystal was ice-blue in color, it had crystallized texture, the surface had countless holes of varying sizes, a large amount of cold and icy air was spewing out of these holes unceasingly.

If the frosty air was allowed to spread, the ice and snow path dao marks would also be carved in the surroundings, modifying the environment and creating a habitat suitable for snowmen and snow monsters to live in.

Thus, Fang Yuan’s plan earlier was to use an ice path crystal essence to create a snow monster production line and establish new sources of revenue.

His original ice path crystal essence was obtained from his marriage with Xue Er. But earlier, he slaughtered the snowman tribe and obtained two more ice path crystal essences.

“With these three ice path crystal essences, I can easily produce snow monsters.”

“I will name this formation, snow crystal formation.”

Fang Yuan’s time path clone observed for a while before nodding in satisfaction.

Attainment level was shared between his clone and main body, Fang Yuan had formation path grandmaster attainment level, so did his clone.

This was different from Shadow Sect, back then in order to deceive heaven, Spectral Soul made use of the fact that his split soul clones did not carry his full attainment level, so that almost all of them only focused on one path.

Even if Shadow Sect’s members fought against Heavenly Court, they would not be found out as the Demon Venerable’s split soul. This was also why Shadow Sect was able to plant spies into Heavenly Court.

As for Fang Yuan’s time path clone, it was easy to expose, but Fang Yuan did not need it to go outside and fight anyway. Fang Yuan’s motive was different from Spectral Soul, his time path clone was meant to make use of the light of wisdom.

And to deduce matters in the light of wisdom, attainment level was needed. Fang Yuan made a wise choice between the two options.

The snow crystal formation was created by time path clone, its main purpose was to emit the frost energy that would constantly alter the environment inch by inch.

Of course, the formation also had the ability to monitor and control the area.

“It is a pity I am a formation path grandmaster and not a great grandmaster. Grandmasters can mimic other paths while great grandmasters can use natural dao marks directly. If I am a great grandmaster, I will not need ice path Immortal

Gu for this snow crystal formation, I can use these three ice path crystal essences directly."

This way, Fang Yuan would be able to free up these two ice path Immortal Gu for other uses.

Of course, Fang Yuan did not lack Immortal Gu so that was not an issue. But normally speaking, Gu Immortals had very few Immortal Gu, if they used the Immortal Gu for formations, they would not be able to use them in other aspects. Thus, attainment level had an incredible effect — Gu Immortals could save use of Immortal Gu!

After setting up the snow crystal formation, Fang Yuan's time path clone flew away.

Even though he was not a land spirit and could not teleport, he had Immortal Gu and could fly very quickly.

After a while, the time path clone went past several hundred li as he looked down on the ground while concealing his figure.

There was a group of moving snowmen on the ground.

They were either mortals or Gu Masters, they were all captured by Fang Yuan from the northern icy plain, there were several thousand of them.

Snowman slaves on the order of thousands in numbers were not rare in treasure yellow heaven, but the quality of this batch far exceeded the norm, because among these snowman slaves, Gu Masters were a high proportion. This was not normal, in treasure yellow heaven, this batch of snowmen could be exchanged for ten times the usual number of snowman slaves!

These snowmen had left the place where they lived for a long time and entered the sovereign immortal aperture, they were very fearful and timid.

At this moment, the group moved forward while conversing intensely.

When Fang Yuan slaughtered the snowman and rockman Gu Immortals, it was inside the immortal battlefield, he kept it hidden. When he captured these snowmen, he disguised as a snowman Gu Immortal, so these slaves did not know the truth.

Immortal killer move — Familiar Face!

Fang Yuan's time path clone turned into Bing Zhuo and descended from the sky.

Using Gu worms, he created a blizzard in the sky as snow descended slowly.

"Ah! The immortal of our tribe!"

"Quickly kneel down, kneel down and greet lord immortal!"

"Welcome, great immortal Bing Zhuo."

The snowmen quickly knelt as they paid respects to Fang Yuan's time path clone.

Fang Yuan's time path clone was expressionless, saying: "The world is in chaos, but we are in paradise. The three mountains have immortal fog, the snow race has nothing to fear."

His voice was not loud but it was heard by everyone clearly.

Whoosh.

A gust of wind blew as the blizzard stopped, the snowmen raised their heads but only saw the empty sky, Bing Zhuo’s figure had faded with the wind.

The snowmen were stunned, after realizing that Bing Zhuo had vanished, they got up with joy on their faces, they thought about his words.

The snowman tribe leader thought and said to the elders: “Earlier, we came here due to the vague guidance of great immortal Bing Zhuo, he wanted us to come here. And now, he has shown up to tell us that there are three mountains ahead where we can live in peace?”

After talking for a while, everyone agreed and set off, they were no longer hesitant, even though they brought the young and old with them, the speed was much faster than earlier.

To create snow monsters, the snow crystal formation was not needed. Just the three ice path crystal essences were enough to show effect just by existing, it was a simple matter.

But time path clone spent so much effort to create the snow crystal formation, he wanted to give these snowmen a place to live and grow.

“With the snow crystal formation, the snow monsters and snowmen can live here without obstructing one another. But I cannot isolate them completely, I need them to interact and conflict with each other, so as to develop.”

“The snow crystal formation’s maintenance is not a problem with food path methods, but the three ice path crystal essences are expendable, they will be used up eventually.” Time path clone flew as he thought.

The frost energy that the ice path crystal essence emits contains the ice and snow path dao marks of the crystal itself, these dao marks would be carved in the surroundings for a while before dissipating, they would not increase sovereign immortal aperture’s total number of ice and snow path dao marks. But the environment it creates would suit the snow monsters and snowmen a lot.

But it was too early for this problem, the three ice path crystal essences would only be depleted after a long time.

After managing the snowmen, the time path clone went to Mini Southern Border and had the rockmen settle down.

In the five mini regions, Mini Southern Border had the densest earth path dao marks, it was most suited for rockmen to live in.

The process of settling down the rockmen was very simple, the time path clone used almost the same method as before.

While the time path clone was managing the immortal aperture, Fang Yuan’s main body was at another end of Southern Border.

This was a huge Earth Trench, it was deep and dark, even in broad daylight, it was covered in darkness.

These dark shadows were dark path dao beasts — shadow monsters, this was Plunder Shadow Earth Trench.

“Back then, I succeeded in learning ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel here, I used many Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies to stop the righteous path pursuers. Hmm...”

Fang Yuan observed and had a moved expression: “Southern Border’s righteous path built an immortal formation here too, and it is not weak at all.”

“Who is it? This is an important place of Southern Border’s righteous path, any unauthorised lone immortal should leave before regretting it.” At this time, a Southern Border Gu Immortal’s voice resounded from the clouds, he was hidden within the immortal formation, not showing his true figure.

“Oh?” Fang Yuan’s lips curled up, killing intent surging in his eyes: “I want to see how you’ll make me regret it.”

Boom!

With a loud sound, he started to attack the immortal formation forcefully.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1587: Death by Ghost Hand

Boom boom boom!

With a chain of explosions, multicolored lights shone like fireworks. Metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wisdom, strength, soul, poison, star, refinement... killer moves of many paths were used easily by Fang Yuan.

Under such attacks, the figure of an immortal formation appeared. It was like a reinforced castle, white lights shielded it like a mountain, blocking all of Fang Yuan’s attacks.

“Hahaha, colorful attacks with little power, your methods are too flashy, they cannot take down our formation!” Within the immortal Gu formation, Yang clan’s Gu Immortal Yang San Mu mocked loudly.

Fang Yuan was currently in emperor yama form, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals could not tell who he truly was.

“No, this person’s formation path attainment is not low, he is using all sorts of methods to probe our formation!” Chi Qiu’s expression changed as he said in a low tone.

This immortal Gu formation was set up by Chi clan, Chi Qiu was tasked here to guard it, as a formation path cultivator, his words were seriously noted by the rest.

Yang San Mu frowned immediately, asking Chi Qiu: “We are defending passively, do we let him continue testing his moves?”

Chi Qiu shook his head: “Our formation has offensive methods too, when the Gu formation is destroyed to some extent, the attacks will be unleashed. Don’t look at me, I cannot command the Gu formation to retaliate, all of you know that this setup has its reason, I am sure there is no need for me to explain it?”

The immortals looked at each other helplessly.

The fundamental cause was Fang Yuan after all, he had once disguised as Wu Yi Hai and mixed into Southern Border’s righteous path, at the crucial moment, he controlled the immortal formation and left after gaining great benefits. Southern Border’s Gu Immortals lost a lot of face, they made changes after that battle. Chi clan’s immortal formations were no longer controlled by outsiders, they operated on their own, it was to prevent traitors like Fang Yuan from succeeding.

Yang San Mu saw that Chi Qiu was without options, he turned to look at Xia clan’s Gu Immortal Xia Fan.

Xia Fan was a wisdom path cultivator, seeing that Yang San Mu had turned to him, he shook his head and answered: “The other party has very powerful wisdom path defensive methods, I cannot deduce his origins, unless we can gain crucial information later.”

Yang San Mu heard this and his expression sank.

Next, he shouted at Fang Yuan: “Hahaha, scoundrel, why are you using so little strength, are you here to scratch my back?”

Yang San Mu, Chi Qiu, and Xia Fan had rank seven cultivation level, they were also defended by the immortal formation, they did not fear the rank seven Gu Immortal Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan snickered and ignored him, he continued to probe this formation from different angles.

“This immortal formation is more complex and strong than I had expected!”

Yang San Mu continued to provoke him, but Fang Yuan was completely immune to his words.

Yang San Mu frowned: “He is just one rank seven Gu Immortal, while we have many people and the immortal formation. If we hide here and let him attack freely, wouldn’t we lose face in the righteous path? Will any Gu Immortal be willing to face this daring scoundrel, if you can kill him, it will be quite a good story.”

Once he said that, nobody moved.

Almost all Gu Immortals were not rash people, it might seem easy to deal with Fang Yuan who was alone, but that was the problem. Why would any ordinary rank seven Gu Immortal have the guts to attack this fortified immortal formation alone?

The Southern Border immortals were thinking that an ambush was likely here, they were not going to take the risk.

Yang San Mu could not get anyone to move, he was quite gloomy.

He was the temporary leader among these people, if they avoided battle this time, news would spread and others would put the blame on him. Yang San Mu would lose the most reputation among them.

“Right now, Southern Border’s earth veins are moving as immortal materials and Immortal Gu are being exposed constantly from the Earth Trenches, and yet I am here guarding a bunch of dream realms.”

“I wanted to go around and leave this post. After paying a huge cost, I was about to succeed, but if I avoid battle this time, and allow this person to leave, the clan would have an excuse and evidence against me, I will never be able to relocate myself.”

Thinking of this, Yang San Mu gritted his teeth: “The enemy is quite peculiar, as a righteous path member, I cannot let him off. Everyone, guard the formation, I will go fight him.”

The Gu Immortals heard this and had varying expressions.

Some urged him to be careful, some clapped and praised him for the bravery, some assured Yang San Mu that they would guard the formation and he could go in peace.

Yang San Mu sneered in his heart, but showed an attitude of acting for a righteous cause, after saying some words that boosted his reputation, he left the formation to fight Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan saw him and was slightly surprised, before understanding Yang San Mu’s mentality immediately.

Soul explosion!

Fang Yuan pointed as an immortal killer move was used against Yang San Mu.

Yang San Mu fought against Fang Yuan for some rounds, he could not take it much more, he panicked as he thought: “This person must cultivate soul path! Even though his attacks are simple, they were very powerful, and his defensive method is very profound, I am not his match and will lose sooner or later. I should retreat now while it has not turned ugly yet. I have found out about his background anyway, I can explain myself later.”

But Fang Yuan’s battle experience was incredibly deep, after seeing that Yang San Mu had the intention to retreat, he quickly activated yama battlefield.

Instantly, Yang San Mu’s vision changed, he was trapped inside yama battlefield with no way of escaping.

Yang San Mu was shocked: “Immortal battlefield? How can this be! How can there be such a rapidly activated immortal battlefield in this world!!”

He was shocked and panicked but he tried to stay calm: “Don’t fluster, this immortal battlefield was created so quickly, it must be deeply flawed. Maybe it is easy to deduce and break? I have other immortals on my side, they will have seen this immortal battlefield appear and surely help me get out of this.”

Fang Yuan pointed as three yama children attacked Yang San Mu.

Yang San Mu’s heart jumped, he fought as he retreated, trying to stall for time.

Immortal killer move — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

Suddenly, Yang San Mu’s body shook intensely, a look of shock was frozen on his face as his eyes almost popped out, he shouted: “My Immortal Gu!”

Fang Yuan successfully stole an Immortal Gu, he threw it into his immortal aperture without looking.

Yang San Mu spat out a mouthful of blood, he was immediately in bad shape after suffering heavy injuries.

It turned out that Fang Yuan stole the core of his movement killer move. With the loss of the Immortal Gu, the killer move failed and he suffered a backlash, the battle quickly went sour for him.

"It seems my luck is much better than yours, I could not steal Feng Jiu Ge's core Immortal Gu, but you?" Fang Yuan snickered.

"Feng Jiu Ge? Who exactly are you?!"

Great thief ghost hand!

Fang Yuan succeeded again.

Guh.

Yang San Mu spat out blood again, his killer move's activation failed, with this second backlash, he lost his life.

Great thief ghost hand could actually kill people!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1588: Scheming Against Each Other

"He actually died?" Fang Yuan saw this result and was slightly stunned.

"It seems this Yang San Mu is really unlucky. He got the core Immortal Gu of his killer moves stolen by me twice in a row." Fang Yuan had a plain expression as he shook his head.

This effect was from their difference in luck.

Earlier, he could not subdue Feng Jiu Ge because he was a Dao Guardian with similar luck as Fang Yuan. But Yang San Mu was a normal person, thus he died from great thief ghost hand.

Fang Yuan suddenly realized that luck path and theft path were very powerful when combined together. Even though his luck path true inheritance was not complete and his theft path true inheritance was also incomplete, these inheritances originated from two venerables. It was a rare case in history to have inherited true inheritances of two venerables at once.

Inside the immortal Gu formation, the Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals saw that Yang San Mu was trapped in the immortal battlefield, they became quite nervous.

Chi Qiu urged Xia Fan: "Quick, quick, quick, haven't you deduced this immortal battlefield yet?"

Xia Fan was deep in thought, seemingly not listening to anything.

The other Gu Immortals were discussing with uncertainty.

"What immortal battlefield did he use, it was set up so quickly, this is simply unprecedented."

"No wonder he has the guts to provoke us alone, he has quite the incredible move."

“It will all depend on Lord Xia Fan now.”

Xia Fan heard their chatter, he rolled his eyes and thought to himself: “These people know nothing about wisdom path! Do they really think immortal battlefields are so easy to unravel and break?”

Xia Fan could feel the difficulty, he thought to himself: “Oh Yang San Mu, I hope that you can last some time.”

But as time passed, his pressure intensified.

There was only one wisdom path Gu Immortal here, if he could not deduce it, no matter how many Southern Border Gu Immortals there were, they could not enter the immortal battlefield and help. If he failed, his personal reputation in terms of capability would suffer a hit, but that was nothing compared to the rumors that might spread, saying that he had the ability to do it but refused and watched Yang San Mu die, his reputation would go down the drain if that happened.

But how could Fang Yuan’s yama battlefield be so easily deduced and broken?

Fairy Zi Wei could do it because she was among the top three wisdom path great experts in the current world. But Xia Fan was not!

“I cannot deduce it! This killer move’s foundation is too deep, it seems to have a terrifying origin!” After deducing for a while, Xia Fan was already full of sweat.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals were still talking among themselves, Xia Fan felt increasing annoyed, he opened his eyes and anger showed in them: “Can you people shut up?”

The immortals stopped talking.

Chi Qiu coughed: “That’s right, be quiet, let’s not disturb Lord Xia Fan, I believe he will not disappoint us with his abilities!”

Saying this, Xia Fan was forced into a corner!

Xia Fan looked at Chi Qiu with a dark gaze while the latter had a supportive look, Xia Fan gritted his teeth in anger.

But he was a wisdom path Gu Immortal after all, with a shift of his thoughts, he smiled: “Everyone, calm down, you must have forgotten that Yang San Mu is most skilled in investigative methods. He went out to fight because he is very confident, he must have detected some information or truths that we do not know.”

Xia Fan and Yang San Mu were not on good terms, they hated each other.

But now, Xia Fan praised Yang San Mu and placed him on a high pedestal.

Everyone was stunned before realizing.

If it was like what Xia Fan said, Yang San Mu’s actions were simply too much! He had left them aside and went out to take all the credit for himself.

Right now, Southern Border’s earth veins were moving and immortal materials as well as Immortal Gu were appearing everywhere, who would want to guard this place? Who would not want to go out and seek fortune?

If Yang San Mu gained credit here, he would be redeployed and leave this place.

Not only Yang San Mu, everyone else here desired to leave.

Soon, the immortals started to change their words.

They started to agree with Xia Fan.

“Lord Xia Fan is right, Lord Yang San Mu’s investigative methods are renowned in Southern Border, who does not know that?”

“That’s right, that’s right, I remember the time when he investigated the turbulence in black heaven clearly. After reporting to Yang clan, they moved out in advance and actually arrived at the accurate spot for the meteor rain. It is said that Yang clan obtained three hills worth of star path immortal materials from that.”

“Lord Yang San Mu had even chased after the demonic path Gu Immortal Nian Wang Huai before, that guy was so vile and devious, staying hidden for a long time and evading Tie clan’s capture multiple times, but he eventually ended up in Lord Yang San Mu’s hands.”

“In my opinion, Lord Yang San Mu must be very confident this time. We must trust his judgment, we cannot fluster. I also need to remind everyone, after Lord Yang San Mu wins this time, we need to place him in the sub formation and inspect him carefully. Remember the matter about Fang Yuan not too long ago.”

Fang Yuan had used familiar face to disguise as Wu Yi Hai and was in the righteous path for a long time, he toyed around with the Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals during the dream realm battle.

The moment Southern Border’s Gu Immortals heard this name, they became extremely angry.

“Hmph, Fang Yuan is a demonic path scoundrel who infiltrated the righteous path, one day, he will be punished!”

“Demonic will never defeat righteousness, this is the rule of this world. The demon might be arrogant for now, but he will face retribution one day. Even Spectral Soul Demon Venerable got his soul captured after death by Heavenly Court, didn’t he?”

“I want to kill this demon personally, sigh, it is a pity I could not join that fight.”

Chi Qiu did not speak, he looked at Xia Fan with a deep gaze.

Xia Fan shut his eyes as he started deducing again.

Chi Qiu sighed internally: “As expected of a wisdom path Gu Immortal.”

He had said that earlier to trap Xia Fan, but Xia Fan actually reversed the situation easily with a few words.

Xia Fan hinted that Yang San Mu was greedy for credit and did not want to share it with the rest. All of the Gu Immortals here were savvy people, they soon understood what Xia Fan was trying to say.

He meant: if that was not the case, and Yang San Mu was instead stupid and entered the enemy’s trap, what would they do? If he died inside the formation, everyone would be implicated, they would be labeled as being ‘vicious people who watched their comrade die in battle while they cowardly hid inside the formation’, right?

Thus, these immortals had to praise Yang San Mu to the sky. Xia Fan used their mentality to easily get past Chi Qiu’s attack.

But Xia Fan’s mood was bad now: “This immortal battlefield cannot be unraveled by me alone. Damn it! We need to seek help, but before that, I need to make some credit, I cannot be so useless. Hmm?!”

At this time, yama battlefield disappeared as Fang Yuan reappeared, Yang San Mu had vanished from sight.

“This, this, this!”

“What happened?”

The Southern Border immortals drew in a sharp breath, the rank seven Xia Fan and Chi Qiu had changes in expressions.

The situation was clear, only the enemy was left now, Yang San Mu was likely to be gone.

But why was it so quick?

Yang San Mu was a skillful person at the very least, he had ample battle strength, how could he die so easily?

The enemy’s immortal battlefield had a dense soul path aura, without any time path aura. There was no time difference inside it.

Thus, the biggest possibility was that this mysterious demonic path rank seven Gu Immortal’s battle strength dominated Yang San Mu! But was that possible? Or rather, he must have used some peculiar and uncommon method. right?

The Southern Border immortals were shocked and found this unbelievable.

Fang Yuan looked at the formation as his gaze flickered in cold light.

Originally, he wanted to disguise as Yang San Mu and dispel yama battlefield, getting into the formation by disguise. But after soul searching him, he found out Southern Border’s arrangements and gave up on that plan.

Southern Border’s righteous path had deep foundations, looking down on them would be stupid. Familiar face was already exposed, it was impossible to replicate ‘Wu Yi Hai’s’ success again.

Even though this killer move came from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, in the world of Gu cultivation, there had never been invincible killer moves. After such a long time, the era had advanced greatly.

Of course, Southern Border’s righteous path might not be able to easily produce Immortal Gu or killer moves that could see through familiar face, but they had other methods to decipher the identity of Gu Immortals.

Especially with Heavenly Court’s guidance, Southern Border’s righteous path had many ways of ascertaining identities, the process was strict and had many procedures. Especially when they had soul lantern Gu and other identity type Gu, it was hard for Fang Yuan to disguise himself even with familiar face.

“Demonic scoundrel, what did you do to Lord Yang San Mu?”

“Quickly release Lord Yang San Mu!”

“Lord Yang San Mu might have already escaped that immortal battlefield using some method that he had.”

The Southern Border Gu Immortals spoke, some were still carrying illusions in their minds.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned increasingly cold.

“This immortal formation was set by Chi Qu You personally, if I try to deduce it step by step, there will not be enough time. I can only force my way through now, let’s see how tough this formation is!”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan dispelled emperor yama, used ancient sword dragon transformation and activated reverse flow protection seal.

Next, he used immortal killer move myriad dragon, causing a sea of ferocious dragons to charge at the formation.

This killer move was currently Fang Yuan’s trademark, upon seeing this, if any Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortal could not tell it was Fang Yuan, they were just purposely acting unaware!

“Ah! This person is Fang Yuan!”

“Oh heavens, that demon is here!”

“He is here again, he is simply too daring, he is acting so freely, he is truly looking down on the righteous path of Southern Border!”

The Gu Immortals screamed one after another, unable to conceal the shock on their faces.

Other than shock, there was also fear that they tried hard to hide.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1589: Attacking Forcefully

Fang Yuan had to conceal and hide himself in the past, but now against the immortals of Southern Border’s righteous path, he did not need to anymore.

Fang Yuan’s appearance was very shocking to the Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortals now!

In the past, Fang Yuan disguised as Wu Yi Hai and obtained great benefits in the battle of the dream realm, becoming the leader of Shadow Sect, eventually he was chased down by Southern Border’s righteous path, but he was able to escape.

Heavenly Court’s pursuit could not do anything to Fang Yuan.

Months ago, Fang Yuan suddenly appeared in Southern Border and killed two Gu Immortals from Hou clan and Shang clan, if not for Paradise Earth’s inheritor, even Tie Mian Shen would have died.

Afterwards, Heavenly Court sent out the rank eight Gu Immortal expert Thunder Ghost True Monarch, the process of the battle was unknown but Fang Yuan managed to take away three of her rib bones, the scene of her getting beaten up was displayed in treasure yellow heaven. Instantly, the world was shaken, Fang Yuan’s reputation completely suppressed Feng Jiu Ge as the number one rank seven expert! Most Gu Immortals realized that even though Fang Yuan only had rank seven cultivation level, he was a unique individual on par with and should be treated as a rank eight Gu Immortal.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan was an otherworldly demon who was reborn using Spring Autumn Cicada, he was vicious and devious, many people despised his nonexistent bottom line, even as a Gu Immortal, he attacked mortals.

And now, Fang Yuan was the most dazzling and rapidly rising demonic path overlord!

Such a person had shown up, Southern Border’s righteous path immortals were naturally surprised, shocked, and panicking.

“Lord Yang San Mu had sacrificed himself heroically, our Southern Border’s righteous path and this vicious Fang Yuan have yet another debt of hatred! One day, we will make him pay the price!” Xia Fan patted his chest as he said in sadness.

The immortals were silent, nobody held any illusions anymore. Fang Yuan’s appearance made them feel intense lingering fear and also a sense of pity for Yang San Mu — why was he so unlucky as to face the great demon Fang Yuan? He could have stayed in the formation but he chose to go out, wasn’t he courting death?

But silence did not last long, someone shouted immediately: “This Fang Yuan is as vicious as ever, he lured Lord Yang San Mu out, thankfully, we were led by lords Xia Fan and Chi Qiu, under their leadership, we managed to hold our ground and did not give this scoundrel a chance to sneak in.”

The immortals all had varying expressions, someone wanted to speak when suddenly, the world shook, the entire immortal formation started trembling intensely.

Outside the immortal formation, countless silver scales filled the sky. Myriad dragons flew and charged at the white formation.

The Southern Border immortals’ expressions also turned pale from the reflection of the silver scales’ light.

Fang Yuan’s immortal killer move myriad dragon was like a tsunami, even though they were protected by the immortal formation, they felt extremely small and weak.

Fang Yuan’s myriad dragon did not get much more powerful than before, but with myriad self Immortal Gu, it was far easier to use myriad dragon now. When activating it, the steps were fewer and the success rate was higher, the time it took Fang Yuan to use myriad dragon once or twice before was enough to unleash it five to six times now!

Fang Yuan continued to use myriad dragon, countless ancient sword dragons charged at the formation, causing the formation to explode with greater force.

Pure white light ripples spread like waves or the contours of mountains, blocking the attack of the myriad dragons.

“Interesting.” Fang Yuan observed carefully, even though the immortal formation was shaking, its roots were not shaken, as he increased the power of his attacks, so did the defensive power of the immortal formation.

“We have the Gu formation, we should last for some time.” A Southern Border Gu Immortal said in uncertainty as he looked at Chi Qiu.

Chi Qiu’s gaze was flickering intensely, currently, the immortal formation was keeping them safe, but!

The other party was not ordinary, he was Fang Yuan!

The demonic path overlord that Heavenly Court could not deal with even after pursuing him for so long!

“Everyone, seek help from your clans, tell them Fang Yuan is here, quick! Do you think this formation can block such a person?” Chi Qiu sighed.

The immortals saw that Chi Qiu was very anxious, they did not wait but started to seek reinforcements.

Earlier, Fang Yuan did not state his identity, he was just a rank seven Gu Immortal, how could the Southern Border Gu Immortals ask for help? They only reported this battle normally.

But now that Fang Yuan exposed his identity, these Gu Immortals started to ask for help openly and loudly.

Roar...

The dragons roared as Fang Yuan attacked, the immortal formation blocked him with all its strength, it was also increasing in power.

“Block him, even if we die, we must block him!”

“The western part of the formation is broken, quickly repair it.”

“I don’t have enough immortal essence, who will replace me?”

The Southern Border immortals blocked him desperately, due to the strong pressure from Fang Yuan, these immortals stopped scheming against each other, they were truly united.

Chi Qiu tried to fix the Gu formation while Xia Fan spat out blood multiple times, in order to try and deduce the flaws of myriad dragon, he had given it his all.

They were rank seven Gu Immortals but they were like this, the rank six Gu Immortals were in far worse conditions.

Outside the immortal formation, Fang Yuan crossed his arms as he watched quietly, he was calm as a breeze.

After having myriad self Immortal Gu, the killer move myriad dragon was much more usable, it was no longer his strongest method, it was a killer move that could be used conventionally and regularly.

Fang Yuan’s strongest method was now an immemorial yama child’s soul explosion. But he did not have any immemorial soul beasts to modify now. He had already used both immemorial yama children, one to kill Feng Jiu Ge and the other to kill Lang Ya land spirit, but neither succeeded.

As for an ancient yama child’s soul explosion, it was similar in power to myriad dragon, but it was amplified by yama battlefield and would be slightly stronger.

Thus, Fang Yuan used this method to attack the immortal formation.

Intense winds blew, Fang Yuan floated in the air, looking at the dragons attacking this formation.

His demonic might was already developed, right now, he singlehandedly suppressed Southern Border’s Gu Immortals, they were busy defending against his barrage of attacks.

However, Fang Yuan frowned lightly.

It was taking quite a while. Fang Yuan needed some more time to break this immortal formation.

Fang Yuan still had three methods left, but reverse flow protection seal could not be used against the immortal formation. This formation got stronger as the attacks targeted at it got stronger, reverse flow protection seal could not reflect anything.

Lead soul into dream had failed against Heavenly Court once before, measures had been taken against it when they fought Lord Huang Shi. Lead soul into dream needed to sense the target’s soul, but these Southern Border Gu Immortals were hidden in the formation, Fang Yuan could not sense them.

As for great thief ghost hand, it could not be used, the immortal formation was hidden behind the white light in multiple layers, great thief ghost hand was unable to get close.

“Lord Chi Qu You!” At this time, inside the immortal formation, Southern Border’s immortals received a surge of morale.

The reason was simple, Chi clan’s first supreme elder, rank eight formation path Gu Immortal Chi Qu You, had arrived in secret.

“To think that this immortal formation had this hidden pathway in it, allowing a rank eight existence tens of thousands of li away to teleport here! The clan truly put in a lot of effort into this.” Chi Qiu praised in his mind.

This hidden pathway was left by Chi Qu You just in case a situation like the dream realm battle occurred again. In that situation, Chi clan, which had access to the hidden pathway, would have a huge advantage.

And now, Fang Yuan suddenly attacked, Chi Qu You thought about it and decided to expose this hidden trump card.

“Continue controlling the immortal formation, act like you cannot last long, I will make an arrangement to lure this demon into my trap.” Chi Qu You smiled.

Fang Yuan had lots of treasures on him and was a demonic path overlord, Heavenly Court had a huge headache against him. If Chi Qu You could use formation path to capture Fang Yuan or kill him, not only could he gain a lot of loot, he could also raise his reputation to the limit, he could also use this matter to raise Chi clan’s ranking in the Southern Border righteous path by several levels.

Even though Fang Yuan had great achievements, Chi Qu You was a formation path great grandmaster and had rank eight cultivation level, he was extremely confident in his formation path attainment,after learning about this, he came here to take Fang Yuan’s life. Any other rank eight Gu Immortal who did not cultivate formation path would not have Chi Qu You’s advantage and ease.

With Chi Qu You as the mastermind, Southern Border’s immortals had a huge surge of confidence, they started to contest with Fang Yuan patiently.

Chi Qu You had formation path Immortal Gu, his methods were very quickly set up, he soon created a formation inside the immortal formation. This was Chi Qu You’s expertise to begin with.

But when he was about to succeed, Fang Yuan suddenly stopped and left the battlefield using Fixed Immortal Travel.

“Did he sense me?” Chi Qu You frowned, but he thought about how he vigilantly created the Gu formation, he did not expose anything. The chance of that was low, so why did Fang Yuan retreat?

“This is contact heart river bank?” Jade light flickered as Fang Yuan appeared in the sky.

He looked down, the surrounding hundreds of li were covered in mountains, only the land below him was flat with fog in it, it could not be seen clearly.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, using myriad dragon killer move again.

Myriad dragons attacked as the fog rose, clashing with each other.

But soon, the fog could not stand up to Fang Yuan’s attacks and faded, exposing the true terrain.

A shallow deep blue lake surrounded by silent verdant mountains. Around the lake were pure white round rocks, they stacked at the river bank.

On the river bank, there were a large number of wisdom path contact heart Gu, there was also the obvious aura left behind by some Chi clan rank six Gu Immortal.

Fang Yuan did not chase them, he looked at contact heart river bank and grabbed, starting his plunder!

Information that contact heart river bank had been robbed soon got to Chi Qu You, this was Chi clan’s resource point, even though there was a Gu formation, the defense was not as strong, Fang Yuan easily took it over.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1590: Cloud Bamboo Mountain Range

“Come.” Fang Yuan floated in the air as he opened his immortal aperture’s entrance.

A large number of wild contact heart Gu were drawn by a gentle force, gathering in the air like a beautiful colored cloud, entering Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

The process lasted for several minutes.

Fang Yuan estimated: “More than three thousand are rank five contact heart Gu, fifty thousand are rank four, and over a million are rank three and below.”

Contact heart Gu resembled colored yuhua stones, they had different colors and shapes according to their rank. It was a wisdom path Gu worm that could steal the opponent’s concentration and make them enter a daze, losing the ability to perceive and think. If combined with other relevant Gu worms, it could form killer moves. Contact heart Gu had a lot of value in combat, the most usual method was to supplement it with enslavement path methods to enhance the enslavement ability. Of course, wisdom path Gu Masters used it too, but wisdom path was a rare and mysterious path.

Gu Masters face difficulty in raising Gu, most of them had less than ten Gu at once. But for Gu Immortals, they could get tens of thousands of mortal Gu easily, only Immortal Gu were hard to get.

Fang Yuan’s situation was simply a rare exception.

“Contact heart river bank is a mid-sized resource point, I attacked and destroyed the Gu formation here, while the defending Gu Immortal escaped for their life without destroying the contact heart Gu, this was why I could obtain this wealth.”

If the defending Gu Immortal took away or destroyed the contact heart Gu before leaving, Fang Yuan’s gains would be greatly reduced.

That Gu Immortal must have exerted all their effort to block Fang Yuan, they could not distract themselves by storing the contact heart Gu. When they left, they either had no method or lacked the resolve to destroy this place.

After storing the contact heart Gu, Fang Yuan’s gaze returned to the river bank.

Rank six strength path Immortal Gu — Pulling Water.

He activated this Immortal Gu, the river water was pulled up like silk by a formless force, before being moved into Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

This contact heart river bank was a special area filled with wisdom path dao marks, there were earth path, water path, wood path, and other dao marks as foundation, but they paled in quantity compared to wisdom path.

Fang Yuan took away the water, but the dense wisdom path dao marks still remained here.

“It is a pity that most of the wisdom path dao marks are on this land.” Fang Yuan sighed to himself.

There was no helping it.

Even though he had pulling mountain Immortal Gu, it was targeted at mountains, not land.

“I’ll bring the rocks with me.” Contact heart river bank’s rocks were filled with wisdom path dao marks too, they were excellent materials. Fang Yuan brought them along.

He took everything that he could take.

A moment later, he used rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel to leave this place, leaving behind a ransacked resource point.

Fang Yuan was currently being pursued, he could not stay at a place for long. Otherwise, his enemies would be able to encircle and plot against him.

Thus, when he attacked Plunder Shadow Earth Trench earlier and was blocked by the formation, he retreated wisely, it was not because he found out about Chi Qu You’s scheme.

Fang Yuan focused his mind as he used Fixed Immortal Travel, crossing an enormous distance, arriving above a mountain.

This mountain range was majestic and huge with curved contours. There were no trees on it, only bamboos. These bamboos were very thick and each were the size of giant trees. The leaves of the bamboo were triangular with a long base and sharp tip, the tips were thin and sharp but tough, many mortals would pluck these leaves and tie them to wooden rods to create wooden spears. This was also why this bamboo was called spear tip bamboo.

The spear tip bamboo forest was huge and covered the entire mountain range. There were many lifeforms living in the bamboo forest, it was filled with vitality. Most had cloud path dao marks, the highest quantity group was the cloud fox. This fox had snow white skin and could float in the air temporarily. Right now, Fang Yuan could see a group of cloud foxes floating around in the bamboo forest, playing with each other happily, it was a serene sight.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone: “This is cloud bamboo mountain range, a large resource point under Chi clan’s control.”

The super forces of the five regions controlled resource points, classified into five groups, mini, small, middle, large, and giant.

Fang Yuan’s dragonfish sea area in sovereign immortal aperture was a giant resource point, it could produce copper, iron, silver, and gold dragonfish. It was Fang Yuan’s most important source of revenue now.

“Oh, oh no, the demon Fang Yuan is here!”

“Plunder Shadow Earth Trench was attacked, contact heart river bank was taken by him, to think that he would come to cloud bamboo mountain range at this crucial moment. Sigh.”

The two Chi clan rank six Gu Immortals defending the place saw Fang Yuan and were flustered.

Fang Yuan used Fixed Immortal Travel to arrive here, there was a huge disturbance as Fang Yuan did not conceal himself, Chi clan’s two Gu Immortals immediately noticed it.

The two Gu Immortals were currently deep within the mountain range, there was a huge spear tip bamboo in front of them, it was over twenty meters tall, the bamboo was so large that even ten grown men could not surround it with their arms.

And inside this giant bamboo, an Immortal Gu was being nurtured.

Indeed, a wild Immortal Gu was about to form here!

Chi clan’s two Gu Immortals were putting their focus here while defending cloud bamboo mountain range, Immortal Gu were unique, this wood path Immortal Gu that was about to form was the most important thing in cloud bamboo mountain range.

Boom boom boom!

Fang Yuan waved his sleeves, sending out sparks and smoke. The two Chi clan Gu Immortals sighed together, activating the Gu formation to block Fang Yuan’s attacks.

Chi clan was most skilled at formation path, while Chi Qu You was a formation path great grandmaster who could use natural dao marks and mortal Gu to create immortal formations.

Thus, Chi clan's resource points all had immortal formations, and these resource points had something in similar, they were all dense with dao marks!

As Fang Yuan attacked, jade green light appeared on cloud bamboo mountain range that blocked Fang Yuan's attacks. Countless spear tip bamboos started shaking as leaves shot out with intense winds, it was like a tornado of countless spears that shot at Fang Yuan with great intensity.

"This immortal formation is not only larger than the one at contact heart river bank, it can even retaliate." Fang Yuan smiled, using reverse flow protection seal.

The bamboo leaves landed on his body and were all sent back to attack the immortal formation without question.

"This is reverse flow protection seal! Quick, quick, stop the retaliation method." The two rank six Gu Immortals panicked before encouraging each other: "The Immortal Gu is about to form, it is a few minutes away from completion, we need to wait for the clan's reinforcements."

The immortal formation was manipulated by them and stopped attacking, it focused on defense.

Fang Yuan could not reverse its attacks anymore but he smiled nonchalantly, dispelling reverse flow protection seal.

He activated myriad dragon killer move again, sending a barrage of attacks at the immortal formation.

The immortal formation shook intensely, the two rank six Gu Immortals were sweating profusely, gritting their teeth as they spat out blood, defending themselves desperately.

After a while, Fang Yuan's eyes shone with brilliance as he found a flaw of this formation.

Fang Yuan's formation path attainment level was at grandmaster after all!

He noticed this flaw and started attacking it.

After a while, cloud bamboo mountain range's immortal formation exploded intensely as a portion of the green light covering the mountain range dissipated suddenly.

"Oh no, he destroyed a portion of the immortal formation!"

"Hang on, reinforcements are coming."

The two Chi clan rank sixes were greatly shocked.

Fang Yuan sent out attacks again, creating explosions on the defenseless cloud bamboo mountains.

Yama child soul explosion!

He found that soul explosion was more suited for destroying the immortal formation, he used it without hesitation.

The start was the most difficult, after creating a hole in the cloud bamboo immortal formation, the difficulty reduced drastically, Fang Yuan made good use of the weakness.

The two Chi clan Gu Immortals’ dreams did not come true.

Fang Yuan’s dismantling speed became faster and faster, he destroyed more and more of the formation until he reached the Chi clan Gu Immortals.

“It’s too late, let’s retreat!”

“What about the Immortal Gu? We are only a few minutes away from its creation.”

“Leave, we will lose our lives if we stay.”

The other Gu Immortal jolted into realization as he wiped his sweat: “You’re right, we’ll leave! What about the Immortal Gu?”

The Gu Immortal companion struggled for a moment before gritting his teeth: “Destroy it!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1591: Plunder and Development

Boom!

Fang Yuan waved his sleeves, black smoke spread out to the surroundings, he had used soul explosion.

This was a rank seven peak method, it immediately destroyed the core of the immortal formation on cloud bamboo mountain range that Chi clan had created with ease.

Rumble!

There was another explosion as the formation’s core broke apart, the other areas of the immortal formation also collapsed.

At this point, the entire mountain range’s formation was destroyed.

“They left after all.” Looking at the empty place, Fang Yuan’s gaze was dark and unsurprised at all.

His attack on the formation earlier was met with great resistance that was quite skillful. But later on, Fang Yuan noticed that the immortal formation was getting more slow in reacting to his actions.

Immortal formations and Immortal Gu Houses needed people to manipulate them. Even wills or formation spirits left behind could not replace the use of a Gu Immortal.

“Oh? An Immortal Gu was destroyed here?” Fang Yuan soon noticed a special aura.

He confirmed quickly that there was an incomplete Immortal Gu here, Chi clan's Gu Immortals had destroyed it before leaving.

Fang Yuan sighed in pity, but he admired their resolution. He would have done the same thing.

There was nothing valuable at the core area, Fang Yuan flew into the sky and started to ransack cloud bamboo mountain range.

Cloud bamboo mountain range had a large number of cloud path lifeforms.

Like the cloud fox.

Fang Yuan used an enslavement path method as orange-yellow light burst out of his bodys, shrouding all the surroundings.

Within the light, cloud foxes and other lifeforms struggled intensely, they had a painful expression as they growled. But soon, their resistance weakened as they stopped moving, they stayed on the spot as they became Fang Yuan's enslaved beasts.

Fang Yuan opened his immortal aperture door as these lifeforms gathered and went into sovereign immortal aperture like a flowing river.

Fang Yuan continued his actions as a large number of lifeforms entered his immortal aperture.

Suddenly, there was a sudden sound as two desolate beast cloud foxes emerged, running towards the outside of the mountain in a panic.

“Come back!” Fang Yuan laughed, flying as he chased them, using his enslavement path killer move to make these two desolate beast cloud foxes sprawl and admit him as their master.

Cloud bamboo mountain range was a huge large sized resource point, it was filled with dense dao marks, it was normal for desolate beasts and plants to grow here, even ancient desolate beasts could grow. Immortal Gu were rarer, there was one but it was destroyed before it could form.

After Fang Yuan finished his exploration, he obtained seven desolate beast cloud foxes, a total of eleven desolate plants of three species, cloud qi root, white hair root, and spear tip bamboo. The thing that made Fang Yuan the happiest was the quantity of a rank seven immortal material, cloud soil, it was huge.

However, he did not see any ancient desolate beasts or ancient desolate plants.

“The Gu Immortals guarding this place must have brought them away, or maybe they never existed.”

According to the laws of nature, there was a possibility of ancient desolate beasts or plants appearing here. But this place was governed by Chi clan for countless years, they were skilled at formation path but lacked enslavement path expertise. They would not allow an uncontrollable ancient desolate beast that could rival rank seven Gu Immortals to stay in their territory..

Fang Yuan did not mind it, he continued to search the entire mountain for spear tip bamboos.

These spear tip bamboos were ordinary Gu materials, the desolate plant spear tip bamboos had already been completely taken by Fang Yuan.

But it was quite troublesome now.

Fang Yuan had rich enslavement path methods but he could not use many wood path methods due to his lack of wood path Immortal Gu.

“I need an appropriate wood path method to relocate these spear tip bamboos.” Fang Yuan sighed.

If he wanted to move these spear tip bamboos, he would need delicate wood path methods. Methods of other paths would carve different dao marks on these bamboos, even temporary ones would damage the spear tip bamboos and reduce their quality.

Actually, Spectral Soul’s true inheritance had lots of wood path methods, but Fang Yuan did not have the necessary wood path Immortal Gu.

Thus, he could only use mortal methods to take these spear tip bamboos.

But this lowered his efficiency greatly, far worse than immortal killer moves. And this cloud bamboo mountain range was huge, the amount of spear tip bamboos that Fang Yuan had taken were still very insignificant.

“A pity that pulling mountain Immortal Gu is only rank six, even though it can pull mountains, it cannot move the entire mountain range.”

In the past, Fang Yuan had pulled up Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley, but it was because these two secluded domains of heaven and earth was modified by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable using the killer move orderly well.

Cloud bamboo mountain range did not have such a treatment.

Of course, Fang Yuan could smash the mountain range but the results from that would not be under his control.

Trees had tree roots, mountains had mountain roots, unless he had an appropriate earth path method, he could not preserve these mountain roots.

“What? Fang Yuan is attacking cloud bamboo mountain range!” Chi Qu You’s frowned deeply, he had a grim expression.

He was the first supreme elder of Chi clan, information had gotten to him at the very first moment.

The contact heart river bank earlier was a middle sized resource point, the losses were not too big. But cloud bamboo mountain range was a large resource point!

“In the past, our clan paid a hefty price to invite an earth path great expert to move the mountain veins and develop cloud bamboo mountain range, only forming scale similar to today after a hundred years. To think that it would be targeted now.”

Chi clan was a super force, it had many large resource points, but cloud bamboo mountain range was quite a unique one.

Back when Chi clan was still in its infancy period, Chi clan’s ancestors had scrimped and saved when they were weak to slowly develop it.

In Chi clan’s history, this cloud bamboo mountain range provided Chi clan a steady source of income over time and did not disappoint its initial creators.

After generations of hard work, the clan got stronger and its territory expanded continuously. Even though they had many large resource points now, and cloud bamboo mountain range became less important, it was never neglected, it was always guarded by two Gu Immortals.

Cloud bamboo mountain range was not just a resource point, it was a form of mental encouragement to Chi clan’s members.

“Forget about other large resource points, but cloud bamboo mountain range cannot be destroyed. Mobilize the Immortal Gu House, find Fang Yuan and take back cloud bamboo mountain range!” Chi Qu You thought about it for a moment before ordering with a firm tone.

“What about you, first supreme elder?” Chi clan’s Gu Immortal asked.

Chi Qu You snorted: “Fang Yuan seems to know that I am here, his true motive is to take the dream realms here! I will stay guard here, he will definitely come again. Of course, you all must put up a facade that I am going to find him personally.”

Thus, Chi clan moved its Immortal Gu House and went to cloud bamboo mountain range.

Fang Yuan had not left yet, he was still collecting spear tip bamboos. This bamboo had very deep roots of fifty to sixty feet, specific methods were needed to relocate them into his immortal aperture without any damage.

Chi clan’s Gu Immortals saw Fang Yuan and hesitated, this was cloud bamboo mountain range, if they fought against Fang Yuan here without any immortal formation’s protection, cloud bamboo mountain range might get destroyed.

Immortal killer move — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

Fang Yuan was already prepared, his great thief ghost hand had been lurking for a while, it directly targeted Chi clan’s Immortal Gu House.

Inside sovereign immortal aperture.

At the north-most end of Mini Northern Plains, snow was falling as frost energy permeated.

The snowmen had traveled for a long time, they finally arrived at their destination.

The cold weather made the snowmen reveal smiles of joy.

“This is a good place for us to live.”

“This place is so huge, we will not have to crowd around like before.”

“Thanks to great immortal Bing Zhuo’s guidance. Sob sob sob...”

Some elderly snowmen were already kneeling on the ground, sobbing profusely.

“Quickly look!” Someone shouted.

The snowmen raised their heads and saw a scene they would never forget. The huge blizzard suddenly stopped as three huge crystal mountains appeared from within the fog. Gu Immortal ‘Bing Zhuo’ floated in the air as he nodded at them, before the fog gathered and concealed the three mountains again.

“It’s great immortal Bing Zhuo!”

“This is the home that great immortal has guided us to — Triple Sacred

Mountain.”

“It seems that the immortals of our tribe live on Triple Sacred Mountain!”

The snowmen were very excited, they knelt down and prayed towards the direction of Triple Sacred Mountain.

They did not know that ‘great immortal Bing Zhuo’ concealed by the fog turned back into a stranger, he was Fang Yuan’s time path clone.

“Food, environment, and plants, they are all set up already, even though the environment is plain, it is enough for them to live.”

“At this point, the snowman relocation is finally completed.”

The time path clone nodded lightly as he controlled the snow crystal formation, looking at another area.

Over there, a group of snow monsters emerged from the snow, looking around curiously as they moved around.

“Not bad, under the effect of the snow crystal formation, snow monsters are forming too. This snow monster production line is starting to work. In time, it will bring me huge profits.”

After leaving Mini Northern Plains, the time path clone arrived at Mini Central Continent.

Not long ago, he had set up a river bank here, he directly copied the name of contact heart river bank.

On the river bank, there were countless white round rocks of varying sizes.

There was a river with flowing water, contact heart Gu lived inside it.

Fang Yuan obtained a large number of contact heart Gu, he sold most of them in treasure yellow heaven. The remaining river water, rocks, and a small number of contact heart Gu were left as seeds. In time, he could develop this into a source of revenue too.

The time path clone flew again, towards the southeast of contact heart river bank, he only stopped after a while.

It was a barren land without any lifeforms.

Time path clone started to plant spear tip bamboos here while releasing the cloud foxes and other beasts.

There was no mountain range here, but Fang Yuan planned to start building a cloud bamboo forest here.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1592: Number Nine in the World, Great Space Temple

Southern Border.

Fang Yuan broke into cloud bamboo mountain range and scavenged it, but he knew about the significance of this resource point, he was ready for Chi clan’s counterattack.

Immortal killer move — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

His great thief ghost hand that had been lurking for a while directly targeted Chi clan’s Immortal Gu House.

The Chi clan Gu Immortals in the Immortal Gu House were shocked.

But immediately, the Immortal Gu House’s surface shined with a dazzling golden light, the surface of the Immortal Gu House had ripples that formed into a spiral, absorbing great thief ghost hand into it.

At the next moment, the spiral vanished without a trace, Fang Yuan grunted as he lost his connection to great thief ghost hand.

Bright light shined in his eyes for a moment: “As expected of one of the top ten Immortal Gu Houses, Great Space Temple!”

Chi clan had two Immortal Gu Houses, they were both extraordinary, Great Space Temple was the stronger one, able to resist rank eight Gu Immortals!

From the outside, it looked like it was made of marble, it was pure white and round, there were golden accents on it, it radiated with sunlight and was extremely grand, giving people a feeling of warmth and hope.

In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, during the five regions chaotic war, all the different forces competed with each other as the world went into chaos, Immortal Gu Houses were mobilized often and fought against each other. With ample battles, people started to learn of the strength of different Immortal Gu Houses, they were able to create a ranking list for the Immortal Gu Houses.

Chi clan’s Great Space Temple was ranked ninth on this list, it was not simple.

It had one move called moving space domain, it could trap rank eight Gu Immortals. When Heavenly Court attacked Southern Border, this Immortal Gu House trapped four rank sevens and two rank eights, it had an extremely incredible use in that battle.

“I’m afraid that great thief ghost hand is trapped inside moving space domain, that’s how I lost contact with it. But the usage of moving space domain has a huge price, it needs time for preparation. How did they respond so quickly? They seem very prepared?” Fang Yuan’s thoughts moved rapidly in his mind, he quickly saw a problem.

“There really was such a theft path method!”

“Demon Fang Yuan is getting harder to deal with, thankfully we were amply prepared.”

“We only made it in time due to Heavenly Court’s intel. If he really succeeded in stealing the Immortal Gu of this Immortal Gu House, what would happen?”

Chi clan’s Gu Immortals felt deep after-fear and relief.

“Kill!”

“Prepare moving space domain for demon Fang Yuan’s theft path method.”

“But we need to be careful, this demon Fang Yuan has a defensive killer move made using Reverse Flow River.”

Rumble!

Under the Chi clan Gu Immortals’ manipulation, rank eight Immortal Gu House Great Space Temple erupted with fearsome might, quickly suppressing Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan retreated while his mind entered treasure yellow heaven.

At the next moment, his heart shook. Like he had expected, Heavenly Court had placed a clip in treasure yellow heaven, showing the fight scene earlier. His usage of great thief ghost hand against Feng Jiu Ge was also exposed.

Not just that, Heavenly Court also released a lot of deduction results that were free for everyone to view.

These deductions were all about Fang Yuan, they were exposing his secrets.

In treasure yellow heaven, there were lots of commotion. The Gu Immortals in the five regions were very shocked, they were discussing his methods and Gu worms, they felt deep envy and jealousy towards Fang Yuan’s resources.

This was a huge blow!

Intel of Gu Immortals was usually very crucial. In most cases, once Immortal Gu and killer moves were exposed, they would be easily countered by others.

Like now, not only did Chi clan defend against great thief ghost hand, they even trapped it inside moving space domain. They were going to research on this great thief ghost hand and trace it back to the source, exposing more weaknesses of this move.

If they were not guarded and Fang Yuan succeeded, he might be able to steal a few Immortal Gu and earn a fortune, and even gain an advantage.

Fang Yuan had used treasure yellow heaven to show himself thrashing Thunder Ghost True Monarch and it deeply affected Heavenly Court’s prestige. They were merely giving him a taste of his own medicine now, dealing with Fang Yuan using the same method.

“I have great thief ghost hand, Fairy Zi Wei must be very worried that I would use this move to steal more Immortal Gu and strengthen myself!”

“Since she could distract herself to do this, I’m afraid Lang Ya blessed land’s battle has ended.”

Fang Yuan’s heart shook.

He wanted Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven to fight to the death, it was best if Lang Ya blessed land got destroyed. But both sides were very smart, they would not do something so stupid.

“I’m afraid that Heavenly Court took the initiative to retreat. After all, in order to deal with Lang Ya blessed land, Fairy Zi Wei, Chen Yi and the rest were all injured to some degree. Feng Jiu Ge had lost his battle strength after fighting me, Thunder Ghost True Monarch died from battle... while Longevity Heaven has Lang Ya land spirit’s help, they have the absolute advantage.”

Another thing Fang Yuan noticed was that Prince Feng Xian’s traitor identity was not exposed yet.

“Prince Feng Xian might possibly be hiding near Loose Tail Ridge, waiting for a chance.”

“It seems that Heavenly Court is very prepared, even without Prince Feng Xian, they managed to escape.”

Fang Yuan was not foolish enough to expose Prince Feng Xian’s identity in advance.

Heavenly Court knew that Fang Yuan was an otherworldly demon that had reborn, but they did not know that Prince Feng Xian’s identity was already known to Fang Yuan.

“Right now, I have no evidence to testify against Prince Feng Xian. Actually, even if I have solid evidence, Prince Feng Xian is still a rank eight Gu Immortal, Longevity Heaven will have a tough time dealing with him, if they do not prepare amply, he might even escape.”

Fang Yuan had to make good use of this, he might be able to reap great benefits in the future. Using it now would just be venting his anger, a successful person would have deep tolerance, how could he be swayed by emotions and act foolishly?

“However, I cannot let all of you off either!” Fang Yuan sneered, he immediately sent a video clip into treasure yellow heaven.

This video recorded Heavenly Court using star cast and sending multiple rank eight Gu Immortals into Lang Ya blessed land.

It was like a huge rock tossed into a lake, it created huge ripples and waves!

Heavenly Court had such a method?!

It was like Fang Yuan’s Fixed Immortal Travel, the incredibly useful effect could influence important battles!

Other than Central Continent, the Gu Immortals of the other four regions and leaders of super forces felt greatly shocked, their alertness towards Heavenly Court rose to an incredible degree.

“Goodbye.” Fang Yuan smiled as he waved at Great Space Temple. At the next moment, he used the opportunity to activate Fixed Immortal Travel, escaping successfully.

Rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel was too useful!

Great Space Temple was not an immortal battlefield, even if it contained an immortal battlefield killer move, Fang Yuan would not let himself be trapped easily.

Even if he was trapped, many immortal battlefields could not contain Fixed Immortal Travel.

Unless it was an incredible method or countered Fixed Immortal Travel, Fang Yuan then would be in trouble when he gets trapped.

At the next moment, jade light flickered as Fang Yuan arrived at Chi clan’s third resource point.

Wind Flame Mountain!

This mountain had countless sunset parasol trees, the leaves were red like fire. There were many birds and barely any land beasts, a small number of fire phoenixes were resting inside the parasol forest. Sensing Fang Yuan's animosity, these phoenixes raised their heads and looked at Fang Yuan fearlessly, they had an aura of indomitability!

This giant resource point was rare even for super forces, it was one of Chi clan's most important sources of revenue.

"Demon Fang Yuan is here!" A rank seven from Chi clan was here, they first activated the defensive immortal formation before reporting to the clan, seeking reinforcements.

"If I can take down this resource point, Chi clan would really feel heartache. Hehe." Fang Yuan laughed coldly as he charged down and crashed like a meteor.

With an intense explosion, the immortal formation remained unmoved. Giant resource points had far greater defenses compared to middle and large resource points.

Fang Yuan stopped his movement as his gaze flickered with uncertainty, he rapidly deduced in his mind while using countless killer moves like they were cheap fireworks.

"Scoundrel Fang Yuan, you are so devious!" After receiving news of this, Chi Qu You was extremely furious, he could no longer stay, he left and went to reinforce the resource point.

Wind Flame Mountain was quite a unique resource point, other than raising phoenixes, at a certain timing each year, many wild phoenixes would come here and lay eggs.

If something happened to Wind Flame Mountain, the wild phoenixes might choose other locations, Chi clan would suffer great losses.

But Wind Flame Mountain was very far from cloud bamboo mountain range, Chi Qu You was the closest to it. Even though this Chi clan first supreme elder had already set up the formation in Plunder Shadow Earth Trench, he had to give up on that plan and save his resource point from Fang Yuan.

When he arrived, Fang Yuan had already broken up more than half of the formation of Wind Flame Mountain, many ancient phoenixes also died, Fang Yuan even captured three.

"Fang Yuan, you scoundrel, don't run if you have the guts!" Chi Qu You screamed in anger.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly as he greeted politely: "Senior Chi Qu You, we finally meet."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1593: Transaction

"You want to meet me so urgently, it seems you really want to die." Chi Qu You snickered.

“First supreme elder is here, I’m saved!” The Chi clan Gu Immortal defending Wind Flame Mountain felt great ease as he shouted.

“I waited specially for you, are you interested in the dream path results that I have?” Fang Yuan suddenly transmitted in secret.

Chi Qu You was slightly dazed.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan pointed with his finger as immortal battlefield killer move yama battlefield formed and trapped Chi Qu You in it.

Chi Qu You was slightly shocked but he soon calmed down, he even looked around the battlefield calmly: “This is the battlefield that trapped Feng Jiu Ge?”

Fang Yuan laughed loudly: “Senior Chi wants to say, is this the immortal battlefield that Fairy Zi Wei broke?”

Heavenly Court not only exposed Fang Yuan’s great thief ghost hand in treasure yellow heaven, they even released their understanding of yama battlefield and even the way to break it publicly.

Thus, with this information, Chi Qu You was not worried. He was not even anxious at all, as a formation path great grandmaster, he could defend himself inside yama battlefield. Meanwhile, Fang Yuan had limited time, if the righteous path Gu Immortals could encircle him, he would be in trouble.

There were no invincible Gu in this world, only invincible Gu Immortals, Fixed Immortal Travel could be countered in many ways.

Compared to that, Chi Qu You’s bigger headache was that after Fang Yuan leaves, he would continue targeting Chi clan’s resource points. That was a huge problem.

“Take a look, senior Chi.” Fang Yuan tossed an information path mortal Gu over.

Chi Qu You took a look, it was truly an information path mortal Gu, he looked into it and his gaze flickered.

This information path mortal Gu recorded details about the formation that Chi clan had set up on Wind Flame Mountain. As a formation path grandmaster who had the light of wisdom, it was not hard to make such deductions.

Chi Qu You instantly understood Fang Yuan’s intention.

According to the info in this information path mortal Gu, Fang Yuan could totally destroy the immortal formation on Wind Flame Mountain, but he purposely chose not to and waited for Chi Qu You’s arrival.

Chi Qu You nodded: “You are indeed a genius, your formation path attainment is so high, no wonder Chi Shang acknowledged you.”

Formation devotee Chi Shang was a rising star of Chi clan, he was recognized by Chi Qu You as a future formation path great grandmaster. Earlier, Fang Yuan disguised as Wu Yi Hai and interacted with him, they built a good relationship. When Fang Yuan got exposed and was pursued by everyone, Chi Shang publicly announced that he was an enemy of Fang Yuan, putting a clear line between them.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly before looking at Chi Qu You solemnly: “What if I told senior that my formation path attainment level was obtained from the dream realm, what do you think?”

“Oh? Is that true?!” Chi Qu You was moved, he assessed Fang Yuan again as he said with a questioning tone: “You really want to transact with me?”

Fang Yuan retorted: “Why not? I need dream realms, but Southern Border’s dream realms have defensive formations made by Chi clan. I want to use dream path gains to exchange for Chi clan’s cooperation. To display my sincerity, I want you to see this.”

Fang Yuan tossed out another information path mortal Gu, Chi Qu You received it and his gaze flickered, he unconsciously grasped the information path mortal Gu in his hand, as if afraid that it would fly off.

Information regarding dream path had an incredible attraction to Chi Qu You, he quickly looked into it.

When he raised his head, he looked at Fang Yuan with a different expression.

“As expected of the one who used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth and had inherited Shadow Sect, the amount of dream path information that he is willing to release already far exceeds the total amount of research our Southern Border’s righteous path has done!”

“Furthermore, this is only a small part of the information, a lot of things are missing, there is even some vague content not explained in detail.”

Thinking of this, Chi Qu You was deeply moved.

He had to be moved!

Fang Yuan’s bait was simply too attractive to him!!

Currently, the Gu Immortal world agreed that dream path would be greatly developed in the future. Not only would dream path be created, it would prosper and create Great Dream Immortal Venerable. Thus, be it super forces or rank eight Gu Immortals, they knew the importance of dream path, they explored dream realms and tried to advance further in this path than anyone else.

Whoever gave up on pursuing dream path would be left behind by this upcoming great era!

It was like how Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable created theft path, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable created transformation path, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable created qi path... in the long history of humanity, countless experiences had proven this point.

However, the start was the most difficult, dream path was only a concept now, no matter who explored it, they would have to pay a huge price with little gains.

Because he knew this, Chi Qu You understood that this information path mortal Gu was extremely valuable. If it was revealed to the outside world, all the super forces would fight for it, even if they had to fight until blood flowed into a river, they would do it without hesitation!

Chi Qu You caressed the information path mortal Gu in his hand as he looked at Fang Yuan with a sharp gaze: “I can see your sincerity, but there are many Southern Border righteous path forces, why did you choose me?”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “I have interacted with Chi Shang before, I also have Shadow Sect’s and Wu clan’s information, I know a lot about Chi clan. Chi Bang is your son, but he lacks the ability to become the first supreme elder, that was why you needed Chi Shang, the future formation path great grandmaster, to help him. Senior Chi, you have limited lifespan, when you die and chaos starts, can Chi Bang protect Chi clan?”

“You!” Chi Qu You’s expression turned dark, killing intent leaked out of him, but Fang Yuan was completely ignoring it.

Chi Qu You had no choice but to admit Fang Yuan was right.

Southern Border’s earth veins were shaking, such situations occurred in the other four regions too, a person at Chi Qu You’s level could also sense the chaos of the future.

Chi Qu You had already used many lifespan extension methods, lifespan Gu were not effective on him anymore. He had already started preparing long ago, for the sake of his son’s succession.

Even though he knew that Chi Bang lacked talent, as a father, he had his selfish side. But he could not be selfish entirely. If Chi clan was destroyed in Chi Bang’s hands, even if Chi Qu You died, he would not rest in peace. And if Chi clan was destroyed, would Chi Bang be safe?

Therefore, Chi clan needed Fang Yuan’s dream path gains, with this, Chi clan would be able to protect itself in the future, it would also ride the tide of the great era and become an even stronger super force!

“Hahaha.” Chi Qu You suddenly laughed loudly as if his killing intent never existed. He looked at Fang Yuan and shook his head: “Fang Yuan, you are truly the number one demonic figure of the five regions. I have finally seen your true abilities today, no wonder Heavenly Court and Wu clan were helpless against you. I will accept this transaction!”

Fang Yuan nodded, Chi Qu You’s response was within his expectations, there was nothing peculiar.

Chi Qu You was the leader of a righteous path force, while Fang Yuan was a demon that everyone was after, how could they make a deal? This seemed quite unthinkable.

But actually, for the terms righteous path and demonic path, everyone had their own understanding of it. The central thing that mattered were benefits, be it righteous path or not.

Look at Chi clan, it had so many resource points, it had to promote the advantage of the righteous path, that evil cannot defeat righteousness, so that they had the moral high ground to defend their territory and attain stability.

As for demonic path Gu Immortals, they had to deal with calamities and tribulations, they needed to become stronger and that needed resources. But what to do when they had no resources? The only way was to rob and steal, to kill and loot.

It was all for gains and benefits.

Precisely because of this central reasoning, why would Chi Qu You not agree to Fang Yuan’s deal? They were just getting what they needed, for their respective benefits.

The talk was done, Fang Yuan dispelled the immortal battlefield and acted like he was forced to retreat in a panic.

Chi Qu You won but Fang Yuan managed to escape, his expression was quite ugly. For the following days, he defended cautiously, preventing Fang Yuan’s retaliation from coming.

Seven days later, Fang Yuan suddenly appeared in Plunder Shadow Earth Trench, breaking the formation and successfully taking the dream realm.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1594: Righteous Path Schemes Against Fang Yuan

“We need to get rid of Fang Yuan, he dared to attack our righteous path’s formation openly, he is too daring!” Luo clan’s first supreme elder screamed.

“This time, our clan’s Gu Immortal was sacrificed heroically, this demon Fang Yuan already has the blood of two Gu Immortals on his hands, he needs to pay the price!” Hou clan’s first supreme elder said in an aged tone, filled with rage.

Yao clan’s first supreme elder sighed: “Fang Yuan needs to be dealt with, but he is not an ordinary demonic path Gu Immortal. His identity is very complex, he not only is an otherworldly demon, he also has Spring Autumn Cicada and has returned from the future, he destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and has Giant Sun’s true inheritance, he also inherited Spectral Soul true inheritance and became the leader of Shadow Sect, as well as the funding of Lang Ya blessed land. Even with Central Continent Heavenly Court’s pursuit, he still remains scot-free, he continued to harm the world while getting stronger at a rapid rate, far beyond logic. To speak the truth, he has the demeanor of a Demon Venerable in his youth.”

“Hmph! There will only be Great Dream Immortal Venerable in the future, there will not be a Great Dream Demon Venerable. Yao clan, are you afraid?” Xia clan’s first supreme elder immediately said sarcastically.

Yao clan’s first supreme elder snickered: “I’m just stating the truth. If we want to kill Fang Yuan, we need to recognize this truth. Like how your Xia clan lost to my Yao clan earlier.”

“You!” Xia clan’s first supreme elder was incredibly furious.

Recently, due to the turbulence of the earth veins, large amounts of cultivation resources were unearthed from underground, Southern Border’s righteous path, demonic path, and lone cultivators competed for them. During this period, lots of conflict was natural, Xia clan had fallen into an ambush by Yao clan and lost, but Yao clan paid a huge price too. Therefore, their conversation was very hostile.

“Alright, our discussion is not for bickering, we need to plan on how to deal with Fang Yuan. If he continues his plunder, what will we do?” At this time, Shang clan’s first supreme elder spoke in a moderate tone.

There was silence.

Shang clan had always been neutral and was specialized in trading with all the different forces. When Shang clan’s first supreme elder spoke, everyone had to listen.

A while later, Ba clan’s first supreme elder broke the silence: “Fang Yuan must have ways to explore dream realms and obtain great benefits. Otherwise, why would he impersonate Wu Yi Hai back then to get into our righteous path? This time, he attacked Plunder Shadow Earth Trench and took all the dream realms away, this proves my point. I wonder what Wu clan’s first supreme elder has to say about this?”

Wu clan’s first supreme elder was naturally none other than Wu Yi Hai’s elder brother — Wu Yong.

Wu clan has already dominated the number one spot in the righteous path, Ba clan had been after their position, but Wu Yong showed up with Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, destroying Ba clan’s hope of replacing them as they solidified their status. Ba clan would not let this chance go now.

Wu Yong was silent for a while before speaking: “Fang Yuan is an enemy of everyone. Yesterday, he plundered Chi clan’s resources, tomorrow, he might show up anywhere else, our resources and even clansmen might be targeted by him.”

Wu Yong said plainly that dealing with Fang Yuan was the responsibility of all the Southern Border righteous path members. Ba clan and others could not make Wu clan take on this role and exert great effort alone.

Hearing Wu Yong’s words, many people frowned.

Wu Du Xiu and Wu Yong were vastly different. If this was Wu Du Xiu, she would charge ahead as the vanguard, that was the style of Wu clan.

But Wu Yong stepped back this time, it was as if the humiliation that Fang Yuan gave to Wu clan earlier did not exist.

Ba clan’s first supreme elder was not going to let Wu Yong off, he added: “The reason why Fang Yuan is a problem to deal with is because he has Fixed Immortal Travel. I wonder if Wu clan’s first supreme elder has any good method to restrict Fixed Immortal Travel?”

Wu Yong smiled bitterly: “I am ashamed, Wu clan does not have such methods. I cannot compare to my mother, we can defend ourselves but that is our limit. In my opinion, Chi clan’s first supreme elder set up effective immortal formations earlier, even though Fang Yuan broke through, he still spent quite some time. Why doesn’t Chi clan’s first supreme elder help us to set up immortal formations around our resource points, so that we can stall for some time when Fang Yuan attacks?”

Chi clan’s first supreme elder Chi Qu You quickly waved his hand: “I am ashamed! My immortal formations were all destroyed by Fang Yuan, I will disappoint all of you.”

Wu Yong smiled: “No need to be so humble, Fang Yuan did not manage to destroy the formation on Wind Flame Mountain. The immortal formation set up in Plunder Shadow Earth Trench also blocked Fang Yuan’s assault once. But his formation path attainment level is too high, he was friends with your clan’s formation devotee Chi Shang, we all know that.”

Wu Yong’s words had deep meaning, Chi Qu You snorted coldly, he remained silent.

Southern Border’s super forces had all sorts of resource points. If Chi Qu You had to set up immortal formations one by one, when would he finish?

And most importantly, this matter was very sensitive.

Resource points were the most important areas of the different clans, they would not feel easy if outsiders were the ones setting up their defenses.

Among the clans here, only Chi clan had been plundered, without experiencing it for themselves, the other clans did not feel an urge to ask for Chi Qu You’s help.

Chi Qu You understood this, which was why he stopped talking.

Wu Yong saw that Chi Qu You was silent, he could not say anything else.

At this moment, Tie clan’s first supreme elder said excitedly: “Actually, Wu clan first supreme elder’s method is the best way to deal with Fang Yuan, but that is only half of it. Chi clan’s first supreme elder’s immortal formations can block Fang Yuan for some time. At this time, if there is our Tie clan’s Beacon Tower, we would be able to teleport there and block Fang Yuan, to kill him together! With the combination of both methods, Fang Yuan is not a problem at all!”

Once he said that, the Gu Immortals became even quieter.

Beacon Tower was an Immortal Gu House of Tie clan, its greatest use was similar to Western Desert Xiao clan’s Ten Thousand Li Silk Corridor. This Gu House was made of multiple Beacon Towers, they could transport Gu Immortals to each other, if many Beacon Towers were put together, they could even transport rank eight Gu Immortals!

Tie clan first supreme elder’s idea was not wrong. In fact, Tie clan had been trying to set up more Beacon Towers around Southern Border.

But this arrangement was too much of a threat to the other super forces. Thus, the forces had been trying to stop Tie clan from creating more Beacon Towers.

And now, Tie clan’s first supreme elder used this chance to promote the Beacon Towers again, the leaders of the different clans did not agree, they only kept silent, showing their resistance to it.

“I have another plan.” A long while later, Shang clan’s first supreme elder spoke.

After fifteen minutes, the discussion between these Southern Border righteous path leaders concluded.

Under the moonlight, Chi Qu You stopped using his killer move, he flew in the sky while riding a thick cloud, having an eerie gaze.

Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world was full of conflicts between major forces to begin with. During this period, the earth veins shook, while it gave great benefits, it also intensified the conflict between forces. This made the super forces more hostile to each other.

Other than scheming against each other, just look at this time when Fang Yuan attacked Chi clan’s resource points, not a single force helped them out.

After flying for some time, Chi Qu You’s vision changed, he ended up in an immortal battlefield.

He was not nervous, because this was yama battlefield.

He had already set up a meeting time with Fang Yuan.

“These are yours.” Fang Yuan tossed out multiple Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies and an information path mortal Gu: “Where are my things?”

“I brought them.” Chi Qu You took out a large number of immortal essence stones and immortal materials of all kinds, there was also one information path mortal Gu, an information path inheritance was recorded in it.

Both sides inspected the goods and traded successfully before parting. Chi Qu You frowned lightly while Fang Yuan smiled.

“Chi clan’s first supreme elder, in the future, I will transact with you again!” Before leaving, Fang Yuan transmitted.

“How will you contact me?”

“You will know by then.”

Both sides quickly left the place, they were extremely alert, nobody found out about this transaction.

“The information in this Gu worm is not complete, I can see that Fang Yuan still has a lot of dream path research results. But what I obtained this time has already far exceeded the other super forces of Southern Border!” Chi Qu You looked at the dream realms in his immortal aperture as he sighed deeply.

Thinking of Fang Yuan, his gaze turned dark: “Fang Yuan is a scoundrel, he obviously wants to cooperate with me again. After all, he wants to know about Yi Tian Mountain’s formation, I should work with him now and obtain more dream path research results, I will use Southern Border’s righteous path in the future to eliminate him afterwards!”

The transaction between Chi Qu You and Fang Yuan was merely for benefits. His intention to take down Fang Yuan now was also for benefits.

After all, if Fang Yuan sold these dream path research results to other super forces, Chi clan’s advantage would be lost, their benefits would be greatly affected.

“Even though I gave Chi clan a few dream realms this time, I have already obtained a lot of time path dream realms, I am going to cultivate now and raise my time path attainment level!” Fang Yuan was thinking and planning.

Chi clan had obtained dream path methods, they naturally needed more dream realms to explore. Even though Yi Tian Mountain had a huge dream realm, they could not explore it under everyone’s watchful gaze, that was too risky.

Fang Yuan wanted to encourage these transactions but he did not want Chi clan to be exposed either.

“This time, I succeeded in invading Plunder Shadow Earth Trench, Southern Border’s righteous path must be plotting against me. Even though Fixed Immortal Travel is good, it can be countered. Let alone the foundation of Southern Border’s righteous path, close connections between Wu Yong and Heavenly Court will make sure they help out as well. I should lay low now.”

The truth was, Fang Yuan could use the dream path research results to find any super force and become allies with them to undergo transactions.

But Fang Yuan chose Chi clan, there were reasons behind it.

The most important reason was that during the chaotic period of his previous life, Chi clan was a firm force in resisting Heavenly Court!

In his previous life, Wu clan was the same, but because Wu Yong managed to take back many Immortal Gu from Southern Border’s righteous path this time, Fang Yuan thought about it and could not trust them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1595: Water Text Gu

The moon was bright outside the window, while a faint candle lighted the room.

Wu Yong paced around in his room.

He felt worry and frustration in his heart, he could not let it go.

Right now, Wu Yong had rank eight cultivation level, he had supreme authority in Wu clan, he used Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building to help Wu clan get through tough times. He even got back the Southern Border righteous path’s Immortal Gu from Heavenly Court, his reputation was at its peak. During this period, he had worked hard to nurture some Gu Immortal seeds, Wu clan was doing very well, why was he so worried now?

Fang Yuan!

Disguising as Wu Yi Hai, he even deceived Wu Yong, managing to take away lots of resources and even Immortal Gu. Not only did he toy around with Wu clan, even Wu Yong’s pursuit saw no results.

Fang Yuan was like a thorn in his heart, whenever Wu Yong thought about it, he would feel heartache, humiliation, anger, and hatred.

This time, Fang Yuan suddenly appeared in Southern Border, destroying Plunder Shadow Earth Trench’s formation and taking the dream realms, Wu Yong seemed very calm and composed now, but his heart was bleeding from this thorn that stabbed deeply into his wound!

“Shang clan first supreme elder’s method can target Fang Yuan’s Fixed Immortal Travel, but...”

Wu Yong frowned as he walked around, shaking his head.

He felt that it was not reliable, could this method really kill Fang Yuan?

Thinking about how he failed to kill Fang Yuan even with all the Southern Border righteous path forces. Thinking about how Heavenly Court failed to capture him after multiple attempts. Could the Southern Border righteous path really succeed this time?

Wu Yong shook his head.

He admitted that he was quite wary of Fang Yuan now. This demon’s strength improved by leaps and bounds whenever he appeared, he could not be looked at with logic.

And also, Wu Yong was not confident in Southern Border’s righteous path.

Wu clan was the leader of Southern Border’s righteous path, Wu Yong had been nurtured under Wu Du Xiu’s wings, how could he not see the weakness of Southern Border’s righteous path!

They all had their individual desires, they were filled with conflict and wariness, unless they had no choice, there would not be a leader that could unify them.

Even for Wu clan, even if Wu Du Xiu was around and worked with Wu Yong, they could not be an absolute leader.

Wu Yong could imagine that on the day of the operation, Southern Border’s righteous path would be very wary of each other, they would make excuses and refuse to be the first ones to act, they would want to fight for benefits. How could such a group deal with the crafty Fang Yuan?

Especially now, only Chi clan was plundered by Fang Yuan, the other clans were untouched, with the turbulence of the earth veins, they had to fight for the resources underground, how could the clans spend their effort on Fang Yuan?

“Or rather, Fang Yuan noticed this, so he only plundered Chi clan’s resources!”

Wu Yong’s heart sank.

From this angle, he really wanted Fang Yuan to go all-out and aggravate all the clans. But he was simply too crafty, he only targeted one clan.

If Wu Yong knew that Fang Yuan not only plundered Chi clan, he even made a deal with them secretly to plot against Heavenly Court during the five regions chaotic war, who knew what he would think.

After walking around for a while, Wu Yong made up his mind: “I should communicate with Heavenly Court, I should use them to get rid of Fang Yuan!”

This was quite a tough decision.

Even though this was a wise choice, since the enemy of an enemy was a friend, it was taboo. The five regions excluding Eastern Sea had a mentality against foreigners, Southern Border did too.

If Southern Border’s forces and Gu Immortals knew that Wu Yong was working with another region’s super force to meddle in Southern Border’s affairs, he would receive huge criticism, even if he was Wu clan’s first supreme elder, even if he had rank eight cultivation level, he would not be exempt from it.

It could be said that Wu Yong was taking a huge risk. If he was exposed, Wu clan’s current advantageous position would be destroyed.

“Oh? Wu Yong contacted me? It must be due to the demon Fang Yuan...” Fairy Zi Wei was resting, seeing that Wu Yong had contacted her, she smiled as she replied.

Wu Yong had a special status, he was the first supreme elder of Wu clan, even without trying to influence him, the cooperation between them was already his weakness.

Both sides talked for a while, Wu Yong got to the topic of Fang Yuan.

Fairy Zi Wei thought: “Like I expected, Fang Yuan has Fixed Immortal Travel and because I exposed his methods in treasure yellow heaven, Wu Yong is even more wary of him now, he wants to eliminate Fang Yuan despite the risks.”

Heavenly Court was not in good shape recently.

Not long ago, they failed to achieve any of their goals in their second attack on Lang Ya blessed land. Wisdom Gu was taken by Fang Yuan who escaped successfully, Lang Ya blessed land was guarded by Longevity Heaven, while Heavenly Court's Thunder Ghost True Monarch died. Chen Yi, Fairy Zi Wei, and Feng Jiu Ge also suffered injuries to certain degrees, they were all recuperating now.

But even so, after hearing Wu Yong's words, Fairy Zi Wei agreed without hesitation.

Fang Yuan needed to die!

Even if he had rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel, there were ways to restrict this Gu.

Or rather, even if they failed to kill Fang Yuan, as long as they pressured him and did not give him time to grow further, it would be a success for Heavenly Court!

“Fang Yuan's growth is simply too fast and too scary! And this is already with heaven's will giving him hurdles constantly through its influence. Once in a while, he shows up with shocking improvements. Even if we fail to kill him, we must make sure he has no time to cultivate. If he gained new methods, we must expose all his trump cards.”

Fairy Zi Wei felt deeper wariness against Fang Yuan.

To pursue him, she had put in so much effort, and right now, even Lang Ya blessed land was nearly taken down by her, but Fang Yuan?

He was still free and roaming around!

Heavenly Court had the absolute advantage, be it fate Gu's repair, the nurturing of Great Dream Immortal Venerable, or even the imprisonment of Spectral Soul, Fang Yuan could not match their achievements.

But in the deepest part of Fairy Zi Wei's heart, she started to feel fear and unease.

This emotion was absurd, but she truly felt fear and unease.

Fear and unease due to Fang Yuan!

“Southern Border's righteous path is dealing with Fang Yuan now, this is a chance. Forget my injuries, I need to go all-out to kill Fang Yuan and eliminate this problem.” Determination flashed in Fairy Zi Wei's eyes.

Southern Border's righteous path was plotting against Fang Yuan, because of Wu Yong's contact, before Heavenly Court even made a move, they were already the mastermind. Once Heavenly Court moves, they would unleash a terrifying attack.

It was a pity that Fang Yuan had expected this.

After the transaction with Chi Qu You, he went into seclusion, exploring the dream realms that he had.

This was a time path dream realm.

Inside this dream realm, Fang Yuan was an old man, he was the main character of this dream, having rank four cultivation level.

Right now, he was surrounded by five or six Gu Masters with hostile expressions.

“Lord Bai Lian, this is the treatment fee in advance, please follow us.” The leader Gu Master also had rank four cultivation level, looking at Fang Yuan, he spoke threateningly.

Fang Yuan first looked at the Gu worms in his aperture, they were all time path Gu worms used for support, they could not heal. Thinking about it, Fang Yuan probed: “I am just an ordinary time path Gu Master, I am not a doctor, aren’t you making things difficult for me?”

The other party replied: “Hmph, you will go whether you want to or not. Do you dare to defy the request of our Central Continent’s Meng clan? We already know everything about you, don’t worry, we are asking you to go because of your abilities, we know you can heal Lord Meng Bi’s illness. Come, do you need us to invite you by force?”

“Let’s go, lead the way.” Fang Yuan smiled bitterly.

Following these Gu Masters, Fang Yuan soon arrived at Meng clan, he saw the patient Meng Bi.

Only to see that this person was frail and yellow, his bones were protruding from his skinny body, he rested in bed as he grunted weakly.

“How did this happen? What illness is it?” Fang Yuan probed.

A servant started crying as he said: “My master has always been healthy and strong, he sprints as fast as a wolf, to think that this would happen. He was harmed by that unscrupulous merchant, he bought a water text Gu. The merchant said that this Gu would allow him to write beautiful words that resembled flowing water. Master has always been brutish, the others have always said that he had brawns but no literary flair. Because of this, master bought this water text Gu at a high price, wanting to write a beautiful verse that night.”

“Is the problem regarding that water text Gu?” Fang Yuan asked.

The servant nodded: “Initially, master used that water text Gu with no issue. He wrote verses after verses, master was extremely happy, he wrote fifty to sixty texts. But in the morning, before he ate, he started to have diarrhea. It poured like flowing water, he had the runs for over twenty times. Even with master’s tough body, he ended up like this after a day.”

Fang Yuan realized at last, he gained confidence in solving this.

Water text Gu was not the problem, but overly using it caused the diarrhea, nobody could deal with that side effect.

Rushing leads to worse results, this was quite common. Using Gu carried risks, Meng Bi truly brought it upon himself.

“Meng clan was right to invite me, my time path Gu worms might not be able to heal, but in this situation,they are appropriate in healing Meng Bi.” Fang Yuan thought.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1596: Time Cutting Edge

Fang Yuan was not a novice at exploring dream realms, he had a lot of experiences.

Fang Yuan had already understood Meng Bi’s dream realm at this point.

“I need to use the time path Gu worms in the aperture to create a time path killer move and heal Meng Bi’s injuries.”

Meng Bi was injured from overly using water text Gu, this time path killer move must target the root cause.

Even though Fang Yuan had ordinary attainment level in time path, he had Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, Lang Ya’s true inheritance, and Hei Fan’s true inheritance. Especially the final one, it was a huge help for this problem.

This dream realm was testing the explorer’s knowledge and ability to formulate killer moves.

Of course, it was not so simple.

Fang Yuan analyzed them, he found that the time path mortal Gu in this aperture were unique to this dream realm, they did not exist in real life.

Fang Yuan was not surprised, this was a dream realm after all, it was different from the real world.

Others, including time path great experts, would have to test their luck now. But Fang Yuan’s luck was very good.

However, he had a better option.

Immortal killer move — Unravel Dream.

This move was useless when he explored Thieving Heaven’s dream realm, but now, because this dream realm was much smaller, it had an extraordinary effect.

The necessary Gu worms started to float in the aperture, giving Fang Yuan the answer directly.

Fang Yuan already had a blueprint in his mind, using these Gu worms, he started to test them.

After failing twice, he succeeded in the killer move, Meng Bi was saved. And with this, the dream realm was over.

His soul returned to sovereign immortal body as Fang Yuan opened his eyes.

He joyfully discovered that his time path attainment level had risen from ordinary to master level.

But his joy did not last long, his expression suddenly changed.

At the same time, immortal killer move emperor yama that was shielding his soul started to expand rapidly from its original state.

“Someone is deducing my location, they are quite proficient!” Fang Yuan smiled coldly.

If this was before the defensive battle of Lang Ya blessed land, he would be worried. But he had emperor yama now, his defense against deductions made even Heavenly Court’s Fairy Zi Wei without options for now.

As expected, after deducing for a while, the other party was unable to break emperor yama, they paid a huge price for nothing.

Fang Yuan’s emperor yama killer move shrunk back into a simple garment on his soul again.

Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered with cold light, he looked around as emperor yama’s aura burst out in the surroundings, to play safe, he decided to leave this place immediately.

Using Fixed Immortal Travel again, it was simply too convenient to move around with this Gu.

In a flash, Fang Yuan went from one side of Southern Border to the other side, who knew how far the distance was.

Fang Yuan flew for a while before lurking in a grey valley that was filled with mist.

“My soul foundation is only at thirty million man soul now.” Fang Yuan calculated as he sighed.

Using emperor yama would place a burden on Fang Yuan’s soul, his soul foundation would be depleted. Earlier, against that mysterious expert, emperor yama expended a million of Fang Yuan’s soul foundation, the deducer was truly powerful.

Long ago, Fang Yuan’s soul foundation far exceeded thirty million, but in the battle of Lang Ya, he expended it greatly.

And also, exploring dream realms consumed soul foundation and also caused great harm to the soul.

If this was before, Fang Yuan could use his resources to raise his soul foundation again. But now, Dang Hun Mountain was still being repaired, it could not be used.

Without Dang Hun Mountain to produce guts Gu, with just Fang Yuan’s guts Gu in stock, they could not last long.

“To repair Dang Hun Mountain, I have been using landscape as before Immortal Gu. Event hough Dang Hun Mountain has the effect of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s orderly well killer move, it is just a rank six Immortal Gu, this task has been draining my immortal essence.”

Fang Yuan’s immortal essence storage was drying up.

His abundant storage had already been depleted by the intense battles earlier.

Heavenly Court’s attacks on Fang Yuan did not kill him but they were not in vain, his foundation was deeply hit by this!

The lack of immortal essence was also why Fang Yuan wanted to work with Chi Qu You instead of fighting.

Actually, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture had an incredible amount of time path resources1, the rate of time was rapid, his immortal essence was produced at the fastest rate in the world compared to all other rank seven Gu Immortals.

But his expenditure was even greater, just him alone could not make up for the deficit. The dragonfish business was sustaining him for now.

The dragonfish business was raking in huge profits, Fang Yuan used these immortal essence stones and constantly converted them into immortal essence, alleviating his problem.

“With the dragonfish business and my guts Gu storage, I can still sustain myself. When Dang Hun Mountain is repaired, everything will get better.”

With Fixed Immortal Travel and Omni-directional Travel, Fang Yuan was not afraid of people approaching him.

The truth was, with emperor yama’s protection, there was little possibility of them deducing his location quickly.

Fang Yuan decided to continue exploring time path dream realms.

He had left many time path dream realms in Plunder Shadow Earth Trench, after setting up a Gu formation to alert himself, he entered the dream.

On a snowy mountain peak, an old man looked at Fang Yuan with his hands behind his back.

“Kneel down.” The old man said plainly.

Fang Yuan was dazed but quickly followed the old man’s words.

The old man’s expression turned solemn and grand, he said slowly: “From now on, I will impart upon you the strongest killer move of our clan — Time Cutting Edge! Once this is shot out, it will not miss, anyone hit by it will die. There is only hope in taking revenge on our clan’s mortal enemy after you learn this move.”

“Yes.” Fang Yuan heard his words and had a feeling he was going to have huge gains in this dream realm exploration!

As expected, the old man taught him the entire killer move, time cutting edge.

This move was very complex, much more than Fang Yuan’s own creation, myriad self. And the harder thing was, this move had a very short completion time, hundreds of steps needed to be completed in three breaths of time. Otherwise, Fang Yuan would face the backlash of this killer move.

“Three breaths? How can that be possible?” Even Fang Yuan felt that it was impossible.

However, the old man’s explanation had not ended. Fang Yuan listened closely, the solution was for Fang Yuan to use another time path killer move to shorten time cutting edge’s activation time to three breaths, that would allow him to use it.

If other paths uses time path methods to accelerate their killer moves, they would be adding fuel to the fire, the effect would backfire and the move would fail, resulting in a backlash.

But time cutting edge was a time path killer move to begin with, when using other time path killer moves, there would be no conflict, instead they complemented each other.

Thus, rather than time cutting edge itself, Fang Yuan started to learn the supplementary killer move — Shrink Time.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1597: Time Path Grandmaster

Time path dream realm.

Fang Yuan turned into a young looking rank six Gu Immortal, his eyes were shut as his body was covered in specks of white light.

As the number of white lights increased, Fang Yuan’s aura became denser and more stable.

Suddenly, his body shook, his aura became chaotic, it was like a tall building collapsing into the abyss.

Guh.

Fang Yuan opened his mouth, spitting out a mouthful of blood.

“I failed again.” He opened his eyes, bright light shining within.

He had already failed to activate shrink time three times, this was a rank six killer move used to supplement time cutting edge.

With three consecutive failures, Fang Yuan’s soul foundation fell with each injury, his thirty million man soul had fallen to twenty-nine million six hundred thousand.

This was not Thieving Heaven’s dream realm after all, the soul foundation loss in Thieving Heaven’s dream realm was too absurd.

Fang Yuan did not feel discouraged, his gaze flickered as fighting spirit rose in him.

Ignoring the rest, just shrink time itself was very valuable. It was not only useful for time cutting edge, he could supplement it for other time path killer moves.

The exploration failed, Fang Yuan’s soul left the dream realm, returning to heal in the sovereign immortal body.

Guts Gu.

Fang Yuan took out a guts Gu and used it.

Earlier, he had an abundant supply, but now, he had to use them wisely.

He did not have many guts Gu, Fang Yuan planned to use them for the healing of his soul. Therefore, he could only stop his soul path cultivation.

The truth was, not only would Fang Yuan's soul foundation remain stagnant, as he explored more dream realms later, it would continue to fall. This was something to be expected, there was no helping it.

Soul path cultivation was no longer his priority, he needed to head into the River of Time and obtain Red Lotus' true inheritance, that was the most logical plan!

Fang Yuan needed to go soon.

Firstly, the longer he waited, the more problems that would arise. His enemy was Heavenly Court which had a deep foundation, they might have another great expert awakening at any time. Heavenly Court also had traps set in the River of Time, the more time passed, the more traps there would be.

Secondly, Fang Yuan was placing his hope on Red Lotus' true inheritance to resist Heavenly Court and preventing fate Immortal Gu from being repaired. This had the greatest chance of success now. But in the worst case scenario that Red Lotus' true inheritance could not help him, he had to make other plans. Thus, the earlier Fang Yuan obtained Red Lotus' true inheritance, the more time he had to deal with the future.

As for his soul path cultivation becoming stagnant or falling, or even the lack of immortal essence, Fang Yuan did not care. Of course, he was not ignoring them, he already had the way to settle them. Once Dang Hun Mountain was repaired, everything would be in order again!

Other than this method, Fang Yuan had no way of resolving these problems now.

Currently, Dang Hun Mountain was about thirty to forty percent restored, but the soul path dao marks had not reached a qualitative change yet, it could not produce guts Gu.

After resting his soul, Fang Yuan entered the dream realm again.

This time, he finally succeeded in activating shrink time.

The first three failures were not for nothing, each failure led Fang Yuan closer to success.

Fang Yuan finally grasped the killer move shrink time.

Of course, the shrink time obtained in the dream realm might not be usable in the real world. After all, dreams and reality were different.

Fang Yuan was clear in his mind, the content of shrink time was accurate. Even if there were differences, with the light of wisdom, he could spend some time to create a version usable in real life.

At this point, this stage of the dream realm has been cleared, the entire cultivation area faded from Fang Yuan's view.

His time path attainment started to rise rapidly before stopping.

“I am still a time path master. But... compared to before, it has risen a bit, I am approaching grandmaster.”

In the second stage of the dream realm, Fang Yuan started to practise time cutting edge.

This move was even more difficult and complex than myriad self back then.

Fang Yuan focused his mind and practised, he soon felt his head spinning, thoughts were expended rapidly in his mind, it was like a dried pond.

Fang Yuan was very patient, he practised the contents continuously over and over again, moving towards the path of success.

While practising, he got injured again.

After leaving the dream realm and going back to his body, Fang Yuan was shocked to find out that not only did his soul foundation fall from this injury, his lifespan was also shaved off to some extent!

“Getting injured in this dream realm will expend lifespan!” Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, this was a new discovery. But thankfully, he had a lot of lifespan Gu now, there was no issue. Of course, other Gu Immortals would think differently.

Just like this, after a while, Fang Yuan got injured four times before he finally managed to use time cutting edge in the dream realm.

Just once was enough, this was not reality after all, the dream realm collapsed as Fang Yuan entered the third stage.

The old man appeared again: “After six years, you finally learned time cutting edge, not bad. But we will have to test it in battle first.”

Fang Yuan cupped his fists: “Please arrange it.”

The old man laughed: “Rank seven Gu Immortal Li Xin is that person’s right hand man, there is chaos in the south due to ancient desolate beasts, he is there to suppress them, go kill him!”

Fang Yuan frowned slightly, he only had rank six cultivation level under this identity, without deep foundations, how could he kill a rank seven?

The only advantage was his killer move time cutting edge!

Before Fang Yuan could think anymore, the dream changed, the surroundings were covered in flames. A person stood in the sea of fire, looking at Fang Yuan with his triangular eyes: “So you are a lingering member of Bo clan, hmph, die!”

Saying so, dark red flames surged towards Fang Yuan like a huge wave.

Fang Yuan quickly retreated, at the crucial moment, he activated the time path Immortal Gu in his immortal aperture.

At the next moment, the flames engulfed him.

Fang Yuan died in battle.

The dream realm exploration failed, Fang Yuan moved his injured soul back into his body.

This dream realm was quite ridiculous. The battle started immediately, Fang Yuan had no time to react.

“Furthermore, other than time cutting edge, I can only use the other time path Immortal Gu without formulating any killer moves.”

Fang Yuan was quite vexed.

These time path Immortal Gu were all rank six, when used alone, how could they match the rank seven Gu Immortal Li Xin? And his dark red flame killer move was clearly rank seven!

“It seems that I can only counter offense with offense and use time cutting edge against him.” Fang Yuan made up his mind after a moment.

If this was real life, Fang Yuan would fight cautiously. But the dream realm was a different case.

After a while, Fang Yuan entered the dream realm.

Dark red flames came at him, but Fang Yuan did not dodge, he used immortal killer move time cutting edge.

A thin blade formed instantly.

The flying blade shot out with the flash of a sharp light.

“Hmm! What is this killer move...” Li Xin had a shocked expression as he fell, the dark red flames surged and burned him to a crisp.

Fang Yuan was deeply shocked.

“This move is amazing! It could easily kill a rank seven, even though this Li Xin was covered in defensive methods. Even in the dream realm it is so powerful... it seems it is not weak in real life either!”

With Li Xin’s death, the dream realm dissipated.

The third stage of the dream was passed, Fang Yuan became a time path grandmaster!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1598: Forget

The dream realm reached the fourth stage.

“I killed Li Xin.” Fang Yuan said.

The old man stood in front of Fang Yuan, nodding: “It seems that you are already proficient in time cutting edge. But you only learned the rank six version of time cutting edge. I will impart you the rank seven version now, listen carefully.”

Fang Yuan focused his mind and memorized it.

The rank seven killer move was many times more complex than the rank six version!

Fang Yuan got a headache from just listening to the steps, this was the most complex killer move he had ever heard of, there was no competition.

After imparting him the killer move, the old man said to Fang Yuan before leaving: “After you succeed in learning this rank seven killer move, come find me.”

Fang Yuan was left alone in the dream realm.

“It seems that the fourth stage still wants me to practise the killer move.” Fang Yuan pondered.

Having understood this, he started to work, practising laboriously in the dream realm.

Even though the killer move was complex and difficult to master, Fang Yuan had lots of patience.

His personality had already been tempered into a piece of black steel by his previous life and the toying of fate, he was extremely firm and determined.

These small setbacks would not make him dejected or feel like giving up.

While Fang Yuan explored the dream realm and practised his killer move, inside the sovereign immortal aperture, Fang Yuan’s time path clone was sitting in front of wisdom Gu, using the light of wisdom to make deductions.

Next, he opened his eyes, muttering: “The formation’s deduction has reached a certain point. Next, I will move onto time cutting edge.”

It was actually quite strange.

This killer move, time cutting edge, had exceptional power, why was it not recorded inside Spectral Soul’s true inheritance?

After all, this time path dream realm came from Spectral Soul himself, normally speaking, time cutting edge should be recorded inside Spectral Soul’s true inheritance.

But in fact, Fang Yuan’s true inheritance of Spectral Soul did not have such content.

“We have not deduced Fang Yuan’s location yet?” Xia clan’s first supreme elder said with a grim expression.

In front of her, a group of Southern Border Gu Immortals fell into silence, they all had ugly expressions.

Because Fang Yuan destroyed Plunder Shadow Earth Trench and took away all the dream realms earlier, Southern Border’s righteous path gathered together and sent out their people, forming a group of specialized individuals to track Fang Yuan.

The leader of this group was Xia clan’s first supreme elder, Xia Cha.

Xia Cha had white hair and wrinkles on her face, even though she was old, she had a grand disposition, her gaze swept across the crowd as she dominated everyone with her aura.

The Southern Border immortals lowered their heads.

Who did not want to find Fang Yuan? But he had emperor yama protecting him, even Heavenly Court’s wisdom path great expert Fairy Zi Wei was without options against him, not to mention this hastily gathered group of Southern Border Gu Immortals.

Of course, Southern Border’s righteous path had deep foundations, they were not to be underestimated. These people were not completely incapable of finding out Fang Yuan’s location, they just needed more clues, like when Fang Yuan appears again to attack another resource point.

With sufficient clues, there was a possibility that these people could use their various methods and cooperate to unravel emperor yama.

Emperor yama was strong, but if it remained the same over time, as deductions piled up, it would eventually be broken.

Xia Cha knew this too: “This damned Fang Yuan, after plundering Plunder Shadow Earth Trench, he vanished into thin air!”

Xia Cha felt pressured.

As long as Fang Yuan was still alive, as leader of this expedition, her reputation would continue to plummet. If it got serious, the whole of Xia clan would suffer too.

“This demon Fang Yuan, he is hiding in seclusion, he must be exploring dream realms and gaining benefits! We must eliminate him fast, otherwise, he will get much stronger again.” Xia Cha said eerily: “Everyone, if you have any trump cards, use them, I swear on my name that I will compensate you all fairly.”

The Southern Border immortals looked around at each other, they did not move.

Xia Cha felt increasingly disappointed, her gaze swept across the people and stopped at one person: “Liu Hao, I wonder what brilliant method you have?”

Liu Hao was slightly stunned.

He had a tall body, he wore a green robe and had a goatee, his face was yellow, he was the representative of Wu clan.

Because of the turmoil earlier, many of Wu clan’s Gu Immortals had been sacrificed, thus they recruited a lot of outside Gu Immortals recently as their external supreme elders. Liu Hao was one of them.

But the truth was, he was a Central Continent Gu Immortal, a spy sent by Fairy Zi Wei, arranged by Wu Yong as a Southern Border righteous path member.

Xia Cha was familiar with the other Gu Immortals except Liu Hao, on the surface, he was a secluded cultivator and did not have much reputation.

Liu Hao reacted in time and smiled bitterly: “I am ashamed! I cannot do anything about this, our information is severely lacking, especially clues connected to Fang Yuan. In my opinion, we are not weak, the problem is that we have nothing to work with.”

“Indeed, indeed.”

“Liu Hao is correct!”

Liu Hao’s words resonated with everyone present.

Xia Cha was slightly disappointed, but she did not suspect Liu Hao of lying, after all, Wu clan and Fang Yuan had deep enmity between them.

“What do we do now? Do we continue waiting? If Fang Yuan does not show up, will we do nothing but wait for him to appear?”

Xia Cha thought about this and felt a headache coming.

But at this time, an unknown voice suddenly spoke around them: “I can help in this matter.”

“Who is it?!” The immortals were shocked, even Xia Cha stood up as her eyes shined brightly, she stared hard.

An unknown Gu Immortal with a muscular body and conical hat suddenly appeared in the immortal formation. If he did not speak, nobody would have noticed!

“Who are you?!” Southern Border’s immortals were all prepared to fight, the atmosphere was extremely tense.

“Wait, you are...” The expression of Tie clan’s representative changed as he stopped the immortals.

“That’s right, I am Lu Wei Yin.” The person said plainly with a smile.

Dream realm.

The old man nodded with satisfaction and a bit of shock: “Rank seven time cutting edge, you mastered it as well!”

Fang Yuan had a plain expression, cupping his fists: “I did not disappoint you.”

The old man nodded: “It seems that you are talented in this aspect, very good, our clan’s revenge can finally see some hope. But I have some things to tell you.”

“Please tell me.”

“First.” The old man raised his right index finger: “Rank six time cutting edge can kill rank seven, but rank seven time cutting edge cannot kill rank eight Gu Immortals. Rank seven and eight are too different in strength. Thus, even if you mastered time cutting edge, do not seek the enemy for revenge yet. You are only rank six now, you will only be courting death.”

“Second.” The old man raised his right middle finger: “You only have rank six cultivation level, using rank seven time cutting edge is quite difficult. You need to raise your cultivation level to rank seven or even rank eight! When you raise your cultivation level, you will be able to learn rank eight time cutting edge. With a rank eight killer move, you would be able to take revenge, but before that, you need to endure!”

“And third.” The old man raised his fourth finger: “Time cutting edge is an extreme move, it has incredible power but the drawback is huge. The higher the rank, the stronger the drawback. You must have realized it now, right? That’s right, time cutting edge will remove your memories related to it. The more you use it, the more you forget. One day, you will forget me, the enemy, and even this killer move itself. Thus, before you lose too many memories, you need to control yourself and not use this move excessively.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1599: Tribulation and Divine Technique

Southern Border.

The sovereign immortal aperture had already been placed, the entrance was open and swallowed a vast amount of heaven and earth qi.

Swoosh swoosh!

The turbulent heaven and earth qi approached grandly, if anyone saw this, they would be deeply shocked, no blessed land had ever been able to absorb so much heaven and earth qi at once.

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body was near the entrance, watching the heaven and earth qi flow in. Because it was too dense, the qi could be seen like moving fog or clouds.

“Absorb more, absorb more, take in everything you need.” Fang Yuan smiled, he could tell that the sovereign immortal aperture was very ‘hungry’.

City Well, Reverse Flow River, and Luo Po Valley, even though the three secluded domains of heaven and earth were unique and amazing, they caused a huge burden on the blessed land, the expenditure of heaven and earth qi was intense. From time to time, Fang Yuan had to absorb heaven and earth qi from the outside world to replenish them.

“And this is before Dang Hun Mountain gets repaired, after it is restored, the amount of heaven and earth qi needed will be even higher!”

From this aspect, the destruction of Dang Hun Mountain had a tiny bit of benefit to Fang Yuan.

Of course, the biggest reason was that sovereign blessed land had a lot of resources, it was like a huge foundation that could handle the weight of four secluded domains of heaven and earth. Ordinary blessed lands could not sustain two of them at once.

Placing his immortal aperture and opening the immortal aperture’s entrance had several drawbacks to Fang Yuan.

At this moment, because the inside and outside were connected, when he absorbed heaven and earth qi, Fang Yuan’s location would be exposed to heaven’s will.

And if any Gu Immortal tried to make deductions on him, the difficulty of defending himself would be many times higher.

Thus, Fang Yuan had been buying immortal materials and turning them into heaven and earth qi to replenish his immortal aperture. But recently, his focus was on repairing Dang Hun Mountain, he started lacking funds, he could not buy them anymore so he had to place his immortal aperture to absorb heaven and earth qi.

The sovereign immortal aperture was definitely a big eater, it needed dozens or even hundreds of times of heaven and earth qi as ordinary blessed lands.

The sovereign immortal aperture had its fill, but heaven and earth qi continued to pour in unceasingly.

This phenomenon did not shock Fang Yuan, because he knew that this time was different, his tribulation was coming.

Fang Yuan was a rank seven Gu Immortal, he faced an earthly calamity every ten years, a heavenly tribulation every fifty years, and a grand tribulation every one hundred years.

Ever since Fang Yuan used his time path methods to modify the sovereign immortal aperture’s rate of time to its quickest, his calamities and tribulations had been coming at a rapid rate!

This was an earthly calamity.

But be they earthly calamity or heavenly tribulation, they were not a problem for Fang Yuan, especially when he had the killer move exposing heavenly secret. This move used heavenly secret Immortal Gu as the core with supplementary Gu worms to allow Fang Yuan to deduce the contents of upcoming calamities and tribulations.

Thus, before this earthly calamity even formed, Fang Yuan already knew what it was.

As expected, the calamities and tribulations formed like how Fang Yuan had predicted.

Earth qi continued to rumble under Fang Yuan’s feet, forming into huge yellow spirals. Heaven qi rumbled in the sky, booming as green lightning in the sky continued to flicker.

Screech screech screech!

With a chain of shrill noises that could burst eardrums, terrifying statues emerged from the center of the yellow spiral.

These giant statues were ten meters tall, they were muscular and had sharp teeth that protruded out of their faces. Suddenly, they opened their red eyes as the purple bat wings on their backs expanded, they flew up and charged at Fang Yuan.

“Yellow spring ghost martial statues.” Fang Yuan floated in the sky, his arms were behind his back as he looked at these statues calmly.

He was very relaxed, he could even look at the sky during this critical moment when the enemy approached.

In the sky, the green lightning split apart the cloud layer, countless statues that resembled the yellow spring ghost martial statues appeared.

The yellow spring ghost martial statues bore their fangs and claws, but these statues were very orderly like a group of troops, they had solemn expressions and huge bodies, there were eagle wings on their backs.

“Green lightning divine martial statues.” Fang Yuan smiled in his mind, recognizing the second type of statue.

At this moment, the yellow spring ghost martial statues had already reached Fang Yuan, they slashed their claws and opened their mouths, biting at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not move, ripples appeared on his body.

It was the famous creation of Fang Yuan, immortal killer move — Reverse Flow Protection Seal!

Be they the yellow spring ghost martial statues or green lightning divine martial statues, their attacks were all reflected back and injured themselves. Fang Yuan was completely unharmed and could not be defeated.

“Begone.” Fang Yuan waved his hand, immortal killer move myriad dragon burst out, within the sea of silver scales, myriad dragons flew and attacked endlessly.

Even though there were many yellow spring ghost martial statues and green lightning divine martial statues produced by the heaven and earth qi, how could they match Fang Yuan’s myriad dragon?

At the start, they could still resist, but soon, they were engulfed by the myriad dragon army, losing their numbers rapidly. The heaven and earth qi were scattered by the myriad dragons, even though heaven’s will was unresigned and sought to try again, the next wave of myriad dragon destroyed the gathering heaven and earth qi again.

A moment later, the calamity was over, the immortal aperture’s entrance closed, the sovereign immortal aperture became peaceful again as the turbulence ended.

Fang Yuan nodded to himself and concluded: “This earthly calamity only had the yellow spring ghost martial statues originally, but changed because I did not go through the previous earthly calamity, instead using the immortal killer move endless trouble to delay it.”

Immortal killer move endless trouble was among the contents of Hei Fan’s true inheritance. It could delay the current tribulation until the next time, and undergo both tribulations together. The weakness was that it would anger heaven’s will, the following calamities and tribulations would increase greatly in strength.

Heaven’s will was trying to suppress Fang Yuan and prevent his cultivation level from advancing, it intentionally made his calamities and tribulations as weak as possible so he could gain few dao marks.

In this situation, the weakness of endless trouble was actually advantageous to Fang Yuan!

Thus, Fang Yuan used this killer move to undergo two tribulations together, he could gain dao marks and heaven’s will could not stop him.

“Yellow spring ghost martial statues were the earthly calamity, while green lightning divine martial statues were on the level of heavenly tribulation. This time, i gained quite a few dao marks!” Fang Yuan inspected it, his soul path and transformation path dao marks had increased.

These were both useful to Fang Yuan.

Of course, he needed time path dao marks the most.

The sovereign immortal aperture had a huge space, Fang Yuan intentionally chose an empty area to undergo tribulation. Even if heaven’s will wanted to destroy anything, it had no target.

Even though the calamity was over, Fang Yuan’s body remained here. He started to activate heaven’s will dissipation, only stopping after he confirmed that the remaining heaven’s will was cleansed away.

When Fang Yuan’s main body underwent tribulation, his time path clone had been staying with wisdom Gu, deducing immortal killer moves continuously.

Previously, Fang Yuan successfully explored the dream realm, his time path attainment level rose drastically to grandmaster level.

With this attainment level, he was very successful in deducing time path killer moves.

Actually, Fang Yuan’s main body had many time path killer moves. Spectral Soul’s true inheritance had many, followed by Hei Fan’s true inheritance and Lang Ya Sect, in theory, Fang Yuan with refinement path quasi-supreme attainment could deduce and modify these immortal killer moves.

But for Fang Yuan, Hei Fan’s true inheritance was his main consideration. Because his time path Immortal Gu were mostly from Hei Fan’s true inheritance.

For example, rank eight Years Flow Like Water, rank seven year Gu and after Immortal Gu.

The remaining time path Immortal Gu were all rank six. Most were left behind from Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage, and Fang Yuan also had day Immortal Gu.

The time path clone’s main job was to use Hei Fan’s true inheritance as the foundation along with other immortal killer moves and time path Immortal Gu recipes to deduce the most appropriate time path methods for Fang Yuan.

Even though not long had passed, the time path clone was extremely efficient!

Currently, Fang Yuan had an entire set of time path methods, covering offense, defense, movement, and healing. He just needed to spend some time practising them and he could easily grasp them.

“But this is not enough!” The time path clone opened his eyes, sighing.

The light of wisdom faded away as wisdom Gu flew away slowly.

The time path clone went to an empty area to experiment on the killer move.

Immortal killer move — Time Cutting Edge!

A flying blade tore through the sky, instantly vanishing with shocking speed.

But the time path clone’s blood flowed out of his mouth as he shook his head, greatly disappointed.

“I deduced rank seven time path methods that are suitable for me. But in the River of Time, when searching for Red Lotus’ true inheritance and facing the obstruction of Heavenly Court, I will need to have rank eight time path methods.”

Hei Fan’s true inheritance had rank eight defensive killer moves that used years flow like water Immortal Gu as the core. But it did not have rank eight offensive methods.

In Hei Fan’s case, he only obtained Years Flow Like Water in his later years. With limited time, deducing rank eight defensive methods were already not easy. He had rank eight level dao marks, rank seven offenses were enough for him. Of course, most importantly, he solely had Years Flow Like Water, he could either use it to attack or defend himself at one point in time. Defense was naturally more important than offense, especially for a righteous path member.

“And time cutting edge is very extraordinary. Even though rank seven time cutting edge cannot kill rank eight experts, it can harm them. It is a pity that after modifying it, the power is far lower than the original, and the backlash is heavier.”

Fang Yuan was not unfamiliar with this situation.

Like how he had created myriad self Immortal Gu’s recipe, because of his refinement path quasi-supreme attainment level, he had modified it to its limits. Any minor adjustment would be detrimental and make it worse than before.

Fang Yuan’s modification of time cutting edge was similar.

“It seems that the complete time cutting edge killer move is a rank nine killer move!”

Like how Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s immortal killer move orderly well was also rank nine and could not be modified further.

Even though Fang Yuan only obtained the rank six and seven time cutting edge, even the incomplete versions could not be modified. After forcefully changing the content, the disadvantages far outweighed the advantages.

Furthermore, with Fang Yuan’s deductions, time cutting edge’s memory loss effect was not simple. It was not as plain as the old man had described it, the memories lost were not just about the move, but everything related to the move.

Any information related to this move, be it memories or records in information path Gu worms, even carvings on stones would be erased from the River of Time as this move got used continuously.

“Spectral Soul must have obtained time cutting edge in the past, but because he used it often, all of the information that he had regarding time cutting edge was erased from the River of Time, therefore, it was not inside Spectral Soul’s true inheritance.”

“Of course, there is a possibility that Spectral Soul’s true inheritance is not complete, Shadow Sect still kept a small portion of it including this hidden from me, but that is very unlikely.”

“Regardless, I am sure of something, this time cutting edge is truly a divine technique. If I can grasp it, I will have more confidence in the River of Time, my chances will rise by twenty percent!”

A day later.

“This is it.” Lu Wei Yin half-knelt on the ground as he placed his palm down, sensing the changes in the earth qi.

Next, several figures descended from the sky and landed behind Lu Wei Yin. They were led by an old woman, the rank eight time path great expert, Xia clan’s first supreme elder — Xia Cha!

“Fang Yuan placed his aperture here and absorbed the heaven and earth qi, in fact... he went through a tribulation here.” Lu Wei Yin said with deep certainty.

Xia Cha’s eyes flashed brightly, Lu Wei Yin was indeed Paradise Earth’s inheritor, his earth path methods were profound to this extent!

The Gu Immortals behind them started to converse.

“With Lord Lu Wei Yin here, we will be able to find Fang Yuan!”

“Fang Yuan has many secluded domains of heaven and earth, the burden of heaven and earth qi is huge, with such a clue, we will definitely find him.”

“Don’t you all find it strange? He has Fixed Immortal Travel, why is he staying in Southern Border? Why not go to Eastern Sea or Western Desert, aren’t those places safer?”

“Hmph, he is already wanted by everyone, nobody can tolerate him, nowhere is safe.”

“This demon is too vicious, he is likely staying in Southern Border because he wants to rob our resources, especially the dream realms in Yi Tian Mountain, we cannot let them go unguarded!”

“Kill, we need to kill this demon before we can rest at ease!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1600: Ambush, Reverse Scheme

In treasure yellow heaven, the higher the value of items, the taller and brighter the treasure light.

At this stall, the treasure light had been consistently tall and bright, it was like a torch compared to the other stalls.

Southern Border Gu Immortal Tie Qu Zhong’s divine sense was moving around this stall.

“I want three thousand copper dragonfish. Hmm...” After hesitating for a moment, Tie Qu Zhong added: “And two hundred silver dragonfish.”

The transaction was completed quickly, Tie Qu Zhong paid a hefty amount of immortal essence stones for them.

When he withdrew his divine sense and flew around Southern Border’s sky with his main body, his vision was obscured by clouds.

Tie Qu Zhong’s worry had dissipated.

“With these dragonfish, my rank seven edge Gu can be fed for now. However, dragonfish is only a temporary replacement item, to solve this problem, I need to be self sufficient and create the white steel extract resource point in my immortal aperture.”

White steel was a rank six immortal material, one of the earth vein essences. White steel extract was a rank seven immortal material, often, there would only be a small bowl of white steel extract from a huge piece of white steel.

Tie Qu Zhong wanted to create a resource point to produce white steel extract, but it was a huge project to start with.

If he could not solve the problem, purchasing dragonfish to feed his rank seven edge Gu time and time again would incur huge costs, he would be making a loss.

When Gu Immortals cultivate, they do not just fight, resource management was also of utmost importance, occasionally even more than fighting.

Thinking of the white steel extract, Tie Qu Zhong’s gaze turned to his right, there was Gu Immortal moving with him hundreds of steps away.

“Shang Hu Zhang.” Tie Qu Zhong transmitted.

The Shang clan Gu Immortal immediately replied with a nervous expression: “Have you found traces of that demon Fang Yuan?”

It turned out that the two rank seven Gu Immortals, Tie Qu Zhong and Shang Hu Zhang, were members deployed by Southern Border’s righteous path to hunt down Fang Yuan.

Because of Lu Wei Yin, the group that chased after Fang Yuan had always been consistently following his tracks, finding new clues from time to time.

This time, the immortals went to the southeast of Southern Border, due to Lu Wei Yin’s suggestion, rank eight time path Gu Immortal Xia Cha ordered the Gu Immortals to work together and search for new clues.

Shang Hu Zhang and Tie Qu Zhong were one of such pairs.

Tie Qu Zhong smiled lightly: “No need to be worried, I just wanted to ask about the white steel extract.”

Shang Hu Zhang heard this and relaxed, he smiled too: “So you want to create a white steel extract resource point to feed your edge Gu. This is not hard, Shang clan can assist with that, but the price...”

Both sides negotiated for a while, Shang clan eventually fought for a price that was not too low, while Tie Qu Zhong made up his mind and gritted his teeth as he agreed.

After succeeding in the transaction, Shang Hu Zhang’s smile widened, he praised: “Friend Qu Zhong, you want to create the resource point, it is truly wise. Even though the investment is expensive, in the long term, it will save you a huge amount.”

“Indeed, like how I bought dragonfish this time to replace a portion of the white steel extract, if I do this every time, the expenditure is huge.” Tie Qu Zhong sighed.

Shang Hu Zhang’s gaze suddenly flickered: “Dragonfish? To speak the truth, our Shang clan has a dragonfish stall in treasure yellow heaven too. Not only do we sell ordinary dragonfish, we also have copper dragonfish. Sigh, friend, you should have told me earlier, I would be able to give you discounts.”

Tie Qu Zhong chuckled: “Shang clan is also in the dragonfish business?”

“Our Shang clan is interested in any kind of business. Friend Tie Qu Zhong, you also know that the biggest seller of dragonfish now is Fang Yuan! Come, come, I’ll introduce you to the stall, it is run by one of us. Trading with outsiders will lead to their growth after all.” Shang Hu Zhang said with an earnest tone.

Tie Qu Zhong had to thank him profusely but he felt unmoved on the inside.

Even though Shang clan gave discounts, the price of the dragonfish was still quite high. And this stall only sold copper dragonfish, there were no silver dragonfish here.

Fang Yuan killed Qin Bai He and You Chan, obtaining the number one spot in the dragonfish business. Fairy Zi Wei obviously knew about this, she had exposed Fang Yuan’s information in treasure yellow heaven earlier, other than great thief ghost hand and other methods, the dragonfish business was also exposed.

Thus, the Gu Immortals of the entire world knew that Fang Yuan was the current number one seller of the dragonfish business in treasure yellow heaven.

And naturally, he attracted the ‘envy and jealousy’ of these Gu Immortals.

There was naturally an impact dealt, but the actual loss to his dragonfish business profits were marginal and inconsequential.

Copper dragonfish had already been replicated, but the cost of production was much higher than Fang Yuan. This made his competitors’ copper dragonfish much more expensive and unable to compete with Fang Yuan.

Other than that, silver dragonfish was exclusive to Fang Yuan, currently, Gu Immortals interested in the dragonfish business could not create it yet. This was a huge advantage for Fang Yuan.

With these two elements, Fang Yuan’s number one spot in the dragonfish business could not be taken away.

Of course, Fang Yuan was not going to sell dragonfish using just one identity. He opened many stalls and created the scene of many Gu Immortals replicating his silver dragonfish, selling these for huge profits every day.

“But even so, my immortal essence stones are dwindling rapidly.” Fang Yuan sighed.

Repairing Dang Hun Mountain used a lot of immortal essence, and immortal essence was converted from immortal essence stones, Fang Yuan’s huge expenditure was far beyond his immortal aperture’s production speed.

However, the good news was that due to his full investment, Dang Hun Mountain was now sixty percent repaired, the soul path dao marks reached a qualitative change and could now produce guts Gu again.

But the production of guts Gu was terribly little, Fang Yuan needed to continue repairing Dang Hun Mountain.

“Dragonfish business has too much profits, not only would many forces and Gu Immortals interfere, Heavenly Court would definitely try to suppress me. But currently, silver dragonfish is too hard to create, while ordinary dragonfish, iron dragonfish, and copper dragonfish have expensive methods of production that cannot match mine.”

In time, Fang Yuan’s advantage would continue to dwindle, especially after Heavenly Court obtains Spectral Soul’s food path inheritance from soul searching, his dragonfish business would definitely face a huge challenge.

Fang Yuan knew this, he needed new sources of income.

The dragonfish business would not last long while guts Gu was exposed already, even though it was a monopoly, because the plans in green ghost desert was halted, Fang Yuan lacked souls to mass produce guts Gu.

Even though Fang Yuan had started his preparation, like the snow monsters and spirit snakes, these were not very profitable businesses.

Especially when Fang Yuan planned to refine time path Immortal Gu.

Time cutting edge needed specific time path Immortal Gu. Fang Yuan thought about it and decided to give it a try. After all, the original time cutting edge had incredible attack power and prospects, Fang Yuan did not want to give up.

“Oh?” At this moment, Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

At the next moment, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals appeared around him, encircling him.

The leader was an old woman, it was the time path rank eight Gu Immortal Xia Cha, she smiled coldly at Fang Yuan: “Scoundrel Fang Yuan, you have finally fallen into my hands.”

“Lord Lu Wei Yin is truly incredible, we found this demon at last!” Shang Hu Zhang laughed loudly.

“Kill, kill this demon and eliminate all future threats!” Tie Qu Zhong said loudly with deep killing intent.

Heavenly Court’s spy Liu Hao had a grim expression, fixed space Immortal Gu was ready to activate in his immortal aperture, this Gu could counter Fixed Immortal Travel and prevent it from being used in a certain area.

Lu Wei Yin was silent, he wore his conical hat that covered his expression entirely.

Fang Yuan laughed instead: “You guys are too slow but you came after all, my planning was not in vain.”

Southern Border’s immortals were originally very excited, but upon hearing this, the atmosphere changed.

Xia Cha squinted as cold light flashed in her eyes: “Hmph, little scoundrel, you still want to deceive us when you are going to die?”

“That’s right, he must be putting up a front! Lady Xia Cha has acted personally to conceal our traces.” Someone shouted.

Fang Yuan smiled: “Of course I did not sense your presence, however, I could sense your deductions. Why do you think I purposely stayed in Southern Border, leaving behind clues and allowing you to make deductions on me?”

At the next moment, there was a loud sound as a formation activated!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1601: Years Flow Execution Formation

The surrounding space became sealed, heaven and earth were fused at once, this was an area of blue space.

The Southern Border immortals’ expressions changed.

“This is a trap!” Someone shouted.

Many people were flustered.

Lu Wei Yin was silent, while Xia Cha’s gaze became increasingly cold, she stared at Fang Yuan fixedly.

Fang Yuan’s smile gradually faded, turning into an expressionless face as he looked at these Southern Border Gu Immortals like he was a mighty deity.

In the past, when Eastern Sea’s wisdom path genius Hua An made deductions on him, Fang Yuan did a reverse deduction and found out about Hua An’s identity. And now, when these Southern Border Gu Immortals chased after Fang Yuan, they were also exposed to him!

Fang Yuan was a wisdom path grandmaster, how could he fall to their schemes so easily? He made himself bait to lure these Gu Immortals into a trap.

“Stay calm! We have strength in numbers, what can just Fang Yuan do?”

“That’s right, we have Lady Xia Cha and Lord Lu Wei Yin, we are not afraid of his immortal battlefield!”

“This immortal battlefield does not seem to be yama battlefield.”

“Of course, his yama battlefield has already been broken by Central Continent, the video is still playing in treasure yellow heaven, how can he still use it?”

Southern Border’s immortals were brilliant figures, they soon calmed down and regained their morale.

At this time, Lu Wei Yin spoke: “This is not an immortal battlefield, it is a super immortal formation.”

“Time path formation.” Xia Cha added.

“Both of you are very perceptive.” Fang Yuan smiled as he nodded.

Among Fang Yuan’s immortal battlefields, the strongest were purple star broken life and yama battlefield. The former was used to kill Qin Bai He and You Chan, while the latter had trapped Feng Jiu Ge and kept him in a desperate situation.

But both were rank seven, they could not trap the rank eight Gu Immortals Xia Cha and Lu Wei Yin. Thus, Fang Yuan chose an immortal formation.

Immortal formations and immortal battlefields were different.

The Gu worms used for immortal battlefields were usually left on the Gu Immortal, and they would create an isolated environment for fighting. Meanwhile, for immortal formations, Gu worms remained in the outside world. Most immortal formations were defensive internally and offensive externally, Fang Yuan’s time path formation had the effect of isolating the formation space, so that he could kill his enemies.

Boom boom boom!

Explosions occurred and continued unceasingly.

“Since this is an immortal formation, we can find the formation cores and destroy them to break this formation!” Some Gu Immortals were impatient, they started to attack and probe this formation.

But after a while, they found something amiss. The killer moves that burst out like fireworks were all extinguished without showing much effect.

Tie Qu Zhong’s expression changed, he shouted to remind them: “Everyone be careful, this formation is already active.”

“It is indeed a time path method to accelerate our killer moves and make them reach the time limit, causing them to fade away themselves.” Liu Hao said in a dark tone.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals' attacks halted, they started to change their methods.

Chai clan's Gu Immortal puffed up his cheeks and blew out orange-red flames, they continued to spread out even when there was nothing to burn.

Qiao clan's Gu Immortal placed his palms together as large pieces of ice started to gather and sweep everywhere.

These methods were continuous and did not have much of a time limit.

Fang Yuan's gaze was cold, he watched these Southern Border Gu Immortals attack without stopping them.

At the next moment, the time path formation shook as the flames, ice, and other attacks all became slow.

The Gu Immortals who were attacking felt their hearts sinking.

"This immortal formation is so responsive, there must be people controlling it."

"Who can it be? It must be Shadow Sect's remaining members!"

The immortals conversed.

As they had expected, Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, Lady White Rabbit, Fairy Miao Yin, and Ying Wu Xie were all in charge of one formation core each, they were manipulating this time path formation to kill the Southern Border immortals.

Earlier, during the battle of Lang Ya, they were not strong enough to participate, but against these Southern Border pursuers, they were adequate.

Southern Border's immortals went against Ying Wu Xie and the rest, while Fang Yuan, Lu Wei Yin, and Xia Cha remained watching. The surrounding Gu Immortals subconsciously left some space for the three of them.

Fang Yuan's attention was on these two rank eight Gu Immortals. He knew clearly that these two would strike with a terrifying power the moment they attacked!

Lu Wei Yin and Xia Cha did not act, but they were starting to investigate Fang Yuan's immortal formation.

Lu Wei Yin was slightly frowning, he cultivated earth path, even though he could relate it to other paths, this time path formation was too intrinsic and brilliant, someone unfamiliar with it like him could not see through it easily.

But Xia Cha was a time path great grandmaster, she could see more things than Lu Wei Yin. However, Fang Yuan's time path formation did not just have time path in it, it was also a formation path product!

Xia Cha's formation path was only at ordinary attainment level.

If Fang Yuan took out a time path killer move, Xia Cha could easily understand it, but the time path formation had this layer of added difficulty, making it an obstacle for Xia Cha.

"Sect leader, we're ready!" At this time, Ying Wu Xie suddenly transmitted to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled as he replied: "Then let them all in."

Saying so, his figure faded in front of Lu Wei Yin’s and Xia Cha’s very eyes.

Howl—!

Right after he vanished, beast howls could be heard everywhere.

Howl! Howl! Howl! Howl! Gah!

At the next moment, a chain of wild beast cries started to resonate with each other.

A huge spiral formed from nothingness as countless year beasts charged out like a rushing tide.

These year beasts were of various forms, including monkey, snake, dragon, and tiger, they were all at least desolate beasts and even quite a few ancient desolate beasts among them.

In the formation space, other than year beasts, there were only the Southern Border immortals.

Wild year beasts did not have high intelligence, they soon directed their savage gazes towards the Southern Border Gu Immortals, they charged ahead.

“Kill them all.” Xia Cha said indifferently.

Lu Wei Yin sighed.

The Southern Border immortals turned around and started to fight these year beasts.

Liu Hao waved his sleeves as countless flying blades shot out, slicing year beasts into pieces wherever they hit.

“It seems that there is a tributary of the River of Time here, Fang Yuan is trying the same method again, he used a similar formation back when he fought Feng Jiu Ge, the resemblance is uncanny!”

Fang Yuan had once used the flood discharge formation to send Feng Jiu Ge into the River of Time, but now, this formation was the combination of three formations, creating years flow execution formation.

Firstly, Shadow Sect had used the dense time path natural dao marks to create the immortal formation. This formation concealed the existence of the tributary of the River of Time, this made the Southern Border immortals unable to sense it.

Secondly was the flood discharge formation, it could connect to the tributary of the River of Time.

And finally, the immemorial year beast fishing formation! Fang Yuan used the rank eight Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water to create this formation, he could summon year beasts from the River of Time to fight against the Southern Border immortals.

Originally, Fang Yuan did not have the ability to do this, but after his time path attainment level reached grandmaster, his final insufficiencies to complete this were eliminated.

Fang Yuan’s formation path and time path were grandmaster, he also had Hei Fan’s true inheritance and Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, with the help of the light of wisdom, he could deduce this super immortal formation and create this huge formation naturally!

“Kill!” Ba clan’s Gu Immortal shouted as his body inflated to a giant size, he stomped as bloody water splattered, he had directly stomped an ancient year beast to death.

Puff! A great fire spread out and set dozens of year beasts on fire, Chai clan’s Gu Immortal was bathed in flames, resembling a divine general.

Tie Qu Zhong was silent, his hands moved rapidly as golden light shot out with immense sharpness, splitting year beasts into halves easily like tofu.

“Demon Fang Yuan, we have to thank you for such a huge amount of wealth. Hahaha!” Shang Hu Zhang laughed as he used his wood path killer move, trapping the surrounding year beasts and keeping them in his immortal aperture.

These desolate level year beasts and ancient year beasts had wild mortal Gu but no Immortal Gu in them, against the Southern Border Gu Immortals, they were disadvantaged and easily slaughtered.

After all, these Southern Border Gu Immortals chasing after Fang Yuan were all powerful experts in their clan, they had at least rank seven cultivation level and were not ordinary at all. This result was to be expected.

Fang Yuan was still cold and calm, he had a faint smile and cold light in his eyes. This situation was within his deductions, the battle had just begun.

Howl...

Year beasts continued to stream into the formation, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals were fighting against them tirelessly, but the year beasts just kept coming!

“Why are there so many?!”

“This demon Fang Yuan is trying to exhaust us!”

“Breaking apart this formation is the way to victory.”

The Southern Border Gu Immortals conversed, they could tell what this battle was about. But they had no way of distracting themselves to do that.

Lu Wei Yin and Xia Cha were the most likely people to break the formation.

Caw caw!

At this time, the spiral suddenly expanded drastically as an arrogant year beast stepped into the battlefield.

A rank eight level immemorial year beast had finally been lured over.

The Southern Border immortals were shocked, Lu Wei Yin wanted to act but Tie Qu Zhong stood up: “Let us deal with it, both lords need to break open this formation, that is the wisest move!”

Tie Qu Zhong and several Southern Border rank seven experts faced off against the immemorial year rooster. They were powerful rank seven Gu Immortals after all, by working together, they could resist the immemorial year rooster for now.

“There is a formation core here.” Suddenly, Xia Cha’s eyes flashed as she pointed her finger, the rank eight killer move activated as profound light shot out, causing a huge sound. The formation shook thrice before it stabilized.

The Southern Border immortals were overjoyed, there was a formation core indeed, Xia Cha destroyed it according to everyone's expectations.

Fang Yuan snickered, muttering: "The formation's true power starts now."

The formation core was destroyed, a second spiral entrance appeared as large numbers of year beasts rushed in.

The immortals' expressions turned to shock.

Roar!

With a loud roar, an immemorial year tiger jumped into the battlefield.

"Let me." Lu Wei Yin moved for the first time, he grabbed with one hand, as a huge yellow hand formed and grasped the immemorial year tiger, preventing it from escaping despite its struggles.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1602: Spring Scissors

The Southern Border immortals had a surge of morale, while Shadow Sect's members had twitching eyelids, their expressions were dark.

Lu Wei Yin was indeed Paradise Earth's inheritor, he managed to subdue a fierce immemorial year tiger in one move. Even though he had no attacking methods, this move was unfathomable and made people feel great admiration towards him.

Hiss hiss hiss...

An immemorial year snake dragged its thick and long body while hissing as it slithered out of the spiral entrance into the battlefield.

A third immemorial year beast!

This time, be it Lu Wei Yin or Xia Cha, their expressions changed.

Because this immemorial year snake had the aura of wild Immortal Gu in it. This immemorial year snake was much more dangerous than the previous two immemorial year beasts.

And most importantly, at this rate, a fourth or fifth immemorial year beast might appear without much doubt.

"What formation is this!" Qiao clan's Gu Immortal shouted, feeling deep pressure.

The other rank seven Gu Immortals all had heavy hearts, they were no longer as relaxed as before.

"I'll do it." At the crucial moment, Lu Wei Yin stood out again, facing the immemorial year snake.

But this time, he was very vigilant, before he probed what the Immortal Gu in the immemorial year snake’s body were, he was not going to act rashly.

“Kill!” Southern Border’s Gu Immortals shouted as they emitted strong killing intent.

The year beasts roared as they bore their fangs and claws.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals whipped up a bloody storm, countless year beasts died, but without destroying the spiral entrances, year beasts continued to pour into the formation unceasingly.

The year beasts kept coming, as the battle continued, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals felt their conditions slipping as some started to get injured.

“There are too many year beasts, this formation must have been heavily modified, the year beast numbers far exceed the ones from Feng Jiu Ge’s battle.” Liu Hao was secretly shocked, he had some deductions from Heavenly Court, but he did not know how to hand them over. After all, he was not a time path or formation path Gu Immortal.

“This damned formation, we must destroy it for a chance of victory!”

“Actually, as long as we destroy a portion of it, we will be able to send out information and get reinforcements from our righteous path allies.”

The Southern Border immortals knew how to deal with the situation, but they lacked methods to do so. This years flow execution formation was deduced by Fang Yuan after his time path attainment level rose, how could it be broken so easily?

“This time path formation is truly profound...” Xia Cha frowned, after finding the first formation core, she could not find the second one.

“The formation is complete and flawless. My formation path attainment is too low, maybe I should go all out and make this formation unable to handle the attack, I can create a flaw myself!” Xia Cha’s killing intent surged.

She was Xia clan’s first supreme elder, a time path great expert, she was an extremely proud expert, she was getting impatient after Fang Yuan’s scheme trapped her here.

Lu Wei Yin could sense Xia Cha’s intention as he quickly urged: “Don’t fall into the demon’s trap. Fang Yuan is very devious, even Heavenly Court cannot capture him. Shadow Sect had obtained Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage before, even though it was destroyed, many of the Immortal Gu were left in their hands. If you attack with your full strength, you might fall into Fang Yuan’s trap, he would use it against you.”

Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage’s signature method was to seal the enemy’s attack and send it back at them.

Lu Wei Yin spoke earnestly and wisely, even Fang Yuan raised his brows. Even though he was not a wisdom path Gu Immortal, his deductions were accurate, this years flow execution formation used almost all of Fang Yuan’s time path Immortal Gu, the Immortal Gu in Hei Fan’s true inheritance were used as the cores while Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage’s Immortal Gu were used the supplement them.

Xia Cha listened to him and breathed in deeply, she snorted coldly and looked towards the immemorial year rooster in the battlefield.

The immemorial year rooster was being attacked by a group of Southern Border immortals. They were all rank seven and had powerful killer moves, but against the immemorial year rooster, their attacks were simply like light scratches.

The immemorial year rooster had rank eight battle strength, it also had a sturdy body and could not be harmed by the Southern Border immortals even if they tried.

But when Xia Cha's gaze turned to the immemorial year rooster, it felt a strong threat as it raised its head, breaking away from the Southern Border immortals and charging at her.

"A mere beast." Xia Cha laughed from anger, aura of many Gu worms burst out of her body, forming into an immortal killer move.

A pair of scissors that was jade green in color and large as an elephant flew towards the immemorial year rooster's neck as it clipped.

The immemorial year rooster felt no pain, it endured the move that felt like spring, as a warm wind was blowing, the sun was bright, the grass and flowers emitted fragrance that spread to everyone's noses.

After a momentary daze, the immemorial year rooster's neck had a deep cut as blood spewed out of it like a fountain.

THe immemorial year rooster shuddered, its vicious nature was triggered as it raised its speed, moving towards Xia Cha.

Xia Cha did not dodge, right before the immemorial year rooster hit her, she vanished like a bursting bubble.

Next, the jade green scissors flew towards the immemorial year rooster's head again, clipping at its neck.

Xia Cha vanished entirely, the immemorial year rooster's attention was lured to the jade green scissors, both sides fought relentlessly.

"This is Xia Cha's spring scissors, it is truly powerful and extraordinary." Fang Yuan who was hidden watched the battle closely, upon seeing this result, the relevant information appeared in his mind.

Xia Cha had a set of killer moves, four in total, spring scissors was just one of them. Undeniably, this was a rank eight offensive killer move, it was extremely sharp and even the immemorial year rooster's sturdy body could not protect it from the sharp scissors.

Fang Yuan was secretly envious.

This was something he needed the most now.

Spectral Soul's true inheritance had rank eight time path killer moves too, but Fang Yuan lacked the necessary rank eight Immortal Gu. Even if he modified them and used rank six or seven Immortal Gu as replacement, the power could not reach rank eight.

Fang Yuan's sole rank eight time path Immortal Gu, Years Flow Like Water, had several killer moves in Hei Fan true inheritance that used it as the core. For example, year beast summoning, unlucky year and others.

Rank eight year beast summoning could summon immemorial year beasts to fight for Fang Yuan.

And unlucky year that used Years Flow Like Water as the core could mimic luck path’s effect using time path. But both were not attacks like spring scissors, it had an immediate impact in battle.

Thus, Fang Yuan could only place his attention on time cutting edge.

Caw caw!

The immemorial year rooster had no wild Immortal Gu, it could not rival Xia Cha’s spring scissors, it was injured all over its body as it cried out in pain.

Xia Cha had only used one move, but she managed to heavily injure an immemorial year beast, it showed how powerful she was.

“As expected of the person holding the greatest authority in Xia clan! Such strength is already on the level of Heavenly Court’s members.” Fang Yuan sighed internally.

Seeing that the immemorial year rooster was about to die in Xia Cha’s hands, the formation activated, the immemorial year rooster vanished on the spot.

“Submit to me.” Behind the scenes, Fang Yuan targeted this weakened immemorial year rooster as he used his overbearing enslavement path method, the immemorial year rooster had no choice but to lower its head, submitting to Fang Yuan.

Thus, Fang Yuan successfully obtained the immemorial year rooster.

He helped the year beasts to fight the Southern Border pursuers while also using the Southern Border pursuers to weaken the year beasts so he could enslave them.

This old method had already been used back in Western Desert when Heavenly Court pursued him.

But repetitive methods were not a problem as long as they worked.

She was about to kill the immemorial year rooster and obtain all of its rank eight immortal materials that were worth a fortune, but to think that it would vanish on the spot.

Many of Southern Border’s Gu Immortals scolded angrily while Xia Cha’s expression turned dark, but she smiled at once: “You finally exposed a flaw, so what if you get a few immemorial year beasts?”

It turned out that Fang Yuan’s formation would not be exposed if he only transported year beasts. But once he moved the immemorial year rooster, the formation would have to be shifted and that would give Xia Cha an opportunity to learn more about it.

As expected, not long after, she found the second formation core and destroyed it.

But the Southern Border immortals’ cheering did not last long, after the formation core was destroyed, it turned into a spiral entrance that transported more year beasts inside.

“How can this be?” The Southern Border immortals were stunned.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1603: Summer Fan

More and more year beasts entered the battlefield, fighting against the Southern Border immortals.

As time passed, the conditions of the Southern Border immortals continued to slip unconsciously.

They were about to puke from killing these year beasts, it was simply never going to end. The killer moves prepared for Fang Yuan and the cooperation between Gu Immortals were all used on these year beasts, they were truly helpless and tired beyond belief.

Years flow execution formation was made of three formations, while the tributary of the River of Time here was huge and had the support of Fang Yuan and the rest, the great power made these immortals feel great pressure.

A moment later, even Lu Wei Yin was panting roughly. Not only was he facing two immemorial year beasts alone, he was also secretly helping the rank seven Gu Immortals.

Whenever one immemorial year beast lost, Fang Yuan would take it away and enslave it. But soon, a new immemorial year beast would be lured into the battlefield.

Lu Wei Yin and Xia Cha faced huge pressure consistently, the battle was intense.

But they still made great progress. During this period of time, Xia Cha found two more formation cores and destroyed them. These two formation cores did not turn into new spiral entrances, the current years flow execution formation could only sustain three spiral entrances, this was its limit.

This intense battle lasted for an entire day.

Fang Yuan gained seven immemorial year beasts, while Xia Cha destroyed nine formation cores.

The entire years flow execution formation was already shaking, it was no longer as sturdy as before.

“The time is now.” Fang Yuan snickered as he finally acted.

Immortal killer move — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

A sinister hand whipped up eerie winds as it flew out of an ancient year beast’s mouth. Tie Qu Zhong was caught off guard, he lost an Immortal Gu to this huge hand.

“My rank seven edge Gu!” He coughed out a mouthful of blood, his killer move failed and the backlash made him heavily injured. However, he felt greater pain from the loss of his rank seven edge Gu, Fang Yuan had stolen it away!

“Hahaha, not bad, not bad at all, it’s edge Gu after all.” Fang Yuan laughed in happiness, this edge Gu was what he needed now, it was one of the core Immortal Gu of the killer move time cutting edge.

“Friend from Tie clan, hold on, I will save you!” Shang Hu Zhang and the rest saw that Tie Qu Zhong was attacked, they quickly forced their way past the year beasts to reinforce him.

Fang Yuan was hidden behind the scenes, laughing to himself coldly.

He did not kill Tie Qu Zhong, he wanted their reinforcement.

“Oh no!”

“This is an ambush!”

“We were tricked!!”

The Southern Border Gu Immortals who came to help were all attacked, they were robbed by the great thief ghost hands that stole multiple Immortal Gu.

“Everyone be careful, some of these year beasts are enslaved by Fang Yuan, they are very dangerous!!” Shang Hu Zhang had no time to mourn over the loss of his Immortal Gu, he was sweating from shock as he quickly shouted.

If this was the start of the battle and the Southern Border immortals had their full battle strength, great thief ghost hand would not be able to get close. But now, they were exhausted and their battle strength fell drastically, their attentiveness had also fallen, Fang Yuan’s great thief ghost hand was finally usable.

Great thief ghost hand was concealed to begin with, while Fang Yuan had schemed and placed many ghost hands inside the ancient year beasts’ mouths.

The Southern Border immortals were all extremely alarmed by this and wary, they started to attack more frequently and stayed guarded, any year beast that tried to get close would be attacked before they reached.

At once, Southern Border’s side gained the advantage again.

Fang Yuan remained calm, no longer taking overt action.

Soon, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals experienced a fall in battle strength again, they had fought for too long, they could not sustain that intense offense for long.

Fang Yuan waited for his chance before acting again.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals were hit again, multiple Immortal Gu were stolen by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan could only use one great thief ghost hand at a time, but inside the years flow execution formation, he could use the formation to summon three at once.

It was unlike an immortal battlefield like purple star broken life where great thief ghost hand would be suppressed by the environment, this formation space had no dao marks, great thief ghost hand would not be strengthened but it could display its usual power at least.

The killer move unlucky year had already been used with years flow execution formation, Fang Yuan’s luck was too dominant, when these Southern Border Gu Immortals had their Immortal Gu stolen, most were the cores of their killer moves, or those that Fang Yuan needed.

After another round of stealing, several Southern Border Gu Immortals faced the backlash of their killer moves and suffered deep injuries.

But regrettably, Lu Wei Yin and Xia Cha had impeccable defenses, they destroyed the two great thief ghost hands targeted at them. They even had the energy to help the other rank seven Gu Immortals, especially Lu Wei Yin, even without an offensive method, he was extremely skilled at defending the other Gu Immortals. If not for him, there would be Gu Immortals dying already.

Fang Yuan did not use lead soul into dream now.

Lead soul into dream had already been known for a while, the Gu Immortals of the five regions were guarded against it. And most importantly, if the move activation failed, Fang Yuan would be dragged into the dream, thus, he had been very careful about using it.

Unless he did it like Ying Wu Xie, using the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique to use this move. In that case, even if he failed, there would not be any problems.

There were no invincible killer moves, they would gradually get countered. Great thief ghost hand was going to face the same problem eventually, unless Fang Yuan modified it as time passed.

But now, great thief ghost hand had been used far less than lead soul into dream, with the help of the killer move unlucky year, the Southern Border immortals in their poor states were susceptible to great thief ghost hand, turning the situation towards Fang Yuan’s favor.

But at this moment, Xia Cha suddenly shouted: “Break!”

The winds around her whipped like a storm, lightning crackled, these illusions condensed into a huge fan that she held in her hands.

Xia Cha waved her fan as Fang Yuan grunted, his seven orifices bled as the formation core that he was at broke apart, exposing his location. He was the one controlling the formation and manipulating three great thief ghost hands, while also enslaving immemorial year beasts and arranging the year beast army, his remaining thoughts were not enough to activate reverse flow protection seal.

Xia Cha waved towards her left, Bai Ning Bing felt a huge threat as she used the killer move Bai Xiang, before shattering from the impact of the killer move.

Xia Cha waved towards her right, Lady White Rabbit could not dodge in time, the formation core shattered as her entire body burst into blood and flesh, she died!

The battle had suddenly changed, the Southern Border immortals did not even have the time to cheer in reaction.

Immortal killer move — Summer Fan!

After three waves, the years flow execution formation was about to break, Fang Yuan and the rest were injured, Xia Cha breathed roughly as the dimmed fan in her hands lit up again.

If she waved it again, Fang Yuan and the rest would lose for sure.

“To think that Xia Cha had already deduced the years flow execution formation so deeply. She could clearly destroy a few more formation cores earlier, but she controlled herself and attacked with a devastating blow at once. If I did not use great thief ghost hand and threatened them, she might not have used this method!” Fang Yuan’s heart shook.

Xia Cha’s performance exceeded the contents of Shadow Sect’s information, her time path attainment level was perhaps not just great grandmaster! It was possible that she had formation path attainment level too, but nobody knew about it. How could the foundation of a rank eight Gu Immortal be so easily exposed?

This years flow execution formation was a true rank eight immortal formation, Fang Yuan used it to trap the Southern Border pursuers, including two rank eights, Lu Wei Yin and Xia Cha.

This was the specialty of formation path.

As long as the formation was set up, it could fight against many enemies, and allow the Gu Immortal to display above average battle strength.

But formation path’s weakness was that once the formation becomes clear to the enemy, they would destroy it and that would cause the Gu Immortal controlling it to face huge backlashes. They might even get heavily injured or die.

Right now, Fang Yuan was facing this crisis. If the formation broke apart, his injuries would be unimaginable. Even if he used reverse flow protection seal now, it would be very awkward. The reflected damage would go to the Gu worms that made the formation, he would basically lose them.

The formation space was already breaking apart, the Southern Border immortals could see the Gu worms surrounding them with their naked eyes.

“Fang Yuan, it is time to die!” Liu Hao shouted in excitement, at this moment, he used fixed space Immortal Gu.

Instantly, Fang Yuan got hit and could not use Fixed Immortal Travel in this area.

“Escape, but even if you run to the River of Time, I can kill you there.” Xia Cha waved her fan as she smiled proudly.

“Escape? Why would I escape?” Even in this desperate situation, Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with an eerie light.

The Southern Border immortals were stunned, at the next moment, the ancient year beasts around them turned stiff as rocks, dream realms swept out like huge gusts of wind from their bodies, quickly covering the area.

The Southern Border immortals were shocked, they tried to dodge.

Even Xia Cha’s eyelids were twitching, she quickly waved her fan.

But this powerful immortal killer move was useless and completely ineffective against the dream realms.

Some tried to escape in a panic, but the formation had not broken apart yet, the immortals were still trapped in this immortal formation.

The dream realms quickly closed up as Xia Cha, Lu Wei Yin, and the rest were trapped, before it extended to the surroundings and started to corrode the years flow execution formation.

Soon, the entire years flow execution formation was submerged by dream realms, it lost its use immediately.

The noisy battlefield turned silent all of a sudden.

Even those year beasts were affected by the dream realms and fell asleep.

“This is the power of dream path!” Fairy Miao Yin gasped in amazement.

“No wonder almost all forces want to explore and research on the dream realm.”

Bai Ning Bing recovered already, in Bai Xiang form, she could regenerate with even a tiny fragment.

It was a pity that Lady White Rabbit had died in this battle.

One skill to dominate the world.

Dream path was a brand new path, it was like theft path, transformation path, and luck path back then, when they were first created, they were nearly unstoppable. During this period of time, existing paths were unlikely to have measures that could counter or resist it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1604: Captives

The mountains were filled with lush forests, the sky was clear and cloudless.

A strange light suddenly made its appearance, it then dimmed and turned into a strange tall man.

This person had a pair of thin white brows that extended towards the outer sides of his face. The pair of eyes under the snowy brows were closed. He was dressed in white clothes that was not stained by even a single speck of dust, the robe as well his skin and hair all released a faint trace of radiance.

This radiance was not glaring, but made him appear divine.

This person was Jun Shen Guang, a rank eight Gu Immortal who cultivated light path, and was a supreme elder of one of the ten great ancient sects in Central Continent. He had recently been recruited into Heavenly Court by Fairy Zi Wei.

“Liu Hao disappeared here.” Jun Shen Guang’s eyes were closed, but he seemed to be able to see the outside world clearly.

Shortly, he found many traces of battle.

“This does not look good for Liu Hao. There was definitely a fierce battle here, unfortunately Liu Hao did not even send any request for reinforcements. Was it an immortal formation or an immortal battlefield?”

Jun Shen Guang frowned with a heavy expression.

Liu Hao was a spy of Heavenly Court put in Southern Border’s forces with the help of Wu clan. He held fixed space Immortal Gu which specially targeted Fang Yuan’s Fixed Immortal Travel.

As for Jun Shen Guang, he was backup arranged by Fairy Zi Wei. If Southern Border’s Gu Immortals fought Fang Yuan and made him escape with heavy injuries, Jun Shen Guang, who specialized in tracking methods, would be Fang Yuan’s fatal assassin.

“The Southern Border team who is chasing after Fang Yuan consists of experts from their respective clans. Most of them are rank seven experts, they can preserve their lives even when facing an immemorial desolate beast.”

Tie clan’s Tie Qu Zhong had impressive battle achievements in the current Southern Border Gu Immortal world, and was known as Great Sir Tie! When he made his debut, he had captured and killed over ten demonic path Gu Immortals. Southern Border’s demonic immortals trembled at his name.

Shang clan’s Shang Hu Zhang cultivated transformation path and wood path, and had methods to make the two paths not conflict with each other, much like Thunder Ghost True Monarch. His methods were complex and comprehensive, he was a peak rank seven expert of Shang clan!

Yang clan’s Yang Ku was one of the peak representative experts of soul path in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world. He had once destroyed the nest of a herd of ancient desolate beasts by himself, and had successfully escaped from the pursuit of an immemorial desolate beast.

These rank seven Gu Immortals could be said to be elites of Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, any one of them was a trump card expert of their force.

“Not to mention this group also has the current Paradise Earth inheritor Lu Wei Yin, as well as Xia clan’s first supreme elder Xia Cha!”

These two did not need to be explained, they were both rank eight Gu Immortals!

Jun Shen Guang heaved a deep sigh.

It was because of this grand team that Jun Shen Guang had been at ease. Even if they fought Fang Yuan, Jun Shen Guang would have enough time to quietly sneak closer.

Jun Shen Guang had been wary of Lu Wei Yin’s and Xia Cha’s methods, being worried they would discover him and create a misunderstanding. So he had been following from far behind without daring to come closer.

“Two rank eights as well as several rank seven experts, they had all done enough preparation and had all kinds of methods to target Fang Yuan, yet they still lost! And this was not just a loss, it was a complete defeat.”

Jun Shen Guang repeatedly shook his head.

“Fang Yuan should have made use of dream realms!” Soon, his gaze landed on the only small dream realm in the battlefield, becoming even more certain of his guess: “Besides using dream realms, Fang Yuan’s other methods, no matter how much incisive they are, cannot create such a result. Hmm?”

Just as Jun Shen Guang was carefully inspecting the battlefield, he suddenly looked towards the south.

There was no one in the boundless clear sky.

But in Jun Shen Guang’s investigative range, an Immortal Gu House was rushing over.

Jun Shen Guang did not need to identify the aura to know that these were Southern Border natives.

The Immortal Gu House was extremely fast, but it would still take a short while to reach here. Jun Shen Guang knew he had to use this time to quickly leave this place.

Because this Immortal Gu House had a great reputation and Southern Border Gu Immortals had many strange investigative killer moves, if they discovered Jun

Shen Guang, there was definitely going to be a misunderstanding.

Not long after Jun Shen Guang disappeared, the Immortal Gu House arrived.

This Immortal Gu House was not glorious or grand, and looked just like a bamboo building from outside.

This bamboo building had two stories, made entirely out of bamboo, there were even bamboo leaves growing on the bamboos, drops of dew were dripping down from the leaves, green as jade.

It was the awe-inspiring rank eight Immortal Gu House — Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building!

Wu Yong had used this Immortal Gu House to retaliate and firmly stabilize Wu clan's position as the number one force.

The bamboo building's entrance opened from which a rank eight Gu Immortal flew out.

This person was a middle aged man with an ordinary appearance, but had a well-built body. His sharp eyebrows were slightly raised, giving him a dark and hazy aura. But his actions were full of a mighty prestige that no one could neglect.

He was Wu Yong, Wu clan's current first supreme elder.

Another person flew out right after Wu Yong.

This person was old but energetic. He had deep, dark eyes and his cheekbones were protruding out. He also emitted rank eight aura. He was Chi clan's first supreme elder Chi Qu You.

With the two rank eight Gu Immortals at the lead, several rank seven Gu Immortals rushed out of Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building. They came from various clans, and every one of them had an anxious expression.

“They disappeared here!” The Ba clan Gu Immortal's expression was dark.

“Quickly investigate what happened here. My clan cannot reach our first supreme elder.” Xia clan's Gu Immortals were extremely anxious.

Thereupon, all kinds of investigative killer moves were thrown out in succession, and in just a while, this place had been completely searched over dozens of times.

Every person, including the two rank eight Gu Immortals, had a steely expression.

“It looks like there was a tributary of the River of Time here.”

“There was also a time path immortal level formation, the group rushed here then fought a very fierce battle!”

“What is up with this dream realm?” Someone saw that remaining small dream realm left behind by Fang Yuan.

Like Jun Shen Guang before, Southern Border immortals' gaze was quickly attracted to this dream realm.

Besides this dream realm, all other traces were removed by Fang Yuan, the remaining ones had no value. The only clue was this dream realm.

“Be careful.” The Southern Border immortals gradually separated and encircled this small dream realm.

“This dream realm is continuously shrinking.” Someone suddenly exclaimed.

Shortly, the other immortals also noticed that the dream realm was indeed shrinking and quite rapidly at that.

After a while, several Gu worms fell out of the shrinking dream realm.

Southern Border Gu Immortals quickly caught and carefully inspected them.

They found that these Gu worms were wild information path mortal Gu. Then they discovered that there were actually some messages left within these information path mortal Gu.

The contents of the messages were simple, but it made the expressions of the Southern Border immortals rapidly change to that of extreme shock!

“Friends of Southern Border, I am notifying you that your clansmen are in my, Fang Yuan’s, hands. If you want to redeem them, please wait for my message.”

“This, this, this...” One person was tongue-tied, his whole body started trembling as he stammered while pointing at the information path mortal Gu in his hand.

“Blatant lies! How can this be possible? Our organized team was actually captured by Fang Yuan? Hmph!” Someone fiercely shook their head, repeatedly denying this: “This must be a huge fraud!!!”

“But none of us can contact any of those clansmen.” Someone retorted.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals fell into dead silence.

They were so still that they looked like human shaped statues from afar.

Wind blew, soft air blew the sleeves of the immortals.

Chi Qu You’s white beard slightly shook in the wind.

Wu Yong’s expression was ashen, he closed his eyes heavily and only after a long time, he opened them slowly.

No matter how unimaginable it was, the truth was right in front of them!

And the truth forced them to accept this cruel fact.

Southern Border’s righteous path brought in many people to organize a troop of experts to specially chase and kill Fang Yuan, but not only were they unable to kill Fang Yuan, they were instead taken captive by Fang Yuan!

Slap!

This was like a fierce slap at these Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals’ faces. The slap stupefied them, while their cheeks started swelling rapidly.

“When we discovered we were unable to contact Xia Cha and the rest, we hurriedly assembled a team and came to reinforce them, altogether it has only been a few hours. Lord Chi, do you think this is because of a time path formation?” Wu Yong suddenly broke the silence, his voice slightly hoarse.

His words were vague, but others understood what Wu Yong's meaning was.

Chi Qu You slowly nodded, saying in a heavy voice: "We have already deduced the strength of Fang Yuan and Shadow Sect members, we even evaluated them carefully. Based on the battle strength of Xia Cha and the rest, it is impossible for them to be taken captive by Fang Yuan in such a short period of time. There is indeed a time path formation here, it is shockingly complex, being at rank eight level, far beyond ordinary."

Chi Qu You was a formation path great grandmaster who was able to set up an immortal formation by using just the dao marks in the natural environment. Fang Yuan had cleaned up the battlefield, but it would not be possible for all the dao marks to be cleaned in such a short period of time, so there were still a large amount of time path dao marks remaining in the battlefield.

Based on the movement and number of these time path dao marks, Chi Qu You was certain a time path formation had been set up in this place.

Wu Yong nodded his head slightly: "That's right. Lu Wei Yin and Xia Cha are both rank eight immortals, it is not easy to restrain these two unless it was a rank nine immortal battlefield, either that or a rank eight level immortal formation. We rushed over, although we appeared quickly, a long period of time might have gone by in this time path formation."

A Shang clan Gu Immortal spoke at this time: "I remember that in treasure yellow heaven, Heavenly Court had exposed a formation of Fang Yuan that can be set up in a tributary of the River of Time to lure a huge amount of year beasts to fight."

Many Gu Immortals' expressions became dark upon hearing these words.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1605: Imprisoning the Hostages

An approximate outline of the truth had manifested in the Southern Border immortals' minds.

"Among these year beasts, there are likely to be immemorial year beasts and not in a small number too. Fang Yuan indeed has the ability to battle the pursuing team with these year beasts. Moreover, this demon Fang Yuan has inherited Shadow Sect, he has countless true inheritances, constructing a time path formation that can trap our clansmen is within his capabilities."

Chi Qu You paused here before continuing with a frown: "It is just that I still don't understand some things. If it was an immortal aperture which had been placed and hidden into one spot, it is normal for others to be unable to sense it. But can a time path formation be hidden so well? Both Xia Cha and Lu Wei Yin were unable to sense it?"

Time path formations were not that good at concealment unlike phantom path, space path, or theft path.

Xia Cha and the rest were trapped in the formation, and had to battle with immemorial year beasts before finally being taken captive because of the dream realms. This could be understood.

However!

The most unusual thing was at the very start. They actually did not discover and even directly rushed into Fang Yuan’s trap.

Even Chi Qu You, a formation path great grandmaster, was bewildered.

It was not that time path formations could not be concealed, it was just extremely difficult to conceal them to this degree, it would be much more difficult than space path, theft path, phantom path or other paths.

Chi Qu You had never heard of such a time path immortal formation that could be concealed to such a degree that even two rank eight Gu Immortals could not sense it.

“The dream realm has dissipated, wait a second, there is a person inside!” Someone exclaimed.

Right at this time, the dream realm’s transformation broke the Southern Border immortals’ thoughts. This small dream realm that was left in the battlefield actually contained a person?

Soon, this person’s appearance was revealed, he was Lu Wei Yin.

He was holding his arms across his chest, his eyes were shut as if he was in a deep sleep, unmoving like a statue.

But following the dream realm’s dissipation, he soon opened his eyes and regained clarity.

“You...” Lu Wei Yin’s expression changed slightly when he saw Wu Yong and the rest, he then looked at his surroundings and blurted out: “Oh no!”

“Lord Lu Wei Yin, please explain what in the world happened to all of you.”

“Right! Did my clan’s Gu Immortals really fall into Fang Yuan’s hands?”

“Wait a second, we cannot be sure of his identity yet.”

The situation instantly became noisy from the discussions between the Southern Border immortals.

“Let’s first verify his identity. Fang Yuan has familiar face and also has methods to quickly escape from dream realms.” Wu Yong said.

Chi Qu You was silent, but his body moved slightly, trapping Lu Wei Yin with Wu Yong in the front and him at the back.

Lu Wei Yin was slightly stunned before nodding: “Go ahead.”

The Southern Border immortals had unique inspection methods. And for safety purposes, these methods were not limited to just one kind, they were complicated and varied.

After a while, the expressions of Wu Yong and the rest softened a little. Lu Wei Yin verified his identity, he was the real deal and not Fang Yuan’s disguise.

Lu Wei Yin then quickly informed them of what he encountered.

After the Southern Border Gu Immortals learned of the information, their expressions became incomparably ashen, once again falling into deathly silence.

Lu Wei Yin shook his head and sighed: “I am ashamed, I don’t have any offensive methods and could only watch the situation happen. If I did not possess special methods that can protect me in dream realms, I might also have fallen into Fang Yuan’s hands.”

“Forget it for now, let’s return first.” Wu Yong took a deep glance at Lu Wei Yin, then his sleeves waved as he entered Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

Not long after the Southern Border Gu Immortals left, a strange light shot towards the area, turning into Heavenly Court’s Jun Shen Guang.

Jun Shen Guang inspected the traces in the battlefield and frowned after a while, mumbling: “This time path formation is extremely mysterious, looking at the traces of the dao marks, there are no dao marks of phantom path, space path, or theft path. It is not a combined immortal formation, and is purely a time path immortal formation, but it actually concealed itself to the extent where Xia Cha and Lu Wei Yin could not sense it.”

Rank eight Gu Immortals had deep foundation.

Xia Cha had plentiful methods as the first supreme elder of the super force Xia clan. And Lu Wei Yin was an inheritor of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. Neither of them actually sensed this grand formation, causing the group of Southern Border Gu Immortals to fall into the trap.

Jun Shen Guang checked several times, confirming there were indeed no other clues, he then turned into a strange light that quickly disappeared.

Sovereign blessed land.

A large castle-like formation that was letting out silver radiance suddenly floated in Mini Green Heaven.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone as well as Shadow Sect immortals were surrounding this immortal formation, paying close attention to the captives inside.

Most of these captives were the Southern Border immortals whom Fang Yuan had ambushed and captured. Shang Hu Zhang, Tie Qu Zhong, Yang Ku, and so on were experts of rank seven, right now, they were firmly locked up, their eyes were closed as they were trapped in dream realms.

The strongest captive was the rank eight Gu Immortal Xia Cha who was given utmost attention by Fang Yuan. An extremely dense dream realm surrounded and fluctuated around her.

Pure will would be worn down when they fell into dream realms, but they would immediately recover if they escaped the dream realm. But the soul was different, even if they were taken out of the dream realm, they would still be trapped in the dream for a certain period of time, it would be as if they were struck by the killer move lead soul into dream.

It was because of this crucial point that Fang Yuan could capture these Southern Border Gu Immortals and move them into his sovereign immortal aperture.

In this present time, the old immortal killer moves had no effect on dream realms. Even Immortal Gu Houses like Bay Pavilion and Heaven Overseeing Tower started disintegrating when they fell into dream realms.

To be in a dream realm for Gu Immortals was to be in dire straits.

But Fang Yuan had an extraordinary method, that was the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique!

Fang Yuan had the immortal killer move pure dream reality seeker transformation which he used to transform the dream realms in his sovereign immortal aperture into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies. He then used these temporary dream path clones to enter the dream realms and take out the Southern Border Gu Immortals, locking them up inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

He then turned the dream realms in the battlefield to Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies and successfully retrieved them.

Finally, he hurriedly cleaned the battlefield, not leaving behind any clues before he left.

So when Jun Shen Guang and Southern Border's immortals arrived, they saw such a scene.

The time path clone's brows slightly furrowed: "Although we are using the dream realm to imprison these Gu Immortals, there is a huge risk. If any one of them wakes up and causes havoc in my sovereign immortal aperture, it will really be a great loss."

To Gu Immortals, the immortal aperture was an important resource area as well as the foundation of their cultivation. The hidden risk in imprisoning these Gu Immortals here was really huge.

"One skill to dominate the world, most Gu Immortals are helpless against dream realms currently. Even rank eight Gu Immortals can meet their calamity in dream realm. But just in case, I need to grab this time to take out these Gu Immortals' Gu worms and resources. Then, I will use soul path methods to separate their souls and bodies, only then will the situation be safe."

Fang Yuan thought of Lu Wei Yin.

This person was trapped in a dream realm, but when a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body went to take him out, it actually lost its way and was unable to approach him!

Being able to show effect in a dream realm, this was clearly a dream path method!

Recalling a past event, Fang Yuan had been ambushed by Lu Wei Yin and had gone through three lifetimes, that was also a dream path method.

Lu Wei Yin was not only an inheritor of Paradise Earth, he was also moving forward with the era, and held at least two dream path methods, almost similar to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan's dream path methods were only unravel dream, lead soul into dream, and switch soul in dream.

It was because of this that Fang Yuan gave up on capturing Lu Wei Yin. Even if he could take him away, Fang Yuan did not dare to take the risk. Who knew if he had some other dream path methods. In case he woke up in the sovereign immortal aperture, that would truly be an example of luring a wolf into one's house, without any way of expelling it!

"Sigh, I really did not expect there to be a day where these high and mighty Gu Immortals would become our prisoners!" Fairy Miao Yin sighed with emotions.

Although she was one of the famous fairies of Southern Border, she was a lone cultivator and had suffered a lot at the hands of Southern Border’s righteous path. She had deep resentment towards these famed experts of Southern Border’s righteous path.

“Such a pity that sister White Rabbit died. Sigh...” Fairy Miao Yin’s expression was truly mournful.

When she joined Shadow Sect, she had become very close with Lady White Rabbit, because she liked the latter’s straightforwardness.

Lady White Rabbit had inherited the Black Tigress true inheritance and would turn into Black Tigress when faced with life-threatening danger, her cultivation would also soar to rank seven. Regretfully, she faced Xia Cha’s direct attack using immortal killer move Summer Fan, she simply did not have time to react and died immediately.

Fang Yuan was powerless to help, Man as Before was only a rank six Immortal Gu and had no hope for success against such an injury.

Even Fang Yuan’s main body was heavily injured at the moment.

It was Bai Ning Bing instead who had no injuries.

At the crucial moment, she turned into Bai Xiang, although it was shattered into pieces, Bai Xiang could resurrect with just a small fragment.

This move had once shaken Southern Border, renowned as the White Terror that had shrouded the whole of Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world. Its profundity was that it could remove all harmful dao marks along with most of the body, then revive with just a tiny fragment.

However, Bai Ning Bing’s current expression did not look good.

She looked at the trapped Southern Border immortals, thinking to herself: “Even if I use Bai Xiang, I will still be trapped in the dream realm with no strength to resist. Strange, Fang Yuan actually did not use such a method to deal with me. He already has methods to resolve the alliance agreement on him, if I were him...”

Bai Ning Bing felt a huge pressure.

After all, she was not a Shadow Sect member, and moreover, she was currently in Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture which was the same as being in someone else’s headquarters.

The stronger Fang Yuan’s strength and methods, the greater the pressure on Bai Ning Bing.

“Alright, Ying Wu Xie, you shall remain here, I have lent you the Gu worms. In the next few days, you will be in charge of guarding this place, if anything abnormal occurs, use a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body to activate lead soul into dream to continue putting these Southern Border Gu Immortals to sleep.”

“Formation Spirit, guard this place properly. If the dream realm moves and endangers the formation, inform me immediately.”

Fang Yuan’s time path clone issued two commands.

“Yes, sect leader.”

“Understood, master.”

Supervision should be sufficient enough with Ying Wu Xie and the Formation Spirit, Fang Yuan was able to put his heart at ease slightly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1606: Spring, Summer, Autumn, Winter

In the sovereign immortal aperture’s time, several days later.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone once again went in front of the immortal formation in Mini Green Heaven.

“Be careful, I am going to start.” The time path clone said solemnly.

“Okay.” The Formation Spirit materialized, nodding its head.

There was a Gu Immortal standing to the side, he was Ying Wu Xie, looking tense at this moment.

A Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body entered the dream realm, not long later, it grabbed Xia Cha’s foot and dragged her out.

The whole process was done cautiously.

Xia Cha was still in a deep sleep, she showed no abnormal movements.

Even though Fang Yuan was using a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique clone, he only dared to drag out half of this rank eight Gu Immortal’s body.

Xia Cha’s upper half was still inside the dream realm, while the lower half was exposed outside the dream realm.

The crucial immortal aperture was near her stomach area, so it was okay to do this.

Next, it was the turn of Fang Yuan’s main body. He had already prepared for a while, activating immortal killer move great thief ghost hand immediately.

The eerie great thief ghost hand slowly flew towards Xia Cha’s immortal aperture. However, before it could touch her, wisps of dao marks shined on her body.

This was a passive time path method, even if Xia Cha was deep in sleep, it could automatically activate.

This defensive method could show no effect in the dream realm. But Fang Yuan’s great thief ghost hand also was useless in dream realms.

Only by dragging Xia Cha outside the dream realm could Fang Yuan steal her Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan was not even the slightest bit surprised at seeing the great thief ghost hand being obstructed.

He had been making attempts since a few days back, and this was not the first time.

This time path defensive move was indeed troublesome, but with his time path attainment level and using the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan had already deduced a way to get rid of it.

Thereupon, Fang Yuan activated another killer move.

The killer move showed remarkable effect, the dao marks light on Xia Cha’s body dimmed immediately, the great thief ghost hand successfully disappeared into her immortal aperture.

“Fortunately, Xia Cha’s defensive method is not as remarkable as the people of Heavenly Court. It is probably a temporary arrangement to deal with my great thief ghost hand, which is why I was able to resolve this move within a short period of time.”

This time path defensive move was only a rank seven move. Fang Yuan used his time path Immortal Gu along with many mortal Gu to form a killer move that could get rid of it.

“In the ambush against Southern Border’s pursuing forces using the time path formation, the important time path Immortal Gu were not damaged, but almost all the mortal Gu as well as multiple rank six time path Immortal Gu were destroyed. This is rather damaging to my plan in the River of Time. Let’s see what I can obtain from Xia Cha’s body.”

Fang Yuan was full of anticipation.

Soon after, his expression suddenly changed as the great thief ghost hand flew over unsteadily.

It was now clenched into a fist, there seemed to be something inside that was struggling to break free.

Fang Yuan was not surprised, but happy to see this.

Ying Wu Xie, who had a rough understanding of great thief ghost hand, blurted out in joy: “Awesome! Stealing a rank eight Immortal Gu at the very first attempt!”

At this time, however, the Formation Spirit spoke: “Master, there seems to be some disturbance in Xia Cha’s soul.”

Fang Yuan’s time path clone immediately turned heavy, quickly controlling the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body to drag Xia Cha back into the dream realm.

The Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body stopped beside Xia Cha and observed for a good while, it only returned after seeing Xia Cha stabilize and continue to be in deep sleep.

Ordinary Gu Immortals would become unstable if only half their body was in dream realm, they would show indications of waking up from the dream, but it would take a long while.

Seemingly because Xia Cha cultivated time path, this time period seemed to have greatly shortened for her. Fang Yuan had sensed this back when he moved her into the sovereign immortal aperture. Back then, Shadow Sect immortals had broken out in cold sweat.

Only after resolving Xia Cha’s situation did Fang Yuan and the rest inspect what

Immortal Gu the great thief ghost hand had stolen.

This Immortal Gu was struggling fiercely, but great thief ghost hand borrowed the power of rank nine killer move ghostly concealment. Previously, it had stolen Soul Beast Token, so stealing rank eight Immortal Gu was completely within its capability.

Adding on Fang Yuan’s plentiful methods, refining it was a done deal with no surprise.

After taking a while, Fang Yuan successfully refined this Gu.

This Gu worm was a milky-white silkworm, the size of an adult’s index finger. It only had the weight of a chicken egg, and was tender to the touch like an infant’s cheeks. There was a small green leaf growing on its head, which looked like a mulberry leaf. Interestingly, when the silkworm curled up its body, the mulberry leaf wrapped around its whole body.

The dense aura of the Gu worm reflected its extraordinary identity at all times — rank eight time path Immortal Gu!

But as for what Immortal Gu it was, Fang Yuan was not certain.

He could only guess: “This is probably the rank eight time path Immortal Gu Spring.”

If spring Gu was used alone, it could bring the season of spring to an area. Ice and snow would melt, warm wind would blow, and new sprouts would grow.

Gu Masters nurture, use, and refine Gu. Using Gu was a deep and profound topic. When one obtains an unknown Immortal Gu, it needed to be constantly probed and tested to deduce its ability, this aspect often had unmeasurable danger.

After Fang Yuan refined this Immortal Gu, he was not in a hurry to examine it, because he had more reliable ways to obtain the correct answer.

This answer was in Xia Cha’s body.

As long as he searched her soul, Fang Yuan would not only obtain this Immortal Gu’s status and its usage, he could even understand the spring scissors killer move which she had used.

Fang Yuan was not in a hurry to search her soul as well, Xia Cha’s soul was protected by her body, and it would not be easy to search her soul with her rank eight cultivation. Fang Yuan had a strict plan, he planned to first extract Xia Cha’s soul, separating it from her body before targeting the soul!

Extracting Xia Cha’s soul was also a troublesome matter and would need Fang Yuan to prepare for some time.

Moreover, before this, Fang Yuan needed to first steal all the Gu worms in Xia Cha’s immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan continued to deal with Xia Cha the same way.

The second time, great thief ghost hand only stole a rank five mortal Gu, a huge contrast with the first time.

“Looks like unlucky year’s effect has already disappeared, the difference between my luck and Xia Cha’s luck has been reduced by a lot.” Fang Yuan quickly understood the reason.

For rank eight Gu Immortals to have their accomplishments, they themselves represented extraordinary luck, and might also have methods to increase their luck.

Fang Yuan relied on his incomplete luck path true inheritance to possess luck that was higher than ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals. But this could not possess a great threat to a person like Feng Jiu Ge, let alone Feng Jin Huang.

After Fang Yuan was clear of the reason, he continued to use unlucky year on Xia Cha while frequently using great thief ghost hand to steal her Immortal Gu.

Over ten days passed by in the sovereign immortal aperture’s time.

Fang Yuan had obtained a large amount of mortal Gu as well as Xia Cha’s four Immortal Gu.

These four Immortal Gu formed a complete set, Spring, Summer, Autumn, and Winter.

Spring Gu was like a white silkworm with a mulberry leaf on its head.

Summer Gu was like a black mosquito the size of a palm, but it had three pairs of thin wings, and shined with multi-colored lights when it flew.

Autumn Gu was like a dark red cricket carved from precious and ancient wood. Its cry was extremely loud and resounding.

Winter Gu was a gray pupa that emitted bursts of cold air.

Spring Gu and summer Gu were rank eight, while autumn Gu and winter Gu were rank seven.

After Fang Yuan stole these four Immortal Gu, he repeatedly used great thief ghost hand but could only steal mortal Gu. Thus, he conjectured Xia Cha likely only had these four Immortal Gu!

This was similar to Hei Fan’s situation. Hei Fan also had few Immortal Gu, back then, Fang Yuan had only obtained rank eight Years Flow Like Water along with rank seven year Gu and after Gu.

Although Xia Cha had two rank eight Immortal Gu, Hei Fan’s years flow like water Gu brought enormous benefits. Possessing it meant becoming the number one giant of year Gu business in the whole world!

All of a sudden, Fang Yuan gained four more Immortal Gu, they were all of time path, two rank eight and two rank seven. This addition greatly filled the huge demand Fang Yuan had in this aspect.

But he still had to soul search Xia Cha to know how to use them.

The moment he obtained these Immortal Gu, the pressure on him greatly dissipated. Without Immortal Gu, even if Xia Cha accidentally woke up, she would be like a tiger without claws, with extremely low strength.

The primary task was to take out the Immortal Gu of all the Gu Immortal captives.

Second was to extract their souls, separating their soul and body. Besides the soul, the body could also be controlled by wills. Several wills left casually in the immortal aperture could temporarily substitute the soul to control the body.

Only then would Fang Yuan make a move on their immortal apertures.

However, Fang Yuan had to slow down the task of stealing Immortal Gu.

His immortal essence was running out!

It was already showing signs of depletion before, and in recent times, he had set up an immortal formation, fought a huge battle, then set up another immortal formation after returning to the sovereign immortal aperture, while also repeatedly using pure dream reality seeker transformation, great thief ghost hand, and other killer moves.

Fang Yuan’s immortal essence reserves had already fallen to a dangerous level.

The year Gu business was doing dismally in treasure yellow heaven, even his dragonfish business was unable to support his enormous expenditure. Dang Hun Mountain was still recovering.

However, this did not go beyond Fang Yuan’s control.

He sneered: “Hehe, it is time for those Southern Border forces to bleed.”

It was definitely going to be a fun time ahead.

Not only was he going to extort immortal essence stones, Fang Yuan was going to extort large amounts of resources to raise and feed his newly obtained Immortal Gu.

Without cultivation resources, how could he get stronger?

Get stronger my ass!

There was a good saying — Kill and rob to earn wealth. Killing, extorting, pillaging and burning were the hallmarks of the demonic path!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1607: One Million Immortal Essence Stones

Southern Border.

Yan Shou Mountain.

Xia clan’s headquarters, Jian Wen blessed land.

Inside the blessed land, there were many mortal Gu Houses forming into a magnificent scene of an unbroken range of palace halls.

In the central hall, Xia Fei Kuai was moving on the ground in a hurry.

He was a rank seven Gu Immortal who cultivated light path, he had extraordinary battle strength, only slightly weaker than Wu clan’s Wu Yu Bo. Because of cultivating a certain immortal killer move, his nature became impatient.

Fang Yuan had once fought him and set an agreement of five years in the disguise of Wu Yi Hai. Now that Fang Yuan’s identity was revealed and had rank eight battle strength, Xia Fei Kuai had naturally thrown this five years agreement to the back of his mind.

“Where did this news come from?” Xia Fei Kuai quickly moved while asking.

Beside him was a featherman maid with rank five cultivation.

Xia clan raised a large group of featherman slaves, feathermen were the highest in quantity in Jian Wen blessed land.

This featherman maid was not an ordinary slave, she was one of the stewardesses of this hall and knew a lot of information.

Xia Fei Kuai was aware he would know everything when he entered the central hall, but he could not wait, impatiently asking this featherman maid.

The featherman maid quickly replied: “It came half a day ago from treasure yellow heaven. That demon Fang Yuan took the initiative to contact us. He sent an information path Gu worm to my purple spiritual light stall in treasure yellow heaven. The Gu worm had a ransom note.”

Purple spiritual light was a rank seven immortal material, it was not gathered from white heaven, but originated from deep underground ores.

This was Xia clan’s number one source of revenue. Xia clan possessed the most amount of purple spiritual stone lodes in the five regions, so they firmly held dominance over this business.

Although any Gu Immortals could casually change their identities for transactions in treasure yellow heaven to prevent others from discovering them, it was more profitable for a force like Xia clan to maintain their identity, establishing their reputation and creating their signature products.

So Xia clan’s stall had an explicit identity and Fang Yuan found it easily.

“Hmph! His guts are greater than heaven, to think he would actually dare to extort my grand Xia clan!” Xia Fei Kuai was extremely furious.

The featherman maid did not dare to say anything, obsequiously accompanying him to the hall entrance, before stopping. She did not have the qualifications to enter.

The hall entrance was already open, the main seat was empty; it was usually occupied by Xia Cha or her will.

And in the top seat in the left row was Xia clan’s second supreme elder Xia Zhao.

He was slightly fat, he had a steady temperament, he cultivated earth path, and was currently Xia clan’s main backbone.

Sitting opposite Xia Zhao, in the top seat in the right row was Xia clan’s third supreme elder, Xia Chen Yuan. He was similarly an earth path Gu Immortal.

Besides them, the other seats were already occupied by the main bodies or wills of Xia Liu Pei, Xia Qing Cang, Xia Zhuo Mo, Xia Fan and other Gu Immortals, only Xia Fei Kuai was missing.

“No need to stand on ceremony, take your seat.” Xia Zhao said in a deep voice.

Xia Fei Kuai restrained his temperament, nodding his head before quietly taking his seat.

An information path mortal Gu was handed to Xia Fei Kuai from the left seat.

Xia Zhao looked at everyone: “Since everyone is here, let’s begin the discussion.”

Xia Fei Kuai sent his divine sense into the Gu worm. This information path mortal Gu was the ransom note sent by Fang Yuan.

There were only a few words in the ransom note, but it was concise and comprehensive.

However, there was an image attached at the end that showed the scene of Xia Cha trapped in sovereign immortal aperture.

Xia Fei Kuai’s anger flared up when he finished browsing the information, almost crushing this information path mortal Gu in anger.

“This scoundrel Fang Yuan is a heinous criminal, he should be damned to death! We have to kill him!” Xia Fei Kuai shouted with a fierce expression.

Xia clan’s other Gu Immortals did not respond, they looked ashen and had unsightly expressions as they maintained their silence.

The hall was filled with a heavy and stifling atmosphere.

Besides anger, these people felt incredulous.

The grand Xia clan, a super force, actually had a day where they were blackmailed by one demonic path Gu Immortal!

What shocked them the most was Xia Cha, the grand first supreme elder, the authoritative figure of Xia clan and a rank eight existence, she not only failed to capture Fang Yuan, but was instead taken captive alive by him!!

Yes, Fang Yuan indeed had outstanding battle strength that could rival rank eight.

The Xia clan Gu Immortals had viewed the video where he had pummeled Thunder Ghost True Monarch. But so what?

Defeating a rank eight Gu Immortal and capturing a rank eight were two different concepts. The difficulty level was as massive as the gap between heaven and earth.

Xia clan immortals had never expected such a result!

Even now, most of them still felt dazed as if they were dreaming, the truth was really unimaginable.

Fang Yuan, a rank seven Gu Immortal, had captured a rank eight along with a dozen rank seven Gu Immortal experts!

Almost all these rank seven Gu Immortals were the trump card battle strengths of their respective clans.

Each of them possessed unique methods, and in the absence of rank eight, they were major factors that could influence the whole of Southern Border’s situation and dominate an area.

Southern Border’s righteous path had been resolute in capturing Fang Yuan, so they had established such a powerful team.

But now, these people were all taken captive by Fang Yuan.

Compared to other clans, Xia clan’s situation was the most pressing. Because what they had lost was not a rank seven Gu Immortal, but their clan’s only rank eight!

This was no longer just a matter of a decrease in their prestige, but something that directly shook their foundation.

In this world where the strong were respected, a person’s safety could affect the whole situation. Xia Cha played an irreplaceable role in Xia clan.

“I did not convene you all to make you stare anxiously. This is a critical juncture for the clan, we are in an extremely dangerous situation. At this time, we need to unite and get through this difficulty.” Xia Zhao spoke while looking at the silent immortals.

When the situation had occurred, every Xia clan Gu Immortal was stupefied, Xia Zhao was not an exception.

Over these days, as the second supreme elder, he had been facing the greatest pressure.

When the ransom note finally came, his heart instead eased slightly.

“You have all seen that mortal Gu, Fang Yuan is demanding one million immortal essence stones. What are your thoughts on this?” Xia Zhao said.

After a while of silence, Xia clan’s third supreme elder intentionally coughed before saying: “One million immortal essence stones is not a small amount, but it is not big either, our Xia clan can afford it. But what I am concerned about is this message only mentioned his demand, and did not mention anything about handing over Lady Xia Cha!”

The other immortals nodded at this.

Xia Fei Kuai’s brows rose up in agitation, blurting out: “How about we inform the other clans? We are being extorted, they are probably facing the same situation as well.”

Xia Liu Pei glanced at Xia Fei Kuai with a sneer, not speaking.

Xia Fei Kuai was furious, glaring at him: “What do you want to say? Just say it.”

Xia Liu Pei was a rank seven Gu Immortal who cultivated wisdom path, moreover he had a powerful wisdom path attainment, and was a top expert at deductions in the present Southern Border.

He sneered: “How can we rely on outsiders? Right now, they are eager to see us lose our first supreme elder. Since you realize that demon Fang Yuan is not extorting just us, then have you heard the other clans’ responses? Have you seen them trying to contact us?”

Xia Fei Kuai was silent.

Xia clan had suddenly lost its rank eight pillar, which immediately made it seem like it occupied an excessive number of territories and resources.

This situation was much more dangerous than that of Wu clan before.

Back then, Wu clan still had Wu Yong, a rank eight Gu Immortal, but under repeated schemes of Shadow Sect, he had been trapped in a difficult situation, besieged from all sides, almost unable to make a turnaround.

Southern Border was filled with many individual forces, there were always internal conflicts and contradictions between righteous path forces. Wu clan had occupied the throne of the number one force for a long time, but still did not have the ability to lead the whole situation.

So as far as Xia clan was concerned, they absolutely could not lose Xia Cha!

When Fang Yuan's will once again went up to the purple spiritual light stall, he received one million immortal essence stones from Xia clan.

“We need to talk.” Xia Zhao personally received Fang Yuan, his divine sense fluctuating constantly.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, not refusing: “Alright. But I am in a hurry right now. Whatever you want to say, use an information path Gu worm to send it to this stall.”

“Please wait a second, listen to me...” Xia Zhao wanted to press Fang Yuan to stay, but Fang Yuan's will directly left. Xia Zhao was furious but also helpless.

He could only look as Fang Yuan's will left, his heart feeling extremely heavy.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1608: The Trick to Extortion

It was obvious what Fang Yuan was busy with.

Having the Southern Border immortals in his hands, Fang Yuan had firm hold of the initiative and occupied huge dominance.

He had such invaluable hostages in hand, he could extort however he wanted.

But Fang Yuan was cautious and did not overdo it. He only extorted three clans at first.

Xia clan was undeniably the main target. First supreme elder Xia Cha was Xia clan's only rank eight Gu Immortal, she was Xia clan's foundational pillar, an extremely important person. Xia clan simply could not lose her, or else the whole clan's force would shrink by seventy to eighty percent!

Yi clan was the second.

Because the Yi clan Gu Immortal Fang Yuan had taken captive was Yi Yang.

This space path Gu Immortal was the strongest rank seven expert of Yi clan, and everyone was optimistic of him having the qualifications to enter rank eight. More importantly, he was blood related to Yi clan's first supreme elder, and was a successor of the clan being nurtured by the first supreme elder.

In Fang Yuan’s first life of five hundred years, during the five regions chaotic war, there were endless internal conflicts in Southern Border. Yi Yang was schemed against and fell into Shang clan’s hands, Yi clan’s first supreme elder had not hesitated to pay an enormous price to bring back Yi Yang.

So Fang Yuan was rather expectant of Yi clan’s ransom.

Finally, the third was Chi clan.

Fang Yuan’s Chi clan Gu Immortal captive was Chi clan’s second supreme elder, which was a very important position! Adding on that Chi Qu You had transacted with Fang Yuan previously, obtaining dream path research gains, it was natural for Chi clan to compromise.

Fang Yuan was deeply aware of the human mindset, his first extortion targets was not Wu clan, who hated him deeply, nor Tie clan, who deeply detested the demonic path.

As long as these three clans gave in, it would be much easier for Fang Yuan to extort other Southern Border righteous path forces.

After all, with these precedents, the righteous path would not be so tough in their stance anymore.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Green Heaven, at the immortal formation.

Immortal killer move — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

The ghost hand entered Yi Yang’s immortal aperture and returned with a rank seven Immortal Gu.

Ying Wu Xie and the Formation Spirit looked on quietly from the side with impassive expressions.

They were no longer surprised by this sight.

Because in this period of time, Fang Yuan had already looted a huge amount of Immortal Gu! Moreover, he had even looted Xia Cha’s two rank eight Immortal Gu, Spring and Summer. With such sensational gains, the remaining loot looked mild in comparison.

Fang Yuan had constructed another immortal formation to refine these Immortal Gu.

This immortal formation used wisdom refinement formation as the foundation along with many wisdom path Immortal Gu to form a completely new version.

Wisdom refinement formation was constructed by using the light of wisdom along with Woman’s Heart and Unravel Mystery to refine other Immortal Gu. If there was the other person’s will, the effect would become even more outstanding. Fang Yuan had used Mo Yao’s fake will to help him refine the Immortal Gu he had obtained from Bo Qing’s immortal zombie body, including change soul Immortal Gu, which had been of the utmost significance in the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain.

At present, Fang Yuan still used the light of wisdom as the core, the brand new wisdom refinement formation was even more powerful.

Wisdom Gu was a rank nine Gu, so it was truly easy to suppress those rank seven

Immortal Gu.

Moreover, with the large improvement in Fang Yuan’s formation path and wisdom path methods, the wisdom refinement formation’s effect became even more remarkable.

After a while, Fang Yuan finished refining the newly stolen Immortal Gu.

This was a space path Immortal Gu that looked like a blue jade sphere with a pair of snow-white wings.

Fang Yuan recognized this Gu, it was called Space Travel and had a remarkable movement ability. Shadow Sect’s true inheritances had relevant records, for instance, this Gu was initially captured from the body of an immemorial desolate beast level pegasus.

Fang Yuan stored this space travel Gu.

He did not cultivate space path and had ordinary attainment in it, moreover, he did not have many space path dao marks.

However, he had too many true inheritances, countless immortal killer moves and Immortal Gu recipes, he did not lack methods to make use of Immortal Gu.

By now, he had already stolen most of the Immortal Gu of the Southern Border Gu Immortal captives.

As for the issue of the shortage of immortal essence, it was already solved.

Xia clan’s one million immortal essence stones were like a waterfall descending from a heavenly river and pouring on this parched land.

One million immortal essence stones meant one million beads of green grape immortal essence, which was equivalent to ten thousand beads of red date immortal essence. This amount had already far surpassed Fang Yuan’s highest record of red date immortal essence.

Fang Yuan continued to use great thief ghost hand but he was not able to take out any more Immortal Gu from Yi Yang’s body.

Thereupon, he threw this person back into dream realm, and dragged out another person. It was Chi clan’s second supreme elder, an earth path rank seven Gu Immortal.

Fang Yuan made a move on him without hesitation.

He was going to take out Immortal Gu of all these Southern Border Gu Immortals and store them in his pockets.

As for the people, he would have to release some of them.

Extortion or blackmailing could be seen as a form of transaction, where as long as the seller was powerful enough, the buyer could only remain helpless. And in a transaction, buyers and sellers needed to pay attention to reputation, if he did not release some hostages, why would Southern Border’s righteous path believe Fang Yuan, how could he continue his extortion plan to gain huge benefits?

Fang Yuan intended to first release Chi clan’s second supreme elder and Yi clan’s Yi Yang.

He had done transactions with Chi clan previously after all, and he also intended to support Chi clan in the future, to resist Heavenly Court. Naturally, he was definitely going to extort these two clans to the limit.

Despite it being difficult to raise a Gu Immortal, a hostage’s price was fixed and limited.

These righteous path forces could stay in power until now, they were not fools.

If Fang Yuan’s demands were too much and exceeded the value of these Gu Immortals, or the acceptable price that these clansmen were willing to pay, they would not do this unreasonable transaction.

All in all, extortion was a skill.

Several days later, another batch of immortal essence stones was obtained.

That was Yi clan’s first ransom, one million and two hundred thousand immortal essence stones.

Comparing value, Yi Yang could not compare to Xia Cha, but Yi clan had a lot of wealth, at least richer than Xia clan. So they had much more immortal essence stones reserved in their hands.

A super force’s immortal essence stones reserve was more or less around one million immortal essence stones.

So Fang Yuan first extorted immortal essence stones, not only because he himself was in shortage of it, the more important reason was that other forces could totally take that sum out. Although it was not without a level of difficulty, the difficulty was small.

First make them give in, then continue to extort them more harshly, making them bleed little by little. Fang Yuan was well versed in the ways of extortion.

“It is just that although I captured Southern Border immortals, I did not receive any response from Heavenly Court. What did Heavenly Court prepare in the River of Time?”

Fang Yuan could not help but think.

He constructed years flow execution formation mainly to deal with the Southern Border immortals, but it was also to lure Heavenly Court into making a move.

If Heavenly Court had laid an ambush and saw the commotion there, they could have followed the tributary of the River of Time to pincer-attack Fang Yuan.

But from the start to finish, Fang Yuan did not see Heavenly Court’s ambush.

Fang Yuan’s scheme was fruitless in this regard, leaving him with even more wariness and suspicion.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1609: Three Plans

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Red Heaven.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone immediately attracted the attention of countless year beasts the moment he appeared.

Howl! Roar! Growl!

Countless year beasts roared and snarled as they pounced upon Fang Yuan. Large numbers of ancient desolate beasts shoved the desolate level year beasts to the side as they looked at Fang Yuan with a thirsty expression.

But a moment later, an immemorial year rooster flew over gallantly and spiritedly; the desolate level year beasts and ancient desolate beasts in its path quickly and chaotically moved aside.

The immemorial year rooster arrived before Fang Yuan’s time path clone and lowered its head, displaying a tamed look.

Fang Yuan smiled as he stroked the immemorial year rooster’s bright red crown, then he waved his sleeve, scattering countless mortal year Gu.

The immemorial year rooster squawked as it opened its beak wide, creating a powerful attractive force that absorbed most of the year Gu into its stomach. Only a few year Gu scattered in the surroundings which was immediately fought over by the surrounding ancient year beasts.

The immemorial year rooster had a great meal but was still not satisfied, it looked at Fang Yuan’s time path clone with shining eyes.

Fang Yuan repeatedly waved his sleeve, countless year Gu were scattered like the crushed pebbles on a beach, forming a rain of year Gu.

This time, there was a portion for everyone, the year beasts immediately fell into frenzied joy.

After a good while, every year beast including the immemorial year rooster had their fill. Their impatience because of hunger had disappeared, resuming a lethargic state as they lay down on white clouds to rest.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone gazed around, nodded and flew away.

In Mini Red Heaven, there were seven year beast communities like this one, this was already the third community Fang Yuan fed.

There were already a lot of year beasts being raised in sovereign immortal aperture, and not long ago, Fang Yuan had used years flow execution formation to ruthlessly plot against Southern Border righteous path, besides capturing the group of Southern Border immortals, his greatest battle spoils were the year beasts he had subdued in the battle.

These year beasts were of high quality, they were at least of desolate level year, there was a large amount of ancient year beasts, as well as seven immemorial year beasts.

Originally, Fang Yuan’s soul foundation was only enough for him to enslave one or two immemorial year beasts. But now, his soul cultivation had made rapid breakthroughs, although it was decreasing recently, the remaining soul foundation was enough to enslave seven immemorial year beasts without a problem.

A noteworthy thing was there were three immemorial year roosters among these seven immemorial year beasts. The other four immemorial year beasts were tiger, dragon, rabbit, and horse.

In the River of Time, at every set interval of time, a certain kind of immemorial year beast would be more common than others. This recent period of time was clearly a prosperous time for immemorial year roosters.

However, even though Fang Yuan had seven immemorial year beasts, when comparing individual strength, they were all weaker than his immemorial year monkey. Unfortunately, that immemorial year monkey had already died in battle.

Of course, if all the seven immemorial year beasts combined their strength, they were much fiercer than one immemorial year monkey.

There was a clear difference between the strength of different immemorial year beasts. This was like the difference between rank eight Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan fed these year beasts while thinking: “The food expenditure has soared by dozens of times with the addition of these year beasts! If not for the immortal essence stones extorted this time, I might not have been able to feed them.”

The higher the rank of the year beasts, the larger their appetite. And the food of year beasts was year Gu.

Fang Yuan used rank eight Immortal Gu Years Flow Like Water to refine countless mortal year Gu, barely filling the bellies of these year beasts.

And activating years flow like water Immortal Gu spent Fang Yuan’s red date immortal essence.

Fang Yuan’s immortal essence expenditure in feeding year beasts was not small even before. Now, with the addition of so many year beasts and seven immemorial year beasts, feeding them had already taken the largest share of Fang Yuan’s expenditures.

“Currently, Dang Hun Mountain has already been restored by eighty percent, guts Gu’s production is no longer a terrible sight, it has become just passable.”

“When Dang Hun Mountain is completely restored, the year beasts will become the new burden.”

Fang Yuan had to feed year beasts every set interval of time. Refining year Gu through Years Flow Like Water was already the most economical method, but it still amounted to a huge expenditure.

Moreover, Fang Yuan needed to raise these year beasts to deal with the future battle in the River of Time, so he had to resolve the issue of feeding them.

Actually this issue was not only regarding the year beasts, but also eagle groups.

Fang Yuan had previously enslaved the upper extreme heavenly eagle, purchasing a large amount of eagle beasts. The feeding of these eagle beasts was also a burden.

If he wanted to make them self-sufficient and truly integrate them into sovereign immortal aperture’s world, he would have to spend a huge amount of energy and capital to build a complete food-chain.

Big fish eats small fish, and small fish eats shrimps.

Creating a proper food chain was also a form of deep research and understanding of the Heavenly Dao by the Gu Immortal.

But compared to eagle groups, year beast’s scale was much larger so its feeding issue needed to be prioritized.

And because of the year beasts’ characteristics, building a complete food chain for them was much easier.

Fang Yuan, who had Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, Lang Ya’s true inheritance, and so on, had methods to solve it.

Currently, he could select from three plans.

The first plan was to construct a year essence pool.

This was a resource point, and could also be seen as a mini River of Time. Its effect was to imitate the environment of the River of Time, providing a place for year beasts to survive, reside, and procreate.

The year essence pool’s size could be large or small, and was classified into rank six, rank seven, rank eight, and rank nine levels.

The advantage of this plan was it saved space, at the same time, as the year beasts lived here, it would produce a certain amount of year Gu. When managed for a long time, it could even produce other wild time path Gu worms, even giving birth to day Gu, month Gu and so on, finally forming a micro River of Time.

Its disadvantage was the cost was absurdly high. Just the creation of a rank six year essence pool was an enormous sum. In terms of immortal essence stones, it was in the millions!

And a rank seven year essence pool was even more exaggerated, requiring many rare immortal materials which had no supply in the market. Rank six level year essence pool could still be constructed if one was wealthy enough, but the rank seven year essence pool was not something that could be solved with just immortal essence stones.

As for Fang Yuan, he needed a rank eight year essence pool to contain the seven immemorial year beasts!

The second plan was Golden Age Platform.

This was a rather special rank seven time path Immortal Gu House, because it was fixed in place and could not move freely like most of the other Immortal Gu Houses. Once it was constructed, Golden Age Platform would transform into a bright moon that would float to the sky of the blessed land, constantly rising and setting.

Golden Age Platform could store a large amount of year beasts and even put them into deep sleep. Like this, their food requirement would fall sharply.

This plan’s advantage was that Golden Age Platform could extract year beasts’ strength for its use, and did not require Fang Yuan to expend his immortal essence. In peaceful times, this meant Fang Yuan was fully using year beasts and not just freely feeding them.

This plan’s disadvantages were very obvious.

First, constructing this rank seven Immortal Gu House required a lot of time path Immortal Gu. But Fang Yuan needed these time path Immortal Gu to protect himself.

Secondly, Golden Age Platform’s position had to be fixed so it could automatically operate on its own inside the immortal aperture. So even if it was constructed, it would be of no help to Fang Yuan when fighting in River of Time. It itself was also not proficient in offensive methods.

Thirdly, this Immortal Gu House spent the year beasts’ strength, if it wantonly extracted their strength, the year beasts could die and their time path dao marks would also be destroyed, making their corpses be of no value.

Finally, when the year beasts are awakened, they would need far more food than normal to fill their appetite.

The third plan was Twelve Zodiac battle formation.

Twelve Zodiac battle formation was constructed by using twelve different species of immemorial year beasts as cores.

This formation was specialized in offense, completely different from Golden Age Platform. And although it was a large formation, it could be moved.

Because its cores were twelve immemorial year beasts, during inactive times, these immemorial year beasts could be sealed, becoming like statues, unmoving and not requiring food. But during battle, the seal would be released, they would form into the battle formation and attack the enemy.

Evidently, this large formation that used immemorial year beasts as cores was not a present age Gu formation, but an ancient battle formation. Like Green City Rampage or Heavenly Giant Solor, the difference was that these two used Gu Immortals as the cores, while this Twelve Zodiac battle formation used immemorial year beasts as the cores.

This plan’s advantage was that it truly saved feeding expenditure.

But the disadvantage was it only used immemorial year beasts. Fang Yuan would be unable to construct Twelve Zodiac battle formation if he used ancient year beasts or desolate level year beasts.

However, to do this, Fang Yuan needed to search for even more immemorial year beasts, moreover these immemorial year beasts had to be of different species.

This gathering task not only looked at strength but also luck, its difficulty was high and also took a very long time.

Fang Yuan considered it deeply before deciding to choose the first plan.

Although the first plan needed the highest investment, it brought the largest benefits as well.

“With my capital, if I want to construct a rank eight level year essence pool, my finance will probably fall into a dangerous state before I can construct even thirty percent of it.”

Fang Yuan was actually very affluent, but most of his resources like Reverse Flow River could not be sold. Moreover, he still needed to deal with external pressure from forces like Heavenly Court. He needed to look at all aspects, and could not just spend all his assets on a year essence pool, without regard for anything else.

“But now is the best time for me to construct a year essence pool.”

“Xia clan, you want to negotiate with me? First, send three portions of spiral dawn light.” Fang Yuan threw an information path mortal Gu to Xia clan’s stall.

Soon, Xia clan’s response came: “Fang Yuan, my clan does produce spiral dawn light, but the production ground is inside first supreme elder’s immortal aperture. There is none left in the clan’s storage.”

Fang Yuan was slightly dazed, this reply was beyond his expectations, but he sent a reply with a cold smile: “How could I not know this? Send three portions, no, send ten portions of spiral dawn light and I will take it as your clan’s sincerity, then we can talk. Or else...”

“But spiral dawn light are extremely rare, there is no supply even in treasure yellow heaven. Three portions is okay, but ten, where would we find that much?”

“I don’t care. That is your issue, not mine.” Fang Yuan left a cruel reply.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1610: Incomplete Form of Gu as Before

Shang clan.

“One hundred and fifty kilograms of eight-parts jade, I want it within three days at the latest.” Fang Yuan demanded strongly.

Shang clan’s immortal looked quite unsightly: “Eight-parts jade is a rank eight immortal material, treasure yellow heaven usually has transactions of only up to five kilograms. It is difficult for my clan to bring out so many at once.”

“Hehehe, I believe in your great clan’s strength. Who does not know that Shang clan is the richest force of Southern Border?” Fang Yuan sneered, no matter how Shang clan negotiated, the conditions did not change.

Ba clan.

“Where is my seven treasures water?” Fang Yuan urged.

Ba clan’s immortal quickly responded: “We have already gathered the seven treasures water, we can trade the goods for person at the same time.”

“Hahaha.” Fang Yuan laughed heartily, “Good, good! To express my sincerity, I might as well hand over a batch first.”

“This, what is this?” Ba clan’s Gu Immortal was shocked and furious.

“You don’t recognize it? This is the arm of your clan’s Gu Immortal.” Fang Yuan’s voice was slow and unperturbed.

“Fang Yuan! What is the meaning of this?”

“Hmph! You want to take back your clan’s Gu Immortal with just some seven treasures water? It won’t be that easy, right? Or are you taking me for a fool? If you don’t satisfy me, I will simply kill him. Oh, that’s right, I will be sure to record the process of killing him and display it in treasure yellow heaven. Or maybe I can sell this person to Wu clan? Hehehe, hahahaha!” Fang Yuan laughed loudly.

Ba clan’s Gu Immortal almost grinded his teeth into pieces. After a good while, Ba clan Gu Immortal squeezed out his words through clenched teeth: “Fang Yuan... we can talk this through.”

“Sure we can talk, that is not a problem. First, hand over the seven treasures water to display your Ba clan’s sincerity. With all due respect, your clan wants to overthrow Wu clan to become the number one force of Southern Border, how could you be so petty? Wu clan is not hesitating to pay any price for an external supreme elder. Meanwhile, your Ba clan’s Gu Immortal is your own bloodline descendant, can you watch him die? What does your first supreme elder think? Can you truly be so cold and unfeeling?”

Fang Yuan’s each word was piercing, causing the Ba clan Gu Immortal to be pale and furious, but also helpless.

Luo clan clan, Hou clan, Chai clan... these were Fang Yuan’s second wave of extortion targets. As for Tie clan, Wu clan and others, he did not make a move on them yet.

Fang Yuan mentioned all kinds of demands to these clans, he naturally encountered resistance during the extortion, but Fang Yuan had hostages in his hands, and with his location being extremely secretive, unable to be deduced, he firmly held the initiative.

Southern Border’s righteous path was helpless, and could only bitterly satisfy Fang Yuan’s demands.

Among them, Xia clan’s sincerity was the highest, those ten portions of spiral dawn light were the first to end up in Fang Yuan’s hands.

Despite Xia clan’s Gu Immortal shouting about how difficult it had been to gather these spiral dawn light, Fang Yuan knew how robust these super forces’ foundation was. Satisfying his demands were within their capabilities, it was just that the difficulty was a little high.

Spiral dawn light, eight-parts jade, seven treasures water....

These immortal materials were either rank eight materials or rank seven but with high quantity, all these materials were successively sent to Fang Yuan.

Soon, Fang Yuan had most of the required immortal materials to construct year essence pool.

This efficiency was truly shocking!

If Fang Yuan had to gather these himself, he would need to spend at least a dozen years under the situation that he was lucky.

Fang Yuan’s foundation was deep, but in terms of accumulating immortal materials, he was completely unable to compare to these super forces that had thousands and even tens of thousands of years of history.

Naturally, the immortal materials Fang Yuan requested were not just for constructing year essence pool.

Many of the immortal materials were in the preparation for Immortal Gu refinement.

At this moment, the time path clone arrived in front of an immortal formation.

“This is the last time, after this plunder, none of these Southern Border Gu

Immortals will have any Immortal Gu left.”

Southern Border’s righteous path had thirteen super clans; Wu clan, Ba clan, Shang clan, Tie clan, Hou clan, Luo clan, Qiao clan, Chai clan, Xia clan, Yi clan, Chi clan, Yang clan, and Yao clan.

Fang Yuan could battle rank eight, if they could kill Fang Yuan, every clan would profit. So each clan had mobilized one of their Gu Immortal experts with at least rank seven cultivation and peak battle strength. Xia clan’s first supreme elder had personally set to the task of leading these experts to prevent any internal conflicts.

Each of these Gu Immortal experts had at least two to three Immortal Gu, some had four or five Immortal Gu like Xia Cha. On average, each had three.

Fang Yuan had not finished looting but the total amount of Immortal Gu he had accumulated from them already broke the count of one hundred!

Immortal killer move — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

Looking at a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body drag out Yang Ku from the dream realm, Fang Yuan immediately got to work.

A rank seven Immortal Gu was looted, Fang Yuan was immediately exulted, it was soul search Immortal Gu!

This soul search Immortal Gu was a rank seven Gu which would be helpful to Fang Yuan in searching their souls.

“But this Gu can only be considered icing on the cake.”

“Even without soul search Immortal Gu, I can use other soul path Immortal Gu to create a soul search immortal killer move. Just that, this process will be much more convenient with this Immortal Gu.”

“It would be better if I had gotten devour soul Immortal Gu instead of this Soul Search.”

Shadow Sect had once possessed devour soul Immortal Gu, if Fang Yuan had it at this moment, it would be much easier for him to extract these Southern Border Gu Immortals’ souls out of their body. His current methods required him to go through a lot of trouble for this.

Yang Ku had three soul path Immortal Gu altogether, there was no devour soul Gu among the next two Gu, regretfully.

The final person was Wu clan’s Liu Hao.

“This person had a method to restrain my Fixed Immortal Travel, let me take a good look at you.” Fang Yuan repeatedly activated his killer move, finally stealing an Immortal Gu after a while.

“Eh!” Fang Yuan was stunned.

This Immortal Gu directly self-destructed the moment it was taken out of the immortal aperture.

“What is this situation?” Cold light flickered within Fang Yuan’s eyes.

He continued to steal, but he could only take out remnant parts of Gu worms. Be it Immortal Gu or mortal Gu, they had self-detonated following the first Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan carefully distinguished these Gu worms' parts, and soon discovered this was a clever refinement path method. As long as one of these Gu worms left the immortal aperture, every Gu would self-detonate simultaneously.

"There is actually such a method? This refinement path method is nothing ordinary, it is absolutely at the level of Long Hair Ancestor. Looks like this Gu Immortal being recruited by Wu clan is not simple, he is very likely to be a person of Heavenly Court!"

Fang Yuan immediately deduced the truth.

There were three great experts of refinement path in the Gu Immortal history, they were all supreme grandmasters. Besides Long Hair Ancestor from the Medieval Antiquity Era, there were Old Eccentric Tian Nan from Remote Antiquity Era, and Old Immortal Kong Jue from Olden Antiquity Era. And these two were humans, most of their true inheritances were collected by Heavenly Court. Fang Yuan had once disguised as Wu Yi Hai and infiltrated Wu clan, so he was extremely clear about Wu clan's foundation. Wu clan did not have such a refinement path method!

Fang Yuan's expression was slightly dark.

This method was beyond his expectation, catching him off-guard and causing him slight losses.

At the same time, he also realized: "I had intended to use years flow execution formation to lure and expose Heavenly Court's arrangement in the River of Time. But I had not expected Heavenly Court to infiltrate into Southern Border's team to hunt me down."

"Dangerous... based on Fairy Zi Wei's methods, she would not have just sent this person, she definitely arranged more backup plans. Fortunately, I left quickly back then and did not waste time on Lu Wei Yin."

"Wu clan is Southern Border's number one righteous path force, but it was actually so easily infiltrated by Heavenly Court? This is not so simple, mostly likely, Wu Yong brought in Heavenly Court to deal with me. Hmph, he is indeed a formidable character, unafraid of this matter being exposed and violating a taboo of Southern Border's Gu Immortal world."

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan's thoughts turned as he once again casted his gaze at the Immortal Gu carcasses in his hand.

"Gu as Before..." He softly mumbled.

Gu as Before was a concept he had envisioned before. He had thought about it because of Man as Before and Landscape as Before.

When a Gu worm was injured or destroyed, using Gu as Before could restore them to their previous state.

However, although this concept sounded good, the deeper one researched into it, the more they realized how impractical it was.

Mortal Gu had dao marks, Immortal Gu were the fragments of the Great Dao, to restore them, Gu as Before's might and level had to far surpass the target. This alone signified that Gu as Before would not be as practical as Man as Before and Landscape as Before. Not to mention the tremendous difficulty in using it.

But now, Fang Yuan could almost see a trace of Gu as Before in these Gu worm carcasses.

“These Gu worms are clearly of space path, but refinement path dao marks have been added, which when activated, would destroy them.”

Since refinement path was specialized in refining Gu, it was naturally also proficient in destroying Gu worms.

“Maybe these Gu worm carcasses have more value to me than the stolen Immortal Gu.” A sharp light flashed past Fang Yuan’s eyes.

In the ambush before, Liu Hao had used fixed space Immortal Gu to restrain Fang Yuan’s Fixed Immortal Travel.

Heavenly Court adopted such a contingency measure not just because they did not want fixed space Immortal Gu to land in Fang Yuan’s hand. In fact, there were many methods other than fixed space Immortal Gu to restrain Fixed Immortal Travel.

“On the contrary, I might be able to find clues from these Gu worm carcasses to refine Gu as before Immortal Gu!”

Fang Yuan carefully stored these Gu worm carcasses.

In this case, there was a lot to learn and research upon.

Naturally, the better method was to directly refer to Heavenly Court’s methods and inheritance.

But this possibility was practically impossible for Fang Yuan.

“I have absorbed the Long Hair true meaning, my refinement path attainment has reached quasi-supreme grandmaster. But in the history of refinement path, there are still two other monumental figures equal to Long Hair Ancestor, Old Eccentric Tian Nan and Old Immortal Kong Jue. Most of these two’s inheritances have definitely been pocketed by Heavenly Court.” Fang Yuan sighed inwardly.

He could clearly see the opportunity to refine Gu as Before, but Heavenly Court was like a heavenly moat obstructing Fang Yuan’s path.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1611: Zi Wei’s Unease

Heavenly Court.

Countless halls shined with splendor.

Inside a hall, as Fairy Zi Wei slowly opened her eyes, a purple light flashed past her beautiful eyes.

She frowned slightly, her tone was free and natural as she mumbled: “Fixed space Immortal Gu has self-detonated.”

After Fairy Zi Wei grasped Star Constellation Chessboard, she had become one of the top three wisdom path great experts of the present Gu Immortal world. This time, she sent Liu Hao and Jun Shen Guang to deal with Fang Yuan, how could she not have prepared for Fang Yuan's great thief ghost hand?

Becoming wiser through learning from mistakes, because Fang Yuan had stolen Fixed Immortal Travel from Feng Jiu Ge right under Fairy Zi Wei's eyes, she was not going to commit the same mistake twice.

“Yuan Qiong Du.” Fairy Zi Wei contacted this newly recruited rank eight Gu Immortal.

“Lady Zi Wei.” Yuan Qiong Du immediately responded.

“Go refine fixed space Gu.” Fairy Zi Wei instructed lightly.

Yuan Qiong Du's expression immediately changed. It was him who had added the refinement path dao marks on fixed space Gu and the others, thus he knew the approximate situation.

Fairy Zi Wei's words no doubt meant that Liu Hao's situation was likely to be bad.

Liu Hao and Yuan Qiong Du came from the same ancient sect, Yuan Qiong Du hesitated a moment before asking: “Lady Zi Wei, Liu Hao...”

“He is most likely taken captive by Fang Yuan, but I would rather he was killed by Fang Yuan.” Fairy Zi Wei's tone was indifferent, astonishingly similar to Fang Yuan's cruel extortion of Southern Border righteous path.

Yuan Qiong Du was stunned, before quickly realizing.

Fairy Zi Wei's words did not mean she hated Liu Hao and wanted Liu Hao to die, instead if Liu Hao was taken captive, it meant that other Southern Border immortals were also taken captive by Fang Yuan.

But if Fang Yuan killed Liu Hao, the other Southern Border immortals would likely not be an exception. With this, there would be a deep-seated hatred between Fang Yuan and the Southern Border righteous path, there would be no possibility for them to compromise or cooperate. Southern Border had suffered disastrous losses in the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain as well as the battle of dream realm, if their elite team was killed by Fang Yuan, their foundation would be truly damaged. Their overall strength would fall to the bottom among the five regions.

When the five regions chaotic war starts and regional walls disappear, Central Continent would be able to attack Southern Border first.

Southern Border could be devoured by Central Continent easily, and with two regions, Central Continent's originally high strength would immediately surpass the remaining three regions, gaining a huge dominance. The situation would also change, they would not be in an awkward situation of being besieged by four regions!

Compared to this grand situation, how significant was the sacrifice of a mere rank seven Gu Immortal like Liu Hao?

After realizing this, Yuan Qiong Du's shock vanished as he left: “I will go refine fixed space Gu.”

Yuan Qiong Du had already made sufficient preparations, he was a rank eight Gu Immortal and with the help of Heavenly Court's grand refinement path formation, it was practically a certain matter for him to refine fixed space Immortal Gu and the other Gu.

However, there was still uneasiness in Fairy Zi Wei’s heart.

For wisdom path Gu Immortals, such a feeling was like a premonition.

Wisdom path had three elements, thoughts, wills, and emotions.

To other Gu Immortals, the rise, change, and disappearance of emotions may be their own joy, anger, sorrow, or pleasure. But it had a different meaning for wisdom path Gu Immortals.

“Did I miscalculate? What is it that is making me feel this uneasy?” Fairy Zi Wei’s mind was heavy, as she began to deduce while holding Star Constellation Chessboard.

After a good while, she slowly opened her eyes, revealing a trace of doubt.

The result of the deduction was the same as before.

“Fang Yuan could successfully ambush them because of the crucial starting step that let him lure Southern Border immortals into his time path formation.”

“This is not his own accomplishment, it is a time path formation Shadow Sect had set up long ago near the tributary of the River of Time using natural dao marks.”

Fang Yuan had formation path grandmaster attainment, he had to use immortal materials to set up immortal formations.

Only when one reaches formation path great grandmaster level, could they set up an immortal formation using just the natural dao marks in the outside world.

Shadow Sect naturally did not lack such experts, and had long ago set up a time path formation near the tributary of the River of Time, while heavily concealing this tributary of the River of Time.

Although such an immortal formation created from natural dao marks did not need to use Immortal Gu, it had its disadvantages.

The main disadvantage was that according to the composition and arrangement of the natural dao marks and other specific circumstances, the time path formations that could be set up were different.

When Gu Immortals set up this kind of immortal formation, not only did they need to have their own ideas, but also think according to the local condition. Time path dao marks of another area would not be able to set up such extremely concealed time path formation.

Thus, Fang Yuan could not replicate the terrifying success of ambushing the Southern Border immortals.

Fairy Zi Wei had paid a huge price along with crucial clues from Jun Shen Guang to make this deduction.

“Without the immortal formation’s confinement, even if Fang Yuan detonated Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, the dream realm’s expansion speed is not fast, the Gu Immortals could easily escape.”

“Were he to use an immortal battlefield, unless it is a dream path battlefield, battlefields of other paths would be the first to be corroded by the dream realm and crumble apart.”

“So Fang Yuan’s dream realm battle tactic does not possess much threat.”

“So why am I feeling uneasy? Could it be Spectral Soul?”

Thinking of this, Fairy Zi Wei left the hall and moved towards a certain area of Heavenly Court.

Spectral Soul was here, Dang Hun Mountain’s self-detonation had given him the opportunity to use the soul path dao marks to recover and resist.

But Heavenly Court had never lacked methods, when Fairy Zi Wei reached this place, a grand immortal formation had already been constructed and was operating while producing a buzzing noise.

This enormous immortal formation was like a huge mill that constantly destroyed the soul path dao marks here.

“Spectral Soul, you are still thinking of putting up a resistance? A pity for you, the soul path dao marks beside you are going to be completely ground down in another three days. Your action is only a brief dying struggle.” Fairy Zi Wei entered the formation and sneered at Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul was like a stone, giving no response.

Purple light erupted in Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes and the Star Constellation Chessboard in her hands also let out a dense blue light that constantly scanned the whole immortal formation as well as Spectral Soul. After inspecting a few times, she was sure there was nothing odd about Spectral Soul and that he had no concealed methods to resist.

“There is no issue with Spectral Soul, looks like my unease did not come from here. Then where did it come from? Wait, could it be...”

Fairy Zi Wei’s expression suddenly changed when she left the immortal formation, as she thought of a person.

She immediately set off with no hesitation, personally moving out of Heavenly Court and arriving in a certain nameless valley in Central Continent.

The valley was lush and green, and had a waterfall. Duke Long had built a cavern beside the waterfall, wholeheartedly teaching and guarding Feng Jin Huang.

Feng Jin Huang!

If someone could make Fairy Zi Wei feel unease, it was probably this Great Dream seed.

The waterfall crashed down, roaring and creating dense fog.

A dense dream realm could be seen before which young Feng Jin Huang was sitting with closed-eyes on a giant rock. Her skin was white as snow, her demeanor graceful and dignified.

A Gu Immortal whose aura was extremely constrained, with a pair of spiral dragon horns on his forehead and a well-built body, was quietly standing to the side like a giant pillar, observing Feng Jin Huang.

“Senior Duke Long.” Fairy Zi Wei quietly approached and bowed in greeting.

Duke Long nodded, raising his hand slightly, signaling Fairy Zi Wei to maintain silence.

At the next moment, Feng Jin Huang suddenly opened her eyes, letting out a soft sound like the cry of a baby phoenix. She then lightly pointed her index finger at the dream realm and activated a killer move.

Whoosh.

A soft sound resonated, white light shot into the dream realm.

The dream realm suddenly froze, then with a shattering noise, like the breaking of a mirror, it completely crumbled apart, scattering everywhere.

“I have succeeded in learning break dream!” Feng Jin Huang raised her arms, exclaiming in joy.

Duke Long nodded with a satisfied expression.

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes involuntarily revealed her shock, Feng Jin Huang’s progress in dream path was far beyond her expectation.

Any killer moves of old paths, even if they were of rank nine levels, or even if they were rank nine Immortal Gu Houses, were like stones thrown into a sea in a dream realm, unable to do anything to the dream realm.

But who could have thought Feng Jin Huang’s mortal killer move, break dream, could actually be effective against the dream realm.

“Huang Er, you have trained for almost a day now, go take a rest.” Duke Long looked at Feng Jin Huang amiably, there was no trace of his terrifying might when he had rampaged through the battlefield and captured Spectral Soul.

“Yes, master.” Feng Jin Huang knew Fairy Zi Wei and Duke Long had things to discuss, so she obediently left.

After Feng Jin Huang had gone far, and when only he and Fairy Zi Wei remained, Duke Long spoke: “What is the reason for you to come here?”

“It is just that I have been feeling uneasy, but cannot find the reason.” Fairy Zi Wei said, truthfully.

Duke Long immediately frowned: “With your wisdom path attainment, a feeling of unease is a huge matter, but you cannot find its cause?”

Fairy Zi Wei nodded: “I have deduced Fang Yuan and also checked Spectral Soul, but still could not let go of this unease, so I came here to take a look.”

Duke Long smiled: “Since you’re here, what do you think of this place?”

Fairy Zi Wei also smiled: “I was too anxious, with senior Duke Long’s teachings, Feng Jin Huang’s progress is really beyond imagination.”

Duke Long shook his head: “I don’t have any foundation in dream path, Huang Er was able to have such accomplishments all because of her own aptitude and intelligence. I am only looking after her, to prevent any accidents in her cultivation.”

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes brightened, praising sincerely: “This child is truly the hope for Heavenly Court to unite the five regions.”

Duke Long nodded his head as light flickered in his eyes: “I know where your unease is coming from.”

“Oh? Please clear up my doubts, Lord Duke Long.”

“My wisdom path attainment is immeasurably lower than yours, but there are only a few possible sources of unease after all. Since it is not Fang Yuan, Spectral

Soul, or Feng Jin Huang, then that only leaves Red Lotus.”

Red Lotus Demon Venerable!

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes immediately brightened: “You are talking about Red Lotus’ true inheritance?”

Three Demon Venerables attacked Heavenly Court, but only Red Lotus Demon Venerable almost destroyed fate Immortal Gu. Even outsiders could realize the unresigned nature of Red Lotus, possibly, through the true inheritance left behind by Red Lotus Demon Venerable, he wanted the inheritor to completely destroy fate Immortal Gu!

“How is the progress in searching for Red Lotus’ true inheritance?” Duke Long asked.

Fairy Zi Wei said: “Present and Past Pavilion has been in the River of Time all along, as long as Fang Yuan enters, we will definitely know. Eternal Yacht is almost completed and will enter the River of Time after a few days to search for Red Lotus true inheritance together with Present and Past Pavilion. I still plan to construct Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and Shark Flow Lever. With these four time path Immortal Gu Houses, no matter how much Fang Yuan has grown, he will completely fail in front of this impassable barrier!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1612: Successfully Constructing the Year Essence Pool

A dreamlike wisp of dawn rays, bright and fresh, was constantly rotating above the palm of Fang Yuan’s time path clone.

In Fang Yuan’s surroundings, Ying Wu Xie and the rest were already prepared and ready.

“Let’s start.” Fang Yuan said. Auras of Gu worms suddenly rose from his body as his immortal essence expended rapidly, the rank eight immortal material spiral dawn light suddenly exploded, covering the surrounding hundred li.

Almost at the same time, Ying Wu Xie and the rest set to work, confining this spiral dawn light and not letting it spread farther.

Spiral dawn light was extremely stretchable, it expanded over the surroundings. Although its luster was no longer as transparent as a water wave, Fang Yuan could still feel the slight wind from the spirals at the central area.

Fang Yuan saw that the Shadow Sect immortals had already stabilized the situation, and took out the second portion of spiral dawn light, using it similarly.

Lumps of spiral dawn light erupted, dying the surrounding hundred li with illusory shadows that constantly flickered.

At this time, Fang Yuan took out seven treasures water.

This water was a plain grey color. All kinds of solid bumps that were like gold, silver, pearls, gems, jades, and agates formed naturally in the water. But the moment these solid bumps were extracted from the seven treasures water, they would turn into seven treasures water and splash down.

The time path clone lifted a portion of seven treasures water above his head.

The time path clone could only act as support in this next step, Fang Yuan’s main body had to take the primary role. The reason being that Fang Yuan’s time path clone was only rank six, thus unable to bear this responsibility.

The divine sense of Fang Yuan’s main body had already covered this place, and could immediately sense if there was anything wrong.

At this moment, Fang Yuan activated his methods, immortal essence expending rapidly.

A white light landed on the seven treasures water, the seven treasures water quickly started burbling and boiling, with countless bubbles rising up to the surface.

The solid bumps in the seven treasures water were like snow encountering hot sun, they melted rapidly at a visible rate.

The seven treasures water’s volume continued to expand, and soon, all those solid bumps disappeared.

After purifying the seven treasures water, another strange light shot into the seven treasures water.

The seven treasures water quickly turned into an ice block; cold air spread out from it, rapidly engulfing Fang Yuan’s time path clone before spreading to the surroundings, covering one hundred li precisely.

When Ying Wu Xie and the rest saw this, they quickly threw the eight-parts jade in their hands into the dense fog.

Everything progressed smoothly...

Several days later in sovereign immortal aperture, a rumbling sound resonated within this area as an enormous one hundred li long pool formed completely.

“This is my rank eight year essence pool!”

Because of sufficient preparation and the advantage of his luck, Fang Yuan successfully constructed this year essence pool on his first try.

Fang Yuan carefully examined it repeatedly and confirmed there were no flaws before he activated time path methods to draw in a tributary of the River of Time.

In every immortal aperture world, as long as time passes inside, there would definitely be a tributary of the River of Time.

The tributary of the River of Time was usually invisible, it could only be targeted using special time path methods.

Bubble bubble...

The tributary of the River of Time in sovereign immortal aperture was much wider and rapid than in ordinary immortal apertures.

The tributary poured into year essence pool smoothly and flowed out from the other end of the year essence pool.

However, the tributary of the River of Time that flowed out was thin as a brook, no longer torrential as before.

The water surface of the year essence pool started to rise slowly.

In the following period of time, the whole sovereign immortal aperture’s time flow would continue to slow down. The tributary of the River of Time that flowed out would be restored to its previous state when the year essence pool was completely filled; the flow of time in sovereign immortal aperture would also be restored subsequently.

The year essence pool was successfully constructed, Fang Yuan’s time path clone and Shadow Sect’s immortals were exhausted. They had been pouring all their energy and concentration into this task, without any rest for several days. They had also expended a lot of immortal essence.

Fang Yuan’s main body’s divine sense was still staying to observe it while the others left to rest.

Fang Yuan’s time path methods gradually lost their effects, the year essence pool and the tributary of the River of Time also became increasingly dimmer till they completely disappeared after a while, deeply concealed inside sovereign immortal aperture.

The year essence pool was rather special, it had integrated with the tributary of the River of Time thus it was also concealed.

It was not just a resource point, but also had the effect of a dam.

For instance, draining the year essence pool’s water or accumulating water in it could cause a change in the sovereign immortal aperture’s rate of time.

Although Fang Yuan had immortal killer moves like days pass like years and so on, these moves expended immortal essence and every time they were used, they would have no more influence on the tributary of the River of Time for a set interval of time.

But with the year essence pool, this became much easier.

Many Gu Immortals, even if they did not cultivate time path, would construct this kind of essence pool in their immortal aperture to change their immortal aperture’s rate of time.

Naturally, they mainly constructed rank six or rank seven year essence pools, and not a rank eight year essence pool like Fang Yuan.

The cost of a rank eight year essence pool was enormous, requiring huge investments, and also required formation path methods.

It was essentially an immortal Gu formation.

It was fortunate that Fang Yuan’s formation path attainment level was at grandmaster, and could use the dao marks in the immortal materials to set up immortal formations.

Year beasts began to howl in joy.

The water level of the year essence pool was still low, only a small number of desolate level year beasts sensed it and dived in.

They were born in the River of Time, growing and also dying in it. The most suitable environment for them was also the River of Time. And the year essence pool imitated the environment of the River of Time, it was no wonder these year beasts were joyous.

Following the continuous pouring of the tributary of the River of Time, the year essence pool was slowly expanding.

Be it spiral dawn light, seven treasures water, or eight-parts jade, they all had excellent stretchability and were also merged into one, so they would not self-disintegrate.

When the year essence pool gets completely filled, this rank eight year essence pool would expand to a terrifying ten thousand li length.

What was even more amazing was that it was concealed deeply and was like an illusion, not occupying any space in the sovereign immortal aperture.

The year essence pool was like an independent small world where Fang Yuan could build a food chain, it had no relation to the sovereign immortal aperture.

What made Fang Yuan most satisfied was that the year essence pool could restrain year beasts, making them move around only in the essence pool and not escape outside.

With this characteristic, Fang Yuan could accommodate even more year beasts, and those year beasts could be completely wild, like wild immemorial year beasts.

Fang Yuan could only control seven immemorial year beasts currently, if any of these immemorial year beasts were killed in battles, Fang Yuan was unable to replenish them.

But if the year essence pool had other wild immemorial year beasts, the moment Fang Yuan lost one or two immemorial year beasts, he could temporarily enslave the wild immemorial year beasts to replenish his troops.

This would be extremely helpful in his plan in the River of Time!

After this period of recuperation, Fang Yuan’s main body’s injuries were completely healed.

“It is time to separate these Gu Immortals’ souls and bodies, then soul search them one by one.”

At the same time, Fang Yuan did not stop extorting Southern Border’s righteous path forces.

However, he met with strong resistance this time.

Southern Border’s righteous path forces had united to resist Fang Yuan.

The year essence pool’s cost was too high, Fang Yuan’s previous extortions had already made these forces bleed. Fang Yuan kept on asking Southern Border’s righteous path to show their sincerity, while he himself did not show any sincerity. Southern Border’s righteous path secretly ruminated over this, deciding to unite and jointly put pressure on Fang Yuan to force him to give in.

Several days later.

“If you don’t show your sincerity, our Southern Border’s righteous path will not give you any more resources!” A Shang clan Gu Immortal was chosen to represent the whole of Southern Border’s righteous path to negotiate with Fang Yuan.

His words quickly shifted: “All our clans of Southern Border have already shown our sincerity, now it is your turn to show us yours. Only then can we discuss further, otherwise, even if you kill those Gu Immortals, we won’t compromise!”

Fang Yuan sneered: “What sincerity do you want from me? Release a portion of the hostages?”

The Shang clan Gu Immortal quickly responded: “We won’t make excessive demands of asking for the hostages immediately, we can move step by step, for instance, Immortal Gu. You don’t need many of the Immortal Gu, you can first return these Immortal Gu to us, and as the price, we will give you the cultivation resources you need.”

Southern Border’s righteous path were not idiots. If they asked Fang Yuan to release a portion of the hostages, then the righteous path clans who got back their immortals might not put much effort in the next negotiations. So they would rather start bargaining with Fang Yuan starting from Immortal Gu, then immortal aperture resources, Gu Immortal physical bodies, finally the Gu Immortals’ souls.

Like this, Southern Border’s righteous path could unite, advancing and retreating together.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1613: Threatening the Whole of Southern Border’s Righteous Path

“You want to get back Immortal Gu? Impossible!” Fang Yuan laughed coldly.

Immortal Gu were unique!

They were the only one of their kind in the world. Fang Yuan possessing them meant others could not have them, thus their value was inestimable.

Even though Fang Yuan had once sold Immortal Gu to purchase a huge amount of eagle beasts, he was in fatal danger at that time and had no choice but to do so.

Fang Yuan possessed countless killer moves and Immortal Gu recipes, he could make use of almost all Immortal Gu.

The problem was the feeding burden.

Fang Yuan had basically solved this issue for his Immortal Gu. But now, there was an addition of a large number of Immortal Gu, however, the feeding resources for these Immortal Gu were almost all in the bodies of their respective Gu Immortals.

These Gu Immortal experts were trump cards of their respective clans and had deep foundation, how could they not be able to feed their own Gu worms? It was because they could provide the food for their Immortal Gu by themselves that their battle strength was stable, they enjoyed unlimited glory.

Currently, Fang Yuan indeed could not use a lot of the Immortal Gu, but what about the future?

The future was uncertain!

In the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Fang Yuan could turn around the situation not only because of the guidance of Star Constellation heaven's will, the crucial key was that he possessed change soul Immortal Gu.

Without this unassuming rank seven Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan would have already died. Shadow Sect would have succeeded in defying heaven.

The difference in having the Immortal Gu and not having it was as different as heaven and earth.

Who could say if, in the future, one of these Immortal Gu might be able to help Fang Yuan turn around the situation like change soul Immortal Gu.

Not to mention that if Fang Yuan sold these Immortal Gu, someone might make an unimaginable comeback like Fang Yuan back in the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain!

Fang Yuan refused the proposal of transacting Immortal Gu without hesitation.

Shang clan's Gu Immortal was not angry: "Then how about exchanging Gu?"

This new proposal interested Fang Yuan.

Southern Border's righteous path wanted to recover their losses as much as possible. Everyone knew Fang Yuan's viciousness and that he could very easily kill the hostages, so they were prepared for the worst.

Those Immortal Gu on the captives had enormous value to the respective clans. This was because they knew the usage methods, a lot of the Immortal Gu had even been taken away from the clan's storage, the clan also had respective killer moves. Many killer moves were even their trump card methods which would be difficult to use without the corresponding Immortal Gu.

As such, Southern Border's righteous path forces were willing to give up some Immortal Gu in their storage, as these Immortal Gu did not have too high of a value to them. It was more worthwhile for them to use these Immortal Gu to exchange for the Immortal Gu in Fang Yuan's hands.

Fang Yuan pondered for a moment, this deal was profitable to both sides, and was also very beneficial to him.

The Immortal Gu that the Southern Border clans could not use and were of less value to them could be of great importance to Fang Yuan.

"You have my interest. But what Gu worms can your clans bring out?" Fang Yuan asked.

Shang clan's Gu Immortal had already prepared for this, immediately sending a list to Fang Yuan through treasure yellow heaven.

Who knew that after Fang Yuan received the list, he said: "I need to look at this list properly. I also have lists here that I will send to your respective clans."

"Fang Yuan, I have already said it, unless you display your sincerity, our Southern Border righteous path won't be extorted by you any more!" The Shang clan Gu Immortal's tone immediately changed.

Fang Yuan smiled: "Your Southern Border righteous path wants to exchange

Immortal Gu, sure. But my condition is that you will have to first send the immortal materials in my list to me. Only then will you have the qualifications to make an exchange.”

“Fang Yuan, don’t go too overboard. If you act like this, we won’t continue our discussion.”

“Hehehe.” Fang Yuan laughed, “The Shang clan Gu Immortal that I currently have captured is Shang Hu Zhang, right? What do you think will happen if I sell him to Fu Sheng Xian?”

Shang clan Gu Immortal was immediately stumped.

Fu Sheng Xian was a rank seven demonic path Gu Immortal of Southern Border who had a deep-seated hatred with Shang Hu Zhang. More than once, he had proclaimed that were Shang Hu Zhang to end up in his hands, he was going to flay the latter’s skin and tear the tendons before crushing his bones into ash.

“I believe Fu Sheng Xian will definitely be very interested in buying Shang Hu Zhang.” Fang Yuan said in a leisurely tone.

“Fang Yuan, you dare!” Shang clan’s Gu Immortal erupted in anger.

“Haha, what would I not dare to do?” Fang Yuan retorted: “I even dared to offend Heavenly Court, why would I fear your mere Shang clan?”

“You, You!” Shang clan’s Gu Immortal could not restrain his anger at Fang Yuan’s response.

Fang Yuan continued: “Don’t overestimate yourself, you are only someone who was chosen to negotiate with me. Did you really think you could represent the whole of Southern Border’s righteous path? Let me give another example, Luo clan’s Luo Fei is also among the captives. What if I tear all her clothes and throw her into a cesspit? Or what if I throw her into a group of giant apes in heat, and use information path Gu to record every scene, then put them for sale in treasure yellow heaven?”

Shang clan’s Gu Immortal gritted his teeth, a deep disgust flashing past his eyes: “Fang Yuan, you are an infamous demon, the Reverse Flow River Lord, inheritor of Red Lotus, Spectral Soul, and many other inheritances, your name is renowned throughout the world, how could you be so shameless and despicable?”

“No, no, no, you are wrong.” Fang Yuan shook his head: “I am not despicable, but your attitude is not correct. You have been trying to provoke me, even trying to drive a wedge between me and other clans by saying bad words about them, like how Luo clan is cursing me and wants to plot against me. I believed your words, so I took revenge against Luo clan.”

Shang clan’s Gu Immortal was unable to say a word, his whole body trembled, his face paled and cold sweat started dripping from his forehead.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Now, you still think you can represent the whole of Southern Border’s righteous path?”

After a good while, the Shang clan Gu Immortal said with a tired expression: “Alright, you win, Fang Yuan. I will bring back your list, but I can’t guarantee their response.”

Fang Yuan laughed: “I don’t need your guarantee, you also don’t have the qualifications to give me a guarantee. Even if you could, I would not believe you. Go back, you can twist my words and add fuel to the fire when you relay the message to them. Oh, that’s right, I need a satisfying answer within three days.

If not, I will first sell Shang Hu Zhang to Fu Sheng Xian.”

Shang clan’s Gu Immortal immediately panicked: “Fang Yuan, you can’t do this! I can represent Shang clan to discuss with you right now in private...”

“I refuse!”

“Fang Yuan? Fang Yuan! Damn it!!!” Shang clan Gu Immortal lost contact with Fang Yuan, veins popped out his forehead and pulsed like lightning.

Before the three days limit was reached, Southern Border’s righteous path handed over all the materials in Fang Yuan’s list.

With hostages in hand, Fang Yuan held too great of an initiative.

He did not need to use any methods and just needed to play some despicable tricks to destroy the tens of thousands of years of reputation that Southern Border’s righteous path had, making them the greatest laughingstocks in the eyes of every Gu Immortal.

For the countless years that had passed, there were naturally cases where righteous path Gu Immortals had fallen into the hands of the demonic path.

But some of these demonic path Gu Immortals were not as crazy as Fang Yuan, while most of them did not have Fang Yuan’s wisdom path methods.

Wisdom path Gu Immortals were rare, even if Southern Border’s righteous path forces did not have a wisdom path Gu Immortal in their own clan, they could rely on relations to get help from a wisdom path great expert.

But when it came to Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan himself cultivated wisdom path and his emperor yama killer move could even defend against Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions, when he hid himself, Southern Border’s righteous path simply could not find his location. More importantly, Fang Yuan had the battle strength to fight rank eight, his nature was cruel and he was extremely cunning. What other options did Southern Border’s righteous path have other than to accept Fang Yuan’s conditions?

Naturally, this was because Fang Yuan’s extortions had not yet reached the bottom line of Southern Border’s righteous path.

If it truly reached their bottom line, Southern Border’s righteous path would absolutely not be so nice.

“Fang Yuan, we can talk properly now, right?” The previous Shang clan Gu Immortal found Fang Yuan once again.

Fang Yuan smiled: “Are you truly so unpopular that you are still doing this troublesome job?”

The Shang clan Gu Immortal’s face was gloomy, just like Fang Yuan said, this task was harming his reputation, but what could he do? He had no choice but to show up, Shang clan’s first supreme elder had personally mentioned his name.

“Let’s cut to the chase. We have already satisfied your condition, now...” Before he finished speaking, Fang Yuan interrupted.

“It is my turn to show sincerity. Here.”

“What is this?”

Fang Yuan smiled: “This is an information path mortal Gu for Yi clan. I have used some blood path methods to create it, so only Yi clan’s Gu Immortals can refine it. Even if others try to refine it, it will end up in failure. Even if they use some methods to refine it, they will not receive my exact message.”

“This...”

“No more questions, take it back and you will know.”

“Fang Yuan? Fang Yuan! Damn it, he left again!” Shang clan Gu Immortal was stifled, he could only hand over this Gu worm like Fang Yuan said.

Yi clan refined it, obtaining an address.

They were worried this was another of Fang Yuan’s traps, so they gathered the other clans and moved together.

In the location, they saw Gu Immortal Yi Yang.

“Yi Yang! This is my clan’s Yi Yang!”

“Oh my goodness, this scum Fang Yuan actually released a hostage.”

In an instant, Southern Border’s immortals were surprised and joyous, while also being unable to believe this.

“Wait a moment, don’t get happy so soon. There might be an issue with this Yi Yang!” Without needing the reminder of other clans, Yi clan had already begun carrying out a comprehensive inspection.

The final result was this was indeed Yi Yang and not Fang Yuan’s disguise. It was just that this was not the complete Yi Yang, but just his body.

Yi Yang’s soul was still in Fang Yuan’s hands.

Fang Yuan’s action made Southern Border’s Gu Immortals see hope of redeeming the captives. In the next meeting, Fang Yuan directly admitted: “I released Yi Yang’s body so I can obtain even more benefits. Who is to say that I can’t imprison the rest of you in the future, so I can’t damage my reputation, right? Don’t worry, as long as you can pay the price, I will release all the captives.”

“This scum Fang Yuan...” Southern Border’s righteous path did not know how they should respond.

The immortals felt mixed feelings, they were happy at seeing hopes of redeeming the hostages, but felt disgust, anger, hatred, and helplessness towards Fang Yuan, including a trace of unease and fear.

Fang Yuan could appear and disappear unpredictably, he had the ability to imprison lone righteous path Gu Immortals. As long as he succeeded, he could escape to an enormous distance once and Southern Border’s righteous path would have no way to find his location.

The whole of Southern Border’s righteous path was threatened by Fang Yuan, even rank eight Gu Immortals were feeling vigilant. Even they did not feel safe against Fang Yuan, Xia Cha was the best example after all!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1614: Soul Search

Fang Yuan’s words made Southern Border’s righteous path furious and wary, but he had reached his objective of persuading them.

Although this frankness caused Southern Border’s righteous path to feel even more hatred towards Fang Yuan, they chose to believe in Fang Yuan’s ‘sincerity’.

In fact, they were willing to believe in this sincerity.

Because losing a Gu Immortal would be an even greater loss to them!

It would not matter much if it were rank six Gu Immortals with ordinary abilities. The thing was, the captives were rank seven experts, trump cards of their respective clans. Xia clan’s Xia Cha was even its first supreme elder.

Losing such experts would greatly affect the whole clan.

Spirit Affinity House had once lost Feng Jiu Ge; its resource points had immediately been coveted by the surrounding ancient sects, and they were under huge pressure.

The ten great ancient sects had the same superior — Heavenly Court, their relations were much closer than Southern Border’s righteous path, but this situation occurred even then. Were the Southern Border righteous path forces to end up in such a situation, their state would no doubt be worse.

So be it if every Southern Border righteous path clan lost these Gu Immortals. What made them secretly worried was Fang Yuan killing some and releasing some.

Earth veins were stirring, all kinds of immortal materials and wild Immortal Gu appeared endlessly, it had already caused every Southern Border force to fight each other, they were almost at the point of killing for these resources.

There were many, many individual forces in Southern Border’s righteous path, they were already filled with enough conflicts, and the movement of these earth veins had further intensified these conflicts.

If Fang Yuan killed some and released some, there was no doubt that the original balance between the righteous path forces would be broken, the whole of Southern Border’s situation would once again be unstable.

The Southern Border righteous path forces were allowing themselves to be extorted by Fang Yuan, was it just because they were afraid of him or because they were worried about the captives?

It was not as simple as that.

They were also worried about themselves.

Whoever Fang Yuan released or killed could change the whole of Southern Border’s situation.

They were indeed afraid of Fang Yuan despite them not admitting it. But they were even more wary of each other!

Fang Yuan could clearly see this political tension, and thus was able to unscrupulously extort Southern Border’s righteous path.

"The righteous path assumes dignified airs, but is absolutely not ambiguous when taking action. Northern Plains' Hei tribe was an excellent example, Hei tribe weakened, and with the excuse of harboring a culprit of the destruction of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, it was immediately besieged by all the Huang Jin tribes."

"Compared to lone, wandering immortals like me, no matter how much we extort, we can't take away territories and we also cannot quickly build a super force to occupy these territories. On the other hand, righteous path forces have a lot of manpower and have the instinct to expand, so the threat is even higher."

"Speaking of which, this is also because there are many Southern Border forces while lacking a powerful leader. If I were to do this in Central Continent, none of the ten great ancient sects would give any attention to me!"

"Southern Border, Western Desert, and Eastern Sea are filled with many individual forces, it is just that the conflicts are the deepest in Southern Border because of the movement in earth veins in this period of time. As for Northern Plains..."

A trace of a smile appeared on Fang Yuan's face.

Compared to his previous life, Northern Plains' Longevity Heaven had already appeared to the world ahead of time, and was now actively uniting the whole of Northern Plains' Gu Immortal world.

Previously, this plan was obstructed by Heavenly Court, who knew which pawn of Heavenly Court disguised as Fang Yuan to kill Cloud Gentleman, thwarting Longevity Heaven's plan to recruit Northern Plains' lone immortals.

But not long ago, Longevity Heaven had a turning point.

That was Lang Ya Sect seeking refuge.

Longevity Heaven absorbed the whole of Lang Ya Sect, moreover doing it with full publicity, letting the whole world know that they had taken in Lang Ya blessed land, giving Lang Ya blessed land an equal status according to the former agreement between Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Long Hair Ancestor, also ensuring their safety.

This action of promoting their recruitment of a powerful force was truly spectacular!

All the Gu Immortals of five regions were shaken.

Lang Ya blessed land's Gu Immortals were all variant humans, but Longevity Heaven could actually be so generous. That meant their treatment of human Gu Immortals would definitely be even better.

Longevity Heaven thus successfully turned around people's hearts, changing the mindset of the Gu Immortals in the whole of Northern Plains. Their plan of recruiting lone immortals progressed rapidly, completely different from before.

"Speaking of which, Lang Ya land spirit was able to get help from Longevity Heaven, they were truly fortunate."

Longevity Heaven was actively taking action, Northern Plains would definitely bring even more trouble to Central Continent in the five regions chaotic war.

While Western Desert's Xiao clan and Southern Border's Chi clan were secretly receiving Fang Yuan's support.

This was not all, in this period of time, Fang Yuan was constantly mentioning the threat possessed by Heavenly Court in treasure yellow heaven; repeatedly mentioning the problem of the killer move star cast and fate Immortal Gu. Videos of the battle of Reverse Flow River, battle of the dream realm, the battle of Lang Ya Sect, were all displayed in treasure yellow heaven by Fang Yuan, constantly playing on loop, silently recounting Heavenly Court's ambitious and tyrannical way of meddling with the other four regions.

Such actions seemingly had no response. But Fang Yuan believed that there was no super force in the other four regions that did not detest Heavenly Court's actions! They were just temporarily restraining themselves.

Central Continent's ten great ancient sects accepted Heavenly Court because they were sub-sects of Heavenly Court, founded by the members of Heavenly Court.

Northern Plains' righteous path forces could accept Longevity Heaven because they descended from the same bloodline, and Longevity Heaven was Ancestor Giant Sun's grotto-heaven that represented the righteous path.

While Southern Border, Western Desert, and Eastern Sea were controlled by various super forces. They were used to abusing their powers, and none of them wanted a force to boss them around.

Days later, in the sovereign immortal aperture.

Immortal killer move — Soul Search!

Fang Yuan had already designed a killer move with the rank seven soul search Immortal Gu, taken from Yang Ku, as the core. Its efficiency was a dozen times higher than just activating the soul search Immortal Gu.

Under the effect of this killer move, all kinds of information was extracted out of every Gu Immortal's soul and sent to Fang Yuan's mind.

Fang Yuan saw the lifestyle of each Gu Immortal clearly, their cultivation secrets and techniques, factional disputes in their respective forces, secret storages, and so on.

Fang Yuan already had a good understanding of Southern Border. On one hand, there were records of it among Shadow Sect's true inheritances, while he had also learned a lot through Wu clan's information when he had infiltrated them as Wu Yi Hai.

With such a foundation, this first-hand information of many Gu Immortals was added, further deepening Fang Yuan's understanding of Southern Border's situation.

Even rank eight Gu Immortals like Wu Yong and Chi Qu You would not have such detailed understanding of Southern Border's situation.

"Looks like the Immortal Gu list they gave me is correct, except they have concealed some information."

Southern Border's righteous path forces wanted to exchange Gu, and gave Fang Yuan their list of Immortal Gu. Right now, Fang Yuan immediately understood each force's foundation by soul searching these Gu Immortals. Rank six or ordinary rank seven Gu Immortals probably would not have such information, but these rank seven Gu Immortals were experts of their forces. Strength meant authority, so every one of them was a core of their clan's higher-ups.

Fang Yuan was not surprised at the clans hiding information.

Because he knew that the Immortal Gu which were not mentioned were those that the clans were not willing to exchange with and that were very valuable to the respective clan. If Fang Yuan wanted to exchange for the Immortal Gu on the list, it could be done more easily.

In fact, he also wanted to exchange Gu.

“I need to construct an Immortal Gu House to be a base for me to rest and recuperate in River of Time. And, with an Immortal Gu House, Shadow Sect’s immortals can also participate in the battle and lend me a hand.”

Fang Yuan could exchange the Immortal Gu which he did not need. After all, if Southern Border’s righteous path was strengthened, they would be able to resist Heavenly Court much more efficiently.

Naturally, Fang Yuan would not exchange those Immortal Gu which he had great use for.

Immortal Gu were unique, they were priceless, but even more important was the overall situation!

Heavenly Court.

Immortal formation rumbled loudly, Fairy Zi Wei looked at Spectral Soul while holding an iron dragonfish.

Scenes of relevant memories were surging out of Spectral Soul and playing in front of Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes.

Fairy Zi Wei smiled: “With this portion of the food path true inheritance, Heavenly Court can also produce, iron, copper, silver, and gold dragonfish, we can change the situation in treasure yellow heaven. Spectral Soul, you are already done for. Dang Hun Mountain’s detonation gave you some time to prolong your dying breath, but now, what can you rely on?”

Spectral Soul was condensed into a lump, silent like a dead object.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1615: Continued Progress

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Immortal killer move — Soul Search!

A vast force shot at Xia Cha’s soul fiercely, but Xia Cha’s soul suddenly shined with time path dao marks that completely blocked Fang Yuan’s soul search killer move.

But Fang Yuan did not give up, continuing to instill immortal essence without stopping.

A good while later, like a pair of hands lifting a corner of a stuck steel board, a gap appeared in the time path dao marks protecting Xia Cha’s soul, allowing Fang Yuan’s soul search killer move to finally take effect.

At the next moment, a huge amount of information was greedily absorbed by Fang Yuan. But the time path dao marks had not admitted defeat, the surrounding dao marks moved in to fill the gap.

As time passed, this gap which Fang Yuan had made after so much effort was once again filled in with time path dao marks. Furthermore, the defensive power of this area was even stronger than before!

Fang Yuan’s soul search killer move thus stopped here.

“This Xia Cha is indeed worthy of being a rank eight Gu Immortal, she has such a robust foundation that even her soul is protected by a time path defensive method that can resist a rank seven soul search killer move.”

“This defensive method also has self recovery and counterattacking abilities, it is truly wonderful.”

After Fang Yuan stole all the Immortal Gu from the Southern Border immortal captives, he extracted their souls, separating them from their bodies.

At this state, the threat of these Southern Border captives had already fallen to a negligible level. It was then the process of searching their souls that no longer had the protection of a physical body.

The souls of Tie Qu Zhong, Shang Hu Zhang and others did not give much trouble to Fang Yuan, so all their memories and information were extracted by Fang Yuan.

But he encountered some trouble with Yang Ku. Yang Ku was a rank seven expert who primarily cultivated soul path, so he naturally had strong resistance towards soul search methods.

Yang Ku still could not be considered troublesome, even more troublesome was Liu Hao.

Liu Hao’s fixed space Immortal Gu and other Gu were tampered by Heavenly Court, so Fang Yuan was not able to obtain them. Heavenly Court naturally did not forget about his soul, putting in layers of strong defensive methods on it.

But these two were still soul searched by Fang Yuan in the end.

If Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley were sacred lands of soul cultivation, Fang Yuan’s Spectral Soul true inheritance was no doubt the number one soul path sacred scripture!

Fang Yuan had thus learned of Liu Hao’s true identity, a spy of Heavenly Court.

However, Xia Cha’s soul was still the most troublesome one.

Her soul was filled with time path dao marks which had formed into a tight defense that blocked any external attacks. Fang Yuan’s soul search was naturally a kind of attack and was harmful to Xia Cha.

Fang Yuan tried all his methods, using Immortal formations to suppress the soul, modifying the soul search killer move, finally reaching the limit of the soul search killer move’s power so that he could search Xia Cha’s soul.

But this soul search was extremely difficult and did not progress smoothly.

Fang Yuan often had to use a herculean effort before he could open a tiny gap. But this gap would be covered again by time path dao marks, not long later.

Fang Yuan could only soul search in the limited duration of the gap. After this duration passed, the gap would be closed by even more time path dao marks than before, its defense increasing further.

Fortunately, the time path dao marks on Xia Cha’s soul did not increase, an increase in time path dao marks in the gap meant there were few dao marks in other areas. This gave Fang Yuan even better chances for his next attack.

The others’ souls were already searched completely, only Xia Cha’s soul remained.

Fang Yuan continued to target Xia Cha’s soul, while using the time path clone to go into each Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture by using Fixed Immortal Travel.

Because he had obtained first-hand information from soul searching, Fang Yuan was fully aware of the landscape inside these Gu Immortals’ immortal apertures. He could easily enter the immortal apertures by using Fixed Immortal Travel.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan was also aware of what resources these immortal apertures were hiding.

In a Gu Immortal’s cultivation, the immortal aperture was an extremely important factor. All of these Southern Border immortals were experts with deep foundation, their immortal aperture management was naturally at a superior level with all kinds of good stuff inside.

But these Gu Immortals would be released by Fang Yuan.Read comics on our ReadReadRead.live

Because the benefits from annexing their immortal apertures and absorbing their dao marks were far inferior to the benefits from extorting those super forces.

An increase in dao marks brought in an increase in foundation as well as a brighter future.

But no matter how beautiful the future was, it was nothing if he could not cross the present obstacle.

The present obstacle was naturally fate Gu, more accurately, he had to stop Heavenly Court from restoring fate Gu.

But Fang Yuan had made no progress in this, he was currently able to avoid Heavenly Court’s pursuit, but fate Gu was protected in the depths of Heavenly Court, stopping Heavenly Court from restoring it was far beyond Fang Yuan’s capability.

So Fang Yuan was thinking of every way possible to enter the River of Time and inherit Red Lotus’ true inheritance.

In the history of humans, three great Demon Venerables had successively attacked Heavenly Court, but only Red Lotus Demon Venerable was able to break fate Gu, although he could not completely destroy it, he had indeed broken fate Gu. In the true inheritances left behind by Red Lotus Demon Venerable, there were likely to be plans targeted at destroying fate Gu.

To smoothly inherit Red Lotus’ true inheritance and not be destroyed by Heavenly Court in the process, Fang Yuan needed to raise his time path strength. Other paths’ methods were greatly weakened and not useful when fighting in the River of Time.

Year essence pool, time path Immortal Gu House, as well as many other things required Fang Yuan to transact with the Southern Border righteous path, his chips were naturally these Gu Immortal captives.

Several days later in the sovereign immortal aperture’s time.

Roar—!

In the sky of Mini Southern Border, a dark green ‘rock dragon’ roared, its enormous and slender body twisting around.

Then, under the effect of Fang Yuan’s killer move, the ‘rock dragon’ pierced into Mini Southern Border’s ground. Loud rumbling noises resounded over the surroundings as this ‘rock dragon’ pierced into the depths of the ground until even its tail disappeared underground.

Fang Yuan let out a breath: “The matter of drawing in the mineral vein is finally finished.”

This ‘rock dragon’ was not the rock dragon of the rockman tribe, but was the manifestation of a mineral vein. This mineral vein was constructed by using rank seven immortal material dark inkstone. Fang Yuan had moved it over from an earth path Southern Border captive’s immortal aperture.

As for the method to move such a large mineral vein, Spectral Soul’s true inheritance naturally had it, but the Immortal Gu and the killer move Fang Yuan used came from that captive.

The captive used to relocate outside world’s dark inkstone mines into their immortal aperture. Fang Yuan was only imitating them.

“With this dark inkstone mineral vein, I can extract a batch every year and sell them in treasure yellow heaven.”

This profit was not much, but it was a steady income.

Because the dark inkstone mineral vein would expand itself by absorbing the surrounding earth qi. As long as Fang Yuan extracted limited amounts, he would have a continuous flow of dark inkstones.

Although dark inkstone did not have a high price among rank seven immortal materials, it was still a rank seven immortal material, its price could not be neglected.

“Maybe... I can move in a batch of rockmen and breed them near the dark inkstone vein.” Fang Yuan suddenly had a thought.

This was extremely beneficial to the rockmen.

The higher the quality of the mineral veins, the more helpful it would be for a rockman tribe’s procreation, survival, and strengthening. What was even more amazing was that the rockmen could also nurture these mineral veins and increase their purity.

This was a win-win situation for both sides.

But this dark inkstone mineral vein was not suitable for mining yet, and moving in rockmen would only make it their new home.

Fang Yuan thought for a moment before deciding to bring in some rockmen.

The profits from mining the dark inkstone mineral vein was of no importance to him, what he was more interested in was the future benefits brought by the rockmen and the mineral vein.

Fang Yuan had not just obtained this one dark inkstone mineral vein from the Southern Border captives.

There were dozens of mountains in Mini Southern Border now.

Most of them were ordinary mountains, but were filled with dense earth path dao marks, they were treasure troves.

There were also some mountain ranges that reached the level of famous mountains!

For instance, Interior Rain mountain.

This mountain’s peak was always shrouded by a layer of dark clouds from where light rain continued to fall.

The drizzling rain was not ordinary rainwater, but rank six immortal material interior rain!

Another example was Copper Seal mountain.

This mountain was red and had a squarish shape, it was like a large seal was standing upright in Mini Southern Border.

Copper Seal mountain did not have even a trace of soil, it was completely formed from all kinds of copper, mortal level copper like chaotic sky copper, pragna copper, snow flower copper, and so on, and immortal copper like profound gray copper and ascending dragon copper.

Naturally, the mortal level copper were of the highest amount and occupied the most space, while immortal coppers only occupied a small portion and were mostly rank six immortal materials. The highest level of the copper was a unique rank seven copper, the famous domination copper! With this copper present, it essentially could not support another rank seven copper.

Mountains, mineral veins, forests... as these Gu Immortal captives were from Southern Border, nearly half of the stolen resources were moved to Mini Southern Border. Because these resources were extremely suited to this environment.

The other half of the resources were split into the other four mini regions as well as the mini nine heavens.

For instance, in Mini Central Continent, there was now a phantom shadow flower garden and a large fertile land filled with an enormous amount of immortal farmer soil.

In Mini Northern Plains, there was now a heaven pillar wind. This wind’s appearance was like a tall pillar, extremely tall and long. When it blows, it will not cause movement, only blowing on the spot, from outside, it resembled a giant pillar that extended into the sky.

In Mini Eastern Sea, there was a brand new sea area, wave flower sea area. The sea area was filled with turbulent waves, where countless magical flowers were formed during the moments where waves appeared and vanished. Because they had a short lifespan, they were hard to gather. Fang Yuan had been rather surprised when he obtained the method to nurture this resource from Yi Yang.

In Mini Western Desert, a dozen hibiscus trees were planted, every branch of this tree was an immortal material!

“The sovereign immortal aperture is too large, in terms of specific value, previously, the sovereign immortal aperture’s development was only at three to four percent. Now, because of these resources, it has reached eight to nine percent. There are still many resources left in these Southern Border Gu

Immortals’ immortal apertures, and also Xia Cha’s grotto-heaven! With all of them added, the development will definitely pass ten percent.” Fang Yuan heaved a sigh.

These resources were either on large or small scale, and a lot were large scale resource points and economic pillars of each Southern Border Gu Immortal!

Heavenly Court had already made a move in treasure yellow heaven, selling copper dragonfish, iron dragonfish and silver dragonfish at heavily reduced price, causing a great impact to Fang Yuan’s dragonfish business.

But so what?

These dozen newly added economic pillars would support his continued progress!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1616: Request to Fang Clan

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Southern Border.

Rumble!

The ground shook violently for a moment, before the dense radiance of an earth path killer move covered the surrounding one hundred li.

Like a large formless hand molding soft mud, the surrounding terrain began to sink in while the land in the periphery began to protrude out, forming a circular valley.

This sunken land was surrounded by mountains, forming an environment that was isolated from the outside.

There was no vegetation in this sunken land, soil was also scarce, it was instead covered by a large amount of steel.

This was white steel bowl valley.

Fang Yuan extorted the production method of the white steel extract resource point as well as corresponding construction materials from Shang clan.

White steel bowl valley was a medium sized resource point, after its construction, it would coagulate rank seven immortal material white steel extract at the center of the valley.

With this immortal material, Fang Yuan could feed rank seven edge Gu by himself.

Previously, when he had plundered Tie Qu Zhong’s immortal aperture, he did not find resources to feed edge Gu, but after soul searching him, Fang Yuan realized he had intended to construct this resource point and had already discussed the price with Shang Hu Zhang.

Fang Yuan directly extorted Shang clan, constructing white steel bowl valley without paying any price.

After this task was done, Fang Yuan's time path clone immediately moved towards Dang Hun Mountain.

A lofty and large crystal mountain, pink throughout, was emitting illusory radiance.

Fang Yuan threw soul cores into Dang Hun Mountain, not long later, a large amount of guts Gu was produced on the surface of the mountain.

Dang Hun Mountain had finally recovered, looking close to its complete state!

Ninety-nine percent restoration was already enough. Fang Yuan could not restore it completely, as Heavenly Court already knew Dang Hun Mountain's appearance in its complete state. Although Fixed Immortal Travel was in Fang Yuan's hand, who could say Heavenly Court did not have an immortal killer move that could produce the effect of Fixed Immortal Travel.

“From now on, I can produce a large amount of guts Gu and restart my guts Gu business once again.” Fang Yuan let out a breath of air.

It had not been easy to reach this state, Fang Yuan had expended a massive amount of immortal essence!

Dang Hun Mountain had been destroyed before as well, but it had been destroyed by gruel mud Immortal Gu, it had turned into mud but still retained soul path dao marks.

And this time, Fang Yuan only had a small piece of Dang Hun Mountain, most of the soul path dao marks had been destroyed with the destruction of Dang Hun Mountain.

Through this process of restoring Dang Hun Mountain, Fang Yuan deeply experienced the power of the killer move orderly well.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had used this rank nine immortal killer move himself, its effect was magical and peerless. Fang Yuan could not have restored Dang Hun Mountain without its help.

“With my guts Gu business, Heavenly Court is unable to limit my income any further.”

“But with so many resource points taken from the Southern Border immortals, I can continue to cultivate without relying on guts Gu business.”

“It is better to use these guts Gu for my own soul path cultivation.”

Fang Yuan's soul foundation had previously broken into one hundred million man soul level, but had greatly fallen now.

Cultivating and raising his soul foundation once again meant Fang Yuan could enslave even more immemorial year beasts!

“Such a pity that my development plan for green ghost desert did not succeed. Qing Chou has escaped, Suan Bu Jin's identity was also exposed, I can no longer continue the plan of hunting soul beasts.”

“However, I might be able to borrow Fang clan's help...”

Fang Yuan considered it.

He wanted to cultivate his soul so he naturally needed more guts Gu, which also meant expending a lot of souls. The souls of the Southern Border Gu Immortals could not be used here, it would be a waste of their value. Soul cores were most suitable.

Where could he get a large amount of soul cores?

The price of soul cores had already gone up in treasure yellow heaven, it was especially high during this recent time.

Fang Yuan knew this was Heavenly Court’s doing.

Fang clan.

Discussion hall, all the supreme elders had gathered.

“Everyone, have a look at this letter.” At the main seat was an old man, he was tall and sturdy, with long white hair spreading around his head like a lion’s mane, he was Fang clan’s first supreme elder, Fang Gong.

Fang clan’s second supreme elder, wisdom path great grandmaster Fang Di Chang, third supreme elder Fang Hua Sheng, as well as Fang Zhi, Fang Chen, Fang Leng, and Fang Yun were all present.

Everyone glanced through the letter and had different expressions.

Fang Chen gritted his teeth: “I had already sensed that Suan Bu Jin was not a good person, but had not expected him to be Fang Yuan in disguise. Heavenly Court has exposed his identity, and is even blaming us Fang clan for colluding with a demonic person. Right now, our clan is being ostracized by other righteous path forces, it is all because of this demon Fang Yuan! And he wants us to supply him with soul cores? Hehe, he is truly dreaming!”

Fang Chen had married into Fang clan, he once had a verbal dispute with Fang Yuan. He immediately showed his stance right now, not willing to associate with the demon Fang Yuan.

Rank seven poison path Gu Immortal Fang Zhi glanced at Fang Chen, saying coldly: “So Fang Chen, you want to reject Fang Yuan’s request?”

Fang Chen was stunned: “Is our Fang clan afraid of Fang Yuan? Right now, every large righteous path force is pressuring our Fang clan, their reason being that we colluded with a demonic path member. If we now make a deal with Fang Yuan, they will have an even bigger excuse to isolate us.”

Fang Zhi was silent.

In the trip to green ghost desert, Fang clan had beaten back Heavenly Court’s rank eight Gu Immortal Chen Yi, succeeded in capturing Divine Bean Palace, and also forcibly subdued two rank seven lone immortals, Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine, to be Fang clan’s slaves. Their harvests were huge.

But while they had made gains, Fang clan had also paid a considerable price. Their three Immortal Gu Houses had suffered serious damage, and they still had no ways to refine Divine Bean Palace.

Fang clan’s strength had thus fallen greatly, Heavenly Court exposed this matter, causing Fang clan to be immediately met with difficulties from other Western Desert righteous path forces.

But were they truly going to reject Fang Yuan?

This question had already been lingering in the minds of Fang clan Gu Immortals.

Could Fang clan afford to reject him?

Fang clan was being troubled by every clan, they were in a precarious situation from the enormous pressure. And, they were going to offend Fang Yuan at such a crucial time?

At present, who in the world did not know how vicious and crafty Fang Yuan was. He also had powerful battle strength to boot, even Heavenly Court was without options against him.

And such a person happened to be all alone in the world with no fetters of relatives and loved ones, no territories or organization, Fang clan simply had no way to bargain against him!

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals started recalling past information, how Fang Yuan had used Fixed Immortal Travel to move around and continuously wreck the resource points of Southern Border’s Chi clan.

If Fang clan truly refused Fang Yuan, and Fang Yuan troubled them like he dealt with Chi clan, what should they do?

Chi clan was a righteous path force of Southern Border, when they had been attacked by Fang Yuan, they did not receive support from any other clan. Fang clan’s situation would be much worse than Chi clan’s.

Not only would Fang clan fail to receive reinforcements, they might even be pincer-attacked by other righteous path forces! If they were not careful, Fang clan would become the next Hei tribe from Northern Plains, their headquarters captured and their clan exterminated.

“Fang Leng, Fang Yun, what are your opinions?” Fang Di Chang suddenly broke the silence.

Fang Yun was stunned, they were only rank six, they normally could only listen from the side and had no qualifications to speak on this kind of occasion. Now, he was suddenly being asked, and was caught off-guard: “This... I also don’t know what we should do. After all, Fang Yuan saved my life, he is my benefactor. Moreover... haven’t we made an agreement with him? It should be alright to give him soul cores as the compensation. Ah, of course, I will listen to lord father, you can just deduce it.”

Fang Di Chang’s expression was slightly dark, he took a glance at his adopted son before looking towards Fang Leng.

Compared to the flippant Fang Yun, Fang Leng had a steady nature and was well thought of by many Gu Immortals of Fang clan, believing him to be the future hope of Fang clan.

Fang Leng thought deeply before speaking: “I wonder if everyone has noticed that Fang Yuan did not use the name of Suan Bu Jin in this letter, but directly used his own name?”

Fang Chen snorted: “It is because Heavenly Court already exposed it, it is useless for Fang Yuan to use Suan Bu Jin’s identity. He might also be thinking of threatening our clan. By using his name, he is trying to say: I am Fang Yuan, if your Fang clan does not follow my request, you shall face my, Fang Yuan’s, anger and vengeance!”

Fang Leng smiled: “There is indeed this meaning. Fang Yuan is confident he can create trouble for our Fang clan. I also believe he can do this, so I think we should agree to Fang Yuan’s request.”

“What?!” Fang Chen’s voice rose, his eyes widened as he tried to rebuke.

But, Fang Di Chang waved his hand: “Let him continue.”

Fang Chen did not dare to speak any more.

Fang Leng took a deep breath before continuing: “Everyone, our clan has landed in a precarious situation and is being troubled from all around. Is it truly because we collaborated with the demon Fang Yuan?”

“That is not the case! The true reason is that our clan obtained Divine Bean Palace, once we absorb our gains properly, the top spot among Western Desert’s righteous path forces will probably belong to our Fang clan. Strength represents power and authority, and even more importantly, benefits. Our clan’s rise will naturally be through stepping on other clans. This is why the other great clans are not tolerating us and are jointly pressuring us.”

“If our clan does not satisfy Fang Yuan’s request and makes a clean break with him, will the other righteous path forces let us go? That is impossible! On the contrary, we will have made enemies with Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan has rank eight battle strength, if such a demonic overlord takes revenge, it will probably cause endless headache to any super force.”

“And by satisfying Fang Yuan’s request, not only can we fulfil the previously set agreement, we can also improve our relationship, and even might be able to use his strength to deal with other super forces.”

“Of course, we will send the soul cores secretly to him, and after discussing with him, we can act like we have completely broken off our relationship with him. What does it matter if we lose those rank six and rank seven soul cores? They are only immortal materials, as long as our Fang clan can get past this difficulty, what immortal material would we lack in the future?”

The immortals fell into silence.

Fang Di Chang chuckled.

Fang Gong laughed heartily: “Good, we will do it like this then. Fang Yun, you get in touch with Fang Yuan.”

“What? Huh!” Fang Yun was dazed, it was clearly Fang Leng who had analyzed and made the proposal, why was he the one to execute it? But first supreme elder’s command had to be obeyed, Fang Yun could only accept it.

“This Fang Leng has sound judgment, he sees the overall situation clearly. First and second elder are painstakingly nurturing him into the future successor of Fang clan. How could such a person have a stain of colluding with a demon? So Fang Yun was ordered to take the task.” Fang Chen glanced at the ignorant Fang Yun with a pitying look.

This pity also had sympathy.

Why was Fang Yun made to do this task?

That was because Fang Yun was Fang Di Chang’s adopted son.

The two biggest factions in Fang clan belonged to first supreme elder Fang Gong and second supreme elder Fang Di Chang.

As for Fang Chen himself, he was extremely aware of the situation. Unfortunately, he was an outsider married into Fang clan, his talents were useless because of his status, he could only be a superficial stepping stone for Fang Leng!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1617: Crucial Tribulation

Soul cores with the size of a chicken egg, dark blue to the point of being black, rained down on Dang Hun Mountain.

The soul core contained all of the essence of a soul beast, after the soul beast died, its corpse would turn into smoke and scatter, leaving behind only its soul core.

Soul cores condensed a large amount of soul path dao marks, they were a top tier Gu material.

Soul cores could be found in all sizes, an ordinary soul beast’s soul core was the size of a rice grain, and would only be the size of a chicken egg when they reached rank six. Those of rank seven were slightly larger, while a rank eight immemorial soul beast’s soul core was as large as a horse carriage.

After a round of discussion, Fang clan finally agreed to Fang Yuan’s request, secretly sending him a large amount of soul cores. These soul cores were almost all rank six Gu level, with few being rank seven soul cores, and as for rank eight soul core, there was not even one.

Fang Yuan had two rank eight soul cores but he was storing them, not wanting to use them for producing guts Gu on Dang Hun Mountain.

Rank eight immortal materials were normally used to refine rank eight Immortal Gu or to construct a large formation. Using them for producing guts Gu would be somewhat of a waste of their value.

The radiance of Dang Hun Mountain shook as the soul cores scattered into powder, sprinkling their essence into Dang Hun Mountain. Within moments, guts Gu started condensing with rapid speed.

Fang Yuan nodded inwardly at this scene: “My soul path cultivation can get back on track again and progress swiftly.”

Soul path foundation was extremely important to Fang Yuan.

Enslaving immemorial year beasts required it, moreover the deeper the soul foundation, the more immemorial year beasts Fang Yuan could enslave.

Emperor yama expended soul foundation, whenever a wisdom path Gu Immortal made deductions about Fang Yuan, emperor yama would activate to conceal Fang Yuan while expending a portion of Fang Yuan’s soul foundation.

Burning soul bursting luck also depended on soul foundation. There was also lead soul into dream, Fang Yuan had already studied this killer move completely, it had a chance of failure. But if Fang Yuan’s soul foundation was higher than the target, the killer move’s success rate would be much higher.

Fang Yuan had directly used his name in the letter, abandoning Suan Bu Jin’s name, Fang clan’s response was not beyond his expectations.

To a super force, a lone force like Fang Yuan could not seize their territories, at most he could steal some resources. But other super forces were different, they could forcibly occupy territories and seize entire resource points by sending in their manpower.

The greatest threat to Fang clan were the other righteous path forces that were glaring at it covetously.

“Moreover, Western Desert is somewhat special. Western Desert Gu Immortals compromise a little more easily than those of the other four regions.”

This was not because Western Desert Gu Immortals were soft, it was because of the environment.

Different from other regions, Western Desert was filled with boundless deserts and oases. If an oasis was destroyed in a battle between Gu Masters, they would have no foundation for survival and could easily perish together. On the other hand, different oases produced different resources, Gu Masters would need each other’s help to make up for what they lack in their cultivation. So Gu Masters often formed caravans and moved a long distance which was usually quite dangerous and exhausting. Thus, there were many collaborative relationships between Gu Masters as well as different forces.

So, since long ago, Western Desert’s Gu Masters were molded to compromise and make concessions for the survival of both sides.

Any Gu Immortal had cultivated step by step from Gu Master stage. This habit had sunk deep into their bones and was already a part of the nature of Western Desert Gu Immortals.

In his first life, Fang Yuan had roamed around Western Desert for some time and was well aware of the nature of Western Desert’s people.

Had Fang Yuan captured Western Desert Gu Immortals, the Western Desert righteous path forces would have compromised quicker than Southern Border, their attitude would also be more realistic and proper.

Had Fang Yuan captured Northern Plains Gu Immortals, it would be a different situation. Northern Plains Gu Immortals were often valiant and unafraid of death, they might even think it was a disgrace for them to be saved. Fang Yuan would suffer a headache with those captives.

In the following days, Fang Yuan resumed his soul path cultivation while continuing to extort Southern Border’s righteous path forces and soul searching the captives.

Fang Yuan’s soul search target was Xia Cha.

Although it was rather difficult to search her soul, he was not without any progress. Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture’s time was very fast, under continuous effort over time, he had made many gains.

Soon, Xia Cha’s immortal killer moves were plundered by Fang Yuan.

Xia Cha was worthy of being Xia clan’s first supreme elder, she had developed two sets of killer moves involving Spring, Summer, Autumn, and Winter, these four Immortal Gu, each set had four moves.

The first set of killer moves was mainly used for battle, spring scissors, summer fan, autumn perception, and winter coat.

Among them, Fang Yuan had already seen spring scissors and summer fan. These two killer moves were extremely ferocious, fully displaying rank eight might.

Autumn perception was an investigative killer move which greatly made up for Fang Yuan’s shortcoming in the investigative aspect.

Winter coat was a defensive killer move with extraordinary effect.

The second set of killer moves was used for managing the immortal aperture, spring ploughing, summer hoeing, autumn harvest, and winter storage.

Every move was ingenious and profound, the more terrifying part was when these four moves were used in unison, their might would be amplified and have extraordinary effect in managing the immortal aperture.

Besides these, there were of course other moves as well, used for healing, movement, or evasive maneuvers, they were all exquisite but could not compare to these two sets of killer moves.

In fact, conceptualizing immortal killer moves was a difficult process, there was a high requirement for the ability and talents of Gu Immortals.

Central Continent’s Vicious Lightning Fiend spent a few years in closed cultivation before he was able to deduce the killer move lightning deity. And this was when he had blood deity’s Immortal Gu recipe as reference.

Under a normal situation, without any help of wisdom path methods, a Gu Immortal would on average need five to six years of time to deduce and conceptualize a killer move.

Choosing suitable Gu worms out of myriads of Gu worms was not easy. There were even countless choices in combining Gu worms. Even if a killer move was conceptualized, it was useless if it did not have practical value, and also could not be used if the side effect was too severe. After completing a killer move, it still had to be tested and improved which was even more difficult.

Naturally, five to six years was not referring to a Gu Immortal whole-heartedly concentrating on deducing the killer move without doing anything else.

If the Gu Immortal had reference materials like Immortal Gu recipes or inheritances of predecessors, they could further shorten this time.

But the time taken was normally measured in years.

Fang Yuan seemed to be easily deducing and modifying killer moves, the main reason was the light of wisdom, after all, rank nine wisdom Gu was nothing to scoff at. There was also another important reason, that was his deep attainment level in all kinds of paths.

The Immortal Gu and immortal killer moves obtained from Xia Cha greatly supplemented Fang Yuan’s strength in terms of time path, he could be said to have made huge progress, like the eruption of a volcano.

But Fang Yuan was facing a rather awkward issue.

“Spring and Summer are both rank eight Immortal Gu, they can only be activated with rank eight immortal essence. I am only a rank seven Gu Immortal, I don’t even have the qualifications to refine them without using other methods.”

“So I still need to advance my cultivation to rank eight!”

“Then, not only can I use Spring and Summer, there is also wisdom sword Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan started deducing matters regarding his advancement to rank eight.

Several days later, his deduction was finished.

Putting aside heavenly tribulations and earthly calamities, rank seven needed to pass through three grand tribulations to advance to rank eight, and these three grand tribulations would get increasingly powerful.

Fang Yuan was currently very close to the third and final grand tribulation.

The threat of the grand tribulation was not high to him.

Even if heaven’s will strengthened it to the greatest limits, Fang Yuan already held firm initiative with his exposing heavenly secret killer move.

What Fang Yuan was worried about was not the grand tribulation, but a possible human calamity.

To face the grand tribulation, he must place his immortal aperture and connect to the outside world to absorb heaven and earth qi.

At that time, Fang Yuan’s location would be directly exposed to heaven’s will, while also sharply increasing the difficulty in defending against others’ deductions.

Heavenly Court absolutely would not let go of this opportunity, they should already have some estimations of Fang Yuan’s cultivation level.

If Fang Yuan underwent the tribulation in Southern Border, when Southern Border’s Gu Immortals learn of the information, they would rush to kill Fang Yuan even if the captives were with him!

Because if they got rid of Fang Yuan, they would have no more future trouble, and looking at the long term, the benefits they could gain would be even larger.

Fang Yuan’s dragonfish business was already obstructed by Heavenly Court, his income falling massively. This showed Spectral Soul was unable to hold on and Heavenly Court was making a lot of progress in soul searching him. As time passed, Heavenly Court would gain more information while Fang Yuan would be put into an increasingly passive situation as all kinds of methods in Spectral Soul’s true inheritance continued to lower in value.

“At present, Heavenly Court is my main enemy. The crucial key in the fight against Heavenly Court is fate Gu.”

“If Heavenly Court completely restores fate Gu, I will have no more chance at victory. If I can destroy it, I will be able to continue to fight with them.”

“And the crucial key to destroying fate Gu lies in Red Lotus’ true inheritance.” Fang Yuan had already deduced that it was very likely for Red Lotus’ true inheritance to hold the method to destroy fate Gu.

“And to inherit Red Lotus’ true inheritance, I will have to fight in the River of Time, whether I can break through Heavenly Court’s defense line will depend on this third grand tribulation.”

“If I can pass it, I will become rank eight, and will be able to use Spring, Summer, and wisdom sword Immortal Gu. My battle strength will soar rapidly, I will have a chance at the battle in the River of Time.”

“If I can’t pass it, it will be my death. Even if I survive by chance, the opportunity and timing will be lost. After I fall by one step, I will continue to fall behind continuously, unless Heavenly Court makes a serious slip up, they won’t give me another chance to make a comeback.”

Fang Yuan’s mind was cool as ice, well aware of his situation.

The important thing now was to plan on how to pass the third grand tribulation and become a rank eight.

In the following days, besides cultivating his soul, soul searching Xia Cha, and managing his immortal aperture, Fang Yuan focused on exploring dream realms, practising the new immortal killer moves as well as modifying the old killer moves.

It was necessary to modify the old killer moves, especially his soul path killer moves which needed to be greatly improved. Otherwise, if the soul path killer moves were countered or restrained by Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan would be in an extremely passive situation.

As for practising new killer moves, Fang Yuan was mainly practising Xia Cha’s methods. He was only rank seven currently, but autumn Gu and winter Gu were also only rank seven, he could practise their corresponding immortal killer moves.

Normally, there were two main difficulties in practising killer moves.

One was the high chance of getting injured. But Fang Yuan had the sovereign immortal body which had non-conflicting dao marks and also had Man as Before, so this was not difficult to overcome.

Second was the expenditure of immortal essence. If immortal essence was expended quickly, immortal essence stones had to be refined into immortal essence. Fang Yuan was low on funds before, but he had a lot of businesses now, so he did not lack the capital!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1618: Do You Believe In Fate?

Sovereign immortal aperture, an illusory dream realm.

Fang Yuan entered the dream realm.

Under the setting sun.

“Do you believe in fate?”

A human female immortal with skin as fair as snow, wearing a yellow robe, with arched eyebrows and a pair of beautiful eyes shrouded in mist, was looking sadly at the beautiful afterglow of the sun.

Fang Yuan was a rockman Gu Immortal in this dream realm, but it was not under his control.

The dream realm played by itself, the rockman Gu Immortal spoke in a low, muffled voice: “I, Tu Ji, cultivate rule path and naturally believe in fate.

Fairy Ruo Li, ever since I saw you, I knew you were my fated partner, you are the person that I will pursue for love over my entire life!”

Fairy Ruo Li smiled slightly, her brows, however, furrowed a little. She looked at the rockman Gu Immortal standing beside her: “You are right, we are fated to be an immortal couple.”

“Ah... wha, what? I, I, I...” The rockman Gu Immortal was astonished before becoming exulted, as he shouted in disbelief: “Fairy Ruo Li, have you accepted me?!”

Fairy Ruo Li nodded her head gently.

“Oh heavens, oh heavens! Hahaha! I am not dreaming right? Oh my heavens!” Tu Ji waved around his arms towards the sky and shouted: “I finally succeeded after failing over three thousand times! Hahaha! Fairy Ruo Li, from today onwards, you are my wife.”

“Yes, you are my husband.”

Tu Ji’s body trembled with excitement, the trembling was so intense that rock fragments began to fall from his body.

Second scene.

Ruo Li was gently lying in Tu Ji’s arms, soft like a white feather.

She looked at the sky where the clouds were moving across quickly, her eyes were clear as water.

Tu Ji’s eyes however were dazed, he had not shifted his gaze at all from Ruo Li’s face.

He mumbled: “It has already been twelve years, but I still feel like everything is a dream! Oh Ruo Li, my wife, I swear I will love you and protect you, if you have any wish, tell me, I will do everything to satisfy you.”

“Is that so?” Ruo Li asked softly.

“Of course!” Tu Ji replied without any hesitation.

Ruo Li’s face showed a rare look of hesitation, after a long while, she said with some difficulty: “Then kill someone for me.”

“Kill who? Even if it is a rank eight existence, trust me, I will stake my life to kill them.” Tu Ji agreed readily and seriously.

“An infant who was just born.” Ruo Li smiled, her smile containing bitterness.

Tu Ji was stunned: “An infant?”

Ruo Li took a deep breath: “Do you believe in fate?”

“I cultivate rule path, I have to believe in the rules of this world. All things have their own ordained path of which is fate.” Tu Ji replied.

Ruo Li continued: “Then I will tell you, this baby will become a future Gu Venerable, called Reckless Savage. And in the future, I will definitely die at his hands.”

“What?!” Tu Ji was shocked: “Ruo Li, how many times have you checked this prophecy?”

Ruo Li gave a bitter smile: “Only once is enough, but I checked it many times indeed, every result was the same. Do you know why a wisdom path Gu Immortal’s prophecy is so accurate? That is because fate is always fixed. I will die at Reckless Savage’s hands, that is my fate.”

Tu Ji’s mouth became dry as waves surged and ebbed in his heart.

But shortly, soaring killing intent suddenly surged out of his body as he stood up: “Then I shall kill him! Although this is fate... I don’t believe that I, the grand Tu Ji, a rank eight Gu Immortal, can’t kill an infant!!”

Fang Yuan’s soul foundation continued to fall as the third scene started.

Tu Ji was heavily injured when he appeared in front of Fairy Ruo Li. His lips shook and his expression was ashamed as well as shocked: “I...”

Fairy Ruo Li smiled: “I know, you encountered your fated enemy on the way there, and he just happened to have made a breakthrough.”

Tu Ji was surprised: “You deduced it?”

Fairy Ruo Li nodded: “The moment you got attacked, I deduced it.”

Tu Ji was dazed, he hesitated for a moment but still asked: “Then, Ruo Li, since you already deduced it, why didn’t you come to help me? If we, husband and wife, joined hands, we could have definitely killed that scumbag!”

Ruo Li shook her head: “You still don’t understand? This is fate’s arrangement. If I didn’t tell you my deductions, you would not have gone to kill that infant. If you didn’t go to kill that infant, you would not have encountered your old enemy. Anyone who tries to change fate will be met with fate’s punishment. Your injuries are the punishment now. If I had gone to help you, another obstruction would have appeared.”

Tu Ji blinked his eyes several times before saying in joy: “So it was like that. That’s good, your decision was correct. I won’t let you get injured, I would rather be torn apart than see even a hair of yours get damaged.”

Ruo Li gave a bitter smile as she looked at Tu Ji: “You understand the power of fate now? You don’t need to try anymore, stay with me and quietly accompany me in my final moments. I believe I will be blessed with you by my side.”

“No!” Tu Ji’s body shook as he said resolutely: “Absolutely not! I won’t stand by and watch this happen, I won’t let you die. I promised to love you and protect you with my life.”

“But my death is fate’s arrangement. Oh Tu Ji, my husband, you said it yourself, that you believe in fate.” Ruo Li said meaningfully.

“Then... then I will stop believing in it!” At first, Tu Ji struggled and hesitated, but when he finally said it, he could not restrain his roar, his anger soared to the skies.

Fourth scene.

Tu Ji went to look for that infant once again, but an earthly calamity suddenly appeared, there was a landslide, villagers ran everywhere, the infant also disappeared. Tu Ji could only kill some mortals, but he ran into several righteous path immortals. After a huge battle, Tu Ji killed a few of them, but he ended up becoming a major wanted criminal by the human Gu Immortals.

Fifth scene.

Several years later, the tribulation was strange and of unsurpassed strength, Tu Ji almost died undergoing the tribulation. When he was lying in the bed, unable to move, he heard that Ruo Li had finally deduced the specific location of that infant.

“I will go kill him!” Tu Ji struggled to stand up, but when he had just walked a few steps, he fell unconscious.

When he woke up, he saw Fairy Ruo Li had lost lifespan, her hair had turned completely white, he sobbed: “It is all my fault, all my fault, Ruo Li, you went through such painstaking efforts and finally deduced it after several years of closed cultivation... if not for my inability...”

Fairy Ruo Li smiled warmly, consoling: “No problem, I can deduce it again.”

Sixth scene. They encountered a beast tide.

Seventh scene. Fairy Ruo Li’s deduction failed, suffering backlash, her youth was spent and she became an old lady. She rested in Tu Ji’s embrace, smiling bitterly: “Look at what I have become, I must look pathetic, right?”

Tu Ji gently stroked her hair, his gaze still containing deep love: “No, no matter what you look like, you will still be my beloved Fairy Ruo Li.”

This special dream realm continued, Fang Yuan could only observe from the start.

Regardless of how Tu Ji and Ruo Li chased, all their attempts were met with failure. One time, he captured the infant, but the baby escaped by some unexpected mishap. Three times, he caught up to the infant, but whenever he tried to make the fatal attack, by some strange factors and coincidences, the baby was able to escape.

That infant was gradually growing up, becoming a Gu Immortal.

The situation moved firmly along the path decided by fate, finally nearing the day of Fairy Ruo Li’s death.

Tu Ji became increasingly tense, he knew the most crucial time had arrived. He planned every day and cultivated bitterly, using anything that could increase his strength no matter what the risks were.

On the contrary, Fairy Ruo Li had loosened up, she no longer deduced ceaselessly. She persuaded Tu Ji not to risk his life. Tu Ji did not listen, getting more anxious. Sometimes, she would accompany Tu Ji, lying in his arms, then look at him warmly for a long time as if she could not savor it enough.

Finally, the eighth scene.

The fatal attack was blocked by Tu Ji with his body, he even counterattacked, forcing back that great enemy.

Tu Ji was on the verge of death, he fell in Fairy Ruo Li’s arms, saying joyfully: “We... we finally won against fate. Ruo Li... my wife... I did it, I really did it, cough cough cough...”

He wanted to shout and cheer in joy, but he was too weak and coughed incessantly.

He knew he was no doubt going to die and did not have much time; using this final period of time, he grabbed Fairy Ruo Li’s hand with difficulty, looking at her with incomparably deep love as he said in a solemn tone: “After I die, you must continue to live on, live well...”

Clear crystal-like tears flowed down Fairy Ruo Li’s eyes, sliding down her face.

She tightly embraced Tu Ji, whispering in his ear: “Do you know? Although I cultivate wisdom path, I don’t believe in fate. I had deduced fate’s arrangement for me, but who would want to die? So I looked for you, actually, our marriage was not even part of the arrangements of fate. I did not love you and only wanted to use you.”

Tu Ji smiled, responding in an extremely faint voice: “I knew that, but so what? I love you... I am happy and fully willing to be used by you. Thank you for giving me an opportunity to be used by you... I had once believed in fate, but I don’t anymore. Look, you are still alive, fate has already been changed, this is wonderful...”

Tu Ji was no longer able to lift his heavy eyelids as they closed slowly, he no longer responded.

Fairy Ruo Li wept loudly, she had never lost her composure like this before in her life, she repeatedly shook her head and sobbed: “I did not used to believe in fate, but now I do!”

Her whole body started to let out a pure-white light that slowly entered the rockman Gu Immortal Tu Ji’s body.

Tu Ji’s aura gradually began to recover from its weak state, while Fairy Ruo Li’s body became increasingly frail and illusory.

The rockman Gu Immortal opened his eyes once again, when he saw what was happening, he shouted in shock and panic: “No, stop, I don’t want to be healed. You will die, you will die!!”

Unfortunately, he did not have any strength left and was unable to stop it.

Fairy Ruo Li’s figure had already become illusory, she revealed a smile, saying with incomparable warmth and a trace of craftiness: “You are aware of it, my killer move cannot be stopped once it is activated.”

“I want to say one final thing to you, the thing you wanted to hear the most.”

“You silly rock... I...”

“I love you.”

Once she said that, Fairy Ruo Li faded like an illusion, vanishing from the world.

“No! No——!” Tu Ji roared like an injured beast filled with anger and sorrow, he was powerlessness and in pain.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1619: I Do Not Believe!

Gorgeous lights slowly dissipated from the stone room. Feng Jin Huang took a deep breath, staring forward without blinking, with her sharp eyes flickering with light.

A cocoon-like lump of light, the size of a millstone, was quietly floating in front of her.

“The final step.” Feng Jin Huang took another deep breath, suddenly pinching all her fingers.

Her ten fingers then opened like blossoming flowers, endless bright lights flickering from them, shining upon the whole stone room!

Feng Jin Huang’s movement was so skilled even refinement path grandmasters would show a solemn expression.

Feng Jin Huang was already a refinement path great grandmaster, it was not strange for her to have such exquisite Gu techniques.

What Feng Jin Huang was using was a dual metal and fire path refinement technique, she had found this method to be the most suitable for her.

Boom!

After a while, a loud sound erupted, the cocoon, however, did not explode and was instead rapidly shrinking.

The pure-white cocoon surface gradually turned into dark blue color, while the cocoon gradually turned firmer with some metallic luster.

“I finally succeeded after failing many times!” Feng Jin Huang’s eyes flashed with joy. Her mind was calm the whole time, she was already starting to display the demeanor of a refinement path great expert.

The rank five Gu worm was refined, but it still needed to be processed with proper technique.

Feng Jin Huang opened her mouth, carefully breathing out wisps of cold air.

As the cold air blew on it, the blue cocoon slightly trembled and let out a buzzing noise. Large amounts of hot air rose up from the cocoon, filling the whole stone room with hot fog.

Using dual metal and fire path refinement techniques created such a residual effect, the temperature of the Gu worm would become too high and if it was not cooled down in time, it might not die, but it would be severely injured and difficult to use.

Gu refinement was an extremely deep and broad subject with countless techniques. Any Gu refinement technique had its advantages and disadvantages. If an ice refinement method was used to refine this Gu worm, the residual effect could not be treated with cold air, the Gu had to be nourished in warm water for some time.

Feng Jin Huang stopped her techniques and slowly stood up from the cushion.

The rank five Gu floated to her hand, she tested it carefully, her solemn expression bloomed like flowers as she let out a dazzling smile.

She left the secret room and walked out of the cavern.

The moment she opened the door, the huge rumbling noise of a waterfall, the sounds of birds, and the rustling of tree leaves entered her ears.

Outside of the extremely quiet secret room, the world had once again sprouted to life.

The verdant green mountains, birds singing, fragrance of the flowers, the bright sunlight, everything was tranquil and beautiful.

Feng Jin Huang looked around and saw Duke Long sitting quietly on a giant rock beside a pool.

The lights from the mountain delighted the birds, the shadows on the pool set the heart at ease.

“Master, master, take a look! I refined this dream pillow Gu.” Feng Jin Huang ran over to Duke Long while holding the newly refined rank five Gu and spoke with a dazzling smile.

Duke Long slowly opened his eyes and took a glance at dream pillow Gu, he nodded his head slightly and said in a mild voice: “Not bad, not bad.”

Feng Jin Huang slightly pouted: “How can it only be not bad? Master, you don’t know how many times I failed in refining this Gu worm before succeeding this once. With this dream pillow Gu, mortal Gu Masters can enter dream realms if they sleep while laying their heads on it. It will be an enormous help to my Spirit Affinity House and the whole of Central Continent.”

Ever since Feng Jin Huang took Duke Long as her master, she had devoted herself to cultivating. Duke Long did not instruct her in cultivation, but taught her of the situation of the whole world and his experiences, expanding her vision and knowledge.

With Duke Long’s meticulous teaching, Feng Jin Huang was no longer the same as before, she now had a strategic vision and considered issues in terms of the overall view.

Feng Jin Huang’s dream pillow Gu seemed ordinary but because it was a mortal Gu, it could be used by most Gu Masters. As long as this Gu was mass-produced, Central Continent’s Gu Masters could easily enter their own dream realms and extract dream path Gu materials from them, gaining an early advantage in the great era.

This Gu was able to raise a whole region’s strategic dominance, its significance was beyond ordinary!

Duke Long, however, showed no surprise: “It is only natural for you to have such accomplishments. Huang Er, you are the future Great Dream Immortal Venerable...”

Before Duke Long finished speaking, Feng Jin Huang interrupted with a trace of discontent: “Alright, alright, you are saying this again. Are you saying that I obtained all these accomplishments only because I am the future Great Dream Immortal Venerable?”

Duke Long chuckled as he looked at Feng Jin Huang, suddenly changing the topic: “Huang Er, do you believe in fate?”

Feng Jin Huang’s brows furrowed: “Master, are you talking about fate Gu?”

Duke Long nodded: “Right, it is the fate Gu recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, and also the fate Gu that Heavenly Court is about to restore completely.”

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> stated that Ren Zu had spent enormous energy and effort to gather Gu materials, even sacrificing his own two hands to finally

refine wealth Gu.

He brought his son, Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance, and daughter, Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence, to the feathermen’s residence.

But strangely, all the feathermen had disappeared with no traces left.

“What’s going on?” Ren Zu was puzzled.

“That is because I arrived here, those feathermen are afraid of me, all of them ran away.” A black and white spider walked towards Ren Zu leisurely.

“Who are you?” Ren Zu asked.

The spider smiled: “Human, you have walked through the road I created in the Door of Life and Death, you still don’t know who I am? I am fate Gu.”

Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence added: “Fate Gu, you are not even the size of my palm, why would those feathermen fear you?”

Fate Gu chuckled: “Because they pursue freedom, but I, Fate, bind and restrict them.”

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance grumbled: “So your intention was the same as us. You are really a failure, not capturing even one featherman, while hindering us as well.”

Fate Gu laughed loudly: “Who said I failed? The feathermen are pursuing freedom, but what do they know? Their escape is only on the superficial level, I have already bound them. The road towards their freedom was all arranged by me, but they think they succeeded, not knowing anything. You are also the same, look at yourselves.”

Ren Zu, Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance, and Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence looked at their bodies.

They discovered that white spider silk had stuck to their limbs and body for some unknown time.

They also discovered that not just themselves, even the surrounding flowers, grass, trees, rocks, water, everything was bound by the spider silk.

These spider silk gathered together to form into a spider web which spread out endlessly in the sight of Ren Zu and his children.

“This is the web that I weaved, it is called all-encompassing web. Everything in the world is bound by this web, to be arranged and controlled by me, Fate. Everyone you encountered and all the things that have happened are all controlled by me.” Fate Gu said.

Ren Zu and his children felt a chill in their hearts and began to struggle fiercely.

Fate Gu smiled: “It is useless, you cannot escape. Fate cannot be altered.”

Ren Zu glared at fate Gu furiously: “Oh Fate, why do you have to manipulate and toy with us? From what you said, all the hardships and misfortunes I encountered were all your doings. The loss of my children was also due to you!”

Fate Gu said calmly: “Human, I know you want to save your eldest son Verdant Great Sun, but he is already dead. Death is a necessary fate of humans, you simply cannot save him. Moreover, you want to rely on wealth Gu to save your daughter Boundless Forest Samsara, that is also impossible.”

As Fate willed, a thread of spider silk bound Ren Zu’s wealth Gu and dragged it in front of fate Gu.

“Release it, that is our Gu worm!” Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance shouted.

Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence’s eyes reddened, sobbing: “Father sacrificed his own hands to painstakingly refine this wealth Gu. How dare you take it away?”

Ren Zu struggled fiercely, but the spider silk continued to become tighter, firmly binding them.

Fate Gu laughed loudly: “Life and death is decreed by fate, prosperity is up to heaven. Human, you are fated to be poor and menial, tormented and humiliated till you become insane, and in the end, you will also die. Although you refined wealth Gu, you don’t have the fate to enjoy it. If you are fated to be poor, even if you dug out gold, it will turn to copper, if you are fated to be rich, even if you pick up paper, it will turn to silk. All these things are under my control.”

Ren Zu, Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance, and Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence started cursing fate Gu furiously.

Fate Gu was not the least bit angry, still carefree and at leisure: “Many have cursed me, but so what? Humans, no matter how you curse me, it won’t change anything.”

Fate Gu suddenly moved the spider silk, throwing Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance and Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence far away, completely out of Ren Zu’s sight.

“My children!” Ren Zu howled.

Fate Gu said darkly: “Human, don’t blame me, this is your fate. Not just you, loneliness is the fate of every person. Even if they are your own children, they will not accompany you for life and will eventually leave you. Every encounter is temporary, separation is normality.”

Ren Zu, however, kept on struggling, but the more he struggled, the tighter the spider silk bound him.

Ren Zu felt an increasingly enormous pressure pushing him down to the point of suffocation.

He panted heavily, he gradually lost the strength to struggle.

Ren Zu started crying, tears rolling down his cheeks: “Why does my fate have to be so pitiful!”

Fate Gu was silent.

But at this time, a voice emerged from the depths of Ren Zu’s heart. The voice belonged to self Gu: “Human, believe in your own strength rather than blaming your fate!”

Ren Zu stopped crying as he suddenly realized: “Right, although I don’t have strength Gu, self Gu has taken a bite of strength Gu, I have my own strength now. Self Gu, I can only rely on you.”

Self Gu then erupted with a dazzling light as it attempted to break the spider silk.

Some spider silk was torn, but even more came to bind Ren Zu.

“My own strength is not enough?” Ren Zu was anxious: “Right, self Gu, you have also taken a bite of love Gu. If strength does not work, let us rely on love instead.”

Thereupon, self Gu let out a gentle light as it attempted to break the spider silk, but this also failed.

Fate Gu said: “Oh human, why can’t you understand? Love is a type of fate, I arranged it to make Verdant Great Sun fall in love with Desolate Ancient Moon, I also arranged it to make the rockman fall in love with Desolate Ancient Moon. I also arranged success and failure in their lives, so they eventually ended up dead.”

“No! No——!” Ren Zu screamed and bawled.

Fate Gu listened quietly.

Ren Zu gradually lost the strength to cry, he mumbled powerlessly: “I understand now, I know why the feathermen pursue freedom.”

Fate Gu smiled: “Human, you also want to pursue freedom?”

Ren Zu nodded: “Yes, if I have freedom, I will be no longer be bound by you.”

Fate Gu: “But look at those feathermen, even though they pursue freedom, aren’t they still under my control?”

Ren Zu shook his head: “My freedom is different from them. I will pursue absolute freedom.”

Fate Gu laughed loudly: “A person’s absolute freedom is insanity. Oh human, see for yourself, you are seeking freedom but you are actually moving towards insanity. I already said this earlier, you will lose your mind. That is the road I arranged for you, you cannot escape my control.”

“No! I don’t believe you! I will use my own strength and wisdom to obtain freedom. I don’t believe your words, I will escape your control!” Ren Zu retorted.

Fate Gu’s laughter became louder: “Oh human, you are truly going crazy, you are already deranged. Did you forget? Your self Gu has only taken a bite of strength Gu and love Gu, so you only have your own strength and love, but not your own wisdom. Oh human, when you think you are intelligent, it will be the sign that you are going crazy.”

“Hahaha, hahaha.” It was Ren Zu’s turn to laugh: “I don’t believe you, oh fate Gu, I don’t believe you! I don’t believe that this world has fate.”

Fate Gu was silent for a moment before saying: “Even if you don’t believe it, I will still exist.”

Ren Zu rebuked: “No, that is not true. When I stop believing in you, you will stop existing. I refuse to believe in fate, fate does not exist! Hahaha!”

Fate Gu shook its head, sighing: “Truly pitiful, oh human, you have already fallen into insanity.”

Ren Zu scratched his hair and skin, his tears and mucus mixed together, he struggled, he knelt on the ground as he rolled around.

It was like how Fate declared, he had become insane.

...

Time flew by rapidly as a scene of the past suddenly appeared in Duke Long’s mind.

A million years ago.

“Do you believe in fate?” Duke Long was standing and looking at his disciple warmly.

His disciple was only a youngster with a glossy forehead, handsome appearance and bright eyes. He had long black hair that reached his waist, there was a lifelike red lotus birthmark on his forehead.

Duke Long continued: “Red Lotus, you are the future Immortal Venerable, you will definitely lead us humans towards the greatest prosperity and glory. You will certainly succeed, creating your own Gu worms and techniques, you will become the pride of your parents, become invincible in the world, and your name shall be marked in history. You will join Heavenly Court, become the leader of humanity, and bring blessings to all beings, your glory will shine throughout time and space.”

Young Red Lotus blinked his eyes before smiling, exposing his dazzling teeth: “There does not seem to be anything bad with this. I believe in fate!”

Duke Long returned to reality after the slight trance.

He looked at Feng Jin Huang and said solemnly: “Huang Er, you need to understand that you are the future Great Dream Immortal Venerable who will surpass all the past venerables! You will create dream path and be invincible in the whole world. Your glory will shine and spread for ages, becoming the eternal symbol and support of humanity. Don’t fear, don’t hesitate, take each success to press forward indomitably until you reach the supreme peak of this world!”

Feng Jin Huang’s eyes got brighter and brighter as she listened. She smiled with unparalleled beauty.

Duke Long also smiled.

Feng Jin Huang said: “If all this is predestined by fate, then... I do not believe in fate!”

“What?” Duke Long’s smile froze on his face.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1620: Southern Alliance

Heavenly Court.

The large formation let out buzzing noises as glaring light pierced deep into Spectral Soul’s body like sharp needles.

Despite him curling up and defending with all his strength, he was still hard-pressed to resist the formation’s power.

Fairy Zi Wei was concentrating fully on controlling the large formation while also absorbing all kinds of information extracted from Spectral Soul.

Only when the formation let out breaking noises did Fairy Zi Wei stop while feeling unsatisfied. She gave a deep glance at Spectral Soul.

Even if they were enemies, Fairy Zi Wei could not help but admire Spectral Soul’s tenacity.

He was clearly in a desperate situation with no trace of hope, but he was still resisting to the end. He was indeed worthy of being an invincible Gu Venerable.

Fairy Zi Wei left without saying anything.

Returning to her hall, she immediately began to concentrate on deducing. The use of Star Constellation Chessboard pushed her deduction ability to the peak of the world.

Countless thoughts emerged and faded in her mind like the flickering of countless stars. Her thoughts constantly collided with each each other, even flying out of the body, turning into countless purple light specks that covered Fairy Zi Wei’s body before spreading to fill the whole vast hall.

A long while later, the purple thoughts gradually drew in, dissipated and finally calmed. Fairy Zi Wei took a deep breath, stopping her methods as she slowly opened her eyes.

A layer of thin sweat had formed on her forehead, her brows were furrowed into a tight knot and she looked mentally exhausted.

“Fang Yuan, where in the world are you going to undergo tribulation?” Fairy Zi Wei muttered.

She had been working hard, repeatedly extracting various internal details of Shadow Sect from Spectral Soul. She was especially interested in Shadow Sect’s arrangements left in the five regions.

Because Fang Yuan had used Shadow Sect’s arrangement to capture the pursuing team of Southern Border righteous path in one go. If Fang Yuan was to undergo tribulation, he was very likely to once again rely on these arrangements. It would make no sense for him to not borrow this help.

Fairy Zi Wei had been closely paying attention to Fang Yuan’s cultivation progress. After the battle in Lang Ya blessed land, she clearly deduced Fang Yuan was not far from rank eight.

Rank seven and rank eight were two completely different levels!

In the absence of rank nine, rank eights were the peak of the world.

Once Fang Yuan advances to rank eight, he would truly become difficult to suppress, and would become an enormous obstacle for Heavenly Court.

“Fang Yuan’s final grand tribulation is the crucial point. If we can kill him here, it would be greatly beneficial to Heavenly Court and people all over the world.”

Fairy Zi Wei was not going to let go of any chance to kill Fang Yuan, but she found this matter was extremely troubling.

Because she could not tell the specific time and location of Fang Yuan's tribulation for sure.

Fang Yuan possessed emperor yama, which had strong defensive properties, not giving her any chance to make deductions against him.

Fang Yuan also had plentiful time path methods to alter the rate of time in the immortal aperture, so it could not be estimated when he was going to undergo the final grand tribulation.

Fang Yuan also had Fixed Immortal Travel and could undergo his tribulation anywhere in the world. How could Fairy Zi Wei make arrangements like this?

The most she could do was rule out black heaven and white heaven.

Because a blessed land would absorb a slightly higher amount of earth qi when undergoing tribulation, so it was usually done in the five regions.

Naturally, the possibility of undergoing tribulation in black or white heaven was small but not zero, there were several areas which were special and had abundant earth qi.

But what about the five regions?

The River of Time was only a secluded domain of heaven and earth, so Fairy Zi Wei could arrange Immortal Gu Houses in it and guard it heavily.

But when it came to the huge area of the five regions, even thousands of Immortal Gu Houses would not be enough. Let alone when Heavenly Court did not have enough manpower to assign to every area of five regions to interfere with Fang Yuan's tribulation.

Fairy Zi Wei heaved a sigh, she did not have any good solutions.

The plan now was to use all her strength to extract valuable clues from Spectral Soul and use them to deduce the possible locations where Fang Yuan could undergo tribulation. Meanwhile, she would actively contact the righteous path forces of five regions and release the news of Fang Yuan undergoing tribulation. Heavenly Court did not have control over the other four regions and was only able to borrow their strength.

The news that Fang Yuan was about to undergo tribulation quickly spread throughout the five regions.

Not only the righteous path clans and sects, even demonic and lone immortals heard about it.

Currently, Fang Yuan was already renowned throughout the five regions. Although he only had rank seven cultivation, his battle accomplishments were so amazing that he was already recognized as the number one person below rank eight. The Gu Immortal world acknowledged that even Feng Jiu Ge was inferior to him, he was the strongest new star of the demonic path in the last hundred years, his growth was so shockingly fast that when the Gu Immortal world reacted, he had already become a demonic path overlord.

So the news of Fang Yuan undergoing tribulation quickly created a heated discussion in the Gu Immortal world of the five regions.

“If this demon passes the final grand tribulation, he will become a rank eight Gu Immortal, how can we ignore this?!”

“Demons are rising while the righteous path is weakening, what else can we do?”

“This person is extraordinary, he possesses Spring Autumn Cicada, is someone who has been reborn, and also has obtained the inheritances of multiple venerables. A grand tribulation cannot stop him.”

“I have a different opinion. As the saying goes ‘one who commits many injustices is doomed to failure’, this demon is too arrogant, he wants to undergo tribulation, but he has to first see if Heavenly Court or the entire world’s righteous path are allowing it or not.”

Some were optimistic about Fang Yuan while some were pessimistic. But, one point was clear, the absolute majority of the Gu Immortals did not want to see Fang Yuan succeed in his tribulation.

“This demon brought chaos to the world when he was just rank six and even more disaster when he is rank seven, would he topple the world if he advances to rank eight?”

“I don’t care if Fang Yuan undergoes tribulation in other places. But if he undergoes tribulation in Southern Border, my Tie clan will not allow it!”

While the Gu Immortal world was in fervent discussions, Southern Border’s righteous path forces were also actively holding meetings or frequently contacting each other to discuss about how to deal with Fang Yuan.

Despite there still being hostages in Fang Yuan’s hands, if they were able to take this chance to eradicate this disaster, Southern Border’s righteous path forces would be more than happy.

The reason was simple: benefits!

Ignoring Fang Yuan and letting him grow stronger meant he would increasingly become a bigger threat and shroud over Southern Border’s righteous path, like a dark cloud. There might even be a day where one of them might face a calamity under his hands.

More importantly, Fang Yuan had an extremely huge amount of Immortal Gu, Immortal Gu recipes, inheritances, and all kinds of cultivation resources, he was simply a moving treasure trove. They might be able to obtain enormous benefits by killing him. Even if his immortal aperture was destroyed, as long as a fragment of his soul remains, these righteous path forces could soul search and might obtain some venerable’s incomplete inheritance. Just this alone was enough for these righteous path forces to go after him like a flock of cranes.

Wu Yong said in a heavy voice: “The headquarters of Shadow Sect are in Southern Border, there are bound to be many arrangements put in place here. Previously, Fang Yuan used one of the arrangements to capture many immortals. There is a high probability of Fang Yuan undergoing tribulation in Southern Border!”

Prior to saying this, Wu Yong had secretly received information from Fairy Zi Wei and knew of several arrangements Shadow Sect had put in Southern Border.

Wu Yong was fully aware Fairy Zi Wei was making use of him to deal with Fang Yuan. But Wu Yong was willing to be used. Because Fang Yuan had heavily toyed with him by disguising as Wu Yi Hai, Fang Yuan being alive was the greatest disgrace to the whole of Wu clan and him, Wu Yong!

“Lord Wu Yong’s analysis is sound.” Qiao clan Gu Immortal immediately added: “Fang Yuan captured Gu Immortals from every clan, he is also an inheritor of Shadow Sect, the current sect leader, he definitely has powerful soul path methods. After soul searching the captives, he will be clear of the situation of our Southern Border righteous path.”

“Moreover, our Southern Border has been through all kinds of large changes in these recent years, be they lone or demonic immortals, they have all suffered severe losses, especially our righteous path. If that demon undergoes tribulation here, he will face the least obstruction.”

“Even if Fang Yuan undergoes tribulation in Southern Border, how can we keep a lookout? Southern Border is so large, he could very well undergo tribulation in some corner, how would we know?” A Gu Immortal asked.

“We can know it by investigating.” Xia clan Gu Immortal replied, “Once he places his immortal aperture and connects to the world, he has to maintain this state till he finishes the tribulation. He will no longer be hidden in this period of time, and we will be able to trace him. Even without others’ help, our Xia clan’s wisdom path Gu Immortals will be able to deduce his specific location with the help of our formation.”

“Of course, if there are many wisdom path Gu Immortals helping us, we will have even more certainty in deducing Fang Yuan’s location, and also much more quickly.” Another Xia clan Gu Immortal continued, “The true difficulty is not in deducing his location but how we can reach there in time. There is also a premise here that we must have gathered a considerable number of Gu Immortals to deal with Fang Yuan.”

Southern Border’s Gu Immortals fell into silence.

Since ancient times, the Southern Border righteous path forces were numerous and divided, no one submitting to others. And to eliminate Fang Yuan, these Southern Border forces had to work with full cooperation and unity.

This could be considered an unprecedented event.

Fang Yuan was currently able to fight rank eight, but he was one person in the end. Any single super clan of the righteous path could make sure Fang Yuan had more trouble than he could handle during the tribulation, causing him to fail his tribulation and even die.

Because these righteous path forces either possessed rank eight Gu Immortal or had Immortal Gu Houses that could fight rank eight. Most of them had managed their territories and resources for thousands of years or even tens of thousands of years, so they had incomparably robust foundation. In contrast, Fang Yuan had developed for a considerably shorter time.

But was it possible for one super clan to use all their strength against Fang Yuan?

Impossible.

This was a jungle, every righteous path clan was a fierce beast who ruled over a territory. If this fierce beast left its territory to attack another fierce beast, even if the latter was not fully developed, it would still have claws and fangs.

This risk was too large.

Even if it killed the other, the fierce beast could very likely be injured and if its injuries were too severe, other fierce beasts would be attracted to invade.

Of course, the invasion would be under the cover of justice. They would find all sorts of excuses, with so many conflicts between Southern Border righteous path forces over the years, would they be worried about not finding an excuse?

Even if they really had no excuse, they could offer to ‘help’. For instance, take the initiative to help for the ‘prosperity of Southern Border’. Look at how passionate I am to help you. Do you dare to refuse? Do you have the strength to refuse?

So, the true difficulty in dealing with Fang Yuan did not lie in Fang Yuan himself.

Was Fang Yuan strong?

Indeed, being able to fight rank eight with rank seven cultivation was extremely rare even in history.

But what if he was compared to a super force?

Fang Yuan was not strong, he could not compare to a group’s strength. After continuous conflicts, Fang Yuan would start bleeding.

Some Southern Border Gu Immortals could only smile bitterly because they knew: The current situation was ironic. The ones binding them were themselves. They were wary of each other and kept each other in check. They divided their forces to guard their large territories to defend against each other.

The silence lasted a long while, until a Tie clan Gu Immortal suddenly spoke: “Actually, there is a way to resolve a portion of this issue. Everyone knows of the Immortal Gu House Beacon Tower of my Tie clan.”

Southern Border Gu Immortals maintained their silence, but it did not last long when another voice spoke: “I agree with Tie clan in building Beacon Towers.”

Everyone was shocked, because this person was none other than Wu clan’s first supreme elder Wu Yong!

Even that rank six Tie clan Gu Immortal who had spoken just now was surprised. Wu Yong actually supported Tie clan in building Beacon Tower?

While everyone was still in shock, Wu Yong spoke again, his voice was low and deep, his every word landing in the immortals’ minds like a giant rock.

He said: “It is time to make a change. Have you still not realized? The wave of the great era is already upon us, the five regions’ regional walls have also started to thin. If we don’t start changing now, we will be submerged by this wave of the new era.”

The immortals fell into silence.

Another person stood up, he was Ba clan’s first supreme elder who had always wanted to seize the number one position from Wu clan.

He rarely spoke and thus startled everyone: “My Ba clan supports Wu Yong. We need to look ahead, Central Continent has Heavenly Court, Northern Plains has Longevity Heaven, what does our Southern Border have?”

He paused for a moment before making a logical point: “We have many forces but every force is independent, we will be taken down by the other regions eventually. So I support Wu Yong and also agree to Tie clan building Beacon Towers.”

Not long after him, Chi clan’s first supreme elder Chi Qu You expressed his support.

Then, Luo clan, Hou clan, Chai clan, and so on also expressed their strong intent to unite.

Southern Border’s immortals suddenly realized that this event was of an extreme importance and would be recorded in the history of Southern Border!

Never had such a situation appeared where Southern Border’s righteous path forces joined hands. This was not just a superficial proclamation, but a true close cooperation!

The atmosphere was heated like never before, waves rose in Southern Border Gu Immortals’ minds as they felt an excitement at participating in a historical moment!

“Let Fang Yuan be the first sacrificial offering to our Southern Alliance, then... the other four regions!” Wu Yong did not conceal his ambitions.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1621: Fang Yuan’s Tribulation

Several months later, Southern Border.

In a nameless ordinary valley.

“Hah!” Rank six female immortal Ba Tao gave a loud shout as auras surged out from her body. She lifted her hands like she was bearing thousands of kilograms of weight, her face quickly reddened and her body started trembling in exhaustion.

“Quick.” Ba Tao urged.

A Gu Immortal who was standing at the side activated a killer move.

This person was a young looking rank six Gu Immortal from Tie clan. He was Tie Yi, son of Tie Qu Zhong.

Red light spheres started rising up, suddenly with a loud sound, the spheres turned into a soaring red light pillar that shot towards the skies.

But at this time, an old looking Gu Immortal revealed himself, he was standing on clouds. With a wave of his hand, he suppressed this red light pillar.

The red light pillar dissipated, revealing a seven floored pagoda that looked like it was forged from bronze. A fire was quietly burning on top of the pagoda.

“Done.” Tie Yi let out a breath of air, revealing a satisfied expression: “Another Beacon Tower is built.”

“So exhausting.” Ba Tao breathed a sigh of relief as she sat on the ground, panting.

The old looking Gu Immortal slowly floated down, at the same time, countless Gu worms gathered and went inside his sleeves.

This was a small group tasked to build Beacon Towers.

There were three people, Tie clan Gu Immortal Tie Yi was in charge of building the Beacon Towers, Ba Tao was supporting him, while the old Gu Immortal was in charge of setting up a formation to disguise the process. After all, the commotion of the Beacon Tower's construction was huge and could easily be known by others.

There were still more than a dozen of such groups. After Southern Border's righteous path forces agreed to collaborate, these small groups rushed everywhere to build Beacon Towers.

"Beacon Tower is indeed worthy of being Tie clan's signature Immortal Gu House, it is truly unbelievable for a Gu House formed from mortal Gu to be able to transport Gu Immortals!" The old Gu Immortal sighed while gazing at the Beacon Tower.

Tie Yi helped Ba Tao stand and replied to the old Gu Immortal: "The true terror of Beacon Tower is that the higher the number of Beacon Towers built, the greater their overall power. To reach an Immortal Gu House's power, there needs to be at least one hundred Beacon Towers. Right now, the number of Beacon Towers in Southern Border is already over one thousand and can transport rank seven Gu Immortals. But to transport rank eights, we need at at least ten thousand Beacon Towers."

"Many thanks for clearing my doubts." The old Gu Immortal expressed his thanks.

Tie Yi and the old Gu Immortal glanced at each other and smiled.

If it were before, this secret of Beacon Tower absolutely could not be mentioned. But because Southern Border's righteous path was uniting, the Gu Immortals' attitude towards each other was gradually changing.

"If we had a Beacon Tower near that tributary of the River of Time, our Southern Border righteous path could have mobilized our troops and saved my grandfather in time." Ba Tao mumbled in a daze while looking at the Beacon Tower.

"Ba Tao, we still have hope. Wasn't Yi clan's Gu Immortal released by Fang Yuan? This demon Fang Yuan just wants more cultivation resources." The old Gu Immortal consoled.

Tie Yi did not speak, his mind was, however, in a disorder.

His situation was similar to Ba Tao, his father Tie Qu Zhong had also been captured by Fang Yuan.

He was of course furious and hated Fang Yuan, but he had to admit that if Fang Yuan had not captured so many Southern Border Gu Immortals and made Southern Border righteous path feel pain, would Southern Border righteous path forces have united so quickly?

Between comfort and pain, the latter was able to move people's hearts much more easily.

Sometimes, Tie Yi felt this situation was ironic. Beacon Tower's plan had been Tie clan's dream since long ago, but it had come to fruition because of a demonic path overlord. Naturally, there was also another important reason, the impending great era. But regardless, Fang Yuan's actions had played a key role.

Whoosh whoosh.

The Beacon Tower suddenly let out a strange sound, even slightly shaking for a moment.

“What’s going on?” This sight immediately attracted the old Gu Immortal’s attention, he frowned and looked at Tie Yi.

Ba Tao also casted her gaze at Tie Yi.

She had participated in building many Beacon Towers, but had never seen this scene before. Were there some flaws in the construction of this Beacon Tower?

Tie Yi’s frown was even deeper: “You don’t need to worry, this scene is not because of an issue with this Beacon Tower, it is because one of the Beacon Towers spread throughout the Southern Border has been completely destroyed.”

“Oh? So it was like that.” The old Gu Immortal slightly relaxed.

Ba Tao snorted coldly.

This scene was within the expectations of Southern Border’s righteous path. Although the construction of Beacon Towers had obtained the approval of Southern Border’s righteous path, Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world had demonic cultivators and lone cultivators as well.

Beacon Towers were under the control of Tie clan, it represented the benefits of Tie clan and other Southern Border super forces, which had no relation to these demonic and lone cultivators.

It was extremely likely for a Beacon Tower to be destroyed by these Gu Immortals if they discovered it.

“Investigate who attacked, we will kill them as a warning to the others!” The old Gu Immortal’s killing intent soared, this was one of the methods, discussed by the Southern Border righteous path forces, to deal with such matters.

However, at the next moment, Beacon Tower’s anomaly shocked the three immortals.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh.

A series of strange sounds resounded for a while. The newly constructed Beacon Tower trembled non-stop like an epileptic patient.

“What happened?”

“This... does this mean many Beacon Towers are being destroyed successively?”

Ba Tao and the old Gu Immortal once again looked at Tie Yi.

This time, even Tie Yi was puzzled as he mumbled: “Strange, does this Beacon Tower really have an issue?”

But at the next moment, their doubt was removed.

The three immortals’ expressions changed because they had received astonishing news at almost the same time.

The mad destruction of Beacon Towers was caused by only one person, it was none other than the nefarious and unpardonable demonic path overlord Fang Yuan!

“Fang Yuan has outstanding wisdom path methods, it is not difficult for him to deduce the location of these Beacon Towers. He also has Fixed Immortal Travel and can move anywhere freely. It is not strange for him to be able to do this.” Tie Yi’s expression was gloomy.

“Damn it! That incompetent Heavenly Court, they actually let Fang Yuan steal

Fixed Immortal Travel!” Ba Tao said furiously with clenched fists.

The old Gu Immortal was steady and cautious: “We should return to our clans. Since Fang Yuan is moving about, it is not safe outside.”

Tie Yi and Ba Tao tensed up as they thought of Fang Yuan’s methods, having no intention to stay behind.

At the same time, Wu Yong, Chi Qu You and other clan leaders were in an urgent meeting.

“Fang Yuan probably noticed the threat of Beacon Towers so he is taking an early action to destroy them! Look, my clan’s Beacon Tower has already made him feel unease.” Tie clan’s first supreme elder said.

“Hmph, just let him destroy. The construction of Beacon Towers is quite difficult and requires Gu Immortals to personally do it. But they are only constructed with mortal Gu, so their cost is low, we can just let him destroy them.” Shang clan’s first supreme elder laughed coldly, showing the aura of a wealthy force.

Wu Yong, however, frowned, he had slightly more understanding of Fang Yuan: “Fang Yuan is crafty, we cannot look down on him. I feel like his action has another deep meaning, it is not as simple as it looks.”

Wu Yong’s words immediately attracted other Gu Immortals’ attention.

One of them spoke: “Would this be possible? Fang Yuan is going to undergo tribulation in Southern Border, and one of these Beacon Towers is extremely near to the location where he will undergo tribulation. So he took action and destroyed a large amount of them.”

“It is reasonable!”

“Quick, gather wisdom path Gu Immortals to make deductions!”

“As long as Fang Yuan makes a move, he will leave behind all kinds of clues. Right now, he is making a big commotion, we will definitely have more gains in our deductions.”

After a round of deductions, there were indeed great results.

Southern Border righteous path obtained three locations which had the greatest possibility of being the areas where Fang Yuan would undergo tribulation.

“Quickly investigate.”

“These three areas should be emphasized and guarded heavily.”

Similar commands were passed down, Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world moved with an unprecedented and united pace, all to kill their common enemy.

A moment later, shocking news reached every Southern Border force — there was an unusual disturbance of heaven and earth qi in the five regional mountain range and its range was extremely large!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1622: Besieging Fang Yuan

“Five regional mountain range?” Jun Shen Guang’s thoughts flickered.

Fang Yuan’s unbridled destruction of Beacon Towers caused a huge commotion, even Heavenly Court, which had very weak influence in Southern Border, was able to detect it.

Southern Border’s righteous path forces had gathered many wisdom path Gu Immortals and deduced three locations, which also included the five regional mountain range.

While in Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei deduced alone but had found out about five regional mountain range a step earlier.

Jun Shen Guang immediately moved towards the five regional mountain range.

At the same time, all kinds of relevant information about the five regional mountain range appeared in his mind.

This five regional mountain range was not a naturally formed mountain range, but was man-made. The person who could create such a mountain range was naturally not ordinary, he was rank eight restriction path Gu Immortal Tao Zhu.

This person had extraordinary attainment level and was called Restriction Expert. He had done deep research regarding the five regional walls, he attempted to find a way to allow Gu Immortals to travel through the regional walls easily.

Unfortunately, even until his death, there had been no progress. But this five regions mountain range was left behind and became a special area in Southern Border.

“Senior Thunder Ghost True Monarch was beaten by Fang Yuan when she chased him into the regional wall, this battle revealed the secret of Fang Yuan receiving almost no suppression in regional walls. The regional walls can even be said to be his natural territory.”

“Unfortunately for him, it is almost impossible to draw in heaven and earth qi in regional walls, he definitely can’t undergo tribulation in the regional walls. But five regional mountain range is different, this area is man-made and has ample earth qi since it is in Southern Border, heaven qi is also not scarce in it, it is also able to provide some territorial advantages for Fang Yuan!”

Jun Shen Guang was extremely fast, he had already crossed tens of thousands of li while all kinds of thoughts moved rapidly in his mind. He could already see the five regional mountain range on the horizon.

Jun Shen Guang was able to so quickly rush to the scene because he had been lurking near this area.

Everyone knew of the five regional mountain range, it was not a secret.

Months ago, Fairy Zi Wei had deduced some locations where Fang Yuan might undergo tribulation. Five regional mountain range was among the top possible locations.

As such, the five regional mountain range was one of the heavily observed locations by Heavenly Court.

This time, to deal with Fang Yuan, Fairy Zi Wei did not hesitate to transfer many rank eight Gu Immortals into the other four regions. Southern Border had two, Jun Shen Guang was one of them, the other was a rank eight Gu Immortal, Wei Feng, who was rather far away but was currently rushing towards the location with all haste.

Jun Shen Guang reached close to five regional mountain range and activated a killer move to hide himself before carefully moving forward.

Swoosh swoosh!

Endless amounts of heaven and earth qi, like giant river waves, were drawn in and gathered in the central area of the five regional mountain range.

That area was covered in shadows and bright light, nothing could be seen. That area was like a bottomless hole that endlessly devoured the enormous amount of heaven and earth qi.

“This scale, it is truly terrifying...” Jun Shen Guang felt a chill from the sight. He quickly activated his unique investigative methods.

After Fang Yuan successfully trapped and captured the group of Southern Border Gu Immortals, Jun Shen Guang had appeared to inspect the battlefield.

Right now, Jun Shen Guang was vigilant and did not dare to rashly move ahead even though he was a rank eight Gu Immortal, a rank higher than Fang Yuan. If by any chance, he rashly entered the five regional mountain range and discovered it was Fang Yuan’s trap, it would be truly miserable.

After Jun Shen Guang inspected properly, he confirmed someone was indeed undergoing tribulation.

But whether it was Fang Yuan or not was unknown.

Jun Shen Guang was extremely patient and used other methods, after a while of investigation, he confirmed an otherworldly demon was undergoing tribulation.

As such, Jun Shen Guang was almost one hundred percent sure this was where Fang Yuan was.

“He is truly undergoing tribulation here!” Jun Shen Guang mumbled, his gaze holding some disbelief.

But he quickly reacted, smiling at himself: “The truth sounds fake while the lies sound real, Fang Yuan is clearly here but I actually don’t dare to believe it.”

Northern Plains’ Hei tribe had unique methods that could detect otherworldly demons. Heavenly Court naturally also had similar killer moves.

Back when Fairy Zi Wei had tried to persuade Fang Yuan to surrender, she had revealed: Heavenly Court is the Heavenly Court of humanity, even otherworldly demons would be accepted in it. Heavenly Court had indeed recruited otherworldly demons before but there were no clear records in history, so others were unaware.

It was not strange for Heavenly Court to possess such methods.

Jun Shen Guang was currently using this method.

“The probability of Fang Yuan taking such methods into consideration and deceiving us is too low. After all, even if he has reborn, this method was specially modified by Lady Zi Wei recently.”

“I’ve heard that after Yuan Qiong Du joined Heavenly Court, besides being in charge of restoring fate Gu, he has also been refining Immortal Gu targeted towards dealing with Fang Yuan.”

There were cases in history where rank eight demonic path Gu Immortals caused havoc in the world.

When Heavenly Court became unable to restrain them easily, they would refine Immortal Gu to deal with such demons. This kind of Immortal Gu were specially meant to subdue specific demons, and as such had extraordinary effect.

Fang Yuan was only rank seven but was already thought so highly by Heavenly Court, a case like this was unprecedented even in history.

“There could be another reason, he is no longer able to delay the grand tribulation and must undergo the tribulation!” Jun Shen Guang’s eyes flashed with sharp light.

Someone was undergoing tribulation here and that person was an otherworldly demon; it was clear that person was Fang Yuan.

If it were someone else, who would come to this place to undergo tribulation?

Adding on the scale of the heaven and earth qi, and the otherworldly demon identity, who else could it be other than Fang Yuan?

“Good, good, good. Fang Yuan, my Heavenly Court has finally caught you!” Jun Shen Guang’s face shined with increasing excitement.

Fang Yuan had already started his tribulation and could not move casually during this time, he had become a live target.

Even if he had Fixed Immortal Travel, how could he use it?

This could be said to be Fang Yuan’s weakest moment.

Jun Shen Guang’s expression slowly calmed down, turning serious as a deadly and murderous aura moved around his body.

“If I kill Fang Yuan, I will make a world-shaking contribution!” Jun Shen Guang’s heart was set on fire, it was truly lucky that he could encounter such a good opportunity!

“No wonder Lady Zi Wei once told me that I had abundant luck, although it is not a match for Fang Yuan’s, I won’t be suppressed by his luck as long as I don’t make the first move. If I stalk from behind like an oriole, waiting for Fang Yuan’s luck to weaken, I have a chance to win.”

Jun Shen Guang’s eyes were already burning with killing intent.

“So what if it is the five regional mountain range? It is only an imitation of the regional walls, even if Fang Yuan was undergoing tribulation in the regional wall, I, Jun Shen Guang, would forcibly enter and kill him!”

Rumble!

A sonic wave suddenly erupted as an Immortal Gu House charged into the five regional mountain range like lightning.

Jun Shen Guang’s heart immediately chilled: “Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building? These Southern Border immortals arrived really fast! Sure enough, the Beacon Towers helped them a lot. Even my Heavenly Court does not have such methods to gather troops so quickly. When we invade Southern Border in the future, we must first get rid of these Beacon Towers."

Jun Shen Guang was actually somewhat happy to see these Southern Border righteous path forces. He wanted these people to spearhead the attack, wearing down Fang Yuan's battle strength and luck.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building rose to the sky, Wu Yong and the Southern Border righteous path immortals were looking at the whole five regional mountain range from within the bamboo building.

Many Gu Immortals felt puzzled and stunned at such a scale of heaven and earth qi.

Some wisdom path Gu Immortals deduced together, and soon, one of them excitedly said: "It is almost certain that Fang Yuan is undergoing tribulation here!"

"Great!"

"Wonderful, wonderful."

"Fang Yuan is a heinous demon with deep sins, we will avenge our Southern Border righteous path's brethren by taking his head today."

"We are saving the world by killing this demon, we will bring blessings to the people of the world!"

"Hmph, this Fang Yuan really thinks my Southern Border righteous path is a pushover? He is really undergoing tribulation in Southern Border."

"Hehehe, he probably thought we will be afraid because he has our members in captivity. Little could he imagine how firm our Southern Border righteous path is in defending our values!"

The Southern Border immortals were full of battle intent.

Xia clan's second supreme elder Xia Zhao and third supreme elder Xia Chen Yuan looked at each other with helplessness. They really wanted to save their first supreme elder Xia Cha, but they had no choice but to go with the flow in this atmosphere.

Southern Border's righteous path forces were already suppressing deep anger from being extorted by Fang Yuan. It was just that they were not able to find Fang Yuan's location, after calculating the benefits, they chose to be extorted to protect the hostages.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan was in front of them, as long as they killed him, they might be able to obtain inheritances of multiple venerables, countless cultivation resources, and several secluded domains of heaven and earth!

The soaring hatred and the enormous benefits made these Southern Border Gu Immortals' eyes turn red.

"Our Southern Border righteous path alliance is newly established, we need to establish a name for ourselves using an infamous demon, Fang Yuan is perfect for this. Everyone, this damned demon is undergoing tribulation, we have limited time, we will attack from all sides and make his death anniversary exactly a year from now!" Under Wu Yong's command, Southern Border righteous path immortals rushed out.

They had a powerful group of immortals: Chi Qu You, Shang Wu Jie, and other rank eight Gu Immortals; seniors with high authority like Xia Zhao and others, rank seven experts like Yao Du, Hou Teng, Ba De and so on. Even Jun Shen Guang who was hiding inwardly clicked his tongue. This was almost the full force of Southern Border's righteous path, there were probably only some minor rank six immortals left to guard their headquarters.

At this moment, inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Heaven qi was surging rapidly, boundless lumps of lights condensed into dozens of giant beams of light and shot towards Fang Yuan.

Earth qi solidified, restraining Fang Yuan's movement.

Fang Yuan was austere, his attention was not on the tribulation, but outside his immortal aperture.

“Oh wow, quite a number of people have showed up. Southern Border's righteous path really hates me, of course the wealth I possess is also extremely attractive. Besides them, there definitely have to be Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals lying in ambush, but I am not able to find them for now.”

He had captured many Southern Border Gu Immortals and soul searched them, gaining deep understanding of Southern Border's righteous path, but he did not dare to have any hint of carelessness right now.

Southern Border's righteous path had robust foundations and hidden trump cards. Especially some deeply hidden trump cards, even the clan's first supreme elder might not be aware of them, let alone the captives in Fang Yuan's hands.

“The Beacon Towers are troublesome indeed.” Fang Yuan heaved a sigh.

“I destroyed so many, but it is extremely easy for them to construct more again. In my first life of five hundred years, Southern Border was defeated repeatedly before they finally began constructing Beacon Towers on a large scale. In this life, because of me, the construction of the Beacon Towers has been brought forward. Those holding high positions are indeed not simple, they cannot be underestimated.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1623: Eight Ears Monkey

The Southern Border immortals immediately felt strong forces of repulsion and attraction when they entered the five regional mountain range.

They activated their killer moves to move forward while maintaining defensive methods, their immortal apertures shook constantly as they suffered backlash from their immortal killer moves.

“This demon chose quite a good place!” Some Southern Border Gu Immortals said with hatred.

“Even if my immortal aperture is destroyed, I will get rid of this demon!” Many Gu Immortals instead became filled with battle intent as their thoughts of killing Fang Yuan became even more firm.

Fang Yuan was so crafty and vicious, he was audacious and arrogant, having no fear of even Heavenly Court let alone of the other regions' righteous paths.

This person was only rank seven but had ambushed Southern Border's righteous path immortals and taken them captive for ransom, if he was allowed to advance to rank eight, how disastrous would that be?

If Fang Yuan was a righteous path member, it would be fine.

Righteous path had to abide by rules. But he was of the demonic path, a lone individual, he killed or robbed others for the cultivation resources he needed. This was an irreconcilable conflict!

Moreover, Fang Yuan not only had terrifying battle strength to kill and loot, he could even defend against deductions, this was too frightening.

This calamity must be eradicated as early as possible!

“Kill! Charge in!! Avenge our clansmen.”

“Whoever kills Fang Yuan will be heavily rewarded by me, Shang Wu Jie!”

“I, Chi Qu You, will personally set up an immortal formation for them!”

“My Wu clan will open the treasury and let the person who kills Fang Yuan choose three Immortal Gu!!”

The morale of Southern Border's Gu Immortals soared crazily in front of the great rewards. They split into various groups and moved to every area of the five regional mountain range, creating a perimeter around the central area before charging in.

Caw caw!

A series of chicken cries was heard, a giant immemorial year chicken suddenly appeared and blocked Shang Wu Jie's group.

Fang Yuan had naturally made arrangements, spreading immemorial year beasts in all directions to block the enemy.

This immemorial year chicken charged ferociously towards the Southern Border Gu Immortals.

The accompanying rank seven Gu Immortals felt a chill in their hearts and were about to defend with all their strength when they suddenly heard Shang Wu Jie's snort.

“A little chick trying to block me!” Shang Wu Jie shouted, directly activating a rank eight killer move.

Boom!

The immemorial year chicken was sent flying, it crashed into a mountain and fell unconscious immediately.

The rank seven Gu Immortals gasped at this sight, their gaze towards Shang Wu Jie had already changed.

“Shang Wu Jie might be a rank eight Gu Immortal but he was never famous for his battle strength, I didn't imagine his offensive move to be so fierce!”

“An immemorial year chicken is still an immemorial year beast, but was knocked unconscious by Shang Wu Jie without even a chance to retaliate.”

“Ferocious, too ferocious!”

“Shang clan is ranked among the top five super forces of Southern Border, but the strength Shang Wu Jie showed is too powerful.”

Shang Wu Jie’s performance was extremely shocking. No matter how weak the immemorial year chicken was, it was still at rank eight level, who could have thought it would be get done in by just one move.

“Oh? He brought weak chicken Gu with him...” Fang Yuan was observing the situation outside while undergoing the tribulation.

The immemorial year chicken’s poor performance made Fang Yuan recall a famous transaction in his previous life. Ba clan rank seven Gu Immortal Ba Ji paid an enormous price to obtain rank eight weak chicken Gu from Shang clan. Because of some special method, he was actually able to use this Immortal Gu and increase his strength greatly, successively raising a huge storm in the five regions chaotic war.

“Currently, Gu Immortal Ba Ji is still in closed cultivation, he is not famous and is hardly regarded by anyone. Weak chicken Gu is still with Shang clan and was brought by Shang Wu Jie to deal with me.”

Shang Wu Jie’s battle strength was not outstanding among Southern Border’s rank eights, but he created a great sensation with weak chicken Gu.

Fortunately, that immemorial year rooster was only unconscious and not killed, it could still be saved.

Fang Yuan immediately sent an immemorial year snake to attack Shang Wu Jie’s group.

The two sides confronted, Shang Wu Jie was immediately obstructed, his previous momentum coming to an abrupt stop.

Several other groups were also facing Shang Wu Jie’s situation, and they all had rank eight Gu Immortals. Fang Yuan was clearly prioritizing defending against these rank eight existences.

These immemorial year beasts were not the match of the rank eight Gu Immortals in one-on-one combat, but they could block them for some time.

Moreover, it was different in the five regional mountain range.

The difficulty of using any immortal killer move increased greatly and the Gu Immortal would even suffer the backlash. There were also attraction and repulsion forces that constantly disturbed the Gu Immortals. They not only had to concentrate on the fight, but also had to constantly pay attention to these constant attraction and repulsion forces.

These attraction and repulsion forces became greater on those with higher cultivation. Rank eight Gu Immortals would face great difficulty to make any move, this was also why, under normal situations, rank eight Gu Immortals traveled through black heaven or white heaven, detouring around this path.

But in the end, the five regional mountain range was only an imitation of five regions’ regional walls, so its obstruction towards rank eight Gu Immortals was not as powerful as the true regional walls. Even so, it still greatly restricted the actions of rank eight Gu Immortals.

For a moment, even Wu Yong had to use all his strength to fight the immemorial year beast, unable to move any further.

These immemorial year beasts came from the River of Time and were not born in the five regions, so they suffered no restrictions.

As for Immortal Gu House Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, it was a consolidated immortal killer move and would be severely restrained in the five regional mountain range. Wu Yong had already stored it inside his immortal aperture and did not dare to rashly take it out.

“This demon’s scheme is truly sly, no wonder he chose this place to undergo tribulation!” A Gu Immortal coughed out blood and shouted.

“Forget us, charge in and disturb Fang Yuan’s tribulation. We can’t let him pass this tribulation!” Chi Qu You shouted.

Fang Yuan had arranged all the immemorial year beasts, but their numbers were not as high as the Southern Border Gu Immortals.

While the immemorial year beasts were restraining the Southern Border immortals, they were also being restrained at the same time. Many Southern Border Gu Immortals passed around the immemorial year beasts and charged towards Fang Yuan.

“Formation, rise!” Fang Yuan was not panicked, under his command, a large immortal formation suddenly activated in the surroundings.

Instantly, the Southern Border Gu Immortals lost their five senses, dense fog appeared before them making them lose their direction.

“This demon had a backup plan indeed!”

“Don’t be afraid, Immortal Gu Houses can’t be used easily in the five regional mountain range, the same applies to immortal formations. Once enough time passes, it will collapse by itself, at that time, Fang Yuan will have to bear the backlash of the collapse!”

“No, this is exactly that demon’s plan. As long as he can hold out for this time and pass the tribulation, even if the formation collapses and he suffers backlash, he can use Fixed Immortal Travel to escape.”

The Southern Border Gu Immortals rapidly conversed with each other, immediately realizing Fang Yuan’s delaying tactic.

“We need to break this formation as soon as possible!”

“Do you have such methods?”

“Not good, Chi clan’s Gu Immortals are all obstructed, none of them came.”

“Damn it, this demon did it deliberately.”

“Hahaha.” Suddenly, a Gu Immortal’s laughter could be heard.

Everyone’s gaze was attracted towards the source, they saw a person with a large head, small body, and crafty eyes. Someone immediately asked: “Friend from Hou clan, why are you laughing?”

Hou clan Gu Immortal Hou Zi Shua stopped laughing and said: “No need to be worried, everyone, I found that this formation has no space path ability, it is only confusing our senses and causing us to fail to detect the correct direction. I have a beast that can be used for this. Come out!”

Just as he finished speaking, a strange light shot out of Hou Zi Shua’s immortal aperture and landed on his shoulder, turning into a monkey.

This monkey was small, covered with dense amount of silver fur, it had eight ears, four on the left and four on the right.

A Gu Immortal gasped in shock: “Could this be an immemorial desolate beast eight ears monkey?!”

Hou Zi Shua laughed loudly: “You are exactly right!”

Ear monkey was a strange and precious beast, it was an information path beast. Even ordinary mortal ear monkeys were scarce, an immortal ear monkey was even rarer.

When the ear monkey has six ears, it is a desolate beast. Seven ears meant ancient desolate beast. And eight ears meant an immemorial desolate beast!

Instantly, the Southern Border immortals’ gazes towards Hou Zi Shua changed.

Hou Zi Shua only had rank seven cultivation, he neither had great battle strength nor was famous, who could have thought he was actually hiding an immemorial desolate beast!

He had really hidden it deeply, he might not have showed this trump card if not for this expedition to kill Fang Yuan.

“Monkey, monkey, where is the enemy?” Hou Zi Shua stroked the eight ears monkey’s small head and softly commanded.

The eight ears monkey, an immemorial desolate beast, was actually so tame that it obediently listened to Hou Zi Shua’s words. It immediately tilted to the side and listened for a moment, before screeching and pointing towards a direction.

Everyone followed its direction, immediately making continuous breakthroughs.

Suddenly, the immortal formation changed, the eight ears monkey immediately screamed loudly; it listened once again before pointing to another direction.

Fang Yuan frowned, if this went on, he would not be able to block these Southern Border Gu Immortals even if he repeatedly changed the formation.

“It is actually an eight ears monkey! Although Hou clan has always focused on raising and enslaving monkeys, I didn’t think they had such a rare divine beast.” Jun Shen Guang’s killing intent rose.

Killing Fang Yuan was of great importance, Jun Shen Guang hesitated for a moment before deciding to take the risk. When the Southern Border Gu Immortals had entered the five regional mountain range, he had already quietly activated a killer move to conceal himself and enter.

The other Heavenly Court Gu Immortal, Wei Feng, was rapidly approaching as well.

“Beasts like eight ears monkey can perceive everything in the surroundings, when Central Continent invades Southern Border, most of our concealment methods will be useless. Killing it will be greatly helpful to my Heavenly Court’s plan!”

A trace of killing intent appeared in Jun Shen Guang’s eyes when he looked at the eight ears monkey.

The eight ears monkey immediately reacted, giving a sharp panicked screech.

“This beast is quite sensitive!” Jun Shen Guang quickly retracted his gaze and looked ahead: “Forget it, I will spare it for now. The urgent task is still Fang Yuan.”

“Don’t be afraid, don’t be afraid!” Hou Zi Shua comforted the eight ears monkey.

Right at this time, their vision suddenly cleared up, some Gu Immortals shouted: “We have broken out!”

Whoosh whoosh whoosh.

The sovereign immortal aperture’s entrance was wide open as it endlessly devoured the surging heaven and earth qi.

“This is Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture?”

“We are close now!”

Their enemy was in front of them, but the Southern Border immortals were dazed, looking at each other, none dared to move forward.

Fang Yuan’s terrifying might made these rank seven Gu Immortals feel uneasy.

“Hmph, the Southern Alliance might have been established, but can the overall situation be changed instantly? These people are still a disorderly band!” Jun Shen Guang sneered.

He continued to move ahead while concealing himself, he was trying to enter Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

“Once I enter Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture, he will be in a passive state and will have to hold back for fear of destroying his own resources.”

“I don’t even have to fight Fang Yuan, I just need to move around while destroying his resources, Fang Yuan definitely would not be able to bear it.”

“Even more perfect is that Fang Yuan’s grand tribulation has yet to form, if I disturb him from the side, he will make a mistake trying to deal with everything and I might really be able to kill him.”

“But for more assurance, I should continue to hide inside his immortal aperture, and after Fang Yuan has fought the tribulation and Southern Border immortals for a while, I can make a fatal move. Hahah! I can’t wait to see his expression when he realizes a powerful enemy has entered his immortal aperture.”

Jun Shen Guang possessed extremely powerful concealment methods, this was one of his specialties.

Naturally, he knew there was also a possibility of him being seen through and discovered by Fang Yuan.

But if he did not grasp such a great opportunity, he would miss a chance at victory! Moreover, the probability of Fang Yuan seeing through his concealment was low.

What did not carry risk? Let alone when it would be a fierce battle.

Jun Shen Guang was a high and mighty rank eight Gu Immortal, but he had never lost the courage to stake his life. It was just that he had a clear understanding of when he should take the risk and when he should not.

“Now is the time to stake my life!” Jun Shen Guang’s eyes shined with bright light as he activated his immortal killer move. He endured the backlash and entered the sovereign immortal aperture along with heaven and earth qi.

The Southern Border immortals had all been maintaining investigative killer moves but none of them detected Jun Shen Guang.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1624: This is a Trap!

3

The immortal aperture’s entrance was wide open, but the scale of the absorption of heaven and earth qi had already decreased by a lot.

“What is this? The enemy is in front of you and you are all hesitating?” A Tie clan Gu Immortal shouted at the Southern Border immortals.

Many became red with shame, they immediately came to their senses and someone yelled: “Let’s charge in together!”

“Fang Yuan is still undergoing tribulation, we will win this battle! Whoever runs away will be the biggest disgrace of Southern Border’s righteous path!”

“That’s right, let’s charge into his immortal aperture. Even if we die, we will make sure this demon has huge losses!”

“Hehehe, why so pessimistic? This demon has extorted so many things, his immortal aperture definitely has wondrous and rare resources, not to mention he also has a few secluded domains of heaven and earth!”

“My clan’s Gu Immortal is still in his captivity, I wonder where he is putting the captives.”

“I have already checked, there are no immortal formations around us.” Hou Zi Shua assured while stroking the eight ears monkey’s small head.

The Southern Border immortals immediately put their hearts at ease.

Fang Yuan’s formation had made Southern Border’s righteous path suffer huge losses. After this problem was removed, their morale soared, charging into the entrance of the immortal aperture one after the other.

Buzz buzz buzz!

But right at this moment, there was a change.

Ear-piercing buzzing sounds resounded throughout the battlefield, almost bursting the immortals’ eardrums.

At the same time, an extremely dazzling light burst out; many Southern Border Gu Immortals were caught off-guard, their vision was covered in white as they temporarily lost sight.

The Southern Border immortals were shocked, they defended in panic while sending out countless killer moves towards the center of the light.

The person inside the light was not Fang Yuan, but Jun Shen Guang!

He was furious and shaken: “This killer move of mine is fright light, it will activate automatically when I face fatal danger and I don’t need to control it. Fright light was activated when I tried to sneak into Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture! What’s going on?! Could there still be a trap?”

1

He was a rank eight Gu Immortal, he retreated rapidly while blocking the bombardment of the Southern Border immortals.

“Hehehe, you have great methods, but since you have arrived, why be in a hurry to leave?” Fang Yuan’s leisurely laughter reached Jun Shen Guang’s ears.

Jun Shen Guang’s mind jolted, crying out: “Oh no!”

He immediately sensed a formless attraction force pulling him, trying to drag him into Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

Immediately, Jun Shen Guang’s doubt completely disappeared, he was certain that this was Fang Yuan’s trap!

Jun Shen Guang roared and without regard for the backlash from the five regional mountain range, he crazily activated his immortal killer moves to resist the formless attraction force.

Jun Shen Guang used his main method to turn into a ray of strange light once again and tried to shoot out of the battlefield.

But although the killer move succeeded, the strange light’s speed was so slow, to the point of being like a snail or a tortoise.

“Damn it, this is a time path method!” Jun Shen Guang immediately identified it because this time path method had slowed down his time by close to one hundred times.

Jun Shen Guang was extremely shocked: “I am a rank eight Gu Immortal with rank eight dao marks, why am I being slowed down so much? Fang Yuan’s time path method is actually at rank eight level, this is completely beyond the previous information, how did he achieve this?”

“What happened?”

“I have been struck!”

“Time is extremely slow, it is like I am trapped in a swamp, quickly think of some way!”

Like Jun Shen Guang, the nearby Southern Border immortals were also in the same situation.

“Hehehe, you all came uninvited, I should naturally pay such enthusiasm a hundredfold in return.” Fang Yuan descended on the battlefield.

They saw a Gu Immortal wearing a loose white robe, with black hair fluttering in the wind, his face was handsome to the point of being beautiful. A pair of deep abyss-like eyes with a gaze filled with coldness and terrifying killing intent.

The Gu Immortals here were all too familiar with this appearance, such that their bodies started shaking and their faces paled in fright.

Someone among the Gu Immortals said with a trembling voice: “Fang Yuan!”

Fang Yuan ignored these rank seven Gu Immortals and looked at Jun Shen Guang.

Jun Shen Guang’s face was red as he used all his strength to get rid of the time path restraints. He had plenty of methods and they were showing good effects under his efforts, the time path restraints on him were decreasing and his speed was subsequently increasing.

Fang Yuan smiled, slowly extending his left arm.

His pristine jade-like hand spread open elegantly, like the blossoming of a white lotus.

Soul path aura surged out and instantly shrunk fiercely, condensing into an illusory figure in Fang Yuan’s left palm.

This illusory figure looked like the real Luo Po Valley, but shrunk by countless times.

Luo Po Valley’s illusory figure leisurely rotated while Fang Yuan’s left hand began to slowly close.

Jun Shen Guang’s mind rang madly with warning signals, an unprecedented sense of danger had shrouded his whole body and mind. His eyes opened wide, almost about to rip open from the nervousness.

“What is this killer move?! Terrifying, too terrifying! My feeling is not wrong, I will not survive if I get hit by this move! Escape, I must escape!!”

Jun Shen Guang’s face turned completely red, his thin brows trembled madly as his previous grace completely disappeared.

Immortal killer move — Sun Deity’s Radiance.

With a shout, he directly used his strongest method. His whole body turned into a lump of light, endless light erupted, it was like a small sun had appeared in the battlefield!

The scalding white light had inexhaustible might, wherever it went, Fang Yuan’s time path methods crumbled apart.

The Southern Border immortals had just freed themselves when they were engulfed by the endless glaring sunlight.

The imitation regional wall that spread over every mountain dissipated completely under the illumination of the powerful sunlight. The whole five regional mountain range began to shake, especially the center of the battlefield where large amounts of mountain rocks began to crumble and fall.

The aftereffects of sun deity’s radiance even affected other battlefields.

Southern Border’s groups with rank eights, who were fighting with immemorial year beasts, were heavily disturbed by this.

“This is a rank eight Gu Immortal of Central Continent?”

“Hmph, this is probably a person of Heavenly Court!”

The light dissipated, the scene at the central battlefield became extremely clear. Suddenly, a Gu Immortal cried out in shock.

“Wait, that immortal aperture... that is my clansman’s immortal aperture!”

“What? It is not Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture?!” Everyone was terrified.

“This is a trap!” Jun Shen Guang shouted as he forcibly concentrated and retreated madly.

“Escaping?” Fang Yuan suddenly appeared above Jun Shen Guang.

Jun Shen Guang’s heart shook fiercely as he stared at Fang Yuan rigidly with narrowed eyes. In that instant, he suddenly realized that rather than saying Fang Yuan was ambushing Southern Border Gu Immortals, it was more accurate to say he was specially ambushing Heavenly Court’s members like himself!

“So your true target was me!”

“Hmph, you have already exposed that move, I am now already on guard. Your trap has also collapsed, can you still restrain me?”

“A mere rank seven... I am a rank eight Gu Immortal! I also have Wei Feng rushing here now.”

“Unless this group of Southern Border Gu Immortals teamed up with you, do you think you can kill me?”

Jun Shen Guang breathed heavily, countless rays of light flowed around him like liquid, protecting him heavily.

Sure enough, the Southern Border immortals attacked at the next moment.

Their target was Fang Yuan!

Wu Yong took the lead, while Chi Qu You and Shang Wu Jie followed closely behind. They attacked Fang Yuan, disregarding the attacks of the immemorial year beasts. Following them, large numbers of Southern Border Gu Immortal experts used their main techniques.

Jun Shen Guang laughed heartily: “Fang Yuan, you demon, you have brought your own doom by committing so many sins! You still want to kill me? Your death is certain today!”

“Is that so?” In the brink of danger, Fang Yuan was still calm, the corners of his lips even rose slightly to reveal a mocking smile.

Boom!

At the next moment, his rank seven aura suddenly changed. An incomparable aura soared to the skies and shot in all directions.

Everyone at the scene was greatly shocked.

“What?!”

“Rank eight aura!”

“Impossible!!”

Fang Yuan’s body paused slightly before he lightly pointed his finger.

Immortal killer move — Spring Scissors!

Next, he folded his hands, his sleeves fluttered and formed a fan.

Immortal killer move — Summer Fan!

“This is?!” Chi Qu You and Shang Wu Jie were dumbstruck at this scene.

“This is Lady Xia Cha’s...” Several of Xia clan’s rank seven Gu Immortals cried out, an extremely bad feeling shrouded everyone’s hearts.

Rumble!

Spring scissors attacked Jun Shen Guang, immediately suppressing him, while summer fan which was in Fang Yuan’s hand waved rapidly, blocking all killer moves of the Southern Border immortals.

At this moment, Fang Yuan’s demonic aura surged as he fought the whole group alone, it was a grand spectacle!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1625: Luo Po Seal

Shock!

All the Gu Immortals present at the scene felt shocked at seeing Fang Yuan fight against everyone.

They had come to obstruct and disturb Fang Yuan from passing his tribulation, to prevent him from becoming rank eight.

But none of them had thought that when they saw him, he was already rank eight.

This unexpected result caught all of them off guard.

“When did he advance to rank eight?!” Chi Qu You’s eyes were wide open in disbelief.

“It is not strange for him to be able to use spring scissors and summer fan, the important thing is that these killer moves have been amplified by time path dao marks and are able to obstruct all the attacks. Even if Fang Yuan advanced to rank eight, how could he have gained so many time path dao marks in such a short period of time? I think he has likely possessed Xia Cha’s body and used familiar face to deceive us and make us think he has already passed the tribulation.” Shang Wu Jie forced himself to calm down and analyzed.

“No! First supreme elder’s Spring and Summer are both rank eight Immortal Gu and can only be activated by rank eight immortal essence.” Xia clan’s second supreme elder Xia Zhao shouted.

“Then...” Shang Wu Jie immediately hesitated.

Immortal essence contained the Gu Immortal’s will and had to belong to themselves, if they died, their heavenly spirit or land spirit could use their immortal essence.

The only exception was Immortal Gu Houses as immortal essence from any source could be used in them. But the killer moves Fang Yuan used were clearly not Immortal Gu Houses.

If Fang Yuan was only rank seven with red date immortal essence, he would not be able to activate rank eight Immortal Gu Spring and Summer, even if he possessed Xia Cha’s body and obtained her immortal essence.

“No use in thinking much, we will know after killing Fang Yuan.” Wu Yong called out.

He flew forward, the immemorial year beast behind him collapsed to the ground, unable to get up.

At this crucial moment, Wu Yong displayed powerful battle strength, he first killed Fang Yuan’s immemorial year beast and then used all his strength to attack Fang Yuan.

“Fang Yuan!” Wu Yong’s gaze was cold as his battle intent surged wildly, “Even if you have truly advanced to rank eight, you won’t escape your doom today. This five regional mountain range, which you carefully chose, will be your graveyard!”

Just as he finished speaking, the whole mountain range began to tremor violently.

The ground quaked, the mountains shook, and debris flew everywhere.

“What’s happening?” The immortals were stunned.

Wu Yong’s voice traveled to everyone’s ears: “Don’t panic, this is a backup plan I arranged, it can change the alignment of the earth vein under the five regional mountain range and destroy the mountain range!”

The immortals were even more puzzled.

So what if the earth vein’s alignment changed?

But soon, they had a pleasant surprise, as the mountain range gradually crumbled, the five colored lights unique to the five regional mountain range were also rapidly dissipating.

“This?!” Even Jun Shen Guang was astonished.

“Amazing. Without these shackles, our battle strength will recover and we will no longer be restrained!” Southern Border’s Gu Immortals were rejoicing.

“Wu Yong is indeed different from Wu Du Xiu, he still had another card up his sleeve!” Shang Wu Jie’s eyes flickered with sharp lights.

“How can Wu clan be so familiar with five regional mountain range? There cannot be this level of effect just by changing the alignment of the earth vein. They also would have to know the arrangements made by Tao Zhu back then!” Chi Qu You’s thoughts were fluctuating rapidly.

The large formation, set up by Wu clan’s and Qiao clan’s Gu Immortals in the periphery of the five regional mountain range, was constantly rumbling, it was the source of the change in the entire five regional mountain range.

Qiao Si Liu, Wu Yu Bo and some others were in charge of this formation.

Wu Yu Bo chuckled coldly while looking towards the battlefield: “This demon Fang Yuan wants to rely on the five regional mountain range, now that we have destroyed his territorial advantage, how will he defend against our Southern Border righteous paths’ attacks?”

Qiao Si Liu was silent, her expression was slightly complicated.

She had once been quite close with ‘Wu Yi Hai’ and had even believed she and he would get married. But the outcome was shocking beyond her imagination. Wu Yi Hai was actually Fang Yuan in disguise. She felt a chill every time she thought of how close she had been with a great demon like Fang Yuan.

She did not have any feelings left for Fang Yuan, her complicated emotions were because of the five regional mountain range.

Everyone thought Tao Zhu’s research of the regional walls did not succeed. But that was not quite true.

Qiao clan had by chance obtained clues to Tao Zhu’s inheritance and had been secretly exploring the clues to excavating the inheritance.

But they had not expected Wu Yong to know of this information, and under his pressure, Qiao clan had to offer their findings which were then used now.

It was because of such clues that Wu Yong had a deep understanding of the five regional mountain range and could make the lights of the five regions disappear by changing the earth vein. If it were any other who tried to change the earth vein without knowledge, unless they were extremely lucky, the lights would still exist for the most part.

“Oh! This is a rank eight Gu Immortal’s inheritance, but it is all used up here, and with the destruction of the five regional mountain range, there is no hope in exploring the inheritance anymore.” Qiao Si Liu sighed.

She seemed to have had many thoughts, but a very short time had passed.

Jun Shen Guang’s fright light activated as he was chased by Fang Yuan, the Southern Border immortals attacked Fang Yuan but their attacks were blocked by Fang Yuan who revealed rank eight cultivation, Southern Border immortals conversed rapidly, while Wu Yong made the first move, the five regional mountain range crumbled, removing Fang Yuan’s terrain advantage.

All these changes happened in an instant.

Fang Yuan endured the Southern Border immortals’ attacks while still chasing after Jun Shen Guang even when Wu Yong was nearing him.

Jun Shen Guang had used his trump card, his aura had already fallen to an extreme point. His sun deity’s radiance killer move was extremely powerful, but it not only expended a huge amount of white litchi immortal essence, it also permanently decreased his light path dao marks. It was a move that dealt damage to the enemy as well as to himself. Moreover, he had activated it inside the five regional mountain range and had already suffered a powerful backlash. Although he managed to escape for the moment, he was seriously injured.

But now, the lights of the five regions were rapidly weakening, Jun Shen Guang felt like a huge load was removed from his back, he felt more at ease in his movements as his greatest concern was removed.

Looking at Wu Yong rushing towards Fang Yuan, a thought appeared in Jun Shen Guang's mind: "Should I cooperate with the Southern Border Gu Immortals to kill Fang Yuan?"

This thought had just emerged when it was immediately rejected by Jun Shen Guang.

"Continue to escape!"

The current situation was extremely complex, he was not a Southern Border Gu Immortal. More importantly, Fang Yuan was chasing him, if he managed to escape, it would mean Fang Yuan's failure.

Jun Shen Guang prioritizing his escape was a very wise move.

Fang Yuan was still chasing him closely, disregarding Wu Yong.

At this time, there was another change.

A powerful aura suddenly emerged. Enormous pillars in five colors soared to the skies, a loud voice reverberated throughout the five regional mountain range: "Junior, you did well, you actually passed my final test of destroying the five regional mountain range. Now, my five regions inheritance is yours! Cultivate properly and you can move unrestrained and unhindered over the world in the future, don't let down my name."

In the middle of the five colored light pillars, a smoke-like will condensed into the vivid appearance of a Gu Immortal.

Many gazes were inevitably attracted towards this. Someone recognized this appearance: "This looks like old man Tao Zhu."

"This can't be, right?" At the periphery of the mountain range, Qiao Si Liu heard the voice from within the pillars and felt strange: "Tao Zhu's final test was to destroy the five regional mountain range? This accidental action actually activated Tao Zhu's inheritance!"

Tao Zhu's will heard someone calling him old man and immediately felt unhappy, speaking arrogantly: "What old man, since you are inheriting my inheritance, how could you be so disrespectful?"

Rumble!

Wind blew rapidly, heaven and earth roared.

Replying to him was Wu Yong's rank eight killer move, but it was targeted towards Fang Yuan and not him.

Fang Yuan's immortal robe shook and ripples appeared on it, it was the immortal killer move reverse flow protection seal!

This move reflected the attack, Wu Yong continued to close in while enduring the reflected attack.

Fang Yuan's speed was immediately restrained.

The move Wu Yong used had an extremely wide range, so reverse flow protection seal only reflected back a portion that had struck Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan continued to fly while reflecting the attacks back, although he was completely safe, his speed was greatly reduced.

Fang Yuan had already used reverse flow protection seal many times, how could Wu Yong not have prepared specific restricting methods?

“What!” Tao Zhu’s will was stunned, he quickly looked around and saw several rank eight Gu Immortals fighting, there were also many rank seven experts present on the scene. He almost broke down from the shock!

“What, what’s going on?” This was completely different from his original expectation, there was no respectful junior in front of him, there were only vicious and fierce Gu Immortals!

“Ignore him, he is just a dead man.”

“The inheritance is here, we can take it after the battle!”

“The urgent thing now is to kill Fang Yuan! Not to mention Tao Zhu’s inheritance, I would even give up a Gu Venerable’s true inheritance to kill Fang Yuan!!”

The immortals shouted in fury, their attention once again focusing on Fang Yuan’s body.

Tao Zhu’s will: “....”

He was stupefied, this was completely out of his expectations.

Shortly afterwards, he shook as he reacted: “Who in the world is that person being chased by so many Gu Immortals? To kill him, they can even give up a Gu Venerable’s true inheritance?”

Tao Zhu’s will looked towards Fang Yuan but did not recognize him.

“Who is this person? Someone who became a Gu Immortal after my main body’s death?”

Right at this time, Fang Yuan had finally caught up to Jun Shen Guang.

Jun Shen Guang’s whole body was soaked in sweat from the nervousness, intense warning signals caused his heart to beat like a drum!

He escaped with all his strength while cursing internally: “Wu Yong, you bastard! What killer move did you use, even trapping me?”

Wu Yong’s killer move had an extremely wide range, even Jun Shen Guang received its ‘care’. Wu Yong’s exquisite method was not so easily broken, Jun Shen Guang’s strength fell sharply, his speed fell even more than Fang Yuan’s.

“It’s over.” Fang Yuan mumbled lightly as he attacked with no change in his expression, calm like an ancient well.

The illusory figure of Luo Po Valley in his palm was slowly rotating. Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s fingers clenched it tightly.

A gray light shot out from the gap between the fingers.

Fang Yuan then opened his palm and slapped towards the distant Jun Shen Guang.

COMMENT

The light shot out with extreme speed, Jun Shen Guang dodged it frantically like a headless housefly.

Wu Yong, who was chasing from behind, had a sinister look in his eyes.

A wild wind suddenly blew around Jun Shen Guang, obstructing him heavily.

“Wu Yong, I curse your grandmother!” Jun Shen Guang did not even have time to complete his curse when Fang Yuan’s gray light struck him.

In an instant, his flight came to an abrupt stop. His physical body had no injuries, but his soul was heavily injured to the point it was almost extinguished!

Immortal killer move — Luo Po Seal!

While Jun Shen Guang was in a daze, an Immortal Gu House suddenly appeared beside Fang Yuan. Inside the Immortal Gu House, Ying Wu Xie attacked Jun Shen Guang with a killer move he had prepared for a while.

Immortal killer move — Lead Soul Into Dream!

Jun Shen Guang could not react, instantly falling into a dream realm, unable to extricate himself.

The Immortal Gu House was shadowy and faint, it immediately absorbed Jun Shen Guang and flew to Fang Yuan’s side.

Wu Yong paled from fright!

He had disturbed Jun Shen Guang because he wanted to test the power of Fang Yuan’s move. After all, Jun Shen Guang was not a Southern Border Gu Immortal, why not make use of him once?

But Wu Yong had never expected Fang Yuan to capture Jun Shen Guang in one move!

Previously, Fang Yuan had captured the Southern Border immortals by trapping them in a meticulously laid out time path formation. But now, he captured Jun Shen Guang with just a few methods!

Such an increase in battle strength was simply horrifying.

“What killer move is that, it feels like it only targets the Gu Immortal’s soul? It has such terrifying might, I must defend against it!”

“There is also the Immortal Gu House! What is that Immortal Gu House, it almost cannot be detected when it is concealed!”

Southern Border’s rank eights rushed over with surging momentum.

But when they witnessed Fang Yuan capturing Jun Shen Guang, they were shocked and bewildered as their battle intent fell sharply.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1626: Wu Yong’s Loss

Fang Yuan’s actions shocked Tao Zhu immensely!

Where did this soul path Gu Immortal come from? He severely injured a rank eight Gu Immortal with just one attack! Such imposing demonic might, even Spectral Soul was merely at this level when he was young.

“I didn’t expect this young man, who looks so delicate, to be so vicious and have such peerless methods. He must have committed many sins, or else why would Southern Border’s righteous path attack him on such a scale?”

Noticing this, Tao Zhu’s will became frightened.

For the first time, he felt that the pillars of light around him were so glaring.

“My main body had made this arrangement for the convenience of the inheritor. Oh, who could have expected this situation to happen at the moment the inheritance activated.”

“What did I do to deserve this? Was it easy for my main body to make such a painstaking arrangement?”

Tao Zhu’s will immediately felt lonely and helpless. In this situation, let alone him, a mere will, even his main body would have to stay away from this conflict.

The implications were too deep and troublesome, he could not rashly get involved!

Tao Zhu’s will was frightened, dejectedly curling inside the pillars while mumbling: “Don’t look at me, don’t look at me...”

Why would the Gu Immortals have the time or mood to look at him?

Fang Yuan had captured the rank eight Gu Immortal Jun Shen Guang in front of everyone, such terrifying battle strength made the rank seven Gu Immortals have parched mouths, and even the rank eights were dazed.

“How can we defeat such a powerful enemy?”

“If I stake my life and something unexpected happens, what will happen to the clan? Other rank eights will keep their lives while I will be wasting mine for them.”

When Fang Yuan was rank seven and could fight rank eight with reverse flow protection seal, Southern Border’s rank eight Gu Immortals could accept this level of battle strength.

But it was completely different now!

Fang Yuan was not only a rank eight Gu Immortal, he also possessed a mysterious and powerful method that seemed to be a soul path method. And it made a great combination with lead soul into dream.

Jun Shen Guang’s example was right in front of them, the Southern Border rank eight Gu Immortals could also very well fall to Fang Yuan’s vicious methods!

At the crucial moment, the deep-seated problem for Southern Border’s righteous path emerged again. They were forces who had prioritized themselves for too long, a heavy wariness against each other was already ingrained deep in their bones, even if they realized the necessity of an alliance, faced with a choice at this time, these rank eight Gu Immortals all felt hesitation.

These Southern Border rank eight Gu Immortals hesitated, but Fang Yuan had no hesitation.

He laughed loudly as he turned around and charged towards Wu Yong.

“Wu Yong! What did you say earlier? This is my graveyard? Hahaha! I think it is the opposite, this is your graveyard. Come, come, let’s settle the score once and for all!”

Fang Yuan gave a loud shout, his voice resounding throughout the five regional mountain range like thunder.

His white robe and hair fluttered in the wind, his demonic aura and surging killing intent shocked the immortals.

Chi Qu You, Shang Wu Jie and other rank eight Gu Immortals looked at Fang Yuan targeting Wu Yong, feeling complicated. They were tense but also could not help feeling a slight relief as all kinds of thoughts lingered in their minds.

Fang Yuan might be powerful but he was only one man in the end. Moreover, Chi Qu You had transacted with Fang Yuan before.

In the current Southern Alliance, the alliance leader’s position was empty and Wu Yong was undoubtedly the number one choice for it. If he became the alliance leader, who knew how he would treat the other clans.

Southern Border had always been divided, the biggest problem in working together were the mental hurdles and self-interest of the respective Gu Immortals.

When two tigers fought, one was definitely going to be injured.

Whether the injured one was Fang Yuan or Wu Yong, it was beneficial to other clans.

Moreover, it could not be said we had not come to aid, aren’t we being hindered by immemorial year beasts?

“Useless bunch!” Wu Yong inwardly cursed when he saw no one coming to his aid.

But he did not fear Fang Yuan, instead his courage and battle intent were stirred!

“Let me see what method you used to capture a rank eight Gu Immortal!” Wu Yong took out Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and controlled this Immortal Gu House to charge straight at Fang Yuan.

Although Fang Yuan had a mysterious Immortal Gu House, it absolutely would not be able to survive a collision with Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, his eyes flashed with a sinister light as he suddenly changed his direction and flew down.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building’s momentum was too fierce and fast as it missed its target.

“Wu Yong, you are safe with the Immortal Gu House to protect you. In that case, how about I kill these rank seven immortals, can you save them? Hahaha!” Fang Yuan laughed madly.

“Damn it!” Wu Yong quickly changed the direction of Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and chased after Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan continued: “Wu Yong, you have such a huge ambition, you established the Southern Border alliance to become its leader, right? Let’s see if you will still have the face left to become the alliance leader after I kill these people!”

Fang Yuan had not actually made any real attacks at Wu Yong, but his words were like blades that stabbed deeply in Wu Yong’s heart.

Wu Yong had led the Southern Border immortals to besiege and kill Fang Yuan, on one hand, it was because he had deep hatred towards Fang Yuan, on the other hand, it was to accumulate reputation to pave the road to the position of alliance leader.

But if he let Fang Yuan kill these rank seven Gu Immortals while he remained safe inside Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building without being able to do anything to Fang Yuan, his reputation was sure to take a huge hit and he would be even further from the position of alliance leader.

Wu Yong was anxious and furious, almost pacing around in Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building. Although Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was extremely fast and was rapidly catching up to Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan had already reached those rank seven Gu Immortals.

“Persevere!”

“Am I going to die?”

“Not necessarily! There are many Gu Immortals here, we still have hope of survival!”

Fang Yuan had yet to attack but these rank seven Gu Immortals’ morale had already dissipated, they did not have any thought of counterattacking and were only thinking of how to preserve their lives.

The scene of Fang Yuan capturing a Central Continent rank eight Gu Immortal was truly horrifying.

“Go die! Hmm?” Fang Yuan’s shout suddenly stopped.

At the moment of danger, a dense yellowish-brown radiance suddenly appeared under the Southern Border immortals and firmly protected them.

This was a rank eight defensive killer move!

“Fang Yuan, why commit more murders? You kill me, I kill you, this cycle is too pitiful and miserable. You are an outstanding person of this era, why can’t you see through this?”

Lu Wei Yin’s figure appeared not far away.

“Hmph! You again!” Fang Yuan gazed fiercely at Lu Wei Yin.

Boom!

At the next moment, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building flew over like a meteor and carried with it Wu Yong’s intense hatred and anger, heavily collided with Fang Yuan’s back.

Immortal killer move — Reverse Flow Protection Seal!

Fang Yuan was completely safe, the attack was reflected back to Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

But the enormous collision force sent Fang Yuan flying like a cannonball.

Wu Yong was suddenly at ease, he had sent Fang Yuan away from these rank seven Gu Immortals and it would be even more difficult for him to attack these people.

But soon, Lu Wei Yin’s voice reached him: “Not good! This is Fang Yuan’s plan, he is escaping!”

Wu Yong’s expression immediately turned ashen as he helplessly looked at Fang Yuan smoothly charging into that immortal aperture.

The moment he entered, the immortal aperture’s entrance loudly closed.

“Fang Yuan is too crafty, since he put an ambush here, how could he not have arranged an escape route? He entered the immortal aperture because he must have a way to escape, like Fixed Immortal Travel!”

Veins popped up on Wu Yong’s forehead, he felt extremely stifled.

Immortal apertures had always been easy to defend and hard to attack, especially an immortal aperture that had its entrance closed. Naturally, Southern Border’s righteous path group could break into this blessed land. But Fang Yuan already had enough time to escape!

Wu Yong had gathered such a large team but still failed, not only was he unable to harm a single hair of Fang Yuan, a Central Continent rank eight Gu Immortal was captured right in front of everyone!

This was simply a kick to Wu Yong’s face.

“What is more insufferable is this guy...” Wu Yong’s dark gaze stared at Lu Wei Yin.

He suddenly spoke: “Lu Wei Yin, why didn’t you stop him?”

Lu Wei Yin quickly greeted as he said slowly: “I am ashamed! I already used all my strength to protect these Southern Border friends, I truly did not have strength left to obstruct him.”

Lu Wei Yin was instantly swarmed with countless expressions of gratitude from the Southern Border Gu Immortals.

Wu Yong breathed heavily in anger, his fists were tightly clenched but he could do nothing to Lu Wei Yin.

Lu Wei Yin had a terrifying background of being Paradise Earth’s inheritor and was the competitor who possessed the greatest threat to Wu Yong’s dream of taking the alliance leader position.

Wu Yong had led the immortals to besiege Fang Yuan but had left Lu Wei Yin behind so he could more easily accumulate prestige.

But the result was: Fang Yuan escaped while Wu Yong gained nothing, his reputation suffered while Lu Wei Yin was the complete opposite!

Wu Yong’s gaze shined sharply as if lightning sparks were flashing inside.

After a while, he sighed and let his body relax, the anger on his face completely disappeared while his battle intent soared inwardly. A faint smile appeared on his lips as he clapped, thinking: “Fang Yuan, Lu Wei Yin, you two are truly something! I lost this round entirely because of you two...”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1627: Zi Wei’s Lingering Fear

“How could this be? How could this be...” When information of the Southern Border battle reached her, Fairy Zi Wei kept on mumbling in perplexity.

The vast and bright hall was now filled with doubts.

Fang Yuan had not only passed the tribulation, becoming rank eight, he had even laid a trap in the five regional mountain range and captured Heavenly Court Gu Immortal Jun Shen Guang!

Fairy Zi Wei already knew of the Southern Border Gu Immortals being captured by Fang Yuan, but she had never imagined the same fate would befall her Heavenly Court so quickly.

A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal was actually captured alive!

How long has it been since this happened?

The instant she learned of this news, Fairy Zi Wei had subconsciously thought of the impressive battle achievements of multiple Demon Venerables.

Her brows showed her worry and there was even nervousness.

Despite her estimating Fang Yuan highly, his growth had still greatly surpassed her expectations.

“Ever since Fang Yuan gained reverse flow protection seal, he has been huge trouble. Now that he has become rank eight, along with Xia Cha’s methods, regardless of using the terrain advantage in the five regional mountain range to weaken his enemies, he indeed possesses a threat to Heavenly Court Gu Immortals!”

Fairy Zi Wei heaved a deep sigh.

She had already expected such a day. So she had tried all ways to eliminate this danger beforehand, but who could have expected Fang Yuan’s progress to be so fast!

“Fang Yuan’s progress is getting faster and faster, it seems like the quantitative change is becoming a qualitative change. But how in the world did he become a rank eight without any commotion?”

Fairy Zi Wei did not understand.

She had always thought Fang Yuan’s extremely fast cultivation progress was because he had used time path methods to quicken his immortal aperture’s rate of time.

But looking back over it, Fairy Zi Wei suddenly realized Fang Yuan also had a peerless method that could raise his cultivation level!

“Then... what is this method?”

Fairy Zi Wei did not continue deducing, instead she left the hall and arrived at Spectral Soul’s confinement area.

The large formation rumbled into motion, after a long while, Fairy Zi Wei returned to her hall with a shaken expression.

“Sovereign immortal fetus Gu! Sovereign immortal aperture... so it was like this!” Fairy Zi Wei muttered to herself, she was dazed and her soul was shaken.

Spectral Soul’s ambition shocked her.

What made her even more fearful was that sovereign immortal fetus Gu had been refined and obtained by Fang Yuan!

An intense bitterness emerged in her heart.

Spectral Soul had really hidden it too deeply!

If not for Fang Yuan revealing clues this time which made Fairy Zi Wei doubtful and use a specialized soul search, she would still have been in the dark.

“No wonder Fang Yuan’s cultivation speed is so fast! This time, he should have annexed many Southern Border Gu Immortals’ immortal apertures to skip tribulations and become a rank eight.”

“He could activate Xia Cha’s killer moves and confront other rank eights head on, this means he has annexed Xia Cha’s immortal aperture. Only then would he have enough time path dao marks to amplify Xia Cha’s killer moves.”

“Immortal apertures can only swallow smaller immortal apertures, but the sovereign immortal aperture is special. But devouring Xia Cha’s rank eight grotto-heaven would require time path great grandmaster attainment, how could Fang Yuan have it?”

“Wait!”

Suddenly, Fairy Zi Wei’s expression became extremely unsightly.

All kinds of clues merged in her mind and removed her previous bewilderment.

“Fang Yuan has dream path methods and can raise his attainment level through dream realms!”

“No wonder he entered Southern Border and plundered dream realms. His time path great grandmaster attainment was definitely gained from dream realms.”

“Gasp...”

Thinking of this, even Fairy Zi Wei, who held a high status and was very experienced, could not help taking in a cold breath.

Fang Yuan had the sovereign immortal aperture and could devour apertures to skip calamities and tribulations.

And the biggest obstacle in devouring apertures was the attainment level of the respective paths.

It was extremely difficult to raise attainment level and often required hundreds of years. But Fang Yuan could quickly raise his attainment level through dream realms.

Like this, he could create a beneficial cycle, his cultivation speed could rise to a level where it could raise a terrifying wave even in the entire history of human cultivation.

“No, more accurately, what is terrifying is Spectral Soul. Fang Yuan was only a chess piece of heaven’s will to destroy Spectral Soul’s heaven defying plan, it was just that he escaped heaven’s will’s control in the end.”

Fairy Zi Wei felt a chill.

Heavenly Court had already confined Spectral Soul and Fairy Zi Wei would also frequently torture and soul search to extract important information from Spectral Soul.

But despite this, Fairy Zi Wei was feeling deep lingering fear.

If Spectral Soul had truly succeeded, he would have great grandmaster attainment level in all paths. With his extreme killing nature, he could continue devouring apertures and along with Shadow Sect and Zombie Alliance’s resources, he could totally go straight to rank eight!

At this level, Spectral Soul would have pseudo-venerable battle strength.

More importantly, when the five regions chaotic war starts and dream realms appear everywhere, Spectral Soul might even be able to progress further. His huge ambition could be felt just by looking at lead soul into dream! He had already made countless preparations in this aspect. If he truly reached this step, his dominance would be too large. Even the Great Dream seed Feng Jin Huang might have no chance to mature.

“Fortunately, he was not able to make the breakthrough during the most important juncture. Currently, Fang Yuan is taking his place in this plan, so it is more accurate to say that he did not succeed but he did not completely fail either.”

Fairy Zi Wei frowned deeply when she thought of Fang Yuan.

“Fang Yuan gave up on those Southern Border Gu Immortals and instead prioritized capturing Jun Shen Guang. His action is similar to me soul searching Spectral Soul, he wants to get the location of Heavenly Court from Jun Shen Guang’s soul.”

“Oh no... the River of Time!”

The tumultuous river was always flowing.

It was so vast that its ends could not be seen.

From inside an Immortal Gu House, Fang Yuan quietly looked at the ebb and flow of the river and its countless dazzling ripples.

The River of Time!

After entering the immortal aperture and gaining some free time, Fang Yuan used an immortal killer move made with Fixed Immortal Travel to escape the battleground.

Not long later, he entered the River of Time.

Right now, Jun Shen Guang’s soul was facing constant soul searching inside his sovereign immortal aperture.

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated.

Fang Yuan urgently needed to know what arrangements Heavenly Court had made in the River of Time!

“I laid an ambush in the five regional mountain range and fought a large battle, although I captured Jun Shen Guang, I revealed too much information.”

Fang Yuan wanted to catch Heavenly Court off guard and not give them enough time to respond, so he directly entered the River of Time in this short time period.

“This Lu Wei Yin is not simple. His action was too timely, saving those Southern Border rank sevens at the most critical time. He was probably hiding nearby all along.”

“Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had a merciful and compassionate nature, he restored peace to the chaotic world and repaired the damage done by Spectral Soul in all five regions. In the five regions, and especially Southern Border, among the ten venerables, his reputation is the highest.”

“As his current inheritor, Lu Wei Yin has inherited this reputation as well. This person is going against me, but his true goal does not look to be so simple and is hidden in a layer of fog.”

“Unfortunately, there is no such person in the memories of my previous life!”

The more he thought, the more Fang Yuan felt his five hundred years of memories were not reliable.

Naturally, there was also the possibility that the butterfly effect of his rebirth had spread until it involved Lu Wei Yin.

Fang Yuan slightly shook his head, forgetting about Lu Wei Yin for the moment, and thought of Tao Zhu’s inheritance.

He felt a huge regret.

Tao Zhu’s true inheritance was definitely related to the five regions’ regional walls.

The five regions’ regional walls would disappear without a trace in the future and the five regions would merge into one, Tao Zhu’s research in crossing the regional walls would look like a joke.

But think about it carefully.

Tao Zhu could construct the five regional mountain range, couldn’t this method of imitating the regional walls be used to defend oneself?

Especially for Fang Yuan, fighting in regional walls was extremely advantageous.

“It is a pity, a true pity. The situation did not allow me to take this inheritance, I had missed this true inheritance of Tao Zhu by a hairsbreadth.”

Fang Yuan’s wisdom path attainment was not low, he had a strong premonition that missing this chance to obtain Tao Zhu’s inheritance was a severe loss to him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1628: Present and Past Pavilion, Four Xunzi

“Tao Zhu’s true inheritance...”

If this was months ago, Fang Yuan might be able to use the Southern Border Gu Immortals to exchange for this inheritance.

But now, the Southern Border captives that he had were already annexed, he had already killed the hostages.

These Southern Border Gu Immortals were all rank seven Gu Immortal experts, while Xia Cha had rank eight cultivation level. The sovereign immortal aperture annexed them as well as the immortal aperture blessed lands in City Well, Fang Yuan’s cultivation level rose rapidly, he went from rank seven to rank eight, skipping the final rank seven grand tribulation.

Fang Yuan originally planned to continue capturing Southern Border Gu Immortals in the five regional mountain range before extorting them. But because of Lu Wei Yin, Fang Yuan’s plan was disrupted.

Not only did his cultivation level rise, because the sovereign immortal aperture could annex his enemies perfectly, Fang Yuan’s dao marks also rose in huge numbers!

Using perceivable dao Immortal Gu to check them, Fang Yuan’s current dao mark accumulation was extremely deep.

He originally had very little time path dao marks, almost at the bottom, but it had emerged to become his number one path, having seventy-three thousand dao marks. Almost all of it was Xia Cha’s contribution, he had truly ‘become wealthy from one single robbery’.

With so many time path dao marks, Fang Yuan’s time path killer moves could be amplified by seventy-four times. Along with the rank eight Gu Spring and Summer, his battle strength was extremely high now. Within the five regional mountain range, he managed to block the attacks of many Gu Immortals at once.

Of course, he had made use of the territorial advantage of the five regional walls’ trait, the Southern Border Gu Immortals could not work together well and conflicted with each other.

The second was water path dao marks, reaching sixty thousand.

He had a lot of water path accumulations, Fang Yuan had killed lone immortals Zhou Li, Wu Yi Hai, You Chan, and others, while many of the Eastern Sea lone immortals in City Well were also water path cultivators.

Third was transformation path, having fifty thousand. It was originally first place, but had fallen to third place now.

Fourth was soul path at thirty thousand. The immortal aperture’s own dao marks, as well as the yellow spring ghost martial statue earthly calamity and green lightning divine martial statue heavenly tribulation, along with other accumulations, added up to twenty-nine thousand. The remaining hundreds were obtained from Fang Yuan’s soul cultivation. According to Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, after million man soul, ten million man soul, hundred million man soul, and desolate soul... after reaching desolate soul, there would be a thousand dao marks on the soul.

Next were ice and snow path, rule path, metal path, wood path, fire path, wind path, and other common paths, they had about twenty thousand.

After that were dark path, light path, strength path, qi path, luck path, sound path, blood light, and others, being around ten thousand.

And finally, food path, phantom path, and others were in the thousands and hundreds category.

Next, the dream realms.

Fang Yuan had already explored all of his dream realms in these few months, all of his different paths had grown to certain extents.

The highest was still refinement path at quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level!

Second were theft path and time path at great grandmaster level.

Third were blood path, strength path, star path, wisdom path, and others, they were all at grandmaster level. Rule path and soul path also entered this category.

The paths below that will not be explained in detail.

Unlike dao marks, attainment level was harder to raise as it got higher. The ones with the most evident growth were time path, soul path, and rule path.

Other than dao marks and dream realms, Fang Yuan’s development of the sovereign immortal aperture had also risen greatly due to his annexing of immortal apertures, it had reached fifteen percent development.

And worth noting was that in Xia Cha’s immortal aperture, Fang Yuan found a year essence pool!

This way, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture had two year essence pools.

Other than these, Fang Yuan’s greatest gains were two things.

One was Luo Po seal.

Fang Yuan had always been trying to create this immortal killer move, he only succeeded recently.

The other was an incomplete Immortal Gu House.

Fang Yuan had wanted to build his own Immortal Gu House long ago, so that Hei Lou Lan, Bai Ning Bing, and the rest could fight in battle with him.

To create this Immortal Gu House, Fang Yuan took reference from Secluded Residence, Cloud City, Dark Flow Giant City, Profound Ice House, Unbreakable Iron Fortress, Blood River Chariot, Nightmare Castle,Green Wave Pavilion, Weaving Cocoon Manor, Golden Altar, Regret Pool, Sacred Feather City, Bai He Palace, and other Immortal Gu Houses, while the skeleton of the design was based on Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

Several months ago, while extorting Southern Border’s righteous path to exchange Gu for Gu, Fang Yuan obtained many crucial Immortal Gu that allowed him to create the skeleton.

This Immortal Gu House was created by Fang Yuan himself, it was unprecedented. Because he needed to enter the River of Time, it mainly used time path Immortal Gu, it had a comprehensive range of abilities and most excelled in concealment.

Even though it was only a skeleton now, it had great battle strength in the five regional mountain range. Ying Wu Xie and the rest relied on this to cooperate with Fang Yuan, successfully capturing Jun Shen Guang.

In the River of Time, waves rose and fell, water splattered everywhere, creating beautiful rainbow light.

Fang Yuan rode in the incomplete Immortal Gu House as he traveled slowly in the river.

The rank six time path clone had already emerged from the sovereign immortal aperture, standing beside him as he shut his eyes, sensing internally.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable had left behind many true inheritances scattered in the River of Time, Spring Autumn Cicada was the key to finding them.

But the River of Time was extremely huge, in order to find the several stone lotus islands, other than luck, he also needed lots of time and energy to explore.

“It would be best if we could find a Red Lotus true inheritance in this exploration of the River of Time.”

“But most importantly, we need to test Heavenly Court’s arrangements and catch them off guard, if possible, we need to destroy their arrangements!”

Fang Yuan thought as he searched Jun Shen Guang’s soul in the sovereign immortal aperture.

Jun Shen Guang’s soul originally had light path dao marks to protect it, but after Fang Yuan’s Luo Po seal struck, the defense was destroyed, at the same time, Jun Shen Guang’s soul was injured, he was on the verge of death.

Precisely so, after Ying Wu Xie used lead soul into dream, Jun Shen Guang was directly hit and fell asleep.

The condition to use lead soul into dream killer move was to sense the soul and compare the strength between the enemy’s soul and the user to determine the success.

Being able to deal such damage to a rank eight Gu Immortal, it showed how powerful Luo Po seal was!

However, compared to reverse flow protection seal, and seeing how Fang Yuan used Luo Po Valley as the core of this move, it was not very surprising that it had such power.

Right now, Jun Shen Guang's soul was extremely weak, he could not defend against Fang Yuan's method, information was obtained by Fang Yuan continuously.

"What arrangements did Heavenly Court make? Jun Shen Guang must know about them."

A moment later, Fang Yuan's brows eased as he found something: "Oh? Time path Immortal Gu House Present and Past Pavilion..."

He had just thought of this when the water in front of him rose up, a huge pavilion was riding the waves and approaching.

This pavilion was not covered on all four sides, it was very simplistic. The cover was made of yellow grass, the pillars were grey white rocks that were not polished. There was a folding screen1 in the pavilion, it was the most elegant decoration in there. Four Gu Immortals stood in the pavilion, they all had rank seven cultivation level, looking at Fang Yuan's incomplete Immortal Gu House, their eyes flashed with a dangerous light.

"This Present and Past Pavilion is a pure time path Immortal Gu House, it can inspect the past and present, it is best at investigation. Heavenly Court placed it here, the moment I entered, they noticed. Amazing, amazing!" Fang Yuan's heart sank a little, but he praised on the surface, explaining to Ying Wu Xie and the rest.

Ying Wu Xie, Bai Ning Bing, and the rest frowned lightly or had dark gazes.

They understood something, Fang Yuan's incomplete Immortal Gu House was best at concealing traces, to think that Present and Past Pavilion would be able to find them. This was like their advantage getting countered, even before fighting, they had gotten into a passive situation.

Present and Past Pavilion got to Fang Yuan and the rest before stopping, staying a thousand steps away from the incomplete Immortal Gu House.

Someone spoke coldly from within the pavilion: "Central Continent's Four Xunzi are here to guard the river, demon, don't think of advancing."

A person behind him said: "That's right, you'll have to step over our corpses if you want to pass!"

"Four Xunzi..." Fang Yuan directly soul searched Jun Shen Guang and quickly got the information of these four people.

It turned out that these four were time path Gu Immortals, they were quadruplets, found by Spirit Butterfly Valley when they were young and specially nurtured. They comprised three older brothers and one younger sister, they were Shang Xunzi, Zhong Xunzi, Xia Xunzi, and Xun Guo Zi respectively.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1629: Great Power of Time Path

According to Jun Shen Guang’s information, the Four Xunzi had the same rank seven cultivation level, they had a combination technique with extraordinary power, even against rank eight Gu Immortals, they could contest against them.

Of course, they were only able to fight with that one move. After a few rounds, they would definitely lose to the rank eight Gu Immortal.

They were not like the past Fang Yuan or Feng Jiu Ge with battle strength that could rival rank eights.

Even so, they were quite impressive. After nurturing the Four Xunzi, they had been kept hidden by Spirit Butterfly Valley, they were not easily deployed.

“Heavenly Court wants to make arrangements in the River of Time, Spirit Butterfly Valley had to comply. Four Xunzi... four time path experts with great cooperation, they are indeed the best candidates to control Present and Past Pavilion.”

Fang Yuan frowned slightly.

The Four Xunzi and Present and Past Pavilion were not out of his expectations.

Rank eight Gu Immortals that were also time path were very rare. Heavenly Court originally had Lord Huang Shi, but he had died in the River of Time last time after Fang Yuan made use of the stone lotus island.

In order to deal with Fang Yuan and obstruct him in the River of Time, they had to choose people who were rank seven time path Gu Immortals, unless more antiques woke up from Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard.

What made Fang Yuan more concerned was that other than Present and Past Pavilion, Heavenly Court also had another time path Immortal Gu House, Eternal Yacht.

“Present and Past Pavilion excels at investigation, it is nearby so it was the first to obstruct me. I cannot stay here, once the Four Xunzi delay long enough, Eternal Yacht would arrive to help it, it will be disadvantageous for me to face two enemies at once.”

Heavenly Court had a huge advantage in this, even though they did not have time path rank eights, they had members of other paths, along with two Immortal Gu Houses, Present and Past Pavilion and Eternal Yacht.

In contrast, Fang Yuan only had one incomplete Immortal Gu House, even though he became rank eight, Hei Lou Lan, Bai Ning Bing, and the rest were very weak.

Fang Yuan immediately opened his immortal aperture’s entrance, letting out a second batch of immemorial year beasts.

He had used the first batch of immemorial year beasts in the five regional mountain range, they were injured or killed by Southern Border’s righteous path, Fang Yuan did not manage to retrieve them.

But it did not matter, Fang Yuan had a second batch.

After annexing Xia Cha’s immortal aperture, Fang Yuan obtained a second year essence pool, there were two immemorial year beasts inside. Furthermore, throughout the months, Fang Yuan had been using immemorial year beast fishing formation to lure immemorial year beasts to him, before capturing them inside the year essence pool.

Thus, Fang Yuan obtained two batches of immemorial year beasts, the second batch had a total of nine immemorial year beasts.

The only flaw was that Fang Yuan did not manage to collect all twelve types of immemorial year beasts to form the ancient battle formation.

He had tried to collect them during this period, but when he actually tried, he realized that getting a full set was very hard to achieve. He got the most number of immemorial year chickens, because recently, the River of Time was producing this type of year beasts1.

In Fang Yuan’s second batch of immemorial year beasts, he had five chickens, more than half of the entire group.

Nine immemorial year beasts roared as they charged towards Present and Past Pavilion.

Inside Present and Past Pavilion, the Four Xunzi had grim expressions, they activated Present and Past Pavilion’s power together.

Pew!

A huge wave that was ten meters tall crashed towards the nine immemorial year beasts.

Immemorial year beasts were beasts that belonged in the River of Time, Present and Past Pavilion’s waves could not obstruct their movement. Instantly, they charged through the obstacle, creating countless splashes as they approached Present and Past Pavilion.

The surface of Present and Past Pavilion shined with brilliant light, the light shot up like a huge pillar.

Swish swish swish...

Waves came after waves, they were like moving walls that could attack or defend, constantly crashing into the immemorial year beasts.

At Fang Yuan’s will, the immemorial year beast were instructed by him to cooperate, they shot out like an arrow, going past many walls of waves and reaching Present and Past Pavilion.

But all of a sudden, the Four Xunzi shouted as the folding screen in Present and Past Pavilion turned into misty green fog.

The green fog flew into the battlefield as the immemorial year beasts got affected, their speed fell as if they had landed in a marsh.

The green fog settled and fused into the water of the River of Time, turning the surface of the water in this area jade green.

Present and Past Pavilion shook intensely, the huge pillar of light faded and turned into green sparkles that enveloped the surroundings.

The sound of crashing waves became even louder and more imposing, they were many times larger than before, thirty meters tall now. Not just that, tens of spirals formed on the surface of the River of Time, they became excellent traps to restrain the immemorial year beasts.

The nine immemorial year beasts were originally gathered together, but after the obstruction of the waves, their formation broke apart as they fell into their own respective battles.

At once, Present and Past Pavilion stood at the center and controlled the situation. Fang Yuan’s immemorial year beasts were all at a disadvantage.

The Four Xunzi’s expressions relaxed.

Shang Xunzi let out a breath of air: “We finally got past the initial period, this demon did not break through.”

Xun Guo Zi smiled: “Present and Past Pavilion has control of the situation now, even though Fang Yuan has many immemorial year beasts, he cannot gather them, he is not a threat.”

“That’s right.” Xia Xunzi stroke his beard: “Even though Present and Past Pavilion is not his match anyway, as long as we can stall until Eternal Yacht arrives, by then our strength will surpass him, we will be able to win.”

Zhong Xunzi had a deep gaze: “The demon is crafty, we cannot be careless, let’s play safe.”

He had just spoken when the immemorial year monkey closest to Present and Past Pavilion suddenly jumped up and used an immortal killer move.

It held a huge fan in its hands as it waved towards the front.

Rank eight immortal killer move — Summer Fan!

Instantly, intense winds whipped, sweeping away everything, the entire battlefield became dark and gloomy.

The huge waves resembling thick walls that were in front of the immemorial year monkey completely broke apart and collapsed due to summer fan.

The immemorial year monkey snickered as it dived down.

In Present and Past Pavilion, the Four Xunzi were shocked, they noticed that Fang Yuan was disguised as the immemorial year monkey.

“That demon has joined the battle!”

“Impossible! We have the investigative killer move from Lady Zi Wei, we can expose familiar face, how did he manage to deceive us?”

Fang Yuan sneered internally, he had spent the last few months to its fullest, using all of his time and energy without any waste, he had naturally modified familiar face.

Fang Yuan finally got to the Four Xunzi.

Present and Past Pavilion burst out with brilliant light once again, while Fang Yuan relied on the immemorial year monkey’s tough physique to punch with its strong fists, but Present and Past Pavilion remained unmoving despite a loud sound.

“It is useless, right now, Present and Past Pavilion is anchored here in the River of Time, how can you move it?” Xun Guo Zi said with a nervous tone.

“Is that so...” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with brilliant light, he used immortal killer move spring scissors at the next moment.

Clip, clip.

Spring scissors cut continuously, Present and Past Pavilion was able to defend itself initially, but soon, the brilliant light on it was unable to last as spring scissors cut away a corner of the roof after five to six snips!

“This is a rank eight time path killer move, but how can it be so powerful?”

“Even Present and Past Pavilion cannot match it? How can this be!”

The Four Xunzi were frantic.

Fang Yuan’s eyes were filled with cold flickering lightning.

He originally had over seventy thousand time path dao marks, it was at rank eight level. Now that he became an immemorial year monkey, his transformation path dao marks also turned into time path dao marks, adding another fifty thousand.

Thus, he had over a hundred and twenty thousand time path dao marks now!

Ordinary rank seven Gu Immortals would only have less than thirty thousand dao marks. A hundred and twenty thousand dao marks was not common for rank eight Gu Immortals, they normally would have to pass one myriad tribulation to get such an accumulation.

He could amplify any time path killer move by a hundred and twenty times its power!

And Fang Yuan was already using two rank eight immortal killer moves.

Even though Present and Past Pavilion had the territorial advantage, Fang Yuan’s killer move was also boosted by the environment of the River of Time.

Thus, his time path battle strength soared to the extent that even Present and Past Pavilion could not endure his attacks!

Fang Yuan’s two killer moves forced Present and Past Pavilion back time and time again.

The Four Xunzi tried to keep their stability in Present and Past Pavilion, while attacking sometimes, but Fang Yuan did not even need defensive killer moves like winter coat, with just the immemorial year monkey’s body, he could endure them.

“Hold on!” A huge yacht was riding the waves, approaching them from afar. Several Gu Immortals were shouting and having nervous expressions.

Eternal Yacht was nearby.

“Too late.” Fang Yuan snickered, he waved the summer fan and whipped up some tornadoes, Present and Past Pavilion was shaking from the impact, it was about to collapse.

Spring scissors flew towards it and snipped again!

A pillar in Present and Past Pavilion broke as it collapsed entirely.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly as he jumped above Present and Past Pavilion, stomping with his huge immemorial year monkey feet.

Boom!

The whole of Present and Past Pavilion broke apart into pieces, the Four Xunzi were either dead or injured, they were all kicked into the River of Time.

Fang Yuan and the incomplete Immortal Gu House left with ease.

When Eternal Yacht arrived, it was already too late. The Gu Immortals in the yacht hesitated, should they save the Four Xunzi or chase after Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1630: Stone Island Trap

“Cough, cough.” Shang Xunzi sprawled on the deck of Eternal Yacht as he coughed, he had drunk a lot of water, he was drenched.

Beside him, Xia Xunzi had already fainted, his injuries were severe, his situation was not looking good.

Rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Ye walked over and looked at Shang Xunzi calmly: “The other two have been swept away by the River of Time, we cannot find them.”

Shang Xunzi breathed roughly for a while, he forcibly stood up, taking a glance at Xia Xunzi before speaking with a pale expression: “They have already died, that demon Fang Yuan is very powerful! How is the salvaging of Present and Past Pavilion going?”

The Four Xunzi were siblings with deep kinship, but right now, Shang Xunzi was more concerned about Present and Past Pavilion, he did not pay attention to the dying Xia Xunzi nor did he display anger or sadness.

Qing Ye smiled: “The core Immortal Gu have not been destroyed, we have recovered all of them.”

“That’s good!” Shang Xunzi let out a breath of air, his expression easing.

Qing Ye nodded: “I have already prepared the room for you.”

Shang Xunzi: “Thank you, I will go and revive my siblings now.”

It turned out that these quadruplets, with their very close bloodline, managed to create a unique killer move. Even if three of them died, as long as one remained, they could use the killer move to rapidly revive the other three.

Precisely so, Shang Xunzi did not feel any sadness.

A moment later, the Four Xunzi returned to the deck with no injuries, entering battle once again.

Fang Yuan’s second batch of immemorial year beasts were surrounding Eternal Yacht, attacking from all sides, desperately drawing their attention...

The river water was turbulent, sounds of waves crashing could be heard by Fang Yuan.

Right now, he had returned to his original appearance, he entered the incomplete Immortal Gu House to rest.

With this incomplete Immortal Gu House, Fang Yuan had a base, it was very useful.

“Eternal Yacht did not chase us...” After leaving the battlefield for a while, Fang Yuan relaxed his mind slightly.

The speed of the incomplete Immortal Gu House could not match Eternal Yacht, its specialty was in concealing its traces when moving.

With Present and Past Pavilion around, the incomplete Immortal Gu House could not move stealthily. But Eternal Yacht could not detect the incomplete Immortal Gu House, otherwise, why would it not pursue him with such an advantage in speed?

“We are temporarily safe.” Ying Wu Xie breathed out deeply, feeling some lingering fear: “It was quite dangerous earlier.”

“Indeed, if sect leader did not destroy Present and Past Pavilion, we might have fallen into a tough battle and would not be able to escape.” Fairy Miao Yin smiled.

Bai Ning Bing was silent at the side.

Hei Lou Lan looked outside the Immortal Gu House, at the grand River of Time.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone was frowning with his eyes shut. He was trying to track the islands, but his vital Gu Spring Autumn Cicada had no reactions.

In fact, according to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s deduction, the higher Spring Autumn Cicada’s rank was, the larger the range of its detection to find Red Lotus’ true inheritance.

Fang Yuan’s Spring Autumn Cicada was only rank six, even though he had many Immortal Gu recipes, Fang Yuan’s multiple attempts at refining it ended in failure.

It was regrettable, but Fang Yuan had done his best already.

For the last few months, he had put in all his effort to cultivate soul path, explore dream realms, modify killer moves, extort Southern Border’s righteous path, plot for the overall situation, defend against deductions, annex immortal apertures, and so on, he had expended his time and energy.

It was already a miracle that he could squeeze out some time to refine Spring Autumn Cicada. But the real miracle did not happen, Fang Yuan’s refinement attempts failed.

“Even though Spring Autumn Cicada is rank six, I have already made up for the flaws in other aspects.” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with deep confidence.

He had planned deeply before entering the River of Time. Fang Yuan had already used luck path methods like burning soul bursting luck, he had only stopped after reaching the limit.

In this vast River of Time, finding one or two stone lotus islands was purely dependent on luck.

Roar—!

The river water suddenly became turbulent as sounds of beast growls entered their ears.

“There are two immemorial year beasts fighting ahead!” After inspecting it, Ying Wu Xie alerted.

Looking at it closely, these two immemorial year beasts had already fought for some time, they were near their limit.

Fang Yuan laughed, wasn’t this the work of luck path?

He flew out of the incomplete Immortal Gu House and activated familiar face, becoming a part of the river water as he blended into the River of Time.

COMMENT

Next, he opened a trace of his immortal aperture’s entrance and activated the immemorial year beast fishing formation!

The two immemorial year beasts detected the delicacy, their movements stopped, they charged towards Fang Yuan like they were competing in a race.

They did not find any enemies, but they sensed a tributary of the River of Time under the river water.

The immemorial year beasts did not think much, they charged into this tributary of the River of Time.

This was naturally Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

If it were in the past, Fang Yuan would not dare to lure these immemorial year beasts, they would cause huge destruction to the sovereign immortal aperture if they went in.

But now, times were different, Fang Yuan had year essence pools, two in fact!

The year essence pools were connected to the tributary of the River of Time like huge dams.

The immemorial year beasts were lured by the formation, following the tributary of the River of Time until they rushed into the ‘dam’, becoming trapped.

Fang Yuan smiled heartily as he stopped the transformation killer move, he flew back into the incomplete Immortal Gu House.

Those two immemorial year monkeys were trapped in the year essence pools, they could not find any food and sensed something amiss, but how could they return to the River of Time now?

Fang Yuan used his enslavement path methods and quickly subdued these two immemorial year beasts.

The incomplete Immortal Gu House moved stealthily as it searched for a stone lotus island.

Fang Yuan met many year beasts along the way, he took in all of them, luring them into the year essence pools and subduing them.

Soon, Fang Yuan’s number of immemorial year beasts rose to six.

And even more ancient and desolate level year beasts.

Other than year beasts, there were other lifeforms like day beasts, month beasts, or dark web spiders in the River of Time, Fang Yuan had chosen to ignore them all.

The use of the year essence pools was amply displayed here!

With th, Fang Yuan could lure immemorial year beasts while keeping sovereign immortal aperture very safe. Without their restriction, the immemorial year beasts would be able to move along the tributary of the River of Time and go to anywhere in the sovereign immortal aperture. Because the tributary was present all over the whole sovereign immortal aperture.

“Wait!” After moving for a while, Fang Yuan’s time path clone opened his eyes, bursting with bright light.

He seemed to have found something!

The time path clone quickly shut his eyes as he frowned deeply, trying to sense it.

Next, he pointed in one direction: “There seems to be something there, Spring Autumn Cicada shuddered a little.”

The time path clone spoke with uncertainty.

But this was the only clue, Fang Yuan manipulated the incomplete Immortal Gu House and changed directions, going towards that place.

As the distance shortened, Fang Yuan’s clone felt increasingly happy: “The feeling is getting stronger, our luck is really not bad, we found it so quickly!”

A while later, in the vision of Fang Yuan and the rest, a thin layer of fog appeared.

The incomplete Immortal Gu House halted for a moment before rushing into the fog with no hesitation.

The fog was extraordinary, it could obscure one’s sense of direction and confuse them, but using the key Spring Autumn Cicada, Fang Yuan’s clone could move in the proper direction.

The fog got thicker, the river water also moved slower due to its effect, it was not as turbulent as the water outside.

Vaguely, the silhouette of an island appeared before Fang Yuan and the rest.

“Stone lotus island! Red Lotus true inheritance!!” Ying Wu Xie stared wide and shouted loudly.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest also started to breathe roughly.

When the incomplete Immortal Gu House got to the periphery of the stone lotus island, the island shot out a white light that hit the incomplete Immortal Gu House directly.

“What is going on?!” Fairy Miao Yin screamed.

“Oh no! This is a trap.” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with a sharp light, it was too late to escape now.

The entire incomplete Immortal Gu House shook intensely, it could not resist the strong attacks outside.

“Demon, I have been waiting for you for a long time!” A rank eight Gu Immortal with a tall muscular body appeared on the stone lotus island.

At the next moment, his killer move that had been prepared for a while hit the incomplete Immortal Gu House.

Boom!

The incomplete Immortal Gu House broke apart at once.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1631: Verdant Sun Flame Cloak

Fang Yuan’s incomplete Immortal Gu House did not excel in defense, after it was struck, it broke apart.

Fang Yuan and the rest quickly defended themselves inside the Immortal Gu House.

A huge amount of flames moved like poisonous snakes and burned all of the Gu worms in their way, before they gathered towards Fang Yuan in an encircling movement.

Fang Yuan shouted as he used immortal killer move winter coat, his body was immediately covered by a layer of snow-white frost.

The frost not only protected him, at this crucial moment, it spread out and protected the time path clone, Hei Lou Lan, Ying Wu Xie, Bai Ning Bing, and the rest.

In this regard, winter coat was better than reverse flow protection seal.

Because reverse flow protection seal only defended himself, it could not help others, but winter coat was able to affect other people.

Winter coat killer move blocked the fire snakes’ attacks, but at the next moment, the old man on the stone lotus island shouted: “By the power of flames, snakes turn into dragons!”

Whoosh!

The flames burst out with incredible heat, the snakes coiled around each other, turning into a huge flame dragon that was a hundred feet long, possessing huge claws and fangs.

The bright red flame dragon slashed through winter coat before charging at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan wanted to open his immortal aperture’s entrance to store the immortals back in his aperture, but this fire snake killer move actually had a variation, with the old man’s deep experience, Fang Yuan had no time for that.

The flame dragon opened its mouth as its soared down from above.

Fang Yuan and the rest looked up as their faces were red from the light of the flames, the intense heat felt like it was going to grill them alive!

Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, and the rest all revealed looks of despair on their faces.

This flame dragon was not an ordinary rank eight killer move, it had extraordinary power, even Bai Ning Bing’s Bai Xiang killer move could not escape from it.

Their only hope was Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s ears, nose, and eyes were bleeding!

Winter coat killer move was broken, Fang Yuan suffered a rank eight killer move backlash. A large number of mortal Gu were killed, thankfully his core Immortal Gu were still alive, they were damaged but still usable.

Fang Yuan was in a difficult situation.

The time path clone, Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, and the rest were behind him, their cultivation level was too low, they could not block the flame dragon. If they had the incomplete Immortal Gu House, they could still participate in the fight, but the old man was too perceptive, he destroyed the incomplete Immortal Gu House from the start.

If Fang Yuan stayed and protected them, not only did he have no good methods now that winter coat was broken, even if he did, it would be too dangerous!

Because the other party wanted to force Fang Yuan to fight them, once he protects them and fights, the old man’s plan would succeed.

Fang Yuan was almost certain that the other party still had killer moves prepared. Once Fang Yuan fights with the flame dragon, the old man would grasp the tempo of the battle, he would control the battle’s flow from now on.

Instantly, Fang Yuan made up his mind, he moved out like lightning, dodging the flame dragon.

The old man laughed frenziedly: “A true demon indeed! Then burn to death!”

The flame dragon ignored Fang Yuan, it charged down.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, he turned around and attacked the old man.

The old man diverted his gaze at Fang Yuan, seeing that he was approaching, the old man smiled and revealed a sinister expression.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank, he attacked so that the old man would divert attention to defend himself but the old man was similarly courageous and did not fear a frontal assault. Most possibly, he still had arrangements on this stone lotus island, he was extremely confident.

Fang Yuan stretched out his finger, his hard work over the last few months had not been in vain, spring scissors was unleashed and shot towards the old man.

The scissors was very sharp, but when it landed on the old man, his hair started to burn as it turned into a flame cloak, protecting him all around and blocking spring scissors.

“Hahaha, I named this move verdant sun flame cloak, I made it from the inspiration I gained from Verdant Great Sun’s flame hair from <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, it is my proudest creation. To speak the truth, even though I am a fire path Gu Immortal, I am more skilled in defense than offense! Not just spring scissors, even summer fan is useless against me.” The old man laughed loudly.

But at the next moment, the old man’s smile faded.

It turned out that the flame dragon had returned empty-handed, be it Fang Yuan’s time path clone, Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, or others, they were still alive.

The old man’s eyelids twitched, he licked his dry lips as he said darkly: “This is a dream realm?”

It turned out that while Fang Yuan dodged the flame dragon, he did not abandon his clone or the other Gu Immortals, he had ordered Ying Wu Xie to self-detonate at the crucial moment.

After the five regional mountain range, Ying Wu Xie had changed bodies, using a body with the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique again. Precisely because of the dream path dao marks on the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, he was able to use lead soul into dream and successfully affect rank eight Gu Immortal Jun Shen Guang.

Now that the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body self-detonated, Ying Wu Xie’s soul was trapped in the dream realm. The other immortals were very close to him, they were covered by the dream realm.

With the manifestation of the dream realm, all other paths could not affect it. The old man’s flame dragon had great power, but against the illusory dream realm, it was useless.

“Hmph, you are truly a scheming demon, but you will die today!” The old man stomped his feet, flying up into the sky as the stone lotus island below him scattered into dust and sand.

The old man wore a flame cloak as he approached Fang Yuan like a blazing meteor. Spring scissors followed after him as it attacked, but the flames defended against them and the old man was completely unharmed.

Fang Yuan flew backwards as he used summer fan.

Intense winds blew, the old man’s flame cloak was flickering, but it seemed like the fire was growing with the wind, becoming even larger.

The old man smiled as he exposed his sharp teeth: “How about that! My verdant sun flame cloak is unparalleled, have you felt despair yet? Hahaha!”

Like what the old man has said, summer fan and spring scissors were useless against verdant sun flame cloak.

Not only that, as they got closer, an intense feeling of drunkenness assaulted Fang Yuan.

But soon, Fang Yuan used his wisdom path killer move and regained clarity in his mind.

Verdant sun flame cloak not only contained the extreme profundity of fire path, it also mimicked the effects of human path and food path. As the old man got closer to him, the greater the feeling of drunkenness would be.

Fang Yuan tried his best to retreat, wanting to pull some distance from the old man, but against his wishes, the enemy’s speed surpassed him by quite a bit.

“Demon, you are trapped in the formation, where can you run to? Obediently accept your death!” The old man shouted.

Earlier, the stone lotus island was merely an illusion, its true essence was a super time path immortal formation set up in the River of Time!

This formation was very powerful, even Fang Yuan could not notice it. As it activated now, a formation space was created, Fang Yuan was trapped inside, restricting him from using Omni-directional Travel, Fixed Immortal Travel, and other similar methods.

Fang Yuan had used a time path formation earlier to ambush Southern Border’s righteous path. Now, Heavenly Court did the same against Fang Yuan.

But Heavenly Court put in much more effort than Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan could not create such a time path formation in the River of Time. With his current strength, he could only create a time path immortal formation near a tributary of the River of Time in the outside world.

Even for time path great experts in history, few could create immortal formations inside the River of Time.

The person who could achieve this to the limit was Red Lotus Demon Venerable. This person had already surpassed the realms of time path immortal formations, he could directly create artificial secluded domains of heaven and earth, stone lotus islands, to influence segments of the River of Time and take control of it.

Heavenly Court had been looking for the stone lotus islands and had yet to find one, but they were not without gains. This time path immortal formation was one of their achievements.

The formation restricted Fang Yuan, making him unable to evade or dodge.

The old man got closer, Fang Yuan snorted, instead of retreating, he charged at the old man.

The old man was slightly surprised, but he quickly reacted as he waved his hands, sending waves of flames towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had no fear, he rammed forward.

The huge flames reversed and went back to attack the old man.

It was the immortal killer move — Reverse Flow Protection Seal!

The old man was a little flustered, he defended against his own killer move, but at this moment, Fang Yuan had already arrived in front of him.

Fang Yuan was ruthless, he slammed his body into the old man.

Reverse flow protection seal against verdant sun flame cloak!

At the next moment, Fang Yuan and the old man both flew backwards, they were nearly evenly matched in this contest.

The old man had lost by a slight bit, but soon, his flame cloak burned again as he returned to his peak condition.

Reverse flow protection seal was extremely effective against attacks. But verdant sun flame cloak was a defensive killer move, the reflected damage was quite little.

“This is reverse flow protection seal? Heh, he found out so quickly.” The old man’s gaze flickered eerily.

It turned out that this time path immortal formation created an isolated inner formation space, there was a core effect, it was that this environment weakened time path.

Heavenly Court’s original intention was to use this formation to deal with the stone lotus islands of Red Lotus’ true inheritance. These islands were artificially created time path secluded domains of heaven and earth, once the formation encapsulates them, they would be weakened.

Precisely so, Fang Yuan’s spring scissors and summer fan killer moves were so ineffective against verdant sun flame cloak.

Verdant sun flame cloak was very powerful indeed, it was the peak creation of fire path, and even extended to contain the profundities of human path and food path.

COMMENT

In terms of intricacy, reverse flow protection seal was very roughly made and straightforward. In contrast, myriad self comprised both enslavement path and strength path, it was on par with verdant sun flame cloak in this aspect.

Summer fan and spring scissors were ordinary, they only contained rank eight Immortal Gu and were amplified by time path dao marks to gain such great power. They could not break verdant sun flame cloak but could have caused great damage. Yet in this environment, they had a mild effect.

Fang Yuan realized this and daringly dispelled winter coat, instead using reverse flow protection seal to regain his footing in the battle.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1632: You Lied!

Immortal killer move — Myriad Dragon!

Howl...

At once, myriad dragons flew in a sea of silvery scales, attacking the old man like a tidal wave.

After understanding the effect of the time path formation, Fang Yuan gave up on his strongest time path methods, he started to use other methods. In this aspect, Fang Yuan had many useful methods comparatively.

The old man snorted, showing no surprise on his face.

Before coming here, he had already made ample preparation, he knew about Fang Yuan’s myriad dragon killer move.

“Slippery eels, what can they do to me?” The old man stood arrogantly in the sky, instead of dodging, he watched as the myriad dragons approached him.

His verdant sun flame cloak was blazing, his entire body was covered, resembling a huge fireball.

The myriad dragons appeared before the old man, but they started to screech weirdly, the sword dragons were all drowsy as they randomly flew around, their ferocious attacks had been stopped.

When each sword dragon’s drunkenness got to a certain level, they would start to blaze up with a loud sound.

The sword dragons turned into a pile of flames before rapidly vanishing.

Looking at the field, the old man was unmoving while the myriad dragons burned to death. Even though there were countless dragons, the moment they got close to the old man, they died, they were of no threat to him.

“Immortal killer move verdant sun flame cloak!” Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, he finally saw the power of this move. It was both offensive and defensive, it was a counter to Fang Yuan’s myriad dragon killer move.

“Then let’s try Luo Po seal.” Fang Yuan thought to himself.

He had already used familiar face to disguise as a sword dragon, he blended into the army of dragons, getting closer to the old man.

Next, he pretended to be drunk as he got closer and unleashed Luo Po seal.

Fang Yuan got exposed when the killer move had just activated, Luo Po seal’s aura was too great, it could not be hidden.

The old man’s gaze shot like lightning as he charged at Fang Yuan without fearing Luo Po seal.

Boom boom boom!

The old man attacked Fang Yuan in a frenzy but reverse flow protection seal kept him safe.

Fang Yuan did not speak, he endured the old man’s attacks until Luo Po seal was finally ready to strike.

The old man was on guard now, the situation was not good for Fang Yuan. Eventually, he barely managed to use Luo Po seal, but it scraped past the old man’s shoulder, only half landing!

The old man immediately felt a sense of emptiness in his heart, at the same time, the blazing cloak on his back weakened by forty percent!

“This move is amazing, but it cannot break my verdant sun flame cloak!” The old man laughed loudly as he retreated, using methods to heal himself.

His speed was faster than Fang Yuan, it was hard to land consecutive hits on him.

The old man found time to catch a breather despite having the disadvantage, a moment later, his injuries healed mostly and his aura regained its peak state, the verdant sun flame cloak also started to blaze up again.

Luo Po seal had terrifying might but the old man was very alert, he did not give Fang Yuan any more chances.

His verdant sun flame cloak’s defenses were superb, Fang Yuan could sense that in battle, it was like how his enemies felt when facing reverse flow protection seal.

“This old man’s soul is not his weakness.” Even though he only grazed past him, Fang Yuan obtained valuable intel.

Luo Po seal was targeted at the enemy’s soul, but this old man was an experienced rank eight Gu Immortal with deep foundations, he did not have any evident weaknesses, his soul’s defense was quite tight.

Fang Yuan estimated that even if Luo Po seal hit directly, it could not kill the old man in one move.

Luo Po seal had to be paired with lead soul into dream to deal with Heavenly Court’s rank eight Gu Immortals.

But at the start of the battle, the old man destroyed Fang Yuan’s incomplete Immortal Gu House, causing Ying Wu Xie and the rest to slumber in the dream realm.

If the incomplete Immortal Gu House was still around, Fang Yuan would have Ying Wu Xie’s lead soul into dream to help him, he would have the advantage against this old man.

But the old man had ambushed and destroyed the incomplete Immortal Gu House, not only were Fang Yuan’s losses severe, he lost his initiative and was kept on the back foot for a long time.

This situation was naturally very dangerous for Fang Yuan, he had fallen into an ambush, he had to escape quickly.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Dragon!

Fang Yuan continued to activate myriad dragon as more sword dragons filled this formation space.

The old man had the advantage but he did not relax his mind or become careless.

He squinted a little as Fang Yuan hid among the sword dragons again. At this time, should he use an investigative method to find Fang Yuan or eliminate these sword dragons first?

If he did not kill Fang Yuan, there would be an endless stream of sword dragons, but the old man had clear awareness, he thought: “I’m afraid my investigative method cannot expose familiar face, Fang Yuan is so crafty, he must have other plans!”

The old man had the initiative now, he spoke arrogantly and wildly, but his mind was extremely calm and composed.

He knew that when opponents of his and Fang Yuan’s level fight, with such rich battle experience on both sides, even though he had the initiative now and could hold the advantage, if he made a mistake, Fang Yuan would turn the situation around.

The old man roared as flames started to burn around, spreading out like a sea of fire.

The sword dragons melted in candles within the flame.

The old man’s decision made Fang Yuan quite troubled.

He hesitated for a while before persisting with his tactic, he controlled the myriad dragons to charge at the formation space.

This formation was clearly controlled by Central Continent Gu Immortals. Seeing that the myriad dragons were attacking, they wanted to retaliate but the old man quickly transmitted to them: “Don’t move! Fang Yuan has very high time path and wisdom path attainment levels, the more the formation activates, the more flaws he will notice. I will handle these eels, don’t be anxious.”

The old man did not want to give Fang Yuan any chances, the sea of fire killed the sword dragons at a rapid rate.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, he suddenly appeared in front of the dream realm.

Immortal killer move — Pure Dream Reality Seeker Transformation!

He quickly gathered the dream realm and turned the lump of dream realm into a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body.

“Oh no, this demon is so scheming!” The old man’s expression changed, Fang Yuan used many feints and tactics, it was hard to see through his plans after all.

Fang Yuan opened a sliver of his immortal aperture’s entrance, wanting to send the time path clone, Ying Wu Xie’s soul, Hei Lou Lan, and Bai Ning Bing inside.

But at this moment, the old man screamed angrily behind him: “Demon, forget about it!”

Boom!

A killer move was used, bursting out with immense strength and sound.

Fang Yuan felt a chill, he did not need to turn around to know that this move was the old man’s strongest offensive method.

“I won’t make it!” Fang Yuan did not have enough time to react, his heart sank to rock bottom.

At the crucial moment, he went all out!

His time path killer move was used as the time around suddenly became faster.

He placed the immortals into the immortal aperture, and at the same time, he felt like a giant had landed a punch on his back, the huge force sent him flying like a cannonball, he lost fifteen percent of Reverse Flow River’s water! The impact made Fang Yuan’s head dizzy, he directly spat out a mouthful of blood.

He was only able to save a portion of them, Fairy Miao Yin could not be reached. She was still unconscious earlier, after being engulfed in the huge flames, she was burned to ashes, not a bit of her body remained.

Fang Yuan shouted loudly as he used myriad dragon, charging around the place, while he started to act and destroy the formation.

The old man was a bit nervous now, he started to attack Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan had reverse flow protection seal to defend him, he ignored the old man and only targeted the formation.

“Fang Yuan, don’t think of getting out, that is merely a delusion!” The old man roared as his flames engulfed Fang Yuan.

“Hahaha, you are simply struggling at death’s door.” The old man got behind Fang Yuan and slammed them on his back like two huge tablets, Fang Yuan was sent flying.

Fang Yuan was bleeding from all seven orifices, it was quite a pathetic sight, yet his eyes were still cold as ice, he continued to attack the time path formation.

“It is useless! How can you break such an amazing formation? Look at your Reverse Flow River, it is about to be fully expended.” The old man mocked, he attacked with greater intensity, killing intent surged as he behaved in a frenzied manner.

Even though Reverse Flow River could reflect attacks, the old man also had his verdant sun flame cloak. He endured the reflected attacks as he continued to expend the Reverse Flow River water.

He was not wrong, Fang Yuan’s Reverse Flow River had gone through many battles, a lot of it was used up already. As he continued to attack, the river water level fell, Fang Yuan’s robe also started to become thin and flimsy.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan roared as he stopped attacking, preparing Luo Po seal again.

The old man’s pupils shrunk, his attacks changed, he started to prepare his defenses against Luo Po seal.

Fang Yuan completed the preparation as he flicked his palm, instead of attacking the old man, he shot it towards a corner of the formation.

“Guh!” With a shocked voice, a rank seven Gu Immortal controlling the formation was hit by Luo Po seal, he died on the spot.

“How?!” The other Central Continent Gu Immortals were also shocked and lost for words.

Fang Yuan was able to find a formation core in such a short time and kill the person inside.

Luo Po seal was very powerful even against rank eight Gu Immortals, not to mention these rank sevens.

“Quick, that formation core has been destroyed, quickly move and fix the hole!” A Gu Immortal shouted.

On the other end, the old man grunted as he attacked Fang Yuan again.

Fang Yuan used the extremely depleted reverse flow protection seal to defend himself while attacking the formation himself.

With many of his methods used, Heavenly Court’s meticulously created time path immortal formation collapsed area by area, it could not hold up against Fang Yuan’s unraveling.

“How can this be?!” Fang Yuan’s speed of deduction was extremely shocking to everyone.

“Quick, over there!” Someone shouted.

A loophole formed in the formation, connecting with the outside world.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Bye.”

“You cannot leave!” Flames swept over, turning into the old man. He hid the loophole behind himself desperately.

The other Central Continent Gu Immortals also let out a sigh of relief.

But Fang Yuan shot out like an arrow towards the old man, saying coldly with deep killing intent: “Get lost.”

The old man snickered: “It is useless, you cannot deal with my verdant sun flame cloak!”

The distance between them shrunk!

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals quickly changed their formation, someone shouted: “Block Fang Yuan, we only need five breaths of time to change the formation! This is a complete change, it would be ten times as difficult as before to deduce it afterwards!”

The old man scoffed: “Not just five breaths, even if... hmm?”

His eyes suddenly widened, his face turned stiff, he looked at Fang Yuan’s killer move preparation with deep disbelief.

Fang Yuan’s aura was completely concealed, not a bit leaked out.

He clapped both hands together in front of his chest. Next, his right hand which was in contact with his left hand moved, it was like he was trying to pull out something precious, as his right palm slowly clenched into a fist.

Afterwards, his left hand was still at the original position, but his tightly clenched right fist was lifted, above his chest and shoulder, above his head, until it was fixed right above his head.

“This, this move is...” The old man no longer smiled, there was nervousness in his eyes and even some fear.

Indeed, this was the immortal killer move — Five Finger Fist Heart Sword!

Time passed, at the first breath.

First finger!

Fang Yuan had a cold expression as he raised the thumb of his right hand.

From the right fist that he held high in the air, a sword light shot out.

Fast! Fast! Fast!

The speed of the sword light was beyond belief!

The moment it was shot out, it pierced the old man’s forehead.

The old man shuddered, the flames on the verdant sun flame cloak on his body weakened by half.

Second breath.

Second finger!

The old man reacted, he roared as the verdant sun flame cloak started blazing again.

But the sword light landed again, weakening the verdant sun flame cloak.

Third breath.

Third finger.

The old man’s expression turned pale, he wanted to grit his teeth, the verdant sun flame cloak on his back had expanded like a fireball, earlier it was the size of a horse carriage, but now it was the size of a house.

The old man roared: “This is the peak condition of my verdant sun flame cloak! Come, your attacks cannot break through.”

The moment he said that, the sword light landed as the verdant sun flame cloak burst like a balloon, it returned to its former condition.

Five finger fist heart sword got stronger as it progressed.

Fourth breath, fourth finger!

The old man desperately blocked the fourth sword, his expression was pale, he took a huge step back, verdant sun flame cloak was like a flickering candle, it was extremely thin now.

Fifth breath.

Fang Yuan snickered: “What cloak, it is laughable. Li Huang, you can start preparing your funeral. It is over, the fifth sword!”

The old man’s heart jumped, his eyes were filled with terror: “No, Bo Qing, don’t even dream of killing me!”

The flame blazed, he turned into dozens of figures as he flew in all directions.

Fang Yuan ignored him, he flew outside the loophole, escaping into the River of

Time.

He had just flown out when the time path formation changed completely, the earlier loopholes were fixed, it had become whole again, securely locking the formation space inside.

But Fang Yuan had already escaped, the time path formation was completely silent inside.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals controlling the formation were all dumbfounded.

The flame clones dissipated slowly, until only the old man’s main body remained.

At this moment, his face was flushing red and white; anger, fear, humiliation, hatred, and killing intent, they filled his heart entirely, turning his expression distorted and filled with terrifying hatred.

Suddenly, the old man raised his head and roared.

“There, there was no fifth sword!”

1

“Fang Yuan!!”

“You lied!!!”

1

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1633: Cutting Edge Slays Enemies

1

After a tough battle of brains and brawn, Fang Yuan finally got out of Heavenly Court’s ambush and escaped into the River of Time.

Once he left the formation, Fang Yuan felt the difficulty of using reverse flow protection seal raise by several times, he quickly stopped it and changed to the time path killer move winter coat.

Immortal killer move — Familiar Face!

At the next moment, Fang Yuan turned into an immemorial year beast.

Because he had transformed in the River of Time, transformation path was also greatly suppressed. Even though he managed to use the move, his immortal essence expenditure was tens of times as much as usual!

Thankfully, familiar face's core was attitude Gu, it only expended mental energy. Thus, on the whole, familiar face used very little immortal essence, Fang Yuan could sustain it.

Plop.

Fang Yuan turned into an immemorial year snake as he went into the River of Time, slithering away.

“We are finally out of the encirclement, escaping the time path formation.” Fang Yuan felt a little glad.

The earlier situation was quite dangerous. The longer it dragged on, the more tight Heavenly Court's defenses would be, and the lower chances Fang Yuan would have of survival.

This time, there were two reasons why he could escape.

Firstly, Fang Yuan had made the time path clone use the light of wisdom to break the formation. Because of the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan's wisdom path abilities far exceeded Heavenly Court's imagination, he could catch them off guard.

Secondly, he used five finger fist heart sword. Fang Yuan had rank eight cultivation level, with his own white litchi immortal essence, he could use wisdom sword Immortal Gu. This Immortal Gu was one of the core of five finger fist heart sword to begin with, thus, Fang Yuan could use the fourth sword of five finger fist heart sword. This was his current limit, to use the fifth sword, he would need other core sword path Immortal Gu.

“I expended a lot of rank eight immortal essence.” Fang Yuan inspected his immortal aperture, his immortal essence storage had fallen to a dangerous level.

Even though Fang Yuan's sovereign immortal aperture had a fast time flow and could accumulate white litchi immortal essence rapidly, he had gone through fierce battles consecutively, especially earlier against the old man Li Huang, he had expended a lot when breaking out of the time path formation.

“I should escape first!” In this situation, Fang Yuan only had one thought.

This was the wisest decision, a frontal face-off was the most stupid idea.

“Fang Yuan, where are you going!” An angry growl could be heard behind him.

Fang Yuan turned around and his heart jumped.

Three Immortal Gu Houses were chasing after him with threatening auras.

The left one was Eternal Yacht, it was tall and rode with the wind. On the deck, rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Ye, the rank seven Gu Immortals Four Xunzi and others were standing with a righteous aura.

The middle one was Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform, it was elegant and grand, the orange roof resembled cranes with their wings spread out. The Immortal Gu House was radiating three layers of autumn light, it was quite extraordinary.

The right one was Shark Flow Lever, the huge lever was white like jade, a rank eight Gu Immortal was standing on it, he wore a suit of blue star armor and had a rough appearance. There were seven huge sharks in front of the lever, they had sharp teeth and were dragging the huge lever ahead.

“Three rank seven Immortal Gu Houses, at least three rank eight Gu Immortals, with many rank seven Gu Immortals...” Fang Yuan’s heart continued to sink, at this moment, he could see Heavenly Court’s huge determination to get rid of him!

Even though Fang Yuan became an immemorial year snake, his speed was not fast. With the destruction of the incomplete Immortal Gu House, he could not conceal himself.

Both sides continued to shrink in distance, the three Immortal Gu Houses attacked from afar.

Fang Yuan used autumn perception killer move as eyes seemed to grow on his back, he managed to evade agilely.

If he could not dodge, he would use winter coat to endure the attacks forcefully.

Winter coat was amplified in the River of Time, together with Fang Yuan’s time path dao marks, it displayed incredible defensive power, even though it was not as amazing as reverse flow protection seal, it was on par with it here.

“This cannot go on!” The situation was getting worse, Fang Yuan tried to find a solution.

Luo Po seal took a long time to activate, in the River of Time, the duration would be even longer, and the overall strength would be weaker. Heavenly Court would be fully on guard against him, he could not rely on Luo Po seal to turn the situation around.

Myriad self, myriad dragon, strength path giant hand, emperor yama, and others, they were the same.

Fang Yuan could only rely on summer fan, spring scissors, and other time path methods.

But the three Immortal Gu Houses after Fang Yuan were strong as fortresses, spring scissors and summer fan were unable to do anything to them.

As they continued to fight, Fang Yuan’s immortal essence storage fell continuously, the situation was getting worse.

Heavenly Court chased after Fang Yuan with rising morale, their expressions were very optimistic.

Suddenly, at the river ahead, a change occurred, huge fountains were starting to burst out.

“Oh no, this is the sudden spring river segment!”

“This demon excels in luck path, he has incredible luck, he is very hard to kill. As expected, something occurred here!”

“Follow him, don’t let him escape.”

Heavenly Court’s side shouted, showing nervous expressions on their faces.

Fang Yuan dived into the sudden spring river segment.

The sudden springs were very dangerous, they carried the might of time path. If the scale was large enough, they would definitely be able to take the lives of rank eight Gu Immortals.

In most situations, Fang Yuan would avoid them, but now, this sudden spring river segment was his hope of escaping.

The immemorial year snake slithered in the river, sudden springs erupted around Fang Yuan time and time again, but they were not much of an obstacle for him.

Fang Yuan had luck inspection Immortal Gu, while the sovereign immortal body had non-conflicting dao marks, he could evidently sense that his luck was falling rapidly.

Luck path usually could not be sensed, but at this moment, it displayed its incredible power.

Heavenly Court’s three Immortal Gu Houses had a hard time chasing him.

The moment they entered the sudden spring river segment, Eternal Yacht and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform were hit by sudden springs immediately, pushed up forcefully.

They spent a lot of effort to dive down, even Shark Flow Lever was hit.

Fang Yuan often encountered rank six or seven level small to mid sized sudden springs, while Heavenly Court faced rank eight level big sudden springs.

Even though Fang Yuan met many obstacles and was often obstructed by the sudden springs, Heavenly Court’s group was more like a bunch of sick people climbing a mountain. Their encounters were clearly contrasted, Heavenly Court’s members had dark expressions, they felt deeply vexed, wanting to spit blood in anger.

“It seems that Feng Jiu Ge is not part of the group.” Fang Yuan had a realization.

In the battle of Lang Ya, Fang Yuan saw how strong Feng Jiu Ge’s luck was, he could not suppress the latter.

If he was here, Heavenly Court would not face such troubles now.

Without much danger, Fang Yuan managed to get out of the sudden spring river segment.

Behind him, Shark Flow Lever and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform were already far behind, only Eternal Yacht could barely catch up with him, it had left the sudden spring river segment as well.

Without obstacles now, Eternal Yacht’s speed rose, it reduced the distance between Fang Yuan and itself.

“I cannot escape like this!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with lightning, he made up his mind and stopped to face the enemy.

Seeing that Fang Yuan was not escaping, Eternal Yacht’s Gu Immortals were overjoyed, but soon, they exposed wary expressions full of alertness.

Xun Guo Zi shouted: “Everyone, be careful, the demon is fighting instead of running, he must have some vicious plans!”

She had just spoken when Fang Yuan’s killer move activated.

Immortal killer move — Time Cutting Edge!

This move was still rank seven level, but Fang Yuan’s time path dao marks amplified it to a hundred times of its power, at the same time, it was inside the River of Time, its power rose to nearly rank eight.

At once, the leader, rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Ye, sensed a fatal threat, his hair was standing on ends, his heart shrunk as he quickly dodged.

But time cutting edge was too fast, even faster than five finger fist heart sword, the moment Fang Yuan used it, it had already reached Qing Ye.

Eternal Yacht had its defenses of course, but time cutting edge was thin as paper, it easily penetrated it!

“Isn’t this move lost in history? How can he use it! Am I going to die here?!” Instantly, Qing Ye was filled with shock as he fell into deep despair.

“Let me!” At the dangerous moment, Xun Guo Zi jumped out, standing in front of Qing Ye.

Crack!

Xun Guo Zi’s body shook intensely, she was hit by time cutting edge, her eyes stared widely as she fell down on the deck.

“Huff huff!” Qing Ye breathed roughly, he was covered in sweat, having barely kept his life.

“Xun Guo Zi...” Qing Ye’s expression was pale as he showed a deeply moved expression.

The other three Xunzi looked at each other with calm expressions.

They thought: Xun Guo Zi blocked the blade for Qing Ye and died for him, it was definitely worth it to gain the favor of this rank eight Gu Immortal.

“Lord Qing Ye, don’t worry about it. We have a unique method to revive our sister.” Shang Xunzi smiled and expressed his sincerity.

But Qing Ye shook his head, showing a grim expression: “I can somewhat understand the profundities behind your method. I am afraid it will not work this time.”

The three Xunzi were shocked, they asked: “Lord, what do you mean? Please explain it to us.”

“This is Bo clan’s killer move, it had once threatened the whole of Central Continent, it is called time cutting edge.” Qing Ye said with a complex expression, unable to conceal his fear.

“What?”

“”There is such a move!”

The three Xunzi’s expressions changed, they all started to tremble as they became fearful and panicky, no longer as calm as before.

“No, impossible, isn’t this move gone already?” Shang Xunzi shook his head, refusing to believe Qing Ye.

“But the truth is so, stop chasing him.” Qing Ye breathed in deeply with a pale expression.

“Lord!” The remaining rank seven Gu Immortals shouted, Fang Yuan was right in front of them, it was a great chance to kill this demon, they would gain an incredible amount of contribution credits! If they let him go, they would definitely be reprimanded and punished.

But Qing Ye made up his mind.

“Among the three Immortal Gu Houses, Eternal Yacht is the fastest but has the weakest defense. You’ve all seen how time cutting edge could not be blocked!”

“If we pursue him, as long as Fang Yuan kills us one by one, he will gain this Eternal Yacht instead. Plus, even though I have a phantom aperture, you all have a lifetime of accumulation, we cannot give them all to this demon.”

If at this moment, other than Eternal Yacht, the other Immortal Gu Houses were around, Qing Ye might pursue him.

But right now, if they chased after him, there would not be any chance of victory.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1634: Attack and Defend

“Huff...” Fang Yuan let out a breath of air and suddenly opened his eyes.

This was an underground cave, there were dim flames lighting the walls, creating a natural formation. Even though it was not strong, it could alert him.

Fang Yuan was ambushed by Heavenly Court in the River of Time, he had fought desperately for a way out after an intense struggle.

After getting away from Qing Ye and the rest, Fang Yuan followed the tributary of the River of Time and got to the outside world of Southern Border.

Southern Border was the headquarters of Shadow Sect, Purple Mountain True Monarch had set up many eerie fire caves at many locations. Fang Yuan used Fixed Immortal Travel to randomly go into one and rest, recovering from the fight.

Even though he had reverse flow protection seal, he was not using it the entire time, he had to rely on winter coat. Let alone the battle with Li Huang, just during his escape, Fang Yuan was hit by the three Immortal Gu Houses multiple times, his injuries were not light.

Fang Yuan inspected his sovereign immortal body before standing up slowly.

After a few days of recovery, he had already healed. Most importantly, because the sovereign immortal body had non-conflicting dao marks, his healing effects were very effective.

His rank eight white litchi immortal essence had also increased, but it was still in the red zone.

Fang Yuan paced around in the cave with his arms behind his back. While considering the situation, his frown got deeper.

This time, he had suffered greatly in the River of Time. It was no exaggeration to say that he had ‘barely survived’.

Fang Yuan did not feel much fear or joy, such a case was within his expectations.

Heavenly Court’s foundation was simply too deep!

Fang Yuan’s growth was simply nothing compared to the long history of Heavenly Court.

With such immense foundation, they only had to put in some effort to give Fang Yuan huge problems. The battle in the River of Time was a good affirmation to this.

Earlier, Fang Yuan had an advantage against Heavenly Court, it was because he sneak attacked and caught them unprepared. Because he was able to stay hidden, Heavenly Court could not do anything. Fang Yuan had always been exerting all his effort and using all his time to grow stronger and make Heavenly Court’s plans fail each time.

But as Heavenly Court learned more about Fang Yuan, they placed more emphasis on him, when it finally came to a frontal assault, Fang Yuan’s strength was just too little.

Heavenly Court was not just strong in foundation, the biggest advantage was their unified mindset.

Southern Border’s righteous path also had immense strength, but all of the clans were focused on their individual benefits, they could not effectively deal with Fang Yuan.

But Heavenly Court had always been pressuring Fang Yuan.

If not for his schemes and plots, any other demonic path Gu Immortal would have been captured or killed already.

As time passes, Heavenly Court’s arrangements in the River of Time would get more elaborate, the chances of getting Red Lotus’ true inheritance would become slimmer.

Against such a strong enemy, what could Fang Yuan do?

“I have expended almost all of my white litchi immortal essence.”

“Reverse Flow River also has barely any water, Li Huang expended too much of it, I can’t use it anymore.”

Unlike Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley which had rank nine killer move orderly well and could be repaired using Landscape as Before rapidly, Reverse

Flow River was very different.

Fang Yuan did not lack the methods to restore it, but any method would incur huge costs!

For the foreseeable future, Fang Yuan would not be able to use his reverse flow protection seal anymore.

1

Even without reverse flow protection seal, Fang Yuan had gotten to rank eight and obtained Xia Cha’s methods, on the whole, his strength had still risen by quite a lot.

“But this time, I exposed too many methods.”

Immemorial year beasts, spring scissors, summer fan, and other killer moves were exposed, they were part of Fang Yuan’s plan. But the reveal of time cutting edge was truly a shame.

There was no choice, in that battle, if Fang Yuan did not use this method, he might have died already.

“But I am not without gains.”

Fang Yuan also managed to probe Heavenly Court’s foundation.

They had a mysterious method to cause the resonance of Spring Autumn Cicada!

Fang Yuan had not expected this.

But now, thinking about it, Fang Yuan could understand that the time path formation in ambush was not targeted at him, but Red Lotus’ true inheritance instead.

And Spring Autumn Cicada was the key to opening Red Lotus’ true inheritance.

How could Heavenly Court not research Red Lotus’ true inheritance using Spring Autumn Cicada as the starting point? Even though they could not refine Spring Autumn Cicada, they could mimic it to a great extent.

“Li Huang, Qing Ye...” New rank eight Gu Immortals showed up.

Heavenly Court ruled Central Continent and could take in rank eight Gu Immortals from the ten great ancient sects as new members. From time to time, a few experienced experts would wake up from the immortal graveyard.

Having been created since the Remote Antiquity Era, all the way until now, nobody knew how deep Heavenly Court’s foundation truly was.

Precisely with such foundations, during the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, Heavenly Court ruled Central Continent and fought against four other regions, for a long time, they held the advantage and even many super clans were destroyed.

Perhaps because of this, even though Spectral Soul managed to defy heaven, he did not dare to attack Heavenly Court directly, he continued to lurk and infiltrate it slowly.

“And those three Immortal Gu Houses... no, the one I destroyed earlier did not lose many Immortal Gu, even if they were destroyed, Heavenly Court could still refine it. I am afraid that next time, I will have to face four or more Immortal Gu Houses!”

Rank eight time path Gu Immortals were not easily found, even for Heavenly Court.

But time path Immortal Gu Houses could be assembled using parts of other Immortal Gu Houses, or using Immortal Gu that various Gu Immortals had in their possession or inventory.

After assembling these time path Immortal Gu Houses, Heavenly Court could place a large number of Gu Immortals from different paths inside, allowing them to seal off the entire River of Time.

Any plan of luring the enemy away would not work.

Heavenly Court was the number one grotto-heaven in the five regions, there was no concerns over its safety. Even if Fang Yuan attacked Heavenly Court directly, not only would he be unable to find the entrance, even if he got in, he would incur Heavenly Court’s wrath, a few rank eight great experts from the immortal graveyard could wake up and take his life.

And if Fang Yuan attacked the ten great ancient sects, he would not be able to topple Heavenly Court’s rule either, and it was extremely risky to do so. After all, they had the wisdom path great expert Fairy Zi Wei.

Fang Yuan’s gaze was cold as ice, he knew clearly that to find Red Lotus’ true inheritance, he would need to face off against Heavenly Court!

The more defenses Heavenly Court placed in the River of Time, the more important Red Lotus’ true inheritance was, and the greater Fang Yuan’s hope to destroy fate Gu rested in it.

“I need to be fast!”

Heavenly Court had all sorts of methods, they might find Red Lotus’ true inheritance before him. Thus, he needed to get past their layers of defense into the stone lotus island before Heavenly Court succeeds, and obtain the most crucial things left by Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

As for what they were, Fang Yuan had no idea, even Heavenly Court might not know.

Guarding the River of Time was an open scheme by Heavenly Court, because they had the tactical advantage, they were not afraid that Fang Yuan would not come.

Fate Gu was about to recover, Fang Yuan needed to get past Heavenly Court and obtain Red Lotus’ true inheritance to have a chance of destroying Fate. Even if he had to take huge risks, even if he had to risk his life, even though there was an ambush, he had to go!

“There are no special tactics or shortcuts, I need to raise my strength and continue to grow, surpassing Heavenly Court’s defenses to break through these obstacles and obtain Red Lotus’ true inheritance!”

Once Fang Yuan achieves this goal, he would have the qualification and ability to continue challenging Heavenly Court.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1635: Logistics

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Western Desert.

All the surroundings were covered in a snow-white color. Fang Yuan’s time path clone traveled here as he grabbed a handful of sand, looking at it.

The sand particles were all clear as crystal or ice, having a feeling of coldness in them.

Right now, the skies were bright and sunny, Mini Western Desert was quite a warm place, but this desert was very cool and refreshing.

Fang Yuan’s clone put a bit of snow-white sand into his mouth, after his saliva came into contact, it melted and gave off a salty taste.

This was salt sand.

In human history, salt sand had a very long story.

A million years ago, during the Olden Antiquity Era, even though humans created Heavenly Court, the other four regions were still filled with strong variant human forces, they enslaved and suppressed humanity.

In Western Desert, there was a human city, it was ostracized and suppressed by the variant humans.

The variant humans joined up and pretended to be bandits, robbing all of the caravans that tried to head to the human city. As time passed, the human city lacked essential resources and was slowly unable to survive.

The human city lord feared for the safety of his people, he had to seek help from a variant human group, marrying his beloved daughter to them in exchange for peace.

The city lord’s daughter knew what was more important, for the sake of the humans in the city, she sacrificed herself.

The group soon set off from the city, escorted by the human city lord himself.

While traveling in the desert, they met an old man who had fainted.

The old man was heavily injured and was on the verge of death, his entire body was covered in abscesses, the smell was repulsive. The city lord saw that he was a human, he quickly saved him and gave the old man some clean water.

The old man woke up slowly, he said to the city lord: “Oh city lord, since you saved me, why don’t you provide me some more help, give me your robe and steed so that I can leave on my own.”

The city lord’s subordinates started to laugh, the clothes were so precious, how could they give them to such a lowly beggar?

But the city lord waved his hand: “The value of a robe cannot match a person’s life. I have other clothes with me, you can have this. But my steed can only be ridden by a strong Gu Master, if I give it to you, I will be causing you harm.”

Saying so, the city lord gave his robe as well as a large amount of water and food to the old man.

Next, the city lord ordered his men to bring over a mild tempered camel to the old man.

The old man sighed deeply: “City lord, I have long heard of your kind reputation, it is truly not a lie. Since you want to do a good deed, why don’t you help me fully. The abscesses on my back have been troubling me for years, only a virgin girl who is born in the yin year, yin month and yin day1 can heal me by using her mouth to burst them.”

Just as the old man said that, the city lord’s subordinates started to rebuke in anger, they wanted to kill this old man.

The city lord was a little angry, because everyone knew that his daughter was a virgin girl born in the yin year, yin month and yin day.

The city lord said: “Old man, stop making fun of me. Even though I am a city lord, I am also a pitiful father. I love my daughter, but I have no choice but to send her to the vicious feathermen, and let her become their slave concubine.”

“Father, if my sacrifice can save the entire city, I will accept that fate.” At this time, the city lord’s daughter arrived. The clamor had drawn her attention, she understood the situation from the description of others.

She walked towards the old man as she nodded: “Old sir, let me see your abscesses.”

“You are willing to heal my injury?” The old man asked.

“Yes. Even though I am the city lord’s daughter and everyone says I am of noble blood, how noble can I truly be?” The city lord’s daughter smiled bitterly: “Only when the entire human race is noble can our statuses truly rise, I have no hope left, I am going to be a slave concubine of the variant humans. In that case, why shouldn’t I save you? We humans are too weak now, the recovery of one person is better than nothing.”

The city lord and the others heard her words and felt very moved, they did not stop her.

The abscesses on the old man’s back were ugly and disgusting, they were filled with pus and had an overbearing smell, people would want to puke upon seeing them.

The city lord’s daughter was slightly dazed, but she held in her disgust and used her teeth to burst the abscesses on the old man’s back.

Once they burst, a white-silver liquid flowed out.

The liquid landed on the desert and emitted a thick fragrant smell, making the caravan group feel refreshed mentally.

The old man’s body vanished, only his voice was left, he said: “Oh city lord, you are a person worthy of my help. Humans cannot just rely on Gu Immortals, you

Gu Masters are the hope of the future. I will entrust this desert to you, make good use of it.”

The city lord and the rest realized at this moment, the old man was a human Gu Immortal, they quickly knelt on the ground.

And this desert was changed by the white-silver liquid, becoming the snow-white salt sand. After obtaining this huge desert, the city lord sold the salt sand as edible salt, he did not lack revenue and managed to revive his city, becoming stronger in time.

Currently, salt sand was no longer a unique product of Western Desert, it was available in all five regions.

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture had salt sand too, he had obtained it from annexing a Southern Border Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture.

After inspecting it, Fang Yuan’s clone gained a deeper understanding of the desert, he returned in satisfaction.

“Right now in treasure yellow heaven, Heavenly Court has started to sell silver dragonfish. They must have gotten the method to produce it from Spectral Soul, in time, golden dragonfish will also appear in the market.”

Fang Yuan’s dragonfish business was feeling a huge impact.

In the short term, because he had obtained immense market share, his dragonfish still provided huge profits. But he definitely would gradually lose his profits to Heavenly Court.

But it was not a problem, after annexing the Southern Border immortals, the sovereign immortal aperture had gained over ten blessed lands, and even a grotto-heaven.

Forget about salt sand, it was an ordinary Gu material. But he gained a lot of immortal material resources, there were at least five to six resource points that could match the dragonfish business, Xia Cha grotto-heaven’s year essence pool was one of them.

Thus, Fang Yuan was still earning a lot of profits, his immortal essence stones were accumulating at a faster pace than before.

Due to his development in the past, he did not lack any food production for the feeding of his Immortal Gu. Even though he obtained some Immortal Gu as loot from battle, he also obtained the respective Gu Immortals’ immortal apertures, he completely moved their resource points over to himself.

“The feeding of Immortal Gu still has some flaws, but that is not an issue.” The time path clone looked at the salt sand desert one last time before using Fixed Immortal Travel.

This salt sand desert was the second last resource point that he visited.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan’s clone went to City Well.

Inside City Well, there was already a sizable group of hairy men.

These hairy men were obtained from the immortal apertures of the Southern Border Gu Immortals, almost all of them had a certain number of hairy men raised to refine mortal Gu.

Hairy man slaves were the most popular ones in treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan gathered the hairy men in all these immortal apertures and placed them into City Well to live.

Currently, raising hairy men was most helpful to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan gave some dream path Gu recipes as well as cultivation methods to these hairy men. Their task was to enter their own dream realms and gather dream path materials to refine dream path mortal Gu for Fang Yuan’s use.

Fang Yuan’s unravel dream killer move expended a lot of dream path mortal Gu.

Earlier, Fang Yuan was exploring dream realms and used up all of his accumulated dream path mortal Gu. If not for these hairy men refining dream path mortal Gu to replenish his supply, Fang Yuan might not have been able to explore all of his dream realms.

Fang Yuan’s clone came to City Well as the sky turned dark, even though there was no sun or moon, it seemed to be evening currently.

After Fang Yuan became rank eight, the blessed land became a grotto-heaven, it had astronomical changes now. Because the sovereign immortal aperture had a lot of time path resources, the changes was very precise, almost like the five regions.

Fang Yuan’s clone was about to find out the situation of the hairy men when his body froze, a bright light flashed across his eyes: “The main body has already found the location of the Five Xiang’s seal!”

Fang Yuan rested in his eerie fire cave for a while before leaving and going to white heaven.

His immortal aperture was well operated, the logistics were clear and orderly, he did not need to waste time in recuperating, his immortal essence storage rose continuously.

He did not want to waste time, he headed to white heaven immediately. Right now, the Five Xiang’s seal was opening, the ancient bet was undergoing again!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1636: Demon King!

Immemorial white heaven.

A tall gatehouse suddenly emerged in the sky that was originally empty.

The gatehouse had a tall roof and two statues at the side of the gate. There was a huge plaque above the gate, writing the words ‘Five Xiang’s Bet Entrance’.

The entire gatehouse seemed to be made of bronze, it radiated a majestic aura. Initially, it was only a phantom image, but as time passed, it became solid and clearer.

Qi clan had six Gu Immortals in total, they were all standing outside the gatehouse now, waiting for it to materialize entirely.

The leader was an old Gu Immortal, he had a thin body but strong spirits, his eyes radiated with brilliance, he stood up straight like a spear. He was Qi clan’s first supreme elder Qi Fa.

On his left was Qi clan’s second supreme elder Qi Cai, he stroked his beard as he said: “I have experienced many openings of the seal, but this time, I feel very impatient, I almost cannot wait!”

Third supreme elder Qi Jin laughed: “This bet has been going on for thousands of years, we are finally going to end it today. As descendants of Qi clan, we can proudly face our ancestors, we are the eventual victors of this bet!”

As they spoke, the gatehouse formed fully, a huge area of clouds gathered to hold up this gatehouse.

The door started to shine in five colors, representing the strength of the Five Xiangs.

First, red light shined down, causing the clouds to turn bright red.

This was Xue Xiang’s Xue clan, because they cultivated blood path, they had been wiped out. Thus, after the red light shined around the place, it faded away.

Next was yellow light.

It was Chi Xiang’s Chi clan, even though they had descendants, because they lived in the immortal apertures of their ancestors and did not work hard, they were living like livestock, not a single Gu Immortal emerged from among them.

Next, a brown light appeared.

Ni Xiang’s Ni clan had Gu Immortals in the past, even though the numbers were small, they were all elites. Especially Ni Er, someone deduced that his refinement path attainment level was at the point of quasi-supreme grandmaster! He was the one who fused Immortal Gu into the bloodline of Ni clan members, he wanted to assist his descendants but right now, Ni clan’s villages were controlled by Qi clan, they could not win.

After the brown light came white light.

“Our turn.” Qi Cai became very alert, he could not wait anymore.

“Let’s go.” Qi Fa said with a firm tone, he led the four Gu Immortals behind him as they went to the gatehouse, bathing in the white light.

The white light flickered for a moment as it got stronger, sweeping around the five Qi clan Gu Immortals’ bodies as it returned to its original intensity, continuing to shine.

1

But Qi clan’s Gu Immortals were all here already.

Without any additional descendant of Qi Xiang, the white light faded away.

There was a white light spiraling above the heads of the five Qi clan Gu Immortals, they had passed the test of the Five Xiang’s seal, they were qualified to enter for the bet.

“Bai clan is the last one.” Qi Jin spoke, unable to conceal his nervousness.

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals were all above the clouds, they had not entered the door yet, they were alert and looked around.

They knew of the existence of Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing had inherited Bai Xiang grotto-heaven, she even learned the immortal killer move Bai Xiang, displaying great power in a few battles.

Heavenly Court had exposed intel on Fang Yuan, that involved the Shadow Sect members as well. Even though Bai Ning Bing was not part of Shadow Sect, her information was also exposed.

Even though Qi clan was secluded and did not mix with the circles of Gu Immortals, they still had their collection of information regarding the outside world.

Blue light shined for a while but nobody showed up, it was about to weaken and fade away.

Qi Cai let out a breath of air: “Good, Bai Ning Bing did not show up. Our Qi Cai will definitely win.... hmm!”

He had just spoken when two figures approached at a rapid speed, in the blink of an eye, they arrived in front of the gatehouse.

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals looked over and saw a boy and a girl.

The girl had silvery hair that flowed down to her waist. Her pale blue dragon eyes emitting a cold aura to the outside world. Her skin was white as snow, her expression was cold, her beauty was simply divine. And the most eye-catching thing was the pair of small coral-like dragon horns on her forehead.

Seeing this female immortal, Qi clan’s Gu Immortals all thought of a name — Bai Ning Bing.

“Bai Ning Bing came after all, damn it!”

“Who is that beside her?”

Qi Jin first noticed Bai Ning Bing before turning his gaze towards the other Gu Immortal.

This Gu Immortal was a young man with similarly long hair that was black and smooth, he had a sharp and tall nose, his face was extremely exquisite, his eyes were deep like the abyss, resembling the darkness that existed since the beginning of time, able to devour anything in its way.

Seeing this young looking Gu Immortal, Qi Jin shook like he had been hit by lightning, his heart turned cold, he gulped as he said in a hoarse voice with great difficulty: “Fang, Fang Yuan...”

He was already the most composed one, the Qi clan Gu Immortals around him were shaking, their legs were trembling as they had sweat pouring down their foreheads.

Bai Ning Bing was Fang Yuan’s henchman, the five regions’ Gu Immortals knew that.

If Bai Ning Bing appeared and participated in the Five Xiang’s bet, Fang Yuan was likely to come too.

Qi clan had known this and were mentally prepared for it before coming here.

However!

When Fang Yuan truly appeared in front of them, they found that their mental preparations were all in vain. Fear, panic, chaos, all sorts of emotions filled their hearts, they felt like they had fallen into an icy river.

This was Fang Yuan!

He had been reborn using Spring Autumn Cicada.

Refining an Immortal Gu on Three Kings Mountain as a mortal, snatching Hu Immortal blessed land from the Central Continent ten great ancient sects.

He went to Northern Plains and destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, nobody knew how great his gains were.

He inherited a true inheritance of Thieving Heaven and cooperated with Lang Ya blessed land and the other variant humans, becoming a traitor of humans.

He disguised as Wu Yi Hai and deceived Wu Yong like a fool.

During the dream realm battle, he toyed with the entire righteous path of Southern Border and became the leader of Shadow Sect.

Southern Border’s righteous path chased after him and Heavenly Court hunted him, but he remained free and got stronger and stronger.

At the regional wall, he fought against the rank eight Gu Immortal Thunder Ghost True Monarch as a rank seven and pummeled her, leading to a fall in Heavenly Court’s reputation.

When Lang Ya blessed land was invaded by Heavenly Court, he stole Fixed Immortal Travel and left freely!

Several months ago, he ambushed Southern Border's righteous path and kidnapped many Southern Border Gu Immortals, extorting all the super forces.

Not long ago, Heavenly Court had distributed the intel in treasure yellow heaven, the battle in the River of Time had been exposed. The entire world of the five regions was shocked! Fang Yuan had become a rank eight Gu Immortal silently, obtaining killer moves like spring scissors, summer fan, and five finger fist heart sword, most amazingly, he even had the long lost method, time cutting edge.

Seeing that his intel was exposed, Fang Yuan returned the favor and exposed all of Heavenly Court's methods as well.

The Gu Immortal world was in a huge commotion!

Heavenly Court's foundation and methods were shocking.

But the scarier thing was, Fang Yuan managed to escape regardless.

Heavenly Court had set up a super time path formation in the River of Time, there were multiple rank eights and many Immortal Gu Houses, but they could not do anything to Fang Yuan!

Even though Fang Yuan lost, in fact running away like a dog, after this battle was exposed, his reputation soared and left a deep impression in everyone's hearts.

Not only because of his schemes and ferocity, but also due to his opponent being Heavenly Court.

It was created since the Remote Antiquity Era, Heavenly Court which had three million years of history and had withstood the multiple invasions of various Demon Venerables, the number one human force created since the beginning of human history!

After so long, this Heavenly Court could actually do nothing to a demonic path Gu Immortal?!

1

This was a really rarely seen situation.

Even throughout the entire history of Heavenly Court, it was rarely seen.

Countless Gu Immortals and super forces were watching, waiting to see how Heavenly Court would capture Fang Yuan. How long could Fang Yuan really last?

Because of all these emotions, Fang Yuan's reputation was at its peak.

Rank seven Fang Yuan could resist rank eight.

Rank eight Fang Yuan was the king of demonic immortals, shaking the world!

1

He had grown like a shooting star, the speed was simply unthinkable. This meteor was currently like the blazing sun, he was bright and dazzling, countless people could not even look up at him.

Demon King Fang Yuan!

1

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals started trembling even more fiercely, Fang Yuan’s mere entrance had already intimidated all these people.

His demonic might was unstoppable.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1637: He Cheated!

1

“Everyone, don’t panic.” Qi Fa said in a dry voice. His tall body was like a bamboo in the wind, wavering slightly.

Nobody laughed.

Qi clan had three rank seven and two rank six Gu Immortals, they were not Fang Yuan’s match even if they joined up. They were meat on the chopping block, they were completely defenseless.

After Qi Fa spoke, he mustered his courage and continued: “We have already obtained the acknowledgement of the gatehouse, we can explore that grotto-heaven, we are also protected by the gatehouse. If Fang Yuan wants to kill us, he will need to pass the gatehouse, but if he destroys it, he will break the rules of the bet and would not reach the other side.”

Qi Fa’s words calmed everyone down.

Fang Yuan looked at Qi Fa with slight surprise as he smiled, praising: “He is quite smart.”

Qi Fa’s words were said to Qi clan’s Gu Immortals, but was also meant for Fang Yuan. Qi clan was able to become the eventual winner of the Five Xiang’s bet, it was not without reason. These last years, Qi clan had developed while suppressing or enslaving the other four clans, they also kept a low profile and hid themselves deeply. Even Southern Border’s righteous path did not know or attempt to find the Five Xiang’s treasure, this was due to Qi clan’s abilities.

But no matter how amazing they were, against Fang Yuan, they were doomed to fail.

Fang Yuan’s smile was terrifying in their eyes, his pearly white teeth were like sharp daggers aiming at them.

Fang Yuan took a look at Qi clan’s Gu Immortals before looking over at Bai Ning Bing.

Both of them had already negotiated earlier, Bai Ning Bing nodded at Fang Yuan before flying towards the gatehouse.

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals were slightly stirred, but they could do nothing but watch.

Once Bai Ning Bing entered the blue light, this icy light shook for a moment before stabilizing.

Fang Yuan nodded to himself, he was afraid earlier that Bai Ning Bing’s dragonman status would affect it, after all, dragonmen were variant humans and were not traditional humans. But now, it seemed that the gatehouse only cared about Bai Ning Bing’s bloodline, regardless of her status as human or variant human.

After a few breaths of time, Bai Ning Bing gained the acknowledgement of the gatehouse and was sent up into the clouds by a formless and mild force.

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals had flickering gazes, they all showed a look of regret.

“It seems that Bai Ning Bing is not under Fang Yuan’s enslavement, otherwise, the gatehouse would not acknowledge her.”

“It is a pity...”

“Damn it, Bai Ning Bing was allowed to enter the world beyond the gatehouse too!”

Bai Ning Bing was found by Old Man Yan Shi last time, but she was never enslaved, all they did was cooperate.

After joining Fang Yuan, Bai Ning Bing was not targeted by Fang Yuan’s enslavement methods either.

This was all due to this gatehouse.

Bai Ning Bing landed on the cloud and inspected the area, before saying to Fang Yuan: “Getting onto the clouds would be the same as getting the gatehouse’s acknowledgement, Gu Immortals cannot fight each other here.”

“Okay.” A bright light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes, seeing his following actions, Qi clan’s Gu Immortals all gasped in shock.

Fang Yuan actually flew towards the blue light.

The blue light flickered for a moment before stabilizing.

Even though Fang Yuan was in his original appearance, he had activated immortal killer move familiar face already. He had modified this move, adding in blood path Immortal Gu to disguise his own bloodline. Initially, he had used this against Wu clan, disguising as Wu Yi Hai and mixing into the righteous path.

But before Fang Yuan got happy, the four other lights appeared on the gatehouse.

These four lights represented the power of the other four Xiangs.

Fang Yuan was slightly surprised, earlier, he had allowed Bai Ning Bing to enter first in order to inspect the blue light. After he flew in, he managed to deceive the blue light, but to think that the other four Xiangs unleashed their power.

Boom!

The gatehouse shook, Fang Yuan was pushed out of the light by a strong force.

“Familiar face cannot deceive it?” Fang Yuan’s heart shook slightly.

Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs!

This strong force that had once taken leadership of Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world had displayed its immense power.

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals all sighed in huge relief, great joy appeared on their faces.

Fang Yuan’s actions were simply too shocking, but this result was the best for them.

“So close, Fang Yuan could not get in!”

“We have hope! This way, Fang Yuan is kept outside, we only need to deal with Bai Ning Bing.”

“Her Bai Xiang killer move is troublesome, but our Qi Xiang true inheritance is not weak either.”

Fang Yuan focused as he looked at the gatehouse.

Indeed, he had underestimated the gatehouse. Or rather, Shadow Sect and Bai Ning Bing’s information was not sufficient regarding this gatehouse.

To deceive it, familiar face was not enough.

Fang Yuan did not want Bai Ning Bing to explore it alone.

She was unreliable, and even if she was reliable, she could not deal with Qi clan’s Gu Immortals alone.

Even though Fang Yuan had encountered an obstacle earlier, his determination to get in had not wavered.

“Qi Xiang, Bai Xiang, Xue Xiang, Ni Xiang, Chi Xiang, these are the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs. This gatehouse was created by all five of them, their power was fused into one.”

Fang Yuan went into rapid contemplation.

Qi Xiang, Bai Xiang, Xue Xiang, Ni Xiang, and Chi Xiang; they were in qi path, ice path, blood path, earth path, and food path respectively.

Fang Yuan had high attainment in blood path and earth path, he was confident.

In terms of food path, even though his attainment level was not high, Fang Yuan had Spectral Soul's true inheritance, it contained the original food path inheritance in this world. With such a foundation, Fang Yuan had an immensely deep amount of information to work with.

His qi path and ice path attainment levels were very low. But ice path was not a problem, he had Bai Ning Bing's Bai Xiang true inheritance that was used to deceive the blue light already.

“So, my only obstacle is Qi Xiang's power.” Divine brilliance flashed in Fang Yuan's eyes.

Fang Yuan did not have qi path attainment level or sufficient qi path inheritances, because it was already on the decline for a long time.

“No issue, I have the light of wisdom.”

Fang Yuan wanted to use the light of wisdom to force his way through!

Qi clan's Gu Immortals conversed.

“What is he doing?”

“He seems to be deducing... didn't Heavenly Court announce it, this demon has very extraordinary wisdom path methods.”

“Hehe, it is useless, how can he deduce the Five Xiang's arrangements in such a short time?”

Qi clan's Gu Immortals were very confident about this.

They had tried to break the power of the Five Xiangs long ago, but they had no success. This was the failure of generations of Gu Immortals that had tried time and time again.

They had failed too many times against the Five Xiang's seal, how could Fang Yuan possibly succeed?

“Or maybe Fang Yuan's wisdom path methods are above us. But he is simply dreaming if he wants to deduce it now. This difficulty is like deducing an unknown immortal killer move that he has just seen for the first time in battle, he needs to deduce and unravel it. He is too naive!” Qi Fa shook his head, as he said that, his courage appeared again, his fear was fading.

Boom!

At the next moment, Fang Yuan attacked the gatehouse.

The gate shook intensely, the expressions of Qi clan's Gu Immortals also changed.

“This, this, this!”

“The demon attacked, he actually attacked the gatehouse. He wants to destroy the teleportation entrance, does he not want to enter?”

“He failed the deduction so he got angry instead?!”

Bam bam bam...

As Fang Yuan attacked fiercely, the entire gatehouse started to shake. Qi clan’s Gu Immortals also shook as their footing became unstable, they were like candles in the wind.

Shock and fear was shown on their faces, some even began to tremble.

Once the gatehouse gets destroyed, they would lose their protection, it would be up to Fang Yuan whether he wants to kill or capture them.

“It must hold against him!” Qi clan’s Gu Immortals were all praying in their hearts.

Fang Yuan gradually stopped attacking.

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals breathed roughly, they were all wet with sweat. The feeling of almost dying was too terrible, they had never been so nervous.

But eventually, the gatehouse still remained standing.

“The demon did not succeed, great!” Qi Jin cheered, while the other Qi clan Gu Immortals had joyful expressions on their faces.

Fang Yuan glanced at them as he showed a mocking smile: “Oh? Why do you think I stopped?”

Saying so, he activated an immortal killer move, there was no flashy light or commotion, his entire body’s aura underwent a profound and mystical change.

Next, Fang Yuan landed and bathed in the blue light, easily gaining its acknowledgement and landing beside Bai Ning Bing.

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals were all dumbfounded, some opened their mouths and froze like statues.

Shock was expressed on their faces, some beliefs in their minds had been completely shattered by Fang Yuan’s success!

“This, this demon actually succeeded!”

“This must be a dream! How can this be?”

“How could he succeed in such a short period of time?”

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals felt incredibly confused, before a strong cold feeling entered their hearts.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength was ridiculously high, but his wisdom path attainment was even beyond the understanding of the Qi clan Gu Immortals.

Such a monster made even Heavenly Court without options. How could they deal with him?

“Gatehouse! Oh ancestor! This Fang Yuan is an outsider, he cheated!!” Qi Cai screamed, his face was full of fear and also anger.

But the gatehouse was silent, the Five Xiang’s seal started to gather power. Soon, a strong aura emerged from the gatehouse as five lights started to shine brightly.

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals saw this as their faces turned to despair.

They knew that the gatehouse had activated not because it exposed Fang Yuan’s identity, but because the teleportation was beginning.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1638: Ultimate Treasure of the Bet

The glaring light faded gradually.

Fang Yuan looked around, the environment had changed, he was already inside the small world past the gatehouse.

Bai Ning Bing was beside him, their distance was the same as before the teleportation.

Suddenly, Bai Ning Bing’s expression changed, mysterious information was transmitted into her mind. She looked at Fang Yuan, seeing that he was completely expressionless, she hesitated for a moment before saying: “This is a public grotto-heaven, the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs had once donated a portion of their grotto-heavens each to form this place. The entire grotto-heaven has five segments, they are not directly connected to each other, only the most central mountain range is shared among the five. The treasure of this bet is at the center of the grotto-heaven, as long as a Gu Immortal is acknowledged by the gatehouse and is teleported inside here, they can go after the treasure. Along the way, the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs have also set up some resources, stronger experts can try to take them away, but it is recommended that they do not take everything, so as to allow the resources to grow again in the future.”

Bai Ning Bing obtained this information, but Fang Yuan did not.

“It seems that even though I used the light of wisdom to deduce a killer move and disguise my identity, it was too roughly made in a rush.”

Fang Yuan had a deep gaze as he looked afar: “This means that we are very far from Qi clan’s Gu Immortals, and our areas are not connected. After disguising as a Bai Xiang descendant, I can only move about in this Bai Xiang grotto-heaven region?”

Fang Yuan wanted to try using Fixed Immortal Travel, but he did not know the appearance of Qi Xiang’s territory.

He had once killed Qi clan’s Qi Zai, but this person only became a Gu Immortal in the last thousand years, he did not enter this place or have any memories of it.

“According to my experience of getting past that gatehouse’s inspection, this place has a very strict level of defense, space path methods are likely to be restricted. I am afraid that even if I use Fixed Immortal Travel, there is a low possibility of success.”

Fang Yuan looked at the situation now, soon, he made up his mind.

“Let’s go to the center!”

The entire public grotto-heaven had five areas, they were all connected to the center which contained the ultimate treasure of this bet. In that case, Fang

Yuan would directly target it, he did not need to find Qi clan’s Gu Immortals. Not only would he waste time, he might not be able to find them after all.

Once they got to the mountain range, they would meet Qi clan’s Gu Immortals anyway.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing flew rapidly, crossing mountains and valleys.

Bai Xiang cultivated ice and snow path, this area was contributed by Bai Xiang grotto-heaven, thus even though there were mountains and valleys here, they were covered in thick snow, it was a field of white.

“Look there!” Bai Ning Bing suddenly said.

She was looking at a mountain, it was extremely steep and dangerous, at the peak, there were a hundred ice mirror snow lotuses growing.

This was a rank six immortal material containing ice path and wood path dao marks.

Near the snow lotus, there were many snow monsters and even desolate level snow monsters. If anyone went there and wanted to get the ice mirror snow lotuses, these snow monsters would stop them.

In fact, Fang Yuan had discovered it long ago, he only took a glance before flying away with Bai Ning Bing.

Even though these desolate level snow monsters were not his match, Fang Yuan did not want to waste time here, he headed straight for the center of the public grotto-heaven!

Ice mirror snow lotus, hundred years profound ice, thousand years profound ice, mystical frost water, heaven craft divine jade... along the way, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing saw many resource points, even though they were small to mid sized resource points, they had plentiful storage.

The deeper they went, the more valuable the resource points in the grotto-heaven. Of course, the beasts or plants defending them were also increasingly stronger. The Five Xiangs had specially created this arrangement to test their descendants.

Even though Fang Yuan’s current strength was enough to sweep through everything, he ignored these small benefits in front of him, his mind was completely on the center of the mountain range.

Howl—!

Howling of beasts could be heard continuously as they emerged from the valleys to attack Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

They were jade frost antelopes.

The large ones were huge like palaces, the small ones were the size of three houses, their eyes were fully jade green in color without irises. Their horns curled upwards, even without wings, they could float and travel in the air. Each time they jumped, their hooves would emit white frost that would produce a clear chiming sound.

These jade frost antelopes appeared very peculiarly, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing’s expressions quickly changed.

Fang Yuan snorted as he waved his hand, grabbing a fan that appeared out of nowhere.

Immortal killer move — Summer Fan!

Whoosh!

Summer fan whipped up strong winds that turned into tornadoes, they resembled winds but were actually filled with time path’s power.

The beasts that approached with a great momentum were engulfed by the winds and rapidly died. Their corpses fell from the sky like dumplings, crashing onto the snow and creating loud noises.

This large group of jade frost antelopes died in an instant, not just that, Fang Yuan’s fan also caused the snow mountain below him to crumble, creating a huge crater filled with rocks.

Fang Yuan flew down rapidly, slamming down as the rocks scattered.

He looked at a huge rock wall and inspected the aura on it, his expression turning cold.

There was a Gu formation here that Fang Yuan destroyed, it had the style of qi path.

“It seems that the restriction of five independent regions cannot restrict those Gu Immortals from Qi clan.” Fang Yuan said to Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing nodded: “Understandable, they have already been coming here so many times, they must have a deep understanding of the place. A lot of the Five Xiangs’ restrictions cannot stop them anymore. This also means that our journey is not going to be smooth.”

Fang Yuan smiled coldly: “Qi clan’s Gu Immortals are trying to obstruct us, they must be trying to delay for time to obtain the treasure first. We will not stay here, we will move rapidly.”

The two continued to fly, along the way, as Bai Ning Bing had expected, many beast groups obstructed them.

But these beast groups were all slaughtered easily by Fang Yuan’s methods, they could barely delay his advancement.

“Fang Yuan’s methods are truly terrifying! Our beast tides are simply thin as paper!”

“No, he is simply killing them like killing ants, this is too scary.”

“They are coming, they are near the central mountain range!”

“Don’t panic, there is a layer of defense at the mountain range, there is an immemorial desolate beast there.”

“The defenses were broken through, Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing are arriving!”

Qi clan's Gu Immortals continued to converse, the atmosphere was tense, when Fang Yuan arrived, Qi clan's Gu Immortals were all panicking, their nervousness could be felt from afar.

The area that stored the treasure was very obvious, Fang Yuan could see it the moment he entered the central mountain range.

At the peak of the highest mountain, there was a palace, it was decorated in the same style as the gatehouse.

This was an Immortal Gu House!

Fang Yuan successfully got into the Immortal Gu House, he saw that at the center of the hall, there were five Qi clan Gu Immortals sitting around the ultimate treasure.

Next, his gaze turned towards the treasure of the bet.

This mysterious treasure was a white crane.

This white crane has one leg, it was covered in snow-white feathers that had no dust or dirt on it. Its long beak was red in color, its wings were tucked in as its eyes were shut tight.

Fang Yuan's brows furrowed rapidly, he could tell that this white crane was extraordinary.

It was not a real living being, it was also not an Immortal Gu, yet it emitted a rank nine aura!

“Amazing!” Fang Yuan laughed: “So the ultimate treasure of the bet is a rank nine killer move!”

Fang Yuan's laughter made the Qi clan Gu Immortals shudder.

They were fearful and also furious.

Qi clan had painstakingly protected this ultimate treasure of the Five Xiangs bet, but an outsider was here now trying to take it!

Qi clan has already treated the treasure as their possession. Fang Yuan wanted to take it, it meant that the great animosity between Qi clan and Fang Yuan was unresolvable.

Fang Yuan's gaze was cold, he did not speak, he pointed his finger as a sword light flew out, attacking a Qi clan Gu Immortal.

The five Qi clan Gu Immortals had instilled their wills into the white crane killer move, they did not move and allowed the sword light to approach them.

At the crucial moment, the five lights of the hall shined as the sword light was dispelled soundlessly.

“As expected.” Fang Yuan felt no surprise.

This hall could gather the power of the entire public grotto-heaven, it was also the place where the Five Xiang's seal was the strongest. With this power overseeing the area, Fang Yuan and Qi clan's Gu Immortals could not fight each other.

Of course, Fang Yuan could act forcefully, but he had to suppress the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs' power, he would also cause great damage to the entire public grotto-heaven.

“No wonder Qi clan’s Gu Immortals are not moving! But since they have the qualification to refine this ultimate treasure, so can I!” Bai Ning Bing had her own thoughts, she got close to the killer move.

Next, she mimicked the five Gu Immortals from Qi clan as she sent her own will into it.

The five Qi clan Gu Immortals had nervous expressions while Bai Ning Bing’s body shook, she shouted to Fang Yuan: “Hurry up!”

Even without her reminder, Fang Yuan had already arrived beside her, he instilled his will into the killer move as he understood the entire situation.

At the same time, some information originating from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable also entered his mind!

“People of the future, I am Ben Jie Sun, also known as Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.”

“When exploring the immemorial white heaven, I by chance found a mysterious existence, it was like the heavenly spirit of a grotto-heaven. It was incredibly agile, I only managed to capture it after spending a lot of effort. After researching it, I found that it was incredibly profound, it involved the deepest mysteries of this world. It corresponded with the details in the latter half of <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.”

“I temporarily named it the natural heavenly spirit, it could not be brought out of white heaven or placed into one’s grotto-heaven. It was filled with heaven’s will that was constantly replenished at all times. Even I could not use my human will to refine it forcefully.”

“After thinking long and hard, I found a solution, I forcefully condensed it and created an immortal killer move, I called it — Heaven Form!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1639: Contest Over Heaven Form

“Heaven form?!” Fang Yuan was surprised, but soon understood what happened.

Everything was clear now.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was an otherworldly demon, he was skilled in space path and created theft path, he also had great ability in refinement path.

His entire life was dedicated to finding a way to leave the Gu Master world and return to his homeland.

He was the richest venerable, he searched for immortal materials all around the world and refined many Immortal Gu. He had also traveled the most, having explored almost the entire five regions and two heavens.

One day when exploring white heaven, he by chance found a mystical existence, after searching on it, he named it natural heavenly spirit.

Even with his Demon Venerable strength, he could not refine the natural heavenly spirit.

It was not hard to understand this.

According to Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s words, this natural heavenly spirit could not be brought out of immemorial white heaven, and inside white heaven, it was replenished by heaven’s will endlessly. When Gu Immortals refine Immortal Gu, they have to use their own will to get rid of the wild will in the Immortal Gu, eventually refining it into their tool.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable wanted to refine the natural heavenly spirit, even though the steps were different, in essence it was the same. The Demon Venerable’s will was strong, but against the natural heavenly spirit filled with heaven’s will, that was constantly replenished, he could not succeed.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable failed but was not dejected, man was the spirit of all living beings, he found a method, that was to combine the heavenly spirit with other Gu worms to form a rank nine immortal killer move.

This made Fang Yuan think of the ghostly concealment killer move that he had, it was also a rank nine killer move. It was paired with divine concealment, even though Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had used it long ago, these two moves still remained until now.

This seemed to be a specialty of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

The problem was, even if Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable found a way to turn the natural heavenly spirit into a rank nine immortal killer move heaven form, he could not manipulate or use it.

Because he did not manage to refine the natural heavenly spirit.

But this was part of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s plan, he knew that he could not refine the natural heavenly spirit in a short period of time, therefore he turned the heavenly spirit into an immortal killer move.

This way, the natural heavenly spirit would be replenished with heaven’s will at a far lower rate.

After Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable created heaven form, he did not use it. Before he vanished mysteriously, he left behind many Thieving Heaven true inheritances, he did not forget heaven form either.

“Heaven form killer move has not been truly refined, I cannot complete it alone, it needs a long period of time and generations of wills to cleanse. One day, it will be truly refined by a Gu Immortal, by then, it would be usable.”

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable also said that even though he left this killer move behind, it could not be controlled and was not a Thieving Heaven true inheritance, it needed more work from people in the future, it was only half a Thieving Heaven true inheritance.

Fang Yuan could deduce the future developments himself.

One day, when the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs explored immemorial white heaven, they happened to find this half Thieving Heaven true inheritance.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had said it clearly already, this rank nine killer move could only be used by one person, because all Five Xiangs wanted it, they argued and did not manage to come to a consensus, due to their internal conflict, their group fell apart.

The Five Xiangs tried but just the five of them could not refine this killer move, eventually, they set up the bet and agreed to use this to decide the owner of the immortal killer move.

Time passed mercilessly, countless events occurred throughout the ages.

Eventually, the Five Xiangs died, generations of Gu Immortal descendants of the Five Xiangs appeared and disappeared. Until today, Qi clan obtained the decisive advantage, and after years of hard work by their predecessors, they were finally about to succeed.

But Fang Yuan interfered!

It was understandable why the Qi clan Gu Immortals were so furious and filled with hatred.

Since the first generation of the Five Xiangs, they had worked so hard throughout the ages, their efforts were finally about to bear fruit, and now, he was here to snatch it away!

How shameless!

Too shameless, too despicable!

These emotions were the fuel that Qi clan was using to face Fang Yuan at the moment.

Fang Yuan was only a rank eight Gu Immortal, they believed that as long as they obtained the rank nine killer move, they would be able to defeat Fang Yuan, or at least, make him wary of their battle strength, they would be able to negotiate.

Fang Yuan came to Bai Ning Bing’s side as he instilled his will into the heaven form killer move.

Inside the heaven form killer move, there was a lump of stubborn heaven’s will that remained steady as a fortress, having the greatest defense.

Below this heaven’s will fortress were countless wills.

A vast sea of wills!

The bet had been undergone time and time again, a large number of Gu Immortals had left their wills behind. There were strong rank eight Gu Immortals like the Five Xiangs, there were also rank seven elites like Ni clan’s Gu Immortal Ni Er.

Such an accumulation was not strange.

But what made Fang Yuan surprised was that these wills were not moving, they seemed dead like rocks, staying completely still.

Only these newly entered wills were moving around like dragons, fighting above the sea of wills.

Three of the five Gu Immortal wills of Qi clan went to deal with Bai Ning Bing’s will. The remaining two attacked the heaven’s will fortress at the top.

“That is the central area of the killer move heaven form, whoever refines it will become the owner of heaven form!”

“Demon Fang Yuan’s will also came in!”

“Persevere, we cannot relax now, we are about to succeed.”

“This is the hard work of our Qi clan after countless years, for this moment, we have sacrificed too much, we cannot let the outsider Fang Yuan win!!”

The Qi clan Gu Immortals conversed, they spurred each other on, their morale was at its peak.

Actually, they had no other choice, Fang Yuan’s ruthless nature was known to all, if they did not manage to refine this rank nine killer move, they would definitely end up in pitiful states.

Without hesitation, Fang Yuan’s will charged up.

His will gathered into a lump and moved like a soaring dragon.

The wills of three Qi clan Gu Immortals cooperated, but they could not resist Fang Yuan’s fierce assault, they were retreating continuously.

They were just qi path Gu Immortals after all, while Fang Yuan had a huge advantage in this aspect.

“Persevere, regardless of the price we have to pay, we need to stall for time!”

“Quickly attack and take down the central control area!”

“As long as we can obtain this killer move, we might be able to kill this supreme demon king and eradicate him for good. We might be able to obtain a large number of venerable true inheritances...”

“Even if we cannot stop him, we need to expend his will so that he cannot take down the heaven’s will fortress at the top.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1640: Traitor Bai

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals were all standing together, resisting Fang Yuan desperately and courageously while feeling anxiety, fear and panic.

Fang Yuan frowned, he found that his will could not be instilled endlessly, after reaching a certain amount, he could not send any more.

Furthermore, when his will was instilled, his main body could only watch as the wills fought. Thus, his vast number of wisdom path methods could not work here.

Heaven form was rank nine, while Fang Yuan’s wisdom path methods were just rank eight at best. Even if they could affect the killer move heaven form, Fang Yuan did not want to try them, if he triggered the counterattack of the killer move, that would be a problem. Even if there was no counterattack, destroying heaven form would also make him lose the greatest treasure here.

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals needed heaven form to deal with Fang Yuan and protect themselves. Fang Yuan also wanted heaven form greatly, because he needed more strength to deal with the obstacles from Heavenly Court in the River of Time.

Thus, both sides had to compete using the most basic form of attacking through their wills.

In this regard, Fang Yuan was deeply experienced. After suffering at the hands of Mo Yao, he had practiced tirelessly to remove this weakness, it was his advantage now.

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals were not Fang Yuan’s match, but they had strength in numbers, their cumulative will was much greater than Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing.

As time passed, Fang Yuan’s advantage grew, but he could not turn this advantage into victory. The Qi clan Gu Immortals were resisting him stubbornly, they were outperforming themselves.

In fact, Fang Yuan still had one worry left, it was Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing had once backstabbed him, she was an unstable element in this situation.

But thankfully, the heaven’s will fortress at the top was very strong and did not waver, no matter how Qi clan’s Gu Immortals attacked it, there were no traces of it breaking down.

Fang Yuan started to feel troubled, at this rate, even if he got past or destroyed the Qi clan Gu Immortals’ wills, he might not have enough will left to deal with the heaven’s will at the center.

Time and again, Qi clan’s wills retreated while Fang Yuan’s will moved like a dragon, coiling around Qi clan’s wills, encircling them.

Qi clan’s wills were shocked, if Fang Yuan destroyed their encircled wills, they would be in deeper trouble, they would not be able to stop Fang Yuan from leaving.

Thus, the wills that had just dispersed gathered together again as they charged at Fang Yuan.

“Bai Ning Bing, block them.” Fang Yuan rapidly ordered.

Bai Ning Bing’s will was like an ice wall, it stabbed into the battlefield, but it defended Qi clan’s wills as it started to attack Fang Yuan!

Qi clan’s wills were greatly shocked, at the crucial moment, Bai Ning Bing had betrayed him.

Fang Yuan’s will was caught off guard by Bai Ning Bing, he was very angry.

Qi clan’s wills observed for a moment and became very happy, they attacked Fang Yuan from another direction.

Fang Yuan’s will continued to reduce in size, he had to give up on taking down Qi clan’s wills.

“Bai Ning Bing, you traitor, I will not forgive you!” Fang Yuan’s will roared, but the outcome was decided, he had to escape with his remaining will.

"Fang Yuan, with your personality, after getting heaven form, won't you deal with me? I am the descendant of Bai Xiang, heaven form killer move is my fortuitous encounter. Hahaha!" Bai Ning Bing's will laughed maniacally: "This is a great chance, after defeating you here, my entire life will become dazzling and hopeful as a result."

1

Bai Ning Bing did not want to let Fang Yuan's will off, she chased after him.

Fang Yuan's will could only escape.

"What are you all waiting for? Come and help!" Bai Ning Bing's will roared at Qi clan's wills.

Qi clan's wills were also heavily damaged, after thinking for a bit, Qi Fa's will shouted: "Don't move, there might be a trap, let them fight it out."

Fang Yuan's will was attacked by Bai Ning Bing's will and was terribly damaged, it was much smaller than Bai Ning Bing's will now. Eventually, she encircled him and fought until he was completely exterminated.

"To think that the demon Fang Yuan would be the first to fall!"

"No matter how vigilant he was, he could not defend against an internal threat."

"Hahaha, this is the rise of our Qi clan, this is a great opportunity. Let's go, we must exterminate Bai Ning Bing's will too!"

Qi clan's wills attacked again, even though Bai Ning Bing's will resisted stubbornly, two fists could not rival four palms, she was eventually wiped out as well.

"We succeeded!"

"Heaven form is ours!!"

Qi clan's wills were drowning in joy, now that they had no enemies left, they gathered and attacked the heaven's will fortress.

Boom!

At once, an explosion occurred at the heaven's will fortress, a large amount of heaven's will gushed out like uncaged beasts, attacking Qi clan's wills.

All along, this heaven's will had been defensive in nature, Qi clan's wills were deceived and forgot that it could move freely.

Heaven's will's retaliation was a huge surprise to Qi clan's wills, they suffered huge losses.

"How can there be so much heaven's will?"

"Impossible!"

"Heaven's will is crafty, it deceived us of its strength, I am unresigned!"

“Quickly resist it, we cannot afford to lose!”

Qi clan’s wills were determined and went all in, from a dangerous situation, they gradually stabilized it and eventually managed to gain the advantage over heaven’s will, when there was little heaven’s will left, the core was exposed, awaiting its new owner.

“We finally won!” A moment later, Qi clan’s wills were about to cry from joy. They only had a bit of will left, but heaven’s will was finally gone.

“I’m afraid not.” Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s will appeared again.

Qi clan’s wills were shocked, they started shouting.

“You, you were already eliminated right?”

“Impossible! You already used up your will, normally, you will need a thousand years before you can send your will in again.”

“Did you unravel this rank nine killer move? No, no way, this is a rank nine killer move originating from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable!”

Fang Yuan’s will snickered but he did not explain, he attacked.

Qi clan’s wills were like tiny rabbits, Fang Yuan attacked them like a fierce tiger, easily getting rid of them without much obstruction.

And next, Fang Yuan’s will replaced heaven’s will and went into the core area.

He was the final victor!

Opening his eyes, he saw the five Qi clan Gu Immortals escaping in a panic.

Fang Yuan did not stop them, this Immortal Gu House and public blessed land had the Five Xiang’s arrangements, they would definitely stop him if he attacked.

Bai Ning Bing stood by Fang Yuan’s side motionlessly, she did not have any intentions of escaping.

Everything that happened was part of Fang Yuan’s plan.

He purposely orchestrated a show, having Bai Ning Bing betray him. He wanted to deceive not just Qi clan’s Gu Immortals, but also heaven’s will.

Fang Yuan had much more experience against heaven’s will than Qi clan’s Gu Immortals. he deduced that heaven’s will had a lot of battle strength remaining, even if he defeated Qi clan’s wills, he would not be the match of heaven’s will.

Thus, he purposely backed off and hid away a portion of his will.

Of course, Bai Ning Bing’s will was truly wiped out. The advantage of this was that other than tricking Qi clan’s Gu Immortals, he could prevent her from doing anything at the most crucial moment.

The wills of Qi clan’s Gu Immortals were already weakened by Fang Yuan earlier, because they were facing huge problems and pressure, they were unable to see through Fang Yuan’s plot.

It was difficult indeed.

When wills thought about things, they would be expended. The smaller the will, the less it could think. Qi clan’s Gu Immortals also had to ensure that they had enough strength left to deal with heaven’s will.

The outcome was as Fang Yuan predicted, he was the final winner.

Heaven form was under Fang Yuan’s control, at this moment, he did not inspect, he turned to look at Bai Ning Bing with a deep gaze.

“Oh Bai Ning Bing... are you really not going to run?” Fang Yuan’s eyes burst out with killing intent.

Bai Ning Bing’s value had been squeezed out, she was not like Shadow Sect’s members, she was not under Fang Yuan’s control.

Since he obtained heaven form, it was time to settle this problem.

The atmosphere was tense, Fang Yuan’s killing intent was rising.

They were about to fight at any moment.

Evidently, Fang Yuan was not someone Bai Ning Bing could defeat at the moment. Even though the killer move Bai Xiang was a powerful move that had once terrorized Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, Bai Ning Bing’s cultivation level was too low now, her foundation was far weaker than Fang Yuan.

If they fought, Bai Ning Bing would die for sure!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1641: Very Interesting

Facing Fang Yuan’s immense killing intent, Bai Ning Bing smiled as she looked towards Fang Yuan straight in the eye, asking in return: “Why should I run?”

After pausing for a moment, she said: “Qi clan’s Gu Immortals escaped, that is because they don’t know you. We are both from Qing Mao Mountain, with my understanding of you, how could they escape? Hehe, since I cannot escape, what’s the point of running? Not only will I not escape, on the contrary, I will join Shadow Sect.”

Fang Yuan frowned: “I had thought of that, but your Bai Xiang killer move is too amazing, it can free you from almost any alliance agreement.”

The uniqueness of Bai Xiang was that it turned the Gu Immortal into a unique existence, even a tiny fragment could regenerate and be reborn.

The essence of alliance agreements were information path dao marks, Bai Ning Bing could make use of Bai Xiang to self-mutilate and get rid of her information path dao marks, negating her alliance agreements.

Thus, Bai Xiang was also used for healing, to get rid of unwanted dao marks in the body.

“Indeed.” Facing Fang Yuan’s deep wariness, Bai Ning Bing laughed, not caring about her own safety: “But isn’t that more exciting?”

Fang Yuan snorted, saying in displeasure: “I am not you, Bai Ning Bing.”

Bai Ning Bing nodded, she stopped smiling as brilliance flashed in her dragon eyes: “Indeed, I have been pursuing excitement all along. This is why I admire you, Fang Yuan, your life is truly exciting, it is so thrilling! Every time you plot, every time you succeed, or even every time you fail, they are filled with excitement. Especially earlier when you were ambushed by Heavenly Court and had to escape like a dog, it was truly the most thrilling experience!”

“The other Shadow Sect members cannot understand my feelings. Some just want to save Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, some feel fear and panic, some feel immense pressure, but what I feel is excitement and thrill. The bigger the problems, the bigger the troubles, the more exciting life is, isn’t that right?”

“Others might not know me, but I am sure that you understand me, right?”

Bai Ning Bing stared at Fang Yuan’s eyes with a bright gaze.

Fang Yuan was silent.

Back then on Qing Mao Mountain, he had deduced that Bai Ning Bing was a true demon. He was not wrong, that was exactly who she was. To pursue the excitement of life, she could give up anything, even her life. The values and moral concepts of normal people, the complexities of love and hatred, they were all unrelated to her.

She was different from the norm, her world view was vastly different, she only walked on her own path. She followed her own desires, she did not care about life and death.

In fact, Bai Ning Bing and Fang Yuan were very similar, they were the same kind, only that they pursued different goals.

Fang Yuan pursued eternal life, he was willing to sacrifice anything including himself. Even if he failed and died along the way, he would feel happy and content, because he lived pursuing his dreams, he felt a sense of satisfaction and enjoyment towards life.

Bai Ning Bing said that Fang Yuan understood her, she was absolutely right, it was the same as how she understood Fang Yuan.

The saying goes, heroes admired each other, it was the same for demons.

Fang Yuan’s killing intent gradually faded away.

His killing intent was only a facade, the truth was, he did not really have much killing intent.

Why should he kill Bai Ning Bing?

Fang Yuan’s strength far surpassed Bai Ning Bing, her threat was very low to Fang Yuan.

Sometimes, when he saw Bai Ning Bing, Fang Yuan could see his own reflection. True demons like them were too rare, meeting one was a form of luck, it was a form of affirmation towards their goals.

Because of their similarity, they recognized each other, they acknowledged each other.

Thus, back then, when Bai Ning Bing gave up her life to save Fang Yuan, she said her final words – asking Fang Yuan to live in her place and witness the excitement of life. Bai Ning Bing had felt that Fang Yuan could take her place to a certain extent.

Sometimes, Fang Yuan thought about it, if he and Bai Ning Bing exchanged identities, would he have made the same choice as her?

“Hahaha.” Bai Ning Bing suddenly raised her head and laughed: “I can give all of Bai Xiang grotto-heaven’s resources to you. But I want the Gu worms from Bai Xiang’s true inheritance, I am willing to join Shadow Sect because facing Heavenly Court is truly exciting! This was your excitement, but it will become mine as well.”

“In that case, there are three possible outcomes.” Bai Ning Bing squinted, excitement flashing in her eyes, there was a light of insanity.

“The first possibility, you get killed by Heavenly Court. With your strength, even if you get killed, it will be in an incredible manner, your struggle before death will definitely be a climax. By witnessing your death, it will be the greatest experience of my life.”

“The second possibility, Heavenly Court gets defeated or even destroyed by you. That is definitely exciting beyond belief, the number one force of human history falling like a crashing meteor, it will create the greatest sparks in this world.”

“And the third possibility, the one I anticipate the most, because it is the most thrilling! You and Heavenly Court get into a deadlock, both sides suffer losses. In that case, I will stay by your side, I will have the supreme chance to find an opportunity. I might even emerge as the victor, both you and Heavenly Court will become my stepping stones.”

Fang Yuan looked at Bai Ning Bing calmly, he said with a cold and expressionless face: “If I kill you now, all three possibilities will vanish.”

“Yes, yes...” Bai Ning Bing frowned, she became a little dejected, her gaze flickered and her tone became heavy: “That is true. If I die now, even though I will resist to the utmost, our strength is too vastly different, there will be little excitement in the battle.”

“But if that is your choice, I will accept it.” She smiled, shrugging: “I am just too weak, I have to accept that fate. This cruelty of life is also exciting, isn’t it? Hehehe.”

Death was not scary for Bai Ning Bing.

She was a lunatic, but also logical and calm. Such a person was the scariest.

But someone even scarier than her was standing right in front of her.

1

It was the demonic path overlord Fang Yuan who made both heaven’s will and Heavenly Court helpless to deal with.

Fang Yuan smiled as he laughed “Very interesting.”

Bai Ning Bing was a very interesting person.

Right now, Bai Ning Bing was weak and was subject to Fang Yuan’s mercy, she did not try persuading him to spare her, she said the opposite, even exposing her own threat to Fang Yuan.

This was because she understood Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was a person who kept a clear mind, he had already analyzed the benefits and costs of keeping her life. Once he made up his mind, it was useless no matter what was said.

Even without Bai Ning Bing’s words, Fang Yuan knew that he needed all the strength he could get to face Heavenly Court and obtain Red Lotus’ true inheritance. Bai Ning Bing was a precious source of battle strength, even if she was given a chance to betray him, so what?

A blade was naturally able to harm oneself. But if he threw this blade away and fought empty handed, was that not a stupid move?

It was up to Fang Yuan’s abilities to make good use of this blade and prevent her betrayal.

“If I am too useless and Bai Ning Bing’s betrayal succeeds, I can only blame myself, isn’t that right?”

1

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan laughed: “Oh Bai Ning Bing, you are truly someone I admire, I will not kill you now. Follow me, witness my failure or success. If I die at your hands, that will be quite a show. But now, display your worth to me, bring me the heads of Qi clan’s Gu Immortals, and also... their Qi Sea grotto-heaven.”

1

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1642: Blood Revenge

Inside rank nine killer move heaven form.

Fang Yuan’s will moved like a dragon, coiling in the air as he charged down abruptly.

Rumble!

Fang Yuan’s will descended like a meteor, crashing into the bottom of the sea of wills, exterminating a large amount of them in an instant.

However, this sea of will was truly huge, Fang Yuan’s attack only destroyed a small portion of them.

“Even though I won and occupied the killer move’s core area, this place is filled with the wills of the Five Xiangs’ descendants. Only after I exterminate them all can I truly activate this rank nine killer move.”

This sea of will was colossal. And the bigger problem was, these wills were affected by the rank nine killer move and were as sturdy as rocks. Many of Fang Yuan’s methods could not work on them, under the influence of the rank nine killer move, he had a limited number of methods to use.

Fang Yuan suddenly had a thought as he instilled a new tide of will.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

The will gathered into swords as countless will swords shot down like rain, stabbing into the sea of wills and creating huge pits.

In a while, a layer of this sea of wills was eradicated.

Compared to the earlier will dragon, this rain of will swords had far more terrifying power.

Fang Yuan saw this and sighed deeply: “As expected of rank eight Immortal Gu Wisdom Sword!”

He had rank eight cultivation level now, he could use this Gu. Even though it was a sword path Immortal Gu, it was closely related to wisdom path.

Fang Yuan used it as the core to deduce a simple move that could summon a large amount of sword will.

Using these sword wills to attack the sea of wills was the most effective method that Fang Yuan had tried.

But if he did that, his investments would be very high. Wisdom sword Immortal Gu was a rank eight Gu, it expended white litchi immortal essence and the immortal killer move with it would cause a lot of immortal essence expenditure.

But Fang Yuan calculated and found that he could accept this expenditure.

After all, he was affluent, his immortal aperture management was a rising gold mine.

During the battle in the River of Time, even though Fang Yuan escaped and ruined Heavenly Court’s plan of killing him, his losses were severe. The destruction of the incomplete Immortal Gu House was extremely painful to him, even now.

This incomplete Immortal Gu House was created by Fang Yuan after capturing many Southern Border Gu Immortals and obtaining their Immortal Gu, he went through transactions and negotiations with Southern Border’s righteous path, eventually extorting enough Immortal Gu for the assembly.

Fang Yuan had spent a lot of effort to do this, even though he spent so much time on it, it was destroyed.

“I hope this heaven form killer move can be of use to me.”

Fang Yuan was deeply anticipating what heaven form could bring to him.

For ordinary killer moves, Fang Yuan could investigate and deduce their abilities. But this killer move was rank nine, it was too profound, Fang Yuan could not comprehend it.

This was Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s creation, he was specialized in space path and theft path, even if this was not an offensive move, it had an incredible effect for sure.

Even though Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable did not explain anything about this move, Fang Yuan could deduce some things from other aspects.

Like Shadow Sect’s attitude.

Shadow Sect’s Old Man Yan Shi specially helped Bai Ning Bing for the sake of getting heaven form.

“Old Man Yan Shi was a wisdom path great expert, he might have found out something, this heaven form killer move must be very useful to Shadow Sect.”

Fang Yuan was the current leader of Shadow Sect, this heaven form killer move was definitely going to be beneficial to him.

Other than getting rid of the sea of wills, Fang Yuan also broke the Five Xiang’s seal and obtained the Immortal Gu House at the peak of the mountain, as well as this public grotto-heaven.

This grotto-heaven only opened once in a thousand years, it had abundant resources. Qi clan’s Gu Immortals were too busy fleeing, they could not obtain any of these resources, so they all became Fang Yuan’s resources.

Boom—!

The huge explosion tore Bai Ning Bing to pieces.

But at the next moment, her Bai Xiang form gathered again and charged at Qi clan’s Gu Immortals.

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals had ugly expressions, they saw how terrifying the killer move Bai Xiang was!

Bai Ning Bing had this move active, she was almost undying. Even so, right now, she was not fighting alone, Ying Wu Xie and Hei Lou Lan were also helping her.

Even though Fang Yuan wanted Bai Ning Bing to kill these Qi clan Gu Immortals, he knew her limits. She did not even have the most crucial immortal battlefield killer move.

Fang Yuan had already set up an immortal formation in ambush, ever since he captured the Southern Border righteous path immortals, he started to love this method.

Once Qi clan’s Gu Immortals entered, they were stripped of their freedom by the immortal formation, they could not escape, they had to fight Bai Ning Bing.

“Ah—!” With a painful scream, the youngest Qi clan Gu Immortal was fatally injured by Bai Ning Bing and died.

“My turn.” Ying Wu Xie was already prepared, he immediately moved and captured the Qi clan Gu Immortal’s soul, trapping it in the formation.

The remaining Qi clan Gu Immortals shouted in anger as they retaliated fiercely.

Bai Ning Bing was broken into fragments again, but she revived in a few breaths of time, reforming into Bai Xiang again.

Even though there were many Qi clan Gu Immortals who had high battle strength, they all revealed expressions of despair now.

Because they knew that Bai Ning Bing could not be killed, while they were trapped here, they would eventually lose in this battle of attrition.

“What do we do?”

“Bai Ning Bing is too troublesome to deal with, and most importantly, this Fang Yuan is too vicious, he actually set this formation near the entrance of our Qi Sea grotto-heaven!”

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals had been very vigilant but when they were near their base, they were captured.

They did not know that Fang Yuan had killed Qi Zai. Even though he did not enter the Five Xiang grotto-heaven, he knew the details of Qi Sea grotto-heaven.

This Qi Sea grotto-heaven was the immortal aperture of Qi Xiang in the past, after being placed in white heaven, it could not move anymore, it had stayed there all along.

Fang Yuan used this intel to set up the immortal formation secretly, managing to trap the Qi clan members.

“At this rate, we are bound to lose!”

“Stall! I don’t believe that her Bai Xiang killer move is so strong, does it not have any cost or backlash?”

“Don’t forget about Fang Yuan, if he gets here, we are not in the Immortal Gu House, the Five Xiang’s seal cannot stop him.”

“We cannot break out of the immortal formation, we need to let Qi Ping Su come out and cooperate with us to break this formation.”

“No! Qi Ping Su is the only person left in the base, if he comes out, he will need to open the entrance, Shadow Sect would be able to use that chance.”

1

“Fang Yuan might be nearby waiting for the grotto-heaven to open already, so that he can charge in!”

Fang Yuan did not come.

But his fearsomeness and craftiness was etched into everyone’s hearts, the Qi clan Gu Immortals felt deep pressure and started to be flustered.

At the same time.

In Central Continent, a young man was standing quietly, looking at the Immortal Gu in front of him.

This young man had a mature and experienced expression, it showed that he had gone through many hurdles in his life.

This was none other than Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was originally going to be executed by Immortal Crane Sect, but Fang Yuan plotted and faked his death, making him live in Lang Ya blessed land.

Fang Zheng lived in a place where he was ostracized by hairy men, he had experienced a long period of wars and conflicts, being in danger at all times, he was also often in situations where his life was on the line.

After all of these experiences, he was no longer the same as before, he had truly matured.

After that, when Heavenly Court attacked Lang Ya blessed land, because of Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s unique identity, he was saved by Feng Jiu Ge.

After that, he returned to Central Continent.

“If I am not wrong, this is a blood path Immortal Gu?” Fang Zheng looked at the Gu Immortal before him as he showed a mocking smile: “You want me to cultivate blood path, become a demonic path Gu Immortal and deal with Gu Yue Fang Yuan? This is the decision of Immortal Crane Sect, a righteous path sect?”

1

Immortal Crane Sect’s rank six Gu Immortal Fan Xi Liu frowned slightly as he chuckled: “Regardless of what strength it is, if you use it righteously, it is righteous, if you use it for evil, it is demonic. Don’t you understand this? For example, I cultivate poison path but I can still help the people of this world.

You can do the same with blood path.”

Gu Yue Fang Zheng shook his head: “Me cultivating blood path is only for the sake of dealing with Fang Yuan effectively. After all, we are blood brothers!”

Even though Fang Yuan had the sovereign immortal body, his time path clone was still blood related to Fang Zheng.

Fan Xi Liu nodded: “That is the case indeed. Don’t you want to take revenge? After all, he slaughtered all of your clansmen in Gu Yue village.”

Gu Yue Fang Zheng sighed deeply, even though he had a young face, his gaze was deep with the vicissitudes of life.

“So many years have passed. To speak the truth, even though I still hate him, I understand him already.”

“I have thought about it, I was very childish and ignorant when I was young, Fang Yuan had taken care of me greatly. In contrast, my uncle and aunt had treated me as a pawn and made use of me. Should I take revenge for such people? I do not want to.”

“Of course, the clan leader and Gu Yue Qing Shu had taken good care of me, they helped to nurture me, I am very willing to take revenge for them.”

“But I am tired now... sigh, the cycle of killing each other continues endlessly over time... I do not want revenge anymore.”

Fan Xi Liu’s expression did not change: “It seems that these years, you have truly experienced a lot of things.”

Gu Yue Fang Zheng looked at him, his mocking smile became wider: “The irony is that when I wanted to take revenge, the sect did not support me and even wanted to eliminate me. But when I gave up on revenge, you all saved me and supported my revenge.”

Speaking of this, Gu Yue Fang Zheng looked at the blood path Immortal Gu, having an eerie gaze: “And I know that I have no choice, I can only accept this.”

Fan Xi Liu assessed Fang Zheng once again, a surprise flashed in his eyes as he smiled lightly: “Is it really fine to speak so openly about this?”

“Does it really matter? I know that with your methods, I cannot hide any thoughts from you, isn’t that that right?” Saying so, Fang Zheng stretched out his arm, holding that Gu as he asked: “What is this Gu’s name?”

“Blood Revenge.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1643: Grotto-Heaven Changes Owners

“Bai Ning Bing, don’t go overboard!” Qi clan’s Gu Immortal leader Qi Fa shouted in anger.

Bai Ning Bing was laughing coldly in her mind.

Bai Xiang tore through the sky, flashing past Qi Fa as Qi Jin’s corpse was left behind, frozen in ice. His expression of fear before dying was perfectly preserved, vividly shown within the ice.

Boom boom boom!

Qi path killer moves burst out endlessly, Bai Xiang dodged a portion of them, some were intercepted by the immortal formation, while the rest tore Bai Xiang to shreds.

But immediately, it regenerated to perfection.

This scene made the Qi clan Gu Immortals feel a deep chill down their spines.

After an intense battle, three of the five Qi clan Gu Immortals had died, only Qi Fa and Qi Cai were left.

“Damn it, Bai Xiang is too powerful, we cannot deal with it in this situation!” Qi Fa gritted his teeth.

“This super immortal formation is the biggest problem, without it, we would have escaped already.” Qi Cai looked at Qi Fa with bloodshot eyes, pointing out the truth.

Qi Fa was silent.

Qi Cai was right, even though the killer move Bai Xiang was strong, couldn’t they simply run from it if they could not beat it? The sky was vast, there was no need to face Bai Ning Bing directly.

But it was too difficult to break out of this immortal formation. At least for Qi Fa and Qi Cai, they had been trying since the start, but had obtained no fruits of success.

Qi Fa sighed: “You are right, let’s call Qi Ping Su to help.”

Qi Ping Su only had rank six cultivation level, he was staying behind to guard Qi clan’s base, Qi Sea grotto-heaven. But now, they had to ask him to come out and join forces with them, as long as they could destroy a bit of this immortal formation, they would be rescued.

But if they did that, they would fall into Fang Yuan’s trap.

Fang Yuan had purposely made sure the immortal formation did not block transmissions, he wanted to lure Qi Ping Su out of the grotto-heaven.

Qi Fa knew this so for the entire duration of the battle, he did not want to get help from Qi Ping Su. But now, they were in a desperate situation, if they did not ask him to come out, they would lose their lives!

Qi Ping Su was already waiting to move, once he received orders, he opened the immortal aperture’s entrance.

Bai Ning Bing was overjoyed: “They finally did it!”

Saying so, she teleported away using the formation, rushing into the immortal aperture’s entrance.

“Oh no!” Qi Ping Su had just wanted to go out when Bai Ning Bing charged in, without a choice, he had to retreat.

Qi Sea grotto-heaven was huge, it was covered in white clouds and had strong winds.

The moment Bai Ning Bing entered, she felt a strong pressure, her strength was heavily suppressed by the vast qi path dao marks in this place.

But Bai Xiang was still extremely powerful, Bai Ning Bing and Qi Ping Su fought intensely and she soon gained the upper hand.

Qi Ping Su only had rank six cultivation level, his legs were crippled and he had injuries in his body. He could not beat Bai Ning Bing, he quickly retreated with his territorial advantage in this place, he soon vanished into the white clouds.

Bai Ning Bing furrowed her brows.

The situation was slightly troublesome, she did not kill Qi Ping Su earlier, how could she find this person in this huge grotto-heaven now? Even if she found him, what if he runs away again?

“Hmm?” Suddenly, Bai Ning Bing raised her head, she saw that a thick sea of clouds had formed above her head.

An intense sense of danger alerted her in her mind.

“A fatal danger!” Instantly, Bai Ning Bing understood the severity of the situation.

She quickly flew down like a falling meteor, descending rapidly.

In her vision, the yellowish ground was getting larger and larger.

Bai Ning Bing’s expression became solemn, the sense of danger in her heart was intensifying.

Intense winds blew around her, she turned to look at the sky only to find the cloud sea expanding into the horizons, an intensely powerful killer move was nurturing from within it.

At the same time, Qi Ping Su who was in the cloud sea looked at Qi Sea heavenly spirit as he said joyfully: “Qi Sea heavenly spirit, you are awake! This timing is truly impeccable.”

Qi Sea heavenly spirit had the appearance of a snow-white fawn, its eyes were golden in color, extremely dazzling.

“I was roused and woke up.”

“Since the last time I got injured, I needed to seal myself to stabilize my injuries.”

“But this time, I sensed that an incredibly evil and strong existence is coming after the grotto-heaven. I had to wake up as a result, but this intruder is not that existence that I felt.”

Qi Ping Su was stunned: “I know who that is, it must be Fang Yuan. Heavenly spirit, you have sealed yourself for years, you do not know that a terrifying demonic path Gu Immortal had emerged, his name is Fang Yuan, even Heavenly Court was helpless against him.”

Qi Sea heavenly spirit was shocked: “Even Heavenly Court was helpless? It must be him.”

Qi Ping Su pointed at Bai Ning Bing, saying in extreme anger: “This is Fang Yuan’s subordinate, she has already killed three of our clan’s Gu Immortals.”

Qi Sea heavenly spirit was enraged, killing intent surged in its golden eyes: “An eye for an eye, they killed our Qi clan’s bloodline, we will end her life as well.”

Saying so, an intense sound resounded as a huge white qi pillar slammed down towards Bai Ning Bing at a rapid speed from the cloud sea.

At this instance, Bai Ning Bing was shocked to find that there was a force all around her immobilizing her. She had all sorts of thoughts in her mind but her body was unmoving, like a bug trapped in amber.

“So powerful!”

“Even with all my strength, I cannot escape.”

Bai Ning Bing raised her head, a white qi pillar was slamming down at her like a giant mountain.

This attack was clearly at rank eight level, even if Bai Ning Bing had Bai Xiang, she could not escape, she was bound to die.

But at this moment, a jade light sparkled out of nowhere, it burst out into countless spreading jade fireflies, dancing around the area.

From within the jade green light, Fang Yuan emerged.

“It’s him!” Instantly, Qi Sea heavenly spirit shook intensely, shouting in shock.

“Indeed, he is Fang Yuan.” Qi Ping Su gulped, swallowing his saliva while feeling extremely nervous.

Against the white qi pillar, Fang Yuan’s expression did not change, he only stretched out his finger.

Swoosh!

With a shrill sound, an intensely sharp and huge sword will surged up and pierced the white qi pillar, cutting it into two.

The white qi pillar dissipated, Qi Ping Su opened his mouth as he felt deeply shocked.

“I’m saved.” Bai Ning Bing was dazed before her lips curled up, she flew into the air and stood beside Fang Yuan.

“What move is this?” Bai Ning Bing looked up above her, saying hesitantly: “Don’t tell me...”

“It should be Qi Xiang’s signature killer move — Unlimited Qi Sea. This move is grand and vast, it is complex and ever-changing, capable of attacking and defending, Qi Xiang was renowned back in the day because of it.” Fang Yuan agreed, having a solemn expression.

Unlimited qi sea was a rank eight killer move, it used many qi path Immortal Gu as the cores, with tens of thousands of supplementary Gu worms. It could absorb all kinds of qi in the world to increase its power.

This killer move was quite unique, it had potential for growth on its own. After Qi Xiang created this move, he collected all sorts of qi and stored them inside the immortal aperture, increasing the power of this move.

Thankfully, Qi Xiang had died long ago, even though unlimited qi sea was left in Qi Sea grotto-heaven, because it was too powerful and without any rank eight Gu Immortals in Qi clan, the huge quantity of qi had gradually dissipated.

Until now, Fang Yuan was after Qi Sea grotto-heaven, it alerted Qi Sea heavenly spirit and it barely managed to activate unlimited qi sea, after so many years, it had finally been used again.

“Even though this move is powerful, Qi Xiang had died long ago, how much power can the heavenly spirit unleash with it? Hehe.” Fang Yuan snickered, suddenly flying into the sky, straight towards the cloud sea.

Bai Ning Bing gritted her teeth, she wanted to fight alongside Fang Yuan but she quickly stopped herself wisely, showing regret on her face.

She was too weak, she could not participate in a battle of such magnitude.

Rumble...

Bai Ning Bing looked at the sky, the cloud sea was rumbling, after Fang Yuan went in, the waves became more turbulent, as if a tsunami had occurred in the white clouds.

At the same time, thunderous explosions resounded endlessly.

“Life qi, death qi, sword qi, blade qi, dusk qi, dawn qi...” Bai Ning Bing was dazzled from this view, all sorts of qi gathered into countless forms, they were like plants, blades, swords, halberds, beasts and birds, they were all gathering right outside the qi sea, before charging in towards Fang Yuan for an intense battle.

COMMENT

Fang Yuan initially felt huge pressure, he could barely move, but soon, he unraveled some of the mysteries of this killer move. Within the sovereign immortal aperture, his time path clone was sitting in front of wisdom Gu, using the light of wisdom to deduce the information of unlimited qi sea rapidly.

After fighting for a while more, Fang Yuan’s brows eased as he laughed heartily, starting his counterattack.

Everywhere he went, all sorts of obstacles were taken down and destroyed, he was unstoppable, he charged all the way until he reached the heavenly spirit.

Qi Sea heavenly spirit had a tough requirement for ownership, Fang Yuan could not achieve it, that information was obtained from Qi Zai’s soul. Meanwhile, blood light spirit suppression could not work against a rank eight level heavenly spirit.

Thus, Fang Yuan went ahead to kill Qi Sea heavenly spirit.

The moment Qi Sea heavenly spirit died, the unmanned unlimited qi sea killer move immediately stopped.

“I surrender!” Qi Ping Su’s body shivered, he was completely subdued by Fang Yuan’s overwhelming demonic aura.

Fang Yuan looked at him coldly: “You are quite smart, alright, if you want to live, get Qi Fa and Qi Cai to surrender too. Otherwise, you can all die together.”

“Yes, yes.” Qi Ping Su was filled with pressure, he was sent into the formation.

Qi Fa and Qi Cai learned that Qi Sea grotto-heaven was taken down, they lost all their motivation, after some hesitation, they surrendered with pale expressions, stopping their resistance.

And now, from the Five Xiang’s Bet, the prized rank nine killer move heaven form, the public grotto-heaven of the Five Xiangs, as well as Qi Sea grotto-heaven were all obtained by Fang Yuan!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1644: Big Family Qi

Qi Sea grotto-heaven.

“Come!” Fang Yuan’s main body shouted as he stretched out his right arm, his five fingers grabbing at the unlimited qi sea in front of him.

Immediately, an orange-yellow qi flowed out of unlimited qi sea.

This qi was extremely special, it was shiny and lively, moving with a long trail behind it, the tip of the qi had auspicious clouds circling around it.

This was luck qi.

A type of immortal material.

Unlimited qi sea had all sorts of qi in it, luck qi was one of the rarer ones. Because even in the five regions and two heavens, luck qi of such a scale was rarely seen. If a Gu Immortal could find some, they were very lucky.

Fang Yuan was dismantling the killer move unlimited qi sea now.

This killer move was Qi Xiang’s greatest trump card, it was similar to Fang Yuan’s Luo Po seal and reverse flow protection seal, this unlimited qi sea killer move also used immortal materials, they were the myriad forms of qi that he gathered.

The more types of qi gathered on large scales, the stronger unlimited qi sea was. Of course, not only would this move expend immortal essence, it also used up the stored qi. Even if they were not used, as time passed, these qi would naturally dissipate slowly.

1Thus, Fang Yuan had faced the unlimited qi sea killer move earlier when it was not at its peak.

It was the fifth day now.

Ever since he succeeded in taking down Qi Sea grotto-heaven, he had been resting here. Two days ago, he collated all of his gains, he also made enslavement agreements with the three Qi clan Gu Immortals, Qi Ping Su, Qi Fa and Qi Cai. Some of the resources that could be moved into the sovereign immortal aperture were also dealt with by Ying Wu Xie and the rest. Meanwhile, his own focus was on the killer move unlimited qi sea.

This was a qi path killer move, it was not usable for Fang Yuan. Dismantling it would give him a vast amount of qi, that was quite valuable. And most importantly, Fang Yuan could only deal with these Gu worms after dismantling the killer move, otherwise, if he refined them rashly, he might face the backlash of the killer move, after all, this move was complete and extraordinary.

“I will need three more days to extract all of the qi at this rate.”

“After that, I will refine these Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan planned inwardly.

There were many mortal Gu worms used to construct unlimited qi sea killer move, but Fang Yuan did not really care about them.

His focus was on the Immortal Gu.

There were six Immortal Gu that made up this killer move, one was a rank eight Immortal Gu, called Big Qi, it was the core of the killer move.

Other than that, there were some rank seven and six Gu worms. Fang Yuan was paying the most attention to a rank seven Immortal Gu, it was called Big Family Qi.

This qi path Gu worm could store all sorts of qi, including the qi of tribulations!

The final point was crucial.

Fang Yuan had once used many small family qi Gu to store his tribulation qi and help him to pass tribulations. As an Immortal Gu, Big Family Qi had a much stronger ability in this aspect.

“With this Immortal Gu, I will be able to store and release tribulation qi, that is a superb method to deal with tribulations.”

“If the calamities and tribulations are powerful, I will use this Gu to absorb the tribulation qi and weaken it. If it is weak, I will release tribulation qi to allow myself to gain more dao marks in the end.”

"Using this Gu, I can even absorb the heaven and earth qi of the outside world and store it. When the sovereign immortal aperture needs it, I can release this qi, this prevents me from needing to place my immortal aperture in order to absorb heaven and earth qi and stabilize the sovereign immortal aperture."

Different situations gave rise to different needs.

It was not that a higher ranked Immortal Gu was necessarily more helpful to the Gu Immortal. In this case, rank seven Big Family Qi was much more helpful to him than rank eight Big Qi.

Refining these qi path Immortal Gu would expend Fang Yuan's time and energy.

But there was no difficulty thanks to Fang Yuan's quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level in refinement path and theft path great grandmaster attainment level, as well as great thief ghost hand and other methods

Like what Fang Yuan anticipated, a few days later, he absorbed all of the qi here, these qi were all stored in different ways, those that Fang Yuan could not keep were sold in treasure yellow heaven directly

Not only these qi, some of the resources inside Qi Sea grotto-heaven and the Five Xiang's public grotto-heaven were sold by Fang Yuan to exchange for resources he needed.

Normally, he traded goods for goods, there were few transactions involving immortal essence stones.

Because Fang Yuan had advanced to rank eight, he had white litchi immortal essence now.

One bead of white litchi immortal essence was in some sense a hundred beads of red date immortal essence, which was ten thousand beads of green grape immortal essence.

That was to say, ten thousand immortal essence stones could be converted into one white litchi immortal essence bead, the conversion rate was simply too bad.

Thus in most cases, rank eight Gu Immortals produced their own beads of immortal essence and stored them.

Fang Yuan's sovereign immortal aperture had abundant time path resources, he could produce beads of white litchi immortal essence rapidly, he did not need external replenishment from immortal essence stones. Especially when this replenishment came at such a high and inefficient cost.

Fang Yuan's cultivation resources were mostly traded for immortal materials, because he was going to mass refine Gu now.

Right when Fang Yuan was focusing on refining the qi path Immortal Gu, Ying Wu Xie secretly went to find him.

He was no longer in a female body, he had changed to a body belonging to a Gu Immortal from Southern Border's Yang clan, they had compatible soul path dao marks. In battle, Fang Yuan would also create some Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies for him to use.

Ying Wu Xie said cautiously: "Sect leader, you have already refined all of the three Qi clan Gu Immortals' Immortal Gu, but you returned and rented them out, that is a good way to control them. But why don't you use it on Bai Ning Bing? Even though she is very useful to you now, that is only temporarily, your ice and snow path attainment will increase in the future. Furthermore, Bai Ning Bing possesses the killer move Bai Xiang, it is very powerful and threatening. Even if she joins Shadow Sect and undergoes the alliance agreement, she can easily break it without a problem. I might be out of line, but you seem to be too... lenient with Bai Ning Bing.”

Fang Yuan smiled as he shook his head.

“That is because you don’t understand her.”

“She is a person who does not fear death. If I try that on her, she would rather die than surrender.”

“Even though I have methods to retain most of her Immortal Gu, what is the use of that?”

“You’ve already seen it in the battle of Reverse Flow River, I need manpower to restrain Heavenly Court’s members. With your current strength, none of you can help me in this.”

“Bai Ning Bing who has the killer move Bai Xiang is very valuable.”

“With her identity and circumstances, she cannot turn towards Heavenly Court. At the same time, she needs me to refine yin yang rotation Immortal Gu and restore her male body.”

Fang Yuan had refinement path quasi-supreme attainment level while Bai Ning Bing had no confidence in refining the Immortal Gu herself!

“We are too useless.” Ying Wu Xie lowered his head.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “I understand your other intention. I will take care of you guys and raise your battle strength.”

In the past, Fang Yuan only had rank seven cultivation level, he had to prioritize himself. But now, he was rank eight, raising Ying Wu Xie, Hei Lou Lan, and the others’ battle strength was icing on the cake for Fang Yuan.

Of course, there were other reasons. In the past, Fang Yuan had no time or energy for this, but now as a rank eight, even though he was weak against Heavenly Court, ordinary people could no longer find trouble with him, they even had to avoid him. And with Fang Yuan’s powerful methods in blocking deductions, as long as he did not go to the River of Time, he was safe.

In such a situation, Fang Yuan could calmly strengthen his subordinates.

He had a strong feeling that these people would be useful in the future.

Furthermore, raising their cultivation level was easy, he could mainly use time path methods to accelerate the time in their immortal apertures. Even if they had calamities and tribulations, he could help them to pass.

Ying Wu Xie obtained Fang Yuan’s promise and left happily.

Next, in his free time, Fang Yuan called Hei Lou Lan over.

“I’ll show you someone.” Fang Yuan took out the captive Gu Immortal Hei Cheng.

1Hei Lou Lan stared with wide opened eyes, she was furious, wanting to tear Hei Cheng to pieces.

Even though Hei Cheng was her father, they had deep hatred between them.

Hei Lou Lan did not act out of line, she watched as Fang Yuan stored Hei Cheng back into his immortal aperture, she breathed roughly with bloodshot eyes as she gritted her teeth and said: “So Hei Cheng was in sect leader’s hands the entire time! Are you thinking of recruiting him?”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Don’t worry, compared to him, I hold you in higher regard. As long as you cultivate hard and accumulate some contributions, I am sure you will be able to take revenge one day.”

“I understand!” Hei Lou Lan looked at Fang Yuan, by now, she had already been far exceeded by him, this difference made her feel extremely helpless.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1645: Rank Seven Spring Autumn Cicada

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The Gu refinement was at its most crucial point.

The huge cicada was floating in the air, about five feet from the ground.

The cicada’s surface was not smooth, it was hairy and rough, while also having a metallic texture.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, using his killer move that had been prepared for a long time.

Instantly, winds blew around the cicada, dark clouds rumbled in the sky, gathering into one lump and turning the surroundings dim.

Howl howl howl...

Amidst waves of ghostly wails and the ground that was rotting into a pale white color, dark ghost hands emerged from the ground, they were thick and menacing, grabbing at the cicada.

The ghost hands grabbed the cicada but they were only illusory, the ghost hands moved around and took something out of the cicada before clenching into fists and retreating.

Hundreds of dark ghost hands continued to extend from the ground, grabbing the cicada and removing the impurities from within it.

The cicada was only a half completed product, it was unstable and became smaller as the ghost hands grabbed at it, the surface slowly became smoother as the metallic surface became sharper and brighter.

Fang Yuan had been paying attention deeply, upon seeing this, he felt greatly satisfied.

This method was his unique creation, it used rank eight Soul Beast Token as the core Immortal Gu.

1"In the last few times I refined Spring Autumn Cicada, flaws appeared here, the materials were not processed properly. By doing this now, I can get rid of the impurities, but some flaws will be left behind."

The dark winds had stopped blowing, the dark ghost hands shrunk in number until none were left.

The dark clouds in the sky became thicker and denser, the cicada was already half of its original size, its body was shining in a metallic light, giving off a cold feeling.

Fang Yuan took out a huge lump of fire calmly.

This was the rank eight immortal material phoenix song flame, it was red and yellow in color, with two layers. The outside layer was yellow while the inside was red. The inner layer was shaped like a phoenix, it flew around while singing loudly, as the flames continued to burn, it emitted a crisp and wonderful melody.

1"Go!" Fang Yuan grunted as he tossed a basin-sized phoenix song flame onto the cicada's surface.

Whoosh.

A soft sound echoed as the flames spread, surrounding the entire cicada and setting it ablaze.

At this moment, phoenix cries resounded in the clouds.

Next, the sounds went soft but the flames became brighter, burning the cicada intensely.

Fang Yuan held his breath, staring at the cicada without looking away.

Traces of ghost qi started to emerge from the cicada's surface but they were destroyed by the flames.

This Gu refinement step was very difficult, the precision needed was extremely high and hard to manage.

But Fang Yuan was sufficiently calm and patient, he waited until all of the ghost qi was destroyed and the surface of the cicada melted before he started the next method without panicking.

Dragon roars resounded, a huge dragon-shaped blizzard landed on the surface of the cicada.

The cicada's flames resisted it but this dragon blizzard was too huge, because it had Fang Yuan's support, it quickly gained the upper hand and suppressed the cicada in the middle of it.

The phoenix song flame on the cicada was very stubborn, it only dissipated after a few hours.

Meanwhile, the dragon blizzard transformed into a piece of ice and sealed the cicada.

Currently, the cicada had shrunk to the size of only a palm.

When the blizzard stopped, Fang Yuan carefully retrieved the frozen cicada, next, he breathed out some warm air as the ice melted, revealing the cicada inside.

The cicada seemed to be a work of art, it was very exquisite. Fang Yuan pinched the cicada with his fingers.

Crack crack.

The cicada’s surface started to crack, next, a rank seven Spring Autumn Cicada awakened and flew out.

Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed with joy.

“It had not been easy!”

“After so many failures, I’ve finally refined Spring Autumn Cicada to rank seven.”

At this point, Fang Yuan had modified almost all of the refinement methods already. The ghost hand purification method was created by fusing great thief ghost hand killer move and Soul Beast Token. Even though this method had great effect, it would easily leave ghost qi behind. Thus, Fang Yuan chose the rank eight immortal material phoenix song flame to get rid of the ghost qi and also temper the cicada. Eventually, he used the dragon blizzard which was also not normal, it was actually a modification of the slumbering lightning python killer move.

Refinement path had four publicly recognized strongest immortal killer moves to deal with immortal materials. One of them was slumbering lightning python.

Fang Yuan modified it into a dragon blizzard, it suited him more and was better for the Spring Autumn Cicada refinement.

With all these reasons, his hard work paid off in the end, Fang Yuan succeeded in obtaining rank seven Spring Autumn Cicada.

“With rank seven Spring Autumn Cicada and my time path great grandmaster attainment level, I can totally use Spring Autumn Cicada as the core to deduce an immortal killer move and prevent getting into Heavenly Court’s trap!”

Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered with uncertainty.

Last time, when he entered the River of Time, he was ambushed by Heavenly Court because they had used a method to deceive Spring Autumn Cicada.

Back then, Spring Autumn Cicada was only rank six, now it was rank seven and if he had a relevant immortal killer move, even if Heavenly Court used a rank eight method to deceive Spring Autumn Cicada, they would not succeed easily.

“The best situation is to use rank seven Spring Autumn Cicada as the core, along with a supplementary rank eight spring Gu, to create a rank eight immortal killer move. When I enter the River of Time, I will not fear Heavenly Court’s trap while also expanding my search range.”

Of course, the most straightforward way was to raise Spring Autumn Cicada to rank eight.

But it was too hard.

Currently, Fang Yuan could not refine rank eight Immortal Gu.

On one hand, even though he had extremely high refinement path attainment level, his foundation was shaky, his refinement path methods needed practice.

On the other hand, he lacked finances. Back then, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had expended all his wealth and the entire foundation of Snowy Mountain before he was able to try and refine rank eight Immortal Gu Fortune Rivalling Heaven.

Of course, Fang Yuan's foundation was very deep now. Not to mention his countless fortuitous encounters, just his wealth after extorting the Southern Border experts and the inheritance of the Five Xiangs, it could be said that his foundation rivaled some super forces now.

1He had many Immortal Gu, even though he lost the incomplete Immortal Gu House, he still had dozens of them left. He had ample cultivation resources too of varying types, he did not just focus on one path.

The only shortcoming was his weak subordinates.

When Hei Lou Lan and the others reached rank seven, along with the three enslaved Qi clan Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan would finally match a true super force! Even though he could not compare to Southern Border's Wu clan or Western Desert's Fang clan, he would still be first rate, surpassing ordinary super forces, leagues above Chu Du's Chu tribe.

“I can give some rank six and seven resources to Ying Wu Xie and the rest.”

“Other than nurturing them, I need to refine Immortal Gu next!”

Most of the Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan was using extensively were still at rank six.

For example, Self Strength, Pulling Mountain, Pulling Water, Strength Qi, Unravel Mystery, Dog Shit Luck, Qi Luck, Luck Inspection, Connect Luck, Time Luck...

And most importantly for now, Landscape as Before, Man as Before, and day Gu.

If he raised the ranks of these three time path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan's battle strength in terms of time path would surge greatly.

His current focus was truly on time path.

Even though sword path, soul path, wisdom path, and others had huge room for improvement, when he fought in the River of Time, he would need time path methods.

“It is a pity that Lang Ya Sect went to Longevity Heaven, my refinement path methods still need lots of work. If those hairy man Gu Immortals can help me refine Gu, I can save a lot of time and energy.”

Fang Yuan expressed deep regret towards this.

He had made use of Lang Ya Sect too conveniently in the past, now that they were gone, he had to work hard and expend great effort, even though Fang Yuan did not mind the trouble, too much of his time was used, he was no longer as free as before.

“And refining Gu has a problem, the success rate!”

The refinement to raise an Immortal Gu's rank had low success rate, the higher the rank, the higher the chances of failure.

Fang Yuan wanted to refine rank seven Gu, it would be harder than creating rank six.

Once he fails, the original rank six Immortal Gu might even be destroyed, in that case, he would need to start over and refine the rank six before trying for seven again. If the Immortal Gu is refined by someone else during the period of its destruction, he would truly lose everything.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1646: Fang Zheng’s Immortal Ascension

Central Continent.

The sky was dark and gloomy, there was no wind.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng stood at a mountain peak, looking at the sky, he felt a bit of nervousness thinking about his upcoming immortal ascension tribulation.

Sensing his emotion, Fang Zheng laughed to himself, thinking: “Why am I nervous? Immortal Crane Sect should be the nervous one, or rather, the Heavenly Court behind them.”

“On the surface, there is only one rank six Gu Immortal in charge of guarding my ascension, but there must be many eyes watching me in secret, with these people around, what is there to worry about?”

Even though Fang Zheng did not know why Central Continent wanted to support him, he had confirmed that he was valuable and of use to them.

1In the past, he would not accept being a pawn like this. Back in Qing Mao Mountain, Fang Yuan had hinted that he was used by his uncle and aunt as the tool to fight for the inheritance, this made Fang Zheng very angry.

But now, Fang Zheng no longer felt anger towards this.

In the last decade or so, Fang Zheng had experienced the war in Lang Ya blessed land’s three continents. In order to nurture the most elite hairy man Gu Immortals, the black haired land spirit disregarded the price and made the hairy men of the three continent fight in an intense war, Fang Zheng was implicated.

Surrounded by schemes and plots, bloodshed and war, Fang Zheng had made use of people, and was also made use of.

He gradually understood that sometimes, becoming someone’s pawn and being used was not a bad thing. At the very least, it proved his worth. If a person did not have value to even be a tool, then he was in danger, he would be discarded like a faulty tool.

1Of course, even though Fang Zheng had rank five Gu Master strength, he also had experiences of being abandoned and betrayed. As a human living among the hairy men, it was natural to be ostracized and isolated.

“We can begin.” At this time, Fan Xi Liu’s voice resounded in Fang Zheng’s ears.

Fan Xi Liu had rank six cultivation level, he was sent over by Immortal Crane Sect to help Fang Zheng undergo tribulation.

Fang Zheng nodded, he calmed down and looked inside him.

His aperture was quickly seen, it was filled with primeval essence that showed his A grade talent, but his walls were filled with cracks. Anyone would feel nervous upon seeing it, after all, the aperture was the basis of a Gu Master’s cultivation. With so many cracks, it was definitely a severe issue!

Fang Zheng was relatively calm now, his nervousness had vanished.

In fact, during a battle in Lang Ya blessed land, he had used a forbidden technique while in a desperate situation, even though he survived, his aperture was severely damaged and filled with cracks, his A grade aptitude fell to B grade.

Fang Zheng was saved by Feng Jiu Ge, after returning to Central Continent, his injuries in the aperture were healed, he returned to having A grade aptitude. But the cracks in his aperture walls still remained, it was not that Heavenly Court could not heal him, but they left those for him to undergo his immortal ascension tribulation more easily.

Fang Zheng observed his aperture, he had once felt extremely proud of his A grade talent, but after these life experiences, he no longer cared about aptitude so greatly. Right now, his gaze was stuck at the cracks in his aperture.

To him, these were his achievements, he had gained these wounds from bloodshed and war, it was his glory.

“Goodbye, my aperture.” Fang Zheng muttered.

As he willed, the primeval essence in his aperture surged and crashed into the surrounding walls.

There were cracks in his aperture to begin with, it was not sturdy, soon, the cracks intensified as holes formed.

The complete aperture finally connected to the outside world, a mysterious power was forming.

This power drew in the heaven and earth qi of the outside world, at once, dark clouds rumbled in the sky, the earth was shaking, dust clouds were forming.

At the same time, a formless heavenly power held up Fang Zheng and allowed him to float into the sky.

“Heaven’s will!” Fan Xi Liu who was watching in concealment sensed abundant heaven’s will.

Fang Zheng’s tribulation had drawn the attention of heaven’s will, far beyond normal!

The calamities and tribulations started forming, a large amount of blood qi was converted from the heaven and earth qi, the dark clouds in the sky were quickly dyed red, the scale was huge, they could be seen from an enormous distance.

“Blood path tribulation...” Joy flashed in Fan Xi Liu’s eyes, the blood path tribulation was what the higher-ups wanted to see.

Fang Zheng’s aura started to spread out.

This was his human qi.

Every person had their own human qi, the scale was decided based on their foundation, talent, and abilities.

Fan Xi Liu observed Fang Zheng carefully, soon, he had a look of surprise on his face.

Fang Zheng’s human qi was extremely dense, it showed how much life experiences and foundation he possessed.

1Heaven qi was raining down while earth qi was bubbling up, both intertwined in the air with human qi.

Fang Zheng had a solemn expression, he tried to control the three qi and balance them.

The three qi had just started interacting and now was the best time to get used to controlling them. Fang Zheng had received Fan Xi Liu’s guidance, he was aware of this.

But at this time, the calamities and tribulations were completed, a large amount of rain fell.

These raindrops were all blood droplets, they were extremely bloody. As the blood rained down, white fog started to appear in the air. The white fog was quickly dyed red by the rain, turning the entire mountain into an eerie red color.

Fang Zheng started to undergo tribulation. He put up his defenses and activated Gu worms to resist the blood rain.

At this time, whenever he used a Gu worm, he would suffer a backlash. Soon, his Gu worms died from the backlash.

This was also why Gu Masters would often lose all of their Gu worms after immortal ascension.

But Fang Zheng was supported by Heavenly Court and had deep preparation, he did not lack Gu worms.

He calmed down and defended himself, not panicking.

During Lang Ya blessed land’s wars, he had experienced far more dangerous situations, he was adequately prepared for this.

Fan Xi Liu was much more nervous than Fang Zheng.

He stared at Fang Zheng without blinking.

Rank five Gu Masters usually had a lot of difficulty in their immortal ascension. Because they not only had to deal with the calamities and tribulations, but also control the three qi and maintain balance between them.

“I can help you to block this blood rain tribulation for a while, but the balancing of the three qi will depend on you, Fang Zheng! Before the tribulation, I had given you ample training, you cannot fail at the crucial moment.” Fan Xi Liu thought to himself as he started to disrupt the blood clouds, affecting their size and influence.

Even though this blood rain tribulation was huge, it was not too overbearing, it seems that heaven’s will had done this intentionally.

Fang Zheng’s tribulation was peaceful, be it internally or externally.

1The three qi fused properly, scenes of the past flashed in his mind as his body became tempered and elevated.

Next, during the heaven and earth resonance, he entered the most crucial moment of this immortal ascension. During this period, he could gain natural inspiration and communicate with heaven and earth.

This communication was extremely beneficial to any Gu Master.

Fang Zheng realized at this moment that blood path really suited himself.

Time passed, the three qi condensed and formed into a lump of qi.

Fang Zheng suddenly opened his eyes, he breathed in deeply and tossed a rank five blood path Gu into the lump of qi.

Boom!

A shocking sound exploded around him, the qi lump burst out and turned into an immortal aperture.

Instantly, Fang Zheng’s mind became blank, he was completely defenseless at this moment.

A moment later, he regained his senses, he started to put his vital Gu and important Gu worms into his immortal aperture. The first one he put in was blood revenge Immortal Gu of course, followed by a large number of blood path mortal Gu.

Within the immortal aperture, the three qi were conditioned and balanced, the world gradually stabilized.

He obviously gained a high grade blessed land!

There was also a lot of heaven and earth qi remaining.

Fang Zheng was overjoyed, these heaven and earth qi could raise his vital blood path mortal Gu into an Immortal Gu!

Even though this was dangerous and there would be following calamity or tribulation, Fang Zheng was courageous enough to choose this option.

“Fang Zheng, quickly let me in, I will help you with the tribulation!” Fan Xi Liu transmitted.

“Hmm?” Fang Zheng frowned, showing displeasure. The immortal aperture was the most private area of the Gu Immortal, Fan Xi Liu was infringing on it, Fang Zheng felt a sense of anger.

But immediately, Fang Zheng relaxed his brows, he opened the immortal aperture door and said plainly: “Sure, Fan Xi Liu, please enter.”

Fan Xi Liu was surprised, Fang Zheng had just become an immortal, the process was not over yet but he had already changed his manner of speech with such a natural attitude.

“However, Heavenly Court seems be nurturing Fang Zheng greatly for the sake of dealing with Fang Yuan. I am actually quite envious of him.”

Several hours later, Fang Zheng’s tribulation was passed, Fan Xi Liu’s envy rose again.

It was because Fang Zheng’s vital Gu was successfully refined into his second blood path Immortal Gu.

Cold blood Immortal Gu!

Several days later, Immortal Crane Sect announced to the Gu Immortal world that Fang Zheng succeeded in his immortal ascension, he was once harmed by the vicious demon Fang Yuan, he was saved luckily and would now become one of the main forces of dealing with the demon Fang Yuan.

COMMENT

Due to Heavenly Court’s intentional propagation, news spread throughout the five regions, Fang Yuan’s reputation was hit, his situation of being deserted by family and kin was highlighted, while Heavenly Court promoted its own magnanimity.

1Several days later.

“Spirit Affinity Fairy, goodbye.” Above the clouds, Fan Xi Liu smiled as he spoke to Zhao Lian Yun.

Zhao Lian Yun smiled: “Thanks for hosting.”

She heard that Fang Zheng succeeded in his tribulation so she came to visit him. Unfortunately, Fang Zheng was not meeting anyone, he was hidden by Immortal Crane Sect.

Fan Xi Liu did not dare to be rude to Zhao Lian Yun, she was the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House, even though she had rank six cultivation level, she controlled rank nine love Gu.

1Fan Xi Liu assured: “I will definitely pass your gift to Fang Zheng personally.”

Zhao Lian Yun nodded as she thanked him and flew away.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1647: Joint Suppression

Fang Zheng blessed land.

His space path and time path resources were higher than normal, this was a high grade blessed land.

The terrain of the blessed land was mostly flat, but across some distance, there would be several tall erected mountains.

Fang Zheng’s focus was currently fully on a valley.

This valley was covered in weird rugged rocks, it was completely blood red. Upon entering it, one would notice that the valley was filled with blood flower trees.

There were tens of thousands of such trees, they were different from ordinary trees, they bore fruits before flowers. The fruits were the size of a baby’s fist, round and smooth. The flowering only took an instant as the fruit shell would explode into a huge flower that was white and red. The flower was white at the base while the core of the flower resembled splattered blood. Each of these blood flowers had different colors and shapes.

In Central Continent, there was once a time where Gu Masters cultivated these blood flower trees on large scales. Each time they bloomed, the scene would be grand. There were even huge ceremonies just to lure these Gu Masters to see them. But later, blood path was created and caused great problems to the world, blood flower trees were a basic Gu material in blood path, they were banned from being planted.

Fang Zheng’s blood flower trees were all provided by Immortal Crane Sect, or more accurately, by Fan Xi Liu as a proxy.

This was the trick of the righteous path, Fang Zheng was already used to it, feeling no surprise.

In the current five regions, blood path was outlawed by the righteous path, but ironically, the ones who truly researched blood path were these righteous path forces.

“These blood flower trees are all mortal Gu materials, but as long as their numbers go up, I can use them in huge quantities, they will be equivalent to immortal materials. This is blood path’s most unique advantage!”

“These blood flower trees that I have are also a source of immortal materials in a way.”

“But now, I already have rank six blood path Immortal Gu Cold Blood and Blood Revenge, they need mortal blood path Gu to supplement them and form immortal killer moves.”

Fang Zheng understood that his focus now was to refine blood path mortal Gu and practice the blood path immortal killer move that Fan Xi Liu imparted him.

Because he had just ascended, the immortal aperture was very different from his original aperture, he needed time to adapt to it.

After looking for a while, Fang Zheng retracted his attention to the real world.

The joy and feeling of achievement from looking at his immortal aperture slowly faded, they were replaced by a feeling of pressure in his mind.

“Fang Yuan...” Back in the real world, Fang Zheng could not help but think of his brother.

These last days, he had not only undergone his immortal ascension, he had also obtained information about Fang Yuan from Fan Xi Liu. The information was much more detailed than what circulated in the outside world, it was from Heavenly Court.

Fang Zheng learned about Fang Yuan’s situation, as for the fact that Fang Yuan did not die, he had known that when he was saved and returned to Central Continent. But strangely, when he learned the truth, he did not feel any rage from being deceived.

In contrast, the more he learned, the more sadness he felt in his heart.

“It turns out, I have never truly understood you... Fang Yuan.”

“Otherworldly demon... Spring Autumn Cicada... rank eight cultivation level...”

1The more he knew, the more minuscule he felt, the more he could feel Fang Yuan’s terrifying strength!

Thinking that he had to face such a person in the future, he felt a bit of depression and also a hint of despair.

He faced the despair deep in his heart.

He did not deny it or try to avoid it.

Humans often said that a youth knows no fear, when one is young, they fear nothing and have strong drive and motivation. But after a person experiences a lot, they would learn about their own fears. Tigers would eat people, tiger claws would harm people, one’s own strength was not as strong as they think.

Imagination was wonderful, but only after facing reality would one feel pain, understanding the world and themselves during this painful process.

“When I was a rank five Gu Master, I was engaged in the hairy man war in Lang Ya blessed land, I lived a difficult life wandering about.”

“But now as a Gu Immortal, I am stuck between Fang Yuan and Heavenly Court, becoming a pawn. Even though my strength has grown greatly, my freedom has dwindled, I am facing greater danger now, I can die if any mishaps occur.”

Thinking of this, Fang Zheng smiled bitterly to himself.

Even now, he did not know what value he had for Heavenly Court to put so much focus on him.

Soon, he thought of Zhao Lian Yun.

When he ascended, he received some congratulatory gifts. This was the custom of the five regions, whenever a Gu Master becomes an immortal, their friends and family, or even the forces they were friendly with, would send them gifts.

Fang Zheng’s gifts mostly came from Immortal Crane Sect, Zhao Lian Yun’s one was quite memorable as a result.

From Immortal Crane Sect’s information, Fang Zheng gained a deep understanding of Zhao Lian Yun.

“You are also an otherworldly demon, although not completely.”

“You looked for me so proactively, I assume you want to join up and deal with Fang Yuan...”

Zhao Lian Yun’s gifts included a letter that expressed her goodwill, but she did not say much. Fang Zheng could tell what she wanted from her subtle words.

Zhao Lian Yun gave him one of the cultivation methods for growing a blood type plant resource, it suited Fang Zheng. She even described her own cultivation experiences, Fang Zheng was very mindful of a certain paragraph.

“In Gu Immortal cultivation, combat is the path of domination, while immortal aperture management is the path of supremacy, the two are complementary and necessary. Without enough battle strength and dominance, no matter how well the immortal aperture is developed, one will only get bullied, they will hand over their hard earned spoils to others. But if one has great battle strength and lacking immortal aperture foundation, they will be like a blazing flame, only able to stay lit for some time, when they run out of firewood, they would only end up as smoke.”

Fang Zheng nodded to himself, thinking: “Other than this, her descriptions of the calamities and tribulations are also very useful. I can see that this Zhao Lian Yun is very sincere, it is a pity that Immortal Crane Sect is not allowing us to meet, what a pity indeed! Don’t you think so, Fang Yuan?”

Saying so, Fang Zheng’s gaze froze.

In his early years, he was accompanied by his master Lord Sky Crane, inside Lang Ya blessed land, he was together with Fang Yuan’s fake will. But now, in Central Continent, he was alone.

Unknowingly, Fang Zheng had gotten used to accompaniment.

“Without you, I am not used to it...” Fang Zheng shook his head and smiled bitterly, an indescribable sense of loneliness permeated in his heart.

Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei smiled in joy: “Fang Zheng has become a Gu Immortal, but he needs to raise his cultivation level to become a useful counter against Fang Yuan.”

Fairy Zi Wei knew about Zhao Lian Yun’s intention. After all, even though Ma Hong Yun died, his soul was still kept by Fang Yuan.

Fairy Zi Wei frowned: “The true problem is still Fang Yuan himself.”

Ever since Fang Yuan broke out of the River of Time’s encirclement, he had vanished, no longer appearing in public.

Fairy Zi Wei would prefer that he went around scavenging for resources. At least in that case, he would leave behind many traces and she would deduce many useful things, and even find a way to break his wisdom path defenses.

In Fairy Zi Wei’s view, Fang Yuan was very strong in battle strength, but the more terrifying thing was his management skills. Every time he stayed secluded for a while, he would experience a huge rise in strength, his speed of progress was simply very shocking.

This was the result of his skillful management.

Because he had such a sturdy foundation, it could support his terrifying growth in battle strength.

“Right now, Spectral Soul is slowly losing his control, we are getting more and more information that is of high importance.”

“In the River of Time, the time path Immortal Gu House has been repaired, we have four in total now. The earlier time path formation needs to be modified further.”

“At the same time, we cannot let Fang Yuan live comfortably, I should contact Wu Yong.”

Some days later.

Intense winds blew.

Fang Yuan pushed forward with his palm, the strong force of the killer move went into the immortal aperture’s entrance and permeated Lou Lan blessed land.

Hei Lou Lan’s tribulation was destroyed instantly.

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes twitched slightly but her expression was unchanging. She stood in her immortal aperture as she thanked Fang Yuan, who was outside.

“No need to thank me.” Fang Yuan looked at Lou Lan blessed land, it was quite poor, it could not be compared with the sovereign immortal aperture. Even though Hei Lou Lan had high aptitude, she had never truly developed her immortal aperture properly.

This was what Fang Yuan wanted.

He could give Hei Lou Lan cultivation resources, she had to rely on him for this, it was a form of control over her.

In fact, Ying Wu Xie, Bai Ning Bing, and the rest were all in similar situations.

1“Quickly leave, my wisdom path methods can only block them for some time, moreover, each time, the tribulations will greatly influence my methods.” Fang Yuan urged.

“Okay.” Hei Lou Lan nodded, she did not dare to be careless, quickly storing her immortal aperture and entering the sovereign immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan used Fixed Immortal Travel to leave immediately, Wu Yong and the rest who came at full speed failed to catch him.

“Damn it! He escaped again.”

“This lingering aura, someone underwent tribulation again...”

The Southern Border Gu Immortals had ugly expressions, some were furious, some were solemn, while some were fearful.

“This is the fourth one... evidently, Fang Yuan is helping his lackeys undergo tribulation to raise their cultivation levels. If this continues, the situation will not be good.”

COMMENT

Wu Yong had a grim expression, a cold light flashed in his eyes as he said slowly: “Fang Yuan has Fixed Immortal Travel, he can escape rapidly, we can only set up many Beacon Towers and work together in treasure yellow heaven to restrict his businesses and reduce his profits. Eventually, this will become our advantage.”

Jade light flickered in Qi Sea grotto-heaven as Fang Yuan appeared out of nowhere.

“We are safe for now.”

“They are starting to target my businesses in treasure yellow heaven...” Fang Yuan snickered.

He did feel pressure, but because he had recently devoured the Five Xiang’s public grotto-heaven and Qi Sea grotto-heaven, he gained a vast amount of resources, even if his businesses were suppressed, there was no issue.

But this was obviously Heavenly Court and Southern Border working together, if he allowed them to continue, Fang Yuan would not be able to endure it.

He had obtained a lot of resources from the Southern Border Gu Immortal captives, but precisely because they knew about these resources, they could target these businesses efficiently.

“I need to think of a plan.” Fang Yuan gaze flickered with consideration.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1648: Conflict Between Miao and Ren

Eastern Sea.

Swish swish swish!

Waves crashed onto the rocks by the island shore, bursting into white bubbles upon impact.

Wicked winds howled, the sky was dark.

This uninhibited island was not eye-catching in the huge Eastern Sea, but it actually hid four Gu Immortals.

“Ren Xiu Ping, you are too much!” Miao Ming Shen shouted angrily with bloodshot eyes, he was injured, expressing intense anger and hatred in his eyes.

He was a famous lone cultivator in Eastern Sea, having rank seven cultivation level and cultivating space path, he had a method to increase the size of immortal apertures. He did that as a way of living, expanding the immortal apertures of many Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, he was quite popular.

Miao Ming Shen was neither tall nor short, neither fat nor thin. In terms of appearance, he looked ordinary, only his flat and wide nose left a heavy impression on others.

In terms of appearance, he was unassuming. But he was an ambitious person, being very good at building relationships, he had a lot of charisma. Three Eastern Sea lone immortals, Immortal Hua Die, Feng Jiang, and Gui Qi Ye all looked to Miao Ming Shen as their leader, the four were a group of Gu Immortals with common interests.

But now, Gui Qi Ye was unconscious, his body was covered in a poisonous purple color, he was in great danger.

Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die who were standing beside Miao Ming Shen were in bad states too, they had evidently gotten injured from a serious battle.

“Lord Miao Ming Shen, what do we do? Gui Qi Ye was hit by the ice poison starfish, we do not have the way to heal him.” Immortal Hua Die was very worried.

Not long ago, the four of them had fallen for Ren Xiu Ping’s plot.

Ren Xiu Ping had rank seven peak cultivation level and was an enslavement path Gu Immortal, he wanted to assassinate Miao Ming Shen using the ice poison starfish. But at the crucial moment, Gui Qi Ye blocked this fatal attack for Miao Ming Shen.

Miao Ming Shen reacted and quickly brought the unconscious Gui Qi Ye, as well as Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die, out of the trap through a fierce battle.

Feng Jiang’s expression was cold as ice: “The ice poison starfish might have a troublesome poison, but I’ve heard that Su Chen and Fairy Jiu Yue can heal it.”

Su Chen was a member of the super force Su clan, he specialized in healing and was famous in Eastern Sea, he was quite a kind person.

Meanwhile, Fairy Jiu Yue was a lone cultivator, she was cold and aloof, the price was high if they wanted to get her help.

Miao Ming Shen shook his head: “I am not going to turn to these two. Su Chen is from Su clan, while Fairy Jiu Yue has some relationship with Ren Xiu Ping, others might not know but I am certain of this. I am highly suspicious that Fairy Jiu Yue might be a trap set by that old scoundrel Ren Xiu Ping!”

“Ah? Then...” Immortal Hua Die did not know what to say.

Miao Ming Shen smiled forcefully: “Have you forgotten? Ice poison starfish’s poison can be removed with underworld yellow water.”

Feng Jiang stared with wide eyes: “Underworld yellow water is a rank eight immortal material, even in Eastern Sea it is very rare, lord, you have it?”

Miao Ming Shen shook his head: “Of course not, I am going to use the extreme time pole to exchange for it.”

Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die understood at once.

Extreme time pole was a rank eight time path immortal material, Miao Ming Shen had obtained it long ago, he could not bear to sell it. Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die knew this.

Immortal Hua Die’s expression changed, she said with pity: “Extreme time pole is an extremely rare rank eight time path immortal material, why don’t we use other rank eight immortal materials to exchange for the underworld yellow water.”

Miao Ming Shen shook his head again: “Rank eight immortal materials are usually exclusively traded with each other. If I use other things to request for the underworld yellow water, others will not want to exchange it for my immortal material, and even if someone wants my rank eight immortal material, they might not have underworld yellow water.”

“But now, you all know that Heavenly Court and Southern Border are trying to stop Fang Yuan from doing his business, they are also gathering time path immortal materials and buying them out. Time path immortal materials are now very high in demand, the price is rising sharply. Heavenly Court has a deep foundation, they definitely have underworld yellow water. I will definitely get it if I offer the extreme time pole.”

“Lord...” Feng Jiang was hesitant, he remembered that Miao Ming Shen had almost died when he obtained this extreme time pole, he paid a huge price.

Miao Ming Shen laughed loudly, patting Feng Jiang’s shoulder: “How can I let him die in front of me? So what if I have to give up the extreme time pole?”

Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die were very moved, they did not follow the wrong leader after all!

As expected, the situation went as Miao Ming Shen predicted, once his extreme time pole appeared, Heavenly Court took notice and the two sides soon traded, Miao Ming Shen obtained a huge amount of underworld yellow water.

He used the underworld yellow water to cleanse Gui Qi Ye’s body, he used just the right amount, after all, this water was also corrosive on an undefended Gu Immortal body.

After meticulously cleansing him, the ice poison starfish’s poison was fully neutralized.

Not long ago, Gui Qi Ye woke up and opened his eyes.

After learning that Miao Ming Shen had paid such a huge price to save him, he felt extremely moved.

However, he was not an expressive person, he kept his gratitude inside him and said to Miao Ming Shen: “Lord, that old scoundrel Ren Xiu Ping suddenly attacked us, he must be after the blue dragon whale.”

1Miao Ming Shen sighed: “I think so too, Ren Xiu Ping had always wanted to work together and enter the blue dragon whale to excavate the hidden Paradise Earth true inheritance. But his price is simply not sincere. This time, he actually attacked us, I was truly caught unguarded. What idea do you have, tell me.”

Gui Qi Ye nodded: “Lord, you know the blue dragon whale’s location, this secret has already been exposed, it is too hard to guard this secret anymore. We should invite people to explore the blue dragon whale instead. When we gain the inheritance inside and increase our strength, we can deal with that Ren Xiu Ping. Otherwise, with our strength now, we cannot defeat that guy. He also has a bunch of lone immortals helping him, as a crafty person, once he senses something amiss, he might spread the news and lure more people to us!”

Miao Ming Shen’s gaze flickered: “Instead of waiting for that to happen and letting Ren Xiu Ping gather his people, we should seek reinforcements now. This idea is good, it is our only choice. It is a pity, if I had rank eight cultivation level, we would be able to explore it ourselves.”

Gui Qi Ye added: “Lord, we need to choose our reinforcements carefully.”

Miao Ming Shen nodded, he looked at the three immortals, asking: “Of course I know, what recommendations do you have?”

The three immortals gave their suggestions.

Miao Ming Shen nodded at times while shaking his head occasionally, he chose a few of them that were suitable, and eliminated some more from among them for safety.

The most important thing was dependability.

But this way, they had few people, even if they worked together, they could not break the first hurdle, they would not be able to enter the blue dragon whale’s inner world.

At this time, Immortal Hua Die voiced: “I have a suggestion, does lord remember this person called Chu Ying?”

“Chu Ying.” Miao Ming Shen’s eyes shined: “Brilliant, this person has rank seven cultivation level and cultivates transformation path, he even has grudges with Ren Xiu Ping. But he is truly too secretive, I have not found any more information on him since then...”

Saying this, he showed hesitation again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1649: Regret

“Paradise Earth’s true inheritance?” Within Five Xiang’s public grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan received Miao Ming Shen’s letter, inviting him to join the exploration of the blue dragon whale.

A light of pondering flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Miao Ming Shen had actually clashed with Ren Xiu Ping, he decided to explore the blue dragon whale ahead of time, this was out of Fang Yuan’s expectations.

In the memories of the five hundred years of his previous life, this was too early.

“Maybe it was because of the increasing influence of my rebirth, Miao Ming Shen and Ren Xiu Ping’s conflict turned out earlier than expected.”

“Maybe the five hundred years of memories were tampered with to begin with. After all, heaven’s will was lurking inside Spring Autumn Cicada, it could act very easily if it wanted to.”

“There is another possibility, Heavenly Court plotted and deduced my relationship with Miao Ming Shen, so they used this chance to deal with me.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan calmed his mind and closed his eyes, starting his deduction.

A while later, he opened his eyes, gaining his conclusion: “With all the clues that I have, there is little possibility that Heavenly Court planned this against me, it seems I have to go Eastern Sea now.”

Right now in the five regions, Northern Plains and Central Continent had Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven, they were extremely dangerous for Fang Yuan. For the remaining three regions, Fang Yuan was most familiar with Southern Border. Especially since he had stayed in Wu clan for some time, and had captured many Southern Border Gu Immortals, he knew a lot of information about their super forces.

There was another reason, Shadow Sect’s headquarters were set in Southern Border, they had the most operations in Southern Border with many natural immortal formations set up in secret. These were all hidden and unexposed.

With many of the above reasons, Fang Yuan chose to stay in Southern Border.

Even when Hei Lou Lan and the rest underwent tribulation, they were in Southern Border.

Even though the five regions had different heaven and earth qi, forcefully undergoing tribulation outside the home region would harm the immortal aperture, but Fang Yuan did not want them to develop their apertures well anyway. He took care of their cultivation resources, it gave him great control over them.

During this period of time, Fang Yuan had already refined the many Immortal Gu from Qi Sea grotto-heaven, they were usable to him now.

The resources in Qi Sea grotto-heaven and the Five Xiang’s public grotto-heaven were also starting to be absorbed.

The remaining rank nine killer move heaven form was very stubborn, it resisted Fang Yuan’s refinement. But he was still making progress, in time, he would definitely be able to use it.

Fang Yuan was troubled now because his businesses in treasure yellow heaven were obstructed by Heavenly Court and Southern Border’s righteous path, they succeeded in becoming an obstacle for his economic profits.

Fang Yuan thought of many ways to compete with them, but the results were not good.

Be it Central Continent’s Heavenly Court or Southern Border’s righteous path, they were rich and had deep foundations, Fang Yuan’s capital could not match them.

The easiest way to solve this problem was to engage in a monopoly business like guts Gu. But that required countless guts Gu, Fang Yuan lacked souls, even though Dang Hun Mountain was repaired, the production could not be raised.

His plan in green ghost desert had fallen through, if he had succeeded, right now against Southern Border and Central Continent, he would not have any problems.

Qing Chou had gone missing, while the rest of the Western Desert super forces were now finding trouble with Fang clan, they had a hard time raising their statuses.

Fang Yuan had thought of using Fang clan, but he had reservations about this, because his Suan Bu Jin identity was already exposed by Heavenly Court.

His decision to plan for green ghost desert was correct in hindsight. It was a pity that the situation turned out quite different from his expected results.

This way, Fang Yuan’s income started to dwindle. And worse was that Central Continent’s Heavenly Court was buying all the time path immortal materials they could find.

As long as there were time path immortal materials, Heavenly Court would basically pay them whatever they wanted. During this time in treasure yellow heaven, time path immortal materials were extremely popular.

This was problematic for Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan's income had already fallen, he wanted to refine time path Immortal Gu to raise his battle strength in the River of Time, but now, Heavenly Court was oppressively stopping him.

Heavenly Court had been created since the Remote Antiquity Era, after countless years of accumulation, how could Fang Yuan contest them?

Fang Yuan's improvement in time path was very marginal, while Heavenly Court obtained a lot of time path immortal materials, they might even be able to refine a fifth Immortal Gu House.

In this situation, Fang Yuan's hopes of obtaining Red Lotus' true inheritance were dwindling.

"I need a lot of time path immortal materials to refine time path Immortal Gu. Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was an earth path venerable, the Paradise Earth true inheritance inside the blue dragon whale might not have many time path immortal materials. But even so, I must go!"

This was an uncertainty, nobody could say what he would gain.

Even if there were no time path immortal materials, the Paradise Earth true inheritance was definitely going to have some good things.

"Southern Border's rank eight Gu Immortal Lu Wei Yin is the current generation inheritor of Paradise Earth, if I can obtain this Paradise Earth true inheritance, I might gain a way to deal with him."

"The more important thing is that according to my memories, the blue dragon whale seems to contain the rank eight Immortal Gu Regret! In my previous life, Miao Ming Shen explored many times and did not obtain Paradise Earth's true inheritance, but he still gained a lot. Because there were many participating Gu Immortals, rumors of Immortal Gu Regret spread out."

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable used Immortal Gu Regret as the core to create an immortal killer move famous throughout history — Regret and Repent. Using this move, he caused many demonic path Gu Immortals to change sides and realize their mistakes, they turned from evil to kind. This move had incredible achievements.

Immortal Gu Regret was naturally a wisdom path Immortal Gu.

Wisdom path had three elements of thoughts, wills, and emotions. Immortal Gu Regret was part of the emotion branch, because future Gu Immortals created a small path known as emotion path, Immortal Gu Regret was also part of emotion path.

In the long history of humanity, Immortal Gu Regret had appeared many times, sometimes rank six or rank seven, held in the hands of Gu Immortals of the five regions. When it went into Red Lotus Demon Venerable's hands, it seemed to have been refined to rank eight for the first time. Afterwards, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable also obtained rank eight Immortal Gu Regret.

Fang Yuan had investigated deeply into Immortal Gu Regret.

Because he wanted to recreate Regret Pool.

Speaking of which, other than tributaries of the River of Time, Immortal Gu Regret was the core of Immortal Gu House Regret Pool.

But unfortunately, back then in Eastern Sea, the Regret Pool left behind was half-complete, it did not have Immortal Gu Regret.

“If this Paradise Earth true inheritance has rank eight Immortal Gu Regret, with this Gu, I will be able to replicate a portion of Regret Pool’s power, it will help in refining Gu!”

This was what moved Fang Yuan the most.

In fact, Regret Pool was part of Fang Yuan’s plans. He had extorted Southern Border’s righteous path and painstakingly created the incomplete Immortal Gu House, he had some anticipation towards this. Unfortunately, the incomplete Immortal Gu House was destroyed in the River of Time, Fang Yuan could not retrieve any of the Gu worms.

Several days passed in an instant.

Eastern Sea.

Miao Ming Shen looked around, he was surrounded by eight Gu Immortals.

Of course, Fang Yuan was among them.

“Everyone.” Miao Ming Shen said solemnly: “I have already explained the details of this expedition, I gave you all some time to consider. This is my first trip too, the risks are unknown, we might possibly die. If anyone wants to give up now, you can leave. I will definitely not stop anyone, I understand from the bottom of my heart.”

Sea winds roared by everyone’s ears.

Miao Ming Shen looked around again, nobody moved.

Paradise Earth’s true inheritance was too valuable, even though there were few earth path Gu Immortals in Eastern Sea, with only one earth path Gu Immortal among everyone here, nobody wanted to give up.

Humans die for wealth and birds die for food.

Furthermore, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was the kindest venerable in history, he had never harmed a single person’s life, his immortal inheritances were also known to be safe.

If anyone gave up this chance, they would be a fool!

“Alright, since everyone wants to join, let’s make the alliance agreement.” Miao Ming Shen was very excited.

For this trip, he had made ample preparations.

“Zeng Luo Zi, please go ahead.” Miao Ming Shen cupped his fists as he spoke.

Zeng Luo Zi stepped forward.

He wore a white robe and had a skinny face, he had convex cheekbones and his eye bags were deep, bright light shined in his eyes.

He cultivated information path and was rank seven, Miao Ming Shen had talked to him long ago, he immediately said now: “This is the alliance agreement that we are going to set, everyone, take a look.”

Zeng Luo Zi said that as many Gu Immortals shook, looking slightly surprised.

It turned out that the alliance agreement’s information appeared in their minds at the same time.

Zeng Luo Zi’s action was a show of strength, affirming his superior status among the group.

This Paradise Earth true inheritance expedition had just started but the Gu Immortals were already starting to compete between one another in the dark.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1650: Chu Ying’s Death

Miao Ming Shen’s expression did not change, but his eyes were carefully observing.

Zeng Luo Zi’s action was part of his arrangements, he wanted to collect more valuable information.

Zeng Luo Zi’s information path attainment was impressive even to Miao Ming Shen. With Zeng Luo Zi’s move, Miao Ming Shen observed everyone and gained quite some insight.

“We have eight people, other than myself, Gui Qi Ye, Feng Jiang, and Immortal Hua Die, there are also Zeng Luo Zi, Tu Tou Tuo, Tong Hua, and Chu Ying.”

Other than Zeng Luo Zi and Miao Ming Shen, Tong Hua and Tu Tou Tuo were also expressionless.

The rest had some sort of change in their expression at least.

Miao Ming Shen trusted Gui Qi Ye, Feng Jiang, and Immortal Hua Die the most, but in this trip, he did not inform them about this, so their reactions were genuine.

Miao Ming Shen had lots of interaction with Zeng Luo Zi, Tu Tou Tuo, and Tong Hua, he knew about their background, they were all rank seven experts that were rare in Eastern Sea.

In Eastern Sea, there was the highest number of lone immortals who are superior to those of other regions, because Eastern Sea was the most affluent in resources.

Miao Ming Shen’s concern was Chu Ying. He had met this secluded cultivator several times, he left a deep impression on Miao Ming Shen. The truth was, Miao Ming Shen did not want to invite Chu Ying. But because Chu Ying and Ren Xiu Ping had a conflict long ago, because he saved the lives of Feng Jiang and Hua Die, and most importantly, because he seemed to have an abundant amount of lifespan Gu, all these reasons made Miao Ming Shen inclined to invite Chu Ying for this trip.

He was the only one who knew the location of the blue dragon whale. Therefore, all of the people he invited owed him a favor.

Miao Ming Shen wanted to cooperate more deeply with Fang Yuan. Forget the rest, just the amount of lifespan Gu that Fang Yuan had was extremely alluring to Miao Ming Shen.

Zeng Luo Zi’s action made Chu Ying’s expression change too.

As for Tu Tou Tuo and Tong Hua, it was unsure whether they were unaffected or pretending to put up a front.

Miao Ming Shen looked at everyone as he laughed heartily: “Zeng Luo Zi, you have good methods.”

Tu Tou Tuo snorted while Tong Hua gave Zeng Luo Zi a cold stare.

Fang Yuan looked at Zeng Luo Zi with a surprised expression, but he was laughing coldly inside.

Zeng Luo Zi’s gaze swept past Chu Ying, before meeting with Tu Tou Tuo and Tong Hua’s gazes, he laughed heartily as he tossed out some information path mortal Gu.

The information path mortal Gu recorded the fine details of the alliance agreement, after inspecting them, the immortals nodded their heads in agreement, while also suggesting some changes.

Of course, these changes were small and negligible, Miao Ming Shen took charge as the leader and after coming to an agreement, they signed it using Zeng Luo Zi’s methods.

Once the alliance agreement was made, everyone laughed as the atmosphere became less tense.

“It is time, let’s go.” Miao Ming Shen moved at lightning speed as the immortals followed him.

Miao Ming Shen flew in the sky for a while before diving into the sea.

“We can’t hide in the sky, it is easy to find us. If Ren Xiu Ping learns of this expedition, he would not wait aimlessly. If we enter the sea, that means we are going to use the undercurrent...”

Fang Yuan speculated inwardly.

As expected, after a while, Miao Ming Shen led everyone to the bottom of the sea, they saw a huge python-like undercurrent crossing the trenches in the sea.

Miao Ming Shen’s speed gradually slowed down until he arrived before the undercurrent.

Miao Ming Shen looked at Zeng Luo Zi: “Before entering the undercurrent, for our safety and to ensure we will not be separated, Zeng Luo Zi, I would like you to use that immortal killer move to mark us and allow us to sense each other’s location.”

This was another way to control them.

But Miao Ming Shen did not say it before the alliance agreement, he had said it before entering the undercurrent, nobody could rebuke his sensible words.

“Miao Ming Shen, are you sure?” Zeng Luo Zi pretended to hesitate.

Miao Ming Shen smiled: “We have already made the agreement, we need to work together sincerely, how can we not trust each other when exploring Paradise

Earth’s true inheritance?”

He said in a serious tone, Tu Tou Tuo, Tong Hua, and the rest nodded in agreement without objection.

Zeng Luo Zi looked around: “Then everyone, don’t be nervous or defensive, my move has no offensive capability.”

Fang Yuan mentally rolled his eyes as he said: “Go ahead and do it.”

“Let me go first.” Feng Jiang stepped forward at once.

Zeng Luo Zi first used the immortal killer move on Feng Jiang before the rest took turns.

After a while, all of the immortals were affected by the information path killer move, they could sense each other’s locations.

“It is fine now, please follow me, the undercurrents are extremely fast, if you are slow by a step, you will be thrown far behind.” Miao Ming Shen said as he entered the undercurrent.

Fang Yuan and the rest followed after him rapidly.

Eastern Sea’s deep sea undercurrents did not have fixed paths, they were always changing and had various lengths, it was a display of the great power of nature.

Moving along the undercurrent, the immortals were faster than some movement immortal killer moves, and most importantly, they saved a lot of energy, only having to put up defenses.

If there were water path Gu Immortals who had methods to move rapidly in the undercurrents, they could even defend themselves while fighting enemies here.

Fang Yuan was towards the rear of the group, he found that this group’s formation was quite specific. For example, Immortal Hua Die was right beside him, talking to him constantly.

Fang Yuan entertained her on the surface while secretly inspecting his information path dao marks.

After a while, Fang Yuan relaxed.

These information path dao marks were not hard to get rid of, Fang Yuan had lots of methods. He even had immortal killer moves like self cleansing to resist these information path restrictions.

But now was not the time.

“Everyone, we are about to go out, follow me!” Ahead, Miao Ming Shen suddenly spoke.

After several breaths, he left the undercurrent, the rest followed, nobody was left behind.

After leaving, Fang Yuan found that he was in an ordinary nameless sea area.

In the following journey, the immortals used several undercurrents to travel, if there were no undercurrents, they would travel under the sea as well, being extremely low profile. Even if they met desolate beasts or ancient desolate beasts, they avoided them. If they saw any resources, they would ignore them.

After several days of traveling, the group became more cohesive.

Miao Ming Shen was very skillful in human interaction, he solidified his position as the leader.

He was smiling when he suddenly froze, saying: “We are near!”

The immortals were energized.

Fang Yuan felt a little suspicious, he had used several investigative killer moves but could not sense anything. He could not see what method Miao Ming Shen had used or why he was so confident.

The blue dragon whale’s existence was known to everyone. But its exact location was a mystery, Miao Ming Shen must have a unique method to know its location.

Fang Yuan had rank eight cultivation level with immense battle strength, it was possible to kill Miao Ming Shen and search his soul. But there were risks involved, Gu Immortals had all sorts of mysterious methods, if he possessed some strange abilities, there might be mishaps occurring.

Thus, Fang Yuan continued to lurk, it would not be too late if he attacked after getting into the blue dragon whale.

As they got closer, the immortals started to sense the peculiarity.

The seawater became more turbulent ahead, if earlier was a drizzle, it was a storm now, the obstruction was far greater.

Desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts increased in numbers, they could not help themselves in this huge storm.

Fang Yuan and the rest had to fight while moving, slaughtering a bunch of desolate beasts before they carved out a bloody path to move on.

At this time, everyone’s strength was displayed.

Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die had the lowest battle strength, they were soon the ones who needed protection. Miao Ming Shen was leading the group as the vanguard, facing the greatest pressure.

Behind him were Tong Hua and Zeng Luo Zi.

Tu Tou Tuo was an earth path Gu Immortal, his battle strength was greatly restricted in this place.

Next was Fang Yuan, he had already turned into a tiny seahorse that was palm sized, he moved like lightning speed. His strength was only mid-tier in the group, it was nothing impressive.

The journey ahead was getting tougher, from the groups of beasts, figures of immemorial desolate beasts started to appear, the immortals could no longer move forward so casually.

The ‘strongest’ Miao Ming Shen was merely rank seven.

Following Miao Ming Shen, they flew out of the sea, arriving in the sky.

Rumble!

Intense tornadoes surged in the sky, lightning flashed continuously as thunder rumbled, dark clouds extended to the horizons.

Waves surged from the sea, they were thousands of feet tall.

The situation was just as dangerous as underwater!

Countless flying birds and eagles fought intensely amidst the thunder and lightning.

Blue charm lightning shadows flickered in the dark clouds, they were hunted down by immemorial desolate beast thunder phoenix.

Seeing the tail of the thunder phoenix flash by, Miao Ming Shen and the rest breathed in deeply in shock.

“Quick, follow me!” Miao Ming Shen transmitted, his body was covered in sweat, he flew forward rapidly.

The Gu Immortals all had their hidden methods, but this situation was too chaotic, the safest solution was to get away from this place as quickly as possible.

The thunder phoenix screeched as it discovered Fang Yuan and the rest, diving down.

The seawater erupted as an immemorial octopus large as a mountain moved its countless tentacles, treating Miao Ming Shen and the rest as prey for food.

“Damn it, damn it!” Miao Ming Shen’s expression was distorted, he almost broke his teeth from gritting too hard.

Even before meeting the blue dragon whale, they were already in a desperate situation, the aura of death was close.

“Split up and run!” After hesitating for a while, Miao Ming Shen screamed.

The Gu Immortals quickly split up and ran.

Crack!

The thunder phoenix was extremely fast, arriving before Fang Yuan in the blink of an eye.

“Chu Ying!” Immortal Hua Die was dragged along by Gui Qi Ye, upon seeing this, she screamed in fear.

“Save me!” Fang Yuan shouted with a look of despair on his face.

Next, the thunder phoenix arrived in a flash, burning him to a crisp by lightning as he died on the spot.

“Chu Ying...” Seeing this, the remaining seven immortals were shocked, they escaped in an even greater panic.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1651: Merit Obelisk

Boom!

A grindstone-sized lightning ball crashed onto Miao Ming Shen’s back and exploded intensely.

Guh.

Miao Ming Shen’s body shook as he spit out blood, his pale face was even weaker now. He tried to concentrate and use an immortal killer move, vanishing from his spot and appearing several thousand steps away.

But even there, lightning weaved and beasts roared, the situation was truly at its worst.

“To think that I would die here!” Miao Ming Shen was filled with despair.

Wasn’t Paradise Earth’s true inheritance meant to be mild? Why was it so dangerous here?

These questions were no longer the point, Miao Ming Shen’s immortal aperture had run out of immortal essence, even though he had his Immortal Gu left, his escape earlier was the final struggle he could muster.

The roaring of beasts almost burst his eardrums, the immemorial thunder phoenix attacked him again.

Around him, none of the other seven Gu Immortals were left, he had lasted the longest, the rest died one by one earlier.

“If I had known this, I would not have explored Paradise Earth’s true inheritance. Dying before even meeting the blue dragon whale, hehehe, Ren Xiu Ping is going to die laughing after hearing this.” Miao Ming Shen was filled with regret but he also felt very helpless.

In life, who could predict everything that was going to happen, even if it was a dead end ahead? Even for the great wisdom path Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, could she predict everything?

1“Come at me.” Miao Ming Shen sighed, straightening his back as he faced the thunder phoenix’s sharp claws.

With an intense pain, his vision fell into darkness.

“Did I die...” Miao Ming Shen was quite dazed.

At this time, a voice resounded: “Lord Miao Ming Shen, wake up, quickly wake up.”

Miao Ming Shen opened his eyes.

He saw Immortal Hua Die’s concerned look, she was standing beside him. Gui Qi Ye, Feng Jiang, and Tu Tou Tuo, even the one who died first, Chu Ying, were all around.

They were all smiling.

“You guys... what happened?” Miao Ming Shen’s eyes suddenly flashed: “Wait, is this a test?”

“You are right, we came to that conclusion too.” Tu Tou Tuo laughed loudly, replying.

“To think that the first test came before we entered the blue dragon whale, this was simply too dangerous.” Miao Ming Shen shook his head, feeling some lingering fear as he inspected his injuries.

But he became stunned immediately.

It turned out that his injuries were all gone, his Gu worms were all intact, even his immortal essence had been restored to its original state.

“This?!” Miao Ming Shen raised his head: “Was it all an illusion?”

“Precisely.”

“Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable is truly amazing, we did not notice it at all, we only realized after dying.”

“Thinking about it, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was able to create Reincarnation Battlefield, this test was definitely not hard to put up.”

“In history, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable created such killer moves to deal with the rank eight expert Combat Demon, Reincarnation Battlefield was the peak of this series, after so many years, Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects has nurtured countless Gu Immortal experts using it!”

Miao Ming Shen sighed to himself as his mind got clearer: “I think this is Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s warning, after experiencing death, we can give up many obsessions.”

“Lord is right, the feeling of death is truly hard to forget.” Feng Jiang sighed.

“At the same time, this is a test of our battle strength. Miao Ming Shen, I have to admit that you are amazing, we saw your performance in the illusion, you lasted the longest among us.” Tong Hua smiled.

Miao Ming Shen was joyful but also worried.

Joyful that his great strength had increased his authority in this group, but worried because most of his methods were all exposed. After all, he was facing death, why would he reserve his trump cards?

Miao Ming Shen suddenly thought of Fang Yuan, his gaze flashed: “Chu Ying, to think that I worried and felt aggrieved about you so deeply, yet you were the one who saved the most energy.”

His words had deep meaning.

Fang Yuan sighed as he showed a bitter look of shame: “The truth is, I felt horrible when death approached, I was simply too unlucky, why did the immemorial thunder phoenix target me? When I woke up, I was dazed for a long time before gaining clarity.”

With attitude Gu, he had sincere and truthful looking acting, Miao Ming Shen stared at Fang Yuan intensely but seeing his expression, his suspicions faded away.

“Then where are we?” Miao Ming Shen looked around, seeing that they were on a nameless island. The island was surrounded by vast blue seawater, extending to the horizons.

There were schools of fish in the sea, waves were moving slowly as winds blew, white seagulls were making sounds, some were flying in the sky while others were flying slightly above the sea level.

“We were about to ask you. We arrived here after waking up, we do not know where to go.” Tong Hua said.

Miao Ming Shen nodded: “Everyone, wait a moment.”

Next, he shut his eyes, using a mysterious immortal killer move.

This was his unique way of locating the blue dragon whale!

But just on the surface, nobody could decipher his method.

After shutting his eyes, Miao Ming Shen opened it again very quickly, showing shock and joy in his eyes.

“Everyone, as I expected, this is the immortal aperture world of the blue dragon whale!” Miao Ming Shen said some shocking things.

“What?” The immortals were all very surprised.

They more or less knew something about this Paradise Earth true inheritance.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable subdued the blue dragon whale and awakened its immortal aperture, he had left behind a Paradise Earth true inheritance in this grotto-heaven.

5Years later, many Gu Immortals tried to find the blue dragon whale but could not find anything.

The Gu Immortals were still prepared to see the true appearance of the blue dragon whale, but to think that they would arrive directly inside its immortal aperture.

“Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangements, they are truly something we cannot comprehend fully.”

“This means, entering this place has no difficulty?”

“Then why has nobody entered this place before us?”

“Was the blue dragon whale too hard to find...”

“Then what are we going to do now?” Tong Hua asked.

The immortals all focused their attention on Miao Ming Shen.

Miao Ming Shen was quite satisfied with this situation, they had all arrived at the destination without separating, they still wanted to stick together, he did not waste his effort in consolidating his authority as the leader of the group.

“To speak the truth, I am not sure too, but since we are in the grotto-heaven now, we have already succeeded in the first step. Next, we should find the hidden Paradise Earth true inheritance. This is an unknown place that has existed for many years, we do not know what lives here. To be safe, we should travel in a group, even if anything happens, we can take care of each other.” Miao Ming Shen’s words were acknowledged by everyone.

Fang Yuan spoke at this time: “I have a simple idea, since we entered this place via Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangement, this small island must not be simple, we should search around this island first.”

“Nobody explored this place yet?” Miao Ming Shen asked.

The immortals shook their heads, some looked at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly: “Even though I am the first person who got here and learned of the illusion, I was afraid of the lurking danger here. I have been guarding our current location since then.”

“Alright, let’s split up and look around this small island.” Miao Ming Shen immediately gave them some missions.

This island was small, with so many people around, they soon found clues: “Quickly come to the center of the island, there is a rank eight Immortal Gu House here!”

A moment later, eight Gu Immortals stood in front of the Immortal Gu House.

This Immortal Gu House had a peculiar design, from the outside, it looked like an obelisk made of gold.

The surface of the obelisk had many inscriptions.

Feng Jiang took a few glances and shouted: “So this is Paradise Earth’s true inheritance!”

Immortal Hua Die who was beside him frowned: “It is really troublesome to inherit this true inheritance.”

The obelisk stated that this rank eight Immortal Gu House was a merit board, it was effective in the entire grotto-heaven world. If outside Gu Immortals wanted to gain Paradise Earth’s true inheritance, they would need to do the missions on this obelisk and gain merits after completing them.

The more merits they had, the more valuable things they could exchange for.

If one did not accept this, they could only wait on this island, they could not leave and go to other places in the grotto-heaven world.

“According to the inscription, we can only stay here for three hundred days.” Tong Hua said with a regretful tone.

Three hundred days in terms of the dragon whale grotto-heaven’s time.

“What missions can we do in three hundred days?” Zeng Luo Zi’s eyes flashed with bright light, there were only ten missions on this obelisk, each one was different, it meant that these Gu Immortals were going to engage in competition later.

The others were not stupid, they quickly realized this problem, the atmosphere became heavier all of a sudden.

Miao Ming Shen acutely sensed the change in the atmosphere as he spoke: “Everyone, even though the inscription says that, this is our first time here, we cannot be so sure. In my opinion, we should test if we can leave this island. I hope you can all research on this Immortal Gu House, if you have a way of moving it, we can take it for ourselves, that would be wonderful!”

The immortals were deeply moved, this was a rank eight Immortal Gu House, if they could break it and take parts of it, they would have great gains.

Miao Ming Shen continued: “When we looked around, we found a lot of cultivation resources on this island, they are in huge quantities. We should decide on how to split these resources, what do you think?”

The immortals would only benefit from this, why would they disagree, everyone cheered in acknowledgment.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1652: Choosing Mission

The island was small but it contained a lot of cultivation resources.

With this size and amount of resources, they were clearly intentionally arranged.

Fang Yuan and the other Gu Immortals looked around and scavenged for resources before redistributing them. Fang Yuan as Chu Ying was a transformation path Gu Immortal, he obtained a lot of transformation path immortal materials.

But because transformation path projected all paths, these immortal materials were of various types and paths. For example, soul beast cores were soul path immortal materials, but if a transformation path Gu Immortal has a way to transform into soul beasts, then this soul core was also a type of resource for the transformation path Gu Immortal.

Fang Yuan used transformation path as the concealment to pick a lot of time path immortal materials.

Zeng Luo Zi seemingly asked casually: “Friend Chu Ying has a time path transformation? Why didn’t you use it when we were in the illusion?”

Fang Yuan laughed: “I am just being greedy, I am sure everyone knows about the demon Fang Yuan. These time path immortal materials can be sold in treasure yellow heaven for many good things. But if I compete with everyone here, it will harm our relationship after all.”

“Hahaha, that is a good idea Chu Ying, why didn’t I think of it?” Tu Tou Tuo laughed.

Zeng Luo Zi’s eyes flashed with bright light, he stopped talking.

After the scare from the illusion, these Gu Immortals finally had a change of mood, these gains were quite valuable after all.

Especially when Miao Ming Shen was not corrupt, he split the gains equally, the atmosphere of the group was quite lively.

Half a day later, the immortals gathered before the rank eight Immortal Gu House Merit Obelisk.

“According to the information on the Merit Obelisk, these resources were all arranged by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable back then, it was to ensure that the Gu Immortals who did not want to accept the missions would still gain some rewards. Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was truly a kind person!” Tong Hua was in awe.

Gui Qi Ye pondered: “All of us have acted already, we have tried to but this island cannot be broken through forcefully.”

“And this Merit Obelisk, we cannot unravel it with our abilities.” Feng Jiang added.

The immortals were silent.

How could Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangements be so easily broken? Especially when all these Gu Immortals barring Fang Yuan were rank seven, even though some were elites, against a venerable, they were nothing.

“Miao Ming Shen, I wonder what insight you have?” Tong Hua asked.

Miao Ming Shen shook his head: “I know nothing about Paradise Earth’s true inheritance, I am like all of you. In my opinion, since we cannot forcefully unravel Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangements, we only have two options. One is to ignore the obelisk’s missions and stay here for three hundred days, once the time is up, we will likely be sent out. The second way is to follow and complete the missions on the obelisk.”

The immortals looked at each other.

Undeniably, the resources on the island were all distributed already, who would want to stay here for three hundred days?

The immortals had already gained something, their interest in Paradise Earth’s true inheritance grew as well.

In their opinion, the cultivation resources on the island were just the appetizers, Paradise Earth’s true inheritance was the true treasure here.

“But to accept missions, we will need to be acknowledged by the Merit Obelisk. The process is like a super clan’s life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu, but more restrictive in nature. If this is a trap...”

“Risk and reward are often interlinked, we came to explore Paradise Earth’s true inheritance, weren’t we taking a risk? I am going to accept the mission.”

“Since this is an arrangement of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, there must be no problem. The true inheritance is right in front of us, if we stop now, we will regret it for life.”

...

After some discussion, none of the eight Gu Immortals wanted to give up.

According to the inscription, the eight immortals went up and placed their palms on the Merit Obelisk.

With a bright flash of light, the eight immortals’ names were all displayed on the obelisk, the blank area earlier turned into a list.

Fang Yuan’s name was there too, but ‘Chu Ying’ was written instead.

This made Fang Yuan let out a sigh of relief.

He had inspected this Merit Obelisk already, it mainly comprised earth path and sound path, he could not deduce it. Of course, there was a chance of destroying it with Fang Yuan’s battle strength. But the risks were too high, he was better off disguising himself and exploring with the others.

The Gu Immortal world was filled with countless methods, this Merit Obelisk was a rank eight Immortal Gu House made by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, it had a high possibility of exposing his true name. Thankfully, that did not happen, otherwise, Fang Yuan would have to kill everyone around if he got exposed.

His identity was too important, these people might have some peculiar methods, even if they did not, it would be bad if Heavenly Court was lured over.

“Before I understand the situation, I should not attack them. This is Paradise Earth’s true inheritance after all, he emphasized on forgiving people for their mistakes, he was kind and magnanimous, if I kill people randomly, something bad might happen.”

The eight immortals were listed on the Merit Obelisk, they started to look at the missions.

There were only ten missions written.

Each mission had a vague description, the Gu Immortal needed to explore it themselves.

For example, the first mission — exterminate the surrounding water monsters around sea eagle city.

Water monsters were similar to soul beasts, they were both dao beasts that had various forms, most of them would dissipate after dying, leaving behind water cores or soul cores. These were immortal materials filled with abundant water path and soul path dao marks.

But what level were these water monsters, were they ancient level water monsters or desolate beast level water monsters, there was no information.

Sea eagle city? What was that? Where was it? There was no information.

There was still some clues regarding exterminating water monsters here, but the remaining missions were weirder.

For example, creating a water well in fish round island, or gathering medicinal herbs for three tattoo tribe, maintaining a spirit spring, protecting the merchant caravan, fixing the formation, and others.

The eight immortals looked at the Merit Obelisk, after thinking for a while, Zeng Luo Zi sighed: “My information path methods are useless against this rank eight Immortal Gu House, whatever mission we choose is based on luck. Let me try first, I will choose the first water monster extermination mission.”

The others were silent.

Even though Zeng Luo Zi said that, the missions had differences.

Using logical deduction, the harder the mission, the greater the merits. Water monsters were at least desolate beasts, the mission of eliminating them was naturally difficult, the merit reward should be quite high.

As for maintaining a spirit spring, protecting the merchant caravan, and others, they were mortal level missions, the difficulty was lower than exterminating water monsters.

Zeng Luo Zi’s choice was clearly to snatch the best mission, the atmosphere in the group suddenly changed.

Zeng Luo Zi remained silent but he was a little nervous in his heart.

Miao Ming Shen nodded as he agreed and said: “Go ahead, I will be the last one.”

Everyone looked at him with a different gaze the moment he said that.

Miao Ming Shen waved his hand, saying: “No need to overthink it, I just feel that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable created such an arrangement with deeper intentions, how could he not think of balance? These simple missions might not be as easy as they seem.”

Everyone nodded upon hearing Miao Ming Shen’s words.

Tong Hua spoke: “I choose the second mission.”

Tu Tou Tuo made his choice too.

Their decision was the same as Zeng Luo Zi, they evidently chose the harder missions.

After Tu Tou Tuo chose the mission, there was still one seemingly hard one. The rest of the missions were all very ordinary.

There were still three rank sevens left, they were Miao Ming Shen, Fang Yuan, and Gui Qi Ye.

“Next... go ahead and choose, Chu Ying.” Miao Ming Shen took a look and smiled.

Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die were beside him, they did not speak.

“Wait.” Gui Qi Ye suddenly interjected: “Everyone, Lord Miao Ming Shen, to speak the truth, I wanted this mission from the start.”

The immortals’ expressions all turned weird.

Miao Ming Shen looked at Gui Qi Ye, showing a gaze of shock and criticism.

But Gui Qi Ye ignored him, he looked at Fang Yuan eerily.

“Picking on the weakest person?” Fang Yuan chuckled in his heart, saying: “Gui Qi Ye, since you like it, this means that the mission has an affinity with you, I will not snatch it from you. Hmm... I will choose the seventh mission.”

Everyone turned to look, this seventh mission was to collect Earth Trench black oil from the deep sea, it was something that only mortals would do.

Miao Ming Shen quickly added: “Chu Ying...”

“No need to refuse it, I am truly in admiration of Brother Miao for having such a companion. You deserve it, if not for you, how could I have gotten in here?” Fang Yuan laughed heartily.

1Gui Qi Ye looked at Fang Yuan with a kinder gaze now.

Indeed, he forcefully chose the mission not for himself, but for Miao Ming Shen.

Like what Fang Yuan had said, everyone could come here due to Miao Ming Shen, he deserved it with his contribution.

Miao Ming Shen refused, but Fang Yuan persisted.

Miao Ming Shen was helpless as he accepted it.

A moment later, everyone made their choice, the Merit Obelisk shot out a pillar of light, the Gu Immortals were all transported away once they stepped inside.

Fang Yuan's field of vision changed, when he blinked, he was on an unknown island.

"I am a rank eight Gu Immortal, but that Merit Obelisk transported me with no effort. It seems to be the core of this entire grotto-heaven, it is truly profound, as expected of Paradise Earth!"

Regarding these missions, he had a similar conjecture to Miao Ming Shen. He gave up that mission earlier not because he was courteous, but because he was probing Miao Ming Shen.

After Fang Yuan left, only Gui Qi Ye and Miao Ming Shen were left.

"Oh you..." Miao Ming Shen sighed.

Gui Qi Ye cupped his fists: "Please forgive me, lord."

"What wrong did you do? It is just that you underestimated Chu Ying. He was the first person to die in the illusion, so you think he is weak." Miao Ming Shen shook his head.

"Lord thinks Chu Ying is hiding his strength?"

Miao Ming Shen shook his head: "I did not detect anything, the possibility of that is small. But in this unknown environment, we should unite instead of having internal conflicts."

"Yes, I understand."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1653: Previous Life's Most Beloved

With Fang Yuan's investigative methods, this island was completely transparent in his eyes.

He found that this island that the Merit Obelisk transported him to was very common and ordinary. There were few resources on the island, there was a small fishing village with some people living there.

There was a fishing village, a spirit spring existed as well, of course. Gu Masters existed here too, but in such a poor and desolate place, a rank four Gu Master was the utmost limit.

Fang Yuan had accepted the mission to collect Earth Trench black oil from the deep sea, after he investigated, he soon found that there were traces of black oil oozing out near the fringe of the island.

Other Gu Immortals might go into the sea to collect the black oil already, but Fang Yuan did not do that, the moment he saw the Merit Obelisk, he started to think about Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable's intentions.

He concealed himself as he entered the fishing village, it did not have many people living in it, there were only five or six Gu Masters, the highest cultivation was a rank three Gu Master, it could not compare to Gu Yue clan on Qing Mao Mountain. Back then, Gu Yue clan had about ten of such villages under it.

Fang Yuan directly approached the sole rank three Gu Master in the village.

This was an old man with white hair and deep wrinkles, from what others said, he was the village head.

Fang Yuan was quite satisfied.

Having high authority and being old, he naturally knew a lot of things.

Soul search!

Fang Yuan used his immortal method, the old village head’s secrets were all exposed.

Instantly, Fang Yuan gained a lot of information that was rather precise. As he expected, this village was very ordinary. There were many of such villages around the island.

“This fishing village doesn’t seem to have any trap.” Fang Yuan realized this and left the village secretly.

The old village head only felt dazed for a moment, even though it was a bit weird, he went on with his business soon after.

Fang Yuan’s soul search method was simply too incredible for mortal Gu Masters to realize.

Fang Yuan left the island and flew to the surrounding islands.

But Fang Yuan experienced what happened on the Merit Obelisk island earlier again.

Even though he could see a small island in the horizon, no matter how he flew, the distance did not shorten.

After using all his methods, Fang Yuan still returned helplessly.

“Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable cultivated sound path in his early years before converting to earth path later, this method of controlling distance is his signature move.”

There were many battles in history that showed Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable standing on the spot as his enemies attacked. No matter what they did, their attacks could not reach him, even though the distance was short.

“Other than that, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable has an extremely alluring method, that was to create paradise.”

Paradise...

This was also the reason for Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s title. Nobody knew how a paradise was created, but Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable left behind many paradises in the five regions and two heavens.

A paradise’s most distinct trait was the lack of calamities and tribulations!

“This dragon whale grotto-heaven was transformed by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable into a paradise.”

From the old village head’s soul, Fang Yuan obtained a lot of information that confirmed this. If there were calamities and tribulations, even if the old man could not feel it, there would be information in the village’s historical records, but there was none.

Since he could not go to the other islands, he changed directions and entered the water.

As he got deeper, the water pressure intensified.

This water pressure was a problem for Gu Masters trying to excavate oil, but for rank eight Gu Immortals like Fang Yuan, it was an insignificant problem.

For Gu Masters, the sea was very deep, but for Gu Immortals, the water surrounding the island was still very shallow.

Fang Yuan soon found that a large area of darkness appeared in his vision. It was like a huge seaweed that endlessly extended in all directions.

This Earth Trench under the water was very spectacular, the ordinary island was at the fringe of this Earth Trench. From the information he got from the old village head, the surrounding islands were also connected to the extensions of this Earth Trench.

Earth Trenches produced black oil.

Regardless of ordinary Earth Trenches or deep sea Earth Trenches.

Black oil was an immortal material belonging to food path. The quality was very high and production was abundant, it was easy to excavate.

This was a trait of food path, having high production with cheap costs, it was very economically friendly.

Black oil was extremely helpful to immortal zombies. Spreading the black oil in the dead aperture could slow the speed of the disintegration of the blessed land. In the outside world, or to other Gu Immortals, it was a very useful Gu refinement material that was widely used, it had a huge market.

One of the main business of Zombie Alliance was black oil. This was similar to Fang Yuan’s guts Gu, but the scale of black oil sold was much larger than guts Gu.

“There are about three million kilograms of black oil here. I can take them all within half a day if I go all out. But I cannot leave the island after a certain distance, even though black oil can move, it is much slower than water. After I take all the black oil here, it will take too long and be too inefficient to wait for the black oil from the other parts of the Earth Trench to flow here.”

Black oil was very easy to collect, but that was for Gu Immortals.

For mortal Gu Masters, it was quite difficult.

There was a special category of oil collecting Gu Masters. They specialized in exploring Earth Trenches to collect black oil, these people were professionals in this business. Oil collecting Gu Masters had their own set of Gu worms specially used to collect a certain amount of black oil.

Even though their battle strength was not high, because they were excavating immortal materials, they had abundant wealth and status, they were quite popular.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, Fang Yuan had once been an oil collecting Gu Master in Eastern Sea. That was his fortuitous encounter, he almost became the son-in-law of a certain oil collecting Gu Master, the collection method was also imparted to Fang Yuan by this old Gu Master.

People lived according to their environment, the Gu Masters on the small island survived mainly by collecting black oil. The old Gu Master that Fang Yuan soul searched was the most impressive oil collecting Gu Master in the village. Even though he was old, he would still enter the water and collect them each year.

Seeing the black oil here, Fang Yuan could not help but recall some of his previous life’s memories.

He was once an oil collecting Gu Master, he entered the sea to collect black oil, but it was a dangerous job, he was treading on thin ice. The first problem was oxygen, secondly, he could not go too deeply, the pressure would kill him. And the sea was not peaceful, there were many fierce beasts underneath. And finally, he needed specialized methods for the black oil.

How could mortals not use special methods when collecting immortal materials?

Especially if they did not collect the black oil well, it would pollute their bodies, the Gu Master would be covered in black oil grease, it was hard to remove and carried a disgusting stench, as time passes, it would even corrode the Gu Master’s own mortal body.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan had been polluted by this black oil. The old Gu Master who taught him the method purposely did that so that he would be forced to marry his daughter.

He was furious back then and felt like he was plotted against, but thinking about it now, Fang Yuan smiled bitterly.

The teacher had no son or inheritor, he had to do that or he could not impart his family’s unique methods to an outsider Gu Master. He had no choice but to use that tactic, what was wrong with playing safe? It was normal!

But back then, Fang Yuan was placed into despair, he had no alternatives.

Without specialized methods, he could not clear the black oil pollution. Even if Fang Yuan knew the method, he needed the Gu worms to do that. These reasons made him relent.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan felt a sense of his mindset back then.

He was very anxious and in pain, he was greatly attracted to the profits of excavating black oil, he secretly swore that he would change the situation! For example, there were water path Gu worms that could allow him to dive agilely, he could also design some Gu worms to resist the water pressure.

Currently, he could totally refine a bunch of Immortal Gu and create a huge quantity of useful mortal Gu instantly.

But he no longer needed them.

Life often threw you into situations like this. At present, you lack some very crucial things, but when you obtain them, you no longer need them.

That was why getting things when you needed them the most was called a fortuitous encounter, you had to treasure them if it happened.

“Back then when I extracted black oil, I almost died.”

“But fortune and calamity come together, I actually met Mo Er when about to die... from that perspective, the old Gu Master did something good after all.”

Fang Yuan showed a complex and deep smile on his face.

The white figure appeared in his mind once again.

Her expression was both vague and clear at the same time.

Her name was Xie Han Mo.

Xie Han Mo.

Fang Yuan had never forgotten this name, because she was the person he loved the most in his previous life.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1654: Water Shell Gu

Several days later.

Waves ebbed and flowed, crashing into the rocks and creating huge splashes.

Putting it crudely, the unnamed island was poor and had treacherous waters. Firstly, the island was small, and secondly, there was Earth Trench black oil here. Because of the black oil, the resources of other cultivation paths were suppressed, nothing else could exist here.

The greed of humanity was limitless, the concept of human path revolved around reducing deficits and increasing surpluses, the strong grew stronger. Meanwhile, heaven path took away surpluses while replenishing deficits, it emphasized on the balance of all myriad beings.

2Precisely due to an immortal material like black oil, the unnamed island had almost no other resources, the size of the fishing village had been like this for centuries, development was slow and they could only nurture single digits of Gu Masters, they were truly few.

Right now, at the center of the fishing village, in the village head’s house, Fang Yuan was currently fighting against a rank two Gu Master.

Boom boom boom.

After some clashes, water splashed around, the middle aged rank two Gu Master was drenched, he sprawled on the ground weakly.

Fang Yuan was using Chu Ying’s appearance as he stood on the spot, his arms were behind his back as he smiled lightly.

From the start to the finish of this battle, Fang Yuan was standing on the spot, having not moved at all.

The rank two Gu Master stood up weakly as he cupped his fists: “Master Chu has incredible methods, I am in great awe, thank you for the guidance Master Chu.”

He was truly in awe.

A few days ago, Fang Yuan disguised as a rank four Gu Master and entered the fishing village openly, he started to interact with the Gu Masters here.

Back then, his appearance caused a commotion. There were usually no outsiders in the fishing village, especially not a solitary visitor.

Fang Yuan’s identity was a traveling Gu Master, he managed to make his presence in the fishing village. Undeniably, his appearance completely disrupted the original peaceful life of the villagers.

Even a mortal without any cultivation would know that a strong Gu Master had entered their village.

Traveling Gu Master.

Such Gu Masters traveled the world, they had no home, they were usually alone but some moved in groups of two or three as well.

Traveling Gu Masters normally had great strength and few weaknesses.

It was common sense.

The world outside was not safe, traveling Gu Masters were able to travel around, they naturally had sufficient strength to do so. This was not just in terms of battle strength, they also needed to take care of their accommodation, food, movement, and feeding of Gu worms.

Without enough strength, one could not become a traveling Gu Master.

Thus, when Fang Yuan appeared, the Gu Masters in the fishing village became very alert.

Fang Yuan’s rank four Gu Master aura was extremely threatening to them.

The first time they met, Fang Yuan claimed that he needed to feed Gu, he asked for Gu materials from the old village head.

The old village head was the sole rank three Gu Master in the fishing village, Fang Yuan had searched his soul. He did not dare to reject the request, he had to agree.

After the spar, the middle aged rank two Gu Master approached the village head.

Shutting the door and readying their Gu worms in defense, the two started to talk.

The middle aged Gu Master did not speak, he had a bitter and worrying expression. The old village head smiled: “Now you know how strong Master Chu is?”

The middle aged Gu Master nodded: “Master Chu has unfathomable strength, even if we join forces, we will not be his match!”

4Saying so, he looked at the village head with an indignant expression: “But why should we give him Gu materials? His Gu worms are hungry, that is his problem, why must we solve it for him? Most importantly, our inventory was stocked up over the last few generations, he used up almost everything in just a few days!”

The old village head was silent for a moment before saying with deep meaning: “Traveling Gu Masters have a certain rule, they usually exchange for Gu materials to feed their Gu worms when they arrive in a new place. These Gu Masters are very strong so local forces would usually not reject them, they would cooperate and improve their relationship. We should treat it as a chance encounter.”

The middle aged Gu Master frowned, the anger in his voice became more prominent: “Lord village head, you said it yourself, they exchange! But this Master Chu directly took the materials, he did not exchange anything for them.”

“So what do you think? What can we do?” The old village head looked at the middle aged Gu Master.

The middle aged Gu Master was stumped, after a few breaths, his anger dissipated, his back became bent as his face was full of bitterness, pain, and helplessness.

“It is about time.” At the other end, Fang Yuan smiled.

The conversation between the middle aged Gu Master and the old village head was under Fang Yuan’s supervision. In fact, he knew everything inside this fishing village.

A few days ago, he went into the deep sea and wanted to take some black oil. But afterwards, he had a flash of inspiration, he changed his idea.

Fang Yuan realized: “Collecting black oil is nothing, the true key is Paradise Earth’s true inheritance! I should test this situation.”

Thus, Fang Yuan changed his method, he disguised as a traveling Gu Master to enter the village.

The next day.

The old village head saw that Fang Yuan had visited him, he was filled with bitterness but still showed a smile on the surface, he bent his back as he said: “Master Chu, do you need more Gu materials?”

Fang Yuan smiled: “Old sir, thank you for the hospitality, I am about to leave.”

The old village head was dazed, great joy surged in his heart but he controlled himself, he showed a shocked and sad expression, urging: “Master Chu, you are leaving so soon? Why don’t you stay for a few more days, we would like to offer you more of our hospitality.”

Fang Yuan shook his head, joking: “Old sir, I have imposed on you for the last few days, if I stay any longer, they might not spar with me anymore, but risk their lives to fight me next.”

The old village head was shocked as he smiled bitterly: “So you know about it.”

Fang Yuan spoke calmly: “I have traveled for many years, how can I not understand your mindset? I do not like to bully the weak, so before I leave, I will leave some things to you.”

The old village head was joyful but also a little suspicious, he waved his hand: “Master Chu, no need for that, you are too kind.”

“Call all of the Gu Masters here.” Fang Yuan stopped smiling, he spoke plainly.

A moment later, all of the Gu Masters in the village had arrived in the old village head’s house, except the middle aged Gu Master who sparred the previous day.

“Unfortunately, he went to the deep sea to collect black oil, he is going to miss out today.” The old village head explained.

Fang Yuan looked at him deeply as he smiled: “Village head, you’ve worried too much. Everyone, look at this Gu worm.”

Fang Yuan opened his hand, showing a rank two mortal Gu.

This Gu worm was white and blue, it resembled a seashell and was large as a jade bracelet.

Fang Yuan continued: “This is water shell Gu, it can form a layer of water as a shell on the Gu Master’s body to resist the sea’s water pressure. Using just this Gu worm, you can go six li deep into the sea.”

The Gu Masters in the house went into a commotion.

“Rank two Gu worm that can go six li down into the sea?”

“Water shell Gu, why have I never heard of it?”

Fang Yuan smiled: “Try it.”

After trying it for a while, the Gu Masters were overjoyed, they found that this Gu worm had another advantage, it used very little primeval essence.

“This is a really rare and precious rank two Gu!” Someone said with a trembling voice.

“It is a pity there is only one...”

This person immediately got fierce stares from the village head.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Don’t worry, everyone will get it.” Saying so, he took out more water shell Gu, everyone had their own one.

Almost ten water shell Gu were handed out, only one remained in Fang Yuan’s hands. He passed it to the old village head: “Give this to him.”

The old village head was very moved, he apologized in a choked up voice: “I was wrong, Master Chu is truly magnanimous!”

Fang Yuan gathered the Gu Masters in the village, the old village head was afraid that Fang Yuan was trying to wipe them out, what should he do?

That was not impossible at all.

People were hard to understand, especially when this was a stranger.

Thus, the old village head placed the middle aged Gu Master, his future successor, in a secret location, he was afraid of Fang Yuan’s attack!

Fang Yuan’s act of giving the water shell Gu made the old village head extremely happy and also ashamed.

But Fang Yuan had just started.

“This is water shell Gu’s recipe, I will give it to you.” Fang Yuan gave out ten Gu recipes to the Gu Masters present.

They were all stunned!

Giving Gu worms and giving recipes were two different concepts entirely!

“Master Chu, how can we take it?” The old village head received the recipe with trembling hands.

“No worries, take a look at the content.” Fang Yuan waved his hand.

Everyone took a look as someone shouted: “Oh heavens, the core Gu material of this water shell Gu is the spiral seashell on the shore of our island’s beach?”

“The Gu materials of this recipe can all be found on our island!!” Immediately after, someone shouted.

Fang Yuan nodded: “I have some insight in Gu refinement, these last days, after sparring with several Gu Masters, I understood your lifestyle and cultivation method, while inspecting this island, I tried to look for useful materials. I created this Gu recipe for your village, you must accept it.”

As he said that, Fang Yuan saw that the old village head had knelt down on the ground in an instant.

The old village head kowtowed as he said: “I was too blind to see Mount Tai, I did not know that Master Chu was such a genius in Gu refinement! I am too ashamed, I actually misunderstood Master Chu’s kindness...”

Before the old village head finished, Fang Yuan helped him to stand up as he smiled and said: “Old sir, don’t say that. I am someone who believes that a droplet received in need will be repaid with a whole spring. The Gu materials I got from you were very helpful for my problem. Our encounter is a type of fortune, we need to treasure it.”

2“But I have just created this water shell Gu, I am not sure of its exact value in reality. Why don’t you select a few people to enter the sea with me? We can collect some black oil and test out its actual effect.”

“We will do as you say!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1655: Collecting Black Oil

Vague water ripples were moving before the eyes, in extreme tranquility, a group of Gu Masters dived into the sea.

The light above them became dimmer, the surrounding seawater was emitting greater pressure on them.

Someone started to use water shell Gu.

The water shell Gu that Fang Yuan invented was simply amazing!

Almost the instant it was activated, the fishing village’s Gu Masters felt their pressure reducing, their bodies felt relaxed, as if they had discarded a ton of dead weight.

The Gu Masters all showed joyful expressions, even though they had already tested water shell Gu in their village earlier.

But at this time, someone suddenly made an alert signal.

A large number of weaving sea spiders were approaching them.

These sea spiders moved very quickly underwater, they would split up when they encountered prey, shooting out their spider webs that would entangle the prey before they attacked.

Seeing this group of sea spiders, the fishing village’s Gu Masters turned pale, even the rank three village head was full of fear, he could not calm down.

The sea spider group was huge, and they were most skilled at fighting with numbers, to defeat a stronger enemy with collective effort. Many sea creatures would often die to them due to a battle of attrition.

Even rank three Gu Masters were not their match in a drawn out fight.

The deep sea had too much danger. On the surface, the sea was calm, but under the sea, undercurrents surged, dangers lurked everywhere.

“No need to worry.” Fang Yuan transmitted before waving his hand at the crucial moment.

At the next moment, the Gu Masters of the fishing village were so shocked their eyes almost popped out!

A huge whirlpool formed instantly, it crashed into the sea spiders, it was like a tornado that swept away all of the sea spiders in it.

“Quickly leave, I cannot sustain it for long.” Fang Yuan said purposely.

The fishing village’s Gu Masters realized at once and quickly dived deeper.

After they got to a safe distance, the Gu Masters turned back to look, the whirlpool had started to dissipate. The sea spiders were completely disoriented, they had low intelligence and moved according to instinct, seeing that the prey vanished, they gathered again and moved away.

The Gu Masters relaxed at long last, their gazes towards Fang Yuan was filled with admiration and reverence.

The Gu Masters who fought against Fang Yuan earlier finally saw how powerful this Master Chu was! And most importantly, his method was very wise.

If they fought in the sea, the blood would attract more problems.

Trapping but not killing, that was the work of an expert.

The group continued to move with Fang Yuan as their guardian, they met with no danger.

Sea spiders were just one of the lurking dangers, oil collecting Gu Masters faced hundreds of types of aquatic beasts, sometimes, they would even get swept into special currents, helplessly moving along with them.

In the following journey, some problems still occurred, but they were not disasters like the sea spiders.

Diving and stopping continuously, after some hard work, they finally reached the Earth Trench.

They did not need to dive into the Earth Trench, because there was a lot of black oil here already. There had been no Gu Immortals who came to excavate them.

The Earth Trench was filled with black oil, at the same time, some gushes of black oil leaked outside. These black oil streams were like octopuses with long tentacles, they also seemed like seaweed, messy and scattered.

The fishing village’s Gu Masters quickly used their Gu worms to get close to the leaking black oil.

They started to collect the oil, moving around like worker bees.

Fang Yuan did not act, he watched from afar.

These Gu worms specially used to collect black oil were the core and vital Gu of these Gu Masters, Fang Yuan did not ask them about this in their previous interactions because it was taboo, but with his ability, he could understand everything with just a single look.

His refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level was not a joke!

“The number one resource around this unnamed island is black oil. When I use this black oil as material to refine Gu worms for them, their efficiency will increase.”

While he was thinking of this, suddenly, a huge group of seashell sharks approached them.

These sharks opened their bloodthirsty mouths, full of shells that were used as sharp teeth.

The seashell sharks were very special.

They began life without teeth, instead, when they grew up, they would choose seashells in the sea and put them in their mouths. As time passed, these seashells would take root and grow, the more years that pass, the whiter and tougher they would become.

The seashell sharks would use the shells as teeth to tear prey that were stronger than seashell sharks apart.

This special relationship made infant seashell sharks very weak, but when they reach adulthood, they would be overlords of the sharks.

This group of sharks were attacking, be it individual or group strength, they far surpassed the sea spiders. But the fishing village Gu Masters were not afraid.

They moved around the black oil terrain with ease and agility. From time to time, they would spray the black oil that they collected as barriers to shield themselves.

Seashell sharks were huge and could not move easily in this black oil area, if the oil stuck to them, they would become slower and even struggle to move as the oil got thicker.

The fishing village Gu Masters used the territory to quickly feed these seashell sharks to the black oil as food.

These seashell sharks struggled until they had no strength left, they were slowly devoured by the black oil.

Normally speaking, the black oil would take a long time to completely corrode these seashell sharks, all of their flesh, bone and blood would turn into new black oil.

Black oil was an immortal material that contained food path dao marks, it was not safe, the Earth Trench filled with black oil was a dangerous area.

Fang Yuan saw this as he sighed in his heart.

He remembered that in the five hundred years of his previous life, he had once seen how the black oil devoured its prey for the first time. From that day on, he had nightmares for several nights, of the black oil sticking onto him and slowly devouring him without any hope of salvation.

Normally speaking, oil collecting Gu Masters would work in groups, they were afraid that the black oil would stick to them and kill them in the process of collection.

But the oil collecting Gu Masters in the fishing village would not form groups, it was too easy for disputes to arise, and encountering dangerous situations might cause everyone to perish.

Right now, everyone grouped together, but it was a special situation.

“I advise that you try to drag out the seashell sharks that are trapped, these are all usable Gu materials.” Fang Yuan transmitted.

“Master Chu, these seashell sharks are polluted by the black oil.” The old village head hesitated.

“Don’t worry, I have a way to remove the black oil. Trust me, these seashell sharks are very useful for you.” Fang Yuan smiled.

He had designed a Gu recipe that used these seashell sharks as the main material.

Without water shell Gu, these Gu Masters would not believe him, but after Fang Yuan displayed such strength, the old village head stopped hesitating, he ordered: “You all heard him, hurry up and do it. But be careful, don’t let the black oil stick to you, it is too troublesome otherwise.”

Not just troublesome, the price would be huge!

Black oil was an immortal material, once it got stuck, the food path dao marks would be carved onto the Gu Master’s body. Just the problem of conflicting dao marks would be fatal, and because they had mortal bodies, they could not endure the corrosion of the black oil.

1“Don’t worry, I can remove the black oil on you even if it sticks to you.” Fang Yuan spoke.

His words made the Gu Masters overjoyed, but even with his assurance, the Gu Masters still acted carefully, they were afraid of touching this beloved and accursed black oil.

The seashell sharks were all dragged out.

Most were not dead, they still had some vitality.

Falling into the black oil would not cause suffocation immediately.

At this time, a small surprise occurred.

“Look at what I found? A trapped mermaid.” A Gu Master dragged out a mermaid corpse.

Her body was covered in black oil, her appearance could not be seen, but from her build, it seemed to be a girl.

“She has some life force left...” The Gu Master who saved the mermaid said with surprise.

“Let me.” Fang Yuan acted.

The Gu Masters were very shocked, because they saw that the black oil moved like an obedient child, getting away from the mermaid and gathering in front of Fang Yuan as a big black ball.

“Master Chu is truly unfathomable!”

“Such methods, how much black oil can he get each time?”

Gu Masters were in admiration and envy, their respect towards Fang Yuan increased again.

“Don’t worry, with me around, you will all be safe.” Fang Yuan’s action was just to reassure these people, but at the next moment, the smile on his face froze.

His sight was stuck on the mermaid’s face, he went into a daze.

“Mo Er?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1656: Fang Yuan Was Saved

At this depth, the sea was entirely pitch black.

But Fang Yuan’s vision was dark green.

“Alright, this new Gu that I exchanged for is quite useful, with it, I can barely see in the deep sea.” Fang Yuan was quite happy.

The deep sea was complex, one could not shine light here carelessly, or predators might be lured to oneself unknowingly.

In this dark green area, there were some deep black patches.

They were black oil of course.

The black oil tangled and weaved together like huge pythons. They were almost still, but the visual impact was huge.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, the gills on his face moved as they took in oxygen from seawater, allowing him to breathe underwater.

Calming down, he carefully approached the black oil. He stretched out his arms and stopped when he was several meters away from the black oil.

Next, he activated his Gu worm. A bright blue light slowly gathered in his palms, the two blue lights formed into beams of light that shined into the black oil. Droplets and lumps of black oil flowed along the blue light beams and slowly gathered into Fang Yuan’s palms.

Fang Yuan’s palms were like two bottomless holes sucking in black oil.

Time passed, but Fang Yuan continued to keep his alertness up.

He not only maintained his investigative methods on the surroundings, he also paid attention to the primeval essence storage in his aperture.

Because he used multiple Gu worms at once, Fang Yuan’s primeval essence expenditure was not low. After a while, he reached a critical level.

“It is time to stop and return to the sea surface. Sigh, my aptitude is too low, if I had A grade aptitude, I would be able to last much longer!”

Fang Yuan sighed in his heart, at the same time, he stopped using his Gu worms, preparing to leave.

But in the process of leaving, an accident happened.

Suddenly, a huge force emerged in the peaceful sea, sending Fang Yuan flying.

“Oh no, an impact current!”

Fang Yuan’s heart shook, he wanted to use Gu worms to escape.

These impact currents seemed like normal seawater, but when lifeforms entered them, they would emit a strong pushing force.

Bam bam bam!

In the process of escaping, Fang Yuan met with several impact currents, his bones were fractured and blood oozed out of his nose and mouth.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, his eyes were wide opened and bloodshot, he tried to find a way to escape this predicament.

But he was not in the best condition, he had used a lot of his primeval essence, at the same time, the scale of these impact currents was huge and Fang Yuan lacked the method to deal with them, he could only dodge using his luck.

Soon, Fang Yuan expended all his primeval essence, an impact current from behind pushed him into the black oil.

“Am I going to die here?” Fang Yuan could not escape, he watched as the black oil stuck to him, before it spread and devoured him.

His primeval essence was used up, but thankfully, the gills were made from transformation path Gu worms, they could last for some time.

But this was truly his last few moments.

“This is the final moment of my life... sigh, I wanted to accumulate more black oil to gather wealth and exchange for a way to get rid of my black oil corrosion from the market... but now, I do not need to worry about this problem anymore... hehehe...”

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly, he fell into deep despair.

Eventually, the black oil completely covered him, his body was enveloped by the black oil.

“Am I going to die...”

Death was approaching, but Fang Yuan was completely peaceful in his heart.

Or rather, more accurately, he was indifferent.

Towards his death, he was indifferent about it.

“Alright... so be it if I die.”

“After coming to this world, after so many years, I have been wandering from place to place, I am just too tired, too tired.”

“Who can truly avoid death?”

“I might as well rest now.”

Fang Yuan shut his eyes.

After some unknown period of time, he slowly regained his senses.

In a daze, he heard someone who was around him speak.

“Saintess, why did you save this mortal Gu Master? All these years, haven’t the humans bullied us enough!”

“That’s right, Saintess, this is clearly an oil collecting Gu Master, this sea area belongs to us mermen. He is a thief that steals our black oil, he is too shameless. We can let him die on his own.”

At this time, a kind and refreshing voice resounded: “Since we met, how can we leave him in the lurch? I know he is a human and not a merman, but he is still a living being. Humans bully us, but a lone Gu Master like him is innocent. He is here to steal black oil, but how much can a person take? He took such risks to steal black oil, it shows how ostracized and troubled he is, why should we be stingy in helping him?”

“Saintess, you are just too kind, is that fine?”

“He is not anyone important, he is too lowly, there is no use in saving him!”

Fang Yuan tried his best and slowly managed to open his eyes.

His field of vision was still blur, he saw three vague figures.

White, blue, and red.

Human body, fish tails... from the blur figures, he could tell that they were three mermen.

Merman was a type of variant human, they could breathe underwater naturally and live. Mermen were attached to rivers and water bodies, they were most skilled at water path. Be they male or female, they were very beautiful and good looking.

“Thank... thank you... I will repay this kindness. May I know your names?” Fang Yuan spoke with difficulty, his hoarse voice became smoother as he talked.

But this was his current limit, his body was too weak, he could not muster any strength, these words were all that he could say.

“Hmph, we do not need your repayment. If not for Saintess, we would not save a dirty human like you.”

“You do not need to know our names, but Saintess is named Xie Han Mo, you should remember it, etch this into your memory forever! You were incredibly lucky to have been saved by Saintess.”

“Alright, you two, enough.” The white figure sighed in a gentle voice, she said to Fang Yuan: “Even though you feel weak now, I have already healed your injuries. You were corroded by black oil earlier, I cannot heal this injury in one try, but I have left you a Gu worm, you can heal yourself with it.”

Saying so, the white figure brought her two attendants and left, getting out of Fang Yuan’s vision.

Fang Yuan wanted to speak, but he had exhausted his strength, he could not speak.

The extreme fatigue and weakness had his vision turn black again.

This was what happened in the five hundred years of his previous life.

Fang Yuan’s gaze became clear, he returned from his recollection.

At this time, he had already led the fishing village’s Gu Masters back to the island.

This was one of the old village head’s houses, it was not dark.

At dusk, the lingering rays of light entered the room through the windows.

Outside the window, seagulls were flying around the beach, chirping loudly.

The mermaid who was saved was a young woman, she was still unconscious now. After Fang Yuan saved her, her pale face had started to become rosy again. She had thick eyelashes that casted shadows on her face.

Looking at this mermaid girl, Fang Yuan was absent-minded for a bit.

Looking at her carefully, she did not look like Xie Han Mo from Fang Yuan’s memories, their appearances were very different, even though both of them were equally beautiful.

“They are only similar in disposition, and...”

And the biggest difference between this mermaid girl and Xie Han Mo was the color of their scales.

Mermen had human bodies and fish tails, their scales were of varying colors. Blue and red were common, while white and black were very rare.

White scaled mermen and mermaids could become saints and saintesses, while black scaled were treated as cursed and inauspicious, they would be killed the moment they were born, their parents were often the killers.

Xie Han Mo was a white scaled mermaid, she was the saintess of the mermen tribe. And this mermaid girl had blue scales, it was very common among mermen.

“Master Chu.” At this time, the old village head and the middle aged Gu Master arrived at the door.

Fang Yuan nodded lightly as they came in.

After collecting black oil from the deep sea, be it the old village head or the middle aged Gu Master, they looked at Fang Yuan with utmost respect.

On one hand, Fang Yuan had unfathomable strength, and on the other hand, Fang Yuan gave them immense benefits. Water shell Gu was so useful, they had all experienced it on this trip.

And most importantly, Fang Yuan promised after returning that he was going to create a Gu worm for them, this Gu worm would be very useful to them.

“Master Chu, food has been prepared. Should you...” The old village head smiled.

“I will take care of her, don’t worry master. When she wakes up, I will bring her to you.” The middle aged Gu Master added.

Fang Yuan looked at the mermaid girl as he shook his head, he walked out of the house: “No need to see me, when she wakes up, get her to leave. Even though this is the territory of humans, and her action is akin to stealing, in my opinion, she has a hard life, give me some face and let her off.”

“Master Chu, don’t worry, we will not find trouble with her!”

“Yeah, all these years, there had been many mermen who came here to steal black oil. We have always tried to turn a blind eye to it, after all, we cannot finish extracting all the black oil under the sea, it is fine to share some.” The old village head chuckled.

Fang Yuan nodded.

He had already gotten whatever information he needed from the old village head and this young mermaid girl through soul search.

There was something interesting.

In the outside world, merfolk had lower status than humans, both sides had huge conflicts and often fought. But here, merfolk and humans had better relationships, they interacted a lot and were at peace, there were even instances of marriage between them.

“It seems that this grotto-heaven is the paradise of humans and also merfolk.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1657: Clues of Regret Gu

Inside the small house, there was a huge turbulence.

Dark red lights moved like waves, surging around Fang Yuan.

He was refining Gu.

His ten fingers were outstretched, his two hands were holding onto an eerie ball.

This ball was basin-sized, it was flowing on the surface, this was the essence of the black oil that Fang Yuan extracted.

The Gu refinement was already at the late stage, now was a crucial moment.

Fang Yuan willed as a crack opened in his immortal aperture's entrance, he took out a piece of shiny golden scale.

The scale flew into the black oil ball, causing a small explosion. In Fang Yuan's vision, he saw that the instant the black oil ball exploded, it expanded rapidly. At the same time, the golden light shined in the black oil ball, before condensing into a small dot.

Fang Yuan's ten fingers vibrated, the black oil ball floated into the air and started to revolve around itself.

During the process, the golden light continued to flicker.

A stench started to spread, these were the impurities that Fang Yuan expelled.

The stench was about to permeate out of the house when the immortal formation's light flickered, it was like a pot lid that was blue in color, it trapped the stench and prevented it from going out.

This stench was an immortal material containing food path, it was more terrifying than the black oil. If mortals came into contact with it, they would die.

Fang Yuan's Gu refinement was already immortal level, because it involved two immortal materials. One was the black oil, the other was the golden scale, it was pulled from a desolate beast golden dragonfish.

After a series of deductions, Fang Yuan found that the golden dragonfish and the black oil had a high level of compatibility.

One scale was not enough of course, Fang Yuan continued to toss in more golden scales.

The black oil ball slowly turned into a black-gold color, a lot of incomplete Gu worm silhouettes were seen in the ball.

Fang Yuan was trying to refine gather oil Gu.

This was specially made for the Gu Masters of the fishing village. Fang Yuan created the recipe himself, he also used the information in Shadow Sect’s true inheritance and Lang Ya’s true inheritance as reference.

Fang Yuan was truly trying to help the fishing village’s oil collecting Gu Masters.

The reason?

It was because of the Merit Obelisk’s mission.

What was merit?

Fang Yuan had been thinking about this problem from the start.

Were the missions on the Merit Obelisk so simple? The more Fang Yuan thought about it, the more he could feel a certain objective that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was trying to achieve.

Thus, helping these fishing village Gu Masters was meant to complete the mission and also to ascertain the conjecture that Fang Yuan had in his mind.

Fang Yuan did bad things without feeling any remorse. Similarly, he did good things without any changes in emotion.

To be honest, he had already become indifferent towards good deeds and bad deeds, he did not care about kindness or evil. In this world, there were only two things, those that benefited him and those that harmed him.

Right now, in the face of Paradise Earth’s true inheritance, Fang Yuan would be willing to commit good deeds to ensure that he gains the maximum benefits.

Xia Lin slowly opened her eyes, she was awake.

“I... am not dead.” After being in a daze momentarily, she reacted and her eyes started to shine.

“You are quite a lucky mermaid, if we found you any later, you would be dead. You would be corroded into black oil.” The middle aged Gu Master saw that the mermaid woke up and walked into the room.

“My name is Xia Lin, did you save me?” The mermaid girl struggled to get up.

“Not me, it was Master Chu. You should really thank him, he was the one who healed your injuries.” The middle aged Gu Master smiled as he spoke.

The mermaid girl inspected herself upon the reminder, she was extremely happy after that.

“Unbelievable!”

“I was corroded by the black oil and was heavily injured, even the greatest healing Gu Master in my tribe would not be able to save me, but I am completely healed now.”

The middle aged Gu Master smiled arrogantly: “Of course! It was Master Chu who saved you after all!”

Saying so, the middle aged Gu Master thought of the scene when Fang Yuan saved her, he made all of the Gu Masters dazzled, most of them could not regain their senses after a long while.

“Master Chu saved my life and healed my injuries, how can I not repay this kindness?” The mermaid girl pursed her lips, she showed a firm expression: “Sir, please bring me to him, no matter the price, I must repay him.”

“Alright, follow me.” The middle aged Gu Master considered it for a moment before walking out of the room.

The mermaid girl Xia Lin forced herself up, she used a Gu worm to create a wave that carried her as she moved behind the middle aged Gu Master.

The two went into an estate, they got past the garden and arrived in front of Fang Yuan’s house.

Rumble!

Suddenly, a black-golden light burst up into the sky from the small house.

“This is?”

“What happened?”

This phenomenon could be seen from all over the surroundings, many of the Gu Masters in the village were alerted as they came to observe.

“After dinner, Master Chu said that he was going to refine Gu. He locked himself in the room and instructed that no one was to disturb him.” The old village head watched as he said: “This means that Master Chu’s Gu refinement has already made progress.”

“Master Chu’s Gu refinement attainment is simple too profound, look at this scene, his Gu refinement must not be simple at all.”

“Thanks for stating the obvious, Master Chu is extraordinary, how can he be simple?”

Xia Lin listened carefully.

These Gu Masters’ conversation made her think of a supreme Gu Master expert. He must have white hair, a kind temperament, a cool and composed nature, great strength, and immense kindness and magnanimity.

As the dark gold light faded, a fragrance spread around the area, a huge hole was created at the roof of the small house.

A moment later, the door of the small house was pushed open, Fang Yuan walked out.

The fishing village’s Gu Masters were all waiting in anticipation, the moment Fang Yuan came out, they bowed and greeted: “Master Chu!”

The mermaid girl Xia Lin looked at Fang Yuan curiously, it turned out that Master Chu was so young, she did not expect this.

She quickly knelt down: “Master Chu, you saved my life. I need to repay this kindness even if I have to break all the bones in my body!”

2“No need, it was just a simple matter.” Fang Yuan gave the mermaid girl a glance, she was not Xie Han Mo after all.

The deceased had already passed on, she was gone with the wind.

2Days later, Fang Yuan returned to the Merit Obelisk.

“Oh? A new mission appeared!” Fang Yuan’s gaze focused on the changes of the obelisk.

There were ten missions originally, now there were still ten, but most of the content had changed.

On another side of the Merit Obelisk, the rankings had changed too.

“I am third...” Fang Yuan soon found his ranking.

He was a little joyful, his guesses were already affirmed.

Looking at this from Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s perspective, merit was helping others, it was the action of good deeds. Fang Yuan saw his ranking and compared it with the others, he was sure: If he did this alone and collected the black oil personally, he would not place third.

Of course, helping these Gu Masters without putting in work was not possible too.

Thus, after refining gather oil Gu, he distributed them and went into the sea, collecting most of the black oil, leaving only a small amount for the fishing village’s Gu Masters.

At the base of the Merit Obelisk, there were some scattered information path mortal Gu.

Fang Yuan picked them up and looked into them.

As he expected, these were left behind by Miao Ming Shen and others, they had recorded their findings.

Some found that humans and mermen lived together in peace with equal statuses.

Some chose difficult missions, even though they killed the desolate beast, many humans were implicated and lost their lives. When they returned, they found that they were at the bottom of the ranking.

COMMENT

Some understood that the meaning of the merit board was to do good deeds and help people, but they had only guessed it, the conjecture was not confirmed.

These Gu Immortals were chosen by Miao Ming Shen personally, they were not idiots.

Miao Ming Shen’s discovery made Fang Yuan’s eyes shine. He found that they were not the first group who came in here, there were Gu Immortals who entered before.

The most valuable information came from Feng Jiang.

He found that there was a forbidden area in this paradise, it was a sea area that people called Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea.

In legend, after Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable turned this grotto-heaven into a paradise, he suppressed a supreme demon in this sea area, he set up a super immortal formation to make him regret and repent.

Thus, this supreme demon’s cries of regret could be heard in the sea area all the time.

Fang Yuan saw this information, the name of a Gu worm appeared in his mind — regret Gu!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1658: Sea Market Gambling Den

Fang Yuan dropped an information path mortal Gu casually in front of rank eight Immortal Gu House Merit Obelisk.

Inside this Gu worm, Fang Yuan truthfully mentioned his experience of collecting black oil on the small island, as well as his experiment towards the merit board, if Gu Immortals arrived after him, they would see this intel as well.

There was no need to hide anything.

Firstly, they had their own guesses already, and secondly, it was easy to verify.

Fang Yuan might as well reveal this before they had experimented.

“Or rather... in plain words, this secret is not a secret, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable set up this true inheritance intentionally, he wants people to carry out acts of kindness.”

This was the style of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

At this point, Fang Yuan was already fully convinced that this was Paradise Earth’s true inheritance.

Gu Masters and Gu Immortals leave behind their respective inheritances, this was the greatest cultural trait of this world.

Every inheritance contained the person’s markings, their style, or their important unfulfilled wishes.

For example, the Flower Wine Monk’s inheritance was to take revenge on Gu Yue clan, even in death he wanted revenge. Thus, he left the video behind of the Gu Yue clan leader’s defeat, he dug the underground cave and lured Fang Yuan to destroy the Gu Yue clan’s spirit spring.

Or like Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, this was the luck path true inheritance left by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, the goal was to help the entire Huang Jin bloodline to maintain their rule of the region, it was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s act of helping his descendants.

And Hei Fan’s true inheritance, Hei Fan originally intended to pass everything to his granddaughter, but with twists of fate, his wishes were not fulfilled.

And Shadow Sect’s true inheritance, if Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had not failed and was not captured by Heavenly Court, this true inheritance would not exist. But against his wishes, he was captured and Fang Yuan remained as his lingering hope in this desperate situation, to increase his strength, Spectral Soul formed Shadow Sect's true inheritance.

Every inheritance was different. Paradise Earth's true inheritance was different from the rest, it was filled with serenity, kindness, warmth, and light.

"If one day, I fail and die, having no hope left at all, I will leave my inheritance behind as well." Fang Yuan thought, even though he was an otherworldly demon, he had lived, struggled, and fought in this world for so long, he had already assimilated into it.

3If he created a Fang Yuan true inheritance, he would encourage his inheritor to pursue eternal life as well.

3Time passed quickly, seventy to eighty days went by.

During this period, Fang Yuan did many missions, his name started to move up the rankings on the merit board.

Swish swish swish...

Ebb and flow, the moist sea breeze landed on his face, Fang Yuan had arrived at the sea market.

He took a mission, it was to punish an unscrupulous merchant in this sea market.

Sea markets were very popular in Eastern Sea, they varied in sizes. being small, middle, large, and super sea markets. If one classified them according to time, there would be temporary and permanent sea markets.

The sea market was the place where cultivation resources were gathered and exchanged, in this paradise, there were sea markets as well.

This was a permanent sea market. Even though it was not open all year round, most of the time during the year, it was open.

The core of the sea market was an island. This island would be submerged for a period each year, that was the time the sea market closed. When the island emerges, the sea market would open.

Outside the island, there were many Gu houses in the shape of boats, their decks would be linked together to form this peripheral sea market.

Standing on the deck, Fang Yuan was surrounded by people.

There were human Gu Masters and also mermen.

There were many mermen, almost half of the population, this was very rare in the five regions. After all, humans were the dominant race, the other variant humans were all suppressed and had no living space, they had to live while keeping a low profile.

"Come, come, take a look, this is a superb crystal coral."

"There are three Gu house River Boats left, quickly buy them before they are sold out!"

"Purchasing grand soil, I will buy as many as you can sell..."

Shouting, clamoring, and bargaining noises were everywhere, they entered Fang Yuan's ears as he felt a sense of liveliness around him.

Large numbers of Gu Masters were displaying goods on the deck and creating their stalls, very few mortals were in charge of the businesses.

Fang Yuan went past Gu house after Gu house, going towards the core island at the center of the sea market.

He had already investigated, the mission was to punish an unscrupulous merchant, and he was on the island.

Of course, the mission was just a secondary objective, his true goal was to obtain intel.

This sea market was the closest to Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea, because there was a large number of Gu Masters and forces here, Fang Yuan had a high chance of getting useful information about regret Gu here.

Even though Fang Yuan had arrived here for a long time, he did not manage to enter Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea even once.

Inside this paradise, Gu Immortals did not have much freedom of mobility.

Like the first mission, he could only move around the island, there was a limit to the distance he could go. Every mission had this same restriction.

To return to the Merit Obelisk, all the Gu Immortal had to do was to recite ‘return’ three times in their mind.

From this, Fang Yuan could feel Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s powerful methods. Even with Fang Yuan’s deep foundations and rank eight cultivation level, he could not unravel Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangements, even though he had not stopped researching about this Merit Obelisk and the paradise.

Other than that, Gu Immortals were also restricted in communication. Firstly, they could not connect to treasure yellow heaven or the outside world. Secondly, they could not talk to each other. Precisely so, they had to use the crude method of leaving information path mortal Gu in front of the Merit Obelisk.

“This should be the place.” A moment later, Fang Yuan stopped in his tracks.

He was at a gambling den, the door had three words written on it, Golden Jade House.

Golden Jade House was at the center of the island, it was a place of highest authority in this sea market. Ordinary Gu Masters could not enter, this place had strict security.

But how could mortal methods stop Fang Yuan?

“I should attempt the rock gambling too.” Fang Yuan smiled to himself.

1Punishing the unscrupulous merchant did not mean killing them, Fang Yuan was a merchant once, he had managed his own gambling den, he knew what the perfect way to make a gambling den merchant suffer was.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan stepped in.

Memories surfaced in his mind once again...

“Hahaha, who will gamble with me? Even the saintess is afraid, would you people dare?” A muscular merman shouted arrogantly.

Around him, there were many human Gu Masters and mermen. Most of the mermen were looking at him angrily, they could only grit their teeth.

“This Lu Da is too despicable, he dares to provoke Saintess openly in the sea market!”

“He does not have the guts, he is merely backed by Frost Tide tribe’s leader.”

“This cannot go on, it will sully Saintess’ reputation, what do we do?”

The blue scaled and red scaled guards looked at each other in worry.

“So what?” Xie Han Mo smiled: “Let him be arrogant, no matter how much reputation I lose, he cannot shake my foundation. Since he is doing this to provoke me now, it means they are already panicking. We do not need to bother with this, we can win if we continue with our original plan.”

Hearing this, the red scaled and blue scaled guards felt a sense of realization.

“Saintess is right, this Lu Da is just a dancing clown.”

“But I feel really bad for letting Saintess suffer such a humiliation, can’t any of our mermen stand up to face this Lu Da?”

Xie Han Mo smiled: “Lu Da is a rank four expert, he has reputation built over a decade in this sea market. I understand why no mermen are standing up for us, we need to understand their circumstances.”

1As she said that, a voice reverberated in the area: “I will gamble with you!”

Who was it?

Who dared to challenge Lu Da’s authority?

Everyone turned to look, a human Gu Master walked out of the crowd.

Xie Han Mo was stunned as the two guards said: “It’s the human Gu Master we saved!”

The merman Gu Master Lu Da was very surprised, he frowned as he looked at Fang Yuan, saying in a grim tone: “Human Gu Master, these are the affairs of mermen, you really want to interfere?”

“To speak the truth, your saintess saved my life before, I need to repay this debt.” Fang Yuan had a firm attitude, he spoke to Lu Da without fear.

“This lad...”

“We did not waste our effort in saving him.”

The two guards nodded.

Xie Han Mo sighed: “Let’s go out, he is an outsider, we cannot let him sacrifice himself for nothing.”

The two guards were surprised, they quickly stopped her: “Saintess, you analyzed the situation earlier, we cannot show up. Once we do, we will fall into their trap.”

In the den, Lu Da had a sinister expression as he laughed from anger: “Good! Human Gu Master, since you want to die, don’t blame me. I have already explained the rules of the gamble, let’s go, I will let you choose first, we will see who finds better Gu worms!”

“You can choose first.” Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered with mysterious light as he smiled calmly.

The first round was quick, Fang Yuan won.

The second round took a lot longer, but Fang Yuan still won.

“Human Gu Master, I underestimated you. Tell me your name, you are qualified to take up space in my memory.” Lu Da had a solemn expression, he looked at Fang Yuan in a different light.

“I am Gu Yue Fang Yuan, remember that. I owned gambling dens in the past.” Fang Yuan suddenly raised his voice: “The final round, go ahead.”

Lu Da chose a rock silently, next, he shattered all of the rocks in the den.

“You are breaking the rules!” Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

Lu Da laughed: “Rules? I said that both sides cannot attack each other, but that does not include these rocks. I can confirm that this rock contains a Gu worm, while you are empty-handed, no matter what Gu worm I have, you are bound to lose. Lad, you dared to interfere with just rank three cultivation level, and especially in the sea market that I have managed for a decade. Hehehe, you can suicide, I won’t have to dirty my hands.”

Fang Yuan raised his fists, ready to fight a battle to the death.

“Hold up.” Everyone moved aside to open up a pathway as Xie Han Mo walked into the den with a cold expression.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1659: Xia Lin’s Rock Gambling

Pushing aside his memories.

Fang Yuan walked into Golden Jade House.

This gambling den was quite high-end, there were tens of huge rocks in the hall, behind the hall were many rooms with an assortment of rock dissecting Gu worms for the customers to enjoy using. Of course, experienced rock dissecting Gu Masters were also ready on-site.

Whether these rocks contained Gu worms, Fang Yuan could easily find out.

He was a Gu Immortal, immortal investigative methods could find mortal Gu with ease. Similarly, even if the Gu worm inside was extremely weakened, he could heal them.

Even if they could not be healed, don’t forget that Fang Yuan was a refinement path quasi-supreme, he could obtain basically all the mortal Gu that were currently here with great ease.

Of course, there existed such things as immortal rocks as well, or rather, immortal materials. After Immortal Gu seal themselves and hibernate, the corresponding dao marks' immortal material would form on their surface. Most immortal investigative methods would be ineffective against them.

Fang Yuan was about to use his methods to teach this unscrupulous merchant in Golden Jade House a lesson when suddenly, he heard some commotion behind the hall.

“You are dishonest!” Mermaid Xia Lin shouted with anger and shock.

“I'm dishonest? Hehe, how so? This is clearly recorded in the information path Gu worm, even though you returned a sum, a large portion has not been repaid.” Standing before the mermaid was a merman, he was large like a bear, there was a scar on his face, giving him a sinister aura.

“You, you, you!” Xia Lin pointed at the merman with red eyes: “You guys are shameless, you changed the agreement details, our contract was ten percent interest, but you raised it to sixty percent!”

The scarred merman's face became solemn, he looked at Xia Lin with a vicious gaze: “Young lady, you cannot spread fake news like that! Are you trying to ruin our reputation, this is detrimental to our business, who would come to our shop after this? Can you bear the cost of our losses?”

“Screw you! Even if I die, I will expose this shop's evil deeds.”

The scarred merman changed his tone as he said eerily: “Die? You are too naive, sometimes, being alive is worse than dying.”

Light flashed in Fang Yuan's eyes, this was a familiar voice, he was reminded of the mermaid girl from a few months ago.

Why was she here?

Xia Lin's tears fell from her face.

Several months ago, her only family member, her grandfather, died.

Merman sea funerals were very expensive. In order to bury her grandfather, she had to borrow primeval stones. To repay the debt, she had to take a risk and collect black oil, almost dying in the Earth Trench as a result. Fortunately, she met Fang Yuan and was saved miraculously.

Xia Lin also obtained gather oil Gu from Fang Yuan, her efficiency in collecting oil increased, she quickly gathered a huge amount of primeval stones from selling oil.

She brought these primeval stones to Golden Jade House to repay the debt but this shop was too shameless, they actually changed her agreement terms.

Xia Lin had the urge to die.

Her only family was gone, she was all alone in this world, she was ostracized by her tribe since a young age, all these circumstances made her feel lost and dejected, the world had turned grey, she could not find any joy in living.

“What is so scary about death? I'll die and end it all!”

Thinking of this, Xia Lin took action with a yell.

Swoosh!

An explosion was heard as a torrent was shot out.

The scarred merman did not expect that in this situation, a rank two Gu Master would dare to attack him, a rank three, in his territory, the Golden Jade House.

The scarred merman was caught unprepared, he was washed away by the torrent, crashing into the wall as many decorations shattered.

The commotion was huge, the Gu Masters who were quietly choosing and dissecting rocks all came to watch.

A large number of eyes turned to look at Xia Lin and the scarred merman.

“What happened?”

“Hehe, what else could it be, this Golden Jade House must have tricked the innocent again.”

“Quiet, this Golden Jade House’s owner is the tyrant around here.”

“I heard that Golden Jade House often acts as loan sharks and exploits low ranked Gu Masters.”

“Let’s not attract trouble, this is the problem of mermen, we humans have nothing to do with it.”

At this time, the scarred merman stood up from the rubble: “You have such guts to attack me, I will make you wish you were dead!”

He walked towards Xia Lin, she was pale with fright, suppressed by his aura, but she gritted her teeth and did not step back.

The distance between the two shortened, when the scarred merman was about to attack, he heard a voice: “Wait!”

The scarred merman’s actions stopped, he changed his expression of anger and ruthlessness as he lowered his head towards the person: “Shopkeeper, what brings you here?”

This was Golden Jade House’s owner, a big bellied yellow scaled merman.

The yellow scaled merman frowned, he shouted at the scarred merman: “What are you doing? Are you trying to destroy my shop?”

“Shopkeeper, she...”

Before the scarred merman finished his words, he was interrupted.

“How many times have I told you, we need to act peacefully, peace brings fortune, do you understand?”

“Yes, yes.” The scarred merman did not dare to retort, he nodded like an obedient child.

A chill emerged in Xia Lin’s heart.

She had gone through lots of difficulty, being brought up by her grandfather, she had experienced the bright and dark sides of life.

“Someone who can make this scarred merman so respectful must be more terrifying!” Xia Lin knew this clearly, she looked at this yellow scaled merman, her alertness was raised to its limit.

The yellow scaled merman looked at Xia Lin for some time before speaking: “Little lady, don’t worry, I am an understanding person. With me around, I will ensure that nobody attacks you. But I want you to be reasonable as well, your debt is in black and white, do you want to deny it?”

Hearing this, Xia Lin felt enraged: “You guys were shameless, you changed the terms on your own, from ten percent to sixty percent interest. I do not owe you anything, I already repaid my debt.”

The yellow scaled merman smiled even brighter now: “Little lady, to think that your acting skills are so profound at such a young age. But it is no use! No matter how convincing you are, without evidence, you cannot prove anything, we have the agreement here, it is clearly stated, everyone can tell who is in the wrong.”

“You, you, you!” Xia Lin pointed at the yellow scaled merman, unable to say anything from anger.

The yellow scaled merman laughed as he waved his hand: “Forget it, you are a young girl, I will not bully you, others might say that my Golden Jade House is bullying customers. How about this, repay half the debt and I will let you go without any other problems.”

“I am already very sincere. If you return it now, you will only pay thirty percent interest, isn’t that market rate? Tell me which moneylender isn’t operating at this price? You said that we had a ten percent interest? Who would believe you? Try and find it outside, which shop would give that price?”

Xia Lin’s chest was bobbing up and down, her eyes were reddened.

The market was thirty percent, that was precisely why she borrowed from Golden Jade House. But to think that it was a trap, she had gotten scammed.

Seeing that Xia Lin was silent, the yellow scaled merman took out an information path mortal Gu: “This is our loan agreement, if you return the money, I will return you this Gu now.”

Xia Lin was stunned before sneering: “I do not have enough primeval stones.”

The yellow scaled merman laughed as he clapped: “Don’t worry, you can use Gu worms instead. I know you have a gather oil Gu, you can use it to repay your debt.”

Xia Lin heard this and realized at once: “So that is your true goal, you want my gather oil Gu? Hmph, this is a rank five Gu, are you insane! Even if I die, you won’t get this Gu.”

The surrounding Gu Masters went into a commotion upon hearing this.

“Gather oil Gu? Did I hear wrongly?”

“That rumored rank five Gu that is the hot topic recently? I heard it has incredible efficiency in gathering black oil!”

“Not just incredible, it is superb. Even though gather oil Gu is rank five, it does not expend primeval essence but the Gu Master’s bone marrow, even rank one Gu Masters can use it!”

“I heard that some people overused the gather oil Gu and killed themselves.”

“Sigh, those people have no restraint. If they use bone path Gu worms with it, gather oil Gu is very safe!”

Clap clap clap.

The yellow scaled merman clapped: “Young lady, you are a smart girl, I am sure you know the logic that fortune attract wolves. How can a rank two Gu Master like you own a rank five Gu? Take it out, even if I let you off, others will still come after you, hand it over and live a stable life, isn’t that better?”

“No! Even if I die, I will not hand it over to a scumbag like you.” Xia Lin resisted with determination.

The yellow scaled merman felt a headache.

It was difficult to take someone else’s Gu worm, she only needed one thought to self-detonate the Gu, by then, the yellow scaled merman’s plan would be ruined.

The best situation was for Xia Lin to hand it over.

Otherwise, he could use theft path methods.

But theft path Gu Masters did not exist in this paradise.

And even if there were theft path Gu Masters, stealing a rank five Gu was too hard!

The yellow scaled merman was not flustered, he had already planned this and expected the situation. He could not force Xia Lin too harshly now, thus, he took a step back.

“How about this, I will give you a chance, but you must do the same. We can gamble.”

“Gamble?”

“We will gamble rocks and see who excavates Gu, and if we both do, which one is better. We will decide the winner from two out of three victories.”

Xia Lin smiled coldly: “You are unscrupulous and went back on your words, how can I trust you after you changed the terms earlier?”

The yellow scaled merman thought about it, he suddenly waved his hand as an information path mortal Gu flew to Xia Lin.

Xia Lin received it with deep shock.

The yellow scaled merman added: “I can make an oath to the Sea God.”

Mermen were different from humans, they had their racial religion, they believed in the Sea God. Making an oath using the Sea God’s name was a huge matter, it proved that he was very sincere.

Almost every merman’s faith was in the Sea God.

The yellow scaled merman said again in a sincere way: “What are you hesitating for? Rock gambling depends on skill but also luck. I gave you a chance, don’t go overboard, I will tell you the truth, this is your only way out today, you should seize the chance.”

The yellow scaled merman used both the stick and the carrot, Xia Lin was greatly flustered.

While she hesitated, a voice suddenly said in her mind: “Don’t be afraid, gamble with him, I am here!”

“Master Chu!” Instantly, Xia Lin almost screamed from joy.

Fang Yuan added: “But you must change the gambling terms because this is too mild, if you trust me, we will make this a huge gamble!”

“I trust you, Master Chu!” Xia Lin responded without any hesitation.

Her life was saved by Fang Yuan. If he wanted to harm her, there was no need to save her.

“My life was saved by Master Chu, if he wants to harm me, so be it, I will just return this life to him!”

Thinking like this, Xia Lin responded in her mind: “Master Chu, tell me what to do, I will follow your instructions.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1660: Mastermind

Rock gambling was truly a matter of luck, nobody could deny it. Be they Gu Master or Gu Immortal.

But the yellow scaled merman was very confident in himself.

Because he was prepared.

All these years, he had gambled with the rocks in his own Golden Jade House. He had observed, analyzed, and chosen some rocks with great precision, he was very confident in this gamble.

These rocks naturally did not contain valuable things, otherwise, he would have taken them himself, he would not leave them in the shop.

He had to maintain his business.

Most of these rocks would have Gu worms, even though they were not valuable, they were a form of excitement for the customers. This was like fish bait, they would want to continue gambling and investing.

The yellow scaled merman knew the locations of where these rocks were placed, sometimes, he even showed off his rock gambling skills in front of customers, opening Gu worms and showing that he was a great expert in this rock gambling activity.

Now, the yellow scaled merman was using these rocks to gamble against Xia Lin, he was very confident in himself.

But in the first round, he tasted defeat.

Xia Lin opened a rank three Gu worm, it was superior to his.

This was a good start!

The surrounding Gu Masters were shocked.

The yellow scaled merman was also suspicious and uncertain, was this mermaid girl a hidden expert?

He had suggested a two out of three format earlier, but Xia Lin requested to change it to five contests, the bet was higher now, he staked the entire Golden Jade House. At the same time, if she lost once, she would have to hand over the gather oil Gu.

But now, Xia Lin won, not only did she keep gather oil Gu, she even won twenty percent of Golden Jade House.

“What a joke, I lost?!” The yellow scaled merman could not believe it.

He stared at the mermaid girl, his suspicions fading slowly.

The yellow scaled merman was very experienced, he could tell that Xia Lin was a newbie, her expression of joy after getting a Gu worm was not fake, she was genuine.

Furthermore, Xia Lin did not know how to dissect rocks. She had asked the rock dissecting Gu Master in Golden Jade House to open her rock.

“Damn it, she had some dog shit luck!”

2“Thankfully, we changed the rules from three rounds to five rounds, I have a lot of chances left, I am not in a passive spot.”

Thinking of this, the yellow scaled merman looked at the rock dissecting Gu Master behind Xia Lin with a subtle gaze.

The rock dissecting Gu Master nodded mildly.

The yellow scaled merman smiled to himself secretly, in this situation, no matter what rock Xia Lin got, even if there was a Gu, it would be destroyed, how could she possibly win against him!

The second round.

“I will choose first.” Xia Lin said.

“Go ahead.” The yellow scaled merman smiled and replied.

Xia Lin walked around for a while and was dazzled.

“I will choose this.” Suddenly, she stopped as she pointed at a weird rock.

This rock was very strange, it had multiple holes and was distorted in shape, it was not very compact and felt like a pile of sand.

Normally speaking, such a sandy rock would not have any Gu worm.

Seeing Xia Lin’s choice, the yellow scaled merman laughed.

He pretended to walk around, touching and knocking the rocks, after a while, he chose a huge rock and said: “This is my choice.”

The rock dissection started.

The yellow scaled merman did it himself while Xia Lin asked the rock dissecting Gu Master.

This was an open gamble, they dissected the rocks in the hall. More and more spectators came, they talked among themselves as the newcomers learned of this gamble and gained interest, they chose to stay and watch.

For Gu Masters, this was a huge gamble.

One was the entire Golden Jade House, it had a lot of funds after years of operation.

The other was a superb rank five gather oil Gu.

The bet was almost equal on both sides, gather oil Gu was just too amazing, it generated immense profits by collecting black oil.

The yellow scaled merman chose a huge rock, he needed some time to dissect it.

For Xia Lin, it was very rapid. The sandy rock was just too rough and coarse.

Xia Lin's rock dissecting Gu Master was very casual in his actions, he had no pressure. If he destroyed the Gu worm in the process, the yellow scaled merman would be very happy after all.

But at this time, Xia Lin said: "Use the grey soil method."

The rock dissecting Gu Master stopped his action, he said: "Are you sure? This method has limited effect on sandy rocks."

"Yes." Xia Lin responded.

The rock dissecting Gu Master shook his head: "Little lady, I am not lying, I will not lie since I am the one dissecting this. Why don't you ask around, everyone knows that the grey soil method has little effect on sandy rocks."

"I do not need that, just do as you are told, this is in the agreement." Xia Lin insisted.

"Alright, alright." The rock dissecting Gu Master nodded.

Once he used the grey soil method, the sandy rock's dissection became painfully slow.

The rock dissecting Gu Master was very annoyed, earlier it was like he was using a knife to cut tofu, but now, he was stabbing it with a needle while expending even more primeval essence.

"Use the flame smoking method." A moment later, Xia Lin added.

The surrounding Gu Masters gasped, they wanted to stop her.

The rock dissecting Gu Master said as well: "The flame smoking method will penetrate the rock, if there is a Gu inside, it will die before it is excavated."

"Just do as you are told." Xia Lin said expressionlessly.

The surrounding Gu Masters sighed, someone said: "Is this girl really gambling? She cannot even be considered a newbie, she is just toying around!"

But Xia Lin had a firm expression that was somewhat relaxed.

The rock dissecting Gu Master shook his head: “Since you want that, let’s do it, everyone can tell that I am not sabotaging you, this is your request.”

“Use the dripping method.”

“Blue mark method.”

“Planting qi method.”

Next, Xia Lin gave several precise instructions.

The sandy rock was already fist sized, but no Gu worms came out yet.

The rock dissecting Gu Master had an ugly expression, he felt that Xia Lin was purposely toying with him, she said those names that she knew randomly.

“Alright, give it to me, I will dissect it myself.” Xia Lin added.

“What?” The rock dissecting Gu Master was stunned but quickly reacted as he let out a breath of air, passing the rock to Xia Lin.

Xia Lin bit her tongue and spat out blood at the rock, before using gather oil Gu to apply suction force on the rock.

Crack.

The rock cracked, a rank three Gu worm was exposed.

“There was a Gu?”

“What Gu is this? I have never seen it before.”

“It is asleep, by the looks of it, it is complete and uninjured.”

The surrounding Gu Masters went into a commotion.

The rock dissecting Gu Master was stunned completely, he looked at Xia Lin with a dumbfounded expression, thinking suspiciously: “Is this girl really tricking us all?”

The yellow scaled merman also stopped his dissection with a dark expression.

Even if he opened it, his rock only had a rank two Gu, but the other party had a living rank three Gu!

“There was a Gu! Master Chu was not wrong after all!” Xia Lin was overjoyed.

Among the crowd, Fang Yuan smiled lightly.

There was no Gu in this sandy rock, there was only a Gu material.

Fang Yuan instructed Xia Lin to indirectly manipulate this rock dissecting Gu Master and refine the Gu material. Eventually, when Xia Lin dripped her blood and used gather oil Gu, the final step was completed.

Normally, newly refined Gu worms would be active, but Fang Yuan used a unique Gu refinement method that made the Gu worm hibernate. This allowed him to trick everybody that was around, nobody saw through this or found any flaws.

Quasi-supreme refinement path attainment level, it was not a joke!

Everyone was not calm, they looked with Xia Lin with a different gaze now.

“Who sent you here?!” The yellow scaled merman shouted, his composure was gone.

He realized something wrong, thoughts surged in his mind.

He had offended many people over these years, he felt that Xia Lin was a bait, he had fallen into a trap. This rank five Gu was used to trap him, it was truly a huge gamble!

“Calm down, calm down.”

“I cannot take any more risks, the other party came prepared.”

The yellow scaled merman wiped off his cold sweat as he focused his gaze.

He had a trump card.

There was a special batch of rocks in this Golden Jade House.

These rocks were not natural, the yellow scaled merman had created them artificially.

He first made living or dead Gu worms look like they were in a hibernating state, he then added rock fragments around them and eventually created artificial ‘rocks’.

Rocks that contained Gu worms often had some observable traits, making them different from ordinary rocks.

These kinds of rocks were not easy to find.

Sometimes, in order to resolve the lack of supply of gambling rocks, the yellow scaled merman would create fake rocks himself. Of course, not all of these rocks would contain Gu worms, some only had these observable traits.

The third round, defeat.

The fourth round, defeat again!

The Gu Masters watching this gasped, nobody had expected this to happen.

Everyone looked at Xia Lin with wariness and solemness.

The yellow scaled merman turned pale, he gritted his teeth, ruthless light flashed in his eyes, he was like a jackal forced to the end of a cliff.

“The final round, I cannot afford to lose! I need to use my strongest trump card.”

The yellow scaled merman’s trump card was naturally overpowering, he hid the carcass of a rank five Gu in a fake rock, according to the gambling rules, only a living rank five Gu could beat him.

Both sides chose their rocks and dissected them.

Snap.

Fang Yuan suddenly snapped his fingers, using a time path immortal killer move1!

The entire Golden Jade House and even the island became still, anything and everything became motionless.

Fang Yuan walked out of the crowd, coming in front of the yellow scaled merman who was focusing on the flame and dissecting his rock carefully.

Fang Yuan squeezed the rock lightly, he saw the carcass of a rank five Gu.

Next, he placed this carcass into Xia Lin’s rock and returned to the crowd.

At the next moment, time resumed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1661: Repaying a Debt of Gratitude

The result of the fifth round made the yellow scaled merman dazed on the spot.

His eyes were about to pop out.

If he was not witnessing this personally, he would not believe it!

He remembered clearly that this was the Gu worm carcass that he had put in the fake rock, but why? Why!

Why was this Gu worm carcass not in his hands but in his opponent’s hands?

The yellow scaled merman could not understand.

“Is this all an illusion?” He was going crazy, his pale face surged with redness.

He suddenly pointed at Xia Lin as he screamed in a shrill voice: “You cheated!”

The mermaid girl Xia Lin heard this and became enraged.

She was also kept in the dark, not knowing of Fang Yuan’s methods, she shouted: “You lost fair and square, are you going to deny that in front of everyone?”

The yellow scaled merman looked at Xia Lin and the surrounding Gu Masters, his gaze became hollow as he muttered: “No, this is not real, everything is fake, this is an illusion.”

He stumbled back and wanted to run away from this cruel reality.

Looking at his pitiful demeanor, the surrounding Gu Masters had complex expressions, they looked at Xia Lin with trepidation and wariness.

The yellow scaled merman was almost mentally broken by Fang Yuan!

Xia Lin pursued: “Let’s transact, you did not win a single round, this Golden Jade House is mine.”

The yellow scaled merman shuddered like he was shocked with lightning, he screamed in response: “No, this is mine, this is my foundation, I will not give it to anyone! Don’t even think about it, you can have it over my dead body!!”

“Sir, we can force them to go down with us!” The scarred merman came up and said with a sinister expression.

The yellow scaled merman shook again.

He wanted to do that, but hearing these words, he realized something.

“No matter who it is, this mermaid girl is just a pawn. The other party could manipulate this situation remotely, setting up a trap against me that I could not deal with. How can I face someone of such a magnitude? If I fight now, wouldn’t I be courting death?”

2The yellow scaled merman did not want to give up his Golden Jade House, but compared to his life, the latter was more important.

The yellow scaled merman looked around him, instincts told him that the enemy was among this crowd.

He felt suspicious of everyone, but he could not confirm their identity.

“I admit my loss, I lose!” Suddenly, he stopped his methods as he sprawled on the ground like a dying fish, shouting loudly.

He prostrated on the ground, admitting: “No matter who you are, I admit my defeat, is that enough? You can do anything with me, but before that, may you please enlighten me, when did I offend you?”

Everyone went into a clamor.

The yellow scaled merman’s actions were unexpected, some people snorted in disdain, some felt that he was able to put down his pride and was quite a formidable person.

An unscrupulous merchant that had been in power for decades was naturally not so simple.

Xia Lin was also dazed, at the same time, she felt deep admiration towards Master Chu.

She understood clearly that this was all due to Master Chu, without his guidance, Xia Lin would be in even deeper trouble than the yellow scaled merman. But looking at the prostrating yellow scaled merman, Xia Lin felt joyful and also relieved.

“It is time.” Fang Yuan smiled, guiding Xia Lin.

Xia Lin spoke to the yellow scaled merman: “Do you know why you lost?”

Seeing her speak, the crowd went silent.

The yellow scaled merman raised his head, looking at Xia Lin: “I do not know, please enlighten me.”

“Because someone wanted you to lose.” Xia Lin stated an obvious fact.

The yellow scaled merman’s heart jumped, he lowered his head: “I understand, I understand.”

Xia Lin added: “Do you want this Golden Jade House back?”

“What?” The yellow scaled merman was stunned, what did she mean? Of course he wanted it back, but he did not know about the other party, what did they mean by that? Were they toying with him or had ulterior motives?”

Xia Lin continued: “I have a condition before I return it to you.”

The yellow scaled merman started to kowtow: “Revered lady, please tell me.”

Xia Lin looked at the yellow scaled merman as she said slowly: “The reason why you ended up like this was because of just desserts, you committed too many sins. From now on, you have to commit acts of kindness, do good deeds and turn over a new leaf, I will let you off and return this Golden Jade House. But remember, if you return to your old ways, we will take not just this Golden Jade House next time.”

Once she said that, all the Gu Masters showed perplexed expressions.

After so much talk, Xia Lin and her backer actually had such intentions?

They were promoting kindness?

This was not a common thing.

The yellow scaled merman was also surprised but he did not dare to show anything on the surface, he quickly thanked her profusely: “I will change, I will definitely turn over a new leaf. Revered lady, you are the benefactor of my life, you changed my ways. You are like a saintess guiding people towards kindness and away from evil. I was wrong, I was really wrong, thank you, Saintess, for giving me this chance, from now on, I will be a good person and dedicate my life to doing good deeds!”

The yellow scaled merman lowered his head and apologized sincerely, he was like a pitiful child.

Xia Lin’s face flushed: “I am not the saintess, I have no qualification to be one, don’t spout nonsense. Remember your promise, we will be watching you. If we find out or anyone reports you in the future, you will regret it.”

Saying so, Xia Lin turned around and left.

The surrounding Gu Masters left a path for her.

Xia Lin had just left the Golden Jade House when she suddenly vanished without a trace.

At the next moment, she appeared at the edge of the island through Fang Yuan’s teleportation.

“It’s safe here, you can go back now.” Fang Yuan did not show up, he only transmitted his voice.

“Master Chu, you saved me again, how can I repay you?” Xia Lin called out in her mind: “Master Chu? Master Chu...”

“We will meet again if we are fated to.” Fang Yuan said as he smiled, memories emerging in his mind again.

On the beach, Fang Yuan chased after Xie Han Mo and the rest who were leaving: “Please wait!”

Xie Han Mo and the rest stopped walking, while the two guards stared at Fang Yuan in annoyance.

“Lad, stop following us.”

“If you want to repay the debt of gratitude, you should get away from us. Do you know that Saintess could have stayed hidden this time, but to save you, she showed up. Now, we failed to find any evidence and even made the other party alert.”

“I know!” Fang Yuan was panting.

“You know nothing.” The blue scaled guard rolled his eyes.

Fang Yuan chuckled, raising his head and looking at Xie Han Mo and the guards: “I was too rash, but after that, I understand now. You are the Merman Imperial Court’s current generation saintess, you came here to find evidence of Frost Tide tribe’s corruption. I can help you in this matter. Because I operated gambling dens before, I know about their workings. The main avenue for this Frost Tide tribe’s money laundering has to be that gambling den earlier.”

“Please give me a chance saintess, let me repay the debt of saving my life.”

Both guards hesitated, they looked at Xie Han Mo.

Xie Han Mo’s thick eyelashes drooped down, before she opened her eyes and looked at Fang Yuan with a crystal clear gaze, after three breaths of time, she nodded: “Then I will thank you in advance, human Gu Master. What is your name?”

“My name is Gu Yue Fang Yuan. You can call me Fang Yuan.” Fang Yuan laughed heartily.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1662: Competition for Saintess

Time passed quickly, more than twenty days passed again.

Before the Merit Obelisk, Fang Yuan looked at the rankings with his arms behind his back. His position had fallen to fifth already.

Initially, he was at the front, but changes started to occur.

Gu Immortals realized that as long as they looked into this Merit Obelisk, they would be able to find many options.

These options had price tags, one could use their accumulated merits to exchange for them. Immortal materials, Immortal Gu, Immortal Gu recipes, immortal killer moves, and even Immortal Gu House, they were all available.

With the merits that Miao Ming Shen and the rest had, they could only exchange for the stuff at the bottom of the list. Those expensive options were like carrots dangling above the donkey, they made these Gu Immortals very proactive.

Competition was getting more intense.

Fang Yuan’s focus was not that, his only goal was regret Gu.

Regret Gu was very important to Fang Yuan. Even though the items in the Merit

Obelisk were very valuable, they were merely icing on the cake for Fang Yuan, regret Gu could help Fang Yuan gain a qualitative change.

But among these rewards, there was neither regret Gu nor the exchange of Merit Obelisk itself.

This meant that the rewards listed were not fully comprehensive.

Regret Gu was not part of the rewards, but that did not mean that regret Gu was not inside this paradise.

Fang Yuan did not waste his time, he looked for clues and chose specific missions, after using wisdom path methods to deduce, many of his suspicions were lifted. Eventually, his focus was completely on Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea.

There were many rumors regarding this sea area.

Through Fang Yuan’s deductions, there was a high possibility of regret Gu being in there.

However, even though Fang Yuan knew the location, he could not get close.

The mission of punishing the unscrupulous merchant twenty days ago was the closest Fang Yuan had ever gotten to Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea. But he had tried, after just thirty li away from the island, he could not move closer.

“How can I get into Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea?”

This was a problem that gave Fang Yuan a headache.

Paradise Earth’s arrangements were too powerful, Fang Yuan could not act freely. His space path attainment was also not impressive, he had tried to use Fixed Immortal Travel earlier but it could not activate, even with an immortal killer move that Fang Yuan thought of. This meant that once Fang Yuan left the paradise, Fixed Immortal Travel would not allow him to re-enter again.

“As for these people...” Fang Yuan looked at the names of the Gu Immortals on the merit board, he squinted.

He wanted to keep these people around.

On one hand, killing the Gu Immortals in this paradise was risky.

On the other hand, these Gu Immortals were now earning merits and getting rewards, they were like livestock getting fattened. Fang Yuan could slaughter them when everyone went out, it would give him much greater benefits.

1Thus, not only did Fang Yuan not harm them, he even helped them with more detailed information.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest were competing more intensely. Especially since mission rewards were observable and limited, everyone could exchange for them, once someone got something, others could not.

Thus, even though they did not try to kill each other, they schemed and purposely gave out false information in increasing frequency.

In this situation, the ‘honest and truthful’ Chu Ying was like an outlier, he became very prominent. Even though Miao Ming Shen and the rest did not say anything, they became increasingly friendlier towards Fang Yuan.

1A change occurred three days later.

A new mission appeared on the Merit Obelisk: Head to the Sacred City of the mermen, attend the Sea God Ceremony, and defend the city from the assault of sea beasts.

Once this mission appeared, Fang Yuan selected it.

“The chance I have been waiting for is finally here!” Fang Yuan was very excited.

The Sea God Ceremony was unique to the mermen, in this ceremony, males and females would gather and form new families, they would also elect the new Saintess.

The saintess had an incredibly high status in merman society.

And Fang Yuan had already gotten crucial information, in this paradise, the saintess had an incredible role. Every time a new saintess was elected, their main mission would be to enter Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea, using their singing to soothe the killing intent of the demon and stabilize the sea area.

“This Merit Obelisk’s missions are meant to benefit the humans and mermen, bringing prosperity to the people and punishing evil while promoting kindness. After the saintess is elected, she would have to enter Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea, by then, a relevant mission might appear. But no matter what, I need to accept this mission and meet the saintess in advance.”

“After so long, the Sea God Ceremony is finally here!” Xia Lin pushed open the window of her inn room, the noise of the crowd outside could be heard.

Her room was on the second floor, Xia Lin looked down and saw people moving in the streets while closely packed together. All sorts of flags were waving, there were temporary shops selling Gu, snacks, and even gambling dens, all of the businesses were doing well.

Xia Lin’s mood was quickly affected, she became quite happy.

Splat.

Suddenly, with a soft sound, a pearl landed on Xia Lin’s window frame.

Xia Lin was dazed before she flushed rapidly.

Pearls had a special significance in the Sea God Ceremony, it meant a proposal. If someone tossed Xia Lin a pearl, it meant that they liked her and wanted to marry her.

“Who is it?” Xia Lin did not dare to pick up the pearl because that action had deep meaning behind it, she looked down and saw that dozens of men were looking in her direction, tossing the pearls in their hands.

“Su Yi!”

“Su Yi!” “I love you!”

“Accept my love, Su Yi!”

The men tossed their pearls while shouting.

“Hey miss!” Someone called out to Xia Lin.

Xia Lin turned her gaze towards a young man on the street, he was a merman in tattered clothes, he was clearly poor.

The merman youngster flushed as he said: “Miss, I tossed that pearl to you, I had too little strength, I can’t throw it high enough, can you please toss it back to me.”

Xia Lin instantly understood, this youngster wanted to toss his pearl to Su Yi but had too little strength, it ended up going to Xia Lin instead.

“Lady Su Yi is truly a famous beauty, her charm is too great, be it young boys or mature men, they are all in love with her.”

Xia Lin breathed out slowly, next, waves splashed as the pearl was lifted from the ground, going into the youngster’s hands.

“Thank you, thank you!” The youngster was overjoyed, he tossed the pearl with all his strength.

The pearl got higher and higher, it was in the right direction now, but Su Yi frowned as she closed her window.

The youngster’s pearl landed on the window and fell down, over a dozen pearls suffered the same fate. But these pearls were different, they were huge and shiny, they were not common.

On the street, the men did not disperse after this, they got even more excited, more and more people came to Su Yi’s area and wanted to see her beautiful face. Some still had hope and wanted to toss their pearls, after all, what if they got lucky?

“A bunch of commoners with nothing better to do.” Su Yi frowned, a pink cloud cushioned her tail as she floated downstairs.

She had incredible beauty and arrogance on her face, but the most attractive part were her snow-white scales.

Merman scales varied in different colors, white scales were extremely rare, it was considered the purest color and was extremely idolized in the merman society.

Two mermaid nannies followed after her as they muttered.

“These fellows should look at themselves in the mirror, they want to be Lady Su Yi’s husband? Simply laughable!”

“Our Lady Su Yi is a contestant for the saintess position, she would not accept any man’s pearl.”

The merman saintess was pure and flawless, once she obtains the position, she would not be able to marry for life, she had to keep her virginity.

1Xia Lin walked out of her room, lowering her head: “Sister Su Yi.”

“Little sister Xia Lin.” Su Yi showed a faint smile, hiding the arrogance deeply as she spoke: “How was your rest? Have you thought it through?”

“Thank you for the hospitality, right now, all the inns are fully booked, without you, I would not have had a place to rest.” Xia Lin immediately thanked.

A mermaid nanny smiled: “It was fate that you met with our Missy. In this vast sea, the meeting of two mermen is not easy, you two are fated to meet. I will say this bluntly, ordinary mermaids would die to be acquainted with our Missy.”

Su Yi was not just a white scaled mermaid, she had a high status, and was the doted daughter of a strong tribe leader.

“Nanny Rong, what are you saying? I met with Xia Lin because we liked each other. Xia Lin, don’t have any worries, go ahead if you have any busy matters. If you follow me to this Sea God Ceremony, the risks are high.” Su Yi walked towards Xia Lin as she held her hand, saying sincerely.

Xia Lin was moved: “Sister Su Yi, you have helped me too much, since you want to become the saintess, I will definitely support you. But I am afraid that I am too weak, there are only four follower quotas after all.”

Su Yi’s eyes shined brightly, she held Xia Lin’s hands as she said excitedly: “Xia Lin, thank you, with your help, I will have a higher chance of becoming the saintess.”

Xia Lin had low cultivation level, she was only rank two but she had a rank five Gu worm.

Gather oil Gu, a top tier rank five Gu!

Of course, this Gu worm had no offensive might, but Su Yi had already found out about the details of the saintess test, the gather oil Gu would be very helpful in one of the rounds.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1663: Fang Yuan, You Are A Good Person

Fang Yuan walked in the merman Sacred City, he did not disguise himself, he was in Chu Ying’s appearance. But his aura was completely concealed, he was like a mortal.

On the street, people moved about fluidly, those who brushed past Fang Yuan would never imagine that a rank eight Gu Immortal was walking so closely beside them.

On the two sides of the street, there were shops and houses arranged in an orderly scale-like manner, the houses of mermen had their unique style, most had seashell or conch designs. Most were huge seashells and conchs, or modified shells of giant crabs and turtles. There were also few Gu houses that were a symbol of wealth and authority, they had great defensive properties. Other than personal estates, Gu houses used as shops were also booming with business.

As he walked, the people walking in front of Fang Yuan started to move away, they were cheering loudly.

Walking closer to take a look, Fang Yuan saw that a mermaid was receiving a jade pearl from a male Gu Master with teary eyes.

This pearl was quite rare, it was like glowing jade and had the shape of an eyeball.

This was not something valuable in the eyes of experts, as for Fang Yuan, it was a mortal material that he had no use for. But it was owned by the rank two male Gu Master, it was not easy for him to obtain this rank four Gu material jade eye pearl.

The mermaid might have noticed his feelings, she received the jade eye pearl in public as it signified her acceptance of his love.

Next, the mermaid placed the pearl into her mouth, everyone started to cheer and shout, the couple started to blush and turn red.

This action was not so simple, it meant she had accepted the young Gu Master's proposal!

"This paradise does not discriminate between races, merman and human can freely fall in love and have children without obstruction."

"But in the five regions, it was forbidden for merman and human to get together, not only would they be discouraged, their children would also be ostracized by both sides or even killed."

Fang Yuan had an eerie gaze.

The Sea God Ceremony was around the corner, the entire Sacred City was oozing with a joyful and festive atmosphere.

This couple was not the first that Fang Yuan saw, they might be very simple and insignificant figures in the Sacred City, but being ordinary did not mean one could not be blissful, this beautiful moment would become a cherished memory etched in their minds.

The memories of the five hundred years of his previous life started to surface again.

A group of mermen were looking at Xie Han Mo, Fang Yuan, and the rest with an imposing aura.

"I am Investigator Wu De, there have been many reports by different clansmen that our current generation saintess Xie Han Mo has an affair with the human Gu Master Gu Yue Fang Yuan, I am here to investigate it!" The leader was a jade-scaled merman who spoke in an icy tone.

"What?"

"I dare you to say that again!"

The two guards behind Xie Han Mo were furious, they wanted to attack in anger.

Xie Han Mo had a calm expression, while Fang Yuan had a dark expression as he clenched his fists.

He helped Xie Han Mo investigate the gambling den, they found a lot of corruption evidence, the saintess' mission had a qualitative breakthrough.

But the other party was not going to wait for the end, they schemed and spread vicious rumors, saying that the saintess was impure and had an affair with a human Gu Master.

These rumors had no evidence and were merely made up, Xie Han Mo and Fang Yuan did not care about them. But to think that the investigator from the Merman Sacred Court would actually come!

"Mobilizing the investigator without any evidence, I am afraid that Frost Tide tribe leader was not the only corrupted person, there is a higher-up involved here!" Fang Yuan transmitted to Xie Han Mo.

Xie Han Mo frowned, with slight hesitation, she spoke: "I am the saintess, you are a mere investigator, do you have the elder assembly's token?"

The jade-scaled merman smiled, taking out an information path Gu worm.

Xie Han Mo was calm: "Just this?"

The jade-scaled merman smiled again: "This cannot allow me to investigate the Saintess, but Fang Yuan is different, he is a human Gu Master. Forget about the token, I can investigate him even without one!"

Even though Fang Yuan was a human and humans were the rulers of the five regions, Eastern Sea's Merman Sacred Court was a super force, Fang Yuan had no background himself, the jade-scaled merman was not lying.

"Too vicious, I cannot believe that Frost Tide tribe's leader is such a person!"

"He is afraid, he knows how amazing Fang Yuan is, he is afraid that we will find out more evidence as time passes."

The two guards stood in front of Fang Yuan.

After this period of time, they had already acknowledged Fang Yuan.

"Wait, if both sides clash, that will be what the enemy wants to see, we will not be able to explain ourselves. I will go with them, we have a lot of progress in the gambling den, even without me, you can still win if you continue on that trail!" Fang Yuan transmitted.

"No way!"

"Fang Yuan, you are too naive, if you end up in their hands, you will live a fate worse than death."

The two guards shook their heads.

Fang Yuan smiled: "What is there to fear? I will die at worst. You saved my life before, in that case, I will repay it now. Do not look down on their schemes, this was targeted at me on the surface, but the true goal is Saintess. Once her reputation is hit and rumors spread, her status might be affected. Sacrificing me is a small issue, but we must defend Saintess' position, without this, how can you investigate and punish those corrupted people?"

1The two guards hesitated.

Xie Han Mo was still composed, she said to the jade-scaled merman: "Go back, I will not hand him to you."

The jade-scaled merman was slightly stunned before he laughed: "Saintess, you want to defend this human Gu Master? Even at the cost of conflicting with us investigators?"

Xie Han Mo nodded: "Go back."

The jade-scaled merman looked at Fang Yuan before turning to Xie Han Mo, he showed a smile as if his scheme succeeded: "Good! We are not Saintess' match, we can only return in defeat. Hahaha!"

Saying so, he waved his hand and left with the mermen.

“Saintess, why did you do that?” Fang Yuan was anxious: “Like this, you...”

For the first time, Xie Han Mo interrupted him: “Fang Yuan, you are a good person.”

“Hmm?”

“You are not afraid of death, other than courage, the biggest reason is that life is boring right? You seem to be disappointed in this world and in your own life, there is deep fatigue hidden in your eyes. But undeniably, you are a good person.” Xie Han Mo said softly.

1Fang Yuan: “...”

Xie Han Mo continued: “And I am also a good person. How can a good person sacrifice another good person?”

Saying so, she winked at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was a little dazed, this was the first time he had seen such lively expressions from Xie Han Mo, she was quite cute and cheeky.

“Then... what about the rumors?”

“Indeed, that damned investigator is going to make up stories when he returns!”

The two guards were very worried.

Xie Han Mo’s expression went back to normal, she said aloofly: “Then let them.”

...

Several days later, the Sea God Ceremony started.

The male mermen wore their shell armors, they carried long spears, javelins and blades. According to traditions, these shells and weapons were made by them personally using locally sourced materials.

The female mermen, the mermaids, wore seaweed strips of various colors on them. Pink seaweed strips were used by young unmarried girls, widows wore black seaweed strips, while noble ladies wore gold, silver, and crystal colored ones. Ordinary mermaids wore brown, dark blue, and grey seaweed strips.

This was the traditional costume of the mermen, it was quite unique.

Long long ago, before mermen learned how to use Gu worms, they lived a primitive lifestyle. Males hunted while females foraged.

At the center of Sacred City, people gathered, singing and dancing.

A large number of merman warriors were waving their spears, their armors clashed and created loud sounds.

The mermaids’ seaweed strips were like rainbow ribbons fluttering in the water, they waved in sync with the singing, experiencing no tiredness.

This moment was reserved for the mermen, all the human Gu Masters were watching outside.

The singing and dancing lasted for hours, mermen, male and female alike, continued to walk out of the area with shattered armors or fatigued bodies.

Gradually, several mermaid girls emerged, they were the contestants for this year’s saintess competition.

But what surprised Fang Yuan was that out of the nine competitors, not all of them had white scales. it seemed like in this paradise, it was not only white-scaled mermaids who could vie for the saintess position, mermaids with different scale colors could also compete.

And among everyone, mermaid Su Yi was the most dazzling one.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1664: Saintess Test

During the Sea God Ceremony, Sacred City was flooded with people.

The surrounding spectators were clamoring loudly.

Fang Yuan was in this crowd, he observed the prospective saintesses with an eerie gaze.

His plan was to choose one of them and assist her in becoming the saintess.

...

“They are assisting her to become the saintess?”

“That’s right, Frost Tide tribe leader invested a lot into this to help Lady Qiu Shuang.”

Xie Han Mo’s two blue scaled and red scaled guards looked at each other after hearing this, feeling each others’ worry.

In the hall, Fang Yuan sat at one side, he gritted his teeth as his expression turned unsightly.

Earlier, Xie Han Mo rejected the investigator and protected Fang Yuan, this escalated the rumors, eventually, the Merman Sacred Court decided to hold the Sea God Ceremony again to decide on the saintess once more.

“This is a scheme, they made use of your kindness and knew you would not abandon me, thus, this situation arose.” Fang Yuan sighed deeply, feeling like he had implicated Xie Han Mo.

Xie Han Mo glanced at him, smiling: “Fang Yuan, no need to feel responsible. If we abandoned you earlier, they would spread rumors that I am old and callous, it would still affect my reputation.”

“Saintess, no need to console me at this point.” Fang Yuan smiled bitterly: “The effect and severity of both cases are vastly different, we have already worked together for so long, how would I not know?”

Xie Han Mo smiled: “Alright, forget about this, it does not help the situation.”

Fang Yuan and both guards quickly adjusted their mindsets as their expressions changed.

Xie Han Mo added: “The saintess position is not easy to hold onto, the moment I started to investigate the corruption, someone tried to drag me down. This means that the issue of corruption among the Sacred Court’s elders has gotten very severe! Don’t be too pessimistic, even though a new Sea God Ceremony is held, I have not lost my qualifications, right? It is not so easy to nurture a new saintess.”

Places with people will have competition for benefits.

This saying was appropriate for the mermen as well.

Mermen also had schemes and conflict of interests.

The saintess had high status, if the forces in the merman tribe can nurture their own saintess, for the following period of time, they would have some political advantage and would be able to gain more benefits.

Normally speaking, mermaid girls who could compete for the saintess position had deep backgrounds or were backed by one or two large forces.

...

In the underwater Sacred City, the singing gradually stopped, as intense sounds of drumming could be heard.

In the square, only a few mermaid girls were left, they danced without showing fatigue, they were extremely determined to become the saintess.

Fang Yuan stood outside the square, looking in, these seven mermaid girls were all beautiful, some were enchanting, some were youthful, some were cute, and some were elegant.

There was a huge spirit spring at the center of the square, it was called the Sea God’s Spring, water sprayed upwards and carried an elderly mermaid granny, she was the grand elder of this merman tribe.

The grand elder looked at the seven mermaid girls as she nodded, saying: “The first round of the saintess test, golden needle in black oil.”

Saying so, more than ten strength path Gu Masters carried huge vats into the square.

Thud thud thud...

After placing down the vats with loud sounds, each of the mermaid girls had one in front of them. The vats were larger than their bodies by several times, they could only see the inside after floating upwards.

The vats were filled with thick black oil, the first test was to find a tiny golden needle in the designated time.

“I request for my follower to take my stage.” The white-scaled mermaid Su Yi looked at the huge water vat as she said calmly.

“Approved.” The grand elder looked at Su Yi deeply.

“Don’t be nervous, don’t be nervous.” Xia Lin encouraged herself continuously as she walked into the square while feeling uneasy.

“What’s going on? The great Lady Su Yi has a rank two Gu Master as her follower?”

“Calm down, Su Yi’s decision means that this mermaid is more than she seems.”

Everyone talked among themselves.

“It’s her?” Fang Yuan saw Xia Lin and his brows rose, he did not expect this girl to become the follower of the most favored saintess candidate.

Gather oil Gu!

Xia Lin floated to the water vat and used this rank five Gu worm.

Instantly, the black oil in the vat started to move, it was drawn out by Xia Lin and gathered in her hands.

The crowd went into a commotion.

“The aura of a rank five Gu!”

“She is clearly a rank two Gu Master, but she can use rank five Gu? Did I see wrongly?”

“I understand, this must be the rank five gather oil Gu that has been the hot topic recently.”

“So this mermaid has such a quality Gu worm, no wonder Su Yi allowed her to become her follower!”

Gather oil Gu’s effect was no joke, after a while, the vat became empty, only a golden needle was left sparkling at the bottom of the vat.

The crowd was roused.

Countless heated gazes landed on Xia Lin.

Xia Lin was even more nervous now, she flushed red and showed a cute expression of not knowing what to do.

Su Yi looked at her and smiled, thinking: “I was right to recruit her into my group.”

In the first test, Su Yi relied on Xia Lin’s stellar performance to gain a huge boost in reputation.

Fang Yuan’s eyes were dark like the abyss, looking at the crowd leaving, he thought: “Six out of seven passed the first test, they came prepared for this. Evidently, the test content was leaked prior to this.”

...

Pale green flames burned in front of Xie Han Mo, forming a path of flames.

Qiu Shuang, who was also a white-scaled mermaid walked in calmly, standing at the other end of the flame road as she looked at Xie Han Mo mockingly: “Former saintess, your turn.”

“Damn it! This eerie fire burns the soul, special Gu worms are needed to resist it. We were already amply prepared, but to think that this first test would be so specific!”

“And the worst thing is, Qiu Shuang came prepared with the proper Gu worms, she can resist the eerie fire. Is this luck? Hmph! She clearly knows the test content, this is Frost Tide tribe’s scheme, they are colluding and cheating openly!”

Both guards were very angry.

“Let me.” Fang Yuan walked towards the frowning Xie Han Mo.

“You?” Xie Han Mo looked at Fang Yuan with crystal clear eyes.

“Trust me, I am confident in this.” Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with bright light, looking at Xie Han Mo directly.

The two looked at each other for a moment, before Xie Han Mo turned away.

“Be careful, this eerie fire is not simple... if you cannot endure it, you can just step down.” Xie Han Mo said.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, turning around and taking huge strides into the eerie fire.

Pain!

An intense pain originating from his soul assaulted Fang Yuan’s entire body in an instant.

Fang Yuan shuddered as he walked with great difficulty.

He gritted his teeth until they bled.

His eyes were wide opened, they were also tearing apart.

His soul was burned by the flame as it melted, thankfully, he had two lifetime’s accumulation, and was an otherworldly demon, the eerie fire was less effective on him than on others.

He would not give up midway, because he knew that by taking Xie Han Mo’s place, if he failed, Xie Han Mo would fail too.

When he finally walked through the eerie fire road, everyone went wild, countless shocked gazes gathered on him.

Many mermen were moved.

Fang Yuan tried to smile but at the next moment, he fainted.

But right when he was about to land on the ground, Xie Han Mo arrived and held him in her arms.

“Don’t worry, I will not waste your effort.” Xie Han Mo looked at Fang Yuan deeply before turning to look at Qiu Shuang. For the first time, her gentle eyes revealed a cold and sharp light.

Thanks to Fang Yuan’s desperate attempt, Xie Han Mo passed the difficult trap set specially for her.

The second, third, and fourth test...

She performed perfectly, the other competitors soon fell short, eventually, only mermaid Qiu Shuang was left.

“It seems that Lady Xie Han Mo will very likely retain her position as saintess.” Outside the square, Fang Yuan was still pale as he sat down weakly, expressing joy on his face.

“It was all thanks to you Fang Yuan, without your performance in the first round, we would not have gotten this far.”

“Hahaha, you got past the flame road, it was shocking to everyone. A few days later, you woke up, do you know that news of your survival shocked countless mermen in the Sacred City!”

Both guards laughed loudly.

Fang Yuan stopped his joyful expression as she said: “Be careful, the situation is in our favor, the other party will not stand by.”

Fang Yuan had expected Frost Tide tribe leader to act, but he did not expect that it would be so vicious.

In the house, the red scaled guard knelt on the ground, his face was red: “Saintess, please let me battle, I need to clear up the accusation and humiliation that they have dealt to me. How could I possibly bully a widow?!”

Xie Han Mo sighed: “Get up, I know you well, but this is clearly the enemy’s plot. If you charge out like this, their schemes will succeed.”

The blue scaled guard was worried: “This is not an ordinary widow, she is Bu Su Lian, the wife of the former third elder of the Sacred Court. They are simply too vicious, the investigator will come soon to arrest him for trial. In that case, he would not be able to join the test, our strength will fall greatly!”

Fang Yuan added: “This wife of the former third elder of the Sacred Court was willing to sacrifice her reputation to accuse him. She must have a close relationship with Frost Tide tribe leader, this corruption is extremely severe, otherwise, she would not have to act personally. Since they set this trap, they must be amply prepared, if we try to clear up the situation, we would fall into their scheme. We can only play along with this and find a way out.”

“How do we do that?”

“Very simple, I will take the blame.” Fang Yuan said plainly.

Both guards stared with wide opened eyes as they started at Fang Yuan.

“No way.” Xie Han Mo rejected this instantly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1665: The Story of the Sea God and Mermaid

Even though Xie Han Mo understood that if Fang Yuan took the blame, the situation would be resolved, she still rejected him without hesitation.

But this way, Xie Han Mo and the rest would be in a passive spot.

The turning point happened three days later, Xie Han Mo received some information.

Xie Han Mo looked at the information as she became stunned before sighing: “Qiu Shuang is no longer pure.”

She gave the intel to her guards and Fang Yuan to see.

After looking at it, their expressions changed.

Qiu Shuang was the saintess candidate that Frost Tide tribe leader supported, she was extremely popular during this Sea God Ceremony, she was the most likely person to take the position of saintess from Xie Han Mo.

But to think that she had lost her virginity.

Only mermaids who were virgins could compete for the saintess position, this was the first condition.

The red scaled guard was extremely happy: “Great, to think that this Qiu Shuang is not a virgin, with this information, they are history!”

The blue scaled guard was very calm: “The Sea God Ceremony is the most important ceremony of our tribe, it has always been inspected strictly, how did Qiu Shuang get through the inspection? Unless our tribe’s corruption has already extended to the priest? Then the situation is too severe.”

Fang Yuan frowned: “We need to remember something, if we announce this now, everyone might think that we are trying to protect red scale and this is just our accusation. How reliable is the information? If this is part of their plan, we would be in trouble...”

1Xie Han Mo shook her head: “This is definitely reliable, Qiu Shuang is supported by Frost Tide tribe’s leader, we are supported by the grand elder, this was given to me by her. Even though we do not have evidence, I believe that as long as we inspect Qiu Shuang’s background, we would be able to find out if she is a virgin by asking another priest.”

Fang Yuan understood now that Xie Han Mo was able to become the saintess because she was supported by the grand elder of the Merman Sacred Court.

Among all the higher-ups, grand elder was the fairest and most lenient one, she had great authority. But because she was too lenient, everyone became corrupted, her support towards Xie Han Mo was also an attempt to correct her mistakes.

Everything that followed went as Xie Han Mo predicted.

After Qiu Shuang was reported, she was investigated upon and her story was exposed, she had really lost her virginity.

This information was too shocking, the Merman Sacred Court could not keep it secret. As news spread, the entire Sacred City was in a commotion, countless Gu Masters gasped.

“This is likely the biggest scandal in our Merman Sacred Court for the last thousand years!”

“Qiu Shuang was truly disrespectful, such a desecration towards the Sea God, she has to be punished.”

“Killing her will not soothe our rage!”

Anger was not just in the commoners, the higher-ups of the Merman Sacred Court were furious too, the punishment towards Qiu Shuang was rapidly decided.

A few days later, Qiu Shuang's head fell off her head and onto the ground, she died.

Bam!

A high quality cup was smashed onto the ground by Frost Tide tribe's leader, it broke into pieces.

"Xie Han Mo, you were too much!" Frost Tide tribe's leader growled, his eyes were bloodshot.

"I told you long ago to control yourself when drinking. After Qiu Shuang's matter, as the person who supported her, the higher-ups will no longer give you their attention." In the room, there was a mermaid noble lady, she drank tea slowly, she showed no fear towards the angry Frost Tide tribe leader.

Frost Tide tribe leader gritted his teeth, he said to the mermaid noble lady: "Bu Su Lian, I do not need your reminder. Our allies will not turn on us after just this small issue. If Xie Han Mo retains her saintess position, they will also suffer and die. So even if they hate me, even if they do not want to see me, they will have to force themselves to work with me!"

Bu Su Lian said plainly: "You are right, but now that Qiu Shuang is dead, how will you defeat Xie Han Mo? Our best pawn has already been destroyed."

"No, no." Frost Tide tribe leader laughed sinisterly: "You can rest assured, I still have methods left."

"Oh? I am listening." Bu Su Lian sat up straight.

Frost Tide tribe leader kept it a secret: "You will know in a few days."

A few days later.

On the square of Sacred City, mermaid Dong Lei said under everyone's watchful eyes: "I am willing to take Qiu Shuang's place and continue with the Sea God Ceremony."

"Who is Dong Lei?"

"She was one of Qiu Shuang's followers."

"To think that Frost Tide tribe's leader had this pawn prepared."

"According to our tribe rules, sisters can take each others' place, Dong Lei can totally replace Qiu Shuang and attend the Sea God Ceremony to contest for the saintess position."

Everyone discussed.

The origin of the Sea God Ceremony was a legendary story among the mermen.

In the story, the first batch of mermen lived in Eastern Sea, they created a small fishing village.

One day, a huge sea beast attacked the island, it created a tsunami around the island, the fishing village was almost about to be destroyed.

To save the villagers in the fishing village, mermaid Ah Qing knelt at the cliff and prayed to the Sea God.

The Sea God heard her prayer and said: “Oh Ah Qing, I love to hear beautiful singing. If you can sing three satisfactory songs for me, I will chase the sea beast away and calm the sea, defending the fishing village.”

Ah Qing was overjoyed, she quickly agreed.

She started to sing the first song by the cliff, it was enchanting. After she finished, the Sea God savored the melody as he calmed the sea.

Ah Qing sang the second song, her beautiful voice mesmerized the Sea God, seaweed danced to her singing, prawns and fish gathered by her side as they listened.

Ah Qing wanted to sing the third song but at that point, she no longer had any strength. After singing for two days and two nights, she was too tired.

After returning home, she called her sister Ah Ya and told her everything before dying from exhaustion.

Ah Ya was very upset but she listened to her sister Ah Qing’s wish, she came to the cliff and said to the Sea God: “Oh Sea God, I will take my sister’s place and sing the third song for you.”

Sea God said: “Go ahead.”

Ah Ya started to sing, her voice was filled with agony and misery, but also firm determination. After she finished, the Sea God was pleased and the sea beast left, the fishing village was safe once again.

When choosing the saintess, mermen would set up many tests during the Sea God Ceremony.

These tests had varying contents, but the final round would always be the same, since the start of the ceremony’s history.

That was a singing competition among mermaids.

They would get on the stage and sing on the specially made altar-like Gu house.

Everyone would get to sing three times, from the results, they would choose the sole saintess.

All the tests before this were just elimination rounds.

If during the Sea God Ceremony, all of the contestants got eliminated, then the saintess position would remain empty.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1666: Intercept

The sea at night was turbulent with vicious waves, wild winds were howling.

From the black depths of the sea, a chain made of pearls of light started to shine. Next, intense drumming and zither music could be heard reverberating in the waves.

The tens of merman warriors wore ancient armor made from seashells, they held up a huge white shell shield. Behind them, mermen danced and sang, surrounding Xie Han Mo and Dong Lei. Behind them, countless mermen were watching this final test with high spirits.

The seashell floated to the surface of the sea, waves landed on the huge shell and caused waves to splash.

Surrounding the seashell, merman warriors did their best to stabilize it.

The huge shell slowly opened up, this was a natural stage.

The seashell had a great origin, it was left behind by the desolate beast giant music shell, there was a vast number of sound path dao marks on the seashell, even if a mortal stood inside, their voice would be spread far and wide.

Dong Lei was the first to ascend the shell.

Countless mermen floated to the surface of the sea, watching in anticipation.

At a corner, in a boat-like Gu house, Bu Su Lian watched as she said to Frost Tide tribe’s leader: “Are you so confident in Dong Lei? The first person to perform has a natural disadvantage.”

Frost Tide tribe’s leader smiled: “Just watch, I cannot explain it in words.”

Bu Su Lian looked at Frost Tide tribe’s leader deeply before turning towards the giant music shell.

Dong Lei started to sing.

Her voice was clear and elegant, it was quite mesmerizing, all of the mermen started to indulge in this beautiful song.

At once, due to the giant music shell’s effect, in the radius of a thousand li, Dong Lei’s beautiful singing could be heard. Even the torrential tides were suppressed.

Mermen were born with a throat that could sing better than other species, they could produce incredibly beautiful singing.

1According to human standards, each merman was a natural born singer.

This was because each merman’s body had abundant water path dao marks. And in their throats, there was a particular cartilage that was filled with sound path dao marks.

There was a point in history where humans slaughtered mermen to take away the sound path cartilage in their throats, it was an excellent sound path Gu material.

And the mermaids competing to become saintess had even better singing than most mermen.

Those who live near the sea would often hear similar rumors about sailors who would get mesmerized by the singing of mermaids, they would forget time, forget their direction, they would not notice even if their ship hit a reef.

This was not an exaggeration, it was the truth.

Dong Lei's singing was superb, most of the people were listening in enjoyment, only Fang Yuan and the rest became furious, their expressions were ugly and they frowned tightly. Even Xie Han Mo, who was usually calm, had a change of expression, sadness and shock was expressed in her eyes.

“What is going on?”

“Why is Dong Lei singing the song that we prepared?!”

The red scaled and blue scaled guards were furious with wide opened eyes.

Fang Yuan's expression was grim, he gritted his teeth: “Isn't this obvious? There is a spy among us, he informed the enemy of our song!”

Both guards looked at each other before turning to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan looked at them fearlessly: “Only the four of us know what songs we prepared, the traitor must be one of you. Who is it?”

Xie Han Mo could not be the traitor, so among Fang Yuan, blue scale and red scale, one of them had to be the traitor.

“Bullshit!”

“You are the traitor!”

Both guards were furious with red faces as they denied it.

Xie Han Mo sighed, shaking her head: “There might not be a spy, they might have found out about our preparations through special information path methods.”

“Hahaha.” Far away, Frost Tide tribe's leader laughed loudly in his Gu house.

Bu Su Lian had been observing Xie Han Mo and the rest long ago, seeing their expressions, she understood as her eyes shined: “You planted a spy near her?”

Frost Tide tribe's leader laughed continuously: “Of course! Xie Han Mo is too young and too naive to compete with me. Do you know the huge price I paid in order to get a spy this close to her?”

Bu Su Lian's eyes flickered with bright light: “As expected and befitting of Frost Tide tribe's leader, the price you paid is worth it. Now that Dong Lei has sang her song, Xie Han Mo cannot use it again, she is almost helpless now that she has no song to sing.”

Xie Han Mo had truly fallen deeply into the plot of Frost Tide tribe's leader!

The final round of the saintess competition was to sing three songs. These three songs needed special preparation, sound path Gu worms were needed for them, including lots of practice.

Each song needed to produce a different effect.

The first song was to calm the sea waves. The second song was to attract living beings, and the third song was to repel sea beasts.

Thus, even though Xie Han Mo prepared three songs, after Dong Lei stole the first song, her remaining two songs were different and could not be used in its place.

“What do we do?” Both guards were extremely flustered and anxious.

“Damn it, damn it, we got so far but still fell for a trap at this moment.”

“It is no use, it is too late to prepare now!”

“This must be the scheme of Frost Tide tribe’s leader, we will expose it and ruin his reputation!” Red scale screamed.

Fang Yuan looked at him like he was an idiot: “Do you have proof? Who would believe us? They would use this chance to counterattack and accuse you instead, what do we do then?”

“Oh.” Red-scaled guard was stunned.

Xie Han Mo sighed deeply: “In that case, forget it.”

“Saintess?” Both guards were stunned.

Xie Han Mo smiled bitterly: “You can still leave now, hurry. While there is still some time, leave this place.”

Xie Han Mo would lose the competition for the saintess position, she would no longer be the saintess. This way, she would face the attack of the new saintess Dong Lei and Frost Tide tribe’s leader, she would have a terrible end.

To not implicate her three followers, even if there was a possible spy among them, Xie Han Mo wanted to fight for some time.

“Saintess...” Understanding Xie Han Mo’s intention, both of her guards started to choke with tears.

This situation had attracted everyone’s attention.

“What happened to Xie Han Mo?”

“Something bad seems to have happened!”

“They are panicking, haha, it seems that Lady Dong Lei’s singing has sent them into despair!”

“Xie Han Mo is finished.” Inside the Gu house, Bu Su Lian sighed deeply.

Frost Tide tribe’s leader smiled sinisterly: “Even though I can’t deal with that foolish old grand elder, I will definitely torture that Xie Han Mo after this to vent my anger and hatred!”

Dong Lei stepped down the stage as she raised her eyebrows: “I have already calmed the sea by five feet, I will anticipate sister Xie Han Mo’s performance next.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1667: White Moonlight

2

Xie Han Mo looked at her deeply in the eye as she ascended the stage.

She had just entered the stage when she got stunned.

“Why are you...” She looked at Fang Yuan who was beside her with deep shock.

Fang Yuan interrupted her: “As your follower, I am of course qualified to be your accompaniment.”

“Quickly leave...” Xie Han Mo swiftly said, but anxiety was all over her face for once.

“You want to sing the same song? Even if you sing better than Dong Lei, the rules will disqualify you. Trust me, I have a song for this.” Fang Yuan interrupted Xie Han Mo as he transmitted.

Xie Han Mo’s heart wavered.

Songs could not be changed easily, because they needed to be paired with Gu worms and needed lots of practice.

By changing the song, the Gu worms used also needed to be modified.

In this situation, Xie Han Mo could no longer change her Gu worms, this meant that the new song and the original song needed to have the same rhythm and melody.

It might be possible given a hundred days of preparation, but in this rushed situation, the chances were close to zero.

“The song is not the same of course, but don’t forget that I had participated in our song composition. I have a similar song here, but I need you to adapt to it on the spot, take note of the cooperation between my song and the Gu worms.” Fang Yuan transmitted: “And these are the lyrics and tune.”

Xie Han Mo was stunned before nodding: “Okay.”

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply: “Then let’s start.”

Xie Han Mo breathed in deeply, she shut her eyes, this was her usual habit before singing.

Everyone became quiet.

They waited quietly...

And waited...

“Why is she not singing yet?” Gradually, some people became impatient.

“Hahaha, how can they sing? They have no songs to sing!” Frost Tide tribe’s leader laughed loudly with a face flushed red.

“Oh, sorry, can anyone lend me a zither Gu?” Fang Yuan broke the silence.

Everyone: “...”

You are the accompaniment but in this important Sea God Ceremony, you did not even prepare a zither Gu?”

Is it really okay to be so lax?

“I need a rank three zither Gu, can anyone lend me one?” Fang Yuan added, looking towards the grand elder.

The grand elder understood his words, Xie Han Mo met with an accident, she had anticipated this and quickly asked someone to send a zither Gu.

Fang Yuan obtained the zither Gu and said: “This is too important, let me refine the Gu on the spot.”

Everyone: “...”

What? At the last round of the Sea God Ceremony, you want to refine Gu?

Are you serious?

What was this human Gu Master thinking? He was toying with everyone!

The mood of all the mermen turned bad.

Frost Tide tribe’s leader quickly instructed his lackeys, a voice suddenly resounded: “You are purposely stalling for time!”

Everyone was about to clamor when Fang Yuan shouted loudly: “Are you saying that the Sea God Ceremony has a rule against refining Gu? This is for the sake of the song, we will start after the Gu is refined.”

Grand elder quickly added: “There are no such rules indeed, I will allow it. Quickly refine the Gu and start, what does everyone think?”

The other elders looked at each other, some wanted to speak while others stayed silent.

Lackeys of Frost Tide tribe’s leader shouted again: “The Sea God Ceremony is such an important ceremony, you want all of us mermen to wait for your Gu refinement?”

Fang Yuan quickly rebuked: “I am refining Gu for the Sea God Ceremony, are you all unable to wait a little bit for this important ceremony? Whoever has no patience can stand up now! You can leave right away.”

Everyone went silent.

“You have a sharp tongue! But when you end up in my hands, I will make sure I smash all your teeth and pull out your tongue.” Frost Tide tribe’s leader snickered.

On the giant shell that was floating on the sea’s surface, the merman warriors were exerting themselves while stabilizing it.

Some of the mermen floated to the surface, some only had their heads above the water, but all of them were looking at Fang Yuan refine his zither Gu.

1Xie Han Mo was instead ignored.

She stood beside Fang Yuan feeling very strange. She had attended the Sea God Ceremony once before and became the saintess. She had seen countless Sea God Ceremonies, but never had such a thing ever happened!

Fang Yuan’s refinement speed became faster and faster, this was because the zither Gu’s owner cooperated with him.

After getting the zither Gu, Fang Yuan stood up and went behind Xie Han Mo, saying confidently: “Alright, the real show starts now.”

“Finally.” The mermen let out breaths of air, feeling resentful.

“Go ahead and sing, I want to see what song you can come up with!” Frost Tide tribe’s leader snickered.

Below the stage, the grand elder and both guards had worried expressions.

Xie Han Mo shut her eyes.

At this moment, the zither started playing.

Fang Yuan had activated the zither Gu, it let out a long and deep melody, the tune was extremely beautiful to listen to.

Xie Han Mo shut her eyes, she started to sing1 — 1The white moonlight is somewhere in my heart.

It is so bright, yet so icy cold.

Everyone has their own sadness.

Wanting to conceal it, but it just became more obvious.

...

Everyone was silent, only the sound of waves could be heard.

Her beautiful voice intoxicated everyone, they could not stop savoring it.

...

The white moonlight lightens the horizons of the world.

It’s in my heart, but not by my side.

I could not wipe the tears off your face back then.

The road is too long, I could not seek forgiveness.

...

The tune was sorrowful but simple and elegant, it progressed smoothly with each verse, a feeling of intense sadness and agony filled everyone’s hearts.

Xie Han Mo had a pure and penetrating voice, she was gentle and warm, just like the pale white moonlight that seemed cold and also a little warm on the inside.

The giant shell started to emit a white light, the waves did not seem to want to disturb her beautiful singing, they became weaker.

...

The white moonlight lightens the horizons of the world.

The fuller it is, the more loneliness I feel.

Unable to wipe the tears in my recollection.

The road is too long, how can I make amendments to you?

...

Xie Han Mo was also engrossed in it, her gaze shifted towards Fang Yuan, who was standing there activating the zither Gu with his full concentration.

She thought to herself: “Is there sorrow in your heart as well?”

Countless mermen shed tears.

The pain of love and affection, these tears were hidden deep in their hearts.

Was there true fulfillment in this world?

Loneliness always existed.

...

The white moonlight is somewhere in my heart.

It is so bright, yet so icy cold.

Everyone has their own sadness.

Wanting to conceal it but it just keeps growing.

...

As the song ended, the crowd remained silent.

In the Gu house, Frost Tide tribe’s leader was stiff like a statue, shock expressed all over his face.

The sea was calm and the dark clouds scattered, pure moonlight shone down on the giant seashell, enveloping Xie Han Mo and Fang Yuan.

The two turned around slightly, looking at each other.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1668: Too Naive

As the music ended, the mermen started to converse among themselves.

“What song is this? This is the first time I have heard it, it is simply too amazing.”

“Did you all notice, the song was superb but Xie Han Mo was not skillful, her Gu worm manipulation had lots of errors.” Many mermen talked about it with strange expressions.

The true reason was that Fang Yuan and Xie Han Mo did not practise this earlier. If they had even one practice, they would not make such mistakes.

But even so, reaching such a level of cooperation in their first attempt, Xie Han Mo’s personal attainment was truly profound.

“Right now, the sea is calm and the weather has changed, the dark clouds scattered and the moonlight reappeared. Regardless of Xie Han Mo’s mistakes, the results are evident.”

“This should be a draw, in fact, Xie Han Mo should have a slight lead.”

“It will depend on the next two songs.”

The mermen were getting more excited about the rest of the Sea God Ceremony.

The grand elder could notice many things, she let out a breath of air as the worry in her heart lifted.

“What is going on?!” In the Gu house, Frost Tide tribe’s leader screamed.

“It seems that although your scheme succeeded, an accident occurred.” Bu Su Lian squinted her eyes, focusing her gaze on Fang Yuan, she sighed in amazement: “This man is not so simple, no wonder Xie Han Mo took interest in him. I am a song expert, this is likely his own creation, this shows that this human has very high attainment in sound path.”

2Frost Tide tribe’s leader expressed his suspicions: “There are countless songs in this world, how can you be sure that this was his creation?”

Bu Su Lian smiled lightly, looking at Frost Tide tribe’s leader with an expression of disdain in her eyes: “You don’t understand.”

Frost Tide tribe’s leader’s face became even darker: “Bu Su Lian, can you speak clearly?!”

Bu Su Lian chuckled coldly, ignoring Frost Tide tribe’s leader as she looked towards Fang Yuan with glistening eyes.

Others would fear Frost Tide tribe’s leader’s political power but Bu Su Lian was an exception.

This was not only because she was the spouse of a former tribe elder, but also because of her own talent and schemes.

But Bu Su Lian guessed wrongly in the end, Fang Yuan was not the creator, this song was originally from Earth.

“This song is unique and unheard of, it has to be a new creation by you. To think that you would have such high attainment in sound path, Fang Yuan.” Xie Han Mo walked down the stage and transmitted to Fang Yuan, showing appreciation and praise in her tone.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly: “I am flattered, you saw for yourself, I even had to borrow a zither Gu, I do not have such a high sound path attainment.”

“No need to be humble, being able to create such a song means that your sound path attainment is beyond ordinary, you might have a future if you change to cultivating sound path.” Xie Han Mo looked at Fang Yuan with a sincere and bright gaze.

1Fang Yuan had already anticipated this.

He did not want to explain it, because that was not important and he could not explain it clearly either.

“The important thing now are the next two songs, if I am not wrong...” Fang Yuan hesitated.

They walked down the stage as Dong Lei went up.

Fang Yuan and Xie Han Mo might have had an impressive performance, but she was not flustered, she remained calm and composed.

She started to sing, her moving voice attracted lots of fish groups to her.

“As expected.” Fang Yuan snickered.

Xie Han Mo’s gaze also became increasingly cold.

Both guards looked at each other with bright red faces: “This bitch stole our song again!”

“Don’t worry, I have a song prepared.” Fang Yuan smiled with deep confidence.

After Dong Lei went down the stage, the two of them went up again.

Fang Yuan played the music1

while Xie Han Mo sang and danced.

...

When did the bright moon first appear? One raises a cup and asks the blue sky.

One does not know in the celestial palace, what year it is this evening.

...

Once the song started, the atmosphere changed, all of the mermen shut their eyes in enjoyment.

...

I wish to ride the wind and return there, yet I fear the jade towers; in a high dwelling, one cannot bear the cold.

Starting to dance with one’s own shadow, how can it compare to life in the mortal world?

The moon revolves around the red pavilion, hanging upon the silk windows, the light shines upon the sleepless.

...

Xie Han Mo thought about about the time she was saintess, even though she had high authority, she was all alone, she became filled with deep emotions at this moment.

I wish to return by riding the winds, but the position of saintess is like the jade tower that locks me in. The cold atmosphere is chilling, I cannot sleep, who is here to dance with me?

...

I should not have resentment; but why is the moon always full at times of separation?

People feel sorrow and joy upon partings and reunions, the moon can be dark or bright, full or crescent.

These problems have existed since ancient times. Yet one hopes for longevity, a thousand miles apart, seeing the moon’s beauty together.

...

As the song ended, the world went silent.

Fish, prawns, turtles, crabs, all of the aquatic animals floated on the surface of the sea, scattered all over the place.

Birds were fluttering in the sky, many were birds that flew in the day, they were drawn over from their slumber by this beautiful song.

Beautiful lyrics and an enchanting tune, it pierced deep into everyone’s hearts, the mermen could not help themselves but listen.

Xie Han Mo looked at Fang Yuan, she thought: “Was this a song he made for me?”

She could feel resonance in the lyrics, she felt consolation and warmth from it. She was pure like the icy jade, but was maligned by outsiders, right now, all of the sadness and annoyance in her heart had faded, none of the rumors from before could affect her heart anymore.

“He is someone who knows me.” At once, Xie Han Mo felt an indescribable feeling in her heart, she was truly moved.

The results were clear, Fang Yuan and Xie Han Mo won by a margin again.

Dong Lei’s face turned pale below the stage, she understood that if not for Xie Han Mo and Fang Yuan’s imperfect cooperation that led to certain mistakes, she would not even be able to sing the third song.

“This person is a huge threat!” Frost Tide tribe’s leader gritted his teeth, slamming his fist onto the window of the Gu house.

“You finally realized?” Bu Su Lian said plainly, mockery was in her words.

Frost Tide tribe’s leader snorted, he did not want to argue with Bu Su Lian.

He needed to resolve this problem now, because at this rate, after the third song, Xie Han Mo was bound to win.

“Fang Yuan is it? To think he is such a problem!”

“I need to get rid of him!”

Frost Tide tribe’s leader was determined to do this, but felt a huge headache. In normal times, he had countless methods against Fang Yuan, but now during the Sea God Ceremony, under everyone’s watchful eyes, he could do close to nothing.

“What do I do?” Frost Tide tribe’s leader thought about it rapidly, his forehead was covered in sweat.

After a long period of consideration, Frost Tide tribe’s leader finally acted.

“Fang Yuan, I am Frost Tide tribe’s leader!” He directly transmitted to Fang Yuan, this was the most useful choice of action.

Fang Yuan’s expression changed but he did not reply.

Frost Tide tribe’s leader chuckled: “You can just listen to me, I know you are a smart guy but you are too young, you have aspirations that are too unrealistic and naive.”

Fang Yuan laughed coldly as he replied: “I am not naive, this is my ideal, you won’t understand.”

“That’s why I said you are foolish, lad, don’t think that you two are basking in fame now by standing there, you are just pawns. Look at the flag fluttering in the wind, its foundation is the pole. Think about it, what are you relying on?”

“The grand elder? Just go ask around, what kind of person is she? She had the political power to suppress our faction but she chose to let you people be the vanguard. When Xie Han Mo investigated the corruption case, did she help you? She might have given you some clues or what not, but trust me, it was really not much of an effort.”

Frost Tide tribe’s leader was quite eloquent, he added: “Or rather, even if you win and defend the title of saintess, so what? Do you think I will die? No, Frost Tide tribe is the largest faction in the Sacred Court, if I die, the entire Sacred Court will be in turmoil or even break apart. The grand elder does not have the guts or determination to do that, she only wants to keep me in check and prevent me from acting out of line.”

“So in the end, no matter what you find out, I will still continue to live as Frost Tide tribe’s leader, at worst, I will sacrifice a few scapegoats and stop my overbearing actions.”

“In the Sea God Ceremony, almost every saintess candidate is backed by their own force. Do you think this is simply a competition for the saintess position? No, this is a game, this is a way for the higher-ups to distribute resources for the next few decades without internal conflict. The force that has a saintess will get a bigger share of the pie, those who don’t will receive less.”

“Fang Yuan, you might hate or detest these games that we play in the dark, but you must understand that in this sea, darkness is the true ruler. The so-called light merely shines at the surface of the sea, ordinary people might enjoy or indulge in its dazzling beauty, thinking that light is the truth of the sea, but they are just... too naive.”

Fang Yuan was silent.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1669: Rejection

Inside the blue dragon whale grotto-heaven, the Merman Sacred City.

The atmosphere in the inn was heavy.

“What do we do?”

“In the next test, Zhao Lu’s follower will be taking part. That person is famous in the seas, with him around, we have no chance of winning.”

The two nannies had grim expressions.

White-scaled merman Su Yi sat at the center as she held a cup in her hand, she was in a daze while looking at the tea inside.

“Missy, you cannot hesitate anymore.”

“That’s right, the Sea God Ceremony has already gone on for so long, only us and Zhao Lu are left, the rest have been eliminated. After the next round is the final test, once we get past this hurdle, we will be able to vie for the saintess position.”

The two nannies urged anxiously.

Su Yi sighed: “But what can we do now?”

The nannies quickly came forward to Su Yi’s side.

“Missy, didn’t our tribe find a strong expert that can fight against the enemy?”

“That’s right, as long as we get him to fight, even if we cannot win, we will not get eliminated at least.”

Su Yi’s gaze was lingering on the cup, she said in a long sigh: “I understand your suggestion, but did you forget something, I can only have four followers in this competition, these spots are all used up now. Even if the tribe invites an expert, we cannot use him.”

The two nannies looked at each other with bright gazes.

“So that’s it, Missy had such plans already but she could not say it personally.” They understood the reason now.

Among them, one nanny said in a soft voice: “Missy, this matter can be easy or difficult depending on us. We just need to abandon one follower!”

“That’s right.” The other nanny added: “According to the Sea God Ceremony’s rules, we cannot abandon followers easily, but if they are corrupted or have committed crimes, for the purity of the Sea God Ceremony and the saintess, we can expel them with proper reason. With that freed follower position, we can then invite the expert into our group, right?”

Su Yi’s expression changed as she rejected: “This is not appropriate. The Sea God Ceremony is such a huge event, if a scandal occurs, that person’s reputation would be tarnished for life, they would never be able to clear their name. All of my followers have helped me greatly, how can I repay gratitude with enmity?”

“Oh Missy, a great person would not mind small sacrifices, so what if we have to give up someone?”

“I would suggest we target that Xia Lin. She has no background and is a mermaid that nobody will care about, who knows what luck she had to be able to obtain that gather oil Gu.” Seeing Su Yi’s displeasure, Nanny Rong added: “Of course, we are not framing her, we are trying to move her with logic, Xia Lin looks like an understanding young lady after all. Missy, leave this to me, I will negotiate with her, it is okay if we pay a small price. Compared to the saintess position, it is evident which is more important!”

“This...” Su Yi hesitated.

The other nanny quickly added: “Missy, we are not forcing or harming Xia Lin. We are seeking her cooperation, in any case, so what if she loses some reputation? Xia Lin is a poor girl, she needs some materialistic gains more. It is very likely that after hearing our suggestion, she might become very happy and would want to deal with us, she is merely trading reputation for huge benefits!”

“Leave, let me consider it first...” Su Yi frowned as she asked them to leave.

1The two nannies looked at each other before leaving.

Days later, rumors regarding Xia Lin spread throughout the city.

“That’s her, the shameless mermaid who betrayed her benefactor Su Yi just to gain the favor of the rich and noble!”

“No wonder Lady Su Yi was always at a disadvantage, she had a traitor after all.”

“I want nothing more than to tear the tendons and skin out of this scoundrel.”

“She is truly shameless, I can’t believe she is still coming to find Su Yi at this time!”

Xia Lin bit her lips, walking up the inn’s stairs under everyone’s accusations.

“Stand there.” Halfway through, mermaid Nanny Rong blocked Xia Lin with a cold expression.

“I was framed, I want to see Sister Su Yi!” Xia Lin raised her head, looking at Nanny Rong with an anxious expression.

Nanny Rong laughed coldly: “Xia Lin, you still want to act? Missy was very upset after hearing the news, you still want to see her now during a crucial moment of the Sea God Ceremony? You are truly vicious, you want to annoy our Missy and cause her to make mistakes in the competition later?”

“That’s not it, Nanny Rong, listen to me...”

“Listen to what? What is there to say! You are a shameless scum, we were blind to accept you into our group. Scram!” Nanny Rong lost her patience, she screamed in a shrill voice, being very overbearing.

“You don’t believe me but I believe in Sister Su Yi, if I don’t get to see her, I will not leave!” Xia Lin’s eyes were red, a light of stubbornness flickered in them.

“You are forcing me to chase you away?” Nanny Rong said sinisterly.

“Stop.” At this time, Su Yi appeared, walking down the stairs.

“Sister Su Yi!” Xia Lin was overjoyed, she wanted to move forward but Nanny Rong’s arms blocked her path.

“Xia Lin...” Su Yi said to Xia Lin with a complex tone.

“Sister Su Yi, you need to believe me, I did not betray you!” Xia Lin shouted.

“Do you need us to investigate it?” At this moment, a group of mermen charged into the inn, they drew all the attention away.

This group of mermen walked towards Xia Lin as they said: “Xia Lin right? I am the Sacred City’s investigator, someone reported you for corruption, you betrayed Su Yi and tried to ruin the sacred Sea God Ceremony, you tried to manipulate the saintess’ competition. We are now arresting you, follow us and tell us everything that you did.”

“No, I am innocent!” Xia Lin turned pale from fright, she shouted loudly in retaliation.

“We will investigate whether you are innocent or not.” The investigator was very cold.

“No, I will not leave with you, I was framed, someone framed me!” Xia Lin was frightful, she continued to shake her head.

“You don’t want to leave with us? Hmph, you don’t have a choice! Come, arrest her!” The investigator ordered as the merman Gu Masters behind him acted.

“Wait.” At this moment, Su Yi spoke.

“Sister Su Yi!” Xia Lin’s eyes shined with a light of hope.

But Su Yi shook her head: “Sister Xia Lin, I do not believe that you betrayed me, but the investigator is here, we need to believe in Sacred City’s justice! I believe that they will clear your name, go with them, as long as the results come out, your innocence will be proven, right?”

“Sister Su Yi...” Xia Lin’s eyes turned dim.

“Go, go with them.”

Xia Lin lowered her head, walking towards the investigator: “I was framed, but I will go with you.”

The investigator nodded in satisfaction: “That’s right, come with us.”

Xia Lin was quickly brought into the interrogation room.

COMMENT

“These information path Gu worms are all evidence, take a good look, I will give you some advice, don’t think you can get out of this!” The investigator smiled sinisterly, pointing at the information path mortal Gu on the table.

Xia Lin looked into them one by one.

Soon, shock was expressed all over her face: “These videos and voices are all fake, I have never said such things!”

“That is your explanation against all this evidence? Who would believe you?!” The investigator chuckled.

“I have never said such things! I...” Xia Lin was anxious.

The investigator raised his arm, stopping Xia Lin from talking, he smiled: “I know you were framed.”

Xia Lin was stunned: “What, what did you say?”

“You were framed.” The investigator repeated himself.

Xia Lin was stunned, she blinked before saying: “In that case, why did you...”

“Because this was Lady Su Yi’s request.” The investigator laughed again.

“What do you mean? Don’t try to sow discord between us!” Xia Lin was enraged.

“You are truly a naive little girl. Let me explain it to you then. You know who Lady Su Yi’s father is right? Do you know the current situation of the Sea God Ceremony...”

COMMENT

The investigator spoke as Xia Lin went into deep shock upon hearing his words.

After a long while, she reacted: “I do not believe that this is sister Su Yi’s plot! If she wants me to step down, I can leave. If she told me herself, I would not have rejected her.”

The investigator looked at Xia Lin with a mocking expression, rebuking mercilessly: “Is the Sea God Ceremony an event where you can just leave like that? If anyone could just step down, this competition would just be a pure contest between forces. The only way to step down is by force, at the same time, that position left behind could be filled again.”

Xia Lin said in a daze: “A situation like this...”

The investigator smiled: “Indeed, you’ve grown smarter. Alright, you have two choices now, the first choice is to deny this evidence and fight for your innocence. But this evidence is concrete, nobody will believe your words.”

“The second choice is to cooperate with us, admit to the crime and even though you will lose reputation, we will repay you with abundant resources. Choose now.”

Xia Lin smiled bitterly, lowering her head.

Did she have a choice?

The other party tricked her into this interrogation room, at this point, she could no longer reject them.

Even if she tried to, she would still be framed and trialled as guilty.

She did not have the strength to resist them, she did not have the right to reject them!

Silence.

After a long silence.

The investigator spoke: “Xia Lin, if you keep silent any longer, I will take it that you accept our proposition. The facts are simple and clear, I believe a smart person will make a wise choice. This benefits both of us, isn’t that right?”

“I reject the offer.” Xia Lin suddenly raised her head as she spoke.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1670: Racing Heart

“Reject?” The investigator frowned, a cold light flickered in his eyes and his tone became much tougher: “Young lady, think properly. You are young, you should not be impulsive, you need to know the weak cannot contend with the strong, let alone that you can’t even be considered weak.”

“I know I have no one to rely on, I am just a small character, which was why you all targeted me, isn’t that so?” Xia Lin looked straight at the investigator, her tone was filled with mockery but also bitterness and helplessness: “But you don’t have to worry, I won’t make a useless retaliation or file a complaint. I accept your false accusation, I will consider it as paying back Sister Su Yi’s kindness. I don’t want any compensation, from now on, we no longer have any debt to each other, we will just be strangers.”

1The investigator revealed a surprised expression as he looked at Xia Lin firmly. In the dim room, Xia Lin’s eyes seemed to shine brightly. This pair of bright eyes directly shined on the investigator’s heart, making him unable to match her gaze!

He quickly moved his gaze: “You can leave, I hope you can uphold what you said.”

“I will.” Xia Lin stood up and left with a calm expression that contained no anxiety.

Several days later.

“Lady Xia Lin, it is not that our inn does not want to do business with you but that the public sentiment is too fierce and many people have made reports. If we continue to let you stay here, they will...” The innkeeper said with a bitter expression.

Xia Lin stopped him from continuing the story: “I understand your situation, I will leave then.”

“I thank you for the understanding, Lady Xia Lin, you truly are a good person.” The innkeeper said as he thanked profusely and gratefully.

Xia Lin packed up her luggage and left her room, walking down the stairs.

“Look, it is her!”

“This woman secretly betrayed Lady Su Yi for her own personal gains.”

“This kind of person is simply tarnishing the Sea God Ceremony and our Sacred City.”

The Gu Masters inside the hall saw Xia Lin and started discussing while pointing fingers at her.

Xia Lin heard them but walked out of the inn with a calm and composed expression.

When she arrived at the wide main street, a bustling tide of people was moving along the path.

“Today is the day of the second last test of the Sea God Ceremony.”

“I can barely wait, today is sure to be spectacular!”

“Do you guys know? Su Yi had been in a disadvantageous position for so long because there was a spy by her side.”

“Who does not know of it? It’s Xia Lin! As the saying goes, no matter how vigilant one is, they cannot defend against an internal threat.”

...

Most of the people did not recognize Xia Lin, their attention was on the Sea God Ceremony as they hurried towards the central square.

Even if some people recognized Xia Lin, they were not absolutely certain. The Sacred City was extremely crowded at this time, it was normal for there to be one or two people with similar appearances.

The atmosphere was bustling, the people were jostling through the street as joy filled everyone.

Xia Lin mixed in with the crowd, her expression was tranquil, a stark contrast with her surroundings.

She had felt happy before, but now, it was like layers of heavy mist had gathered in her nostrils, making her feel difficulty in breathing.

She could no longer feel happy in this Sacred City or satisfy her curiosity.

“Maybe, I will never come here again in my life.” Xia Lin raised her head slightly, looking at the tall buildings.

These buildings seemed to be slanting down, the whole Sacred City seemed to be pressing towards her.

Xia Lin felt increasingly depressed and frustrated, she quickened her pace and left the crowd, walking into a dark alley.

The alley was dim and dark, trash was piled up in corners, spreading stench throughout the alley.

Xia Lin, however, felt her breathing become much smoother as if a huge weight had been lifted out of her heart.

Walking in this dark alley devoid of people, Xia Lin’s raised head drooped slowly.

“How did I reach this state?” She asked herself but obtained no answer.

Her eyes reddened and she soon turned tearful.

She was still a young girl, her previous strong attitude was just a facade.

“Hello, young lady!” Three mermen suddenly walked out of a corner of the alley.

Xia Lin was dazed for a moment before turning vigilant.

These three mermen were hooligans, their ill intentions were clearly exposed by their gazes. More importantly, every one of them was a rank two Gu Master.

Xia Lin was also only rank two.

“What do you want?” Xia Lin took a step back.

“What do we want? Hehehe!” The three mermen looked at each other, laughing deviously at the same time.

“Young lady, our encounter was fated, why be in a hurry to leave?”

“Even if you want to leave now, it is too late.”

At this moment, two rank two merman Gu Masters walked towards Xia Lin from behind.

1Xia Lin’s heart sank, not only was it five against one, both the front and rear paths were blocked. Although this alley was not far from the main street, these people were all Gu Masters and had clearly been lying in ambush; they definitely had methods to suppress the commotion.

The five mermen approached Xia Lin menacingly.

1Xia Lin was panicking, she retreated again and again till her back touched the wall.

The cold wall made her feel even more helpless.

She gritted her teeth, her brows rose as she suddenly said: “Come, even if I die, I will drag you down with me.”

“Oh dear, the little girl has guts!”

“Quite fiery, big brother likes such girls.”

The five mermen giggled in amusement, they showed no fear but their footsteps had slowed down.

Bump.

Suddenly, Xia Lin felt an intense dizziness.

She was attacked!

Her mind was filled with fright as she turned to look back with difficulty, she saw the wall melt down from which the sixth merman Gu Master walked out.

“They got me!” The moment before she fell unconscious, Xia Lin’s heart turned cold.

“She is down...”

“Hahaha, boss, your method is truly amazing!”

“Quickly clean up this place, the Sea God Ceremony is currently ongoing after all!”

The six mermen gathered around Xia Lin.

“Wake up, wake up...” A deep voice lingered in the darkness.

Xia Lin slowly opened her eyes, the alley was once again reflected in her eyes. The pain behind her head reminded her, she got a fright and quickly struggled to stand up.

She then saw the six mermen lying on the ground motionless in strange postures.

A human Gu Master was standing in the middle of the six mermen.

Xia Lin cried out with joy: “Master Chu, it’s you!”

“It’s me. I have been observing the Sea God Ceremony from the start, I heard of your matter as well, you were tossed aside by Su Yi, right?” Fang Yuan slightly smiled.

Xia Lin’s tear immediately started to fall as she sobbed: “Master Chu, you...”

“I have good judgment of people, although I have only met you a few times, you are not that kind of person.” Fang Yuan continued.

Xia Lin could not hold it in anymore as she covered her face and started crying, like a wronged child finally getting vindicated.

Fang Yuan quietly watched her cry for sometime before patting her shoulder: “Let’s go.”

“To where?” Xia Lin was slightly dazed.

“I am also slightly responsible for your current situation.” Fang Yuan sighed: “If I did not give you gather oil Gu, you would not have been targeted by Su Yi and participated in this Sea God Ceremony. So, I am taking you with me, follow me and leave.”

“Okay.” Xia Lin nodded, she no longer had no interest in Sacred City.

Fang Yuan led the way while Xia Lin obediently followed behind him.

At the end of the alley, there was another branch of the main street, it was also crowded with the stores at the sides enjoying bustling business. At the center of the street, there was a lion dance team.

Facing the crowd again, Xia Lin immediately felt some fear and disgust, but Fang Yuan had already walked ahead so she could only follow.

Snap.

The moment they walked out of the alley, Fang Yuan snapped his fingers.

The next scene stupefied Xia Lin, her mouth opened so wide that it could swallow an egg. She shockingly saw the whole street coming to a standstill.

“This, this...” She was unable to speak.

“Just a small trick, come.” Fang Yuan waved towards her before entering the crowd.

Xia Lin quickened her pace, following behind closely.

This was a wondrous situation that she had never experienced before!

She walked right past two mermen who looked like they were having a close conversation and seemed to be lovers. She looked at a store where a customer seemed to be haggling price with the clerk, spittle flew out of the clerk’s mouth and was suspended in the air, almost landing on the customer’s face.

There was a dog which was moving past the tightly packed legs and merman tails. Its body was bent as it was moving around a blue scaled merman, its three legs were raised high while one was on the ground.

Xia Lin stared widely at these people with various lives, the liveliness in them made her forget her depression and frustration.

Fang Yuan was extremely agile and walked quite quickly, it was quite tiring for Xia Lin to follow him.

Bump.

In a moment of carelessness, she bumped into a sturdy human Gu Master.

The human Gu Master swayed, his posture was still the same walking posture from before but his feet had almost left the ground, he started tilting to the side.

“Sorry!” She was just about to prop up this human Gu Master when she was grabbed by Fang Yuan.

2“Here.” Fang Yuan gave her a mask.

“Master Chu, this...” Xia Lin was puzzled, Fang Yuan did not lead her away from the street but brought her in front of that lion dance team.

The mask that Fang Yuan gave her was colorful and made from fish scales and bird feathers.

Fang Yuan pointed to the lion dance team: “Don’t you think it lacks two key characters?”

Xia Lin nodded: “They are playing the sea lion winter spring opera, they are short of the male and female leading characters, a filial fisherman and a traveling mermaid princess. But I think this performance was a spontaneous idea, they are not a real opera team, it is normal for them to not have all the characters.”

Likely at the start, one Gu Master put on the opera costume and makeup for his own entertainment. Later, along the way, more Gu Masters joined in.

These people were generally opera fans and loved such culture.

In fact, there were all kinds of traditional opera and plays that existed in the grotto-heaven, it was the trending entertainment of this paradise.

“My method can only last for a short while, put on the mask quickly, we will move with the crowd.” Fang Yuan hurried Xia Lin, not giving her the chance to refuse.

“Oh, okay.” Xia Lin subconsciously took the mask and when she wore it, her heart suddenly calmed down.

No one would recognize her like this.

The mental pressure on her had greatly reduced.

But shortly afterwards, her face blushed. Because she saw Fang Yuan wear a mask and it was the mask of the filial fisherman.

“Doesn’t this mean that Master Chu and I are the main male and female characters?”

Xia Lin’s heart started to race wildly!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1671: Life and Mask

Snap.

Fang Yuan snapped his fingers once again.

5The surroundings immediately started moving again from the motionless state.

That merman couple continued to walk forward while holding hands.

Amidst the haggling at the stall, the saliva spit landed on the customer’s face but he did not realize it.

The small dog’s three legs landed on the ground, it smoothly moved past the blue scaled merman and continued to pass nimbly through the crowd of legs.

Xia Lin took everything in with surprise and curiosity.

This was too magical!

“Master Chu’s methods are truly powerful! This is probably a rank five time path killer move.”

1Xia Lin guessed.

Plop.

That male Gu Master, who Xia Lin had collided into, fell down to the ground and even affected the person behind, creating a small chaos.

“You are so big, don’t you know how to walk?” Someone scolded.

“Sorry, sorry.” The well-built male Gu Master politely apologized. This was, after all, the Sacred City of the mermen, meanwhile, the people in this paradise were less irritable than in the five regions.

“I was walking properly, how could I trip? Strange.” The male Gu Master looked puzzled as he quickly stood up and moved with the crowd.

Xia Lin apologized softly while gazing at the receding figure of the male Gu Master.

However, she felt a bit of joy like that of a prankster. Just as she was about to criticize herself, her hand was grabbed by Fang Yuan.

“Follow me!” Fang Yuan dragged her to the lion dance team.

The lion dance team was stunned at first before dancing even more joyfully, the accompanying music was immediately raised.

“We have all the characters now, haha!” One dancer laughed heartily.

“You know how to dance, right?” Fang Yuan smiled and moved his legs, he was playing the role of the filial fisherman, his movements were subtle and natural, having their own beauty.

2The surrounding people immediately cheered and hooted, Fang Yuan followed the crowd while dancing towards Xia Lin.

“Your turn.” Fang Yuan’s voice was secretly transmitted to Xia Lin’s ears.

Xia Lin’s heart was beating loudly from nervousness. Despite her practising this play often when she was a child, she had never performed before a large crowd.

She began to dance with stiff movements.

Fang Yuan laughed as he took her hands and led her.

He secretly used wisdom path methods, Xia Lin immediately started feeling nimble, all kinds of dance postures of this play surfaced in her mind with extreme clarity.

The two sang and danced and moved along with the crowd.

The lion dance team was wearing colorful costumes and strange-looking masks. There were also some who jointly acted as an enormous golden sea lion. They attracted attention wherever they moved.

And as the male and female protagonists of the team, even more eyes were focused on Fang Yuan and Xia Lin.

Xia Lin was extremely tense at the start but the more she danced, the better and more confident she felt. She was immersed in the joyful atmosphere, forgetting about the injustice she suffered as cheers, shouts, and whistling filled her ears.

Even when Xia Lin made some mistakes in her movements, there was only kind laughter.

The crowd continued to move, some left the lion dance team while some joined.

Unknowingly, Xia Lin started laughing brightly.

An unprecedented level of happiness which she had never felt before in the Sacred City filled her heart.

She was immersed in this happiness, unable to extricate herself from it. At the same time, she felt fear that this was not real.

“It truly is like I am dreaming!” Xia Lin’s heart was filled with emotions, her gaze never leaving Fang Yuan.

“Time to leave.” Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s movements changed, he dragged Xia Lin away from the opera team and walked to the side of the street.

Xia Lin was caught unprepared and got pulled directly into Fang Yuan’s embrace.

She bumped into Fang Yuan’s chest, a strong manly smell entered her nose. She quickly held the mask that had almost fallen down, hiding her reddened face.

“Here.” Fang Yuan moved quickly while pulling her, walking into an alley.

It was another lonely alley with dim lighting and the stench of garbage.

Fang Yuan released Xia Lin’s hand and quickly walked ahead.

Xia Lin immediately felt an empty feeling as she followed behind.

The two moved in the long alley, one in front and another in back. Fang Yuan did not utter a sound, the alley echoing his monotonous footsteps.

The sounds from the rowdy street became softer and softer as they moved further into the alley.

A lonely and cold feeling pervaded Xia Lin’s body and heart.

The previous happiness and joyful feelings started disappearing from Xia Lin’s heart. Gradually, worries began to find her once again, and her previous depression began to surge.

Xia Lin wanted to find some topics to talk with Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan had been moving ahead without even turning his head back. The oppressive atmosphere made Xia Lin not dare to casually speak.

Finally, they reached the exit of the alley.

The street here, although not as lively as the previous, was also filled with crowds and was boisterous.

Fang Yuan suddenly stopped and turned towards Xia Lin: “Have you thought it through?”

Xia Lin was stunned: “Thought... thought what through?”

Fang Yuan smiled, pointing at the mask Xia Lin was wearing: “Do you want to wear it to cross the street or do you want to walk in the crowd showing your own face?”

Xia Lin was stunned again.

Fang Yuan continued: “I took off my mask when I entered the alley, but you are still wearing it. Why? Do you feel ashamed? Do you feel afraid of looking at people with your face? Worried that if you confront life, you will lose the happiness from earlier?”

A series of questions caught Xia Lin unprepared and unable to reply.

After a while of silence, she seemed to have understood something as she took down the mask, revealing her face: “Master Chu, I understand your intentions, thank you, I truly thank you. I am only an ordinary mermaid...”

Fang Yuan stretched out his hand, interrupting her: “I have said it before, your current situation is largely because of me, I need to compensate you for this.”

“Master, what are you saying? You have shown enormous kindness to me by gifting me gather oil Gu. You don’t owe me anything at all, in fact, it is I who owes you everything!” Xia Lin quickly said.

“That is how you interpret it, not me.” Fang Yuan shook his head, his expression turning solemn: “Look back on it, you were previously taunted and jeered by others, but just earlier, you were showered with welcomes and cheers, what is the reason for such a big difference? Could it because of this mask? But in fact, you had been yourself all along, isn’t that so?”

Xia Lin nodded.

Fang Yuan looked at the street outside the alley and pointed at the passing crowd: “Take a look now, these people don’t want to inspect your true self and who Xia Lin truly is. When we were dancing and singing, they also did not want to know our names. They are only expressing their attitude, the true situation is not important to them. Ordinary people chase after the truth because they are usually angry and indignant about being made a fool of.”

“So to them, we are not important at all, and to us, their attitude should similarly not be important.”

Xia Lin took a deep breath: “Master Chu, thank you for comforting me, I truly can’t thank you enough...”

“I have not finished speaking. Since the attitude of outsiders is not important, what is truly important in our lives?” Fang Yuan asked with a smile.

Xia Lin was stunned for the third time: “Master, forgive my ignorance...”

Fang Yuan pointed at Xia Lin and then pointed at himself: “It is us, ourselves. It is our truest feelings. Ask yourself, listen to the voice in the depths of your heart. What do you want to do, what kind of person you want to become, where do you want to go? You will obtain the answer in the depths of your heart.”

“If you want to travel, then travel around the world. If you want to treat others well, then treat them properly. If you want to attempt flying, then collect money and resources to purchase and practice flying Gu worms.”

Fang Yuan pointed at the alley then at the street: “If you want to remain in the alley, you can stay. If you want to walk into the street and enjoy the event with others, then walk out. Don’t mistreat your own feelings because of their attitude. If you mistreat yourself frequently, then you will end up with regrets, you will constantly wear a mask to act as another person, you will no longer be yourself.”

1The moment she heard that, Xia Lin felt that her mind had cleared up, it was as if she received enlightenment, all her previous worries and distress were swept away entirely.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1672: Stop Being So Naive

“Master, I will never forget your guidance in my life!” The mermaid took a step back and bowed solemnly towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “My efforts were not in vain. But sometimes, it is easier said than done, I’ll ask you now, what is it that you want to do the most at this moment?”

Xia Lin hesitated.

“I want to follow you!” This was the first thing that popped up in her mind.

But before she spoke, she saw Fang Yuan shaking his head: “You still haven’t thought properly, you have time to think about it later. Actually, I am not concerned about what you want to do. Do you know what I want to do?”

Xia Lin shook her head, but at the next moment, her eyes opened wide and her body stiffened.

Because Fang Yuan had slowly stretched out his hand and stroked her face.

Thump thump thump thump thump!

Xia Lin’s face blushed red, her heart thumped wildly, and watery ripples appeared in her eyes.

She felt Fang Yuan’s wide palm and the warmth from it, this feeling was like a slight electric shock that transmitted to her body and mind. It was clearly an ordinary action but Xia Lin was unable to even budge.

Fang Yuan took back his hand: “You still have a mask on.”

Xia Lin was puzzled but she heard Fang Yuan speak: “Sometimes, we wear a mask of our own initiative, sometimes, others force us to wear a mask. Right now, I want to take away the mask on your face, cooperate with me, okay?”

“Mas... master, you don’t need...” Xia Lin vaguely knew what Fang Yuan wanted to do as she stuttered.

Fang Yuan shook his hand: “I will not be happy unless I take this mask off. I don’t want to betray my feelings, since you feel that you owe me, then cooperate with me as compensation, okay?”

How could Xia Lin refuse after hearing this?

She knelt on the ground and made three kowtows to Fang Yuan before quietly standing up: “Master Chu, I will do whatever you want me to do!”

“Okay, then become the saintess.”

“What?!”

Several days later.

The Sea God Ceremony’s final test had gathered the attention of everyone.

Su Yi was looking at Xia Lin with shock as if she had seen a ghost.

The two nannies were also stunned.

Following the grand elder’s explanation, the crowd went into a commotion.

Su Yi was very confident of victory because her competitor had suffered heavy injuries in the previous round and was unable to step up to compete in such a short duration.

But who could have thought that a surprise would occur.

The competitor’s younger sister who had been separated for many years was found, it was this mermaid, Xia Lin!

“Isn’t this too melodramatic?”

“Unbelievable!”

“Xia Lin... isn’t she the person who betrayed Su Yi for her own gains?”

“That is a lie that Su Yi’s supporters spread intentionally. The true reason is that Su Yi wanted to free up a follower quota. I heard that investigator pleaded guilty, his conversation where he pressured Xia Lin was recorded and is ironclad evidence!”

“This is more dramatic than an opera play.”

The discussions among the audience became more heated.

The two nannies conversed secretly:

“What is going on?”

“How did the public sentiment change all of a sudden?”

“Also, we never arranged for the investigator, why did he admit guilt for no reason?”

Su Yi’s expression was extremely unsightly, while Xia Lin was calmly looking at the crowd. Fang Yuan’s guidance had elevated her mind and spirit to another level.

Su Yi felt even more stifled when she saw that Xia Lin did not even look at her, she snorted coldly: “Xia Lin, I truly didn’t think we would meet again and in this way.”

“I also didn’t expect this.” Xia Lin looked at Su Yi and said honestly. The huge setbacks and gains that she experienced over these days felt like a dream.

Su Yi snorted once again: “No matter what scheme you have, this last test is not something a casually selected mermaid can pass. This Sea God Ceremony’s saintess position is mine.”

“Oh.” Xia Lin lightly replied.

Su Yi felt like her provocation had ended up hitting air, she felt terribly irritated.

Xia Lin scanned through the surrounding crowd once again, there were too many people.

“Master Chu said he will watch me from the crowd. But where is he? I am not able to find him at all. Could he have disguised his appearance? He has vast mystical prowess, if he wants to hide, I will never be able to find him.”

“After this matter is over, I will tell him I want to follow him. I wonder if he will agree?”

Xia Lin’s mind lingered on this question, compared to the answer to this question, the saintess position did not have any attraction to her.

In the first round, Xia Lin was slightly better than Su Yi.

In the second round, Xia Lin won against Su Yi by a little.

This result greatly surpassed expectations, causing the audience to be in a commotion, everyone revealed shock.

Fang Yuan, who was hiding among the audience, looked shocked like the surrounding people, but his heart was tranquil.

He had trained Xia Lin over these days, using immortal level time path methods to gain a large amount of time to train her to a certain level.

Along with Fang Yuan’s personally chosen songs, which were unique, and the sound path Gu worms he prepared specially for Xia Lin.

Moreover, when Su Yi and Xia Lin stepped on the stage to sing, Fang Yuan had even secretly tampered and influenced their performances. The former’s performance became choppy while the latter’s performance became increasingly better due to his support.

“Besides us outsiders, there is probably no Gu Immortal in this grotto-heaven. Now that I am using immortal level methods, is there any worry that I can’t control this grand ceremony of mortal Gu Masters?”

“What should we do? The third round is about to start.” The two nannies were sweating from anxiety, they were sent by the clan to specially assist Su Yi. If Su Yi did not get the saintess position, they would have to suffer the punishment.

Su Yi was pale as she looked at Xia Lin.

Everything felt like a dream!

As far as Su Yi was concerned, Xia Lin was a dull and ordinary girl. It was only because she possessed gather oil Gu and was a mermaid that Su Yi had used her.

Although she had not felt comfortable doing this to Xia Lin, she did not feel like it was a huge deal.

Even if Xia Lin wanted to take revenge, what revenge could she take? She, a person with no background and only rank two cultivation, wasn’t she asking for others to use her?

If not for the saintess position being in sight and Su Yi not wanting to divert her attention, she would have taken the chance to scheme for Xia Lin’s rank five Gu worm.

This was not considered repaying kindness with enmity!

Could a rank two Gu Master protect a rank five Gu worm?

A person’s wealth is their own ruin by causing another’s greed.

So, to Su Yi, rather than Xia Lin being killed by others in the future, it was better to persuade Xia Lin to offer gather oil Gu to the clan of her own initiative. Like this, her own side would obtain benefits and she would also not die, it could also be considered as Su Yi helping her.

This was a small plan in Su Yi’s mind. But, as the saintess position was too important, Su Yi did not dare to split her attention and also did not want to attract criticism, so she could only spare Xia Lin for the moment.

If it were before and someone told her Xia Lin would be her biggest obstacle in becoming the saintess, Su Yi would have replied with only a chuckle: Hehe.

Now though, Su Yi wanted to say ‘hehe’ to herself, life was truly too cruel.

With Fang Yuan personally forging a fake identity for Xia Lin, who would be able to see through it?

Nobody in this huge Sacred City could!

So this evidence which proved Xia Lin’s identity was irrefutable and ironclad. Even Su Yi believed Xia Lin’s identity was truly like so.

“Oh destiny, this is truly too big of a joke.” Su Yi heaved a deep sigh.

“Young miss, what should we do?” The two nannies were out of ideas.

“We cannot do anything in front of such a large crowd, we also don’t have the time. There is only one option left, I will personally persuade her.” Su Yi remained silent for a while before uttering through clenched teeth.

She transmitted her voice to Xia Lin: “Xia Lin, I am Su Yi.”

Xia Lin was surprised, but her expression calmed down quickly as she replied: “What’s the matter?”

Su Yi organized her thoughts and said: “I want to make a deal with you, lose the next round and let me be the saintess. I swear in the name of the Sea God that I will pay a price that will satisfy you completely. Even if my power is not enough, my family will be able to satisfy you.”

Xia Lin remained silent for a moment before saying: “Sorry but I....”

“Don’t be in a hurry to reject me, Xia Lin. You are too young, maybe you still don’t recognize the significance of the saintess position. What do you think the saintess is? Just a belief? Or a superficial selection? Both are wrong! It involves benefits, it involves the interests of the whole Sacred City’s higher-ups, this is a political game.”

“I know you want to take revenge against me, but do you know your situation is extremely dangerous right now. Once you become the saintess, you will be in an even bigger danger. Your elder sister’s side pushed you to the stage because they did not have other candidates, so they are only putting up a front. Once you become the saintess, they will use all their strength to make you into their puppet, they will make you do things that match their benefits.”

“Although I have not been in much contact with you, I understand you. You are pure and kind, if you become the saintess, you will probably try to fight for benefits of the mermen and mermaids. But you definitely won’t succeed because you are not a person of any political force, you are just an outsider. Unless you join one of the forces and become the representative of their benefits, or else you will be excluded by everyone and will become the most powerless saintess in history.”

“But if you choose to transact with me, the benefits you will obtain will surpass your imagination. It will be much more than the benefits you can obtain from your elder sister’s side. Please believe in my sincerity!”

Su Yi had an amazingly eloquent tongue, even Xia Lin felt moved.

But she replied: “Lady Su Yi, I understand your sincerity, but I cannot agree to you in this matter.”

“Why?” Su Yi’s tone was hurried: “You think I am deceiving you? Although it is cruel, what I have said are all truthful. Stop being so... so naive, okay?”

Xia Lin remained silent.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1673: Gu Yue Fang Yuan

Fang Yuan’s first life of five hundred years.

Sea God Ceremony.

Naive?

Facing Frost Tide tribe’s leader’s long-winded speech, Fang Yuan fell into silence.

But he only fell silent for a short period before he chuckled and transmitted his voice: “You think I am not aware of what you said? You think I am an inexperienced youngster? No, I understand all these tricks, clearly in fact. I know these truths and have accepted them.”

Fang Yuan was forced to leave Qing Mao Mountain, wandering about in Southern Border before going to Western Desert and then to Eastern Sea. He struggled at the border of death, he had to worry about one or two primeval stones. He had to bow down and grovel before the strong and this destitute life. He had also once gained a high status, listening to reports from his subordinates while drinking tea.

1He had been lowly, he had been glorious, he had been lofty, he had been ordinary.

Considering his life on Earth and the experiences after crossing over to this world, his vision was already beyond normal people, his experiences were plentiful, and he was very knowledgeable.

How could such a person not understand these worldly affairs?

Frost Tide tribe’s leader was frustrated, replying quickly: “Since you know these truths, then you should know you are taking great risks now! This is our merman internal political battle, what are you, a weak human Gu Master, doing by meddling? You like Xie Han Mo? I can guarantee that after this matter is finished, I will gift you many more beautiful mermaids! Don’t doubt my sincerity, I can swear an oath to the Sea God!”

“There is indeed no need to doubt the sincerity of a merman who swears an oath to the Sea God. But...” Fang Yuan continued: “Although I accept these truths, it does not mean I like them. You think I like Xie Han Mo? No, no, I only want to help her. Why am I taking such risks to help her? Because I have my own principle, favors must be repaid, hatred must be returned.”

“I have used lifespan Gu, I have lived much longer than you can imagine. I used to wish for a long life before, but now, I am tired of this thought. Life has become increasingly boring. Sometimes, the final destination of the journey is not important, the important thing is the process of the journey and how you feel during the journey.”

1Frost Tide tribe’s leader involuntarily opened his eyes wide at these words, it was hard for him to understand Fang Yuan’s way of life: “You are saying the position of saintess is not important, the important thing is helping Xie Han Mo in this competition?”

“Correct, but there is still more. You talked of the dark side of politics and promised to gift me mermaid beauties, both have no importance to me. Let me put it this way so you might understand a little, I have lived long enough that I am already sick of wearing a mask to live. Death is not scary to me at all. Right now, I only want to live using my truest emotions and feelings, I will achieve my goals in my own way. Only by living like this can I feel the excitement of life and the desire towards living!”

Frost Tide tribe’s leader was dumbstruck and stupefied, he finally understood as he shouted: “So that’s it, you are a lunatic! You have said so much but they are nothing more than saying you have lived long enough and don’t want to live anymore! So be it you were a Gu Immortal, but you, a mere rank three Gu Master, want to live life your own way? You are dreaming!”

Fang Yuan smiled: “You think becoming a Gu Immortal can allow people to live according to their will? Live without wearing a mask? A place with people has society and conflict. Survival and living are two different things. The way you want to live does not have to depend on your strength and cultivation level, but your own heart.”

After a brief pause, Fang Yuan continued: “Actually, low strength is also quite interesting. When you live without a mask, low strength will allow you to face more difficulties and challenges of reality; surpass these difficulties, face these challenges, and life becomes much more wonderful.”

Frost Tide tribe’s leader stood stupefied, his eyes and mouth were wide open as he was unable to say anything!

His sight moved across the crowd of people, landing on Fang Yuan, he saw a slight smile. A chill rose in his heart: This person has such strange and deviant thoughts that differ from common logic, he has an inclination towards self destruction. He has likely turned demonic!

It would not matter if he did not play by the rules, the more terrifying thing was he did not think according to the rules. His thought process was completely different from ordinary people, he was already too far away from the norm!

This was a demon!

“This is a true demon!” Frost Tide tribe’s leader felt a chill. He felt this was Fang Yuan’s true nature, even though Fang Yuan did not wantonly slaughter lives, even though Fang Yuan currently still committed acts of kindness like repaying favors!

Frost Tide tribe’s leader felt a deep powerlessness at the same time.

If it were an inexperienced youngster, he could have disguised himself as a senior to guide him and let him know the complexities and some dark truths of society.

But Fang Yuan understood them well, he almost knew everything way too clearly. What made him even more helpless was that Fang Yuan’s thoughts completely differed from others!

“He is too strong-minded and stubborn. He clearly only has rank three cultivation, how dare he? Unreasonable, unreasonable! A lunatic, a madman! He is too arrogant, he actually shows contempt for life and death!! Right... he does not even fear death, what would he not dare to do? All the wealth, beauties and status in the world might be useless when compared to his own true feelings! What else do I have to entice him?”

Frost Tide tribe’s leader was going crazy.

The more he thought, the more he realized, the more he knew Fang Yuan had no fear and would not be enticed. There might be a day when he is enticed, but it would be because he himself wanted to be enticed and it would be his genuine intention.

It was not easy for people to live in this world!

That was the case for mermen as well.

Frost Tide tribe’s leader had high authority and status, but it was even harder for him.

The elders of merman Sacred City were pressuring him from above, while many of his subordinates were scheming against each other or coveting his position. He had a lot of children who were looking for power and authority, and there were deep conflicts between his many wives. Everything required his supervision and arrangements.

Was it wrong for him to be corrupt?

No!

What was corruption?

Corruption was no more than obtaining more benefits and these benefits made other benefit holders feel unfair.

It was similar to dividing a cake, in normal cases, you take a piece and I take a piece. Now, I secretly took another piece which made you jealous. You complain: “You broke our distribution agreement, what gives you the rights to take so much?”

This was corruption.

Did you think the grand elder’s side which supports the saintess was not corrupt?

There would be more or less some corruption. Even if the grand elder herself was not corrupt, what about her subordinates? Her children? It was just that they were not as heavily corrupt as Frost Tide tribe’s leader.

Even if the grand elder’s side was completely free from corruption, they were still higher-ups, people who enjoyed the cake and also people who exploited others.

From this aspect, everyone was an exploiter, what difference was there?

They were all the same!

So, Frost Tide tribe’s leader had never felt his corruption was wrong, he only wanted to obtain more wealth, beauties, and authority.

As his corruption increased, he was gradually pushing beyond the distribution agreement. But he did not want to stop, the greed in him did not allow him to stop.

“No, it is not greed. It is my aspiration!” Many times, Frost Tide tribe’s leader would shout this inwardly.

There was a joke which was not a joke —

The father asked his son: What is your aspiration when you grow up?

The son replied: I want wealth and beauties.

The father slapped his son!

The son replied again: I want career and love.

The father smiled and nodded his head lightly!

Therefore, while career and love were aspirations, wealth and beauties were also aspirations.

So, Frost Tide tribe’s leader was confident in himself, was there anything wrong with him chasing wealth, beauties, authority, and fame?

Did you think it was crude?

These were all aspirations!

Which person’s life was not filled with such aspirations?!

Frost Tide tribe’s leader liked this aspiration from deep down because this aspiration spurred him on, and also enticed others to pay and sacrifice for their aspirations and help him, Frost Tide tribe’s leader, to achieve his aspiration!

There was nothing wrong with his corruption, this was his aspiration!

Aspirations should be practical and required effort to reach.

When Frost Tide tribe’s leader fell into corruption for the first time, he knew there would be a time when he would be opposed and blamed by others.

But so what?

These were natural and were difficulties and pains that he must experience in realizing his aspiration!

As long as he passed these difficulties and subdued this suffering, Frost Tide tribe’s leader could realize his aspiration.

As long as he used a series of political techniques like secret manipulation, indirect approaches, threats and so on, he could realize his aspiration.

Frost Tide tribe’s leader, who had an authoritative status for a long time, was confident in this aspect. He indeed had the capital to be confident, if not for Fang Yuan appearing out of nowhere, he would have already pushed down Xie Han Mo and promoted his own pawn to the saintess position.

Once he accomplishes this, he would have defeated the grand elder and successfully defended the fruits of success from his corruption.

He would then use the puppet saintess to issue several policies which would be for a good future of the mermen and also for Sacred City. He would be able to turn his corrupted history into legal events that would clear his reputation for good.

At that time, who could say he was corrupted?!

But right when Frost Tide tribe’s leader was about to succeed, he failed, he completely failed.

Because he ran into Fang Yuan.

2This person had no ‘aspirations’!

No, that was not exactly right. Frost Tide tribe’s leader believed Fang Yuan liked wealth, beauties, power and fame too, but he liked to live by his own feelings even more! That was his aspiration.

What was the point of having such a grand aspiration?

With such an aspiration, wouldn’t the majority of other people end up looking crude and ordinary?

He was really courting death!

Frost Tide tribe’s leader gritted his teeth with hatred, this hatred was intensified because of an unknown fear in the depths of his heart.

Frost Tide tribe’s leader wished he could flay Fang Yuan, he wished Fang Yuan would immediately die!

But he could not do so right now as this was the Sea God Ceremony.

The final song.

Xie Han Mo and Fang Yuan walked to the stage together.

Fang Yuan played the accompaniment while Xie Han Mo’s song spread to the surroundings1.

...

The blue sea is laughing, the tidal waves are surging.

Drifting with the waves, only caring about today.

Heaven laughs, at this hectic mortal world.

1Who will win, who will lose, only heaven knows.

...

Human lives have ups and downs like the waves, sometimes high, sometimes low. Why do we have to be always concerned about victory or defeat?

The natural romanticism intoxicated the crowd.

...

The rivers and mountains laugh, the misty rain is far away.

How many great men and heroes, have the tides washed away?

Smiling at the breeze wind, lost in quiet solitude.

Heroic feelings remain, reflected in the cold night.

...

Bold and lofty, free and unrestrained, all kinds of ‘aspirations’ would be washed away by the waves. Even life itself will perish. But what is the big deal?

A noble man is not a slave to external matters, aloof from the world, forgetting gains and losses.

Destiny is fickle, so why uphold your disposition, throw away your mask and find your true self.

True self is unyielding, true self is lonely. Even if my life is the setting sun, I will live my own splendor.

The audience was entranced.

Frost Tide tribe’s leader was pale, his body shivered as he understood his loss was certain!

...

The blue sea is laughing, the tidal waves are surging.

Drifting with the waves, only caring about today.

Heaven laughs, at this hectic mortal world.

Who will win, who will lose, only heaven knows.

The rivers and mountains laugh, the misty rain is far away.

How many great men and heroes, have the tides washed away?

Common people laugh, there is no more loneliness.

Yet the unyielding spirit in me is still laughing crazily.

...

I struggle to survive in the mortal world, I came to life and I joined the world. I lived my own life, I lived according to my own feelings, even if the waves toss me up and down, sending me to the border of death, I will never grieve, lament, fear, or worry; I will savor these flavor thoroughly, I will still laugh crazily until the end.

1I am true to my nature.

I am a true person1!

On the stage, Fang Yuan was wholeheartedly activating the Gu worm with his eyes closed, the sound of the zither spreading throughout the area.

Frost Tide tribe’s leader looked at him blankly, involuntarily mumbling: “This, this demon...”

Xie Han Mo was also entranced as she sang. She looked at Fang Yuan, an extraordinary brightness shining in her eyes as she thought: “Such a free and unrestrained life, isn’t this what I yearn for? Fang Yuan is able to create such a song, he has the disposition of an immortal!”

1...

Back to the present.

Dragon Whale grotto-heaven, Merman Sacred City.

Sea God Ceremony.

Xia Lin went on stage for the third song.

The blue sea is laughing, the tidal waves are surging. Drifting with the waves, only caring about today.

Heaven laughs, at this hectic mortal world. Who will win, who will lose, only heaven knows...

The entire place was shocked, Su Yi turned pale. The outcome was already certain.

Xia Lin was already entranced in singing.

At this moment, Master Chu’s image was elevated infinitely in her heart, there was a moon and slight breeze in the background along with faint fog.

The familiar melody rang once again in Fang Yuan’s ears and intertwined with his memory.

He had once stood on the stage as an accompanist, closing his eyes and slightly smiling.

Now, he stood outside of the stage as a spectator, his eyes hiding dark light.

After living for several hundred years, the vast power of time had changed him, but it also seemed like nothing had changed.

He had always been Gu Yue Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1674: Sudden Change, Regret Gu

The Sea God Ceremony ended, the result was astonishing; the person who became the saintess was completely unexpected by anyone — Xia Lin.

Saintess Palace shined with bright and gorgeous lights, a group of servants were running around.

Xia Lin had already changed into her saintess attire, she was dressed in a white garment while her tail rested on a lump of clouds.

She opened the window and gazed at the large courtyard, those colorful corals could not attract her gaze.

She looked dazed and unfocused: “Several days have passed since the Sea God Ceremony concluded, Master Chu has not appeared again after transmitting his message that day. When will he return?”

4“Saintess, your elder sister has come to pay a visit.” At this moment, a maid lightly walked towards Xia Lin and reported.

Xia Lin’s brows slightly furrowed as she sighed: “Please bring her in.”

Xia Lin’s elder sister Zhao Lu walked into Saintess Palace.

She was only Xia Lin’s elder sister in name, but after Fang Yuan tampered with her memories, this elder sister did not doubt Xia Lin’s identity.

“Little sister, have you considered what I said to you a few days ago?” Zhao Lu said directly.

Xia Lin shook her head lightly: “I am really sorry, I don’t want to get involved in other affairs. The saintess position was never my goal, if possible, I do not want to be the saintess.”

Zhao Lu laughed.

Her laughter carried a sense of ridicule and jealousy.

She was narrowly defeated by Su Yi in the final stage, then Xia Lin came out of nowhere and was supported by her backers just to give it a try. They had not thought Xia Lin would truly succeed!

The political force behind Zhao Lu, naturally, would not let go of Xia Lin and wanted to make her their representative for benefits.

But before Fang Yuan left, he had instructed Xia Lin to not agree to any person or side with any political force.

So Xia Lin had already refused Zhao Lu a few days ago.

Naturally, Zhao Lu’s mood would not be so good.

First of all, her long lost little sister had suddenly appeared, besides the connection of blood, she did not feel any affection for this sister.

Secondly, she had worked hard for so long, but in the end, Xia Lin – who had cut in line – snatched the position of saintess. This was the same as snatching her lifelong dream!

Lastly, the force behind her still made her come out to persuade and rope in her younger sister Xia Lin, but Xia Lin still refused!

With all these reasons, Zhao Lu’s mood naturally could not be good.

“Xia Lin, if you truly didn’t want to become saintess, why did you take part? Don’t say such things to me, we both understand the situation here, tell me whatever requests you have, this deal will make you fully satisfied!” Zhao Lu spoke frankly.

Xia Lin’s brows furrowed deeper, she knew Zhao Lu was not her elder sister. This was just Master Chu’s doing.

And now that she heard such words from Zhao Lu, Xia Lin’s impression of her worsened greatly.

“Elder sister.” Xia Lin spoke softly: “I am truly sorry, I really don’t want to get involved in these matters. But you can rest assured that I won’t collaborate with other forces as well.”

Zhao Lu’s eyes opened wide: “Xia Lin, you are truly naive, you actually have such thoughts? I had thought you were waiting for the right price, sigh, I overestimated you. Since it is so, I will make it clear for you, you will die if you don’t have our support, understand?”

Xia Lin was stunned as she stared at Zhao Lu: “Don’t tell me...”

Zhao Lu shook her head: “Don’t think wildly, we never had the intention to conspire against you even if you ended up not collaborating with us. You are the saintess, a person who has received the Sea God’s recognition, which merman force dares to make a move against you? Once the deed is exposed, they will face a terrible death!”

“Every selected saintess has an important task. That is to go to Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea and sing for three days and three nights, using her song to eliminate the increasingly dense demonic aura in Regret Crying Sea! This is an extremely dangerous task and has a very low survival rate. Many saintesses have passed away in Regret Crying Sea, some who came back alive turned crazy. Although the saintess position is good, it carries enormous risks and danger. If not for this task, there would be at least ten times more mermaids competing for the position of saintess!”

“There is such a thing?” Xia Lin was astonished.

Zhao Lu laughed: “You think I am deceiving you? This information might be hidden but it is not any important secret. You can easily inquire about it with your current identity and position. You can casually find anyone to ask, but of course, ordinary mermen are in the dark about it.”

“Among the sea areas controlled by the Sacred Court, the most dangerous is Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea. It is an absolute forbidden area! According to legends, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable suppressed a peerless demonic Gu Immortal in this sea area. The Immortal Venerable was too benevolent to take away the demonic Gu Immortal’s life, so he sealed the demonic Gu Immortal to make him repent. This demonic Gu Immortal had no choice but to repent, so there are often sounds of crying in that sea area. But his sins are truly too heavy and his demonic nature is too strong, the demonic aura will accumulate after a period of time and start influencing the living organisms in the sea area, making them stronger, ferocious and crueler.”

3“The saintess’ task is to go the center of Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea and sing with all her strength, using her song to dispel the demonic aura, otherwise, as time goes on, the demonic aura in Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea will keep on getting stronger, making the living beings in the sea area become more tyrannical and invasive. This demonic aura is infectious as well, which will expand the area of Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea.”

Xia Lin showed a surprised expression as it was the first time she heard this secret: “Even with support and ample preparations, the previous saintesses had to face extreme danger. If I go in alone without your help, it is almost like seeking death?”

“Not almost, but definitely!” Zhao Lu’s tone was firm.

She expected this could persuade Xia Lin but did not expect Xia Lin to still reject: “Even so, I won’t collaborate.”

“Even if it will result in your death?” Zhao Lu’s expression was cold.

It was not that Xia Lin did not have hesitation, but the image of Fang Yuan in her mind made her insist on abiding by the agreement she made with Fang Yuan.

“Yes, I am sure, even if I die.”

Zhao Lu was so furious that she laughed: “If so... I only wish you good luck!”

The sisters parted on a bad note.

“Haha, it finally appeared!” In front of Merit Obelisk, Fang Yuan’s eyes emitted bright light.

A new task had appeared on Merit Obelisk — help the new saintess complete her most important mission!

The task did not provide any details, by only looking at this task, outsiders would have no idea what the mission was.

But Fang Yuan had already inquired about it. In the Merman Sacred Court, the selected saintess had one important mission – to purify Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea!

Fang Yuan could only enter Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea if there was such a task.

But the issue was: Fang Yuan was not sure if this task would appear on the Merit Obelisk. So he needed to support a saintess and this saintess should have low strength with no one to rely on.

If so, the saintess would have no way to complete her mission and would require the help of outsiders.

In this grotto-heaven, there were no local Gu Immortals besides the suppressed demonic immortal. Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea was extremely dangerous, accumulating demonic aura at set intervals. The restraining method of the grotto-heaven was to select a saintess to quell it without regarding the sacrifices.

The saintess’ mission was extremely important, if there was no successor to the saintess position for too long of a time, the demonic aura might even pervade the whole grotto-heaven. But naturally, there might also be some backup methods left by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

What Fang Yuan did was to hasten the appearance of this task as far as possible.

And from the results, his plan worked perfectly.

Without any hesitation, Fang Yuan accepted the task and was once again teleported to Sacred City.

Several days later.

Saintess Xia Lin stood on a giant tortoise that was slowly advancing towards Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea.

Behind her stood Fang Yuan.

The journey was tranquil and calm, but all of a sudden, a gale blew towards them carrying with it crying sounds: “I really regret it! Why did I have to provoke Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, I regret it so much!”

Xia Lin jolted, quickly looking at Fang Yuan: “Master Chu....”

“No worries.” Fang Yuan smiled while secretly using wisdom path methods to calm

Xia Lin and the giant tortoise.

The crying sounds seemed like an immortal killer move that could disturb an ordinary being’s emotions and mind.

The nearer they reached Demon Suppression Regret Crying Sea, the louder and more concentrated the crying sound became.

“I regret it! I should not have killed so many people.”

“I painfully regret it! I should not have chased after power, it would have been much better if I had stayed behind to look after my parents as a filial son!”

“I truly repent! I deceived everyone and concealed Immortal Gu, I let a friend, who trusted me the most, carry the blame so I could get benefits!”

...

The mournful cries made Xia Lin’s face pale, while Fang Yuan instead became more excited because he already felt the large immortal formation in this place.

“I am now almost certain regret Gu is here! But if I take regret Gu, will it destroy Paradise Earth’s arrangements and trigger his backup methods?” Fang Yuan was doubtful.

Regret Gu was very important, it was used to suppress the giant demon in the sea and was clearly not included in Paradise Earth’s true inheritance.

1But as far as Fang Yuan was concerned, it was a crucial Gu worm he had to take and he had decided to take the risk.

He focused his mind, activating investigative methods with all his strength, this demon suppression regret crying formation gradually appeared in his mind, becoming increasingly clearer.

This time, it was Fang Yuan who became pale.

“Such a powerful formation, it is as vast as the sky! My formation path attainment level is high and I also have extremely powerful wisdom path methods, but I would need at least dozens of years to comprehend all the profundities of this large formation!”

Cold sweat started seeping out of Fang Yuan’s forehead when his mind suddenly jolted: “Regret Gu!”

He discovered regret Gu.

Although regret Gu was hidden, Fang Yuan had already determined regret Gu was hiding somewhere in the center of the sea area through all kinds of clues and arrangements.

“How should I take regret Gu? If I move rashly and trigger the formation’s backlash, it would end up badly!”

“Maybe I can rely on reverse flow protection seal to resist it one time?”

“Or borrow the strength of the suppressed demon?”

Fang Yuan analyzed continuously in his mind.

If the demon was released, all the living beings of this small world might face extreme misery and suffering, but Fang Yuan had no misgivings or pity.

Just as Fang Yuan was thinking, a change occurred.

The large formation suddenly activated, regret Gu shot out directly towards Fang Yuan.

At the same time, an extremely boundless force emerged and pressed on Fang Yuan’s body.

“What happened?!” At the next moment, Fang Yuan disappeared, directly leaving this grotto-heaven of Paradise Earth.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1675: Birth of Red Lotus 2

Dark clouds covered the sky and heavy rain was pouring down.

Rumble!

Lightning flashed and thunder rumbled.

In Central Continent, inside the city lord’s manor in Maple Leaf City, the Maple Leaf City Lord was pacing back and forth outside a room.

He had a square face and a dignified temperament. Right now, however, his brows were tightly furrowed and his mood was like this weather, erratic and uneasy, feeling extremely worried.

Suddenly, he stopped in his tracks and leaned in with his ear pressing on the door.

Besides the torrential rainstorm and thunder, he could hear painful groans from his wife as well as several midwives’ voices: “Madam, push, push harder!”

Maple Leaf City Lord was already over fifty years old, he loved his wife deeply. He was a rank five Gu Master with the highest battle strength in all the surroundings, he had high authority as well as a leader’s charisma, he was well supported by the people. The only imperfection was he had no children.

Nine months ago, he had been ecstatic because his wife had finally gotten pregnant.

He was going to have a child in his old age, his greatest regret was finally resolved.

But despite him requesting for three famous midwives, two were rank three and one was rank four, his wife’s labor still encountered unexpected difficulty.

“How could this be?!” Maple Leaf City Lord wanted to get angry but had nothing to vent on.

He clenched his fists, the battle strength, which he had been proud of in the past, was of no use at this moment.

He had many healing Gu worms but none of them was good at helping in childbirth.

“Oh!” He could only restrain his mood, lowering his head as he once again paced back and forth in the corridor.

“Wa! Wawa....” Suddenly, he heard an infant’s cry.

He then heard joyous laughter from the midwives: “The child is born, it is a boy! Madam, you have succeeded!!”

“I, I have a child! My... son!” Maple Leaf City Lord was stunned for a moment before turning ecstatic, he opened the door impatiently and charged in to take a look.

Right at this time, a peculiar fragrance spread within the room.

This peculiar fragrance was refreshing and gentle. The fragrance started to become denser, condensing into rays of colorful lights, they were like streams of water that floated in the air, covering the whole manor as well as the surrounding hundreds of li.

“What is this?!” Maple Leaf City Lord stopped his steps in astonishment.

But the real shock came next. These colorful flowing lights continued to increase in numbers and the fragrance also became increasingly intense.

The rainstorm stopped abruptly, dark clouds slowly dissipated; sunlight pierced through the gaps between the dark clouds and shined down, the grandest ray of light among them shining on the delivery room of the City Lord’s wife.

Then, the flowing lights started to condense into a manor-sized red lotus flower that floated in the air. It was vivid and did not dissipate for a long time.

“Born with a natural phenomenon!” Maple Leaf City Lord was shocked, his wife and the three midwives were also frozen from shock.

At the same time, in the sky, three rank eight Gu Immortals were standing on clouds and watching the city lord’s manor in Maple Leaf City. They had seen the phenomenon when the baby was born.

“He has finally been born.” The Gu Immortal in the middle, Duke Mei, heaved a long sigh. He was an old man with a benevolent countenance, his brows were particularly peculiar, they were like two exquisite dark brown roots that extended down from his forehead to his chest.

“This child is extraordinary indeed, he is blessed by the destined luck of humanity, his innate blessing is so dense that it actually condensed into a grand red lotus observable to the naked eye! He is absolutely an Immortal Venerable seed! It was worth it that our Heavenly Court used three wisdom path Gu Immortals to deduce him.” Standing on the left, Gu Immortal Duke Tong sighed. 1

He was a middle-aged man with a very robust physique, his face and muscles seemed to be made from brass as they let out cold metallic glister. Standing on the clouds, he looked deep like a pool and lofty like a mountain, as if he was a vajra tower that could not be moved even if heaven and earth shook, an absolute spirit that disregarded the storms.

Duke Mei nodded: “Among all the Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables in history, they share a common characteristic, they all possess the destined luck of humanity1. It is just that in some cases, the luck is not conspicuous at the early stage and is deeply concealed. Only by a certain period would the luck activate. This child caused such a phenomenon when he is just born, no wonder heaven and earth cannot tolerate him and sent down calamities and tribulations to eliminate him. This is rare even in venerable history. If this child is nurtured properly, he will definitely become the most talented and outstanding existence among the venerables!”

Suddenly, Duke Mei’s body shook as he coughed out a mouthful of blood.

“Duke Mei.” Duke Tong frowned: “We suffered heavy injuries to block the calamities and tribulations.”

“Duke Mei!” The Gu Immortal standing at the right also revealed a concerned expression. He was a young man with a head full of purple hair, a dragon shaped qi aura moved around his body continuously.

Duke Mei looked at the young Gu Immortal: “Duke Long, fate Gu has given us the revelation, you share an extremely deep affinity with this child. This child will become a venerable and you are his Dao Guardian! Go, take him as your disciple, guide him and nurture him. You will be the cause of his achievements as he will be the cause of yours. You two are destined to shine brightly in the history of humanity for all eternity!”

“Yes, I shall go now.” Young Duke Long nodded.

“Go.” Duke Tong’s brows were furrowed: “When we return to Heavenly Court, Duke Mei and I shall enter a very long hibernation to recuperate. The era of the Three Dukes of Heavenly Court is over, Duke Long, you will lead Heavenly Court, continue to bring prosperity to this world.”

“I will!” Duke Long restrained his excited emotions and slowly descended.

His sleeves were fluttering with the wind, he waved his hand and boundless wind surged. Endless dragon roars were heard, attracting attention and shock from everyone.

In this boundless wind, he slowly flew down and landed on the manor of Maple Leaf City Lord.

Including Maple Leaf City Lord, all the guards were kneeling on the ground, many of them shivering like leaves.

Maple Leaf City Lord was a knowledgeable man, knowing about Gu Immortals’ existence as well as knowing his strength could not even resist one finger of a Gu Immortal. He forcibly calmed himself before paying respects: “I, Hong Zhu, pay respects to lord immortal. I wonder what matter lord immortal has descended to the mortal world for?”

Duke Long smiled: “Hong Zhu, your son is the blessed child of the world, a peerless genius that appears once in a million years with extremely rare innate talents. If he is nurtured well, he will definitely be outstanding. But if he lacks guidance, there will be huge danger to countless beings of this world, chaos would ensue. I was happy to see such a rare talent, and for the sake of humanity, I came here to take this child as my disciple. I will carefully raise and guide him, making him into a leader of the righteous path, a Gu Immortal who seeks prosperity for the whole of humanity.”

“Ah...” Maple Leaf City Lord was both stunned and joyous at these words.

He was shaken by Duke Long’s words, but he had personally seen the natural phenomenon just before, and was actually somewhat mentally prepared.

The joy was naturally because his son received a Gu Immortal master and had boundless future prospects, he would definitely surpass his parents.

Although he was a city lord with high authority, he was nothing compared to this

Gu Immortal.

But besides the shock and joy, Hong Zhu felt somewhat dejected. He got a child in his old age, it was not easy, but who could have thought that before he even got a chance to look at his son, his son would be taken as a disciple by lord immortal. They would probably get very few chances to meet each other in the future.

Duke Long immediately knew what Hong Zhu was thinking, consoling: “Rest assured, I came today only to explain this matter and not to take away your son immediately. I will only bring him away when he is ten years old which is the correct time to start teaching him.”

Hong Zhu immediately felt endless excitement and expressed his thanks repeatedly.

At this time, the door opened, the city lord’s wife had already cleaned herself up, she came out while holding the newly born baby along with the three midwives and knelt on the ground, paying respects to Duke Long.

Duke Long’s gaze was immediately attracted towards the baby. He laughed happily as he took a step forward, immediately arriving in front of the city lord’s wife.

He carefully held the baby and inspected him.

This baby did not have any ugliness that a newly born baby had. His head was filled with dark hair and had a very attractive and cute face. His eyes shined brightly like stars, his skin was white and tender and his cheeks were chubby.

At this time, the red lotus that was hovering in the air slowly descended while shrinking and condensing continuously, in Duke Long’s vision, the red lotus eventually landed on the baby’s forehead, condensing into a nine petaled red lotus birthmark.

A trace of shock flashed past Duke Long’s eyes as he thought: “This destined luck condensed into a birthmark, imprinted on his forehead, this phenomenon has not been seen in any venerable before. When my disciple becomes a venerable, he will probably be an extremely unique one!” 1

As he thought of this, Duke Long felt like the light baby he was holding had become as heavy as a mountain. A strong sense of mission and responsibility filled Duke Long’s mind.

“You don’t need to kneel, please stand.” After inspecting for a while more, Duke Long solemnly handed the baby back to the city lord’s wife.

He exhaled, three gusts of qi flashed by, one fell on the baby while the other two merged inside the city lord couple.

The baby immediately fell asleep with a smile on his face.

The city lord couple felt boundless strength filling their limbs and bones.

The city lord’s wife gave a cry of shock, the weakness from giving birth was gone instantly, she burst with energy as her body condition returned to when she was young.

City Lord Hong Zhu astonishingly discovered his old injuries were completely gone and his primeval essence had broken common sense, carrying a trace of green luster. His strength that was already at a level where it could not be raised further seemed to have been elevated by a large degree!

Without immediately inspecting his changes, Hong Zhu first gave thanks to Duke

Long along with his wife.

Duke Long waved his hand: “You don’t need to thank me because I still need your help. The parents and the master are not interchangeable with each other. I wish that you can love each other dearly and give your son deep care, let him feel the love and warmth of the world, this will be extremely helpful to his growth. Ten years later, I will come again.” 1

Duke Long then slowly rose to the sky. Air currents surged around him and dragon roars were heard unceasingly, as if there was a formless wave of dragons.

Mortals gazed towards the sky and saw Duke Long flying away until his figure was blocked by the clouds.

After a while of deep silence, the whole city went into an uproar.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1676: What is Fate?

It was a clear sky with no clouds anywhere.

Maple Leaf City was bustling with people moving here and there.

Six years had passed since the City Lord’s son, Hong Ting, was born.

In these six years, Maple Leaf City enjoyed a peaceful time with no calamities. Its size continued to expand unceasingly, already surpassing the original size by over ten times, it had become the number one human city in the surrounding plains.

Chirp, chirp...

A group of spiritual sparrows flew over from somewhere. Their whole bodies shined with golden light and were flying like they were dancing.

They displayed extraordinary liveliness until they arrived at the top of the City Lord’s manor when suddenly, they imploded one after the other, bursting into specks of golden lights that sprinkled down.

Inside the City Lord’s manor, Hong Ting was currently brandishing a short decorative sword. He was moving some ornamental mounds back and forth while skillfully swinging his sword.

In an instant, Hong Ting’s figure disappeared, sword lights formed into spheres which shined brightly everywhere.

“Great!”

“Amazing!”

“Young master truly has unrivaled talents, he has completely perfected this sword technique after just learning it for three months. Such a density of sword lights is simply unbelievable.”

The surrounding guards praised with sincerity from the depths of their hearts.

City Lord Hong Zhu stroked his beard and nodded with a smile. He was very proud of his son, as for the feeling of surprise, he had lost it a long time ago.

Over these years, Hong Ting's aptitude and performance had changed his view and understanding multiple times, he now knew how shallow his comprehension of the word 'genius' was.

Because of the endless surprises throughout these years, Hong Zhu had already become numb to them long ago. Now, everything involving his son was natural and a matter of fact.

Clang!

Right at this time, a crisp sound echoed.

Silver sword lights suddenly disappeared and Hong Ting's figure appeared once again, his short decorative sword had slashed apart a boulder.

Cheers and praises immediately resounded.

“Father, I feel like this sword technique has not reached its limit, there is room for improvement.” Hong Ting walked out from the group of ornamental mounds and said with a smile.

Hong Zhu laughed heartily: “This sword technique belongs to the secret manual of a famous sword cultivator, Zhao San Si, I used a lot of treasures to exchange for it. You have only practiced for three months and already feel that it is not good enough?”

Hong Ting blinked with a cute slyness in his eyes: “Father, I only said that out of momentary inspiration. To tell the truth, this sword technique is only so-so, I have already learned all of its essence after practicing for three months.”

Hong Zhu coughed, feeling a bit of headache again. His son's talent was too great, he was fast at learning anything, he even went as far as to comprehend the deepest essence of those moves. This was good but also bad as well. Hong Zhu's accumulations were already used up several years ago by Hong Ting. He went through all kinds of avenues to search for secret manuals to teach Hong Ting, but it still could not match Hong Ting's ability to absorb knowledge like a black hole.

If this continued for a long time, what could he do?

Right at this time, a group of spiritual sparrows flew over their heads and suddenly imploded into golden light specks.

The light specks fell and got absorbed into everyone's head; but most of the light specks were absorbed by Hong Ting alone.

Instantly, everyone had joyous expressions. They had received inheritances and all sorts of peculiar secret manuals.

“This is the gift of yet another immortal!”

“I wonder which immortal this is?”

“We should thank young master, we are all enjoying his fortune.”

The guards looked at Hong Ting passionately, even Hong Zhu's gaze carried a trace of complex feelings.

Hong Ting had closed his eyes, immersed completely in the newly obtained sea of knowledge.

Hong Zhu and the rest were already not surprised at this scene, even the commoners outside the City Lord’s manor were only slightly surprised before returning to their business.

Unusual phenomena and immortal miracles were fascinating, but when they happened too many times, they would start feeling bland and ordinary.

The immortal miracles appearing around Hong Ting could not be said to be ‘a lot’, it was at a mind numbing level that was simply overflowing with such incidents.

Since he was born and taken as a disciple by Duke Long, immortal phenomena would frequently occur around him.

Duke Long was the leader of Heavenly Court, not mentioning the rank eight Gu Immortals in Heavenly Court, just the ten great ancient sects under Heavenly Court were colossal forces with extremely robust foundations.

Duke Long had taken in this disciple with great publicity, he did not conceal anything. Everyone understood his intentions, so whether it was Central Continent’s righteous path, demonic path, or lone immortals, they all paid extreme attention to Hong Ting’s growth.

Hong Ting was the blessed child of the world, a future Immortal Venerable who would be cultivated by Heavenly Court, this was not a secret. So, every so often, Gu Immortals or descendants of Gu Immortals would secretly help Hong Ting, to build a good affinity and relationship with him in advance.

As a result, the golden sparrow inheritance gift was not strange, there were also spiritual cranes imparting scrolls, auspicious clouds sending fruits, sacred wind marrow cleansing, and all sorts of unusual immortal level phenomena that appeared endlessly.

After a long while, Hong Ting completely absorbed the knowledge in his brain but his brows furrowed into a frown: “There are eighteen types of weapon training methods, each one is exquisite and unique, but there is still no mention of any advanced aperture awakening method. Father, when can I awaken my aperture and control Gu worms? No matter how excellent these fighting techniques are, they are only mortal techniques. Controlling Gu worms is the only true way.”

“Son, don’t be in a hurry. You have once again forgotten what your master instructed in his letter.” Hong Zhu said with a pleasant smile.

Hong Ting waved his hand impatiently: “Father, I know, I know. Master said that although I can awaken my aperture in advance, I must do it only when I am twelve. Before the timing and opportunity is right, I cannot do it in advance. I am really curious, master has such vast powers, why can’t he awaken my aperture now?”

Hong Zhu’s expression became slightly grave: “Son, your master is an immortal, you cannot understand what he is thinking but you have to obey. You need to understand that he absolutely won’t harm you, he cherishes you just like how father and mother treasure you.”

“Yes, father. I was wrong, please don’t get angry.” Hong Ting quickly cupped his fists, he was very filial to his parents.

Time passed, years passed in an instant.

Duke Long appeared once again and formally took Hong Ting as his disciple. He took Hong Ting to roam all over the world while personally guiding him.

When Hong Ting was twelve, Duke Long awakened his aperture. Hong Ting officially stepped on the path of Gu cultivation, and because of his peerless talent and robust foundation, his cultivation progress was shockingly fast.

Not only in his cultivation, his experiences also richened constantly on this journey. He met many people, mortals and immortals, kind people and evil people. His knowledge of human life and heaven and earth was constantly deepening.

He had a strong sense of justice and loathed evil, he looked handsome and kind but was crafty and resourceful as well.

“Master, I have found that evil Xue Tu Dao who slaughtered an entire village, he is staying at a nearby mountain!” On this day, Hong Ting returned to the cave from hunting and spoke to Duke Long with excitement.

Duke Long nodded with a smile: “Take a seat first, the soup is almost ready. This soup is made from the bones of an ancient desolate beast, it will be very helpful to your growth.”

Hong Ting threw down the prey he hunted, saying with clenched teeth: “Master, I have been wanting to take action on Xue Tu Dao for over a year and get rid of this evil, but you said I only had rank three cultivation while he had rank five, I was not his match so you didn’t allow me to go. Half a year ago, I already had rank four cultivation and eight killer moves, I had an extremely high chance of taking Xue Tu Dao’s life but you said that it was not one hundred percent so you didn’t let me make a move. Three months ago, I already reached rank five and could easily deal with Xue Tu Dao in two to three moves, but you said it was not time to take his life. Master, if we let such an evil person run amok, who knows how many more innocent lives would be lost. Let me strike now!”

Duke Long put down the ladle and let the bone soup simmer as he said with a sigh: “Disciple, the opportunity has not arrived.”

“I don’t care about any opportunity, I only know that if I don’t make a move now, I would lose a good opportunity!” Hong Ting was extremely firm.

Duke Long shook his head: “Now is not the time for Xue Tu Dao to die. If you forcibly kill him, not only will it be futile and fruitless, you will even create certain aftermath which will lead to tragedy.”

“I don’t believe it! I only need one move to take his life!!” Hong Ting raised one finger, staring right into Duke Long’s eyes with a burning gaze.

Duke Long went silent for a while: “Then go, young man, give it a try.”

“Thank you master!” Hong Ting was exulted.

“I just hope that you will not be disappointed when the time comes.”

“Why will I be disappointed? Master, please wait a moment, disciple will return with Xue Tu Dao’s head within fifteen minutes.”

Hong Ting turned around and left.

But fifteen minutes passed, thirty minutes went by and soon it reached forty-five minutes, Hong Ting still did not appear.

Duke Long saw everything, he knew the timing was right as he left the cave and crossed a forest, arriving beside Hong Ting.

Hong Ting was kneeling on the ground, his face filled with shock, anger, and deep regret.

He was dazedly looking at the foot of the mountain, a small village had once been there where the villagers lived happily.

His eyes were red and filled with traces of blood. He saw Duke Long and raised his head, tear stains were still clear on his face.

“Master, I did not imagine there to be a Gu Immortal inheritance here. That Xue Tu Dao secretly came here to obtain this inheritance. After I destroyed his plan, he used the inheritance’s power to stop me and although I fought with all my strength, I did not think the battle would cause the mountain to crumble, unexpectedly, unexpectedly... the small village was completely buried. Master! It was me, I caused the death of these villagers!” Hong Ting sobbed.

Duke Long did not console him, he was silent for a while before suddenly saying: “Disciple, do you want revenge? Do you want to get rid of Xue Tu Dao? The opportunity has arrived.”

“Really? Where is he?” Hong Ting’s body shook, asking immediately.

“At that mountain.” Duke Long pointed.

Hong Ting immediately hurried off and easily killed Xue Tu Dao.

“I was so close, I already obtained the true inheritance and only had to absorb the gains. The moment I narrowly escaped death, you came after me! If I had some time, I would not be afraid, I could have become a Gu Immortal!” These were Xue Tu Dao’s last words before he died.

Hong Ting was silently standing before Xue Tu Dao’s corpse.

Duke Long appeared behind Hong Ting once again, remaining silent.

After a good while, Hong Ting stopped looking at Xue Tu Dao’s corpse in a daze as he asked with an extremely hoarse voice: “Master, had I listened to your arrangements, I could have easily killed him and those villagers would not have been implicated, is that right?”

Duke Long did not reply, only softly patting Hong Ting’s shoulder.

Hong Ting’s body shook as he fell into a deep silence before asking: “Master, I want to ask you, what is... fate?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1677: I Regret It

“Fate...” Duke Long sighed with a deep and complex expression. He walked towards a rock and patted beside him, indicating Hong Ting to have a seat.

Hong Ting followed Duke Long and sat cross-legged.

“Look.” Duke Long pointed at the rock he was sitting on.

Hong Ting quickly looked, he saw a small group of ants moving beside the rock. They were moving in an orderly fashion, returning to their nest with food.

“This is fate.” Duke Long continued.

“...What?”

“Look again.” Duke Long pointed at the sky.

Hong Ting gazed at the sky, clouds of all kinds of shapes were moving in the sky.

“This also is fate.” Duke Long said.

Hong Ting’s mind jolted as if he had comprehended something: “Master, you mean to say...”

He did not continue, he had gained some comprehension but was unable to express them in words at this time.

“Ants transporting food, bees collecting honey, wind blowing, clouds floating, everything in this world have their own paths to walk on. To us, they might look like they don’t follow any rules, but they are actually moving according to the rules of the Great Dao.”1

“Look at the moon and sun, every day, the sun rises and the moon falls, the moon rises and the sun falls. Look at a human’s life and death, no matter who they are, be they an Immortal Venerable or a Demon Venerable, they will die in the end.”

“Everything is fate.”

“Every person, every living being, even every rock, every drop of water, every lump of fire, since they exist in this world, they will have value and meaning in their existence. Good and evil is also the same, without good, how would there be evil? Without evil, why talk about good?”

“You were in a hurry to kill Xue Tu Dao and did not see his value. Since heaven and earth let him exist, there is definitely a reason for his life. This is fate. Fate already has arrangements for everything in the world, it is just that we can only slightly feel this kind of arrangement and cannot see it clearly.”

“Not being able to see clearly is normal. The laws of heaven and earth, the Great Dao of the universe, even if an immortal uses all their life, they would not be able to understand them thoroughly. We are too weak, too small, while heaven and earth is too vast. We should revere heaven and earth, follow the arrangements of the heavenly fate, and bring fortune to the world.”

1“Your parents’ marriage was fate’s arrangement, their greatest value was to bring you into this world.”

“You will become an Immortal Venerable in the future, this is also fate’s arrangement. You need to accept it, climb to the peak step by step, lead Heavenly Court and contribute your life to the righteous path.”

“And my greatest value in life is to teach and guide you towards the proper path. I am your... Dao Guardian.”

1“Believe in fate, acknowledge fate, all its arrangements have their own reasons. If we forcibly interfere, it will lead to tragedy and regret. Just like how you tried to take Xue Tu Dao’s life early, but were you able to kill him?”

Duke Long shook his head: “No. Although your strength surpassed his, you encountered all kinds of unexpected situations. In the end, not only did you fail to kill him, you even implicated innocent lives.”

“Think back on it, if you had listened to fate’s arrangements and attacked Xue Tu Dao at his weakest moments, would you still have encountered those accidents?”

“I will tell you, the value of Xue Tu Dao’s existence was to activate this Gu Immortal inheritance, to open the way and hand this inheritance to you.”

Hong Ting was dazed, he was motionless like a statue.

Two clear rows of tears fell from his eyes as he choked: “Master, I was wrong.”

“It is good to know your mistakes and change them. Actually, your wrong choice was also fate’s arrangement.” Duke Long said.

“Master, what do you mean?”

“We are all under fate’s arrangements, you thought you could defy fate, but your thought was also fate’s arrangement. You don’t need to feel guilty, you should comprehend fate’s intention. You think your wrong choice was of no value? Wrong.”

1“Every mistake has an inestimable value to a youth’s growth. If you can absorb the lesson from this mistake, acknowledge fate’s existence and accept it, then this mistake would have shown its value. That village’s destruction also has its value!”

1Duke Long then took a deep look at Hong Ting: “My disciple, you are a talented and intelligent child, a good child, but I worry because you emphasize on feelings too much. You already have rank five cultivation now, among the paths to ascend to an immortal, you will probably choose wisdom path, right?”

“Master, your vision is unparalleled, I indeed have such thoughts, I feel like wisdom path is extremely suitable for me.” Hong Ting said truthfully.

Duke Long shook his head: “Wisdom path focuses on thought, will, and emotion. You emphasize on feelings too much so studying emotions has more demerits than benefits to you. Listen to master, choose time path. When you can view the past and present, observe the rise and decline of history, all sorts of honor and disgrace, you will understand that all feelings and romance will be cleansed by time. I have received revelation from fate Gu, time path suits you the most.”

2Hong Ting opened his mouth slightly, wanting to say something, but he nodded in the end: “Disciple shall abide by master’s teachings and choose time path.”

Duke Long nodded in satisfaction: “That’s good, master is your Dao Guardian, pointing you towards the correct path is the meaning behind my existence.”

Time slowly moved forward.

Hong Ting chose time path, and under Duke Long’s protection, successfully passed his immortal ascension tribulation, becoming a time path Gu Immortal.

...

“Lord immortal Hong Ting, that demon has proclaimed he is going to slaughter the whole city unless I give my daughter to him as a concubine. He is a great Gu Immortal, we are only mortals. We truly are unable to do anything, considering the friendship between me and your father, I implore you to eliminate this demon!” An old city lord paid a visit, kneeling to the ground as he made his request to Hong Ting.

Hong Ting recognized him, this city lord’s city was close to Maple Leaf City. They had frequent dealings with each other, this city lord and his father indeed had a close friendship.

He had even seen this city lord’s daughter and had played with her when they were young.

“Old senior, please get up. I will definitely help, it is just that...” Hong Ting paused for a moment: “The opportunity has not arrived.”

The old city lord was exulted: “Since lord immortal has replied, this old man shall be rest assured. I believe lord immortal will not go back on his words!”

Hong Ting waited till it was the correct time to kill this demonic Gu Immortal.

He attacked resolutely and killed this demon easily.

However, the old city lord was kneeling on the ground, gazing at the city filled with ruins and corpses as he cried in sadness: “This accursed demon is finally dead! My good daughter, the inhabitants of my city, you can rest in peace now, your hatred has been avenged!!”

...

“Disciple pays respect to master. I wonder what matter master has called me for?” Hong Ting went up to Duke Long.

“Disciple, master has sensed fate. Floating flower river is about to flood, the river channel has diverged. I want you to go save people. Remember, don’t make a move early, you can only do so after three days and three nights.” Duke Long instructed carefully.

“Yes, master.”

Hong Ting came to the floating flower riverbank and looked at the flooding river water, countless living beings were forced to be homeless, while many drowned corpses were floating on the surface.

He forcibly restrained his emotions and waited for three days and three nights. But at that time, he found that he did not even need to make a move, the river water retreated by itself, swamps appearing in many areas.

A wild Immortal Gu’s aura emerged and was actually not far away from Hong Ting.

Hong Ting easily subdued this wild Immortal Gu: “Great Gu, it is actually a rank seven time path Gu which is perfect for me.”

1Howl!

The wild Immortal Gu’s aura attracted two ancient desolate beasts.

Hong Ting’s expression turned solemn as he concealed himself. He waited for these two ancient desolate beasts to kill each other. After one died and another was injured, he made his move, getting these two ancient desolate beast corpses easily.

“Wonderful, wonderful.” Gazing at the traces of the battlefield, Hong Ting suddenly came to a realization.

“So it turns out this was fate’s arrangement. With the battle of the two ancient desolate beasts, floating flower river has expanded by several times its width while its river channel has been dyed by the ancient desolate beasts’ blood, becoming much thicker. From now on, floating flower river will probably not flood again.”

“There are also these plots of land beside floating flower river which will become extremely fertile as they are soaked in the essence blood and corpses of countless beings. In the future, the mortals who live here will truly be fortunate.”

1...

“Bull-headed Demon Brute, let go of my parents now, otherwise, I will make you suffer a fate worse than death!” Hong Ting furiously glared at the bull-headed demonic immortal.

The bull-headed demonic immortal held Hong Ting’s parents in each of his hands, laughing loudly: “Kid, you are very arrogant, you want to get rid of me? When I became a Gu Immortal, you were still suckling milk as a baby! Are you scared now?”

Hong Ting had to restrain himself and could only shout in anger.

Bull-headed Demon Brute quickly shouted: “Don’t come over, don’t be impulsive! Don’t you want your parents’ lives? If you come over, I will directly crush your parents’ heads!”

“What do you want?!” Hong Ting shouted.

Bull-headed Demon Brute gave a malevolent smile: “Now we are talking. As long as you hand over my lifespan Gu, I will return your parents to you. If not, I only have a few days to live anyway, I will just die with your parents.”

Hong Ting was immediately dazed.

According to fate’s arrangements, those two wild lifespan Gu should indeed go to Bull-headed Demon Brute. But Hong Ting saw his parents getting old and reaching their life’s limit, so he seized those two lifespan Gu without telling Duke Long. Who could have thought that Bull-headed Demon Brute would come and bring disaster to his parents!

In an instant, Hong Ting’s face became deathly pale and his forehead was filled with cold sweat: “I have already used those two lifespan Gu.”

“I know, you used them on your parents!” Bull Demon was not surprised: “But, you are Duke Long’s disciple, a future Immortal Venerable who will lead Heavenly Court. I don’t believe Heavenly Court’s treasury does not have any lifespan Gu. Bring three hundred years, no, three thousand years lifespan Gu and I will release your parents!”

“This...” Hong Ting was now caught in a dilemma.

In the end, through twists and turns, he finally forced Bull-headed Demon Brute to retreat. But his parents were irrecoverably injured, even immortal methods could not heal them.

“Father, mother, I harmed you! If I had not taken lifespan Gu for you, you would still have several years left!” Hong Ting knelt down and cried.

Hong Zhu, however, smiled: “Son, life and death is up to fate, fortune is up to heaven. Humans have to die sooner or later, this world has long life but is there anyone who can live forever? No! We are fated to die, you don’t need to feel sad for us. On the contrary, you should be happy for us. The two of us could have a son like you, a future Immortal Venerable, how great of an honor is this, we will definitely be noted down in history because of you.”

Madam Hong also said: “My son, listen to your father, be a good person, you must be righteous.”

The old couple grasped each other’s hands and died at the same time.

“Father, mother—!” Hong Ting howled towards the sky.

...

Bright light accumulated in Hong Ting’s eyes. Through the passing of time, experience and maturity made him full of manly charisma.

The setting sun illuminated the lush green hill.

Under the setting sun, he saw Liu Shu Xian for the first time.

Two pairs of eyes met each other, both felt their hearts pulsing, an indescribable atmosphere rapidly spread.

Love at first sight.

Liu Shu Xian revealed a strange expression, asking softly: “Who are you?”

Hong Ting, however, felt no surprise, he replied with a smile: “I am your fated husband, my name is Hong Ting.”

Liu Shu Xian was astonished: “You are the future Immortal Venerable?”

“Don’t be surprised, our encounter here was determined by fate.”

Love gave Hong Ting a feeling of satisfaction and bliss that he had never experienced before!

He and Liu Shu Xian always kept each other’s company and had a lot in common. It was like they were born for each other, like a key to a lock, they were a natural couple.

They roamed the world together, they conversed and dined under the moon. They had great chemistry, an eye signal to the other could express their inner heart and even convey all their intention to the other’s mind. They were a true immortal couple, living together for hundreds of years. They supported each other in the path of cultivation, there was not even one fight or a moment where they were vexed at each other.

Liu Shu Xian accompanied Hong Ting all the way to rank eight, rank eight peak, and finally to rank nine venerable realm!

The tribulation was unimaginable, but Hong Ting still succeeded in the end.

Duke Long was heavily injured due to this, several Heavenly Court Gu Immortals perished, while Hong Ting held Liu Shu Xian’s gradually freezing body with tears all over his face.

He tightly held Liu Shu Xian, repeatedly saying: “Don’t leave me, don’t leave me, I beg you, please live!”

“It’s no use, I have been struck by the tribulation. Having a trace of my soul left to take a final look at you is already an enormous fortune. How could I possibly ask for more?” Liu Shu Xian smiled.

“I am useless, I am useless! I underwent tribulation but implicated you!” Hong Ting’s head was lowered with tears rolling down his eyes.

“No, Hong Ting. That tribulation could only have been blocked by my special physique. Even if you all sacrificed your lives, you would only have failed. I was born with one of the ten extreme physiques and encountered you, it was all fate’s arrangement. In your fatal moment, I suddenly understood the greatest meaning of my life, it was to protect you, to block the tribulation for you and help you ascend to the position of an Immortal Venerable! Now... I have accomplished it.”

“No, No! Xian Er, I would rather not be an Immortal Venerable, I only want you to live, I only want you to live!” Hong Ting roared helplessly, his body was shaking and his tears were falling.

“Everything and everyone in this world has its own respective fate, it is fixed. Hong Ting, you cannot have such thoughts, you need to live on properly, your fate is to become an Immortal Venerable, lead Heavenly Court and spread the glory of the righteous path throughout the five regions... Do you know? I had always been wanting to see that scene, standing by your side and accompanying you as you bring fortune to the world with invincible might. Unfortunately, I won’t be able to see it...”

Liu Shu Xian’s life force gradually fell, until she died.

Hong Ting’s head was lowered and his back was bent deeply like an old man, a heavy shadow shrouded his face.

At this moment, he seemed to have lost all signs of life.

He was motionless like a statue.

In his immortal aperture, the remaining heaven and earth qi gathered and merged, refining a rank eight Immortal Gu according to his current mental state.

This Gu had the form of a centipede, its whole body was pale white like paper. Unlike centipedes, its legs were replaced by one hundred feelers. Every feeler was translucent, gently floating in the air, agitating hearts and continuously raising the deepest regretful feelings.

Rank eight regret Gu!

“Cough, cough, cough.” Duke Long coughed out several mouthfuls of blood, he forcibly stood up and walked to Hong Ting’s side.

“Liu Shu Xian’s death was not without meaning, it was worthy and valuable, there is no need for sadness, my dear disciple. This was all fate’s arrangement. Now, you are already an Immortal Venerable, rank nine venerables are extremely rare even in the long history of humanity. You still have a long life ahead, your mission has just started. I will abdicate my position, Heavenly Court as well as the five regions and two heavens need you. Hong Ting, Hong Ting?” Duke Long softly called.

1Hong Ting slowly raised his head, he did not look at Duke Long, his gaze was still on Liu Shu Xian’s icy corpse.

He replied lightly: “I regret it.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1678: Immortal Venerable Regrets, But I Do Not!

“What did you say?” Duke Long did not hear clearly.

“I said, I regret it.” Hong Ting said again.

Duke Long’s brows immediately furrowed, using a stern gaze to look at his proudest disciple: “Regret? Oh Hong Ting, don’t speak of such nonsense again. You are clear of it, how many people dedicated and sacrificed themselves to cultivate and support you until you reached your current cultivation level? If you say such things, would you be doing justice to those people who have helped you throughout your life? Would you be doing justice to your parents? Justice to your late wife Liu Shu Xian? Justice to the immortals who helped you pass the tribulation and sacrificed themselves?”

Duke Long berated Hong Ting sternly.

“Alright, Lord Duke Long, Liu Shu Xian’s death is a great tragedy, we can understand Red Lotus Immortal Venerable’s feelings. He is only in a temporarily agitated state.” The other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals attempted to mediate.

“Red Lotus Immortal Venerable... hehe.” Hong Ting laughed with disdain, he gazed at Duke Long with his bloodshot eyes: “If such sacrifices are required and there will be even more sacrifices in the future for this Immortal Venerable position, then I would rather not have it!”

“Enough!” Duke Long shouted in rage: “I will not allow you to speak anymore nonsense, Hong Ting! You think your Immortal Venerable position can be gained or abandoned at your will? This is all fate’s arrangement, this is the mission of your life, you must accept it no matter what!”

Hong Ting laughed loudly, his hair was messy, he was in a miserable state. He lowered his head and looked at Duke Long: “A grand Immortal Venerable, invincible in the world, actually cannot do as he pleases, he cannot even reject this Immortal Venerable position?”

Duke Long snorted coldly: “Tell me, Hong Ting, who can do as they please in this world? Your thoughts are too childish, you think becoming an Immortal Venerable and leading the righteous path would not need sacrifices? What is there in this world that has no price to pay for? How shallow do you think the words ‘righteous path’ are? Wrong! Maintaining Heavenly Court’s righteous path requires you to pay a price, it requires sacrifices. If you don’t even have this sacrificial mentality, then I will tell you, you don’t have the qualifications to enter Heavenly Court!”

Hong Ting’s body shook.

“Lord Duke Long, Lord Immortal Venerable, please calm yourselves. We should recuperate and heal our injuries now instead of quarreling.” The other Gu Immortals repeatedly tried persuading.

Hong Ting slowly lowered his head, but his fists were slowly clenched tight as he said with an incomparably firm tone: “I want to revive them.”

Duke Long’s brows raised, his face cold as ice: “Who do you want to revive?”

“Every person who sacrificed themselves for me. My parents, Liu Shu Xian, and many others.”

“Presumptuous!” Duke Long suddenly shouted while pointing at Hong Ting: “How could you have such a heretical thought?! You know it clearly, I have also told you several times, life and death is determined by fate, life and death is the rule of the Great Dao, any living being’s life and death is arranged by fate. You want to revive the dead? Are you trying to send the entire world into chaos? Have you not learned yet? The more you think like that, the more cruel tragedies will happen around you!”

“Even if there are crueler tragedies, I will accept them! Master, disciple always had a question. Why? Why must we accept fate’s arrangements? If there was no fate, would the world truly fall into chaos? Is it not possible that the world will become a better place?” Hong Ting asked in an anxious tone.

Duke Long’s body shook with anger, even the persuading Heavenly Court Gu Immortals slowly took a step back, looking at Hong Ting as if he was someone unfamiliar.

“Lord Immortal Venerable, your thought is too dangerous.”

“Right, without fate, our human race would not be prosperous.”

“Fate Gu is Heavenly Court’s supreme treasure, Lord Immortal Venerable actually wants to destroy it? This, this, this...”

“All of you...” Hong Ting looked at the surrounding Gu Immortals, he felt an indescribably deep loneliness at this moment.

Time flowed, who knows how long had passed.

A lonely figure appeared in the River of Time.

His hair was messy, his face was filled with the vicissitudes of life, like a man who had roamed the world but had no place to call home.

His face still had the former Hong Ting’s shadow, but his expression had already changed completely.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable looked at the endlessly flowing River of Time as he sighed: “It is time to leave behind my inheritance.”

He slowly descended, his feet stopped right before he touched the River of Time: “This first stone lotus island will also be the most important stone lotus island, I will use regret Gu as its core and leave this behind for the otherworldly demon, for the person who has the greatest hope of destroying Fate!”

1Thereupon, a stone lotus island gradually appeared in this world.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable left behind rank eight regret Gu here as well as a large amount of time path immortal materials, immortal killer moves, a portion of his true meaning that contained his true memories of a certain period of time, as well as an immortal killer move with an unparalleled effect.

After finishing the arrangement, Red Lotus Demon Venerable flew away slowly with his exhausted body.

Time flew by, who knows how long had passed.

An outsider charged into this stone lotus island.

He was dressed in rough clothing, he had a thin looking body and a bald head, he had an ordinary appearance. He was bare-footed, his legs were even stained with some mud, like a farmer who had returned from a day of work in the fields.

However, his face looked very young, his eyes were glistening brightly, filled with compassion and benevolence.

Red Lotus' true meaning appeared, condensing into an illusory image of Red Lotus Demon Venerable who smiled towards the bare-footed young looking man: "Welcome, my honorary guest."

"I am Paradise Earth, I finally found this place after immense effort."

This person was Paradise Earth, who had already become an Immortal Venerable!

Red Lotus' true meaning directly asked: "Immortal Venerable, what is the purpose for your visit?"

Paradise Earth smiled: "Senior Red Lotus, why ask when you already know?"

Red Lotus' true meaning also smiled: "You are right, Fate has only been damaged, not completely destroyed, so everything is still traceable and observable from the River of Time."

Pausing for a moment, Red Lotus' true meaning continued: "I can lend you regret Gu, as for your intention to steal my inheritor, that will depend on your ability."

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable looked solemn: "Although he is an otherworldly demon, he is not an emotionless person. Put down the blade to reach redemption, it is never too late to turn back. Who does not want to seek redemption? I am willing to give it a try!"

3Red Lotus' true meaning laughed: "Alright. My main body still had some worries when constructing this island. After all, I am not entirely confident in defending against Heavenly Court. However, since you are taking action, then there is no worry. This is regret Gu, catch it properly."

Regret Gu flew over slowly, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable stretched his hands, which were covered in radiance, and carefully received it.

"It is indeed worthy of being regret Gu, it constantly draws out boundless regretful feelings. Only a person with not even a little bit of regret is immune to this greatest flaw. Otherwise, any Gu Immortal who approaches it will feel incomparable pain and regret!" Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable smiled bitterly: "If not for my rank nine cultivation level, I might not be able to suppress it."

2“Looks like you also have regret in your heart.” Red Lotus’ true meaning sighed.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable smiled lightly: “Who in this world does not have any regrets in their life?”

Putting regret Gu into his immortal aperture, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable bowed towards Red Lotus’ true meaning solemnly: “I take my leave, I will definitely send him here.”

...

Fang Yuan slowly opened his eyes, the dazed expression slowly dissipated from his eyes.

He went through this memory that Red Lotus Demon Venerable had left here and understood the cause and result of everything.

“I never expected to directly arrive at the stone lotus island. Red Lotus Demon Venerable and Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, even though both have already perished, their arrangements are still in effect.”

1Fang Yuan sighed before looking at Red Lotus’ true meaning as well as rank eight regret Gu that was already floating before him.

Red Lotus’ true meaning smiled: “Fang Yuan, you are finally here. There is no need to say anything else, I believe you will try your best to destroy fate Gu. So, accept my true inheritance, it has already waited for you for over a million years!”

1

COMMENT

Fang Yuan nodded and extended his hand, trying to grasp regret Gu.

Red Lotus’ true meaning reminded him quickly: “Careful, regret Gu cannot be touched directly, otherwise even if you refine it, you will be drowned in endless regrets! I have already prepared a method for you, you only need...”

“There is no need for that.” Fang Yuan’s expression was indifferent as he grabbed regret Gu and instantly refined it.

1

Red Lotus’ true meaning was stunned: “You...”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1679: Red Lotus’ True Inheritance

The surging river was always flowing from past to present to future.

Fang Yuan stood at the edge of Red Lotus’ stone island, looking at the River of Time with a tranquil expression and a deep gaze.

The River of Time could be said to be the most special secluded domain of heaven and earth.

Because it traversed the entire world, without its existence and movement, the whole Gu Master world would become a still picture without any changes or vitality.

Fang Yuan had seized Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley, these two secluded domains of heaven and earth belonged to him, but he absolutely could not seize the whole River of Time.

This secluded domain of heaven and earth belonged to all beings of this world.

Every beast, every grass, every rock, every drop of water, they all enjoyed the benefits derived from the River of Time.

Even Gu Immortals could at most only possess a tributary of the River of Time in their immortal aperture.

The River of Time was the collective wealth of the whole world.

Every drop of the water of time was a transparent pale white. A gazillion droplets of water crashed, intertwined, collided, and spun each time, giving off a brilliant light show. Thus, the surface of the River of Time was always covered in a thin layer of ever-changing radiance.

This was the area with the greatest amount of time path dao marks in the whole world, the largest congregation of time path.

Fang Yuan stood at the edge of the island and saw several year beasts, a one finger flow shark, and large numbers of time path wild Gu worms in just a short while of observation.

The River of Time was overflowing with vitality.

Several days had passed since Fang Yuan arrived at this Red Lotus stone island.

In this period of time, he had completely absorbed Red Lotus’ true meaning, his time path attainment level soared rapidly, reaching an unimaginable height — time path quasi-supreme grandmaster!

6With this attainment level, Fang Yuan had many new insights when he looked at the River of Time. These feelings were not superficial, instead it pierced into the essence of the River of Time, mesmerizing Fang Yuan the more he looked at it. Pinnacle profundities of the Great Dao were in front of his eyes, quietly lifting a corner of a mysterious veil, allowing him to begin understanding this world and the principle of its operation.

Although he gained refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment previously, his experience at that time had not been as deep as now. After all, Fang Yuan was currently in the secluded domain of heaven and earth, River of Time.

Time path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level gave Fang Yuan comprehensive growth in all aspects.

For instance, the mysterious immortal killer move time cutting edge, Fang Yuan now had the ability to completely understand its essence and change the Gu worms involved, restoring its original might.

Another example was Xia Cha's time path Immortal Gu and immortal killer moves, Fang Yuan could now modify them and make them suited for himself.

The greatest growth was in time path Immortal Gu recipes. With both time path and refinement path at quasi-supreme grandmaster level, Fang Yuan had a very high assurance in modifying any time path Immortal Gu recipes and refining time path Immortal Gu.

There was no doubt that Red Lotus' true meaning was the most valuable treasure. Below it was the rank eight Immortal Gu — Regret.

1Not mentioning this Gu's legendary status, just based on its rank eight level, its value was extraordinary.

With this Gu worm, Fang Yuan now had five rank eight Gu worms: Attitude, Wisdom Sword, Years Flow Like Water, Soul Beast Token, and Regret.

1Fang Yuan could now construct Regret Pool with no obstacles.

Of course, difficulty was still there, but the greatest hurdle had become non-existent because of regret Gu. Back when Red Lotus Demon Venerable arranged this true inheritance, he had deduced Fang Yuan's situation and thus prepared a large amount of time path immortal materials.

With regret Gu and time path immortal materials, Fang Yuan only needed to follow the procedures and spend some time to construct Regret Pool. He could even build an Immortal Gu House better than Regret Pool.

With all these, Fang Yuan could begin to refine Gu en masse. On one hand, he could refine a lot more time path Immortal Gu, on the other hand, he could advance the rank of the Immortal Gu he already had.

These time path immortal materials left behind by Red Lotus Demon Venerable were of high rank, the lowest was rank seven while there was a large amount of rank eight immortal materials.

Were Heavenly Court to see this, they would cough out a large mouthful of blood. They tried all methods to disturb Fang Yuan and obstruct him from purchasing time path immortal materials without hesitating on paying a huge price. This had indeed created huge trouble for Fang Yuan, but all their actions turned out to be of no use now.

2Red Lotus' true meaning, rank eight Immortal Gu Regret, large amounts of time path immortal materials, as well as immortal killer moves.

Among the immortal killer moves, the greatest gains were immortal killer moves that used Spring Autumn Cicada as the core. The most important thing Fang Yuan cared about was the spring autumn success killer move, this move used several supplementary Immortal Gu and with the activation of Spring Autumn Cicada, its success rate would reach one hundred percent!

Simply using Spring Autumn Cicada had too low of a success rate, it also had the disadvantage of greatly decreasing luck. But although spring autumn success immortal killer move still had the disadvantage of reducing luck, the failure rate was lowered to zero.

With this move, Spring Autumn Cicada's practicality obtained an enormous boost! Fang Yuan had already decided to prepare this killer move.

Almost all the immortal killer moves were in the form of information and required Fang Yuan to personally prepare them. But one time path killer move had been specially activated by Red Lotus Demon Venerable and left for Fang Yuan. The former rank nine killer move, after over a million years, had its power greatly reduced but was still effective.

The name of this time path killer move — Future Self!

This move relied on the River of Time and Red Lotus' stone island, the Gu Immortal user could temporarily borrow the use of a certain future state of his life.

For instance, a Gu Master who had only rank five cultivation, but in the future, would successfully pass his ascension tribulation and become rank six. Under the use of future self, he could borrow the body of his future Gu Immortal self and temporarily gain a Gu Immortal's cultivation level.

5Even Fang Yuan was speechless at the mysterious and terrifying powers of this move.

Unfortunately, this move had already weakened to rank seven level and was of no use to Fang Yuan.

1In Red Lotus Demon Venerable's deduction, Fang Yuan would have rank seven cultivation when he found this stone island. But Red Lotus Demon Venerable was after all not a wisdom path Immortal Venerable, even if he were a wisdom path Immortal Venerable, there could still be flaws in the deductions. Especially in the situation when fate Gu was injured and luck path emerged, everything had become much more difficult to predict.

"My cultivation is already rank eight, I can only give this future self killer move to my subordinates."

"This can make up for their lack in strength and have the qualifications to participate in my battles."

"What a pity that I lost so much manpower before this."

The complete content of Red Lotus' true inheritance was extremely plentiful and indeed worthy of being Red Lotus Demon Venerable's true inheritance. But Fang Yuan was still slightly disappointed.

The thing he had most expected was some kind of method or a shortcut to pull a fast one and destroy fate Gu.

However, Red Lotus Demon Venerable did not leave behind such things.

Even in the memory left by Red Lotus Demon Venerable, it only portrayed his experiences of becoming an Immortal Venerable and his regretful life later on. As for how he refined Spring Autumn Cicada or how he invaded Heavenly Court and injured fate Gu, there were no memories of them.

The memories had directly skipped to Red Lotus Demon Venerable constructing the Red Lotus stone island after becoming a venerable. What was the deeper meaning behind such an arrangement?

Fang Yuan had inquired before he consumed Red Lotus’ true meaning.

The reply of Red Lotus’ true meaning was: There was no shortcut to destroying fate Gu. Even if Red Lotus Demon Venerable had exploited some kind of shortcut back then, that shortcut no longer existed now. Don’t underestimate Heavenly Court. If there was any shortcut, be extra careful as it should be Heavenly Court’s trap!

As for why Red Lotus Demon Venerable did not leave behind more memories, Red Lotus’ true meaning did not have an answer. He only gave speculation: “He might not have wanted to point you towards a specific direction because it could easily lead to misunderstandings. Whether or not to destroy fate Gu is your own choice.”

Fang Yuan asked: Where are the other Red Lotus stone islands?

Red Lotus’ true meaning did not know.

However, this reply was within Fang Yuan’s expectation.

If every Red Lotus stone island could mark the other islands’ locations, they would have already been taken by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable or Heavenly Court. To prevent such a situation from happening, Red Lotus Demon Venerable specially constructed each Red Lotus stone island separately without the ability to sense the others’ locations.

“Fate Gu must be destroyed!”

A Heavenly Court with or without fate Gu were two completely different concepts. If Heavenly Court successfully restored fate Gu, although Fang Yuan would not be bound by the shackles of fate, other people or beings in the world would be influenced or even manipulated by fate.

At that time, Fang Yuan’s enemies would be everyone and everything besides him!

This was slightly exaggerated, but it was that serious.

Another more important reason was that fate Gu’s existence was the greatest obstacle to Fang Yuan’s pursuit of eternal life.

Fate Gu did not allow revival, it stated that all living beings must die.

Thus, no matter what, Fang Yuan would have to destroy fate Gu.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable might have already deduced this, so he was not worried about Fang Yuan’s motivation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1680: Advancing Immortal Gu

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Central Continent.

Dark clouds covered the sky as thunder rumbled and lightning flashed.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone was standing high in the sky, he was observing the Gu refinement process cautiously to prevent any accidents.

Under the dark clouds, the originally wide plain was now filled with deep craters.

Bolts of lightning struck the ground, smashing the earth and creating half-spherical craters. The soil inside the crater was refined into a ceramic-like structure with smoke rising up from them.

“The time is right, my main body should be making a move!” The time path clone just had this thought when countless lightning bolts converged together into one enormous lightning bolt!

Boom—!

The deep blue lightning bolt resembling a heavenly pillar struck a white boulder at the center of the plain fiercely.

Instantly, the white boulder was split into pieces by the lightning bolt, countless fragmented rocks flew out everywhere.

The lightning was incomparably fierce, it had suddenly converged together and vanished just as suddenly.

The white boulder that was the size of a hill exploded, but a small Gu worm floated in the air.

The Gu worm was in the form of a butterfly with various colors, it was man as before Immortal Gu.

“I finally succeeded after failing six times, not bad, not bad!” Fang Yuan’s time path clone was exulted upon seeing this.

Man as Before came from Tai Bai Yun Sheng, its origin could be traced back to Purple Mountain True Monarch.

The original man as before Immortal Gu was only rank six, which was only effective in healing rank six Gu Immortals and had barely passable effects on rank seven, often failing in its activation. Its effect on rank eight was even more abysmal. Fang Yuan could use it effectively because of his sovereign immortal body’s characteristic — different kinds of dao marks did not conflict with each other. But now that he was currently rank eight, rank six Man as Before was clearly too weak.

But now, man as before Immortal Gu was successfully advanced from rank six to rank seven!

Fang Yuan’s time path clone inspected it carefully and soon discovered the difference between rank seven Man as Before and the rank six version.

They both had the shape of a butterfly, but the rank seven Man as Before was much more dazzling. Moreover, there was a change in the butterfly’s body, it looked like a tiny naked and pale person.

Although rank eight Man as Before was more suitable for Fang Yuan, he was currently satisfied with advancing it to rank seven.

Refining rank eight Immortal Gu would need countless cultivation resources which

Fang Yuan currently did not have the ability to bear.

Back then, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had almost emptied out his accumulation to refine rank eight Fortune Rivalling Heaven, every member of Snowy Mountain blessed land had complained about it. What’s more, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had cultivated for much longer than Fang Yuan in this life.

1This was unless Fang Yuan spent his entire fortune like selling Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley, Reverse Flow River, or wisdom Gu to exchange for countless resources. But that was not worth the loss, Man as Before might be a superior Gu, but it was not a crucial Gu worm like Spring Autumn Cicada.

Fang Yuan did not have the extravagant hope of refining rank eight Immortal Gu. He intended to advance most of his rank six Immortal Gu to rank seven.

Because of the high quantity and the difficulty of Gu refinement along with high failure rate, even if Fang Yuan invested all his current resources, it would hardly be enough.

Fang Yuan had gained batches after batches of cultivation resources from the grotto-heaven of the Five Xiangs, Qi clan’s grotto-heaven, the Blue Dragon Whale grotto-heaven as well as Red Lotus’ stone island.

However, Gu refinement was a bottomless pit, no matter how much investment was done, it would never be high enough.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan obtained regret Gu, which he used to construct a refinement path Gu formation that allowed a small portion of the Gu refinement process to be done again if it failed.

When Fang Yuan’s time path clone took the rank seven man as before Immortal Gu, the dark clouds had already vanished. The refinement path Gu formation slowly activated and along with the killer move self cleansing, they cleaned the dao mark traces left at the scene.

“Next is Landscape as Before.” The time path clone thought.

In the list of Gu refinement plans, Man as Before and Landscape as Before were at the top but there were still a lot more left.

For example, day Gu, Self Strength, Pulling Mountain, Strength Qi, Vajra Thought, Star Eyes, Star Thought...

Unravel mystery Immortal Gu was also important, after its rank was advanced, it could greatly increase the power of unravel dream, which was extremely beneficial in Fang Yuan’s dream path cultivation.

There were also Dog Shit Luck, Qi Luck, Luck Inspection, Connect Luck, and Time Luck, these luck path Immortal Gu would also be an enormous help after they were advanced.

Fang Yuan was lacking offensive methods in luck path, but its support function could not be neglected. Previously, Fang Yuan had used his luck path superiority to get rid of the pursuit of the multiple time path Immortal Gu Houses of Heavenly Court.

Advancing the ranks of Immortal Gu was all done by Fang Yuan’s main body, the time path clone did not have enough qualifications because of low cultivation level.

After receiving Red Lotus’ true inheritance, Fang Yuan continued to stay in Red Lotus’ stone island.

Besides him repeatedly refining Gu, Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan and so on were also moving around on the island. They exchanged pointers with each other and did their best to adapt to their future self.

Under the effect of future self, their battle strength climbed to first-rate or even the peak of rank seven.

This was already the limit of the killer move.

With his subordinates’ strength rising to this level, there would no longer be awkward situations like before. Next time Fang Yuan battled, these people would have the minimum qualification to take part in the battle.

The regrettable thing was that Fairy Miao Yin, Lady White Rabbit, and Sixth Hair were dead. Although Fang Yuan still had several enslaved Gu Immortals like Qi clan’s Gu Immortals, these people were far less reliable than the former. They were bound by a slave agreement which could very well dissipate under the power of their future self. So, Fang Yuan did not intend to elevate them even though the future self killer move could still be used on several more people.

Advancing Immortal Gu became Fang Yuan’s most important project and occupied almost all of his time. Occasionally, he used Fixed Immortal Travel’s killer move to teleport to the Five Xiangs grotto-heaven and continue refining the killer move heaven form.

Fang Yuan had already obtained the true inheritance and was the owner of this Red Lotus stone island, thus he could use Fixed Immortal Travel to travel back and forth.

Before this, this Red Lotus stone island had been protected by Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s strength, which prevented methods like Fixed Immortal Travel.

This was the same situation as in the immortal aperture inside the blue dragon whale.

Fang Yuan had already tested it but unfortunately, he was unable to return to the dragon whale grotto-heaven with Fixed Immortal Travel.

Also, Spring Autumn Cicada might have reached rank seven, which expanded its detection range, but Fang Yuan did not go to look for other Red Lotus stone islands.

Firstly, his current strength had not increased a lot, he still needed to process his gains.

Secondly, Heavenly Court was also searching in the River of Time, Fang Yuan would have to avoid them if he ran into them.

Finally, Fang Yuan’s rank eight immortal essence reserve was still accumulating because advancing Immortal Gu spent a lot of immortal essence.

Time passed, several months went by quickly.

Southern Border.

Boom—!

Earth tremored and mountains shook, rocks and stones flew in all directions as an Earth Trench appeared. The vast aura of a wild Immortal Gu spread everywhere.

“This wild Immortal Gu has finally appeared!” In the clouds, three Gu Immortals looked at the ground with smiles on their face.

“Alright, let’s compete according to the agreement we set earlier.”

“Yes. Earth veins are stirring more intensely and wild Immortal Gu appear from time to time. We need to finish our battle quickly.”

The three Gu Immortals fought fairly, the atmosphere was harmonious.

The influence of Southern Border’s righteous path super force alliance was becoming increasingly larger.

Previously, Wu Yong led the Southern Alliance but was unable to deal with Fang Yuan, instead Fang Yuan used the pretense of undergoing tribulation to plot a trap in five regional mountain range. But it was not like the Southern Alliance had no gains, they obtained Tao Zhu’s true inheritance. After Lu Wei Yin rescued many Southern Border rank seven Gu Immortals from Fang Yuan’s hands, he represented Paradise Earth’s force and officially joined the Southern Alliance.

It was perhaps due to Fang Yuan that the Southern Alliance’s righteous path Gu Immortals restrained themselves, as they had a common enemy.

They were inwardly apprehensive that as Southern Border’s earth veins fluctuated repeatedly and cultivation resources appeared one after the other, Fang Yuan might suddenly come to fight over them. So, Southern Alliance Gu Immortals did not fight each other to death, instead their fights became controlled.

Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei’s brows rose up in joy when she heard the report.

“Dragon Palace has been found! This is good news, Lord Duke Long had all along been searching for it and now, our Heavenly Court has discovered the Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace.”

Dragon Palace was an extremely powerful Immortal Gu House, even Heavenly Court placed great importance on it.

“This Immortal Gu House has a deep relationship with Lord Duke Long, I should tell him this news first.”

When Duke Long obtained this news, he immediately brought Feng Jin Huang to Heavenly Court and handed her over to Fairy Zi Wei to look after.

Several days later, Duke Long returned without anything.

Fairy Zi Wei was surprised, Duke Long was extremely powerful, in this current world, what methods could actually obstruct him?

“Dragon Palace is actually surrounded by a layer of dream realm, I cannot enter it.” Duke Long sighed.

Fairy Zi Wei immediately understood the reason after hearing this reply, she consoled Duke Long: “Lord Duke Long, you do not need to worry, the formation is already ready, it can use the strength of the whole of Heavenly Court’s grotto-heaven to suppress Spectral Soul. We will soon obtain his dream path research results.”

Duke Long laughed joyfully and said ‘good’ three times.

Spectral Soul’s dream path research results naturally referred to the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique. With this method, Heavenly Court could condense dream realms into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, the dream realm surrounding Dragon Palace would be easily removed.

“That demon Fang Yuan has made no move recently?” Duke Long asked.

Fairy Zi Wei shook her head: “Ever since he escaped from the River of Time, there has been no news of him. Currently, all five regions are facing frequent movements of earth veins with Southern Border’s situation being the greatest, countless cultivation resources are being churned out. I really hoped he tried to loot these resources and gave us the opportunity to track him. But unfortunately, it is like he has completely disappeared, I have been using wisdom path methods to analyze every bit of information but have not been able to find his traces.”

1

COMMENT

Duke Long nodded: “Continue to pay attention to him, even though this demon has reached rank eight, he has to face stronger calamities and tribulations now. This will definitely give him a headache. Although he can annex apertures with the sovereign immortal body, he needs rank eight grotto-heavens to skip grand tribulations. Furthermore, there is still the even more terrifying myriad tribulation!”

Even Fairy Zi Wei felt her heart palpitate when she heard the mention of myriad tribulation, she nodded with a smile: “Lord Duke Long is right, Fang Yuan might have advanced to rank eight but how many rank eight grotto-heavens are there for him to annex? His cultivation won’t change much within a short period of time.”

2“Currently, Fang Yuan lacks resources, especially time path resources. It will be almost impossible for him to face the arrangements we made in the River of Time, that means he will have no chance at getting Red Lotus’ true inheritance.”

1“Although he escaped before, his immortal essence expenditure was extremely huge and nearly all his trump cards were exposed. He needs to quickly accumulate rank eight immortal essence, because relying on immortal essence stones has too low efficiency, he can only rely on his immortal aperture’s self-production. But the immortal aperture’s self-production requires time, if he quickens the rate of time of his immortal aperture, he will also accelerate the arrival of his calamities and tribulations as well.”

“Once he has no more immortal apertures to annex, he will have to face tribulations.”

“The time he undergoes his tribulation will be the time our Heavenly Court takes his life!”

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes glistened brightly when she said this.

Duke Long nodded, looking at Fairy Zi Wei with praise: “With you taking charge of Heavenly Court, I am at ease.”

1

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1681: Progress

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Central Continent.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone was slowly flying in the air as he planted the last flower bud.

The terrain here had already been modified by him into a marshland that was extremely fertile, a large amount of high quality silt was spread here. There was also a knee-deep clear river above the layer of silt.

The time path clone patted his hand and flew to the sky after giving a last glance at the flower bud.

Standing on a high altitude, the man-made marshland entered his sight. This marshland was vast, Fang Yuan’s time path clone was unable to take in the whole marshland in his sight.

A flower bud, the size of a house, could be seen every few kilometers. These flower buds had quite an origin, they were the buds of a desolate plant, extreme marsh flower.

Fang Yuan had obtained a small portion of the extreme marsh flowers in the blue dragon whale’s immortal aperture, while the rest were bought from treasure yellow heaven.

After taking in the view, Fang Yuan’s time path clone breathed in deeply and activated summer Gu.

Summer Gu came from Southern Border’s rank eight Gu Immortal Xia Cha, and was also at rank eight. Fang Yuan’s time path clone was only at rank six and would not be able to use summer Gu by just himself. However, Fang Yuan’s main body had white litchi immortal essence which he gave to his clone along with summer Gu. By lending his clone the necessary tools, Fang Yuan’s time path clone could utilize almost all the Immortal Gu of his main body.

Summer Gu’s activation was followed by other supplementary Gu worms which activated an immortal killer move.

Xia Cha had developed a set of time path killer moves to manage the immortal aperture: spring ploughing, summer hoeing, autumn harvest, and winter storage.

The killer move which Fang Yuan’s time path clone activated was not one of them but was modified from summer hoeing, it was used specially to raise extreme marsh flowers.

Extreme marsh flowers bloomed at the height of summer and bore fruit in spring.

Fang Yuan’s time path attainment was at quasi-supreme grandmaster, it was at the peak of the world. Along with the light of wisdom, it was simple for him to modify time path killer moves.

Following the continuous activation of the killer move, all the surroundings entered the height of summer, light rays became brighter, the temperature increased rapidly and the air became increasingly dry.

The peak of summer had arrived, the extremely vigorous extreme marsh flowers felt all these and began to absorb nutrition from the water and soil, growing at a visible rate and started to slowly bloom.

Every extreme marsh flower was huge and looked like a trumpet with its petals connected. They were primarily white with a few parts bearing slight hints of pink.

The knee-deep water was already emptying, the marshy soil had also become dryer. The fertility of the soil was being expended intensely.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone looked calm, this was within his expectations.

Cultivation methods of extreme marsh flowers were mentioned in detail in both Red Lotus’ true inheritance and Shadow Sect’s true inheritance, all these changes were within Fang Yuan’s arrangements.

Soon, strands of white mist started rising slowly from the pistil of the extreme marsh flowers.

These mist gradually spread and covered a large area. Fang Yuan’s time path clone stopped the killer move, the air immediately became very moist.

The mist nurtured the soil, gradually transforming this man-made marshland.

“Let’s name this marshland flower mist extreme marsh. The first step is finished.” Fang Yuan’s time path clone observed with joy.

“It won’t be an issue to feed regret Gu with this scale of extreme marsh flower mist.”

Rank eight regret Gu’s appetite was huge, its food was the mist produced by extreme marsh flowers. The problem was that this mist needed to be fresh. So it was not practical or reliable to purchase them from outside.

“When the mist condenses to a certain extent and forms a layer of water on the ground, I can then plant water vegetation as well as bring in small lifeforms like ducks and flying fish.”

“Then, I will continue to expand the scale of extreme marsh flowers. When regret Gu becomes hungry, the accumulated extreme marsh flower mist will be enough to fill it.”

The feeding of rank eight Immortal Gu often required a huge project.

“With this area of extreme marsh flowers, the sovereign immortal aperture’s development is now at eighteen percent. Currently, I have greatly slowed down the rate of time of the immortal aperture, so the production of various resources and white litchi immortal essence has fallen.”

Fang Yuan pondered inwardly.

This time, he did not use time path immortal moves to slow down his immortal aperture’s rate of time, instead he manipulated the year essence pool which was much more convenient. It did not expend immortal essence and also did not have some disadvantages of time path killer moves, Fang Yuan could adjust his immortal aperture’s rate of time whenever he wanted.

“Although I need to accumulate immortal essence, I cannot blindly quicken the time, or else, the tribulations will come quickly as well.”

Currently, Fang Yuan was already at rank eight but his battle strength had not increased by a lot. Previously, he had exposed almost all his trump cards when he faced Heavenly Court’s ambush in River of Time, so it was not suitable for him to undergo tribulation at this time.

Once he placed his immortal aperture to undergo tribulation, Fang Yuan would become a fixed target. Because he would have to open his immortal aperture which would be sensed by heaven’s will, Heavenly Court and other forces could easily discover his location and besiege him.

“The rate of time has been slowed down, but I can still manage my immortal aperture, increasing the foundation of my immortal aperture and expanding my immortal aperture origin core, thus producing even more white litchi immortal essence.”

The better the immortal aperture’s management, the more immortal essence would be produced.

A long time ago, Fang Yuan managed his immortal aperture to feed his Immortal Gu. Later, he managed the immortal aperture to increase the production and earn immortal essence stones as well as cultivation resources. Currently, his target was to accumulate white litchi immortal essence.

Purely refining immortal essence stones to white litchi immortal essence had too low of an efficiency. Ten thousand immortal essence stones were required to turn into one bead of white litchi immortal essence.

Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture could produce one hundred white litchi immortal essence every year, in terms of the outside world’s time, that was over half a month.

Time passed as Fang Yuan continued to cultivate in seclusion. It was now summer in the five regions.

Although there were no traces of Fang Yuan, the whole Gu Immortal world of the five regions was in an excited state.

Whether it be righteous path, demonic path, or lone immortals, they were all hectic.

The reason for this situation were the tremors in five regions earth veins.

New Earth Trenches appeared constantly, they first appeared in Southern Border, but this situation was happening frequently throughout the other four regions as well.

Rumble...

Dust and soil rose, Hong Yi fell down on the ground in exhaustion. He was panting and his face was pale as he looked at the enormous ravine in front of him.

When the earth vein shook, he and other Gu Masters began to run wildly.

This was an extremely thrilling escape!

There were a few times when Hong Yi was able to keep his life only because of his good luck.

He had almost fallen in but during the crucial moment, he was able to exert more strength than usual and was able to jump towards the precipice.

“Since when did earthquakes occur here! That was dangerous, I almost lost my life here.” Hong Yi stood up only after a long while, but his breathing was still rough. He looked at the ravine and saw only darkness, rough wind blew in the ravine as dust and soil had yet to dissipate.

“Every area of Central Continent seems to be experiencing earthquakes during this time period, creating ravines like this.” Even a mortal like Hong Yi felt such a violent change in the world.

“Eh? What is that?” A wild Immortal Gu slowly flew out of the dust and smoke.

An injured wild Immortal Gu flew with difficulty, swaying left and right before it was finally exhausted and fell beside Hong Yi’s feet.

Hong Yi was dumbfounded!

3Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei gave a cry as her whole body let out dazzling purple light.

Following the light, the whole Heavenly Court actually shook slightly, an incomparably enormous formless force poured into the large immortal formation.

The immortal formation rumbled loudly as it started grinding down on Spectral Soul who was locked up at the center.

Spectral Soul resisted with all his might but was unable to defend, his deepest memories were being extracted.

“Alright, I finally obtained the mysteries of the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, hahaha.” Fairy Zi Wei was haggard and pale but her expression was of excitement.

She had been working extremely hard these last days, on one hand, she was dealing with earth vein tremors which were bringing forth unexpected situations all over Central Continent, on the other hand, she was strengthening her efforts on dealing with Spectral Soul.

She had put in great efforts to obtain Shadow Sect’s dream path research results as soon as possible, activating the whole of Heavenly Court’s might in empowering the immortal formation.

Hard work paid off, Fairy Zi Wei finally obtained a breakthrough!

In the blink of an eye, it was the height of summer. Sunlight was scorching but it was not as fiery as the fire in Gu Immortals’ hearts.

Earth vein tremors showed no signs of stopping or reducing, instead they became more intense. Immortal materials, wild Immortal Gu, and all kinds of cultivation resources appeared constantly, creating a festive period in all five regions.

Within the Five Xiangs grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan’s laughter suddenly echoed.

“I have finally obtained full grasp of the killer move heaven form!” Beside Fang Yuan was the rank nine killer move in the form of a white crane, it was standing obediently and quietly, following Fang Yuan’s orders.

“Who could have thought that heaven form’s effect is actually this.”

“With it, my cultivation might be able to progress rapidly, the issue of calamities and tribulations can also be resolved!”

Fang Yuan stroked the white crane’s feathers with bright eyes.

This heaven form killer move came at the perfect time!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1682: Searching for Grotto-Heavens

Immemorial white heaven.

An exquisite, pure white crane was flying around Fang Yuan while letting out melodious cry.

Fang Yuan could command this white crane with his thoughts and it was as easy and simple as moving his hand.

“I can finally use this rank nine killer move!” Fang Yuan was endlessly moved as he said softly: “Go.”

White crane flapped its large wings and nimbly flew ahead, but before it reached far, it started circling around a part of the sky while emitting cries constantly.

Fang Yuan’s lips curled up as he received a series of information from the white crane that showed the inner scenes of the grotto-heaven of the Five Xiangs.

Rank nine killer move heaven form was not an offensive or a defensive killer move, but an investigative type.

Its detection target was everything that existed in immemorial white heaven!

1Its detection range was extremely wide, far surpassing Fang Yuan’s limits, thus it would be extremely helpful to Fang Yuan in plundering all kinds of natural resources in immemorial white heaven.

Its detection ability was also extremely strong.

How strong?

It could discover hidden grotto-heavens!

Any grotto-heaven, as long as they were in immemorial white heaven, would be detected by heaven form even if they did not open their immortal aperture entrance. Once the white crane was nearby, it could gather information about the inner scenes of the immortal aperture.

Naturally, its detection range towards grotto-heavens was far smaller than ordinary targets.

It had another advantage: it did not use any immortal essence during the whole detection process. The rank nine immortal move heaven form originated from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, it was truly extraordinary, it was like the detection was the innate ability of the white crane.

“But if I want to forcibly intrude into a grotto-heaven, I need to use immortal essence.” Fang Yuan’s lips curled up as he slowly transferred rank eight white litchi immortal essence.

With the addition of immortal essence, heaven form’s whole white crane body began to emit soft and gentle light.

Fang Yuan slowly flew closer, letting the soft light cover him.

At the same time, a hazy white light appeared inside Five Xiangs grotto-heaven.

Fang Yuan followed the white light and several breaths later, he was inside Five Xiangs grotto-heaven, the whole process faced no obstruction.

Although Five Xiangs grotto-heaven was already controlled by Fang Yuan, at this moment, he had successfully entered the grotto-heaven just by relying on heaven form.

“Quite a high immortal essence expenditure, but thinking about it, I am a rank eight Gu Immortal while the killer move is at rank nine level, spending this much white litchi immortal essence cannot be considered a flaw.”

“Although there is some white light, the entire process is quiet. Not bad, not bad.”

Fang Yuan nodded, satisfied with the result of this trial performance.

It was extremely difficult to charge into a blessed land or grotto-heaven without proper preparations. For example, one could refer to the time Immortal Crane Sect invaded Hu Immortal blessed land or when Heavenly Lord Bai Zu attacked Hei Fan grotto-heaven, their difficulties sufficiently proved the value of heaven form!

“In the long span of history, how many Gu Immortals have appeared? Although it is not easy to become a rank eight, throughout the millions of years, they are absolutely not few in number.”

“When Ren Zu’s children destroyed the other immemorial seven heavens, only immemorial white heaven and immemorial black heaven remained. After that incident, rank eight Gu Immortals or rank nine Gu Immortals basically only had these two choices to place their grotto-heavens.”

“Not mentioning rank nine Gu Venerables, when those rank eight Gu Immortals die, their immortal apertures would often be placed in either immemorial white or black heaven.”

“These grotto-heavens would fall down or perish because of the continuous calamities and tribulations, but at the same time, new rank eight figures would appear. So, there must be a portion of these grotto-heavens currently in immemorial black and white heaven.”

These grotto-heavens were great supplements to Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

If he annexed one of them, he could skip calamities and tribulations and thus resolve his greatest hidden threat!

Naturally, the precondition was he had to find an immortal aperture grotto-heaven and have the ability to annex them, at the same time, this grotto-heaven must not have devoured any fragment of the immemorial nine heavens.

An immortal aperture grotto-heaven that had annexed any nine heavens fragment would have no more calamities and tribulations, but it would then be filled with heaven’s will which could not be cleansed. Fang Yuan could not annex such grotto-heavens, so Five Xiangs grotto-heaven and Hei Fan grotto-heaven were not in his consideration. Although Qi clan’s Qi Sea grotto-heaven did not annex a nine heavens fragment and had been relying on the immortal killer move unlimited qi sea to resist calamities and tribulations, Fang Yuan’s qi path attainment level became the obstruction to annexing it and it would not be easy to solve this any time soon.

As for the dragon whale grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan had considered it but he was unable to return to the blue dragon whale with Fixed Immortal Travel as it had already moved far away from its previous location. And with Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangements in the dragon whale grotto-heaven, even if Fang Yuan had the ability to annex it, he did not dare to make such a move rashly.

COMMENT

Who was to say Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had not arranged some hidden methods in the dragon whale grotto-heaven that were specially waiting for Fang Yuan.

None of the Gu Venerables could be underestimated!

“There are definitely grotto-heavens which suit me.” Fang Yuan was confident in this.

This confidence was not only because he had heaven form, it was also because in the five hundred years of his previous life’s memories, there had been many grotto-heavens which had appeared during the five regions chaotic war and been a part of the vast changes of the new era.

Among them, Fang Yuan had the deepest impression of Nine Phantoms grotto-heaven. Almost all the Gu Immortals of this grotto-heaven mainly cultivated phantom path, the entire grotto-heaven could turn into phantom form and thus be unaffected by calamities and tribulations.

There was also Dao Formation grotto-heaven, this grotto-heaven’s Gu Immortals were extremely proficient in formation path with layers of large formations tightly protecting the whole grotto-heaven.

There was also Holy Deceit grotto-heaven, this grotto-heaven’s origin was even greater, its original owner had a close relationship with Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable. After he passed away, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable personally made arrangements in Holy Deceit grotto-heaven that caused heaven’s will to make wrong judgments about this grotto-heaven, the might of many calamities and tribulations were reduced greatly and were passed extremely easily.

These grotto-heavens were living in seclusion while cultivating Gu Immortals.

Every grotto-heaven contained many Gu Immortals, they were all genuine super forces.

However, there were very few rank eight Gu Immortals.

It was difficult to nurture a rank eight Gu Immortal with just the resources from a grotto-heaven.

As such, powerful super forces were all based in the five regions which possessed rich and enormous amounts of resources, at the same time, the large population and intense competition between each other hastened the arrival of rank eight Gu Immortals.

Summer went and autumn came. The turbulence of earth veins was becoming more frequent and numerous, Gu Immortals welcomed this harvesting season.

Western Desert.

A delicate and beautiful female immortal lightly shot an arrow.

The arrow pierced the sky while leaving behind a trailing arc of light pink and struck an ancient desolate beast.

This ancient desolate beast had been moving rampantly the previous moment, but at the next moment, its whole body let out all kinds of lights as it collapsed to the ground loudly.

Strong wind mixed with yellow sand blew, the entire ancient desolate beast turned into petals and dissipated completely.

“It is actually her!”

“Gong clan’s second young miss Gong Wu Hua!”

“Let’s leave quickly.”

A group of Western Desert Gu Immortals reluctantly looked at the newly created Earth Trench before retreating cleanly.

Southern Border.

Rumble!

Mountain ranges collapsed, causing dust to surge over hundreds of li.

The earth quaked as a huge Earth Trench appeared, devouring the mountain ranges tyrannically.

Ba clan’s two Gu Immortals were looking at this with shock.

“This is a famous mountain — Sunny Mountain! It was actually destroyed by the Earth Trench, such a pity...”

Ba De’s gaze shone with cold light: “Hehe, what’s there to pity? The old mountain has collapsed, there will be a new one in the future. Didn’t we discover a large amount of new spirit springs in our way?”

“That’s true, earth vein turbulences are not only bringing wild Gu and Gu materials, they are also giving birth to many spirit springs.”

“Do you think that is all?” Ba De looked down with no expression but his face showed great expectation: “Experts are popping out one after the other in the Gu Immortal world, didn’t Western Desert see the rise of Gong Wu Hua recently?”

“Lord Ba De, how could that Gong Wu Hua compare to you?”

“Hmph, how can you underestimate the heroes of the world? But wait until I advance to rank eight, Gong Wu Hua won’t be any threat indeed.” Ba De said proudly.

The other Ba clan Gu Immortal was shocked and joyous: “Lord, you, you are finally advancing to rank eight?”

“I was on guard against various influences before, but now the Southern Alliance is established while the Alliance Leader’s position is still up in the air. Most crucially, there are countless cultivation resources appearing unceasingly which are enough for me to advance to rank eight.”

“Naturally, there is one main reason.” Ba De’s expression turned solemn: “An unprecedented great era is descending and I don’t wish to be swallowed by the tides of this era.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1683: Venerable Talent

Chirp chirp chirp!

A large group of blinking birds, that were surrounding a seven-colored cloud, were flying around while chirping constantly to warn the invader.

Fang Yuan’s expression was tranquil but his gaze carried the trace of a smile.

The blinking birds’ warning was naturally nothing to him.

This species of bird was a desolate beast, but they had low battle strength, they could not cause harm even with such a large scale. Their true power was in speed.

Blinking birds were considered the fastest desolate beast, once their speed erupted, they could escape the sight of a Gu Immortal in the blink of an eye, thus having their name.

Fang Yuan had concealed his aura and seemed like a mortal. But these blinking birds simply did not attack him, they innately sensed a pressure from the seemingly harmless Fang Yuan.

Suddenly, a trace of aura leaked out from Fang Yuan’s body.

Swoosh!

At the next moment, the blinking birds burst forth, disappearing within an instant. The seven-colored cloud that was densely surrounded by the birds was now floating alone.

Fang Yuan sighed, he had intended to capture these blinking birds, but these blinking birds had an extremely fast response time and Fang Yuan was also not highly proficient in concealing his aura.

However, it did not matter if they escaped, even if he subdued the blinking birds, they would not be easy to raise. Their food was the white heaven floating dust that was specific to immemorial white heaven, it was not easy to gather and a Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture could not produce them.

Fang Yuan slowly flew closer to the seven-colored cloud.

“I didn’t expect to run into a seven-colored cloud soil.” Fang Yuan sighed.

This thing looked like a cloud but was actually a kind of soil — cloud soil.

In Lang Ya blessed land, Lang Ya land spirit had condensed a large amount of cloud soil to form Cloud Cover Continent, which always remained afloat in the sky of Lang Ya blessed land.

Cloud soil’s greatest production area was in the immemorial nine heavens. Naturally, there were also a small number of resource points producing cloud soil in the five regions.

A single colored cloud soil was at most an ordinary Gu material, for example, immemorial yellow heaven’s yellow cloud soil or immemorial red heaven’s red cloud soil. In the present era, the most common single colored cloud soil in the market was white cloud soil, which mostly originated from immemorial white heaven.

Immemorial black heaven also had a lot of black cloud soil, but it was very risky as there were many soul beasts in black heaven.

Once the cloud soil had six colors, it would be a rank six level immortal material. The seven colored cloud soil in front of Fang Yuan was a rank seven immortal material, and the value of such a large quantity was very high.

After inspecting this large patch of seven colored cloud soil, Fang Yuan discovered there were many bird nests in this soil and they contained many eggs.

These were the blinking birds’ eggs!

Fang Yuan was not surprised as the behavior of the blinking birds showed that they seemed to be protecting something. In fact, blinking birds were extremely cowardly even though they were desolate beasts, if there was even a slight disturbance, they would immediately fly away with their fastest speed.

Fang Yuan could incubate these eggs for blinking birds. Incubating desolate beasts was not easy but it would not be much of an issue to Fang Yuan.

However, Fang Yuan did not want to hatch them, instead he wanted to use these eggs as immortal materials to use when refining Gu.

Blinking birds had quite a strict diet and it was not easy to raise them. If he were to raise them, he would have to release them to immemorial white heaven from time to time, and this was too troublesome.

Fang Yuan had deep pockets and did not care about profits from blinking birds.

Ever since he refined the killer move heaven form over a month ago, Fang Yuan had been moving about in immemorial white heaven.

On one hand, he was searching for immortal materials in immemorial white heaven, on the other hand, he was refining Gu in his sovereign immortal aperture.

A month in the outside world was a long time in the sovereign immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan had obtained great success in refining Gu!

Man as Before, Landscape as Before, Self Strength, Pulling Mountain, Pulling Water, Dog Shit Luck, Time Luck, and others were already advanced to rank seven.

He had changed his original Gu refinement plan slightly, advancing luck path Immortal Gu with priority. Over these days, he had similarly gained great harvests in immemorial white heaven, obtaining many immortal materials. This was due to the effect of these rank seven luck path Immortal Gu.

Besides advancing ranks through refinement, Fang Yuan was also improving Gu refinement techniques.

He knew way too many Gu recipes and also knew countless Gu refinement techniques. His refinement path attainment level was at quasi-supreme grandmaster, but he was lacking in experience.

Especially in the aspect of refining Immortal Gu, he did not have a lot of experience at all.

Genuine knowledge came from practice.

Over this period of time, he had repeatedly advanced the ranks of his Immortal Gu from which he discovered many of his problems and remedied all of them. At the same time, he also discovered many more Gu refinement techniques that suited him.

At present, Fang Yuan had gained a lot of new insight and inspiration on Gu refinement. The success rate of his refinement had also increased by a large degree.

There were still continuous earth vein turbulences in five regions, Gu Immortals obtained immortal materials and Immortal Gu, it was a time of great joy. But after thinking deeply, Fang Yuan still chose to explore immemorial white heaven.

If he went to snatch resources of the Earth Trenches from the five regions Gu Immortals, he would have to show himself and might very likely end up fighting.

Each Immortal Gu’s advancement increased Fang Yuan’s strength by a little. But the degree of this increase was unable to offset the situation from exposing his trump cards in the River of Time.

He needed time to quietly absorb these gains.

Once an intense battle began, his accumulated rank eight white litchi immortal essence would be expended intensely.

Fighting with Gu Immortals was much more dangerous than fighting fierce beasts.

Although Fang Yuan spent immortal essence when exploring immemorial white heaven and there were many battles as well, he was relying on heaven form, which had a precise detection ability.

If there were beasts that were too troublesome or powerful, he would take a detour.

Heaven form’s detection range in immemorial white heaven was truly very large and could even easily discover many concealed beasts and plants.

After all, it could even detect hidden grotto-heavens, it was natural for it to discover these fierce beasts and plants.

The more amazing part was that heaven form did not use even a trace of Fang Yuan’s immortal essence. This rank nine killer move had unquestionable superiority and power! Fang Yuan had already exclaimed praise for it multiple times.

Exploring the five regions surpassed exploring immemorial white heaven in terms of danger and expenditure, and it was not as good as the latter in terms of benefits.

Gu materials and immortal materials emerged endlessly from Earth Trenches, but these things needed Gu Immortals to arrange them properly before storing them into the immortal aperture.

Managing an immortal aperture was not easy, many resources were interrelated or affected each other.

As a result, most of the Gu Immortals in the five regions would sell these immortal materials obtained from Earth Trenches in treasure yellow heaven.

Their immortal apertures had limited space and could not be compared to Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture. Many times, the immortal materials they obtained did not suit their immortal aperture’s environment.

There was another phenomenon because of the unceasing earth vein turbulences, that was treasure yellow heaven’s business, more accurately, the transactions between Gu Immortals had increased explosively! Treasure yellow heaven was dozens of times as bustling than before.

1If Fang Yuan wanted any immortal materials, he could totally buy them from treasure yellow heaven.

But grotto-heavens were different, every grotto-heaven already had a complete and harmonious ecosystem. When Fang Yuan annexed them, it would save him a lot of trouble and there was no need to consider anything. He could even increase the sovereign immortal aperture’s size, his cultivation and dao marks would also increase by a large degree, and calamities and tribulations could even be skipped.

The benefits of annexing a grotto-heaven were too great.

As for the wild Immortal Gu that occasionally emerged from Earth Trenches, Fang Yuan was envious of course, but these wild Immortal Gu had always been top priority for Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan felt it was better for him to directly rob other’s Immortal Gu from the grotto-heavens since he had great thief ghost hand.

Heavenly Court.

The large formation slowly stopped, Fairy Zi Wei opened her eyes which shined with sharp light.

She mumbled: “Soul replacement killer move? Such ingenuity!”

1Before leaving, she gave another glance at Spectral Soul but did not try to make him surrender.

Over these days, Fairy Zi Wei had been frequently plundering Spectral Soul’s memories, seizing his lifetime’s cultivation gains.

Fairy Zi Wei could not help but admire Spectral Soul’s shocking talent and also acknowledge that in the field of soul path, even if Heavenly Court had already put in enormous efforts, they still could not match Spectral Soul.

“Such a pity that Spectral Soul is currently reduced to a prisoner. It really is a tragedy, he is the most destitute among all the venerables. Actually, if he had remained dead, his name would have been left gloriously in history. Now, he cannot even seek death...”

Thinking of Spectral Soul who was still stubbornly resisting, Fairy Zi Wei once again gritted her teeth hatefully.

She was sure Spectral Soul still had important dream path research results, that was lead soul into dream.

Although Heavenly Court had already deciphered most of this move, it would still be extremely valuable if Heavenly Court obtained it.

Unfortunately, Spectral Soul kept on resisting, although he could not shoulder the entire Heavenly Court grotto-heaven’s strength, he was extremely crafty, he would leak some minor information and stall for time.

The first time Fairy Zi Wei used Heavenly Court’s strength, Spectral Soul was caught off-guard and the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique’s information was stolen.

But when he recovered, Spectral Soul adopted the strategy of abandoning less important information to protect the true secrets, he was still resisting firmly.

“But your actions are in vain!”

“We have the advantage of time.”

“The Refinement Path Convention’s preparations are already undergoing. Fate Immortal Gu will be completely restored, at that time, Spectral Soul will fall into fate’s tracks and have no way to escape.”

“The future of the great era belongs to our Heavenly Court!”

Fairy Zi Wei thought of Feng Jin Huang.

After obtaining the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique’s information, Duke Long gave these research results to Feng Jin Huang, which could be considered as his first genuine knowledge imparting. Although these research results were someone else’s work.

1Because they needed to use Feng Jin Huang’s Immortal Gu, they needed to deduce suitable immortal killer moves for her so that they could resolve the dream realm surrounding Dragon Palace.

Fairy Zi Wei spared no effort in deducing the killer moves, even deducing together with Feng Jin Huang.

At the beginning, her and Duke Long’s goal had only been to help Feng Jin Huang grow slightly faster. But who could have thought that after the deduction succeeded, Feng Jin Huang even found a method to improve the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique.

Creating a brand new Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body with none of its previous flaws. It could last indefinitely!

1“The talent of a venerable is truly too terrifying. In front of them, even I feel like I am just an ordinary person...” Fairy Zi Wei sighed mentally.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1684: Profound Literature Grotto-heaven

Immemorial white heaven.

Fang Yuan was moving forward on an auspicious cloud.

Half of his concentration was in the sovereign immortal aperture and the other half was on guard.

If it were before, Fang Yuan could not have split his concentration when refining Gu. But his gains were truly huge during this recent period of time.

He lacked neither attainment levels nor Gu recipes, his only shortcoming had been insufficient hands-on practice.

Personally refining Gu helped him grow rapidly in this aspect, his success rate in refinement increased greatly and so the amount of immortal materials wasted had also decreased by a lot.

Refining Immortal Gu had always been a sinkhole, besides Gu refinement, Fang Yuan was also plundering all kinds of natural resources from immemorial white heaven.

He sold a portion in treasure yellow heaven and bought items he needed for refining Gu and managing his immortal aperture.

Treasure yellow heaven’s business was especially bustling, the turbulence in earth veins created a pressing demand for exchange of goods in the five regions Gu Immortal world, immortal material transactions in the market were very popular now.

Naturally, the most popular business was still time path immortal materials.

Heavenly Court did not stint on suppressing Fang Yuan, they would purchase all time path immortal materials even with a high price, showcasing an inexhaustible strength, displaying the robust and terrifying foundation of Heavenly Court!

If Heavenly Court found out that Fang Yuan had already obtained one of Red Lotus’ true inheritances and possessed large amounts of time path immortal materials, who knew how they would feel?

“There are still two rank six Immortal Gu left, the others have all been advanced to rank seven. Eh?”

Fang Yuan’s body suddenly shook.

The auspicious cloud suddenly increased in speed. After a while, Fang Yuan saw heaven form.

The crane form killer move was continuously circling around an ordinary looking spot that seemed to just be made of air.

“It discovered a grotto-heaven.” Fang Yuan was joyous.

Using the detection of heaven form, this grotto-heaven’s inner scenery was constantly transmitted to Fang Yuan’s mind.

“So this grotto-heaven is called Profound Literature grotto-heaven... It is actually a rank eight information path Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture... Oh? There is such a large population and they even have a unique cultivation style!”

Fang Yuan could not help but feel curious.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven’s population was even larger than Lang Ya blessed land’s hairy men. Using an initial estimation, there was also a good number of Gu Immortals.

This grotto-heaven mainly had information path dao marks, thus its environment naturally was suited to produce information path resources. Therefore, the Gu Masters and Gu Immortals here mainly cultivated information path and used information path Gu worms.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven had already been isolated from the outside world for many years, but because it had annexed an immemorial nine heavens fragment, its heavenly spirit was muddle-headed.

However, the immortal killer move of the original owner of grotto-heaven was still effective. This move was called — Assisting Literary Talents, it seemed to be effective for as long as the grotto-heaven existed and its effect was extremely unique.

As long as a purebred human created or recited outstanding poems or writings of any kind, they would obtain recognition and reward from this grotto-heaven. Mortals could sing good poems to attract hope Gu from far away and awaken their aperture. Gu Masters could create amazing poetry verses to obtain Gu worms or even raise their cultivation directly.

“It is somewhat of a pity that I cannot annex this grotto-heaven, I have quite a lot of poetic masterpieces stored in my mind.”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily as he transferred his immortal essence into heaven form.

Heaven form slowly started to emit light which moved into Profound Literature grotto-heaven. Fang Yuan flew into the white light to enter the grotto-heaven.

“Such guts! Which vile fiend dares to invade my homeland?!” A vast and mighty voice resounded from within, speaking with righteousness.

Next, an old man in a white robe and resembling a scholar, possessing rank eight aura, showed up in front of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was still inside the white light and could not make a move. The old man pushed his hand without any hesitation, countless literary characters manifested immediately and shot forward like a storm.

Heaven form did not have any offensive ability, the torrent of characters poured in and the white light crumbled. Fang Yuan’s situation became awkward, he could not advance, he could only take the initiative to retreat.

“There is actually a rank eight Gu Immortal here!” Fang Yuan was slightly surprised.

According to normal situations, a rank eight Gu Immortal would rarely be born inside a grotto-heaven because the grotto-heaven’s resources were not enough to support the emergence of a rank eight Gu Immortal.

Moreover, this Profound Literature grotto-heaven’s heavenly spirit was in a muddle-headed state and could not open the immortal aperture’s entrance, so Gu Immortals could not easily come out.

Even if this rank eight Gu Immortal had some skills and could secretly come out to immemorial white heaven and plunder immortal materials, the risks were too high. There were many immemorial desolate beasts and immemorial desolate plants in immemorial white heaven along with all kinds of strange and dangerous areas which could pose threats to even rank eight Gu Immortals. This was not a backyard for rank eight Gu Immortals, they not only needed luck to gather resources here, they also had to take risks.

“Let’s try another area.” Fang Yuan reorganized himself and poured in immortal essence into heaven form for the second time.

Heaven form was a rank nine killer move, it could connect to any grotto-heaven. He connected from the sky the first time, now he chose to enter from underground.

However, when he stepped into white light again and tried to sneak into Profound Literature grotto-heaven, that rank eight Gu Immortal appeared timely before him again.

“You still dare to try again? With me here, you will never succeed!” The rank eight Gu Immortal immediately attacked.

Fang Yuan was still inside the white light and felt helpless as he was unable to activate any other methods.

With no way left, he could only let the white light be destroyed by the enemy while he retreated to the outside world once again.

Fang Yuan’s expression was unavoidably dark.

He pondered: “The two areas I chose should be vastly apart from each other, but I was actually detected and obstructed immediately. What defensive method is this?”

It was not strange that he was detected.

After all, Profound Literature grotto-heaven was an information path grotto-heaven and information path was most specialized in detection, gathering intel and spreading news.

However, the rank eight Gu Immortal enemy was able to appear before Fang Yuan promptly, what method was this?

Fang Yuan tried a few more times using not only heaven form killer move but also Fixed Immortal Travel killer move as well, but was still found out and blocked.

Fang Yuan required a very short time to pass through the white light, but this short period of time seemed endlessly long under the obstruction of the rank eight Gu Immortal.

At this moment, Fang Yuan experienced what Heavenly Lord Bai Zu felt when attacking Hei Fan grotto-heaven. His strength was clearly higher than the opponent, but with the enemy blocking the entrance of the grotto-heaven, he was not able to enter the grotto-heaven and this felt really unpleasant.

“Profound Literature grotto-heaven, I will be back.” Fang Yuan chose to leave.

Anyway, he already knew the position of Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

It had annexed a nine heavens fragment and could not be moved anymore.

While Fang Yuan left with nothing, Duke Long brought Feng Jin Huang to the bottom of the sea somewhere in Eastern Sea.

Flood dragons roared, raising undercurrents and raging waves, but were helpless against Duke Long.

Everything was tranquil around Duke Long as Feng Jin Huang stood quietly beside him.

Duke Long brought Feng Jin Huang further down. Suddenly, there was a layer of ripple in front of Feng Jin Huang, as if they had broken a layer of formless membrane. Her pupils shrunk slightly as she discovered a large palace at the bottom of the sea.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House — Dragon Palace!

The whole palace shone with slight orange-gold light and was richly decorated, the pavilions and terraces were all grand and beautiful. However, Dragon Palace was surrounded by a large dream realm.

The dream realm was constantly moving and its movement was quite fast. Dragon Palace was obscured from time to time by the dream realm, enticing the visitors.

The dream realm kept on changing and moving, although some gaps appeared occasionally which seemed to let others enter Dragon Palace, Duke Long was extremely cautious and would rather wait than take unnecessary risks.

Right now, he already had a method to deal with this dream realm.

Immortal killer move — Pure Dream Reality Seeker Transformation!

He had borrowed Feng Jin Huang’s dream wings Immortal Gu while the deduction of the immortal killer move was led by Fairy Zi Wei.

Under the effect of the killer move, a small piece of the dream realm quickly transformed into a human body with closed eyes.

“This is a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body, moreover it is perfect with no flaws.” Duke Long’s eyes shone as he carefully sized it up. He had once been harmed by a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body thus he was slightly moved.

“Huang Er, your modification is truly brilliant! From now onwards, this Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique can be considered the eleventh extreme physique!” Duke Long praised.

Feng Jin Huang blinked her eyes: “Master, to be honest, I was only able to do so by coincidence. Because I created the killer move shatter dream previously, this modification was done based on its results. I had only thought of giving it a try, but who could have thought, it would truly succeed!”

Duke Long smiled: “No need to be insecure, my good disciple. Do you think your creation of shatter dream was a coincidence? This is part of fate’s arrangement. It is fate that...”

Feng Jin Huang immediately pouted: “Master, can you stop saying things like that? I don’t want to hear such words. If everything is fate’s arrangement, then what’s the point of me doing anything?”

Duke Long was stunned and wanted to say something but only gave a long sigh: “Alright, alright, let’s not talk about this now. Now is still too early for you, when the time comes, I believe you will comprehend it.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1685: Beast Calamity Grotto-Heaven

Central Continent, Earth Trench.

Roar...

A giant desolate beast monkey let out its final roar, it wanted to stand up, but facing the tiny human Gu Immortal before it, it felt its whole body freezing.

This coldness seemed to penetrate the soul itself, even freezing its heated blood.

Immortal killer move — Blood Turns Cold!

The attacker was none other than Fang Yuan’s brother, Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

“Congratulations Fang Zheng, you are already able to freely utilize blood turns cold after these few days of use in combat.” Zhao Lian Yun slowly flew closer and said with a smile.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng looked at the frozen giant monkey corpse, the red light in his eyes slowly dissipating. His expression was tranquil as he expressed his gratitude to Zhao Lian Yun: “I am flattered. It was all thanks to you protecting me from the side over these days, otherwise, how would I gain such good opportunities to practise my killer move.”

The turbulence in Central Continent’s earth veins was quite frequent and all the super forces fell into an awkward situation where they did not have enough manpower. To suppress their own internal situation, Immortal Crane Sect had sent Fang Zheng out.

Naturally, Fang Zheng’s movement was constantly monitored by Heavenly Court, and as long as there were no mishaps, Heavenly Court was happy to see Fang Zheng growing stronger.

Fang Zheng was saved by Feng Jiu Ge and returned to Central Continent, receiving the support of Heavenly Court. Not only did he obtain blood revenge Immortal Gu, he also obtained cold blood Immortal Gu during his immortal ascension.

Fairy Zi Wei had already made proper arrangements, giving blood turns cold and other immortal killer moves to Fang Zheng. Now, he was already proficient in the killer move blood turns cold and could use it proficiently in battles.

Eastern Sea, at a certain area in the depths of the sea.

Duke Long and Feng Jin Huang had already been refining the dream realm for several days now.

The dream realm surrounding Dragon Palace was much larger than they thought; Duke Long had used the killer move Pure Dream Reality Seeker Transformation to refine dozens of Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, but new dream realms were still spreading out from Dragon Palace to fill the gaps.

Pure Dream Reality Seeker Transformation was only a rank six killer move and had limited might because its core Immortal Gu, Dream Wings, was only at rank six.

Actually, after condensing the first Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body, Duke Long could borrow this special vessel to move in the dream realm freely and enter Dragon Palace.

But Duke Long’s objective this time was this rank eight Immortal Gu House. Without eliminating this dream realm, he would not be able to safely take this Immortal Gu House.

While Duke Long was condensing Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, Feng Jin Huang was cultivating wholeheartedly.

She was mainly researching the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body, sometimes, she would move her soul into a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body, and sometimes, she would research in her main body.

“Shadow Sect’s Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique pursued stability so it could not live long.”

“Dream realms are ever-changing, their special trait is uncertainty. So I walked the path of shatter dream and made it more unstable, the result was that under the deduction of Lady Zi Wei, double negative turned into positive, obtaining the perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique.”

Every time Feng Jin Huang thought back to this, she felt she had gotten lucky.

“Could it be this is the effect of fate? It wants to borrow my efforts to bring forth the perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique?”

Feng Jin Huang quickly shook her head, getting rid of this thought.

She recalled the words of her master, Duke Long —

“Huang Er, although you have researched the perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, it is still not enough. You need to research this achievement thoroughly to use it in your cultivation. When you find out how to advance your physique to Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, it will be the time for your immortal ascension.”

Gu Immortal!

Feng Jin Huang’s accumulation was already enough for immortal ascension, but she was always stopped by Duke Long.

Now that Duke Long finally relented, Feng Jin Huang was very excited but also in a dilemma, how could she understand Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique thoroughly?

Feng Jin Huang was pondering about this issue as Duke Long waited patiently.

“Am I pushing her too hard?”

“After all, transforming her own physique into the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique involves the profundities of human path!”

“<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> clearly stated the ten extreme physiques were created by Ren Zu, these are all human path profundities. Perhaps I can impart my gains when I read <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> back then to her.”

Duke Long was known as the ancestor of the dragonman. The birth of the new variant human race – dragonman, was brought about by Duke Long alone.

And Duke Long’s achievement was a result of his comprehension of <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

“Although I took Feng Jin Huang as my disciple, I have not taught her anything. She probably cannot meet my requirements, but it is better if I teach her the profundities of dragonmen. Of course, I still need to warn her that she must not create any dragonmen!”

“No, according to her nature, she might secretly create them. Huang Er is different from Hong Ting, especially her personality and perception of fate... Sigh, people’s hearts have changed since ancient times. This kind of dangerous thinking should be unrelated to Bai Qing, it is probably Feng Jiu Ge’s influence.”

Duke Long had naturally investigated Feng Jiu Ge and Fairy Bai Qing.

Achoo!

Feng Jiu Ge rubbed his nose, his body was filled with bloody stains. He mumbled: “Who is talking behind my back?”

He was in a very miserable state, his robe was mostly torn apart, revealing his robust and muscular chest.

“Cough, cough.”

He suddenly coughed up blood.

Two Gu Immortals who were hidden revealed themselves, they looked at Feng Jiu Ge’s heavily injured appearance but had joyous expressions: “Congratulations Lord Feng Jiu Ge on advancing to rank eight!”

“Mm.” Feng Jiu Ge nodded lightly, he felt no excitement towards his rank eight cultivation. In fact, he could have advanced to rank eight long ago but there had never been a suitable opportunity.

There were always all kinds of shackles holding him back. After all, he had a family and was also the most important member of Spirit Affinity House.

“Rank eight cultivation level is no big deal, although I now have white litchi immortal essence, I will need time to accumulate it.”

“I don’t have enough funds to advance my core Immortal Gu to rank eight.”

“Even if I have the funds, I will need others to help me refine Gu.”

“Maybe I can rely on Heavenly Court for this?”

Feng Jiu Ge thought about his Dao Guardian status which had a lot of exploitable value.

“But the crucial thing is the inspiration I got from <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> when undergoing the tribulation. Perhaps I can create a song about destiny from this.”

“Heaven and earth has fate, everything is arranged by it. But after luck path was born, there was room for change. Everything and everyone in the world has the chance to shine brilliantly now.”

“Destiny song will portray this brilliance, it will describe the certainty and uncertainty of heaven and earth as well as the paths of all life!”

A period of time passed yet again.

Immemorial white heaven.

Fang Yuan gazed excitedly at the heaven form crane which was flying around in circles.

“Found it, I have finally found a second grotto-heaven.”

“This is... Beast Calamity grotto-heaven?”

“Good, it has not annexed any nine heavens fragment!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1686: Giant Monster Fang Yuan!

1

After searching for so many days, Fang Yuan found another grotto-heaven and it had not annexed any nine heavens fragment!

“But this is a transformation path grotto-heaven, my transformation path attainment level is somewhat insufficient.”

Master, grandmaster, great grandmaster, supreme grandmaster... Fang Yuan was a grandmaster in transformation path, he was lacking attainment by an entire level.

The lack of attainment level was not an issue because it could be resolved with dream realms.

Southern Border had plenty of transformation path dream realms, which were enough for Fang Yuan to breakthrough to great grandmaster attainment in transformation path, it was just that he would have to face some hurdles.

Besides dream realms, Fang Yuan had another backup method for transformation path attainment level. It was to use calamity beckoning Immortal Gu, immortal tribulation tempering aperture, as well as Reckless Savage’s true meaning in the northern icy plain.

“The original owner of this grotto-heaven was a transformation path rank eight Gu Immortal who had passed one myriad tribulation.”

Rank eight Gu Immortals had to pass three myriad tribulations, after that was rank nine.

Myriad tribulations were terrifying and were also called apocalyptic myriad tribulation. To rank eight Gu Immortals, there was a huge danger of dying but also the chance to rapidly progress in their cultivation.

One myriad tribulation and two myriad tribulations were classifications of a rank eight Gu Immortal’s cultivation level.

If Fang Yuan annexed this grotto-heaven, his cultivation would immediately soar to one myriad tribulation level, such terrifying progress could definitely make Heavenly Court panic.

Duke Long and Bo Qing were also only at two myriad tribulations level, passing the third myriad tribulation would be rank nine.

Duke Long, however, knew he was not cut out for that so he merged his immortal aperture with Heavenly Court, changing to a phantom aperture. On the other hand, Bo Qing tried to advance but perished.

“Since this Beast Calamity grotto-heaven has not annexed a nine heavens fragment, how did it pass the calamities and tribulations?”

It would not be easy for it to repeatedly pass calamities and tribulations just using its own strength.

In the past, Lang Ya land spirit was afraid of calamities and tribulations so he lowered his grotto-heaven to a blessed land. This was a very wise choice, of course the method to downgrade a grotto-heaven to blessed land was extremely rare and was not something any grotto-heaven could use.

Heaven form flew in circles while transmitting information.

Fang Yuan discovered a peculiar phenomenon: This grotto-heaven’s calamities and tribulations were of one kind, they were all beast calamities.

Beast calamities were a type of tribulation, sometimes, they would be formed from desolate beasts, and sometimes from ancient desolate beasts.

In this grotto-heaven, heavenly tribulations were desolate beast calamities, grand tribulations were ancient desolate beast calamities, and myriad tribulations were immemorial desolate beast calamities.

“What method is this? It can actually restrict the type of calamities and tribulations? If everything is a beast calamity, it will be really easy to deal with them. After all, beasts have physical form and are not difficult to block unlike rain, wind, and fog.”

As heaven form’s continued to probe, Fang Yuan discovered deeper information.

He sighed: “So this grotto-heaven is not restricting calamities and tribulations, but transforming any calamities and tribulations into a beast calamity. Truly an amazing method!”

There were many kinds of calamities and tribulations, but their formation would be influenced in this Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, transforming into ferocious beasts in the end.

Apart from calamity beckoning Immortal Gu and immortal tribulation tempering aperture, Fang Yuan finally encountered another method that was targeted towards calamities and tribulations, that was beast calamity transformation!

“Every grotto-heaven that can continuously exist is not simple. Profound Literature grotto-heaven is like this. Beast Calamity grotto-heaven is even more so.”

“This is truly an unexpected surprise!”

“This grotto-heaven contains a huge population and countless resources, and more importantly, the method of beast calamity transformation. I need to get this method, it will be very useful in dealing with my tribulations.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan transferred his white litchi immortal essence to the heaven form crane.

A while light slowly expanded as Fang Yuan flew in.

He was not blocked by any rank eight Gu Immortal this time because there was no rank eight existence in this Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

However, when he was entering, the whole grotto-heaven started shaking. A profound and vast strength came from every direction, not only influencing the white light but also exerting pressure on Fang Yuan.

“What is this?!” Fang Yuan was slightly bewildered at first before quickly reaching realization.

There was a strange expression on his face: “So it is like this. I am not from this grotto-heaven and came from the outside world, because my strength is too powerful and the grotto-heaven wants to reject me, it is treating me as a tribulation.”

This Beast Calamity grotto-heaven could transform calamities and tribulations into all kinds of beasts, currently, this force was influencing Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan pondered: “It is possible to forcibly resist this strength, but I fear our fight might end up destroying this method. Although heaven form discovered several inheritance grounds which the original owner left, what if the beast calamity transformation method is not recorded there?”

Just in case, it was better to maintain Beast Calamity grotto-heaven in its original state and not destroy any crucial arrangement.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan boldly retracted his defenses, he then felt endless temporary transformation path dao marks being added to his body. At the same time, his other dao marks also changed into transformation path dao marks!

“Amazing, amazing! Transformation path can project every path, transformation path dao marks can transform into any path’s dao marks. Right now, this transformation has been turned upside down, changing other paths’ dao marks into transformation path dao marks.” Fang Yuan sighed and praised repeatedly: “This method is beyond ordinary, it seems to involve the deepest profundity of transformation path! It feels like I only need to get in and out of here a few times and let this influence affect my body to comprehend the true essence of this method.”

“Of course, the quickest method is to charge to those several inheritance grounds and seize the true inheritances there, I can check if there is the original record of beast calamity transformation!”

Fang Yuan’s body was transforming and constantly expanding. He gradually turned unrecognizable as he transformed into a beast.

If not for heaven form already inspecting clearly that this transformation had no side effects, Fang Yuan would not have dared to accept this kind of influence.

Bellow—!

After a while, Fang Yuan turned into a large monster with a bull head and human body. He was as large as a mountain, his skin as tough as steel, bull hair filled his body, and his nose let out rough breathing noises as he took large steps forward.

The whole Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was shaken!

Countless people looked at the sky and saw Fang Yuan, after a momentary daze, screams and shouts filled the sky.

“Mon... monster!”

“A monster has appeared again!!”

“This monster is so large, its aura is also completely different from the previous ones.”

“Quick, quickly call our beast warriors!”

Under countless people’s anxious anticipation, a Combat Beast Warrior appeared.

This was a middle-aged man with rank seven Gu Immortal cultivation level, but his aura was somewhat strange.

He looked plain and his expression was serious as he moved to the top of the city wall.

“There is only one record of such a huge monster appearing in history. I can feel an incomparably terrifying force with just one glance at it.”

He sighed inwardly while clenching his fists, the fire of battle intent rising in his eyes: “But for my homeland, to defend love and justice, I will defeat this monster no matter what. Come, my combat beast — Transform1!!!”

The middle-aged man shouted loudly and his whole body started to emit light.

Shortly, an eagle cry could be heard, a silver-white giant eagle flew over from the horizon. This was an ancient desolate beast!

1The silver-white giant eagle’s body also started to emit light.

The middle-aged man jumped while the silver-white giant eagle swooped down, the lights on both grew increasingly brighter and when the two met in the air, the two lights merged together.

Boom!

The lights dissipated. With an eagle head, human body, and two wings on his back, a beast warrior as tall as the city wall showed up.

The crowd immediately cried out in joy.

“He’s here, our Eagle Warrior has appeared!”

“Go Eagle Warrior, kill this giant monster!”

“We support you, you will definitely succeed!”

Amidst the crowd’s cheers, Eagle Warrior flew to the sky and charged towards Fang Yuan.

He cried out in his mind: “I won’t let anyone down! Come, let us have a great fight...”

Bam!

A crisp sound echoed, the silent Fang Yuan slammed down on Eagle Warrior with a single slap.

Boom!

Eagle Warrior’s body drew an arc in the sky like a falling meteor before fiercely colliding on the ground, forming a huge crater with dust flying everywhere.

“...” The crowd went silent.

An intense dizziness almost sent Eagle Warrior unconscious.

He used all his strength to conquer it before barely subduing the dizziness, he then slowly climbed out of the deep crater.

“What happened? I... I was actually slammed to the ground by this monster?” Eagle Warrior reacted only after a long while.

Recalling that scene, his eyes revealed an intense fright.

“That speed just now... This is absurd! How can such a large body move have such nimbleness? This is impossible!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1687: Monster Rampages

“Normally, such an enormous monster should have a boorish nature with great strength, it is impossible for it to have such agility and speed!”

Eagle Warrior stood up from the deep crater, his head was filled with cold sweat. Suddenly, he thought of a possibility: “Wait a second, could that attack be this monster’s combat technique?”

He looked at Fang Yuan who had turned into a giant monster with bull head and human body, the enormous shadow shrouding Eagle Warrior.

Eagle Warrior slowly regained his courage as he thought about this.

“You have a combat technique, I also have a combat technique! I already know your combat technique, but a stupid large animal like you cannot understand my combat technique.”

“That’s right, as long as I can grasp the opportunity, I definitely have the chance to win!”

Thinking of this, Eagle Warrior’s eyes emitted hopeful light.

“He stood up, he stood up!”

“That’s right, how could Eagle Warrior be knocked out instantly?”

“Go, Eagle Warrior, we believe in you!”

Seeing Eagle Warrior stand up, the dead silent city suddenly erupted into heaven-shaking cheers.

An eagle cry resounded.

Eagle Warrior flapped his wings and flew to the sky again.

“You have a combat technique, I also have a combat technique! Monster, let me show you, my combat technique — Silver Illusion!” Eagle Warrior shouted.

At the next moment, his body suddenly turned illusory, splitting into six illusory images, they were all lifelike and had no difference from the real body. In an instant, the real and fake Eagle Warriors surrounded Fang Yuan and flew above him in a circle.

The commotion in the city immediately surged to a whole new level!

“Look, it is Eagle Warrior’s silver illusion combat technique!”

“He finally used it, look! That monster looks dazed, it does not know which one to attack.”

1“The chance of victory is here, go, kill that giant monster.”

“Ahhh~... Eagle Warrior is truly too cool!”

Eagle Warrior heard the cheers of the crowd which amplified his courage and battle intent in his heart.

But he was cool-headed inwardly: “I must use this chance to make a definite strike, even if I cannot kill this monster, I need to be able to heavily injure it. After all, combat techniques consume a huge amount of stamina and cannot be used repeatedly!”

“That’s why, even if this monster is powerful, it cannot repeatedly use its combat techniques. I will first use illusions to make it attack and waste its stamina. After it depletes its own strength, when it has no stamina left, I might be able to capture it alive!”

Eagle Warrior actually wanted to capture Fang Yuan alive, although Fang Yuan could not sense this thought, he clearly saw through Eagle Warrior’s combat technique.

Eagle Warriors constantly buzzed around Fang Yuan, occasionally, one or two suddenly swept down and attacked Fang Yuan with their sharp claws and beak.

Fang Yuan stood on the spot without evading, these Eagle Warriors were all illusions with no real threat in their attacks. In Fang Yuan’s eyes, it was a dead giveaway.

Fang Yuan was calm and composed, laughing inwardly: ‘This grotto-heaven is somewhat interesting.’

First of all, the interaction between mortals and Gu Immortals was interesting.

They were harmonious.

Different from the five regions outside world where mortals were like ants and Gu Immortals were high and above, in this grotto-heaven, Gu Immortals were the guardian spirits of mortals. More importantly, they were even keen to take on this guardian duty.

From this point, Fang Yuan could see the trace of a paradise.

But this was not strange.

Every grotto-heaven formed its own small world. If there was little contact with the outside world of the five regions, the grotto-heaven would form a different social structure and create a style unique to itself.

Secondly, the battle style and cultivation method of Gu Masters and Gu Immortals here was interesting too.

For instance, the opponent before Fang Yuan had merged with an ancient desolate beast silver-white giant eagle to create a kind of human-beast fusion battle form.

This was clearly a transformation path method and its advantage was extremely obvious.

Normally, Gu Immortals would need to expend immortal essence to activate Immortal Gu or immortal killer moves. But the Gu Immortals here only needed to merge with a desolate beast and could possess combat techniques.

The so-called combat technique was just the innate abilities of some desolate beasts or ancient desolate beasts. It was like Fang Yuan’s upper extreme heavenly eagle which could enter and exit immortal apertures.

This innate ability was known as combat technique by the people here, it did not expend immortal essence but had a huge demand on stamina, even having some other cost like sacrificing a part of the body or some lifespan.

Be they combat techniques, Immortal Gu or immortal killer moves, if we trace their origin, they were all just in essence — Dao.

Because desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts have dense dao mark accumulation on their bodies, and the fact that certain areas in their bodies have a higher concentration of dao marks, they would possess innate abilities or combat techniques.

Immortal Gu were fragments of the Great Dao, they represented certain laws of heaven and earth.

There was no need to talk about immortal killer moves, they were usually a combination of several Immortal Gu and a large amount of mortal Gu, they were an organized combination of dao marks and Great Dao fragments which went through specific profound procedures to achieve a greater overall effect and power.

In fact, the most primitive immortal killer moves had been created by Gu Immortals who used the dao mark distribution of desolate beasts as reference. They imitated and experimented with these distributions and created immortal killer moves eventually.

“The Gu Immortals here can merge with desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts to use the beast’s innate ability. They don’t need to spend painstaking effort to refine any Immortal Gu and can also save on the danger and cost of training and creating immortal killer moves.”

This advantage was truly prominent!

Immortal Gu were hard to find and every Immortal Gu was unique.

But there was a lot of desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts, even immemorial desolate beasts like the upper extreme heavenly eagle could be found in groups.

The desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts possessing innate talents would often look stupid because of their lack of intelligence. But after they merge with Gu Immortals, the Gu Immortals would possess their innate talents and they would also possess the Gu Immortal’s wisdom. This was a win-win situation for both parties, their advantages made up for each other’s deficiency!

“But this method is not flexible enough, there is only a fixed method to use when fighting. Innate abilities are not varied enough and easily targeted and restricted, they are full of shortcomings.” Fang Yuan also saw through the disadvantages.

1“But overall, this method’s advantages are still huge, far surpassing the disadvantages. If it is popularized, the five regions will definitely welcome it with open arms!”

“Fortunately, this method was not leaked out in my previous life, otherwise my memories would have been completely different.”

Because this method was simply the best way to mass produce Gu Immortal battle strength, although it could not affect high level battle strength, it was enough to turn around some situations.

The five regions had many rank six Gu Immortals who did not have even one Immortal Gu!

And these people were the majority of the Gu Immortal world in every region.

When one region had this method while another did not and they had a fight, based on the mid to low level Gu Immortal battles, the region with this method would have a high chance of winning.

“This fusion ability is not anything new but it has never prospered. The greatest obstacle is the conflict between dao marks.”

“But this grotto-heaven has a method to turn other dao marks into transformation path dao marks!”

“So Gu Immortals can casually fuse with desolate beasts. This fusion method is the same as Beast Calamity’s transformation method.”

After deducing this, Fang Yuan wanted possession of this transformation path method even more.

“I have proper things to do, these flies should stop bothering me.” As he thought to himself, Fang Yuan activated a time path method.

His current time path killer moves were no longer like before.

Eagle Warrior was still probing when he shockingly discovered that time around him had slowed down by countless times.

“This!? Time has become so slow! How is this possible?!” Eagle Warrior was thoroughly horrified.

He was quite confident in his speed but with time itself being influenced, he was unable to display his greatest advantage, speed!

“Let’s end this.” Fang Yuan extended his palms slowly, his ten fingers opened up and grabbed the two eagle wings.

“Darn it, darn it! Move, move!!” Eagle Warrior roared inwardly, but despite using all his strength to fly, he only flew a meager distance.

Swish!

At the next instance, Fang Yuan exerted strength, tearing apart the two wings instantly!

2“Ahh—!” Eagle Warrior’s expression was twisted in pain. Blood flowed out from the wounds on his back, gushing out wildly like a fountain.

“Eagle Warrior!!!”

“No—!”

Countless people cried out in shock, fear and horror took over their high spirits from earlier. Some even fainted on the spot while some covered their faces.

Fang Yuan slowly put his hands on Eagle Warrior’s head.

Eagle Warrior’s heart thumped madly as he felt an intense aura of death!

“So this was its combat technique?”

“Slowing down time, truly a terrifying combat technique.”

“But... even if I die here, it was of some value. At least, I managed to expose its secret!”

Thinking so, Eagle Warrior screamed loudly: “Monster! So what if you kill me? There are still many beast warriors coming to kill you, your death is all but...”

Bam!

Fang Yuan exerted strength in between his hands, and like a watermelon smashing on the ground, Eagle Warrior’s head burst, white-red brain matter and bones splattered everywhere.

Fang Yuan relaxed his palms.

Plop.

The headless Eagle Warrior corpse fell on the ground, creating a dust cloud.

2Fang Yuan looked at the city.

His body was gigantic, the tall city walls could only reach his knees. His expression was tranquil but his bull head horrified countless people. White cloud moved beside his shoulders, and what should have been a clear sky was blocked by his enormous figure, his shadow shrouding everyone’s heart.

There was a huge crowd in the city, but no one made a sound.

It was deathly silent.

Fang Yuan slowly moved towards the city1.

At the next moment, like an explosion, countless people began to scream and cry as they started escaping in all directions like headless flies.

From high up in Fang Yuan’s vision, these mortals looked like a group of ants that were dispersing through the four city gates.

Fang Yuan ignored them and continued to move towards the city.

Bam.

His calf knocked into the city wall, instantly causing it to collapse entirely.

He walked on the city’s main street but even if it were to enlarge by five to six times, Fang Yuan’s heel would still cover the whole street.

Buildings crumbled like small paper boxes as Fang Yuan knocked into them, there were also some unlucky mortals who were directly stepped into meat paste.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1688: Obstruction

Bellow—!

The monster Fang Yuan let out a roar, his giant body crossing a forest while destroying countless gigantic trees easily.

“Retreat, retreat!” Deer Warrior was holding a long spear, he was coughing out blood as he went to face Fang Yuan, using his life to fight for time for Spirit Spring Forest’s inhabitants.

But in the end, Deer Warrior’s neck was snapped by Fang Yuan, dying a miserable death.

The image ended here creating a buzzing commotion in the hall. Tens of energetic and vigorous warriors – men and women, old and young – were talking in low voices, their speech and expressions were filled with shock and anger.

At this time, an emaciated old man coughed twice from a raised platform.

The hall immediately fell silent, all the beast warriors looked at the old man with respectful gazes.

The old man spoke: “You have seen the images, since the Bull-headed Demon God descended, it has destroyed Sacred Eagle City, Dark Valley, and Spirit Spring Forest.”

A red haired boor shouted: “Lord Combat Beast King, what are we still waiting for? Almost all the Combat Beast Warriors in the world are here and are waiting for your command to eradicate this Bull-headed Demon God!”

“Yes, Lord, give us the command.”

“We can’t wait anymore.”

“We have already gotten information about Bull-headed Demon God, Eagle Warrior and Deer Warrior died miserably at his hands, we must avenge them!”

Many Combat Beast Warriors spoke, the collective mood in the hall was stirred into agitation.

The old man only extended his hand and pressed down, the hall fell silent once again. He continued: “Sigh, looks like you still don’t truly realize the severity of this beast calamity. I know that everyone present here has outstanding battle achievements, but this monster is different from normal. More accurately, if we don’t deal with this properly, it might lead to the end of the world!”

“What do you mean?”

“This monster is strong indeed but haven’t there been giant monsters who have killed several Combat Beast Warriors before?”

“This monster is large and possesses two combat techniques, its time slowing combat technique is especially troublesome. But it can also be countered.”

The old man shook his head, saying with a solemn expression: “This Bull-headed Demon God has bottomless strength, it could be said to be among the most terrifying beasts. You should know how the first generation Combat Beast King died, right?”

All the Combat Beast Warriors were visibly moved at these words.

“Lord Combat Beast King, you mean...”

“No way, is this giant monster at that level?”

The old man nodded slowly: “This Star Snail Hall we are currently in is the corpse of star sea snail. The first generation Combat Beast King was the strongest Combat Beast Warrior in history, but to kill the star sea snail, he had to sacrifice his life. And this Bull-headed Demon God is at the same level as the star sea snail.”

The old man’s reply sent the hall into complete pin-drop silence.

“So.” The old man looked at his surroundings and continued: “I assembled everyone to move together to kill this Bull-headed Demon God but we actually don’t have a high chance of winning. You must use all your strength for us to have a chance of victory. Please battle with the awareness that you are going to die!”

“Awareness of death...” Someone mumbled.

“Hehehe.” Someone suddenly laughed.

The mood suddenly became invigorated, the Combat Beast Warriors had a similar fire burning in their eyes.

Their battle intent soared!

“I already had the awareness of sacrificing for my homeland long ago!”

“Yes, so what if I have to sacrifice my life in order to save the lives of my family and friends?”

“We can’t let this Bull-headed Demon God continue to wreak havoc, so what if it is comparable to the star sea snail? I believe my fist and I believe in everyone!”

“Yes, I believe in my comrades’ strength. The first generation Combat Beast King fought alone, but we are different, we have each other!”

3Some people shouted, some people raised their arms, the morale continued to rise.

The old man showed a gratified smile: “Good, I am going to merge with the star sea snail’s shell and transport you all. We will besiege the Bull-headed Demon God and catch it off-guard! Remember, the future of this world is weighing on your shoulders.”

“We understand!!!”

The star sea snail’s shell began to shake.

Fang Yuan was walking on a wasteland.

He still had the appearance of a monster with a bull head and human body, his size was as tall as a mountain, his shoulders at the height of the clouds and his steps created craters. Each step of his produced an earth-shaking sound.

“The first generation Combat Beast King should be this grotto-heaven’s original owner.”

Fang Yuan was already certain.

He had destroyed three locations and took away inheritances of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven’s original owner. These inheritances were intact, and although they had lasted for many years, they were not taken away by other Combat Beast Warriors.

“The cultivation method of merging with beasts is convenient but unfortunately is not the proper Gu cultivation method. This kind of path only gets narrower the more one walks on it, so these people aren’t even aware of Beast Calamity Immortal’s true inheritance.”

“Hmm? Who is it?” Fang Yuan suddenly stopped, his gaze became vigilant.

At the next moment, starlight overflowed and Combat Beast Warriors appeared one after the other, surrounding him tightly.

“Monster, go and die!”

“For the peace of the world, I will have no regrets even if I have to sacrifice everything!”

“Everyone, attack together. Believe in yourself, believe in your friends. Even if the monster is stronger, it is not our match.”

The battle started suddenly!

At the same time, at a certain seabed in Eastern Sea.

“Master, it’s done! There are no longer any more dream realms coming out.” Feng Jin Huang looked at the rank eight Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace with excitement.

Duke Long nodded.

“Our painstaking effort over the past few days was not in vain, the greatest obstacle is gone. Dragon Palace is covered by a layer of dream realms, although the framework is not disturbed, the entire Immortal Gu House has already stopped working, it is the perfect chance for us to take it now.”

As Duke Long pondered, a past memory suddenly surfaced in his mind.

The red ‘longevity’ character written in the hall was very conspicuous.

Duke Long sat at the main seat, surrounded by dragonmen.

“Grandfather, I am here to offer birthday wishes! I wish you blessings as deep as Eastern Sea, and longevity as tall as Southern Border mountains. This is a desolate beast that I hunted personally for you, I hope grandfather likes it.” A dragonman youngster half-knelt on the ground as he held a plate in front of him, there was a tiny seahorse on the plate.

“This is the desolate beast happiness seahorse, it is very fast and hard to kill.”

“Seventh young master only has rank six cultivation level, it is very hard for him to kill it, but to think he actually captured it alive!”

“I heard that in order to capture this happiness seahorse, seventh young master spent a month at the bottom of the sea without moving, his filial piety is truly touching.”

The surrounding people discussed, there were human Gu Immortals as well but most were dragonmen.

Among these dragonmen, there were Gu Immortals as well as mortal Gu Masters; they were all Duke Long’s descendants.

Duke Long was the ancestor of the dragonmen, he created the dragonman variant human race. Seventh young master, a rank six dragonman Gu Immortal, was Duke Long’s most beloved grandson.

“Good, good, grandpa accepts your gift.” Duke Long smiled affectionately.

Distinguished guests and grandchildren filled the hall, this filled Duke Long’s chest with warmth.

But now...

Duke Long suddenly returned to reality.

There was only the dark and cold seawater around him and that deathly silent Dragon Palace.

The past was no more, the warmth that once filled his heart had already been buried in history.

“Who is it? Come out.” Duke Long suddenly spoke, his expression calm as his sharp gaze scanned several areas.

“As expected of Heavenly Court’s Duke Long, you have such keen perception.” An old woman slowly revealed herself. She was hunch-backed, she had deep wrinkles on her face that resembled the pattern of a purple venomous snake, extending from her face to her arms and to her whole body.

"Duke Long, we are definitely going to obtain this Immortal Gu House." Another Gu Immortal appeared, he was dressed in a white robe, he looked young and was handsome.

"Your Central Continent wants to take what belongs to our Eastern Sea? Hmph." The third Gu Immortal snorted coldly, he was robust and his triangular eyes shone with cold light.

The final Gu Immortal slowly approached Duke Long from behind, he wore a black robe, his face could not be seen, he was silent like an eerie ghost, filled with dark energy.

"Granny Rong, Yang Zi He, Shi Miao, and Zhang Yin, you are all lone and demonic immortals of Eastern Sea's Gu Immortal world. Was it easy for you to cultivate to rank eight? Why are you sending yourselves to death by coming before me?" Duke Long was still relaxed even when he was surrounded by four rank eight Gu Immortals.

"No need to speak nonsense, let's fight!" Shi Miao took the lead.

A huge battle erupted!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1689: Failure

Immemorial white heaven, Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

"Bull demon, face this move!" A golden haired ape shouted as it charged towards Fang Yuan while carrying the might of wind and thunder.

Bull-headed Demon God Fang Yuan stood on the spot without moving, quietly looking at the golden haired ape approaching him. Only when the ape reached in front of him did he lift his hand slightly.

Swoosh!

At the next moment, his fist that was raised from kneel level suddenly appeared right before his chest.

A straight punch.

It was an ordinary movement, but in Fang Yuan's current state, it had terrifying might.

Before the golden haired ape could react, it felt an incomparable strength that sent it flying backwards.

Bam!

After flying a short arc in the air, the golden haired ape crashed into a mountain. Rocks and boulders were smashed and fell down, burying him.

"What kind of strength is this, even Golden Ape is not its match!"

“I have never seen such strength matched with such speed... It is indeed a monster on the same level as the star sea snail!”

Besides the buried Golden Ape, there were several Combat Beast Warriors around the battlefield, but right now, they all felt a chill as they saw Golden Ape’s ending.

“Pull yourself together! This is clearly a combat technique, it will expend its stamina intensely if it uses it many times.” One of the Combat Beast Warriors, Lightning Lion, roared.

Fang Yuan had already defeated most of the Combat Beast Warriors sent by Combat Beast King, but there were still five who had some strength left.

They were the strongest five Combat Beast Warriors!

There were two Lion Warriors, Lightning Lion and Dharma Lion. The former had a lion head and human body, and grasped lightning powers, while the latter had a human head and lion body, and had extremely powerful recovery.

A mountain sized mollusk, called Stone Mollusk. Its two large shells were open and could spit out countless meteor-like stones.

A gigantic rhinoceros that looked like it was forged from steel, it was called Steel Rush.

The last one was an exquisite Frost Butterfly with the size of an adult’s fist, it had a human shape with butterfly wings and could let out powerful frost energy.

“Hehehe, stupid bull, you are trapped.” Unknowingly, the exquisite Frost Butterfly had appeared above Fang Yuan’s head.

Frost energy burst forth, covering Fang Yuan’s head and shoulders and quickly spreading down.

Roar!

Steel Rush let out a loud roar as it rushed straight towards Fang Yuan, causing an earthquake.

“Have a taste of my new combat technique!” Stone Mollusk suddenly started moving in circles rapidly, letting out an astonishing speed as it closed in on Fang Yuan.

Its two shells opened and it clamped down on Fang Yuan’s whole lower half.

At the next moment, Steel Rush fiercely knocked Fang Yuan to the ground.

Freezing air had frozen Fang Yuan’s arms in a large block of deep blue profound ice.

“The time is now!” Lightning Lion and Dharma Lion attacked Fang Yuan’s head from the left and right.

“Die!” The five of them shouted together, their battle intent soared to their peak state.

Boom—!

An intense explosion occurred, causing boundless surging air currents. The five

Combat Beast Warriors were like small planks in a hurricane as they coughed out blood and were sent flying away by the air currents.

In the dust cloud, a mountain sized black figure was gradually revealed.

Fang Yuan quietly stood on his original spot, he looked at the five Combat Beast Warriors that wanted to fight him struggle on the ground, before continuing to move ahead.

Bam Bam Bam...

His every step shook the surrounding land and left behind large footprints.

“Damn it!”

“Don’t leave...”

“Stop, stop it!”

Combat beast warriors struggled to stand up, but only Lightning Lion was able to barely stand up.

“It is Lightning Lion!”

“Go, you must stop this monster!”

Lightning Lion charged towards Fang Yuan without any fear once again, his gaze was filled with resolute light: “If you want to slaughter the others, you will have to step past my corpse.”

Boom!

No one saw how Fang Yuan attacked, they only saw Lightning Lion getting slammed back at an even faster speed.

The giant lion’s body was dragged along the ground, creating a thirty meter sized gully before it stopped.

Lightning Lion fainted, there was no movement from him anymore.

Fang Yuan continued moving forward.

He had controlled himself and did not take the lives of these people. Different from when he had just invaded, after inheriting several inheritances, his attitude had already changed. Right now, the way he looked at it, everything in this Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was his property. This naturally included these Combat Beast Warriors.

“There is the final inheritance ground left. As long as I take this inheritance, I can combine all the inheritance contents and obtain the complete contents.”

Soon, Fang Yuan reached before the star sea snail.

The star sea snail was an immemorial desolate beast, but the one in front of Fang Yuan was only its corpse.

Beast Calamity Immortal had been heavily injured when fighting the star sea snail and had suffered a fatal, irrecoverable wound. On his deathbed, he had left behind the inheritances and also forged this star sea snail into the final inheritance ground.

“Bull-headed Demon God, I have been waiting for you.” This generation’s Combat

Beast King stood on the top of the star sea snail and looked at Fang Yuan.

He was already very old and was like a small ant when compared to Fang Yuan’s size.

But this ant’s eyes burned with blazing flames.

Starlight suddenly shined on the star sea snail’s body and covered the old man’s body.

Several breaths later, the starlight became eye-piercing.

After the starlight dissipated, a heavily armored giant stood in front of Fang Yuan, only slightly shorter than Fang Yuan.

“Oh? So this method is not limited to live beasts, it can even be used on an immemorial desolate beast’s corpse!” Fang Yuan was inwardly surprised.

But shortly afterwards, he understood.

This transformation path method was reliant on dao marks and did not differentiate between alive or dead targets.

Although the star sea snail was dead, its shell still retained a vast number of star path dao marks which could be used by the old man.

“This should be this grotto-heaven’s greatest trump card, right? Unfortunately, even if it were a living star sea snail, it would be no match for me. Let alone its corpse that has lost so many dao marks since its death.”

Fang Yuan mentally sneered as he charged towards the star armored giant.

The battle was intense but the result was within Fang Yuan’s expectations.

In the scarred battlefield, Fang Yuan was still standing proudly while the star armored giant was collapsed on the ground on the verge of death.

“There is no hope...” The other Combat Beast Warriors who had come to help out in the battle were kneeling on the ground, their faces were pale.

Starlight shined, the star armored giant once again turned back into the current generation Combat Beast King and there was also the star sea snail shell with cracks all over it.

Fang Yuan examined for a while and discovered the profundities within the star sea snail.

He laughed and suddenly spoke: “Beast Calamity heavenly spirit, are you still not coming out?”

“...”

All the Combat Beast Warriors were dumbstruck and shaken.

“I... I... what did I just hear?”

“That giant monster spoke, it can actually speak human language?!”

“Am I hearing things because I am too old and am about to die soon?” The Combat Beast King mumbled with a dull expression.

But at the next moment, an even more astonishing scene played out.

Beast Calamity heavenly spirit flew towards Fang Yuan along with several

Immortal Gu.

The heavenly spirit was in the form of a young qilin, it spoke with a crisp and clear sound: “Foreign Gu Immortal, although you came here and obtained many inheritances, you have not obtained my full recognition. You recklessly killed innocent people and rampaged wildly, you are powerful but you can only obtain my main body’s immortal killer moves. As for Immortal Gu and this grotto-heaven’s inheritance rights, don’t even think about it.”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan let out laughter filled with deep meaning.

The young qilin was solemn: “I know what you are thinking, even I won’t be able to win against you if you use force. But I can make these Immortal Gu self-detonate and destroy the grotto-heaven, you will gain nothing from this.”

Fang Yuan was silent.

He felt somewhat troubled when he saw the young qilin’s resolute look. A heavenly spirit was like a land spirit, it would not lie.

Fang Yuan was unable to inspect where Beast Calamity Immortal’s Immortal Gu were.

And his blood light spirit suppression was not high enough level to pose sufficient threat to the grotto-heaven’s heavenly spirit.

“So it was like this, the Combat Beast Warriors here were originally a part of the inheritance. I realize Beast Calamity Immortal’s intention.” After a long while of silence, Fang Yuan suddenly spoke.

“Even if you understand now, it is too late. Everyone only has one chance. But you are not leaving empty-handed, according to the main body’s arrangements, immortal killer moves will be handed to you.” The heavenly spirit had made its point clear, it wanted him to leave.

After Fang Yuan obtained these immortal killer moves, he did not remain or use force, leaving Beast Calamity grotto-heaven through the entrance which was opened by the heavenly spirit.

1Eastern Sea.

The battle between five rank eight Gu Immortals was astonishing!

1Large sea waves and tsunamis surged, dark clouds rumbled in the sky with lightning flashing and thunder roaring. Undercurrents rose in the sea, poison path, water path, soul path, and all kinds of terrifying methods had already exterminated all living beings in the surroundings.

“If you have any methods left, use them.” Duke Long was still relaxed.

Feng Jin Huang was standing beside him, she was completely safe with not even a hair out of place. But right now, her face was filled with shock. After all, this was the first time she was seeing the fight between rank eight Gu Immortals at such a close distance, this had truly broadened her perspective.

Granny Rong, Yang Zi He, and others were solemn and distressed.

After truly exchanging moves, they tasted Duke Long’s power. Although Duke Long was alone and had a burden, Feng Jin Huang, the four Eastern Sea rank eights were actually unable to gain an upper hand since the start. Despite the four immortals using all their strength, they were unable to change the situation. Right now, they already saw signs of defeat!

“He already has quasi-rank nine strength, besides an Immortal Venerable or a Demon Venerable, we have no way to deal with him!”

“Such powerful strength, as expected of Heavenly Court, as expected of Duke Long...”

The morale of Granny Rong, Yang Zi He, and the others had already sunk to rock-bottom.

“Damn it, we plotted to get Dragon Palace for so long but Heavenly Court is going to take it away.”

“Sigh, let’s go. We are not Duke Long’s match and with us being on guard against each other, we cannot cooperate completely, there is no meaning in staying.”

Seeing there was no choice, the four Eastern Sea rank eights left immediately.

Duke Long did not give chase.

His goal this time was Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace and his goal never changed.

“Dragon Palace was corroded by dream realms and has already fallen apart, I wonder how many Gu are still remaining? How many core Immortal Gu are damaged?”

Duke Long sighed inwardly as he moved to take Dragon Palace.

“Hmm?!”

At the next moment, an astonishing scene occurred.

Dragon Palace suddenly let out an extraordinary splendor and flew to the sky.

Duke Long remained standing on the spot, he was not able to obstruct Dragon Palace in time and could only look as it flew away. A trace of blood flowed out from the corners of his lips as his eyes revealed shock: “Dragon Palace is actually completely intact, not only this, one of its cores is a dream path Immortal Gu!”

“Hahaha, Duke Long, let’s see how you fight against us this time!” The four Eastern Sea rank eights had returned.

Duke Long’s expression sank.

The situation had turned troublesome.

He was besieged and Dragon Palace had flown away while spreading its aura everywhere, it would definitely create turmoil in Eastern Sea!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1690: Myriad Beings Assimilation Transformation

“Immortal killer move — Myriad Beings Assimilation Transformation.” Fang Yuan mumbled.

He was sitting on the auspicious cloud moving through empty air in immemorial white heaven, it was vast and boundless.

After leaving Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, he actively absorbed the benefits from this trip.

Beast Calamity Immortal’s unique method was immortal killer move myriad beings assimilation transformation, after using this move, it could add a great number of transformation path dao marks and also transform the target’s other dao marks into transformation path dao marks.

This move expended an enormous amount of immortal essence and also required abundant emotions. These emotions had to be positive and righteous. From this point, Fang Yuan finally realized the cause of the nature of those Combat Beast Warriors in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Fang Yuan did not lack immortal essence. Over this period of time, although he had spent a lot in advancing the ranks of his Immortal Gu, his gains were similarly a lot. Especially in the later stage of Gu refinement, Fang Yuan’s progress was huge and his expenditure had continued to fall. Currently, Fang Yuan’s total amount of rank eight immortal essence was a lot and could support two battles of rank eight level intensity.

Fang Yuan had abundant emotions as well, he could easily create the positive emotions through wisdom path methods. His wisdom path attainment was very high after all.

What Fang Yuan lacked were Immortal Gu.

There were four Immortal Gu that formed this move, among them the core was a rank eight Immortal Gu — Adaptation!

1It went without saying that this was a transformation path Immortal Gu, and was also the vital Gu of Beast Calamity Immortal. The other three Immortal Gu were all rank seven.

“Even if the heavenly spirit does not give me these Immortal Gu, I can snatch them. I have already improved great thief ghost hand and it is now much more reliable.”

“Currently, I only need heaven form to constantly scout and find the place where these Immortal Gu are hidden, then I can use my theft path method to get them.”

“However, it is somewhat troublesome to obtain the whole of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.”

As far as Fang Yuan was concerned, Beast Calamity grotto-heaven itself had an enormous value to him. But the heavenly spirit was able to destroy the grotto-heaven, so if he rashly used force, his losses would far outweigh his gains.

“From my deduction based on this myriad beings assimilation transformation, Beast Calamity grotto-heaven’s Gu Immortals might also have a trump card.”

Desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts could be used for myriad beings assimilation transformation, so could the star sea snail’s shell. These Gu Immortals did not grasp myriad beings assimilation transformation, the reason was that Beast Calamity Immortal used this move on the entire Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

That meant, if the situation came to it, the entire Beast Calamity grotto-heaven could merge with the Gu Immortals through myriad beings assimilation transformation.

This could create a temporary rank eight battle strength!

Naturally, Fang Yuan could win against this kind of rank eight, but all of the resulting losses would be incurred on Fang Yuan. Even if he won, Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, which had used myriad beings assimilation transformation, would suffer severe damage.

“This means, I need to deduce a way to restrict them from using myriad beings assimilation transformation with the entire Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.”

“Also, I can use familiar face to invade once again.”

Beast Calamity heavenly spirit said a person only had one chance to inherit it, but how strong could its detection ability be? Could it distinguish Fang Yuan’s true identity? According to Fang Yuan’s deduction, this possibility was very low.

However, just as Fang Yuan was deducing restraining methods, he obtained some news.

This news was important!

“Dragon Palace has appeared? Moreover, Duke Long personally made a move but was not able to acquire it? Oh, it was because he was obstructed by an alliance of four Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals?”

“Interesting! Currently, the rank eight Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace is flying in the skies of Eastern Sea without hiding its aura, it has already created a huge commotion, countless forces and Gu Immortal experts are paying close attention to it.”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly.

He knew of Dragon Palace’s existence.

There were relevant clues in Shadow Sect’s true inheritance. But these clues were only superficial clues and were not significant enough. The most valuable content recorded was: Dragon Palace had a restriction that its inheritor must be a dragonman!

Although Fang Yuan wanted to own a rank eight Immortal Gu House, he never had a good opportunity or time. Although he had Bai Ning Bing, it would be difficult to search for Dragon Palace and it would take a great amount of time and energy.

According to the previous situation, although the rank eight Immortal Gu House was strong, were Fang Yuan to take the risk to search for it and end up unable to obtain it, he would quickly be pursued and hunted by Heavenly Court.

The benefits were huge but the risk was even greater, so Fang Yuan had not made a move.

“So Heavenly Court had been secretly searching for Dragon Palace and almost got it.”

Knowing this, Fang Yuan could not help but praise those four Eastern Sea rank eights: Great job!

He did not think for long, Fang Yuan immediately left immemorial white heaven and moved towards Eastern Sea.

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was here and would not be discovered easily, he could deal with it slowly. Dragon Palace’s matter was urgent, he could not let Heavenly Court take it.

This was a rank eight Immortal Gu House and had an unknown dream path Immortal Gu!

Days later, Eastern Sea.

Boom!

Amidst an intense explosion, Gu Immortal Shi Miao spat out a large mouthful of blood while retreating rapidly.

Duke Long gave a loud roar, his body turned into light rays as he charged at Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace.

The distance between the two was rapidly shrinking, but at the crucial moment, Granny Rong moved and blocked Duke Long.

Her whole body was releasing purple gas, she was heavily injured and was pale as paper.

Duke Long’s momentum was ferocious but his pupils shrunk when he saw the purple poisonous air around Granny Rong, he rapidly changed his direction and detoured.

Granny Rong was a poison path Gu Immortal, this purple poisonous air was her trump card and even Duke Long was not willing to touch it.

Granny Rong was not in a good state, over these days of fighting, her loss was the greatest. One of her core Immortal Gu was destroyed, her speed fell greatly and she was forced into an extremely passive state. She had relied on her determination and the help of the other three Gu Immortals to persist till now.

It was very wise of Duke Long to detour around Granny Rong.

Granny Rong could only watch Duke Long with a bitter expression but was unable to give chase.

Among the four rank eights, the other two were still several li away.

Boom!

Duke Long flew above Dragon Palace and slammed at this rank eight Immortal Gu House heavily.

Bam.

The Immortal Gu House fell into the sea, immediately raising an enormous wave.

Dragon Palace acted on its own, it did not fly to the sky again, instead moving deeper into the sea.

Duke Long was about to give chase when suddenly, his body paused and he struck towards the area left of him.

There looked to be nobody to his left, but his ferocious attack was suddenly stopped, it was blocked by a Gu Immortal.

The Gu Immortal revealed his figure and smiled at Duke Long: “As expected of Senior Duke Long, you could see through my disguise.”

Duke Long frowned, sneering: “Song Qi Yuan, you are the first supreme elder of Song clan, a rank eight Gu Immortal, but you actually sneak attacked?”

The Gu Immortal was Song Qi Yuan.

“It seems Eastern Sea’s righteous path is finally making a move. Who else is there, come out now.” Duke Long glanced below at the sea, Dragon Palace gradually disappeared from his sight. He did not give chase, instead hovering in the air while letting out terrifying battle intent.

At the next moment, two more Gu Immortals showed themselves.

One was a middle aged man in blue robe, he was Qing Yue clan’s first supreme elder Qing Yue An.

Another looked to be a young girl with bright eyes, exquisite rainbow clouds coiled around her body. She was Hua clan’s first supreme elder Hua Cai Yun.

“Lord Duke Long...” Hua Cai Yun was just about to speak.

“Enough nonsense!” Duke Long shouted and took the initiative to attack.

Boom boom boom!

Several immortal killer moves were exchanged, the three righteous path rank eights were immediately suppressed and forced back.

“Duke Long is too powerful, he can easily suppress three Eastern Sea rank eights by himself!” Fang Yuan was inwardly shocked, he had transformed into a sea snake and was currently swimming in the sea.

Righteous path rank eights were often stronger than lone rank eight cultivators. This was because they had more exemplary immortal killer moves and ample cultivation resources.

The alliance of these three righteous path rank eights could absolutely win against the four person alliance of Granny Rong, Yang Zi He, Zhang Yin, and Shi Miao.

But they were still not Duke Long’s match.

Duke Long was too ferocious, he was only using transformation path methods even until now, and had not used his most proficient qi path killer moves.

COMMENT

From this, one could see how powerful Purple Mountain True Monarch was, he had actually forced Duke Long to use his signature qi path killer moves.

1“It was not that Purple Mountain True Monarch was weak, but Duke Long was simply too strong!” Fang Yuan looked at the distant Dragon Palace and slowly left the battlefield.

Since Song Qi Yuan, Qing Yue An and others appeared, it meant Eastern Sea’s righteous path had already discussed and made decisions. Among the five regions, Eastern Sea was the richest in resources and thus had the highest number of rank eight Gu Immortals.

“Only three righteous path rank eights have appeared currently... there are definitely more coming.” Fang Yuan decided to bide his time.

Sure enough, like he expected, two more righteous path rank eights showed up and obstructed Dragon Palace.

Zhang Yin, Granny Rong and others quickly came and fought these two righteous path rank eights.

A huge battle erupted under the sea.

Fang Yuan quickly hid in the mud at the bottom of the sea, waiting for a good opportunity to strike.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1691: Exposed

Swoosh—!

Following a sharp sonic boom, Dragon Palace turned into a golden light as it moved towards the sky with an extremely fast speed.

“Where are you going!”

“Die.”

“Want to obstruct me? Not a chance!”

Several Gu Immortals battled while giving chase, each displaying their great might. Intense battles followed the trail of Dragon Palace all along the way.

Wherever it went, mounds crumbled and the sea split, the sky changed colors and countless beings met with calamity, rank six and rank seven Gu Immortals all escaped in fright.

2Only rank eight Gu Immortals had the qualifications to take part in this battle.

The battles of Duke Long, Zhang Yin, Granny Rong, Song Qi Yuan, and other rank eights did not allow rank seven Gu Immortals to interfere. Unless they were the likes of Feng Jiu Ge and Fang Yuan. But now, both Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge had advanced to rank eight.

“Most of the Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals are already participating in the battle, but there are a few who have yet to show themselves.” Fang Yuan was patiently observing from far behind, waiting for a perfect opportunity.

From the time he rushed over to Eastern Sea, over ten days had already gone by. Over these days, the battle between rank eight Gu Immortals was a splendid show with none willing to make concessions. Occasionally, new rank eights would join in while some would temporarily retreat.

They allied sometimes and acted against each other sometimes. As long as anyone neared Dragon Palace, they would be met with the joint attack of everyone else.

Fang Yuan could not find any opportunity to make a move.

But he was extremely patient and was not in the least bit worried.

“Being able to observe the skills of these rank eight Gu Immortals from here is also an enormous gain. This information is very valuable.”

“Duke Long is truly terrifying! In this battle, he is no doubt the strongest, but because of that unknown dream path Immortal Gu in Dragon Palace, the joint attack of other rank eights, as well as being concerned about the safety of Feng Jin Huang, he has not been able to obtain Dragon Palace.”

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with sinister light.

Not just the rank eight Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace, Feng Jin Huang who was beside Duke Long was also his target.

This girl possessed a dream path Immortal Gu and was also Duke Long’s disciple, looking at how Duke Long protected her, her importance could be seen clearly.

But although Fang Yuan had such a scheme, he similarly did not find an opportunity to make a move against Feng Jin Huang!

“A chance, a chance... it will definitely appear.”

“Eastern Sea’s righteous path has clearly already discussed with each other. Someone retreats while another comes in, taking turns to maintain their battle strength and also retain their control of the situation. This is to be on guard against Central Continent and Heavenly Court’s reinforcements.”

“Duke Long has been fighting alone, but he is still the strongest. If there are reinforcements from Heavenly Court, this stalemate will definitely be broken.”

“Even if Heavenly Court does not send reinforcements, the four person team of Granny Rong, Zhang Yin and others won’t be able to last long.”

“Among the three sides, the righteous path is the most stable, the other two sides have the possibility of overturning this balance. But once the balance is broken, there will definitely be a chaotic battle. And this chaos will give me the chance to make a move!”

Fang Yuan was extremely clear about the situation.

But right at this time, there was a sudden explosion in front; Song Qi Yuan was struck and became lightly injured, coughing out a mouthful of blood.

Zhang Yin turned his head around and chuckled: “I have already struck you with fatal dark lightning, chase me if you are not afraid of dying.”

Song Qi Yuan’s defenses were thorough and comprehensive but after getting struck by this move, he got injured. His defensive methods were immediately torn, fatal dark lightning could not be underestimated.

Thereupon, the entire group of pursuers immediately split into two, one group ahead and one group behind.

“Fatal dark lightning is Zhang Yin’s trump card, it has a huge cost to activate, it is formless, colorless and cannot be sensed. It can be arranged in the sea or air, once touched, it will explode. What should we do?” The remaining three rank eight Gu Immortals were also of the righteous path.

“We need to give chase, it will be dangerous for Hua Cai Yun alone.”

“We don’t have time to make a detour, we can only control beast groups to charge through this lightning formation!”

The three righteous path members quickly thought of a way and released their respective ancient desolate beasts.

Song Qi Yuan waved his hand, these ancient desolate beasts’ auras immediately soared to the level of immemorial desolate beasts.

Boom boom boom!

The false immemorial desolate beasts could trigger the fatal dark lightning traps.

These ancient desolate beasts constantly died to pave a path for the three righteous path rank eights.

The three rank eights quickly moved ahead through the path.

“This is a little troublesome, let’s take a chance.” Fang Yuan was uneasy and wanted to cross the lightning formation as well.

Boom!

He was immediately struck by the fatal dark lightning, but did not dare use reverse flow protection seal and could only endure the damage forcibly.

“This dark lightning is truly troublesome, it is better to make a detour.” Fang Yuan coughed out a mouthful of blood, changing his original intention.

Boom!

He was struck again.

“Ridiculous, this fatal dark lightning actually spread out this far, its range is too wide.” Fang Yuan clenched his teeth and swallowed his blood.

Boom boom boom!

Fang Yuan continued to trigger fatal dark lightning traps, his luck path methods seemed to have no use.

After about eight minutes, Fang Yuan forcibly endured the pain as he caught up to the rank eight Gu Immortals’ battle.

“Come and face my killer move, red pestilence insignia!” Granny Rong shouted and used all her strength to shoot out a red insignia.

Hua Cai Yun snorted as she pushed forward her hands, sending out a lump of cloud.

This cloud was pitch black and was like an inverted pot, its shape was peculiar. It quickly moved and absorbed the red insignia.

Granny Rong’s expression immediately changed, she had lost control of the red pestilence insignia.

The cloud continued to move as it tossed the red pestilence insignia away.

Hua Cai Yun said proudly: “Your red pestilence insignia is useless against my pot tossing cloud! It will only be tossed away by me, I will never get hit.”

“The f*ck!” Fang Yuan cursed in his mind. By some weird coincidence, the red pestilence insignia had been tossed towards him.

3Dodge!

Fang Yuan was disguised as a sea snake and could not casually increase his speed, so he barely managed to dodge.

The red pestilence insignia flew far away and exploded, the surrounding sea area met with calamity, living beings met their end with countless sea organisms turning into mush from the intense poison.

Fang Yuan was also struck by the move, he endured the rank eight killer move and turned into a sea snake corpse, continuing his disguise.

It was not easy for Fang Yuan to stalk from behind, he was constantly hit by the splattering effects of the moves in this battle. Fortunately, he remained far behind and with the rank eight Gu Immortals all paying attention to Dragon Palace and each other, they had not discovered him.

However, this did not last long, Fang Yuan’s identity was finally exposed several days later.

It was a rank eight lone cultivator who found him, he was Yang Jun and had been chasing after Dragon Palace in his Immortal Gu House Fragrant Treasure Horse Chariot when he discovered Fang Yuan by chance.

Fang Yuan struck him and immediately escaped.

This movement finally attracted the attention of other rank eights, but Fang Yuan had left immediately. Even if Duke Long wanted to do anything, it was too late.

Central Continent, Infallible blessed land.

The radiance of the formation disappeared.

After inspecting for a while, Fairy Zi Wei nodded in satisfaction and thought: “With this formation here, who can destroy Infallible blessed land? Even if Fang Yuan came here, he would also be trapped.”

Fairy Zi Wei was confident in this formation.

A bright light suddenly descended from the sky and arrived in front of her, revealing its true form.

“Greetings to Lady Zi Wei.” It was Feng Jiu Ge. He already had rank eight cultivation now and his tone carried a trace of being on equal status with Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei smiled: “Feng Jiu Ge, I called you for one matter. Dragon Palace has appeared, Lord Duke Long is chasing after it but has encountered obstruction from Eastern Sea’s rank eights. Go to Eastern Sea, reinforce Lord Duke Long, protect your daughter Feng Jin Huang, and help my Heavenly Court take Dragon Palace.”

Feng Jiu Ge was silent for a moment but rejected in the end: “Huang Er is protected by Lord Duke Long, she won’t be in any danger. But... when I advanced to rank eight, I gained an inspiration and wanted to create a new song. I want to enter the River of Time now to observe the different types of worldly affairs throughout the eras, I want to experience the journey of myriad beings’ lives.”

Fairy Zi Wei was dazed for a moment: “Alright then, guard the River of Time in place of Li Huang.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1692: Working With Longevity Heaven

Eastern Sea, late at night.

Stars filled the sky, the calm sea suddenly turned turbulent with fierce waves.

Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace charged out of the sea, flying into the sky rapidly.

There was a rank eight Gu Immortal waiting in the sky, it was Qing Yue clan’s first supreme elder, Qing Yue An.

“Puff!” He muttered lightly as he waved his arms rapidly.

Immediately the phantom image of a mountain descended from the sky, the mountain ranges extended far and beyond, encircling the entire Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Mountain Ranges!

Dragon Palace’s movement was obstructed, it crashed into the phantom mountain like it had truly slammed into a solid one.

“Hmph!”

There was a cold snort as a rank eight Gu Immortal charged out of Dragon Palace, it was rank eight lone immortal Shi Miao.

Shi Miao spat out a mouthful of acid water, this acid water did not look impressive but it grew with the wind, turning into a huge wave after several tens of feet.

The wave crashed into the phantom mountain and had an incredible effect, the mountain started melting like snow exposed to the sun.

The acid wave opened a path for Dragon Palace as it nearly got out of the encirclement, but Song Qi Yuan arrived right at this moment.

His aura burst out and grand light pillars shined in all directions, dissolving the waves and also causing Dragon Palace to shake, when it landed on Shi Miao, it felt like he was hit by a lightning bolt.

After this, Song Qi Yuan did not stop, he raised his head and pointed with his finger.

A sharp light shot out like lightning, vanishing instantly.

Far away, Fang Yuan who was using star eyes Immortal Gu to observe the battlefield felt his vision going dark, he could not see anything anymore.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned dark, he knew that the star that he had refined using star eyes Immortal Gu was destroyed by Song Qi Yuan!

“Rank seven star eyes Immortal Gu might be unique, but against a rank eight Gu Immortal, it is too weak, not only can it be discovered, it can also be stopped.

Song Qi Yuan’s immortal killer move is even more profound, it moved along the starlight and found the star of origin to destroy it.”

“Even though the star was destroyed, star eyes Immortal Gu suffered no injuries, it can be used again after further preparation.”

Even though these Eastern Sea Gu Immortals could not defeat Duke Long, they were still rank eight with brilliant methods, they could not be underestimated.

Earlier, Zhang Yin’s fatal dark lightning, Hua Cai Yun’s pot tossing cloud, Yang Jun discovering Fang Yuan who was in familiar face disguise, and Song Qi Yuan’s attack that destroyed Star Eyes’ star, they proved this point.

But even so, Fang Yuan did not want to give up.

“Dragon Palace is very important, it is far more important than I had expected!”

“It is a rank eight Immortal Gu House that contains dream path Immortal Gu. These days, in this battle, it displayed very powerful offensive and defensive methods, if I can get it, I will obtain peak rank eight battle strength!”

Fang Yuan’s main body chased while heaven form killer move stayed in immemorial white heaven, dealing with Beast Calamity Grotto-heaven and finding the hiding spot of adaptation Immortal Gu.

Heaven form killer move was rank nine and extremely mobile, even within immemorial white heaven, there were few existences which could threaten it.

Because of the earth vein’s turbulence, the Gu Immortals of the five regions were in chaos.

Especially, Eastern Sea, the emergence of Dragon Palace caused a battle among rank eights, it was truly spectacular.

On this day, Northern Plains’ Longevity Heaven also started to tremor intensely.

Bzzz bzzz bzzz....

Orange-yellow light flickered endlessly, enveloping the sky of Longevity Heaven.

Next, an aura started from an extremely weak state and grew rapidly, soon filling the world and causing fear in everyone.

Such a change had already attracted the attention of Five Elements Grandmaster, Bull Demon, and Flower Lady.

Five Elements Grandmaster was a lone cultivator of Northern Plains, but after getting trapped by Longevity Heaven, he felt despair after struggling and decided to join Longevity Heaven, he was not stationed in Longevity Heaven permanently.

Bull Demon and Flower Lady were a duo that took the role of North Desolation Immortal together.

Bull Demon was a muscular brute with a thick beard and a thunderous voice, he was extremely tall and strong, having a powerful aura. Flower Lady was a little girl with a flower on her head, she sat on the muscular man’s shoulder, giggling as her crystal-like eyes flickered with innocence.

“What happened?” Five Elements Grandmaster was very uncertain.

Bull Demon and Flower Lady looked at each other, the latter giggled: “West Desolation Immortal Bing Sai Chuan has awakened!”

Longevity Heaven was a bit different from Heavenly Court, it had Four Desolation Immortals and Eight Extremities, a total of twelve positions. Among which, the Four Desolation Immortals were only meant for rank eight Gu Immortals, while the Eight Extremities needed at least rank seven cultivation level, and they had to be elites among rank sevens.

“Bing Sai Chuan?” Five Elements Grandmaster’s brows rose, he felt that the name was familiar but he could not get more information from just that name.

At this moment, there was a loud roar, ripples of light flickered in the sky, rainbows extended like rivers as they pierced through the horizons.

A figure walked down from the river, he had a tall body and delicate face, nevertheless, his eyes were extremely sharp and icy, emitting a cold gaze. From his right ear to the left corner of his lips, there was an ugly scar, it was flickering with white light, while emitting the coldness of a thousand year profound ice.

Seeing this face, Five Elements Grandmaster’s eyes burst out with bright light as he became deeply shocked: “I remember now, this is the Bing Sai Chuan who was born in Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s generation, he was a rank eight legend, a time path great expert, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had tried three times before subduing him. He did not die, he is actually the West Desolation Immortal of Longevity Heaven?!”

West Desolation Immortal was born in the same generation as Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, even though he lost, it was not a disgrace. After all, be they Immortal Venerable or Demon Venerable, they were invincible in the world with no equal.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had to make three attempts to subdue this West Desolation Immortal, it showed that he had great strength!

“Greetings, Senior West Desolation.” Bull Demon and Flower Lady quickly went to greet him while Five Elements Grandmaster followed after with an expression of reverence.

West Desolation Immortal Bing Sai Chuan’s seniority was simply too high.

Bing Sai Chuan went up to the three, he nodded after looking around: “I am awake but I do not have much lifespan, time is limited. Give me the information of the current world, I need to know about it.”

Longevity Heaven had very comprehensive information.

They had detailed information of the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the reappearance of Dragon Palace in Eastern Sea, and the Refinement Path Convention of Central Continent’s Heavenly Court.

"Eighty-Eight True Yang Building truly collapsed..." Bing Sai Chuan sighed deeply.

"It was Fang Yuan, that demon was reborn using Spring Autumn Cicada, he is rank eight already." Five Elements Grandmaster gritted his teeth.

Bing Sai Chuan laughed loudly as he said: "Good job, Fang Yuan, he is truly a demon, he did a great job in destroying Eighty-Eight True Yang Building!"

Five Elements Grandmaster was stunned: "What?"

Bull Demon looked at Flower Lady: "..."

Flower Lady looked at Bull Demon: "..."

The three immortals were completely shocked.

Next, Bing Sai Chuan added: "Fate Gu is about to be repaired, it seems that this Refinement Path Convention is the final one. There is no time, we have to contact Fang Yuan now and make an alliance!"

The gazes of Five Elements Grandmaster, Bull Demon, and Flower Lady changed abruptly.

Was this Bing Sai Chuan really the West Desolation Immortal? Could he possibly be a fake one?

"Longevity Heaven wants to cooperate with me?" Fang Yuan received this message and became quite shocked.

It was easy to contact him, Lang Ya land spirit could do it.

Bing Sai Chuan used Lang Ya land spirit to contact Fang Yuan, he spoke openly: "I am West Desolation Immortal, the current leader of Longevity Heaven. Fang Yuan, you are an otherworldly demon but you have yet to obtain Red Lotus' true inheritance? If Heavenly Court repairs fate Immortal Gu, it will not benefit you at all. Similarly, Longevity Heaven does not want to see Heavenly Court succeed. If they repair fate Gu, it would be too helpful to Heavenly Court, it would also go against the luck path of my Ancestor Giant Sun. Let us forget our past conflicts and resist the strong enemy together!"

Fang Yuan was quiet for a while before asking: "You are?"

Bing Sai Chuan!

Soon, Fang Yuan learned who the other party was.

He should be the real deal.

Fang Yuan sighed at Longevity Heaven's foundation, they even concealed a rank eight legend like Bing Sai Chuan, he had only appeared now.

And in Longevity Heaven, among the Four Desolation Immortals, East Desolation Immortal had the highest status, the great Bing Sai Chuan was only second place?

Who in the world was the East Desolation Immortal?

Longevity Heaven's change of attitude made Fang Yuan deeply surprised. But to think of it, against the terrifying Heavenly Court, it was possible for Fang Yuan to work with them.

After all, he was a rank eight Gu Immortal now, the leader of Shadow Sect who possessed deep dream path research results, his name shook the world!

A while ago, Heavenly Court even infiltrated Northern Plains and attacked Lang Ya blessed land, the two sides had immense conflicts.

The saying goes, the enemy of an enemy is my friend!

If they could cooperate, Fang Yuan naturally wanted to work with Longevity Heaven.

After all, Heavenly Court was the true enemy.

But how could they trust each other?

To gain Fang Yuan’s trust, Longevity Heaven opened its treasury and traded immortal materials with Fang Yuan, they could even exchange Immortal Gu.

From this step, they seemed to be very sincere.

“Since we are cooperating, Lord Bing Sai Chuan, why don’t we work together to fight for Dragon Palace?” Fang Yuan had a thought as he initiated.

“Good idea!” Bing Sai Chuan was in full agreement, any person with a brain could tell that Dragon Palace had immense value.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1693: Zi Wei Borrows Gu

Since rebirth, Fang Yuan’s strength had been growing rapidly, it was rising at a shocking speed.

Especially in recent times, he advanced to rank eight and possessed countless Immortal Gu, it was truly a rare situation.

However, he was still not strong enough to contend for Dragon Palace.

Among the rank eight Gu Immortals fighting after Dragon Palace, there was Duke Long with pseudo-Immortal Venerable battle strength and multiple Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals, it could be said that Eastern Sea’s strongest immortals were here.

Fang Yuan had too little time since his rise, against the peak experts of a region, against Duke Long, trying to snatch an Immortal Gu House that had the power to retaliate was just too difficult for him.

But Fang Yuan knew that he could not watch on the sidelines.

If Heavenly Court obtains Dragon Palace, they would grow even stronger. Especially that mysterious dream path Immortal Gu, it was not simple! It might have been created naturally by this world itself, it was the seed that the heavens had planted into Eastern Sea to start the era of dream path.

At this time, drawing in Longevity Heaven’s strength would make the situation even more chaotic.

The more chaotic it was, the more Fang Yuan would be able to take advantage of the situation.

He was rank eight now, but against Eastern Sea’s rank eight Gu Immortals, he did not dare to be careless. The foundation of rank eight Gu Immortals was immense, they would easily hit him with their killer moves if he was not careful.

As for Duke Long, Fang Yuan knew clearly that he was not his match. After all, Fang Yuan had personally witnessed how Duke Long had fought Purple Mountain True Monarch.

“Duke Long is protecting Feng Jin Huang, he is not going all-out. I have not seen him use any qi path methods yet. Even so, with just his transformation path methods, he is already the strongest person here, he is resisting almost everyone alone.”

“Bai Ning Bing and the rest are still cultivating on the Red Lotus island, even if they have the help of future self, they would only have peak rank seven battle strength.”

“It is a pity my incomplete Immortal Gu House was destroyed, if I had it, after this period of development, it would have rank eight battle strength, it would be very useful to me.”

“If I can steal adaptation Immortal Gu from Beast Calamity Grotto-heaven, I would be able to unleash myriad beings assimilation transformation, I will temporarily gain great battle strength. It is a pity that we do not have time, heaven form is still investigating.”

Fang Yuan felt some regret.

But reality was like this, not everything could go smoothly and appropriately.

Dragon Palace would not tire, Eastern Sea’s rank eight Gu Immortals had not fully shown up, while Duke Long was waiting for Heavenly Court reinforcements, there was still some time before they truly fought for the Immortal Gu House’s ownership.

Fang Yuan was also concerned about Longevity Heaven’s attitude change. But even if they had ill intentions, luring them into the battle was much more useful for Fang Yuan than the potential threat.

With this move, he could try to obtain Dragon Palace, damage Heavenly Court, and probe Longevity Heaven, it could achieve many goals.

But a few days later, Bing Sai Chuan did not arrive, instead, he obtained some crucial information — Heavenly Court had found a stone lotus island in the River of Time, they had full control of it now!

Bing Sai Chuan suggested: “You have Spring Autumn Cicada, you are the rightful inheritor of Red Lotus’ true inheritance. If Heavenly Court takes away your fortuitous encounter, you will suffer while they grow stronger. Red Lotus Demon Venerable was able to damage fate Gu, very likely, his true inheritance also contains the way for us to destroy fate Gu for good!”

Bing Sai Chuan’s words had no issue, he did not know that Fang Yuan had already obtained one of the Red Lotus true inheritances.

Fang Yuan did not have any method to destroy fate Gu, but what if the other Red Lotus true inheritance had it?

It was possible.

Of course, there was a possibility that Bing Sai Chuan gave false information to trap Fang Yuan.

Right now, Fang Yuan had two choices, he could stay and observe Dragon Palace, or go to the River of Time and contest for Red Lotus' true inheritance with Heavenly Court.

The former was filled with chaos and danger, so was the latter, the risks were great.

Fang Yuan sensed acutely that this choice was crucial. He started to think, what was the best course of action in this situation?

Southern Border.

Virtue Paradise.

Two rank eight Gu Immortals walked side by side and ascended the mountain, their auras were completely concealed, resembling mortals.

The one on the left wore a grey hemp garment, it was very simple and plain, but his muscular body could not be concealed. He wore a conical hat that was large and wide, it covered his face under the shadow, concealing his appearance.

It was the famous current generation Paradise Earth inheritor in Southern Border's Gu Immortal world — Lu Wei Yin.

The one on the right was a woman, she had a graceful figure with hair that extended to her waist, and was adorned in a beautiful purple robe that was mysterious and elegant. Her eyes were like deep pools, with a sense of sorrow shrouding her face.

It was Heavenly Court's leader, the person who had Star Constellation Chessboard, the number one wisdom path great expert in the current world — Fairy Zi Wei!

Fairy Zi Wei had actually quietly appeared in Southern Border and met with Lu Wei Yin, what was the reason behind it?

Along the way, Lu Wei Yin and Fairy Zi Wei spoke, even though there were few words, the atmosphere was amicable.

As they walked, a small red pavilion emerged from the dense greenery, Lu Wei Yin pointed at it as he said: "Lady Zi Wei, it has been a long journey, let's go rest a bit in that pavilion."

"Good idea." Fairy Zi Wei smiled as she walked.

The two walked into the red pavilion, there were stone benches inside, instead of sitting down, Fairy Zi Wei walked towards the edge and looked at the wide view of mountains and rivers.

This pavilion was built at the edge of a cliff, it had an extremely good view.

Fairy Zi Wei looked outside, Virtue Paradise was filled with tall mountains and clean rivers, there were treehouses and villages around the mountains, lots of commotion could be heard from chickens and dogs, there were columns of smoke rising from houses, it was a serene and tranquil atmosphere.

In the sky, there were many floating mountains. These mountains were made from float soil and could stay in the sky, there were many specialties in each mountain, their environments varied. Some had long green vines that extended like hair. Some had drizzles and beautiful rainbows. Some had waterfalls with huge crashing torrents that gathered in huge pools.

Cranes flew, apes shrieked, there was lots of life and immortal materials everywhere, desolate beasts and plants were abundant in numbers.

The thing that Fairy Zi Wei noticed was that the mushroommen and humans lived harmoniously in the villages, kids played together, husbands and wives cared for each other, children were also filial towards their parents.

“It is truly a paradise! Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable wanted to create such a world, but humanity is the ruler of the world, how could variant humans possibly be equal with us? But even so, I admire Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. Because he had contributed his whole life towards this dream, he had never sought benefits for himself.” Fairy Zi Wei said slowly.

Heavenly Court belonged to humans, its ideology was to rule over the variant humans, but Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable wanted equality for all, in his opinion, be it variant humans or pure humans, all life in this world should be equal.

Because of their ideological differences, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable did not enter Heavenly Court, he created his paradises in the five regions and tried to establish the utopia of his ideals.

Lu Wei Yin nodded: “Even though our ideologies are different, our attitude towards the demonic path that harms the world is the same. Lady Zi Wei is here to borrow Gu, if you are borrowing other Gu, forget it. But this benevolence Gu can benefit the world, why would I stop you? However, if outsiders want to borrow Gu, according to the Immortal Venerable’s rules, you need to walk and ascend to the top of the mountain to gain the qualification to borrow Gu. This journey is difficult, the higher your cultivation level, the worse it is. Please do understand, Fairy Zi Wei.”

“This mountain is truly not easy to ascend, but I understand Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s intention. Getting up this mountain will benefit me quite a bit too.” Fairy Zi Wei said softly as she smiled, light flickered in her eyes: “Alright, let’s continue.”

River of Time.

Heavenly Court’s four Immortal Gu Houses stood in different positions as they surrounded an immortal formation.

The atmosphere was heated among the Gu Immortals.

“Lord Feng Jiu Ge, we have already encircled this stone lotus island, we can explore it already.” Shang Xunzi said.

Feng Jiu Ge nodded, he originally wanted to use the River of Time to solidify and strengthen his inspiration regarding the song of destiny. To think that after entering the River of Time for this short period, the stone lotus island showed up and became besieged by Heavenly Court.

“The stone lotus islands were created by Red Lotus Demon Venerable, I should go ahead and see the methods of this world-shocking Demon Venerable.” Feng Jiu Ge was about to move and enter the immortal formation.

Boom!

With a loud sound, the Immortal Gu House that he was in shook intensely.

“Enemy!”

“Who is so daring as to attack us Heavenly Court?!”

The immortals were furious and shocked.

Who else but Fang Yuan could it be?

Heavenly Court’s group was slightly dazed, someone started to shout: “Demon, you managed to escape last time, but you actually dared to return! Then accept your death.”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, he had thought about it for a moment before deciding to come to the River of Time, and trying to get Red Lotus’ true inheritance.

After all, Dragon Palace’s scene was chaotic, all the forces had not gone all-out yet, there was too much uncertainty.

COMMENT

But at the stone lotus island, if he did not come, Heavenly Court would definitely get it. Fang Yuan had Spring Autumn Cicada, his advantage was huge when it came to the stone lotus islands.

“Fang Yuan, we meet again.” Feng Jiu Ge’s voice reverberated within the Immortal Gu House, there were deep emotions in his voice.

Fang Yuan’s expression focused, it seemed like in this battle, he was going to fight Feng Jiu Ge once again!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1694: Contesting For Red Lotus’ True Inheritance

“Fang Yuan, we meet again.” Feng Jiu Ge’s voice reverberated from within the Immortal Gu House, there were deep emotions in his tone.

“It has been a long time indeed.” Fang Yuan sighed.

Years had passed, Fang Yuan met with Feng Jiu Ge again, it was like a meeting of old friends, their words had no animosity in them.

2But they were not friends after all, after that brief talk, they went silent.

1At this moment, there was only the sound of waves in the River of Time, surging forward with continuous motion.

Feng Jiu Ge still remembered the first time he met Fang Yuan, back then, he was still not an immortal, he had obtained Hu Immortal blessed land with the status of a mortal. But now, he was renowned in the world, he had rank eight cultivation level and his speed of growth was rare even in history, it was truly shocking to the world.

Feng Jiu Ge was also rank eight with brilliant battle results, his strength was no longer the same as before, he had rank eight fate armor Immortal Gu, and because of his Dao Guardian status, he was heavily supported by Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan had once saved Feng Jiu Ge’s life, he had returned the favor as well. Because of their different identities, Feng Jiu Ge had failed in many attempts to pursue Fang Yuan. They had fought many times and gained a deep understanding of each other. Both were wary of each other, but they appreciated the other person’s capabilities and talent immensely.

1“Fang Yuan, you lost to us once, you managed to escape last time in the River of Time, to think that you would dare to come back and court death!” A voice broke the temporary silence.

The person who spoke had starry blue armor, he had a rough appearance and his body was strong, he emitted a powerful rank eight aura and was standing on Shark Flow Lever.

Fang Yuan took a look and discerned that this was a person who had participated in the battle last time.

Even though last time, he did not know who this was, he had obtained information already. This person had woken up from Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard, he was an experienced rank eight star path expert, Xing Ye Wang.

Fang Yuan inspected Heavenly Court’s group again.

The three remaining Xunzi occupied Present and Past Pavilion, they looked at Fang Yuan with deep hatred, their eyes were spewing fire. Last time, Fang Yuan used time cutting edge and killed Xun Guo Zi, causing their revival methods to fail, only three were left now.

Rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Ye had the same status as Xing Ye Wang, he controlled Eternal Yacht with a grim expression.

Xing Ye Wang stood on Shark Flow Lever, looking at Fang Yuan with deep battle intent.

Meanwhile, Feng Jiu Ge stayed in Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform, he had now shown up yet.

“Four time path Immortal Gu Houses, three rank eight Gu Immortals, as well as many rank seven Gu Immortals including three of the Xunzi, and this super immortal formation...” Fang Yuan evaluated their strength.

On the whole, it was not bad.

Because Heavenly Court had not sent too many people here. But thinking about it, Central Continent’s earth veins were moving, other than maintaining control, Heavenly Court placed all its attention on repairing rank nine fate Gu, a lot of manpower and resources were expended for it.

From Heavenly Court’s perspective, Fang Yuan was not their main enemy, in their overall plan, Fang Yuan was not a part of it.

Thus, Fairy Zi Wei had once offered to recruit Fang Yuan back in Lang Ya blessed land.

Heavenly Court’s goal was the entire world, the great era of dream path, and to become the ruler of the world.

This was the grandness of Heavenly Court!

Thus, Heavenly Court’s focus had always been to fully restore fate Gu!

Moreover, last time Fang Yuan escaped barely with his life. Afterwards, Fairy Zi Wei used Heavenly Court’s foundation to buy all sorts of time path materials and disrupted Fang Yuan’s growth.

He had hidden his tracks and even when the earth veins moved and countless Immortal Gu and immortal materials appeared, he did not show up.

Due to all these reasons, Heavenly Court had not increased their numbers in the River of Time.

“Of course, they might have some groups lying in ambush?” Fang Yuan smiled coldly, regardless of what they did, as long as they fought, Heavenly Court would summon them anyway.

Roar!

With a huge sound, Fang Yuan used familiar face to turn into the immemorial year monkey again.

The monkey body was huge like a mountain, it pounced towards Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform, that was where Feng Jiu Ge was.

“Such a courageous demon, let me fight you!” Xing Ye Wang moved Shark Flow Lever as he intercepted with great speed.

Fang Yuan moved rapidly above the water, he pointed his finger as immortal killer move spring scissors flew out.

The scissors were green in color and moved agilely, even though it was huge like an elephant, it shrunk when it got in front of Shark Flow Lever.

Xing Ye Wang was a little shocked, he knew about spring scissors, but to think there was such a transformation?

The mini spring scissors flew down and became large again when it got to the shark lever of Shark Flow Lever.

Crack.

With a snip, the scissors cut and a huge shark head fell off.

Crack.

With another snip, another shark lost its head.

Xing Ye Wang was very shocked, he quickly moved Shark Flow Lever aside, he could not dare continue trying to obstruct Fang Yuan, he needed to know how to handle spring scissors.

After stopping Xing Ye Wang, Fang Yuan moved quick as the wind, arriving in front of Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform.

Within the Immortal Gu House, Feng Jiu Ge had a plain expression as he controlled it calmly.

Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform burst out with a dazzling light, stopping Fang Yuan's advancement as if he had crashed into a metal wall.

Fang Yuan who was in the immemorial year monkey form laughed as he punched with his huge fists.

The huge fists landed on Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and caused it to shake, rubbles flew everywhere as it got pushed back.

"Fang Yuan got stronger again!"

1"That's right, he has at least modified spring scissors and winter coat. The former can change sizes and become hard to guard against, while the latter has fused with his immemorial year monkey transformation, his monkey fur is like frost and his skin is like ice, his defenses are extremely thick."

The three Xunzi guarded Present and Past Pavilion, they talked to each other with lingering shock.

Ever since Fang Yuan escaped pitifully last time while exposing all his trump cards, Heavenly Court had deduced all sorts of killer moves that he had. But to think that in this battle, all of their deductions were outdated, Fang Yuan's modifications were far beyond Heavenly Court's expectations, they were greatly caught off-guard.

Not just that, Fang Yuan had also made many deductions on the four Immortal Gu Houses. Looking at how he dealt with Shark Flow Lever and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform, it was evident.

Fang Yuan's wisdom path attainment was not low, he also had the help of wisdom Gu which Heavenly Court did not manage to deduce.

Fang Yuan, who had the light of wisdom and sufficient intel, made great gains when he deduced matters regarding the four time path Immortal Gu Houses!

In the previous battle, Fang Yuan exposed his trump cards, but at the same time, Heavenly Court also expended their trump cards, Fang Yuan could learn a lot of details about them.

It was not easy for Gu Immortals to create immortal killer moves, modifications were even harder. Then what about Immortal Gu Houses?

Immortal Gu Houses were the collective body of multiple immortal killer moves.

Thus, modifying Immortal Gu Houses was even tougher.

Fang Yuan could modify immortal killer moves because he had wisdom Gu. Heavenly Court wanted to modify Immortal Gu Houses but they did not have wisdom Gu, the difficulty was even higher, thus, these four Immortal Gu Houses did not have many changes, they were also similar to before.

Fang Yuan lost last time but he gained lots of information, he could deal with these Immortal Gu Houses now. This was also why he gave up on Dragon Palace for now and chose to target the River of Time.

"The northern corner is destroyed, the Gu worms cannot be retrieved."

"Three layers of autumn light shields have been broken, only one is left!"

"Immortal Gu Autumn Light has cracks on it..."

The Gu Immortals inside Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform reported, they had nervous expressions.

Feng Jiu Ge was the person in charge, he still had a calm expression.

He did not attempt to fight personally, because he knew that only relying on his sound path cultivation, he could not make useful efforts in this River of Time. Only the time path Immortal Gu House could resist Fang Yuan.

Feng Jiu Ge thought to himself: “Fang Yuan can suppress two Immortal Gu Houses, but Heavenly Court still has another two. This battle has just begun!”

Fang Yuan’s barrage of attacks made him pant loudly, even though Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform was shattered on the outside, its foundation was unaffected, it only lost a large number of mortal Gu. Those rank seven Gu Immortals inside the Immortal Gu House were trying to repair it rapidly.

After the initial burst, his attacks got softer, the Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform got past the initial stage as Fang Yuan’s ferocious attacks started to weaken. Xing Ye Wang had already repaired Shark Flow Lever after facing spring scissors killer move, it charged over again.

At the same time, Present and Past Pavilion and Eternal Yacht came from the left and right, forming a complete web.

“Fang Yuan, I want to see how you will deal with four Immortal Gu Houses together!” Xing Ye Wang shouted loudly.

Fang Yuan looked at his encirclement as his eyes shined with bright light, he smiled and shouted loudly: “Bing Sai Chuan, are you still not going to act?”

Before he finished his words, Bing Sai Chuan appeared, standing behind Present and Past Pavilion.

“Who?!” The three Xunzi were very shocked, because Present and Past Pavilion was most specialized in investigation, they were able to detect Fang Yuan but not Bing Sai Chuan.

Bing Sai Chuan roared as he pushed with both palms, immediately, cold winds blew and frost energy surged, covering the whole of Present and Past Pavilion.

At the next moment, the entire Present and Past Pavilion became sealed in a transparent profound ice, the three Xunzi were unmoving inside, a frightened expression frozen on their faces.

On Eternal Yacht, rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Ye who had a calm expression showed a change of attitude: “This immortal killer move is... immediate time freeze! You are the time path great expert of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s era, Bing Sai Chuan!”

Bing Sai Chuan cultivated time path and was most skilled at freezing time, his time path killer moves were able to imitate the effects of ice path. He was a rank eight legend, his battle strength was at its peak, on the same level as Li Huang.

1But right now, Li Huang was deployed elsewhere, in exchange for Feng Jiu Ge who had just reached rank eight. Regardless, this was the River of Time, even if Li Huang was here, without using the time path Immortal Gu House to fight against Bing Sai Chuan, he would not be his match.

Bing Sai Chuan waited for a long time before striking with great impact! He targeted the weakest enemy, directly sealing a time path Immortal Gu House and preventing it from joining the fight again.

“Amazing!” Fang Yuan could not help but praise.

Bing Sai Chuan looked at Qing Ye: “I am Longevity Heaven’s Bing Sai Chuan, to think that someone of this generation recognized me.”

As he said that, he smiled warmly but did not act mildly, he attacked the rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Ye who was on Eternal Yacht.

Fang Yuan had the help of Bing Sai Chuan, they managed to suppress the remaining three Immortal Gu Houses that Heavenly Court possessed!

At the next moment, a fifth time path Immortal Gu House appeared.

This was a gatehouse with a simple but elegant structure, its supporting pillars were bright red in color, it was quite auspicious. There were two dazzling words written on its entrance plaque — Year End.

Rank seven time path Immortal Gu House — Year End Gatehouse!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1695: Contesting For Dragon Palace

Year End Gatehouse suddenly appeared in the River of Time, the side that got shocked was Heavenly Court instead of Fang Yuan’s group.

This was because Heavenly Court only had four time path Immortal Gu Houses stationed here, this fifth time path Immortal Gu House Year End Gatehouse came from Northern Plains, it was owned by the Huang Jin tribes.

“Since when did an Immortal Gu House enter?”

“Oh no, what is it trying to do to the river suppression lotus sealing formation?”

“Quick, stop it!!”

Heavenly Court’s side shouted, even rank eight Gu Immortals showed shock on their faces.

Bing Sai Chuan laughed loudly, frost energy oozed out of his body, he slammed with both palms as Eternal Yacht was sent to the bottom of the river.

Fang Yuan shouted loudly, he mustered his strength and attacked Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform, raining down punches like a flurry of meteors, forcing the latter to retreat continuously.

Present and Past Pavilion was sealed, it had sunk into the river, vanishing entirely.

Xing Ye Wang who was on Shark Flow Lever had an ashen expression, he tried to stop Year End Gatehouse but it was too late.

As the immortals watched, Year End Gatehouse got close to the river suppression lotus sealing formation as the gatehouse started to shine in a pure white light.

Next, a voice could be heard from within: “Take a good look, this is my five elements profound light!”

Ringggggggggg!

There was a loud sound as a mystical five colored light shot out of the gatehouse, landing on the river suppression lotus sealing formation.

The five colored lights resembled five river currents that merged and weaved together, melting the layers of the river suppression lotus sealing formation, causing a huge hole in an instant!

“Quick, repair the formation!”

“What method is this, the river suppression lotus sealing formation was completely powerless against it?!”

The rank seven Gu Immortals controlling the super immortal formation were furious and shocked.

Feng Jiu Ge’s pupils shrunk, he recognized it: “That must be Northern Plains’ rank eight lone immortal Five Elements Grandmaster! This person cultivates formation path and mimics the five paths of metal, wood, water, fire, earth, he is a formation path great grandmaster. He was actually recruited by Longevity Heaven!”

After using this move, Five Elements Grandmaster panted heavily, his aura diminished until it became extremely weak.

His five elements profound light was most skilled in breaking immortal formations, he had prepared this move for a long time, once it was unleashed, half of the river suppression lotus sealing formation was destroyed, it was on the brink of destruction.

Of course, this was because Fang Yuan had given Longevity Heaven crucial information.

Fang Yuan had a deeper understanding of this river suppression lotus sealing formation, after all, he was locked in and had broken out of it personally.

With this intel, Five Elements Grandmaster was able to modify his five elements profound light to counter this river suppression lotus sealing formation!

Once the formation was broken, the stone lotus island inside became exposed before everyone’s eyes.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily as he jumped up.

Boom!

He kicked hard and stomped Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform into the river, creating a huge wave.

Next, he shot out like a cannonball, flying into the formation, towards the stone lotus island.

The Gu Immortals in the river suppression lotus sealing formation were flustered, they worked up a sweat trying to stabilize the formation and prevent it from collapsing. If this super immortal formation broke, its controllers would face huge backlash. These Gu Immortals were also trying to save their own lives.

The formation’s controllers were too busy with their own matters, they could only watch as Fang Yuan went in.

“Red Lotus’ true inheritance!” Fang Yuan looked at the stone lotus island as his eyes flashed with a bright light. The Spring Autumn Cicada inside time path clone’s aperture was shaking, right now, Spring Autumn Cicada was rank seven and had Fang Yuan’s personal immortal killer move to discern if the stone lotus island was real.

It was the real deal!

In the previous Red Lotus true inheritance, Fang Yuan made great gains, he was lifted out of his difficult situation. If he could obtain this Red Lotus true inheritance as well, how much would he grow?

“Fang Yuan, don’t think of leaving!” At this moment, Xing Ye Wang shouted as he moved Shark Flow Lever and attacked Fang Yuan’s back.

“Scram!” At the crucial moment, Bing Sai Chuan appeared, blocking Shark Flow Lever.

“Fang Yuan, quickly go get Red Lotus true inheritance!” Bing Sai Chuan fought as he said to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan looked at Bing Sai Chuan deeply, it seemed that Longevity Heaven was very sincere about cooperating! He got closer to the stone lotus island without stopping.

“Don’t think about it!” Rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Ye who was inside Eternal Yacht went around Bing Sai Chuan and Xing Ye Wang, going towards Fang Yuan.

“Want to chase him? Hehe, get past me first.” Year End Gatehouse suddenly appeared abruptly, blocking Qing Ye’s path.

Qing Ye frowned but laughed coldly: “My Eternal Yacht is the fastest, it can ride the waves of the River of Time, how can you Year End Gatehouse stop me? Hmm?!”

Suddenly, Qing Ye’s expression changed as she saw that an immortal formation had appeared around Eternal Yacht.

“Setting up a time path formation in such a short time?” Qing Ye shook, he finally understood the formation path attainment that Five Elements Grandmaster had.

“This Red Lotus true inheritance is mine!” After obtaining Longevity Heaven’s reinforcement, Fang Yuan obtained enough time to successfully get close to the stone lotus island, he was about to step onto it.

But at this moment, a change occurred, the stone lotus island erupted with a formless force and pushed Fang Yuan far away.

“What happened?” Suspicion rose in Fang Yuan’s mind: “I have Spring Autumn Cicada with me, unless... once this stone lotus island lets me in, the defenses will vanish? Or will a loophole appear that would allow others to take advantage of it?”

Boom boom boom!

At this point, attacks that approached like a wild storm rained down on Fang Yuan’s immemorial year monkey body and surrounded him.

The river suppression lotus sealing formation was finally stabilized, even though it was damaged, the hole was shrinking, the rank seven Gu Immortals controlling it were now able to find time to fight Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was obstructed by the formation, he could not get close to the stone lotus island as easily now.

“This formation is likely created by Heavenly Court to target stone lotus island. The stone lotus island rejected me earlier because of this formation?”

Fang Yuan was thinking about this when Feng Jiu Ge who was inside Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform arrived before him.

1The two sides started to fight again, they clashed and exchanged moves, the situation was in a deadlock.

At the same time.

Eastern Sea.

“Li Huang pays respects to Lord Duke Long!” In the sky, flames scattered as a muscular old man appeared, it was Heavenly Court’s reinforcement, rank eight Gu Immortal Li Huang.

Duke Long nodded as he patted Feng Jin Huang who was beside him.

Feng Jin Huang was surrounded by a circular qi wall, she floated lightly towards Li Huang.

“Protect Huang Er, if anything happens to her, I will hold you accountable.” Duke Long said plainly.

Li Huang had a grim expression as he said confidently: “Don’t worry Lord Duke Long, with my verdant sun flame cloak, who in the world can harm Feng Jin Huang?”

Duke Long stopped looking at him, he looked towards the sky, in order to protect Feng Jin Huang, he had wasted some time, Dragon Palace had flown away already.

Duke Long smiled, feeling no nervousness.

He clenched his fists, it was time to take action.

At the next moment, he vanished on the spot.

Dragon Palace was obstructed by Qing Yue An again, while the other rank eight Gu Immortals fought each other.

“The chance will slip by easily, I need to grab my opportunity!” Qing Yue An’s eyes burst out with brilliance, after so many days of fighting, he had finally obtained his fourth chance.

But right when Qing Yue An was about to reach Dragon Palace, an immense force approached, the aura of death almost suffocated him.

He quickly turned around, enduring the fatal attack, he managed to block it but flew away like a sandbag, spitting out huge amounts of blood.

“Duke Long, you!” Qing Yue An had a hoarse voice filled with anger.

Duke Long floated in the sky expressionlessly, his horns were flickering with purple-gold light, his long hair fluttered in the wind, his body was tough as a monolith, his dragon pupils shined with cold light.

Qing Yue An struggled to stabilize his body, he wanted to counter attack but his expression suddenly changed.

A dragon-shaped qi shot out of his chest, exploding.

Boom!

The explosion was not loud, but Qing Yue An’s defenses were like useless scraps of paper.

Qing Yue An looked at Duke Long with disbelief and fright as he retreated!

He was bleeding intensely, his ribs were broken, his chest was almost fully blown off, his heart and lungs could be seen.

“Take this Duke Long!”

“This Immortal Gu House is mine!”

Song Qi Yuan and Zhang Yin flew over, the two temporarily stopped fighting each other as they faced against Duke Long together.

Duke Long smiled nonchalantly.

Roar—!

The dragon roar erupted as Song Qi Yuan and Zhang Yin flew away with a confused and flabbergasted expression.

They suffered serious injuries, they did not even see what move hit them before they were defeated.

“Be careful, without that burden, Duke Long is using his full power!”

“Is this his true strength?”

“Everyone, work together, we must not let him succeed!”

Duke Long’s powerful disposition made the remaining rank eight Gu Immortals feel deeply threatened, they started to target him collectively.

Duke Long breathed in deeply, he actually shut his eyes.

He did not move, only when the surrounding killer moves reached before him did he open his eyes abruptly.

Immortal killer move — Qi Engulfing Mountains and Rivers!

“Hmm?!” At once, the rank eight Gu Immortals shook intensely as they felt an unparalleled pressure slamming down at them from all around.

Not just them, the killer moves that they activated, even the sky and sea of all the surroundings were facing this immense pressure.

Many killer moves collapsed, the rank eight Gu Immortals as well as Dragon Palace fell into the water like dumplings falling into a pot.

The world became still, nothing was left standing.

Except Duke Long, he was standing proudly in the sky, looking down at the immortals in distress with his cold dragon pupils.

At this point of the Dragon Palace contest, he had finally displayed his true strength.

Having pseudo-Immortal Venerable battle strength, it suppressed his enemies and obtained the upper hand!

“Kill!”

“Duke Long, I want to kill you!”

“I do not believe that you can defeat all of us!!”

A few breaths of time later, huge waves surged in the sea, the rank eight Gu Immortals who were humiliated by Duke Long attacked him together with great intensity.

Duke Long snorted coldly, his dragon tail appeared and his body became covered in scales, the horns on his head became as sharp as blades.

He opened his mouth and roared, it was immortal killer move dragon roaring wave.

Next, his body flickered from place to place, he appeared near his enemies as he punched their faces with his fists, tore defenses with his claws, and created a bloody storm around the area.

Eastern Sea’s rank eight Gu Immortals were not his match, they were all furious and shocked, they used their immortal killer moves but were constantly obstructed, even if they succeeded, they could not injure Duke Long.

After such a long time, other than protecting Feng Jin Huang, Duke Long had also collected lots of information, he had grasped the weakness of some of these Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals’ methods.

“Old fiend, you are too much!”

“Face my fatal killer move!”

“Restrain him, I have even stronger methods!”

Eastern Sea’s rank eights were furious, they were about to use even stronger methods.

Immortal killer move — Qi Engulfing Mountains and Rivers!

Puff puff puff.

At the next moment, Eastern Sea’s rank eights fell like dumplings again, into the depths of the ocean.

Duke Long controlled the tempo of the battle completely, his battle experience was even deeper than the depths of this ocean itself!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1696: Feng Destroys Red Lotus

“Come!” Duke Long suddenly appeared above Dragon Palace.

An immense suction force sent the rank eight Immortal Gu House slowly towards Duke Long’s phantom aperture even though it resisted him desperately.

The other rank eight Gu Immortals saw this and went over, using their killer moves on Duke Long.

Duke Long sighed as he vanished on the spot.

Without restraint, Dragon Palace flew out of the sea, into the sky once again.

Eastern Sea’s rank eights were about to chase it when Duke Long appeared in the sky again, obstructing their paths.

Dragon roars resounded again, Duke Long moved like lightning, flickering around the rank eight Gu Immortals effortlessly, the intense battle created loud explosions resembling an unceasing thunderstorm, countless innocent lifeforms were implicated, huge tsunamis were created on the sea surface.

Without Feng Jin Huang burdening him, Duke Long displayed terrifying battle strength, nobody present could match him equally.

However, these Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals all had deep foundations, they had their own trump cards.

Even though they were losing to Duke Long, their lives were not endangered. They were wary of each other originally, but against Duke Long, they could cooperate seamlessly.

At once, Eastern Sea’s righteous path, demonic path, and even lone cultivators worked together to fight Duke Long.

Duke Long felt increasing pressure.

His outburst earlier suppressed everyone, it was because he had concealed himself earlier and managed to catch all of the Eastern Sea rank eights off-guard with that one attack.

But as the battle continued, Duke Long’s methods were slowly discerned by the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, they started to find counters or appropriate methods to deal with them.

In this world, there were no invincible Immortal Gu or immortal killer moves, there were only invincible Gu Immortals.

Any immortal killer move, no matter how complex, had a structure, it would have advantages and weaknesses.

Duke Long was very powerful indeed, none of the Eastern Sea rank eights were his match. But this situation was special, everyone was trying to get the Immortal Gu House, nobody wanted to fight him to the death. As the Immortal Gu House flew continuously all over the battlefield, Duke Long could not set up a battlefield to trap it.

Dragon claws moved like a tornado, many Eastern Sea rank eights were forced back, Duke Long crashed into Dragon Palace as he grabbed it with his hand.

At once, a pair of huge phantom dragon claws appeared and tightly grasped Dragon Palace.

Dragon Palace shook intensely, it shattered the phantom dragon claws as it escaped.

Duke Long sighed, this situation had already happened many times. It was not easy to take Dragon Palace, he had to fight off the competitors first before trying to subdue it. But Dragon Palace was a rank eight Immortal Gu House after all, it had great power and could not be taken easily.

Duke Long’s many attempts ended in failure.

“Duke Long is too strong, what do we do?”

“When he fights seriously, we will have no chance to get close to Dragon Palace, not to mention obtain it!”

“Duke Long is the only one attempting now, thankfully this Immortal Gu House is strong enough!”

“We cannot let this go on. Dragon Palace’s resistance is getting weaker, Duke Long will subdue it eventually.”

Eastern Sea’s rank eight Gu Immortals all had injuries, they communicated with each other as they wanted others to use their trump cards against Duke Long.

Getting to rank eight, who would not have their own secret trump cards?

These immortal killer moves were definitely very powerful or mysterious and profound, but nobody wanted to expose them. Nobody could say for sure if their killer moves would fail in such a complex battle environment.

The stronger the killer move, the greater the backlash.

Even Duke Long was not using his triple qi retraction killer move.

Not that he did not want to use it, but the risks were too great, he could likely cripple himself.

When he fought against Purple Mountain True Monarch earlier, he had probed multiple times, only until he was sure that the enemy did not have other methods did he unleash triple qi retraction in the end.

Right now in this situation, if Duke Long used triple qi retraction and the enemy coincidentally countered it, what would happen?

These Eastern Sea rank eights were numerous and they all had deep foundations, who knew what methods they truly possessed!

Notched arrows were the most threatening. Gu Immortals who concealed their killer moves were also very threatening.

River of Time.

Immortal killer move — Summer Fan!

Fang Yuan was still in his immemorial year monkey form, his killer move activated successfully as he grabbed towards the space in front of him.

A huge fan with a long handle appeared out of nowhere, held in his hands.

“Bing Sai Chuan, get aside!”

Fang Yuan twisted his waist as he gathered strength in his arms, waving the fan ferociously.

Gush!! Wild winds blew, sweeping ahead as the storm sent Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and Shark Flow Lever into a tornado, restraining them as they flew outside of the river suppression lotus sealing formation.

But at the crucial moment, Feng Jiu Ge and Xing Ye Wang flew out of their Immortal Gu Houses, charging at Fang Yuan and Bing Sai Chuan.

Even though they did not cultivate time path, the river suppression lotus sealing formation did not break apart, time path was restricted in the formation as other paths were amplified.

Heavenly Court sent rank seven Gu Immortals which were elites, they worked together during this period and were able to mostly repair the river suppression lotus sealing formation, even though the hole was still present, it had become much smaller.

“Five Elements Grandmaster, quickly use your profound light!” Fang Yuan shouted.

Five Elements Grandmaster’s voice came from within Year End Gatehouse: “I cannot use it a second time in this short period, this formation has been modified by a lot, the previous profound light will be ineffective now.”

Immortal killer move – Song Warrior!

Feng Jiu Ge’s body shook as four song warriors emerged, encircling Fang Yuan.

Xing Ye Wang’s body was covered in starlight specks as he stabbed towards Bing Sai Chuan like a hedgehog.

Bing Sai Chuan and Fang Yuan looked at each other before flying up and abandoning their enemies, targeting the river suppression lotus sealing formation instead.

This was the wisest plan.

As long as the river suppression lotus sealing formation was destroyed, Feng Jiu Ge and Xing Ye Wang would have to return to their Immortal Gu Houses.

Feng Jiu Ge and Xing Ye Wang quickly tried to stop them, while Five Elements Grandmaster continued to control his immortal formation to trap the Eternal Yacht that Qing Ye was controlling.

In the intense battle, river suppression lotus sealing formation shook more and more intensely, more cracks were appearing as it endured Fang Yuan’s and Bing Sai Chuan’s attacks.

However, Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and Shark Flow Lever, which Fang Yuan blew away earlier, had reentered the battlefield, Fang Yuan and Longevity Heaven were starting to be suppressed.

“Fang Yuan, you still refuse to trust me now?” The situation was dire, Bing Sai Chuan shouted in anxiety.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light, he snorted coldly as he approached Bing Sai Chuan.

Bing Sai Chuan spread his arms as a ball shaped light shield appeared around him and Fang Yuan.

This was his defensive immortal killer move, anything that hit the light shield, be it lifeforms or killer moves, would freeze in time.

“Break it!” Feng Jiu Ge and Xing Ye Wang shouted together.

Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and Shark Flow Lever erupted with powerful attacks, targeting Bing Sai Chuan’s light shield.

But any killer move that landed on it froze in time, at once, there was a myriad of colorful attacks surrounding the light shield, it was a dazzling sight.

Bing Sai Chuan gritted his teeth, his body shook as he sustained the shield.

Even though he had rank eight peak battle strength, in this formation, time path was suppressed, at the same time, he was facing the attack of two rank eight Gu Immortals and two Immortal Gu Houses, it was not easy.

Fang Yuan obtained this prime opportunity, he dispelled immemorial year monkey transformation and activated emperor yama.

At this point in the battle, he finally obtained a chance to change his battle tactic.

Feng Jiu Ge and Xing Ye Wang had rich battle experiences, they did not give Fang Yuan any opportunity to change his transformation, he was often interrupted.

After becoming emperor yama, Fang Yuan started to use his killer moves.

His aura surged rapidly from weak to strong, and from strong to a terrifying level.

Feng Jiu Ge and Xing Ye Wang had solemn expressions, they were very alert.

At this point, Fang Yuan finally had the time to unleash his trump card.

Immortal killer move — Luo Po Seal!

“Be careful!” Bing Sai Chuan gritted his teeth as he dispelled his defensive killer move, moving forward.

Without obstruction, the frozen attacks from earlier struck towards Fang Yuan and Bing Sai Chuan.

Bing Sai Chuan stood in front and paved a way for Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan held onto Luo Po seal as he waited in anticipation, he charged towards Xing Ye Wang while enduring the attacks.

Xing Ye Wang quickly retreated while Feng Jiu Ge went around, trying to attack Fang Yuan from the rear.

Fang Yuan suddenly laughed coldly, he flew up and shot Luo Po seal towards the river suppression lotus sealing formation.

The huge formation stopped working, several rank seven Gu Immortals inside died on the spot.

Bing Sai Chuan suddenly felt the pressure lifting, swoosh swoosh, large amounts of water from the River of Time gushed into the formation.

Immediately after, with cracking noises, river suppression lotus sealing formation disintegrated piece by piece.

Five Elements Grandmaster was deeply shocked: “Fang Yuan’s Luo Po seal actually attacked the core of the formation and destroyed the core Immortal Gu, how did he deduce it?”

Boom!

Feng Jiu Ge’s attack landed on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s attention was on destroying the formation, he could only endure Feng Jiu Ge’s ferocious attack.

Even in emperor yama form, Fang Yuan spat out three mouthfuls of blood, large numbers of soul path Gu worms died and multiple Immortal Gu were injured.

Without the formation’s help, the battle environment changed rapidly, Fang Yuan and Bing Sai Chuan obtained the upper hand again.

Both sides fought for a while, the river suppression lotus sealing formation had about one-third of its original size left, the remaining rank seven Gu Immortals were desperately holding on, but the formation was just a step away from destruction, they had no hope left.

“Cover me!” Fang Yuan said to Bing Sai Chuan.

Bing Sai Chuan used the ball shaped light shield, protecting Fang Yuan as he dispelled emperor yama, turning into the immemorial year monkey again.

“Cover me!” Feng Jiu Ge shouted the same thing.

Xing Ye Wang and the two Immortal Gu Houses surrounded Feng Jiu Ge immediately.

Immortal killer move — Assimilation Wind Song!

Feng Jiu Ge took a huge risk and successfully summoned the number one wind in the world!

Bing Sai Chuan broke out in sweat as he shouted to Fang Yuan: “Oh no, my defensive killer move cannot block the winds of assimilation, let’s retreat!”

But out of their expectations, the winds of assimilation did not target the defensive shield, it attacked the stone lotus island.

Under Fang Yuan’s shocked gaze, the stone lotus island was devoured by the winds of assimilation, the fragments were assimilated into wind.

The winds of assimilation became larger and larger, if anyone tried to get onto the island, they would have to face this world-destroying wind!

“Feng Jiu Ge, you!” Bing Sai Chuan was furious and anxious.

Fang Yuan’s expression was ashen.

“If we cannot get it, neither will you.” Xing Ye Wang laughed wildly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1697: Neither Victory Nor Defeat

The winds of assimilation ravaged in the River of Time.

When Feng Jiu Ge used assimilation wind song, there were sounds of howling winds. But when the actual winds of assimilation started blowing, it became extremely quiet, there was no sound at all.

The quiet winds of assimilation made every Gu Immortal present feel a chill down their spine.

The stone lotus island was continuously eroded by the winds of assimilation until it completely vanished, the winds grew larger and larger, multiple times its initial size after devouring the stone lotus island, it was like a pillar that supported heaven and earth.

However, it could not display its might in the River of Time, even though a lot of water was assimilated into wind, the entire River of Time did not budge, it had lost a completely negligible amount of water.

Even though the winds of assimilation were powerful, against the River of Time, it was too small, like a tiny insect on a bull.

All the Gu Immortals and Immortal Gu Houses had to steer clear of the winds of assimilation, Feng Jiu Ge was no exception.

“The stone lotus island was really destroyed!” Fang Yuan was deeply shocked, earlier when he wanted to get on the island, he was repelled by its protection force. To think that it was completely helpless against the winds of assimilation.

“Don’t tell me this formation played a role in suppressing the stone lotus island earlier? Or was the island already at its limit, so it could not block the winds of assimilation?”

Fang Yuan watched as the river suppression lotus sealing formation continued to break apart.

Feng Jiu Ge also had a heavy feeling.

Even though he destroyed the stone lotus island, in his opinion, he had failed.

In order to find Red Lotus’ true inheritances, Heavenly Court had paid a huge price in manpower and resources, they managed to find a stone lotus island after so much work, and trapped it using the river suppression lotus sealing formation. But to think that Fang Yuan and Longevity Heaven worked together to obstruct them.

Feng Jiu Ge had no choice but to destroy the stone lotus island, all of their hard work had been wasted.

But nobody could blame him for his actions.

Because it was necessary!

After the river suppression lotus sealing formation got hit by Luo Po seal, it was definitely going to break apart. Once the formation breaks, Feng Jiu Ge and

Xing Ye Wang would be forced to return to the Immortal Gu House.

This way, Heavenly Court's side would lose their battle strength.

In contrast, Fang Yuan and Bing Sai Chuan would be like fish in water in this River of Time, without the formation restraining them, their battle strength would surge.

The enemy was strong while they were weaker, Feng Jiu Ge had no confidence in continuing the struggle, Fang Yuan would obtain the stone lotus island eventually. Thus, when there was still a chance, he decided to cut his losses short by destroying the stone lotus island.

"Such resolution." A sharp light flashed in Fang Yuan's eyes, he did not hide his praise.

Bing Sai Chuan sighed deeply, showing a dejected look.

He was hoping to find some way to destroy fate Gu from the Red Lotus true inheritance, but now, even though Fang Yuan had the key Spring Autumn Cicada, the stone lotus island was already destroyed.

He was very disappointed, he did not know that Fang Yuan had already obtained one true inheritance in secret!

Fang Yuan was obviously not going to tell Longevity Heaven about this, even Heavenly Court was in the dark.

Rumble!

With a chain of loud explosions, the heavily damaged river suppression lotus sealing formation broke, most of the Immortal Gu were destroyed, while the Gu Immortals controlling the formation died one by one.

1River water moved in as huge waves were formed, the River of Time was restored to normal.

"Let's retreat!" Feng Jiu Ge gritted his teeth as he spoke.

The battle was not in Heavenly Court's favor.

Even though they had three rank eight Gu Immortals, in this situation, even if Duke Long came, they would not win.

Feng Jiu Ge and the rest were not time path Gu Immortals, they could only hide in the Immortal Gu Houses, relying on them to fight.

And these time path Immortal Gu Houses were only rank seven, if they had one rank eight time path Immortal Gu House, Heavenly Court would have a chance of victory!

Even though Heavenly Court had immense foundation, it was not without limits.

Firstly, after Lord Huang Shi died, they no longer had any time path rank eight Gu Immortals. Even though they created four time path Immortal Gu Houses, they were only rank seven. Heavenly Court did not have the ability to create a rank eight time path Immortal Gu House in such a short period of time!

Actually, Fairy Zi Wei's arrangements were not wrong.

Even though Fang Yuan obtained a Red Lotus true inheritance and modified most of his killer moves, while also raising the rank of his Immortal Gu, his increase in battle strength did not make this battle any easier, Fang Yuan alone could not obtain this Red Lotus true inheritance.

Heavenly Court did not expect that Longevity Heaven would suddenly cooperate with Fang Yuan.

After all, Fang Yuan destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, there was deep enmity between Fang Yuan and Longevity Heaven. This was not just simple hatred, Fang Yuan did not just destroy a rank eight Immortal Gu House, he destroyed Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangements, the pride and glory of the Huang Jin tribes.

“Longevity Heaven actually gave up on revenge and cooperated with Fang Yuan. Is this because of Bing Sai Chuan?” Feng Jiu Ge returned to Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and looked at Bing Sai Chuan, frowning.

Heavenly Court’s three Immortal Gu Houses were retreating rapidly.

Fang Yuan roared, he turned into the immemorial year monkey and chased after them.

Bing Sai Chuan fought side by side with him.

The two had powerful and ferocious attacks, they aimed at Heavenly Court’s three Immortal Gu Houses.

Even though there were three rank eights on Heavenly Court’s side, they could only defend, resist attacks, and escape.

Present and Past Pavilion finally broke out of Bing Sai Chuan’s killer move, it quickly flew out of the River of Time, appearing above the surface.

The three Xunzi were very angry, they wanted to attack Fang Yuan, but they saw that the three Heavenly Court Immortal Gu Houses were escaping, the river suppression lotus sealing formation had broken up, the rank seven Gu Immortals controlling the formation had almost all died, the remaining few were struggling in the River of Time, they were not far from dying.

“Quickly retreat!” Feng Jiu Ge transmitted.

The three Xunzi gulped as they quickly joined the group and escaped.

Fang Yuan and Bing Sai Chuan, as well as Five Elements Grandmaster controlling Year End Gatehouse, chased after them.

These four Immortal Gu Houses were very sturdy, they defended each other and were hard to catch.

But Fang Yuan and Bing Sai Chuan got stronger as they fought, in this River of Time, their battle strength was far above their usual standards.

“The tributary of the River of Time is close by, we are about to escape!” Qing Ye shouted, raising the morale of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

“Want to leave? Not so easy!” Fang Yuan laughed sinisterly, shortening their distance.

“All of you retreat, we will block them!” The three Xunzi were resolved to die, they stayed behind along with the tattered Present and Past Pavilion.

As the three Xunzi stalled for time desperately, the other three Immortal Gu Houses managed to escape through the tributary of the River of Time.

Present and Past Pavilion was completely destroyed, the three Xunzi died as well.

Fang Yuan was filled with regret that he did not capture any rank eight Gu Immortal, this was a really good chance.

Fang Yuan did not want to chase after them, in the outside world, Feng Jiu Ge and the rest could fight normally.

He swept through the battlefield and collected the immortal apertures, annexing them.

Bing Sai Chuan and Five Elements Grandmaster did not move, they watched by the side.

There were quite a few rank seven Gu Immortals who died, they did not have qualification to join Heavenly Court so they still retained their rank seven immortal apertures.

Fang Yuan annexed them and made great gains.

“Let’s go to Eastern Sea.” After a while, Fang Yuan suggested.

Longevity Heaven had displayed their fullest sincerity in the battle over Red Lotus true inheritance, they were reliable allies for now.

Both sides had the same goal, to prevent Heavenly Court from repairing fate Gu.

If Heavenly Court obtained the complete fate Gu, they would regain their former glory, they would threaten the other four regions.

After staying for a while in the River of Time, Fang Yuan and Bing Sai Chuan confirmed that the Red Lotus true inheritance was truly destroyed. Even though they did not obtain it, they had managed to stop Heavenly Court from getting it, this result was neither defeat nor victory.

Soon, Fang Yuan and the rest left the River of Time, heading to Eastern Sea to stop Duke Long.

But along the way, they heard that the commotion in Eastern Sea was over, the outcome had been determined.

The eventual victor of this battle over Dragon Palace was Duke Long! Duke Long had incredible battle strength, he suppressed the Eastern Sea rank eights, afterwards, Heavenly Court’s new member, rank eight Gu Immortal Chen Yi went there with an Immortal Gu House. At the crucial moment, Eastern Sea’s lone immortal Yang Jun suddenly turned to help Duke Long, allowing him to successfully suppress the rank eight Immortal Gu House and keep it.

But Duke Long suffered heavy injuries as a result.

At the final moment, Eastern Sea’s rank eights stopped holding back, they used their trump cards.

But it was already too late, after getting the Immortal Gu House, Duke Long left immediately without second thought.

“To think that this rank eight lone immortal Yang Jun was recruited by Heavenly Court!” Five Elements Grandmaster shook his head continuously. He was once a lone immortal too, but he had become a member of Longevity Heaven now.

“That might not be the case, Yang Jun might have been Heavenly Court’s spy in Eastern Sea from the start.” Fang Yuan thought of Prince Feng Xian in Northern

Plains, he was a spy implanted into Northern Plains from the start, his identity had not been exposed.

Fang Yuan looked at Bing Sai Chuan for a moment, deciding to continue keeping this as a secret.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1698: Slaughter Begins

Central Continent regional wall.

“Go, quickly go!”

“Catch up, don’t break away from the group.”

A group of Western Desert Gu Masters shouted as they ran.

Behind them, the ground tore open, like a giant beast opening its mouth to devour people.

“Ahh—!”

“Save me!!”

Amidst cries and screams, a small group of people at the back fell into the Earth Trench, most of them were smashed to bits, those that luckily survived would also die eventually.

“Father, I can’t hold on anymore!” Zhang Ping was a young man who had just become a rank two Gu Master, he was showing a flustered expression now, his primeval essence had already dried up.

“Oh no.” Zhang Quan was a rank three Gu Master, he was covered in sweat now. He was already trying his best, using his killer move to not only move himself but also his son Zhang Ping.

If Zhang Ping ran out of primeval essence, Zhang Quan’s killer move would be ineffective on him. By then, Zhang Ping would become very slow, Zhang Quan would be helpless as he watched his son fall into the abyss.

“What should I do?” Zhang Quan was helpless and anxious.

He regretted his decision deeply, if he had known this, he would not have brought his son to join the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention!

He had considered this because of his son’s refinement path talent, he wanted to train his ability and gain more knowledge. But to think that they encountered an earth vein tremor while crossing the regional wall.

Right when Zhang Quan and Zhang Ping were despairing, the sight in front of them cleared up.

Zhang Quan was dazed before reacting, they had passed Central Continent’s regional wall, they had arrived in Central Continent.

Because of earth vein tremors, other than causing lots of Earth Trenches, Gu materials, and Gu worms to appear, the five region’s regional walls were also shrinking.

Right now, Gu Masters needed less than half the time to cross two region’s regional walls compared to before.

“But so what?” Zhang Quan sighed deeply.

Zhang Ping was out of primeval essence and stamina, Zhang Quan had to carry him, but because of this, their speed was very slow, they were almost about to get devoured by the Earth Trench.

At the crucial moment, a mystical light shot towards them as the remaining Gu Masters were all brought into the sky.

The Earth Trench parted below their feet, soon, a huge and unfathomably deep abyss formed below them.

Only until they landed on the periphery of the Earth Trench did the mystical light enveloping these Gu Masters disappear.

“What is going on?”

“Who saved us?”

“Such an incredible method, I’m afraid it has to be a great Gu Immortal who saved all of us!”

The Gu Masters were all extremely excited from surviving that, they started talking among themselves.

Above the sky where they could not see, a Spirit Butterfly Valley Gu Immortal smiled kindly as he retreated his gaze from these Gu Masters.

The Gu Immortal flew rapidly, patrolling the area.

Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention had begun, many Gu Masters had been coming here for the last few days from the other four regions.

The Gu Immortal was a member of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, he had received a compulsory mission from the sect to patrol this area and prevent the demonic path from causing trouble.

Many Gu Immortals received the same mission as him. These were all members of the ten great ancient sects, some independent sects, or even slave Gu Immortals captured by the ten great ancient sects, as well as lone immortals close to the ten sects.

This time, Heavenly Court held the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, security was extremely strict, it was unprecedented.

Zhang Quan and Zhang Ping’s group was luckily saved by the Gu Immortal, retaining their lives.

After getting into Central Continent, they rested for a while before going to the closest sign up spot.

Central Continent Refinement Path Convention had many sign up spots, they were evenly distributed all over Central Continent.

A few days later, Zhang Quan and Zhang Ping arrived at Scorpion Needle Sect with some Gu Masters that had similar objectives.

This was an ordinary sect, its specialty was in raising Gu that resembled scorpions, they were most famous for scorpion needle Gu. This was an offensive Gu worm, once used, it could shoot out scorpion needles. The needles were sharp and fast, they were poisonous and hard to deal with.

Scorpion Needle Sect had already made the arrangements.

Zhang Quan and Zhang Ping walked into the registration hall, it was packed with people.

A large portion were Central Continent locals, the remaining were like them who had come from the western region.

Scorpion Needle Sect was situated near Western Desert, many Western Desert Gu Masters came here to sign up.

The Central Continent Refinement Path Convention always attracted countless Gu Masters to participate, this time was no exception.

Following the procedures, Zhang Quan and Zhang Ping were brought into a hall for assessment.

The test only had four questions, it was not easy but not hard either. The test was regarding basic skills, any Gu Master with enough experience can pass, those who were trying their luck would be eliminated, to save on resources and manpower.

Zhang Quan and Zhang Ping passed the test without any unexpected surprises, they successfully signed up.

After getting out of the hall, they held a token each.

The token recorded the participant’s name, sect, path, and the time and location of his test.

When a Gu Master signs up, their names could be fake, their paths and sects could also be kept secret.

Because of this, during every Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, a large number of lone cultivators, demonic path members, and even Gu Immortals would join while concealing their identity.

“A hundred primeval stones per person signing up, this is too expensive.” Zhang Ping kept his token as he said grudgingly.

“So you must perform well this time, don’t waste our investment.” Zhang Quan looked at Zhang Ping with a gaze of anticipation.

“Yes.” Zhang Ping nodded: “Oh yes, father, I saw that many Central Continent Gu Masters signed up directly, they did not need to take the test.”

Zhang Quan smiled: “These people had gotten a certain position in the previous convention, they are able to join it directly now.”

“Father, didn’t you get a placing yourself in the last convention? Why do you have to pay again?” Zhang Ping did not understand.

Zhang Quan shook his head: “That is because I am not a Central Continent person, only Central Continent Gu Masters have this treatment.”

“So that’s it.” Zhang Ping nodded.

This was clearly favoritism towards the locals, it was unfair but the young Zhang Ping soon accepted it.

This was Central Continent’s territory after all, the convention was also held in Central Continent, what’s wrong with helping their own people?

And this was not unfair either, because this test only looked at the basics, any Gu Master with refinement path attainment could pass it.

“The Refinement Path Convention is about to begin.” In Heavenly Court, Duke Long used his investigative killer move as he paid attention to the situation in Central Continent.

His face was still pale now, his injuries sustained from obtaining Dragon Palace had not healed.

“This Refinement Path Convention will be very crucial, oh Red Lotus, do you know, after this convention, fate Gu will be fully restored.” Duke Long’s eyes became dazed as scenes of the past surfaced in his mind.

“Spring Autumn Cicada? You actually designed such a heretical Immortal Gu, Hong Ting, what are you trying to do?” After learning of this, Duke Long immediately went to find Red Lotus Immortal Venerable, Hong Ting.

Hong Ting clenched his fists, saying to Duke Long: “Master, I’ve already said it before, I want to revive them, let everything start over again.”

“You!” Duke Long pointed at Hong Ting, he was shivering from anger.

Hong Ting lowered his head: “Master, scold me if you want, beat me if you want, but I will never give up!”

Duke Long looked at Hong Ting angrily, he did not scold him, instead, he sighed after a long while of silence: “Hong Ting, my disciple, you are too naive. Even if you are an Immortal Venerable, what can you do to fate? Go ahead and try, I won’t stop you. You will definitely fail, but I hope that countless failures can wake you up.”

1Many days later.

“Master...” Hong Ting was covered in injuries but he was extremely excited, he came before Duke Long: “I finally found the only hope, I am about to succeed, I will definitely change fate!”

“How can that be possible?!” Duke Long did not believe him at all.

“I am relying on this — love Gu. I had obtained inspiration from <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>. It says that love is a type of fate, in that case, love can definitely change fate!” Hong Ting said in increasing excitement.

Duke Long was extremely furious and shocked: “Heresy, blasphemy, Hong Ting, don’t forget your identity! You are a righteous path Immortal Venerable, you want to change history, do you know that such actions will have an unimaginably bad effect?”

“Oh master!” Hong Ting raised his head, looking at Duke Long with glimmering eyes: “You still don’t understand?”

“Understand what?”

“Times have changed! The hearts of the people have changed too. Our generation does not need restrictions...”

2Before Hong Ting finished his words, Duke Long shouted: “Enough! You actually said fate Gu is a form of restriction? Hong Ting, enough is enough, at this rate, you will fall into the demonic path! I... I do not want to exterminate you in the name of justice!!!”

Breathing in deeply, Duke Long regained clarity in his eyes.

His memories were kept away, but Duke Long still had a sense of guilt left in him.

“Oh Red Lotus... you did not understand after all.” Duke Long muttered: “No matter how times change, fate Gu will always be the protector of humanity. You are disregarding the big picture of humanity for your personal selfish goals, I failed in my teachings!”

“You are my disciple, as your master, I will atone for your mistakes.”

“I do not have much time left.”

“But it is fine, I just need to wait until fate Gu is repaired.”

“I will not allow anyone to ruin this Refinement Path Convention!”

Boom—!

At the same time, Scorpion Needle Sect erupted with an intense explosion, countless Gu Masters who participated in the Refinement Path Convention died or got injured.

As dust clouds settled, an ancient desolate year snake hissed in the rubble of Scorpion Needle Sect.

Watching the ancient year snake slaughter more Gu Masters, Fang Yuan left with a cold smile.

Using an immortal killer move with Fixed Immortal Travel as the core, he left for the next location.

Heavenly Court wanted to repair Fate, they had to hold the Refinement Path Convention to gain success dao marks. How could Fang Yuan allow them to succeed so easily?

A merciless slaughter had begun.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1699: Attacking Everywhere

Unification Sect was one of the sign up locations of the Refinement Path Convention, it was filled with people as well.

“The Refinement Path Convention is about to start! To think that I would get a second chance in this lifetime, thank the heavens.” A middle aged Gu Master sighed deeply.

The Gu Masters nearby recognized him as they started to talk among themselves.

“Quickly look, it is refinement path master Luo Sheng!”

“He had lost in the previous Refinement Path Convention due to some accident, it seems he wants to compete again.”

“Normally, the Refinement Path Convention is held once in a hundred years, Luo Sheng was not supposed to have a chance. But to think that ten years later, the ten great ancient sects would hold it again!”

The middle aged Gu Master heard their discussions as he kept a peaceful expression.

He was way beyond the age of vanity, he just wanted to prove himself now.

“My opponents this time cannot be underestimated.”

“Even though I worked very hard during this period, Central Continent is too huge, the five regions have countless geniuses.”

“And even at this spot, there are already many new talents...”

The middle aged Gu Master looked around, focusing his attention on three Gu Masters. One was an old man that had been reputed for many years, he was also a refinement path master. Another was a young man, and the last one was a young girl. The former had performed well in the previous convention while the latter was a rising star that had emerged in the last ten years.

1“This Refinement Path Convention is still going to be that intense!”

“I must make good use of this opportunity, I cannot fail anymore...”

“I will prove myself, I will let my wife and children be proud!”

Boom!

At the next moment, a huge ancient year beast descended from the sky, crushing the entire hall to ruins.

The middle aged Gu Master’s grand ambitions vanished into thin air.

1The young Gu Master with a great future, the genius young girl who was highly thought of died pathetically on the spot, her bones and flesh were mashed together, even her corpse could not be seen clearly.

“Onto the next location.” In the sky, Fang Yuan’s figure flickered and vanished.

This was the fifteenth spot that he had attacked.

Central Continent lost many Gu Masters, these were just mortal Gu Masters, how could they handle the ancient year beasts?

Even rank six Gu Immortals might not be able to face these ancient year beasts.

Fang Yuan slaughtered these Gu Masters mercilessly, he created lots of bloodshed, more and more talented Gu Masters were killed, even Heavenly Court was feeling heartache.

“This demon Fang Yuan, he is truly evil and vicious, he came to cause trouble after all!”

“Damn it, are we going to watch and do nothing?”

“Lady Zi Wei, I wonder if...”

Fairy Zi Wei shook her head: “Fang Yuan is very vigilant, he only sent out ancient year beasts each time to attack, even though he slaughtered many Gu Masters and caused great chaos, he rarely attacked personally.”

Fairy Zi Wei sighed deeply: “His wisdom path attainment is truly deep, he knows that the more he attacks, the more clues he would leave behind, and the more easily we can find him. It is very hard for me to locate him, I will need more clues and even more time.”

“But how can he have so many ancient year beasts?” Some Gu Immortals frowned.

“According to Southern Border’s information, Xia Cha had a year essence pool in her immortal aperture, he should have used this to capture so many year beasts.” Fairy Zi Wei said.

Even though her expression was calm, she was filled with rage.

Fang Yuan was a Gu Immortal yet he attacked these mortals without restraint, he was really bullying the weak and was simply too shameless, he had no bottom line!

1Most demonic path Gu Immortals would not do this.

This was the tacit consensus among Gu Immortals, but Fang Yuan broke it without concern.

“This Fang Yuan is truly the greatest plague to all lifeforms in this world!” Fairy Zi Wei was furious while feeling sadness for those innocent lives: “The longer he lives in this world, the more lifeforms he would harm and kill.”

1Duke Long was truly calm, his heart was like a tranquil lake.

“Good, Fang Yuan showed up, didn’t we expect this to happen? Follow our plan, even if we have to pay a huge price, we must repair fate Gu!” Duke Long was immensely determined.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals heard his orders and realized: Nothing in this world could affect Duke Long’s determination.

Fang Yuan was a real problem, Heavenly Court could not ignore him, they had a plan already.

Several days later, the people who were in deep fear of Fang Yuan’s assaults received accurate proof and information.

All evidence pointed to Fang Yuan, he was the culprit!

Everyone was extremely riled up.

“Fang Yuan has already become a Gu Immortal?!”

“There really are immortals in this world...”

“Fang Yuan, you killed my father, I will definitely take revenge for this immense hatred!”

“Even rank fives are just ants if they do not become Gu Immortals.”

“Fang Yuan is evidently trying to ruin the Refinement Path Convention, for the sake of my life, I’m not going.”

“Go! Why not? If we do not go, wouldn’t we fall into that Fang Yuan’s scheme?”

“That’s right, even though I am a mortal Gu Master and will not be Fang Yuan’s match, to avenge my wife’s death, I will even give up my life, I will not let this demon Fang Yuan succeed!”

Some were fearful, some felt emotional, some backed out, while some became determined.

Time passed, days went by, the Refinement Path Convention continued.

Fang Yuan was all alone but Central Continent had many sign up locations for the Refinement Path Convention. Even though he had Fixed Immortal Travel, he could not eliminate every Gu Master that went.

Because many places were secretly guarded by Central Continent’s Gu Immortals.

Especially when Heavenly Court made arrangements after Fang Yuan’s attacks, they sent out missions to countless Gu Masters to move around and distribute tokens to other participants of the tests.

This way, the participants in Central Continent became dispersed, nobody went to sign up locations, Fang Yuan’s slaughter became very inefficient.

Even though Fang Yuan tried, more than ten thousand Gu Masters died in his hands, but he could not stop the Refinement Path Convention from starting.

The sign up phase was over, the true competition had already started.

“Oh?” Fang Yuan appeared at a place in Central Continent, he was about to attack when he suddenly frowned.

“Where are you going, Fang Yuan?”

“Die!”

A Central Continent rank eight Gu Immortal pounced at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan gave a glance at him, he did not want to fight, he used his killer move to escape.

“Central Continent’s Gu Immortals have been getting faster and faster recently, is it because I’ve used Fixed Immortal Travel’s killer move too frequently, they have already deduced it?”

“Even so, they seem to be able to detect where I would show up, what is this investigative method? Time path?”

At the next moment, Fang Yuan’s surroundings changed, he was hundreds of thousands of li away from the previous place.

But his expression was grim, he sensed acutely that three rank eight Gu Immortals were approaching him from three directions.

“Fang Yuan, where are you going?”

“Heavenly Court has prepared more than ten investigative killer moves for you, you cannot escape!”

“Especially one of them, it was created by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, known as people’s accusation! Hahaha, demon, did you think of this? The more people you kill, the more hatred you gather, these mortal Gu Masters’ hatred will continuously track you down.”

The three rank eights arrived before Fang Yuan.

Immortal battlefield killer move — Rumor Cage!

Suddenly, a fourth rank eight Gu Immortal appeared above Fang Yuan, using an immortal battlefield to trap him.

“We caught Fang Yuan!”

“Lord Zhou Xiong Xin’s rumor cage is truly the battlefield killer move with the fastest activation time, even Fang Yuan could not react in time.”

The four Gu Immortals were overjoyed.

“Lord Duke Long, we finally trapped Fang Yuan.” Inside Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei was extremely excited.

“Mm.” Duke Long replied plainly.

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes shined brightly: “Lord Duke Long, the chance is rare, I recommend that you act personally to eliminate this Fang Yuan now!”

Duke Long shook his head: “Fang Yuan is nothing but a troublemaker, repairing fate Gu is the important thing now. It is not time for me to act.”

2“Lord Duke Long...” Fairy Zi Wei wanted to speak more but suddenly, her expression changed.

At this instant, Central Continent’s areas, especially those that were holding refinement competitions, were targeted with Gu Immortal level attacks.

In fact, not only refinement competition locations, even some famous resource points in Central Continent were attacked by Gu Immortals, they were looted.

“Even Infallible blessed land is being attacked!” Fairy Zi Wei’s expression was grim, she could not believe it: “There are actually so many Gu Immortals targeting us?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1700: Rumors Become Tigers

Fang Yuan floated in the air, it looked like he was staying motionless amidst a blizzard, soon, thick white snow gathered on his body.

But looking from afar, it seemed like he was covered in a thick fox skin coat.

This was the modified time path killer move, winter coat!

Fang Yuan had many defensive killer moves, the strongest was reverse flow protection seal, but Reverse Flow River was clearly dried up now, this killer move could not be used anymore.

Other than that, Fang Yuan had emperor yama, winter coat, bloodstained conqueror’s robe, purple thought light shield, hair armor, lion fur armor, divination tortoise transformation, ghost official garment, and other defensive methods.

Hair armor and lion fur armor were mortal killer moves, even though Fang Yuan had used them for some time, they were eliminated long ago.

Purple thought light shield was Purple Mountain True Monarch’s method, it had defended against Duke Long’s fists in battle earlier, it was quite useful. But Fang Yuan only had this killer move and did not cultivate it, he lacked the crucial Immortal Gu.

Bloodstained conqueror’s robe was originally Fang Yuan’s method, it was used for some time. Even though the core Immortal Gu was now rank seven, a rank seven method was useless now.

Divination tortoise transformation was considered a defensive method, but similarly, the ancient desolate beast divination tortoise was useless in a rank eight battle.

Ghost official garment had a huge origin, being designed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, it was used to defend against wisdom path methods.

Emperor yama killer move which combined ghostly concealment, Soul Beast Token, and ghost official garment had incredible defense, it could be used in rank eight battles.

But its defensive was still lower than winter coat.

Emperor yama was a comprehensive method, it had both offense and defense, by using the yama children, it could even fight against a group.

Meanwhile, winter coat focused on defense, after Fang Yuan annexed Xia Cha’s immortal aperture, his time path dao marks increased in numbers drastically to being his highest path, winter coat’s power was greatly amplified.

And most crucially, after some modifications, winter coat’s defense was even better than before!

While he could not use reverse flow protection seal, winter coat was Fang Yuan’s new replacement.

Bam bam bam...

The three Central Continent rank eights attacked Fang Yuan furiously, he did not dodge, he used winter coat killer move to block all of the attacks.

“What killer move is this?”

“It seems like Xia Cha’s winter coat...”

“How can this be? Xia Cha’s winter coat is not like this.”

The three rank eights had varying expressions as they conversed secretly, they were very shocked by winter coat’s defense.

Next, they placed all their attention on Zhou Xiong Xin.

These three rank eights came from Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, but Zhou Xiong Xin was different, he was a recently awakened Heavenly Court member.

Zhou Xiong Xin had already activated his immortal battlefield rumor cage, in this environment, all other paths were suppressed, only information path was amplified!

Fang Yuan’s winter coat killer move was suppressed, but the other three rank eights’ offensive methods were also suppressed.

As the three rank eights looked at Zhou Xiong Xin, Fang Yuan was also assessing this immortal battlefield rumor cage.

Rumor cage consisted of many silver text and characters, these characters were large as horse carriages or small as ants, they weaved together into a huge ball, enveloping Fang Yuan and the other four rank eights.

Because there were gaps between characters, the round ball seemed to be connected with the outside world, it was not completely shut off.

Fang Yuan had a serious expression.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture, his time path clone was bathed in the light of wisdom, he was trying to deduce the mysteries of this immortal battlefield.

But regarding information path, Fang Yuan was not skilled in it.

If this was a time path or refinement path immortal battlefield, Fang Yuan could use his time path and refinement path quasi-supreme attainment levels to deduce it immediately. But against information path, he lacked the attainment, he could only deduce it using the light of wisdom forcefully.

Undoubtedly, it was wise that Heavenly Court sent out information path Gu Immortal Zhou Xiong Xin to deal with Fang Yuan.

If this was any other Gu Immortal that Fang Yuan has met before, he would be prepared with specialized methods. But this was the first time Fang Yuan was seeing Zhou Xiong Xin.

Zhou Xiong Xin wore a white robe, he had a square face with an air of righteousness, his body was quite muscular.

Those who could become Heavenly Court members were elite experts among rank eights. Forget about the rest, just that rumor cage alone was incredibly profound, it could be activated rapidly and was the fastest immortal battlefield killer move that Fang Yuan had ever seen!

“Fang Yuan, since you are trapped, don’t think of leaving alive. You committed so much slaughter, so many innocent lives died in your hands! Now, you will experience the bad karma that you have created!” Zhou Xiong Xin said in a righteous tone, his aura burst out as he used two immortal killer moves.

Immortal killer move — Malicious Rumors!

Immortal killer move — Rumors Become Tigers!

Instantly, the silver characters in the cage started to shine in a dazzling light.

The dense light flowed like water, moving in the air as it gathered and swirled.

Next, from the silvery light, silver tigers emerged.

The tigers attacked as Fang Yuan shot out like lightning, facing them.

Strength path giant hand!

1Fang Yuan rushed to the silver tigers as he attacked, but the giant hand only lasted for a moment before it broke.

Fang Yuan’s brows rose, the silver tigers had great battle strength.

Immortal killer move — Spring Scissors!

The jade green scissors flew out with great agility, wherever it went, the scissors snipped as tiger heads fell, tigers were cut into halves and their corpses faded into silver light that flickered and scattered.

Spring scissors was unstoppable!

Zhou Xiong Xin’s eyes flashed with a different light, he thought: “It is different from our intel, after the battle for Red Lotus’ true inheritance, Fang Yuan’s spring scissors seems to be modified again, it has grown more powerful!”

Zhou Xiong Xin was an information path Gu Immortal, he could rapidly gather information about any change or unusualness.

“Spring scissors killer move had not been modified for hundreds of years in Xia Cha’s hands, but Fang Yuan could constantly modify it? Is Fang Yuan’s wisdom path attainment level really so high? Or maybe his time path attainment level is very high, after all, this is a rank eight killer move, it is not easy to modify!”

Zhou Xiong Xin was secretly shocked.

Even though he was still under the suppression of rumor cage, spring scissors killer move still slaughtered countless silver tigers like they were thin paper.

But Zhou Xiong Xin did not fluster.

“The battle is under my control, slowly, you will see my power, Fang Yuan.” Zhou Xiong Xin laughed to himself secretly.

A moment later, Fang Yuan frowned subtly.

“The silver tigers are endless, it is clearly one with this rumor cage battlefield, no matter how many I kill, they will regenerate!”

“And most importantly, these silver tigers are growing stronger!”

“Strange...”

Normally, methods like these silver tigers are meant to expend the enemy’s reserves through advantage in numbers.

But these silver tigers were growing stronger at a rapid rate, it was far beyond normality.

Earlier, spring scissors killer move was unstoppable, but now, it seemed slow. Not only did the silver tigers grow stronger, they were much tougher and more agile now, they often managed to escape from spring scissors, causing it to miss its target.

At this time, the time path clone finally made some useful deductions.

Fang Yuan looked at Zhou Xiong Xin as he spoke: “So that’s it, this is the unification of information path and human path methods! You are using the grudge of the whole of Central Continent’s mortals to display this move? Similar to the people’s accusation killer move earlier.”

Zhou Xiong Xin’s eyebrows twitched, Fang Yuan actually discovered the profundity of this move so quickly it was truly shocking.

“Since you found out, there is no point hiding it. Indeed, this move was created by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, it uses the will of Central Continent’s people.”

“Fang Yuan, you slaughtered so many people, everyone is furious. One mortal might be weak, but what about countless mortals? Their collective power is beyond your imagination.”

“Thus, continue to struggle. You cannot defeat the unified will of every person, this is the bad karma that you gathered, this is simply just desserts!”

Fang Yuan was silent.

He started to attack rumor cage itself.

But before he found out the mysteries of this immortal battlefield, even if he used Luo Po seal, there would be little effect, he would be wasting rank eight immortal essence.

At the same time, somewhere in Central Continent.

“Fang Yuan is trapped, he is likely in a certain immortal formation or immortal battlefield. I can barely sense him anymore, our connection is about to be broken.” Shen Cong Sheng said.

He was an Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortal, the first supreme elder of super force Shen clan, he cultivated sound path.

When Fang Yuan went after Eastern Sea’s Dragon Palace, he had been hit by this investigative method unknowingly. Now, even though he was inside rumor cage, Shen Cong Sheng could still sense Fang Yuan’s whereabouts slightly.

“Brother Shen’s investigative methods are truly admirable.” At his side, Song Qi Yuan said with a deep sigh: “Back in the days, I was hit by your investigative methods, it was truly a nightmare.”

“Haha.” Shen Cong Sheng laughed loudly: “We were still young, to think that you managed to steal the inheritance secretly, causing us to end up with no gains despite our hard work.”

“It is expected that Fang Yuan would obstruct the Refinement Path Convention, he has deep enmity with Heavenly Court after all!”

“Indeed, even years ago, he was already fighting with Heavenly Court in treasure yellow heaven by exposing secrets of both sides.”

“Heavenly Court wants to repair Fate, even if he is an otherworldly demon, he would not want them to succeed. Heavenly Court would have too great of an advantage after all.”

The surrounding Gu Immortals also spoke, some had cold and indifferent expressions.

Taking a look, these were all rank eight Gu Immortals!

Song Qi Yuan, Qing Yue An, Shen Cong Sheng, Zhang Yin, Granny Rong, Shi Miao, and others, this was an unprecedented gathering!

“Alright, isn’t this situation good? Fang Yuan is also a problem, with him resisting and fighting Heavenly Court, we will have less issues here. Hmm... Dragon Palace is nearby, there is no mistake.” Shen Cong Sheng led the way as he moved ahead of the group.

It turned out that because Duke Long snatched the rank eight Immortal Gu House from these Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals, they had lost their face.

1Thus, during this Refinement Path Convention, these people gathered secretly, they wanted to obtain Dragon Palace and salvage their reputation!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1701: Killing Rank Eight!

A group of Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals flew along Central Continent’s mountain ranges at a low altitude.

After Duke Long took the Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace by force, he caused Eastern Sea’s righteous path, demonic path, and even lone immortal rank eights to work together.

“It should be here.” Shen Cong Sheng suddenly stopped as he showed a suspicious expression towards the mountain below him.

This mountain was very plain, it was surrounded by mountains and was nothing special.

“This?” Hua Cai Yun frowned, shaking her head: “I did not find anything with my investigative method.”

“Mm... but I feel that this mountain is different.” Qing Yue An said.

“It is here.” Granny Rong said with certainty.

The surrounding Gu Immortals looked toward her.

Granny Rong was a poison path Gu Immortal, how did she have such incredible attainment in investigative methods?

“There is an illusion formation here.” Song Qi Yuan’s eyes shined with crystal light as he spoke.

“But we do not have any formation path member now.” Hua Cai Yun added.

Zhang Yin laughed coldly: “Why are we hesitating? Let’s break into the formation by force. Earlier in Eastern Sea, we were all wary of each other, that allowed Duke Long to succeed. Now, we have set an alliance, we will advance and retreat together, even if Duke Long comes, so what?”

“Hahaha, he is right, let’s charge in!” Song Qi Yuan laughed loudly, attacking.

Boom boom boom!

Rank eight Gu Immortals had incredible methods.

In a chain of explosions, the illusion formation seemed to have shattered, it exposed the true scenery.

Below the mountain, there was a huge rock cavern, the cavern had natural dragon markings, it resembled dancing dragons that intertwined together.

Eastern Sea’s immortals only took a glance before they lost interest in this cavern with dragon markings.

They flew into the cave and found that there was a huge hole below.

They flew along the path, going down.

After passing a long tunnel, light appeared before the immortals’ eyes.

“This is a natural Earth Trench below the cavern!”

“This is not a new Earth Trench, it must have existed for a very long time.”

1“Is Dragon Palace at the depths of this Earth Trench?”

“Duke Long took away the Immortal Gu House, why did he put it here?”

Eastern Sea’s immortals discussed.

The Earth Trench was unfathomably deep, it was completely dark and eerie.

Compared to the Earth Trench, they were too small, they were like insignificant flies.

Roar!

Suddenly, an intense gust of wind emerged from the Earth Trench, blowing upwards.

At the same time, the entire Earth Trench started to shake, the rocks along the cliffs of the Earth Trench started to fall.

The expressions of Eastern Sea’s immortals changed, they felt a strong sense of threat.

The tremors started abruptly and ended just as abruptly.

More than ten breaths later, the entire Earth Trench returned to normal.

“What exactly is down there?”

“No matter what it is, it was able to make all of us feel danger, it is not simple!”

“I want to see what Duke Long is up to.”

Eastern Sea's immortals were about to explore the depth of the Earth Trench when rainbow lights started to shine in the Earth Trench, a super immortal formation appeared and enveloped all of the Gu Immortals.

“They were waiting in ambush!”

“Such an amazing immortal formation!”

“Who is it?”

An old Central Continent rank eight Gu Immortal appeared before the Eastern Sea immortals.

He was wearing a gray robe, he was covered in a deep level of sadness all over his body.

Eastern Sea's rank eights were very knowledgeable, they quickly recognized this Central Continent rank eight expert.

“Oh? You are Wind Cloud Manor's Old Man Bei Feng?”

Old Man Bei Feng sighed: “Yes indeed, you have come here to attack Hidden Dragon Cave, it is very unwise. With me here, no matter what objective you have, you will not succeed.”

“Hidden Dragon Cave! This is Hidden Dragon Cave?!” Many Eastern Sea Gu Immortals felt greatly shocked.

Hidden Dragon Cave contained the legendary immemorial desolate beast Di Zang Sheng, everyone knew that. But its location had never been exposed.

Old Man Bei Feng was originally able to become a Heavenly Court member, but because his beloved grandson Feng Chan Zi made a mistake, Old Man Bei Feng took the punishment together and they were tasked to guard over Di Zang Sheng in Hidden Dragon Cave.

Because of specific reasons, Duke Long placed the rank eight Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace here. These Eastern Sea Gu Immortals searched for clues and found their way to Hidden Dragon Cave.

“Puff!” Old Man Bei Feng's body shook as he activated the super immortal formation.

This super immortal formation was able to trap Di Zang Sheng, it was naturally very powerful, Eastern Sea's Gu Immortals were all swept by its power, their eyes blurred as they found that they were trapped in a huge space after regaining their vision, isolated from each other.

At the next moment, Eastern Sea's immortals struck and attacked their surroundings.

A rank eight battle was about to begin!

At the same time, immortals acted all over Central Continent.

Mountain Tortoise Valley.

Inside the valley, walls were steep, almost perpendicular to the ground.

Demonic path Gu Immortal Nine Ghost Finger sneaked in here.

He looked at the mountain tortoises here with a look of desire.

There were many mountain tortoises, they filled the entire valley, among them were gigantic desolate beast mountain tortoises.

“Mountain tortoises that are rare in Eastern Sea are common in Southern Border and Central Continent. This Mountain Tortoise Valley is the largest mountain tortoise breeding ground in Central Continent. Hehehe.”

Nine Ghost Finger laughed smugly to himself.

This was originally the resource point governed by Spirit Butterfly Valley of the ten great ancient sects. But now, the Gu Immortal guarding this place was drawn away to protect a certain Refinement Path Convention area.

“However, even though the person left, they left behind warning methods.” Nine Ghost Finger did not enter abruptly, he stayed outside and investigated for a long time, realizing the truth.

This was an earth path immortal killer move.

“Let me see how to unravel this method!” Nine Ghost Finger’s eyes shined brightly, his ten fingers quickly deduced and they flew all over the place.

His fingers moved fast, alternating between real and phantom, there were originally ten fingers but soon, only nine finger phantoms were left.

Nine Ghost Finger’s wisdom path inheritance was very unique.

The missing finger represented the ‘one in the Great Dao’ that fled, it was the most profound heavenly secret1.

Nine Ghost Finger only secondarily cultivated wisdom path, he primarily cultivated soul path. His fingers danced as he muttered phrases to himself.

The more he deduced, the more his eyes shined with brilliance.

And meanwhile, countless li away in Moonlight Mound, a serious battle ensued.

Rank seven lone immortal Xie Bao Shu floated in the sky, his aura was grand as he attacked Moonlight Mound with a barrage of attacks.

He was dressed in a blue robe, he looked like a scholar with a handsome jade face, he had the appearance of a good looking young man.

His opponent, the female immortal guarding Moonlight Mound, was in a sad state, she said furiously: “Xie Bao Shu, you are not worthy of being a famous lone immortal of Eastern Sea, you actually acted so demonically and tried to plunder Moonlight Mound! Go and steal from the ten great ancient sects if you dare, we are both lone immortals yet you still target me! Back then, I bought your year Gu, I had given you business!”

Xie Bao Shu sighed: “Fairy Yue Hua, unless I had no choice, I would not do this. My year Gu business has flopped, I need another source of income. If you can give me half of your moonlight mushrooms, I will leave now without question.”

1The Central Continent female immortal wanted to cough out blood: “I had spent thirty years nurturing my moonlight mushrooms and put in huge effort, you want half of them now, you are dreaming! Even if I cannot defeat you, you will not have them, before I escape, I will destroy the entire Moonlight Mound!”

“Can you?” Suddenly, a soft whisper was heard behind the Central Continent female immortal.

“Ambush!” The female immortal was very shocked, someone had actually sneaked behind her without her noticing.

“Who?!” The female immortal wanted to turn around and check but at the next moment, her vision went dark as she fainted.

You Xian Zi stood above Moonlight Mound as he looked at the Central Continent female immortal, before turning to Xie Bao Shu with a smile.

You Xian Zi specialized in theft path, he was the Gu Immortal most skilled at collecting Earth Trench black oil in Eastern Sea. His appearance was ugly and he looked like a lecher, but he was best friends with Xie Bao Shu.

Xie Bao Shu came to Central Continent for resources, You Xian Zi naturally came to help.

Inside rumor cage.

Fang Yuan shouted as he unleashed immortal killer move myriad dragon.

Myriad dragons flew and fought against the countless silver tigers.

At once, dragons and tigers fought, there were beautiful silver sparkles when they fought, amidst deep killing intent.

After a few breaths of time, the dragons fell in numbers, they were not the tigers’ match.

Fang Yuan’s face was grim as he continued to activate myriad dragon, holding his own.

“Lord Zhou Xiong Xin’s methods are truly powerful!

“This combination is amazing, using rumor cage, malicious rumors, and rumors become tigers, his battle strength is increasing endlessly.”

“The longer this drags on, the more disadvantage it is for Fang Yuan. But he is in a desperate situation, he can no longer escape.”

The three Central Continent rank eights watched by the side, guarding the formation from a corner.

Zhou Xiong Xin alone was able to suppress Fang Yuan.

Any Heavenly Court Gu Immortal would have incredible talent, they were genius experts.

“Normally, I only have upper-tier rank eight battle strength, I am inferior to Li Huang. But with my information path advantage, using Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s killer move and borrowing the wills of Central Continent’s countless humans, my battle strength will continue to grow.”

“At this rate, I will eventually kill Fang Yuan through attrition!”

Even though Zhou Xiong Xin had the advantage, he did not become careless.

Even though he had just woken up, a huge amount of information had allowed him to gain a deep understanding of Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan’s great strength, craftiness, and threat was deeply etched into Zhou Xiong Xin’s mind.

“Information path and human path... Heavenly Court truly has deep foundations, by just sending a counter, I am in deep trouble.”

Fang Yuan looked at Zhou Xiong Xin as he sighed to himself.

The enemy did not expose any weaknesses, they were very vigilant against Fang Yuan and used all sorts of investigative methods, any sort of commotion would be detected, Fang Yuan’s countless battle tactics could not be used.

Fang Yuan had become rank eight for a very short period of time, he was reliant on reverse flow protection seal and Luo Po seal, and others to stabilize his battle strength at upper-tier rank eight.

In earlier fights, he was either in the five regions’ regional walls, five regional mountain range, or the River of Time, Fang Yuan could use the environment or other people to his advantage, shortening the difference in strength between him and the enemies.

But now, he was deep in Central Continent, he was countered by a true rank eight great expert.

In terms of information path, he had too shallow attainment. Human path was worse.

“Forget it, the probing ends here, it is time to use my territorial advantage.” Fang Yuan’s lips moved as he exposed a crafty smile.

At the next moment, his ambush was activated.

Rumble!

A huge formation activated in the outer world of Central Continent.

Rumor cage was like an egg, it was smashed by the terrifying force!

“Why is there a formation here?!” Central Continent’s four immortals were shocked and furious.

“Make a guess?” Fang Yuan laughed heartily, turning into the immemorial year monkey as he jumped towards Zhou Xiong Xin, punching with his fist.

Rumor cage broke, the backlash made Zhou Xiong Xin spat out mouthfuls of blood.

Time path method activated, time was slowed in the surroundings, Zhou Xiong Xin could not dodge in time, he was hit by Fang Yuan’s fist as he crashed to the ground.

“Quick, save Lord Zhou Xiong Xin!”

“Let’s attack together!!”

The other three Gu Immortals charged at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan laughed sinisterly, the formation activated again, stalling the three rank eights for a breath of time.

Using this chance, Fang Yuan’s huge body descended as he landed before Zhou Xiong Xin who was like a rag doll.

Immortal killer move — Spring Scissors!

A huge pair of scissors was held in the monkey’s hands. The blades were tens of feet long, they stabbed into the soil on the ground.

Next, the huge scissors snipped, the ground was like a soft piece of tofu when compared to the sharp blades.

Crack!

With a soft sound, the scissors closed up as the two blades met.

Blood splattered.

Zhou Xiong Xin’s head flew in the sky before it landed on the ground.

Zhou Xiong Xin had died!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1702: Common Enemy Hatred

“More than half of Imprisonment Valley’s southern thorns were stolen by a mysterious Gu Immortal.”

“Red river beach’s immortal formation was destroyed, the blazing red stones inside were all plundered by three Gu Immortals.”

“Someone wants to steal Falling Heavenly River’s primeval sand, he was forced away by Heaven’s Envy Manor’s immortal killer move that was left behind.”

...

Fairy Zi Wei took command in Heavenly Court, observing the situation of the entire Central Continent, all of these news made her frown more tightly.

She was furious.

The huge Central Continent had abundant resources and talents, Heavenly Court’s leaders and Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects had worked effortlessly for countless generations to create this prosperity.

1But now, because of these thieves, it was a huge mess.

Meanwhile, Duke Long sat in his seat and listened to Fairy Zi Wei report the disastrous news, his face was extremely calm.

“No matter, so what if we lose some resources? They are just tiny problems.” Duke Long said as he shut his eyes, resting as his arm supported his chin.

Fairy Zi Wei breathed in deeply, telling herself to calm down but at the next moment, her eyes widened as she said angrily: “Fang Yuan has already escaped, three of our Central Continent rank eights were injured, while senior Zhou Xiong Xin... he was killed by Fang Yuan!”

“Oh?” A sharp light flashed in Duke Long’s eyes, he stopped resting as he sat up straight, saying: “Zhou Xiong Xin was specially chosen to fight Fang Yuan, he had the greatest strength among them but was actually killed by Fang Yuan while the rest escaped with injuries, there must be a reason. Where is the battle report?”

“Here.” Fairy Zi Wei handed an information path Gu worm to Duke Long.

The battle report was very detailed, because other than Zhou Xiong Xin, the other three Central Continent rank eights were alive.

After seeing the report, the hall went silent.

Long after, Fairy Zi Wei said: “I originally thought that Fang Yuan killed senior Zhou Xiong Xin using Luo Po seal, to think that the killer move used was spring scissors.”

“According to this intel, spring scissors was modified again. And most importantly, when Fang Yuan transformed into the immemorial year monkey, his battle strength has broken through to the peak of rank eight!”

Saying so, Fairy Zi Wei sighed deeply.

She had known that Fang Yuan was a threat long ago. If he was allowed to grow freely, he would become a huge problem.

Fairy Zi Wei had expected this to happen, but she did not expect that this day would come so quickly!

“How long has Fang Yuan become a Gu Immortal? In just the blink of an eye, he became rank eight. And with another blink, he reached the peak of rank eight, even my battle strength is only at upper-tier rank eight level.”

At once, Fairy Zi Wei felt a little dejected.

Duke Long looked at Fairy Zi Wei as he said slowly in a low tone: “Zi Wei, don’t look down on yourself, Fang Yuan grew rapidly not just because of his talent, he also had external help. He was chosen by Red Lotus Demon Venerable and obtained Spring Autumn Cicada. He also got Spectral Soul’s true inheritance and inherited Shadow Sect. He even has ghostly concealment, that is part of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance. And don’t forget, with the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, how many benefits did Fang Yuan get from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable?”

“We are already paying a lot of attention to him, your measures were not wrong. The reason why we failed was not just because of Fang Yuan, but also because of the forces affecting him. We are not eliminating Fang Yuan alone, we are also contesting the forces that surround him.”.

“These are either Immortal Venerables or Demon Venerables, they were the reason Fang Yuan could grow to this extent.”

1Fairy Zi Wei heard this and showed a shameful expression: “I had lost my cool and stability, thank you for the reminder, Lord Duke Long.”

Duke Long smiled faintly: “I am not consoling you, this is just a fact. However, even though Fang Yuan has peak rank eight battle strength, as long as he is not rank nine, he cannot overturn our Heavenly Court. Zhou Xiong Xin’s death was clearly reported, it was because Fang Yuan used an immortal formation to destroy rumor cage.”

“Fang Yuan is crafty and vicious, he purposely stalled for time and made rumor cage stronger with the will of Central Continent’s people, far beyond its original capabilities. By destroying it afterwards, Zhou Xiong Xin suffered immense backlash that he could not endure, causing him to be heavily injured.”

“Even though the remaining three rank eights tried to help immediately, Fang Yuan was prepared and used the formation to disrupt them. By turning into the immemorial year monkey and gaining peak rank eight battle strength, he caught everyone off-guard and killed Zhou Xiong Xin.”

“Fang Yuan had always been pretending to be weak, using rumor cage, he harmed our Gu Immortal. Even though Zhou Xiong Xin was very vigilant, he still fell for Fang Yuan’s trap.”

“Actually, if both sides fought fairly, even if Fang Yuan had peak rank eight battle strength, he could not kill Zhou Xiong Xin. The battle afterwards could prove this point, our three rank eights fought together and retreated, Fang Yuan could not retain them.”

Fairy Zi Wei nodded continuously, Duke Long’s analysis was the same as hers, she agreed: “There is no strongest Immortal Gu, only strongest Gu Immortal. Fang Yuan has grown fully now, he has powerful methods and vicious plans, he is also ruthless and achieves outstanding results. Right now, he has peak rank eight battle strength, our arrangements earlier were all disrupted, should we send Li Huang to deal with him?”

Duke Long shook his head: “Li Huang must continue to guard the Refinement Path Convention. Restoring Fate is the most important goal, we cannot divert anyone away from that objective. Even if we make Li Huang go after Fang Yuan, he has Fixed Immortal Travel. Even if teleportation fails, Fang Yuan would still want to waste Li Huang’s time. After all, he is not the only person who wants to disrupt the restoration of Fate, we cannot fumble at this moment.”

“Yes, Lord Duke Long.” Fairy Zi Wei had regained her calm already.

Even though Duke Long was not a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he was in charge of Heavenly Court, his disposition was extraordinary, he was like a huge pillar stabilizing and holding up the entire situation.

Let alone peak rank eight battle strength, even if Fang Yuan was a pseudo-Immortal Venerable with the same strength as Duke Long, so what?

Duke Long believed that with Heavenly Court’s foundation, they would definitely be able to repair fate Gu. Even if Fang Yuan caused much trouble, as long as he was not a rank nine venerable, he could not change the situation!

Duke Long was most concerned about the progress of the Refinement Path Convention.

He looked at the other person in the hall, asking: “Lord Zheng Yuan, how has the activation of common enemy hatred killer move gone?”

The person in question was an old man, he had many wrinkles on his face, he was thin and dry like a stick, he was truly resembling a man about to step into his grave.

1He sat on a stone bench and was curled up due to his hunchback. He breathed slowly and lightly, his aura was so weak that it would not be strange if he died now.

But his seniority surpassed Duke Long, even though he had rank seven cultivation level, he was a member of Heavenly Court.

He was Old Man Zheng Yuan.

Because of fate Gu’s restoration, he had woken up from the immortal graveyard.

Normally speaking, Heavenly Court only recruited rank eight Gu Immortals, and those had to be elites among elites. But Old Man Zheng Yuan only had rank seven cultivation level, yet he was acknowledged and recruited into Heavenly Court.

The most important reason was because Old Man Zheng Yuan cultivated a special path – human path!

The concept of human path had existed from very long ago.

It originated from the person who everyone living in this world knew, Ren Zu.

The <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> left behind by Ren Zu could be said as the greatest, oldest, and most mystical inheritance in human history.

2<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> contained the profundities of human path, many great geniuses were able to gain some sort of comprehension from reading it, these gains were usually spectacular and shocking to everyone.

Heavenly Court thought of itself as humanity’s leader, they had accumulated countless human path methods, these were one of Duke Long’s greatest sources of confidence.

Old Man Zheng Yuan spoke in a weak voice: “Back then, when the eighteen variant human demonic immortals attacked Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, he was invincible in the world. After the eighteen variant human demonic immortals lost terribly, they were unresigned and tried to deceive the Immortal Venerable. Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was troubled and sat in the formation for three days and nights, thinking deeply and unable to regain his senses. After reading <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, he broke through the confusion in his heart, creating many human path killer moves such as countless lifeforms, people’s united hearts, and common enemy hatred.”

1“I am merely a key to activate Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s remnant methods, I do not deserve the title of ‘Lord’, please address me by my name, Duke Long.”

Old Man Zheng Yuan was very humble: “Right now, countless lifeforms has already been activated, the killer move common enemy hatred is also effective in the whole of Central Continent, now, as long as we can gather enough human will to a certain degree, we will be able to use the killer move people’s united hearts.”

“Good.” Duke Long smiled: “This is good, with common enemy hatred, Central Continent’s people will be united in their anger and hatred, the Refinement Path Convention will definitely continue smoothly.”

Central Continent, Mystical Body Sect.

This sect was created by a supreme elder of Wind Cloud Manor, Wu Fa, it was also a competition location of this Central Continent Refinement Path Convention.

After the initial selection, those that could compete here were all experts in Gu refinement.

There were thousands of Gu Masters in the square, each had their own space as they refined Gu.

The entire square was covered in a thick wall of light, rank seven Gu Immortal Wu Fa was staying here, protecting the place.

Half the time had passed, most Gu Masters had failed already.

Some people had soot on their face, some were pitiful and their arms were blown to bits, bloody holes appeared in their chest...

Gu refinement was a dangerous process, any distraction and they would suffer huge injuries.

Another Gu Master faced an accident during Gu refinement as he fainted on the spot.

The formation below the square’s floor tiles activated, this Gu Master was teleported outside as healing Gu Masters gathered and quickly treated him.

This person had made a mistake while handling the Gu materials, the poison from the materials seeped into his body, causing him to faint.

Soon, he was saved and managed to wake up.

“Even though you woke up, your limbs are weak and your mind is fuzzy, you cannot continue with the competition.” The healing Gu Master felt pity for him, he was not weak, many people thought he would succeed.

This person laughed: “So what if I failed? According to the great immortals, even if I fail in the competition, it will still benefit Central Continent! It will benefit the righteous path! Those demonic path immortals are trying their best to ruin our Refinement Path Convention, they killed so many innocent lives! Even though we are mortals, we cannot give up on resisting them. Participating in the Refinement Path Convention and keeping it going is our revenge against them!”

Even though his voice was weak, his content was firm, it felt like clashing swords.

“Good lad!” The healing Gu Master gave a thumbs up: “I think so too, those murderers are no immortals, they have no empathy at all. We must resist, we cannot let them win!”

Right at this moment, a change occurred in the square.

Two young Gu Masters stood up, holding a Gu worm in their hands.

One of them was Hong Yi, he shouted: “I succeeded!”

“Good, both of you succeeded, you will share the ranking of number one. According to the rules, you can get a small reward from our sect.” Gu Immortal Wu Fa’s voice resounded in the square, everyone started to envy them.

The two young Gu Masters looked at each other, they were neither too far nor too close to each other, one was at the center of the square while the other was at the north-east corner.

“Report your names.” Wu Fa said, he did not show up, but upon inspecting these two winners, his opinion of them increasingly grew, they were both very handsome and had great cultivation levels.

“I am Hong Yi.” Hong Yi said.

“My name is Ye Fan.” The other young man also spoke.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1703: Avoiding The Limelight Temporarily

White clouds moved beside him, winds howled by his ears, Fang Yuan flew rapidly in the sky.

A trace of blood was still at the corner of his lips, in the intense battle against rank eights earlier, he did not leave unscathed.

Especially at the end, after his plot succeeded in killing Zhou Xiong Xin, the remaining three rank eights decided to escape, they cooperated and broke Fang Yuan’s formation.

This formation was not made by Fang Yuan, Shadow Sect had created it long ago using the natural dao marks of the area, it was a natural super formation.

This super immortal formation had great power, it was similar to the one that Fang Yuan used to capture Xia Cha and the rest.

This immortal formation was usually concealed without any exposed traces, Shadow Sect created it so that the organization Defy could have a base camp when the time was ripe.

Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects occupied their own territory, they had the most resources. The righteous path, lone immortals, and demonic immortals were all desperately trying to survive between the cracks of these ten great ancient sects.

But the sect system was different from the clan system, they only focused on talents. Many cultivation geniuses did not lack talent, they lacked cultivation resources, it was the cause of their stagnation.

As time passed, these people naturally developed lots of conflict with the Central Continent ten great ancient sects.

Shadow Sect thought of this and secretly gathered the Gu Immortals who were unhappy with the ten great ancient sects, creating a loose organization that was very secretive, known as Defy.

Defy was similar to Zombie Alliance, it was a branch of Shadow Sect. This was similar to the ten great ancient sects and Heavenly Court.

Shadow Sect had placed some hope in Defy, but unfortunately, it was not Fairy Zi Wei’s match even though it tried to hide.

Right now, Defy was no more, Fairy Zi Wei held great credit in completely eradicating it.

Since Fang Yuan showed up and destroyed the competition locations of the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, he had also thought about possible Heavenly Court pursuers.

This super formation was his trump card.

When he realized something amiss, he escaped to this location without going anywhere else.

Zhou Xiong Xin used rumor cage killer move and trapped Fang Yuan, feeling overjoyed, but he did not think that this was Fang Yuan’s ambush from the very beginning.

The super immortal formation did not let down Fang Yuan’s expectations, when he used it, he immediately broke rumor cage’s connection with the outside world, before completely crushing this immortal battlefield.

Next, the immortal formation even stopped three rank eights for a breath of time, so that Fang Yuan had the crucial time to kill Zhou Xiong Xin.

Finally, using the immortal formation, Fang Yuan fought against the remaining three rank eights, but the immortal formation had already expended itself, this kind of immortal formation created using natural dao marks had a weakness as well, the environment could be destroyed.

The three Central Continent rank eights knew this and managed to destroy the immortal formation.

The immortal formation was destroyed, Fang Yuan also suffered a backlash like Zhou Xiong Xin.

Immortal killer moves were like this, the stronger they were, the greater the backlash when they got broken, they were simply double-edged swords.

But Fang Yuan was mentally prepared, he was not caught unguarded like Zhou Xiong Xin.

The three Central Continent rank eights did not use this chance, they were bent on retreating.

Fang Yuan did not have an immortal battlefield or an immortal formation to obstruct them, they were able to escape.

He had peak rank eight battle strength, he could defeat these three people, but killing them was too hard. Unless he could trap them or make use of a rare opportunity like how he killed Zhou Xiong Xin.

1Normally, Fang Yuan relied on Luo Po seal, spring scissors, winter coat, five finger fist heart sword, and other methods to maintain his upper-tier rank eight battle strength.

He worked hard to raise these many Immortal Gu, it was not for fun.

But when he became the immemorial year monkey, his battle strength would rise to peak rank eight.

The difference was because of his dao marks!

In the contest for the Red Lotus true inheritance, Fang Yuan neither won nor lost. In the Dragon Palace contest, Fang Yuan lost. But afterwards, heaven form did not disappoint, it finally found the hidden location of the crucial Immortal Gu inside Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Fang Yuan had also used the dream realm to raise his transformation path attainment level during this period.

He first used familiar face to disguise himself before entering the grotto-heaven and using his theft path methods to steal all of the Immortal Gu inside.

Even though that Beast Calamity heavenly spirit was clear-minded, how could it compare to the crafty Fang Yuan?

At this point, Fang Yuan no longer had any concerns, he changed his identity again and inherited the Beast Calamity true inheritance.

The pitiful Beast Calamity heavenly spirit was completely deceived, even when Beast Calamity grotto-heaven got annexed, it did not discover Fang Yuan’s true identity.

This Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was a crucial turning point.

Normally speaking, an earthly calamity gave a Gu Immortal two hundred and fifty dao marks, heavenly tribulation was seven hundred and fifty, grand tribulation was seven thousand two hundred and fifty, while myriad tribulations were even higher, at eighty-six thousand seven hundred and fifty.

These were just the average numbers, some calamities and tribulations were more ferocious and Gu Immortals would gain more dao marks for passing them.

Rank seven Gu Immortals faced an earthly calamity every ten years, while rank eight Gu Immortals faced a heavenly tribulation every ten years.

Rank seven Gu Immortals faced a heavenly tribulation every fifty years, while rank eight Gu Immortals faced a grand tribulation every fifty years.

Rank seven Gu Immortals faced a grand tribulation every hundred years, while rank eight Gu Immortals faced a myriad tribulation every hundred years.

One myriad tribulation gave eighty thousand dao marks, it was more than ten times of a grand tribulation, this was also the reason why rank eight Gu Immortals often suppressed rank seven, the difference in their dao marks was just too high.

Fang Yuan annexed Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, which had already passed one myriad tribulation. Even though the grotto-heaven’s original owner, Beast Calamity Immortal died after the first myriad tribulation, the Beast Calamity grotto-heaven that he left behind passed many calamities and tribulations afterwards, it was not far from its second myriad tribulation.

That was to say, forget about all the other dao marks in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, just in terms of transformation path dao marks alone, it had more than a hundred thousand!

And Fang Yuan himself already had nearly a hundred thousand transformation path dao marks! He originally had fifty thousand, but he killed many Heavenly Court rank seven experts in the River of Time, he annexed a lot of blessed lands and gained a lot of dao marks from various paths.

Thus, after annexing Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, his transformation path dao marks reached two hundred thousand!

This number was terrifying.

Rank eight Gu Immortals who cultivate transformation path would need to pass two myriad tribulations in order to obtain so many transformation path dao marks.

Bo Qing was a rank eight Gu Immortal who had passed two myriad tribulations, Duke Long was too.

When Fang Yuan transforms into the immemorial year monkey, these transformation path dao marks would turn into time path dao marks.

Don’t forget, after annexing Xia Cha’s grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan had seventy thousand time path dao marks. In the River of Time, he killed the three Xunzi and annexed their immortal apertures, his time path dao marks surpassed a hundred thousand.

Two hundred thousand added with a hundred thousand, after becoming an immemorial year monkey, Fang Yuan would have a total of three hundred thousand time path dao marks!

What did that imply?

If a rank eight Gu Immortal cultivated time path without any special fortuitous encounters, they would need to pass a third myriad tribulation.

But after passing a myriad tribulation, they would be a rank nine venerable.

Of course, rank nine Gu Venerables would definitely have more than three hundred thousand dao marks, this was just a starting point.

Even so, in terms of time path dao marks, Fang Yuan had reached pseudo-Immortal Venerable level. Along with his rank eight time path Immortal Gu and many useful rank eight time path killer moves, his battle strength was to the extent of peak rank eight.

Earlier, when Fang Yuan fought against Li Huang, he used Luo Po seal and could not break through Luo Po seal's verdant sun flame cloak. But now, Fang Yuan became the immemorial year monkey, he was looking forward to the clash between spring scissors and verdant sun flame cloak!

"But against Duke Long, it will still be difficult." Fang Yuan's gaze was deep.

There were many things that influenced battle strength, dao marks were one aspect, Immortal Gu were also another aspect, the immortal aperture's foundation was another, and number of methods was also one.

Fang Yuan did not lack dao marks. He had three time path Immortal Gu, it was just passable. But in terms of killer moves, he was too weak, even though he modified spring scissors killer move multiple times and raised its strength, the core was unchanged. He only had these few moves.

As for Duke Long, Fang Yuan had witnessed his fight against Purple Mountain True Monarch, be it transformation path or qi path dao marks, he had at least three hundred thousand dao marks.

1Duke Long also had more than three rank eight Immortal Gu for sure.

Duke Long's immortal killer moves were numerous and profound, especially moves like triple qi retraction, it was a divine technique that could not be guarded against.

Because of all these elements, Duke Long had pseudo-Immortal Venerable battle strength!

Pseudo-Immortal Venerable had the word 'venerable' in it, it was not easy to achieve.

Precisely so, Duke Long was able to obtain Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace in front of all the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, this showed how powerful he was.

Even though he got injured in the process.

Pseudo-Immortal Venerable was still not an Immortal Venerable, the difference between the two was night and day.

Fang Yuan did not lack confidence, he was filled with confidence in himself, but this was built upon his self-awareness!

He knew very clearly how strong he really was.

Thus, Fang Yuan was wary of Duke Long simply because his battle strength was not on par with the latter!

“This human path people’s accusation killer move is getting stronger. Even though I have little understanding of human path, I can see that the situation is getting worse.”

Fang Yuan frowned lightly.

He had deep wisdom path attainment that even Fairy Zi Wei did not dare to underestimate. The emotions of wisdom path Gu Immortals were usually not without reason, they were mostly premonition.

“I cannot resolve people’s accusation using emperor yama. The more times I show up in Central Continent and the longer I stay, the stronger this people’s accusation killer move becomes.”

“But now, the real fight has not started yet, even though many incidents have occurred in Central Continent, they are just small scuffles.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan made up his mind: “Raising a troop just for a single battle, it is time to let them out!”

In the battle against Zhou Xiong Xin earlier, Fang Yuan waited patiently but did not get to meet Duke Long.

Now that the super immortal formation was destroyed, Fang Yuan had no confidence of facing Duke Long alone.

To be honest, Duke Long’s refusal to show up was giving Fang Yuan immense pressure and threat, he had to conceal his traces and reduce the risks involved.

“Next, I will let Bai Ning Bing and the rest cause havoc everywhere. I should try and lay low now, this great battle has just begun!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with a cold light.

TL Note: This chapter is speculation from Fang Yuan’s point of view and understanding, not necessarily established facts.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1704: Chaos in Central Continent

Central Continent.

There was an untroubled island floating in the sky, Carefree Island, this was the territory of Grand Pavilion Sect.

A round of the Gu refinement competition was about to end.

The three Gu Immortals defending Carefree Island also relaxed.

One looked outside at the clouds as he stretched his body: “It is finally over, this is the most tiring experience I’ve ever had in guarding the Refinement Path Convention.”

“Haha, that’s true. But there is no helping it, that demon Fang Yuan is too vicious, many people from other regions are also holding ill intent.”

“After this mission is over, I will treat you guys to wine.”

“Oh? Your nine flow wine is very famous, to think that I would get to taste it.”

“Hahaha, it is an exaggeration.” The Gu Immortal who was praised quickly waved his hand but suddenly, his expression froze.

“Guh!” He had a shocked expression as his body turned stiff, he fell down onto the ground, dead.

“Be careful!”

“Enemy attack! His soul has dissipated!”

The remaining two rank seven Gu Immortals were shocked, they activated their defensive methods.

Next, they saw that the Gu Masters in the competition fell one by one, they had all died.

The two Gu Immortals staring with a furious expression as they watched, right when they were about to complete their mission, they were attacked.

“They are so vicious, to be actually attacking mortal Gu Masters!”

“Quickly come out, which demonic coward is it, you only dare to sneak attack?”

The two Gu Immortals shouted.

The competition grounds were in chaos, people continued to fall.

“You want to see me?” A smile resounded: “I will grant you your wish.”

Amidst his laughter, Ying Wu Xie appeared.

“Demon, go and die!” The two Gu Immortals gritted their teeth, they moved and attacked.

Ying Wu Xie stood on the spot without moving, he smiled as he looked at the two with a mocking gaze.

The two Gu Immortals were still moving when their expressions suddenly changed, their speed fell drastically.

“We... we are already hit?!”

“But earlier...”

“What move is this?”

The two rank seven Gu Immortals fell on the ground, watching as Ying Wu Xie walked towards them.

Ying Wu Xie smiled, keeping the three Gu Immortal corpses.

“Lord sect leader wants your immortal apertures after all.”

He gave a final glance at the competition ground, there was nobody standing anymore, it was a field of corpses.

A moment later, Ying Wu Xie flew out of Carefree Island, the entire island was filled with dead silence, not a single living being remained.

At the same time, at the upper stream of scale light river.

Hei Lou Lan shouted: “Obstructing me with a mere immortal formation?”

Before she finished her words, her aura surged and filled the world, radiating towards her surroundings, causing huge winds to gather and blow.

Boom!

An immortal formation was unleashed, the immortal formation that had its maximum defense put up was shattered.

Puff puff puff.

The Gu Immortals defending this place spat out blood as they suffered a backlash.

Hei Lou Lan laughed sinisterly as strength path phantoms appeared around her, charging towards the Gu Immortals.

1Hundred segment forest.

Bai Ning Bing stepped on the snow as she walked slowly.

The green and lush bamboo forest had been frozen entirely, it was like a bug trapped in amber, unable to move at all.

The grassland was covered in thick snow, there was no vitality left.

On the competition stage at the center of the bamboo forest, hundreds of mortal Gu Masters were frozen into statues, not a person survived.

Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, and Ying Wu Xie had been cultivating on the stone lotus island, after future self killer move was used on them, they could use their future self’s battle strength, they became elites among rank seven Gu Immortals, ordinary characters were not their match.

Seeing this result, Fang Yuan was pleased. Having the help of future self, these three grew rapidly and had the qualifications to join this huge battle.

“These three are geniuses with exemplary talent, once their battle strength rose, they immediately made other rank sevens look weak. Now, it will depend on Heavenly Court’s response.”

Heavenly Court.

After getting the new information, Fairy Zi Wei’s expression turned grim again.

She commanded Heavenly Court and spent a huge price to collect time path immortal materials from treasure yellow heaven. In the end, she did not manage to restrict Fang Yuan’s growth, even his three subordinates had such great strength now.

After the information got to Duke Long, he looked at the scene of the battle as bright light shined in his eyes, he was visibly moved.

Fairy Zi Wei could not tell, but Duke Long knew at once.

He was silent for a while before saying: “Fang Yuan! I actually underestimated you.”

Fairy Zi Wei was confused: “Lord Duke Long, what do you mean?”

“The reason why these three gained a huge burst in strength is because of killer move — Future Self.” Duke Long said in a deep tone.

“Future self?”

“This was created by my first disciple. Back then, he used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth and lost his venerable cultivation level, to make up for this problem, he invented future self killer move.” Duke Long answered.

2It was now Fairy Zi Wei’s turn to feel shocked.

Her brows were tight, she was in disbelief: “I have already inspected Spectral Soul’s memories, the Red Lotus true inheritance that he obtained does not contain future self. This means that Fang Yuan already has one Red Lotus true inheritance? Otherwise, how could he obtain future self? The River of Time was clearly locked down by us.”

Duke Long shook his head: “There is no point in discussing this anymore. It seems we need to pay close attention to Fang Yuan now, he might have some special methods in his possession...”

Duke Long no longer looked down on Fang Yuan.

Or rather, he did not dare to look down on Red Lotus Demon Venerable!

At once, Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan felt a heavy emotion.

The trauma that Red Lotus Demon Venerable created enveloped them again.

But next, Fang Yuan vanished completely, only Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, and Ying Wu Xie attacked with countless victories, causing chaos in Central Continent.

“What is Fang Yuan doing?”

“Is he secretly saving up strength for a huge commotion?”

Fang Yuan did not act, it made Heavenly Court feel terrible. This was the same feeling as facing a notched arrow, they were worried about when he would shoot.

Fang Yuan was waiting.

But Duke Long never showed up personally.

“The situation is getting worse.” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, feeling that the situation was bad.

Duke Long did not show up, even though Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention met with lots of obstacles, regardless of sacrifices, it still continued.

Especially when the competition was ongoing with fewer and fewer Gu Masters left, the number of locations also shrunk, Central Continent’s members were no longer as dispersed, the strength at each location grew evidently.

Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan and the rest had to work together now, if they were alone, they could not destroy the competition grounds.

Longevity Heaven also did not show up in time for Fang Yuan.

At the start of the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, Bing Sai Chuan had contacted Fang Yuan, he wanted them to work together and destroy this Refinement Path Convention, to thwart Heavenly Court's plans.

But until now, Longevity Heaven had not responded.

“Shadow Sect and I alone are not able to stop this competition, unless another strong force joins us!”

Fang Yuan knew clearly.

Even though Shadow Sect killed many and obstructed the progress of the convention, as long as Duke Long remained unmoved, this competition would still continue with firm determination.

And because Duke Long remained unmoved, the other four regions' Gu Immortals felt threatened, they did not dare to act.

This was Duke Long's wisdom.

Thus, Fang Yuan had to be the vanguard. Even though he seemed to be winning greatly, the truth was that the situation was still under Duke Long's control.

From Fang Yuan's perspective, Central Continent's situation had not turned around.

What should he do?

After thinking over it for a long time, Fang Yuan decided to change his tactic, he stopped Bai Ning Bing and the rest from attacking competition locations, instead, they started to plunder resource points.

Central Continent had abundant resources and even more resources in storage.

For each location that Bai Ning Bing and the rest plundered, Fang Yuan would put up the video in treasure yellow heaven, for all other Gu Immortals to see.

This tactic did not work well for the first few days, even though Bai Ning Bing and the rest had great gains, Fang Yuan was not happy.

But days later, more chaos ensued.

Northern Plains' Sleeping Lady suddenly moved and attacked Combat Immortal Sect's formation, plundering a resource point completely.

Gu Immortals that resembled Xiao Hu Chi and Xiao Shi Rang attacked glass mountain range, completely emptying out the super force's territory. The three Gu Immortals that were stationed there died.

An immemorial immortal material that was en route to Immortal Crane Sect was attacked by a bunch of mysterious Gu Immortals midway, the immemorial immortal material was stolen.

...

Several days passed, more and more chaos broke out, it was truly a scene of raging flames.

All sorts of famous resource points were plundered, some were about to be robbed, Gu Immortals could be seen all over Central Continent, moving actively at every corner.

“Hahaha, the people’s hearts are finally moved!” At a secret location, Fang Yuan laughed heartily.

His scheme was vicious, he made good use of others’ greed. If he incited forces or Gu Immortals to attack forcefully and destroy the Refinement Path Convention, they would be hesitant.

But if he pushed them to attack and rob resource points, avoiding conflict with Heavenly Court in the process, it was hard for them to resist the temptation.

At the same time, these resources obtained would tempt the Gu Immortals further, their greed and desire would be amplified as time passed.

As for those Gu Immortals watching on the fence, how could they sit by and watch others plunder this many resources? Could they not feel anxious? After all, there was a finite amount of resources, if others got them first, they would not be able to obtain anything later.

Fang Yuan changed his tactic and gained great results immediately.

The whole of Central Continent fell into chaos, Western Desert, Southern Border, Eastern Sea, and Northern Plains Gu Immortals appeared consecutively, even lone and demonic immortals from Central Continent were also trying their luck.

“Fang Yuan... I want you to die a terrible death!” Fairy Zi Wei gritted her teeth in anger.

Duke Long sighed deeply: “People’s hearts are not longer as they used to be.”

3Even so, Duke Long did not give up his plan, he continued to push for the Refinement Path Convention’s progress.

Those competition locations were heavily guarded by many Gu Immortals.

It was because Heavenly Court gathered their forces around here that their resource points were relatively weaker now, people could plunder them easily.

It could be said that Fang Yuan’s change of plans had been tailored to Duke Long’s own tactic, it was a direct counter.

Duke Long’s determination did not waver, even though Central Continent was a complete mess, he still defended the Refinement Path Convention.

His tactic had Fang Yuan grit his teeth, there was nothing he could do.

Duke Long refused to react to any of the interferences, it forced Fang Yuan to attack. But Fang Yuan would not act rashly, because he knew that he was not Heavenly Court’s match, and right now, other forces had not entered the battle yet, if he acted too quickly, he would just end up as their stepping stone.

COMMENT

Thus, Fang Yuan continued to wait silently.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1705: People’s United Hearts

Central Continent, earth qi rock forest.

Poof poof poof...

A huge gush of earth qi surged out from the cave below the rock forest.

Rock pillars were erected one by one, some were small as bamboos while others were as large as ancient trees.

Western Desert earth path Gu Immortal Shi Gan Dang assessed the earth qi rock forest from afar, having a complex expression.

This earth qi rock forest produced a vast amount of earth path cultivation resources, one of which was round kun stone, it was something that Shi Gan Dang desperately needed.

It was a pity that this round kun stone had never been sold in large numbers before in treasure yellow heaven. Because this was the territory of one of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, they needed this round kun stone themselves.

“In treasure yellow heaven, I had to raise the prices but the Gu Immortals still refused to sell it, they even made fun of me. Hehe, now now I can destroy this place and take all of the round kun stone away, I will be taking revenge!”

Shi Gan Dang breathed in deeply, his aura surged as he charged towards the clouds.

Immortal killer move — Heavenly Descending Triple Mountains!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Three mountains crashed down from the sky, landing on the formation protecting the rock forest. A large amount of trees were directly crushed by these huge mountains.

Shi Gan Dang did not feel pity at all, he took several deep breaths as he ran around the area with a pale face, he kept all of the immortal materials in this forest including round kun stones in his immortal aperture.

Central Continent, spirit bank spring.

“Which rat dares to come after this place? I have already discovered you, why don’t you show yourself?” The one guarding this place was an expert rank seven Gu Immortal from Ancient Soul Sect — Yang Feng.

He had broad shoulders and a thin waist, his spine was straight as a spear, his body was emanating a strong manly aura.

He had long green hair that stood right up, looking like it was piercing the heavens. His black pupils carried sharp piercing light in them, people could not look at him in the eye.

He wore a martial uniform and there was a brown belt around his waist, his wrists were also protected by two jade braces.

Spirit bank spring was not an ordinary resource, it was quite unique, Ancient Soul Sect sent Yang Feng here because they did not want to lose it.

Yang Feng shouted, a Gu Immortal slowly walked out.

He was an old man with a hunched back, he slowly walked while holding a cane.

Yang Feng snorted: “Old man, you are already so old, you should treasure your remaining days. Why are you courting death now?”

The old Gu Immortal chuckled: “I can’t help it, I need some spirit bank spring water.”

Yang Feng snorted coldly: “There is not even enough spring water for our Ancient Soul Sect’s own supreme elders, how can we give you any?”

The old Gu Immortal sighed deeply: “In that case, I can only snatch some for myself.”

Yang Feng raised his head and laughed loudly: “Old man, you are quite daring, you have the guts to fight me! Tell me, what is your name!”

The old Gu Immortal smiled as he said with deep meaning: “I have long forgotten about my name. But others like to call me Forgotten Daoist.”

“You are Forgotten Daoist?!” Yang Feng’s body shook, deep shock was expressed in his eyes.

Next, his expression became dazed as he asked: “Wait, what was your name?”

The old man was silent and did not move, he only smiled at Yang Feng.

Yang Feng was dazed as he frowned while looking at the old Gu Immortal: “Who are you? Why are you here?”

A moment later, after Forgotten Daoist took away the spirit bank spring water, Yang Feng watched as he left, before reacting: “Who are you? You are acting so suspicious, stand right there!”

After Forgotten Daoist vanished, Yang Feng looked at the dried spirit spring as he said with deep anger, shock, and suspicion: “Damn it, who stole the spirit bank spring water? I guarded it so deeply, how did anyone even steal it?!”

1“Oh no, I need to report to the sect.” But at the next moment, Yang Feng was dazed again: “What am I doing here?”

“Oh right, I took a mission to defend this spirit bank spring, I cannot let outsiders in!”

“Hmph, with me around, I want to see who dares to come here and court death.”

3Central Continent, within a mountain range.

A huge battle ended, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals from the ten great sects left with deep hatred: “You better remember this!”

“Scram, loser.” Xiao Hu Chi laughed coldly, turning to look at the person beside him with a cold gaze.

Beside him was a Northern Plains Gu Immortal.

He was so thin his bones could be seen, his skin was wrinkled and dry, sticking close to his bones. Veins could be seen on his skin, they were everywhere.

He was Northern Plains' demonic path rank seven Gu Immortal – Pi Shui Han.

Not long ago, Xiao Hu Chi and him both went after this resource, they collaborated and forced the Central Continent Gu Immortal who was guarding this place away.

Only the two of them were left, the atmosphere became very peculiar.

“Friend, how should we split the resources?” Xiao Hu Chi pretended to be polite.

Pi Shui Han snorted coldly, he said without hesitation: “You can also scram now.”

Xiao Hu Chi was dazed before laughing from anger: “I am a rank seven expert of Western Desert's Xiao clan, who are you, you are truly shortsighted but your nature is very arrogant.”

“You talk a lot of crap.” Pi Shui Han had a look of disdain, he directly attacked Xiao Hu Chi.

Xiao Hu Chi's expression sank but he also attacked Pi Shui Han without any fear.

The two fought for over ten rounds, Xiao Hu Chi was slowly losing the edge, but at this moment, Xiao Shi Rang appeared from the horizon.

Xiao Hu Chi was overjoyed, he joined up with Xiao Shi Rang and fought Pi Shui Han together.

But after a moment, Xiao Shi Rang and Xiao Hu Chi were forced to retreat, they left with deep anger.

“Who is this person? For just this little amount of cultivation resources, he is fighting as if his life depends on it?” Xiao Hu Chi gritted his teeth, he was also a courageous person, a general of Western Desert's super force Xiao clan, but in battle, he saw how crazy Pi Shui Han acted, he was completely suppressed.

“If I am not wrong, he is Northern Plains' demonic path Gu Immortal Pi Shui Han.” Xiao Shi Rang said plainly.

Xiao Hu Chi was dazed: “So it was a Northern Plains brute! No wonder... forget it, Central Continent has so many resources, we do not need to compete with such maniacs.”

Time passed, earth vein tremors occurred, the five regions' regional walls continued to dissolve.

The fusion of earth veins caused much less commotion in Central Continent than the Gu Immortals that were going around plundering resources.

The huge Central Continent was originally filled with beautiful mountains and rivers, but now, it was filled with fire and smoke.

People like Forgotten Daoist who only took resources were still fine. But when most Gu Immortals acted, they would be like Shi Gan Dang, directly destroying the resource points, they were very vicious.

Several days later.

Heavenly Court.

“Okay, we have accumulated enough human will now.” In the hall, Old Man Zheng Yuan spoke.

Fairy Zi Wei heard this and let out a sigh of relief, she became quite energetic again.

These days, bad news had been reaching her one by one, Central Continent suffered huge losses everywhere, Fairy Zi Wei felt immense pressure weighing on her.

“Oh? Then use it now, Zheng Yuan.” Duke Long said with a plain expression.

Old Man Zheng Yuan nodded, he stood up shakily as a grand and vast aura surged out of his body!

Immortal killer move — People’s United Hearts!

The accumulated human will was expended rapidly, almost none was left.

At the same time, the entire Central Continent’s Gu Immortals, Gu Masters and even mortals became enveloped in a halo of light.

The halo flashed for a moment, it was like an illusion.

But Central Continent’s people soon found something special.

“What is the meaning of this?”

“Such a mystical feeling!”

“I seem to be connected with the people around me, I can sense what they are feeling directly?!”

After the initial shock, people soon found out the profundity of people’s united hearts, it could connect everyone’s hearts together and allow them to feel each other’s emotions.

The fear of being attacked, the sadness and hatred of having friends and family die, the worry towards one’s own life, and the aspirations towards one’s future...

Never had Central Continent’s people been so tightly connected before in history.

“Who are you? Why do you hold such animosity towards us?!” At a competition location, a Northern Plains Gu Immortal was suddenly exposed.

He was like a torch in the darkness, his true feelings could not be concealed, everyone found out about him.

He had a handsome face and wore a white robe, he was thin and had a scholarly aura.

It was Northern Plains’ rank seven demonic path Gu Immortal — Unfettered Scholar!

“Such an amazing human path killer move! Even though I concealed myself, I was exposed!” Unfettered Scholar suppressed his shock as he smiled viciously towards the people around him.

There were multiple rank seven experts guarding this place, they surrounded Unfettered Scholar tightly.

“You disguised yourself to attend the refinement convention, you must be after the success dao mark? Leave, if you leave now, we will not find trouble with you.” The Gu Immortal leader said.

Unfettered Scholar laughed, saying to the leader: “So you really were here, I did not come in vain.” He said so with deep killing intent.

The Gu Immortal leader was confused: “Who are you? Do we have any grudges?”

“Hmph, so you forgot already. I have not forgotten it! Back then, you exterminated my clan, today, as the last person remaining, I will take your life!” Unfettered Scholar burst out with his killer move, it was his signature method — Thousand Disintegrations.

An hour later, Unfettered Scholar left with an injured body, he flew into the sky while laughing and shedding tears of joy.

Nobody in the competition ground was left alive.

At another competition ground.

“Friend, please show yourself.” The defending Gu Immortal spoke politely and warmly.

“Found me huh...” Southern Border secluded immortal Zheng Qing shook his head as he walked out of the square.

“I have no ill intentions, I just want to experience the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention. After all... this is likely the final one.” Zheng Qing smiled bitterly.

He was a secluded cultivator in Southern Border, he had obtained a Genesis Lotus true inheritance by chance, he did not hold much animosity towards Central Continent.

The defending Gu Immortal nodded: “Through people’s united hearts, we can sense your intentions. It is a pity that you cannot continue with this competition anymore.”

“I understand.”

“If you don’t mind, you can stay here and we can interact with each other.”

“It’s fine.” Zheng Qing shook his head, leaving quietly.

Some people wreaked havoc, some left peacefully, but no matter what, people’s united hearts was very profound, it allowed them to discern who were the enemies.

The unstable elements hidden in the competition were eliminated, Central Continent no longer had any internal threats.

Duke Long affirmed his tactic, as he continued to press forward with it, the finals of this Refinement Path Convention started at long last.

“This is the final chance, why is nobody acting? What are they waiting for!” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, he could not help but watch as Heavenly Court got closer to success.

But Longevity Heaven did not respond.

“It is time, let’s move out!” At a certain corner of Central Continent, Wu Yong suddenly appeared.

Behind him were many Southern Alliance Gu Immortals.

Wu Yong looked around as he said: “Everyone, I do not need to explain the situation. We cannot let fate Gu be fully restored, otherwise, Heavenly Court’s advantage would be too huge!”

“Follow me, let us destroy Infallible blessed land, let’s take all the success dao marks and make Heavenly Court taste failure!”

“We will follow Lord Alliance Leader!!” The Southern Alliance immortals said together, they had high morale.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1706: Southern Immortals’ Aspirations

“Oh no, Wu Yong is leading a band of Southern Border Gu Immortals, they suddenly appeared near Infallible blessed land!” In Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei’s expression suddenly turned to shock.

“Oh? They finally showed up.” Duke Long said plainly, he still sat in his seat without any change of expression.

Fairy Zi Wei breathed in deeply, she frowned deeply, feeling a different kind of pressure.

Because Southern Border’s Gu Immortals were very united in this expedition, they were different from those Gu Immortals from the other four regions that caused chaos. And most importantly, they targeted an important place, it was Infallible blessed land!

If Infallible blessed land fell, it would be a disaster to Heavenly Court. The huge price they paid to forcibly hold the Refinement Path Convention would be wasted as Southern Border’s immortals intercept and steal their gains.

“Don’t be flustered. We already expected Infallible blessed land’s location to be leaked, for this reason, we have already set up a super immortal formation nearby. Right now, the initiative is in our hands, everything will progress smoothly.” Duke Long instructed.

Fairy Zi Wei nodded respectfully, she used her method as the scene of Infallible blessed land showed up in the hall.

Next, she hesitated before transmitting to Wu Yong: “Wu Yong, don’t forget that we had cooperated last time. If you want to continue being the Southern Border Alliance Leader, you should know what to do.”

Wu Yong received news and snickered, he felt a sense of disdain in his heart: “The great Zi Wei, even as a wisdom path great expert, is nothing much in the end.”

He did not even bother to reply to Fairy Zi Wei.

His entire concentration was placed on his killer move.

Immortal killer move — Unlimited Wind!

A dark green wind started to blow, sweeping everywhere.

Soon, the wind grew to become a huge tornado pillar, it charged forward with a thunderous roar, along the way, trees were uprooted, rocks were sent flying, it was truly unstoppable with unparalleled might!

Seeing that the wind was approaching with great power, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals defending the area sighed as they activated the super immortal formation.

Creak creak.

The halo created by the immortal formation was constantly eroded by the unlimited wind, it soon made creaking sounds, it was sharp and piercing.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals used the methods inside the immortal formation, but any move that tried to weaken unlimited wind showed little effect.

“It is useless, I have never used this move easily before because it would expend ten thousand of my wind path dao marks. But after paying this price, this wind is long lasting and can only be resisted by specific techniques.” Wu Yong spoke, his expression was plain but his eyes flickered with a sharp and cold light.

“Such determination, such will...” Seeing this, Fairy Zi Wei who was inside Heavenly Court sighed from the bottom of her heart.

Wu Yong paid such a huge price to use unlimited wind, it showed his unwavering determination, nothing could change his mind.

Wu Yong had an ordinary appearance of a middle aged man, he had a strong body and sharp eyebrows, giving him a dark and hazy aura. Right now, he was standing in front of the immortals, he stood tall and proud, being a leader that had great disposition.

Fairy Zi Wei memorized his appearance in her heart, she realized that she had underestimated him.

Southern Border’s Wu Yong!

A truly formidable person!

He had Wu clan’s bravery and courage, but he was also able to control his own emotions and conceal them deeply. When Wu Du Xiu was around, he kept a low profile and reputation, even Wu Du Xiu underestimated him, only on her deathbed did she realize that her son had such methods.

When he first took her position, Southern Border was in chaos, other clans pressured Wu clan and they lost a lot of territory. Using his strength and Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, Wu Yong turned the situation around.

After the battle of the dream realm, Wu Yong took a risk and worked with Heavenly Court, he took back the Immortal Gu of the Southern Border immortals, he returned all these Immortal Gu and that action gave him great reputation!

In the Five Regional Mountain Range, he wanted to kill Fang Yuan but failed time and again. After that, even though Lu Wei Yin had the title of Paradise Earth’s inheritor, he could not take down Wu Yong, he still remained as the Alliance

Leader of the Southern Alliance.

Right now, Heavenly Court was at a crucial moment in restoring fate Gu, Wu Yong led all the Southern Alliance elites in this battle, he disregarded Fairy Zi Wei’s threat.

Because he knew what the big picture was!

They could not allow Heavenly Court to obtain the complete fate Immortal Gu once more!!

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Unlimited wind continued to attack, eroding the formation, the defending Heavenly Court Gu Immortals tried all ways to stop it but they failed. This move was too powerful, it was Wu Yong’s trump card, this was the first time he had used it. Not just Heavenly Court, even when Southern Border’s Gu Immortals saw it, they were shocked and under their joyful expressions were wariness and fear.

Soon, a hole opened in the formation as Wu Yong waved: “Everyone, now is the time to risk your lives, charge in with me and kill!”

Southern Border’s immortals entered as the defending Heavenly Court Gu Immortals became nervous: “They’re in, quick, activate the second layer formation!”

Southern Border’s immortals felt that the scenery changed, jade blue light appeared and turned into countless flying pink flowers, they flew rapidly and rotated all over the place, enveloping the Southern Border immortals.

A rank seven Gu Immortal stood up, he had a halberd-like beard, he was heroic and brave, his name was Tie Gan Ge, a pillar of support for Tie clan.

He had peak rank seven battle strength, against such a strong force, he felt no fear, he shouted loudly as golden light flickered on his body, a dense number of golden halberds formed.

“Go.” Countless halberds rained down furiously and crashed into the torrent of flying flowers.

As they collided, the flying flowers and golden halberd both disintegrated into powder and fragments.

The formation’s attack was rank eight level, but Tie Gan Ge actually held up against it, he did not fall into a disadvantage.

Formation path great expert rank eight Gu Immortal Chi Qu You was standing beside him, trying to deduce the weakness of this formation. In this attack, Chi Qu You was bound to be the most useful person.

A few breaths of time later, the golden halberds were slowly suppressed by the endless flowers, rank seven Gu Immortal Shang Que stood out.

He stretched out his palm as a bloody hole opened up, the strong suction force absorbed many flowers.

Yi Hei Ting growled, blue lightning sparks appeared on his body as he helped Tie Gan Ge with the situation.

Meanwhile, rank seven wisdom path Gu Immortal Xia Liu Pei stood behind Chi Qu You, placing his palm on Chi Qu You’s back, using wisdom path methods to help accelerate his deduction speed.

After a while, Chi Qu You acted!

Professionals were specialized in different fields, using his methods, the formation became slow, the weaknesses that were exposed were evident even to Gu Immortals not in formation path.

Boom boom boom!

Southern Border’s Gu Immortals did not intend to hold back, they immediately attacked with many powerful killer moves, destroying the second formation.

Southern Border’s immortals progressed into the third formation.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were deeply shocked!

“With friend Chi here, what formation can stop us?” Wu Yong laughed loudly.

The remaining immortals had high morales.

Chi Qu You smiled bitterly: “My deduction method cannot be used easily, it expends my lifespan. But in this battle, I cannot hold back!”

Southern Border’s immortals shook.

Wu Yong could not help but look at Chi Qu You, both could see each other’s determination!

But soon, Chi Qu You started frowning: “I do not need to deduce this third formation, it is very simple and easy, the formation core is that largest tree at the center of the forest.”

The formation was easily understood, Heavenly Court purposely did this, it was very difficult to destroy.

Because this forest was very special, it could eliminate the power of any killer move.

Each tree was made of holy burial wood, the most central formation core was immemorial desolate plant level.

If Southern Border’s immortals wanted to destroy these trees, they would need to use their physical bodies. However, there were countless vines on these trees, they were not simple. Some were green dragon vines, some were lightning vines, and some were chainsaw heart vines.

The third formation was made using the dao marks of this forest. To destroy this formation, attacking other areas was useless, they had to destroy this holy burial forest.

Southern Border’s immortals thought about it, they released the ancient desolate beasts and immemorial desolate beasts in their immortal apertures.

The beast groups charged into the forest and attacked the vines, blood splattered all over. A while later, half of the beasts were sacrificed, the remaining were dazed in the forest, while the last portion fought among themselves.

Southern Border’s immortals had grim expressions.

“So this place also has seven star internal conflict grass, it makes these ancient desolate beasts fight each other.”

“Even though immemorial desolate beasts are unaffected, they are obstructed by this beast digesting rotten qi.”

This beast digesting rotten qi had dense poison path dao marks, it did not affect desolate plants, variant humans, or pure humans. It only affected wild beasts, it could make immemorial desolate beasts turn thin, their skin and internal organs would dissolve.

Southern Border’s immortals failed in their attempts, Wu Yong was about to take out his Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building when someone stood up.

“Let me try.”

The immortals looked over, this Gu Immortal had a bald head, he had muscular shoulders and body, it was Ba clan’s rank seven Gu Immortal Ba Xiong!

“Even though I am not a strength path Gu Immortal, I cultivate transformation path, let me charge in and destroy the holy burial wood.”

“However, I only have peak rank seven battle strength, I would like Lord Yi Hao Fang to support me.” Ba Xiong said expressionlessly.

The immortals were slightly moved.

Ba Xiong only had peak rank seven battle strength, he was not a rank eight Gu Immortal, yet he was willing to take a risk that would kill him with any slight carelessness.

Yi Hao Fang looked towards Ba clan’s first supreme elder Ba Shi Ba, seeing that the latter nodded, he used his method on Ba Xiong.

His reinforcement method was not just famous in Southern Border, it was renowned in the world, Ba Xiong immediately felt an unparalleled strength flowing in his body.

He flew out and used his killer move, turning into a giant as he charged rapidly towards the center.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were naturally not going to ignore him, they started to attack him.

Southern Border’s Gu Immortals quickly helped to assist Ba Xiong’s advancement.

Eventually, Ba Xiong was bathed in blood, his skin was torn and countless wounds could be seen as his bones became exposed, he had exerted himself in destroying the central holy burial wood at long last.

In just a few minutes, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals had broken three formations!

“Next, it will depend on the rest of you.” Ba Xiong was heavily injured, he had lost his strength to continue in this fight.

“Friend, you were courageous and fought a dangerous battle, no matter how this battle ends up, you will gain huge merits in our Southern Alliance, we will definitely reward you handsomely when we return!” Wu Yong said with certainty.

Ba Xiong smiled lightly: “I risked my life because I was moved by Lords Wu Yong and Chi Qu You, Heavenly Court had already gone overboard many times when they invaded our Southern Border, if they truly repaired fate Gu, what would we do?”

“That is exactly right.” Wu Yong nodded.

He looked at the immortals around him, his confidence surged to ten times that of earlier!

Central Continent had people’s united hearts, while Southern Border’s immortals were unified in their objective, with such a grand force, what fortress could they not take down?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1707: Heavenly Court’s Crisis

Central Continent, Hidden Dragon Cave, grand formation.

Myriad dragons flew around, encircling Eastern Sea’s rank eight Gu Immortal Song Qi Yuan like a huge ball made of dragons.

“These ancient poison dragons are clearly made from the formation’s power, yet they are so agile and act as if they are real!” Song Qi Yuan defended himself as he pondered.

He wanted to kill these ancient poison dragons, there was no issue with that, but even if he got rid of them, there were other obstacles awaiting him.

The tens of thousands of ancient poison dragons were formed using the formation’s power, Song Qi Yuan had to destroy this formation to target their root source. Otherwise, even if he killed the ancient poison dragons, he would not be able to break out of the formation.

“It is a pity my formation path attainment is too low, even until now, I have not found any flaws.” Song Qi Yuan gritted his teeth.

Immortal killer move — Perfect Round Light.

He used his defensive method as his body became shielded by a ball-shaped yellow barrier.

Regardless of how ferocious the ancient poison dragons were, they could not break this thin light barrier.

From this, one could see how deep Song Qi Yuan’s light path foundation was. Unfortunately, his opponent was this super formation, he needed formation path understanding instead.

There were many Gu Master paths, like earlier when Fang Yuan was countered by Heavenly Court’s human path and information path methods, Song Qi Yuan was also countered by formation path.

Even though rank eight Gu Immortals could usually mimic other paths, and Song Qi Yuan could use light path to mimic the effects of formation path, he was facing against a super immortal formation that Heavenly Court had paid a huge price to create, it was the grand formation that could seal legendary immemorial desolate beast Di Zang Sheng!

Song Qi Yuan, who could not find any flaws, could only defend himself while waiting for a chance to appear.

Inside the formation's control area, Old Man Bei Feng manipulated the super immortal formation as he observed the situation of the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

A young looking rank six Gu Immortal was beside him, it was Old Man Bei Feng's grandson Feng Chan Zi.

Feng Chan Zi looked at the images as he cheered: "Grandfather, this is great! These rank eight Gu Immortals are all trapped and unable to escape. We have made a huge contribution, we can definitely atone for our mistake and leave this cursed place. Grandfather, you can also become a true member of Heavenly Court!"

1Old Man Bei Feng shook his head, he had a solemn gaze: "Grandson, you are not clear of the true situation. These rank eight Gu Immortals have not exhausted their means, most of them are unharmed. They are unable to break the essence of this formation so they chose to observe for now, waiting for reinforcements. Once they find any flaw, they would attack with unparalleled and shocking might."

Feng Chan Zi was stunned and frightened: "Then, then what do we do? Grandfather, didn't we seek reinforcements long ago? Why have Heavenly Court's reinforcements not arrived yet?"

Old Man Bei Feng was silent for a moment before he said: "How can we know what Heavenly Court is planning? We can only guard this place to the best of our abilities now."

After Old Man Bei Feng said that, the formation started to shake.

"What is going on? A rank eight Gu Immortal found out a flaw of the formation?" Feng Chan Zi was shocked.

"No, it is that Evil Dragon!" Old Man Bei Feng's expression turned pale all of a sudden.

Hidden Dragon Cave, it was renowned for sealing Evil Dragon Di Zang Sheng. Right now, Di Zang Sheng was struggling, it wanted to get up, Old Man Bei Feng could not help but resist bitterly.

Di Zang Sheng was not ordinary, it was created from endless hatred, anger, and grudges, all these negative emotions in Central Continent's earth veins.

1It was originally sealed and constantly struggled, if it succeeded, there would be a huge earthquake.

Old Man Bei Feng was guarding it, one of the reasons was to stop the Evil Dragon from causing huge earthquakes in Central Continent.

But now, Fang Yuan and the other regions' Gu Immortals rampaged in Central Continent, attacking countless lifeforms, a vast amount of grudges, hatred, and fear were generated.

Di Zang Sheng absorbed these emotions and gained a huge boost in strength.

When the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals attacked the formation, it was already alerted.

The crafty Di Zang Sheng held its patience and gathered strength, by causing a scene now, Old Man Bei Feng was caught off-guard.

Old Man Bei Feng quickly reacted and tried to use the formation's power to suppress Di Zang Sheng.

“After that old man Duke Long used this formation, it weakened by thirty percent. Right now, my strength has secretly risen by at least fifty percent, Old Man Bei Feng, if you escape now, you might survive. Otherwise, when I destroy this formation, I will tear your corpse to pieces!” Di Zang Sheng roared, its voice was thunderous and caused tremors in this huge Earth Trench.

“Don’t even think about it!” Old Man Bei Feng had a grim expression but his determination did not waver.

“I found a flaw!” In a formation space, Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Yue An stared with opened eyes as his aura burst out like a volcano.

Immortal killer move — Mountain Suppression!

Bam.

A huge phantom mountain appeared out of nowhere, it struck towards the formation’s loophole while creating loud sounds resembling wind and thunder.

Hidden Dragon Cave’s super immortal formation had already reached its limits facing Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals and Di Zang Sheng, now that Qing Yue An attacked it, it was like a broken bowstring.

Puff!

The formation collapsed, Old Man Bei Feng suffered a backlash and spat out mouthfuls of blood, his face turned pale as paper and he was on the brink of death.

Crack...

Sounds of glass cracking could be heard, a huge portion of the immortal formation was destroyed, only the control area was left, it was still pitifully defending the final bit of territory.

Eastern Sea’s immortals felt their vision shifting as they were all released.

“I can sense it, the rank eight Immortal Gu House is outside the immortal formation’s core!” Shen Cong Sheng’s eyes shined with bright light.

“Charge!” Song Qi Yuan laughed loudly as he moved.

Qing Yue An stayed behind to heal himself, he had suffered injuries in trying to destroy the formation. He was not a formation path Gu Immortal, he could not resolve it through formation path means, he had used brute force instead.

Di Zang Sheng roared in excitement, its voice was loud as thunder, it made all the Eastern Sea immortals’ expressions change.

“Quick, destroy the control area!”

“I am about to regain freedom, hahaha!”

“Old man Duke Long, after I get out, I will tear apart your tendons and eat you piece by piece!”

Di Zang Sheng’s voice was filled with hatred and rage, it sent a chill down all of the immortals’ spines.

“Grandfather, grandfather, you must hang on!” In the tattered formation control area, Feng Chan Zi cried as he held onto Old Man Bei Feng. He shuddered as he screamed: “Why have Heavenly Court’s reinforcements not arrived yet?!”

Old Man Bei Feng was still spitting out blood, there was a pool of blood beneath him now.

Both of them fell into a desperate situation.

Central Continent, Emperor City.

This huge city was made of Gu worms, it was known as the number one mortal Gu House in the world.

At the same time, it was also the largest mortal gathering spot in the whole of Central Continent.

The finals of Central Continent Refinement Path Convention would be held here.

Fang Yuan was high in the sky, covered by layers of auspicious clouds, this was a luck path method meant to conceal his traces.

Other than that, there were more than ten immortal methods used by Fang Yuan on himself, he could barely defend against the investigative power of people’s accusation.

He did not have human path methods after all, this effect was already satisfactory.

Right now, his gaze was focused on Emperor City.

“Nobody else has acted yet?”

“Longevity Heaven has yet to respond, damn it!”

Fang Yuan frowned deeply.

He did not know that Southern Border’s immortals were already attacking Infallible blessed land with great morale. Meanwhile, in Hidden Dragon Cave, Eastern Sea’s immortals had also broken the formation, only the core was left.

“I cannot let Heavenly Court repair fate Gu fully. I will destroy this Emperor City and kill all of the Gu Masters that are in this final competition!”

Fang Yuan ordered, an Immortal Gu House crashed down like a meteor.

The Immortal Gu House contained Hei Lou Lan, Bai Ning Bing, Ying Wu Xie, and Qi clan’s Gu Immortals. It could be said to contain almost all of Fang Yuan’s subordinates now!

“Who dares to attack us, I will kill all of you!” Li Huang’s voice resounded, he was the rank eight expert tasked to guard this place!

As he said that, Immortal Gu Houses started to appear, revolving around Emperor City like planets moving around the sun.

Fang Yuan sighed to himself: “My Immortal Gu House was made using Bai Xiang grotto-heaven’s Thirty-three Heavenly Halls, along with the place where the killer move heaven form was stored, I also added in some Gu worms to barely assemble it, it is likely not the match of these Immortal Gu Houses!”

Even so, Fang Yuan did not ask them to retreat.

He had expected this situation, but there was no choice, time was tight, he had to do something!

Fang Yuan made up his mind, when Bai Ning Bing and the rest are unable to continue, he would show up personally.

As expected, Bai Ning Bing and the rest were attacked by many Immortal Gu Houses, they were suppressed from the start of the battle.

Heavenly Court placed a huge line of defense here, it was simply ridiculous.

A moment later, the Immortal Gu House that Bai Ning Bing and the rest were in became extremely damaged, they were soon to be defeated.

Fang Yuan sighed, he was about to enter the battle when his expression froze, he looked towards another direction.

Several rank eight Gu Immortals appeared, they were followed by several Immortal Gu Houses.

“These are Western Desert’s rank eight Gu Immortals, and the Immortal Gu Houses of super forces!” Fang Yuan’s heart jumped, he showed joy on his face.

Heavenly Court.

“Western Desert and Southern Border’s main forces have arrived.” Fairy Zi Wei sighed: “Actually, if not for the fusion of earth veins, the regional walls would still be thick, our Heavenly Court will definitely not face a coordinated attack of this degree!”

She was right.

Precisely because the great era was impending, the five regions were becoming one as the regional walls vanished, these four other regions felt a strong sense of threat.

Central Continent had the greatest strength, this was publicly recognized since ancient times.

Right now, Heavenly Court wanted to repair fate Immortal Gu, this was adding fuel to the fire, the other four regions’ Gu Immortals had to stop them.

“The strongest group has not arrived yet.” Duke Long said plainly.

“Yes.” Fairy Zi Wei frowned: “Only several people from Northern Plains have arrived, their main force has not shown up at all. Fang Yuan is also not present, considering the battle in the River of Time earlier, he might likely join forces with Bing Sai Chuan again!”

Saying so, Fairy Zi Wei gritted her teeth: “Let me deduce with all of my strength again.”

Duke Long was about to nod when his expression suddenly changed, he looked afar: “No need, they have arrived.”

At the next moment, Fairy Zi Wei looked with deep anger as a rainbow fog appeared in the sky of Heavenly Court, rank eight Immortal Gu House Calamity Luck Altar burst out of it.

2“These Northern Plains brutes! They, they are too daring, how dare they attack my Heavenly Court directly?!” Fairy Zi Wei was so angry her body was shaking.

1Old Man Zheng Yuan who was at the side became speechless.

Duke Long laughed loudly, standing up: “Indeed, this is the character of Northern Plainsmen.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1708: Emperor City Battlefield

Central Continent, Emperor City.

“This is the Immortal Gu House that master told me about?” Ye Fan had made it to the finals competition, he looked at the sky with deep shock.

The other participating Gu Masters were mostly the same.

“These Immortal Gu Houses are usually the foundation of a super force, to think that so many would appear. I’m afraid that even after the regional walls vanish and the earth veins become one, during the five regions chaotic war, there would not be such a battle.” Ye Fan had a realization.

2At this time, a voice sounded beside Ye Fan: “Brother Ye, we can finally compete this time and determine the winner!”

Ye Fan diverted his gaze as he smiled and thought: “Master ordered me to join this Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, to think that I would meet such a talented person. Even if I lose in the competition later, it would be a great experience. This sworn brother is my greatest gain!”

Friends are often made after a fight, Hong Yi and Ye Fan had emerged victorious in the previous few rounds, they naturally became acquainted.

After some conversations, both developed a bond with each other, after a drinking competition, they decided to become sworn brothers.

Hong Yi continued: “This Refinement Path Convention is unprecedented, let those Gu Immortals fight in the sky, we have our own business to attend to.”

“Thank you for the concern Brother Yi, I understand.” Ye Fan knew about Hong Yi’s kind intentions, he expressed his gratitude before concentrating on the final competition.

Outside Emperor City, Central Continent had many Immortal Gu Houses of varying ranks, they were distributed around Emperor City, surrounding it and forming a three layered defense line.

Outside the defense lines, there were many Western Desert rank eight experts and Immortal Gu Houses.

Other than that was the one controlled by Bai Ning Bing and the rest, Fang Yuan had not even named this Immortal Gu House that he assembled in a rush.

Fang Yuan originally wanted to show up, but after Western Desert’s Gu Immortals appeared, he decided to stay hidden again.

Western Desert’s Gu Immortals flew down along the Immortal Gu Houses, they continued to shorten their distance, causing huge pressure to form on Central Continent’s side.

Even Li Huang who was commanding the situation felt a little pressured.

Even he who had great battle experience had not participated in a battle of such a huge scale.

Li Huang had participated in many chaotic battles involving Gu Immortals, but he had never seen so many Immortal Gu Houses in one fight.

Immortal Gu Houses were much rarer than Gu Immortals, normally speaking, very few Gu Immortals had their individual Immortal Gu Houses, only super forces had them.

A Gu Immortal alone could not gather enough wealth, ability, and time to create an Immortal Gu House. And an Immortal Gu House was not the most feasible for a single person’s use.

For super forces, they needed a rank seven Immortal Gu House, in crucial situations, it could act as their rank eight battle strength!

Rank eight Gu Immortals were not common, the first supreme elder of many forces were only rank seven. At this time, a rank seven Immortal Gu House could help to stabilize the situation.

Immortal Gu Houses had their flaws of course, the methods were fixed and easily countered.

Thus, even though most rank seven Immortal Gu Houses could rival rank eight, they could not truly fight against a rank eight Gu Immortal.

Right now, the Immortal Gu Houses here were at least rank seven, they all had rank eight battle strength.

From a certain perspective, this was a battle that involved more than ten rank eight battle strength existences!

Both sides felt nervous and pressured.

But this was an unavoidable battle!

The atmosphere became heavier, when the distance between both sides shrunk to a certain degree, an Immortal Gu House that was in Central Continent’s second layer defense line attacked.

This Immortal Gu House was small and delicate, it was an exquisite and small pavilion, there were countless bird cages hanging on it as birds chirped continuously.

It was one of Heavenly Lotus Sect’s five Immortal Gu Houses — Canary Pavilion.

A large number of cages were unlocked in Canary Pavilion, flaming birds flew out rapidly, shooting out like a rain of flames.

These birds expanded midway and regained their original size.

They were large as horse carriages, their bodies were red and their feathers were flaming with great heat. Their eyes resembled molten magma, their chirping was quite unique, it sounded like flowing lava.

1Ancient desolate beast — Molten Flame Bird!

“Be careful, these birds can self-detonate, they have great power!” Among the Western Desert group, a Gu Immortal immediately warned.

“Fire path ancient desolate beast, hahaha, let us face them.” Amidst the laughter, an Immortal Gu House that resembled a waterwheel rolled out itself using those gigantic wheels.

A huge red light shot out of the wheel, it seemed to resemble ribbons that tangled the bird group.

The molten flame birds shrieked and tried to struggle but most were suppressed by the red light. A few self-detonated, turning into lava that were absorbed by the red light to become even stronger.

“What Immortal Gu House is this?” Central Continent’s side was shocked, to think that the molten flame birds were so easily countered.

Western Desert’s side was also shocked, a few rank eight Gu Immortals paid slight attention to this weirdly shaped Immortal Gu House, they had no information regarding it.

“Oh? Dong clan’s Red River Wheel.” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined.

This Immortal Gu House was obtained by Dong clan from a mysterious inheritance, in Fang Yuan’s previous life, it had displayed its great power and gained huge fame.

Normally speaking, if a super force wanted to research and create an Immortal Gu House, the process would take a long time. And in this process, a lot of clues would be obtained by other forces.

Only Immortal Gu Houses that were suddenly obtained like this would shock people.

Dong clan’s Gu Immortals felt a little proud, they had made a great gain, obtaining these molten flame birds. With them, Dong clan’s Red River Wheel would become even stronger, especially in terms of speed.

“Tit for tat.” Fang clan’s Gu Immortal shouted in the Immortal Gu House, releasing a large number of ancient desolate beasts, most were dogs and chickens.

Fang Yuan was even clearer regarding this Immortal Gu House.

It was Fang clan’s Chicken Dog Coop, it looked like two buildings side by side, the left building was yellow and had a round plaque that had ‘chicken’ written on it, the right building was red and had the word ‘dog’ on its plaque.

1Every Immortal Gu House was comprehensive in all aspects but also contained its own specialty.

Chicken Dog Coop and Canary Pavilion were both focused on enslavement path, the former enslaved chicken and dogs, while the latter raised canaries.

Both were also the same at rank seven.

The advantage of enslavement path was to engage in a battle of attrition.

A large group of chickens and dogs charged out as Central Continent’s outer layer of defense reacted, using all sorts of killer moves on these chickens and dogs, a large number died.

But Western Desert’s group also followed after and attacked.

At once, Immortal Gu Houses unleashed thunderous sounds and collided into each other, killer moves were unleashed as space was torn, loud sounds caused continuous tremors in this area.

Western Desert's advancement was very ferocious, soon, Central Continent's first layer of defense was broken, the second layer was also almost broken, but it barely held on.

"Western Desert's side has less manpower and Immortal Gu Houses than Central Continent after all."

Western Desert was different from Southern Border, Northern Plains, and Eastern Sea.

Southern Border had the Southern Alliance, the super forces were working very closely now. Right now, the whole of Southern Border had Beacon Towers everywhere, this was proof of their cooperation.

Northern Plains had Longevity Heaven leading them, in the recent years, Longevity Heaven had been recruiting lone immortals and demonic path members, they were trying to unify the entire Gu Immortal world of Northern Plains.

Eastern Sea's rank eight Gu Immortals had almost lost all their face because of Duke Long's actions of taking the Immortal Gu House. Because Duke Long offended all of these people which were all arrogant overlords of their own territory, this event caused them to band together instead.

Over at Western Desert, even though they knew that the issue of Heavenly Court repairing fate Gu was severe, only super forces participated in this. Fang Yuan did not see any Western Desert lone immortals or demonic path members.

"And Western Desert's super forces have reserved a lot of strength in this battle too."

"Fang clan is the one that has brought the most force."

"They brought Chicken Dog Coop, Inquiry Dock, and Fallen Flower Hall, I wonder if Divine Bean Palace has been repaired, did they bring it?"

Fang Yuan pondered rapidly.

Divine Bean Palace was a rank eight Immortal Gu House, if they brought it, this would be interesting.

But Fang clan knew that the chances were slim, even if Fang clan had control of Divine Bean Palace now, there was a good chance that they would leave it in their base.

In this Refinement Path Convention, even though Western Desert and Eastern Sea mobilized their forces, they were quite conservative, they were wary of each other.

"You go this way." Fang Yuan watched from above as he commanded Bai Ning Bing and the rest.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest moved the Immortal Gu House according to Fang Yuan's instructions and passed the second layer of defense, going straight for Emperor City under everyone's shocked gazes.

But Emperor City was protected by Central Continent's third layer of defense.

Two Immortal Gu Houses charged toward Bai Ning Bing and the rest from the left and right.

The palace at the left was grand and imposing, it was Heavenly Lotus Sect’s Immortal Gu House — Yue Yang Palace.

The right garden was exquisitely built, it was grand with white jade tiles and oozing with cold air, there were faint dragon roars heard occasionally, this was Ancient Soul Sect’s Immortal Gu House — Frost Dragon Manor!

Bai Ning Bing and the rest used the Immortal Gu House’s killer move, the move was not powerful, it was destroyed by Yue Yang Palace and Frost Dragon Manor, they arrived in front of Bai Ning Bing and the rest.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest knew that their Immortal Gu House was inferior, they could only retreat.

“You can’t retreat!” A Western Desert rank eight Gu Immortal shouted, if they retreated, this gap that was painstakingly created would be mended, their chance would be lost.

“Retreat!” Fang Yuan’s orders were very direct.

This Immortal Gu House was not Frost Dragon Manor and Yue Yang Palace’s match, Fang Yuan needed to preserve them. If it was destroyed now at the start, it would be a huge waste.

However, it was not so easy to retreat.

2At the crucial moment, intense winds restrained Bai Ning Bing and the rest.

It was a seven-story tower, curtains were fluttering in the building, it was rank seven Immortal Gu House — Wind Sweeping Building!

This was one of the two signature Immortal Gu Houses of Wind Cloud Manor, it was paired with Cloud Passing Building.

Wind Sweeping Building and Cloud Passing Building were able to combine into rank eight Immortal Gu House Wind Cloud Manor, it had extraordinary power. In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, Wind Cloud Manor was once ranked as the number one Immortal Gu House for some time!

With Wind Sweeping Building restraining them, Yue Yang Palace moved rapidly like a meteor, crashing into Fang Yuan’s Immortal Gu House.

Next, Frost Dragon Manor’s killer move also landed.

Instantly, a portion of Fang Yuan’s Immortal Gu House broke, pillars broke and a huge gap was created. A vast number of mortal Gu was destroyed, he also lost several Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan snorted as he showed up.

Emperor yama killer move!

With the use of great thief ghost hand, he directly took a bunch of Gu worms and three Immortal Gu!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1709: Wu Yong Versus Chen Yi

Boom!

With a loud sound, huge changes occurred.

Wu Yong led the group of Southern Alliance immortals as he broke the fifth layer of the formation, arriving at the sixth.

In the sixth formation, there was complete darkness, there were no boundaries as far as one could see.

The Southern Border immortals were as small as ants in comparison to this huge space.

“This is a space path formation!” A Luo clan Gu Immortal suddenly spoke.

He wore a traditional Southern Border clothing, his skin tone was white and he had a cold expression, he was a Luo clan general famous in Southern Border, having peak rank seven battle strength.

His name was Luo Ran, he cultivated space path and had incredible attainment.

“Indeed, this is a space path formation.” Chi Qu You nodded in agreement: “Let me make some deductions.”

The immortals held no disagreements.

After entering a formation, using brute force was not wise. The best way was to let formation path Gu Immortals deduce the profundities of this formation, to target its weaknesses and achieve a greater result in doing so, saving effort in the process.

After some deductions, Chi Qu You said plainly: “I’ve already deduced most of this formation, it is likely the spaceless formation.”

Luo Ran listened and frowned: “Even though I do not cultivate formation path, I’ve heard of spaceless formation, it is one of the most classic immortal formations of space path, it was created during the Remote Antiquity Era. Nobody knows who the creator was, this formation only has one ability, it can extend space and increase distance. After entering the formation, the distance of one step can be turned into a hundred steps.”

Chi Qu You laughed: ” Friend Luo Ran is wise, that is correct. But this formation had already been modified, there is a variation hidden inside it.”

Someone asked: “What variation?”

Chi Qu You shook his head: “I have not deduced it yet, I can only sense it. But we can set off first, I can deduce along the way. In this situation, we can move ahead without concern, the spaceless formation does not have offensive power, it can only trap enemies and increase the distance between enemy and ally, to stall for time.”

“Give me some time, I will be able to deduce the variation formation and find its weakness. During this period, if Heavenly Court attacks, as long as we can defend ourselves, whatever changes we observe will help me in my deductions.”

Chi Qu You’s suggestion was good, the immortals quickly set off and chose to move forward together.

Spaceless formation had no light, it was completely dark and endless.

The Southern Alliance immortals protected Chi Qu You who was at the center of the group, while Wu Yong remained as the vanguard.

“Look, there’s something in front!” Yao clan’s Gu Immortal Yao Tian Ze suddenly spoke.

The immortals quickly slowed down and got closer, taking a clearer look.

There was a huge green and white radish, it was large like a house, floating in the air as it remained motionless.

“What is this? It seems to be an immemorial desolate plant!” Yao Tian Ze asked.

Everyone frowned, this was not a common sight after all.

Wu Yong was silent, a flash of inspiration appeared in his mind, he seemed to have heard of that immortal plant but he could not recall it in a short time.

“If I am not wrong, this should be the great profound ice light radish, it is an extinct immortal plant from the Immemorial Antiquity Era. To think that Heavenly Court still kept it till now.” Qiao Zhi Cai said.

He was the first supreme elder of Qiao clan, even though he had rank seven cultivation level, he cultivated wood path.

Wu Yong’s eyes shined: “That’s right, this is the great profound ice light radish. Everyone be careful, if anyone gets close, this radish will burst out with countless ice lights, it will pierce every muscle and skin in your body, you will instantly freeze to death.”

Qiao Zhi Cai added to the explanation: “That’s right, do not underestimate the ice lights, these ice lights are the dao marks of the great profound ice light radish. After it shoots out, the great profound ice light radish will no longer have any dao marks, it will become a mortal material. Thus, the ice light storm will have the power of a rank eight Gu Immortal’s immortal killer move.”

The immortals heard this and stepped back, they became very alert.

However, a change occurred right at this moment.

Ripples appeared in the air, the formation suddenly activated as a huge space path force erupted on a Southern Border Gu Immortal.

The Southern Border Gu Immortal had already activated his defenses long ago, but the space path force did not attack him, instead, it teleported him away.

The location was none other than beside the great profound ice light radish!

The great profound ice light radish was like a frightened little girl, it quickly shrunk until it was one-third of its original size.

Afterwards, boom!

Countless ice needles shot out in all directions.

The Southern Border Gu Immortal had already activated his strongest defensive method, but in just half a breath of time, he was pierced thoroughly.

Next, he became frozen, becoming an ice statue.

The Southern Border immortals were all deeply shocked.

The spaceless formation suddenly activated and teleported the Gu Immortal away, it was clearly the variation that Chi Qu You had spoke of earlier. Together with the great profound ice light radish, it was a perfect combination.

Wu Yong's expression turned ashen.

He led the Southern Alliance immortals in this battle, at this moment, they had finally lost their first member.

Wu Yong was quite anxious to find a way to deal with the situation.

At this moment, a change occurred again.

Ripples appeared in space again as a formless space path force erupted, trying to teleport another Southern Alliance Gu Immortal.

"With me around, don't even think about it!" At the crucial moment, Luo Ran shouted, activating an Immortal Gu.

The power of the Immortal Gu spread out as the surrounding space instantly froze like ice.

Southern Alliance's immortals felt a strong restrictive force, as if they were sealed in an ice coffin.

Rank seven Immortal Gu — Suppress Space!

A rank seven Immortal Gu could not deal with this Heavenly Court formation, but it was not without effect.

Suppress space Immortal Gu helped the Southern Alliance Gu Immortal to gain a few crucial seconds to escape.

The formation's spatial ripples were like a beast's mouth that failed to devour its target, it could only vanish in vain.

Luo Ran dispelled the effect of suppress space Immortal Gu, Southern Alliance's Gu Immortals felt the pressure lifting as they regained their freedom.

"The situation was urgent, I had to activate suppress space Immortal Gu, it had a wide range that cannot be controlled, my apologies for implicating everyone." Luo Ran quickly apologized.

Wu Yong laughed loudly: "Well done!"

"This is suppress space Immortal Gu? It is a good Gu worm that counters this formation." Chi Qu You nodded, feeling glad.

Luo Ran smiled: "I obtained this Gu from an Earth Trench recently, to think that it would work here, this shows that somehow, heaven's will truly exists."

Everything in this world had its weaknesses and counters, there was no strongest

Gu worm, only strongest Gu Immortal.

Heavenly Court created this spaceless teleportation formation, it was made of several rank seven Immortal Gu and a vast number of mortal Gu, but it was countered by one suppress space Immortal Gu.

With suppress space Immortal Gu, Southern Alliance’s immortals no longer had any concerns when moving in this formation space.

And because Heavenly Court’s teleportation formation was activated, Chi Qu You’s deductions became faster.

A moment later, Chi Qu You pointed out a loophole of the formation.

He said to Wu Yong: “Heavenly Court’s spaceless formation is too troublesome to break from the inside. Lord Alliance Leader, why don’t you use this loophole to link with the unlimited wind outside and break the formation there, it should be easier.”

Wu Yong used the loophole and easily detected the unlimited wind outside.

Immediately, wild winds blew and broke the formation through the loophole.

The Southern Alliance Gu Immortals returned to the outside world.

After breaking six formations and only losing one member, the Southern Alliance immortals had surging morale.

This battle result made the formation’s controller feel extremely heavy hearted.

This person was dressed in a green robe, emitting an aura of a scholar. From his appearance, he looked young, but his eyes were deep and wise, he was already some thousands of years old.

It was none other than the wood path rank eight great expert, Heavenly Lotus Sect’s previous first supreme elder, the current generation Genesis Lotus inheritor — Chen Yi!

“To think that the enemies are so ferocious! There are only three formations left.” Chen Yi pondered for a while and said to the person beside him: “Why don’t we work together and fight them, we can gain some time for the formation to be set up.”

The female immortal beside him, Bai Cang Shui, was a Heavenly Court member, she had participated in the previous Refinement Path Convention to restore Fate. She did not hesitate, agreeing immediately.

The two walked out of the formation, Wu Yong and the rest were still attacking the seventh layer of the formation, they tried to break it directly.

Chen Yi cupped his fists at the Southern Border immortals: “Southern Border friends, I am Heavenly Court’s Chen Yi, does anyone dare to fight me alone?”

Wu Yong’s pupils shrunk, he waved his hand as Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was taken out.

In a fight between rank eights, rank seven Gu Immortals could not interfere, but if they went inside an Immortal Gu House, they would be able to join the battle, barely.

Ba clan’s first supreme elder Ba Shi Ba laughed loudly: “Old man Chen Yi, it was not wise for you to come out of that tortoise shell. Let me face you.”

“Wait, don’t let him stall for time, we will attack together!” Wu Yong snickered and ordered.

If Wu Du Xiu was here, she would definitely accept Chen Yi’s challenge and fight him alone.

But Wu Yong was a different type of person, why would he give up on a chance to attack him as a group?

Immediately, Wu Yong moved forward with multiple rank eights from Southern Border behind him, along with Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building carrying rank seven Gu Immortals, they charged ahead.

Chen Yi and Bai Cang Shui were attacked by the group but they did not fluster.

Bai Cang Shui pushed with her hands as huge white waves appeared and moved forward.

Wu Yong’s body flickered as his afterimage remained, his true body had vanished on the spot.

Ba Shi Ba faced the huge waves as he shouted, his aura surged as a profound light shined on the waves.

Next, the wings on Yi Hao Fang’s back waved, countless arrows shot out, the arrow rain pierced the waves, approaching Bai Cang Shui and Chen Yi.

“Come,” Chen Yi smiled, he did not make any movements but the phantom images of huge trees appeared around him.

Yi Hao Fang’s arrow rain pierced into the forest, it only caused some shaking in the trees, a large number of leaves fell.

Chen Yi’s aura grew stronger, he was about to retaliate when his expression suddenly changed.

Wu Yong appeared right behind him unknowingly.

“He has such concealment methods?! The concealed person that I detected was actually an illusion that he made!” Chen Yi was deeply shocked by Wu Yong’s methods.

At the moment of crisis, he did not even have time to turn around.

Next, he felt that Wu Yong had lightly patted his shoulder.

“We became friends at first sight, yet you have to go now. This is farewell my good friend, let me send you off.” Wu Yong smiled lightly.

Hearing this, even with Chen Yi’s thousands of years of life and abundant experiences, his expression became pale.

He shouted in his heart: “This is immortal killer move — Farewell Friend Wind!! My Heavenly Court had not been able to find it even after extensive search, to think that it was in Wu Yong’s hands!”

Next, Chen Yi lost control over his body, he slowly floated towards the front.

While floating, his hair, clothes, and limbs started to disintegrate.

“Save me!” Chen Yi shouted in his heart but he could not make any noise.

He could not move at all, none of his methods could be used.

Even karma divine tree killer move was unable to be activated!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1710: Limitless’ Left Path

1

Heavenly Court.

The originally white sky became covered in seven colored rainbow lights.

A huge Immortal Gu House was floating in the sky.

It was truly an incredible Immortal Gu House!

It had three floors of altars, grand and magnificent. There were multiple pillars holding each floor up, having white jade railings and shining aurora.

It was the rank eight luck path Immortal Gu House — Calamity Luck Altar.

In the past, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had personally constructed it, it was one of his three Immortal Gu Houses that he used.

Originally, Calamity Luck Altar was left as Longevity Heaven’s foundation, but this time to attack Heavenly Court, they actually brought it along.

Such an act showed Longevity Heaven’s confidence, many of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals felt very worried.

Fairy Zi Wei frowned deeply.

Even Duke Long had a solemn gaze in his eyes.

However, his attention was not on Calamity Luck Altar, but the rainbow lights in the sky instead.

Duke Long said in a low tone: “Calamity Luck Altar and the Longevity Heaven Gu Immortals alone cannot break in here easily. This seven colored rainbow light is of rank nine level, it must be the work of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!”

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable?” Fairy Zi Wei was dazed before realization shined on her face: “According to Heavenly Court’s records, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was once invited to tour Heavenly Court. Did he create this backdoor secretly at that time?”

“That should be the case.” Duke Long said.

Fairy Zi Wei’s expression turned grim: “This Giant Sun Immortal Venerable is truly crafty. He had already planned to invade Heavenly Court so long ago, his scheme was so deep.”

“All past venerables have great wisdom, they cannot be underestimated. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable possessed luck path methods, he secretly set this arrangement and we could not discover it until it was used now.” Duke Long sighed as he shook his head, having a complex feeling.

Back then, when Giant Sun became venerable, he did it through luck path, it was a huge obstruction to fate Gu. Back then, Heavenly Court’s leader, Golden Hooped Great Immortal, made a plan and specially invited Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to tour Heavenly Court, telling the world that they were inviting Giant Sun to join Heavenly Court openly.

After considering it, Giant Sun agreed to the invitation and went on to look around Heavenly Court.

Golden Hooped Great Immortal personally led Giant Sun Immortal Venerable as they went to look at the important places in Heavenly Court, especially the places that Limitless, Reckless Savage, and Red Lotus stopped at when they attacked.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made a suggestion, he wanted to see fate Immortal Gu.

Golden Hooped Great Immortal did not reject him, they went up Heaven Overseeing Tower and saw fate Gu.

After Giant Sun left the tower, he remained silent along the way.

After leaving Heavenly Court, he said that he had to reconsider the matter of joining them.

This experience and the conversation between Giant Sun and Golden Hooped was clearly recorded in Heavenly Court’s history with great precision.

“The power of rank nine is truly unfathomable, we only saw Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangements today, that is not strange at all. After all, he cultivated luck path, and we have little understanding of this path. However, even Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who managed to plant spies in Heavenly Court is in our captivity now. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable has died long ago, only his Calamity Luck Altar and a bunch of Northern Plains Gu Immortals are here to attack us now, how can my Heavenly Court fall so easily?” The hall resounded with Old Man Zheng Yuan’s voice.

1Fairy Zi Wei nodded but she still frowned: “Calamity Luck Altar is not an ordinary rank eight Immortal Gu House, it was once owned by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. It is a pity that Prince Feng Xian did not join this invasion, otherwise we would have gotten information about Longevity Heaven’s sneak attack in advance.”

“But most importantly, how much force is hidden in Calamity Luck Altar?”

“Hmm... wait, I think there isn’t a lot. Because we did not get any news of this invasion by Northern Plains’ Longevity Heaven. They were able to keep it hidden so well, they must have kept it to a very small number of people.”

Fairy Zi Wei analyzed rapidly.

“You are not wrong, that is likely so.” Duke Long nodded, even though he stood up from his seat, his arms were still behind his back, he did not join the battle, as if he was waiting for something.

At the next moment, the whole of Heavenly Court shook.

Swoosh, like the howling of the wind, this sound was etched deep into everyone’s hearts.

Duke Long, Fairy Zi Wei, and Old Man Zheng Yuan felt no surprise, they showed faint smiles on their faces.

“The killer move that Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable left behind has activated!”

Within Calamity Luck Altar, Longevity Heaven’s Gu Immortals felt no surprise either.

The information that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left behind already described this. In fact, even without Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s information, Longevity Heaven had a number of true inheritances of the few Demon Venerables. Be it Reckless Savage or Limitless, they were Northern Plainsmen, the intel of their attack on Heavenly Court was in Longevity Heaven’s hands.

1“This is the killer move qi wall?”

“Qi wall killer move is very ordinary, but when Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was at a young age, he was very skilled at it and enjoyed using it.”

“When Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable became invincible in the world, this qi wall killer move was also elevated to rank nine!”

Longevity Heaven’s Gu Immortals discussed as they manipulated Calamity Luck Altar, attacking the surroundings.

The surrounding air started to produce ripples like a formless fortress, only after facing a lot of attacks did it burst back into normal air.

But soon, it gathered again into a formless fortress wall.

The whole of Heavenly Court was reinforced by this air, resisting the invasion of Longevity Heaven. But for Heavenly Court’s members, when they moved, the qi wall around them would return to normal air, they would not be obstructed.

Longevity Heaven’s Gu Immortals made some attempts as they expressed shock on their faces.

“Indeed worthy of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable!”

“The ordinary qi wall killer move has the power of rank nine in Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s hands, it is even stronger than the heavenly wind qi wall.”

“What do we do now?” Five Elements Grandmaster had an ugly expression, he was very worried. He had just joined Longevity Heaven recently, he had only learned of the invasion several days ago.

Five Elements Grandmaster’s worry was very reasonable, if they could not get past this move, they would need to destroy all the qi walls along their path.

The expenditure would be too high, they might not even make it to Duke Long before their immortal essence dried up, they would be extremely tired.

But it was too difficult to unravel this move.

Firstly, it was a rank nine killer move, only methods of similar level would be effective. Unless they possessed an extremely effective rank eight killer move, it would not be useful.

Secondly, after the changes of eras, qi path had already fallen out of common use, almost nobody from Longevity Heaven in this trip cultivated qi path.

What could they do?

“Don’t worry, we have our method!”

“Even though this move is made by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, so many years have passed, eras have changed, after the invasions of three Demon Venerables, it already possessed flaws.”

“That’s right, back then, Limitless, Reckless Savage, and Red Lotus could not unravel this qi wall killer move even though they attacked Heavenly Court. They merely used their incredible strength to break through by force.”

“They carved out three roads on their own, these three paths are the places where the qi wall is at its weakest and cannot regenerate. As long as we destroy a small area, we will be able to enter one of these three paths and follow the Demon Venerable’s road to fight our way in!”

Five Elements Grandmaster let out a sigh of relief: “So that’s it.”

Next, he asked: “Which path do we choose?”

At the same time.

In the Central Great Hall, Duke Long and Fairy Zi Wei conversed: “Even though qi wall is powerful, it had been exposed long ago. Since Longevity Heaven is attacking now, they must be aware of its weaknesses, they will use the paths that the Demon Venerables created.”

Fairy Zi Wei nodded, recalling: “The left path was created by Limitless Demon Venerable, it passes Central Heaven Gate, Name Plaque Palace, Sun Palace, Five Deity Hall, Central Great Hall, Heaven Overseeing Tower, Forgotten Dao Lake, and finally, it stops at the Imperfection Regret Pavilion on the peak of Star Zone Mountain.”

“The central path was created by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable. It passes Immortal Emperor Court, Hidden Space Pavilion, Sumeru Lake, Eternal Sand Cave, Million Heavenly King Gallery, Embroidered Tower, Central Great Hall, and ends at Heaven Overseeing Tower.”

“The right path was made by Red Lotus Demon Venerable. He first went past Lotus Fairy Pond and Bright Moon Treasure Light Hall, followed by Twelve Spiritual Pass, Separation Flame Pavilion, Magnetic Star Hill, Water Wood Clarity Court, Central Great Hall, and ends at Heaven Overseeing Tower.”

“As long as they make their choice, we will be able to know their route and set up our defenses.”

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes flickered with the sparkles of wisdom.

“That is right.” Duke Long had no objections.

Boom boom boom!

Calamity Luck Altar brought the few Longevity Heaven Gu Immortals as they attacked the weak spot of the qi wall and went in.

Once they entered, Longevity Heaven’s group felt that the pressure was greatly lifted, the qi wall was barely existing here!

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals also saw what happened.

Fairy Zi Wei and Duke Long looked at each other: “They chose the left path.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1711: Heavenly Court Battlefield

Left path!

This was the path that Limitless Demon Venerable created a million years ago during the Olden Antiquity Era!

The left path passed Central Heaven Gate, Name Plaque Palace, Sun Palace, Five Deity Hall, Central Great Hall, Heaven Overseeing Tower, Forgotten Dao Lake, and finally, it stopped at the Imperfection Regret Pavilion on the peak of Star Zone Mountain.

The huge Heavenly Court was shining in glorious light, it had countless palaces and pavilions, it was a grand sight.

Calamity Luck Altar charged ahead with an unstoppable momentum.

Heavenly Court, which had been silent for a long time, finally met with an unavoidable attack.

Within Calamity Luck Altar, Five Elements Grandmaster watched and observed the situation.

He was tongue-tied and deeply moved: “If I was not seeing this personally, I would not believe that all these buildings here are Immortal Gu Houses! Even though most are just rank six Immortal Gu Houses, Heavenly Court’s foundation is still too terrifying.”

Flower Lady of the Northern Desolation Immortals chuckled: “Five Elements, this is Heavenly Court after all. It was created three million years ago during the Remote Antiquity Era, it had remained standing until today. Even though fate Gu was damaged, it remained as the number one force in this world. With such an accumulation, this is not a surprising sight.”

“Look at these palaces, they are all the creation of famous rank eight immortals from the Remote Antiquity Era. After modifications from future experts like Statue Deity, Aunt Orchid, Yellow Court Monarch, Uncle Feng, and Concubine Quan Miao, they continued to develop and improve upon them, until they were completed today.”

“All of the palaces and Immortal Gu Houses are considered one entity, they can help each other. At the same time, these palaces can be separated and elevated on their own, it is very convenient.”

“However, there is no need to overestimate Heavenly Court, these Immortal Gu Houses are mostly just rank six. And most importantly, they are only specialized in one aspect, they are not as comprehensive as the Immortal Gu Houses outside.”

Five Elements Grandmaster nodded: “I understand, if it is comprehensive, even more Immortal Gu will need to be used, as well as a vast number of mortal Gu. Heavenly Court is very proud, other than the three Demon Venerables who attacked, nobody dared to invade them. Thus, there was no need for such investments in their opinion, after all, these Immortal Gu Houses are kept in Heavenly Court most of the time, they are not too useful.”

Saying so, Five Elements Grandmaster suddenly laughed loudly: “So that’s it! We attacked Heavenly Court and caught them unguarded at this moment. This is their weakness, interesting, interesting. Other than three Demon Venerables, to think that I will also attack Heavenly Court. Even if I die here, with this experience, my life was not in vain.”

Five Elements Grandmaster was filled with grand aspirations. He was a Northern Plainsman, even though he was rank eight, his nature was that of a Northern Plainsman, it had never changed.

The people of Northern Plains sought glory through combat, it was a shame to live as a loser.

For them, dying in the battlefield was the greatest honor and recognition.

Calamity Luck Altar forced its way through, finally arriving at Central Heaven Gate.

This huge gate was like a mountain adorned with beautiful golden ornaments, it was held by tall and thick pillars, there were shining pearls and gems on its frame.

“This is Central Heaven Gate?”

“It looks like an information path Immortal Gu House?”

Five Elements Grandmaster looked around as he pondered.

“Indeed, Heavenly Court only recruits new members who are elites of the ten great ancient sects. These rank eight elites would have to pass the test in Central Heaven Gate before they join Heavenly Court.” Bull Demon said.

Central Heaven Gate was shut tight, it blocked Calamity Luck Altar from advancing further.

In Central Great Hall.

Duke Long asked: “Central Heaven Gate is a rank eight information path Immortal Gu House but it has weak defenses, it cannot stop them for long. How many golden pearls do we have in the storage?”

Fairy Zi Wei replied immediately: “Three thousand six hundred.”

Duke Long nodded: “Take them all out and use them to help Central Heaven Gate defend against the enemy. I am certain that Longevity Heaven has trump cards up its sleeves, Northern Plains has courageous people but they are not without wisdom. We need to remain calm and deal with them without panicking, we will stall for time and wait until fate Gu is restored, all our hard work and sacrifice will pay off in the end.”

“Yes, sir.” Fairy Zi Wei answered as she manipulated the Central Great Hall.

The Central Great Hall was the control area of all the Heavenly Court Immortal Gu Houses, using it, Fairy Zi Wei opened Heavenly Court’s treasury and took out all of their golden pearls.

Cling cling cling...

There was a sharp noise as golden pearls fell down like rain, there were golden sparkles as they poured down.

Calamity Luck Altar crashed into Central Heaven Gate as it started to crack from the pressure.

The golden pearls landed on Calamity Luck Altar and created continuous sharp noises.

Calamity Luck Altar remained unaffected, there were no cracks on it.

However, the golden pearls started to show their true effect, as the peals turned into huge soldiers that were armored all over their bodies. Under the shadows of their helmets, only their two eyes were shining with piercing golden light. They had weapons like axes, blades, and spears in their hands.

Soon, these golden pearl soldiers surrounded Calamity Luck Altar. Countless blades and spears slashed and stabbed at Calamity Luck Altar, causing many sparks to appear.

Calamity Luck Altar shook intensely, in order to defend from the attacks, immortal essence was rapidly expended.

“What is this?” Five Elements Grandmaster was shocked: “Each soldier has the strength of an ancient desolate beast but possesses no life force, this looks like an immortal killer move?”

“These are golden pearls. During the Medieval Antiquity Era, there was a metal path great expert in Heavenly Court, he was known as the Golden Pearl Immortal King. These golden pearls were his signature killer move, a method unique to him.” Bull Demon said plainly.

Flower Lady giggled as she covered her mouth: “Heavenly Court is only tossing these golden pearls while Fairy Zi Wei and Duke Long are not showing up, it seems that they are trying to stall for time until fate Gu gets restored.”

Bull Demon nodded: “This is a wise decision, even though Heavenly Court is huge, there are only a few rank eight Gu Immortals who are awake. The battlefield outside is depleting and splitting up Heavenly Court’s current force.”

“Then we need to make use of this time.” Flower Lady’s eyes shined.

Bull Demon said in a low tone: “Let me do it.”

Saying so, he concentrated and started to manipulate Calamity Luck Altar.

A method was activated by Bull Demon as Calamity Luck Altar started to shine in a blinding light.

Within the light, auspicious clouds formed and pushed all the golden pearl soldiers away.

At the next moment, with a loud bang, Calamity Luck Altar broke through Central Heaven Gate.

Longevity Heaven’s group did not slaughter these golden pearl soldiers or attack the heavily damaged Central Heaven Gate, they only pushed forward.

This was a battle that was determined by time.

Since Heavenly Court wanted to stall for time, Longevity Heaven’s group had to make use of that and prevent them from succeeding.

Along the way, golden pearl soldiers continued to obstruct them but could not stop Calamity Luck Altar’s advancement.

Soon, Longevity Heaven’s Gu Immortals arrived at Name Plaque Palace.

But what they saw was that Name Plaque Palace flew high up into the sky.

“Heavenly Court actually moved this Name Plaque Palace away!” Five Elements Grandmaster was happy but suspicious.

Bing Sai Chuan said in a low tone: “This is also an information path Immortal Gu House, there are name plaques inside, each has a person’s name. These people form a huge information network for Heavenly Court, they are all over the five regions.”

Five Elements Grandmaster was shocked: “So that means, if we destroy it, Heavenly Court’s information network will be exposed? No wonder they had to move it away at any cost.”

Five Elements Grandmaster felt that it was a pity.

Heavenly Court’s information network was huge, it covered all five regions. Even though other regions were trying to get information on other regions, their scale and reach could not compare to Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court had the ten great ancient sects as their subordinate forces, they had ruled over Central Continent for many eras, they were naturally able to select suitable people to nurture as elites and send to other regions secretly.

As for the other four regions, Longevity Heaven and Southern Alliance had only surfaced recently, trying to unify their own regions. As for other super clans, even if they sent people out, compared to Heavenly Court, they were too small and insignificant.

“Forget it, we had already anticipated that Name Plaque Palace would fly away. Without its obstruction, we can save a lot of time and advance faster!” Bing Sai Chuan ordered.

Sun Palace.

Calamity Luck Altar soon arrived at the third obstacle.

Sun Palace gave out a heated light, it was too blinding.

The surroundings of the palace were distorted from the warm air, intense heat assaulted everyone.

Even though Longevity Heaven’s members were inside Calamity Luck Altar, they still felt immense heat that burned them endlessly.

The immortals tried to move Calamity Luck Altar to charge through but even without getting too close, the surface of Calamity Luck Altar started melting, a vast number of mortal Gu were charred and incinerated.

Sun Palace was so strong that Calamity Luck Altar could not get close.

It controlled the illumination of the whole of Heavenly Court, it had multiple light path rank eight Immortal Gu as the cores, even though it was very weak in defense, even lower than Central Heaven Gate, Calamity Luck Altar could not approach it.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Calamity Luck Altar stayed in the air as killer moves were activated, attacking Sun Palace from afar.

But all sorts of killer moves melted from the heat and light of Sun Palace before they even landed.

“This obstacle is too hard, we do not have any light path or dark path experts helping us.” Five Elements Grandmaster frowned deeply.

“No need to worry.” Bull Demon spoke: “Sun Palace is strong on the outside and weak on the inside, as long as we can get in, we will be able to destroy it. I will go.”

“Okay, let’s go together.” Flower Lady chuckled as she lay on his shoulder, feeling no nervousness at all.

Five Elements Grandmaster was greatly shocked.

He knew how dangerous that was, the light was too intense, without proper defense, even rank eight Gu Immortals could not last long, they would melt like candles.

“Isn’t that too dangerous, we can think of other ways.” Five Elements Grandmaster said cautiously.

Bing Sai Chuan shook his head: “Speed is the key, go.”

He controlled Calamity Luck Altar as it attacked, paving a way for Bull Demon and Flower Lady.

Bull Demon and Flower Lady shot out with incredible speed, they were about to get into Sun Palace in just an instant.

“Wishful thinking!” Fairy Zi Wei who was in the Central Great Hall smiled coldly as Sun Palace’s intensity surged.

“Oh no.” Five Elements Grandmaster shouted in dismay.

At the crucial moment, Flower Lady shouted as her tiny body jumped, turning into a pink light that shielded Bull Demon.

Bull Demon cried out in pain, he charged into Sun Palace without stopping.

Fairy Zi Wei’s expression turned grim, she said bitterly: “Sun Palace has been taken down.”

After ten breaths of time, Sun Palace was destroyed.

Without Sun Palace, the whole of Heavenly Court’s sky became dark.

In the rubble, Bull Demon carried Flower Lady’s corpse as he returned to Calamity Luck Altar with an expressionless face.

Sun Palace was destroyed, Longevity Heaven also paid a price.

Flower Lady died!

Looking at the silent Bull Demon, Five Elements Grandmaster wanted to console him but no words came out after he opened his mouth.

Bull Demon and Flower Lady were together known as the Northern Desolation Immortals, they were usually extremely close and never left each other’s side. Now that one was sacrificed while the other survived, this pain was truly deep and heavy.

Even though Flower Lady died, she had a smile on her face.

Bull Demon looked at Flower Lady’s corpse for a long time, she eventually turned into scattering flower petals, only a tiny delicate flower remained.

Bull Demon placed this flower on his head carefully and gently, it was completely different from his usual cold and tough appearance.

“Continue.” Bull Demon turned around and looked towards the front.

Under Bing Sai Chuan’s manipulation, Calamity Luck Altar continued to move ahead.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1712: Battle of Legendary Desolate Beasts

Once Sun Palace was destroyed, the next was Five Deity Hall. And after Five Deity Hall, it would be the Central Great Hall that Fairy Zi Wei and Duke Long were in.

Longevity Heaven’s Gu Immortals came with determination, they attacked ferociously without concern for sacrifices, Heavenly Court’s immortals felt deep pressure.

“We cannot let them continue with this any farther.” Duke Long turned to Fairy Zi Wei: “Have you deployed all of them already?”

Fairy Zi Wei’s expression was quite ugly: “Only two came.”

Duke Long was dazed before he spoke: “Cang Xuan Zi didn’t come? So be it, when it agreed to join Heavenly Court back then, there was already an agreement with Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable. The two that came should be able to block Calamity Luck Altar for some time with their strength.”

Five Deity Hall was already in sight, suddenly, a sandstorm brewed, waves of sand blocked Calamity Luck Altar.

Roar—!

A tiger’s roar resounded in the surroundings.

The sand waves spread apart as a hill-like tiger was exposed from within.

The fierce tiger had overwhelming aura, its body seemed to be made of metal, it had golden skin and silver teeth, its eyes resembled sparkling rubies, emanating fierce light. On the tiger’s forehead, the marking was not ‘王’ but ‘沙1‘.

Five Elements Grandmaster took a glance and expressed his shock: “Heavenly Court also has legendary immemorial desolate beasts?”

“Of course.” Bing Sai Chuan had a plain expression: “Heavenly Court has a total of three legendary immemorial beasts. This huge tiger looks like a tiger but it is actually a Shabi. This is a type of monster that is formed in the fiendish qi sea spring. Right now, qi path is going extinct, the fiendish qi sea spring is already extinct, this is the only Shabi left.”

“During the Olden Antiquity Era, Heavenly Court’s qi path great expert Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch nurtured it. After he became rank eight and traveled the world, he purposely looked for the fiendish qi sea springs and created the Shabi from them. He refined a total of ninety-nine Shabi, he formed a grand army with them. These Shabi were compatible with his immortal killer moves, he could use them extremely well, during that era, almost nobody could rival him.”

“But now, this is the final one. This Shabi was one of the last few created, it was number ninety-five. Thus, it had been named as such, but after Ancestor Giant Sun got invited to Heavenly Court and saw this Shabi, he named it Shabi Ninety-five1

.”

“So there was such a backstory. No wonder lord has such a deep understanding of it.” Five Elements Grandmaster sighed in admiration.

He looked behind him, only to see that Shabi Ninety-five had whipped up a sandstorm, fighting against ‘Calamity Luck Altar’ with a grand commotion, displaying peak rank eight battle strength!

Bing Sai Chuan analyzed closely: “Shabi Ninety-five resides in Eternal Sand Cave, it was deployed by Heavenly Court to come here. Green jade crane Ruan Dan will likely come here too, while Cang Xuan Zi is probably not coming.”

Five Elements Grandmaster asked: “Ruan Dan, Cang Xuan Zi, are they the remaining two legendary immemorial beasts?”

At the same time, he felt puzzled inside: Why was Bing Sai Chuan so certain that Cang Xuan Zi would not join the battle? Did they have spies in Heavenly Court?

Bing Sai Chuan answered: “Indeed. Ruan Dan is an immemorial green jade crane, it was nurtured by Immortal Crane Sect and created pill path, it resides in Heavenly Court to cultivate in normal times. As for Cang Xuan Zi, it is that vast heaven vine. This vine has incredible power and abilities, it sprouts in three hundred years, blossoms in three hundred years, and bears fruits in three hundred years. The fruits that it create are called vast heaven fruits, if used in a grotto-heaven, it can expand the size of the immortal aperture’s sky. Thus, this vast heaven vine is also known as the tenth heaven of this world!”

“Tenth heaven of this world...” Five Elements Grandmaster shook, he suddenly realized as he pointed left: “That huge vine pillar that extends towards the limits of the sky?”

Heavenly Court had countless palaces, there was a huge vine that connected heaven and earth, it was even taller than the Heaven Overseeing Tower behind the Central Great Hall, it was very eye-catching. When Five Elements Grandmaster invaded Heavenly Court, he noticed it immediately.

“That’s right, the vast heaven vine was brought in by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable personally, it had an agreement with him, it is a unique existence in Heavenly Court, it does not need to follow orders, but only has to provide a batch of vast heaven fruits every thousand years.”

Five Elements Grandmaster heard this as he felt his horizons broadening, he had never thought that there would be a legendary immemorial desolate plant in this world that could ignore Heavenly Court’s orders.

But thinking about it, he knew why.

The vast heaven vine’s ability was too unique and special. With these vast heaven fruits, Heavenly Court could continue to increase the skies of the immortal aperture and increase its foundation. Rather than saying that the vast heaven vine could ignore Heavenly Court’s orders, it was more like Heavenly Court was making use of it and allowing it some degree of freedom.

At the moment, in the Central Great Hall.

“Oh no!” Fairy Zi Wei frowned: “This Calamity Luck Altar is fake.”

“What?” Duke Long looked over.

Fairy Zi Wei was in control of Central Great Hall, she had been using the palaces and countless Immortal Gu Houses to observe Central Continent, she obviously kept a high amount of concentration on Heavenly Court’s situation.

Heaven Overseeing Tower could not be moved normally, Fairy Zi Wei mobilized the other Immortal Gu Houses, shooting out a crystal rainbow light.

The rainbow light tore through the skies, landing on ‘Calamity Luck Altar’.

“Calamity Luck Altar’ shook before it returned to its original form.

This was a four legged beast with purple fur.

Its body was huge, even larger than the Shabi.

It was like a ferret, its body covered in shiny purple fur, its eyes were shining with a purple crystal-like color, there was a dog tail on its back.

“Oh! You finally realized, you fools from Heavenly Court! Hahaha...” The purple ferret laughed loudly, mocking its enemies.

“You are... Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s dog tail life extending ferret, Mao Li Qiu?!” Shabi Ninety-five was very shocked, it spoke human words.

The purple ferret’s expression sank, it quickly moved out like a purple flash of lightning.

Boom.

Sand splattered, the dog tail life extending ferret pressed down on the Shabi as it opened its mouth, saying with a fierce expression and low tone: “Remember, call me Grandpa Mao!”

Shabi Ninety-five was furious, growling: “In terms of age, I am your grandfather instead!”

It struggled to get up but the dog tail life extending ferret did not budge.

Shabi Ninety-five was secretly shocked: “This beast has such great strength? But how can I be suppressed like this?”

“Hahaha, stupid cat and silly ferret, you two are a good couple, this is such an interesting fight.” Right at this moment, laughter resounded above the two beasts.

Dog tail life extending ferret looked up and saw a Gu Immortal sitting on a cloud, looking at them with a smile.

The dog tail life extending ferret’s expression froze for a second before it realized: “Oh, so you are that green jade crane, why are you posing as a human? Come down, let your Grandpa Mao teach you how to be a proper bird again!”

The laughter stopped, the green jade crane was furious: “You insolent ferret, I am going to tear your skin apart.”

The green jade crane was about to descend when it stopped all of a sudden, Fairy Zi Wei had given it orders secretly, instead of fighting with dog tail life extending ferret Mao Li Qiu, it was supposed to head to Five Deity Hall.

The true Calamity Luck Altar had not shown itself but the route it could take was fixed.

The green jade crane acknowledged the order and was about to leave when a huge shadow appeared in front of it.

It looked up and its pupils shrunk.

Mao Li Qiu had jumped into the sky and its huge form was crashing down while causing a vacuum behind it.

The green jade crane shrieked before it returned to its true form, it flapped its wings and quickly got out of the casted shadow’s range.

But at the next moment, Mao Li Qiu’s claws grabbed onto the green jade crane’s leg.

“Come down here for your Grandpa Mao!” The dog tail life extending ferret snickered as it pulled with its strong limb.

The green jade crane flapped its wings furiously, but it soon discovered to its despair that any effort ended in vain.

Slam, the green jade crane landed on the ground, causing a huge pit to form.

The green jade crane’s ears were buzzing, it only had one thought in its mind now: “This Northern Plains brute has such great strength!”

The green jade crane struggled to get up but Mao Li Qiu pounced once again.

Dust clouds rose as rocks were sent flying.

The green jade crane continued to shriek ——

“Ahh! You thug, don’t pull my feathers.”

“Ahh, you mindless beast, don’t bite my leg!”

“Don’t touch my elegant neck you scumbag!”

“My neck is breaking, it’s breaking!”

“Ahhhh, my leg is breaking, my leg is breaking!”

Duke Long: “...”

Fairy Zi Wei: “...”

Five Elements Grandmaster: “...”

Bing Sai Chuan: “...”

2Eventually, the green jade crane’s screaming reached its limit: “Stupid cat, what are you doing, why aren’t you coming here and helping me?!”

“Hahaha, weren’t you having a good time watching earlier? You two can play, I’m leaving.” Shabi Ninety-five laughed as it flew towards Five Deity Hall.

“Where are you going?” Mao Li Qiu snickered as a clone flew out of its body, pouncing at Shabi Ninety-five with great speed.

“We are both males, why are you lying on top of me now?!” Shabi Ninety-five was furious.

3The green jade crane agreed with these words wholeheartedly, it shrieked amidst the dust clouds: “That’s right! Let us go if you have guts... ahhh, stop kicking between my legs, your evil scumbag!”

Shabi Ninety-five was very angry, it liked the action of pouncing on others, but it liked to be at the top, being at the bottom was a disgrace and humiliation.

Shabi Ninety-five was struggling on the ground below Mao Li Qiu, it was furious and its teeth were exposed as it growled: “A mere clone, you want to obstruct me, you are simply looking down... hmm?”

At the next moment, Shabi Ninety-five’s expression became dazed, it was a little fearful: “Is this the main body or a clone? Why does it have such great strength?”

In the Central Great Hall, Duke Long seemed to have realized something: “This is...”

Because of Mao Li Qiu’s actions, Calamity Luck Altar obtained some crucial time, it finally arrived at Five Deity Hall.

“I have already explained the details of Five Deity Hall to you, it will depend on you now.” Bing Sai Chuan said to Five Elements Grandmaster.

Five Elements Grandmaster looked behind worriedly: “Can Grandpa Mao do it? How long can it last?”

“Don’t worry, it is using the killer move perfect pair, this was the method of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable that my Longevity Heaven had searched for with great effort! It can summon a clone with the same battle strength as the main body.” Bing Sai Chuan’s lips curled up.

2“Understood!” Five Elements Grandmaster’s eyes shined with bright light, staring at Five Deity Hall.

Five Deity Hall shook intensely, a giant spirit made of the five elements, metal, wood, water, fire, earth, formed and attacked Calamity Luck Altar.

Calamity Luck Altar burst out with profound light, Five Elements Grandmaster was directly sent into Five Deity Hall.

The five elements giant spirit was furious, it wanted to defend but Calamity Luck Altar shot out an incredible attraction force that restrained it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1713: Battle Between Venerables

Bam bam bam...

With a chain of explosions, Five Deity Hall was blown to smithereens amidst a huge fire.

Five Elements Grandmaster stepped on thin air as he walked out, even though there was some soot on his face, he was unharmed.

Next, he went inside Calamity Luck Altar.

Five Elements Grandmaster laughed loudly: “Even though this Five Deity Hall is extraordinary, I am very familiar with its concept, my methods directly counter it. This was much easier than I had expected it to be!”

As he said that, a sense of pride emerged in him.

Bing Sai Chuan looked at him and said plainly: “Of course it is, the formation path methods that you use are part of my Ancestor Giant Sun’s arrangements.”

Five Elements Grandmaster was stunned, his expression changed as he looked at Bing Sai Chuan: “What do you mean?”

Bing Sai Chuan gave him a glance, showing a smile full of deep meaning: “Why do you think you managed to enter Longevity Heaven when you attacked? Do you remember the most important words of your inheritance? Do you find them nonsensical? Try reading them in reverse, but only the last word of each sentence.”

Five Elements Grandmaster was immediately suspicious.

He was a lone cultivator from birth, his turning point was the mysterious lone immortal formation path true inheritance that he found, it led to his achievements.

“Ever since I obtained the true inheritance, I cultivated non-stop and had never spoken of it to others. How does Bing Sai Chuan know that my true inheritance has those important sentences? I have never understood what it was saying... reverse the order and read the last word of each line....”

“Hmm? Listen to Bing Sai Chuan and attack Heavenly Court?!” Five Elements Grandmaster was lost for words, he stared at Bing Sai Chuan in disbelief.

1Bing Sai Chuan controlled Calamity Luck Altar to move forward while saying slowly: “Even if a rank nine venerable does not cultivate wisdom path, at their level, they have already gained a deep understanding of the path, it is not hard to set up arrangements that will affect future generations.”

“Back then, after Ancestor Giant Sun visited Heavenly Court, he made plans for today’s invasion. The method to destroy Five Deity Hall was part of his arrangements.”

“But if he displayed his research results so openly, traces would be left behind and Heavenly Court would notice them. Thus, he secretly left an arrangement that was independent of Longevity Heaven, he allowed it to develop on its own and be cultivated by a lone cultivator. Because you are not of Giant Sun’s bloodline, even if you become a rank eight, Heavenly Court would not expect your methods to counter Five Deity Hall. They would not think of you and link it to our invasion of Heavenly Court!”

Saying so, Bing Sai Chuan paused and continued: “Grandmaster, the climatic battle involving fate Gu is far more complex than you can ever imagine. Rank six and seven Gu Immortals are not even qualified to join. As for rank eight Gu Immortals, we are merely pawns. Some rank eights refuse to join in, that is because they sensed something and understand their own self-worth. Some joined but are ignorant of the true situation.”

“The truth behind this great battle is the fight of past venerables across time and space!”

Five Elements Grandmaster was stunned from hearing this, he muttered: “Fighting across time and space, a battle between venerables?”

In human history, there were ten venerables. Each one was invincible in their own era, they were at the apex of history, the greatest pride of humanity.

Bing Sai Chuan revealed the truth, Five Elements Grandmaster was deeply shocked.

He could not help but feel his own insignificance, his pride from earlier vanished without a trace.

Bing Sai Chuan glanced at Five Elements Grandmaster’s look of shock as he consoled: “But don’t worry, among the venerables, Ancestor Giant Sun is the most caring towards his descendants and subordinates. He gained a nickname back then because of this.”

2“The venerables all have their own arrangements, they want to exert their influence at this crucial moment, But after the merciless tides of history, most of these arrangements have been altered in some way. Rank nine venerables are not all-knowing, they would make mistakes too, many arrangements have been completely changed due to the passing of time.”

“A large number of them were discovered by future venerables and got modified.”

“Ancestor Giant Sun came after Genesis Lotus and Thieving Heaven, he was succeeded by Spectral Soul and Paradise Earth. The venerables who appear later would naturally have an advantage in setting up their arrangements, our attack on Heavenly Court succeeded to this extent, the reason is obvious.”

Bing Sai Chuan’s words made Five Elements Grandmaster go into a daze.

Bing Sai Chuan chuckled afterwards: “So what if there is Duke Long? Can he compare to Ancestor Giant Sun’s arrangements? No need to worry so much, you must have confidence that we will succeed! In this expedition, our Longevity Heaven will definitely obtain fate Gu!”

1“Obtain fate Gu?” At this moment, Five Elements Grandmaster finally realized Longevity Heaven’s objective in attacking Heavenly Court.

“That’s right.” Bing Sai Chuan admitted openly, there was no need to hide anything now: “Heavenly Court came to snatch our fortune rivalling heaven Gu, why can’t we come after their fate Gu?”

“Why is Heavenly Court the number one human force? Fate Gu played a crucial role in it. After getting it, our Longevity Heaven will definitely obtain the throne of the number one human force!”

In Central Great Hall.

Fairy Zi Wei looked as Calamity Luck Altar got closer, she had a serious expression: “They are coming!”

At her side, Old Man Zheng Yuan was also expressing his concern.

Even though the Central Great Hall was the control area of all the Immortal Gu Houses, it had low defense. After all ,who would think that Heavenly Court’s Central Great Hall would be attacked by enemies?

Even though this Central Great Hall was once attacked by three Demon Venerables and even got destroyed, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals did not reinforce its defense later on. Because against venerables, no matter how strong Central Great Hall’s defense was, it could not defend against a venerable, there was no point.

Now it seemed like Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already noticed this flaw when he toured Heavenly Court. Longevity Heaven’s assault caught Heavenly Court off-guard, Fairy Zi Wei and the rest were in a passive situation.

“It seems that the true flaw is not in terms of defense but mindset.” Fairy Zi Wei had an understanding as she said: “I seem to have missed out something. Is it...”

1“How long until fate Gu is fully restored?” At this moment, Duke Long asked.

Fairy Zi Wei was in charge of the Central Great Hall, she knew the situation of the refinement path formation, she had a heavy heart as she answered: “We need six hours.”

“Six hours...” Duke Long was joyful: “My lifespan is almost used up, but heaven has taken pity on me, even though six hours is not a lot, I will be able to see fate Gu restored. Next, let me handle this.”

Fairy Zi Wei asked worriedly: “Lord Duke Long, your injuries have yet to...”

Even though Heavenly Court tried its best to heal him, Duke Long’s injuries still remained. This was caused by the joint attack of Eastern Sea’s rank eight Gu Immortals, in the short time, even Duke Long could not heal himself fully.

Duke Long smiled plainly: “I am about to die anyway, these injuries do not matter. In any case, I have the killer move heavenly dragon’s last stand, at the final moments of my life, in all five regions, is there anyone who can match me in battle?”

1He had a plain expression but his words revealed utter confidence and dominance!

Calamity Luck Altar was like a huge beast as it charged down at the Central Great Hall.

Air was sliced apart, wild winds roared.

If it hit, the entire Central Great Hall would be reduced to shambles.

At this moment, a single small body appeared, blocking its path.

“Duke Long!” Five Elements Grandmaster shouted.

“Smash into him.” Bull Demon said.

Boom!

The hill-like Calamity Luck Altar crashed down ferociously, but it was stopped in midair.

A dragon claw forced it to stop.

Duke Long floated in the air, his body did not move but his right hand had turned into sharp dragon claws, grabbing onto Calamity Luck Altar and preventing it from moving any further.

“This?!” Five Elements Grandmaster was deeply shocked.

Bull Demon was also in disbelief: “He alone managed to stop Calamity Luck Altar so easily? Unbelievable! If I was not seeing this personally, I would never believe it.”

Crack...

The dragon claws exerted strength as they dug into Calamity Luck Altar, cracks started to form and spread around the dragon claws.

Calamity Luck Altar started to shine in a piercing light, immortal killer moves were used on Duke Long who was in close proximity.

Despite being bathed in explosions and impacts, Duke Long’s body remained unmoved.

Roar...

An immense aura and qi burst out of his body.

The qi gathered and formed into dragons that coiled around Calamity Luck Altar, squeezing it.

“What method is this? Duke Long had not used it in the Eastern Sea battle!” Bull Demon squinted.

He suddenly had a flash of inspiration, uttering: “There is no invincible Immortal Gu, only invincible Gu Immortal.”

Five Elements Grandmaster was shocked once again.

Dragon qi killer move had unparalleled might, Five Elements Grandmaster knew clearly that if he had to face the attack, he would not last long. Calamity Luck Altar was a rank eight Immortal Gu House, but it was still suppressed by Duke Long singlehandedly!

Longevity Heaven’s members could already see victory in the horizons, Heaven Overseeing Tower was right ahead but Duke Long obstructed them, turning their hope of victory into an unattainable dream.

Duke Long was just one person, but he was an obstacle that they could not get past!

“He is just rank eight, how can our difference be this immense? Lord Bing Sai Chuan, what do we do?” Five Elements Grandmaster was out of ideas.

The difference in battle strength could not be made up for with courage.

Five Elements Grandmaster looked at Bing Sai Chuan, but he had already gone missing.

Where did he go?

At the next moment, Bing Sai Chuan appeared behind Duke Long.

His time path killer move that had been prepared for a long time landed on Duke Long’s head.

“Success?” Bing Sai Chuan’s pupils shrunk.

Duke Long did not move, instead a vast wave of dragon qi shot out with a loud roar.

The dragon mouth bit Bing Sai Chuan as it flew up, restraining him in the air.

Bing Sai Chuan relied on his defenses to hold on while he used killer moves to try and get out of the dragon qi’s restraint.

But his actions were futile.

The dragon qi was not indestructible, but its speed of recovery was just too fast.

“You are clearly injured... this is definitely not your usual battle strength!” Bing Sai Chuan gritted his teeth.

“How can you possibly comprehend the profundity of my killer move, heavenly dragon’s last stand?” Duke Long looked at Bing Sai Chuan plainly as he placed his focus back on Calamity Luck Altar.

Calamity Luck Altar was filled with cracks, it was surrounded by countless dragon shaped qi that pressed down on it, a large number of Gu worms continued to die. Calamity Luck Altar could not break free, if this went on, it would definitely be destroyed.

Five Elements Grandmaster gritted his teeth: “Let me go out, I would rather die in combat by Duke Long’s hands than die here without doing anything.”

Bull Demon was silent.

Bing Sai Chuan suddenly snickered: “I am not your match, but so what? I have my trump card! I respectfully request — Limitless, please turn around!”

“What?!” This time, it was Duke Long’s turn to be shocked.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1714: Limitless Takes Action

A million years ago!

Olden Antiquity Era

Limitless Demon Venerable attacked Heavenly Court and moved unhindered, even though Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals tried to stop him, they were powerless.

Limitless Demon Venerable moved at a casual speed but none of Heavenly Court’s

Gu Immortals could match him, they suffered huge losses and deaths.

Central Heaven Gate broke into shrapnel, Name Plaque Palace did not even have the time to fly away, in front of Limitless Demon Venerable, Sun Palace and Five Deity Hall were thin as paper, they were simply like a joke.

Eventually, when Limitless Demon Venerable arrived before the Central Great Hall, Heavenly Court shook, Star Constellation's will descended and activated Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's arrangement — nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

Limitless Demon Venerable landed in the formation and only managed to escape after destroying a hundred formations.

Below Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Limitless Demon Venerable looked at Star Constellation's will: "Star Constellation, we are both venerables, you spent so much effort to try and restrict me, even though I hate you, I also admire you. Right now, you are dead while I am alive, no matter how many methods you left behind, so what? You want to stop a living Gu Venerable? That is impossible. Rank nine venerables are invincible in this world, only other venerables can deal with them."

Star Constellation's will smiled bitterly, she opened a path to Heaven Overseeing Tower: "Of course I understand what you are saying. But how can I give up without even trying? Please enter."

Limitless Demon Venerable raised his eyebrows: "Not stopping me anymore?"

Star Constellation's will said expressionlessly: "Since I cannot stop you, what's the point? Limitless, since you want to destroy fate Gu, I will accompany you to see it."

Limitless Demon Venerable was stunned for a moment, a slight smile appeared on his flawless face.

1"Interesting." He said softly as he walked up Heaven Overseeing Tower alongside Star Constellation's will, when they arrived at the top, they saw fate Gu.

Not long after, Limitless Demon Venerable left the tower, walking out.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals who were deeply injured became greatly surprised, because Limitless Demon Venerable did not destroy fate Gu. It was still in perfect condition at the top of Heaven Overseeing Tower, nobody knew what happened inside the tower, or what Star Constellation's will and Limitless Demon Venerable talked about.

In the end, Limitless Demon Venerable still had a cold expression, but a slight anger could be felt from his gaze.

1He looked around, wherever his gaze landed, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals felt a deep chill, their morale fell to rock bottom.

Finally, Limitless Demon Venerable looked at Star Constellation's will: "Hmph, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, you two definitely left many more methods in your lifetimes, are you looking down on me? Use them all, I want to see them myself."

Star Constellation sighed bitterly.

But Limitless Demon Venerable was bent on fighting, she could only entertain him.

Thus, a bloody battle continued.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were sacrificed in Limitless Demon Venerable’s hands, countless died.

Wherever Limitless Demon Venerable went, pool of blood and corpses appeared. Star Constellation’s will followed behind him, watching calmly as he slaughtered endlessly.

After a while, the water of Forgotten Dao Lake became blood red in color.

Limitless Demon Venerable squinted, the feeling of joy from slaughtering emerged in his heart.

1At this moment, he looked at the lake’s ripples as he asked: “What lake is this?”

“Forgotten Dao Lake.”

“Forgotten Dao Lake? The lake suits the name, it is a good lake. It is too much of a pity if I destroy it.” Limitless Demon Venerable suddenly became energetic: “Forgotten Dao, Forgotten Dao, but who can really forget their Dao?”

After some silence, Star Constellation’s will said: “Since you already came to Heavenly Court, why don’t you take a look around?”

Limitless Demon Venerable looked at Star Constellation’s will with deep meaning: “Aren’t you afraid that I will destroy Heavenly Court?”

Star Constellation’s will was very calm: “You cannot destroy Heavenly Court. Not only will master’s supreme methods activate when Heavenly Court faces a fatal crisis, even if you succeed in destroying Heavenly Court, can you destroy fate Gu?”

Saying so, Star Constellation’s will showed a solemn expression: “And most importantly, the true Heavenly Court is not here, it is within our hearts. Even if Heavenly Court is destroyed, a new generation will rebuild it. Limitless, you can’t live forever right?”

Limitless Demon Venerable stood silently on the spot, staring at Star Constellation’s will as his gaze became icy cold.

Star Constellation’s will looked straight at him with a calm expression.

A long while later, Limitless Demon Venerable nodded: “As expected of Star Constellation, you are absolutely right.”

Star Constellation’s will felt no surprise: “Let’s continue the tour?”

Limitless Demon Venerable went up Star Zone Mountain, he saw a pavilion at the peak.

It was naturally an Immortal Gu House.

Limitless Demon Venerable stepped into the pavilion, looking down at the whole of Heavenly Court, other than the bloody road that he created through his slaughter until now, the other areas were still grand and elegant.

Limitless Demon Venerable breathed in deeply, he was revitalized: “This is a good pavilion, what is its name?”

“Imperfection Regret Pavilion.” Star Constellation’s will answered.

Limitless Demon Venerable’s eyes shined, this rank eight Immortal Gu House had no secret in front of him, he could understand the profundity and structure of the construct at first glance.

He nodded: “Imperfection Regret Pavilion, it is a good name, it is quite appropriate.”

“Regret, regret, I could not accomplish my goal in this trip, it is truly a great regret. But whose life can be perfect without imperfection or regrets?”

He seemed to be asking Star Constellation’s will, but he also looked like he was mumbling to himself, his tone was quite complex.

Star Constellation’s will was silent.

Limitless Demon Venerable suddenly laughed as his expression vanished, he became cold and aloof again.

He clapped: “Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, these are truly impressive arrangements. However, my interest is piqued again.”

Star Constellation’s will had a change of expression.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s arrangement was not just the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, in truth, Forgotten Dao Lake and Imperfection Regret Pavilion were also part of her meticulous set up.

COMMENT

Limitless Demon Venerable was invincible in the world, he could not be blocked, the only way to preserve Heavenly Court was by eliminating his killing intent and fighting spirit.

In this aspect, wisdom path Gu Immortals were the most proficient.

Even though Limitless Demon Venerable was affected by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, his fighting spirit only fell for a moment before it returned.

Limitless Demon Venerable did not attack again, he looked at Star Constellation’s will: “I was born in the wrong era, it is a pity that I cannot be part of the great era a million years later. Star Constellation, the same applies for you, in that case, I have a suggestion.”

“Please go ahead.”

“Why don’t we play a game of chess in this pavilion.”

“Chess?” Star Constellation’s will was stunned: “Sure, both of us need this chessboard after all.”

For the next few days, Limitless Demon Venerable stayed inside Imperfection Regret Pavilion as he played chess with Star Constellation’s will.

When Limitless Demon Venerable left, Star Constellation’s will also vanished within the pavilion. Imperfection Regret Pavilion thus became a forbidden area of Heavenly Court.

During normal times, Imperfection Regret Pavilion would have no commotion. But at times, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals would be able to see two vague figures inside the pavilion.

Regardless of what angle they were at, they could only see the sides of these two people. One was male and the other was female, they resembled Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Limitless Demon Venerable.

But any Heavenly Court Gu Immortal who saw this sight would usually die days later. The lucky few who survived would feel an absurd increase in their strength.

Years later.

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable went to Imperfection Regret Pavilion and wanted to get rid of this threat, but in the end, he shook his head as he left Star Zone Mountain.

Many years passed again.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was invited to tour Heavenly Court. He saw Embroidered Tower, he saw the three pieces of bloody skins left by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, he entered Heaven Overseeing Tower and saw fate Gu. Finally, he came here but did not ascend the mountain, he only took a look at Imperfection Regret Pavilion before he left.

COMMENT

These records flashed by Duke Long’s mind in an instant.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable is very crafty, he must have noticed something back then. Why is Bing Sai Chuan able to mobilize the power that Limitless Demon Venerable left behind?”

Duke Long thought about it rapidly, he wanted to stop Bing Sai Chuan but he had no method to do so.

He acutely sensed that a profound aura had emerged from Bing Sai Chuan’s body before it vanished without a trace.

Far away, at the peak of Star Zone Mountain.

Two shadows that were playing chess appeared on the empty Imperfection Regret Pavilion, along with their chessboard.

Even though only their sides could be seen, it was still possible to see that the female had unparalleled beauty, while the male had a cold expression.

It was the scene of two venerables plotting against each other!

Ripples appeared in the air, the still image of the two venerables started to turn bright.

Star Constellation had a complex gaze, raising her head to look at Limitless: “The person you are waiting for is here?”

Limitless Demon Venerable shook his head, sighing: “He is not here yet, but there is someone from my homeland who has inherited one of my true inheritances, I have to help him.”

Saying so, he lifted a chess piece from the board and flicked it.

In the entire process, Limitless Demon Venerable did not even take a look at the battlefield, much less turn around.

The chess piece flew out of Imperfection Regret Pavilion as the image of the two venerables faded away, only an empty Imperfection Regret Pavilion was left.

The chess piece flew at a shocking speed, it landed on Duke Long almost instantly.

Duke Long’s body shook intensely, shock expressed all over his face.

Plop.

At the next moment, Duke Long fell from the air, crashing on the ground.

The power of the chess piece materialized as illusory silver-white chains, tying him up and stabbing into his phantom aperture, sealing all of his Gu worms.

Duke Long’s eyes were wide opened, he could breathe normally but could not move an inch.

He found that even though his strength was still around, whenever he tried to break free, the chains would emit similar strength that canceled out all of his effort.

This was a rank nine immortal killer move!

Duke Long was forcefully restrained, the dragon qi he created also dispersed. Calamity Luck Altar and Bing Sai Chuan regained their freedom.

Bing Sai Chuan shouted loudly as he charged at Duke Long, but the strongest killer move that he used was easily blocked by the silvery chains the moment it reached Duke Long.

Duke Long was unharmed.

Bing Sai Chuan’s heart sank: “This rank nine killer move restricts Duke Long but also protects him. Because this is a battle between venerables, even though there is Limitless Demon Venerable’s strength, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s will is also involved?”

Since he could not kill Duke Long, Bing Sai Chuan gave up that idea immediately.

He jumped into Calamity Luck Altar and at the next moment, Calamity Luck Altar moved and the Central Great Hall was smashed to bits!

Fairy Zi Wei could only bring Old Man Zheng Yuan away as they escaped rapidly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1715: Heavenly Court Awakens

Fairy Zi Wei's expression was grim.

The Central Great Hall was the control area of Heavenly Court's palaces, now that it was destroyed, Fairy Zi Wei's control fell drastically! She would need to expend a lot of time and effort to mobilize them now.

But in intense battles like this, every breath of time was precious.

The Central Great Hall became a pile of rubbles, ahead of Calamity Luck Altar was a tall tower.

"Heaven Overseeing Tower!" Inside Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan had a heated gaze.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was famous in the world, all Gu Immortals in the five regions knew about it. Right now, it was still and motionless, a refinement path immortal formation was shining in bright light, enveloping it.

"Fate Gu is at the top of Heaven Overseeing Tower, it is being repaired using the refinement path formation!" Bing Sai Chuan frowned.

Heavenly Court's defenses were very tight, Heaven Overseeing Tower was actually the final line of defense.

The Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was not over yet, but only the finals were left. Because countless Gu Masters failed in their Gu refinement, there was already many success dao marks inside Infallible blessed land.

These dao marks were taken by Heavenly Court, they used them to repair fate Gu, ensuring that nothing went wrong in the process.

"We cannot directly destroy this refinement path formation, otherwise, fate Gu's recovery might be ruined due to the backlash, it will return to its originally injured state. We need to go in and snatch it!" Thinking of this, Bing Sai Chuan gave orders to Five Elements Grandmaster and Bull Demon.

Bull Demon acknowledged the order while Five Elements Grandmaster became hesitant: "Lord Bing Sai Chuan, there might be a slight problem. If we gain a good chance to snatch fate Gu but it has not been repaired fully yet, what do we do?"

This was a problem indeed.

Heavenly Court had methods to restore fate Gu, they were relying on human path killer moves, the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, and a vast number of failures to create the success dao marks in Infallible blessed land that could be used to repair fate Gu.

Longevity Heaven did not have such methods.

Bing Sai Chuan looked at Five Elements Grandmaster, at this point in time, there was no need for any concealment, he said the truth: "We want fate Gu in such a state. It had been repaired by Heavenly Court for countless years, it is near complete recovery now. This is the fate Gu that we want."

"A fully repaired fate Gu cannot be used by anyone. Even Heavenly Court can only use it through Immortal Gu House Heaven Overseeing Tower, to look at the fate of all lifeforms in this world. If anyone can truly control fate Gu, they will be able to decide the traces of fate, they will be able to manipulate the lives of all beings. It is a pity, even though the venerables of past generations tried so, none of them have ever succeeded."

Five Elements Grandmaster was curious: “In that case, what is the point of snatching an incomplete fate Gu?”

Bing Sai Chuan smiled lightly: “We cannot control fate Gu, the reason that the past venerables came up with was that the activation of fate Gu has a high requirement, only heaven’s will can control it. But this does not mean that we cannot use fate Gu itself.”

“Heavenly Court’s Heaven Overseeing Tower is the best example. They are able to make use of fate Gu, even though it is a minor usage.”

“Other than that, Heavenly Court has another method, that is to use fate Gu as an immortal material to refine it with a luck path Immortal Gu and create destiny Gu!”

2“Destiny Gu?” Five Elements Grandmaster’s pupils shrunk.

Bing Sai Chuan’s smile widened: “That is the reason why Heavenly Court invaded Northern Plains to try and snatch fortune rivalling heaven Gu for themselves.”

“So that’s it.” Five Elements Grandmaster realized.

Bing Sai Chuan continued: “But they do not know that the so called destiny Gu was first conceptualized by Ancestor Giant Sun. Heavenly Court wants to refine rank ten destiny Gu in one go, they are too ambitious. We are different, we only want a rank nine destiny Gu, thus, the fate Gu that we use does not need to be fully restored.”

“As long as we have rank nine destiny Gu, my Longevity Heaven will be able to contest Heavenly Court. In the following great era, we will dominate and replace Heavenly Court, we will reign over the five regions, we can even become the supreme rulers of all beings in this world!”

Five Elements Grandmaster was tongue-tied, Longevity Heaven’s ambition was shocking, but he was also in deep admiration towards Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s plan: “So Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already planned for Heavenly Court’s invasion long ago, Longevity Heaven only used the arrangements today!”

Hearing Bing Sai Chuan’s explanation and encouragement, Five Elements Grandmaster hesitated no more, he went with Bull Demon as they flew out towards the refinement path formation.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was at the center of the formation, they had to charge up to the top of Heaven Overseeing Tower to take away fate Gu.

“They’ve entered the formation!” Old Man Zheng Yuan watched from afar, he had a worried expression.

Fairy Zi Wei was not too worried: “This refinement path formation was specially set up, it is not the Refinement Cauldron formation from earlier, not only is Yuan Qiong Du inside, there are two other rank eights helping with the Gu refinement.”

Even though the Refinement Cauldron formation was effective in repairing fate Gu, because it was a copy of Lang Ya blessed land’s Refinement Cauldron, Heavenly Court stopped using it.

After all, Longevity Heaven had already annexed Lang Ya Sect, they already had information of the Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron.

Inside the refinement path formation, Yuan Qiong Du was the main person in charge, he had to concentrate and could not leave. The two Heavenly Court rank eights helping him could temporarily stop their work and help protect Yuan Qiong Du.

Thoughts flickered in Fairy Zi Wei’s mind continuously: “Since Longevity Heaven sent people to invade the formation, they must be trying to snatch fate Gu and not destroy it, that’s why they are acting so cautiously. Only otherworldly demons can destroy fate Gu, while Fang Yuan is at Emperor City now, we still have time.”

Thinking of this, Fairy Zi Wei did not join the battle, instead, she placed Old Man Zheng Yuan under protection.

Old Man Zheng Yuan only had rank seven cultivation level, he could not participate in the fight. But he had a crucial use, he was the key to using Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s human path methods!

After making sure Old Man Zheng Yuan was safe, Fairy Zi Wei returned to the battlefield.

Calamity Luck Altar was floating in the air, blocking the entrance to the refinement path formation.

Within the formation space, Bull Demon and Five Elements Grandmaster were already fighting against the two Heavenly Court rank eights.

With a cry, Fairy Zi Wei had countless thoughts rain down like a meteor storm, crashing towards Calamity Luck Altar.

This was an extraordinary immortal killer move, with the amplification of Star Constellation Chessboard, even Calamity Luck Altar could not ignore it.

Bing Sai Chuan healed his injuries while he controlled Calamity Luck Altar to resist Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei’s Star Constellation Chessboard was also a rank eight Immortal Gu House created by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, while Calamity Luck Altar was created by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

The fight between two Immortal Gu Houses was also akin to the fight between Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

At once, the scene was intense.

Both sides went all out with their abilities, rank eight immortal killer moves had incredible power, but thankfully Heavenly Court was defended by past venerables’ methods, it was not destroyed.

As the battle went on, Fairy Zi Wei’s breathing became heavier.

Even though she controlled Star Constellation Chessboard, it was tiny and could be held in one hand. Compared to it, Calamity Luck Altar was huge and blocked the formation entirely, it had an advantage.

During this time, Fairy Zi Wei also wanted to save Duke Long.

But Duke Long was bound by silvery chains made by Limitless Demon Venerable’s method, once Fairy Zi Wei got close, she felt a strong repulsion force. Any immortal killer move she used was also dispelled by the chains.

Thankfully, this was a form of protection for Duke Long, even though he was in the battlefield, he was completely unharmed. Meanwhile, the palaces around him were turned into ruins, there were many crevices and pits all over the area.

“Damn it, damn it!” Duke Long gritted his teeth, he continued to struggle but there was no effect.

“This is not going well.” Fairy Zi Wei had a heavy heart, she was engaged in a long fight, she could not help Yuan Qiong Du who was inside the formation.

Even though Longevity Heaven did not bring many Gu Immortals, all of them who came were rank eight elites, they had their respective roles.

At this rate, they might really be able to take fate Gu away.

Right when Fairy Zi Wei felt helpless against the situation, a corner of Heavenly Court shook intensely, auras started to grow from nowhere, rapidly expanding.

“That is... the immortal graveyard!” Fairy Zi Wei was overjoyed.

Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard had countless rank eight experts. It was unfathomable, not even Fairy Zi Wei knew how many rank eights were sleeping there.

At the critical moment, Heavenly Court finally expended its foundation, the slumbering Gu Immortals sensed it and awakened from their slumber!

“You dare attack my Heavenly Court, you are courting death!” With an explosive voice, a muscular Gu Immortal with a bear head jumped up, his body flying into the sky as his cold gaze stared at Calamity Luck Altar.

While he said that, his figure vanished on the spot.

“Such speed!” Bing Sai Chuan was shocked.

At the next moment, with a loud crash, Calamity Luck Altar fell like a toppling mountain, it was sent flying by a huge force.

A huge black bear that was even larger than Calamity Luck Altar stood at where it was blocking earlier.

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes shined brightly: “This is Senior Zhang Fei Xiong, a transformation path great expert of Heavenly Court! He is most skilled in bear-type transformations, his strength can rival mountains, his power can move the earth.”

“The juniors are too useless, outsiders actually managed to attack Heavenly Court so deeply, hmm? Central Great Hall was destroyed?” A voice resounded again.

COMMENT

An old Gu Immortal appeared in the air.

He had a pale face and thin body, he looked like he was sick. Right now, he sat on a wheelchair, his body seemed weak but his eyes shined with cold light, it made people feel fear and worry.

“Ah.” Fairy Zi Wei gasped: “Lord Gu Liu Ru. Sigh, he is a time path great expert, if he had woken earlier to defend the River of Time, taking the place of Senior Li Huang, Fang Yuan would not have escaped!”

Calamity Luck Altar flew into the sky again, as Gu Liu Ru pointed his finger at it.

The entire rank eight Immortal Gu House started to move several times as slowly!

Zhang Fei Xiong laughed loudly as he pounced, crashing into Calamity Luck Altar as he pressed down on it, suppressing it.

“Who woke me up? Sigh, I am so old, if I sleep any less, I will get more wrinkles, I will be ugly! Little sister, don’t you agree?” A beautiful figure appeared beside Fairy Zi Wei all of a sudden.

Fairy Zi Wei was taken aback, she did not sense anything.

“Junior greets Senior Wan Zi Hong.” Fairy Zi Wei bowed respectfully.

“Don’t call me senior, call me sister. Look, are there more wrinkles near my eyes now?” This newly awakened female immortal got close to Fairy Zi Wei as she asked with deep concern.

Fairy Zi Wei looked at the snow-white, beautiful and flawless face, she was speechless but her expression became very polite: “There are no wrinkles, Wan... sister, you are too worried.”

She was very cautious.

Because this female immortal Wan Zi Hong did not have an ordinary background.

Most of Heavenly Court’s members were chosen from Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, but this Wan Zi Hong was once a great demon that wreaked havoc in Western Desert, she was absorbed by Heavenly Court to become one of its members.

Zhang Fei Xiong, Gu Liu Ru, Wan Zi Hong... one by one, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals woke up from the immortal graveyard.

At once, the numbers on each side became tilted, the situation changed drastically.

“So many reinforcements at once? Are there more?” Inside Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan laughed loudly.

In this dangerous situation, he was still able to laugh.

Fairy Zi Wei had a bad feeling, since Longevity Heaven was attacking Heavenly Court, how could they not expect the situation in the immortal graveyard?

“Do you know why I bought Calamity Luck Altar? Because the killer move of a former Demon Venerable is in it.” At this moment, Bing Sai Chuan’s gaze became deep and unfathomable.

But what method gave him such confidence?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1716: Number One Battle Strength Among Legendary Immemorial Beasts

Hidden Dragon Cave battlefield.

The super immortal formation suppressing Di Zang Sheng was broken by Eastern Sea’s rank eights, it was half collapsed, only the central core area was still active.

Old Man Bei Feng was heavily injured, he could barely hold down the situation. His grandson Feng Chan Zi was beside him, waiting for Heavenly Court’s reinforcements to no avail. The despair on Feng Chan Zi’s face became increasingly deep.

Outside the central area, Eastern Sea’s rank eights completely surrounded this formation.

Hua clan first supreme elder Hua Cai Yun let out an immemorial cloud beast, it continued to dwindle away at the formation’s core.

“This is Heavenly Court’s creation after all, even just the core of the formation can resist my cloud beast’s corrosion.” Hua Cai Yun sighed.

Roar—!

At this time, a loud dragon roar could be heard from deep within the abyss, it was ground shaking.

Sound waves reverberated, causing the entire Earth Trench to tremor, countless rocks started to fall off the Earth Trench’s cliffs.

Eastern Sea’s rank eights looked at the abyss below them worriedly, Shen Cong Sheng urged: “The formation is half destroyed, it cannot suppress Di Zang Sheng anymore, to avoid problems, we need to act now.”

Di Zang Sheng was a very unique legendary immemorial desolate beast. Because it was created from the power of Central Continent’s earth veins, it was born from endless hatred, anger, and grudges.

Thus, it bore natural hatred and killing intent towards humans, and most importantly, unless its source was destroyed, it would never die. It had once caused great trouble to Heavenly Court, Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals did not want to fight Di Zang Sheng for no reason. They wanted to take away Dragon Palace to regain their reputation, if Di Zang Sheng was released, it would continue to find trouble with Heavenly Court and Central Continent.

“It is ready.” Song Qi Yuan nodded.

“Puff.” He muttered lightly.

Immortal killer move — Broken Mirror Shard Light.

Crack!

With a loud sound resembling a mirror falling on the ground and shattering into countless pieces.

The entire formation core area’s light halo also shattered like a mirror, exposing Old Man Bei Feng and Feng Chan Zi who were inside.

“No!” Feng Chan Zi was so scared he quickly screamed and moved back.

Song Qi Yuan’s killer move was very special, it created no commotion when used at first, only after a long period of nurturing would it catch people off-guard and create an unexpected result.

This broken mirror shard light was Song Qi Yuan’s proud method, it was mostly used against stationary enemies like formations.

The formation broke, Di Zang Sheng growled loudly, the sound waves created shook the entire Earth Trench.

“Quick, make use of the time!” Eastern Sea’s rank eights attacked.

“I am going to die!” Feng Chan Zi fell backwards, he was so scared he shut his eyes, shivering with a distorted expression, awaiting his death.

Old Man Bei Feng sighed deeply, he could not fight anymore, the difference in strength was too big, he could only wait for his death.

“Don’t kill him, let me capture him alive.” Shen Cong Sheng suddenly said.

Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals halted their attacks, they were quite surprised, did Shen Cong Sheng have a method to capture a rank eight Gu Immortal alive?

“Everyone, take a good look.” Shen Cong Sheng smiled confidently: “Go.”

The Eastern Sea immortals saw that countless threads appeared around Old Man Bei Feng’s body, he was wrapped up like a cocoon.

“This is a new killer move that I created recently, it is called lingering sound!” Shen Cong Sheng explained.

Old Man Bei Feng had a furious expression, he was already prepared for death, but these Eastern Sea Gu Immortals actually wanted to capture him alive, it was a great humiliation.

Eastern Sea’s immortals were quiet.

It seemed like Shen Cong Sheng could really capture rank eight Gu Immortals. Even though Old Man Bei Feng was defenseless at the moment, Shen Cong Sheng’s method was still quite threatening.

Rank eight Gu Immortals had very deep foundations, it was evident from seeing Shen Cong Sheng’s method.

Old Man Bei Feng could not resist, as for Feng Chan Zi, he was already shivering from fear, Eastern Sea’s immortals did not even bother with this cowardly rank six immortal.

Shen Cong Sheng used his immortal killer move to its limit and captured Old Man Bei Feng. The value of a living rank eight Gu Immortal was much higher than a dead one. Forget about the rest, just the reputation gained from capturing a great expert of the same rank was enough for Shen Cong Sheng and the entire Shen clan’s reputation to soar in Eastern Sea!

The other immortals started to look for Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace.

They had come here together for this rank eight Immortal Gu House.

Soon, Zhang Yin found something.

“Over there!” He pointed with an excited expression, before using an investigative immortal killer move.

After using the killer move, an Immortal Gu House appeared, it floated above everyone’s head, it was several tens of meters on top of Old Man Bei Feng.

The Eastern Sea immortals were overjoyed, what else but Dragon Palace could this be?

Other than Shen Cong Sheng, the other Eastern Sea immortals quickly gathered with an excited expression.

Shen Cong Sheng concentrated on dealing with Old Man Bei Feng, he felt no anxiety. Before coming here, the Eastern Sea immortals had already set an alliance agreement, it had quite the binding force. The rule was: If Eastern Sea’s immortals obtain Dragon Palace, everyone would get a share. As for the share, it would depend on how much effort they put in.

Since Dragon Palace appeared, Song Qi Yuan and the rest started to try and capture it.

But after using several killer moves, Dragon Palace only shook, it did not acknowledge a new owner.

“This Immortal Gu House is really extraordinary!” Dragon Palace’s fierce resistance made the Eastern Sea immortals even more excited, their desire for Dragon Palace rose even more.

Gradually, while trying to capture it, they realized a huge secret.

“So that’s it.”

“Heavenly Court placed Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace here to try and tame Di Zang Sheng!”

“Even though Di Zang Sheng was born from the earth vein and negative emotions, it is still considered a dragon, it is countered by Dragon Palace, thus there is a possibility of subduing it.”

“Duke Long has a good plan indeed! Now that the five regions’ earth veins are becoming one, and Di Zang Sheng’s power comes from the earth vein, once they combine, Di Zang Sheng’s power will rise by at least five times!”

“Don’t forget, when the earth veins become one and the five regional walls vanish, the world would be in chaos and conflict, by then, there will be a great amount of fear, hatred, jealousy, and other emotions. With that, Di Zang Sheng’s strength will rise again.”

Eastern Sea’s immortals conversed as some gasped.

At this rate, among the legendary immemorial desolate beasts, Di Zang Sheng might become the number one among them.

It already had peak rank eight battle strength to begin with, after the boost, it might even be able to reach pseudo-Immortal Venerable!

“No wonder Duke Long paid a huge price to obtain Dragon Palace, he wanted to subdue a pseudo-Immortal Venerable battle strength to suppress the situation.”

“Thankfully we came to stop Heavenly Court’s plan, otherwise, we will have trouble during the five regions chaotic war.”

2Eastern Sea’s immortals were very glad.

“No wonder we could only hear dragon roars even though the formation broke, Di

Zang Sheng has not escaped yet.”

“Right now, Dragon Palace is suppressing Di Zang Sheng, we need to wait a bit more.”

“That’s right, after Dragon Palace subdues Di Zang Sheng, not only would we gain a rank eight Immortal Gu House, we will also gain an existence with great battle strength.”

1“If Heavenly Court finds out, they would probably puke blood.”

“Hahaha, truly fantastic, fantastic.”

Emperor City battlefield.

Immortal killer move — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

Fang Yuan activated it in succession, Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu Houses avoided them wherever the ghost hands went.

Great thief ghost hand could steal Gu worms, Fang Yuan could use this killer move to steal rank eight Immortal Gu, even if they were hiding inside the grotto-heavens of Gu Immortals.

The essence of Immortal Gu Houses was the combination of Gu worms to create a stable form. It could be seen as a combination of many killer moves, or a mobile immortal formation.

Be it immortal killer move, Immortal Gu House, or immortal formation, they were all ways to use Gu worms. Even though they appear different, the essence was the same.

Great thief ghost hand could even steal Gu worms inside immortal apertures, not to mention Immortal Gu Houses which were essentially mobile immortal formations that exposed their Gu worms on the outside.

Undeniably, great thief ghost hand countered Immortal Gu Houses!

Fang Yuan relied on great thief ghost hand to attack, managing to steal many Gu worms.

He had targeted Immortal Gu Houses before, but that was Great Space Temple which had a method that resisted great thief ghost hand. In truth, most Immortal Gu Houses did not have a way to counter Fang Yuan’s great thief ghost hand.

The Immortal Gu House defense line that Heavenly Court meticulously created became a huge mess because of Fang Yuan’s interference and influence.

“Scoundrel Fang Yuan, accept your death!” At the critical moment, Li Huang shouted as he pounced at Fang Yuan with verdant sun flame cloak on him.

Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu Houses could not deal with Fang Yuan, but their Gu Immortals could.

It was much harder for great thief ghost hand to steal Immortal Gu from immortal apertures than Immortal Gu Houses!

Especially when Li Huang had verdant sun flame cloak, it could defend against Fang Yuan’s great thief ghost hand.

Fang Yuan saw that Li Huang had approached him, he advanced instead of retreating: “Li Huang, you finally showed up at long last, I’ve been waiting for you!”

At the next moment, Fang Yuan turned into the immemorial year monkey and spitted.

Instantly, spring scissors killer move flew out, tearing through space as it targeted Li Huang.

Next, Fang Yuan breathed in deeply as the monkey grabbed empty space with both hands, pulling out a huge fan out of nowhere.

It was immortal killer move — Summer Fan.

Snip!

“What?!” Li Huang had a shocked gaze as the cloak on his back became torn, its defense was greatly lowered.

Fan!

Whoosh!

Intense winds blew, the world changed colors.

Li Huang was hit as he flew far away due to the wind.

“How did his strength rise so drastically?” Li Huang looked at the tiny spark left on his verdant sun flame cloak as he showed an ugly expression.

Because when he got attacked earlier, he saw that the situation was bad and activated verdant sun flame cloak once again.

This fire path defensive killer move had a great attribute, it could be used consecutively and stacked. The weakness was that the expended immortal essence would be twice as high!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1717: Call of the Ancient

“Li Huang, don’t tell me this is your full strength!” Fang Yuan roared, his body moved like a flash, rampaging in the battlefield, chasing after Li Huang.

Li Huang retreated as he activated verdant sun flame cloak again and again.

Spring scissors continued to fly around him, cutting up all of the flame cloaks on his back.

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with sharp light, the immortal killer move’s aura surged for an instant.

“Damn it!” Li Huang sensed something and became alert, he quickly changed directions.

Fang Yuan’s time path killer move did not hit Li Huang, his battle experience was too rich.

“Lord Li Huang, let us help you!” At this moment, Wind Sweeping Building came to reinforce him.

It was surrounded by a wall of wind, it could resist great thief ghost hand to some extent.

Fang Yuan snickered with disdain: “Get lost!”

Immortal killer move — Summer Fan!

Tornadoes swept all over the place, Wind Sweeping Building was forced to a halt. There was no choice, summer fan’s wind was just an appearance, the true essence was time path’s power. Wind Sweeping Building was a wind path Immortal Gu House, it was not good against such time path killer moves.

Li Huang could only continue to escape.

Fang Yuan’s strength had risen absurdly, it was shocking to everyone.

Inside Emperor City, the Gu Masters continued with the final competition. The Gu Immortals guarding Emperor City had already isolated all of the noise outside, these Gu Masters could concentrate on refining Gu.

“To think that even Lord Li Huang is not this demon Fang Yuan’s match!”

“This demon is too impressive, he had obtained many venerable inheritances, his demonic might is truly terrifying. But don’t worry, even though Emperor City is a mortal Gu House, it contains human path methods, at the crucial moment, immortal killer moves will protect us all.”

The Gu Immortals encouraged each other and raised their morale.

Emperor City was the number one city of humanity, it used a vast number of mortal Gu to build. Even though the city had relocated a dozen times and was no longer at its original spot, it had an immensely long history, it could be traced back to the era where humanity rose, this was the first Emperor City built as a result of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s decision.

“Fang Yuan, don’t be too arrogant, face me instead!” Rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Ye saw that the situation was bad, he had to enter the battle.

Li Huang saw the chance and did not escape, he fought alongside Qing Ye.

Fang Yuan shouted loudly, he disregarded the immortal essence expenditure and activated killer moves targeting Emperor City.

Li Huang and Qing Ye blocked Fang Yuan from the front, but after his barrage of attacks, they were forced to move back.

This sight made the Western Desert Gu Immortals go into a daze.

“Fang Yuan is so ferocious!”

“No wonder he could oppose Heavenly Court for so many years and still remain unharmed.”

“We will detour around him, try not to provoke this person.”

“That’s right, we will focus on destroying Emperor City!”

Infallible blessed land battlefield.

“Farewell friend wind! This is actually farewell friend wind!!” Seeing Wu Yong’s move succeed against Chen Yi, the Central Continent Gu Immortals defending the immortal formation felt deep fear within them.

This farewell friend wind had an incredible origin, it was created by a peculiar genius.

This peculiar genius was named Daoist Black Heart, he cultivated wind path but gained a lot of insight from reading <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> during his later years. After nearly ten years of closed cultivation, he created farewell friend wind killer move.

This was a wind path method that had the profundities of human path, its power was extraordinary!

After creating this move, Daoist Black Heart started to make friends all over the place, he often sacrificed his own gains for his friends. Initially, the five regions’ Gu Immortals did not know the reason, they were very friendly towards Daoist Black Heart who often gave them expensive gifts. Even those who did not want to befriend Daoist Black Heart were unwilling to antagonize him, they pretended to be friendly with him.

But it was all Daoist Black Heart’s scheme!

Any killer move had a process of sensing the target.

Like Fang Yuan’s lead soul into dream killer move, it needed the sense the enemy’s soul. Otherwise, this killer move could not be used.

Even if many Gu Immortals cannot unravel immortal killer moves, they can target this process and defend themselves.

But farewell friend wind was special.

It could only sense friends and target them.

The ‘friend’ here did not refer to just true friends, even fake friends or superficial friends with ill intentions were detectable.

Using this move, Daoist Black Heart became renowned in the five regions, he was extremely famous and nobody dared to provoke him.

Afterwards, when many people got attacked by it, through the deductions of wisdom path Gu Immortals, the truth behind farewell friend wind was finally exposed.

Many Gu Immortals who learned of farewell friend wind’s secret scolded Daoist Black Heart for his vicious heart. Countless people who once called Daoist Black Heart their friend started to shudder in fear and unease.

In this world, there were no invincible killer moves.

Soon, one of farewell friend wind’s weaknesses was exposed. To activate it, the user had to directly touch the body of the target Gu Immortal.

Even though farewell friend wind was strong, with these two problems, it became easier to deal with.

Even though Daoist Black Heart became very famous and renowned, he became extremely lonely in his final years, everyone avoided him like the plague. Towards the end of his life, he was all alone, it was a bitter ending.

Wu Yong’s possession of farewell friend wind shocked all of the immortals here.

But regardless, Wu Yong succeeded and Chen Yi was hit.

He was going to die!

Everyone realized this.

Bai Cang Shui shrieked as she charged at Wu Yong.

Wu Yong’s body flickered as he vanished on the spot.

Bai Cang Shui grabbed onto Chen Yi, even though he was no longer floating, he could not move, even his eyebrows and skin started to erode.

Wu Yong appeared before the Southern Border immortals again.

This time, the Southern Alliance immortals looked at him with a complex gaze, there were wariness, fear, and respect all in their eyes.

“Wu Yong possesses farewell friend wind killer move, it is equivalent to Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal. This is a trump card that can change the situation around once it is used.”

“Since when did Wu Yong become friends with Chen Yi?”

“How hard can it be? When doing business in treasure yellow heaven, wouldn’t everyone call each other friends anyway? Compared to that, I am more worried about Wu Yong’s schemes.”

Wu Yong still stood in front of the Southern Alliance immortals, he looked at Chen Yi who was far away, praising: “As expected of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal, the former first supreme elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect. Your defense is incredible, this is the first time I’ve seen anyone disintegrate so slowly from my farewell friend wind.”

He seemed to be praising the enemy but he was also flaunting his own battle strength.

The Southern Alliance Gu Immortals quickly responded.

“That’s right, there had never been anyone who survived a hit from farewell friend wind!”

“Chen Yi is dead meat.”

“With Lord Wu Yong around, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals are just a disoriented bunch after all.”

Heavenly Court battlefield.

Inside the Gu refinement formation.

Two huge battles were underway.

“Spear!” Heavenly Court’s rank eight Che Wei shouted.

Immediately, a gigantic black spear that was the size of an ancient tree shot towards Five Elements Grandmaster.

“Arrow.” Che Wei shouted again.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Countless arrows appeared out of nowhere, they rained down and enveloped Five Elements Grandmaster.

But Five Elements Grandmaster remained standing, even though he was attacked endlessly, he still had the time to talk: “Impressive, Che Wei, you are about to create a new path, these killer moves are very interesting. But it is useless, you cannot break the protection of my five elements ring.”

“Blade.” Che Wei ignored Five Elements Grandmaster, he held a large blade and charged up to fight Five Elements Grandmaster in close combat.

At the same time, at another battle.

Bull Demon took the initiative to attack while Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal Cong Yan defended himself.

Bull Demon’s attacks were ferocious, each movement created layers of phantom shadows. These shadows were able to attack and by cooperating with Bull Demon, he could often unleash terrifying attacks that were unexpected.

Each time Cong Yan was hit, his body would vibrate.

He cultivated rule path, there were countless blue lines on his skin, resembling tattoos. These lines were either thin or thick, some crisscrossed and formed a web that protected Cong Yan tightly.

“It seems that they can’t get past for the time being.” Yuan Qiong Du was still refining Gu, his heart eased slightly.

“Longevity Heaven’s duo chose close combat, they are purposely restraining their attacks because they fear that they might destroy the refinement path formation and cause my efforts to be in vain.”

“It seems that they want to snatch fate Gu, they have a certain requirement towards fate Gu’s recovery.”

Yuan Qiong Du was made a member of Heavenly Court, he was naturally very shrewd, he quickly analyzed Longevity Heaven’s intention.

“Calm down, I must calm down, otherwise, if I make any human mistakes, even the success dao marks cannot help me.”

“Persevere!”

“Gu Immortals are awakening in the immortal graveyard, our battle strength will continue to rise, Longevity Heaven will be forced to despair.”

Yuan Qiong Du was thinking about that when suddenly, Bing Sai Chuan smiled coldly: “Do you know why I bought Calamity Luck Altar? Because the killer move of a former Demon Venerable is in it.”

As he said that, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were already attacking Calamity Luck Altar together.

But soon, a golden light burst out of Calamity Luck Altar.

Next, the sound of waves emerged around the entire battlefield.

The phantom image of a segment of the grand River of Time appeared above Calamity Luck Altar.

COMMENT

Next, the immortal killer move activated as figures walked out of the River of Time.

The first person to emerge saw that Calamity Luck Altar was suppressed by a huge bear, he roared in anger: “Your bear guts are huge, eat my exploding lightning!”

Boom!

The giant bear that Zhang Fei Xiong transformed into was forced back by five to six steps, his face had suffered the impact of the explosion, his injuries were deep, blood was all over his face!

“Who are you? Report your name!” A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal attacked the person.

The person laughed maniacally: “You do not even know me, Nu Er Bao Xiong? Then let me show you my exploding lightning killer move, I will blow you to bits, remember my name.”

Boom boom boom!

The savage power exploded continuously, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were like kites with their strings cut, they flew out uncontrollably.

Before they landed on the ground, they had already lost consciousness, it was unknown if they were still alive.

“To think that I can use this move to come to the future and participate in a huge battle, I am truly fortunate.” The second Northern Plains Gu Immortal who walked out of the phantom River of Time smiled.

He pointed his finger at Calamity Luck Altar, dispelling the time path killer move that was used on it as it regained its speed.

“You broke my killer move! Who are you?” Gu Liu Ru who used the killer move had a dark gaze.

The Northern Plains Gu Immortal smiled as he looked at Gu Liu Ru: “What a coincidence, we both cultivate time path, let us fight. As for my name, it is quite common, I am called Hei Fan.”

2Next, the third person walked out of the phantom River of Time after Hei Fan.

“Wow! What a huge battle, oh my heaven, I better hide somewhere.” The third Northern Plains Gu Immortal had a delicate white face, he had a crafty look.

Saying so, he vanished.

One by one, Northern Plains Gu Immortals walked out and joined the battlefield.

Fairy Zi Wei’s heart pounded: “Nu Er Bao Xiong, Hei Fan, and that Liu Liu Liu who vanished, they are all rank eight experts of the Northern Plains Huang Jin tribes! What killer move is this, it can actually bring these people out of the past segment of the River of Time and into battle?”

1This killer move was simply too unbelievable, Fairy Zi Wei felt like she was dreaming.

Fairy Zi Wei was confused, but Duke Long was not.

Seeing this, Duke Long’s expression froze as his memories surfaced once more.

As the dust clouds settled, Red Lotus spit out blood from his severe injuries, while Duke Long remained standing.

“Red Lotus, are you still not attacking? Even though you have future self, after rebirth you only have rank eight cultivation level. Your current future self is also at rank eight, you are still some distance away from regaining your Immortal Venerable battle strength!” Duke Long had a cold expression, his eyes were spewing fire from rage, burning Red Lotus’s heart.

“That’s right, my future self killer move has some flaws, but even without flaws, how can I attack you master?” Red Lotus smiled bitterly.

“So that is the reason why you have been avoiding me since the start of the battle instead of attacking me?” Duke Long scoffed: “Red Lotus, if you truly respect me as your master, you should stop fooling around. Accept the arrangement of fate and become a Gu Venerable again, we can forget everything and start anew!”

“Master, I understand your intention, but you do not understand mine.” Red Lotus sighed.

Duke Long was even more furious now: “Since you do not want to attack me, and yet you want to continue with this, are you forcing me to kill you?!”

1“Of course not.” Red Lotus shook his head, a faint smile appearing on his flawless face: “Master, after taking hits for such a long time, my killer move is finally ready, please critique it.”

Saying so, the phantom image of the River of Time appeared behind him as Gu Immortals walked out one by one.

Duke Long’s expression changed: “What killer move is this?”

“I created a pair of killer moves, they are known as ‘call of the ancient, support of the future’. This move can summon Gu Immortals closely related to the user from the River of Time to come forward and battle. I am using the latter move, support of the future, now.” Red Lotus smiled lightly.

1Duke Long’s expression was grim, he was shivering from anger: “Your action is defying heaven and earth, you are actually using the River of Time to interfere with the flow of history, your demonic nature is too deeply rooted! What about the first move? Go ahead and use it.”

“No master, the first move, ‘call of the ancient’, will appear before you in the future at a certain timing.” Red Lotus smiled as he said.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1718: Heavenly Court’s Chaotic Battle

Heavenly Court battlefield.

Figures danced in the sky or fought on the ground.

Intense explosions continued to resound, sparks were flying, bright lights were flashing.

Northern Plains' Gu Immortal experts fought against Heavenly Court's members.

Boom!

In an instant, a loud explosion occurred as the black bear that was large as a mountain lost its right shoulder, a huge piece of flesh went missing, even its shoulder bone was shattered.

The black bear had a painful expression as it shut its eyes, it had fainted from the explosion.

Rumble!

Next, its body fell like a mountain, in the end, a huge pit was formed on the ground.

Above it, a Northern Plains Gu Immortal was laughing in the sky: "The killer move twilight lightning that I, Nu Er Bao Xiong, possess is not so easy to deal with. Even if your transformation path grants you strong defenses, I have already killed so many transformation path Gu Immortals in my life, ahahaha!!"

He cultivated lightning path solely, he was once a brutal slaughterer that roamed Northern Plains' Gu Immortal world unhindered. When he was the first supreme elder of Nu Er tribe, it became the number one force of Northern Plains without doubt.

But Nu Er Bao Xiong's laughter came to a stop as a delightful female voice resounded: "Shameless words, I also cultivate transformation path on the side, come and kill me."

"Which stupid..." Nu Er Bao Xiong had just turned around and spoke when he saw a bright red light flash before him.

Before he reacted, he heard a loud explosion as flames scattered everywhere, dust clouds rose.

He fell from the sky, his body was still burning with blazing flames.

"The time is now, save Zhang Fei Xiong!" Gu Liu Ru who was sitting in a wheelchair shouted as he pointed.

Instantly, the black bear that Zhang Fei Xiong had transformed into flickered with a shining light, his life was preserved.

"Hmph, I like to kill people, not save them!" A shadow tore through the sky, rushing down and approaching Zhang Fei Xiong.

It was Wan Zi Hong, she was extremely beautiful and enchanting, she cultivated wood path and was originally a demonic path Gu Immortal, she had a deep killing nature but was recruited by Heavenly Court.

"This Zhang Fei Xiong is quite impressive, even though he fainted, his transformation did not vanish!" Wan Zi Hong had a look of alertness as she charged into Zhang Fei Xiong's right shoulder wound without stopping.

The moment she went in, Wan Zi Hong scattered into pink petals that landed on the bloody wound.

The flower petals had a dense fragrant smell, flowers started to grow on the bloody wound.

The petals of the flowers fell again on the surrounding flesh, more and more flowers grew as a sea of flowers was formed.

Zhang Fei Xiong's flesh and blood was quickly replenished, he was healing at an observable pace.

“Hmph!” In the sky, Nu Er Bao Xiong had a grim expression. Even though he had strong lightning path killer moves, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals were not weak either. Wan Zi Hong's healing method actually got rid of the lightning path dao marks that he landed on Zhang Fei Xiong, he was healing rapidly and effectively. It was as if Wan Zi Hong's wood path dao marks and Zhang Fei Xiong's transformation path dao marks did not conflict with each other.

Nu Er Bao Xiong only took one glance but his enemy made use of that timing to find a weakness.

A flash of red light appeared as Nu Er Bao Xiong got hit again, his body was covered in flames.

Seeing this, Nu Er Bao Xiong gave up on chasing after Zhang Fei Xiong, he shook off the flames and looked at his enemy: “Who are you? As a Heavenly Court member, are you going to hide your appearance and act so shady?”

The red light that was flying in the sky laughed loudly as it flickered left and right without stopping, Nu Er Bao Xiong could only watch without having a chance to land an attack.

“It should be senior Zhu Que Er. She cultivates fire path and transformation path, her battle style counters Nu Er Bao Xiong.” Seeing this, Fairy Zi Wei expressed joy on her face.

As time passed, more and more Gu Immortals woke up from the immortal graveyard, Zhu Que Er was one of them.

“But Longevity Heaven's time path killer move is too powerful, it is still summoning more people!” Fairy Zi Wei looked towards Calamity Luck Altar and the phantom River of Time as her heart shook with worry.

“This is likely Red Lotus Demon Venerable's killer move, Lord Duke Long might know something.” Fairy Zi Wei had been searching for a chance, she wanted to enter the battlefield and save Duke Long.

But Duke Long's position was not good, he was quite near Calamity Luck Altar, below the phantom River of Time, there were Northern Plains Gu Immortals moving about constantly.

If Fairy Zi Wei charged in to save him, the risks would be huge, and she had her own job to do.

“Earlier, both venerables appeared in Imperfection Regret Pavilion, even though Duke Long was hit by the rank nine killer move and got restricted, his life is not in danger.”

“I have an important mission, I need to provide Immortal Gu to the newly awakened Gu Immortals, I also need to protect Old Man Zheng Yuan, he is one of the most important elements of this battle!”

Fairy Zi Wei squinted, she stayed at the back and did not move out.

Duke Long had instructed her earlier before he left, she had to take charge of the situation.

Clang!

A golden light suddenly flickered before Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes, when the light faded, a Northern Plains Gu Immortal was seen.

He had dark skin tone and sharp eyes, constantly emitting a brave aura, he was an expert of Ye Lui tribe, Ye Lui Kou, he cultivated metal path and was a great expert part of the second batch who left the River of Time!

When Ye Lui Kou was a youngster, he stood out with his ferocious nature and sharp foresight, he could often see the most important elements of a battle. During the Imperial Court contest, he often fought alone, charging towards an army singlehandedly, killing the enemy’s leader under everyone’s watchful gaze, he was unstoppable.

After becoming a Gu Immortal, he plundered many places and targeted the enemy’s weakness, as a righteous path Gu Immortal, he had a terrible reputation on par with demonic path members. But his reputation changed after reaching rank eight. By that point, everyone in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world feared him, all of the accusations and grudges towards him turned into superficial reverence and slander in secret.

Fairy Zi Wei’s heart jumped, facing Ye Lui Kou’s gaze, she felt like a rabbit sprinting in the plains, while being targeted by a hawk.

She quickly retreated, her body vanishing among the palaces.

“This damned qi wall!” Ye Lui Kou had an irritated expression.

He had a keen sense towards any battle, he could detect the enemy’s weakness and target it with great precision.

This was a talent that he was born with.

But his plan was ruined by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s qi wall killer move that was left in Heavenly Court.

This qi wall killer move could discern enemy and ally, it did not obstruct Heavenly Court’s members. But against Longevity Heaven’s side, it was a huge problem.

Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals could only move around the road that Limitless Demon Venerable created to fight against Heavenly Court.

Precisely so, the fight between rank eights was fixed at a certain area. Heavenly Court had many important places like the Demon Judgment Board or the immortal graveyard, but these places were protected by the qi wall, Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals could not go there.

But in the battlefield, Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals had the obvious upper hand, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals needed to rely on the qi wall to retreat at times, allowing them to continue this battle.

“Our Gu Immortals had just woken up, they lack compatible Gu worms. Mortal Gu are still fine, but they are lacking many Immortal Gu, this prevents their battle strength from being displayed.” Fairy Zi Wei was very worried.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals gave all their Immortal Gu to Heavenly Court while they slept in the immortal graveyard, on one hand, resources had to be optimized, while Heavenly Court also needed to feed the Immortal Gu.

These Immortal Gu were mostly used to construct Immortal Gu Houses, they created the countless pavilions and palaces in Heavenly Court. A small portion was handed out to certain people in the ten sects, for example, Feng Jiu Ge’s fate armor Immortal Gu. There were very few Immortal Gu which were truly kept in the treasury on standby.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were all elites among rank eights, but because they lacked Immortal Gu, they could not use their full power, even with abundant immortal essence, they could not change the situation.

In contrast, Northern Plains’ side had Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s call of the ancient killer move, it was truly magnificent, they were able to go up against Heavenly Court’s foundation that was accumulated over countless years.

Duke Long was filled with pain and anger.

At this crucial moment, he could not move, he could only watch as the battle unfolded.

And most importantly, the one who created this situation was the beloved disciple that he had entrusted hope to in the past — Red Lotus Demon Venerable!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1719: Death in Formation

“This call of the ancient should be quite similar to support of the future. It is not truly bringing over Gu Immortals from the past or future, it contains profundity similar to future self, it summons certain individuals from the River of Time when they are at a particular state!”

“Precisely so, these Northern Plains Gu Immortals are all at their peak condition, they have all their immortal essence and Immortal Gu.”

“To unravel this move, the method should be similar to how I dealt with ‘support of the future’ back then, you have to interrupt the person using the killer move! Right now, if we can cripple Calamity Luck Altar and accumulate enough damage, we should be able to stop this ‘call of the ancient’ killer move.”

Duke Long was about to break his teeth from gritting, his deduction was not wrong. Unfortunately, he was restrained by the rank nine killer move, he could not communicate with anyone using any method.

“Wow, such a beautiful sight!” Another person walked out of the River of Time, he had a jade-like face, he was elegant and gentlemanly.

The life-and-death battle here was intense, it intoxicated him. He breathed in deeply as he spread his arms, sighing: “It seems that this is the stage for me, Dong Fang Yu!”

“Hmph, Northern Plains brutes will be brutes, why are you pretending to be a gentleman, fight me!” A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal who had just retrieved his Immortal Gu looked at Dong Fang Yu with a look of disdain, he charged over.

He had the appearance of a little boy, he had black hair with a cowlick on top, together with his round and cute face, his head resembled a peach, it was extremely appealing.

1But the aura around him was overwhelming, it made Dong Fang Yu’s expression change as he dodged.

The boy’s killer move missed, seeing Dong Fang Yu’s pathetic state, he giggled: “Do you know the power of Vortex Space Boy now?”

Dong Fang Yu was very angry: “My free-spirited nature is real, while you are just a disgusting old man pretending to be young even though you’re half a step into your coffin!”

Vortex Space Boy’s smile faded away as he charged at Dong Fang Yu.

Dong Fang Yu was merely caught by surprise earlier, now that he was on guard, he retaliated instead of escaping.

Boom!

The two fought and their moves clashed.

Powerful air currents shot towards another Northern Plains Gu Immortal who emerged from the River of Time.

“The wind is really strong, it almost blinded my eyes.” This Northern Plains Gu Immortal looked like an old farmer, his pants were rolled up, his legs were covered in mud, his back was hunched, wrinkles covered his face, and there was tobacco in his mouth.

1“Sigh sigh.” The old farmer had no killing intent, he sighed deeply as he said: “I, Nian Er Nong Fu, cultivate earth path, I am most skilled in managing the immortal aperture.”

Rightfully so.

Nian Er Nong Fu might not be the strongest rank eight Gu Immortal in Nian Er tribe history, but his influence was the deepest, he gave Nian Er tribe the greatest benefits.

Because he was skilled in managing immortal apertures, even though Nian Er tribe’s territory did not grow, their cultivation resources grew by more than ten times, it was unthinkable!

“Ye Qiao Zi greets friend Nian Er.” At this time, A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal appeared, he was also a thin old man.

“You know who I am?” Nian Er Nong Fu asked.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal smiled: “I cultivate wood path, I am also skilled in growing resources. When I was still young, friend Nian Er was one of my goals.”

“So that’s it.” Nian Er Nong Fu smiled.

The two spoke in a harmonious tone, but they had already used their methods to fight, they were even fiercer than the other experts!

As the red light flew around, Nu Er Bao Xiong's expression became solemn, he continued to strike with his palms as lightning explosions occurred continuously.

The red light's aura suddenly expanded, Zhu Que Er had used a killer move, splitting into eight red lights that shot towards Nu Er Bao Xiong from different directions.

Nu Er Bao Xiong snorted coldly, he took a deep breath as a spherical shield resembling a lightning web surrounded and protected him.

Bam bam bam...

Seven red lights slammed into the lightning web shield, causing an intense explosion, the remaining red light was Zhu Que Er's main body.

“My turn.” Nu Er Bao Xiong pulled at his own beard.

“Go.” Strands of his beard shot out, raining down like a drizzle as they all turned into lightning spears, forming a tight formation as they shot towards Zhu Que Er.

Zhu Que Er shouted loudly, the red light turning back into her body as a rainbow light emerged, the temperature of the surrounding air rose.

Seeing that the two were about to use killer moves, the surrounding Gu Immortals quickly went away.

On the ground, Wan Zi Hong looked up with an expression of admiration, cursing in her heart: “Damn it, I lack most of my offensive Immortal Gu, I have no attacking methods now. To think that I would become a healing Gu Immortal one day, hmm?”

Wan Zi Hong's heart jumped with premonition, her pupils shrunk as she flickered, turning into countless petals and vanishing on the spot.

At the next moment, a golden light flashed past her original location.

Ye Lui Kou appeared on the ground as he snorted coldly, thinking: “Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals are truly elites, I actually missed my attack twice, but unless you escape into the qi wall, you cannot escape!”

Saying so, he pointed with his index finger towards an empty spot.

A golden ball first appeared at his fingertips before it exploded, a grand golden pillar shot out while pushing air aside, its speed was incredible.

“He actually discovered the location of my true body!” Wan Zi Hong wanted to retreat but it was too late.

The golden light was already right behind her, she had no choice but to turn around and defend herself desperately.

Ye Lui Kou snickered, his move was not so easy to block.

But at the next moment, his smile froze.

He saw that the golden light pillar shrunk and went inside a Gu Immortal's mouth.

The Gu Immortal ate Ye Lui Kou's entire killer move as he patted his belly with some lingering desire: "To think that I would get to eat right after waking up."

This Heavenly Court Gu Immortal was quite fat, he had light colored skin and smiled with a satisfied look.

"Who are you!" Ye Lui Kou's gaze was cold.

"Zhao Shan He!" The fat man smiled: "I will not let you kill our healing Gu Immortal so easily."

Ye Lui Kou did not speak, his aura surged as he prepared another powerful killer move.

Wan Zi Hong grunted in anger: "I do not want to bother with healing. If you give me all my Immortal Gu, I can fight five of them at once!"

At the other side, several Gu Immortals were instructed by Fairy Zi Wei as they charged towards Calamity Luck Altar together.

Duke Long who was lying on the ground felt happy upon seeing this: "Good, it seems that Fairy Zi Wei has already deduced the weakness of call of the ancient killer move, she is gathering troops to attack Calamity Luck Altar."

Inside Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan was leading the Northern Plains' group.

Seeing the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, he snorted: "This call of the ancient killer move is powerful but it can only be used once. If Heavenly Court disrupts it, it will not be usable again. However, I've already saved some manpower to deal with your assaults."

Calamity Luck Altar similarly contained several Northern Plains Gu Immortals, they quickly flew outside and blocked the incoming Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

Far away, Fairy Zi Wei let out a sigh of relief: "Thankfully, Bing Sai Chuan does not cultivate wisdom path, the situation has been stabilized."

Fairy Zi Wei chose the most optimal strategy!

Even though Heavenly Court's side was on the weak side, Fairy Zi Wei was still willing to gather forces to attack Calamity Luck Altar.

This way, to stabilize the situation, Northern Plains would have to gather more people to defend themselves.

The weaker Heavenly Court was attacking, while the stronger Northern Plains was defending.

It was obvious that the attacker had more initiative, this allowed the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals more time to recover.

If they got injured, they would retreat to the qi wall and recuperate.

When Northern Plains started to defend Calamity Luck Altar, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals felt their pressure lifting, they were more easily able to return to the qi wall for healing.

Boom!

Two time path killer moves collided, Hei Fan and Gu Liu Ru spit out blood as they flew behind respectively.

Gu Liu Ru wanted to retreat to the qi wall when a figure suddenly appeared.

“Just die.” The figure appeared and disappeared instantly.

Gu Liu Ru was merely inches from the qi wall, but he suddenly fell on the ground in disbelief, losing his life.

The attacker was naturally Liu tribe’s expert Liu Liu Liu.

2This person was crafty and scheming, he was called the disgrace of Northern Plains when he was alive, because he never fought openly with people, he bullied the weak while fearing the strong, he enjoyed sneak attacking people. His enemies often suffered severe losses, but could not even find a glimpse of Liu Liu Liu, they would spit out blood in anger.

Gu Liu Ru’s death made a great impact on the Gu Immortals of both sides.

Ever since Longevity Heaven joined the battle, this was the first sacrifice from Heavenly Court that had appeared!

Gu Liu Ru did not have all his Gu worms, and most importantly, more and more Gu Immortals were joining the battle, it was getting more intense, a certain threshold was reached.

Like a signal, soon, the second and third sacrifices appeared.

Ye Lui Kou finally succeeded in killing Wan Zi Hong, but he was also heavily injured by Zhao Shan He.

On Northern Plains’ side, Hei Fan died.

1He and Gu Liu Ru had fought too intensely, and most importantly, he lacked good defensive killer moves, he was suddenly attacked by several Heavenly Court Gu Immortals at once.

All in all, Heavenly Court’s sacrifices were larger in terms of Gu Immortals.

“Damn it!”

“These Gu Immortals are the foundation of my Heavenly Court, they actually died like this.”

“This was not worth it!”

Fairy Zi Wei sighed deeply, the enemy’s sacrifice was merely part of a killer move. If they used the killer move again, these ‘dead’ Northern Plains Gu Immortals could show up in battle again.

These Northern Plains Gu Immortals were not summoned with their true body after all.

But Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were real lives even though their lifespan was limited.

“This time path rank nine killer move should be the work of Red Lotus Demon Venerable! Damn it, he is too vicious, he totally targeted by Heavenly Court’s weakness.” Fairy Zi Wei was furious but also helpless.

Bing Sai Chuan’s expression was similarly ugly.

Because as time passed, he found that these summoned Northern Plains experts were falling in battle strength, and it was very evident.

Soon, Fairy Zi Wei also realized this.

“I understand, it is because fate Gu’s recovery is increasing rapidly, it is reaching full recovery.” Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes flickered with hope, she was very happy: “Even though Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s move is powerful, it uses the River of Time and manipulates history, it goes against fate. When fate Gu is fully repaired, this move will also lose all effectiveness.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1720: Through Branches and Leaves

Fairy Zi Wei’s analysis was not wrong.

Because when fate Gu exists, ancient Gu Immortals cannot come to the present, and future Gu Immortals also cannot travel to the past.

But because of fate Gu’s injuries, the restriction on time path was greatly reduced. Spring Autumn Cicada was the best example, even though it could not allow a Gu Immortal to return to the past, they could send their will back.

1Future self, call of the ancient, support of the future, these killer moves were also making use of the past or future, projecting a person into the present from a certain point in time.

When fate Gu is fully restored, these killer moves would no longer work.

Fairy Zi Wei realized this, Bing Sai Chuan naturally knew this from the start.

But there was no choice.

The refinement path formation could not be destroyed, otherwise, Heavenly Court’s attempt to repair fate Gu would fail entirely.

An overly damaged fate Gu was useless even if Longevity Heaven obtained it, they would need to repair it by mimicking Heavenly Court’s methods.

But Bing Sai Chuan knew that Longevity Heaven did not have the deep foundation of Heavenly Court, they did not have human path methods or the Infallible inheritance, they did not have the ability to repair fate Gu!

They could not destroy the refinement path formation, Longevity Heaven could only break past the formation and enter Heaven Overseeing Tower to take fate Gu by force.

Regarding this, Bing Sai Chuan had already sent Five Elements Grandmaster and Bull Demon.

But that was his limit.

It was not like he did not want to add more people, the phantom River of Time also had many Northern Plains experts emerging continuously as well.

But this refinement path formation itself had its limit.

This formation was meant to repair fate Gu, it was not for combat. The formation space inside could only handle five rank eights.

Any more and the refinement path formation would be destroyed.

Thus, Bing Sai Chuan did not send more people, while Central Continent also watched the situation inside without sending more people.

The battle around Calamity Luck Altar involved countless historical experts, the battle was intense. But the most crucial battle was in the refinement path formation!

Bing Sai Chuan gritted his teeth, thinking about the situation: “Even though our side is strong, we need to focus on defense, but overall, we still have the advantage. In the worst case, we will have to destroy this refinement path formation, even if we cannot take fate Gu, we will make sure Heavenly Court’s objective fails!”

Both sides did not want to destroy the refinement path formation, but if there was no choice, Longevity Heaven would have to destroy it and cause both sides to end up losing.

Of course, Bing Sai Chuan was leading Longevity Heaven to attack Heavenly Court, their main objective was to snatch fate Gu, if the formation was destroyed, they would have failed their objective.

“It is up to us now!” Bull Demon had a clear understanding of the situation outside.

Far away, Five Elements Grandmaster also nodded as his expression turned serious.

Suddenly, Five Elements Grandmaster’s body shook as an intense aura surged out, a powerful killer move shining in five colored lights shot towards his enemy Che Wei.

Che Wei shouted loudly as he placed both hands in front of him, activating a killer move.

Countless large shields appeared in front of him, even though there were loud cracking noises, these shields formed a wall and blocked the five colored lights.

“Damn it!” Five Elements Grandmaster intensified his attack, the five colored lights grew in power and destroyed shields after shields.

But Che Wei’s defenses were impenetrable, even though shields were broken, new ones quickly formed to replace them.

Che Wei had outstanding defensive methods, Five Elements Grandmaster felt a sense of helplessness.

Within the refinement path formation, be it Che Wei or Five Elements Grandmaster, they had to control their firepower, they could not destroy this refinement path formation recklessly.

On the other side, Bull Demon and Cong Yan’s battle was also about the same.

Undeniably, it was much better to be on the defensive for this battle.

“What do we do?” Five Elements Grandmaster asked Bull Demon secretly.

Bull Demon only replied: “Attack, try and lure their attention!”

Saying so, Bull Demon charged at Cong Yan again, the two engaged in another fierce fight.

Five Elements Grandmaster’s heart shook, Bull Demon’s words had deep meaning, he did not think anymore, he trusted Longevity Heaven and went to engage in a long fight with Che Wei.

At the other end, Yuan Qiong Du was completely focused on manipulating the refinement path formation, putting his attention on repairing fate Gu.

While nobody noticed anything, a small flower resembling scattering petals landed towards Heaven Overseeing Tower inconspicuously.

“Hehehe.” The flower landed into Heaven Overseeing Tower and turned into a little girl.

It was none other than the female immortal Flower Lady who had died earlier!

“Oh no, someone entered the tower!” Sensing this, Yuan Qiong Du was deeply shocked, he quickly shouted to alert the rest. He had to pay a huge price for this shout, his seven orifices were bleeding, his mind was heavily injured, it directly cracked into two and could not merge together.

Che Wei and Cong Yan quickly retreated, they wanted to enter Heaven Overseeing Tower and stop Flower Lady from getting close to fate Gu.

“Too late!” Bull Demon laughed loudly, he joined forces with Five Elements Grandmaster as they restrained their enemies.

Che Wei and Cong Yan became more flustered, they scolded Bull Demon for being so shameless and unscrupulous, they actually schemed this deeply.

This was Bull Demon and Flower Lady’s biggest secret. They shared their lifespan together, if one of them died, as long as the other was still alive, they would revive after some time.

After Flower Lady revived, she flew into Heaven Overseeing Tower, there were only five Gu Immortals in the refinement path immortal formation, thus it did not break and was still operational.

“What do I do?” Yuan Qiong Du’s vision turned dark, his head was hurting, this was the toughest decision of his life.

He controlled the refinement path formation, he could totally destroy fate Gu and ruin all of Heavenly Court’s hard work.

If he did not do that, the enemy would obtain a nearly recovered fate Gu, this would preserve fate Gu and they might have a chance of getting it back. Of course, if they could not take it back, Heavenly Court’s hard work would all be in vain, they would all benefit Longevity Heaven instead!

This decision was too tough and Yuan Qiong Du’s mind was heavily injured, his thinking speed fell greatly.

When Flower Lady got to the top of Heaven Overseeing Tower and saw fate Gu, Yuan Qiong Du had yet to make up his mind.

“Success!” Flower Lady’s eyes shined brightly, she stretched out her hand and wanted to grab fate Gu.

If she succeeds, she would be the biggest contributor of Longevity Heaven in this trip!

But at this moment, on the walls of Heaven Overseeing Tower, a bamboo forest painting suddenly appeared.

“What is that?” Flower Lady had a look of shock, she was very stunned.

Three hundred thousand years ago, during the Medieval Antiquity Era.

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable walked down Star Zone Mountain as he smiled bitterly in his heart: “This is the chess game set by Limitless Demon Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, it contains the grand power of these two venerables as well as replenishment from Heavenly Court at all times. If I interfere forcefully, I would have to resist the joint power of two venerables.”

“Of course, these are just two venerables’ methods, they are not alive and cannot think like humans. After finding out information on them, I will be able to target them, but even if I succeed, that would only harm Heavenly Court.”

“Since Star Constellation Immortal Venerable agreed to Limitless Demon Venerable’s suggestion back then and created this chessboard together, she must have her considerations, this will definitely benefit Heavenly Court. I do not need to be a sinner.”

Even so, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable was not completely assured.

He thought about it as he walked, when he raised his head, he realized he had arrived at the top of Heaven Overseeing Tower.

He suddenly lost all his frustrations, he smiled at the blank walls: “That’s right, I can leave my painting here!”

Unknown to everyone, he created a painting here.

1After he finished it, this painting vanished without a trace, it was so deeply concealed that even Heavenly Court did not know of it. Other than Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, everyone was kept in the dark.

Three hundred thousand years later, this bamboo forest painting that nobody knew of appeared before Flower Lady.

Flower Lady’s hand was merely an inch away from fate Gu, but this distance could not be breached!

Flower Lady’s body floated in the air, she could not move.

Her gaze was completely in a daze, after looking at the bamboo forest painting for a moment, she fell into a multi-layered illusion.

The bamboo forest was huge, but she was just a single person, she could not leave after getting lost.

Flower Lady was very anxious but there was nothing she could do!

Winds blew as bamboo leaves shook, jade green light and shadows enveloped Flower Lady.

Flower Lady who was inside the bamboo forest felt the world spinning as she fainted on the spot.

But the bamboo forest painting did not vanish or freeze, the jade bamboos on the walls started to sway as if the wind was blowing.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Instantly, all of the immortals in battle heard the sound of the wind.

On the wall, beautiful leaves that resembled jade fell off the branches, it was a beautiful sight.

This wind that did not exist not only penetrated the refinement path immortal formation and reached the immortals’ ears, it even entered Duke Long’s heart.

Instantly, Duke Long fell into an illusion too.

He was lying on the ground, surrounded by thick jade bamboos.

The wind was blowing, jade bamboo leaves were falling elegantly.

Duke Long received almost the same treatment as Flower Lady, but he did not feel anything discomfort, his mind was getting clearer.

At this instance, he could feel the pure power and profundity of wood path!

He could feel the concealment of the bamboo forest, he could feel the pressure of the trees, he could feel the vitality and strength of the grass that grew out of the soil.

Next, his limbs felt like the grass and trees, gaining new strength as they grew.

With this newfound strength, Duke Long supported himself and stood up slowly, standing in the bamboo forest.

In a daze, he seemed to have seen Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable.

He had the appearance of a young man, he was gentlemanly and polite, wearing green clothes and a white headband, his long hair was fluttering with the wind.

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable smiled mildly as he walked past Duke Long slowly.

His words could be heard from the gentle winds: “The left is love, the right is affection, walking on both sides of life, scattering seeds and blooming flowers, making this journey full of flower fragrance, allowing the person who walks through branches and leaves to feel no pain even as they step on thorns, they can shed tears but feel no sadness.”

Saying so, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable walked into the bamboo forest.

“You are Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable?” Duke Long turned around, only to see that Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable was vanishing among the bamboo trees.

Only one sentence was left by him: “Remember, this move is called — Through Branches and Leaves.”

At the next moment, Duke Long woke up.

He was shocked to find that he was already standing, the silver chains that were binding him turned into bamboo leaves that scattered on the ground.

These leaves looked like they were made from jade.

TL Note: Genesis’ words are a quote from the author Bing Xin.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1721: Heavenly Dragon’s Last Stand

1

At once, Duke Long understood that this was a Genesis Lotus true inheritance!

He could clearly feel his wood path attainment level rising to an extremely high level, at the same time, memories related to this wood path killer move through branches and leaves were all etched into his mind.

2That bamboo forest, rather than calling it an illusion, was more like a state of mind.

The power of through branches and leaves killer move was to free the Gu Immortal of all harmful restraints.

“I am truly pathetic.” Duke Long laughed at himself.

He felt the power of a venerable once again.

The truth was, he had some understanding towards the chess game of both venerables in Imperfection Regret Pavilion. This game had unparalleled might, it was one with Heavenly Court and could continuously draw strength from it. This was the secret agreement between Star Constellation’s will and Limitless Demon Venerable back in the days.

Because it had the power of two venerables, it could not be dealt with by a single venerable.

But the silver chains on Duke Long was just made from one of the pieces in this chess game. The through branches and leaves killer move that Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable left behind was able to free Duke Long from its effect.

“Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable really put a lot of effort into it, it is a waste for this wood path true inheritance to be given to me.”

Duke Long sighed as he kept away his emotions.

His dragon pupils looked around as he stared at the Calamity Luck Altar not too far away.

Calamity Luck Altar was so huge it covered half of Duke Long’s vision.

While Duke Long was restrained, he had been incapacitated near Calamity Luck Altar, now that he regained freedom and stood up, he was not far from it.

Breathing in deeply.

The sounds of the surrounding battle, explosions or shouting, became very soft as he blocked them out.

While he was restrained, Duke Long's anger, guilt, and hatred filled his heart, now that he regained freedom, these surging emotions erupted like a dormant volcano that had reawakened.

Unknowingly, all the present Gu Immortals all had a feeling, that was the calm before a storm.

Breathe out...

Breathe in...

Duke Long cultivated qi path with transformation path on the side, each time he breathed, he sucked in a huge amount of oxygen, it was a great commotion. In fact, this commotion was slightly affecting the surrounding qi wall's stability.

Behind Duke Long, his dragon tail waved about, his dragon claws and horns were shining in a purple-gold light, he was extremely grand and royal. Ripples started to form in the surrounding air, the particles seemed to be flickering with a similar purple-gold light.

A terrifying aura was emerging in his body, he was like a catastrophic beast that created heaven and earth, after eons of slumbering, he had finally awakened.

Countless gazes landed on Duke Long at this moment!

“Damn it.” Bing Sai Chuan gritted his teeth.

Flower Lady was unconscious while Duke Long broke free, Longevity Heaven had faced the greatest setback since they started this attack.

Inside the refinement path formation, Bull Demon and Five Elements Grandmaster sensed something amiss, they fought with all their strength. But Che Wei and Cong Yan held on desperately, they did not give the enemy a chance to breakthrough.

At a deeper area of the refinement path formation, Yuan Qiong Du was spitting out blood, he tried hard to sustain the refinement path formation's operations, he was already resolved to die.

Bing Sai Chuan tried hard to think of a plan.

The situation was turning bad, sweat formed on his forehead.

He had already expended all his trump cards, he could not seek help from Limitless Demon Venerable again. The truth was, Limitless Demon Venerable did not even turn around earlier, his attitude was very clear.

Duke Long's aura surged to its limit, it was grand and overwhelming!

Even though he had not moved, he had already gained the attention of everyone.

“He is Lord Duke Long?” Some Heavenly Court Gu Immortals looked over with admiration. Duke Long's seniority was still quite high.

But someone was even older than Duke Long, an old Gu Immortal did not recognize him: “He is one of us?”

“Duke Long finally escaped.” Fairy Zi Wei was very excited, she observed the entire situation, she knew clearly that among the Heavenly Court immortals now, Duke Long was the strongest person.

He broke the chains and recovered his freedom, he had stood up at a timely moment!

Or more accurately, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s arrangements were simply too timely.

Thinking of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, Fairy Zi Wei felt a deep sense of admiration.

“Unbelievable methods! After Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s era, Heaven Overseeing Tower had been modified countless times, many of the Gu worms were replaced. Especially during the recent decade of fighting, it had been damaged constantly and repaired afterwards. Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s method was actually intact after all that, it was hidden so deeply that nobody found it.”

“His immortal killer move could hide within Heaven Overseeing Tower which is the number one investigative Immortal Gu House in this world, remaining undiscovered. And most amazingly, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s immortal killer move had never disrupted with the workings of Heaven Overseeing Tower.”

Thinking of this, Fairy Zi Wei had a flash of inspiration: “Don’t tell me that rumor is true?” Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable really created painting path? The greatest advantage and trait of the rumored painting path is that it can perfectly accommodate the operations of other Immortal Gu and killer moves... this has the same level of profundity as sovereign immortal body’s non-conflicting dao marks!”

Fairy Zi Wei could only guess.

The ten venerables were the apex of Gu cultivation, they were the brightest stars with unparalleled luster. Even though Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable did not cultivate wisdom path, he could comprehend the profundities of heaven and earth, he was able to make arrangements that affected the future era.

And most importantly, his arrangement worked at the most crucial moment, his control of the timing was simply impeccable.

Bing Sai Chuan was very nervous, he ordered: “Block Duke Long!”

Even without his reminder, all of the Northern Plains Gu Immortals could tell that Duke Long was a huge threat.

After Duke Long’s aura reached its limit, it started to condense and shrink, it was like someone who was pulling back his fist, once he attacked, it would be a terrifying sight.

This action created huge mental pressure among the Northern Plains’ immortals.

“Kill.” A Northern Plains male immortal shouted as he charged at Duke Long.

The second Northern Plains Gu Immortal was silent but followed behind the male immortal, charging and defending him.

“No, let me face him!” The third Northern Plains expert suddenly moved out with great speed, he arrived before Duke Long instantly.

Duke Long had a peaceful expression, he stood silently on the ground without moving, like a statue.

Roar—!

Suddenly, a dragon roar was heard, an elegant purple-gold dragon qi appeared in the sky for an instant.

The Gu Immortal wanted to see it but all they saw were the remnant traces of the purple-gold dragon qi.

The Northern Plains expert who arrived before Duke Long became motionless.

He lowered his head, looking at the hole in his chest with an expression of disbelief.

Through this hole, he could see the world behind him.

Guh.

At the next moment, blood gushed out of his mouth as countless mini dragon-shaped qi emerged on his body.

Bam.

With a thud, he self-detonated, turning into a pile of flesh and blood, dying on the spot.

He was a famous expert of Northern Plains, but he was unable to take one hit from Duke Long!

“How can this be?” Seeing this, the two Northern Plains Gu Immortals who wanted to kill Duke Long became lost for words as their expressions changed.

“What are you looking at?” Duke Long’s calm voice resounded behind them.

“Oh no!” The two Northern Plains experts activated their strongest defenses without thinking.

This instinct was ingrained into their very existence, it saved their lives.

At the next moment, Duke Long’s two ferocious dragon claws landed.

The two Northern Plains experts’ defenses crumbled instantly, they were like two shooting stars, crashing and creating a huge pit on the ground.

With a loud boom, rocks flew as dust clouds rose.

The two Northern Plains experts fainted in the pit.

1Duke Long’s attack was truly shocking! Instantly, he killed one and made two unconscious, Longevity Heaven lost the battle strength of three rank eights just like that!

“Terrifying!”

At once, the battle strength that Duke Long unleashed stunned Heavenly Court’s members.

The old man who did not recognize Duke Long felt very surprised: “After my time, there was actually such a talented junior?”

“He is the master of Red Lotus Demon Venerable, he is also a Dao Guardian.” The Heavenly Court Gu Immortal beside him explained.

The old man realized: “Oh, no wonder.”

1The Dao Guardians of venerables were usually the strongest person besides the venerable if they matured fully.

Of course there were exceptions.

Like Reckless Savage Demon Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

5But no matter what, these Dao Guardians were monumental in the growth process of the venerable.

“He’s coming!” Bing Sai Chuan breathed in deeply, concentrating his mind.

After Duke Long defeated the three, he went straight for Calamity Luck Altar, his advancement carried huge pressure as everyone looked at him with great fear.

At this moment, Bing Sai Chuan felt that even the powerful Calamity Luck Altar was showing a sign of fragility.

“Protect me!” Bing Sai Chuan shouted.

Longevity Heaven’s Gu Immortals quickly went back to reinforce him.

Duke Long’s action was the same as attacking a beehive, a large number of Longevity Heaven Gu Immortals gathered and encircled him from the front and back, forming a huge web.

Countless immortal killer moves landed on Duke Long, they were like fireworks that sparkled, fatal danger was hidden within these beautiful sparks.

The purple-gold dragon-shaped qi flashed again!

COMMENT

Duke Long appeared far away, many killer moves missed their target.

The remaining killer moves were directed by the user as they changed directions.

Duke Long’s body flickered again, he showed disdain towards the killer moves that were targeting him.

“Break!” He shouted as he used a qi path killer move.

A surging qi wave erupted in all directions, all killer moves were pushed away, the surroundings were completely cleared out.

The Longevity Heaven Gu Immortals could only pounce towards Duke Long.

“You have already attacked, now it is time to face my killer move as well!” Duke Long snickered.

Longevity Heaven lost two more Gu Immortals.

Duke Long continued to approach Calamity Luck Altar.

Under Bing Sai Chuan’s manipulation, Calamity Luck Altar had no choice but to retreat rapidly.

Duke Long continued to chase it, regardless of which Northern Plains expert that was in his way, he went through their line of defense without difficulty.

Of course, he would dodge the powerful killer moves as well.

Shock was exposed in Bing Sai Chuan’s eyes: “Impossible! How can Duke Long become so powerful in such a short time? Is this part of Genesis Lotus Immortal

Venerable’s method?”

COMMENT

He was wrong about this.

Duke Long was strong because of himself.

Immortal killer move — Heavenly Dragon’s Last Stand!

The lower his lifespan, the greater the amplification that heavenly dragon’s last stand gave him.

This amplification was in all aspects, it made Duke Long powerful beyond words, his battle strength was rising every second.

His vitality was shrinking but his aura continued to grow. This was his final battle, at the last moments of his life, Duke Long erupted with unprecedented brilliance!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1722: Seven Extreme Desolation

Heavenly dragon’s last stand made Duke Long increasingly stronger, with each breath of time, he became stronger than before.

Looking at the phantom River of Time in the sky, Duke Long showed a complex emotion in his eyes, he sighed lightly: “Oh Red Lotus, I have already witnessed your call of the ancient and support of the future. Now, let me show you my heavenly dragon’s last stand!”

Duke Long’s words infuriated all of the Northern Plains experts.

He obviously looked down on all of the Northern Plains immortals present, there was only Red Lotus Demon Venerable in his eyes.

The Northern Plains experts were all famous people in history, they had their own arrogance and pride. But they had no way of rebuking Duke Long’s words.

Because their existence was the result of Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s immortal killer move!

“Old man, you speak too much!”

“Don’t look down on us.”

“We will show you our power!”

Several Northern Plains rank eights charged at Duke Long.

Duke Long snickered as he roared, the purple-gold dragon-shaped qi flickered continuously.

Boom boom boom!

An intense explosion resounded, Duke Long rampaged among the Gu Immortals who encircled him, he was simply unstoppable.

In contrast, the Northern Plains experts were losing numbers rapidly from his ferocious attacks.

Fast!

Duke Long was just too fast, the Northern Plains Gu Immortals could not stop him.

Any killer move needed time to prepare and activate.

Because Duke Long was concentrating on Calamity Luck Altar, he did not bother wasting time with the Northern Plains Gu Immortals that obstructed him.

“Block him!”

“Don’t think of leaving Duke Long, fight me for three hundred rounds!”

“We must stop him.”

Purple-gold dragon qi flickered again.

The battlefield became silent, Bing Sai Chuan raised his head and looked.

Duke Long was finally standing before Calamity Luck Altar, his emotionless pupils looked at this luck path rank eight Immortal Gu House.

“Oh no.” Sweat poured down Bing Sai Chuan’s forehead.

At the next moment, Duke Long roared as his qi path killer move was activated again.

Myriad qi rampaged, the world changed colors.

Immortal killer move — Qi Engulfing Mountains and Rivers!

At once, the rank eight Gu Immortals shook intensely as they felt an unparalleled pressure slamming down at them from all around.

Many killer moves collapsed, the Northern Plains experts who were pursuing Duke Long fell into the water like dumplings falling into a pot.

The world became still, nothing was left standing!

Crack, crack...

Calamity Luck Altar could barely operate, its thin light halo was resisting qi engulfing mountains and rivers killer move.

This luck path rank eight Immortal Gu House could not fly, it was suppressed by Duke Long and forced to stay on the ground!

At once, Duke Long became the main character of this battlefield, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals looked at him with shock and amazement.

He had suppressed the entire situation singlehandedly.

Even though Northern Plains’ experts were strong and proud, their raised heads were forcefully lowered by Duke Long.

“Damn it, this qi engulfing mountains and rivers killer move had once been used in Eastern Sea by Duke Long. But its current power is more than ten times of before!” Bing Sai Chuan could not conceal the shock on his face.

Duke Long’s strength was too overwhelming, it was far out of his expectations.

“This damned old man is quite strong! It seems that you need Grandpa Mao’s help now!” Far away, Mao Li Qiu and his clone had been suppressing the two legendary immemorial beasts from Heavenly Court, after seeing Duke Long’s power, Mao Li Qiu gritted its teeth and wanted to rush over to help.

“You want to leave? Dream on!” The immemorial green jade crane shrieked, it activated an immortal killer move and attacked Mao Li Qiu’s clone.

“Stand there!” Shabi Ninety-five grabbed Mao Li Qiu’s right hind leg as it bit.

“These two idiots...” Mao Li Qiu was furious, it was unable to get away from these two.

Heavenly Court’s two legendary immemorial desolate beasts might not be able to turn the situation around, but they were great at keeping the status quo.

Duke Long’s power was simply like steroids injected into his allies, it made these two legendary immemorial desolate beasts extremely energetic!

“Go away!” Calamity Luck Altar suddenly shined in a fierce light, it started to rise slowly.

Next, the Northern Plains experts who were on the ground and used their killer moves on Duke Long.

Even though Duke Long was strong, he could only suppress them for some time, he was not just going up against the rank eight Immortal Gu House that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable created, there were also the countless experts from the Northern Plains Huang Jin tribes’ history!

“Go assist Duke Long!”

“We will make Longevity Heaven pay with bloodshed!”

“How can Heavenly Court’s authority be undermined.”

Heavenly Court’s immortals reacted, they moved like rushing tide as they went to reinforce Duke Long.

A portion of the Northern Plains experts had to go and block Heavenly Court’s attacks on the outside. Inside, the remaining ones attacked Duke Long with all their might.

Inside Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan’s heart sank to rock bottom.

Duke Long was unstoppable even in the encirclement, he had the complete advantage, and outside, there were fewer Northern Plains Gu Immortals than Heavenly Court’s side, they were also losing there.

Bing Sai Chuan understood: Unless a venerable makes a move, Longevity Heaven’s invasion had failed!

Their goal was to take fate Gu but now, they were barely able to stay alive, not to mention snatch anything.

The truth was, Longevity Heaven was just one step away from success. The problem was Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable and his arrangement, it ruined Longevity Heaven’s plan.

“Even though my Longevity Heaven failed, your Heavenly Court may not succeed either!” A cold light flashed in Bing Sai Chuan’s eyes, he gave his orders — destroy the refinement path formation!

Since they could not obtain fate Gu or destroy fate Gu entirely, he would make sure that they fail in restoring it!

This way, Heavenly Court would need to continue holding the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention to repair fate Gu in the future.

And that would give the other four regions some respite.

But in that situation, in the future Central Continent Refinement Path Conventions, Heavenly Court would guard themselves deeply, Longevity Heaven would no longer have this chance to invade.

But there was no choice, the situation was forcing Bing Sai Chuan to make such a decision.

“Okay!” Bull Demon and Five Elements Grandmaster received their orders, they immediately attacked the refinement path formation.

Guh.

Cong Yan spit out a mouthful of blood, his face turned pale.

But he had a faint smile as he said: “Hmph, why do you think Lady Zi Wei made me guard the formation internally? It was to prevent you guys from causing destruction!”

Bull Demon and Five Elements Grandmaster frowned deeply.

They realized that their attacks on the refinement path formation was actually transferred to Cong Yan. This was a rule path method unique to Cong Yan, he could transfer damage onto himself.

“You want to destroy the formation, how can we allow that?”

“With us around, don’t even think about it!”

Outside the refinement path immortal formation, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals formed lines of defense as they blocked the assault of the Northern Plains experts.

Bing Sai Chuan changed his goal and attempted to destroy the refinement path formation, this was his enemy’s weakness as well.

For Heavenly Court, they had no choice but to defend the formation.

This way, the battle between the two sides went into a deadlock.

Most of Heavenly Court’s members were protecting the refinement path formation, Duke Long alone was attacking Calamity Luck Altar.

For Northern Plains, they were mainly defending Calamity Luck Altar while attacking the refinement path formation with a barrage of attacks.

Even though Duke Long was obstructed by all the Northern Plains experts, he still had the energy to attack Calamity Luck Altar.

Calamity Luck Altar endured attacks from Duke Long time and again but it still remained standing, this was the immense defense of a rank eight Immortal Gu House.

The truth was, Calamity Luck Altar's methods were not just limited to these, against Duke Long, it could still retaliate.

But now, Calamity Luck Altar's main purpose was to sustain call of the ancient killer move.

If it used other methods, this call of the ancient would be interrupted.

The root of the issue was that call of the ancient was a time path killer move, it was incompatible with Calamity Luck Altar's methods. If there were any abilities similar to Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's earlier methods resembling painting path, the situation would not be this awkward.

Bing Sai Chuan was clear in his heart, once he stopped using call of the ancient killer move, the situation would worsen instantly. Only through this move could they resist the awakening Heavenly Court members.

As time passed, the situation got more intense, more and more Gu Immortals died.

Duke Long's attacks from time to time made Bing Sai Chuan's heart shook. He did not know how long Calamity Luck Altar could last, maybe at the next moment, call of the ancient killer move would stop.

If that happens, Longevity Heaven would lose this battle without doubt.

Even though both sides were attacking and defending, as Duke Long continued to unleash powerful moves, the situation was already changing. Heavenly Court had a slight advantage, Longevity Heaven was slowly losing their edge.

Boom!

A lightning path killer move landed on Duke Long's back.

But Duke Long's body did not even move, as the dust clouds settled, his back was exposed.

It was covered in purple-gold dragon scales.

As the effect of heavenly dragon's last stand persisted, Duke Long's body became stronger and larger, his size was already twice of before.

His dragon claws became sharper, his dragon tail became longer and more flexible, his dragon horns were originally very short but now they grew rapidly, they were the size of a deer's antlers, they looked like a crown on his head, displaying his royal and authoritative figure.

Every moment and every second, Duke Long was getting stronger!

Bing Sai Chuan who was inside Calamity Luck Altar as well as the Northern Plains Gu Immortals could feel this very deeply.

"This is a monster!" A Northern Plains expert shouted in hatred.

"Monster? Hahaha, we Seven Big Dipper Immortals love dealing with monsters!" At this moment, from the phantom River of Time, seven Gu Immortals walked out.

"Ah! It's them." Bing Sai Chuan saw this, becoming surprised and happy.

These Seven Big Dipper Immortals were all from Huang Jin tribes, there were three rank eights and four rank sevens, they were all from the same period of time in history.

During their era, legendary immemorial desolate beasts wreaked havoc, they caused the righteous path to suffer great losses. Thus, the Huang Jin tribes banded together and chose seven people to learn the ancient battle formation, they spent countless years to soothe the chaos and capture the beast, returning peace and serenity to Northern Plains.

Ancient battle formation — Seven Extreme Desolation!

At once, the seven Gu Immortals turned into a three headed four armed black-gold giant with a huge metallic ring on its back.

Immortal killer move — Winged Blade!

The black-gold giant’s right arm moved like a blade, creating an afterimage as it slashed towards Duke Long.

“Winged blade?!” Duke Long’s pupils shrunk, he could feel a fatal danger.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1723: Fatal Strike

Winged blade had very high reputation, it was publicly recognized as the number one offensive method of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world, it could even cut apart the winds of assimilation temporarily, its fearsome might was known to all.

“I managed to dodge?” The purple-gold dragon-shaped qi flickered as Duke Long appeared elsewhere, shock still showing on his face.

Crack!

At the next moment, he watched as the horn on his forehead fell slowly towards the ground in front of him.

At the crucial moment, Duke Long managed to dodge the winged blade but his right dragon horn was sliced apart.

Duke Long was deeply shocked.

At this moment, the black-gold giant hooked its finger at Duke Long.

Immortal killer move — Immortal Binding Rope!

This was the number one capturing method in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world!

A green-gold rope appeared on Duke Long’s body, it wrapped around his waist thrice as he was pulled towards the black-gold giant.

Immortal killer move — Winged Blade!

The black-gold giant raised its right arm, aiming at Duke Long as it used the powerful killer move again.

Duke Long gritted his teeth, he shouted as his muscular body shook, he broke free of the immortal binding rope and retreated, avoiding the winged blade.

The black-gold giant wanted to capture Duke Long again but he dodged while spitting out two sharp dragon fangs.

The dragon fangs flew out of his mouth and expanded in size, they were like two curved blades that danced in the air, defending his body.

It was immortal killer move — Spiraling Dragon Fang.

Spiraling dragon fang was an offensive killer move but Duke Long used it for defense instead.

Even though the black-gold giant Seven Extreme Desolation had a powerful immortal binding rope killer move, it would be cut by the dragon fangs if it tried to bind Duke Long.

Bing Sai Chuan watched this as he felt suspicious and regretful: “The original spiraling dragon fang is only an arm’s size, but it is like two gigantic pillars now! What method did Duke Long use to make his immortal killer moves grow so powerful? It is a pity that Seven Extreme Desolation is much weaker now as fate Gu recovers due to the decreased power of call of the ancient killer move, otherwise, if they had their original power, Duke Long would be heavily injured from the attack earlier!”

Seven Extreme Desolation was an ancient battle formation made of three rank eights and four rank seven Gu Immortals.

Each of them were elites of the Huang Jin tribes in their time, they were famous in Northern Plains. And most importantly, the killer moves that they used were the trump cards of the respective tribes. For example, Chanyu tribe’s winged blade and Ye Lui tribe’s immortal binding rope.

With Seven Extreme Desolation restricting Duke Long’s attacks, the situation went into a deadlock again.

Calamity Luck Altar was temporarily safe, but Longevity Heaven’s side could not destroy the refinement path formation no matter what they did.

Heavenly Court had three layers of Gu Immortals both inside and outside, they formed a tight defense, the Northern Plains experts could not even get close to the formation, not to mention getting inside. In fact, Gu Immortals were already starting to set up new defensive formations outside the refinement path immortal formation.

“This looks like a deadlock but the initiative has been lost, at this rate, Heavenly Court will simply continue the battle of attrition.” Bing Sai Chuan had a cold expression but determination still shined in his eyes.

Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals loved to fight, they had countless battles in their life, far more than other regions’ people.

Bing Sai Chuan was a time path rank eight great expert, he was the same. He had experienced countless difficulties in life, even though the situation was increasingly dangerous now, his fighting spirit did not waver.

He was trying to find a way out.

“The plan to invade Heavenly Court had been closely planned by my Longevity Heaven, we have our methods to retaliate.”

“For now, we need to communicate with Fang Yuan and the rest, to target the outside world instead.”

Bing Sai Chuan immediately contacted Fang Yuan and the rest, giving his orders.

“Luck path method again, they are communicating with the outside world.” The moment Bing Sai Chuan acted, a few of Heavenly Court’s members sensed it.

Fairy Zi Wei smiled bitterly, the supreme profundity of luck path was held by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Heavenly Court could not stop Bing Sai Chuan.

Emperor City.

Fang Yuan had activated emperor yama killer move as he flew rapidly in the sky.

Winds blew around him, in his vision, Li Huang and Qing Ye were like two torches that charged towards him in the darkness.

Fang Yuan stretched out his finger, countless yama children flew out to obstruct Li Huang and Qing Ye.

Next, he attacked the closest Immortal Gu House.

The Gu Immortals inside that Immortal Gu House were shocked, they quickly retreated.

“Fang Zheng, quickly use that move!” A Gu Immortal shouted.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was also inside this Gu House, he immediately acted as the Immortal Gu House shot out a blood light that moved it with several times the speed, causing Fang Yuan to miss his target.

Using this chance, Li Huang and Qing Ye arrived and fought against Fang Yuan again.

The Western Desert Gu Immortals could not take it as they mocked: “This is clearly a blood path method, the great righteous path Heavenly Court is actually using blood path killer moves in public right now!”

“Bullshit, my Central Continent has unfathomable methods, how can you fools understand what we are doing?”

“Western Desert scoundrel, you are jealous of my Central Continent’s wealth, this is slander towards the righteous leader of humanity, this is unacceptable!”

How could Central Continent’s Gu Immortals acknowledge it, even though most of them knew that this was Fang Zheng’s blood path methods after all.

“Damn it.” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, Li Huang and Qing Ye were too annoying, he felt like he was stuck in a swamp.

In this current situation, his best method was great thief ghost hand, using this move, he could destroy many of the Immortal Gu Houses of Heavenly Court.

But Li Huang and Qing Ye were disturbing him, he did not have a chance to succeed.

But Western Desert was also very wary of him, they did not want to cooperate.

Fang clan had a secret cooperation with Fang Yuan but how could they expose that in public right now!

Fang clan had obtained Divine Bean Palace years ago and that caused Western Desert’s righteous path to gang up on them, they were keeping a low profile now. Using this Refinement Path Convention as a chance, they made an agreement with Western Desert’s righteous path forces. If they worked with Fang Yuan now, they would be giving the righteous path forces more excuses to suppress them afterwards.

“This is not looking good, the competition is nearing its end!” Fang Yuan had participated in the Refinement Path Convention before, he was clear of the situation now.

“Most importantly, why are those fools from Longevity Heaven not doing anything? Hmm?” At this moment, Bing Sai Chuan contacted Fang Yuan.

Towards Fang Yuan, he would naturally not use an authoritative tone, but Bing Sai Chuan knew how to convince Fang Yuan, he told him everything regarding Longevity Heaven’s invasion of Heavenly Court!

These were all truths, they had no loopholes.

Bing Sai Chuan did not hide or make up anything because he knew about Fang Yuan’s wisdom path attainment.

“These bunch of snakes!” Fang Yuan learned about what happened in Heavenly Court as brilliance flashed in his eyes, he gritted his teeth in anger.

He made use of Longevity Heaven and treated Bing Sai Chuan and the rest as pawns, was it not the same in reverse?

Longevity Heaven had their own goals, right now, they were being truthful because they wanted Fang Yuan to cause chaos and prevent Heavenly Court from repairing fate Gu fully.

Inside Heavenly Court, Longevity Heaven was only able to stabilize the situation and stall Heavenly Court’s experts, they had no chance of winning.

But if Fang Yuan destroyed Emperor City and ruined the competition, Heavenly Court’s human path methods would be stopped, they would not be able to take success dao marks from Infallible blessed land.

Without success dao marks, how could Yuan Qiong Du dare to repair fate Gu?

This was the only chance of victory!

Breathing in deeply, a cold light flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Even though he knew that Longevity Heaven was making use of him, this open scheme was in line with his own benefits, he had to do it!

Activating his immortal killer move, Fang Yuan moved like a phantom as he dashed around with shocking speed.

Everywhere he went, Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu Houses avoided him, because of Fang Yuan, the defensive line of Heavenly Court was in complete chaos.

It was a pity that at this time, Western Desert’s Immortal Gu Houses were all restricted by Heavenly Court, they also had no motivation to go all in, they were unable to make a breakthrough.

Li Huang and Qing Ye arrived again and interrupted Fang Yuan.

Usually at this time, while Fang Yuan was busy with Li Huang and Qing Ye, Heavenly Court’s defensive line would be reformed.

But it was different now!

Fang Yuan roared, turning into the immemorial year monkey.

Immortal killer move — Spring Scissors!

Immortal killer move — Summer Fan!

Be it spring scissors or summer fan, Fang Yuan aimed at the Emperor City below.

This made Li Huang and Qing Ye’s expressions change.

“Be careful, demon Fang Yuan is going all in!”

“Stop him!”

Li Huang and Qing Ye’s killer moves landed on Fang Yuan, winter coat killer move resisted them with difficulty, rank eight immortal essence was expended rapidly.

All the Immortal Gu Houses flustered, they tried to defend Emperor City by blocking the attacks.

Using this chance, Western Desert’s Immortal Gu Houses attacked.

Fang Yuan ignored everything, he focused his killer moves on Emperor City.

Winter coat killer move was finally unable to hold on, it broke with a loud sound, Fang Yuan’s flesh was torn and his bones broke from countless attacks. Fang Yuan forcefully activated winter coat killer move disregarding the damage to the core Immortal Gu or his injuries.

But the core Immortal Gu of winter coat killer move was already damaged, now that it was used, the defensive power was much weaker, it continued to get broken by attacks. Eventually, Immortal Gu Winter succumbed to its injuries and got completely destroyed.

Fang Yuan was no longer able to use winter coat, he lost his main defensive method, thankfully, the immemorial year monkey had a strong body to begin with, Fang Yuan also used many time path methods that were better than nothing.

Fang Yuan’s relentless attacks had some great effect.

Emperor City was shaking, the Gu Masters who were in the competition got disrupted as their refinement failed.

“What happened?”

“The entire city is shaking!”

The Gu Masters were shocked and uncertain.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals who were inside Emperor City quickly made their move.

“Protect these Gu Masters!”

“Don’t let them die.”

“These people are blessed by Central Continent’s human path luck, they are people with great fortune. If many of them die, our luck will not be able to resist demon Fang Yuan.”

It turned out that Heavenly Court’s arrangements also considered the element of luck.

Even though Heavenly Court did not have too much confidence in luck path, they could use this rough method to eliminate Fang Yuan’s advantage in luck path.

“Ah, a chance! Fang clan’s immortals, the best opportunity is before us.” Inside Immortal Gu House Chicken Dog Coop, Fang clan’s rank seven Gu Immortal shouted as his eyes shined.

“Kill!”

Chicken Dog Coop was manipulated by Fang clan’s Gu Immortals, they crashed towards Emperor City while moving extremely close to the ground.

Heavenly Court’s attention was completely drawn to Fang Yuan.

If Chicken Dog Coop used an immortal killer move, it would be detected, they would lose the chance as Heavenly Court would return to defend the city.

But now, Chicken Dog Coop gave up on all methods, they charged directly without reservation, they had used their time optimally!

“Oh no!” Li Huang, Qing Ye, and the rest were pale with shock.

Undoubtedly, Chicken Dog Coop chose the best timing to attack, at this moment, Heavenly Court could only watch as it crashed into Emperor City.

Even though they had several immortal killer moves, there was too little time, they did not have enough power to stop Chicken Dog Coop.

Close, they were close.

The Gu Masters in Emperor City were still unaware while Li Huang and the other Gu Immortals had looks of despair.

The fatal attack was going to land!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1724: Heroes Among People

Heavenly Court battlefield.

The front lines were extremely chaotic, the Heavenly Court immortals led by Duke Long fought against Northern Plains’ members in close range.

But because of the qi wall, it was very peaceful at the back. Fairy Zi Wei was managing the situation, paying attention to all the battles at once.

“Hmm?” When Chicken Dog Coop was about to hit Emperor City, Fairy Zi Wei’s heart tightened.

"Senior Zheng Yuan, quickly save Emperor City!" She made her decision in an instant, she shouted with an unavoidably nervous expression.

Old Man Zheng Yuan nodded lightly: "Don't worry, we have enough human will now, my mission is about to be completed... open!"

At once, Old Man Zheng Yuan's body shook intensely as his immortal essence surged, blood flowed out of his seven orifices.

He cultivated human path but he was only rank seven, it was hard for him to be the key that activated the human path methods, each attempt was excruciating beyond his limit.

But Old Man Zheng Yuan had never shown any bitterness on his face.

Right now, he had a blissful expression as he completed his task.

After the killer move people's united hearts, a new human path method left by the Immortal Venerable was activated.

Emperor City battlefield.

"Crush them all!" Fang clan's Gu Immortal laughed loudly as his expressions turned ruthless.

In his field of vision, Emperor City was getting closer, as long as they destroyed it, it would be a grand achievement! Not only would the Gu Immortal himself be famous throughout the five regions, the entire Fang clan would benefit, their reputation would rise, they would be the role model of Western Desert's righteous path force.

"Good!" Fang Yuan saw this and cheered internally.

He had a gut feeling that if this attack succeeds, he would benefit greatly from it.

Fang Yuan's wisdom path attainment was high, these kinds of feelings were very reliable. But his luck path attainment level was inferior, he could not sense if luck path contributed to this feeling.

However, a change occurred right at this moment.

A faint white light flashed on Emperor City for a moment.

This white light appeared and disappeared just as quickly.

For some reason, Chicken Dog Coop's ferocious aura vanished, it was still charging but it could not intimidate anyone anymore.

The earlier Chicken Dog Coop was like an advancing warship, but now, it was a damaged boat without anybody steering it, it was moving with the waves.

Next, under everyone's shocked gaze, Chicken Dog Coop started to break apart and disintegrate, countless shards scattered with the wind.

It continued to break apart like an old house, amidst the ferocious winds, it was torn apart piece by piece.

A large number of Gu worms scattered, even more Gu worm corpses fell onto the ground.

One moment ago, the Fang clan Gu Immortal with great morale and determination became completely silent.

Even though the remaining Fang clan Gu Immortals were still shouting now.

A bad feeling emerged in the hearts of the Fang clan Gu Immortals.

Soon, the answer arrived.

From the broken Chicken Dog Coop, corpses fell out one by one, they were the Fang clan Gu Immortals inside who were still lively a moment ago!

“How could this happen?!”

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals shouted in shock, they called these Gu Immortals by their names but there was no response.

“What killer move is this? With just one hit, the Immortal Gu House broke apart and not a single Gu Immortal inside survived?!” Even Fang Yuan’s expression changed in horror.

Even in the five hundred years of his previous life, such a thing had never happened.

This was the foundation of Central Continent’s Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan and the Western Desert Gu Immortals had finally forced them to use it. After all, in the previous life, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable succeeded in defying heaven, he managed to infiltrate Heavenly Court and prevented such a battle from occurring.

Of course, the issue could also be Fang Yuan’s own memories. He was once manipulated by heaven’s will as a chess piece, he had used Spring Autumn Cicada many times, the memories he had were not entirely reliable.

“This is immortal killer move — Broken Homes and Dead Family!” Li Huang’s eyes shined with light, he was extremely excited.

He looked at the sky as he thought to himself: “It seems that the human will has already been accumulated sufficiently.”

Sensing this, Li Huang gained an immense confidence in this battle.

He shouted as his voice resounded in the battlefield: “Everyone, what are you waiting for? Heavenly Court has already acted, it is time for us to counterattack!”

“That’s right, let these invaders taste the power of our Central Continent!” Qing Ye added.

At the next moment, all over the territory of Central Continent, countless white lights started to emerge.

These white lights were like specks or balls, they resembled countless lanterns, each were as large as dandelions, they floated casually with the wind, rising up and covering the sky.

“What killer move is this?” Western Desert’s Gu Immortals were wary and uncertain.

Fang Yuan turned into emperor yama form, he used soul path killer moves to defend himself. Now that winter coat was destroyed, Fang Yuan could only rely on his soul path defensive killer moves.

He stood among the sea of white lights, this scene also made him rather uncertain.

He tried to probe them carefully.

But these white light spots did not have offensive power, they were like illusions, none of Fang Yuan’s methods worked.

Even though this immortal killer move was grand and affected the whole of Central Continent, it did not have any offensive power.

Next, these lights moved like fish or birds returning to their homes, landing in all of the Central Continent Gu Immortals.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals became covered in more and more white light specks, they were not too flaring, instead the light was warm and mild.

This did not just happen in Emperor City battlefield, it was occurring in Heavenly Court, Infallible blessed land, and all other parts of the continent.

This was human path killer move — Hope of the People!

People’s united hearts and ‘broken homes and dead family’ were Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s human path methods.

But hope of the people and the following move were Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s gains from exploring human path.

Inside Heavenly Court, Old Man Zheng Yuan shouted again.

Human path killer move — Heroes Among People!

The white lights surrounding the Central Continent Gu Immortals started to shrink, while the Gu Immortals’ auras started to grow.

“Their auras changed, what is going on?” Seeing this, Gu Immortals of the other four regions were very perplexed.

“So strong, such strong power!” Central Continent’s Gu Immortals had an incredible feeling, their bodies were surging with new strength. This strength was so grand and vast, it felt like an endless tide, sweeping through their bodies and minds constantly.

All their fatigue was gone.

Their minds were clear, their fighting spirit also rose sharply.

This situation was most evident in Li Huang, Fairy Zi Wei, Chen Yi and the rest.

“Retreat!”

“Quickly retreat, stop attacking.”

“Let’s observe the situation first.”

The Western Desert Immortal Gu Houses retreated, this scene had truly shocked them.

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes but attacked at this moment, he wanted to probe them using an offensive method.

Yama children flew out towards Li Huang and Qing Ye.

Li Huang breathed in deeply, snickering as the verdant sun flame cloak expanded rapidly on his back by several times its original size, blazing with strong flames.

Before the yama children got close, they were incinerated into nothingness.

“Demon, take this!” Li Huang attacked as Fang Yuan defended himself.

After several rounds, Fang Yuan was greatly astounded: “This human path killer move amplified Li Huang’s battle strength by at least three times as before!”

This was not the amplification of dao marks.

Dao mark amplification affected the power of immortal killer moves.

But heroes among people targeted the Gu Immortal themselves!

At rank eight, double amplification was already terrifying. For example, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s perfect pair killer move could create a clone that had the same battle strength as the user, it could be considered a double amplification.

But this heroes among people was at least triple in amplification. And most shockingly, it did not just affect Li Huang, it affected countless Central Continent Gu Immortals!

Hope of the people together with heroes among people, this was the power of two rank nine killer moves used together!

It was like Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s ‘call of the ancient’ and ‘support of the future’, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s set of killer moves, ‘hope of the people’ and ‘heroes among people’, also had terrifying power that shocked the world.

An even worse situation had arrived.

Central Continent’s Immortal Gu Houses started to shine in white light as well.

The effect of heroes among people was also working on Immortal Gu Houses.

This was because Immortal Gu Houses were immortal killer moves in essence, used by Gu Immortals. Since heroes among people could amplify other immortal killer moves, Immortal Gu Houses were naturally part of this range.

Central Continent received a great boost, they were at least three times as strong as before, this was a proud moment!

When Gu Immortals fight, numbers were not always an advantage.

Because Gu Immortals often lacked cooperation, the dao marks of different paths conflicted, one plus one was often smaller than two.

If Gu Immortals wanted to fight together, they would usually control the same Immortal Gu House or be the formation cores of immortal formations. But in this aspect, Gu Immortals were mostly just providing immortal essence or repairing Immortal Gu Houses and formations, that was all they had to do.

Compared to this, ancient battle formations had a clear advantage. Even though it was outdated already, it could unleash the potential of the individual Gu Immortals, there was a lot to learn from it.

Be they immortal Gu formations or Immortal Gu Houses, they had fixed killer moves that were prepared beforehand, so their methods did not vary.

But ancient battle formations were different, they could use the methods that Gu Immortals had, even amplifying them when used.

An ancient battle formation was truly able to unite the strength of many Gu Immortals together in an intrinsic method.

This was also why Seven Extreme Desolation could resist Duke Long and leave him without options. It was because the seven Gu Immortals using it had combined their strength, one plus one was more than two.

From this aspect, heroes among people was even more profound than perfect pair.

Because perfect pair could only create one clone with the same battle strength as the user. But heroes among people directly amplified the main body by at least three times as before. The strength of the main body was more valuable than gaining a clone of similar power!

Pressure intensified, Western Desert’s Gu Immortals were forced to retreat by Central Continent’s forces.

“Fang Yuan, where do you think you’re going?!”

“Die here!”

Li Huang and Qing Ye attacked Fang Yuan, he had to resist while retreating.

The amplification of heroes among people was in all aspects, the two rank eights became much faster now, they could advance and retreat at will, they had the initiative now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1725: Four Dragon Generals

Emperor City battlefield.

After an intense battle while moving around, Fang Yuan started to discover some facts.

Such a powerful killer move like heroes among people was simply heaven defying, but it was not costless.

The white light on Li Huang and Qing Ye had been weakening continuously, it was rapidly expended.

But at the same time, the white light was being replenished.

The white light in the sky was at a vast amount, it seemed limitless as it continued to pour into Li Huang and Qing Ye.

Fang Yuan tried to counter it many times but there was no effect.

“The weakness of this human path killer move is very obvious.” Fang Yuan had countless ideas, his mind was like a storm that rapidly produced new thoughts.

“We just need to destroy the white lights in the sky, that’s all.”

“Without these lights, Li Huang and Qing Ye would not be replenished, as the battle drags on, the amplification will vanish.”

“But I do not have a method that targets these lights!”

Fang Yuan tried many times but regrettably, he could not even target these white lights at all.

This required an understanding of human path.

Human path had always existed. In fact, because of <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, it was likely the first existing path of human cultivation history. But Gu Immortals who could truly master human path were few, even throughout history, only those geniuses with unparalleled talent could interpret bits and pieces of it.

These comprehensions were often scattered and meager. In most cases, they were merely a set of killer moves. Like Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s call of the ancient and support of the future, or Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s heroes among people and hope of the people.

Fang Yuan did not have such methods, even the Western Desert Gu Immortals present had no such methods.

Throughout this entire Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, Fang Yuan was losing because of the human path aspect.

If it were other paths, with Fang Yuan’s deep foundation, he could deal with it. But human path was simply foreign to him.

Not just him, most Gu Immortals in this world were unfamiliar with it.

Thus, once human path methods were used, the effects were tremendous.

For example, Longevity Heaven’s call of the ancient, or Heavenly Court’s heroes among people.

“It seems that I need to read <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> more often and comprehend the profundities of human path from it. Without human path methods, it is really difficult to deal with Heavenly Court.”

1“During the five regions chaotic war, all the super forces will at least have some human path methods too.”

“My foundation in this aspect is truly lacking.”

Fang Yuan realized this.

Fang Yuan’s battle strength was very high already, there were many reasons for this, he had always been trying to raise his battle strength through all means possible. In terms of pure battle strength, he was already standing at the top ranks of this Gu Immortal world.

In terms of resources, Fang Yuan acquired them from many means, and because of sovereign immortal aperture’s usefulness, he was self-sufficient. He was able to feed his many Immortal Gu and also earn some revenue. But currently, he did not have the finances to refine a rank eight Immortal Gu, he needed time and accumulation.

But Fang Yuan’s shortcomings still existed, and there were many of them.

He had quasi-supreme attainment level in refinement path and time path, his theft path was great grandmaster, blood path, strength path, transformation path, wisdom path, star path were also quite good. But in terms of poison path, dream path, space path, sword path, and others, he lacked the foundation in them, these were all weaknesses.

The same went for human path.

Li Huang and Qing Ye were amplified by heroes among people, becoming able to suppress Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not want to give up, he could only go on the defensive.

Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu Houses started to attack, encircling Western Desert’s immortals as well as the Immortal Gu House that Bai Ning Bing and the rest were in.

Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu Houses gained a surge in battle strength, they were not afraid of these enemies’ Immortal Gu Houses escaping.

Hidden Dragon Cave battlefield.

“Soon.” Song Qi Yuan had a heated gaze, he stared at the rank eight Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace as he continued to refine it.

Along with him, there were the other rank eight Gu Immortals of Eastern Sea — Qing Yue An, Hua Cai Yun, Shen Cong Sheng, Zhang Yin, Granny Rong, Shi Miao, and Yang Zi He.

These Gu Immortals cooperated and refined Dragon Palace, trying to make it their own.

Even though Dragon Palace was refined by Duke Long, it was unmanned at the moment, because a portion of its power was used to suppress Di Zang Sheng, it could barely resist the refinement of Eastern Sea’s rank eights.

Time passed, Dragon Palace was gradually refined by the Eastern Sea immortals.

Just when they were about to succeed, Eastern Sea’s immortals became increasingly alert.

“Be careful, we do not want to fail at the last second!”

“That’s right, I have a bad feeling for some reason.”

“Indeed, even though we attacked this place, Heavenly Court had not sent a single reinforcement.”

“Don’t worry, that Heavenly Court is probably busy fending for themselves, they cannot spare any effort here. I’m sure they’ve already given up on this place.”

“Old Slave Bei Feng, go and guard the cave entrance, kill anyone who approaches suspiciously. If Heavenly Court sends reinforcements, you cannot retreat even if you die!” Shen Cong Sheng shouted, he had already enslaved Old Man Bei Feng successfully.

Old Man Bei Feng had lost his freedom, he had to obey Shen Cong Sheng.

He sighed bitterly as he obeyed the orders, leaving with his grandson Feng Chan Zi.

Feng Chan Zi was Old Man Bei Feng’s grandson, he only had rank six cultivation level and was insignificant to the Eastern Sea immortals. After Shen Cong Sheng enslaved Old Man Bei Feng, he also enslaved Feng Chan Zi.

“It seems that this time, Brother Shen’s gains are the largest.” Zhang Yin laughed.

According to the alliance agreement, Dragon Palace was shared among the immortals, but Shen Cong Sheng managed to enslave Old Man Bei Feng and his grandson. Forget about Feng Chan Zi, the key was Old Man Bei Feng, he was a genuine rank eight. The only problem was that his injuries made his battle strength fall drastically.

Shen Cong Sheng was silent, he knew that with his huge gains, even though the others looked calm on the outside, they had other thoughts internally.

Because Shen clan had just gained a new rank eight existence. After Old Man Bei Feng recovers, it would break the balance of the current Eastern Sea!

Thinking of this, Shen Cong Sheng smiled: “What can this Old Man Bei Feng do? He is old and extremely injured, he needs to spend a lot of time and energy in recuperating. It is nothing compared to Dragon Palace!”

He tried to devalue Old Man Bei Feng while diverting the attention of the immortals to Dragon Palace.

“This Dragon Palace is able to suppress and even enslave Di Zang Sheng. With it, when the five regions combine, we will have the power to resist the four other regions.” He was trying to alert the other immortals’ sense of danger, to remind them that he, Shen Cong Sheng, was their ally, their true enemies were the other four regions including Central Continent.

“Let’s observe properly, according to our deductions, Dragon Palace should have a dream path Immortal Gu in it, I hope Duke Long did not take it away!” Shen Cong Sheng added.

The immortals were silent.

Shen Cong Sheng made a lot of sense, his eloquence made his companions feel less envious now.

“Dragon Palace is basically ours now, what are we going to do now?” Granny Rong asked.

“Once we subdue Dragon Palace, we will act together and help it enslave Di Zang Sheng. After that...” Song Qi Yuan pondered.

“Heavenly Court’s reinforcements did not show up, it shows that their fight is very intense. Maybe we can help the others a little, even if it is Fang Yuan!”

“That’s right, Central Continent is the strongest among the five regions now, we need to weaken it.”

“Hehe, who said that Heavenly Court has no reinforcements?”

A change occurred right at this moment!

Zhang Yin, Granny Rong, Shi Miao, and Yang Zi He suddenly attacked, targeting Song Qi Yuan, Qing Yue An, Hua Cai Yun, and Shen Cong Sheng.

How could Song Qi Yuan and the rest expect that their allies would suddenly attack them! They were all hit as they spat out blood and escaped.

Rank eight Gu Immortals had immense foundation, their defenses were extremely thick, even though Zhang Yin and the rest attacked by surprise, they did not kill anyone.

But that was enough.

Song Qi Yuan and the rest were moderately injured as they retreated away.

Zhang Yin and the rest stood at the inner circle, defending Dragon Palace.

Song Qi Yuan and the rest were furious and shocked.

Qing Yue An shouted: “Zhang Yin, are the four of you insane? You want to take Dragon Palace for yourselves?!”

Zhang Yin chuckled: “All four of us are working together, we’re not trying to monopolize it.”

Shen Cong Sheng had a grim expression: “Don’t forget that we set an alliance agreement. You are breaking the agreement now, get ready for the backlash.”

Yang Zi He had a plain tone but firm determination: “Even if we die, we will protect Dragon Palace, you will not obtain it.”

Hua Cai Yun frowned instantly, saying lightly: “Something is wrong.”

Even though Zhang Yin and the rest were lone or demonic rank eight immortals, they were still Eastern Sea people, even though they had some conflicts with Song Qi Yuan and the other super forces’ leaders, it was too strange that they would risk their lives and even be willing to die to protect Dragon Palace.

“Why are you doing this?” Song Qi Yuan shouted.

Zhang Yin and the rest started to smile creepily at the same time.

Next, their bodies became taller, their hands and legs became claws, scales appeared on their skin, horns appeared on their forehead as their pupils became vertical-slit pupils.

Their appearances had changed drastically.

Song Qi Yuan and the rest were deeply astounded.

Because these changes were similar to Duke Long’s transformation.

Qing Yue An could not contain his anger: “You all gave up your superior statuses as humans to become these inferior variant human dragonmen?!”

“What do you know?”

“Dragonman is the noble race, the future ruler of this heaven and earth!”

“Humans are bound to be exterminated in this world.”

Zhang Yin and the rest spoke one by one, at this point, they shouted together: “We are the guardians of Dragon Palace — the Four Dragon Generals!”

COMMENT

Song Qi Yuan and the rest were shocked until they were speechless.

“I get it now!” Hua Cai Yun had a flash of inspiration, cold light shined in her eyes: “The four of them were enslaved by Dragon Palace long ago, they fought against Duke Long earlier in Dragon Palace because that was their responsibility. After Duke Long took away Dragon Palace and refined it, he became their master, but this Duke Long is too crafty,he did not send them away, instead, they stayed by our side. Heavenly Court’s reinforcements had arrived long ago, they came with us.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1726: Destiny Song

Hua Cai Yun couldn’t help but smile bitterly.

It turned out that although they seemed successful, this was just a huge trap meticulously set by Heavenly Court!

“Precisely so.” Zhang Yin and the rest smiled calmly.

Qing Yue An and the rest finally reacted.

“In order to assure us, you actually let me enslave Old Man Bei Feng, your schemes are truly deep.” Shen Cong Sheng said in a cold tone.

“This was not our intention, it was also not part of Lord Duke Long’s plan.” Zhang Yin shook his head, as the leader of the group, he said: “Do you know that everything that happened here was already part of Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions. She was the one who assigned us this task.”

1Song Qi Yuan’s gaze landed on Dragon Palace again: “So this means that the rank eight Immortal Gu House is actually an enslavement path Immortal Gu House... it can actually enslave rank eight Gu Immortals, and even as many as four! Even after that, it can still continue to suppress and enslave Di Zang Sheng... throughout history, this has to be the number one enslavement path Immortal Gu House!”

Zhang Yin and the rest had a change of expression.

Qing Yue An, Hua Cai Yun, and Shen Cong Sheng looked at Song Qi Yuan for a second, realizing that he had not given up.

Even though there was this accident, Song Qi Yuan and the rest were rank eight Gu Immortals, how could they give up so easily?

Even though they were sneak attacked and got injured, their battle strength was still quite well preserved, if they continued to fight, there was still hope.

It was not easy to sneak attack rank eight Gu Immortals.

Most immortal killer moves would release their aura when activated.

Thus, Zhang Yin and the rest did not use any terrifying killer moves, they had a hard time concealing the aura of their killer moves to begin with.

Methods that could conceal the aura of killer moves were very rare.

Currently, only Southern Border's Wu Yong had such methods. Others, including Heavenly Court's members, did not have any.

Boom boom boom!

Explosions resounded again.

Song Qi Yuan and the rest did not give up, they fought against Zhang Yin and the rest once more.

Infallible blessed land battlefield.

Bai Cang Shui retreated alongside Chen Yi.

Wu Yong and the rest attacked, trying to force her away from the formation behind her, so as to kill these two rank eights from Heavenly Court outside the formation.

Bai Cang Shui moved around in different directions, dodging fatal attacks time and again.

Southern Border's immortals gave her huge pressure, especially Wu Yong, all of his killer moves' auras were concealed before they were unleashed, Bai Cang Shui was very wary of him. Even if Wu Yong did not attack, she had to keep her attention on him at all times.

“Let me down, you should escape!” Chen Yi said.

He was hit by the unorthodox farewell friend wind, he could not move and could only wait for his death.

Right now, his clothes, eyebrows, and hair were vanishing, his limbs were also disappearing, the terrible might of farewell friend wind was about to completely erode his limbs, followed by his body.

Thankfully, farewell friend wind did not spread among people, it only targeted Chen Yi, that gave Bai Cang Shui the courage to protect him.

“You think I want to save you?” Bai Cang Shui transmitted secretly.

Chen Yi was stunned.

He suddenly realized.

As he expected, Bai Cang Shui continued: “I am purposely doing this and pretending that I do not want to give up on you, to put myself in danger and attract the attention of the Southern Border immortals, so that we can stall for time and let the others set up more immortal formations. You are definitely dying, but you can still be useful. I might die too, but we must stall for time. For Heavenly Court, for Central Continent, for the people in this world, so what if we sacrifice ourselves?”

1Chen Yi was silent, he suddenly wanted to smile, at this moment, death seemed so insignificant.

Even though he was someone obsessed with authority, he was also someone who upheld humanity's righteousness. He was like Bai Cang Shui, he did not fear sacrifice, if not for this, Fairy Zi Wei would not have made him a member of Heavenly Court.

But Chen Yi could not smile, his face showed even more pain and bitterness, he needed to act, to cooperate with Bai Cang Shui and deceive the Southern Border immortals.

“Let me be useful at the final moment of my life.” Chen Yi spoke openly, he was resolved to die.

But at this moment, he heard a song playing by his ears.

In such an intense fight, who would have the mood to sing?

Chen Yi was stunned before his attention was fully drawn to the song.

Bai Cang Shui, Wu Yong, and the rest were in the same situation as him.

The singing voice was illusory and deep, it was filled with conflict and was very unique.

Initially, the song was like a small stream of water in the mountains, flowing slowly. Gradually, the stream turned into flowing lava that expanded the river’s width, in the range of mountains, it sounded like a dragon’s roaring echo.

At the same time, the river of lava on the mountain turned into a raging tide, swish swish swish, ebb and flow, it continued without stopping.

The lava and waves collided, reacting and creating steam that covered the entire sky.

The steam condensed into clouds that wanted to fly towards the high heavens.

Suddenly, lightning struck and thunder roared, the lightning bolts landed on the clouds as the immortals felt like they had fallen from the sky, they felt a sense of hollowness in their hearts.

Phantom or real, high or low, being proud and confident at times, feeling lost and desperate during disasters. Bending one’s back at times, spreading one’s words at times...

In the battlefield, all conflict had ceased, everyone was engrossed in the song, they forgot everything else.

But suddenly, the song stopped, everyone woke up immediately.

Chi Qu You had a solemn expression: “What song is this? It is terrifying, it actually made all of us so engrossed in it without resistance!”

Qiao Zhi Cai had a pale face as he said with lingering fear: “Thankfully it stopped, otherwise, none of us would have gotten free, we would have been hit badly.”

“What song is this?” Yi Hao Fang asked.

A rank eight Gu Immortal walked out of the formation, he wore a red and white robe, he had extreme elegance as he smiled: “This is my newly created destiny song.”

It was Feng Jiu Ge!

“Hmph, destiny? You talk big.” Ba Shi Ba snored coldly.

“Unbelievable! This destiny song actually saved my life.” Chen Yi cheered, he only had his body and head left, but farewell friend wind had stopped. Even though his injuries were severe, Chen Yi’s life was not over.

The Southern Border immortals were dazed.

Wu Yong’s farewell friend wind was rank eight. Feng Jiu Ge’s destiny song used Fate Armor as the core, it was also rank eight!

“You again!” Wu Yong stared at Feng Jiu Ge with deep anger.

Last time, he wanted to kill Fang Yuan but Feng Jiu Ge saved him.

This time, he wanted to kill Chen Yi but Feng Jiu Ge stopped him yet again.

Twice, Feng Jiu Ge had ruined Wu Yong’s plans twice!

And these were two crucial timings.

Even with Wu Yong’s supreme disposition and ability to endure any circumstance, he could not help but become very angry.

“Feng Jiu Ge, you are truly an unrivaled genius.” Wu Yong squinted his eyes, his voice was cold as a blizzard, it could send a chill down someone’s spine: “Come, show me everything you’ve got, I’ll take you on myself.”

Saying so, an intense wind blew.

This was Wu Yong’s unlimited wind, it had been ravaging the battlefield, like a huge pillar supporting heaven and earth.

This move expended ten thousand of Wu Yong’s wind path dao marks!

2Unlimited wind was unceasing and grand, it approached Feng Jiu Ge and the rest with divine might.

Feng Jiu Ge smiled bitterly: “Lord Wu Yong is truly powerful, I have no choice but to avoid you.”

Bai Cang Shui grabbed Chen Yi: “It is time, let’s go!”

Behind the three, the formation expanded, they were successful in retreating back into the formation.

Once they were inside the formation, Feng Jiu Ge spit out a mouthful of blood, his face was pale as paper, he was standing shakily.

“What happened?” Bai Cang Shui quickly supported him.

Feng Jiu Ge smiled with an ugly expression, his breathing was very weak: “My destiny song was only created in a rush, I have not even finished half my song. Because I had no choice but to use it this time, I suffered heavy injuries as a result.”

“Brother Feng risked your life to save me, I will never forget this debt of gratitude!” Chen Yi sighed.

“Right now, Central Continent is in chaos, Southern Border’s immortals are here with vengeance, I save you for the sake of Central Continent.” Feng Jiu Ge shook his head.

Chen Yi looked at Feng Jiu Ge and Bai Cang Shui, thinking of their relentless actions, he laughed with heroism: “No matter how dangerous it is, with people like us that do not fear sacrifice or death, Central Continent will definitely win, Heavenly Court will emerge victorious!”

Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei who had been observing Infallible blessed land let out a breath of air as she smiled.

“Truly incredible, Feng Jiu Ge and destiny song!”

Fairy Zi Wei knew about Heavenly Court’s plan for destiny Gu. Longevity Heaven was also ambitious towards it. Earlier, Heavenly Court wanted to obtain fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu, while now, Longevity Heaven was after fate Gu, they were all trying to obtain destiny Gu.

However, the one who took a big step in this direction was not the two supreme forces, but a lone Gu Immortal.

“Feng Jiu Ge!” Fairy Zi Wei muttered.

Even though she had always thought highly of his talent and ability, she realized now that she had vastly underestimated him.

Chen Yi’s sacrifice was certain in Fairy Zi Wei’s perspective. Because farewell friend wind could not be undone, unless they had defended against it beforehand.

To think that this rule was overwritten by Feng Jiu Ge today.

In history, there had never been any case of farewell friend wind being broken. Undeniably, after assimilation wind song, Feng Jiu Ge has written history once again!

COMMENT

Emperor City battlefield.

A wave of cheers resounded in Emperor City.

The final competition of Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention had ended.

This meant that this was no longer Heavenly Court’s weakness.

The Western Desert Gu Immortals who sensed this quickly retreated, they wanted to escape.

They did not manage to destroy Emperor City or the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention.

“Everything has ended.”

“Sigh, Heavenly Court succeeded in the end.”

Western Desert’s Gu Immortals were dejected, it was not easy to retreat now, Central Continent was supported with heroes among people, they could not escape so easily.

Fang Yuan had a heavy heart.

He had tried his best but there was no helping it.

Heavenly Court’s methods were truly out of his expectations, he could not handle them.

In the end, Heavenly Court’s foundation was too deep, Fang Yuan was not their match.

Even though he had obtained many venerable inheritances, through plunder his strength also grew rapidly at an unprecedented speed, Heavenly Court and Central Continent had gone through three million years of accumulation, it was nurtured by the efforts of countless generations of elites!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1727: Killing Fang Yuan to Save the World

Fang Yuan’s achievements were due to his own hard work and also the help of many predecessors.

Heavenly Court and Central Continent were the same, it was not strange that they could defend against Fang Yuan and Western Desert’s immortals. This was their strength and foundation, countless generations of people in Central Continent and Heavenly Court had achieved this.

Their hard work was undeniable be it past or present.

“There is no choice, I need to retreat.” Fang Yuan thought.

Li Huang and Qing Ye were trying hard to stall Fang Yuan, but with his methods, he was confident of breaking out.

Fang Yuan no longer had any intention of destroying Emperor City.

At this point, it was useless, furthermore, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were protecting it, it was too hard to destroy it now.

But at this moment, there was a loud sound.

The earth cracked open as a huge Earth Trench emerged from the north to south, devouring all forests or mountains in its path at an extreme speed!

And of all coincidences, Emperor City was right ahead of this expanding Earth Trench.

“Oh no!”

“Protect Emperor City!”

This was out of everyone’s expectations.

Central Continent’s immortals were busy as they quickly tried to protect Emperor City.

But the might of heaven was unpredictable, Earth Trenches were not normally formed, they were created because the earth veins of the five regions were combining. This was such a grand power of heaven and earth, how could a bunch of Gu Immortals resist it?

Thus, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals could only watch as the Earth Trench devoured Emperor City!

Emperor City was unable to fly, it was huge and as the ground cracked, it fell into the Earth Trench, disintegrating continuously.

In this huge city, there were nearly a million people. There were countless Gu Masters, they were all elites gathered from all over the world. Especially when this gathering was meant to resist Fang Yuan’s luck, there were many people with strong luck gathered here.

Ye Fan and Hong Yi were part of this group, there were many others similar to them.

“Quickly save them!” Li Huang shouted.

“Hahaha, wishful thinking!” Fang Yuan attacked.

He was in emperor yama form now, it was easy to use soul path killer moves.

Fang Yuan dived into the crowd of a million, he saw Hong Yi and Ye Fan, these two were luck connected to him, it was no wonder that his luck was suppressed all along.

Immortal killer move — Luo Po Seal!

Immortal killer move — Spring Scissors!

Immortal killer move — Summer Fan!

Fang Yuan first used Luo Po seal before turning into the immemorial year monkey and using two time path killer moves.

“No!” Li Huang could not block Fang Yuan’s vicious attack in such a rush, he shouted angrily but could only watch as countless lifeforms died in Fang Yuan’s hands.

2Among them were the elites who took part in the finals of the refinement path competition.

Hong Yi and Ye Fan were not spared.

2“Fang Yuan, as a grand rank eight Gu Immortal, you actually slaughtered mortals. You are so vicious and evil, you should die, you deserve death!” Qing Ye’s eyes were bloodshot and red, he was incomparably angry as he charged at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s attack caused huge losses to Central Continent!

Qing Ye knew that this Emperor City was an important location of Central Continent, it had human path arrangements that attracted and nurtured generations of elites. With the accumulation over time, there was an abundance of human qi here, it was the greatest breeding ground of Gu Immortals.

Central Continent followed the sect system after all, it was not like the other regions. Emperor City produced many talented people, they were all geniuses with abundant luck. If these people obtained sufficient resources and grew properly, there was a high chance of becoming Gu Immortals!

In the future, during the five regions chaotic war, many Gu Immortals would die, these people were Gu Immortal seeds for Central Continent, so they could produce more immortals in the future.

Fang Yuan’s attack almost wiped out people in the city, he killed a good portion of Central Continent’s seeds, their potential during the war was greatly lowered.

The losses were too severe, how could Li Huang and Qing Ye not feel enraged, they wanted to tear Fang Yuan to shreds!

After Hong Yi, Ye Fan, and a bunch of talents died, Fang Yuan felt a sensation of relief.

He knew that his luck path was starting to show its advantage.

Taking a final look at the lingering pieces of the descending Emperor City and the corpses that he created, Fang Yuan retreated rapidly.

Li Huang, Qing Ye, and the Immortal Gu Houses started to chase after him relentlessly.

“Demon! Demon!”

“He almost killed everyone in the city, my... my family was inside!”

“Kill him, rid the world of this great harm!”

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were full of rage and killing intent.

Fang Yuan laughed maniacally: “Can you stop me?”

They could not.

While Fang Yuan could not do anything to these Central Continent people, their Immortal Gu Houses and the rank eight Gu Immortals could not blockade Fang Yuan even though they could encircle Western Desert’s Immortal Gu Houses.

Unless they used an immortal Gu formation or an immortal battlefield killer move.

But in this short time, how could they set it up?

Even if they could set up an immortal Gu formation or battlefield, unless they could kill Fang Yuan rapidly, with his wisdom path attainment and powerful methods, he could escape.

Zhou Xiong Xin’s death was the best evidence.

Not only could they not trap him, Fang Yuan could even retaliate.

Boom!

With a strong attack, Fang Yuan almost dismantled an Immortal Gu House.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was inside this house, he was breaking out in cold sweat from fear. This Immortal Gu House quickly moved back to heal, while the other Immortal Gu Houses moved to fill up the gap.

Fang Yuan looked at this house regrettably, even though he did not know that Fang Zheng was inside, his intuition told him that if he destroyed it, he would benefit greatly.

Fang Zheng’s existence was a type of restraint and burden on him.

“Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan!” At this time, Bing Sai Chuan contacted him again.

“Bing Sai Chuan, you still have the face to contact me? Today’s loss was because of you!” Fang Yuan showed an angry expression.

The truth was, even though Central Continent’s Heavenly Court had deep foundation, it was still at a disadvantage against all four other regions.

However, Central Continent’s people’s united hearts made them a collective force, while the other four regions had their own agendas, even though they were strong, they could not work together.

And in fact, all four regions preserved their strength. For example, even though Eastern Sea attacked with many rank eights, they did not mobilize many rank seven Gu Immortals or Immortal Gu Houses. Western Desert sent rank six and seven Gu Immortals as well as Immortal Gu Houses but did not send rank eight Gu Immortals. Many experts like Xi clan’s first supreme elder did not join the battle, they were staying in Western Desert.

Bing Sai Chuan sighed bitterly: “I cannot hold on much longer, we suffered huge losses but there is still a chance! That is Infallible blessed land!”

Originally, Heavenly Court used human path methods to host the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, its goal was to use the countless refinement failures to create the success dao marks in Infallible blessed land.

Right now, fate Gu had not fully recovered, it still lacked the final batch of success dao marks.

Even though the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was completed, the final batch of success dao marks was still being produced, it was going to take some time before it was transported to Heavenly Court.

This was because Infallible blessed land was surrounded in immortal formations now.

Even though these immortal formations stopped the attacks of Southern Border’s immortals, it also created problems for the transportation of success dao marks.

COMMENT

After hearing Bing Sai Chuan’s explanation, Fang Yuan’s mood brightened up: “It seems that Infallible blessed land is our last hope!”

Fang Yuan did not hesitate, he turned around and went towards Infallible blessed land instead.

Behind him, Li Huang and the rest including the Immortal Gu Houses chased with determination.

Infallible blessed land battlefield.

Unlimited wind was like a tall pillar sweeping everything in its path, it tried to destroy Heavenly Court’s immortal formation with an unstoppable advancement.

The immortal formation shot out with golden light, resisting it fully.

Wu Yong and the rest had solemn expressions.

Rank eight Gu Immortal Chi Qu You said in a low tone: “Unbelievable, their immortal Gu formations were also amplified! What kind of human path methods actually created these countless white lights?”

Immortal formations were immortal killer moves in essence, they were manipulated by Gu Immortals.

Since Gu Immortals were boosted by heroes among people, immortal formations were naturally powered up too.

Wu Yong expended his own foundation to create the powerful killer move, unlimited wind, even though he still had the advantage now, his gains were smaller than before.

“It seems that we need to cooperate with the outside if we want to destroy the formation. We’ll leave the outside to unlimited wind, we need to find the weak point from the inside.” Yi Hao Fang said with deep concentration.

Ba Shi Ba pondered: “Times are different now, earlier we attacked by surprise and caught them off-guard. But a long time has passed already, we need to be wary of Heavenly Court’s reinforcements. Thus, we need some people to stay outside the formation.”

Everyone agreed with Ba Shi Ba’s words.

Even though unlimited wind was powerful, it was just a killer move.

Killer moves were fixed, but people could think.

Wu Yong had a heavy heart.

Because they could not destroy the formation rapidly, their sneak attack failed, they had to use brute force now.

Even though Heavenly Court lost many formations in the meantime, they might have lost Immortal Gu but their foundation was untouched.

Chen Yi was meant to die, but Feng Jiu Ge actually managed to save him.

Wu Yong knew that the longer this went on, the more disadvantageous it was for them. They needed to split up now, a group would enter while the rest stayed outside. Of course, that would mean that they could not work together, their efficiency in destroying the formation would be much lower. If Heavenly Court’s reinforcements arrive, they would also face greater pressure.

Wu Yong sighed to himself, even though there were great problems in splitting up, they had to do it.

“If only we had more people with us, even though I became the Southern Alliance Leader, I cannot mobilize too many people. With the three rank eights that we have, this is already the best outcome.”

Wu Yong breathed in deeply, he started to make arrangements.

Chi Qu You had the highest formation path attainment, he naturally had to go inside. Wu Yong had the number one battle strength, he also had to go into the formation, to protect Chi Qu You and also to fight against strong enemies inside.

Meanwhile, Yi Hao Fang and Ba Shi Ba cultivated transformation path and rule path respectively, they could stay outside. After all, Heavenly Court’s reinforcements might be powerful, letting two rank eights stay outside was safer.

Right when Southern Border’s Gu Immortals discussed their next action, there was a commotion.

Wu Yong’s expression changed, he looked towards the north, saying softly: “Someone’s coming.”

There were quite a lot of people!

They were led by three rank eights.

An old man carrying a walking cane, he had a kind aura and was the former first supreme elder of Northern Plains’ Yao tribe, and the current South Desolation Immortal of Longevity Heaven — Yao Huang.

The second person wore a white robe, he had thick hair, a long and tall body, he was the first supreme elder of Northern Plains’ Bai Zu tribe — Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

The third wore a tall crown and golden cape, he had incredible disposition, it was Gong tribe’s external supreme elder — Prince Feng Xian.

2Those after them were all elites among immortals.

There were Domination Immortal Chu Du, Toad Fiend Immortal Nu Er Qian, Spear Deity Yuan Rang Zun, Wealth Devouring Boy Nian Er Fu, and others.

1Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals gathered towards the Southern Border immortals.

“Friends from Northern Plains, what do you want?” Wu Yong asked loudly.

Yao Huang chuckled as he said: “The enemy is before us, we would like to work together with you and attack Heavenly Court!”

Wu Yong laughed loudly, Heavenly Court’s reinforcements did not come, instead, he gained some new allies.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1728: Agreeing to Ally with Fang Yuan

Infallible blessed land battlefield.

“What formation is this?” Wu Yong asked.

Beside him were the two rank eights, Yi Hao Fang and Chi Qu You, followed by Southern Border’s band of rank seven elites.

Not far away stood the leader Yao Huang, followed by the Northern Plains immortals such as Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Chu Du.

After some discussion, both sides made a temporary agreement, they decided to cooperate and attack Heavenly Court.

But this was the first time they were working together, the alliance agreement was quite relaxed, they were still wary of each other. Despite this, Wu Yong was already quite satisfied.

“Southern Border and Northern Plains are cooperating, this is an unprecedented event in history!”

“With the help of Northern Plains, we will not lack numbers. Even if Heavenly Court sends reinforcements, Ba Shi Ba and Prince Feng Xian who are outside will be able to last for a while, we will have enough reaction time.”

Wu Yong thought to himself.

Beside him, Chi Qu You spoke: “This should be a new formation, I have never seen any records of this.”

Wu Yong nodded as he purposely spoke loudly: “In that case, we can only explore and probe this formation.”

Over at Northern Plains, Yao Huang heard this as he smiled while grasping his walking cane: “Southern Border allies, wait a while and recover first. My side has just arrived, we are in good condition, we will do the probing.”

Wu Yong showed delight on his face, he cupped his fist: “The bravery of Northern Plains is known to all, we will wait here and recover, if anything happens, we will definitely lend a hand.”

Yao Huang nodded as he instructed someone to explore the formation.

This batch of Northern Plains Gu Immortals were purposely chosen by Bing Sai Chuan. After receiving orders, Yao Huang gathered these people in the name of Longevity Heaven and brought them here.

Before this, Bing Sai Chuan had already brought Calamity Luck Altar and his comrades to attack Heavenly Court.

It was not that Bing Sai Chuan had purposely diverted his forces, but he had his reservations.

Attacking Heavenly Court was an important matter, it needed to be kept secret. He was afraid that if they expanded the numbers and called too many people, the invasion would fail, they would get exposed and end up losing the battle in the end.

Thus, Bing Sai Chuan only chose the few people he trusted the most.

And undoubtedly, his decision was correct.

Because Prince Feng Xian was the spy of Spirit Affinity House, he was one of the most successful spies in terms of status.

The Northern Plains group was naturally led by Yao Huang.

After losing in Heavenly Court, Bing Sai Chuan sent out orders to Yao Huang first, before contacting Fang Yuan.

Yao Huang knew how important this mission was, because the hope of getting fate Gu from Heavenly Court was getting slimmer now, Infallible blessed land had become the most important battlefield. As long as they destroyed it, Heavenly Court's plan of repairing fate Gu would be foiled.

This way, Heavenly Court would need to try and restore fate Gu once more. The longer this dragged on, the more hope there was for the four regions.

Thus, Yao Huang and Southern Border's immortals joined forces with great sincerity.

Wu Yong purposely spoke loudly, Yao Huang knew his intentions and quickly offered to help, it was his display of sincerity.

Heavenly Court was united in ideals, Central Continent had people's united hearts, while Southern Border and Northern Plains had joined hands for the first time ever, this was truly a new page of history, despite both of them not trusting each other fully yet.

In order to succeed in this attack on Heavenly Court's formation, both sides cooperated earnestly.

Northern Plains sent none other than Wealth Devouring Boy Nian Er Fu. This person had a child's appearance, he had peak rank seven battle strength and cultivated space path, he was able to protect himself.

This formation was not ordinary, it was like an underground cave. The cave was huge and the Gu Immortals were like ants, there were countless stalagmites and stalactites that hung down from the ceiling or protruded from the ground like growing grass. They had all sorts of color and emitted a light that was a dazzling sight.

Nian Er Fu carefully went into the formation under everyone's observation.

He was famous in Northern Plains, he cultivated space path and moved unhindered around battlefields, he was able to preserve his life in dangerous situations and even earn huge profits from it, gaining an immense wealth. This was also why he was called Wealth Devouring Boy.

But at this moment, Nian Er Fu was very alert, he did not dare to be careless.

This was Heavenly Court's formation, any accident and his life would end here.

Nian Er Fu entered the formation as it started to activate, the stalactite and stalagmite started to grow as the rainbow lights enveloped Nian Er Fu.

In everyone's perspective, this underground cave created by the formation was like a fierce beast opening its mouth, it was shutting its mouth now, countless stalactites and stalagmites joined together and wanted to chew this Nian Er Fu into bits of flesh.

Nian Er Fu was very alert, upon sensing this problem, he turned around and ran.

The rainbow light was very troublesome, it hindered his movement ability, it could even penetrate his defense.

“This rainbow light is the exquisite seven orifices formation, let's quickly attack the light and help Nian Er Fu to escape before it's too late.” Chi Qu You saw something amiss as he quickly shouted.

Southern Border's and Northern Plains' immortals worked together as killer moves erupted.

Nian Er Fu received a lot of help as he narrowly avoided the gathering of the rainbow light, returning to the main group.

“So close, without all of you, I would have died in there.” Nian Er Fu felt great after-fear.

“Your face...” Suddenly, Nu Er Qian pointed at Nian Er Fu’s face, showing a look of terror.

“What is it?” Nian Er Fu touched his own face but felt a hard jade stone texture.

“You were still hit. It seems that this formation is not a simple exquisite seven orifices formation, there is also the jade spike formation.” Black Extremity said.

Northern Plains’ Longevity Heaven had Four Desolation Immortals and Eight Extremities.

Among which, Black Extremity was skilled in formation path, he had incredible talent and had once cheated Old Ancestor Xue Hu by disguising as Sun Ming Lu.

Black Extremity’s words received Chi Qu You’s acknowledgment: “This is likely a combination formation made from exquisite seven orifices formation and jade spike formation.”

“Then how do we break it?” Wu Yong looked at the permeating rainbow light and countless stalactites and stalagmites as he said.

Chi Qu You smiled confidently: “With just the few of us, it is very hard to break this formation. But with the friends of Northern Plains here, this is merely a troublesome issue.”

Right when Southern Border and Northern Plains joined forces, Fang Yuan was also fighting against Qing Ye and Li Huang.

“This human path killer move is truly troublesome!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with a cold flickering light.

Li Huang and Qing Ye were boosted by killer move heroes among people, they pursued Fang Yuan relentlessly. As for those Immortal Gu House, only two remained chasing Fang Yuan, while the rest were either dealing with Western Desert’s immortals or saving the Central Continent Gu Masters in the Earth Trench.

After getting the information from Bing Sai Chuan, Fang Yuan flew with rapid speed, but the direction was the opposite, he went further and further away from Infallible blessed land.

“It is time.” Fang Yuan suddenly waved his sleeves as countless yama children flew out.

Immortal killer move — Familiar Face!

Fang Yuan who was in emperor yama form quickly transformed into a yama child as he mixed in with the crowd.

“Fang Yuan, where do you think you’re going!” Li Huang shouted, he was covered in a blazing cloak, burning with intense flames.

“You were hit by the investigative killer move, how can you escape through this method?” Qing Ye snickered in his white robe.

The two Immortal Gu Houses were quite lost, but these two Heavenly Court rank eights targeted Fang Yuan’s main body instead.

Evidently, Central Continent’s Heavenly Court had already started to make countermeasures against Fang Yuan’s familiar face.

“So troublesome.” Without a choice, Fang Yuan ascended to heaven, entering white heaven.

Rank nine immortal killer move — Heaven Form!

Using this move, Fang Yuan quickly found a bunch of black-white overturning clouds.

“Oh no, stop him.”

“Destroy these overturning clouds!”

Li Huang and Qing Ye had rich battle experiences, they could tell that Fang Yuan was trying to use the clouds to escape.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Why don’t you try and deduce my main body again?”

Immortal killer move — Myriad Ghost Sword Dragon!

This was a fusion move that comprised ancient sword dragon transformation, myriad self, yama child, emperor yama, and familiar face, it was also one of Fang Yuan’s greatest achievements in his killer move modification a while back.

Once the killer move was used, a loud explosion occurred as countless black dragon-shaped soul beasts flew out, these soul beasts had silver-white claws, teeth, horns, and scales, they were emitting an eerie sword qi at all times.

Countless ghost dragons flew in the sky, some attacked the pursuers while the rest continued to fly aimlessly in a chaotic manner.

“Such an amazing method!” After a brief fight, Li Huang and Qing Ye’s expressions changed.

This killer move was threatening to them, especially when the ghost dragons self-detonate, they had incredible might, there was the explosive force of the soul beast, and also the rampaging sword qi that gave it extraordinary power.

Li Huang wore his verdant sun flame cloak but it could not hold up, after tens of self-detonations, the cloak was flickering, the flames had weakened tremendously.

1Qing Ye was in an even more pitiful state, he tried to defend himself as he thought to himself in great shock: “How can this move be so powerful?”

This was only natural.

Myriad ghost sword dragon had the same weakness and price as Wu Yong’s unlimited wind. It expended the dao marks of the Gu Immortal permanently.

However, unlimited wind used ten thousand dao marks each time, while Fang Yuan’s myriad ghost sword dragon used four thousand soul path dao marks per use.

COMMENT

Li Huang and Qing Ye were busy defending themselves while Fang Yuan used the opportunity to escape into the black-white overturning clouds.

After going from white heaven to black cloud, Fang Yuan immediately destroyed the cloud as he used Fixed Immortal Travel as the core to activate a killer move.

After a few breaths of time, he vanished on the spot, arriving in Infallible blessed land.

“To think that Infallible blessed land was here!” Fang Yuan sighed.

Since Bing Sai Chuan called him, he naturally gave him the location of Infallible blessed land.

COMMENT

This place was not like the stone lotus island or dragon whale grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan could enter using his killer move.

“Who?” Fang Yuan’s appearance triggered the alertness of the Southern Border and Northern Plains army.

COMMENT

“Me!” Fang Yuan snorted coldly.

1The Gu Immortal asking him was full of cold sweat, he felt a strong pressure. Even before Fang Yuan answered, he had already realized this, he regretted his action of asking in reflex almost immediately.

After all, Fang Yuan was the fiercest demon currently renowned in the five regions!

Fang Yuan quickly observed the battlefield, the giant tornado that supported heaven and earth, unlimited wind, was the thing that attracted his attention the most. Next, he looked at Prince Feng Xian for a second before turning to Ba Shi Ba and the other defending Gu Immortals.

1“You are here.” Chu Du was moderately injured, he flew towards Fang Yuan and greeted.

Prince Feng Xian and Ba Shi Ba looked at Fang Yuan with a complex expression.

Li Huang and the rest had chased Fang Yuan too relentlessly, he only managed to find a chance to teleport here after so long.

Right now, Wu Yong and Yao Huang had not only broken the jade spike exquisite formation, they had also gone past the next two formations, they were stuck at the fourth now.

Chu Du displayed incredible worth during the second formation, but he was injured as a result, because Fang Yuan was coming, he stayed outside to wait for him.

COMMENT

With Bing Sai Chuan’s arrangements, Northern Plains’ side knew that Fang Yuan was coming, that also meant that the Southern Border immortals knew as well.

Fang Yuan created huge chaos in Northern Plains and Southern Border, the righteous path forces of both regions had suffered losses due to him. Northern Plains’ Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was destroyed by Fang Yuan, while many of Southern Border’ righteous path super forces were extorted by him.

But now, they were all cooperating against a common enemy, Heavenly Court.

“No matter how strong the formation is, how can it obstruct my path!”

“Time is pressing, I won’t explain further, open a path for me, I am going to detonate the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies!”

Fang Yuan nodded towards Chu Du as he attacked the formation, not wasting any time.

Chu Du and the rest were overjoyed, they waited for Fang Yuan and were willing to cooperate with him because of this.

Fang Yuan had dream path methods, as long as he detonated the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies and spread the dream realm, this formation would break without fail!

Fang Yuan’s arrival was soon found out by Yao Huang and the rest.

Yao Huang took a glance at Wu Yong and the rest, asking purposely: “Oh, Fang Yuan is here already?”

Wu Yong’s expression froze slightly, before he turned to Yao Huang: “Let Fang Yuan undergo the alliance agreement first, then tell him that I am willing to forgo our feuds and cooperate temporarily!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1729: Nine-nine Consecutive Unceasing Formation

Because of Yao Huang’s notice, Wu Yong was mentally prepared that Fang Yuan was coming.

He was an ambitious person, even though he had deep enmity with Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court was the common foe now. Dealing with Heavenly Court and preventing fate Gu from being fully repaired would give Wu Yong the greatest benefits, for this sake, he could put down his feuds and cooperate with Fang Yuan now.

“Friend Wu Yong is truly wise and clear headed.” Yao Huang praised.

1Immediately after, Chi Qu You and the rest also resounded: “Not just Alliance Leader Wu Yong, the super forces of Southern Border are also willing to resist Heavenly Court with Fang Yuan ignoring our past feuds.”

Fang Yuan had killed many Southern Border Gu Immortal captives for his own gains, but they were also making the same decision now for the sake of the big picture.

They were being logical, but the bigger reason was that this situation was truly dangerous, and Heavenly Court was very powerful!

Bing Sai Chuan not only told Yao Huang and Fang Yuan about Heavenly Court’s current situation, the information was also given to Wu Yong and the rest. This made the Southern Alliance immortals even clearer about their current situation.

Heavenly Court and Emperor City were hopeless already, the only chance of victory was here.

Only by using their time well and destroying the formation rapidly could they prevent the final batch of success dao marks from being sent to Heavenly Court, that would force them to hold the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention once again.

“Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, go destroy this formation.” At this time, Fang Yuan sent several Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies towards the formation.

In the current era, dream path was still underdeveloped, there were only several seeds, it had not grown yet.

Against the corrosion of the dream realm, almost all immortal Gu formations, regardless of ranks, could not block it. Unless it was an immortal formation possessing dream path Gu worms, or had relevant dream path methods to block that corrosion.

But right when the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies got close to the formation, a change occurred.

Immortal killer move — Shatter Dream!

Immortal killer move — Pure Dream Reality Seeker Transformation!

With the use of two killer moves, Fang Yuan’s Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies shattered at the first moment, they started to spread towards the surroundings.

Next, these shattered dream realms gathered into new Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies as they attacked Fang Yuan instead.

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, he was secretly shocked.

He did not expect that Heavenly Court would obtain such methods already.

Even though he knew it was a matter of time, he did not think it would be so fast.

But soon, his dejected feelings vanished, he regained his calm and icy temperament.

Thoughts appeared and clashed in his mind, he rapidly tried to think of a solution to this.

“They can actually reverse my control over the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies and the transformation? Is it because Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was captured and his memories were obtained by them?” Fang Yuan was approached by several Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies as he quickly retreated.

He had many powerful killer moves but against the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, they were quite lackluster.

This move was quite invincible in this world, back then, Heaven Overseeing Tower and even Duke Long and Purple Mountain True Monarch were forced to avoid the dream realm.

But thankfully, Fang Yuan was not helpless.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture, the time path clone was bathed in the light of wisdom, it continued to make deductions for him.

Even though Fang Yuan did not have shatter dream killer move to deal with the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, he was very familiar with the killer move pure dream reality seeker transformation.

Even Heavenly Court could not truly comprehend pure dream reality seeker transformation in just a few years. The likely reason was that they had obtained Spectral Soul’s memories.

Precisely so, Fang Yuan could use his original pure dream reality seeker killer move to retaliate and use the light of wisdom to create a counter killer move instead.

“The time path clone’s deductions will take some time.” Fang Yuan considered his countermeasures as he flew into the sky.

Several Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies chased him relentlessly, while a few went towards unlimited wind and the other Gu Immortals.

The Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies self-detonated as unlimited wind was greatly affected, its power was falling rapidly.

Prince Feng Xian and the rest had no choice but to dodge.

Fang Yuan contacted Wu Yong but his first sentence made Wu Yong shook: “Northern Plains’ Prince Feng Xian is a spy of Heavenly Court!”

Wu Yong attacked the formation as he asked: “Evidence?”

“My words themselves are evidence. In this situation, I have no reason to lie!” Fang Yuan immediately answered: “I do not have enough dream realms now, I need to gather more dream realms from Southern Border and create Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies to fight. Quickly inform the Gu Immortals there to support me.”

Fang Yuan and Heavenly Court were opposing enemies, his accusation towards Prince Feng Xian had no evidence, but it was like he said, his words were clear evidence.

After all, the world knew about his Spring Autumn Cicada.

This secret had once caused Fang Yuan great problems when it was exposed, but now, it gained Wu Yong’s trust.

At the crucial moment, Wu Yong did not hesitate, since he was working with Fang Yuan already, they might as well enter a deeper cooperation, Heavenly Court was the true enemy now!

“Alright, I will tell the others, you can go now.” At this moment, Wu Yong felt a complex emotion. He had never thought that one day, he would purposely give the orders to receive Fang Yuan’s arrival!

At this moment, Chi Qu You’s voice resounded in Wu Yong’s ears: “I have already deciphered this formation, quickly attack this place, it is the true formation core!”

Wu Yong was overjoyed, he forgot about Fang Yuan for a moment as he gave orders to attack the location that Chi Qu You pointed out, after destroying the formation core, this formation became much slower and duller.

Black Extremity Sun Ming Lu looked at them with great admiration and surprise.

After entering the formation, Chi Qu You had always outperformed him and comprehended the profundities of the formations using a shorter time, he had no choice but to feel admiration.

“We should follow Lord Chi Qu You’s arrangements, let’s assist these Southern Border allies.” Black Extremity put down his competitive spirit as he suggested towards Yao Huang who was beside him.

Yao Huang frowned but agreed.

Fang Yuan easily got rid of his pursuers, these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were inferior to Li Huang and Qing Ye.

Using Fixed Immortal Travel’s killer move, Fang Yuan went back to Southern Border and obtained a large number of dream realms, with them, he created more Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies and went for Heavenly Court’s formation.

In this situation, dealing with the enemy’s Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies was secondary, the main goal was to destroy the formation and stop Heavenly Court from repairing fate Gu.

Fang Yuan had never forgotten his true motive.

However, all the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies who got close to the formation shattered and were turned into enemies as they attacked Fang Yuan once again.

Furthermore, these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies could communicate, Fang Yuan’s side was suffering more losses than gains.

These situations started to make Fang Yuan realize: “It seems that Heavenly Court has already modified the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies!”

At this time, Wu Yong transmitted: “Fang Yuan, continue to send more Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies at the formation, we have already found many flaws of the formation.”

Fang Yuan thought in his mind: “It seems that Heavenly Court did not truly merge dream path methods with this formation. Each time they deal with my Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, they are also disrupting with the formation’s operations itself, causing flaws to form.”

These flaws were simply too obvious to Chi Qu You and Black Extremity. Using these chances, Wu Yong and the rest attacked with great results.

But this way, Fang Yuan’s dream realms would continuously be turned into Heavenly Court’s resources, they will gain an increasing number of Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

“It seems that I really need to unravel their Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies!” Fang Yuan’s heart sank slightly, this was a problem that he could not avoid resolving.

It was not that he did not want to enter the formation to help out, but there were already Chi Qu You, Wu Yong, and others, with his monopoly over dream path methods, he was much needed outside.

Fang Yuan started to fight against these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

At the same time, he transmitted to the rest: “There is an important thing now, Heavenly Court’s human path killer move, can anyone get rid of these white lights?”

Nobody answered.

In the end, Yi Hao Fang answered dejectedly: “Human path’s specialty is in support, because human path dao marks will not interrupt other paths’ dao marks or conflict with them. Unless we use human path methods that are at least rank eight, we cannot resolve this.”

2Yi Hao Fang cultivated transformation path but he was also very skilled at supporting others. This was because of his signature killer move — Human Transformation. With his words, Fang Yuan gave up on this aspect.

They could not unravel heroes among people, while Prince Feng Xian was also a huge threat.

Fang Yuan, Wu Yong, and the rest did not want to expose him for now. Killing a rank eight was too difficult.

They might as well pretend to not know and focus on breaking the formation instead, preventing Heavenly Court from succeeding was more important.

As time passed, Fang Yuan finally gained some breakthrough in his deductions.

He took a risk and captured an enemy Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body successfully, experimenting on it.

“This is actually a complete Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body! It has been modified entirely, it is now truly the eleventh extreme physique.” Fang Yuan sighed at his great gains.

He quickly modified pure dream reality seeker transformation as he started to learn Heavenly Court’s method.

As his Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies became modified again, they accompanied Wu Yong and Yao Huang, destroying many formations in succession.

“There are still more?” Yao Huang frowned deeply.

One formation after another formation, it was as if Heavenly Court had an unlimited number of formations.

This scene made Wu Yong and the rest feel a little dejected.

“Strange, how can Heavenly Court possibly set up so many immortal formations? Unless...” Black Extremity hesitated.

Chi Qu You pondered as he said: “I understand, this is the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation!”

“Nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, this name is quite familiar...” Wu Yong had a bad feeling.

Chi Qu You sighed: “Legend says that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable predicted Heavenly Court’s problem in the future and set up the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation. When Limitless Demon Venerable attacked Heavenly Court, he entered this formation and only broke out after destroying a hundred formations.”

“This formation is actually a giant compound formation, it can mix and match using its nine sub-formations, the true problem is that when we destroy a formation, Heavenly Court would be able to set up a new one at the core area, as long as our breaking speed is not as fast as their setting up speed, this will be endless.”

Chi Qu You’s words were like a cold bucket of water poured onto these immortals.

What should they do now?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1730: Situation

Wu Yong, Yao Huang and the rest were a little lost.

The nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation was created by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to deal with Limitless Demon Venerable. According to legends, Limitless Demon Venerable had to break a hundred formations before he escaped.

How could they possibly do the same?

And the most unsettling thing was, they needed to fight against time, once fate Gu recovers completely, there would be zero chance of victory.

“What do we do?” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu frowned.

“This is Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s arrangement, no wonder! No wonder!” Black Extremity realized at once.

Chi Qu You was very troubled: “Even if we gather all the formation path Gu Immortals in the world to deduce this formation, I’m afraid the chances of victory are slim. Moreover, we have less and less time now...”

This formation path great expert who had displayed great value in this battle as one of the Southern Alliance’s leaders had the intention of backing down.

Wu Yong suddenly laughed loudly.

“Alliance Leader, why are you laughing? Do you have any way to break this formation?” Chi Qu You asked in perplexity.

Wu Yong shook his head: “Even though I have no method to do so, I have already seen through Heavenly Court’s facade. Don’t worry too much, in my opinion, we are overestimating this difficulty.”

“Why? Think about it.”

“Back then, the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation was created by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. It was used by countless Heavenly Court Gu Immortals to resist Limitless Demon Venerable. But it was unable to succeed, Limitless Demon Venerable broke out in the end. Since it was broken before, this nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation had already been damaged once in a brutal manner.”

“Even if Heavenly Court had immense foundations and repaired all of the Immortal Gu, in the worst case scenario, we are facing the complete and even modified nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation. But the defending Gu Immortals are not all Heavenly Court members. In fact, there might be few Heavenly Court members here. Li Huang and Qing Ye are at Emperor City, Duke Long, Fairy Zi Wei, Yuan Qiong Du, Che Wei, and Cong Yan are fighting in Heavenly Court. Central Continent is being attacked by all four regions now, they were forced to set this formation here, it shows that they are low in manpower, their members are too sparsely distributed, they can only go on the defensive now.”

Wu Yong’s eyes were shining with bright light, he displayed overwhelming confidence and great wisdom in his grasp over the situation.

He continued: “And most importantly, they’ve already shown how weak they are! Earlier, Chen Yi and Bai Cang Shui came to fight us, Chen Yi was nearly beaten to death. Everyone, if this nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation is truly impenetrable, why would Chen Yi and Bai Cang Shui risk their lives? They must be stalling time for more formations to be set up.”

“Earlier, our attack caused them to take this huge risk. Right now, we have the help of our Northern Plains friends, this is a great opportunity. Even though this nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation is powerful, it still depends on who is controlling it, and who is attacking!”

“That’s right, that’s very logical!”

“Haha, indeed, the urgent matter now is to attack quickly. Heavenly Court’s defenses are not as strong as they seem.”

“I am ashamed, I was actually fear-stricken due to the reputation of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.”

Wu Yong’s words raised everyone’s morale, their offenses became stronger, they were more determined now.

Wu Yong smiled but he mentally sighed.

Everyone here was an elite, but they were actually intimidated by this nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, it was not because they were stupid, but because they were facing huge pressure.

Bing Sai Chuan notified many people of the situation, they worked together and attacked this formation, desperately holding onto this final hope, but this action had a weakness, it made everyone aware of the urgency of this situation.

If they were careless, they would incur huge losses as Heavenly Court retaliates.

This was Central Continent after all.

They did not have Fixed Immortal Travel’s killer move, even if they did, Heavenly Court had methods to counter them.

Thus, it was difficult for the immortals to retreat.

To play safe, now was the time to retreat. The longer they dragged it, the harder it would be to leave Central Continent.

“Eastern Sea’s and Western Desert’s Gu Immortals are probably already retreating. These two regions are in disunity, they are not like our Southern Border and Northern Plains which can gather the strength of many righteous path forces.”

“Now, it will depend on us, whether we can rapidly break the formation and intercept the final batch of success dao marks.”

“Sigh! We were still banking on Fang Yuan’s dream path methods earlier to deal with this formation. To think that Heavenly Court also had methods to control the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies. Was it because they captured Spectral Soul?”

“I wonder who the person inside this formation that stopped Fang Yuan is?”

Wu Yong continued to guess and evaluate the situation.

Inside the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, Feng Jiu Ge had a pale expression but he smiled warmly.

“Huang Er, good job!” He looked at Feng Jin Huang as he smiled, feeling extremely proud.

The one who stopped Fang Yuan was none other than Feng Jiu Ge’s daughter — Feng Jin Huang!

Feng Jin Huang pursed her lips as she said: “Father, I do not dare to claim credit, I could use the Immortal Gu and activate an immortal killer move because of this formation’s help.”

“Even so, resisting Fang Yuan is an incredible feat, Feng Jin Huang, you have already done an amazing job for Heavenly Court.” Bai Cang Shui smiled.

Chen Yi nodded as he looked at Feng Jiu Ge and Feng Jin Huang: “She truly takes after her father.”

Feng Jiu Ge saved his life while Feng Jin Huang was shockingly talented, this made Chen Yi feel a sense of gratitude and admiration towards this pair of father and daughter.

Heavenly Court.

A round of ferocious attacks had ended.

Duke Long’s rapidly breathing slowed down.

He looked at the Seven Extreme Desolation, which was covered in injuries but remained standing, as he snorted coldly.

“I did not destroy it after all. Is it because of my injuries...”

Normally speaking, Duke Long with the support of heavenly dragon’s last stand had incredible power, he could definitely defeat the Seven Extreme Desolation. Even if this ancient battle formation was in its strongest form in history.

But Duke Long was restrained by his injuries.

These were mostly old injuries that were sustained earlier when Duke Long snatched Dragon Palace, he was hurt by the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

“Without these injuries, I would have destroyed the Seven Extreme Desolation already. My estimations were slightly off, but as time passes, it will not obstruct me anymore!”

Duke Long snorted coldly in his mind.

Earlier, he ignored his own injuries to fight, but now, he had to face the Seven Extreme Desolation.

The contest between experts usually depended on minor details like this.

Even though Duke Long could suppress the Seven Extreme Desolation, he was initially stuck at a passive spot, but even now, he could not gather enough strength to destroy it.

After an intense eruption of attacks, Duke Long’s offenses became weaker, he started to move around.

Bing Sai Chuan and the rest found some relief, Duke Long was giving them too much pressure.

Fairy Zi Wei and the rest had complex expressions. More and more Heavenly Court members learned that Duke Long’s time was almost up. This was the final battle of his life! He was like a firework, he could only shine right before he fades away for good, after this battle, Heavenly Court would lose this legendary great expert!

Suddenly, Fairy Zi Wei received Duke Long’s transmission.

“Fairy Zi Wei, how is the situation?”

Fairy Zi Wei quickly answered.

“Emperor City was destroyed, countless mortals died... Li Huang and Qing Ye are rushing to Infallible blessed land... over at Hidden Dragon Cave, the Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals are fighting intensely as well...”

Duke Long muttered to himself for a while before he said to Fairy Zi Wei: “Very good, I was not wrong about you. Thanks to your arrangements and planning, we managed to secure all three locations. Emperor City was destroyed by a natural disaster, it was not your fault.”

Duke Long did not stint on his praise towards Fairy Zi Wei. He knew that although he was putting up an incredible fight now, it was thanks to Fairy Zi Wei who kept control of the situation from the background.

Fairy Zi Wei felt even more admiration towards Duke Long, she said sincerely: “This was all thanks to Lord Duke Long, you obtained Dragon Palace. Who would think that Dragon Palace actually contains the rank eight dream path Immortal Gu — Dream Token, it allows Dream Token to enslave rank eight Gu Immortals! With

Zhang Yin and the rest, our weakness in manpower was eliminated. Lord Duke Long even sustained huge injuries to conceal the identities of Zhang Yin, Granny Rong, and the rest. This allowed our plan in Eastern Sea to succeed, otherwise, if these Eastern Sea rank eights joined any of the three battlefields, we would be in trouble.”

Duke Long: “That’s right, I was also surprised by the existence of Dream Token.”

He thought back to the battle in Eastern Sea.

Zhang Yin and the rest appeared together, it was a surprise to Duke Long. They were either lone immortals or demonic cultivators, they were lofty and proud rank eight existences, to think that they would be working together despite having no relationship in usual times.

Duke Long became more suspicious at the later parts of the battle.

Zhang Yin and the other immortals trusted each other deeply during the fight!

And what truly made Duke Long confident of his guess was that after Duke Long defeated the four Gu Immortals, Dragon Palace flew away. The four returned and did not chase after Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace, instead, they continued to attack Duke Long.

If they all had their own intentions and wanted Dragon Palace, how could they stay to deal with Duke Long in such a manner?

Normally speaking, with Duke Long’s battle strength, these four would chase after Dragon Palace. After all, Dragon Palace had flown away with great commotion, there were possibly other Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals too. By fighting Duke Long, it seemed like they were helping Dragon Palace stall for time. (Refer to Chapter 1689)

Duke Long had sensed acutely that these four Gu Immortals were related to Dragon Palace. After he obtained Dragon Palace and refined it, his guesses were confirmed.

COMMENT

Because he was prepared for it, he did not let Zhang Yin and the rest get exposed. If they were exposed then, the other Eastern Sea Gu Immortals might not die anyway, the main matter for Heavenly Court now was to repair fate Gu.

Thinking about it, Duke Long instructed Fairy Zi Wei: “Pay more attention to Hidden Dragon Cave, we cannot be careless. The five regional walls are vanishing, the regions are becoming one, by then, there will be chaos and huge battles, Di Zang Sheng’s battle strength will reach a terrifying level, he will be on par with me.”

Towards Di Zang Sheng, Duke Long had a clearer understanding than Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei immediately understood Duke Long’s intent.

The situation was turning more stable now, Infallible blessed land, Heavenly Court, and Hidden Dragon Cave were under Heavenly Court’s control.

Li Huang, Qing Ye, and the Immortal Gu Houses were about to reach Infallible blessed land.

The only possible problem was Hidden Dragon Cave.

Duke Long was not afraid of Dragon Palace changing owners, he placed Dragon Palace there as a trap to begin with. The design of Dragon Palace was such that only dragonmen could control it. It was impossible to work around this limitation, unless they took apart Dragon Palace. Even most transformation path methods were not effective.

Duke Long was afraid that Dragon Palace would destabilize and release Di Zang Sheng.

Di Zang Sheng hated Heavenly Court and Duke Long immensely. With a boost in strength, it would definitely take revenge.

Duke Long was going to die soon but Di Zang Sheng was virtually undying.

If Fang Yuan and the rest made use of this battle strength, there would be huge problems!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1731: Five Regional Formation

Infallible blessed land battlefield.

The tornado resembling a heavenly pillar whipped up a storm as it crashed towards Heavenly Court’s formation.

Prince Feng Xian and Ba Shi Ba, who were outside, stared at the horizon.

There, two specks of light tore through the sky, the figures of two rank eight Gu Immortals were shown gradually.

They were Li Huang and Qing Ye.

“We finally arrived!”

“Not bad, we were not late.”

Li Huang and Qing Ye had finally arrived.

“Where is that scoundrel Fang Yuan?” Li Huang’s eyes shined with orange-red light, he tried to investigate.

He was filled with grudge towards Fang Yuan.

Earlier when Fang Yuan retreated, he purposely chose the opposite direction of Infallible blessed land, he made Li Huang and the others go very far away.

After that, Fang Yuan found a chance to use Fixed Immortal Travel and arrived at Infallible blessed land, Li Huang and the rest were left in the dust.

Central Continent’s Heavenly Court did not have Beacon Towers, Li Huang and Qing Ye had to rush to Infallible blessed land through a very long distance.

“They should be inside the formation.” Qing Ye responded, his gaze swept past the formation and landed on the unlimited wind.

“This killer move is very strong! It is very threatening to our formation, we should get rid of it.”

“This Wu Yong has such a killer move and farewell friend wind, if possible, we should try to kill him! If he returns to Southern Border, he will be a huge problem for Heavenly Court in the future!”

Li Huang and Qing Ye discussed before they changed directions, moving towards the unlimited wind killer move.

Prince Feng Xian and Ba Shi Ba had sensed them already, they also rushed there.

“Go.” Prince Feng Xian shouted as he waved his sleeves, hundreds of fireballs blew out.

“You’re using fire to attack me? Laughable.” Li Huang snorted and did not dodge, verdant sun flame cloak was blazing on his back.

Prince Feng Xian’s fireballs landed on Li Huang but did not cause any damage, it even increased the power of verdant sun flame cloak.

Prince Feng Xian’s expression did not change, he pointed at Li Huang.

Whoosh.

The flames on Li Huang turned purple instantly. The purple flames infiltrated the orange-red verdant sun flame cloak as it tried to disintegrate the defensive killer move.

Li Huang’s expression changed.

Prince Feng Xian wanted to keep him busy, he charged towards Li Huang.

The two fought in the sky, causing blazing flames to emerge and scorch the earth, the temperature of the battlefield was rising.

Ba Shi Ba watched Prince Feng Xian’s battle as he thought: “Hmph, this Prince Feng Xian is still acting, he is really well concealed.”

Fang Yuan’s side left Prince Feng Xian and Ba Shi Ba outside to guard the formation.

Ba Shi Ba had already been informed of Prince Feng Xian’s identity through Wu Yong, but he pretended to not know.

It was like how Wu Yong and Fang Yuan predicted, unless it was necessary, Prince Feng Xian did not want to expose his identity. The truth was, Heavenly Court would rather make some sacrifices than to expose Prince Feng Xian. During the five regions chaotic war, he would have more value.

Prince Feng Xian and Li Huang were fire path rank eights, the two fought in the sky before fighting on the ground, they dyed the sky red, they made rivers dry up, the ground cracked from their attacks, clouds vaporized, countless lifeforms fled for their lives.

Ba Shi Ba and Qing Ye cultivated rule path and dark path respectively. Even though their fight did not cause as much of a commotion as Li Huang and Prince Feng Xian, it was much more ruthless.

Li Huang knew about Prince Feng Xian’s true identity, they were just acting even though the commotion was huge.

But Ba Shi Ba and Qing Ye were true enemies.

Ba Shi Ba shrieked in a strange tone as many profound lights stabbed or slashed towards Qing Ye like blades or swords.

Three consecutive hits!

Four consecutive hits!

Five consecutive hits!

...

Each profound light had moderate power, but when they landed on Qing Ye, the damage accumulated rapidly.

This was the consecutive attack method that Ba Shi Ba trained in his life.

This kind of rule path supplementary killer move could allow a certain killer move to gain a huge boost in power.

The condition was that Ba Shi Ba had to use that killer move and could not change to other methods.

Qing Ye was forced to retreat gradually, sweat appeared on his forehead: “I cannot let him continue, once he reaches eighteen consecutive hits, my defenses will fail.”

Qing Ye’s activated an immortal killer move, his figure vanished and turned into darkness.

In the sky, it was like a blob of ink had landed in water and expanded endlessly.

Ba Shi Ba saw this and hesitated: “This is likely Qing Ye’s signature killer move — Expanding Night Sky.”

Both sides had information about each other, Ba Shi Ba and Qing Ye had a certain level of understanding of each other.

Expanding night sky was an immortal battlefield killer move, it was quite special. Normal immortal battlefields were formed after some preparation. Meanwhile, expanding night sky would continue to increase in size and range, this move had no limit in theory.

As long as Qing Ye had enough time, he could even spread this immortal battlefield killer move to cover the whole of white heaven!

Ba Shi Ba flew backwards.

He thought about it and decided to avoid the enemy.

Expanding night sky was an immortal battlefield, if Ba Shi Ba went in, his rule path would be weakened by the dark path environment.

Of course, the bigger reason was Prince Feng Xian.

Ba Shi Ba knew that Prince Feng Xian was a traitor, if he went into the immortal battlefield, he would not be able to see anything outside. Qing Ye might even let Prince Feng Xian and Li Huang into the battlefield to deal with Ba Shi Ba.

By then, Ba Shi Ba would have to fight three enemies, it would be dangerous.

The battle of two pairs of rank eights went into a short deadlock.

A moment later, many Immortal Gu Houses appeared on the horizon.

Among them were Frost Dragon Manor and Wind Sweeping Building.

These Immortal Gu Houses were originally protecting Emperor City, now that Emperor City was history, the Immortal Gu Houses carried all their Gu Immortals and arrived here as reinforcements.

Frost Dragon Manor was at the front, it started to shine in a light blue aura.

The light formed into a dragon shape, it was a hornless dragon!

The light blue hornless dragon opened its mouth as countless hailstones shot towards Ba Shi Ba.

Ba Shi Ba’s speed fell drastically, he snorted coldly, avoiding Qing Ye as he used his killer move on Frost Dragon Manor.

Boom boom boom!

Frost Dragon Manor continued to take a beating, its walls were cracking, tiles were sent flying.

As it resisted, the second light blue hornless dragon formed, it coiled around the first one before coiling around the entire Frost Dragon Manor.

Frost Dragon Manor’s defense surged as a result, while the light blue hornless dragon opened its mouth and shot out a tattered mysterious light.

“This Immortal Gu House has the power to expel my killer move’s damage!” Ba Shi Ba’s expression sank a little, he could not destroy this Immortal Gu House in a short time, if they continued, expanding night sky would trap him, he had to retreat and pull some distance now.

At this time, Wind Sweeping Building entered the battlefield as well.

It did not assist Qing Ye or Li Huang, instead, it directly entered the unlimited wind killer move reaching towards the sky.

“Good wind, good wind, give me some time, I will be able to make this wind my own!” The current generation Wind Sweeping Building Lord laughed loudly.

Due to Wind Sweeping Building’s interference, unlimited wind started to weaken again.

More and more Immortal Gu Houses joined the battlefield, Fang Yuan’s side was getting more perilous.

“Hold on, we’re coming!”

At the crucial moment, a crack formed in the Heavenly Court formation, many Immortal Gu Houses flew out, there were Southern Border’s Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, Great Space Temple, Bay Pavilion, Unfixed Manor, as well as Northern Plains’ Fingerprint Bridge, Demonic Ape Hall, and Minor Sun Building.

With these seven Immortal Gu Houses helping, Ba Shi Ba’s pressure fell greatly.

Both sides entered a chaotic battle, Immortal Gu Houses rampaged and exchanged killer moves, intense fireworks that had dazzling colors were created, at once, the battle was stuck in a deadlock yet again.

Within the formation.

Wu Yong and the rest had dark expressions.

Even though they opened a crack in time and sent out the Immortal Gu Houses, stabilizing the situation outside, they had also expended their trump card in advance.

The situation was getting more disadvantageous.

Prince Feng Xian was a problem, Heavenly Court’s battlefield was also hopeless, it all depended on whether Fang Yuan and the rest could destroy the formation now.

“At our speed, the chance of victory is becoming increasingly slim.” Fang Yuan sighed as he asked: “Is Tao Zhu’s five regional true inheritance able to deal with this formation?”

Back then, he had set a trap in the five regional mountain range to target the Southern Border and Heavenly Court Gu Immortals. During the battle, Wu Yong destroyed the entire five regional mountain range and accidentally awakened Tao Zhu’s will, he had a chance to inherit the five regional true inheritance.

Fang Yuan had to retreat at that time, so the five regional true inheritance ended up in the hands of the Southern Border Gu Immortals.

According to Fang Yuan’s deductions, the five regional true inheritance could mimic the five region’s regional walls. Within the regional walls, Gu Immortals would be suppressed, they would face a backlash whenever they used any immortal killer move.

Be it Immortal Gu House or immortal formation, they were immortal killer moves in essence.

Fang Yuan thought about it, if they could use the methods in the five regional true inheritance against Heavenly Court’s formation, it might have some effect.

Wu Yong and Chi Qu You looked at each other, Wu Yong said: “I obtained the five regional true inheritance, there is indeed a method to create the five regional walls in the true inheritance, but...”

Chi Qu You added: “But this method uses the earth veins to set up the formation, it is very troublesome and complicated.”

Tao Zhu was able to create the five regional mountain range back then because he used the earth vein and a formation.

After Fang Yuan left the battlefield, Wu Yong obtained the five regional true inheritance, but he found that the essence of it was the five regional formation.

Wu clan was not proficient in formation path, Wu Yong thus worked together with Chi Qu You, as the latter also learned about the profundity of the five regional formation.

COMMENT

“Do we really need the earth vein to set up the five regional formation?” Fang Yuan frowned deeply: “Wait, I heard that not long ago, Hou clan’s Gu Immortal obtained a wild earth vein Immortal Gu from the Earth Trench? Can we use that Gu in place of the earth vein?”

The immortals heard this as they shook.

Wu Yong and Chi Qu You looked at each other, sighing at Fang Yuan’s quick thinking.

Chi Qu You shook his head: “The truth is, I have already obtained earth vein Immortal Gu through a transaction with Hou clan. But to use this earth vein Immortal Gu in place of the actual earth vein, we will need to modify the five regional formation. I have been trying and have made some progress, but I am still far from success.”

Often, Gu Immortals took years to modify one immortal killer move.

Even though Chi Qu You had high formation path attainment level, his wisdom path methods were lacking, he could not make rapid progress.

Fang Yuan’s eyes flickered with bright light: “This five regional formation is likely our breakthrough chance! Chi Qu You, even though you cannot do it alone, with me and Black Extremity, there is a chance, let’s try.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1732: Calamity Luck Altar’s Counterattack

Infallible blessed land battlefield.

“What are they trying to do?” Chen Yi and the rest discovered the irregular behavior of Fang Yuan’s group.

Feng Jiu Ge was still pale, he sized up the situation and frowned: “They are actually setting up a formation!”

“Formation within a formation?” Bai Cang Shui snorted: “They are simply underestimating us.”

Arranging a formation within a formation was very difficult, and this difficulty was further raised when trying to arrange the formation within an enemy’s formation.

1Different from Immortal Gu Houses, immortal formations had requirements towards their surrounding environment. The surrounding natural dao marks would have a great influence on most immortal formations.

Heavenly Court’s side naturally would not let Fang Yuan’s group do as they wished. They immediately activated the formation, waves after waves of attacks charged towards the newly created formation base.

"You wish!"

"With us here, you can set up the formation with peace of mind."

Wu Yong, Yao Huang and others guarded the four directions around the formation base, blocking Heavenly Court's offenses.

Within the formation base, Chi Qu You, Black Extremity, and Fang Yuan were setting up a formation with urgency.

"Three hundred and sixty fire crow Gu have been placed!" Black Extremity wiped the sweat on his forehead.

"We are still lacking forty-four rank five sole blade Gu, when are they coming?" Chi Qu You spoke while contacting other Gu Immortals, treasure yellow heaven had become their most effective form of goods transportation.

Fang Yuan's body shook slightly, the Immortal Gu in his hand scattered down like rain that caused splattering noises.

Several breaths later, he let out a breath of air and stopped his movement: "Rank six instant chain Immortal Gu has been placed properly."

Chi Qu You and Black Extremity took a quick glance at him while thinking: "Unbelievable! Fang Yuan's wisdom path and formation path attainment levels are so high. Not only did he deduce a completely new five regional formation in such a short period of time, he is also setting up the immortal formation with such fluid movement."

Fang Yuan's formation path attainment level was at grandmaster which was lower than Chi Qu You's and Black Extremity's, but he had plenty of experience in setting up formations.

Self cleansing formation, Omni-directional Travel ancient battle formation, dragon scale sea's food path immortal formation, coiling thread Gu formation, immemorial year beast fishing formation, flood discharge formation, self will heaven sealing formation, year essence pool, and so on had been personally set up by him.

Thus, although it was his first time setting up the five regional formation, he was not overwhelmed but worked with great proficiency.

"If I had to set up the formation alone, it would take a lot of time. But with Chi Qu You and Black Extremity's help, we can set up five regional formation quickly. We need to finish this quickly!" Fang Yuan was fully focused and made use of every second.

Heavenly Court battlefield.

"Li Huang, Qing Ye, and others have already reached Infallible blessed land. Wu Yong's unlimited wind is suppressed by Wind Sweeping Building. Prince Feng Xian's identity has not been exposed. But I don't understand the intention of Fang Yuan's group in trying to set up a formation within a formation. Additionally, our reinforcements are about to reach Hidden Dragon Cave." Fairy Zi Wei reported the situation to Duke Long.

Duke Long responded while fighting: "Although Prince Feng Xian's identity is not exposed currently, we cannot rule out the case that Fang Yuan knows about it but kept silent. You need to pay attention to this point, let Chen Yi and the rest take note of the situation and be prepared to help out Prince Feng Xian at any time."

2Fairy Zi Wei: “Yes.”

Knowing that the situation was still in their grasp, Duke Long concentrated on Seven Extreme Desolation again.

“It is time.” Duke Long clenched his claws, feeling the vast force within his body.

Immortal killer move — Heavenly Dragon’s Last Stand!

After using this killer move, his lifespan could only decrease and could not be increased. At the same time, it would provide Duke Long with increasing battle strength as time passed!

In a short period of time, Duke Long’s battle strength had soared once again and reached an astonishing level.

Roar!

A dragon roar resounded as purple-gold dragon-shaped qi erupted.

Boom—!

Seven Extreme Desolation simply could not react in time, it only saw Duke Long suddenly disappear into thin air, before it flew away like a meteor stuck by boundless force.

Seven Extreme Desolation was sent flying and crashed into the qi wall violently, countless cracks appeared on the giant’s body.

“Damn it, his speed increased again!”

“All our investigative killer moves are blocked by Duke Long, we are simply unable to catch his trace.”

“We will be caught in a passive state if this goes on.”

“If this continues any longer, Duke Long’s battle strength will start suppressing us completely.”

“In that case, let’s use offense as defense, we will be able to hit Duke Long as long as we attack in every direction with our killer moves!”

The Seven Big Dipper Immortals conversed quickly, the Seven Extreme Desolation giant rose and was about to step into the battlefield again.

Duke Long suddenly appeared above the giant.

“Still want to stand up?” Duke Long gave a ferocious smile while slamming his right dragon claw down.

Boom—!

The dragon claw was tiny like an ant compared to the giant Seven Extreme Desolation, but it inflicted an enormous injury on the giant.

As air currents surged, the Seven Extreme Desolation giant’s head was smashed into paste. The headless giant was forced down to the ground, creating a human shaped crater.

Dust and stones were sent flying as the surroundings shook.

“Ah...” Duke Long slowly retracted his claw while hovering in the air, letting out a satisfied grunt.

Renewed strength spread throughout Duke Long’s body again, his muscles expanded once again and bones grew rapidly. His dragon scales became bigger and tougher, his crown-like dragon horns turned increasingly ferocious as spikes extended everywhere.

Duke Long’s whole body, that had already surpassed normal people’s height, expanded once again. A thatched hut’s ceiling would probably only reach his waist.

His long purple hair had been soft and elegant, but now each strand was thick and strong and reached until his feet. Purple-gold lightning flickered in between his hair.

His dragon tail grew longer, it had been less than ten feet before but now it was tens of feet long.

“Duke Long, go and die!” A Northern Plains’ rank eight suddenly appeared behind Duke Long. He was determined to succeed as he smashed a killer move which he had prepared for a long time at Duke Long’s back.

Snap.

In just an instant, Duke Long’s dragon tail whipped and sent this rank eight Gu Immortal flying.

Guh.

The Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal coughed out mouthfuls of blood, his spine was instantly broken and his organs were displaced. The most fatal thing was the backlash from his own immortal killer move which sent him to the verge of death.

At the next moment, three Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals made their move at the same time, three killer moves struck Duke Long in succession.

“We hit him!”

But the joy on these three Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals’ faces froze immediately.

As dust dissipated, Duke Long could be seen standing upright. Purple-gold dragon scales that flickered with metallic luster covered his whole body.

There was not even a scar.

“What?!”

“We had already calculated it, our three killer moves coordinated with each other and increased each other’s power!”

“What kind of defense is this!”

The three Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals were shaken before they felt uneasy and retreated immediately.

“Are you scratching my back?” Duke Long slowly turned around, his expressionless dragon eyes stared at the three retreating Gu Immortals.

2The three Gu Immortals immediately felt alerts ringing in their mind, an intense sense of danger suffocated them as if a mountain was pressing on them!

“Duke Long, don’t try to leave, we are your opponent!”

The Seven Extreme Desolation giant had obtained a brief respite and stood up once again. Their smashed head had already mostly recovered.

“Hmph, Seven Big Dipper Immortals, you are no longer able to obstruct me.” Duke Long sneered as he gave an indifferent glance to Seven Extreme Desolation before moving his gaze to Calamity Luck Altar.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s call of the ancient killer move was reliant on Calamity Luck Altar. As long as Calamity Luck Altar was bombarded and dealt a certain amount of damage, call of the ancient would be destroyed.

Without the interference of these past Northern Plains experts, Heavenly Court members would immediately have the advantage in numbers and Longevity Heaven would no longer have strength to retaliate.

Inside Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan’s forehead was filled with sweat.

“Damn it, fate Gu has recovered a little again, the Northern Plains experts from call of the ancient are greatly weakened.”

“On the contrary, Heavenly Court members are being strengthened by the human path killer move.”

“Most importantly, Duke Long cannot be stopped, his battle strength has already greatly surpassed the realm of rank eight, even the human path killer move has no amplification effect on him...”

While Bing Sai Chuan was thinking, Duke Long had once again smashed down on Seven Extreme Desolation.

After getting rid of the hindrance, Duke Long directly charged towards Calamity Luck Altar.

“Huff!” Bing Sai Chuan breathed out heavily as a resolute light shone in his eyes: “This is our final attempt!”

Boom—!

Calamity Luck Altar suddenly erupted with an extremely intense light that resembled the sun.

All the Gu Immortals had no choice but to shut their eyes. Even Duke Long had to squint his eyes.

He was puzzled: “Bing Sai Chuan is activating Calamity Luck Altar’s ability so intensely, is he not afraid of affecting call of the ancient?”

Call of the ancient was only attached to Calamity Luck Altar, this time path killer move and Calamity Luck Altar conflicted with each other.

Calamity Luck Altar did not use its powerful abilities so that it could sustain call of the ancient. So it was surprising to see Bing Sai Chuan suddenly activating its ability.

The intense light of luck path temporarily obstructed everyone.

Within the light, Calamity Luck Altar was like a beast let out of its cage as it ferociously smashed towards the refinement path formation.

“Quick, stop him!” Fairy Zi Wei cried out.

“Hmm?” Duke Long discovered to his surprise that call of the ancient was still working.

The River of Time phantom image was already imprinted in the battlefield. Although it was dissipating, its speed of dissipation was extremely slow and could clearly last for a long period of time.

“Red Lotus!” Immediately, Duke Long was surprised and furious.

1He realized he had fallen into Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s scheme.

His understanding of call of the ancient came from the other half of its set, the killer move support of the future.

Back then, in the battle with Red Lotus Demon Venerable, he had attacked Red Lotus many times and disrupted support of the future.

“Master, you are very perceptive, you actually saw through this move’s flaw.” In his memories, Red Lotus Demon Venerable was bleeding but still had a smile on his face and radiance in his eyes.

“This defiant disciple, he said it intentionally! There is also this Bing Sai Chuan, he is truly crafty, he could move freely but purposely restrained himself.” Duke Long was furious, this had happened too suddenly and caught him off-guard.

Calamity Luck Altar had already prepared the move for a long time so it erupted with shocking might.

The Heavenly Court members were strengthened by heroes among people and were suppressing Northern Plains’ immortals, unknowingly, the tight defense line had become dispersed.

Looking at Calamity Luck Altar’s charge, several Heavenly Court members activated immortal killer moves without dodging.

But under the intense light of luck path, most of their killer moves failed miserably and they suffered from powerful backlash.

Only a few killer moves activated successfully and struck Calamity Luck Altar, but were not even able to move Calamity Luck Altar.

Calamity Luck Altar kept on charging straight, heavily injuring several Heavenly Court Gu Immortals in its path, it collided with the refinement path formation like a crashing meteor.

Boom!

The refinement path formation suffered serious damage and was mostly shattered.

Heaven Overseeing Tower’s peak was finally exposed to plain sight.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1733: Giant Sun’s Greatness

Plop.

Yuan Qiong Du, who had been in charge of the restoration work, blacked out and fell to the ground.

He had already been injured before and with the backlash from the damage to the refinement path formation, he immediately fainted.

Without him, although success dao marks were still arriving in small portions, fate Gu’s recovery was immediately paused.

Even Cong Yan was affected.

This rank eight Gu Immortal had collaborated with Che Wei to defend against Northern Plains’ Bull Demon and Five Elements Grandmaster.

Cong Yan had already been prepared when Bull Demon and Five Elements Grandmaster attacked the refinement path Gu formation, he bore the damage done to the refinement path formation with his own body.

Now with Calamity Luck Altar destroying most of the refinement path formation, Cong Yan also had to endure a large portion of the damage.

Cong Yan was dizzy, his ears kept on buzzing and his seven orifices were bleeding, he had almost collapsed to the ground.

Fortunately, Che Wei provided timely assistance and protected him.

“How is your condition?” Che Wei defended against the joint attacks of Bull Demon and Five Elements Grandmaster while asking.

“I’m still, still not dead...” Cong Yan coughed out a mouthful of blood.

“Go reinforce them quickly!”

“Who can reconstruct the refinement path formation?”

“Yuan Qiong Du had been in charge of restoring fate Gu, others won’t be able to continue the work within a short period, it is better to wake him first!”

The light of luck path started dissipating, Heavenly Court’s immortals charged towards it like they had gone crazy.

“We failed to destroy it completely...” Inside Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan’s gaze shined coldly.

His gaze turned and he immediately gave a firm order: “Bull Demon, Five Elements Grandmaster, return immediately.”

The light of luck path could not last for long and was dissipating quickly. The Heavenly Court immortals were all charging over, it would definitely be dangerous for Bull Demon and Five Elements Grandmaster if they were to remain outside.

Previously, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had been afraid of the refinement path Gu formation not being able to support many Gu Immortals and so had not reinforced Cong Yan and Che Wei.

Bull Demon and Five Elements Grandmaster understood the situation and quickly retreated to Calamity Luck Altar.

Che Wei was helpless and could only watch.

Bull Demon entered Calamity Luck Altar with a worried expression: “Flower Lady is still trapped in Heaven Overseeing Tower, the situation there is unknown.”

Bing Sai Chuan nodded, his expression was resolute: “We shall completely destroy this refinement path formation and then rescue...”

Boom!

Bing Sai Chuan had yet to finish speaking when Calamity Luck Altar shook intensely, the three inside the altar could not stand stably and shook along with the altar.

A gigantic figure had ruthlessly stepped on Calamity Luck Altar.

Because of this action, most of Calamity Luck Altar sank and got buried in the ground.

It was Duke Long!

“With me here, this is as far as you will go.” Duke Long’s expression was solemn, his gaze was cold. The anger from earlier had completely turned into ruthlessness, his killing intent pervaded the air and suffocated others.

Boom boom boom!

Duke Long started punching Calamity Luck Altar.

A torrent of fists rained down on Calamity Luck Altar like a storm.

Calamity Luck Altar shook endlessly, sinking down into the ground inch by inch. Cracks quickly appeared on Calamity Luck Altar’s surface and started expanding before forming holes.

Large amount of Gu worms died. Bing Sai Chuan immediately distributed the work, he started preparing a killer move to retaliate, Bull Demon was put in charge of repairing Calamity Luck Altar, and Five Elements Grandmaster, who specialized in formation path, was given the work of deducing the half-destroyed refinement path formation.

“The speed of destruction is too fast, I have no time to repair Calamity Luck Altar at all!” Several breaths later, Bull Demon shouted.

Five Elements Grandmaster’s head was soaked with sweat as he tried to deduce the formation with all his strength.

Bing Sai Chuan said through clenched teeth: “Persevere!”

Duke Long was extremely powerful, the rank eight Calamity Luck Altar, an Immortal Gu House created by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable personally, was already unable to endure Duke Long’s endless punches.

“Rise—!” Bing Sai Chuan shouted, Calamity Luck Altar once again erupted with piercing light as it flew towards the sky.

Duke Long who had been punching continuously felt a powerful force coming from Calamity Luck Altar.

“Go down!!” Duke Long shouted, he raised his fists above his head and smashed down like a giant hammer.

Immortal killer move — World Shaking Dragon Hammer!

With a loud bang, Calamity Luck Altar which had just ascended was smashed down like a ball.

A huge amount of Gu worms died, their carcasses flying everywhere. A large hole was smashed open on the surface of Calamity Luck Altar from which one could see Bing Sai Chuan.

Bing Sai Chuan could not hide his shock.

Duke Long’s strength had already surpassed his wildest imagination.

Even Heavenly Court’s members were dumbfounded.

“Everyone, charge!” At this moment, the Northern Plains Gu Immortals who were created by call of the ancient rushed to reinforce.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals did not dodge or evade, meeting the Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals head-on.

Chaotic battle erupted once again.

And in the rear of this chaotic battle, Duke Long was continuously bombarding Calamity Luck Altar.

Behind Duke Long was the refinement path formation that was being repaired hurriedly.

Seven Extreme Desolation fought and killed, finally paving a path of blood as it arrived before Duke Long.

“Calamity Luck Altar cannot defend against Duke Long on its own.” Bing Sai Chuan had to acknowledge this fact.

After obtaining the reinforcement of Seven Extreme Desolation, Bing Sai Chuan finally had a chance to catch a breather, with some difficulty, he manipulated Calamity Luck Altar and fought Duke Long together with Seven Extreme Desolation.

Immortal killer move — Spiraling Dragon Fang!

Duke Long opened his mouth as his teeth flew out.

One hundred sharp teeth expanded along with the wind, becoming a group of snow-white dragon fang blades that slashed at Calamity Luck Altar.

Chink chink chink!

The dragon fang blades struck Calamity Luck Altar and produced intense sounds like the collision of hundreds of weapons.

Calamity Luck Altar was like a hut in the storm, unable to even retaliate.

Duke Long sneered. In just a short moment, teeth grew again in his mouth.

They flew out once again, turning into snow-white blades that shrouded Calamity Luck Altar and Seven Extreme Desolation.

Soon, Seven Extreme Desolation became heavily damaged while Calamity Luck Altar was filled with holes.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Claw Strike!

Immortal killer move — Chaotic Dragon Fist!

Fist shadows flew in all directions and claw marks appeared everywhere. Seven Extreme Desolation’s head was destroyed again and again, while Calamity Luck Altar was in ruins and Bull Demon was simply unable to repair it.

Immortal killer move — Nine Dragons Protection!

Nine huge purple-gold dragon shadows coiled around Duke Long.

It was not that Seven Extreme Desolation and Calamity Luck Altar did not retaliate, but their attacks were all blocked by nine dragons protection.

The situation was obvious; Duke Long had an extremely huge dominance.

As time continued to pass, Longevity Heaven’s side would definitely fail.

“You have the guts to invade my Heavenly Court, you are going to pay for it with your lives!” Duke Long snorted.

“What are you still resisting for? You have no hope left.” Duke Long stepped and activated a killer move, pushing down the whole Calamity Luck Altar into the ground, he then punched with both hands and sent Seven Extreme Desolation flying far away.

“I already told you, this is as far as you can possibly go.”

“You will all fail, Heavenly Court will remain invincible for all eternity!”

Duke Long’s voice reverberated throughout the whole battlefield, stirring everyone’s hearts.

“What methods do you still have? Use them all, I will personally send you into the abyss of despair.” He spoke slowly and steadily, his expressionless dragon eyes and cruel voice gave chills to others.

Bing Sai Chuan was in a miserable state, Calamity Luck Altar could no longer provide comprehensive defense, he was filled with injuries.

This was the result of spiraling dragon fangs.

The situation was getting increasingly dangerous, but the light in his eyes had never been extinguished.

He still held hope.

In the depths of his mind, there was a memory which he would never forget.

“This is Eighty-Eight True Yang Building? So amazing! It is truly worthy of being lord’s creation.” Bing Sai Chuan stood beside Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and said with reverence.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled, he had a satisfied expression: “With this Immortal Gu House, all my children will become strong.”

“Lord, you are truly considerate.” Bing Sai Chuan praised.

“However.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable changed his tone: “I feel more anticipation towards the time it collapses.”

“Wha... what?”

“I created this building so that it would collapse one day. Bing Sai Chuan, you are a time path Gu Immortal, go hibernate. When Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapses in the future, it will be a sign that the opportunity to attack Heavenly Court has arrived.”

5...

Inside Calamity Luck Altar.

“Even if my injuries are fatal, even if the situation is desperate, even if we have used all our trump cards, I won’t give up. Because this plan is Ancestor Giant Sun’s arrangement!”

“Oh Heavenly Court, the victor will be us!”

Bing Sai Chuan shouted.

“Blind confidence.” Duke Long gave a disdainful scoff: “You will only extend your suffering if you continue persevering.”

Bing Sai Chuan snorted: “You will never understand that man’s greatness!”

Not far away.

Whoosh!

Dog tail life extending ferret Mao Li Qiu suddenly turned into smoke and disappeared from the scene.

“We finally got rid of the killer move perfect pair!”

“It is indeed worthy of being Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s creation.”

“Fortunately, this is Heavenly Court. With four rule path Gu Immortals and with detailed information on perfect pair in our records, we could decipher it. If this were a normal situation, it would have been troublesome.”

The dog tail life extending ferret had been engaging in a fierce battle against two legendary immemorial desolate beasts of Heavenly Court, Ruan Dan and Shabi Ninety-five.

With perfect pair, the dog tail life extending ferret and its clone were able to suppress them.

But with Heavenly Court’s members waking up, many people began to target perfect pair and were finally able to break it.

“Try to act wild again!”

“Little dog, you pounced on me so many times that my feathers are all plucked out.”

Ruan Dan and Shabi Ninety-five surrounded Mao Li Qiu, along with several Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

Mao Li Qiu might have outstanding strength, but falling into this situation, it was not able to fight against many and was soon filled with injuries with blood gushing out rapidly.

But Ruan Dan and Shabi Ninety-five were also not in a good state.

Mao Li Qiu’s counterattack was specially targeted at these two.

Although Mao Li Qiu’s injuries kept on increasing and was becoming increasingly weak while Heavenly Court’s dominance was increasing, Ruan Dan and Shabi Ninety-five were still shaken and bewildered.

“This lunatic is not afraid of death!”

“Even if it dies, it will probably bite a piece of my flesh off during its last attack.”

Heavenly Court’s two legendary immemorial beasts could not help but feel apprehensive, one of them shouted: “Mao Li Qiu, why are you wasting your life for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable? He raised you because of your innate ability and wanted to kill you to prolong his life.”

Mao Li Qiu was standing in a pool of blood, its injuries were horrifying and many were so deep that its bones could be seen. Its glossy fur was now stuck together because of the blood.

Its eyes had blacked out, its body was shaking as if it would collapse at the next moment.

It knew about its body condition, it would probably die here.

“And so what?!” Mao Li Qiu gave a soundless laughter as it opened its mouth.

A memory surfaced in its mind.

Under the setting sun, on a mountain, Mao Li Qiu curled up like a puppy beside Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s feet.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable stroked its head, but it was shivering.

It had already heard of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s plan, now that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was near the end of his lifespan and had summoned him, he probably wanted to kill it to extend his life.

But Mao Li Qiu did not dare to resist, it was extremely clear: Even if it possessed peak rank eight battle strength, it was not Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s match. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would not even need to attack for it to die.

“Don’t be afraid, Mao Li Qiu. I won’t kill you to prolong my life.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable chuckled.

Mao Li Qiu’s body stiffened.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable gazed at the evening sky that was dazzling like fire: “I still remember the first day I took you in, hehehe, how time flies, you have already grown to this extent.”

“Speaking from the bottom of my heart, you are my child too, how different are you from my sons and daughters?”

“As a parent, how can I harm my own children?”

Mao Li Qiu knew Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s temperament, he would not lie because there was no need to do so.

Mao Li Qiu asked in a daze: “But master, you can extend your lifespan by killing me.”

“Extend my lifespan?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable laughed: “I will only be dragging on the inevitable. People die in the end, isn’t that so?”

He shook his head: “What meaning is there to continue living under fate? Death is not that hard to accept, furthermore, children are destined to leave their parents and only then can they truly grow up.”

1“Master...”

“Promise me, you must continue to live well. Do what you like, I won’t give you any orders, be yourself and live happily.”

“Master...”

The memory faded away as Mao Li Qiu looked at the surrounding enemies.

It raised its head and laughed wildly, its aura suddenly surging: “Master, even if I die, I will repay the gratitude of raising me!”

“It is already dying!”

“Right, it is only overexerting itself.”

“But be careful of its final counterattack.”

The Heavenly Court immortals had cold expressions as they encircled it.

Black heaven.

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

Giant Sun immortal zombie was sitting cross-legged without moving like a statue.

He looked towards the south, the scenes of the battle in Heavenly Court were reflected in his eyes.

His face showed no sadness or joy as he slowly raised his palm.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1734: Chen Yi Removes Formation

Infallible blessed land battlefield.

Nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

“Their formation...”

“Our side is suffering from a strong backlash!”

“First group, come back and recuperate; second group, take over the first group, third group, be on standby!”

Chen Yi and Bai Cang Shui controlled the formation while orderly commanding the Central Continent Gu Immortals.

“Who could have thought they would have such a strange move.” Feng Jiu Ge frowned slightly as he gazed at the five regional formation within the formation: “This is troublesome, if we don’t handle it well, the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation might...”

Feng Jiu Ge had a bad feeling.

The five regional formation constantly spread five colored smoke to the surroundings under Chi Qu You’s control.

The smoke constantly spread out while becoming increasingly transparent as it invaded the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

“Good, this is the way!”

“The others shall target the formation, make the Central Continent Gu Immortals use it frequently, the more they use it, the stronger the backlash they will suffer.”

“Hahaha, the stronger this nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation is, the greater the injury these Gu Immortals will have to suffer! This is truly wonderful.”

The morale of the Southern Alliance and Northern Plains immortals soared.

They changed their battle tactic.

They had already seen through this formation and could clearly target the flaw to destroy the formation, but now, they were not in a hurry to do so.

The five regional smoke constantly spread and they used this to deal with the Central Continent Gu Immortals who were inside the formation.

In a way, nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation had instead become the strong weapon for Fang Yuan’s group to attack Central Continent and Heavenly Court’s experts.

“How should we deal with this? Do we send people to destroy their formation?” Bai Cang Shui looked at Chen Yi.

The leader of this group was Chen Yi.

Chen Yi looked unsightly as he said: “This formation should have originated from the five regional true inheritance, it is the method of Southern Border’s Tao Zhu.”

Heavenly Court had interfered in the five regional mountain range battle, Jun Shen Guang was captured alive by Fang Yuan in this battle. Thus, Heavenly Court knew detailed information about Tao Zhu’s true inheritance and the five regional mountain range battle.

“Tao Zhu could create the five regional mountain range, so this five colored smoke that is pervading the formation is clearly imitating the five regional walls and is making our side suffer from backlash.”

Chen Yi’s tone was quite bitter: “The nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation is a multi-layered formation, we can easily get rid of or add a sub-formation and hence sustain it indefinitely. Back then, Limitless Demon Venerable had to break a hundred formations to get out of this formation.”

“But Tao Zhu’s method gets around the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation and targets our Gu Immortals instead!”

“Not only are they avoiding the formation but the stronger our formation is, the stronger the backlash to the Gu Immortals in charge of the formation.”

"If we activate the formation to deal with the enemy's formation, we will fall into the enemy's trap, we cannot do that."

"But if we temporarily stop the formation and send our people out of the formation, we will be giving up our advantage and fighting with our weakness. Moreover, the enemies include ruthless people like Wu Yong and Fang Yuan, the Gu Immortals we send out will be in huge danger."

Chen Yi had been struck by Wu Yong's farewell friend wind and was saved by Feng Jiu Ge, he still felt lingering fear.

More importantly, they only had three rank eights: Chen Yi, Bai Cang Shui, and Feng Jiu Ge. Moreover, they all had some level of injuries and were not suited to be sent out.

Chen Yi sighed deeply as he analyzed until here: "Who could have thought the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation would be countered by the enemy!"

Tao Zhu was only an ordinary rank eight Gu Immortal who could not even be mentioned alongside Wu Yong and Fang Yuan, while the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation was created by the famous and mighty Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

The five regional true inheritance was able to counter nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, this was Tao Zhu's glory!

1While alive, Tao Zhu was not prominent among rank eight Gu Immortals or even remotely famous, he only created the five regional mountain range.

No one had expected his research to truly succeed.

After this battle, Tao Zhu's name would spread throughout the world despite him having been dead for a long time already.

Each generation brings forth new geniuses and each will rule their domain for years to come.

Like how Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable's perfect pair killer move was countered in the battle in Heavenly Court, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation was also countered by geniuses of the future generations.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had died too long ago while the eras continued to progress. Their methods were powerful, but they could not escape from the trials of time as it flows continuously.

"Remove that sub-formation." Chen Yi ordered resolutely.

The Gu Immortals beside him were shocked.

Chen Yi actually sent the command to remove the formation, did he get muddle-headed?

But soon after, Feng Jiu Ge was the first to react, his eyes shining brightly as he praised: "Great idea."

"They actually removed the formation, hahaha." Inside five regional formation, some Northern Plains Gu Immortals started laughing heartily at this sight.

Wu Yong and Fang Yuan, however, had slightly sunken expressions.

“This is not good, Chen Yi is truly crafty.”

“If we are inside their formation, the five colored smoke can invade faster and deeper. Now that they have removed the sub-formation, its efficiency will decrease greatly.”

“Indeed. Over at Heavenly Court’s battlefield, Longevity Heaven is already unable to hold on and Heavenly Court is firmly occupying the upper hand. Chen Yi probably considered this so he adopted the delaying tactic.”

Fang Yuan’s group would have been happy to see Chen Yi’s side activating the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation or sending people to attack their formation.

But now, Chen Yi took the initiative to remove the sub-formation, choosing to defend passively.

The five colored smoke’s invasion slowed down greatly, Central Continent immortals only maintained the formation and did not activate it so they suffered from weaker backlash.

On the contrary, Chen Yi was still behind the formation, continuing to arrange immortal formations!

Fang Yuan’s group needed even more time to destroy this nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation as a result.

The most crucial thing was that Fang Yuan’s group had to fight for every second, they could not delay for even one moment. Once Heavenly Court eliminates Longevity Heaven’s forces, they would rush here to deal with Fang Yuan’s group.

Chen Yi was very calm with his deep experience.

He purposely backed down, it was only a small step back in the overall picture, but it instead became an even more terrifying offensive move.

He directly forced Fang Yuan’s group towards the edge of the cliff.

“Sigh, if I had known this, I would have made Formation Spirit and formation flag Immortal Gu take part in the five regional formation. With that, five regional formation could be mobile and would not have to be fixed in one place.”

Fang Yuan mentally sighed.

This was not his mistake, and it was not that he was unwilling to contribute.

If Formation Spirit and formation flag Immortal Gu were to be joined with the five regional formation, the amount of things to deduce would increase sharply and it would consume a lot of Fang Yuan’s time.

In fact, even if the five regional formation could be moved, Fang Yuan’s group would not be able to resolve the current crisis.

Chen Yi took the initiative to dispel the sub-formation and retreated to a defensive position. The five regional formation inside the sub-formation was now exposed.

There was already a chaotic battle going on outside the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

Four rank eight Gu Immortals, Qing Ye, Li Huang, Prince Feng Xian, and Ba Shi Ba, were engaged in a ferocious fight. Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, Frost Dragon Manor, Wind Sweeping Building, and other Immortal Gu

Houses were rampaging in the battlefield, occasionally colliding against each other or erupting with immortal killer moves, dazzling lights and explosions resounded everywhere.

“Not good, unlimited wind is getting out of my control.” Wu Yong’s expression changed.

Previously, he had been inside the formation and had not clearly sensed it. Now that Chen Yi had removed the formation, Wu Yong clearly felt something wrong.

Without any delay, Wu Yong flew out of the five regional formation and charged at Wind Sweeping Building.

Yao Huang, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and others also made their moves.

With their support, Li Huang, Qing Ye and others felt huge pressure. They had to retreat again and again, and soon, they along with Central Continent’s Immortal Gu Houses were getting suppressed.

Fang Yuan quietly moved out before suddenly using great thief ghost hand.

Central Continent’s Immortal Gu Houses immediately met with disaster as Fang Yuan stole a large amount of Gu worms.

Fang Yuan grabbed repeatedly and soon obtained three Immortal Gu. Adding on his gains from the battle in Emperor City, he had already stolen over ten Immortal Gu from Central Continent’s Immortal Gu Houses.

As for these Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan recognized some of them while there were some which he did not recognize.

His time path clone was staying inside the light of wisdom, continuously deducing the ways in which these Gu worms could be used.

Seeing that the situation was going awry, Li Huang got away from Prince Feng Xian and hurried to fight Fang Yuan.

The previous scene in Emperor City played out once again.

Fang Yuan was entangled by Li Huang and was unable to easily target Immortal Gu Houses.

“Hmph, this Prince Feng Xian is acting so well, intentionally letting go of Li Huang without commotion.” Fang Yuan mentally snorted.

Prince Feng Xian was a problem.

What made Fang Yuan feel even more problematic was Heavenly Court’s rank nine human path killer move — Heroes Among People.

With the amplification from heroes among people, Li Huang, Qing Ye, as well as Central Continent’s Immortal Gu Houses had their strength increased by several times. Thus they were able to block the joint offense of Southern Border and Northern Plains.

“We don’t have time to continue such a chaotic battle! Let’s retreat to the formation.” Fang Yuan called out.

Wu Yong and the rest slowly moved back and collected their Immortal Gu Houses before retreating to the five regional formation.

The five regional formation was activated completely, large amounts of five colored smoke quickly spread and shrouded the whole battlefield.

Inside the five colored smoke, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals felt a powerful suppression.

Like the awkward state of Chen Yi before, these people who had been strengthened by heroes among people had their killer moves amplified as well which caused the backlash to increase steeply.

“I did not expect Tao Zhu’s method to be so profound!” Inside the formation, Ba Shi Ba was moved and sighed.

Wu Yong was silent.

This situation was within his expectations.

Because he had already discovered this, he did not stint on exposing the contents of the true inheritance and seeking to collaborate with Chi Qu You.

Chi Qu You also knew this was a good thing but did not have a method to use it before. Now that the formation was modified and successfully arranged, it immediately showed its effects.

“It is a pity this five colored smoke does not distinguish between enemies and allies, Central Continent is suppressed but we can also suffer from backlash.”

“Only Fang Yuan can move freely.” Yao Huang said encouragingly.

Many people looked at Fang Yuan, revealing envious expressions.

“Such a pity.” Fang Yuan inwardly sighed, if he could obtain Tao Zhu’s true inheritance, relying on the light of wisdom as well as his powerful formation path and wisdom path attainment levels, his battle strength would rise sharply.

For example, he had no way to deal with heroes among people, but if he had the five colored smoke, Li Huang’s group would suffer from an even greater suppression. Who was to say if Fang Yuan might be able to suppress the battle in Emperor City singlehandedly?

Back then, when he had escaped from the five regional mountain range and could not take five regional true inheritance, he had felt it was a huge loss.

Looking at it now, his premonition back then was not wrong.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1735: Giant Sun Versus Star Constellation

Infallible blessed land battlefield.

“The enemies entered their formation, looks like they want to make full use of the five colored smoke. Li Huang and the others are in trouble.” Chen Yi had been paying close attention to the battle situation.

“Should we go reinforce them? We can work together with them, maybe we can destroy the enemy’s formation. As long as their formation is destroyed and one or two of the core Immortal Gu are dead, they might have no way left to make a comeback.” Bai Cang Shui suggested.

Chen Yi considered before shaking his head: “No need to take a risk, the current situation is very favorable to us. Bring them into the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.”

Chen Yi was not willing to attack and even wanted to pull back Li Huang and others.

He was determined to continue his plan of stalling for time.

Fang Yuan flew out of the formation and began to fight Li Huang’s group.

Inside five colored smoke, Li Huang’s group was greatly restricted when fighting with Fang Yuan.

After suffering many losses, Li Huang gave the order to retreat and entered the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

In an instant, both sides had entered their respective formations, the noisy battlefield was only left with the sounds of unlimited wind.

Wu Yong and Fang Yuan remained outside the formation.

The former carefully controlled unlimited wind to evade five colored smoke and target Heavenly Court’s formation.

The latter was hiding in the five colored smoke, slowly approaching Heavenly Court’s formation as the five colored smoke spread out further.

“Let’s continue to hold on, as long as the battle in Heavenly Court ends, we will win.” Inside nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, Chen Yi roused the morale of everyone.

But he had just finished speaking when they heard a loud explosion.

The immortals quickly looked and saw surging five colored smoke, the five regional formation on Fang Yuan’s side suddenly exploded. A figure flew out like an arrow from within the dense five colored smoke.

“Prince Feng Xian, what did you do?!”

“Kill him, he is definitely Heavenly Court’s spy!”

“Lord Chi Qu You, are you okay? Quick, someone save Lord Chi!”

A change happened suddenly, Southern Border and Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals were in chaos.

“Prince Feng Xian, don’t even dream about escaping!” Fang Yuan and Wu Yong who were outside turned around and stopped Prince Feng Xian.

Bai Cang Shui was exulted: “So it was Prince Feng Xian who destroyed the enemy formation from inside! Great job!”

Some Gu Immortals who were unaware of the inside information were dumbstruck at this sight.

“Quick, Prince Feng Xian is our Spirit Affinity House’s member! Go save him!” A Spirit Affinity House’s supreme elder urged.

Even without his words, Chen Yi had already sent the command.

Li Huang, Qing Ye, and Bai Cang Shui flew out of the formation to bring back Prince Feng Xian.

Fang Yuan and Wu Yong were obstructed by these three.

Prince Feng Xian was not weak and with help from the reinforcements, he entered the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation successfully.

Heavenly Court's immortals, however, did not know: this Prince Feng Xian who was brought into their formation was a fake!

"I finally got in." Fang Yuan sneered inwardly with surging killing intent.

Immortal killer move — Familiar Face!

This killer move was given a major modification by Fang Yuan, and adding on the transformation path dao marks he obtained from annexing Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, its might had increased by several times.

Even if Heavenly Court had made preparations, they could not discover Fang Yuan's true identity!

At this moment, the true Prince Feng Xian was actually still inside the five regional formation.

The five regional formation had been modified by Fang Yuan and he had naturally put in another formation inside. This inner formation was a cage to trap Prince Feng Xian and its formation core was being guarded by several rank eight Gu Immortals.

As for the 'Fang Yuan' inside the five colored smoke, it was Yi Hao Fang's disguise.

Southern Border's rank eight Gu Immortal Yi Hao Fang was a transformation path Gu Immortal.

Although he did not have a method like familiar face, he was inside the five colored smoke which protected him from the investigative killer moves of other rank eight Gu Immortals.

As for the five regional formation, it had truly been detonated. Countless mortal Gu died and the Immortal Gu used in the formation also suffered varying severity of damage.

Only by doing this could they deceive Chen Yi's side.

Chen Yi was still in the dark because of another reason as well, Fairy Zi Wei had sent a notification to them.

Chen Yi's group knew Prince Feng Xian's true identity which made them place attention on him constantly during the battle.

Once there was any movement over on Prince Feng Xian's end and he backstabs the enemy, they were to actively cooperate and achieve greater success in the battle.

Right now, Prince Feng Xian had directly destroyed the enemy's formation, this was a huge battle merit!

Chen Yi's group had already been mentally prepared so they immediately accepted Fang Yuan.

“Since the secret that I was reborn has been exposed, Heavenly Court is definitely wary of Prince Feng Xian’s identity being exposed as well. Currently, this war pertains to fate Gu, at the crucial moment, Heavenly Court will definitely use Prince Feng Xian to maintain the situation! This is something I can exploit.”

Fang Yuan sneered inwardly. He was disguised as Prince Feng Xian with a heavily injured look. Under the expectant gazes of Heavenly Court immortals, he entered the core of nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation confidently.

A Spirit Affinity House supreme elder welcomed him first, she smiled: “Welcome home.”

Fang Yuan was ready and prepared to make a move.

“I am not the real Prince Feng Xian, I will be exposed when I converse with them.”

“And I don’t have Wu Yong’s concealing methods, my killer move’s aura will definitely leak when I prepare it.”

“So the perfect time to make a move is at this moment when I have just entered the formation! Because I was chased, the killer move aura on my body has yet to dissipate.”

Fang Yuan was about to make a fatal move when a change occurred!

Everyone in the whole battlefield had a change in their expression.

“What... what is that?”

“Rank nine killer move! It seems to have come from Northern Plains!”

Luck path’s aura.”

“Its direction... seems like Heavenly Court!”

Both enemies and allies forgot about fighting as they all looked up at the sky.

An enormous beam of light flew through the sky and shot towards Heavenly Court’s direction at an extreme speed.

This beam of light was so gigantic, like a large river that spanned across heaven and earth.

Wherever it went, it pushed aside all the air, the light pillar’s movement was accompanied by a deafening and majestic sound.

Such a grand and powerful killer move shocked everyone and sent them into a daze.

Chen Yi, Wu Yong, and even Fang Yuan felt how small and insignificant they were at this moment!

Unstoppable! Invincible!

The light pillar started from black heaven above Northern Plains, piercing through the regional wall and directly bombarding Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court shook intensely, the world seemed to tremble as countless Immortal Gu Houses cracked and broke.

“This is?!” Duke Long looked up fiercely. The previous moment, he had been in high spirits and with his awe-inspiring might, he had beaten Seven Extreme Desolation and Calamity Luck Altar to the point where they did not even know their bearings.

But when the light pillar charged towards him, he paled in horror; in an instant, he had become fish on the chopping board.

He could not move, he was locked firmly by the beam like an insect trapped in amber, he could only watch quietly as the pillar of light crashed, even though his current strength could make all other rank eight Gu Immortals feel helpless and lament.

“Rank nine killer move! This is Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s method!”

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left behind a backup method after all! No, he is not targeting me, he is going after fate Gu.”

Duke Long suddenly realized as his face turned malevolent, he struggled with all his strength, trying to activate his immortal killer moves desperately.

But what he feared still happened, his killer moves did not even activate once. The continuous failure in activating killer moves inflicted heavy backlash on him, his mouth and eyes were both bleeding.

The Heavenly Court immortals were confused and shocked, some who overestimated their own strength tried to obstruct the beam but were all incinerated into ashes!

No rank eight Gu Immortal could block the advancement of the light pillar.

“Lord Ancestor Giant Sun!”

“Master...”

At this moment, Bing Sai Chuan and Mao Li Qiu’s eyes shined brightly.

But right as the beam of light was about to strike the refinement path formation, suddenly, everyone heard a deep sigh.

Following that, the image of two venerables playing chess appeared once again in Imperfection Regret Pavilion.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, who was playing chess with Limitless Demon Venerable, grabbed a chess piece and tossed it out.

Instantly, countless starlight specks flickered and gathered, they were so dazzling that they did not lose to the huge yellow beam!

Starlight specks formed a giant web that obstructed the beam’s advancement.

The beam of light became slower and thinner, the starlight specks that were surrounding it were absorbing and transferring the strength away.

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!”

“This is Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s method!”

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were exulted, they looked at Imperfection Regret Pavilion with reverence and excited emotions.

Duke Long gasped for breath, the beam of light had approached him closely, almost touching his face. But in the end, the beam was completely stopped and trapped by the starlight web.

“Damn it, we were so close.” Bing Sai Chuan was very upset.

Duke Long was Heavenly Court’s strongest battle strength, he was also their leader and banner. If he died, Heavenly Court’s morale would definitely fall greatly while Longevity Heaven, which still had Calamity Luck Altar and Seven Extreme Desolation, would have hope left!

“Star Constellation, this bitch...” Mao Li Qiu clenched its teeth fiercely.

1The beam of light suddenly changed abruptly, it started to rotate and got faster and faster, forming circles of whirling currents on its surface.

Inside Imperfection Regret Pavilion, a surprised look appeared on Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s face.

With a loud sound, the beam exploded, splitting into hundreds of enormous yellow qi currents that plunged into Bing Sai Chuan, Mao Li Qiu, and the other Northern Plains’ experts.

Mao Li Qiu was dumbfounded.

It had already been prepared for death but after this yellow qi current moved through its limbs and bones, all its injuries were healed and immortal essence was condensing within its immortal aperture out of nowhere.

A golden-white halo appeared on Longevity Heaven’s members, giving them a huge amplification.

This amplification was several times stronger than heroes among people!

After the light pillar got obstructed by the starlight web, it transformed into another effect and helped Longevity Heaven’s members instead.

“Duke Long, let’s fight again!” Bing Sai Chuan shouted, having recovered to his peak condition.

Calamity Luck Altar was also shrouded in a layer of radiance, and under Bing Sai Chuan’s control, it flew out.

Duke Long did not dodge but faced Calamity Luck Altar head-on.

Calamity Luck Altar’s momentum was blocked but Duke Long was sent flying like a cannonball. He smashed through five to six thick walls before being stopped by the qi wall.

Guh.

Duke Long’s face turned pale as he spat out large mouthfuls of blood.

His chest had caved in and almost all his ribs were broken!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1736: Northern Plains’ Upper Hand

Heavenly Court battlefield.

“Kill!”

Deafening battle roars resounded, the morale of the Northern Plains immortals soared to an unprecedented height!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had made his move, it had extraordinary meaning, his descendants all felt a huge rise in their morale along with great increase in their strength.

“How can this be?” A Heavenly Court immortal suddenly stiffened in the air, unable to move.

Before him, a famous expert of Northern Plains, wisdom path Gu Immortal Liu Hui, let out a breath of air: “I was almost killed by you, you were really so close, it is such a pity.”

Cold sweat dripped down the Heavenly Court Gu Immortal’s forehead: “Your killer move was clearly unable to bind me. Hmph, the amazing one is Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, you take no credit in this!”

Liu Hui sneered: “Then what about earlier when our side was suppressed by fate? Moreover, who cares about who the credit belongs to? Life or death, victory or defeat, these are the only important things, go die.”

He waved his hand lightly, taking the enemy’s life.

His eyes were narrow and his gaze was chilling as he sized up his surroundings with ill intentions: “Who should be next?”

...

“You cannot break my defense, don’t waste your effort.” A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal stood steadfast and unmoved, his whole body covered in an extremely tough barrier.

Northern Plains Gu Immortal Yu Yang Zi took in a deep breath, he felt the vast new strength in his body, his dejectedness from earlier vanished as his confidence soared: “The current me is not the same as before. Immortal killer move — Decomposition!”

Yu Yang Zi’s original name was Ye Lui Wa and he cultivated rule path. After becoming a Gu Immortal, he achieved remarkable feats repeatedly, but Ye Lui tribe did not give him the treatment he deserved. In a fit of anger, he defected from the tribe and became a demonic path Gu Immortal.

In his later years, Ye Lui tribe was jointly pushed aside and suppressed by many Huang Jin tribes, Ye Lui Wa who had become rank eight was welcomed back to become Ye Lui tribe’s first supreme elder in a grand manner and returned to the righteous path.

He relied on his own strength to achieve feats that was unattainable for ordinary Gu Immortals, making the entire tribe lower its head and admit its past mistake.

Ye Lui Wa’s life history was painted with legendary tales that stimulated countless future generations. But even after returning to Ye Lui tribe and taking the position of first supreme elder, he did not use his original name and still went by Yu Yang Zi.

“How can this be?!” The Heavenly Court Gu Immortal was pale from shock, the defense that he prided himself on continued to break apart before disintegrating completely.

With the help of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Yu Yang Zi directly reversed the position of the strong and weak.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortal fighting against him soon died a miserable death.

...

Chink chink chink!

Three Heavenly Court immortals were fighting Yuan Ben.

Yuan Ben was a rank eight Gu Immortal who primarily cultivated bone path and had shocking battle strength. While he was alive, he was considered the number one battle strength in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world, even the other four regions often heard of his famous name.

His physique was not strong-built, instead he was slightly on the bony side. But his whole body was covered in extremely tough white bone armor. He held a white bone spear in his right hand which created a storm when he waved it, in his left hand, he held a bone sword, the sword light it gave off was cold and dark.

Yuan Ben roared loudly when he received a portion of the yellow light, his armor suddenly shot out countless bone spikes.

One Heavenly Court Gu Immortal who was surrounding him could not dodge in time and died miserably after being pierced by hundreds of spikes.

Yuan Ben took the chance to rush forward and pierced the second Gu Immortal’s heart with his spear while slicing off the third Gu Immortal’s head with his sword.

But he did not feel any excitement or joy, instead he looked slightly sad: “It is unfortunate you did not have all your Gu worms and could not display your full strength. Furthermore, I obtained ancestor’s help, this battle... there is no honor in winning!”

...

Boom!

With a loud bang, Duke Long was sent flying like a cannonball.

Dragon roars resounded as Duke Long quickly stabilized himself.

Suddenly, an enormous shadow shrouded over him.

Duke Long quickly raised his head and saw Calamity Luck Altar pressing down like a mountain.

Duke Long gave a cold grunt and clenched his fists with no intention to dodge.

“Lord Duke Long, let me lend you a hand!” Heavenly Court Gu Immortal Wu Shuang activated a killer move against Duke Long.

Immortal killer move — Peerless!

Duke Long took a deep breath and punched at Calamity Luck Altar.

Immortal killer move — Chaotic Dragon Fist!

Peerless — Chaotic Dragon Fist!!

Fist shadows flew and set off a violent gale. Calamity Luck Altar swayed unsteadily as it was struck by tens of millions of fist shadows.

“This Duke Long is still so absurdly strong!” Bing Sai Chuan gritted his teeth.

Calamity Luck Altar had also received Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s amplification, its strength had risen by several times but was still unable to suppress Duke Long.

But right at this time, a giant flew over and joined the battlefield.

It was Seven Extreme Desolation!

“Die, Duke Long!” The Seven Extreme Desolation giant roared as it spat out countless pitch-black needles that shot towards Duke Long.

“Damn it!” Heavenly Court Gu Immortal Wu Shuang stared with a furious expression, he wanted to help but was blocked by other Northern Plains Gu Immortals.

Northern Plains Gu Immortals had rich battle experiences, and these Gu Immortals summoned by call of the ancient were experts of their eras. After fighting for so long, they were already able to tacitly coordinate.

Duke Long was using chaotic dragon fist to block Calamity Luck Altar but suffered from Seven Extreme Desolation’s attack at the same time.

These pitch-black needles were extremely powerful and had explosive momentum, Duke Long felt a chilling sensation of pain before they even touched him.

A sharp light flashed past Duke Long’s eyes.

Immortal killer move — Clear Dragon Vision.

With the activation of the investigative killer move, he immediately saw through many details of the pitch-black needles and knew this move contained the essence of dark path and was used to counter defensive methods. If he only used his dragon scales or nine dragons protection, he would probably have countless holes in his body and be heavily injured!

“Then let’s use offense against offense!” Duke Long opened his mouth and breathed out heavily.

Qi currents surged as they instantly formed an immortal killer move!

Immortal killer move — Qi Current Scissors!

Countless white qi currents charged towards the pitch-black needles.

Qi currents cut through the air like sharp blades, cutting apart all the black needles in their path.

Qi current scissors collided with pitch-black needles, each side dissipated by more than half of their original quantity.

But there were some that escaped the collision and flew towards Duke Long and Seven Extreme Desolation.

Almost at the same time, Duke Long gave a muffled grunt after being pierced by over ten pitch-black needles, while several bones and muscles of Seven Extreme Desolation’s body were cut by qi current scissors.

These injuries were shared by the Seven Big Dipper Immortals inside Seven Extreme Desolation.

They endured the pain as they coordinated their efforts in activating Seven Extreme Desolation to directly go after Duke Long.

Duke Long sighed, he could only retreat!

Since the battle started, this was the first time he had retreated on his own initiative.

The enemy’s momentum was so strong that Duke Long had no choice but to retreat.

His killer move heavenly dragon’s last stand could indeed let him be tyrannical among rank eights, especially during the last moments of his life, he would have complete dominance over rank eight Gu Immortals.

But, in front of a rank nine killer move, heavenly dragon’s last stand paled greatly, losing much significance.

Besides the might of the killer move itself, there was also a mysterious and profound change that was occurring.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s attack had been an offensive killer move which originated from Northern Plains and struck Central Continent’s Heavenly Court, it crossed two regions without any decrease in its power.

Heavenly Court’s own defense was extremely strong but it was not a match against Giant Sun’s attack.

Fortunately, during the critical moment, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made a move and blocked Giant Sun’s attack.

But after being blocked, Giant Sun’s attack changed its nature and transformed into an amplification method which overturned the whole battle situation.

There were four main kinds of special techniques regarding the usage of killer moves: consecutive moves, variation moves, attached moves, and split moves.

The so-called variation move used a certain killer move as the base and added in new attributes to achieve a different effect. For instance, Fang Yuan’s myriad self killer move was the base for strength path giant hand.

But if Fang Yuan activated the killer move, myriad self absolutely would not transform into strength path giant hand, these two had their own differences.

In contrast, Giant Sun’s attack seemed to be able to transform at will, one moment, it was an offensive killer move, while immediately after, it became an amplification method.

The attainment that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable possessed in using the variation move technique had already surpassed Duke Long’s level of understanding!

“My strength seems to be dissipating.”

“Looks like Ancestor Giant Sun’s amplification cannot be maintained for long!”

“We need to stop focusing on fighting, and while the amplification still exists, we need to break through the enemy’s defense line and seize fate Gu!”

As time passed, the Northern Plains Gu Immortals gradually realized something.

Giant Sun’s attack transformed and became a powerful amplification method, but this strength was quickly dissipating.

Giant Sun’s attack was much more explosive than heroes among people. But looking at the duration and area of coverage, heroes among people undoubtedly covered a larger area and could last for a longer time.

Duke Long’s expression changed.

He was barely able to match both Calamity Luck Altar and Seven Extreme Desolation, now that Northern Plains immortals were all attacking the refinement path formation, he was simply unable to defend it.

Heavenly Court Gu Immortals gathered and formed a defensive line in front of the damaged refinement formation.

But under the berserk rush of the Northern Plains Gu Immortals, the defensive line was on the verge of breaking.

All kinds of immortal killer moves collided, Gu Immortal corpses fell from the sky from time to time.

Both sides staked their lives against each other, Gu Immortal deaths rose steeply around the thin defensive line.

Northern Plains’ side was betting it all in this one fight while Heavenly Court members were defending with all their strength.

Both sides gained constant reinforcements.

Gu Immortals awakened from Heavenly Court immortal graveyard and rushed to the battlefield to reinforce the defensive line.

While from the phantom image of the River of Time, Northern Plains experts stepped out and went to fight without saying a word.

The defensive line was teetering on the edge of collapsing, Fairy Zi Wei had already joined the battlefield and was using all her might to resist the Northern Plains immortals’ offense.

Suddenly, a faint shadow appeared beside Fairy Zi Wei.

Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal expert Liu Liu Liu!

This person was a rank eight expert but did not have a good reputation. When he was alive, he was the only rank eight Gu Immortal in Liu tribe, and according to the customs, he should have inherited the first supreme elder’s position.

But from a young age, Liu Liu Liu had never fought openly and only bullied the weak while fearing the strong. All his attacks were usually sneak attacks.

His reputation was so bad that others could not bring themselves to respect or trust him.

If he took the position and became Liu tribe’s first supreme elder, it would instead burden the whole of Liu tribe and affect Liu tribe’s image and reputation instead.

Liu Liu Liu was an anomaly and a unique existence in the history of Northern Plains. But because of this nature, he was still alive in this battlefield now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1737: Heavenly Court’s Foundation

Liu Liu Liu had set foot in the battlefield very early, but within his batch of Northern Plains experts, the others were already killed and only he remained.

This battle was too dangerous and fierce, it was very common to see the sacrifice of rank eight Gu Immortals.

Liu Liu Liu’s achievements in this battle were brilliant, having killed at least eight Heavenly Court members. With his plentiful battle experiences, he had long been paying attention to Fairy Zi Wei and had already deduced that she was a crucial key in this battle!

Now he suddenly sneak attacked, but this attack had been prepared for a long time.

At that very instance, Fairy Zi Wei’s hair stood on end, she was suffocated with a feeling of fatal danger that filled her mind!

Fairy Zi Wei was well-aware that she was simply unable to block the enemy with just her defensive methods. But she did not have the time to activate other defensive measures at this point!

Right as Fairy Zi Wei was about to die, at the crucial moment, a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal rushed out from the side.

It was Wu Shuang, who had reinforced Duke Long earlier!

Swish!

With a muffled noise, Liu Liu Liu’s killer move that was like a grey knife pierced through Wu Shuang and even stabbed into Fairy Zi Wei’s shoulder.

“Damn it, this guy blocked most of the attack...” Liu Liu Liu’s expression rapidly changed as he quickly disappeared on the spot.

Fairy Zi Wei was heavily injured but Wu Shuang was dead.

Liu Liu Liu disappeared without a trace, who knew whose life would be gone the next time he appeared.

Boom!

Air waves surged.

Duke Long was sent flying hundreds of steps before he barely stabilized himself.

He finally blocked Seven Extreme Desolation’s killer move but the price he paid were his two hands and the dragon scales in front of his chest.

His hands drooped down powerlessly, his dragon scales were completely destroyed and blood had already dyed his chest.

Duke Long immediately activated healing methods but the dark path dao marks in his hands were extremely dense, moreover they were arranged in a mystical way which greatly hindered the healing effect.

“Hahaha, Duke Long, you have been struck by our snake lure and dark life entanglement, you still want to recover your injuries in such a short period? Keep dreaming!” A voice from within Seven Extreme Desolation sneered.

Next, Calamity Luck Altar changed its battle style as it suddenly drilled down into the ground and sneak attacked Duke Long from below.

An immortal killer move was activated and struck Duke Long.

A giant golden light sphere appeared and trapped Duke Long within it.

The light sphere was constantly shrinking, diminishing the space that Duke Long had, his bones were making creaking noises, his dragon scales were falling off continuously and his dragon horns showed evident cracks.

Bing Sai Chuan let out a huge breath of relief after seeing Duke Long trapped.

Duke Long’s speed was too shocking while this killer move Calamity Luck Altar used was rather slow and would have been difficult for it to land on him.

Fortunately, Northern Plains Gu Immortals were highly adept in fighting, because they focused on his weaknesses, Duke Long’s attention was drawn to them and he could only defend passively. The coordination with Seven Extreme Desolation was also growing increasingly, thus it created an opportunity for the killer move to strike Duke Long!

Crack.

A large part of Duke Long’s dragon horns fell off.

A huge amount of purple hair scattered in the air.

The nine dragon phantoms of nine dragons protection killer move that coiled around Duke Long’s body was barely resisting the huge pressure from the surroundings.

“Duke Long, your dominance has passed, fate Gu will belong to my Longevity Heaven! As for you, death awaits!” Bing Sai Chuan’s voice spread throughout the battlefield. He could only entrap Duke Long within this short period and could not take his life, but it did not matter, he could use this to lower Heavenly Court’s morale.

Sure enough, many Heavenly Court members were shaken when they saw Duke Long being trapped.

Duke Long suddenly laughed loudly: “Even if I die here, so what? You Northern Plains Gu Immortals are not afraid of death, do you think Heavenly Court members fear death?”

With just a few words, Heavenly Court's immortals cheered and their morale surged.

"We went to hibernate because of our responsibilities, it was not because we feared death."

"What a joke, would we fear death? We are members of Heavenly Court!"

"We defend the glory of humanity, we have never feared sacrifices since the Remote Antiquity Era!!"

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals began to counterattack, not hesitating to use their physical bodies to block the killer moves of Northern Plains Gu Immortals. Once there was a chance, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals would disregard their own bodies to attack fiercely and try to take the Northern Plains experts down together with them.

Northern Plains Gu Immortals were valiant but Heavenly Court Gu Immortals started to go crazy!

"Damn it." Bing Sai Chuan realized the situation, he had intended to lower Heavenly Court's morale, but Duke Long's words actually destroyed his plan.

Bing Sai Chuan sneered, his voice spreading throughout the battlefield once again: "Laughable! Your sacrifice is meaningless, no matter how many Gu Immortals are sacrificed on our side, they are only formed by the killer move of Red Lotus Demon Venerable, they were never alive to begin with. Using these dead people to exchange for your lives, we are definitely the ones winning here! How much foundation does your Heavenly Court have, how long can this go on?"

"Foundation?" Duke Long sneered: "We have more than enough!"

He began to retaliate.

He was unable to use his two hands but his aura started to inflate as it covered him like a sturdy wall.

Duke Long looked at Calamity Luck Altar with a gaze of disdain: "Your Longevity Heaven was founded in the Medieval Antiquity Era and it has only been about three hundred thousand years. As for our Heavenly Court? It has already been three million, eight hundred and seventy-nine thousand, six hundred and eighty-seven (3,879,687) years! Calculate it yourself, how many times longer it is compared to your Longevity Heaven! Don't try to estimate my Heavenly Court's foundation, hmph, you can never imagine it in your wildest dreams!"

"Bing Sai Chuan, take a look at the immortal graveyard and then look at your laughable phantom River of Time."

Bing Sai Chuan's expression sank but he was silent.

He did not need to look, he had all along been observing these two areas.

There were fewer and fewer Northern Plains Gu Immortals coming out from the phantom River of Time. But groups of Gu Immortals were still awakening from Heavenly Court constantly.

Heavenly Court's foundation was truly unfathomable.

Duke Long continued: "How many people can a tribe have? How many geniuses will rise from a tribe? Bing Sai Chuan, look at our Central Continent. We chose all kinds of geniuses from all the mortals in Central Continent!"

“Even if a tribe has a genius, can they truly nurture them? The tribe’s blood and familial relations will become obstacles. This phenomenon of familial relations is much weaker in our sects. Moreover, the sect’s competitions are more fair and transparent.”

“Even if a genius appears in the family of a tribe’s higher-ups, how much effort can a tribe’s Gu Immortal spend to cultivate this genius junior? Gu Immortals also have many things to do and are extremely busy. But in sects, a genius junior will receive guidance from many people. From the moment they start cultivating until they become a Gu Immortal, they will receive appropriate guidance. There are many missions in sects which provide ample benefits for guiding juniors! Let me ask, how many tribes can do this?”

Duke Long’s voice became louder and was filled with arrogance and pride: “Immortals of Northern Plains, you are truly courageous to dare to invade Heavenly Court! Unfortunately, your understanding is bound by your tribal system, you have really underestimated Heavenly Court’s foundation!”

Bing Sai Chuan was silent.

He wanted to retort but there were no words he could say.

Because the truth was right here in full view!

There was a constant flow of Gu Immortals awakening from Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard.

Over three million years ago, Remote Antiquity Era.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable looked at the surrounding human Gu Immortals and nodded slightly: “All of Central Continent’s Gu Immortals have gathered here, there are also a few friends from the other four regions.”

“Lord Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, we hurried here after receiving your call. We will listen to your instructions and teachings.”

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable smiled and expressed his suggestion: “From today onwards, Central Continent will establish sects and take in disciples to impart our skills to the future generation.”

“What?”

“Abolishing the clan system?”

“I had already heard of this rumor, but Lord Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, you really want to do this?”

“Isn’t this too...”

The human Gu Immortals discussed and showed reluctant expressions.

Someone tried persuading in a careful tone: “Lord Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, you are the only rank nine Gu Immortal of the current world, if you want to establish your own clan, it will definitely be the number one super force in the whole world! Your children will inherit your glory and skills, all of our clans will definitely accept your clan’s leadership.”

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable shook his head slightly, he looked at the persuading Gu Immortal with a tranquil gaze: “Clan? I would like to ask you, in history, have there been any long lasting clans? Once a clan develops, the ties of blood relationship will become thin. When I had yet to be an Immortal

Venerable, we fought with other variant human forces, besides our unity, it was because we made use of their internal conflicts. I want to create sects, an organization that does not rely on blood relations!”

The human Gu Immortals kept silent for a while before someone gave a forceful smile: “Lord Immortal Venerable, you are correct, once a clan dominates, it is easy for their unity to become loose. But you are different, you are the first Gu Immortal to cultivate to rank nine! There might not even be a rank nine Immortal Venerable in the future.”

“As long as you are there in the clan, which member will dare to drift away? With your existence, this will be the clan with the strongest unity!”

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable nodded: “You are right. But what if I am not there? How much longer can I live?”

The human Gu Immortals were dazed.

Someone said: “Lord Immortal Venerable, you are at your prime right now!”

Another person said: “We will constantly search for lifespan Gu, you will definitely be the Gu Immortal who will live the longest in history!”

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable smiled, saying with a tranquil tone: “But I will still die. Who can live forever in this world?”

He shook his head and sighed, replying to himself: “No one.”

The Gu Immortals were silent.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable continued: “Besides lifespan Gu, other lifespan extension methods all have flaws. But even if we gather lifespan Gu, we all know that lifespan Gu will keep on decreasing in production, isn’t that so?”

The human Gu Immortals remained silent.

“This is heaven’s will.” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable raised his head, his gaze seemingly piercing through the cave walls, directly observing the clouds and heavens: “The way of heaven takes away surpluses while replenishing deficits, there has never been a supreme existence with eternal life! The tallest tree will suffer the greatest damage from the wind, a tall pile of sand will crumble from the rushing tides. New variant human experts will emerge to replace the old, our human race is also the same.”

“I might be invincible in the world but it is only temporary, I will die one day. This involves the Heavenly Dao, Fate, as well as Rules and Regulations, they are all recorded in the <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1738: Primordial Origin Heavenly Court!

The atmosphere in the cave became increasingly repressed, a young Gu Immortal gave a forced smile: “Lord Immortal Venerable, you are only a few hundred years old now, you still have thousands of years and even more than ten thousand years of life left. Isn’t it too early to consider this?”

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s expression turned solemn, he looked at the young Gu Immortal with a calm gaze, the latter could not even last for a few breaths and quickly lowered his head.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable spoke with a serious tone: “He who gives no thought to far-flung problems will soon find suffering nearby. If we don’t consider this early on and take precautions, after I die, all of our sacrifices will become meaningless. Our hard-earned achievements from countless battles will also crumble and disintegrate.”

“Ignoring anything else, once I die, who among you will be able to take on the responsibility as leader once the variant humans retaliate?” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable asked.

The Gu Immortals looked at each other, no one spoke.

Although humans had risen, they had relied on Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable alone. The others, no matter what ranks they were or even comparing quantity, were far from matching the variant human races.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable heaved a deep sigh: “Central Continent is too big, how many human Gu Immortals are there, and how many variant human Gu Immortals are there? What about mortals? What is the population of the entire human race and what is the population of the variant humans? Our difference is enormous.”

“Even if we can rule Central Continent in our lifetimes and unite this region, what about the other four regions?”

“Currently, my strength has been exposed, variant humans are deeply aware they cannot fight me so they have already gone into hiding. We don’t have any effective methods to find their accurate locations. Especially those variant human Gu Immortals’ grotto-heavens and blessed lands, if they put them outside, we won’t be able to notice them even if we are right in front of them.”

The immortals fully understood the intention of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable now.

Even if the human race rose, it was by relying on Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable alone. And Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s lifespan was limited, he would die one day.

Moreover, even right now when he was still alive, it would be very difficult for the human race to unite Central Continent. Variant humans were too difficult to find, they could hide and still continue to thrive.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was invincible but he did not have an effective method to dig out their locations.

A certain elderly man among the Gu Immortals said with a heavy voice: “So, based on Lord Immortal Venerable’s words, the way for humanity to rule in the long term is to give up our clan system and establish sects?”

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable nodded solemnly: “Yes.”

“How can we win against variant humans and provide a bright future for the whole of humanity? This is not possible with just me alone.”

“Variant humans can hide away in the worst case scenario. Even if I am invincible, I can only lead Central Continent’s humans to independence and make them gain a stable footing in the world.”

“If we truly want humanity to rise, we must rely on ourselves. We must expand our population and also nurture as many Gu Immortals as we can. As long as our human race has stronger and many more Gu Immortals than the variant humans, humanity’s future will be bright.”

“If we use the clan system, what difference is there from the variant humans? We are already extremely behind, if we keep on using this clan system, we will never be able to surpass them.”

“Establishing sects and actively looking and excavating geniuses is the only way. Not worrying about the costs and abandoning prejudices to nurture them, only then will we have the hope of surpassing these variant human races!”

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable words sent the Gu Immortals into silence once again.

Many had already regained their calm, they knew Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s words were reasonable. But there were still some Gu Immortals who frowned, unable to accept this.

A Gu Immortal asked: “Can the sect system allow us to cooperate sincerely? Will we really be able to become meritocratic, does this mean there won’t be internal conflict or suppression?”

“Of course not.” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable shook his head: “An organization run by people will definitely have selfishness and conflict over personal gains. A clan bases its foundation on blood or marriage relations, while a sect decides based on abilities and talent, the latter is naturally more open and transparent, the limited cultivation resources will go to the more suitable people, which is more beneficial to the overall situation!”

That person opened his mouth but was unable to criticize the advantage of sects, he could only approach this from another angle: “Does this mean clans are unable to find talents? Clans also have the system of absorbing external talents through marriages or adopting children.”

“You are right.” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable nodded: “But how many marriages can you have? Even if you adopt many children, they will probably be ostracized and suppressed when compared to those blood related descendants of the clansmen, right?”

The human Gu Immortals finally had nothing to say.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable continued in an earnest voice: “I know that the sect system will not truly be accepted at first. We painstakingly seek the way of Gu Immortal cultivation, we paid an immeasurable price to obtain success, it is okay if we leave it to our own descendants, but a sect means that we need to give them to outsiders.”

“But the truth is, establishing sects does not mean you are going to casually impart the profundities of your immortal cultivation to others. But you will be choosing geniuses, these geniuses must not only have great innate talent but also have upright moral virtues, and most importantly, they must be loyal to their sect.”

“Furthermore, even if we don’t have clans, will that mean your descendants cannot receive your help? Of course not. When these people enter the respective sects, they will naturally receive your care. But I hope you keep these actions quiet and not violate the sect rules openly.”

“As long as we defend the sect rules, our descendants, disciples, and children will also actively abide by the sect rules. As long as we create sects and be united, I believe humanity can truly rise up in the future!”

“My influence cannot extend to the four regions far away, but in Central Continent, I hope that everyone will create sects and give up on the clan system. For the sake of humanity, I must emphasize this one point: Every Central Continent Gu Immortal needs to create or join a sect, you cannot establish a clan. Any future Gu Immortal will also follow this rule. If anyone breaks the rule, they will face judgment from me personally as well as the collective force of all other Gu Immortals!”

The human Gu Immortals did not utter a single word, when Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable showed a tough stance, they simply could not go against him.

But what made them thankful was that Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable did not blindly forbid the clan system. The sect system only applied to Gu Immortals, that was to say, mortals and Gu Masters could use the clan system to continue living.

Moreover, even if Gu Immortals established sects, they could still take care of their descendants and friends.

This could be considered as Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s compromise towards reality, but this also showed his wisdom and foresight.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable continued: “As your leader, I shall set the example! I hereby take an oath that I will create sects and not clans. I will take in disciples and impart my life’s learnings to them without holding back anything.”

“Moreover, when I die in the future, my immortal aperture will also be contributed to be the foundation of the sect and it will not be left to my bloodline descendants.”

“Lord Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable!”

“You...”

The human Gu Immortals were all shaken.

At this moment, they looked towards Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s calm expression and sensed his resolution to make sacrifices for the sake of the big picture.

If even Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was doing this, what reason did they have to not follow him?

“Lord Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, you are correct, I will follow your orders!”

“From today onwards, we will create sects and not clans.”

“The existence of Lord Immortal Venerable is truly the blessing of humanity!”

“Following lord is definitely the best decision I’ll make in my life.”

“Lord Immortal Venerable, I still have some things I don’t understand about the sect establishment.”

“Mm, do speak.” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable said.

“What kind of sect do you want to create, where should we build our sects? What rules does a sect have, what are the key factors in establishing a sect?”

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable took a deep breath: “I have already envisioned the concept of sects for a long time, this plan will involve all the possible aspects we can consider. Take me as an example, first, my sect will be named Heavenly Court...”

A long time passed.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable answered the questions of all the immortals.

They no longer had any doubts.

He then looked at the immortals: “Next, it will depend on you. I believe as long as we widely establish sects and progress, even if I die, humanity will become more prosperous, and if variant humans don’t make any changes, they will definitely perish!”

“Please have faith in me!”

“Don’t think that our sects are merely a concept and not reality.”

“I believe as long as we go on with our plan, sects will gradually let out dazzling radiance in the long course of history. Heavenly Court and our sects will become renowned throughout the world, and we will become existences that our enemies fear!”

Three million eight hundred and seventeen thousand six hundred and eighty-seven years later.

1Heavenly Court battlefield.

The fierce battle continued, Longevity Heaven, which had obtained Giant Sun’s help, occupied the upper hand.

However, Heavenly Court members continued to awaken from the immortal graveyard.

“Who is it? Who has the guts to invade Heavenly Court!”

“This is the fruit of our ancestors’ labor, I won’t allow you to destroy it.”

“Many people have given up their blood and lives, Longevity Heaven, which operates on a mere tribal system, wants to defeat Heavenly Court? Hmph, wishful thinking!”

“Longevity Heaven, you are despicable. For your personal gains, you incited an internal battle among humans?”

“Our Heavenly Court is the sacred land of humanity, the sanctuary of humanity, the rightful leader of humanity!”

“We represent the fighting spirit of humanity, it has not changed since millions of years ago!”

“I will follow Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, and Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, I will defend our Heavenly Court with my life!!”

Loud shouts resounded as old-looking, young-looking, male, and female Gu Immortals walked out of the immortal graveyard to join the battle.

Like what Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable said three million years ago, his

Heavenly Court had become an enormous monster that loomed over the world.

His spirit continued to be inherited and had never changed!

Countless geniuses were found and nurtured by sects, following after the first venerable who had died long ago and upholding his spirit and ideology!

The Northern Plains Gu Immortals were incomparably valiant, but the Heavenly Court immortals were showing an aura of madness, even if they did not have their Immortal Gu, even if they perished together with the enemy, their faces did not show perplexity or fear.

Instead.

Their faces seemed to shine with brightness.

The glory of those who defended their beliefs...

It was so dazzling and brilliant!

“Why? We are clearly stronger, why are we being suppressed by Heavenly Court’s momentum?!” Bing Sai Chuan gritted his teeth, his face turned ashen.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1739: Heavenly Court’s Sacrifice

Heavenly Court battlefield.

The battle of rank eight Gu Immortals had already become extremely tragic.

“Longevity Heaven! Your performance truly disappoints all of us!”

“Hmph, Heavenly Court’s members really like to brag shamelessly, you have become used to being the leader for too long, watch now as I wipe the floor with all of you!”

“You and I both belong to the human race, our internal conflict has actually reached such a state. Northern Plains immortals, you are courageous but you don’t have any beliefs.”

“You will never understand our beliefs!”

Northern Plains Gu Immortals perished constantly, but the death of every Northern Plains expert was accompanied by the lives of several Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

“Northern Plains! Longevity Heaven!” Duke Long was extremely furious: “Despite being equally matched, the grand Heavenly Court has actually been forced to such a miserable state... Unforgivable!”

Boom!

Duke Long suddenly raised his arms, finally breaking the sphere that trapped him.

But Calamity Luck Altar and Seven Extreme Desolation quickly responded, the three tussled continuously; the situation fell into a stalemate.

“Quick, quick!”

“Alright, the refinement path formation has finally been repaired.”

“Yuan Qiong Du, it all depends on you now. We will protect you, and unless we die, no one will disturb this refinement path formation!!”

Several Heavenly Court Gu Immortals called out as they defended four directions, forming a firm defensive line.

Because Heavenly Court Gu Immortals defended selflessly, the refinement path formation was repaired and the defensive line was re-established.

Bing Sai Chuan saw this and quickly got away from Duke Long, trying to destroy Heavenly Court.

“Don’t even think about it!” Duke Long gave a loud shout as he used all his strength to hold back Calamity Luck Altar and Seven Extreme Desolation without any regards to his injuries.

Bing Sai Chuan was unable to break free so he quickly mobilized his forces.

The Northern Plains immortals attacked once again, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals suffered heavy casualties, but with Gu Immortals constantly awakening from the immortal graveyard and filling up the gaps, the defensive line instead became more firm than before.

“Good, now is the time! Eh?!” Liu Liu Liu wanted to quietly sneak in, but his expression soon changed as his concealment was gone and his true body was revealed.

A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal, with a large amount of jade pearls floating around him, flew towards him with killing intent: “You are the one? The culprit who is stained with the blood of many of my Heavenly Court friends! Your crimes shall end here.”

“Is that Senior Yu Zhu Zi...” Yuan Qiong Du who was just about to enter the formation saw this scene by chance and was extremely happy.

In history, rank eight Gu Immortal Yu Zhu Zi was most proficient at exposing concealment. From the amount of jade pearls floating around him, he no doubt had most of his Immortal Gu. As such, Liu Liu Liu was restrained by him.

“We can win! With so many Heavenly Court seniors here, we can definitely win!”

“No, more accurately saying, victory will inevitably and naturally belong to my Heavenly Court!!”

Yuan Qiong Du’s eyes flashed with resolution.

He entered the Gu formation once again and had just taken control of it when he pleasantly discovered this refinement path formation was much superior than the previous one.

“So that’s it.”

“To restore fate Gu, our seniors have added in so many Immortal Gu...”

Tears appeared in Yuan Qiong Du’s eyes.

The more Immortal Gu used in this refinement path formation, the fewer Immortal Gu the Gu Immortals would have, they were more likely to die in the battlefield.

This was their sacrifice!

A willing sacrifice.

“I need to continue repairing fate Gu!” Yuan Qiong Du sat cross-legged, his expression was tranquil, but a fire was burning in his heart.

It was blazing!

A deep memory surfaced within the fire.

His master was standing before him: “Little Du, you are sleeping at the back of the mountain again. It is not good if you are so lazy all the time!”

The young Yuan Qiong Du woke up with a resentful expression: “Master!”

He mumbled and said angrily: “Master, why don’t you transfer me back? I like fire path, a true man should choose fire path!”

“But Little Du, your talent in refinement path is extremely shocking, so master made you cultivate refinement path. In comparison, your fire path talent is too ordinary.”

“But I like fire path, it looks so cool and awesome in fights.... As for refinement path, I have to constantly stay in a secret room and endlessly refine Gu. Not to mention there is high cost, Gu refinement fails frequently and all the effort will be wasted. More importantly, there is a huge danger in refining Gu just like in battle. Rather than dying from depression from refining Gu, I would rather use fire path and die grandly in the battlefield!”

1His master sighed helplessly and said in a serious tone: “Little Du, you have to choose refinement path not because you like it but because it is your responsibility. Our refinement path faction really needs a genius like you to invigorate it! Don’t let your temperament get the better of you, Little Du. You are already a man, you should accept your responsibility, understood?”

Young Yuan Qiong Du flung his head back indignantly: “Tsk, understood. If this is master’s order, I will obey it.”

His master sighed again: “It is not an order, it is your responsibility. Moreover, cultivating refinement path is quite delightful as well, you will feel this delight one day. So, take on the responsibility and refine Gu happily.”

“How can that ever happen?!”

...

“The lazy me has never experienced a moment when such a heavy responsibility weighs down on my shoulders.”

“Right.”

“There is also another feeling — joy.”

“Hehehehe, hahaha.” Yuan Qiong Du curled his lips up as he laughed in his head.

Tears were overflowing on his face.

“Master, I finally understand your words!”

“Your disciple did not disappoint you in the end!”

“There is simply no need to divert my attention to protect myself with these comrades here, I do not need to worry.”

“Let’s make a push for it! When fate Gu is completely repaired, I will have completed my responsibility and will not have let down everyone’s expectations. After that... I shall happily embrace death.”

Yuan Qiong Du smiled as he activated a forbidden move. Once this move was used, whether the Gu refinement succeeds or fails, his death would be certain.

But so what if that was the case?

Some things were much more important than an individual’s life!

Hidden Dragon Cave battlefield.

Four Eastern Sea Gu Immortals were surrounding Dragon Palace and attacking madly.

The Four Dragon Generals were suppressed and could only rely on Dragon Palace to defend themselves.

“It seems that becoming a dragonman is not without a cost!”

“Come out, didn’t you want to trap us? Now, you are hiding inside the Immortal Gu House? A bunch of cowards!”

“You really underestimated us.”

Song Qi Yuan, Qing Yue An and the rest were furious as they activated powerful killer moves one after the other, firmly suppressing the other side.

Even a kind person gets angry at times, let alone these four Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals. Duke Long’s scheme and the betrayal of Zhang Yin’s group thoroughly infuriated them, they erupted with an extremely powerful battle strength!

When comparing the temperament of people in the five regions, Eastern Sea was the most gentle and compromising.

But such an unmoving and calm sea also had the side of torrential waves and tsunamis.

When Eastern Sea people were truly angered, their enemies would comprehend what terror truly was.

Suddenly, the attacks of Song Qi Yuan’s group slowed down.

“Someone is here!”

“Who is it?”

“It is clearly Heavenly Court’s reinforcements!”

Song Qi Yuan’s group of four quickly changed their tactics, two continued to attack Dragon Palace while the other two flew out to fight off enemy reinforcements.

“I can only send you all here.” An old Heavenly Court Gu Immortal smiled as his body turned into light specks and dissipated.

His lifespan was exhausted.

“Qin Song, you can go peacefully. It is our turn now!” These were a number of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals that were carefully chosen by Fairy Zi Wei.

“Laughable, coming over so eagerly, you old timers want us to observe your deaths?” Hua Cai Yun and Shen Cong Sheng charged forward.

“Eastern Sea scoundrels, don’t even dream about getting Dragon Palace!”

“Old timer who has a leg in his coffin already, why don’t you just die obediently?!”

Boom boom boom!

Both sides fought immediately.

Infallible blessed land battlefield.

“Roar—!”

Countless dragon roars resounded throughout the whole battlefield.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Ghost Sword Dragon!

This compound killer move that comprised ancient sword dragon transformation, myriad self, yama child, emperor yama, and familiar face, was activated once again.

“He is Fang Yuan!!”

“Quick, protect the formation, we can’t let him succeed.”

“Fang Yuan, you have such guts!”

Fang Yuan sneered: “You want to stop me now? Too late!”

Thanks to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s attack that had attracted the attention of Central Continent’s Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan was able to activate his killer move smoothly.

Myriad ghost sword dragon was extraordinary, not only did it have huge power, it was also difficult to get rid of. After all, this move expended Fang Yuan’s soul path dao marks, it was similar to Wu Yong’s unlimited wind.

The nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation might be powerful but its inner core was still weak, after Fang Yuan’s countless ghost dragons wreaked havoc, it was already showing signs of collapsing.

Fang Yuan turned into emperor yama, myriad dragons roared around him and his cold eyes looked at the Central Continent Gu Immortals who were helpless to do anything. The nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation started to crumble at its core, from inside to outside.

The formation’s collapse inflicted powerful backlash to the Central Continent Gu Immortals; without Fang Yuan having to attack, many were heavily injured and on the verge of dying.

“Fang Yuan really succeeded.” Wu Yong mumbled with a complicated expression.

“Quick, attack them!” Yao Huang shouted, his aged and listless attitude was gone as he led the charge heroically.

“Let me deal with Prince Feng Xian, all of you leave.”

Hairy Foot Mountain, the location of Infallible blessed land, was exposed.

“You want to repair fate Gu, hmph, wishful thinking! Although it is a slight pity to destroy Infallible blessed land, let’s end this here.” Fang Yuan laughed malevolently as he pointed like an emperor, countless sword dragons charged down like his fearless soldiers!

“With me here, don’t even think about it, Fang Yuan!” At the crucial moment, a figure appeared and blocked the countless ghost dragons.

Rank eight fire path expert — Li Huang!

Immortal killer move — Verdant Sun Flame Cloak!

Countless ghost dragons were filled with drunkenness before they even neared and combusted spontaneously.

“With me, Li Huang, here, none of you shall move forward!” Li Huang shouted.

“Is that so... then I will let you have a taste of the consecutive move of myriad ghost sword dragon.” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with cold light.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Fusion Ghost Dragon Sword!

Within a few breaths of time, countless ghost dragons gathered into one, forming an enormous pitch-black dragon marked soul sword!

1The soul sword floated in the air, its tip was pointing towards Li Huang but it did not move.

Immortal killer move — Luo Po Seal!

Fang Yuan struck the soul sword with Luo Po seal.

At the next moment, the soul sword quickly stabbed forward.

Li Huang hesitated for a moment, the soul sword’s speed was astonishing but he could still dodge with his speed.

But right now, he could not dodge! He had to face it head-on!

The soul sword quietly pierced through Li Huang.

The flames subsided, Li Huang’s face became as pale as a dead man’s. His eyes were wide open in disbelief, his body collapsed like a kite with its string cut.

“You dared to face the combined power of both my moves? It was a valiant effort but you could not be any more foolish.” Fang Yuan glanced indifferently.

Li Huang was dead.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1740: Karma Relocation

“Lord Li Huang!!!”

“Oh heavens, how could this happen?”

“Good job!”

In Infallible blessed land battlefield, Li Huang’s corpse fell, shocking countless people.

Fang Yuan laughed malevolently as he continued to charge towards Hairy Foot Mountain while projecting his icy voice throughout the whole battlefield: “Anyone who dares to block me will face this ending!”

In an instant, his awe-inspiring demonic might shocked everyone, Central Continent’s morale fell greatly, a dark light flashed past Wu Yong’s eyes, while Yao Huang’s group was greatly stunned.

Chu Du’s expression was slightly complicated. Back when Fang Yuan was undergoing tribulation while rank six, he had fought with Fang Yuan.

Who could have thought that in just a few years, Fang Yuan had already become a person whom he had to look up to!

“Counting the first time I used myriad ghost sword dragon, this time’s myriad sword ghost dragon usage as well as myriad fusion ghost dragon sword, about ten thousand of my soul path dao marks have been expended!”

Fang Yuan analyzed in his head.

Myriad ghost sword dragon was powerful, but it permanently expended Fang Yuan’s soul path dao marks.

One activation of myriad ghost sword dragon expended four thousand soul path dao marks. After killing Li Huang, Fang Yuan’s soul path dao marks had been shaved off by ten thousand.

Naturally, Fang Yuan did not have so many soul path dao marks yet, he was substituting them with transformation path dao marks.

In short, myriad fusion ghost dragon sword was a powerful move that could kill Li Huang who possessed verdant sun flame cloak, but the cost was extremely high as well.

The significance of dao marks was obvious to a Gu Immortal.

Permanently expending dao marks was directly reducing one’s foundation, it could not be used easily unless absolutely necessary.

Moreover, this move had a flaw, the soul sword’s speed was not outstanding and could be dodged easily.

Fang Yuan knew that Li Huang was protecting Hairy Foot Mountain and could not casually dodge the attack, so he used this move.

“Hairy Foot Mountain...”

Looking at Hairy Foot Mountain that was getting closer in his vision, Fang Yuan gave a moved sigh.

Who could have thought the majestic and renowned Infallible blessed land would be on Hairy Foot Mountain. From the outside, this mountain was extremely ordinary, it was like an inconspicuous hill.

But in truth, it was one of the most important areas to Heavenly Court in order to repair fate Gu, and now had become an area to determine victory or defeat in this arduous battle.

“Fang Yuan!!” At the next moment, another figure appeared and blocked Fang Yuan’s path.

It was Chen Yi!

“Wu Yong did not kill you, then let me end your life instead.” Fang Yuan called out as he prepared myriad fusion ghost dragon sword once again.

Chen Yi’s face turned solemn.

Even Li Huang had perished, he did not have any confidence in facing myriad fusion ghost dragon sword.

“Hmm? This is!” At the crucial moment, Chen Yi suddenly felt his chest burning as if a hot iron was pressed on his flesh.

A powerful and mysterious force circulated and permeated his body.

Following the surging of this strength, Chen Yi’s clothes were ripped apart, revealing his chest.

There was a painting on his chest, the painting of a tall tree wavering in the wind!

“Ahhh!” Chen Yi cried out in shock: “Isn’t this painting the one which was engraved on my body when I inherited Genesis Lotus’ true inheritance many years ago?”

At the same time, information was directly transmitted to his mind.

“This is Lord Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s arrangement!”

Chen Yi was surprised and happy, he quickly activated the strongest ability according to this information.

Immortal killer move — Karma Divine Tree!

Immediately, green smoke rose from Chen Yi’s body.

The smoke gathered six feet above his head, gradually slowing down to a stop and circulating within itself, forming into the shape of a tree.

The tree was thick and sturdy with dense amounts of branches and lush leaves, and there were dozens of fruits hanging on it. But these fruits were very weird, they were in all kinds of shapes, colors and sizes. Some were like black peaches, some were pink but large like a basin, some had spikes on them, some had transparent skin, the flesh and core could be seen from the outside.

Karma divine tree formed quickly and the power within the painting transferred to karma divine tree.

Chen Yi seemed to have heard Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s voice: “Look closely, this is the consecutive move built upon karma divine tree — Karma Relocation!”

The killer move activated, as if intense winds were blowing, the green smoke flickered as karma divine tree started to sway and dance in the wind.

Myriad fusion ghost dragon sword attacked like a meteoric thunderbolt.

But just when it neared karma divine tree, with a whoosh, myriad fusion ghost dragon sword suddenly disappeared.

“What?!” Fang Yuan was shocked.

At that instant, he sensed that his connection to his killer move myriad fusion ghost dragon sword became negligible, as if myriad fusion ghost dragon sword was suddenly worlds apart from him!

“What method is this? It seems like instant transportation?” Fang Yuan immediately narrowed his eyes as sharp light flashed past them.

The connection between immortal killer moves and Gu Immortals had a certain limit in range. When it surpassed this limit, the immortal killer move would usually break apart.

Fang Yuan’s myriad fusion ghost dragon sword was based on the killer move myriad ghost sword dragon and carried the trait of enslavement path, thus he could still maintain a trace of connection even if it was teleported over ten thousand li away.

But this connection was extremely faint, if it surpassed this distance even a little, the killer move would collapse by itself.

If that happened, Fang Yuan would suffer the backlash of killer move failure.

Myriad fusion ghost dragon sword was so powerful, its backlash absolutely would not be weak and would definitely make him cough out blood.

“It can forcibly teleport killer moves?” Wu Yong obtained the information from Fang Yuan: “Then let me see how you deal with my farewell friend wind.”

Wu Yong sneered.

His figure appeared behind Chen Yi.

Immortal killer move — Farewell Friend Wind!

But Wu Yong had just touched Chen Yi’s shoulder when his vision changed.

In an instant, he was teleported away from Infallible blessed land, returning to Southern Border.

“This?!” Wu Yong was dumbfounded as he stood at the peak of the mountain.

Soon afterwards, he came to his senses, his face was extremely dark as he quickly sent the information.

“Even rank eight Gu Immortals can be forcibly sent away?!”

“What killer move is this?”

“Karma divine tree still had such a mysterious ability?”

The Southern Border and Northern Plains immortals were shaken while Central Continent’s morale rose again.

“We will continue defending like this!” Chen Yi was exulted but Fang Yuan’s voice made him solemn once more.

Fang Yuan shouted: “I found it! His teleportation ability seems to be unstoppable but there is a limit in the amount of times he can use it. Because after using it twice, two fruits were consumed!”

“It was discovered so quickly?” Chen Yi smiled bitterly.

“Let me try!” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu flew over, his body shook slightly as he split into countless clones and charged forward like a giant wave.

This was a classic enslavement path battle tactic, a battle of attrition style.

Karma divine tree swayed with the wind, a fruit suddenly disappeared.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s main body disappeared, Fang Yuan’s group received his message shortly afterwards — he was teleported to Eastern Sea!

The immortals were in a clamor.

Fang Yuan sank into deep thought: ‘This time, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s main body was directly teleported away, the enslavement path battle tactic has failed. According to conventional reasoning, shouldn’t it be teleporting each clone? It actually directly affected the main body?!”

This time, Yao Huang’s group charged over.

“Slow down, Brother Chu, you guys attack first.” Fang Yuan instructed.

Chu Du attacked, he used a long range attack on Chen Yi but he quickly disappeared on the spot.

He was teleported back to Northern Plains, ending up in the northern icy plain.

Moreover because the distance was too long, he lost connection with the killer move he used, the killer move broke apart and he suffered the backlash.

Several people attacked next but they were all teleported away.

Fang Yuan suddenly came to a realization: “It seems that my main body is not influenced by this killer move because I am a complete otherworldly demon?”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan started a fierce wave of offense.

However, karma divine tree might be unable to influence him but it could affect his killer moves.

Fang Yuan’s methods were all teleported away, the range was either far or short, some were teleported to some place in Central Continent, some were sent to other four regions, and some were even teleported to black heaven and white heaven.

Naturally, Chen Yi also did not have a good time.

It did not take long before he began to bleed from his seven orifices and his face was getting increasingly pale.

The burden to sustain such a wondrous killer move was clearly huge.

“Damn it, Hairy Foot Mountain is clearly in front of us, but because of Chen Yi alone...” Yao Huang clenched his teeth in helplessness.

Qing Ye and the rest quickly arrived and fought against the Northern Plains and Southern Border immortals.

Fang Yuan dodged the attack of Wind Sweeping Building and sent many myriad ghost sword dragons to attack Chen Yi.

Karma divine tree was constantly shaking, countless myriad ghost sword dragons disappeared, teleported to random locations.

It was okay for those that were teleported nearby, but those that were teleported far away broke apart immediately, inflicting backlash on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan felt that this situation was troublesome!

“Weak killer moves cannot expend karma divine tree’s fruits even if they are teleported away. A strong killer move can expend one fruit but if it is teleported beyond the distance I can control, I will have to endure the backlash and might even be heavily injured if I am unlucky.”

Fang Yuan did not dare to use myriad fusion ghost dragon sword.

He currently did not have winter coat or reverse flow protection seal to rely on, his defensive methods were weaker than Li Huang’s. If myriad fusion ghost dragon sword failed, he would be in great trouble from the backlash.

Fang Yuan’s luck was quite good as the previous myriad fusion ghost dragon sword did not inflict backlash on him.

“What do I do now?” Fang Yuan was anxious.

Bing Sai Chuan had been transmitting the situation in Heavenly Court to him, Fang Yuan knew that the repair of fate Gu had started again.

“This is a wood path method, I don’t have much attainment in this path and won’t be able to decipher it within a short period of time.”

“Looks like I can only use a crude method, we will compete in a battle of attrition! Bai Ning Bing, you all can go ahead and fight now!”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined sharply as he sent the command resolutely.

Bai Ning Bing and other rank seven Gu Immortals charged towards Hairy Foot Mountain.

Karma divine tree activated, every time it teleported a rank seven Gu Immortal, a fruit was expended.

“Fang Yuan actually found the best countermeasure so quickly.” Chen Yi felt anxious, his eyes were filled with blood and he was in a very weak condition.

A large number of rank seven Gu Immortals were teleported away, finally, karma divine tree’s fruits were all spent.

Karma divine tree without any fruits faded away with the wind.

Chen Yi lowered his head, his aura had fallen to an extreme point of weakness.

“You dare to block my way, die!” Fang Yuan charged fiercely.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1741: War Banner of Humanity!

Fang Yuan’s charge was fatally ferocious and he was using myriad fusion ghost dragon sword, which raised his demonic might to another level.

Chen Yi looked at the sky as Fang Yuan approached with such momentum, his entire body shivered as he felt like the sky itself was falling towards him, it was unstoppable and unavoidable!

“In that case, there is no need to block it or evade it.” Chen Yi who was already a spent force, had his chest standing firm as he faced his death nonchalantly.

“Lord Chen Yi!” Bai Cang Shui and other Gu Immortals shouted, wanting to come over to rescue him.

But Chi Qu You, Yi Hao Fang and others followed behind Fang Yuan and quickly blocked these reinforcements.

The enormous soul sword pierced through Chen Yi’s body and struck Hairy Foot Mountain with its remaining force.

At the next moment, Hairy Foot Mountain disintegrated while Chen Yi’s corpse fell powerlessly.

“Chen Yi is also dead!” The Southern Border and Northern Plains immortals were shaken.

Fang Yuan had successively killed two Heavenly Court experts, his demonic might was now ingrained in people’s minds.

However.

“Hairy Foot Mountain is destroyed but Infallible blessed land is still standing!” Fang Yuan frowned as he looked at the pile of mountain rubble under him.

Heavenly Court had detected the precise location of Infallible blessed land but had never invaded it in their countless years of existence, instead they used human path methods to borrow the strength of Infallible blessed land and draw out success dao marks.

At this urgent moment, Fang Yuan was unable to damage Infallible blessed land, let alone destroy it.

Not long after Chen Yi died, another Gu Immortal died in Heavenly Court as well.

Yuan Qiong Du!

He was sitting cross-legged on the ground, dying with a smile on his face.

Following his death, Heaven Overseeing Tower’s peak began to let out a vigorous aura.

“This is a rank nine Immortal Gu’s aura.”

“Fate Gu!!”

“Fried Yuan Qiong Du sacrificed himself...”

“Does this mean?!”

This aura’s appearance froze the whole of the Heavenly Court battlefield. Longevity Heaven’s members’ expression changed greatly while the Heavenly Court immortals’ eyes shined brightly and their faces were filled with joy.

“Damn it! We failed?” Bing Sai Chuan clenched his teeth: “Retreat!”

Seven Extreme Desolation remained behind as Calamity Luck Altar began to retreat.

“What’s going on? Why do I have this feeling of emptiness?” In Infallible blessed land battlefield, Fang Yuan immediately felt something.

“Hahaha!” Duke Long laughed heartily, he did not obstruct Calamity Luck Altar.

He arrived inside Heaven Overseeing Tower and moved to the peak.

“Fate Gu, fate Gu...” Duke Long mumbled as tears flowed down his eyes.

He was too happy, too excited.

He was personally looking at a complete fate Gu right in front of his very eyes!

Many years of anticipation and desire, many years of longing had finally come to fruition at this moment!

The meaning behind repairing fate Gu was much more important and complicated to Duke Long than the other Heavenly Court members.

Because back then, it was his own disciple who had injured fate Gu!

“Hong Ting, master has atoned for your mistake. I did not let down Heavenly Court, I did not let down humanity! Hahaha, hahaha!”

Duke Long’s loud voice resounded in Heavenly Court from the top of Heaven Overseeing Tower — “After over a million years! Heavenly Court has regained a complete rank nine fate Gu once again!”

Swoosh!

At the next moment, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals shouted in joy, some were red from their excitement, some cried, and some passed away in full satisfaction.

Heavenly Court’s morale surged to an extreme point, while Longevity Heaven’s Bing Sai Chuan and others were pale as they quickly retreated.

The die was cast!

There was nothing they could do now!

Longevity Heaven was decisive in invading Heavenly Court and was also decisive in retreating.

Over three million years ago.

Central Continent, Qi Breath Peak.

This peak was not a mountain, or more accurately speaking, it was only a mountain peak.

The peak contained a dense amount of qi path dao marks, it was extremely mystical. The peak could breathe out air just like the breathing of a human.

Every few decades or centuries, it would fly away and move to other places, continuing to breathe different air and then continuing this cycle.

Qi Breath Peaks were few in number, most had owners, and so did this Qi Breath Peak.

Its owner was Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, but right now, he was only a rank seven Gu Immortal.

Gu Immortal Primordial Origin was cultivating in Qi Breath Peak, using the ability of Qi Breath Peak to breathe in different kinds of qi and comprehend the profundities of qi path.

On this day, he slowly opened his eyes within a secret cave.

A mortal Gu Master had barged into his Qi Breath Peak.

He was slightly surprised.

He was a person who fully concentrated on cultivation, he was free and unrestrained. He only wanted to comprehend the Great Dao and did not want to be disturbed by external affairs. Thus, he had set up many arrangements not only on Qi Breath Peak but also around the surrounding mountains.

Not to mention mortal Gu Masters, even if many Gu Immortals came here, they might not be able to find his existence. They might even turn a blind eye to the mystical Qi Breath Peak.

“A mortal Gu Master has actually barged in today... interesting, interesting.”

Primordial Origin felt interested and appeared in front of this Gu Master. But before he even spoke, that mortal Gu Master kowtowed: “Gu Master Yu Ji pays respects to Immortal Primordial Origin!”

“Oh? You actually know my name? Speak, who instructed you and helped you to pass through my obstacles with just a Gu Master’s ability?” Primordial Origin immediately turned solemn.

How could a mortal Gu Master possess such an ability, he firmly believed that there was definitely a Gu Immortal helping the Gu Master.

But Gu Master Yu Ji shook his head: “Immortal Primordial Origin, I did not receive any Gu Immortal’s help, but relied on the guidance of fate Gu.”

“Fate Gu? Hmph, don’t talk nonsense. This Gu is a rank nine Gu, it is protected in the Rockman Imperial Court and is watched by multiple rank eight rockman Gu Immortals all year round, you...” Primordial Origin had yet to finish speaking when his eyes suddenly opened wide.

The mortal Gu Master Yu Ji presented a Gu worm with both hands.

Rank nine aura overflowed, what else could it be but fate Gu?

Primordial Origin was instantly taken aback, his tranquil heart was greatly disturbed. He forced himself to remain calm: “Yu Ji, stand up, how did you steal this fate Gu and how did you bring this Gu here from such a faraway place?”

"Also, you said you received fate Gu's guidance? But according to what I know, no Gu Immortal can use fate Gu, only the Heavenly Dao can use this Gu. How can you have the ability to use fate Gu?"

Yu Ji spoke in detail: "I am a slave of the beloved grandson of the first supreme elder in the rockman tribe. I had been secretly working in place of master to clean the Rockman Sacred Hall and maintain the cleanliness of fate Gu's surroundings. I forgot which day it was, but I discovered that as long as I got near to fate Gu, I could sense fate's arrangements and the path of every living being's life."

"I received fate Gu's guidance like this and learned of many future events and also realized my mission. Afterwards, when featherman Gu Immortals infiltrated Rockman Sacred Hall and were discovered, I took fate Gu away amidst the chaos, I escaped using a hidden tunnel in the Rockman Sacred Hall."

"I had fate Gu but it restrained its aura by its own will. Although there were many dangers in my journey, be they Gu Immortals or any methods that obstructed me, I had ample time to prepare and successfully escape after receiving fate Gu's premonitions. Thus, there were dangerous situations in my journey but never fatal threats, eventually, I made my way here."

Primordial Origin could not help but evaluate Gu Master Yu Ji internally after hearing all this.

Yu Ji spoke lightly but looking at his scars, it was clear he had faced a lot of difficulties and suffering on this journey.

"You don't need to be modest, although you had the help of fate Gu, it is your bravery and planning that allowed you to achieve all these as a mortal Gu Master!" Primordial Origin praised, his expression became warm.

He asked again: "So why did you steal fate Gu and travel so far to bring it to me?"

Yu Ji said: "It was not I who stole fate Gu but fate Gu itself wanted to be brought to you. Lord immortal, you are fate Gu's master, I have already seen it through fate Gu. Not only this, lord immortal, you are... hmm, you should experience this personally."

Yu Ji then lowered his head while raising his hands, offering fate Gu to Primordial Origin.

Primordial Origin was not fully convinced, but the moment he held fate Gu, countless images flashed past his eyes and endless information was transmitted to his mind.

He immediately understood, everything was clear now!

"So it was not Yu Ji who could use fate Gu, but fate Gu itself let him see the changes in the world and the path of all beings' lives."

"According to fate, variant human races, who have been dominating the five regions, will decline. Humanity will replace them to become the leading figures of the world, we will trample on every variant human race and become the new overlord of the world!"

"Humanity will reign supreme!"

"And myself, as well as this Gu Master Yu Ji, will lead the rise of the human race, we will be the crucial characters to take on the challenges of variant human experts and suppress the situation.”

After understanding everything, Primordial Origin was shaken as well as happy.

He could not help but feel happiness!

Because he was a member of the human race.

Although he had become a Gu Immortal, the status of humans was very low. Most humans were slaves sold and bought wantonly by variant humans, they were humiliated and oppressed.

Not only human mortals and Gu Masters, even human Gu Immortals had low status in the Gu Immortal world. Many human Gu Immortals were even slaves of variant humans!

Human Gu Immortals like Primordial Origin who lived freely might be besieged by many variant human Gu Immortals any day. If they were unlucky enough to be taken as a prisoner, they might become slaves of the variant humans!

“I really wanted to resist them but even after becoming a rank seven Gu Immortal, I cannot match the battle strength of many variant human Gu Immortals. That’s why I had been cultivating endlessly and wanted to create a path that belonged solely to us humans.”

“Now that fate Gu has shown me the way, the future belongs to us humans. I will even become the leader of the human Gu Immortals in the future, I will create qi path and lead humanity to prosperity!”

“Humanity will reign supreme!”

“This is heaven’s will! This is the trend of the future! This is the heart of the people!”

Primordial Origin was extremely excited as he laughed loudly while holding fate Gu.

He was so happy that tears fell.

Yu Ji also grinned happily, he was also a human after all.

Humanity had been oppressed and suffered under the hands of variant human races for too long!

After taking a long breath, Primordial Origin calmed his feelings and took a deep look at fate Gu: “Yu Ji, you are a hero of our human race! A great hero!”

“You brought fate Gu to me, even though we cannot activate it at will, this is the greatest banner we can hold. I won’t hide it from you, I already had thoughts of resisting the variant humans, but there are too few of us human Gu Immortals, and even more troubling is that many human Gu Immortals are slaves, they are treated like ants with not even a bit of respect and they also do not dare to offend their masters. Because they know how tiny they are when compared to the variant humans, they know how weak we humans are!”

“But now, with this fate Gu, we can show the world, we can let every human Gu Immortal know — The future belongs to us, humanity will reign supreme!!”

“Fate Gu will summon their lost courage, ignite their hope, and spur on their fighting spirit to resist! Moreover, we can unite all of the humans with this.”

“This is a banner!”

“This is the war banner of humanity to rise and rule the world!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1742: Fate Vanquish

Inside Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Duke Long softly caressed fate Gu with tears silently flowing down his face.

1Fate Gu looked like a spider, colored in black and white. Its aura had been weak, there was a scarlet wound on its body that almost cut it in two. This was the injury caused by Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

But now!

The scarlet wound was gone without a trace, the complete and intact fate Gu was lying down quietly with a vigorous aura.

Life or death is decreed by fate, success or failure is up to heaven!

All things in the world followed their own fixed trail which could not be changed.

This was fate.

Fate Gu was a representation of many things in Heavenly Court.

Relying on fate Gu, they changed the hearts of the people, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable led humanity to rise up, he established Heavenly Court!

Relying on fate Gu, Star Constellation made arrangements and Heavenly Court resisted three Demon Venerables!

Relying on fate Gu, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable inherited his predecessors' ambitions and progressed, Heavenly Court continued to hold onto the throne of the number one Gu Immortal force in the world!

Fate Gu was not just a rank nine Gu to Heavenly Court, it was the spirit and banner that had always throbbed in the hearts of countless generations of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals!

“So many years, after so many years...” Duke Long mumbled.

2The turbulent waves in his heart gradually calmed down.

Duke Long’s body no longer trembled from agitation, as if he was released from a heavy burden.

Indeed, he felt released from a heavy burden!

Differing from most Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, repairing fate Gu had much deeper meaning to Duke Long.

Because the one who injured fate Gu was none other than his proudest disciple!

In other words, he was one of the culprits who injured fate Gu!

All these years, Duke Long blamed himself for this. To repair fate Gu and repent for his sins, he did not hesitate in sacrificing his own life by activating heavenly dragon’s last stand.

Even when he was hibernating, he had been uneasy and terrified.

“Can I really succeed in repairing fate Gu?”

“I must succeed in repairing it, I must!”

“Otherwise, how can I face the other two dukes, how can I face the common people, how can I face the later generations of Heavenly Court members, how I face the whole of humanity?!”

This was the voice that lingered in Duke Long’s mind every day.

And now, he had finally accomplished it!

“It was not just because of me, this was the accomplishment of all my comrades! All our sacrifices were worth it.” Duke Long smiled in satisfaction.

Right now, his hair was disheveled and his dragon horns were already broken, his whole body was bathed in blood.

His injuries were extremely severe but the more terrifying thing was that his lifespan was at its end.

He was about to die completely without leaving behind even a trace of his soul.

At the final moment of his life, although it was not his most blissful moment, it was absolutely his most free and relaxed moment.

So naturally, he felt fatigue.

Tired.

Too tired.

Both his body and mind were exhausted.

The torment and burden he had endured all these years was entirely let go of, the intense battle as well as his injuries made him extremely tired.

“I really want to rest well.” Duke Long’s breathing slowed down, his dragon eyes were like the sea which contained incomparably complex and profound emotions.

He slowly took back his hand and gave one last look at fate Gu before slowly turning around.

His gaze moved past Heaven Overseeing Tower and swept through the battlefield.

Although the battle was still going on intensely, Calamity Luck Altar had already retreated far away.

“It is time to end everything, this battle...” Duke Long took a deep breath and spoke loudly, his voice spreading throughout the whole Heavenly Court: “Longevity Heaven, you want to leave so easily? Hehe, aren’t you too naive in thinking so?”

Duke Long controlled Heaven Overseeing Tower to fly into the air.

This Immortal Gu House which was renowned throughout the world had returned to being a genuine rank nine Immortal Gu House now!

Under Heavenly Court immortals’ gaze, Heaven Overseeing Tower began to let out dazzling light, as if a deity had descended upon the battlefield.

Heaven Overseeing Tower, Heaven Overseeing Tower!

It monitored the world, followed the will of heaven and upheld justice for heaven!

“This is the true Heaven Overseeing Tower!”

“It has been so long, it has finally reappeared....”

“I am really fortunate, I could see such a scene in my final moments.”

Countless gazes of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals turned blurry, many of them were at the end of their lives but they had satisfied smiles on their faces.

“Retreat—!” Bing Sai Chuan’s voice was so loud that it turned hoarse.

Even the valiant Longevity Heaven looked scared right now as they retreated.

“It is pointless.” Duke Long said softly from inside Heaven Overseeing Tower, his squinted eyes shined with a trace of pride.

Heaven Overseeing Tower suddenly let out an intense light!

Immortal killer move — Fate Vanquish.

Light.

Light was everywhere.

White light.

Filling the world from all directions.

This was a true rank nine killer move!

An attack decreed by fate that could not be dodge no matter which method was used.

If fate wants you to lose, you will lose no matter what.

This was an unavoidable attack.

Light dispersed, the Heavenly Court immortals were all standing proudly in the battlefield, while the many past experts of Northern Plains looked shaken or in disbelief, some had bitter smiles as they disintegrated.

The phantom River of Time also slowly disappeared.

Calamity Luck Altar was in a highly ruined state, like a mortal hut that had suffered from a hurricane.

Inside Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan, Bull Demon, and Five Elements Grandmaster were heavily injured and coughed out mouthfuls of blood.

“Leave.” Bing Sai Chuan gasped as he controlled the half-damaged Calamity Luck

Altar.

Yellow light shined once again in the air, this was a backup plan prepared by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable; it paved out a road to retreat.

Calamity Luck Altar entered the yellow light successfully.

“You want to leave?”

“Where can you escape to!”

Heavenly Court immortals charged together.

“Leave quickly!” Mao Li Qiu clenched its teeth, it forcibly stood up with its dying body and blocked Heavenly Court’s immortals with a resolute expression.

“Everyone, please step back.” Duke Long sent out the command.

Heavenly Court’s immortals were surprised.

Fairy Zi Wei: “Lord Duke Long?”

Duke Long sighed: “Preserve some foundation for Heavenly Court.”

The immortals were silent.

Heavenly Court had suffered a disastrous loss in this battle.

It was truly a huge ordeal.

As a result of lacking Immortal Gu, many rank eight Gu Immortals had to use their own bodies to block Longevity Heaven’s attacks, as such, many were sacrificed.

In Heavenly Court’s situation, because of the immortal graveyard, they had many rank eight Gu Immortals but insufficient Immortal Gu!

Duke Long still remembered how Star Constellation’s will had appeared and specially instructed him to have many rank eight Gu Immortals in hibernation. There undoubtedly were deeper reasons behind this, but in this battle, too many rank eight Gu Immortals had awakened in Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard and many of them were sacrificed.

Not only were there no new rank eight Gu Immortals in hibernation, it instead caused them to lose many existing ones.

Although fate Gu was successfully restored, Duke Long still felt uneasy because of this.

“Heavenly Court has now completely restored rank nine fate Gu, including myself, who can go against us? Even if it is a rank nine venerable method, I can fight against it using Heaven Overseeing Tower. Everyone, please return to the immortal graveyard, I will call for you if the need arises.” Duke Long urged.

“Since it is so...”

“Alright, with fate Gu and Lord Duke Long here, which enemy can stop us?”

“Then let’s go back to hibernating.”

Most of the Gu Immortals returned to the immortal graveyard, but few remained. These people were already at the end of their lifespan like Duke Long, there was not much meaning for them to hibernate again.

Duke Long left behind Fairy Zi Wei and others to clean up the battlefield and guard Heavenly Court, while he led a small group to chase after Longevity Heaven with Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Calamity Luck Altar brought the defeated forces of Longevity Heaven and escaped Heavenly Court, but so what?

Their speed could never compare to Heaven Overseeing Tower’s, and furthermore, they were in Central Continent.

Duke Long wanted to retain these people, whether it be killing them or taking them as prisoners, both would showcase the awe-inspiring might of Heavenly Court and let the other four regions’ Gu Immortals understand the price for offending Heavenly Court!

“What? Longevity Heaven is retreating in defeat, Heavenly Court repaired fate Gu completely?!”

“Sigh, this battle is our defeat, let’s retreat.”

“Escape! Heaven Overseeing Tower with fate Gu is the number one Immortal Gu House in the current world!”

“Be it Duke Long or Heaven Overseeing Tower, we are not their match.”

After getting this news, the battle situation in Infallible blessed land immediately underwent a complete change.

Southern Border and Northern Plains immortals had the intentions to retreat, even Fang Yuan was the same.

He felt a huge pity regarding this but he could do nothing about it.

Except, he could not imagine that at the next moment, he saw the arrival of the devastated Calamity Luck Altar as well as the Heavenly Court forces chasing them closely.

For some reason, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had created the retreat route for Longevity Heaven above Hairy Foot Mountain and it had not been discovered by anyone.

“Good, then I will take you all out at once!” Duke Long laughed heartily.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1743: Final Chance

“It is already too late to retreat now. Everyone, please cooperate to counterattack Heavenly Court! They have already used fate vanquish once, they won’t be able to use it again in a short period of time. This is our final chance!” Bing Sai Chuan shouted.

The Gu Immortals immediately reacted as they charged forward with clenched teeth.

Bing Sai Chuan was right, Heaven Overseeing Tower was extremely fast, they would not be able to escape.

Naturally, it was not that some did not think of using other Gu Immortals to stall for time while they escaped.

But the crucial thing was Central Continent was too large while they were now deep in Central Continent, even if each of them escaped in different directions, Heaven Overseeing Tower had enough time to eradicate them.

Every Southern Border and Northern Plains immortal was in a desperate situation and could only stay and fight.

This battle turned all the surroundings into a dark and gloomy state.

The Northern Plains and Southern Border immortals knew how perilous their situation was, none of them held back and used everything they had to fight back.

Heavenly Court’s pursuing group had chased with overwhelming momentum, but after contacting the allied forces of Southern Border and Northern Plains, facing their counterattack, they instead fell into disadvantage.

“Fairy Zi Wei, has the news of fate Gu’s restoration been announced to the world?” Duke Long sat inside Heaven Overseeing Tower and contacted Fairy Zi Wei.

Shortly afterwards, Fairy Zi Wei responded: “The news has already been disseminated in treasure yellow heaven, not only this, Lord Duke Long, your current battle scenes are being broadcasted everywhere through human path methods.”

Since rank nine fate Gu was restored completely, Heavenly Court naturally was going to publicize this news to raise their side’s morale and intimidate their enemies.

With this, Heavenly Court could gain the support of the people, even directly persuading those Gu Immortals who were still making chaos and plundering resources in Central Continent to retreat.

Duke Long’s previous command had only been to spread the news of fate Gu. But Fairy Zi Wei took it a step further and was broadcasting the battle in Infallible blessed land.

In an instant, countless mortals, Gu Masters, and Gu Immortals learned of the battle.

Heavenly Court’s action showed their confidence in winning!

It was also quite clear that Heavenly Court, possessing rank nine fate Gu, had huge dominance in the battlefield.

Fairy Zi Wei wanted to take this chance to showcase Heavenly Court’s battle strength by capturing all these elites of Southern Border and Northern Plains in one fell swoop, to raise the prestige of Central Continent and Heavenly Court to an all-time peak!

Duke Long understood Fairy Zi Wei’s thoughts but he frowned lightly.

“These Southern and Northern immortals are in a perilous situation, they are like cornered beasts with the will of dying soldiers, that caused our side to be at a disadvantage. Although this is only temporary...”

Duke Long realized Fairy Zi Wei’s deeper intentions, although it was slightly abrupt, since she had already done it, he had to actively cooperate.

They had to showcase Heavenly Court’s power to the greatest extent, this would not only announce the news of fate Gu’s successful restoration, it would also display powerful strength that could cause others to shake in fear and not dare to oppose Heavenly Court.

The other four regions had intervened in this Refinement Path Convention. They wreaked havoc in Central Continent and plundered cultivation resources, greatly harming Heavenly Court’s prestige.

Now, to raise their prestige again, Heavenly Court had to display absolute strength by dealing with all these Southern and Northern immortals. They would gain the people’s support and make the other four regions fearful of offending them again.

Fate vanquish was no doubt the best choice.

It was a rank nine killer move and because fate Gu was restored completely, its might was even more terrifying and absolute.

But fate vanquish could not be activated frequently and needed some time to be used again.

“Looks like I have to make a move personally. Otherwise, with this battle being broadcasted everywhere and Heavenly Court immortals being suppressed, our performance would not look good.”

Duke Long arranged for several Gu Immortals to take control of Heaven Overseeing Tower while he personally floated out.

“Duke Long has come out, be extremely careful of him!” Bing Sai Chuan was deeply aware of Duke Long’s terrifying power, quickly reminding the others.

“We will attack together!” Yao Huang shouted, Fang Yuan and others quickly responded.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and other Immortal Gu Houses protected these rank eight Gu Immortals.

Duke Long had just come out when he was besieged by Fang Yuan and the rest’s joint attacks.

Several rank eight killer moves were unleashed, shocking the world with their might.

“Be careful!”

“Despicable!”

“Dodge it!”

All over Central Continent, especially in the ten great ancient sects, a large number of Gu Immortals shouted in shock.

They saw Duke Long being besieged through the video scenes, they were worried and furious.

Bam bam bam...

Loud explosions resounded again and again, causing dust clouds to appear everywhere.

Inside the dust clouds, Duke Long’s giant body, however, remained unmoved.

The nine phantom dragons around his body opened their mouths and breathed out strong wind, instantly dispersing the dust clouds.

Duke Long was still hovering at the same place with a calm expression.

His dragon pupils glanced around him indifferently: “Are you trying to scratch my itch with these tricks?”

“Strong! So strong!” Yao Huang and the rest who had fought Duke Long for the first time felt their heart shaken, despite them having already received first hand information about the battle in Heavenly Court.

Bing Sai Chuan gritted his teeth, his eyes slightly dazed: “He is several times stronger than before! We don’t have Seven Extreme Desolation now, we can’t be his match with just the half-ruined Calamity Luck Altar. What should I do?”

Immortal killer move — Myriad Ghost Sword Dragon!

Immortal killer move — Centipede Scar!

Fang Yuan and Heavenly Lord Bai Zu sent out their killer moves at the same time. On one side, sword qi rampaged and ghost dragons filled the sky, on the other side, countless grayish centipedes flew, seemingly illusion and seemingly real.

The two killer moves drowned Duke Long from all directions.

Countless viewers in Central Continent let out a cry of shock, feeling worried for Duke Long.

From amidst the sea of dragons and centipedes, Duke Long’s carefree voice sounded out: “Good moves... but they are not enough!”

Immortal killer move — Qi Current Scissors!

Boom!

A huge explosion rose a terrifying wave in the sea of dragons and centipedes.

Qi current scissors flew everywhere, cutting apart dragons like paper. The centipedes were in an even more miserable state, they were smashed into fragments that scattered in the air.

Seeing Duke Long safe and sound, the whole of Central Continent rejoiced.

“Mother, that dragon-horned person is our Central Continent’s immortal?”

“Duke Long, he is the master of the legendary Red Lotus Demon Venerable! He has such overwhelming strength.”

“Heavenly Court has made its move, it is better for me to retreat.”

“I have already plundered many resources, I should leave here before deciding anything else.”

Just like Duke Long and Fairy Zi Wei predicted, the invading Gu Immortals began to retreat. Central Continent’s morale soared continuously, everyone’s hearts had merged together.

“Our attrition battle tactic was completely ineffective.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s face was ashen.

“It’s my turn now.” Duke Long said lightly, dragon-shaped qi suddenly flashed and he vanished on the spot.

“So fast!”

“Where did he go?”

Yi Hao Fang’s mind suddenly let out intense warning signals, he quickly raised his head and saw Duke Long above him.

1Dragon claws smashed down, Yi Hao Fang only had the time to raise his hands to block them.

Boom!

Yi Hao Fang was sent crashing down from the height of five hundred feet, he created a huge pit on the ground.

Guh.

Yi Hao Fang’s expression was filled with terror as he coughed out a mouthful of blood.

The strike just now had not only broken his defense, it had even inflicted heavy injuries upon him.

Dragon-shaped qi flashed and Duke Long appeared before Yi Hao Fang once again.

But immediately afterwards, Five Elements Grandmaster and Chi Qu You appeared on the left and right of Duke Long.

Although they could not see Duke Long’s image and keep up with his speed, they had plentiful battle experiences and had calculated Duke Long would continue attacking Yi Hao Fang.

After all, as the saying goes, injuring all ten of a man’s fingers was not as crippling as chopping one off.

“Duke Long, you fell for it!”

“You can stay trapped here!”

Two great formation path Gu Immortals, one southern and one northern, laid out a formation instantly.

“A tiny formation dares to trap me?” Duke Long scoffed, his large body shook as he let out his strength.

The formation shattered like glass, Chi Qu You and Five Elements Grandmaster both let out a muffled grunt from the backlash.

But Duke Long was also stopped for a moment and missed the chance to kill Yi Hao Fang.

Yi Hao Fang had already left the pit and was healing himself while feeling icy cold inside.

Duke Long’s power was beyond imagination.

Yi Hao Fang was a famous rank eight expert of the present age Southern Border, he was actually almost killed by Duke Long in less than three moves.

“Such power, probably only a venerable can suppress him.”

“Be it defense, offense, or movement, Duke Long is superior in every aspect. Even if we besiege him, he can still retaliate with ease.”

“Who can stop such a person?!”

All the Southern and Northern immortals were shaking in fear and many more were at a loss.

Duke Long was unstoppable, not to mention there was still the rank nine Heaven Overseeing Tower with a complete fate Gu.

What should they do?

As if answering the doubts of the immortals, rumbling sounds spread and earth started to crack.

A huge rift spread across the whole battlefield.

Boom!

At the next moment, the ground burst open and endless soil and stones flew out like a dark tsunami.

A giant dragon that was the size of a mountain flew out from the rift.

The dragon opened its mouth, its mouth was filled with uneven teeth that were sharp like spears and caused people to feel fear.

“Duke Long, I will crush you to pieces!!” The giant dragon roared.

Legendary immemorial desolate beast — Di Zang Sheng!

“Hmm?” A strange expression flashed past Duke Long’s face as he snorted and charged head-on without dodging.

An immortal and a beast started fighting but their fight was a stalemate.

“When did Di Zang Sheng become so powerful?” Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were stunned.

“The five regions are merging and the earth veins are uniting, countless lives were sacrificed in this large battle which incited fury of Central Continent’s people, all these raised Di Zang Sheng’s strength sharply!”

“But... wasn’t Di Zang Sheng trapped in Hidden Dragon Cave, how could it suddenly appear here?”

The immortals were shocked and puzzled.

But they all knew that back then Duke Long had personally suppressed Di Zang Sheng, so Di Zang Sheng coming to find trouble with Duke Long personally was also natural.

Just like Duke Long had said in Heavenly Court, Di Zang Sheng’s battle strength would rise to become comparable to Duke Long himself.

“If this is not handled properly, Di Zang Sheng will become the strongest legendary immemorial desolate beast of the current world!”

“This is amazing, truly, there is always a way out of predicaments.”

“Let’s take this chance to quickly retreat.”

“We can’t retreat!” Fang Yuan however shouted: “This is the perfect opportunity to attack! The arrogant Duke Long is stalled by Di Zang Sheng. Now, we can go to Heaven Overseeing Tower and destroy fate Gu!”

Saying so, Fang Yuan took the lead to charge towards Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Bing Sai Chuan was the first to react. He called out to the Northern Plains immortals and followed closely behind.

The Southern Border immortals also went into a frenzy and attacked furiously a moment later.

“You dare!” Duke Long was anxious but was firmly held back by Di Zang Sheng, he could only look as Fang Yuan and the rest charged forward.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1744: Everybody’s Vision

Central Continent, Thunder Peak Mountain Range.

Boom!

A loud explosion resounded through tens of li.

Three Gu Immortals were in the midst of a battle.

“Leave behind the electrolytic iron starflower, otherwise, even if I die, I won’t let you two get off easy!” Central Continent Gu Immortal Mi Lan Guang shouted furiously.

He had two opponents.

One was a middle-aged man dressed in a scholar’s attire with large sleeves, the other was a short young man who had quite a lecherous appearance.

The former was an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, Great Treasury Immortal, he had rank seven cultivation and cultivated information path. The latter was a Central Continent Gu Immortal, rank six Jian Yi Sheng.

Great Treasury Immortal frowned, his eyes hid fury and his tone sounded irritated: “Mi Lan Guang, you chased me for so long just for an electrolytic iron starflower? Yes, I admit, this information path and lightning path immortal material was personally grown by you and is something that had never appeared before. My interest was roused and since I cultivate information path like you, I stole one flower to research it.”

“I will tell you honestly, if you continue to chase me for a rank seven immortal material, I will fight with you to death! I will make you realize that Eastern Sea Gu Immortals are not so easily bullied!”

Jian Yi Sheng immediately added flattery: “Senior Great Treasury Immortal, your words are extremely reasonable. We should have already gotten rid of this Mi Lan Guang. Otherwise, if we let him tail behind us, we won’t be able to do any transactions. The current situation is an extremely rare opportunity!”

Great Treasury Immortal took a glance at Jian Yi Sheng and nodded: “I suppose we have to.”

Although Great Treasury Immortal had rank seven cultivation and Jian Yi Sheng only had rank six, the latter was a well-known lone immortal of Central Continent. He was proficient in the killer move sword escape and was extremely mobile, he was well-informed and familiar with the local territories.

1It was because he had told Great Treasury Immortal of Mi Lan Guang’s treasury that Great Treasury Immortal learned of such a special rank seven immortal material like electrolytic iron starflower.

Great Treasury Immortal cultivated information path so he was very interested. He moved with Jian Yi Sheng and used the chaos in Central Continent to steal an electrolytic iron starflower.

But in this process, he was discovered by Mi Lan Guang. Great Treasury Immortal’s action was exposed, he could not help but show a weak stance and did not want to attack, thus getting chased all the way by Mi Lan Guang.

Mi Lan Guang looked at Great Treasury Immortal and then looked at Jian Yi Sheng, laughing coldly: “So it was like this.”

Next, he said something that stunned Great Treasury Immortal.

“Great Treasury Immortal, although you are an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal and are also a famous information path expert whose name I have heard long ago, you have been deceived by Jian Yi Sheng. There are thirteen electrolytic iron starflowers in my valley, you stole one and Jian Yi Sheng plucked three, but the rest were destroyed by him using sword path methods!”

“What?”

Jian Yi Sheng laughed: “Mi Lan Guang, isn’t your method of sowing discord a bit too poor?”

But at the next moment, Great Treasury Immortal turned around to glare at him: “Jian Yi Sheng, how dare you!”

Jian Yi Sheng’s heart immediately skipped a beat: “Not good, they are both information path Gu Immortals, I cannot sense their secret conversation. Great Treasury Immortal might have already received evidence.”

Jian Yi Sheng was resolute, since he could not fool Great Treasury Immortal anymore, he gave a villainous laugh as his body turned into a sword and escaped.

Great Treasury Immortal and Mi Lan Guang were both stunned.

“This Jian Yi Sheng has already advanced to rank seven!”

“Is this his true speed? So fast!”

Great Treasury Immortal was shocked and furious, he was actually duped by Jian Yi Sheng and treated as his tool. Now, Jian Yi Sheng had seized away more benefits than him and even left him to obstruct Mi Lan Guang.

“Brother Mi, I will immediately return that electrolytic iron starflower to you.

Don’t worry, I dug it out along with its roots, it will be convenient for you to plant it again. Moreover, I will also compensate you with resources of equivalent value.” Great Treasury Immortal took a deep breath before saying solemnly.

Mi Lan Guang mumbled before raising his brows: “Your condition is?”

Great Treasury Immortal snorted: “We will ally to deal with Jian Yi Sheng.”

He really hated Jian Yi Sheng.

Mi Lan Guang was also the same.

He gave a clear smile and extended his hands: “It is my honor to work with you, friend from Eastern Sea.”

The two immediately set an agreement and chased after Jian Yi Sheng.

2What made them furious was that although Jian Yi Sheng escaped, he had actually not gone far. Clearly, he wanted Mi Lan Guang and Great Treasury Immortal to have a fierce battle, then he could charge back at an appropriate timing and reap all the benefits.

Right now, when he saw Mi Lan Guang and Great Treasury Immortal collaborating, Jian Yi Sheng was surprised and irked but not panicked.

He even scoffed: “Even when I was rank six, my sword escape method left many rank seven Gu Immortals without options. Now that I have advanced this move to rank seven, you will probably only catch me in your next life!”

Saying so, Jian Yi Sheng activated the killer move sword escape and swaggered off.

Mi Lan Guang and Great Treasury Immortal cursed loudly but could only look as Jian Yi Sheng escaped.

However, after a short while, it was Jian Yi Sheng’s turn to complain: “Damn it! Although my sword escape method is fast, it can’t be maintained for long. And these two happen to be information path Gu Immortals, they are proficient at gathering information and clues, they can track me down!”

Mi Lan Guang and Great Treasury Immortal hated Jian Yi Sheng and were closely chasing after him.

At every dangerous moment, Jian Yi Sheng activated sword escape killer move to run away.

But not long later, Mi Lan Guang and Great Treasury Immortal would catch up once again.

1Jian Yi Sheng shouted: “Is there any meaning in chasing me like this? You will be wasting all your accumulated immortal essence and you both will lose a lot when that happens.”

Mi Lan Guang sneered: “Among the three of us, you have only advanced to rank seven recently, how much immortal essence reserve do you have? Even if we expend it all, we will get rid of you this time!”

Great Treasury Immortal nodded and added: “Right! I will let you know Eastern Sea Gu Immortals are not easily hoodwinked!”

2Jian Yi Sheng cursed in anxiousness: “Mi Lan Guang, regardless of what happened, we are both Central Continent Gu Immortals, you are actually siding with someone from another region now, are you a traitor?”

Mi Lan Guang laughed coldly: “Don’t you try to intimidate me, you offended me today, your death is certain!”

1Jian Yi Sheng could only use sword escape to fly away once again.

Both sides kept on chasing and halting, Great Treasury Immortal suddenly said: “Oh no, he has stopped at one place. It looks like he discovered the tracking method I planted on him.”

He lost his connection to Jian Yi Sheng.

Soon, he and Mi Lan Guang arrived at a mountain pass and discovered Jian Yi Sheng’s right arm.

Jian Yi Sheng was resolute, after realizing something wrong, he directly cut off his right arm.

Great Treasury Immortal’s face was dark as he looked at Mi Lan Guang: “It will depend on you now!”

“Relax.” Mi Lan Guang smiled: “This way.”

The two continued to chase.

After several rounds of chasing, Jian Yi Sheng’s face was pale and had no strength to curse as he felt the pressure of death.

Gradually, his immortal essence reserve was emptied.

“I am going to die but I am not resigned!”

“I broke Great Treasury Immortal’s method, but what method did you, Mi Lan Guang, use to chase after me?”

“I dared to offend you because I had some understanding of your methods and could handle them all. But right now, I cannot even discover what method you used!”

“Can you tell me the truth before I die?”

Mi Lan Guang sneered: “Don’t even think about it! Depart to the afterlife as an ignorant ghost.”

1But at the next moment, Jian Yi Sheng gave a strange screech and used sword escape killer move to escape once again.

“This guy is really too crafty!” Great Treasury Immortal gritted his teeth.

“Don’t worry, unless he escapes Central Continent, he won’t be able to escape my detection.” Mi Lan Guang said confidently.

Great Treasury Immortal’s gaze was filled with surprise as he said: “I am in admiration of Brother Mi’s method. Let alone Jian Yi Sheng, even I have yet to discover your method, it is truly amazing!”

Mi Lan Guang laughed and waved his hand: “You misunderstood, this is not my method, it is Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s arrangement.”

“What do you mean?”

“Heavenly Court has extremely deep secrets. But I know some information about this move in particular. Let’s continue chasing, I will explain on the way.”

Great Treasury Immortal nodded and was fully concentrated in listening.

He knew Mi Lan Guang was originally a lightning path Gu Immortal of Wind Cloud Manor, a subsidiary force of Heavenly Court. But later, he broke some sect rules, his cultivation was crippled and he was kicked out of the sect. After that, he cultivated information path and advanced to become a rank seven Gu Immortal once again.

It was not strange for Mi Lan Guang to know of some secrets regarding Heavenly Court with this background.

Mi Lan Guang continued: “This move is called everybody’s vision, it is a human path killer move created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable. This move uses the foundation of people’s united hearts and can let Central Continent’s mortals, Gu Masters, and Gu Immortals share their vision. As long as someone sees Jian Yi Sheng’s movement light or even discover a trace of his tracks, I can directly obtain the information through everybody’s vision and catch him.”

Great Treasury Immortal realized: “So it was like this. Everybody’s vision, this move is truly profound. Naturally, people’s united hearts is even more so, it can actually let people know each other’s intentions and determine enemies and allies, removing the factor of hidden traitors. Wait a moment!”

Great Treasury Immortal suddenly stopped and looked at Mi Lan Guang with a horrified gaze.

Since Mi Lan Guang could use everybody’s vision killer move, he was definitely under the effect of people’s united hearts.

He belonged to Central Continent’s righteous path, he absolutely would not cooperate with someone who invaded Central Continent, then the only possibility was...

“Hahaha, Great Treasury Immortal, you fell for our trap!”Jian Yi Sheng revealed himself, laughing heartily.

Along with him, many Central Continent lone immortals also appeared.

A formation suddenly activated and trapped Great Treasury Immortal.

Everything had been a conspiracy, Mi Lan Guang’s electrolytic iron starflower was the bait to lure out Great Treasury Immortal, the huge fish!

At the same time.

Heavenly Court battlefield.

This long battle finally reached its climax!

Fang Yuan and the rest charged towards Heaven Overseeing Tower while Duke Long was being held back by Di Zang Sheng.

If Fang Yuan and the rest broke into Heaven Overseeing Tower and Fang Yuan destroyed fate Gu, Heavenly Court’s plan would fail completely.

But if Fang Yuan could not destroy fate Gu, the Southern and Northern immortals would be in a very bad position, they would be besieged by Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals from every direction.

“This is the final opportunity, I must...” Fang Yuan was resolute. At the next moment, Heaven Overseeing Tower let out a dazzling white light.

Rank nine immortal killer move — Fate Vanquish!

“The time required for fate vanquish to be used again has been shortened to such an extent?!” Fang Yuan was greatly shocked.

Almost at the same time, the white light completely disappeared.

An astonishing change occurred in the battlefield.

Several Immortal Gu Houses on Fang Yuan’s side were completely destroyed along with all the Gu Immortals inside. Of the two rank eight Gu Immortals who were right behind Fang Yuan; one was on the verge of death and the other had lost consciousness. All the other immortals were badly injured.

“Fate vanquish’s power is actually so terrifying!”

“It clearly did not have this power during Southern Border’s battle. Terrifying! A complete rank nine fate Gu is too terrifying.”

“This is Heaven Overseeing Tower’s true power? It is completely unstoppable!”

Southern Border and Northern Plains Gu Immortals felt deep despair, they lost all of their morale.

On the contrary, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals as well as countless viewers in Central Continent cheered in joy at this sight.

“Heavenly Court is powerful!”

“Kill these invaders, make them pay with their blood!”

“With such a method, Central Continent’s victory is certain.”

With the killer move everybody’s vision, Central Continent’s people saw this scene and were rejoicing with great morale.

Heavenly Court’s divine might was etched deeply into everyone’s hearts.

“Mother, why did that person not fall? All the demons except him have fallen.” A young girl shook her mother’s hand and asked in confusion.

Even mortals could observe the battle.

Unfortunately, the girl’s mother was only a mortal, she shook her head: “Mother also doesn’t know, but don’t worry, our Central Continent is protected by Gu Immortals, we won’t lose!”

“Fang Yuan...”

“Right, he is an otherworldly demon.”

“He is not an ordinary otherworldly demon, he is a complete otherworldly demon. Fate vanquish is simply like harmless light to him.”

After being dazed for a while, the Southern and Northern immortals gradually reacted.

Right now, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had flown out of Heaven Overseeing Tower and were holding Fang Yuan back, not letting him get close to Heaven Overseeing Tower.

However!

Fang Yuan’s existence was like a spark that lighted up the hearts of the Southern and Northern immortals.

In an instant, an inextinguishable fire burned once again.

“He’s our only hope left!”

“Yes, we still have — Fang Yuan!”

“Although I really hate him, but...”

The Southern and Northern immortals’ eyes shined with brilliance.

“Their morale had actually risen?” The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were astonished.

“Quick, kill Fang Yuan!” Duke Long had just sent the command when he was bitten by Di Zang Sheng.

But no matter how Di Zang Sheng ground its teeth, they only left behind several scars while producing sparks as they dug into Duke Long’s body.

At the same time, Wu Yong’s command arrived through treasure yellow heaven: “Southern Alliance immortals, hear my command, use all your strength to help Fang Yuan breach Heaven Overseeing Tower and destroy fate Gu!”

Bing Sai Chuan also reacted: “Help Fang Yuan, this is our final charge! If it does not succeed, we will all die! Everyone, kill!”

“These guys?” Fang Yuan who was being held back felt the vigor behind him and his eyes instantly shined.

Killing intent soared!

He laughed heartily, his voice resounding throughout the battlefield: “Good, from now on, you can all try to stop me! Either you die or.... I perish!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1745: Lu Wei Yin’s Betrayal

Infallible blessed land battlefield.

At this instant, Fang Yuan along with the Southern and Northern immortals dashed forward without hesitating!

Fang Yuan was at the front-most position, acting as the sharpest tip of the spear.

He had become the only hope of the Southern and Northern immortals, he was shouldering their expectations.

“How ironic, how pitiful! This battle has reached such a state where we are actually staking our hopes on our enemy.” The Southern and Northern immortals had complicated feelings.

“Associating with Fang Yuan, they are indeed a bunch of evil demons!” The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals shouted with despise as they rushed forward.

What else was there to say?

Everything was for benefits, everything was for survival, everything was for victory!

“Fang Yuan! Stop right there!” A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal pounced on Fang Yuan.

“I will block him, Fang Yuan, continue to charge forward.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu called out while moving ahead.

Two Immortal Gu Houses came charging over; these two Southern and Northern Immortal Gu Houses inclined to the side, protecting Fang Yuan in the middle like they were guarding their emperor.

In the battle of rank eight Gu Immortals, Immortal Gu Houses seemed like brutes that could only attack by colliding with each other.

A sharp light flashed past Fang Yuan’s eyes.

This was an unprecedented experience for him, he had never expected that there would be such a peculiar scene.

He had actually obtained the selfless and sacrificial help of the Southern and Northern immortals!

“We will retreat, quick, quick, pull apart some distance!” Heaven Overseeing Tower began to retreat.

Fang Yuan and others’ final charge was too overwhelming, their momentum was like a crazed tiger. At the crucial moment, even though Heavenly Court’s members were mostly guarding the back, few could actually come over to help defend Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Duke Long lifted his hands with some difficulty and as he pushed apart Di Zang Sheng’s teeth inch by inch.

Although his back was facing Fang Yuan and Heaven Overseeing Tower, he was aware of the battle situation through everybody’s vision killer move.

“Fang Yuan is their only hope, as long as we can kill him... these Southern and Northern immortals’ morale will fall to the depths, they might even surrender because of their hope being extinguished!”

“Not only this, Fang Yuan has Spring Autumn Cicada and is also Red Lotus’ final hope.”

At this instant, a memory surfaced in Duke Long’s mind.

Red Lotus was bathed in blood and on the verge of death, he used all his remaining strength to stand in front of Duke Long.

Duke Long looked at him quietly and said with a slightly hoarse voice: “Hong Ting, you have no hope left already. Give up, surrender, I will give you the chance to turn over a new leaf.”

“Even at this stage, you are still not willing to give up on me, master?

Hehehe.” Red Lotus Demon Venerable laughed: “But unfortunately, master, my hope has not been extinguished yet.”

3“Hmph, what hope do you still have? What are you relying on?”

“My hope is not here, master. I left it to... the great era. When the great era is about to descend, you will see him. He will be like me, carving his way to Heavenly Court in battle.”

Duke Long sighed and said with an unshakable tone: “Then I shall stop him, just like how I stopped you today. You are my disciple, master will atone for the mistake you made. Regarding your hope, master shall personally... kill it!”

1Roar!

Duke Long gave a furious roar and exerted strength in his hands, he pried open Di Zang Sheng’s teeth and disappeared.

Clang!

At the next moment, Di Zang Sheng’s teeth snapped together fiercely and produced dazzling sparks.

But Duke Long had already appeared behind Fang Yuan.

His large hand grabbed towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan immediately felt an incomparable force pulling at him firmly. A vast aura of danger came from behind him like a tsunami and wanted to drown him completely!

“Duke Long!” Fang Yuan clenched his teeth as he suddenly turned around and used a killer move to fight Duke Long.

“I will kill you!” Duke Long’s amber-like dragon eyes reflected Fang Yuan’s appearance, his tone filled with killing intent.

But an Immortal Gu House inserted itself in between the two.

“Fang Yuan, go!” Many Southern and Northern immortals shouted together.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly as he turned around and chased after Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Duke Long was blocked, he gave a loud shout as he activated his killer move and slashed with his claws! The incomparably tough Immortal Gu House tore apart like it was paper.

Duke Long continued to give chase but he had just moved a few steps when Heavenly Lord Bai Zu appeared before him.

Duke Long grabbed and smashed at Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

But Heavenly Lord Bai Zu charged over once again.

“He didn’t die?” Duke Long was astonished, he had clearly activated his investigative killer move to sense Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s main body.

But the Heavenly Lord Bai Zu before him gave off the same feeling as the main body.

Duke Long’s thoughts moved as he immediately realized: “Is it a killer move that can allow the main body to immediately switch position with his clones?”

It was exactly so.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was once a famous rank eight lone cultivator of Northern Plains, and later he obtained Hei tribe’s territory, creating Bai Zu tribe and joining Northern Plains’ righteous path.

Longevity Heaven actively roped in all the Northern Plains Gu Immortals for the big picture, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was among the first to be roped in.

One of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s conditions to join them was one immortal killer move in Longevity Heaven’s treasury. With this move, he could switch the positions of his clone and main body.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had specially asked for this because of his repeated failures when he invaded Hei Fan grotto-heaven before.

It was because of this that after Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was teleported to Eastern Sea by the killer move karma relocation, he was able to quickly switch positions with a clone and return to Infallible blessed land.

“Annoying fly.” Duke Long frowned slightly.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu obstructed him repeatedly, although he could not last even one move, in the time of danger, he would switch position with a clone.

His performance was extremely shocking, he actually stalled Duke Long.

But soon, other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals targeted Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu fell into danger and was busy taking care of himself.

Duke Long caught up to Fang Yuan once again but Five Elements Grandmaster was already protecting Fang Yuan from behind.

“Come.” Five Elements Grandmaster used his strongest defensive method — Five Elements Ring.

This was an immortal formation condensed into a five colored ring.

“If nothing else, I can at least hold on for a few breaths of time!” Five Elements Grandmaster gritted his teeth.

But Duke Long was not even stalled for a moment, he directly broke the five elements ring and chased after Fang Yuan.

Five Elements Grandmaster suffered a heavy backlash from having his defensive killer move destroyed. But he quickly swallowed the blood that surged up and chased after Duke Long without any regards for his own health.

Duke Long casually threw a dragon-shaped purple-gold qi without even looking back.

This was a qi path killer move!

Five Elements Grandmaster looked on with wide and furious eyes as he was struck by the purple-gold dragon qi, with a loud sound, he burst into countless pieces, dying on the spot.

Five Elements Grandmaster’s death did not deter the Southern and Northern immortals.

Soon, Yi Hao Fang attacked without any regard for himself as he tried to stop Duke Long.

Duke Long was held back for a few breaths of time, but he soon killed Yi Hao Fang.

“I don’t have much time left.” Duke Long did not show it on the surface but his heart was gradually becoming anxious. Heavenly dragon’s last stand killer move made him so powerful that he could kill rank eight Gu Immortals like killing birds, but his lifespan was about to reach its end.

Under the Southern and Northern immortals’ suicidal obstruction, Fang Yuan finally caught up to Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was being held back by Bing Sai Chuan using Calamity Luck Altar.

Immortal killer move — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

Fang Yuan’s luck was good, he grabbed a rank seven Immortal Gu as well as a large amount of mortal Gu.

But this was nothing much to Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Especially when Fang Yuan was clearly aware that although great thief ghost hand relied on ghostly concealment, it was not a genuine rank nine killer move and had no effect on fate Gu.

“The only effective method is still dream path killer moves!” Fang Yuan did not have offensive dream path killer moves and could only use Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies to self-detonate.

But Heaven Overseeing Tower was already prepared against such a crude offensive method. Fang Yuan had to look for a perfect opportunity otherwise he would only waste his resources without any gains.

Fang Yuan’s battle tactic was to use great thief ghost hand to constantly force back Heaven Overseeing Tower and create a chance to detonate Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

He did not know how long the Southern and Northern immortals could hold on for, but this was currently his best tactic.

But when Fang Yuan used the second great thief ghost hand, a rank eight Gu Immortal suddenly appeared and easily blocked his great thief ghost hand.

“Lu Wei Yin, what are you doing!” The Southern and Northern Gu Immortals immediately shouted out this person’s name in surprise and anger.

Lu Wei Yin pointed towards Fang Yuan: “My disciple Ye Fan died in your hands, Fang Yuan, you shall die here.”

“Lu Wei Yin, you are Paradise Earth’s inheritor, you are a Southern Border Gu Immortal!”

“Even if you want to take revenge for your disciple, why do you need to do it at this time?”

“Step aside now!”

“Join hands with us to defeat Heavenly Court! Or else...”

The Southern and Northern Gu Immortals berated agitatedly.

Lu Wei Yin, however, shook his head: “Everything is too late, Heavenly Court’s Fate has been repaired, the situation is set in stone. Relying on this demon Fang Yuan will only increase casualties, it will not change our defeat. Everyone, you have to face reality, stop trying to go against the tide, we need to avoid even more death and suffering among the people!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1746: Bai Ning Bing’s Betrayal

2

Lu Wei Yin might have no offensive killer moves, he was extremely powerful in other aspects.

He easily blocked the Southern and Northern immortals’ furious attacks, even Fang Yuan was unable to do anything to him.

“Indeed worthy of being Paradise Earth’s inheritor!” Many Heavenly Court Gu Immortals observed with their full attention.

In just a short period of time, Lu Wei Yin had actually blocked the Southern and Northern immortals’ crazed attacks by himself. Almost none of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals present now could achieve this!

Only now were the Southern and Northern immortals aware of Lu Wei Yin’s power!

Despite Lu Wei Yin having no offensive methods, his comprehensive strength was still above Li Huang and Chen Yi.

The Southern and Northern immortals were full of hatred towards Lu Wei Yin, this hatred was many times stronger than their hatred towards Fang Yuan!

It was because Lu Wei Yin’s appearance had destroyed their last hope. Fang Yuan and the rest attacked madly but all the attacks were blocked by him alone.

“Hahaha.” Duke Long laughed loudly, he was currently entangled with Di Zang Sheng, Lu Wei Yin had salvaged the situation in his place.

Duke Long was much happier to be receiving Lu Wei Yin’s help than him taking action personally.

Because this meant that Paradise Earth’s faction had submitted to them.

“This is the heart of the people. Back then, when fate Gu appeared, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable relied on it to change the minds of many human Gu Immortals and awakened the spirit to resist our common enemy. The same thing is happening now!”

An injured fate Gu was not worthy of being revered.

But a complete fate Gu was a banner just like the records in history!

Its significance to humanity far surpassed its own abilities.

It represented the support of the people, this was the trend of the future.

Human hearts were difficult to change, but Heavenly Court had fate Gu and could make countless enemy Gu Immortals dispel any thought of confrontation and even make them betray their side and surrender!

With this, Heavenly Court and Central Continent would save an immense amount of effort and trouble.

Duke Long could not help but be thankful towards Fairy Zi Wei’s choice, using everybody’s vision, all these scenes were disseminated to every part of Central Continent and even throughout the other four regions and two heavens.

Lu Wei Yin’s stance was a sign, he was the start of the trend where large numbers of Gu Immortals would surrender and bow their heads to Heavenly Court in the future.

The impact of a pioneer was limitless.

Especially when it was Lu Wei Yin: Paradise Earth’s inheritor.

In the future, when many Gu Immortals hesitate whether to surrender or not, they would think: ‘even Lu Wei Yin, this Paradise Earth inheritor, changed sides, so what if I do the same?’

Thus, they would get past this mental obstacle.

Lu Wei Yin’s action was like a formless storm and its influence would spread to all parts of Central Continent.

The other regions’ Gu Immortals who were already preparing to leave, they retreated even faster now.

At the same time, in the headquarters of Spirit Affinity House, Zhao Lian Yun looked like she was ready to move out.

“Fairy Lian Yun, where are you going? It is extremely dangerous outside.” Bu Zhen Zi persuaded.

Zhao Lian Yun smiled: “I have love Gu’s protection and the enemies are currently fleeing in fear. If we want to make some contributions, isn’t this the perfect time?”

Zhao Lian Yun’s wish was soon approved by several supreme elders of Spirit Affinity House.

In the previous chaotic battle in Central Continent, all kinds of monsters and demons appeared and fought, creating chaos and disorder. For the restoration plan, Heavenly Court had mobilized a large amount of Gu Immortals from Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects.

Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects became weak, they could only give up many of their territories and resources, wisely choosing to go on the defensive.

Right now, through everybody’s vision killer move, the Gu Immortals who were guarding various areas realized the change in the situation. Many experienced ones understood this was the time to counterattack!

“Kill these thieves who dared to invade my Central Continent!”

“Beat them, beat these despicable fellows till they are scared out of their wits.”

“Ah, this stifling anger inside me, I shall vent it all on you!”

With Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects at the lead, waves of counterattacks started. The remnant righteous path, demonic path, and lone immortals in various parts of Central Continent made their move and quickly recovered the lost territories while also attacking the four regions’ Gu Immortals who were still in Central Continent.

The four regions’ Gu Immortals were beaten back step by step, some even died.

These battle scenes were all seen by the Central Continent Gu Immortals in Infallible blessed land, their morale immediately rose.

Fang Yuan and the rest got into an increasingly perilous situation.

Duke Long was very pleased.

This was the scene he wanted to see.

Using the banner called fate Gu, almost all the Gu Immortals of Central Continent were roused and united.

This unified force was terrifying. This was already proven by the rise of humanity in Heavenly Court’s historical records.

At this moment, Duke Long could feel it very deeply, every generation of Heavenly Court members placed so much focus on fate Gu intentionally to establish the meaning behind this banner!

This was a signal from the depths of the soul, it was an intense and irresistible call of duty.

3Fate Gu itself was only a rank nine Immortal Gu and could not even be used directly. But in Heavenly Court’s hands, it was given a spirit and significance that far surpassed itself, and this influence was further magnified countless times using the history of the human race.

Looking at it, wasn’t it an incredible situation?

Fate Gu’s practicality was far lower than other rank nine Immortal Gu like wisdom Gu. But when it was used by Heavenly Court, it could change people’s hearts, unite the scattered forces and merge everyone’s will into one.

Lu Wei Yin’s betrayal...

Lone immortal Jian Yi Sheng and Mi Lan Guang, who was expelled from his sect, both took the initiative to ally and ambush Great Treasury Immortal...

With Zhao Lian Yun as the representative, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals counterattacked....

The other four regions’ Gu Immortals retreated with an all-time low morale...

It was impossible for an immortal killer move to achieve all these changes, even if it was the rank nine killer move people’s united hearts.

But now, Duke Long relied on just fate Gu to achieve these.

Gu Master and Gu Immortals nurtured, used, and refined Gu. Not mentioning the other two aspects, just based on using Gu — Heavenly Court's usage of fate Gu had already broken free of its limitations, they far surpassed the Gu's limits, they reached an unprecedented and supreme level!

If one considered this kind of move carefully, it was shocking.

The Heavenly Court immortals attacked from all directions, clearing their old debts.

The Southern and Northern immortals were trapped and surrounded, some screamed, some were bleeding, some were panicking, and some looked upon death calmly.

Fang Yuan's heart was also shrouded by a dense shadow. He was unable to break Lu Wei Yin's defense and Heaven Overseeing Tower had already stabilized itself.

Duke Long had intentionally led Di Zang Sheng far away to fight.

"The enemy's chances have already been sealed off." Almost all the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had this thought.

"Hahaha, in the end, it is still up to me to turn the tides around!"

Right at this time, a voice familiar to Fang Yuan spread throughout the battlefield.

At the same time, Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace appeared behind Heaven Overseeing Tower!

"Bai Ning Bing? How did she get control of Dragon Palace?" Fang Yuan was astonished.

The other Gu Immortals were even more shocked.

Bai Ning Bing had already prepared her sneak attack for a long time, while all the immortals were stunned, Dragon Palace shot out a dense smoke that floated towards Heaven Overseeing Tower.

It was like Heaven Overseeing Tower had fallen into a swamp, at the crucial moment, the Gu Immortals inside activated their method.

Immortal killer move — Invincible Phantom Tower!

In an instant, Heaven Overseeing Tower went into phantom form and became virtually untouchable.

"Going into phantom form, hehe." Bai Ning Bing sneered: "You are underestimating me too much. Dragon Spirit!"

A boy stood beside her, he laughed: "Master, watch me!"

1The dense smoke covered Heaven Overseeing Tower, Heaven Overseeing Tower had turned phantom but was still unable to stop the dense smoke from invading it.

"This is — dream path offensive killer move?!" Fang Yuan's side was stunned and happy, while Heavenly Court's immortals were stunned and furious.

"What is going on?" Both sides were bewildered.

Rewinding time back by a little bit...

Central Continent, Hidden Dragon Cave.

The battle had already reached the moment of victory and defeat.

Heavenly Court’s reinforcements greatly improved the situation of the Four Dragon Generals.

But these reinforcements were already expected and responded to by Eastern Sea’s rank eight Gu Immortals.

They fought fiercely, making the battle even more heated.

The Four Dragon Generals were still curling up inside Dragon Palace, and Heavenly Court’s reinforcements would not get past the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals within a short period.

But right at this moment, a figure appeared at the edge of the battlefield.

It was Bai Ning Bing!

Chen Yi had used Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s arrangement to use immortal killer move karma relocation to block the attack of the immortals.

Fang Yuan had quickly found the best method to deal with this.

Bai Ning Bing attacked under Fang Yuan’s command and was transported by karma relocation.

Bai Ning Bing looked at the place she was transported to and realized she was in a dangerous situation.

This was a rank eight level battlefield and it was so intense that it was not something she could be involved in!

Bai Ning Bing wanted to retreat but be it Eastern Sea or the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, they both attacked her immediately.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals saw Bai Ning Bing as an enemy, they naturally wanted to eliminate her.

Meanwhile, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals did not want Bai Ning Bing to leave and expose the secret here, so they were going to kill the eyewitness.

At once, Bai Ning Bing fell into a life and death crisis.

“This is trouble!” She was deeply aware of it. Even if she transformed into Bai Xiang form, it would be of no use against killer moves of rank eight Gu Immortals.

As death descended upon her, she was not afraid at all, she was only dissatisfied and felt pity as she mumbled: “Is this as far as I go?”

“No, master!” At this crucial moment, she suddenly heard an innocent and clear voice.

Dragon Palace shook as it directly teleported Bai Ning Bing to the deepest part of Dragon Palace.

This scene stunned all the rank eight Gu Immortals in the battlefield, the battle even paused for a moment.

“Who... are you?” Bai Ning Bing discovered that a peculiar life form was standing before her inside Dragon Palace.

It had the appearance of a young boy but it had horns on its head and a tail behind its back. Its eyes shined brightly, it looked cute and adorable.

It looked at Bai Ning Bing and spoke: “A blessed land has a land spirit, a grotto-heaven has a heavenly spirit, while Dragon Court has me — Dragon Spirit.”

“Dragon Court? But isn’t this Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace? Also, why are you calling me master?” Bai Ning Bing naturally knew of Dragon Palace so she felt very puzzled.

Dragon Spirit laughed: “Back then, dragonman Gu Immortals created Dragon Court but Duke Long did not allow it and changed its name to Dragon Palace. As for acknowledging you as master, it is my only choice now. Because you are a dragonman who had escaped fate and is opposing Heavenly Court, you are the only candidate suitable to be my master currently.”

“Master, I have been waiting for you. Duke Long does not know about my existence, I have been hiding and making him have the false impression that he had successfully refined Dragon Court. Heavenly Court is too powerful, I implore master to make a move to solve this present danger. In the future, we will lead the dragonman race to follow the decree of heaven, we will defeat the human race and make dragonmen the rulers of this world.”

“What do you mean?” Bai Ning Bing frowned, feeling inconceivable: “I am only a rank seven Gu Immortal, even if I have future self, I do not have rank eight battle strength. Let alone in the current situation, even rank eight Gu Immortals are unable to resolve this predicament.”

“Master, you need to have confidence. Fate Gu had shown the revelation long ago, humanity will fall and dragonmen will reign supreme. Our dragonman race will be the next leaders of this world and us dragonmen are destined to expel humanity and unite the world. That scoundrel Duke Long is not worthy of being the dragonman ancestor, he is our race’s biggest traitor.”

2“Dragon Court’s power has not been displayed fully because it lacked a true master. Of course, Dragon Court is only a rank eight Immortal Gu House right now, even if it uses all its might, it will be difficult to make a breakthrough. So I request master to subdue Di Zang Sheng!”

Bai Ning Bing was surprised: “Di Zang Sheng can be subdued by me?”

Dragon Spirit gave a confident smile: “Master, you don’t need to be excessively humble. Dragonmen will reign supreme, the divine beast shall pave the path for us. Di Zang Sheng was created by the Heavenly Dao, it has innate hatred towards the human race, it is actually our dragonman race’s divine beast. Dragon Court was unable to subdue it because it was only an Immortal Gu House and lacked a true master. But with you, all the conditions have been fulfilled.”

Bai Ning Bing blinked her eyes repeatedly, coming to her senses only after a long while.

She had many doubts, for example the statement that dragonmen would reign supreme, wasn’t it humanity who would reign supreme? If fate Gu decreed that, why would Heavenly Court still try everything in their power to repair fate Gu?

1Bai Ning Bing suppressed all the doubts in her mind as excitement emerged in her heart.

“Hehehe, this is really interesting.”

“I never thought that right before my death, there would be such a twist of events.”

“Heavenly Court still seems to contain many secrets...”

“Although I was a human, I transformed into a dragonman using a special method. But leading the dragonman race to rise and overturn humanity’s rule... this matter truly makes my heart pound when I think about it.”

1“It is interesting to resist Heavenly Court, but it is even more exciting to lead the rise of the dragonman race!”

“Hahaha, interesting, interesting!”

Bai Ning Bing’s eyes shined brightly as she laughed heartily and said to Dragon Spirit: “No matter what you are or what plans you have, I don’t care. Anyway, if you had not saved me, I would have already died. Your goal is truly interesting, I accept it! What should I do?”

Bai Ning Bing was different from others, she was a true demon and based her decisions on what she liked. She did whatever felt more exciting to her.

The so-called human identity would never bind her.

Lu Wei Yin had betrayed Southern Border while she had betrayed humanity itself!

Dragon Spirit was exulted: “Master, with you making a move, Di Zang Sheng’s allegiance is an easy matter.”

Dragon Spirit was so excited that his tears fell: “This is great! I had almost given up in despair, but master, your appearance means that my wait was not in vain!”

“The current heaven’s will has been influenced by Star Constellation’s will, which changed the revelation of fate Gu. But this doesn’t matter, a large number of hibernating Gu Immortals have died in Heavenly Court, Star Constellation’s will has lost her reinforcements, the will of the Heavenly Dao has started to suppress her. The fact that you appeared here proves this.”

1“Now, we will first subdue Di Zang Sheng and fight our way back to the battlefield. Be it Heavenly Court or the Southern Northern allied forces, they are at conflict with each other. Although I wish that they would all die, this is an extremely rare opportunity to seize fate Gu.”

COMMENT

“As long as we come into contact with fate Gu, the revelation of dragonman supremacy will appear and we can imitate what Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable did back then, with this banner in our hands, we will change the hearts of people, the dragonman race’s rise will be unstoppable!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1747: Star Constellation’s Sacrifice

Even Heaven Overseeing Tower with rank nine fate Gu was unable to stop the invasion of the dream path killer move.

Dragon Palace was a rank eight Immortal Gu House with rank eight Immortal Gu Dream Token. The rank eight dream path killer move that was created from this was probably the number one dream path killer move in the present world.

1As the saying went, one skill to dominate the world.

Heaven Overseeing Tower did not have any dream path defensive methods, thus Dragon Spirit’s action immediately showed effect!

“If this goes on, Heaven Overseeing Tower will no longer exist!”

“This move is not just pure erosion using the dream realm, it is a dream path killer move and Heavenly Court can’t do anything to it even with pure dream reality seeker transformation!”

In an instant, Yao Huang and the rest saw the hope of victory.

“Who could have thought that at this final juncture, it would be Bai Ning Bing who would turn the situation around!”

“We have to hold on!”

“Everyone, defend Dragon Palace!”

The Southern and Northern immortals actively cooperated. Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were pale in shock, their confident expressions were non-existent as they began to attack nervously.

“Something is wrong!” Fang Yuan had been paying attention to Duke Long and quickly realized something wrong.

Duke Long, who was entangled with Di Zang Sheng, was not panicking at all, his expression was calm and his gaze even showed a trace of nostalgia.

Over a million years ago...

In the depths of Heavenly Court.

“Hong Ting, you still dare to come to Heavenly Court, you will not be able to escape anymore! The secret of your rebirth has already been exposed, you actually dared to go against fate and defy heaven’s will to attempt to resurrect dead people, you have truly disappointed me!” Duke Long looked at Red Lotus, his expression was dark and his gaze was burning with fury.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable smiled: “Master, since I have come here, I have already resolved myself to die, furthermore, I am not here to destroy fate Gu, so you don’t have to be so anxious, master.”

“Oh? Then what are you trying to do?”

Red Lotus Demon Venerable took a deep glance at Duke Long: “I want to persuade master to help me destroy fate Gu!”

Duke Long was stunned before laughing loudly, he then slowly stopped laughing and looked at Red Lotus with his unfathomable dragon pupils: “Then tell me, master will listen properly.”

Red Lotus smiled: “Having been reborn tens of thousands of times, I found clues by chance and used more than ten rebirths to understand them clearly. Fate Gu has already abandoned humanity, its current revelation have four words...”

2He had yet to finish speaking when Duke Long finished his sentence: “Dragonmen will reign supreme.”

Red Lotus was dazed before laughing: “Master, you knew about it indeed! Are you protecting fate Gu to ensure the rise of the dragonman race? After all, the biggest group of dragonmen in existence currently are your own bloodline descendants.”

“Of course not!” Duke Long shook his head and said in a deep voice: ” Hong Ting, you don’t know the whole situation. Master was the first to discover the secret of dragonman supremacy and was also the first to report it. Although I turned myself into a dragonman and became the dragonman ancestor, my true heart has always been on humanity’s side! Whether you believe it or not, this is the truth.”

“I believe you!” Red Lotus showed no hesitation: “I believe in master’s heart. Oh master, the extent to which you understand me is also how much I understand you. You will never betray humanity for your own self-interest. Just then, I was afraid you would deny my words and was intentionally agitating you.”

“Hmph, little brat.” Duke Long snorted, but a gratified emotion rose in his heart as he continued: “Master created the dragonman lifespan extension method so I could continue teaching you, to help you lead Heavenly Court and the whole of the human race, but I had never imagined fate Gu would give a revelation of dragonman supremacy.”

“However, after the initial shock and fright, master gradually realized that fate Gu is a heaven path Gu worm, the way of heaven always takes away surpluses while replenishing deficits. Humanity has prospered, uniting the five regions and two heavens, we are flourishing much more than the variant human races of the past, this will naturally cause the Heavenly Dao to take away surpluses while replenishing deficits. This is the same situation as when Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable obtained fate Gu and caused humanity to reign supreme.”

“However, master still continues to defend fate Gu, do you know why?”

Red Lotus’s eyes shined with bright light as he asked: “Why?”

Duke Long heaved a deep sigh: “Actually, fate Gu’s hidden threat was already raised by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable in his era. Humanity was united because of fate Gu. Almost all the humans gained the courage to resist the variant human races after learning who heaven sided with. However, once the fate of humans being supreme vanishes, what will the humans do then?”

“This was no doubt a huge threat and this issue was not resolved even after Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable passed away. On his deathbed, he handed this heavy responsibility to his disciple. This disciple was the future Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, when her lifespan was near its end, she finally thought of a way to resolve this hidden crisis. That was assimilating with the Dao.”

Red Lotus frowned: “Assimilating with the Dao?”

“Indeed.” Duke Long continued to explain: “Fate Gu can only be controlled directly by the Heavenly Dao, human or variant human Gu Immortals can at most observe a thing or two and obtain some revelations. Maybe in the future, with the development of new paths that contest against each other, there may be a way to use fate Gu, but it is impossible for now.”

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable thought: Since she could not do anything to fate Gu, she might as well target the source itself! Thus, she sacrificed herself and by assimilating with the Dao, she used her own will to participate in the operations of the Heavenly Dao, interfering and influencing heaven’s will. Because heaven’s will was influenced, fate Gu could be grasped by Heavenly Court indefinitely.”

“So that’s what happened!” Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s heart shook as he came to a realization: “Fate Gu’s web is called all-encompassing web. Everything in the world is bound by this web, to be arranged and controlled by Fate. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable directly manipulated heaven’s will and is thus able to influence fate Gu, making humanity reign supreme forever.”

1“No wonder fate Gu is so important to Heavenly Court. No wonder Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s arrangements could stop three Demon Venerables including myself. No wonder Heavenly Court has stood undefeated, becoming the sacred land of humanity and the number one super force in the world!”

Duke Long nodded: “Hong Ting, your intelligence has never disappointed master. The trend of the world is that there will be unification after prolonged division and division after prolonged unification. Have you seen any super force that could last forever? Looking at ourselves, people’s hearts are easy to change, they are filled with desires which can hardly be satisfied. Even stronger forces or familial fetters cannot fill the deficiencies of the human heart. Looking at external issues, if a powerful Gu Immortal is offended, it will usually result in the super force facing huge problems. If this Gu Immortal cultivated to rank eight, they quite likely could even completely exterminate a super force. In this world, individual strength can easily surpass a group.”

“There will rarely be a super force that can last for a great number of years. But our Heavenly Court is an exception, why is it? Because we have fate Gu.”

“Under the arrangements of fate, we have always been the sacred land of humanity, our internal affairs have always been harmonious, even if there are conflicts, they will be smoothly resolved through all kinds of coincidences and fated encounters. Our enemies usually cannot grow completely, even if there are rank eight enemies, they would gradually decline, and there won’t even be a need for Heavenly Court to make a move personally before the enemies die or even surrender because of all kinds of events.”

“All these miracles were brought about through Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s sacrifice. Without her rank nine wisdom path cultivation, there is simply no way to interfere and alter the operations of the Heavenly Dao. However, even if it was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, her will was often disadvantaged when contesting against heaven’s will.”

Red Lotus realized: “Like the revelation of dragonman supremacy?”

“Yes. I was also shocked back then. But when I knew of this ancient secret, I chose to wait. Sure enough, not long later, fate Gu’s revelation changed once again, ‘dragonmen will reign supreme’ vanished, it went back to ‘humanity will reign supreme’.” Duke Long smiled: “Later, I went through Heavenly Court’s secret records and discovered such cases had occurred many times. Dragonmen will reign supreme is only the most recent one. The revelation of dragonmen reigning supreme is not reliable.”

Red Lotus’s heart sank continuously.

Since his master Duke Long already knew of this, then why did he listen to his questions?

He suddenly realized: It was not him who had infiltrated Heavenly Court, but Duke Long who had been waiting for him, waiting for him to make inquiries and then tell him Heavenly Court's ancient secret.

Red Lotus stopped thinking about it as he looked at Duke Long.

Duke Long smiled: "Hong Ting, master waited for you to tell you this and make you repent. You created Spring Autumn Cicada and can rebirth, this is truly a demonic behavior. It looks like you have hope of changing the past, but do you really?"

"No." Duke Long shook his head and said in a resolute tone.

"Because above you, there is heaven, there is the Heavenly Dao, there is Star Constellation's will, there is fate Gu's revelation. How can you overturn heaven? How can you change the past?"

"So what if you have the strength of a rank nine Demon Venerable? Limitless and Reckless Savage are the best examples. How long can a venerable live? The longest living one was Lord Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable but it was still only twenty-five thousand years. And Heavenly Court? It has millions of years of history and accumulations. It has the sacrifice and protection of more than one Immortal Venerable. It has fate Gu. This is the big picture, can you topple such a deep foundation? Especially since you have been reborn, you are only using future self to gain rank nine battle strength. You are not yet a true rank nine venerable."

Red Lotus was silent.

Even the powerful him felt constant helplessness against Heavenly Court.

He could destroy Heavenly Court, but what use would that be?

As long as fate Gu existed, Heavenly Court could be easily recreated. And because Star Constellation's will was influencing heaven's will, fate Gu would always decree that humanity reign supreme, Heavenly Court would also be the sacred land of humanity and would always be the number one force.

Under fate's control, all sorts of fortuitous encounters would be arranged and countless talents would actively side with or surrender to Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court was not the crucial point, Star Constellation's will and fate Gu were the most important elements.

Star Constellation's will...

First of all, Red Lotus was not a wisdom path rank nine, he had no methods to deal with Star Constellation's will which had assimilated with the Dao.

Secondly, he did not want to deal with Star Constellation's will. After all, Star Constellation's will interfered with heaven's will and protected the status of the human race, making humanity prosper eternally.

Red Lotus only wanted to revive his family and loved ones, he never wanted to betray or harm his own race.

So, there was only one answer left for Red Lotus Demon Venerable, that was to destroy fate Gu!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1748: Duke Long’s Sacrifice

Destroying fate Gu would be harmful to humanity, but the five regions’ situation would still remain the same because of Star Constellation’s will.

Without fate Gu, neither Heavenly Court nor the Heavenly Dao would be able to use it.

In a situation where both sides were equal, the humans would have a huge advantage, why would they watch as other races got stronger?

But Red Lotus was not an otherworldly demon, how would he be able to destroy fate Gu completely?

Even after being reborn countless times, Red Lotus could not find a method which could destroy fate Gu completely. Thus in this rebirth, he came to persuade Duke Long to make him come over to his side and work together.

But who could have expected Heavenly Court to have this kind of secret, Red Lotus’ plan failed.

Experience was still the deciding factor.

Red Lotus wanted to persuade Duke Long and Duke Long was also waiting for this chance to persuade his favored disciple.

“Hong Ting, stop now.” Duke Long spoke earnestly: “I said all this so that you will come back. The righteous path is not only about glory and reputation, it is often accompanied by sacrifices. For humanity, for Heavenly Court, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sacrificed herself! And you? Your parents and wife died in order to pave the road to Immortal Venerable for you. Their sacrifices were necessary and valuable. Do you still not understand it? Hong Ting! Stop this now!”

“No, I won’t stop.” Red Lotus’s gaze was firm: “Forgive me, master, I have disappointed you again and again. But this is the path that I want to walk on.”

Duke Long shook his head with a bitter expression and said: “I am not disappointed, I would be suspicious if you agreed instead. I know your will cannot be shaken easily, this was already within my estimation. So now, let your master use himself as an example to teach you.”

“What do you mean?”

Just as Red Lotus was confused, Duke Long activated an arrangement he had already prepared.

Immortal killer move — Dragonman Extermination!

Red Lotus’s bewildered expression was soon replaced by shock when he sensed this killer move’s nature and effect.

Red Lotus shouted in shock: “Master, you actually killed all the dragonmen in the world?! Your children and grandchildren are among them. If I recall correctly, all your children and bloodline descendants should have already turned into dragonmen!”

2“That’s right.” Duke Long’s body trembled, his voice was slightly shaky: “I am the ancestor of dragonmen, the first dragonman in the world. When I had created the method of dragonman transformation, I had already made this arrangement which allows me to use my identity as the ancestor to easily eliminate all other dragonmen.”

“When the dragonmen reign supreme revelation appeared, I had thought of using this method. At that time, however, Star Constellation’s will manifested and instructed me to let the dragonmen live for the time being and use them in the future.”

“I hesitated again and again. Hong Ting, you have also seen my children, grandchildren, and descendants. It was the greatest happiness for me to enjoy my old age with my grandchildren and family. Sigh, I am already old.”

“Master...” Red Lotus wanted to speak but stopped, not knowing what to say to comfort Duke Long.

Duke Long’s eyes reddened and were filled with tears, Red Lotus had never seen this side of Duke Long.

He said while choking with tears: “I understand it clearly, even without the dragonmen reign supreme revelation, the dragonman race will always be a hidden threat to Heavenly Court and the human race. Because the dragonman race is different from the other variant human races, it was created by me, the members were originally human. It is like a bloodsucking leech that has attached itself to humanity, strengthening itself while sucking on the blood of humans.”

“The dragonman lifespan extension method is only secondary to lifespan Gu for extending life, lifespan Gu are few, but how many billions of people want to extend their lifespan? The dragonman population will continue to increase while humans will become fewer and fewer.”

“More terrifyingly, dragonmen are born from humans, naturally lowering the vigilance of humans. And with my reputation and the protection of being a venerable’s master, who can suppress or disturb the dragonmen?”

“If this goes on, the dragonmen will suppress humanity someday in the future. If a mishap happens again and fate Gu reveals the revelation of dragonmen reigning supreme again, the consequences will be unimaginable.”

Duke Long then looked deeply at Red Lotus: “When you entered Heavenly Court this time and tried to persuade me, I suddenly realized that this was the timing that Star Constellation’s will predicted. The dragonman race should not exist, but its extermination also needs to have value. This value is to persuade you, my disciple Hong Ting! Master wants to teach you the spirit of sacrifice, I will show you the spirit of the righteous path of humanity!”

Red Lotus: “Master...”

Duke Long’s body shook as he could not hold back his tears any longer.

He had personally killed his children and descendants, his heart was filled with sorrow and pain like it had been cut by a knife, but there was not even a trace of regret.

His voice suddenly rose as he shouted towards Red Lotus: “Hong Ting, my disciple! Your path is a dead end, you cannot win against Heavenly Court!”

“Because Heavenly Court’s power is not just its superficial foundation or even fate Gu.”

“Its power comes from the generations of Gu Immortals who do not hesitate to sacrifice themselves! They protect humanity and righteousness with each generation carrying on this will and moving forward!”

“Without these sacrifices, humanity might still be trampled and enslaved by the variant human races, we would not have such a good life like now.”

“Hong Ting, master taught you, Heavenly Court cultivated you, what you enjoyed were the fruits of the dedication and sacrifice of our predecessors from ancient times until now!”

“So, come back, Hong Ting!”

“Follow the arrangements of Fate.”

1Red Lotus: “...”

...

Infallible blessed land battlefield.

Duke Long’s memory passed by in an instant, his gaze regaining its sharpness once again.

He looked at the distant Dragon Palace and sneered: “Such a pity! Dragon Spirit, your existence was already deduced by Fairy Zi Wei. We are only playing you at your own game.”

At the next moment, he activated an immortal killer move.

He had once used this immortal killer move to persuade Red Lotus but it did not succeed.

But now, it was more than enough to kill Bai Ning Bing!

Immortal killer move — Dragonman Extermination!

In an instant, Bai Ning Bing’s body shook violently, her heart felt like it was clenched by someone as she fell on the ground while coughing large mouthfuls of blood.

Dragon Spirit cried out in shock: “What happened?!”

It did not know the secret of the past.

In truth, it had only taken birth long after the dragonman race was exterminated by Duke Long.

Under Dragon Spirit’s frightened gaze, Bai Ning Bing quickly died, her corpse that was gradually losing heat was lying in the large Dragon Palace.

3Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei walked out of the large formation that was imprisoning Spectral Soul.

Heavenly Court’s battlefield was not cleared up yet, Fairy Zi Wei came to Spectral Soul’s prison to give a quick check.

“I worried too much. Even if Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was savage and powerful, the current Spectral Soul is only a remnant soul with no Gu worms or immortal essence, how can it do anything? Let alone escaping this imprisonment.”

“Oh? Dragon Spirit is also exposed, everything is going according to plan.” Fairy Zi Wei smiled when she observed this.

She had deduced Dragon Spirit’s existence as she had doubts about it, an ownerless Dragon Palace was actually able to capture the Four Dragon Generals, it was extraordinary.

After she deduced Dragon Spirit’s existence, when Dragon Spirit tried to hoodwink Duke Long and create a false impression that Duke Long had refined Dragon Palace, Heavenly Court was aware of it.

Duke Long consulted Fairy Zi Wei, Fairy Zi Wei played Dragon Spirit at its own game, laying a trap that was Hidden Dragon Cave.

This trap not only targeted the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, it also was a plot against Dragon Spirit and Di Zang Sheng.

Without such a strategy, how would Fairy Zi Wei dare to use the killer move everybody’s vision and broadcast the battle in Infallible blessed land everywhere?

Fairy Zi Wei entered an Immortal Gu House which held benevolence Gu.

She thought to herself: “Now, it is time to deal with Fang Yuan’s Spring Autumn Cicada.”

1Infallible blessed land battlefield.

Boom!

Dragon Palace was sent flying away while Dragon Spirit screamed in panic.

The dream path offensive killer move was broken, Heaven Overseeing Tower was restored back to its previous state and turned back to solid form. The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals inside the tower laughed heartily, their plan to bait the enemy was a great success.

“Damn it, so this was all Heavenly Court’s scheme, the battle had never left their control!” Fang Yuan’s expression was heavy as he admitted: “We have lost this battle!”

Bing Sai Chuan realized this as well but he still sent Gu Immortals to attack Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Heaven Overseeing Tower retreated extremely quickly, making the Southern and Northern immortals feel even more despair.

“Time to retreat!” Fang Yuan’s gaze turned, he had a rank eight killer move that used Fixed Immortal Travel as the core which could give him the chance to leave if used properly.

However, at this time, a group of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals with Lu Wei Yin at the lead surrounded Fang Yuan and the rest.

Fang Yuan’s side was like a cornered beast that counterattacked wildly.

Lu Wei Yin saw the situation and used an immortal killer move, eight points sanctum.

This move was a defensive killer move, it not only protected the user, it could also affect others.

Eight points sanctum instantly formed a sand sphere that covered the Gu Immortals and blocked every immortal killer move.

It even blocked Calamity Luck Altar’s killer moves.

Everyone, both enemies and allies, was astonished. Lu Wei Yin’s strength had far surpassed their expectations.

Lu Wei Yin’s display completely threw the Southern and Northern immortals into the abyss of despair.

On the other side, Duke Long got free from Di Zang Sheng and charged towards Dragon Palace.

Di Zang Sheng wanted to chase him but was held back by Heaven Overseeing Tower and other Immortal Gu Houses.

“Duke Long, the greatest traitor of our people!” Dragon Spirit screamed as it hid in the depths of Dragon Palace.

Duke Long would not be able to find it within a short period of time. He poured in his immortal essence without any regard for the expenditure, forcibly refining Dragon Palace once again.

He laughed: “I have to thank you for resolving this troublesome Di Zang Sheng for us. Now, as long as I gain complete control of Dragon Palace, Di Zang Sheng will also submit to me, Heavenly Court will obtain the strongest immemorial desolate beast in history!”

Dragon Spirit shouted in anger, cursing Duke Long for being despicable and sinister while using all its effort to block Duke Long’s forceful refinement as it hurriedly called for Di Zang Sheng.

Di Zang Sheng roared repeatedly and attempted to break away from the obstruction.

Heavenly Court’s defensive line was on the verge of breaking, but at the crucial moment, Heaven Overseeing Tower displayed its might again, activating fate vanquish.

Di Zang Sheng bore the full brunt of the killer move and was suppressed fiercely.

Over half of the Gu Immortals on Fang Yuan’s side were instantly killed by fate vanquish.

The rank nine killer move’s power was truly too terrifying.

Only Fang Yuan alone was immune to fate vanquish’s power.

“Fang Yuan, don’t think you will survive.”

“You cannot escape.”

“These immortal killer moves were specially prepared for you! Have a taste.”

Close to ten rank eight Gu Immortals surrounded Fang Yuan and a large amount of killer moves assaulted him from all directions, making it difficult for him to use Gu worms at the moment.

“Trying to target my Spring Autumn Cicada? Damn it!” Fang Yuan clenched his teeth as he exerted all his efforts in trying to activate his killer moves.

He did not hesitate to expend his dao marks, myriad sword ghost dragons flew out but were suppressed by Heavenly Court Gu Immortals let alone breaking past the defensive line.

Suddenly, a dragon roar resounded throughout the battlefield, Di Zang Sheng's enormous head collided into the encirclement that surrounded Fang Yuan.

This legendary immemorial desolate beast was also in a hurry, it disregarded everything and endured countless killer moves to go reinforce Dragon Palace.

"Hahaha, too late!" Duke Long laughed loudly, he had already refined Dragon Palace for most part and was about to grasp Dragon Spirit as well.

Dragon Spirit shouted: "Even if I die, I won't let you have your wish!"

Boom!

Dragon Palace self-detonated, countless fragments shot everywhere; the majestic Dragon Palace only had a small foundational floor and several pillars left.

"This is the time!" Taking advantage of this chaos, Fang Yuan finally got free from some obstacles and his clone activated an immortal killer move — Spring Autumn Success!

"The demon wants to counterattack, I will protect you all." Lu Wei Yin shouted while activating eight points sanctum again, protecting countless Gu Immortals.

"Now is the time!" At the exact same moment, Fairy Zi Wei quickly activated an immortal killer move — Benevolent Equality!

Duke Long directly tore the eight points sanctum that was protecting him and carried the remnant Dragon Palace while charging towards Fang Yuan.

He ran into Di Zang Sheng on the way but Di Zang Sheng actually lowered its head and showed submission!

"Fang Yuan, you should also go and die." Duke Long appeared before Fang Yuan like he had teleported.

At the moment of life and death, Fang Yuan quickly activated every killer move he could, but they were all blocked or restrained by the other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

Bam.

A muffled sound echoed, he was directly hit by Duke Long, his blood, flesh and bone fragments splattered everywhere as his soul dissipated completely.

He was dead.

Fang Yuan was dead, the final hope was also gone.

4Bing Sai Chuan and the rest were like defeated soldiers as they stood dazed on the spot.

Some took the initiative to surrender, while Bing Sai Chuan and some others gave a loud shout and attacked Duke Long.

Duke Long sneered as he grabbed and punched, killing Bing Sai Chuan and the rest.

After a while, there were either dead or surrendered Southern and Northern immortals; this long war had finally ended.

"We won!"

“Heavenly Court is mighty, Duke Long is mighty!”

Many immortals rejoiced and Central Continent was even filled with cheers and scenes of jubilation.

Duke Long swept his gaze around calmly before fixing it on Lu Wei Yin.

Lu Wei Yin bowed: “What instructions does Lord Duke Long have?”

Duke Long chuckled, saying with a deep meaning: “We owe you for lending benevolence Gu and siding with us in this battle, Heavenly Court won’t stint on your rewards.”

Lu Wei Yin quickly thanked him.

1Duke Long secretly transmitted to Fairy Zi Wei: “Did that killer move work?”

Fairy Zi Wei: “Yes, do we attack Lu Wei Yin now?”

Duke Long secretly replied: “Leave him be. If we harm him, who will dare to side with us later? That killer move is only an insurance, whether Fang Yuan rebirths or not, as long as I am around, what harm is there in repeating this again?”

Duke Long took a heavy breath and said: “Our plan has finally been achieved.”

Fairy Zi Wei’s voice was choking with emotions: “That’s right, using the plan of repairing fate Gu, we lured the other four regions to invade and stimulated Central Continent’s people to have a common hatred for the enemy and eliminated internal spies. The great era is coming, our Central Continent is united, our Heavenly Court’s commands will be obeyed and implemented sincerely.”

She knew Duke Long was about to die.

Duke Long laughed heartily, he did not care about his death as he encouraged Fairy Zi Wei: “With you here, I can rest at ease.”

Wisdom path Gu Immortals would not fight on the front lines, they were more useful when making plans for the big picture.

“Master!” Right at this time, under Feng Jiu Ge’s protection, Feng Jin Huang arrived before Duke Long and wept.

She also knew this was the final moment of Duke Long’s life.

Duke Long stroked Feng Jin Huang’s head and said: “People have to die one day, fallen leaves return to their roots, how can a new generation emerge without the departure of the old? Disciple, don’t be sad.”

At the same time, Duke Long secretly transmitted his voice and instructed: “Oh Huang Er, become an Immortal Venerable and lead Heavenly Court towards the peak. Our Central Continent is right in between the other four regions and it has no geographical advantage. But we have our own superiority, we possess the sect system which is long lasting. Previously, even with Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, we could only barely stabilize and maintain the situation. Countless sects, lone and demonic immortals were dissatisfied towards my Heavenly Court occupying so many cultivation resources.”

“But after this battle, there are no internal threats left, the people’s hearts have changed, their will have merged and they want to take revenge. Heavenly Court is the place where the hearts of the people will be entrusted to. In terms of favorable condition, geographical advantage, and unity, Heavenly Court has existed for millions of years and possesses fate Gu, we already have favorable conditions. After this battle, we also have the strongest unity among the five regions. Go conquer them and unite humanity! Establish an unprecedented supremacy that will last for all eternity!”

“Master can only do this much for you.”

After saying this, Duke Long looked longingly towards the horizon.

The setting sun dyed the clouds red in the horizon.

The dying sunlight shone on Duke Long’s body.

His dragon horns were broken but it made them look even more malevolent and domineering.

His shining dragon eyes still had battle intent in them.

His scales were scarred and broken, blood dyed them red, his dragon claws had taken the lives of countless rank eights.

The Heavenly Court immortals surrounded him in the air, looking at him silently.

No one spoke.

Di Zang Sheng lowered its head, unmoving like a giant statue.

Earth shook as it produced waves of deep, rumbling noises.

At this moment, the regional walls that separated the five regions had completely disappeared. The earth veins were connected as the five separate regions merged into one!

Without the obstruction of the regional walls, people could freely move through the five regions with no obstructions. At the same time, the differences in heaven and earth qi also disappeared gradually.

Duke Long smiled, saying with anticipation for the future –

“Ah... The great era has arrived.”

This was his final sentence.

He closed his eyes slowly.

Heavenly dragon’s last stand, his time was up.

Like this setting sun, the legend of a generation had passed away!

But his invincible figure was deeply imprinted in the eyes of the countless people of Central Continent.

His sacrifices and contributions were like a spiritual fire that burned in the hearts of countless people!

Duke Long, Duke Long!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1749: Clone’s Rebirth

Surrounded by pitch-black space, there was a boundless river.

It was flowing fast without stopping, its start and end could not be seen.

Secluded Domain of Heaven and Earth — River of Time!

Water of the River of Time was pale white and colorless, but countless ripples were colliding and creating beautiful colors at all times.

Every ripple was a story, an event that occurred in the past.

Innumerable droplets of water splashed and collided, the whole River of Time was like a river of fireworks that shined with dazzling and brilliant lights.

A small Gu worm appeared which was covered in an emerald-green light, it dove into the water of the River of Time.

This Gu worm’s head and stomach were brown and yellow, there were tree bark rings like marks on its surface which seemed to be a testament to its long life and dignity.

The wings on its back were huge, they were translucent and resembled two overlapping tree leaves.

The small Gu worm was inconspicuous in the large River of Time, it was smaller than an ant.

After the Gu worm dove into the water, it displayed great determination as it went against the flow, moving upstream.

...

Treasure yellow heaven.

There was a commotion, Gu Immortals were discussing with each other.

This commotion was caused by three rib bones along with a video of a battle.

1“Unimaginable, this demon Fang Yuan already has such battle strength!”

“Sigh, his growth is too fast, he is already a demonic path overlord of this generation.”

“Fang Yuan is an otherworldly demon, and has used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth, he naturally has an enormous advantage in cultivation.”

“I recognize her, this is Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal Thunder Ghost True Monarch, who could have thought she would actually be suppressed by Fang Yuan!”

“Thunder Ghost True Monarch Jing Lan, this is an old senior, she is still alive?”

“So much for Central Continent’s Heavenly Court being regarded as the number one human force. They have been trying to capture Fang Yuan all along, and even sent a rank eight Gu Immortal, but look at this, Fang Yuan actually beat her up so miserably.”

Inside Heavenly Court, Chen Yi’s expression looked unsightly and Fairy Zi Wei’s body trembled from anger.

“Fang Yuan, this scoundrel is simply too sly!” Fairy Zi Wei said with gritted teeth. This was because the video in treasure yellow heaven only contained the part where Fang Yuan successfully counterattacked and pummeled Jing Lan.

Chen Yi asked with a frown: “Lady Zi Wei, do we report this to Thunder Ghost True Monarch?”

Thunder Ghost True Monarch Jing Lan was the most recently awakened expert of Heavenly Court.

1Jing Lan chased after Fang Yuan but a moment of carelessness led to her being counterattacked by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan used myriad dragons and directional confusion fog to delay her while he entered the depths of the regional wall.

When Jing Lan chased after him again, Fang Yuan was already far away from her.

Fairy Zi Wei could not deduce Fang Yuan’s exact location so Jing Lan had lost her way in the regional wall.

“Zi Wei! Where is that demon Fang Yuan?” Jing Lan transmitted her voice, she was burning with rage so her tone was very blunt.

What should have been an easy prey actually caused her to land in such an extremely miserable situation with serious injuries, how could the proud Jing Lan accept this fact?

She gritted her teeth, desperately wanting to kill Fang Yuan and erase her shame!

Fairy Zi Wei was silent for a moment before slowly informing Jing Lan.

“What? Even you lost him?!” Jing Lan was furious and discontented.

“Fang Yuan’s wisdom path attainment is already no longer the same as before. But he will go to Lang Ya blessed land no matter what. We have already made some arrangements there. Although we failed to capture this scoundrel, we have also made huge gains, not only did we waste a large amount of his immortal essence, we also forced him to reveal many trump cards. How could a Gu Immortal like him be dealt with in one battle?” Fairy Zi Wei gently persuaded Jing Lan.

Jing Lan was silent, standing on the spot.

After a while, she heaved a long sigh, her anger had dissipated.

“I underestimated him, this person is astonishingly talented, he is indeed worthy of being the person chosen by heaven’s will and Shadow Sect. Next time we fight, I won’t make the same mistake.”

“Compared to Fang Yuan, there is an even more troublesome matter...” Fairy Zi Wei tactfully informed Jing Lan of the matter in treasure yellow heaven.

The calm mood Jing Lan had just regained was immediately overthrown by waves of anger: “What? This guy actually dared to sell my rib bones? Outrageous, simply outrageous!”

Jing Lan immediately connected to treasure yellow heaven, and sure enough, saw her own rib bones being put for sale. Anger surged to her head, and her eyes turned bloodshot.

Soon after, when Jing Lan saw the projection of the scenes where Fang Yuan pummeled her, she almost crushed her teeth: “Damn that guy... when he ends up in my hands later, I will tear off his skin, pull out his tendons, and grind his bones till they turn to dust!”

1Fang Yuan retreated while paying close attention to treasure yellow heaven.

He sneered inwardly.

Although he lost the battle against Jing Lan, being able to achieve such a battle result against a rank eight with his rank seven cultivation was truly a glorious loss.

Three rib bones and that video were actually Fang Yuan’s glorious flaunting of his battle strength!

“Victory or defeat is secondary in a battle, the more important thing are the gains and losses. Although I lost this battle, the things I gained are what I need.”

Fang Yuan had tried to regain his upper extreme heavenly eagle but was obstructed by Lu Wei Yin.

Feng Jiu Ge had invaded Lang Ya blessed land and discovered wisdom Gu, he even took away Gu Yue Fang Zheng and Dang Hun Mountain.

Fang Yuan detonated Dang Hun Mountain, causing Thunder Ghost True Monarch to awaken. At the same time, Chen Yi’s karma divine tree could display its ability, which Fairy Zi Wei used to deduce his location.

Thunder Ghost True Monarch thus accurately ambushed Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan was able to escape due to all kinds of factors.

“Heavenly Court discovered and invaded Lang Ya blessed land, they will absolutely attack again. Lang Ya blessed land is extremely important to me, I cannot lose it.”

1“I must gather every force that can be used to fight Heavenly Court’s next invasion. The four races alliance can be used!”

“My reputation has increased greatly after this battle, I will have even more power to express my opinion in the four races alliance and even be regarded as the hope of fighting rank eight by these variant human Gu Immortals.”

While escaping quickly, there were Gu Immortals in treasure yellow heaven who inquired about the price of Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s rib bones.

But why would Fang Yuan sell them?

This was the best opportunity to damage Heavenly Court’s reputation and it was the opportunity for him to raise his own reputation. He was not going to be greedy over some profits and sell these three rib bones away.

“I must grab every opportunity to damage and weaken Heavenly Court’s prestige, while also raising other Gu Immortals' courage. When the crucial moment comes in the future, there will be even more Gu Immortals who will dare to oppose Heavenly Court."

"Furthermore, would there not be Heavenly Court's members among these buyers? There must be. There is even a huge possibility of Thunder Ghost True Monarch being among them. Hehehehe."

Fang Yuan chuckled.

He was being optimistic in these tough times but his mood was still heavy.

Heavenly Court had discovered Lang Ya blessed land, who knew when they would attack again, this made Lang Ya blessed land a dangerous place.

Once Lang Ya blessed land's defense failed, it would be a heavy blow to Fang Yuan.

Since long ago, Fang Yuan had been deepening his cooperation with Lang Ya Sect and had received huge help at many crucial times. Lang Ya blessed land could be considered an immense support to him.

But it was not easy to resist Heavenly Court.

With just him, Lang Ya blessed land and the four races alliance, was there really hope?

"It is not the time to give up yet!"

"When I return to Lang Ya blessed land, I will absorb the Long Hair true meaning. Even if Lang Ya blessed land's defense fails, I will try to extract every possible benefit from Lang Ya Sect."

Just as he was thinking of this, Fang Yuan's body suddenly shook and an immensely shocked expression appeared on his face.

He was a demonic overlord who wore a constant poker face and was extremely shrewd, why would he turn so pale?

Just a moment ago, Fang Yuan's clone had told him extremely valuable information.

"My clone was reborn?"

"Spring Autumn Cicada brought the will of my future clone and returned to my time path clone."

"So my attempt had failed and Heavenly Court still managed to repair fate Gu completely!"

Fang Yuan's expression soon calmed down and the raging waves in his heart were also quickly pacified.

Fang Yuan's gaze was deep and dark like the abyss.

When he gave Spring Autumn Cicada to his time path clone, he had expected a possibility of such a situation. So he was able to quickly accept this fact.

Heavenly Court's strength made him feel like he was pressed down by an entire mountain range!

"But isn't this more interesting?" Fang Yuan's eyes revealed a smile, but it was filled with coldness and mania.

Fear?

What was that?

Even if he failed ten thousand times, a million times, or hundreds of billions of times, as long as there was a chance, Fang Yuan would never give up!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1750: Obtaining Steal Life Immortal Gu

Lang Ya blessed land.

A large group of variant human Gu Immortals were waiting in front of teleportation Gu formation with anticipation.

Suddenly, the immortal formation began to activate and let out a dazzling light.

Standing in front of the variant human Gu Immortals was black haired land spirit who was immediately happy as he shouted: “He is back, he is back!”

Behind him were the snowman, rockman, and inkman Gu Immortals who all had complicated expressions.

Lang Ya blessed land had just been invaded by Heavenly Court, and due to the four races alliance agreement, these three variant human tribes had the responsibility to help the hairy men and protect Lang Ya blessed land from Heavenly Court.

When Lang Ya land spirit requested their help, these three variant human tribes’ leaders were unwilling, they were filled with bitterness and regret towards the alliance agreement.

But what use was their regret?

They could not go against the alliance agreement.

Even if they successfully violated the alliance agreement by some way, so what?

At present, humanity was the ruler of the five regions, an undeniable overlord. The survival space for variant human tribes was extremely small, they could only live by allying with each other.

This strategy was not wrong.

It was just that the three variant human tribes had not thought Lang Ya Sect would actually attract Heavenly Court!

What kind of existence was Heavenly Court?!

This was the number one human force, a colossal organization that had existed for millions of years.

Compared to Heavenly Court, the four races alliance was too minuscule and would not even be able to endure any setback.

So when Lang Ya land spirit requested for help, these three races had been unwilling and had been making excuses.

Who could have thought that at this time, Fang Yuan would put Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s rib bones for sale in treasure yellow heaven, this result invaded the variant human Gu Immortals’ hearts like a hurricane.

They saw hope of resisting Heavenly Court.

But the more important thing was Lang Ya blessed land now possessed rank eight level battle strength!

If they refused Lang Ya land spirit’s request, besides having to face the backlash from breaking the alliance agreement, the three races would also have to face Fang Yuan, a Gu Immortal that could fight rank eight.

The balance in their hearts had quickly inclined to one side, the snowmen were the first to change their standpoint, expressing full support for Lang Ya Sect. Following them were the inkmen and rockmen.

“It was truly correct of me to take in Fang Yuan as an external supreme elder!” Lang Ya land spirit was greatly pleased at achieving his objective.

After he got Fang Yuan’s message and knew he was returning, he had an inspiration and brought these variant human Gu Immortals to welcome Fang Yuan.

The light dissipated and Fang Yuan’s figure appeared in front of everyone.

The variant human Gu Immortals looked on with all sorts of expressions as Lang Ya land spirit greeted Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan looked around and laughed on the inside: “It is the same scene as my previous life. Lang Ya land spirit really has some political skills, using me to suppress the other allies.”

But Fang Yuan did not want to engage in small talk and waste time for no reason. Just like in the previous life, he gave a nod to Xue Er and left.

This small action, however, greatly excited the snowman Gu Immortals, while making the rockmen and inkmen feel envious.

Because of the battle with Thunder Ghost True Monarch, Fang Yuan’s status had greatly risen in everyone’s hearts, but Fang Yuan’s mind was sober at this moment.

After the rebirth, his battle strength was once again back to the peak of rank seven, he was simply nothing when compared to Heavenly Court.

In fact, even in the previous life when he had peak rank eight battle strength, so what?

Fang Yuan and Lang Ya land spirit had a private conversation, Lang Ya land spirit returned Fang Yuan’s perceivable dao Immortal Gu and also told Fang Yuan that Heavenly Court had indeed planted some methods and harmful dao marks in Lang Ya blessed land.

Lang Ya land spirit was extremely worried.

Because even after trying with all his strength, he could do nothing to these dao marks.

Fang Yuan was well aware that these dao marks were a portion of Heavenly Court’s famous star cast killer move and were intentionally left by Feng Jiu Ge.

In his previous life, when Heavenly Court initiated the second invasion, these dao marks turned into a spiral tunnel that directly transported four rank eight Gu Immortals in.

In this battle, Fang Yuan obtained rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel but exposed his emperor yama killer move as well as his Suan Bu Jin identity, and even lost his ally, Lang Ya Sect.

In the end, Fang Yuan retreated, Heavenly Court also had to retreat while Longevity Heaven became the one who benefited the most.

Fang Yuan played dumb and replied to Lang Ya land spirit: “First supreme elder, don’t be too anxious, let me deduce first and plan on how to deal with this situation.”

Lang Ya land spirit heaved a sigh: “Alright.”

He found it strange, Fang Yuan actually did not mention even a word about the Long Hair true meaning, this did not match Fang Yuan’s usual personality.

1However, Lang Ya land spirit also would not remind Fang Yuan, after all, although he had agreed to give it to Fang Yuan, he was still extremely unwilling to part with the Long Hair true meaning.

Right now, wisdom Gu was still in Lang Ya blessed land.

Fang Yuan arrived before wisdom Gu and stayed there for three days and three nights, using his time path clone to deduce continuously.

This rebirth was somewhat special compared to the previous ones.

The rebirth period was quite long ago, having traveled years into the past.

But this was reasonable.

Because Fang Yuan’s clone already had rank seven cultivation back then and Spring Autumn Cicada had also been advanced to rank seven, he had also used the killer move spring autumn success.

Fang Yuan’s main body was killed while the time path clone self-detonated with much deeper foundation than before, Spring Autumn Cicada had more fuel and the rebirth would naturally go back a lot further in time.

As for the first rebirth where Fang Yuan traveled back five hundred years with just rank six cultivation, it was the work of heaven’s will, it was a special situation!

“Actually, there is also the killer move spring autumn target in Red Lotus’ true inheritance which can go back to a specific time. But this killer move cannot guarantee the success of rebirth, so I chose spring autumn success to remove the possibility of failure.”

3Fang Yuan took a glance at Spring Autumn Cicada.

The current Spring Autumn Cicada was not rank seven like in the previous life, it had returned to rank six.

Moreover, because of the rebirth, its state was not optimal, it looked extremely lethargic and its body was brown like dying leaves. It required time to rest and recover.

“In Red Lotus’ true inheritance, there are many killer moves that can hasten the recovery of Spring Autumn Cicada. Spring Autumn Cicada is indeed worthy of being Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s vital Immortal Gu, its effect is truly too powerful.”

Fang Yuan sighed internally.

He was no longer a mortal Gu Master so there was no danger of Spring Autumn Cicada bursting his aperture.

With the current progress, even without Fang Yuan speeding up Spring Autumn Cicada’s recovery, it would recover completely by the time of Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention years later. At that time, Fang Yuan would be able to use spring autumn success once again.

“But Heavenly Court is so strong, even if I can rebirth again and again, it would be no use if I don’t find a way to win against Heavenly Court.”

Thinking of his previous life, Fang Yuan felt a mountain pressing down on him.

Heavenly Court’s foundation was so unfathomable that it shook the world!

Fang Yuan was still unable to see how many Gu Immortals there were in the immortal graveyard.

Duke Long definitely had pseudo-Immortal Venerable battle strength, only Bo Qing might have the strength to contend against him. Fang Yuan himself was killed by Duke Long, Duke Long alone turned their strong invasion into an utter failure!

Naturally, a venerable was an invincible existence, even Duke Long would not be able to compete against any of their killer moves.

But with this, the exchange of moves between venerables across time and space along with their respective plans made the originally chaotic situation even more complicated.

These venerables had arranged countless methods which influenced the whole situation again and again, Fang Yuan felt a headache recalling it.

Besides Duke Long, there was also Fairy Zi Wei, Chen Yi, Li Huang, Qing Ye, Yuan Qiong Du and others.

These Gu Immortals were elites and could not be looked down upon.

Even more terrifying was their sacrificial mindset towards Heavenly Court, they were willing to contribute everything without fearing death.

That kind of fanaticism towards Heavenly Court and humanity made Fang Yuan feel a trace of wariness and trepidation.

“If I can’t find a way to win against Heavenly Court, it is useless even if I have the chance to rebirth countless times. To win against Heavenly Court, I have to try my best in this life and not let go of any chance to strengthen myself!”

“I need to plan carefully.”

Fang Yuan started to make plans.

There was no doubt that skill and foresight were required to make use of rebirth.

Although Fang Yuan had the advantage of future knowledge, he only had memories. He was no longer the same as before, he was the number one rank seven in the world, his every move had wide-ranging influence.

If he changed many things for minuscule profits, the influence would become even greater and cause reality to experience huge changes, sharply lowering Fang Yuan’s rebirth advantage.

But if he was too hesitant to make changes because of this, then he would not improve enough to become Heavenly Court’s match when the time comes.

This required a good balance.

There was also another crucial thing, he had to prevent other Gu Immortals from knowing he had been reborn again.

The longer he could preserve this secret, the more beneficial it would be for him.

Fang Yuan spent about sixteen hours to sort everything out, creating an enormous and meticulous plan.

Fang Yuan called Lang Ya land spirit: “How many Immortal Gu do you have? Let me have a look at the list, I thought about it and felt that refinement path true meaning would not be useful to me. If there are suitable Immortal Gu, I might give up on refinement path true meaning and choose those Immortal Gu.”

“Ah!” Lang Ya land spirit cried out in shock and joy: “Okay, I will immediately give you the list.”

As far as Lang Ya land spirit was concerned, the symbolic meaning of the refinement path true meaning was too huge. It was just like what fate Gu was to Heavenly Court, besides its own power, it had emblematic psychological value as well.

Previously, Lang Ya land spirit had lost Fang Yuan’s Dang Hun Mountain and according to the agreement, he had to compensate Fang Yuan with refinement path true meaning, but he had been very unwilling.

Fang Yuan looked at the list and discovered steal life Immortal Gu was actually included!

In his mind, he nodded in satisfaction. He could see from this that Lang Ya land spirit did not hide anything.

In the past, Fang Yuan had used Spectral Soul’s true inheritance to exchange for Long Hair true inheritance from Lang Ya land spirit, both sides had held back, not exchanging their trump cards.

Lang Ya Sect had Long Hair refinement path true meaning, Long Hair refinement path formation, omnipresent four seas, refinement water, steal life Immortal Gu, Heavenly Giant Solor, the agreement with Longevity Heaven, and so on, these would not be taken out to exchange with Fang Yuan.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan had obtained refinement path true meaning from Lang Ya land spirit, raising his refinement path attainment level to quasi-supreme grandmaster level!

This choice was not wrong as the refinement path attainment level had provided Fang Yuan with a huge help.

But now that Fang Yuan had been reborn, his attainment level in refinement path was the same as in his previous life, it was still at quasi-supreme grandmaster. So refinement path true meaning was useless to Fang Yuan.

1This was because the attainment level of Fang Yuan’s main body was always shared with the time path clone.

Unlike Spectral Soul’s clones, Fang Yuan’s main reason for creating the time path clone was to make the time path clone bathe in the light of wisdom and help him deduce things. How could this work without shared attainment levels?

Now, although it was only the time path clone who had reborn, his attainment level was the same as before, so the attainment levels of Fang Yuan’s main body naturally rose as well.

Thus, Fang Yuan made a different choice in this life: “I choose steal life Immortal Gu, and also these... hmm, give me all the time path Immortal Gu.”

Lang Ya land spirit was dazed for a moment before quickly agreeing: “Okay!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1751: I Know What I Am Doing

Fang Yuan looked at steal life Immortal Gu closely.

This Immortal Gu resembled a bee, it was the size of an adult fist, its body was covered in alternating gold and black stripes and its whole body was covered with a layer of thin red radiance. When it moved, this red light would brighten.

The most eye-catching part was the bee’s stinger, it was extremely thin and sharp, its length surpassed the body itself, reaching that of an adult’s forearm.

According to rumors, steal life Immortal Gu was the first Immortal Gu obtained by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, its origin was extraordinary.

Fang Yuan looked at steal life Immortal Gu and was immersed in thoughts: “Although Thieving Heaven is a Demon Venerable, his nature is mild and not bloodthirsty, he is completely different from Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. But because of this nature, he created theft path.”

Fang Yuan knew a lot about Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was an otherworldly demon, he wholeheartedly wanted to return to his original world. His nature was mild and he did not enjoy killing, he only gathered resources and cultivated constantly, searching for a way to return home.

What to do?

Facing this question, theft path was the answer he created!

The ten venerables were the most outstanding characters in history.

After Fang Yuan was reborn, he became even more interested about these venerables and placed even greater importance on them.

It could be said that in Fang Yuan’s previous life, in the unprecedented battle which started based on fate Gu’s restoration project, venerables played a key role, every time a venerable made a move, it would almost change the entire battle situation.

The unparalleled strength and farsighted planning of each venerable left an extremely deep impression on Fang Yuan.

Suddenly, a light of inspiration flashed past Fang Yuan’s mind.

“Limitless, Star Constellation, Primordial Origin, Genesis Lotus, Giant Sun, Red Lotus, and Paradise Earth, all of them used various kinds of methods to take part in the five regions chaotic war.”

“Only Thieving Heaven, Reckless Savage, and Spectral Soul did not make a move.”

“No, Spectral Soul was already taken captive and only his remnant soul remained, how could he have any power to make a move? I, who inherited Shadow Sect’s true inheritance and led Shadow Sect to battle, can be considered as his move.”

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable is incomparably bold and has the deepest killing intent. After death, he accumulated strength, reaching the terrifying achievement of having great grandmaster attainment in every path, just based on his attainment levels, he can be considered as the number one person in history, surpassing all the past venerables.”

“But even he has to follow the most fundamental law. Without any immortal essence or Gu worms, and having only a remnant soul left, he had no tools to do anything and could only be a captive of Heavenly Court.”

“So did Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and Reckless Savage Demon Venerable predict the five regions chaotic war or not?”

“Both of them should have been able to predict it. After all, both Primordial Origin and Limitless left behind their arrangements, these two are also similarly rank nine venerables and were born later as well, how could they not have deduced it?”

“They deduced this battle, so did they leave behind any arrangements to intervene?”

“It is possible that Thieving Heaven only thought about returning home, but what about Reckless Savage? He was one of the Demon Venerables who attacked Heavenly Court. He should have left a lot of arrangements.”

1“They were not exposed in my previous life, but can I find Reckless Savage’s arrangements in this life and use them?”

Fang Yuan’s eyes brightened at this thought, this was an excellent method!

Facing a colossal force like Heavenly Court, unless he could advance to rank nine venerable, he would have to borrow the strength of others.

At this time, Lang Ya land spirit interrupted Fang Yuan’s thoughts: “Fang Yuan, you now have rank eight steal life Immortal Gu, this means you have five rank eight Immortal Gu in your hands! Hehe, it is truly unbelievable. You only have rank seven cultivation but actually possess five rank eight Immortal Gu! Such a situation has rarely happened even in the whole of history.”

Lang Ya land spirit sighed with deep emotions.

Fang Yuan had obtained steal life Immortal Gu, he also had Attitude, Wisdom Sword, Years Flow Like Water, and Soul Beast Token, he had five rank eight Immortal Gu indeed.

This naturally did not include wisdom Gu because wisdom Gu was rank nine!

Lang Ya land spirit had been paying attention to Fang Yuan all along and was quite aware of his situation.

Fang Yuan smiled nonchalantly.

How could he tell Lang Ya land spirit that he would still obtain more rank eight Immortal Gu in the future, like Spring, Summer, Big Qi, and Regret?

If he said it, wouldn't it scare Lang Ya land spirit?

"It is just that this steal life Immortal Gu has a flaw. Back then, when Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable left it behind, he was worried this Gu would bring catastrophe to people, thus he only left behind three chances to use it. In my previous life, in the battle to defend Lang Ya, the chances were used to kill Thunder Ghost True Monarch, then steal life Immortal Gu was destroyed by Chen Yi using karma divine tree."

"This is not the only flaw of Steal Life. Using steal life Immortal Gu alone does not distinguish between enemies and allies, while it targets enemies, it will endanger the user as well. This is quite an awkward result."

"So, now that I have obtained steal life Immortal Gu, I will have to deduce some killer moves to remove this flaw at least."

"If possible, it would be even better if I could lift the limit of using steal life Immortal Gu for three times only."

Various thoughts flashed in Fang Yuan's mind.

However, he was aware that steal life Immortal Gu's three usage limit was set by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, it would be extremely difficult for him to resolve it.

While thinking of these, Fang Yuan smiled at Lang Ya land spirit: "First supreme elder, this steal life Immortal Gu seems like it can only be used three times? Do you know why that is the case?"

Lang Ya land spirit was inwardly shaken.

Fang Yuan actually saw through it!

How was this possible?

This was Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable's method, even he himself was unable to sense it. No clues could be seen from the outside.

Even when the previous land spirit used all kinds of refinement path methods, he was unable to sense the limits placed by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

Fang Yuan only took several glances and he understood it clearly?!

Lang Ya land spirit blurted out with a shocked expression: "How did you discover it?"

The moment he said this, Lang Ya land spirit's expression changed, because this question was no doubt confirming Fang Yuan’s words.

He coughed and said with an awkward expression: “It was not that I intentionally hid it from you, I was planning to tell you.”

Although land spirits could not lie, they could think and scheme. Like the black haired land spirit, he was ambitious and had good leadership as well. The previous white haired land spirit was more proficient in enduring silently and managed to develop Lang Ya blessed land very well.

The black and white land spirits each had their own strengths.

The black haired land spirit ‘intended to say the truth’ but his idea was ‘saying the truth after Fang Yuan discovered the flaw’, it was not considered lying.

Fang Yuan looked at black haired land spirit and said with a faint smile: “First supreme elder, I wanted to exchange for refinement path true meaning, just these Immortal Gu won’t do. Steal Life is also in this state, you need to add some things to fill in the difference.”

The black haired land spirit rolled his eyes and mumbled: “I know this. Speak, what else do you want?”

Fang Yuan smiled: “I have a suggestion.”

He said his suggestion, the general idea was to deepen the collaboration with the other three races, by using Lang Ya Sect’s accumulation to exchange for the time path Immortal Gu that the three variant human races had.

Lang Ya land spirit was surprised: “You still want to exchange for time path Immortal Gu? Are you thinking of developing in time path?”

Fang Yuan nodded.

This was necessary.

He currently had yet to kill Xia Cha and lacked Spring, Summer, Autumn, and Winter, these four time path Immortal Gu. He also had not gotten rank seven edge Gu from Tie Qu Zhong yet and could not use time cutting edge either.

Fang Yuan’s time path Immortal Gu came mainly from two sources, the most important of them came from Hei Fan’s true inheritance, while the others were some Gu worms left from Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage.

Fang Yuan’s refinement path attainment level was at quasi-supreme grandmaster, his time path was too!

Adding on that Red Lotus’ true inheritances were still in the River of Time, Fang Yuan would need to go into the River of Time.

Thus, he naturally needed powerful battle strength in the aspect of time path!

Lang Ya land spirit nodded: “Then I shall swallow my pride and discuss with the other three races. Fang Yuan, the important thing now is still Heavenly Court. We need to quickly get rid of the harmful dao marks in the blessed land before secretly relocating as quickly as possible.”

Fang Yuan quickly comforted the anxious black haired land spirit: “I know what I am doing, relax. I am gathering these time path Immortal Gu to deal with Heavenly Court as well. I have some plans to deal with the harmful dao marks in Lang Ya blessed land, I will modify our super immortal formation after some time as well.”

“That’s good.” The black haired land spirit patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder and left.

His actions were extremely efficient, he settled the discussions not long later and gave the time path Immortal Gu to Fang Yuan.

Counting in the time path Immortal Gu from Lang Ya Sect’s treasury as well as those exchanged from the variant humans, there were five, three rank six and two rank seven.

Among the rank seven, there was time concealment Immortal Gu and time needle1 Immortal Gu, among the rank six, the Immortal Gu were Yesterday, Ten Days, and Successive Years.

To Fang Yuan, the most helpful one was time concealment Immortal Gu as this Gu could conceal the Gu Immortal, he was extremely happy to have obtained it.

Time needle Immortal Gu was an offensive Gu which would shoot out thin needles towards the enemies once activated.

The remaining three rank six Gu were just passable and would at most be used as supplementary Immortal Gu.

2A day later.

Large amounts of rank eight immortal materials were thrown down and formed into a multicolored whirlpool.

Wisdom Gu dove into the vortex of its own accord like a cat that had smelled fish.

Fang Yuan opened his sovereign immortal aperture and stored the multicolored whirlpool inside.

Back then, Lang Ya land spirit had used this method to deceive wisdom Gu into moving to Lang Ya blessed land from Hu Immortal blessed land.

This method was used in Fang Yuan’s previous life as well.

This time, although he was familiar with it, he pretended like it was the first time he saw it and praised Lang Ya land spirit endlessly.

To hide the secret of his current rebirth, he needed to start concealing it from these small details.

The black haired land spirit was praised by Fang Yuan, but his disappointed feelings were already revealed.

“Sigh, my heart feels so empty now.” Black haired land spirit heaved a deep sigh, he had been coveting wisdom Gu for a long time. He had not expected it would still go to Fang Yuan in the end, and he had even spent a large amount of lifespan Gu in the process of feeding it.

But he could do nothing about it, under the threat of Heavenly Court’s invasion, the black haired land spirit had to accept this no matter how unwilling he was, to prevent wisdom Gu from ending up in Heavenly Court’s hands!

“Take a look at this Immortal Gu recipe, we will refine this Immortal Gu next.” After Fang Yuan collected wisdom Gu, he gave an Immortal Gu recipe to Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit looked carefully: “Myriad self Immortal Gu?”

“Right. This Gu can greatly increase my battle strength and it will be helpful in dealing with Heavenly Court.” Fang Yuan said while walking out of this valley: “Start preparing, I will go to gather the eight main immortal materials.”

“Oh, wait a moment, didn’t you want to modify the blessed land’s formation?”

Fang Yuan waved his hand without even turning around: “Don’t worry, I know what I am doing.”

Lang Ya land spirit: “...”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1752 Killing Immortals, Plundering Loo

Northern Plains.

Autumn blade plain.

A Gu Immortal walked barefooted on the grassland.

He was tall and well-built, and had a bronze luster to his skin. He was wearing an armored vest that revealed his shoulders. His pants were rolled up, revealing his calves.

Every step he walked, there would be bloody footprints left on the grassland.

He was Meng Tu.

Blade path quasi-great grandmaster, rank seven Gu Immortal with peak rank seven battle strength, he was one of the top three experts among Meng tribe’s rank seven elites!

In order to breakthrough in his blade path attainment level, Meng Tu chose to guard autumn blade plain, imitating Ren Zu’s actions and almost ignoring the outside world completely.

He was dead silent as he walked step by step in autumn blade plain, his eyes were shut as he concentrated deeply, trying to comprehend the profundity of blade path.

Suddenly, he opened his eyes!

He saw that monsters were emitting shrill shrieks as they attacked him.

These monsters were horrifying in appearance, they had human shapes but had malevolent and terrifying faces, they had knife-like claws, their eyes were filled with blood, their intense killing intent made Meng Tu’s hair stand on end.

“What in the world is this?!” Meng Tu was shocked and furious.

After fighting against these monsters, he was shocked to realize that each of them had rank seven battle strength!

Even with his peak rank seven battle strength, against this unceasing wave of monsters, he had no choice but to retreat.

But right when he was about to retreat, the monsters attacking him self-detonated.

This sudden event was out of Meng Tu’s expectations, he was truly caught off guard.

Boom boom boom!

The monsters continued to self-detonate with great power, Meng Tu retreated while he spat out blood.

“These monsters are working together in a tight formation, they have great coordination, there must be a Gu Immortal controlling them! I wonder if they are a soul path or enslavement path Gu Immortal?”

Meng Tu was uncertain and worried, he was about to seek help from his tribe when the world suddenly changed colors.

By the time Meng Tu reacted, he was already trapped inside an immortal battlefield.

“This immortal battlefield was set up so quickly?!” Shock flashed across Meng Tu’s eyes.

Until this point, he had not even seen the enemy’s face yet.

“Sir, who are you, why are you being enemies with my Meng tribe?” Meng Tu shouted.

The mastermind Fang Yuan smiled lightly, he started to prepare Luo Po seal while ignoring him.

Fang Yuan did not have Wu Yong’s concealment method, once he started preparing Luo Po seal, intense winds blew, the overwhelming aura permeated the entire yama battlefield.

His location was thus exposed.

Meng Tu’s sharp gaze looked over, he saw that Fang Yuan was an ordinary looking Gu Immortal, wearing a gray robe and looking very much like a common passerby.

But Fang Yuan’s current aura made Meng Tu incredibly astounded.

In fact, Meng Tu was dazed: “He only has peak rank seven cultivation, how can he use a rank eight killer move?”

In truth, Luo Po seal was only quasi-rank eight, but it had immense aura. Because Fang Yuan did not have rank eight immortal essence yet, the Luo Po seal he activated now had been modified and weakened a little.

Meng Tu gritted his teeth, charging at Fang Yuan.

Northern Plains Gu Immortals were this courageous after all!

Fang Yuan smiled lightly, he was relaxed and calm, as if Meng Tu did not exist.

A large number of human-shaped yama children appeared and blocked Meng Tu with their lives.

The number of yama children sent Meng Tu into despair!

Once Fang Yuan's Luo Po seal was ready, he attacked from afar.

Due to the yama children's obstruction, Meng Tu could not dodge anywhere, he was hit by Luo Po seal.

Instantly, he expression turned pale and ghastly.

He was dead.

His soul dissipated completely, not a trace was left.

Fang Yuan started collecting his loot.

Meng Tu's body was intact, his immortal aperture was also left behind, there were many cultivation resources and three Immortal Gu inside.

In the previous life, Meng Tu self-detonated, Fang Yuan only obtained bladewing Immortal Gu, his gains were much higher now.

After dispelling yama battlefield, Fang Yuan looted the whole of autumn blade plain.

The drinking blade wine that was buried underground was his main goal, Fang Yuan also collected it.

Other than that, there was a vast number of mortal edge Gu.

Forget about immortal level edge Gu, it was in the hands of Southern Border Gu Immortal Tie Qu Zhong.

"Meng Tu self-detonated in my previous life, it was out of my expectations, his blade path dao marks were left in this autumn blade plain, making the potential of this place extraordinary."

"But in this life, Meng Tu was killed by me before he even thought of self-detonating. Now that I plundered everything here, this autumn blade plain is as good as history."

Fang Yuan took nearly everything, he swept through the area with a cold gaze before he turned around and left.

He did not return to Lang Ya blessed land, because he still had immortal materials to collect.

There were four main immortal materials for refining myriad self Immortal Gu, they were drinking blade wine, edge Gu, front-back divine obstruction needle, and floating life fire.

He had the first two now, only the latter two were left.

Fang Yuan came to Divine Needle Valley.

This was an artificial valley that rank seven Gu Immortal Sleeping Lady purposely created for the divine hedgehog.

Sleeping Lady was a rank seven Northern Plains lone immortal who did not have outstanding battle strength, but she controlled an immemorial desolate beast divine hedgehog that was a sword path immemorial desolate beast.

The divine hedgehog had an ability to shoot out all the spines on its body, which was extremely fast and had terrifying power that could slaughter anyone it hit.

If Sleeping Lady and the divine hedgehog cooperated well, there was a chance of killing Meng Tu.

Precisely so, in the previous life, Meng Zi Zai and Meng Zhao from Meng tribe investigated Meng Tu’s death and had actually suspected Sleeping Lady.

Fang Yuan came to Divine Needle Valley but did not enter, he used the same trick as earlier, sending the yama children to attack.

Soon, Sleeping Lady’s shocked screams could be heard in the valley: “Such guts! You dare to attack my Divine Needle Valley!”

The yama children exploded one by one as Sleeping Lady fled, cutting a sorry figure.

“Want to join up with the divine hedgehog?” Fang Yuan sneered, he used the remaining force of the yama children’s self-detonation to rapidly form yama battlefield, trapping Sleeping Lady inside.

Sleeping Lady had almost the same reaction as Meng Tu: “What immortal battlefield is this? It is so fast!”

Fang Yuan slowly showed up: “Of course it is. But compared to rumor cage, this is still too slow.”

Sleeping Lady looked at Fang Yuan with a wary expression: “Sir, who might you be? Do we have any grudges between us? Please let me off, we can negotiate if you need anything.”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “I want your life.”

Sleeping Lady’s expression turned pale.

The yama children attacked together, Sleeping Lady held on desperately in this situation as she screamed: “Spare me, I will do anything you want! Wait, I will teach you the method to control the divine hedgehog, how about that? I will use this in exchange for my life!”

Fang Yuan looked at her plainly: “Stop acting, how can someone who was able to survive between Murong tribe and Meng tribe be such a coward?”

Seeing that Fang Yuan exposed her, Sleeping Lady roared as she displayed her true battle strength.

Her strength was not low, it was quite different from the outside world’s evaluation, she managed to fight a way out of the yama children’s encirclement.

But so what?

She could not break out of the yama battlefield, she was still a fish caught in the net.

Fang Yuan started to prepare Luo Po seal.

Sleeping Lady rushed towards him and attempted to stop Fang Yuan from using his move.

But her strength was much lower than Meng Tu, if he could not stop Fang Yuan, how could she?

Sleeping Lady smiled bitterly: “I am just a lone immortal who does not offend anyone, I usually stay home and rarely go out, I just wanted to develop my small business here. To think that trouble would come to me even when I am home. You devil, one day, you will face your retribution! All your evil acts will be repaid to you a hundredfold! You will end up like me!”

She cursed Fang Yuan loudly, venting the anger and fear in her heart.

Fang Yuan’s voice was icy cold: “It seems that you do not know your sin yet.”

Sleeping Lady stared with wide eyes: “What sin do I have?”

She was extremely angry, not only was Fang Yuan trying to kill her, he was also slandering her.

Sleeping Lady smiled coldly: “You are a demonic path Gu Immortal but you are trying to slander your enemies like a righteous path hypocrite? Hmph, simply ridiculous! You do not even deserve a bit of respect from me.”

“You want to know your sin? Your weakness is a sin!” Saying this, Fang Yuan shot out Luo Po seal.

As expected, Sleeping Lady was hit by this move as her defenses broke like thin paper, she died on the spot.

Fang Yuan kept her corpse and immortal aperture, the only downside was that Sleeping Lady had self-detonated all of her Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan dispelled yama battlefield, he disguised himself as Sleeping Lady as he stored all of the front-back divine obstruction needles from the divine hedgehog.

The divine hedgehog’s battle strength fell to rock bottom, Fang Yuan directly suppressed it and sent it into his immortal aperture.

As for this Divine Needle Valley, Fang Yuan did not let it off.

He used pulling mountain Immortal Gu to directly take it away, stuffing it into his immortal aperture, nothing was left behind!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1753 Retrieving Red Lotus“ True Inheritance Again

Northern Plains.

In an ordinary grassland, there was nobody around.

Suddenly, a mystical light appeared in the sky, four Gu Immortals emerged.

They were Fang Yuan, Ying Wu Xie, Fairy Miao Yin, and Lady White Rabbit.

After rebirth, Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit, along with Sixth Hair who was inside Lang Ya Sect as a spy, had not been sacrificed yet, they were all alive.

“Alright, you can go back and cultivate.” Fang Yuan opened the entrance of the sovereign immortal aperture as the three Gu Immortals went in.

All of these remaining Shadow Sect Gu Immortals were inside Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture, cultivating.

Fang Yuan needed them to assemble the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel, this was the method that allowed Fang Yuan to move rapidly across large distances.

Omni-directional Travel was very important to Fang Yuan now, it made up for his weakness in movement.

After Fang Yuan lost Fixed Immortal Travel, this move replaced it and helped Fang Yuan get out of many dangerous situations.

“But Fixed Immortal Travel is still the more convenient to use.” Fang Yuan sighed internally.

After leaving Divine Needle Valley, he moved through more than half of Northern Plains before arriving here.

The aura of Omni-directional Travel could not be concealed, it drew attention, Fang Yuan purposely made some detours here and there, he had to go around several super forces stealthily.

If he had Fixed Immortal Travel, it would not be so troublesome.

Fang Yuan added in his head: “Of course, Fixed Immortal Travel has to be rank seven for me to use it well.”

“By now, Feng Jiu Ge should already have rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel?”

In the previous life, Fang Yuan had stolen rank seven Immortal Gu Fixed Immortal Travel from Feng Jiu Ge using great thief ghost hand in the battle of Lang Ya.

This Gu worm was very useful to Fang Yuan.

Even after becoming rank eight, rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel could become the core of a space path immortal killer move, the killer move’s power was sufficient to help Fang Yuan travel around the world with ease.

Fixed Immortal Travel was really convenient, it was a top tier space path Immortal Gu, its user could basically go anywhere they desired.

Omni-directional Travel was useful but inferior to Fixed Immortal Travel, be it the five regional walls or the heavenly wind qi wall, or even the number of people needed to use it.

“In my previous life, I was lucky and stole Fixed Immortal Travel using great thief ghost hand. But this method is unreliable, it requires luck. How can I ensure that I obtain Fixed Immortal Travel this time around?”

Fang Yuan was reborn using Spring Autumn Cicada, he brought back precious information, attainment levels and killer moves, but his luck had also fallen drastically.

These last days, he had been using luck path methods to sustain his own luck.

But in terms of luck path, the truth was that even though he explored Imperial Court blessed land and destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, his luck path gains were far less than the world thought.

As Fang Yuan’s cultivation level rose, these luck path methods were starting to fall behind.

“But thankfully, in the previous battles, be it Meng Tu or Sleeping Lady, their battle strength is inferior to mine, even with lower luck, it was not a problem.”

Fang Yuan was quite satisfied with the two battles earlier.

The entire situation was within his control.

This feeling of controlling everything that happens was truly wonderful!

In the previous life, he lacked a powerful attacking method like Luo Po seal, he could only rely on great thief ghost hand to win through a surprise attack, or to use myriad dragon and yama children for a battle of attrition, it was quite troublesome.

This resulted in Meng Tu self-detonating, and Fang Yuan being forced to escape during the battle of Lang Ya blessed land.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan took many risks and spent a vast amount of effort and time to deduce Luo Po seal, he only succeeded during the Five Regional Mountain Range battle, he used it to capture rank eight Gu Immortal Jun Shen Guang alive, shocking even Wu Yong.

This time around, he could use Luo Po seal from the start, the effect was clear and evident.

After killing Meng Tu and Sleeping Lady, Fang Yuan had three of the main immortal materials for myriad self Immortal Gu, he only needed the floating life fire now.

According to his previous life’s experience, Fang Yuan did not need to find the floating life fire personally, after some time, Central Continent Gu Immortal Zhang Ji would sell it in treasure yellow heaven. By then, Fang Yuan could just buy a bit from him.

Fang Yuan came to this ordinary looking plain for other purposes.

He landed and after hesitating for a bit, he activated an immortal killer move.

Burning soul bursting luck!

“My soul foundation is not high now, I need to be careful with using burning soul bursting luck. But this time, I am entering the River of Time, to play safe, I need to use it.” Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

In the previous life, many Gu Immortals made deductions on him, they had been doing it all the way until Fang Yuan used rebirth again.

Although none of the deductions succeeded because of emperor yama, it expended Fang Yuan’s soul foundation in order to block deductions.

Right now, Fang Yuan still had a batch of guts Gu, but his soul cultivation had been stopped. Dang Hun Mountain had just self-detonated in Fairy Zi Wei’s hands, Fang Yuan needed a lot of time before he could restore Dang Hun Mountain to its peak condition again from that tiny fragment.

After using burning soul bursting luck, Fang Yuan’s luck rose but it still could not be compared to his previous life at the same time period.

Spring Autumn Cicada’s downside was immense, the higher his cultivation level, the lower his luck became. It was truly a wonder how Red Lotus Demon Venerable dealt with it in his time.

Fang Yuan continued to activate Gu worms as he moved around the plains in a circle. He stomped lightly as he activated the natural formation here.

Next, he went inside the immortal formation, vanishing on the spot.

Similar to Southern Border, there was also a natural tributary of the River of Time here, after Shadow Sect found it, they used formation path methods and the natural dao marks here to create an immortal level formation, concealing this place and preventing anyone from finding it.

Fang Yuan looked at the tributary of the River of Time as time path mortal Gu flew out of the river, floating above the river.

Fang Yuan calmed his mind, carefully using a time path immortal killer move.

This move was created by him days ago, he had not named it yet, its main purpose was to conceal one’s own existence and protect against deductions.

After using this move, Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, he jumped into the tributary of the River of Time.

Flowing in the tributary of the River of Time, he quickly entered the main river.

Far away, an Immortal Gu House floated on top of the River of Time, river water flowed beneath it as ripples and waves crashed continuously.

This Immortal Gu House was designed as a pavilion that was not covered on all four sides, it was very simplistic in appearance. The cover was made of yellow grass, the pillars were grey white rocks that were not polished. There was a folding screen in the pavilion consisting of multiple panels, it was the most elegant decoration in there.

There were four Gu Immortals in this pavilion, three male and one female.

They were the Four Xunzi from Central Continent’s Spirit Butterfly Valley, they cultivated time path and had rank seven cultivation level, they were quadruplets with a close relationship with each other.

Fang Yuan used the Red Lotus true inheritance that Spectral Soul found to get rid of Heavenly Court’s Lord Huang Shi, it caused Heavenly Court to experience a lack of time path experts.

Even though the Four Xunzi were not Heavenly Court members, they had great strength and were loyal, Fairy Zi Wei promoted them personally. Right now, they were guarding the River of Time inside Present and Past Pavilion. Once Fang Yuan entered the River of Time, they would notice it immediately.

“Oh?” At this time, Shang Xunzi gasped lightly.

“What is it?” From among the four, the youngest and the only sister Xun Guo Zi asked.

The eldest brother, Shang Xunzi, pointed at the folding screen in Present and Past Pavilion, he said with hesitation: “I think I saw a ripple earlier on one of the panels.”

“You did?” Zhong Xunzi and Xia Xunzi looked at each other.

“Then let’s check it.” Xun Guo Zi had a vibrant and cheerful nature, but because this was an important mission, she did not fool around.

The Four Xunzi activated Present and Past Pavilion, they inspected for tens of times but could not find anything amiss.

Everything was normal.

“I guess I saw wrongly, haha.” Shang Xunzi was a little embarrassed.

“Brother, don’t be too nervous. That Fang Yuan is only at the peak of rank seven, we Four Xunzi can defeat him even without Present and Past Pavilion.” Zhong Xunzi consoled.

Even though Lord Huang Shi died, Heavenly Court had investigated fully, they knew about his usage of Red Lotus’ true inheritance and also Fang Yuan’s current time path battle strength.

Xun Guo Zi giggled: “Don’t worry, don’t worry, even if all of you die, as long as I survive, you will be revived.”

“Hmm, you’re cursing your brothers now?”

“Oh you...”

“You are really naughty!”

“Brothers, spare me!”

Present and Past Pavilion was filled with laughter.

These four who were toying around and having fun would never expect that Fang Yuan was already inside the River of Time!

In his previous life, Present and Past Pavilion found him even though he had an incomplete Immortal Gu House.

But now, it was different!

Firstly, Fang Yuan was only facing Present and Past Pavilion, because now was too early, Heavenly Court had not assembled the other three time path Immortal Gu Houses yet.

Secondly, Fang Yuan had a deep understanding of Present and Past Pavilion. He had destroyed it twice in his previous life, those Four Xunzi had died at his hands, Fang Yuan managed to capture three of their souls and soul search them, he learned a lot about the mysteries of Present and Past Pavilion!

Finally, Fang Yuan exchanged for a few time path Immortal Gu after rebirth, one of them was rank seven time path Immortal Gu Time Concealment, it allowed a Gu Immortal to conceal their traces. Using an immortal killer move with it as the core, he could evade Present and Past Pavilion’s detection, and his time path killer move was even amplified inside the River of Time...

Because of these, rank seven Present and Past Pavilion could not detect Fang Yuan’s movement.

Fang Yuan swam in the River of Time, moving rapidly.

He faced some obstruction and difficulties of course.

Like the sudden springs which could even kill rank eight Gu Immortals, or the ripples of time that could reduce lifespan, any Gu Immortal would fear them.

There were also year beasts, the River of Time had the highest number of desolate and ancient desolate level year beasts.

As he swam, Fang Yuan met at least three immemorial year beasts.

Thankfully, he had already used burning soul bursting luck before, his luck was quite good and most of these dangerous situations were resolved without much problem.

Against these year beasts, Fang Yuan chose to avoid them, he tried not to cause a commotion.

One reason was Present and Past Pavilion, if he fought, there was a high chance of getting exposed.

The other was that Fang Yuan did not own a year essence pool now. Without it, he could not accumulate his forces, catching year beasts was currently a burden for him.

Eventually, Spring Autumn Cicada started to vibrate, after a while, Fang Yuan found the stone lotus island!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1754 Fang Yuan“s Future Self

Fang Yuan ascended the stone lotus island again.

More accurately speaking, it was the first time this life, he had come here in the previous life.

Once he stepped onto the stone lotus island, Fang Yuan watched the scenes of Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s memories.

He had already seen this in the previous life, they were just repeated scenes but Fang Yuan still felt slightly moved.

“Red Lotus Demon Venerable was truly a very unique venerable. He had rank nine cultivation level but used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth, he abandoned his rank nine venerable position.”

“But if he did not, he would not be able to return to the past and change history to make up for his regrets.”

“Thus, later on, he created future self, call of the ancient, and support of the future, he used these killer moves...”

The stone lotus island that contained Red Lotus’ true inheritance had concealment abilities, Heavenly Court could not find it easily. They had not made much progress all along.

In the previous life, when they were about to obtain it, Fang Yuan ruined their chances and Feng Jiu Ge had no choice but to use assimilation wind song, he destroyed the stone lotus island. From Heavenly Court’s perspective, it was quite sad.

Fang Yuan stepped onto this stone lotus island, it had been here for over a million years.

But for some reason, when Fang Yuan arrived this time, looking at the river water outside the island, he had a realization.

“The origin of the River of Time should be the time when the world was created.”

“The end of the River of Time is naturally the time when the world is destroyed.”

“The vertical movement and length of the River of Time is this entire world’s experiences. The horizontal movement and width of the River of Time is represented by everything in this world — the birds, flowers, fish, insects, people, beasts, plants, and others.”

“Evidently, the more bountiful the world is and the more things that exist, the wider the River of Time would be. The more desolate and barren this world is, the fewer things that exist, the narrower this river will be.”

Fang Yuan had time path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level, his inspiration flashed now and he gained lots of realization and comprehension towards rebirth.

“The essence of my rebirth is just bringing a will from the downstream to the upstream through Spring Autumn Cicada, before it fuses with me from a certain point in time.”

“Because of the theory of time in this world, the world is unique and absolute, there are no parallel dimensions. When I rebirth, the downstream remains as it is, after I died, Heavenly Court dominated the world and the four regions were helpless against it.”

“But after rebirth, I am like a drop of ink in this clear river water, as I continue to change events and people, some things will exist while others vanish, this ink will spread to a larger amount of water, this entire river will be dyed in a different color.”

“When the ink gets to the point where Heavenly Court repairs fate Gu and holds the Refinement Path Convention, many things will change, the future will no longer be the same.”

Fang Yuan was a transmigrator from Earth, there was an idea called the butterfly effect.

But now, Fang Yuan understood that in this Gu world, the ink effect was more useful to explain the influences of rebirth.

“Of course, I can easily change things because fate Gu is not complete, and most importantly, because I am an otherworldly demon not bound by fate.”

“If Red Lotus Demon Venerable goes back to the past, it is hard for him to change many things, the outcomes of many things will still return to their original route.”

“Or rather, otherworldly demons are a huge blob of ink, while native Gu Immortals are just ripples in the water, even though they can cause some disturbances in the short run, under the restraint of fate Gu, everything will return to its original state, there would be no changes.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan’s admiration towards Red Lotus Demon Venerable grew.

This special existence had forcefully created the current situation despite not being an otherworldly demon.

The price that he had paid for this and the sacrifices he had made were simply unimaginable!

There were many time path immortal materials left on the stone lotus island, among which were mostly rank eight immortal materials.

Red Lotus’ true meaning — it could allow a Gu Immortal’s time path attainment to rise to quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level.

There were also all sorts of immortal killer moves that used Spring Autumn Cicada as the core, spring autumn success was one of them.

There was also the method that Red Lotus Demon Venerable specially left behind, it was called future self, it could allow a Gu Immortal to enter his peak rank seven condition in the future.

The only thing lacking was regret Gu.

This rank eight Immortal Gu was still inside the dragon whale grotto-heaven, it was taken by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan had used Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangements to obtain regret Gu first before being transported to the stone lotus island.

Now, because he knew about the location of the stone lotus island in the River of Time, he came here in advance and took the Red Lotus true inheritance.

This was much earlier than last time.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan entered the River of Time three times. The first time, he was attacked by Heavenly Court’s four time path Immortal Gu Houses and was also ambushed by Li Huang, he lost the incomplete Immortal Gu House that he had created after much work, after exposing all his trump cards, he escaped.

The second time, Fang Yuan used Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s method to obtain regret Gu and directly teleported to the stone lotus island to inherit the Red Lotus true inheritance.

The third time, he found a new stone lotus island that Heavenly Court was about to get. By working with Bing Sai Chuan and the rest to deal with Heavenly Court, he fought for the Red Lotus true inheritance. Eventually, Feng Jiu Ge used assimilation wind song to destroy the stone lotus island, neither side could gain anything from it.

All in all, Fang Yuan’s experiences in the River of Time could be said to be full of ups and downs, he had experienced success and failure.

This time, using the memories that he had, Fang Yuan first tasted success!

“Regret Gu isn’t here but that is fine, the crucial thing now is Heavenly Court’s invasion of Lang Ya blessed land, there is still some time until I upgrade and mass refine all of my Immortal Gu.”

“I should make use of future self first.”

Fang Yuan let out Ying Wu Xie and the rest, letting them cultivate on the stone lotus island to familiarize themselves with future self just like in the previous life.

Different from last time, Fang Yuan’s subordinates, Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit, were still alive, it raised the usefulness of future self by a large extent.

He himself could use future self too!

In the previous life, he had rank eight cultivation level, future self was useless for him, but now, he only had rank seven cultivation, future self was still effective on him.

“Wait!”

“Maybe this is the supposed timing for my arrival on the stone lotus island.”

“Back then, Red Lotus Demon Venerable deduced that I would come here with rank seven cultivation level, that’s why he left behind future self to help me.”

“In the previous life, I thought that Red Lotus had made a wrong deduction.... but now it seems that Red Lotus Demon Venerable had considered the situation after my rebirth?”

“That means, this Red Lotus true inheritance was not left to my previous life’s self, but was meant for the current me?!”

Bright light flickered in Fang Yuan’s eyes continuously for a while.

He made Ying Wu Xie and the rest stay behind while he left the stone lotus island.

Using a time path killer move, he concealed himself, continuing to swim.

He remembered the third scene of entering the river, towards the other stone lotus island, he had his plans.

His goal was to explore two stone lotus islands in this trip!

After spending a long time and facing some obstacles, Fang Yuan looked for all the spots that the stone lotus island could appear.

But regrettably, he did not find it.

“Stone lotus islands can move on their own, it seems that this stone lotus island is not fixed in position, it is different from the previous one.”

Fang Yuan was not dejected even though he could not succeed this time.

It was part of his expectations.

Present and Past Pavilion.

The Four Xunzi encountered a small problem.

An ancient year beast attacked Present and Past Pavilion, it flickered with profound light and remained unmoving.

Soon, with the cooperation of the Four Xunzi, this ancient year beast died.

Xun Guo Zi cheered: “Great, we obtained a huge amount of time path immortal materials!”

“That’s right.” Zhong Xunzi sighed deeply: “The River of Time is truly the sacred land of cultivation for us time path Gu Immortals, it is just like how Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley are sacred lands to soul path Gu Immortals.”

Xia Xunzi added: “That’s right, Heavenly Court sent us to guard Present and Past Pavilion, even though we are supposed to defend against the demon Fang Yuan, this is also an extremely good chance for us to cultivate! If we can get more time path immortal materials, our cultivation will be smoother.”

Shang Xunzi smiled: “Not just that, within Present and Past Pavilion, we can observe the upstream and downstream, we can see many scenes of the past and future. Looking at the influences of countless beings and their effects across time, it would greatly benefit our comprehension of time path, we can raise our time path attainment levels more easily.

Xun Guo Zi gritted her teeth lightly: “It is a pity fate Gu was damaged and is incomplete. Long ago, before fate Gu got damaged, by observing the upstream and downstream of the River of Time, time path great experts could observe the past and peer into the future, they were able to predict many future events accurately.”

Xia Xunzi nodded continuously: “That’s right, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did that in the past. Even though she was not a time path Gu Immortal, her wisdom path methods were extraordinary, she could mimic the power of time path and use the tributary of the River of Time to deduce many future events. She predicted that the seven Lui Gui siblings would create the first Immortal Gu House in history, Turtle House, and thus created Star Constellation Chessboard.”

The Four Xunzi reminisced about the glorious history of time path before they calmed down, resting and processing the ancient year beast corpse, before continuing their observation of the River of Time.

They did not know that Fang Yuan had secretly entered the River of Time and obtained a Red Lotus true inheritance before leaving.

Fang Yuan went back on the same route, leaving the River of Time and arriving in the tributary, before getting back to Northern Plains.

He left the formation and activated Immortal Gu Fixed Immortal Travel, going towards Southern Border.

Why did Fang Yuan have Fixed Immortal Travel at this point in time?

Immortal Gu were unique, Fixed Immortal Travel was still with Feng Jiu Ge currently.

The reason: Fang Yuan was currently using future self!

This time path killer move was very mystical, it created a human-shaped phantom image in Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

The phantom image sat in the air, it was like a lump of water from the River of Time, shining in multicolored lights.

The phantom image’s face was exactly the same as Fang Yuan.

The phantom image had a sovereign immortal aperture too, this immortal aperture was Fang Yuan’s future immortal aperture, there were many phantom Gu worms inside, for example, Fixed Immortal Travel!

Since rebirth, Fang Yuan has not caused too much of an influence yet, the downstream of the River of Time was not dyed by the ink yet.

Thus, the downstream was still maintaining the events of Fang Yuan’s previous life.

Future self was able to allow a Gu Immortal to enter their strongest rank seven condition, in the previous life, Fang Yuan's strongest moment as a rank seven was right before the Five Regional Mountain Range battle.

At that time, Fang Yuan had already captured Xia Cha and the other Southern Border pursuers, he had also extorted all of the Southern Border super forces.

To resist strong enemies and plot against Heavenly Court, so that he could obtain Red Lotus' true inheritances in the River of Time, Fang Yuan annexed Xia Cha's time path immortal aperture and became a rank eight, he faked his tribulation in the five regional mountain range to set a trap for them.

At the start, during the battle of Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan stole Feng Jiu Ge's Fixed Immortal Travel.

After that, he attacked Plunder Shadow Earth Trench and secretly worked with Chi Qu You.

After that, Fang Yuan set the years flow execution formation to capture the Southern Border pursuers and extort the super clans.

After that was the Five Regional Mountain Range battle.

And after that, Fang Yuan entered the River of Time, he did not find the stone lotus island, instead, Heavenly Court hunted him and he barely escaped.

Thus, Fang Yuan's future self was fixed at the moment before he ascended to rank eight through annexing Xia Cha's immortal aperture.

At this time, he already owned Fixed Immortal Travel!

Using future self, Fang Yuan went from Northern Plains to Southern Border.

But he did not go to the Five Regional Mountain Range.

The five regional true inheritance was very useful to him, Fang Yuan knew this. It was not wise to activate the five regional true inheritance now.

Because the five regional true inheritance would cause a huge commotion, the Five Regional Mountain Range had to be destroyed before Tao Zhu's will would awaken and acknowledge him.

Fang Yuan only had rank seven cultivation level now, even though his battle strength had grown, standing up to rank eights was quite difficult.

If he attracted any rank eights or Immortal Gu Houses when activating the five regional true inheritance, it would be awkward.

To play safe, Fang Yuan was going to leave the five regional true inheritance for later.

He came to Southern Border now, it was not for the five regional true inheritance, he came to an ordinary valley instead.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1755 Wild Immortal Gu

Fang Yuan arrived in a valley, he found a cave and set up a mortal Gu House before he entered quiet cultivation.

Ying Wu Xie and the rest were still on the stone lotus island, practising future self.

Due to rebirth, Fang Yuan skipped that step.

Future self’s greatest help towards Fang Yuan was not in cultivation level or battle strength, but the use of Fixed Immortal Travel.

With future self, Fang Yuan could use it to travel between the five regions and two heavens.

Of course, he could not enter places like the dragon whale paradise.

Immortal Gu were unique, right now, the real Fixed Immortal Travel was in Feng Jiu Ge’s hands, but if Gu Immortals could create killer moves that could mimic the effects of other Gu, they could use it in place of those unattainable Immortal Gu.

This was the profundity of using Gu.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone was bathed in the light of wisdom, making deductions continuously.

One of the tasks was to modify yama battlefield and add in time path Immortal Gu so that it could display the advantage of a time path battlefield.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan had too little time, he had to raise his cultivation level while dealing with Heavenly Court and obtaining Red Lotus’ true inheritance. Heavenly Court exerted great pressure on him, Fang Yuan had to manage his own immortal aperture while resisting them.

In this situation, Fang Yuan created yama battlefield, Luo Po seal, myriad ghost sword dragon and other killer moves, it was all that he could do.

Gu Immortals usually took three to four years to create an immortal killer move.

Fang Yuan had the light of wisdom along with proficient wisdom path methods and high attainment levels in many paths, this allowed him to create this miracle in his previous life in terms of killer moves.

And now, he brought these gains with him.

Fang Yuan was able to make use of his killer move gains in the previous life now and even further elevate them.

This was a huge advantage.

“Yama battlefield is a battlefield encompassing soul path and enslavement path.”

“Enslavement path specializes in attrition battles, there are countless yama children that do not fear death, they can even self-detonate before dying, draining the enemy’s resources and battle strength.”

“The advantage of soul path is to gain strength from killing, in a normal soul path battlefield, killing one enemy would increase the power of the battlefield itself.”

Fang Yuan’s yama battlefield had these two traits. But the latter was weaker, the conversion speed of the yama children was not fast, Fang Yuan often had to fight powerful enemies that made this advantage very unlikely to be useful.

“If I add time path Immortal Gu in, yama battlefield would possess the trait of a time path battlefield.”

A time path battlefield specialized in changing the speed of time, the most classic example was to extend the time inside the battlefield, one day outside would be a month inside, this would give the user more time to kill the enemy inside the battlefield.

For example, if an enemy was trapped inside a time path battlefield and the allies sensed something wrong, they would come and help. The allies take fifteen minutes to arrive but inside the formation, three days would have passed! The battlefield user would have killed the enemy and left by the time they arrived.

In the previous life, even though Fang Yuan trapped Feng Jiu Ge with yama battlefield and even stole his Fixed Immortal Travel, he did not manage to kill him. The reason was that Feng Jiu Ge had fate armor Immortal Gu to stall for time, Fairy Zi Wei obtained enough time to deduce and break yama battlefield.

If Fang Yuan’s yama battlefield had the power of time path, he could extend the battlefield’s time to three days and nights, even though Fairy Zi Wei could still break it in the end, she would only receive Feng Jiu Ge’s corpse.

Fang Yuan modified yama battlefield, he was quite expectant towards the results.

Especially when he had quasi-supreme time path attainment level, it was not hard to add in time path Immortal Gu.

He cultivated many paths, it became increasingly useful as he got stronger. The killer move myriad ghost sword dragon was the best example.

Against compound killer moves that fused many paths together, Gu Immortals who cultivated just a single path could not deduce or defend against them easily.

Fang Yuan stayed in this nameless valley for four days and five nights, eventually, he found his opportunity.

Rumble!

Daytime, the earth shook, a crack appeared.

The valley collapsed, dust clouds rose, Fang Yuan had to fly into the sky.

The cracks on the ground became larger, the valley was completely devoured, a huge Earth Trench formed right before Fang Yuan’s eyes.

The five regional walls were slowly shrinking, the earth veins of the five regions were gradually fusing.

When the earth veins shook, many Earth Trench formed, Southern Border had the densest earth path dao marks, the formation of Earth Trenches was also extremely intense.

Fang Yuan waited patiently, he only descended after the Earth Trench stabilized, he started to search.

A newly formed Earth Trench produced a large amount of Gu materials, lifeforms emerged from the ground as well.

Of course, most were corpses.

As Fang Yuan explored, he found more valuable things.

Not long after, he saw the first desolate beast corpse.

A desolate beast corpse was a bunch of rank six immortal materials, even though it was damaged, it was simply free loot!

Fang Yuan took the desolate beast corpse effortlessly.

What made him happy was that this desolate beast corpse still had a soul in it, this desolate beast soul could be turned into a yama child.

Fang Yuan used his investigative killer move as he searched.

His gains were increasing, but they were just easily collected things. When he met with mildly injured ancient desolate beasts, Fang Yuan avoided them.

“Why have I not found it yet? Are the rumors false?”

“If Luo clan purposely sent out false news, this trip would be a flop.”

After another fifteen minutes, Fang Yuan started to get anxious.

This Earth Trench was in the territory of Southern Border’s Luo clan, as time passes, Luo clan’s Gu Immortals would likely arrive.

And they might bring their Immortal Gu House along.

After all, each Earth Trench formed would represent huge benefits, Luo clan had to be careful with it.

Even though Fang Yuan was not afraid, he did not want trouble, he only wanted to achieve his goals and leave.

By noon, Fang Yuan had not found his target, but his gains accumulated into a pile.

“It is really not here?”

“Did I miss something? Or is my luck so bad it affected this trip?”

Right when Fang Yuan was suspecting himself, his eyes started to shine in a divine light.

“I found something!”

He carefully approached and found an ancient desolate beast diamond head turtle.

This turtle was as large as a boat, it was entirely bright yellow but had a flat shell on top. The most eye-catching thing was its head, it had a huge head that resembled a drill, its sharp mouth pointed outwards with a natural spiral. Half of its head was translucent, resembling a low grade diamond.

The diamond head turtle lived in the deep sea, it could swim very fast in water.

It could also move in the earth, but when it did that, its head would rotate and drill as it loosened the soil ahead of it.

But because of its huge shell, it moved much slower in the soil than in water.

Fang Yuan floated above this diamond head turtle as he used several investigative killer moves.

Fang Yuan’s investigative methods were not outstanding, but against the diamond head turtle, it was sufficient.

Soon, joy was shown all over Fang Yuan’s face.

He found a wild Immortal Gu on the diamond head turtle!

“That’s it!”

This wild Immortal Gu was Fang Yuan’s goal for this trip.

Fang Yuan immediately acted, using yama battlefield.

Once Fang Yuan moved, his aura leaked as he got exposed.

The diamond head turtle was just a wild beast without sufficient wisdom but it had keen instincts, it growled at Fang Yuan before trying to retreat.

But Fang Yuan had already arranged several yama children to encircle it.

The yama children and the diamond head turtle fought in a big battle, but because he was afraid of damaging that wild Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan was quite restrained.

Not long after, two yama children were pierced by the diamond head turtle and one had its head bitten off.

Even though the yama children died, they did not self-detonate.

Even though they suffered huge losses, the goal of pestering the diamond head turtle had been achieved.

With the help of the yama children, Fang Yuan activated yama battlefield and trapped the diamond head turtle.

At this point, Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, he relaxed his mind a little.

Yama battlefield was successfully activated, it was hard to detect in the outside world, even if Luo clan’s Gu Immortals came here, there was a low chance that they would find this battlefield.

And the diamond head turtle was basically helpless now that it was trapped in yama battlefield. Most rank seven Gu Immortals would be unable to escape if they ended up inside, not to mention this mere ancient desolate beast.

Fang Yuan was neither anxious nor proud, he played safe.

To preserve immortal essence, he did not even use great thief ghost hand.

His current luck was not optimal, he might only steal a large number of mortal Gu using this move.

Eventually, with the help of the yama children, Fang Yuan weakened this diamond head turtle to its limit and captured it alive.

Its wild rank seven Immortal Gu was also obtained by Fang Yuan.

“Very good! With this, I will be able to counter Fixed Immortal Travel.” Fang Yuan was very happy, as he stored the diamond head turtle and wild Immortal Gu in his immortal aperture, he dispelled yama battlefield.

Going back to the Earth Trench, Luo clan’s Gu Immortals had already arrived, they were furiously scolding now, they had clearly discovered that Fang Yuan had arrived before them.

Looking at the traces, Luo clan’s Gu Immortals were feeling pained, a lot of the immortal materials were already taken away.

Luo clan’s losses were huge!

Fang Yuan took a look at Luo clan’s Immortal Gu House before concealing his traces and leaving quietly.

After leaving for a certain distance, Fang Yuan used future self to go back to Lang Ya blessed land from Southern Border.

Fang Yuan’s sudden appearance shocked Lang Ya land spirit immensely.

He moved towards Fang Yuan as he said with surprise and joy: “Fang Yuan, you snatched Fixed Immortal Travel from them?”

If they did not have Fixed Immortal Travel, it would be very hard for Heavenly Court to invade Lang Ya blessed land.

But Fang Yuan shook his head: “This is just a killer move. Are you all ready to refine Myriad Self?”

Lang Ya land spirit was very disappointed in Fang Yuan’s answer, but he still replied: “We are almost ready, the hairy men are practising day and night, the other Gu materials are ready, but your eight main materials are needed, have you collected them all already?”

Fang Yuan shook his head: “I only have three, but there is no rush, we still have time.”

Lang Ya land spirit was anxious: “Elder Fang Yuan, that’s not the right attitude. Heavenly Court might invade any moment now, we already have the weaker hand, if we act so carelessly, we will be in huge trouble!”

“Understood, understood. First supreme elder, don’t worry, I know what I am doing.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1756 You Still Don“t Get It?

Fang Yuan kept track of the time.

He still had a lot of time!

Even though he had already killed Meng Tu and Sleeping Lady, even going to the River of Time to obtain a Red Lotus true inheritance, as well as taking that wild Immortal Gu from Southern Border.

After doing all these, he still had a few days until Zhang Ji sold the floating life fire like in his previous life.

“This is mainly because I spent a few months to deduce killer moves like yama child and emperor yama in the previous life.”

“But now, I took action straight away, I saved a lot of time and effort.”

For the next few days, Fang Yuan did not stay idle.

Using future self, he continued to go all over the five regions from Lang Ya blessed land, he entered Southern Border the most.

Fang Yuan purposely went to places where Earth Trenches formed.

In his previous life, the commotion in the five regions as earth veins fused created many Earth Trenches all over the world, it was growing more intense as time passed. In the final battle, when Fang Yuan died at Duke Long’s hands, the five regional walls had vanished, the earth veins were unified, Earth Trenches stopped forming as a result.

For the following few days, Fang Yuan’s gains were extremely high!

Immortal materials piled into a mountain, he even obtained three wild rank six Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan’s luck was worse than in the previous life, but it was not hard to make huge gains.

He had clear information!

Earth Trenches were formed by heaven’s will, no Gu Immortal could predict them. Each Earth Trench was over ten or a hundred thousand li long, being extremely deep and difficult to explore.

Even super forces would face huge difficulties exploring the Earth Trenches and extracting the most valuable resources in a short period of time!

But Fang Yuan knew which places contained the best resources, he went straight for them.

This was all thanks to the information that he collected during his previous life.

The formation of Earth Trenches had no pattern, most Gu Immortals did not see value in this information. But Fang Yuan, who could use Spring Autumn Cicada, was different.

“In the previous life, I could not explore the Earth Trenches, with just my strength alone, I cannot compete with super forces.”

“And most importantly, Heavenly Court gave me immense pressure, I had to resist them while finding ways to obtain Red Lotus’ true inheritances! I had no time or energy to care about Earth Trenches.”

“And now it seems, these Earth Trenches are truly valuable, it can move anyone’s greed.”

“And this is just the situation now, for the next few years, Earth Trenches and earth veins will create even bigger commotions, more and more resources will surface.”

“The burst of resources would raise the strength of Gu Immortals, and the rise in battle strength would spur on the ambitions of Gu Immortals further! In my previous life, the four regions’ Gu Immortals attacked Heavenly Court, these Earth Trench resources played a crucial role. In the five hundred years of my previous life, the reason for the five regions chaotic war was mainly the Earth Trench resources and the rise in attainment level through dream realms.”

In his free time, Fang Yuan would analyze the situation and look at his circumstances, continuing to improve on his post-rebirth plans.

This rebirth was very different from the previous times.

The most important thing was that his strength and influence now was great, it far exceeded any of his previous rebirths.

With his strength and influence, the ink effect of his rebirth became much more significant.

Fang Yuan acted to execute his own plans while preparing himself for any possible problems.

And as expected, a problem really occurred!

And it was a major one.

A few days later, Fang Yuan observed treasure yellow heaven and did not find any traces of Zhang Ji.

In the previous life, he was already selling floating life fire at this time!

Fang Yuan quickly investigated but luckily, Zhang Ji’s information was not hard to get.

“Black Heaven Temple’s Gu Immortal Zhang Ji lost to Immortal Crane Sect’s Old Lord Can Yang in a competition, thus when they went on an exploration and found the floating life fire by chance, it went into Old Lord Can Yang’s hands.”

Immortal Crane Sect and Black Heaven Temple were part of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects.

In terms of strength, Immortal Crane Sect was weaker than Black Heaven Temple, but in terms of Gu Immortal battle strength, Old Lord Can Yang was stronger than Zhang Ji.

Black Heaven Temple’s Zhang Ji had rank seven cultivation level but he was very ordinary. Old Lord Can Yang was very famous though, his signature killer move life chasing fire was a headache to most Gu Immortals. Years ago, he even went to Northern Plains as part of Feng Jiu Ge’s group, to investigate the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

News that Zhang Ji lost to Old Lord Can Yang quickly spread.

Fang Yuan did not need to guess to know that this was Immortal Crane Sect’s action.

Immortal Crane Sect was weaker than Black Heaven Temple, they had to treasure every opportunity to raise their reputation, this victory was a great chance for publicity.

Old Lord Can Yang’s victory was not surprising, what interested him was, why did Old Lord Can Yang appear?

In the previous life, Old Lord Can Yang did not show up, Zhang Ji had obtained the floating life fire without any hassle.

“This is not good.”

“Different from Zhang Ji, Old Lord Can Yang is a fire path Gu Immortal, floating life fire is useful to him.”

“Even if it is useless, Old Lord Can Yang can contribute it to Immortal Crane Sect. He is different from Zhang Ji, he has higher strength and status, if he gives it to the sect, they would reward him, Old Lord Can Yang’s gains would not be low.”

Fang Yuan felt somewhat of a headache.

He had to make other plans now to obtain this floating life fire from other sources.

But at this time, Old Lord Can Yang started to sell the floating life fire publicly in treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan was slightly shocked before he understood Old Lord Can Yang’s intentions.

Or rather, Immortal Crane Sect’s intentions.

Immortal Crane Sect saw this as an important opportunity, they wanted to spread the news and raise their reputation. Old Lord Can Yang selling the floating life fire had the same intention as Fang Yuan selling Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s three rib bones.

After understanding this, Fang Yuan became one of the floating life fire’s buyers.

Floating life fire was a rare immortal material, its sale price was high but not absurd.

In the previous life, Zhang Ji did not know its value, Fang Yuan got it cheaply. But this time, it was Old Lord Can Yang who cultivated fire path, he knew about the value of the floating life fire, he naturally sold it at a different price.

“It seems that I have to pay a higher price to obtain this floating life fire.”

Fang Yuan was mentally prepared, but the following competition was out of his expectations again.

Buyers who were after the floating life fire seemed very interested, they competed and raised the sale price of the floating life fire to an absurd degree.

The floating life fire’s price was high but the competing Gu Immortals did not become disinterested, they created a huge ruckus as their verbal conflict soon escalated to a matter of pride and face.

Fang Yuan realized that this was Immortal Crane Sect’s show, they purposely got people to raise the prices to an absurd amount, the buyers and sellers were all part of their sect, they were paying some fees in treasure yellow heaven to gain a lot of publicity.

It was simple, the higher the price of the floating life fire, the more commotion and discussion it would generate.

When they talk about the floating life fire, can they ignore Old Lord Can Yang? That would involve Immortal Crane Sect as well, more and more Gu Immortals would realize that Immortal Crane Sect was still a part of the ten great ancient sects, they had deep foundations. Even though they seemed weak now, they might just be keeping a low profile.

Thinking about this, Fang Yuan smiled bitterly.

The floating life fire was too important to him, even if the prices were high, he had to buy it.

After all, the other plans were not reliable, time was crucial now, if he wasted too much time, Fang Yuan's entire post-rebirth plan would be ruined.

After getting the floating life fire, Fang Yuan passed the other main materials to Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit looked at them and checked that there were no problems with the immortal materials before he used the refinement path killer moves with Fang Yuan and the hairy man Gu Immortals, trying to familiarize themselves with these immortal materials.

After days of preparations, Lang Ya land spirit saw that the time was right, he brought Fang Yuan and the hairy man Gu Immortals to the Long Hair refinement path formation.

“What a good refinement path formation!” Fang Yuan praised in admiration.

Lang Ya land spirit smiled, the delight on his face was unconcealed, his eyes shined with great confidence: “Both the formation and Immortal Gu recipe are top notch. Elder Fang Yuan, this myriad self Immortal Gu recipe you provided is very incredible. After looking at it for a long time, I finally understood half of its profundity. With my estimation, using this myriad self Immortal Gu recipe, there is a forty percent chance of success!”

Fang Yuan laughed loudly: “That's right, this is why I wanted to refine this Gu to raise my battle strength and deal with Heavenly Court. Alright, enough talk, let's enter the Gu refinement formation.”

At this point, Lang Ya land spirit frowned: “Elder Fang Yuan, you lack refinement path experience, are you really going to refine the Gu personally?”

Fang Yuan nodded: “This Gu refinement is extremely important, especially to me. I need to participate, even if the refinement fails, I will not be upset. Don't worry first supreme elder, I am merely helping out, I will not interrupt you. I know my own limits after all.”

“Alright, since you insist, we will do that.” Lang Ya land spirit sighed, entering the formation as the main person in charge.

Followed by Third Hair, Fourth Hair, Sixth Hair, Seventh Hair, and the other Gu Immortals, before Fang Yuan as the last one.

Fang Yuan stood at the final formation core towards the end.

The formation started to activate.

Light shined everywhere, all sorts of refinement path methods were activated, the process was smooth and easy.

Floating life fire and edge Gu were first refined, followed by battlefield blood sand, heart blood, and other main materials.

During this time, Fang Yuan took action several times but they were all trivial matters, it was just as he had assured Lang Ya land spirit.

Several days later, Lang Ya land spirit and the hairy man Gu Immortals revealed expressions of joy.

The Immortal Gu was starting to form.

They were just a few steps away from success.

Suddenly, the light exploded as dust clouds rose, a stench filled the air as the Gu refinement encountered an issue.

“Why did this happen?!” Lang Ya land spirit and the rest were very shocked, they quickly tried to salvage the situation, it was very chaotic.

Right when they were about to fail and Lang Ya land spirit became helpless, Fang Yuan suggested building a temporary Gu formation to assist the refinement path formation and get rid of all the impurities here.

There was no choice, Lang Ya land spirit had to give it a try, he accepted Fang Yuan’s suggestion.

Once the formation within the formation was created, Fang Yuan said: “Please enter the formation, first supreme elder!”

Lang Ya land spirit had no doubts, in this situation, he was the only one who could do it.

But once he entered the formation, he was immediately suppressed!

“Fang Yuan, what are you trying to do?!” Lang Ya land spirit was furious and shocked.

“Lang Ya land spirit, at this point in time, you still don’t get it?” Fang Yuan smiled lightly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1757 Repaying Kindness With Enmity!

“Fang Yuan, you actually dare, you are too ignorant and fearless! You dare to plot against me inside Lang Ya blessed land! I will make sure you understand what severe mistake you are actually making!!”

Lang Ya land spirit screamed with a furious expression, he looked like a volcano about to explode, he was about to erupt with lava and melt Fang Yuan entirely.

But at the next moment, Lang Ya land spirit’s movements froze, the anger on his face turned into deep shock instantly.

“Why? Why can’t I move, my connection with Lang Ya blessed land is also almost entirely severed!” At once, Lang Ya land spirit became dumbfounded.

Fang Yuan smiled, everything was going according to plan.

Ever since Fang Yuan saw Lang Ya land spirit for the first time, he already had the thought of ‘taking down Lang Ya blessed land’.

After many years, this thought finally grew from just a seed to a beautiful blooming flower!

Fang Yuan looked at Lang Ya land spirit plainly but with deep confidence: “It is pointless, you do not know the difference between us after all.”

Lang Ya land spirit struggled intensely but he was like an ant, suppressed and unable to move, not to mention regaining control of Lang Ya blessed land.

He tried hard but found that the situation was not improving, instead, his restrictions were becoming more severe!

“This is impossible!” He looked at Fang Yuan with a look of disbelief.

Fang Yuan smiled: “It seems that you have already started to notice the difference between us.”

Fang Yuan’s refinement path attainment level far exceeded Lang Ya land spirit.

The former had used Long Hair true meaning to reach quasi-supreme grandmaster refinement path attainment level, the latter was just Long Hair Ancestor’s land spirit formed from obsession, even though it had extraordinary refinement path attainment, it was very far from reaching quasi-supreme.

Fang Yuan’s formation path attainment level also far exceeded Lang Ya land spirit.

Lang Ya land spirit had merely ordinary attainment in formation path, while Fang Yuan was a formation path grandmaster.

And most importantly, Fang Yuan was very skilled in the setting of formations. Self cleansing formation, Omni-directional Travel ancient battle formation, dragon scale sea’s food path immortal formation, immemorial year beast fishing formation, flood discharge formation, self will heaven sealing formation, wisdom refinement formation... Fang Yuan had designed most of these Gu formations, he had modified them and set them up personally step by step.

“Indeed worthy of you, Fang Yuan! You are truly a publicly recognized demonic path overlord!” Lang Ya land spirit clenched his fists, his eyes were spewing fire and his face was distorted, he stared at Fang Yuan fixedly.

He gritted his teeth as he said: “This was all part of your scheme! Myriad self Immortal Gu’s recipe was flawed from the start but I could not notice. The problem was bound to happen during the Gu refinement process, using that chance, you created the formation and tricked me into entering. This formation within a formation takes reference to blood light spirit suppression?”

“This also means that out of the eight main materials of myriad self Immortal Gu recipe, the four blood path materials are used to target me. Only the first four materials are used to refine myriad self Immortal Gu!”

Lang Ya land spirit said with certainty as his emotions became calmer.

Fang Yuan looked at him without speaking, he had a calm expression too.

Lang Ya land spirit started to frown, he could see a faint smile from Fang Yuan’s eyes, he seemed to have noticed his intentions!

Panic flashed across Lang Ya land spirit’s eyes, but he quickly concealed it.

He thought: “I need to stay calm! I cannot panic! Long Hair refinement path formation is the peak creation of my main body, how can Fang Yuan grasp it so easily in this short period? He set a formation to harm me but this blood path formation is just a formation within a formation. Soon, if the refinement path formation activates, this blood path formation will be destroyed. By then, I will be able to escape.”

“As long as I can escape, the whole of Lang Ya blessed land will be in my control. I can spread news of Fang Yuan trying to harm me, the variant human alliance will stand by my side.”

“By then, I will make sure Fang Yuan regrets this!”

“Aiya!”

Lang Ya land spirit suddenly patted his head, he had an ashen expression and deep regret, he wanted to kill himself: “Damn it! Why did I shout out my inner thoughts!”

Fang Yuan smiled: “Don’t worry, if even you could think about this flaw, why couldn’t I predict it?”

“What, you knew about it already?” Lang Ya land spirit was first shocked before pretending to be calm.

He laughed loudly: “So what if you realized? Can you understand this refinement path formation?”

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose: “My understanding of this formation is deeper than yours. But of course, I am still far from comprehending it fully.”

Lang Ya land spirit laughed loudly again: “That’s right! Just you wait Fang Yuan, when I get out, I will show you the consequences of betraying my Lang Ya Sect!”

But Lang Ya land spirit waited and nothing happened.

A while later, the blood path formation was still stable as before.

Lang Ya land spirit continued to wait but the Long Hair refinement path formation showed no commotion! Furthermore, his entire body was already dyed in a blood red light.

“This is impossible! What did you do?!” Suddenly, Lang Ya land spirit screamed at Fang Yuan, he had fallen into complete panic.

Fang Yuan smiled and did not respond.

He had interacted with this Long Hair refinement path formation far longer than Lang Ya land spirit expected.

That happened in his previous life.

Fang Yuan had deep attainment in formation path, refinement path, and wisdom path, he was able to understand the profundity and essence of the Long Hair refinement path formation.

The Long Hair refinement path formation was created by Long Hair Ancestor with all his effort back in the day.

With Fang Yuan’s current foundation, it would be very hard to create a refinement path formation that was on par with it, he would need a vast amount of time, energy, and resources.

But looking at this Long Hair refinement path formation was a completely different case, Fang Yuan was not the creator, he was merely appreciating this work of art. It was easier for an artist to critique this piece of work now than to create it himself.

Of course, he was just an observer, he could not understand the profundity of this formation in its entirety.

But that was not a problem, Sixth Hair as the spy had already controlled a certain important area of the formation.

With Sixth Hair’s help, Fang Yuan ensured that the Long Hair refinement path formation could not interfere with his blood path formation.

Lang Ya land spirit struggled for a while longer before he realized, due to Fang Yuan’s meticulous scheme, he could no longer turn this situation around.

There was no choice, this black haired land spirit that was completely corroded by the blood light had to let the other white haired land spirit appear to try and change the situation.

But regrettably, Fang Yuan knew all about Lang Ya land spirit, how could he miss that potential problem?

The moment white haired land spirit appeared, he was suppressed by the blood path formation, a large amount of blood light went into him.

“You shameless demon!” The white haired land spirit was suppressed and unable to move, he could only speak.

He scolded Fang Yuan intensely: “Fang Yuan, oh Fang Yuan, you unscrupulous and devious scumbag!”

“You were able to get to this stage today, my Lang Ya blessed land provided you the biggest help!”

“Before you became immortal, I helped you, eventually, you were able to destroy Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.”

“When you first became an immortal and was completely broke, I made transactions with you and allowed you to earn immortal essence stones through deducing recipes, that was your starting point.”

“When you wanted to refine Gu, I helped you countless times! Which hairy man Gu Immortal in the blessed land has not helped you at least once?”

“When your tribulations were too risky, we lent you immortal essence stones and Immortal Gu to pass those difficulties.”

“I gave you the immortal tribulation tempering aperture as well as killer moves like triple layered sword wave.”

“When you moved Star Form blessed land, we lent you Gu worms and the necessary methods.”

“When your Hu Immortal blessed land was attacked, we took a risk and helped you to minimize your losses!”

“I was the one who fed your wisdom Gu, I used up so many lifespan Gu in my blessed land!”

“When your Dang Hun Mountain was taken away, I compensated you according to the agreement, even if we had to give up the refinement path true meaning.”

White haired land spirit got more and more angry, he felt extremely grieved, his eyes turned red as he spoke.

Different from the black haired land spirit’s rash and strong attitude, the white haired land spirit was calm and enduring, he was only interested in Gu refinement and wanted to avoid problems.

The black haired land spirit was an extremist while the white haired land spirit was a pacifist.

“Oh Fang Yuan, your conscience must have been eaten by dogs!”

“Our Lang Ya blessed land treated you so well, yet you are repaying kindness with enmity, you schemed against me!”

“When you were unable to live outside and all five regions’ Gu Immortals went after you, Lang Ya blessed land was the place that sheltered you!”

“You are a human but black hair and I accepted you, we made you a supreme elder and gave you important roles, we treated you as one of us!”

“But this is how you treat us in return?”

“Look at your own conscience, do you feel any bit of guilt at all? Do you feel that you have done us injustice!” The white haired land spirit screamed and cried, he was extremely upset.

Fang Yuan was expressionless: “No.”

Lang Ya land spirit: “...”

After a while, he shouted: “You are acting like this to your benefactor, your friends, your family, does your conscience feel no pain?! Do you not feel bad?!”

Fang Yuan dug his ears: “Not really, I am quite excited actually.”

Lang Ya land spirit was beyond furious, he wanted to tear Fang Yuan into epices: “Fang Yuan, you demon! You are just too shameless!”

“You are a beast, a bastard! You are a devious scoundrel, you are shameless, as expected of a human! Go ahead and laugh, you will not laugh for very long!”

“People like you will die a terrible death, I was truly blind to have trusted you! Heaven will not let you off!”

“If I was given another chance, I will kill you at first sight, I will incinerate your corpse and mince you into a million pieces!”

“Oh.” Fang Yuan smiled as he shook his head calmly: “Too bad you can’t do it.”

Lang Ya land spirit was speechless, he wanted to rip that smile off Fang Yuan’s face.

But he could not move.

He could only curse to vent his anger.

But against someone like Fang Yuan with no shame or morals, his anger was truly pointless and weak.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1758 Heavenly Court“s Invasion

Lang Ya blessed land, Long Hair refinement path formation.

Blood light gradually faded, the blood path formation opened up as Fang Yuan and Lang Ya land spirit walked out with the latter behind the former.

Fang Yuan’s scheme succeeded!

In the previous life, Lang Ya land spirit had caught Fairy Zi Wei off guard because she killed the black haired land spirit and white haired land spirit showed up.

The black haired land spirit was ambitious, even though he knew about Lang Ya blessed land and Longevity Heaven’s agreement, he did not want to use it.

Once the white haired land spirit showed up, he sought help from Longevity Heaven without second thoughts.

Eventually, because of the white haired land spirit’s action, Fang Yuan escaped while Heavenly Court retreated in defeat, Longevity Heaven obtained Lang Ya Sect and became the eventual winner, gaining the greatest benefits.

“Right now, I suppressed the land spirit, Longevity Heaven will not gain anything.” Fang Yuan looked at Lang Ya land spirit.

Right now, Lang Ya land spirit had gone back to the black haired land spirit under Fang Yuan’s orders.

To prevent the hairy man Gu Immortals from becoming suspicious, the black haired land spirit pretended that their relationship with Fang Yuan was still the same as before.

Fang Yuan purposely let out a breath of air: “It was all thanks to first supreme elder this time that we salvaged the situation.”

The black haired land spirit smiled: “Ma[1]... mainly because we had the refinement path formation, we should get back into refining the Gu as quickly as possible.”

The black haired land spirit had a slightly subservient tone and smile, but other than Sixth Hair, the other hairy man Gu Immortals felt no suspicions.

Who could have thought that this shocking change had occurred right under their very eyes!

Fang Yuan entered the Long Hair refinement path formation and continued to refine myriad self Immortal Gu.

Hours later, a sharp profound light appeared in the refinement path formation.

The profound light faded as an Immortal Gu was revealed.

This Gu worm was more than ten meters long, it was like a centipede that shined in a metallic luster, the mouthpiece on its head looked dangerous while there was a pair of long antennas on its forehead, it had five thousand legs on either side of its body, having a total of ten thousand legs.

Rank seven Immortal Gu Myriad Self!

Even though Fang Yuan’s main goal was to scheme against Lang Ya land spirit, he did not give up on refining myriad self Immortal Gu.

In the previous life, myriad self Immortal Gu had a fifty percent success rate! But now, in order to trap Lang Ya land spirit, he modified the recipe and lowered its success rate from fifty to forty percent.

Regardless, he did not give up on refining Myriad Self!

He could not give up on refining myriad self Immortal Gu after all.

It seemed to have an insignificant boost to Fang Yuan’s strength but it was actually very important.

The killer move myriad self was the combination of enslavement and strength path, it gathered the specialty of both paths. But it was overly complex and took a long time to activate, it spent a lot of thoughts of the Gu Immortal.

Now that it became a Gu worm, Fang Yuan only needed to take a few steps to unleash the full power of the original myriad self killer move.

Other than myriad self, Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal, myriad dragon, myriad ghost sword dragon and other killer moves would also benefit from this.

Especially myriad ghost sword dragon, Fang Yuan had created this move near the time of the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention. Without myriad self Immortal Gu, he would need too many Gu worms to activate it, the time taken would be too long and there would be no use for it in battle!

Even though myriad self Immortal Gu could not raise Fang Yuan’s strength directly, it strengthened his foundation and allowed him to gain even more potential in several aspects.

The Immortal Gu refinement ended, next, Fang Yuan looked around the whole of Lang Ya blessed land and collated his gains.

Lang Ya blessed land had an immense origin, it was left by one of the three greatest refinement path experts in history, Long Hair Ancestor.

Long Hair Ancestor was a legendary figure, he had refined countless Immortal Gu in his life, even Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable came to look for him when refining Gu.

Long Hair Ancestor also had a special identity, he was a hairy man. While hairy men had long lifespan, they would still die eventually.

Long Hair Ancestor left behind rank eight Lang Ya grotto-heaven, but after countless years of development, white haired land spirit decided to lower its rank and returned it to a blessed land.

Blessed lands faced far weaker calamities and tribulations than grotto-heavens, with the white haired land spirit’s management, the blessed land developed very well.

It had a huge space far beyond most blessed lands, it even exceeded many grotto-heavens.

In terms of time path, its time flow was one to thirty-six compared to the outside world. And worth mentioning was that Lang Ya blessed land had an immortal killer move on its tributary of the River of Time, it could alter the time flow in the immortal aperture. This was the work of Long Hair Ancestor who had invited a time path great expert personally when he was alive.

In terms of dao marks, Lang Ya blessed land had the highest number of refinement path dao marks surpassing three hundred thousand! The remaining dao marks were mostly water path followed by earth path.

Lang Ya blessed land had four continents. They were the Black Hair, Yellow Hair, and White Hair Continents in the sea, as well as Cloud Cover Continent in the sky. The blessed land produced abundant resources and people, there were also countless Gu Immortals, it was truly a super force of its own!

The vast number of people ensured the production of many lifespan Gu.

Undeniably, this was the number one blessed land in the world!

Lang Ya land spirit was suppressed by Fang Yuan already, everything here belonged to him.

Other than the blessed land’s resources and manpower, there were also a vast number of Gu recipes, killer moves and Gu worms.

Lang Ya blessed land had many Immortal Gu in its inventory. For example, the currently rank seven Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, the wood sprout Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan had once borrowed to use the killer move light fungus radiance, beast enslavement Immortal Gu, formation plate Immortal Gu, and many others. (Most of the Immortal Gu were already given out to the hairy man Gu Immortals for their use.)

Lang Ya blessed land had three Gu formations. The first was the Long Hair refinement path formation, the second was the sub-main teleportation Gu formation, the third was the ancient battle formation Heavenly Giant Solor. Among which, the main formation of the sub-main teleportation Gu formation was on Cloud Cover Continent, while the nine sub formations were distributed all over Northern Plains, for example, Tai Qiu, dragon elephant plain, and Feng Bo cliff.

Other than that, Lang Ya blessed land had a highly incomplete Immortal Gu House — rank eight Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron.

There was also a man-made secluded domain of heaven and earth that was not completed despite immense effort — Refinement Sea. In the previous life, when Heavenly Court attacked Lang Ya blessed land, Lang Ya land spirit made use of the water in the Refinement Sea to display the killer move omnipresent four seas, he had once taken control of the situation using it.

Lang Ya blessed land had a huge inventory with countless immortal materials but relatively few immortal essence stones.

And finally, Lang Ya blessed land had three true inheritances, they were Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance, Giant Sun’s self luck true inheritance, and Long Hair’s refinement path true inheritance.

Rank eight steal life Immortal Gu was part of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance.

In the first life, Ma Hong Yun obtained clues to this Thieving Heaven true inheritance, he came to Lang Ya blessed land and asked Lang Ya land spirit to refine Gu for him three times.

This was also part of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance.

Fang Yuan had a deep understanding of these three true inheritances. Years ago, he had transacted with Lang Ya land spirit and learned about this.

Back then, in order to deal with strong enemies, he had to sell his own secluded domain of heaven and earth. Now, the whole of Lang Ya blessed land belonged to him.

“I have about half a month left.” Fang Yuan estimated the time.

In the previous life, he had worked on deducing Luo Po seal at this time period, in order to make up for his lack of offensive methods. As for defense, he had reverse flow protection seal, there was no worry.

In the end, he only managed to deduce Luo Po seal years later.

This time around, he already possessed Luo Po seal, his main deduction was to add the effect of time path into yama battlefield, so that he could gain a compound battlefield killer move.

Even though he suppressed Lang Ya land spirit and had sufficient refinement path attainment level, Fang Yuan was not in a rush to annex Lang Ya blessed land.

He had already decided to use the tactic in the Five Regional Mountain Range, he was going to make Lang Ya blessed land a trap that would lure in the Heavenly Court members.

Firstly, Fang Yuan needed Feng Jiu Ge to come here and ‘contribute’ his Fixed Immortal Travel. After all, when Fang Yuan reaches rank eight, future self would not be usable anymore.

Secondly, he needed Heavenly Court to expose their star cast killer move. This method was too incredible, it could directly change the situation of all five regions, any super force would feel extremely threatened by it! Once star cast gets exposed, it would spur on the four regions’ super forces to attack Heavenly Court!

And thirdly, he wanted to kill a few Heavenly Court Gu Immortals in advance, Fang Yuan would not let go of any chance to weaken Heavenly Court.

And finally, Fang Yuan wanted to borrow the help of Heavenly Court to deal with the Gu Immortals of the snowmen, rockmen, and inkmen in the four races alliance. By using the same method as in the previous life, he would annex all three of these forces at once.

Hehe, taking down enemies and allies in a single swoop, wasn’t it a great idea?

More than ten days passed.

Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

Star Constellation Chessboard!

This rank eight Immortal Gu House was shooting out fireworks, countless starlight specks were flying out and radiating the entire Heavenly Court.

Starlight shined on the faces of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

Nearly ten of them were ready to move out!

The leader was Fairy Zi Wei, she looked at the sky as bright light shined in her eyes, even more dazzling than the starry sky.

“To think that wisdom Gu is really inside Lang Ya blessed land! With it, Star Constellation Chessboard will become a rank nine Immortal Gu House! By then, I will be the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal in the world. Heavenly Court will almost certainly be able to repair fate Immortal Gu.”

“Fang Yuan, I can’t wait for this! I want to kill you personally.” Thunder Ghost True Monarch gritted her teeth.

Feng Jiu Ge was silent and peaceful.

Chen Yi was waiting in anticipation.

His performance in green ghost desert was not good, he did not retrieve Divine Bean Palace.

“I cannot fail again like last time.”

“I have just joined Heavenly Court, I need to show some results.”

“This battle is a great opportunity! No matter how strong Fang Yuan is, he is merely rank seven. Lang Ya blessed land has a huge reputation but it is too weak internally, even Feng Jiu Ge could enter and leave at will. We are mobilizing so many rank eight great experts now, we will definitely win. Sigh, Lady Zi Wei is too vigilant.”

Chen Yi grumbled a little.

Fairy Zi Wei was sending such a huge force, it was like a tiger going all out to hunt a rabbit, Chen Yi would not be able to make any achievements.

In his opinion, couldn’t two or three rank eight Gu Immortals take down Lang Ya blessed land easily?

They were not ordinary rank eights, they were Heavenly Court members!

Bam.

Along with the expectations of many Gu Immortals, the starlight in the sky gathered, a huge light blue pillar was formed in the sky.

Immortal killer move — Star Cast!

“Let’s go! Take down Lang Ya blessed land and capture the demon Fang Yuan.” Fairy Zi Wei gave her orders, Thunder Ghost True Monarch was the most impatient one, she directly rushed into the starlight pillar.

“Fang Yuan, I am coming! Just you wait.” Thunder Ghost True Monarch snickered.

[1] He wanted to say master.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1759 I“ve Been Waiting

Thunder Ghost True Monarch felt her world spinning, after a brief moment of chaos, her vision cleared up.

In almost an instant, she vanished from Heavenly Court, arriving in a huge formation space.

“Hmm?!” She focused and looked, seeing that Fang Yuan was standing before her with a killer move that had been prepared already.

“Fang Yuan, good timing!!” Thunder Ghost True Monarch growled loudly with blood red eyes, it was like the meeting of enemies.

Fang Yuan smiled plainly: “Thunder Ghost True Monarch, I’ve been waiting for you.”

Saying so, he pushed with his palm as Luo Po seal shot towards Thunder Ghost True Monarch.

Thunder Ghost True Monarch wanted to dodge subconsciously but the super formation’s power was already affecting her.

Even though Thunder Ghost True Monarch could dodge quickly, she needed a lot of time to do so, as a result, the overall result was that she moved very slowly in real time.

Shock and anger was expressed all over Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s face.

She could not dodge, she was hit by Fang Yuan’s Luo Po seal.

A huge black armor appeared all over Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s body. The armor was ferocious and flamboyant, having sharp curved spikes and lightning flashing above it. The chest portion of the armor had a dark-blue opened mouth like that of a giant ghost. And her helmet looked like a monster’s head, forming a stark contrast with the girl’s delicate and cute appearance.

Luo Po seal landed on Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s armor.

At the next moment, countless cracks appeared on Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s armor.

Next, with a light pop, the entire armor cracked into pieces, exposing Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s main body.

Fang Yuan used Luo Po seal and the super formation to destroy Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s strongest defense in one move.

Thunder Ghost True Monarch shouted loudly, instead of dodging, she charged towards Fang Yuan.

This was a wise tactic.

Normally speaking, people would retreat in such circumstances to regain their footing. But doing that in front of Fang Yuan would make them lose initiative, it would be a downward spiral as Fang Yuan gains control of the momentum of the battle.

Thunder Ghost True Monarch did not back down, instead, she went ahead to fight against Fang Yuan.

At this moment, Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s rich battle experiences and brave nature was on full display!

She invaded Lang Ya blessed land but got ambushed, landing in a difficult spot. The disparity in situation did not make her lose her cool, instead, her bravery and fighting spirit were ignited.

As expected of the person who once resisted Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, this person did not know what giving up was, there was no way to lower her morale.

Her final killer move, lightning heart explosion, was an actual mutual destruction method. Even if she dies, she would drag her enemies with her, this was her true nature.

Of course, Fang Yuan already knew about Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s final method.

Fairy Zi Wei was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, but so was Fang Yuan!

As a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he would make countless arrangements, how could he not predict Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s nature and course of action?

Like what Fang Yuan had said earlier, he had been waiting.

Immortal killer move – Steal Life!

After suppressing Lang Ya land spirit, Thieving Heaven true inheritance in Lang Ya Sect became Fang Yuan’s. Using steal life Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan unleashed the immortal killer move using Immortal Gu Steal Life as the core.

Even though Fang Yuan did not have rank eight immortal essence, he could make Lang Ya land spirit do it, he had Long Hair’s immortal essence after all.

Steal life was not displayed by Fang Yuan, Lang Ya land spirit, which was inside the formation, had used it.

Red light that was as thick as a finger flashed as it landed on Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s forehead.

Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s movements came to a stop.

She rapidly aged, in the blink of an eye, she turned from a cute little girl to a wrinkled old lady.

She stretched out her thin and dry fingers as she grabbed at Fang Yuan, speaking as her teeth fell off: “How, how did you...”

These were her final words.

She died.

With intense regret and hatred.

She had died of old age, her lifespan was fully consumed.

Even after dying, her eyes were wide open, staring at Fang Yuan fixedly.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly.

Within the super immortal formation, the Gu Immortals of the four races were in a commotion!

“What happened? She died like that?!”

“We killed Thunder Ghost True Monarch!”

“Wasn’t that too easy?”

The variant human Gu Immortals were all dumbfounded.

After calming down, they started to analyze.

“It was Lord Fang Yuan’s great plan.”

“That’s right, Thunder Ghost True Monarch fell into our trap, she had no way of retaliating.”

“Even though she is a rank eight Gu Immortal, against Lord Fang Yuan, she was completely helpless.”

“I finally understand why the human Gu Immortals are bent on going after Lord Fang Yuan...”

The variant human Gu Immortals sighed deeply, their gaze towards Fang Yuan carried wariness, fear, admiration, and reverence.

Looking at Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s corpse, Fang Yuan felt no surprise.

As a rank eight expert, her death was not as simple as it looked.

The power of wisdom path Gu Immortals was to make plans before taking action. With sufficient information, they could easily counter their enemies.

Because of rebirth, Fang Yuan knew about Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s trump card.

Secondly, Fang Yuan had spent a lot of effort in modifying Lang Ya blessed land’s defensive formation, he added a lot of Immortal Gu. Steal life Immortal Gu was one of them.

It was all thanks to Fang Yuan’s formation path attainment and the light of wisdom. Ordinary Gu Immortals could not achieve this.

Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s two strongest methods were lightning heart explosion and soul armor combat.

Thus, once Fang Yuan saw her, he used Luo Po seal straight away. This move dealt with Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s soul armor with incredible effect.

Without her soul armor, after Thunder Ghost True Monarch died, she became suppressed by the formation, she could not activate lightning heart explosion.

And he also used the killer move steal life.

This was not the same as using steal life Immortal Gu, which could not distinguish ally and enemy.

This time, Fang Yuan deduced the killer move steal life, to target only the enemy.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had used his method on steal life Immortal Gu, it could only be used thrice, Fang Yuan could not remove that limit.

Even with only three uses, Fang Yuan used it on Thunder Ghost True Monarch without hesitation.

Thunder Ghost True Monarch had great battle strength, the longer she stayed here, the greater the threat to the entirety of Lang Ya blessed land.

If she unleashed lightning heart explosion, his losses would be severe.

Thus, Fang Yuan unleashed his moves instantly, killing her before she could even react!

Heavenly Court.

Looking at the starlight pillar, Chen Yi could not help but say: “I’m going too.”

Fairy Zi Wei glanced at him before nodding.

As a wisdom path Gu Immortal who possessed Star Constellation Chessboard, she could more or less understand Chen Yi’s intention and thoughts.

After getting permission from Fairy Zi Wei, Chen Yi flew into the starlight pillar anxiously.

“I need to act fast!”

“With Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s ferocious battle strength, the later I go in, the less achievements I can make. By now, she might have killed some variant human Gu Immortals already.”

“Lang Ya blessed land, here I come!”

Chen Yi entered the starlight pillar with great excitement.

At the next moment, he arrived in Lang Ya blessed land’s formation space.

“This is Lang Ya blessed land? Hmm?!” Suddenly, Chen Yi’s body froze, his pupil shrunk to pin size.

He saw Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s corpse.

Fang Yuan had used the super formation to mimic time path’s specialty, slowing the time flow.

But over at Heavenly Court, time was moving normally.

After Thunder Ghost True Monarch entered, Chen Yi went into the starlight pillar almost right after her.

As a result, right after Fang Yuan killed Thunder Ghost True Monarch and captured her remaining remnant soul, Chen Yi appeared.

“You are quite fast.” Fang Yuan smiled lightly.

Chen Yi stared at Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s corpse, shouting: “Senior?!”

Thunder Ghost True Monarch did not reply.

She was undeniably dead!

“How could this be? This is impossible!” Chen Yi, who had strong battle intent and enthusiasm, felt like cold water was poured all over him.

He had been thinking that Thunder Ghost True Monarch was killing everything in her path, Lang Ya blessed land would be in complete chaos as Fang Yuan defends against her pathetically.

But the truth was, Thunder Ghost True Monarch died, while Fang Yuan smiled towards him with absolutely no injuries!

Who could have expected such a situation!

Chen Yi blinked consecutively before he growled: “Very impressive demon, you made this illusion so convincing that I was almost deceived by you!”

Saying so, Chen Yi flickered with green light, he used his defensive killer move.

He did not attack in a rush, he stood to guard the black spiral behind him.

Thus, at the next moment, Chen Yi sensed something amiss: “Hmm? The power of time path is affecting me!”

His defensive killer move formed very slowly.

Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei had a calm expression as she said to Feng Jiu Ge: “Go in as well.”

Feng Jiu Ge nodded as he entered the starlight pillar.

“With Feng Jiu Ge’s strength, he should be able to defend himself. We are mainly relying on his own Dao Guardian luck, Heavenly Court does not have many luck path methods, this is the only way to resist Fang Yuan.”

Fairy Zi Wei sighed to herself internally.

After Feng Jiu Ge was transported inside, she was the next person to go.

But right when Fairy Zi Wei was about to move, boom!

The starlight pillar exploded into countless starlight specks in the sky.

Fairy Zi Wei was stunned: “...”

The Heavenly Court immortals behind her: “...”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1760 Overwhelming Advantage

The killer move star cast might be incredibly powerful and would affect the balance of all five regions, but any killer move had its weaknesses and flaws.

Fang Yuan did not know much about star cast, but he knew one crucial point.

Star cast needed a tracer.

This tracer was the harmful dao marks that Feng Jiu Ge left behind the previous time he invaded Lang Ya blessed land.

In the previous life, these harmful dao marks turned into a dark spiral that transported Chen Yi, Thunder Ghost True Monarch, Feng Jiu Ge, and Fairy Zi Wei in.

Luckily, Fang Yuan and Lang Ya land spirit reacted quickly and destroyed the dark spiral in time, they prevented even more Heavenly Court Gu Immortals from entering.

This time, because of rebirth, Fang Yuan knew the exact location of the dark spiral.

Thus, he modified Lang Ya blessed land’s defensive formation actively and covered it using the formation space.

Thunder Ghost True Monarch came in first, she was directly killed by Fang Yuan and the rest, who were well prepared.

Chen Yi was the second to arrive, Fang Yuan did not have much time to use Luo Po seal, so he did not do anything yet.

And third was Feng Jiu Ge.

He was Fang Yuan’s main target!

Because rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel was in his hands!

And the fourth person was likely Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei was a wisdom path Gu Immortal possessing Star Constellation Chessboard. If Duke Long was considered the spiritual leader of Heavenly Court and was the source of morale, Fairy Zi Wei was the brains of Heavenly Court, their tactician.

She was very important, but even if Fang Yuan killed her, there would be little effect.

Why?

Because Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard had too many wisdom path Gu Immortals, if Fairy Zi Wei died, the second would replace her. In the past, why did Fairy Zi Wei awaken? It was because Heavenly Court’s wisdom path Gu Immortal, Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, had died, Fairy Zi Wei had to awaken to take his position.

If Fairy Zi Wei brought Star Constellation Chessboard with her, Fang Yuan might have the incentive to kill her.

But regrettably, Star Constellation Chessboard was needed to maintain star cast, it had to be left inside Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan had his battle experience from the previous life, he was sure about this secret.

In his position, Fang Yuan should not kill Fairy Zi Wei. Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated, Fang Yuan was familiar with Fairy Zi Wei, it was advantageous to him. If he killed her, an unfamiliar Heavenly Court wisdom path Gu Immortal would weaken Fang Yuan’s post-rebirth advantage.

Of course, there was the most important reason, Fairy Zi Wei had incredible battle strength, even though Fang Yuan surpassed her by the time of Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, right now, he had not reached rank eight yet, he was still far from his peak battle strength in the previous life.

If he let Fairy Zi Wei in, Heavenly Court would have three rank eight battle strengths, Fang Yuan had Heavenly Giant Solor, the super formation, the immemorial rock dragon and himself, the battle would be intense, the situation would be out of control.

And don’t forget, Chen Yi had Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s trump card!

Immortal killer move karma relocation played an important role in his previous life, Fang Yuan remembered deeply, he would not ignore it.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan already suppressed Lang Ya land spirit, the whole of Lang Ya blessed land was his property. He wanted to reduce his losses.

Thus, he destroyed the dark spiral earlier than in his previous life.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were all shocked, while inside Lang Ya blessed land, Feng Jiu Ge and Chen Yi looked at each other with dumbfounded looks!

“This is completely different from our plans!”

“Star cast failed, only the few of us are over here.”

“Lang Ya blessed land was prepared for us, they reacted too quickly.”

“Right now, we can only defend and stall for time until star cast activates again!”

Chen Yi and Feng Jiu Ge quickly conversed.

The two of them floated in the formation space, their backs were facing each other as they tried to defend themselves.

Feng Jiu Ge asked: “That’s right, where is Senior Thunder Ghost True Monarch?”

Chen Yi gulped, he hesitated a little but did not tell Feng Jiu Ge about the scene he saw earlier, instead he said: “I am not sure too, I did not see Thunder Ghost True Monarch after entering.”

Feng Jiu Ge nodded: “Senior Thunder Ghost must be too eager to make achievements, she went out and got separated from us. If we can join up with her, that would be best.”

Chen Yi was shrouded in a bad feeling, but he could not shake Feng Jiu Ge’s morale at this moment, he could only say: “I can see how crafty this Fang Yuan is, he would not let us join up easily. Senior Thunder Ghost True Monarch might be currently busy against the enemies for all we know.”

Feng Jiu Ge was more optimistic than Chen Yi, he smiled: “Lord Chen Yi, we have outstanding battle strength ourselves. I can resist rank eight Gu Immortals, I can barely be considered a rank eight battle strength. With you and Senior Thunder Ghost True Monarch, we have three rank eight battle strengths. It will be very difficult for Lang Ya blessed land to defend against us, right? Maybe with just us, we can take down Lang Ya blessed land.”

Chen Yi laughed and focused his mind forcefully: “Brother Feng is right, but this situation is truly out of our expectations, you should find a time to escape using Fixed Immortal Travel.”

Feng Jiu Ge looked at Chen Yi deeply, thinking that this Chen Yi’s emotions were so easily changed.

Feng Jiu Ge had witnessed himself how Chen Yi charged in excitedly trying to make some achievements for himself. But once he got in, he became so dejected and low-spirited all of a sudden?

“Even though Chen Yi is the former first supreme elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect, due to having an authoritative status for a long time, he has lost his bravery. No wonder he failed his mission in Western Desert and caused us to lose Divine Bean Palace.”

Feng Jiu Ge looked down on Chen Yi in his heart. Unknown to him, in the previous life, his relationship with Chen Yi was actually quite good. Especially after he used the incomplete destiny song to save Chen Yi’s life.

The two conversed rapidly in almost an instant.

Fang Yuan had already taken action.

But this time, he did not move out personally, he concealed his traces.

The immemorial rock dragon took his place, along with Lang Ya land spirit and a band of hairy man Gu Immortals using Heavenly Giant Solor!

Feng Jiu Ge and Chen Yi worked together.

After a long while, neither side could do anything to the other.

But Chen Yi and Feng Jiu Ge continued to frown deeply.

“The immemorial rock dragon is tough and sturdy, but its threat is the lowest. The Gu Immortals inside Heavenly Giant Solor are not too skilled at fighting either.”

“That’s right, the key is Fang Yuan. He has not shown up yet, is he fighting against Thunder Ghost True Monarch or hiding to deal with us?”

“Other than them, there is also this formation!”

“We need to destroy this formation, otherwise, being trapped inside this formation space is very dangerous.”

Chen Yi and Feng Jiu Ge planned quickly, changing their tactic.

Feng Jiu Ge started to use his killer move while Chen Yi defended him.

Chen Yi blocked the immemorial rock dragon and Heavenly Giant Solor alone while Feng Jiu Ge prepared his killer move successfully, unleashing separation song.

But in the previous life, this song already had no effect, it was even more useless this time around.

How could Fang Yuan forget separation song?

The tactic that Chen Yi and Feng Jiu Ge tried failed and instead gave Fang Yuan an opportunity to suddenly strike and isolate the two of them.

Thereafter, the super formation started to activate as two subspaces were created, isolating Chen Yi and Feng Jiu Ge.

Heavenly Court.

Endless starlight specks gathered again.

Fairy Zi Wei was full of sweat, she worked her hardest to create star cast killer move once again.

However, star cast was not so easily recreated.

This move was incredibly powerful, it was able to transport rank eight Gu Immortals, it was truly a tactical method that could affect wars. Precisely so, the price of using it was huge, not only in immortal essence but also the time needed to prepare it with countless complex steps. Without deep wisdom path attainment, it was unusable.

“If we can succeed and regain wisdom Gu this time, activating star cast would be an easy feat, we will not encounter so much trouble!” Fairy Zi Wei sighed.

A Gu Immortal beside her smiled: “Lady Zi Wei, even if we do not go, with those three, they have the power to take down Lang Ya blessed land.”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had calm expressions, the situation was very relaxed.

But Fairy Zi Wei frowned deeply, she felt that something was wrong.

“That’s right, Feng Jiu Ge has incredible talent, he can resist rank eight as a rank seven. He already has experience in invading Lang Ya blessed land, it will only be easier this time. Even if he fails and gets attacked by Lang Ya blessed land’s full power, he has fate armor Immortal Gu, he can definitely defend himself.” A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal beside Fairy Zi Wei analyzed.

Lang Ya blessed land.

Puff!

Feng Jiu Ge’s body shook as he spat out a mouthful of blood, he escaped in distress inside the formation space.

Fang Yuan chased after him with a sinister laugh.

Feng Jiu Ge still had shock all over his face: “My Gu worms are vanishing mysteriously! How can this be? This should be a theft path method. Is it Fang Yuan’s method or this super formation’s?”

He had already used great thief ghost hand many times, but this time around, the results were different.

Fang Yuan only stole a large number of mortal Gu and one sound path Immortal Gu.

“Compared to my previous life, my luck is very low now.” Fang Yuan also felt a little helpless.

The higher his cultivation level, the more power Spring Autumn Cicada’s rebirth would require, and the deeper his backlash would be.

Before this battle, Fang Yuan had already used methods like burning soul bursting luck, but he was still not reaching his previous life’s luck.

“Even though I gained Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s self luck true inheritance, and this true inheritance has a comprehensive amount of killer moves and Immortal Gu recipes, there are only a few luck path Immortal Gu currently. Thus, I have not stolen Fixed Immortal Travel yet.”

Fang Yuan sighed in regret while Feng Jiu Ge had a solemn expression.

“He has the power to steal Immortal Gu! The situation is too severe! Even if I have fate armor Immortal Gu, he can steal it.”

“Should I use Fixed Immortal Travel to return? Do I abandon Chen Yi...”

Feng Jiu Ge was hesitant.

At the other end.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal added: “Compared to Feng Jiu Ge, Lord Chen Yi is a true rank eight Gu Immortal. He is the former first supreme elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect, he has abundant battle experiences in his life. He is also the current generation Genesis Lotus inheritor, he has powerful wood path methods. Lord Chen Yi is old and wise, he is reliable and dependable, he can definitely control the battle situation.”

Lang Ya blessed land, super formation.

Chen Yi was full of sweat, the anxiety on his face could not be concealed.

“Damn it!” He cursed in his heart, the super formation isolated him and Feng Jiu Ge, his enemies also vanished completely.

The formation activated as layers of mazes were formed, countless illusions trapped Chen Yi.

Chen Yi continued to investigate and break the illusions but there was an endless number of mazes and illusions.

“Faster, faster!”

“I need to get out of here and join with Feng Jiu Ge.”

“How did this happen! Why did it end up like this?!”

Chen Yi cultivated wood path, his formation path attainment was not deep.

Chen Yi’s battle style was also not specialized in offense but in sustainability. Be it ancient tree prison cage or karma divine tree, they had the same style.

In the previous life, Chen Yi stayed in the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, he caused trouble for Wu Yong and Fang Yuan, but this time, he was the one tormented by Fang Yuan’s super immortal formation.

This was the tactic Fang Yuan used after familiarizing himself with Chen Yi.

Heavenly Court.

“I know you are right, but somehow, the unease in my heart is getting more intense.” Fairy Zi Wei sighed.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortal beside her pondered: “That shouldn’t be. Even if Feng Jiu Ge and Chen Yi face trouble, Senior Thunder Ghost True Monarch is a true expert! She was a legend that caused problems for Spectral Soul Demon Venerable! Last time, Fang Yuan escaped because of the regional wall. This time in Lang Ya blessed land, she can use her true power! Hehehe, perhaps more than ten Gu Immortals have already died in her hands by now. So what if Fang Yuan is there? He will only run around like a dog after being chased by Thunder Ghost True Monarch!”

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortal said this with overwhelming confidence and certainty.

Lang Ya blessed land, formation space.

Fang Yuan chased after Feng Jiu Ge while soul searching Thunder Ghost True Monarch.

He was multitasking!

His advantage was too large after all.

After using great thief ghost hand multiple times, even though he could not take Fixed Immortal Travel, he had already obtained three of Feng Jiu Ge’s sound path Immortal Gu.

Feng Jiu Ge’s strength fell drastically but he was not too injured now.

Fang Yuan was using great thief ghost hand primarily, his other offenses were trivial and merely maintained his current advantage.

He did not use moves like Luo Po seal.

Because he was afraid that fate armor Immortal Gu would activate after he injured Feng Jiu Ge.

Once fate armor Immortal Gu was activated, Fairy Zi Wei would be able to sense his exact location.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan suffered a loss from this!

After fate armor Immortal Gu activated, Fairy Zi Wei was able to rapidly deduce and break yama battlefield.

This time around, how could Fang Yuan commit the same mistakes?

“Oh? There are really many Gu Immortals trying to invade Lang Ya blessed land.”

Fang Yuan gained a lot of information from soul searching.

Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s cultivation information was valuable but Fang Yuan cast it aside, Heavenly Court’s situation was much more important to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had countless wisdom path methods, he quickly deduced: “This means that star cast can be used again, I need to hurry up and end the battle here.”

“There is no choice! If this drags on, Fixed Immortal Travel, Fate Armor, and the other Immortal Gu would get stolen by Fang Yuan.” Feng Jiu Ge had a solemn expression, he finally made his decision to use Fixed Immortal Travel.

“Wishful thinking!” Fang Yuan smiled coldly, activating Immortal Gu Suppress Space.

Suppress space Immortal Gu!

This Immortal Gu was obtained from the diamond head turtle when he specially went to Southern Border’s Earth Trench.

There were many methods to counter Fixed Immortal Travel, but after rebirth, Fang Yuan had two most likely choices.

One was fixed space Immortal Gu, the other was suppress space Immortal Gu.

Fixed space Immortal Gu was in the hands of Heavenly Court Gu Immortal Liu Hao, in the previous life, Fang Yuan ambushed Southern Border’s pursuers including Xia Cha, Liu Hao was also captured.

It was a pity that fixed space Immortal Gu self-detonated in Liu Hao’s body, Fang Yuan did not obtain it.

As for suppress space Immortal Gu, a Luo clan Gu Immortal, Luo Ran, obtained it.

In the previous life, Wu Yong led the Southern Alliance Gu Immortals to attack the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, Luo Ran had used it and achieved great success.

It was too difficult for Fang Yuan to obtain fixed space Immortal Gu now, it was still too early, he was still inside Northern Plains’ Lang Ya blessed land, he had not traveled in Southern Border and attracted everyone’s rage, Xia Cha and the rest had not pursued him yet. Without Wu Yong seeking help from Fairy Zi Wei, Liu Hao would not get involved.

But suppress space Immortal Gu was easily obtainable according to information from Fang Yuan’s previous life.

Fixed space Immortal Gu could fix a location, even if Fixed Immortal Travel activated, the Gu Immortal would only be transported to the fixed location that was chosen.

Meanwhile, suppress space Immortal Gu could prevent the use of any space path methods within a certain area.

As suppress space Immortal Gu was also rank seven, it countered the rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel.

Feng Jiu Ge was shocked by this, to think that Fang Yuan’s preparations were so comprehensive.

At the next moment, Feng Jiu Ge’s expression paled.

Immortal killer move — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, sighing inwardly: “It was not easy, I finally stole Fixed Immortal Travel.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1761 Taking Blame Even In Death

Fixed Immortal Travel was finally regained!

This way, even if Fang Yuan rose to rank eight and lost future self, he did not have to worry about losing Fixed Immortal Travel’s movement method.

Fixed Immortal Travel was a powerful movement Immortal Gu that was extremely useful to Fang Yuan.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan deduced a killer move with Fixed Immortal Travel as the core, even as a rank eight, he could travel all over the world and cause great chaos.

With this Immortal Gu, he would have incredibly powerful maneuverability!

But in the previous life, Fang Yuan stole Fixed Immortal Travel with one attempt, this time, it was truly troublesome, he used great thief ghost hand more than ten times, a lot of immortal essence was expended.

The flaw of great thief ghost hand was evident.

Even though it could steal Immortal Gu, it would steal mortal Gu in most cases. Fang Yuan stole tens of thousands of mortal Gu from Feng Jiu Ge, but only three or four Immortal Gu.

“Next is fate armor Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan’s cold gaze was fixed on Feng Jiu Ge.

As long as he stole fate armor Immortal Gu, Feng Jiu Ge would be finished.

Feng Jiu Ge continued to escape.

He had never thought that he would end up in such a distressed state!

“Fang Yuan knows me very well! He has been trying to steal my Immortal Gu without attacking much, he is targeting my weakness, he knows the power of fate armor Immortal Gu.”

Feng Jiu Ge’s heart sank to rock bottom, an intense chill permeated in his body.

The more Immortal Gu he lost, the more his battle strength fell.

“Fang Yuan!” Feng Jiu Ge thought about this name in his mind. Even though he had some estimation towards Fang Yuan’s growth, he did not not that he would be forced to escape without a way of fighting back.

Back then, Feng Jiu Ge was chasing after Fang Yuan from Southern Border to Western Desert, it seemed just like yesterday, Feng Jiu Ge could still remember clearly.

But to think that now, their situations were reversed!

“Such immense growth!” Feng Jiu Ge sighed in his heart.

It was not that Feng Jiu Ge was not strong, but Fang Yuan’s preparations were simply too plentiful.

He did not expose his secret of rebirth, his advantage was well kept.

The super formation in Lang Ya blessed land was modified by Fang Yuan, it was many times stronger than in the previous life.

One of the reason was that Fang Yuan controlled Lang Ya blessed land, he could mobilize all of its resources to build the immortal formation, he could also transact with the three variant human races.

The second reason was that Fang Yuan was much stronger than in the previous life at this point in time, be it formation path or time path, he was far superior.

This allowed him to create this super formation to trap Feng Jiu Ge and Chen Yi.

At the other end.

Chen Yi’s eyes flickered with light, he was moving around in the illusory mazes.

“Damn it! I am still trapped after so long!” Chen Yi was lost in the illusory mazes, even though he moved around quickly and broke many illusions, he still felt like vomiting blood.

This formation constantly refreshed Chen Yi’s evaluation towards it.

Fang Yuan arranged almost all the variant human Gu Immortals to control the formation and target Chen Yi.

Even though he had great battle strength with immortal killer moves like ancient tree prison cage, giant tree divine statue, karma divine tree, and others, making it very difficult for Fang Yuan to handle these superb killer moves.

In the previous life, Chen Yi fought against two enemies alone, facing the immemorial rock dragon and Heavenly Giant Solor, his performance was incredible and breathtaking.

But now, Fang Yuan obtained control of Lang Ya Sect entirely, he arranged the immemorial rock dragon and Heavenly Giant Solor to deal with Chen Yi but the two were merely assisting, the main thing dealing with Chen Yi was the super

formation.

As Chen Yi struggled in the illusory maze, every time he had hope of breaking out, the immemorial rock dragon or Heavenly Giant Solor would appear to obstruct him and stall for time.

Next, the variant human Gu Immortals would create more layers and mazes, causing Chen Yi to stay trapped indefinitely.

Chen Yi’s methods were all unusable as a result.

Fang Yuan targeted him specifically, easily countering him.

Chen Yi was very anxious now, the longer this dragged on, the more uneasy he felt.

Was the Thunder Ghost True Monarch corpse earlier just an illusion?

Chen Yi was not certain!

He wanted to believe that it was an illusion.

The reason was simple, with Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s battle strength, how could Fang Yuan possibly kill her immediately?

Were there other possibilities?

If Thunder Ghost True Monarch was still alive, why had she shown no commotion at all after such a long time in this battle?

Right now, he and Feng Jiu Ge were isolated, a long time had passed, how was the situation on his end?

“Unless, the dream realm?” Chen Yi had a flash of inspiration.

He did not know that Fang Yuan possessed rank eight steal life Immortal Gu, but he knew that Fang Yuan was skilled at using the self-detonation of Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies to form dream realms and deal with strong enemies.

During the battle at Yi Tian Mountain, Spectral Soul was captured by Heavenly Court. Afterwards, Fang Yuan was pursued by Wu Yong and Feng Jiu Ge, he used the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies to escape many times.

Without the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, Fang Yuan would have died on the way already.

Fairy Zi Wei was a wisdom path great expert, before this trip, she had already made deductions. Fang Yuan’s dream realms, Reverse Flow River, and others were all in her consideration.

The dark spiral was the tracer for star cast, it had detection abilities. If there were dream realms or Reverse Flow River nearby, Fairy Zi Wei could sense it.

In fact, Fang Yuan could not truly control the dream realm or Reverse Flow River precisely. Once the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies self-detonate, they would create an expanding dream realm that moved on its own, he could also only move Reverse Flow River mildly.

Be it the dream realm or Reverse Flow River, as long as the dark spiral was in contact with them, star cast killer move would become unstable and fail.

Fairy Zi Wei only had to create a slightly larger dark spiral to test if there were dream realms or Reverse Flow River around it.

“It is stupid to only use the dream realms or Reverse Flow River as a trap, but what if Fang Yuan created new dream path killer moves? He has Spring Autumn Cicada, he had been reborn from the future after all!” Chen Yi thought.

But the truth was, Fang Yuan currently had no dream realms with him.

His Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies had all been consumed. (Refer to Chapter 1585.)

Most of the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were used when Fang Yuan was escaping his pursuers.

This resulted in Fang Yuan going to Southern Border to snatch dream realms after the battle of Lang Ya blessed land.

Later, Fang Yuan made transactions with Chi Qu You secretly, he obtained many dream realms, his Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies became a sizable number.

After that, Fang Yuan ambushed Xia Cha and the rest, these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were incredibly useful. It could be said that Chi Qu You was the main contributor, it was because of his secret transactions with Fang Yuan that he could use all these dream realms. If he was just stealing them, the efficiency would be much lower.

Chen Yi made a wrong guess, his heart became heavy.

“No, I must destroy this immortal formation as soon as possible!”

The dangerous situation made Chen Yi resolve to use his trump card killer move — Karma Divine Tree.

The divine tree was lush and green, it was beautiful as a pavilion, green smoke rose slowly as it swayed with the wind.

With karma divine tree above his head, all sorts of illusions and mazes were forced away within a certain area.

Chen Yi could see clearly ahead of him again.

The variant human Gu Immortals gasped.

“This is the karma divine tree killer move that Elder Fang Yuan mentioned?”

“The entire super Gu formation’s power is being resisted by this move, the mazes and illusions cannot affect Chen Yi.”

“Worthy of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s killer move.”

During the critical moment, the immemorial rock dragon and Heavenly Giant Solor attacked Chen Yi. The other variant human Gu Immortals controlled the formation, trying to find a new way of trapping Chen Yi.

Chen Yi snorted coldly, he did not fight the rock dragon or giant, he flew around, targeting the formation itself.

The immemorial rock dragon and Heavenly Giant Solor attacked Chen Yi but he defended passively.

Karma divine tree displayed incredible defensive power, it blocked all of the attacks perfectly.

The divine tree which was quite sparse earlier started to bear fruits quickly.

These fruits flew out and landed on the immemorial rock dragon and Heavenly Giant Solor, causing them to endure the damage that they dealt themselves.

“Quickly block Chen Yi, don’t let him rampage around.” Fang Yuan sensed something amiss, he quickly ordered.

But the variant human Gu Immortals were very busy, they could not use the formation’s power to trap Chen Yi. As for entering the battle themselves, they would not do it.

Even though they were allies, they treasured their lives. They would hide inside the formation if they could, in the previous life, they only came out after the formation was destroyed.

Boom!

With an intense explosion, Chen Yi hit a crucial spot, the formation space that was isolated became connected.

Even though Chen Yi cultivated wood path, he was still a rank eight great expert that could mimic other paths, after such a long time inside this super formation, he could notice some of its characteristics.

Chen Yi saw Feng Jiu Ge and quickly shouted loudly: “Hang on, I’m coming!”

It turned out that Feng Jiu Ge was already forced into a corner by Fang Yuan, the situation was dangerous.

“Be careful, the enemy has a way to steal Gu worms.” Feng Jiu Ge immediately gave Chen Yi critical information.

Chen Yi’s body shook, he immediately thought of the contest over Divine Bean Palace. Western Desert’s Gu Immortal Suan Bu Jin was the one who stole legendary immemorial beast Qing Chou’s Immortal Gu using theft path.

“They have theft path methods too?!” Chen Yi shook, he frowned deeply.

Now was different from the previous life.

Fang Yuan did not use emperor yama, Chen Yi could not link the two together. There was no evidence supporting the fact that Fang Yuan was Suan Bu Jin.

Theft path was actually spread to an extent in the five regions.

Western Desert’s Suan Bu Jin had theft path methods, but Lang Ya blessed land had an even higher possibility of possessing theft path killer moves, after all, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had personally worked with Long Hair Ancestor and refined Gu together.

Chen Yi attacked while Fang Yuan snickered, he charged forward too.

He activated reverse flow protection seal while preparing Luo Po seal.

Fang Yuan’s aura surged.

“Two rank eight killer moves?!” Chen Yi was deeply shocked, his pupils shrunk: “One for offense and one for defense, they are complementary! Damn it!”

Fang Yuan and Chen Yi fought while the immemorial rock dragon and Heavenly Giant Solor approached Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge only had rank seven cultivation level now while a few of his Immortal Gu were stolen by Fang Yuan, his battle strength had fallen greatly. Facing the attack of two rank eight battle strengths, he was quickly injured and fate armor Immortal Gu got activated.

Over at Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei’s expression changed: “Oh no! Fate Armor was activated, Feng Jiu Ge is in great danger, what should we do?”

In the previous life, Fairy Zi Wei and Feng Jiu Ge were separated by only yama battlefield, she quickly broke the battlefield killer move and saved him.

But now, Fairy Zi Wei and Feng Jiu Ge were apart by a vast distance.

Star cast was only half prepared.

She could not let Feng Jiu Ge die, he was a Dao Guardian!

Chen Yi also knew the importance of Feng Jiu Ge but he was helpless, Fang Yuan was harassing him at all times. Even though karma divine tree was powerful and had both offense and defense, Fang Yuan was also attacking him with two rank eight killer moves.

As time passed, fate armor Immortal Gu became dimmer and dimmer.

Once the light completely faded, Feng Jiu Ge would die.

“What do I do now?!” Chen Yi was panicking, at this moment, he heard Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s voice in his head: “Look closely, this is the consecutive move built upon karma divine tree — Karma Relocation!”

The killer move activated, as if intense winds were blowing, the green smoke flickered as karma divine tree started to sway and dance in the wind.

Fang Yuan quickly stopped his killer move, he let out a sigh of relief as this killer move was finally forced out.

With karma relocation, Chen Yi could rampage in the battlefield, Fang Yuan could only avoid him.

Chen Yi and Feng Jiu Ge quickly gathered: “Go back, these are my Immortal Gu, remember to tell the situation here to Lady Zi Wei, take revenge for me!”

Chen Yi passed all the other Immortal Gu that he had to Feng Jiu Ge.

At the next moment, karma relocation activated as Feng Jiu Ge was transported away. Even with the super formation and Lang Ya blessed land’s aperture walls, it could not block Feng Jiu Ge from leaving.

Karma relocation was a rank nine killer move after all!

“Feng Jiu Ge, you managed to escape this time, but next time will be different.” Fang Yuan had a plain expression.

He knew about karma relocation, he knew there was no way to block it.

Earlier, he separated Feng Jiu Ge and Chen Yi because he considered this killer move, it was a pity he did not succeed.

Chen Yi and Feng Jiu Ge were very brilliant, they had abundant battle experiences.

“Since Feng Jiu Ge escaped, you shall stay here and accompany Thunder Ghost True Monarch in the afterlife.” Fang Yuan smiled ruthlessly.

Chen Yi smiled plainly: “Senior Thunder Ghost True Monarch was really killed by all of you. Come, even if I die, I will not go down easily.”

Chen Yi knew he was going to die, he completely relaxed.

Even though he loved authority and status, he was still a member of Heavenly Court.

Any member of Heavenly Court would not fear sacrifice or death!

The process of killing Chen Yi was not easy, it was difficult and a deadlock occurred many times.

But eventually, Chen Yi succumbed and Fang Yuan took his life.

He did not leave behind any Immortal Gu, but his remnant soul could not escape from Fang Yuan’s demonic claws.

The variant human Gu Immortals cheered loudly in victory but they also cried out in pain.

They had severe losses.

Chen Yi killed many of their companions.

Fang Yuan looked at Chen Yi’s corpse as he sighed deeply: “As expected of Chen Yi, as expected of a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal!”

Next, he consoled the variant human Gu Immortals, showing deep sincerity and sadness: “Your sacrifices were worth it, this is a glorious victory. Even a rank eight Gu Immortal died at your hands, this result will shock the world.”

There were only a few variant human Gu Immortals left, they were all heavily injured.

“Oh heavens, our losses were just too severe this time.”

“Lang Ya blessed land suffered the least losses, they were all inside the formation, they were safe inside Heavenly Giant Solor.”

“Strange... why did several layers of the formation break all of a sudden, without it, we would not have lost so many people!”

Fang Yuan nodded: “That must be Chen Yi’s method, he is truly formidable, I did not even notice anything!”

The variant human Gu Immortals heard this, their eyes turned red and they gritted their teeth: “That’s right, this old scoundrel!”

“Killing him was simply not enough!”

“He deserves more than death!”

The pitiful Chen Yi had no idea that even after dying in battle, he had to take the blame for Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1762 Zi Wei“s Attack

“Fang Yuan, you should have a look, those dao marks are changing again!” The moment the battle ended, Lang Ya land spirit transmitted to Fang Yuan.

“What?” Fang Yuan was surprised.

He quickly left the heavily damaged super formation as he arrived at the source of the change.

Feng Jiu Ge had left behind harmful dao marks in many places, but the dark spiral that formed earlier was the densest.

Right now, the other areas with fewer dao marks started to experience a change.

These dao marks gave off pale blue light, they were like stars in the sky, extremely dazzling and bright.

Fang Yuan took a look, his face turned dark.

“It could actually change like this!”

He had wisdom path foundation and star path attainment, he knew what this change was going to do.

“It seems that Feng Jiu Ge went back to Central Continent directly using karma relocation, or he even went back to Fairy Zi Wei directly. Thus, she obtained some information.”

“They reacted so quickly!”

Fang Yuan was feeling slight regret.

In the battle earlier, he should not have stalled for time to create a situation where both sides suffered losses.

He should have attacked directly and killed Chen Yi without caring for the immortal essence expenditure.

But the truth was, even if he did that, it would not be much faster. Karma divine tree was too superb, it combined offense and defense, without the variant human Gu Immortals’ sacrifice, it was hard to kill Chen Yi in a short time.

Fang Yuan’s expression was grim: “The changes in the dao marks should be Heavenly Court’s wisdom path great expert trying to locate the precise area of Lang Ya blessed land. We need to get rid of them, it might get very dangerous.”

Lang Ya land spirit was very anxious: “The dark spirals are easy to destroy but these harmful shining dao marks are impossible to get rid of. I’ve already tried!”

“What’s going on?” At this time, the remaining variant human Gu Immortals arrived with varying expressions.

Fang Yuan ignored them, thoughts rumbled in his mind as he pondered at the speed of lightning.

"Fairy Zi Wei wants to find the actual location of Lang Ya blessed land, she is giving it one final attempt."

"Heavenly Court lost terribly this time, she is truly infuriated."

"Lang Ya blessed land has already been relocated to Loose Tail Ridge by the land spirit, but Prince Feng Xian is likely nearby, searching for it secretly."

"I cannot let Fairy Zi Wei deduce the true location of Lang Ya blessed land, that would be a terrible situation."

Once the location is exposed, not only would Prince Feng Xian attack, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals will also reinforce him endlessly. Even if Heavenly Court fails, Fang Yuan would not leave unscathed, it would be a painful victory.

Heavenly Court could even go crazy and tell the location of Lang Ya blessed land to everyone.

This hairy man sacred land would attract the greed of countless people.

Longevity Heaven would be the first to attack!

"What should I do?" Fang Yuan processed his thoughts rapidly.

The variant human Gu Immortals beside him were also becoming more anxious.

They got an explanation from Lang Ya land spirit, they learned about the severity of this situation.

"Heavenly Court is too scary, we only killed two rank eight Gu Immortals after all our efforts."

"We are not out of danger yet! If we do not get rid of these dao marks now, Lang Ya blessed land would be exposed, we would not be able to defend this place."

"That's right, at this point, we can only rely on Lord Fang Yuan!"

Even if Lang Ya blessed land could relocate, it could not make such a commotion with so many enemies outside.

Everyone looked at Fang Yuan expectantly.

"Got it!" Fang Yuan's eyes shined brightly as he shouted.

"You found a method?" Lang Ya land spirit asked immediately.

"Quickly activate the refinement path formation, use my method to refine these dao marks." Fang Yuan answered rapidly.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan had obtained the refinement path true meaning, he learned that the way to get rid of these dao marks was to take action when the blessed land was relocating, it could be easily solved.

But thinking about it, that was a trap.

Prince Feng Xian was ambushing them outside, if Lang Ya blessed land moves, the commotion would expose them, Prince Feng Xian and Heavenly Court would attack.

Fang Yuan's method was to use the refinement path immortal formation and a large amount of rank eight immortal materials, as well as refinement water, to forcefully refine these harmful dao marks.

In his previous life, he did not think of this method because he did not know of the refinement path formation or refinement water during his deductions.

By the time he knew, the battle had ended, he stole Fixed Immortal Travel and Longevity Heaven arrived, Fang Yuan had to escape.

Lang Ya land spirit was suppressed by Fang Yuan to begin with, after getting Fang Yuan’s method, there was no hesitation, he immediately activated the refinement path formation and targeted these harmful dao marks.

Rank eight immortal materials were tossed in one by one, the variant human Gu Immortals had strange expressions, the hairy man Gu Immortals had twitching faces.

“So many rank eight immortal materials!”

“This is an immense wealth, Lang Ya blessed land’s foundation is actually so deep!”

“It is simply like cabbage sold in the market, I cannot believe this...”

Lang Ya land spirit was also feeling pained: “Elder Fang Yuan, Lang Ya blessed land had accumulated this after much effort, your refinement method is too coarse, it can be improved further. Maybe we can wait a bit and improve on this method, we can save a lot of materials.”

“No, trust me, we are in grave danger now. Even though we have no enemies here at the moment, we are not safe. We need to fight against time!” Fang Yuan did not mention Prince Feng Xian, this was just part of his conjecture, he had no evidence.

But Lang Ya land spirit was under Fang Yuan’s control, he obeyed him without question.

Fang Yuan’s words sounded like a suggestion but they were basically an order to him, he had to execute it.

“Alright, I will listen to you!” Lang Ya land spirit’s reply was very short.

Fang Yuan’s expression was solemn: “Come and refine these harmful dao marks, don’t feel pity for the refinement water used. I will enter the secret room and use wisdom path methods to stop Heavenly Court, nobody is to interrupt me. Anyone who disturbs me is a spy of Heavenly Court, I will kill you on the spot!”

Fang Yuan’s gaze was filled with killing intent, he looked around as a chill emerged in all the Gu Immortals’ hearts.

After a stern warning, he entered his cloud city and went into the secret room.

Heavenly Court, Central Great Hall.

Fairy Zi Wei sat in her usual seat as her eyes were shut, she was radiating with an intense purple light.

The purple light filled the entire hall, it was like rising smoke or rushing tides, the aura was grand and magnificent.

Fang Yuan’s defenses were soon noticed by Fairy Zi Wei.

She frowned a little as she laughed coldly: “Want to stop me? Star Constellation Chessboard!”

She immediately summoned Star Constellation Chessboard to assist her.

Not long ago, Feng Jiu Ge had returned to Heavenly Court with grave injuries, but also precious information!

After learning about it, Fairy Zi Wei immediately understood that the dark spirals were exposed, there was little hope in using them. Thus, she changed her plan and decided to expend these dao marks to deduce the exact location of Lang Ya blessed land inside Loose Tail Ridge.

“I have not lost this battle yet!” Fairy Zi Wei held onto her belief.

Chen Yi and Thunder Ghost True Monarch were likely goners, Feng Jiu Ge was heavily injured and had already fallen unconscious. Fairy Zi Wei was responsible for this battle, she wanted to make up for her mistakes.

In the previous life, Longevity Heaven had acted, they were powerful and originated from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. Even though Heavenly Court lost, Fairy Zi Wei’s reaction was not as severe.

But now, she lost to Fang Yuan and the variant human Gu Immortals, either of them made the proud Heavenly Court Gu Immortals unable to accept this humiliating defeat!

Like what Fang Yuan expected, Fairy Zi Wei was truly angry.

She tried her best, disregarding the intense backlash, to turn this situation around!

Star Constellation Chessboard was a wisdom path rank eight Immortal Gu House, it was extremely helpful.

Fairy Zi Wei quickly got the edge on Fang Yuan as her deduction speed rose continuously.

In the previous life, even though Fairy Zi Wei had this method, because Longevity Heaven had taken over Lang Ya blessed land, there was no point even if she tried.

But now, because Fang Yuan won in the absence of Longevity Heaven, Fairy Zi Wei still had hope. Furthermore, Feng Jiu Ge had used Fate Armor earlier, even though it was a short duration, it was an important clue.

Fairy Zi Wei was very confident in deducing Lang Ya blessed land’s location and defeating Fang Yuan across space!

“This is bad.” Fang Yuan felt a mountain pressing down on him.

The activation of fate armor Immortal Gu gave Fairy Zi Wei an extremely large advantage in deducing Lang Ya blessed land.

Fairy Zi Wei made use of this weakness, Fang Yuan could not see any hope of stopping her.

“Even though I have many wisdom path methods, I lack truly profound ones.”

Even though there was rank nine wisdom Gu, Fang Yuan could only use the light of wisdom. As for rank eight wisdom sword Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan did not have rank eight immortal essence yet. He had attitude Gu but how could Fang Yuan deduce a wisdom path method using attitude Gu as the core to defend against Fairy Zi Wei in this short time?

“There is only one final method!” Resolution shined across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1763 Feng Xian“s Pursui

Heavenly Court.

In Central Great Hall.

Purple light spread out like rushing tides. Suddenly, the light stopped, it was like the river flow had encountered an obstruction.

Fairy Zi Wei gasped lightly as she opened her eyes.

She was in the middle of deductions, her progress was smooth and success was close, but suddenly, the obstruction grew immensely.

This was not an ordinary change, it was as if she had been pushing a wooden door earlier.

The door was already shaking, there was a high chance of opening it, once she succeeds, Fairy Zi Wei would learn about Lang Ya blessed land’s location.

However, this wooden door turned into a heavy iron door instantly.

“What happened?”

“Earlier, Fang Yuan tried to stop me, his wisdom path methods are lacking, he could not succeed.”

“But now he suddenly succeeded... wait, I get it, he annexed Lang Ya blessed land.”

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes shined with bright light, she got the answer.

Fairy Zi Wei faced great difficulty in deducing Fang Yuan’s location earlier. After Fang Yuan obtained emperor yama, she had no hope of success.

As long as Fang Yuan annexed Lang Ya blessed land, it would become part of the sovereign immortal aperture.

If Fairy Zi Wei tried to deduce the location of Lang Ya blessed land, wasn’t she just deducing Fang Yuan’s location?

Thus, all of Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions were stopped by Fang Yuan’s emperor yama killer move.

Emperor yama contained the power of rank nine killer move ghostly concealment from Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance, it was a huge obstruction to Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei’s thoughts flickered but her movements did not stop, she continued using several wisdom path methods.

After some probing, she confirmed her guess: “This is the same as the time I tried to deduce matters on Fang Yuan, it seems he really annexed Lang Ya blessed land!”

“Annexing a rank seven blessed land would require grandmaster attainment level.

Fang Yuan's refinement path has grandmaster attainment level?"

Fairy Zi Wei found that she had underestimated Fang Yuan again.

Her expression was extremely grim.

"Immortal apertures can only devour smaller apertures, what is Fang Yuan's immortal aperture? How can it annex that colossal Lang Ya blessed land?"

Fairy Zi Wei did not know of the sovereign immortal aperture's secret yet, she was secretly shocked because the foundation that Fang Yuan exposed was already quite unfathomable.

"Damn it, Fang Yuan obtained Lang Ya blessed land, his foundation increased tremendously. What are these variant human Gu Immortals doing? They actually let Fang Yuan swallow their foundation? These idiots!"

Fairy Zi Wei gritted her teeth, these variant human Gu Immortals were simply too useless.

"Wait, this is likely Fang Yuan's scheme!"

"He is using these variant human Gu Immortals to target my Heavenly Court. At the same time, he is also using Heavenly Court to weaken these variant human Gu Immortals."

"After this battle, the variant human Gu Immortals must have suffered heavy losses, that's how Fang Yuan forcefully annexed them."

"In fact, he might have even used this threat of my deduction to trick them into agreeing with his plan!"

In one instance, Fairy Zi Wei thought of many things.

Fang Yuan left her an incredibly deep impression of being crafty and shrewd, she could not help but think of him in a bad light.

Fairy Zi Wei was extremely gloomy!

She felt that this attack on Lang Ya blessed land was simply giving Fang Yuan benefits!

"Fang Yuan, I will not let you succeed. Prince Feng Xian..." Fairy Zi Wei had anger in her eyes, she immediately contacted Prince Feng Xian who was in Northern Plains.

Prince Feng Xian had already received orders, he was lurking in Loose Tail Ridge, the original plan was to cooperate with Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals if there was a chance to attack Lang Ya blessed land together. If Northern Plains' Gu Immortals noticed this, he would show up and obstruct them to stall for time.

"Prince Feng Xian, Fang Yuan might show up now, quickly investigate, try to stall him the moment you find him." Fairy Zi Wei ordered.

"Understood." Prince Feng Xian said before quickly changing his tone: "Wait, I found him already!"

"You are alone, be careful!" Fairy Zi Wei quickly said: "Fang Yuan is devious and scheming, the theft path Immortal Gu might come from Lang Ya Sect, it could also be his. I have already sent Gu Immortals into Northern Plains to help you. But in the short term, you have no reinforcements."

Prince Feng Xian had a solemn expression: “I understand.”

He was a rank eight Gu Immortal but he had to be so careful against a rank seven Gu Immortal?

But he did not feel any absurdity in this, it was only natural.

Not just Prince Feng Xian, Fairy Zi Wei and the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals felt the same.

Their earlier underestimation only revealed their own foolishness.

Thunder Ghost True Monarch and Chen Yi died, this demon Fang Yuan was extraordinary, he could not be assessed with common sense.

Others could be underestimated, but trying to look down on Fang Yuan was simply stupidity!

“He is here indeed.” Fang Yuan flew in the sky, he turned around to look, Prince Feng Xian was already getting close to him at a rapid speed.

The commotion of annexing Lang Ya blessed land was not small, Fang Yuan’s main body was exposed.

Prince Feng Xian had been waiting close by, the moment he sensed it, he charged over.

Fang Yuan flew ahead rapidly.

He did not want to fight Prince Feng Xian.

After an intense battle earlier, he was not in peak condition, he had consumed a lot of immortal essence.

At the same time, he had to defend against Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions. Emperor yama was closely covering his soul, concealing his traces and expending his soul foundation.

“Fang Yuan, where are you running?”

“If you are a man, stay here and fight me for three hundred rounds!”

“You coward, do you only know how to run?”

...

Prince Feng Xian had an arrogant attitude, he continued to scold endlessly.

But the truth was, Prince Feng Xian was very much on guard, he seemed arrogant but his mind was on alert.

Fang Yuan sneered, no matter how Prince Feng Xian provoked him, he paid no heed.

Even if Fang Yuan was not in his peak condition, even with just rank seven cultivation level, by using reverse flow protection seal, Luo Po seal, Heavenly Giant Solor, and the immemorial rock dragon, he could totally fight evenly with Prince Feng Xian without falling back.

But what was the point?

Fighting against Prince Feng Xian could possibly cause problems if he was careless.

This was one of the ten great fierce areas of Northern Plains, Loose Tail Ridge!

If Fang Yuan used his methods, he would expose precious information, his immortal essence would be expended for no reason. If Heavenly Court’s reinforcements arrived while they fought, the situation would become much worse.

The king does not dispatch troops based on anger!

Be they righteous path or demonic path, if one could not control their emotions, regardless of how big their achievements were at the moment, they were just foolish clowns at the core.

“I arrived, this is it.” Fang Yuan flew rapidly, when he saw the valley ahead of him with that huge frosty lake, he became extremely joyful.

Prince Feng Xian had taken action long ago, he sent attacks towards Fang Yuan from the back.

The two chased and fled, they rapidly got close to the frosty lake.

A huge wave appeared in the frosty lake as an immemorial frost dragon appeared. It had a horn on its head, a long body of over a hundred feet, and many layers of white scales on its body, the temperature of the surroundings fell drastically once it appeared.

The immemorial frost dragon screeched, warning Fang Yuan and Prince Feng Xian to not approach its territory.

But this immemorial frost dragon was Fang Yuan’s target!

When Lang Ya land spirit first relocated the blessed land, going from the crescent lake to Loose Tail Ridge, he did not tell Fang Yuan about the specific location, he was on guard against Fang Yuan.

But now that the land spirit was under him, Lang Ya blessed land’s location and the surrounding forces became Fang Yuan’s knowledge.

The immemorial frost dragon’s warning was useless, Fang Yuan and Prince Feng Xian still charged towards it.

It became enraged as it gulped, opening its mouth and emitting its endless frost breath.

The frost breath was like a wave made of ice and frost, it was pure and white, everywhere it went, there was an icy light which shined like crystals.

Fang Yuan activated reverse flow protection seal, moving into this colossal frost breath.

Prince Feng Xian saw that the situation was amiss, he also chased after Fang Yuan.

The frost breath engulfed everything, it interfered with Prince Feng Xian’s investigative killer move.

Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal made sure that he was intact and safe.

As the frost breath flew past him, countless horse carriage sized ice shards descended.

Prince Feng Xian was bathed in flames, there was a layer of frost on his brows as he floated in the sky.

After blocking the frost breath, Prince Feng Xian did not feel any smugness, instead, he felt angered and anxious.

Because he had lost any trace of Fang Yuan.

“Fang Yuan has familiar face, he probably turned into an ice shard and descended with them!”

Prince Feng Xian knew some important information, with his rich battle experiences, he immediately realized the most likely reason for Fang Yuan’s disappearance. It was not easy now if he wanted to find Fang Yuan’s main body.

Especially when the immemorial frost dragon attacked him right when he was about to move.

“Stupid beast!” Prince Feng Xian shouted in anger.

The immemorial frost dragon had limited wisdom, since Fang Yuan vanished, it thought that he had died. The only one remaining was Prince Feng Xian, who was conspicuously bathed in raging flames.

Compared to Fang Yuan’s rank seven aura, Prince Feng Xian had a powerful rank eight aura, he was on the same level as the immemorial frost dragon.

In the immemorial frost dragon’s eyes, Fang Yuan was trivial, the true threat was Prince Feng Xian!

Boom boom boom!

Prince Feng Xian had no choice but to fight against the immemorial frost dragon intensely.

At the same time, he found an opportunity to investigate all of the ice shards on the ground.

He soon made a discovery.

An ice shard fell onto the frosty lake and did not float, instead, it turned into an ancient frost dragon and swam towards the bottom of the pond.

“Fang Yuan, you cannot escape!” Prince Feng Xian gave up on attacking the immemorial frost dragon, he targeted the frosty lake.

Fang Yuan entered the frosty lake and dived down continuously.

Soon, he saw a large number of frost dragons, here were ancient frost dragons and desolate beast frost dragons.

This was a huge family of frost dragons!

These frost dragons only looked at Fang Yuan curiously, he was one of them, they had no desire to attack.

Prince Feng Xian’s attack on the frosty lake was a completely different issue.

Many of the ancient frost dragons started to attack him but Prince Feng Xian incinerated all of them.

The ancient frost dragons went into chaos, a small portion of them became ferocious as they pestered Prince Feng Xian while the rest escaped.

Fang Yuan was overjoyed, he mixed into the group.

“Fang Yuan, come out if you have guts!” Prince Feng Xian lost all traces of Fang Yuan again, he screamed angrily inside the frosty lake, his voice caused huge ripples and waves in the calm pond.

The immemorial frost dragon cried out in despair, its descendants were all brutally murdered by this human Gu Immortal, blood dyed the frosty lake as its anger reached the tipping point.

It attacked Prince Feng Xian with overwhelming hatred and anger!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1764 Evaluating Gains

Prince Feng Xian did not want to fight with the immemorial frost dragon, he continued to go after Fang Yuan and pester him.

Prince Feng Xian dived deep down into the frosty lake.

But soon, a second immemorial frost dragon appeared from within the deepest part of the frosty lake, blocking Prince Feng Xian.

“There are two immemorial frost dragons inside this frosty lake?” Prince Feng Xian and Fang Yuan were deeply shocked.

Prince Feng Xian was furious but helpless, he was temporarily stalled.

Fang Yuan was overjoyed, he dived into the depths of the frosty lake, escaping Prince Feng Xian’s pursuit.

He soon found out that there was a secret tunnel in this frosty lake, it was connected to other places.

Fang Yuan swam into the secret tunnel, arriving in another frosty lake.

This frosty lake was tranquil and large, there were a large group of frost dragons here.

“So there is actually a huge group of them, no wonder there are two immemorial frost dragons, wait no, three!” Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed.

He found another immemorial frost dragon here.

This immemorial frost dragon was sprawled around the edge of the frosty lake, hearing the intense battle, it became anxious.

It moved its head around and growled, after a while, it could not wait anymore, diving into the frosty lake and going to help out the other immemorial frost dragons.

“Three immemorial frost dragons, hehe.” Fang Yuan felt a little pity for Prince Feng Xian.

Prince Feng Xian was in trouble.

Of course, immemorial frost dragons had much lower wisdom compared to humans, they could not kill Prince Feng Xian, in fact, one or two of the dragons might die.

Prince Feng Xian had powerful battle strength, he had developed in Northern Plains to become a rank eight Gu Immortal, his battle results were astounding.

“But after Prince Feng Xian gets rid of the three immemorial frost dragons, I would have left already.”

Fang Yuan got out of the pond and was about to leave but he suddenly stopped moving.

He saw many frost dragon eggs.

Each egg was the size of a millstone, there were a few hundred of these eggs lying around.

“So the immemorial frost dragon was protecting these eggs earlier, that’s why they refused to leave. Wait, what is this?”

At the center of the batch of eggs, he saw a small stone pillar that was grey-white in color and emitting frost energy.

“This is rank eight immortal material frosty stone? Such a huge piece, it has incredible value.”

Even with Fang Yuan’s current wealth, he felt a faint sense of joy from obtaining it.

At this point, he finally realized why this group of frost dragons had three immemorial frost dragons.

He immediately took away the frosty stone and the thousands of frost dragon eggs.

“My luck suppresses Prince Feng Xian and these frost dragons, thus, while being chased by him, I benefited instead!” Fang Yuan sighed in his mind.

Prince Feng Xian was not Feng Jiu Ge.

Without the help of Dao Guardian Feng Jiu Ge’s luck, Fang Yuan’s superiority in luck became very apparent.

Prince Feng Xian could not stall Fang Yuan, instead, he gained a huge benefit. Without him fighting these three immemorial frost dragons, Fang Yuan would not have a chance to steal this immense fortune!

This was the power of luck path!!

“I have to thank Prince Feng Xian for his cooperation.” Fang Yuan was happy as he drilled underground, using Fixed Immortal Travel to escape.

Prince Feng Xian was still fighting the three frost dragons now.

Suddenly, the three immemorial frost dragons received information from the other frost dragons and learned that the eggs were stolen, they became enraged, their eyes turned red as they sent out frost breaths like it was endless.

Even the powerful Prince Feng Xian was dazed from their actions, he had to defend against them desperately.

“What are these stupid snakes doing? Why did they become so fierce?” Prince Feng

Xian could not understand.

“Sigh! These beasts are wasting so much time, Fang Yuan must have escaped already. My mission failed!” Prince Feng Xian mentally sighed.

There was no choice, Fang Yuan did not want to fight against him, he was too good at fleeing.

Because Fang Yuan had transformation path attainment, Prince Feng Xian was at a disadvantage in a place like Loose Tail Ridge.

Fang Yuan made use of his immense territorial advantage.

When Gu Immortals fight, those who only look at killer moves or Immortal Gu are the ignorant fools. Gu Immortal elites would learn to use their advantages and other natural factors, they would consider the enemy’s emotions and plans.

“Then come back, Fang Yuan is crafty, because you appeared at this time, he has likely deduced your true identity.” Fairy Zi Wei transmitted.

Prince Feng Xian was silent, he felt dissatisfied but Fairy Zi Wei was right, he could not look down on Fang Yuan.

The moment Prince Feng Xian acted against Fang Yuan, his identity was exposed.

“I’ll retreat!” Prince Feng Xian gritted his teeth, flying out of the frosty lake.

But the three immemorial frost dragons did not let him off!

“What is going on, are these three snakes crazy? They are not letting me off!” Prince Feng Xian felt extremely unlucky, these three beasts were pestering him for no apparent reason.

“You think I am helpless against you?” Prince Feng Xian was getting more and more furious.

When he was about to attack, beast growls resounded around the entire ridge, figures of immemorial desolate beasts appeared as they looked at Prince Feng Xian with animosity.

They recognized the three immemorial frost dragons, they had been neighbors for many years.

But this human Gu Immortal, where did he come from?

He dared to invade Loose Tail Ridge?!

Prince Feng Xian’s expression turned pale, Loose Tail Ridge was one of the ten great fierce areas, even rank eight Gu Immortals had to be careful when exploring it.

“I might trigger a beast tide at this rate! I should leave!” Prince Feng Xian’s heart sank, he quickly retreated.

“Achoo!” He was caught unguarded earlier and got hit by an immemorial frost dragon’s frost breath, he was covered in frost now as he sneezed.

Bam.

With a loud sound, he was hit on the back by an ice ball from an immemorial frost dragon, he was pushed away by the momentum in a pitiful state.

The three immemorial frost dragons chased after Prince Feng Xian relentlessly, but he did not dare to retaliate, he endured hits with an ashen expression as he escaped from Loose Tail Ridge while spitting out blood.

Three days later.

The refinement path formation resonated, the final portion of harmful dao marks had been removed.

“We finally succeeded!” Lang Ya land spirit sighed.

Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, he was finally safe.

These three days, Fairy Zi Wei had been making deductions, Fang Yuan felt immense pressure. Even though emperor yama did its job perfectly, it was expending Fang Yuan’s soul foundation constantly.

“Compared to the previous life, my soul foundation has fallen much more.”

“To quickly refine these harmful dao marks, I spent a lot of rank eight immortal materials.”

“But compared to my gains, these losses are inconsequential.”

Fang Yuan evaluated this huge battle.

Now that the harmful dao marks were gone, Fairy Zi Wei could no longer find them, this battle over Lang Ya blessed land had finally ended.

Undeniably, Fang Yuan won this battle, his gains were immense.

He was quite satisfied with it.

The entire flow of the battle was within his control, nothing had gone out of his expectations.

This was the advantage of rebirth!

Spring Autumn Cicada’s power was evident and clear.

Of course, if the user was not Fang Yuan who had great strength, no matter how many times a mortal tried to rebirth, they would not be able to change anything.

In essence, Spring Autumn Cicada was just a supporting Gu, the changes that one could do post-rebirth were dependent on the Gu Immortal’s own schemes and abilities.

“But some mishaps happened regardless.”

“Like Feng Jiu Ge escaping easily through karma relocation killer move.”

“And the other ability of the harmful dao marks, after Fairy Zi Wei gave up on the dark spiral and tried to deduce Lang Ya blessed land’s location, I was caught off guard.”

This was something that Fang Yuan did not know in the previous life.

Rebirth did not mean that Fang Yuan could know all of his enemy’s trump cards.

Especially against Heavenly Court, their foundation was just too deep.

Rebirth carried advantages, but it was not absolute.

The enemies were not stupid, if you act differently from the previous life, they would also react differently and make different actions.

Fairy Zi Wei forcefully deducing Lang Ya blessed land and sending Prince Feng Xian after him was the best evidence.

This had not happened in the previous life.

Before the battle, Fang Yuan had considered this, thus, he chose to resist Heavenly Court and did not involve Longevity Heaven.

In the previous life, Lang Ya land spirit had to get help from Longevity Heaven, it made Heavenly Court retreat while Fang Yuan escaped.

After suppressing Lang Ya land spirit, Fang Yuan gained a very alluring choice.

That was to use the former agreement to make Lang Ya land spirit seek help from Longevity Heaven. Then, using Lang Ya blessed land as the battlefield, he could make Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court fight to the death while he reaps the benefits at the best timing.

But thinking about it, Fang Yuan gave up on this idea.

It was too risky!

Even though the benefits were huge if he succeeded, the risks were too high, Fang Yuan was unwilling to take the chance.

Spring Autumn Cicada was still recovering now, it could not be used.

And he could not look down on his enemies!

Whether they be Longevity Heaven or Heavenly Court, they were all full of rank eight geniuses with deep foundations.

If he was careless, they would make a different choice than in the previous life. They would use many different methods, the more they change their actions, the more the situation would warp until nothing remains the same.

Fang Yuan did not have enough strength currently to suppress the situation when both forces were involved.

Thus, Fang Yuan chose to resist Heavenly Court alone.

This way, there would be less variance, he could control the situation. Even though some mishaps occurred, they were not too troublesome, Fang Yuan obtained victory in the end.

Everything in Lang Ya Sect belonged to Fang Yuan now.

Right now, the three hairy man continents were placed in Mini Eastern Sea.

Because a lot of the refinement water was used, Fang Yuan collected the rest and created an incomplete Refinement Sea, putting it at the most western side of Mini Eastern Sea, close to Mini Central Continent.

As for Lang Ya blessed land’s Cloud Cover Continent, Fang Yuan placed it in Mini White Heaven.

The incomplete Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron of Lang Ya Sect was stored away by Fang Yuan, he dismantled it and planned to modify great thief ghost hand with it.

The refinement path formation was completely intact and kept in Cloud Cover Continent.

As for the luck path self luck true inheritance, Thieving Heaven true inheritance, and Long Hair refinement path true inheritance, Fang Yuan would research upon them in the future.

“Three days have passed, I wonder if those variant human Gu Immortals have made their choice.” Lang Ya land spirit controlled the Long Hair refinement path formation as he slowly stopped it and spoke.

Fang Yuan snorted lightly: “I am a rank eight Gu Immortal! A wise person submits to circumstances, if they are really blind and do not want to join Lang Ya Sect, we will eliminate these people.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1765 Taking In The Variant Humans

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini White Heaven, Cloud Cover Continent.

“How about it, has everyone decided?” Fang Yuan controlled his time path clone to meet these remaining variant human Gu Immortals.

Among these variant humans Gu Immortals, there was snowman Gu Immortal Bing Yuan, rockman Gu Immortals Shi Zong and Shi Shi Cheng, as well as inkman Gu Immortal Mo Qi Yi.

Because of Fang Yuan’s intentional scheme, only these four variant human Gu Immortals were left.

Three days ago, after Fang Yuan got free from Prince Feng Xian, he let these four Gu Immortals decide if they wanted to join Lang Ya Sect, they had three days to consider it.

Right now, three days had passed.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone and Lang Ya land spirit came together.

Bing Yuan and the rest looked at each other without speaking, they had difficult expressions.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone snorted coldly on the inside, but he showed a kind smile as he said warmly: “Everyone, you can tell me if you have any difficulties, we are allies, we are family! Even though I am currently a rank eight Gu Immortal, I will not change my attitude toward you.”

Fang Yuan tossed out both the carrot and the stick, he pointed out his rank eight cultivation with a smile, there was deep meaning behind his words and actions.

The four variant human Gu Immortals heard this and had even uglier expressions.

Fang Yuan had sold three of Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s rib bones earlier, his reputation soared, the variant humans attached importance and paid attention to him.

Now, he had controlled the situation to defeat Heavenly Court, he even killed two Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortals in front of the variant human Gu Immortals!

Fang Yuan's reputation was hundreds of times as high as before, he was like a tall mountain standing in front of these variant human Gu Immortals.

These words had completely different implications now after the battle.

Every word was like a mountain that pressed down on the variant human Gu Immortals' hearts.

Seeing that the immortals were silent, Fang Yuan smiled again: "I am trying to help you. You were all involved in the battle, Feng Jiu Ge has escaped and divulged the information. With Heavenly Court's wisdom path capabilities, they will certainly deduce your information. Staying here is the best choice."

The four variant human Gu Immortals looked at each other with bitter expressions.

Fang Yuan was right.

But if they joined Lang Ya Sect, they would lose their freedom.

This was different from their alliance agreement earlier.

Who would want to lose their freedom?

Fang Yuan had said it nicely by asking them to join Lang Ya Sect. But the four variant human Gu Immortals knew that Lang Ya Sect had been annexed by Fang Yuan already, joining it was just a facade, the essence was to submit to Fang Yuan and become his subordinate!

It was fine if Fang Yuan was a hairy man.

But he was a human Gu Immortal.

The four variant human Gu Immortals did not want to become the subordinates of a human Gu Immortal.

But the situation was quite peculiar, they had no choice to be honest.

Not agreeing to Fang Yuan's request had terrifying consequences!

Fang Yuan's smile gradually faded, he urged them in a plain tone: "Everyone, you are thinking too much! If I really want to harm you, I can just kill you on the spot, can you really resist me?"

Fang Yuan was threatening them openly now, the four variant human Gu Immortals' expressions changed.

They could not rebuke him.

Fang Yuan had rank eight battle strength, together with Heavenly Giant Solor, what could the rockmen do with just one immemorial rock dragon?

Fang Yuan looked at them as he continued: "Even though I am a demonic path human Gu Immortal, that was not by choice, because Heavenly Court wants to kill me, what else can I do? You are all my friends and family, I will not harm you.

After joining Lang Ya Sect, we will be even closer together. If we are dispersed, Heavenly Court or even Longevity Heaven might find trouble with you to weaken us!"

Fang Yuan spoke earnestly, the four variant human Gu Immortals felt a little more calm now.

But Lang Ya land spirit was feeling a cold chill upon seeing this.

"Master Fang Yuan's acting is truly impeccable! He had plotted against them earlier, if not for him, how could the three races lose so many Gu Immortals?"

"If I say the truth, I wonder what expression these four variant human Gu Immortals will show?"

The four variant human Gu Immortals were not stupid, they were quite intelligent, after all, they were the leaders of their own tribes and had survived for so many years.

They were suspicious towards Fang Yuan, but they concealed these suspicions and did not show it at all.

Fang Yuan was too strong now!

He had stunning battle strength and rank eight cultivation level, he could roam all five regions unhindered.

Even Heavenly Court could not succeed, nobody could stop him now.

Forget about Duke Long, he was a special case.

Against Fang Yuan, the variant human Gu Immortals felt deep fear but also a sense of reliance.

"If we join Fang Yuan, life should be much more stable?" The four variant human Gu Immortals had this thought in them, it was just the intensity that varied.

One can find shade under large trees.

Submitting to other human Gu Immortals was too dangerous. But Fang Yuan seemed to be a good choice.

But if they knew that Fang Yuan was going to attack Central Continent and Heavenly Court, who knew how they would feel?

"Since Lord Fang Yuan is inviting us with sincerity, we, the snowman tribe, will believe in you, we will move over and join Lang Ya Sect!" After a while of silence, the first to agree was snowman Gu Immortal Bing Yuan.

This rank seven Gu Immortal was the grandmother of Fang Yuan's fiancée, Xue Er.

With this relationship, she was closest to Fang Yuan, she agreed first.

With Bing Yuan's agreement, the other three Gu Immortals soon submitted and agreed to become members of Lang Ya Sect.

This was quite similar to the previous life.

These variant human Gu Immortals joined Lang Ya Sect in the end.

But last time, they were forced by Longevity Heaven, they had no hesitation.

And in this life, Fang Yuan forced them, they agreed after three days.

The leaders of the variant humans agreed, next, Fang Yuan’s main body went to the northern icy plain and Inkman City to capture all of the variant humans there. Wait, no, he was going to rescue them and escort them into the sovereign immortal aperture.

Sovereign immortal aperture, the next day.

At the extreme north of Mini Northern Plains.

A pair of Gu Immortals, male and female, floated in the sky as they looked down on the ground.

The male had a plain expression but his eyes were deep like the abyss, he gave off an incredible air that could intimidate anyone. It was Fang Yuan’s soul which had entered his former body, the current time path clone.

The female immortal was young and beautiful, she was tall and vibrant, she had blue eyes and hair, she had the icy trait of her variant human race. It was snowman Gu Immortal Xue Er, Fang Yuan’s fiancée in name.

“Xue Er, my main body could not come here, only my clone can accompany you, will you blame me?” Fang Yuan’s time path clone said gently with an apologetic tone.

Xue Er blinked several times before rapidly saying: “Fang... Fang Yuan, don’t worry about it, am I such a petty girl? With your clone by my side, I am very happy already.”

Xue Er placed herself on a low status.

Even though Fang Yuan’s time path clone had the same cultivation level as her at rank six, his main body was a rank eight Gu Immortal!

Right now, the entire snowman tribe had to live in Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture, even her grandmother Bing Yuan had become Fang Yuan’s subordinate.

The time path clone saw Xue Er’s attitude and nodded in satisfaction.

Xue Er asked: “I have a question, why did you bring me here?”

“Hahaha, I have a present for you. Xue Er, take a look down there.” Fang Yuan’s time path clone said as he waved his hand.

The frost energy fog below faded as the mountain and formation were exposed.

Xue Er opened her mouth as she showed a shocked expression: “Ah, this is?”

“This is the snow crystal formation, I used an ice path crystal essence and a lot of ice and snow path Gu worms to create it. From now on, your snowman tribe will live here.” Fang Yuan explained the benefits of this formation.

The snow crystal formation covered a wide range of tens of thousands of li.

The snow crystal formation would emit the frost energy that would constantly alter the environment inch by inch, creating a living habitat that suited the snowmen.

At the same time, snow monsters would be produced, they would coexist with the snowmen and train each other.

“Xue Er, we are engaged. The snowman tribe is closer to me than the others. These last days, I have been thinking of how to accommodate all of you.”

“Thinking about it, after doing lots of deductions, I finally created this snow crystal formation. With it, the snowmen will have the best environment to live in.”

Saying this, the time path clone looked at Xue Er with a gentle expression.

Xue Er was very happy, her eyes shined brightly: “Fang Yuan, you really thought a lot about it, this is all out of my expectations, to speak the truth, grandma was still worried yesterday on how to settle down the snowmen!”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly as he held Xue Er’s shoulder.

Xue Er’s body shook.

Such an intimate action, this was the first time for her!

Fang Yuan spoke again: “Xue Er, you will be the owner of this formation from now on. You can take care of the tribe, my sovereign immortal aperture has nothing but space in it. You must develop it well, make sure that there are more snowmen in the future, try to reach the size of the hairy men.”

Xue Er heard this, her eyes became red from excitement, she said in a choking voice: “Fang Yuan, thank you so much. I have never thought that the snowmen would one day be able to develop so openly and freely. I will definitely not let you down! Grandma and Lord Bing Zhuo will definitely be very happy if they hear about your arrangements.”

Fang Yuan hugged her using this chance.

This time, Xue Er did not turn stiff, she held onto Fang Yuan’s chest with a face that was flushed red.

Fang Yuan said with deep emotions: “Actually, the entire world is misunderstanding me. They call me shameless and unscrupulous, cold and emotionless, but the truth is, they want my Immortal Gu and precious memories, for that sake, they put all the blame on me and try to extort me using righteous excuses!”

“My experiences are like the snowmen, so I can empathize with and understand you.”

“Sigh, actually, I could have done more. The snow crystal formation lacks some ice and snow path Immortal Gu, it is not strong enough. At the same time, there is only one ice path crystal essence, if I can get more of those, I can place them all inside here.”

Fang Yuan’s words made Xue Er feel immense bliss

She did not even think about it: “Don’t worry Fang Yuan, our snowman tribe has two ice path crystal essences in our inventory, once grandma hears about this, she will definitely use some Immortal Gu to develop our homeland.”

“Oh? Is that so, that would be wonderful.” Fang Yuan showed an expression of surprise and joy as he smiled.

Xue Er shut her eyes, her lips were curling up, she hugged Fang Yuan’s waist as she sank into bliss and happiness.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1766 One Step Back, Sea and Sky Expands

The sky was pure and blue, white clouds resembled snow.

A strong breeze was blowing over the autumn grassland. Under the sunlight, golden waves could be seen as the grass moved in synchronization.

And amidst these waves, there was a huge black city.

From a bird’s eye view, this city was large but has a strict structure.

The outer city walls resembled huge rock monoliths, they were black like ink. The surface of the rocks had undergone weathering, the vicissitudes of time were carved on them.

The entire city was a hexagon, it was situated on the grassland. The city walls were more than two hundred li long, they were a hundred feet tall and tens of feet thick, it was a grand sight. If a person stood on the grassland, they would see a huge black beast sprawling. If they got closer, they would need to raise their heads to look up at the huge city gate and walls.

Every edge of the city had defensive towers that were filled with countless holes that could shoot out arrows.

Every few li apart, there would be a wide path for horse carriages to move on.

There were even very secretive armories within the city walls.

For mortals, just the city wall was impenetrable. During the Northern Plains Imperial Court Contest, this grand wall had resisted Gu Master armies tens of times without falling.

Passing the city walls, one would arrive at the vibrant world within.

This city had over eight hundred thousand people, there were Gu Masters of all sorts.

The city had many streets and shops, there were great numbers of houses and palaces. People and carriages were bustling, there was an endless flow of activity. Loud noises could be heard constantly, this was truly a lively city.

And the most special trait, this city was most populous in inkmen.

Walking on all the streets and alleys, one could see few humans, but inkmen could be seen anywhere.

This was a city for the inkmen.

This was a unique city in Northern Plains, it was special even in the five regions!

This was Inkman City!

Rumble...

Intense rumbling noises could be heard, earthquakes resounded as the peace and order of the city was disrupted.

“What happened?”

“Did the earth crack? There had been rumors for the last few years that the earth would crack and form Earth Trenches that extend deep into the earth core!”

“Save me!”

“Mother...”

At once, the city went into chaos, countless mortals were running around in panic, there was complete chaos.

Dust rumbled, the whole of Inkman City’s houses and city walls started to shine in a halo of light.

Next, Inkman City floated up, it was soaring into the sky.

“Oh my lord! Inkman City is flying, it’s flying?!”

“Were the rumors true? Inkman City is really a mortal Gu House?”

“Oh my heaven! This mortal Gu House is so huge, this is unheard of!”

The mortals were incredibly shocked, they shouted in disbelief.

Right at this time, an immortal killer move flew over, spreading a huge green light that enveloped the whole of Inkman City.

“Sleep, go ahead and sleep for a while.” Fang Yuan smiled lightly as he floated among the clouds.

A male inkman immortal was standing beside him.

He was the Inkman City Lord, King of the Northern Plains inkmen, rank six Gu Immortal Mo Tan Sang.

He was one of the two remaining Gu Immortals of Inkman City.

Due to Fang Yuan’s wisdom path immortal killer move, Inkman City’s mortals fell into deep sleep, the entire city became silent all of a sudden.

Inkman City shrunk and became smaller, a moment later, it entered Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture successfully.

“This Inkman City has eight hundred thousand people, in the past, the legendary inkman Gu Immortal Yi Yan created it and it has developed until today.”

“Central Continent has the number one human city, Emperor City, my Inkman City can be considered half an Emperor City.”

Fang Yuan recruited the inkman Gu Immortals, he would naturally not give up their greatest asset.

“From now on, you will continue to be the Inkman City Lord. Develop it, nurture more inkman Gu Immortals. My sovereign immortal aperture has sufficient space for you to display your skills.” Fang Yuan smiled as he said to Mo Tan Sang.

Mo Tan Sang had an excited expression, he quickly knelt down and paid respects to Fang Yuan: “I, Mo Tan Sang, am willing to assist Lord Fang Yuan, I will do my best to develop Inkman City.”

“Mm, go inside too.” Fang Yuan smiled plainly.

Mo Tan Sang obediently entered Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

He followed Inkman City and landed in Mini Western Desert.

Fang Yuan had chosen the location long ago.

Once Inkman City landed, the dust clouds dispersed, the sleeping mortals started to wake up. Mo Tan Sang gave out orders meticulously, he controlled the situation and maintained Inkman City’s stability.

Mo Tan Sang was feeling very complex now, when facing Fang Yuan, he did not dare to show any impoliteness.

Mo Tan Sang had interacted with Fang Yuan long ago when he was still rank six. Mo Tan Sang had even sold Tai Bai Yun Sheng the nine clouds ring mortal killer move as a favor to befriend them.

Right now, Tai Bai Yun Sheng was dead while Fang Yuan had rank eight cultivation level, his terrifying battle strength and incredible battle records eliminated any sense of rebellion in his heart.

Fang Yuan came to retrieve Inkman City, Mo Tan Sang had learned about it in advance, he cooperated fully during the process.

Fang Yuan smiled internally.

“Mo Tan Sang is indeed a talented person.”

“I remember that in the five hundred years of my previous life, this person led Inkman City and nurtured many inkman Gu Immortals, he cooperated with Ma Hong Yun on equal status. During the five regions chaotic war, not only did he raise his cultivation level, he even expanded Inkman City to hundreds of cities all over Northern Plains!”

“With him governing Inkman City and without any rival forces in Mini Western Desert, his future prospects are very bright.”

Mo Tan Sang was a talented leader. Not only did he have unique foresight and courage to take resolute actions, he could also bow and submit when necessary, he was not someone who could be belittled.

As long as he had a chance, he would turn around the situation and create miracles for himself.

In this aspect, he was like a weaker Wu Yong. But because of his variant human identity, he did not have a good cultivation environment, he had always been troubled by his circumstances.

As long as he had a chance, his development would not be restricted to this.

Fang Yuan was not worried about his growth, he was happy to see it happen.

This was the magnanimity of an expert, this was Fang Yuan’s confidence in himself.

No matter how Mo Tan Sang grew, Fang Yuan was confident in controlling and manipulating him for his own use.

There was actually some risk in relocating Inkman City.

Heavenly Court might have tried to ambush him during this process. If Fairy Zi Wei deduced the origins of the participating inkman Gu Immortals, knowing that they were from Inkman City, she might realize that Fang Yuan would go after Inkman City.

In this case, even if Heavenly Court did nothing, as long as Fairy Zi Wei told this news to Longevity Heaven, they would also cause Fang Yuan great problems.

But the lucky thing was, even after Fang Yuan obtained Inkman City, there had been no problems, it was smooth sailing.

Fang Yuan’s main body quickly left while his time path clone stayed with Lang Ya land spirit.

The Long Hair refinement path formation was currently operating.

Lang Ya land spirit controlled it personally and reported to Fang Yuan’s clone: “In about a month’s time, the seal of Lang Ya’s origin core will be fully removed.”

Fang Yuan nodded lightly, observing the formation.

Every immortal aperture, be it blessed land or grotto-heaven, would have an immortal aperture origin core.

The immortal aperture origin core was the foundation of the immortal aperture, the base of it all.

Developing the immortal aperture, annexing other immortal apertures, it would strengthen one’s own immortal aperture origin core.

When the immortal aperture origin core is damaged or drawn out, the painstakingly developed immortal aperture would reverse its progression, the space would shrink and the primeval energy would dwindle, lifeforms within would die en masse.

The immortal aperture origin core was like a spirit spring, Gu Immortals were drawing immortal essence from the origin core itself.

Lang Ya immortal aperture was once a rank eight grotto-heaven, the immortal aperture origin core was a milky-white lump.

After Long Hair Ancestor died, Lang Ya heavenly spirit could barely resist the rank eight calamities and tribulations, after spending countless years, he found a solution.

The heavenly spirit used a refinement path killer move to seal the Lang Ya origin core, its rank fell and became a red colored rank seven origin core.

Lang Ya heavenly spirit thus became Lang Ya land spirit.

But precisely so, the future calamities and tribulations that Lang Ya immortal aperture faced were at rank seven.

Fang Yuan was rank eight now, but it was a fake rank eight. He had enough dao marks but his immortal aperture origin core was still the red origin core.

Only after Lang Ya’s origin core gets unsealed and returns to being the milky-white rank eight origin core would Fang Yuan become a true rank eight Gu Immortal. After annexing and fusing with it, his immortal aperture would become a grotto-heaven, it would start producing white litchi immortal essence.

This method of sealing the origin core and lowering the grade of the immortal aperture was extremely amazing, it had a huge significance!

During normal times, most Gu Immortals would die from calamities and tribulations, Hu Immortal was one of such cases, she died from the blue charm lightning shadow calamity, leaving behind Hu Immortal blessed land.

If one could use this method to lower their rank by one, the Gu Immortal would be able to deal with calamities and tribulations more easily, they can even accumulate dao marks and not fear that they cannot match the strength of the calamities and tribulations.

Fang Yuan obtained this method, he liked it a lot, he praised Lang Ya land spirit about it for a long time.

But Lang Ya land spirit told him instead: “I am just mimicking, my main body obtained this method from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, while Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable obtained this from Limitless Demon Venerable’s inheritance. This killer move was originally a rule path killer move, named ‘one step back’. Afterwards, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable modified it extensively, creating the space path killer move ‘sea and sky expands’. I am merely turning it into a refinement path version, it cannot be considered a modification or improvement, I am merely mimicking. Thus, I could not bring myself to give it a name, I fused the former two names together and called it — One Step Back, Sea and Sky Expands.”

Fang Yuan heard this and sighed, to think that this method had such a long and impressive history.

Immortal killer move — One Step Back, Sea and Sky Expands!

Very evidently, this was a support move to manage the immortal aperture, it did not have any offensive power.

But its value and worth was immeasurable! If this was leaked out, the entire Gu Immortal world would benefit, the number of Gu Immortals in this world would surge by many times, even tens of times!

From this aspect, Fang Yuan could see the immense talent and strength of Limitless Demon Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

With this method, Limitless Demon Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable could easily accumulate dao marks and pass tribulations without problems.

This method broke the norm of the Gu Immortal cultivation world, it removed the Gu Immortal’s pressure from calamities and tribulations, they would not need to risk their lives, they could deal with this without any pressure.

“This means that Limitless Demon Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable could accumulate dao marks on par with rank nine before becoming venerable.” Fang Yuan said this sentence.

But Lang Ya land spirit told him: “Master, you are underestimating the venerables. According to Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, when Limitless Demon Venerable was a Gu Master, he already had Gu Immortal level dao marks. When he reached rank six and became a Gu Immortal, he had peak rank eight Gu Immortal dao marks.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1767 Rank Eight Water Refinement Immortal Gu

Lang Ya land spirit sighed, continuing: “Every venerable is an invincible character, they had unthinkable talent and ability, they cannot be looked at with common sense. Underestimating them is our foolishness, it is an insult towards them!”

Fang Yuan nodded, he thought about the battle in the previous life.

Every venerable’s action could easily change the entire situation, overturning all of the Gu Immortals’ hard work in an instant.

Even though Duke Long was so powerful, against a venerable method, he had absolutely no way to resolve it!

“Purely in terms of dao marks, the difference between rank eight and nine is not that huge. But the truth is, the difference between rank eight and nine is as vast as heaven and earth, it can send someone into despair, this is simply because those are unique individuals.”

“Man is the spirit of all living beings, Gu is the essence of heaven and earth. There are no invincible Gu worms or killer moves, there are only invincible people...”

“Look at Limitless Demon Venerable, he had rank eight level dao marks when he was still rank six, when he reached rank nine, how many dao marks would he have?”

Fang Yuan could not estimate it.

Cultivation logic and common sense were not appropriate on venerables.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable could rebirth countless times, Limitless Demon Venerable had such shocking dao mark numbers, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s plot affected heaven and earth, altering history...

All these venerables were unfathomable.

Or at least, for the current Fang Yuan, that was the case.

In fact, in the battle of Lang Ya, Fang Yuan killed Thunder Ghost True Monarch and Chen Yi, he also stole Feng Jiu Ge’s Fixed Immortal Travel. But what was his greatest gain?

It was that he had expended one of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s methods —

Karma relocation!

In the previous life, Chen Yi had relied on this move to defend Infallible blessed land until the end and stalled for a long time, it made Fang Yuan, Wu Yong, and Bing Sai Chuan lose their final opportunity to turn the situation around.

“Even though I expended the killer move karma relocation in advance, who knows how many methods these venerables have left behind!”

“Maybe due to the influence of my rebirth, even more venerable methods might be triggered.”

“By just relying on my rebirth advantage, I will become stronger than my previous life through constant accumulation. But that is not assuring enough, who knows when a venerable’s method will be triggered at a crucial moment?”

“To destroy fate Gu, I alone am not enough, I need to obtain some venerable methods to play safe.”

Fang Yuan analyzed in his mind.

A few days later.

Southern Border, Plunder Shadow Earth Trench.

This was once Shadow Sect’s base, Fang Yuan had stayed here for some time. Afterwards, when Southern Border’s Gu Immortals attacked and besieged him, Fang Yuan self-detonated a large number of Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, forming dream realms that stalled them while he escaped successfully.

As a result, a large number of dream realms were left behind, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals chose to set up a formation here to observe and research on the dream realms.

Fang Yuan came here silently.

He used a refinement path killer move, a drizzle started on the formation around these Southern Border Gu Immortals.

The formation activated to resist the rain.

“Who is attacking us?”

“Hmph, this formation is impenetrable!”

“That’s right, nobody can even dream of breaking through.”

The main Gu Immortals defending this place were Yang San Mu, Chi Qiu, and Xia Fan, they immediately became alert after the mysterious attack.

Soon, they found Fang Yuan easily.

He did not conceal himself, in fact, using this immortal killer move would cause his aura to surge and burst out, he could not hide it.

Fang Yuan had only seen one person who could perfectly conceal his killer move’s aura, that was Wu Yong.

However, Fang Yuan still used familiar face to change his appearance.

If he used his true appearance, wouldn’t these defending Gu Immortals be scared to death?

“It’s a rank seven Gu Immortal! We are not sure who, but he has Southern Border aura, he must be a secluded cultivator.” Within the formation, Xia Fan could not tell that it was Fang Yuan, he started to guess.

By now, Lang Ya’s origin core had been completely unsealed, Fang Yuan annexed it and became a true rank eight Gu Immortal.

But he purposely disguised his aura to be at rank seven.

His familiar face killer move had been modified extensively during the final moments of the previous life, right now, none of Southern Border’s Gu Immortals could discover the truth.

In order to prevent an expanding ink effect and to maintain his rebirth advantage, Fang Yuan still chose to do the same thing as in his previous life, he was still going to attack this defensive formation.

At the same, he concealed his rank eight cultivation level, on one hand, he was guarding against Heavenly Court, on the other hand, he was luring out Southern Border’s Gu Immortals.

According to his previous life’s memories, with this development, Southern Border would organize a group to pursue Fang Yuan. If he exposed his rank eight cultivation level, there would not be just one rank eight Gu Immortal, Xia Cha, coming after him.

It was natural that Fang Yuan pretended to be weak!

The drizzle soon turned into a heavier rain as it penetrated the formation.

Within the formation, Chi Qiu’s expression changed: “What refinement path killer move is this? It can actually refine our formation! This cannot go on anymore.”

Fang Yuan annexed Lang Ya blessed land, he obtained the Long Hair refinement path true inheritance and a large number of Immortal Gu.

There were originally three rank eight Immortal Gu, they were Water Refinement, Forceful Refinement, and Advance Refinement.

All three were refinement path Immortal Gu, when used alone, they had no offensive power, they were all support type.

Among them, forceful refinement Immortal Gu could directly refine the Immortal Gu of others, it was the original core of the Immortal Gu House Refinement Cauldron, but Shadow Sect had stolen it back then. In that battle, rank eight Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus also got damaged, it had fallen to rank seven after that fight.

Rank eight advance refinement Immortal Gu was the core of the Long Hair refinement path formation.

As for rank eight water refinement Immortal Gu, it was hidden within the refinement water. All along, Lang Ya land spirit had been using this Gu and other supplementary Gu worms to form an immortal killer move to convert the refinement path and water path dao marks of Lang Ya blessed land into refinement water.

Lang Ya land spirit’s plan was to accumulate the refinement water and after reaching a certain point, it would become the Refinement Sea!

Refinement Sea was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, once it formed, it would replenish itself unceasingly.

This was a grand plan, it consumed an immense amount of refinement path dao marks, wealth, time and energy.

After Fang Yuan annexed Lang Ya blessed land, he wisely halted this plan, he took out the water refinement Immortal Gu within for his own use.

The killer move that Fang Yuan was using now had rank eight water refinement Immortal Gu as the core. Fang Yuan used many Gu worms to suppress the rank eight aura, disguising it as rank seven.

This was also part of his tactic to express weakness.

“No worry, how can this rank seven killer move break our formation.” Chi Qiu said with a prideful tone.

This formation was created by Chi clan, as a Chi clan Gu Immortal, Chi Qiu was very prideful, he had absolute confidence in his clan’s immortal formation.

“Look, the formation activated, even without us interfering, it can deal with the enemy, this refinement path killer move will end up in failure.” Chi Qiu laughed.

But soon, Chi Qiu’s smile vanished.

The formation had already undergone several changes but no matter what, it could not deal with the refinement path killer move. The rain that was already heavy became a downpour.

The downpour was unceasing, the formation was corroded to a large extent.

There were Gu Immortal reports constantly, they had anxious tones and expressions, because a large number of mortal Gu were refined by the enemy in the rain.

However, this formation could only work on its own at the early stages, unless there was no choice, Gu Immortals could not control it.

This was the lesson that the Southern Border Gu Immortals learned from the battle of Yi Tian Mountain, to prevent outsiders like Fang Yuan from infiltrating and controlling the immortal formation, it was specially designed like this.

Chi Qiu was helpless, he gritted his teeth and said with a look of disbelief: “How can this be? What kind of refinement path killer move is this, my clan’s formation is actually useless against it?!”

Chi Qiu was simply dumbfounded.

Normally speaking, refinement path did not have such a big advantage over formation path.

But Fang Yuan’s formation path attainment was very high!

And most importantly, he was very familiar with this defensive formation.

Even though this formation had caused him a lot of trouble in the previous life, Fang Yuan had threatened and lured Chi Qu You into cooperating afterwards, Chi Qu You became the biggest traitor of Southern Border, he gave the information of this formation over to Fang Yuan.

This pitiful Chi Qiu would never imagine that their formation was completely exposed to the enemy. And the traitor was actually their first supreme elder!

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated, not to mention that Fang Yuan was using a rank eight killer move.

Not long after, the Southern Border Gu Immortals in the formation became anxious as they started pacing around.

“What do we do? What do we do! The enemy’s refinement speed is getting faster!”

“Who is he? Possessing such a killer move, no wonder he attacked so confidently.”

“Their Gu worm refinement speed is getting faster, we cannot keep up. At the final moment, even if we can control the formation, it will be too late.” Chi

Qiu wiped the sweat off his forehead.

“Formation path is useless indeed.” Xia Fan snorted coldly as Chi Qiu stared fiercely.

Xia Fan did not care, looking at Yang San Mu and saying: “The urgent matter now is to send out Gu Immortals to fight, we will disrupt the enemy’s killer move so we can exchange Gu worms in the formation and repair it.”

He was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he had the responsibility to come up with a tactic.

Yang San Mu nodded, he was the leader, he had to stand up now: “Then I will go and deal with the enemy.”

Even though Fang Yuan was mysterious, Yang San Mu had a lot of confidence in himself.

He was a soul path Gu refinement, a renowned rank seven expert in Southern Border. Meanwhile, refinement path was skilled at refining Gu, it was weaker than other paths in other aspects.

Xia Fan had a joyful expression: “With Brother Yang taking action personally, we will definitely kill the enemy and resolve this problem.”

Yang San Mu glanced at him before flying out of the formation.

He approached Fang Yuan: “Come fight!”

“Ugh!” Yang San Mu ended in defeat.

“How can he be this strong?” Yang San Mu was captured.

A moment later, the formation was taken down by Fang Yuan, even though it had a transportation function, Fang Yuan had used a refinement path method to refine it, this method was destroyed from the start.

None of the Gu Immortals guarding the formation escaped, Fang Yuan captured all of them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1768 Chi Qu You“s Anger and Grief

Plunder Shadow Earth Trench’s defensive formation had been destroyed!

Southern Border’s super forces soon noticed this fact.

The righteous path was shaken!

Plunder Shadow Earth Trench’s dream realm was the largest congregation of dream realms other than Yi Tian Mountain in Southern Border.

Any path had its own cultivation resources.

Dream realms were evidently the unique resource for dream path, they contained the profundities of dream path within.

Immortal Yi Yan’s ‘Prophecy of Three Venerables’ had been ingrained in everyone’s hearts. Gu Immortals knew about the future era, it was the era of dream path. Any super force paid huge attention to the dream realms, they were very careful in regards to guarding them.

“Plunder Shadow formation was destroyed too rapidly, who is that culprit?”

“According to the Gu Immortals’ information and our own investigation, there was only one enemy, and he was just a rank seven Gu Immortal.”

“A rank seven Gu Immortal could take down this formation? And with such speed and power?”

“This situation is really bizarre indeed, do you think it is that demon Fang Yuan?”

“That’s unlikely? If it is Fang Yuan, why would he leave those dream realms in Plunder Shadow Earth Trench untouched? He has a method to turn them into bodies after all.”

Different from the previous life, Fang Yuan did not keep the Plunder Shadow Earth Trench’s dream realms, he purposely left them.

This caused Southern Border’s righteous path to start guessing randomly, Fang Yuan’s identity was well concealed.

At once, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals were wondering who that Gu Immortal who attacked the formation was.

Who had the guts to challenge Southern Border’s righteous path?

Who had such methods to destroy a super immortal formation with ease?

What was his purpose? Was he just trying to suppress Southern Border’s righteous path? He had enmity towards the righteous path? Or maybe... he had some gains in dream path, he was making use of the dream realms?

Among all of the Southern Border righteous path forces, the most unhappy one was Chi clan’s first supreme elder — Chi Qu You.

Plunder Shadow Earth Trench’s immortal formation had a secret backdoor, Chi Qu You had left it behind. To prevent the dream realms from getting stolen, he had planned in advance to set that arrangement.

When Fang Yuan attacked the formation, he rapidly sensed it, he hesitated on whether to use this backdoor or not.

After all, he had done that sneakily, if he exposed it now, his reputation in Southern Border’s righteous path would be tarnished.

By the time he sensed something wrong and wanted to use the backdoor, Fang Yuan’s refinement path killer move had already broken it.

Chi Qu You felt gloomy and irritated!

In the previous life, after Fang Yuan exposed his identity and could not destroy the formation in time, Chi Qu You made up his mind and transported himself into the formation secretly.

But in this life, Fang Yuan annexed Lang Ya blessed land, his strength was much higher now at the same time period, Chi Qu You did not have much time to react to this.

The truth was, he had a chance but he hesitated, he did not make use of it.

Of course, even if he used the backdoor to arrive before Fang Yuan, he would not be a problem.

Soon, Chi Qu You's irritation got worse.

Out of nowhere, rumors started to spread.

They said that the formation was so easily broken without giving the righteous path any time to send reinforcements because Chi clan had a traitor!

Precisely because this traitor exposed the formation's secret, the mysterious Gu Immortal could easily destroy it.

"This is slander! These are baseless rumors! My Chi clan will definitely investigate properly, all these people will face our judgment!" Chi Qu You reacted quickly, he immediately made an announcement, displaying his stance.

But the rumors spread even quicker, lots of different stories emerged, some were clearly fake news while others were quite reasonable, the righteous path Gu Immortals became quite suspicious.

Chi Qu You was extremely angry, he had been feeling gloomy the last few days.

These rumors were attacking him, his reputation that was built up over a long time was starting to fall rapidly.

"How can my Chi clan divulge information? The mastermind behind this is truly vicious!" Chi Qu You stood up and made his point.

He felt regret now.

Had he known this, he would have taken the risk to transport himself over last time.

"Even if that backdoor is exposed and I suffer criticism, I will at least be able to capture the mysterious culprit!" Chi Qu You was very confident in himself because he felt that the enemy was a rank seven Gu Immortal.

Regarding this guess, other than the evidence present, Chi Qu You also had his own train of thought, if this was a rank eight, they could attack directly, why was there a need to hide themselves and act mysteriously?

Some righteous path Gu Immortals consoled him and expressed their trust towards Chi clan.

While some righteous path Gu Immortals, like the ones from Yang clan which had always been opposing Chi clan, had much worse tones.

"It is not that hard to believe that it was an inside job."

"Our Yang clan had terrible losses! Yang San Mu is a rank seven expert! He lost too quickly, that was not normal. Evidently, someone leaked his information."

There were even Yang clan Gu Immortals blaming Chi Qu You directly: "Since Lord Chi Qu You is claiming innocence now, how do you explain why the leaked contents of the immortal formation are all accurate?"

Chi Qu You had nothing to say, he was also troubled over this.

However, he had to speak righteously and keep a firm attitude: “There is no need to explain this! The formation’s details are not just known by my Chi clan. In terms of suspicion, any super clan involved in this has a possibility of being a traitor.”

Admitting that Chi clan had a traitor was too damaging to their reputation, Chi Qu You swore to himself that he would never admit it no matter what!

“If a traitor really appears, I will pull out their tendons and rip their skin, I will crush every bone in their body!” Chi Qu You cursed.

He hated the mysterious enemy but he also held huge grudges towards Chi clan’s possible traitor!

The laughable thing was, Chi clan really had a traitor, it was himself!

Of course, that was the previous life’s matter.

Even Chi Qu You had no idea this would happen.

In other words, his circumstances were all caused by himself.

But no matter how Chi Qu You defended himself or pushed his stand, rumors about Chi clan continued to spread and intensify.

“Looking at this situation, it seems that other than the enemy who attacked, the other Southern Border forces are also adding fuel to the fire. Yang clan is definitely involved.”

Chi Qu You was very angry, even with his rank eight cultivation level and formation path great grandmaster attainment, he was without options in this situation.

In the rules of the righteous path, cultivation level was not everything.

“There is only one way now, I need to find the instigator!”

“That’s right, as long as I can capture them and unveil the truth, I can get the whole of Southern Border’s righteous path to shut up!”

Chi Qu You almost wanted to shout: “Return my innocence, return my reputation!”

But if he really found the culprit, who knows what expression or idea he would have.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1769 Variant Human Race Inheritances

Chi Qu You was so old but he had to manage Chi clan’s affairs tirelessly. For the great era, he even had to work hard to nurture his lacking inheritor.

The truth was, Chi Qu You did not have it easy at all, and these rumors were still trying to defame him!

Chi Qu You was very angry and upset, he gritted his teeth as he waited for Fang Yuan to appear again.

As the culprit, Fang Yuan had been living peacefully these last days, he had a very fulfilling time.

He was managing his immortal aperture.

The immortal aperture was the foundation of a Gu Immortal, if the immortal aperture management was poor, no matter how strong a Gu Immortal was, they would achieve nothing much.

Lang Ya blessed land had completely integrated into the sovereign immortal aperture, after its origin core was unsealed, Fang Yuan quickly annexed it.

Fang Yuan let Lang Ya land spirit do the work of changing the variant human Gu Immortals’ alliance agreement. The new alliance agreement was strict and had strong binding terms, it ensured that Fang Yuan had the supreme authority and status, all of the variant human Gu Immortals were his subordinates and vassals.

There was a rule, all of the variant humans will contribute their immortal apertures into the sovereign immortal aperture after they die.

Thus, Fang Yuan’s grotto-heaven gained many new blessed lands. These blessed lands belonged to the unlucky variant humans who had died at Chen Yi’s hands during the battle of Lang Ya blessed land.

The hairy man Gu Immortals were shocked at this but Lang Ya land spirit had great prestige, along with Sixth Hair’s cooperation, they quickly accepted the fact.

The other variant human Gu Immortals were unwilling to do so but with Fang Yuan’s strength, they could not resist, they could only accept it.

Of course, Fang Yuan was an old schemer, his political manipulation was not worse than Wu Yong.

He also set a rule for himself in the alliance agreement, he would fully nurture the variant humans without any discrimination. When the alliance agreement became effective, he gave these variant human Gu Immortals a lot of benefits immediately.

In fact, he even secretly sent a portion of the variant human Gu Immortals to the stone lotus island secretly, they were able to enjoy the effects of future self and gain greater knowledge.

The variant human Gu Immortals were extremely shocked, they realized now that Fang Yuan was actually backed by the most mysterious venerable in history, Red Lotus Demon Venerable!

As a result, they lost all thoughts of betrayal!

Of course, Xue Er, Bing Zhuo and others were not given the chance to use future self. According to the ink effect, Fang Yuan had already killed them in the previous life, they did not exist in the lower stream of the River of Time, they had no future.

It was easy to deceive them, Fang Yuan said that the stone lotus island had a limit, future self killer move needed time to accumulate and recover.

The alliance agreement stated that they needed to be honest with Fang Yuan, but he could choose to keep secrets from them after all.

Of course, this was not fair.

But with Fang Yuan’s use of the carrot and stick, these variant human Gu Immortals could only lower their heads and accept their fate.

The truth was, Fang Yuan indeed wanted to nurture these variant humans.

There were several points.

Firstly, the more variant humans there were, the more lifespan Gu would be produced, while Fang Yuan had no concerns about this now, he could start preparing early.

Secondly, Fang Yuan was starting an attempt to comprehend human path. The more humans or variant humans he raised, the more helpful it would be towards his human path comprehension.

And thirdly, the racial inheritances of the variant humans.

Back then, when the human Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables emerged, suppressing all ten variant human races and slaughtering them, the variant humans had little hope towards the future, it was full of despair. The variant humans realized that this was bad, all of them worked together to create their racial inheritances that contained the most valuable possessions of their own race, hiding them for their future generations, to leave hope for the future.

According to the understanding of the variant humans, fate Gu was part of the Heavenly Dao, it took away surpluses while replenishing deficits, they acknowledged that there was the decree ‘humanity is supreme’, but this decree would not last forever, right!

The variant humans were not wrong in this regard, but they had not expected Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to be so brazen as to become one with the Dao.

This resulted in the long lasting rule of humanity, the variant humans were stunned, they were suppressed until now.

But this was advantageous to Fang Yuan too.

According to the information that Lang Ya land spirit had:

When the number of variant human mortals and Gu Immortals reach a certain number, their racial inheritances would appear to them, it would help them grow and develop.

In history, the variant humans had never risen up, so these racial inheritances were mostly preserved.

According to Lang Ya land spirit’s guess, the racial inheritance of hairy men was the Infallible inheritance!

Infallible blessed land was at Hairy Foot Mountain, even though Heavenly Court found it, they had great difficulty in trying to obtain it. The Heavenly Court which had immense foundation and geniuses were simply without options against Infallible blessed land.

Eventually, they relied on human path methods to try and extract a part of Infallible blessed land’s wealth. But no Heavenly Court Gu Immortal had actually managed to enter this secluded blessed land. Nobody knew what the inside of Infallible blessed land looked like.

In the previous life, even though Fang Yuan destroyed Hairy Foot Mountain, Infallible blessed land was still intact.

All these reasons showed how profound and special Infallible blessed land was, this proved that the variant human racial inheritances were extremely extraordinary and mysterious.

This was also why Fang Yuan had not gone to Hairy Foot Mountain yet even though he had Fixed Immortal Travel and its modified killer move.

According to his previous life’s memories, at this point in time, Heavenly Court had not set up the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation at Hairy Foot Mountain.

Despite this, even if Fang Yuan tried to launch a sneak attack using Fixed Immortal Travel, he could not do anything to Infallible blessed land.

“Heavenly Court seems to have found a way to destroy Infallible blessed land, but I do not have any for now.”

“Even if I do, would Fairy Zi Wei not guard against that? Sneak attacking it is simply too risky!”

After thinking about it deeply, Fang Yuan gave up on attacking Hairy Foot Mountain.

This idea was too risky, it underestimated his enemy’s intelligence, it also went against Fang Yuan’s vigilant nature.

After annexing Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan’s gains were huge.

Let alone anything else, he benefited the most from information.

The variant human racial inheritances were the most obvious example.

Lang Ya blessed land had simply too long of a history, it had existed for over three hundred thousand years.

How long had it been since Fang Yuan became immortal? Even with the five hundred years of his previous life, he had not reached six hundred years.

Lang Ya land spirit knew a lot of historical secrets, before being annexed, he would not tell Fang Yuan everything, but now, he kept no secrets to himself.

Several days later.

Southern Border, above contact heart river bank.

Jade green light flickered weakly, before green bubbles started to appear.

Rank seven killer move aura quickly spread and permeated to the surroundings.

“This aura?” It was a rank six Gu Immortal from Chi clan who defended contact heart river bank, he controlled the formation as he sensed a killer move aura.

Before he acted, these jade green bubbles popped on their own.

Each popping bubble gave off a thick green light, it spread like flowing water.

A large number of bubbles vanished, in their place was a thick lump of jade green light.

The green jade light was extremely bright, it gave off a radiance that could not be looked at intently.

The strong light appeared and faded just as quickly, when the green light vanished entirely, a person appeared in the sky.

He wore a green robe, his complexion was as clear as jade, his nose was tall and he was handsome to the point of looking like a peerless beauty. His skin was white as snow, his eyes were dark like the abyss, he had long luscious blackhair that resembled a waterfall, hanging straight down to his waist.

The rank six Gu Immortal from Chi clan defending this place saw the person’s appearance and his mouth opened wide, his heart was pounding as he felt a chill, his body broke out in cold sweat: “Fang, Fang Yuan?!”

Ever since Fang Yuan escaped from Thunder Ghost True Monarch and sold her three rib bones in treasure yellow heaven, his reputation surpassed Feng Jiu Ge, he was publicly recognized as the number one rank seven expert, he had the power to fight rank eight!

After the battle of Lang Ya blessed land, Heavenly Court lost. Even though Fairy Zi Wei concealed Chen Yi’s and Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s deaths, she took responsibility and announced the failure of Heavenly Court to invade Lang Ya blessed land to the public.

Feng Jiu Ge was pursued by Fang Yuan, half of his Immortal Gu were stolen, she had placed the video of this in treasure yellow heaven.

Thus, everyone knew now that Fang Yuan not only had rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel, he even annexed Lang Ya blessed land and possibly had a method to steal Immortal Gu!

After defeating Feng Jiu Ge, Fang Yuan’s reputation stabilized and even improved, he was a common topic among countless Gu Immortals.

Chi clan’s rank six Gu Immortal saw the great demon Fang Yuan appear, why would he dare to stay any longer?

“Faster, faster, faster!” He activated the formation, teleporting away for his dear life.

Fang Yuan was still savoring the immortal killer move he used earlier — Jade Flow Pearl.

This killer move used rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel as the core and almost all of Fang Yuan’s current space path Immortal Gu, a few refinement path Immortal Gu, and a lot of supplementary mortal Gu to construct.

Fang Yuan annexed Lang Ya blessed land and became rank eight, his dao marks increased immensely, just the rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel alone could not teleport him. Only by creating a killer move and increasing its power could he barely be moved.

In the previous life, he had also created a space path killer move with Fixed Immortal Travel as the core to transport him, when having rank eight cultivation level.

But jade flow pearl was different from the previous life’s killer move.

The previous life’s Fixed Immortal Travel killer move was a space path killer move, while this current move was a compound killer move of space path and refinement path.

One of the reasons was that the Fixed Immortal Travel killer move in his previous life was created after Fang Yuan extorted Southern Border’s righteous path and obtained many specific space path rank seven Immortal Gu. But now, he had not ambushed Xia Cha yet, not to mention the rest of Southern Border’s righteous path.

Fang Yuan’s space path Immortal Gu mostly came from Lang Ya blessed land’s inventory now, most were rank six and they were not very compatible.

Thus, Fang Yuan used refinement path Immortal Gu to modify the killer move intensively.

With the power of refinement path, Fang Yuan’s refinement path dao marks were no longer a burden to the teleportation.

This was the advantage of compound killer moves.

But compound killer moves were much harder to deduce, Fang Yuan could deduce it quickly because he had quasi-supreme refinement path attainment level and the light of wisdom.

Fang Yuan put away the thoughts in his mind for now as he looked down.

For a range of hundreds of li, there were mountains and forests. But below him, there was a flat land that was about half a square kilometer large, it was covered in smoke and fog.

Fang Yuan pointed as dragons flew out, roaring with a grand and fierce aura.

It was immortal killer move — Myriad Dragon!

Fang Yuan refined myriad self Immortal Gu successfully, it took very little time to activate myriad dragon now.

The myriad dragons rushed into the fog and smoke, easily destroying the defensive method below.

Similar to the previous life, the defending Chi clan Gu Immortal had already escaped.

Fang Yuan smiled, this was within his expectations, he had purposely exposed his identity for this.

In the previous life, he had learned about the cowardice of this Chi clan Gu Immortal, this time around, he achieved a great effect by doing the same action.

Of course, Fang Yuan had to expose his identity regardless.

Because he used Fixed Immortal Travel, and also because of the killer moves he was using, there was no use in trying to conceal his identity.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1770 Chi Qu You Convinces Himself

A shallow deep blue lake surrounded by silent verdant mountains. Around the lake were pure white round rocks, they stacked at the river bank.

This was a mid sized resource point of Southern Border's Chi clan— contact heart river bank.

Fang Yuan placed all the Gu worms he obtained into his immortal aperture.

There were more than three thousand rank five contact heart Gu, fifty thousand rank four, and over a million were rank three and below.

Next, he used strength path Immortal Gu Pulling Water.

Similar to the previous life, Pulling Water was currently rank six.

After a moment, the river water was pulled up like silk by a formless force, before being moved into Fang Yuan's immortal aperture.

This contact heart river bank was a special area filled with wisdom path dao marks, there were earth path, water path, wood path, and other dao marks as foundation, but they paled in quantity compared to wisdom path.

Fang Yuan took away the water which had dense wisdom path dao marks, but most of it remained in the surrounding soil.

Fang Yuan was without options regarding this.

He lacked methods to pull up the ground, this was not mortal soil and it required at least peak rank seven earth path methods. One had to overcome the wisdom path dao marks in the soil first.

And the method had to be delicate, it could not destroy the wisdom path dao marks in the soil.

If the wisdom path dao marks were destroyed, the value of the soil would drop. This was like smearing a world class painting, it would have no value remaining.

Specific methods were required to plunder and move resources in the outside world, but destroying them was easier.

It was like Heavenly Court's attempt to gain Infallible blessed land. Heavenly Court had a method to destroy Infallible blessed land, but to extract its success dao marks, they had to spend a lot of effort and use human path methods, the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention expended a lot of time and effort.

Fang Yuan's appearance in plundering contact heart river bank soon reached Chi Qu You.

Chi Qu You was still slightly hopeful at first: "Is the information true?"

Soon, his hopes were completely crushed.

Because there was an immortal killer move resembling Fixed Immortal Travel as well as Fang Yuan's signature myriad dragon killer move, those were concrete evidence.

"Why did this Fang Yuan appear at contact heart river bank?" Chi Qu You's eyes twitched: "Does he need a large number of contact heart Gu?"

Even though Fang Yuan had rank seven cultivation level, he was not just a normal rank seven, he could fight rank eight, he was unique!

Chi Qu You thought about the video in treasure yellow heaven: "Now that Fang Yuan has re-obtained rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel, and also apparently has a method to steal Immortal Gu, if he tries to find trouble with my Chi clan, it would be a problem."

Chi Qu You sighed internally.

He had to admit, Fang Yuan was a huge problem!

Fixed Immortal Travel allowed him to travel with ease, only specific methods could restrict him.

Fang Yuan also had rank eight battle strength, most of Chi clan’s Gu Immortals could not fight him, Chi Qu You himself or a rank seven Immortal Gu House was needed. That way, even as a super force, Chi clan only had limited resources to deal with him.

“As for the theft path method, it should not be Fang Yuan’s own ability.”

“Right now, Fang Yuan has not shown any method in this aspect, while Long Hair Ancestor had refined Gu with Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable back then. Lang Ya blessed land has a Thieving Heaven true inheritance, Fang Yuan could resist Heavenly Court because he made use of Lang Ya blessed land’s foundation.”

“Fang Yuan annexed Lang Ya blessed land, he would still need some time before he can master this Thieving Heaven true inheritance.”

Chi Qu You evaluated.

He felt that he was really unlucky recently, Fang Yuan had actually targeted his Chi clan out of all the clans.

Wasn’t this bad luck?

Even though Fang Yuan gave Chi Qu You a huge headache, he had to counterattack.

Chi clan’s benefits, their righteous path status, and the pride of a rank eight Gu Immortal, these reasons forced him to go and defeat Fang Yuan quickly.

Chi Qu You led the expedition personally, controlling Great Space Temple and traveling towards contact heart river bank as soon as possible.

The formation was destroyed, it was a ravaged sight, everything was in ruins.

A vast number of Gu worms were gone, contact heart river bank had lost all vitality.

The river water was also gone, it had completely dried up, it was truly a sad sight.

Even the rocks around the bank were missing, Fang Yuan took literally everything from this place!

Chi Qu You had an ashen expression, the other Chi clan Gu Immortals started scolding Fang Yuan and cursing his eighteen generations of ancestors.

“This demon is too daring!”

“This is a mid size resource point of our clan, now that it is plundered, it might not recover even after a few years of time.”

“Sigh... there is no point in cursing Fang Yuan’s eighteen generations of ancestors, he is an otherworldly demon, he killed all of his ancestors in this world with his own two hands.”

Chi clan’s Gu Immortals gradually stopped scolding as they frowned at this terrible situation.

Contact heart river bank was destroyed but its foundation remained, Fang Yuan could not bring the soil here with him.

But the problem was Fang Yuan himself!

He was still alive, would he show up again? Would he target Chi clan again?

Chi clan did not understand even at this point, why did Fang Yuan choose contact heart river bank?

“Wait, earlier, the mysterious Gu Immortal who attacked Plunder Shadow Earth Trench and destroyed the formation, was it Fang Yuan?” Someone suggested.

“Hmm, it is very likely. They are both rank seven Gu Immortals with extraordinary battle strength. Fang Yuan also had high formation path attainment, he can definitely destroy both formations. Furthermore, he annexed Lang Ya blessed land and has refinement path Immortal Gu now, didn’t that mysterious Gu Immortal use refinement path methods?”

“But if that mysterious Gu Immortal is Fang Yuan, why would he conceal his own appearance when attacking Plunder Shadow Earth Trench? This time when attacking our clan’s contact heart river bank, he chose to expose his own identity?”

Many of Chi clan’s Gu Immortals turned their heads in suspicion.

They simply could not understand why.

Firstly, there was no evidence that linked the mysterious Gu Immortal to Fang Yuan directly. Secondly, Fang Yuan’s motive in attacking contact heart river bank was unknown, nobody knew what he was up to.

“First supreme elder, what do we do now?” Chi clan’s Gu Immortals did not have any answers, they asked Chi Qu You.

Chi Qu You’s expression eased, he had been screaming internally long ago, he also wanted to know what Fang Yuan was planning!

By the time they arrived, Fang Yuan was gone already.

Chi Qu You was in a really awkward and passive situation.

But on the surface, he had to maintain the dignity of Chi clan’s leader: “Don’t panic, investigate the scene and search for evidence. Even if Fang Yuan escapes now, our Chi clan will remember this, he will pay us back a hundredfold in the future.”

“Yes, lord.” Chi clan’s Gu Immortals answered.

The huge Great Space Temple floated in mid air, not concealing its aura as it displayed Chi clan’s authority in full view.

A while later, all the Gu Immortals returned with a look of embarrassment.

Fang Yuan had done a good job in cleaning up the scene, no clues of value were left.

Even if they had clues, could they deduce anything about him?

Chi Qu You bore no hope himself, even Heavenly Court failed to deal with Fang Yuan. Chi clan specialized in formation path, they were weak in information path and wisdom path aspects.

“If our Chi clan wants to regain reputation, we will need to spend a lot on information and clues, before hiring a wisdom path great expert to deduce him. After that, we need to set an ambush, go after Fang Yuan and fight him...”

“Sigh.” Chi Qu You sighed internally.

Thinking about the process, he felt a little dejected.

The price and risks were too high while the gains were minimal.

Only rank eight Gu Immortals that were wisdom path or information path great experts could handle Fang Yuan. People like that would require a huge amount before they would help Chi clan with this matter.

And after finding Fang Yuan, Chi clan would need to fight him, it was questionable if they could actually kill him!

Thunder Ghost True Monarch went after Fang Yuan and got three of her rib bones sold in treasure yellow heaven. Heavenly Court wanted to invade Lang Ya blessed land and it ended up being annexed by him, Feng Jiu Ge’s Immortal Gu were even stolen by Fang Yuan, while Fairy Zi Wei had to openly announce that they lost the battle.

What did Chi clan have?

Yes, it was a super force, but could it compare to Heavenly Court?

Even Heavenly Court had no options against Fang Yuan, even though Fairy Zi Wei hated him to the core, so what?

“Even though Fang Yuan is a single person, he cultivates many paths, he has no clear weaknesses. He is a cunning and crafty person, he is ruthless and devious, even Wu Yong was toyed around by him. Earlier, even when Southern Border’s righteous path went after him, he still escaped. I want to go after him with just Chi clan? Hehe.”

Chi Qu You felt very angry but also helpless and sad.

Fang Yuan had grown too quickly, Chi Qu You felt extremely deep wariness towards him.

“Even though Fang Yuan had rank seven cultivation level, he is more troublesome than most rank eight Gu Immortals. Ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals cultivate one path, they do not have deep wisdom path attainment or Fixed Immortal Travel.”

“If Fang Yuan can stop now and not go after Chi clan’s resources, I should let this go.”

Chi Qu You sighed in his heart.

He had decided to give up.

Contact heart river bank was destroyed but its foundation remained, it could still be developed.

Or rather, in arrogant terms, it was just a mid sized resource point, Chi clan could afford to lose it!

“Of course, on the surface, we need to be very angry and upset, we will speak righteously and create a commotion, we cannot ruin the reputation of Chi clan."

"But secretly, I need to restrain my Gu Immortals and keep on guard, we will mainly cultivate and maintain our resources."

"If during this period, Fang Yuan targets the resources of other clans, that would be great!"

A moment later, Chi Qu You made up his mind, he convinced himself on this plan.

Making a rank eight Gu Immortal lower his head alongside his super force, it was not easy!

But Chi Qu You was a wise leader, he knew the big picture. There was no benefit in challenging this demon, if Chi clan mobilized everyone, he could give Fang Yuan huge problems indeed, he could even threaten his life.

But Chi clan would pay an immense price, it would be too much to handle!

If this situation happened in Northern Plains, the entire tribe might be riled up, they would attack directly without thinking!

But in Southern Border... isn't it better to live calmly and peacefully?

Even if they lose a mid sized resource point, Chi clan still has others, and even countless small sized, large sized, and giant resource points.

They could live very well.

They might lose some reputation but their foundation would be unaffected.

The nail that sticks out gets hammered down. If Chi clan went after Fang Yuan with full force and went down with him in flames, the other super forces would benefit and take the advantage, what would they do then?

Chi Qu You let out a breath of air, he wanted to vent out all of his anger and frustrations.

Soon, he calmed down.

"Report—! Fang Yuan has appeared at our clan's cloud bamboo mountain range, he destroyed the formation and our two Gu Immortals could not resist him, right now, Fang Yuan is scavenging for all sorts of resources, among which is a newly formed wild wood path Immortal Gu!"

Chi Qu You heard this and his expression froze.

His heart that had just calmed down instantly became filled with overwhelming rage.

"Fang Yuan, screw your entire lineage of ancestors!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1771 Mature Bamboo Immortal Gu

Cloud bamboo mountain range.

Fang Yuan floated in the air, an immortal level enslavement path killer move was shot out everywhere.

Pew pew pew!

Cloud foxes and other creatures struggled intensely, they had a painful expression as they growled. But soon, their resistance weakened as they stopped moving, they stayed on the spot and lowered their heads as they became Fang Yuan’s enslaved beasts.

Fang Yuan smiled as he opened his immortal aperture’s entrance, the cloud foxes went inside obediently.

Not just the cloud foxes, even other lifeforms could not escape from Fang Yuan’s demonic claws.

Cloud bamboo mountain range was a huge large sized resource point, it was filled with dense dao marks, it was normal for desolate beasts and plants to grow here, even ancient desolate beasts could grow.

Fang Yuan quickly scavenged the area, with his previous life’s memories, he clearly recalled the location of these desolate beasts and plants.

Soon, he obtained seven desolate beast cloud foxes, a total of eleven desolate plants of three species, cloud qi root, white hair root, and spear tip bamboo. The thing that made Fang Yuan the happiest was the quantity of a rank seven immortal material, cloud soil, it was huge.

“I have a lot of time left!” Fang Yuan calculated his time.

In the previous life, he had spent a lot of time just getting these resources. But now, because it was his second time, he obtained everything rapidly and efficiently, he saved a lot of time.

“In the previous life, I only searched through briefly, this mountain range has a lot of untouched places.”

Fang Yuan explored the foreign area and soon found a desolate beast cloud fox.

He was about to use an enslavement path killer move to suppress it when Lang Ya land spirit’s voice resounded from the immortal aperture: “Master, I have already obtained the name of this new wood path Immortal Gu, it is a rank six Immortal Gu known as Mature Bamboo!”

Gu are the essence of heaven and earth, undeniably, mature bamboo Immortal Gu was the greatest treasure on this cloud bamboo mountain range.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan was obstructed by cloud bamboo mountain range’s formation, he could not make it in time. The two Chi clan Gu Immortals defending this place were resolute, while escaping, they destroyed the newly formed wild Immortal Gu.

But now, Fang Yuan noticed this and targeted the formation’s weakness immediately, destroying it and gaining control over that newly formed wild Immortal Gu.

The two Chi clan Gu Immortals were stunned, the formation was destroyed too quickly!

This formation could block Fang Yuan for a while in the previous life, but it was fixed and since Fang Yuan already destroyed it once, he understood its concept, he could easily destroy it this time.

After getting it for a while, the wild Immortal Gu that was newly formed was refined by him on the spot.

Immortal Gu Mature Bamboo, it was the size of an average person’s thumb. It was long and flat, at the tip of its head was a cylinder that covered its entire head, its eyes were in a hemispherical shape.

Fang Yuan played with it in his hand, its body and wings were very soft, it had six armor plates on its stomach, its tail glowed with a dim green light.

All in all, this mature bamboo Immortal Gu was a firefly that shined with green light.

“Not bad, this Immortal Gu is useful to me.” Fang Yuan had a joyful expression.

Fang Yuan killed Chen Yi and obtained his soul, he had been soul searching.

Chen Yi was the first supreme elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect, in his youth, he had obtained a Genesis Lotus true inheritance — Karma Divine Tree. During the battle in Lang Ya blessed land, he obtained another Genesis Lotus true inheritance — Karma Relocation.

Thus, Fang Yuan had two Genesis Lotus true inheritances now!

But the foundation of karma relocation was karma divine tree.

The core Immortal Gu of these two killer moves, other than the two rule path Immortal Gu Cause and Effect, were some wood path Gu.

Chen Yi died, his phantom aperture vanished, he had already destroyed all his Gu worms, Fang Yuan had to collect these Gu worms if he wanted to cultivate the Genesis Lotus true inheritances.

The mortal Gu were simple, but Immortal Gu needed preparation.

Mature bamboo Immortal Gu was a wood path Gu suitable for his Genesis Lotus true inheritance cultivation.

By the time Chi Qu You arrived at cloud bamboo mountain range using Great Space Temple, Fang Yuan was already gone!

Chi clan’s Gu Immortals looked at cloud bamboo mountain range in a daze.

Many people opened their eyes widely, showing deep disbelief: “It is completely barren, this is cloud bamboo mountain range? What happened to our flourishing cloud bamboo mountain range?”

An old Gu Immortal almost coughed blood as he said shakily: “I had once stayed here to develop the mountain range, I spent so much effort but this thief Fang Yuan took it all! Fang Yuan, you demon, I will never let you off!”

Someone thought about it and said solemnly: “We planted normal cloud bamboos here on a huge scale, only specific wood path methods can extract them so quickly. Fang Yuan came totally prepared!”

In the previous life, Fang Yuan lacked wood path methods, eventually, a vast amount of ordinary cloud bamboos were left on the mountain, he could only take the desolate plants.

But this time, with the advantage of rebirth, he came amply prepared.

Fang Yuan had purposely designed a wood path immortal killer move to collect the cloud bamboos!

His wood path attainment level was not high but with the light of wisdom, he could still create a rank six killer move targeting mortal materials very easily.

He annexed Lang Ya blessed land, he obtained several wood path Immortal Gu, they were all useful in this regard.

Lang Ya blessed land had a huge inventory, the white haired land spirit had governed the blessed land for hundreds of thousands of years, he had several Immortal Gu of each mainstream path. They were not a complementary group, the land spirit had refined them in preparation for any refinement path research problems.

Fang Yuan had once borrowed wood sprout Immortal Gu to use the killer move light fungus radiance.

Chi Qu You’s expression was completely dark, his fists were tightly clenched under his sleeves.

“Fang Yuan...” He gritted his teeth, his illusions were shattered.

Fang Yuan was targeting Chi clan!

But Chi Qu You could not understand why Fang Yuan was targeting him and Chi clan.

When they pursued him back when he was weak, everyone in Southern Border’s righteous path was involved. Wu Yong was the person with the deepest enmity with him, why didn’t he attack them? If he thought Wu clan was too strong, he could bully the weaker ones like Qiao clan.

Chi clan was not weak, it was upper tier even among Southern Border’s righteous path!

Who did they offend, why was he doing this?

What did they do wrong, couldn’t he tell them?

Couldn’t he just talk nicely?

Communication was the key to human relationships!

These types of people were the worst! Attacking without warning, destroying and plundering without making a single sound!

Why did he do that? He was a true scumbag!

Not just Chi Qu You, all the other Chi clan Gu Immortals felt very upset and wronged.

“Fang Yuan is clearly targeting us, he has made ample preparations. The question is, what is he after?”

“We need to know this, this is the first obstacle for us in dealing with Fang Yuan.” Chi Qu You thought about it, he said.

He gave up on his previous mentality, he decided to deal with Fang Yuan with all his strength.

If they did not do anything, Chi Qu You would not be able to account to the clan.

Demonic path Gu Immortals often traveled alone, but the righteous path had to maintain a force, one could not live freely by one’s own intentions. Chi Qu You, for example, even though he was rank eight, he had his bloodline descendants to take care of.

And cloud bamboo mountain range was not just a large resource point for Chi clan.

Back when Chi clan was still in its infancy period, Chi clan’s ancestors had scrimped and saved when they were weak to slowly develop it.

Cloud bamboo mountain range had provided a stable source of income for Chi clan’s development.

Cloud bamboo mountain range was the glorious history of Chi clan, it was a form of mental encouragement to Chi clan’s members.

Fang Yuan plundered cloud bamboo mountain range, he was trampling on the pride and history of Chi clan’s Gu Immortals.

Right at this moment, Chi Qu You and the rest received requests for reinforcements from Chi clan’s Gu Immortals again.

“Report—! Fang Yuan has appeared at Wind Flame Mountain, he is currently using the killer move myriad dragon to attack the formation.”

“Report—! Fang Yuan has appeared outside ragged cave, he was obstructed by the formation and has mysteriously vanished.”

Different from earlier, Fang Yuan suddenly appeared at two locations.

Chi clan’s Gu Immortals were very shocked and suspicious, how could there be two Fang Yuan?

“One is a fake and one is his true body?”

“Or maybe it is Fang Yuan’s clone? That’s possible too.”

“No, according to the timing, Fang Yuan first appeared at ragged cave before he used Fixed Immortal Travel to arrive at Wind Flame Mountain.” Chi Qu You analyzed calmly.

“That means Fang Yuan is still at Wind Flame Mountain? We need to reinforce it immediately!”

“But why did he teleport to ragged cave then? Isn’t that unnecessary?”

“Maybe he felt that ragged cave’s defensive formation was too strong so he chose the easier Wind Flame Mountain?”

“No, these are both giant resource points, their defensive formation are equally strong, there is no weaker one.” Chi Qu You thought about it before a thought flashed in his mind.

He said plainly: “Split up and help them.”

“That is the only way! If the giant resource point is looted by Fang Yuan too, our Chi clan will lose too much.”

“But is this Fang Yuan’s scheme, he wants to divert us away?”

“Fang Yuan’s current strength is far beyond the time when he chased after all. Even someone like Feng Jiu Ge lost so terribly to him...”

Chi clan’s Gu Immortals were hesitant, they were very wary towards Fang Yuan.

“Should we seek reinforcements?” Suddenly, a Gu Immortal asked.

The whole of Great Space Temple sank into silence.

This was something that most of the Gu Immortals were thinking, but did not dare to say.

Amidst the silence, the immortals looked towards Chi Qu You.

Chi Qu You had a dark expression as he shouted: “He is just a rank seven Gu Immortal! Our clan has only lost two resource points and you are all frantic already, you want to seek outside reinforcements? We cannot afford to lose our reputation like this! Did anyone die? Are we only left with the old and weak? Seeking reinforcements without even fighting against Fang Yuan once? Where is your courage? Where is your bravery? Where are your pride and glory as Chi clan members?”

The immortals lowered their heads in silence, they took Chi Qu You’s fierce scolding.

After Chi Qu You scolded them, he gave orders: “Do as I say! I am going to Wind Flame Mountain now, you all will travel in Great Space Temple and go to help ragged cave. Act quickly and do not panic, the defensive formation of a giant resource point is not so fragile. Keep in touch at all times!”

“Yes, lord!”

Nobody disagreed with his order.

With their current location, Wind Flame Mountain was closer while ragged cave was further. Thus, the space path Immortal Gu House Great Space Temple would go to ragged cave while Chi Qu You, who was slower, would go to help Wind Flame Mountain.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1772 Done In By Himself

Chi Qu You went to Wind Flame Mountain at full speed, when he arrived, he saw that Fang Yuan had already destroyed half the formation.

Fang Yuan was currently uprooting the sunset parasol trees, he stole the countless birds within the parasol forest, including the fire phoenixes, with incredible efficiency!

The Gu Immortal defending this place had not left, he was attacking Fang Yuan fiercely using the remaining formation.

Fang Yuan was able to deal with it easily.

He dealt with the formation while looting resources continuously.

“Stop!” Chi Qu You shouted with startled anger.

“First supreme elder, you are finally here!” The rank seven Gu Immortal defending this place was extremely agitated, he was overcome with tears.

He was at first confident in regards to the defensive formation, but after a while, Fang Yuan easily broke it, he was incredibly scared and desperate, he did not dare to act rashly. Before Chi Qu You came, he had been defending himself, now that the supreme elder was here, he attacked with some flashy methods.

As Chi Qu You had finally arrived, Fang Yuan stopped his actions.

“Fang Yuan, what a great job you’ve done! Retribution is here!” Chi Qu You’s eyes were spewing fire.

Wind Flame Mountain was quite a special resource point.

Other than raising phoenixes, at a certain timing each year, many wild phoenixes would come here and lay eggs. If something happened to Wind Flame Mountain, the wild phoenixes might choose other locations, Chi clan would suffer great losses.

But Fang Yuan was smiling throughout.

Compared to the previous life, Chi Qu You was more angry because Fang Yuan’s efficient looting meant that Chi clan suffered even greater losses, Chi Qu You felt pained from this.

“Senior Chi Qu You, I have been waiting for you, this is my move!” Fang Yuan said as he activated yama battlefield.

Chi Qu You hesitated for a moment but did not dodge, he allowed yama battlefield to envelop him as he said: “Let me see what you’re made of!”

Yama battlefield formed quickly, a huge yellow-brown lump enveloped both Fang Yuan and Chi Qu You.

Next, yama battlefield shrunk rapidly, condensing from a yellow-brown lump into a tiny spot, it was like an immortal aperture that was placed outside, vanishing entirely without a trace.

“An amazing soul path battlefield.” Chi Qu You praised.

Chi Qu You’s arms were behind his back as he stood calmly, his attitude had changed tremendously, even though he was trapped in yama battlefield, he did not try to forcefully deduce it, he looked very much at ease.

He was wary internally, to think that Fang Yuan even had a battlefield killer move, there was no information about this at all.

At this point in time, different from the previous life, Fang Yuan’s yama battlefield was not exposed.

Last time, he used yama battlefield to trap Feng Jiu Ge, not only did he expose this method, Fairy Zi Wei deduced and broke it successfully.

After the battle in Lang Ya blessed land, Fairy Zi Wei even exposed the profundities of yama battlefield and the method to break it in treasure yellow heaven openly, causing Fang Yuan’s yama battlefield to lose its value in battle, the risk of using it was much higher.

And in this life, even though Fang Yuan used yama battlefield multiple times, his targets were Meng Tu, Sleeping Lady, and the diamond head turtle, they were either killed or captured. Against Feng Jiu Ge, he used the super formation space and could not activate yama battlefield. Thus, this method was kept a secret until now.

Now that Fang Yuan used it, it was finally known to the outside world.

Fang Yuan was not going to kill Chi Qu You, information about yama battlefield was definitely going to spread.

Of course, it was not that Fang Yuan could not kill Chi Qu You, but the risks were too high and the reward was minimal. This was the same reason for Chi Qu You, who did not want to face Fang Yuan earlier.

When two tigers fought, one was definitely going to be injured.

Fang Yuan stood at the end of the other side of the battlefield as he assessed Chi Qu You, smiling: “Lord Chi Qu You, you are inside my immortal battlefield now, why are you not attempting to retaliate, instead, you look like you want to talk? Why is that so?”

Chi Qu You snorted coldly: “Stop pretending!”

“Fang Yuan, you went around plundering for the sake of gaining my attention.”

“Thinking about it, since you could easily break the defensive formation, why did you not take the lives of my Chi clan’s Gu Immortals? This is not hard to achieve, but you did not think of killing a single one of them.”

“Furthermore, be it contact heart river bank, cloud bamboo mountain range, or Wind Flame Mountain, even though you looted them clean, you left their foundation behind untouched.”

“Both Great Space Temple and I went out at the same time, that was part of your plan. Seeing that we were together, you attacked Wind Flame Mountain and ragged cave at the same time, so that we would have to split up.”

“You were merely finding a chance to talk with me, but did not have any special method to do so.”

“Tell me, what is it that you want.”

Chi Qu You spoke calmly, before splitting up, he had already guessed Fang Yuan’s intention, all that anger and hatred was just an act.

Chi Qu You’s analysis was mostly right.

In the previous life, when Plunder Shadow Earth Trench was still around, Chi Qu You defended it for some time, only after Fang Yuan attacked Wind Flame Mountain did he show up.

This time, Fang Yuan took down Plunder Shadow Earth Trench in advance, but because Chi Qu You and Great Space Temple were together, it was quite troublesome.

Great Space Temple was a space path Immortal Gu House, it countered immortal battlefields. Fang Yuan had fought against it in his previous life, even great thief ghost hand was unable to counter it.

If Fang Yuan wanted to talk to Chi Qu You, the best way was to avoid this house and find a chance to lure Chi Qu You out alone.

This was not hard for Fang Yuan. With his deep wisdom path attainment, he could easily achieve his target with some adjustment in thinking.

But Chi Qu You was wrong about one thing.

Fang Yuan did not leave behind the foundation of the resource points on purpose, but because he had no way of taking them.

Chi Qu You had misunderstood it.

Of course, Fang Yuan would not correct him.

“Clap clap.” Fang Yuan started to clap: “It is so easy talking to a smart person. Senior Chi Qu You, take a look at this.”

Chi Qu You’s eyes flickered with uncertainty, he carefully received the information path mortal Gu that Fang Yuan tossed out.

He seemed at ease now but he was very alert in his mind. Even though Fang Yuan had ‘rank seven’ cultivation level, Chi Qu You knew how devious this lad was, he was crafty and ruthless, he needed to be guarded against, one could not relax around him.

But soon, Chi Qu You’s expression changed.

He started to frown, a cold light flashed in his eyes as his expression turned dark.

The information path mortal Gu that Fang Yuan gave him included the details of Chi clan’s defensive formations, as well as Fang Yuan’s conjectures and methods of breaking them. Among which was Wind Flame Mountain’s formation, Fang Yuan understood it very well. With his understanding, he could easily destroy the defensive formation and take all of the resources within, but he did not do that.

From this point, Chi Qu You could see Fang Yuan’s ‘sincerity’, it confirmed his guesses while also showing that Fang Yuan had shocking formation path attainment!

And the thing that ruined his mood was the latter part of this information path mortal Gu.

These contents were very detailed about Chi clan’s information, Chi Qu You felt a chill in his heart.

This was not something he could get from a little investigation, a lot of time was needed to accumulate such a rich pool of information.

And in this information, the emphasis on Chi clan’s internal problem, the fact that Chi Qu You had no successor, was the main issue!

This made Chi Qu You’s expression change, he was deeply shocked!

Because the information was just too detailed, very clearly, someone in Southern Border was helping Fang Yuan, secretly providing this.

Who was it?

Demonic path Gu Immortals were very unlikely, they were loners and did not have much of a grudge with Chi clan, there was no need to observe Chi clan and waste their own cultivation time.

“Other than those predatory righteous path forces, who else can it be?”

Chi Qu You was filled with shock and rage, Yang clan soon became his biggest suspicion!

Chi Qu You felt deep anger!

If a certain Southern Border righteous path super force was secretly helping Fang Yuan, this situation would become much more passive for him.

“Very likely, my Chi clan has no traitor, it is these vicious righteous path clans that are trying to attack my Chi clan using this sharp blade!”

“These idiots, these fools, these traitors, they are the biggest parasites of Southern Border’s righteous path!”

Chi Qu You’s anger was like an erupting volcano, the lava was spewing out endlessly.

He was already restraining himself, if Fang Yuan was not here, he might be shaking intensely.

Fang Yuan laughed secretly.

He observed carefully and assessed Chi Qu You’s current mood and thoughts, he had a general idea.

This information that he gave out needed a lot of manpower and resources to obtain over a long time.

The truth was, there was no Southern Border righteous path clan helping him, he had obtained the information from the Southern Border immortals when he captured them in the previous life.

Fang Yuan was definitely going to use this hidden card well!

As he had expected, once he used this card, the effect was immediately. Chi Qu You’s expression turned dark, his calm attitude was no more.

“I’m sure that right now, Chi Qu You must hate these Southern Border righteous path clans much more than me.”

“That is only natural. Throughout history, almost all organizations would hate traitors the most!”

“But the truth is, this was merely one of my gains from the previous life. And I was able to capture those Southern Border immortals because of the dream realms that Chi Qu You had provided to me, the culprit was really just Chi Qu You himself.”

Chi Qu You’s expression was very ugly, he was emitting an intense air of tragedy.

He was done in by himself, but he could not sense it.

Fang Yuan spoke again: “Lord Chi Qu You has been famous for a long time, you have governed Chi clan for so long, you must be sure of the value of this information. The force that gave this information to me is not just underestimating me, they are also underestimating you, Lord Chi Qu You.”

Chi Qu You heard this, he had a thought: “It seems that Fang Yuan does not like being made use of.”

Unknowingly, he did not hate Fang Yuan that much anymore.

Fang Yuan continued: “Now, do you believe in my sincerity?”

Chi Qu You thought about Chi clan’s losses, he felt pained, he squinted as he sneered at Fang Yuan: “Hehe, does that mean I should thank you for holding back?”

Fang Yuan smiled.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1773 Fang Yuan“s Epiphany

Within yama battlefield, two immortals stood on opposite sides.

Fang Yuan sighed: “We have limited time, I will say this directly, I want to make a transaction with Chi clan, are you interested in my dream path research results?”

Chi Qu You was slightly stunned before his cold and icy gaze changed slightly.

“Dream path? Did I hear wrongly?” A flash of excitement flickered in Chi Qu You’s eyes for a moment.

Fang Yuan’s dream path research results were not a secret by now.

When he disguised as Wu Yi Hai, his goal was the dream realm. Fang Yuan had methods to turn dream realms into people, he had used it back in the battle over the dream realms, many super forces were extremely envious of his method.

Fang Yuan had Spring Autumn Cicada, he had been reborn from the future which had a flourishing dream path, it was not strange that he had some dream path mysteries.

One could say, Fang Yuan’s dream path research results were at the peak of the five regions, far ahead of this world.

“The mysteries of dream realms and the depth of dream path, I have only made slight progress in it. What if I told senior that my formation path attainment level was obtained from the dream realm, what do you think?” Fang Yuan smiled as he spoke casually, it was like a huge rock that splashed into Chi Qu You’s heart, creating a huge commotion.

“Oh? Is that true?!” Chi Qu You was moved, he could not hold his cool anymore.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, he had meticulously crafted this conversation to lower Chi Qu You’s aggression, at this point, he had complete control over the flow of the conversation.

This was different from the previous life.

Fang Yuan tossed out an information path Gu worm: “Senior, take a look.”

Chi Qu You received it and his gaze flickered, he unconsciously grasped the information path mortal Gu in his hand, as if afraid that it would fly off.

The information path mortal Gu had all sorts of details regarding dream path mysteries, it was incredibly attractive! Chi Qu You was completely drawn into it, he quickly finished looking through.

Chi Qu You licked his lips, he felt that his throat had gotten dry after this short while.

He was incredibly moved.

Chi Qu You forced himself to stay calm as he purposely asked: “What transaction do you want?”

“I want dream realms, give me dream realms and I’ll give you the dream path research results of the future.”

Chi Qu You did not agree instantly, he said: “This is difficult, almost all of Southern Border’s dream realms are being guarded by the righteous path super forces.”

Fang Yuan smiled: “Senior Chi, I want the dream realms on Yi Tian Mountain. Even though the formations there have changed, you are the person in charge. I also know that there are many hidden backdoors, it will be easy for your clan to steal some dream realms without any problems.”

Chi Qu You heard this, his expression changed again.

Fang Yuan understood the situation so clearly! It was really terrifying!

The backdoors at Yi Tian Mountain’s formation were Chi Qu You’s proud creation. He had created them under the eyes of all the Southern Border forces, he was bullying their lack of formation path expertise, these backdoors were set up in secret.

“I thought I deceived everyone, but to think that Fang Yuan saw through it.”

“Hmm, maybe not just Fang Yuan... sigh, I have underestimated the geniuses of this world.”

Chi Qu You was overthinking it.

Fang Yuan’s information was obtained in his previous life, it was given to him by Chi Qu You himself.

Fang Yuan used Chi Qu You’s information against him, it was really useful. Otherwise, why would there be the saying: your biggest enemy is often yourself?

Fang Yuan continued to pressure Chi Qu You as he lost his resistance.

Every negotiation was a battle, even though it was not as straightforward as fighting, it was still a contest of strength in terms of wits and tactics.

Compared to the previous life, Fang Yuan had too much advantage, he was stronger now because of his information, he knew his opponent well, his tactic of putting up a front was incredibly effective. Even a person like Chi Qu You had fallen victim to it.

The transaction was quickly negotiated, it was very advantageous to Fang Yuan in the end.

Chi Qu You agreed to the transaction, but for his status, this was ‘humiliating’.

But there was no choice, Fang Yuan had a strong hold over him.

Firstly, he could not do anything to Fang Yuan, even if he tried to deal with him, the risks were too high, the gains were marginal.

Secondly, if he worked with Fang Yuan, he would stop plundering Chi clan, they would even gain some dream path research results, this was too attractive to Chi Qu You.

Finally, Chi Qu You was still worried about the so-called traitors in Southern Border's righteous path, he wanted to find these traitors. He might be able to find them through Fang Yuan.

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Southern Border.

A mountain was empty and bare, it had no vegetation and stood proudly on the ground. Around it, the ground was not flat, there were some contours but the inclination was limited, there were just some small mounds. Because of these mounds, this empty mountain looked even larger in perspective.

Right now, at the peak of this empty mountain, a rank six rockman Gu Immortal stood as he looked up at the sky.

“After becoming a grotto-heaven, this immortal aperture truly became different from a blessed land!”

“It is so grand and magnificent! The size of this sovereign immortal aperture is beyond logical, it is unimaginably big, worthy of the miracle created by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!!”

Every time Shi Shi Cheng looked at this place, he would sigh internally.

This was majestic, this was a miracle, this was simply a divine construct!

He was completely awed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he had no thoughts of resisting Fang Yuan at all.

Behind him was a group of rockman Gu Masters, they were talking among themselves.

“After spending more than ten days, we have finally constructed this mountain!”

“I am so tired, we had to work from early in the morning to late at night every day.”

“I heard that the creation of this mountain was a mission given by that supreme being.”

“In order to complete it quickly, we paid a huge price and activated Gu worms continuously, at least thirty earth path Gu worms died in the process...”

“Speaking of which, don't you feel that refining Gu here has a high chance of success?”

“Sigh, there will be rewards when we complete the sect missions. I hope that the supreme Gu Immortal would give us some valuable rewards.”

“Quiet! Do you think you are qualified to discuss matters regarding that great lord?” The rockman Gu Immortal could not take it anymore, he scolded.

These rockman Gu Masters quickly lowered their heads, becoming silent from fear.

At this time, green light flickered as a figure descended from the sky, floating in the air.

The rockman Gu Masters looked up, it was Fang Yuan's rank six time path clone.

Everyone’s hearts jumped as they quickly knelt down, paying their respects.

“This subordinate greets lord!” Shi Shi Cheng quickly greeted with a humble attitude.

Fang Yuan’s clone had a plain expression, he nodded and asked: “Has the formation been completed?”

Fang Yuan’s mission was not just to create an artificial mountain, they had to set up an immortal formation in the interior of the mountain.

Shi Shi Cheng quickly reported: “Lord, I have already set up this fire path formation according to the formation chart you provided, you just need to activate it now.”

Fang Yuan had already used his divine sense to penetrate the mountain, he was already looking into it.

He nodded, he was quite satisfied with the set up of this formation, he was about to get these rockmen to leave, but he saw that Shi Shi Cheng wanted to speak, although he did not dare to.

Shi Shi Cheng had rank six cultivation level but he had once fought against Fang Yuan, his immortal battlefield grey cloud rock puppet left Fang Yuan a deep impression, he was quite talented.

After moving the rockmen, Fang Yuan sent the rockman Gu Immortals to the stone lotus island to familiarize themselves with future self. Meanwhile, Shi Shi Cheng stayed behind, he was the leader of the rockman tribe, similar to Xue Er and Mo Tan Sang in their own tribes.

“You have something to say to me?” Fang Yuan’s clone stopped as he asked, he had some patience towards this talented person.

Shi Shi Cheng blinked as his expression turned uneasy, he made up his mind as he said: “I heard that lord has been on the offensive and gained great victories, the Southern Border righteous path is extremely fearful now. Even that Chi clan first supreme elder Chi Qu You was helpless against you, he could only watch as you left freely...”

Fang Yuan’s eyes flashed with bright light, he was such a shrewd person, how could he not understand Shi Shi Cheng’s words, he interrupted: “Your tribe’s Gu Immortals want me to stop and live peacefully, there is no need to take such risks, am I right?”

“Oh, I beg for forgiveness!” Shi Shi Cheng bowed deeply, he had an expression of fear: “This was my own bold idea, the supreme elders are all cultivating at the stone lotus island, they are unaware.”

Fang Yuan’s clone sneered internally.

The rockmen had different ideas to him, they wanted to live in peace and develop slowly and stably, they hated risks. They would love nothing more than for Fang Yuan to hide in a cave and cultivate for a century or a millennium.

They did not want Fang Yuan to take risks, because if he died, the sovereign immortal aperture would be exposed, they would all be implicated.

But how could this be possible?

Fang Yuan pursued eternal life, this was only possible after destroying fate Gu. If Heavenly Court fully repaired fate Gu, they would not let him off, they would find him one day and kill him.

Hiding and stalling would only lead to despair, only during the final Central Continent Refinement Path Convention would Central Continent be attacked by all four regions, when Heavenly Court is at its weakest, he would have a chance of success if he acted.

The variant humans’ wish would not come true. Not only that, they would have to fight for Fang Yuan in the future. They were already tied to him now, they could not isolate themselves.

Shi Shi Cheng’s words was actually the idea of many variant human Gu Immortals, they used Shi Shi Cheng to suggest it instead of saying it themselves, it was a way to keep themselves safe.

It was a mature political tactic.

Fang Yuan did not reject nor agree to anything, he waved his hand: “Bring the elites of the tribe and leave this mountain.”

“Yes.”

Seeing that Shi Shi Cheng had taken some distance, Fang Yuan’s clone started to activate the mountain’s formation.

Instantly, the formation became a furnace, intense heat was emitted from it. This heat quickly charred in the interior of the mountain, creating waves of molten magma.

A moment later, with an explosion, the top of the mountain erupted, smoke rose into the sky as gushes of lava flowed down the mountain, the temperature rose sharply.

The rockman Gu Masters watched from afar, they gasped, this method of changing the natural environment and creating a volcano out of nothing was truly stunning.

Even Shi Shi Cheng was deeply moved, his formation path attainment was low, at this point, he finally realized the use of the formation that he set up.

But the more shocking thing happened next.

A huge hand appeared in the sky over the mountain, it was as large as the mountain as the five fingers spread out, scattering countless trees onto the volcano.

These trees were covered in a flowing light, they landed softly and planted into the lava itself.

The terrifying lava was quickly absorbed by the roots as the trees took in all the nutrients, soon, branches extended as leaves grew, they gave out the beautiful light of the setting sun.

These were sunset parasol trees!

A moment later, more hands flew out as they scattered fire phoenixes all over the volcano!

One by one, the fire phoenixes landed on the top of the volcano, they were quickly suppressed and sealed by the formation.

The entire process was overlooked by Fang Yuan’s clone, no unexpected mishaps occurred.

Shi Shi Cheng opened his mouth wide, he looked at this scene with a dumbfounded expression.

Even though he knew that Fang Yuan had advanced to rank eight, it was not as shocking as witnessing this himself.

There were ancient desolate beasts among these fire phoenixes, just a single one could slaughter Shi Shi Cheng without any problem.

Finally, Fang Yuan’s clone left behind a large number of fire path birds of all types, there was a huge variety of them.

“From now onwards, this will be known as Fire Bird Mountain, it is your rockman tribe’s resource point.” Fang Yuan’s clone flew towards Shi Shi Cheng.

This was a huge surprise!

Shi Shi Cheng quickly knelt down and thanked him, he was very excited.

Fang Yuan’s clone smile: “Get up, I said before that I would help all of you. This mid sized resource point is my reward to you for your hard work of creating the mountain.”

“This subordinate is ashamed.” Shi Shi Cheng was incredibly thankful, compared to this Fire Bird Mountain, the hard work that they had put in was truly insignificant.

The Gu worms used to create the formation of this Fire Bird Mountain, the formation chart used, and all the resources provided had all come from Fang Yuan, this was akin to his gift to them.

Fang Yuan’s clone added: “I will continue to give you missions in the future, Fire Bird Mountain is not the final one.”

Shi Shi Cheng was dazed, there was deep meaning in Fang Yuan’s words.

Where did the fire phoenixes and sunset parasol trees come from?

He had plundered them.

Fang Yuan said that Fire Bird Mountain was not the final one, he meant that he would continue to plunder and take risks!

The variant human Gu Immortals gave Fang Yuan very subtle advice, Fang Yuan’s rejection was also very subtle, but if one looked into it, they could see how domineering and intimidating Fang Yuan’s response was.

Shi Shi Cheng did not dare to contradict him, he even felt a little joy after receiving this gift.

“With this Fire Bird Mountain, my rockman tribe can finally rise up!”

“How can Lord Fang Yuan be someone that is so easily convinced and shaken?”

“That is not my problem, Lord Fang Yuan has given me the task of leading the tribe, these resources are also my cultivation resources! As long as I do not go overboard, I can definitely cultivate rapidly and raise my cultivation level.” Shi Shi Cheng had a heated gaze.

Any Gu Immortal would treasure and feel deep desire towards their own battle strength under the pressure of the calamities and tribulations.

Due to Fang Yuan’s political tactic, Shi Shi Cheng had already been separated from the other rockman Gu Immortals.

The rockmen were suitable for managing Fire Bird Mountain, the temperature of the earth around the volcano was hot, it was a good place for rockmen to sleep in.

Of course, eggmen were the most suitable for managing volcanoes.

But currently, Fang Yuan had no intention of bringing in eggmen. It was sufficient to develop these variant human groups now.

Shi Shi Cheng’s words gave Fang Yuan quite some insight.

“Different from my previous life, this time around, I took in many variant human tribes, I need to nurture and strengthen them, I also need to divert some attention and resources to them.”

Fang Yuan could use enslavement path methods to subdue all these variant human tribes, but in that case, he would lose any chance of nurturing them as it is.

“I want to comprehend human path, it is not like enslavement path, everybody has their own thoughts and desires. To maintain an organization, I will need to consider the thoughts and emotions of the members in this organization. There are no two completely identical individuals, no matter how similar, people are different in their own ways... Hmm?”

Fang Yuan suddenly had a thought.

A flash of inspiration sparked in his mind like lightning, brightening his entire mind.

It was the epiphany of human path!

Suddenly, Fang Yuan understood a certain point, he had a complex expression: “Human path... so that’s it, I had a human path killer move all along...”

At this moment, his human path attainment level rose to master.

Human path master!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1774 Eerie Light Under Her Eyes

Southern Border.

On a nameless mountain, there was the noise of a waterfall as mist spread out widely.

At the cliff of the waterfall, Fang Yuan’s main body sat on a pine tree branch as he thought deeply.

The human path inspiration came abruptly, Fang Yuan placed great importance on it, his main body and clone stopped what they were doing and thought about it together.

At this moment, inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

An army had formed.

There were a hundred thousand strength path phantoms, they stood on the grassland unmoving, like solid statues.

They all had the same faces, they resembled Fang Yuan’s main body, they stood in an orderly formation with the same distance between each one.

This was Fang Yuan’s myriad self army created from using myriad self Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan grasped onto that inspiration as he stopped myriad self Immortal Gu, activating myriad self killer move instead.

In a while, a larger number of strength path phantoms formed again.

Fang Yuan thought about it before using myriad self killer move for a third time. But this time, he did not use the immortal level killer move, but the original mortal killer move instead.

Rank four all-out effort Gu as the core, with the supplementary bitter strength Gu, borrow strength Gu, self-reliance Gu, refine essence spirit Gu, earth strength Gu, water strength Gu, wind strength Gu, lightning strength Gu, fire strength Gu, lurking soul coat Gu, breath concealment Gu.

Eventually creating the killer move myriad self, splitting the main body’s soul into a grand army of strength path phantoms!

But because it was a mortal killer move, these strength path phantoms were far inferior to the previous phantom army.

But this was the origin.

Back then, during the Northern Plains Imperial Court contest, Fang Yuan combined six arm heavenly zombie king and self strength, using soul path, wisdom path, qi path, and enslavement path killer moves as reference, solving the age old question of combining enslavement and strength, creating this move.

Next, using the foundation of this move, he developed strength path giant hand and reverse flow protection seal. The former gave Fang Yuan a new offensive method at the appropriate timing and was his strongest method for some time. The latter was the crucial trump card to Fang Yuan’s ability to fight rank eight as a rank seven!

Be they myriad self, strength path giant hand, or reverse flow protection seal, they were very exceptional, they were top tier even among top tier killer moves.

Right now, Fang Yuan gained some human path inspiration, he traced its source and modified the original version of the mortal killer move myriad self once again.

Fang Yuan’s main body and clone deduced together, at the same time, his clone was bathed in the light of wisdom!

The killer move soon became modified, Fang Yuan activated myriad self for the fourth time.

This time, he created a strength path phantom army again, but different from the first three, even though this army was standing quietly, the individuals had various expressions of all sorts.

Some were crying, some were laughing, some were frowning, some were smiling, some had killing intent, some were expressionless, some were resting with their eyes shut, some had peaceful expressions, some had darting eyes, curious about everything around them, while some were sighing and grunting, looking extremely bored...

Fang Yuan’s divine sense swept through these phantoms, countless thoughts sparked in his mind like lightning.

After a while, Fang Yuan and his clone abandoned these phantom armies, activating wisdom path methods to deduce once more.

This deduction took six hours.

After succeeding the deduction, Fang Yuan obtained an extremely complex mortal myriad self killer move that was many times the size of the original in terms of Gu worms.

He activated this killer move.

Because this killer move had too many Gu worms, the arrangements were too complex, even as a rank eight Gu Immortal, Fang Yuan only succeeded after a long while.

This time, the myriad self phantoms were far fewer in numbers than the original three versions, but they all had individuality in them.

Some of these myriad self phantoms were running, jumping, sitting and thinking, playing around, some were even angry and furious, attacking the surrounding myriad self phantoms and creating huge chaos.

The chaos among the myriad self phantoms grew rapidly, after a while, these myriad self phantoms were all engaged in a huge brawl. Even though some did not want to participate, they had no choice.

These myriad self phantoms did not have the same strength, some were stronger, some were weaker.

Bright light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes, he found that in this chaotic battle, the myriad self phantoms who won became stronger, while those who lost became weaker, or even got destroyed.

The myriad self phantoms fell in numbers rapidly, soon, less than ten phantoms were still fighting intensely.

Eventually, only one phantom stood on the battlefield, all the rest of the phantoms were destroyed.

This phantom was tens of times stronger than before, but it was still at the mortal level.

The phantom looked identical to Fang Yuan, but it was filled with anger and hatred. It roared at Fang Yuan’s time path clone showing deep killing intent and animosity, but it did not dare to attack, it charged towards the previous few groups of myriad self phantoms.

These myriad self phantoms stood quietly and without orders from Fang Yuan, they did not move, they allowed the angry phantom to attack them.

After slaughtering them all, this angry phantom’s aura grew time and again, it broke the limits of the mortal level and reached the level of a rank six Gu Immortal!

Seeing this, Fang Yuan's main body and clone both showed joy on their faces.

Fang Yuan's clone waved, the remaining myriad self army moved like a tide, surrounding the angry phantom and fighting it to the death.

The angry phantom had outstanding strength, even though it was encircled, it continued to fight without fear.

With every phantom it destroyed, it grew a little stronger.

It did not know fatigue, it was like a fighting machine that kept growing, it growled and roared, continuing to stand on the battlefield.

Eventually, after it broke through from rank six to seven, Fang Yuan's main body finally moved, activating a killer move and personally killing this strength path phantom.

This fourth myriad self killer move that Fang Yuan used created very unique strength path phantoms that had their own thoughts and personalities, even his main body could not control them.

And amazingly, all of them had terrifying potential for growth!

The angry phantom started out at rank four level, but it eventually grew to reach the level of a rank seven Gu Immortal!

Of course, only its aura and level broke through.

Its own battle strength was not too high, it was even weaker than ordinary ancient desolate beasts.

Because its body was phantom, it was not as sturdy as an ancient desolate beast. It was also limited in intelligence, it could not use Gu worms to fight, it only had battle instinct.

"Be it myriad self Immortal Gu or myriad self killer move, they both expend my soul, this is the basis of the killer move, it is a flaw that cannot be avoided."

"Precisely because these strength path phantoms originate from the same source, the souls can merge, they are able to get stronger by devouring each other."

"The final myriad self killer move that I activated is no longer just the convergence of enslavement and strength, it has progressed to become a human path killer move!"

Fang Yuan's time path clone was bathed in the light of wisdom all along, its eyes flickered with uncertainty and bright light.

At this point, the killer move myriad self had become a true human path killer move, while myriad self Immortal Gu was confirmed to be a human path Immortal Gu.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan had felt regret that he lacked a human path method or foundation when attacking Central Continent.

The truth was, he had one all along but because he had too many issues going on and things to consider, he did not notice it during the battle.

This was like the poem: The mountain resembles a range when you look from the front, it resembles a peak when you look at it sideways. The mountain shows different features at different angles near and far. You cannot see the real

Lushan Mountain, because you are on the mountain yourself.

His exploration in human path had started in the five hundred years of his previous life, but he had no awareness in this aspect.

“A person’s life is their exploration towards human path itself.”

“Other than myriad self Immortal Gu, I also have another human path Immortal Gu. That is — perseverance Gu!”

“Wait, not just perseverance Gu, the sovereign immortal fetus Gu that I stole is also a human path Gu worm!!”

Looking at u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e, hope Gu, vanity Gu, guts Gu, stubborn Gu, pride Gu, self Gu, suffering Gu... weren’t all these human path Gu worms?

“No wonder u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e is known as the human path true inheritance, it truly contains the deep profundities of human path within it.” Fang Yuan sighed in his heart, at this point, he could finally read u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e with a proper level of understanding.

Fang Yuan had reached this conclusion after living for nearly six hundred years!

His human path inspiration was not obtained from nurturing the variant humans, it was the crucial qualitative breakthrough that he gained after accumulating sufficient life experiences.

It was like a small pile of gunpowder that was lit by a spark, an intense explosion with a loud sound was set off, Fang Yuan surpassed his original limits and reached a new level in human path.

This was his growth after deep accumulation, progress was very smooth.

Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

In Central Great Hall.

The dense purple aura calmed down slowly, before it completely retracted back into Fairy Zi Wei’s mind.

Fairy Zi Wei frowned lightly: “What is this demon Fang Yuan plotting now?”

In the battle of Lang Ya blessed land, Heavenly Court lost terribly, Fairy Zi Wei took the responsibility personally, she rapidly divulged the information regarding Fang Yuan for free.

But currently, Fang Yuan was very strange, he had not taken any action.

Normally speaking, with star cast exposed and the deaths of Chen Yi and Thunder Ghost True Monarch, Fang Yuan would definitely spread news of it everywhere to attack Heavenly Court’s prestige, to make the other four regions more antagonistic towards Heavenly Court.

But Fang Yuan did not do that.

Fairy Zi Wei had a sense of unease all along, these last days, she had been paying close attention to Fang Yuan’s movements, even if a slight incident occurred, she would deduce it with her full strength.

Fairy Zi Wei already knew about Fang Yuan’s actions in Southern Border.

But why did Fang Yuan target Chi clan? What motive did he have, was he really just going after those three resource points of Chi clan?

Earlier, the formation in Plunder Shadow Earth Trench got destroyed, was that mysterious Gu Immortal Fang Yuan?

“Or maybe, he wants to refine Gu now after annexing Lang Ya blessed land and gaining a huge foundation.”

“Or maybe, he has already used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth, he is using his rebirth knowledge to obtain all of his potential advantages now!”

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes flickered with uncertainty.

After Fang Yuan’s Spring Autumn Cicada got exposed, his enemies would all consider it when they thought about his actions.

Fairy Zi Wei had been paying attention to this all along.

“Once Fang Yuan rebirths, Spring Autumn Cicada would need a lot of time to recover, that would be the best time to kill him.”

“At the same time, all the methods that I used already will be known to Fang Yuan, I will need to change my battle tactics.”

It was crucial whether Fang Yuan had already used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth or not!

If he did, Fairy Zi Wei would need to stop all her original plans and start from scratch.

However, even though Fairy Zi Wei deduced with her full strength, even after using Star Constellation Chessboard, she could not confirm if Fang Yuan had been reborn or not.

Fang Yuan destroyed the formation in Plunder Shadow Earth Trench but did not take the dream realms. He was very secretive when dealing with Meng Tu and the rest. Even for great thief ghost hand, Fang Yuan did not use it openly, he used the super formation to conceal it, Heavenly Court could not link him to Suan Bu Jin.

His smoke bomb was just too brilliant, he had successfully confused Fairy Zi Wei.

Fang Yuan’s wisdom path attainment was a huge help in this aspect.

This rebirth was very different from the previous ones, against the strong enemy Heavenly Court, he had to consider the ink effect at all times.

“Fang Yuan is crafty and shrewd, he has left too little valuable information for us!”

Fairy Zi Wei thought about it angrily, she turned around and left the Central Great Hall, arriving at the place she held Spectral Soul captive.

Soul search!

Spectral Soul resisted for a while before relenting as waves of memories were extracted.

“The secret of golden dragonfish rearing?” Fairy Zi Wei was first joyful before becoming disappointed.

If it were before, Fairy Zi Wei would be very happy about targeting Fang Yuan’s main source of income, but now that he obtained Lang Ya blessed land, all of its businesses were taken over by him.

This method that Fairy Zi Wei obtained was not very useful.

“Even so... I cannot give up on this chance to suppress Fang Yuan.” Fairy Zi Wei thought about it as she gritted her teeth and made her decision.

But unknown to her, while she was thinking, in the depths of her eyes, a dark eerie light flashed for an instant.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1775 Developing Green Ghost Deser

On this night in Southern Border, the starry sky was dim, intense winds were blowing, a storm was about to start.

Two Gu Immortals flew rapidly while hiding their traces, the thick dark clouds providing them an additional layer of concealment.

“It is here.” While moving, one of the Gu Immortals spoke.

The other immediately stopped.

Next, at the center of the dark clouds, an immortal battlefield opened slowly, absorbing the two Gu Immortals before it closed rapidly.

The two Gu Immortals entered the immortal battlefield and removed their disguise, they returned to their normal appearance.

The one with lower cultivation level had an ordinary appearance, but the other was a rank eight Gu Immortal with great authority and reputation, it was the famous Chi clan’s first supreme elder, Chi Qu You!

If other righteous path Gu Immortals saw this, they would stare in disbelief and shout in shock.

The great Chi Qu You was actually sneaking around in the darkness, who was he meeting?

“Senior Chi Qu You, we meet again.” The Gu Immortal defending the immortal battlefield had dream path aura and an ordinary appearance, he was the type that would be indistinguishable in a crowd.

Chi Qu You looked at him and said in displeasure: “Fang Yuan, I thought your main body would come. Hehe, aren’t you being too careful?”

Fang Yuan was the one waiting for Chi Qu You, and this battlefield was yama battlefield.

But Fang Yuan did not come in his main body, this was a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body that he created.

Fang Yuan’s clone smiled: “I am cowardly and afraid of death, please do understand me, Senior Chi Qu You.”

“Cowardly and afraid of death?” Chi Qu You’s eyebrows were raised, he thought of the three rib bones belonging to Thunder Ghost True Monarch that were sold in treasure yellow heaven, and the time when Fang Yuan disguised as Wu Yi Hai, and also the recent losses that he incurred from Fang Yuan’s plundering.

He smiled and said mockingly: “Fang Yuan, you are too humble. I’ve brought the thing that you want, let’s not waste time in case mishaps occur, let’s do the transaction.”

This place was close to Yi Tian Mountain, the location was quite sensitive, Chi Qu You did not dare to be careless.

“Of course.” Fang Yuan’s clone nodded.

The two finished their transaction on the spot.

Chi Qu You obtained an information path mortal Gu, while the Gu Immortal beside him flew towards Fang Yuan’s clone.

The Gu Immortal that came with Chi Qu You was also Fang Yuan’s dream path clone.

After Fang Yuan and Chi Qu You came to an agreement, they first targeted several Southern Border locations and obtained the scattered dream realms, before using pure dream reality seeker transformation to turn them into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

Next, using these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique clones, he communicated with Chi Qu You and met with him.

Chi Qu You brought one of them with him as he entered the secret formation space on Yi Tian Mountain through the backdoor.

There, Fang Yuan’s Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique clone used a method to convert the rest of the dream realms into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies and stuff them into its immortal aperture.

The original Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique came from a Shadow Sect member, wisdom path great expert Old Man Yan Shi. The killer move pure dream reality seeker transformation was the greatest achievement of his lifetime’s research.

The original pure dream reality seeker transformation that he had could create the most extreme form of Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, it had eighteen hours to live, and every two hours, the cultivation level would rise by one rank, at the final moment, it would have rank nine cultivation level.

But after the battle on Yi Tian Mountain, Shadow Sect’s sovereign immortal fetus Gu, which was made from countless years of effort, was obtained by Fang Yuan, while Spectral Soul got trapped in the dream realm.

During the second Yi Tian Mountain battle, Purple Mountain True Monarch brought the remaining Shadow Sect forces to attack, attempting to save Spectral Soul’s main body. During the battle, Purple Mountain True Monarch also used pure dream reality seeker transformation but it was the incomplete version, the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were also flawed, they were not as strong as the original.

The version that Fang Yuan obtained was also this incomplete one, but afterwards, he got the original version from Spectral Soul’s true inheritance.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, this pure dream reality seeker transformation killer move was obtained by Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei had obtained it after soul searching Spectral Soul for a long time.

Not long after, Feng Jin Huang displayed the talent of a future venerable, she actually perfected the original version of pure dream reality seeker transformation which had a huge flaw.

Thereafter, Heavenly Court obtained the perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, the eleventh extreme physique!

During the final battle in Central Continent, when Fang Yuan attacked the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, he captured the perfected Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies from Feng Jin Huang and comprehended their creation, he also obtained the method to create perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

Right now, when Fang Yuan did transactions with Chi Qu You, he did not use the perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, he was using the incomplete killer move that Purple Mountain True Monarch gave him.

Because this incomplete version had a time limit in lifespan, it would self-detonate when the time was up.

Fang Yuan made good use of this flaw, even if Chi Qu You tried to harm him, he would not get the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body.

Before the transaction, Fang Yuan informed Chi Qu You of this flaw.

After learning that the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies would self-detonate, Chi Qu You’s expression turned ugly but for the sake of the dream path research results, he had to accept it!

Seeing that the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body returned to Fang Yuan, he also let out a sigh of relief.

If this thing self-detonated around him, even Chi Qu You’s formation path methods would be ineffective against it!

This transaction carried huge risks for both parties, but the rewards were too alluring, both sides were taking a gamble.

After this first transaction, both parties were quite satisfied, they were more confident now in continuing.

Before leaving, they agreed on the second transaction location and time, they also arranged many secret and safe methods to communicate.

Fang Yuan’s transaction with Chi clan had changed drastically from the previous life.

Last time, Fang Yuan used the dream realms to exchange for Chi clan’s immortal essence stones and immortal materials, that was because he lacked immortal essence at the time.

But now, Fang Yuan annexed Lang Ya blessed land and advanced to rank eight, with his rank eight immortal essence, he did not lack immortal essence at all.

He lacked dream realms instead.

In the previous life, he basically explored all of the dream realms that were scattered outside. only a small portion was worth exploring because he had sold them to Chi Qu You.

Fang Yuan needed a large number of dream realms, those that were on Yi Tian Mountain.

Because he knew that Spectral Soul was a great grandmaster in all paths, his dream realm was on Yi Tian Mountain, there could likely be human path, information path, and qi path dream realms.

If he could completely inherit Spectral Soul's attainment levels, Fang Yuan would be qualified to annex every single rank eight grotto-heaven!

Spectral Soul's human path attainment level was naturally great grandmaster. Without such a foundation, how could he possibly create sovereign immortal fetus Gu?

"My current human path attainment level is at master. This is my accumulation after six hundred years." Fang Yuan knew that with his human path achievement, he could not deal with Heavenly Court's human path methods left by different venerables.

He was still too young, his accumulation was not deep enough!

Red Lotus Demon Venerable lived for three thousand years, this was the shortest among the venerables, but the truth was, due to his rebirths, his lifespan was far beyond three thousand.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable lived for twenty-five thousand years, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable lived for nineteen thousand years while Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable lived for twelve thousand years, these three were the top three venerables in terms of lifespan.

To deal with their methods, Fang Yuan had to use dream realms to grow rapidly.

Other than human path, information path, qi path, and even ice and snow path were areas that Fang Yuan desired.

Fang Yuan's main body was near this transaction location, after Chi Qu You left, he summoned his clones after a while.

Soon, he placed the two Pure Dream clones in his sovereign immortal aperture.

The dream realms that Fang Yuan obtained this time were not human path, they were mostly qi path.

Qi path dream realms were very useful.

If Fang Yuan had great grandmaster attainment level in qi path, he would be able to annex Qi Sea grotto-heaven, his cultivation level would rise drastically!

Fang Yuan stored the dream realms, he activated familiar face, before using Fixed Immortal Travel's killer move to leave Southern Border.

At the next moment, he arrived in Western Desert, he disguised as the wisdom path Gu Immortal Suan Bu Jin again.

After flying for a while in green ghost desert, Fang Yuan saw Fang clan's rank seven Gu Immortal Fang Hua Sheng.

He was the third supreme elder of Fang clan, specialized in healing methods, he wore a white robe and had white hair, as he looked at the approaching Fang Yuan, his stern expression turned into a warm smile.

"Friend Suan Bu Jin, how have you been?" Fang Hua Sheng greeted.

Fang Yuan nodded: “Thanks for the concern. My goal in coming here is to cooperate with Fang clan and develop green ghost desert together.”

Fang Yuan moved quickly and spoke openly, stating his intention without wasting time.

This was different from the previous life.

Last time, Suan Bu Jin’s identity was exposed, his connection to Fang clan was cut. As a result, Fang Yuan had to extort Fang clan using his own identity. Even though Fang clan relented and gave him some resources, it was not part of Fang Yuan’s original plans.

In addition, Fang clan had also promised Fang Yuan an Immortal Gu as a reward, but after he got exposed, they did not act on it afterwards.

Afterwards, when Fang Yuan repaired Dang Hun Mountain, he lacked soul beasts and could not produce enough guts Gu, his own soul path cultivation became very slow.

He had felt regret towards this loss many times.

It hindered his growth tremendously, his cultivation path was disrupted.

But now, Fang Yuan paid attention to this issue and changed it.

Even though Suan Bu Jin had used great thief ghost hand in front of Chen Yi, and also against Feng Jiu Ge in the formation space, the two situations were very different.

Without any evidence, nobody could link Fang Yuan to Suan Bu Jin.

Even though they were both theft path methods, there were still theft path Gu Immortals in the five regions.

Currently, most people thought that in the Lang Ya blessed land battle, Fang Yuan’s theft path method was the foundation of Lang Ya blessed land. After all, Long Hair Ancestor had once worked with Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

Fang Hua Sheng had a grim expression as he sighed: “Ever since the battle of Divine Bean Palace, Suan Bu Jin, you have been vividly etched in our memories. We are more than happy to cooperate with you, but now...”

Fang Hua Sheng said that as he paused, raising his head to observe Fang Yuan’s expression.

But he was going to be disappointed, Fang Yuan’s plain face had no change of expression at all.

Fang Hua Sheng had no choice but to continue: “Right now, our Fang clan is in an awkward position, we are facing pressure from Western Desert’s righteous path which is giving us problems. Especially recently, friend Suan Bu Jin, there have been rumors that you are actually the demon Fang Yuan, because you both possess a method to steal Immortal Gu and also oppose Heavenly Court!”

“That demon Fang Yuan has familiar face after all. He can conceal himself and has a vicious heart, we truly cannot defend against him. Even Heavenly Court is without means against him.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1776 Fang Clan“s External Supreme Elder

Fang Hua Sheng’s ‘problems’ and complaints were actually deliberately mentioned as obstacles to Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan’s expression did not change, his mind was calm and tranquil.

Because he had heard of such rumors long ago.

Since he was going against Heavenly Court, he had to have great foresight. Currently, he was trying to stand above the five regions, using the entire Gu world as the chessboard to compete against Heavenly Court.

Rumors that said ‘Suan Bu Jin and Fang Yuan were the same person’ did not originate from Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei had no evidence, random guesses would only ruin Heavenly Court’s reputation! At most, they could only suspect it and try to help spread this rumor.

The ones who came up with it were Western Desert’s other righteous path forces.

Fang clan had obtained complete victory in the battle over Divine Bean Palace. They defeated Chen Yi and Qing Chou, obtaining Divine Bean Palace and even recruiting two rank seven demonic path experts, Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine.

Fang clan’s gains were huge, after they assimilate this newfound strength, their battle strength would rise greatly, they would jump up and become the number one Western Desert righteous path force.

This would break the current balance, there would be a huge commotion that would affect the righteous path forces’ benefits. Thus, they worked together and tried to suppress Fang clan.

In order to make up excuses so they could act freely, they started looking for reasons.

All sorts of random stories and old feuds were dug up.

Even historical conflicts were taken out and used as excuses.

If they could not find any reasons, what would they do?

They would create reasons.

Using all sorts of rumors and underground information, they could create commotion that sounded reasonable, but would be easily dispelled if effort was placed into answering them.

The rumor that Suan Bu Jin was Fang Yuan was one of them. There was no strong evidence, but did rumors need evidence to begin with?

These were just rules of the game that the righteous path played, they were working together to target Fang clan and needed this layer of reasoning.

Who cared if there was evidence, these reasons were sufficient!

Fang Yuan even suspected that this rumor regarding himself was the inspiration of a random Gu Immortal one day.

This Gu Immortal who created the rumor would likely never think that they had actually hit the nail on the head!

But Fang Yuan was quite sure that Fang clan would not believe this rumor.

Even though Suan Bu Jin appeared abruptly, he had a reasonable background that they could research on.

Fang Yuan made ample preparations for this purpose, he had linked Suan Bu Jin’s background to a Western Desert lone immortal, Zheng Jing Shen.

Fang clan trusted the background that Fang Yuan had provided to a large extent.

Because Zheng Jing Shen had lived tens of thousands of years ago, his relationship with Fang clan was a secret, the other forces did not know it.

Fang clan would not admit that Suan Bu Jin was Fang Yuan in any case. Unless strong evidence forced them to be speechless.

It was like this in the previous life.

Because Fang Yuan’s identity was exposed, Fang clan was quite troubled, Western Desert’s righteous path forces found the perfect excuse and became overjoyed!

Fang Yuan knew that Fang Hua Sheng’s words were simply to gain the maximum benefits for Fang clan.

Fang Yuan sneered internally, he looked at Fang Hua Sheng with a plain gaze: “In that case, forget it. I will look for the other clans to work together.”

Saying this, he turned around and left quickly.

Fang Hua Sheng saw Fang Yuan’s gaze and felt his heart jump, seeing that Fang Yuan was about to leave, he gasped and quickly chased: “Suan Bu Jin, wait, hold up!”

“What is it, is anything the matter?” Fang Yuan slowed down as he floated in the air.

He looked at Fang Hua Sheng with a mocking gaze, saying plainly: “Isn’t Fang clan in huge trouble now and does not want to cooperate?”

Fang Hua Sheng had a bitter smile.

He understood that Fang Yuan knew the fact that Fang clan was trying to extort him through this reason.

But Fang Hua Sheng was helpless, because he was currently exposed.

Regarding this, Fang Hua Sheng was mentally prepared. Because before coming, Fang clan’s wisdom path great grandmaster Fang Di Chang had already informed him.

Suan Bu Jin was a wisdom path Gu Immortal!

Fang Hua Sheng cupped his fist towards Fang Yuan: “Friend Suan Bu Jin, please don’t worry, even though Fang clan is in dire straits now, our determination to cooperate with you has never wavered! Our relationship extends all the way to tens of thousands of years ago, this is really a special connection between us, we need to treasure it.”

“Last time, during the battle over Divine Bean Palace, we worked together harmoniously. If not for your help, we would have had much more difficulties in obtaining Divine Bean Palace. We still owe you the reward for that battle, even though you allowed us to delay the payment, we have never forgotten about it. Before coming, first supreme elder even told me to apologize to you properly regarding that matter.”

Fang Hua Sheng said a long string of beautiful words without any effort.

Fang Yuan felt disdain on the inside but he showed a faint smile, cooperating with Fang Hua Sheng while allowing this matter to end on a nice note.

Fang Yuan said: “I know about Fang clan’s circumstances, you know I am a wisdom path Gu Immortal too, I vitally want to develop green ghost desert as well. I have already written the details of this cooperation, take a look.”

Fang Hua Sheng received the information path mortal Gu, he looked into it, his face turning pale gradually.

The details that Fang Yuan wrote were advantageous to him, the conditions were neither too harsh nor too easy on Fang clan, it was right on Fang clan’s bottom line.

“Friend, you are truly a wisdom path Gu Immortal!” Fang Hua Sheng felt a chill in his heart as he spoke with admiration.

Even though Fang clan obtained Divine Bean Palace, the refinement of this Gu House was very difficult, they were making little progress.

After the battle of Divine Bean Palace, Fang clan’s three Immortal Gu Houses were heavily damaged, Fang clan’s strength fell drastically, they were at their weakest point.

But at this moment, Western Desert’s righteous path forces acted together to suppress Fang clan.

They were in a worrying state now, they needed external help.

Suan Bu Jin was an ideal reinforcement!

Because from Fang clan’s perspective, Suan Bu Jin was a wisdom path Gu Immortal with methods to enslave a soul beast army, during the battle in Divine Bean Palace, he even showed the ability to steal rank eight Immortal Gu Soul Beast Token, it was simply shocking!

Fang clan was very wary regarding Suan Bu Jin, but thankfully they had a historical relationship and had worked together before. At this point, if Fang clan could gain a rank seven expert like him, their morale would rise, it would help this situation greatly.

And if they refused to cooperate with Suan Bu Jin, he might even be forced to join his enemies instead.

If Suan Bu Jin worked with the other righteous path forces, Fang clan’s circumstances would be even worse.

Fang clan was wary of Suan Bu Jin, but they also needed him.

Suan Bu Jin was only a rank seven Gu Immortal, but Fang clan was not able to reject his offer to work together even if they wanted to.

Fang Yuan knew about this point, that was why he acted fearlessly against Fang

Hua Sheng.

“In the negotiation with Chi Qu You earlier, I could have failed. But in this current negotiation, I have no way of losing.” Fang Yuan felt very confident in this.

“Of course, if Suan Bu Jin’s identity is really exposed, Fang clan would never cooperate with me no matter what. That was why I gave up in the previous life and directly extorted them.”

This was the rule of the righteous path.

As for why Chi Qu You took the risk to make transactions with Fang Yuan?

The profits were too immense!

Additionally, Chi Qu You was confident that even if the matter got exposed, he could still deny it, Chi clan also had a formation defending them, they were extremely safe, in the worst case, he just had to give up some resource points.

Chi clan’s circumstances and status were different from Fang clan.

Because of the two clan’s differences, they could make different decisions.

Fang Hua Sheng looked at the contents clearly before returning the information path mortal Gu to Fang Yuan.

But at the same time, he handed another information path mortal Gu to Fang Yuan: “Second supreme elder has personally entrusted this to me. According to your proposal, we can definitely cooperate. But this information path mortal Gu contains another proposal filled with Fang clan’s sincerity, please take a look and consider it.”

Fang Yuan laughed to himself on the inside, he knew what the contents were before he even looked at it.

After taking a look, Fang Yuan’s lips curled up indistinctly.

As expected, Fang clan wrote one condition, they invited Fang Yuan to be their external supreme elder!

Fang Yuan smiled secretly to himself but he showed a hesitant expression, he said to Fang Hua Sheng solemnly: “This is a huge matter, I need a few days to consider it.”

Fang Hua Sheng was overjoyed, he was afraid that Fang Yuan would reject him on the spot, now that he said he would consider it, it meant that he was inclined to accept the offer.

It was not strange for him to be moved by it, back then, when Fang Hua Sheng first saw the plan to recruit Fang Yuan, he was very shocked too, to think that the clan was willing to pay such a huge price!

Fang Hua Sheng quickly said: “Please take your time to consider it, I’m sure you can see Fang clan’s sincerity and foundation, even though this is a difficult time, our future is bright. The truth is, our clan already has some progress in refining Divine Bean Palace.”

Fang Yuan gasped as he showed an obvious expression of being moved.

But he was rolling his eyes internally.

Fang clan’s progress in refining Divine Bean Palace was definitely very slow.

The reason?

Because they did not use it to fight even during the final battle in Central Continent.

Fang Hua Sheng was simply lying through his teeth!

But that was not Fang Yuan’s concern.

He decided to agree to Fang clan’s request and become their external supreme elder. Given enough time, with his own information path methods, no agreements could bind him.

With this relationship, the development of green ghost desert would become even smoother. Fang Yuan would also gain a lot of cultivation resources as his reward for joining Fang clan.

These resources moved Fang Yuan as well.

But he could not agree now, if he did, it would seem like he was too eager.

That was not how Suan Bu Jin would act.

Fang clan’s wisdom path great grandmaster Fang Di Chang had incredible methods and capability, Fang Yuan had witnessed it personally, he could not underestimate him.

At this point, Fang Yuan said goodbye to Fang Hua Sheng.

“Goodbye, friend.” Fang Hua Sheng stayed as he watched Fang Yuan leave, he had an expression of sincerity on his face.

Fang Yuan felt a little amused: “I will agree to this in a few days. If one day, my identity gets exposed, I wonder how Fang clan would react?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1777 Ink Effect

Sovereign grotto-heaven.

In Mini Southern Border, a damaged mountain stood proudly on the ground.

Even though it was damaged, the surrounding mounds were still like tiny pebbles compared to it.

Different from normal mountains, it looked like it was made of crystals, it was pink throughout while emitting the colors of dreams and illusions.

It was the secluded domain of heaven and earth recorded in u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e – Dang Hun Mountain!

Fang Yuan’s divine sense went around it entirely: “Dang Hun Mountain is about eighty percent repaired, this is way faster compared to the previous life.”

Compared to now, his previous life was truly pitiful.

Firstly, he did not annex Lang Ya blessed land, the battle expended a lot of his immortal essence storage. Afterwards, he attacked Southern Border’s areas and stole dream realms, before transacting with Chi Qu You to gain a large number of immortal essence stones, finally replenishing his immortal essence storage.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan used landscape as before Immortal Gu to repair Dang Hun Mountain, he expended a vast amount of immortal essence!

Landscape as Before was just rank six while Fang Yuan’s immortal essence was rank seven, he also faced pressure from the outside, be they Heavenly Court or Southern Border, they wanted to create problems for him.

For a long time, Fang Yuan’s immortal essence storage was kept at a dangerous level, he could not accumulate any as his expenditure was huge.

But now, after annexing Lang Ya blessed land, everything was different.

He became a rank eight Gu Immortal, he was able to produce rank eight white litchi immortal essence in his sovereign immortal aperture in advance, it was the same as a hundred red date immortal essence beads. That was to say, Fang Yuan’s immortal essence was produced at a hundred times the efficiency as the previous life!

At the same time, Fang Yuan had rank seven Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, while Lang Ya blessed land itself had a huge stock of immortal essence stones.

This huge foundation was sustaining Fang Yuan, he faced no problems in terms of immortal essence.

By spending a huge amount of immortal essence without concern, Dang Hun Mountain was being repaired at an extremely fast rate, far superior than his previous life!

In the previous life, at this time, Dang Hun Mountain was only thirty percent repaired. But now, it was already eighty percent repaired, given just a bit more time, it would be fully repaired.

If Landscape as Before had a higher rank, the recovery speed would be even faster.

Currently, Landscape as Before was merely rank six, using it to repair Dang Hun Mountain was like chopping a tree using a knife.

Even though Fang Yuan had rank eight Immortal Gu Advance Refinement and the Long Hair refinement path formation, he was unwilling to take the risk to refine Landscape as Before due to his vigilant nature.

Unless he obtains regret Gu and creates Regret Pool.

The success rate of Gu refinement was too low, if he failed and the Immortal Gu got destroyed, it would be a disaster.

Fang Yuan had thought of the vital Gu.

When a vital Gu is refined, no matter how many times it fails, it would not die.

But Fang Yuan’s clone had Spring Autumn Cicada as its vital Gu, while the sovereign immortal body was created using sovereign immortal fetus Gu, it had no such thing as a vital Gu.

“If I can obtain a Gu Immortal’s body and use split soul to turn it into my clone, I can change the vital Gu and refine landscape as before Immortal Gu using it, that would be safer.”

But this plan could not be done now.

It was not that he could not capture Gu Immortals, he had a batch of them now.

But the problem was, the amount of expended soul foundation was huge, with his current foundation, he could not use split soul.

Whenever a wisdom path Gu Immortals makes deductions on Fang Yuan, emperor yama would activate and expend his soul foundation.

Every Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body that Fang Yuan creates would expend his soul foundation.

The same went for myriad self.

And exploring dream realms also damaged the soul.

...

With all these reasons, Fang Yuan’s soul was constantly being drained.

Especially recently, Fairy Zi Wei had been deducing matters on Fang Yuan every now and then, causing emperor yama to be activated continuously, Fang Yuan was consistently pestered, his guts Gu storage was reaching its end.

Ever since rebirth, even though the ink effect gave Fang Yuan lots of benefits, there were also problems that happened.

In the previous life, his soul foundation was able to last for a long time. But now, it was terrible, at this rate, he would finish his stock of guts Gu, Fang Yuan would need to use other soul path methods instead.

These soul path methods all had their downsides, none were as useful as guts Gu.

“There is another issue, Heavenly Court has started to take over the dragonfish business.”

“Heavenly Court is actually selling a large number of iron dragonfish and silver dragonfish, they seem to be able to produce golden dragonfish too, it is causing a great impact to my dragonfish business!”

“Even though this happened in the previous life as well, it occurred much later, to think that it would happen in advance now.”

But Fang Yuan was helpless about this.

Spectral Soul was taken captive, Fairy Zi Wei was likely provoked by the loss in Lang Ya blessed land, she intensified the soul search on Spectral Soul and obtained the information regarding the dragonfish business.

“It seems that Spectral Soul is starting to lose his hold.”

“Even in the previous life when Longevity Heaven attacked Heavenly Court, he did not show up, he was imprisoned all along.”

Fang Yuan sighed, retracting his complex emotions.

He had no time to waste.

He had to use every minute and every second, who knew if this extra second would be significant during the huge battle in the future, any bit of accumulation mattered greatly.

Fang Yuan’s post-rebirth plans were progressing smoothly and gradually.

Lang Ya blessed land was annexed, he became a rank eight Gu Immortal, after which he took in the four races alliance and gained a huge foundation.

His human path attainment broke through to master level.

Chi Qu You made a transaction with him, the contents were even more advantageous to him than in the previous life.

There was also Fang clan trying to recruit him, the plan to develop green ghost desert was going to be very helpful..

All of these changes and accumulations were totally beyond his previous life!

Fang Yuan did not relax at all.

He knew that the Southern Border’s leaders were going to meet and create a group to chase after him next.

On one hand, Fang Yuan’s attack was a type of provocation towards the Southern Border righteous path, they had to make an active response.

On the other hand, Wu clan, Tie clan, Ba clan, and the others also wanted to gain some benefits from this and raise their reputation, they wanted to gain a larger say in this group.

“There should be some time left.”

“Because Southern Border’s righteous path clans will not have an easy time coming up with a plan or conclusion.”

“They need to compete against each other, with the emergence of Earth Trenches, the clans need to fight for natural resources, they have a lot of conflict among themselves.”

Currently, Tie clan’s Beacon Tower plan had not started yet, even though Tie clan promoted it, the clans were not willing to let it start.

In fact, the Southern Border Alliance was nowhere to be seen.

Wu Yong had such ambitions, but if he mentioned it now, it would be a joke!

Fang Yuan had a lot of things to do.

Firstly, he needed to modify his jade flow pearl killer move. This killer move used rank seven Fixed Immortal Travel as the core and almost all of Fang Yuan’s current space path Immortal Gu, a few refinement path Immortal Gu, and a lot of supplementary mortal Gu to construct.

He had used this killer move many times, it was already exposed.

Even though Chi Qu You was transacting with him secretly, he would definitely search for relevant information and look for other wisdom path immortals to find a way to counter it.

To prevent himself from being countered, Fang Yuan needed to modify it and create a new version just in case.

Because now, Bai Ning Bing, Ying Wu Xie, and the rest were still cultivating on the stone lotus island.

Omni-directional Travel could not be used now. Even though Xue Er, Mo Tan Sang, and Shi Shi Cheng were prospective replacements, Fang Yuan did not practise with them a lot, they were far from actually mastering it.

In terms of movement, Fang Yuan was heavily relying on Omni-directional Travel and Fixed Immortal Travel’s killer move. If these two methods were unusable and Fang Yuan got encircled, he would be in trouble.

One could never be too careful, the killer move involving Fixed Immortal Travel was Fang Yuan’s method of escaping if an unexpected mishap occurred.

Next, he had to repair Spring Autumn Cicada.

Currently, he was already using immortal killer moves to help the weakened rank six Spring Autumn Cicada recover more quickly.

He also had to develop his businesses aggressively. The dragonfish business was heavily affected, Heavenly Court had a deep foundation, Fang Yuan could not compete against it. Many of Lang Ya blessed land’s businesses were needed by Fang Yuan himself, the rest needed to be adapted to suit Fang Yuan’s current needs.

Additionally, Fang Yuan also disguised his identity in treasure yellow heaven and purchased immemorial year beasts.

As for the conceptualization of the incomplete Immortal Gu House, as well as the deduction of the killer move Gu as before, they were underway.

Fang Yuan wanted to create his personal Immortal Gu House.

In the previous life, his Immortal Gu House was constantly destroyed or damaged. These terrible experiences were precious to the current him, he had benefited greatly.

His gains ever since he was reborn were quickly absorbed, Fang Yuan made use of every minute and second to grow stronger rapidly!

Several days later.

Western Desert, Fang clan’s headquarters.

“It is truly our clan’s blessing that friend Suan Bu Jin could join us! From today onwards, you will be renowned throughout Western Desert, or even the other four regions.” Fang clan’s first supreme elder Fang Gong held Fang Yuan’s hands warmly.

Fang Yuan smiled as he pulled back his hand inconspicuously.

This old man looked very valiant and up-front on the outside but was actually devious and sinister. Fang Yuan had witnessed him sneak attacking Chen Yi and beating him up in Divine Bean Palace.

“The moment I joined Fang clan, Fang Gong came to welcome me personally, while Fang Di Chang and the rest can’t wait to spread news of this. It seems that Fang clan is truly in a bad state now.” Fang Yuan thought about it, he looked towards Fang Di Chang as he smiled.

Fang Di Chang had a strange feeling of nervousness, he thought to himself: “What is going on? Why do I have a bad feeling all of a sudden?”

At the next moment, Fang Di Chang’s and Fang Gong’s expressions changed.

Fang Gong shouted loudly: “Such guts! Demonic path Gu Immortals dare to attack our clan’s precious heavenly dew oasis, do they think that our Fang clan is easy to bully?”

Fang Di Chang had a grim expression as he said: “It is a complex matter, it might not be demonic path Gu Immortals but other forces instead. Especially now when elder Suan Bu Jin has just joined us, we have just released this information in treasure yellow heaven but this actually happened...”

Fang Yuan snorted coldly from agitation, he had a grim expression: “Let me handle this.”

Fang Di Chang and Fang Gong looked at each other rapidly, Fang Gong clapped: “Wonderful, elder, we will wait for good news from you.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1778 Fang and Fang Scheming Each Other

The desert extended to the horizon, intense winds whipped up a yellow sandstorm, shrouding the world.

Fang Yuan’s body moved like light smoke, traveling rapidly within the sandstorm.

An oasis with a huge area appeared in his vision.

This was heavenly dew oasis.

The oasis had a large lake that had a lot of water in it, it was almost like a small sea.

Acupuncture trees were planted all around this lake.

This tree was dark green in color, it resembled a human shape with arms and legs. Its legs were stabbed into the depths of the desert, absorbing water and maintaining its vitality. Its arms were either spread out or pointed towards the sky. Some were standing, their arms bent and their pinky fingers pointed towards their heads, as if they were picking their noses. Some were completely lying on the ground like a lazy person, the hands were placed behind their heads as they looked up at the sky.

A large number of acupuncture trees, several hundreds of them, surrounded heavenly dew oasis tightly, forming the first line of defense.

Ordinary acupuncture trees were the most numerous, they were ten to twenty feet tall, they looked like still giants.

There were also several hundred desolate plant acupuncture trees, they were even larger, at fifty to sixty feet tall, they were very grand.

There were also ten or so ancient desolate plant acupuncture trees. They were large like mountains, even if they were lying down, they were extremely conspicuous among the other trees.

At ancient desolate level, the acupuncture trees would blossom every year, the petals were snow-white. The core had rainbow colors that were mostly pink, yellow, and light blue. Each petal was a seed of the acupuncture tree, it could scatter with the wind.

The acupuncture tree was very valuable, it had great use.

Each leaf, each branch, and each root was a Gu material, it had rich fire path and wood path dao marks.

When a strong enemy attacks, these acupuncture trees would stand up like giants, waving their limbs around and moving in the desert, they would fight the enemies using their strength and sharp needles.

During normal times, they would be peaceful. When they met someone they favored, they would move their needles to pierce into them and inject some liquid.

This liquid was like spring water but it had great value, it could increase the vitality and foundation of the living being, it could alleviate fatigue and illnesses, even treating diseases. By using the acupuncture needles regularly, one could stay healthy and strong, they can even live longer.

Ignoring the more valuable lake, just these acupuncture trees surrounding it were very valuable, they made this heavenly dew oasis a giant resource point!

This oasis was famous in Western Desert, it was one of the top ten oases, Fang clan had placed much importance into this asset.

Even though Fang Yuan’s dragonfish sea was a giant resource point too, it was dwarfed in comparison with this oasis.

“Recently, Fang clan has faced the suppression of the other Western Desert forces. Among all of their resource points, the small ones are being affected and even taken away. This time, heavenly dew oasis was attacked, Fang clan’s limit for tolerance was touched so Fang Gong showed deep anger in response.”

After a while, Fang Yuan arrived above heavenly dew oasis.

The formation of heavenly dew oasis was already activated, it was resisting a mysterious Gu Immortal.

This Gu Immortal cultivated soul path, he wore a black robe and above him, there was a dark cloud, he was surrounded by grey-white vengeful spirits that moved around in the sky.

He moved in a peculiar manner, his killer move was outstanding, each attack would emit a shrill noise that made people feel goosebumps all over!

The Fang clan Gu Immortal defending heavenly dew oasis had already activated the formation.

But Fang clan’s formations were inferior to Chi clan, their strong point was in Immortal Gu Houses!

Furthermore, this Western Desert soul path Gu Immortal attacked peculiarly and ruthlessly, half the formation was already destroyed, he was rampaging in heavenly dew oasis.

Fang Yuan did not conceal his aura, he arrived in the battlefield and attacked the soul path Gu Immortal.

Boom boom boom!

The two fought as they created thunderous noises, air currents surged and created huge waves in the oasis lake.

Fang clan’s Gu Immortal contacted Fang Yuan and asked him to help, but Fang Yuan only told him to defend the oasis.

The Fang clan Gu Immortal was worried because the soul path Gu Immortal was very strong, he felt very uneasy in this situation.

But Fang Yuan showed an even stronger stance.

He had many Immortal Gu, while acting as Suan Bu Jin, even with just wisdom path methods, he had a variety of different methods that could not be dealt with easily.

The soul path Gu Immortal had peculiar methods but Fang Yuan’s wisdom path killer moves were more exquisite, filled with wisdom and elegance.

As the two fought, Fang Yuan gained the upper hand, he slowly obtained control over the tempo of the battle.

The Western Desert soul path Gu Immortal became more fierce in his attacks as he shouted: “Who are you? How did Fang clan find someone like you!”

Fang Yuan laughed loudly: “I am wisdom path Suan Bu Jin, an external supreme elder of Fang Yuan. I have just joined Fang clan but you jumped out to provoke me, you are simply looking down on me, I will take your life!”

Fang Yuan’s display of killing intent surged as he forced the soul path Gu Immortal back into a dangerous spot.

The Fang clan Gu Immortal inside the formation felt a chill in his heart, this newly joined supreme elder of the clan was definitely not a kind or easygoing person.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with brilliance, his face was full of sternness and arrogance.

He waved his sleeves as he attacked like raging tides, his attacks were very powerful, the spectator was deeply shocked.

After a while, the soul path Gu Immortal shouted loudly, he seemed to have used a killer move with deep backlash, his face turned pale as his aura became dim, he was very weakened now.

But his speed increased rapidly, he flew out of the battlefield like a sharp arrow.

“Where are you going!” Fang Yuan shouted loudly, chasing relentlessly.

Under the Fang clan’s Gu Immortal’s expectant gaze, Fang Yuan chased after the soul path Gu Immortal.

Fang clan headquarters.

In the room, Fang Gong and Fang Di Chang were discussing their plan in secret.

All of a sudden, they stopped their discussions at the same time.

“Oh? Suan Bu Jin made the strong enemy retreat, he is really fast.” Fang Di

Chang smiled.

“But...” Fang Gong had a low tone: “According to the information, Suan Bu Jin chased after him but returned midway. According to Suan Bu Jin, he returned in order to prevent the enemy from setting a trap and ambushing him elsewhere. What do you think about that?”

Fang Di Chang smiled: “Suan Bu Jin is a wisdom path Gu Immortal like me. He might have found some clues and sensed a scheme. Or maybe, he did not want to spend so much effort on this, forcing the enemy away was already enough to show some credit for his work. He is not a Fang clansman after all, he joined us because the rewards were plentiful, and also because he wants to develop green ghost desert with us.”

Fang Di Chang’s analysis of Fang Yuan was very in-depth.

Fang Gong nodded: “Suan Bu Jin has good strength, his methods are numerous. Should we rope him into this plan too?”

Fang Di Chang shook his head: “I would not advise you to do that. He has just joined us, we do not know about his background yet. Even though we have the agreement, we cannot entrust everything to it. He is an uncertainty.”

Fang Gong pondered: “Then forget it, I just felt that it was a pity, he has great battle strength after all.”

Fang Di Chang smiled: “Actually, even without him, our arrangements are sufficient already. Even if he does not join our secret plan, he can also provide some help.”

“We should let him defend heavenly dew oasis instead, we can bring the rank seven member back to participate in this.”

“In that case, we can show that our Fang clan is willing to give outsiders a chance, we can use Suan Bu Jin as a good example. With the results of this battle and our spreading of the news, he will gain huge fame, he will become an eyesore of the Western Desert righteous path forces, he will draw a lot of the attention away from us.”

“Hahaha.” Fang Gong laughed, looking at Fang Di Chang with deep admiration: “It is truly great that our Fang clan has a wisdom path great grandmaster like you.”

The next day.

“Letting me defend this place?” Fang Yuan looked at heavenly dew oasis as his thoughts moved rapidly like lightning, he was already using his wisdom path killer moves.

“I have just joined Fang clan but they actually let me defend this place alone, they deployed the original rank seven Gu Immortal elsewhere.”

“And with the battle earlier, Fang clan promoted it intensely, the Western Desert righteous path is already onto me.”

“Normally speaking, Fang clan should deploy one Gu Immortal here to keep an eye on me. But not only did they not do that, Fang clan’s experts are also moving in a peculiar fashion, it seems that they are going to attempt something big.”

“In the previous life, what did Fang clan do?”

Fang Yuan frowned.

In the previous life, because Suan Bu Jin got exposed, Fang Yuan did not pay much attention to Fang clan.

Fang Yuan did not know how Fang clan countered the suppression of Western Desert’s righteous path, what happened from now until the time Fang clan took the lead to attack Emperor City?

“It seems that Western Desert’s righteous path had worked together to conceal the truth?”

“Or perhaps, something has changed in this life already, the ink effect has already spread until here.”

Fang Yuan lacked information now, he could not think of any plan, for the following period, he could only wait and see what happens. On one hand, he can wait for the development here, on the other hand, he had to continue his plans.

“Ying Wu Xie, where are you now?” He contacted Ying Wu Xie.

Within green ghost desert, a soul path Gu Immortal looked at the dark sky as he moved with his head lowered: “Reporting to sect leader, I am already inside green ghost desert.”

It was Ying Wu Xie!

Not long ago, Fang Yuan had secretly brought him out of the stone lotus island and gave him Yang San Mu’s body, immortal aperture, his soul path Gu worms, and the modified soul path killer moves.

Ying Wu Xie had changed his appearance already.

If Fang clan’s Gu Immortals saw him now, they would be enraged: “Isn’t this the mysterious Gu Immortal who attacked our heavenly dew oasis yesterday?!”

“Very good, I have already handed Soul Beast Token to you, go ahead and develop the army.”

“Keep in contact with me at all times.”

“I already have Fixed Immortal Travel’s killer move now, I can reinforce you at any time.”

“Don’t be careless and end up in an immortal battlefield or a formation space.” Fang Yuan added.

“I understand, sect leader.” Ying Wu Xie replied respectfully: “With me here, there will be an unceasing supply of soul beasts!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1779 Killer Move Steal Dao

Suan Bu Jin was just a disguise, Fang Yuan knew that in order to join Fang clan, his biggest obstacle was Fang Di Chang.

Because he was a wisdom path great grandmaster.

Usually, only experts among rank eights had great grandmaster attainment level, they were hard to deal with.

There would be too many traces left behind if Fang Yuan tried to use wisdom path methods to deal with Fang Di Chang’s deductions. After all, Fang Yuan was just a wisdom path grandmaster, he was skilled at deductions and killer move modification in terms of wisdom path.

Using the light of wisdom, in terms of deducing killer moves, he was the number one person in the world.

But dealing with other Gu Immortals and resisting other wisdom path Gu Immortals’ deductions was not Fang Yuan’s expertise.

After Fang Yuan joins Fang clan, it might stir some strange feelings in Fang Di Chang.

Wisdom path Gu Immortals were usually very calm, if their mental state was affected and their emotions changed, it would signify a huge problem.

Thus, Fang Yuan arranged for Ying Wu Xie to disguise as a Western Desert Gu Immortal and attack Fang clan’s heavenly dew oasis.

As expected, Fang Di Chang fell for it and did not suspect Fang Yuan.

Making Ying Wu Xie attack heavenly dew oasis had another deeper meaning.

It was to help Fang Yuan ‘integrate’ into Fang clan more quickly.

Suan Bu Jin had worked with Fang clan to fight over Divine Bean Palace, but he had just joined the clan, Western Desert’s righteous path was not familiar with him, while Fang clan held suspicion towards his loyalty.

At this time, Fang Yuan arranged for such an event, he displayed his own battle strength and to a certain extent, his loyalty towards Fang clan.

“However... Fang Di Chang’s wisdom path attainment level is higher than mine, the more we interact, the more likely he would be to find out the truth.” Fang Yuan alerted himself.

Dealing with a wisdom path great grandmaster was too troublesome!

Even though Fang Yuan was using familiar face killer move, he was in danger of getting exposed.

Other than that, there was another risk: Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie’s disguise method was not special, after all soul path did not specialize in that. Furthermore, legendary immemorial soul beast Qing Chou was likely still lurking somewhere in green ghost desert.

These were all hidden dangers and risks.

But compared to these risks, Fang Yuan’s need for a vast number of soul beasts to raise his soul path cultivation level was greater.

He was willing to take the risk!

“Even though I joined Fang clan and they agreed to develop green ghost desert, giving me a portion of the soul cores once in a while, they are very busy now and because they have some stockpile of soul cores, they will likely hand me these accumulated soul cores during this period of time.”

Fang Yuan had already expected this, he needed to rely on himself for the development of green ghost desert.

Fang Yuan had not thought of relying on Fang clan to capture soul beasts for him. In that situation, Fang clan would not try their best after all.

The truth was, Fang Yuan did not want Fang clan to overly take control of green ghost desert.

The cooperation with them was to prevent Fang clan from causing trouble. After all, there was only one clan, Fang clan, around the vicinity of green ghost desert.

Fang Yuan could not station himself in green ghost desert, he had to arrange pawns like Ying Wu Xie. If Fang clan found trouble with him, they could not deal with Fang Yuan easily, but Ying Wu Xie was an easy target.

Fang Yuan had considered many things.

In this case, he had to cooperate with Fang clan first.

Even though Fang clan did not have effective methods to use the soul beasts, they would capture many soul beasts each year and extract their soul cores, it could build up their inventory and also be sold for profit.

If Fang Yuan tried to hunt in green ghost desert alone using Suan Bu Jin’s identity, Fang clan would find him an eyesore.

As the super force that was the closest to green ghost desert, Fang clan had already treated green ghost desert as their own territory.

Fang Yuan could not eliminate them entirely, he had to choose to work with them. Turning an enemy into a friend was also a way of eliminating an enemy.

From Fang Yuan’s perspective, killing was just a method.

Other than killing, there were many other methods he could use.

To achieve his goals, he had to use the most appropriate and effective method, regardless of what it entailed.

This was different from Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable handled matters and conflict with basically one method.

That was to kill!

You do not relent? Kill!

You are an eyesore? Kill!

His own mood was bad? Kill!

He was bored? Kill!

Fang Yuan began to inspect heavenly dew oasis.

He had already seen the acupuncture trees, they were at the periphery. But he had to enter the formation to observe the lake water within it.

Heavenly dew oasis not only had a lot of water resources, they were of various types.

Commonly seen were delicate springs, jade toad drool, bitter fragrance water, more rare ones included divine strength water, black-white water, and others.

There was a huge quantity of Gu materials, with immortal materials of all kinds.

For example, even though divine strength water was a type of water, it contained strength path dao marks, it was a rank six strength path immortal material in the market.

In mortal fables, divine strength water had a lot of names, often, when mortal heroes drink this water, they would gain divine strength and be able to defeat evil Gu Masters.

And because this divine strength water was an immortal material, drinking it without food path methods would kill even a Gu Immortal just because of its strength path dao marks!

Therefore, the mortals of these stories often die themselves after taking revenge.

The most important one was black-white water.

Black-white water was a rank seven immortal material, it was situated at the center of heavenly dew oasis.

During daytime, the black-white water would be white, during night, it would be black.

Placing the black-white water there while exposed to the sky, as the days and nights cycle, the black-white water would create drops of heavenly dew.

The heavenly dew was transparent and looked like a droplet, it was round and each drop had the size of a baby’s finger.

The heavenly dew could not fuse together, droplets could only be placed together but not as one entity.

The most valuable thing in heavenly dew oasis was the heavenly dew.

It was a rank eight immortal material!

Fang Yuan soon found that this black-white water region had a hundred droplets of heavenly dew accumulated here.

Ying Wu Xie attacked this place but did not reach the center, the heavenly dew that had accumulated for half a year was still here.

Fang Yuan smiled as he stored thirty droplets of heavenly dew away without hesitation.

This was the hidden rule of the righteous path.

Any Gu Immortal sent to defend the resource points would secretly keep a portion of the resources for their own cultivation needs.

Of course, this was not an outright rule.

But basically, all the super forces allowed this.

Being stationed outside to defend resource points was a tough job, it had risks. Without this benefit, who would want to do it?

In the five hundred years of his previous life, Fang Yuan had learned about these things. Taking thirty drops of heavenly dew was the limit already, this was a valuable sum, it was three months of heavenly dew oasis' accumulation! If he took more, Fang clan would not be happy, they would accuse him of embezzlement.

"It is a pity that the nine heavens shattered, only black heaven and white heaven are left."

"If the nine heavens were around, according to this heavenly dew oasis' location, this would not be black-white water but rank eight immortal material nine colored water. Nine colored water faces the sky and experiences the nine different heavens continuously, with the direct rays of the stars, moon, and sun from the nine heavens, it would produce a drop of nine heavenly star sweat every year from this nine colored water."

Nine heavenly star sweat was a rank nine immortal material, it was one of the three waters of heaven and earth, along with myriad being creation water and rising falling tide water. It had extreme value, it was rare even among rank nine immortal materials.

Different from the three fires of heaven and earth, the nine heavenly star sweat of the three waters of heaven and earth had already vanished.

Because seven of the nine heavens were already gone, only two heavens were left.

After looking at all the resources, Fang Yuan sighed in admiration, this heavenly dew oasis was truly one of Western Desert's top ten oases, he looked at the formation again.

He was tasked to guard this place, he obviously could use the formation.

Fang clan gave him the methods to utilize this formation, Fang Yuan tried activating them and comprehending the workings of this formation.

He had formation path grandmaster attainment level, he also had wisdom path methods, he quickly gained some knowledge.

Compared to Chi clan, Fang clan's defensive formation at heavenly dew oasis was not impressive. Thus, Fang clan spent a lot of effort to place the acupuncture trees here as a form of defense.

Fang clan was like Chi clan, they excelled in formation path.

But the difference was, Fang clan excelled in Immortal Gu Houses, because Immortal Gu Houses were a type of mobile immortal formation.

Meanwhile, Chi clan excelled in creating immobile formations, that was the mainstream of formation path.

And most importantly, Chi clan had a formation path great grandmaster, Chi Qu You!

Formation path Gu Immortals who had great grandmaster attainment level could use natural dao marks to set up immortal formations. Not only could they save on Immortal Gu, they could even use the environment to create strong defenses while helping the development of the resource point, increasing its yield.

Fang clan set up this formation in heavenly dew oasis, they used many Immortal Gu. But the formation's main purpose was to increase the heavenly dew production, it was not focused on defense.

“But Fang clan’s specialty is very strong too.”

“They own multiple Immortal Gu Houses, not only do they have high mobility, they can use the Immortal Gu Houses to fight rank eight enemies with just rank six Gu Immortals.”

“If I am Fang clan’s leader, in this situation, I would gather my people to attack one enemy, by displaying a fierce demeanor, we can intimidate and deter the rest of the Western Desert righteous path forces.”

“But they would need to pay close attention to the extent of their actions, if they go overboard, they would be in trouble. If they do too little, it would deter no one.”

Fang Yuan was thinking about Fang clan and Western Desert’s righteous path forces now.

He had to cultivate during this period of time, processing his gains and modifying killer moves, it did not matter if he was in Western Desert or Southern Border.

Time was quite pressing.

Very soon, Southern Border’s righteous path would come to agreement, they would come after him.

Flipping heaven sand sea.

Huge sand waves were rising and falling continuously. Under the rays of the moonlight, white sand looked like snow, sand waves rose to tens of feet with a grand aura, it was a famous sight in Western Desert.

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals had secretly gathered, approaching treasure moon oasis within the sand sea.

“According to the intel, Dong clan’s Dong Lu Chen has already arrived. Let’s go!’ Fang Di Chang transmitted secretly.

“Good!” Fang Gong burst out with overwhelming aura, attacking treasure moon oasis directly.

Dong Lu Chen flew up, his rank eight aura also permeated the area, he shouted with shock and anger: “Fang Gong, I did not approach you for trouble, but you are actually attacking me!”

Fang Gong roared: “Cut the crap, let’s fight.”

The battle of two rank eight Gu Immortals caused thunderous sounds and intense explosions.

Dong Lu Chen was in a passive spot, he was quite restricted as he had to defend the treasure moon oasis behind him.

He blocked Fang Gong’s attacks as his expression sank: “Fang clan, just you wait! You dare to attack the territory of righteous path forces, you have broken the rules, in just a while, the whole of Western Desert’s super forces will inflict judgment upon you!”

“Is that so? Didn’t your Dong clan spread the rumor that treasure moon oasis was once attacked by our clan? Since you do not have evidence, we are so kind as to come here and give you some evidence.” A strangely shaped broken Immortal Gu House flew into the sky, Fang Di Chang’s voice came from within it.

Dong Lu Chen became even more furious: “Fang Di Chang, you are a mere rank seven, you dare...”

Before he finished, Fang clan’s Immortal Gu House unleashed an immortal killer move.

Dong Lu Chen’s anger vanished all of a sudden, replaced by deep shock and fear.

“This immortal killer move, don’t tell me?!”

“Exactly, it is the killer move that Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable used to create his path — Steal Dao!” Fang Di Chang answered.

“No!” Dong Lu Chen growled, he turned to look at treasure moon oasis.

Due to the killer move steal dao, the countless natural dao marks of treasure moon oasis became exposed, they were either long or short, most were lines that weaved together, forming some sort of mysterious shape. Some were like webs while others were like balls of thread, accumulating into a mountain.

Dong Lu Chen tried to stop them but it was futile.

He watched with a furious expression as these dao marks were all drawn into that theft path Immortal Gu House that Fang clan owned.

This was the power of the killer move steal dao!

By activating this move, one could directly steal dao marks.

In the past, after creating this move, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable gathered enough foundation to trigger a qualitative change, officially establishing the new Gu path, theft path.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1780 Crime Scene

Fang clan’s assault shook the whole of Western Desert’s righteous path.

Undeniably, steal dao was a powerful weapon, at once, the entirety of Western Desert’s righteous path forces were intimidated.

Fang Yuan soon received word of this battle, the details were very specific, there was a video of the entire battle.

This was naturally given to him by Fang clan.

“Fang clan has a Thieving Heaven true inheritance!” Fang Yuan was quite shocked at this discovery.

Fang Yuan soon thought of great thief Immortal Gu.

He had obtained this Immortal Gu from Fang clan.

According to rumors, Fang clan had obtained this great thief Immortal Gu by chance. A lone immortal who joined them had contributed it.

“It seems that back then, Fang clan not only obtained great thief Immortal Gu, they also obtained clues to a Thieving Heaven true inheritance.”

“The foundation of a super force, truly...”

Fang Yuan shook his head.

Like Wu Yong’s Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and Fang clan’s theft path Immortal Gu House as well as the killer move steal dao, these trump cards were all able to rapidly change the disadvantageous situation that they were facing.

“Undeniably, this is a huge deterrence to the other clans. Fang clan’s situation is going to change because of this, it seems that in my previous life, this was the reason why the entire righteous path relented.”

Steal dao could steal dao marks, once used, it could destroy a natural resource point.

The main foundation of righteous path forces were these scattered resource points.

Different from destroying these resource points, steal dao had an immediate effect, its effect could directly cripple the resource point without any way of recovering it!

With Fang clan’s assault, Dong clan’s first supreme elder Dong Lu Chen remained unscathed but the entire treasure moon oasis was wiped from existence.

If they truly forced Fang clan to use this method without restraint, which Western Desert righteous path force could handle their retaliation?

Even a rank eight Gu Immortal like Dong Lu Chen could not do anything!

Fang Yuan praised Fang Di Chang’s decision internally.

He chose a strong enemy and attacked the location guarded by Dong Lu Chen.

This was a strong deterrence to the other forces.

At the same time, he did not go overboard.

Treasure moon oasis was a mid sized resource point, it was not even a large resource point. It bore a special meaning to Dong Lu Chen because his beloved wife was buried there, so every year at a certain time, he would go there and mourn her death.

As a result, Dong clan’s losses were not severe, while Dong Lu Chen was not particularly angry. Only the dao marks were lost, his wife’s grave was not touched at all.

“They really had a good grasp of the situation! By making full use of this battle result, they not only deterred Western Desert’s righteous path, they also sought to intimidate me.”

Fang Yuan held the information path mortal Gu in his hand as he laughed coldly.

In this Gu, Fang Di Chang also mentioned the heavenly dew, he said: There should be very little heavenly dew lost from the battle, only about ten droplets. He asked Fang Yuan to look around, he might find the remaining twenty somewhere.

Fang Yuan had taken thirty droplets earlier, he reported it to Fang clan as the loss from the battle, Ying Wu Xie had caused it when he attacked, in the future, production might also fall.

This was just an excuse, both him and Fang clan knew the truth clearly.

But Fang clan did not accommodate to this, they warned him in a subtle manner: Don’t go overboard, ten droplets is enough, hand over the remaining twenty!

Heavenly dew was a rank eight immortal material after all, Fang clan did not want to give up this profit.

Of course, they were also trying to suppress Fang Yuan. You had just joined us recently but already wants to keep some profits for yourself? Control yourself! Look at this battle, our Fang clan is still very strong, you should consider the gains and losses carefully!

This was the true meaning of Fang Di Chang’s letter to Fang Yuan.

Conversation among righteous path members was usually very implicit, it was not straightforward like the demonic path.

“But the truth is, this shows how weak you are now.” Fang Yuan was crystal clear in his mind.

In this battle, Fang clan did not use any other Immortal Gu House, it showed that during the battle of Divine Bean Palace, their Immortal Gu Houses were heavily damaged.

Fang clan used the theft path Immortal Gu House that was clearly damaged. The steal dao killer move they used had rank eight power, but Fang Yuan could see that this move had a huge burden on the Immortal Gu House, it could not be used extensively.

And it was not stable!

If the killer move was stable and could be used often, Fang clan would have used it long ago, they would not have waited until now.

Steal dao was the trump card of Fang clan, they did not want to use it but there was no choice.

Very likely, Fang clan did not have the complete Thieving Heaven true inheritance, or maybe, they had not grasped it fully yet.

Because Fang clan was most numerous in formation path Gu Immortals, they excelled in formation path, they were not familiar with theft path.

Fang Yuan first replied to Fang Di Chang.

In the letter, he wrote that he found the twenty droplets of heavenly dew, he had been too careless earlier.

Next, a dark light flashed in his eyes: “It is time to take action personally.”

Immortal killer move — Jade Flow Pearl!

During this period, he had gained control of heavenly dew oasis’ formation, he even set up a formation inside this formation, not only could it create the illusion that he was inside defending the place, it could also conceal Fang Yuan’s actions.

Jade flow pearl was also modified successfully, the activation speed was faster now and the aura leaked at the destination was smaller, it was not as eye-catching as before.

Fang Yuan arrived at burning firefly desert, this place was filled with weird rocks and few plants, there was a type of insect that filled this place, called burning fireflies.

There was an endless number of burning fireflies here, among them were a vast number of burning firefly Gu, from rank three to five.

Burning firefly Gu was a type of fire path Gu, it was quite high grade, with rank three being the lowest, but it had never produced a rank six Gu before.

This was a mid-sized resource point of Fang clan.

Fang clan set up an immortal formation here as well, they used the burning firefly Gu to create a fire path environment to raise a lot of other fire path Gu worms here.

A rank six Fang clan Gu Immortal was defending this place.

Fang Yuan used familiar face to disguise himself, he directly attacked.

He killed this Fang clan Gu Immortal and tossed the corpse, before destroying the formation and slaughtering all the Gu worms, the entire desert was turned into ruins before he left.

Worth mentioning was that he used earth path methods.

Within Lang Ya blessed land’s inventory, there were several earth path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan also had a large number of earth path killer moves.

After doing all that, he returned to heavenly dew oasis.

Over on Fang Di Chang’s end, he smiled after receiving Fang Yuan’s reply, but soon learned about the nightmare that his clan’s burning firefly desert was destroyed!

In an instant, this Fang clan wisdom path great grandmaster was dazed.

His joyful emotion was gone.

A member of Fang clan died!

Burning firefly desert was not important, the important thing was, Fang clan’s Gu Immortal died!

All along, Fang clan had always lacked Gu Immortals, compared to the other Western Desert righteous path forces, they were disadvantaged. Only after bringing in Old Ghost Bai Jun, Eagle Concubine, and Suan Bu Jin recently did the situation change.

But these three were outsiders, they did not have Fang clan bloodline, it was not the same.

Fang clan’s Gu Immortal died, even though they were just rank six, it was a severe loss to the whole of Fang clan!

Fang Gong placed great importance on this, he quickly discussed the situation with Fang Di Chang.

After a short conversation, Fang Gong stayed to guard the headquarters while Fang Di Chang went out to find the culprit at the scene of the crime in burning firefly desert.

“The murderer killed our clan’s Gu Immortal!”

“They even destroyed all of the desert’s resources.”

“This is clearly not a crime of greed, this is totally an act of revenge!”

Fang Di Chang used his wisdom path method, he surveyed the scene and quickly saw indications of the ruthless thoughts, hatred, and angry emotions of the culprit behind this incident.

“Earth path method... is it Dong clan’s revenge?”

Fang Di Chang thought of this as Dong clan specialized in earth path, but he soon shook his head.

“If Dong clan did it, this is way too obvious, there must be other righteous path forces trying to take advantage of the situation.”

“The situation is bad...”

Fang Di Chang’s expression turned grim.

He was a wisdom path great grandmaster, he had made many deductions regarding the consequences of using steal dao to intimidate the Western Desert righteous path forces.

Among them was one possible situation, someone in Western Desert’s righteous path forces might want to provoke him but would not dare to do it publicly, they would hide behind the scenes and use some devious plan.

Fang Yuan acted very cleanly, he only left behind the clues that he wanted them to find.

There was another element, Fang clan lacked information path Gu Immortals, Fang Di Chang was a wisdom path immortal, he did not cultivate information path.

If an information path Gu Immortal came here, they might be able to find some traces or evidence that lead to Fang Yuan.

But Fang clan could not.

Even if Fang clan invited an information path expert to help, they could not approach the other righteous path forces, that meant that there was little choice available. If they invited lone and demonic immortals, the person would need rank seven cultivation level.

But as part of the righteous path, Fang clan did not have a good relationship with lone and demonic immortals.

Even lone immortals with decent relationship or demonic immortals who have transactions with them secretly might not cultivate information path.

Fang Di Chang did not find any valuable clues, when he returned to the headquarters, his expression was very dark.

Western Desert’s righteous path soon got news of this.

Immediately, a rank eight expert went to ask Dong Lu Chen.

Dong Lu Chen heard this and became very stupefied!

He breathed in deeply as he felt deep anger rising, he cursed internally: “Which bastard is trying to harm my Dong clan! Fang clan has steal dao, but they did not go overboard and target our giant resource points. Yet this bastard killed their Fang clan’s Gu Immortal, that is going too far. Damn it!”

“This person used earth path methods and I am an earth path Gu Immortal, my Dong clan specializes in earth path too, they are trying to frame us! So devious and vicious, yet I cannot retort to them!”

Dong Lu Chen could barely contain the anger and annoyance in his heart.

He could not go around shouting that he was not the culprit.

Firstly, nobody was publicly accusing him, even if they suspected him, wouldn’t he be showing weakness by declaring innocence?

Earlier, Fang clan destroyed one of Dong clan’s mid sized resource points, if he shouted about his innocence now, wouldn’t it show that he was afraid of Fang clan?

That would not only taint Dong Lu Chen’s reputation, the whole of Dong clan’s prestige would be affected.

Thus, even though Dong Lu Chen hated Fang Yuan and wanted to declare his innocence, towards the rank eight expert who asked him, he could only snort: “This feels great (I am very angry)! But who did this to them? I will definitely give them a huge reward (tear them to shreds)!”[1]

“Hehe.” The rank eight expert replied with a meaningful answer.

Dong Lu Chen’s feelings felt even worse now.

Hehe your mother!

Am I having an easy time?

My Dong clan’s territory is bordered with Fang clan, they were pushed aside so they attacked my clan to intimidate us all. This time, Fang clan’s Gu Immortal died, if they retaliate now, my Dong clan will face the greatest danger!

[1] The bracketed words are his inner thoughts.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1781 Grasping Karma Divine Tree

These days, Western Desert’s righteous path had been experiencing a strange atmosphere.

On the surface, they were still creating a large number of slanders and rumors towards Fang clan.

But the truth was, their suppression towards Fang clan became all noise and no action.

After all, steal dao was already used, even rank eight Gu Immortals could not stop Fang clan from attacking forcefully.

“Our attack on treasure moon oasis has already started to show effect.” Fang clan’s Gu Immortals were overjoyed.

Fang Di Chang’s expression was ugly: “It is a pity, if the situation in burning firefly desert did not happen, it would be perfect. We have not found the culprit even now, it is truly a regret!”

Even though Dong clan was the most suspicious, Fang Di Chang and Fang Gong were astute people, they did not want to take action yet.

They had no evidence or reason to move, there was also a chance that this was a trap.

Fang clan did not take action, but Dong clan had quite a commotion, these last days, Dong Lu Chen had been deploying people to strengthen their defenses against Fang clan.

Dong Lu Chen did not have an easy time, he was quite fearful. He would not be surprised if news that Fang clan was attacking got out at the next moment!

“Quickly investigate it, find the culprit and clear my Dong clan’s name!” Secretly, Dong Lu Chen was looking forward to Fang clan’s investigation results. But on the surface, he kept a tough stance, he constantly sought compensation from Fang clan for the matter in treasure moon oasis.

Instead of taking revenge, they were only asking for compensation, it was already a clear attitude.

The other Western Desert righteous path forces were also trying to guess who the culprit was.

Most of their attention was placed on each other, because it was evident that if the plan to sow discord succeeds, the other righteous path forces would gain the most benefit.

Among them, the most suspicious ones were the clans that bordered Fang clan, including Dong clan.

Naturally, these super forces had huge mental pressure right now, they wanted Fang clan to find out the true culprit.

Fang clan was searching for the culprit.

But the truth was, they did not work hard on it, their actions were quite perfunctory!

Fang clan’s true crisis was not the culprit behind burning firefly desert, but the suppression by the whole of Western Desert’s righteous path.

Fang clan’s situation was quite awkward now.

If they found out the actual culprit and it led to a certain righteous path force, would they exact revenge?

They had to take revenge if they knew!

Otherwise, Fang clan’s reputation would suffer deeply, and those rank six and seven Gu Immortals in Fang clan would not accept inaction.

Gu Immortals were the higher-ups of a super force, if they died and the force did not safeguard or avenge them, what was the point of joining an organization? Would it be worth risking one’s life for them?

But if they took revenge?

Would they really go all out and fight a super force?

Fang clan had steal dao, but other super forces also had their own trump cards!

And most importantly, if two super forces fought each other seriously, the ones who benefited would not be themselves but other super forces instead.

These last days, Fang Di Chang had calmed down already, he told Fang Gong about his viewpoint in secret: They should try to stall the investigation of the truth. The most important thing now was time, they needed to repair their three Immortal Gu Houses and refine Divine Bean Palace!

As long as they got over this hurdle, Fang clan's strength would rise, after that when they find the culprit, no matter which super force it was, they would have a good reason to find trouble with them and have enough strength to gain the maximum benefit.

Fang Gong heard his analysis and agreed with it, he praised Fang Di Chang for his planning.

Not long after, Fang Gong announced publicly: Fang clan would actively pursue the truth, they already had a lot of progress towards finding the culprit. Fang clan would not let any culprit off, but they would also not malign an innocent person.

On the day of their announcement, Fang clan's Gu Immortal sent Fang Yuan a large number of soul cores, among which was one rank eight immemorial soul core!

In the previous life, when Fang Yuan extorted Fang clan, they only gave rank six and seven soul cores, there were no immemorial soul cores.

“Evidently, Fang clan is trying to appease me.” Fang Yuan smiled lightly in his mind.

Earlier, Fang Di Chang warned him and ordered Fang Yuan to hand over twenty drops of heavenly dew. If the matter in burning firefly desert did not occur, that would have been the end.

But after the murder case in burning firefly desert, Fang clan's intimidation plan was much less effective, Western Desert's righteous path was still full of undercurrents. Everyone was guessing which side would make a move next, everyone had a desire to take action.

Thus, Fang clan needed to ensure that Fang Yuan, who had rank seven battle strength, was still on their side.

But they could not return the twenty drops of heavenly dew, Fang Di Chang could not go back on that order.

Thus, they used an immemorial soul core to compensate and appease him.

Fang Yuan took a risk to attack burning firefly desert, this was the result he wanted.

Fang Yuan did not want to see Fang clan in a stable position.

If Fang clan became stable, they would not need him, he could not make use of them anymore, the development of green ghost desert would become very slow, they would not put in effort.

But now, Fang clan was actually gifting Fang Yuan an immemorial soul core.

Additionally, Fang Yuan needed Western Desert’s righteous path to draw the attention of Fang Di Chang and the rest. If they had an easy time, Fang Di Chang would be able to pay attention to Fang Yuan, he might be able to sense something amiss.

Speaking of which, Fang clan was quite unlucky.

In the previous life, because of Fang Yuan’s absence, they got through the crisis and intimidated Western Desert’s righteous path, eventually cooperating and coming up with a certain agreement.

But now, because they took in Fang Yuan, this traitor with ill intentions was causing their situation to become unstable.

For the following days, Fang Yuan cultivated quietly in heavenly dew oasis.

Over at green ghost desert, Ying Wu Xie made use of Soul Beast Token to develop rapidly.

As for Fang clan, they were still using the soul cores in their inventory to provide for Fang Yuan as per the agreement.

Within the sovereign immortal aperture, the land spirits and variant humans were all working hard.

Under the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan’s time path clone made deductions almost all the time without rest.

Immortal killer move — Karma Divine Tree!

Above Fang Yuan’s head, a lump of green smoke appeared, it turned into a tiny thin tree, there were few branches on it and the two to three fruits that were hanging on them looked malnourished.

If Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals saw this, they would be shocked and overflowing with fury.

Karma divine tree was Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s signature method, to think that it would end up in the hands of this demon Fang Yuan!

After Fang Yuan killed Chen Yi, the Gu worms in the phantom aperture were destroyed, he only obtained Chen Yi’s soul and corpse.

After searching his soul, Fang Yuan obtained two Genesis Lotus true inheritances, they were karma divine tree and karma relocation.

With the original killer move, Fang Yuan used the light of wisdom to modify and create the rank six level karma divine tree killer move, using rank seven mature bamboo Immortal Gu as the core along with other rank six wood path Immortal Gu.

Because he lacked the core rule path Immortal Gu ‘Cause’, and the core wood path Immortal Gu ‘Effect[1]’, Fang Yuan had to use a vast number of mortal Gu as replacement.

But because of that, the steps became complex, he had to spend a lot of effort on it, karma divine tree took longer to activate and it could not be used in actual battle.

“It is a pity my wood path attainment level is still ordinary, I have not even reached master level.”

“And even though mature bamboo Immortal Gu is wood path, it is not appropriate as the core of karma divine tree.”

“According to biological studies on Earth, bamboos are a type of grass and not trees[2].”

Thus, the core was rank seven but this killer move was only rank six after activation.

Fang Yuan recalled how Chen Yi used karma divine tree, he had a grand aura. Once he unleashed karma divine tree, he was simply inexhaustible!

Even though it focused on defense, being on the same level as reverse flow protection seal and verdant sun flame cloak, it was more comprehensive and had greater potential, it could be used in other aspects like offense, movement, or healing.

Karma relocation was a movement method developed on the basis of karma divine tree. However, it did not target the Gu Immortal themselves, but others around him like Gu Immortals, plants, beasts, or killer moves.

It was, after all, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s creation, it was incredibly powerful.

Fang Yuan was far from recreating this killer move’s true power.

Karma divine tree was still in its initial stage, but Fang Yuan gained a new wood path killer move that was quite useful.

This move was named mature bamboo chest, it was a rank seven wood path killer move, using mature bamboo Immortal Gu as the core but having wisdom path effect.

After activating this killer move, there would be a jade light permeating from Fang Yuan’s chest.

When Fang Yuan uses immortal essence to deduce a certain matter, if he succeeds in the deduction, a dark green bamboo forest tattoo would appear on his chest.

Fang Yuan had already grasped the strengths and weaknesses of the killer move mature bamboo chest.

This move excelled at deducing one single matter from start to finish, that was its strength.

The sign of success would be the bamboo forest tattoo on his chest.

But if the deduction does not succeed, if he lacks immortal essence or gets distracted for other reasons, mature bamboo chest would fail, that was its weakness.

And because the killer move fails, the Gu Immortal would suffer backlash.

Fang Yuan had purposely tested it.

The jade light permeating from his chest and the half completed bamboo forest tattoo faded away as Fang Yuan’s soul and body suffered injuries.

His mind was intact.

After all, this was not a pure wisdom path killer move, it was wood path.

Thus, when using mature bamboo chest to deduce a target, the range could not be too large, otherwise, the killer move would fail and the user would be injured.

Other than mature bamboo chest, Fang Yuan also gained a new killer move that had the same situation.

It was luck path killer move — Luck Plan Strategy.

This move used rank six Immortal Gu Luck Plan as the core, it belonged to luck path but had wisdom path effect.

Luck plan Immortal Gu's power was to make deductions on how to optimize the use of the Gu Immortal's resources.

The killer move luck plan strategy was specialized in making battle tactics.

Ordinary Gu Immortals cultivated one path, they rarely took on a second path. Thus, there were many killer moves of these sorts which mimicked the effects of other paths.

But they created these killer moves while having limited foundation in the path they mimicked, even though they were strong, they could be easily countered and the weaknesses were obvious.

Compared to actual wisdom path methods, they were less useful.

[1] Karma is also split into cause and effect. Effect has the same character as fruit so it's a pun in this case.

[2] This is indeed a fact.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1782 Comprehending Venerable True Inheritances

Fang Yuan's wisdom path methods were plentiful, he did not need mature bamboo chest and luck plan strategy, he only practised these moves to increase his understanding of the Genesis Lotus true inheritances and Giant Sun's true inheritance.

These last days, Fang Yuan's main body had been researching on Genesis Lotus' true inheritances, Giant Sun's true inheritance, and Thieving Heaven's true inheritance.

Fang Yuan had already fully grasped Long Hair Ancestor's refinement path true inheritance, it was easy to understand with his quasi-supreme refinement path attainment level.

Regarding the Genesis Lotus true inheritances, Fang Yuan had already started by creating the rank six karma divine tree killer move.

But because he lacked wood path Immortal Gu and wood path attainment level, Fang Yuan did not overly invest into it.

He placed his focus on Giant Sun's true inheritance and Thieving Heaven's true inheritance.

The former was self luck true inheritance from one of Giant Sun's three true inheritances, it allowed Fang Yuan to control his own luck.

The core of the latter Thieving Heaven true inheritance was rank eight Immortal Gu Steal Life, it involved the method to unseal steal life Immortal Gu.

Of course, both also detailed the fundamental cultivation of luck path and theft path, especially the two venerables’ understanding of the paths they created, Fang Yuan benefited greatly from it.

“What was luck?” At the introduction of Giant Sun’s true inheritance, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable asked this question.

Next, he answered himself: “To discuss luck, one must talk about fate!”

Before Red Lotus Demon Venerable, there was no luck path.

After Red Lotus Demon Venerable damaged fate Gu, a peculiar change happened to the world.

People first discovered luck path from a certain component of their human qi — luck.

Because heaven, earth, and human qi needed to be balanced to become a Gu Immortal, the more human qi a Gu Master accumulated, the higher the grade of their immortal aperture after they succeeded in the immortal ascension.

Therefore, by placing importance on human qi, people started to research on luck.

Soon, they found some traits of this luck.

After fate Gu got damaged by Red Lotus Demon Venerable, the paths of all beings were no longer fixed and constant, changes could occur to a certain limit.

People found out that luck and this deviation from fate had a profound but direct relation.

But what was the connection?

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable described his own viewpoint: “Fate is constant while luck is variable!”

For a normal person, what was good luck?

Good luck was a positive variable for oneself.

And what was bad luck?

Bad luck was a negative variable for oneself.

Within a person’s human qi, if their luck was good, then this person would likely benefit.

Within a person’s human qi, if their luck was bad, then this person would likely experience loss.

But regardless of good or bad luck, they were not part of fate.

Fate was a constant, it was fixed, it would inevitably be experienced. But luck was a variable, it was merely a probability, the actual outcome would only be decided after factoring in all the other possible influences.

If a person had bad luck but also had great strength and wisdom to turn the situation around, they could still achieve their goals or motives.

If a person had good luck but was stupid and weak, unable to make use of the opportunity, they would still fail.

Afterwards, Giant Sun’s self luck true inheritance talked about the sizes, colors, and shapes of the different types of luck.

Some people had a lot of luck, some had very little.

Normally speaking, the higher your cultivation level and the deeper your foundation, the greater your luck.

The seven main colors of luck were black, grey, white, red, gold, azure, purple. But there were also uncommon colors like pink or blood red.

Luck had all sorts of shapes and sizes, it varied greatly and could be very strange. Normal people usually had common or ordinary shapes, while geniuses or champions would have greater luck that came in much rarer appearances.

For example, Fang Yuan once had the black coffin luck, his luck was black as ink, it gathered and formed a huge coffin shape, completely covering his body, it emitted a dense death energy filled with thick misfortune.

Or for example, when he observed Zheng Shan Chuan at the Refinement Path Convention, that person had rainbow luck that was incredibly dazzling, he stood out very clearly.

As for Hong Yi, Ye Fan, and Han Li, these people had special types of luck too.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left behind the self luck true inheritance, it had the ability to target one’s own luck, allowing one to alter its size, shape, and color!

For example, if one wanted better fortune with the opposite sex, they could create peach blossom luck.

If they wanted cultivation resources like primeval stones, they could create wealth luck.

Or if they had bad luck on them, they could use a series of methods to change it.

...

Giant Sun’s self luck true inheritance was very comprehensive, while Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance was very simple and short.

“Theft path is not about gaining without effort, it is the path of greatest efficiency!”

“Gu Masters and Gu Immortals want to obtain Gu worms and Immortal Gu, be it Gu refinement, transactions, or loot, these methods have high costs and risks.”

“Theft path targets Gu worms and steals them, one can save costs and reduce the risks, raising their efficiency!”

And what was the essence of Gu worms?

Gu were the essence of heaven and earth.

Stealing Gu worms was akin to stealing dao mark fragments.

Therefore, the killer move steal dao was created.

There was also steal life Immortal Gu, the manifestation of lifespan was simply a type of dao marks in the person’s body. Steal life Immortal Gu could steal those relevant dao marks and reduce a person’s lifespan.

“Don’t think that theft path is shameless or vicious.”

“Many things can be looked at with another perspective.”

“Steal a hook and they hang you, steal the whole country and they make you a prince! Any clan or sect makes their members contribute towards the organization, this is an open form of thievery but is taken for granted.”

“For example, Heavenly Court makes members who join contribute their immortal apertures, they are basically handing over their entire life’s cultivation gains. In terms of theft path, this is Heavenly Court stealing the cultivation gains of Gu Immortals. But people think of it as a form of glory, they would die to have this chance.”

“Weak mortals are also able to steal the cultivation gains of Gu Immortals, that is shown by the true inheritances left by all the different Gu Immortals. But this world treats that as a norm, it is the culture.”

“Thievery is merely the most efficient way of gaining something. Creating an organization and making rules, making up honor or using emotions and culture, these are all theft path methods.”

“The most powerful theft path method is — assimilation.”

“When grotto-heavens or blessed lands get destroyed, the winds of assimilation will blow and turn everything into nothingness, the dao marks in the immortal apertures would be assimilated and absorbed by this heaven and earth.”

“The greatest thief is this world itself!”

“It steals the cultivation gains of countless generations of peerless geniuses, it accumulates more and more dao marks, or even produces new types of dao marks. It stole me from another world, making me an otherworldly demon. It steals the lifespan of myriad beings, it ensures the death of all lifeforms in this world.”

“The theft path I created imitates heaven and earth! Using the most efficient method to gather benefits and strengthen oneself...”

After taking a look, Fang Yuan felt his horizons broadening, his image of theft path had completely changed from before.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had a different mindset than others, he was not orthodox but he peered into the truth. He used the mentality of theft path to comprehend this world!

He had a grand vision, he carried his unique trait as an otherworldly demon.

Gu Masters cultivate, they nurture, use, and refine Gu worms, they manage their immortal aperture, they increase the attainment level of their own paths, they were simply understanding themselves and comprehending this heaven and earth.

Every path had a different understanding of the world and themselves from different perspectives.

“Steal life Immortal Gu is the first Immortal Gu in my life, I did not refine it myself.”

“The more I used it, the more I understood, in the end, I put some arrangements on steal life Immortal Gu.”

“Using steal life Immortal Gu normally would steal the lifespan of others, and with the killer move I created, it can increase one’s own lifespan. Of course, it had its flaws, it is inferior to lifespan Gu.”

“Using steal life Immortal Gu in reverse would give the user’s lifespan to another target. This looks foolish but it has its own profundity. That is also the deepest essence of this true inheritance.”

“Inheritor, if you are blessed enough to reach this step, you will be able to remove my method on steal life Immortal Gu and obtain the information of another corresponding true inheritance.”

These were the final words of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

Fang Yuan was silent for a long time after reading it.

Even though he had theft path great grandmaster attainment level, he still found difficulty in comprehending the words of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

Using steal life Immortal Gu in reverse?

Fang Yuan shook his head, he was not confident in comprehending this mystery.

According to his deductions, he needed at least quasi-supreme theft path attainment level to be able to understand it.

Before that, if he tried to use steal life Immortal Gu in reverse, he would simply be cutting his own lifespan.

“Furthermore, I need to use this steal life Immortal Gu to deal with Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals.”

“Ignoring anything else, Duke Long is especially countered by steal life Immortal Gu!”

Even if Fang Yuan used the final two opportunities and destroyed steal life Immortal Gu, he still had Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance, it contained the recipe of rank eight steal life Immortal Gu.

“Even if I use up the two chances, I can still refine a new one in the future.”

“But...”

According to Fang Yuan’s deductions, the arrangements that Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable left on steal life Immortal Gu were very valuable. If he could understand Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and comprehend the core essence of this true inheritance, Fang Yuan’s gains would be much greater than now.

While Fang Yuan was cultivating diligently, after the leaders of Southern Border’s righteous path had gone through intense negotiation and discussion, they finally reached an agreement.

“We need to kill Fang Yuan, he is too lawless, last time he disguised as Wu Yi Hai, now, he directly showed up and harmed our benefits.”

“The contest in the Earth Trenches is our internal conflict, this Fang Yuan is an outsider, against him, we need to unite!”

“But we need to be careful! Even though Fang Yuan only has rank seven cultivation level, he is too devious and has a deep foundation, we cannot look at him as a normal person.”

“That’s right, especially after he defended against Heavenly Court’s attack, now that he annexed Lang Ya blessed land, I’m afraid he has gained the subordination of all the variant human Gu Immortals. Along with the Shadow Sect remnant forces that he took in... I need to remind everyone that Fang Yuan is not a lone person, he is a super force!”

“One rank eight Gu Immortal leading the group is not enough, to play safe, we should send two.”

“Hmm, isn’t that making a mountain out of a molehill?”

“I agree to it.”

“I agree.”

“My Ba clan has no objections.”

“On the surface, Lady Xia Cha should lead them. The other expert should conceal his identity and mix within the group, striking at the crucial moment.”

“Good idea.”

“I agree.”

“I agree.”

...

Different from the previous life, because Fang Yuan annexed Lang Ya blessed land and defeated Heavenly Court, Southern Border’s righteous path felt a greater threat this time.

They did not just send Xia Cha, they also sent a second rank eight Gu Immortal!

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan had no idea that this was happening.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1783 Second Ambush Battle

The newest information was sent to Chi Qu You, he stood at the window as he stared at the mountain outside.

“Oh? They trapped Fang Yuan already? It seems that he cannot escape this time.” Chi Qu You’s gaze flickered.

“Fang Yuan actually tried to undergo tribulation in Southern Border and left clues behind. Even if he wants to advance to rank eight, this is too reckless.”

“But it cannot be helped... he managed to force Heavenly Court to retreat and even made transactions with me, the journey was too smooth, he became overconfident and started to look down on my Southern Border’s righteous path.”

Chi Qu You felt that Fang Yuan was able to remain free because of his devious and cunning actions, he had always been on the move and did not face a super force head on. He often escaped the moment the situation turned bad.

This time, Southern Border’s righteous path colluded in a secretive manner, on the surface, they showed a calm demeanor, there were no suspicions about them, they even had wisdom path Gu Immortals to conceal and defend against deductions.

“And there is that Lu Wei Yin, if he did not join the alliance, our Southern Border righteous path might not have caught Fang Yuan so quickly. Worthy of Paradise Earth’s inheritor, he could actually find Fang Yuan’s location from the earth qi of his tribulation, he is truly impressive.”

Chi Qu You sighed internally.

Lu Wei Yin interfered and caused the situation in Southern Border’s righteous path to become even more complex.

This time, Southern Border’s righteous path pursued Fang Yuan, there were three rank eights including Lu Wei Yin, the probability of success was high.

If they succeeded, Lu Wei Yin’s reputation would rise sharply, he would definitely become someone that they would need to place great importance on.

Actually, Lu Wei Yin had already interacted with all the Southern Border righteous path forces before this, in one way or another.

His Southern Border paradise was the gathering spot of many Southern Border variant humans, he had taken in many variant humans who had their homes destroyed by humans.

These variant humans lived peacefully in the paradise, according to reliable information, many of these variant humans had already become Gu Immortals.

This made Southern Border’s humans very unhappy and worried, but because Lu Wei Yin was Paradise Earth’s inheritor, he carried on the will and aspiration of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, the whole of Southern Border’s righteous path could not find him for trouble.

All along, Lu Wei Yin had been pushed aside by Southern Border’s righteous path, that was a tacit agreement by everyone.

But recently, Lu Wei Yin had often shown up and even kept a high profile as he volunteered to find Fang Yuan. If this succeeded, his efforts would not be in vain, he would gain some authority in Southern Border’s righteous path.

Chi Qu You did not think well of Fang Yuan’s predicaments.

Even though he resisted Heavenly Court’s invasion of Lang Ya blessed land, everyone thought that this was because Heavenly Court underestimated Lang Ya blessed land’s foundation.

And most importantly, Heavenly Court did not expose the fact that Thunder Ghost True Monarch and Chen Yi had died in there.

This made Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals feel a sense of confidence.

Their confidence was not without reason.

They had once pursued Fang Yuan and made him escape from Southern Border like a beaten dog after all. If not for Feng Jiu Ge’s interference, he would have died already.

Chi Qu You was more worried and wary of Lu Wei Yin, he had already started to think about how he would deal with this Paradise Earth inheritor in the future.

As for Fang Yuan?

Chi Qu You felt a little regret.

Regardless of whether he lives or dies, as long as he ends up in Southern Border righteous path's hands, Fang Yuan's and Chi Qu You's transactions would stop.

This went against Chi clan's benefits!

Thus, Chi Qu You felt regret.

Even though Fang Yuan had once attacked Chi clan's resource points and caused them to lose resources, Chi Qu You did not feel any grudge towards it.

In his opinion, the dream path research results that he obtained were enough to make up for these losses.

Chi Qu You was not afraid that Fang Yuan would target him afterwards.

Like what he analyzed earlier, even if Fang Yuan took out strong evidences that could not be denied, it was just Chi Qu You's and Fang Yuan's transaction.

With Chi clan's size and foundation, they would lose a little territory, but their roots would be unshaken.

But if Chi Qu You informed Fang Yuan about the actions of Southern Border's righteous path, that would be a different story.

He would be a traitor!

If he was exposed, even with rank eight cultivation level, Chi Qu You and Chi clan would face the combined attack of the entire righteous path, the clan might even be wiped out.

As a righteous path leader, Chi Qu You had a strong understanding of his position in this situation.

He would not make such a mistake.

If he told Fang Yuan about it, regardless of whether he gets captured, the demon Fang Yuan would gain the evidence of Chi Qu You being a traitor.

And furthermore, he and Fang Yuan were just making use of each other, they were not close enough for him to take such risks and tell him about the plan while sacrificing Chi clan.

Chi Qu You felt a little worry.

“If Fang Yuan gets captured, I hope he will not expose his dream path research results, our Chi clan needs sufficient time to develop.”

“To speak the truth, Fang Yuan is a true talent. It is a pity that he is going to end up like this... if he could grow fully, in the future, the five regions would become more interesting.”

Someone of high status would definitely have extraordinary vision.

Chi Qu You truly felt, towards the pitiful ending that Fang Yuan was going to end up in, that it was quite a pity.

At the same time, somewhere in Southern Border.

Fang Yuan was surrounded by Southern Border Gu Immortals, they had overwhelming aura and morale.

The leader was an old woman, it was the time path rank eight Gu Immortal Xia Cha, she smiled coldly at Fang Yuan: “Scoundrel Fang Yuan, you have finally fallen into my hands.”

Fang Yuan looked at her as he thought: “The same lines all over again. According to my memories, he is going to laugh next.”

Fang Yuan looked away from Xia Cha.

As expected, at the next moment, standing beside Xia Cha, Shang clan Gu Immortal Shang Hu Zhang started to laugh: “Lord Lu Wei Yin, he is truly incredible, we found this demon at last!”

(Fang Yuan: The same lines as expected, but his smile is more exaggerated than last time. He is sucking up to Lu Wei Yin publicly, is it because Shang clan has taken interest in the goods of the variant humans in his paradise?)

“Kill, kill this demon, take revenge for our Southern Border righteous path!” Tie Qu Zhong said loudly with deep killing intent.

(Fang Yuan: Oh, someone finally changed his lines, but there is barely any difference.)

“We finally caught Fang Yuan.” Liu Hao thought to himself. He was Heavenly Court’s spy, he had fixed space Immortal Gu, it was ready to activate in his immortal aperture, once Fang Yuan shows any sign of using Fixed Immortal Travel, he would activate the immortal killer move that used fixed space Immortal Gu as the core!

Liu Hao was more nervous now compared to the previous life.

Because in the previous life, he only had to activate fixed space Immortal Gu, but now, because Fang Yuan had the killer move jade flow pearl, he could not use fixed space Immortal Gu alone to counter Fang Yuan, he needed to use an immortal killer move.

Heavenly Court did not lack these killer moves of course, even if they did, Fairy Zi Wei could modify them.

Liu Hao was nervous because he was not familiar with this immortal killer move yet, if he used it in battle, there was a chance of failure.

If his activation fails, he would let down Heavenly Court, that would be embarrassing!

“Don’t worry, I am here.” At this moment, a rank seven Gu Immortal transmitted to him.

Liu Hao glanced at him.

“Don’t look at me!” Immediately, the rank seven Gu Immortal shouted coldly.

Liu Hao mentally rolled his eyes, this person was the Southern Border rank eight Gu Immortal, Ba Shi Ba, who had disguised his cultivation level and appearance!

“With this person around, we will have three rank eights on our side. This battle is not inside Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan has no formation to help him... If we fight, I will have a lot of chances of using my killer move calmly.” Liu Hao analyzed as the worry in his heart lifted by a lot.

However, at the next moment.

Boom!

The formation activated, all of the Southern Border Gu Immortals surrounding Fang Yuan were enveloped in it.

“What the!” Liu Hao’s eyes were about to pop out, he wanted to scream: “Why is there a formation here?!”

Within the formation, heaven and earth were fused as once, this was an area of blue space.

The Southern Border immortals’ expressions changed.

“This is a trap!” Someone shouted.

Lu Wei Yin was silent, while Xia Cha’s gaze became increasingly cold, she stared at Fang Yuan fixedly.

“Stay calm! We have strength in numbers, what can Fang Yuan alone do?”

“That’s right, we have Lady Xia Cha and Lord Lu Wei Yin, we are not afraid of his immortal battlefield!”

Liu Hao was stunned: “That’s right! How can an immortal formation be set up so easily? It activated so quickly, this is likely an immortal battlefield. But Fang Yuan is quite foolish, after using an immortal battlefield, he can’t escape himself.”

Southern Border’s immortals were astute figures, they soon calmed down and regained their morale.

At this time, Lu Wei Yin spoke: “This is not an immortal battlefield, it is a super immortal formation.”

“Time path formation.” Xia Cha added.

(Liu Hao’s lips twitched: After so much talk, this was still an immortal formation!)

“Both of you are very perceptive.” Fang Yuan smiled as he nodded, before waving his sleeves.

The gates were shut, it was time to let out the dogs, wait no, let out the year beasts!

Howl! Howl! Howl! Howl! Growl!

A huge spiral formed from nothingness as countless year beasts charged out like a rushing tide.

These year beasts were of various forms, including monkey, snake, dragon, and tiger, they were all at least desolate beasts and even quite a few ancient desolate beasts among them.

But Fang Yuan had disappeared.

Wild year beasts did not have high intelligence, they soon directed their savage gazes towards the Southern Border Gu Immortals, they charged ahead.

“Kill them all.” Xia Cha said indifferently.

Lu Wei Yin sighed.

The Southern Border immortals turned around and started to fight these year beasts!

Liu Hao waved his sleeves as countless flying blades shot out, slicing year beasts into pieces wherever they hit.

(Fang Yuan stood at a formation core as he analyzed: This Heavenly Court traitor is around indeed, I did not waste my effort in reducing the ink effect. Fixed space Gu should be in your hands?)

Liu Hao fought as he thought to himself: “It seems that there is a tributary of the River of Time here, Fang Yuan is trying the same method again, he used a similar formation back when he fought Feng Jiu Ge, the resemblance is uncanny! But strange, why do I have such a weird feeling about this?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1784 Ba Shi Ba“s Restrain

“Kill!” Ba clan’s Gu Immortal shouted as his body inflated to a giant size, he stomped, blood splattered, he had directly stomped an ancient year beast to death. Whoosh! Puff! A great fire spread out and set dozens of year beasts on fire, Chai clan’s Gu Immortal was bathed in flames, resembling a divine general.

Fang Yuan remembered this person, in the previous life, this person had a decently developed fire path immortal aperture, he had several majestic volcanoes, it was quite valuable.

Tie Qu Zhong was silent, his hands moved rapidly as golden light shot out with immense sharpness, splitting year beasts into halves easily like tofu.

Fang Yuan thought of the edge Gu in Tie Qu Zhong’s hands, it was one of the core Gu of time cutting edge, in the previous life, he had obtained it through great thief ghost hand. This depended on luck, it was not reliable. He had to be careful in this life.

“Demon Fang Yuan, we have to thank you for such a huge amount of wealth. Hahaha!” Shang Hu Zhang laughed as he used his wood path killer move, trapping the surrounding year beasts and keeping them in his immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan was very calm, it did not matter how many of them Shang Hu Zhang took, in a moment’s time, even Shang Hu Zhang himself would belong to Fang Yuan.

Howl...

Year beasts continued to stream into the formation, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals were fighting against them tirelessly, but the year beasts just kept coming!

“Why are there so many?!”

“This demon Fang Yuan is trying to waste our energy!”

“Breaking apart this formation is the way to victory.”

The Southern Border Gu Immortals conversed, they could tell what this battle was about. But they had no way of diverting themselves to do that.

Lu Wei Yin and Xia Cha were the most likely people to break the formation.

Roar—!

At this time, the spiral suddenly expanded drastically as an arrogant year beast stepped into the battlefield.

Fang Yuan was slightly shocked: “Oh, I summoned an immemorial year tiger. It seems even stronger than the immemorial year chicken that I summoned last time. Hmm... is it because I used the self luck true inheritance to increase my personal luck?”

The Southern Border immortals’ expressions changed.

“An immemorial year beast!”

“This formation could summon immemorial year beasts, as expected.”

“What formation is this? It is so vicious! Quickly destroy it!”

Lu Wei Yin wanted to take action but Tie Qu Zhong stood up: “Let us deal with it, both rank eights need to break open this formation, that is the wisest move!”

“Or maybe I should do something?” Ba Shi Ba transmitted.

“No, now is not the time yet, Brother Ba, wait first.” Xia Cha transmitted and urged restraint.

Ba Shi Ba thought to himself, that was not wrong, this was merely an immemorial year tiger, they had two rank eights on the surface, this was not a problem, he continued to conceal himself.

Tie Qu Zhong and several Southern Border rank seven experts faced off against the immemorial year tiger. They were powerful rank seven Gu Immortals after all, by working together, they had quite the strength, but after fighting, they quickly fell into a disadvantage.

In the previous life, they fought against the immemorial year chicken that Fang Yuan summoned, they were evenly matched.

But now, Fang Yuan summoned a much stronger immemorial year tiger.

Tie Qu Zhong had an ashen expression, he was stunned in his heart: “This is truly strength at rank eight, it is very impressive! To think I actually wanted to challenge such power...”

“There is a formation core here.” Suddenly, Xia Cha’s eyes flashed as she pointed her finger, the rank eight killer move activated, mysterious light shot out, causing a huge sound. The formation shook thrice before it stabilized.

The Southern Border immortals were overjoyed, there was a formation core indeed, Xia Cha destroyed it according to everyone’s expectations.

Next, the formation core was destroyed, a second spiral entrance appeared as large numbers of year beasts rushed in.

The Southern Border immortals’ joyful expressions vanished.

Howl!

With a loud roar, an immemorial year dragon jumped into the battlefield.

The immortals’ expressions changed again, this was the second immemorial desolate beast!

“It is my turn now.” Ba Shi Ba wanted to move.

“Don’t be anxious, Ba Shi Ba, let me do it.” Lu Wei Yin transmitted as he moved for the first time, he made a grabbing motion with one hand, a huge yellow hand formed and grasped the immemorial year dragon, preventing it from escaping despite its struggles.

Lu Wei Yin was indeed Paradise Earth’s inheritor, he managed to subdue a fierce immemorial year tiger in one move in the previous life. Now, he was able to capture an immemorial year dragon similarly. Even though he had no attacking methods, this move was unfathomable and made people feel great admiration towards him.

The Southern Border immortals had a surge of morale, while Shadow Sect’s members and the variant human Gu Immortals had dark expressions.

The might of rank eight was truly intimidating.

Fang Yuan thought about the final battle in his previous life, because Lu Wei Yin had immense battle strength, he was a huge obstruction to Fang Yuan’s side. Right now, Lu Wei Yin had not even displayed half of his full strength, even so, he was already one of the strongest rank eights out there.

Hiss hiss hiss...

An immemorial year snake dragged its thick and long body while hissing as it slithered out of the spiral entrance, entering the battlefield.

A third immemorial year beast!

Caw caw caw!

An immemorial year chicken came out with an arrogant attitude and raised neck.

A fourth immemorial year beast!

With two immemorial year beasts entering the battle at once, the Southern Border immortals’ faces turned pale.

This immemorial year snake was not easy to deal with, it was huge and had a greater aura than the first two. The fourth immemorial year chicken even had the aura of wild Immortal Gu on it, it was much more dangerous.

After the two immemorial year beasts appeared, a vast number of year beasts surged out of the spiral like a raging tsunami.

Both sides engaged in fierce combat, Gu Immortals used their wisdom and killer moves as they cooperated, while the year beasts were unintelligent and fought with brute strength, but they had advantage in numbers.

Fang Yuan’s subordinates were all guarding the formation cores, watching the huge fight between them.

“This damned formation, we must destroy it for a chance of victory!”

“Actually, as long as we destroy a portion of it, we will be able to send out information and get reinforcements from our righteous path allies.”

“This time path formation is truly profound...” Xia Cha frowned, after finding the first formation core, she could not find the second one.

“The formation is complete and flawless. My formation path attainment is too low, maybe I should go all out and make this formation unable to handle the attack, I can create a flaw myself!” Xia Cha’s killing intent surged.

Lu Wei Yin could sense Xia Cha’s intention as he quickly urged: “Don’t fall into the demon’s trap. This Fang Yuan is very devious, even Heavenly Court cannot capture him. Shadow Sect had obtained Graceful Chaotic Duel Stage before, even though it was destroyed, many of the Immortal Gu were left in their hands. If you attack with your full strength, you might fall into Fang Yuan’s trap, he would use it against you.”

Xia Cha hesitated, but the immemorial year chicken approached her quickly.

“A mere beast.” Xia Cha laughed from anger, aura of many Gu worms burst out of her body, forming into an immortal killer move.

Immortal killer move — Spring Scissors!

A pair of scissors that was jade green in color and large as an elephant flew towards the immemorial year chicken’s neck and clipped.

The immemorial year chicken could not rival her, after getting heavily injured from the scissors, it quickly fell into a disadvantage.

Xia Cha displayed shocking battle strength that was not lower than Heavenly Court’s members. Right before the immemorial year chicken was about to die at Xia Cha’s hands, suddenly, Fang Yuan activated the formation.

The heavily injured immemorial year chicken vanished on the spot.

“Submit to me.” Behind the scenes, Fang Yuan targeted this weakened immemorial year chicken as he used his overbearing enslavement path method, like what happened in the previous life, he succeeded in capturing this beast.

Ever since rebirth, Fang Yuan had been collecting immemorial year beasts.

His plan was to gather twelve different immemorial year beasts, even though there would be many immemorial year chickens in the River of Time next year, this immemorial year chicken had superior battle strength, he did not want to lose it.

Fang Yuan used the strength of the Southern Border immortals to weaken the immemorial year beast and enslave it forcefully.

Xia Cha’s expression turned dark, but she smiled: “You finally exposed a flaw, so what if you get a few immemorial year beasts?”

Fang Yuan teleported the immemorial year chicken away, it allowed Xia Cha to comprehend more of the formation.

As expected, not long after, she found the second formation core and destroyed it.

The Southern Border immortals started to cheer, but at the next moment, the formation core that was destroyed turned into a spiral entrance.

On the battlefield, there was a new entrance that transported more year beasts inside.

“How can this be?” The Southern Border immortals were stunned.

“There is no choice, I need to show up now and make my move!” Ba Shi Ba transmitted.

Xia Cha and Lu Wei Yin continued to urge him to lay low.

“No rush, we are already at this step, you should continue to wait.”

“We need to probe this entire formation, you need to act at the crucial moment, let Fang Yuan miscalculate and expose a weakness!”

Ba Shi Ba was silent for a moment before replying reluctantly: “Fine.”

The battle continued.

Many Southern Border immortals were already injured.

They were about to puke from killing these year beasts, the killer moves prepared for Fang Yuan and the cooperation between Gu Immortals were all used on these year beasts, they were truly helpless and tired beyond belief.

And the killing of year beasts was simply never going to end, they kept coming.

Lu Wei Yin and Xia Cha resisted the immemorial year beasts, even though they faced huge pressure consistently, they persevered.

Thanks to them, Fang Yuan enslaved more immemorial year beasts.

But the quantity was much smaller than the previous life.

Fang Yuan enslaved the immemorial year beasts that were stronger than the ones in his previous life, he only chose the elites among these beasts.

The main reason was that his soul cultivation was much lower than the previous life, he could not enslave too many of them.

Southern Border’s side was making huge progress.

Xia Cha destroyed two more formation cores, these two formation cores turned into spiral entrances and the year beasts that charged in became even more threatening to the Southern Border immortals.

A cold light shined in Fang Yuan’s eyes: “In the previous life, my years flow execution formation only had three spiral entrances at most, but after my modifications this life, it can sustain a maximum of five.”

“It is about time.”

“In the previous life, the battle lasted two days and one night, this time, there were even more year beasts, even though it has only been one day and night, the Southern Border immortals have had even greater expenditure than in the previous life.”

“Everyone, cooperate with me, activate the formation’s strongest method!” Fang Yuan suddenly transmitted.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1785 Ba Shi Ba“s Downfall

Ying Wu Xie and the rest had serious expressions, their eyes shined with bright light.

Some variant human Gu Immortals hesitated, they thought: Why are we using the strongest method now, isn’t it too early?

Fang Yuan had his previous life’s memories, he knew that Xia Cha had already found a lot of this formation’s information, she just kept it to herself. When she attacked abruptly last time, Lady White Rabbit died, while Fang Yuan and the rest were caught unguarded.

This time, Fang Yuan would not commit the same mistakes.

“Then who do we target? Lu Wei Yin or Xia Cha?” Bai Ning Bing asked.

The modified years flow execution formation had one strongest method, it could shine one silver-white beam of light on a single person. Whoever gets hit by it would experience an extremely slow time flow, they would be defenseless.

Lu Wei Yin was the current generation Paradise Earth’s inheritor, he had incredible methods and secret trump cards.

Meanwhile, Xia Cha was a time path great expert, she could destroy the formation, she was a huge threat to the years flow execution formation.

This decision was not easy to make.

But once this method was used, the remaining Gu Immortals would be on guard, it would be extremely unlikely to hit them again.

Fang Yuan’s reply was very short: “Neither Lu Wei Yin nor Xia Cha, we will target that ‘rank seven’ Gu Immortal!”

Ba Shi Ba was still concealed among the people.

Another immemorial year beast came out into the battlefield through a spiral entrance again.

Ba Shi Ba’s eyes twitched, he forcefully held down the urge to take action.

“This formation is still firm, I need to wait!”

“The time I take action has to be the most crucial moment, I need to catch Fang Yuan off guard and make him expose a flaw so that we can gain victory!”

While he was thinking of this, the ancient year beast near him froze as the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body inside self-detonated, the dream realm spread rapidly.

Ba Shi Ba immediately became alert: “Hmm?”

At this moment, a silver-white beam shot out, hitting him directly.

“What?!” Ba Shi Ba’s eyes slowly expanded, his time was slowed down by multiple times.

In his field of vision, everything outside was rushing towards him rapidly, the dream realm was close to him to begin with, after he got hit, it completely covered him in an instant.

“I...” Ba Shi Ba wanted to scream, but he had no time to do anything!

He was submerged by the dream realm, he fell asleep.

“What happened?”

“Ah! This is a dream realm.”

“Lord Ba Shi Ba?!”

“Damn it, Fang Yuan saw through lord’s identity!!”

The Southern Border immortals were moved, many people shrieked. This attack was too sudden, they were deeply shook.

“There was a third rank eight Gu Immortal?!” The Gu Immortals under Fang Yuan were all scared and shocked.

At the final moment, Ba Shi Ba exposed his true rank eight aura, but it was useless, everything was too late.

Seeing this, Xia Cha had the urge to cough blood.

They had concealed this trump card for so long, but Fang Yuan actually saw through it, Ba Shi Ba had been biding his time, he had not even used his true strength yet, but Fang Yuan got rid of him so easily!

Xia Cha was enraged!

She shrieked as an intense storm started around her.

Crack crack, lightning flashed and thunder roared.

These illusions condensed into a huge fan that she held in her hands.

Immortal killer move — Summer Fan!

In the previous life, Xia Cha used this move to deal major damage to Fang Yuan, the years flow execution formation was destroyed, Fang Yuan and the rest were injured, while Lady White Rabbit died.

But now?

“Feel my fan!” Xia Cha waved ruthlessly.

Winds were whipped up, emitting loud noises.

“Good, I was waiting for you!” Fang Yuan shouted as his eyes shined with brightness like lightning.

The formation was activated, it emitted a buzzing noise as overwhelming silver light enveloped all of the wind and absorbed it.

“What?!” Xia Cha stared with wide eyes, feeling extremely shocked.

The offensive killer move that she entrusted her hopes to actually... actually had no effect?!

“Again!” She waved once more.

Winds moved, surging powerfully as they killed many year beasts, even the immemorial year beasts were unable to hold on, they were scattered by the wind.

But at the next moment, silver light appeared as the winds were blocked entirely.

Xia Cha: “...”

She had an ashen expression, her heart was filled with a bad feeling, she waved her fan like she had gone mad.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

An unprecedented wind started to blow, it carried immense might with it.

Under the silver light, the wind was instantly devoured, the heaven destroying might earlier seemed like an illusion!

Xia Cha opened her mouth in a daze, after a breath of time, she screamed: “Impossible!”

Indeed, it was impossible.

She was clearly being targeted in this situation, not just that, her summer fan killer move had been completely countered!

Oh heavens, have mercy!

Xia Cha cried out in her heart: She had rarely used summer fan, why did Fang Yuan know so much about it to be able to resolve it like this?!

Was this a dream?

It was completely illogical!

But of course it was logical...

Because in the previous life, Fang Yuan not only obtained summer fan, he even modified it to surpass Xia Cha’s version.

Thus, Xia Cha’s proud trump card was merely an inferior initial version in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

In this life, Fang Yuan considered Xia Cha’s killer move and modified years flow execution formation, causing her threat to fall to its lowest level.

The reason he allowed her to act freely until now was because he wanted to weaken the year beasts using her, and he also wanted to probe the foundation of these Southern Border Gu Immortals.

Thus, the truth was, even though Xia Cha attacked ferociously and had great battle results, to Fang Yuan, she was the least dangerous Gu Immortal out of the three rank eights present.

Xia Cha’s emotions were changing rapidly, she quickly exposed a flaw.

Using this opportunity, Fang Yuan and the rest used the silver-white beam on her, they spread a dream realm to capture her as well.

Not far away, Lu Wei Yin smiled bitterly, he used a certain killer move to fall asleep as a dream realm started to spread around him.

All of a sudden, all three rank eights had stopped fighting.

The rest of the rank seven Gu Immortals were going crazy!

What the heck had happened, how did the situation change so quickly?

They were not able to escape from Fang Yuan’s demonic claws, the silver light shot towards Tie Qu Zhong, followed by Liu Hao, followed by...

This sequence was specifically deduced by Fang Yuan meticulously.

Several minutes after the Southern Border immortals went into the formation and lost all contact, a ray of white light appeared in the sky.

The white light turned into a rank eight Gu Immortal, this person was dressed in white clothes that was not stained by even a speck of dust, he had a pair of thin white brows that extended towards the outer sides of his face.

It was a Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortal, Jun Shen Guang, he cultivated light path.

He was originally a supreme elder of one of the ten great ancient sects in Central Continent. He had recently been recruited into Heavenly Court by Fairy Zi Wei after contributing his immortal aperture.

“Liu Hao and the rest disappeared here... hmm?” Jun Shen Guang had just started his investigation when he found many suspicious traces.

“This does not look good for Liu Hao. There was definitely a fierce battle here, unfortunately Liu Hao did not even send any request for reinforcements. Was it an immortal formation or an immortal battlefield?”

A moment later, cold sweat appeared on Jun Shen Guang’s forehead.

Shock and fear flashed in his eyes for a moment.

All the signs pointed to the fact that Xia Cha and the rest had been taken down, the three rank eights as well as many rank seven experts had all fallen into Fang Yuan’s trap!

“Fang Yuan should have made use of dream realms!” Soon, his gaze landed on the only small dream realm in the battlefield, becoming even more certain of his guess: “Besides using dream realms, Fang Yuan’s other methods, no matter how penetrating they are, cannot create such a result. Hmm?”

Jun Shen Guang sensed something amiss, he quickly retreated and left.

After a while, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building brought Wu Yong, Chi Qu You, and the rest as they arrived.

“They disappeared here!” Southern Border’s Gu Immortals had grim expressions.

“Quickly investigate what happened here. My clan cannot reach our first supreme elder.” Xia clan’s Gu Immortals were extremely anxious.

“We cannot contact Lord Ba Shi Ba either!” Ba clan’s Gu Immortals were also very anxious.

In this life, Xia clan was not alone, they were accompanied by the similarly pitiful Ba clan.

“It looks like there was a tributary of the River of Time here.”

“There was also a time path immortal level formation, the group rushed here then fought a very fierce battle!”

“What is up with this dream realm?” Someone saw that remaining small dream realm left behind by Fang Yuan.

“Be careful.” Southern Border’s immortals gradually separated and encircled this small dream realm.

“This dream realm is continuously shrinking.” Someone suddenly exclaimed.

After a while, several Gu worms fell out of the shrinking dream realm.

Like in the previous life, these information path Gu worms contained the extortion letters that Fang Yuan had written to Southern Border’s righteous path!

The Southern Border immortals went into a commotion!

“This, this this...”

“Blatant lies! How can this be possible? Our organized team was actually captured by Fang Yuan? Hmph!”

“This must be a huge scam!!!”

“But why can’t we contact our clan’s Gu Immortals?”

The Southern Border Gu Immortals were uncertain, they started to discuss among themselves, after a while, the dream realm continued to shrink as Lu Wei Yin slowly appeared.

Lu Wei Yin woke up slowly as the dream realm dissipated, he opened his eyes and saw Wu Yong and the rest, he then looked at his surroundings and blurted out: “Oh no!”

His presence and the words he told them crushed the final bit of hope that these Southern Border immortals had.

Southern Border’s righteous path brought in many people to organize a troop of experts to specially chase and kill Fang Yuan, but not only were they unable to kill Fang Yuan, they were instead taken captive by Fang Yuan!

Oh heavens!!

Why was Fang Yuan this strong?

Why was there a time path formation out of nowhere?

Who could explain what happened?

Nothing was logical!

The assault that was very likely to succeed had reversed the role of hunter and hunted, the Southern Border immortals suffered a huge loss, discussions were happening among all of them, they were all panicking and flustered.

They had lost all their face, and their material losses were also severe!

If Fang Yuan extorted them now, what would they do?

These Southern Border immortals wanted nothing more than to crush and mince Fang

Yuan’s corpse, but this accursed demon had already escaped far away. Nobody knew where he was right now.

Immortal killer move — Jade Flow Pearl!

Fang Yuan’s body flickered as he arrived at the Five Regional Mountain Range.

Fixed Immortal Travel made traveling truly convenient.

Fang Yuan did not care about the reactions of the Southern Border immortals. His gaze flickered as he looked at this mountain range, he needed to obtain the true inheritance while there was still time now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1786 A Match Made In Heaven!

Rumble!

Fang Yuan floated in the sky, looking at the ground below him.

The huge mountain range was collapsing, five colored lights emerged, they shined dazzlingly.

But these lights did not fuse together or interfered with one another, they had their own routes.

“It is not so easy to destroy the Five Regional Mountain Range, in the previous life, Wu Yong succeeded because he obtained the accumulation of Qiao clan who had researched this inheritance for many years.” Fang Yuan thought.

In order for Tao Zhu’s true inheritance to appear, he needed to destroy the entire Five Regional Mountain Range.

The commotion would be huge, this was why Fang Yuan had waited until now before he acted.

Firstly, he had just won and captured the Southern Border immortals, his strength rose sharply. Secondly, the Southern Border immortals were disoriented currently, Heavenly Court’s attention was also drawn there, he could act rapidly here!

The five colored lights started to dissipate and break apart, they were disintegrating at a rapid speed as they shrunk continuously.

Fang Yuan nodded in satisfaction.

If anyone tried to change the earth vein without knowledge, unless they were extremely lucky, the lights would still exist for the most part.

Only a specific method that targeted this arrangement could succeed, to change the earth vein and cause the five colored lights to completely vanish.

After a while, the five colored lights disappeared completely.

A powerful aura suddenly emerged. Enormous pillars in five colors soared to the skies, a loud voice reverberated throughout the five regional mountain range:

“Junior, you did well, you actually passed my final test of destroying the Five Regional Mountain Range. Now, my five regional inheritance is yours! Cultivate properly and you can move unrestrained and unhindered over the world in the future, don’t let down my name.”

In the middle of the five colored light pillars, a smoke-like will condensed into the vivid appearance of a Gu Immortal.

This was the will that Tao Zhu left behind.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, he stretched his arm towards Tao Zhu’s will.

Tao Zhu’s will froze instantly, he felt a formless force restraining him.

Next, he was pulled out of the rainbow pillar like a carrot that was uprooted, he flew towards Fang Yuan and grabbed by the throat.

Tao Zhu’s will was furious and humiliated, he stared at Fang Yuan: “Rank seven junior, don’t humiliate me, I was a rank eight back in my day... hmm!”

Fang Yuan purposely revealed a trace of his rank eight aura, Tao Zhu’s will had a change of expression after sensing it.

He chuckled as his attitude turned around entirely, he spoke with a tone of being on similar status: “So you are a rank eight friend.”

Secretly, he was thinking to himself: “This young man looks talented and has great disposition, but he actually acts so viciously and domineeringly. He is a rank eight but he pretends to be rank seven, he must be up to no good. Hmm, he is not a good person!”

Fang Yuan smiled: “I am a current generation demon, Old Man Tao Zhu, I will take your true inheritance.”

Saying so, his sleeves billowed and he unleashed the killer move that he had prepared.

The ground shook as Gu worms flew out of the five colored light pillars rapidly, they all flew into Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture, including the Immortal Gu mixed among them.

Next, the five colored light pillars faded away, they no longer were eye catching.

Tao Zhu’s will was flabbergasted.

Fang Yuan’s wisdom path method could sense his inner thoughts, that was not strange.

The shocking thing was, Fang Yuan could actually take the entire true inheritance without his consent.

The main body’s arrangements were completely useless against him!

“Sir, who in the world are you?” Tao Zhu’s will had a change of attitude again, he looked towards Fang Yuan with curiosity and wariness.

Fang Yuan’s action earlier had already surpassed Tao Zhu’s own attainment, not only did he see through Tao Zhu’s arrangements, he even dealt with them perfectly.

Fang Yuan looked over with a cold gaze, Tao Zhu’s will felt like he was completely emptied, no, he felt like his entire body was transparent to the other party, he had no secrets left.

Fang Yuan smiled: “Old Man Tao Zhu.”

“Yes, yes I am here.” Tao Zhu’s will felt extremely terrified by Fang Yuan’s smile, he did not dare to put up airs.

“Your true inheritance is quite interesting, when I dominate the world and invade Heavenly Court, it will be very useful. To reward you, I will allow you to find a new inheritor in my grotto-heaven. I will not destroy your will, I will replenish you and allow you to live for a long time.” Fang Yuan said.

Tao Zhu’s will was currently at Fang Yuan’s mercy, he was like a puppet that could not move, he felt extremely bitter inside.

Back then, when the main body researched upon the mysteries of the five regional walls, he made a breakthrough towards the end of his life, he had a shocking achievement!

But the main body’s lifespan was up, he had no time to become famous, he could only leave the inheritance and wait for an inheritor.

It was a huge regret.

Thus, Tao Zhu’s main body set up this true inheritance that would cause a huge commotion in the Five Regional Mountain Range, he would attempt to choose and test a proper disciple to inherit this legacy. When his disciple becomes renowned in the world, he would also gain fame and reputation, that would make up for his regret before death.

But the result was?

Fang Yuan came and disrupted everything.

Not only did he destroy the Five Regional Mountain Range, he skipped all of the tests and arrived at the end, even capturing the will and forcefully taking the true inheritance, he had no politeness at all, he was domineering.

Tao Zhu’s will felt deep grievance, this was not what his main body had intended for.

But what choice did he have?

He was just a will.

“If I am not wrong, even my main body is not this person’s match?”

“From what he said, he actually wants to attack Heavenly Court, without sufficient strength and confidence, why would he say that?”

Thinking so, Tao Zhu’s will sighed, saying to Fang Yuan: “Forget it, this is life.”

“I don’t care if you are a good or bad person, the true inheritance is in your hands, you might cause bloodshed and death in the future, but that will surely shake the five regions, right? This is what my main body wanted to see too. As long as you do not cover up my main body’s achievements, so what if you get the true inheritance?”

“Hahaha.” Fang Yuan laughed loudly.

His laughter became intense, his black hair fluttered in the wind, his eyes shined with divine light, the surrounding winds and clouds moved with his will.

After laughing, he looked at Tao Zhu’s will solemnly: “Don’t worry, why would I fight with a dead person over this reputation? If I cannot even let go of this, how can I surpass Heavenly Court, how can I surpass the generations of venerables and pursue my supreme goal of eternal life?”

Tao Zhu’s will stared with wide eyes, thinking: ‘Hmm? This person talks big! He wants to defeat Heavenly Court and surpass venerables? Is he crazy or foolish? Oh no, he can detect my thoughts!’

Fang Yuan laughed again: “If I lack even this bit of ambition, what’s the point of being human? Failure is fine, just try again several times. Even if I cannot achieve my goals in the end, so what?”

Tao Zhu’s will froze, he stared at Fang Yuan in a daze.

He saw Fang Yuan taking a deep breath as he looked into the horizons, his eyes were dark like the abyss, but Tao Zhu could see that within this pure darkness, there was a brilliant spark!

Instantly, memories surfaced in his mind.

The questioning and disdain of countless people...

“Researching the five regional walls? What’s there to research about?”

“He is so arrogant, this question has existed since the start of time. On what basis does this Tao Zhu think he can possibly resolve it?”

“A mere rank six immortal, and even a lone cultivator at that, he is so ordinary.”

The suppression of Southern Border’s righteous path...

“Tao Zhu! Stop researching it.” The person who warned him had high cultivation level, his face was cold as ice.

“Why? I did not provoke you!” Tao Zhu replied in anger.

“Don’t you get it?” The Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortal looked at him with a deep gaze, his tone was very cold: “What is the true meaning of the five regional walls?”

“Right now, Central Continent is the strongest while the other four regions are weaker. If your research really succeeds, it will cause a huge commotion in the world, the five regions will go into war, it will be a calamity.”

“For the sake of all the living beings in this world, we will be taking away these research gains of yours.”

“No—!”

Bam.

“Blind fool, if not for her, would you still be alive now?” The Southern Border righteous path Gu Immortal gave him a cold stare as he left.

The separation from his lover...

“Tao Zhu, we are not compatible, let’s end it here.”

Tao Zhu was filled with sadness: “Yes, I am just a lone immortal, while you are the beloved child of Yao clan’s first supreme elder!”

“No, that’s not the problem! Do you not get it? Tao Zhu! You are the reason! You research the mystery of the regional walls every day, how much time do you spend with me? Ask yourself this question, do you really care about me? You love your research more than you love me!” The female immortal sobbed.

Tao Zhu was speechless.

The female immortal wiped her tears as she breathed in deeply, looking at Tao Zhu with teary eyes: “This is the final time I will ask you, do you want me or your research?”

Tao Zhu lowered his head, he had a hesitant expression that was filled with uncertainty.

The female immortal walked closer: “Be with me, marry into Yao clan, we will live together and have our own children. Don’t think about the regional walls, we will provide you all the resources you need, with my father around, you do not need to fear any calamities or tribulations, darling...”

The female immortal spoke endearingly, Tao Zhu’s heart shook.

He looked at her.

The female immortal had an expectant gaze, he took a step back as if he was pushed by a formless force.

“I, I...” He clenched his fists, he gulped his saliva, he wanted to say something but no words came out.

He did not want to lie to the female immortal, he did not want to lie to himself!

The female immortal looked at him as her beautiful face turned increasingly pale.

Eventually, the hope in her eyes vanished.

She smiled lightly.

Turning around.

As the crystal tears fell.

She flew away on a cloud.

Not long after, news got out that Yao clan was having an alliance marriage with another righteous path force, the bride was that female immortal...

“He is Tao Zhu?”

“Is he stupid? In order to research the pointless secret of the five regions, he gave up on that marriage!”

“He is a lunatic. I’ve often seen him heading to the regional walls for his research, he often ends up injured and in a sorry state.”

On the night of the female immortal’s wedding, Tao Zhu stayed in a dark and tiny cave, he looked at the mortal formation in front of him in a daze.

This tiny formation was only at rank two level, but it was the research gains of his entire life until now.

He looked at the formation while thinking about the figure of that beautiful female immortal, her smile was stunning and beautiful like the moon.

He laughed to himself, his hoarse voice echoing in the tiny cave.

He continued to research the formation in front of him with overflowing tears.

All his efforts were not in vain, his stubborn nature was deeply planted into the soil that was filled with the blood of his bleeding heart, it bore fruit in the end...

Yao clan’s first supreme elder came to him.

As a rank eight himself, Tao Zhu looked at him directly.

Yao clan’s first supreme elder looked at Tao Zhu calmly but with a hint of pity in his eyes: “I heard that your research had some progress recently?”

“I was lucky.” Tao Zhu sneered: “You are here to snatch my research gains?”

The old man shook his head: “You just became a rank eight, I do not want to bully the young and weak.”

Tao Zhu’s sneer turned colder: “Your words can deceive a naive newbie, but trying that on me?”

Tao Zhu shook his head, disdain was shown all over his face.

Yao clan’s first supreme elder smiled nonchalantly.

“I admit.” He sighed as he nodded: “I had underestimated you, to think that you could advance to rank eight. If I had known this, I would not have hindered you and my daughter’s relationship in secret, I would have nurtured you and tried all ways to get you two to be together. Even if you are obsessed with this, even if you cannot give my daughter happiness, I would still do it for the sake of my clan’s benefit.”

Tao Zhu’s expression changed, thinking about the female immortal he loved, his gaze became dark.

“However...” Yao clan’s first supreme elder had a solemn expression as he added: “I will not allow you to do any research on the secrets of the five regional walls!”

Tao Zhu’s eyes shined with cold light, he regained his cold demeanor as before: “Hmph, the same excuse about causing chaos and creating war between the five regions which would cause bloodshed in the world? Have you thought about it? Once we decipher the secret of the five regional walls, we can bring prosperity and hope to the world! The five regional walls are the biggest obstruction to the interaction between all five regions, if they vanish, Gu Immortals will be able to move more freely and unobstructed, we would be able to share our cultivation knowledge with each other.”

“However, the possibility of war is far higher than peace, isn’t that so?” Yao clan’s old man interrupted Tao Zhu.

Tao Zhu was silent, he did not rebuke.

The five regions had too many differences, not just in terrain and culture, their resource allocation and population density also varied, there was also no lack of ambition people.

Unlike the current five regions that were isolated and had economic, political, and military balance, once the five regional walls were removed, this balance would break instantly!

“So, you are here to advise me to stop?” A moment later, Tao Zhu broke the silence, he snickered in disdain: “You know that is impossible.”

Yao clan’s old man said solemnly: “I must admit, killing a rank eight existence is too risky, it is hard for Southern Border’s righteous path to make a decision on this.”

“Unless there was no choice, we would not choose to fight to the death. Thus, we are here to tell you a secret, I hope that you can keep it a secret after you learn about it.”

“Why must I listen to you?” Tao Zhu laughed.

Yao clan’s old man also laughed: “Because this secret involves the five regional walls, don’t you want to know?”

Tao Zhu was moved, he felt a sense of anxiety in his heart but he quickly suppressed it.

The look of pity in the Yao clan old man’s eyes became even deeper now: “This secret is too cruel to you, but in this situation, I need to tell you. In the future, the earth veins of the five regions will merge and become one, the regional walls will disappear by themselves.”

“What?!” Tao Zhu shouted in deep shock.

This was a fatal blow dealt by Yao clan’s first supreme elder!

This secret voided the goal of Tao Zhu’s entire life.

The five regional walls would vanish in the future, then what was the point of Tao Zhu’s research? He put in so much hard work and effort, he took all the life threatening risks and even gave up on his beloved woman... all of these sacrifices that he made, were they just cruel mockery towards him?

“This is impossible, you lied to me!” Tao Zhu’s voice was loud but there was panic in his tone.

“This is a Paradise Earth true inheritance that our Yao clan inherited, the evidence is with you already. Even if you do not believe me, do you not believe in the words of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable?”

Yao clan’s first supreme elder said this and smiled: “Furthermore, you researched about the five regional walls and earth veins your entire life, you must know something about it, haven’t you sensed anything? All of your research gains can prove the fact that this will happen in the future, right?”

Tao Zhu was covered in perspiration, he stared with his huge hollow eyes as he fumbled backwards, he lowered his head towards the ground as his expression was full of nervousness.

Yao clan’s first supreme elder smiled.

He looked at Tao Zhu, his kind old man demeanor had an extremely cold and cruel disposition!

This was all that needed to be said.

Yao clan’s old man turned around to leave, before going, he said his parting words: “Don’t research about the five regional walls, they will disappear on their own in the future, your research is meaningless.”

“Of course, if you can succeed while the five regional walls are still intact, I am sure the moment you achieve success will also be the moment Southern Border’s righteous path and all our rank eights join forces and exterminate you.”

“This is all I have to say, Tao Zhu, think about it yourself.”

Tao Zhu was dazed on the spot, he stayed motionless, defeat was written all over his face.

...

It was like a dream.

Back to reality.

Tao Zhu had died long ago, while his lingering will was grabbed by Fang Yuan at the throat.

The true inheritance was already taken away forcefully!

But Fang Yuan’s words had a huge impact on Tao Zhu’s will —

“If I lack even this bit of ambition, what’s the point of being human? Failure is fine, just try again several times. Even if I cannot achieve my goals in the end, so what?”

“Hahaha, hahaha!” Tao Zhu’s will laughed maniacally.

Years later, his main body had already recovered from the impact that Yao clan’s first supreme elder dealt, he had the same kind of realization!

Indeed.

Even if I fail in the end and obtain nothing, even if my life was a complete failure, so what?

Even if the five regional walls would disappear in the future, so what?

Even if my research is meaningless, so what?

That is what I want to do!

You can call me crazy, you can call me an idiot, you can call me stubborn, you can call me stupid...

Alright.

I am crazy, I am an idiot, I am stubborn and also stupid.

But I... still want to do it regardless!

That is how I want to live!

That is how I can find meaning in my life!

However, I still had lingering regrets in the end, therefore, I created this inheritance.

And now, this inheritance is in the hands of Fang Yuan.

At this moment, Tao Zhu’s will became excited: “Fang Yuan! I will give you this inheritance, I will also give you the true meaning that is hidden somewhere else.”

“My main body was not skilled at fighting, that was why I had lingering regrets. But I feel that if this inheritance is given to you, all these regrets will be fulfilled! This is truly... a match made in heaven!”

Fang Yuan’s lips curled up, he showed a confident but arrogant smile.

“Then observe it yourself, Old Man Tao Zhu.”

“I will make sure your true inheritance — ”

“Stuns deities and shocks immortals, it will be renowned in the world!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1787 Rule Path Great Grandmaster

After obtaining the entirety of Tao Zhu’s true inheritance, Fang Yuan left the Five Regional Mountain Range immediately.

Like the previous life, this mountain range was inevitably still destroyed. But the result was very different for Fang Yuan.

In the previous life, he set up an ambush and created a huge battle in the Five Regional Mountain Range, Tao Zhu’s true inheritance has appeared unexpectedly, he had no chance to obtain it as he had to escape.

This time, Fang Yuan was wary of the ink effect, he waited until he ambushed Southern Border’s pursuers, after capturing them all, the time was ripe and he came to obtain this true inheritance.

After some time, Southern Border’s righteous path would agree and support Tie clan in building the Beacon Towers.

By then, it would be problematic for Fang Yuan to take action.

The scattered Beacon Towers would allow Southern Border’s Gu Immortals to travel much more quickly and efficiently.

During the final battle in his previous life, Fang Yuan obtained important information about Tao Zhu’s true inheritance from Wu Yong and Chi Qu You, he even set up a super immortal formation with them. Thus, he knew a lot about it, with all the deductions he made in advance, he was prepared to successfully take it by force.

“Tao Zhu’s true inheritance!” Fang Yuan sighed deeply in his heart.

The methods inside this inheritance were very useful to him, they would help him greatly!

Even though Tao Zhu was just a rank eight, the importance of this true inheritance surpassed even some venerable true inheritances.

His previous life was the best proof.

Fang Yuan used Tao Zhu’s methods to deal with the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, it gave Chen Yi and the rest huge problems, they were able to advance with great progress!

Tao Zhu’s methods were also able to deal with the killer move heroes among people.

Due to heroes among people’s amplification, Heavenly Court and Central Continent’s Gu Immortals had a huge boost in battle strength.

But as long as they were inside the five colored smoke, these Gu Immortals would face greater backlash the stronger they were.

This was a mystical move that had an incredible effect!

Fang Yuan had to give it a thumbs up, it deserved all his praise.

The nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation and heroes among people were venerable methods, but Tao Zhu’s true inheritance was actually able to counter them, this made many Gu Immortals’ jaws drop, they were deeply shocked.

“This time around, even if I cannot find a way to break heroes among people, I can use the five colored smoke to counter it, Central Continent’s people will have a hard time!”

“But the methods of this true inheritance are not too flexible. When used, an immortal formation has to be created. Even though I know this method, I do not want an immobile immortal formation, I need to modify it on this foundation.”

Fang Yuan thought about it as he looked at Tao Zhu’s true inheritance.

As he expected, the formation that he created with the Southern Border and Northern Plains Gu Immortals was the essence of Tao Zhu’s true inheritance.

In this true inheritance, Tao Zhu named the formation — Five Regional Limit Formation.

And the good news was that other than this formation, there was another immortal killer move, it had the same value as this five regional limit formation.

This move was known as five restriction profound light qi, once activated, it could shoot out light qi made of five colors.

The effect of the light qi was similar to regional walls, within it, Gu Immortals of the five regions would face backlash, the stronger their move, the greater the backlash.

Of course, because Fang Yuan was a special existence, he was not restricted inside this light qi.

Five regional limit formation, five restriction profound light qi, these were the essence of Tao Zhu’s true inheritance.

Other than that, there were two remaining Immortal Gu.

These Immortal Gu were rule path Gu worms, one was rank eight ‘Region’, the other was rank seven ‘Limit’.

Rank eight region Gu was clearly Tao Zhu’s vital Gu, it had risen to rank eight alongside him.

Tao Zhu’s immortal aperture was not preserved.

According to the true inheritance, Tao Zhu was very poor then, most of his resources were used for research, his immortal aperture had barely anything.

And most importantly, before he died, he left his immortal aperture for the Southern Border righteous path so that he could conceal his true inheritance.

Fang Yuan looked at the true inheritance as he felt deeper emotions.

This Tao Zhu was a peculiar genius, he spent his entire life’s time and effort on research, he invested so much manpower and resources.

In the contents of the true inheritance, he wrote about his countless experiments, he had risked his life each time in all these attempts.

Even after he became rank eight, he often went into the regional wall to experience its profundity.

This was not something normal people could do.

Thus, his immortal aperture was very poor, he could barely maintain the feeding of his Immortal Gu, it could not develop as he constantly faced backlash inside the regional wall as a rank eight Gu Immortal.

“Next, I need to manage my immortal aperture and gain the ability to feed these two Immortal Gu.”

“Then...”

Fang Yuan was faced with a tough problem.

Should he choose the five regional limit formation or five restriction profound light qi?

Both used Region and Limit as the cores with a vast number of supplementary mortal Gu. If he created a formation, he could not use five restriction profound light qi. Similarly, if he chose five restriction profound light qi, he would not have enough time in the battle to set up the five regional limit formation.

Creating a formation had huge drawbacks, because a stationary formation needed the power of an earth vein.

Tao Zhu true inheritance had clearly stated, not only did the five regional limit formation need to be set up on the ground, it needed to be rooted to an earth vein.

Thus, in the previous life, Chi Qu You added in earth vein Immortal Gu.

But now, earth vein Immortal Gu had not appeared yet.

Once a formation was created, it would not be very usable, because Fang Yuan would not be able to take it out at crucial timing. Unless he used formation flag Gu or the Formation Spirit to move this formation around, but that would require a lot of modification and deductions from him, and the results were unknown.

Choosing the five restriction profound light qi was more convenient and stronger, but it could not last as long as a formation.

Furthermore, it had its weakness too.

Each time this move was used, the Gu Immortal would need to expend a vast amount of earth qi in their immortal aperture!

The expenditure was colossal, even Fang Yuan was tongue-tied when he saw it.

“However, there is a method to resolve the drawback of five restriction profound light qi... hmm? I arrived.”

Fang Yuan stopped thinking as he arrived at an ordinary looking cave.

“It is well hidden, even I could not sense anything amiss.” Fang Yuan nodded to himself.

Next, he let out Tao Zhu’s will.

Tao Zhu’s will took a few steps forward, the cave changed, a gush of true meaning permeated the walls.

Tao Zhu’s will handed this true meaning to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan first inspected it, after finding no problems with it, he absorbed it without hesitation.

A moment later, he became a great grandmaster in rule path!

This Tao Zhu’s true meaning could allow a person who had no foundation in rule path to become a great grandmaster instantly.

Of course, Fang Yuan had his own foundation, he was a rule path grandmaster. Even though Fang Yuan was still a great grandmaster now, his original foundation was not wasted, it was still accumulated even though he did not achieve a qualitative change into supreme grandmaster.

“It seems that Tao Zhu was a rule path great grandmaster when he was alive.” Fang Yuan nodded slightly.

When any path reaches great grandmaster in attainment level, a qualitative change would occur.

Rank eight Gu Immortals were the elites of the elites.

Chi clan’s Chi Qu You was a formation path great grandmaster who could use natural dao marks to create immortal formations.

Blazing Heaven Demoness was a fire path great grandmaster, back then when she made a trap for Fang Yuan, he could not sense it in the immortal materials no matter what.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was a great grandmaster of all paths, this showed how powerful he was. The lifetime achievement of many rank eight Gu Immortals would only be one aspect of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. If not for Fang Yuan turning the situation around back then, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable would have infiltrated Heavenly Court, Shadow Sect would control the entire world.

As for why Tao Zhu cultivated restriction path but left behind a rule path true meaning?

Because restriction path was a sub branch of rule path, it was a small path that had not been fully separated.

It was like the emotion path derived from wisdom path, this path specialized in using charm and emotion to influence others.

The truth was, rule path had many smaller paths derived from it, it was truly the number one path without question in this regard.

The more famous ones were restriction path and phantom path.

Phantom path was derived from rule path, it focused on illusions and phantoms, between truth and falsity, it had not fully separated from rule path yet.

Fang Yuan had some rule path Immortal Gu, they were Precaution, Big, Fight, and others.

The characteristics of rule path could be easily seen from this.

Big, small, tall, short, fat, skinny, far, close, good, bad, round, square, curved, straight, truth, false, strong, weak, one, two, three, four, these were all rule path Gu worms.

Because rule path was a huge concept, it had many branching smaller paths as a result.

“Among all the paths, rule path Gu worms have the widest range of use, or rather, they are the most practical for usage.”

“For example, rule path Gu worm ‘Strong’, can be used with any path to make any killer move stronger.”

Rule path had another advantage, the Gu Immortal could often create their own true meaning using it.

This was the advantage of wisdom path as well.

True meaning involved the ‘truth’ of rule path, as well as the will of wisdom path.

Other than these two paths, there were truly very few Gu Immortals of other paths that could leave true meaning behind.

The ten venerables were exceptions.

These monsters were not confined to common sense, they were unique existences that could not be assessed through logic.

Tao Zhu’s true meaning was quite a joyful surprise to Fang Yuan!

Because he knew that Wu Yong and Chi Qu You did not obtain it in the previous life.

It was not hard to understand.

Fang Yuan had already deduced much of the truth.

Tao Zhu was suppressed by the Southern Border righteous path when he was alive, before dying, he gave up his immortal aperture to lure the attention of the righteous path while he set up his true inheritance and hid his true meaning elsewhere.

Southern Border’s righteous path obtained Tao Zhu’s immortal aperture, they thought that his research had no results, because they could not see through the Five Regional Mountain Range, they could not discover Tao Zhu’s true inheritance.

Even though Tao Zhu’s true inheritance ended in the hands of Southern Border’s righteous path last time, Tao Zhu’s true meaning had been hidden from them.

Tao Zhu’s true meaning was very useful to the current Fang Yuan, it came at the perfect timing.

Because he had just captured Ba Shi Ba.

This rule path rank eight Gu Immortal’s grotto-heaven could not be annexed with Fang Yuan’s original rule path attainment level.

“I wanted to undergo some transactions with Chi Qu You to get some rule path dream realms and raise my attainment level.”

“To think that this would happen, I do not need to wait anymore, I can save a lot of effort.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1788 Righteous Path“s Headache

Wu clan’s headquarters.

In a room, light was dim.

Wu Yong had an ashen expression as he sat like a motionless statue.

The information path Gu worm in his hand was still a little warm because he had just activated it.

There was an intense conference of higher-ups earlier among the Southern Border righteous path forces, it was as heated as a market, Xia clan’s and Ba clan’s Gu Immortals were close to screaming, their voices filled with terror and helplessness.

Most of the people were engaging in loud discussions, close to the point of arguments, as they vented their shock and fear.

“How is this possible?!”

“Fang Yuan ambushed us and obtained complete victory, our Gu Immortals were all captured by him!”

“What do we do now? This has never happened before in Southern Border’s history.”

“If news get out, our Southern Border righteous path would become the laughingstock of the five regions!”

“Reputation is no longer important, the important thing is that our clansmen are in his hands!!”

“Earlier, Fang Yuan left an information path Gu worm behind, didn’t he ask us to wait for his reply?”

“Yes, but he has not sent anything to us, do we just... wait for him?”

...

Wu Yong could still hear the discussions of these people echoing in his ears.

“Hmph, a bunch of useless people, what is the point of talking and discussing now?”

Wu Yong snorted coldly in displeasure, he squinted as his already long and thin eyes became even slimmer.

An eerie cold light flickered in his eyes continuously.

While his fists were clenched uncontrollably.

“This is troublesome.”

“Fang Yuan has the absolute initiative!”

“Even if I reject his extortion, Xia clan and Ba clan would not, because their first supreme elders are the ones captured.”

“Heavenly Court’s arrangements were useless as well, hmph, I wasted my effort in contacting Zi Wei.”

“But this is not because Heavenly Court is weak, this Fang Yuan has simply shown battle strength that is too terrifying in this fight!”

“With such terrifying battle results, looking at my Southern Border righteous path, only Chi Qu You is a character, he remained calm and cool.”

Wu Yong remembered clearly, in the intense discussion earlier, Chi Qu You had a calm expression and even was the first to suggest a plan to chase after Fang Yuan and pursue him.

Even though barely anyone responded, that was the proper behavior of a righteous path member!

Wu Yong had no idea that Chi Qu You was forcing himself to act calm, he was filled with shock and anxiety internally.

He pretended to make this suggestion to pursue Fang Yuan so that he could conceal himself deeper.

“Fang Yuan actually won?!”

“Not only did Fang Yuan win, he even captured two rank eights and multiple rank seven experts!”

Was it a joke?

Before this battle, Chi Qu You would definitely think this was a joke.

But now, he could not laugh at all.

Chi Qu You did not dare to believe it, but the evidence that Lu Wei Yin showed them was genuine, he had to accept it.

Fang Yuan obtained complete victory in this battle, not only did Southern Border’s righteous path go into chaos, even Chi Qu You felt like Fang Yuan had a hold on him!

Because Fang Yuan won using dream realms.

And these dream realms were given to him by Chi Qu You!

That was to say, Chi Qu You was the biggest contributor to Fang Yuan’s success, he had become the greatest traitor of Southern Border’s righteous path!

Before this, Chi Qu You had thought that Fang Yuan would use the dream realms to deal with Southern Border’s righteous path.

But he was limited by common sense.

Firstly, transacting with Fang Yuan simply benefited Chi clan too greatly. This temptation and desire blinded Chi Qu You.

Secondly, Fang Yuan had escaped by self-detonating the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies last time. In the entire process, he was in a distressed state, and he could not even control the self-detonated Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies that formed dream realms, thus, Chi Qu You felt that this self-detonation held little threat.

“But to think that Fang Yuan would set up a time path super immortal formation!”

“If not for this immortal formation stopping Gu Immortals from teleporting, how could he succeed in using the dream realms?”

“The time path immortal formation is not scary, the scary thing is how deeply concealed this formation was, if Fang Yuan had not activated it, it could not be detected.”

Chi Qu You felt a headache thinking about it.

He was a formation path great grandmaster, he naturally understood formations.

But the immortal formation of each path had their own strengths and weaknesses. The strength of time path immortal formations was that they could affect the flow of time inside, Fang Yuan used this to fight for days and nights inside the formation, capturing the pursuers. Only several hours had passed outside.

But time path immortal formations were not good at concealment!

It was the strength of dark path, phantom path, and transformation path formations.

Once time path immortal formations were created, they would be out there in the open, easily detected and seen, it should not be concealed so deeply.

So how did Fang Yuan make it this hidden?

Chi Qu You was stumped by this question, while at the same time, Fairy Zi Wei who was inside Heavenly Court found the answer.

She had just ended her deductions, Central Great Hall was still flickering with purple light.

Fairy Zi Wei sighed deeply.

“It should be the past arrangements of Shadow Sect.”

“Shadow Sect had once been scattered in all five regions, hiding under Zombie Alliance while searching for natural tributaries of the River of Time, using the surrounding time path dao marks to set up formations.”

At great grandmaster, formation path Gu Immortals could directly use natural dao marks to set up formations.

But the formation created would have different strengths and advantages according to the distribution of the natural dao marks. The Gu Immortal would often only be able to adjust it slightly, it was not as convenient as using Gu worms to create formations.

“But that time path formation in Southern Border is specialized in concealment, Fang Yuan had perfect use of it.”

“He added more time path formations inside and used the dream realms to capture all of the Southern Border pursuers in one go!”

Fairy Zi Wei had a dark expression.

She felt regret now.

Had she known this, she would have told Southern Border about the deaths of Chen Yi and Thunder Ghost True Monarch.

After the loss in Lang Ya blessed land, Fairy Zi Wei only told the world about a portion of the details.

As long as Southern Border’s righteous path knew of Chen Yi’s and Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s deaths, they would place more emphasis on Fang Yuan, they would not send just two rank eight Gu Immortals. (Lu Wei Yin had joined on his own accord, that was not under the control of Southern Border’s righteous path.)

This was not to say that Fairy Zi Wei had made a mistake, she had her own considerations too.

Initially, Fairy Zi Wei had lingering hope that Chen Yi and Thunder Ghost True Monarch might still be alive. Thus, she only exposed Fang Yuan’s secrets to the world while hiding this incident.

But after a long time passed, Fairy Zi Wei realized that Chen Yi and Thunder Ghost True Monarch were truly dead.

She chose to conceal this information because she did not want to help raise Fang Yuan’s reputation, and also because she was afraid that Gu Immortals of the other four regions would compromise with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had the strength to harm rank eight Gu Immortals, his influence had reached a qualitative change!

The other four regions were not like Central Continent, they had many forces that opposed each other, those forces were not united and could easily be crippled by Fang Yuan, it was easy for them to secretly reach an agreement and undergo transactions.

Fairy Zi Wei was not wrong at all, Western Desert’s Tang clan and Southern Border’s Chi clan were doing this.

Fairy Zi Wei concealed this fact to ensure that the four regions would still be antagonistic towards Fang Yuan. Regardless of the results, both sides would have some expenditure, any loss to either of them would benefit Heavenly Court overall!

At the same time, they would expose information and clues that Heavenly Court could gain by simply observing.

When the time is right, Heavenly Court would deduce Fang Yuan’s exact location and take action to exterminate this demon!

Fairy Zi Wei made a good plan, she was looking towards the future and making preparations for the five regions chaotic war.

But the situation was way out of her expectations.

Fang Yuan actually obtained complete victory, he captured all the Southern Border immortals!

“Even though Fang Yuan has rank seven cultivation level, last time, he made use of Lang Ya blessed land’s foundation. And this time, he is using Shadow Sect’s remaining arrangements.”

“The result is a one-sided victory by him, our arrangements did not even have time to take effect.”

Fairy Zi Wei gritted her teeth.

Fang Yuan was too devious and cunning!

It was getting increasingly harder to deal with him.

Fairy Zi Wei started to feel a sense of helplessness.

Fang Yuan only had rank seven cultivation level, but she could do nothing to him.

One of the reasons was that he cultivated too many paths.

Wisdom path for example.

Fang Yuan had deep wisdom path attainment.

Even if Fairy Zi Wei made deductions with her full power now, she could not deduce his location, she needed a lot more clues.

Normally speaking, Gu Immortals who were not in wisdom path would be easy to locate through deductions.

There were many demonic path Gu Immortals in this world, but why were there few who would wreak havoc like Fang Yuan?

It was because the moment they create chaos and make everyone angry, wisdom path Gu Immortals would undergo deductions and locate them quickly, before pursuing and hunting them down.

Or for example, refinement path.

Lang Ya blessed land was not so easy to annex, many Gu Immortals could not do it even if they wanted to.

Even some rank eight Gu Immortals could not.

Because Lang Ya blessed land was rank seven, one needed at least grandmaster refinement path attainment level!

Or, for example, dream path.

Fang Yuan was reborn from the future, he had many dream path methods.

During the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, he used these methods to escape danger and survive the ordeal.

Or, for example, this ambush battle.

Fang Yuan showed incredible formation path attainment.

To be able to use the time path formation to this extent, his formation path attainment level was at least great grandmaster!

“Of course, this can be part of the arrangements left by Shadow Sect. But why did Fang Yuan not use it back then? There is little possibility in this.”

“There is another possibility, after Fang Yuan annexed Lang Ya blessed land, one of the variant human Gu Immortals that he took in has great grandmaster formation path attainment level.”

“I don’t have enough clues...”

Fairy Zi Wei placed her hand on her forehead as cold flight flickered in her eyes.

She stood up and left Central Great Hall, arriving at the place where Spectral Soul was imprisoned.

Soul search!

Not long after, Fairy Zi Wei nodded in satisfaction.

She searched specifically within Spectral Soul’s memories, about the secrets regarding the time path formation.

“It is a formation with strong concealment capability indeed, but it does not have the power to summon year beasts, Fang Yuan must have added it in afterwards.” Fairy Zi Wei was in deep thought.

The eerie light in her eyes was just a speck earlier, but it had already spread to a larger area now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1789 Suspected of Rebirth

Heavenly Court.

Throughout the eras, countless immortal halls were built.

Behind Central Great Hall, there was a tall tower that was covered in a white-gold halo.

It was the rank eight Immortal Gu House Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Surrounding Heaven Overseeing Tower, several Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were working together, they were very busy.

Through their hard work, a refinement path formation was slowly taking shape.

A Gu Immortal with a strong body that was like a monolith was watching outside the formation. Even though he was just standing, he gave a feeling of a huge pillar that could support the sky.

It was Duke Long!

“Greetings, Duke Long.” Fairy Zi Wei arrived at this moment, standing behind Duke Long.

“Right now, Lang Ya blessed land is in Fang Yuan’s hands, that means he also knows the details of Refinement Cauldron. Originally, Heavenly Court’s refinement path formation was modeled after Refinement Cauldron. I ordered them to disassemble the original formation and modify it into another one.” Duke Long said as he turned around, facing Fairy Zi Wei.

Guilt showed on Fairy Zi Wei’s face as she said: “I have failed in my duties...”

Before she finished, Duke Long interrupted: “No need to take about blaming yourself, I believe you have already reflected upon your actions, the past cannot be changed, we should face the present and plan for the future.”

Duke Long looked at Fairy Zi Wei as he sighed: “Right now, Heavenly Court has control of the situation, but it seems like our control is slowly dwindling. Fang Yuan... this pawn arranged by Red Lotus Demon Venerable was able to thwart our plans and cause the deaths of Chen Yi and Thunder Ghost True Monarch, right now he even captured many Southern Border immortals. Even if he is only rank seven, regardless of what methods he used, the result is apparent to us all, the facts are simply like this. Zi Wei, how will you deal with it?”

In the previous life, Duke Long did not place importance on Fang Yuan, he thought that he was just a nuisance.

But now, after Fang Yuan attained great victories one after the other, Duke Long became alert towards him.

He no longer entrusted everything to Fairy Zi Wei like in the previous life, he started to feel uneasy and asked questions about future plans.

Fairy Zi Wei breathed in deeply, she already had a plan on how to deal with Fang Yuan, she said calmly: “The first thing is to find his location. Wisdom path methods are not enough, right now, I have sent out three rank eight Gu Immortals in Southern Border to search for his traces.”

“Furthermore, we need to counter his killer move that uses Fixed Immortal Travel as the core. This move is more threatening than Omni-directional Travel, it gives Fang Yuan the initiative to advance or retreat at will.”

“I have already given orders to prepare the refinement of fixed space Gu before anyone else.”

Fixed space Gu was in Liu Hao’s hands, but he was captured by Fang Yuan now. Fairy Zi Wei was confident in Heavenly Court’s methods, they could make Liu Hao’s fixed space Immortal Gu self-detonate.

With the crucial fixed space Gu, they would be able to deal with Fixed Immortal Travel’s killer move.

“And thirdly.” Fairy Zi Wei said as she paused, continuing in a heavier tone: “We need to guard against his Spring Autumn Cicada.”

“I am increasingly suspicious that Fang Yuan has already used Spring Autumn Cicada, he had been reborn already.”

“In the battle of Lang Ya blessed land, our side lost because star cast was broken.”

“This is very suspicious, Feng Jiu Ge left so many dao marks at various locations, why did Fang Yuan lock onto that particular one? Setting a formation in advance and blocking us from entering?”

“But I have made many deductions on this without any result, the clues are too few.”

Fairy Zi Wei sighed deeply.

“Spring Autumn Cicada is a problem indeed.” Duke Long nodded: “Do you have any way to deal with it?”

Fairy Zi Wei nodded: “Lord Duke Long, didn’t we discuss already, we will use the killer move benevolent equality on Spring Autumn Cicada. But benevolence Gu is still in Southern Border, it is owned by Paradise Earth’s inheritor, Lu Wei Yin.”

“That’s right.” Duke Long said in a low tone: “If Fang Yuan uses Spring Autumn Cicada, he might not just be using it alone, he likely would be using a killer move. Using benevolent equality to deal with any potential Spring Autumn Cicada killer move is most appropriate.”

“Precisely.” Purple light flickered in Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes: “That is why I plan to contact Lu Wei Yin soon, I want to discuss the matter of borrowing benevolence Gu from him.”

At this time in the previous life, Heavenly Court was calm and composed, they had not contacted Lu Wei Yin so early.

But due to the ink effect, they decided to approach Lu Wei Yin in advance.

Duke Long nodded as he had a thought: “You want to use this chance to see if Fang Yuan has truly been reborn?”

“That’s right. If Lu Wei Yin rejects us, the likelihood of Fang Yuan using rebirth is higher. That is because our benevolent equality killer move counters Fang Yuan.”

“But if Lu Wei Yin agrees, it means that we were able to use benevolent equality, it would be unlikely that Fang Yuan managed to rebirth.”

“At the same time, we can probe the attitude of this current generation Paradise Earth inheritor.” Fairy Zi Wei said slowly.

On the topic of Paradise Earth, Duke Long had a complex expression as he said: “Let’s do that.”

“However, even if Lu Wei Yin refuses to lend to us, we do not need to worry even if we cannot deal with Spring Autumn Cicada.”

“As long as we control the situation and progress as planned, no matter how that scoundrel Fang Yuan tries, he cannot turn this around.”

“Back then, with Red Lotus’ strength and foundation, he still failed in the end, not to mention this mere Fang Yuan?”

Duke Long said this with a grand tone as he smiled.

Fairy Zi Wei was a little hesitant, she asked: “Lord Duke Long, there is something I do not understand. With our Heavenly Court’s deep foundation, why do we need to borrow Gu in order to deal with Spring Autumn Cicada? Do we really lack any kind of method to deal with Spring Autumn Cicada?”

Duke Long’s smile faded away: “The cause is likely Red Lotus. Back then, he had told me this personally when we fought. He said that in the River of Time, there are many stone lotus islands that are not connected to each other, yet they share a special influence. All of the stone lotus islands form one immortal killer move, it is his proudest creation. This method can influence the flow of the River of Time, it can indirectly affect the traces of all beings in this world.”

Without the River of Time, the entire world would be still.

The myriad beings could only move and live because of the moving River of Time.

Using this relationship, Red Lotus Demon Venerable created a grand method that exerted its influence until today.

The most evident effect was that any Gu worm or method that countered Spring Autumn Cicada would never end up in Heavenly Court.

After the matter of Red Lotus, Heavenly Court concealed the truth to defend its reputation while aggressively searching and planning for methods to deal with Spring Autumn Cicada.

Gradually, Heavenly Court found something strange.

Any Immortal Gu that could counter Spring Autumn Cicada would intentionally ‘avoid’ Heavenly Court. Among the Gu Immortals that joined Heavenly Court, very few cultivated time path!

“But as time passes, this influence is weakening. Heavenly Court has obtained some methods that can influence and disrupt Spring Autumn Cicada. You know them too, most are still unusable.” Duke Long added.

“So that’s it.” Fairy Zi Wei had a calm expression but she was shocked on the inside. Red Lotus Demon Venerable had created an incredible method, this truly surpassed the limits of time path, it had a trace of the power of fate!

He not only damaged fate Gu, he even forcefully used time path methods to mimic the power of fate in order to counter it.

Fairy Zi Wei blinked as she calmed her emotions: “Next, I will let out news that Fang Yuan is trying to undergo tribulation and ascend to rank eight.”

“At the same time, I will talk to Wu Yong and interact with the Southern Border righteous path forces, to find more people that would go against Fang Yuan.”

“And finally, I have already given orders to nurture Fang Zheng fully. This person was brought about by the Heavenly Dao, he is a crucial key to dealing with Fang Yuan. Has he already undergone immortal ascension?”

Central Continent.

The blood rain became smaller as Gu Yue Fang Zheng floated in the sky above the mountain peak, his heaven, earth, and human qi were condensing into one spot.

He had gone through many ordeals, his suffering had turned into his precious wealth, allowing him to balance the three qi successfully.

Fang Zheng suddenly opened his eyes, he breathed in deeply and tossed a rank five blood path Gu into the lump of qi.

Boom!

A shocking sound exploded around him, the qi lump burst out and turned into an immortal aperture.

High grade blessed land!

Fang Zheng’s immortal ascension succeeded, there was also a lot of heaven and earth qi remaining.

Fang Zheng was overjoyed, these heaven and earth qi could raise his vital blood path mortal Gu into an Immortal Gu!

“Fang Zheng, quickly let me in, I will help you with the tribulation!” Fan Xi Liu transmitted, he had been guarding Fang Zheng’s entire immortal ascension process.

“Hmm?” Fang Zheng frowned, showing displeasure. The immortal aperture was the most private area of the Gu Immortal, Fan Xi Liu was infringing on it, Fang Zheng felt a sense of anger.

But immediately, Fang Zheng relaxed his brows, he opened the immortal aperture door and said plainly: “Sure, Fan Xi Liu, please enter.”

Fang Zheng knew that not only was Fan Xi Liu here, during his immortal ascension, countless eyes were watching him.

He gradually understood his value, he was just a tool, he was being nurtured to deal with Fang Yuan.

A moment later, his tribulation ended.

Fan Xi Liu was inside his immortal aperture, he had a complex expression: “Fang Zheng, this is a high grade blessed land, back then, I went through so much and faced a great risk during my tribulation, but only gained a medium grade blessed land.”

“Your immortal aperture has at least a size of 5666km2, while the limit is at 6000km2.”

“This is definitely a large tributary of the River of Time, the rate of time compared to the outside world is one to twenty-eight. The limit of a high grade blessed land is one to thirty, the difference is very small.”

His time path and space path resources were far beyond what Fan Xi Liu had back in his day.

Rank six Gu Immortals with high grade blessed lands were elites, they were few in numbers to begin with.

“And during this tribulation, you ascended your vital Gu as well, you now own two blood path Immortal Gu.”

“The sect has given orders, I brought you a lot of resources to plant and get past the toughest initial stage post ascension.”

Fan Xi Liu said this as he took out a large amount of blood path resources from his immortal aperture.

All these resources had huge value, they were mostly immortal materials, this experienced Gu Immortal Fan Xi Liu could not even conceal the jealousy and envy in his eyes.

The sect was putting so much effort into nurturing Fang Zheng!

The value of these resources was equivalent to a rank six lone cultivator’s hundred years of accumulation. Even for Fan Xi Liu who had Immortal Crane Sect’s support, he had to spend fifty years to reach this stage.

One could say that Fang Zheng became a rich rank six Gu Immortal without doing anything.

“The sect is putting so much effort for you, Fang Zheng, don’t let them down.” At the end, Fan Xi Liu said with a hoarse voice.

Just by seeing Fan Xi Liu’s complex expression, Fang Zheng understood.

He was also shocked that he was receiving so much attention and nurturing.

“Regardless of their motive... I have finally become an immortal. Fang Yuan, the difference between you and I is no longer immortal and mortal.”

Fang Zheng’s divine sense looked around, he felt deep emotions while looking at his immortal aperture: “This is my immortal aperture, my blessed land, my foundation!”

At this moment, he felt that his future was bright, it seemed to be filled with endless possibilities.

“Fang Yuan, even though you are strong, you were still forced to escape from Central Continent and Heavenly Court, you dare not step into Central Continent.”

“With their help, it will not be impossible for me to deal with you.”

“Even though I understand you, I will not forgive you. Fate toys with people, we will still end up as enemies after all.”

This current life was different from the previous, Fang Zheng received much more attention and help, his immortal ascension was brought forward by quite some time.

In the previous life, everyone knew about the nightmare that Southern Border faced, Fang Yuan’s demonic might was overwhelming.

But now, Heavenly Court concealed the facts behind their loss, while Southern Border’s situation had not been known to everyone yet.

Thus, Gu Yue Fang Zheng had no idea that Chen Yi and Thunder Ghost True Monarch had died, he did not know that Southern Border’s immortals were all captured by Fang Yuan.

This created a misconception after his immortal ascension that if he continued like this, he might be able to reach Fang Yuan’s height and face him directly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1790 Annex, Annex, Annex!

Inside sovereign immortal aperture.

Within the empty Mini Yellow Heaven, a figure was flying at rapid speed.

It came to a stop abruptly, landing before a group of Gu Immortals, it was Fang Yuan’s time path clone.

“Lord Fang Yuan!”

“Sect leader!”

The group of immortals paid their respects.

Looking at them, other than Ying Wu Xie who was working in green ghost desert, Fang Yuan’s subordinates were gathered around.

Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, Fairy Miao Yin, Lady White Rabbit, Xue Er, Bing Yuan, Shi Zong, Shi Shi Cheng, and Mo Tan Sang, their immortal auras permeated the area, these talented people were all gathered here together.

These people had participated in the ambush earlier, they witnessed how Fang Yuan controlled the situation and captured the Southern Border immortals.

Thus, the immortals looked at Fang Yuan with even more heated and respectful expressions than before the battle.

Especially those variant human Gu Immortals, they had smiling expressions with a polite attitude, they were as tame as pets.

“No need to stand on ceremony.” Fang Yuan glanced at them before turning to the other side.

An immortal formation was floating in the sky, it had been built by this group of Gu Immortals not long ago.

Of course, the main part of the formation was made by Fang Yuan, he had only left the minor portions to these subordinates.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone observed patiently before nodding in satisfaction, this formation was operating smoothly.

This was the wisdom refinement formation, it was constructed by using the light of wisdom along with Woman’s Heart and Unravel Mystery to refine other Immortal Gu. If there was the other person’s will, the effect would become even more outstanding.

Initially, Fang Yuan had used Mo Yao’s fake will to refine the Immortal Gu of immortal zombie Bo Qing, including change soul Immortal Gu. This crucial Immortal Gu allowed Fang Yuan to turn the situation around, snatching sovereign immortal fetus Gu during the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain from Spectral Soul.

In the previous life, this formation was modified by Fang Yuan, it had great power.

And in this life, Fang Yuan only tweaked it a little before using it, because the effect was sufficient, further modification was unnecessary.

“Alright, get into the formation.” Fang Yuan instructed.

The Gu Immortals beside him started to enter the formation, they controlled the formation for Fang Yuan, maintaining its operation.

Fang Yuan turned around and looked behind him.

Behind him, there was an illusory dream realm, it was like a huge lump of rainbow clouds.

A Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body had already been formed, Fang Yuan had learned this move from Feng Jin Huang in the previous life, it was a perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body that could exist permanently.

But because Fang Yuan’s soul cultivation was still low, he could not create a split soul, it was merely Fang Yuan’s will that was controlling this Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body.

The will would be constantly expended until it dissipates into nothingness.

It was only a proper clone if it had an accompanying soul.

Thus, this Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body was only half a dream path clone.

But it was enough for now.

After the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body entered the dream, a Southern Border Gu Immortal was quickly pushed out.

As he had not entered the formation yet, the Gu Immortals around Fang Yuan looked and had changes of expression as they recognized this person.

After the battle, they did not idle, they were searching for the information of these captives, thus they knew a lot about these people.

“This is Yang clan’s Gu Immortal Yang Ku.”

“He is one of the peak representative experts of soul path in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world.”

“He had once destroyed the nest of a group of ancient desolate beasts by himself, and had successfully escaped from the pursuit of an immemorial desolate beast.”

Lady White Rabbit and the rest were talking.

Yang Ku’s upper half was still inside the dream realm, while the lower half was exposed outside the dream realm, Fang Yuan’s main body used his killer move.

Immortal killer move — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

A ghost hand descended from the sky, it quickly went into Yang Ku’s immortal aperture.

As the immortals watched, in just a few breaths of time, the ghost hand came out.

It flew past Fang Yuan’s time path clone as it came to the top of the wisdom refinement formation, its five fingers opened up and tossed the newly stolen Immortal Gu into the formation.

This was a rank seven soul path Immortal Gu!

The Immortal Gu entered the wisdom refinement formation, it was immediately enveloped by the formation, and trapped in the center.

“Activate it with full force!” The Gu Immortals inside the formation cried out.

The wisdom refinement formation shined with a bright golden light, amidst the buzzing noises, the light of wisdom also gathered on the stolen Immortal Gu, rapidly refining it.

Great thief ghost hand flew back to Yang Ku’s immortal aperture, it came out after a few breaths of time, bringing out a second Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu was devour soul Gu.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone nodded, with this Immortal Gu as the core, he could finally use the killer move devour soul.

After great thief ghost hand tossed devour soul Immortal Gu into the wisdom refinement formation, it flew back to Yang Ku’s immortal aperture.

For the following two times, it stole Immortal Gu again and finally plundered all of Yang Ku’s Immortal Gu.

Some of the variant human Gu Immortals who were unaware saw this and revealed expressions of shock.

Did Fang Yuan already modify great thief ghost hand so that it would always steal Immortal Gu?

If that was the case, great thief ghost hand would be hundreds or thousands of times more powerful than before!

But great thief ghost hand had indeed been modified.

After Fang Yuan gained some results in comprehending the Steal Life true inheritance, he was able to specify the intended target for great thief ghost hand to steal.

As long as Fang Yuan knew the target well, and where their Immortal Gu were, he could steal Immortal Gu every time.

And in this case, Fang Yuan was completely aware of Yang Ku’s immortal aperture. Because in the previous life, he had stolen Gu and soul searched, he annexed the entire aperture, Yang Ku’s immortal aperture was fused into his own sovereign immortal aperture.

A moment later, Fang Yuan looted Yang Ku dry of his Immortal Gu, using the wisdom refinement formation, he quickly refined them into his own.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone took away devour soul Immortal Gu as he instilled immortal essence, activating other Gu worms as well to form the killer move devour soul.

This devour soul killer move was also modified, it was more effective than in the previous life.

Fang Yuan drew in a breath, Yang Ku’s soul was drawn out.

As a soul path Gu Immortal, Yang Ku’s soul was about to wake up the moment it left the dream realm, but Fang Yuan was prepared for this, he used a soul path killer move and sealed it.

After taking away the Immortal Gu, Yang Ku was like a tiger without teeth.

After his soul was taken, Yang Ku was a tiger without teeth that was having a fatal illness.

“The final step, aperture retrieval!” Fang Yuan called out as he activated his killer move, pulling out Yang Ku’s immortal aperture from his body.

The immortal aperture was forcefully sealed, it was turned into a light grey lump of light.

Bai Ning Bing and two other Gu Immortals flew over at this moment.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone handed this grey light to Bai Ning Bing with deep caution, saying: “Go ahead.”

He had deduced everything already.

Bai Ning Bing held onto Yang Ku’s immortal aperture, she and the others flew towards Mini Southern Border.

After confirming the location, Bai Ning Bing tossed, this grey-white light was fused into a certain mountain peak.

Immediately, heaven and earth qi rumbled, the grey light exploded and became larger. The area outside the grey light cracked as mountains moved, there was a deafening noise.

As the grey light expanded, it eventually turned back into the appearance of Yang Ku’s immortal aperture.

“Be careful.” Bai Ning Bing called out sharply as the two immortals beside her got ready.

Chirp chirp!

Firstly, a group of flower wing white bone birds emitted a crow-like call as they flew outside rapidly.

Next, the ground shook as a beast tide surged out towards Mini Southern Border from Yang Ku’s blessed land.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest had serious expressions but they were not flustered.

Long ago, Fang Yuan had deduced this, he had made the necessary arrangements with great detail.

The three immortals took action immediately.

Bai Ning Bing soon dispersed the beast tide.

While the flower wing white bone birds were also drawn away by a variant human Gu Immortal to another area.

Yang Ku blessed land originally had a balanced ecology, the living beings inside lived harmoniously, but after fusing into Mini Southern Border, the balance that Yang Ku had created was broken, chaos ensued.

Ordinary Gu Immortals would definitely be flustered at this point.

But Fang Yuan was calm and composed, he used his deep wisdom path attainment and the Gu Immortal subordinates that he had to control the situation.

The chaos only lasted for a while before it vanished.

One of the three immortals stayed behind to handle the loose ends while Bai Ning Bing and another variant human Gu Immortal flew towards Mini Yellow Heaven.

On their way back, they saw another group of three Gu Immortals holding a pink lump of light as they flew towards Mini Southern Border.

Great thief ghost hand, wisdom refinement formation, devour soul killer move, aperture retrieval method...

Stealing Gu, refining Gu, separating soul from body, annexing immortal aperture, and suppressing the chaos, Fang Yuan arranged all these steps meticulously, it was done with much ease.

Mainly due to his previous life’s experiences, Fang Yuan was very familiar with these captives.

Days later, Fang Yuan almost finished dealing with all the captives, only Ba Shi Ba and Liu Hao were left.

A huge dark inkstone vein was moved to the territory of the rockmen, Shi Shi Cheng was extremely happy upon seeing it.

In Mini Southern Border, dozens of mountains appeared out of nowhere.

Some mountains were even famous in Southern Border.

Interior Rain Mountain, Copper Seal Mountain, Bone Bird Peak...

The first supreme elder of the rockman tribe, Shi Zong, sighed deeply to himself: “Plundering and killing brings the most profits!”

Because they were Southern Border Gu Immortals, most of the resources were placed in Mini Southern Border, while the other half of the resources were split into the other four mini regions as well as the mini nine heavens.

Firstly, in Mini Central Continent, there was now a phantom shadow flower garden and a large fertile land filled with an enormous amount of immortal farmer soil.

Secondly, there was a huge heaven pillar wind in Mini Northern Plains.

Thirdly, a brand new sea area in Mini Eastern Sea, called wave flower sea area.

Fourthly, in Mini Western Desert, a dozen hibiscus trees were planted, every branch of this tree was an immortal material!

And his most important gain, Xia Cha grotto-heaven’s year essence pool.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan did not know that Xia Cha had a year essence pool, he had constructed one himself.

Having two year essence pools did not have much use, the result was that he had wasted a lot of resources. Most of the resources that Fang Yuan extorted from the Southern Border righteous path forces were spent constructing this year essence pool.

In this life, Fang Yuan directly took over Xia Cha’s year essence pool.

Fang Yuan had been troubled by the year beasts, ancient year beasts, and immemorial year beasts, he immediately threw them into the year essence pool now.

The immortals had huge waves of emotions, after experiencing much shock and surprise, they became numb.

Fang Yuan plundered almost all of these Southern Border Gu Immortals’ life savings, he took everything without any wastage.

“Lord Fang Yuan truly has a comprehensive array of attainment levels, he could annex so many immortal apertures of various paths without problems.”

“His grotto-heaven is grand and vast, after annexing so many immortal apertures, it is still so stable and firm!”

“This, this is simply a slaughter of livestock. These Gu Immortal experts were all like chickens falling in the hands of a butcher, their throats were slit, their blood was run dry, their feathers were plucked and they were cleaned and chopped up. This is truly...”

The immortals were tongue-tied, some could not speak.

Fang Yuan’s mass annexing of apertures had caused them to feel a chill in their hearts.

It was as if these Gu Immortals were not Gu Immortals in Fang Yuan’s eyes, they were livestock ready for the slaughterhouse.

Even rank eight Gu Immortals were no exception.

This had a huge impact on these immortals, especially the variant human Gu Immortals, they were much more shocked now than during the ambush earlier!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1791 Getting Another Rule Path Rank Eight Immortal Gu

An Immortal Gu floated in front of Fang Yuan, emitting rank eight aura.

This Immortal Gu was like a cocoon but it was not white, it was pitch black like iron. When held, it gave a cold and hard metallic feeling.

This was rank eight rule path Immortal Gu — Addition!

It consumed pearl thread water as food.

Pearl thread water was a rank eight water path immortal material, it looked like an ordinary type of crystal clear water on the surface, but if one placed their hand into the water, they would be able to grab onto water threads and pull them out of the water.

The water threads were long and silky, pearls gathered along the threads as they linked together, creating a beautiful necklace made of pearls strung on a thread.

But if the threads were pulled upwards continuously, the pearls would shrink until all the water became long threads.

The Immortal Gu looked like an oval black cocoon, even though it had no mouth or holes, as long as it was submerged in the pearl thread water for eight days and night, it would be full, the next feeding would be eighty years later.

“There are thirty-six years until the next feeding session, Ba Shi Ba already has enough pearl thread water, I can transact the rest away with Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals.”

Fang Yuan was very clear about this.

Because he had already taken Ba Shi Ba’s Immortal Gu and soul.

Ba Shi Ba had a lake in his immortal aperture, the lake was huge and contained a large number of ancient water spiders, as well as two immemorial water spiders, one male one female.

The pearl thread water was the saliva of the immemorial water spiders, it was the essence formed after they lived a long time in water.

It took a long time for them to accumulate droplet by droplet, if one did not collect it in time, the ancient water spiders would consume these pearl thread water to increase their strength.

As a rule path Gu Immortal, Ba Shi Ba’s immortal aperture mostly had a rule path environment, he had spent a lot of effort to create this lake.

The feeding of Immortal Gu was sometimes troublesome.

For example, Ba Shi Ba had a rule path Immortal Gu but its food was pearl thread water.

To be able to feed it, Ba Shi Ba had to create a water path resource point in his immortal aperture to produce pearl thread water, this was not easy for a rule path Gu Immortal.

But for Fang Yuan, it was no issue.

His Mini Eastern Sea was too huge, after the water spiders entered it, it felt like going from a village to a city.

Fang Yuan could even give these water spiders an entire sea area to live in. With a large space and a more suitable water path environment, these water spiders would breed better and grow even more numerous.

Fang Yuan who had sovereign immortal aperture was able to cultivate multiple paths, he had a huge advantage in raising Gu too.

Ba Shi Ba’s Immortal Gu were all taken away.

He only had one rank eight Immortal Gu.

Other than that, there were some rank seven and six Immortal Gu, among them were two rank seven Immortal Gu, they were One and Three.

Number Gu were the largest series of rule path Gu worms, one, two, three, four, five... they could be said to be limitless.

Even though Fang Yuan had so many rank eight Immortal Gu, the truth was, it was very hard for a rank eight Gu Immortal to even have one rank eight Immortal Gu in normal situations.

Ba Shi Ba had one, Xia Cha had two, that was because these two were the leaders of their righteous path super force, they had deep foundation and countless inheritances.

Normal lone cultivator rank eights would not even be able to get a rank eight Immortal Gu. For example – Northern Plains’ Old Ancestor Xue Hu had great battle strength, he was the number one demonic Gu Immortal in Northern Plains, but he had no rank eight Gu Immortal.

Even Heavenly Court had many rank eight Gu Immortals but few rank eight Immortal Gu, the ratio was terrible. In the previous life, when Longevity Heaven invaded Heavenly Court, there was quite an awkward situation, many rank eight Gu Immortals awakened but they did not have enough Immortal Gu to use.

Ba Shi Ba’s most valuable killer move was the consecutive hit method.

If he could get eighteen consecutive hits, Ba Shi Ba would be able to easily kill a rank eight Gu Immortal on his level. In the previous life, when he fought against Qing Ye, this Heavenly Court member was very wary of this, he tried very hard to prevent him from getting eighteen consecutive hits.

Honestly speaking, Fang Yuan was a little disappointed.

He originally thought that since Ba Shi Ba specialized in the consecutive hit method, his rank eight rule path Immortal Gu might be consecutive Gu, to think that it was addition Gu.

Consecutive Gu was more famous than addition Gu, it was also more practical in different situations.

With rank eight consecutive Gu, Fang Yuan could use it to link many different killer moves to achieve the effect of a consecutive move.

Consecutive move was one of the techniques to utilize killer moves, by linking two or more killer moves together, they could unleash greater power. Normally, only elites among Gu Immortals could use this.

Back then, Blazing Heaven Demoness possessed this technique.

She created a consecutive move with angry bird and fire prison, it had great power.

At least great grandmaster attainment level was needed to design consecutive moves.

One could see that Blazing Heaven Demoness’ consecutive move used only fire path killer moves. But using consecutive Gu, one could link the killer moves of various paths! This difference was very significant.

For example, Fang Yuan’s myriad ghost sword dragon and great thief ghost hand, or jade flow pearl and strength path giant hand... there were many possible combinations, he could raise his battle strength to an unprecedented level.

Ba Shi Ba’s Immortal Gu, killer moves, and soul were taken by Fang Yuan, only his body and immortal aperture were left.

Even though Fang Yuan could annex the aperture with his current attainment level, he decided to wait a while before doing it.

Because after annexing the aperture, the timing of his upcoming tribulation would be reset.

This was a minor detail but it was quite important.

The annexing of immortal apertures was temporarily halted, but Bai Ning Bing and the rest were still extremely busy now.

During this period of time, Fang Yuan plundered and annexed many immortal apertures, the numbers were shocking.

The newly added blessed lands and grotto-heavens were too much, even though the sovereign immortal aperture was still stable, it had severely affected the ecology of the immortal aperture, there was quite a bit of chaos.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest were busy dealing with the turmoil, earlier they had suppressed it with brute force, now they were meticulously resolving it. Whichever mountain needed to be moved, which river should be kept, which beast group should be relocated, while plants should be cultivated...

All these laborious and lengthy tasks were all calculated by Fang Yuan through deductions, there was a perfect arrangement overall.

This was the benefit of having wisdom path methods.

The new set up would not only allow these resources to grow properly, they could even benefit each other, he had even considered the future annexing of Ba Shi Ba’s immortal aperture and Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, he had allocated the space for them in advance.

Gu Immortals of other paths would have a huge headache thinking about it, they would not be able to arrange it this specifically, a lot of resources would be wasted. The losses incurred usually made many Gu Immortals feel severely pained.

However, Fang Yuan was busier!

His time path clone and his main body were both cultivating diligently, but they still felt they did not have enough time or energy.

Fang Yuan wanted to split himself into several portions to work hard together.

His rule path attainment level had risen.

The attainment level was the foundation of Gu cultivation, with the rise in attainment level, many things would change, the immortal would transform greatly.

Especially since rule path Gu could be widely used, after getting so many rule path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan had to conceptualize more killer moves or integrate them into his killer moves, otherwise, he would be letting down his own hard work and planning!

The immortal aperture management could be delegated to his subordinates to a large extent, but there were still many things that Fang Yuan had to do personally.

The training of killer moves was an important aspect.

Ba Shi Ba’s consecutive hit method could be set aside, while he was already familiar with Xia Cha’s time path methods, but Tao Zhu’s true inheritance had two main methods that Fang Yuan had to learn no matter what, they were extremely crucial.

Giant Sun’s true inheritance, Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance, Long Hair’s true inheritance, they were all incredibly profound, Fang Yuan would gain much insight every time he comprehended them.

For example, Giant Sun’s true inheritance.

Fang Yuan could not deduce the identity of Ba Shi Ba who had joined the Southern Border group that pursued him, that was because Southern Border’s righteous path had no lack of wisdom path Gu Immortals, they had concealed the secret well.

What alerted Fang Yuan was the fact that his luck felt pressured for some reason.

Later, during the battle, he observed carefully and finally discovered the threat of Ba Shi Ba.

Fang Yuan’s luck path cultivation had grown a lot, if this was earlier, he would not be able to sense it.

Other than Northern Plains Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan could reliably use luck path methods against his enemies, he would often gain unexpectedly good results.

Because there were only three luck path true inheritances, arranged well by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, they did not become widespread in the world.

Even Heavenly Court was searching hard for them without any gains.

The same went for Southern Border’s righteous path.

Second was Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance.

Recently, if he had not gained new insight, Fang Yuan would not be able to modify great thief ghost hand.

Third was Long Hair’s true inheritance. Even though Fang Yuan had quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level, he still had gains when he looked at Long Hair’s true inheritance. Without considering other matters, the conceptualization of Gu as Before had much progress because Fang Yuan had researched Long Hair’s true inheritance multiple times.

To speak the truth, this was the first time Fang Yuan had a feeling of being stuffed, he felt like he was having ‘indigestion’.

His sovereign immortal aperture was very strong, it could absorb many immortal apertures while remaining stable.

But he had to comprehend too many things, there were too many killer moves to modify, he had too many true inheritances to learn from.

Each one of these true inheritances would change the future of a normal person, it would benefit their entire life, it would even influence the order of the world.

Right now, Fang Yuan had too many true inheritances in his possession! Red Lotus’ true inheritance, Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, Giant Sun’s true inheritance, Genesis Lotus’ true inheritance, two Thieving Heaven true inheritances, Long Hair’s true inheritance which was on par with these venerable inheritances, and Tao Zhu’s true inheritance which was also quite powerful...

Fang Yuan had countless Immortal Gu, he had enough rank eight Immortal Gu for almost all rank eight Gu Immortals in this world to feel ashamed about themselves.

He even had rank nine Immortal Gu!

And his subordinates.

Different from the previous life, he had many subordinates in this life. Most of them were elites that were much stronger than the ordinary members of a super force.

At this stage, Fang Yuan’s accumulation and foundation was already at a world-shocking level!

As long as he had a period of time to fully process them, Fang Yuan’s strength would reach the peak of rank eight!

But he lacked time!

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly to himself internally.

In the previous life, he already felt that he had insufficient time, but it was worse in this life, this feeling was even more intense.

Fang Yuan estimated, even though he had the light of wisdom, in this situation, he needed at least a hundred years to fully absorb everything and grasp these true inheritances, researching and innovating so that he could gain his own insights and create even greater results.

“On one hand, I can modify the immortal aperture’s rate of time to get more time for myself.”

“On the other hand, I need to explore more dream realms and raise my attainment levels. It was far easier for me to comprehend Long Hair’s true inheritance compared to the true inheritances of Thieving Heaven, Giant Sun, and Genesis Lotus.”

“And finally, I need more manpower, I need more clones!”

Under Fang Yuan’s expectant gaze, a few days later, Dang Hun Mountain finally got restored to its peak condition.

This was far earlier than during his previous life!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1792 Shocking The World

A crystal mountain stood tall within Mini Southern Border.

It was pink throughout and gave off a dreamy illusory light, it was the famous secluded domain of heaven and earth recorded in u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e — Dang Hun Mountain.

Right now, Dang Hun Mountain had almost fully regained its former glory.

But it was not entirely repaired yet.

Like the previous life, Fang Yuan was worried that Heavenly Court might have a method similar to Fixed Immortal Travel’s killer move.

Of course, it was already extremely close to complete restoration, the decline in guts Gu production was negligible, Fang Yuan could accept it.

Rank six rockman Gu Immortal Shi Shi Cheng arrived before the mountain.

Even though he knew that Fang Yuan had guts Gu, when he saw this legendary mountain personally, he was greatly stirred, excitement flashed in his eyes with incomparable light!

“Dang Hun Mountain, guts Gu...” He muttered.

Guts Gu had an incredible significance to the rockmen.

Rockmen were all male, they had strong and tough bodies that created a huge burden on their soul. The more active a rockman was, the more damage their soul would receive. Thus, rockmen would spend eighty percent of their whole life sleeping and nurturing their soul.

After an old rockman dies, the soul and rocks they split into will form new rockmen, and inherit a portion of the old rockman’s memories, or some important experiences. In some cases, old rockmen sleep too much and their soul foundation accumulates to a degree, they would split apart a portion of their bodies to form new tiny rockmen.

This unique reproduction method meant that the rockman’s soul was the key to their strength.

The stronger the rockman’s soul, the more rockmen they could reproduce.

However, rockmen were variant humans that possessed earth path dao marks from birth, it conflicted with soul path. Thus, soul path methods that could increase the strength of their soul were very rare for the rockmen.

But guts Gu was different, it was formed from a secluded domain of heaven and earth, even though it was a mortal Gu, its ability to strengthen the soul could affect even Gu Immortals. After a rockman used it, the effect would be quite extraordinary. Back then, when Fang Yuan had just obtained Hu Immortal blessed land, he also nurtured some rockmen.

Shi Shi Cheng looked at Dang Hun Mountain as he could almost see the rise of his entire rockman tribe, they had a way to become stronger now, how could he not feel excited?

His emotions surged intensely, he felt that the decision to follow Fang Yuan was extremely wise for both him and the rockman tribe.

Fang Yuan was observing all of Shi Shi Cheng’s expressions.

He was quite satisfied by it.

This time, Fang Yuan purposely asked Shi Shi Cheng to come over while collecting guts Gu, it was to lure him and feel that the future was bright, as long as he followed Fang Yuan, he would gain an incredible amount of benefits.

After a while, Shi Shi Cheng calmed down as he started to control the formation.

Fang Yuan had formation path and soul path attainment, he did not lack Immortal Gu, furthermore, soul path cultivation was most important right now, he went around Dang Hun Mountain and set up an immortal formation.

Shi Shi Cheng was given permission by Fang Yuan to manipulate the formation.

The formation resonated, a grey-blue light was shot out, it was like fog or smoke, quickly surrounding the whole of Dang Hun Mountain.

Dang Hun Mountain shook lightly, the pink crystal mountain gave off a faint light that quickly dyed the grey-blue fog into a pink color.

The pink color spread in the fog and quickly covered the entire formation.

There was a large number of soul beasts and soul cores inside the formation.

Under the effect of the pink fog, the soul beasts and soul cores vanished rapidly without a trace.

After a while of operation, guts Gu started forming, going from single digits to the thousands.

Shi Shi Cheng expressed deep shock on his face.

“What sort of efficiency is this!”

“The number of guts Gu is still increasing so rapidly, it is reaching tens of thousands soon.”

This soul path formation was created by modifying the contents of Spectral Soul true inheritance, along with Fang Yuan’s own Immortal Gu, he named it soul expending myriad guts formation.

It produced at least ten thousand guts Gu each time!

This was definitely more efficient than using Dang Hun Mountain alone.

Of course, the condition was that he needed enough soul beasts and soul cores to create ten thousand guts Gu.

Fang Yuan had already prepared sufficiently.

Earlier, he had arranged cooperation with Fang clan to develop the green ghost desert in Western Desert.

This was a way to obtain soul beasts stably in huge quantity.

Even though Fang Yuan had such a terrifying appetite for soul beasts and soul cores, green ghost desert was able to fulfill his needs with great ease.

This desert was too huge, it had countless soul beasts, it was truly a soul path giant resource point!

It was a pity that this desert was inside the territory of Fang clan which cultivated formation path.

And Qing Chou was still hiding inside green ghost desert, it was a huge threat. As long as it remained, green ghost desert would have a fatal danger, it was not a safe place.

Fang Yuan did not even think of buying soul cores in treasure yellow heaven or extorting Southern Border’s Yang clan, because doing that would leak some important information.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan only repaired Dang Hun Mountain a long time after now, even after he repaired it, he lacked immortal essence, soul beasts, and soul cores, his progress was greatly delayed.

This time around, not only did he repair Dang Hun Mountain early, he even had a good supply of soul beasts and soul cores, this would allow his soul path foundation to rise rapidly.

Fang Yuan’s soul went into the soul expending myriad guts formation directly.

With the use of the formation to help him absorb guts Gu, Fang Yuan used ten thousand guts Gu in an instant.

The effect of guts Gu was so evident, his soul inflated like a balloon, becoming a giant in just a few breaths of time.

Fang Yuan’s soul flew out of the formation, arriving at Luo Po Valley who was nearby.

Bewilderment fog covered his soul as it started to become looser.

Luo Po wind cut and sliced his soul, the wounds that it created were incomparably painful!

Pain, pain, pain!

This pain originated from the depths of the soul, it was more painful than dying by a thousand cuts, Fang Yuan was almost going berserk.

But he controlled himself, a moment later, he flew out with a heavily damaged soul.

Going back into the soul path formation, he used the guts Gu to recover as his size expanded again.

Guts Gu was the most perfect nutrient for the soul, while the cultivation in Luo Po Valley made his soul as tempered as steel, all the impurities were removed.

Like this, after three rounds, Fang Yuan’s soul reached ten million man soul!

Shi Shi Cheng, who was controlling the formation became tongue-tied, he was extremely shocked, being in disbelief.

Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley were the sacred lands for soul cultivation, their reputation was deeply justified.

Fang Yuan sighed to himself, thinking: “The toughest part is finally over.”

Earlier, because his soul foundation was expending rapidly, he was almost forced to use other soul foundation methods.

Even though these soul path methods were exceptional, they all had drawbacks, only Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley were perfect in their usage.

For example, it was like lifespan extension methods compared to lifespan Gu.

“Oh my heavens...” Shi Shi Cheng praised as he sighed deeply.

He had finally reacted and accepted this dream-like truth.

Fang Yuan’s soul foundation rose like he was on a rocket, it almost shattered Shi Shi Cheng’s common sense, his sense of value and life were also in deep chaos.

He could not express his agitated feelings in words, his fingers were trembling.

“As long as we follow Lord Fang Yuan and walk behind him, our rockman tribe will definitely reach the peak of this world!”

“With these two soul path sacred lands, we will have foundation that surpasses the five regions’ Gu Immortal world.”

Shi Shi Cheng had no idea that Fang Yuan was not satisfied yet: “It is a pity I do not have pacifying soul soup, otherwise, my soul path cultivation speed will be even faster and more terrifying!”

Wisdom path cultivation emphasized on three aspects of thoughts, wills and emotions. Soul path also had three aspects of strengthening, refining, and pacifying the soul.

The former two had the ultimate methods of cultivation, they were Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley. Meanwhile, pacifying soul soup from the Bewitching Lake would pacify the soul, this was recorded in u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e.

After reaching a certain level of soul cultivation, the soul would gradually detach from the body, the soul (a portion) would fly out and result in incidents like blanking out or being physically unconscious.

At this time, drinking pacifying soul soup would resolve this problem.

Fang Yuan did not have pacifying soul soup, he could only use other methods instead, they were not as good as his other two cultivation methods.

This also caused Fang Yuan to only be able to cultivate soul path once in a while. Even though the efficiency was already out of this world, Shi Shi Cheng was nearly shocked to death, but if he had pacifying soul soup, he could almost endlessly cultivate without stopping.

Haste makes waste, Fang Yuan had to temporarily halt his soul cultivation.

A commotion occurred in treasure yellow heaven.

Heavenly Court started to spread rumors that Fang Yuan was reaching rank eight soon, he might be undergoing tribulation very soon, he was close to his rank eight tribulation.

Other than that, information that Fang Yuan captured the Southern Border Gu Immortals had also been spread by Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan sneered:” This must be the work of Fairy Zi Wei.”

In the previous life, Fairy Zi Wei did this too, but that was at a later time.

In this life, Fang Yuan progressed rapidly and gave Fairy Zi Wei immense pressure, she used this method earlier than last time.

In fact, this move was quite vicious.

Fairy Zi Wei would be able to borrow the strength of every Gu Immortal that feared Fang Yuan and did not want him to reach rank eight, they would pursue and deal with him.

In the previous life, during the Five Regional Mountain Range battle, Fang Yuan used this to his advantage as he made use of these Gu Immortals’ intentions.

“If not for the sovereign immortal aperture, I would fall into Fairy Zi Wei’s trap and she would gain initiative in this matter.”

“Now that she is spreading rumors like this, it means she has not discovered the true secret of the sovereign immortal body.”

“Of course, it is possible that she knew but pretended not to, spreading out rumors like this as the start of her devious plan.”

Fang Yuan started to use wisdom path methods as he thought intensely.

A moment later, a sharp light flashed in his eyes, he made a new decision.

“In this case, I will not wait around aimlessly, let’s expose your star cast killer move, as well as news of Chen Yi’s and Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s death.”

Fairy Zi Wei was trying to borrow strength, Fang Yuan was doing the same.

Compared to Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court was a bigger source of wariness and fear among the four regions.

In the previous life, Heavenly Court’s Gu refinement was met with the attack of all four regions, Fang Yuan’s spread of information had a lot to do with it.

“This time, I will reveal my battle strength, after all, I cannot conceal the matter in Southern Border anymore.”

“Since the world will be shocked by it, let’s go ahead and make them fear me even more.”

“This way, it will help with my extortion of the Southern Border righteous path later.”

As expected, Fang Yuan and Heavenly Court exposed information about each other once more, it caused countless Gu Immortals to gasp in shock.

Information spread like wildfire, soon, the entire Gu Immortal world knew about it.

The world was shocked!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1793 Little Demon Venerable

“So all of Heavenly Court’s rank eight Gu Immortals in Lang Ya blessed land had died!”

“Unbelievable, Thunder Ghost True Monarch is a legendary character, she had once fought against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. Meanwhile, Chen Yi is also the former first supreme elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect, he possesses Genesis Lotus’ true inheritance.”

“These two experts actually died at Fang Yuan’s hands? This is simply unthinkable!”

“Not just that, this demon Fang Yuan did not stop there, he even went to target Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world. Southern Border’s Xia Cha, Ba Shi Ba, and the other rank seven experts were all captured.”

“How does he have such battle strength? He is only rank seven.”

“Against Heavenly Court, he used Lang Ya blessed land’s foundation. Against Southern Border, he used a time path super formation.”

“There are too many suspicious points here, even now, I still can’t believe it.”

“It should be true, Heavenly Court and Southern Border did not dispute him!”

“Fang Yuan... this demon is getting increasingly scary. It has only been such a short time, yet he already killed and captured a bunch of rank seven and rank eight experts.”

“Hahaha, Southern Border’s righteous path has lost a lot of face this time.”

“That’s not entirely true, even Heavenly Court failed against Fang Yuan after all.”

“Fang Yuan is only a rank seven, how can his methods be so extraordinary?!”

“I finally understand now, a person like Fang Yuan does not conform to logic or common sense.”

“He has the air of a Demon Venerable! Weren’t all the past Demon Venerables like this when they were still young? Easily fighting above their rank and killing rank eight experts with ease!”

“Hmm, that is true...”

“It is a pity that only Great Dream Immortal Venerable exists in the future, there is no Demon Venerable. This is not Fang Yuan’s era.”

“You are wrong about that, Red Lotus Demon Venerable damaged Heavenly Court’s fate Gu, the future is not certain!”

“Fang Yuan is already so vicious at rank seven, he has committed so many crimes, what will happen when he reaches rank eight?”

“That’s right, while he is still rank seven, we need to kill him, this is the final chance to exterminate him.”

“Too difficult! Even Heavenly Court has not found his location...”

“Fang Yuan is not only vicious, he is also cunning. He is an otherworldly demon who has reborn, he has too many methods. Ordinary experts are courting death if they approach him, even rank eight Gu Immortals need to be careful and not fall into his schemes.”

“But if one can kill Fang Yuan, the gains are tremendous.”

“That’s true, Fang Yuan has many venerable true inheritances, he has countless resources, Spring Autumn Cicada, Fixed Immortal Travel, and other Immortal Gu, he even has multiple secluded domains of heaven and earth... he is basically a super force on his own!”

The Gu Immortal world of the five regions went into chaos, Fang Yuan became the talk of all the Gu Immortals wherever they went.

Gu Immortals felt hatred, fear, and jealousy towards him, they had complex emotions.

If Fang Yuan had become renowned earlier from escaping Thunder Ghost True Monarch’s assault and selling her rib bones in treasure yellow heaven, then now, with the blood of rank eight experts on his hands, and after capturing a large number of Gu Immortal experts, Fang Yuan’s name now shocked the world!

He had used reverse flow protection seal in the past to fight against rank eight Gu Immortals, he was known as the number one rank seven expert.

But now, not just rank six and seven Gu Immortals, even most rank eights were wary of Fang Yuan, they did not dare to look down on him.

A new title regarding Fang Yuan gradually gained recognition among the Gu

Immortals — Little Demon Venerable!

This title displayed the potential and disposition that Fang Yuan had towards becoming a Demon Venerable, he could be said to be a future Demon Venerable that was still growing.

This was a high evaluation.

In human history, through the eras, Gu Immortal experts were countless like the shining stars in the sky, but how many venerables were there?

Adding them all together, they amounted to ten.

And now, the Gu Immortal world recognized that Fang Yuan had hopes of becoming a venerable himself!

Of course, other than the discussions involving Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court was also the target of their discussion.

The things that Fang Yuan exposed, like star cast, made the Gu Immortals in the four regions extremely shocked.

Especially the righteous path super forces, they felt like they were on pins and needles.

Star cast had a huge significance in war, it allowed Central Continent and Heavenly Court to deploy Gu Immortals and attack suddenly without needing time to travel.

This gave Heavenly Court the complete initiative.

Rank eight Gu Immortals of the four regions were usually leaders of their force, they could not band together in anticipation of star cast, right?

In that case, Heavenly Court had a chance to use star cast to attack one rank eight with multiple rank eight battle strength existences.

Within Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei’s expression was grim.

Even though she had expected this, when it truly happened, she still felt quite gloomy.

Fairy Zi Wei did not want to let Fang Yuan off, Fang Yuan was also not going to let Heavenly Court have an easy time.

This was an open fight that dealt damage to both sides, they were both losers.

But the person who suffered the biggest setback was probably Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

He had just advanced to rank six, he had just gained the powers of a Gu Immortal, his confidence had just risen when this nightmarish news appeared!

Fang Yuan was actually able to defeat Heavenly Court, even Southern Border’s righteous path forces were helpless against him!

Fang Yuan only had rank seven cultivation level but he defied logic, even rank eight Gu Immortals were not his match!!

“I...” After hearing this news for the first time, Fang Zheng had a lot of things to say but he ended up speechless.

After a long while, he muttered to himself with a pale expression: “I... was truly too naive.”

He smiled bitterly: “Fang Yuan... the difference between us, is it really this big?”

This pitiful younger brother still had no idea that Fang Yuan was already a rank eight expert.

The truth was, the entire world was fooled by Fang Yuan.

And it was not a surprise!

Because even Fairy Zi Wei did not know of the sovereign immortal aperture’s true secret.

If Fang Yuan wants to ascend to rank eight, he would need to undergo tribulation, regardless of success or failure, important clues would be left behind.

If he was really rank eight now, the speed of growth was just too fast! Other Gu Immortals work hard and spend years cultivating like they were treading on thin ice, weren’t they completely useless people if he actually succeeded?

Fang Yuan looked at the discussions.

“To think that a day would come when I am a hotter topic than Heavenly Court.”

Fang Yuan did not know whether to laugh or cry.

Even though the other Gu Immortals were focusing on him more than on Heavenly Court, he did not feel disappointment.

Because Fang Yuan knew that the super forces in the four regions were now discussing on how to deal with Heavenly Court! Long ago, predecessors had already foreseen the changes in the future, for example, Yao clan in Southern Border. Now that the earth veins moved and the great era was impending, most super forces already knew that the regional walls would vanish, and that the five regions chaotic war would start in the future.

“Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, Heavenly Court, just you wait and see!”

Fang Yuan was paying attention to the discussions while noting the ink effect.

He knew that by researching these changes, he would benefit greatly in his comprehension of fate, all living beings, and the world.

“Recalling my actions post-rebirth, directly annexing Lang Ya blessed land was the best initial action I took.”

“One step ahead and I will always be ahead. My advantages grew rapidly like a rolling snowball, this is the advantage of rebirth!”

“Of course, I also have the advantage of being a complete otherworldly demon.”

“And most importantly, all these are thanks to Red Lotus damaging fate Gu!”

Compared to the previous life, he had much more gains this time, but disadvantageous ink effects were also taking place.

Firstly, Southern Border’s rule path rank eight expert Ba Shi Ba was captured by Fang Yuan and would get annexed soon, he did not end up well.

This meant that when Wu Yong leads the Southern Alliance to fight Central Continent, they would lose one powerful ally.

During the battle in the previous life, Ba Shi Ba was one of the main pillars on Fang Yuan’s side who resisted Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal Qing Ye.

Meanwhile, because Fang Yuan took away the five regional true inheritance and destroyed the Five Regional Mountain Range, the ambush battle would not occur there.

Heavenly Court’s member Jun Shen Guang had been captured by Fang Yuan in the previous life during that battle, but now he was still free.

Other than that, Heavenly Court had another rank eight Gu Immortal, that was Prince Feng Xian.

“Within treasure yellow heaven, my dragonfish business is facing intense suppression, the profits are almost close to zero.”

In the previous life, even though this also happened, Fairy Zi Wei had been provoked by Fang Yuan in this life, the actions that Heavenly Court took were more than ten times as forceful!

Furthermore, the dragonfish business was also prematurely targeted at this time period.

“Thankfully, I annexed so many immortal apertures, I gained a large number of revenue sources.”

“But in the previous life, Fairy Zi Wei worked with Southern Border’s righteous path to target my businesses.”

“I wonder if this will happen earlier this time? Will they intensify their actions like what happened to the dragonfish business?”

Fang Yuan thought about it, it was very likely.

There was also another bad result that had occurred, it involved Longevity Heaven.

In the previous life, Longevity Heaven annexed Lang Ya blessed land, by giving them equal status, their reputation rose sharply, allowing Longevity Heaven to unite the entire Northern Plains Gu Immortal world, Bing Sai Chuan and the rest managed to invade Heavenly Court.

This time, not only did Lang Ya blessed land get annexed by Fang Yuan, with Longevity Heaven getting nothing, Prince Feng Xian also returned to Heavenly Court. With such a huge traitor in Northern Plains’ righteous path, not only did the Huang Jin bloodline members lose face, Longevity Heaven was also implicated.

The outside world was in chaos, but Fang Yuan was not affected.

He waited and developed at a corner, moving his location constantly, his enemies had no lead on him.

His soul cultivation advanced rapidly, but he was still a distance away from using split soul.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone was focused on deductions, while his main body practised killer moves!

He was very familiar with Xia Cha’s killer moves, all his accumulations in the previous life were brought over through rebirth.

Fang Yuan was focusing on the contents of Tao Zhu’s true inheritance.

Immortal killer move — Five Restriction Profound Light Qi!

Gu worms spiraled, immortal essence was injected, a grand light qi burst out like a fountain.

It was purple-black in color, the smoky appearance resembled light, making one think of Southern Border’s miasma regional wall at first glance.

This was the southern restriction purple-black miasma light qi!

The other four were central restriction white-gold saint light qi, northern restriction jade licorice light qi, western restriction red raging flame light qi, and eastern restriction blue water light qi.

Fang Yuan had just started learning it, he could only unleash one type of light qi, he could not summon two light qi at once.

As for the other five regional limit formation, because he lacked earth vein Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan could not use it now.

According to his memories, earth vein Immortal Gu had not appeared at this point in time.

And even if he had earth vein Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan also needed to modify the five regional limit formation, he needed to add in the Formation Spirit and formation flag Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1794 Myriad Year Flying Warship

Practising killer moves was not easy, the Gu Immortal could suffer backlash and injuries with just slight carelessness.

The more powerful the killer moves, the greater the risks. But it was necessary to practise as well, they could not just use killer moves blindly during a battle, right? In fact, the environment during a battle was worse as there would be strong retaliation from the enemy.

There were many cases in history where Gu Immortals failed in activating their killer move and faced the backlash, suffering deep injuries and even dying.

Among them, there were plenty of cases where they died while practising killer moves.

Fang Yuan was practising five restriction profound light qi which was a very powerful killer move, so he was extremely focused and careful.

He had yet to choose between five restriction profound light qi and five regional limit formation.

The two could not be used together, it was very difficult to set up a formation when on the verge of battle. And even if the five regional limit formation was set up, it was difficult to disassemble it. During a battle, having five regional limit formation meant five restriction profound light qi could not be used.

From the point of flexibility, five restriction profound light qi was better.

But formation path had its own advantages.

Once five regional limit formation was set up, it was akin to having a prepared immortal killer move that could be used at any time, Fang Yuan would have huge initiative to go on the offensive.

An example was the recent ambush by using the years flow execution formation.

Be it the previous life or this life, this battle was the achievement that Fang Yuan was the most pleased with.

Not only because his gains were plentiful, the more important reason was that the whole battle was always in his control, he managed to steer the entire battle in the direction that he set. This was not easy to achieve normally.

Any plan seemed perfect before it was put into practice. When it was truly implemented, even Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven were unable to have control over the situation.

The most important factor that helped Fang Yuan's ambush succeed was that time path immortal formation.

As long as the formation was set, formation path Gu Immortals could often win against stronger foes!

But formation path's flaw was that it was not mobile and had many inflexible areas.

The absolute majority of the immortal formations could not be moved once set. A formation path Gu Immortal might have set up a powerful formation, but the enemy would detour around once they discover it, there were plenty of such embarrassing situations recorded in history.

Thus, Chi Qu You and Fairy Zi Wei were astonished that Fang Yuan's time path formation could be so hidden that it worked on the Southern Border immortals.

There was another point as well, setting up an immortal formation was not easy and took a long time, five to six days would be the least, two to three months was normal, there were even those that took a couple of years.

In the previous life, Heavenly Court had begun setting up the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation a year earlier. But after this formation was set up, the sub-formations could be created extremely quickly. This was the method left by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, it could not be looked down upon.

Even though it was extremely fast, creating sub-formations still required some time. In the previous life, Chen Yi's group had to come out and hold back Wu Yong's group so that the Gu Immortals behind could set up the sub-formations.

Many super immortal formations were also not something that Gu Immortals could create casually.

In the previous life's great war, Wu Yong and others were assistants, Chi Qu You, Fang Yuan, and Black Extremity were the ones in charge of setting up the formation.

The Long Hair refinement path formation in Lang Ya blessed land was also not set up by Long Hair Ancestor, he had requested long ago for formation path great expert Immortal Lady Jiu Hua to make it.

Fang Yuan estimated that if he chose five regional limit formation, he would need at least half a year to set it up.

Fortunately, he could use the difference in rate of time between his immortal aperture and the outside world to greatly mitigate this flaw.

In his plan, the new five regional limit formation would merge the earth vein, Formation Flag and Formation Spirit. With these three, Fang Yuan could first set up the formation inside sovereign grotto-heaven then take it out when he needed it.

However, Fang Yuan had yet to deduce this new five regional limit formation.

In this period of time, Fang Yuan’s time path clone was deducing an Immortal Gu House again.

Immortal Gu Houses were also Gu formations, they were developed from formation path. Initially, many formation path Gu Immortals felt the inconvenience and inflexibility of formations, they did not even have time to set up formations when there were sudden battles.

In history, there were many cases where some formation path Gu Immortals and even those great experts would suddenly run into a battle and be unable to display any of their strength; it would be considered fortunate if they only lost the battle, many actually died in battle while having much grievances.

The initial concept for Immortal Gu Houses was a portable immortal formation.

Previously, the time path clone had been extremely busy managing the immortal aperture or being under the light of wisdom to deduce many things.

And Fang Yuan’s main body was busy in practising killer moves and using the remaining time to cultivate his soul as well as managing his immortal aperture.

The number of killer moves continued to increase, his soul foundation also soared with every cultivation session, his immortal aperture management was also smooth-sailing. The main thing was he had an elite group of Gu Immortal subordinates helping him.

The year essence pool was important as it was the resting place of year beasts.

It contained many advantages, it saved space as the year beasts lived here, it also produced time path Gu worms, and could even control the time flow of the immortal aperture, it was a micro River of Time!

In the previous life, Fang Yuan had to bitterly gather the resources to form a year essence pool, but he found Xia Cha also had a year essence pool after annexing her immortal aperture!

In this life, he directly took the year essence pool which was already well-constructed by Xia Cha, but it was not good enough according to Fang Yuan’s vision and plan.

Over these days, Fang Yuan and his subordinate Gu Immortals were focused on fine-tuning the structure of the year essence pool, which showed to be very effective.

Fang Yuan put his immemorial year beasts inside and they were so pleased that they did not want to come out. As far as year beasts were concerned, there was food and water here, and they felt most comfortable soaking in water of the River of Time. Most importantly, there were no enemies, they were all kin unlike in the true River of Time.

Year beasts and eagle groups had always been burdens of the sovereign immortal aperture.

Now, the year beasts’ problem was solved and the aspect of eagle beasts made huge progress.

To create a food chain for the eagle beasts, Fang Yuan first created many eagle nests, then he chose grass weaving birds to be eagle beasts’ food. This kind of bird was also called birds weaving grass.

This bird was rather special.

During spring, they were only seeds, once the seeds grew on the soil, they would gradually form a grassland.

When summer came, the grass would weave with each other, forming the shapes of birds. These birds flew in groups, these were grass weaving birds.

In autumn, they migrated in groups.

When winter came, they would fall to the ground, their figures would dissipate and turn back into seeds. The seeds would be buried under the snow, waiting to sprout in spring.

This species of bird was easy to raise and they reproduced quite fast. Although the eagle beasts did not like to eat these birds, the food chain was just established, and they had nothing else for food, how could they be picky?

Spring Gu and summer Gu were already refined by Fang Yuan and could be used for this purpose.

He stationed a Gu Immortal in the mini nine heavens to look after the place before activating the killer move.

He had modified two killer moves.

One was called spring sprout which used rank eight Immortal Gu Spring as the core and wood sprout Immortal Gu as the supplementary, it sprouted the birds weaving grass planted in cloud soil and quickly dyed the large patch of cloud soil green.

Another move was summer days, it used rank eight Immortal Gu Summer as the core and some light path Immortal Gu as supplementary to form blazing sunlight; the grass weaving birds started flying, their amount increased rapidly to an extremely astonishing scale.

The hungry eagle groups finally had something to fill their hunger; Fang Yuan also was free from the plight of having to purchase food from outside.

But because planting birds weaving grass led to large expenditure of cloud soil, Fang Yuan now had to purchase cloud soil. Activating killer moves also expended rank eight immortal essence, calculating everything, Fang Yuan’s expenditure was slightly larger than before when he was just feeding eagles.

This was a problem which was always present when creating a food chain.

At this period of time in his previous life, Fang Yuan had not made any plans regarding the eagles. In this life, he had many assets and did not care about this cost as he could totally afford it.

This led to another problem.

The two time path killer moves changed the surrounding environment to spring at one moment and summer at the next moment. It was a great stimulation to the eagles, causing many of the female eagles to lay eggs in spring.

And, because the switch between spring and summer was too sudden and frequent, without the adjustment and recuperation of autumn and winter, the eagles became increasingly violent and there were many bloody conflicts when eagles fought over their mating partners.

During such moments, the Gu Immortal whom Fang Yuan sent acted as a nanny.

This simple food chain was just in the initial form, there would still be more parts added in the future to form a complete and stable food chain.

This was not a complete disadvantage, at the very least, Fang Yuan gained many eagle eggs.

Unlike year beasts which had the year essence pool that mimicked the environment of the River of Time, eagle beasts were much more troublesome to arrange.

A complete food chain involved all kinds of aspects where changing one aspect would alter the whole situation. Sometimes, even a tiny caterpillar might have a wide-ranging influence on the sovereign immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan still needed to consider the future.

Right now, the sovereign immortal aperture still had a vast empty space, deducing matters related to this was more difficult than deducing a rank six immortal killer move.

The amount of such deductions would become even more terrifying in future.

Stable management of the immortal aperture, annexing blessed lands, and gradually absorbing grotto-heavens had already filled so many places with resources that it surpassed most of the Gu Immortals’ in the world.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone deduced without rest, finally gaining success.

Immortal Gu House — Myriad Year Flying Warship!

In the previous life, Fang Yuan had always wanted to build an Immortal Gu House to explore the River of Time as well as to let his subordinates join the battles of rank eights.

Unfortunately, he tried many times but did not achieve much success. His first incomplete Immortal Gu House was destroyed by Li Huang, he then rebuilt it later, after extorting Southern Border’s righteous path, he had all kinds of Gu worms and managed to build an Immortal Gu House, but it was firmly disadvantaged in the battle in Central Continent and was not of much use.

In this life, he learned his lesson and for now lowered the standard he had, conceptualizing a time path Immortal Gu House.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1795 Gu as Before Formation

Heavenly Court.

The project of constructing Eternal Yacht was already at its most crucial moment.

Heavenly Court rank eight rule path Gu Immortal Cong Yan took out an Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu was like an extremely splendid and luxurious centipede that was the size of a forearm and was completely golden, with countless thin and small spikes on its back.

It was rule path Immortal Gu — Permanence.

This Gu was used in Heavenly Court’s Eternal Sand Cave but was now taken out to construct Eternal Yacht.

“The final step.” Cong Yan took a deep breath as he solemnly and carefully sent permanence Gu into the incomplete Eternal Yacht Immortal Gu House.

The incomplete Immortal Gu House absorbed the Gu; its aura began to be unsteady, rising and falling before rapidly falling out of control.

Cong Yan’s expression changed greatly: “Oh no!”

Bam.

A thunderous explosion occurred, the incomplete Immortal Gu House shattered. Countless mortal Gu died and many supplementary Immortal Gu were damaged.

Only permanence Gu suffered no damage, it was protected firmly by Cong Yan even at the cost of suffering heavy injuries.

Permanence Gu was the core, it could not be harmed, unlike other supplementary Immortal Gu which could be replaced even if destroyed.

At the same time.

Fairy Zi Wei left Heavenly Court and descended to Central Continent, arriving at Duke Long’s location.

“I have succeeded in learning shatter dream!” Feng Jin Huang raised her arms, exclaiming in joy.

Fairy Zi Wei had not thought she would personally witness this important growth of Feng Jin Huang.

She was inwardly shocked as she looked at the broken dream realm fragments that were like broken mirror fragments.

Feng Jin Huang’s progress in dream path was far beyond her expectations.

Duke Long sent away Feng Jin Huang who was jumping with joy, and asked Fairy Zi Wei about her purpose for visiting.

Fairy Zi Wei said truthfully: “Lord, these last days, I have been feeling uneasy but cannot find the reason, so I came to ask for your guidance.”

Duke Long nodded: “Is there any progress in deducing Fang Yuan?”

Fairy Zi Wei’s brows furrowed and revealed a vexed expression: “Fang Yuan’s defense in wisdom path is airtight, I have used all my strength but cannot deduce anything about him.”

Duke Long comforted: “Your previous plans against him were already good, even I cannot plan a strategy like that, after all I am not a wisdom path Gu Immortal. Have you destroyed fixed space Immortal Gu?”

“The refinement path killer move on those Gu worms have yet to activate. But I have already ordered Yuan Qiong Du to be ready at all times.”

Duke Long nodded: “Looks like it is not easy for Fang Yuan to plunder the Gu worms from the Gu Immortal captives.”

Thinking for a bit, he asked: “Have you looked into Spectral Soul?”

Fairy Zi Wei’s reply was direct: “He is only a remnant soul and a prisoner with no immortal essence or Immortal Gu. After the defeat in Lang Ya blessed land, I have paid extra ‘attention’ to him, there is no issue with him.”

Duke Long sighed: “Maybe it is him.”

“Who?”

“Red Lotus Demon Venerable.”

Fairy Zi Wei’s heart shook, she heard Duke Long continue: “How is the progress with finding Red Lotus’ true inheritances?”

Fairy Zi Wei’s expression turned unsightly: “Present and Past Pavilion has been in the River of Time all along, as long as Fang Yuan enters, we will definitely know. But earlier, Eternal Yacht’s construction failed, we need to redo it again. I still plan to construct Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform, Shark Flow Lever, and Moment Stage. With these five time path Immortal Gu Houses, even if we cannot find Red Lotus’ true inheritances, we also won’t let Fang Yuan get to them!”

Duke Long replied: “The first four are okay, but the core Immortal Gu of the fifth Moment Stage is the Immortal Gu in Million Heavenly King Gallery.”

Fairy Zi Wei: “This is the most stable plan among the ones I deduced.”

Duke Long attached high importance to Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan would never compare to Red Lotus Demon Venerable. He said deeply: “Red Lotus’ true inheritances are the greatest variable, blockading the River of Time with five time path Immortal Gu Houses is indeed a safe method. We shall go with your plan then.”

“Although I don’t cultivate formation path, I know the difficulty in constructing an Immortal Gu House, don’t put blame on Cong Yan.”

“Yes, Lord Duke Long.”

Because of the defeat in Lang Ya blessed land, Heavenly Court was even more aggressive this time, and they were moving with a tight pace.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s immortal ascension was only one aspect, Eternal Yacht was also being constructed, and they had also added the fifth time path Immortal Gu

House!

This ink effect was unknown to Fang Yuan.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

“This is the most crucial part, years flow like water Immortal Gu, go.” Fang Yuan willed it and an Immortal Gu shot towards the front.

When it entered the incomplete Immortal Gu House, there was a dazzling radiance.

The radiance was absorbed and emitted, flickering between bright and dark.

Fang Yuan was controlling the whole situation with all his concentration.

Countless thoughts welled up in his mind like surging waves in the sea, his accumulated will was melting like snow.

His main body was soaked in sweat in just a short while. The time path clone was also brought here to help out, he was forcibly enduring the stress, his face was pale as paper and his body was on the verge of collapsing.

All these painstaking efforts were not in vain.

The multicolored radiance gradually merged, forming a clear and bright blue light.

The light was no longer flickering between bright and dark, it gradually stabilized.

Finally, when the blue light completely retracted and vanished, an Immortal Gu House revealed itself.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House — Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Its core was years flow like water Immortal Gu, which elevated this Immortal Gu House to rank eight!

Fang Yuan’s first creation was directly a rank eight Immortal Gu House.

Years Flow Like Water’s main use was to produce year Gu. The countless year Gu it produced were used to feed Fang Yuan’s year beasts.

But now, there was a complete and stable food chain because of the year essence pool, Fang Yuan let the year beasts be self-sufficient inside here and could now use years flow like water Immortal Gu for other purposes.

This rank eight Immortal Gu was created by Hei Fan, it specialized in logistics and was an outstanding Immortal Gu in the aspect of immortal aperture development, but it lacked offensive power.

Fang Yuan fulfilled Hei Fan’s wish by using it to form a rank eight Immortal Gu House.

Besides years flow like water Immortal Gu, Myriad Year Flying Warship’s main supplementary Immortal Gu were two rank seven Immortal Gu – Precaution and Fight.

The former had been used by Fang Yuan in divination tortoise transformation along with vajra thought Immortal Gu, but this level of transformation killer move was no longer suitable for Fang Yuan currently, so he used it to increase the defensive power of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

The latter was rule path Immortal Gu Fight, but it was never used properly because Fang Yuan did not have high attainment level in rule path previously as well as having few rule path dao marks. It was only recently that his rule path attainment level had increased steeply.

Rule path was the path with the widest range of use, these two Immortal Gu perfectly coordinated with Years Flow Like Water.

Myriad Year Flying Warship had a narrow structure like a small boat and shined with a dazzling silver light. It gave a strong feeling of sharpness and toughness.

Heavenly Court had failed in constructing Eternal Yacht, but Fang Yuan had succeeded in his.

It was not only because of Fang Yuan’s time path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level, but also because of his rule path great grandmaster and formation path grandmaster attainment levels.

Fang Yuan had put in his energy to cultivate many paths since long ago, and after the initial problems in the start, the benefits were already showing and these benefits would keep on increasing in the future.

“This is the first Immortal Gu House that I created, it is a completely new creation and will definitely give a huge surprise to my enemies in future battles.”

Fang Yuan was joyous.

In the previous life, he had intended to build an Immortal Gu House but did not truly succeed, the ones which he built were incomplete and their power was barely passable.

In this life, he constructed Myriad Year Flying Warship and was satisfied with himself.

But this was not the end, this was only the first Immortal Gu House.

Fang Yuan had an enormous plan.

He had estimated that he would build at least three Immortal Gu Houses. In his deductions, this plan would make the most use of all the resources he obtains in this life.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was set aside, the time path clone had almost fainted while constructing this warship, he was in poor condition now. Fang Yuan could only arrange him to rest and not deduce anything for the moment.

Fang Yuan’s main body was also able to rest for two days.

Two days in the outside world was multiple months inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The time path clone had already recovered and had made another gain in his deductions.

Immortal Gu formation — Gu as Before Formation!

After spending some energy, Fang Yuan finally succeeded in constructing this formation.

Fang Yuan decided to make a move on Liu Hao now.

Liu Hao’s immortal aperture was still inside his physical body, but Fang Yuan had already extracted his soul and imprisoned it in another place.

Fang Yuan took out fixed space Immortal Gu from Liu Hao’s immortal aperture.

Almost in the same instance, fixed space Gu showed signs of detonating, but Gu as before formation was already activated and had started affecting the destruction of fixed space Gu.

Fixed space Gu flickered with lights as the refinement path dao marks on it were destroyed, after a while, fixed space Gu went back to a stable condition albeit with slight injuries.

Fang Yuan let out a breath of air as he held this Gu.

He finally obtained this Gu!

In his previous life, Heavenly Court’s hidden methods were activated, destroying not only fixed space Gu but also the other Gu worms inside Liu Hao.

But Fang Yuan had made some gains as well. From the fragments of fixed space Gu, he had obtained the hope of conceptualizing the Immortal Gu Gu as Before.

In his previous life, he had done deep research into these fragments and had never stopped deducing about this matter.

With such accumulations, his deductions finally had an initial success in this life and he was able to create the Gu as before formation.

This formation involved millions of Gu worm; there were more than twenty Immortal Gu involved in it from refinement path, time path, and rule path.

What Fang Yuan envisioned was Gu as before Immortal Gu, so this Gu as before formation was only an initial success.

After he modifies and simplifies this large formation into a practical killer move, it will be mid-stage success.

And later, when he condenses this killer move into an Immortal Gu recipe and refines Gu as before Immortal Gu, he would then achieve complete success.

“But currently, Gu as before formation is already my limit.”

“I need to increase my foundation to improve it.”

“I have absorbed the Long Hair true meaning, my refinement path attainment has reached quasi-supreme grandmaster. But in the history of refinement path, there are still two other monumental figures equal to Long Hair Ancestor, Old Eccentric Tian Nan and Old Immortal Kong Jue. Most of these two’s inheritances have definitely been pocketed by Heavenly Court.”

“The refinement path methods Heavenly Court put on fixed space Gu might have come from these two experts.”

“As long as I obtain these contents and increase my foundation, I may not be able to create an Immortal Gu recipe, but I will definitely be able to simplify this formation into a killer move and obtain mid-stage success.”

Fang Yuan’s eyes seemed to burn with the flames of passion.

In his previous life, he could not see such hopes and felt Heavenly Court was a deep chasm that was beyond him.

But in this life, he did not think so.

“Heavenly Court, I will invade Heavenly Court and plunder these true inheritances!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1796 Pure Dream Clone

Fang Yuan observed his soul.

After several cultivation sessions over this period of time, his soul had already recovered to sixty million man soul!

His soul was no longer gloomy and weak like before, it was filled with energy and was lifelike. Its face was exquisite and the body size was normal, there was a light from deep within it that covered it completely and would make people feel it was solid and pure.

Thieving Heaven true inheritance — rank nine killer move ghostly concealment, it was like a silk inner garment sticking to his soul, above it was a layer of ghost official garment.

Ghost official garment used rank seven change soul Immortal Gu and rank six cleanse soul Immortal Gu as its cores, at this moment, it had already turned into a martial uniform, there was even battle armor covering his shirt, it was a grand sight.

With his current soul foundation, Fang Yuan had the confidence to split his soul.

Immortal killer move — Split Soul!

Instantly, Fang Yuan’s soul left his physical body, only relying on the remaining thoughts, wills, or emotions to manipulate Gu worms and maintain split soul killer move.

As natural as drinking water, half the soul of the main body split and the main body’s soul once again returned to its body.

In an instant, Fang Yuan’s main body’s soul fell to thirty million man soul.

The split soul was also at thirty million man soul.

Fang Yuan closed his eyes and rested for a while.

When the soul returned to his body, he felt slight dizziness. This was a normal reaction because he had split half of his soul, which was a huge amount.

Immortal essence stopped moving inside his immortal aperture as all kinds of Gu worms rested with none injured.

This split soul was a success, it was actually not easy to activate this move, there was a huge risk and a high failure rate.

But Fang Yuan had diligently practiced this move before, spending a lot of energy and paying quite a price for it. All of his efforts made this attempt a success.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes, he had fully recovered and his mind was clear.

He opened his immortal aperture’s entrance a little, his split soul immediately moved along with the wind and went through.

There was already a physical body waiting for the split soul inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

This physical body was none other than the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body created from a dream realm!

After the split soul entered the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body, there was some fluctuation in the aura at first before it turned silent like a corpse.

Fang Yuan was calm.

He had more or less grasped three types of Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

The first type was the strongest Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body, the one that was condensed by Old Man Yan Shi and also the Ying Wu Xie of back then. This Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body only had eighteen hours of lifespan, its cultivation would increase by a rank every two hours and its strength would continue to grow, becoming extremely terrifying near the end of its lifespan.

However, this Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body required many Immortal Gu as well as a vast amount of dream realms. Fang Yuan could not fulfill the requirements.

The second type was the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body with Gu Immortal cultivation. Fang Yuan had used it many times and had once used them to stall the pursuit of Southern Border Gu Immortals. He also used it to secretly trade dream realms with Chi Qu You.

This Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body had one huge flaw, it had a time limit. Once the limit was reached, they would self-detonate back into a dream realm.

The third type was the one Fang Yuan learned from Feng Jin Huang’s Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body. This was a perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body, it consumed few dream realms and did not use many Immortal Gu, in which they could also be replaced with other Immortal Gu, but it was only a mortal body and did not have Gu Immortal cultivation.

The body which the split soul had merged into was the third type of Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body, it possessed an aperture and was only at rank one.

After a while, the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body opened its eyes.

The thirty million man soul was restrained and was starting to adapt to this body, this body was unable to hold the complete thirty million man soul with its low cultivation.

This was the classic case of a weak body but a powerful soul.

With Fang Yuan’s split soul restraining most of its power, it was like a giant had curled up its body and was lying carefully inside a paper house.

But it did not matter.

Fang Yuan had already prepared relic Gu.

Relic Gu was a sphere-shaped mortal Gu that was thumb-sized and had an ordinary appearance. But its effect was major, it could enhance the aperture walls and advance the Gu Master’s cultivation by a small realm.

Gu Master cultivation had five ranks from rank one to rank five, relic Gu also was divided into rank one to rank five.

Rank one green copper relic Gu, rank two red steel relic Gu, rank three white silver relic Gu, rank four yellow gold relic Gu, and rank five purple crystal relic Gu.

No matter which rank the relic Gu was, it was a treasure of that rank! Its price far surpassed other similarly ranked Gu worms.

For instance, red steel relic Gu was priced at eight thousand primeval stones in the mortal world, this value surpassed ordinary rank three Gu worms.

White silver relic Gu was a treasured rank three Gu, its value reaching fifty-thousand!

There would be at best white silver relic Gu circulated in mortal markets, the market for yellow gold relic Gu was controlled and they were extremely rare, often held in the hands of the higher-ups.

This situation was much better in treasure yellow heaven, after all treasure yellow heaven was the transaction area of Gu Immortals and was the largest market in the world.

In treasure yellow heaven, rank one to three relic Gu were sold in batches, there were few rank four yellow gold relic Gu, and even fewer rank five purple crystal relic Gu.

This was not because Gu Immortals were holding these Gu worms in their hands and did not want them to circulate, it was because relic Gu could only be formed naturally and were currently unable to be created by Gu Immortals.

Even Lang Ya blessed land and Heavenly Court were unable to do so.

Why?

With refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster and human path master attainment levels, Fang Yuan understood the reason now.

It was because relic Gu were human path Gu worms!

It had a fundamental effect towards variant humans and humans. Much more relic Gu would form in the areas with many variant humans or humans.

Fang Yuan’s pure dream clone began to use green copper relic Gu.

His aperture was different from normal Gu Masters, an ordinary aperture was stable but the pure dream clone’s aperture was constantly forming and breaking like a dream.

This was the characteristic of dream realms.

In the previous life, Feng Jin Huang had also exclaimed that the main reason for her being able to create the perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique was due to coincidence as well as her creating the killer move shatter dream beforehand.

Regardless of the pure dream clone's aperture shattering and forming, it had a membrane of light around it that looked extremely thin but firmly kept the dream path aperture inside it.

This membrane was the aperture wall of rank one initial stage.

After one green copper relic Gu was used, the light membrane thickened immediately and the light started to circulate like water, becoming water membrane.

Pure dream clone used another green copper relic Gu.

The water membrane became even thicker and firm, transforming into stone membrane.

After using the third green copper relic Gu, pure dream clone's aperture's stone membrane turned into crystal membrane.

The Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique was a special aptitude, its green copper primeval essence might be illusory like a dream but it filled more than ninety percent of the aperture.

Fang Yuan's pure dream clone immediately sat cross-legged as it controlled its primeval essence to attack the crystal membrane.

However, before it even made a move, its aperture advanced directly; the crystal membrane shattered, turning into red steel rank two light membrane.

The Pure dream clone had become a rank two Gu Master within moments.

Fang Yuan exclaimed lightly before realizing: "Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique is the eleventh extreme physique, on the same level as the ten extreme physiques. Its cultivation can rise continuously without any obstacles."

In a Gu Master's cultivation, it was easy to advance through small realms, they only needed enough time and patience. However, every large realm had a barrier, and the higher you go, the harder it is to cross.

Fang Yuan had thought of using his plentiful experiences to advance, but he had not expected the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body to break through naturally, this was much more convenient than his original expectations.

Relic Gu were consumed one after the other, and Fang Yuan's pure dream clone's cultivation kept on rising and breaking through to the next level.

Although there were few purple crystal relic Gu in treasure yellow heaven, there were a lot in Lang Ya's treasury. They were not an issue.

Thus, in just a mere hour, Fang Yuan's pure dream clone had rank five peak stage cultivation level.

"Prepare for immortal ascension!" Fang Yuan sent the pure dream clone out of the sovereign immortal aperture.

It could not undergo its tribulation inside the sovereign immortal aperture, because this would cause a huge disorder in heaven and earth qi and greatly disturb the immortal aperture's balance.

Fang Yuan's sovereign immortal aperture itself had a huge demand for heaven and earth qi. Were the pure dream clone to undergo its tribulation inside, there would be a huge deficiency in heaven and earth qi.

So Fang Yuan’s plan was for the pure dream clone to undergo tribulation outside.

Fang Yuan intended to create a perfect pure dream clone with Gu Immortal cultivation at one go!

But just as he was about to implement the next step, he suddenly felt an intense sense of danger.

“Huh? Wait a moment!” Fang Yuan’s gaze focused.

He had a deep wisdom path attainment, this strong sense of danger that came out of nowhere was not without reason, it was a certain premonition.

Fang Yuan could not ignore this feeling.

“This seems to be a hint that if I were to let the pure dream clone undergo tribulation, it will encounter an immense danger?”

Fang Yuan frowned.

Gu Masters needed to undergo tribulation to advance to Gu Immortal.

According to common logic, no matter how much heaven’s will strengthened such calamities and tribulations, there would be a limit. No matter how strong a rank six’s calamities and tribulations were, it would not surpass rank seven calamities and tribulations.

“But, if they are the calamities and tribulations of dream path...” Fang Yuan’s gaze turned deep.

The Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body’s immortal ascension would likely encounter dream path’s calamities and tribulations, but Fang Yuan did not know much regarding this.

Under the present situation, even an expert as strong as Duke Long was without options against dream path methods.

Fang Yuan was much stronger than Duke Long in this because he had unravel dream.

However, unravel dream was not omnipotent.

Moreover, dream realms were primarily divided into two kinds: one was realistic dream realms, what Fang Yuan explored the most were this kind of dream realms; another were abstract dream realms where anything could happen that could not be explained with logic, even Fang Yuan did not want to encounter them.

“If I were to let my pure dream clone undergo immortal ascension, it would give heaven’s will the opportunity to attack me?”

“If so, I should let it undergo immortal ascension inside the sovereign immortal aperture.”

“There is no heaven’s will inside the sovereign immortal aperture. Although it will extract a large amount of heaven and earth qi and damage my foundation, there are more benefits to having a Gu Immortal level pure dream clone.”

However, when Fang Yuan took back the pure dream clone and wanted to let it undergo tribulation, that sense of danger still lingered although it had lessened slightly.

Fang Yuan pondered: “Does this mean that even without heaven’s will, there will still be dream path calamities and tribulations when the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body undergoes immortal ascension? Moreover, it will be a great threat to me?”

Immortal ascension signified taking risks.

Was this risk worth it or not?

Fang Yuan hesitated for a while before sighing, he chose stability.

This risk was not worth it at this moment.

The crucial thing was he did not have even a little assurance. If it were other paths, it would be okay, but dream path...

Fang Yuan shook his head.

He actually had a great anticipation for this.

Because once the immortal ascension succeeds, Fang Yuan would not only obtain an immortal level pure dream clone, there would also be the opportunity for natural inspiration that could allow him to better understand dream path and have an opportunity to advance dream path mortal Gu to Immortal Gu!

But Fang Yuan regretfully discovered that the immortal ascension held way too much danger.

“If it goes bad, I might not even be able to use Spring Autumn Cicada.”

Fang Yuan was progressing very well in this life, it was not worth it to take such a risk.

Blindly taking risk was not courageous but stupid.

“Forget it, I shall let it be for the moment.” Fang Yuan snorted.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1797 Extorting Rank Nine Immortal Material

Splash splash splash.

Sounds of sea waves and clear cries of sea birds entered Fang Yuan’s ears.

The Eastern Sea sea area in front of him glittered with warm sunlight.

Gentle and refreshing sea wind brushed across his face.

Fang Yuan, however, was slightly dejected: “As expected, it is not time yet...”

He used jade flow pearl to arrive in Eastern Sea from Southern Border, his target was to find the blue dragon whale.

To Fang Yuan, gaining regret Gu would be a splendid matter.

Because he wanted to raise the ranks of his numerous rank six Immortal Gu to increase his own overall strength. With regret Gu, he could decrease his losses and reduce the risk of refining Gu to the lowest degree!

In fact, ever since his rebirth, he had come here several times.

This sea area was the area where he had followed Miao Ming Shen's group and seen the blue dragon whale in his previous life.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan was not successful in finding the blue dragon whale.

“Should I attack Miao Ming Shen and seize his method?”

“With that method, I can find the exact location of the blue dragon whale by myself.”

This thought flashed past Fang Yuan's mind and he quickly evaluated the risks.

If he made a move, Miao Ming Shen would not be a problem, Fang Yuan could even use Chu Ying's identity to scheme against Miao Ming Shen using wisdom path methods.

The true uncertainty was Fang Yuan did not know what that method was.

It was okay if it was some ordinary immortal killer move. But if it were some bizarre method and he made a rash move, it would simply backfire on him.

According to Fang Yuan's deduction, the possibility of the latter was not small. Because in the five hundred years of his previous life, he had not heard of anyone seizing this method from Miao Ming Shen.

Eastern Sea had rank eight Gu Immortals while Miao Ming Shen was only rank seven and his method concerned a Paradise Earth true inheritance, there was no way those rank eight Gu Immortals were not moved.

But these Gu Immortals seemed to have no desire to make a move, clearly showing that the situation was not as simple as it looked.

“According to my previous life, I just need to wait patiently and follow Miao Ming Shen into the inheritance ground.”

“But this has a flaw, that is the ink effect. In my previous life, Miao Ming Shen selected Chu Ying after some hesitation, will he still choose Chu Ying in this life?”

Fang Yuan used jade flow pearl to return to Southern Border.

Currently, Southern Border was the safest among the five regions. Even if Southern Border's righteous path moved against him, he had a large number of captives as his bargaining chip, he also had the most thorough understanding of Southern Border's situations.

Fang Yuan was not in a hurry to make a move against Miao Ming Shen, his carefully thought-out plans since rebirth were progressing smoothly, and even if he wanted to attack Miao Ming Shen, it would be too rushed to do so at this time.

Everything should be done methodically and when the timing is correct.

Sometimes, one needed to speed up, sometimes, one needed to slow down.

By acting too quickly and intensely, the end product might end up charred. But if one acted too slowly, they would lose their chance as a result of inaction.

Fang Yuan already had a firm grasp over the appropriate speed he should use.

His main task now was still his clone!

He needed to make a dragonman clone.

Fang Yuan had already obtained Bai Ning Bing’s dragonman transformation method, and had already begun researching it.

This method was called the humans alike dragons Gu refinement method, it used the Gu Immortal themselves as a Gu material and refined together with raging wave rising dragon fire, their race would change and turn into a dragonman.

This method’s success rate was very minute. During the Gu refinement process, all of the dao marks of the Gu Immortal would be affected.

When Fang Yuan had first read this method, he had exclaimed at its incredible concept.

He then discovered the flaw of this method.

This method was created by Duke Long who was proficient in qi path and transformation path. He did not have a deep attainment in refinement path and had mostly relied on qi path and transformation path to imitate refinement path.

But Fang Yuan was a refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster, he could give a huge improvement to this method in the refinement path aspect. After improving it, the success rate would also greatly increase and might even reach ten percent.

That was a one-in-ten success rate.

This was already Fang Yuan’s limit, he could not improve it any further.

Because the humans alike dragons Gu refinement method was essentially a human path killer move and also involved the profundities of transformation path.

Fang Yuan’s transformation path could not match Duke Long’s. It was even more so for his human path attainment.

Thus, the humans alike dragons Gu refinement method was also a supreme material that could allow Fang Yuan to comprehend some essence of human path.

“The real obstacle is still raging wave rising dragon fire!”

Raging wave rising dragon fire was an extremely rare rank nine immortal material, it was the human flame among the three flames of heaven, earth, and human.

Bai Xiang grotto-heaven had one lump but it was already used by Bai Ning Bing. Treasure yellow heaven did not have it.

Announce the offer to buy it in treasure yellow heaven?

No, Fang Yuan had a better option!

Xia clan headquarters.

The hall was filled with a heavy and stifling atmosphere.

Fang Yuan’s ransom letter was still sent to Xia clan first.

“This scoundrel Fang Yuan is a heinous criminal, he should be damned to death! We have to kill him!” Xia Fei Kuai shouted with a fierce expression.

The other Xia clan Gu Immortals looked ashen and had unsightly expressions.

Besides fury and hatred, these righteous path Gu Immortals also had a feeling like they were currently dreaming and nothing was real.

The grand Xia clan, a super force, was actually being blackmailed by one demonic path Gu Immortal!

And the cause of this ransom was actually the kidnapping of Xia clan’s strongest expert, Xia clan’s foundation, Xia clan’s supreme figure of authority — first supreme elder Xia Cha!!

If someone had told Xia clan’s Gu Immortals this would happen before the ambush attack, Xia clan’s Gu Immortals would definitely give that person a few hard slaps and even shout at them to wake up.

But at this moment, Xia clan’s Gu Immortals had the urge to slap themselves: How did the situation fall to this state?

Xia clan’s second supreme elder Xia Zhao was the person who felt the greatest pressure, he sighed and said: “You have all seen that mortal letter Gu, Fang Yuan is demanding raging wave rising dragon fire. What are your thoughts on this?”

Xia clan immortals looked at each other, silent.

Xia Zhao could only point out a name as he looked towards Xia Fei Kuai: “Come, didn’t you shout quite loudly just before? Speak your thoughts.”

Xia Fei Kuai had a irascible temper and felt extreme anger towards Fang Yuan, but he remained silent for a good while before speaking: “Even Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were unable to get rid of this demon Fang Yuan, he might just be rank seven but he is truly diabolical. If he really wanted Lady Xia Cha’s life, he would definitely not have any misgivings. Maybe we can ally with other clans? Fang Yuan is blackmailing us, he will definitely blackmail the other clans as well!”

Xia Liu Pei immediately retorted: “The one we lost is our first supreme elder, how could those outsiders be relied on? Right now, they are eager for us to lose Lady Xia Cha! Since Fang Yuan will definitely blackmail other forces, did you see any of them contacting us?”

“You!” Xia Fei Kuai glared, but could not find any words to retort. After a good while, he said: “Even if we want to compromise, we don’t have raging wave rising dragon fire.”

“Just because we do not have it does not mean others don’t.”

“That demon Fang Yuan might only be putting a high price first and is waiting for us to negotiate?”

Xia clan’s Gu Immortal continued to speak their thoughts.

Same as the previous life, Xia clan’s most important person had landed in Fang Yuan’s hand, the Xia clan Gu Immortals could only admit defeat and be blackmailed by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s reply was direct: “Don’t mention other things to me, I want raging wave rising dragon fire! I don’t care how you get it, but we can only discuss after you bring it over. Or else, Xia Cha’s life? Hehe.”

Fang Yuan was even more calm than in the previous life.

In the previous life, he had to make several probes while blackmailing Southern Border’s righteous path.

In this life, he was familiar with every clan’s limits, Xia clan was going to be blackmailed hard by him.

Although Xia clan and Ba clan both lost rank eight Gu Immortals as captives, Xia clan’s situation was still the worst. Because Ba clan still had another rank eight candidate — Ba De!

So Fang Yuan’s first target of blackmail was still Xia clan.

Xia clan did not have raging wave rising dragon fire, which was within Fang Yuan’s expectations because he had already searched Xia Cha’s soul and did not see raging wave rising dragon fire in the treasury.

The other rank seven Xia Clan Gu Immortals might not know about all the things in the treasury, but Xia Cha definitely knew the details as the first supreme elder.

Actually, Fang Yuan truly did not know which force of Southern Border had raging wave rising dragon fire.

It was possible for a clan to have stored it but the rank nine immortal material might be hidden so deep in the treasury that only the first supreme elder could know of it.

There was also the possibility this fire was not with any Southern Border righteous path force.

Fang Yuan did not care about this, he was going to make Southern Border’s righteous path take care of this headache.

In Fang Yuan’s plan, the dragonman clone was one of the important parts.

Because this clone would involve the acquisition of Dragon Palace!

Fang Yuan did not actually have clear information regarding Dragon Palace, but he was able to deduce that the dragonman clone would be the crucial key to inherit Dragon Palace.

In the previous life, Bai Ning Bing being able to become the owner of Dragon Palace was the best evidence.

Fang Yuan extorted the Southern Border righteous path while continuing to cultivate and absorbing his gains.

Not long later, he successfully improved time cutting edge, the new time cutting edge was thirty percent more powerful than in previous life!

This was because Fang Yuan had a lot more time path Immortal Gu than in his previous life.

Not only was it because he had gained Lang Ya blessed land, but also because the years flow execution formation was not seriously damaged like in previous life during the Southern Border immortals’ attack, so many time path Immortal Gu were preserved.

There was another point, Fang Yuan had even calculated some time path Immortal Gu of Southern Border righteous path's treasuries in his plan.

First was Xia clan, then Ba clan and Yi clan.

Yi clan's Gu Immortal Yi Yang was blood related to Yi clan's first supreme elder, and was a successor of the clan nurtured by the first supreme elder, he was very important to the clan.

Fourth was Chi clan.

Fang Yuan's attitude towards Chi clan was quite amiable: "Brother Chi Qu You, we are really good friends! I was able to capture Southern Border immortals because of you. I will directly return your second supreme elder to you."

Chi Qu You's face was pitch-black like the bottom of a pot!

"Don't act so close to me!"

Chi Qu You felt an intense disgust inwardly.

He discovered that he was dragged in so deep by Fang Yuan that he could not get out!

These past few days, his mood had been extremely heavy.

Because he knew Fang Yuan was able to capture the Southern Border immortals mainly because of dream realms. And he was the one who had secretly handed these dream realms to Fang Yuan.

Were the Southern Border righteous path to know of this huge secret, not only Chi Qu You, even Chi clan would be in imminent danger!

The dream realm trading had become a threat to Chi Qu You, he really wanted to stop these dangerous transactions, but was it possible anymore?

The person he was facing was Fang Yuan, Chi Qu You's heart went cold at this thought.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1798 – Inspiration of Destiny

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Southern Border.

Rumble!

A loud sound was heard.

The ground shook for a moment before the dense radiance of an earth path killer move covered the surrounding one hundred li.

Like a large formless hand molding soft mud, the surrounding terrain began to sink in while the land in the periphery began to rise, forming a circular valley.

This sunken land was surrounded by mountains, forming an environment that was isolated from the outside.

There was no vegetation in this sunken land, soil was also scarce, it was instead covered by a large amount of steel materials.

“This is white steel bowl valley!” Rockman Gu Immortal Shi Shi Cheng watched this scene from outside the valley with shock.

Fang Yuan had countless powerful methods, casually creating another mid-scale resource point without exerting much effort.

Over these days, Shi Shi Cheng had conversed with other Gu Immortals and gained a deeper understanding of how vast the sovereign immortal aperture was and the large amount of resources distributed all over it.

Such a deep foundation was astonishing and increased the confidence of these Gu Immortals regarding their future.

However, what made Shi Shi Cheng even more amazed was Fang Yuan’s courage!

Other Gu Immortals would not have dared, but Fang Yuan fought against stronger enemies, targeting Southern Border’s righteous path.

The important thing was he not only attacked them but also was victorious and captured these Southern Border Gu Immortals.

If not for these captives, how could Fang Yuan have extorted these resources to easily create white steel bowl valley?

Compared to Fang Yuan, the rockman tribe’s Gu Immortals looked excessively conservative.

“Lord Fang Yuan is the one we should follow!” Shi Shi Cheng was becoming increasingly inclined towards Fang Yuan, he was completely captivated by Fang Yuan’s charisma and subdued by his disposition.

Over these days, with Hei Lou Lan and the others’ continuous work, every resource was arranged properly.

The sovereign immortal aperture had been barren but annexing blessed lands and grotto-heavens had gathered a large amount of resources in it. And now, these resources were distributed ingeniously and harmoniously to form a balanced ecology.

There was no chaos or mutual disturbance, the resources aided one another in their growth.

This was the result of Fang Yuan’s meticulous deductions using wisdom path.

The next step was to fill up some gaps.

For instance, white steel bowl valley was something Tie Qu Zhong wanted to construct but had not started yet. With it, Tie Qu Zhong could feed edge Gu by himself and would not have to rely on external sources.

Fang Yuan had already filled the gaps here.

In the previous life, he had completed this project, and it was even easier in this life.

As for the necessary resources, Fang Yuan extorted them from Southern Border’s righteous path.

Fang Yuan clearly felt it was much easier to extort the Southern Border righteous path in this life than in the previous life.

It was because the resistance of Southern Border’s Gu Immortals resistance had become much weaker.

The video Fang Yuan revealed in Heavenly Court showed him killing Chen Yi and Thunder Ghost True Monarch, this greatly stirred up the Southern Border righteous path!

“Even Heavenly Court lost to this demon Fang Yuan, what is so strange about our Southern Border righteous path failing to deal with him?”

Even if the Southern Border Gu Immortals did not admit this thought, they knew it inwardly.

Adding on Fang Yuan’s plentiful experience in extortion, these Southern Border righteous path forces could only give in.

The extortion in this life was also different from the previous life.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan mainly wanted to construct a year essence pool and thus extorted many precious and rare immortal materials. He did not need to do so in this life and changed the demands to other things, but they were still mainly immortal materials.

A small portion of these immortal materials were used to fill up the deficiencies in the sovereign immortal aperture, like constructing white steel bowl valley.

The remaining large portion was in preparation for advancing the ranks of his Immortal Gu.

In this life, Fang Yuan had a lot more Immortal Gu than in his previous life!

Rank six Immortal Gu occupied the majority but they were too weak for him, being at rank eight.

So large scale refinement was necessary and would give rise to a great increase in Fang Yuan’s comprehensive battle strength.

He had done this in his previous life, and it would be much easier in this life since he had annexed Lang Ya blessed land and had many refinement path Immortal Gu.

He planned ahead, preparing these immortal materials in advance.

The gains from annexing apertures were almost processed completely. The whole sovereign immortal aperture’s development had already reached sixteen percent, this was already close to the highest limit he reached in his previous life.

Moreover, he still had Liu Hao’s and Ba Shi Ba’s immortal apertures to annex, as well as Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Killer moves were being familiarized, true inheritances were still being researched, and he was still comprehending human path.

Fang Yuan made some time to go to the River of Time once again.

He was unable to forget about his pure dream clone.

Although the plan for the pure dream clone had received a setback, Fang Yuan thought of the stone lotus island’s future self killer move.

“Maybe I can use future self to bring over a Gu Immortal level pure dream clone!”

The Four Xunzi in Present and Past Pavilion were observing the River of Time at all times, but they were simply unable to detect Fang Yuan’s tracks.

Fang Yuan understood Present and Past Pavilion much more than them.

He smoothly reached the stone lotus island and used future self on the pure dream clone.

However, Fang Yuan was disappointed as there were simply no changes in the pure dream clone!

“Is it because the pure dream clone is created from dream realms, most killer moves are ineffective on it?”

“Or is it that the pure dream clone doesn’t have a future where it becomes an immortal?”

Fang Yuan’s pure dream clone was already at rank five peak stage, just a step away from undergoing immortal ascension.

However, this step had fatal danger so Fang Yuan wisely chose to stop.

“If future self is ineffective because the pure dream clone doesn’t have a future where it is an immortal, does this mean there is no hope for the pure dream clone’s tribulation with my current strength?”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan suddenly felt somewhat interested.

“There is no harm in trying.”

He immediately activated the immortal killer move exposing heavenly secret.

This killer move used heavenly secret Immortal Gu as its core and could observe the contents of the following calamities and tribulations of the target.

Blank.

Exposing heavenly secret showed no effect on the pure dream clone.

“Is it because of the characteristics of the pure dream clone, or because exposing heavenly secret is currently unable to target dream path calamities and tribulations?”

Fang Yuan was perturbed.

There were very few Gu worms that were effective on the pure dream clone.

Relic Gu was effective because it was a human path Gu worm. The Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body was a human body so human path Gu worms were effective on it.

But in fact, many other Gu worms were completely ineffective on the pure dream clone.

Because the pure dream clone was created from dream realms and had the characteristics of dream realms.

Fang Yuan had relied on dream path’s superiority to cross many obstacles before or stir up troubles, but he was now stumped by this superiority.

Just like Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord, Duke Long and others were unable to contest lead soul into dream, even Spectral Soul had fallen asleep inside the dream realm, existing methods had negligible effect against dream realms.

Fang Yuan actually had many methods to deal with calamities and tribulations.

For instance, calamity beckoning Immortal Gu or endless trouble killer move, but could these methods be able to deal with dream path calamities and tribulations?

Fang Yuan shook his head in his mind, there was almost no chance!

“The only possibility is to develop a corresponding dream path killer move.”

However, Fang Yuan’s dream path attainment level was stuck. In the five hundred years of his previous life, he had not prioritized researching dream path and had pursued blood path.

Not long after returning from the River of Time, Fang Yuan was pleasantly surprised as the dragonman clone plan had made a progress.

Xia clan expressed that Shang clan’s treasure realm had raging wave rising dragon fire, and they were currently in the process of trading for it.

“Shang clan’s treasure realm... it should be the immortal aperture left behind by Shang clan’s creator.”

“After the ancestor died, it was left behind in Shang Liang Mountain. Since Gu Immortals are unable to enter it, even Shang clan Gu Immortals don’t know if it is a grotto-heaven or a blessed land.”

“Looks like the foundation of this treasure realm is much deeper than I estimated.”

Fang Yuan exclaimed at Shang clan’s foundation.

Shang clan had always been among the top few clans in the Southern Border Gu Immortal world, and because of their unique geographical location, they had maintained harmonious relationships with other super forces.

“If Xia clan can get the raging wave rising dragon fire, my dragonman clone will have half of the obstacles remaining.”

Fang Yuan waited patiently while increasing his strength.

With regards to using five restriction profound light qi, he was gaining more experience and insight, and was now able to use four different light qi at the same time.

His soul cultivation was rising explosively every time. He had split his soul again for the dragonman clone, but even so, his soul cultivation was gradually reaching eighty million man soul!

The dream realm trading with Chi clan was continuing in secret.

Chi Qu You had come to terms with his situation.

He had made one misstep and now could only fall deeper into it.

Naturally, Fang Yuan never let go of his guard against him. This rank eight Gu Immortal was not a simple person and might retaliate if not handled properly.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan had already chosen to support Chi clan in preparation for the future.

Chi clan obtained dream path research results from the transactions, this gave Chi Qu You pleasure amidst the pain: Since he had already made a terrible blunder by agreeing to this exchange, why not just continue with it?

Chi Qu You did not want to take a risk, but because Fang Yuan led him on this path, he could only clench his teeth and continue walking towards the abyss.

In his free time, Fang Yuan soul searched those Gu Immortal souls.

Although he had done this in his previous life, he still did it again in this life because he wanted to look into something.

That was the ink effect.

Compare to the previous life, the subtle differences in this life made Fang Yuan think deeply.

An indescribably mysterious feeling had been lingering in his mind.

“Is this fate?” Fang Yuan felt like he had touched a strand of the web weaved by fate Gu.

He gradually felt a strong premonition: “If I continue researching this, my understanding of fate will become increasingly deeper. This is the best way to comprehend fate.”

“After gathering more clues from a few more rebirths and making deductions, I might be able to conceive a mortal killer move that has the effect of fate.”

“If I merge it with the profundities of luck path... that will be destiny huh...” Fang Yuan’s mind jolted slightly and his eyes shined with bright light.

Heavenly Court.

Feng Jiu Ge was stationed in Embroidered Tower.

This small pavilion was adorned with beautiful decorations, its walls were red and its tiles were made of jade, looking exquisite and beautiful, but it lacked part of its foundational support; one could clearly see the traces of destruction on the Immortal Gu House.

In the sky above Embroidered Tower were three pieces of bloody skins directly sewn to the air that were still letting out traces of primal savagery.

Back then when Reckless Savage Demon Venerable invaded Heavenly Court, he was stopped by Embroidered Tower. In the end, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable destroyed half of Embroidered Tower, which was still unable to be repaired by Heavenly Court, but he also left three pieces of bloody skins behind.

Ever since the defeat in Lang Ya blessed land, Feng Jiu Ge had been immersed in a deep state of comprehension.

He did not cultivate transformation path, but he came here purposely to comprehend a trace of ‘transformation’ from these three bloody skins.

This transformation was a kind of concept, it was the transformation of destiny, it was the injury of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable.

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable was strong while Embroidered Tower was weak, but the strong was forced to discard three pieces of skin by the weak, this was an unexpected change.

Heavenly Court failed when invading Lang Ya blessed land, Southern Border Gu Immortals chased Fang Yuan but were captured instead, these were also similar kinds of unexpected changes.

This series of changes and transformations kept on resonating with depths of Feng Jiu Ge’s soul!

The deep state of comprehension gradually entered an optimal condition.

Feng Jiu Ge’s lips curled up into a smile: “It seems that my next song will be — Destiny Song.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1799 Suan Bu Jin Falls Into A Trap

Western Desert.

Fang clan’s headquarters.

Guh.

Fang Di Chang coughed out a mouthful of blood and fell head-first onto the ground.

“Father!” Fang Yun who was at the side immediately rushed forward and supported Fang Di Chang.

Fang Di Chang’s injuries were serious and after he regained his footing, he was still shaky and dizzy.

He quickly observed his condition and smiled bitterly.

His brain suffered the highest damage, there was a huge crack in it that almost split apart his brain into two. His soul was also injured and his physical body was surrounded by a strange green light that emitted wood path aura.

Fang Di Chang sighed as he looked at the giant palace in front of him.

This palace was lofty like a mountain, its green bricks and golden tiles emitted dense fragrance of plants and trees. There was solemnity but also liveliness. Carved on the plaque on the palace door were three large words — Divine Bean Palace!

“This Immortal Gu House was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable after all, it is comprehensive with no loopholes. I tried to deduce forcefully but suffered such a backlash, I underestimated a venerable’s power and was too hurried.” Fang Di Chang sighed.

“Father, our Fang clan’s situation is not bad right now, we can take it slow.” Fang Yun comforted.

Fang Di Chang shook his head: “Although the situation is stabilized, it is still not optimistic. Those clans are restraining themselves because they are shaken by our theft path killer move, but they have never given up on pressuring us. We must grasp every second and cannot slack.”

“Yes, father.”

Fang Di Chang looked at Divine Bean Palace and sighed again: “Sigh, it is unfortunate that our Fang clan does not have any wood path Gu Immortal. This Divine Bean Palace’s core is wood path. If there were a rank seven wood path Gu Immortal assisting me, I would have a lot more progress in deducing this Immortal Gu House.”

Western Desert was filled with deserts with oases decorating them, wood path and water path were the least cultivated paths in this region.

Among the five regions, Southern Border had the most wood path Gu Immortals, while Eastern Sea had the most water path Gu Immortals.

Fang Yun said after some thought: “Our Fang clan does not have a wood path Gu Immortal, but we have another wisdom path expert.”

“You are talking about Suan Bu Jin?” Fang Di Chang’s gaze narrowed with a trace of vigilance flashing past it: “Did he ask you to recommend him?”

Fang Yun shook his head: “No, no, I am saying this myself. Lord Suan Bu Jin never signaled me, and in fact, after joining the clan, he has always stayed outside and never contacted me.”

Fang Di Chang’s face relaxed only then: “Suan Bu Jin is not of Fang clan after all, although he joined our clan, we need to keep this in mind.”

“Father, you doubt Lord Suan Bu Jin’s loyalty?” Fang Yun scratched his head.

Fang Di Chang narrowed his eyes: “If I had his help, there would indeed be progress. But we can know a man’s face but not his heart[1], especially in front of such an unmatched treasure like Divine Bean Palace. Even if he did not show this intention before, when he is in contact with this palace day and night, it is hard to not have greed.”

Fang Di Chang was still not assured, asking: “Are there any movements from Suan Bu Jin recently?”

Fang Yun replied truthfully: “There are no movements. However, there are rumors targeting Lord Suan Bu Jin that says he is actually the inheritor of Old Man Lie Shen, a demonic descendant who was recruited by our clan. It is also rumored Wan clan will investigate this matter and verify Lord Suan Bu Jin’s identity.”

Fang Di Chang snorted: “These people are still trying to frame Suan Bu Jin! But this excuse has some substance to it, it is at least slightly more realistic than the previous rumor that said he was the demon Fang Yuan.”

Fang Di Chang sneered, having no idea that the previous rumor was actually truth, it was instead the recent rumor that was twisting the truth.

Old Man Lie Shen was a Wan clan wisdom path Gu Immortal but because of an accident while cultivating, he lost himself and became a lunatic. He had rank seven cultivation and his strength increased even further after going crazy, he caused huge losses to Wan clan and even slaughtered Gu Immortals of other righteous path forces.

It led to an uproar during that period of time in Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world, several righteous path forces allied to besiege and kill Old Man Lie Shen. But no matter what they did, they could find no traces of Old Man Lie Shen, he had disappeared completely and this matter was left unresolved.

Fang Di Chang said deeply: “Suan Bu Jin has outstanding strength, he understands this kind of cheap trick. But it has not been long since he joined Fang clan, so it is normal for him to be regarded as a weakness of Fang clan. We need to pay attention to him and let him stay in heavenly dew oasis, we can’t let him make any rash moves that could give the enemies a hold on him. As for his identity, our Fang clan will clear it for him and give a perfect explanation to Western Desert’s righteous path.”

The moment he finished speaking, Fang Di Chang’s expression changed.

Fang Yun saw the change and asked: “What happened?”

Fang Di Chang’s pale and weak face now had a trace of an ashen look: “Suan Bu Jin sent a letter saying he reverse-deduced and found a wisdom path Gu Immortal nearby who is likely to be the one who spread the rumors, he has already gone to catch them.”

Fang Yun was stupefied: “What?!”

According to the rules, Gu Immortals who were stationed to guard resources would have to report to the clan if they wanted to move out. They could only move after the clan approved of it.

But Suan Bu Jin’s action was the opposite, he moved first before reporting. Whether Fang clan agreed or not, he had left his stationed area and moved out.

“He is a lone cultivator in the end, his nature is wild!” Fang Di Chang gritted his teeth, as it so happened, he was heavily injured and could not deduce much at this moment.

He could only contact Fang clan’s first supreme elder Fang Gong and let him go reinforce Suan Bu Jin as quickly as possible.

Fang Yun was slightly puzzled: “The situation might not be so bad. Aren’t we making too much fuss by sending first supreme elder as reinforcement? Lord Suan Bu Jin is a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he must have definitely deduced before moving out and has confidence to handle this matter.”

Fang Di Chang’s expression was dark: “Suan Bu Jin is indeed extraordinary, but he is prideful and this could be used by others to scheme against him. It would be terrible if those righteous path forces intentionally lured him and set a series of traps. If he is captured or killed, those clans could forge ironclad evidence and frame our Fang clan, then further suppress our clan.”

“Naturally, this is only a possibility, let’s just hope it is only me being pessimistic. More importantly, our Fang clan cannot make such a mistake at this crucial time.”

Fang Yun came to a realization and his expression also turned unsightly. He gave a forced smile: “It should not be that serious, right?”

But the matter was that serious!

When Fang Yuan reached the place, wisdom path Gu Immortal Wan Liang Han had a leisurely expression: “Suan Bu Jin, you finally arrived, I waited for quite a while.”

The moment he finished speaking, the prepared immortal battlefield activated and trapped Fang Yuan.

“So it was a trap!” Fang Yuan, who was disguised as Suan Bu Jin, sneered. His gaze shone as he looked at the three Gu Immortals approaching him.

These three Gu Immortals were all rank seven.

One was tall and thin, dressed in a green robe, and surrounded by whirlwinds. His name was Wan Xiao. He spoke confidently: “Suan Bu Jin, how can you even be a wisdom path Gu Immortal! You actually jumped into our trap so easily.”

The second Gu Immortal Wan Hao Guang’s appearance could not be seen, his whole body was covered with light armor that emitted extremely high heat. The thick light armor emitted buzzing noises: “Suan Bu Jin, if you are sensible, then let yourself be captured, side with our Wan clan and expose Fang clan, we won’t make it difficult for you and even treat you as an honored guest!”

The third Gu Immortal was the wisdom path Gu Immortal who lured Fang Yuan, he was Wan Liang Han. His forehead was swollen and had an ugly appearance, but was smiling right now: “Friend Suan Bu Jin, as a wisdom path Gu Immortal, you should be even more aware of the current situation. Even if you survive today, there will be endless troubles coming to find you in the future. You should not be in Fang clan at such a time.”

Fang Yuan sneered with a ruthless expression.

His disguised appearance Suan Bu Jin looked skinny with long grey hair and a pair of black eyes which seemed to contain vicissitudes of life and ambition. He was trapped inside the immortal battlefield and also heard the three immortals’ words, but there were no change in his expression.

This was only natural!

Because Fang Yuan had concealed his strength, not only just these three rank sevens, even if there were three rank eights, he would be fearless and even happy.

The three Wan clan immortals thought they had trapped Fang Yuan, little did they imagine Fang Yuan returned from Southern Border this time to especially deal with them and create a commotion in Western Desert!

In the recent period of time, Wan Liang Han had been repeatedly deducing Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan had emperor yama’s protection that had no flaws, but this still reduced his soul foundation and it was quite annoying, so he had to get rid of them this time.

Fang Yuan immediately opened his immortal aperture’s entrance and released soul beasts.

Desolate soul beasts and ancient soul beasts came out one after the other, shocking Wan clan’s immortals.

Was he not a wisdom path Gu Immortal? How could he control so many soul beasts?

“No matter how many soul beasts you bring out, it is useless in this immortal battlefield!” Wan Xiao activated the immortal battlefield, a giant tornado immediately sprang up and slowly moved towards Fang Yuan.

Soul beasts were densely packed around Fang Yuan and following his gradual mobilization, the quantity kept on increasing.

“How can he have so many soul beasts?” Wan clan’s three immortals were increasingly shaken, this Suan Bu Jin was clearly a wisdom path Gu Immortal but actually controlled such a huge soul beast army, wasn’t he neglecting his main path too much?

The tornado’s speed became even faster and neared Fang Yuan’s soul beast army.

Soul beasts roared and counterattacked, but the tornado seemed to have heavenly might in this immortal battlefield. Although it was weakened, it was extremely stable.

Fang Yuan personally activated a killer move to block the tornado.

Wan clan’s three immortals’ shock slightly decreased when they saw the killer move.

Fang Yuan used a wisdom path killer move instead of a soul path killer move.

“It won’t do like this, he seems to have an endless amount of soul beasts. I will attack!” Wan Hao Guang shouted.

“Go, we will protect you.” Wan Liang Han agreed.

Wan Hao Guang killed his way through the soul beast army, he was extremely fast, fully showing the superiority of light path.

Every time Fang Yuan mobilized the soul beast army to besiege him, Wan Liang Han and Wan Xiao activated killer moves to protect Wan Hao Guang.

With their excellent coordination, Wan Hao Guang broke through to the center.

Fang Yuan’s expression did not change as he let out another four soul beasts.

“Huh?” Wan Hao Guang’s momentum paused violently as he blurted out in fright: “Immemorial soul beasts!”

Wan Liang Han and Wan Xiao were dazed, both calling out in an incredulous tone: “Four?”

[1] Even if you are physically close to someone, you cannot know what he is thinking.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1800 Distracting Thoughts Generation

An immemorial soul beast had rank eight battle strength, and four of them appeared at the same time.

An absurd feeling rose up in the hearts of the three Wan clan immortals.

Fang Yuan commanded the four immemorial desolate beasts to guard him. He wore a black robe and had his hands behind his back. He stood on one of the immemorial desolate beasts and said with disdain: “You planned to trap me with just the three of you?”

Wan Liang Han’s eyes twitched.

Wan Xiao’s expression was ashen.

Wan Hao Guang’s heart sank sharply.

Suan Bu Jin’s strength far surpassed their expectation, all of them realized: Suan Bu Jin might have already guessed this was a trap but he still came. Anyone would be confident if they had such a trump card!

Wan clan’s three immortals felt that it was too late for regret now.

“Calm down! He is a wisdom path Gu Immortal after all, he must be forcing himself to control the four immemorial soul beasts.”

“Right, these four immemorial soul beasts might even be all bark and no bite.”

“Even if they are real, I want to see how well his wisdom path and soul path can coordinate!”

The three immortals stabilized their morale and attacked Fang Yuan once again.

Fang Yuan did not attack and only defended.

Thus, when looked from the outside, Wan clan’s three immortals appeared to be occupying the upper hand.

Wan Xiao controlled an immortal battlefield while also activating killer moves, throwing out wind spears that heavily injured or killed one ancient soul beast with every strike.

Wan Hao Guang was covered in a thick armor of light, he ran wildly amidst the soul beast army, slaughtering them as he passed.

Wisdom path Gu Immortal Wan Liang Han commanded the battle, while also constantly deducing Fang Yuan’s location in the soul beast army.

As the battle continued, Wan clan’s three immortals felt an increasing headache. Because even though they had killed many, the amount of soul beasts Fang Yuan was releasing continued to increase.

These soul beasts were united and covered Fang Yuan from all directions, forming tight defensive lines.

With such a densely packed soul beast army, the best method of Wan clan’s three immortals was to use large area of effect killer moves.

However, every time they used such killer moves, Fang Yuan would move to disrupt the killer moves. Even if there were some attacks that went through, it did not change the overall situation.

As the area of effect killer moves were mostly ineffective, Wan clan’s three immortals were forced to use single target killer moves to kill the soul beasts one by one.

They were using the tactic of beheading the leader, trying to pave a path to kill Fang Yuan.

Wan clan’s three immortals had tacit cooperation, each of them was excellent in fighting and their cooperation was tight with no flaws. The three immortals supported each other, causing their battle strength to be extremely strong. Even one at peak rank seven battle strength would be in a difficult situation when facing them.

Unfortunately, they were facing the monster known as Fang Yuan.

The four immemorial soul beasts formed the core defensive line, after several rounds of attacks, this defensive line’s power made Wan clan’s three immortals feel increasingly hopeless.

“Damn it, there are too few chances.” Wan Hao Guang called out discontentedly, he had just found a gap which could allow him to break through to the central defensive line, but many ancient soul beasts rushed to fill the gap almost immediately.

“There are too many soul beasts here. Suan Bu Jin can actually command such a powerful soul beast army, the most annoying thing is he can clearly use this strength to try and break our immortal battlefield but he chose to protect himself so tightly instead!” Wan Xiao mumbled with a dark expression.

Wan Liang Han’s expression was similarly unsightly: “I had underestimated this Suan Bu Jin. If he chose to attack, we would have more opportunities. But he is choosing to guard himself, Fang clan’s reinforcements are probably already on the way.”

“What should we do?” Wan Xiao looked towards Wan Liang Han.

This situation was quite awkward for them.

Their plan had been to combine their strength and capture Suan Bu Jin quickly. Even if Suan Bu Jin had peak rank seven battle strength, this plan had a huge chance of succeeding.

However, when Fang Yuan took out four immemorial soul beasts, their plan was immediately shaken.

When Fang Yuan chose to turtle himself, Wan clan’s plan was already destroyed.

Wan Liang Han was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, although his attainment level was not as high as Fang Di Chang’s, he was extremely sharp and already had the intent to retreat.

However, it was not easy to retreat at this moment.

The immortal battlefield had been set up, if they took the initiative to cancel it, it would lead to a huge opening. Suan Bu Jin was also a wisdom path Gu Immortal, how could he give up such an opportunity?

Moreover, the current situation was not completely hopeless. Wan clan’s three immortals naturally still had trump cards to use.

Wan Liang Han had a rare moment of hesitation.

Fang Yuan was calm and composed.

Were he to reveal his true strength, these three Wan clan immortals might immediately start begging for mercy.

However, he did not want to do so.

Wan Liang Han definitely needed to die, this rank seven wisdom path immortal was deducing him repeatedly and pestering him.

As for the other two, Fang Yuan wanted to see them live.

Back when he disguised as Suan Bu Jin, Fang Yuan specially prepared a set of wisdom path Immortal Gu and methods for this identity. At present, these methods had become even more plentiful.

Fang Yuan secretly activated Immortal Gu Distracting Thoughts to prepare an immortal killer move.

Wan Hao Guang’s vision was filled with all kinds of soul beasts.

From outside, the soul beast army looked like an overflowing blot of ink, and Wan Hao Guang’s thick armor of light looked like a speck of light that was submerged in the pitch-black ink blot.

Wan Hao Guang was trapped in all directions but he showed no cowardice or intention to escape.

Forward, forward, forward!

He was like a sharp sword that pierced through the densely packed soul beast army before finally stabbing towards Fang Yuan. However, all his advances were in vain, most of the time, he would lose his momentum in the middle, and in the few cases where he almost succeeded, he was blocked by the four immemorial soul beasts.

“There are six ancient soul beasts in front, they are tall and sturdy, forming into two rows.”

“There are two ancient soul beasts at the rear, they are very fast and are always trying to draw my attention.”

“I cannot stop, once I stop and get entangled with them, this advancement will be considered a failure.”

“But I cannot charge forward directly, the ancient soul beasts in the front are clearly the wall controlled by Suan Bu Jin, it is a thick defensive line.”

“I can only change my direction.”

“Right! The ancient soul beast at the front-left side looks like a mantis, this appearance means it has powerful offense but weak defense.”

“I will charge through this side!!”

Wan Hao Guang was a light path Gu Immortal and had a mystical light path killer move that could create thoughts of light in his mind.

He could think extremely fast using these kind of thoughts.

It was because of this killer move, Wan Hao Guang could always think about all possibilities in an instant, he chose the most correct path to break through amidst the huge army.

Wan Hao Guang charged forward, although he suffered a heavy strike from the mantis shaped ancient soul beast, he avoided the awkward situation of being pincer attacked.

“Haha, I succeeded!”

“I can still continue charging forward!”

“In this current situation, before I retreat, there is still hope.”

“I am the main attacker, I have to put a lot of pressure on Suan Bu Jin from the front. With Wan Xiao’s and Wan Liang Han’s methods, there will be a chance to kill Suan Bu Jin.”

“The situation just now was actually quite dangerous, if this mantis soul beast did not happen to have weak defense, I would not know what to do.”

“If Suan Bu Jin cultivated soul path or enslavement path, there might not have been any hope just now. But Suan Bu Jin cultivates wisdom path, he has still not shown a killer move that coordinates with soul path, he should not have such a method.”

“But just by being able to control four immemorial soul beasts shows his power, this is clearly a peak rank seven expert! If he had a fitting soul path method, he might even be able to resist a rank eight Gu Immortal for several moves.”

“If I can kill such an enemy, I will definitely make a huge contribution to the clan. With such a remarkable battle merit, I can even boast when I run into Lady Qi Qiao in the future...”

“Wait a moment! I am in a battle right now, how can I split my attention and think about personal relationships!”

“Thinking about it, Lady Qi Qiao is really cute. Although she does not have shocking beauty, she is kind and sensible, she is truly my ideal woman.”

“But why doesn’t she accept my love? Maybe, I should change my way of pursuing her... I should send one or two small gifts.”

“If the gift is too expensive, it will lose its meaning. Hmm... I should weave a straw toy puppet and give it to her, would she be happy with it?”

“This is a good idea!”

“Besides the straw puppet, I can also weave a straw rabbit, a straw hat, or a straw mantis.”

“That mantis soul beast just now looked like the kind of mantis I used to catch when I was a child.”

...

Boom!

A huge sound erupted as Wan Hao Guang was besieged by soul beasts.

Heavy attacks struck his armor from all directions.

Wan Hao Guang’s thought process had turned chaotic and he could no longer concentrate in the battle, causing him to suffer these heavy attacks, his armor was heavily deformed and he was muddled and dizzy.

Wan Xiao saw Wan Hao Guang in danger and quickly activated an immortal killer move to break the encirclement.

But right at this moment, Wan Liang Han suddenly shouted: “Don’t!”

Wan Xiao’s reaction speed was slightly slower now for some reason, he had already activated the immortal killer move.

The killer move’s activation failed and a violent gale backlashed, slashing his hands to a pulp.

His body shook like he was zapped by lightning, blood flowed out of his nostrils and his face was deathly pale.

“Oh... he is a wisdom path Gu Immortal after all, he finally reacted.” Fang Yuan smiled lightly under the heavy protection of the soul beast army.

The killer move he had used just now was distracting thoughts generation, it could make the enemies within a certain range develop distracting thoughts.

The killer move’s effect was not obvious at the start. But as time passed, the enemies would have more distracting thoughts which would disturb their normal thinking process.

Wan Hao Guang was influenced by the distracting thoughts first since he was the nearest to Fang Yuan, he split his attention in the battlefield and thought of other things, causing him to be encircled and attacked.

Wan Xiao was disturbed by this move and suddenly had distracting thoughts when he activated his immortal killer move, the killer move failed and he suffered heavy injuries.

Wan Liang Han was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he sensed something wrong and decided resolutely: “This Suan Bu Jin is truly sinister, he actually has such a peculiar method. We didn’t know his details and were not prepared, thus suffering a huge loss. The opportunity is already lost now, we should now return and think of a method to break this move before we go against him in the future!”

Just as he was thinking, whoosh!

The large soul beast army moved like an opened dam, countless soul beasts rushed out like a tidal flood!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1801 I Have Already Taken Your Life

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan suddenly turned to offense, catching the three Wan clan immortals off-guard.

“Damn it!” Wan Xiao gritted his teeth and shouted: “Quickly save Wan Hao Guang, his armor is a killer move, it won’t last much longer.”

Wan Liang Han felt a chill rush through his whole body, Fang Yuan had been on the defensive for this whole time, now that he moved, he directly targeted the three Wan clan immortals’ vital weaknesses.

This ruthlessness and incisiveness made Wan Liang Han feel regret for the first time: “We should have investigated properly. Wan clan has provoked such a person, who knows if it leads to a blessing or a disaster!”

The soul beast army rushed like a flood and drowned the three Wan clan immortals.

The four immemorial soul beasts formed the central army and were like mountains as they moved towards Wan Xiao with an unstoppable might.

“Wan Xiao, retreat!” Wan Liang Han sensed Fang Yuan’s sinister killing intent and quickly warned.

Wan Xiao was anxious: “I cannot, I need to save Hao Guang! He is trapped, he has already canceled his light armor killer move and is now using only light armor Immortal Gu.”

Wan clan’s three immortals were affected by distracting thoughts generation, they could not use any killer moves as it was very likely for them to fail and inflict backlash on themselves without dealing any damage to the enemy.

Wan Hao Guang realized this and took the initiative to cancel the killer move light armor, directly activating light armor Immortal Gu instead.

This Immortal Gu was the core of the light armor killer move, but it was only a rank seven Immortal Gu, its defense was far below the previous light armor killer move.

Thus, Wan Hao Guang was already in a greatly precarious situation in just a short period of time.

Wan Xiao and him had a deep friendship, Wan Xiao was trying to save him in such a dangerous situation.

“Damn it!” At the critical moment, Wan Liang Han could only cooperate with Wan Xiao and activated a wisdom path Immortal Gu — Wisdom Obstacle.

Wisdom obstacle Immortal Gu created obstacles around Wan Xiao and Wan Liang Han, protecting the two and giving them a huge assistance.

Wan Xiao and Wan Hao Guang displayed solid battle foundation during this perilous moment, the two finally reunited amidst the soul beast flood.

“Good! With the two’s combined might and my cooperation, we have a hope of breaking out.” Wan Liang Han showed a trace of joy, when he heard a sneer behind him.

“Are you not considering your own situation? Such a self-sacrificial spirit.” Fang Yuan had actually appeared behind him!

At this moment, Wan Liang Han felt like he had fallen into an icy abyss!

Before his death, he finally realized that everything was a part of Suan Bu Jin’s sinister plan.

He intentionally imposed pressure and showed killing intent towards Wan Xiao and Wan Liang Han, but his true target had been Wan Liang Han!

Those four immemorial soul beasts were still far away while Suan Bu Jin had come beside Wan Liang Han by himself. Those four immemorial soul beasts were treated as just a bait.

These four had rank eight battle strength, who could have thought Suan Bu Jin would not use them! Since the start, he had stayed under the protection of these four immemorial soul beasts, constantly giving hidden signs to Wan clan’s three immortals, making them gradually develop some kind of cognitive bias.

Wan Liang Han might be able to see through this trap in his normal state, but he was also struck by the killer move distracting thoughts generation; he had been suppressing the distracting thoughts in his mind while also paying attention to the safety of Wan Hao Guang and Wan Xiao, he was unable to take notice of anything more.

“Suan Bu Jin was never a person who feared death, he can even take the risk at the crucial times! The previous scenes were all just an act...” Thoughts exploded in Wan Liang Han’s mind and he wanted to counterattack, disregarding all else, to exchange for a hope of survival.

But it was too late.

How could Fang Yuan give him the chance to struggle before his death?

Immortal killer move — Wisdom Grasp!

Fang Yuan lightly pushed his palm, a ‘great thief ghost hand’ flew out and entered Wan Liang Han’s body.

Then, the ‘great thief ghost hand’ flew back with its fist clenched as if holding onto something.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “I have already taken your life.”

Wan Liang Han’s eyes were wide open, he was already dead!

“Brother Liang Han!!” Wan Xiao and Wan Hao Guang shouted in shock, grief and anger.

Wan Xiao stared furiously while Wan Hao Guang’s expression was also furious with tears flowing down his face.

It was not easy to raise a wisdom path Gu Immortal, Wan Liang Han’s death was a heavy loss to Wan clan!

Fang Yuan had already achieved half his target by killing Wan Liang Han. The other half would depend on the subsequent actions of these two Wan clan Gu Immortals.

Right now, Fang Yuan did not really care about the profits he could gain from killing two rank seven Gu Immortals.

He was going after the entire Western Desert Gu Immortal world after all.

He activated transformation path methods to weaken his aura.

“This guy has suddenly become weak! So he was not that strong.”

“Maybe, the killer move he used to kill Brother Liang Han has huge repercussions!”

Wan Xiao and Wan Hao Guang pleasantly found Fang Yuan’s aura had weakened, his soul beast army was also spread everywhere, no longer united like before.

But shortly afterwards, Fang Yuan took Wan Liang Han’s corpse and hid behind the protection of the four immemorial soul beasts.

Wan Xiao and Wan Hao Guang clenched their teeth in hatred, but realized that they were unable to kill Fang Yuan. If they continued to drag this, they might also die here.

Thereupon, they removed the immortal battlefield and chose to retreat.

Wan Xiao was heavily injured by Fang Yuan during this time and fell unconscious, Wan Hao Guang tightly held on to Wan Xiao and ran off rapidly.

Fang Yuan controlled the soul beast army and acted like he was going to give chase, he then looked at Wan Hao Guang in satisfaction as he disappeared in the cloud layer.

“I should also leave.” Fang Yuan did not stay behind, he looked towards the direction of Wan clan’s headquarters and smiled lightly as he disappeared after putting away the soul beast army.

When Fang clan’s first supreme elder Fang Gong rushed to the place, he looked dazedly at the empty desert.

There were only traces left behind that proved there had been a huge battle previously.

Fang Gong’s expression was somewhat unsightly as he thought: “This Suan Bu Jin! It seems I am late by a bit, the enemies won.”

While he was thinking, there was a commotion in treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan used the same trick, using Suan Bu Jin’s identity to publicize this battle.

Gu Immortals discussed heatedly, the Western Desert Gu Immortal world was even more shaken now.

“What kind of person is this Suan Bu Jin? He actually has the protection of four immemorial soul beasts, and his wisdom path methods are so sinister.”

“No wonder Fang clan recruited him, Western Desert’s righteous path has another peak rank seven expert!”

“The great era is truly coming, not only with the frequent occurrences of earth trenches, but all kinds of monstrous characters are also appearing.”

Fang Gong only realized this change in treasure yellow heaven after he received Fang Di Chang’s message.

Fang Gong let out a sigh of relief but was slightly puzzled: “So the victor was Suan Bu Jin! But why has he not returned yet?”

Fang Di Chang laughed: “He is a lone immortal after all and joined our clan only recently. Now, he killed Wan Liang Han who was a Western Desert righteous path Gu Immortal and a member of a super force. Adding on our Fang clan’s situation, he is worried our Fang clan will give him up to protect ourself. So he is staying outside and took the initiative to publicize the battle.”

Fang Gong immediately understood from this explanation: “Hmph, you wisdom path Gu Immortals simply like to overthink situations. Suan Bu Jin is putting pressure on my Fang clan by doing this, but his worries are not wrong. Wan Liang Han was killed by him, our Fang clan and Wan clan’s relationship is now almost completely broken! Sigh, the newly stabilized situation has crumbled apart, Fang clan’s situation has become much more difficult.”

“What do you think we should choose? Give Suan Bu Jin up to maintain the relationship with Wan clan? Or give up on Wan clan and protect Suan Bu Jin? Right now, it is clear to me that Suan Bu Jin does not truly want to join our Fang clan, he is only cooperating with us for his own gains. However, Wan clan is also nothing good, they triggered a loss of their own initiative this time, they will definitely retaliate even more fiercely later on.”

Fang Di Chang said heavily: “I think it is more beneficial to protect Suan Bu Jin.”

“Suan Bu Jin is prideful, it is normal for him to not feel united with us. He has sufficient strength to support his arrogance. Just those four immemorial soul beasts already surpass our imagination. He also revealed two wisdom path killer moves in this battle, both are sinister and dangerous, if the enemy is even a little careless, they will fall to his vicious methods."

"This time, it was Wan clan who found trouble with our side first. If we show weakness, other forces will believe we don't have any strength and they will want to cause trouble! The result we achieved from using the theft path killer move will also disappear because of this."

"At such a critical time, my Fang clan should preserve our strong momentum and protect Suan Bu Jin. Suan Bu Jin might not be united with us, but he is a qualified ally. We have the history of a successful cooperation and the foundation for cooperation. Our clan even owes him remuneration which can allow us to use him further. What the other righteous path forces don't hope to see is him reinforcing our clan."

Fang Di Chang was indeed a wisdom path great grandmaster, his analysis immediately made Fang Gong see the situation clearly.

Fang Gong nodded, saying with a heavy voice: "You are correct. Protecting Suan Bu Jin is indeed much more beneficial than easing the situation with Wan clan. But if we do this, Wan clan will definitely retaliate heavily and our Fang clan will face an even greater suppression!"

Fang Di Chang sighed helplessly: "There is nothing we can do about this. Divine Bean Palace's information has been leaked, didn't we already predict such a situation? The current plan is still to quickly refine Divine Bean Palace, our Fang clan can completely resolve this crisis with this Immortal Gu House."

Green ghost desert.

An immemorial soul beast was completely defenseless against Fang Yuan's attacks.

After a while, it lowered its head. It was forcibly subdued by Fang Yuan.

Ying Wu Xie was standing beside Fang Yuan.

In this recent period of time, it was thanks to him taking charge of this place that there was a continuous supply of soul beasts.

After defeating Wan clan's three immortals, Fang Yuan did not return to Fang clan, instead he directly came here to help Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie was in the process of taking in soul beasts when he encountered problematic immemorial soul beasts that he could not deal with. Fang Yuan arrived to help him clear the obstacles.

"Alright, let's go to the next area." Fang Yuan was speaking when his expression changed slightly.

Fang clan had sent a message.

"Lord sect leader, what is Fang clan's response?" Ying Wu Xie was alert and asked with concern. Fang clan's response would also concern the progress in green ghost desert.

"Everything is going as I planned." Fang Yuan smiled, he looked towards the direction of Fang clan's headquarters with a deep gaze.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1802 Fang Clan“s Suppor

Wan clan headquarters.

“Father—! You died a pitiful death!” Weeping sounds echoed in the discussion hall, reverberating in the ears of the Gu Immortals present in the hall.

A young man, wearing mourning clothes, was crying.

This person was Wan Zhui Qing, a rank six Gu Immortal who was Wan Liang Han’s son.

Wan Zhui Qing was kneeling on the ground and bawling, no one was able to persuade him to stop.

The Wan clan Gu Immortals in the hall had frowns on their faces, they were silent and their expressions were dark.

Wan clan’s second supreme elder had an amiable personality, he said with a sigh: “The situation actually ended up like this! We sent three rank seven experts but they all lost, this is unbelievable.”

Wan clan’s immortals all had deep feelings regarding this.

If not for Fang Yuan revealing the whole battle in treasure yellow heaven, these Wan clan immortals might only be able to accept the result after some hesitation.

In fact, Wan Liang Han had set off only after he had received approval from most of the Wan clan immortals.

Three Gu Immortals of the same rank as well as an immortal battlefield, the situation should have been in their grasp but who could have imagined they would encounter such a tough enemy!

The silent first supreme elder finally spoke: “Suan Bu Jin killed our clan’s Gu Immortal, we cannot forgive him. Wan Zhui Qing, did your father leave you his inheritance?”

Wan Zhui Qing did not dare to act recklessly towards first supreme elder’s inquiry, he held back his tears and said: “Father taught me everything about his inheritance, killer moves, and Gu recipes. But... there is not even one Immortal Gu left behind!”

First supreme elder’s expression sank further.

This situation was not normal. Suan Bu Jin was a rank seven, Wan Liang Han was also the same, but the former could kill the latter instantly without the latter being able to retaliate.

Normally speaking, there were rarely such direct results when Gu Immortals of the same rank fought. Usually, life and death battles would fall into a deadlock, during such times, if one side wanted to leave and was not trapped in any immortal battlefield, the other side would hardly be able to stop them.

An immortal battlefield’s value was that it did not allow enemies to escape freely.

Wan clan’s three immortals brought out the immortal battlefield to make sure Fang Yuan could not escape. But they did not expect Fang Yuan to not even try to escape, instead the immortal battlefield became useless and he killed Wan Liang Han while fighting off the other two Wan clan Gu Immortals.

This was truly an ironic result to Wan clan.

Wan clan’s first supreme elder felt regret now.

If he had known this would happen, he would have lent his Immortal Gu House to Wan Liang Han.

But he had his own difficulties.

He was only a rank seven and not like the rank eight leaders of other righteous path forces. Because of this, the Immortal Gu House was required to guard their headquarters.

He, however, did not know his arrangement was actually rational and correct. Were Fang Yuan to see the Immortal Gu House, he would definitely plunder it. Thus, the first supreme elder’s arrangement reduced Wan clan’s losses instead.

First supreme elder sighed in his head before saying to Wan Zhui Qing: “Wan Liang Han’s death was a mistake on our part. Wan Liang Han will be honored and any Gu materials required to refine his Immortal Gu will be provided for free from the clan’s treasury. I just hope these Immortal Gu were destroyed.”

“Thank you, first supreme elder! Thank you, esteemed elders!!” Wan Zhui Qing kowtowed multiple times towards the first supreme elder and the other Wan clan Gu Immortals.

This was what he hoped to achieve by crying in the first place, he succeeded now.

He was the youngest here so kowtowing was not inappropriate.

First supreme elder continued but with a gloomy and chilling voice: “Suan Bu Jin is Fang clan’s member, we will pressure Fang clan to hand him over. From this battle, we can be certain Suan Bu Jin is definitely Old Man Lie Shen’s inheritor! This is a demonic path scoundrel! The bloody debt that Old Man Lie Shen owes us will be paid by him.”

Many Wan clan Gu Immortals’ eyes shined brightly.

They could only do this!

Back then, Old Man Lie Shen had been the pain of many Western Desert righteous path forces. Placing this crime on Fang Yuan was to give the Western Desert righteous path forces an excuse to go against Fang clan.

Earlier, this had only been an excuse.

Wan clan wanted to capture Suan Bu Jin so that Fang clan would have no way to extricate themselves. The plan did not work, but Wan clan’s first supreme elder still insisted on it as the truth.

Lack of evidence?

I will create evidence myself!

Although it was shameless, every super force wanted to deal with Fang clan and this plan would make use of their worry regarding Fang clan’s rise.

It was just that the success rate of this plan was not as high as the previous plan.

Wan clan’s Gu Immortal died in the battle and it was even publicized. They could not let this go!

Wan clan had no option but to continue with this excuse!

Second supreme elder heaved a deep sigh: “The situation might not be that bad. Fang clan might have already decided to give up on Suan Bu Jin.”

“Hmph, even if they give him up, Fang clan won’t be able to escape the crime of sheltering a demonic path Gu Immortal.”

However, bad news arrived in Wan clan the next day.

Fang clan declared their stand, they were going to protect Fang Yuan and prove Fang Yuan’s true origin was related to Zheng Jing Shen.

Wan clan immediately objected and brought out all kinds of ‘evidence’.

Fang Di Chang did not even bother to deduce the flaws in these evidences, instead he tossed out even more ‘undeniable evidence’!

Laughable!

You can forge evidence, can I not do the same?

Western Desert’s two super forces argued intensely over the claims that Suan Bu Jin was Zheng Jing Shen’s inheritor or Old Man Lie Shen’s inheritor.

One side said they had proof! The other side said theirs were more reliable.

One side threw out a piece of evidence, while the other side threw out two.

But the main person who was being thrown in the whirlpool of politics, Fang Yuan, was leisurely subduing immemorial soul beasts in green ghost desert with a content spirit.

Naturally, he kept his attention on the progress of the situation.

It was actually quite amusing.

Fang Yuan himself was not anxious at all, he did not bring out any evidence to prove himself, but Fang clan and Wan clan, however, were extremely agitated, bringing out any evidence they could find, or forging some if they could not!

The two super forces vied with each other in testifying for and against a demon, even airing extreme confidence in their own claims.

Were they to truly know Fang Yuan’s identity, who knew how their mentality would change?

Fang clan would definitely feel like they had fallen into the icy depths but Wan clan would also be scared!

This was the demon Fang Yuan!

Even Heavenly Court as well as the whole of Southern Border’s righteous path were helpless against him!

Over these days, Fang Yuan had not only subdued several immemorial soul beasts, he also took out time to absorb Wan Liang Han’s wisdom path inheritance.

Wan Liang Han was instantly killed by Fang Yuan, the difference in their strength was so great that he simply did not have the time to destroy his Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan obtained three Immortal Gu from him, two rank six and one rank seven.

The rank seven wisdom path Immortal Gu was called Wisdom Obstacle. Wisdom obstacle Immortal Gu had the shape of a snail, it was dark and occasionally shined with a trace of purple light, it looked quite silly.

Fang Yuan had already seen the power of this Immortal Gu.

Activating this wisdom obstacle Immortal Gu could instantly form obstacles in a large range around the Gu Immortal. It consumed immortal essence as well as a large amount of will.

There were also a lot of killer moves with wisdom obstacle Immortal Gu as the core.

One killer move was quite outstanding that even Fang Yuan was surprised.

This killer move directly sent the obstacles created by the wisdom obstacle Immortal Gu into the enemy’s mind. With the giant obstacles, the thoughts in the enemy’s mind would have trouble colliding with each other and thus would make it difficult for them to think.

Usually, when this move succeeds, it would immediately make the enemy turn stupid, they would feel like there was a boulder in their mind, unable to solve any problems.

This move was outstanding but it had to first touch the enemy and pierce into the enemy’s brain.

So there were several other killer moves that were specially targeted towards the brain.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan was well-versed in wisdom path and had many methods protecting his mind. Wan Liang Han’s killer moves had almost no hope in getting past these hurdles.

Moreover, he was struck by Fang Yuan’s distracting thoughts generation and lost the initiative. He clearly had killer moves but could not use them and lost most of his ability.

Thinking back about the battle, Fang Yuan was very satisfied.

He had put his two killer moves to test in actual battle and their effects were excellent.

One was distracting thoughts generation, it was a wisdom path killer move that also had the essence of soul path. When activating the killer move, Fang Yuan could hide its aura by relying on the four immemorial soul beasts.

It would be problematic if the killer move’s aura was exposed and the enemy sensed it. This was because distracting thoughts generation required a certain amount of time before its strength could accumulate to a decent level.

The other move was wisdom grasp, it was a wisdom path killer move which Fang Yuan deduced after referencing great thief ghost hand and the steal life true inheritance.

Great thief ghost hand stole Immortal Gu while wisdom grasp stole lives, instantly killing enemies.

This move was only rank seven so it had very poor effect against rank eight Gu Immortals, but was perfect for an opponent like Wan Liang Han. Fang Yuan had added some transformation path Gu worms into wisdom grasp to disguise it as great thief ghost hand.

In the battle of Divine Bean Palace, Fang Yuan had displayed great thief ghost hand in front of Fang Gong, he also subdued immemorial soul beasts under the cooperation of Fang Di Chang.

So the methods Fang Yuan revealed did not stun Fang clan, they instead highlighted his value.

At the same time, he also cleverly exposed his ‘weakness’ — Fang Yuan clearly had methods to directly manipulate soul beasts but he did not use any in the fight.

Therefore, Fang clan had a misconception that they still had Suan Bu Jin in their grasp. Trying their best to protect him was a natural thing.

From a simple perspective, this battle was only a battle between Fang Yuan and three Wan clan immortals. But in truth, it was Fang Yuan who manipulated the present situation and intensified the conflicts between the two sides, he was influencing the two super forces Fang clan and Wan clan, while also controlling the situation of the entire Western Desert.

Fang Yuan’s true goal was after the battle. By implementing this plan, his future gains would be beyond imagination. These Immortal Gu like Wisdom Obstacle were just appetizers before the banquet.

Unconsciously, at this point, Fang Yuan no longer emphasized on trifling gains or losses.

Physically in the situation, rampaging everywhere unhindered.

Mentally in the situation, ambitions soaring above the horizons.

“Unconsciously, I have already reached this level.”

“Those heroes and conquerors who ruled their eras, were they also like this?”

“Heh.”

Fang Yuan collected his thoughts.

Green ghost desert looked even more dark and gloomy at night.

Dark clouds filled the sky, not letting even a trace of starlight pass.

Fang Yuan was sitting on the head of a ferocious immemorial soul beast, and beside him were uncountable soul beasts.

Under Fang Yuan’s control, the large army silently charged forward towards the boundless darkness.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1803 Dragonman Clone

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Red Heaven.

A large formation was making loud noises, variant human Gu Immortals were fully prepared for combat with Bai Ning Bing at their lead.

Whoosh!

There was the sound of enormous tidal waves and an immemorial year beast rushed out of the formation that was shining in silver light.

“This is an immemorial year pig!” Lady White Rabbit shouted excitedly.

“Great, the year essence pool lacks this species of year beast.” Fairy Miao Yin also added spiritedly.

There was nothing to say, the battle started immediately.

The immortals controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship and battled the immemorial year pig.

The immemorial year pig had a sturdy body, but Myriad Year Flying Warship was also incomparably firm, both sides were evenly matched.

The battle caused a storm just from its aftermath. If it were an ordinary immortal aperture, the Gu Immortal would definitely suffer heavy losses. But Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture was too vast.

He had devoured the lifetime accumulations of many Gu Immortals, but even then, his sovereign immortal aperture was only seventeen to eighteen percent developed.

This Mini Red Heaven was specially left empty by Fang Yuan, reserved as a battlefield.

Currently, the mini five regions’ development was flourishing, seven of the mini nine heavens also had some resources. Mini Red Heaven was completely empty, dream realms were stored in Mini Green Heaven, and Mini Yellow Heaven only had a small segment of a gold fragment current.

The mini five regions still had a lot of unoccupied land, it could be estimated that the mini nine heavens would remain barren for a long period of time.

Normally speaking, when a Gu Immortal advances to rank eight and gains a grotto-heaven, they would actively develop the sky because there would be no free space left on the land. But Fang Yuan was a special case and could not be assessed by common sense.

The battle of the rank eight Immortal Gu House and the immemorial desolate beast lasted for a few days before the latter lost and gave in.

Fang Yuan’s main body was sweeping through green ghost desert, while inside his immortal aperture, his subordinates were using Myriad Year Flying Warship to subdue immemorial year beasts.

On one hand, Fang Yuan was intentionally making these rank seven Gu Immortals get familiar with Myriad Year Flying Warship so that they could participate in battles of rank eights in the future.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan was using the immemorial year beast fishing formation to attract immemorial year beasts in an attempt to complete his Twelve Zodiac battle formation.

Fang Yuan had started on the plan of Twelve Zodiac battle formation in his previous life.

This was an ancient battle formation.

Gathering twelve different species of immemorial year beasts and using them as cores for the formation.

Twelve Zodiac battle formation was specialized in offense, and it could move freely after the formation was complete. During inactive times, these immemorial year beasts could be sealed, becoming like statues, unmoving and not requiring food. But during battle, the seal would be released, they would make up the battle formation and attack the enemy.

There were many advantages of this formation, one was it saved a lot on food expenditure.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan saw this point and had intended to use this method to ease the pressure on his immortal aperture management.

But in this life, Fang Yuan was very affluent, saving the food expenditure became secondary and what Fang Yuan prioritized now was the strong offensive prowess of this formation.

Only immemorial year beasts were qualified to be the cores of the Twelve Zodiac battle formation. Fang Yuan would be unable to construct the Twelve Zodiac battle formation if he used ancient year beasts or desolate level year beasts.

This showed that the Twelve Zodiac battle formation could definitely suppress the methods of ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals.

However, it was not as easy as it seemed to gather twelve different species of immemorial year beast.

It depended not only on strength but also luck.

In his previous life, Fang Yuan did not have the time and energy to spare on this and his luck was also bad, so he was not able to gather the complete battle formation even by the time of the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention.

The River of Time had a lot of year beasts, but the species of these year beasts were not allocated evenly. Instead, a certain species of year beasts would have a huge increase in its population during a certain period of time.

Fang Yuan also was not completely sure if he could gather them all in this life.

But in this life, the manpower, resources, time, and energy put into this project along with the increase in his luck was much more than his previous life.

This was a fact.

Time continued to pass.

Southern Border’s righteous path was being extorted by Fang Yuan, many secretly thought of ways to deal with Fang Yuan but were afraid of alerting him.

Western Desert’s righteous path forces were confronting each other, Fang clan and Wan clan’s argument was continuing without an end. The other righteous path forces were restraining themselves, but hidden undercurrents were surging.

In Northern Plains, Longevity Heaven was trying hard to unite the whole Northern Plains Gu Immortal world but there was little progress. In the previous life, Longevity Heaven took in Lang Ya blessed sect which made the Northern Plains Gu Immortals realize their sincerity, greatly reducing the hostile intentions. But in this life, Lang Ya blessed land was already completely taken by Fang Yuan.

In Eastern Sea, it was tranquil as always. There were some disturbances occasionally but they were nothing major. The most sensational issue would be the matter of Ascending Heaven Plain, but this matter was already settled.

In Central Continent, because of the defeat in Lang Ya blessed land, Heavenly Court was recuperating. Fairy Zi Wei wanted to find trouble with Fang Yuan, but she was helpless because Fang Yuan was wholeheartedly cultivating in seclusion, even if he took action, he would do it in disguise, making it hard for others to distinguish reality from rumors.

The Gu Immortal world of the five regions entered a temporary peaceful period.

Fang Yuan did not waste even a second of his time, he used this rare peaceful period to constantly process his gains and strengthen himself.

Time cutting edge was one step closer to perfection.

He could already use all five colored lights of five restriction profound light qi at the same time after this period of painstaking training, but he was still some distance left from becoming completely proficient.

The progress of his soul path cultivation was also highly satisfactory.

Fang Yuan’s soul had already passed ten million man soul level, reaching one hundred million man soul!

This was the limit of a human.

Before Spectral Soul Demon Venerable appeared, in the long and endless history of humanity, even if there were shocking talents and geniuses, they could not progress beyond one hundred million man soul.

Man was the spirit of all living beings, humans had the strongest intelligence, but when their strength was compared, the sharpness of their nails, and the robustness of their souls, they were far inferior to other beings.

However, cultivation itself was a process of breaking one’s limits.

Gu Master could possess strength to suppress fierce beasts by using Gu worms, grow nails sharper than those of fierce beasts, and naturally, have the foundation to possess even more robust souls.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was the first to innovate this method of breaking through the limits, Fang Yuan naturally had a grasp of this method after inheriting Shadow Sect’s true inheritance.

Cultivating beyond the limit of a human soul was desolate soul!

Although one hundred million man soul was already condensed to the limit and could interfere with the real world, it was still fragile.

But when the soul reached desolate soul level, there would be an earth-shaking change in its battle strength, Fang Yuan would be able to match most desolate beasts with just his soul.

The one who had reached the peak in this was Spectral Soul. In the Battle of Yi

Tian Mountain, he had used just his soul to fight against the heavenly and human calamities, his awe-inspiring demonic might had left an extremely deep impression on Fang Yuan, making him feel desire towards reaching this level.

“But I still have things to do before I breakthrough to desolate soul!”

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture, Fang Yuan’s split soul was put inside the Long Hair refinement path formation.

The formation began to work, its light dyed all the surroundings bright red like blazing fire.

After the experience of failing several times before, Fang Yuan’s movements were smooth.

“Concentrate, we are going to add the main immortal material next.” Fang Yuan commanded, Lang Ya land spirit, who was helping as an assistant, nodded immediately, helping Fang Yuan control the formation.

The space inside the formation formed into partitioned secret rooms that were specially meant to store immortal materials.

At this moment, one secret room opened and the immortal material inside immediately entered the formation.

This immortal material was called prospering spring light, it was a rank eight immortal material. Although it was a light path immortal material, it was condensed in the form of a flower. The flower bloomed open, its pure white petals were adorned with bright red specks along with blotches of bright green. The flower was lifelike and delicate, and was bursting with vitality.

The moment the prospering spring light entered the fire, it melted into pure white light that poured over Fang Yuan’s split soul.

The light fully covered the soul.

The fire continued to burn the soul.

Gu materials were thrown in one after the other, at the same time, several Immortal Gu outside the formation were ceaselessly activated.

Hairy man Gu Immortals were assisting with all their strength, some were dealing with the immortal materials, some were controlling the fire, and some were inspecting the wastage.

This was a group Gu refinement, the expenditure was much higher than refining Gu alone, but the difficulty of the Gu refinement was also lower.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan was alone and did not have this treatment. In this life, he annexed Lang Ya Sect, the refinement path capability he grasped had already surpassed Heavenly Court!

How many refinement path Gu Immortals could Heavenly Court awaken? Even if there were refinement path great experts hibernating in the immortal graveyard, there would be very few who might possess refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level.

Naturally, Heavenly Court’s treasuries were extremely rich, they far surpassed Fang Yuan in this aspect. Even though Fang Yuan had swallowed the lifetime accumulations of so many Gu Immortals, he could not hold a candle to Heavenly Court.

The refinement was going well, Fang Yuan’s spirits rose as he shouted: “Next is false pearl!”

False pearl was not a pearl but a transformation path immortal material that could transform into any gem.

It was also a rank eight material like prospering spring light, and was this refinement’s main material!

The false pearl quickly integrated into the fire.

Fang Yuan called out: “Bai Ning Bing!”

Bai Ning Bing nodded, she was already standing in a formation core, she lightly swung her arm, blood flew out of the injury on her hand.

The blood entered the raging fire, the crimson fire immediately turned into a bewitching blood red color.

Moreover, dense blood qi spread into the surroundings.

Sixth Hair immediately gathered this blood qi and constantly removed it.

If this was not done, this blood qi could heavily interfere with the next process of refinement.

The blood fire reduced in size the more it burned, and soon it shrunk to the size of a fist.

Fang Yuan took a deep breath, the other Gu Immortals also had solemn expressions.

Next was a crucial step.

“Release the raging wave rising dragon fire!” Fang Yuan sent the command.

The raging wave rising dragon fire could act on its own, the moment it was released, it sought to fly away from the formation, but how was it possible?

The Long Hair refinement path formation firmly blocked it and forced it to collide with the blood fire.

The two fires were quite distinct from each other, but they soon merged with each other, forming a large lump of colorful fire.

The mixed fire similarly reduced in size the more it burned while also emitting dense suffocating smoke.

The smoke settled down and covered the fire, forming a pitch-black sphere. From outside, one could vaguely see the bright fire in the center of the smoke sphere.

Boom!

The smoke sphere lasted for about an hour when it suddenly exploded, countless gusts of smoke flew around chaotically like dragons. Air waves surged and people could hear a sound like that of a dragon roar.

A dragonman Gu Master walked out of the smoke and revealed himself.

He was muscular and handsome, he had a tall nose bridge and firm lips. He looked like a peerless hero.

He had golden dragon scales on his body, he had a pair of dragon eyes like topaz, there was also a pair of golden coral-like dragon horns on his head.

Seeing him, Lang Ya land spirit laughing loudly: “Success, we succeeded!”

Indeed, this young rank one Gu Master was Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1804 Breaking Through To Desolate Soul

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The soul path formation was already arranged properly.

This formation was floating in the air, with a radius of about three li.

The formation was letting out a dark and gloomy radiance. It looked like a huge pancake with thick sides and a thin center.

Eerie wind blew up everywhere in the formation, sharply lowering the temperature inside, but everything was normal outside the formation.

Fang Yuan inspected the formation several times with his divine sense before feeling satisfied: “This formation is modified from a soul path killer move, it is much more stable than the killer move and it can be controlled much more smoothly and exquisitely.”

This was a unique soul cultivation technique recorded in Shadow Sect true inheritance, it allowed the human soul to break through the limit and reach the desolate soul level!

On the basis of this soul cultivation killer move and his formation path attainment, Fang Yuan improved and perfected it.

Everything was ready, Fang Yuan sent his hundred million man soul into the formation.

A desolate beast soul core was being grasped by Fang Yuan’s soul, and when the soul reached the center of the formation, it crushed the soul core.

The soul core was already processed beforehand and was further weakened sharply by the formation.

The soul core shattered and turned into fog that floated out.

The formation operated rapidly, making the fog shroud Fang Yuan’s hundred million man soul completely.

For the next several hours, this fog continued to thin before completely disappearing.

Fang Yuan’s hundred million man soul was still in its original shape, the same as his sovereign immortal body’s appearance, solid and lifelike.

The feelings Fang Yuan had inside it, however, was greatly different from before.

“So this is desolate soul?” Fang Yuan’s soul looked at his hands.

He could clearly sense that although there was not much change in his shape, a vast strength was surging on the inside.

This strength could not even be imagined by his previous state.

Hundred million man soul could interfere with the real world but would be in danger even if it was attacked by ordinary wild beasts. But the desolate soul’s strength was like heaven and earth compared to hundred million man soul.

“Let’s test it in real battle.” Fang Yuan’s soul flew out of the formation excitedly.

Fang Yuan had already made preparations, a desolate beast was confined not far away.

The desolate beast had just obtained its freedom when it saw the bluish black soul that had the physique of an adult fly towards it.

It roared ferociously and opened its mouth as it charged at Fang Yuan’s soul.

Fang Yuan’s soul suddenly flew up at the last moment, avoiding the desolate beast’s bite and flying to its head.

He then raised his right leg and swung it down like an axe.

Boom!

A loud sound resounded as the hill-sized desolate beast was knocked down, heavily injured.

“Again!” Fang Yuan’s soul chased after it, punching and kicking.

The desolate beast lacked intelligence and adding on its large size, it could only take the beatings passively while Fang Yuan dodged its attacks.

The desolate soul’s attacks hit all its targets, after taking the beating for a while, this desolate beast whimpered and fled, losing its will to fight.

Fang Yuan’s soul did not give chase, he would arrange for people to catch it afterwards.

A light excitement lingered in the thoughts of Fang Yuan’s soul.

“I really possess the strength of a desolate beast!”

“Adding on my combat techniques, ordinary desolate beasts are not my match in a one on one battle.”

“However, my human soul could float, but after breaking through to desolate soul, I am unable to fly and have to rely on Gu worms.”

Fang Yuan’s soul could fly around in the battle because the soul contained various Immortal Gu as well as immortal essence.

Some soul beasts could fly but some could not.

In the records of Shadow Sect’s true inheritance, when a human soul broke through to desolate soul, it could not fly. Because humans were innately unable to fly.

A featherman’s soul was different, it could fly, but feathermen were not pure humans.

Even Spectral Soul who had reached the peak of soul cultivation could not fly and had to stand on the ground in the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain.

“The number of soul path dao marks on the soul has increased sharply, it actually broke through ten thousand dao marks!”

Previously, Fang Yuan’s soul had few soul path dao marks even though it was cultivated to hundred million man soul.

This was because Fang Yuan had used the two sacred lands of soul cultivation, Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley. If he had used other soul cultivation methods, he would have to increase the dao marks on his soul to accumulate the same level of foundation.

The physical body was a carrier of dao marks, the soul was also the same.

It was not only soul path that could add dao marks on the soul, other paths could also do it.

Like time path.

Southern Border rank eight Gu Immortal Xia Cha had arranged a defensive method on her soul. Her soul was covered in a web formed from time path dao marks. This layer of defense had caused many difficulties for Fang Yuan when he soul searched her in the previous life.

Breaking through the limit and forming a desolate soul, Fang Yuan could now continue cultivating his soul.

The journey would be much longer and broader than human soul cultivation.

Ten desolate soul, hundred desolate soul, thousand desolate soul, ten thousand desolate soul...

Fang Yuan’s desolate soul started cultivating, the time path clone was focused on deductions, while Fang Yuan’s main body continued to research on the dragonman clone.

Despite this clone being created by himself, it still had research value.

The dragonman clone’s soul originally had the appearance of Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body, and had thirty million man soul foundation.

At present, however, its appearance had changed greatly. It looked the same as the dragonman’s body, with dragon tail, horns, scales, and vertical dragon pupils.

Moreover, the soul path dao marks on the soul were already reduced to single digits and the soul foundation was only at a few dozen man soul.

This was the result of Fang Yuan’s refinement and it was also what he wanted to achieve.

The split souls all possessed human souls. When entering a dragonman body, it could only be possessed by the human soul and the entity could not be considered a dragonman completely.

Fang Yuan created the dragonman clone to strive for the Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace. Be they transformation path killer moves or soul possession, they could not give such assurance like the clone.

After painstaking refinement, Fang Yuan refined the dragonman body with a matching dragonman soul.

Only like this could it be considered a complete dragonman.

Fang Yuan’s pure dream clone was only a half-finished product.

The pure dream clone’s physical body did not have any issues but its soul was Fang Yuan’s human soul. Although the pure dream clone was a human, it did not match Fang Yuan’s split soul.

A long period of adaptation was required and some soul path methods would have to be used before Fang Yuan’s split soul could completely turn into the appearance of its physical body, only then could they truly match each other.

In fact, when Fang Yuan had just obtained the sovereign immortal body, it did not match his soul. After a long period of cultivation and using soul path methods to adjust his soul, he reached his current perfectly matching state.

Dragonmen were variant humans, there was naturally unique points about their physical bodies.

Rockmen had abundant earth path dao marks, snowmen were proficient in ice and snow path, hairy men possessed refinement path dao marks, mermen were water path, and dragonmen possessed enslavement path dao marks from birth.

Dragonmen had an incomparable talent in enslavement path, they were natural kings who could rule over other lifeforms much more easily than other races.

“The influence of the enslavement path dao marks brings an enormous benefit in not only the external matters but also to the internal structure of dragonmen.”

According to Fang Yuan’s deductions, with the enslavement path dao marks, the dragonman societal structure would be much tighter than other races.

This tightness was not because of external causes but was innate to dragonmen.

In Fang Yuan’s point of view, the influence brought by enslavement path dao marks to the internal structure was much more significant to the dragonmen than its external influence!

The dragonmen would be united unlike other races, especially like the internal fighting and internal friction of humanity.

As for enslavement path, it was specialized in battles of attrition. The cost of cultivating enslavement path was high, but if it was accomplished to a certain level, one could fight many by themselves, winning against stronger enemies.

Some paths had high individual battle strength like blood path, metal path, sword path, and so on.

But only few paths possessed the special characteristics of fighting one as many, in order to win against stronger enemies. For instance, there was formation path.

When Fang Yuan was a mortal and fought in the Imperial Court contest, he used enslavement path methods. And he had used formation path methods to capture Southern Border immortals not long ago.

Fang Yuan suddenly realized one point: “No wonder, in the previous life, Dragon

Palace could enslave Di Zang Sheng. This Immortal Gu House should be an enslavement path Immortal Gu House!”

Fang Yuan was not too clear about the inner details regarding Dragon Palace.

Even now, he did not understand how Bai Ning Bing suddenly became the owner of Dragon Palace.

But it did not matter.

“Even if the dragonman clone is of no use, I still have a living Bai Ning Bing.”

The dragonman clone only had rank one Gu Master cultivation, the next step was to raise it to Gu Immortal level. Its path was most likely going to be enslavement path.

Fang Yuan had already sealed the pure dream clone’s aperture, albeit with difficulty. The split soul was cultivating continuously, actively transforming to match the physical body.

These two split souls might have some soul path cultivation, but it would only be at superficial level and never be to the extent of the main body’s soul.

Because the dao marks of different paths would conflict and interfere with each other.

“I will cultivate for a bit longer, then it will be time to attack.” Fang Yuan’s gaze shined like blazing fire.

In Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei was still the one in charge.

In Central Great Hall.

A message came that slightly eased her furrowed brows.

“Good, Old Ancestor Xue Hu has accepted Prince Feng Xian’s proposal and will receive our financial help!”

Longevity Heaven wanted to unite the whole Northern Plains Gu Immortal world and they showed great determination, thus they had big clashes with lone immortals and demonic path members.

Fairy Zi Wei thus made a plan and boldly sent back Prince Feng Xian to Northern Plains to persuade Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was not willing at first and had been firm in his stance, but under his wife’s persuasion, he reluctantly agreed to collaborating with Heavenly Court.

“Although our current collaboration is limited, it won’t be the same in the future.” Fairy Zi Wei smiled confidently.

Looking at the entire world’s situation.

There was important progress in Northern Plains while Heavenly Court was also stirring up trouble from behind the scenes to create conflict in Western Desert’s righteous path.

Central Continent was free of any particular event. Eastern Sea’s several large forces divided Ascending Heaven Plain between themselves. But in the dark, Heavenly Court was putting full efforts in searching for Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace.

“As for Southern Border...” Fairy Zi Wei’s smile disappeared.

The situation was not optimistic in Southern Border.

Southern Border’s righteous path was being extorted by Fang Yuan, Fairy Zi Wei was unable to stop it. At the same time, the Southern Alliance was formed, the alliance leader position was empty but Tie clan’s Beacon Towers were already being constructed everywhere.

Both of these situations were bad news to Heavenly Court.

“There is also Fang Yuan, he captured so many Southern Border Gu Immortals and extorted countless immortal materials, he also has the whole of Lang Ya Sect’s refinement path Gu Immortals under him...”

Fairy Zi Wei was paying close attention to any news regarding Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan had gone into hiding and was unable to be found.

Fairy Zi Wei felt a huge pressure, she would rather have Fang Yuan cause chaos everywhere and run amok.

Currently, she did not even hear a trace of any rumor regarding Fang Yuan’s recent situation.

“What is Fang Yuan doing?”

“How much has his strength increased?”

“When and where will he appear again?”

The final question did not trouble Fairy Zi Wei for long.

Approximately half a month later, she obtained some battle information.

Fang Yuan had suddenly appeared in the River of Time and fought the Four Xunzi.

He was not alone, he brought a ship shaped rank eight Immortal Gu House!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1805 First Battle in the River of Time

Immortal Gu House Myriad Year Flying Warship was moving in the River of Time.

Fang Yuan was standing proudly on the bow of the ship with his hands behind his back. He wore a black robe, his hair was long and black, and he was gazing at the endless waves in the River of Time with his dark abyss-like eyes.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest were inside the Immortal Gu House, looking at Fang Yuan who was releasing rank seven aura. Some felt a chill in their hearts, while some realized: No wonder Fang Yuan could rampage till now. If I had rank eight cultivation, I would have already begun ruling an area and proclaimed it to the world, but he is a wolf in sheep’s clothing, not letting go of any chance to deceive the enemy.

There were some who sighed: Both sides have yet to clash, but Fang Yuan has already started to mislead the enemy. This is a confrontation between information and tactics! This battle has already started since Myriad Year Flying Warship appeared in the River of Time.

Fang Yuan had his own plan.

If he could keep his rank eight cultivation a secret, he would not expose it.

Because once it was exposed, the secret of the sovereign immortal body would no longer be hidden.

In the previous life, this secret was exposed, but in this life, this secret seemed to still be undiscovered.

“As for the secret of my rebirth, it will probably be exposed after this battle.” Fang Yuan estimated inwardly.

Let it be exposed then!

Fang Yuan felt it was time for it to be known.

The significance of this battle was extremely huge.

Although Fang Yuan was cautious and careful all along and paid close attention to the ink effect, he would not hesitate when it was time to make a move.

Advancing or retreating, attacking or defending, Fang Yuan was well-versed and experienced in this.

A pavilion was floating in the River of Time.

It was not covered on all four sides, it was very simplistic in appearance. The cover was made of yellow grass, the pillars were grey white rocks that were not polished. There was a folding screen in the pavilion consisting of multiple panels, it was the most elegant decoration in there.

It was the rank seven Immortal Gu House Present and Past Pavilion.

Four Central Continent time path Gu Immortals were standing inside the pavilion, they were the Four Xunzi.

They had detected Myriad Year Flying Warship the moment it appeared.

The Four Xunzi immediately reported this information to Fairy Zi Wei without daring to delay a second.

“Fang Yuan has finally appeared.”

“Yes, we did not waste our time by waiting here for so long.”

“He is still a rank seven, but has a rank eight Immortal Gu House!”

“What Immortal Gu House is this? I have never heard about it.”

“From the looks of it, it should be a time path Immortal Gu House, right?”

The Four Xunzi did not attack immediately.

As far as they were concerned, Present and Past Pavilion was specialized in investigating within the River of Time, they were still very far away from Fang Yuan at this moment. They discovered Fang Yuan but Fang Yuan could not see them.

They were only at rank seven in the end, it was only because they cultivated time path that the supreme Heavenly Court noticed them and stationed them here.

Moreover, the Four Xunzi were not Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, their next course of action would depend on Fairy Zi Wei’s arrangements and commands.

Myriad Year Flying Warship carried Fang Yuan while floating slowly. Fang Yuan was looking at all directions from the bow as if he was searching for something.

“Looks like Fang Yuan is searching for Red Lotus true inheritance.”

“He did not discover us indeed.”

“Lady Zi Wei has not sent a command yet?”

Inside Present and Past Pavilion, the Four Xunzi were tightly observing Fang Yuan.

Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei was first happy then puzzled.

She was happy that Fang Yuan had finally appeared!

It was less scary when he appeared, the worst was him hiding and doing things secretly.

In truth, every day that Fang Yuan did not appear would increase the mental pressure on Fairy Zi Wei, wondering what evil scheme Fang Yuan was plotting!

But now that Fang Yuan appeared, Fairy Zi Wei finally let out a sigh of relief.

“Good, come! Let me see how much you have grown, I will make good use of this chance to kill you.” Killing intent spread inside Fairy Zi Wei: “As for that rank eight Immortal Gu House, is it your reliance and source of confidence, Fang Yuan?”

Fairy Zi Wei also was somewhat bewildered.

This rank eight Immortal Gu House had appeared with no prior signs!

According to common sense, even a super force would not be able to hide the construction of an Immortal Gu House and there would be many traces left behind. Because there were too many things to gather and prepare.

The construction process of an Immortal Gu House would make quite a bit of commotion and would be discovered by others.

Fang Yuan naturally was not exempted from this. But his accumulation process had happened in his previous life, so Fairy Zi Wei could not sense it.

“How could Fang Yuan suddenly have a time path Immortal Gu House, and it is a rank eight one?”

“What abilities and powers does this ship shaped Immortal Gu House have?”

Thoughts were constantly colliding in Fairy Zi Wei’s mind, Central Great Hall was quickly pervaded with purple qi.

She rapidly deduced and soon came to a decision.

She estimated this Immortal Gu House had limited strength even though it was at rank eight level. Because it had appeared too suddenly and there was no records of such a ship in the history, it was likely a hasty and experimental work of Fang Yuan.

Moreover, whether it was strong or weak, Heavenly Court would still need to probe it and stop Fang Yuan from obtaining Red Lotus’ true inheritances.

Fairy Zi Wei quickly commanded Qing Ye to hurry to the location of Present and Past Pavilion with Eternal Yacht.

An accurate and clear map of the surroundings appeared in her mind.

“When Eternal Yacht meets up with Present and Past Pavilion, they will pincer attack Fang Yuan from the front and back!” Fairy Zi Wei’s gaze shone sharply.

Previously, Present and Past Pavilion was monitoring the River of Time while Eternal Yacht was moving everywhere in search of Red Lotus’ true inheritance. Currently, Eternal Yacht was already rushing over under Fairy Zi Wei’s command.

The Four Xunzi also quickly received Fairy Zi Wei’s command.

“We need to move! Based on Fang Yuan’s speed and direction, he will soon escape Present and Past Pavilion’s detection range.”

“We will attack first and delay Fang Yuan, luring him to this area. Then Eternal Yacht will sneak attack them from behind!”

“Move out!”

The Four Xunzi controlled Present and Past Pavilion to make the River of Time send out waves.

The water waves moved towards Myriad Year Flying Warship like countless soldiers.

“They finally made a move!” Inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, a variant human Gu Immortal said softly and excitedly.

Fang Yuan had intentionally appeared near Present and Past Pavilion to lure them into attacking.

“Lord sect leader is so naughty, he clearly discovered Present and Past Pavilion already but is acting like he did not. The enemy has taken the bait.” Lady White Rabbit’s long eyebrows fluttered, her eyes were glistening brightly like shiny crystals, having learned another sneaky move.

“Hmm?” Fang Yuan gasped lightly, his brows slightly furrowed as he sensed the anomaly in the river.

The slight changes in his expression were seen clearly by the Four Xunzi.

“Fang Yuan discovered something.”

“He is controlling that rank eight Immortal Gu House to move towards us.”

“Relax, we are very far away from him... ah, so fast!”

Myriad Year Flying Warship’s speed greatly shocked the Four Xunzi.

They were still calm and leisurely at the previous moment, but right now, their expression changed, their minds and bodies shook.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was piercing through the waves like a swordfish, charging extremely quickly towards Present and Past Pavilion.

“Increase the intensity!” The eldest among the Four Xunzi, Shang Xunzi, shouted.

Present and Past Pavilion let out dazzling light, tall waves that were dozens of feet high submerged Myriad Year Flying Warship like a tsunami.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Myriad Year Flying Warship was covered in a silver white light, every time the waves collided with it, its speed increased even more, charging forward like an unmatched sword.

The Four Xunzi’s expressions turned pale, their eyes showing horror.

Fang Yuan’s charge was too quick and too fierce, they felt extremely uneasy now.

Zhong Xunzi shouted: “Quick, use that move.”

The radiance around Present and Past Pavilion turned brighter, it was like a vast light pillar that shot towards the sky.

Under Present and Past Pavilion’s influence, the water around Myriad Year Flying Warship experienced a strange change, turning into a giant whirlpool in the blink of an eye.

The whirlpool spun quickly and was barely able to immobilize Myriad Year Flying Warship.

The Four Xunzi finally let out a sigh of relief.

“We finally immobilized it.”

“This Immortal Gu House is so fast, it crossed such a large distance in just a few breaths of time.”

“But it is already trapped by us now.”

“Let’s probe what abilities it has.”

The whirlpool rotated even faster, waves changed, turning into the shape of sawteeth.

Countless sawteeth moved around Myriad Year Flying Warship, biting and sawing at Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was trapped in the center of the whirlpool but Fang Yuan’s expression was cold and uncaring.

Xun Guo Zi revealed a frightened expression: “Such a sturdy Immortal Gu House, the sawtooth whirlpool is actually unable to break its defensive light!”

Xia Xunzi patted Xun Guo Zi’s shoulder and comforted: “Relax, it has not even been ten breaths of time, it will definitely crumble apart once it is bitten and sawed for a longer time!”

Although he said this, the Four Xunzi were inwardly astonished.

They were deeply aware of the power that this sawtooth whirlpool killer move had, this move was the strongest offensive method of Present and Past Pavilion, ordinary Gu Immortals would be cut into pieces in a blink of an eye, even the Four Xunzi could not last three breaths of time. Even Present and Past Pavilion would be unstable if it entered the whirlpool and a large amount of its Gu worms would immediately die. But Myriad Year Flying Warship was completely intact and even looked like it was doing quite well?

The Four Xunzi felt a chill rising up their backs.

“It is a rank eight Immortal Gu House after all!”

“Where has Eternal Yacht reached now?”

“No, the situation is bad!” Xun Guo Zi suddenly shouted.

The other three Xunzi quickly looked ahead, they saw the water surrounding Myriad Year Flying Warship change rapidly, the original sawtooth whirlpool transformed into rapids that shone in a silver-white color.

The rapids moved under Myriad Year Flying Warship and enlarged by over ten times within a few seconds.

“Present and Past Pavilion has methods to control the river water, how could our Myriad Year Flying Warship not have them!” The variant human Gu Immortals laughed loudly inside the ship.

“Kill.” Fang Yuan gave an indifferent command.

Boom!

Like a torrential waterfall or a flash flood, the rapids around Myriad Year Flying Warship surged and expanded as it moved forward.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was pushed forward by the rapids, easily breaking past the ruined sawtooth whirlpool and charging towards the Four Xunzi with surging momentum.

The Four Xunzi took in breaths of cold air, the sawtooth whirlpool that they had put their hopes in had only held back Myriad Year Flying Warship for less than fifty breaths of time.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1806 Zi Wei At A Loss

“It is coming!”

“Block it!!”

“Increase the power of Present and Past Pavilion to the maximum!”

With chaotic thoughts, Four Xunzi exerted Present and Past Pavilion to its limits, the screen in the pavilion emitted dense smoke and the light pillar that shot out was almost solid.

Myriad Year Flying Warship neared Present and Past Pavilion.

“Ram into it.” Fang Yuan sneered, standing arrogantly on the bow of the boat.

But at the next moment, Present and Past Pavilion retaliated with all its strength, sharply slowing down Myriad Year Flying Warship’s charging momentum.

“Killer move — Slowdown?” Fang Yuan was familiar with this move, under his command, the silver light around Myriad Year Flying Warship suddenly concentrated.

Swoosh!

With a light sound, Present and Past Pavilion’s killer move was broken, Myriad Year Flying Warship’s speed was restored and it collided with Present and Past Pavilion.

Present and Past Pavilion was not specialized in defense, Fang Yuan had destroyed it by himself back then, and now, it collided with the sturdier and faster Myriad Year Flying Warship, it shattered immediately.

The pavilion roof was sent flying, the pillars crumbled, the screens were shattered, the pavilion base was reduced to fragments.

The Four Xunzi coughed out a large amount of blood and fell down into the River of Time.

Without the protection of Present and Past Pavilion, the Four Xunzi lost the ability to retaliate against Fang Yuan. In just a short while, they were all killed by Fang Yuan.

They were at rank seven, and like Liu Hao, had not joined Heavenly Court, so they still had their own immortal apertures.

Their Immortal Gu, however, were all detonated.

Fang Yuan had just collected their corpses as well as the scattered Immortal Gu when Eternal Yacht arrived.

Rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Ye was standing on Eternal Yacht, his expression immediately changed when he saw the Four Xunzi’s corpses on the deck of Myriad Year Flying Warship: “Fang Yuan, you demon, I will make you pay with your life!”

Fang Yuan turned around and smiled: “Here comes another one seeking death.”

There was no exchange of words, the rapids under Myriad Year Flying Warship surged and rushed towards Eternal Yacht.

Its violent and sharp movement immediately caused a disturbance among the Gu Immortals in Eternal Yacht.

Bursting veins bulged on Qing Ye’s forehead, he rubbed it but still sent out a wise command: “We will avoid it, don’t fight head-on with this rank eight Immortal Gu House.”

The Four Xunzi were dead but the battle details had already been sent, Fairy Zi Wei and Qing Ye knew much information about Myriad Year Flying Warship.

However, would be it easy for Eternal Yacht to escape?

Myriad Year Flying Warship’s speed rose, breaking the limits it showed before.

Although this Immortal Gu House was called a warship, it had the shape of a boat, it moved like a silver comet now, rapidly surfing along the River of Time!

Eternal Yacht had the form of a multi-storied ship, it was much larger than Myriad Year Flying Warship, but it was not fast. How could it be able to dodge?

Boom!

With a huge sound, Eternal Yacht shook as a large hole was smashed in its front hull from which the inside could be seen clearly.

Fang Yuan’s Myriad Year Flying Warship had directly pierced through Eternal Yacht!

“How is this possible?”

“We had already activated the strongest defensive method of Eternal Yacht, but it could not block even one attack!”

The fact was so horrifying that Qing Ye was staring with wide eyes.

“Lord, that damned Fang Yuan is charging over again.” The Gu Immortals inside Eternal Yacht shouted in fright.

They had just spoken when Myriad Year Flying Warship smashed into Eternal Yacht again.

Eternal Yacht shook intensely, Qing Ye lost his balance and staggered. His battle intent was shaking, how could he beat this?

Eternal Yacht’s Gu worms suffered enormous damage, the entire place would directly collapse after another few collisions.

Many Gu Immortals were pale with cold sweat all over their faces. Fortunately, they heard Qing Ye’s command at this time: “Retreat!”

Eternal Yacht turned around and retreated decisively.

“Can you escape?” Fang Yuan smiled coldly.

Boom boom boom!

Myriad Year Flying Warship collided into Eternal Yacht time after time, Eternal Yacht used its killer moves to retaliate but Fang Yuan had already prepared restraining methods.

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated.

As long as Heavenly Court did not have any huge change, Fang Yuan would definitely be the final winner!

The outcome of this battle had been decided from the start.

Therefore, when Eternal Yacht was destroyed and Qing Ye fell into the River of Time, Fang Yuan’s side was not surprised.

“Kill him!” Without needing Fang Yuan’s command, many Gu Immortals inside the warship shouted simultaneously.

Killing intent surged, Myriad Year Flying Warship submerged into the river and rammed at Qing Ye like a vicious shark.

Qing Ye put all his strength in activating defensive methods.

But as a dark path Gu Immortal, he was greatly suppressed in the River of Time.

Boom!

Myriad Year Flying Warship directly destroyed the dark shield and sent him flying.

Qing Ye coughed out a large amount of blood and tried to move to the surface while enduring the intense pain.

The river surface was right in his sight when he made a horrifying discovery, Myriad Year Flying Warship was already waiting for him.

Boom!

There was another huge sound, Myriad Year Flying Warship directly slammed down on Qing Ye’s head with its base.

A large part of Qing Ye’s skull caved in, the enormous force transmitted through his whole body, shattering his spine, rib bones and other parts.

Gurgle gurgle!

A large amount of water of the River of Time entered through his mouth.

The huge collision slammed him down to the depths of the river like a ball.

“Still not dead?” Bing Yuan was stunned at Qing Ye’s stubborn vitality.

“Then, we just have to do it again!” The eyes of the rockman tribe first supreme elder were bloodshot with killing intent.

Taking advantage of the enemy when he was weakened, Myriad Year Flying Warship was like a killer launching a deadly pursuit.

Boom!

With the third collision, Qing Ye was heavily injured once again.

From his right shoulder to his chest, most of his body was smashed into pulp and his organs were completely destroyed.

Qing Ye stared rigidly at Myriad Year Flying Warship, he wanted to struggle but had no strength left.

Finally, he lost his life, becoming a floating corpse.

“He is dead, he really died!”

“This is a rank eight Gu Immortal.”

“We really killed him?!”

The variant human Gu Immortals cheered in joy, even Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan and the rest were visibly moved, Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit were also very excited.

A battle merit like killing a rank eight Gu Immortal was simply too rare. Despite using many external influences, this battle merit was enough for them to boast about it their whole lives.

Fang Yuan collected Qing Ye’s corpse, it was a pity his soul had already dispersed.

“This Qing Ye is quite a fierce person, he actually destroyed his own soul at the end!”

“But this physical body is also an excellent immortal material and it will help me research phantom path.”

Heavenly Court grasped the supreme profundities of phantom path.

Precisely so, after the Heavenly Court members contributed their immortal aperture, they could obtain a phantom aperture and leave Heavenly Court to fight outside.

Once a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal died, the phantom aperture would automatically dissipate along with the Gu worms, even the dao marks would disappear.

In short, even if one won against a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal, they would reap few benefits.

But after annexing Lang Ya blessed land, Lang Ya land spirit had informed Fang Yuan that the corpses of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals would retain the supreme profundity of phantom path. If Fang Yuan could comprehend some phantom path mysteries from these corpses, he might be able to decipher Heavenly Court’s phantom path method and even have a hold on Heavenly Court.

Even if he could not do anything to Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan could use this phantom path method on himself.

With the phantom aperture method, Fang Yuan could control Ying Wu Xie and the rest even more strictly, this was the best weapon to ensure loyalty.

Myriad Year Flying Warship continued to sweep through the battlefield.

Fang Yuan’s side was joyous, their long training was finally paying off. In this battle, they destroyed two Immortal Gu Houses and over ten Gu Immortals.

Present and Past Pavilion had the Four Xunzi while there were even more Gu Immortals in Eternal Yacht.

Immortal Gu Houses were developed from immortal formations, they needed to be jointly controlled by many Gu Immortals for them to be flexible and comprehensive. Some Immortal Gu Houses had extremely strict requirements on the amount of Gu Immortals, there could not be one more or one less.

Very few Immortal Gu Houses could be controlled by just one person.

None of these Gu Immortals managed to escape with their lives, they were all gathered, corpses put to one side and their souls suppressed.

The battle ended but Fang Yuan was not in a hurry to leave, instead, he patrolled around the river while waiting to see if there would be reinforcements from Heavenly Court.

Lady White Rabbit, Bing Yuan, Shi Zong, and other Gu Immortals discussed. They were still excited and their topic of discussion was mostly centered on the rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Ye.

Speaking of which, Qing Ye was quite unlucky.

Eternal Yacht was destroyed and he was highly restricted in the River of Time, it was quite amazing for him to be able to display twenty to thirty percent of his skills.

This was the area with the greatest amount of time path dao marks in the whole world.

Because of this, time path methods were extremely easy to use here and their might was also amplified. But other methods like great thief ghost hand, reverse flow protection seal and so on were greatly suppressed.

Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei’s expression was pale and her gaze was somewhat dazed.

She obtained the latest battle information.

“Fang Yuan controlled the rank eight Immortal Gu House and destroyed both Present and Past Pavilion and Eternal Yacht, even Qing Ye was killed?”

Fairy Zi Wei felt a deep sense of disbelief.

She was still planning on giving commands, even if they could not kill Fang Yuan, they could drive him off.

But the two greatest sources of battle strength that she relied on were eliminated so soon.

“This battle was decided way too quickly!”

“This does not make any sense.”

Present and Past Pavilion and Eternal Yacht might only be at rank seven, but they were both outstanding among their peers, their structure was highly ingenious and they possessed plenty of comprehensive methods.

If not for this, Fairy Zi Wei would not have mobilized the two Immortal Gu Houses to besiege Fang Yuan.

So what was the problem?

“Reviewing the battle information, Fang Yuan’s mysterious Immortal Gu House might be at rank eight but has limited methods. Besides controlling the water of the River of Time to speed up itself, its strongest aspect was physical toughness.”

Myriad Year Flying Warship’s fighting method could be described in one word, collision.

If two words were used, hard collision.

If three words, sped up collision.

This battle tactic was clearly extremely straightforward and simple, but why did it succeed?

That was because during the fight, the methods of Present and Past Pavilion and Eternal Yacht, especially the defensive measures, were instantly destroyed by Fang Yuan!

Fairy Zi Wei stood up from her seat.

She was unable to keep sitting.

A thin layer of cold sweat had appeared on her forehead: “Looks like Fang Yuan has truly been reborn! He has an extremely deep understanding of Present and Past Pavilion and Eternal Yacht, he also prepared the most effective methods against their killer moves. Thus, they appeared fragile and looked like they did not even have strength to retaliate!”

Just like Fang Yuan expected, Fairy Zi Wei, who already had heavy doubts before, was now certain Fang Yuan had been reborn.

“What do we do?”

“Fang Yuan has a rank eight Immortal Gu House now and can move around the River of Time while my side’s three Immortal Gu Houses are still in the construction process.”

“Should I halt the construction? Since he has been reborn, he is probably familiar with these three Immortal Gu Houses.”

“If I halt the construction and switch to other Immortal Gu Houses, would it be too late?”

“Fang Yuan definitely entered the River of Time to search for Red Lotus’ true inheritances. If he succeeds, it will be extremely bad, the consequences will be much worse than the defeat in Lang Ya blessed land!”

At this instant, the ever so resourceful Fairy Zi Wei was at a loss for what to do.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1807 Public Sentiment

Fang Yuan and the rest returned to Southern Border following a tributary of the River of Time.

Despite the immortals being in an excellent condition with high spirits, it was still necessary to rest and reorganize after the battle.

“The gains this time are quite good.” Fang Yuan inspected the corpses.

Besides rank eight Gu Immortal Qing Ye, most of these Central Continent rank seven Gu Immortals were from Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, they did not have the qualifications to join Heavenly Court so they had not contributed their immortal apertures.

Most of the Gu worms were destroyed but these immortal apertures were still there.

There was also one or two Immortal Gu that were luckily preserved after the two Immortal Gu Houses were destroyed.

In the following period of time, Fang Yuan would need to inspect these immortal apertures and see if there were any issues, if there were no issues, he would annex them.

Naturally, there was a portion of immortal apertures that Fang Yuan could not annex because of inadequate attainment levels.

In fact, there was a portion of such people among the Southern Border immortal captives.

“These battle spoils are only a bonus, the true value of this battle is that I have shrugged off my passive situation, I am now taking the initiative to fight Heavenly Court.”

Fang Yuan had grasped the timing of this battle well.

If he had battled earlier, he would not have the Immortal Gu House Myriad Year Flying Warship and would have to expose his rank eight cultivation.

This was undesirable. Because once his rank eight cultivation was exposed, Heavenly Court would notice Fang Yuan had not underwent the tribulation, and as such, the secret of the sovereign immortal aperture would also be exposed.

If he delayed this battle, Heavenly Court would not have just these two Immortal Gu Houses. In the previous life, Fang Yuan had encountered four time path Immortal Gu Houses.

By destroying Eternal Yacht and Present and Past Pavilion, Heavenly Court fell into a very passive state.

Heavenly Court was afraid Fang Yuan would obtain Red Lotus’ true inheritances, so they would definitely send reinforcements to the River of Time to stop Fang Yuan.

After Lord Huang Shi passed, Heavenly Court lacked time path rank eight experts, so they were forced to substitute with Qing Ye and time path Immortal Gu Houses.

Like this, it would give Fang Yuan another chance to attack.

It would be just like how Fang Yuan destroyed Eternal Yacht and Present and Past Pavilion.

But even if Heavenly Court knew of this, they would do their best to stop Fang Yuan no matter how big of a price they had to pay.

“In the previous life, Heavenly Court guarded the River of Time like a fortress. But in this life... hehehe.”

“The River of Time has already become a place Heavenly Court must salvage, it is also the best battlefield for me to weaken Heavenly Court and make them bleed.”

Fang Yuan was almost sure of Heavenly Court’s response.

Just like Heavenly Court had the strategical advantage of possessing fate Gu which forced the four regions’ Gu Immortals to make a long campaign to attack Central Continent and Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan relied on the smokescreen that was Red Lotus’ true inheritance to force Heavenly Court to send reinforcements to the River of Time.

“It is just that my rebirth secret cannot be hidden any longer.”

In the battle of Lang Ya, Fairy Zi Wei had already been suspicious. And in this period of time, Fang Yuan captured the Southern Border immortals and also started a slaughter in the River of Time.

If Fairy Zi Wei was still not sure that Fang Yuan had been reborn, she would not be Fairy Zi Wei!

Fang Yuan would never underestimate Fairy Zi Wei, he was very familiar with her.

Often, the one who understood you the most was not your friend but your enemy.

Sure enough, after a few days, Fairy Zi Wei publicized in treasure yellow heaven that Fang Yuan had reborn and possessed a rank eight time path Immortal Gu House.

The moment this was released, news spread everywhere. Fang Yuan’s influence went up a level and the whole world was in an uproar!

“How long has it been? Fang Yuan has already grown to be a demonic path overlord, a person who is a giant pillar of the demonic path!”

“Fang Yuan already has that Reverse Flow River killer move and can reflect attacks of rank eight Gu Immortals, being in an impregnable position. Now, he has a rank eight Immortal Gu House?”

“Isn’t this too fast? It is like this Immortal Gu House jumped out from the ground out of nowhere.”

“Since he was reborn, the appearance of this Immortal Gu House cannot be considered sudden. Don’t forget that he annexed Lang Ya blessed land which has a deep foundation.”

The discussions naturally involved Heavenly Court.

“Heavenly Court seems to be quite weak, they don’t have any effective methods against Fang Yuan.”

“The mighty Heavenly Court was defeated again and again so they publicized Fang Yuan’s details?”

“It is not that Heavenly Court is weak, but they have no way to deal with Fang Yuan.”

“Normally speaking, even a rank eight demonic immortal would not be as high profile as Fang Yuan.”

“That’s right. Demonic path Gu Immortals have always been alone, if they offend or provoke the righteous path, many forces would collaborate, gather information using information path, deduce their position with wisdom path, and hunt them down. It is like how the Southern Border immortals chased after Fang Yuan.”

“But Fang Yuan? He can actually guard against Heavenly Court’s deductions. He also has Fixed Immortal Travel to move everywhere he wants and is hard to catch. His formation path attainment is also extremely high, he can see through the ambush of formations, he even used a time path formation to ambush and capture the pursuing team of Southern Border!”

“He also annexed Lang Ya blessed land, his refinement path attainment level is at least at great grandmaster level!”

The discussions became much more in-depth, and the Gu Immortals astonishingly discovered Fang Yuan was so versatile. He cultivated so many paths, such a horrifying talent shocked the world.

“I understand now, he is a monster!” Many people took sharp breaths. Most Gu Immortals, even rank eights, cultivated one path primarily. Who could cultivate so many paths like Fang Yuan?

Cultivating multiple paths would divide their time, energy, and resources, the Gu Immortals would often accomplish nothing in the end.

In fact, Fang Yuan had also thought of specializing in one path but he could do nothing about it! Before this, he battled alone and was always pressured by his enemies. Could he do without cultivating wisdom path? Could his battle strength increase if he did not cultivate soul path? Could he capture the Southern Border immortals without formation path?

“We can’t say that. Even if Fang Yuan’s aptitude was worse, as long as he continuously rebirths with Spring Autumn Cicada, he can use the time to accumulate different foundations.”

“Right, with Spring Autumn Cicada, even if he fails, he has the opportunity to rebirth countless times! The experience of failures will still accumulate, even an idiot will succeed after failing so many times.”

“Spring Autumn Cicada... it is indeed worthy of being Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s vital Gu, it has such an amazing power.”

“On the List of Mystical Gu, Spring Autumn Cicada’s ranking should be raised even higher. The current ranking of such a mystical Gu is too low.”

“Because of Fang Yuan, Spring Autumn Cicada’s ranking should indeed be raised, but I feel we should not overestimate Spring Autumn Cicada. It is after all only a Gu worm, there are many methods to restrict it. To a great extent, the reason why Fang Yuan is so amazing is because he is an otherworldly demon!”

“Indeed. The combination of an otherworldly demon and Spring Autumn Cicada is truly too perfect! Besides an otherworldly demon, it will be very difficult for others to change their lives greatly by using Spring Autumn Cicada.”

Fang Yuan observed the discussions and after careful consideration, he decisively spread the video of the battle in the River of Time in treasure yellow heaven.

He even posted a speech: “Heavenly Court, my counterattack has just begun! Wait until I get Red Lotus’ true inheritance in the River of Time, I will completely destroy your fate Gu. In the previous life, you successfully restored fate Gu, that was because the depths of your foundation surpassed my expectation. There were too few people understanding the situation in the other four regions, many rank eight experts were even secretly restrained by you. There were also many Gu Immortals who were living naively, not knowing the fatal threat of fate Gu. All of you... just you wait!”

The moment this speech was posted, the Gu Immortal world of the five regions fell into temporary silence.

Shortly afterwards, the public sentiment erupted like a volcano and poured like a flood!

“Oh heavens, Fang Yuan is directly provoking Heavenly Court, how many years has it been since something like this happened?”

“Years? Even throughout history, such cases only appeared a few times!”

“Few people can do this, and even fewer people can pose a threat to Heavenly Court!”

“Although Fang Yuan only has rank seven cultivation, he can already match rank eight. He has annexed Lang Ya blessed land and has a large number of variant human Gu Immortal subordinates as well as a rank eight Immortal Gu House! The even more terrifying thing is he seems to possess precise information about Red Lotus’ true inheritance, if he really obtains the Demon Venerable’s true inheritance... Terrifying!”

“If this continues, Fang Yuan will become a new Demon Venerable!”

“Sigh, the common people are innocent, is there going to be a Demon Venerable wrecking havoc again?”

“We cannot lightly make an enemy out of Fang Yuan. Look at this video properly, all the killer moves of Heavenly Court’s two Immortal Gu Houses were broken by Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan had clearly experienced them in the previous life and found the countermeasures in this life. The combination of Spring Autumn Cicada and an otherworldly demon is too unreasonable!”

The discussions gradually started to contain fear.

Fear towards Fang Yuan.

Previously, Gu Immortal mostly felt wariness, hatred, and envy towards Fang Yuan.

But now, fear began to gradually take over the other emotions.

The Gu Immortals already knew Fang Yuan could not be provoked easily, but now, Fang Yuan could not be provoked even more! Even a colossal super force like Heavenly Court, the strongest righteous path force in the five regions, was repeatedly wrecked by Fang Yuan and their prestige was ruthlessly stepped on! Even now, they had no way to deal with Fang Yuan!

Southern Border, Wu clan.

Wu Yong’s gaze was gloomy: “Fang Yuan... Heavenly Court...”

Chi clan.

Chi Qu You’s expression was ashen, he finally realized the possibility: “The traitor has not been found, maybe... this is the information revealed in the previous life. If I did transactions with Fang Yuan in the previous life as well, doesn’t that mean — I am the traitor?”

Thinking of this, Chi Qu You felt stunned himself.

Western Desert, Tang clan.

The first supreme elder and second supreme elder were in a secret discussion.

“This demon Fang Yuan is becoming increasingly stronger. If his relationship with our clan is exposed, Heavenly Court will definitely eliminate us.”

“We have already collaborated with Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan is so strong now that we cannot stop this connection, we will have to be even more careful. If he truly becomes a Demon Venerable in the future, it will also be an excellent opportunity for our Tang clan to grow.”

Xi clan.

Xi clan’s first supreme elder, who was cultivating in a secret room, laughed: “Interesting. Heavenly Court wants the whole world to go against Fang Yuan. Meanwhile, Fang Yuan also expressed the weakness of Heavenly Court and its hidden threat, hoping that Gu Immortals of the four regions would jointly attack Heavenly Court.”

“Forget about him for now, I will continue my closed cultivation. After my cultivation progresses further, let’s see how the heroes of the world will act in front of my sword.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1808 Plotting, Pursuing Dao

Heavenly Court, immortal graveyard.

An inexplicable change was occurring.

A lump of fire appeared, it was very small at first but after a while, the fire expanded rapidly, dying the sky of the immortal graveyard red.

This fire illuminated the surroundings, attracting Fairy Zi Wei and other Heavenly Court members’ attention.

Fairy Zi Wei immediately rushed to the entrance of the immortal graveyard and saw that the fire had grown even brighter, there were even specks of silver light in the fire, like countless diamonds adorning a red curtain.

The fire dissipated and an aged Gu Immortal wearing a large crimson robe walked out from the depths of the immortal graveyard.

The diamond-like lights gathered together and inside the gentle light was an old man who slowly moved forward in a wooden wheelchair.

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes shone happily, she recognized these two elderly Gu Immortals.

That crimson robed elderly man was Li Huang, a fire path great expert. And the elderly man on the wooden wheelchair was Gu Liu Ru, a time path great expert.

“Junior Zi Wei pays respects to both seniors.” Fairy Zi Wei bowed as she greeted.

Gu Liu Ru nodded without speaking. He was sickly pale and thin as a skeleton. He had a rough life experience and the lower half of his body was paralyzed with no cure available, thus he had a cold and detached disposition.

Li Huang spoke: “We did not wake up for no reason. Heavenly Court must need our strength, how is the situation now?”

Fairy Zi Wei felt ashamed as she informed the two of them about the current situation.

“Fang Yuan? I did not think such a demon would appear in the world!”

“Hmph, throughout the ages, there has always been chaos and disorder during the coming of a great era. But this demon is too savage in his rampage. The fundamental cause is that he is the seed planted by Red Lotus Demon Venerable.”

Li Huang snorted coldly, his expression was of anger and dissatisfaction.

Gu Liu Ru’s expression was cold like ice as he said: “Fortunately, the overall situation is still in our control. When fate Gu is restored in a few years, Heavenly Court will be in an invincible position, by then, even if Fang Yuan is stronger, he won’t be able to make a huge impact.”

He then said to Fairy Zi Wei: “You are a wisdom path Gu Immortal, it is right for you to lead Heavenly Court. If you have any tasks for us old timers, there is no need to hold back.”

Joy appeared on Fairy Zi Wei’s face: “Seniors, you have just woken up, you should first rest and recover your battle strength by equipping yourselves with Immortal Gu.”

“We have lost control over the River of Time and are currently constructing time path Immortal Gu Houses without regard for the costs. We also need to lay down the river suppression lotus sealing formation in the River of Time. Seniors, it would be great if you could guard the River of Time.”

Gu Liu Ru and Li Huang glanced at each other, before the former nodded while the latter laughed: “So be it. Let us deal with this Little Demon Venerable!”

Based on just battle strength, Li Huang was stronger than Gu Liu Ru, but Fairy Zi Wei was more excited about Gu Liu Ru’s appearance.

This time path great expert had woken up at just the right time, filling up the gap of Heavenly Court in the time path aspect and relieving Fairy Zi Wei’s urgent issue!

“But Fang Yuan has been reborn, does he know about the awakening of these seniors?”

Fairy Zi Wei frowned again when she thought of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan could rebirth, it was extremely troublesome to deal with such an enemy, it would always make others doubt their decisions.

Fairy Zi Wei did not know that in the previous life, only Li Huang had woken up. Gu Liu Ru had woken up in the final period when Longevity Heaven attacked Heavenly Court. At that time, Gu Liu Ru fought Hei Fan to a deadlock, he was finally killed by Liu Liu Liu’s sneak attack.

Fang Yuan had made an early attack, destroying Eternal Yacht and Present and Past Pavilion, also killing Qing Ye, the ink effect caused Gu Liu Ru to awaken in advance.

This rank eight great expert would definitely be a huge obstruction to Fang Yuan in an environment like the River of Time.

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Central Continent.

Fang Yuan’s divine sense covered this marsh.

There was highly fertile silt here. There was also a clear knee-deep river above the layer of silt.

This was the resource point Fang Yuan had just constructed.

The marsh was vast and boundless.

A bud of the desolate plant extreme marsh flower, as big as a house, could be seen every few kilometers.

When the extreme marsh flower bloomed, it looked like a trumpet with its petals connected. They were primarily white with a few parts bearing slight hints of pink.

Strands of white mist started rising slowly from the pistils of the extreme marsh flowers.

Extreme marsh flower mist was the food of regret Gu.

Feeding regret Gu was slightly troublesome as its food was hard to store. The extreme marsh flower mist needed to be fresh, so the best method was to construct a corresponding resource point in the immortal aperture.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan had constructed this marsh but that was after obtaining regret Gu.

In this life, he was extremely wealthy so he constructed it in advance. Although he had not obtained regret Gu yet, it was a preparation for the future; when he obtained regret Gu, there would be no need to worry about its food.

Fang Yuan solved the food issue of even regret Gu, which he had yet to obtain in advance. He was already able to self-sufficiently provide food for all his Immortal Gu.

Not long ago, Fang Yuan had even created a resource point for the rank eight Immortal Gu Addition that he plundered from Ba Shi Ba. He marked a special sea area in Mini Eastern Sea, in which he introduced another whole new group of water spiders to produce sufficient food for the rank eight Immortal Gu Addition.

Naturally, these water spiders were extorted from Southern Border’s righteous path.

Fang Yuan had already annexed most of the immortal apertures of the Southern Border captives and had even searched their souls until there was nothing left, but Southern Border’s righteous path did not know this and accepted Fang Yuan’s extortion obediently.

It was like how Heavenly Court did not know the true inheritance left by Red Lotus Demon Venerable to Fang Yuan did not have the direct method to destroy fate Gu, but they still feared for the worst and used all their strength to redeem the situation in the River of Time.

There was a famous phrase on Earth about the art of war: the highest form of generalship is to cut down the enemy’s plans, the next best is to cut them off from allies, the next in order is to cut down the enemy’s army in the field, and the worst policy of all is to besiege walled cities.

These were wise words!

When people were young, they only cared about fighting. But after growing up, they would gradually realize: fighting was only a third rate method to reach one’s target and get benefits.

There was high risk in an intense battle and the benefits are also not fixed, often, there would be damage to both sides. This method could only be used when there was no other choice.

Fang Yuan leaned towards planning and plotting when he did things. He was not a brute, but when there was a necessity to fight, he would pick up his blade with no fear or cowardice.

Naturally, there was a fundamental difference between the Gu Master world and Earth — through cultivation, an individual’s strength could surpass the collective force of a group or organization!

Therefore, a person like Spectral Soul Demon Venerable could exist.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable only used one method — Kill!

Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill!

Slaughter everything, destroy heaven, decimate earth.

Heads roll and blood flow.

He did not counter the enemy’s plans nor did he cut them off from allies, but he still obtained supreme success.

Why?

Because he cultivated his own Dao!

This was his understanding of heaven and earth, it was his understanding towards himself.

Every person he killed would further increase his perseverance towards improving himself and deepen his understanding of heaven and earth, both of these fueled the growth of his soul path attainment level.

And the growth in his attainment level greatly increased his strength.

If this was Earth and someone did this, they would be seeking death.

In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, he was already more than a hundred years old when he suddenly comprehended this principle.

From then on, he started to think: What was his Dao? Or rather, what kind of path could he create?

Even now, he did not have a perfect answer to this question.

Over four hundred years had passed since then, he had reborn several times and was still trying to find out the answer.

He only had a vague and blurry direction.

He moved and rolled about in the darkness.

And in this darkness, there were too many hardships, dangers and ferocious beasts that wanted to swallow him whole.

Fang Yuan was clear: Among these ferocious beasts, Heavenly Court was currently the biggest and the strongest one.

He needed to exert all his strength to have a chance of contending with this ferocious beast, escaping from its hunt, and to continue walking on his path.

Both Fang Yuan and Fairy Zi Wei had repeatedly exposed information about each other, hoping to borrow the strength of other Gu Immortals to deal with the other. There was no winner in this fight. It was like the fight between a lion and a tiger, the bloody smell attracting countless hyenas.

He seemed to have an impressive reputation but there were turbulent undercurrents surging in the dark, many people thinking of ways to deal with him and Spring Autumn Cicada.

No one liked the presence of such a threat!

Spring Autumn Cicada was not all-powerful, it was only a rank seven Gu and there were too many ways to restrain it.

Even Lang Ya blessed land had many methods to subdue Spring Autumn Cicada.

In truth, Fang Yuan was rather surprised at Heavenly Court not having any effective methods against Spring Autumn Cicada.

The Little Demon Venerable title seemed to show unlimited prospects, but it concealed deep killing intent. This was reminding the world that if Fang Yuan was not killed and he grew up to be a Demon Venerable, the future would be bleak for everyone!

Fang Yuan might have obtained victory in the River of Time and gotten hold of the initiative. But he was clear that this was only a small strategical victory and it could not put a dent on Heavenly Court's overall strategy.

Just like the game of chess, he only made a single good move and although he turned from passive to active which was worth celebrating, Heavenly Court still had the overall control of the game. And this Heavenly Court, that had countless years of accumulation, was the chess piece that was placed by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable over three million years ago.

“With Heavenly Court's foundation, the ink effect should appear again and some powerful characters might awaken in the immortal graveyard.”

“The most important thing is still to use every second and do everything I can to increase my strength.”

Fang Yuan did not become prideful due to victory, his joy lasted a very short moment before he dived into cultivating once again.

It was not an exaggeration to say that he was making full use of every second!

Soul cultivation progressed smoothly. Fang Yuan's soul stably progressed from one desolate soul to three desolate soul, five desolate soul, eight desolate soul... and finally, broke through to ten desolate soul.

Five restriction profound light qi was already practised to the point of proficiency. Fang Yuan even modified it, although this modification was rather small, it allowed Fang Yuan to alter the method and suit his habits so that he would have ease when activating it.

Fang Yuan began to practise other killer moves, like Ba Shi Ba's consecutive hit method.

In this period of time, he went out frequently and used jade flow pearl to make early moves, obtaining many resources from newly formed Earth Trenches.

Among them, rank seven earth vein Immortal Gu was one significant harvest.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1809 Seeing Heavenly Cour

This earth vein Immortal Gu looked like an earthworm, but when it was held, it was quite heavy and did not give a slippery or cold feeling, instead it was warm and gentle.

It was exquisite and translucent like brown amber.

With this rank seven earth path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan could construct the five regional limit formation.

Regarding the five regional limit formation’s modification, Fang Yuan’s time path clone had smoothly completed it. There was the support of the light of wisdom as well as Fang Yuan’s formation path and rule path foundation being deep enough.

The new five regional limit formation added earth vein Immortal Gu as well as Formation Spirit and Formation Flag.

With the Formation Spirit, Fang Yuan would have a powerful assistant to help him control the whole formation and notice any signs of disturbance.

With Formation Flag, Fang Yuan could move the whole formation directly from his immortal aperture to the outside or move back the formation from the outside five regions to his immortal aperture.

The immemorial year beast fishing formation was activated all the time and the progress was stable.

The year essence pool already had over twenty immemorial year beasts with as many as seven species.

Over half the species were gathered, but Fang Yuan was unsure if all the species could be gathered, this depended on luck.

To strengthen his luck, Fang Yuan commanded hairy man Gu Immortals to begin refining luck path Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan had an enormous amount of Immortal Gu, already passing one hundred, but he did not have many luck path Immortal Gu.

Since he had the luck path true inheritance, once luck path Immortal Gu were refined, he could immediately put the inherited methods to use.

Moreover, Heavenly Court’s foundation in luck path was shallow.

Thus, the effect of raising his strength in terms of luck path would show obvious yield.

As for luck path immortal materials, although they were rare and hard to gather, Fang Yuan had the Southern Border righteous path to extort materials from.

The moment these luck path immortal materials were gathered, Fang Yuan made the hairy man Gu Immortals start the Gu refinement.

Because they were not advancing the ranks of the Immortal Gu and were only refining rank six luck path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan could bear the losses even if the refinement failed.

He had enough foundation currently and was extremely wealthy, an enormous difference compared to his previous life at the same time period.

As for the practice of immortal killer moves, five restriction profound light qi could be put aside now. Although he did not practice time cutting edge, Fang Yuan had gained many new insights.

He had a clearer understanding of the true essence of this move now: This move was like an eraser, it could use time path power to erase the enemy but also consumed the user at the same time.

The flaw of memory erasing by this move could not be removed. This was determined by the structure of time cutting edge, once this flaw was removed, the whole killer move’s framework would be overturned.

If that happened, time cutting edge’s extremely powerful offensive characteristic would also disappear completely.

Fang Yuan had no choice but to accept this flaw.

The main body made a lot of progress, his clones’ progress was even bigger.

The pure dream clone’s soul was gradually transforming and matching the body.

Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone had already advanced to become a rank six dragonman Gu Immortal and possessed a high grade blessed land.

Fang Yuan began to spare more time towards exploring dream realms.

Over this period of time, he and Chi Qu You had carried out many transactions, and there were already a lot of dream realms in his immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan’s soul left the body and entered a qi path dream realm.

His vision changed, and at the next moment, he was standing on top of a hill. Fog filled his sight and chilling wind blew around him.

He looked at himself, he was a rank six Gu Immortal and was in a miserable state. His body was filled with injuries with some wounds still bleeding.

“What is this?” Just as Fang Yuan was pondering, there was a rustle of wind behind him, the fog dissipated and three inkman Gu Immortals appeared.

“Wei Yu Shu, where do you think you’re going?!”

“Die!!!”

Three killer moves slashed towards Fang Yuan.

This change was too sudden, Fang Yuan had yet to familiarize himself with his Gu worms when he already fell into a life and death situation!

Boom!

At the next moment, his body exploded into pieces, dying miserably.

Fang Yuan exited the dream realm and returned to reality.

“I did not expect I would encounter such an obstacle immediately after entering the dream realm, and even dying.”

He inspected the injuries on his soul.

What was beyond his expectation was that there were only light injuries on his soul, which could be healed with one hundred guts Gu.

“Looks like after my soul advanced to desolate soul, the soul’s quality changed and can bear stronger backlash from dream realms.”

Fang Yuan rested for a while before continuing to explore the dream realm.

It was the same dream, Fang Yuan immediately inspected his Gu worms.

He only had one Immortal Gu, it had the shape of a cockroach and was grey-white, like the texture of a stone, but was quite light. It gave a cold and slightly rough feeling to the touch.

Fang Yuan quickly found the details of this Gu in his memories: “This is qi flow Gu.”

A rank six qi flow Immortal Gu.

Besides this, there were a large number of rank five qi path mortal Gu.

There were also three immortal materials; black iron qi, orchid vitality qi, and moving dragon qi.

Fang Yuan was slightly stunned: “Qi flow Gu only has support characteristics, how can I block the pursuing troops with just these mortal Gu?”

Just as he was thinking, a loud shout sounded from behind him.

“Wei Yu Shu, where do you think you’re going?!”

“Die!!!”

Bam.

Fang Yuan was once again cut into pieces.

Returning to reality, Fang Yuan pondered while treating his injuries: “Based on the current situation, it is obvious that I need to activate immortal killer moves to be able to resist the three pursuing troops.”

“Qi path immortal killer move huh...”

Fang Yuan’s qi path attainment level was low, but he had plenty of resources.

Even without Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance and Giant Sun’s true inheritance, Shadow Sect’s true inheritance contained many inheritances and had records of a lot of qi path killer moves. Lang Ya Sect also had many in its collection.

Even if he did not have these, just based on the enormous number of qi path Immortal Gu recipes in Lang Ya Sect and his refinement path attainment level, Fang Yuan could refine immortal killer moves.

On top of this rich theoretical foundation, Fang Yuan used the light of wisdom and soon thought of a killer move that could resolve the first obstacle of the dream realm.

However, he was a stranger to qi path killer moves.

Therefore, he began to practice them.

Naturally, he did not have qi flow Immortal Gu, but he could more or less imitate its moves and practice them.

When he returned to the dream realm, Fang Yuan finally had confidence.

After trying several times, Fang Yuan activated the killer move successfully.

His whole body was covered in a pitch-black armor, the pursuing three Gu Immortals could no longer kill him instantly.

“Wei Yu Shu, you dare to retaliate!”

“A mere slave has such guts!”

“You offended your master, you deserve to die! Kill him, mash him into pulp.”

The three inkman Gu Immortals shouted as they surrounded and attacked Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was able to resist for a while before he was killed by the three.

Coming out of the dream realm, Fang Yuan summarized his experience: “Looks like I need to prioritize escape instead of fighting them.”

In the next attempt, he did not use the previous moves but instead changed to a movement immortal killer move.

He failed once but succeeded in the next attempt.

This success brought Fang Yuan to the second stage of the dream realm.

Guh.

Before he had time to size up his surroundings, he coughed out a mouthful of blood.

“I am heavily injured and the immortal materials have been expended greatly.” Fang Yuan’s mind sank slightly.

Although he had only qi flow Immortal Gu, he could use this Immortal Gu as the core and use the three immortal materials as supplementary to activate immortal killer moves.

Black iron qi could transform into a dark full body armor.

Orchid vitality qi could heal him.

Moving dragon qi was used for movement.

In the first stage of the dream realm, Fang Yuan had escaped the pursuit of the three Gu Immortals by using moving dragon qi.

Currently, Fang Yuan had entered the second stage and immediately discovered that moving dragon qi was expended by over half, iron qi was expended by half, while orchid vitality qi was intact with no expenditure.

“This situation is not good, let’s heal first.” Fang Yuan silently prepared and activated an immortal killer move — Orchid Breath.

As immortal essence was transferred to activate the killer move, orchid vitality qi was instantly expended by a small portion.

Fang Yuan gulped and his cheeks suddenly puffed up, he opened his mouth and breathed out.

The smell of his breath was fragrant and full of vitality, it was like a dense light-green fog that quickly covered his whole body.

When the fog disappeared after a while, Fang Yuan’s injuries were mostly recovered.

“Where should I go now?” Fang Yuan felt troubled.

Currently, he was in a cave which looked like it might be in a mountain or underground. The cave was long and had many paths that extended in all directions.

Fang Yuan had just walked a few steps when he saw an inkman Gu Immortal coming from the front.

This inkman Gu Immortal saw Fang Yuan and was dazed at first before shouting in joy: “Wei Yu Shu! So you were here. Hahaha, this is great, you actually ran into me, this merit is mine. The saying is not wrong, arriving at the right time is better than arriving early!”

Fang Yuan was also surprised, this inkman Gu Immortal was not one of the three Gu Immortals in the first stage. He was someone new. More importantly, he was not a rank six, but a rank seven variant human Gu Immortal.

The rank seven inkman Gu Immortal pounced towards Fang Yuan, how could Fang Yuan be his opponent, all his bones were broken as he fell limply on the ground.

The inkman Gu Immortal sneered while looking down at Fang Yuan: “Wei Yu Shu, weren’t you so wild? You never expected to fall in my hands, right? Hahaha, to tell the truth, even I had not expected this. You lived so extravagantly and were doted on by the princess but you were actually stupid enough to run away, you really brought it upon yourself!!”

At the next moment, Fang Yuan’s soul returned to reality with injuries.

“This means even if I am captured and am not killed, it is considered a failure.”

“Looks like this dream realm is an escape dream realm.”

“In that situation, there is indeed no way to contend against a rank seven Gu Immortal.”

“Again!”

Fang Yuan entered the second stage of the dream realm.

He tried many times and failed repeatedly. He discovered there were many inkman Gu Immortals chasing after him, five rank six Gu Immortals and three rank sevens.

They were all inkman Gu Immortals.

Adding on the information revealed by that rank seven Gu Immortal, Fang Yuan had a rough guess about the time period of the dream realm.

It was not the Remote Antiquity Era but Olden Antiquity Era.

Variant humans were still powerful.

There were many Gu Immortals chasing him and they all had plentiful methods. Fang Yuan failed again and again but he was not discouraged, and soon, he found an opportunity to escape.

Inside this mountain cave tunnel, there were several qi path immortal materials. One of them, autumn scale concealment qi was the biggest help to him.

Finally, Fang Yuan used the experience from his failed attempts and collected the immortal materials to activate a killer move, he smoothly passed the second stage.

At the third stage, Fang Yuan discovered to his surprise that the dream realm progressed automatically and he could not interfere at all.

He was collapsed on the ground.

In front of him was a beautiful female inkman immortal.

Her body was overflowing with rank eight aura and her gaze towards Fang Yuan contained anger, hatred, as well as love and pity.

“Wei Yu Shu, when I bought you back then, you were only a kid who did not even know about cultivation!”

“I taught you step by step and raised you into a Gu Immortal. Was it my protection and indulgence that allowed you to have such guts?”

“Tell me, why did you betray me?”

“Have I, Princess Ye Tong, mistreated you?! You lived in luxury and peace, you only needed to serve me and I have never treated you cruelly.”

The rank eight female inkman immortal asked sharply.

Wei Yu Shu smiled sadly: “But, even if I lived a much better life, I was still only your slave!”

The female inkman immortal was furious: “What is bad about becoming my slave? Many inkmen want to live your life but don’t get such a chance!”

Wei Yu Shu was dazed for a moment before he spoke slowly: “I did not think it was bad before, but when I heard there was a Heavenly Court in this world where humans live...”

“So, you want to run to Heavenly Court?” The female inkman immortal sneered: “You are too naive, you actually believe in the temptation of these devils?!”

Wei Yu Shu closed his eyes, his voice was hoarse: “It is not that I believe it, but I want to believe it.”

The female inkman immortal’s gaze turned slightly dazed and her anger slowly dissipated.

She recalled the beautiful memories of the past, how she had spoiled this foreign race’s slave, but those days would never return.

She said regretfully: “Yu Shu, I have pardoned your mistakes many times, but I cannot do it this time. If I pardon you anymore, it will damage the dignity of my race. If I had not personally come out, you would have actually escaped. My effort in raising you was not in vain after all. The truth is, this place is very close to the sphere of influence under Heavenly Court.”

These words seemed to have injected a gust of strength in Wei Yu Shu, he suddenly opened his eyes and stared at the female inkman immortal.

He begged: “I don’t have any wish before my death, but I only have one thought, please let me climb out of this cave and take one glance at Heavenly Court.”

The female inkman immortal was silent for a while before sighing: “Alright.”

She moved to the side, Wei Yu Shu used his bloodied hands to slowly crawl out with all his strength.

He was breathing roughly, his sweat and blood mixed together. it was a short distance, but he had to spend a good while to move to the cave entrance.

This cave entrance was located at the middle part of the mountain, it could see far and wide.

He looked ahead with hope.

However, he only saw dense mist.

“It is really unfortunate, but mist is a common occurrence around mountains.” The female inkman immortal walked from behind: “But even if there was no mist, you won’t see Heavenly Court. I said this is only a place near the sphere of influence under Heavenly Court. But it is only a barren land.”

Wei Yu Shu, however, seemed to have obtained utmost satisfaction.

He lied on the ground powerlessly with no strength left to raise his head again.

But his eyes shone brightly: “No, I saw it, I saw Heavenly Court.”

“You...” The female inkman immortal was visibly moved.

The moment he finished saying this, Wei Yu Shu’s last breath was used up, he died.

The female inkman immortal fell into silence, she stared ahead at the direction of Heavenly Court in silence.

Her expression carried an unprecedented solemness.

“Heavenly Court!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1810 Extorting Dream Realms

Fang Yuan was an audience throughout the whole third stage of the qi path dream realm.

When this third stage was complete, the whole qi path dream realm also disappeared, Fang Yuan’s exploration was completed.

“This dream realm was difficult at the beginning and easy at the end, I had to accumulate experience by going through so many failures in the first two stages, even unravel dream was not too useful.”

“But at the last stage, I directly passed it without having to do anything.”

This was the most comfortable experience for Fang Yuan, being an audience. If he could ‘observe’ every dream realm like this, how wonderful would it be.

“This dream realm’s time period was not the Remote Antiquity Era but Olden Antiquity Era.”

“Heavenly Court...”

Fang Yuan’s gaze was slightly complicated.

Even though he was Heavenly Court’s archenemy, he had to admit the greatness of Heavenly Court.

But shortly afterwards, only a chilly light remained in his eyes: “No matter how great they are, as long as they block my path, I can only use all my strength to destroy them.”

With the successful exploration of this dream realm, Fang Yuan advanced to qi path grandmaster!

The progress was quite big since Fang Yuan had no attainment in qi path previously.

“No wonder that Wei Yu Shu could receive constant special treatment from the Inkman Princess. One of the main reasons must be his talent in qi path.”

Fang Yuan’s biggest realization from this exploration was not related to the dream realm or Heavenly Court, but his soul.

Desolate soul!

After forming a desolate soul, exploring dream realms became much easier.

If it was a human soul, the injuries from this exploration would definitely be much heavier. Although guts Gu could heal the injuries, it was bound to affect the efficiency of the exploration.

Fang Yuan had a flash of inspiration: “Perhaps when I use Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body to explore dream realms, the injuries on the soul will be even lighter than now.”

Just like how Fang Yuan cultivated inside Luo Po Valley using Luo Po wind. Once Fang Yuan’s soul was inside a physical body, the power of Luo Po wind would fall sharply.

If Fang Yuan used a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body to carry his soul to explore dream realms, his soul should be tightly protected by the physical body.

A normal body could not block the power of dream realms. But the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body was different.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan did not know the way to enter dreams with the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body.

If he directly sent the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body into a dream realm, it would move freely inside without any disturbance from the dream realm. But at the same time, it was unable to immerse in the dream, let alone explore the dream realm.

“Next, let’s explore this ice and snow path dream realm.” Fang Yuan moved his gaze.

Fang Yuan had already stored many dream realms inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The qi path dream realm just now was the biggest and it was gone now. This ice and snow path dream realm took the place as the biggest dream realm.

Besides this dream realm, there were also dream realms of qi path, sword path, wood path, and so on.

“I have desolate soul, my efficiency in exploring dream realms is greatly increased. I felt these dream realms were enough before but it looks somewhat insufficient now.”

“Moreover, the dream realms are of different types. Hehe, this is a petty act by Chi Qu You.”

Fang Yuan knew clearly.

Although Chi Qu You continued to transact with Fang Yuan, he could secretly control the formation and because he had obtained many dream path research results, he could distinguish the types of dream realm roughly.

So, when he transacted with Fang Yuan, he was controlling the goods, giving Fang Yuan scattered dream realms of different paths.

There was not even one human path dream realm that Fang Yuan truly wanted. There were also not many dream realms of qi path or ice and snow path.

Yet these dream realms were all useful to Fang Yuan.

Or even time path dream realms or refinement path dream realms, as long as they were not dream realms which he had already explored before in the previous life.

After all, Fang Yuan’s highest attainment level was at quasi-supreme grandmaster, there was still space to advance.

Fang Yuan did not refuse any of these dream realms as these dream realms could increase his attainment levels. Moreover, there was no disadvantage in increasing the attainment levels of all his paths, it was even a good thing as he would not need to worry about this when annexing immortal apertures of related paths in the future.

While Fang Yuan was exploring dream realms, the hairy man Gu Immortals had succeeded in their Gu refinement.

“Lord Fang Yuan, we have refined this Immortal Gu.” Sixth Hair handed over an Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu resembled a water droplet that flickered with dazzling lights like a blue diamond, it was smooth and cold when touched.

This was rank six time anchor Immortal Gu.

Although Fang Yuan prioritized refining luck path Immortal Gu, time anchor Immortal Gu was also on the list of Gu to be refined.

The number of Immortal Gu Fang Yuan possessed surpassed one hundred, but he had enough resources and wealth to raise them, so the more Immortal Gu he had, the better.

He had come in touch with time anchor Immortal Gu long ago, it was once the Immortal Gu of Eastern Sea immortal zombie Su Bai Man, it could anchor onto a certain period in time.

Su Bai Man died and time anchor Immortal Gu was acquired by Shadow Sect, but was destroyed in the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain.

Now, Fang Yuan had ordered hairy man Gu Immortals to refine it.

Time anchor Immortal Gu could coordinate with Spring Autumn Cicada to form a killer move that could let Fang Yuan rebirth to a specific period of time.

This killer move was very valuable.

For instance, Fang Yuan could mark this current time and continue to explore dream realms without regard for anything else. At a certain stage, he could use this killer move to return to this time again and continue exploring other dream realms.

His attainment levels in the paths would remain!

Fang Yuan could use this move to continuously increase his attainment levels.

“Unfortunately, I cannot use spring autumn success if I use this killer move. Without a hundred percent success rate, there will be a chance of failure and if I bump into it, it will be akin to suicide, I will end up as the biggest joke.”

Fang Yuan’s time path attainment level might be at quasi-supreme grandmaster and he had the light of wisdom, but the problem here did not originate from himself.

“If I am not wrong, since fate Gu is injured and not destroyed, it can restrict the effectiveness of the killer move made by merging time anchor Immortal Gu into spring autumn success.”

Using Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth was using a loophole of this world. This would disrupt events and change the past, influencing the balance of the world, heaven’s will would not allow such a thing to happen.

For the current Fang Yuan, just using Time Anchor with Spring Autumn Cicada was just enough to use this loophole. Spring autumn success could also make use of this loophole.

But the hole was too small for him to use the both together.

“Looks like only when fate Gu is completely destroyed can Time Anchor effectively merge with spring autumn success.”

The killer moves in Red Lotus’ true inheritance were similar. Even if the killer moves could link to form an even greater might, it did not show a good result when put into practice.

The dragonman clone had already passed one heavenly tribulation and a dozen earthly calamities, his cultivation was rising sharply.

To quicken dragonman clone’s cultivation, Fang Yuan used time path killer move to hasten the rate of time of the dragonman clone’s immortal aperture to the limit.

Before each calamity and tribulation, Fang Yuan would deduce the details, thus being well prepared for it.

Because of Fang Yuan’s powerful strength, these calamities and tribulations possessed no threat and were like fireworks ceremonies that increased the dao marks of Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone.

Fang Yuan had time path methods, and more importantly, he had exposing heavenly secret which made the calamities and tribulations sent by heaven’s will ineffective. With the help of his robust strength, these calamities and tribulations were impotent.

At present, Fang Yuan could not only increase a Gu Master’s cultivation level, he could even rapidly increase the cultivation level of a Gu Immortal.

But this method could not be advocated.

Because the cost was quite high.

The time path killer move to accelerate the immortal aperture’s time flow was a rank eight killer move and expended a large amount of rank eight immortal essence.

Exposing heavenly secret was also not a killer move that could be activated by ordinary wisdom path Gu Immortals.

Adding on the expenses to undergo each tribulation, it only could produce at most a rank seven dragonman clone.

The investment was not proportional to the yield.

If not for Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan would be reluctant to develop the dragonman clone like this.

Southern Border’s Beacon Towers were constructed everywhere. And Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals began to protest, asking for Fang Yuan to first release some captives to show his sincerity.

Thereupon, Fang Yuan released Yi Yang.

Yi clan was dumbstruck after obtaining Yi Yang.

Because Fang Yuan had only released Yi Yang’s body, his soul and immortal aperture were absent!

Just a body was the same as a corpse, what use could it have?!

Southern Border’s righteous path were furious but were helpless against Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan persuaded them: The body is only the first step. It shows my sincerity, it is your turn to show sincerity now.

Southern Border’s righteous path felt that the future was bleak: If Fang Yuan were to disassemble the captives and extort them, how much could he extort and how long would this extortion last?

Thereupon, they began to make a din.

Fang Yuan’s attitude changed to become tough and indifferent, directly threatening every clan: If you want me to release the captives, I will release them to your enemies. Moreover, I will humiliate your clan’s Gu Immortals through indescribable ways and make sure he or she would never be able to raise their head in the future.

Fang Yuan had done this in the previous life, he was even more at ease and familiar with this process this time.

Southern Border’s righteous path shamefully gave in.

They could do nothing, especially Ba clan and Xia clan, these pitiful clans, had their first supreme elders captured by Fang Yuan.

The other clans had also lost important battle strengths of theirs, if they did not save the captives, they would lose the support of their people.

Fang Yuan then demanded Southern Border’s righteous path to use dream realms as the chips to exchange for the captives.

Southern Border’s righteous path was not willing at first since dream realms represented the future!

But Fang Yuan guaranteed: I am not asking for a lot and won’t empty this place, I will even leave behind most of them for Southern Border’s righteous path.

To show even more sincerity, he was willing to release the body of a Gu Immortal captive for every dream realm exchange.

The Southern Border righteous path forces were helpless and could only accept this proposal.

Chi Qu You felt a chill inside, he knew this was Fang Yuan’s retaliation and also a warning.

Thereupon, the extortion of Southern Border’s righteous path entered the next stage.

Fang Yuan did not go back on his promise, he released a captive’s body every time he obtained a batch of dream realms. These dream realms were much larger than the ones he secretly transacted with Chi Qu You. Moreover, Fang Yuan had carefully chosen their paths as well.

Fairy Zi Wei was extremely worried and tried many ways to ruin these transactions, but none of them succeeded.

“It is time for another battle.” Fang Yuan calculated the time and rode Myriad Year Flying Warship into the River of Time.

He took the initiative to start the second battle in the River of Time, but he did not know that this time, the time path great expert, Gu Liu Ru, was waiting for him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1811 Daybreak Sword

River of Time.

Not long after Fang Yuan entered with Myriad Year Flying Warship, Gu Liu Ru intercepted him.

“You are Fang Yuan? I am Heavenly Court’s Gu Liu Ru, I came to take your life.” Gu Liu Ru was sitting in the wooden wheelchair, his face was sickly pale but his eyes were ice cold.

The moment he finished speaking, lumps of grey-white light shot towards Fang Yuan like meteors.

Boom boom boom!

These grey-white lights were completely blocked by Myriad Year Flying Warship.

But Myriad Year Flying Warship also shook intensely from the explosions.

“This person is a time path great expert!”

“His time path killer move is amplified in the River of Time.”

“Heavenly Court’s foundation is indeed unfathomable, it hasn’t even been that long but an old timer has already appeared.”

The immortals inside Myriad Year Flying Warship were stunned.

“I am afraid you don’t have the ability to take my life.” Fang Yuan sneered.

He was slightly surprised at first, but he recognized this person a moment later.

In the previous life’s war, when Longevity Heaven invaded Heavenly Court, Bing Sai Chuan had given all the information of the battle situation in Heavenly Court to Fang Yuan, in order to gain his trust.

And Gu Liu Ru had awakened and participated in that battle.

Therefore, Fang Yuan was able to quickly recognize Gu Liu Ru and even knew about all his methods.

Immediately, Fang Yuan fought Gu Liu Ru with Myriad Year Flying Warship.

The battle ensued, causing astonishing waves in the surroundings.

Gu Liu Ru’s moves were exquisite with many concealed moves within them, he was clearly a time path great expert but used a style similar to wisdom path. In fact, his main cultivation path was time path but he also cultivated wisdom path.

Fang Yuan felt like he was facing a powerful chess player, if he was even a bit careless, he would be dragged into the other’s rhythm and fall into countless traps.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan knew about Gu Liu Ru’s battle style, Myriad Year Flying Warship ran amok and destroyed Gu Liu Ru’s arrangements.

The long battle showed no results; Gu Liu Ru chose to retreat.

“Didn’t you come to take my life?” Fang Yuan shouted coldly from the bow of the ship while giving chase.

Gu Liu Ru sneered: “I am not in a hurry so what are you in a hurry for? Fang Yuan, you are indeed a demon whose name causes a commotion in the world, you have some skills. By the time I return, I will have already deciphered your tiny ship and will then take your life.”

Although half of his body was paralyzed, the wheelchair he was sitting on was a compact Immortal Gu House.

The two wheels moved rapidly on the surface of the river, bringing Gu Liu Ru away at an extremely fast speed.

“Lord Fang Yuan, let us activate torrential charge!” A variant human Gu Immortal suggested.

The killer move torrential charge could change the flow of the surrounding water of the River of Time and help Myriad Year Flying Warship move with an astonishing speed.

“There is no hurry.” Fang Yuan’s eyes flickered with light for a moment before rejecting the suggestion: “Use daybreak sword instead.”

No one had the guts to go against his order, Myriad Year Flying Warship’s aura surged as a blinding white light shot out.

From the silver-white light bubbled the water of the River of Time, from which countless strands of silver light emerged.

The silver rays quickly condensed and took shape, transforming into many sharp sword-like blades that shot out violently.

“What?” Gu Liu Ru had naturally been paying attention to Fang Yuan’s movements and immediately discovered this.

Thoughts surged and clashed in his mind as he rapidly deduced: “This is the first time Fang Yuan has revealed this time path killer move. Truly wondrous! It actually uses the water of the River of Time to extract traces of the sharpest power of time path. Although they are shaped like swords, they are essentially time path dao marks. If I am hit by this, I won’t leave unharmed!”

Gu Liu Ru’s mind jolted slightly, inwardly astonished at the power of this killer move.

The killer move itself was at rank eight level and Fang Yuan had further elevated it by ingeniously using the River of Time, thus increasing its might far beyond ordinary rank eight killer moves.

“This demon’s talents are terrifying. Not only can he use Reverse Flow River, he has even begun researching the River of Time.” Gu Liu Ru’s wariness towards Fang Yuan deepened by another level and his killing intent surged: “I can’t let this demon live! I must use all my strength to get rid of him, otherwise, he will be a huge threat in the future!”

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Silver swords shot towards Gu Liu Ru.

Gu Liu Ru was soon injured, his defensive killer move was unable to block the sharp swords.

“Kill, kill him!” Some variant human Gu Immortals shouted, their morale surging.

After they killed Heavenly Court’s rank eight the previous time, their confidence had soared and they even treated Gu Liu Ru as prey.

With their rank seven cultivation levels, they had hunted down a rank eight great expert of Heavenly Court, this sense of achievement and stimulation shook both their bodies and minds.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily as he ridiculed Gu Liu Ru: “Didn’t you want to take my life? Now it looks like your own aged life is on the line.”

Gu Liu Ru snorted coldly but did not reply, only escaping rapidly. His wheelchair was already riddled with marks.

Fang Yuan laughed: “Scared like a stray dog, you have brought shame to Heavenly Court’s reputation.”

The sharp swords were exquisitely controlled by him, cutting Gu Liu Ru’s robe and flesh.

Gu Liu Ru was silent.

Fang Yuan jeered: “Looks like there are only rubbish like you in Heavenly Court, so much for it being the number one force in the world. It seems Heavenly Court is nothing much after all.”

Gu Liu Ru heard Fang Yuan disgracing Heavenly Court and could not endure anymore: “Shut up! Is Heavenly Court’s greatness something a petty demon like you can understand?”

Swoosh!

Before he even finished speaking, a sword brushed past his head, cutting away most of his hair along with skin, bright-red blood spilled out continuously.

Gu Liu Ru cried out in pain and slammed the wheelchair which burst out with an unprecedented speed.

“Chase!”

“He can’t last for long.”

“That’s right, his Immortal Gu was destroyed by daybreak sword so his wheelchair is starting to break!”

Many of Fang Yuan’s subordinates shouted, their morale was at an all-time high at this moment.

Indeed, Gu Liu Ru’s wheelchair was constantly crumbling, leaving behind a large amount of fragmented Gu worm corpses in its path.

But Fang Yuan restrained his expression and smiled indifferently: “Stop!”

“Ah?!” The immortals were surprised but they did not dare to disobey him and immediately combined their strength to stop Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Gu Liu Ru who was ‘running for his life’ saw this scene, his whole body shook as a stifled feeling rose up in his chest but he was unable to vent it.

Fang Yuan smiled and commented leisurely while sizing up the empty space above the river in front: “What a great time path Gu formation, I wonder which Heavenly Court member is specially waiting for me?”

“You are talking to me, Li Huang!” Li Huang’s voice was transmitted, and at the same time, a large formation revealed itself.

Most of the Gu Immortal subordinates of Fang Yuan were stupefied at this sight, some variant human Gu Immortals only managed to react after a while: “So this was a trap!”

“That old man acted so well!!”

“We almost fell into the trap, if it were not for the wise and mighty Lord Fang Yuan, we might be in a terrible situation.”

Gu Liu Ru slowly flew over with a dark face.

To play this trick, he had intentionally given up on an Immortal Gu and even got injured, blood flowed wildly but they were actually self-inflicted injuries. But who could have thought his mutilation plan became a show that Fang Yuan watched with leisure.

Li Huang said with a deep voice: “Looks like you are familiar with this river suppression lotus sealing formation.”

Fang Yuan admitted openly: “Indeed, I suffered a lot because of this in the previous life.”

“So what if you recognize it, your life ends here.” Gu Liu Ru sneered.

As his voice landed, two Immortal Gu Houses appeared on the left and right of Fang Yuan.

One Immortal Gu House was elegant and grand, the orange roof resembled cranes with their wings spread out. The Immortal Gu House was radiating three layers of autumn light, it was quite extraordinary. It was Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform.

Another Immortal Gu House was a huge lever that was white like jade, there were seven huge sharks in front of the lever, they had sharp teeth and were dragging the huge lever ahead. It was Shark Flow Lever.

Fang Yuan destroyed Present and Past Pavilion, and Eternal Yacht, Heavenly Court was still reconstructing them.

Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and Shark Flow Lever’s constructions had already begun long ago, they were completed recently and were sent to take part in this battle.

Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform blocked Fang Yuan’s retreat route, Gu Liu Ru moved in once again and stalled Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Shark Flow Lever drew a beautiful arc in the periphery of the battlefield and picked up Li Huang before joining the battlefield.

A large battle ensued, causing the river to surge and set off countless violent waves.

“This rank eight Immortal Gu House has such strong defense!” Li Huang and Gu Liu Ru were stunned.

Myriad Year Flying Warship displayed extremely powerful defense, causing all the killer moves of Heavenly Court’s side to be ineffective, it showed a stance of standing on the spot and letting the attacks hit it.

After another while of fighting, Fang Yuan laughed brightly: “Gu Liu Ru, I have seen through your moves!”

Saying so, Myriad Year Flying Warship slammed at the weak point.

“Not good.” Gu Liu Ru’s expression changed. At the next moment, his time path killer move that was hindering Myriad Year Flying Warship broke loudly, the backlash caused him to cough out blood.

“Stop him!” Shark Flow Lever and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform used their killer moves.

“Charge through.” Fang Yuan instructed lightly.

Explosions burst out as Myriad Year Flying Warship charged out of the battlefield with an unreasonable momentum.

“Don’t chase!” Gu Liu Ru quickly stopped Li Huang who wanted to give chase. He said with a dark expression and heavy voice: “This Immortal Gu House is worthy of being at rank eight level, we can’t stop it.”

“Damn it!” Li Huang clenched his fists, he felt quite stifled, he was a fire path Gu Immortal and could only fight in the River of Time with Shark Flow Lever.

If Fang Yuan had fallen into the trap, he would have a platform to display his might, but unfortunately, Fang Yuan did not give him this chance.

However, what made Li Huang even more depressed had yet to come.

Fang Yuan saw Heavenly Court did not give chase and immediately brought Myriad Year Flying Warship to a stop, smiling: “Friends, my Myriad Year Flying Warship still has a move called myriad year hunting, please appraise it.”

Heavenly Court’s side was quickly on guard, they smelled a strange fragrance coming from Myriad Year Flying Warship. Not long later, countless beast roars resounded from every direction and were approaching closer.

“These are... year beasts, ancient year beasts and even immemorial year beasts!”

“There are too many year beasts, they seem to have formed a beast tide!”

Li Huang and Gu Liu Ru felt their heart shaking at this sight.

It turned out Fang Yuan’s rank eight Immortal Gu House was not just about collision, it still had such a terrifying killer move!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1812 Second Battle in the River of Time!

Inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, Hei Lou Lan and the rest felt their hearts throbbing.

The scene was too grand, the year beast army was charging towards them from all directions with a great momentum.

“Such an amazing killer move!”

“No wonder this move was never used inside the sovereign immortal aperture.”

“Too many year beasts are lured in, if it was used inside the sovereign immortal aperture, it would definitely lead to a great catastrophe.”

Heavenly Court’s side was also shaken.

“Myriad Year Flying Warship...” Gu Liu Ru mumbled this name with a serious expression.

Li Huang was also solemn as he spoke: “This is already a beast tide now, its power is actually so great!”

Even a legendary character like him was highly impressed at such a majestic sight.

Fang Yuan showed a slight smile.

He had derived myriad year hunting from immemorial year beast fishing formation and developed it to its limit. With years flow like water Immortal Gu as the core and the amplification from the River of Time, it resulted in an extraordinary power.

Countless beasts roared in the beast tide.

Boom boom boom!

Heavenly Court attacked the year beast tsunami with all kinds of killer moves.

Waves after waves of year beasts were killed, Heavenly Court’s two time path Immortal Gu Houses were both of rank seven level and could match rank eight battle strength, they had no issue in dealing with most of the year beasts.

But the problem was, what was the use in simply killing these year beasts? As long as Myriad Year Flying Warship still existed, there would be an endless flow of year beasts.

This was an enslavement path battle tactic to consume Heavenly Court’s battle strength.

The explosive killer moves that Heavenly Court’s people used expended a lot of immortal essence.

“If we fight with these year beasts, we will be falling into Fang Yuan’s scheme. We need to destroy Myriad Year Flying Warship and this will all end!” A rank seven Gu Immortal inside Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform suggested.

The moment he had finished speaking, a Gu Immortal beside him spoke: “But we already know how sturdy Myriad Year Flying Warship is. How can we adopt the tactic of attacking directly?”

The rank seven Gu Immortal was speechless: “This...”

Immediately after, he heard shouting in his surroundings: “Careful! Fang Yuan is coming over again!!”

Myriad Year Flying Warship’s speed rose, but instead of retreating, it charged directly into Shark Flow Lever.

“Such audacity!” Li Huang who was inside Shark Flow Lever shouted, Fang Yuan actually dared to come back, he clearly looked down on them.

Immediately, Heavenly Court’s two Immortal Gu Houses and time path great expert Gu Liu Ru surrounded and attacked Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Myriad Year Flying Warship took the waves of attacks firmly as countless silver swords shone around it and then shot out like a rainstorm.

Both sides went at each other, the intensity of the battle reached an extreme level immediately.

“Not good! Fang Yuan is trying to delay us so that this year beast army can surround us!” Gu Liu Ru saw Fang Yuan’s plan.

Li Huang smiled coldly: “As long as we wholeheartedly concentrate on breaking through the siege, so what if there are even more of these year beasts?”

Gu Liu Ru sighed: “Don’t forget we still have the river suppression lotus sealing formation behind us.”

Li Huang was stumped, he had forgotten about that in this moment of urgency; after being reminded, his mind jolted as he cursed: “This scoundrel Fang Yuan is truly insidious and vicious!”

Heavenly Court had constructed the river suppression lotus sealing formation painstakingly, it could slowly drift along the surface of the River of Time. There were a large number of Gu Immortals garrisoned inside, controlling their respective formation cores.

If this large formation was destroyed, Heavenly Court's losses would not only be a lot of Immortal Gu but also these rank seven Gu Immortals.

Moreover, they probably would not be able to construct another river suppression lotus sealing formation within a short period of time!

Heavenly Court's situation was quite awkward.

They wanted to use the river suppression lotus sealing formation to ambush Fang Yuan, but it was seen through by Fang Yuan, now, this formation instead became Heavenly Court's weakness and was used by Fang Yuan.

The river suppression lotus sealing formation could float but its speed was very slow, there was no chance of it escaping the current battle.

“Let's first slowly recall the Gu Immortals inside the formation.” Gu Liu Ru said after a while of thinking.

Li Huang, however, said at almost the same time: “Kill Fang Yuan, everything will be settled once we kill this source of evil.”

The two Gu Immortals glanced at each other, at this crucial moment, they had different thoughts.

Roar!

Because of Fang Yuan, the frontmost year beasts reached the battlefield.

At the lead were three immemorial year beasts.

These immemorial year beasts had a tough physique, they endured Heavenly Court's bombardment and charged right into the battlefield of Immortal Gu Houses.

“Seeking death!” Li Huang shouted in fury, he controlled the huge sharks in front of Shark Flow Lever to bite at them.

At the same time, he also activated Shark Flow Lever's killer move, within a dozen breaths of time, two immemorial year beasts were beaten to death one after the other.

“Foolish clowns!” Li Huang's killing intent was leaking when he heard Gu Liu Ru's shout –”Help me quickly!”

Li Huang had gone to deal with the immemorial year beasts, while Gu Liu Ru and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform attacked Myriad Year Flying Warship and brought the battle to a temporary deadlock.

But soon after, Fang Yuan activated daybreak sword and bombarded the river suppression lotus sealing formation.

This formation was strong inside and weak outside, it was originally meant to deal with the stone lotus island, but after this vicious attack by Fang Yuan, it immediately became unstable with many areas crumbling apart.

The Gu Immortals inside the formation cores lost their lives immediately.

With Myriad Year Flying Warship's extremely tough defense, Gu Liu Ru and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform were unable to do any harm to it. They were forced to block Fang Yuan's attacks to defend the retreating Gu Immortals inside the large formation.

As such, Fang Yuan gained the initiative, he could casually attack anywhere he wanted, Gu Liu Ru and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform were in a miserable state, unable to cope with the attacks from all directions.

Li Huang saw that the situation was bad, he quickly detoured and attacked Myriad Year Flying Warship from the back.

But Fang Yuan had no fear!

If it were him alone, he might not be able to pay attention to all sides, but he had many experienced Gu Immortal subordinates inside the vessel to help him. And to get the battle merit of killing another rank eight, their eyes were bloodshot with excitement.

Fang Yuan stood on the bow of the boat from the beginning, regardless of how dangerous and chaotic it was outside, suddenly, he saw a gap in Gu Liu Ru’s defense and activated a killer move.

Spring scissors!

Spring scissors flew out, it was not targeted towards Gu Liu Ru, instead it dodged his obstruction, and ‘snip’, beheaded a female immortal.

Gu Liu Ru’s heart jumped with fright: “Isn’t this Xia Cha’s trump card method? Fang Yuan has already grasped it and even modified it to suit his rank seven cultivation!”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily as he activated summer fan, which was also at rank seven level.

Li Huang was unable to pay attention to both sides and could only look on as wind howled and blew even more holes in the river suppression lotus sealing formation, instantly destroying several Immortal Gu.

“Hahaha, I want to kill them, can you stop me?” Fang Yuan laughed loudly and mockingly.

Li Huang’s eyes burned with anger as he shouted: “Scoundrel, I will grind your bones to ashes!”

Boom!

An immemorial year beast rammed into Myriad Year Flying Warship, slightly tilting the rank eight Immortal Gu House.

Heavenly Court’s side was stumped.

Almost at an instant, the two rank eight great experts reacted.

“It turns out Fang Yuan can only lure in the year beast tide and not control them!”

“It even seems like these year beasts’ target is Myriad Year Flying Warship!!”

After discovering this secret, Li Huang and Gu Liu Ru had the urge to cough blood.

They had fought wholeheartedly for so long but it turned out they were actually blocking the enemy for Fang Yuan!

No wonder Fang Yuan did not watch from the sidelines, instead charging over to pester them.

Fang Yuan was helpless about this.

He had already done his best in the current situation.

Using Years Flow Like Water to attract year beasts and incite a year beast tide, this was the power of time path. If he could control this year beast army, that would be enslavement path’s power.

Year beasts continued to come in from all around, making the battlefield extremely cramped.

Previously, Heavenly Court was still bombarding this year beast tide and had slightly slowed them down. But because of Fang Yuan attacking river suppression lotus sealing formation constantly and killing many rank seven Gu Immortals, Heavenly Court’s side had no time to attend to the beast tide.

“Die, Fang Yuan!”

“Get lost!!”

Li Huang shouted, but Fang Yuan controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship to cling onto Shark Flow Lever or Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform.

The year beasts’ target was Myriad Year Flying Warship, but because of this, Shark Flow Lever and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform also met with calamity.

“Don’t you want to get rid of me? I am right in front of you now, come on, attack me.” Fang Yuan laughed.

Li Huang’s eyes were bloodshot with anger, even Gu Liu Ru’s breathing hastened as he looked rigidly at Fang Yuan with a deep cold gaze filled with killing intent.

The three Immortal Gu Houses soon did not even have space to move!

If someone looked from afar, they could only see year beasts rushing to the battlefield in the center. These year beasts, ancient year beasts, and immemorial year beasts were packed so tightly that they looked like a sphere of ants.

And the sphere was getting tighter and denser along with getting increasingly larger.

The three Immortal Gu Houses in the middle of the sphere seemed to have turned into meat grinders, even an immemorial year beast would be ground to death within a dozen seconds.

Li Huang and Gu Liu Ru attacked furiously.

The river suppression lotus sealing formation was already destroyed completely. Heavenly Court’s efforts this time had all gone to waste.

Li Huang and Gu Liu Ru had already tried their best to save any Gu Immortal they could, but most of them still died miserably at Fang Yuan’s hands.

“Let’s leave now, otherwise there will be no survivors.” Gu Liu Ru called out.

Without the large formation hindering Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan rampaged in the battlefield with Myriad Year Flying Warship, no one was able to stop him.

Heavenly Court’s battle tactics had failed completely.

“Fang Yuan, just wait, you won’t be able to be arrogant for long, you will die by my hands sooner or later!” Li Huang said with clenched teeth.

This was the first time he fought with Fang Yuan, and he already felt extreme hatred, anger, and disgust because of Fang Yuan’s actions!

This demon was truly insidious and crafty!

“Hmph! Li Huang, I think you are the one who is arrogant!” Myriad Year Flying Warship suddenly erupted, the killer move torrential charge activated under it! At its surroundings were daybreak swords! The silver swords pierced into the torrent and exploded with an unimaginable speed!

“These two moves can be combined?!” Li Huang cried out in shock, caught off guard.

Myriad Year Flying Warship directly collided into the damaged Shark Flow Lever!

Bam!

Amidst the loud sound, Shark Flow Lever was directly destroyed, the remaining huge sharks dying on the spot.

At the crucial moment, Li Huang activated his proudest killer move, verdant sun flame cloak.

Myriad Year Flying Warship destroyed Shark Flow Lever and collided straight into Li Huang with its remaining momentum.

Li Huang’s verdant sun flame cloak shook intensely, it was like a prairie fire but after the collision, it immediately weakened to become a small flame.

“Li Huang, it is time for your death!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shone sharply as he used both summer fan and spring scissors to attack Li Huang.

“Rank eight?!” Li Huang stared with his eyes wide open as he felt a fatal threat from summer fan and spring scissors.

He did not even have time to breathe as he focused everything on defense.

But when he took on the killer moves, spring scissors and summer fan revealed their previous state — they were only at rank seven!

“Fang Yuan, you deceived me!” Li Huang roared, his attention was completely on Fang Yuan.

Immediately after, Myriad Year Flying Warship followed.

Li Huang’s eyes almost popped out as his sight became filled with the large silver figure of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Boom!

Li Huang’s flame cloak was completely extinguished, his chest caved in, from which blood, mixed with pieces of organs, spurted out like a fountain.

Whoosh.

Countless silver swords attacked at the next second, they were as densely packed as bees, they pierced deep into Li Huang’s body and exited out from all directions.

Li Huang’s body was moved around in all directions by daybreak swords, shaking intensely in the process.

The sharp light in his pupils dissipated rapidly.

Before death, his final thought was still disbelief: “I am actually going to die here?!”

“Retreat——!” Gu Liu Ru shouted with teary eyes.

Veins bulged on his forehead and his whole face looked malevolent.

Li Huang might be stronger than Gu Liu Ru but in this River of Time, without the protection of an Immortal Gu House, he was definitely more disadvantaged.

It was not that Gu Liu Ru did not think of going to save him, but Fang Yuan had prepared for so long, how could he give him the chance to rescue?

The tightly packed year beasts were also a huge hindrance.

Gu Liu Ru controlled Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and left the battlefield rapidly.

Fang Yuan gave chase with surging killing intent: “Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, this will be your final resting place.”

Gu Liu Ru gave a muffled groan as he concentrated on escaping.

He imprinted this disgrace deep in his heart: “Righteous is falling while demonic is rising... sigh! The most sensible option now is to preserve our strength and fight again in the future. Fang Yuan... you can continue to be arrogant for the time being.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1813 Fearsome Beast Tide

Fast winds and ferocious waves surged in the River of Time.

Myriad Year Flying Warship continually shot out daybreak flying swords like a storm raging towards Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform.

Inside Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform, many Central Continent Gu Immortals were resolved for death as they said to Gu Liu Ru: “Lord, please leave first!”

Gu Liu Ru hesitated.

These people continued: “Central Continent can do without us, but it cannot lose you. This situation is too dangerous, we will all be killed if we try to escape together. Moreover, Heavenly Court has also sent the command!”

Fairy Zi Wei had already sent the command for Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform to block Myriad Year Flying Warship while Gu Liu Ru escaped.

Gu Liu Ru heaved a sigh: “I didn’t expect the situation to escalate to this, everyone, your sacrifices won't be in vain!"

He jumped out of Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and dived into the River of Time, escaping rapidly.

Fang Yuan saw this and immediately turned Myriad Year Flying Warship around to give chase, but Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform blocked him without regard for itself.

Fang Yuan was blocked by Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and was unable to get rid of it within a short period, he could only watch as Gu Liu Ru entered a tributary of the River of Time and escaped to the outside world.

"In that case, you can all go die!" Fang Yuan snorted coldly as he concentrated the attacks on Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform.

By now, Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform was already an exhausted force. Under Myriad Year Flying Warship's violent and repeated collisions, it completely broke into pieces.

Over ten Gu Immortals fell into the river, and under the extreme chaos, the bloodthirsty year beasts in the surroundings attacked these Gu Immortals.

"You beasts, get lost!" Fang Yuan shouted as he maneuvered Myriad Year Flying Warship to retrieve these battle spoils.

But there were too many year beasts, waves after waves of the beast tide collided into Myriad Year Flying Warship.

During this short delay, many of the Gu Immortals were swallowed by the berserk year beasts without leaving behind even a piece of flesh.

Boom!

A giant immemorial year ox crashed into the side of Myriad Year Flying Warship like a meteor.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was almost overturned and was only able to break away after a while. The warship's shape had already deformed with two large holes on it.

It was the result of the ox horns colliding into it!

Fang Yuan's subordinates were flustered.

"Repair it quickly!"

"So many Gu worms were destroyed."

"This immemorial year beast has extraordinary strength!"

Fang Yuan was surprised and sized his surroundings carefully.

Year beasts were everywhere in the surroundings, some flew, some ran on the water, while some moved underwater, with all of them having Myriad Year Flying Warship as their target.

In this period of time, eight immemorial year beasts had surrounded Fang Yuan, some still afar while some near.

That immemorial year ox just now had smooth skin and hair that shone with golden luster. Its hooves stood stably on the surface of the water, even the chaotic year beast army could not move it!

A sharp light flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Didn’t his Twelve Zodiac battle formation lack an immemorial year ox?

Even if he already had an immemorial year ox, Fang Yuan would think of replacing it.

The ancient battle formation’s might was completely related to the strength of the immemorial year beasts in the formation, and this immemorial year ox was outstanding among immemorial year beasts!

“But this is not the time to subdue it.” Fang Yuan gave a bitter smile as he commanded: “Retreat!”

Myriad Year Flying Warship began to escape as well.

But no matter where it ran to, year beasts would block its path.

Woof woof woof!

An immemorial year dog blocked the path.

Its body was agile with strong muscles, its eyes shone emitted lightning and its fur was glossy golden.

Myriad Year Flying Warship repeatedly activated daybreak swords but when they hit its body, they immediately broke, only managing to cut its fur.

Woof!

The immemorial year dog jumped with such force that it immediately neared the bow of the boat.

It opened its mouth, revealing its blade-like sharp silver teeth.

Crack, the bow of Myriad Year Flying Warship was directly bit into pieces.

“Leave quickly, this dog has time path Immortal Gu on it.” Fang Yuan’s expression was chilly.

Immemorial year dog was also a species he lacked, but under this chaotic situation, he simply did not want to fight against these year beasts which he had no information on.

Fortunately, the year beasts were also fighting and suppressing each other.

There was only one immemorial year dog with the most abundant immemorial year monkeys.

Fang Yuan cleverly turned Myriad Year Flying Warship towards these immemorial year monkeys, then Myriad Year Flying Warship moved through the gaps between the year beasts like a flash of silver lightning.

The immemorial year dog was stopped by these immemorial year monkeys.

After escaping like this all the way, they finally arrived in front of a tributary of the River of Time.

Myriad Year Flying Warship had to struggle to pass through the tributary and return to the outside world.

A large amount of year beasts actually gave chase without giving up.

Squeak squeak squeak!

A small immemorial year rat suddenly appeared and it ran into Myriad Year Flying Warship like a flash of golden lightning.

“Oh no!”

“Fang Yuan, stop it! It is all up to you!”

The immortals’ expression changed.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was strong outside and weak inside, if the immemorial year rat ran amok inside, the whole Immortal Gu House might be destroyed by it.

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan also did not care about concealing his strength, he erupted with rank eight cultivation and appeared in front of the immemorial year rat.

He activated the true rank eight level spring scissors, it flew nimbly in the narrow space and snipped the immemorial year rat.

This immemorial year beast was very small, only the size of an adult fist, and was like an extremely hard golden wart.

Spring scissors sniped its body but produced clanging sounds like striking a hard stone, even producing yellow sparks.

Fang Yuan was already using all his strength but this immemorial year rat was not afraid.

its eyes shone brightly as it saw a time path Immortal Gu, it bit the Immortal Gu and made its escape.

It was extremely fast, disappearing from Fang Yuan’s sight within a blink of an eye.

“Lord Fang Yuan, this is bad! Rank eight years flow like water Immortal Gu was taken away by this immemorial year rat!”

Fang Yuan laughed happily, even rejoicing slightly as he said: “This is my disguise, although it is a time path Immortal Gu, it is not the real Years Flow Like Water.”

Fang Yuan had personally deduced the myriad year hunting killer move, how could he not be aware of its enormous flaw?

Therefore, he had been prepared and had arranged a bait in Myriad Year Flying Warship.

When Myriad Year Flying Warship was damaged to a certain extent, they would throw out this bait and cause a fight among the immemorial year beasts, thus creating a chance to escape.

This method might not fool Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, but immemorial year beasts had limited intelligence and were not like Heavenly Court’s rank eight great experts.

Sure enough, after the immemorial year rat took away the bait, the year beast army immediately felt a strong attraction, they abandoned Myriad Year Flying Warship and surrounded this small golden rat.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was finally able to get rid of this terrifying year beast tide.

After confirming it was safe, Fang Yuan immediately moved the rank eight Immortal Gu House into his immortal aperture.

There were bumps and scratches all around Myriad Year Flying Warship, its sharp bow was chewed down, and there were large holes on its sides. There were also several claw marks on the deck that looked like they were cut by a giant blade.

Countless mortal Gu used in Myriad Year Flying Warship had died, many Immortal Gu were also injured, especially precaution Immortal Gu, its injuries were the heaviest since it was the core of Myriad Year Flying Warship’s defense. Even years flow like water Immortal Gu had some damage.

It appeared like Myriad Year Flying Warship still maintained its framework and looked intact, but if it were to be entangled for a while longer, it would be unrecognizable and the losses would be heavy.

The River of Time was one of the secluded domains of heaven and earth, an inestimable scale of living beings lived here. There was no lack of powerful beings among these time path living beings, even Fang Yuan would not be able to deal with them within a short period of time.

The ones that left Fang Yuan the deepest impression were the three immemorial year beasts with golden fur.

“But, this is all within my calculations.”

“The immemorial year beasts that attacked Myriad Year Flying Warship have all been marked. I can easily go find them later and subdue them.”

“I need to take the risk if I want to finish the Twelve Zodiac battle formation.”

Fang Yuan sighed inwardly.

The Twelve Zodiac battle formation required twelve different species of immemorial year beasts; rat, ox, tiger, rabbit, dragon, snake, horse, sheep, money, chicken, dog, and pig.

In the River of Time, at every set interval of time, a certain kind of immemorial year beast would be more commonly seen than others, becoming the strongest year species of that time period and suppressing other groups.

However, in the next dozen years, this species of year beast would fall down from the strongest to the weakest, heavily pushed aside and attacked by other year beasts.

But the year beasts that could survive these attacks would often be the strongest within the same level. They could not survive if they were not strong.

Just like the immemorial year ox, immemorial year dog and immemorial year rat that Fang Yuan just encountered, they were the best evidence.

Most of the immemorial year beasts were easy to gather because of their high quantity. But some species, because their whole group was at the lowest point, were not only rare but also had very powerful individual strength.

Myriad Year Flying Warship’s recovery was not a difficult issue.

Although countless mortal Gu were lost, Fang Yuan had enough of them. Injuries of immortal gu were the most troublesome, but Fang Yuan had the Gu as Before formation!

Fang Yuan’s refinement path foundation was too robust, he could restore these Immortal Gu.

“It is just that those Central Continent Gu Immortals’ immortal apertures are all completely empty, looks like Fairy Zi Wei has learned her lesson.” Fang Yuan smiled.

The immortal apertures inside those Central Continent rank seven corpses were empty and barren, all their resources were moved out before the battle. After the first battle in the River of Time, Fairy Zi Wei was afraid these resources would only nourish Fang Yuan, their enemy!

Fang Yuan did not care about it.

To him, these resources would only be icing on the cake and were not important.

“Next, I need to repair Myriad Year Flying Warship then go to the River of Time and capture the lacking immemorial year beasts.”

“Then I will explore dream realms, there is already a large pile of dream realms extorted from Southern Border’s righteous path.”

Fang Yuan was pressed for time and kept track of it closely.

Not long later, it would be time for the Five Xiang’s public grotto-heaven to open and for the ancient bet to end.

“I can only do my best!” Fang Yuan sighed.

At the same time, Fairy Zi Wei sighed bitterly in Heavenly Court.

She was filled with worries, they had lost miserably in the River of Time once again, what should they do now?

The methods and strength revealed by Myriad Year Flying Warship made even her feel a sense of helplessness.

She knew Fang Yuan’s strategy, it was to bait them inside the River of Time, but this matter was related to Red Lotus’ true inheritance, Heavenly Court had no choice but to take the bait!

“Even if it is a bloody pit, we need to clench our teeth and jump into it! Heavenly Court has never been afraid of sacrificing.” Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes shone sharply before her brows furrowed once again: “But, we need to modify the time path Immortal Gu Houses and make them prioritize speed. In the future, we will prioritize on disturbing Fang Yuan, it will be a great achievement as long as we stop him from obtaining Red Lotus’ true inheritance!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1814 Pitiful Qi Clan Gu Immortals

Immemorial white heaven.

A plain white cloud carried six Qi clan Gu Immortals inside as it flew rapidly in the sky.

“Be careful, this is immemorial white heaven, there are often immemorial desolate beasts roaming around.”

“Currently, this route is quite safe, but we need to stay alert.”

“After getting into that grotto-heaven, we will be able to obtain heaven form this time! The rise and prosperity of Qi clan is in sight!!”

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals conversed in secret as they held in their excitement and joy.

Even though they did not understand the use of heaven form, it did not mean that they would underestimate the power of this move.

Because this was half an inheritance left behind by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable!

Suddenly, their vision changed, the serene white heaven suddenly flipped like a pancake, turning into a huge and dark space.

This dark space was like a huge ball that enveloped all six immortals of Qi clan.

Threads of silver light weaved like strings of a web, moving in all directions from the top to the bottom of the dark space.

“This is an immortal battlefield killer move!”

“Who is it, who ambushed us?!”

“Quickly come out!”

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals were deeply shocked, after a momentary panic, they shouted angrily.

Thus, a rank eight Immortal Gu House carrying a Gu Immortal appeared in a casual manner.

This Immortal Gu House looked like a small boat, the front was sharp and long, shining with silver light. At the bow of the boat, a Gu Immortal stood with his arms behind his back, he wore a white robe and stood silently as he smiled towards these Qi clan Gu Immortals.

This Gu Immortal had a handsome face, to the point of being beautiful, his black hair was long and reached his waist, this was a delicate looking young man with peerless appearance at first glance.

But the six Qi clan Gu Immortals were completely stunned when they saw this person and this house!

Qi Cai was the second supreme elder of Qi clan, he was the bravest among them, but at this moment, only shock was shown on his face.

Qi Jin was the third supreme elder of Qi clan, he was like the other Qi clan Gu Immortals, having a pale expression, his heart was thumping, a cold chill was spreading through his four limbs.

Qi clan’s first supreme elder Qi Fa was usually composed but at this moment, he panicked and said in a shivering voice: “Fang... Fang Yuan, why are you here!

Why are you finding trouble with us?”

Fang Yuan’s appearance alone shocked these Qi clan Gu Immortals to the point of being dumbstruck, their morale was completely extinguished as it fell to rock bottom.

A person’s reputation provides shelter like the shadow of a tree.

Fang Yuan’s current demonic reputation far surpassed the previous life!

Earlier during the second battle in the River of Time, Fang Yuan had announced the results of the battle to the world.

Heavenly Court lost time and again, they experienced a severe defeat this time, Li Huang died tragically. By stepping on Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan’s demonic reputation was causing tremors in the entire world now.

Most of the Qi clan Gu Immortals were so scared their bodies went limp.

Fang Yuan was a great demon of this era, why was he here to deal with Qi clan? And even setting an ambush?

“Lord... Fang Yuan, my Qi clan is a secluded clan that has never caused any problems for you or schemed against you. Is there any misunderstanding between us, we are willing to compensate and appease you.” Qi clan’s first supreme elder Qi Fa said.

Fang Yuan smiled: “Don’t be nervous everyone, as long as you submit to me, I will let you live. As for compensation, why don’t you give heaven form to me then?”

Hearing this, the Qi clan Gu Immortals felt like their mood had sunk to the abyss.

“Oh no!!”

“Fang Yuan knows our greatest secret.”

“How did he find out?”

“He is an otherworldly demon, he has been reborn using Spring Autumn Cicada!”

“The ancient bet is here, the goal of our Qi clan for thousands of years is about to reach its end, should we give it up now?! I cannot accept it!!”

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals had pained and complex expressions, they were fearful, they were angry, they were anxious, they felt hatred, and they were helpless.

The strongest Qi clan Gu Immortal was merely rank seven, they had spent a great effort to enter immemorial white heaven to begin with, how could they fight Fang Yuan?

Hehe.

They were meat on the chopping block!

Simply pitiful.

“Why don’t we risk it all!” Qi Cai gritted his teeth, he clenched his fists as his arms shivered.

“Risk what? Can we even win? You know about Fang Yuan’s battle results as well, we will just be giving up our lives.” Qi Jin said with deep helplessness.

A peculiar light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes, he threatened: “I will give you three breaths of time to consider, if you do not submit, you can go die.”

“What do we do?!” Qi clan’s Gu Immortals panicked, they were not sure of what to do, everyone looked towards Qi Fa.

As the first supreme elder of Qi clan, Qi Fa had the highest authority, he was a skinny old man, but had great spirits, his back was straight like a long spear.

But after three breaths of time, he lowered his back as he gave up, he cupped his fists towards Fang Yuan with a pleasing expression: “Lord Fang Yuan, our Qi clan... submits to you!”

“Hahaha, a wise person understands their circumstances!” Fang Yuan laughed loudly, a bright light flashed in his eyes, none of the Qi clan Gu Immortals dared to look at him: “You have all made a wise decision.”

Bai Ning Bing and the rest were waiting inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, after witnessing this, they sighed to themselves.

The battle in Lang Ya blessed land and the two battles inside the River of Time, they allowed Fang Yuan to step on Heavenly Court and gain immense reputation in the world! His demonic might was awe-inspiring, his name alone was able to make rank seven Gu Immortals surrender without putting up a fight!

Qi Fa added: “Heaven form belongs to you, lord, but I would like to speak of the details regarding it, if lord would allow us to.”

Fang Yuan looked at this Qi clan first supreme elder deeply in the eyes as he smiled nonchalantly: “No need for that, I am not afraid to tell you that I obtained heaven form in the previous life, I killed many of you afterwards and took Qi Sea grotto-heaven. Of course, some of you surrendered to me.”

After pausing, Fang Yuan continued: “I am much clearer of the secrets involving heaven form than all of you.”

Fang Yuan’s words were like a hammer that pounded into the Qi clan Gu Immortals’ hearts.

They were dumbfounded but also in disbelief.

Fang Yuan did not care if they believed him, he used his methods on each of them and took away all of their Gu worms.

He was very clear on what Immortal Gu these Qi clan Gu Immortals possessed.

After that, these Qi clan Gu Immortals were kept on the deck of Myriad Year Flying Warship, as they stood in a daze and with pale expressions.

After putting these Qi clan Gu Immortals under control, Fang Yuan retracted his immortal battlefield — Yama Web.

Yama web battlefield was modified from yama battlefield, it achieved Fang Yuan’s intended goal, combining the power of time path into it, it was now stronger and more stable.

Myriad Year Flying Warship had been repaired long ago, it flew rapidly towards the crucial location.

After a while, the immortals saw that in the empty sky, a huge gatehouse appeared out of nowhere.

The gatehouse had a tall roof and two statues at the side of the gate. There was a huge plaque above the gate, writing the words ‘Five Xiang’s Bet Entrance’. The entire gatehouse seemed to be made of bronze, it radiated a majestic aura.

Initially, it was only a phantom image, but as time passed, it became solid and clearer.

After the gatehouse formed fully, a huge area of clouds gathered to hold up this gatehouse.

Fang Yuan’s subordinates were shocked, they were seeing this for the first time. Qi clan’s six Gu Immortals had complex expressions, a trace of hope was still lingering in the eyes of Qi Fa and the rest.

At this time, the door started to shine in five colors, representing the strength of the Five Xiangs.

First, red light shined down, causing the clouds to turn bright red.

Fang Yuan smiled, looking at Hei Lou Lan: “Go.”

Hei Lou Lan was expressionless as she moved out of Myriad Year Flying Warship, flying towards the gatehouse. Fang Yuan waved his hand as an immortal killer move was used on her.

Hei Lou Lan’s body shook as she landed before the gatehouse.

The red light surrounded her and faded away rapidly, acknowledging Hei Lou Lan’s identity.

“Impossible!”

“Oh heaven, what is going on?”

“Her bloodline was recognized! Is she really a descendant of Xue Xiang’s Xue clan?”

Qi clan’s six Gu Immortals were deeply astounded, they could not believe it.

Fang Yuan turned around to look at them as he smiled, instructing the rockman Gu Immortals: “Go.”

Several rockman Gu Immortals were hit by Fang Yuan’s killer move, their auras changed profoundly, they passed the inspection of the yellow light and obtained the rights to enter the Five Xiangs grotto-heaven.

Seeing this, the six Gu Immortals from Qi clan shook intensely.

Some were even shaking so intensely like they would fall.

Earlier, Hei Lou Lan was a human, she had a possibility of having Xue Xiang’s bloodline. But these variant human rockmen? There were only male rockmen, they could not have children with other races.

However, the gatehouse acknowledged them.

The cruel fact stabbed into these Qi clan Gu Immortals’ hearts like a sharp sword.

They finally abandoned all hope, they had to admit that this was the work of

Fang Yuan’s method.

Qi clan’s first supreme elder Qi Fa had a bitter expression, he surrendered to Fang Yuan earlier because he did not want to die, and also because he wanted to use the Five Xiang’s agreement and heaven form to coax Fang Yuan and find a chance to escape.

But now it seemed like it was impossible.

Fang Yuan’s preparations were too ample, he came here prepared, all the different signs showed that he was not lying earlier.

“In the previous life, I’m afraid that Fang Yuan really obtained heaven form!”

“He has Spring Autumn Cicada, he can start over again countless times. This is too absurd, who can stop him?”

“The ancient bet... to think that an outsider would benefit from it... hehehe...”

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals felt deep rage, some were furious at Heavenly Court’s weakness, while some were dealt a huge impact, they were completely dejected.

They had very intense emotions.

And it was only understandable.

They had arrived here with deep hopes and excitement, but abruptly, Fang Yuan ambushed them and took them as prisoners, the treasure that Qi clan had worked hard to get for so long, heaven form, was now in the hands of an outsider!

The contrast was too big, it was too sudden and cruel.

“These people are so pitiful...” Lady White Rabbit looked at Qi clan’s Gu Immortals as she felt some sympathy for them.

“Hmph, Fang Yuan wants that treasure, how can they even compete?” Bai Ning Bing had a cold expression, she has the clearest understanding of Fang Yuan’s methods.

Next, several Gu Immortals landed in front of the gatehouse, passing the bloodline test.

Fang Yuan did not let Qi clan’s Gu Immortals in, they were still restrained on the deck, they watched as their places were taken by Lady White Rabbit followed by Fairy Miao Yin, obtaining Qi Xiang’s acceptance.

Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing went together, they also got in.

As for Myriad Year Flying Warship and these Qi clan captives, he kept them inside his immortal aperture.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1815 Reaching the Heavens In One Step, Qi Path

As their field of vision changed, Bai Ning Bing focused and looked around, thinking: “This is Five Xiangs grotto-heaven?”

As she thought about that, an unknown source of information appeared in her heart, she understood the arrangements of the Five Xiangs immediately.

“This is a public grotto-heaven, the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs had once donated a portion of their grotto-heavens each to form this place. The entire grotto-heaven has five segments, they are not directly connected to each other, only the most central mountain range is shared among the five. The treasure of this bet is at the center of the grotto-heaven, as long as a Gu Immortal is acknowledged by the gatehouse and is teleported inside here, they can go after the treasure. Along the way, the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs have also set up some resources, stronger experts can try to take them away, but it is recommended that they do not take everything, so as to allow the resources to grow again in the future.”

Bai Ning Bing looked towards Fang Yuan, hesitating for a moment before deciding to inform him.

But Fang Yuan looked ahead as he waved his hand: “I’ve already gotten the information, no need to tell me.”

Bai Ning Bing nodded as she stopped talking.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan faced a hurdle at the gatehouse, not only was familiar face seen through, causing him to be pushed outside, he even had to use the light of wisdom to deduce a killer move that succeeded in allowing him to enter the Five Xiangs grotto-heaven under disguise.

After entering Five Xiangs grotto-heaven, the information was not provided to him. He had only learned about it after Bai Ning Bing told him.

But this time, after Fang Yuan’s modifications and deductions, he conceptualized an immortal killer move that could not only be used on himself, but also other people.

So now, once he stepped into Five Xiangs grotto-heaven, the information immediately appeared in his mind, telling him of the situation.

“Let’s go to the peak at the center!” Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing traveled together.

In the previous life, he had to rush against time because Qi clan’s Gu Immortals were also here, he needed to compete with them over heaven form.

But now, Fang Yuan chose to act in advance and kick his competitors out of the competition, this entire Five Xiangs grotto-heaven was his.

Even though the situation was calm now and he could relax and collect resources along the way, slowly taking it down, Fang Yuan knew that at the center of the mountain range, the Immortal Gu House that contained heaven form might seem rough but it was the control area of this grotto-heaven, once he gains control over the Immortal Gu House, it would help with the movement of resources later on.

While flying, Bai Ning Bing was shocked to realize that Five Xiangs grotto-heaven had a lot of resource points.

Ice mirror snow lotus, hundred years profound ice, thousand years profound ice, mystical frost water, heaven craft divine jade, jade frost antelopes...

“Even though there are no large or giant resource points, and all of these are just small or mid sized ones, these resource points are so closely packed and each have a huge amount stored up, since this place only opens up once a hundred years, it has naturally accumulated many resources.”

Bai Ning Bing felt envious internally.

There was no question about it, these resources would all end up in Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

If she obtained them, she could expand her foundation rapidly, her assets would increase by multiple times, she would become rich instantly! But for Fang Yuan, this was just icing on the cake.

The journey was very smooth, Fang and Bai safely arrived at the central mountain range.

In the previous life, Qi clan’s Gu Immortals made arrangements here and created a beast tide, they lured two immemorial desolate beasts to stop Fang and Bai, obstructing them and creating trouble for their advancement.

But now, they were all captured in advance, trapped inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, they were already unable to decide their own life and death.

There was nothing special about the Immortal Gu House palace at the top of the mountain range, Fang Yuan lost his interest quickly.

In front of the palace, there were many Gu Immortals gathered already, they were all Fang Yuan’s subordinates, they had entered before him.

After paying respects to Fang Yuan, the Gu Immortals reported what they saw along the way.

Fang Yuan looked around, there was no surprise or anything amiss, he nodded as he led the immortals into the hall.

Heaven form was at the center of this hall.

It was shaped like a one-legged white crane, it was covered in pure snow-white feathers that had no dust or dirt on it. Its long beak was red in color, it was craning its neck and hanging its head, its wings were tucked in as its eyes were shut tight, as if it was sleeping.

“Rank nine aura...” Bing Yuan and the rest gasped and breathed in deeply as surprise and joy showed on their faces.

Fang Yuan led the immortals as they sat around the heaven form flying crane, instilling their wills into it.

The gatehouse was the bloodline inspector for the Five Xiangs, but they did not do anything to this heaven form killer move, thus, anyone could instill their will into it.

All sorts of wills gushed in as they obtained the information left by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable the moment they entered.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable told them that he had once found a natural heavenly spirit in immemorial white heaven, after spending a lot of effort, he captured it but found that heaven form held deep mysteries, he could not refine it immediately even with his great strength.

Thus, he designed the killer move heaven form and left this half-inheritance to a lucky person in the future.

After the Five Xiangs found this inheritance, they did not back off, the ancient bet was thus created.

The immortals understood the origin of this killer move, they gasped and sighed in admiration.

Fang Yuan had heard this in his previous life, he felt no emotions, but he gained a new understanding of the existence of heaven form.

“Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable has killer moves like ghostly concealment, divine concealment, heaven form, and others, they are able to exist indefinitely and would not break apart.”

“In my previous life, I thought that this was the style of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, but after the battle of fate Gu’s restoration, I noticed that all the Immortal and Demon Venerables had similar methods. This was true for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, and Limitless Demon Venerable.”

“These killer moves and methods all have vast power, they are able to exist for a long time. Normally, they stay hidden without making any waves, but once they are used, the effects are simply shocking.”

“If only one or two venerables have such methods, that could be considered their specialty. But if all the venerables were like this, then it is not something regarding a path or a person, it is about attainment level.”

Every venerable had supreme grandmaster attainment level, this was a publicly recognized fact.

“Then this means...”

“Master attainment level generates intuition.”

“Grandmaster attainment level allows mimicking of other paths.”

“Great grandmaster attainment level allows the use of natural dao marks.”

“Supreme grandmaster attainment level allows killer moves to last indefinitely and operate on their own?”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts moved quickly, even though he was just guessing, he felt like his hypothesis was likely to be true.

Even though there was no description of this in the true inheritance that he obtained, with Fang Yuan having two paths at quasi-supreme attainment, he had the ability to take a peek at the heights of a supreme grandmaster.

Hours later, Fang Yuan successfully took down the last bit of heaven’s will inside heaven form.

This lump of heaven’s will had used a tactic of showing weakness in the previous life to deceive the Qi clan Gu Immortals, they suffered a huge loss while Fang Yuan benefited from it overall.

This time, Fang Yuan controlled even more wills here, he exterminated this stubborn heaven’s will.

No unexpected mishaps happened during this process.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan was afraid that Bai Ning Bing would betray him, but this time, he had more subordinates here, those variant human Gu Immortals were very loyal to Fang Yuan.

This was Fang Yuan’s leadership talent, he was skilled at politics, after defeating Heavenly Court multiple times, his personal charm and grand aura surged overwhelmingly, he did not need to use any enslavement path methods to achieve this.

The variant human Gu Immortals were very obedient, while Shadow Sect’s immortals did not dare to defy Fang Yuan.

Even though they were just refining heaven form and had to exterminate the remaining heaven’s will, there was also a large number of sturdy Gu Immortal wills that were inside the killer move.

These wills were accumulated in the last thousands of years by the wills of the descendants of the Five Xiangs.

Without exterminating these wills, Fang Yuan would not be able to use heaven form.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan was prepared for it, he modified several killer moves, including the one that used wisdom sword Immortal Gu as the core which had become his main method here.

“In my previous life, I used wisdom sword Immortal Gu alone, the effect was ordinary. Now that I have a killer move, I will gain control of heaven form rapidly!”

Fang Yuan stored away heaven form but he did not keep the Immortal Gu House, he directed the Gu Immortals to control the Immortal Gu House and relocate all of the resources here.

Five Xiangs grotto-heaven had once devoured a nine heavens fragment, it no longer faced any calamities and tribulations, but Fang Yuan could also not annex it now.

After making the arrangements, Fang Yuan led the remaining immortals out of the grotto-heaven, they went towards the direction of Qi Sea grotto-heaven.

Within Qi Sea grotto-heaven, there was a rank six Qi clan Gu Immortal guarding it.

But even the first supreme elder, second supreme elder, and third supreme elder had surrendered, this Qi clan Gu Immortal became stunned before he let Fang Yuan inside.

After the Qi clan Gu Immortals saw Fang Yuan’s heaven form killer move, they no longer had hope, their expressions turned pale.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan ordered Bai Ning Bing to attack Qi Sea grotto-heaven, she was even attacked by unlimited qi sea.

But this time, the heavenly spirit in Qi Sea grotto-heaven had not woken up yet, it was still sleeping.

“Lord Fang Yuan, how do you want us to move these resources?” The variant human Gu Immortals asked.

Qi clan’s Gu Immortals looked at each other as someone said anxiously: “We are willing to defend this place for Lord Fang Yuan!”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “No need, watch as I annex it!”

His qi path attainment level was grandmaster long ago. After the second battle in the River of Time, he repaired Myriad Year Flying Battleship and entered the River of Time, he captured his required immemorial year beasts.

In this long process of searching, he stayed inside the ship as he explored dream realms, letting his subordinates handle the matters outside.

He only took action when it was time to fight.

Thus, he saved a lot of time, he could succeed in many dream realm explorations!

Fang Yuan’s attainment level in many paths had risen, especially qi path, it rose to great grandmaster.

With this attainment level, he could annex Qi Sea grotto-heaven!

During the process of annexing, the heavenly spirit of Qi Sea heavenly spirit was rudely awakened, but Fang Yuan was prepared and quickly suppressed it.

The heavenly spirit scolded the Qi clan descendants for being unfilial, while Qi clan’s Gu Immortals had defeated expressions, they were in deep despair.

Eventually, they watched as their homeland was devoured by Fang Yuan, fused into the sovereign immortal aperture.

He gained a vast amount of qi path resources that could not be calculated at the moment.

His greatest gain was unlimited qi sea, this killer move was the trump card of Qi Sea grotto-heaven, it was the key that allowed them to defend against tribulations.

Unlimited qi sea used rank eight Immortal Gu Big Qi, rank seven Immortal Gu Big Family Qi and others, there were countless qi path immortal materials, like metal qi, water qi, fire qi, and others, and also special ones like luck qi, divine qi, there was a variety of different types of qi.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan dismantled this killer move, but now that he had great grandmaster attainment level in qi path, his foundation was deep enough, he decided not to destroy it.

And worth mentioning was that Qi Sea grotto-heaven gave Fang Yuan a million qi path dao marks!

Fang Yuan’s qi path foundation grew immensely, it was truly reaching the heavens in one step!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1816 Absorbing Qi Sea Grotto-heaven

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini White Heaven.

The dragonman clone smiled as he stretched out his hand.

Before him stood a fawn.

The fawn lowered its head before the dragonman clone, stretching out its tiny pink tongue and licking the dragonman clone’s palm.

“Master.” The fawn spoke in human language.

It was not an ordinary fawn of course, it was created from the obsession of Qi Xiang fusing with the heavenly power of the grotto-heaven, resulting in this Qi Sea heavenly spirit.

Qi Sea heavenly spirit had the appearance of a snow-white fawn, its eyes were golden in color, extremely dazzling.

But on the fawn’s back, near the right side, there was a deep wound that exposed the bones, it extended towards its stomach, leaving behind a dense amount of dao marks.

Dragonman clone sighed: “Your injuries are severe, my methods might not work.”

This was the injury the fawn sustained when it used unlimited qi sea against Qi Sea grotto-heaven’s myriad tribulation.

In the previous life, when Bai Ning Bing attacked Qi Sea grotto-heaven, the heavenly spirit had fallen asleep due to its injuries, it was rudely awakened.

The fawn was a heavenly spirit, it was a special existence created from the fusion of obsession and heavenly power.

To heal the fawn, wisdom path methods were the most appropriate.

Thus, Fang Yuan tried but had no success.

Even though Fang Yuan’s refinement path methods were stronger, he did not dare to use them rashly.

It was not that he was helpless against one wound, but these methods were too powerful and uncontrollable, they were harmful to the heavenly spirit fawn. Very likely, the treatment might kill this Qi Sea heavenly spirit.

If the treatment kills Qi Sea heavenly spirit, what was the point of wasting effort in trying to save it?

For now, Fang Yuan could not heal this fawn.

But this heavenly spirit did not mind that, it was in fact quite happy. After Qi Sea grotto-heaven got annexed, it did not die, it still existed.

Every life form would have basic survival instincts, heavenly spirits were the same, they were inclined to finding a master and preserving the grotto-heaven.

Of course, they would only submit to masters who fulfilled their conditions. Or if methods like blood light spirit suppression were used.

Fang Yuan was thinking about the mystery of land spirits and heavenly spirits.

The Gu world had countless mysteries, the more Fang Yuan interacted with them, the more he realized how little he knew.

When ordinary Gu Immortals annex apertures, even if land spirits existed, they would die when the annexation is completed. But the sovereign immortal aperture broke this rule, there had to be a reason for it.

But Shadow Sect had no records of it.

Maybe Spectral Soul Demon Venerable hid the details, or maybe Shadow Sect’s true inheritance was not everything that Spectral Soul had.

Or maybe even Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had no idea that the sovereign immortal aperture would end up like this.

It was like how Fang Yuan could only understand the general concept behind an unknown Immortal Gu that he just refined, even though he had such strong refinement path attainment, he could not comprehend it entirely. A newly created and unprecedented Gu was especially so, only by using it could the Gu Immortal learn more things about it.

Right now, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture had many land spirits and heavenly spirits.

Land spirits were more abundant, among them, Lang Ya land spirit was the most unique, he was made from two obsessions.

There were also a snake, star core, black hound, land spirits in all sorts of forms were scattered in different locations over the sovereign immortal aperture.

They were all useful assistants in managing the sovereign immortal aperture, they were in charge of their own territories.

Fang Yuan did not kill these heavenly spirits and land spirits, he preserved them.

Now was not the time, in the future, he was going to understand the logic behind their existence.

This was also why he wanted to save Qi Sea heavenly spirit.

After Qi Sea grotto-heaven was assimilated, Fang Yuan placed it in Mini White Heaven.

There were evident changes to the sovereign immortal aperture now.

All sorts of qi were growing and interacting, Mini White Heaven had the most evident signs, countless white clouds were forming and spreading.

The other eight mini heavens were the same, they all had their own colors.

These clouds were still like thin fog, they had not grown into cloud soil of their respective colors.

But this was just the start.

According to Fang Yuan’s deductions, for the following period of time, different qi would appear in all parts of the sovereign immortal aperture.

These qi were of different types of varieties, most were mortal Gu materials.

But after a while, after enough mortal level qi are accumulated, they would start producing qi path immortal materials.

And after an even longer time, these qi path immortal materials would stabilize and create a special connection with the environment, that would be the initial formation of a resource point.

If it develops well, these tiny resource points might grow into small, mid, and large sized resource points.

Of course, without human interference, the chances of the sovereign immortal aperture generating a large sized resource point was simply too small, it was negligible.

All these changes were due to the addition of a million qi path dao marks.

These qi path dao marks were the accumulation of Qi Sea grotto-heaven, now that Fang Yuan annexed it, these qi path dao marks spread out and became distributed all over the mini five regions and nine heavens.

Each time he annexed an immortal aperture, he would gain dao marks, the environment of the immortal aperture would change slightly.

Like in the previous life, Fang Yuan annexed Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, gaining transformation path dao marks, this caused the entire sovereign immortal aperture to produce a larger variety of living beings. For example, the ordinary foxes in Mini Northern Plains would reproduce and have a greater chance of becoming red foxes, grey foxes, wind foxes, cloud foxes, or others, even becoming mutated beasts like autumn water fox or flowing light fox...

After annexing Xia Cha grotto-heaven, he gained a bunch of time path dao marks, the tributary of the River of Time became wider. Fang Yuan could control the upper and lower limit of the rate of time to a greater extent as a result.

Very evidently, randomly annexing apertures was not a good thing.

Because the increase in dao marks would cause the environment to change dramatically, without wisdom path methods to absorb these changes, the Gu Immortal’s development inside the immortal aperture would be ruined, they would lose all their assets.

The living habitat of the immortal aperture world was always a tight chain. If one small species of grass became extinct, it could lead to a crisis for countless species higher up in the food chain. In comparison, the annexing of immortal apertures would cause huge environmental shifts!

The reason why Fang Yuan gained from it was because the sovereign immortal aperture was too big and vast, it made these influences negligible when spread out.

Most Gu Immortals had tiny immortal apertures compared to this sovereign immortal aperture.

When the same volume of water is stored in a bottle and a vat, the bottle would be full while the vat is only filled to a negligible amount.

Other than that, fang yuan had deep wisdom path attainment, along with other paths that allowed him to easily deal with all the changes that happened.

“It was still okay when I annexed Xia Cha grotto-heaven, but after annexing Qi Sea grotto-heaven, the gain of a million qi path dao marks has made an evident change to the sovereign immortal aperture!”

Xia Cha did not pass any myriad tribulations, she only had seventy thousand time path dao marks.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan annexed Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, which had over a hundred thousand transformation path dao marks. And this was because Beast Calamity Immortal had gone through one myriad tribulation before dying, the Beast Calamity grotto-heaven that he left behind did not pass a second myriad tribulation.

Qi Xiang was very strong in the past.

After all, the Five Xiangs were united and dominated the two heavens, their reputation was high in the five regions, they were incredibly famous.

After Qi Xiang died, Qi Sea grotto-heaven was left behind, it did not devour any fragment of the nine heavens, it still had to face endless calamities and tribulations.

Difficulties led to wealth!

After thousands of years, Qi Sea grotto-heaven had gone through more than ten myriad tribulations, each one gave around a hundred thousand dao marks.

Along with Qi Xiang's accumulations in his life, there were over a million qi path dao marks.

This was a shocking achievement.

It was not easy!

Myriad tribulations were terrifying, even rank eight Gu Immortals were fearful of them, they could only pass with great difficulty.

But Qi Sea grotto-heaven had survived for such a long time.

Mainly by relying on unlimited qi sea! The heavenly spirit controlled this move and with sufficient rank eight immortal essence, Qi Sea grotto-heaven managed to pass each time.

“Of course, this move is incredible, it not only consumes immortal essence but also different types of qi. By expending qi, the immortal essence expenditure could be reduced, while also increasing this move's power!”

“For the last thousands of years, Qi clan's Gu Immortals had been going all over the world collecting these types of qi.”

Compared to it, Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was just a child.

Even though Lang Ya blessed land had an even longer history, it had purposely fallen to a blessed land, it did not have to face myriad tribulations, the strongest tribulations it faced were grand tribulations, so it gained much fewer dao marks.

Other than that, Lang Ya blessed land also used killer moves to influence the contents of the calamities and tribulations, allowing it to gain a large number of water path dao marks.

These water path dao marks worked with the refinement path dao marks, creating refinement water.

In order to create a man-made secluded domain of heaven and earth, Lang Ya blessed land had expended a vast number of refinement path and water path dao marks.

“If I did not annex this Qi Sea grotto-heaven, with the heavenly spirit fawn's injuries, it would not be able to survive much longer. With a few more myriad tribulations, this grotto-heaven would be destroyed.”

Thus, one could not say that Lang Ya land spirit’s decision was wrong. If Lang Ya blessed land was kept as a grotto-heaven, even if it obtained ten times the number of refinement path dao marks, it would not exist until today.

Fang Yuan continued to cultivate.

On one hand, he was trying his best to assimilate Qi Sea grotto-heaven entirely, on the other hand, he started practising qi path killer moves.

The consecutive hit method that Ba Shi Ba possessed was given up after Fang Yuan tried it.

The most important thing now were qi path killer moves, especially unlimited qi sea!

The power of unlimited qi sea was truly tremendous, it helped Qi Sea grotto-heaven pass so many myriad tribulations.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan lacked foundation and time, he also needed resources so he dismantled the killer move unlimited qi sea.

But now, as a qi path great grandmaster who annexed Qi Sea grotto-heaven, this unlimited qi sea killer move was usable by him.

The sovereign immortal aperture’s time flow was much faster than in the previous life as well!

This gave Fang Yuan even more time to practise his killer moves.

Fang Yuan’s qi path foundation soared to a peak, after he turns it into battle strength, he would definitely gain a huge amount of strength that would surpass his current state!

“If my qi path battle strength is formed, it will surpass time path and become my main offensive method.”

“A million qi path dao marks, hehe, it is truly not a joke.”

“By then, I can try to subdue Dragon Palace, I will be able to fight for it against multiple rank eight Gu Immortals, forcefully taking away this Immortal Gu House.”

Fang Yuan’s gaze was eerie, he had made his plans long ago.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1817 Training in Qi Path Killer Moves

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan practised his qi path killer moves.

Several Immortal Gu moved in the sky, while a large number of mortal Gu flew around them like a tornado in the sky.

Large amounts of astral winds were mixing into them.

As rank eight immortal essence was injected, these Gu worms’ auras started to merge.

But after a long time, the killer move was not activated.

Sweat appeared on Fang Yuan’s forehead, after more than ten breaths of time, Fang Yuan barely controlled the situation, the killer move finally succeeded, it was unleashed.

Qi path immortal killer move — Heavenly Astral Cloth Robe!

A grey-white cloth robe appeared on the dragonman clone’s body.

It looked like normal clothing but upon closer inspection, one could see that every thread on this cloth was made of astral qi.

This was a rank seven killer move, but after the amplification of Fang Yuan’s one million qi path dao marks, its power had risen by a thousand times!

After inspecting it, Fang Yuan saw that while this robe was thin, it had incredibly shocking defense.

“It has rank eight power without doubt, it is even stronger than winter coat.” Fang Yuan sighed internally.

Of course, it could not compare to reverse flow protection seal.

A million qi path dao marks was truly not a joke.

Even through mere amplification, a rank seven killer move could have the power of rank eight, and most importantly, the expended immortal essence is at the level of rank seven!

“After one myriad tribulation, a Gu Immortal will gain eighty-thousand dao marks on average. The stronger the tribulation, the larger the number of dao marks obtained.”

“Theoretically, after three myriad tribulations, a Gu Immortal can become venerable, they would have at least three hundred thousand dao marks!”

“A million qi path dao marks is on the level of something only rank nines can possess.”

“The core Immortal Gu of heavenly astral cloth robe is only rank seven, after the qi path dao mark amplification, it has reached the level of rank eight peak. If the core Immortal Gu is rank eight, after the qi path dao mark amplification, would it have rank nine power?”

Fang Yuan had a thought as bright light shined in his eyes.

He recalled the battle in his previous life, and all the methods left by the venerables. At the same time, his main body also made deductions.

Soon, Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone shook his head.

The possibility was small.

“Most likely, rank nine killer moves need rank nine Immortal Gu. Dao mark amplification cannot reach this extent.”

“Or more accurately, I cannot breakthrough to that level using just a million qi path dao marks.”

“Maybe if I have ten times the dao marks, the quantity will induce a qualitative change, and reach rank nine perhaps?”

Fang Yuan was not certain.

Even though he was a rank eight Gu Immortal, when he looked up towards the level of a rank nine, it was still shrouded in complete mystery.

In a purely theoretical situation, each venerable would start with at least three hundred thousand dao marks.

But from what Fang Yuan learned from Lang Ya land spirit as well as his own experiences, each venerable was an absolute monster, they could not be looked at with logic or common sense.

Just Limitless Demon Venerable alone, when he was a Gu Master, he already possessed Gu Immortal level dao marks. At that rate, when he became venerable, how many dao marks would he have?

Fang Yuan could not imagine it.

As for the other venerables?

When they just became a venerable, would they have merely three hundred thousand dao marks?

Fang Yuan smiled, the possibility was close to zero!

In this world, there were no invincible Gu worms, only invincible Gu Immortal.

If these people only had three hundred thousand dao marks when they became venerable, how could they dominate the world and gain the reputation of invincibility?

Right now, Fang Yuan was already one of the greatest experts in the world! He was at the peak, he could look down on most of the people in this world. There were few who could fight him evenly in a one-on-one battle.

However, whenever he looked up, he could still see those ten giant mountains above his head, concealed within the clouds!

They were the ten strongest people in history, each was a legend of legends, throughout the long history of humanity, they were the ten most dazzling suns.

Other than them, no matter who it was! Even the extremely talented individuals who were dazzling like the stars paled in comparison to them, their tiny light was forever shrouded by these ten’s shadows.

Fang Yuan was no exception.

He was able to reach this stage because he had relied on these predecessors, especially the venerables.

Just looking at the sovereign immortal aperture alone.

This belonged to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Even today, when cultivating, Fang Yuan would often sigh in admiration towards the heaven defying advantage that the sovereign immortal aperture gave him.

For example, the annexing of Qi Sea grotto-heaven, under normal situations, who could annex it?

Almost nobody!

Unless Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was alive now.

Because immortal apertures could only annex smaller ones, the ‘big and small’ here referred to foundation.

In this world, only Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable had the qi path foundation to annex Qi Sea grotto-heaven, which had a million qi path dao marks.

And if the grotto-heaven was dissected and annexed piece by piece, the losses would be severe.

Each time a grotto-heaven was cut apart, it would suffer immense damage, the qi path dao marks that were weaved like a web would suffer huge losses!

And because of conflicting dao marks, Gu Immortals could not truly gain many of these dao marks.

If Qi Sea grotto-heaven was dissected to a certain extent, the winds of assimilation would start blowing due to its severe damage. The remaining portions of the grotto-heaven would be destroyed in this case.

But the sovereign immortal aperture could devour “larger” apertures.

Originally, Fang Yuan had no foundation in qi path, but he was able to annex Qi Sea grotto-heaven, this was not like a snake devouring an elephant, it was an ant devouring an elephant!

The most scary was that with non-conflicting dao marks, Fang Yuan could perfectly absorb his gains, he could assimilate every single dao mark without any bit of wastage.

It was too heaven defying!

No wonder the Heavenly Dao could not condone its existence, in order to stop Spectral Soul, it nurtured the otherworldly demon Fang Yuan, plotting endlessly and sending him back five hundred years to stop Shadow Sect’s plan.

The more heaven defying the sovereign immortal aperture was, the more it showed how scary Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was.

Every time Fang Yuan used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth, he could gain a deeper understanding of Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s terrifying power.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable...

Using the foundation of these venerables, Fang Yuan became the current generation demon overlord, but with every step he took, he increasingly felt the difference between him and a venerable, it was too vast to calculate!

Fang Yuan felt no dejection whenever he looked up at them, all he felt was admiration.

He had never been arrogant nor proud, he respected each of these predecessors.

One could only learn from capable people!

Mixed in with his admiration were traces of indescribable excitement.

“Even as strong as these ten venerables, none of them could attain eternal life, they died one by one.”

“Then, can I truly succeed?”

The possibility was as slim as none!

In fact, as long as fate Gu still existed, it would not allow any life form to gain eternal life.

This was already confirmed within u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e!

“That is why it is interesting to pursue it.” Fang Yuan smiled.

After collecting his thoughts, Fang Yuan’s main body continued to train his qi path killer moves.

As for the dragonman clone, after testing heavenly astral cloth robe, he flew away and looked into treasure yellow heaven.

He wanted to purchase many qi path immortal materials in treasure yellow heaven.

Many qi path killer moves needed to use these qi path immortal materials.

For example, the heavenly astral cloth robe earlier needed a large amount of astral qi.

Using the dao marks inside immortal materials to unleash killer moves was not a rare thing. Grandmaster formation path Gu Immortals were able to use immortal materials to set up formations.

Long ago, water path killer moves also used a large number of water path immortal materials in huge quantities. But afterwards, due to the absurd cost involved, Gu Immortals chose to use Gu worms instead, they abandoned this method.

This trait was most evident in qi path.

No matter how low their qi path attainment level was, a Gu Master (Gu Immortal) would always be able to use Gu materials in place of Gu worms to unleash killer moves.

The reason was that qi path materials were the most mobile and simple to use. Water path materials were slightly less useful, while the dao marks of earth and rocks were much harder to use.

Fang Yuan did not care about this, he was very rich now and had abundant wealth, he searched and bought qi path immortal materials in treasure yellow heaven.

He did not ask for qi path immortal materials from Southern Border’s Gu Immortals.

In terms of his qi path battle strength, he wanted to keep it a secret for now.

“Profound yin qi, minor sun qi, astral qi, domination qi... I’ll buy all of them! Hmm, blood qi?”

The dragonman clone looked as he pondered.

Even though blood path was detested greatly, would any righteous path force not research it secretly? Thus, in treasure yellow heaven, blood path Gu materials were very popular.

These blood qi were just mortal materials, but the quantity was huge.

If it were any other type of qi, Fang Yuan would not want these mortal materials, his sovereign immortal aperture could produce it! But blood qi was different.

Not only did this qi contain qi path dao marks, it also had blood path dao marks. Therefore, it was considered a blood path mortal material.

And blood path had a terrifying advantage, if the quantity was high enough, it could be treated as an immortal material.

“Such a huge quantity sold, this can be seen as an immortal material.” The dragonman clone thought of this as he hesitated no more, immediately buying it.

Central Continent.

“What, there is no more blood qi?” Gu Yue Fang Zheng looked into treasure yellow heaven with disbelief: “You had such a huge quantity last time.”

The Gu Immortal’s will who sold the blood qi in treasure yellow heaven shook his head: “A few hours ago, an incredibly affluent Gu Immortal swept the entirety of treasure yellow heaven’s market, buying all of the qi path immortal materials available. You also know that these blood qi can be accumulated and used together, that is why this happened.”

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was stunned!

Sweeping the whole of treasure yellow heaven’s market and buying all of the available qi path immortal materials, what sort of wealth could allow one to do that?

Gu Yue Fang Zheng had already become an immortal for some time.

He knew deeply that wealth was a form of representation of strength.

If a Gu Immortal had immense wealth, it would mean that they own a large amount of resources, with such a foundation, it would help them advance smoothly in their cultivation journey!

“Maybe it is not a person, but a super force’s action.” Gu Yue Fang Zheng muttered to himself.

His divine sense went to many more stalls, but there were no gains as expected.

There was no blood qi left in the market.

But Gu Yue Fang Zheng cultivated blood path, he needed blood qi.

After his divine sense left treasure yellow heaven, Gu Yue Fang Zheng started to think: “Do I ask the sect for blood qi?”

He quickly dispelled that thought.

He decided to collect it himself.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1818 Heavenly Court“s Righteousness

Blood qi was very easy to obtain! One could get a bunch from killing mortal beasts and using blood path methods to extract them. By raising desolate beasts in the immortal aperture, there would be an endless supply of immortal material blood qi.

Precisely because blood path resources were easily obtainable, blood path was incredibly threatening, the righteous path of the five regions prohibited it.

If it were other immortal materials, Fang Zheng might get help from the sect, but this was just blood qi, and Fang Zheng did not need a lot.

In Fang Zheng’s case, it was just a little troublesome to obtain the blood qi that he needed, he only had to spend some time.

Thinking about this, Fang Zheng informed Fan Xi Liu of his plan, because of his unique identity, he could not leave Fei He Mountain casually.

After Fan Xi Liu learned about it, he gave Fang Zheng a mission: “Perfect timing! There is a golden mountain ox at the northwest area wreaking havoc, go and settle that issue. Kill or enslave it, if you can capture it alive, you will get double the sect contribution points.”

Fang Zheng’s heart shook, the golden mountain ox was a desolate beast, he had never fought against a desolate beast before.

But soon, he felt a little excitement in his heart as he agreed.

Fang Zheng was no longer the young lad from before, he had gone through many hurdles in Lang Ya blessed land, after thinking about it, he made up his mind.

He did not head to the golden mountain ox immediately, he went to the information tower of Immortal Crane Sect.

White Crane Information Tower was an Immortal Gu House with nine floors, it was situated at a secluded area on the mountainside of Fei He Mountain.

It was covered in deep fog and lush greenery.

Fang Zheng flew over on a crane.

Even though he cultivated blood path, he had been tutored in Immortal Crane Sect and was the disciple of Lord Sky Crane, he was familiar with the manipulation of flying cranes.

When he was in Lang Ya blessed land, he had participated in the huge war of three continents, he did not have a chance to subdue cranes, but he still retained his interest in them.

But due to a twist of fate, he was saved by Feng Jiu Ge and returned to Immortal Crane Sect, because Heavenly Court decided to nurture him, he became an immortal.

With Gu Immortal cultivation level, he even became a supreme elder of Immortal Crane Sect, Fang Zheng easily obtained a crane for himself as a movement tool.

Before White Crane Information Tower, there were no guards, only two desolate beast cranes were resting here. If anything happened, these cranes would appear and act as guardians.

Fang Zheng rode on his crane as he got near White Crane Information Tower, the flying crane below him started shivering as its vocalizations became jittery.

Fang Zheng could not help but sigh: “This flying crane is a rank five mutated beast, when I was in Immortal Crane Sect in the past, I felt that it was incredibly powerful, but now, it is nothing special.”

“The difference between immortal and mortal is truly too great.”

After Fang Zheng landed in front of White Crane Information Tower, his crane almost fell down from fear.

Fang Zheng sighed as he kept it in his immortal aperture.

He had the status of a supreme elder, White Crane Information Tower was open to him without question, Fang Zheng stepped in.

Every floor of the information tower had a large number of information path mortal Gu.

If Fang Zheng wanted to obtain information from them, he would need to exchange for it using sect contribution points.

The information tower itself could store information, but Immortal Crane Sect would not do that. Because if the tower got destroyed, the information would also be ruined. This information tower was an Immortal Gu House that only managed one aspect, it was like Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu Houses, it only had the power of information path.

If it were a complete Immortal Gu House, having both offense and defense, it would not need two desolate beast white cranes to defend it.

Fang Zheng had no foundation in information path, he could not see the mysteries of this tower. But he could guess that this tower had some sort of arrangement towards preserving, transporting, and destroying these Gu worms.

White Crane Information Tower had the ability to collect and update information, most types of intelligence could be found in it.

Of course, true secrets could only be obtained by the higher-ups.

Even though Fang Zheng was a supreme elder, he could not become a higher-up of Immortal Crane Sect. Because of his special identity, he was excluded by the rest of them.

In the past, Fang Zheng was still ignorant and innocent, but after these years, he had understood these politics.

He did not feel proud for having this understanding, instead he only had a bitter smile.

He could now understand the circumstances that Fang Yuan faced back in Qing Mao Mountain. With Fang Yuan’s situation back then, he was not welcomed by the higher-ups, in order to get stronger, he could only use schemes and robbery.

“The truth is, since the creation of Immortal Crane Sect, haven’t they been doing this all along? They occupy lots of resources, many of these resource points were once owned by demonic path or lone immortals.”

“And even though Heavenly Court is known for righteousness, that is not entirely true. Looking at history, all of its territory was snatched away from variant humans.”

“Heavenly Court only represents the righteousness of humanity.” Fang Zheng thought to himself.

Other Central Continent righteous path Gu Immortals would not think like this normally, it was a heretical idea.

But Fang Zheng had lived with the hairy men. Even though he was ostracized, he had truly felt the culture and living habits of the hairy men, he understood them.

How could other Gu Immortals live and grow in an environment dominated by variant humans?

His unique experience gave Fang Zheng a unique perspective. All his hardship in the past had now become his wealth, even though his vision was not broad, it was unique.

“But one’s position determines one’s views and behavior, I still prefer the righteousness of Heavenly Court.” Fang Zheng smiled bitterly as he inspected the information.

“Desolate beast golden mountain ox, hmm, this is the one.” He went up several floors as he found the corresponding information path mortal Gu.

After his divine sense looked into it, he gained waves of information.

The golden mountain ox was large as a mountain, it was a female-only species and liked to eat metal essence. After eating several hundred kilograms of metal essence, it would enter a cave and sleep.

“Eat and sleep, sleep and eat?” That’s a good life.” Fang Zheng laughed.

He continued to look: “The horn is the most valuable part of the golden mountain ox’s body. Every hundred years, the horn grows by ten feet, it will continue to grow and extend, curving until it coils around the entire head, neck, and stomach. After it reaches the stomach, the sharp horns will turn into thick leather skin. As long as the ox moves its head, it would pull forward and cut the skin of its womb, the descendants that are called golden calves will jump out of this wound and become born.”

Fang Zheng’s eyes flickered as he muttered: “This reproduction method is quite like rockmen.”

Fang Zheng continued to look.

After the golden mountain ox gives birth, because the wound is huge, it would be in great pain, it would cry out loudly as it bleeds profusely.

If newly born golden calves choose to lick the wound of the mother, the dao marks on their tongue would heal the golden mountain ox rapidly, until they fully recover.

But if they choose not to, the mother would die. The calves can drink the blood of their mother and become stronger rapidly, passing the weak period of being a calf quickly.

“Very interesting!” Fang Zheng sighed to himself.

The life of a golden mountain ox was to eat and sleep. This meant that after giving birth, if the calves choose to save the mother, she would not take care of them, after ingesting lots of food, she would hibernate.

For the calves’ own survival, it was more beneficial to not save the mother.

Thus, most calves would watch as their mothers die, only a small portion would lick the wound and save her.

“When an ox gives birth, it often means a tragedy. But for survival, this is necessary, but I still like those calves who save their mothers more.”

Fang Zheng watched as he decided on his plan.

He left the information tower, his confidence in this sect mission was completely different from before he saw the information.

He decided to target the golden mountain ox’s habits.

Didn’t it like to eat metal essence?

Then he would make some metal essence, like how people used fish bait to fish, he would use metal essence to bait the ox!

Fang Zheng had above average strength, having familiarized himself with many blood path immortal killer moves during this period of time inside his immortal aperture, he was able to fight against the golden mountain ox now.

But if he could use half his strength, why would he go all out?

The best way was to fight the enemy with wisdom, using all the advantages that he could find, to preserve his remaining strength for possible accidents.

This was the habit that Fang Zheng had gained after the countless battles in his mortal life.

Days later, Fang Zheng arrived at his destination.

He entered the valley stealthily, leaving behind a large amount of metal essence at the area where the golden mountain ox often roamed around.

When the golden mountain ox came nearby, it sniffed as brilliance shined in its eyes, it quickly discovered the deeply buried metal essence.

The golden mountain ox started to use its hooves and horns to dig.

Rocks were tossed as dust clouds rose, the metal essence was quickly excavated, the joyful golden mountain ox started to devour it.

“I did it!” Fang Zheng watched personally, he was secretly overjoyed.

He waited patiently for the golden mountain ox that had eaten its fill to go back to the cave and sleep.

Three days later, the golden mountain ox’s cries could be heard from within the cave.

Fang Zheng who was sleeping woke up in shock, after reacting, he cheered: “The poison has finally spread, it is working now.”

But he did not enter the cave, he waited outside patiently.

The intense pain of the poison made the golden mountain ox go berserk, it rampaged in the cave, causing the entire mountain to shake, the surrounding forest went into chaos as a large number of living creatures scattered.

After a long while, the commotion in the cave gradually calmed down.

Fang Zheng entered the cave now and fought intensely against the half crippled golden mountain ox.

After some time, seeing that the golden mountain ox was completely agitated, Fang Zheng left the cave.

Fighting against the golden mountain ox in the cave was too dangerous, if it caved in, even as a rank six Gu Immortal, Fang Zheng would be in trouble.

And Fang Zheng was here to capture the golden mountain ox alive, he did not want to destroy the area and cause all the living creatures to lose their homes.

Fang Zheng left the cave, the golden mountain ox followed.

The two fought in the valley, eventually, Fang Zheng used the killer move blood turns cold to freeze the golden mountain ox and captured it alive.

However, when he was about to send the golden mountain ox into his immortal aperture, a strong aura surged from the body of this golden mountain ox.

At the same time, a bronze-gold cauldron forced its way out of the golden mountain ox’s body.

“This is?!” Fang Zheng was deeply shocked.

At the next moment, a rank eight Gu Immortal flew out of the golden cauldron.

“Spirituality hides within the metal essence, divine light slumbers for three hundred thousand years.”

“Owing to great fortune I see the light of day, with thanks to the martyr of righteous blood.”

This female rank eight immortal sang slowly as she landed in front of Fang Zheng, smiling at him: “Little friend, you are the one who awakened me?”

Fang Zheng was dumbfounded, he had not anticipated such a situation!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1819 Sword Path Grandmaster

Immortal killer move — Golden Thread Sword!

Fang Yuan shouted loudly as he used the killer move.

Instantly, countless golden threads burst out of his body, stabbing towards his surroundings like a porcupine, piercing everything in their path.

Crack crack crack...

The three Gu Immortals around him were pale and shocked, they wanted to dodge but it was too late, their bodies and souls were completely penetrated by countless golden threads.

Plop, plop, plop, the three Gu Immortals fell onto the ground, lifeless.

Fang Yuan breathed roughly, this was a tough battle, after finally killing the enemy, he was extremely tired.

The world he was in started to vanish until it was completely gone, only Fang Yuan’s desolate soul was left inside the sovereign immortal aperture’s Mini Green Heaven with heavy injuries.

“I finally passed the final scene.”

“It was really difficult.”

“If I did not use unravel dream at the most crucial moment, to find that tiny loophole, I would have failed for sure!”

After Fang Yuan’s soul returned to his body, he still felt some emotions from earlier.

This was a sword path dream realm.

Inside this dream realm, Fang Yuan’s strength was low, especially in the final scene, every Gu Immortal enemy was stronger than him.

He had to keep trying and making use of the conflicts between these enemies to disrupt them, creating chances for himself so that he could remain standing.

Eventually, after a hundred tries and incredible luck, he managed to kill the last three Gu Immortal enemies.

“But I passed after all.”

“Not bad, my sword path attainment level has reached grandmaster.”

Fang Yuan inspected himself, he became quite happy.

He had quite a number of sword path Immortal Gu, he only lacked sword path attainment level.

This weakness was finally removed, in the future, his sword path battle strength would also rise greatly.

After resting, Fang Yuan recovered fully and continued exploring dream realms.

“This is likely a human path dream realm.”

Fang Yuan’s desolate soul arrived in the next dream realm as he looked with anticipation.

Extorting Southern Border’s righteous path was a correct choice. This gave Fang Yuan a large number of dream realms to explore.

The value of these dream realms were extremely high to him.

Because Fang Yuan did not lack resources, Immortal Gu, killer moves, or Immortal Gu recipes, he only lacked attainment level and actual experience.

His desolate soul entered the dream realm.

The world that he was seeing changed immediately.

This was a battlefield.

It was filled with smoke and dust, shouting and killing were all around him.

“Clan leader, be careful!” Fang Yuan had just taken a look when someone shouted at him.

Fang Yuan sensed something amiss, he quickly dodged.

However, his body could not move as fast as his thoughts, an intense pain assaulted him.

Fang Yuan fell onto the ground, looking at the hole on his chest, only half his heart was left.

“This...” Fang Yuan was speechless, he shouted loudly: “Where is the healing Gu Master?”

But no answer came.

The world started to spin, it turned dark rapidly.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan’s desolate soul suffered heavy injuries as he was pushed out of the dream realm.

Using guts Gu, Fang Yuan’s desolate soul recovered quickly, after resting, he entered the dream realm again.

“Dodge!” Fang Yuan entered and immediately dodged.

“Clan leader, be careful!” The Gu Master beside him shouted.

Fang Yuan’s movements suddenly froze as he suffered a fatal hit again.

The moment he fell to the ground, he realized: “The Gu Master who called out to me earlier is a spy. He used an information path method that pretends to alert me but is actually a mortal killer move that restrains my actions!”

“There are no healing Gu Masters around me, with this spy around, I can only try to pass this using my own strength.”

In the dream realm, Fang Yuan’s strength was greatly restricted, he could only use the abilities of the character within the dream.

Originally, Fang Yuan did not want to do this, because he had too little time to react, he could not check the Gu worms that he had.

Before he inspected them, he would definitely get killed.

Fang Yuan could only accept his loss and try a third time.

Plop!

He died again.

Back to reality, Fang Yuan was troubled: “How can this be? I can’t check my own aperture? How can I do anything without even knowing what Gu worms I have?”

The dream realm restricted him, he could not inspect what Gu worms he had.

Guess? That was unrealistic.

Fang Yuan tried for a fourth time.

Different from the previous two explorations, Fang Yuan used unravel dream this time.

“Clan leader, be careful!” The Gu Master beside him shouted.

Plop!

Fang Yuan suffered a fatal blow, he fell on the ground.

“Clan leader!”

“Impossible, lord clan leader has justice Gu on him, how could he be defeated so easily?!”

The traitor shouted beside him.

After the exploration failed, Fang Yuan’s desolate soul was thrown out of the dream realm again.

“Immortal killer move unravel dream only gave me one hint.”

“The traitor spoke an extra sentence, pointing out that I have justice Gu.”

“Then let’s use it.”

During Fang Yuan’s fifth exploration, at the crucial moment, he used justice Gu.

“Clan leader, be careful!” The traitor screamed.

Fang Yuan’s dodging movement froze again.

Justice Gu!

Piercing white light burst out of Fang Yuan’s body, his speed went back to normal as he dodged the fatal blow.

“Huff! I succeeded.” Fang Yuan rolled on the battlefield as he quickly looked around, assessing the area.

This was a village.

Everywhere, there was rubble and corpses lying on the ground.

“The conflict between two clans? This is already at the step of exterminating a clan.”

But Fang Yuan found that he was not the victim, he was the invader, his side had the absolute advantage.

“This is a mortal level fight and I am the clan leader, by just leading these Gu Masters, we can win.” Fang Yuan had a calm and composed mood.

“But is the condition for clearing this dream realm winning the battle? Let’s try.”

After that, Fang Yuan was joyful to find out that his aperture could be inspected again.

The dream realm character had rank five cultivation level and many mortal Gu, there were five to six rank four Gu, and one rank five Gu which was justice Gu.

Fang Yuan immediately understood as he smiled: “With these Gu worms, I can settle this myself.”

Be it leading the troops or fighting personally to obtain victory, it was extremely easy for Fang Yuan.

“Lord clan leader!” At this time, the traitor appeared, showing a concerned expression.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly: “I will kill this traitor first!”

He attacked immediately, killing the traitor with one killer move.

“Clan leader, what are you doing?”

“The vice clan leader is dead, the clan leader killed him!”

“I was right after all, Chen clan is trying to take down our Shan clan.”

“Rebel! Rebel! Let’s take revenge for Lord Shan!”

Fang Yuan was shocked, he killed the traitor but half of the Gu Masters started to rebel and attack.

The scene fell into chaos, a three-way battle started.

Fang Yuan noticed that this was bad: “I have rank five justice Gu, it can give me great strength. With my strength, I can still win and kill all opposition. But... this traitor should not have been dealt with this casually.”

As expected, even though Fang Yuan won, there were only a few Gu Masters left standing on the battlefield.

Corpses and broken body parts were everywhere, blood flowed like a river.

The world dissipated as Fang Yuan’s desolate soul was thrown out again.

But this time, he did not suffer much injuries.

This result made Fang Yuan gain a deeper guess: “This means that victory is indeed the condition to pass the first scene. However, the type of victory is crucial. If the losses are too high, I will not be able to pass it.”

Fang Yuan entered the dream realm again with newfound knowledge.

This time, he tolerated the existence of the traitor, he went as the vanguard and used justice Gu along with many killer moves to slaughter the enemies, obtaining a perfect victory!

“Lord clan leader is so courageous!”

“We have won, we are victorious!”

“Nie clan has finally been exterminated. Hahaha.”

Amidst a wave of fun and laughter, the dream realm entered the second scene.

Within the hall, bright lights were shining. There were delicious food and wine on the table, dozens of Gu Masters were gathered here as they enjoyed a luxurious feast.

Fang Yuan found that he was sitting beside the main seat, towards his left was Chen clan leader, who was sitting at the main seat.

“What is going on?” Fang Yuan was shocked: “In the previous scene, I was in the role of Chen clan leader, but this time, I actually became the traitor vice clan leader?”

Fang Yuan was seeing this for the first time, he did not know whether to laugh or cry.

However, he soon thought: “No wonder I could not kill the traitor in the first scene. Because he is the next character that I should portray, now then, how do I pass this?”

Fang Yuan looked at the situation with cold eyes.

Chen clan leader drank a huge mouthful of wine as he placed down the empty wine cup, sighing: “We finally won! Brother, to speak the truth, I have finally relaxed only now. When I heard that Nie clan was planning to destroy the mountain, I could not sleep at all. They were unable to compete with the alliance of our two clans, so they created such a vicious plan, it was truly evil. Thankfully, heaven is not blind, they got what they deserved, these people died because of just deserts.”

Fang Yuan did not know what to say.

This Chen clan leader was ignorant, he had not realized the ill intentions of this vice clan leader.

But it was not surprising.

During the first scene, even though the vice clan leader used an information path method, he disguised it as a warning of concern, there were no traces left behind, it was truly hard to notice.

Fang Yuan had a sharp sense because he was a Gu Immortal, he realized the vice clan leader’s vicious scheme.

When he tried to kill the traitor in the first scene, a rebellion occurred.

“Wait, even if the vice clan leader’s members see him getting killed, they would not act so united, right?”

“There has to be some people who are hesitant during the chaos.”

“But these people rebelled in unity, after the vice clan leader was killed, they acted together and took revenge on the Chen clan members without holding back.”

Fang Yuan suddenly had a flash of inspiration, he understood: “So that means that the vice clan leader’s intentions to harm Chen clan leader is not his own plan, it is the collective plan of the entire Shan clan.”

Fang Yuan thought of this as Chen clan leader’s expression suddenly changed, he held his stomach as he stood up, taking several steps back: “This wine... is poisoned!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1820 No Justice in Heaven and Earth

“The wine is poisoned!” Chen clan leader’s body shook as he looked at Fang Yuan angrily: “Vice clan leader Shan, this is your wine, what are you trying to do?!”

This was a sudden change of events, Fang Yuan was slightly dazed.

But before he said anything, the Gu Master beside him stood up and chuckled: “What are we doing? We are killing you, we are eliminating the Chen clan members. Throughout history, this mountain has belonged to Shan clan, be it Chen clan or Nie clan, you two were initially servants of my clan!”

“You are bullshitting! This was my Chen clan’s mountain to begin with, our ancestors were kind and took in both of your clans after you were forced to vacate your destroyed mountain.” Chen clan’s Gu Master rebuked in a loud voice.

The Shan clan Gu Master who spoke continued in a cold voice: “Shameless servant, there is no point in talking. It is too late now, your clan leader has already drunk this poisoned wine, we created this using woman’s heart Gu, it counters your clan leader’s justice Gu. Without your clan leader, how can you Chen clan members resist our Shan clan?”

Chen clan’s Gu Masters turned pale as they realized the problem now.

Fang Yuan was dazed again, he turned around and asked the Shan clan Gu Master beside him: “Who told you that woman’s heart Gu can create a poisonous wine that counters justice Gu?”

The Shan clan Gu Master was the vice clan leader’s aide, he was stunned as he asked in a stupefied tone: “What? Lord, didn’t you tell me that yourself?”

“What?!” Fang Yuan was speechless.

Boom!

Chen clan leader burst out with a blinding white light, the paleness and anger vanished on his face as his expression turned solemn.

He stared with furious eyes towards Fang Yuan, he shouted in a heroic tone: “Shan Xing! You unscrupulous scoundrel! You dared to use this vile scheme on me, I was wrong about you, I had misjudged your personality, I had actually thought that you were willing to sacrifice yourself for the big picture and hand the role of clan leader to me. So you were always afraid of justice Gu and my strength, which was why you chose to conceal your ambitions.”

Fang Yuan felt a sharp headache as he thought rapidly: “Chen clan’s leader has rank five cultivation level, I am only rank four now, my Gu worms are also weaker than him, if we fought, I will not be Chen clan leader’s match.”

The aide beside him screamed in fear: “What, what is going on? He drank the poisoned wine but justice Gu is still working! Lord Shan Xing, didn’t you say...”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly instantly, he thought of the solution to this.

Indeed, as long as justice Gu stopped working, Chen clan’s leader would be poisoned, his strength would fall, he would not be an impossible opponent.

“So that’s it.” Fang Yuan died from the attacks of Chen clan’s leader but he carried a faint smile.

The second attempt at the dream realm.

Within the hall, bright lights were shining. There were delicious food and wine on the table, dozens of Gu Masters were gathered here as they enjoyed a luxurious feast.

Chen clan leader drank a huge mouthful of wine as he placed down the empty wine cup, sighing: “We finally won! Brother, to speak the truth, I have finally relaxed only now. When I heard that Nie clan was planning to destroy the mountain, I could not sleep at all. They were unable to compete with the alliance of our two clans, so they created such a vicious plan, it was truly evil. Thankfully, heaven is not blind, they got what they deserved, these people died because of just deserts.”

Fang Yuan laughed coldly, saying lightly: “There is a reason behind this. Nie clan did not come up with such a vicious plan, I was the one who arranged it and deceived you. The people you killed were all innocent.”

“What?!” Chen clan leader was completely shocked, he looked at Fang Yuan in disbelief: “Brother Shan, did you drink too much? What nonsense are you spouting!”

Fang Yuan looked at Chen clan leader with an eerie gaze: “You are too naive, you were kept in the dark all along. You are a cold blooded murderer, how many innocent people have you killed? Your hands are filled with blood, your justice is just a facade. You are a brute and a fool, also, you drank too much.”

“What?! You poisoned the wine?” Chen clan’s leader held his stomach in shock as he fell to the ground.

Chen clan’s Gu Masters were shocked and fearful, while Shan clan’s Gu Masters were ready and attacked immediately.

Chen clan’s leader wanted to put up resistance but he could only watch helplessly.

Fang Yuan’s aide shouted excitedly: “The wine was effective after all, Chen clan leader’s justice Gu has been neutralized.”

Fang Yuan wanted to roll his eyes.

To activate justice Gu, other than primeval essence, the Gu Master also needed to believe that they were on the side of justice.

Fang Yuan’s words made Chen clan’s leader enter a chaotic state, he suspected himself and felt incredibly ashamed, he could not activate justice Gu anymore.

The battle erupted and ended quickly.

Shan clan came prepared, all of the Chen clan members, from clan leader to clan members, were all dealt with.

When the hall returned to quietness, Chen clan’s Gu Masters were either dead or injured, those who were alive were captured.

The second scene was passed.

During the third scene.

Fang Yuan was inside a cell, the only cell mate he had was that Chen clan leader.

He was covered in injuries, his vitality was weak, his face was pale, his eyes were dyed in a purple-dark color, he was deeply poisoned.

Fang Yuan looked at his injuries, he had obviously been interrogated and was on the verge of death.

Even so, the four limbs and neck of Chen clan’s leader were chained up, he was lying on the ground, barely breathing.

“What is this situation?” Fang Yuan looked at himself, speechless. He was also chained up, his body was old and weak, he was thin like a twig, he was in about the same state as Chen clan’s leader.

Even though he had a rank four aperture, it was already destroyed, he had no Gu worms either.

“What am I supposed to do? I am not the traitor vice clan leader but another person now. Hmm... right now, other than me, only this guy is in the cell. I guess I need to talk to him to find out.” Fang Yuan laughed to himself and wanted to speak but Chen clan’s leader spoke in advance: “No need to mock me, father.”

“Father?!” Fang Yuan was surprised, he was acting as the father of Chen clan’s leader? Then why was he locked up here? Looking at the situation, he had been kept here for a long time, he was not a new entrant like this Chen clan leader.

Chen clan’s leader continued: “Father, I was the one who defeated you and locked you in here. But I have never regretted it! You were corrupt, the evidence was clear, you were neither impartial nor fair, you were not fit to be Chen clan’s leader. According to the rules, you deserved this punishment.”

“So you are the snitch.” Fang Yuan quipped.

Chen clan leader added: “Similarly, I do not regret my current situation, I deserved this! I killed so many innocent people, my hands are stained with the blood of Nie clan’s members. I deserve death!”

“Hehehe.” Chen clan’s leader laughed pitifully: “Shan clan wants to force me to hand over justice Gu, but what can they do? Their screaming, the sound of their whipping, the sound of hot iron scalding my flesh, all these sounds are like the cries of anguish and injustice of Nie clan’s members.”

“I would rather they whip me more and let me suffer more pain! But this cannot atone for my sins! It cannot undo my mistakes! I want to die, just let me die! I deserve this.”

“Ah!”

Chen clan’s leader grunted as he shook, he had died.

His death alerted the guard, soon, Shan Xing who had taken his position arrived.

“Damn it! We can’t get justice Gu now.” Shan Xing was furious, he gritted his teeth.

Suddenly, he turned around and looked at Fang Yuan with rage: “Old timer, didn’t we agree that you would urge your son to hand it over! What did you do? You are useless, go join your son!”

Crack.

Shan Xing said this as he acted, chopping off Fang Yuan’s head.

The exploration failed, Fang Yuan’s desolate soul was chased out of the dream realm again.

This time, Fang Yuan rested for a long time.

The third scene was the final scene, Fang Yuan’s exploration failed, his desolate soul suffered huge injuries.

While recovering, he thought about it: “In the third scene, I am Chen clan leader’s father but I am crippled, there is no hope in escaping with my strength.”

“The key to this should be Chen clan’s leader.”

“Then, what is the condition for passing the third dream realm?”

Fang Yuan had a lot of experience in dream realms now, he was the number one person in the world. This question did not stump him for long, he soon understood.

“The first two dream realm scenes have different identities but the conditions were the same. That was to satisfy the needs of the character.”

“In the first scene, I was the Chen clan leader, I needed to obtain victory with my clansmen, and it needed to be a beautiful victory without much losses.”

“In the second scene, I was the vice clan leader Shan Xing, I needed to succeed in my scheme and suppress his justice Gu.”

“And now in the third scene, I am Chen clan leader’s father, my son locked me up in the prison cell for a long time, I want to regain freedom. Thus, I chose to work with Shan Xing to get my son to hand over justice Gu, so that I can be free.”

Fang Yuan entered the dream again.

Fang Yuan laughed coldly.

Chen clan leader spoke in advance: “No need to mock me, father.”

“You are my son, isn’t mocking you like mocking myself for failing to raise you well? I simply regret it, I sacrificed myself for your sake, I wanted your justice to lead Chen clan towards glory and prosperity, but to think that you would become a prisoner that does not even believe himself. I was wrong about you, had I known this, I would not have created fake evidence of my corruption.” Fang Yuan said.

Chen clan leader was dazed, he was curious: “Father, what do you mean?”

Fang Yuan laughed coldly but did not speak.

Chen clan leader shook his head: “No father, you were corrupt, the evidence was there, how could it be fake?”

Fang Yuan laughed coldly again: “You think it is real, so it has to be real? Then what about Nie clan’s matter?”

Chen clan leader was lost for words.

Fang Yuan continued: “I pretended to not care for you but I was secretly nurturing you with great effort. To use justice Gu, the Gu Master needs to believe firmly in his own justice. Because you were too young, and your understanding of justice was too superficial, I had to do this and sacrifice myself so that you would understand your justice.”

“Father, speak clearly, what was the truth back then?”

Fang Yuan chuckled: “Is the truth really that important?”

Chen clan’s leader did not hesitate, he answered immediately: “Of course! Without the truth, how can there be justice?”

“That is why I said your understanding was too superficial. Is justice closely related to the truth?” Fang Yuan said slowly: “Let me ask you, when you slaughtered Nie clan, was it an act of justice? Even if they really had a plan to destroy our mountain, from their perspective: You are a murderer trying to slaughter their whole clan, by resisting you and defending their homes and family, wasn’t that justice too?”

“This...” Chen clan’s leader pondered.

“The enemy of an enemy is a friend. From their perspective, the so-called plan to destroy the mountain was just a form of deterrence, they were afraid that our Chen clan and Shan clan would ally. But in the end, even though you wiped them out, they did not destroy the mountain, right?” Fang Yuan asked.

Chen clan’s leader was silent.

Fang Yuan smiled: “I see you realized their side of justice too. You triggered the battle, slaughtering the enemies and also causing deaths and injuries to our clansmen, you thought that it was an act of justice, was that wrong? You were afraid that they would destroy the mountain’s foundation, in that case, it would collapse as the spirit spring vanishes, lives would be lost and homes would be destroyed, you were thinking for your clan, you eliminated the problem in advance, that was not wrong. It was also a form of justice.”

“Now look, both sides had their own perspective of justice, right?”

Chen clan’s leader fell into deep thought.

He had never considered this problem before.

Fang Yuan observed his expression as he said: “Let me ask you, is it justice that a sheep eats grass?”

“This... how can that be a form of justice?” Chen clan’s leader was dazed.

“From the sheep’s perspective, without grass, there would be no food, it would starve to death, it had to eat grass. But from the perspective of the grass, it had worked so hard to stay alive, getting out of the soil and growing larger to get more rain and sunlight. It worked so hard but the sheep decided to eat it, even uprooting and devouring everything the grass had, without any hope for survival. Isn’t the grass an innocent victim? Isn’t it pitiful?

Chen clan’s leader shook his head: “Isn’t sheep eating grass just a natural thing? I have never pitied the grass because this is how the world is meant to be.”

“Precisely.” Fang Yuan nodded: “The truth of this world is the law of the jungle, big fish eats small fish, and small fish eats shrimp, this is what nature entails. What crime can there be? There is no such thing as justice here. Sheep eats grass, humans eat sheep, that has nothing to do with justice, it is just for survival.”

“There is no such thing as justice in heaven and earth, there is only justice made by humanity.”

“Since time immemorial, humans had to unite to gain strength for the sake of survival, in order to live in this cruel world!”

“Then, how can humans become united?”

“Through organizations, through law, and through morals.”

“We organize clans or sects, distributing work according to an individual’s ability. We use laws to restrain people, to tell people what they cannot do. We use morals to provide direction, to encourage people to do certain things. Mothers are doting and children are filial, neighbors live in harmony, they all follow the rule of justice and morals. Be it intentionally or unintentionally, from the start of time, any organization would always promote this, because organizations follow their own survival instincts.”

“Or rather, the organizations with comprehensive laws, realistic morals, and proper class systems find it easier to survive. After a long time passes, this becomes the norm of society for the future generations.”

Chen clan leader was tongue-tied, he was completely stunned by Fang Yuan’s words.

He had never considered this.

He knew that justice was good, but he did not know why.

He knew that morals were good, but he did not know why.

And now, Fang Yuan told him the answer, justice and morals were man-made creations. This could be either a conscious or a subconscious creation, people follow these guidelines and allow themselves to survive better in a hostile environment, they can stay united as a group for a long time.

Fang Yuan concluded: “When you understand the core meaning of justice, you will know — this so-called justice is like iron armor, it is a human tool. When you wear it, you need to use it like a tool. But look at you now, this iron armor has become your chain, it is binding you down.”

Chen clan leader looked at Fang Yuan in a daze, he did not speak.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “The truth and justice, are they really related? What is the truth behind Nie clan, what is the truth behind my corruption? What does this have to do with justice? Son, you must understand, your justice is just a tool, you must make use of it, do not get restrained by it.”

Chen clan’s leader was silent for a long time, after a while, he said in a hoarse voice: “Father, I understand now.”

Saying so, a white light burst out of his body, it was dazzling and bright, filling the entire surroundings.

This dream realm faded into nothingness amidst the sharp light.

Fang Yuan’s desolate soul returned to reality.

The dream realm exploration succeeded.

“I guessed correctly.”

“The father and son were both clan leaders of Chen clan, they hate Shan clan’s action. If I help Shan Xing and Chen clan’s leader hands over the Gu, even if I regain freedom, I would not pass the final scene. At most, I would be chased out without injuries.”

“Only by teaching Chen clan’s leader and resolving his guilt can I make him use justice Gu once more to break out of this prison. That is the condition to clearing the final scene.”

“This dream realm is quite interesting.”

“Oh? I advanced to human path grandmaster.” Fang Yuan inspected himself and smiled plainly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1821 Gaining Heaven Form Again

“Heavenly Court...” Qin Ding Ling stood on Heaven Overseeing Tower as she looked at the scenery of Heavenly Court, showing a look of nostalgia.

A long time later, she sighed softly: “Even though the changes are huge, I can still vaguely remember the scenery of three hundred thousand years ago in my memories.”

Beside her stood Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei had a reverent expression.

This senior female immortal here could not compare to Duke Long’s seniority, but she had a huge background as well.

She was originally a certain generation’s first supreme elder of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, Heaven’s Envy Manor, the day before she was going to become a member of Heavenly Court, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made one declaration and she was forced to be his concubine.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable collected a harem and had many concubine palaces, they were present in Southern Border, Northern Plains, Western Desert, Eastern Sea, and Central Continent.

Qin Ding Ling was the immortal empress of Central Continent’s concubine palace in her time!

After Giant Sun Immortal Venerable died, Qin Ding Ling vanished mysteriously, but to think that she would appear a few days ago.

“Senior Qin Ding Ling’s identity is not false, but according to history, she cultivated metal path, why did she transform into a luck path Gu Immortal?” Fairy Zi Wei had questions in her mind.

At this time, Qin Ding Ling suddenly turned around, there was a sharp light in her gaze that could see through worldly affairs.

She was not a beauty in the most traditional sense, even though her nose bridge was tall, the tip of her nose was a little sharp, her lips were thin and her eyes were thin and long. However, when blended together, she had a unique sense of beauty, her appearance would be deeply engraved into people's hearts when they see her.

She was taller than normal people, her shoulders were broad, she stood straight and had a heroic aura. She wore a huge cape on her back that extended from her shoulders to the ground.

The cape was made of a special material, it seemed to be made from pieces of golden armor, when put together, from time to time, golden light would flow along the cape in thin waves.

The broad cape emphasized the beauty of her majestic body. Especially her long legs, they were also covered in armor that were black and golden in color.

She had outstanding presence, she was like a born royalty that ruled above the common man. When she looked at people, because of her height, she often had to look down. She had an authoritative aura that was fermented naturally within her, people would lower their heads and not dare to look at her directly, it was as if they could only look at her feet in order to not offend her.

Qin Ding Ling spoke lightly: "Fairy Zi Wei, I know the questions you have. The truth is, I had intentionally gone missing. Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was invincible in the world, he controlled the entire era, nobody could resist him. Thankfully, he was not a Demon Venerable, even though I was forced to be his immortal empress, I also had my own objectives, that was to learn the profundity of luck path from him."

"After Giant Sun Immortal Venerable died, I gained a lot of insight, I decided to abandon metal path and cultivate luck path. But I already had rank eight cultivation level back then, the risks were too great if I were to cultivate luck path. I gained the help of Heavenly Court and obtained a chance to hibernate. I also abandoned all of my metal path dao marks and turned them into a metal coffin in which I was buried deep within the earth vein, entering closed cultivation to comprehend luck path."

"This slumber continued for three hundred thousand years, when I woke up, the world had already changed beyond my comprehension."

Qin Ding Ling's tone was filled with deep emotions.

Three hundred thousand years later, everything had changed.

The huge shadow cast down upon her, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, had died long ago.

After him, there were Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

Right now, the world was facing the wave of the great era, all sorts of prophecies and signs showed that a supreme venerable was going to appear.

"So that's it." Fairy Zi Wei let out a breath of air, joy was expressed on her face: "Senior, you came at the perfect timing. I must admit fault for this, Heavenly Court failed time and time again. One of the reasons for this was our weakness in luck path, we were restrained and often lost to that demon."

Qin Ding Ling nodded: "I've seen the information, to think that a demon like Fang Yuan emerged. This is very rare even in human history. However, don't think too lowly of yourself, your decisions were not wrong, it was just that the enemy is too crafty and has multiple venerable inheritances. Especially the latter, it made Fang Yuan extremely hard to deal with.”

“I am afraid that the reason I woke up this time is also most likely to deal with Fang Yuan.”

Fairy Zi Wei was surprised: “What does senior mean by that?”

Qin Ding Ling smiled with deep meaning: “Fairy Zi Wei, there is profundity in my awakening. Let me ask you, who woke me up?”

“It was Gu Yue Fang Zheng.”

“Exactly.” Qin Ding Ling said slowly: “The otherworldly demon does not exist within fate, it is an anomaly of the world. Heaven’s will tried to use this pawn against Spectral Soul’s heaven defying attempt, it naturally created a way to restrain the otherworldly demon too. Like how the antidote for a venomous snake often exists near it, Gu Yue Fang Zheng is the safety measure that the Heavenly Dao created against Fang Yuan.”

As she said this, Qin Ding Ling looked at Fairy Zi Wei with an expression of praise: “You know little about luck path, but you managed to deduce this and nurtured Fang Zheng to become an immortal, it was not easy.”

“I do not deserve this praise, this junior was only doing her best to defend Heavenly Court, and protect the righteousness of humanity.”

“Hahaha, well said, this is the spirit of Heavenly Court, even after three hundred thousand years, it has not changed!”

Qin Ding Ling chuckled as she continued saying with happiness: “The otherworldly demon Fang Yuan is an uncertain variable, Gu Yue Fang Zheng is the key to restraining him, he will change as Fang Yuan changes. Spectral Soul failed to defy heaven, while Fang Yuan escaped from the control of heaven’s will. He is becoming stronger, he has no weaknesses and is growing extremely quickly at a shocking pace, even Heavenly Court is without options against him. Thus, to mend this problem, Fang Zheng woke me up and caused me to interfere in this world again.”

“Fate is constant while luck is a variable, the higher the cultivation level and strength of the Gu Immortal, the stronger and grander their luck will be. This is because every thought and action of theirs can cause great changes in the surroundings. Fang Yuan has incredibly strong luck, but you nurtured Fang Zheng and made him an immortal, this caused him to exert enough influence to wake me up and resist Fang Yuan’s current advantage. In the future, I am sure that similar situations will continue to occur, this demon Fang Yuan will not be free for long.”

At this point, Qin Ding Ling instructed Fairy Zi Wei: “You need to continue putting in resources to nurture Fang Zheng and ensure his safety. As long as we have him, we can follow the arrangements of heaven’s will, we will achieve success with less effort.”

“Junior understands.” Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes shined with bright light.

All along, she had not made much progress in dealing with Fang Yuan, that was because he was too crafty and well defended, Fairy Zi Wei could not deduce his whereabouts.

Fairy Zi Wei knew the purpose of Gu Yue Fang Zheng but she did not place emphasis on him, she believed in her and Heavenly Court’s strength, her arrangements regarding Fang Zheng were just a supplementary move.

But after getting Qin Ding Ling’s alert, Fairy Zi Wei understood that Gu Yue Fang Zheng was the most useful pawn in dealing with Fang Yuan!

Right after she nurtured Fang Zheng to become an immortal, a good result had already occurred — Qin Ding Ling awakened.

As long as she continued investing in him, more people similar to Qin Ding Ling would show up.

“The stronger Fang Zheng becomes, the grander his luck will be, and the more variables he will be able to create. These are all the arrangements of heaven’s will, specially used to counter Fang Yuan.”

“In that case, we will focus on Fang Zheng, with Heavenly Court supporting him fully.”

Fairy Zi Wei grasped the situation with great clarity, she immediately changed her tactic to the most suitable one.

“Oh, one more thing. I have many incomplete Immortal Gu recipes here, I had secretly obtained them by probing Giant Sun Immortal Venerable in the past. These recipes have to do with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path Immortal Gu, I need you to complete them and refine them.” Qin Ding Ling took out an information path Gu worm.

Fairy Zi Wei quickly received it with both hands: “I will do my best to deduce them, please rest assured, senior!”

Immemorial white heaven, Five Xiangs grotto-heaven.

Fang Yuan had been cultivating here recently.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Thought Sword Waterfall!

Rumble!

With a loud sound, a grand waterfall appeared inside heaven form killer move, the silver waterfall was majestic and vast, it slammed into the wills that were stored up at the bottom of heaven form.

Each drop of water in this waterfall was a thought, it had the appearance of a sword.

The waterfall crashed down and instantly created a huge crevice, decimating a large amount of wills.

After a few breaths of time, the waterfall vanished, a lake appeared within the land of wills, within the lake was a pool of sword thoughts.

Immortal killer move — Swordsman!

Fang Yuan willed as he activated another move.

Once this move was activated, the lake water started to bubble like it was boiling, next, warriors jumped out of the lake one by one. They all had Fang Yuan’s appearance and held longswords in their hands, they hacked and slashed at the lingering wills, each attack caused cracks to form on the collective wills.

These two moves had outstanding origins, Fang Yuan had created them as compound killer moves.

Myriad thought sword waterfall used wisdom sword Immortal Gu as the core, it contained sword path, it was more effective on these wills compared to using wisdom sword Immortal Gu alone.

Meanwhile, the killer move swordsman contained sword path and human path, Fang Yuan had successfully created it recently after becoming a human path grandmaster.

Two hours later.

Suddenly, the loud cry of a crane filled the entire Five Xiangs grotto-heaven.

The white crane which was sleeping had been awakened from its dreams, it stretched its body and flapped its wings, it was very elegant.

“I finally grasped control of heaven form again!”

“Haha, I spent less than half the time compared to the previous life.”

“It is time to move out and find Beast Calamity grotto-heaven and Profound Literature grotto-heaven.”

Fang Yuan smiled as bright light shined in his eyes.

Good events came in succession, he obtained a report from Lang Ya land spirit: Another rank six luck path Immortal Gu had been successfully refined.

Fang Yuan had not obtained regret Gu yet, he did not want to do a mass refinement to raise the rank of his current Immortal Gu for now.

But he extorted the Southern Border righteous path and obtained lots of luck path immortal materials, he had been trying to refine these luck path Immortal Gu for the current period of time!

Immortal Gu were unique, once he refines them, others would not be able to.

The sovereign immortal aperture had already developed to a certain extent, Fang Yuan was affluent enough to feed mere rank six Immortal Gu with no problems!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1822 Using Soul Replacement Twice

“According to my memories, it should be around here.” Fang Yuan stopped at a certain location in immemorial white heaven.

There was nothing here, but according to the memories of Fang Yuan’s previous life, he knew that Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was right here.

The grotto-heaven’s entrance was closed and hidden in empty space, it could not be seen with the naked eye. Fang Yuan had used heaven form in the previous life to discover the existence of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven. It was not as troublesome this time, he could directly locate it.

“Go, heaven form.” Fang Yuan willed.

Heaven form was a one-legged crane that was covered in snow-white feathers which had no dust or dirt, it had a long beak that was red in color.

After it flew out, it flew round and round the empty space nearby.

As it moved, information from heaven form went to the depths of Fang Yuan’s mind.

These were all information regarding Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan soon learned about the details of the inside world.

“Even though I successfully annexed this grotto-heaven in the previous life, I came at a slightly different time in this life, some unexpected mishaps might occur. If Heavenly Court has some arrangements inside and I go right in, there would be huge problems.”

Fang Yuan acted vigilantly, after investigating it for a long time, he confirmed that Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was still an isolated world that did not interact with the outside world.

He relaxed at long last as he activated a killer move that he had prepared for a long time.

After some effort, the killer move was completed, Fang Yuan spat out lightly from his mouth.

A grey soul ball shot into the grotto-heaven at lightning speed. It was so fast that it vanished without a trace, as if all that happened was an illusion.

After the grey soul ball entered Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, it quickly descended.

Any living being that entered Beast Calamity grotto-heaven would be affected by the myriad beings assimilation transformation killer move that was in the grotto-heaven, they would be turned into a beast calamity.

The last time Fang Yuan attacked, he had met with this issue as he turned into Bull-headed Demon God, he slaughtered countless beings and caused a river of blood to flow, corpses lay on the ground everywhere. Even though he was invincible and rampaged unhindered, he only managed to snatch the Beast Calamity inheritance, he did not gain the acknowledgement of the qilin heavenly spirit, he managed to use myriad beings assimilation transformation with difficulty, but obtained no Immortal Gu, it was merely half an inheritance.

After that, because of the battle in Eastern Sea over Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan stopped his plans here and went to Eastern Sea, but gained nothing.

Eventually, he had to come here and change his tactics, he annexed the entire Beast Calamity grotto-heaven after subduing it.

All these incidents made his efficiency very low, Fang Yuan wasted lots of time and effort, the Beast Calamity grotto-heaven that he obtained was also heavily damaged by himself, he killed almost all of the Gu Immortals inside the grotto-heaven.

That would not do!

Fang Yuan decided to change his tactics against Beast Calamity grotto-heaven this time. He wanted to preserve it at its full strength, he wanted to gather all of the Gu Immortals here and place them in his sovereign immortal aperture to increase the scale of his subordinates.

The grey soul ball descended rapidly in the sky.

Myriad beings assimilation transformation started to exert its influence on the soul ball, but it had all sorts of transformation path dao marks on its surface.

The number of transformation path dao marks continued to be expended as it resisted the power of myriad beings assimilation transformation, maintaining the soul ball’s shape.

Fang Yuan was outside, using heaven form to observe this.

The grey soul ball had limited time, it could not be replenished after leaving Fang Yuan. Even though it had a lot of transformation path dao marks to resist myriad beings assimilation transformation, the expenditure was heavy, it would be destroyed after some time.

If not for the transformation path dao marks protecting it, the grey soul ball would be transformed into a beast calamity due to the power of myriad beings assimilation transformation.

It would likely become an ancient soul beast.

By then, not only would he be exposed, he would also be attacked by the alerted Gu Immortals.

In that case, Fang Yuan’s plans would end in failure.

But thankfully. Fang Yuan had planned this meticulously.

Soon, the soul ball reached the ground, it sneaked into a bustling city.

It roamed in the alleys, hiding in the dark corners as it moved rapidly like a fish in water.

“Beat, beat him up harshly!”

Boom boom boom.

In a small alley, a few rich youngsters were beating up a poor kid of their own age.

The poor lad wore a thin shirt, he was covered in wounds everywhere.

He was already beaten to a pulp, he could not resist, he had to bend down and hold his head, shrinking into a ball.

Eventually, he fainted from the assault.

Seeing this, the rich young masters quickly stopped.

“Don’t tell me we killed him?”

“No, no, that’s too scary!”

“This lad is so weak.”

“How dare this lad get close to Lin clan’s young miss, he did not even heed the warning of young master Lin, hmph he deserves it even if he dies!”

The youngsters walked away with smug expressions, feeling agitated.

“Good chance, my luck is quite good!” The grey soul ball arrived just in time as ripples appeared on the surface.

This good luck was not a coincidence, it was influenced by Fang Yuan’s own luck.

Seeing that there was nobody around, the grey soul ball did not hesitate, it entered the chest of the poor lad and enveloped his soul entirely.

The young man had a weak soul, he was resisting instinctively.

But Fang Yuan’s grey soul ball was a portion of his desolate soul, it was incredibly powerful, how could a mortal soul defend against it?

In almost an instant, the young man’s soul was destroyed by the grey soul ball entirely.

The grey soul ball expanded rapidly, turning into the young man’s appearance. It occupied the young man’s body and controlled his mind, taking over and becoming a native person.

“From today onwards, I am the young lad, Zhan Bu Du[1].”

That’s right, this grey soul ball was none other than the soul path killer move — Soul Replacement.

In the past, Shadow Sect had used this move to successfully plant spies in Lang Ya blessed land. Until now, the traitor Sixth Hair was still alive.

The grey soul ball originated from Fang Yuan’s desolate soul, it could not be detected by land spirits or heavenly spirits.

This was the specialty of soul replacement.

If not for this, Lang Ya land spirit would have discovered the secret of Shadow Sect’s spies long ago.

And Fang Yuan had modified soul replacement on that foundation, adding in many transformation path Immortal Gu to supplement it.

Thus, the grey soul ball had transformation path dao marks and could resist the influence of myriad beings assimilation transformation.

“However, after soul replacement succeeded, all my actions will be observable by the heavenly spirit, I need to act with caution from now on.”

“Thankfully, I have already destroyed the young lad’s soul and obtained his memories, I know everything about his life.”

Even though the heavenly spirit was unlikely to place attention on this tiny area, who knows?

At the next moment, Fang Yuan’s clone started his performance.

The young man grunted as he opened his eyes, he had rage and helplessness on his face.

“Damn it.” He climbed up with difficulty, because of his injuries, the intense pain made him gasp loudly.

Eventually, he held onto the wall as support, walking out slowly.

Fang Yuan’s main body observed for a while longer, seeing that this clone had adapted well without any accidents, he stopped heaven form and left.

He rapidly arrived near Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

This information path grotto-heaven was quite troublesome to take down.

Fang Yuan lacked information path attainment, while there was an information path rank eight Gu Immortal inside the grotto-heaven defending it.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan failed because of this rank eight Gu Immortal, he was stopped outside and could not get in.

Like earlier, Fang Yuan investigated this place again.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven was also not a trap, it had not been affected by the ink effect, there were no negative changes for Fang Yuan.

Thus, Fang Yuan instilled immortal essence and activated heaven form, creating a white light passage.

“Such guts! Which vile fiend dares to invade my homeland?!” A vast and mighty voice resounded from within, speaking with righteousness.

Next, an old man resembling a white robed scholar, possessing rank eight aura, showed up at the other end of the white light passage.

“He came out after all.” Fang Yuan was not surprised, he opened a slit of the sovereign immortal aperture’s entrance, a large number of desolate beasts, ancient desolate beasts, and immemorial desolate beasts were let out.

Heaven form itself could not transport killer moves, once Fang Yuan uses any killer moves, the white light passage would break.

But the white light passage could transport living beings, like how Fang Yuan had used it to invade Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

“Don’t even think about it!” The white robed old man shouted loudly, he used an information path offensive method to create a rain of written characters that slaughtered the beast groups.

A few breaths of time later, the white light passage collapsed, an immemorial desolate beast was in a pitiful state as its head had just entered when the passage broke.

Thus, its head was left in Profound Literature grotto-heaven while its body was outside.

“No matter who you are, you will have to pay an unimaginable price to invade this place.” The white robed old man called out.

Fang Yuan smiled nonchalantly.

He went to another area and started to do the same thing.

But similar to the previous life, the white robed old man arrived quickly, slaughtering the invading beast groups again.

Fang Yuan changed several locations, but each attempt ended in failure.

“No matter who you are, with me around, don’t think of succeeding!” The white robed old man had great morale.

“Is that so?” Fang Yuan laughed coldly as he retreated.

Within Profound Literature grotto-heaven, at a certain courtyard, a young male scholar looked at his reflection in the well water as he thought: “From today onwards, I am Li Xiao Bai[2].”

[1] Trivia – This is the name of the MC in Mashin Hero Wataru, an old anime that was popular in China in the 1990s.

[2] Trivia – Reference to the famous poet Li Bai. Xiao Bai also can be slang or shorthand for a couple of different things, like novice or a man who lives off a woman.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1823 Cooking Luck Po

Immemorial white heaven.

Fang Yuan rode on spontaneous auspicious cloud as he flew in the sky.

The heaven form white crane was following closely, circling around him.

The killer move spontaneous auspicious cloud was obtained by Fang Yuan from Hei Fan grotto-heaven, after some modifications, he used it as a movement killer move.

But the auspicious cloud did not follow Fang Yuan’s will, but moved according to the mystery of luck path.

The route that the auspicious cloud moved was the one with the greatest luck.

Spontaneous auspicious cloud and heaven form worked together very well, Fang Yuan had used this in his previous life to find Beast Calamity grotto-heaven and Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Not long ago, Fang Yuan had already used soul replacement in both the grotto-heavens.

After that, Fang Yuan waited for his clones to develop while he continued cultivating and gathering strength.

His qi path killer moves were still in the process of familiarization, after intense practice, he could already use them to fight against rank eight Gu Immortals. But the trump card unlimited qi sea killer move was still quite foreign to Fang Yuan.

Other than training killer moves, Fang Yuan’s main body also patrolled immemorial white heaven and used both spontaneous auspicious cloud and heaven form to attempt to find more grotto-heavens.

But until now, Fang Yuan had found nothing.

“Even though heaven form has a wide range, against this huge immemorial white heaven, it is just too tiny in comparison.”

“But along this route, I had great gains, I obtained a lot of rank eight immortal materials.”

“This is truly the best route for me, I was lucky all along the way, it was filled with surprises!”

“Oh? My time path clone has obtained results from deduction?”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light.

His main body cultivated diligently but had no great gains, but after so much time spent on deductions, the time path clone obtained quite a good result.

“Another Immortal Gu House’s deduction is completed! Very good!”

Fang Yuan was overjoyed, he diverted some of his attention to his immortal aperture as he started assembling it.

Immemorial white heaven was very dangerous with countless immemorial desolate beasts roaming around, there were even immemorial desolate beast groups occasionally. If ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals explored this place they would need to be vigilant. Some rank seven experts would also explore immemorial white heaven for cultivation resources occasionally, but they were all fearful and careful.

However, Fang Yuan had spontaneous auspicious cloud, he only had good luck along the way. With the help of heaven form, he could detect any danger in advance, Fang Yuan was able to easily avoid them ahead of time.

Iron wall Gu.

This was a rank six metal path Gu worm, it was the size of an adult’s fist, heavy and resembling a rhinoceros beetle, but be it the head or back, it was squarish and straight, its body had almost no curves at all.

Evidently, iron wall Gu was a defensive Gu worm, it had been taken from Lang Ya Sect’s inventory, used by Fang Yuan now to create his second Immortal Gu House.

Once iron wall Gu was activated, a large number of mortal Gu followed.

These mortal Gu were of various types, there were three thousand of them, among which fire path and metal path were the most numerous, they were all rank five Gu.

Iron wall Gu was fixed at the center while the mortal Gu surrounded it as they moved like a wave.

A wave of black light appeared among the mortal Gu like spreading ink, it enveloped all of the Gu worms as a black ball of light was created.

The black ball floated in the sky, its surface was uneven as the Gu worms inside started to fly even faster now.

After reaching a certain speed, the black ball became extremely smooth, there were no bumps anymore, it was completely round.

At this point, Fang Yuan started to activate his fire path Immortal Gu.

He activated three fire path Immortal Gu and a large number of mortal Gu, creating a flame.

The flame had an intense scarlet color, coiling around the black ball as it burned continuously.

An alluring fragrance started to spread, mortals who breathed it in would indulge in it and feel deep desires and imaginations that could not be stopped.

After burning for many hours, the black ball turned into a golden ball of light on the surface, the black color earlier seemed to be soot that was removed by the flames.

Fang Yuan maintained this golden ball of light as he stopped the flame, taking out water path and wisdom path Immortal Gu as he created a clear spring.

The spring water doused the golden ball as sizzling sounds were heard, it was like red-hot iron submerged in water.

But no steam was produced, all of the water had fused into the golden ball.

The golden ball of light started to become slower in rotation, the Gu worms inside looked like tiny golden meteors that spun around endlessly.

The pattern of their traces became more complicated and disorganized, it would make people feel dizzy when looking, but no collisions had taken place at all during this period.

At this time, Fang Yuan took out his second supplementary Immortal Gu.

Food path Immortal Gu — Cook.

It looked like a giant water bug that was the size of a basin. It had a triangular head and short feelers, under its feelers were two compound eyes shining in golden light.

Its body was flat and oval shaped, it was dark-red in color and had the sensation of touching sand, it was very warm.

It had three pairs of legs, the front pair was the strongest, looking like two thick and powerful pincers.

Immortal Gu Cook was obtained by Fang Yuan when he extorted the Southern Border righteous path.

By now, Fang Yuan had already returned the bodies and souls of the Southern Border Gu Immortal captives, he started to exchange Immortal Gu with them.

Fang Yuan spent an hour before he placed Immortal Gu Cook into the golden ball of light.

The golden ball expanded by double its original size as a result.

Fang Yuan was already covered in sweat, he had finally gotten past this hardest part of the first step.

Assembling an Immortal Gu House was not easy, it was much more difficult than using normal killer moves. If it failed, the Gu Immortal would face a backlash, the Gu worms used would also be damaged or destroyed.

Thus, Fang Yuan was extremely careful and vigilant.

As he continued, Fang Yuan added Dog Shit Luck, Qi Luck, Luck Inspection, Connect Luck, Time Luck, and his other luck path Immortal Gu into the ball.

His luck path attainment level was master, while formation path was grandmaster, he already had intuition.

Thus, during the process of assembling it, if any bad feelings emerged, Fang Yuan would pay close attention to them and make appropriate adjustments.

The most important thing was that his method of assembling the Immortal Gu House was deduced by the time path clone using the light of wisdom, it was very exemplary.

Half a month later in the sovereign immortal aperture’s time, Fang Yuan succeeded.

The golden light ball exploded as a brand new Immortal Gu House was formed.

Different from Myriad Year Flying Warship, this Immortal Gu House was smaller and had the size of a regular bowl.

It was shining in golden light, it was covered in a pure white light, sacred and royal.

It was a pot, the pot’s rim was about a thumb’s thickness, the internal space was large but there was nothing inside now.

Outside the pot, there were eight dragons, six were vivid and lively, while two were blurry and crude.

These eight dragons were all at the base of the pot, coiling around each other and extending their claws to become the legs of this pot.

The eight dragon tails pointed in eight different directions, towards the north, south, east, west, northeast, northwest, southeast, southwest.

Each dragon claw was attached to the surface of the pot, the dragon bodies moved upwards as the dragon heads hung on the edge, looking inside. The dragon eyes were shut as if they were sleeping.

Rank six Immortal Gu House — Cooking Luck Pot!

Even though rank seven Immortal Gu like food path Immortal Gu Cook were used, the core luck path Immortal Gu were still rank six, thus this Immortal Gu House had a slightly lower rank.

This Immortal Gu House was within the records of Giant Sun’s true inheritance, Fang Yuan’s time path clone had improved upon and modified it. Evidently, this was a luck path Immortal Gu House.

It could not carry Gu Immortals into battle, it was tiny and had another use.

In fact, it was quite similar to Star Constellation Chessboard.

Fang Yuan instilled his immortal essence as Cooking Luck Pot started to vibrate, it turned into a golden light and flew above Fang Yuan’s head, vanishing from sight.

Even Fang Yuan could not see this Immortal Gu House with his naked eye, he had to use methods to verify its existence.

It was quite easy to ‘see’ it. Fang Yuan willed as he instilled immortal essence, activating one of Cooking Luck Pot’s killer moves.

Luck inspection!

Fang Yuan’s vision changed rapidly, he saw that his luck was flowing into Cooking Luck Pot continuously.

After a while, Cooking Luck Pot became filled with luck.

“Luck inspection Immortal Gu is only rank six while I have rank eight cultivation level, just this Immortal Gu alone cannot inspect my luck.”

“Cooking Luck Pot is only rank six, I can only see the luck inside this pot, but not the full extent of my luck.”

Even so, Fang Yuan could still see a bit of his luck on the outside of the pot.

There was a river-like luck with clear and bright water, it seemed like a miniature River of Time, it was most connected to Fang Yuan. One end of the river extended into the pot while the other merged into empty space.

This was the luck of Fang Yuan’s time path clone.

The time path clone had stable luck, but a trace of black qi was forming and growing continuously. This was Spring Autumn Cicada’s drawback, it generated bad luck. Once in a while, Fang Yuan would need to use luck path methods against it.

There was another luck, it looked like a layer of pink fog, it was floating near the pot, circling around it.

This was the luck of Fang Yuan’s dream path clone.

The pink fog was weak and thin, it continued to change forms as it resembled a vague shadow.

Only after the dream path clone becomes rank six would it have comparable luck with the time path clone.

Other than that, there was the dragonman clone’s luck, it was a tiny purple dragon flying near the pot. Fang Yuan’s clone in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven had a grey and dirty sparrow luck while his Profound Literature grotto-heaven clone had a flower bud luck that was wilting.

“These two clones have weak luck. It seems that the grey soul ball consumed a lot of luck. And because they and my main body are separated by a small world, there is some obstruction.”

“In that case...” Fang Yuan willed as he activated Cooking Luck Pot.

Cooking Luck Pot started to rise in temperature as the luck started to boil.

Two dragons at the edge of the pot opened their eyes and mouths, sucking at the luck in the pot.

Immediately, two portions of luck were absorbed into the dragons’ stomachs.

The dragons started to move as their heads turned towards the grey sparrow and flower bud, spitting out at them.

The two spurts of luck shot out and fused into the grey sparrow luck and flower bud luck.

Instantly, the grey sparrow chirped and turned into a sharp beaked eagle, it spread its wings and flew. Meanwhile, the flower bud luck seemed invigorated as it bloomed profusely in vibrant colors!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1824 Egg Falling From the Sky

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s self luck true inheritance had a comprehensive description of all the different forms of luck.

Generally, the seven main colors of luck were black, grey, white, red, gold, azure, purple. But there were also uncommon colors that were created by the mixing of the above colors.

Luck had all sorts of special forms and appearances, they varied according to the situations and conditions that the individuals were in.

Fang Yuan, for example, had very different luck compared to his various clones.

Fang Yuan owned the complete self luck true inheritance of Giant Sun and a portion of all living beings luck true inheritance, he only needed to take a look at these colors and shapes to learn about their conditions and deduce a lot of information.

Cooking Luck Pot had Time Luck, Luck Inspection, Dog Shit Luck, Qi Luck, Connect Luck, and other Immortal Gu, the abilities of these luck path Immortal Gu were just the basic functions of Cooking Luck Pot.

The main ability of this Immortal Gu House was — Cooking Luck.

The shape, size, and color of one’s luck was a representation of their current situation and possible changes.

For example, if Fang Yuan had a dense black coffin luck now, it meant that he was going to face fatal danger. Fang Yuan could use Cooking Luck Pot to cook and change this black coffin luck into a brand new luck within the pot.

For example, fortune luck or peach blossom luck.

Giant Sun’s self luck true inheritance revolved around researching on one’s own luck and how to modify it. This Cooking Luck Pot was the peak creation within this true inheritance, it had the ability to cook any form of luck and convert it into something the user wants.

“However, I have rank eight cultivation level while Cooking Luck Pot is only rank six, it can barely affect my main body’s luck.”

“However, my other clones are different, with the highest being rank seven and most of the rest being mortals.”

“With the cooking luck I used earlier, the effect and change should be immediate.”

Fang Yuan tested it for a while before continuing to cultivate and practise his qi path killer moves.

He definitely had to raise Cooking Luck Pot’s rank, but currently, regret Gu was inside the paradise, dragon whale grotto-heaven.

Fang Yuan could command the hairy man Gu Immortals to refine rank six luck path Immortal Gu en masse, but to advance them to rank seven, he lacked some crucial elements.

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Fang Yuan’s clone, Zhan Bu Du, was walking slowly.

The crowd was noisy, people moved rapidly like a current.

“This is the largest Gu Master market in the city, it is bustling.” Zhan Bu Du observed and thought.

He was only rank one now, he was too young.

And because he was broke, he came here this time to collect information and increase his understanding of the surroundings.

“Gu Masters need resources to cultivate, I am totally broke now. My most important task now is to earn money.”

Zhan Bu Du had an innocent young face but he was full of confidence internally.

He was a split soul of Fang Yuan, a Gu Immortal, how hard was it to find a method of earning a fortune as a Gu Master?

But after some observation, Zhan Bu Du’s brows became covered in a thin layer of bitterness.

“Gu Masters are known as Combat Beast Envoys in this place. Even though they both use Gu worms, these Gu worms are used to nurture combat beasts or to fuse with wild beasts and plants. There are no instances of Gu Masters fighting alone in this place.”

Fang Yuan walked around the market, he found very few Gu worms here, most shops were selling beasts or plants.

“It is no surprise.”

“This Beast Calamity grotto-heaven has the power of the killer move myriad beings assimilation transformation, it is very easy for Gu Masters to fuse with beasts or plants.”

“In the outside world, they would need to pay more than ten times the price to achieve it.”

“Because the method of fusing with beasts and plants is too easy and advantageous, traditional Gu cultivation has been buried in history.”

“Of course, this is also the intention of Beast Calamity Immortal.”

Even Beast Calamity Immortal died after suffering heavy injuries from his first myriad tribulation, he had placed a lot of effort in developing this grotto-heaven in the past, he probably created this trend so that he could control the living beings inside well.

After all, Beast Calamity grotto-heaven had a really large number of people.

Zhan Bu Du wanted to take over this place, he could not use the traditional Gu cultivation method, he had to assimilate and become a Combat Beast Envoy.

Becoming a Combat Beast Envoy could be said to be easy but also hard — it only required the Gu Master to successfully fuse with a wild beast or plant.

This was the most basic step.

After that, he could go to the Combat Beast Guild and spend money to register and become a guild member.

Inside Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, the Combat Beast Guild was the largest and sole super force.

If Zhan Bu Du joined it, he would have the lowest ranking Combat Beast Disciple status. Above disciple level would be the main forces of the Combat Beast Guild — Combat Beast Envoy.

Above Combat Beast Envoy was Combat Beast Warrior, this needed Gu Immortal cultivation level and they were mostly city lords.

And above Combat Beast Warrior was the one and only Combat Beast King.

The structure of the organization was simple and crude.

Zhan Bu Du not only lacked Gu worms now, he also lacked combat beasts and combat plants. Especially the latter two, they were expensive.

After collecting enough information, Zhan Bu Du had a plan in his mind.

“According to my plan, in a month’s time, I will have enough finances to buy a Gu worm.”

“After another month, I will be able to purchase the lowest grade combat beast.”

“I will buy the incisor rat first and use it for some time. This wild beast is greatly underestimated by everyone, it is very valuable for its price.”

“With sufficient strength, I will join the Combat Beast Guild and use it to receive missions and increase my strength rapidly.”

“Hmm?!”

At this moment, Zhan Bu Du heard a shout: “Careful, above you!!”

He quickly looked up and saw a black figure descending rapidly from the sky.

Even higher in the sky, an old man was manipulating the huge bird below him, descending quickly as he tried to catch the black figure, but it seemed like he was too late.

“What is it?”

“Quickly run!”

The surrounding people quickly dispersed.

Zhan Bu Du also quickened his pace, hiding under the roof of a shop.

Boom!

Almost instantly, the black object crashed into this shop’s stairs as it shattered.

Shrapnels flew everywhere as the surrounding people screamed out in pain and agony.

Zhan Bu Du was the closest to it, but he was completely unharmed.

“This is... an egg?” Zhan Bu Du looked at the egg that was as tall as a person, thinking: “This aura, it is clearly a desolate beast egg.”

While he was thinking, the egg shell broke as a cute little eagle made its way to the world.

The young eagle looked at Zhan Bu Du as it chirped, it jumped onto him and used its tiny beak to peck at Zhan Bu Du’s cheeks.

“How could this happen?!” The old man riding a huge bird landed on the ground as he looked at this with dumbfounded expression.

“Hello old sir, my name is Zhan Bu Du.” Zhan Bu Du was knowledgeable, he knew this old man was a Gu Immortal, he did not dare to wait and quickly paid his respects.

Before the old man spoke, that tiny eagle that Zhan Bu Du shrugged off went towards him again as it patted his back using its tiny wings.

The old man had a complex expression as he looked at this tiny eagle, he assessed Zhan Bu Du closely: “Sigh, my partner has been pregnant for thirty years, it finally laid the egg today. So coincidentally, it landed here and hatched as a young arrowtail eagle. You were the first person that it saw, so it treated you as its closest kin.”

Zhan Bu Du was stunned, he quickly waved his hands: “Old sir, I am so sorry, I... I did not mean to do that.”

The old Gu Immortal chuckled: “Your name is Zhan Bu Du? I will call you Little Du. Oh Little Du, don’t be nervous, I am not blaming you. In fact, I need to apologize to you, the egg almost killed you earlier.”

“This truly feels like an arrangement of fate, if my grandson was still alive, he would be as old as you. Oh Little Du, are you willing to cultivate with me? You obtained the young arrowtail eagle’s recognition, you might be able to become a Combat Beast Warrior in the future.”

“Combat Beast Warrior?” Zhan Bu Du’s eyes widened as it shined with light, he had the expression of an innocent and excited boy.

He clenched his fists: “My greatest dream is to become a Combat Beast Warrior! Old sir, can I really do it? Can I cultivate by your side?”

The old man laughed loudly: “Oh Little Du, it will depend on your hard work to determine if you can become a Combat Beast Warrior. But for now, let’s leave.”

“Yes, old sir.” Zhan Bu Du followed the old man as they rode on the arrowtail eagle, flying away under plain sight.

“Heavens!”

“What did I just see?”

“Isn’t this youngster’s luck way too good?”

“That old man is the city lord of Mountain Cliff City.”

“He is Mountain Cliff City Lord? Oh! I heard that the Mountain Cliff City Lord would come to our city one of these days to negotiate matters with our city lord.”

The surrounding people exploded into a commotion, their discussions got increasingly louder.

“Who is that young man? He seems to be called Zhan Bu Du? Why is his luck so good!”

“Sigh, why wasn’t it me?”

“Had I known this, I would have pushed him aside.”

“Damn it! This Zhan Bu Du wore tattered clothes, he is clearly a poor lad but he was actually taken in by that esteemed Combat Beast Warrior. He has truly changed his fate, his future is incomparably bright now.”

“He even gained the acknowledgement of the arrowtail eagle, this is an immortal beast, an immortal beast!”

“Indeed, compared to an immortal beasts, all of the beasts and plants in the market are trash, they are less valuable than the eagle’s faeces!”

Some were angrily stomping their feet, feeling extremely regretful, why did they not grab onto this rare opportunity earlier?

Some stared with wide opened eyes that had turned red, some were shouting and screaming, their saliva spitting everywhere.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

A poetry competition was going on.

A famous great scholar looked at the students in the hall as he laughed: “This city is filled with literary talents, I see that all your students are overflowing with scholarly aura. It seems that Brother Jiang’s teachings has paid off.”

“I am flattered, Brother Shen, these students of mine are shallow in knowledge, they are still too young. This is their great opportunity and luck to be able to watch our literary battle.” The teacher of this place, Teacher Jiang, said humbly.

Great Scholar Shen held out his hand: “Brother Jiang, we are quite evenly matched in this battle, let’s consider it a tie. Next, let’s play a game of passing the flower[1], the three students who win will recite their poems, let me see the literature skills of these juniors, how about that?”

“Alright.” Teacher Jiang thought about it and nodded in agreement.

Immediately, the eyes of many students below the stage lightened up.

This was an incredibly rare opportunity, there were two great scholars on the stage, no matter how good their poems were, as long as they could showcase their works, their reputation would spread among the people.

The drums rolled.

“Choose me, choose me!”

“Pass it to me, pass it to me.”

“Sigh! The drums have stopped.”

“Who has the red flower? Please do recite your poem.” Great Scholar Shen opened his eyes as he smiled.

As everyone looked with gazes of anticipation, Li Xiao Bai walked up the stage while rubbing his nose.

[1] It’s like musical chairs but whoever has the flower when the music stops wins

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1825 Getting the Red Flower

“Student Li Xiao Bai greets both teachers.” Li Xiao Bai walked up the stage and said politely.

Great Scholar Shen smiled at him, nodding.

Meanwhile, Teacher Jiang of this school asked: “Xiao Bai, do you have any poems?”

Teacher Jiang had a bit of worry shown between his brows. This Xiao Bai was very ordinary in talent, hopefully he had some sort of preparation before this, otherwise with his current standards, this would be a disappointing show.

It was okay if he was the only person disappointed, but right now with Great Scholar Shen here... Especially when the first half of this competition was very interesting and would become renowned in the world, if the later half was disappointing, everyone in the world would know that Teacher Jiang was a talented person but could not teach young talents himself.

“Teacher, I have a poem prepared.” Li Xiao Bai immediately answered, he was quite confident.

“Then let us hear it.” Teacher Jiang was slightly more assured now.

This Profound Literature grotto-heaven was not like any other place, it had a flourishing literary culture.

If anyone could make a good poem, even if nobody rewards them, heaven and earth would provide them benefits!

Thus, the art of creating poems was an important task, it directly affected the person’s livelihood, status, reputation, and future.

Normally speaking, most scholars would accumulate their foundation and save some good poem lines as secrets, even if they could not compose a poem with those lines, they would save it for the future.

Thus, even though many scholars could create great poems, they would not publish them. They would conceal their strength and use them to deal with difficult poem competitions.

Because of this, it was not strange or surprising that Li Xiao Bai had a poem prepared.

Li Xiao Bai had his considerations.

“I have read countless poems in my life, most are world shocking creations, they are famous on Earth even after thousands of years, and after such a long time, the literature on Earth flourished greatly.”

“But if I try to use these poems, it will be a problem!”

“This grotto-heaven world has an information path environment, it most excels at collecting information. Especially the method to observe literary qi and talent qi, almost everybody has such methods, they only vary in the depth of abilities.”

“I lack literary qi and talent qi, before I used soul replacement, this was just an ordinary student. By creating a world shocking poem now, not only would people not believe me, they would also be suspicious and start investigating me.”

“Even if I try to explain that it is not my work afterwards, it would be too late. I’d be seen as dishonest, in this world, everyone will despise and loathe me.”

Fang Yuan had planned many things before infiltrating Profound Literature grotto-heaven to deal with all sorts of situations.

The clone Li Xiao Bai lacked literary qi and talent qi to begin with, it was not that Fang Yuan’s own talents were lacking.

However, Li Xiao Bai had a large number of famous poems in his memories, other than those from Earth, there were also Fang Yuan’s own creations.

Thus, Li Xiao Bai chose one of them and started to recite.

Teacher Jiang let out a breath of air, this poem was quite well constructed, it was barely living up to the standards of today’s competition.

“What, it is nothing impressive.”

“I sat beside Li Xiao Bai for three years in class, this is way beyond his usual standards, hahaha.”

“Isn’t that great? With his poem as the anchor, the next two winners will be very lucky.”

The students below the stage became increasingly lively.

Even though Li Xiao Bai’s poem was quite compatible with his known abilities, he still had many more talented classmates around.

Especially when some students had many precious poems that they prepared already in advance.

These poems were composed meticulously by them, using a lot of time and effort to create, they were too good for other situations, but this was an appropriate setting to use them.

When the drums started rolling and the red flower got passed around, these elite students became very excited, their eyes were shining.

The drums stopped.

Most of the students were disappointed, why were they not chosen?

Next, their eyes turned red, it was him again!

The red flower stopped at Li Xiao Bai’s table.

“Oh?” Li Xiao Bai was also quite surprised.

“The rules are the rules, you can come up again.” Great Scholar Shen laughed as he shook his head.

Teacher Jiang got worried again, according to Li Xiao Bai’s nature and foundation, he had already performed above standard last time, this time...

But Li Xiao Bai started to recite his poem again.

This poem was on the same level as the previous one.

Teacher Jiang finally relaxed as he looked at Li Xiao Bai with a gentler expression: “It seems that even though this student is not as talented, he is very hardworking, he stored up two poems as backup. These two should be his own creation, it was not easy that he managed to compose them.”

Li Xiao Bai did not put up a shameful performance, Teacher Jiang was very glad about it.

“The final person.”

“Both chances went to Li Xiao Bai, sigh, that was truly bad luck!”

“If I had gone on stage, the two great scholars would definitely be pleasantly surprised. But I was not given a chance.”

“I wonder who will get the third chance? If it is not me, I hope it is not them either.”

The students were unable to sit still, they had their own thoughts as they lost their cool.

The drums rolled as the students looked at the red flower with bloodshot eyes.

“Pass it to me! Pass it to me!”

“Sigh, it has passed me... I hope the drumming continues and it makes its way to me again.”

“Bang!”

The drums stopped abruptly with a loud sound.

Great Scholar Shen opened his eyes as he smiled: “Who is it this time, ugh.”

He was dazed, a strange expression was shown on his face as he pointed at the final lucky star, he did not know whether to cry or laugh: “Why is it you again?”

Li Xiao Bai held the flower as he walked up the stage with a grim expression.

He first cupped his fists at the two scholars before turning to the students below the stage: “Fellow classmates, I really did not do this intentionally, getting up the stage thrice is less of a surprise and more of a shock to me. I know that most of you are more talented than me, but I have to recite three times, I sincerely apologize.”

Originally, his classmates were shocked and furious, but after hearing Li Xiao Bai’s words and expression, the anger in their hearts dissipated.

In fact, a portion of the people started to feel pity for Li Xiao Bai.

After all, Li Xiao Bai’s talent and literary skills were inferior to them, wasn’t he suffering by going up the stage?

“Your luck is too incredible. Forget it, start reciting.” Teacher Jiang laughed as he spoke.

Li Xiao Bai started his recital again, the standard was ordinary but the final line was quite impressive.

Even though it was just a minor point, it elevated the entire poem to a new level.

Not only did Great Scholar Shen laugh and praise it, even Teacher Jiang was a little surprised: “The final line of your poem is quite interesting. How did you conceptualize it?”

Li Xiao Bai smiled bitterly: “Teacher, I don’t dare to lie, this poem had only three lines originally, I thought of and added the final line earlier when I was anxious, to think that both sirs would enjoy it, I was also quite surprised!”

Teacher Jiang was stunned before laughing loudly.

Great Scholar Shen shook his head: “Li Xiao Bai, you are very honest.”

It turned out that he had used a method secretly to inspect Li Xiao Bai’s literary qi and talent qi, he obtained information that this person had quite an ordinary talent.

“But it is not something rare that he can have a flash of inspiration and perform better than normal.” Great Scholar Shen had no suspicions.

Teacher Jiang reassessed Li Xiao Bai in a new light.

He looked at Li Xiao Bai inconspicuously as he thought: “Even though Li Xiao Bai is very ordinary in talent, he is very hardworking normally, that is how he had three poems prepared. Being able to gain inspiration and make up the verse on the spot shows that he has potential. But the best thing about him is that he said those words earlier before the third round, he apologized to his classmates, that was his good interpersonal skills. Being able to articulate as well as his writing, and sophisticated in human interaction, he is not bad.”

“Wait.” Teacher Jiang suddenly thought: “This competition is going to be famous in the world, my reputation has already spread throughout the world before this, that is not key. But Li Xiao Bai is going to become famous from this, if there were three students who performed, it would be less impactful, but he actually took all three chances, this way, he will be the center of attention.”

“After ending in a draw against Brother Shen, nobody will find me for a duel in the short period. But there might be some devious people who would target my student in order to affect me!”

And the problem was, Li Xiao Bai was a common and ordinary student.

Teacher Jiang frowned as he made up his mind: “After this, I need to nurture Li Xiao Bai and secretly give him tuition! After this competition, everyone will know that Li Xiao Bai is my student. Even though I have many students, he is the only famous one.”

“In the future, if anyone mentions Li Xiao Bai, my name will also come up. Our reputation is already tied together, I need to nurture him well, otherwise...”

Teacher Jiang felt very pressured, he decided to make sure Li Xiao Bai was a proper scholar even if he had to spend a huge amount of effort and resources. Even if he was a cheap piece of wood, he needed to be carved into jade in appearance!

Central Continent, Fei He mountain.

Gu Liu Ru stopped his killer move as he wiped the sweat off his forehead, he let out a breath of air: “It is done, his immortal aperture time has been shifted to its limit, he will face calamities and tribulations very often.”

“Thank you for the hard work.” Qin Ding Ling smiled as she looked at the sleeping Gu Yue Fang Zheng, suddenly, she gasped.

“What is it?” Gu Liu Ru asked in confusion.

Qin Ding Ling said: “I was using a killer move to inspect luck, I found that after your killer move was activated, Fang Zheng’s luck changed again. His original luck was like a hill, lush and squarish, but now it has turned into... hmm... it looks like a pot lid.”

Gu Liu Ru was very perplexed: “What premonition is this?”

Qin Ding Ling shook her head, she was troubled too: “In the short term, I cannot understand it.”

Two months later.

A certain news made Fang Yuan’s main body stop his cultivation.

“I finally found out the location of Dragon Palace.”

“Good, I have basically learned all the qi path methods there are, I should act in advance and steal this Immortal Gu House in secret before Heavenly Court does!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1826 Dragon Palace“s Tes

Above the blue ocean surface, waves were rumbling, with the ebb and flow of tides, seagulls were flying above in the sky.

Plop.

With a soft sound, a Gu Immortal dived into the water, swimming deeper.

A thousand feet, ten thousand feet, a hundred thousand feet...

The sea was extremely deep, there was a large number of fierce sea beasts living here.

After reaching a million feet deep, immemorial level sea beasts started to appear.

Of course, there were precious treasures here as well.

“Eastern Sea is truly the number one in the five regions in terms of resources.” The Gu Immortal sighed as he continued to dive deeper.

After reaching ten million feet, in the abyss-like darkness of the sea, there was a beautiful and colorful dream realm.

As the Gu Immortal got closer, the dream realm expanded within his vision. By the time he arrived, this dream realm resembled a small mountain.

“Dragon Palace should be here!” The Gu Immortal had a heated gaze.

He was muscular and handsome, he had a tall nose bridge and sharp lips. He had golden dragon scales on his body, he had a pair of dragon eyes resembling topaz, there was also a pair of golden coral-like dragon horns on his head.

This was Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone.

Fang Yuan knew that Dragon Palace was hidden in Eastern Sea, but he did not find out where exactly it was in the previous life.

Back then, Duke Long had brought Feng Jin Huang to try and subdue Dragon Palace, they were obstructed by the Four Dragon Generals. Thus, a battle ensued and Dragon Palace took the chance to fly into the sky, escaping from him.

Even though Duke Long chased after it, the huge commotion caused Eastern Sea’s rank eight Gu Immortals to approach him. When news of this spread throughout the five regions, Fang Yuan had just reached a certain stage in his plan against Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, he was also moved and decided to head to Eastern Sea.

Eventually, he was discovered and did not gain anything. And in the River of Time, the second stone lotus island appeared.

Fang Yuan made his decision to abandon Dragon Palace and went after the Red Lotus true inheritance in the second stone lotus island.

However, even though he stopped Heavenly Court’s plans, Feng Jiu Ge summoned the winds of assimilation and destroyed the stone lotus island.

This caused Heavenly Court to obtain Dragon Palace, suppressing it within Hidden Dragon Cave. Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals were unwilling to give up, they went to cause a huge battle with Central Continent – the battle in Hidden Dragon Cave.

After rebirth, Fang Yuan already included Dragon Palace in his plans.

He had started planning long ago, he collected information and made deductions on this, drawing a circle around its possible area. After that, he sent subordinates to explore and investigate Eastern Sea secretly.

Fang Yuan did not know where Dragon Palace was initially, but his hard work was not in vain, his efforts paid off, he found out the location of Dragon Palace recently!

The dragonman clone searched around the area, he did not find any immemorial desolate beasts around, it was a safe zone.

Immortal killer move – Pure Dream Reality Seeker Transformation.

He acted quickly, using a killer move against this dream realm.

His choice was the same as Duke Long’s, he wanted to isolate the dream realm and target Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace directly.

And above the sky of this sea area, Fang Yuan’s main body was hidden among the clouds. He was inspecting the area around him and guarding the dragonman clone. On the other hand, he was also getting the dragonman clone to probe the area.

If any accidents happen, Fang Yuan’s main body would be able to rapidly escape to safety.

After all, Fang Yuan did not know the clear details regarding Dragon Palace, this was not like his plans in the River of Time and Tao Zhu’s true inheritance where he had sufficient information.

What if Heavenly Court ambushed him?

Even if they did not, Dragon Palace itself was very dangerous. Because it had an offensive dream path killer move, Fang Yuan was quite wary against it.

As Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were created one by one, the dragonman clone’s progress remained quite successful.

But this dream realm was too huge, at this rate, he would need several days and nights to completely transform it.

“Ignoring anything else, just the dream realm itself is a huge fortune. In the previous life, Heavenly Court obtained it, they had no way of using it. But in my hands, it is different.”

Fang Yuan’s main body had a clear view of the situation in the sea.

Next, he looked above himself.

After using luck path methods, he saw the Cooking Luck Pot that was above his head.

This pot was floating above it, it moved up and down slightly, like it was floating on water.

Fang Yuan could not check his own luck, but he could check the dragonman clone’s luck.

He saw that beside Cooking Luck Pot, the purple dragon that was the dragonman clone’s luck coiled around in the air motionlessly.

It opened its mouth and had an anxious expression, it was looking around alertly.

Around it, black traces of qi were gathering into a lump, forming many black clouds.

“This black cloud luck shows a premonition of death. It seems that the dragonman clone is in danger of dying!” Fang Yuan frowned.

He immediately made his calculations: “After using rebirth, looking at the time, I have found Dragon Palace much earlier than Heavenly Court in the previous life, I acted in advance.”

“I should be ahead of them looking at the situation, but time is moving quickly, a bad change is about to occur in a few days.”

In just this time, the black clouds became thicker as they surrounded the purple dragon in all directions, trying to bury and suffocate it.

Fang Yuan immediately used Cooking Luck Pot.

The dragons on Cooking Luck Pot became active as they started to devour the black clouds and spit them out into the pot.

The pot started to cook the luck, boiling all of the black cloud luck into a beneficial luck instead.

The luck then got devoured by the pot dragons before being sent to the purple dragon.

The purple dragon received such help, it became energetic and invigorated. Even though the black clouds were still thick and overwhelming, the purple dragon no longer looked so weak against them.

Fang Yuan saw this as he gasped lightly, thinking: “My Cooking Luck Pot is only rank six but it is the epitome of Giant Sun’s self luck true inheritance, it can control the luck of rank six Gu Immortals and even influence rank seven Gu Immortals.”

“Right now, my dragonman clone is already a rank seven after immense nurturing, thus, it can only affect the purple dragon. But this black cloud luck...”

Fang Yuan frowned lightly, pondering: “This black cloud luck was influenced by me but the effect is mild, this is a rank eight level crisis! However, looking at the purple dragon’s reaction, it seems to have some form of attraction to this black cloud luck.”

“Dragons[1] like wind and rain, while this black luck has a cloud shape, it seems that this is not only a dangerous situation for the dragonman clone, it is also an immense fortuitous encounter!”

Of course, this was all built on the foundation that Fang Yuan was not going to take action.

Once Fang Yuan’s main body acts, the luck would change intensely!

Because Fang Yuan was not an ordinary rank eight Gu Immortal, his every action would cause a huge change to the situation.

“Sigh, it is too bad I cannot inspect my own luck. The self luck true inheritance has the killer move luck inspection, from rank one to nine. But my luck inspection Immortal Gu is only rank six, even if I make a killer move, the killer move would be able to inspect the luck of rank seven Gu Immortals.”

Fang Yuan already had Cooking Luck Pot, he also added luck inspection Immortal Gu into it as one of the cores.

Thus, he did not need any killer move to inspect luck, just by activating Cooking Luck Pot, he could observe the dragonman clone’s luck.

“Cooking Luck Pot is too low ranked.”

“In the future, I need to advance all its core Immortal Gu, I also need to add in all living beings luck, so that it can affect other people and objects.”

Fang Yuan planned.

Even though he could use Cooking Luck Pot to help his clones, they were the same entities as him. Thus, he was just helping himself, this was within the boundary of self luck, it was not all living beings luck.

Fang Yuan sensed the crisis that dragonman clone was going to face but he chose not to act. He controlled the situation while activating Cooking Luck Pot.

Even though it was not very helpful to the purple dragon, his influence on the black cloud luck was small, but any bit of help counts, as it accumulates, the amount would be quite significant.

After all, it was better than nothing.

The dragonman clone also received the main body’s information as it continued to transform the dream realm.

After a day and half a night, four Eastern Sea Gu Immortals arrived from different directions.

The east one was a white robed young looking man with a handsome face, it was Yang Zi He.

The west one was an old woman with a hunched back, she had deep wrinkles on her face that resembled the pattern of a purple venomous snake, extending from her face, to her arms and to her whole body, it was Granny Rong.

The north one was a muscular Gu Immortal with triangular eyes shining in cold light, it was Shi Miao.

The south Gu Immortal wore a black robe, his face could not be seen, he was silent like an eerie ghost, filled with dark energy, this was Zhang Yin.

“Four rank eight Gu Immortals came? It is them...” Fang Yuan’s main body did not move, because he sensed something strange from the dragonman clone’s luck.

Right now, the purple dragon luck was surrounded by a huge and thick layer of black clouds, it could not break out.

But this black cloud luck was transforming slightly.

There was water sounds from the east, resembling a river. From the west, there was the silhouette of a purple venomous snake, from the north, there was a mountain shape, and at the south, the cloud was dark like an abyss, forming a black hole.

“These four rank eight Gu Immortals are not normal!”

“Their lucks are all a part of the black cloud, are they in an alliance?”

Fang Yuan did not know about the Four Dragon Generals of Dragon Palace, because there was no information about them in his previous life.

But soon, he found out.

These four rank eight Gu Immortals arrived before dragonman clone, their cold expressions relaxed a little.

“He is a dragonman indeed!”

“You have rank seven cultivation level, you are qualified to participate in the test.”

“These dream realms are your test, if you pass it, you will gain the acknowledgement of the Dragon Spirit and become the owner of Dragon Palace.”

“Quickly return the dream realms, undergo the test by exploring the dream realms, otherwise, we, the Four Dragon Generals, will make sure you regret ever coming here!”

The four Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals spoke one after another, while they spoke, they also revealed their dragonman identities.

At once, be it Fang Yuan or his clone, they were both shocked.

[1] Chinese dragons have the power to summon wind and rain

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1827 Controlling Ants in Dream

The dragonman clone’s action of transforming the dream realms drew the attention of the Four Dragon Generals.

If he was a human Gu Immortal, the Four Dragon Generals would attack him together, but Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone was a genuine dragonman, be it body or soul, he was the real deal without any flaws.

Thus, the Four Dragon Generals exposed their identities, Fang Yuan gasped upon hearing this secret.

In the previous life, he had only seen Bai Ning Bing control Dragon Palace and Di Zang Sheng to participate in the final battle at the crucial moment, he did not see the Four Dragon Generals.

“So these four rank eight Gu Immortals are servants of Dragon Palace, they were subdued by Dragon Palace and made into dragon generals!”

“This is quite a deep scheme.”

“Should I take action personally?”

Fang Yuan had countless thoughts as he quickly deduced.

With his current strength, he had a high chance of dealing with all four rank eight Gu Immortals at the same time.

Fang Yuan’s strongest methods were qi path now, just the number of qi path dao marks alone were far beyond any of these four Eastern Sea rank eights.

“But they are still rank eight Gu Immortals, even though I can win and even kill them, there would be a huge commotion, I cannot gain victory quickly.”

“Looking at the fight between Duke Long and these four, Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace also can act on its own, it is able to fly and escape.”

“If I try to fight them forcefully, it might not end up well, I will be in the same state as Duke Long in the previous life.”

Fang Yuan immediately deduced the most likely outcome.

He had come here to take Dragon Palace in secret, if he caused a huge commotion and exposed his rank eight cultivation level as well as his qi path battle strength, it would not sit well with his other plans.

Fang Yuan thought of this as he looked at the Cooking Luck Pot above him.

The purple dragon was completely submerged by the black clouds, but it was excitedly grinding its teeth, waiting to take action.

Especially when there was a trace of azure-purple[1] qi vaguely inside this black cloud.

“These traces of azure-purple luck are extremely noble and profound, it shows that the dragonman clone has a chance of becoming the owner of Dragon Palace.”

“The dragonman clone only has rank seven cultivation level while the four generals are rank eight, they did not discover my presence so it is unlikely they are lying to me.”

“If the dragonman clone follows the rules and explores the dream realms, after passing, I will obtain Dragon Palace as well as these four rank eight Gu Immortal subordinates!”

“It seems that Dragon Palace is truly an enslavement path Immortal Gu House. It can enslave four rank eight battle strength experts at once, truly amazing!”

“According to the information of my previous life, I still have a lot of time.”

Thinking so, Fang Yuan’s main body decided to wait and let the clone explore the dream realms, participating in the test.

This was the most beneficial method.

The dragonman clone was secretly informed by the main body to return the dream realms.

This action made the Four Dragon Generals show more amicable expressions.

Granny Rong said: “To participate in the Dragon Palace test, your soul and body needs to enter the dream realms, you need to have the courage to risk everything in order to become the Dragon Palace Lord.”

The dragonman clone’s expression changed mildly, but considering that the main body was watching and guarding him from the sky, he nodded his head and entered the dream realms.

Once he entered the dream, he immediately landed in an area of deep darkness.

“Wu Shuai, wake up, wake up.” A person beside the dragonman clone nudged him.

The dragonman clone opened his eyes, seeing a young dragon girl, she was innocent and cute, showing a look of helplessness: “Why are you still sleeping? Everyone is waiting for you. Don’t forget that today is the day we arranged the battle with stakes against Chen Fu and Zhang Shuang.”

“So my name is Wu Shuai. Hmm... I have rank three Gu Master cultivation level.” The dragonman clone quickly inspected his own body condition.

“Quickly, quickly, let’s go.” The dragon girl could not wait, seeing that Fang Yuan opened his eyes, she quickly dragged him along.

They sprinted until they finally arrived at the school field.

Two groups of people were already gathered in the school field, they were separated into the east and west group, facing each other with a clear line in between.

The west group consisted of young humans, both male and female, their leaders carried the arrogance of human youngsters.

The east group were young dragonmen, they were fewer in numbers and had no leader now, they were currently being pressured by the humans.

Seeing that Fang Yuan was here, the dragonman youngsters became very excited, some were cheering while others chided him for being late.

“Wu Shuai, you finally showed up, I thought you were too scared and did not dare to come.” Over at the human side, one of the two youngster leaders shouted.

The dragon girl that brought Fang Yuan over immediately retorted: “Don’t be arrogant Chen Fu, now that Wu Shuai is here, he will beat you all to a pulp!”

“Cut the crap, Wu Shuai, let’s fight! This time, I will make sure I repay you for the humiliation of losing last time!” The other youngster Gu Master, Zhang Shuang, stood up, he was clearly impatient, he wanted to fight straight away.

“Wait.” Fang Yuan stretched out his hand, stalling for time: “Since this is a battle with stakes, where is the bet?”

He said as he assessed the school.

This school field was not simple at all, it was covered by an immortal formation!

This meant that Fang Yuan was not in an ordinary place, since there was an immortal formation here, this was likely a super force. Furthermore, Fang Yuan was currently at an important place in this super force’s territory, creating an immortal formation at a school field meant that it was of great importance.

Looking at the clothing of both parties which was very alike, this was clearly a sect.

“This wager is clearly the impulse of youths.”

“These youngsters have at least rank two cultivation level, looking at them, they must have only started recently, their talent is really high.”

“I have the highest cultivation level, along with the two human leaders, Zhang Shuang and Chen Fu, they also have rank three cultivation level, we are all young geniuses. Below that is this dragon girl beside me, she has rank two peak cultivation level.”

“Wu Shuai, don’t look down on me, I have already brought the betting item, look!” Chen Fu said as he carefully took out a Gu worm from his pocket.

Fang Yuan took a glance, it was a rank five Gu, called commanding leader Gu.

Commanding leader Gu looked like a longhorn beetle.

The longhorn beetle had a long and cylindrical body, its back was slightly flat and there were two long feelers on its head. This commanding leader Gu was similar, its body had a jade-like texture, its feelers were very long, more than ten times its body length, they were like two long red ropes.

The dragonman clone was slightly surprised.

Fang Yuan had many Immortal Gu, he did not care much about mortal Gu. But this commanding leader Gu was different, it was a mortal Gu but it was a human path Gu worm with enslavement path effect, it had once gained huge fame in history but quickly went extinct.

According to rumors, commanding leader Gu had a great effect, it was also compatible with many types of Gu worms.

Fang Yuan's dragonman clone shared the same attainment level as his main body.

Fang Yuan had human path grandmaster and enslavement path master attainment levels, the dragonman clone was the same.

At master attainment level, one could generate intuition regarding the path.

Right now, the dragonman clone had a clear intuition: "As long as I pass this scene, I will get the recipe of commanding leader Gu."

"No wonder my purple dragon luck wanted to try it! This enslavement path dream realm is a huge fortuitous encounter after all!"

Thinking of this, the dragonman clone became even more excited.

While he was on the way, he had already checked what Gu worms Wu Shuai had, he had already prepared some methods that he could use.

As for how the battle worked, he did not know.

Immediately, Fang Yuan smiled as he said: "In that case, let's do it. In fact, I will give you the first move."

Zhang Shuang heard this as rage appeared on his youthful face: "Good, Wu Shuai, you are so arrogant, how dare you look down on me, I will show you!"

He took out ten or so primeval stones and scattered them around the school field.

The school field itself was an immortal formation, after the primeval stones landed on it, they got devoured by the ground like rocks falling into water.

Next, ants started to dig their way out of the ground.

Zhang Shuang stared widely as he used his method to manipulate these ants.

The dragonman clone was shocked: "These are not ordinary ants, they have some natural markings on their body that resemble human language characters. Is this the legendary army ant?"

Dragonman was not a natural variant human race, it was man-made.

The army ants and the dragonman were quite similar, they were not produced by nature but created by Gu Immortal great experts.

This type of army ant was used by enslavement path Gu Masters, they were able to resolve the feeding problem to a large degree.

A small number of army ants could be used for daily training, while a large group of army ants could form an ant tide with colossal power.

Zhang Shuang had good strength, he quickly enslaved ten or so yellow ants.

At this time, new ants came out of the ground, they were slightly larger than the ants before, being black in color.

Zhang Shuang was overjoyed and quickly focused his attention on refining these black ants.

The yellow ants had this word naturally carved on them — worker.

The black ants had this word naturally carved on them — soldier.

Seeing this, the dragonman youths became anxious while the dragon girl beside Fang Yuan shook his shoulders: “Brother Wu Shuai, start quickly. If we lose this duel, you will lose your vital Gu. The other party is shameless, he already has more than ten worker ants and three soldier ants.”

“Alright.” Fang Yuan smiled, he sat on the ground and focused his attention on these ants.

He activated a killer move, it used sight to enslave ants, the effect was incredible.

After a few breaths, dozens of ants on the ground gathered by Fang Yuan’s side.

Among them were worker ants and soldier ants.

This result quickly overtook Zhang Shuang.

The human youths shouted in shock while the dragonman youths were stunned before cheering loudly and excitedly.

Zhang Shuang looked at Fang Yuan in disbelief, seeing that Fang Yuan’s ants were multiplying in number rapidly, many times his own, his face turned pale as paper.

“I lost!” Zhang Shuang was straightforward: “But what killer move is this?”

The killer move was very powerful and profound, and even more importantly, Fang Yuan’s soul foundation was very deep, far greater than mortal Gu Masters, not to mention this youngster.

Fang Yuan did not know the name of the move he had just created casually, he avoided it: “Since you lost, where is the bet?”

Zhang Shuang snorted coldly, placing commanding leader Gu in Fang Yuan’s hands as he turned around and left.

Chen Fu had an ashen expression as he left his parting words before going: “Wu Shuai, to think that you are so devious, secretly learning a powerful enslavement path killer move, don’t be too smug, we will definitely challenge you in this again!”

“Yay! We won, Wu Shuai, you are amazing!”

“As expected of Wu Shuai.”

“Haha, they were so funny, Zhang Shuang and Chen Fu had ugly expressions earlier.”

Fang Yuan smiled, he was about to respond to the youths here when he suddenly saw their expressions freezing, they all looked behind Fang Yuan with stiff expressions.

“Father...” They called out quietly.

Fang Yuan turned around and saw a dragonman Gu Immortal staring at him with a deep and dark gaze.

Fang Yuan was shocked:” Duke Long?”

[1] Ancient high ranking officials have ribbons/sashes/belts of this color, thus it signifies royalty and high status.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1828 Talk Between Father and Son

Observing closely, the dragonman clone realized.

Even though it was a dragonman Gu Immortal who appeared in front of him, it was not Duke Long, they only looked similar.

“Even so, this person likely has a close relationship with Duke Long, I wonder if this person is the father of my character in the dream realm?”

Fang Yuan was thinking when the dragonman Gu Immortal arrived: “Wu Shuai! You are too daring, I told you so many times to not create trouble, don’t provoke them! But you actually won against them again. Do you know that Zhang Shuang and Chen Fu are bloodline descendants of supreme elders of our sect!”

The dragonman Gu Immortal that resembled Duke Long had a stern expression, his eyes were almost spewing fire.

The young dragonmen who were still cheering earlier became silent, they did not dare to say anything, they looked down at their feet. This showed how high this person’s status was in their hearts, he was normally strict on them.

Fang Yuan was not sure of his relationship with this dragonman Gu Immortal, he had to mimic these youngsters and keep silent.

The dragonman Gu Immortal got more furious as he knocked on the back of Fang Yuan’s head with his palm, the force almost pushed him to the ground.

Fang Yuan stumbled forward for a step but regained his balance quickly.

“Wu Shuai, follow me, come to the study room for your punishment!” The dragonman Gu Immortal snorted coldly, turning around and leaving.

Fang Yuan took a glance at these dragonman youngsters, they all looked at Fang Yuan with sympathy, guilt, and schadenfreude.

“It seems that I can only follow this dragonman Gu Immortal.” Fang Yuan thought as he quickly followed after the Gu Immortal.

After a few steps, the surrounding world changed rapidly.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan found himself in a study room.

The study room was huge, there were beautiful flower vases here, the study table was about ten feet long, there was ink and paper on it, at the center, there was calligraphy of three words — Long Xing Tian.

“Is this dragonman Gu Immortal’s name Long Xing Tian? No, there is still some space at the end for one final word.” Fang Yuan had a thought.

Right at this moment, he heard a stern shout beside him: “Unfilial son, kneel down right now!”

Fang Yuan raised his head and saw that the dragonman Gu Immortal was standing behind the desk, staring at him with a cold and strict expression.

Fang Yuan rolled his eyes internally as he thought: “You should have said that earlier, I would be able to confirm your identity.”

Immediately, he knelt down without hesitation with a loud sound.

The dragonman Gu Immortal was stunned for a moment before smiling coldly: “Your attitude has really improved this time in apologizing, huh.”

“Father, your words are reasonable. I was too young and ignorant, I did not know your intentions, please forgive me!” Fang Yuan immediately gave a perfunctory speech but had a vivid expression that made people feel a sense of sincerity.

The dragonman Gu Immortal was stunned again before his smile became even colder: “Hmph! Acting obedient while having other intentions, you dare to lie to me! You deserve a beating!”

Saying so, he took the paperweight on the table and used it to whack Fang Yuan.

The paperweight was made of metal, it was long and hard, thick and heavy. It was originally used to hold down the paper and straighten it.

The paper on the desk was about the size of a door plaque, one could imagine how big the paperweight was.

This paperweight hit Fang Yuan’s back, it caused intense pain, his soul foundation fell by a huge amount.

But Fang Yuan could not resist, in this dream realm, he was not the dragonman Gu Immortal’s match.

But Fang Yuan was very crafty, he fell to the ground as he got hit, his forehead landed on the ground and created a dull sound.

He grunted as he knelt and straightened his back, he gritted his teeth and endured the pain, but showed a look of desperately holding back the pain.

The dragonman Gu Immortal was the father of this person after all, seeing this, he had a thought: “Did I hit him with excessive force earlier?”

“Sigh!” He sighed deeply, sitting down on his chair, looking at his kneeling son across the table.

He said with deep emotions: “Wu Shuai, you are my most outstanding son, your enslavement path talent is rarely seen in a hundred years. I spent so much effort to nurture and teach you, I want you to succeed in life. But you went ahead and forgot all of my teachings, how many times have I told you to not argue with those people.”

“You are a genius, you have superior insight than the people of your age. I’ve already described the current situation to you, the higher-ups of the sect are increasingly unhappy with our dragonman race which is getting stronger. Even though I am a supreme elder that has seemingly great status, I am pushed aside by them.”

“Even though you defeated Chen Fu and Zhang Shuang, you also infuriated the Gu Immortals behind them. These human Gu Immortals will not show me any good attitude, they will become even stricter against the dragonman race.”

“Even though you won this time, you harmed the entire dragonman race’s benefits and intensified the sect’s conflicts. You are too rash, you do not consider the consequences when you do something! I am truly disappointed in you!”

“I am beating you for your own good, for the sake of the dragonman race and the peace of the sect, do you understand my intentions?”

Fang Yuan wanted to reply ‘understood’, but he took a look at the dragonman Gu Immortal’s expression and his heart shook.

The dragonman Gu Immortal might have a gentle gaze, but a cold icy feeling was in the depths of his heart.

Only someone like Fang Yuan who was aged and experienced could sense it clearly.

Instantly, Fang Yuan became incredibly alert, he thought rapidly as all sorts of clues appeared in his mind.

In this dream realm exploration, even though the main body was outside, his soul and body had entered the dream, he could not afford to fail once.

If he failed, he would lose the qualification to become the Dragon Palace Lord, he might even die.

Of course, the main body would not do nothing, but in that case, when the main body fights, he would face the same situation as Duke Long, the commotion would be huge.

To obtain the greatest benefit, Fang Yuan was willing to take this risk, so he had to be very careful with every step.

“This question seems simple but it might be the key to this scene, if I answer wrongly, I will fail!”

“My analysis should not be wrong... I will go ahead with this!”

Thinking of this, a sharp dagger-like light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

He raised his head and looked at the dragonman Gu Immortal, his expression changed as he smiled: “I am grateful for your concern, father. But father, you are willing to hold back and endure it for the big picture, I do not agree with that at all.”

“Unfilial son! You are unrepentant!” The dragonman Gu Immortal was enraged, he stood up and grabbed the paperweight again.

Fang Yuan quickly added: “I know you want to beat me, even if you beat me to death, I will not hate you at all. But father, your action of giving in and showing subservience is not helping the big picture, you are harming the entire dragonman race!”

The dragonman Gu Immortal’s eyes were spewing fire, he held the paperweight and pointed at Fang Yuan, shouting loudly: “Such guts! You dare to accuse your father of being wrong! Good, I’ll give you a chance, tell me, how am I wrong?”

Fang Yuan felt even more certainty now, he said slowly: “Father! Must our dragonman race always put ourselves at a lower status than humans? We have talent and aptitude, we are born with enslavement path dao marks, what do the humans have?”

“We do not necessarily need Gu worms, our bodies alone give us great stamina, strength, and recovery.”

“Our bodies are tough and sturdy, our claws and teeth are sharp, while humans are weak and fragile.”

“And in terms of lifespan, our lifespan is tens or hundreds of times of humans! As we continue to live, the humans of our age will die one by one. Even without us doing anything, they will all die of old age!”

“We dragonman are born with such superiority, and even rarer is our unity, we recognize each other and trust each other, we are not like the humans who turn on each other and enjoy internal conflict!”

“Father, everybody can see your contribution to the sect. I won this duel but should I really have lost on purpose?”

“On what basis do these humans look down on us, how dare they treat us so badly! We dragonman deserve a greater status!”

“In fact, these normal people should rank below us dragonmen!!”

“Insolent, you are too insolent!” The dragonman Gu Immortal flew into a rage, he quickly walked past the table as he waved the paperweight in his hand, almost about to hit Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan suddenly stood up abruptly, he had tears in his eyes as he shouted at the dragonman Gu Immortal: “Father! I am unresigned, I refuse to accept this! Even if you beat me to death, I will never agree to this, I will not submit!”

“Wu Shuai!!!” The dragonman Gu Immortal walked to Fang Yuan, looked down at this youngster, his bloodshot eyes were staring straight at him but his paperweight did not hit.

Fang Yuan had no fear, he looked at the dragonman Gu Immortal directly as his eyes also spewed fire, it was the deep anger and hatred in his heart!

Both father and son looked at each other for a while, after the dragonman Gu Immortal confirmed something, he threw the paperweight in his hand away.

He grabbed Fang Yuan’s shoulders with both hands as he shook his son, laughing loudly: “Wu Shuai, you are truly my precious son! I was not wrong about you!”

“Father? You...” Fang Yuan was stunned, his expression contained suspicion and shock that seemed extremely natural.

“I will tell you the truth, I think the same as you. I was trying to probe you earlier, I was unable to speak the truth, there is a reason behind all this.” The dragonman Gu Immortal sighed deeply.

“What do you mean? Father, do you mean that...?” Fang Yuan seemed to have reacted as his eyes shined with delight and surprise, it was as if he had just understood what happened but did not dare to believe it, his expression was precise and flawless.

But internally, he sighed in relief: “This was it after all, my analysis was right.”

“Within the sect, the conflict between the dragonmen and humans is intensifying, we can see this from just the youngsters’ conflict.”

“That school field earlier was an important area with an immortal formation, the sect higher-ups must have sensed something. If the dragonman Gu Immortal wanted to endure it, why would he not know of it? Why would he arrive after it ended?”

“Looking at this study room, the furniture is huge and placed in a grand fashion, this displays the dragonman Gu Immortal’s huge ambition in full view.”

“He called me Wu Shuai in front of the youngster dragonmen but called me unfilial son when we got to the study room, he was saving my reputation.”

“He wants to nurture me into his assistant, his successor.”

Thinking so, Fang Yuan finally understood the workings of this dream realm and the intentions of Dragon Palace in holding this test!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1829 Green Ant Recruiting Disciple

Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan’s main body which was hidden within the clouds had a change of expression: “Oh? My clone’s luck transformed again!”

Fang Yuan took a look at the huge and dense black cloud luck beside Cooking Luck Pot.

Within the black cloud luck, four different phenomena that represented the four rank eight Gu Immortals defended this black cloud luck.

The purple dragon luck of Fang Yuan’s clone was surrounded by the black cloud luck, it was growling inside.

The purple dragon was more energetic now, traces of azure-purple luck continued to be converted from the black cloud luck as it entered the dragon’s body.

With this boost, the purple dragon expanded in size, its claws and teeth also became sharper.

The most evident change was that this dragon was originally lying down in a circular manner but now, it stretched its body and took the initiative to attack, it started to probe the black cloud luck.

“From motionless to active with greater morale, it seems that my clone has made a breakthrough in the dream realm, he knows how to act now so he has the initiative. This is a good thing!”

“It is a pity that I cannot use luck path methods to help my clone anymore.”

If the dragonman clone went in with his soul only and his body was outside, Fang Yuan could still barely send him good luck.

But now, the dragonman clone went inside with both body and soul, completely isolated by the dream realms, all luck path methods were kept out of range.

Fang Yuan’s main body was helpless too, unless he could take away some of the dream realms and expose the dragonman clone’s body.

Or in the future, when his dream path research results gets to a higher level and Fang Yuan learns how to mix luck path with dream path, he would be able to target the dream realm’s concealment.

The dream realm continued.

Dragonman clone analyzed the surroundings clearly and considered his options, because of his ‘heartfelt’ declaration, his father recognized him and he passed the second scene of the dream realm.

However, he needed to probe for more information.

Within the study room, Fang Yuan asked: “Father, since we are on the same side, can you tell me how we can make the dragonman race prosper? I am sure father has a plan, please teach me.”

The dragonman Gu Immortal smiled: “We have a plan since long ago, I will tell you the truth, not only me but many of our dragonman comrades are working together. But you cannot learn of their identities yet, this is to protect them and also yourself.”

“The first step to any great plan is secrecy. It is easier to work in secret than acting openly. I understand that.” Fang Yuan nodded but he asked again: “But any great plan would have a resolution, right?”

“Our resolution is this.” The dragonman Gu Immortal smiled as he lifted his pen, writing the final word of the paper on this table – ‘Xia’!

When put together with the first three words, it made up the phrase[1] ‘Dragons Roam The World’.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light.

The dragonman Gu Immortal suddenly let out a breath, it cut the paper like a sharp blade.

The dragonman Gu Immortal took a small portion of the paper and passed it to Fang Yuan, there was only one word on it – ‘Xia’.

The remaining ‘Long Xing Tian’ was burned to ashes by the dragonman Gu Immortal, he waved his sleeves and incinerated the paper.

The dragonman Gu Immortal looked at the ashes on the table as he sighed: “One day, our dragonman race will soar the heavens, the world will be beneath our feet. But now, humanity is incredibly strong, they are the overlords of the world. Looking at the situation, our dragonman race is too weak and small, we do not have any alliances with variant humans in the outside world, while we are still a subordinate force of the humans ourselves.”

“To soar the heavens, we need to ascend first. Right now, we need to endure our position below the humans, to accumulate and gather foundation. Our dragonman race has just been created, our foundation is too thin, but thankfully, because we were born from humans, our relationship to them is also the deepest. Especially in Central Continent, we have members in all ten great ancient sects. We need to learn and accumulate our foundation to catch up to the humans.”

Fang Yuan continued asking: “Then what should I do?”

The dragonman Gu Immortal smiled: “You are already contributing now. When you were a child, I saw your potential and purposely nurtured you to be an enslavement path Gu Master. Now that your enslavement path attainment is already decent, I have made plans for you to attend Green Ant Ascetic’s disciple recruitment ceremony.

“Green Ant Ascetic?” Fang Yuan purposely acted unaware but his heart shook as he thought of a name — Ascetic Wine Couple.

These two were husband and wife, a famous lone immortal great expert couple in Central Continent’s history. The man was called Green Ant Ascetic while the woman was called Wine Fairy. The two of them were childhood friends, they were extremely close.

They were originally mortals but had their own immortal opportunities. Because of a disaster, they were forced to separate when they were still youths, but they missed each other and thought the other was dead.

After becoming Gu Immortals, neither the male nor the female thought of marrying anyone. Thanks to a coincidence, they met one day and fell into disbelief and joy, it was like a dream come true.

After talking to each other about their situation, the woman told the man: “I remember that you enjoyed playing with mud and ants when you were a kid.”

The man also laughed: “When we were young, your family operated a tavern, your life was much better than mine. You went to the streets and alleys to sell the wine that you carried on a pole, I accompanied you by your side during that time, I wish we could continue that forever.”

Thus, the man called himself Green Ant Ascetic while the woman also changed her title to Wine Fairy.

The two possessed great talent and morals, after becoming a couple, they lived in harmony and bliss.

The dragonman Gu Immortal continued: “Green Ant Ascetic had once lost a bet with Hong Zhen of the ten great ancient sects, he agreed to recruit a disciple and let them inherit his legacy. The time for the agreement is now, but the ten great ancient sects have no proper candidate, because the Gu Immortal Hong Zhen who had caused this event died from tribulation long ago.”

“Green Ant Ascetic is a human great expert who is a lone cultivator. If you can become his only disciple, not only would you get to learn enslavement path methods, you would also build a relationship with the Ascetic Wine Couple. When the dragonman race faces difficulty in the future, these two rank eight great experts would be a huge help!”

So that’s it, I understand now.” Fang Yuan paused before continuing: “I will work hard and become the disciple of Green Ant Ascetic.”

The dragonman Gu Immortal nodded: “Good, the ceremony is at the start of next month, you will enter closed cultivation now as I teach and train you personally.”

The second scene faded away, the third scene started.

High in the mountains, fog and clouds shrouded the air.

In a bamboo forest, in front of a thatched hut on the empty land, the younger generation members of the ten great ancient sects were standing.

These were all young geniuses with great talent, they were here to fight for the position of Green Ant Ascetic's disciple.

Fang Yuan was slightly dazed, he observed the surroundings and found himself among the youths.

However, most of the human youngsters avoided him subconsciously, there were only two dragonman youngsters around him.

At the center of the empty area, two young Gu Masters were fighting.

Fang Yuan recognized one of them, he thought: "Isn't that Zhang Shuang?"

Right now, Zhang Shuang was at a disadvantage, he was fighting against a girl with yellow eyebrows, she had beautiful features and shining eyes that had double pupils.

Fang Yuan had just arrived in the third scene, he did not know the situation, he quickly probed: "What do you guys think?"

The two dragonman youngsters beside him heard this, the left one with azure scales said: "Wu Shuai, you are looking down on us. Even though we were eliminated and only you are left in this competition, the situation is very obvious, Zhang Shuang is going to lose in a few more exchanges of moves."

The azure scaled dragonman youngster was a little proud and spoke in a cold tone.

But the yellow scaled youngster had a more gentle tone as he consoled: "Qing Suan, don't act like this, victory is victory, loss is loss. Since you were defeated, why take issue? Brother Wu Shuai is not asking this to humiliate you."

The azure scaled youngster Qing Suan was indignant, he gritted his teeth: "Those humans are too devious, knowing that I am strong, they sent three humans to fight me in succession, causing my strength to fall greatly before that Tai Qin defeated me easily. Huang Wei, don't tell me you couldn't tell?"

The yellow scaled youngster sighed: "Why would I not know? We were both obstructed, but the truth is that we lacked strength. If we were like Brother Wu Shuai, so what if they tried to obstruct us? He still made it into the finals!"

Fang Yuan listened as he thought: "The azure scaled youngster is called Qing Suan while the yellow scaled one is called Huang Wei, meanwhile, I am already in the finals."

At this time, Huang Wei said: "Brother Wu Shuai, I truly admire your enslavement path attainment. But your next opponent is not simple, Tai Qin has extraordinary strength, she is on par with you. But you have already gone through many rounds of tough competition to get to this point. Meanwhile, she was basically given free passes every round to reach this stage until she met with the strong opponent Zhang Shuang."

Fang Yuan understood now, the yellow brows double pupils girl, Tai Qin, was his next opponent.

He had a heavy mood.

Because after some observation, he had some evaluation: "This Tai Qin is an enslavement path master, she mobilizes her troops without thinking in many situations, only relying on instinct but it still produces outstanding effects... she is a tough foe.”

Fang Yuan’s enslavement path attainment level was only at master.

He felt a little regret now, had he known this, his main body would have raised his enslavement path attainment level in preparation for this.

But nobody could predict that such a situation would happen.

“I lost.” After a while, Zhang Shuang had a pale expression as he cupped his fists shakily.

“It was an honor.” The young girl Qin Qin responded with a cold expression, before her eyes turned to look at Fang Yuan fixedly.

And at the final round.

Fang Yuan slowly walked up.

He walked past Zhang Shuang who had a complex expression. He wanted to encourage Fang Yuan as they were from the same sect, but thinking about his dragonman identity, he only opened his mouth but did not speak.

After resting for a while, both sides started to fight.

The youngsters surrounded them as they watched the battle closely.

Ants started to emerge from the ground one by one.

[1] Considering the language differences, I’ll leave the words in pinyin but this is what they mean.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1830 Battle Using Ants

Fang Yuan immediately used his full strength to enslave these ants.

Tai Qin did the same.

These ants were created by Green Ant Ascetic, the content of his disciple recruitment competition was obviously to test the ant manipulation abilities of the participants.

After Fang Yuan controlled thirty-eight worker ant and six soldier ants, he willed as they attacked Tai Qin with full force.

Tai Qin had more than thirty worker ants and five soldier ants, she chose a different tactic to Fang Yuan, she made the worker ants build an ant nest while the soldier ants protected them.

Fang Yuan’s troops had a little advantage, he also acted very aggressively, the youngsters watching all gasped in shock.

Tai Qin frowned, flustered: “Why is this dragonman youngster Wu Shuai acting like a different person? He is so aggressive!”

She quickly mobilized her troops, diverting the worker ants from the ant nest to move out while the soldier ants defended the place, trying to prevent their hard work from getting destroyed.

Soon, both sides clashed in an intense battle.

“To think that this would happen so early on.”

“Wu Shuai’s tactic is different from before, he is taking too huge of a risk.”

“That’s right, as long as Tai Qin defends herself from this attack, her advantage would be huge. Wu Shuai did not build any ant nest but Tai Qin has one, their power levels will be different.”

“It will depend on their ant manipulation skill now. Because now is still early, just the difference of one or two ants will decide who gains victory here.”

“Even though Wu Shuai is strong, Tai Qin also has deep foundation, they are equally matched. In my opinion, Tai Qin has a higher chance of winning, how could Wu Shuai act so rashly?”

However, a moment later, the temporary victor was decided.

Tai Qin lost a bit more of her troops, she retreated slightly as Fang Yuan’s side pressured towards her.

“How could this be? Wu Shuai actually won against Tai Qin? Tai Qin made a mistake?”

“She did not! Tai Qin is performing normally but Wu Shuai has exceeded his usual standards. Did he use any enslavement path methods or is he at this level normally?”

“No wonder he had the confidence to attack directly.”

Tai Qin had a grim expression, while retreating, Fang Yuan killed more of her ants in the process.

By the time she retreated into the incomplete ant nest, she only had twelve ants left, it was a sad situation.

Of course, Fang Yuan was merely in a slightly better situation.

The ant nest had several routes, Tai Qin was clear about her own nest’s situation, she stationed troops at the crucial positions while diverting some attention to enslave more ants outside.

Fang Yuan had a change of thought, he did not attack abruptly, now that the enemy was completely trapped, they had nowhere to go.

Fang Yuan was not sure about the design of this ant nest, if he attacked now, his troops would not be useful.

Thus, he sent them to guard the entrances and encircled the ant nest before he used enslavement path killer moves to enslave the ants outside.

Ants continued to emerge from the ground, first were worker ants, followed by soldier ants, and finally, arrow ants.

Arrow ants could shoot out sharp spikes from their mouth, after shooting three spikes, they would be weak, they would not be able to fight even a worker ant.

But even so, arrow ants were strong, a small number of them could defeat a larger army. If one had a large number of them, when they shoot together in a battle, the power would be overwhelming.

“Both sides will definitely compete to get these arrow ants.”

“Indeed, if Tai Qin gets these arrow ants, she would be able to use them to kill the enemy ants guarding the entrance. That way, the troops inside can come out and counterattack.”

“Even though Wu Shuai has the upper hand, the situation is not certain now, he can easily lose.”

“It is a pity, if armor ants appeared instead of arrow ants, Wu Shuai would be able to use them to charge and advance into the ant nest, destroying it.”

The youngsters went into an endless discussion.

The two sides were competing in the most popular game of the generation, ant manipulation. At the start, worker ants and soldier ants would show up, but after that, the types of ants would be random. With the emergence of these new ants, not only would the enslavement attainment of both sides be tested, the Gu Masters’ understanding of ants would also be evaluated, as well as their management of the overall situation.

Fang Yuan and Tai Qin went all out, but he had the advantage still.

The youngsters saw this and were unable to believe it.

“This battle area has a Gu formation, the ants closer to the competitor are easier to enslave. Tai Qin is enslaving ants near her while Wu Shuai is doing it to ants far away from himself, how could he possibly still have the advantage?”

“Is this Wu Shuai’s real strength? How strong is he?”

“We worked together to weaken him earlier, to think that he still had such strength left. Isn’t he tired at all?”

If this was really Wu Shuai, he might feel tired, but Fang Yuan was not.

Fang Yuan had just entered the dream realm, he was in a good condition, especially his soul, it was created as the main body’s split soul.

Afterwards, even though it was turned into a dragonman soul and had not undergone soul cultivation, the foundation was still much deeper beyond ordinary people.

Soul foundation directly affected enslavement path.

For example, Fang Yuan’s main body was unable to capture many immemorial year beasts before the battle of Southern Border’s ambush, but now he could capture more than twenty.

In the battle of arrow ants, Tai Qin lost.

The arrow ants that she had diverted attention to enslave were all wiped out.

Fang Yuan not only had arrow ants, he also had worker ants and soldier ants, they cooperated with his arrow ants perfectly. Tai Qin’s troops were diverted into two, making her end up in a passive situation.

But thankfully, the arrow ants were not outstanding on offensive when they were in terrain like the ant nest with many tunnels and paths.

“Even though I gained some advantage, it is not outstanding, especially when Tai Qin has been using her worker ants to build the ant nest rapidly in this period of time.”

Even though Fang Yuan was acting aggressively, he was actually using the most stable method to achieve victory.

Battle tactics were usually built on the foundation that one understands their enemies well.

“Next, as long as armor ants appear, I will be able to attack and destroy the ant nest. Even if other types of ants appear, as long as they are not the cannon ants, I will be able to obtain victory with my advantage in numbers.” Fang Yuan was assured of his victory.

He had a high chance of winning, the humans youngsters watching were not willing to see it happen, but they had no choice but to admit it was happening.

“Dragonman Wu Shuai is going to succeed.”

“To think that this competition would end up like this.”

“To think that Wu Shuai concealed so much strength, he is truly formidable.”

“Sigh! It is a pity that the great Green Ant Ascetic’s enslavement path inheritance is going to a dragonman.”

Tai Qin had a stern expression, staring at the battle area without blinking. She also recognized that she was about to fail, but she did not want to give up.

She gritted her teeth as she had an intense thought: “If I lose to a dragonman like Wu Shuai, I might as well have lost to Zhang Shuang earlier! I cannot lose, I don’t want to lose!”

At this time, clouds started to form on the battle area, they quickly condensed into lumps of green clouds.

A few breaths of time later, acid rain started to fall from these green clouds.

Fang Yuan’s gaze turned cold while the youngsters gasped.

“This change did not occur on the ants but the battle area instead.”

“If an earthquake occurs, Tai Qin would lose without Wu Shuai doing anything. If any other change occurred, the situation would be unchanged. But this acid rain...”

“Indeed, Tai Qin’s ants are all inside the nest while Wu Shuai’s troops are exposed to the acid rain’s corrosion.”

“Wu Shuai has started to build his nest.”

“It is too late, this acid rain gave Tai Qin a chance for a comeback, Wu Shuai’s advantage that was created by taking a risk is all gone.”

Tai Qin was aided by the acid rain and got past her state of complete disadvantage.

Fang Yuan had to pull back his troops and build a nest to hide from the acid rain.

After the acid rain, even though the armor ants appeared, no matter how many Fang Yuan enslaved, he still lost the best opportunity.

But after a while, Fang Yuan used his deep soul foundation to suppress Tai Qin, he won a few small battles and accumulated enough advantage to force Tai Qin into a corner, edging towards defeat.

A huge battle was about to start, Tai Qin gathered her remaining forces to resist stubbornly when suddenly, an ant queen appeared.

To subdue a wild ant queen, the Gu Master needs to use enslavement path methods and also beat the ant queen with the troops until it submits.

But this ant queen appeared in the middle of Tai Qin’s forces.

Fang Yuan immediately attacked, but no matter how large his army was, he could not break through Tai Qin’s last few defensive lines.

Tai Qin gave it her all and used methods that carried backlash to herself but finally subdued the ant queen.

Even though the ant queen was injured, it had a special power to allow ally ants to move faster, have higher defense, and attack more fiercely, her overall strength increased greatly as a result.

Fang Yuan’s ants were not powered up, even though he had a larger army, they were all cannon fodder.

After failing to take her down for a long time, Fang Yuan chose to retreat wisely, he left behind some troops to stall Tai Qin.

After the first ant queen appears, more would follow.

Soon, new ant queens appeared and got captured by both sides.

As such, the battle between them went into a deadlock again.

As the number of ants that both sides controlled increased, more ant nests were built, the battle area became dominated by both sides as their troops fought intensely.

Tai Qin had a pale expression, so did Fang Yuan.

However, with his rich experience, he gradually gained the upper hand.

Rumble!

Right when Fang Yuan was about to deal the decisive blow, an earthquake happened as Fang Yuan faced a devastating loss, most of his ant nests were destroyed.

Even though Tai Qin faced the same situation, she had fewer nests to begin with, her losses were smaller.

Both sides were evenly matched again.

The youngsters went into a commotion again.

“It happened again!”

“Whenever she gets into a disadvantage, changes occur to help Tai Qin.”

"Isn't Tai Qin's luck too good?"

"It has happened three times already."

"Is someone cheating?"

"How can that be? This area was set up by Green Ant Ascetic personally, if Tai Qin could cheat, she would have won already!"

Fang Yuan's gaze turned colder.

"This is trouble." He thought.

According to his luck, even if he lost the connection to the main body, he would not be this unlucky.

"The most likely possibility is that this dream realm requires me to lose, I cannot defeat Tai Qin."

"Thus, whenever I am about to win, a change would occur and cause me to lose my chance of victory."

"Then should I hold back and just lose?"

In usual times, he would do this to probe the situation. But now, the dragonman clone only had one chance.

If he guessed wrong, he would be giving up this test, in that case, the dragonman clone would be trapped in the dream realm, his main body would need to take action.

The main body would fight the Four Dragon Generals, he would lose control of the situation, Dragon Palace would fly away.

Fang Yuan's plan would end up fruitless.

What should he do?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1831

Heavenly Court Notices

Heavenly Court.

Qin Ding Ling floated in the air, she had an extremely solemn expression.

She had been preparing this killer move for three days and nights.

“Go!” At the next moment, she burst out with a grand golden light, the light shot out like a five tailed peacock, chirping and spreading its wings as it flew.

When this golden light reached a certain area in the sky, it exploded and scattered into countless light specks.

Within the light specks, a huge tunnel was vaguely seen.

Fairy Zi Wei, who was beside Qin Ding Ling, became shocked as she shouted: “There was really a tunnel here!”

Qin Ding Ling was bleeding from her seven orifices, her body shook as her face turned pale, she went to rest.

“Thank you for the hard work.” Duke Long was around too, evidently moved.

Qin Ding Ling breathed deeply for a while as she sighed: “Too close! If I had not soul searched Zhao Lian Yun a while ago and learned some information regarding Giant Sun’s all living beings luck true inheritance, with just my own attainment, I would not have found Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangements here.”

Duke Long snorted coldly: “This Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had ill intentions, back when he toured Heavenly Court, he already set up this hidden path. This luck path true inheritance is truly profound, even our great Heavenly Court could not detect it. But heaven’s will favors our Heavenly Court, at the crucial moment, Fairy Qin woke up and exposed Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s devious scheme.”

Fairy Zi Wei breathed in deeply too: “With this arrangement, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable created a way to enter Heavenly Court. If it activates, Longevity Heaven’s Gu Immortals might likely attack us directly.”

“Indeed, that is the behavior of these Northern Plains brutes.” Duke Long said.

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes shined with bright light: “However, since we found this in advance, we can deal with this arrangement. We can even make use of it to ambush Northern Plains instead. This will be very helpful for the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention in a few years.”

Qin Ding Ling made a huge contribution but she still had a grim expression, she sighed: “Giant Sun Immortal Venerable has three true inheritances of self luck, all living beings luck, and heaven and earth luck. In order to deal with him, I cultivated all living beings luck alone, after so many years, I thought that I had reached his level. But today, I learned that our difference is still so immense.”

Fairy Zi Wei consoled her: “None of the venerables can be assessed using common sense. Senior’s luck path attainment is already Heavenly Court’s blessing, it allowed us to overcome our greatest weakness. From now on, Heavenly Court also has a proper luck path true inheritance.”

Qin Ding Ling said: “To guard against accidents, I have already placed my luck path true inheritance in the treasury. But the best case is to obtain Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s true inheritances. It is a pity that even though Zhao Lian Yun saw the all living beings luck true inheritance in Imperial Court blessed land, she was too weak then and only obtained a tiny portion. That Ma Hong Yun was the user of Fortune Rivalling Heaven, he must have known more information, but Fang Yuan captured him instead.”

Mentioning Fang Yuan, Fairy Zi Wei frowned: “Speaking of which, Fang Yuan has not shown up for a long time, even though we placed a lot of defense in the River of Time, Fang Yuan is nowhere to be seen. He has Myriad Year Flying Warship but does not show much interest in Red Lotus' true inheritance. Is it because we cannot detect his traces or..."

Mentioning Red Lotus' true inheritance, Duke Long frowned too, he said: "Let's make the worst case assumption, we will treat it as if Fang Yuan has already obtained Red Lotus' true inheritance."

"To subdue Fang Yuan, in my opinion, the focus is still on Gu Yue Fang Zheng." Qin Ding Ling smiled.

Different from the previous life, Gu Yue Fang Zheng received a great amount of attention, he was already a significant figure to Duke Long and Fairy Zi Wei.

Through Heavenly Court's arrangements and a great deal of resources, Gu Yue Fang Zheng's strength was also improving rapidly.

Immortal killer move — Blood Turns Cold!

Three desolate beasts became slower as they eventually froze and fell on the ground, grunting.

The victor, Gu Yue Fang Zheng, floated in the air, looking at the three desolate beasts lying below him as his robe remained clean and untouched.

"Blood path killer moves are truly powerful." Zhao Lian Yun was standing beside him as they fought together.

Fang Zheng cupped his fists: "It was all thanks to your help, fairy, otherwise, why would I get so many opportunities to fight in real combat?"

Zhao Lian Yun smiled: "We both have a common goal, we should work together, right?"

Similar to the previous life, Zhao Lian Yun also took the initiative to befriend Fang Zheng.

Zhao Lian Yun loved Ma Hong Yun but he was killed by Fang Yuan. Even though he died, the soul remained, there was a chance of reviving him.

"Heavenly Court follows the will of heaven, they do not want to revive Hong Yun. After all, if he revives, wouldn't that defy fate?"

"Even though I am Spirit Affinity House's current generation fairy, Heavenly Court only treats me as a pawn, they only want to make use of me."

"Earlier, that female immortal Qin Ding Ling soul searched me, that is the best evidence. In this aspect, Fang Zheng and I are similar. We are both pawns, but Heavenly Court places greater importance on Fang Zheng."

"Thus, if I want to revive Hong Yun, I can only rely on myself, I need to find an opportunity!"

Zhao Lian Yun made her own plans.

Zhao Lian Yun knew her own situation, Fang Zheng was also no longer ignorant, after his experiences, he knew his own situation and why Zhao Lian Yun was acting like this to befriend him.

Fang Zheng did not dislike Zhao Lian Yun, they were in similar situations, he felt a sense of empathy towards her.

As the two spoke, Gu Yue Fang Zheng kept the three desolate beasts in his immortal aperture.

The three desolate beasts did not die, after he familiarized himself with blood turns cold, he was now able to use it effectively to capture enemies.

Fang Zheng had put a lot of effort into this killer move indeed.

Originally, Fairy Zi Wei planned to nurture Fang Zheng through closed cultivation. But after Qin Ding Ling awakened, she told her to change this plan.

Therefore, Gu Yue Fang Zheng took the sect mission and came to suppress the three desolate beasts causing chaos.

The mission was completed now, Fang Zheng was planning to collect all his loot and return to Fei He Mountain.

But to think that within the desolate beasts’ cave, there was a secret tunnel.

To prevent the desolate beast cubs from remaining in the tunnel, Zhao Lian Yun and Fang Zheng decided to fly into the tunnel after a discussion.

The result was surprising to both of them, this tunnel was incredibly long, as they continued to fly downwards, the tunnel became wider, it could basically fit a mountain.

“This should be an Earth Trench, the three desolate beasts we caught should have nothing to do with the Earth Trench.” Zhao Lian Yun analyzed.

Fang Zheng nodded but he had his suspicions: “I guess that too, but this Earth Trench is too strange. normally speaking, it should be filled with vitality, beasts and plants should be everywhere, but after we flew for so long, we saw no lifeforms. This Earth Trench is not simple, we should explore it deeper.”

Zhao Lian Yun wanted to return but hearing Fang Zheng’s words, she followed him as they went down.

“Oh, there is a blessed land here?!” Not long after, Fang Zheng found something strange.

Next, Zhao Lian Yun also found out, she gasped: “This blessed land is undergoing tribulation, the blessed land got damaged and a loophole formed, causing it to be exposed to the outside world. It is so coincidental that we came at this exact moment, otherwise, if the blessed land’s entrance is shut, even if it were right in front of us, we would not be able to notice it.”

“Let’s go in and see.” Fang Zheng was slightly excited as he spoke.

Since this was a blessed land, there might be a Gu Immortal inheritance here, after all, blessed lands were created from immortal apertures of Gu Immortals.

The two easily got into the blessed land, it was facing a grand tribulation now as chaos ensued.

“Strange, the people here are really strange, are they the extinct beastmen?”

“Looking at the situation, there should be no Gu Immortals here.”

Zhao Lian Yun and Fang Zheng discussed for a while, they decided to help.

Even though their cultivation level was low, they were not ordinary Gu

Immortals, they had powerful methods and they soon calmed the situation.

The people who survived in the blessed land knelt to the two immortals as they expressed their gratitude.

Fang Zheng asked and found out that these people in the blessed land were not humans, they were dragonmen.

“Dragonman, what variant human race is this? I have never heard of it.” Fang Zheng was confused.

Zhao Lian Yun had become the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House for quite some time, she quickly frowned as she said: “Dragonman is a variant human race, but we are in trouble now.”

She knew that she and Fang Zheng were pawns of Heavenly Court, they seemed to be moving freely but Heavenly Court definitely had methods to watch them.

As expected, Gu Immortals descended soon after.

Two female immortals.

Fang Zheng and Zhao Lian Yun knew them, they were Fairy Zi Wei and Qin Ding Ling.

Fang Zheng did not understand: “This blessed land is so ordinary, it is not outstanding, why did these two great experts come here?”

Qin Ding Ling and Fairy Zi Wei were in a good mood, it was evident from their facial expressions.

“Fang Zheng, you made a huge contribution again, good work. Your job here is done, you can leave now.” Qin Ding Ling smiled as she sent Fang Zheng and Zhao Lian Yun away.

Fang Zheng and Zhao Lian Yun had to obey her as they flew back to their respective sects.

A moment later, Fairy Zi Wei obtained the information she needed: “This blessed land belongs to Duke Long’s grandson, Wu Shuai, no wonder it was hidden for so long, even Lord Duke Long was deceived.”

“The dragonmen in this blessed land are all Wu Shuai’s bloodline descendants, there are pure dragonmen and also dragonman-human mixed bloods.”

“These dragonmen are not important, but this blessed land hides the clues to Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace! Senior Qin, you were right, Fang Zheng is truly our lucky star!”

Fairy Zi Wei had a joyful tone.

Because one of the creators of Dragon Palace was Wu Shuai.

Heavenly Court had been looking for Dragon Palace but progress was slow. Now that they obtained this important clue, as long as they solved it, with Heavenly Court’s efforts, they would be able to deduce Dragon Palace’s location.

“There is no time!” Qin Ding Ling had a solemn expression: “Fang Zheng is the arrangement of heaven’s will to deal with Fang Yuan. Since he found this blessed land and exposed Dragon Palace, it means that Fang Yuan must be trying to obtain Dragon Palace himself.”

Fairy Zi Wei heard this and did not dare to waste time, she quickly went back to Heavenly Court to make her deductions.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1832 Changing Duke Long“s Luck

Deep in Eastern Sea, the following scene of Dragon Palace’s dream realm was undergoing.

The dragonman clone manipulated the ant army as it charged forward.

There were thousands of black ants moving in a tight formation. Among them, armor ants paved the way at the front while arrow ants stayed at the rear, the ant queen was well protected in the middle. At the very end of the army were cannon ants, they were bulky and moved slowly.

In front of dragonman clone, Tai Qin was similarly controlling her ant army.

“Senior brother, here I come!” The yellow eyebrows girl shouted as her army pressed forward, attacking Fang Yuan’s troops.

Fang Yuan quickly willed as he stabilized his formation, defending with the armor ants while attacking with the cannon ants.

Tai Qin controlled mainly spear ants and sprint ants, they were very offensive in nature.

Fang Yuan smiled secretly to himself: “Ever since the disciple ceremony of Green Ant Ascetic, Tai Qin was motivated due to the defeat against me, she changed her cautious attitude in battle and became very aggressive, often choosing to attack first.”

At this time, two groups of sprint ants encircled him from the left and right.

Tai Qin’s tactic was very clear, she wanted to use the sprint ants’ speed to rapidly attack Fang Yuan’s cannon ants.

Cannon ants had powerful long range attacks that could kill many spear ants in a frontal battle. But it moved slowly and had weak defense, if the two groups of sprint ants got close and attacked, it would definitely get killed.

“This is an appropriate tactic, however, since I moved in this formation, why would I not anticipate this weakness in the formation? Oh junior sister...” Fang Yuan smiled at the girl in front of him.

“Then let’s fight, senior brother!” The yellow eyebrows girl shouted, her eyes shined with bright light as she exerted her full force.

As the sprint ants move closer, Fang Yuan’s entire ant army retreated, encircling the cannon ants at the back. The entire process was fluid and smooth.

Tai Qin saw this and her eyes widened as she sighed with a cute expression: “So amazing! Senior brother, you are able to control all of the ants at the same time! You have already mastered our master’s ant thought killer move?”

Fang Yuan smiled as he nodded.

Tai Qin gritted her teeth: “Even so, I will not give up easily! Senior brother, I will take down your frontal troops.”

It turned out that in order to retreat, Fang Yuan left his armor ants at the front lines, blocking Tai Qin’s spear ants.

Fang Yuan’s ant army retreated successfully, but they were separated from the armor ants in the process.

The armor ants did not last long, they were quickly wiped out by the spear ants which had greater numbers.

Spear ants moved like the tides, pressing forward.

Fang Yuan had already prepared his arrow ants at the most outer layer, they continued to shoot out their arrows. At the same time, cannon ants flew into the sky and blasted the spear ant army, killing many of them in the process.

Due to Fang Yuan’s barrage of attacks, Tai Qin finally lost as her ant army got obliterated.

“Sigh! I lost again, senior brother, you are really amazing!!” The girl let out a breath of turbid air as she looked at Fang Yuan with a glimmering gaze, there was a faint blush on her face.

Fang Yuan saw this and understood why.

Three scenes had passed since Green Ant Ascetic’s disciple recruitment ceremony.

Thinking back, Fang Yuan still felt some lingering fear.

In the scene of the disciple recruitment ceremony, no matter what advantages he had, accidents would occur to erase them rapidly.

Fang Yuan did not surrender, he considered his options and chose to keep a stalemate, preventing the yellow eyebrows girl from winning.

Eventually, they ended in a draw after reaching the limits of a Gu Master, Green Ant Ascetic appeared to stop them and took both of them as disciples.

The reason was that Green Ant Ascetic chose his disciple using ant manipulation on the surface but he had his own intentions to test the nature of the Gu Master and how long they could persevere.

If Fang Yuan admitted defeat, he would not meet this criteria, the dream realm exploration would fail.

Thus, to pass the ceremony, he could not win or lose, it had to be a draw.

After that hurdle, in the following few scenes, Green Ant Ascetic imparted his knowledge to them. Fang Yuan gained many Gu worms and his main opponent was this junior sister Tai Qin.

Tai Qin had never won a single time when she sparred against Fang Yuan.

Initially, she was not convinced, but gradually, she admitted her inferiority and even had some sort of affection brewing that she was unclear of.

“Great, it seems that the clone is making good progress in the dream realm.”

Fang Yuan observed his dragonman clone’s luck as he spoke.

This purple dragon luck had expanded in size by several times, its surrounding black cloud luck had shrunken by thirty percent.

At the same time, the azure-purple qi produced from the black clouds became denser and thicker.

But at this time, blood red light flew over from the west.

This blood red light was huge, it floated above the purple dragon’s head but did not merge with the black cloud luck.

Within the blood red light, there were the vague figures of a golden phoenix and a divine dragon, they had an incredible and threatening aura.

“What is going on? What changes are occurring?” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

He quickly deduced.

“This blood light luck is more than ten times the size of the original one! It is coming from the west, west from Eastern Sea is either Western Desert or Central Continent.”

“The blood light luck has not attacked yet, showing that now is not the time for its move. It is so big, it should be from Central Continent’s Heavenly Court!”

“How did Heavenly Court find their way here?”

“In the previous life, they did not come here at this time. Is it the ink effect from my rebirth?”

Fang Yuan lacked information, but he deduced many possibilities.

He was not shocked, in fact, he had plans against this.

Because Heavenly Court was his biggest enemy all along!

Heavenly Court.

In Central Great Hall.

Fairy Zi Wei stopped her actions as joy flashed on her face: “I deduced it after all.”

She grasped the location of Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace!

This was because Heavenly Court had been sending people to secretly investigate the five regions to search for Dragon Palace all along.

Even though progress was slow, after years of accumulation, they were close to success.

In the previous life, Heavenly Court found its own way to Dragon Palace. This time, with a critical clue, their accumulation led to great results, they quickly found success.

Fairy Zi Wei quickly told Duke Long and Qin Ding Ling about this news.

“Dragon Palace needs to be retrieved. This is my karma, let me go and take it back.” Duke Long took the responsibility for this matter.

Fairy Zi Wei immediately felt at ease: “With Lord Duke Long taking action, we will definitely succeed.”

At this time, Fairy Zi Wei’s expression changed, she received some information: “Oh no, Myriad Year Flying Warship has appeared in the River of Time, Fang Yuan is taking action again!”

“Coincidentally at this time?” Qin Ding Ling frowned: “This is too coincidental, let me take a look at both of your luck.”

Fairy Zi Wei and Duke Long did not reject her.

Qin Ding Ling first looked at Duke Long, his luck was in a dragon shape, it looked like a flaming cloud.

The old dragon lowered its head as it coiled its body, about to fall asleep — this was a sign that Duke Long’s lifespan was ending.

Qin Ding Ling grunted as she observed closely, seeing that the scales on the old dragon’s body were turning blood red, its dragon head became more wrinkled as it showed an upside-down ‘mountain’ character — this symbolized failure!

Qin Ding Ling was shocked: “There exists a person in this world that can make Duke Long fail?”

At this moment, her vision turned blood red, her luck inspection killer move was forced to stop, the backlash caused Qin Ding Ling to cough out a mouthful of blood.

“Senior Qin!” Fairy Zi Wei quickly went to support Qin Ding Ling.

After standing firmly with her eyes still bleeding uncontrollably, Qin Ding Ling smiled bitterly while having temporary blindness: “Senior Duke Long, you are truly powerful, your dao marks are too numerous, my luck inspection killer move could only take a glimpse.”

Even though Qin Ding Ling had a rank eight level luck inspection method, the actual use of it depended on the target.

In Duke Long’s case, his dao marks far exceed the peak of rank eight, he also had defensive killer moves in the form of dragon markings, they activated earlier.

“It was tough on you.” Duke Long asked: “How is the result?”

Qin Ding Ling shook her head with a worrisome expression: “Not good, Senior Duke Long will face an intense battle if he goes, there is a chance of failure.”

“How can this be?” Fairy Zi Wei was shocked.

“This is not unimaginable.” Duke Long shook his head: “The world is vast and unpredictable, the River of Time moves endlessly throughout time, humans are merely a tiny segment of this. This is quite interesting, I am curious to know what can make me fail.”

Qin Ding Ling added: “Luck is a variable, this only hints that Senior Duke Long has a chance of failure in this trip. But it is not a problem, I cultivate all living beings luck, I can use luck path methods to amplify or change your luck, Senior Duke Long! However... I need a few days.”

“Okay, I will wait for a few days then.” Duke Long thought about it and made his decision.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1833 Qi Sea Ancestor

In the dream realm.

“Senior brother, was the dinner I made yesterday delicious?” After Green Ant Ascetic’s lesson, junior sister Tai Qin came to Fang Yuan and asked him in anticipation.

Fang Yuan smiled: “It was really not bad, to think that junior sister had such talent, you will definitely make a good wife in the future, I wonder who would be so fortunate as to become your husband?”

“Senior brother, you are making fun of me again.” Tai Qin’s face turned red as an apple as she spoke in a soft tone: “If senior brother likes it, I will make more for you.”

“Sure, then I will be happy to eat it.” Fang Yuan laughed heartily.

At this time, a dragonman Gu Immortal appeared: “My son.”

“Father, why are you here?” Fang Yuan was a little surprised.

“Oh, hello Uncle Wu.” Tai Qin quickly greeted nervously.

The dragonman Gu Immortal nodded at the young girl, smiling: “You are Tai Qin right, my son has mentioned you many times in his letters, this is a small gift from me, do accept it.”

“Ah, no I cannot...” Tai Qin wanted to reject it but Fang Yuan received it for her, putting it in her palm and forcing her to keep it.

“Take it, my father has come for important businesses, our lesson today has to end here.” Fang Yuan apologized.

“Ah, it is not a problem, no problem at all.” Tai Qin quickly waved her hand and thanked the Gu Immortal before respectfully taking her leave.

“Such a pure and innocent girl, my son, are you interested?” Seeing that Tai Qin had left, the dragonman Gu Immortal joked.

Fang Yuan smiled as he thought: the dream realm has changed again, he spoke cautiously: “Father, don’t you understand me well enough?”

“Hahaha.” The dragonman Gu Immortal laughed loudly as he patted Fang Yuan’s shoulders: “I came here for important businesses indeed. The daughter of Calligraphy Pavilion Lady, Shu Jiu Ling, has reached the age of sixteen and is holding a contest to find her husband, any remarkable young man can participate, I want you to join it.”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan was slightly surprised.

He knew about the matter of Shu Jiu Ling.

In the earlier scene, Tai Qin had mentioned it while they were chatting.

Shu Jiu Ling originally loved Gu Immortal Fan Ji, she was impregnated with his child but he refused to marry her, constantly giving excuses.

In the end, Shu Jiu Ling finally understood Fan Ji's true nature, she felt extremely hurt, she stayed locked up within the residence of her mother, Calligraphy Pavilion Lady, never going out.

Calligraphy Pavilion Lady had rank eight cultivation level, she owned the Immortal Gu House Calligraphy Pavilion, she was a leader of Central Continent's lone cultivators. As a mother, seeing that her daughter was in such a state, she became furious, she wanted to find that heartless man and settle the score with him.

But Fan Ji was the last disciple of Black Heaven Temple's first supreme elder Kong Yi Hen, he was also a rank eight Gu Immortal with no children but many disciples, his most beloved disciple was the final and youngest one, Fan Ji, he treated him like a son.

Calligraphy Pavilion Lady could not act rashly against him, she had to approach Kong Yi Hen and seek an answer.

Thus, Kong Yi Hen brought his beloved disciple Fan Ji to Calligraphy Pavilion as they negotiated.

But something happened during this, not only did they not have an agreement, they even fought. After Kong Yi Hen and Calligraphy Pavilion Lady fought for a few rounds, they stopped. Fan Ji and Shu Jiu Ling became complete enemies as Shu Jiu Ling said in a rage, threatening Fan Ji: “Don't regret this, you don't want me, but there are countless in this world who do.”

Fan Ji smiled coldly: “I came here to negotiate with you but you are going too far. I want to see who has the guts to interfere in this. I want to see who has the passion to be with you even though this child is in your womb.”

Shu Jiu Ling fainted from anger on the spot.

As her mother, Calligraphy Pavilion Lady definitely had to back up her daughter.

After Shu Jiu Ling woke up, she wanted to arrange an open competition to find a husband, Calligraphy Pavilion Lady could not convince her daughter, she also felt that maybe someone else could give her daughter happiness. Even if her daughter does not like him, this event can distract her and lift her from depression and constant thoughts of suicide.

Tai Qin had said it with excitement and joy, she was delighted and treated this as a joke.

Fang Yuan laughed then but now, he could not laugh anymore.

He thought: “The dragonman race wants to be independent and strong, they have a strong ambition. This is a good chance indeed, Calligraphy Pavilion Lady is a rank eight lone immortal who is going against Black Heaven Temple, if I can become the son-in-law of Calligraphy Pavilion Lady, with this relationship, I can lead her over to the side of my dragonman race.”

As for Shu Jiu Ling's appearance, personality, and the baby in her womb, they were not a concern.

Fang Yuan did not care.

Compared to ambitions, so what if he had to make sacrifices?

Normally, only people who were able to endure things that were absurd could create unimaginable achievements that normal people could not do!

“But junior sister Tai Qin’s affection towards me is growing, if I do that, I will be letting her down. This girl will be very upset.” Fang Yuan felt a sense of guilt in his heart.

But immediately, he jolted in his heart as he realized: “No wait, what happened to me? This is the dream realm, I am Fang Yuan, not Wu Shuai, why am I feeling guilt?”

“What a powerful dream realm, it actually affected my emotions!”

“The last few scenes of the dream realm were very stable and safe, but it was subtly trying to influence me, I was actually affected.”

“That was close!”

If he had cold sweat, it would have formed on Fang Yuan’s forehead already.

But he was in the dream realm.

Normally speaking, when Fang Yuan explores dream realms, his body would be outside while his soul enters, he would often travel between inside and outside, there was a clear differentiation.

But now, Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone went in with both body and soul, he explored it continuously for days, he was immersed in it. Even though Fang Yuan regained his clarity now and knew reality and dream, his emotions were actually affected earlier.

This was a forewarning of danger.

When exploring dream realms, the worst case was getting immersed in it and dissociating from reality. Emotions were the most powerful tool, once they were affected, all sorts of feelings would emerge, Fang Yuan would be trapped in quicksand, falling deeper and deeper until he got devoured by the dream realm.

The dragonman Gu Immortal observed Fang Yuan’s expression for a while before nodding in satisfaction: “My son, you are truly unaffected by the restraints of love and affection, I will go and meet Green Ant Ascetic now, to tell him about this matter and get approval for a leave of absence for you.”

“I will follow father’s arrangements.” Fang Yuan quickly said.

River of Time.

Boom boom boom!

Intense explosions occurred as waves of river water shot out.

Swoosh!

A flying boat was riding on this huge wave, flying with lightning speed resembling a silver ray of light.

It was Myriad Year Flying Warship.

And behind Myriad Year Flying Warship, five Immortal Gu Houses chased relentlessly.

Within Myriad Year Flying Warship, Bai Ning Bing and the rest went to their stations and fought with tense emotions.

“This Heavenly Court is truly rich, they managed to rebuild Present and Past Pavilion as well as Eternal Yacht.”

“Not just that, they also have Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform, Shark Flow Lever, and that mysterious Immortal Gu House!”

“Heavenly Court is truly the number one force in the world, their foundation is shocking.”

Bai Ning Bing and the rest did not recognize Heavenly Court’s Moment Stage, in order to construct this time path Immortal Gu House, Fairy Zi Wei had taken out the core Immortal Gu of Million Heavenly King Gallery in Heavenly Court.

Forget about the other four Immortal Gu Houses, but this Moment Stage was a rank eight Immortal Gu House.

And there was rank eight time path Gu Immortal Gu Liu Ru inside Moment Stage.

As Myriad Year Flying Warship fought against Moment Stage, the other four rank seven Immortal Gu Houses were not idling, because the situation now was quite different, Bai Ning Bing’s side could only fight while moving away.

“No worries, we have advantage in luck, we can use the River of Time’s complex environment to cause damage to Heavenly Court.”

“That’s right, after we weaken them sufficiently, we will counterattack.”

A few days later.

Heavenly Court.

Duke Long was ready to move out, Qin Ding Ling who had a pale face and Fairy Zi Wei sent him off.

After changing Duke Long’s luck, Qin Ding Ling’s condition was bad, she could not accompany him or join the fight in the River of Time, she could only recuperate in Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei had to stay in Heavenly Court to oversee the situation and prevent Longevity Heaven from launching a sneak attack.

“The Immortal Gu House battle in the River of Time has gone on for a few days but Fang Yuan has not shown up. With Feng Jiu Ge’s Dao Guardian luck, we can make up for the weakness in luck, thus, we have the upper hand now.”

“This Fang Yuan should not be underestimated, Zi Wei, pay more attention to him.”

Duke Long said with deep care and concern.

“Yes.” Fairy Zi Wei had a solemn expression: “Fang Zheng is ready now, he is inside Immortal Crane Sect’s Pine Crane Pavilion, he is already on the route of Lord Duke Long’s journey.”

“Good.” Duke Long nodded as he turned into a purple dragon-shaped qi, vanishing on the spot.

Fang Yuan inspected his clone’s luck again.

The dragonman clone’s purple dragon luck expanded by several times again, it was energetic and lively, moving casually within the black clouds.

Half of the black cloud was already an azure-purple color, this showed that the chances of Fang Yuan becoming the Dragon Palace Lord was much higher now.

However!

At the top of this black cloud luck, a huge blood light luck was already pressing down, it was very close.

Within the blood light luck, the golden phoenix phantom was gone, only the purple dragon figure was left, it was huge and menacing.

Compared to the blood light luck, the black cloud luck and the purple dragon were small and weak.

“It seems that only my main body can stop this variable.” Fang Yuan had his realization.

“Oh? He’s here.” At the next moment, his eyes shined with bright light.

He saw that in immemorial white heaven, an Immortal Gu House flew closer. It was Immortal Crane Sect’s Pine Crane Pavilion!

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply as he activated his battlefield killer move.

This qi path battlefield had been prepared for a long time, it had been waiting for this moment.

“What?!” Within Pine Crane Pavilion, Fang Zheng was deeply shocked as his vision warped greatly, he became trapped instantly.

“An enemy has ambushed me! But I have Pine Crane Pavilion, thankfully, thankfully... ugh!” Fang Zheng’s expression was filled with shock and fear.

Boundless qi currents shot out like arrows, gathering towards Pine Crane Pavilion in an immeasurable number.

The terrifying might made Fang Zheng’s heart skip a beat.

“Rank eight killer move!” Fang Zheng turned pale instantly, Pine Crane Pavilion was just a rank six Immortal Gu House, how could it block such an attack?

At the crucial moment, a figure appeared.

Who else could it be but Duke Long?

It turned out that Duke Long did not meet with Fang Zheng, he only followed secretly and instructed Fang Zheng to head towards Eastern Sea using Pine Crane Pavilion.

This was also Qin Ding Ling’s suggestion, giving Fang Zheng some freedom would cause disturbance towards Fang Yuan naturally.

But Fang Zheng moved with peace and serenity, until this moment when he met his foe.

Without Duke Long, he would die without doubt.

Duke Long pushed with his palms as the surrounding qi currents broke apart and crumbled.

“Who is it? Come out!” Duke Long shouted.

“I am Qi Sea Ancestor.” Fang Yuan revealed himself but he had a different appearance now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1834 Fang Yuan Fights Duke Long

“It’s Lord Duke Long!” Fang Zheng saw Duke Long and became surprised and joyful.

He knew Duke Long’s identity, in fact, they had met before.

“If not for Lord Duke Long’s appearance, I would have died already. With him around, I should be safe.” Fang Zheng no longer felt fear, he was assured.

He knew what kind of person Duke Long was, this was Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s master!

Fang Zheng took another look at the person who almost took his life — Qi Sea Ancestor.

This old man wore a white robe, his sleeves fluttered in the air, his long white beard drooped to his feet, he had a solemn expression and grand aura, the clouds floated quietly around him, giving him an immortal-like disposition.

Fang Zheng could not recognize this as Fang Yuan’s disguise, he was curious about the old man’s identity: “This old man has rank eight cultivation level, but he is not any of the known rank eight great experts of Eastern Sea. Who is he?”

Not just him, even Duke Long was curious. But Eastern Sea was vast and had the most resources among the five regions, it was normal to have a hidden rank eight cultivator.

Immediately, Duke Long smiled “Qi Sea Ancestor... as a rank eight, it is fine to call yourself an ancestor. But calling yourself Qi Sea in front of me, you are simply too arrogant.”

Fang Zheng heard this and had a thought: “That’s right, Lord Duke Long primarily cultivates qi path, followed by transformation path, he is a rare dual cultivator! This rank eight Eastern Sea old man also cultivates qi path, but he is going against Lord Duke Long. Hehe.”

Fang Zheng felt a little sympathy for Qi Sea Ancestor.

At this time, he heard Duke Long’s voice: “You have clear ill intentions, tell me, what is your motive for staying here and ambushing us? What is your relationship with Fang Yuan?”

Fang Yuan was slightly surprised, he thought: “How did he link my identity to Fang Yuan in this situation?”

On the surface, Fang Yuan smiled coldly: “I am a secluded cultivator of Eastern Sea, I do not bother people who do not offend me, but your Heavenly Court is too ambitious, you seek to take over all five regions and unify the world. In the future, you will look for trouble with me and attempt to kill me.”

Duke Long frowned slightly, he retorted: “Qi Sea Ancestor, you must have been deceived by that demon Fang Yuan. We have no grudges with each other, this is our first encounter, why would we attack you?”

“That demon Fang Yuan is crafty and likes to sow discord, you must not trust him blindly.”

Fang Yuan snorted coldly: “I did not believe him at first, but this Fang Yuan pointed out many of my secrets, he gave concrete evidence. He is someone from the future, should I believe him or you?”

Duke Long’s frown became even deeper.

Fang Yuan’s accusation was quite shameless.

If he targeted Heavenly Court’s past or current actions, Duke Long could retort with evidence. But talking about Heavenly Court’s future actions, Duke Long had nothing to say, even he was uncertain himself!

In fact, even Duke Long had his own interpretation: “How can a rank eight Gu Immortal be so easily deceived? Since Fang Yuan convinced this Qi Sea Ancestor to obstruct Heavenly Court, in the future, it is likely that we really went ahead to attack him. In that case, there is no point in talking.”

Duke Long sighed as he thought about his mission to retrieve Dragon Palace, yet faced obstruction here. Qi Sea Ancestor was clearly here to stop him, with this deduction, Fang Yuan was likely going after Dragon Palace now.

“I need to settle this battle quickly!” Duke Long’s eyes flashed with resolution!

Fang Yuan managed to deceive him after all.

This was not just because of Fang Yuan’s modified familiar face killer move that was now compatible with his qi path methods. Most importantly, Qi Sea Ancestor was emitting a genuine rank eight aura now.

Duke Long thought that Fang Yuan was a rank seven Gu Immortal.

Not just Duke Long, the wisdom path great expert Fairy Zi Wei and the entire Heavenly Court, in fact, the entire world, had the same thought.

Different from the previous life, right now, the sovereign immortal aperture’s secret was not exposed yet.

Fang Yuan had defended this secret very well.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Claw Strike!

Duke Long made up his mind, he wasted no time as he attacked with no hesitation.

This was a transformation path killer move, immediately, a claw mark appeared in the air.

Fang Zheng who was inside Pine Crane Pavilion gasped, to think that Duke Long was the first to attack, and he even launched a sneak attack!

Even though Qi Sea Ancestor got hit by the attack, he turned into cloud fog as he faded away.

Fang Yuan was guarded against Duke Long from the start, because this was his immortal battlefield, it was easy for him to dodge it.

Duke Long’s expression did not change, the attack earlier was just a test.

Now that he probed it, this was truly a qi path battlefield, transformation path methods were greatly restricted here.

In that case, he would use different methods.

Duke Long did not turn around, he directly pointed behind him.

Air currents moved as a layer of bubbles quickly surrounded Pine Crane Pavilion, protecting it.

“Thank you, Lord Duke Long!” Fang Zheng did not dare to wait, he quickly thanked him.

Duke Long did not pay attention to him as he used another killer move, after a while, he pushed with his palms as multiple qi dragons emerged.

The half transparent qi dragon moved rapidly, once it finds Fang Yuan’s location, it would attack on its own.

“Lord Duke Long is truly not an ordinary rank eight Gu Immortal!” Fang Zheng saw these qi dragons which were all over a hundred feet long, they were majestic and grand, he could not help but praise.

But at this moment, Duke Long raised his head, his eyes shining with a sharp light.

“What sound is that?” Fang Zheng also heard the loud sound as he raised his head to look.

At the next moment, his mouth opened wide as his pupils shrunk.

He saw that a grand blade qi that was a thousand feet long, thick and wide, resembling a deity’s war blade, slammed down with a force that sought to cut this world into two!

The blade qi was vast and grand, it created gusts of wind and rumbling thunder, Fang Zheng was shell-shocked, he was like a tiny ant, those majestic qi dragons from earlier looked like earthworms or snakes now.

At the crucial moment, Duke Long shouted and used his killer move.

Qi wall!

Qi wall was the most common defensive killer move of qi path, but the method that Duke Long used now was not simple.

He used a consecutive move, using qi wall three times.

The qi wall first had one layer, before it expanded twice, it became thicker and tougher, it was the fusion of three qi walls.

Boom!

The blade qi landed on the qi wall, causing a thunderous sound that exploded intensely.

Even though he was inside Pine Crane Pavilion, Fang Zheng’s vision still turned dark as he felt dizzy, his ears were bleeding as blood flowed out.

The qi wall collapsed while the blade qi dispersed to a large extent, the remaining portion was not able to do any threatening damage.

Pine Crane Pavilion was like a small raft, it shook intensely from the aftershock, constantly shaking.

Fang Zheng took a lot of effort to stabilize the Immortal Gu House as his face turned pale, he was breathing roughly in a pathetic state.

“How can this Eastern Sea Gu Immortal be so strong?!” Fang Zheng was still completely dumbfounded, his sense of safety from earlier had been completely erased.

Duke Long was unscathed but his expression was solemn, he no longer had a relaxed mood.

He raised his head to look at Fang Yuan who was high up in the sky, they were quite far apart.

The blade qi earlier had an obvious aura, Fang Yuan’s location was naturally exposed now.

Duke Long rose in altitude as he said to Fang Yuan: “That is a powerful blade qi, even though it is not elaborate, it has a lot of raw power. But how many times can you use this move?”

Fang Yuan smiled, he was calm and composed.

The killer move earlier had too much power, Duke Long thought that Fang Yuan had activated it after a long period of preparation.

This was quite an obvious thought, but he had no idea that Fang Yuan was a special exception.

“Oh, you mean this? It was just a casual attack.” Saying so, Fang Yuan pointed his index finger at Pine Crane Pavilion as he tapped.

Boom!

A grand blade qi gathered and shot out again with imposing might.

Fang Yuan tapped his finger again.

Boom!!

Another blade qi with vast power followed after the attack from earlier with might that could split heaven and earth.

Fang Yuan tapped his finger again.

Boom!!!

The third blade qi shot out with the same power, in fact, it was even larger than the ones before.

Fang Zheng’s body froze on the spot, he was dumbfounded!

“This...” Duke Long was also deeply shocked, the enemy’s blade qi killer move was very easily used, it was as simple as drinking water.

But how could this be possible?!

Of course it was possible.

Fang Yuan had a lot of qi path dao marks, it was more than a million! Adding in the qi path battlefield’s amplification, it was reasonable that it reached this stage.

Duke Long also had qi path dao marks, but the numbers were only thirty percent of Fang Yuan’s dao marks.

Thus, Fang Yuan’s blade qi killer move needed three qi walls to block.

“He has such immense battle strength, to think that Eastern Sea contained such a character! Hehe, interesting.” Duke Long’s eyes shined with brilliance, his battle intent was completely drawn out.

He looked over, those three blade qi were approaching rapidly with an unstoppable might.

“It has been so long since I’ve last had a challenging battle.” Duke Long breathed in deeply, before his overwhelming aura burst out in all directions.

Dragon roars were heard as he charged directly towards the blade qi!

While Fang Yuan and Duke Long engaged in fierce combat, the dream realm in the sea was quiet and tranquil.

“Junior sister, be careful, I’ve prepared this move for a long time.” The dragonman clone smiled as he spoke.

The yellow eyebrows girl Tai Qin smiled delicately: “Brother Shuai, go ahead, I am ready.”

“Good.” Dragonman clone waved his hand as the ant army flew, creating a golden river that crashed towards Tai Qin.

Tai Qin also waved her hand, flying ants appeared from the ground and moved like a river as well, retaliating.

The two ant groups met in the sky but they did not fight, instead, they fused together with no casualties.

The ant groups merged completely in the sky, they were an entity now.

Under the golden light, Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone looked at Tai Qin with a sincere gaze.

Tai Qin also looked at him bravely, her face was flushing but her eyes could not hide the affection that she had.

“Junior sister.”

“Senior brother.”

The two walked closer and felt deep love for each other, the ant army flew around them and danced in joy.

A moment later, it was time to separate.

“Junior sister, I need to go. Sigh, I want to be with you forever, but... I cannot defy my father, I have a family now. It has been hard on you these years.” The dragonman clone kissed Tai Qin goodbye.

Tai Qin shook her head: “No, it has not been tough. Senior brother, you are forced to do this, while I had chosen this of my own accord. I will always be here, you can come anytime, I will be around.”

When dragonman clone returned to Calligraphy Pavilion, it was already midnight.

The moon was bright in the sky.

He looked at the pavilion at the peak of the mountain as he felt a sense of sorrow in his heart.

At this time, from the shadows, a dragonman Gu Immortal secretly flew up and met with dragonman clone.

“Brother, when you were not around, sister-in-law went to meet with that Fan Ji again in secret.” The dragonman Gu Immortal reported with displeasure on his face.

“Hmph, this slut.” The dragonman clone had a grim expression, at this moment, an intense rage emerged in his heart.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1835 Snapped In Two

“Wait! This is just the dream realm, I am not the real Wu Shuai, why is there a need to feel hatred?” The dragonman clone was stunned as he quickly regained clarity.

He blinked and subconsciously touched his forehead.

He did not feel any cold sweat, instead, he could feel a pair of warm coral-like dragon horns.

He felt a deep chill in his heart!

“Brother, what do we do now?” The dragonman Gu Immortal informant asked again.

Fang Yuan looked at him.

This dragonman Gu Immortal still had a trace of his appearance in his youthful days, it was Huang Wei. He had once competed with Wu Shuai to become the disciple of Green Ant Ascetic, but had failed.

But this person had enough talent and aptitude, due to the dragonman race’s diligence, they were highly united compared to the humans, they rarely had internal strife, this allowed all of the dragonman young geniuses to grow properly, especially geniuses like Huang Wei, they were nurtured intensely.

Fang Yuan’s character, Wu Shuai, knew of his talent and wanted to befriend him, due to a coincidence, Wu Shuai saved Huang Wei’s life and they ended up becoming sworn brothers.

A few scenes of the dream realm made rapid progress in terms of time, Fang Yuan was already a Gu Immortal now.

Fang Yuan thought about it as he snorted coldly: “A little impatience will spoil great plans, we will continue to pretend we don’t know this as always.”

This Shu Jiu Ling had once been pregnant with Fan Ji’s child, she got abandoned and in a fit of anger, chose to have a competition to find a husband.

Wu Shuai obeyed his father’s orders and became the husband of Shu Jiu Ling as they wanted to create a relationship with Central Continent’s rank eight lone immortal Calligraphy Pavilion Lady.

Honestly speaking, Calligraphy Pavilion Lady played a significant role in Wu Shuai’s ascension to become a Gu Immortal, she provided lots of resources.

But Shu Jiu Ling still could not stop thinking of Fan Ji even after giving birth to her son.

After some time, Fan Ji was also reminiscing about Shu Jiu Ling, he decided to approach her again.

Shu Jiu Ling could not control herself, she kept in contact with Fan Ji, they met with each other countless times, it almost became an open secret.

Originally, Wu Shuai becoming her husband already made him the laughingstock of Central Continent’s Gu Immortal world, now, it was only worse.

Ordinary Gu Immortals who had a weak nature would not care, but Wu Shuai was a heroic genius with great aptitude, it was not easy for someone like him to endure this.

“The higher my cultivation level, the more easily I will succumb to this dream realm.”

“After staying in this dream realm for so long, I’ve almost thought that I was Wu Shuai myself.”

“Or maybe... this is the true test of Dragon Palace?”

Fang Yuan’s clone had a burst of inspiration, he realized the truth.

This dream realm was the test for Dragon Palace’s inheritor, it did not just test their personality, because choices in the dream realm might not necessarily reflect one’s true intentions.

The dream realm was not just testing him, it was also creating an inheritor.

Even if a person was unsuitable, as long as they passed the dream realm, after such a long period of brainwashing, the Gu Immortal would emerge as someone who hated Heavenly Court and loved dragonmen, they might even become like Wu Shuai, taking on the responsibility of the uprise of the dragonman race!

“It is possible that those four Eastern Sea rank eights tried to explore this dream realm but failed. In this process, their minds were warped and turned into dragon generals!”

“What do I do?”

“I have already started to succumb to it, it is not easy to stay awake.”

“The more I explore this, the worse the situation becomes! If I fail, I will become a dragon general. If I win, I will be modified into the Dragon Palace Lord, my main body might not even be my priority anymore, I will solely want to revitalize the dragonman race!”

Fang Yuan’s clone felt his heart turning cold as he realized this.

Regardless of success or failure, neither result was favorable to him!

And the scariest thing was, even if he wanted to leave now, it was impossible. The main body had no idea this was the situation, no information could be transmitted out of this dream realm.

“I had actually fallen into the trap of this Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace!” Noticing this, Fang Yuan’s clone did not know whether to laugh or cry.

He suddenly thought of the previous life: “Wait, why was Bai Ning Bing able to control Dragon Palace and become the owner of Dragon Palace in my previous life?”

Fang Yuan had never been able to deduce the truth behind this.

“In the previous life, Duke Long had taken away Dragon Palace but he did not pass the dream realm test. Afterwards, it became Bai Ning Bing’s possession for some reason. This means that Duke Long did not truly obtain Dragon Palace, he only suppressed it forcefully.”

“But even if he only suppressed it, how could he not know it himself? If he knew, why would he place Dragon Palace in Hidden Dragon Cave instead of Heavenly Court which was a safer location?”

“Dragon Palace is an enslavement path Immortal Gu House, according to the battle in my previous life, Di Zang Sheng had also participated, it was likely enslaved by Dragon Palace. Thus, this means that Duke Long was trying to use Dragon Palace to subdue Di Zang Sheng?”

“In the end, Dragon Palace subdued Di Zang Sheng but turned against Heavenly Court...”

“Bai Ning Bing should have no time to explore the dream realms, even if she does, she has no ability to explore these dream realms.”

“However, because the dream realms were taken away by Heavenly Court, Bai Ning Bing became a lucky winner?”

The dragonman clone shook his head, after considering all this, his brain started to hurt.

There was too little information, he could not figure out the truth of the matter.

“Currently, I need to stall for time until my main body notices this problem and saves me.” The dragonman clone did not know the situation outside, Fang Yuan’s main body was currently fighting intensely against Duke Long.

In this current situation, if he aggressively explores the dream realm, he would definitely be brainwashed, he would succumb to this dream and be unable to wake up.

If he fails, he will become a dragon general. If he succeeds, he will become the Dragon Palace Lord but would betray the main body, his personality, values, and life goals would all change.

Neither one was what he wanted.

Immemorial white heaven.

Qi path battlefield.

Boom!

An intense explosion whipped up a strong shockwave.

Air currents surged, blowing towards the entire world, Pine Crane Pavilion was like a paper boat that swayed helplessly in this tsunami, it would break apart at any moment.

Fang Zheng was completely dizzy inside, his face was pale without any trace of liveliness.

“I am a Gu Immortal but I am not even qualified to watch this battle! If not for Lord Duke Long’s protection, I would have died without a proper corpse already.”

Looking at Duke Long’s figure, Fang Zheng felt admiration and gratitude.

After such a long battle, Duke Long was still energetic as he stood straight, his dragon scales shined brightly in the light, but his dragon eyes were blazing with anger: “Qi Sea Ancestor, you are such a powerful expert but you choose to attack the weak, you truly do not possess the disposition of a great expert.”

Fang Yuan laughed: “Attacking the enemy’s weakness is a righteous path tactic, that just happens to be my style of fighting. Furthermore, I am very curious, who is inside this Immortal Gu House, why are you, Duke Long, protecting them time and time again?”

Fang Zheng did not know that Qi Sea Ancestor was Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan was also unaware that his brother Gu Yue Fang Zheng was inside Pine Crane Pavilion.

Even though these brothers were meeting, they did not know each other’s identity.

And similar to the battle in the previous life, Fang Yuan also sensed acutely that the person inside this Pine Crane Pavilion was harmful to him.

Fang Yuan attacked many times, Pine Crane Pavilion was within the range of his attacks.

And because this was Fang Yuan’s domain, fog spread out and concealed his true self, allowing him to use killer moves with ease.

Duke Long was kept in a passive spot, he defended more than he attacked, Fang Yuan suppressed him for now.

But at this moment, waves of dragon roars resounded within the dense fog.

“What’s going on?” Fang Yuan was bewildered.

Following the waves of dragon roars, clouds started to gather and turned into giant dragon qi currents.

Spiral currents continued to form and expand, they were like the undercurrents of the sea, splitting up the battlefield into multiple areas, a large amount of fog were drawn in by these currents and got devoured, as these currents expanded continuously.

“This is a split move, what an ingenious killer move.” Without the fog to conceal him, Fang Yuan’s true body was exposed, he sighed in admiration.

There were four main killer move manipulation techniques that existed, split move was one of them.

Back then in the battle of Snowy Mountain blessed land, when many parties went after Ma Hong Yun, Old Ancestor Xue Hu had displayed a split move technique, he displayed incredible battle strength.

Right now, Duke Long was also using this technique without causing a commotion prior.

When Fang Yuan was fighting with him, he thought that these were just minor moves, but to think that they were all part of the same qi path killer move. When Duke Long activated them fully, a terrifying power was unleashed.

“What is the name of this move?” Fang Yuan looked at these currents as he sighed, he knew that in the short term, he could not do anything to these currents.

Duke Long laughed heartily, the anger on his face was completely gone, he was just acting earlier to stall for time.

In a battle between experts, words and expressions were weapons.

Duke Long’s battle experiences were richer than Fang Yuan, he could use these techniques casually in battle, even Fang Yuan was caught off guard.

“This move is called reverse worm dragon, I only succeeded after ten years of practicing it. It was correct that you did not attack them immediately, because any qi path methods you use will only help them to grow, from worm to dragon, their power will rise by a hundred times, you will not be able to guard against it.” Duke Long explained plainly.

He was not explaining for fun, he wanted Fang Yuan to be less inclined to attack, at the same time, he was preparing a powerful killer move, his grand aura could barely be contained.

Fang Yuan’s brain worked rapidly.

He did not see Duke Long use this reverse worm dragon move in the previous life.

In fact, when Duke Long rampaged in the previous life, he had not used his expression or words to deceive his enemies.

This meant that Duke Long was treating Qi Sea Ancestor as a powerful enemy, he was serious now!

Reverse worm dragon’s profundity was not inferior to the killer move unlimited qi sea. Fang Yuan had also not forgotten about Duke Long’s trump card qi path killer move — Triple Qi Retraction.

“This reverse worm dragon seems to have been created to counter battlefield killer moves, these worms are so troublesome to deal with, if they evolve into dragons, they would become even stronger.”

“But so what?

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan smiled arrogantly, he attacked.

Blade qi gathered and slashed down again.

Duke Long was stunned: “He had clearly seen this move’s profundity, he should avoid it. By attacking now, is he trying to stop me from using my killer move, to disrupt my tempo and continue suppressing me?”

Activating killer moves needed time. But Fang Yuan did not give Duke Long a chance. He did not feel disheartened, he stopped the killer move activation as he brought along Pine Crane Pavilion to dodge the attacks.

“You want to suppress me but you are actually helping to raise reverse worm dragon’s strength, they will grow from worm to dragon, I will get a chance!” Duke Long was burning with battle intent, he wanted to fight with his full power.

As expected, the blade qi landed on the spiral currents and got absorbed by them to a large extent.

The currents grew rapidly, exploding on the spot as more than ten of them fused into one divine dragon, its body was long and majestic, it also filled this entire qi path battlefield.

Compared to it, Pine Crane Pavilion was like a tiny mosquito beside an elephant!

“Such a powerful killer move, Lord Duke Long is finally retaliating.” Fang Zheng saw this and became overjoyed.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan spoke slowly in a calm tone: “So this is turning worm into dragon, it is powerful. But... it is not enough.”

Saying so, he activated his killer move.

Qi path killer move — Yin-yang Great Killer Hands!

Rumble!

With a loud explosion, two huge hands, one black and one white, appeared out of nowhere.

The two hands were so large they could loom over heaven and earth, they had an intrinsic pattern, at this moment, they grabbed at the qi dragon’s neck and tail.

The huge dragon growled and struggled intensely, but the giant hands were unmoving like they were made of metal.

Fang Yuan pulled with both hands from afar.

Boom—!

The huge dragon was directly snapped in two by him without putting up a resistance.

Fang Zheng opened his mouth wide, he was unable to close it.

Fang Yuan stretched his fingers as he looked at Duke Long, saying plainly: “Alright, I’m done warming up.”

Duke Long had a serious expression, his dragon pupils shined with a domineering light, he stared fixedly at Fang Yuan.

He opened his mouth, revealing his sharp white teeth as he said: “Great, it seems... you are truly a worthy opponent.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1836 Steal Life Hits Duke Long

Dream realm.

“This is Censure Peak?” The dragonman clone looked at the floating mountain in the sky as he showed some amazement: “This is not a real mountain, it is like a phantom image.”

“Indeed brother, I was shocked when I first saw it too.” Dragonman Gu Immortal Huang Wei was by his side.

Two scenes had passed in this dream realm.

They were currently inside Gu Immortal Wen Xiu’s grotto-heaven, because the tribulation was too strong, loopholes formed and a connection to the outside world was created, it got discovered.

Wen Xiu was a legendary woman, an information path great expert that had died long ago. She was a lone cultivator and lacked resources, the reason she became a rank eight great expert was because she owned a special area — Censure Peak.

A Central Continent Gu Immortal observed for some time before gasping: “Wen Xiu was truly formidable, this Censure Peak is man-made and is full of information path dao marks, it is akin to half a secluded domain of heaven and earth!”

Along with Fang Yuan’s clone were many Central Continent Gu Immortals.

All of the immortals were looking at Censure Peak, undeniably, it was the essence of this grotto-heaven as well as the most valuable resource here.

Everyone wanted it!

Huang Wei transmitted: “Brother, when we contest for it later, give it your best effort, I will help to defend you and stall for time.”

“Okay.” Fang Yuan’s clone was answering when the surrounding Gu Immortals turned to attack him.

“Strike first!”

“Wu Shuai is the strongest person here, if we fight him alone, none of us are his match.”

“How can we let the great Censure Peak end up in the hands of a dragonman.”

It turned out that while Huang Wei and Fang Yuan’s clone were conversing, the other human Gu Immortals had already made their agreement.

Instantly, Fang Yuan’s clone and Huang Wei fell into an encirclement.

From all directions, killer moves approached.

“Such guts!” Fang Yuan’s clone shouted angrily as his dragonman body charged to the sky with imposing might.

A vast amount of ants flew with him, forming a golden river current that protected Huang Wei and himself.

Boom boom boom!

The human Gu Immortals attacked fiercely, soon, Fang Yuan's carefully nurtured ant army suffered immense losses.

Fang Yuan retaliated immediately, his methods were profound and powerful, quickly salvaging the situation. After a few rounds, he broke out of the encirclement and went into a deadlock with the immortals.

After a dozen rounds, the Gu Immortals who encircled him became suppressed in the battle.

Enslavement path Gu Immortals were usually able to fight a group of enemies alone, this dragonman Gu Immortal Wu Shuai that Fang Yuan was portraying had immense talent, he eventually forced these Central Continent Gu Immortals to retreat.

Of course, Fang Yuan's clone paid a terrible price while Huang Wei also sustained heavy injuries.

“It was a difficult victory, but at least we obtained Censure Peak.” Huang Wei smiled bitterly.

But when Fang Yuan's clone was about to obtain it, he met with an obstruction.

“What is going on?” They quickly found the reason, someone had secretly gone to take this Censure Peak as his own while they were fighting, stealing the fruits of the battle.

This was none other than Fan Ji, the person who was having an affair with Wu Shuai's wife, Shu Jiu Ling!

Fan Ji had fainted on the spot, his soul foundation was too weak to refine the entire Censure Peak.

“This fellow!” The dragonman clone gritted his teeth in anger, he was filled with rage, he almost attacked and killed him.

“You can't kill him!” The dragonman Gu Immortal Huang Wei who was beside him quickly shouted.

“Why not?” Fang Yuan's clone turned around with bloodshot eyes, he was filled with killing intent.

Huang Wei explained: “Oh brother, I know your pain, but we both know this person's identity. If you kill him, his grandfather will take action. He is now a member of Heavenly Court, but he does not move around normally. If his beloved grandson gets killed, he will investigate the truth and take revenge on you.”

Fang Yuan's clone was stunned before his gaze turned dark, his face was distorted from anger.

After a long time, he sighed deeply: “Brother, you are right. I cannot kill him, otherwise, the best case scenario is that I get involved. But worse is that others might use this as a chance to deal with our dragonman race. How can I, Wu Shuai, implicate the entire dragonman race because of my personal emotions?”

At the same time, in immemorial white heaven.

“It should be here.” Shen Cong Sheng frowned a little, after inspecting the empty sky for a long time, he stopped frowning as he spoke with certainty.

Standing beside him was Song Qi Yuan, he smiled: “Brother Shen’s investigative methods are very effective, in that case, let’s work together.”

Shen Cong Sheng answered: “Of course, I want to know why Immortal Crane Sect’s Pine Crane Pavilion came to Eastern Sea sneakily and vanished here.”

These two were not ordinary Gu Immortals, one was Shen clan’s first supreme elder and the other was Song clan’s first supreme elder, they had rank eight cultivation level.

The two were originally on an important mission, but they found Pine Crane Pavilion by chance.

At that time, Fang Zheng was inside this Immortal Gu House, having entered Eastern Sea.

The two Gu Immortals were authority figures with deep knowledge, they recognized Pine Crane Pavilion as they wondered: “What is an Immortal Gu House of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects doing in Eastern Sea?”

Shen Cong Sheng also found that a Gu Immortal expert was hidden near Pine Crane Pavilion.

The two Gu Immortals thus followed from afar. Using Shen Cong Sheng’s investigative method, they did not lose track of this Immortal Gu House.

And because they were afraid of alerting the enemy, they were too far away, when Fang Yuan ambushed Duke Long and Pine Crane Pavilion, they did not see anything.

By the time they arrived, Fang Yuan had already succeeded in trapping Duke Long and Pine Crane Pavilion in the qi path battlefield.

But Shen Cong Sheng’s method was incredible, after some investigation, he found a lot of clues, he deduced that an immortal battlefield was hidden here.

The two Gu Immortals immediately attacked!

“What is going on? Shen Cong Sheng and Song Qi Yuan actually came here? Did they have any agreements with Heavenly Court?” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

The attack of the two Eastern Sea immortals made him immediately get into a situation of facing internal and external threat.

Against Duke Long, he had to give his full attention without distraction. But now, he had to deal with Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng. It was really troublesome now, Fang Yuan could not deal with so many aspects at once.

Rumble!

The qi path battlefield shook as Duke Long noticed it, he became joyful: “What is going on? Someone is attacking this qi path battlefield? This is a good chance!”

Duke Long roared as he attacked with even greater force.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, he used the qi path battlefield to dodge attacks while aiming his moves at Pine Crane Pavilion.

Attacking the enemy’s weakness was the best strategy, because Duke Long’s weakness was grasped, he had to go on the defensive and continually take hits.

But good times did not last long, the qi path battlefield soon gave way as more loopholes formed.

Duke Long had been searching for a chance, he laughed loudly: “Qi Sea Ancestor, your luck is pretty bad, even though you set an ambush, external forces came to attack. You have been targeting my weakness all along, but now your qi path battlefield is your weakness, break!”

Saying so, Duke Long unleashed his killer move as the qi dragon soared to the sky, it could roam freely in heaven and earth, it could move unhindered over the universe.

Fang Yuan quickly tried to stop it but the qi dragon was very agile, it directly targeted the qi path battlefield’s weakness.

Fang Yuan could not stop it, he sighed as a huge loophole formed in the qi path battlefield, it rapidly expanded until the battlefield broke apart.

Fang Yuan grunted as the backlash assaulted him.

Duke Long did not attack him immediately, instead, he pushed Pine Crane Pavilion: “Go.”

A wave of dragon-shaped qi carried Pine Crane Pavilion and Fang Zheng as it rapidly retreated, attempting to escape the battlefield.

After the battlefield was broken, Duke Long returned to Eastern Sea, but he found that the ones who destroyed the battlefield were Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng.

These two were Eastern Sea rank eights, they were not allies, instead, Qi Sea Ancestor had genuine Eastern Sea aura.

Thus, Duke Long first made a move on Fang Zheng to send him away, so that he would have no reservations in the fight.

“What is going on?!” Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng saw this, they became stunned.

“Duke Long?!” They immediately recognized Duke Long’s identity, their hearts shook.

Duke Long was extremely famous, he was the master of Red Lotus Demon Venerable, he had great seniority. Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng had not thought that they would see Duke Long in this situation.

And more unexpectedly, Duke Long seemed to be ambushed by a person who seemed to be an Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortal!

Heavens!

Since when did Eastern Sea have such an expert, he dared to ambush Duke Long!

Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng looked at each other in disbelief, they had a similar thought: “Crap, we seemed to have disrupted this Eastern Sea friend’s plans, instead, we helped Central Continent’s Heavenly Court.”

“Friend, we...” Song Qi Yuan wanted to explain but Fang Yuan grunted as he flew like lightning towards Pine Crane Pavilion.

Duke Long saw this and became enraged: This person seemed like a gentleman and an old expert but he was still targeting Pine Crane Pavilion even now!

Thus, he gave chase.

Duke Long was very fast, he soon caught up to Fang Yuan.

The two began exchanging moves again.

Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng took a few glances, they burst out in cold sweat.

“These are both monsters!”

“Since when did Eastern Sea have such an expert, he is able to fight Duke Long evenly?”

“Forget this, he is obviously targeting Pine Crane Pavilion, what does this Pine Crane Pavilion contain?”

“Even if there is nothing, we foiled his plans, we can take down this Immortal Gu House to explain our stance.”

Song and Shen quickly moved, getting away from the battlefield and grabbing Pine Crane Pavilion from the horizon.

“You cannot kill me, I am a prospective member of Heavenly Court, I am protected by Duke Long. I am Gu Yue Fang Zheng, I am also Fang Yuan’s brother!” At the moment of life and death, Fang Zheng, who was well experienced now, felt no sense of shame as he shouted, he did everything to preserve his life.

Song and Shen stopped their actions indeed, they looked at this mere rank six Gu Immortal in surprise.

Fang Zheng barely calmed himself down as he gulped: “Heavenly Court wants to use me as a weapon against Fang Yuan, they place great importance on me. You can use me as the hostage to extort resources and even Immortal Gu from Heavenly Court, I believe that Heavenly Court will give you a satisfactory amount.”

Shen Cong Sheng waved his hand as Fang Zheng immediately fainted, he looked towards Song Qi Yuan: “Brother Song, what do we do?”

Song Qi Yuan was frowning deeply: “It seems like we really cannot kill him. This situation is out of my expectations, let’s go back and watch the battle.”

“Alright.”

The two went back to the battlefield, they saw from afar that Duke Long had the upper hand, he was attacking fiercely. That Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortal finally made a mistake when defending, he revealed a weakness.

Duke Long had gotten rid of the burden Fang Zheng, he immediately grasped this weakness, attacking fiercely.

Fang Yuan defended himself desperately.

“Oh no, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal is in danger.”

“What do we do? Do we reinforce him?”

Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng hesitated.

They had interfered in this matter coincidentally, they were still very suspicious now. Unlike the previous life, they had no idea what was going on!

But at this moment, the two gasped.

It turned out that Fang Yuan had changed his tactic, he moved rapidly and approached Duke Long.

“Duke Long, you fell for it, have a taste of this.”

Immortal killer move — Steal Life!

Duke Long had a stunned expression as the killer move steal life landed on him directly.

It turned out that Fang Yuan had pretended to be heavily injured and exposed a weakness so that he could obtain this chance.

Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng looked at each other, feeling the immense shock in each other’s emotions.

Because after Duke Long got hit by this move, his condition became quite weird, he floated in the air without moving at all.

“Steal Life... why is it in your hands?” Duke Long looked at Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1837 Duke Long Recruiting Fang Yuan

Duke Long was hit by the killer move steal life!

But Fang Yuan’s expression sank a little, because nothing really happened to Duke Long.

Back then when Fang Yuan attacked Thunder Ghost True Monarch in Lang Ya blessed land, the effect of Steal Life was immediate. In the previous life, when Lang Ya land spirit used steal life Immortal Gu, he also heavily injured Fairy Zi Wei, Chen Yi, and Feng Jiu Ge, while Thunder Ghost True Monarch died.

But this time, against Duke Long, this steal life killer move had no effect. This was out of Fang Yuan’s expectations.

But soon, he recovered as he said casually: “Fang Yuan gave it to me, but it seems to have no effect on you, why is that?”

Duke Long said plainly: “I had once used the killer move heavenly dragon’s last stand, my lifespan will continue to dwindle as my strength rises proportionately. This is like Gu Immortals who overuse lifespan extension methods, lifespan Gu no longer work on them, my heavenly dragon’s last stand also causes other lifespan extension methods to stop working on me.”

“And Steal Life merely exerts influence on the dao marks corresponding to lifespan. This might be why it failed.”

“So that’s it.” Fang Yuan nodded as he smiled: “Such tricks do not work on you, but it will still be quite effective against other Heavenly Court immortals, I will save it for the future.”

Duke Long’s expression turned dark, he was worried about this.

Even though the killer move steal life was ineffective on him, it was still very useful against most of the other Heavenly Court members.

In this current situation, Fang Yuan failed to defeat Duke Long because of Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng's interference. Duke Long was aware that this was likely the result of Qin Ding Ling's change luck, and also because of Fang Zheng's presence.

However, it would be extremely difficult if Duke Long tried to destroy steal life Immortal Gu.

Because he had fought Fang Yuan for a long time, he knew that this Qi Sea Ancestor was very strong, he was not like any other ordinary peak rank eight Gu Immortal. It was possible to defeat him, but trying to kill him would be very difficult.

Because he could not set up an immortal battlefield now, he could not trap Qi Sea Ancestor. At the same time, two Eastern Sea rank eights were watching near the periphery.

Thus, after getting hit by steal life, Duke Long did not make a move.

He spoke to Fang Yuan warmly: "Qi Sea Ancestor, as the saying goes, friends are often made after a fight. You cannot defeat me, but I cannot do anything to you either. The truth is, why do we even need to fight so intensely?"

Fang Yuan had a thought as he said: "Oh, Duke Long, you want a truce?"

He had deep wisdom path attainment, he could easily understand Duke Long's intentions, he felt a bit of admiration internally.

"Duke Long was ambushed by me and took a beating in the fight earlier. He has such a great status and seniority, his strength is also at the peak, but he has no arrogance at all, he remained calm and observed the situation with clarity. Once he understood that a truce was more advantageous, he immediately stopped the fight. This person truly has terrifying self-control."

Even though he was thinking about this, Fang Yuan spoke something different: "This is because Heavenly Court came to disturb and provoke me, I do not want to contest with anyone, I cultivate in seclusion, but your Heavenly Court is too greedy, you want to devour all five regions and unify the world. My existence itself was your biggest obstacle, therefore, you used a devious scheme to plot against me, and also gathered a large number of rank eights to encircle and attack me."

Duke Long heard this as he felt helpless.

He felt maligned, Heavenly Court had done no such thing as of this moment. In fact, this was the first time he had heard of Qi Sea Ancestor!

But he had no words to rebuke him.

Because it was likely that Heavenly Court would do this in the future.

"Let's not discuss the fact that this could be Fang Yuan's lie." Duke Long nodded: "Even if this is true, that happened in the previous life. Looking at the River of Time, it is a matter at the downstream, it has not happened yet. In that case, since we know about it, why don't we change it?"

Fang Yuan laughed mockingly: "Haha, did I hear wrongly? Isn't your Heavenly Court proclaiming to be the leader of the righteous path, you defend heaven's will and try all means to repair fate? You actually want to change the future, isn’t that trying to change fate itself?”

Fang Yuan pretended to be unaware, this was a crafty accusation.

Duke Long smiled: “Heavenly Court does defend the Heavenly Dao, we want to repair fate Gu. But this Heavenly Dao is the Heavenly Dao that wants humanity to rule, this fate is the fate Gu that defends the human race. Qi Sea Ancestor, we do not have a huge grudge between us, we can coexist in peace. I will represent Heavenly Court here, we can make an alliance of mutual non-interference!”

Duke Long spoke solemnly and with great sincerity.

At the edge of the battlefield, the two Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals heard this and their expressions changed.

Shen Cong Sheng gasped in dismay while Song Qi Yuan also had an ugly expression.

Originally, after seeing that Eastern Sea had someone like Qi Sea Ancestor who could fight Duke Long alone without being suppressed, they were very happy.

In the five regions, Eastern Sea had the most abundant resources but the Gu Immortals were not united, their battle strength varied greatly among each other.

With the currently moving earth veins, new Earth Trenches were forming all the time, the five regional walls were weakening and the five regions were merging into one, this was no secret to anyone now.

Once the five regions merge into one, the other four regions would face the intense threat of Central Continent.

Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng were both first supreme elders that were rank eight Gu Immortals, they had great authority and could clearly see the threats of the future.

In this situation, if Qi Sea Ancestor went against Heavenly Court, it would greatly benefit Eastern Sea’s super forces.

Firstly, Qi Sea Ancestor had outstanding battle strength, he was on par with Duke Long, when Heavenly Court invades Eastern Sea, he would be a huge threat to them.

Secondly, Qi Sea Ancestor was a secluded cultivator, he had not shown up after so many years, it showed that he had no ambition, because he was alone, he could definitely coexist with all the super forces in Eastern Sea.

Finally, Qi Sea Ancestor clearly cultivated qi path, this path had been on the decline for many years, why would any super force in Eastern Sea cultivate qi path primarily? Thus, in terms of resources, there was no conflict.

“Alliance with Heavenly Court?” Fang Yuan pretended to be stunned, he stopped his actions as he suppressed his aura and did not make a move.

Duke Long said energetically: “Qi Sea, our conflict can definitely be resolved peacefully. Regarding your potential future losses, we, Heavenly Court can also compensate you.”

Duke Long was an experienced person, he spoke frankly and had great magnanimity, his concern was regarding the big picture.

“You can’t!” Shen Cong Sheng could not control himself as he shouted, flying over quickly.

Song Qi Yuan followed behind him, saying: “Heavenly Court has a deep foundation, their so-called compensation is nothing to them. Right now, they have grand ambitions, they just want to stabilize this situation now, senior, you must not trust them.”

“That’s right senior! We were rash earlier and ruined your plans, we regret it deeply now.” Shen Cong Sheng said again.

“Furthermore, alliance agreements are bullshit, any agreement can be broken given enough time or if they pay a huge price. Senior cultivates qi path instead of information path, but Heavenly Court is different, they cannot be trusted.” Song Qi Yuan added.

The two of them spoke like juniors because they saw Fang Yuan’s incredible strength.

But why would Fang Yuan agree in the first place! He was merely stalling for time now, but it seemed that these two Eastern Sea immortals were more anxious than him.

Fang Yuan smiled internally, he knew what these two were thinking with just a thought.

Duke Long nodded: “Indeed, at our level, agreements cannot restrict us. However, friend Qi Sea has steal life, right? You must know its value, with this move, you have Heavenly Court’s weakness in your grasp. This is the foundation of our alliance. With this restricting us, why would we break our agreement?”

Once he said that, Fang Yuan assessed Duke Long deeply. In the previous life, Fang Yuan saw Duke Long’s immense battle strength, but to think that he was so eloquent as well, he was not inferior to a wisdom path Gu Immortal.

According to Duke Long’s understanding, steal life Immortal Gu and the killer move were both given to Qi Sea Ancestor by Fang Yuan to deal with him. But these things were now used by Duke Long to push for an alliance with Qi Sea Ancestor instead.

Fang Yuan was silent.

He knew about Duke Long’s plans, he must be thinking that Qi Sea Ancestor was not an otherworldly demon, as long as fate Gu was repaired, he would pose no threat to them. He could even be recruited to become Heavenly Court’s battle strength. This was the power of a sect system, how could clan based forces even attempt this? Normally, super forces could not recruit Qi Sea Ancestor, at his level that was equal to Duke Long, only the number one force, Heavenly Court, had the foundation to recruit him.

The two Eastern Sea immortals were extremely anxious.

They immediately spoke and pointed out that if fate Gu was repaired, due to the influence of heaven’s will, Heavenly Court would be unbeatable. Heavenly Court had a huge ambition, they wanted to take over the world, senior should not be blinded by them.

These two Eastern Sea rank eights were also not stupid.

Fang Yuan smiled to himself, with the two of them here, he did not have to waste his own effort, he looked at Duke Long without speaking.

Duke Long looked at these two Eastern Sea immortals coldly, exerting pressure.

But Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng looked at him fearlessly.

Even though they knew that they were not Duke Long’s match, in the previous life, they dared to fight against him over Dragon Palace, in this life, they also dared to face him.

This was not about courage, it was about benefits.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s stance was too important, they needed to speak up now, the two Eastern Sea immortals were not wimps.

Shen Cong Sheng smiled coldly: “Lord Duke Long, why are you not letting us speak? Did we hit a nerve?”

Song Qi Yuan added: “Look senior, this is Heavenly Court’s attitude, they are truly overbearing.”

Duke Long snorted and laughed: “If not for Heavenly Court, why would there be the human race of today? Even if heaven’s will exerts influence, how much influence can there be? Can it kill you directly? If heaven’s will had such power, we would have unified the five regions long ago, why would we wait until now?”

“At this point, I might as well increase the offer. Friend Qi Sea, why don’t you just join our Heavenly Court! After cultivating alone for so many years, you gained such strength, this shows your immense talent. But you must know about the pains of a lone cultivator, let’s just talk about tribulations. How many people in this world can actually help you with them? In Eastern Sea, is there anyone who can match you? You want to rely on these people for help? In fact, these two even ruined your qi path battlefield earlier.”

“If you join Heavenly Court, I can help you with tribulations. Even without me, Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard has countless sleeping rank eight Gu Immortals. We also have the wisdom path great expert Fairy Zi Wei, who possesses Star Constellation Chessboard, she can help you with deductions. Qi path has already become a declining path, but Heavenly Court has Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s inheritance. If you make any outstanding contributions, you can even obtain Primordial Origin’s true inheritance in the future!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1838 Fighting For Fang Yuan“s Suppor

Duke Long made a huge offer!

But nobody felt anything strange about it.

Fang Yuan’s strength was apparent to everyone, his attitude could affect Eastern Sea and even Central Continent to a large extent.

This was his value! In the Gu cultivation world, strength was supreme!

Song Qi Yuan became increasingly anxious as he laughed coldly: “Lord Duke Long, you are truly shameless, earlier you were fighting to the death with Senior Qi

Sea, but now you want to recruit him, who can believe your words?”

Duke Long smiled calmly: “To trust or not to trust, that is up to the individual. You two do not trust me because you are afraid that Heavenly Court will go after your benefits, you both have your own clans and territories, you own many sea areas and you want to protect your forces. But Qi Sea is alone, he is not like you.”

“Laughable! Senior Qi Sea is an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, if he joins your Heavenly Court, he will definitely be isolated and pushed aside by you all!” Shen Cong Sheng shouted.

“Isolated and pushed aside?” Duke Long looked at Shen Cong Sheng in disdain: “With this kind of small-minded thinking, no wonder Shen clan has not done anything significant after you led it for so many years. The sect system is extremely accepting of outsiders, we only look at talent. And what is that talk about Eastern Sea and Central Continent? The five regions are merging into one, every Gu Immortal in this world will belong to the same region in the future.”

Duke Long was eloquent, Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng were quickly rebuked until they were silent.

However, even if Duke Long made sense, would Fang Yuan possibly join Heavenly Court?

If Duke Long knew that he was talking to Fang Yuan himself, who knew what expression he would show.

Shen Cong Sheng wanted to speak again, he did not want to give up.

Duke Long snorted coldly, showing ruthlessness in his eyes: “Your tiny Shen clan wants a piece of this world? Ambition has to fit one’s strength. Otherwise, you will only attract trouble in the future. In fact, I can act as that trouble now and give your Shen clan what it deserves.”

Shen Cong Sheng was threatened by Duke Long, he was furious and shocked but kept his mouth shut. He was here to convince Qi Sea Ancestor, he did not want to implicate Shen clan in this, or become the eyesore of Heavenly Court. Otherwise, when the five regions chaotic war starts, Shen clan would become the cannon fodder, that was not what he wanted to see.

Song Qi Yuan knew that he could not show weakness at this moment, he clapped: “Such dominance, Duke Long, as a Central Continent Gu Immortal, you are threatening three rank eight Gu Immortals of Eastern Sea now, are you trying to take advantage of our good temperament?”

Fang Yuan also snorted coldly, he had an ugly expression: “I am familiar with this tone as well, in the future when your Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals attack me, you will use this tone as well, thinking that you are the supreme overlords of this world and that everyone should submit to you unconditionally.”

Once he said that, Shen Cong Sheng and Song Qi Yuan felt revitalized as they straightened their backs.

They did not know that Fang Yuan was helping them out a little and supporting them because he saw that they were currently intimidated by Duke Long’s overbearing aura.

This situation was quite peculiar now, earlier, Duke Long and Fang Yuan were fighting, but now, Eastern Sea’s two immortals and Duke Long were fighting for Fang Yuan’s support.

Fang Yuan was happy to see this situation, he stood in the middle and watched the two sides, he would step in to help whichever side was weaker when the chance occurred.

“This is a really rare opportunity. If I handle this well, maybe Shen clan and Song clan will become the eyesores of Heavenly Court after this.”

Fang Yuan decided to sow discord, he was going to use this chance to intensify the conflict between the two sides, so as to influence the entire Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world!

Duke Long saw that Qi Sea Ancestor’s expression turned dark, he felt a little annoyed.

He was not annoyed at Qi Sea Ancestor but Fang Yuan instead.

“This demon has ill intentions, he is most skilled at devious schemes, when he got Qi Sea Ancestor to help him, he must have aggravated the story!”

“Friend Qi Sea.” Duke Long thought about it and spoke: ” There is mutual benefit in us working together and mutual harm if we become enemies. Many of these devious people are trying to sow discord and use you as their cannon fodder.”

He spoke with both a soft and hard stance, he was not promising rewards solely, he was also displaying Heavenly Court’s deep strength.

On the other hand, seeing that Qi Sea Ancestor spoke up for them, the two Eastern Sea rank eights thanked him while speaking ill of Heavenly Court, they were even more daring than earlier.

Fang Yuan stayed at the center, sowing discord as he watched the two sides accuse and blame each other.

After a while, they became more heated, their words were also more offensive.

Fang Yuan observed his expression and saw that Duke Long was getting impatient, he knew that he could not overdo it, he smiled with deep meaning: “Why would I not know what that Fang Yuan is planning? But that junior is quite interesting, he promised me many things, he was even willing to offer venerable true inheritances. Even though I cultivate qi path, I also have descendants inside my immortal aperture. It is always good to make preparations for them in advance.”

Fang Yuan was completely shameless, these true inheritances were his to begin with, he could say anything he wanted.

Duke Long heard this and realized, did Fang Yuan also try to recruit Qi Sea Ancestor?

But it was not surprising! This person was so powerful that in the absence of an Immortal Venerable, almost nobody could threaten him. Even Duke Long himself was only on par with him. Even though his killer moves were not very exquisite and he did not seem to have many qi path rank eight Immortal Gu, his dao marks were at an absurd number, it was truly a mystery how he managed to cultivate to this extent!

Duke Long did not know that Fang Yuan had deceived him again, he laughed: “Fang Yuan is merely someone who got lucky, he is a pawn of the venerables, they needed him in their arrangements so they gave him some benefits and made him slog for it. In terms of foundation, how can he compare to Heavenly Court?”

“Qi Sea, if you join Heavenly Court, you would not need to contribute your immortal aperture, you can keep it. Forget it, let’s not talk about joining

Heavenly Court now, I just want to express my sincerity. In the future, if you want to join us, I will definitely invite you with open arms.”

“Let’s talk about the compensation. Since you cultivate qi path, my Heavenly Court is willing to provide a batch of rank eight qi path resources that are extinct in the outside world, as well as qi path inheritances that are all exceptional for you to peruse.”

Duke Long decided to take it slowly.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light when he heard about the qi path resources mentioned.

They were indeed extinct, only Heavenly Court could keep them until now from the Remote Antiquity Era.

Other forces could not compare with Heavenly Court in age, they would not have such treasures stored up.

Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng saw that Fang Yuan was moved, they quickly called out: “Senior Qi Sea, do you know that Duke Long came to Eastern Sea secretly because he wants to obtain Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace. We just captured Gu Yue Fang Zheng earlier, we soul searched him and obtained a lot of information.”

“That’s right, Duke Long only wants to stabilize senior now and retrieve the crucial Immortal Gu House first. Once he completes his task, who knows what attitude he will have later.” Song Qi Yuan added fuel to the fire.

Fang Yuan was very happy internally: This Immortal Gu House, Dragon Palace, was rank eight, both Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng were very moved by it. They were even more anxious than him in wanting to stop Duke Long.

But on the surface, Fang Yuan had a stern expression, he said solemnly: “I know some information about this Dragon Palace matter. I have also obtained a venerable true inheritance from Fang Yuan, we made an agreement. Duke Long, stop here. If you want to express your sincerity, this is the best action to take. I will not pursue what happened in the future of the previous life, in fact, we can indeed have a truce in the future. Otherwise, even if I cannot defeat you, I will go visit Central Continent first.”

Duke Long snorted coldly, thinking in his heart: This Qi Sea Ancestor looks like he has a cool disposition and a sage-like demeanor, but he is actually so shameless in personality.

Fang Yuan said he wanted to visit Central Continent, but he was clearly not going to just ‘visit’ it. Duke Long did not question the possibility of this, because earlier, Fang Yuan focused all his attacks on Pine Crane Pavilion, it caused Duke Long to end up in a passive spot, he had to withstand the attacks.

Like how the two Eastern Sea immortals had their territories and were afraid of Heavenly Court’s threat, Central Continent’s Heavenly Court also had a great amount of territory, much more than Shen clan and Song clan, they were afraid of people like Qi Sea Ancestor who would be unrestrained and wreak havoc.

Qi Sea Ancestor was a lone cultivator, he was all alone without any territory holding him back, he could come and go as he pleased. And most importantly, he was very strong, Heavenly Court did not have any effective methods of dealing with him!

Other demonic path, lone immortals or even Fang Yuan (Heavenly Court thinks he has rank seven cultivation level) were not too threatening to Duke Long. Because they were not strong enough, even if they joined forces, they were not Duke Long’s match.

But Qi Sea Ancestor was different, after their encounter this time, Duke Long became very wary of him.

He had his trump card triple qi retraction, but would Qi Sea Ancestor lack a trump card?

He definitely had one!

Honestly speaking, reaching Qi Sea Ancestor’s level as a lone immortal was extremely rare. Such a person would have a huge influence on the forces around him, even if he cultivated in seclusion, he was still a huge obstacle to Heavenly Court’s domination.

According to Duke Long’s mentality, such a person needed to be eliminated! Because they were too threatening to the repair of fate Gu!

Thus, when Fang Yuan lied that they would attack him in the future, Duke Long believed it in his heart.

But now, due to Fang Yuan’s interference, Qi Sea Ancestor was alerted.

And Duke Long did not want to give up on the Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace either.

What should he do?

Duke Long felt a headache.

He thought that if he fought against Qi Sea Ancestor, Fang Yuan would want to see that happen, or rather, that was Fang Yuan’s scheme all along. But if he stops fighting against Qi Sea Ancestor now, should he really give up Dragon Palace?

Impossible!

“Qi Sea, those things earlier are just Heavenly Court’s compensation.” Duke Long said: “Next, we can talk about our transaction involving Dragon Palace. That demon Fang Yuan is too devious and scheming, he paid a huge price to get you to block us, it was a good move! But he is just a rank seven Gu Immortal, it is too laughable that he thinks he can toy with us rank eight Gu Immortals.”

As he said this, Duke Long’s tone turned solemn: “Whatever resources he gave you, our Heavenly Court can give you more! Furthermore, I do not need you to take action, I just want you to watch by the sidelines.”

“Oh? Are you for real?” Fang Yuan showed a slightly stunned expression.

“Absolutely!” Duke Long said with certainty.

“Senior Qi Sea...” The two Eastern Sea immortals wanted to interject but Fang Yuan waved his hand, stopping them from speaking.

Fang Yuan looked at Duke Long as he smiled with a slightly mocking expression: “Duke Long, Fang Yuan gave me a venerable true inheritance.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1839 Using Venerable True Inheritance as Bargaining Chip

“Venerable true inheritance?” Eastern Sea’s two immortals stared with wide eyes.

Duke Long gritted his teeth: “May I ask which one?”

“Spectral Soul’s true inheritance.” Fang Yuan said immediately: “If you don’t believe me, I can show you a portion of the content.”

Duke Long pondered for a moment before nodding: “I believe you.”

At the same time, he thought: This demon Fang Yuan is truly crafty! Spectral Soul was already captured by Heavenly Court, in the future, we will obtain his Spectral Soul true inheritance as well, it is not an issue. This true inheritance has very little value to Fang Yuan now, so he used it for a transaction. But Qi Sea Ancestor does not have Spectral Soul in his possession, it is normal that he took the offer.

Fang Yuan continued: “Duke Long, if you want me to step aside, are you going to offer a venerable true inheritance too?”

Duke Long gritted his teeth again: “Of course.”

“Really?” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly: “Honestly speaking, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable is the person I admire the most.”

Duke Long could feel his lips twitching, he thought to himself: This old man is also really devious, if he really admires Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable so much, why would he fight so ruthlessly earlier, he even used Steal Life, he totally wanted to kill me! But he cultivates qi path, it is logical that he wants Primordial Origin’s true inheritance, that can be my bargaining chip.

“Friend, you may not know, the bulk of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance lies in creating Heavenly Court grotto-heaven, the rest of the content is quite little, due to many changing eras, they are no longer usable in the present world.” Duke Long purposely said.

Fang Yuan frowned as he showed some disappointment: “That means you cannot give me Primordial Origin’s true inheritance? Then what can Heavenly Court offer? Star Constellation’s or Genesis Lotus’ true inheritance?”

Regardless of which, they were useful to Fang Yuan.

Duke Long chuckled, he gave Fang Yuan some hope, replying ambiguously: “We can discuss this.”

The two Eastern Sea immortals looked at each other, they felt troubled, Duke Long was very ambitious, in order to recruit Qi Sea Ancestor, he actually decided to offer a venerable true inheritance!

And the worst thing was that neither Shen clan nor Song clan could make such an offer.

Duke Long was the leader of Heavenly Court, he had abundant wealth, he could directly use resources or venerable true inheritances to ‘flood’ Qi Sea Ancestor, he wanted to ‘overwhelm’ him.

This was the foundation that Heavenly Court had accumulated over countless eras, Song clan and Shen clan were truly unable to match even a small fraction of it.

Fang Yuan suddenly felt that Duke Long was actually quite likable. His style of doing things made Fang Yuan want to give a thumbs up.

He was truly straightforward!

Immediately, Fang Yuan and Duke Long went into a deep discussion.

He wanted to stall time for the dragonman clone anyway.

The two Eastern Sea immortals could only watch, they felt anxiety but also helplessness.

Fang Yuan did not forget them of course, during the conversation, he continued to talk to them and allowed them to maintain hope.

After he did that for many times, Duke Long noticed the problem, his gaze turned deep and dark.

He knew that this Qi Sea Ancestor was using these two Eastern Sea rank eights to vie for more benefits! But it was not a problem, as long as Qi Sea Ancestor was willing to negotiate, it was a good sign.

“But Gu Yue Fang Zheng is in Shen Cong Sheng’s hands, this is a small problem, I need to take him back.” Duke Long conversed with Fang Yuan while thinking about this as well.

Fang Yuan was also thinking about Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

Earlier, Eastern Sea’s two immortals had mentioned Gu Yue Fang Zheng, but Fang Yuan’s acting was too good, he acted like did not mind it at all, he was a complete outsider that showed no flaws.

But Fang Yuan had his own thoughts: “This dear little brother of mine was not just saved by Heavenly Court, he was even nurtured into becoming a Gu Immortal? Very interesting!”

“There must be a reason why Heavenly Court is placing such importance on him. I do not know the exact reason but it is not a problem, I will take him away later and directly kill him.”

Long ago, Fang Yuan had wanted to refine Fang Zheng into Blood Deity, but because of Heavenly Court’s pressure and due to many reasons, Fang Zheng was left to live in Lang Ya blessed land for a long time.

In the end, an unexpected mishap occurred and Fang Zheng got saved by Feng Jiu Ge!

This was not really a mistake but since Fang Yuan found him now, he decided to settle it for good.

Fang Zheng was not very important to Fang Yuan, but since Heavenly Court thought highly of him, Fang Yuan would kill him. This was Fang Yuan’s usual vigilance.

As for blood path, he had not many options back then, he needed to raise his battle strength. But times were different now, Fang Yuan’s interest in developing blood path was very low.

As long as the Demon Judgment Board existed, if he cultivated blood path, he would be giving Heavenly Court information on where he was.

Sometimes, Fang Yuan guessed that in the previous life, he cultivated blood path likely because of the influence of heaven’s will, it was a method to trap him.

Thankfully, he had always been cautious, he did not attempt to continue using his previous life’s signature path for a shortcut.

The more Duke Long talked, the more energetic he got.

He could tell that Fang Yuan was very sincere, he really had a lot of interest in the venerable true inheritance.

“Indeed, this Qi Sea Ancestor has incredible strength, in this world, maybe only venerable true inheritances are of interest to him. Eastern Sea actually had such a person, I need to properly investigate his background after I return.”

Qi Sea Ancestor was actually Fang Yuan, and not only did Fang Yuan want Heavenly Court’s venerable true inheritances, he also wanted to kill Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

If Duke Long were to know of this, he might just cough out blood on the spot.

Dragon Palace dream realm.

The study room had a heavy atmosphere.

Fang Yuan’s clone who was acting as Wu Shuai looked at his father with an ugly expression, he asked: “Are we really going to give ownership of Censure Peak to that Fan Ji? I clearly won the contest, he was the one who tried to steal it. If I did not hold back, he would have died already.”

The dragonman Gu Immortal shook his head: “Censure Peak involves huge benefits and complex relationships, Black Heaven Temple is refusing to give in. And worse is that even though we contacted Calligraphy Pavilion Lady and Green Ant Ascetic, these two are not helping us to exert pressure on them.”

“Damn it!” Wu Shuai clenched his fists: “I am the last disciple of Green Ant Ascetic, but now that I am facing this problem, this master is showing no care or concern.”

“And that Calligraphy Pavilion Lady is even worse! I am her son-in-law while Fan Ji is the guy who harmed her daughter, yet she is not even saying a word.”

The dragonman Gu Immortal sighed: “How can we influence rank eight Gu Immortals? This was all my fault, I had been too naive in the past. The truth is, did Green Ant Ascetic and Calligraphy Pavilion Lady really not know about our intentions? They were just playing dumb.”

“That’s why, father!” Wu Shuai stared at the dragonman Gu Immortal, his eyes shining with brilliance: “Only our race’s own rank eight Gu Immortal is dependable. Our dragonman race has been relying on the humans and developing until today, wasn’t it because of Ancestor Duke Long’s influence?”

Wu Shuai’s father nodded: “My son, you are right. But rank eight Gu Immortals are just too rare, even though our dragonman race is stronger than the humans, we lack their special spirit. Right now, we have many rank seven Gu Immortals, but we do not even have a single rank eight Gu Immortal other than our ancestor.”

Wu Shuai had a bright gaze: “That is why we cannot wait any longer. External rank eight Gu Immortals are not dependable while we are also unable to produce any, we need to use an Immortal Gu House as a substitute.”

The dragonman Gu Immortal sighed again, he shook his head: “Immortal Gu House? We have thought of that in the past, but to create a rank seven Immortal Gu House would require too many resources, we cannot afford it. And our dragonman race’s current strength is already causing a lot of commotion, more and more human Gu Immortals are onto us. Conspiracy theories against dragonmen are also increasingly common, in this situation, if we still build an Immortal Gu House, wouldn’t they lose their minds?”

“Father!” Wu Shuai stared with wide eyes as he said loudly: “Are we not going to build our Immortal Gu House just because of some resources and rumors behind our backs?”

“Isn’t it enough? My son, our dragonman race relies on the humans, this relationship is our foundation, we cannot be rash. If we really build an Immortal Gu House and ruin the relationship, not to mention a rank seven Immortal Gu House, we would not even have hope of building a rank six Immortal Gu House. Sigh, all these years, I have been in this position and dealing with them. You will not understand the feeling of ostracism.” The dragonman Gu Immortal sighed continuously.

Wu Shuai felt some disappointment, he argued: “Regardless of the difficulties, we need to do this. Ordinary rank seven Immortal Gu Houses are not enough, we need to create a rank eight Immortal Gu House. That is the only way to establish the foundation of our race!”

“Rank eight Immortal Gu House? Hahaha, my son, I am very happy to see that you have such drive. But some things cannot be rushed, progress takes time. Sigh, let’s forget about Censure Peak.” The dragonman Gu Immortal waved his hand.

Wu Shuai thought about it before nodding: “I guess we have no choice.”

Scenes after scenes occurred, Fang Yuan’s clone wanted to stall for time so that his main body could save him, but his main body was stalling for time so his clone could obtain Dragon Palace.

Dragon Palace was like quicksand, Fang Yuan’s clone was helpless, he gradually sank and became unable to save himself.

It was almost as if he had become Wu Shuai, he was experiencing all of these scenes personally.

After the matter of Censure Peak, Wu Shuai finally realized the reality. His master Green Ant Ascetic was unreliable, his mother-in-law Calligraphy Pavilion Lady was also unreliable, even his own father, the dragonman Gu Immortal, was weak-willed, he was also unreliable.

He could only rely on himself!

Wu Shuai had this realization, he started to strive for strength and excellence.

He had great talent and incredible aptitude, with ample hard work and network resources, not only did his cultivation level soar, a portion of the dragonmen also became stronger, they became the most prominent branch of the dragonman race.

On the day Wu Shuai became rank seven, he also became a higher-up of the dragonman race, the youngest supreme elder with real authority!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1840 Dragon Cour

Wu Shuai was smart and resolute, he had great foresight and a strong personality, he was not weak-willed like most of the dragonman Gu Immortals. Due to his leadership, the dragonman race became stronger and stronger.

Secretly, he gathered resources and did not forget about the plan to create a rank eight Immortal Gu House.

But good times did not last long, the strengthening of the dragonman race made the humans more antagonistic towards them, they started to use more underhanded methods. Many people were very jealous, in fact, even Wu Shuai himself admitted that much of the reason why the dragonman race was able to get stronger was because they occupied the human Gu Immortals’ benefits.

But due to Duke Long, the human Gu Immortals would not find them for trouble over many things.

On Duke Long’s birthday, there was a huge celebration.

The red ‘longevity’ character written in the hall was very conspicuous.

Duke Long sat at the main seat, surrounded by dragonmen.

One by one, dragonman Gu Immortals walked up and gifted the presents that they had prepared meticulously.

“Father, I wish you great blessings and longevity.” A dragonman Gu Immortal gave a bundle of white python grass.

This grass was an immemorial desolate plant, it contained dragon essence and had the shape of a white python with exquisite scales and dragon horns.

“Father, I wish you eternal prosperity and a long life ahead.” Another dragonman Gu Immortal offered a soft jade flower.

“Father, I wish you...” Wu Shuai’s father also appeared.

Duke Long had a solemn expression as he nodded, his attendants beside him collected all of these gifts for him.

After his sons had finished, his grandchildren came up.

At this time, Duke Long’s expression also became gentler, he smiled warmly.

“Grandfather, I am here to offer birthday wishes! I wish you blessings as deep as Eastern Sea, and longevity as tall as Southern Border mountains. This is a desolate beast that I hunted personally for you, I hope grandfather likes it.” A dragonman youngster half-knelt on the ground as he held a plate in front of him, there was a tiny seahorse on the plate.

“This is the desolate beast happiness seahorse, it is very fast and hard to kill.”

“Seventh young master only has rank six cultivation level, it is very hard for him to kill it, but to think he actually captured it alive!”

“I heard that in order to capture this happiness seahorse, seventh young master spent a month at the bottom of the sea without moving, his filial piety is truly touching.”

The surrounding people discussed, many human Gu Immortals also participated in this joyous celebration.

Little Seventh was Duke Long’s favorite grandson, he smiled kindly as he held the plate carrying the seahorse, he said: “Good, good, good, Little Seventh, I will happily accept this gift.”

But when it was Wu Shuai’s turn, Duke Long retracted his smile as he looked at Wu Shuai: “In the current situation, you are the most accomplished grandson I have, but remember that going too far could end up being detrimental.”

“Yes, grandfather.” Wu Shuai respectfully walked away.

That night of the celebration, Duke Long asked someone to secretly call Wu Shuai to his study room.

“Return that South Flower Island to them.” Duke Long said openly.

Wu Shuai was slightly shocked, he forced a smile: “Grandfather, you may not know, I had won this South Flower Island fair and square, I plan to make this island a home for our dragonmen.”

Duke Long had a solemn expression, a sharp light flashed in his eyes, it made Wu Shuai feel a little pain on his face: “Wu Shuai, don’t think that nobody can see through your little tricks! South Flower Island belonged to Wind Cloud Manor but you snatched it through a scheme. What are you trying to do? Lead your dragonmen properly, isn’t it good to stay in the sect? Why must you relocate and move all the way to South Flower Island? Tell me, what is it that you want?”

Wu Shuai held his breath, after a moment, he replied: “Grandfather, I do not have much ambition, I just want my people to have a better life.”

“A better life? You mean a greater ambition!” Duke Long’s voice resounded.

Wu Shuai shuddered as he confessed: “Grandfather, even if this is ambition, so what? Shouldn’t we have ambition? Do we not have the right to strive for a better life?”

“Why must we stay here? Grandfather, do you not know of how those human Gu Immortals ostracize and take advantage of us?”

“What ostracism? How are they taking advantage of you? All these years, I have only heard about your actions. Do you know why I like Little Seventh the most? Because he sees the world’s beauty, he is kind from the depths of his heart, he has never considered the difference between human and dragonman. But you? You use my name to act rashly in the outside world, you devour people’s territory and take your sect’s benefits for yourself, quickly stop all these actions!” Duke Long shouted coldly.

“Grandfather, if these human Gu Immortals did not treat us like this, why would we act like this?”

“What human, what dragonman, dragonman is human to begin with, what difference is there?!” Duke Long chided.

“If there is no racial difference, what are these dragon horns on my head? What is this dragon tail on my back?” Wu Shuai said angrily, he shouted: “Grandfather, you were a human who turned into a dragonman, most of your life was spent as a human, you have only been a dragonman for a short period of time.”

“But us?”

“Grandfather, have you thought about it! We were born as dragonman, we were born with horns on our heads and a tail on our backs.”

“I have been educated by my parents from a young age, they told us that we originated from humans, but when I was little, the kids around me mocked me for my appearance, they ostracized me, they pulled my tail and scales. All these tell me that I am not part of this human race!”

“After growing up, I realized that not just the kids, even those human adults treat us differently, they are just more subtle with it.”

“If I fail, they will say that it is normal for dragonmen to lose to humans. If I succeed, they will say: A dragonman was able to reach this stage? Did he use any tricks or schemes?”

“Those humans always think they are the greatest beings, they look down on dragonman as an inferior race. How dare they?”

“Man is the spirit of all living beings, but us dragonmen are not inferior. We are born with enslavement path dao marks, our body physique far surpasses these humans, if human Gu Masters do not use Gu worms, their punches and kicks cannot even hurt the dragon scales on our bodies. And even more special is our long lifespan, all of these humans die so quickly compared to us.”

“So many Gu Immortals become dragonmen because they want to extend their lifespan. They have clearly abandoned their human identity but they still look down on dragonmen, this is merely the fault of these decadent ideas of the past.”

“Enough!” Duke Long slammed the table, interrupting Wu Shuai, his face was extremely dark.

“Not enough.” Wu Shuai’s tone became calm, he looked at Duke Long bravely, enduring those dragon eyes that were emitting great pressure: “Grandfather, you are the one who created the dragonman lifespan extension method, without you, the dragonmen will not exist, you are the ancestor of the dragonmen, why must you constantly side with those humans? We are your family! I will not return South Flower Island even if I die. Grandfather, if you insist on it, then you will have to end my life first.”

After saying that, Wu Shuai did not look at Duke Long, he turned around and left, walking out of the room.

Duke Long did not stand up to stop him, he remained seated on his chair, having complex emotions.

“Sigh... my descendants are all growing up, they have their own ambitions now.”

“But they have never placed the big picture of humanity in their hearts.”

“Was I negligent in my education? Or have the dragonmen already formed into a flood, I was just the person who pushed open the floodgates?”

Wu Shuai schemed against Wind Cloud Manor, after realizing it, they went to Duke Long to settle this, wanting to take back South Flower Island, but Wu Shuai did not listen, he insisted on his actions.

Wind Cloud Manor did not give up, they used all sorts of methods to find trouble with Wu Shuai.

Wu Shuai dealt with whatever they threw at him, he maintained stability with much difficulty. Duke Long did not do anything to help his grandson, but the rest of the dragonman Gu Immortals did something to help be it secretly or openly.

Due to their help and Wind Cloud Manor being wary of Duke Long, they did not act too aggressively, Wu Shuai succeeded in relocating all of his people to South Flower Island to live.

But the matter regarding South Flower Island did not end here.

Even after a hundred years, Wind Cloud Manor did not give up on it, they continued to act and try to reclaim South Flower Island.

Wu Shuai dealt with all of these problems with impeccable methods, Wind Cloud Manor was unable to succeed.

“After a hundred years, my plan finally comes to fruition!” On this day, Wu Shuai looked at the Immortal Gu House in front of him as he shed tears of excitement and joy.

Back then, he snatched South Flower Island because he needed a secretive location to build the Immortal Gu House.

Wu Shuai’s father stood beside him, having an incredulous expression: “You actually succeeded! My son, you are more capable than me.”

“Even though the sects have been suppressing and isolating my South Flower Island these years, I have been gaining fortuitous encounters constantly, I had a stream of resources. At the same time, with the help and contribution of the dragonman Gu Immortals, after a hundred years, this rank seven Immortal Gu House has finally been created.” Wu Shuai smiled: “Give me a few hundred more years, I might be able to make this a rank eight Immortal Gu House.”

“This has not been named?” Wu Shuai’s father asked.

“The Gu Immortals all have their own suggestions, but as the creator, I overruled all suggestions and gave this the name — Dragon Court!” Saying so, Wu Shuai’s voice became louder as his eyes shined with bright light.

“Dragon Court?” Wu Shuai’s father heard this and his expression changed: “Isn’t this too... inappropriate?”

“Hahaha, why is it inappropriate? It complements Heavenly Court!” Wu Shuai laughed loudly.

“Son, you should reconsider it. In the eyes of these human Gu Immortals, Dragon Court is not a name that complements Heavenly Court, it is clearly a rebellious sign.”

“Hehe.” Wu Shuai laughed coldly: “They can think what they want.”

“You can’t say that, humans are still the overlords of the five regions.”

“Father.” Wu Shuai raised his hand: “Say no more, I have made up my mind, this will be called — Dragon Court!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1841 Renowned in the World, Promising a Future

Eastern Sea dream realm.

An intense battle was reaching its climax.

Song Tao Zi was covered in injuries but his aura was strong, firmly suppressing Wu Shuai.

“Wu Shuai, you did not stop my killer move, that was your greatest mistake, now lose!” Song Tao Zi shouted as he raised his head, his body glowing in a dense green light.

The green light covered Song Tao Zi and spread rapidly, traces of green light resembling the leaves of a pine tree. Layers and layers stacked as they swept towards Wu Shuai in an unceasing manner.

Wu Shuai did not move, he continued to lie in the deep pit, seemingly accepting defeat.

The observing Gu Immortals saw this as they all sighed.

“Wu Shuai is going to lose.”

“That is natural! Song Tao Zi is a peak rank seven of Wind Cloud Manor, his battle strength is definitely top three within Central Continent’s rank seven Gu Immortals. Wu Shuai wanted to challenge him, he was truly out of his league.”

“He is just a dragonman Gu Immortal, it was amazing that he could fight to this extent.”

“Hehe, so what? Wu Shuai had already set the agreement with Wind Cloud Manor before the battle, this would decide the ownership of South Flower Island. This defeat is really a shame. His hundred years of hard work is going to end up wasted.”

“That’s right, I heard that Wu Shuai and his dragonman comrades have managed South Flower Island very well, it is full of resources. Now, Wind Cloud Manor is going to gain from it.”

“You can’t say that, back then Wu Shuai used a devious scheme to take South Flower Island from Wind Cloud Manor. This is just retribution, he deserves it.”

The humans Gu Immortals were happily watching by the side, enjoying his misery.

Tai Qin watched at a corner alone, her eyes were filled with tears as she muttered worriedly: “Darling Wu...”

Meanwhile, those dragonman Gu Immortals had defeated expressions.

Only a few of the ones who knew the secret had excited and expectant expressions.

“Brother, use it, shock the entire world!” The former dragonman youngster Huang Wei idolized and admired Wu Shuai with all his heart, he yelled internally.

At the next moment, looking at the green light that spread towards him like an endless tsunami, Wu Shuai smiled lightly.

“You finally used this move, Song Tao Zi, do you know that I have been waiting for this for a long time.” Wu Shuai laughed.

“What do you mean?”

“Hmph, he is putting up a front.”

“Can a mere dragonman Gu Immortal like him accomplish a comeback?”

“This move is Song Tao Zi’s famous killer move — Green Heaven Pine Wave! In Central Continent, no, in the entire five regions, how many rank seven Gu Immortals can actually successfully defend against this move?”

However, at the next moment, a huge castle appeared from nowhere.

Wu Shuai went inside it and charged up while manipulating this palace.

The palace soared towards the sky, up into the clouds.

“What is this?!”

“An Immortal Gu House!”

“I have never seen an Immortal Gu House like this, did Wu Shuai create it himself?”

“Most likely. This battle has been announced to the world, both sides can use their own possessions. Since Wu Shuai is using it, this must be his according to the rules!”

“Oh heaven, the dragonmen have an Immortal Gu House now, and it is a rank seven Immortal Gu House.”

“Look, this palace is completely unaffected, it is as if green heaven pine wave does not exist, it easily carved out a pathway. This is not an ordinary rank seven Immortal Gu House, it can definitely resist rank eight existences!”

Everyone gasped.

Song Tao Zi was furious and shocked.

He looked at his proudest killer move being treated as harmless air, his heart sank to rock bottom.

Wu Shuai was currently using Dragon Court!

Dragon Court approached as Wu Shuai’s voice resounded: “Song Tao Zi, kneel down and beg for mercy, I will spare your life.”

Song Tao Zi had a pale expression, he said in a rage: “Don’t even think about it! You, a mere dragonman, dare to humiliate me?!”

Even though he was in a desperate situation, Song Tao Zi refused to back down in this fight.

“Have mercy!” The surrounding Wind Cloud Manor Gu Immortals saw this and quickly shouted.

Within Dragon Court, Wu Shuai heard his words and laughed coldly. His dragon pupils burst out with killing intent as he used Dragon Court to directly charge over.

“Ah—!” Song Tao Zi could not dodge in time, he screamed pitifully as he was crushed to death by Dragon Court!

“What? Song Tao Zi died!”

“He actually killed Song Tao Zi! Is he trying to cause a war?”

“A dragonman Gu Immortal killed a member of our human race, what is he trying to do?”

All sorts of furious emotions erupted, the dragonman Gu Immortals present turned pale while Huang Wei had a look of nervousness.

At this moment, Dragon Court floated in the sky, Wu Shuai shouted from within: “Shut up! My battle with Song Tao Zi was a life-and-death battle, this was announced to the world long before the fight. If anyone has any objections, come out now and face me — receive your death!”

Instantly, the surroundings went silent.

In the next scene of the dream realm, it was the celebratory banquet.

There were a hundred tables here filled with delicious food and wine, everyone was happily celebrating.

The spotlight was naturally on Wu Shuai who was sitting at the main table!

“Congratulations to brother, after this battle, nobody will contest South Flower Island anymore, Wind Cloud Manor also lost a powerful general.” Huang Wei offered a toast, he was filled with excitement and admiration.

Wu Shuai patted his shoulders: “Brother, this was not all due to me, you have credit too.”

“Brother...” Huang Wei was choked with tears.

“Brother Shuai, this battle made you renowned in the world, I will congratulate you now.” Tai Qin raised her wine cup, she spoke normally but her tone was filled with affection.

“Junior sister, thank you for the concern.” Wu Shuai knew what Tai Qin was worried about in her heart.

Thus, he shouted loudly: “My battle with Song Tao Zi was a battle of life-and-death, the world can attest to that, whoever dies has to accept their fate! Song Tao Zi was a good opponent, he deserves the glory of dying in a heroic combat. I would like to assume that Wind Cloud Manor has no objections?”

Wind Cloud Manor had naturally sent an envoy to this banquet, it was an ordinary rank six Gu Immortal.

Song Tao Zi was killed by Wu Shuai’s insistence, Wind Cloud Manor also lost South Flower Island, but for their righteous reputation, and to show their magnanimity, they still sent an envoy to attend the banquet.

Wu Shuai’s words made this envoy’s face turn red, he hesitated before standing up and calling out: “Is my Wind Cloud Manor a small sect? Since this was agreed upon, we would definitely not go against it!”

“Please take a seat, envoy.” Wu Shuai waved his hand, laughing loudly.

The envoy gritted his teeth in anger, he wanted to blow up but there were many people looking at him, because the sect’s reputation was at stake, he had to sit down.

“Friend Wu Shuai, I am an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, Gu Liang, I watched your battle with Song Tao Zi and how you overwhelmed him with power, I offer you a toast.” A male Gu Immortal wearing a robe and crown walked out.

He called himself Gu Liang, he was a middle aged man but had a smile that gave off the air of a person of authority.

Wu Shuai felt overjoyed internally: This battle really made him renowned in the world, even Eastern Sea Gu Immortals came to attend his banquet.

“Calligraphy Pavilion Lady has arrived—!” At this moment, the doorman shouted loudly.

The hall went into a commotion, a rank eight Gu Immortal had just shown up in this event after all.

Calligraphy Pavilion Lady did not come alone, she brought her daughter along, it was Wu Shuai’s wife-in-name, Shu Jiu Ling.

“My son-in-law, congratulations on your victory.” Calligraphy Pavilion Lady smiled lightly, even though she said just one simple sentence, everyone’s expressions changed.

“Mother-in-law, my virtuous wife, I have been saving seats for you, please come and sit.” Wu Shuai smiled as he invited them, feeling surprised internally.

From Wu Shuai’s perspective, he would definitely invite Calligraphy Pavilion Lady for such an important event, at least on the surface, he would always do his part as a good son-in-law.

But the truth was, he did not expect Calligraphy Pavilion Lady to come.

But now, she came personally and even brought her daughter along, this was out of Wu Shuai’s expectations.

“Lord Green Ant Ascetic has arrived—!” After Calligraphy Pavilion Lady got seated, another rank eight Gu Immortal arrived.

This was Wu Shuai’s master, but for the last few decades, Wu Shuai had not been in contact with him.

Wu Shuai also sent him an invitation, of course.

“Disciple greets master!” Wu Shuai quickly went to greet him.

“My disciple, I have come to visit you.” Green Ant Ascetic looked at Wu Shuai as he nodded in praise: “Mm, you are quite energetic.”

“Master, please take a seat.” Wu Shuai had an excited expression, he was not pretending, it was his true emotion.

The influence and gains from this battle were far beyond his expectations!

After the banquet, Wu Shuai sent off the two rank eights but Calligraphy Pavilion Lady left her daughter Shu Jiu Ling behind.

“You two have been separated for so long, how can that continue? You should stay together.” Calligraphy Pavilion Lady said in a plain tone, but she had deep meaning behind it.

Shu Jiu Ling did not speak, she was not impatient as always, she was very quiet now.

But at night, Wu Shuai left her in an empty room: “My virtuous wife, take a rest first, I need to settle some work first.”

He was still so polite, it was the same as their first encounter.

Shu Jiu Ling was silent for a moment before nodded obediently: “Go and do your work, husband.”

Wu Shuai was not busy at all, he was meeting with Tai Qin.

“Junior sister, I have come.”

“Brother Shuai, I thought you were not coming today.”

“How could that be? You need to know how important you are in my heart, that woman cannot even compare to a strand of your hair.”

Tai Qin was very happy when she heard this, after they enjoyed each other’s company for some time, Tai Qin asked worriedly: “Brother Shuai, I am still quite worried, you killed Wind Cloud Manor’s signature rank seven expert, would they let this go?”

“Of course they will not let this go, but so what?” Wu Shuai sneered, looking at the cold and bright moon in the sky, he sighed: “Today, after this banquet, I, Wu Shuai, have finally realized the truth.”

“Realized what?”

Wu Shuai’s eyes flickered with cold light: “In this world, strength is all that matters. Why do you think Master Green Ant and Calligraphy Pavilion Lady came here to attend my banquet? That is because I own Immortal Gu House Dragon Court. Even though I have rank seven cultivation level, I can use this house to fight rank eight, this is my foundation, I am now qualified to talk to them.”

“Wind Cloud Manor will definitely remember this grudge, but they have too many concerns if they want to deal with me. That is because of my Dragon Court!”

“As long as I possess this strength, there is nothing to fear.”

“No, I will definitely become a rank eight Gu Immortal, I will elevate Dragon Court to rank eight as well. By then, I want to see who can look down on me in this world.”

“Brother Shuai...” Tai Qin placed her head on Wu Shuai’s chest as she looked at him endearingly.

Wu Shuai lowered his head and met with her gaze, he caressed her hair gently as he promised: “Oh junior sister, I will give you happiness, I will give you a good life. Right now, Calligraphy Pavilion Lady is still a threat to me, but when I become rank eight, I will definitely give you a proper status.”

“I don’t need any status, Brother Shuai, I am satisfied with just being by your side.”

“But I am not satisfied, I want to have many children with you in the future, I want us to enjoy the happiness of watching our descendants grow up.”

“Will that day come?” Tai Qin’s face flushed red with embarrassment.

“It will.” Wu Shuai held her tightly: “Believe me, it will!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1842 Uprising Plan, Stealing Fate

Wu Shuai accumulated for a hundred years, he constructed an extraordinary rank seven Immortal Gu House, Dragon Court.

Next, he made a bet with Wind Cloud Manor, using Dragon Court to kill Song Tao Zi in front of everyone, becoming renowned in the world.

During the celebratory banquet, Green Ant Ascetic and Calligraphy Pavilion Lady showed up, this confirmed that Wu Shuai’s influence had grown — he was now qualified to speak on equal terms with rank eight existences!

During the night of the celebratory banquet, Wu Shuai had a nice dream.

In this dream, he fulfilled all of his aspirations, he reached all of the goals that he was willing to fight for.

He became the dragonman leader, he had peak rank eight battle strength, Duke Long stepped down from his position for him.

He controlled Dragon Court and led his dragonman people to live freely, becoming equals with the humans.

He imprisoned Fan Ji and tortured him to death in front of Shu Jiu Ling, before he went to deal with Shu Jiu Ling herself. Calligraphy Pavilion Lady came in time and fought against him, after she lost, she begged him to spare her daughter and offered herself as his subordinate, Wu Shuai agreed to it, he only made Shu Jiu Ling a servant while Calligraphy Pavilion Lady became his subordinate for good.

He made Green Ant Ascetic and Wine Fairy his dragonman external supreme elders, even though they did not want to, the dragonman race was too powerful, Wu Shuai’s strength forced them to submit.

And the happiest thing was that he finally made Tai Qin his sole dragon empress, they had many children together. All of his kids had great talent and aptitude, they were like shining stars in the sky. Even though they were still young, they would definitely become great figures in the future.

On the second day, Wu Shuai woke up with a smile.

He looked at his beloved Tai Qin as she slept, he covered her with a blanket affectionately.

Next, he walked out of the room quietly, starting to do his work.

His battle with Song Tao Zi did not just lead to his own rise, even the dragonman race was feeling a lot of motivation and excitement.

Due to this influence, the dragonman race became more active and had a stronger attitude.

For the next few decades, the conflict between the dragonmen and humans intensified as they clashed with greater intensity.

Duke Long learned of this and summoned Wu Shuai.

Wu Shuai flew all the way for thousands of li, but was scolded by Duke Long.

These years, he had been the main culprit behind the conflict of the dragonmen and humans.

Next, Duke Long ordered him to announce his crimes and step down as the owner of South Flower Island, at the same time, he had to change Dragon Court’s name to Dragon Palace.

Wu Shuai was unwilling but against Duke Long and Heavenly Court, he was still too weak.

He had a dark expression and deep anger as he returned to South Flower Island, following Duke Long’s instructions reluctantly.

Gu Liang came to visit.

The first time Wu Shuai saw him was during the banquet after killing Song Tao Zi.

For the last few decades, Gu Liang had been very close with the South Flower Island dragonmen, they had worked together many times, their cooperation was harmonious.

“Wu Shuai, I heard about the situation in South Flower Island, why are you admitting to such crimes? Is there anything I can help you with?”

Wu Shuai sighed deeply: “Gu Liang, this is the order of my ancestor Duke Long, I have no choice but to obey him, I am helpless now.”

Wu Shuai spoke firmly: “I will tell you the truth, when I killed Song Tao Zi, I thought it was a turning point that will lead to the rise of my dragonman race. But after these decades, I seem to be stuck in a sandpit, all my actions are showing little effect, I am facing pressure from all directions.”

Gu Liang smiled as he consoled: “Don’t think too lowly of yourself. These years, I have seen all of your hard work. If not for your management of South Flower Island, this force created by the dragonmen would have been devoured by all the greedy people out there. After all, it is the ten great ancient sects and Heavenly Court that you are going against.”

Wu Shuai was silent for a while, he was filled with deep rage and anger, but also helplessness, in the end, he sighed deeply as he raised his head: “The rise of the dragonman race, it is easier said than done, it is harder than ascending heaven.”

Gu Liang still had his smile: “One step at a time, back then when Heavenly Court rose to power, wasn’t it the same situation?”

Wu Shuai said in a defeated tone: “With my ancestor’s instructions, my decades and even centuries of hard work have gone to nothing. The humans have control of the world, this is the trend.”

Gu Liang said: “I have a method, it can solve your problem.”

“Oh? What is it? Quickly tell me, there is no need to hesitate with our friendship.” Wu Shuai immediately asked.

“This is a simple plan, you are only worried about the morale of the dragonman race. Especially since you and South Flower Island are the war flags that hold up the entire race, yet Duke Long wants to exterminate that. But what if you advance to rank eight now?”

“Advance to rank eight? Why would I not want that! But the final tribulation, even with Dragon Court, I am afraid...” Wu Shuai was hesitant.

“Hahaha, you have taken charge of South Flower Island for so many years, you truly cannot take such a risk. You know how important you are to the entire island and dragonman race. But all these worries are holding you back, you no longer have the same bravery back then. I am here to lend you a hand, I will help you pass the final tribulation and become a true rank eight Gu Immortal!” Gu Liang said as his aura transformed, turning from rank seven to rank eight.

It turned out that he was a rank eight Gu Immortal disguising as a rank seven.

Wu Shuai was deeply shocked: “Gu Liang... no, senior... you...”

Gu Liang raised his hand, stopping Wu Shuai: “Wu Shuai, let’s continue talking as friends. The truth is, I approached you for my own intentions. Central Continent is too powerful, the rest of the four regions are weak. As an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, I am willing to see internal conflict in Central Continent. But I am not helping you because of that, I really appreciate and admire you. To speak the truth, we are quite alike.”

Wu Shuai was overjoyed: “These years, I have been finding a rank eight Gu Immortal to help me with my tribulation. But even Green Ant Ascetic and Calligraphy Pavilion Lady are constantly giving excuses, your help has truly come at the best timing. I, Wu Shuai, will never forget this favor!”

The next scene of the dream realm was his tribulation.

But because Wu Shuai and Gu Liang were very close in the earlier scenes, he was helped by Gu Liang.

Gu Liang had extraordinary strength, with his help, Wu Shuai successfully passed the tribulation without danger.

Wu Shuai finally became a rank eight Gu Immortal.

Even though he obeyed Duke Long’s instructions and did everything, causing a huge commotion and fear among the dragonmen, when news that he became a rank eight Gu Immortal spread in the world, the tides shifted towards the dragonman race again, their morale rose greatly, it was even higher than before.

Wu Shuai became the second rank eight of the dragonman race, he surpassed his father’s generation, only Duke Long was the sole person above him.

Wu Shuai had genuine rank eight cultivation level now, he could finally speak on equal terms with Green Ant Ascetic and Calligraphy Pavilion Lady.

Duke Long’s attitude towards him also changed, he no longer summoned him and scolded him so casually.

It was like he had broken out of a hopeless encirclement, Wu Shuai felt his pressure lifting, most of the undercurrents involving South Flower Island for the last few decades were swept away after he reached rank eight.

“The scenery of rank eight is truly different!”

“From today onwards, I am also a peak existence of the Gu Immortal world.”

Wu Shuai was extremely grateful to Gu Liang, their cooperation deepened continuously.

Gu Liang told Wu Shuai of many secrets: “The foundation of Heavenly Court is fate Gu. In history, two Demon Venerables attacked Heavenly Court, but why did they fail? The reason was because they could not destroy fate Gu, and because of Star Constellation’s assimilation, they are unable to destabilize Heavenly Court’s foundation.”

“However, while Star Constellation’s assimilation defended the reign of Heavenly Court, it also infuriated the Heavenly Dao. The way of heaven is balance, but humanity is flourishing and strengthening without restraint at the moment. This goes against the true heaven’s will!”

Wu Shuai learned many important things from Gu Liang. Even though he lived in Central Continent and was a supreme elder of one of the ten great ancient sects, he had never understood Heavenly Court’s true secrets, he did not have any sources of information.

“Wu Shuai, if you really want to lead the dragonman race to rise up, rank eight cultivation level is not enough. In fact, even if you get more rank eight Gu Immortals, it will not affect Heavenly Court’s status. Heavenly Court has many more rank eights than you’ll ever have!”

“In fact, if I put this bluntly, if your dragonman race really surpasses the bottom line of Heavenly Court one day, they will definitely take action against you. Don’t they always say this? Those who are not my race having different motives[1]!”

Wu Shuai thought about it, there was deep meaning in this, he quickly asked Gu Liang for advice.

Gu Liang told him: “The rise of dragonmen is extraordinary, you have to target the source of everything!”

“The source? You are referring to fate Gu?” Wu Shuai smiled bitterly: “Fate Gu is kept strictly by Heavenly Court, it is too difficult.”

“It is difficult indeed but there is still hope. Especially now, we have the greatest opportunity of all time.” Gu Liang’s eyes flickered with bright light.

Wu Shuai was moved: “You are referring to that person... Red Lotus?”

“That’s right, Heavenly Court originally wanted to nurture Red Lotus into an Immortal Venerable, but he has other intentions, he chose to defy them. Your ancestor Duke Long has been very busy over this matter, it is giving him such a headache that he has relaxed his control over your dragonman race. From this point, you need to thank Red Lotus for lowering the pressure that you are facing.” Gu Liang said.

“We need to borrow Red Lotus’ power? That is a good idea, but how do we contact him?” Wu Shuai asked again: “Red Lotus is too mysterious, there is almost no way of tracing his movement.”

“We cannot find Red Lotus directly, even if we want to meet him, he will reject us, he might even attack or destroy us.” Gu Liang’s expression changed, he showed some wariness.

He said with deep meaning: “Regardless of whether Red Lotus is an Immortal Venerable or Demon Venerable, he is still a human Gu Immortal.”

“If he does not want to cooperate, how will we borrow his strength?” Wu Shuai asked.

Gu Liang laughed: “Red Lotus wants to revive his family and his lover, he has to go against the Heavenly Dao and defy fate. This conflict cannot be resolved, and precisely so, he turned on his teacher and Duke Long remains unable to get Red Lotus to turn back. Red Lotus will definitely attack Heavenly Court and attempt to destroy fate Gu. When he attacks Heavenly Court, it will be our opportunity to take action.”

“When will Red Lotus Demon Venerable attack Heavenly Court?”

“That I am not sure. It can take many years, or it can be at the next moment.”

Wu Shuai realized: “I get it, from now on, we need to get close to Heavenly Court, we need to constantly enter Heavenly Court to find more information and peek into deeper secrets. When Red Lotus attacks, we will use the prime opportunity to try and steal fate Gu!”

[1] A common phrase in Chinese

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1843 Making Sacrifices

Wu Shuai became rank eight, he broke the encirclement and swept the pressure away. Not only that, he even found the only chance to defeat Heavenly Court, that was to borrow Red Lotus’ power.

Red Lotus had yet to become a venerable, but he was already predestined to become a future venerable. Even though this was just a guess, the entire Gu Immortal world was inclined to believe it. If not for this, why would Duke Long and Heavenly Court try all ways to convince him? Back then, Duke Long descended and took him in as a disciple, it was an obvious sign.

After talking to Gu Liang, Wu Shuai changed his strategy, he started to keep a low profile, he no longer acted like before.

Originally, after becoming rank eight, the dragonman race was very excited, there was finally a rank eight great expert that could back them up.

However, Wu Shuai started to get close to Heavenly Court and Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, many dragonmen could not understand him.

Wu Shuai put in a lot of effort to show a repentant attitude, he gradually won the trust and favor of the ten great ancient sects. He purposely got close to Heavenly Court and tried all ways to get information about them.

In fact, he even put in funds to make an Immortal Gu House for Heavenly Court.

As for the conflict between dragonmen and humans, he also changed his stance, he suppressed dragonmen to protect the benefits of the humans.

After a hundred years, even though Wu Shuai gained some success, he could not gain Heavenly Court’s trust.

“What should I do?” Wu Shuai was anxious, he discussed with Gu Liang.

Gu Liang said: “You are a dragonman, Heavenly Court has always been extremely wary of variant humans, they look down on variant humans from the depths of their hearts. Our only hope is Duke Long, we need to target him.”

“How do I gain Duke Long’s trust? His impression of me is...” Wu Shuai smiled bitterly as he shook his head.

Gu Liang looked at Wu Shuai solemnly: “It will depend on whether you can make sacrifices.”

Wu Shuai did not hesitate, he immediately answered: “I’ve been planning for the dragonman race all along, so what if I have to make sacrifices?”

“Good.” Gu Liang clapped: “Only a person like you can accomplish great things.”

Gu Liang gave his plan but Wu Shuai hesitated. Because Gu Liang was asking Wu Shuai to sacrifice Huang Wei on purpose!

Huang Wei was a rank seven dragonman Gu Immortal now, he had followed Wu Shuai since his youth, he had always been working hard in developing South Flower Island with Wu Shuai, he was loyal and had made many accomplishments, there was no chance he would ever betray Wu Shuai.

Gu Liang urged him: “Everyone in the world knows about your relationship with Huang Wei. We can create a situation where you need to make a choice. If you defend the interests of the humans and sacrifice Huang Wei, Duke Long will definitely change his opinion towards you!”

“But... you want me to kill my greatest general, and he is the person who trusts and idolizes me the most...” Wu Shuai gritted his teeth, he was hesitant and unwilling to do so.

“I believe that if Huang Wei knows the purpose of his sacrifice, he will definitely do it. Am I right?” Gu Liang’s words lifted a lot of Wu Shuai’s hesitation.

Wu Shuai sighed deeply as his eyes turned red: “I know Huang Wei like I know myself, if he knows that is my plan, he will definitely sacrifice himself.”

“No!” Gu Liang quickly interjected: “This plan is too important, the fewer people who know, the safer it is, only the two of us should know of it. Friend, you need to know that even the dead can be investigated upon to look for evidence, we cannot let Huang Wei know of our plan.”

“This...” Wu Shuai shut his eyes as he shook his head: “Let me think about it, let me think about it...”

He hesitated for half a year before he finally made up his mind.

Compared to the individual Huang Wei, the entire dragonman race was more important.

Wu Shuai and Gu Liang plotted secretly, creating conflict and killing human Gu Immortals before gathering evidence to accuse Huang Wei.

After this matter happened, it attracted a lot of attention in Central

Continent.

Huang Wei screamed out in innocence: “This was not done by me, brother, you know me, I will definitely not do that!”

Wu Shuai defended Huang Wei at first, but as more evidence got exposed, he had no choice but to ‘uphold justice’ and kill Huang Wei.

This matter caused a great commotion, the dragonmen became very upset with Wu Shuai, many dragonmen started to move out of South Flower Island.

The ten great ancient sects praised Wu Shuai greatly, even Duke Long heard about this matter and nodded in praise of Wu Shuai: “He has grown up a lot over these years, I am very pleased.”

Wu Shuai successfully gained Duke Long’s trust after this.

But he felt emptiness in his heart.

Before his execution, Huang Wei’s last words were deeply etched into his heart, he could never forget it in this lifetime —

“Brother, I have never regretted following you! If you want to execute me, regardless of the reason, I will accept it! But brother, I have not done anything like this. You need to be careful, be very careful, those human Gu Immortals are trying to deceive you. These years, they have not done anything against you, they have actually changed their tactics, they are accusing me now to get rid of me, they want to gradually clip your wings.”

“Brother, you told me about the future of the dragonman race, I have never reached it. So be it if I die, I hope you will carry on this dream. The future of the dragonman race cannot be achieved without you!”

Huang Wei knelt on the ground, crying as he said that, Wu Shuai felt his heart bleeding with every sentence.

Wu Shuai almost lost control and wanted to tell Huang Wei the truth behind everything. The one who framed him was this beloved brother right here!

In fact, there was a moment where Wu Shuai had the intense urge to kneel down and beg for Huang Wei’s forgiveness, but in the end, he controlled himself.

He snorted coldly: “Huang Wei, you have committed a great crime and killed people, you still refuse to admit your sins even now. Sigh, I have trusted you in vain, you are too disappointing, I am deeply hurt.”

Halfway through, Wu Shuai started to cry, his voice became shaky.

He did not dare to look at Huang Wei, he quickly turned around and left.

“Brother!” Huang Wei knelt on the cold floor of the prison cell, looking at Wu Shuai who was leaving, he shouted: “Brother, let me call you that for the final time before I die!! Don’t forget the grand aspiration of the dragonman race.”

Wu Shuai walked even more quickly now, he seemed to be escaping.

Many Gu Immortals came to watch Huang Wei’s execution, but Wu Shuai did not go.

That night, he had a dream.

In the dream, he saw Huang Wei who was pointing at him and scolding loudly.

Wu Shuai told him the truth.

After hearing it, Huang Wei started to cry as he knelt down on the ground, saying: “Brother, you have worked too hard, I was too ignorant, I blamed you wrongly. For the sake of the dragonman race, you took on all these accusations and made such sacrifices, I am willing to sacrifice myself too.”

Wu Shuai quickly held Huang Wei as he stood up, he patted his shoulder: “Brother, I’m glad you understand me!”

After waking up, Wu Shuai still carried a smile.

He did not get out of bed, he opened his eyes and looked at the ceiling.

The smile did not fade from his face, but tears flowed down from his eyes.

Huang Wei’s death caused a lot of commotion. South Flower Island was in turmoil, morale fell to rock bottom, the dragonmen were all very disappointed in Wu Shuai.

But Wu Shuai started to go in and out of Heavenly Court regularly.

This was a major breakthrough.

Once, Heavenly Court decided to build Central Heaven Gate.

Wu Shuai grabbed onto this great opportunity and reported to Duke Long that he was willing to contribute his Dragon Palace.

All these years, Dragon Palace had remained as a rank seven Immortal Gu House.

Wu Shuai had done this after much consideration, losing Dragon Palace was not a big deal, he could rebuild it in the future. The most important thing was fate Gu!

Duke Long’s reaction was not out of Wu Shuai’s expectations. Duke Long said: “Wu Shuai, I am very happy that you are willing to do this. But Central Heaven Gate is an information path Immortal Gu House, while your Dragon Palace is enslavement path, it is not appropriate. Furthermore, with Heavenly Court’s foundation, we do not need you to spend your own wealth.”

Wu Shuai sighed: “Grandfather, I was too arrogant when I was young, I did many atrocious things. Now that I regret it, I’ve been thinking about ways to make up for my mistakes. Please give me a chance grandfather, I will not disappoint you!”

Duke Long laughed loudly: “Alright, you and your father will be in charge of building Central Heaven Gate.”

Wu Shuai was overjoyed: “Thank you, grandfather.”

To build Central Heaven Gate, many resources were needed, Gu Liang came to offer some help.

He said to Wu Shuai: “Heavenly Court has devious ambitions indeed, they actually want to create Central Heaven Gate, it can connect to grotto-heavens. But this is truly a great opportunity! We can target this Central Heaven Gate and leave a backdoor while probing for more secrets and information of Heavenly Court.”

Wu Shuai started to work harder, he went around in preparation of creating Central Heaven Gate.

The dragonman race were very unhappy with him, many dragonmen started to scold Wu Shuai, they called him the traitor of the dragonman race.

These dragonmen held deep expectations for Wu Shuai in the past, it was all converted into intense disappointment and hatred now.

Even Wu Shuai’s own father was very cold to him.

Wu Shuai endured these misunderstandings as he put in all his effort to complete Central Heaven Gate.

Creating a backdoor in Central Heaven Gate was not easy, especially under the supervision of Heavenly Court.

While he was working hard and was about to gain some results, an accident occurred.

His father returned from Heavenly Court, he was gravely injured, before dying, he called Wu Shuai over.

“I got into contact with fate Gu, my son! I received the revelation of fate Gu, we dragonmen will reign supreme, dragonmen will reign supreme!!” Wu Shuai’s father was very excited, he grabbed onto Wu Shuai’s hand tightly.

“What?!” Wu Shuai was deeply shocked, he was tongue-tied: “What is going on? Father!”

His father explained the situation: “I had found out by coincidence, but even though I got discovered, I was smart enough to purposely fail in constructing Central Heaven Gate, I suffered intense backlash and used this excuse to escape from Heavenly Court, to return to you.”

“Dragonmen reign supreme! My son, our dragonman race is meant to hold the heavenly fate, we are meant to replace humanity! This is the revelation given by fate Gu, it is definitely true!!” Wu Shuai’s father had shining eyes: “Do you know what this means? Quickly heal me, spread news of this to the world. The dragonman Gu Immortals will be extremely excited!”

“Father, you should recuperate in peace now, I will handle this.” Wu Shuai was also very excited, after settling down his father, he left the room.

Not long after, he met with Gu Liang.

Gu Liang learned that Wu Shuai’s father had returned with heavy injuries, he came to console him but seeing that Wu Shuai had a struggling expression, he asked for the reason.

Wu Shuai and Gu Liang had worked closely together, he had learned of Gu Liang’s true identity, he was not a human but a variant human Gu Immortal!

After a moment of silence, Wu Shuai told him the truth.

Gu Liang was also shocked but after reacting to it, he understood why Wu Shuai hesitated.

“Wu Shuai, you did not rally the dragonmen and announce this news, it was the right thing to do. If Heavenly Court learns of this secret, they will definitely wipe out the dragonmen in this world!”

“But we need to continue deceiving Heavenly Court and make them think that this secret is still safe, we are currently not safe enough.”

“Your father’s actions were too abnormal, there is a chance that they will find out he contacted fate Gu. Next, Heavenly Court’s investigators will definitely come to seek information.”

“Gu Liang, you know me well, that is my current dilemma!” Wu Shuai sighed: “What do we do?”

Gu Liang hesitated but he still spoke: “You have already thought of the method, haven’t you? In this situation, only by sacrificing your father and pretending that he had died from his injuries after coming back can we escape this terrible crisis of extinction!”

Wu Shuai had a pale face, he stumbled backwards as he shook his head continuously: “You want me to kill my father?! No, I will definitely not do that!”

“You will not do that? If Heavenly Court learns of this, your dragonman race will be wiped from existence.” Gu Liang sighed: “I finally understand why your ancestor Duke Long treats the dragonman race like this. Heavenly Court must have known of fate Gu’s revelation that dragonmen will reign supreme all along.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1844 Killing Father, Dream Revelations

Wu Shuai frowned deeply, he had a bitter expression: “I am suspecting that this might be a plot against my father and me, they are trying to harm my dragonman race, what should I do? Dragonmen reign supreme might just be a lie, the culprit might have done this to find an excuse to wipe out dragonmen.”

Gu Liang pondered for a moment and denied the possibility: “This possibility is very small. According to your father, there were many coincidences that led to him contacting fate Gu. These are not man-made coincidences, many of these elements were chosen by your father himself.”

“Precisely because there are many coincidences, I am very suspicious of it.”

“Back then, how did the humans obtain the revelation of heavenly fate from fate Gu? Isn’t your father in a similar situation now?” Gu Liang’s words made Wu Shuai speechless.

At this moment, a loud voice was heard in the sky, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had come to pay a visit due to the injuries of Wu Shuai’s father.

“They came so quickly!” Gu Liang’s expression changed: “Wu Shuai, you must decide now, if you wait, all of your efforts will be in vain, your entire dragonman race will face extermination!”

Wu Shuai’s expression immediately turned ashen, his face turned pale and his body shook, he also fell to the ground.

The situation was forcing him to make a rapid decision.

He knew that this choice would bring him pain for eternity, but he had to do it!

Even though he was uncertain if the heavenly revelation of dragonmen reign supreme was real, or if others were harming them, he could not gamble.

If he lost the gamble, he would not just lose his father, he would lose the entire dragonman race.

That day, Wu Shuai's father died from the backlash of failing to build Central Heaven Gate, his soul was completely erased.

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals gained no evidence, even though they were suspicious, they could not do anything to the rank eight Gu Immortal Wu Shuai, they left.

For the next ten nights, Wu Shuai could not sleep.

Tai Qin consoled him as Wu Shuai cried in the arms of his beloved woman.

Tai Qin said gently: "People cannot revive after dying, senior brother, you need to move on. Uncle died from building Central Heaven Gate, Heavenly Court will definitely compensate you."

Wu Shuai did not dare to tell Tai Qin about the truth, he had to endure this pain himself.

He could only say: "Junior sister, do you know? Back then, after I killed Song Tao Zi, I often had the same dream at night."

"In this dream, I became the king of the dragonman race, I led my people to prosperity, we lived a life of freedom and peace."

"I stayed within Dragon Court and ruled meticulously. The dragonmen lived in peace and prosperity, there were no conflicts or inequality."

"Huang Wei remained as my greatest right hand man, he handled many affairs for me."

"My father said I was his pride and joy, he often said: 'My son, you finally did it, I am so proud of you.'"

"And the two of us lived in bliss, we had many children, they could freely play around without worries."

Saying so, Wu Shuai lowered his head and cried: "But now, I only have you left! My beloved junior sister."

Tai Qin was also extremely sad, all these years, she did not manage to bear a single child for Wu Shuai.

When dragonmen copulate, they are able to have many children, more than humans. But mixed blood between variant humans and humans are very unlikely to have children. Not just dragonman, even the other variant humans were the same.

This was terrible news to Wu Shuai, for the next half a year, he was immersed in anguish.

Gu Liang came to urge him: "Wu Shuai, I can understand the pain that you are feeling, but please be mindful of Heavenly Court, don't put too much of the blame on yourself and cause Heavenly Court to sense something. If our efforts end up in vain, wouldn't your father have died for nothing?"

Wu Shuai jolted like he was hit by lightning, he realized at once as he wiped the cold sweat off his forehead, he cupped his fists to thank Gu Liang: "Thank you for the reminder, otherwise, I would have committed a grave mistake."

Gu Liang nodded as he smiled: “You have been overwhelmed by sadness these last days, you have not been working on Central Heaven Gate. It is time to continue.”

“But the revelation of fate Gu, can we trust the notion that dragonmen will reign supreme?” Wu Shuai was still thinking about it, he could not let it go.

Gu Liang smiled: “To prove this, the best way is to get into contact with fate Gu. But the risk is great, the truth is, there is no need to be anxious, as long as you wait, you will be able to find evidence.”

“You mean?” Wu Shuai had some sort of realization.

Gu Liang nodded: “Indeed, if dragonmen are meant to reign supreme, heaven’s will will definitely give your dragonman race more care and concern. Your father is like Yu Ji from history, when he was still a Gu Master, he was just a slave in charge of cleaning the Rockman Sacred Hall, in the end, when he got close to fate Gu, he learned the heavenly revelation that humans would reign supreme. He followed the guidance of fate Gu and stole it, contributing it to the most crucial human — Primordial Origin who had yet to become an Immortal Venerable.”

“I know about Yu Ji, he was the Dao Guardian of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable. He obtained the heavenly revelation but did not die, instead he managed to steal fate Gu. So why did my father...” Wu Shuai had a pained expression.

Gu Liang explained: “I have some guesses about this. Remember I told you that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had once assimilated with heaven’s will? From then on, her will started to interfere with heaven’s will. This is likely the reason why your father met with disaster, but he was able to successfully tell us the secret that dragonmen will reign supreme, he has died for a good cause.”

Gu Liang continued to encourage him: “Your father told you this secret, Wu Shuai, you might be the crucial person chosen by the heavenly fate, someone like Primordial Origin. You cannot give up, you cannot be dejected, you need to work harder!”

Wu Shuai shook his head: “How can I be compared to a venerable? And we variant humans cannot become venerable.”

Gu Liang was silent for a moment before he showed a peculiar expression: “Variant humans cannot become venerable, that is a phenomenon indeed, but nobody knows the exact reasons behind it, there are all sorts of theories.”

“The truth is, we have been researching about the reason why variant humans cannot become venerable.”

Wu Shuai questioned: “Isn’t it because man is the spirit of all living beings?”

Gu Liang chuckled: “Hehe, that is likely just a cover. There is a huge secret behind becoming a venerable, it depends on the spirit to some degree but that is definitely not the only reason. In human history, there were some exceptions. Some Gu Immortals with exceptional strength passed all of their rank eight tribulations but could not become venerable. Their cultivation level could not rise to rank nine.”

“Your ancestor Duke Long should be very clear of this. He was one such example, even with his extremely high strength, he could not become rank nine, he only became a dragonman afterwards.”

“If you can find out the truth behind this, my tribe is willing to pay any price to learn of this secret!” Gu Liang promised solemnly.

“Do not worry, if I can learn of this secret, I will definitely share it with you at no cost!” Wu Shuai swore.

Before leaving, Gu Liang advised him again: “Friend Wu Shuai, do take care. Even though fate Gu is not in your hands, if you are truly the fated individual, you will get some revelations. You are definitely a crucial person, these revelations might come to you or the people around you, do pay close attention to them.”

“I know.” Wu Shuai nodded: “Let time prove everything.”

But to Wu Shuai’s disappointment, he did not receive any revelation.

He continued to build Central Heaven Gate to ease Heavenly Court.

The dragonman race, especially many dragonman Gu Immortals became upset with him, they called Wu Shuai a dog. His father had died from building Central Heaven Gate but this son was actually going to continue that job, he was truly enslaved and incorrigible. He truly deserved to be left with a dead father.

Thus, more and more dragonmen moved away from South Flower Island, it gradually became a trend.

On this day, Wu Shuai dreamed of his father again.

His father told him: “Continue to work hard, I understand you deeply. This sacrifice will definitely lead to great accomplishments! The dragonman race needs your leadership, my child.”

He also dreamed that he had children with Tai Qin at long last. It turned out that deep within an Earth Trench in Eastern Sea, there was a nameless weed.

This weed was an ancient desolate plant, it spread over a large area and was guarded by immemorial desolate beasts.

If he and Tai Qin ate this seaweed, they would be able to have children, getting past the obstacle of cross breeding.

When he woke up, Wu Shuai had a realization, he jolted: Was this the heavenly revelation?

He recalled carefully.

Before Huang Wei died, he dreamed that Huang Wei was saying goodbye to him.

Before his father died, he also dreamed that his father was talking about his deceased mother, he spoke with great affection and said he was going to join her.

It was quite easy to confirm this point as well.

Wu Shuai immediately made plans, using Gu Liang’s strength to head to Eastern Sea and retrieve the unnamed seaweed in the Earth Trench.

According to the method in the dream, Wu Shuai and Tai Qin used the seaweed together. Months later, Wu Shuai received great news — Tai Qin was pregnant with his child!

This was truly immensely great news.

Not only because he had obtained his offspring, but also because he confirmed his guess. He finally understood that the heavenly revelations had appeared long ago, he just failed to recognize them.

The dreams started to change, more revelations came to Wu Shuai.

Wu Shuai followed these revelations and achieved great success with minimal effort.

Not only did he build Central Heaven Gate, he even successfully made his backdoor without Heavenly Court noticing it at all, even when they checked.

In order to gain Heavenly Court’s trust, he stopped developing the dragonman race, he focused on his own cultivation level.

Using the dream revelations, his cultivation level continued to rise, along with Gu Liang’s help, he passed tribulations after tribulations.

The dreams started to change again, the revelation to build rank eight Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace appeared!

“The core Immortal Gu of rank eight Dragon Palace is rank eight — Dream Token? This is a dream path Gu, it corresponds to the great era!” Wu Shuai was extremely excited, he immediately traveled in the five regions and two heavens, searching for dream path immortal materials.

These dream path immortal materials are very rare, they were often buried in some corner, completely inconspicuous.

But Wu Shuai followed the revelations, he slowly found and gathered them, refining them successfully.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1845 A Life of Tragedy!

During this period, Wu Shuai purposely went back to South Flower Island.

Tai Qin finally gave birth!

“We finally have the next generation of our bloodline! Tai Qin, it has been hard on you.” Wu Shuai hugged the baby that was just born, spinning around several times in joy.

Next, he carefully placed the baby on the bed beside Tai Qin.

He looked at Tai Qin who was still weak after giving birth with deep affection, his gaze was extremely gentle.

“What are we going to name our child?” Tai Qin smiled, she was filled with motherly love.

“This child has large, lively and spiritual eyes, let’s call him Long Ling.” Wu Shuai said.[TL Note: This is Dragon Spirit in Chinese]

Tai Qin nodded: “Long Ling, Long Ling it is a good name.”

Their son, Long Ling, was just born, Wu Shuai was very happy now, but he also sensed that the burden on him had become heavier.

“Huang Wei and my father have both passed away.”

“I only have junior sister Tai Qin and my new son left now.”

“I need to give Tai Qin a proper status, I need to give my child a bright future, he cannot live in an environment full of ostracism. I want him to live properly and proudly as a dragonman, he will grow up with pride!”

The responsibilities were pushing and motivating him, after resting for a few days in South Flower Island, Wu Shuai went on a journey around the five regions and two heavens again, collecting dream path immortal materials.

The process of refining dream token Immortal Gu was very mystical.

It all happened within his dream.

As immortal materials were refined one by one, dream token Immortal Gu was finally at its final step to completion.

“This?!” Wu Shuai was immensely shocked.

The final revelation in his dream was that he had to sacrifice Tai Qin, as long as she willingly sacrificed her own life, it would complete the last step of refining Dream Token.

“No, I absolutely cannot do that!!!” Wu Shuai was deeply shook, his face turned pale, he could not accept this revelation.

For a few days, he was completely daydreaming, he moved around in immemorial white heaven like a ghost that had no soul.

Only until he met an immemorial desolate beast that almost killed him, he finally came to his senses abruptly.

He killed the immemorial desolate beast but was very vexed, he could not find a solution to this.

“Should I really sacrifice junior sister? No, absolutely not.”

“There must be some way, there must be!”

Wu Shuai decided to halt the plan of refining Dream Token, he wanted to get more revelations from the dreams.

On the second night, he got a new revelation from his dream.

This revelation was beyond shocking — “Ancestor Duke Long has an immortal killer move that can exterminate my entire dragonman race?! And Duke Long has already been wanting to use this move many times already?”

Even though he trusted his dream revelations deeply, this news was just too unbelievable, he could barely accept it.

He pondered for some time, he decided to return to Central Continent and investigate the truth.

Wu Shuai had spent a lot of time and effort trying to refine dream token Immortal Gu. During this period, Central Continent was filled with undercurrents, conflict between Duke Long and Red Lotus was intensifying by the day.

Because of the death of Wu Shuai’s father, even though Heavenly Court suspected him, Duke Long trusted him deeply.

Wu Shuai deployed all of the manpower that he could use to investigate this matter.

At the same time, the dream realm continued giving him more revelations.

With the help of dream revelation, Wu Shuai gained more and more clues. These clues all proved that his dream revelations were true, in fact, Wu Shuai even learned about the name of this move — Dragonman Extermination!

“Back then, Duke Long created the dragonman lifespan extension method, creating the dragonman race. As the number of dragonmen increased, they slowly developed into the current dragonman race.”

“Duke Long is the ancestor of dragonmen, the source of the race, when he created the dragonman race initially, he left behind a hidden card, that was the killer move dragonman extermination.”

“By using this move, all the dragonmen in this world would self-detonate and die, none would survive!”

“Furthermore, Duke Long has been wanting to use this killer move for a long time, he has only been waiting as a result of Star Constellation’s will. Ancestor, you are too cruel! You are really so cold-hearted!”

Wu Shuai felt a chill, he was helpless, anxious, and furious!

All of his hard work, the future of the dragonman race, they were all a joke compared to this killer move, they were living in a real and yet illusory bubble!

“What do I do?”

Wu Shuai raised his head and screamed, he had no ideas left.

“Right, I still have my dreams!” Suddenly, he realized as hope sparkled in his eyes, he still had a final trump card.

That night, the dream’s content went back to a few years ago.

Regarding the refinement of dream token Immortal Gu.

The final step of dream token Immortal Gu was for Tai Qin to make a self sacrifice.

The dream told Wu Shuai that in order to deal with dragonman extermination, he had to refine dream token Immortal Gu first.

Wu Shuai woke up in shock from the dream, in the darkness of the night, he cried soundlessly.

He looked at his lover in a daze, the woman that he loved the most in his life — Tai Qin.

Tai Qin was originally sleeping soundly, but she seemed to have sensed something as she opened her eyes, she saw Wu Shuai’s expression which was full of anguish and sadness.

“What is it?” Tai Qin quickly embraced Wu Shuai gently.

Wu Shuai hugged her, he hugged her tightly. He used so much force, but never had he ever felt so weak and useless in his life!

Wu Shuai had to tell Tai Qin the truth.

Tai Qin was able to accept it quickly, she used her warm hands to touch Wu Shuai’s face, she smiled gently: “So that’s the reason, my Brother Shuai. I love you, I am willing to sacrifice everything for you, including my life. This is nothing much, but in this life, I not only have you, I also have another concern, that is our child.”

“After I die, you must take good care of him, nurture our child well. Promise me that, okay?”

“I promise you, I promise you on my life and dignity, I promise you with everything I have!” Wu Shuai cried profusely, he was filled with anguish and sadness.

Dream Token was refined.

Next, rank eight Dragon Palace was also constructed.

After it was created, Wu Shuai stayed inside most of the time, he often walked around the palace as he touched the walls and pillars. He pretended that he could feel Tai Qin’s warmth, but the reality was that he could only touch the cold icy walls of the Immortal Gu House.

The child he had with Tai Qin gradually grew up, sometimes, he would ask: “Father, where is mother? Why is she not back yet?”

Each time he asks this, Wu Shuai would feel like a sharp spear was stabbing into his heart, causing him to bleed.

Each time, he would squat down and hug his young son Long Ling, he would hold him tightly and warmly as he lied to him.

The young and innocent Long Ling was like his antidote, the only thing in this world that could heal his broken heart.

He possessed rank eight Dragon Palace but Wu Shuai did not have any intention to fight for fame or glory.

He secretly targeted Green Ant Ascetic, Wine Fairy, and Calligraphy Pavilion Lady, enslaving them all. He achieved his former dream, he could imprison Shu Jiu Ling, capture Fan Ji, and even torture him to death in front of her.

But Wu Shuai did not do that, he let Shu Jiu Ling go be with the person she truly loved.

He no longer cared about the past glory or humiliation, even though he had once felt pain from them and had fought intensely to achieve them.

Wu Shuai had experienced many things in life, he let go of many things.

Now, Wu Shuai felt very tired, he was very tired but he could not stop, he had to continue because the matter regarding dragonman extermination had not been resolved yet.

Dream revelations came time and time again, in order to settle the matter of dragonman extermination, he had to use rank eight Dragon Palace while doing experiments on the dragonman body.

Dragonmen were the product of the dragonman lifespan extension method, while dragonman extermination was created through this source. The three were tightly connected together.

Wu Shuai already grasped the dragonman lifespan extension method.

Using the power of Dragon Palace, he could totally reverse-deduce the killer move dragonman extermination killer move through it.

But to do that, Wu Shuai alone was not enough, he gathered all of the dragonman Gu Immortals and told them the truth, he begged them for help.

In the huge Dragon Palace, there was an unprecedented meeting, almost all of the dragonman Gu Immortals had gathered together.

These dragonman Gu Immortals did not believe him initially, but when Wu Shuai provided facts and evidence that could not be denied, they had to believe him. At the same time, Gu Liang was present to testify that Wu Shuai's father had found out the secret of the heavenly revelation, it was all announced to them!

"To do experiments, we need a vast number of dragonmen, these people will almost all die, even if they survive, they will wish they were dead. However, I cannot stop this plan, if anyone objects, speak up now."

"I object!" Immediately, someone jumped out.

Everyone turned to look, it was Wu Shuai's cousin, the beloved seventh young master that Duke Long doted on the most.

Seventh young master pointed at Wu Shuai who was on his throne as he scolded: "You scoundrel, you are insane!!!"

"In order to gain Heavenly Court's trust, you killed your most loyal sworn brother!"

"To conceal the secret of dragonmen reign supreme, you caused the death of your own father!"

"To refine dream token Immortal Gu, you actually used your most beloved wife as the Gu material!"

"Now, to deal with dragonman extermination killer move, you even want to sacrifice all of your innocent dragonmen and do experiments on them?"

"Why is your heart so wicked, why are you so cold-hearted?!"

"You think that this so-called evidence will make us believe you? Hehe, you are too laughable, do you think we are all fools?!"

"Hehehe, no, you are not laughable, you are pitiful and sad!"

"You want to give your wife happiness, and in the end? You sacrifice her to refine a Gu. Hehehe."

"You wanted to make your father proud, and in the end? You killed him! You killed him with your own two hands!!"

"You promised Huang Wei a bright future, you gave him hope. But in the end you killed him yourself. And now, what future is there?"

"Hehehe, hahaha!" Seventh young master laughed maniacally, his tears were almost falling out: “You tried so hard to lead the dragonman race to rise up, and in the end? In the end, the dragonman race is about to be wiped out, we are going to be extinct!”

“It was you, it was you! If you were not ambitious and took over South Flower Island, relocating our people, developing rapidly and causing conflict with the humans, why would all this happen? If the dragonman race lived quietly and peacefully, ancestor would not have the intention of wiping us out!”

“Wu Shuai, oh Wu Shuai, you are the strongest person in the dragonman race besides our ancestor, but what you gave us was not glory or hope, it was neither equality nor dignity. It was... destruction!”

“You are a real tragedy! Your whole life is a tragedy!!”

The entire hall was silent.

Wu Shuai sat on his dragon throne, expressionless...

At this point, the dream realm finally faded away.

In the depths of the sea, only a beautiful palace was left, along with the Four Dragon Generals.

The dragon generals looked at Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone with complex and subservient expressions, they walked out of Dragon Palace’s door.

The door of Dragon Palace opened on its own.

The dragonman clone took huge steps out of this Dragon Palace.

He was expressionless, but the vicissitudes of life were seen deep in his eyes.

Looking at Dragon Palace, he could almost still hear the accusations of Little Seventh, as well as the gathering of the surrounding dragonman Gu Immortals.

But taking another glance, the hall was empty, everything was gone.

“It has... already been a million years.”

“I am back.” The dragonman clone’s voice resounded in the hall, it was like the cry of a lingering spirit.

“But I... am no longer myself.” The dragonman clone smiled bitterly.

This was not his voice, this was not his face, this was not his body, it was not even his soul.

Only his will was left —

The will that had endured through a million years, waiting until today!

“Dragon Spirit greets master!” Dragon Spirit appeared with a reverent expression, there was a trace of happiness in its eyes: “Finally, Dragon Court finally has a new master!”

The dragonman clone looked at Dragon Spirit intently, his eyes turned red rapidly.

He really wished that at this moment, Dragon Spirit could call him — Father!

But it was impossible now.

“Tai Qin, I have let you down after all, I could not even complete your final and only request.” Wu Shuai raised his head, he sighed deeply, his tone was filled with endless guilt and sadness.

But he did not cry.

A million years ago, his tears had already run dry.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1846 Obtaining Primordial Origin“s True Inheritance

After spending a lot of effort, Duke Long finally reached an agreement with Fang Yuan.

The two rank eights of Eastern Sea, Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng, watched the process but could not stop them.

Duke Long not only compensated Fang Yuan a large amount of qi path cultivation resources, most importantly, he even gave one Primordial Origin true inheritance to Qi Sea Ancestor!

This made the two Eastern Sea immortals helpless, but they also could not help but admire Duke Long’s resolution!

Of course, they only made a fraction of the transaction on the spot.

Qi Sea Ancestor, which was Fang Yuan’s disguise, agreed on a truce with Heavenly Court, they would coexist now, Heavenly Court would also hand over the resources gradually. As for Primordial Origin’s true inheritance, it would also be handed over in portions.

After all, neither side was following any alliance agreement.

They finally finished their negotiation, but not only did Fang Yuan not leave, he led the way for them.

“Fang Yuan is trying to get Dragon Palace now, Duke Long, maybe your Heavenly Court will be able to resolve your enmity with him today.” Fang Yuan smiled as he said.

From his expression, he looked like someone who was going to watch the show by the side.

But Fang Yuan decided to stop stalling for time, if he continued wasting time, Duke Long and the two Eastern Sea immortals might sense something.

In that case, he should grasp this situation firmly instead.

They did not set any alliance agreements anyway, when it is time to fight, Fang Yuan will attack directly.

As for those negotiations they made, who cares!

Duke Long flew straight, he looked calm and composed, he replied plainly: “If that really happens, we will have one less problem ahead.”

The two Eastern Sea immortals looked at each other, this matter concerned Dragon Palace, they were not going to leave yet.

When the entire group reached the location where Dragon Palace was hidden after diving into the depths of the sea, Dragon Palace had vanished already.

“Was Dragon Palace really here?” The Eastern Sea immortals did not believe it, they were suspicious that Fang Yuan had brought them to a wrong location but they did not dare to say it.

Duke Long did not suspect that, even though Fang Yuan brought them here, this was the route that Fairy Zi Wei had deduced as well, there were no deviations.

“It seems that Dragon Palace really flew away.” Duke Long sighed.

Fang Yuan smiled: “It is truly a pity, if Dragon Palace was taken by Fang Yuan, your Heavenly Court would have lost to him once again.”

Fang Yuan had the expression of a curious and excited bystander, he tried to provoke Duke Long with words.

Duke Long replied plainly, he was completely unaffected.

Because he knew a lot about Dragon Palace, back then when his descendant created it, it was designed such that only a dragonman could become the Dragon Palace Lord.

In that case, Duke Long, who had the killer move dragonman extermination, was basically holding a trump card against it. If Fang Yuan really subdued Dragon Palace, he would have either turned himself into a dragonman, or had a dragonman subordinate.

“Fang Yuan is a vigilant person who was reborn from the future, there is little chance that he turned himself into a dragonman. But even so, my dragonman extermination can kill one of his capable subordinates.”

“But killing is just an added bonus, the key is to retrieve Dragon Palace.”

“Even though I failed this time, it was not completely without gains, at least I managed to improve Qi Sea Ancestor and Heavenly Court’s relationship, there might even be a chance of recruiting Qi Sea Ancestor in the future.”

“As for Dragon Palace... now that it has appeared, it will definitely leave clues behind, I will find it once more.”

“Sigh, Fang Yuan’s advantage from using rebirth is too great, he could set up arrangements in advance to strike early. I was late in this contest over Dragon Palace.”

Duke Long thought about it for a while, he was not in a hurry to use dragonman extermination yet.

This trump card was best saved for a crucial moment in the future, to catch Fang Yuan off guard.

Of course, Duke Long also thought that Fang Yuan might know about dragonman extermination. But if he knew, he would be guarded against it, Duke Long would not gain much from activating it.

Regardless, not using it now was still a wise decision for Duke Long.

"I cannot let Dragon Palace fall into Fang Yuan's hands. The matter of retrieving Dragon Palace and dealing with Fang Yuan should be considered one problem, Fang Zheng, who is useful against Fang Yuan, should be saved first."

Thinking so, Duke Long approached Shen Cong Sheng.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was currently in Shen Cong Sheng's hands.

Shen Cong Sheng was already prepared for it, he was not surprised by Duke Long's request.

After all, his Shen clan and Duke Long's Heavenly Court were both in the righteous path, they handled matters similarly.

Shen Cong Sheng was willing to undergo transaction with Duke Long of course, exchanging Gu Yue Fang Zheng for a lot of benefits.

He had no interest in Gu Yue Fang Zheng, he was useless anyway. Shen Cong Sheng was secretly excited, he decided to extort Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court was extremely affluent, he had seen the conversation earlier.

Fang Yuan watched by the side and was slightly moved too. But if he competed against Duke Long now, it would not be a good idea.

Firstly, he had just arrived at an agreement with Duke Long, if he acts against him now, this would go against Qi Sea Ancestor's character.

Secondly, Fang Yuan was not confident in competing with Heavenly Court.

If he tried to kill Shen Cong Sheng to snatch Fang Zheng away, the chances were very slim.

However, Fang Yuan did not give up, he secretly transmitted to Shen Cong Sheng and inquired.

Shen Cong Sheng heard that Qi Sea Ancestor was also interested in Fang Zheng, he quickly replied: "To speak the truth, I had just soul searched Fang Zheng, I know about his recent encounters. It seems that he indeed counters Fang Yuan, someway or another, he manages to exert negative influence on Fang Yuan."

Bright light shined in Fang Yuan's eyes as he immediately asked Shen Cong Sheng secretly: "Even though this Fang Yuan is only rank seven and I have only met him once, he left a deep impression on me. Since Fang Zheng counters Fang Yuan, you should keep him and negotiate with Fang Yuan. After all, he has many venerable true inheritances in his hands. If you really transact with Heavenly Court, will they want to give you venerable true inheritances?"

Fang Yuan attempted to convince Shen Cong Sheng to keep Fang Zheng so that he could find a chance to strike.

After all, the difficulty of planning to take Fang Zheng, who was in Shen Cong Sheng's hands, was completely different from him being in Heavenly Court's hands.

Shen Cong Sheng answered very quickly, he did not dare to keep Fang Yuan waiting, he smiled: "Ancestor is right, this is a good suggestion!"

He said that as he turned to Duke Long: "If Heavenly Court wants Fang Zheng back, give me a venerable true inheritance."

"Hahaha." Duke Long laughed loudly in amusement: "Oh Shen Cong Sheng, you are too greedy. Do you think you are on the same level as Qi Sea? Friend Qi Sea was able to get a venerable true inheritance through fighting and gaining my acknowledgement. If you can get a venerable true inheritance from just trading a captive, wouldn't you be treating Qi Sea as a joke?"

"Shen Cong Sheng, watch your attitude."

"If you still have unrealistic goals, then let's have a fight first."

Duke Long's change of attitude was very clear, he spoke domineeringly, completely different from when he spoke to Fang Yuan.

Shen Cong Sheng felt a little troubled, Duke Long was very eloquent, he purposely mentioned Qi Sea Ancestor, praising him and using this as a bargaining chip.

But Shen Cong Sheng had done soul search on Fang Zheng, he understood the value that this person had, he smiled coldly as he said without fear: "Duke Long, I know that I am not your match, but so what? You can defeat me but you cannot kill me now. Furthermore, Fang Zheng is in my hands, I can kill him with a single thought."

"If you do not want to give a venerable true inheritance, what do you want to offer? Let me see Heavenly Court's sincerity."

Shen Cong Sheng was not stupid, he spoke in a tone mixed with hard and soft words, he had taken a step back and stopped requesting for a venerable true inheritance forcefully.

After all, Duke Long was much stronger than him!

Both sides negotiated for a long time but did not come to an agreement.

Shen Cong Sheng wanted a lot because Fang Zheng was really important to Duke Long and Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan watched by the side as he gained a clearer understanding of the situation. The more Heavenly Court placed importance on Fang Zheng, the more likely he was trouble to Fang Yuan, and the greater Fang Yuan's killing intent became.

He secretly spoke to Shen Cong Sheng: "In my opinion, you should contact Fang Yuan first and talk to him. He might give a higher price than Heavenly Court."

But Shen Cong Sheng had already made up his mind, he replied: "Senior Qi Sea Ancestor, I am more willing to hand Fang Zheng over to Heavenly Court. Firstly, Heavenly Court is a righteous path force, it has a reputation to upkeep, it also needs a living Fang Zheng. But Fang Yuan only wants a dead Fang Zheng, he might not negotiate with me peacefully. Secondly, in terms of wealth and foundation, who in this world can match Heavenly Court?"

Shen Cong Sheng was a righteous path member after all, he had an innate barrier with the demonic path Fang Yuan, he was more willing to interact with Heavenly Court even though he was full of wariness against them.

Fang Yuan saw that he could not convince him, he could not overdo this in case they found anything suspicious, he could only think of new plans.

Duke Long became increasingly impatient.

He had already spent all his effort negotiating with Fang Yuan earlier, it was not his usual way of handling things. Now that he also had to talk to Shen Cong

Sheng, Duke Long felt an impulse to attack.

But Fang Yuan was right beside him, considering that Shen Cong Sheng and Qi Sea Ancestor were both Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, Duke Long held down his urge.

At this time, Fairy Zi Wei gave Duke Long a piece of information.

Duke Long heard it and his eyes shined, this was an important bargaining chip, he quickly transmitted to Shen Cong Sheng.

Shen Cong Sheng's expression changed, he cried out: “Really?”

“Of course.” Duke Long nodded: “How about that? The resources I mentioned earlier and this intel.”

Shen Cong Sheng agreed without hesitation.

This made Fang Yuan and Song Qi Yuan feel surprised, they wondered what transaction those two had just done.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was handed over to Duke Long by Shen Cong Sheng on the spot.

Fang Zheng had already fainted, Duke Long held onto him as he bid farewell to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan could not make him stay, he had to say goodbye as well.

The remaining two Eastern Sea immortals said the same thing, they invited Fang Yuan to be their guest in the clan, they promised to gift some resources to Fang Yuan as the compensation for destroying the immortal battlefield unintentionally.

Fang Yuan nodded, he needed these two people to influence Eastern Sea's Gu Immortal world.

After agreeing on a time, Fang Yuan turned around and left.

After flying for a while, he stopped at a certain cloud.

From within the cloud, an Immortal Gu House appeared, the dragonman clone walked out.

Fang Yuan and his clone smiled at each other.

On this expedition to retrieve Dragon Palace in Eastern Sea, even though there were many hurdles, nothing bad had happened in the end, his gains were even more than expected!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1847 Dream Token

“This is dream token Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan inspected Dragon Palace.

Dream Token was shaped like a dragonfly, it had a round head and long body, with a pair of pink ruby eyes and four pairs of transparent wings. Looking closely at its thin wings, one would also see a faint layer of rainbow halo.

Fang Yuan felt a sense of joy in his heart.

All along, he had been holding deep expectations towards dream path Immortal Gu. He had many dream path killer moves, but he still had zero dream path Immortal Gu until now.

For example, unravel dream used the wisdom path Immortal Gu Unravel Mystery, Fang Yuan used a large number of dream path mortal Gu to replace the effect of the supposed dream path Immortal Gu. This caused unravel dream to expend a large number of dream path mortal Gu each time.

In the initial period of getting unravel dream, Fang Yuan had laboriously refined those dream path mortal Gu one by one.

If he had a dream path Immortal Gu to replace them, he would not have had such trouble.

Fang Yuan had always lacked a dream path Immortal Gu, but now, he finally had his first one, and it was actually the rank eight Dream Token!

“Thinking back to the dream realm exploration, it was truly dangerous, I almost lost myself in it.” The dragonman clone who was to the side sighed heavily, he still felt deep lingering fear: “If I had not sensed something amiss in advance and secret set up unravel dream beforehand, and made it activate when I came out, I would have betrayed the main body already.”

Fang Yuan had always used unravel dream on the dream realm, but this time, he targeted himself.

Dragon Palace was able to enslave rank eights and create a new owner because of the power of the dream realm. Thus, when Fang Yuan’s clone used unravel dream on himself, it was also targeting this problem, effectively solving it.

Killer moves were fixed, but people could think.

The exact use of Gu worms depended on the user’s intentions.

Of course, unravel dream itself could not deal with rank eight level Dream Token. In this aspect, he had to thank the four Eastern Sea Gu Immortals including Granny Rong and Zhang Yin.

Fang Yuan’s main body nodded: “This was truly the most difficult dream realm I have ever explored. But earlier when I used luck inspection, those azure-purple qi were not a lie, they signified that you had a chance of becoming Dragon Palace Lord without losing yourself.”

Because Fang Yuan saw a chance of success, he let his clone enter the dream to try the test.

If not for those azure-purple qi, he would only fail regardless, Fang Yuan’s main body would have taken action already.

At this moment, Fang Yuan and his clone had already finished communicating, they learned of each other’s encounters during this period.

Fang Yuan’s main body critiqued: “Dragon Palace’s dream realm was very complex and deep, because both body and soul went inside, it was normal that emotions were pulled and manipulated. The dreams within the dream also made one sink deeper and unable to awaken themselves.”

“Externally, there was Heavenly Court’s action, had I not been careful, a huge battle would occur, the situation would go out of control rapidly.”

Even though these two Eastern Sea immortals looked harmless, they were not benign people. In the previous life, they had fought against Duke Long in order to obtain Dragon Palace. After Duke Long won, during the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, they even joined with the other rank eight Gu Immortals to invade Hidden Dragon Cave, they had never given up on Dragon Palace.

The truth was, Duke Long chose to negotiate because Qi Sea Ancestor had incredible power, but he had also made considerations for this.

Looking at the entire situation, Fang Yuan’s trip was full of danger this time, it was like he was walking on a tightrope, any carelessness and he would lose complete control.

But in the end, no actual danger happened, he kept control over the situation, this showed Fang Yuan’s expertise in strategic planning.

Firstly, he had a lot of experience in exploring dream realms, he was the number one person in the world. Even though it was his clone who took action this time, Fang Yuan had given him methods like pure dream reality seeker transformation and unravel dream.

Secondly, Fang Yuan constructed Cooking Luck Pot, he could inspect luck. Fang Yuan had seen the azure-purple qi personally and knew there was hope of success, that was why he gave it a go.

Thirdly, Fang Yuan sent Bai Ning Bing and others to the River of Time and used Myriad Year Flying Warship to fight against five time path Immortal Gu Houses, he drew Heavenly Court’s attention away. Next, by using schemes, he deceived Duke Long and meticulously balanced the forces of Eastern Sea and Heavenly Court, using both sides to his advantage.

And finally, even if he failed, Fang Yuan would only lose a clone, his main body was safe and his foundation would be intact. Even if the dragonman clone betrayed him, Fang Yuan could use the connection between him and his clone to pursue and kill him. Forget about the rest, just the luck path tracking methods could not be concealed by Dragon Palace.

Because Dragon Palace was created during Red Lotus’ era, while luck path was created in the future by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Because of all these reasons, Fang Yuan was able to face Heavenly Court, Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals, and the Four Dragon Generals while showing great strength and control, he created a situation where he could advance or retreat at all, he had a great advantage throughout.

Of course, the risks were high.

If he lost the dragonman clone, Fang Yuan would lose all of his dream path methods.

After all, unravel dream and pure dream reality seeker transformation were with his clone.

But he had to take the risk.

How could any grand plan have no risk? And this was involving a rank eight Immortal Gu House like Dragon Palace!

As for Wu Shuai's will, it did not exist.

No will could live in the dream realms for over a million years.

The dragonman clone had thought he was Wu Shuai for some time, it was the effect of Dream Token's modification, twisting his own will, causing the dragonman clone to think that he was Wu Shuai, having been revived.

But how could Fang Yuan's will be so easily distorted?

Even if he were deceived, he would sense it in the future and gradually wake up. Unless the dragonman clone stayed inside Dragon Palace all the time and imprisoned himself, subjecting himself to the effects of Dream Token.

Wu Shuai's arrangements and considerations back then were truly meticulous, his effort was praiseworthy.

After Fang Yuan's main body learned of the clone's encounter, he was moved and praised loudly: "He was truly a formidable person!"

It was a pity that Wu Shuai failed.

It was not that he lacked capability. Otherwise, how could he resist the pressure of the ten great sects of Central Continent and develop South Flower Island properly?

His talent and aptitude was very high. That was why his father nurtured him since he was a child, afterwards he even got picked by Green Ant Ascetic, finally becoming rank eight, even though he received external help, his own strength was the foundation to everything.

Regrettably, his enemy was too strong. Forget about Heavenly Court, just Duke Long alone could wipe out the dragonman race. And behind Duke Long, there was still Star Constellation.

The heavenly revelation that dragonmen would reign supreme was the decree of the Heavenly Dao. But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was too fearsome, after assimilating her own will into heaven's will, she actually managed to twist the Heavenly Dao.

Precisely because of that, the three Demon Venerables who appeared after Star Constellation did not manage to destroy Heavenly Court, it was only Red Lotus Demon Venerable who managed to damage fate Gu. Just this small accomplishment was already beyond the expectations of everyone, after all, Red Lotus Demon Venerable was not an otherworldly demon!

Thus, Wu Shuai's defeat was predestined from the start.

Even Demon Venerables failed, more so Wu Shuai?

Wu Shuai could make sacrifices, but Heavenly Court had countless members who were willing to sacrifice too. Duke Long exterminated the entire dragonman race, wasn't it a sacrifice? Star Constellation Immortal Venerable became one with the Dao, she sacrificed herself.

From Wu Shuai's life, Fang Yuan's main body learned about the strength of Heavenly Court!

This organization's foundation was just too deep.

The immortal graveyard had countless slumbering rank eights...

After a million years, Duke Long was still alive...

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, Duke Long, Fairy Zi Wei, Chen Yi, and Thunder Ghost True Monarch, all of these people were very influential and powerful...

Today, the great power of Heavenly Court was already established, it suppressed everything in history. Even Demon Venerables could not defy it.

Just this alone could make one feel suffocated! No wonder Shen Cong Sheng and Song Qi Yuan felt so wary, looking at the Earth Trenches emerging and the five regions fusing, they got more anxious by the day.

Fang Yuan wanted to overturn this current trend!

“Only by destroying fate Gu can I have any hope of eternal life.”

“If I fail, will anyone feel moved when they hear of my story in the future?”

“Hehe, they would merely be moved.”

After inspecting Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan kept his clone and Dragon Palace in his immortal aperture, he summoned Xue Er, Shi Shi Cheng, and Mo Tan Sang.

Fang Yuan used Omni-directional Travel with them, rapidly leaving Eastern Sea.

Ever since Fang Yuan annexed Qi Sea grotto-heaven, the killer move jade flow pearl stopped being effective. He had to use Omni-directional Travel instead to move around.

The ancient battle formation had its unique advantage too, Fang Yuan could naturally use Myriad Year Flying Warship to travel, this rank eight Immortal Gu House was not slow at all. But it was currently fighting inside the River of Time.

Even if Fang Yuan had it with him, he would not use it to travel, it was too eye-catching.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1848 Collating His Gains

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

A grand purple-gold palace floated in the air.

Immortal killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

The dragonman clone manipulated this Immortal Gu House, producing a large amount of dense smoke.

Wherever the dense smoke went, it devoured everything. Fang Yuan used it as a test, he brought over an immemorial year beast, it could not resist as it growled while being overwhelmed by the dense smoke, vanishing without a trace.

“Gather.” The dragonman clone willed, the dream path smoke shrunk back into Dragon Palace like a python returning to its cave.

Everything that it had engulfed also naturally went into Dragon Palace.

This was the dream path killer move that Fang Yuan had personally witnessed in his previous life. Back then, Dragon Palace produced dense smoke that corroded Heaven Overseeing Tower, even though it had turned phantom, it was still hit.

One skill to dominate the world, in this current period of time, the Gu Immortal world and even Heavenly Court lacked ways to deal with dream path methods.

The effectiveness of dream path was immediate.

But now that Fang Yuan personally used it, he realized that this dreamy light smoke was not a dream path offensive killer move as he had thought, it was used for capturing enemies instead.

Like earlier, Dragon Palace only used this one move to capture an immemorial year beast that had rank eight battle strength, suppressing it inside the palace easily.

Dragon Palace was an enslavement path Immortal Gu House, even though it had the rank eight dream path Immortal Gu Dream Token, its roots did not change.

The killer move dreamy light smoke was meant to assist with Dragon Palace’s enslavement, by first capturing the target and trapping them, before enslaving them afterwards.

Other than dreamy light smoke, Dragon Palace also had two other dream path killer moves.

One was called dream revelation, it had wisdom path effect, allowing a Gu Immortal to dream in their sleep and attain revelations.

The other was called dream within dream, it was a dream realm that allowed one to construct dream realms within dream realms. Like the time the dragonman clone explored the dream realm and became Wu Shuai, while Wu Shuai went into another dream to gain dream revelations, this was the power of dream within dream.

As for the dream realm that shrouded Dragon Palace earlier, it was the power of Dream Token itself.

Fang Yuan considered it for a while, at his current stage, dreamy light smoke had the most practical use.

Even though dream revelation was profound, it not only consumed immortal essence but also heaven’s will! That was to say, this killer move needed the participation of heaven’s will.

In Wu Shuai’s case, he held the heavenly fate, dragonmen were meant to reign supreme. Thus, heaven’s will helped the dragonmen, it was okay for him to use this move, he would receive the guidance and assistance of the Heavenly Dao.

But Fang Yuan could not.

Fang Yuan was an otherworldly demon, he was suppressed and targeted by heaven’s will. All along, he had been enemies with heaven’s will, he had a killer move called heaven’s will dissipation, it was specially used to eliminate heaven’s will.

How could he expect heaven’s will to help him?

As for dream within dream, this killer move targeted dream realms instead of living beings.

After activating it, it could form a deeper layer of dream realm within a dream realm.

What use was that?

It allowed one to modify dream realms.

Wu Shuai used this to modify Dragon Palace’s dream realm back then, creating a dream within a dream. When Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone explored it, he faced this type of dream constantly. Undeniably, this made the dream realm much more complex, it became easier for the explorer to lose themselves and succumb to the dream realm.

What use did Fang Yuan have for it?

In the short period of time, Fang Yuan’s thoughts were on dream realm explorations — he could modify these dream realms to create a dream within a dream.

These dreams within dreams were created by Fang Yuan, they belonged to him. In that case, he could construct a safe zone in the dream realm so that he could recuperate or recover in it.

But the most important thing was dream token Immortal Gu!

This Immortal Gu was similar to the Soul Beast Token that Fang Yuan had, the former was a dream path Gu worm that had enslavement path ability, while the latter was a soul path Gu worm with similar enslavement path ability.

Fang Yuan had already learned of the exact use of this rank eight dream token Immortal Gu from the Dragon Spirit.

Back then, Duke Long wanted to unleash dragonman extermination, Wu Shuai was not safe from it. But after a lot of hard work and experimentation, he had some gains, he could delay his death.

Using his final bit of time, he activated dream token Immortal Gu.

He expended not just all of his rank eight immortal essence, but also his emotions, memories, and wills.

After he made his arrangements, he became extremely thin, only a bit of his soul was left, in the end he sat on his dragon throne, because of the huge expenditure earlier, he died after a while.

In the end, he sacrificed even himself.

He contributed everything he had.

Thus, currently speaking, the price of activating dream token Immortal Gu was huge! Wu Shuai was not killed by dragonman extermination, he died from using Dream Token.

Fang Yuan evaluated secretly: “He was an enslavement path Gu Immortal at the peak of rank eight, he sacrificed himself to activate Dream Token and created this Dream Token dream realm.”

“In the current era, the blessed land that Dragon Palace was hiding in got destroyed, it left and went into the bottom of the sea, subduing Granny Rong, Zhang Yin, and the other Dragon Generals.”

“Even though it gained four rank eight battle strength experts, the foundation of the dream realm fell greatly, so when the dragonman clone explored it, Dragon Palace’s dream realm showed traces of weakness in some areas.”

The most obvious being Wind Cloud Manor and Black Heaven Temple.

These two sects were part of the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, they were not sects that had existed a million years ago during Red Lotus’ era.

The dream realm could not display them properly, it had to rely on the dragonman clone’s memories.

This was a flaw, it indicated that the dream realm was already at its limit during that time.

“This means to say, by sacrificing a peak rank eight Gu Immortal like Wu Shuai, I can enslave four rank eights and one rank seven.”

If this was the Dragon Palace dream realm in its complete form, the dragonman clone would likely still get modified even if he used unravel dream. Thus, he had to thank the four Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals for using up a lot of the dream realm’s power.

If Dream Token was used alone, the user would die from using it because this Immortal Gu uses all of the Gu Immortal’s foundation to create a dream realm.

The size and power of the dream realm would depend on the situation and which Gu Immortal was used to create the dream realm.

Of course, rank six and seven Gu Immortals did not have rank eight immortal essence, they could not use dream token Immortal Gu in the first place.

And rank eight Gu Immortals could not be forced to do it, they had to do it out of their own will.

“That means, each activation of dream token Immortal Gu would expend one rank eight Gu Immortal?” This price was huge, Fang Yuan was not willing to try it.

“But in the future, when my dream path attainment level rises, I can use dream token Immortal Gu as the core to create corresponding killer moves to limit Dream Token, to prevent it from draining the Gu Immortal entirely so as to create restricted dream realms.”

“But it’s not very useful.”

Fang Yuan thought about it, dream token Immortal Gu alone was not very useful to him.

Even if he had killer moves to create dream realms in the future that would not kill the Gu Immortal using it, Fang Yuan would still need to expend his own foundation, immortal essence, and soul foundation, but most importantly, his true meaning would also be converted and expended. This meant that Fang Yuan’s attainment levels would fall.

Without true meaning, the dream realm would just be a weak illusion. Precisely because dream realms contained true meaning, emotions could be used to trap a person in the dream realm. If the Gu Master succeeds in exploration and ignores the interferences of emotions, they would gain true meaning and raise their attainment levels.

“But in the future, when dream realms become common everywhere, I can spend some attainment level to create a trap and plot against crucial people. I can turn them into my subordinates, my enemies will be caught unguarded.”

Dream Token, dreamy light smoke, dream within dream, dream revelation, these were his dream path gains.

For Fang Yuan, not all of them were practical, but they did cause his dream path abilities to skyrocket several times. In particular, these killer moves were part of the Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace, making it very convenient for Fang Yuan to use them at will without much practice at all.

Other than dream path, he had great gains in other areas too.

The most obvious were the Four Dragon Generals that included Zhang Yin and Granny Rong, Fang Yuan was happy to gain new rank eight battle strength experts, four in fact!

The accumulation of Wu Shuai and his dragonman race was all kept in Dragon Palace for the future, they were all now Fang Yuan’s possession.

These legacies were mostly contents related to enslavement path. But the most valuable ones were relating to the Qian Kun Crystal Wall, Censure Peak, and army ant.

Wu Shuai suppressed and enslaved Calligraphy Pavilion Lady back then, he gained her Immortal Gu House Calligraphy Pavilion. Wu Shuai found that the reason Calligraphy Pavilion was so strong was because there were many Qian Kun Crystal Wall fragments stored inside.

The Qian Kun Crystal Wall was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, it was recorded within u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e, but it had always been in a state of fragmentation. Calligraphy Pavilion’s Qian Kun Crystal Wall fragments were just a portion of the original.

The value of Censure Peak, to make a comparison, was similar to the incomplete Refinement Sea. The white haired Lang Ya land spirit wanted to create the secluded domain of heaven and earth Refinement Sea, he paid a huge cost but did not succeed. Censure Peak was already completed, yet it could only be considered on the level of an incomplete secluded domain of heaven and earth, it was inferior to Refinement Sea in essence.

Army ant was the true inheritance of Green Ant Ascetic, after Wu Shuai inherited it, he made good use of it, it was his main offensive method back then, as long as they grew to a certain number, they would have terrifying might, one would be able to fight a group of rank eight Gu Immortals alone.

And finally there was Dragon Palace itself, the Dragon Spirit, and enslavement path attainment level.

After the dragonman clone passed the dream realm, his enslavement path attainment level rose directly to quasi-supreme grandmaster.

Back then, Wu Shuai’s enslavement path attainment level was merely one level away from supreme grandmaster, even though he had the bonus of a dragonman’s latent enslavement path talent, his aptitude was truly terrifying.

Throughout history, there were countless heroes and geniuses that ascended the stage of fame. In the long river of history, there were countless shining stars that had their own dazzling light, even though there were ten venerables standing above them with unparalleled power, they did not lose their own unique colors.

The gains were immense, Fang Yuan had basically inherited the legacy of the entire dragonman race!

To process these gains, he would need countless years.

Fang Yuan was a little helpless, he had limited time, he could only choose to utilize those that were helpful to him.

Army ant was not going to be practiced now, this method was just icing on the cake, Fang Yuan already had the battle strength to fight an entire group of rank eights alone. Furthermore, building an ant army from scratch would require an immense amount of resources.

Qian Kun Crystal Wall and Censure Peak were foundations of information path, Fang Yuan lacked methods in this aspect. Earlier, he made Li Xiao Bai enter Profound Literature grotto-heaven for this purpose as well.

What made Fang Yuan feel slight regret was that Dragon Palace lacked dream path defensive methods. If it had any, in the current world where dream path was too advanced for the era, it would be even more powerful and useful than winter coat and reverse flow protection seal!

But thinking about the previous life, Fang Yuan could accept this fact. If Dragon Palace had such dream path defensive methods, it would not have been invaded by Duke Long.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1849 Ancestor of the New Dragonman

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The Long Hair refinement path formation made a loud noise as a large amount of white litchi immortal essence was instilled, a huge flame that soared to the sky appeared.

Within the raging flames, the dragonman clone sat cross-legged with his eyes closed, he was expressionless as if he had fallen asleep.

Meanwhile, his body was beginning to melt away, resembling iron which had just begun to melt into liquid.

This was naturally a painful thing, but the dragonman clone’s soul had left the body in advance, it was standing beside Lang Ya land spirit now.

Fang Yuan’s main body personally controlled the refinement path formation while Lang Ya land spirit, Sixth Hair, and the rest assisted him.

Fang Yuan mobilized almost all of his refinement path manpower here, he was giving it his all!

As the flames burned, the flesh and skin of the dragonman clone gradually swelled and blistered, and soon he was completely disfigured. It looked like colloids or bubbles that were about to pop completely.

“Be careful and hold steady. I’ll leave this to you, Lang Ya land spirit.” Fang Yuan himself presided over the situation while giving out instructions.

Lang Ya land spirit nodded.

Fang Yuan did not need to completely scorch and melt the dragonman clone, if he did so, it would be tantamount to killing him.

What Fang Yuan needed was this current condition, where the dragonman clone had reached the limit of what he could bear, but was only on the verge of destruction.

To maintain this state, the Gu Immortal had to manipulate the intense flames while paying close attention to the dragonman clone’s condition.

Fang Yuan passed this job to Lang Ya land spirit, he had already turned into the white haired land spirit who was stable and calm, he had deep refinement path experience that Fang Yuan could not compare to. This was the step that could not accept any careless mistakes, Fang Yuan was assured with Lang Ya land spirit handling it.

Next, Fang Yuan started to activate the refinement path formation as traces of lightning gathered.

These lightning sparks were pitch black and thick like chopsticks, they crackled continuously.

The lightning sparks entered the raging flames like they were entering empty space, they were completely unaffected by the flames.

Under Fang Yuan’s control, the lightning sparks stabbed into the dragonman clone’s body, piercing through the lumps of blood and flesh, attaching themselves to the soft skeleton.

The pitch-black lightning sparks fixed the skeleton in place as they slowly moved out, taking one of the dragonman clone’s arm bones out along with them.

The arm bone was not heat resistant, it started to show signs of melting, but at this time, Sixth Hair who was already prepared activated the refinement path formation and sent out waves of bubbles.

Fang Yuan quickly tossed the arm bone into the bubbles.

The bubbles surrounded the arm bone and quickly flew up, getting out of the top of the raging flame.

Hairy man Gu Immortals were already waiting there, they prepared a pool of lightning plasma. The arm bone was put into the lightning plasma and got refined continuously, this was the first step.

The second step, another hairy man Gu Immortal took over, placing the arm bone in a green current to wash it.

The third step, others took charge. The arm bone was baked, washed, and cleaned, it shrunk greatly, and got buried in a pile of soil made from pale white bone.

Next, the refinement path formation used the power of time path to accelerate the time of the bone soil.

The bone soil continued to be absorbed by the arm bone as it got smaller in size. The arm bone only absorbed half of the soil before it stopped, it was taken out, three steps were still waiting.

This was an arm bone, while the dragonman clone had a total of more than three thousand bones in his body, they were all going to be processed similarly.

And this was just the bones, the dragonman clone’s flesh, blood, brain, organs, fingernails, and hair, they all needed to be refined.

This was an extremely tedious job, Fang Yuan alone had too low efficiency, that was why he mobilized all of his refinement path experts.

Thankfully, even though the refinement of the dragonman clone was tedious, it was not hard. The biggest difficulty was that attention was needed at all times to maintain the dragonman clone’s condition. Lang Ya land spirit was in charge of this so Fang Yuan felt assured.

Following this process, after three days and nights in the sovereign immortal aperture, the Long Hair refinement path formation finally stopped.

His bones were put back, his hair, blood, flesh, fingernails, organs, and brain were all refined properly, he was now immune to the dragonman extermination killer move.

Back when Duke Long created the dragonman lifespan extension method, he used the profundity of transformation path, qi path, and human path, but Fang Yuan did not lack expertise in these three aspects now.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan’s refinement path foundation was something Duke Long could never match up to.

And with his wisdom path ability, if given enough time, Fang Yuan would definitely be able to break the killer move dragonman extermination.

There were no killer moves that could not be broken.

It was just that a gradual process was necessary, a long time was needed to continuously attempt trial and error.

After gaining Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan obtained the research results of the dragonman experiments, it helped him greatly.

In fact, Wu Shuai was very close to success back then, even though he did not truly break dragonman extermination killer move, he had conceptualized many ideas, he just lacked time to experiment on them. During the final period before dragonman extermination, the dragonman Gu Immortals cooperated with Wu Shuai, they placed their immortal apertures in Central Continent as test locations, they tried all these methods respectively, they were spreading the seeds of hope.

The dragonman blessed land that Fang Zheng encountered was one of them. Of course, it was not from the first batch of blessed lands, the dragonman Gu Immortals that appeared in the blessed lands had placed their own immortal apertures, taking the place of the previous generation each time.

Fang Yuan did not know how many generations had gone by, he did not care either. But he used this precious information to deduce which was the most likely plan to succeed from all of the methods that Wu Shuai had conceptualized.

Information regarding the matters involving Fang Zheng was obtained by Fang Yuan after Shen Cong Sheng gave him the results of his soul search. Shen Cong Sheng did not know how precious this information was, he was basically handing Fang Yuan the solution!

Fang Yuan had the ability and clues to finally modify the dragonman race. From this day onwards, the dragonman clone would be completely immune to the killer move dragonman extermination.

Of course, that was only Duke Long’s dragonman extermination. If Fang Yuan created one himself, the dragonman clone would still be affected by it.

After all, Fang Yuan had personally created the new dragonman clone, he knew everything about it.

At this point, his work was not done.

Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone’s soul had adapted to the original dragonman body, thus it was also under the influence of Duke Long’s dragonman extermination killer move.

Therefore, he had to modify the dragonman clone’s soul next.

There was no need to use the refinement path formation for this, Fang Yuan had a vast number of soul path methods.

Dealing with the soul was much easier than the body.

Coincidentally, the dragonman clone’s soul foundation needed to be improved anyway, so Fang Yuan temporarily put the dragonman clone in the soul expending myriad guts formation to cultivate.

Soul foundation was the foundation of enslavement path.

Currently, Dragon Palace had enslaved the Four Dragon Generals, it was the limit. To enslave more living beings, the Dragon Palace Lord would need to sustain it with their soul.

Noting this, Fang Yuan started to understand why the Dragon Spirit acknowledged Bai Ning Bing in the previous life.

“It must have been an emergency back then, Dragon Palace needed Bai Ning Bing’s soul to split the burden and enslave Evil Dragon Di Zang Sheng.”

“The Dragon Spirit can control Dragon Palace to begin with, it is similar to heavenly spirits and land spirits, it can acknowledge a master and exist indefinitely.”

“Of course, one needs to have dragonman identity and the aspiration to develop the dragonman race in order to gain the Dragon Spirit’s acceptance.”

Thinking so, Fang Yuan smiled.

Developing the dragonman race was not impossible. Fang Yuan had already started to raise variant humans on a large scale, one was to comprehend human path, another was to manage the immortal aperture and finally, to try and obtain the variant human inheritances.

Whether he would develop dragonmen or not, was there a difference to him?

No!

Of course, Fang Yuan was going to raise his new dragonman race, he would definitely not develop the old dragonman race.

Therefore, in a way, Fang Yuan was now the ancestor of the new dragonman race!

Heavenly Court cared about race, it was their basis. But Fang Yuan did not care.

So what if dragonmen reign supreme? Fang Yuan did not care about that at all.

His only goal was eternal life!

If developing the dragonman race could help him achieve this goal, then he would do it. If they obstructed him in the future, he would eliminate them.

It was so simple!

If becoming a dragonman meant he could achieve eternal life, Fang Yuan would immediately abandon his human identity and change sides, even if countless people took pride in their human status.

The dragonman clone lacked a name? He would be called Wu Shuai then.

Fang Yuan was completely fine with that.

The dragonman clone started to cultivate and modify his soul.

The time path clone was still using the light of wisdom to make endless deductions.

The dream path clone was still waiting. Fang Yuan originally wanted Dragon Palace to help the dream path clone with his tribulation, but after obtaining it, he realized Dragon Palace had no dream path defensive killer moves.

This made Fang Yuan’s plan flop.

If there were to be a dream path tribulation, how would Fang Yuan defend against it? Even reverse flow protection seal would be useless at that time.

There was a way, which was to use dream token Immortal Gu as the core to deduce a usable dream path killer move.

But this move had to be rank eight! Fang Yuan had wisdom path attainment but his dream path attainment level had not even reached master!

This was troublesome.

He would need to spend a lot of time and effort, Fang Yuan thought about it and decided to defer this.

He was not going to give heaven’s will a chance to plot against him!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1850 Making Arrangements in Eastern Sea

Eastern Sea.

Shen clan headquarters, purple rosewood myriad sparrow island.

Shen clan first supreme elder Shen Cong Sheng said with enthusiasm: “Senior Qi Sea, this is the six sound tea from my Shen clan, please enjoy.”

Fang Yuan nodded as he looked at the cup in front of him.

Six sound tea was the signature tea of Shen clan, it was incredibly famous in the five regions, it was superior compared to Spirit Affinity House’s qingpu tea, Myriad Dragon Dock’s dragon shadow tea, Southern Border Qiao clan’s bewitching tea, and Fang clan’s seven li fragrant tea.

Six sound tea was not drunk in just one cup, it was a set of six tea cups.

These six cups of tea had very specific details when it came to the brewing process, temperature, cup used, sequence of drinking, and exact way to drink.

Fang Yuan first held the first cup, this tea was crystal clear, it was like the sky devoid of clouds, extremely pure and intact.

“Autumn wood sound.” Fang Yuan thought to himself as he savored the tea.

The moment he drank it, he felt refreshed as his mind became clear, it was pure and cleansed.

It was as if he had turned into a carefree flying bird, or a cool breeze, moving casually in the autumn skies.

After a moment, Fang Yuan drank the second cup of tea, cloud flow sound.

This tea had a special texture, it was soft as cotton unlike normal tea. It melted when it entered the mouth, turning into a slightly cold stream of water that flowed down his throat, it was drunk in one mouthful without doubt.

After the tea went into his stomach, faint fog started to appear on his tongue, throat, and intestines, this dense tea fog filled his body and even permeated to his internal organs.

“Good tea.” After savoring it for a while, Fang Yuan went on to the third cup.

This tea was called river mournful cry.

The tea was held in a long cup, the tea inside was not calm, there were slight ripples in it, this looked like a miniature river.

Fang Yuan poured the tea into his mouth as he felt an incredibly profound feeling, he forgot about himself, he felt like a river that had gone through countless twists and turns, after much turmoil, he entered Eastern Sea in the end.

Autumn wood sound.

Cloud flow sound.

River mournful cry.

Jade harp.

Phoenix cry.

Hibiscus laughter.

These six cups were excellent tea if drank on their own, but the most amazing thing was that they were interlinked, after Fang Yuan drank all six of them, he felt dazed as an incredibly indescribable feeling engulfed his five senses, he was deeply entranced.

By the time he came back to his senses, two hours had passed.

“Good tea.” Fang Yuan praised extensively after the experience: “Even though I live in seclusion, I have heard of the six sound tea’s reputation. Today, I have truly experienced it for myself, it lives up to its name.

Seeing that Fang Yuan was satisfied, Shen clan’s first supreme elder, Shen Cong Sheng, became incredibly happy as he laughed: “Getting Senior Qi Sea’s praise was worth the three days and nights of preparation by my clan’s Gu Immortals.”

Six sound tea was made of immortal materials, only Gu refinement experts among Gu Immortals could make it. To refine an entire set of the six sound tea, Shen Cong Sheng even had to be involved himself.

This tea had different levels of ingredients that could be used, since Shen Cong Sheng was refining it, he used the top grade ingredients, expending a large amount of rank eight immortal materials.

Rank eight immortal materials were expensive, using them to refine Gu was normal, but he was using them for tea now. After Fang Yuan drank it, there was nothing left, this was truly a luxury but it showed how enthusiastic Shen Cong Sheng was about hosting Fang Yuan!

After drinking the tea, Shen Cong Sheng invited Fang Yuan to tour this purple rosewood myriad sparrow island.

This island itself was a giant resource point, the island was not made of soil or rock, it was an immemorial desolate plant, sea suppressing purple rosewood.

The purple rosewood was rooted at the bottom of the sea, its crown grew above the water, the branches intertwined into this island.

Countless species lived on this island, they were mostly sparrows.

When these sparrows cry, the branches of the purple rosewood would shake and emit wonderful sounds. These sounds would spread far and wide, calming the surrounding seas.

The sea here was calm and tranquil like a mirror, there was no wind in the sky at all.

This was the reason for the ‘sea suppressing’ purple rosewood’s name.

Shen Cong Sheng warmly attended to Fang Yuan for two whole days, he personally accompanied him the entire time, while sometimes also inviting a few of the female Shen clan immortals to serve Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan talked to him very harmoniously, before leaving, Shen Cong Sheng presented gifts to him with both hands.

These gifts were very valuable, not only were there a large amount of immortal materials, there were even two stalks of ancient desolate plant sea suppressing purple rosewood.

Shen clan’s sea suppressing purple rosewood was an immemorial desolate plant, it could only produce a special branch every eight hundred years.

Grafting these branches would allow one to grow an ancient level sea suppressing purple rosewood.

Even though the sea suppressing purple rosewood had many branches, the rest of its branches could not be grafted for this purpose.

These two stalks of sea suppressing purple rosewood were not just ancient desolate plants, they were two large sized resource points.

In order to befriend Qi Sea Ancestor, Shen Cong Sheng invested a lot, much more than Song Qi Yuan.

Before coming to Shen clan, Fang Yuan already went to Song clan and received Song Qi Yuan’s welcome and hospitality.

“After these two trips, my reputation should have spread in Eastern Sea, no, it should have spread in all five regions.” Fang Yuan thought to himself.

Fang Yuan’s Qi Sea Ancestor identity was destined to be renowned in the world.

This was decided the moment he fought toe-to-toe against Duke Long.

“Next, I will wait for the reactions of Eastern Sea’s other super forces. They will all invite me to visit them.” Fang Yuan planned.

It seems that for this period of time, his main body was going to attend banquets everywhere.

This was what Fang Yuan wanted!

Eastern Sea was rich with resources but it lacked a unified voice, it did not have a leader that had great aspirations or foresight.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, Eastern Sea was suppressed by the other regions. In this life, even though Eastern Sea mobilized several rank eights to act together, they only went after Dragon Palace, they did not have thoughts of attacking Heavenly Court or Emperor City.

Eastern Sea was not like Southern Border which had Wu clan, it had the formidable character Wu Yong.

It was not like Northern Plains which had Longevity Heaven.

And it was not like Central Continent which had Heavenly Court.

Eastern Sea was quite like Western Desert, but Western Desert Gu Immortals were used to working together, their resources were also much poorer compared to Eastern Sea.

In Fang Yuan’s memories, Eastern Sea had never done anything outstanding. Even though Eastern Sea’s super forces had deep foundations, while their lone immortals were also much richer than those in the other four regions.

But they were too disunited.

What if a strong leader appeared? What if they had a unified voice?

A person like Qi Sea Ancestor who cultivated qi path, he had no conflict with Eastern Sea’s super forces or even most of the Gu Immortals in terms of resources. He even had battle strength on the level of Duke Long, this was his greatest foundation in intimidating the rest.

Could Qi Sea Ancestor successfully become the leader of Eastern Sea?

Of course, Fang Yuan did not expect Eastern Sea’s super forces to listen and obey his arrangements, that was not realistic.

But to become the alliance leader in name, it was possible!

Weren’t Shen Cong Sheng and Song Qi Yuan thinking about this? They wanted to make sure Qi Sea Ancestor stayed with Eastern Sea, in the future when war starts, they would be able to gain his protection.

But they did not know that Fang Yuan wanted this too.

Even if he was just an alliance leader in name, and could not interfere in the super forces’ internal affairs, as long as he could influence Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world, Fang Yuan’s goal would be achieved.

Don’t forget that four rank eight lone immortals of Eastern Sea, Zhang Yin, Granny Rong and the others, were already Dragon Palace’s dragon generals.

With their support and Fang Yuan’s status as the alliance leader, he would exert great influence. Forget about the rest, just during the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, when Heavenly Court tries to repair fate Gu, Fang Yuan could lead Eastern Sea and use its power in an appropriate setting!

Eastern Sea’s rank eights wanted to gain Fang Yuan’s favor, not only were they hospitable, they even gave him expensive gifts.

Even during normal times, Qi Sea Ancestor’s battle strength and stance would already make them want to win him over. Now, with the Earth Trenches emerging and the five regions merging into one, it was even more necessary.

Dragon Palace dived into the sea and descended until it reached the bottom of the sea.

This sea area seemed very ordinary, but after Dragon Palace waited for a while, the dragonman clone’s voice resounded from within: “Dragon Palace has arrived, where is Gu tribe?”

His voice spread out and reverberated in the depths of the sea.

The dragonman clone waited patiently, after some time, the scenery in the sea changed as an entrance opened, showing a blessed land that was hidden inside.

A rank eight Gu Immortal walked out and looked at Dragon Palace with an alert gaze that had traces of excitement in it, he cupped his fist: “I am the thirty-nine thousand seven hundred and sixty-seventh Gu tribe leader, who is the current owner of Dragon Palace?”

Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone walked out: “I am Wu Shuai.”

The expression of Gu tribe’s shook, he asked: “What relationship do you have with Fang Yuan?”

The dragonman clone laughed heartily: “Mutual cooperation, without Fang Yuan’s help, how could I have revived?”

Gu tribe’s leader nodded, he was not surprised.

News of Duke Long, Fang Yuan, as well as the fight between Qi Sea Ancestor and Duke Long had already spread far and wide.

The dragonman clone had a solemn expression: “The world is changing rapidly, the crucial moment is arriving. Gu tribe leader, will your tribe still uphold our agreement from a million years ago?”

Gu tribe’s leader smiled, he did not reply immediately: “We need to discuss this matter deeply, Senior Wu Shuai, please come in.”

Saying so, he gave way.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1851 Interfering in Three Regions

The dragonman clone first entered Dragon Palace, before flying into the blessed land while inside this Immortal Gu House.

The blessed land was Gu tribe’s headquarters, it was outsider territory and Gu tribe’s leader had rank eight cultivation level, it was much safer to be vigilant in this situation.

Once he entered the blessed land, he saw a vast area. This blessed land was huge, it was larger than some grotto-heavens.

Within the blessed land, he could see various types of immortal materials around, most were extinct in the current era already, Fang Yuan’s clone gained quite a bit of insight.

“Even though this blessed land’s foundation cannot compare to Lang Ya blessed land, it is not far off.” Dragonman clone Wu Shuai thought.

Among the blessed lands that Fang Yuan had seen, Lang Ya blessed land had the deepest foundation, followed by Imperial Court blessed land, this current one was the third.

“Gu tribe blessed land, development of over a million years! The generations of Gu tribe leaders had at least rank seven cultivation level, most were rank eight, with such an expert defending it, this blessed land’s calamities and tribulations were not a threat.”

“Furthermore... Gu tribe does not consist of humans, it receives the help of heaven’s will. Even if there are calamities and tribulations, they would not be very strong.”

Wu Shuai thought to himself.

The way of heaven was to take away surpluses while replenishing deficits, it emphasized on balance. Currently humans were the overlords of the world, and all the variant human forces were forced to live pitifully in some corners of the world.

Thus, any variant human group would receive the help of heaven’s will.

“Senior Wu Shuai, please come with me.” Gu tribe’s leader said politely while leading the way.

Dragonman clone Wu Shuai followed closely, after flying for some time, the two landed in a dense forest.

In this primordial forest, there was a huge tribe that had over ten thousand people, the ones living in this tribe were all beastmen.

Indeed, this Gu tribe was a beastman tribe.

According to human historical records, beastmen were extinct, but the truth was, heaven left them a chance of survival, a lineage of beastman bloodline had survived and lived until today, isolated from the world.

Wu Shuai received a warm welcome from the entire tribe.

Soon, the banquet was ready, Gu tribe’s leader invited Wu Shuai to take a seat.

Wu Shuai walked out of Dragon Palace, he was accompanied by two dragon generals as his bodyguards.

Gu tribe leader’s pupils shrank a little as he laughed loudly, his attitude was even more enthusiastic than before.

Wu Shuai only exposed half of his dragon generals, but each of them had rank eight cultivation level like Gu tribe’s leader. Within this beastman blessed land, other than Gu tribe’s leader, there were no other rank eight existences.

Because of his dream realm explorations, Fang Yuan’s clone had a great understanding of this beastman tribe.

After talking for some time, Wu Shuai gained a clearer understanding of Gu tribe. Gu tribe’s leader also dispelled the suspicions in his heart after this conversation.

This beastman tribe consisted mostly of fish head and human body members, their cheeks had gills, their ears were fins, and they had spiky fins on their backs. Other than that, some had frog legs, some had seabird wings, some carried turtle shells, and some had a ring of green seaweed on their heads.

These beastmen originally lived in the sea, back then, the beastman race went from domineering to weak, they were wiped out on the mainland, only this small group living in the sea were spared.

Because the beastman race became weak while humans dominated the world, this group of beastmen had to recuperate in the sea, they did not dare to take any actions.

But their enmity with humans had never been forgotten. Almost every generation’s Gu tribe leader had such intentions, they wanted to create internal conflict in humans and allow themselves a chance to rise up.

In history, the real Wu Shuai met his generation’s Gu tribe leader and it was because of their alignments that he helped Wu Shuai become an immortal, they went after fate Gu together, he was a formidable person!

In order to deal with dragonman extermination, Wu Shuai talked with Gu tribe’s leader, they came up with an alliance agreement of both races.

Earlier at the door of the blessed land, Fang Yuan’s clone and this generation’s Gu tribe leader conversed, they were talking about this agreement.

This was the arrangement left by the real Wu Shuai, he had prepared it to lead the dragonman race to prosperity. Now that Fang Yuan inherited Dragon Palace, he naturally wanted to make use of this arrangement.

Gu tribe had developed under the sea for so many years, while Gu tribe’s leader was a rank eight expert, with their deep foundation, Fang Yuan wanted to make good use of their strength.

Gathering more strength to deal with Heavenly Court, this was something Fang Yuan wanted to do.

While Fang Yuan’s Wu Shuai clone and Gu tribe’s leader were conversing happily, in Western Desert, Yang Zi He and Zhang Yin had succeeded.

Rumble!

With an intense sound, Yang Zi He finished his last attack.

Taking a look, the prosperous oasis here had turned into rubble, nothing was left.

This was a large resource point of Fang clan, it was destroyed without any possibility of recovery now.

“We should go!”

“This is the third place we destroyed, according to master’s orders, we can return already.”

“Let’s inspect first, and see if we left any clues behind.”

The two dragon generals inspected carefully, they left after making sure nothing was left behind.

Fang clan went into a commotion!

Losing three large resource points in one day, Fang clan’s losses were not small at all.

Dong clan was also shocked!

Because in the rubble, there were some words written and left behind — Dong Lu Chen was here.

Dong Lu Chen was the first supreme elder of Dong clan, earlier, Fang clan had taken revenge on him, using a theft path Immortal Gu House to destroy one of Dong clan’s oasis resource points.

After hearing the news, Dong Lu Chen’s face turned dark as he scolded: “These shameless people, the so-called righteous path! They dare to frame me and actually used such a terrible method! If I find the culprit, I will not let them off!”

Dong Lu Chen did not suspect Fang Yuan of course, his suspicions were on the super forces besides Fang clan and Dong clan.

This was an obvious plot to sow discord, if Fang clan fell for it and started to retaliate against Dong clan, those Western Desert super clans were the first ones to benefit.

Dong Lu Chen could not sit and wait, he quickly sent a letter to Fang clan’s first supreme elder, Fang Gong.

Fang clan had the wisdom path Gu Immortal Fang Di Chang, they would not fall for such a plot, after thinking about it, Fang Di Chang asked Fang Gong to send Dong Lu Chen a letter and work together to find the real culprit.

This was a great move.

After Dong Lu Chen received the letter, he realized it was a little troublesome.

He knew that Fang clan was trying to rope in Dong clan and make them allies on the same side.

But Dong Lu Chen was not stupid.

Dong clan and Fang clan shared borders, when Fang clan gets stronger in the future, they would first eat into Dong clan’s territory and benefits.

But if he did not try to find the culprit, would it imply that he had a guilty conscience?

Dong Lu Chen thought about it for a while, he decided to head to the crime scene and try to find the culprit with Fang clan’s Gu Immortals.

They would obviously not be able to find the truth, since Fang Yuan sent two dragon generals to deal with this matter, he definitely had ways to divert them away from the truth.

Thus, Fang clan and Dong clan got their answer, it pointed to the other forces near them.

But Fang clan and Dong clan were calm, they did not go to question the others, they only remembered this in their hearts.

Both of them were very restrained.

Dong Lu Chen memorized these few clans, he did not want to expose them, he needed them to deal with Fang clan after all.

And Fang clan, in order to maintain stability, would not resist these super forces openly. After all, it was all alone, while Divine Bean Palace was still far from being refined.

“Second supreme elder, the situation is getting more dangerous, can you really unravel Divine Bean Palace alone, isn’t it too tiring? That Suan Bu Jin is a wisdom path Gu Immortal, maybe he can help you and do some of the work for you.” Fang Gong suggested to Fang Di Chang.

In his opinion, Suan Bu Jin had participated in the battle over Divine Bean Palace, he had entered it before, now that he was Fang clan’s external supreme elder, he was one of them and was trustworthy.

Fang Di Chang thought about it but could not make up his mind, in the end he sighed: “Let me think about it.”

Southern Border.

In Xia clan’s headquarters, Xia Cha was also sighing.

She had been released by Fang Yuan, even though she had her body and soul, her immortal aperture was taken by Fang Yuan and annexed by his sovereign immortal aperture.

Xia Cha was no longer a rank eight Gu Immortal, she was a mortal.

Even though she was still the first supreme elder of Xia clan in name, Xia Cha felt like this status was a joke.

“I am a cripple now!”

“Even if I was rank eight in the past, so what?”

“Fang Yuan! You have amazing methods, if I can ever take revenge for this immense hatred, I will tear off your skin, pull out your tendons, and grind your bones till they turn to dust!”

Thinking so, Xia Cha sighed again.

She knew herself that this hope of revenge was too slim.

“Good news, good news, Lady Xia Cha!” At this moment, Xia clan’s third supreme elder came running excitedly.

“What good news?” Xia Cha frowned as she looked at him.

Xia clan’s third supreme elder handed Xia Cha an information path mortal Gu: “This was the letter that demon Fang Yuan sent over using treasure yellow heaven.”

Xia Cha laughed coldly: “This demon is devious and greedy, not only did he capture us, he separated our bodies and souls, extorting us time and again, he truly deserves death!”

“Right now, Fang Yuan does not have much to extort us already. I do not need to read this letter, it is merely a new idea from Fang Yuan to extort our Southern Border righteous path.”

Xia Cha shook her head continuously.

Xia clan’s third supreme elder nodded: “Lady Xia Cha is right, Fang Yuan’s intentions are obvious. He has been buying luck path immortal materials recently, he seems to be refining many luck path Immortal Gu. But this time, his offer is truly...”

“What? He is offering Immortal Gu? Or does he want to exchange Gu for Gu?” Xia Cha frowned before waving her hand: “You do not need my agreement for this matter, let second supreme elder handle it. If it is an Immortal Gu beneficial to our clan, let’s exchange for it.”

“This time, Fang Yuan is offering a mortal Gu.”

“Hmph, wanting to exchange a mortal Gu for Immortal Gu or immortal materials? Wishful thinking!”

Xia clan’s third supreme elder smiled: “Lady Xia Cha, you should look at this first.”

Xia Cha received the information path Gu worm as she looked and sneered at it: “Has Fang Yuan gone insane? He wants to get so many immortal materials with just one mortal Gu. I want to see what Gu this is!”

“Hmm?!” Xia Cha saw the crucial information in the letter, her expression changed abruptly.

She quickly stood up and said in an unquestionable tone: “I must have mortal Gu, we need to get it regardless of the price! Fang Yuan wants luck path immortal materials? Give him, give them all to him!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1852 Contest Over Gu Refinemen

Southern Border.

Ba clan, Mansion Mountain.

Ba Shi Ba carefully held a rank one mortal Gu as he stared without blinking, he was deeply concentrating: “This is second aperture Gu?”

He observed carefully, this Gu worm looked like a beetle with two sharp ends and a fat midsection, it was the size of a young man’s fist. It was like blue jade, and felt soft and cool to the touch. There was a golden eye on its plump back. The golden eye flashed with lightning, seemingly having a mind of its own.

To exchange for this Gu worm, Ba clan had used up almost all of the luck path immortal materials that it had in its inventory.

Fang Yuan was extorting them but Ba Shi Ba had to accept it, even though this was a tiny rank one Gu, it gave him the courage and hope to continue living in this world!

Second aperture Gu was very easy to use, it did not require primeval essence or immortal essence, by just dripping one’s blood onto the Gu, and feeding it until it was full, it would self-detonate and take effect.

After second aperture Gu self-detonated, it created a tiny aperture in Ba Shi Ba’s body.

This was a rank one aperture, the lowest rank of cultivation.

But Ba Shi Ba’s eyes turned red after seeing this, he was so excited his body started shaking intensely.

“Even if that demon Fang Yuan extorts us, I needed to buy this!”

“With this aperture, I can cultivate again. From rank one to five, I can use relic Gu. After rank six, I can have the help of Gu Immortals in the clan to undergo tribulations.”

“But to reach the foundation and achievements of my first immortal aperture, it would be too hard.”

Thinking of this, Ba Shi Ba gritted his teeth, he was filled with hatred towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan captured and soul searched him, even taking his first aperture away. Even if he gave a second aperture Gu, this was another form of extortion!

For Ba Shi Ba who originally had rank eight cultivation level, it was a great humiliation.

“Fang Yuan, just you wait, one day, I will take revenge for this humiliation. I will return you a hundredfold the pain that you have caused on me, you will get to enjoy this feeling yourself!”

Ba Shi Ba had a ruthless expression, he had not been having a good time these last days.

He was still the first supreme elder of Ba clan, but after getting captured by Fang Yuan, not only did his reputation fall, he was also turned into a cripple now.

Compared to Xia Cha, Ba Shi Ba was in a worse state.

Because during the time he got captured, Ba clan gained a new rank eight Gu Immortal.

Ba De!

After Ba De became a rank eight Gu Immortal, he immediately became the second supreme elder and led the affairs of Ba clan.

Ba Shi Ba’s authority was taken away.

“Thankfully, I have this second aperture Gu now!”

“I have ample cultivation experience, I have gone through tens of tribulations, it will be easy to become an immortal again, I am certain of it.”

“I need to use my time well and quickly become a Gu Immortal again. After all, my influence will become smaller over time, I need to use the rest of my influence well and try to help my cultivation process to make it as smooth as possible.”

Ba Shi Ba had his own plans, he already prepared enough relic Gu.

Immediately, he used them all, quickly becoming a rank one peak stage Gu Master.

But at this point, no matter how Ba Shi Ba attacked his aperture walls, it remained motionless.

“What is happening?”

“My cultivation level is stuck! This second aperture has issues!”

Ba Shi Ba became furious and shocked after checking it, he felt like he was deceived, he had bought a fake product with a huge price.

He quickly called the Gu Immortals who were close to him and asked them to contact Fang Yuan, to ask what was this situation about.

Fang Yuan was researching on Primordial Origin’s true inheritance, his expression shifted slightly into a smile as cold light flashed in his eyes: “It seems that they have discovered the problem already.”

However, he was prepared for this, he quickly responded.

Ba Shi Ba heard his response and broke his favorite teacup in anger: “Demon, you are going too far!”

It turned out that Fang Yuan had only mentioned his second aperture Gu could awaken a second aperture, it did not say that there was a restriction on cultivation advancement. To mislead the Southern Border immortals, Fang Yuan described his own feelings and experiences when he first used second aperture Gu.

Ba Shi Ba foolishly thought that this second aperture Gu would allow him to rapidly become a Gu Immortal again.

Over on Xia Cha’s end, a wisdom path Gu Immortal noticed this problem. Fang Yuan thus told Xia Cha that this second aperture Gu was originally an Immortal Gu, he had modified it into a series of Gu from rank one to six. Rank one second aperture Gu could allow one to have rank one cultivation level, the others from rank two to five followed the same logic.

Xia Cha immediately wanted to buy the rank six second aperture Gu but Fang Yuan's response made her speechless: "I am only selling rank one second aperture Gu!"

"It seems that Ba Shi Ba is in a worse state compared to Xia Cha." Fang Yuan smiled, he could see the anxiety in Ba Shi Ba's heart from just this small incident.

"This means that Ba De has become a rank eight already, even though Ba clan is keeping quiet about it."

"This is a good thing."

The Southern Border immortals had an immense grudge with Fang Yuan, but they shared the same common enemy — Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court wanted to repair fate Gu, in the previous life, Fang Yuan had already seen the attitude of Southern Border's righteous path.

Thus, Fang Yuan returned the bodies and souls of the Southern Border immortals, even though he annexed their immortal apertures, he gave them second aperture Gu as well.

His motive was to ensure that the Southern Border immortals had some level of battle strength remaining, sufficient to find trouble with Heavenly Court.

After experiencing so many things, through hurdles and difficulties, Fang Yuan finally managed to live through the great pressure of Heavenly Court. He now had deep foundation and many subordinates, he was able to interfere in the politics of the five regions, he could secretly use many methods to form a huge plan that would encircle Heavenly Court!

Unconsciously, he had already grown from a pawn to a chess player.

"Fang Yuan, I want to eat your flesh and drink your blood!" Ba Shi Ba looked at the letter as his body shook in deep anger.

He finally understood Fang Yuan's goal.

Fang Yuan refined a set of second aperture Gu, if Ba Shi Ba wanted to regain his cultivation level from rank one to two to three... he would need to use an entire set until rank six second aperture Gu, to gain a proper immortal aperture and finally rise back to rank eight cultivation level.

That was to say, if Ba Shi Ba wanted to regain his former glory, he would need to be extorted by Fang Yuan six times!

Ba Shi Ba cursed and threw a few more items around before he slowly calmed down.

Looking at the messy study room, he pondered for a moment before laughing loudly: "Ba Shi Ba, oh Ba Shi Ba, how can you behave like this? You had lost in the first place and got captured, it was already immense fortune that you survived. How can you still act so worried over losses and gains?"

"So what if I cannot regain my cultivation, so what? As long as I work hard enough, I will have no regrets even in death."

He muttered, it seemed like he was rationalizing with himself.

After saying that, his body relaxed, he felt his mind clearing up, he could also see at a greater height, a scene that he could not observe when he was still a rank eight in the past.

This was the scenery of human life!

He had completely calmed down, a smile showing at the corner of his lips.

“Fang Yuan, you demon, you are truly formidable, I fell for it once again.” The hatred in his heart did not go away, but Ba Shi Ba started to smile and face reality, he no longer acted like before.

At this moment, even though he did not have high cultivation level, he was much more carefree and composed than the time when he was a rank eight.

“I don’t have much of a choice now, I need to accept his extortion. After all, becoming an immortal is the most important matter now!” Ba Shi Ba felt clarity in his heart.

The clan could be relied on, but only for some time. His influence and favors that were accumulated from the past would slowly dwindle with the passing of time.

Especially when a new rank eight Gu Immortal appeared in the clan.

He needed to act quickly!

“Rotten soil blood powder, treasure flower in the earth. Jade bone turned into petals, ice muscles into stalks and golden relic into the heart of the flower. A bright stellar fire, gather ice and snow into plains. Yang cloud burns with elixir fire below and yin clouds scatter sand like gold above, add beast phantoms in the middle until lightning crackles, creating beast strength placenta, and start collecting apertures...”

This was the Gu recipe of his second aperture Gu.

Fang Yuan had obtained it from Three Kings blessed land.

The former part was the same as the original, Fang Yuan did not modify anything, but the latter part was completely changed, it could not be recognized from before.

Fang Yuan modified this Gu recipe, from the rank six Immortal Gu recipe to a series of Gu.

Fang Yuan had refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster and human path grandmaster attainment level, he even had the light of wisdom helping him, it was not hard to make this deduction.

“With this set of Gu worms, I can extort them all the way. If there is no chance for extortion, I will create my own opportunities.”

“In fact, this method can be used in Eastern Sea, Western Desert, and Northern Plains as well. As for Central Continent’s Gu Immortals, I’d rather just kill them instead.”

Fang Yuan was an unscrupulous merchant with no sympathy.

Mortal level second aperture Gu had an extremely low cost of production, it did not need lifespan Gu or immortal materials.

It needed more human apertures instead.

Human apertures were simply Gu Master apertures.

Fang Yuan simply captured some human Gu Masters to use as Gu materials, it was easy and cheap.

But he sold them to the Southern Border immortals at an extremely high price, he earns hundreds or even thousands of times the profit.

And these Southern Border immortals treated second aperture Gu as their life-saving rope, the only hope in their lives, no matter what price Fang Yuan asked, they would accept it without resistance.

Of course, Fang Yuan had considered their bottom line and also the overall situation of resisting Central Continent in the future.

“Success, Lord Fang Yuan, we refined another luck path Immortal Gu!” The hairy man Gu Immortals transmitted good news again.

“Very good, keep up the good work.” Fang Yuan praised casually.

This extortion of the Southern Border immortals was very successful because of second aperture Gu, many of the clans handed over their precious luck path immortal materials.

With them, Fang Yuan ordered the hairy man Gu Immortals to start refining luck path Immortal Gu without restraint.

The price of refining Immortal Gu was high, his luck path immortal materials dwindled in numbers, but his gains were immense.

These last days, several luck path Immortal Gu were refined, becoming Fang Yuan’s possession.

Heavenly Court.

“Damn, I failed again.” Yuan Qiong Du had an ashen expression, looking at the pile of ashes in front of him, he had an ugly expression.

During this period of time, he simply could not believe this was reality!

First, he tried to refine fixed space Gu, he failed.

Recently, he tried refining several luck path Gu worm, he failed, failed, and failed!

“My methods are not wrong, the process was smooth too, but Immortal Gu are unique.”

“Many of these Immortal Gu exist already, I cannot refine them!”

“Sigh, if only I can find out which Immortal Gu are already in existence, that would be great.”

Fang Yuan’s tactic of refining the luck path Immortal Gu first made Heavenly Court suffer great losses.

This was a hidden showdown, whoever had the initiative would reap the greatest benefits.

Even though Heavenly Court had a deep foundation and bottomless inventory, Fang Yuan made use of Southern Border’s righteous path and firmly suppressed Heavenly

Court in this regard.

Unless Fang Yuan stopped now, Yuan Qiong Du would continue to fail, he would not have many gains.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1853 Good Child

Coo coo coo...

Sounds of the strange birds resounded in this sky. The size of the bird group was huge, it looked like a gigantic dark cloud that approached Mountain Cliff City.

Within Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, Mountain Cliff City was one of the ten most special cities.

This city was built at the top of a cliff, at its highest point. The people and social behavior here were all quite special.

“Fat butt birds are coming!”

“Quick, quick, prepare for defense!”

“Everyone, don’t panic, our Combat Beast Envoys have not arrived yet.”

At this moment, Mountain Cliff City was filled with voices and extreme vigilance.

The fat butt bird group made shriek noises as they flew towards the top of Mountain Cliff City.

They had a crown on their heads, their bodies were covered in messy feathers, their bodies were fat, they had especially large butts.

Within the bird group, there was a bird king that was twice the size of an ordinary fat butt bird. It flew on top of Mountain Cliff City as it looked down, its butt moved with force as it squeezed, a lump of bird shit fell down immediately.

This bird shit was smelly and dark, it was huge, about the size of a hut, falling from the sky.

Swoosh—!

Boom!

The bird shit fell with increasing speed, there was a sharp sound as it crashed down, destroying a segment of the city walls.

Fortunately, there were not many people around, few got injured.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Boom boom boom!

The bird king’s attack started the offensive streak of the bird group, lumps of bird shit started to fall from the sky, crashing on Mountain Cliff City.

At once, it was as if the sky started to rain heavily.

But this rain contained peculiar raindrops, they were oversized bird shit.

A large number of houses collapsed as they got crushed, the walkway, gardens, fountains, and even the City Lord statue at the center of the city got mercilessly covered in bird shit.

After the first wave of attacks, the bird king flapped its wings and rose into the air with its army. There were a huge number of them, they circled around before returning and approaching Mountain Cliff City again.

“Combat Beast Envoys, attack!” At this moment, the leader of the troops defending Mountain Cliff City shouted loudly as he led the way, flying into the sky and facing these fat butt birds in battle.

A large number of Combat Beast Envoys followed, at once, humans and birds engaged in a huge aerial battle.

“Little eagle, let’s go fight too, do you dare or not?” Youngster Zhan Bu Du had already sneaked out of the City Lord’s manor, he spoke to the arrowtail eagle on his shoulder.

The arrowtail eagle screeched as arrogance flashed on its cute and young face. It flapped its wings and pecked Zhan Bu Du’s face lightly, as if it was angry at its master’s belittling attitude.

“Since you are not afraid, let me go with you!” Zhan Bu Du smiled, he seemed like an innocent youngster but was actually Fang Yuan’s clone, he had been taken in as a disciple of Mountain Cliff City Lord, he had spent a lot of time with the young eagle, he had a good grasp of its nature. With just a little provocation now, the young arrowtail eagle burst out with battle intent.

“Come, little arrowtail eagle.” Zhan Bu Du shouted loudly.

The young arrowtail eagle screeched as it flapped its wings, it shot towards the sky like an arrow before flying back towards Zhan Bu Du.

Zhan Bu Du shouted again: “Combat Beast Envoy — Transform[1]!”

He activated his Gu worm as his body shined with dazzling azure light. The young arrowtail eagle slammed onto his body and fused with the human shaped light figure.

At the next moment, the human shaped light figure went through rapid collision and changed form.

As the azure light faded, Zhan Bu Du grew to a three meter tall giant with an eagle head and human body, he had azure wings on his back, his arms and legs had turned into yellow bird claws.

Zhan Bu Du flapped his wings intensely as wild winds blew, he soared into the sky and entered the battlefield.

“Look, it’s Little Du. He sneaked out to join the battle after all. This child!” A middle aged beauty looked at Little Du’s flying figure with worry.

She was the daughter-in-law of Mountain Cliff City Lord, she had one son but he had died when he was still a child.

After Mountain Cliff City Lord took Zhan Bu Du in as his disciple, he quickly became a member of this family. The middle aged beauty made him her godson and placed all the love she had for her deceased child onto Zhan Bu Du.

Beside her was a middle aged man, he only had his upper body left, his lower part was cleanly cut off. But his face was still lively, he was quite spirited.

He looked at Zhan Bu Du as he praised after a while: “Hahaha, this kid’s fighting ability is getting higher. As expected of the person who received my teaching, father, you took in a good disciple.”

“He is your godson too.” The old Mountain Cliff City Lord stroked his beard as he said happily.

He had originally adopted Zhan Bu Du through a coincidence, because the young arrowtail eagle had treated Zhan Bu Du as its family, he could not separate them. But after teaching him well, Mountain Cliff City Lord found that Zhan Bu Du was actually a raw talent, the more he taught him, the more he shined.

Zhan Bu Du displayed great comprehension ability, he also worked very hard, Mountain Cliff City Lord was very satisfied. And even more satisfying was that Zhan Bu Du had a helpful nature, he was brave and kindhearted, he was like the sunlight which could penetrate into people’s hearts.

“Be careful!” In the sky, Zhan Bu Du shouted as he raised his speed.

He slashed with his right claw, shooting out a wind blade.

The azure wind blade was like a curved blade that directly slaughtered the fat butt bird that chased after him.

“Thank you, Little Du.” The Combat Beast Envoy who was saved was a guard of Mountain Cliff City, at this moment, he had a complex feeling.

Because normally, he looked down on Little Du, he laughed at his weak strength, he had only gained the arrowtail eagle’s recognition because he was lucky.

But now it seemed like Zhan Bu Du’s combat ability far exceeded him, even saving him without minding their past conflict.

“Don’t worry about it, we are all people of Mountain Cliff City.” Zhan Bu Du opened his beak as he spoke human words.

After hearing his words, the Combat Beast Envoy felt even more complex than before.

“Quickly regroup, fight the fat butt bird group and protect the city!” Zhan Bu Du urged.

“Okay!” The Combat Beast Envoy nodded seriously as he joined the intense battle again.

Mountain Cliff City Lord watched this scene as his evaluation of Zhan Bu Du rose again.

“This child.” The middle aged beauty eased her frown: “I will deal with him when he comes back!”

“Hahaha.” The wheelchair bound middle aged man laughed cheerfully.

Mountain Cliff City Lord nodded lightly, he did not say anything.

“After this battle, everyone’s impression of me will improve again.” Zhan Bu Du was very calm, he analyzed the situation.

The Combat Beast Envoy he saved was very grateful to him, but the truth was, Zhan Bu Du was very grateful towards him as well.

“Without someone like him, how could it display my superior character?”

After gaining the arrowtail eagle’s recognition, his status rose immensely as he became the disciple of Mountain Cliff City Lord, this made a lot of people envious.

Fang Yuan made use of everyone’s mentality as he chose a seemingly vicious enemy who was actually harmless to him.

After he purposely met with the enemy by ‘coincidence’, they went into a verbal brawl.

Afterwards, Fang Yuan intensified this conflict and even got beaten by his enemy in a public area.

Afterwards, he went home with bruises and spoke to Mountain Cliff City Lord, asking to intensify his training without explaining the reason. That way, Mountain Cliff City Lord would be able to interpret it himself.

Originally, Fang Yuan wanted to use this enemy to raise his own reputation. But with this fat butt bird calamity, he had an even better chance.

Once the chance appeared, Fang Yuan’s clone immediately used the chance to save his enemy under everyone’s supervision.

“After entering this place, my luck has always been good, even though the descending bird egg had expended a lot of my luck. It seems that the main body’s luck path attainment is getting deeper and more profound, he can provide me with a lot of help.”

After the intense battle, the fat butt birds lost.

Zhan Bu Du’s performance was very eye-catching, he was almost about to kill the bird king when Mountain Cliff City Lord transmitted his voice and stopped him.

After the battle, Zhan Bu Du purposely went to ask Mountain Cliff City Lord, showing his confusion: “Grandfather, why didn’t you let me kill that vicious bird king? Without it, our Mountain Cliff City Lord will not face such a calamity anymore.”

“Little Du.” Mountain Cliff City Lord patted Fang Yuan’s clone’s tiny head, he said with joy: “Even if you kill the bird king, they would choose a new one.”

“Then why didn’t grandfather deal with them personally? With your strength, you can wipe out the bird group.” Fang Yuan asked innocently.

Mountain Cliff City Lord smiled again: “That is because the bird faeces are a good thing. It can make our soil fertile, it can help the wheat grow more healthily, in fact, many caravans want to trade goods for our bird faeces.”

“Is that so? The smelly bird shit is a treasure?!” Fang Yuan’s clone was deeply surprised.

Looking at him, Mountain Cliff City Lord laughed heartily: “Oh Little Du, grandfather taught you not to judge a book by its cover, you must not just look at the appearance of the things in this world.”

“I understand now, I will remember grandfather’s words deeply.” Fang Yuan’s clone nodded solemnly.

“Mm, good boy.” Mountain Cliff City Lord smiled again, he thought to himself: “Other than that, there are other reasons of course. But you are still young and innocent, my disciple, it is still too early for you to learn about those reasons.”

After saying goodbye to Mountain Cliff City Lord, Fang Yuan left the City Lord’s manor.

The city lord manor was huge and tall, it was a city within a city. Fang Yuan could see the entire city from this altitude.

Within the city, the people were already starting to rebuild and recuperate. The mortals stopped hiding, they came out of their bunkers and caves.

This fat butt bird calamity did not just give Fang Yuan’s clone a huge amount of reputation, he even gained a deeper understanding of this world.

“The fat butt bird king is a mutated beast king, it has rank five Gu Master battle strength. I am just a rank one Gu Master, but with the arrowtail eagle’s power, after fusing with it, I could almost kill it. Battle strength is too easily obtained inside this grotto-heaven, thus the traditional Gu Master cultivation cannot prosper.”

“But if this Gu Master cultivation way flourished, this city would not just be made of simple rocks and mud, it would have dozens of Gu Houses as defensive towers. The fat butt bird calamity would not have caused such losses.”

“However, there are great merits in keeping the calamity around.”

“Mountain Cliff City is located at the top of a cliff, it is surrounded by hard mountain rocks, bird faeces are needed to fertilize the land so that farming can take place efficiently. The bird faeces are also a huge resource that can attract merchant caravans to come from afar, engaging in trading.”

“Mountain Cliff City can use this test to recruit more talents. Giving the city some external pressure will also promote unity, these city inhabitants will also place their faith in the ruler.”

“The killer move myriad beings assimilation transformation affects the entire grotto-heaven. Gu Masters can use the killer move’s power to transform in here, the process would require them to expend their positive emotions. Thus, Combat Beast Envoys are usually people with rich positive emotions.”

“But this does not mean that the people here are innocent, the higher-ups still possess crafty scheming abilities and methods.”

Fang Yuan thought about this as he went to the outer city.

“Ah, Lord Zhan Bu Du.”

“Young master Zhan Bu Du.”

“Hello, young master!”

“Young master fought heroically, all of us watched it from here.”

Along the way, Fang Yuan was well received with everyone’s greetings.

He opened his mouth and scratched his head, he smiled in an embarrassed manner, revealing his white teeth: “Hi everyone, hi everyone, don’t call me young master or lord, just call me Little Du!”

“Here, uncle, let me help you.” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined as he walked forward to an old man, snatching his shovel away.

“Uncle, take a break, let me help you dig the faeces up.” Fang Yuan said.

“Oh, Little Du, you came to help me again. You are such a good child, you are a good child!” The old man was so moved his eyes turned red.

Even though Combat Beast Envoys had rich positive emotions, strength often changed people, many people would mind their own statuses, who would act like Fang Yuan, even though he was the Mountain Cliff City Lord’s disciple, he came to the mortal area and had no fear of getting tired or dirty, he helped these mortals with his own strength.

Fang Yuan worked as he thought: “Looking at the time, my main body is about to take action. My progress alone will not reach my goals in the short time, I need the main body to unleash a beast calamity while I cooperate with him.”

“The main body’s beast calamity will not be a tiny problem like the fat butt birds.”

While the city people praised Fang Yuan immensely, they had no idea that he was plotting a devious and vicious scheme that would harm the entire grotto-heaven right now.

[1] Henshin!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1854 Twelve Zodiac Battle Formation

The water of the River of Time flowed slowly, emitting beautiful lights of various colors.

Compared to the River of Time, this river water was not wide or deep, it was just a tributary.

This was Beast Calamity grotto-heaven’s tributary of the River of Time, because of it, time could flow in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, it was not a still and motionless world.

A figure suddenly appeared.

He had a pale face that resembled jade, he had a divine and unparalleled appearance, his nose bridge was tall and his eyes were dark like the abyss, his long hair extended to his waist, resembling a black waterfall.

It was Fang Yuan’s main body!

“Let’s do it here.” Fang Yuan looked at this tributary of the River of Time, he waved his hand.

Suddenly, twelve balls of light shot out .

The balls of light landed in the tributary of the River of Time, turning into twelve immemorial year beasts.

These twelve immemorial year beasts had different forms, they were the rat, ox, tiger, rabbit, dragon, snake, horse, sheep, money, chicken, dog and pig. Among them, the immemorial year rat, ox and dog were the most powerful and outstanding.

Back then, when Fang Yuan fought against Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals in the River of Time, he had used Myriad Year Flying Warship to defeat them. But towards the end, these three immemorial year beasts came to fight Fang Yuan, the immemorial year ox crashed into Myriad Year Flying Warship and damaged it, the immemorial year dog's bite crushed the sides of the vessel, while the immemorial year rat directly went inside and took away Years Flow Like Water!

Thankfully, Fang Yuan had prepared for this and created a fake Years Flow Like Water as bait, the immemorial year rat was deceived and took away the bait, it attracted a lot of attention and helped Fang Yuan's Myriad Year Flying Warship to escape from danger.

After the matter, Fang Yuan recovered and went back into the River of Time using Myriad Year Flying Warship, he went to find these immemorial year beasts. After some effort, he finally subdued them all.

As a result, Fang Yuan finally collected all twelve immemorial year beasts.

While cultivating, Fang Yuan used this foundation to assemble his Twelve Zodiac battle formation.

“Right now, I have not practiced Twelve Zodiac battle formation enough to fight against Heavenly Court, but against Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, it is more than sufficient.” Fang Yuan had a plan in his mind.

The Twelve Zodiac battle formation was an ancient battle formation, it was not the same as the current era's Gu formations.

And because Fang Yuan's main body was not inside controlling it, there was a great difficulty in trying to manipulate this ancient battle formation.

It was still effective against Beast Calamity grotto-heaven's inhabitants, but against Heavenly Court's experts, it would expose too many flaws, they would not be threatened by it.

Immemorial year beasts roared as the Twelve Zodiac battle formation activated, twelve lumps of piercing light formed into twelve golden pillars that stabbed into the bottom of the river, while extending up towards the sky.

The pillars were tightly connected together, golden radiance burst out as the twelve golden pillars vanished, only a dense golden fog remained, it shrouded over the tributary of the River of Time, it was so thick one could not see anything inside.

Swish swish swish!

The golden fog influenced the tributary of the River of Time, causing the river water to move quicker and quicker.

The Twelve Zodiac battle formation was an offensive battle formation, but Fang

Yuan was a quasi-supreme in time path, when he activated it, he could break free from the limitations of the battle formation, creating a profound change to influence the time flow in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven itself.

This influence was naturally very severe.

“At this moment, the qilin heavenly spirit should have noticed it.” Fang Yuan smiled as he waved his sleeves, opening his immortal aperture’s entrance and letting out a large number of year beasts.

Among these year beasts, there were desolate beasts and also ancient desolate beasts.

The year beasts growled and roared, they charged out of the golden fog as they invaded Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Any time path Gu Immortal attacking a grotto-heaven or blessed land would have a different route that other paths could not use, that was the tributary of the River of Time.

As a time path quasi-supreme, he naturally had such a method.

Fang Yuan was a huge demon of the current era, once he acted, he caused an overwhelming influence on the entire Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven’s qilin heavenly spirit was shook awake: “Oh no! The tributary of the River of Time has been altered, there is a time path great expert forcefully modifying the time flow of this grotto-heaven, we need to stop them!”

The cultivators in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven went on another cultivation way and did not know the outside world, they thought that Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was the entire world, they could not even connect to treasure yellow heaven.

But the qilin heavenly spirit was born from the obsession of Beast Calamity Immortal, it was not restricted by this.

The qilin heavenly spirit had a lot of knowledge, after Fang Yuan made his move, it immediately sensed that Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was in an incredibly dangerous state.

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven’s rate of time was raised several times by Fang Yuan, this meant that calamities and tributations would descend very rapidly. Even though Beast Calamity grotto-heaven had the protection of myriad beings assimilation transformation, it could not endure the non-stop occurrence of the calamities and tribulations.

The qilin heavenly spirit did not show up, but it had control of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, it had many ways to hint the Gu cultivators of this place. Furthermore, Fang Yuan purposely wanted them to notice him, he sent a large number of year beasts that left the tributary of the River of Time, showing up everywhere in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

A mighty tribulation instantly formed, it caught all of the Gu Immortals in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven unguarded.

Because of the year beasts’ destruction, a lot of areas suffered great losses, lives were lost, the entire grotto-heaven was in a state of chaos and commotion.

Mountain Cliff City was implicated as well, as a Gu Immortal, Mountain Cliff City Lord was also mobilized to fight.

“To settle this tribulation, we need to deal with the source. After I leave, Mountain Cliff City will be in your hands.” Mountain Cliff City Lord instructed.

His subordinates in the city quickly nodded as they showed solemn expressions.

Without Mountain Cliff City Lord here, they lacked confidence.

“Master, don’t worry, I am here!” Zhan Bu Du shouted loudly, his innocent face was filled with fighting spirit, this made everyone chuckle.

“The future belongs to you, my disciple.” Mountain Cliff City Lord patted the shoulder of Fang Yuan’s clone as he turned to leave.

Fang Yuan watched the old man leave as he thought: “The main body attacked and set a formation in the tributary of the River of Time. After Mountain Cliff City Lord arrives, he will be trapped within the formation, awaiting my rescue. The stage has been set, all it needs is a protagonist, me.”

Time passed rapidly, months went by in an instant.

Year beasts continued to spread out, but Fang Yuan’s main body controlled the source, he prevented this calamity from spreading to the core area of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

As the sole super force in the grotto-heaven, the Combat Beast Guild started to deploy young Gu Masters.

Zhan Bu Du was among them.

He was brought to a valley with a group of similarly aged Gu Masters.

This was an entrance that the qilin heavenly spirit had secretly created, it could allow one to enter or leave the tributary of the River of Time.

The guild master was the current generation Combat Beast King, he was a thin old man, speaking to these youngsters about the situation personally: “...We found out from our investigation that the golden fog in this river has many peculiar traits. The younger and stronger an individual is, the easier they can enter or leave. Right now, most of the Combat Beast Warriors are trapped inside the golden fog, you need to save them and bring them out.”

This was naturally the arrangement of Fang Yuan, his purpose was to ensure that his clone would be chosen for this mission.

Zhan Bu Du had already reached rank two, his cultivation level was outstanding. Furthermore, he had the future desolate beast, arrowtail eagle!

Along with Zhan Bu Du’s own determination and desire to save his master, he wanted to go even if his life would be sacrificed.

His incredible acting made everyone believe it was the truth, he gained huge prestige.

“We will be relying on all of you, even though you are all young, the world is in great danger, we need your strength to deal with this crisis. You will be the saviors of the world!” The Combat Beast King proclaimed as he stirred the fighting spirits and enthusiasm of the youngsters.

Zhan Bu Du rolled his eyes in his head but he had the most enthusiastic performance, he was overflowing with fighting spirit as he became the first to rush into the tributary of the River of Time.

The tributary of the River of Time had spreading golden fog, Gu Masters could step inside like they were stepping on land.

There were wild beasts in here, the strongest were mutated beasts, there were no desolate beasts. Of course, for these youngsters, they were a huge obstacle already.

The Combat Beast Warriors who came in earlier were all suppressed, their bodies were shrouded in golden fog as they became golden statues that could not move with ease. Meanwhile, the first batch of warriors who entered the golden fog were all stiff like statues, they could not move at all.

Zhan Bu Du went in and started killing mutated beasts, saving his comrades, he acted as a leader and was incredibly outstanding.

As Gu Immortals got saved one by one, Zhan Bu Du became the benefactor of them all.

“To think that I would be saved by a young Combat Beast Envoy one day.” Many Gu Immortals sighed with similar thoughts.

“Thank you, young lad, if you face trouble in the future, come look for me in Sacred Eagle City!” This Eagle Warrior was killed by Fang Yuan in the previous life, to think that Fang Yuan’s clone would save him this time.

“My master is Mountain Cliff City Lord, did anyone see him?” Zhan Bu Du asked whenever he saved someone, even though he knew where Mountain Cliff City Lord was kept by his main body.

“Little Du is such a great child, he had never given up on saving his master.”

“He is a good child that knows how to repay gratitude.”

“I really envy Mountain Cliff City Lord, he has taken in such a good disciple!”

“Little Du, you cannot go in anymore, this golden fog has an incredibly fast rate of time, your lifespan will be used up quickly.”

“I am not afraid!” I need to save my master. All my achievements today are due to my master’s guidance and teaching. Even if I need to give up my life, I will save him!” Zhan Bu Du did not waste any chance to act, he spoke righteously.

“And this is a good thing too, the faster the time, the faster I cultivate, look, after just a few days, I am already a rank three Gu Master. The stronger I become, the more people I can save, I will definitely save my master!” Zhan Bu Du shouted loudly, he made sure many people could hear him.

“Child, I will not let you sacrifice yourself in vain, this is a lifespan Gu, it can raise your lifespan and supplement your losses.” The Combat Beast King arrived in time, he gave Zhan Bu Du a lifespan Gu.

Zhan Bu Du pretended to be surprised and joyful, he quickly rejected: “Old grandpa, you are so old already, you should use it instead, it can make you live longer.”

Combat Beast King was very happy, he had not chosen the wrong person after all, he told Zhan Bu Du with a joyful tone: “Good child, good child. I have more here, you need this lifespan Gu now to maintain a youthful state, otherwise you cannot get inside the golden fog.”

“Ah, I almost forgot! No wonder I felt like it was getting harder to enter the golden fog.” Zhan Bu Du realized at once, he was quite troubled, after a ‘tough decision’, he nodded as he took the lifespan Gu and used it.

Fang Yuan’s clone was the greatest contributor in this situation, most of the Combat Beast Warriors were saved by him, the Combat Beast King definitely wanted to ensure his safety.

Naturally, he did not know that this was all Fang Yuan’s scheme.

Fang Yuan’s clone had a great excuse to gain a huge boost in strength, soon, he rose to rank five cultivation level under everyone’s view!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1855 Comprehending Qi Wall

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, tributary of the River of Time.

Fang Yuan’s clone Zhan Bu Du went into the golden fog time and time again, saving the Gu Immortals who were trapped inside.

Each time, he had to undergo tough battles, he had to face many fierce beasts, he was covered in injuries as a result of his hard work. The youngsters who came with him slowly accepted his leadership, because the battle results showed that Zhan Bu Du’s decision making was very wise.

“There are three beast groups this time from the southeast, north, and southwest, they are encircling you.” Fang Yuan’s main body transmitted.

“Oh okay. I will lead them to break out then. Also, get rid of the white robed youngster beside me.” Fang Yuan’s clone Zhan Bu Du responded.

“Sure.” Fang Yuan’s main body stood at the densest part of the golden fog, he was lying down casually, with a relaxed expression.

He willed as the year beast army charged out, towards the group that his clone was in.

Most of his attention was placed on Primordial Origin’s true inheritance.

During the battle in Eastern Sea over Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan not only obtained Dragon Palace, he also obtained a Primordial Origin true inheritance after deceiving Duke Long!

This Primordial Origin true inheritance segment only contained the first half, but even so, Fang Yuan praised it with deep admiration.

From just this half of the true inheritance, he understood the style of the Remote Antiquity Era, qi path had been grand and incredibly powerful. He also learned about the talent of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, he was truly extraordinary, as expected of a venerable, he could not be looked at using common sense.

“The content of this true inheritance is still very applicable even in today’s context.”

“Of course, after so many years, qi path has developed a lot of new styles. The unlimited qi sea killer move that I possess is the greatest proof.”

This part of Primordial Origin’s qi path true inheritance mainly talked about the killer move qi wall.

Initially, Duke Long did not want to hand it over, but Fang Yuan had a firm attitude, qi wall was the signature method of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, it was renowned in history, almost everyone knew about it.

Duke Long wanted a truce with Qi Sea Ancestor, seeing Fang Yuan’s firm attitude, he gritted his teeth and handed it over.

“Using this qi wall killer move, I will gain a deeper understanding of Heavenly Court’s qi wall, I will try to be able to break it!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light.

In the previous life, Heavenly Court’s qi wall was a huge problem to Longevity Heaven.

If Fang Yuan could unravel this move, it would be a huge blow to Heavenly Court.

But evidently, this would be a tough mission, after all, it was Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s arrangement. The only good thing was that Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable created this qi wall killer move back then, it had lasted until today, it was outdated already.

This was likely Fang Yuan’s chance of unraveling it.

Of course, it would not be surprising if he failed.

It was still the same logic, there were no invincible Immortal Gu, only invincible Gu Immortals. There was no perfect or invincible killer move, every killer move could be unraveled and broken, but the same killer move would have vastly different effects in the hands of different Gu Immortals.

It was a huge uncertainty whether Fang Yuan could unravel the qi wall killer move that Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable had personally used.

Or maybe Duke Long noticed this himself, that was why he gave details of the killer move, qi wall, to Fang Yuan without much concern.

“At the same time, this half of the true inheritance is a huge bait to lure me into joining Heavenly Court.” Fang Yuan sneered.

If there was really a Qi Sea Ancestor who lived in seclusion in Eastern Sea, upon seeing this temptation, he might not be able to control himself.

As a rank eight secluded cultivator for so long, Qi Sea Ancestor naturally had no interest in political authority. At the same time, he cultivated qi path, it had been declining for so long, Heavenly Court solely held the most valuable qi path true inheritance in the world.

But the truth was that Qi Sea Ancestor was only one of Fang Yuan’s disguises. If Duke Long knew that he was helping his enemy now, who knew how he would feel.

“The timing is about right.” Fang Yuan researched this qi path true inheritance as he left some attention on the Twelve Zodiac battle formation.

After this bit of time, he had already worked with Zhan Bu Du to perform another show for everyone.

Several of the youngsters around Zhan Bu Du were sacrificed and died in battle.

These people were an obstacle to him, Fang Yuan had gotten rid of them in advance for his future plans.

Zhan Bu Du saved a Gu Immortal and returned again.

There were only two Combat Beast Warriors left in the golden fog, one of them was Mountain Cliff City Lord.

After Zhan Bu Du saves Mountain Cliff City Lord, Fang Yuan would recall his Twelve Zodiac battle formation.

Things had to be done in sequence, Fang Yuan had already reached his current goal in nurturing the clone.

Other than an increase in cultivation level, Zhan Bu Du also grew his network a lot, having relationships with many experts. After this battle, almost all of the Gu Immortals in this Beast Calamity grotto-heaven were indebted to him.

This was not just an ordinary favor they owed him, it was the favor of saving their lives!

In the outside world, Gu Immortals might not want to repay such favors. but here, any Combat Beast Warrior would be filled with deep positive emotions, all of them were people who would follow the rule that a droplet received in need will be repaid with a whole spring.

Zhan Bu Du would not lack resources henceforth, his future was bright. But he would not act like these people owed him, he would be even more polite and courteous, he would not mind small losses and would perfectly display his exemplary personality and graciousness.

Fang Yuan could originally kill them all, but these Combat Beast Warriors were all spared.

In the previous life, he attacked Beast Calamity grotto-heaven openly and killed many Combat Beast Warriors. This time around, he changed his plan, he wanted to annex it using another plan, he wanted to preserve Beast Calamity grotto-heaven’s value to the highest level.

“The Gu Immortals in this Beast Calamity grotto-heaven should all be taken in as my subordinates, this will greatly increase the strength of my forces.”

“During the period of the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention, if I send them to battle, there should be effective results.”

“Of course, their fighting style is too simple, they can catch an enemy off guard but once their methods are seen through, these Gu Immortals would suffer huge losses.”

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven’s Gu Masters took a shortcut, because strength was obtained too easily, they did not have many methods, this was not the traditional Gu cultivation.

Like how Fang Yuan assembled a simple Twelve Zodiac battle formation and toyed around with all of the Gu Immortals in this Beast Calamity grotto-heaven. Even the Combat Beast King could not tell the truth, he thought it was the golden fog causing problem, he did not even discover the hidden Twelve Zodiac battle formation.

With just this difference in cultivation method, Fang Yuan could easily suppress them completely.

Like in the previous life when Fang Yuan killed Eagle Warrior, he turned into the Bull-headed Demon God and slaughtered countless people. These Combat Beast Warriors and Combat Beast King had thought Fang Yuan was a beast calamity, he had many powerful combat techniques. They did not think that he had Gu worms or killer moves, they simply lacked knowledge.

Days later, Fang Yuan retracted the Twelve Zodiac battle formation, the golden fog that shrouded the tributary of the River of Time vanished.

To prevent the enemy from feeling suspicious, Fang Yuan left a large batch of year beasts behind, making it look like the golden fog's final struggle.

After a tough battle, the Combat Beast Guild gained victory, everyone cheered and celebrated.

The Gu Immortals were all saved, they began to move around, killing or capturing the powerful year beasts that were scattered all over Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

The golden fog vanished, but Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was still affected by Fang Yuan's killer move, time was moving very quickly.

Zhan Bu Du became the hero and recipient of every Gu Immortal's gratitude.

The Combat Beast King even rewarded him on the spoke, he shouted: "Oh Little Du, you are truly our little savior. You saved everyone, you saved the entire world indirectly!"

Zhan Bu Du quickly waved his hand as he expressed his thanks, he was very polite.

From this moment on, the title of little savior became the symbol of Zhan Bu Du.

Next, he would wait for the next 'fortuitous encounter' to become a Gu Immortal. After that, he would accept the test openly and become the inheritor of Beast Calamity Immortal's true inheritance.

Fang Yuan's main body left the tributary of the River of Time, he used heaven form to inspect Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

As Fang Yuan's clone, Li Xiao Bai did not have as much progress as Zhan Bu Du, but his life was still quite good.

Ever since the previous poet recital, Li Xiao Bai became the focus of Teacher Jiang's teaching, he gave him many private tuition sessions that were held in secret.

Li Xiao Bai gradually displayed great talent and aptitude to Teacher Jiang's surprise, he started to teach him more wholeheartedly.

"At this rate, I am still far from getting close to Profound Literature grotto-heaven's higher-ups."

"It is a pity."

"Profound Literature grotto-heaven is different from Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, the latter is shut and isolated, while the former has a rank eight Gu Immortal, this is also an information path grotto-heaven, it most excels in collecting information. There isn't much that I can do."

"At least, I cannot use the tributary of the River of Time, if I use the Twelve Zodiac battle formation, it would be seen through easily."

Fang Yuan decided to wait for Li Xiao Bai to develop slowly.

He could use the tributary of the River of Time to lead his beast army into Profound Literature grotto-heaven. But that way, he would need to fight against a rank eight Gu Immortal.

Fang Yuan had no fear of course, but it would be hard to win quickly. For Profound Literature grotto-heaven, the losses would also be great when battle ensued.

Fang Yuan did not want to see this happen.

If attacking forcefully worked, he would have done it long ago.

He could not annex Profound Literature grotto-heaven itself, but the information path inheritance and all of the resources inside were things that Fang Yuan wanted.

Fang Yuan had five clones now.

The time path clone was the earliest clone, its purpose was to make use of the light of wisdom, it was still a rank six.

The dragonman clone had the highest cultivation level at rank seven, it controlled Dragon Palace and was the strongest among them. He was currently engaging with Gu tribe, he had some surprising gains.

After getting help from Fang Yuan, Zhan Bu Du developed rapidly. Li Xiao Bai needed to rely on his own hard work, it was not time to make any move yet.

As for Fang Yuan’s fake identities, he had even more of them.

On this day, Fang clan contacted Fang Yuan.

Or more precisely, they were not looking for Gu Yue Fang Yuan, but his disguised identity — Suan Bu Jin.

“Elder Suan Bu Jin, we need your help, assist second supreme elder to try to refine Divine Bean Palace as soon as possible!”

Fang Yuan was overjoyed, he joined Fang clan not just to develop green ghost desert, his other goal was to try to get Divine Bean Palace.

This rank eight Immortal Gu House was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, it had great power, Fang Yuan had seen its power himself.

“I also have karma divine tree with me, this is the crucial trump card in getting this palace.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1856 Am I, Suan Bu Jin, Such a Person?

Fang clan headquarters.

An Immortal Gu House that was made of green bricks and golden tiles, it was lofty like a mountain, liveliness mixed in its solemnity, and emitted dense fragrance of plants and trees.

The wide and enormous palace hall could be seen through the open door. There were dozens of large pillars in the hall, they were thick and sturdy, glittering with bronze radiance.

Carved on the plaque of the palace door were three large words — Divine Bean Palace!

And around Divine Bean Palace was a crescent shaped wisdom path Gu formation that surrounded half of Divine Bean Palace.

This wisdom path Gu formation flickered with light blue radiance that shone upon Divine Bean Palace. The blue light was like water that tried its best to seep into Divine Bean Palace but did not attain much effect.

After continuing for a while, the wisdom path Gu formation stopped and two Gu Immortals came out from inside.

One wore a yellow robe, he was bearded and had an ordinary appearance, he was like a mortal. Right now, his face was pale with sweat covering his forehead, he was Fang clan’s second supreme elder, Fang Di Chang.

The other person was wearing a black robe, he was a skinny middle-aged man with long grey hair and appeared to be proud and arrogant, he was Fang Yuan’s disguise, Suan Bu Jin.

Fang Yuan sighed: “This Divine Bean Palace is truly amazing, it feels like a living creature even without anyone controlling it. It is like a gigantic tree while we are like two worms using all our efforts to infiltrate it, but we can barely make a dent in Divine Bean Palace.”

“Indeed.” Fang Di Chang nodded: “Even worse is that we destroyed some of this giant tree’s branches but they will regrow not long later.”

Fang Yuan analyzed: “This is indeed Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s style. According to historical records, he was the venerable with the most abundant immortal essence and the highest recovery ability, which is the essence of wood path. Second supreme elder, we are wisdom path Gu Immortals, it will be very difficult for us to refine this wood path Immortal Gu House! How about we invite one or two wood path great experts to cooperate with us, there will definitely be great results.”

Fang Di Chang smiled bitterly: “Brother, do you think I did not try it? Unfortunately, wood path is rare in Western Desert, moreover, news of my clan obtaining Divine Bean Palace has already been exposed, the other super clans are jointly obstructing us in this aspect.”

“Naturally, there is also a force who took the initiative to send wood path Gu Immortals, brother, can you guess which force it is?” Fang Di Chang asked.

Fang Yuan’s thought moved and replied immediately: “It should be Heavenly Court, right?”

“You are right, it is Heavenly Court! Duke Long said he would send wood path Gu Immortals to retrieve Divine Bean Palace, he guaranteed all our past conflicts will be written off and also promised countless resources.” Fang Di Chang smiled coldly.

After the Eastern Sea battle, Fang Yuan had an even deeper understanding about Duke Long, so he was not surprised to hear Duke Long willing to compromise.

He said: “Heavenly Court is indulging in wishful thinking, they want to use the current situation of Western Desert to make our Fang clan give in. No matter how many resources they give, how could it compare to the rank eight Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace? As long as we can use this Gu House, we can simply loot resources.”

“Hahaha.” With a loud laughter, a Gu Immortal walked towards Fang Yuan and Fang Di Chang.

“Brother Suan Bu Jin, you are truly correct.” This Gu Immortal was an old man, he was tall and sturdy, with long white hair and beard spreading around his head like a lion’s mane, he was Fang clan’s first supreme elder, Fang Gong.

Fang Gong patted Fang Yuan’s shoulder and said passionately: “Brother, it was hard on you; the moment you arrived, you had to start making deductions in the formation before even getting to rest. I have already arranged a banquet to welcome you.”

Fang Yuan smiled: “Thank you for the concern, first supreme elder. Deciphering Divine Bean Palace has stimulated my excitement and morale. Moreover, I am Fang clan’s external supreme elder as well, helping Fang clan is helping myself, isn’t that so?”

His mind, however, was clear: “Fang clan is facing too much pressure so they finally asked for my help to refine Divine Bean Palace as quickly as possible, Fang clan’s enthusiastic attitude towards me is not strange at all. Looks like I can use this chance to extort them and get some benefits.”

No doubt about it, Fang Yuan was wicked and calculating!

Not only was he conspiring to seize Divine Bean Palace, he was even going to squeeze benefits out of Fang clan in the process.

Fang clan was quite unlucky to have recruited him. In the previous life, without Fang Yuan’s interference, Fang clan’s situation had been good. They resolved their predicament with their own strength, though they did not seem to have refined Divine Bean Palace even by the time of the Refinement Path Convention.

The banquet was dignified, Fang clan truly wanted to get Suan Bu Jin’s help. Fang clan’s higher ups had a warm attitude and the rank eight Fang Gong was even more amiable.

Fang Yuan promised on the spot to use all his strength to help.

Both the hosts and guest were happy.

Were Fang clan to know that this Gu Immortal that they were passionately entertaining was the mastermind behind their problems, they might want to directly skin Fang Yuan alive and pull out his tendons!

In the coming days, Fang Yuan followed Fang Di Chang and assisted him in refining Divine Bean Palace through the wisdom path formation.

Divine Bean Palace had never-ending vitality, it could restore itself and also repel the infiltration. If the progress of infiltration was ten today, it would be reduced to three or four tomorrow.

Every time Fang Yuan and Fang Di Chang deduced, they would only stop when their minds were heated and used to the limit.

“Although I haven’t used all my strength, I am displaying the standard of a first rate rank seven wisdom path Gu Immortal.”

“Even with such help, Fang Di Chang’s progress is slow. There is no need to think about what kind of progress he had without my help.”

Fang Yuan understood the situation, feeling a trace of pity towards Fang Di Chang but also a trace of joy.

It was because Fang Di Chang used all his strength every time to refine Divine Bean Palace and had no spare energy left that Fang Yuan’s scheme against Fang clan could succeed.

If they were to really contest, Fang Di Chang was a wisdom path great grandmaster, a level higher than Fang Yuan.

Both exhausted their strength every time, Fang Yuan was concealing a portion of his strength but he also slowly began to feel tired.

Fang Di Chang was even more so because he was using his full effort

With such a desperate and stubborn spirit, although the refinement of Divine Bean Palace was still very difficult, the progress had accumulated quite a bit.

“Fang clan has wisdom path and formation path attainment, they want to use this to forcibly take over Divine Bean Palace.”

“This is a true forceful refinement!”

“There is naturally hope of success. But the price they have to pay is enormous, just the immortal essence alone will amount to a huge sum.”

“This might be a lot easier if they get help of wood path and refinement path. Naturally, if I use all my strength without hiding my attainment, that would be another outcome.”

But Fang Yuan would not do this.

Sensing the time was right, he stopped on a certain day and did not appear in time.

Fang Di Chang quickly inquired: “Brother, are you injured? Is it serious? I have already made appropriate arrangements for the treatment.”

Fang Yuan coughed: “Thank you brother for the concern, I am injured indeed but it is not serious, I can deal with it myself. It is just that... my immortal essence reserves suffered a huge loss. My mind is also tired, the amount of work is too much and too heavy. Who knows when we will be able to completely refine Divine Bean Palace. I feel like I won’t be able to persevere on.”

Fang Di Chang’s eyes opened slightly wide.

Suan Bu Jin wanted to quit the task!

What should they do now?

They had made some progress with much difficulty, if they did not persist in it every day, this progress would be lost rapidly.

Thinking of Fang clan’s situation as well, Fang Di Chang was anxious.

“Brother!” Fang Di Chang smiled: “Our Fang clan won’t mistreat you, you can rest assured.”

Fang Yuan said earnestly, “Brother, please don’t think I am intentionally trying to quit! I am not that kind of person! I believe in Fang clan and joining Fang clan is the best proof of it. At the same time, our collaboration had begun long ago, back then when we fought for Divine Bean Palace, we struck an agreement. I have never forgotten this agreement.”

Fang Yuan spoke earnestly, and as a wisdom path great grandmaster, Fang Di Chang immediately understood the underlying meaning.

He laughed: “Brother, I understand, hahaha. We also have not forgotten about the agreement back then. You helped our Fang clan to fight for Divine Bean Palace, and according to the agreement, our Fang clan needs to give an Immortal Gu, but it has been delayed until now, this is my Fang clan’s mistake! I apologize for this. Tell me which Immortal Gu you need, I will immediately arrange someone to send it over.”

“Sigh! I don’t mean that, I don’t mean that. Second supreme elder, I really didn’t mean this, you misunderstood me.” Fang Yuan said.

“Misunderstood? I misunderstood you?!” Fang Di Chang mentally snorted.

He had already seen through Suan Bu Jin, this was an ambitious person who would not act without benefits!

Back then, when they fought for Divine Bean Palace, he had used the chance to make an offer and took away great thief Immortal Gu.

He was playing the same trick again!

Fang Di Chang really wanted to slap this greedy Fang Yuan, but he forcibly restrained himself.

There was nothing he could do about this, he needed Suan Bu Jin’s help! There was indeed good progress with Suan Bu Jin helping him.

Thereupon, Fang Di Chang strongly insisted on giving Fang Yuan an Immortal Gu, but Fang Yuan kept on rejecting him firmly.

Fang Di Chang felt a bad premonition, Suan Bu Jin definitely had a bigger scheme. After a few rounds of back and forth, Fang Di Chang said directly: “Brother, just speak your thoughts.”

Fang Yuan said righteously: “Brother, please don’t look down on me, I am also a member of Fang clan, how could I add to Fang clan’s troubles by extorting it in this current situation? Am I, Suan Bu Jin, such a person? I felt that the previous Immortal Gu reward was too big so I am willing to take a step back, I do not need the reward to be an Immortal Gu.”

Fang Di Chang felt even more uneasy as he heard Fang Yuan continue: “If you truly want me to speak, then I will be open with you. Brother, we are on the same side, hehe, I also can’t hide anything from you. To tell the truth, I have some interest towards Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s theft path true inheritance. I don’t need any theft path Immortal Gu and only want to take a look at the contents of the true inheritance. Naturally, brother, if you think this is too much, then forget it.”

Even Fang Di Chang, a wisdom path great grandmaster who had an excellent bearing normally, had a change in his expression as he glared at Fang Yuan and cursed in his head: “So your target was my clan’s Thieving Heaven true inheritance all along! Such huge guts!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1857 Comprehending Thieving Heaven“s True Inheritance

Boom!

Fang clan’s first supreme elder Fang Gong slammed the table and stood up from his chair with flames of fury burning in his eyes: “This Suan Bu Jin is really greedy! He actually dared to demand my clan’s theft path true inheritance, who does he think he is? He is only a lone cultivator with rank seven cultivation, he dares to blackmail my Fang clan! He deserves to die! We should kill him!”

Fang Gong was filled with endless fury when he listened to Fang Di Chang’s report.

Fang Di Chang had already calmed down: “Suan Bu Jin has some skills indeed. Our decision to recruit Suan Bu Jin was to deal with the situation back then. Suan Bu Jin is a wisdom path Gu Immortal and is extremely shrewd, he chose this timing to ask for the theft path true inheritance when we cannot refuse him easily.”

“What? Are you really thinking of giving the theft path true inheritance to him? That is Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance!” Fang Gong’s eyes were wide open.

Fang Di Chang smiled bitterly: “If we don’t give it to him, he won’t work, what can we do to him? Yes, he is currently in our clan headquarters and we might be able to get rid of him if we attack together. But what about after killing him? Without his help, it is extremely difficult for me to refine Divine Bean Palace and it will take way too long. But in the current situation, Fang clan is facing pressure from everywhere, even rank eight Gu Immortals made a move not long ago!”

This was the task that Fang Yuan sent two dragon generals to do, but their actions were clean and their traces were erased, Fang Di Chang’s energy and attention was mostly focused on Divine Bean Palace so he was not able to see through this.

Everyone in Fang clan believed that this was either the work of Western Desert’s super clans or some Western Desert demonic immortals with evil intentions, it could even be Heavenly Court.

Fang Gong was silent, he was the first supreme elder after all, he also began to calm down.

With Fang clan’s current state, they truly needed Suan Bu Jin’s help. Once they got control of Divine Bean Palace, they could make a comeback and change this predicament. If Fallen Flower Hall, Inquiry Dock, and Chicken Dog Coop were restored in the future, Fang clan’s overall strength would probably surpass almost all the Western Desert righteous path super forces.

Suan Bu Jin was the key for Fang clan to pass the predicament and rise up to the top!

“He is indeed a wisdom path Gu Immortal, requesting to quit at such a juncture, hehehe, this Suan Bu Jin has guts and has skills as well.” Fang Gong smiled coldly.

Fang Di Chang knew Fang Gong well and realized from his tone that he had agreed.

Naturally, when Fang clan passes this dangerous moment, Fang Gong would definitely put Suan Bu Jin in his place and vent this grievance!

Fang Di Chang smiled: “Actually, Suan Bu Jin has a sense of propriety. He did not ask for my wisdom path inheritance and also did not covet the secrets of our clan’s Immortal Gu Houses. If he had mentioned these requests, we would be in a real dilemma.”

Fang clan’s foundation was not theft path.

It never was.

Theft path was only a chance gain that Fang clan schemed from an otherworldly demon.

Over these years, Fang clan’s usage of this Thieving Heaven true inheritance had already reached the limit.

The theft path Immortal Gu House they used to retaliate on Dong Lu Chen was actually an incomplete product. Just this already answered many questions.

Fang Di Chang laughed: “This Suan Bu Jin has a deep attainment in wisdom path. Moreover, I made quite a lot of progress with his help over these days. Just look at his request, he had a perfect and experienced grasp of the timing, he did not cross the bottom line while achieving the highest benefit for himself. It is not easy to accomplish this.”

Fang Gong also laughed: “Hehehe, you really think highly of this guy, you are actually still praising him.”

Fang Di Chang’s eyes shone: “Talent is talent, how can I belittle him because of my own bias? If this kind of talent can really work for our clan, it would be an excellent thing.”

Fang Gong squinted his eyes: “It won’t be easy to make an audacious guy like Suan Bu Jin submit and be loyal to our clan.”

After a round of discussion, Fang clan agreed to let Fang Yuan browse the Thieving Heaven true inheritance.

Fang Yuan obtained the contents of the true inheritance.

It was indeed a Thieving Heaven true inheritance, the essence of it was the killer move steal dao.

Back then, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was able to create theft path because of this killer move.

This killer move obviously had huge significance, it was the origin of theft path!

Fang Yuan was in awe as he looked at it.

In this true inheritance, the majesty of steal dao was shown completely. Because what it stole was not just lives or objects, but the natural world itself. Any dao mark in the world could be stolen by it!

Besides this, there was something that made Fang Yuan look at it time and again while feeling lingering desire.

This was the theft path Immortal Gu House recorded in the Thieving Heaven true inheritance — Thieves Den.

“My theft path attainment level is great grandmaster while none of Fang clan’s Gu Immortals have such attainment. So even though Fang clan’s superiority lies in constructing Immortal Gu Houses, they have always been without options to repair Thieves Den and left it incomplete.”

Fang Yuan only took a few glances at the relevant contents of Thieves Den and saw the efforts Fang clan’s successive generations had made — they had all tried to repair this Immortal Gu House.

“Although there were many creative thoughts, they did not match theft path and they were at most at a superficial level.”

“But if I were to try to repair it, it would be a different case!”

Fang Yuan was inwardly moved.

But asking for the contents of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance was already the limit. Fang Yuan knew: Fang clan was almost about to fall out with him but had forcibly held in the thought. Even though Fang clan outright gave the true inheritance, they had firmly engraved this matter in their minds.

If he went a step further and demanded Thieves Den, that would be excessive and way beyond Fang clan’s bottom line, they would never agree!

“Moreover, a wisdom path Gu Immortal like me having so much interest in theft path would be questionable.”

“Fang Di Chang does not have any doubts because I had worked up to it properly. Previously, I used great thief ghost hand, then I used wisdom grasp to kill Wan Liang Han, these left an impression on Fang clan, thus it felt natural to them.”

“But are these all the contents of this Thieving Heaven true inheritance?” Fang Yuan was unable to tell, at least, he was not able to see any unsatisfactory details in this true inheritance. But it was hard to say since Fang clan had the wisdom path great expert Fang Di Chang.

“What if I make a move now and loot them directly?” Fang Yuan thought.

It was not hard for him to deal with Fang clan with his strength. Fang Gong was strong and was a rare strength path rank eight Gu Immortal in the present age, but he was still inferior to Duke Long. There was still a gap between his and Fang Yuan’s strength.

However, Fang Yuan was not confident in defeating him conclusively, Fang Gong had once suppressed Chen Yi and his strength was first rate even among rank eights. Also, this was Fang clan’s headquarters with multiple arrangements which Fang Yuan was not aware of.

The biggest probability was for a huge battle to begin and the whole world to learn of it. At that time, not only would Fang Yuan’s identity be exposed, Western Desert righteous path super forces would also find the perfect reason – help Fang clan to eliminate the demon – to flock over and deal with Fang clan. Moreover, Heavenly Court would not stay idle, they were sure to send Gu Immortals if there were to be such a good opportunity.

Fang Yuan thought for a long while before deciding to help Fang Di Chang and maintain this situation.

This was the best plan which matched with his benefits.

Fang Yuan browsed the Thieving Heaven true inheritance and no longer groaned about tiredness or suffering. He used ‘all his effort’ to cooperate with Fang Di Chang in forcefully refining Divine Bean Palace. At least, from Fang clan’s perspective, he was using all his strength.

The progress was still difficult, but it accumulated every time and finally quantitative change led to qualitative change — Divine Bean Palace’s door opened, Gu Immortals could enter it.

This was enormous progress!

Everyone in Fang clan was excited, Fang Di Chang also laughed in joy. They all saw the rise of Fang clan!

However, the following fact was like a basin of cold water that poured down on the feelings of Fang clan’s Gu Immortals.

No matter how Fang Di Chang tried, there was not even a trace of progress in refining Divine Bean Palace. This formed a stark contrast to the previous situation.

“Looks like from here on, Divine Bean Palace’s structure is different from what I previously deduced and it has underwent a complete change.”

“We can only progress by changing the whole wisdom path formation.” Fang Di Chang said to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan nodded: “But how do we change this wisdom path formation? Previously, we could still probe Divine Bean Palace and gather a lot of information. Sigh, if we had a wood path great expert to help us, it would be much easier. With just us two wisdom paths, we can only make blind guesses!”

Fang Di Chang smiled bitterly: “What else can we do other than make guesses?”

Divine Bean Palace’s matter fell into an impasse.

Divine Bean Palace was worthy of being Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s creation, the more Fang Di Chang and Fang Yuan researched into it, the more they felt its majesty and ingenuity.

Fang Di Chang racked his brains and thought long and hard, but was still unable to find a good solution.

On the contrary, Fang Yuan had many ideas but he did not mention anything.

In this period of time, he did not have any opportunity to use karma divine tree. If he used this move, there would definitely be huge progress.

“Sitting here in a daze trying to think of a solution is not my way of cultivating. I am going to roam around and relax my mind, maybe I will gain some inspiration in the process.” Fang Yuan made an excuse to take his leave.

Fang Di Chang and Fang Gong tried to make him stay but could not, and thinking that they would still need Suan Bu Jin’s help later, they let Fang Yuan leave.

Fang Yuan left Fang clan and entered green ghost desert, but it was actually to explore dream realms secretly.

He and Chi Qu You had continued their transactions over this period of time, and by using second aperture Gu, he continued to extort Southern Border’s righteous path, asking for wood path related dream realms.

There was no wood path great expert to help them?

Who cares!

Wouldn’t it be okay if I became a wood path great expert myself?

Fang Yuan’s solution was simple and crude.

These wood path dream realms were of no difficulty, Fang Yuan was already the number one person in the world in terms of experience in exploring dream realms. People like Duke Long could not hold a candle to Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan’s wood path attainment level had always been ordinary, he did not have much contact with it in the five hundred years of his previous life.

But not long later, he became a wood path master.

A few more days passed in the outside world, he became a wood path grandmaster!

He had once again finished exploring all the dream realms he had, Fang Yuan began to research karma divine tree and Divine Bean Palace with greater confidence.

Countless ideas immediately surfaced in his mind and most of them were feasible!

“It seems I need to modify karma divine tree.”

“But to modify this killer move, I need to refine a suitable wood path Immortal Gu! These wood path Immortal Gu I have are not suitable.”

Fang Yuan was hesitant.

It was not a problem for him to refine wood path Immortal Gu. After all, he had Lang Ya Sect!

But if he did this, the refinement of luck path Immortal Gu would need to be halted.

The two Eastern Sea immortals soul searched Fang Zheng and told the information to Qi Sea Ancestor, thus Fang Yuan knew Heavenly Court’s plan and also knew about Qin Ding Ling.

Based on the refinement progress of the hairy man Gu Immortals regarding luck path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan could deduce Heavenly Court was also rushing to refine luck path Immortal Gu. Although they were unable to succeed in most of the refinements, they were able to refine a small portion successfully.

If he changed his plan now and started refining wood path Immortal Gu on a large scale, it would mean giving up on the competition of refining luck path Immortal Gu.

But if he persisted in refining luck path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan could only rely on the current karma divine tree killer move to subdue Divine Bean Palace, and this would be much more difficult.

Fang Yuan had a vague premonition that the current chance was invaluable, if he wasted this opportunity, there would be extremely low hopes of getting Divine Bean Palace later on in the future.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1858 Omniscience and Omnipotence

Fang Yuan placed great importance on this premonition.

In the previous life, he had accidentally witnessed the activation of Tao Zhu’s true inheritance in the Five Regional Mountain Range but was unable to obtain it. He had a similar feeling back then and knew that he had missed an important fortuitous encounter. That lost opportunity made the future him feel deep pity as a result.

As expected!

In the large Central Continent battle, the five regional limit formation played a crucial role. If Fang Yuan had grasped this method, he could not only have dealt with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s unceasing formation, he could have even responded to heroes among people by using five restriction profound light qi.

And this time, this feeling came when he was facing Divine Bean Palace.

“But it is different from the premonition in the previous life. This happened before I made a choice, while in the previous life, it occurred after the event had happened, I felt it after I had already missed Tao Zhu’s true inheritance.”

“Is this some kind of progress as well?”

“If so, what was the factor that led to this progress?”

Fang Yuan fell into deep thought.

Fang Yuan was extremely interested in the premonition itself. But what he was even more interested in was what led to this premonition.

After deducing, Fang Yuan got an answer — attainment levels!

“My wisdom path attainment level should be the main reason. Wisdom path masters can produce intuition while wisdom path grandmasters can imitate other paths. Wisdom path Gu Immortals cultivate thought, will, and emotion, the emergence of any feeling is an omen with huge significance, it is different from other paths.”

“Secondly is luck path. Luck path is about variables and changes. My luck path is at master, it can also produce intuition.”

“After that is time path. In the previous life, my time path attainment was involved when I had the premonition regarding the missed opportunity of Tao Zhu’s true inheritance. In this life, my time path attainment is already at quasi-supreme grandmaster, so I can sense certain future situations even better. Because of this, I have this premonition in advance and know the importance of this choice!”

The increase of time path attainment had changed the order of the premonition from after to before, this was a qualitative change!

“Lastly is wood path attainment level. Because it concerns Divine Bean Palace and my wood path attainment level was ordinary before, the premonition felt vague and hazy. But when I became a wood path grandmaster, the missing element in the premonition was filled and it condensed into a concrete form.”

Wisdom path attainment, luck path attainment, time path attainment, and wood path attainment...

These four attainment levels supplemented and complemented each other to form a miracle-like premonition.

Ordinary Gu Immortals could never accomplish this. From ancient times until now, there was probably no other person who cultivated every path like Fang Yuan.

To be more accurate, in the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had refined sovereign immortal fetus Gu which created the sovereign immortal body.

Of course, the future was uncertain.

In the future, dream realms would emerge everywhere, Gu Immortals could obtain a rapid increase in their attainment levels of all kinds of paths through these dream realms.

When these attainment levels were combined, who could say if they could not produce premonitions.

Fang Yuan continued to analyze: “The foundation for premonition is wisdom path attainment. The level of time path attainment decides whether the premonition will occur before the event or after the event. Luck path attainment can make me even more sensitive towards certain changes. And the attainment level in wood path or other relevant paths affect the scope of the premonition.”

“My premonition gave a clear sign after my wood path attainment level increased. If I were to raise my other paths sufficiently in the future, I could reach premonitions in everything. What realm will this be?”

At that instance, two words flashed in Fang Yuan’s mind — Omniscience! Omnipotence!

“No, omnipotence is likely impossible, but omniscience can be achieved.” Fang Yuan’s expression was pensive.

When the attainment level of all the paths reached a certain degree, they could create premonitions about all things. This level of premonition was very close to omniscience.

“And if the cultivation of all paths was built on a foundation like the sovereign immortal body, it should be close to omnipotence as well, right?”

“Omniscience, omnipotence...” Fang Yuan muttered, his heart shook and his gaze turned sharp: “If I reach this level, I should definitely be able to clearly observe the path to eternal life!”

Fang Yuan was inwardly excited.

Although he had plenty of experiences and had reborn multiple times, the past experiences were already of not much help to him.

There were many things that needed him to probe and speculate.

For instance, rank nine venerable cultivation, Fang Yuan’s quantity of dao marks had already broken the limit of rank eight, and after devouring Qi Sea grotto-heaven, all the calamities and tribulations were skipped, so he should have already surpassed rank eight.

But he did not reach rank nine.

He needed to probe the way to become rank nine.

Currently, he explored and learned the profundity of the various paths from this premonition and also realized the added benefit of cultivating all paths.

Ordinary Gu Immortals might stop here, but Fang Yuan felt the hope of eternal life from this foundation!

All the venerables in history were unable to achieve eternal life, eternity was also only a goal for Fang Yuan. He had no clue on how to achieve this goal, nor had any practical ideas.

Today, finally, from this small premonition, he finally found the road to eternal life!

“Although I still don’t know how to achieve eternal life, omniscience and omnipotence are the foundation. First, fate Gu has to be destroyed to make eternal life a possibility. Then, I will continue to work towards achieving omniscience and omnipotence!”

“To achieve omniscience, I will need to explore dream realms and increase my attainment levels in every path.”

“To achieve omnipotence, I will cultivate every path with the sovereign immortal body and grasp all kinds of methods.”

Be it omniscience or omnipotence, just one of them could already surpass all the predecessors in history!

Even venerables only cultivated two or three paths, and were unable to achieve omniscience. Their strength might be beyond ordinary and even Fang Yuan could not imagine such strength, but without the sovereign immortal body, omnipotence could not be achieved.

If Fang Yuan could become omniscient and omnipotent, he would definitely surpass all the venerables. At that time, the eternal life that venerables could never achieve would become a possibility for him!

“Wait a second, the Prophecy of Three Venerables clearly pointed that Great Dream Immortal Venerable would be the strongest venerable. Could it be because she would be able to reach the level of omniscience?”

This was highly possible.

Great Dream Immortal Venerable would definitely be a great expert in exploring dream realms, her attainment level in every path would be at an extremely high standard. It was not strange to achieve omniscience from this.

Fang Yuan’s heart jolted slightly, he had a completely new and deeper understanding regarding the Prophecy of Three Venerables as well as the future!

He currently had rank eight cultivation and his battle strength could match Duke Long’s, he was already an expert at the peak of the world. However, he was still minuscule when compared to heaven and earth, and the future. There were many, many things that he still needed to study and understand, there were still countless aspects he needed to improve on.

Omniscience and omnipotence was an extremely distant target. Most people would be frightened to just think of it and might even feel suffocated from the hopelessness, they would have not even a trace of desire to try.

Fang Yuan, however, was filled with bottomless fighting spirit!

“Like this, my life will become filled with vibrance from all the struggles and all the efforts.”

Several days later.

Lang Ya blessed land.

“Quick, quick, turn up the flames!” White haired Lang Ya land spirit urged while controlling the Long Hair refinement path formation.

The hairy man Gu Immortal in charge of the intensity of fire immediately used all his strength to turn up the fire.

But Lang Ya land spirit was not satisfied, still shouting: “The fire needs to be hotter, much hotter!”

“But lord, this is already the highest temperature.” The hairy man Gu Immortal shouted.

Lang Ya land spirit was filled with plenty of experiences, within just a moment, he thought of a solution and commanded: “Sixth Hair, activate the wind formation, we will use wind to grow the fire! Eighth Hair, use refinement path killer moves to gather the remnant wind and purify the incomplete Immortal Gu!”

If there was wind, there would be contamination of wind path dao marks. Only by purifying it could the Immortal Gu refinement proceed smoothly.

Lang Ya land spirit had precise control over the formation, his actions were numerous, but not disordered. The refinement path formation shook suddenly, a bright light burst out and shot towards the sky before disappearing just as quickly.

The formation gradually stopped; a completely new wood path Immortal Gu was refined.

“Success again!”

“As expected of Lord Lang Ya land spirit.”

Hairy man Gu Immortals were elated as they praised endlessly.

Lang Ya land spirit, however, was filled with admiration: “This was due to master’s Gu recipe!”

Fang Yuan was refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster and wood path grandmaster, the wood path Immortal Gu recipes he modified were at an extremely high level.

Adding on Lang Ya land spirit’s peak level refinement path attainment, they produced greater results with fewer efforts, the success rate was very high.

The other hairy man Gu Immortals agreed as well.

“Lord land spirit is correct!”

“The success rate of Immortal Gu has always been extremely low, it is limited by refinement path attainment and the Gu recipe. Most Gu Immortals don’t cultivate refinement path even as a secondary path, it can be well imagined what their refinement path attainment is like. And a Gu recipe’s modification not only requires the attainment level of the corresponding path, it also requires refinement path attainment and wisdom path attainment.”

Immortal Gu refinement had always been a money trap, but it had gradually become an ordinary process to Fang Yuan.

It was because Fang Yuan possessed wisdom path methods like the light of wisdom, and had refinement path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level, along with his other paths’ attainment levels being quite high as well.

Therefore, the several obstacles of Immortal Gu refinement became nonexistent to Fang Yuan.

The sovereign immortal aperture’s time flow was very fast, within a few days, Fang Yuan obtained several wood path Immortal Gu.

He chose to refine wood path Immortal Gu in the end.

Actually, there were a lot of wood path Gu Immortals in Southern Border as well as many wood path Immortal Gu, but Fang Yuan did not demand these Immortal Gu.

Southern Border’s righteous path was starting to construct Beacon Towers on a large scale and gradually beginning to unite. They also cooperated with Heavenly Court to suppress Fang Yuan’s businesses in treasure yellow heaven.

This situation had occurred in the previous life as well, this signified Wu Yong was starting to exert force to unite the whole of Southern Border’s righteous path.

Were Fang Yuan to extort wood path Immortal Gu from Southern Border’s righteous path, Heavenly Court would definitely learn of it.

Fairy Zi Wei would start having suspicions: “Fang Yuan is gathering wood path immortal materials, does he want to progress in wood path? He wants to refine wood path Immortal Gu? What is he trying to do?”

Heavenly Court was paying special attention to Fang clan because of Divine Bean Palace.

It was quite easy to connect the two.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1859 Suan Bu Jin, Please Rest In Peace

Fairy Zi Wei was a wisdom path great expert and also had Star Constellation Chessboard, she was very likely to deduce Fang Yuan’s traces around Fang clan, and from there, interfere and destroy his plan.

Beforehand was a similar situation as well.

Fang Yuan cultivated qi path and required qi path immortal materials, but he did not extort them from Southern Border’s righteous path.

But in Eastern Sea, Duke Long immediately pointed out a relation between Qi Sea Ancestor and Fang Yuan, which had surprised Fang Yuan.

Were Fang Yuan to have extorted qi path immortal materials from Southern

Border’s righteous path, during the battle for Dragon Palace in Eastern Sea, Duke Long might have seen through Fang Yuan’s facade at first glance.

He had precariously succeeded in deceiving Duke Long, he was just a step away from being exposed.

Many times, people needed to look at the long term instead of coveting cheap benefits. Had Fang Yuan coveted cheap benefits before and extorted qi path immortal materials from Southern Border’s righteous path, Heavenly Court might have seen through Qi Sea Ancestor’s true identity.

Thereupon, Fang Yuan would not have obtained a portion of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s qi path true inheritance.

Fang Yuan had a cautious nature.

The risks he took – besides the times where he had no alternative – were mostly taken after careful planning.

He had struggled for hundreds of years, walked on countless roads, experienced many life and death situations, and moved in the gaps between the fights of venerables and heaven’s will to finally reach his current stage.

Hardships and setbacks were the wealth of human life. With such mental fortitude, Fang Yuan would not be arrogant and lose his way.

Stability, he demanded stability in everything!

During the battle in Eastern Sea over Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan obtained information about Fang Zheng and knew that the latter had disturbed him twice, and also learned of Qin Ding Ling’s existence.

Qin Ding Ling was a person of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s era, a Central Continent immortal who cultivated metal path but changed to luck path later, and had hibernated for three hundred thousand years.

According to Fang Yuan’s deductions, Qin Ding Ling’s luck path attainment level was at least great grandmaster, and quasi-supreme grandmaster was not impossible as well.

With such a luck path attainment level, if she were able to refine just two or three luck path Immortal Gu, she could create and modify killer moves and have comprehensive luck path methods.

Under this situation, there was not a big significance in rushing to refine luck path Immortal Gu.

Previously, Fang Yuan had prioritized investing in luck path because Heavenly Court’s foundation in luck path was shallow, Fang Yuan could gain ten times the return of his investment.

But now, the prospect of his investment fell.

It was like earlier, when Fang Yuan obtained Shadow Sect’s true inheritance but did not choose to focus heavily on soul path. Spectral Soul was captured by Heavenly Court so that soul path true inheritance did not have much value. His soul path strength could very likely be deciphered and countered by Heavenly Court!

Because of these several aspects, Fang Yuan chose to stop luck path Gu refinement for the moment and change to wood path.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace was something that could increase Fang Yuan’s strength by a huge margin!

Heavenly Court had always been Fang Yuan’s greatest obstacle.

Stopping Heavenly Court from restoring fate Gu was not a matter of just one battle, it involved a struggle of information, disguise, deceit, Gu refinement, resources, and many other aspects.

Only after estimating the trump cards of the enemy could he find flaws and deal with them appropriately.

So, information was an extremely important aspect. In history, many famous wars looked like they were won easily, but who knew the intensity of the hidden struggles, the preparations made, and how many times they racked their brains from planning!

Pushing forward brainlessly would only lead to death, stupid people could not go far.

Since there was an enormous change in the investment to productivity ratio, Fang Yuan chose to halt the investment to stop his loss.

After careful consideration, Fang Yuan hesitated no more and chose this plan resolutely.

Time passed, it was a scene of tranquility in the outside world of the five regions, with turbulence surging in secret. The time flow in the sovereign immortal aperture was much faster and changes could be seen every day.

The whole sovereign immortal aperture had developed a step further.

The one million qi path dao marks from annexing Qi Sea grotto-heaven had already influenced every part of the sovereign immortal aperture.

The current mini nine heavens were filled with large amount of mist. These mists were of all kinds of colors; mini yellow heaven had yellow mist, mini white heaven had white mist...

A portion of these mists condensed and formed clouds.

Fang Yuan had originally planned to bring in clouds, but at present, it had already progressed very well through just the sovereign immortal aperture’s natural development, saving a lot of Fang Yuan’s resources.

“Dao marks are the true foundation of the immortal aperture’s growth.”

“With these one million dao marks, the immortal aperture can produce all kinds of favorable changes just by developing naturally.”

“Naturally, there are also risks. In this process, I have to pay attention at all times and make timely adjustments to prevent these changes from endangering the previous ecology.”

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture was too spacious, the influence of one million qi path dao marks was spread over all parts, and could be borne by the sovereign immortal aperture itself.

In the mini five regions, qi flows appeared in many areas. There were mists around some famous and special mountain ranges in Mini Southern Border. Frost and icy air had started to cover the atmosphere of Mini Northern Plains. Hot air started to rise in Mini Western Desert, while qi vortexes appeared in many areas of Central Continent.

The truly enormous increase was in the basic two qi— heaven qi and earth qi!

Fang Yuan could clearly observe that a remarkable amount of earth qi had accumulated in the vast underground depths of the sovereign immortal aperture.

There was an endless amount of heaven qi spread in the sky, but it was not as obvious as the concentrated earth qi.

As heaven qi continues to increase, there would be even more mists and clouds in the mini nine heavens and a faint qi wall would form in between the mini nine heavens. As this qi wall develops, it would finally become the heavenly wind qi wall.

Earth qi, however, had two directions for growth.

One was that Fang Yuan could ignore it and let it condense into one lump. This lump of earth qi would continue piling up and form some underground caves. Anything that entered these earth qi filled caves would be corroded by the earth qi and turn into stone statues. If this kind of earth qi became too dense, it could form earth qi sandstorms, which would have a vicious effect towards the surroundings. However, a large amount of earth path immortal materials would be produced during earth qi sandstorms.

The second direction was that Fang Yuan could meticulously divert this giant lump of earth qi, digging out tunnels around the earth qi to let it flow and spread to all directions.

There would not be earth qi sandstorms if the earth qi were to be distributed to various parts of the immortal aperture. This could make the soil of the mini five regions even more fertile and increase the productivity of plants, ores, and other resources. And those long and narrow tunnels that moved the earth qi would widen gradually as they get eroded by earth qi, these tunnels would be filled with earth path dao marks and finally become Earth Trenches.

These two development directions had their advantages and disadvantages.

Fang Yuan did not even have to consider, he chose the second path.

He did not lack earth path immortal materials. Digging tunnels and creating earth trench veins would elevate the whole sovereign immortal aperture comprehensively! It would greatly expand the development prospects!

Fang Yuan entrusted all the development of the sovereign immortal aperture to his subordinates. These Gu Immortals worked hard and would never idle.

As for Fang Yuan’s main body, he was working hard on cultivating karma divine tree.

Previously, Fang Yuan could barely activate the killer move karma divine tree by using rank seven mature bamboo Immortal Gu as the core and other rank six wood path Immortal Gu as supplementary. He lacked the core rule path Immortal Gu ‘Cause’, and the core wood path Immortal Gu ‘Effect’, Fang Yuan had to use a vast number of mortal Gu as replacement. Back then, because he lacked wood path Immortal Gu and wood path attainment level, Fang Yuan did not overly invest into it.

Because of this, the steps became complex, he had to spend a lot of effort on it, karma divine tree took longer to activate and it could not be used in actual battle. Not only this, the karma divine tree that used rank seven core Immortal Gu instead had its might reduced to rank six level.

After this period of improvement, although karma divine tree’s two main core

Immortal Gu – Cause and Effect – were still lacking, mature bamboo Immortal Gu was replaced by much more suitable wood path Immortal Gu.

At the same time, because of the increase in Fang Yuan’s wood path attainment level, the killer move karma divine tree had obtained a huge improvement as well. At present, this move’s preparation time had shrunk greatly and could be used in real battles. Its might had already advanced to rank seven level.

“This move is clearly lacking in dealing with rank eight Gu Immortals. At most, I can use it to bully rank sevens, its most important use is still to subdue Divine Bean Palace!”

“As for the killer move karma relocation, I am still unable to restore it for the moment.”

With karma divine tree, Fang Yuan was itching to have a go. As long as he used karma divine tree, there would be a huge breakthrough and progress regarding Divine Bean Palace.

However, Divine Bean Palace was in Fang clan’s headquarters. Fang Yuan had only been assisting Fang Di Chang before and had no good opportunity to make a move, even though he was in contact with Divine Bean Palace all the time.

How would he create this opportunity?

Before Fang Yuan resolved this issue, Fang Di Chang requested him to return to Fang clan once again.

In fact, during this period of time when Fang Yuan was cultivating wood path, Fang clan had already urged him to return again and again.

But this time, Fang Di Chang personally sent a letter unlike the previous few times. In the letter, Fang Di Chang clearly informed Fang Yuan: He had already found a way to refine Divine Bean Palace. As long as they went by this method, they could definitely refine Divine Bean Palace and grasp this Immortal Gu House!

This made Fang Yuan develop an intense curiosity, Fang Di Chang had also obtained a breakthrough?

“What is going on?” Fang Yuan disguised as Suan Bu Jin once again and returned to Fang clan.

“This is my plan, Brother Suan Bu Jin, what do you think?” Fang Di Chang explained his plan to Fang Yuan and asked.

Fang Yuan went into thinking.

Fang Di Chang was indeed a wisdom path great grandmaster, he really thought of a feasible way. That was to use a house to break the house!

Fang Di Chang’s concrete plan was to build a temporary Immortal Gu House inside Divine Bean Palace. This Immortal Gu House would first deduce and probe before self-detonating, the powerful explosion would instantly break Divine Bean Palace’s internal defense.

Fang clan was not like Fang Yuan, they could not achieve a breakthrough in wood path in such a short period of time and obtain a wood path grandmaster. But Fang Di Chang fully displayed Fang clan’s specialty to deal with Divine Bean Palace.

“But such a forceful move might result in a damaged Divine Bean Palace.” Fang Yuan said.

Fang Di Chang smiled bitterly: “Nothing can be done about it, Fang clan’s situation is worsening day by day. But, as long as we refine Divine Bean Palace and keep its damaged state as a secret, who would be able to tell clearly?”

Fang Yuan frowned: “First, although it is difficult to construct an Immortal Gu House inside Divine Bean Palace, it should be possible with our Fang clan’s foundation. But what about after that? To probe Divine Bean Palace’s deeper operation mechanics, there needs to be a Gu Immortal to control the Immortal Gu House to resist Divine Bean Palace at all times and activate the Immortal Gu House according to the changes in Divine Bean Palace. And, on this basis, under the premise that the Gu Immortal has to keep the Immortal Gu House activated at all times, the Immortal Gu House has to detonate to destroy a portion of Divine Bean Palace and make it have no defensive strength.”

“But if so, isn’t the Gu Immortal inside the Immortal Gu House in great danger?” Fang Yuan fixed his gaze onto Fang Di Chang.

The candidate for maneuvering the Immortal Gu House was no doubt a wisdom path Gu Immortal. It was between Fang Yuan or Fang Di Chang.

Who to send?

Fang Yuan understood immediately why Fang clan insisted on him returning this time.

But he would never do such a dangerous thing!

Fang Di Chang knew Fang Yuan’s thoughts as he smiled: “Don’t worry brother, we won’t make you control the Immortal Gu House alone, we will be doing it together. After this task is finished, Fang clan will make sure to repay your contributions.”

“I can agree, but, I need to take part in the whole process of the Immortal Gu House construction.”

Fang Di Chang’s eyes flashed with a sharp light, he hesitated for a bit before nodding: “It can be done! Come, let’s start the work right away.”

Constructing an Immortal Gu House inside the palace was not easy, it was much more difficult than setting up a formation within a formation. Many times, the constructed Immortal Gu House inexplicably broke apart.

Fang clan’s losses were a lot, but fortunately, their foundation in this aspect was truly deep.

Together with Fang Yuan using his actual ability to provide several logical concepts occasionally, the Immortal Gu House was constructed successfully.

Fang Di Chang and Fang Yuan entered the Immortal Gu House that looked like a tent with a circular top, they began to probe the inner mechanics and profundities of Divine Bean Palace.

Their progress was indeed huge with this Immortal Gu House.

Not long later, Fang Di Chang felt the timing was right and said to Fang Yuan: “We can start the final step. Are you ready?”

“Yes.” Fang Yuan nodded.

“Good.” Fang Di Chang said and activated the Immortal Gu House; chains shot out from all around and tightly bound Fang Yuan instantly!

Fang Yuan was pale with fright: “Brother, what are you doing?”

Fang Di Chang looked at him deeply and said with deep meaning: “Brother Suan Bu Jin, Fang clan will not forget your sacrifice.”

“So it was like this! What you want to destroy is me and not this Immortal Gu House!” Fang Yuan suddenly came to a realization.

“The Immortal Gu House needs to be detonated as well.” Fang Di Chang said: “But just the power of the Immortal Gu House’s detonation is only ordinary. Only by sacrificing a wisdom path Gu Immortal like you can I make an instant breakthrough and reach an even higher level in wisdom path. I can then use the grand power of detonation to subdue Divine Bean Palace!”

“Oh Brother Suan Bu Jin, I know that this is unfair to you.”

“But there is no other way left, you have also seen Fang clan’s situation, please die for the sake of Fang clan’s future.” Fang Di Chang bowed deeply towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan panicked and started cursing loudly.

Fang Di Chang’s expression turned cold: “You are also a Fang clan member, you are dying for a good cause. Rest in peace.”

Once he said that, he activated the final method.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1860 You Know Too Much

Fang Gong, who was hiding near Divine Bean Palace, was feeling anxious.

“What is going on? Why is there no movement from Divine Bean Palace? Did something happen?” Fang Gong calculated the time.

Fang Di Chang’s scheme against Fang Yuan naturally was not his decision alone, he had run through this plan with Fang Gong and others.

Because they were worried that Suan Bu Jin, who was a wisdom path Gu Immortal, would become suspicious, Fang Gong had been hiding outside the palace to prevent any accidents from happening.

“First supreme elder, please be at ease. Second supreme elder took action only after making a proper plan, his strength is also above Suan Bu Jin’s and adding on the immortal formation outside the palace and the support of the Immortal Gu House inside the palace, Suan Bu Jin’s defeat is almost a certainty. What’s more, if there were to be any mishaps on second supreme elder’s end leaving him unable to control the situation, he will definitely send us a message.” Third supreme elder who was standing on the side assured.

He was an old man with gray hair, dressed in a yellow robe.

“You are right.” Fang Gong nodded. Right at this time, an explosion occurred from inside Divine Bean Palace.

Fang Gong and Fang Hua Sheng glanced at each other before the latter spoke: “It has started! The Immortal Gu House has detonated.”

“Let’s go take a look!” Fang Gong ran immediately towards Divine Bean Palace.

Divine Bean Palace’s door was tightly closed before, but Fang Di Chang had already refined a portion of the palace with Fang Yuan’s help, allowing Fang Gong and Fang Hua Sheng to enter directly.

“Second elder!” Fang Gong’s eyes narrowed as he saw the heavily injured and bloodied Fang Di Chang among the ruins of an Immortal Gu House.

“Second elder, are you okay? Hold on!” Fang Hua Sheng also arrived soon after and immediately started using healing methods.

He was the most proficient healing Gu Immortal in Fang clan.

Sure enough, with his treatment, Fang Di Chang slowly came to his senses.

He spoke weakly: “That Suan Bu Jin was hiding his strength, although I succeeded in ambushing him, I was still struck by his counterattack and need to rest for some time. But Divine Bean Palace...”

Before Fang Di Chang finished speaking, Fang Gong interrupted: “Second elder, don’t mention Divine Bean Palace. You are the brain behind our Fang clan, our strategist, Fang clan cannot be without you. Let third elder heal your injuries.”

Fang Gong’s words were heartwarming.

Fang Hua Sheng added: “Second elder, don’t overexert yourself, your injuries are not light, you should listen to first elder. Come, let me take you to the secret room so I can heal you properly.”

“Alright.” Fang Di Chang weakly closed his eyes.

He was taken to the secret room and treated by Fang Hua Sheng.

The treatment lasted a day and two nights.

After the treatment finished, Fang Hua Sheng visited Fang Gong alone and reported.

“How is the situation?” Fang Gong asked.

Fang Hua Sheng replied: “Reporting to first supreme elder, there is no issue. I inspected second elder’s blood, soul, and body, they are all authentic. Moreover, as there is no change in life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu in the ancestral hall, second elder should still be himself!”

As it turned out, Fang Hua Sheng was not just treating Fang Di Chang but also had the secret task of inspecting Fang Di Chang.

Fang Gong nodded: “I trust second elder, but inspection is a necessity. How did Southern Border righteous path become a laughing stock in the five regions? It is because they let Fang Yuan infiltrate them. Although Suan Bu Jin is not at the level of that demon Fang Yuan, he is a wisdom path Gu Immortal after all; we still don’t know about all his methods, we can never be too careful. Moreover... second supreme elder himself had asked me to arrange this identity inspection.”

Fang Hua Sheng laughed: “You two really have a lot of worries, from what I see, that Suan Bu Jin might be a rank seven wisdom path expert but he is a lone cultivator after all, he has limited foundation. Our Fang clan is a super force, we used almost all our strength to scheme against him and even detonated an Immortal Gu House, it could be said that we spared no expense for this! With such a strength difference, getting rid of Suan Bu Jin is not a difficult matter.”

“I must see his body if he is alive, if he is dead, I must see his corpse. I haven’t seen Suan Bu Jin’s corpse or soul, so I am somewhat worried.” Fang Gong’s gaze was slightly heavy.

“Hahaha, he cultivates wisdom path, not transformation path. Even without second supreme elder’s explanations of the details, I can make a rough guess. That Suan Bu Jin must have used some method to gain a sudden increase in his strength when he counterattacked, resulting in a powerful explosion which destroyed his own corpse and soul.” Fang Hua Sheng said.

Fang Di Chang who was lying in the bed opened his eyes.

“It has already been a day and a night since Fang Hua Sheng reported. Looks like I managed to deceive them!” Fang Di Chang thought.

He was not the real Fang Di Chang, but Fang Yuan’s clone!

Going back to the moment when Fang Di Chang started on his scheme.

“Oh Brother Suan Bu Jin, I know that this is unfair to you.”

“But there is no other way left, you have also seen Fang clan’s situation, please die for the sake of Fang clan’s future.” Fang Di Chang bowed deeply towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan panicked and started cursing loudly.

Fang Di Chang’s expression turned cold: “You are also a Fang clan member, you are dying for a good cause. Rest in peace.”

Once he said that, he activated the final method.

Silence.

“Huh?” Fang Di Chang was slightly dazed as he activated the method again.

Still silence!

“What’s going on?!” Fang Di Chang’s pupils shrunk and his expression changed as he quickly inspected.

He looked at Fang Yuan with disbelief: “You actually tampered with this Immortal Gu House!”

Fang Yuan’s panicked expression disappeared completely and a sinister smile replaced it: “Oh, yeah, damn it, you actually found out!”

“How is this possible? I was personally in charge of the whole process, you only gave a few suggestions and nothing more!” Fang Di Chang suddenly felt a chill as he said this: “Could it be....”

“Hahaha!” Fang Yuan clapped: “You are indeed a wisdom path great grandmaster, you realized so quickly. That’s right, although I only gave a few suggestions, you accepted them. An Immortal Gu House constructed from those suggestions has many areas that corresponds to Divine Bean Palace. You set up a Gu formation outside the palace and a Gu house inside to infiltrate Divine Bean Palace and refine it forcefully. But from another aspect, Divine Bean Palace also infiltrated your Gu formation and Gu house. As for me, I just happen to be able to influence Divine Bean Palace.”

Divine Bean Palace was like a locked treasure chest. Fang clan’s Gu formation and Gu house were like a crowbar that was inserted into a gap in the chest lid, which could forcibly break the lock of the chest and open it, at the same time, this treasure chest, Divine Bean Palace, was like a large mouth that bit the crowbar.

What Fang Yuan did now was to influence Divine Bean Palace and make it bite the crowbar tightly. This created the current situation — Fang Di Chang activated his method but there was no effect.

Fang Di Chang glared at Fang Yuan and said: “Who in the world are you? It is not easy to accomplish this! First, you need extremely high formation path attainment, and second, you also need to have a method to influence Divine Bean Palace.”

Fang Yuan smiled, although his wisdom path attainment level was lower than Fang Di Chang’s, he was still a grandmaster. His formation path was also at grandmaster level, this was double grandmaster attainment level.

So, when Fang Di Chang was modifying the immortal formation outside the palace and constructing the Immortal Gu House inside the palace, Fang Yuan had already seen through his plot.

Fang Yuan was not angry, but was pleasantly surprised. He restrained himself and worked this plot to his own advantage, Fang Di Chang had thought the situation was within his control, but he was already seen through by Fang Yuan.

Immortal killer move — Karma Divine Tree!

Green smoke rose above Fang Yuan’s shoulders and head, and formed a huge divine tree. The divine tree was green and lush, and there were several fruits scattered among the leaves.

Divine Bean Palace began to shake.

Fang Di Chang’s eyes opened wide with shock and anger as he pointed at Fang Yuan: “So you sided with Heavenly Court! You despicable bastard!!”

He was familiar with karma divine tree because he had once fought Chen Yi and had experienced this killer move.

Now that he saw this move again, his first thought was not about Fang Yuan, but that Suan Bu Jin had sided with Heavenly Court and that Heavenly Court had given karma divine tree to him to retrieve Divine Bean Palace.

Ever since Fang clan seized Divine Bean Palace and chased Chen Yi away, they treated Heavenly Court as their main enemy.

Sweat started to appear on Fang Di Chang’s forehead because of the fright. Because he naturally had the thought: If this truly is Heavenly Court’s conspiracy, Suan Bu Jin definitely had backup. Maybe, Heavenly Court’s rank eight Gu Immortals are already hiding outside Fang Clan headquarters!

Seeing Fang Di Chang’s misunderstanding, Fang Yuan did not explain but focused on karma divine tree.

This was the first time he was openly using this move, Fang Yuan soon discovered Divine Bean Palace was responding to this move and slowly began to put down its resistance and accept him, the owner of this killer move.

Soon, Fang Di Chang was unable to even budge.

The temporary Immortal Gu House had the effect of imprisoning Gu Immortals, Fang Di Chang had intended to use this ability against Suan Bu Jin but Fang Yuan’s influence was much greater than Fang Di Chang’s, and with Divine Bean Palace’s suppression, Fang Di Chang became the prisoner.

“Good, very good, Suan Bu Jin! I admit defeat, kill me.” Fang Di Chang sneered without any fear of death.

He fully displayed his bravery at the juncture of life and death.

Fang Yuan also sneered: “You want to use your death to trigger a change in life tablet Gu and other methods, to notify Fang Gong and others who are outside? Such mentality is praiseworthy, but I won’t be baited. I will extract your soul and then use my split soul to possess you, your body won’t die and your soul also won’t dissipate, so there will be no change in life tablet Gu.”

“From now on, I will use this Fang Di Chang clone to replace you and infiltrate Fang clan. I will search your soul clean, I will plunder all your experiences, memories, and information.”

“Hmph! Impossible! You can forget about it.” Fang Di Chang snorted coldly: “You think a split soul cannot be inspected? The details about my soul are recorded in Fang clan, any difference will result in you getting exposed.”

“Moreover, you have too little time. I have already set a time limit with first supreme elder and others. if they don’t see me before the time limit, they will immediately charge in to reinforce me!”

“At that time, even if you have Heavenly Court’s reinforcements, how long can you hold on for? The furious first elder Fang Gong will definitely turn you into meat paste!”

“So, Suan Bu Jin, cooperate with my Fang clan. Heavenly Court is using you, although they are scheming against me, they are practically disregarding your life.” Fang Di Chang urged.

Fang Di Chang was indeed worthy of being a wisdom path great grandmaster, his words were incisive and without faults. He was actually instigating Fang Yuan! His words were even extremely logical.

Fang Yuan smiled as he gazed deeply at Fang Di Chang.

Fang Di Chang had been staring at Fang Yuan as well and paled as he saw Fang Yuan’s expression.

Because he thought of an even more frightening truth.

“You played me at my own game, there must be a reason for such confidence. To complete this plan, you need to have a high formation path and wisdom path attainment, moreover, you must also have extraordinary soul path methods!”

“No, you are not sent by Heavenly Court!”

“You! You are Fang Yuan!!”

Fang Di Chang’s face turned deathly pale.

He realized.

It was not necessary for him to be from Heavenly Court just because he had karma divine tree. Chen Yi was killed by Fang Yuan, this matter was publicized by Fang Yuan himself.

Clap clap clap.

Fang Yuan clapped: “Truly worthy of being a wisdom path great grandmaster.”

Fang Di Chang blinked as he swallowed his saliva: “Fang Yuan, we can cooperate. There is no need to create such a conflict, please believe in our Fang clan’s strength and sincerity... urgh!”

Fang Di Chang’s eyes opened wide all of a sudden.

Veins bulged on his forehead and his face turned red as if an invisible hand was clenching his neck and covering his nose, suffocating him.

While conversing with him, Fang Yuan had been concentrating on influencing Divine Bean Palace. This influence had finally reached a qualitative change!

“Fang... Fang Yuan, everything... can... be discussed...”

Fang Yuan shook his head with a smile: “It is truly a pity for a wisdom path great grandmaster to die here. But you... know too much.”

“Ahh.” At the next moment, Fang Di Chang’s eyes rolled back and his mouth foamed, his body twitched a couple times before he died.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1861 Fang Gong Lifts His Suspicions

Fang clan headquarters.

‘Fang Di Chang’ was resting in bed, his face still somewhat pale.

A young rank six Gu Immortal was standing by the bed, he was Fang Yun.

Fang Yun was Fang Di Chang’s adopted son, he was young, handsome, and his eyes were bright like stars. Right now, he had a concerned expression as he bowed: “Father, you have suffered such heavy injuries, you need to rest properly. Please tell me what I can do for you.”

Fang Yun was completely unaware that the father in front of him was someone else, a clone of Fang Yuan.

In a way, Fang Yuan could be considered his father’s murderer, Fang Yun was treating the enemy as his father.

Fang Di Chang coughed and waved his hand weakly: “Yun Er, don’t put on an act. Can father still not understand your nature? Come, sit here, don’t be so restrained.”

Fang Yun’s expression immediately relaxed as he shrugged his shoulders and raised his eyebrows, sitting by the bedside: “Father, you really gave me a scare. I didn’t think you would make such a big move this time, it was truly risky! Such a pity that Senior Suan Bu Jin lost his life.”

Fang Yun had a sad expression.

Fang Yuan had once saved Fang Yun’s life as Suan Bu Jin. Fang Yun had all along remembered this and had high regard for Suan Bu Jin.

And this time, Fang Di Chang had not told the truth of the plot to Fang Yun. The people who were in on the plan to get rid of Suan Bu Jin were limited to Fang clan’s first supreme elder, second supreme elder, and third supreme elder.

This plan could not have too many people, especially Fang Yun.

Suan Bu Jin had much contact with Fang Yun, he was a shrewd wisdom path Gu Immortal and could easily make Fang Yun expose the conspiracy had Fang Yun known the truth.

Fang Di Chang was a wisdom path great grandmaster, he paid attention to every detail.

In all fairness, had it been any other Gu Immortal, they might have really been done in by Fang Di Chang. Even Fang Yuan, if he didn’t have the premonition which made him improve karma divine tree, might have been in some trouble.

Fang Di Chang did not make any slip-ups, he had already overestimated Suan Bu Jin as much as possible. But when he knew Suan Bu Jin’s true identity, he immediately realized: he had greatly underestimated Fang Yuan.

In fact, not only Fang Di Chang, even Heavenly Court’s wisdom path great expert Fairy Zi Wei was underestimating Fang Yuan. It was such that the whole Gu Immortal world of the five regions was greatly underestimating Fang Yuan — they thought Fang Yuan was still a rank seven.

Fang Yuan had long since advanced to rank eight and even used his Qi Sea Ancestor identity to get a portion of Primordial Origin’s qi path true inheritance out of Duke Long’s hands.

Fang Di Chang was only a rank seven, the Gu formation and the Gu house he was relying on were completely seen through by Fang Yuan. At the same time, Divine Bean Palace also became Fang Yuan’s support.

Fang Di Chang had treated Suan Bu Jin as a crocodile and had never imagined there to be a vicious dragon under the crocodile skin.

Thus, he was crushed. He made such a huge mistake that there was no chance to make a comeback.

“Yun Er, come, give me your hand.” Fang Di Chang said.

Fang Yun was puzzled, but he did not want to disobey his father’s order and obediently stretched his arm.

Fang Di Chang put three Immortal Gu in his hand.

“Father, what are you doing?” Fang Yun was shocked.

“I intend to hand over my wisdom path inheritance to you.”

Fang Yun was dazed for a moment before he said: “But father, I cultivate cloud path, not wisdom path. Moreover, didn’t you allow me to cultivate cloud path before?”

Fang Di Chang nodded: ” I allowed you to cultivate cloud path before because you have a lively nature and did not want to take on responsibilities, which suits cloud path. But cloud path is only a minor path, it can never compare to wisdom path.”

“Most importantly, this event made me question myself. Suan Bu Jin’s death is the best reminder to me. I need to look for a wisdom path inheritor for the clan, if something happens to me, there will be someone to replace me.”

“Father, don’t talk about such things.” Fang Yun quickly replied.

“Life is uncertain, what accidents cannot happen? Life is full of the unexpected. I am now heavily injured and lying in bed, it was something I had never imagined before. Moreover, you know about our clan’s situation. I must prepare for the future of our clan.” Fang Di Chang said in a sincere and serious tone.

Fang Yun nodded and had a rare look of solemnity: “Father, you are right. I will change to cultivating wisdom path.”

Fang Di Chang nodded with a smile before shaking his head: “You are my son, as your father, I know you don’t suit wisdom path, cloud path is the most suitable for you. I am planning for the clan but won’t overlook you. So, father’s arrangement is to first hand the wisdom path inheritance to you, but you don’t need to change to cultivating wisdom path. You already have cloud path foundation, it will be troublesome and a great loss for you to change now.”

“Currently, you only need to hold onto this wisdom path inheritance. If there is a critical situation in the future requiring you to make the sacrifice, change your cultivation path then. If father passes away someday, select a suitable inheritor to pass on this wisdom path inheritance, understood?”

“Father, your arrangements are very wise, I understand!” Fang Yun laughed, he immediately relaxed after knowing that he did not have to cultivate wisdom path.

“Leave, you brat, father needs to rest. Get used to these three wisdom path Immortal Gu first. There is your Senior Suan Bu Jin’s distracting thoughts Immortal Gu among them, although he died, I need to pass on his inheritance.” Fang Di Chang said while waving his hand.

“I will take my leave.” Fang Yun left quickly and closed the door gently.

Only Fang Yuan’s clone was left in the room.

He closed his eyes and pondered inwardly with an exhausted look: “My physical body is Fang Di Chang’s, so there was no flaw in the blood. Fang Di Chang has not died, so there is no change in life tablet Gu. His soul was personally taken care of by the main body. After splitting the soul, many soul path methods were used and adding on the advantage of the time flow in the sovereign immortal aperture, the soul matches with the body extremely well and there is no flaw.”

“However, just these are still not enough.”

Fang Di Chang thought of Fang Gong.

Although Fang Yuan had not been in much contact with Fang Gong, he understood the latter’s nature.

From the outside, Fang Gong was bold and reckless, he did not bother about little things, but in fact, under his bold appearance, he was highly shrewd and cautious.

This could be seen from when he schemed against Chen Yi.

He was a grand rank eight Gu Immortal, but he actually hid his cultivation level and disguised as an ordinary Gu Immortal. When he saw the timing was right, he suddenly erupted with his strength and struck Chen Yi viciously, Chen Yi was caught off-guard and suffered a huge loss.

Fang Yuan knew that to deceive this kind of person, he could not rely on just having ‘no flaws that could be found’.

He needed to put up a performance as well.

“Oh? Second elder intentionally gave his wisdom path inheritance to Fang Yun?” Fang Gong soon received this news.

The one who reported the news was his own biological great grandson, an outstanding expert among rank six and Fang clan’s possible successor — Fang Leng.

Fang Leng had a square face and was slightly older than Fang Yun. Fang Yun was very close to Fang Leng, when he obtained Fang Di Chang’s inheritance, he did not hide it from this respected senior brother.

Fang Leng was clearly much more shrewd than Fang Yun, that very night, he reported this news to Fang Gong.

Fang Gong frowned slightly, not speaking.

He knew Fang Di Chang’s intention.

Fang clan’s external situation was troubling and there was huge pressure on them, but there were also internal struggles inside the clan.

Places with people have conflicts, even if there were more and more resources, they still needed to consider how to distribute it. The clan’s resources were limited, who used them now, who used them later, who could use them better, who used them worse, these were natural conflicts and could never be reconciled.

The two biggest factions in Fang clan belonged to Fang Gong and Fang Di Chang.

These two factions cooperated closely but it did not mean there was no strife between them. In fact, these two factions were always contesting with each other, it was just that Fang Gong’s faction had third supreme elder Fang Hua Sheng while Fang Di Chang was only a rank seven, they had always firmly grasped the highest authority in the clan.

Fang Di Chang possessed the wisdom path inheritance which had always been the foundation of the second faction.

Fang Gong’s frown was because he had been thinking if he could take the chance to ask for this wisdom path inheritance.

Look, you almost lost your life this time, the wisdom path inheritance is in your hands, it will be Fang clan’s greatest loss if there were to be an accident!

This was for the sake of the clan, if they pressured him with it, there was indeed a chance to force Fang Di Chang to hand over the inheritance or at least a portion of it.

There was a difference between the politics of a clan and a sect.

The clan’s politics prioritized family relationship, their inheritances were passed down through bloodline ties. Although Fang Yun was Fang Di Chang’s adopted son, the relationship was extremely good. This was because Fang Yun had been personally raised by Fang Di Chang since a young age. Fang Di Chang truly loved this son, if not, he would not have let him cultivate cloud path. He cared about his feelings and future happiness.

In the future, when Fang Di Chang retires, his second supreme elder position would be taken by Fang Yun according to the custom.

Fang clan had a lot of Gu Immortals, but this position could only belong to Fang Yun.

Unless Fang Di Chang raises an inheritor who cultivates wisdom path and is much more outstanding than Fang Yun.

Fang Di Chang’s wisdom path inheritance belonged to Fang clan in name, but in fact, it was held by his faction and passed on from generation to generation.

Fang Yun cultivated cloud path and did not have the qualifications to inherit this wisdom path inheritance, this was the most obvious weakness of Fang Di Chang’s faction.

Fang Gong was just thinking of striking this weakness but had never expected Fang Di Chang to put a stop to his plan before he even started.

“As expected of a wisdom path great grandmaster.” Fang Gong’s brows relaxed and a smile appeared on his face as he waved his hand.

Fang Leng understood: “I will take my leave.”

“We lost our chance this time, so forget it. After all, we are all members of Fang clan, we are on the same side.” Fang Gong was not too upset but was somewhat worried.

After all, Fang Di Chang’s scheme succeeded and Suan Bu Jin was sacrificed to refine Divine Bean Palace. With this rank eight Immortal Gu House, the strength of Fang clan’s second faction rose greatly, Fang Gong felt a huge pressure because of this.

As a higher up, he needed to consider a lot of things.

Fang clan’s first supreme elder, who was in control of Fang clan for so many years, not only had to look after his own cultivation and nurture later generations, he also had to lead Fang clan in resisting external enemies and expanding their territories. At the same time, he also needed to pay attention to the internal forces of Fang clan.

“Second supreme elder took action so quickly, his true intentions can be seen from this. He absolutely cannot be Suan Bu Jin’s disguise.” Right now, the final trace of doubt had disappeared from Fang Gong’s mind.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1862 Rank Eight Ant Nest Gu

in the depths of eastern sea, gu tribe headquarters.

over half a month had passed in the blessed land, the dusty seal was completely unlocked.

there were many gu immortals at the scene, fang yuan’s dragonman clone wu shuai, two dragon generals, gu tribe’s leader, as well as several beastman gu immortals.

seeing the seal unlocked, gu tribe’s leader nodded in his mind, he was even more certain of wu shuai’s identity.

this seal was arranged by wu shuai himself and was further strengthened by generations of gu tribe leaders.

back then, wu shuai had realized he did not have much chance and arranged for a portion of his inheritance to be preserved in gu tribe headquarters.

gu tribe’s leader looked at wu shuai and smiled: “please.”

wu shuai waved his hand, a large grey rock rose to the air and was stored by wu shuai into his immortal aperture.

wu shuai activated his method to dissect the rock. because of the correct method, the rock was dissected quickly and revealed two immortal gu inside.

one was rank eight immortal gu ant nest which looked like an ordinary inverted bowl, it was brown and had a rough appearance. however, this immortal gu was the core immortal gu of green ant ascetic. this gu could breed all kinds of army ants.

army ant was a species created by green ant ascetic, it was extremely suitable for enslavement path gu immortals. in history, the real wu shuai’s most used method was also army ant.

naturally, the queen ant of army ants could also breed other ants. but the queen ant could not breed another queen ant, this was a huge disadvantage.

after the dragonman race’s extermination, duke long had sent the order to remove all the related things and records.

back then, green ant ascetic had already been enslaved by dragon palace and army ant had also become one of the symbols of the dragonman race, thus it was also implicated.

with all these reasons, army ants were like a shooting star, disappearing instantly from history.

besides ant nest immortal gu, there was also an information path immortal gu, it was rank seven and was called letter seal.

letter seal immortal gu contained a large amount of contents regarding army ants. besides this, letter seal immortal gu had been used to seal ant nest immortal gu.

ant nest immortal gu was at rank eight, it was not easy to preserve it as an inheritance. because for an immortal gu’s existence, it needed to be fed in time, or else, it would die of hunger.

wu shuai used letter seal immortal gu to cover ant nest immortal gu with a thick layer of rock membrane, creating an immortal gu rock. as the price, letter seal immortal gu had to be left inside the rock as well.

gambling den gu masters would create some fake rocks for profits, they would put gu worm inside the rocks then make people open them, increasing the gambling den’s reputation.

wu shuai’s method was similar to it. it was just that he made the false rock not for profit but to preserve ant nest immortal gu.

this method was quite effective as ant nest gu was still alive after so many years.

naturally, when fang yuan’s clone wu shuai dissected the rock, ant nest immortal gu was at an extremely weak and hungry state, letter seal immortal gu was also the same.

but it was not serious, fang yuan had already prepared the food and given them to wu shuai.

wu shuai fed the immortal gu while walking back with the gu tribe immortals.

on the way, wu shuai thanked: “your noble tribe kept your word! you preserved my inheritance until now, you are really my dragonman race’s most trustworthy friend!”

the current gu tribe leader laughed: “lord wu shuai, i won’t hide it from you, there have been ups and downs. it is not that my tribe’s gu immortals did not covet your inheritance, but the tribe leader back then set a rule that every gu tribe leader had to first add a seal to this inheritance when they took the position.”

“and we have always kept fate gu’s revelation in mind, so this inheritance was able to be preserved until now.”

gu tribe’s leader was frank, making wu shuai laugh heartily.

wu shuai guaranteed on the spot: “my friendship with your tribe has lasted for a million years, and it shall continue in the future as well! right now, i am collaborating with fang yuan and have already solved the dragonman extermination killer move. this move had once killed me, and exterminated my clan, but from now onwards, it will have no effect.”

the eyes of gu tribe’s leader brightened: “this is extremely good news! dragonmen reign supreme, this is the decree of heaven. senior, to be honest, i have a favor to ask of you.”

over these days in gu tribe headquarters, fang yuan’s clone had enjoyed warm hospitality and they had even taken the initiative to return wu shuai’s inheritance.

mutual benefit was the foundation for allies, it was fair for gu tribe’s leader to make some requests right now.

fang yuan’s clone replied immediately with no hesitation: “just speak your mind, as long as it is within my abilities, i will help you.”

“i want to transform a portion of my tribe’s members to dragonmen. senior, what do you think...” gu tribe’s leader asked with anticipation.

fang yuan nodded: “my close friend back then, gu liang, who was also your tribe’s leader, had this intention as well. at present, since i already have a completely new dragonman lifespan extension method, i can naturally help you.”

gu tribe’s leader was joyous: “many thanks, senior! my tribe has already prepared the raging wave rising dragon fire, please tell us what other immortal materials are needed.”

gu tribe had been hiding in the depths of eastern sea and its successive generations had actively searched and gathered raging wave rising dragon fire. over the million years, and with eastern sea being the number one region in resources, the present gu tribe treasury had a rarely seen reserve of raging wave rising dragon fire.

fang yuan’s clone gave a few instructions and gu tribe’s leader immediately acted accordingly.

several days later, immortal materials and candidates arrived before wu shuai.

wu shuai brought out dragon palace, using the dragonman lifespan extension method inside this immortal gu house could receive the assistance of dragon palace itself.

this batch of gu tribe members had over ten people. most were rank five gu masters while two were gu immortals. among them, half were elderly with their lifespan nearing the end and with no other lifespan extension methods left, the dragonman lifespan extension method became their only hope. the other half were young adults, the elites of the current gu tribe.

several days passed again, with the dragon spirit’s help and the methods of fang yuan’s clone, the dragonman lifespan extension method was used. most of the gu tribe candidates turned into dragonmen, but a portion were unlucky and lost their lives. after all, the dragonman lifespan extension method still had risks.

even so, gu tribe’s leader was very happy at this result: “senior, your modified method has a much higher success rate than the original.”

“my race’s extermination was the price to obtain this achievement.” fang yuan’s clone heaved a sigh.

gu tribe’s leader immediately consoled: “senior, i am sorry for your loss.”

as he said this, he presented a batch of immortal materials.

for ant nest immortal gu to create army ants, immortal essence was only one of the conditions, it still required specific immortal materials. fang yuan’s clone required these immortal materials. the gu tribe leader of back then knew this secret and had gathered these materials, the current gu tribe leader offered them, which showed their sincerity.

fang yuan’s clone rejected: “i converted your tribe members as thanks, we did not discuss any remuneration.”

“senior, please don’t stand on ceremony, this is only a small gift from us.” gu tribe’s leader smiled.

but fang yuan’s clone still persisted: “it has not been easy for you to survive, you are also my dragonman race’s most trustworthy and reliable ally. how can i, wu shuai, treat my ally like this? although i don’t have the immortal materials, i am already in collaboration with fang yuan, i can ask for him to provide the immortal materials.”

“senior, fang yuan is a devil of this age, he might only have rank seven cultivation, but even heavenly court is unable to handle him. he is sinister and crafty, vicious and malicious, he can do anything as long as there are enough benefits. i hope you are vigilant, senior.”

fang yuan’s clone could not help but laugh in his mind.

gu tribe’s leader was speaking ill of fang yuan in front of fang yuan, were he to know that wu shuai was fang yuan’s clone, who knew what spectacular expression he would show.

fang yuan’s clone nodded: “your words make sense, but heavenly court’s force is huge, and fang yuan is no doubt a huge help that cannot be neglected. even if i am taking favors from a tiger, as long as it can increase my chance of victory against heavenly court and duke long, even if slightly, i am willing to take the risk.”

gu tribe’s leader nodded and sighed: “senior, you are right. to be honest, my gu tribe might be hiding in this corner, but we have made many reliable allies. eastern sea’s merman imperial court is one of them. my gu tribe has received a lot of help from them.”

“merman imperial court... this is indeed good news!” the gaze of fang yuan’s clone brightened.

merman imperial court was a super force that had once received support from paradise earth immortal venerable. the human race had dominance, gu tribe was a beastman tribe hiding in the bottom of the sea, it was not strange for them to have a close relationship with mermen.

gu tribe’s leader continued: “besides this, my tribe has some connections with the other four regions as well. for instance, we have stable trade with murong tribe in northern plains. some years ago, when imperial court blessed land was destroyed and eighty-eight true yang building collapsed, i had gone to northern plains to participate in northern plains’ auction, i received warm hospitality from murong tribe back then.”

wu shuai thought: “so it was you.”

fang yuan’s main body had also participated in northern plains’ auction.

this auction was hosted by qin bai sheng.

back then, gu tribe’s leader had worn a tall hat and large cloak and had an ordinary face, it was clearly a disguise. right now, wu shuai was looking at the real appearance of gu tribe’s leader.

fang yuan had converted gu tribe members to dragonmen, it had clearly deepened their friendship and gu tribe’s leader took the initiative to reveal many secrets.

gu tribe might have been living in hiding, but over such a long period of time, they had a lot of contact with the outside world and had an extremely firm foundation.

using gu tribe as a focal point, he could influence all five regions. naturally, this influence was limited.

but this limited influence could display a huge effect through fang yuan’s planning.

“this is good news!” fang yuan’s main body was quite happy when he received this information.

right now, he was no longer in western desert, but had arrived at northern plains.

he rapidly descended, below him was a giant pit.

the pit’s entrance was almost circular and spanned hundreds of kilometers, it looked extremely grand.

fang yuan looked down and saw a scene of wilderness. there was a thick rainforest, having both yellow and green colors. from time to time, desolate beasts growled, large numbers of featherless birds flew out, their red bodies looked like the historical pterosaurs of earth.

it was one of the ten great fierce areas of northern plains, crazed demon cave!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1863 Walking Through The Seventh Layer Again

fang yuan was dressed in a white robe, slowly descending to crazed demon cave.

two gu immortals were already waiting for a long time on the ground.

one gu immortal had a pale face and black beard, he had long wide sleeves and eyes that were shining like stars, he had an extraordinary air. he was known as not immortal and he cultivated rule path.

the other gu immortal was short, his height only reaching fang yuan’s knee. his tiny eyes were shining brightly, he was secret schemer and he cultivated wisdom path.

the current fang yuan could not be compared to the past, he had trampled on heavenly court in the battle of lang ya and two battles in the river of time. he had even captured a large group of southern border immortals, which included two rank eights! not long ago, there was even news from eastern sea’s gu immortal world that fang yuan borrowed qi sea ancestor’s strength to block duke long, while he took away immortal gu house dragon palace.

in terms of who was the strongest and most famous demonic path gu immortal of the current generation, no one fit better than fang yuan.

“friends, we meet again.” after fang yuan landed, he greeted politely with a smile.

secret schemer and not immortal returned the greeting hurriedly.

not immortal smiled: “after the previous parting, when we heard of brother liu’s true identity being gu yue fang yuan, we were truly surprised and joyous. since you have come here this time, you must have a method to break through the current barrier, we have been waiting anxiously for a long time.”

fang yuan had undergone the crazed demon agreement using liu guan yi’s identity, and had become a member of crazed demon cave like chu du.

therefore, not immortal addressed fang yuan as brother liu.

as far as the three crazed demon eccentrics were concerned, fang yuan’s appearance had not changed because liu guan yi’s appearance was the original appearance of fang yuan’s sovereign immortal body.

“why don’t i see pang shan?” fang yuan asked.

“he seemed to have gained some insight when he explored the seventh layer and is currently in closed cultivation.” secret schemer replied.

“so that’s it.” fang yuan smiled, understanding in his head.

the three crazed demon eccentrics were taking precautions against him!

back then, when he went under the name of liu guan yi, his strength was not high. the current fang yuan was progressing rapidly, the whole world acknowledged that fang yuan could battle rank eight despite being only at rank seven. the three crazed demon eccentrics were naturally concerned about fang yuan suddenly making a vicious move against them.

after all, fang yuan was the biggest demon at present, his nature was vicious and cruel. don’t be fooled by his smiling expression, he was, in actuality, a ruthless murderer who killed without even blinking his eyes.

although the three crazed demon eccentrics had long secluded themselves inside crazed demon cave and were only engrossed in cultivating, they were not fools. especially the head of the three eccentrics, secret schemer, his performance in fang yuan’s previous life was quite spectacular and made heavenly court suffer major losses.

the three crazed demon eccentrics were wary of fang yuan, thus pang shan did not appear and was hiding somewhere.

it was very likely that him being in closed cultivation was only an excuse just in case fang yuan went crazy and attacked them! as long as there was at least one eccentric left, they would not have the worry of fang yuan killing them all.

“not only this, the three crazed demon eccentrics might have some backup methods, which is why they are keeping a person outside.” fang yuan deduced inwardly.

although fang yuan had undergone the crazed demon agreement, he had already gotten rid of its restrictions.

the three crazed demon eccentrics also had the killer move do not care, and could completely ignore the crazed demon agreement.

the three crazed demon eccentrics were wary of fang yuan and were on guard, but fang yuan did not actually want to attack them.

at least, he did not want to attack now.

“this is already the third time i am inside crazed demon cave. i hope there will be some gains!” fang yuan’s main target for this trip was still limitless’ true inheritance.

not long in the future, heavenly court would definitely hold the central continent refinement path convention to restore fate gu.

at that time, there would definitely be a huge battle involving gu immortals of the five regions!

in this battle, no matter how powerful fang yuan became, he could not control the situation. any venerable methods could easily topple the situation.

fang yuan had already realized this in the previous life.

the best example was duke long.

duke long was unmatched, but he was nothing against venerable methods. limitless demon venerable bound him instantly and made him unable to even budge for a long time. it was because of genesis lotus immortal venerable’s method that duke long got free from the bindings and regained his freedom.

fang yuan’s plan was that in this life, he would not only actively increase his strength but also gather some venerable true inheritances, if he could trigger venerable methods, it would be the perfect support in his plan to destroy fate gu!

and the most reliable clue was here — crazed demon cave!

fang yuan’s timing was also perfect.

his current strength had already risen a lot. although he only had rank seven cultivation on the surface, he had already advanced to rank eight, even if the three crazed demon eccentrics went against him, he could quickly counterattack without any worry about his safety.

moreover, after some time, longevity heaven’s bing sai chuan would awaken. his awakening would have a huge influence on longevity heaven and the whole northern plains gu immortal world.

were fang yuan to come to northern plains at that time and make a big commotion, he might have to face longevity heaven led by bing sai chuan, which would be hard to deal with.

not immortal guided the way ahead while secret schemer accompanied fang yuan and conversed with him.

fang yuan followed the two eccentrics deep into crazed demon cave.

crazed demon cave had nine layers.

the first layer was the most external layer, it was also the scene fang yuan saw from high in the sky.

the second layer was an incredibly hot land of burning rocks.

the third layer was covered in white fog, ferocious beasts moved in the fog and there was also the fog city. it was extremely dangerous.

...

every layer had completely different environments, demonic sounds spread from the deepest ninth layer to the whole of crazed demon cave at every set interval of time.

when the demonic sounds spread, all beings went crazy and would start killing each other, creating extreme chaos.

the deeper one went, the stronger the demonic sounds became.

but the method created by the three crazed demon eccentrics could defend against a portion of the demonic sounds’ might.

however, what fang yuan used was not this method. before he came here, he had modified the previous method and the new method had extraordinary effects, it could be considered an advanced version.

after all, his current rule path attainment level was at great grandmaster.

while the demonic sound was active, the activation of immortal killer moves would be greatly affected. this was because the demonic sounds were chaotic dao marks, insanity was only the side effect.

the three moved down the curved pathways before finally reaching the seventh layer, which was also the third lowest layer.

back then, fang yuan’s endpoint had been this layer.

the three crazed demon eccentrics similarly were stopped here for several hundreds of years. it was because they were stuck at this barrier without any breakthrough that they took in chu du and fang yuan.

however, their gains were also a lot.

the seven layers they explored had scattered traces of limitless demon venerable’s inheritance.

the three crazed demon eccentrics researched these clues and were able to roughly deduce the scene at the final layer, although they had never been there.

fang yuan’s sight was filled with dazzling light.

all sorts of colors emanated from the rocks, soil, and grass in this place.

this was dao mark light.

when the density of dao marks reached a certain level, they would let out this kind of brilliant radiance naturally.

in this seventh layer, every grain of soil and every piece of rock was a quasi-rank nine immortal material! the extremely unfortunate thing was these dao marks were chaotic and could not be used.

“fang yuan, after you.” secret schemer gave way.

“ever since the previous failure, i have reflected on it and gained much insight.” fang yuan laughed heartily as he walked in the front.

secret schemer and not immortal glanced at each other before following fang yuan closely.

in the recent period of time, fang yuan’s reputation shook the world, but how much strength did he truly have?

three crazed demon eccentrics were not sure, and this situation was the best chance to ascertain it. secret schemer and not immortal’s attention were gathered on fang yuan.

fang yuan walked leisurely.

the first ten steps were like strolling in sunshine.

twenty steps, he was relaxed.

thirty steps, his expression started to become serious.

forty steps, he was beginning to pant.

fifty steps, he looked exhausted.

over sixty steps, fang yuan stopped for a breather.

secret schemer looked at not immortal while not immortal also looked at secret schemer, both saw shock in each other’s eyes.

the countless conflicting dao marks needed to be overcome to move in this place. the three crazed demon eccentrics’ furthest limit had been over ten thousand steps, but they had rested again and again before continuing. if they were to move without resting like fang yuan, they would at most be able to walk forty-fifty steps.

“the terrifying thing is that fang yuan walked over sixty steps but it is obvious he has not used all his strength and is still at ease!”

“just this alone has surpassed us three. but where do his limits lie?”

thoughts surged up and down in the minds of not immortal and secret schemer.

but in fact, fang yuan had sovereign immortal body, he simply did not suffer any conflict from dao marks, so the exhaustion was only his disguise and act.

fang yuan would rather put up a show because he wanted to awe the three crazed demon eccentrics while also hiding his abilities.

fang yuan was a vigilant person who liked to keep his secrets hidden, if he could keep his cards under the table, he absolutely would not reveal them lightly.

“as expected of fang yuan.”

“right, such strength makes us three feel ashamed about ourselves.”

fang yuan narrowed his eyes: “you don’t need to be modest, i have been reborn several times and have many memories. the three crazed demon eccentrics have a famous reputation, you all have your own unique methods that even i have a high opinion of.”

not immortal and secret schemer were shaken inwardly.

fang yuan’s words had deep meaning, they could be taken as praise but also taken as a warning — i have been reborn, i am familiar with your methods, don’t make an enemy of me!

the three continued to walk forward.

the deeper they moved, the harder it became, and the more the pressure increased.

“we will save a lot of effort by relying on our respective path’s dao marks on the upcoming paths, fang yuan, let’s split up for now.” not immortal said.

he chose to walk towards the front-left where there were relatively more rule path dao marks, since he cultivated rule path.

not long later, secret schemer also bade farewell, he chose to walk the path with more wisdom path dao marks.

fang yuan naturally could move in a straight line, but he did not do so, instead choosing to hide his skills. he carefully chose a path to walk.

the two eccentrics saw this and had their own thoughts.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1864 Oh Fang Yuan, You Are Dead Mea

Crazed Demon Cave’s seventh layer was quite large, and it felt even more huge in Not Immortal and Secret Schemer’s perception.

Because they had to think carefully for every step they took while also enduring the conflict from countless dao marks.

The more they walked, the more difficult it became. This difficulty further widened the sense of distance they felt.

Fang Yuan moved like a normal Gu Immortal would for some time, while feeling some sympathy towards Not Immortal and Secret Schemer’s situation.

“If I didn’t have the sovereign immortal body, I would have to choose a dao mark path as well. But this dao mark path will keep on becoming narrower; there are many choices at the start, but the deeper you go, the fewer choices you have.”

Fang Yuan walked for a while before stopping.

His path was cut.

The path ahead was filled with dao marks of other paths.

Fortunately, after passing this section, the path ahead had the dao marks Fang Yuan selected.

Fang Yuan discreetly glanced at Not Immortal and Secret Schemer.

These two were already left behind by him and were walking with a lot of difficulty.

Similarly, these two were also paying attention to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan clenched his teeth as he continued to move forward.

He pretended to be in a lot of difficulty, stopping at every step. After a while, he finally conquered the difficulty and once again walked the dao mark path that suited him, his face revealing a relaxed expression again.

“These conflicting dao marks are nothing to me. Instead, it is the acting that is more energy consuming.” Fang Yuan smiled bitterly in his mind.

Not Immortal and Secret Schemer glanced at each other from far away.

Fang Yuan’s strength was still above their current estimation!

In that small section, although Fang Yuan moved with difficulty, his speed was still fast. Were Not Immortal to be in the same situation, he might have spewed blood!

These two became slower the more they walked and even their hearts became heavier.

The surrounding dao marks pressured them constantly, making it very hard for them to move. Not Immortal was already spitting blood while Secret Schemer’s face looked yellowish purple.

After a while, the two had no choice but to stop.

They had reached their limits.

Fang Yuan was still moving in front, his expression looked much more exhausted than before. But it was obvious he still had a lot of strength left.

“Fang Yuan is truly a monster!”

“Sigh, he has many venerable inheritances, he is someone who has won against Heavenly Court repeatedly. It is not strange for him to have this achievement.”

Not Immortal and Secret Schemer conversed secretly, they sighed while feeling helpless.

“Then, let’s watch him from here. I want to see how far he can walk!” Secret Schemer snorted coldly.

Not Immortal hesitated for a moment before asking: “Do you think he can walk out of the seventh layer and enter the eighth layer?”

“How is that even possible?” Secret Schemer denied immediately, not even thinking of the possibility. But shortly after, he said with a heavy voice: “This possibility is not high, there are at least tens of thousands of steps before someone can walk out of seventh layer. The distance we have walked currently is not even ten percent! Fang Yuan is indeed powerful and is a rank seven demon that seldom appears in a hundred or even a thousand years. But in the end, he is not at rank eight, I even feel that only a venerable can get out of the seventh layer and enter the eighth layer.”

“Venerable...” Not Immortal thought and said: “Should we tell Fang Yuan of the clues that several venerables came here?”

“Yes.” Secret Schemer nodded: “Wait till Fang Yuan reaches his limits, we will tell this information to him after we return.”

Secret Schemer witnessed Fang Yuan’s strength and admitted Fang Yuan was stronger than him. Informing Fang Yuan of this information might spur Fang Yuan’s fighting spirit and make him stay in Crazed Demon Cave, accompanying the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics to break through this place together.

Fang Yuan walked for a while before pausing slightly.

“This was the place where I saw Secret Schemer the previous time.” Fang Yuan sized up his surroundings but did not see any traces.

Back then, Fang Yuan remembered the dao marks here were mainly of metal path and earth path, but it was completely different now.

Fang Yuan was not surprised because the dao marks in the seventh layer could transform.

Every time the demonic sounds start from the ninth layer, they will spread to the eighth layer, then to the seventh layer, all the way to the first layer.

When they reach the first layer, the demonic sounds would be sealed by a formless force, not spreading to the outside world and affecting other beings.

Fang Yuan continued to walk forward.

Secret Schemer and Not Immortal stopped on their spots, watching his receding figure from the distance.

When Fang Yuan crossed Secret Schemer’s furthest record, this wisdom path Gu Immortal’s eyelids twitched.

Despite him expecting this situation, when he saw this happen for real, he could not help feeling a deep sense of loss.

“I was surpassed.” Secret Schemer heaved a deep sigh inwardly: “I am the head of the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics, the person who explored the furthest. I have lived here for hundreds of years and have engrossed myself in researching this place, I never expected to be surpassed by Fang Yuan so easily.”

Envy and even hatred, as well as anger towards himself, bitterness, sadness, and all kinds of emotions surged in his heart.

Not Immortal’s feelings were much better than Secret Schemer, after all he was the one with the worst performance among the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics.

Seeing Secret Schemer’s expression, Not Immortal heaved a sigh and was about to comfort him when his expression changed suddenly.

The demonic sounds started!

“What’s going on?” Not Immortal was pale with fright.

Secret Schemer was also horrified: “How could the demonic sounds appear at this time?”

Not Immortal said: “Your previous deduction was correct, the demonic sound’s timing is already messed up and we can no longer grasp its timing. Quick, let’s retreat! This place is too dangerous!!”

Secret Schemer’s face was already perspiring with sweat, he shouted towards Fang Yuan: “The demonic sound is here, retreat quickly! We can only be safe after exiting the seventh layer.”

Fang Yuan turned around to look at them two.

These two no longer had the secluded cultivator demeanor of the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics, they were panicking and were rapidly retreating.

“It doesn’t look like they are trying to harm me.” Fang Yuan frowned slightly.

Not Immortal and Secret Schemer had no time to choose a path, they could only barely make out the correct direction and retreat towards the outside.

The demonic sounds had just started and the dao marks here were already restless. Even more terrifying was when the demonic sounds truly resonated, there would be a wild tsunami of dao marks in the seventh layer! Immortal killer moves would immediately break upon activation. At this time period, even Duke Long would be in grave danger if he was here, he would be as weak as a baby and his death would be an unchangeable outcome.

The seventh layer had already become a forbidden land that devoured everything, only a venerable might be able to contend it.

The two eccentrics used all their methods and staked all their strength. They were spewing blood as they retreated.

“Quick, we are almost out of here!” Secret Schemer’s eyes shone with wild joy as he looked ahead.

“I cannot go on!” Not Immortal crashed onto the ground.

Secret Schemer said through clenched teeth: “Persevere!”

The two had a very close relationship, Secret Schemer disregarded the danger and carried the unconscious Not Immortal.

At the moment of danger, his true nature was revealed.

Secret Schemer kept on moving, finally charged out.

His seven orifices were bleeding, his face was pale and green, he was blacking out time and again, and he felt as if his whole body was weighed down by heavy lead.

However, he did not dare to rest, the demonic sounds had just started, the seventh layer had become a dangerous zone and there was only hope for survival by returning to the sixth layer!

The demonic sounds had begun to spread and the warning alarms were ringing louder and louder in Secret Schemer’s mind. He clenched his teeth and exerted his final trace of strength to drag himself and the unconscious Not Immortal to the sixth layer.

“Wait, where is Fang Yuan?” Before leaving the seventh layer, he took the risk to take a look behind.

“Wha?!” His eyes widened as if someone had struck the back of his eyes.

He was stupefied!

Fang Yuan had not retreated, but instead had moved even deeper.

“You, you, you!” Secret Schemer could not make up any words in his agitated state.

Fang Yuan heard the sound and turned around to look at him, smiling: “It was already too late for me to retreat from where I was. But I have a life saving secret technique so I have a slim chance to survive. There is deadly danger in exploring here and I have already prepared myself mentally, so no worries. Secret Schemer, I hope we have the opportunity to meet again!”

Secret Schemer was silent, he wanted to say ‘Oh Fang Yuan, you are dead meat’, but was unable to speak it out.

In the end, he said: “Fang Yuan, we will definitely meet again!”

These words had deep meaning.

On one hand, he was encouraging Fang Yuan, hoping he could persevere and not give up trying, maybe, there was a hope for survival. On the other hand, he was also foretelling himself that as he continued to explore like this, he would be trapped in a situation like Fang Yuan’s sooner or later, and they would meet again in death.

Fang Yuan ruminated and smiled: “This Secret Schemer is indeed friendly and loyal.”

In the five hundred years of his previous life, Secret Schemer was like this. He did not want to go out of Crazed Demon Cave, but Not Immortal and Pang Shan were pulled into the five regions chaotic war.

To protect his companions, Secret Schemer left Crazed Demon Cave.

Although he only had rank seven cultivation, his wisdom path attainment was very deep, he became a huge problem for Central Continent and Heavenly Court.

The Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics were secluded cultivators and did not have any blood relation, but their friendship was extremely deep, even surpassing many righteous path Gu Immortals.

A man is not a stalk of grass or a tree with no feelings. These three with a common goal lived together in seclusion for hundreds of years and helped each other, their relationship had already reached the point of staking one’s life for another.

Fang Yuan looked at the swaying dao marks ahead, his expression was calm and at ease!

Even if these dao marks formed into a tsunami from the turbulence, it had no effect on him.

Sovereign immortal body, non-conflicting dao marks.

Fang Yuan was instead much more relaxed than before because Not Immortal and Secret Schemer had already left.

He smiled lightly and walked forward with ease.

He looked at the dazzling and grand dao mark waves in front of him. This was truly the most extraordinary scene in the world!

In the five regions and two heavens, there were many extraordinary sights; some were majestic, some were elegant, some were mighty, some were exquisite. Including both his previous lives and the present life, Fang Yuan had almost traveled the whole world, his vision was broad, he had plenty of experiences and seen many extraordinary things.

But right now, those magical scenes in his memories were all inferior to the waves of dao marks in front of him.

“If I leave my inheritance in the future, I will definitely record this scene and pass it to the later generations.” Fang Yuan thought.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1865 New Dao Mark, Venerable Paths!

Crazed Demon Cave, sixth layer.

The two heavily injured eccentrics were collapsed on the ground. Secret Schemer was kneeling and healing Not Immortal, disregarding his own injuries for the moment.

Not Immortal slowly opened his eyes, he was dazed at first before coming to his senses shortly after as he thanked with great joy: “I actually escaped, leader, you saved me once again!”

He then asked in doubt: “Where is Fang Yuan? Wait a second, he didn’t retreat in time?”

Secret Schemer smiled bitterly: “No. He is still at the seventh layer. But, his parting words were right, it was already late for him to retreat from that distance.”

Not Immortal was astonished, and after a long while, he sighed: “This is life, who could have imagined that the mighty Fang Yuan would perish here.”

Even though Fang Yuan’s reputation was so illustrious, Not Immortal did not think he had much chance of survival.

Because Not Immortal knew the terrifying might of Crazed Demon Cave!

Secret Schemer had calmed down, his expression was a little bizarre: “It might be unbelievable but I have a strange feeling that Fang Yuan can survive. Although my rationality tells me it is impossible and I also can’t deduce any way for him to survive, I still have this feeling inside me.”

“Leader, you are a wisdom path Gu Immortal.” Not Immortal was also dazed.

“Does every feeling of a wisdom path Gu Immortal have to be correct?” Secret Schemer shook his head bitterly: “Maybe, this is only my hope for Fang Yuan? He is so strong, far stronger than us, the whole world is shaken by him and even Heavenly Court is unable to deal with him. But such a character is going to perish inside Crazed Demon Cave. Sigh, maybe his ending will be our ending in the future. I must be feeling empathetic.”

Not Immortal was silent.

After a good while, Secret Schemer broke the silence: “Let’s go! Let’s retreat and rest properly. When the demonic sounds stop completely, we will go to the seventh layer to search for Fang Yuan.”

Not Immortal nodded despite him knowing Fang Yuan had almost no chance of surviving.

He stood up with difficulty but his body staggered and fell.

Fortunately, Secret Schemer held him in time.

Secret Schemer supported him and the two moved forward slowly while resisting the penetrating demonic sounds.

The path ahead was covered in darkness.

The two gradually merged into the darkness, both were moving while staggering.

They were completely unaware that in the seventh layer, Fang Yuan was still alive and had even made a new discovery.

“This is a new type of dao mark?” Fang Yuan’s gaze brightened in surprise.

In the dazzling dao mark waves, he started to discover some brand-new dao marks.

Fang Yuan was no longer the same as before, he had a great improvement in every path and had inherited several venerable true inheritances. His vision had broadened greatly.

But right now, he was certain he had never seen this kind of dao mark.

This was a completely new dao mark!

“These dao marks were originally still, because they were too low in quantity and scattered everywhere, they were quite inconspicuous. But right now, due to the demonic sound, all kinds of dao marks are in constant movement, and also because of the conflict of different dao marks, dao marks of similar paths are beginning to unite. This increased the size of these new dao marks and made them easier to discover.”

Fang Yuan rapidly deduced the reason.

When the demonic sounds had just started, all kinds of dao marks were mixed and woven randomly, complex and colorful.

After the demonic sounds had rang for a period of time, dao marks of each path gathered together and formed a united color. It was much clearer and more magnificent than before.

In front of Fang Yuan, metal path dao marks were wriggling around like a giant golden python. On his left, the soul path dao marks were even larger, they were like dark clouds as large as a city wall and were pushing forward grandly. Beside Fang Yuan’s feet was that brand-new dao mark, it was like a brook that was flowing gently.

Fang Yuan stopped and observed it carefully.

Not long later, his face was filled with astonishment.

From the new dao mark, he ‘saw’ blades and swords, he ‘smelled’ axes and halberds, he ‘felt’ hammers and spears, he ‘heard’ darts and arrows...

Fang Yuan’s expression was solemn as he pondered: “This new dao mark represents a brand-new path. This path is quite grand, it actually contains blades, swords, axes, halberds, and other weapons. If someone creates this path in the future, it will definitely encompass sword path and blade path. This new path’s battle strength will be very strong, and it also clearly has many profundities of human path.”

But short after, Fang Yuan shook his head: “However, who knows how many generations it will take and how long is needed to create this path.”

“Maybe, someone has the thought and the foundation to create this path, if he or she can witness this scene, it will definitely be a huge help to him or her. Or perhaps, no one in the world will have this thought, this path will always be hidden like a treasure chest buried deep underground and there will never be anyone to open it.”

Fang Yuan did not have any feeling of regret.

This situation was normal in the Gu world.

There was a common saying, ‘talent is often overlooked due to a lack of opportunity, everyone needs a scout to excavate their talent’. In fact, an exceptional path needs talented people to unearth it.

Fang Yuan did not want to use this to create a new path.

He already had his hands full with the paths he cultivated. Moreover, creating a new path required an extremely huge amount of time and energy. He did not have such spare time.

Fang Yuan continued moving forward.

Along the way, he saw many new dao marks.

Some dao marks had gathered into a ball, round and smooth; Fang Yuan seemed to smell light scent of grass from it, but when he smelled carefully, it felt like the aroma of food.

Fang Yuan made a guess, was this the rumored pill path dao mark?

There was also a patch of dao marks that were spread on the ground like a carpet. It was clearly a similar kind of dao mark but lights interwove on its surface to form mountains and rivers at times, and at times, form birds and animals.

When other dao marks came flooding, this patch of dao marks became like leaves in the wind and flew away, lightly attaching onto the surface of the other dao marks. It did not affect these foreign dao marks nor did its tiny self crumble apart. It was truly mystical.

Fang Yuan’s heart shook slightly the moment he saw this: “If I am not wrong, these are painting path dao marks!”

He had the intention to take these dao marks. But the demonic sounds were ringing now and he had no method to capture the dao marks.

“Fang clan has Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritance and that Immortal Gu House Thieves Den. If I use it, can I steal the dao marks here?” Fang Yuan’s heart was moved as he gained an inspiration.

Immortal materials were common in Crazed Demon Cave but they had no value at all.

It was because the dao marks in these immortal materials were chaotic and of every path.

The immortal materials were useless but not the dao marks!

Fang Yuan used the plot against him to his own advantage and dealt with Fang Di Chang. The current Fang Di Chang was his clone.

Fang Yuan had plundered almost all the information about Fang clan from Fang Di Chang’s soul. It naturally included Thieves Den.

This was indeed Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s Immortal Gu House, but it was very damaged because it involved theft path which Fang clan was not proficient in. When Fang clan obtained this Immortal Gu House, they had not obtained its complete contents so they had not been able to restore it.

The present Thieves Den only had one ability, that was to use a theft path immortal materials as the catalyst, the theft path dao marks in the immortal materials would be consumed instantly and the dao marks in the outside world would be stolen.

The stolen dao marks would be attached to these theft path immortal materials. In the end, these immortal materials would be filled with disorderly dao marks from every path and have no more value.

This was similar to the situation in Crazed Demon Cave.

Thieves Den had the ability to steal the outside world’s dao marks but did not have the method to use them. This was the main reason Fang Yuan had not thought of seizing Thieves Den.

“But this situation is different here.”

“When these identical dao marks gather together, I can use Thieves Den to create immortal materials of the respective paths.”

“These immortal materials would have identical dao marks and should be usable.”

Fang Yuan’s chest started to heat slightly at this thought.

If this idea worked, then he would possess a channel to create endless rank eight and even rank nine immortal materials!

How enormous was this wealth!

Even Fang Yuan could not estimate it.

The created immortal materials could not only be used in transactions and Gu refinement, they could also be used to comprehend the respective paths. For instance, using these new dao marks to create painting path, pill path, and other paths’ immortal materials, these immortal materials were great reference for creating the corresponding path.

“But, similar dao marks can only gather during the time when the demonic sounds appear.”

“At this time, there is an extreme risk in activating immortal moves. The dao marks of the immortal move can very likely turn chaotic because of the identical arrangement of the dao marks, it would fail and lead to backlash.”

“There is no need to talk of Thieves Den, I might not even be able to bring it out. It is not the sovereign immortal body, it will suffer conflicting force if brought out and shatter!”

Fang Yuan calmed down.

There were huge technical difficulties in completing his idea.

His current foundation allowed him to look down on the world, but he still did not have any certainty.

Fang Yuan let out a sigh and gave up on this thought for the moment, continuing to move forward.

He began to move faster.

No matter what the dao marks ahead were, they were all harmless like a light breeze to him.

Not long later, he saw dream path dao marks.

Crazed Demon Cave could be said to have all the different types of dao marks, even dream path dao marks were included.

Fang Yuan stopped cautiously and probed before finding that the dream path dao marks were similarly harmless to him.

These were only dao marks and not a dream realm. To the sovereign immortal body, it was just a kind of moving immortal material.

If it were a dream realm, Fang Yuan would have to make a detour.

Fang Yuan moved in a straight line, his path unimpeded.

The ringing of the demonic sounds gave him some trouble. Fortunately, he had created an outstanding method, this killer move was specially created and could last for a long time when activated. Although with the disturbance of the demonic sounds, the long term effect became short term, everything was within Fang Yuan’s tolerance range.

Even if his mind was eroded by the demonic sounds and he went into a killing spree, this land had no beings that could threaten him.

Even if he were to crash onto a boulder, the sovereign immortal body’s constitution would guarantee his safety.

There were irregular and turbulent multicolored waves in the surrounding; at times, they were like a huge tsunami, at times, they were like a group of running horses, at times, they were like a waterfall, and at times, they were like birds flying around. And Fang Yuan was moving in the middle of these.

Were the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics to see this scene, their jaws might drop from the shock.

This was not toppling their common sense, this was directly shattering it!

Fang Yuan moved deeper, reaching the depths that the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics could not even imagine.

When he finally reached the eight layer’s entrance, he exclaimed lightly and paused.

He actually saw three paths!

One path was filled with golden light, luck surged around it.

One path was dark and horrifying, killing intent filled it.

One path was humble and plain, giving a virtuous aura.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone as he understood: “These three paths are probably the traces of past venerables. These paths are filled with luck path, soul path, and earth path dao marks, they should belong to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, and Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable respectively!”

These three venerables had been here!

The mighty demonic sounds and the chaotic dao marks formed a horrifying situation, the might was so powerful that it could wipe out almost any Gu Immortal without leaving even a trace behind.

But the dao marks in these three paths were incomparably firm. Even though all kinds of dao mark currents were colliding, engulfing, and crashing into each other, the dao marks in these three paths stood still. It was just that some dao marks were peeled off at the very edges like they were residue or debris.

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes slightly.

He knew he possessed the sovereign immortal body which had non-conflicting dao marks so he could come here, it was like he was cheating.

But venerables were different!

Dao marks of venerables conflicted, they could come here because they had charged forward forcefully.

This was the supreme power of the three venerables!

The Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics' talents and attainment levels were rarely seen in the world, but they still needed to look for a path to walk on.

But venerables did not need to.

Wherever they walked on was a supreme path in itself!

Fang Yuan was not surprised at finding that venerables had come here, he had already somewhat predicted it, in fact.

After all, Limitless Demon Venerable was a person of the Olden Antiquity Era, the third venerable in history after Primordial Origin and Star Constellation. His Crazed Demon Cave had lasted to this day, although it was secluded, if the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics could find this secret, what about others?

As the supreme beings among Gu Immortals, these venerables were terrifying existences. It was logical for them to discover this place.

Only ignorant and naive youngsters would think that priceless inheritances, treasures and legacies that no one has ever discovered before would be found specially by them.

Humans were ordinary, but every person was unique. If you could have such a fortuitous encounter, why couldn't others have it?

“But, why are there traces of only these three venerables?”

“Why did the paths left behind by these three venerables only appear near the entrance of the eighth layer?”

There were some doubts in his mind, but Fang Yuan did not stop and jumped through the eighth layer's entrance.

The darkness in front of him passed in an instant, at the next moment, Fang Yuan landed on solid ground.

“How could this be?” Fang Yuan was dumbstruck.

Crazed Demon Cave's eighth layer showed a scene far surpassing his expectation, there was no similarity to the seventh layer at all.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1866 Eighth Layer, Heaven Path

This was a vast grassland.

Green grass, blue sky, and white clouds.

There was no sun in the sky but it was bright.

There were many beautiful wild flowers that were in full bloom.

Strong flowery fragrance floated in the wind and brushed across Fang Yuan’s face along with a light breeze.

Fang Yuan was stupefied.

“This is Crazed Demon Cave’s eighth layer?” He was astonished.

According to the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics’ deduction, Crazed Demon Cave’s last three layers should be the same as the seventh layer’s scene, with chaotic dao marks everywhere. The eighth layer’s dao marks scale would definitely be bigger than the seventh layer’s. And in the ninth layer was the immortal formation arranged by Limitless Demon Venerable, the core of this immortal formation was the legendary rank nine Immortal Gu — Derivation!

But after Fang Yuan entered the eighth layer, he discovered this was actually a small world.

“Did I enter a blessed land?” A thought surfaced in Fang Yuan’s mind.

But he denied this guess quickly.

When he used investigative methods to inspect his surroundings, a subtle change appeared in his expression: “This world doesn’t seem ordinary, it is not a normal blessed land or grotto-heaven. This world is a little... frail.”

Just as Fang Yuan was thinking, he heard a loud crackle.

A giant tear spread in the sky like lightning, spanning across the whole land.

At that instant, Fang Yuan’s hairs stood on end as warning signals rang loudly in his mind!

He felt an intense threat from this giant tear, he was certain that as long as he was touched, he would die. Even if he used reverse flow protection seal, he might only last for a few breaths of time.

Fortunately, although the tear was extremely fast, it did not focus on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan dodged with ease when he heard crackling sounds.

“This is the sound of a small world! It is crumbling apart and is about to perish.” Fang Yuan sized up everything with a cold and aloof gaze.

That giant tear was enlarging and spreading continuously. The small world seemed to be cut into two and would soon split completely.

The blue sky, white clouds, grassland, and the flowers were all devoured by the tear!

However, there was nothing in the tear, as if it was a peerless vicious beast that was in perpetual hunger.

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk slightly: “This is phantom path’s strength, a void tear!”

Seeing this, he quickly used his methods to hide himself.

The tear spread towards him, Fang Yuan did not dodge and instead threw himself in.

He entered the tear but did not suffer any destructive attack.

When the void tear had just begun to spread, it was extremely dangerous. But after its might was spread, Fang Yuan was barely able to shelter himself inside.

The small world was becoming smaller and smaller while the void tear was growing bigger and bigger.

Fang Yuan flew higher up along the tear and soon left the boundaries of this small world, arriving at the outside world.

“This is!” His body and mind shook at the sight.

He was like a water bug that had suddenly arrived in a vast ocean. This ocean was the void!

This void was vast and wide with no limits to its boundary. Fang Yuan was an extremely insignificant existence inside it.

But he was not alone.

Alongside him were countless worlds!

These worlds were like multi-colored air bubbles: some were just forming, some had grown firmly, and some were being destroyed.

That small world Fang Yuan was in earlier was being destroyed. In just a short period of time, only two crescent shaped fragments had remained of it.

Fang Yuan’s mouth opened slightly but was unable to say anything from the shock!

He suddenly realized this was the true appearance of the eighth layer.

The seventh layer had countless dao marks while the eighth layer had an infinite void. And in this void, countless worlds were being born and destroyed!

“Eh? This!” Fang Yuan caught a strange movement.

The small world he was in earlier had already been destroyed completely, leaving behind only a long white thread.

This thread could not be destroyed by even the void, it was extremely tenacious.

It was a dao mark!

Although it was only a thread of dao mark, it was extraordinary and twinkled with dao mark light.

“What dao mark is this?” Fang Yuan had never seen this dao mark and observed it with undivided attention.

It was very obvious that this dao mark was beyond extraordinary.

Because that small world had its own heaven and earth, so it had space path, living beings moved, so it had time path, there were grasses and flowers, so it had wood path, there was land, so it had earth path, there were clouds, so it had cloud path.

But these dao marks no longer existed as they were destroyed by the void, only this translucent white thread-like dao mark remained.

From this dao mark, Fang Yuan saw space path, sensed time path, tasted wood path, and felt cloud path.

“What path’s dao mark is this? It actually has a kind of all-inclusive capacity?” Fang Yuan was confused, when he suddenly thought of an answer.

“I got it, this is heaven path!”

“Dao marks of the Heavenly Dao!!”

He had felt strange when he moved in the seventh layer: he saw all kinds of dao marks including dream path, as well as other completely new dao marks. But there were two kinds of dao marks missing.

One was human path and the other was heaven path.

Fang Yuan had seen human path dao marks, but this was the first time he was seeing heaven path dao marks.

“Other dao marks are all destroyed, only heaven path dao marks remain... What is this indicating?” Fang Yuan stared rigidly at this heaven path dao mark.

The thread-like heaven path dao mark seemed to be floating in the wind, it twinkled with dazzling white light, and its movement deeply attracted Fang Yuan’s gaze.

Fang Yuan was cautious and did not attempt to make a move on this dao mark.

He followed the dao mark, after flying for a while, there was suddenly a strange change in the void ahead of him.

Currents surged and a vortex formed instantly, swallowing this heaven path dao mark.

The dao mark held on for a while in the void vortex before collapsing.

At that instant, the void vortex was dyed in all kinds of colors, forming a multicolored rotating disk.

The vortex rotated for a long while, and with a light sound, it suddenly burst.

The void in this area resumed its calm. But a blue-white air bubble had suddenly appeared out of thin air.

This air bubble was extremely small at first, only the size of Fang Yuan’s little finger. But soon, it expanded rapidly.

Fang Yuan used investigative methods to check and discovered to his shock: this blue-white air bubble was a newly created small world. The land in this small world was expanding rapidly,the sky was spreading, everything was undergoing dramatic changes following some profound and mystical law.

After dozens of breaths of time, this small world had already expanded to a size that Fang Yuan could enter.

The small world’s growth speed had slowed, everything was gradually stabilizing inside.

Fang Yuan entered it.

This small world was no longer like what he saw before. Clouds were drifting in the sky, islands were floating in the air, and countless huge green vines spread and interwove into a net that surrounded this world.

“It is the same heaven path dao mark, but this small world’s appearance has changed a lot.” Fang Yuan’s mind jolted, he was about to comprehend something but was not able to grasp onto it, like it was separated by a barrier.

Fang Yuan had an intense premonition that as long as he grasped this inspiration and comprehended it, he could obtain a huge increase in strength. And this increase was a qualitative increase!

So, he fixed his gaze on these small worlds, observing their birth and destruction.

His body and mind was absorbed into it, he was completely obsessed, unable to free himself.

“Crazed Demon Cave’s seventh layer derives dao marks, and this eighth layer derives worlds!”

“No, deriving worlds is only the superficial appearance, what it is actually doing is deriving heaven path dao marks.”

Fang Yuan carefully observed, usually, after every round of a small world’s birth and destruction, that heaven path dao mark would grow by a bit.

The situation was much more complex in reality.

Sometimes, the void vortex absorbed not just one but three to four heaven path dao marks together.

After these heaven path dao marks scatter, the small world that formed would be more vast and have deeper foundation, growing rapidly.

But after its destruction, it would only leave behind one or at most two heaven path dao marks.

In terms of the total length, the length of the previous three to four heaven path dao marks was no doubt greater than the length of the new dao marks.

“Heaven path dao marks can also be lost.”

“Or maybe, the heaven path dao marks that I have seen still haven’t reached the standard that Limitless Demon Venerable wants.”

“He wants to create heaven path dao marks that match his expectations!”

If so, what kind of heaven path dao marks did he want to create?

Fang Yuan’s mind jolted as he suddenly thought of the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics’ analysis – Limitless Demon Venerable wanted to pursue eternal life, so he settled in Crazed Demon Cave in his later years in search of the correct method.

“Limitless Demon Venerable wants to pursue eternal life, but the Heavenly Dao does not permit it. u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e states, fate Gu determines that every being in the world must die and their soul has to return to the Door of Life and Death.”

What was fate Gu?

Gu were the essence of heaven and earth.

Fate Gu, in essence, was a fragment of heaven path!

“Limitless Demon Venerable wants eternal life but he is unable to bypass the Heavenly Dao. He realized this so he directly targeted heaven path and researched it.” Fang Yuan guessed.

Limitless Demon Venerable had once attacked Heavenly Court, but he was not an otherworldly demon and was unable to destroy Fate.

But he did not give up, instead he worked even harder and advanced forward. He wanted to find out the reason he was unable to destroy fate Gu and wanted to completely understand the truth of heaven path!

Such ambition!

Such methods!

Even Fang Yuan could not help but feel admiration.

“So how do I collect these heaven path dao marks?” Fang Yuan was extremely troubled.

He tried many methods but they were of no use.

He even had a premonition: even if he brought out Thieves Den right now, he would be unable to do anything to these heaven path dao marks.

Thieves Den was only a rank eight theft path Immortal Gu House and was highly damaged at that. And this immortal formation was obviously rank nine, it was even personally constructed by Limitless Demon Venerable.

“I should directly take the immortal formation!” Fang Yuan fell into another dilemma.

Because he did not know how to reach the ninth layer!

The path in the seventh layer was extremely clear, but at the eighth layer, Fang Yuan was in a boundless void without any signs and clues. How would he enter the ninth layer?

Fang Yuan did not know what direction to choose.

He could only drift aimlessly.

Who knew how long had passed, he discovered a world.

“Until now, this is the largest world I have seen. But it looks like it is about to be destroyed. Let’s take a look inside.” Fang Yuan entered this world.

“We pay respects to the sage!!” This world actually had living creatures. When they saw Fang Yuan, they immediately kowtowed excitedly.

“Sage, did you come to create a Dao field to save this world?”

“Sage, please take me in as your disciple!”

These living creatures had misty body with human shapes. They had noses and eyes and they talked without stopping.

“Sage?” Fang Yuan frowned slightly before immediately realizing the huge meaning behind this, “That means there are other sages like me?”

“Yes. There was a sage who wore a green robe and white headband, there were lotuses blooming at his every step, he created the Green Lotus Dao field.”

“Another sage was bare-footed and wore yellow clothes, he was filled with compassion, he saved the Yellow Earth Great World.”

“There was also another sage with a ferocious appearance, he was tall and burly, countless beast roars could be heard from his every action. He created Savage Wilderness Great World!”

These cloud people scrambled to inform Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1867 Spiri

“Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, and Reckless Savage Demon Venerable?” Fang Yuan’s heart jolted.

According to the descriptions of these misty human shaped indigenous people, Fang Yuan quickly matched these three sages with three venerables in history.

All kinds of thoughts flashed like lightning in Fang Yuan’s mind: ‘These three venerables came here? In the seventh layer, I also saw the dao marks path left by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable... that means, at least five venerables have come here.”

Fang Yuan realized a little but was even more confused.

When he saw the three venerables’ paths in the seventh layer, he had a doubt: Only these three venerables came here? If other venerables came, why are there no paths created by them?

“Now, it looks like that although other venerables come here as well, like Reckless Savage and Genesis Lotus, even if they left behind their paths back then, they might have been destroyed by the passing of time.”

Limitless Demon Venerable was a venerable from a million years ago during the Olden Antiquity Era, after him came Reckless Savage and Red Lotus.

In the Medieval Antiquity Era, three hundred thousand years ago. Genesis Lotus, Thieving Heaven, and Giant Sun appeared in succession. Long Hair Ancestor appeared in this era as well. Because he was a hairy man, he lived for a long time and had worked with Thieving Heaven and Giant Sun.

After Medieval Antiquity Era was Late Antiquity Era, one hundred thousand years ago from present. Spectral Soul and Paradise Earth appeared in this era.

After this era was the present age. The Prophecy of Three Venerables stated that Great Dream Immortal Venerable would be born. She would be an unprecedented venerable who would surpass the ten great venerables.

Giant Sun, Spectral Soul, and Paradise Earth left behind their paths in the seventh layer. The paths were actually the traces of them charging in.

They were the most recent three venerables so their dao marks could exist until now.

And the previous venerables, even if they left behind a dao mark path, they were erased because of the passing of time.

Fang Yuan’s doubt was resolved but he had even more questions now.

“Why did these venerables come one after the other?”

“Crazed Demon Cave has way too much attraction to these people.”

“Did these venerables go to the ninth layer after reaching here?”

“The ninth layer’s grand formation should still be working, so if these venerables went to the ninth layer, why didn’t they destroy the formation and take away the rank nine derivation Gu?”

“If they did not reach the ninth layer and stopped in the eighth layer, why did they create their Dao fields or worlds?”

Fang Yuan pondered for a while and decided to go take a look at these venerables’ worlds.

He was unable to find the path to the ninth layer.

When he was in the seventh layer, he had never imagined the eighth layer would have such a grand scene.

Maybe he could find relevant clues in these venerables’ Dao fields or worlds?

Even if there were no relevant clues, even if these venerables did not enter the ninth layer, those worlds could very likely have their inheritances!

Even if there was no true inheritance, as long as there was something left behind, even if it was something insignificant to the venerable, it would be a huge gain to Fang Yuan.

“This is interesting. Do you know where these Dao fields and worlds are?” Fang Yuan asked.

These several human shaped mist shook their heads, expressing they did not know and had only heard of them.

“Sage, we live in this world and have no ability to go out. The outside is too dangerous, we cannot set foot in it.”

Fang Yuan frowned: “Then how did you know this information?”

A human shaped mist replied: “Every set interval of time, the disciples or students of these sages will cross the void and interact with the worlds, either making transactions or plundering. We obtained this information from them.”

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk slightly: “These disciples came from each generation’s venerable, what is their strength? It should be extraordinary considering they are able to travel through the void into different worlds!”

But shortly after, Fang Yuan realized something wrong as he asked: “Since there are a lot of these disciples, why did you address me as sage the moment you saw me?”

A human shaped mist replied: “Because all sages have an appearance like you, but their disciples are of all kinds of shapes.”

Fang Yuan immediately understood: “So it seems there are no humans here, the so-called disciples or students of the sages are probably some other races? Like these human shaped mist people?”

Come to speak of it, this was the first time he had seen these human shaped mists, they were neither wild beasts nor plants, they were not variant humans as well, but they had vague human appearances.

“Sage, please save me!”

“Sage, please make your arrangement and save this world.”

Several human shaped mists kowtowed again.

“Sure, sure.” Fang Yuan smiled as he attacked suddenly.

“Sage!”

“What are you doing?”

“Ahh—!”

Cries of shock and screams resounded in Fang Yuan’s ears for a moment.

In two breaths of time, Fang Yuan captured these human shaped mist. His gaze towards these human shaped mist shone with a captivating coldness.

How could this information gained from just questioning be reliable?

If these human shaped mists wanted to deceive Fang Yuan, it would be too easy for them.

While talking, Fang Yuan had secretly scanned most of the surroundings and immediately made his move at this moment.

He then used soul search methods to inspect them.

But the result was somewhat awkward.

These human shaped mist did not have a soul!

Without a soul, could they still be considered living beings?

Even plants had their own souls.

Fang Yuan was dazed for a moment before realizing: “It seems this small world has no soul path dao marks so the living beings here don’t have souls.”

This was a new and interesting discovery.

In the five regions and two heavens, all living beings had their own soul because of soul path dao marks.

These human shaped mists, however, did not have any.

It was somewhat difficult to search their memories now.

But these problems were quickly subdued by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan obtained all the information grasped by these human shaped mists.

From this information, he saw that these human shaped mist did not deceive him. Their existence was monotonous, after they gained sentience, they always stayed here until this world was on the verge of destruction. Even if the sage's disciples had arrived here and transacted with them, it was only once, the time period was too short and thus the nature of these human shaped mists was also quite simple, with unworldly mindsets.

Fang Yuan also discovered these human shaped mists were not an individual entity but were a part of this world. They could not leave this world.

“These human shaped mists are quite similar to land spirits and heavenly spirits.” A sudden light of inspiration flashed past Fang Yuan's mind.

Land spirits and heavenly spirits were formed from the fusion of obsession of the Gu Immortal and heavenly power, they also did not have souls, but they were sentient and could undergo transactions.

In fact, not only land spirits and heavenly spirits, Fang Yuan also had the Formation Spirit and Dragon Spirit.

The Formation Spirit was born from formation spirit Gu while the Dragon Spirit was a secret creation of the dragonman race.

“Does this mean these human shaped mists are the embryonic forms of land spirits and heavenly spirits? If I can understand their profundities, can I mass-produce land spirits and heavenly spirits?”

Fang Yuan's gaze brightened as he saw the most valuable gain.

However, after about half a day, he looked at this world's destruction with regret.

He really wanted to comprehend the mysteries of the birth of these human shaped mists, but he did not have enough worlds. He had just begun his research and had made a little gain when this world was destroyed.

“No matter, I can continue to search.”

“This kind of world, although rare, still exists.”

“If I can find the Dao fields of those venerables, that would be even better!”

Thereupon, Fang Yuan began to travel through the void and searched everywhere for valuable targets.

Puff!

Pang Shan coughed out a mouthful of blood and took a step back.

He was huge, and this one step firmly stamped on the ground, producing a huge sound. If it were ordinary ground, there would be a deep crater, but in this seventh layer, every inch of soil was a quasi-rank nine immortal material, they were extremely solid.

“I didn't find any traces of Fang Yuan.” Pang Shan said while wiping off the bloodstains on the corner of his lips.

Not Immortal was silent.

Secret Schemer sighed.

The Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics had gathered together now. They were split before as a precaution against Fang Yuan, but now after the demonic sounds ended, they immediately reunited.

On one hand, they felt even if Fang Yuan was alive, he would be at his last breath and could never be a threat.

On the other hand, they wanted to use their greatest effort to save Fang Yuan.

Gu Immortal’s injuries were often very troublesome and difficult to heal.

Not Immortal and Secret Schemer were injured, only Pang Shan had been completely fine but he was also injured now.

It was a bad idea to use investigative killer moves in the seventh layer.

The dao marks here were too concentrated almost like a battlefield killer move. The conflicting dao marks made it hostile to all the paths.

Pang Shan’s investigative range was extremely limited because the dao marks that suited his path was only a small portion among all the dao marks here.

“I know what the seventh layer looks like when the demonic sounds start. Brothers, let it be. Fang Yuan’s hope is...” Pang Shan slowly shook his head.

“Who could have expected Fang Yuan to die like this.” Not Immortal heaved a sigh.

Secret Schemer also felt extreme regret.

They did not have any feeling of having gotten rid of evil, their life goal was simple and similar, they wanted to explore the ninth layer and grasp the derivation formation to thus search for a certain possibility of eternal life.

Fang Yuan’s main body did not come out of the eighth layer even after a long time, and his clones were getting nervous.

Fang clan headquarters.

Divine Bean Palace floated in the air, letting out dazzling jade light.

Right now, Fang clan’s first supreme elder Fang Gong, third supreme elder Fang Hua Sheng, as well as Fang Leng and Fang Yun were watching the place from far away.

The jade light transformed suddenly, changing into countless lightning spheres that exploded in the surroundings.

Rumble...

A chain of explosions sent soil and rocks flying everywhere and created hurricanes.

After the explosions ended, green grass started growing in the sunken and pit-filled ground while young trees started growing at a visible speed, their roots piercing into the soil as they grew into gigantic trees.

This was Divine Bean Palace’s killer move — Myriad Life Spring Lightning!

This killer move was activated smoothly, signifying that Fang Di Chang had control over Divine Bean Palace.

The palace door opened and Fang Yuan’s clone Fang Di Chang walked out with a smile.

“Good!” Fang Gong laughed heartily: “Second elder, you have made a huge contribution.” Although this was somewhat worrying for the balance of the internal factions of Fang clan, it was undoubtedly very good news for the whole clan.

“With this palace, our Fang clan can breakthrough our predicament and rise up for real!” Fang Yun exclaimed jubilantly.

Fang Di Chang smiled: “With this palace, we can no longer be taken down. But there is no hurry, there are still some areas that can be improved in Divine Bean Palace. The most important divine bean soldiers have to be prepared beforehand.”

“No worries, you can take any amount of wood path immortal materials you require from the treasury.” Fang Gong laughed once again, his joy was truthfully coming from his heart.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1868 Respective Progress

This was a barren land with grey-white soil.

The land was dry with many gullies, it had no fertility and not even a blade of grass grew on it.

Fang Di Chang looked at this vast land and scattered yellow jade bean seeds.

Divine Bean Palace stored many bean seeds, it mainly consisted of yellow jade bean seeds, green jade bean seeds, red jade bean seeds, and black jade bean seeds. Besides them, there were also the rather special blue pea seeds and white frost broad bean seeds.

After these bean seeds were planted and cared for a period of time, they grew into all kinds of divine bean soldiers.

Divine Bean Palace’s trump card, divine bean soldier, was not an instant killer move, it required a long period of time before they could form into a sizable number with powerful might.

It was because of this that when Chen Yi suppressed Qing Chou back then and used karma divine tree to influence Divine Bean Palace to fight against Fang clan, he was unable to use this move. Chen Yi could only use soul beasts as a replacement.

Fang Di Chang was currently planting yellow jade bean seeds.

This was the most basic type of seed among all the bean seeds. After they were planted, they grew into yellow bean divine soldiers.

Right now, yellow jade bean seeds were already scattered here.

Fang Di Chang activated Divine Bean Palace, gale blew immediately and formless wind condensed into light-green hoes.

The hoes began hoeing the ground.

After a while, Fang Di Chang waved his hand again, rain started to fall from the sky.

The amount of rain needed to be specific, it could not be too much or too little. It mainly had to moisten this dry land.

The land was moistened, yellow jade bean seeds began to experience a mystical change.

But this change was quite slow, Fang Yuan’s clone activated another method.

The moment the killer move was activated, the land began flickering with emerald-green waves of light that constantly washed the yellow jade bean seeds in the ground like tides.

When the yellow jade bean seeds absorbed these emerald-green waves, their growth speed rose explosively, they sprouted out of the ground and grew firmly.

“According to this speed, yellow bean divine soldiers will sprout after a day and a night.” Fang Yuan’s clone nodded, satisfied.

At his will, he suddenly moved back into the main hall of Divine Bean Palace.

He took a glance at the mural on the wall and saw a change.

The mural had been of a dry land, but at this moment, a small portion of the land was filled with bean sprouts.

“This is a method of painting path. Divine Bean Palace contains painting path Immortal Gu, the land in the mural is not illusory. This is such an amazing method.”

“Planting bean sprouts in this painting can grow divine bean soldiers. After they are constantly taken care of and mature, these divine bean soldiers will leave the mural and arrive in the main hall.”

“The land is extremely barren but it is not a big issue. Not much fertility is required for planting beans, and as beans are planted more often in the future, the fertility of the land in the mural can increase and the soil itself will become a type of an immortal material.”

“The expenditure includes water path immortal materials and wood path immortal materials.”

The former was used to moisten the soil while the latter could increase the growth speed of the bean seeds.

The immortal materials were all stored inside Divine Bean Palace, Fang Yuan’s two killer moves were activated by expending the stored immortal materials.

“This effect is quite good, but the price is also significant. Fortunately, I don’t need to worry about this and can report the expenses to Fang clan.” Fang Di Chang smiled.

Divine Bean Palace had already become Fang Yuan’s possession, Fang clan was kept in the dark and was even helping Fang Yuan in providing resources to cultivate divine bean soldiers.

In the depths of Eastern Sea.

Gu tribe headquarters.

“That will do.” Fang Yuan’s clone Wu Shuai slowly stopped the killer move, his forehead filled with sweat.

In front of him was another batch of new dragonmen.

But these new dragonmen were not just former beastmen, there were also some mermen.

“Many thanks to Lord Wu Shuai for your help, this is my tribe’s gift of thanks, please accept it, senior.” A merman Gu Immortal swayed his tail and slowly floated to Wu Shuai, gifting an immortal material with both hands.

This immortal material was a lump of water that emitted a putrid smell. It was restrained to a lump by the merman Gu Immortals’ killer move. Although the merman’s hands were shaking, this water lump did not move like it was frozen.

“So it is unmoving rotten water. It just so happens that I need it to raise army ants, I will accept it. I appreciate the gift.” Wu Shuai accepted it directly.

He wanted to raise arrow ants, which needed unmoving rotten water.

Ever since he started raising army ants, they were expanding with a horrifying speed.

Other than Fang Yuan investing massive amounts of his resources into this, Gu tribe and the mermen had also helped greatly.

Naturally, Fang Yuan’s clone did not extort them but obtained the resources from transactions.

Wu Shuai used his killer move to convert beastmen and mermen into new dragonmen as a repayment.

“My strength is increasing rapidly every day, the changes are very obvious.”

“Interacting with Gu tribe has proven to be quite good, I even have a connection with the merman race now.”

“Adding on the influence of Qi Sea Ancestor, I have an increasingly deep control over Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.”

Eastern Sea’s Merman Imperial Court was a super force with deep foundations.

This was the sole variant human super force in the world, it received Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s help and was able to develop and continue to exist until now.

Even so, merfolk were under huge pressure from everywhere. Previously, their situation was already unsteady from the suppression of Eastern Sea’s human forces. Now that five regions chaotic war was about to start, the wise people among merfolk began to search everywhere for a survival route for their race.

Once the five regions chaotic war starts, the previous fragile balance would definitely collapse.

The merman race’s future was bleak, as a variant human race, they would definitely become the first target for human forces!

A portion of the merfolk saw the growth prospect of dragonmen and did not hesitate on changing their identities.

This was because the higher-ups of the Merman Imperial Court had always been helping Gu tribe in secret to conceal their traces. They had learned of the dragonman secret of the past from Gu tribe.

After knowing that fate Gu had revealed that dragonmen reign supreme, a portion of merfolk higher-ups brought up this idea.

This was the reason for the merfolk to convert to dragonmen.

“The Merman Imperial Court has already begun investing everywhere for the survival of their tribe.”

“Human forces have also foreseen the chaotic era in the future, they are especially wary against Heavenly Court, I can exploit this wariness.”

“Maybe I can persuade the merman race to dispatch some merfolk Gu Immortals to participate in the war when Heavenly Court restores fate Gu.”

Wu Shuai’s head was filled with such secretive thoughts.

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

The situation was extremely dangerous and permitted no delay.

“Little Du, you really want to do this?” Mountain Cliff City Lord worriedly looked at Fang Yuan’s clone Zhan Bu Du.

Zhan Bu Du raised his head, his eyes shining brightly and his tone firm: “Yes, master! You are heavily injured, and in this situation, we cannot beat that monster. But if we let it run amok, Mountain Cliff City will be completely destroyed! Who knows how many people will die! I can only take the risk to make a breakthrough, as long as I become a Combat Beast Warrior, I can display the complete strength of the arrowtail eagle and get rid of this detestable monster.”

Mountain Cliff City Lord Looked at Zhan Bu Du for a long while, knowing his beloved disciple had already made up his mind and that his persuasion would have no effect. He waved his hand: “Sigh, go then.”

Zhan Bu Du did not hesitate, immediately leaving to begin his immortal ascension.

Mountain Cliff City Lord and others watched him nervously, countless ordinary people were kneeling on the ground and praying silently, cheering on Zhan Bu Du. Many Combat Beast Envoys were staking their lives to delay the monster.

What made them joyous was that the giant monster might be tired, its attacks slowed down.

This was actually the secret manipulation of Zhan Bu Du, the current situation was also a plan that had already been determined before.

“I have a portion of my main body’s memories and foundation, my immortal ascension is practically a certainty. But I still need to act like I am taking a risk, not only to deceive everyone in Mountain Cliff City but also this grotto-heaven’s heavenly spirit!”

The whole process was filled with ups and downs, causing Mountain Cliff City Lord and others to feel their hearts jump. But the outcome was without any mishaps, Zhan Bu Du finally advanced to an immortal, becoming a Combat Beast

Warrior!

Zhan Bu Du then showed his mighty prowess as he defeated the monster.

“Wow! Little Du is so powerful!”

“Little Du, you saved the lives of the whole city, we really don’t know what to say.”

“As expected of our little savior, Little Du.”

“Little Du, you might be the youngest Combat Beast Warrior in history.”

People surrounded Zhan Bu Du and lifted him up, tossing him into the sky and catching him.

Zhan Bu Du became a hero in the hearts of everyone in the city, he had unmatched reputation right now.

Aside from the crowd, the injured Mountain Cliff City Lord looked at this with satisfaction, a sincere smile showing on his face.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1869 Main Body“s Breakthrough

The eighth layer of Crazed Demon Cave was much more vast than Fang Yuan’s expectations.

After he learned there were venerable Dao fields here, he began searching for a long while but he did not get any good results.

Fang Yuan saw the creation and destruction of many worlds and also entered some large worlds, but was unable to find venerable Dao fields.

But he was not without any gains. These days of searching deepened his understanding of the eighth layer.

“There is no such concept as direction in this void, like up, down, left, or right, so it is both finite and infinite.”

“The eighth layer had only been a cave originally, but after Limitless Demon Venerable’s arrangements, it became a boundless area.”

“Perhaps, I am only moving in a small circle over these days. In fact, I might not be able to find venerable Dao fields without comprehending the arrangements here.”

Fang Yuan guessed.

To find his destination in this void, Fang Yuan no doubt needed to raise his phantom path attainment level.

Phantom path was only a minor path, derived from rule path.

However, this minor path had quite an achievement.

Phantom path focused on the illusory and reality, if one could not be hit, they could not lose.

Turning phantom was the signature method of phantom path, when Heaven Overseeing Tower had turned into phantom, it had been extremely secure with no methods able to deal any harm to it besides dream path.

Phantom path also had supreme profundities, just like how one of soul path’s supreme profundities was to cultivate a hundred million desolate soul, like Spectral Soul’s Three Headed Thousand Arms Demon Soul. Transformation path had two supreme profundities, one was to undergo myriad changes as one willed, the other was to gather the power of all paths into one, like myriad beings assimilation transformation.

Heavenly Court’s members offered their own immortal apertures, and whenever they left Heavenly Court, they would be given a phantom aperture for storing immortal essence, Immortal Gu, and other resources.

This phantom aperture was a supreme profundity of phantom path.

And presently, Fang Yuan was in this void where countless worlds were created and destroyed. Obviously, this void was also a supreme profundity of phantom path.

Although phantom path was only a sub-branch of rule path, advancing phantom path attainment level was essentially still rule path true meaning.

But this path held profound depth, just based on Fang Yuan’s current rule path great grandmaster attainment level, there was still some distance before he could comprehend this void.

Since he was unable to breakthrough directly, Fang Yuan considered for a while and decided to try from another angle.

He willed it and activated Cooking Luck Pot, blessing himself with luck path might be able to create a breakthrough.

Although Cooking Luck Pot’s level was rather low and unable to completely influence the main body’s luck, it was still able to change a portion.

At least, Fang Yuan could casually change the luck inside Cooking Luck Pot.

With Cooking Luck Pot, changing his luck was extremely quick and convenient, and Fang Yuan soon completed it.

He inspected his clones’ luck.

His time path clone’s luck was still the same like before. A miniature River of Time-like luck was flowing gently while glistening beautifully. When inspected carefully, there were traces of black qi forming and accumulating continuously on the surface of the river.

Fang Yuan’s dream path clone had the smallest luck, after all, it only had rank five Gu Master cultivation and its aperture was even sealed.

The grandest was clone Wu Shuai’s. Wu Shuai was already a peak rank seven Gu Immortal, had obtained Dragon Palace, and was currently cultivating army ants. Right now, Wu Shuai’s luck was like a roaming dragon with glistening dragon scales and dragon eyes, and sharp horns and claws. There were waves of light-blue water halo around the dragon luck and the dragon contacted the water, this meant he had obtained external help — Gu tribe and merfolk. And there was a giant dragon pearl in the dragon's mouth. The dragon pearl contained a palace, it was actually a shrunken image of Dragon Palace.

Another dragon pearl with a much smaller size was held by a dragon claw. This dragon pearl contained densely packed ants, representing army ants.

The second biggest luck was of clone Fang Di Chang's.

His luck was rather special, it was like a giant tree, its trunk was not thin but was also not extremely thick. The tree crown was verdant and stacked ingeniously to form Divine Bean Palace's shape. Below the ground, the tree roots were tangled with many of them exposed outside the ground — this implied countless ties of Fang Di Chang and Fang clan, an unbreakable deep connection.

Besides these were Zhan Bu Du's and Li Xiao Bai's luck.

Zhan Bu Du's luck was much bigger than Li Xiao Bai's, it was like a strong eagle spreading its wings to fly high.

Zhan Bu Du had just recently become a rank six Gu Immortal while Li Xiao Bai was still at Gu Master level.

Li Xiao Bai's luck was like a flower in full bloom, there was even a thin layer of nectar in the stamens. This layer of nectar was the result of Li Xiao Bai's hard effort in cultivating in this period of time. Outside the flower luck was a butterfly, white as snow, it flapped its large wings and blew cold wind while softly drifting towards the flower.

“This luck indication...” Fang Yuan's brows slightly furrowed.

“Butterfly usually indicates female, it wants to collect the nectar and is also giving rise to cold wind, which means it is of no benefit to the flower.”

“From their size, the butterfly is slightly larger than the flower. The cold wind, however, is vast and powerful, it represents a certain large trend. More importantly, the main element is not the butterfly, the butterfly is only a prologue.”

“Li Xiao Bai's situation is currently good, but the future doesn't look that bright. If there is an unexpected mishap and the cold wind descends, the flower will wither. But the butterfly is so close to the flower, which indicates a fortuitous encounter.”

Clone Li Xiao Bai was all along trying to conquer Profound Literature grotto-heaven, but this grotto-heaven was different from Beast Calamity grotto-heaven because a rank eight Gu Immortal guarded it, Fang Yuan could not use his strength freely like in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

In Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan was free to use strategies and make all kinds of arrangements. But in Profound Literature grotto-heaven, his hands were tied, and to preserve the greatest result and benefits, he could not use most of his methods.

As such, support in the luck aspect became the biggest help that Fang Yuan's main body could give to Li Xiao Bai.

On the spot, Fang Yuan mobilized Cooking Luck Pot to change Li Xiao Bai's luck.

After a while, Li Xiao Bai's flower luck became beautiful red like peach-blossom in spring — it was peach blossom luck![TL Note: Peach blossom luck is commonly used to describe a relationship or marital affair.]

Transforming luck was not random but followed a certain rule.

For instance, after Li Xiao Bai’s luck transformed into peach blossom luck, there was double the efficiency as it ingeniously interacted with the butterfly!

“It will now depend on the clone if he can grasp the opportunity.” Fang Yuan continued to move forward.

Luck was only a kind of a variable, when the true opportunity arrives, it still depends on the person themselves, on whether they had the ability to grasp it or not.

“Hmm?” Fang Yuan’s brows jumped, he made a joyous discovery not long after modifying his luck.

He saw a giant floating fish, it was traveling in the void while swaying its large tail. Its speed looked slow but it was actually frighteningly fast.

This was the first time Fang Yuan had seen a living being that could roam the void and escape the world.

“This is probably a sage disciple that human shaped mist mentioned.” Fang Yuan gave chase.

That grey fish looked like a goldfish. After it saw Fang Yuan, it was extremely shocked and kowtowed quickly: “Yellow Earth Sage’s disciple Little Flower pays respects to sage!”

The giant grey fish’s size was comparable to a whale but it made a human sound, and it was a young girl’s voice.

“Good, good. I have been searching for Yellow Earth Dao field for a long while, lead the way. You will gain benefits as well.” Fang Yuan laughed.

But the giant grey fish shook its head: “Sage, it is not that I don’t want to help you, but I am unable to find the location of Yellow Earth Dao field.”

“What? You were banished?” Fang Yuan frowned.

The giant grey fish shook its head again: “No, no. My cultivation reached a barrier, I bade farewell to my fellow disciples and left Yellow Earth Grand World to travel outside and train myself to make a breakthrough.”

As it said this, the giant grey fish’s eyes looked at Fang Yuan with hope.

If this sage enlightened it, its barrier would be nothing.

But was Fang Yuan that kind of person? He was not willing to engage in any further talk as he immediately imprisoned this giant grey fish and wantonly searched its memories.

“So it was like this.”

“Although these venerable Dao fields exist forever, they are always moving.”

The giant grey fish was born in Yellow Earth Dao field, Fang Yuan saw the rich scene of this world from its memories.

Yellow Earth Dao field was vast, not the least bit inferior to even the sovereign immortal aperture. There was a dense amount of earth path dao marks with a good amount of other dao marks as well. Its immortal material treasury was abundant and had many Gu worms including Immortal Gu. There were also all kinds of living beings, although there were no humans, it was truly a land of treasures.

Even Fang Yuan with his current assets coveted this Yellow Earth Dao field.

“If I can obtain the Yellow Earth Dao field and devour it completely, my assets will increase by at least three times!”

Fang Yuan was refining Immortal Gu on a large scale, the expenditure was huge and had already consumed most of his resources. His immortal material reserve had already shrunken to a serious level.

If he could obtain the Yellow Earth Dao field, it would definitely be a huge replenishment, like a skinny guy becoming obese in an instant.

However, it was difficult to reach the Yellow Earth Dao field.

There were all kinds of beings in Yellow Earth Dao field, and when Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had arranged it back then, he taught everyone with no discrimination.

All these living beings possessed souls, and because Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had left Gu cultivation method, most of the living beings possessed apertures and had started Gu Master cultivation. The outstanding ones among them even advanced to Gu Immortal level, although the numbers were few.

And there were elites among these Gu Immortals as well. These elites had the ability to leave the world, and when they encountered a barrier and were unable to advance further, they would leave the Dao field and travel everywhere to train themselves.

When they left the Dao field and were in the void, they had no way to find the way back home.

But they did not have to worry, when they have the opportunity and break through their barrier, they would see the Dao field and be able to return smoothly.

This was all the information Fang Yuan obtained from the giant grey fish.

This giant grey fish looked like it was easily captured by Fang Yuan, but it possessed rank seven cultivation and was an elite Gu Immortal in the Yellow Earth Dao field.

Fang Yuan frowned even more tightly.

He deduced even more information.

“When the opportunity comes, they can return to the Dao field naturally — this is a saying passed down in Yellow Earth Dao field. Moreover, in the memories of the giant grey fish, many of its seniors returned like this.”

“Looks like Yellow Earth Dao field itself possesses the ability to respond to these beings that have gone outside. Every interval of time, the Gu Immortal elites of Yellow Earth Dao field will go out to train themselves, and when their training is accomplished, the Dao field will pick them up.”

Why was this arranged?

There was an answer in the giant grey fish’s memories.

This was because Dao fields did not coexist peacefully, there were wars between them.

The living beings nurtured by the Dao fields fought each other and tried to invade each other’s Dao field.

“Back then, the venerables probably made this arrangement when they created the Dao fields.”

“But what benefits are there in these beings fighting each other? What goal did the venerables have?”

Fang Yuan shook his head.

He might only be able to get the answers when he entered a venerable Dao field.

Fang Yuan’s gaze landed on the giant grey fish.

He smiled: “Didn’t you want me to enlighten you? Meeting me is your fortune.”

The giant grey fish trembled, it stammered but was unable to say anything, it was frightened by Fang Yuan.

Although it had not been long since it came into contact with Fang Yuan, the giant grey fish was deeply aware that the sage before it was extremely terrifying and possessed a cruel and indifferent demonic nature. He was absolutely not a good person like the Yellow Earth Sage!

Running into him was truly its misfortune.

“Alright, even if you don’t speak, I know your questions.” Fang Yuan had searched all the memories of the giant grey fish and was clear of what its barrier was.

He immediately guided it in concise and easy to understand words.

The giant grey fish’s body stopped shaking gradually as it was immersed in Fang Yuan’s words, temporarily forgetting its predicament.

“Why is there still no breakthrough?” Fang Yuan frowned, he had spoken till his mouth was dry.

The giant grey fish was still muddled.

Although it had intelligence, it was not equivalent to a human.

Fang Yuan was patient as he continued to teach it. By helping the giant grey fish break through its barrier, he might be able to trigger a response from the Yellow Earth Dao field.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1870 I Will Take Responsibility

Profound Litef

rature grotto-heaven.

A warship with five decks was moving on a large river flowing towards the east.

“The jade river spans across the land, reflecting the red jade heart of people! It is hard to imagine the unrivaled talent of Emperor Gu Wen. He could actually write such a verse when he was just seven years old.” Su Qi Han sighed while gazing at the vast river.

She was the current imperial minister’s daughter. She was graceful, beautiful, cultured, and elegant. Besides her beauty, she was most praised for her literary talent. Her mind was filled with poems and had a good knowledge of the historical records, putting most men to shame.

“Young miss, wind has started blowing, you need to be careful of catching a cold. How about we return to the room.” Her maid urged.

Su Qi Han sighed but still stood behind the ship railings and watched the flowing river.

The maid persisted: “Young miss, are you worried about the journey? Wasn’t that thief forced away by you? We have already selected eight of the ten great scholars, can’t we just choose the next two casually?”

Su Qi Han shook her head: “You don’t understand. Choosing the ten great scholars is not just an imperial edict but also concerns my Su clan’s prosperity.”

The maid curled her lips: “Young miss, I don’t understand these imperial laws but you must take your medicine now.”

Su Qi Han smiled bitterly: “What effect can common herbal medicine have on my injuries? It is just to comfort myself, it doesn’t matter even if I drink it.”

The maid stomped her foot: “Young miss, don’t try to deceive me. This herbal medicine has no effect on your injuries, but you’ve always been weak to the cold since you were a child, if you do not drink this warm medicine, your lungs might get damaged. So, you must drink this medicine.”

“Alright, alright, bring it over.” Su Qi Han was helpless against her personal maid, she took the bowl and finished it all.

She had just finished drinking when she heard a wild laugh.

Soon after, a figure jumped out of the water and landed on the deck.

“Who is it?”

“That thief again!”

The ship guards moved immediately and surrounded the person.

But this person was very strong, after a chaotic battle, the guards ended up lying on the ground.

“You are not his match, retreat for now.” Su Qi Han’s expression was solemn as she moved to the front and prepared to fight.

The person had an ugly and ferocious-looking face, he had a large and broad body with his skin having a color of bluish black like a shark, this was the result of using shark skin Gu.

“Miss Su.” He greeted with a wide smile, revealing his sharp teeth which made him look even more ferocious.

Su Qi Han smiled coldly: “Shark Bandit, you lost to me not long ago, was that lesson not enough? You still dare to come back!”

Shark Bandit laughed sinisterly: “Lady Su, I am not your match but that was before you drank that medicine. Don’t you feel your limbs becoming numb?”

Su Qi Han’s expression changed immediately.

“The medicine was tampered with?!” She looked towards her personal maid.

The maid quickly shook her head, her face pale as paper: “Impossible! The medicine had always been in my sight. Young miss, you must believe me.”

“The medicine... cough cough, has no issue. Cough, cough... but the herbs have... cough, been tampered with.” Right at this moment, an uninvited guest climbed the ship rails and stepped on the deck.

Su Qi Han’s brows furrowed tightly, her heart sinking to rock bottom: “Medicine Demon, you are still alive!”

Medicine Demon looked like an elderly man but he was actually only in his twenties. He cultivated poison path and blindly pursued strength, causing him to suffer a backlash which made his whole body aged, internally and externally.

Medicine Demon’s eyes showed deep hatred: “All thanks to your elder cousin, I won’t live for long. But being able to have a taste of Lady Su’s body before I die will be worth it.”

Su Qi Han’s expression paled as she took a step back: “What drug did you give me?”

She felt her whole body beginning to turn numb.

Medicine Demon laughed loudly: “Naturally — the strongest aphrodisiac! It can make the most chaste girl into the most lewd and obscene slut!”

Before he even finished speaking, Shark Bandit pounced forward.

Boom boom boom!

Sounds of explosions rang as Su Qi Han was forced to retreat again and again.

“Young miss, leave quickly, I will hold them back!” At the crucial moment, the maid stood out and sacrificed herself to stall for time for Su Qi Han.

Su Qi Han fell into deep hesitation.

“Young miss, leave quickly!” The maid activated a forbidden technique, her battle strength rose explosively but the outcome would be her certain death.

Su Qi Han cried as she jumped out and ran across the water: “Shark Bandit, Medicine Demon, I will never forgive you. The Imperial Court will also execute your nine generations!”

In a pavilion by the river.

There were two people.

One was Fang Yuan’s clone Li Xiao Bai, the other was his master, Teacher Jiang.

Teacher Jiang gazed at the scene of the river in the night and said to Li Xiao Bai: “Come, write a poem and recite it to me. You have ten steps of time.”

The ten steps referred to the time taken by a normal person to walk ten steps.

Li Xiao Bai’s talent was not as good as the main body’s, but through this period of painstaking effort and training, there was huge progress and he was able to immediately recite two lines.

After a while of thinking, he added another two lines.

Teacher Jiang was silent for a while before shaking his head: “Little Bai, you have made huge progress during this time, but with your talent, you are still lacking to fight for the position of a great scholar.”

“Teacher, I know poem composition within ten steps is Emperor Gu Wen’s test. Emperor Gu Wen created the scholar selection test, the Imperial Court will choose ten great scholars every twenty years. This poem composition within ten steps is the first test for the scholar selection. I have already passed it, teacher, why do you not recommend me to participate in the selection?” Li Xiao Bai asked in confusion.

Teacher Jiang turned around and looked at his favorite student, speaking with a smile: “Little Bai, you don’t know the whole situation. The ten great scholars selection looks like a glorious competition on the surface, but it is in actuality a competition to cultivate future Imperial Court officials.”

“Teacher, you are talking about immortal ascension?” Li Xiao Bai was astonished.

Li Xiao Bai was only acting, naturally. In fact, he already knew about everything.

Fang Yuan’s heaven form killer move was a powerful method to inspect grotto-heavens, even if Profound Literature grotto-heaven had a rank eight Gu Immortal guarding it, it was helpless against the constant inspection by heaven form from outside the grotto-heaven.

In this Profound Literature grotto-heaven, information path was the main path, every time a Gu Master wrote a great literary piece, they would be rewarded by the grotto-heaven.

Originally, this grotto-heaven was filled with many individual forces, with Gu Immortals establishing independent territories. But later, someone called Emperor Gu Wen appeared. This person’s natural aptitude was extremely high and had unsurpassed talent, he became a Gu Immortal at a frightening speed. Later, he made a move against other Gu Immortals, either killing them or making them submit. He created the Imperial Court and put the whole grotto-heaven under his rule.

In his latter years, he created ten great scholars selection to choose the most outstanding talents in the whole world, giving them honor and titles.

The Imperial Court selected suitable people among these scholars and recruited them, giving them resources and raising them to Gu Immortals, before appointing them as officials.

As such, the Imperial Court was the strongest super force in Profound Literature grotto-heaven. Every high ranking official was a Gu Immortal with no exception.

The current emperor naturally was also a Gu Immortal. And the rank eight Gu Immortal guarding this grotto-heaven was the retired emperor from three generations ago.

As it involved the chance of becoming an immortal, the ten great scholar selection looked like a beautiful competition, but the hidden undercurrents reeked with blood.

Every force contended and fought using all kinds of connections and relations, they tried to get the position by hook or by crook.

“Great Scholar Shen who competed against Teacher Jiang was one of the ten great scholars in one of the selections. But his political talent is not outstanding, or maybe, he doesn’t have a powerful background, so he is still at rank five peak stage.”

“This teacher of mine is also the same. He had once been one of the ten great scholars, but was not recruited to be an official.”

“My talent barely meets the standard of the selection. Moreover, I am my teacher’s disciple and have his influence, the Imperial Court won’t like this, even if I am selected, I probably won’t be a high-ranking official. At most, I will only be a junior official who will have to work hard for the Imperial Court and this will delay my cultivation. I have no one to back me up so my cultivation will keep on being delayed my whole life.”

“Teacher Jiang and Great Scholar Shen probably saw this future, so they were not willing to become officials and wandered outside the Imperial Court. One opened a private school while the other roamed everywhere.”

Li Xiao Bai was clear in his mind.

It could not be said Teacher Jiang and Great Scholar Shen did not have a future. If they could solve the mystery of immortal ascension and successfully pass the tribulation, they would also become Gu Immortals.

But this Profound Literature grotto-heaven was small when compared to the five regions, and had very limited resources. Moreover, the colossal Imperial Court controlled almost all the immortal materials, it was extremely difficult and almost hopeless for people like Teacher Jiang and Great Scholar Shen to become Gu Immortals.

Teacher Jiang invited Li Xiao Bai alone to the riverside and conversed with him to persuade this student to give up on the current ten great scholars selection. He was actually showing deep concern.

He knew Li Xiao Bai’s strength was low, although it fulfilled the minimum standard, there was simply no hope.

The ten great scholars selection was a whirlpool which had killed many young scholars. Teacher Jiang had made painstaking efforts to teach and guide Li Xiao Bai, he did not want this student to be implicated and die a miserable death.

However, he did not know Li Xiao Bai was aware of everything, he was even clear of how to become an immortal.

But the show still had to be performed.

Li Xiao Bai asked questions first which was then followed by him expressing his regrets and unwillingness to give up. Finally, he solemnly thanked Teacher Jiang and said he was willing to give up on this selection, and even give up on the future selections.

“This child is worth teaching!” Teacher Jiang felt huge relief and left with a relaxed heart.

Li Xiao Bai moved along the riverside towards the way back home.

“I can become an immortal by myself. But if I rashly undergo immortal ascension at such a fast speed, it will definitely make that rank eight Gu Immortal vigilant. He will definitely investigate and if he finds any clues or even has only a trace of doubt, I will be in a fatal danger.”

This was not the outcome Li Xiao Bai and Fang Yuan’s main body wanted to see.

Fang Yuan had used soul replacement and secretly arranged this clone, Li Xiao Bai, to save time and let the clone open the way, and even gain control of this Profound Literature grotto-heaven alone.

Although this was only a small move, if it succeeds, it would definitely save a lot of Fang Yuan’s time and energy.

Naturally, there was also a backup plan.

When Li Xiao Bai grows to a certain stage, he could cooperate with the main body outside to scheme against the rank eight Gu Immortal.

“But it is too early for that.”

“I can be considered as having established my footing because of Teacher Jiang. I studied hard in this period of time and have gained some fame. But this environment is not enough to continue my progress.”

“If I can be selected as a great scholar, it will definitely be a springboard for me. Unfortunately, I have no power or background, and only have a teacher. I will definitely not have a good ending if I participate in the selection.”

“Actually, joining the Imperial Court is the best cultivation path. The Imperial Court controls most of the immortal materials, even if I become an immortal in the future, it will be hard to achieve anything further without these cultivation resources.”

Li Xiao Bai was lamenting inwardly when his steps paused.

He saw a person lying on a bush in the riverside.

“Miss, what’s the matter with you?” After confirming the surrounding condition, Li Xiao Bai went to help the girl.

When he carried the unconscious girl to the shore, he shockingly discovered this person was actually Su Qi Han!

“What happened?”

“This Su Qi Han is the current high ranking official Chancellor Su’s daughter, and is in charge of this current ten great scholars selection competition. She was actually injured to the point she was unconscious!”

“Chancellor Su is a rank six Gu Immortal, Su Qi Han is also a predetermined future official of the Imperial Court, she definitely has immortal methods to protect her. But she actually fell into such a predicament, this ten great scholars selection’s hidden undercurrents are truly too deep.”

Inside Profound Literature grotto-heaven, men and women could become immortals without discrimination, both could become officials as well, naturally. Many women were even more talented than men.

A large number of all-girls private schools and institutes were spread all over Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

And the ten great scholars naturally were not only males and also included women.

Just as he was thinking, Su Qi Han woke up with a light sound.

“You saved me?” She looked at Li Xiao Bai with a heated look.

Li Xiao Bai thought: “Why is there something wrong with this gaze?”

He nodded his head and was just about to speak.

Su Qi Han covered his lips and turned around suddenly, pressing Li Xiao Bai to the ground.

“This, what is she trying to do?” Li Xiao Bai’s body tensed up, he was a little muddled, what was she playing at?

Su Qi Han sat on his body and began to remove his clothes in a hurry.

Li Xiao Bai was bewildered and said while stammering: “Miss Su, Miss Su, please behave yourself!”

Su Qi Han’s movements paused as her eyes narrowed: “You know me?”

Li Xiao Bai gulped his saliva, his forehead filled with cold sweat: “Miss Su, you are selecting the ten great scholars, of course I know you. Miss Su, I am Teacher Jiang’s student and had parted with Teacher Jiang just earlier.”

Li Xiao Bai was truly afraid, Su Qi Han had rank five peak stage cultivation, he was not her match.

At present, there were only the two of them at the riverside. Su Qi Han was in a strange state, Li Xiao Bai mentioned Teacher Jiang to prevent himself from being harmed.

Su Qi Han took a deep gaze at Li Xiao Bai, an unnatural blush floated on her face as she gave a deep sigh: “It’s too late, your teacher is already far away. Right now, within ten li of distance, there is only you and me.”

“What are you trying to do? Ah!” Li Xiao Bai was struck gently by Su Qi Han and fell into a daze.

This was absolutely not something he wanted.

According to his plan, he could grow stably. But now, he was like meat on the chopping board, others could do whatever they wanted.

If his secret were to be discovered, that would be extremely bad!

Li Xiao Bai wanted to remain clear-headed, but Su Qi Han’s methods were unique. He used all his strength to struggle but could not even budge.

In his dazed state, he felt like he had landed in an icy cave, next, it was like he had fallen into raging waves, moving up and down.

Then, the cave became warmer like a gentle wind had brushed past his face, light rain drizzled as it became more warm and moist.

Finally, he felt like he had turned into a waterfall, with a torrential explosion, he fainted in pleasure.

Who knew how long passed, he woke up slowly.

He was extremely exhausted and a trace of weakness surged in his body.

He quickly inspected the situation and saw his clothes were already torn completely and he was lying inside a cave.

Su Qi Han was in the midst of dressing herself beside him.

“Miss... Miss Su...” Li Xiao Bai barely opened his mouth, he did not even have the strength to speak much.

Su Qi Han continued to put on her clothes without looking at him, her voice was calm: “It has already been three days and three nights since we met.”

“Relax, I...” She paused as she was finally unable to hide the turbulence in her heart, her voice even shaking a little: “I will take responsibility.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1871 Chicken Dinner

Eastern Sea, Gu tribe headquarters.

A grand banquet had already lasted for several days inside the palace.

At this time, servants served platters of delicious roasted chicken.

These were naturally not ordinary chickens, they were immortal chickens of at least desolate beast level. Moreover the ones that Gu tribe’s leader and Fang Yuan’s clone enjoyed were ancient desolate chickens.

After staying here for so many days, Wu Shuai had fully realized the beastmen’s customs — eating a lot, drinking a lot, bold to the point of being arrogant, and enjoying comfort to the point of being indulgent. If you received the beastmen’s acceptance, you were their honored guest, enjoying the best wine and food. If you didn’t have their acceptance, you would forever be despised and loathed, even hated.

At the sight of immortal chickens, the beastman Gu Immortals moved their fingers with salivating mouths.

These immortal materials could not be eaten regularly, they were often used as Gu refinement materials, It was never so luxurious as today.

But based on the historical records, when the beastman race was at its height, these immortal materials could be eaten casually by beastman tribes. They had been extravagant and wasteful.

Gu tribe’s leader grabbed the millstone-sized roasted chicken.

“Lord Wu Shuai, please look.” As he said so, he activated a certain food path killer move.

The killer move activated, Gu tribe’s leader opened his mouth and inhaled lightly, directly swallowing the huge roasted chicken.

Gulp, Gu tribe’s leader’s throat moved up and down as the roasted chicken went down his throat.

His stomach immediately bulged and looked like a pregnant woman.

Gu tribe’s leader rubbed his belly and laughed: “This ancient desolate chicken will need half a day more to be completely digested. During this time, my luck is strengthened. This is my tribe’s food path killer move – Chicken Dinner.”

Wu Shuai nodded his head while praising: “Chicken dinner is such an exceptional ability, to use a food path method to produce luck path effect. From what I see, this luck strengthening emphasizes on the aspect of survival.”

Gu tribe’s leader said in admiration: “Very insightful, senior, that is exactly the case. Based on historical records, when my tribe’s Gu Immortals faced dangerous situations, or a large scale battle royale, this move is the reason they managed to survive.”

Wu Shuai nodded as he tore a piece of the chicken and devoured it: “Let me show you an enslavement path killer move.”

This banquet was of course not simple, it was an exchange of inheritances between Fang Yuan’s clone and Gu tribe.

Gu tribe possessed transformation path and food path inheritances and were willing to exchange a portion of them with Fang Yuan’s enslavement path inheritance.

Gu tribe was already preparing to develop dragonmen, dragonmen were born with enslavement path dao marks and thus there was demand for enslavement path inheritances.

Fang Yuan had no reason to reject it.

He could exchange for the inheritances held by Gu tribe with some contents of enslavement path.

Their inheritances were unique, the transformation path inheritance had the essence of the Olden Antiquity Era and the food path inheritance also made Fang Yuan pleasantly surprised.

Food path was originally created by a beastman Gu Immortal.

Gu tribe had been hiding in the depths of Eastern Sea and had gradually developed a rather complete food path inheritance.

The killer move that Gu tribe’s leader displayed just now was one of the contents of the inheritance – Chicken Dinner.

Because of their nature, the beastmen made their killer move names extremely simple and crude, but their effects were very practical.

Fang Yuan and Gu tribe’s cooperation continued to deepen.

Previously, Fang Yuan helped convert them to dragonman, now, they were exchanging inheritances.

Fang Yuan’s clone Wu Shuai performed the enslavement path killer move, the beastman Gu Immortals in the banquet were deeply moved and cheered repeatedly.

Gu tribe’s leader clapped and summoned a group of female dragonmen: “Lord, please enjoy the dance.”

These dragon women were the female beastmen that had just recently converted, their dance and songs were from the olden era, full of wildness and temptation.

One of the dragon women danced even more flirtatiously.

The dance ended but these dragon women did not leave, instead flocking to Wu Shuai’s side.

“Lord Wu Shuai.” Gu tribe’s leader said with great sincerity: “I noticed you have no servants to serve you, so I am offering these women, I would be deeply honored if you accept them.”

Wu Shuai laughed heartily as he pulled that extremely flirtatious dragon lady to his chest: “I won’t refuse this good intention. My dragonman race has few people, spreading my seed is also an important task. I shall take this one as my wife while the rest shall be concubines.”

Gu tribe’s leader was overjoyed as he raised his cup of wine, everyone present also cheered and celebrated the relationship of two races deepening by another layer.

After the banquet, Wu Shuai took these dragon ladies to Dragon Palace and started “working on his responsibilities”.

Not long later, Fang Yuan’s main body, which was far away in the eighth layer of Crazed Demon Cave, received Wu Shuai’s message.

“Marriage with Gu tribe? This is a good thing.” His eyes shined with bright light.

Wu Shuai taking in a wife and concubines was naturally an alliance marriage. Intercourse with the girls also made Gu tribe stop worrying. In the future, if they had children, the relationship between the two would deepen even further.

“When the time is ripe, I can use the children to quietly take in Gu tribe.”

Gu tribe wanted to cling onto Wu Shuai, little did they imagine, this was all within Fang Yuan’s expectation.

Fang Yuan’s intention was to take in the whole of Gu tribe.

Fighting and killing was only one of the methods available to a mature person, there were many other ways to deal with things.

Fang Yuan intended to use gentle political tricks to swallow Gu tribe. Although this would consume much more time, it was a tactful method that saved as much foundation of Gu tribe as possible and would give Fang Yuan the greatest benefits.

“Gu tribe’s inheritances are truly extraordinary. They are definitely hiding even more outstanding methods. The contents of the inheritances they exchange also had a lot of points worth seeing. Especially the food path inheritance.”

Fang Yuan had the original food path inheritance that was left by the beastman Gu Immortal who created food path, it was legitimate and authentic.

And Gu tribe’s inheritance, that was developed through many generations of modifications, was also exceptional with many creative methods. For instance, the killer move chicken dinner that could imitate luck path effect.

Just at the first glance, this inheritance gave Fang Yuan many inspirations. Fang Yuan sent a command to his time path clone to try deducing in this aspect.

His main body was sitting on the giant grey fish and was still roaming in the void aimlessly.

The giant grey fish’s aura was different from before.

Through Fang Yuan’s repeated enlightenment, even though it had limited intelligence, it could achieve a breakthrough. The bottleneck that had been troubling it before no longer existed.

However, Fang Yuan’s anticipated matter had yet to appear.

Fang Yuan enlightened the giant grey fish to use it to trigger a response from Yellow Earth Dao field.

But so many days had passed and he had yet to even see a trace of Yellow Earth Dao field.

According to the giant grey fish’s words, this was because the timing had yet to arrive.

But Fang Yuan scoffed as he inwardly guessed: “Affinity and timing are just excuses to deceive people. Looks like this Yellow Earth Dao field can act on its own, or maybe there is an autonomous will that saw through my scheme, thus it did not reveal itself.”

“Let’s see how it goes after I continue exploring for some time.”

Several days later.

“Where are you going?” Fang Yuan, who was sitting on the back of the giant grey fish, smiled coldly.

He activated his killer move; a strength path giant hand flew out and grabbed a fat rhinoceros.

“Spare me, sage, spare me!” The rhino begged loudly while struggling but the strength path giant hand held it firmly.

Fang Yuan chuckled and pointed his finger, immediately extracting the soul of the rhino.

Within several breaths of time, he understood all the life experiences of this rhino.

This rhino came from Reckless Savage’s Dao field, and just like the giant grey fish, it had also encountered a bottleneck and left its world to find an opportunity to breakthrough.

Unfortunately, it encountered Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan attacked it without saying anything and captured this rank seven rhino easily.

The giant grey fish witnessed the whole process, its heart shaking in fright from Fang Yuan’s horrifying strength.

“Running into me is your fortune, let me enlighten you.” Fang Yuan gave a malevolent smile.

The rhino’s soul was put back in its body. It had learned this time, quickly kneeling and kowtowing to Fang Yuan.

Several days went by again.

“You can leave, remember to cultivate properly.” Fang Yuan looked at the giant grey fish and the fat rhino.

The giant fish and the rhino said together with trembling voices: “Goodbye, sage!”

“Try to return as early as possible, I will come back again.” Fang Yuan smiled.

The giant fish and the rhino trembled fiercely, only when Fang Yuan completely disappeared from their sight did they stop kowtowing. They glanced at each other, both rejoicing madly at surviving from fatal danger.

Naturally, Fang Yuan’s parting words that implied he would come back became a giant shadow that shrouded these two’s hearts.

Crazed Demon Cave, seventh layer.

Secret Schemer took a step forward cautiously with a pale face.

This was already near his limits.

“Let’s rest for a while.” Secret Schemer had no choice but to do this.

He sat down cross-legged and turned into a rock statue to rest.

Not Immortal and Pang Shan rested behind him.

After a while, Secret Schemer opened his rock eyes and stood up.

“Leader, let’s return.”

“Yes, demonic sounds are irregular and with no set pattern, we cannot predict them now. Moreover, there has been no demonic sound for some time. This location is too risky.”

“Yes, wasn’t Fang Yuan a lesson for us?”

Not Immortal and Pang Shan reminded.

Secret Schemer sighed and nodded helplessly: “Alright, let’s leave.”

Fang Yuan’s death had made the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics somewhat downcast.

But just as Secret Schemer was about to turn around, he suddenly opened his eyes and remained still.

“Leader, what’s... ah!”

“Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan? Is that you!”

Not Immortal and Pang Shan looked at Fang Yuan walking slowly towards them.

“It’s me.” Fang Yuan nodded.

“This is great, you didn’t die!” Not Immortal shouted.

“But why didn’t we see you?” Secret Schemer asked in confusion.

Fang Yuan nodded again: “That is because I went to the eighth layer and received the reminder left by a venerable.”

“Eighth layer?!”

“A venerable’s reminder?!”

The Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics were shaken.

“Yes, I will tell you in detail later. But in short — Fate must be destroyed to obtain eternal life.” Fang Yuan made up a story as he showed a sincere expression.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1872 Fighting Thousand Transformations

Western Desert.

Fang Yuan was standing proudly on the deck of Myriad Year Flying Warship with his hands behind his back and without hiding his trace.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was like a sharp sword that pierced through the sky towards a light yellow cloud.

“Fang Yuan, you dared to come back!” A woman’s shout spread from the light yellow cloud, expressing the anger and hatred of its owner.

The ordinary looking light yellow cloud was actually an immortal formation.

The formation covered a dream realm, inside which Immortal Gu Mutation and Gu Immortal Dancer Hong Yun were trapped.

Immortal Concubine Qing Lan was maintaining the formation.

Immortal Concubine Qing Lan had rank seven cultivation and was a concubine of Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

Back then when Fang Yuan had been traveling in Western Desert and was chased by Feng Jiu Ge, he ran into Dancer Hong Yun and pretended to make an alliance, trading for Zhen Yuan Zi’s formation path inheritance.

Fang Yuan’s plan was to pretend to leave. Ying Wu Xie had still been in Fairy Cui Bo’s body at that time, he detonated a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body and trapped Dancer Hong Yun and Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s will.

Unfortunately, when Fang Yuan wanted to clean up the battlefield, Feng Jiu Ge caught up to him and he had to retreat.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor had been plotted against and felt something wrong, immediately sending Night Temptress and Immortal Concubine Qing Lan to inspect it.

After knowing Liu Guan Yi was Fang Yuan and feeling helpless against the dream realm, Thousand Transformations Ancestor could only make Night Temptress and Immortal Concubine Qing Lan construct an immortal formation around the area.

In fact, Dancer Hong Yun, who was trapped, here might be Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s concubine, but he did not like her that much. What Thousand Transformations Ancestor was worried about was the mutation Immortal Gu trapped in the dream realm.

This was a rank eight Immortal Gu!

Back then, Thousand Transformations Ancestor inherited a Reckless Savage true inheritance and this mutation Immortal Gu was its core. Without it, Thousand Transformations Ancestor would have a very hard time activating most of the methods and their strength would also be reduced greatly.

Mutation Immortal Gu could not be lost!

Thousand Transformations Ancestor did not have Fang Yuan’s methods and could only learn from Southern Border’s righteous path, confining the dream realm.

The main culprit behind all this was Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan revealed himself now and attacked the formation, it was no wonder Immortal Concubine Qing Lan could not restrain her fury.

But this famous Western Desert beauty did not attack, instead she activated the formation and chose to defend.

“Fang Yuan might only have rank seven cultivation but he can fight rank eights. He also has Myriad Year Flying Warship which has defeated Heavenly Court before, I cannot resist it by myself! The urgent thing now is to defend and stall for time until husband and others arrive.”

Immortal Concubine Qing Lan sent an urgent message for help while controlling the immortal formation with all her strength.

Boom boom boom!

Fang Yuan’s attacks erupted on the formation, the endless silver flying swords rained down like a waterfall.

Immortal Concubine Qing Lan clenched her teeth as she activated the yellow cloud and held on firmly.

Under the ferocious attacks, the yellow cloud started disintegrating, its size shrinking continuously. But this disintegrating speed was quite slow.

Myriad Year Flying Warship had four main killer moves; torrential charge, daybreak sword, daybreak torrent, and myriad year hunting.

Every killer move was a rank eight move, but evidently, the immortal formation that formed the yellow cloud was also at rank eight.

“Fortunately, we reinforced the immortal formation, otherwise with the previous rank seven formation, it would be impossible to block Fang Yuan. This is Myriad Year Flying Warship? It is really amazing!” Immortal Concubine Qing Lan was pale as she had to bear a huge pressure because of Fang Yuan’s vicious attacks.

She had never imagined Fang Yuan to actually attack this place. There had simply been no warning signs.

The formation rumbled as several Gu Immortals teleported to myriad statue desert.

At the front was Night Temptress, the number one concubine of Thousand Transformations Ancestor, along with several other Gu Immortals who were all Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s concubines.

“Where is husband?” Immortal Concubine Qing Lan’s expression changed slightly.

Night Temptress said heavily: “It is not time yet for husband to make a move, the situation is much more complex than this. We received the order to help you defend this place.”

Immortal Concubine Qing Lan shook her head: “With just us, we are probably not Fang Yuan’s match and will not be able to last for long.”

A female immortal scoffed: “Qing Lan, what are you afraid of? This formation is a rank eight...”

Boom!

Right at this time, a loud sound spread and almost half the yellow cloud disintegrated instantly.

The female immortals inside the formation were pale.

Night Temptress screamed: “What are you waiting for? Reinforce the formation, quick!”

The female immortals stopped quarrelling as they used all their strength to control the formation and defend against Fang Yuan’s attacks.

Fang Yuan was still standing on the deck, his gaze flickering sharply.

Myriad Year Flying Warship had made big contributions. In the River of Time, it had killed Qing Ye and Li Huang who were rank eight experts, especially the latter who had extraordinary strength.

But at that time, Myriad Year Flying Warship occupied an advantage, because all its killer moves were amplified to a horrifying level in the River of Time.

On the contrary, Qing Ye, Li Huang and the rest had been greatly suppressed.

This time, Myriad Year Flying Warship was fighting an aerial battle in Western Desert, and without the environment’s amplification, its killer moves only had normal strength.

It was because of this that even when Myriad Year Flying Warship attacked with everything, it was still unable to destroy the yellow cloud.

“This formation isn’t simple, it is a transformation path Gu formation with extraordinary defense as well as having the ability to transport Gu Immortals, it is probably a portion of Reckless Savage’s true inheritance.”

Fang Yuan thought of many things.

His guess was not wrong, this formation was the myriad li adaptation formation of Reckless Savage’s true inheritance, it was a genuine rank eight formation.

A Rank eight Immortal Gu House could fight a rank eight immortal formation, both sides were evenly matched.

However, comparing the person controlling the Immortal Gu House and the Gu Immortals guarding the immortal formation, Fang Yuan undoubtedly won by a margin.

“Someone help me quick, I can’t hold on for long!”

“Ahh! Fang Yuan is too fierce, I can’t endure it.”

“Sisters, hold on, I am coming... Damn it, I am about to lose my defensive position as well.”

The foothold that these concubines of Thousand Transformations Ancestor had was slipping at an astonishing speed.

Night Temptress’s expression was ashen as she exhausted all her strength and coughed out blood, but was also unable to hold on.

Immortal Concubine Qing Lan was soaked with cold sweat. She was unable to understand why she was able to pull Fang Yuan into a deadlock when she had been defending alone, but now when she received huge support, they were failing bit by bit.

The remaining rank six female immortals were sweating madly, their limbs were numb and their fighting strength had already fallen to the lowest point.

Myriad li adaptation formation was indeed a good formation, but it was nothing against Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had time path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment, transformation path great grandmaster, formation path grandmaster, wisdom path grandmaster, as well as the light of wisdom and many methods to make deductions.

Daybreak swords could be used as he liked, and every attack was like a probe filled with deep intentions.

Although there was still a large distance from fully understanding the formation, what Fang Yuan needed to do was to destroy and not study, this was much simpler and straightforward.

“Thousand Transformations Ancestor, you are still not making a move? Can your concubines stop me? You are looking down on me too much and thinking too highly of yourself.” Fang Yuan sneered and spoke.

But he still didn’t see Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

The yellow cloud had already shrunk to a dangerous level, Night Temptress was panic-stricken and said decisively: “Sisters, activate the final method.”

“We are using it this early?”

“What choice do we have other than this?”

“It will be too late if we don’t use it now!”

The female immortals activated their final trump card, the yellow cloud suddenly emitted golden rays, although only a small portion was left of it, it was extremely firm and blocked all the silver flying swords without even budging.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, thinking: “This situation is also within my expectation. Using it so quickly, you are truly incapable! If it were others, they might be perplexed, but I have already understood its context, you are just speeding up your deaths by doing this.”

While thinking this, Fang Yuan immediately stopped daybreak sword and sent a command to his subordinates inside the warship: “Ram it!”

Myriad Year Flying Warship ferociously collided straight into the golden cloud.

Boom!

First collision; golden cloud shook, the female immortals started bleeding from their seven orifices and were struck with dizziness.

Boom!

Second collision; the golden cloud loosened, the female immortals fell to the ground after suffering such a fierce collision. They were panting hard, their faces were pale as paper and their gazes were somewhat dull and blank.

Boom!

Third collision; Myriad Year Flying Warship directly pierced into the golden cloud, the female immortals could not endure such a backlash and many of them fainted immediately.

The formation was on the verge of collapsing, Fang Yuan retreated inside the warship instead.

“Master, should we capture these female immortals to use them as hostages to negotiate with Thousand Transformations Ancestor in the future?” A variant human Gu Immortal suggested.

Fang Yuan, however, shook his head.

Just as Myriad Year Flying Warship was about to make a fatal move against these female immortals, a female immortal suddenly stood up. Her appearance had changed greatly and shouted: “Fang Yuan, you are going too far!”

“Husband!!” Night Temptress and Immortal Concubine Qing Lan had been barely able to remain conscious, they shouted in surprise and joy.

As it turned out, Thousand Transformations Ancestor had already come over but had disguised his identity and kept it hidden from all the people around him.

He had been patient for a long time and intentionally set up a trap to seize a golden opportunity.

But Fang Yuan simply did not give him the opportunity, he was extremely cautious and did not leave Myriad Year Flying Warship even once. He did not even make a move personally or have the thought to capture these female immortals.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was like a dazzling giant sword as it pierced Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

In the moment of danger, Thousand Transformations Ancestor laughed sinisterly and raised his left arm without dodging.

At the next moment, his left arm expanded rapidly and transformed into a berserk ape’s arm, the giant arm was filled with purple-gold dragon scales.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor raised his left arm as Myriad Year Flying Warship smashed into him with a loud sound.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was thrown back a small step but Myriad Year Flying Warship was sent flying.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank slightly.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was indeed the person who inherited Reckless Savage’s true inheritance, his methods were amazing.

He had only defended just now but it revealed many profundities.

He had not transformed his whole body, but only his left arm. The left arm’s transformation was also not simple, dragon scales and the berserk ape’s arm were used together, multiplying the strength.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was without options against such defense.

But Thousand Transformations Ancestor had not just blocked forcefully, but had used a technique to divert the force of Myriad Year Flying Warship and send it flying.

“Exquisite killer move along with exceptional combat techniques.” It was only one exchange of offense and defense, but Fang Yuan was able to learn a lot of information about Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

At the next moment, he turned Myriad Year Flying Warship around and charged towards Thousand Transformations Ancestor again: “Thousand Transformations Ancestor, you finally came out, now die!”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was furious: “You, a rank seven Gu Immortal, are dreaming of taking my life by relying on an Immortal Gu House? You dare speak such shameless words!”

Fang Yuan scoffed: “Even Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals died from my ship, you will also follow in their footsteps.”

It was okay when Heavenly Court was not mentioned, but at the mention of Heavenly Court, Thousand Transformations Ancestor was even more infuriated: “Demonic scoundrel, you think I am afraid of you? You fool, only knowing to conflict with me but not realizing you have already fallen into Heavenly Court’s scheme. Heavenly Court’s members are probably watching the show secretly.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1873 Heavenly Court“s Ambush

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was boiling with anger and resented Fang Yuan for not realizing the bigger picture.

Fang Yuan knew it clearly as he laughed: “If Heavenly Court comes, I shall kill them. If one comes, I will kill one. If two come, I will kill two!”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s eyes widened and could not help but think: “After winning a few battles, this Fang Yuan has actually become so arrogant, or does he truly have a trump card to make him so confident?”

Back then, Thousand Transformations Ancestor had undergone a myriad tribulation and barely survived from it, he had been recuperating secretly. At that very time, Fairy Cui Bo was killed by Fang Yuan, Thousand Transformations Ancestor sensed this but because of his heavy injuries, he could only send Dancer Hong Yun to inspect the situation. But he was worried his weakness would be seen through by others, so he handed rank eight Immortal Gu Mutation to Dancer Hong Yun to avoid showing weakness if she encountered strong enemies.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was a lone cultivator and didn’t have a friendly relationship with Western Desert’s righteous path forces. He was at his weakest state at that time.

Later, Fang Yuan schemed and trapped Dancer Hong Yun.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor received Heavenly Court’s message and knew Fang Yuan was the true culprit.

But at that time, the dream realm had already entrapped Dancer Hong Yun and mutation Immortal Gu, Thousand Transformations Ancestor had no choice but to send Night Temptress and Immortal Concubine Qing Lan to construct a rank seven immortal formation around the dream realm.

He had not expected this action to expose his state to Heavenly Court.

Since then, Fairy Zi Wei had been actively plotting to kill this Western Desert rank eight in advance so as to prepare for the five regions chaotic war in the future.

Heavenly Court secretly sent its members while Fairy Zi Wei schemed repeatedly to form a trap targeted against Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was a rank eight Gu Immortal and not some ordinary person, he keenly sensed the abnormal situation occurring, but due to his injuries, he could only use schemes to compete with Heavenly Court.

Both sides fought secretly, although Heavenly Court had a wisdom path great expert like Fairy Zi Wei, she was occupied with important matters. Moreover, a mighty dragon cannot suppress the local snake, Thousand Transformations Ancestor had been developing his territory in Western Desert for many years.

Thus, after Thousand Transformations Ancestor sensed their actions, Heavenly Court’s progress became halted time and again.

Fairy Zi Wei noticed this and took the initiative to recruit Thousand Transformations Ancestor, trying to repeat the success of recruiting Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

However, Thousand Transformations Ancestor was different from Old Ancestor Xue Hu, he had Reckless Savage’s true inheritance and was in control of the whole of myriad statue desert. He had a lot of cultivation resources and was able to financially support his concubines to become immortals.

While Old Ancestor Xue Hu was almost bankrupt because of the failure in refining rank eight Immortal Gu Fortune Rivalling Heaven. He accepted Heavenly Court’s financial aid to make a comeback.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor also did not refuse directly but promised Heavenly Court that he would consider it.

Both sides had yet not reached the point of truly getting into an unresolvable conflict.

Right at this time, Fang Yuan suddenly appeared and attacked the myriad li adaptation formation, Thousand Transformations Ancestor was not willing to show up.

But this problematic Fang Yuan immediately broke the deadlock, destroying Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s plan to stall for time.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor and Heavenly Court’s battle was like a bomb. Both sides were restraining themselves to find a much better opportunity to use it.

And Fang Yuan was like a spark that lit the bomb.

The balance was broken, Thousand Transformations Ancestor had no choice but to make his move. Once he exposed his cards, Heavenly Court would definitely attack!

Boom boom boom!

Repeated explosions resounded throughout the area.

Fang Yuan controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship to fight Thousand Transformations Ancestor, after a long while, neither side could do anything to the other.

“Heavenly Court experts are probably hiding in the surroundings and watching, even if they weren’t, this commotion will attract them.” Thousand Transformations Ancestor had this worry since the start, he did not chase after Fang Yuan and urged: “Fang Yuan, Fairy Cui Bo died because she was too weak, she died a worthy death in the battlefield. Our hatred is not irreconcilable. You must be clear that your true enemy is not me, but Heavenly Court!”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor did his best to persuade him while forcibly restraining the fury in his heart.

My situation is like yours, why do we need to fight each other to death? We are both targeted by Heavenly Court, this battle is just giving Heavenly Court an opportunity to strike us! Why do you need to be so irrational?

But Fang Yuan was irrational, laughing madly: “Thousand Transformations Ancestor, you don’t deserve being a rank eight great expert, you are actually such a coward that you want to make peace with me? Hehe, I fear neither Heavenly Court nor you. Die!”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was so furious from hearing this that he wanted to skin Fang Yuan alive.

Fang Yuan stood on the deck again and activated daybreak sword.

The sword lights were like a waterfall with mighty momentum as well as being extremely nimble. The daybreak swords had charged right into Thousand Transformations Ancestor when they split into ten groups, the ten groups passed around Thousand Transformations Ancestor and attacked the myriad li adaptation formation.

“This Fang Yuan is so insidious!” Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s eyes widened, he of course could not let Fang Yuan succeed. If this formation was broken, the female immortals inside would definitely die.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor inhaled fiercely and transformed into a giant.

He then turned his body around, his back part transformed into a giant tortoise shell which blocked five or six groups of daybreak swords.

Then, his neck lengthened like a snake.

His head also transformed into a beast mouth. The beast mouth inhaled and swallowed the remaining swords.

“Giant transformation! Whirlpool tortoise shell transformation! Divine green snake neck transformation! Taotie transformation!” Fang Yuan’s gaze was like fire as he instantly recognized Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s methods.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor used all kinds of transformations at will and with extreme skill, every transformation just perfectly shielded the formation behind him.

Fang Yuan realized immediately: he was unable to break through Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s defense just by relying on Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Not only this, Fang Yuan needed to avoid close combat as much as possible as the other might know many transformations that could restrain Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Myriad Year Flying Warship charging into him was what Thousand Transformations Ancestor wanted to see.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly: “Worthy of being Reckless Savage’s true inheritance, alright, let’s stop here. Thousand Transformations Ancestor, we will meet again someday.”

Saying so, he controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship and activated the killer move torrential charge.

Shining water waves immediately appeared below Myriad Year Flying Warship, the killer move had summoned a phantom image of the River of Time!

Myriad Year Flying Warship borrowed the momentum of the river and left like a shot arrow.

But right at this time, a delicate voice resounded through the skies: “Fang Yuan, where are you going!”

Before the voice finished speaking, four Immortal Gu Houses came rushing from four directions along with four rank eight Gu Immortals.

“There was indeed an ambush!” Even Thousand Transformations Ancestor got a fright, Heavenly Court’s determination was too great, such an enormous force had actually been lying in ambush.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor suddenly realized: “Dangerous! I was intentionally stalling for time but Heavenly Court was trying to use that to make me lower my guard, and later, secretly mobilizing a large number of troops to besiege and even kill me! From this angle, looks like I need to thank Fang Yuan, had he not lured out this force, I might have still been in the dark.”

Although he knew the situation clearly, Thousand Transformations Ancestor did not show any gratitude towards Fang Yuan as he shouted: “Fang Yuan, look, my words came true!”

Fang Yuan’s expression was serious as he maneuvered Myriad Year Flying Warship to dash here and there, but its movement was all blocked by Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan did not try again, instead turning the ship around towards Thousand Transformations Ancestor: “Ancestor, the situation is like this, let us cooperate.”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor pointed at Fang Yuan furiously: “Fang Yuan, I have rarely seen such shamelessness in my life!”

Fang Yuan smiled coldly: “Then you want to continue fighting me?”

Thousand Transformations Ancestor choked and forcibly swallowed this grievance: “Hmph! We shall fight later, don’t be a burden to me.”

“I should be the one saying that. You have quite a huge burden there.” Fang Yuan ridiculed, hinting that the many concubines were Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s weakness.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s expression turned dark: “Stay further away from me, if you cross this line, I will fight you as well.”

He was naturally still wary towards Fang Yuan and did not have even a bit of trust in Fang Yuan. But there was no other choice in this situation, he could only collaborate with Fang Yuan to have a chance at winning.

Just like Thousand Transformations Ancestor expected, Heavenly Court had secretly mobilized a large force to ambush him.

But there was suddenly a change in the situation, Fang Yuan had attacked and fought Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

Heavenly Court’s forces did not expect this and quickly contacted Fairy Zi Wei who was in Heavenly Court. Fairy Zi Wei was exulted and commanded Heavenly Court’s forces to continue lying in ambush and watch the battle from the sidelines, waiting for the opportunity to reap the spoils.

But Thousand Transformations Ancestor was extremely shrewd and pointed out Heavenly Court’s existence while also displaying an extraordinary battle strength.

Fang Yuan seemed to be unable to break his defense and wanted to retreat.

The moment he tried to retreat, Heavenly Court’s troops had no choice but to make a move.

Previously, Heavenly Court wanted to deal with Thousand Transformations Ancestor, but Fang Yuan was a much bigger threat to Heavenly Court. He had finally appeared and Heavenly Court’s members were not willing to let him go.

As such, Heavenly Court’s forces moved out and turned the whole situation upside down.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor and Fang Yuan had no choice but to collaborate, but even those two did not have any hopes for what their joint efforts could achieve.

“Fang Yuan, you ran away last time. This time, let me see where you can flee to.” Prince Feng Xian closed in, intending to make up for his previous loss.

The expressions of Xing Ye Wang and Wei Feng were cold as they flew in without saying a word.

There was another rank eight Gu Immortal as well, it was a woman with a seductive body. She laughed alluringly: “You are Fang Yuan? So handsome, big sister likes you. What a pity, what a pity. Why would someone so handsome end up like this?”

Fang Yuan paid the most attention to this female immortal.

“According to my previous life’s memories, this woman should be Wan Zi Hong. In the previous life, when Northern Plains invaded Heavenly Court, she had awakened. I didn’t expect her to wake up so early in this life.”

Prince Feng Xian shouted: “Attack!”

Four Immortal Gu Houses guarded four directions while the four rank eight Gu Immortals activated their killer moves simultaneously.

In an instant, flames erupted, starlight spread, fierce wind raged, and mist filled the air!

Four rank eight killer moves with grand might overwhelmed the surroundings.

“Come!” Fang Yuan controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship and directly charged head-on.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s eyes widened: “One’s nature can be seen at the crucial moment. This Fang Yuan is truly a demon that can fight Heavenly Court, he has such courage!”

Seeing Fang Yuan charging over, Heavenly Court’s four immortals controlled their killer moves to attack Fang Yuan.

“I’ll dodge!” Fang Yuan laughed sinisterly, lightly turning around his direction and flying behind the myriad li adaptation formation.

“This bastard...” Thousand Transformations Ancestor was dazed before cursing inwardly. Fang Yuan left and the killer moves that were lured by him flew at Thousand Transformations Ancestor.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor needed to protect the formation behind him and could not dodge. He gave a furious shout and braced himself to defend the attacks!

Boom boom boom!

Continued explosions resounded while Fang Yuan flew away within Myriad Year Flying Warship.

“Thousand Transformations Ancestor, thank you, I shall leave now.” Fang Yuan laughed brightly.

Guh.

The aftermath of the battle settled, revealing Thousand Transformations Ancestor covered in soot. When he heard Fang Yuan’s laughter, he immediately coughed out a mouthful of blood.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1874 Overturning Heaven and Earth

myriad year flying warship was like an arrow let loose as it flew to the sky.right as fang yuan was about to charge out of the encirclement, wan zi hong charmingly giggled: “scoundrel fang yuan, you cannot leave.”

at the next moment, the sky above fang yuan suddenly transformed into boundless land, myriad year flying warship had been flying to the sky, but in an instant, it started charging towards the ground.

fang yuan quickly stopped myriad year flying warship.

myriad year flying warship’s speed was too fast, but the phantom river of time below the warship played a crucial role in stopping it.

just before crashing into the ground, fang yuan succeeded in stopping the immortal gu house.

fang yuan carefully checked the surroundings, he saw the sky had change into land, while the land changed into sky, tossing and turning around. the entire sky and earth seemed to have become a rubik’s cube, the sky and earth seemed to casually interchange their positions, it was bizarre and absurd.

wan zi hong floated in the sky while prince feng xian was standing on the ground.

fang yuan felt he had become a small insect in this rubik’s cube, unable to find his way. he seemed to look at the sky but it would change into land at the next moment.

if this was ordinary ground, myriad year flying warship could have charged right through it.

but this ground was evidently extremely firm and was like an impenetrable wall.

“what kind of method is this?” fang yuan asked wan zi hong with narrowed eyes.

wan zi hong replied: “this killer move is called overturning heaven and earth, to be honest, heavenly court specially designed this for you. the reason we brought it out to deal with thousand transformations ancestor was to test it in real battle. hehe, who could have expected you to be so impatient and come rushing over.”

fang yuan possessed fixed immortal travel and also had a relevant killer move, he even had omni-directional travel, he could flee quickly at the critical juncture.

heavenly court wanted to capture fang yuan, so they needed to first restrain fang yuan’s escape methods. previously, they had fixed space gu but it was unfortunately looted by fang yuan. yuan qiong du had collapsed from trying to refine it but did not succeed. heavenly court’s foundation was extremely deep, creating this overturning heaven and earth that could restrain both fixed immortal travel and omni-directional travel.

“fang yuan, it will be difficult for you to escape this time.” prince feng xian, wrapped in flames, charged with surging momentum.

“surrender now, maybe we can still spare your life.” wei feng sneered, wind blades following him from all sides.

the other two rank eight gu immortals attacked thousand transformations ancestor.

“heavenly court mobilized four immortal gu houses to maintain the activation of the killer move overturning heaven and earth. their true battle strength lies in the four rank eight gu immortals.” fang yuan’s eyes shone sharply.

he did not want to have a prolonged battle, there were no benefits in tangling with these gu immortals.

based on just myriad year flying warship and the strength fang yuan revealed on the surface, it was difficult to kill them.

if he wanted to kill them, he would have to reveal his rank eight cultivation.

but like the analysis he made long ago, once his cultivation was revealed, the secret of fang yuan’s sovereign immortal body would also be exposed.

more importantly, did heavenly court’s side only have these people? once they began fighting, even if heavenly court did not have others lying in ambush, they could quickly mobilize other rank eight gu immortals as reinforcements.

if this matter was not handled properly, even duke long, fairy zi wei, and qin ding ling might join the battle.

fang yuan skillfully controlled myriad year flying warship, dodging or blocking the two rank eight gu immortals’ attacks while looking for a path to break through.

bam bam bam...

myriad year flying warship charged in all directions, colliding into the ground repeatedly.

whenever the immortal gu house’s charge was impeded, wei feng and prince feng xian grabbed the chance to bombard it violently.

heavenly court’s forces had clearly gone through a large amount of preparation, these two rank eight gu immortals coordinated remarkably; wind fueled the fire, while the fire increased the wind’s power.

myriad year flying warship was under increasingly greater pressure, but fortunately, there were still many of fang yuan’s subordinates inside. these people were sweating hard as they hurried in repairing and replacing the gu worms in the warship.

through many failures and his wisdom path attainment, fang yuan made out many details: “this killer move, overturning heaven and earth, is absolutely exquisite. it cut this patch of sky and land to countless cubes and could constantly change the position of these cubes. it is only a killer move and not a battlefield killer move, so its activation is extremely fast. its effect is to transform the sky and land of an area while also forming a battlefield that traps the enemy.”

battlefield killer moves needed time to activate. with fang yuan’s vigilance and craftiness, this time was enough for him to make a getaway.

so heavenly court formed this overturning heaven and earth killer move, its activation was extremely fast, fang yuan was not able to escape in time even with myriad year flying warship’s speed. heavenly court had put painstaking efforts in this.

ever since fang yuan had reborn, he defeated heavenly court time and time again. but heavenly court could never be underestimated, when they reacted, they had already prepared a killer move that turned fang yuan’s most proficient movement methods into mere decorations.

“this overturning heaven and earth has flaws when compared to battlefield killer moves. as long as i deduce its essence, i can break or interfere with its operation and escape easily. now... is not the time yet.” fang yuan pondered inwardly. he suddenly changed the direction of the ship and flew towards thousand transformations ancestor.

heavenly court had not expected fang yuan to have a change in plan so suddenly and were caught unprepared for an instance, letting fang yuan draw close to thousand transformations ancestor.

thousand transformations ancestor was protecting the formation behind him, letting the two heavenly court rank eights attack him wildly, but his defense was still firm and stable.

overturning heaven and earth cut the whole battlefield, but they could not cut the area thousand transformations ancestor was in and it became the most spacious piece of land in the battlefield.

seeing fang yuan return, thousand transformations ancestor sneered: “fang yuan, why are you coming back?”

fang yuan smiled: “ancestor, the formation behind you has been restricted as well, right? currently, we both cannot escape, how about we join hands and collaborate? block heavenly court’s attacks for me and stall for time, i will concentrate on deducing and modifying the formation, it won’t be a difficult thing to escape then.”

thousand transformations ancestor spat out: “as if i can trust you!”

fang yuan was surprised, thousand transformations ancestor was not in a hurry and looked like he still had a trump card.

an ordinary rank eight gu immortal would find this situation extremely troubling. but thousand transformations ancestor possessed one reckless savage true inheritance, be it fang yuan or heavenly court, neither could guess what trump card he was hiding.

“you two, none of you shall escape!”

“kill!”

heavenly court’s four immortals charged over together.

fang yuan and thousand transformations ancestor had no way to retreat, they could only deal with whatever attacks were thrown at them.

both sides used killer moves repeatedly, the air burst, wind howled, flames burned, sword lights shone.

thousand transformations ancestor felt an explosive increase in pressure the more they battled, he scolded: “fang yuan, you are still playing tricks! if you keep acting like this, i will fight you as well!”

fang yuan controlled myriad year flying warship and used the myriad li adaptation formation to block or evade heavenly court’s attacks like a slippery eel.

it was inconvenient to get close to thousand transformations ancestor, but the myriad li adaptation formation had a large size and could not be moved once constructed, becoming an extremely good shield.

fang yuan used this shield to block most of the heavenly court’s attacks. the gu immortals inside myriad year flying warship got time to recover and restore myriad year flying warship back to normal.

“ancestor, please continue to persevere, you need to hold on for a while longer. my deductions have already gotten some results, i can deal with this current predicament in just a short while.” fang yuan shouted.

thousand transformations ancestor was not a fool, why would he be willing to act as a shield?

he was deeply aware of fang yuan’s nature, if fang yuan deciphered this killer move, he would definitely escape alone and leave him as a target to attract the attacks of heavenly court’s gu immortals.

so, if fang yuan could truly break this killer move, it would instead be disadvantageous to thousand transformations ancestor!

boom!

thousand transformations ancestor really went to attack myriad year flying warship.

“ancestor, don’t be like this, you need to look at the big picture.” fang yuan called out.

thousand transformations ancestor rebuked: “you are talking about the big picture with me now? without your disturbance, how could there be this current predicament?! didn’t i tell you before that there was heavenly court’s ambush! didn’t you yell that heavenly court was nothing? if one came, you would kill one, if two came, you would kill two, show it to me now!”

fang yuan said earnestly: “i didn’t lie, but heavenly court sent four gu immortals and four immortal gu houses, i have no way to deal with this. ancestor, you really need to consider the big picture, if you attack me, how will you protect those women who love you?”

boom!

prince feng xian’s fire meteor struck and shook the myriad li adaptation formation fiercely, the female immortals inside the formation cried out in fright.

persistent defense would only result in eventual loss, no matter how thousand transformations ancestor transformed, he was only one person and he was dealing with four of heavenly court’s rank eights!

thousand transformations ancestor shouted furiously: “heavenly court, you are going too far! if there is an opportunity in the future, i will definitely pay you back one hundred fold!”

“first, you need to survive today.” wei feng smiled coldly, as he threw an enormous wind blade towards the myriad li adaptation formation.

“your heavenly court doesn’t deserve the reputation of being the righteous path leader!” thousand transformations ancestor shouted furiously.

he needed to defend the formation, so he was in an extremely passive state.

heavenly court’s four rank eights specially targeted this weakness, they had indeed shown no ‘righteous path demeanor’.

“look, what did i say? thousand transformations ancestor, you really need to consider the big picture.” and right at this time, fang yuan made flippant remarks.

thousand transformations ancestor almost coughed blood from anger, shouting hoarsely: “neither of you will die an easy death!”

the battle continued, thousand transformations ancestor starting to feel a sense of helplessness, he was fighting heavenly court’s four immortals almost by himself while also paying attention to that insidious scoundrel fang yuan.

the myriad li adaptation formation was being attacked continuously and was unable to hold on for long.

finally, under wan zi hong’s killer move, a corner of the formation collapsed and revealed the space inside.

“a chance!” wei feng was coincidentally above this gap and saw the female immortals inside the formation.

these female immortals were in a very bad state, they all suffered backlash when the formation collapsed. most of them were already unconscious and only night temptress was barely able to keep conscious and hold on.

“we can use these female immortals to threaten thousand transformations ancestor!” wei feng activated a killer move, turning into a green wind and entering the formation.

“husband, save us!” night temptress’s aura was extremely weak, her face paled as she saw wei feng and shouted in panic.

“stop!” thousand transformations ancestor shouted from outside the formation.

“too late.” wei feng sneered and grabbed night temptress.

boom!!!

a huge sound rang as a large part of wei feng’s body flew out of the formation like a shooting star, leaving behind a trail of red blood.

his head was being held by night temptress, his expression before death was filled with unimaginable horror!

night temptress was letting out rank eight aura and her appearance slowly changed into thousand transformations ancestor.

heavenly court lost a rank eight all of a sudden, the remaining three were shaken: “why are there two thousand transformations ancestors?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1875 Ignoring the Big Picture

the change had occurred too suddenly, catching almost all the people off guard.night temptress actually transformed into thousand transformations ancestor and immediately killed a rank eight gu immortal of heavenly court, wei feng!

this thousand transformations ancestor opened his immortal aperture and waved his left hand, sending all the fainted female immortals inside the formation into his aperture.

his right hand that was still grabbing wei feng’s head exerted strength and crushed it into pieces!

red and white brain matter splattered like a crushed watermelon.

“this is what will become of all of you!” thousand transformations ancestor said through clenched teeth and a vicious expression. his might shook the battlefield instantly.

he was a person who could silently endure. it was because of this nature that he did not make a move personally after fairy cui bo died, instead sending dancer hong yun to probe the situation.

he had arranged this trap meticulously, waiting for someone to bite. the trap had come into effect and heavenly court's wei feng paid with his life as the price, contributing to thousand transformations ancestor's reputation.

“unfortunately, fang yuan did not take the bait.” thousand transformations ancestor glanced at fang yuan with some regret.

this brat was too crafty, he stayed inside myriad year flying warship the whole time, not giving thousand transformations ancestor any opportunity.

heavenly court's three immortals were shaken and infuriated!

the grand wei feng had actually perished right before their eyes.

after the shock and anger, a chill spread in their hearts.

let alone wei feng, even if it were them, they might not have a good ending in that situation.

thousand transformations ancestor had prepared for a long while without making a move, but when he moved, wei feng did not even have the chance to escape.

the chill passed away and heavenly court gu immortals were filled with doubts: “what is actually going on? how could there be a second thousand transformations ancestor? even if he inherited reckless savage's true inheritance, isn't it too strange for a second rank eight to appear out of thin air?”

fang yuan controlled myriad year flying warship and quietly moved away from thousand transformations ancestor, similarly having a perplexed look: “ancestor, what is going on?”

the night temptress who turned into thousand transformations ancestor sneered: “aren't you someone who has been reborn, even you don't know it?”

“ancestor, you think too highly of me.” fang yuan laughed: “if i could know all the secrets of the world, i would have already become a venerable, why would i be trapped here?”

after denying it, he praised: “ancestor, your methods are indeed beyond ordinary, worthy of the inheritor of reckless savage's true inheritance. you killed a rank eight of heavenly court in one move, you were much more efficient than me. this junior is full of admiration.”

he instigated hatred on both sides, but had no doubts in his heart.

“the previous thousand transformations ancestor should be formed by myriad statue palace. the real night temptress should be inside the immortal gu house and assisting in controlling it. and the real thousand transformations ancestor disguised as night temptress and stayed with the concubines. on one hand, it was to protect them, on the other hand, it was to use them as bait to deceive others into biting it.”

in fang yuan's first life of five hundred years, during the five regions chaotic war, myriad statue palace had shown its might, thus fang yuan already knew clearly about the secrets of this immortal gu house.

different from other immortal gu houses, myriad statue palace was rather special

— it could transform into all things. this palace could transform into the appearance of every statue created inside it, even copying their innate abilities and methods.

evidently, there was a statue of thousand transformations ancestor inside the palace.

even if fang yuan knew of this, he pretended to be unaware. you don’t know that i know this, when you think i don’t know about your secrets, my knowledge will be my advantage.

this advantage seemed small, but fights between experts were decided by such minor details.

how was an advantage created? it was by adding accumulations like this, bits by bits.

fang yuan fought heavenly court and progressed until now, this was a far better result than the previous life at the same time period. after his rebirth, his step by step progress, changing the past, winning small victories, didn’t all these accumulate to become his advantage?

it was impossible for anyone to succeed without accumulations.

“who among you is the real thousand transformations ancestor!” xing ye wang shouted.

“alright, i will let you know that i am the real thousand transformations ancestor, and he is my twin brother, myriad transformations ancestor.” the real thousand transformations ancestor lied casually.

the myriad statue palace turned myriad transformations ancestor nodded lightly: “heavenly court, you didn’t expect it, did you? you guys wanted to ambush my brother but did not expect to confront two rank eights! i have always cultivated in seclusion and wanted to keep my identity hidden my whole life, but regretfully, this secret has been exposed now. but it was worth it to take a rank eight gu immortal’s life.”

heavenly court’s three immortals glanced at each other, keeping silent. whether thousand transformations ancestor was telling the truth or not, regardless of what the truth was, the power structure of both sides had a huge change now.

previously, fang yuan and thousand transformations ancestor were fighting four rank eights of heavenly court.

now, wei feng was dead, but a myriad transformations ancestor was added. one side lost while the other side gained, both sides were now three against three, and they all had rank eight battle strength.

wan zi hong suddenly laughed: “if i were one of you two, i would have arranged a companion to stay behind in myriad statue desert. like that, the ones inside and outside can respond and help each other. but now, both of you are trapped, myriad statue desert is left unguarded and is free for my heavenly court’s gu immortals to enter. ah, right, i wonder if you have brought myriad statue palace with you? it would really be unfortunate if you left it at myriad statue desert.”

wan zi hong’s words were a threat as well as a probe.

however, fang yuan knew the secret: myriad transformations ancestor was myriad statue palace that was being controlled by thousand transformations ancestor, how could the two separate?

even if heavenly court had sent gu immortals to go to thousand transformations ancestor’s territory, myriad statue desert, that place definitely had no valuable things.

but thousand transformations ancestor’s expression changed slightly, shouting with anger and ridicule: “your heavenly court calls itself the leader of humanity and the righteous path, but this is your style of action?”

even fang yuan praised him inwardly for such acting skills.

thousand transformations ancestor would not be able to conceal the truth for long, although fairy zi wei was not present at the scene, she would be able to deduce the truth soon.

however, just like fang yuan hiding the truth that he knew, thousand transformations ancestor was also trying to fight for every little advantage he had.

although he killed wei feng, he was still in a weak position.

heavenly court was maintaining the killer move overturning heaven and earth, they held the initiative firmly. their remaining strength was still higher than thousand transformations ancestor and fang yuan together.

wan zi hong sneered: “so be it, i will be the main attacker this time, you two support me with all your strength.”

she instructed xing ye wang and prince feng xian.

the two nodded without objection.

based on seniority, wan zi hong was the highest, based on strength, this female immortal was also the strongest.

immortal killer move — blood petals.

wan zi hong went on the offensive, her aura rising instantly.

she did not look like she had made any movements, but blood started spouting out of thousand transformations and myriad transformations.

blood spewed out of their bodies like floating petals and scattered randomly.

although myriad transformations ancestor was myriad statue palace, it had human form right now and thus received the injury of this move.

thousand transformations ancestor quickly changed form and flew out of the myriad li adaptation formation, not to retreat but to counterattack.

myriad transformations ancestor did not follow and stayed to guard the myriad li adaptation formation.

wan zi hong retreated slowly without any change in expression.

prince feng xian and xing ye wang flew out and held back thousand transformations ancestor.

thousand transformations ancestor was unable to close the distance between him and wan zi hong, he transformed again and attacked wan zi hong with long range attacks.

wan zi hong sneered as she used another move – helpless withering.

the petals around her whirled down. thousand transformations ancestor’s attacks were all ruined by these falling flowers.

“thousand transformations ancestor, take this move and die!” wan zi hong shouted and pointed her finger.

immortal killer move – yellow flowers thinning life!

thousand transformations ancestor, who was fighting with xing ye wang and prince feng xian, shivered. his expression changed intensely as his body thinned and his lifespan shrank rapidly.

this yellow flowers thinning life was terrifying, it was wan zi hong’s trump card, and although it was a wood path killer move, it could affect lifespan.

thousand transformations ancestor was struck by this move, he tried many transformations but was unable to break it and could only retreat.

xing ye wang and prince feng xian chased after him, thousand transformations ancestor had no choice but to control myriad statue palace to take them on.

myriad transformations ancestor came over to help out.

wan zi hong sneered as she used yellow flowers thinning life on myriad transformations ancestor.

myriad transformations ancestor’s body, similarly, thinned rapidly, his speed and strength both fell. but he was essentially an immortal gu house and had no lifespan. thus, though he looked miserable, it was not a big issue.

thousand transformations ancestor was truly in trouble.

he was unable to break this killer move, and after repeated attempts, he found some transformations that could delay the effect of the killer move.

but that way, he could not transform casually and his battle strength was greatly restrained.

wan zi hong’s offensive methods were extremely terrifying, it was no wonder she had been recruited by heavenly court back then even though she was a demonic immortal.

in the previous life, wan zi hong lacked immortal gu and could only take the position of a healing gu immortal. this was not her specialty, but even so, she had healed many heavenly court gu immortals and created much trouble for longevity heaven.

however, after using yellow flowers thinning life twice in succession, wan zi hong’s face became extremely pale. for some time, she did not continue her attack and only panted heavily. clearly, these two moves put an extreme strain on her, and the risks were also high. if wei feng had not died, wan zi hong would not have used such a risky battle tactic.

thousand transformations ancestor was suppressed by wan zi hong and was anxious, shouting: “fang yuan, if you don’t move now, it will be too late. if i fall, you also won’t be able to escape!”

boom boom boom!

fang yuan made a move.

but he did not reinforce thousand transformations ancestor, instead attacking the myriad li adaptation formation!

without any gu immortals controlling it, this formation became a still target and was already torn apart by fang yuan in a few short moments.

thousand transformations ancestor’s face reddened with anger and his eyes seemed to spout fire: “fang yuan, you bastard!”

he shouted with utmost fury.

previously, fang yuan had used him as a shield, so be it. later, he had cowered at the side like this battle was none of his business, forget that too.

but what in the world was he doing now?

argh!

he was not attacking heavenly court but attacking his formation?

this was too much!!

was he mad?! did he not know that the enemy was strong while they were weak, why was he not letting the past be bygones and collaborating to fight the enemy?

he was continuing the internal fighting even now, what was he thinking?

saying that he had a pig’s brain was humiliating the pig instead!

was he still not seeing the big picture? not even a little?!

thousand transformations ancestor was exasperated, with such an ‘ally’, even heavenly court’s three immortals felt sorry for him.

myriad year flying warship was like a sharp sword that pierced into the formation. fang yuan had quite a technique in disassembling formations, the myriad li adaptation formation was on the verge of collapsing but did not self-destruct.

fang yuan repeatedly looted the immortal gu inside.

he then targeted the dream realm.

the dream realm turned into a pure dream reality seeker physique body. he then grabbed mutation immortal gu in one hand and dancer hong yun’s corpse in the other before entering myriad year flying warship.

“fang yuan, you thief, die!” thousand transformations ancestor’s eyes were bloodshot when he saw fang yuan stealing his rank eight mutation immortal gu. he left myriad statue palace to fight heavenly court’s three immortals and went to kill fang yuan.

after fang yuan obtained what he wanted, he immediately controlled myriad year flying warship to leave.

but thousand transformations ancestor was truly furious, he gave chase without giving up and bombarded myriad year flying warship wildly.

fang yuan had really bullied him too much, this rank eight gu immortal stared at fang yuan with clenched teeth, wanting to eat fang yuan alive.

thousand transformations ancestor’s speed was slower than myriad year flying warship. but heavenly court’s side controlled overturning heaven and earth killer move to obstruct fang yuan’s path while helping thousand transformations ancestor.

heavenly court’s three immortals also slowed down their attacks, happy to watch fang yuan and thousand transformations ancestor fight to death.

“he is blinded by profits! fang yuan has made thousand transformations ancestor his mortal enemy by stealing his rank eight immortal gu.”

“but i feel like there is something wrong, this is not fang yuan’s style. if i were him, i would never do this.”

“wait a second, did he loot the rank eight immortal gu because he already thought of a way out? is this why he is not afraid? we need to be careful!”

heavenly court’s three immortals conversed secretly, they were not complacent but instead became more vigilant.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1876 Western Desert“s Situation

Fang Yuan secretly transmitted: "Thousand Transformations Ancestor, stop chasing me. I can find a way out of this, I will bring you out and you give me mutation Immortal Gu as the reward, how about that?"

Thousand Transformations Ancestor laughed coldly, he replied: "Hmph, wishful thinking, if you open the way out and return the Immortal Gu, we will spare your life."

After his rage subsided, he thought of Fang Yuan’s action of stealing the Gu, it meant that he had nothing to fear. His intense anger earlier was real, but afterwards, it was mostly just acting.

The myriad li adaptation formation was broken, if Thousand Transformations Ancestor wanted to leave this place, the best choice was to borrow Fang Yuan’s strength.

Even if he could not, he definitely could not let Fang Yuan escape.

If Fang Yuan really escaped, he would be left to deal with Heavenly Court, in the end, he would be overexerted, even if he escapes, this devious demon would ambush and attack him.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor had good foresight, his vision was not limited to just this battle. Thus, he chased Fang Yuan relentlessly, following him closely.

As for Myriad Statue Palace, even if he left it inside overturning heaven and earth, it would only be temporary.

As long as he escapes, he would be able to attack the four Immortal Gu Houses outside the killer move.

The four Immortal Gu Houses maintained overturning heaven and earth, that was the biggest weakness of this move, once they were dealt with or disrupted, Heavenly Court's battlefield that was painstakingly created would have severe loopholes, they would not be able to maintain it.

At once, the three parties of Fang Yuan, Thousand Transformations Ancestor and Heavenly Court chased and escaped, they had many methods that created grand commotions, heaven and earth shook.

Secretly, they were engaging in psychological warfare, they schemed and plotted against each other.

After a long deadlock, the three Heavenly Court immortals' expressions changed.

From outside the battlefield, a large number of people charged in, there were many Gu Immortals including rank eight, they had four Immortal Gu Houses! The palace at the lead was lofty like a mountain, liveliness mixed in its solemnity, its green bricks and golden tiles emitted dense fragrance of plants and trees. What else could it be but Divine Bean Palace?

The one controlling Divine Bean Palace was Fang clan's second supreme elder, Fang Di Chang!

Beside him, there was Fang Gong, Fang Hua Sheng and the rest.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Life Spring Lightning!

Fang Di Chang did not speak, he directly manipulated Divine Bean Palace and shot out countless lightning balls.

The jade green lightning balls landed on Heavenly Court's four Immortal Gu Houses, they shook intensely from the explosions, a large number of vines grew out and infiltrated the Gu Houses.

Heavenly Court immediately went into chaos.

"Ah, Divine Bean Palace!" Seeing that Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's creation was used against them, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals had bloodshot eyes.

"They belong to Western Desert's righteous path!"

"Why are they here?"

"Western Desert's righteous path did not come together, only Fang clan, Tian clan, Dong clan, Shi clan, and Tang clan are here."

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals immediately realized who had arrived.

After Fang Di Chang refined Divine Bean Palace, Fang clan's difficulties were resolved, Fang clan's rise was already unstoppable.

As long as they showed Divine Bean Palace, Western Desert's righteous path would understand reality and change their stance.

Fang Di Chang used this chance to secretly contact Western Desert's righteous path.

To cooperate with his main body, he had to act quickly while keeping it a secret.

Eventually, he only gathered four super clans, Tian clan, Dong clan, Shi clan, and Tang clan.

This level of strength was already enough to change the situation!

Heavenly Court was caught by surprise, their arrangements were strong on the inside but weak on the outside. Divine Bean Palace displayed terrifying might, Heavenly Court’s four Immortal Gu Houses were shaking intensely, they were greatly disadvantaged.

The killer move overturning heaven and earth was also severely disrupted, it could not be sustained perfectly.

"To think it was so convenient!" Fang Yuan laughed loudly as he escaped outside using the exposed route.

"Where are you going!" Thousand Transformations Ancestor chased him relentlessly.

Fang Yuan turned around as he sneered: "You really think I’m afraid of you?"

Myriad Year Flying Warship suddenly turned around as daybreak swords shot out like a torrent.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor shouted in anger but he could not defend against the full power of this rank eight Immortal Gu House, he was forced back into overturning heaven and earth.

He was trapped again.

"I’m leaving!" Fang Yuan laughed heartily as Myriad Year Flying Warship tore through the air, vanishing rapidly.

Western Desert’s righteous path went into a commotion, some wanted to stop Fang Yuan but Fang Di Chang stopped them in a justified tone: "Let Fang Yuan go, he is the enemy of Heavenly Court, it will be helpful to us in the future!"

Fang Di Chang led the allied forces to fight against Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court was in an awkward state now, there was Thousand Transformations Ancestor inside and Western Desert’s righteous path outside.

Xing Ye Wang shouted in anger: "Western Desert’s immortals, you are the shame of the righteous path, you are publicly helping demonic path Gu Immortals."

Fang Di Chang sneered and replied: "The great Heavenly Court is far more shameless than us. You were the ones who took in that Western Desert demoness Wan Zi Hong yourselves, but you want to accuse us instead?"

Xing Ye Wang was stupefied and speechless.

Prince Feng Xian had a cold tone: "Are you really going to stand at odds against us, Heavenly Court, today?"

Fang Di Chang replied: "Not long ago, our Fang clan got into a dangerous situation, your Heavenly Court were the ones who added fuel to the fire, you have great ambitions. Do you really think Western Desert has no intelligent or outstanding people? When the regional walls vanish and the five regions become one, will Western Desert let you treat us as meat on the chopping block?"

Prince Feng Xian snorted coldly, he stopped speaking.

"Hehehe, to think that Western Desert would have such an interesting junior." Wan Zi Hong’s face regained a bit of color as she looked towards Divine Bean

Palace with interest, she said: "We will retreat."

There was no helping it, retreating was the best option.

Heavenly Court retreated with composure and order, they were not anxious.

"No need to chase them." Fang Di Chang said.

This made all of the Gu Immortals let out sighs of relief. After all, they did not want to fight with Heavenly Court to the end, if their losses were huge, the other Western Desert super forces would benefit.

Only Thousand Transformations Ancestor and Western Desert’s righteous path were left.

The door of Divine Bean Palace opened as Fang Di Chang stepped outside, smiling: "Thousand Transformations Ancestor, we have a common enemy. Not long after, the five regions will merge, the Gu Immortal world will face an unprecedented great era. We are willing to join forces with you and resist the enemy, what do you think about that?"

"This person can see the big picture!" Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s eyes shined, he nodded as he remembered Fang Di Chang’s words in his heart: "I will look for you."

"Good, with your help, Heavenly Court will definitely have an even tougher time." Fang Di Chang clapped and he laughed loudly.

"Let’s go." He ordered as Western Desert’s righteous path allied forces left together.

They came quickly and left just as quickly.

But the Western Desert Gu Immortals had extremely excited faces.

Because they defeated Heavenly Court!

This was Heavenly Court!

Only Fang Gong had a look of worry.

He looked at the confident Fang Di Chang beside him leading the army as he, the first supreme elder, became an accompaniment.

He felt immense pressure.

"But so what?"

"Fang Di Chang and I merely have internal conflict. Fang clan’s rise to become the leader of Western Desert’s righteous path and defeating Heavenly Court is an external matter. How can I focus on internal conflict and cause harm to Fang clan? Even if my authority is taken in the future, our Fang clan will still be the Fang clan of Fang clansmen!"

Fang Di Chang knew that even though they had no physical gains in this battle, Fang clan’s rise was already undeniable! Fang Di Chang obtained the greatest political wealth in his entire life!

The clans who came were originally disunited, they were only joined together forcefully. But after this battle, the glory turned into cohesiveness as these five clans started to unite. As for Fang clan, it was the leader of this group that sought benefits!

"Fang clan’s Fang Di Chang, he is truly a formidable person." Thousand Transformations Ancestor watched Western Desert’s righteous path leave as he sighed to himself.

Myriad Statue Palace returned to him without making a sound.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor looked at the directions where Fang Yuan and Heavenly Court escaped, he gritted his teeth: "Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court, just you wait!"

Please go to https://ReadRead/Reverend-Insanity/ to read the latest chapters for free

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1877 Li Xiao Bai“s Promotion

Fang Yuan looked at the mutation Immortal Gu in his hands.

This Immortal Gu had a peculiar shape, it had the body of a longhorn beetle, it had eight spider-like legs, it had a rhinoceros beetle horn on its head, it had cicada wings and two mantis arms. Its tail shined brightly like a firefly, but the light was a rainbow color.

Mutation Immortal Gu was the possession of Thousand Transformations Ancestor, but this was not a problem for Fang Yuan.

After Fang Yuan left the battlefield, he refined this rank eight Immortal Gu during the time he traveled.

There was no need to mention Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s anger after sensing this, Fang Yuan tried several times and found out the effects of mutation Immortal Gu.

This was an offensive Immortal Gu, it had great power, it could mutate a portion of the enemy’s body, it dominated rank sevens and could give huge problems to immemorial desolate beasts.

It could also be used on oneself to add transformations to one’s transformations. For example, if Fang Yuan turns into a tiger, after using mutation Immortal Gu, he could gain two wings on his tiger body, he might get a third eye on his tiger head, he might even grow a scorpion stinger at the end of his tail.

Of course, these were positive mutations.

There could also be detrimental mutations.

For example, the tiger’s stomach might grow an elephant leg that is much longer than the tiger’s entire body. The tiger’s back might gain a butthole, it would be an obvious weakness that the enemy would target.

Using mutation Immortal Gu alone would have mixed effects, it was risky.

Because this Immortal Gu was rank eight, it would trigger rank eight level mutations, there would be huge effects on the body.

Thus, to play safe, he had to use other supplementary Gu worms with mutation Immortal Gu to form killer moves.

Using these moves to amplify oneself was the least risky way.

Other than attacking enemies with mutation Immortal Gu, it could also be used to manage the immortal aperture.

Using it as the core to display a killer move or immortal formation, it would cause more mutations to the lifeforms within the immortal aperture. Ordinary beasts would gradually grow into mutated beasts.

Of course, these mutated beasts could also be crippled, but due to natural selection, they would slowly phase out of existence.

As for those powerful mutated beasts, they would survive and reproduce, creating a brand new species.

Normally, these mutated lifeforms would develop into the specialty resource of a certain immortal aperture, they would not exist elsewhere. If they were well received in the market, this would become the Gu Immortals’ long term income source, they would gain a huge profit from this over time.

"Mutation Immortal Gu has such a comprehensive effect, it should be one of the core Immortal Gu of Reckless Savage’s true inheritance. No wonder Thousand Transformations Ancestor became so nervous after losing it." Fang Yuan thought.

Other than mutation Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan also gained several other Immortal Gu.

Most were transformation path Immortal Gu, there was also a rank seven rule path Immortal Gu — Pass.

This was an insect that seemed like a flightless cockroach, it had the size of a fetus’ fist, it was flat and shining in a metallic color, giving off a feeling of toughness.

Back then, when Night Temptress and Immortal Concubine Qing Lan first set an immortal formation, it was the core of it.

Feng Jiu Ge was hidden nearby, he saw this Immortal Gu and wanted to obtain it.

This Immortal Gu had great value to him.

To think that in the end, this Immortal Gu would end up with Fang Yuan.

"Just these Immortal Gu and Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s methods show how powerful Reckless Savage’s true inheritance is. It is a pity, I can’t act rashly."

Thousand Transformations Ancestor had only gone through one myriad tribulation, his dao marks could not compare to Fang Yuan. But he had many methods and was a person with great endurance and acting skills, Wei Feng was done in by him. This was unless Fang Yuan could lure him into a battlefield killer move.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor still had Myriad Statue Palace guarding him, this rank eight Immortal Gu House had shocking strength, it could transform into Thousand Transformations Ancestor at crucial moments to deceive enemies, it was quite an obstacle.

It was not easy to scheme against him.

Looking at Heavenly Court, they planned for so long and used overturning heaven and earth killer move, they mobilized four rank eights but ended up with no gains.

And most crucially, Fang Yuan could not display his true battle strength.

A little impatience will spoil great plans, if the secret that he had become rank eight gets exposed, the detriment would be huge.

Thus, when dealing with the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics, he was very careful.

Fang Yuan was looking at the big picture.

"The Central Continent Refinement Path Convention is approaching."

"Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world has Longevity Heaven, Southern Border has the ambitious Wu Yong, Eastern Sea is led by my Qi Sea Ancestor identity, Western Desert has Fang clan and Tang clan that I can make use of."

"I can already see the situation of four regions attacking Central Continent."

This was something Fang Yuan had been planning since rebirth.

Finally, at this moment, he could see some results from his work.

Fang Yuan was no longer just a single rank eight Gu Immortal, he had outstanding subordinates, he had many talented people under him.

He was also not just a normal super force, he plotted against the world, using everyone as his pawns to get rid of his biggest obstacle, Heavenly Court.

Heaven’s will made use of him, Spectral Soul made use of him, Red Lotus Demon Venerable made use of him, Chu Du made use of him, Lang Ya land spirit made use of him... but now, he was finally one of the chess players.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

"Did I see wrongly? Why is my student’s name on the list of the ten great scholars?" Teacher Jiang looked at this information, he felt deeply shocked, he was stunned.

"Teacher, are you inside? Your student Li Xiao Bai would like to see you." At this moment, Li Xiao Bai’s voice resounded from outside the door.

Teacher Jiang quickly opened the door: "Come in, tell me, what is going on?"

Li Xiao Bai went through deep consideration and made up his mind, he told everything that had happened that night to Teacher Jiang.

He was very troubled: "Teacher, you need to help me."

Teacher Jiang heard this as he looked at Li Xiao Bai blankly, his expression turned weird, he shook his head in a seemingly smiling expression: "Oh you, I have no idea what to say about this."

In Teacher Jiang’s perspective, Li Xiao Bai had no hope of becoming one of the ten great scholars.

But when luck came approaching, it could not be stopped.

His great luck made even Teacher Jiang feel a bit of envy and jealousy in his heart.

"After the matter, Lady Su Qi Han tested me before informing me that I will become one of the ten great scholars. I received your guidance and did not dare to be arrogant, I quickly rejected her but Lady Su Qi Han made up her mind already, I was helpless against her, after all, the weak cannot contend with the strong." Li Xiao Bai expressed his sadness.

"Your encounter would make everyone jealous, you want to reject it?" Teacher Jiang smiled.

"Teacher, stop making fun of me. I came here to ask you to save my life. I do not have enough talent, becoming one of the ten great scholars would simply push me into the pit of doom." Li Xiao Bai cupped his fists and said.

Teacher Jiang stopped smiling, he nodded: "Yes, you are neither arrogant nor prideful, you can see reality. Clearly, I did not waste my time teaching you. But you are overthinking this, before becoming one of the ten great scholars, if you try to compete for a spot, you will face great danger. But now that you are already one of them, the Imperial Court will defend you. Whoever tries to harm you will also be attacking the reputation of the Imperial Court, do you understand this?"

Li Xiao Bai shook his head: "But I still feel very worried. Compared to the other nine, I am less renowned, people might come after me. Also, after that matter happened, Lady Su Qi Han is also being extremely strict towards me."

Teacher Jiang nodded again: "Even though I am here, I have heard of this junior Su Qi Han, she has immense talent and a prideful nature. Since she wants to take responsibility for you... I am sure she wants to marry you, I mean, she wants you to marry into Su clan."

"She is one of the most famous female scholars, her husband has to match her talent. But she will not act blindly, she wants to test you first, after seeing that you have some talent, she nominated you. In the future, she will pave the way for you and help you to advance even further."

Saying so, Teacher Jiang looked at Li Xiao Bai with a complex expression.

He was also one of the ten great scholars in the past, he was proud of his talent and looked down on everyone. But reality was cruel, there was only one road of advancement, countless people wanted to fight for it.

He could not compete against them, after a long time, even though his reputation spread widely, he was only famous outside of the Imperial Court.

To think that his student who had inferior talent, background, and network would succeed due to immensely good luck!

For an absurd reason, he became Su Qi Han’s man and was greatly supported by her!

Forget about Su Qi Han herself, but she was backed by Su clan, her father was the Court’s Chancellor Su, Li Xiao Bai gained a huge background all of a sudden.

"To speak the truth, I was quite happy initially, but recently, I felt something amiss, I am getting more fearful. Lady Su Qi Han has so many admirers, this matter... cannot be known to anyone else, all of these young talented geniuses will hate me for becoming Lady Su’s lover. Especially after the selection of the ten great scholars, I will need to enter the Court and meet the Emperor, along the way to the Imperial City, what should I do? I am helpless now, I need your help, teacher." Li Xiao Bai sighed deeply.

Teacher Jiang was a little unhappy, he grunted lightly: "Xiao Bai, don’t look down on yourself, you have enough talent, do you think my teaching was a waste? As my student, when others target you, they need to consider my reputation as well. How about this... I will write a few recommendation letters for you, go visit them and they will provide you some help along the way."

Saying so, he paused a bit as Teacher Jiang made up his mind: "You can stay here for a few days, I will impart some of my methods to you."

Li Xiao Bai was overjoyed, he quickly bowed deeply: "This student thanks teacher!"

Su Qi Han wanted him to keep this a secret but Li Xiao Bai did not really care about that.

After the time was right, he immediately told the secret to Teacher Jiang, he seemed to be asking for help but he was actually displaying his own value.

Teacher Jiang was excluded from the Imperial Court, he could not enter the core, seeing that his student had a high chance of getting in, if his student becomes famous in the future, would he forget this valuable teacher?

Impossible!

Teacher Jiang was extremely familiar with Li Xiao Bai’s nature, he was not an ungrateful person.

Even if he wants to disregard him in the future, he would be subject to public opinion, he would not dare to ignore this benefactor and teacher. The higher Li Xiao Bai’s status, the more he would treasure his reputation, and the more he would repay this teacher.

Thinking of this, Teacher Jiang decided to do his best and use all his resources to help this student gain success and status.

His student’s success would also be his own success!

Please go to https://ReadRead/Reverend-Insanity/ to read the latest chapters for free

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, Sacred Eagle City.

In terms of size, Sacred Eagle City was much larger than Mountain Cliff City. Mountain Cliff City was only a sub-city but Sacred Eagle City was one of the main cities.

In the previous life, when Fang Yuan attacked Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, he turned into the bull demon and first landed in this city.

In this life, Sacred Eagle City was currently in a terrible situation.

The entire city turned into a swamp kingdom, yellow soil crocodiles moved around in the swamp, hunting the people in the city.

Eagle Warrior defended this place. he was strong but he was currently heavily injured.

An immemorial desolate eagle had injured him, it was still flying in the sky, if any warrior appeared, it would dive down and attack.

"How could this happen!" Eagle Warrior was bathed in blood, he lay in the mud as he watched his people get slaughtered, he was furious and shocked.

Nobody could imagine that such a large group of fierce beasts would attack Sacred Eagle City all of the sudden.

It was still peaceful earlier, this city was serene and bustling, but in a moment, it turned into a bloody slaughterhouse.

"No, I cannot watch this happen, I need to stop everything!" Eagle Warrior struggled to get up, he wanted to stand but his injuries were too severe, he fell down once more.

As he was about to fall to the ground, a young and muscular arm grabbed onto Eagle Warrior.

"Uncle Eagle, you cannot fight anymore, if you continue, you will die." A youthful voice said.

Eagle Warrior turned to look at the youngster who supported him, he smiled bitterly: "Little Du, thanks for saving my life. But I am the Sacred Eagle City Lord, I cannot watch as the beast calamity continues to cause destruction, I cannot let my people become the food of these beasts."

"Uncle Eagle, let me do it!" Little Du had shining eyes as he spoke with determination.

"You?" Eagle Warrior looked at the injury on Little Du’s chest, he shook his head: "Little Du, you are not a member of Sacred Eagle City, you came here because I invited you to come and tour the city to repay the gratitude of saving my life. You already got injured to save me, you are not these beasts’ match, quickly leave! Go now!"

"No, I am not leaving, I want to fight with you, uncle. Let’s defeat these evil beasts." Little Du shook his head.

Eagle Warrior was moved, he patted Little Du’s shoulder, he said with joy: "Mountain Cliff City Lord had really taken in a good disciple. Why can’t I find a disciple like you? Little Du, you are still too young, you have a brighter future than me, you cannot die here. I want you to promise me something, after you leave here, wait for the Guild’s reinforcements to arrive, then come and retrieve my corpse. Remember, I want to be buried in the garden."

"Uncle!" Little Du’s eyes turned red, tears could be seen in his eyes, he was choked with tears and could not speak.

"Quickly leave!!" Eagle Warrior suddenly exerted his strength and pulled Little Du’s hand away, he flew into the sky.

He turned into a heavily injured silver eagle again as he charged towards the immemorial desolate eagle in the sky.

"The Gu Immortals here are really different from the ones outside, they are willing to sacrifice their lives for mortals." Little Du sighed in his heart, feeling moved.

"But it is useless, this immemorial desolate eagle was nurtured by my main body purposely to deal with you."

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven was not Profound Literature grotto-heaven, there was little restriction here. After Little Du received Eagle Warrior’s invitation, he informed the main body and set up this trap.

This was a great opportunity.

Because Beast Calamity’s true inheritance was split into several portions kept in the main cities of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Fang Yuan’s clone had no chance to get close to those true inheritances with a proper reason.

He wanted to create a chance, but Eagle Warrior personally handed this opportunity over to him.

If Eagle Warrior who was bathed in blood learned that the reason why Sacred Eagle City faced such a calamity was due to himself, who knew how he would feel.

Eagle Warrior was not the immemorial desolate eagle’s match, he quickly fell into a disadvantage.

The immemorial desolate eagle attacked again, about to peck Eagle Warrior to death, when Little Du turned into the arrowtail eagle once again and saved him at the moment of life and death.

"Little Du, why haven’t you left?!" Eagle Warrior was shocked and extremely anxious.

"Uncle, how can I watch you die here? How can I let everyone get into such great danger? Even if I have to sacrifice my life, even if my blood bleeds dry, I will fight till the end!" Little Du said with firm determination.

"Little Du..."Eagle Warrior was speechless, he was extremely weak now, he turned back into human form as Little Du’s claws grabbed onto him.

Little Du fought against the immemorial desolate eagle but he was not its match.

But the immemorial desolate eagle was the main body’s pawn to begin with, Little Du often got into dangerous situations where his life was at stake, he constantly got injured but managed to retreat each time.

Eagle Warrior watched with a palpitating heart, he fought without any fear himself, but when he watched Little Du fight, he became very concerned, he could not help but shout warnings due to his intense nervousness.

When he saw that Little Du was bleeding and gaining more wounds, he felt deep heartache.

Little Du had saved him earlier in the Twelve Zodiac battle formation, he was a benefactor. Now, he had saved Eagle Warrior twice, he was even fighting to the death for Sacred Eagle City. This moved Eagle Warrior deeply, he acknowledged Little Du’s nature and disposition, he felt deep admiration towards the young lad.

Fang Yuan was ruthless to others, but was even more ruthless to himself.

As his clone, Little Du had the same style and personality.

These were genuine wounds and injuries, Eagle Warrior was completely moved by him.

Little Du had just become a Gu Immortal, he was a new Combat Beast Warrior, the youngest one in the Combat Beast Guild. With this level of strength, he was definitely not the immemorial desolate eagle’s match.

After a while of fighting, he was smacked by the immemorial desolate eagle and fell into the City Lord Manor.

This was naturally his plan, Little Du fell heavily and crashed through the floor, entering the underground altar.

Eagle Warrior had already fainted earlier, when he woke up, he saw that Little Du was beside him.

"Uncle, you are awake!" Little Du was overjoyed.

Eagle Warrior was also overjoyed that Little Du was still alive, but he quickly frowned as he asked: "How long was I unconscious for?"

"Not very long, the guild’s reinforcements did not come, after the eagle attacked us, it remained flying in the sky instead of pursuing us." Little Du answered.

"Sigh!" Eagle Warrior sighed deeply: "It seems that we cannot defeat this eagle in a frontal battle."

Little Du analyzed: "Thankfully, this eagle is not smart, if we do not transform, it will not feel any threat, so it will not attack us."

"We cannot transform into our immortal beast form now, we need to use other transformations to save the city’s people." Eagle Warrior was very worried.

If he could not become an immortal beast, he would not be able to control the situation.

He could only fight against those yellow soil crocodiles and save all of the citizens one by one, the efficiency was too low.

There was no choice, they had to do that.

But when they were about to leave, they found that a large number of yellow soil crocodiles had formed into a group, they had sealed all the entrances.

There were two desolate beast yellow soil crocodiles too.

Eagle Warrior and Little Du could not turn into immortal beasts, they could not fight the two desolate beasts, they had to retreat.

Eagle Warrior sat on the ground, he had an ashen expression: "It seems that we can only wait for reinforcements. I hope they can arrive soon."

"They won’t." Little Du thought to himself: "According to my plans, the reinforcements will be obstructed, I still have some time to execute my plans."

But on the outside, Little Du frowned as he slammed his fist on the ground: "Damn it! Are we just going to wait here until reinforcements come? Where are we? Why is there an altar here?"

Eagle Warrior answered: "We are below the City Lord Manor now. As for this altar..."

Before he finished, Little Du interjected.

Little Du’s brows were raised: "To think that there is so much space underneath the City Lord Manor. I’ve got it, we can move underground and get past the yellow soil crocodiles to escape."

Eagle Warrior shook his head: "It is useless. This underground area only covers the City Lord Manor, we cannot go to the outer city. Those yellow soil crocodiles are also skilled at digging underground, they often live in swamps after all."

"Damn it." Little Du gritted his teeth, suddenly, he gasped: "Wait no, uncle, isn’t it strange? Why are those yellow soil crocodiles just surrounding this place but not attacking us? The eagle in the sky might be prideful and not feel like attacking us, but why are those yellow soil crocodiles waiting outside, they seem to be avoiding something."

Eagle Warrior forced a smile: "Little Du, your observation is right. But don’t be too hopeful, these yellow soil crocodiles can’t get near because of this altar. It is extremely old, legends say that the first generation Combat Beast King arranged it here, a portion of his power is sealed inside."

"First generation Combat Beast King? Why did he seal his own power?" Little Du asked curiously.

"It seems that he wants to give it to an inheritor. There are several more altars in the other main cities, whoever can collect all of these powers will obtain the strength of the first generation Combat Beast King!" Eagle Warrior said slowly.

Little Du blinked multiple times: "Then, why don’t we use this power to defeat the beasts outside?"

Eagle Warrior smiled bitterly: "It is useless! These are all rumors, there are no actual records about it. Countless people tried but nobody has succeeded. These are likely false rumors, but these altars are very powerful indeed, they have a mysterious power and cannot be destroyed, beasts also cannot get hear them."

Saying so, Eagle Warrior saw that Little Du was excited and laughed: "If you want to try it, go ahead. But remember my words, don’t be too hopeful, don’t get disappointed if nothing happens."

"Okay, uncle." Little Du took large strides and quickly got to the altar.

He walked several rounds around the altar but nothing happened.

He climbed up but there was still no reaction.

This was a normal situation, Eagle Warrior watched at the side.

But at this moment, Little Du knelt down and started to pray loudly: "First generation Combat Beast King, I don’t know you and have never met you before! But I hope you can help us, beasts are outside eating the people, every breath of time, a life is lost. I beg you, first generation Combat Beast King, if you can hear me in heaven, please do something, do something!"

Little Du spoke louder and louder as he teared up towards the end.

"Little Du... you are truly a kind hearted and innocent boy!" Eagle Warrior’s eyes turned red too, he felt deeply moved.

Then, at the next moment!

White light burst out of the altar, enveloping Little Du’s body.

"Hmm?" Eagle Warrior stared with wide eyes, he opened his mouth and became lost for words: "What, what is going on?!"

Bam.

A soft sound could be heard as the white light fused into Little Du’s body, the firm and indestructible altar shattered into pieces at the next moment.

"Little... Little Du?!" Eagle Warrior stammered.

Little Du turned around with an expression of joy: "Uncle, you were right. I inherited the power of the first generation Combat Beast King!"

"A miracle! This is a miracle!!" Eagle Warrior reacted as he raised his head towards the sky, becoming extremely happy.

He laughed for a while before turning to look at Little Du, his gaze was filled with seriousness and excitement: "Little Du, you actually inherited the power of the first generation Combat Beast King! Do you know what that means?"

"What?" Little Du was dumbfounded.

"This means that you can inherit the rest of the inheritances. You are the future Combat Beast King! No, more accurately, you are the world’s savior!" Eagle Warrior became incredibly excited.

"That’s right, you are the world’s savior."

"World Savior Little Du!"

Please go to https://ReadRead/Reverend-Insanity/ to read the latest chapters for free

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Eastern Sea.

Dragon Palace.

Fang Yuan’s clone, Wu Shuai, sat on his dragon throne as he manipulated his army ants.

During this period of time, the ant army had already developed to a certain size.

At this moment, there were over a hundred million ants, they moved like a golden river and circled in the sky.

Wu Shuai took out a rank eight immortal material.

It was a bunch of bird feathers, these feathers had a stone texture but looked very lifelike, they were covered in a grey-white light.

If one sniffed them, they would be able to smell the stench of a corpse.

This was the immemorial desolate beast corpse emperor bird’s feathers.

Wu Shuai blew lightly as the feathers flew into the sky, fusing into the golden river of army ants.

Soon, he started to hear noises.

Countless army ants landed on the corpse emperor bird feathers and devoured them.

Even though there were only ten feathers, they were rank eight immortal materials after all, just a tiny bit was enough to feed an army of ten thousand ants, it could last very long.

A moment later, the corpse emperor bird feathers got completely consumed by the army ants.

These army ants were not just fed, they even created a new batch of army ants.

The new ants were corpse ants, they emitted death energy, they could eat the corpses of army ants to get stronger. The more corpses they ate, the stronger the corpse ants became. There was a limit to this growth of course, the strongest corpse ant could match a king ant but could not match a queen ant.

"With these corpse ants, the army ants will be more usable and durable in battle. Before this, the ants would die in vain, but with corpse ants, I can make use of their corpses. In this regard, I can save quite a bit of cost too." Wu Shuai let out a breath of air.

The army ants were extremely profound, they contained the essence of enslavement path.

Feeding the army ants not only maintained their numbers, new breeds could even be created. When countless different army ants work together, they would produce many unique effects.

But the army ants could only alleviate the weakness of enslavement path, they could not eliminate it.

Enslavement path truly used up too many resources.

After growing the army ants to this scale that could fight rank eight Gu Immortals, Wu Shuai was starting to feel a heavy burden.

"My main body is refining Gu, the expenditure is huge, the army ants I am raising are also a bottomless hole."

"Thankfully, I have the help of Gu tribe and the merfolk, otherwise, my army ants would not develop to this size."

Right at this moment, Wu Shuai’s expression changed.

A Gu Immortal had appeared outside Dragon Palace, visiting Wu Shuai.

Wu Shuai opened the palace doors and went to invite the person in.

"Tang Qiong greets Lord Wu Shuai." It was a yellow scaled mermaid, she was adorable and gentle, she smiled as dimples were seen on her face.

She was an elder in charge of the Merman Imperial Court, she represented a portion of their will.

Fang Yuan’s clone Wu Shuai helped to convert a portion of Gu tribe and the mermen into new dragonmen, the relationship between the three groups had deepened a lot.

Tang Qiong was the representative of the Merman Imperial Court, she interacted with Wu Shuai deeply and always kept a polite attitude, she treated Wu Shuai as an actual senior.

Wu Shuai brought Tang Qiong into Dragon Palace.

"Even though this is not my first visit, I am still in awe regarding Dragon Palace’s grand appearance." Tang Qiong sighed to herself, she had a sincere expression.

Wu Shuai laughed: "Fairy Tang Qiong, what brings you here?"

Tang Qiong showed a serious expression: "Senior, Qi Sea Ancestor is holding a banquet in Eastern Sea, he has invited the entirety of Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world to attend it. My Imperial Court received the invitation as well, our grand elder wants to ask senior if you are going to the banquet along with us?"

"Oh, that matter." Wu Shuai heard this and his eyes shined with bright light.

After Fang Yuan’s main body snatched mutation Immortal Gu, he used the identity of Qi Sea Ancestor to interfere in Eastern Sea’s politics.

This Eastern Sea banquet was one of Fang Yuan’s plans, but in his plan, he did not invite Wu Shuai.

Wasn’t it easy to invite his own clone?

But Fang Yuan wanted to conceal Wu Shuai for now, he did not want to expose him yet.

The Merman Imperial Court actually invited Wu Shuai to go with them, this action had deep meaning. It showed that the merfolk really wanted to get closer with the dragonmen.

"I have rank eight Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace while the Merman Imperial Court has no rank eight Immortal Gu House. Their force was established with the help of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable back then, after so many years, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s influence has dwindled, his protection will eventually vanish."

"As a variant human, the dragonman race is a natural ally indeed."

"Even so, the merfolk are taking a huge risk, this current generation grand elder has a lot of resolution."

Wu Shuai thought about it, he asked an obvious question: "Then, did Qi Sea Ancestor invite Fang Yuan as well?"

Within the palace, Tang Qiong shook her head: "Qi Sea Ancestor has announced that he will not invite Fang Yuan. He said that this banquet is an Eastern Sea banquet, Fang Yuan is not an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, he will not be invited."

Wu Shuai nodded.

That had to be the case.

If Qi Sea Ancestor invited Fang Yuan, it would be an act against Heavenly Court. He was not afraid of them, but Fang Yuan had to consider the feelings of the other Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

He was not afraid of Heavenly Court, but Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals were afraid and wary of Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court’s reputation was deeply ingrained in everyone, it was after all the number one force in the world, it had a history of three million years!

If he invited Fang Yuan, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals might have second thoughts and decide not to attend the banquet, that would go against Fang Yuan’s intentions.

Qi Sea Ancestor had also just taken half a Primordial Origin true inheritance from Duke Long. If he immediately approached Fang Yuan after that, it would be disadvantageous towards the big picture.

Tang Qiong observed his expression but had no findings. Wu Shuai was ambitious and unfathomable, it was normal that he showed no signs on his face.

Tang Qiong had to encourage him: "Senior Wu Shuai, pardon my disrespectful words but in my tribe’s opinion, although you have an agreement with Fang Yuan and are working together, you are you and Fang Yuan is Fang Yuan, we cannot treat the two as the same entity. Even though Fang Yuan is strong, he is a human with a special identity, he is ruthless and hard to read. Dragonmen will reign supreme, but to truly rise up, you need to rely on yourselves, becoming a force of your own and dominating your own area."

"Haha, you are right." Wu Shuai laughed: "I will remember your tribe’s sincerity. But now is not the time for the dragonman race to reappear in this world."

"Qi Sea Ancestor invited a huge range of Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals, even though he has some agreement with Heavenly Court and is in a neutral position, Heavenly Court will not want such an influential person to exist in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world."

"If I join the banquet, Heavenly Court will be even more wary, they might even take action."

"By then, we cannot confirm what stance Qi Sea Ancestor will take. Furthermore, I am not an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal in identity."

Tang Qiong pondered about it: "According to my tribe’s deductions, Qi Sea Ancestor is strong but as a lone cultivator, he likely wants to stay neutral. He has made agreements with both Heavenly Court and Fang Yuan, senior, if you go, he will have a good opportunity to express his stance, he will definitely welcome you, even though his attitude might not be too enthusiastic nor cold."

"Hmm... give me some time to consider it." Wu Shuai pondered and said.

"Alright, senior, if you want to go, please contact me. I will take my leave."

Watching Tang Qiong leave Dragon Palace, Wu Shuai fell into deep thought.

From this matter, he could see the attitude of the merfolk, it was very advantageous to him, he could make use of it.

To speak the truth, he did not want to burden the main body excessively. He would rather settle most things himself through his own effort.

The merfolk were a part of Eastern Sea, their attitude was also the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world’s attitude towards Qi Sea Ancestor and this huge banquet.

It was a good attitude.

It was very beneficial to Fang Yuan’s plans.

With just Qi Sea Ancestor’s identity, wanting to set up a banquet and uniting the whole of Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world was wishful thinking. That was basically impossible.

Longevity Heaven had dominated Northern Plains for so many years but they had not united their Gu Immortal world either.

Fang Yuan did not dream of this, what he wanted was to influence Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world! He wanted to make sure that when dealing with Heavenly Court in the future, Qi Sea Ancestor’s decisions and actions would greatly affect the choices made by Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals.

Before Qi Sea Ancestor’s banquet began, Western Desert’s Fang Di Chang, who was also Fang Yuan’s clone, had also started doing something like this.

"Everyone, goodbye."

"Friend Xiao, please take care."

Fang Di Chang sent off the final Western Desert Gu Immortal.

A Western Desert righteous path meeting had just ended.

Fang Di Chang cooperated with the main body, leading the allied forces of five clans in Western Desert’s righteous path, ’defeating’ Heavenly Court. Fang Di Chang used this outstanding result to its limit, he invited all of the Western Desert super forces to come for a meeting.

"These guys... hmph!" Fang Gong walked out and looked at Xiao clan’s Gu Immortal leave as he showed an unhappy expression.

This gathering did not have a good result.

Many forces were cold towards Fang clan, some even suspected Fang clan’s victory over Heavenly Court.

They were simply provoking Fang clan!

Fang Di Chang smiled bitterly: "First supreme elder, don’t be too angry, the truth is, Heavenly Court managed to retreat safely, they lost one rank eight because of Thousand Transformations Ancestor as well. The ’defeat’ of Heavenly Court was merely our publicization to raise our reputation."

"Our Fang clan rose to power too abruptly, we have not won yet. These clans are too envious of our good luck in obtaining Divine Bean Palace."

"Right now, we rode on this wave and held a meeting, in their eyes, they think that our Fang clan just wants to be the leader hastily. Thus, they did not send any elders with authority, they only sent some insignificant members."

Other than the four clans who allied with them showing a sincere attitude, most of the other super clans did not give Fang clan face.

But this was something that could not be helped.

Firstly, Fang clan did not obtain an actual victory, their battle strength was not threatening enough.

Secondly, they did not have true authority, these clans were not interested in entertaining them.

"Heavenly Court must be sowing discord as well. There is no helping it, our influence can only grow slowly." Fang Di Chang said.

"Hmph, during the five regions war, when Central Continent attacks, I want to see what these people will do." Fang Gong snorted coldly.

Fang Di Chang squinted but he sighed in his mind.

How could these super forces not understand the big picture?

They knew about it clearly, but so what?

These forces restrained and restricted each other, they had countless years of grudges and conflict, their individual interests and benefits were at stake, without any life-and-death crisis, their usual mindsets would not allow them to work together.

Please go to https://ReadRead/Reverend-Insanity/ to read the latest chapters for free

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1880 Heavenly Court“s Discussion

Heavenly Court.

In the silvery white sky, countless immortal palaces were erected.

Within the discussion hall, more than ten Gu Immortals had gathered.

Duke Long sat at the highest seat, followed by Fairy Zi Wei and Qin Ding Ling. After them were Bai Cang Shui, Cong Yan, Che Wei, Yuan Qiong Du, Zhou Xiong Xin, and the rest.

Other than that, there were the wills of Gu Liu Ru, Wan Zi Hong, Prince Feng Xian, Xing Ye Wang, Jun Shen Guang, and others. These people had missions to do, they were unable to participate in this Heavenly Court meeting personally.

Once in a while, Heavenly Court’s members would gather and hold a meeting to discuss matters and bring up their own opinions, to come to some consensus.

During normal times, Heavenly Court would usually be led by wisdom path Gu Immortals in terms of management. Currently, Duke Long was the psychological pillar holding up the organization while Fairy Zi Wei had control over the administrative affairs. Before her was Heaven Overseeing Tower Lord.

"Yuan Qiong Du, how is the research on second aperture Gu going?" Duke Long asked.

Yuan Qiong Du answered: "With Lady Zi Wei’s help, I have already deduced some secrets, we can refine rank one to five second aperture Gu now."

The truth was that Heavenly Court’s refinement path foundation was deeper than

Lang Ya Sect.

There were three refinement path supreme grandmasters in history, Long Hair Ancestor was just one of them, the other two had practically their entire inheritances collected by Heavenly Court.

Yuan Qiong Du was the current person in charge of refinement path, he had incredible talent and aptitude, he was the one responsible for repairing fate Gu in the previous life.

Along with Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions, the combination of these three things made it not so hard for them to deduce the recipe of Fang Yuan’s second aperture mortal Gu.

After hearing this, many of the immortals had joyful expressions as they started to converse.

I’ve heard of this second aperture Gu, it is a good thing."

"That’s right, having a second aperture will give Gu Masters a huge boost in battle strength."

"If we can obtain the Immortal Gu recipe, it will also be extremely meaningful to Gu Immortals!"

"From this point, we need to thank Fang Yuan, hahaha."

Fairy Zi Wei spoke in a calm tone as she interrupted: "Is Fang Yuan such a foolish person? He had already expected second aperture Gu to be deduced when he threw it out to Southern Border’s righteous path. A second aperture has deep meaning indeed, but if Gu Masters had a second aperture, they would need double the time and effort to cultivate. They would need more resources as well."

"So that’s it." The Gu Immortals here were all rank eight elites, Fairy Zi Wei had just said this when they understood the reasoning.

"Fang Yuan is intentionally doing this."

"He gave out second aperture Gu to extort Southern Border’s righteous path but also to make plans for the five regions chaotic war."

"That’s right, when the regional walls vanish and the five regions fuse, Gu Immortals and Gu Masters will not change in numbers, but this second aperture Gu will spread rapidly. By then, their need for resources will double, what will everyone do? They will need to fight and start conflicts to gather resources."

"This demon is truly vicious and devious, but we have no choice but to take his bait."

They had to.

Heavenly Court had obtained second aperture Gu from Southern Border’s righteous path. Southern Border would research second aperture Gu themselves, the other three regions would not ignore it either.

Second aperture Gu was something that would cause a storm in the world if it was circulated.

Like the time Blood Sea Ancestor created blood path, even if the five regions’ righteous path outlawed blood path cultivation, there were still many blood path Gu Masters and Gu Immortals.

"We can’t deduce the recipe of second aperture Immortal Gu yet?" Duke Long, who had been silent, asked suddenly.

He spoke very little but he often got to the point quickly, this was no exception.

Yuan Qiong Du smiled bitterly and shook his head: "We are still some distance from deducing the Immortal Gu recipe. If I can have the help of a few refinement path experts of my level, I might be able to deduce it more quickly. But currently, I have limited energy and time, I cannot attend to too many matters at once."

Yuan Qiong Du was having a tough time recently.

Earlier, when Fang Yuan annexed Lang Ya Sect, he had to modify the formation to repair fate Gu. That was because the formation referenced Refinement Cauldron, it had to be changed for safety purposes.

Afterwards, Fang Yuan captured Southern Border’s righteous path, Yuan Qiong Du was in charge of refining fixed space Gu before the rest.

After that, Fang Yuan defeated Heavenly Court in the River of Time, Heavenly Court’s time path Immortal Gu Houses shattered. Yuan Qiong Du had to refine Gu once again, to try to refine these time path Immortal Gu.

Recently, Qin Ding Ling woke up, she handed Fairy Zi Wei a stack of luck path Immortal Gu recipes, Yuan Qiong Du was in charge of refining them.

Refining Gu was a dangerous task to begin with, Fang Yuan had refined many of these Gu before him, Yuan Qiong Du was faced with many failures during this period.

These last days, he had suffered great injuries from refining Gu, if Heavenly Court did not have superb healing methods, he might have died already.

"Next, Yuan Qiong Du has to prepare for the restoration of fate, before we fully repair fate Gu, second aperture Immortal Gu’s recipe will not be obtainable." Fairy Zi Wei declared, it was a slight pity.

Duke Long nodded but did not speak anymore.

Qin Ding Ling sighed: "Without the recipe of second aperture Immortal Gu, Southern Border’s righteous path will not be able to escape from Fang Yuan’s threat and extortion."

"Hmph, these Southern Border immortals are truly the shame of the righteous path, they were extorted to this extent!" Within the hall, Xing Ye Wang grunted in displeasure.

"The truth is, Southern Border’s righteous path has done quite a few things. They started to build Beacon Towers, this is an Immortal Gu House that is worth guarding against."

"Southern Border’s righteous path is trying to break free from Fang Yuan, only Ba clan and Xia clan desire second aperture Immortal Gu, they are controlled by him. Meanwhile, Wu clan, Chai clan, and others are resisting him fully. They want to cooperate with our Heavenly Court, we have already started to suppress Fang Yuan’s businesses in treasure yellow heaven."

"I need to remind everyone that Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world has a powerful lurking force that we need to be on guard against, that is the Virtue Paradise. This is the true inheritance that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had set up personally, they have many Gu Immortals, the strongest among them being Lu Wei Yin, they also include mushroomman Gu Immortals."

"Even though Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable did not enter Heavenly Court, there was a friendly relationship between us. But what about the attitude of this Virtue Paradise? We need to probe further."

"I have already considered that." Fairy Zi Wei spoke: "After some time, I will personally head to Virtue Paradise and borrow Immortal Gu."

Heavenly Court needed this Immortal Gu indeed, it was also their test towards Virtue Paradise.

If Lu Wei Yin showed a friendly attitude, Heavenly Court would try to rope them in as allies.

After discussing Southern Border’s matters, Heavenly Court’s immortals went on to talk about Western Desert.

Because of Fang Yuan’s schemes, Western Desert’s situation changed a lot. After Fang clan gained control of Divine Bean Palace, they ’defeated’ Heavenly Court, causing their plan in maintaining internal conflicts within Western Desert to suffer a loss.

"Fang clan does have the ability to rise to power. But this time, there was a crucial person who caused this situation, Fang clan’s second supreme elder Fang Di Chang!"

"This person has huge ambitions, he is a formidable character. He has already allied with multiple Western Desert righteous path forces, if not for the fact that we succeeded in sowing discord among them, Fang clan’s rise would have been unstoppable."

"Now that Chen Yi is dead, we do not have any proper Genesis Lotus inheritor, how will we retrieve Divine Bean Palace?"

"I suggest that we assassinate Fang Di Chang!"

"Too difficult, this person is very crafty and vigilant. After getting Divine Bean Palace, he has basically stationed himself inside permanently."

"Fang clan’s first supreme elder is Fang Gong, what is his attitude towards Fang Di Chang?"

"Fang Gong and Fang Di Chang have a close relationship, they do not have conflict between them, we cannot do anything to them for now."

...

After Heavenly Court’s immortals talked for a while, they decided to add reinforcements in Western Desert!

Even though Heavenly Court lost Wei Feng, their main forces were still intact, there were not much losses.

Back then, when Heavenly Court set up their forces there, it was because Fang Yuan had tried to escape using the natural tributary of the River of Time there, in order to stop him, they set up immortal formations at the tributary. After that, they noticed Thousand Transformations Ancestor’s weakness and thus sent more people there to deal with him.

Even though Heavenly Court’s plan to deal with Thousand Transformations Ancestor and Fang Yuan failed, they were not going to give up despite the setback.

After discussing, they decided in unison that they would send a number of Gu Immortals and Immortal Gu Houses to the River of Time during the crucial moment, by using the tributary of the River of Time to reinforce them rapidly.

Their main target now was not Thousand Transformations Ancestor, it was Fang clan!

Thousand Transformations Ancestor was a lone immortal while Fang clan was a righteous path clan that was gradually gaining influence over Western Desert’s righteous path. If they were allowed to develop, Western Desert’s righteous path would be an increasing threat against Heavenly Court.

After Fang clan took away Divine Bean Palace, it meant that Fang clan and Heavenly Court could not come to peaceful terms anymore.

Thus, Heavenly Court started preparing to deal with Fang clan, it was a logical move.

After Western Desert was Eastern Sea.

"Eastern Sea’s politics are also changing, Qi Sea Ancestor is holding a banquet and inviting Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals, what is he planning to do?"

"Not long ago, Qi Sea Ancestor came to an agreement with Duke Long, he stopped helping Fang Yuan. This person seems to be a neutral party but we cannot relax our guard against him."

"We have already infiltrated this Eastern Sea banquet. If Qi Sea Ancestor makes any move, we will know quickly."

Duke Long spoke again: "Qi Sea Ancestor has extraordinary strength, he is not beneath me. My personal opinion is to actively entice and sway this person to our side. This is so Heavenly Court faces less threat before we manage to repair fate Gu."

Duke Long’s words made the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals feel heavy emotions.

Eastern Sea had Qi Sea Ancestor who could rival Duke Long in battle strength, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were somewhat unable to accept this fact.

After settling the matter of Eastern Sea, they moved onto Northern Plains.

Heavenly Court paid a lot of attention to any movement from Northern Plains’ Longevity Heaven.

Among the four regions, Heavenly Court was most wary in regards to Northern Plains.

Northern Plains’ politics had been influenced by Heavenly Court, the cooperation of Old Ancestor Xue Hu and Heavenly Court was a huge success for them.

If Longevity Heaven wanted to unite Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world, Old Ancestor Xue Hu would be the biggest obstacle.

After the matters of Northern Plains, Duke Long mentioned the River of Time.

"Now, we have five time path Immortal Gu Houses, yet we cannot find any trace of the Red Lotus stone islands. Can we do anything about it?"

However, Heavenly Court’s immortals did not have any good ideas, these stone lotus islands were made by Red Lotus Demon Venerable after all.

Qin Ding Ling shook her head too: "In the aspect of luck path, we already have the Dao Guardian Feng Jiu Ge guarding it. He has powerful luck, if even he fails, then there is nothing we can do."

Duke Long was silent, he felt a little disappointed.

The repair of fate Gu was Heavenly Court’s greatest plan.

In Duke Long’s mind, Wu Yong, Longevity Heaven, Fang Yuan, and Dragon Palace were all below Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s threat level.

But there was no other way, Heavenly Court had already done its best, the river suppression lotus sealing formation was their greatest achievement. It was a pity that they were still far from finding a Red Lotus stone island.

The discussion hall went silent.

But at this moment, Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes suddenly shined, next, Duke Long and Qin Ding Ling also showed surprised expressions.

Eventually, all of the remaining Heavenly Court Gu Immortals became very excited.

"News came so suddenly!"

"A Red Lotus stone island appeared in the River of Time."

"Gu Liu Ru has already confirmed it, this Red Lotus stone island is the real thing without doubt."

"We have finally found one Red Lotus true inheritance!"

"As long as we can get one, we will be able to find our way to the rest of Red Lotus’ true inheritances."

Duke Long nodded: "This is a good thing, we need to try to get this true inheritance as soon as possible now. Also... beware of Fang Yuan."

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals turned solemn.

"Indeed, this commotion cannot be kept from him for long."

"By then, he will definitely show up."

"Set up the river suppression lotus sealing formation quickly, we need more reinforcements, if Fang Yuan comes. we will take his life!"

Please go to https://ReadRead/Reverend-Insanity/ to read the latest chapters for free

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Eastern Sea.

To the east of the flourishing bumpy sea area, to the west of the barbecue islands, there was a unique and large sea area — Qi Sea!

There was no water in qi sea, instead, countless qi currents intertwined and entangled, forming swirls of millions of qi currents.

During the Remote Antiquity Era, Qi Sea had an incredibly high status in the hearts of all Gu Immortals in the world.

Back then, qi path flourished, it was the main Gu cultivation path, all other paths were non-mainstream.

All paths were inferior to the number one qi path.

Qi sea was incredibly big, it was a whole different world inside, countless qi currents moved within it, destroyed and created at every instance. Back then, qi sea was the number one qi path resource point in the five regions.

But time passed quickly, eras changed.

Qi path went on the decline, qi sea started to shrink, right now, qi sea was less than one-ten thousandth of its original size, the qi currents inside had all turned into pure water qi. Only at the most central area, there were still some qi path immortal materials left.

Qi sea had once been the most popular place, it was now the most deserted area.

It contained mostly water qi.

But in the whole of Eastern Sea, which sea area would have any lack of water qi?

It was easy to collect water qi anywhere, why would Gu Immortals go to qi sea on purpose to collect it?

Even if they wanted to get other qi path immortal materials, entering and exploring qi sea carried huge risks. They were better off just buying these immortal materials from treasure yellow heaven.

"By holding this Eastern Sea banquet now, qi sea will become renowned in the five regions again." Fang Yuan’s main body sat on a cloud as he looked down at the qi sea sea area.

Looking from above, the qi sea sea area had waves of light blue in color as countless qi currents moved in turbulence, it was a huge contrast to the surrounding sea water that was dark blue in color.

Initially, when Southern Border’s rank eight Gu Immortal Qi Xiang created the killer move unlimited qi sea, he had obtained inspiration from this qi sea to a certain degree.

Fang Yuan called himself Qi Sea Ancestor, he had not picked it randomly. He had already made ample considerations before deciding.

For example, which sea area should Qi Sea Ancestor originate from, where in Eastern Sea did he live in seclusion?

Fang Yuan chose qi sea for this.

This place was deserted, barely anyone came here, it was extremely compatible with Qi Sea Ancestor’s cultivation of qi path as well.

If he told others, they would believe him as this was very logical.

At the center of qi sea, dragonman clone Wu Shuai transmitted: "The formation has been prepared."

This Eastern Sea banquet had significant meaning to Fang Yuan, he had made many preparations for this.

Fang Yuan not only deployed Wu Shuai for this, he even set a formation at the center of qi sea.

This was naturally a qi path formation. Fang Yuan’s time path clone had qi path great grandmaster and formation path grandmaster attainment levels, along with the light of wisdom, he spent a month to deduce this.

At the center of qi sea, countless currents surged, they were turbulent from time to time, the area was very dangerous.

Setting a formation in this place was quite difficult.

But it was not a problem for Fang Yuan, he did not lack formation path attainment and he had ample resources, he was not trying to create a complex formation like the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, he was merely going for a usable and realistic effect.

Fang Yuan’s main body checked it with his divine sense and confirmed there were no problems, he shut his eyes and meditated.

This Eastern Sea banquet was extremely important to him.

He plotted using the world as his chessboard, he arranged pawns to influence the overall situation, such planning was not easy at all.

In Southern Border, Fang Yuan’s influence was small, because Wu Yong was gathering allies with his good political manipulation, there was nothing Fang Yuan could do to stop him.

In Western Desert, even though Fang clan was rising, its influence would only grow with time. Furthermore, be they Heavenly Court or the other Western Desert forces, they would not want this to happen. Fang Di Chang had a lot to do in this situation.

Central Continent had Heavenly Court, it was impenetrable like an iron fortress. The Zombie Alliance that Shadow Sect created had already been uprooted along with the organization Defy by Fairy Zi Wei.

In Northern Plains, Fang Yuan and Chu Du had a close relationship but it could not affect the big picture. Even though Bing Sai Chuan had not awakened, Longevity Heaven was started to take control, Fang Yuan could not do anything there.

Thus, Eastern Sea was an important part of Fang Yuan’s plans and arrangements.

Eastern Sea was the most abundant in resources, if he succeeds, when the five regions merge, Fang Yuan would have enough influence to affect the other four regions.

A few minutes later, Fang Yuan opened his eyes as he muttered while looking at the horizon: "They’re coming."

An Immortal Gu House was flying in the sky, it looked slow but was moving at a rapid speed.

The Immortal Gu House slowly stopped as a girl with bright eyes walked out, she was wearing a long dress that had exquisite rainbow clouds drawn on it.

"Hua clan first supreme elder Hua Cai Yun greets Qi Sea Ancestor." Hua Cai Yun had rank eight cultivation level but she still acted very politely.

Next, from Hua clan’s Immortal Gu House, several Hua clan Gu Immortals walked out and paid respects to Fang Yuan.

"It is not time yet, you have arrived early, please come in." Fang Yuan stretched out his hand as qi currents gathered, forming a cloud.

Hua Cai Yun kept her Immortal Gu House in her immortal aperture as she took a seat, while the other Hua clan Gu Immortals stood behind her.

"I was too excited to meet you for the first time, this is a gift from Hua clan, please do accept it." Hua Cai Yun said as the Gu Immortal behind her took out an item and presented it with both hands.

Fang Yuan took a look, this was a lump of qi that resembled a ball, Hua clan’s Gu Immortal was holding it out respectfully.

There was flashing of lightning and rumbling thunder inside this qi lump, there was rainy or sunny weather occasionally inside, there was even snow at times.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light, he knew what this was.

This was a rare rank nine heaven qi.

Heaven and earth qi were the foundational qi of living beings, they were very common. When Fang Yuan placed his immortal aperture and opened his immortal aperture’s entrance, he would absorb heaven and earth qi to stabilize his sovereign immortal aperture. He had many secluded domains of heaven and earth in his immortal aperture, they expended too much heaven and earth qi, the sovereign immortal aperture felt a heavy burden due to them.

Of course, after Fang Yuan annexed Qi Sea grotto-heaven, he gained a huge boost of qi path dao marks, his immortal aperture started to produce a lot of heaven qi and earth qi, Fang Yuan’s burden in this aspect had eased a lot.

But the heaven qi that Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture produced or absorbed were ordinary Gu materials, they were not even considered immortal materials.

If heaven qi was an immortal material, it would gather into a lump and could not be pulled apart easily. Its value would rise greatly, ordinary heaven qi could not compare to it.

The usage of immortal material heaven qi was very easy, one just had to scatter it.

Many Gu Immortals used it like that.

They would purchase a lump of immortal material heaven qi from treasure yellow heaven and scatter it inside their immortal aperture, creating different weather conditions like thunder, lightning, wind, or snow.

This type of weather would last for some time, the resource points of Gu Immortals would be altered in some ways as a result.

Most transactions in treasure yellow heaven would involve rank six or seven heaven qi. Rank eight heaven qi was very rare, while rank nine was barely ever seen, it was only sold once in a thousand years or more.

Hua Cai Yun gifted Fang Yuan a portion of rank nine heaven qi, it showed her sincerity as well as Hua clan’s immense foundation, after all, Hua clan was most proficient in cloud path, they were experts in exploring black heaven and white heaven.

At the same time, in the River of Time.

Four Immortal Gu Houses flew above the river.

Present and Past Pavilion was not covered on all four sides, it was very simplistic, it traveled while riding the waves.

Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform was elegant and grand, the orange roof resembled cranes with their wings spread out. The Immortal Gu House was radiating three layers of autumn light, it was quite extraordinary.

Shark Flow Lever was white like jade, there were seven huge sharks in front of the lever, they had sharp teeth and were dragging the huge lever ahead.

Moment Stage was rank eight and had a ring of stone stairs around the outside, it spiraled upwards until it reached the red tiled pavilion at the top.

The four Immortal Gu Houses carried Heavenly Court and Central Continent Gu Immortals as they charged towards one destination — Red Lotus' stone island!

Within Present and Past Pavilion, a rank eight Gu Immortal stood as he watched the river water surging outside.

This person wore a red and white robe, standing straight like a spear or sword. His eyebrows were sharp like swords, a mysterious and profound light was hidden in his eyes. He had a calm and elegant aura, he was looking afar now as he continued to focus and comprehend.

It was Feng Jiu Ge!

"During this period in the River of Time, I have observed this long river, I watched the prosperity and downfall of eras, I witnessed the turbulence of the past and present. Destiny is like a wave, it rises at times and falls at times, it is slow at times while fast at times. The profundity contained within cannot be expressed in words, I can only sing it."

Feng Jiu Ge had been comprehending destiny song all along.

Different from the previous life, Feng Jiu Ge's destiny had changed a lot this time around.

He was defeated by Fang Yuan in Lang Ya blessed land, he was transported away by Chen Yi using the killer move karma relocation, he obtained the inspiration of destiny song.

This was way earlier than in the previous life.

After gaining some insight, Feng Jiu Ge came to the River of Time, he grabbed onto this inspiration and started to comprehend it.

The River of Time was a time path secluded domain, but Feng Jiu Ge made use of Present and Past Pavilion to observe the life of people in the past and present, he saw many scenes.

This was a great help towards his comprehension of destiny song.

Right now, his destiny song was sixty percent complete, it was ten percent higher than during the Central Continent fate battle in the previous life.

"My destiny song already depicts the destiny of living beings. But the destiny of venerables cannot be described so simply."

"Last time in Heavenly Court, I looked at Reckless Savage’s blood skins and felt like they were incomprehensible. I hope that this journey to the stone lotus island will allow me to gain further growth in creating destiny song."

"We have arrived, it is here."

"Stone lotus island... Red Lotus’ true inheritance!"

The four Immortal Gu Houses stopped nearby, Eternal Yacht was already waiting above the stone lotus island.

Eternal Yacht was the first to discover the stone lotus island, the Gu Immortals within it quickly informed Heavenly Court, they sent the other four Immortal Gu Houses to join up with it.

Feng Jiu Ge looked over with an expectant gaze.

Gu Liu Ru who was within Moment Stage had a complex expression.

"We finally found it, the hard work of our Heavenly Court over generations has not been in vain. After countless years, we have finally gained the fruits of our labor." Gu Liu Ru sighed deeply to himself.

He had many difficulties in his life, his lower body was crippled and could not be healed, he had an impassive attitude but at this moment, he was filled with excitement, pride, and satisfaction.

After breathing in deeply, Gu Liu Ru calmed down completely.

He sat on his wheelchair as his eyes flickered with cold light, he ordered: "Set up the river suppression lotus sealing formation now, I will lead Moment Stage while Feng Jiu Ge will lead Present and Past Pavilion. Eternal Yacht will move out to the tributary’s entrance and bring in our reinforcements. Shark Flow Lever and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform will patrol the surroundings, if anything shows up, inform me immediately."

"Yes." The immortals replied as they started to move, executing great efficiency.

Please go to https://ReadRead/Reverend-Insanity/ to read the latest chapters for free

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"The three supplementary formations are ready." A group of Gu Immortals ended their work, they sat down in the Immortal Gu House to rest and recover.

The second group took over, on top of the three supplementary formations, they added a rank eight Immortal Gu — Suppression.

The second group had eight Gu Immortals that were either rank six or seven, they worked together with great coordination, after some work, they finally added in suppression Immortal Gu successfully.

This was the River of Time, a time path secluded domain of heaven and earth, as a rule path Immortal Gu, it was not easy to use suppression Immortal Gu here, the difficulty was high.

But rank eight Immortal Gu Suppression was one of the core Immortal Gu of the river suppression lotus sealing formation, it had to be the first rank eight Immortal Gu arranged here. After it, other steps could be taken.

At this time, the second group went to rest while the first group came back to work.

They were not continuing the setup, they were dismantling the three layers of supplementary formation that was created earlier.

These Gu formations were meant to help Immortal Gu Suppression find the proper area to be put in. After that, they had to be removed and make space for the next few steps of the immortal formation.

"Good, the three layers of supplementary formations have been removed. Next, we will set up the pale fire formation." The third group of Gu Immortals took over.

The first group of Gu Immortals were exhausted, they quickly went to rest.

"After the pale fire formation, we will set up the paper cage formation, let’s go." The second group of Gu Immortals took over.

If the river suppression lotus sealing formation was split apart, there were a hundred and thirty-eight sub formations, the pale fire and paper cage formations were just two of them.

"Be careful, something has happened in the River of Time, a huge wave is crashing towards us!" Someone alerted.

At this time, the first group was resting, trying to recover as much as they could, the second and third group were busy setting the formation, the fourth group of Gu Immortals meant to deal with emergencies were activated.

In order to create the formation, Heavenly Court split the Gu Immortals into four groups. The first group had the strongest formation path abilities, they were in charge of the core of the river suppression lotus sealing formation. The second and third groups had similar levels of strength, the fourth group had the least number of people, they had some level of ability in formation building but were meant to deal with emergencies.

The fourth group of immortals quickly acted and destroyed the huge wave.

The second and third groups let out a sigh of relief. While checking that the formation was intact, they started to make preparations for the future steps.

Gu Liu Ru and Feng Jiu Ge were stationed in Moment Stage and Present and Past Pavilion respectively.

Feng Jiu Ge’s eyes were steady as he comprehended destiny, Gu Liu Ru had a deep gaze that was filled with alertness.

"We have found the stone lotus island, there is some commotion when we made the formation, Fang Yuan will definitely be alerted."

"He will definitely come here to cause destruction!"

"The river suppression lotus sealing formation has not been completed yet, we are at our weakest now, Fang Yuan will definitely come to attack."

"This is an important matter! I need to make up for my mistakes, I cannot let Fang Yuan succeed!"

While thinking, a silvery light appeared on the horizon.

Gu Liu Ru’s heart immediately tensed.

Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and Shark Flow Lever that were patrolling outside changed directions immediately, trying to obstruct the invader.

It was Myriad Year Flying Warship!

"Gu Liu Ru, your Heavenly Court actually tried to take Red Lotus’ true inheritance from under my nose, hehe, you are just dreaming." Myriad Year Flying Warship came rapidly as Fang Yuan’s voice resounded from within.

Gu Liu Ru snorted coldly, his voice spread in this entire battlefield: "Fang Yuan, you are merely a loser that we defeated, was the painful lesson last time not enough for you?"

He was a time path great expert, he was like a fish in water in the River of Time. Rank eight Gu Immortals of other paths would need a lot more effort to make their voice transmit around the entire battlefield.

"Haha, with me here, don’t think of setting any formation." Before Fang Yuan finished his words, Myriad Year Flying Warship already started to shine with bright lights.

These lights converged into countless silver flying swords as they shot out rapidly, towards the incomplete river suppression lotus sealing formation.

Gu Liu Ru’s expression was grim, he felt a headache, Heavenly Court’s biggest weakness now was this formation.

Fang Yuan ruthlessly attacked the enemy’s weakness, Heavenly Court had no choice but to defend it, they were stuck in a passive situation.

Last time, when Fang Yuan attacked the river suppression lotus sealing formation, Heavenly Court could dismantle the formation, but this time, with this Red Lotus stone island, they would preserve it even if they had to pay a huge price to do so.

Boom boom boom!

Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform arrived first, it fought against Myriad Year Flying Warship, there were many impacts that caused the water of the River of Time to splash and splatter.

Shark Flow Lever arrived shortly after.

As the three Immortal Gu Houses fought intensely in the River of Time, in the sky of Eastern Sea’s qi sea, the scene was harmonious and joyful.

After Hua Cai Yun, the Gu Immortals of Eastern Sea’s super forces, Song clan, Su clan, and Cai clan also arrived.

The one from Song clan was naturally Song Qi Yuan, he came to the banquet with Song Yi Shi.

"This is my granddaughter Song Yi Shi, after hearing of senior’s story, she became very excited, she asked me to bring her here and meet you." Song Qi Yuan smiled, he introduced his granddaughter Song Yi Shi.

Song Yi Shi had lost her father long ago, as her grandfather, Song Qi Yuan doted on her, for this Eastern Sea banquet, he brought her here so that she would get to leave an impression on people.

"This junior pays respects to Qi Sea Ancestor." Song Yi Shi said politely.

She had snow-white skin, her eyes were bright, she wore a blue-white dress and had an innocent aura, she was truly one of the six great beauties of Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.

Similar to Hua Cai Yun, Song Qi Yuan also brought a gift, it was a qi path inheritance that Song clan had collected in its inventory, it originated from a historical qi path rank eight great expert. After Fang Yuan took a look, he saw that it was quite unique and had quite a bit of value.

Fang Yuan smiled as he looked at Song Yi Shi, he displayed the concern of a senior: "Song clan has a good descendant, a good junior. This is our first meeting, I cannot let you leave empty-handed."

Saying so, he took out a rank eight water path immortal material, it floated towards Song Yi Shi.

Song Yi Shi was of great upbringing after all, she received the gift and quickly thanked him.

"Take a seat." Fang Yuan waved his hand as qi currents gathered, forming a seat instantly, it was right below him and towards the left.

Song Qi Yuan saw this position and became very happy, he quickly brought Song Yi Shi to take their seats.

Song Yi Shi placed the rank eight water path immortal material in her immortal aperture, she acted very modestly and gracefully, displaying the demeanor of a young lady in an esteemed clan.

Hua Cai Yun laughed as she spoke: "Song Qi Yuan, this is the first gift that ancestor has handed out. Had I known this, I would’ve brought my grandson as well."

She was the earliest person, she had already conversed with Fang Yuan for some time, their relationship had gotten much closer in this period.

Song Qi Yuan laughed, he was secretly proud of this, bringing Song Yi Shi here was really a wise decision.

Song Yi Shi was looking at Qi Sea Ancestor for the first time, she was awe-inspired by his aura: "This old senior is truly the number one person in Eastern Sea, a person who rivaled Duke Long. He has the demeanor of a great person, he is so magnanimous and grand."

If she knew that this person was Fang Yuan, who had once acted as Xing Xiang Zi and watched her shower, she would not have such thoughts.

"Qing Yue An pays respects to Qi Sea Ancestor." Qing Yue An was the third Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortal who arrived.

"Junior Qing Yue Zhi Cheng greets Qi Sea Ancestor." A youngster was behind Qing Yue An, he wore a green shirt and had a tall nose and flat face, his eyes were shiny like stars, he was a handsome and talented junior in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.

"Good." Fang Yuan sighed and praised, assessing Qing Yue Zhi Cheng: "Another good junior. I have a gift for you as well."

He gave Qing Yue Zhi Cheng a rank eight immortal material as well, Qing Yue Zhi

Cheng quickly received it with thanks.

Hua Cai Yun gradually saw a pattern as she thought to herself: "This Qi Sea Ancestor seems to enjoy helping talented juniors, just from this point alone, one can see that he truly has grand disposition."

At this moment, Nan Gong clan’s Gu Immortals arrived at the banquet, Hua Cai Yun’s expression sank.

This was because Nan Gong clan’s first supreme elder brought Hua An along.

Hua An was originally a Hua clan Gu Immortal, but he betrayed Hua clan and joined Nan Gong clan. He had deep wisdom path attainment, he was one of the three wisdom path experts of Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.

The saying goes: Jia Dan sits in twin polar, Hua An hides in Nan Gong, there is also Dragon Head Tortoise, living inside adversity sea.

Even though Hua Cai Yun was unhappy, she did not say anything. This was Qi Sea Ancestor’s banquet, she wanted to get close to the number one Eastern Sea expert now, she had to endure it.

Eastern Sea’s righteous path arrived one by one.

The last one who came was the grand elder of the Merman Imperial Court.

Fang Yuan said some words of consolation as he arranged for her to sit at the very end.

After the merman grand elder sat down, she sighed to herself internally: Even though this was her first meeting with Qi Sea Ancestor, this great expert was showing a good attitude towards the merfolk.

Of course.

The mermen were working with the dragonmen, they were Fang Yuan’s natural allies.

Fang Yuan would not give her trouble.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s treatment of the merman grand elder, Eastern Sea’s righteous path Gu Immortals fell into contemplation.

River of Time.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was already at the inner area.

Immortal killer move — Daybreak Sword!

Swords moved out like an army of pythons, traversing the battlefield and attacking Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform.

Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform started to shine with a bright orange light, the strength of the silver flying swords weakened continuously.

At the other end, Shark Flow Lever shot out three frost waves and froze the water of the River of Time under Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Fang Yuan grunted from within Myriad Year Flying Warship, silver flying swords turned around and gathered in the water below the river.

Immortal killer move — Torrential Charge!

Myriad Year Flying Warship shot out like a meteor, crashing into the river suppression lotus sealing formation that was still being set up.

Boom!

With a loud sound, Moment Stage blocked Myriad Year Flying Warship as the two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses collided.

Moment Stage had a slight disadvantage while Myriad Year Flying Warship’s advancement was halted, it was stalled by Shark Flow Lever and Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform which had caught up.

Heavenly Court had deep foundation, they already prepared some methods to deal with Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Myriad Year Flying Warship had gone through many battles, its methods were exposed, it could not do much in this situation.

At this moment, two more time path Immortal Gu Houses arrived as reinforcements.

One was Eternal Yacht carrying Xing Ye Wang, the other was Sun and Moon Temple carrying Nine Spiritual Fairy.

Heavenly Court’s reinforcements arrived!

Four rank eight Gu Immortals, six time path Immortal Gu Houses!

Heavenly Court’s morale soared.

Eastern Sea, above qi sea.

Qi currents surged and formed into a vast cloud, Qi Sea Ancestor willed as countless dishes and delicious wine emerged from these currents.

It was finally time, Qi Sea Ancestor wanted to raise his cup and announce the start of the banquet when a voice resounded in the sky: "Black Soul Sea Lord would like to request a spar with Qi Sea Ancestor."

Next, his rank eight aura filled with dark energy loomed over the entire area.

The Eastern Sea immortals were stunned before their eyes started to shine.

An Eastern Sea rank eight was actually challenging Qi Sea Ancestor!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1883 Ancestor“s Divine Might!

Moment Stage, Present and Past Pavilion, Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform, Eternal Yacht, Shark Flow Lever, Sun and Moon Temple.

Gu Liu Ru, Feng Jiu Ge, Xing Ye Wang, Nine Spiritual Fairy.

Heavenly Court gathered its forces in the River of Time, it was bent on getting

Red Lotus’ true inheritance.

In contrast, Fang Yuan’s side only had Myriad Year Flying Warship, even though it was rank eight, against Heavenly Court’s grand force, it was too small.

Heavenly Court had six Immortal Gu Houses and four rank eight Gu Immortals, they surrounded Myriad Year Flying Warship completely.

Myriad Year Flying Warship fell into a tight spot, but Fang Yuan spoke calmly as he smiled: "Hehehe, you want to occupy the stone lotus island? Since I cannot get it, neither will any of you."

Immortal killer move — Myriad Year Hunting!

Fragrance spread from Myriad Year Flying Warship, it quickly dispersed and caused countless dao beasts to resonate and growl.

A wave of a year beast tide was rapidly forming.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan cooperated with Bing Sai Chuan and fought against Heavenly Court over this Red Lotus true inheritance, in the end, Feng Jiu Ge acted and destroyed the stone lotus island.

This time, Fang Yuan made the same choice, he used myriad year hunting to summon an endless beast tide that targeted the stone lotus island.

This method was Myriad Year Flying Warship’s strongest ability, it had an evident weakness however, the year beasts did not differentiate enemy from ally, in fact its main target was Myriad Year Flying Warship itself.

Last time, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals fell for Fang Yuan’s scheme, they thought that he could control the beast tide and slaughtered a large number of year beasts, taking most of the damage for Myriad Year Flying Warship. After suffering a loss, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals realized that Fang Yuan could not control this beast tide either.

The weakness of myriad year hunting was already known to Heavenly Court.

But this time, Fang Yuan used it to target Heavenly Court’s weakness, they were setting up the river suppression lotus sealing formation now, they had no choice but to fight against these beasts.

Gu Liu Ru snorted coldly: "This scoundrel is very devious, he used this move after all."

He had a calm expression as he instructed his people, Eternal Yacht and Shark Flow Lever left the battlefield immediately to head to the outside. At the same time, Nine Spiritual Fairy jumped out of her Immortal Gu House, turning into an immemorial desolate beast to leave the battlefield.

Heavenly Court had the advantage while Fang Yuan’s Myriad Year Flying Warship was encircled, he could not stop these people from escaping.

After leaving the battlefield, Eternal Yacht and Shark Flow Lever shined with a bright light, two auras resembling years flow like water Immortal Gu started to spread out.

The newly formed beast tide was instantly lured to these two Immortal Gu Houses as eighty percent of them rushed towards the two Immortal Gu Houses.

The remaining twenty percent were intercepted by Nine Spiritual Fairy who had turned into an immemorial desolate beast, she took control over them.

"It’s her indeed!"

"Nine Spiritual Fairy... a rank eight great expert that cultivated enslavement path and transformation path in Central Continent’s history."

Within Myriad Year Flying Warship, a Gu Immortal had already discerned Nine Spiritual Fairy’s identity.

Right now, Fang Yuan’s main body was in Eastern Sea, only his will was inside the ship, the will could think and make comparisons to his previous life’s events.

Nine Spiritual Fairy did not wake up in the previous life, but this time, she woke up and even earlier in time.

This was a very different situation.

After she turned into the immemorial year beast, the River of Time was no longer an obstacle to her.

Even though Heavenly Court could not counter myriad year hunting directly, they found ways to deal with it.

They analyzed the concept of myriad year hunting and targeted it, resolving the year beast tide that had yet to fully form.

Next, even if year beasts emerge, there would only be a few of them, they would not be of a threatening scale.

This was Heavenly Court’s foundation.

It was also the reason why Fang Yuan had been concealing his strength and methods all along.

Once he exposes his methods, Heavenly Court would rapidly react and make deductions, they would counter his actions in their next encounter.

This was the case for daybreak sword, torrential charge, and myriad year hunting.

Myriad year hunting, which could change the situation, was resolved by Heavenly Court before it even showed effect.

The remaining four Immortal Gu Houses surrounded Myriad Year Flying Warship tightly as they unleashed a barrage of attacks.

"Fang Yuan, if you still have any methods left, use them." Gu Liu Ru smiled coldly.

Within Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan’s will was silent, he did not respond.

The battle continued, Myriad Year Flying Warship was kept suppressed and unable to turn it around. Even though it tried to break out several times, it did not succeed.

Over at Heavenly Court’s four Immortal Gu Houses, Moment Stage was in front, as a rank eight Immortal Gu House and with the time path great expert Gu Liu Ru stationed in it, it was not inferior to Myriad Year Flying Warship.

At the same time, the other three Immortal Gu Houses worked together to assist it, their cooperation was not simple, they were very effective in their actions.

Evidently, during this period of time, these Gu Immortals did not slack off, they had practised extensively and their battle strength rose greatly.

"Fang Yuan is already trapped, he is not a threat."

"Be careful, we cannot be careless against this demon."

"Our river suppression lotus sealing formation is almost complete, what can Fang Yuan do to stop us?"

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had a surge of morale.

Many of them could already see the sight of Fang Yuan’s defeat.

But at this moment, a grand aura surged from the stone lotus island.

Golden light flashed as a grey stone giant stood up slowly.

This giant was immensely tall, its muscles were bulging, its hair was thick, its eyes shined with a fierce beast light.

"What monster is this? It has time path aura!"

"We have not explored the stone lotus island yet, why did the guardian of this stone lotus island awaken?"

"Oh no, the river suppression lotus sealing formation has not been completed yet."

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had changes of expression.

The giant roared, it was actually the sound of a tiger’s roar, the sound waves spread out in all directions, causing huge ripples to form around the island.

The river suppression lotus sealing formation shook intensely, the Gu Immortals setting up the formation spat out mouthfuls of blood.

"Quick, stabilize the formation!"

"Paper cage formation was broken, we need to repair it."

"Fourth group, Gu Immortals of the fourth group, quickly reinforce us!"

The Gu Immortals setting up the formation became very busy.

After the grey stone giant roared, it moved its arms, the muscles on his forearm and upper arm expanded like a balloon, to three times of its original size.

Pitch-black bull horns grew on its forehead, it lowered its head slightly as its arms gathered in front of its chest, it opened its palms and placed them together, air currents surged and gathered between its palms, creating a spiral ball made of currents.

Gu Liu Ru saw this as shock appeared in his eyes.

He understood, these air currents were just the physical appearance, these were actually time path dao marks!

More and more time path dao marks were drawn by the giant and gathered into a huge silver ball.

The ball became larger and larger, the giant monster growled and pushed with both arms, throwing the silver ball with all its strength.

The silver ball flew like a meteor, shooting out and causing endless gusts of wind to blow.

Central Continent’s righteous path Gu Immortals were deeply shocked, their pupils shrunk when they saw this giant silver ball’s might.

"Quick, we need to block it!" Gu Liu Ru gritted his teeth, he forcefully controlled Moment Stage to block the advancement of the silver ball.

Boom!

At the next moment, an intense sound erupted, the silver ball crashed into Moment Stage and burst out with terrifying might, Moment Stage was like a house swept by a typhoon, it flew away even when resisting.

"We blocked it." Moment Stage stopped eventually as Gu Liu Ru let out a breath of turbid air, Moment Stage was already damaged beyond words, it was filled with cracks, countless mortal Gu died while many Immortal Gu were injured.

The Gu Immortals inside Moment Stage were already very busy, they could not stay as carefree as when they encircled Fang Yuan anymore, they quickly tried to repair the Immortal Gu House.

The aftermath of the silver ball explosion caused intense winds to blow, the river suppression lotus sealing formation was still affected and damaged, many Gu worms died, the Gu Immortals setting up the formation were very busy trying to fix it.

Seeing that its attack did not work, the grey stone giant started to gather a silver ball again.

Gu Liu Ru saw this and gritted his teeth, he controlled Moment Stage to charge down.

But as Moment Stage got close to the stone lotus island, it gave off a brilliant light and a formless force blocked Moment Stage from approaching.

Using this time, the grey stone giant gathered another silver ball in its hands.

The ball shot out, Gu Liu Ru had no choice but to grit his teeth and resist the silver ball again using Moment Stage.

Boom!

Another explosion resounded, after the intense impact, the front part of Moment Stage was completely devastated, a large number of tiles and bricks flew out and turned back into Gu worm corpses.

The grey stone giant saw that its method was obstructed once again, it became infuriated as it growled and gathered another silver ball.

Gu Liu Ru frowned deeply: "This giant is using a very familiar time path method! To think that Red Lotus Demon Venerable had left this behind."

"But even if I know about its information, for now I can only block its attack by sacrificing Moment Stage, I need to protect this river suppression lotus sealing formation! Thankfully, we have this Moment Stage."

Gu Liu Ru felt glad in his heart.

The signature method of Moment Stage was to teleport from one location to another location in a moment’s time.

This was not a space path method but a time path method instead, it was not teleportation in essence, but was the act of using Moment Stage to compress its time into a moment. If the distance was further, it would take several moments.

Gu Liu Ru wanted to protect the formation, he had a clear objective. As long as the formation was set up, it would isolate this place from the outside, the stone lotus island would not be able to escape, all of Red Lotus’ arrangements on this island would weaken slowly and be resisted.

And against outside force, there would also be a strong layer of protection.

By then, even if Fang Yuan wanted to enter, with this formation and several Immortal Gu Houses around, it would be difficult.

Fang Yuan evidently understood this logic, Myriad Year Flying Warship tried to move in different directions, the remaining Immortal Gu Houses were just rank seven, they could barely contain it. This was like a thin fishing net trying to capture a shark.

Heavenly Court’s situation was getting worse, Gu Liu Ru snorted coldly and came out of Moment Stage, joining the encirclement of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

He was a time path great expert, he could move and act freely in the River of Time, with his interference, Heavenly Court stabilized the situation once again.

"Persevere, persevere and we will gain victory!"

"After this period, when the formation is completed, it would be Fang Yuan’s time to die."

Gu Liu Ru took charge of the situation, he dealt with Myriad Year Flying Warship while raising the morale of his people.

Eventually, the river suppression lotus sealing formation was completely set up, it formed a huge sphere that not only surrounded the stone lotus island, but also Myriad Year Flying Warship.

The formation activated, the grey stone giant grunted as it felt a strong suppression.

Myriad year hunting was also restricted, the fragrance could not spread out, a beast tide was unable to form.

"Get rid of Fang Yuan first, then explore the stone lotus island!" Gu Liu Ru shouted.

Without the threat of myriad year hunting, Eternal Yacht, Shark Flow Lever, and Nine Spiritual Fairy returned in time, they joined the encirclement against Fang Yuan.

"Fang Yuan, this will be your final resting place!" Gu Liu Ru’s eyes shined with bright light, he had a cold expression.

"Is a demonic overlord going to die here?" Feng Jiu Ge squinted, inspiration regarding destiny song emerged in his heart.

"Let’s not wait any longer, kill him!" Xing Ye Wang moved Shark Flow Lever and assaulted with deep killing intent.

Nine Spiritual Fairy was silent but her movements were not slow, she got around to the back of Myriad Year Flying Warship as her aura burst out, she prepared her killer move.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan’s cold snicker resounded in Myriad Year Flying Warship: "Oh Heavenly Court, you have already been trapped, can’t you sense it?"

Before he finished his words, stone lotus island erupted with a bright light, tens of water pillars shot up around the island.

The light and water pillars forcefully connected into the river suppression lotus sealing formation, the Central Continent Gu Immortals who were inside became dumbfounded. Someone shouted: "What is going on! We lost our control of this formation!!"

This was not a simple change of events.

Heavenly Court’s four rank eights were in deep disbelief but the facts were in front of them: This was all Fang Yuan’s trap!

"I did not waste a stone lotus island to trap you after all, this is not the place I will die, it is yours." Fang Yuan said so as the grey stone giant on the stone lotus island grew chicken wings and feathers, its hands turned into tiger claws, its mouth turned into a beak, it flew up and barged past the encirclement, paving a way for Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Realization flashed in Gu Liu Ru, he finally understood what this grey stone giant was, he shouted in shock and anger: "This is the Twelve Zodiac battle formation! To think that Fang Yuan had this method."

"This was all Fang Yuan’s trap!"

"He has already obtained Red Lotus’ true inheritance, he can control the stone lotus island!"

"This Twelve Zodiac battle formation is likely the content of the true inheritance, his time path foundation grew immensely, he is able to suppress our formation instead."

"We cannot stay here, we need to retreat!"

The four Heavenly Court rank eights discussed and decided to leave.

But the awkward thing was, this river suppression lotus sealing formation that they set up with so much work was their biggest obstacle at this moment.

"Want to leave now? Too late!" Fang Yuan’s laughter could be heard inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, daybreak swords flew out and shot towards Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform and Shark Flow Lever.

The grey stone giant growled loudly and pounced at Present and Past Pavilion.

Present and Past Pavilion had torrential waves around it but the grey stone giant ignored that, it advanced and slammed down with its fist.

The grey stone giant was just too big, its fist was larger than Present and Past Pavilion itself.

Before the fist landed, sounds of tiger and dragon roars resounded in the battlefield.

The might of the fist was simply destructive and unrestrained!

Feng Jiu Ge squinted while the other Gu Immortals were fearful, against this fist, they felt like the world was collapsing, any attempts to dodge it was futile.

They could not dodge!

Boom!!

An intense explosion resounded as Present and Past Pavilion crumbled at the impact of the grey stone giant’s fist.

The injuries and deaths inside were severe, Feng Jiu Ge barely managed to escape in a sorry state.

Moment Stage!

At the crucial moment, Moment Stage teleported over and took in Feng Jiu Ge.

The grey stone giant completely ignored the Moment Stage that was nearby, it turned around towards Sun and Moon Temple.

Sun and Moon Temple was a time path Immortal Gu House of Spirit Affinity House, it was weaker than the rest, when the grey stone giant approached, Sun and Moon Temple could not escape in time.

The giant was too fast, it was inside the River of Time and had the power of the stone lotus island boosting it, its current battle strength was simply unheard of!

Boom!!

With a second explosion, Sun and Moon Temple shattered, most of the Gu Immortals inside died.

"No!!" Gu Liu Ru gritted his teeth, his eyes were red from anger, his body was shaking from hatred.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were no longer as confident as before, they wanted to escape for their lives now.

The grey stone giant’s battle strength made them feel deep despair!

Eastern Sea, above qi sea.

The Gu Immortals were very excited as they looked at Qi Sea Ancestor and the owner of the black soul sea area, Zhang Yin.

Zhang Yin was a lone cultivator with rank eight cultivation level, everyone knew him in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.

But they did not expect that he would challenge Qi Sea Ancestor. Although thinking about it, it was not strange, back then, the fight between Duke Long and Qi Sea Ancestor was only witnessed by Song Qi Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng, and these two were righteous path Gu Immortals.

Under everyone’s gaze, Qi Sea Ancestor smiled lightly: "Gu Immortal Zhang Yin, you are very courageous, but will you be able to handle one move from me?"

Zhang Yin smiled arrogantly: "Ancestor, you underestimate me, not just one move.... ugh."

He suddenly stopped as the other Gu Immortals’ expressions changed.

Instantly, they felt the entire world buzzing as countless qi currents gathered from all over the place.

Within all the surroundings, pressure intensified.

The immortals’ pupils shrunk, cold sweat flowed down as they felt unparalleled pressure, they were like insects trapped in amber, fragile and helpless.

"What killer move is this?"

"Is this Qi Sea Ancestor’s method?"

"We are merely feeling the side effect, what pressure is Zhang Yin, who is bearing the brunt of the attack, feeling?"

The immortals looked over, Zhang Yin’s face turned red, he did not move in the air, his eyes were bulging as he struggled, he only trembled as he could not break free.

The immortals were all shaken.

A loud sound could be heard from above their heads.

The Eastern Sea immortals quickly looked up and all of their faces turned pale as paper.

A huge hand completely made of qi currents was translucent and pale-white, it extended an enormous distance, shrouding the skies itself!

The giant hand pressed down as all of the Eastern Sea immortals felt suffocated, it was as if a mountain was crashing down upon them.

"What sort of power is this!"

"If I were not here personally, I would never believe it."

"I’m afraid this strength is on par with rank nine?"

"Qi Sea Ancestor!!"

At the banquet, many Gu Immortals stood up uncontrollably, their bodies shook as fear overwhelmed them.

Zhang Yin shouted with all his strength, his entire body was radiating dark energy as mild lightning flashed weakly, he could not escape, he was trapped and fixed in the air.

Seeing this, Song Qi Yuan and the other rank eight Gu Immortals were all incredibly shocked and fearful.

"It looks like Zhang Yin has used his full strength, but he cannot escape at all?"

"Is he going to die?!"

"Qi Sea Ancestor’s battle strength is so terrifying. Does he wants to leave a deep impression on us and use Zhang Yin’s life to raise his reputation in Eastern Sea?"

It was unimaginable, a rank eight Gu Immortal was completely helpless against Qi Sea Ancestor!

But the truth was right here, Song Qi Yuan and the other Eastern Sea Gu Immortals had to believe it.

As the qi current hand approached Zhang Yin, it slowly disintegrated and went past Zhang Yin, slamming into qi sea.

There was no heaven shaking explosion, after the qi current hand came into contact with qi sea, it quickly scattered and fused into the sea.

Zhang Yin regained freedom, he felt deep lingering fear as his clothes were filled with sweat, he had a fearful look as he stared with wide eyes, breathing roughly.

"Look at qi sea!" Song Yi Shi shouted.

Everyone turned to look, the treacherous and turbulent qi sea filled with countless spirals had been completely calmed, it was like a mirror now!

Eastern Sea’s immortals were very shocked, many of them opened their mouths but could not speak.

"Ancestor’s divine might, I have fully experienced it." Zhang Yin let out a breath of air as he paid his respects: "Thank you for sparing me."

Qi Sea Ancestor was still sitting at the main seat, his eyes were barely open as he waved his sleeves lightly: "Take a seat."

"Thank you." Zhang Yin took his seat amidst the silence.

Many of the Eastern Sea immortals were still standing, those who were seated were not feeling any better, they were all like statues.

Qi Sea Ancestor defeated Zhang Yin in one move, he had truly intimidated all of them.

"Ancestor has divine might!" After a while, Song Qi Yuan reacted as he stood up, respectfully praising.

"Ancestor has divine might!" Shen Cong Sheng also stood up and praised with respect.

"Ancestor has divine might. Ancestor has divine might." Countless Eastern Sea Gu Immortals stood up to pay their respects, they were completely in awe.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly as he said: "Everyone, take a seat, the banquet is beginning."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The stone lotus island ambush that Fang Yuan planned had already ended.

A grand light filled Heavenly Court, but in Central Great Hall, the atmosphere was grim.

"At the crucial moment, Gu Liu Ru blocked Myriad Year Flying Warship while risking his life, I managed to live because of him." Nine Spiritual Fairy said this as she coughed blood again.

Tears were in her eyes, the scene of Gu Liu Ru defending them with his life surfaced in her mind again.

Nine Spiritual Fairy had a beautiful face, she liked to wear a long robe and wave her sleeves around, she had a graceful aura but now, she was covered in blood, wounds were all over her body, her sleeves were cut and dangling. Nine

Spiritual Fairy’s thin body was completely fragile at this moment, covered in this large robe.

In this battle in the River of Time, Heavenly Court had the absolute advantage at the start, but later, they lost completely, the six Immortal Gu Houses were destroyed, only two Gu Immortals, Nine Spiritual Fairy and Feng Jiu Ge, managed to escape.

Feng Jiu Ge was in the hall too, he lost his cool demeanor at this moment, his eyes turned dim as they lost their light, he showed an expression of loss and perplexity.

Fairy Zi Wei sighed to herself, she instructed them to go recuperate.

She learned of the result of this battle already, she called for Nine Spiritual Fairy so that she could gain more information about the minor details.

"To think that Fang Yuan obtained the stone lotus island long ago, how did he do it? We did not sense it at all." Fairy Zi Wei deduced quietly, she could not find any answer.

Because of this, Heavenly Court lost this battle completely, they fell into Fang Yuan’s planned trap, their losses were severe.

Duke Long smiled bitterly: "The truth is, we had guessed that Fang Yuan might have a Red Lotus true inheritance already. But in the previous battle, Myriad Year Flying Warship was forced to escape from us, it was useless even if they tried to make use of the River of Time’s dangerous terrain. Now it seems that Fang Yuan had purposely did that so as to lure our attention, he wanted to fight for Dragon Palace and also to prepare for this battle, to make us underestimate him. This is truly a devious and scheming demon!"

"Then, when did Fang Yuan obtain Red Lotus’ true inheritance? So be it if he got it recently, but if he obtained this stone lotus island long ago, that would be a very scary situation." Fairy Zi Wei thought about it as she felt a chill down her spine.

Right now, Heavenly Court was facing a difficult situation.

However, no matter how tough the situation was, Heavenly Court had to face it directly, they could not try to dodge it.

Duke Long said solemnly: "Even if Fang Yuan obtained one Red Lotus true inheritance and gained Twelve Zodiac battle formation from it, we need to continue putting our forces into the River of Time!"

This was only natural.

There was more than one Red Lotus true inheritance, if Fang Yuan obtained a second or third one, he would become even scarier.

From Heavenly Court’s perspective, the River of Time was an important area they had to guard, Red Lotus true inheritance was something they had to obtain. This situation might only change after they successfully repair fate Gu, but now, Heavenly Court had to start all over again, after losing six Immortal Gu Houses, they would have to build six, or even ten more!

Fairy Zi Wei nodded slowly, she had a serious expression, she shared the same opinion as Duke Long on this matter.

"But..." Fairy Zi Wei showed a look of difficulty.

There were problems in this too.

If they wanted to send more time path battle strength into the River of Time, the best method was to send time path Gu Immortals.

But because of Red Lotus Demon Venerable, Heavenly Court’s foundation in time path Gu Immortals was very weak.

Without any time path great experts, they could only make up for it using time path Immortal Gu Houses.

Heavenly Court lost six time path Immortal Gu Houses, the losses were too severe, they needed to rebuild these houses and needed a large number of time path Immortal Gu for them.

Even though Nine Spiritual Fairy and Feng Jiu Ge were still alive, they did not bring back many Immortal Gu.

Heavenly Court needed to refine many time path Immortal Gu to rebuild their Immortal Gu Houses.

And in this aspect, Gu refinement immortal materials were not a problem.

Heavenly Court had an immensely deep foundation of over millions of years, it was not for show. Heavenly Court’s three million years worth of accumulation was split into three treasuries of ’early, middle, late’. Each one represented a million years of foundation, they had placed all of their gains in that time period into the respective inventories.

Any one of these million years treasury had more things in it than any of the ten great ancient sects.

In order to refine rank eight fortune rivalling heaven Gu, Old Ancestor Xue Hu went bankrupt. Even with Fang Yuan’s current foundation, he did not dare to refine rank eight Immortal Gu. When normal super forces try to refine a rank eight Immortal Gu, they would expend a good deal of their foundation. But for Heavenly Court, not just one, even if they refined ten of them, their foundation would not be shaken.

Heavenly Court did not lack immortal materials at all, they lacked refinement path great experts.

Yuan Qiong Du was a refinement path expert, he had been in charge of repairing fate Gu. But asking him to refine time path Immortal Gu on top of this was just too much for him.

He was just one person, he had limited time and energy.

"If one or two refinement path experts could wake up in the immortal graveyard, it would be great." Fairy Zi Wei thought to herself, regrettably, the immortal graveyard was not subject to external influence, she could not wake up any Gu Immortal she wanted.

Duke Long also noticed this problem, he thought about it and said: "Then rally the ten great ancient sects, we can even unify the refinement path Gu Immortals of other sects and send them all here, get them to work together and refine time path Immortal Gu."

Fairy Zi Wei nodded, Yuan Qiong Du had important matters to do, he was in charge of repairing fate Gu, Heavenly Court had to do this now to deal with the current problem.

Fairy Zi Wei sighed internally: "If we had succeeded in invading Lang Ya Sect and taken control of it, that would be great. This would not be a problem for us now, it was a pity that Lang Ya Sect ended up in Fang Yuan’s hands."

Heavenly Court had lost that great first step and now, they were facing problems because of it. In contrast, by using his refinement path advantage, Fang Yuan was giving problems to Heavenly Court now. Yuan Qiong Du could feel this most deeply.

Fairy Zi Wei and Duke Long had grim emotions.

Fang Yuan’s victory in the River of Time was a devastating blow to Heavenly Court.

But the River of Time was just one aspect, Heavenly Court’s overall situation was worsening.

In Northern Plains, Longevity Heaven had been trying to unify and gather the whole strength of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

In Western Desert, Fang Di Chang refined Divine Bean Palace and was bringing Fang clan to rise up as the leader.

In Southern Border, even though Wu Yong was close to Heavenly Court, Beacon Towers were being built everywhere, it was becoming a problem for Heavenly Court.

As for Eastern Sea...

"According to our newest information, Qi Sea Ancestor defeated Zhang Yin using a single move, Zhang Yin is a famous Eastern Sea rank eight lone immortal, but he could not fight back at all. Qi Sea Ancestor’s battle strength is very terrifying, after this battle, his reputation soared, even more Eastern Sea Gu Immortals attend his banquet now." Fairy Zi Wei showed a worried look.

Duke Long nodded: "Even for me, achieving this would not be easy. It seems that Qi Sea Ancestor has gotten stronger, according to his words, his battle strength rose after comprehending Primordial Origin true inheritance."

After defeating Zhang Yin, Fang Yuan declared frankly to the Eastern Sea immortals: His battle strength had risen once again, it was because he obtained Primordial Origin’s qi path true inheritance from Heavenly Court.

Duke Long continued to speak: "Since Qi Sea Ancestor said that, it shows that he is close to Heavenly Court, but still wants to remain as a neutral party. This person can be swayed towards us."

Qi Sea Ancestor had stayed in seclusion for so long even though he had strength that rivaled Duke Long, it showed that he had no ambitions to begin with.

Even if he had ambitions now, he was definitely more attracted to Heavenly Court, which had the complete true inheritance of Primordial Origin.

As Qi Sea Ancestor stayed as a neutral party, Duke Long and Fairy Zi Wei became more assured of his stand.

It was not just Qi Sea Ancestor’s personality, but also his lifespan that affected their judgment.

Lifespan was the biggest element that restricted a Gu Immortal great expert.

Qi Sea Ancestor looked like someone who was going to die soon, after all, using lifespan Gu would allow one to regain their youthful appearance.

He was so old already, he likely used many lifespan extension methods. These methods all had flaws, they would make lifespan Gu ineffective.

Duke Long did not have much longer to live, but he believed that Qi Sea Ancestor was in a similar state.

Fairy Zi Wei suddenly said: "Since Qi Sea Ancestor said that, we can send Gu Immortals to openly attend his banquet. Even if we did not receive his invitation, now that the entire world knows that Qi Sea Ancestor took our inheritance, even if we suggest a transaction, he cannot reject our visit."

Duke Long agreed with this suggestion, even if it failed, they would successfully probe Qi Sea Ancestor.

Right now, the regions’ changes were not good for Heavenly Court, only Eastern Sea was relatively calmer. Heavenly Court wanted to make use of this, to ensure that at least Eastern Sea’s forces were on neutral terms with them.

Eastern Sea, above qi sea.

Ever since Fang Yuan defeated Zhang Yin, the number of people visiting this place had increased, the number of people attending his banquet multiplied rapidly.

The Gu Immortals who came would first go to pay respects to Qi Sea Ancestor, to take a look at this number one Eastern Sea Gu Immortal.

Qi Sea Ancestor and Duke Long’s battle was already known to all five regions. After defeating Zhang Yin, Qi Sea Ancestor became recognized as the number one Eastern Sea expert, nobody doubted him anymore.

The entire world was deceived by Fang Yuan.

Zhang Yin was one of the Four Dragon Generals, he cooperated with Fang Yuan and because of the immortal formation under qi sea, Qi Sea Ancestor’s attack showed an incredibly powerful aura.

Nobody knew that Zhang Yin was under control, even Duke Long did not know of Dream Token. In the previous life, he only found out the secret of the Four Dragon Generals after obtaining Dragon Palace by force.

Nobody guessed that Qi Sea Ancestor and Fang Yuan were the same person. After all, Fang Yuan only had rank seven cultivation level while Qi Sea Ancestor was a genuine rank eight. Fang Yuan tried to conceal the secret of the sovereign immortal aperture to the best of his ability, he gave up some short term benefits and obtained a much greater reward for it at this moment.

Xie Bao Shu arrived.

He was handsome and had a warm aura, he looked like a graceful young master, he was a famous lone cultivator in Eastern Sea. He had a unique method of nurturing vicissitude trees, he was once a major seller of year Gu, but Fang Yuan ruined that business. In the previous life, he had worked with You Xian Zi to snatch the moonlight mushrooms of Fairy Yue Hua.

Zui Xian Weng came too.

He was a rarely seen food path Gu Immortal, he was also the owner of Eastern Sea’s wine sea. He had a collection of countless wines, he held a wine reception every year. This time, he brought a thousand jars of top tier wines and gave them to Qi Sea Ancestor as a gift.

Seven Seas Snake Woman arrived.

This was a beautiful but dangerous woman, she was very ruthless in her actions. Even though she was a lone immortal, she owned seven sea areas, this showed her strength. At the same time, she was one of the six beauties of Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world, on par with Song Yi Shi.

Great Treasury Immortal arrived too.

This person cultivated information path, he was dressed in a gentlemanly attire, he had long sleeves that fluttered in the wind. In the previous life, he invaded Central Continent too, he stole Mi Lan Guang’s rank seven immortal material electrolytic iron starflower.

The qi sea banquet caused a storm in Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world, all sorts of people showed up one after another.

Among them, there were more lone immortals than righteous path immortals.

Eastern Sea had more lone immortals than the other four regions to begin with, and they had the most abundant resources. At the same time, the righteous path had a lot of territory that needed guarding, lone immortals could move more freely than them.

"I, Central Continent Gu Immortal Jun Shen Guang, bring a gift to meet Qi Sea Ancestor, please forgive my intrusion without an invitation." Heavenly Court’s rank eight Gu Immortal Jun Shen Guang arrived.

The banquet became silent, countless gazes looked towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan smiled and laughed in a light tone: "An esteemed guest has arrived, what forgiveness do you speak of? The sea is wide and draws in all tributaries linked to it, my Eastern Sea is the same, how can we not have this bit of tolerance? Please take a seat."

Fang Yuan waved his sleeve, a seat was formed again. Even though it was located at a good position, it was below the Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals’ seats.

Seeing this, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals’ expressions relaxed.

Eastern Sea was the most tolerant towards other regions’ Gu Immortals compared to the rest of the five regions, but they still had some sort of exclusion.

Fang Yuan had already expected Central Continent’s Gu Immortals to come here.

The truth was, he had been waiting for Heavenly Court’s envoy to come here.

Fang Yuan looked around, he saw that almost everyone was here, he started to speak: "Everyone, I have something to say."

The place became silent again, everyone held their breaths, waiting for Fang Yuan’s speech.

Jun Shen Guang saw this and became internally shocked: Qi Sea Ancestor had only appeared for such a short time but his reputation in Eastern Sea had already reached this stage!

Nobody dared to ignore a single sentence from Qi Sea Ancestor, in fact not a single phrase, or a single word.

Fang Yuan did not say a lot of things but he expressed his own political views — peaceful coexistence and mutual understanding, uphold justice and resolve conflicts.

Finally, he said: "This banquet is not to simply gather everyone here, it is also a transaction event, an auction and also a battle stage. If anyone has conflict, you can engage in a duel to resolve it, I can be the judge here with all the Eastern Sea friends witnessing it. If anyone needs resources or has anything to sell, you can step up and state your requests. Every year from now on, at this time period, I will hold qi sea banquets. Of course, I will not charge any transaction fees."

"Ancestor is wise."

"Ancestor is impartial and magnanimous, we are in deep admiration."

Eastern Sea’s immortals quickly praised.

Jun Shen Guang shook internally: Qi Sea Ancestor is using this move to increase his influence over Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world. Great strength would lead to admiration while great benefits would lead to influence and power.

Furthermore, he was going to hold qi sea banquets every year!

Jun Shen Guang could predict the qi sea banquets would get larger and larger, they would involve the entire Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world. When the five regions merge, Gu Immortals from the other regions would even come over, in time, Qi Sea Ancestor’s influence would not just affect Eastern Sea but the entire five regions!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Qi sea banquet.

Transactions were undergoing.

A Gu Immortal walked up the stage, he wore a black robe and had messy hair. He raised his head and showed his appearance, it was an Eastern Sea lone immortal, Wu Ma Yang.

He had an aquiline nose and his gaze was dark, he seemed to have an injury, he coughed while taking out a shell that was floating in the air.

The Eastern Sea immortals looked over, they recognized what it was and quickly showed disappointed expressions.

This was the shell of a small music clam, it was a rank seven immortal material.

Music clams were ordinary clams that contained sound path dao marks. When they grow to desolate beast level, their size would increase, they would become giant music clams. After becoming an ancient desolate beast, their size would shrink again, becoming small music clams.

The small music clam that Wu Ma Yang took out was dead and had no vitality, it was merely a rank seven sound path immortal material.

But Wu Ma Yang smiled coldly: "Everyone, calm down, why would I dare to embarrass myself at ancestor’s banquet? I am not selling this small music clam, but the music stored inside."

Saying so, Wu Ma Yang cupped his fists at Fang Yuan: "Ancestor, please pardon my rude action."

Qi Sea Ancestor nodded lightly.

In truth, Fang Yuan and Wu Ma Yang had met long ago. Back then in Eastern Sea, Fang Yuan sold bone spike Immortal Gu to Wu Ma Yang.

After getting Fang Yuan’s agreement, he used his method and opened a slit in the small music clam.

Instantly, everyone heard a crying sound emitting from within it.

This voice was very weak, it was like a sobbing sound that had a music rhythm to it, if someone tried to investigate it, they would be restrained by this voice, they would get weaker and unable to resist it. Mortals would definitely fall prey to it, even Gu Immortals would get lightly injured or die if it was a severe situation.

However, after Wu Ma Yang let it emit its sound for a while, he shut it tight, the small music clam became silent, many Gu Immortals sighed in pity before alerting themselves, they had been affected by it.

"This is rank seven immortal material ghostly wail."

"Ancestor has great knowledge, I am willing to exchange this ghostly wail for any rank seven dark path immortal material of equal value. It would be best if you have any black hole wood or dark thread algae." Wu Ma Yang announced.

The Gu Immortals below were silent for a while before someone said: "I have dark thread algae."

Wu Ma Yang nodded in joy, he was about to answer when someone said: "I have black hole wood, I will exchange for your ghostly wail."

After some negotiation, Wu Ma Yang left the stage in satisfaction.

In the recent years, due to the five regions’ Earth Trenches emerging, Eastern Sea gained an abundant source of cultivation resources even though they had the fewest Earth Trenches.

Wu Ma Yang’s ghostly wail was likely obtained from them.

Even though Eastern Sea Gu Immortals interacted often and held auctions commonly, they were mostly small events, how could they be as large as Fang Yuan’s banquet. The qi sea banquet involved the entire Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world after all!

Treasure yellow heaven’s transactions had gone up in numbers due to the Earth Trenches, but treasure yellow heaven charged a fee for every transaction done.

The transaction fee of treasure yellow heaven varied according to the intensity of the treasure light, therefore, the more valuable the transaction item, the higher the transaction fee one would have to pay.

Rank seven immortal materials were already quite valuable, Wu Ma Yang tried to save as much cost as he could.

After Wu Ma Yang walked down, another Gu Immortal went up, selling a lump of fire.

This fire was yellow inside and orange outside, it was filled with deep death energy. Once it was taken out, the surrounding air became dry like a desert, the temperature rose sharply.

"This is drought zombie flame." The Gu Immortal who sold this flame smiled.

He came from Su clan, an Eastern Sea super force, he was called Su Lun, a righteous path member.

Fang Yuan arranged them in the order of one righteous path followed by one lone immortal, this arrangement clearly took the Eastern Sea lone immortals into consideration, it was welcomed by them. And most wonderfully, he did not allocate any spots for demonic path Gu Immortals, it showed a certain political attitude of Qi Sea Ancestor.

Eastern Sea's righteous path did not get upset by this arrangement, after all, Qi Sea Ancestor was a lone cultivator in Eastern Sea himself.

The drought zombie flame caused a slight commotion, it was a rank eight level flame, Fang Yuan had to wave his hand lightly as he forced the flame to gather into a tight lump.

The temperature of the qi sea banquet gradually returned to normal.

"I am sure many people know what flame this is already. But I am not just selling the flame today, I am also adding in a drought immortal zombie lifespan extension method. This method can allow a Gu Immortal who is near their lifespan limit to use the flame and become a drought immortal zombie. I am sure everyone has heard of the drought immortal zombie, its battle strength rivals rank eight Gu Immortals."

But there was a lack of interest in this among the Gu Immortals.

Currently, everyone knew about Heavenly Court's plan to repair fate Gu. Once they succeed, immortal zombies would likely cease to exist. If fate is restored, the world would not allow dead people to exist, they would all need to remain dead.

Therefore, becoming a drought immortal zombie did not have good prospects.

After a while, a Gu Immortal asked: "Can a rank seven Gu Immortal convert into a drought immortal zombie as well?"

Su Lun nodded: "Of course, but the drought immortal zombie body would not be complete, it would only be a small drought immortal zombie, the battle strength will also be at rank seven."

He did not dare to deceive anyone, in this situation, experts were everywhere, they would likely notice the truth. By then, he would have publicly offended Qi Sea Ancestor, a rank eight great expert, at his banquet, that was a problem that Su Lun and Su clan would not want to create.

When Eastern Sea's righteous path sent representatives to this banquet, did anyone not bring gifts along with them?

In contrast, only a small portion of the lone and demonic immortals did this.

After all, Eastern Sea's righteous path forces had a lot of territory and businesses, they needed a good relationship with Qi Sea Ancestor. Meanwhile, most of the lone and demonic immortals were alone, they did not have much restraints.

Su Lun did not manage to make any trades in the end.

But a few Gu Immortals expressed their interest, they were willing to negotiate, it might be sold if the cost was lowered enough.

"This drought zombie flame likely came from Eastern Sea’s Zombie Alliance." Fang Yuan thought to himself, he had obtained the inventory list of Zombie Alliance from Shadow Sect’s inheritance, among which, there were several drought zombie flames in Eastern Sea’s Zombie Alliance headquarters.

Back then, Spectral Soul tried to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, he exposed Shadow Sect and Zombie Alliance. Spectral Soul failed, Eastern Sea’s Zombie Alliance was mobilized in the effort and reduced to nothing, it was wiped out by the combined effort of Eastern Sea’s righteous path.

Looking at the location, Su clan was one of the closest forces to Eastern Sea’s Zombie Alliance headquarters. Other than them, there was Qing Yue clan, Song clan, and Hua clan.

After the drought zombie flame, another Eastern Sea Gu Immortal walked up the stage.

He slowly walked up and took glances at Qi Sea Ancestor from time to time. He saw that Fang Yuan had no response, his eyes were shut and he was relaxed.

This Eastern Sea Gu Immortal calmed down slightly, he let out a breath of air as he said in a hoarse voice: "I came here to exchange Immortal Gu."

Saying this, he spread open his hand and revealed an Immortal Gu.

Instantly, a bloody smell spread out rapidly, many of the immortals’ hearts pounded intensely.

This was the first Immortal Gu transaction since the banquet started!

Everyone focused their attention and looked at this ladybug-like Gu, it was small and delicate, with a bright red shell and an iron-black belly and head. Listening closely, one could seem to hear a thumping heartbeat from inside the ladybug. The sound of this heartbeat was very faint, but the more one listened, the louder and louder it got, echoing with the rhythm of the heartbeat of the Gu Immortal, thus affecting the heartbeat of the Gu Immortal as well.

The immortals were a little shocked, some of the weaker rank six Gu Immortals here grunted, some had pale faces, they were evidently affected.

"What Immortal Gu is this? Even Gu Immortals got injured, while mortals definitely cannot approach it."

"It is clearly a blood path Immortal Gu."

"This Drowning Uncle is too daring, he is publicly selling a blood path Immortal Gu at the qi sea banquet, is he not afraid that Qi Sea Ancestor and the Eastern Sea righteous path members would take action?"

"Drowning Uncle is a demonic path immortal, who in Eastern Sea does not know that? Ancestor did not state that demonic immortals could get on stage but he still walked up so fearlessly."

The immortals conversed among themselves, the righteous path Gu Immortals had ugly expressions, Drowning Uncle had killed countless people, but now he was feeling trepidation too.

He cultivated water path but was specialized at dealing with water path Gu Immortals, he drowned countless mortals and even targeted many Gu Immortals of the righteous path, he was a heinous person with many sins committed.

Until now, he was still under the arrest warrant of five super forces in Eastern Sea.

During normal times, the righteous path Gu Immortals would have ganged up to attack him already, but now was the qi sea banquet, it was Qi Sea Ancestor’s event, who would dare to act rashly here?

Regarding Drowning Uncle’s matter, all the Gu Immortals turned to look at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was still calm and composed, as if he was resting, he said nothing.

After looking at Fang Yuan for a while, they gradually understood that Qi Sea Ancestor was likely not going to take action here.

Drowning Uncle became very excited, he had made the right gamble! He was greatly daring, if not, why would he go against Eastern Sea’s righteous path forces? At the same time, he was meticulous and did not take risks blindly.

"Since ancestor allowed me to join the banquet, it meant that he would not do anything to me. Otherwise, he could have done so when I arrived. Such a person is high and mighty, why would he spend effort on a small fry like me?"

Thinking so, Drowning Uncle spoke: "This is rank seven heart blood Immortal Gu, I caught it inside an Earth Trench, will anyone exchange for it?"

After a momentary silence, many Gu Immortals quickly bid for it.

But no righteous path member took part.

Blood path was created by Blood Sea Ancestor, it had flourished for a while before the five regions’ righteous path suppressed and sealed it. Blood Sea Ancestor was extremely capable, he actually set up his blood path inheritance in all five regions, causing blood path to continue existing until today, while the righteous path forces all tried to research on it secretly.

Transactions of Immortal Gu were only done through exchange for other Immortal Gu.

There was no bidding here, it only depended on what Immortal Gu Drowning Uncle wanted.

There were many Gu Immortals who wanted to exchange for it, many took out water path Immortal Gu. Water path was the most common path in Eastern Sea, the number of water path Immortal Gu was also highest in Eastern Sea.

This heart blood Immortal Gu had incredible strength just from seeing it, it would have a great effect if used in battle.

In normal situations, Gu Immortals could not cultivate many paths due to conflicting dao marks. But Eastern Sea had many Gu Immortals cultivating blood path, most of those primarily cultivated blood path, while several rank sevens and sixes cultivated it on the side.

Seeing this, Eastern Sea’s righteous path Gu Immortals had even uglier expressions.

Eastern Sea had many secluded cultivators, but to think that only heart blood Immortal Gu would cause so many blood path Gu Immortals to show themselves.

But Fang Yuan was not surprised.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, blood path was extremely popular, after the five regions merged, the number of blood path Gu Immortals rose drastically, by the time of the five regions chaotic war, blood path became a mainstream path that could not be banned anymore.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, Fang Yuan was one of these people.

"I can try to get this heart blood Immortal Gu, Song Zi Xing’s inheritance had a heart blood premonition killer move, it is most appropriate to use this heart blood Immortal Gu as the core."

Fang Yuan developed this thought, Zhang Yin started to speak: "I want this heart blood Immortal Gu, I have several rank seven water path Immortal Gu, you can pick any one of them. Furthermore, I will owe you a favor."

This was the first time a rank eight Gu Immortal had spoken in the auction, the surroundings went silent the moment he spoke.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The moment Zhang Yin spoke, because of his rank eight dominance, all the competitors backed off.

Not only could they not outbid a rank eight Gu Immortal, even if they did, they would have offended this rank eight lone immortal.

Sometimes, lone immortals were scarier than righteous path rank eights, they were unrestrained and free, they did not have so many concerns like the righteous path members.

As for why Zhang Yin had an interest in heart blood Immortal Gu, that was his business, the Gu Immortals could not ask him why.

As the Heavenly Court representative, Jun Shen Guang watched this with deep worry.

Qi Sea Ancestor hosted this banquet that publicly traded Immortal Gu and immortal materials, it satisfied the needs of many Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

After this banquet, Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals would have an abundance of suitable cultivation resources, their battle strength would rise sharply.

This was great news for Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world, but for Heavenly Court, it was not so good.

Especially after Qi Sea Ancestor declared earlier that this qi sea banquet would be held annually! That was very frequent, Jun Shen Guang could not help but think: Is this Qi Sea Ancestor too free and bored? He wants to hold banquets every year, isn’t it tiring? Different from treasure yellow heaven and other auctions, he is not collecting any fees, what is he after then?

"It seems that Qi Sea Ancestor is not without ambitions, he is trying to raise his reputation. Making use of the qi sea banquets to solifidy his influence and reputation every year, in the future, whether he joins Heavenly Court or stays in Eastern Sea, he will benefit greatly."

"I heard that Qi Sea Ancestor has many descendants, in the future, when these people roam Eastern Sea under Qi Sea Ancestor’s name, they will be well received by every force they visit."

As a Heavenly Court rank eight, Jun Shen Guang was astute, he gradually saw through some arrangements and plans.

At this moment, information came from Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei told Jun Shen Guang that he had to cooperate with other Gu Immortals and buy heart blood Immortal Gu without raising any suspicions.

Jun Shen Guang frowned.

He was not confused about why Heavenly Court wanted this blood path Immortal Gu, the truth was, Heavenly Court had been researching blood path all along, with great success.

Jun Shen Guang felt troubled as he transmitted secretly: "The situation has changed, earlier, Zhang Yin took action and bid for this heart blood Immortal Gu using a high price."

Fairy Zi Wei who was in Heavenly Court hesitated for a moment, she arranged: "Then continue to observe them, I will ask others to do it."

Jun Shen Guang was a Heavenly Court representative, if he fought with Zhang Yin over a blood path Immortal Gu, Heavenly Court’s reputation would take a huge hit.

In Fairy Zi Wei’s original plan, he was only meant to help out.

Heavenly Court placed great importance on this qi sea banquet, they sent people like Jun Shen Guang to come openly, but there were also secret members that were hidden among the rank six and seven immortals.

"Haha, this is a coincidence, I am interested in this heart blood Immortal Gu as well." Yang Jun suddenly spoke.

Right when Zhang Yin thought that he was about to succeed, this Eastern Sea rank eight lone immortal also joined the competition.

This change of events stunned many immortals, even Fang Yuan became slightly puzzled as surprise flashed in his eyes.

In Fang Yuan’s previous life, Yang Jun participated in the battle over Dragon Palace.

He had an Immortal Gu House called Fragrant Treasure Horse Chariot, while chasing after Dragon Palace, he found Fang Yuan’s traces and ruined his chances of sneaking up on it.

Afterwards, Yang Jun suddenly helped out Duke Long and helped him to suppress the rank eight Immortal Gu House’s resistance, before capturing it.

After that, Yang Jun went into concealment and vanished without a trace.

During the battle of repairing fate Gu, Yang Jun did not appear to help Heavenly Court.

During the battle, Heavenly Court was in a difficult spot, there was no way they would have any forces left unused. But Yang Jun did not show up, this showed that he was not a Heavenly Court member, he likely had some sort of agreement with Heavenly Court and would only act once for them.

"Then, is he working for Heavenly Court now?" Fang Yuan had a thought that flashed by.

This was not easy to deduce.

Even with Fang Yuan’s deep wisdom path attainment, due to the lack of clues and evidence, he could not be sure of it.

Regardless of the situation, Fang Yuan instructed Zhang Yin to act more forcefully and try to obtain this Immortal Gu.

Thus, Zhang Yin smiled: "Yang Jun, the truth is I really like this Immortal Gu. If you insist, maybe we can spar to decide this?"

Yang Jun frowned as he thought: "Zhang Yin wants this Immortal Gu even if he has to fight? Qi Sea Ancestor was able to defeat him in one move because of his overwhelming strength! But if I fight him, it will likely be a draw."

"Sigh, do I continue this and help Heavenly Court?"

Yang Jun fell into hesitation.

When he was at his lowest, he received Heavenly Court’s help, he owed them one favor, promising he would do one thing for them.

This favor was just too heavy to bear, it became Yang Jun’s worry eventually.

Yang Jun thought about it, he decided to repay Heavenly Court’s favor and resolve this agreement.

"This is a good chance, if I do not act here, during the five regions chaotic war, Heavenly Court will ask me to deal with Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals and I won’t be able to reject them."

"Thankfully, I know about Drowning Uncle’s situation."

Thinking about this, Yang Jun smiled: "Zhang Yin, don’t be so impatient. It is not important to spar, this heart blood Immortal Gu belongs to Drowning Uncle, I am sure that this water path Immortal Gu I am offering will satisfy him greatly."

Saying so, Yang Jun took out an Immortal Gu.

Drowning Uncle saw it and beame overjoyed, he shouted: "Let’s do it, I’ll exchange for this Immortal Gu."

Zhang Yin was dazed.

What could he do now? Everyone was watching, he could not snatch it, otherwise, Qi Sea Ancestor would need to stop him.

Even though they were in cahoots, they needed to act under their respective roles now.

They had to keep up the act after all.

Zhang Yin could not take action, neither could Qi Sea Ancestor.

Right at this moment, Yang Jun stood up from his seat, he grabbed onto heart blood Immortal Gu and tossed the water path Immortal Gu to the other party.

The immortals showed varying expressions.

Yang Jun moved extremely quickly, he had evidently used an immortal killer move, wasn’t he too impatient?

Yang Jun let out a breath of air, he relaxed as he sat down, placing heart blood Immortal Gu into treasure yellow heaven.

Buying or selling Immortal Gu in treasure yellow heaven was very costly, but Heavenly Court did not mind it with their huge assets.

Fairy Zi Wei obtained heart blood Immortal Gu and quickly gave it to someone else.

This person cultivated within Demon Judgment Board all his time, after getting heart blood Immortal Gu, he shouted in joy: "Success has arrived!"

He got out of Demon Judgment Board, all the surroundings surged with blood light, fragrance spread as clouds resounded with immortal music, bloody petals flew in the sky like raining flowers.

He was tall and had a handsome face, he smiled lightly and had a headband on his forehead, there was a lump of blood light behind his head.

A formless flight of stairs seemed to have formed in the air as he walked down slowly.

Fang Zheng was cultivating in front of the Demon Judgment Board, upon seeing this, he knelt on the ground and said: "Fang Zheng greets master!"

"Get up, my disciple. I have gotten a crucial Immortal Gu, the blood path method that I conceptualized my entire life finally has its core and foundation. After staying in this Demon Judgment Board for hundreds of years, it is finally time for me to leave."

This rank eight Gu Immortal spoke warmly, he stretched his arm as a formless force helped Gu Yue Fang Zheng to stand up.

Fang Zheng cupped his fist again: "Congratulations, master."

Ever since the Eastern Sea journey, he got captured by Shen Cong Sheng and was brought back to Heavenly Court afterwards.

Qin Ding Ling observed his luck, she suggested to Fairy Zi Wei that he could be the next Demon Judgment Board Lord.

After Fairy Zi Wei discussed with Duke Long, they agreed to this.

Fang Zheng thus came to the Demon Judgment Board to cultivate, he became the disciple of the current Demon Judgment Board Lord.

Demon Judgment Board was a rank eight Immortal Gu House with a long history. When Blood Sea Ancestor caused chaos in the five regions, Heavenly Court sensed danger and a Heavenly Court predecessor followed the revelation of fate Gu, finding a wild blood relation Immortal Gu.

Blood relation Immortal Gu was rank eight, after Heavenly Court captured it, they added it to Demon Judgment Board. This caused every single blood path cultivator in the world to be detected by Demon Judgment Board as long as they were not rank nine.

Heavenly Court relied on the information from Demon Judgment Board to execute their plans and exterminate the budding blood path trend in Central Continent.

Furthermore, they passed the news from Demon Judgment Board to the other four regions, allowing their righteous path forces to deal with blood path more effectively.

Blood path had not flourished, it was suppressed fiercely, Demon Judgment Board was the key contributor to this.

After Blood Sea Ancestor created blood path, Heavenly Court had been researching it, their gains were the greatest compared to any force in the world.

The current Demon Judgment Board Lord, Red Heart Traveler, was a sole blood path cultivator, he had been in closed cultivation in Demon Judgment Board for years, researching and gaining great results, he allowed Heavenly Court’s blood path to be far ahead of the five regions.

Spiritual light flashed as Nine Spiritual Fairy suddenly appeared, she went to Red Heart Traveler: "Red Heart, I was ordered to come here and gather with you, we are going to Western Desert to find trouble with Fang clan."

Red Heart Traveler nodded slightly, instructing Fang Zheng before he left: "Demon Judgment Board cannot be without an owner at all times, my disciple, you will take over as Demon Judgment Board Lord after I leave. My inheritance is inside the board, not just that, the cultivation experiences of the past generations of Board Lords are also inside. From now on, you will cultivate inside Demon Judgment Board, it will benefit you greatly, I hope you can work hard and not slacken, don’t waste this fortune."

"Yes master, I will remember your teachings, I will never forget it." Gu Yue Fang Zheng quickly replied.

"Mm." Red Heart Traveler nodded before turning around and leaving.

He and Gu Yue Fang Zheng had a very shallow relationship, if Fairy Zi Wei had not given orders, he would not have taken him in as a disciple.

Their relationship however, provided him a huge help.

"Luck is truly profound and mystical. Earlier, Senior Qin Ding Ling told me that if I accept Fang Zheng as my disciple, once we become master and disciple in name, I would be able to use his luck to aid in my own cultivation."

"To think that I gained so much in just a short period of time, before leaving, I should go and visit Senior Qin Ding Ling first." Red Heart Traveler said with deep emotions.

Nine Spiritual Fairy nodded.

They were in no rush for time.

After Qin Ding Ling returned to Heavenly Court, she stayed in a specialized Immortal Gu palace.

After the two met Qin Ding Ling, she inspected their luck, Nine Spiritual Fairy’s luck had nine spiritual lights, they were clear and clean, like leaves after withstanding a storm, they brought benefit to the world, giving off an aura of prosperity.

Red Heart Traveler’s luck was like a sun or blood pill, it was round and perfect without any flaws, it had just emerged from the clouds, grand and vast, it was truly an amazing sight. This showed that after years of closed cultivation, Red Heart Traveler had finally emerged to travel the world, he was going to spread his radiance throughout the five regions.

Qin Ding Ling smiled as she told them that this would be a smooth trip, as long as they followed the plan, nothing bad would happen.

After the two said goodbye to Qin Ding Ling, they flew in the sky, passing by Embroidered Tower, they saw a Gu Immortal stationed there in a daze, not moving at all.

Nine Spiritual Fairy looked down at Red Heart Traveler as she sighed: "This is Feng Jiu Ge, after the loss in the River of Time, he became this despondent."

Red Heart Traveler shook his head as his expression turned grim: "He is comprehending his Dao now, when I was in closed cultivation in the board, I often fell into this state, we cannot interrupt him."

Nine Spiritual Fairy showed a look of surprise: "Oh? No wonder Fairy Zi Wei is letting him do as he pleases. I am embarrassed, I inherited the nine spiritual transformations inheritance, I have cultivated it wholeheartedly and did not modify it, so I was unaware of this."

Red Heart Traveler consoled her: "Your nine spiritual transformations is the greatest transformation path inheritance in Heavenly Court, it has been modified by countless generations of predecessors, it is near the point of perfection that cannot be modified any further."

Even though he cultivated blood path, he had an extremely gentle temperament, he was as soothing as the spring winds.

Nine Spiritual Fairy smiled: "Back then, when master gave me the true inheritance, he said my aptitude was insufficient. Compared to geniuses like you, I can only feel admiration and envy."

The two immortals talked and laughed as they left Central Heaven Gate, entering white heaven and going towards Western Desert.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Eastern Sea.

Swish swish swish!

Waves crashed onto the rocks by the island shore, bursting into white bubbles upon impact.

Wicked winds howled, the sky was dark.

This uninhabited island was not eye-catching in the huge Eastern Sea, but it actually hid four Gu Immortals.

The four Gu Immortals were injured, one was lying down, either dead or alive, the other three were sitting and trying to heal their injuries.

A moment later, someone coughed as he spat out mouthfuls of blood.

"Lord!" The other two immortals who were still conscious quickly stopped healing their injuries as they gathered towards him.

The person coughing blood was Miao Ming Shen.

This Gu Immortal cultivated space path, he had rank seven cultivation level, he was famous among Eastern Sea’s lone immortals, he had a huge network and influence.

Miao Ming Shen was neither tall nor short, neither fat nor thin. In terms of appearance, he looked ordinary, only his flat and wide nose left a heavy impression on others.

In terms of appearance, he was unassuming. But he was an ambitious person, being very good at building relationships, he had a lot of charisma. Three Eastern Sea lone immortals, Immortal Hua Die, Feng Jiang, and Gui Qi Ye all looked to Miao Ming Shen as their leader, the four were a group of Gu Immortals with common interests.

But now, Gui Qi Ye was unconscious, his body was covered in a poisonous purple color, he was in great danger.

Miao Ming Shen wiped the blood off his face as he spoke with a pale expression: "My injuries... cough cough.. are not an issue! Gui Qi Ye’s condition is more severe."

"That’s right, Gui Qi Ye was hit by the ice poison starfish, we do not have the way to heal him." Immortal Hua Die was very worried.

Feng Jiang’s expression was cold as ice: "The ice poison starfish might have a troublesome poison, but I’ve heard that Su Chen and Fairy Jiu Yue can heal it."

Miao Ming Shen shook his head and sighed: "Fairy Jiu Yue has some relationship with Ren Xiu Ping while Su Chen is attending the qi sea banquet, we cannot go and expose our identities and secrets. We can only rely on ourselves to heal him. I intend to use the extreme time pole to exchange for underworld yellow water and cleanse the poison of the ice poison starfish."

"Lord..." Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang were both moved.

Miao Ming Shen laughed: "Just one rank eight immortal material to save Gui Qi Ye, it is worth the price. Speaking of which, we need to thank that demon Fang Yuan, if he did not defeat Heavenly Court this time, they would not have purchased time path immortal materials from treasure yellow heaven so frantically."

Immortal Hua Die nodded as she sighed: "Indeed, that demon Fang Yuan actually obtained a Red Lotus true inheritance, he is able to control the stone lotus island, Heavenly Court suffered a great defeat, their losses were too severe!"

Feng Jiang was a little worried: "This demon Fang Yuan is too crafty, Heavenly Court is without options against him. Now that Fang Yuan has a Red Lotus true inheritance, he is finally a huge influence. If he is not stopped, this Fang Yuan will become more terrifying, the entire world will be threatened by him."

Immortal Hua Die smiled: "Feng, you are worrying too much, how can any of us deal with a powerful person like Fang Yuan, the world is so huge, will we ever meet him? Even if heaven collapses, giants will hold up the sky. Heavenly Court will not let him off, we just need to watch this quietly."

This time, Fang Yuan used the stone lotus island to cause great harm to Heavenly Court, he naturally did not waste this chance, he put up the video of Heavenly Court losing in treasure yellow heaven, letting the entire world view it.

This way, Fang Yuan’s reputation and prestige rose again, while Heavenly Court’s fame was heavily damaged.

It was logical that Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang knew about this situation.

But what they did not know was, Fang Yuan had disguised as Chu Ying and got close to them, he saved their lives before.

Miao Ming Shen sighed deeply to himself.

He had deep ambitions, he was not willing to lead a normal life.

Otherwise, he would not create a wide network and many connections, he even got the loyalty of Feng Jiang, Immortal Hua Die, and Gui Qi Ye.

As an ambitious Gu Immortal, he had a complex feeling towards Fang Yuan's rise and immense strength.

Fang Yuan's rise was too fast, it had not been a hundred years, he already went from a mortal Gu Master to a rank seven Gu Immortal.

And how long did Miao Ming Shen take?

Hundreds of years!

In just this last period of time, Miao Ming Shen watched the rise of Fang Yuan, it was like a drama that played out before him.

Except he was not the main character.

He felt that both he and Fang Yuan were rank seven Gu Immortals, it was just that Fang Yuan had a rank eight Immortal Gu House and controlled the stone lotus island, which resulted in his victory over Heavenly Court.

But what about himself?

Miao Ming Shen looked at himself, he was truly pathetic!

He was heavily injured, Gui Qi Ye was on the verge of death while Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die were both injured. The cause of this was his enemy Ren Xiu Ping, who aggressively chased after them.

He was truly full of problems both internally and externally.

At this moment, Miao Ming Shen even questioned himself, was he wrong in trying to expand his network these years, was he wrong in getting the loyalty of these three immortals after so much hard work? If he was not wrong, why did he end up in this state?

He thought of Qi Sea Ancestor next.

Qi Sea Ancestor held his qi sea banquet and invited the Gu Immortals of Eastern Sea, it was such a huge event that Miao Ming Shen had heard of it long ago, he wanted to attend it. But because of Ren Xiu Ping, he had to hide himself, he had lost this opportunity as a result.

Miao Ming Shen felt deep admiration and envy towards Qi Sea Ancestor.

"If I can follow Qi Sea Ancestor's example and cultivate in seclusion, would I be able to get stronger, would I avoid suffering from the devious schemes of Ren Xiu Ping?"

Miao Ming Shen gritted his teeth, he quickly dispelled this thought that wavered his determination.

He let out a breath of air, he said to Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die: "Fang

Yuan is having a good life, he is backed by several venerables and does not lack cultivation resources, he is also an otherworldly demon and has control of Spring Autumn Cicada."

After pausing for a while, he added: "He is far beyond us, let’s save Old Gui first before we leave this place."

Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die nodded in agreement.

Miao Ming Shen immediately connected to treasure yellow heaven and used the extreme time pole to exchange for underworld yellow water.

The transaction process was very smooth and no unexpected mishaps occurred.

In the previous life, Heavenly Court not only occupied the River of Time to restrict Fang Yuan from finding the stone lotus islands, they even worked with Southern Border’s righteous path to suppress Fang Yuan in treasure yellow heaven, stopping his businesses and aggressively buying time path immortal materials.

But in this life, Heavenly Court was in a much poorer state. Even though they still allied with Southern Border’s righteous path and suppressed Fang Yuan’s businesses in treasure yellow heaven, just their loss in the River of Time made them loss a huge amount of Immortal Gu, they needed to try to refine these time path Immortal Gu rapidly, they needed to refine them before Fang Yuan tried doing so.

Thus, in this life, even though Heavenly Court did not lack time path immortal materials in their inventory, they intensified their actions of purchasing time path immortal materials in treasure yellow heaven.

Miao Ming Shen obtained the underworld yellow water much earlier than in the previous life.

Of course, he did not know the cause of it.

Next, Miao Ming Shen used the underworld yellow water to cleanse Gui Qi Ye’s entire body.

He used just the right amount, after all, this water was also corrosive on an undefended Gu Immortal body.

Gui Qi Ye was completely cleansed of the poison, he slowly woke up and thanked Miao Ming Shen.

Miao Ming Shen said some words of encouragement as Gui Qi Ye’s eyes turned red from gratitude.

The four finally had the time to catch a breather, they started to think about their situation, how would they get out of this and deal with that accursed Ren Xiu Ping!

The four of them were just not enough.

Ren Xiu Ping was an enslavement path expert, he could fight a group on his own, this time, there were more than just him around, Ren Xiu Ping’s group was far stronger and more numerous than Miao Ming Shen’s group.

Gui Qi Ye pondered and said: "The reason why Ren Xiu Ping targeted us is because lord has the method to enter the blue dragon whale, it concerns Paradise Earth’s true inheritance. Right now, we need to use this secret and invite allies to explore that Paradise Earth true inheritance before Ren Xiu Ping. If we are late and Ren Xiu Ping spreads news of this, not only will we lose our initiative, we will also be the target of all the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals!"

Miao Ming Shen nodded in agreement.

Even though he did not like it, this was the only way now.

Regarding the secret of the blue dragon whale, it was better if fewer people knew of it. It was a pity that Ren Xiu Ping plotted against Miao Ming Shen, news would spread in a short time.

Following Gui Qi Ye’s method, not only would Miao Ming Shen gain a bunch of Gu Immortals to help him, gaining enough strength to fight Ren Xiu Ping and protect their own lives, they would even be able to explore the blue dragon whale, if they could gain anything inside, that would naturally be good.

In this situation, he had to give up some of his potential future profits and share the secret with more people.

Similar to the previous life, after Miao Ming Shen and the rest discussed this, they decided on the participating members, including Chu Ying.

When Fang Yuan received the invitation, he was still hosting the qi sea banquet.

During this period of time, more famous Eastern Sea Gu Immortals came to attend the banquet.

For example, Dragon Head Tortoise Immortal in adversity sea.

All sorts of famous people came, Fang Yuan gained a deeper understanding of Eastern Sea’s situation. Jun Shen Guang who was present also collected information here, the truth was, Southern Border, Northern Plains, and Western Desert also had people here trying to gain information, that went without saying!

Even though this was Fang Yuan’s first qi sea banquet, it had already caused a huge impact and influence, the Gu Immortals of the five regions were very concerned.

Eastern Sea had too many spare resources after all, during this period, more Gu Immortals started to trade Immortal Gu.

Each transaction that succeeded meant that Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world would get slightly stronger, Jun Shen Guang and the rest felt deeper pressure.

If Fang Yuan wanted any of these Immortal Gu or immortal materials, he would get Zhang Yin to buy them for him.

He planned to stay here and remain motionless, he would just be a backdrop.

But this backdrop was something nobody could ignore or look down on.

"The time is about right, the qi sea banquet will end now." Fang Yuan spoke.

The immortals were confused and felt perplexed, why was it ending so suddenly?

Fang Yuan smiled warmly: "Transactions will never stop, how long would it take? Everyone here has important things to do, it is not good that I keep everyone waiting here. I held this banquet so that all of you Eastern Sea friends can meet up and have a nice gathering. Now, this goal has been achieved."

The truth was, he had things to do now, these people should scram and get out of his way.

Fang Yuan spoke politely, even if any Eastern Sea immortal was unhappy, they would not dare to defy the number one Eastern Sea immortal.

The immortals quickly stood up and said their goodbyes to Fang Yuan.

Song Qi Yuan and the rest left first, as leaders of their force, they were indeed busy with many things, they had a lot of territory to guard. Fang Yuan’s words were music in their ears.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Several days later, on a nameless island in Eastern Sea.

Eight Gu Immortals finally gathered.

Miao Ming Shen was the leader, other than him, Gui Qi Ye, Feng Jiang, and Immortal Hua Die were there. In addition, Zeng Luo Zi, Tu Tou Tuo, Tong Hua, and Fang Yuan were present.

"Even though I was reborn, it seems that the influence has not reached Miao Ming Shen." Fang Yuan was disguised as Chu Ying, he observed without showing changes in his expression.

Similar to the previous life, Miao Ming Shen chose the same people without changes.

But Fang Yuan was very different now.

He was in a much better state than in the previous life.

In the previous life, at this time period, he could not annex Qi Sea grotto-heaven, he could only take the resources of Qi Sea grotto-heaven and the Five Xiang’s public grotto-heaven, consuming a portion of time. As for the rank nine killer move heaven form, it was still resisting Fang Yuan’s refinement and was not his yet.

And most regrettably, his plans in green ghost desert had failed, his soul path cultivation was obstructed and could not progress. At the same time, his guts Gu productions fell drastically.

In this life, at this point, he had already annexed Qi Sea grotto-heaven, he had rank eight cultivation level and even became Qi Sea Ancestor, obtaining huge political power. Heaven form was refined long ago, but he did not find more grotto-heavens.

Green ghost desert developed rapidly, his soul path cultivation also progressed smoothly. The production of guts Gu was also many times of his highest records in history.

In the previous life, Heavenly Court dominated the River of Time, Fang Yuan had to fight desperately to escape.

But in this life, Fang Yuan dominated the River of Time, Heavenly Court suffered severe losses and their prestige was greatly affected. Despite this, Heavenly Court had no choice but to continue building Immortal Gu Houses, to send more reinforcements into the River of Time, they could not allow Fang Yuan to dominate the River of Time alone and find another Red Lotus true inheritance.

His position in the River of Time was easy to defend while hard to attack, Fang Yuan also had many arrangements in Western Desert, Eastern Sea, Profound Literature grotto-heaven, and Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, his progress was very smooth.

After rebirth, Fang Yuan worked hard and used the five regions and two heavens as his chessboard, he played many different pieces and set up arrangements everywhere, his gains were not just in the present but would continue increasing for future periods of time.

There was a similar situation as the previous life, Fang Yuan’s businesses in treasure yellow heaven were suppressed and targeted by the joint efforts of Central Continent and the Southern Alliance.

Fang Yuan did not have any solution to this problem now.

Firstly, his influence on the Southern Alliance was falling gradually, he did not have much of a bargaining chip, only his second aperture Immortal Gu had an intense attraction to several Southern Border Gu Immortals.

Secondly, be it Heavenly Court or the Southern Alliance, they had deep foundations and assets, competing with them in treasure yellow heaven through price and quantity was not wise.

Fang Yuan’s foundation was skewed towards Immortal Gu, Immortal Gu Houses, and secluded domains of heaven and earth. Most of his cultivation resources were used for his own strength. For example, guts Gu, if he sold them in treasure yellow heaven, this monopoly would be well received by the market, Southern Alliance would not affect his gains.

But Fang Yuan did not do that.

He chose to use most of the guts Gu on his own soul path cultivation.

He was still trying every way possible to raise his battle strength!

This decision made his business in treasure yellow heaven even worse, he fell into a disadvantage against them.

"In terms of immortal materials, I have even less compared to my previous life. I refined Immortal Gu multiple times and used too much of them. I also gained many subordinates this time, Lady White Rabbit, Sixth Hair, and Fairy Miao Yin died last time. But now, they are alive and well, I even took in the variant human alliance. Right now, the sovereign immortal aperture is also raising many snowmen, rockmen, hairy men, and others, I am trying to comprehend human path."

Fang Yuan gained a lot more immortal materials than in his previous life, just the annexation of Lang Ya blessed land alone was an immense gain.

But his expenditure also increased as well. The refinement of luck path and wood path Immortal Gu, the nurturing of variant humans, the gathering of twelve different immemorial year beasts, his other clones needed resources, he also faced several intense battles that required vast immortal essence, many Gu worms were lost during those fights...

All in all, be it internally or externally, Fang Yuan’s situation was much better than the previous life.

His only weakness was the lack of immortal materials, he was running out of certain immortal materials already.

In this situation, Fang Yuan would not compete with Heavenly Court in treasure yellow heaven at all.

Heavenly Court was buying time path immortal materials, they wanted to obstruct Fang Yuan, their attitude was even stronger than the previous life, Fang Yuan chose to avoid them.

In this regard, he could not beat Heavenly Court alone, not to mention they had the Southern Alliance as well.

Fang Yuan’s following plan was to obtain regret Gu and advance the bulk of his current Immortal Gu, this was the same as his previous life’s plan.

He currently had a large number of rank six Immortal Gu, once they become rank seven, his battle strength would surge again in an all-rounded manner!

Cooking Luck Pot alone was worth anticipating.

"In the previous life, I lacked time and did not get Red Lotus’ true inheritance, I had to act quickly in the blue dragon whale’s immortal aperture and could not tackle it with peace of mind."

"This time, not only do I want regret Gu, I also want to try to get that Merit Obelisk, in fact, I want to get Paradise Earth’s true inheritance and the blue dragon whale itself!"

Fang Yuan calculated his time well.

Very soon, Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention would start, they would try to repair fate Gu.

But that did not matter.

Fang Yuan put Zhan Bu Du in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, this clone lived up to his expectations, he progressed rapidly and smoothly. When Fang Yuan appeared, Zhan Bu Du would cooperate with him and annex Beast Calamity grotto-heaven without issues.

He would save a lot of time in that regard, it could all be used to tackle the blue dragon whale’s tasks.

His early investment was growing like a snowball, soon, Fang Yuan would gain even more benefits.

Miao Ming Shen looked around and said solemnly: "Everyone, I have already explained the details of this expedition, I gave you all some time to consider. This is my first journey too, the risks are unknown, we might possibly die. If anyone wants to give up now, you can leave. I will definitely not stop anyone, I understand from the bottom of my heart."

Nobody backed out.

This involved Paradise Earth’s true inheritance, even if their paths were different, the immortals still held great expectations towards it.

These days, they had been thinking about what could be inside this blue dragon whale.

They did not know that Fang Yuan, who was beside them, already had a reliable plan to work with.

Similar to the previous life, before the immortals set off, Zeng Luo Zi went ahead to make the alliance agreement.

Next, the immortals went into the sea and used a method to find out each other’s location.

After that, they went into the undercurrent with Miao Ming Shen taking the lead, they moved around through twists and turns, Fang Yuan was mixed among them as they followed Miao Ming Shen.

He had already made arrangements at the area that the blue dragon whale appeared in the previous life, but he did not receive information about the arrival of the blue dragon whale.

If not for Miao Ming Shen, he indeed might not find the blue dragon whale.

There were eight immortals here, they continued to travel for days. They used several undercurrents to travel, if there were no undercurrents, they would travel under the sea as well, being extremely low profile. Even if they met desolate beasts or ancient desolate beasts, they avoided them. If they saw any resources, they would ignore them.

Along the way, the immortals were led by Miao Ming Shen as they conversed, the atmosphere was quite harmonious and lively.

Miao Ming Shen also became the central member of this group subtly, he managed the relationship between everyone meticulously, he was truly skilled at interpersonal communication.

The immortals traveled with days and nights without stopping.

Miao Ming Shen was afraid that Ren Xiu Ping would expose this matter, so he had to race against time.

Suddenly, he slowed down as he showed an excited expression: "We are getting close!"

The immortals were energized.

Fang Yuan frowned lightly, similar to the previous life, he had been using investigative methods on Miao Ming Shen all along, he could not tell what method Miao Ming Shen was using to search for the blue dragon whale.

And their current location was completely different from the previous life as well.

As the blue dragon whale got closer, the immortals started to notice something strange.

The seawater became more turbulent, desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts increased in numbers, Fang Yuan and the rest had to resist them as they advanced, slaughtering desolate beasts as they forcefully created a path filled with blood.

The immortals fought desperately while Fang Yuan showed a peculiar expression.

In the previous life, he had fallen for it, but this time, he was experienced, after considering this situation, he saw some of the peculiarities in this situation.

"It seems that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s test started in the sea. If I try to die now, will I get transported into the blue dragon whale’s immortal aperture?"

Fang Yuan felt that it was likely but he did not want to take the risk.

To play safe, he would follow his actions in the previous life, ’dying’ after a certain amount of time.

"Who is it?!" Right at this moment, Zeng Luo Zi shouted as he sent a killer move behind him, towards his left.

The killer move did not have offensive power but several figures appeared immediately.

"As expected of Zeng Luo Zi, this is a wonderful investigative method." The leading Gu Immortal smiled as he spoke, his aura surged as it destroyed Zeng Luo Zi’s investigative method while also sweeping towards Miao Ming Shen and the rest.

Fang Yuan saw him and felt slightly dazed: "Why is Shen Cong Sheng here as well?"

This was different from the previous life.

This person who only said one sentence and broke Zeng Luo Zi’s investigative killer move was none other than Shen clan’s first supreme elder, Shen Cong Sheng.

This was a righteous path rank eight Gu Immortal!

Miao Ming Shen and the rest only had rank seven cultivation level, they were completely outmatched.

Not only did Shen Cong Sheng come, he even had many Gu Immortals with him, there were Shen clan members and also lone cultivator experts like Ren Xiu Ping.

Fang Yuan had a shocked expression, he was obviously acting. His main body was here, not just Shen Cong Sheng, even if four of Eastern Sea’s righteous path rank eights came here, Fang Yuan would not fear them.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest were truly shocked.

The enemies were too powerful, there was no way of contesting them.

What should they do?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Why are they here?!" Immortal Hua Die gasped, she felt her body turning cold.

"If not for the dangerous situation, if I did not sense this mild peculiarity, I would not have found these people. Quickly leave!" Zeng Luo Zi urged as he said anxiously.

"There is a traitor among us! We need to split up!" Miao Ming Shen said with an ashen expression, he understood already. He looked around at Tu Tou Tuo, Tong Hua, Zeng Luo Zi, and paused when he looked at Fang Yuan.

Evidently, his biggest suspicion was Chu Ying because he did not know about this person’s background.

"Hahaha, I wanted to follow you all into the blue dragon whale, but since you found out, none of you will escape." Shen Cong Sheng said as he moved his finger, sound waves spread out and shot towards Miao Ming Shen and the rest.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest were surrounded by these sound waves as their speed fell drastically.

Sssssssssh—!

Shen Cong Sheng started whistling in the depths of the sea.

Immortal Hua Die gasped as she was tied up by countless sound waves, Shen Cong Sheng dragged her away immediately.

"Hua Die!" Feng Jiang watched and stared with a furious expression, he tried to help her but was too weak, Shen Cong Sheng captured him too.

Shen Cong Sheng had rank eight cultivation level, his sound path methods were quite profound. In the previous life, he captured rank eight Gu Immortal Old Man Bei Feng alive in Hidden Dragon Cave, it was much simpler now to capture weaklings like Immortal Hua Die and Feng Jiang.

"Leave!" Feng Jiang shouted loudly.

But soon, Shen Cong Sheng grabbed his neck and he fainted.

He snorted coldly: "Attack."

The Shen clan Gu Immortals around him and Ren Xiu Ping found their targets and attacked.

They had followed behind closely, having already discussed among themselves who to fight. Not only was their attack coordinated, they helped each other out.

The only who attacked Fang Yuan was Shen clan Gu Immortal Shen Tan, he was an ordinary water path Gu Immortal.

He shot out a water ring that was the size of a vat, it flew towards Fang Yuan’s head.

Fang Yuan did not want to fight, he turned into a small seahorse that was palm sized, he moved like lightning speed.

Shen Tan missed his target, he was shocked and attacked with three more water rings, they appeared before Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan turned into a fish and swerved around with great agility, dodging all three rings.

Shen Tan’s expression turned ugly, he called out to Ren Xiu Ping: "Lend me a hand."

Ren Xiu Ping was attacking Tong Hua with two vicious sharks. Hearing Shen Tan’s words, he nodded: "Of course."

A vicious shark that was attacking Tong Hua quickly turned around and swam towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan looked around him, he found that if he got past this obstacle, he would be the frontmost person charging out.

He quickly stopped as he pretended to be obstructed by the vicious shark.

Because of this, Shen Tan laughed loudly as he moved his four water rings, blocking Fang Yuan: "Where can you run to now?"

He had no idea who he had obstructed, if he knew Chu Ying’s true identity, he would be shivering in fear now.

Fang Yuan pretended to be trapped while patiently observing his allies.

Tu Tou Tuo was also obstructed, as an earth path cultivator, his speed was not fast, it was even slower in water.

Tong Hua was busy dealing with two of Ren Xiu Ping’s vicious sharks.

Zeng Luo Zi was like a white ghost in the sea, he moved around swiftly and competed with Shen clan’s Shen Qi in speed, they were well ahead.

Gui Qi Ye and Miao Ming Shen moved together, when Shen clan’s two Gu Immortals got close, he shouted: "Lord, quickly go, I will stop them."

He stopped as he pushed with his palms.

With a loud sound, a huge area of black fog spread out.

Shen clan’s two Gu Immortals were moving too rapidly, they entered the fog and vanished into thin air.

"Old Gui, take care!" Miao Ming Shen knew the severity of the situation, he had tears in his eyes as he flew up.

Shen Cong Sheng suppressed Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die completely as he snickered: "Where are you going?"

Saying this, countless sound waves chased after Miao Ming Shen.

Miao Ming Shen’s hair stood on end as alerts rang in his mind, his gaze flashed like lightning as he grunted, activating his space path killer move.

His figure vanished instantly, appearing a hundred steps away. At the next moment, he vanished again, he moved a hundred steps further from Fang Yuan and the rest.

As he flickered continuously, Miao Ming Shen escaped and charged out of the sea.

Shen Cong Sheng gasped lightly, feeling surprised.

He had used a genuine rank eight method, Miao Ming Shen was actually able to escape from it, it was very impressive.

Miao Ming Shen was the most important person, Shen Cong Sheng did not care about Immortal Hua Die or Feng Jiang, he did not have time to store them into his immortal aperture, he tossed them to others and flew out to chase Miao Ming Shen.

Miao Ming Shen charged out of the sea as sweat poured out of his forehead.

"My escaping method could usually move a hundred li with one flicker, but before Shen Cong Sheng, I could only move a hundred steps away. Is this the power of a rank eight Gu Immortal?"

Suddenly, there was a sound behind him as Shen Cong Sheng broke out of the sea.

Miao Ming Shen’s body shook, his speed fell as he had fallen into Shen Cong Sheng’s killer move’s range once again.

Seeing that he was about to be captured, Miao Ming Shen struggled intensely, he felt deep despair in his heart.

Right at this moment, there was a shrill cry resounding.

An immemorial thunder phoenix flew over and attacked Shen Cong Sheng.

The immemorial thunder phoenix attacked fiercely, intense winds blew as Shen Cong Sheng’s expression changed, he did not dare to be careless, he let off Miao Ming Shen for the time being and faced the immemorial thunder phoenix instead.

With a loud sound, the immemorial thunder phoenix sent Shen Cong Sheng flying into the sea again as huge waves were created.

Miao Ming Shen used this chance to flicker and escape, his body was covered in cold sweat.

At this time, he finally had time to observe the surroundings.

Only to see that above the sea, intense tornadoes surged in the sky, lightning flashed continuously as thunder rumbled, dark clouds extended to the horizons.

The sea was in a frenzy, waves surged from the sea, they were thousands of feet tall.

Countless flying birds and eagles fought intensely amidst the thunder and lightning.

Blue charm lightning shadows flickered in the dark clouds, they were hunted down by immemorial desolate beast thunder phoenix.

The situation was too dangerous!

"Where in the world did I end up at?!" Miao Ming Shen took a deep breath in shock.

"Catch them!" Right at this time, Shen Tan’s anxious voice could be heard behind him.

Just earlier, Shen Tan received the two captives that Shen Cong Sheng tossed him, Fang Yuan used that chance to not only destroy the water rings but also helped the others out.

Tong Hua, Zeng Luo Zi, and Fang Yuan got out of the sea, flying into the sky.

"Don’t think of running!" Shen Qi, Shen Tan, and Ren Xiu Ping chased after them.

At the same time, lightning flashed in the sky and shot towards the immortals.

The immortals quickly attacked to block it.

Another group of eagles flew down and scattered the group of people, the scene was a chaotic mess.

"All of you, scram!" At the next moment, an intense sound wave burst out from the depths of the sea.

Sound waves shot out of Shen Cong Sheng as he flew out of the sea and towards the sky in an instant, he waved both hands as two translucent sound waves moved around the battlefield like two sharp blades.

Immortal killer move — Aerial Sound Blades!

Wherever the sound blades went, be they eagles or lightning, they were all cut into two, even the immemorial thunder phoenix was injured and moved back.

A sound blade went around Tong Hua and quickly slit through Zeng Luo Zi’s throat.

Zeng Luo Zi stared with wide eyes as his head fell off his body.

A sound blade went after Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan sighed to himself, he made a turn and burst out with speed, he charged on the closest route to the immemorial thunder phoenix.

At the next moment, his body became charred by lightning, he died on the spot.

Shen Cong Sheng did not even look at Fang Yuan’s corpse, he went after Miao Ming Shen immediately.

Within the blue Dragon Whale Paradise.

Starting island.

Fang Yuan opened his eyes as he woke up.

"I arrived here after all." He stood up and looked around him.

The sea was blue with white waves, there was a golden sandy beach, the temperature was warm and nice, this was a serene location.

"Hmm?" Fang Yuan saw Zeng Luo Zi here as well.

He was clearly killed by Shen Cong Sheng’s sound path killer move, he was beheaded. But now, he lay near the beach, he breathed normally but was unconscious, his head was still attached to his body.

"As expected." Fang Yuan was not surprised: "The illusion started long ago, within it, whoever dies would not die for real."

Fang Yuan was killed by the immemorial thunder phoenix and arrived here afterwards. Zeng Luo Zi was killed by Shen Cong Sheng but arrived here as well.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable created Reincarnation Battlefield in Central Continent, it had a similar trait. Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects occupied that place and sent Gu Immortals to fight inside it. No matter who died inside, they would not lose their life, they would only sustain some injuries or damage if they died too many times.

Thus, Fang Yuan did not do anything earlier. Even if he killed Shen Cong Sheng, he would not die, he would even get transported here earlier, while Fang Yuan would have exposed his identity for no reason.

Fang Yuan waved his hand as a qi blade flew towards Zeng Luo Zi.

Zeng Luo Zi did not have any defenses up, but right before the qi blade landed and killed him, it vanished.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, turning around and leaving.

When Shen Cong Sheng woke up, he felt that his vision was still blurry, but a joyful sound was heard beside him: "First supreme elder, you finally woke up!"

Next, his vision cleared up, he saw Shen Qi, Shen Tan, Ren Xiu Ping, Miao Ming Shen, Hua Die, Feng Jiang, Tong Hua, and the rest, they were in a nervous standoff.

"What happened? Didn’t I die!" Shen Cong Sheng was internally shocked, he felt that this was unreal.

As a rank eight Gu Immortal, he lasted the longest in the illusion, he was also the final person who arrived.

"First supreme elder, this is likely Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s method, it is similar to Central Continent’s Reincarnation Battlefield." Shen Tan said.

Shen Cong Sheng managed to calm down as he nodded: "This is indeed the style of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable."

At the next moment, his eyes flashed like lightning as he looked at Miao Ming Shen and the rest, asking directly: "How long have you been awake for?"

"We had just woken up too." Shen Qi answered.

Shen Cong Sheng nodded, he looked at Miao Ming Shen, Immortal Hua Die, Feng Jiang, and Zeng Luo Zi.

These people were either captured or killed by him, but now, they were alive and well. Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable truly had unfathomable methods!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Where are we? Tell me everything that you know!" Shen Cong Sheng said as he attacked Miao Ming Shen again.

The result was that his killer move vanished upon activation, Shen Cong Sheng grunted as blood flowed out of his nose, he had sustained injuries from the backlash of the killer move.

"First supreme elder, hold on, this place seems to forbid fighting. If you have the intention to fight, any killer move or Gu worm activation will fail. In contrast, healing yourself will not be obstructed." Shen Tan said.

"Why didn’t you say that earlier?" Shen Cong Sheng stared with furious eyes.

Shen Tan felt wrongly accused as he thought to himself: "Wasn’t it because you acted too quickly?"

He could not say that of course, Shen Tan lowered his head and apologized.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest let out sighs of relief.

They were also healing their injuries.

When they woke up, they saw the Shen clan Gu Immortals around and attacked without thinking, they had suffered intense backlash as a result.

Shen Tan and the rest were in similar situations.

But at that time, Shen Cong Sheng had not woken up, nobody knew if a rank eight

Gu Immortal would be restricted as well.

"It seems that even rank eight Gu Immortals cannot defy the arrangements of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable." Miao Ming Shen let out a breath of air, after seeing that Shen Cong Sheng had failed, he calmed down completely.

They were temporarily safe.

Shen Cong Sheng heard this as bright light flashed in his eyes: "It seems that we are inside the immortal aperture world of the blue dragon whale."

Miao Ming Shen did not acknowledge or deny his words.

Gui Qi Ye who stood beside him stared at Tong Hua furiously: "Tong Hua! You betrayed us!"

Tong Hua lowered her head and did not speak, looking ashamed.

She was standing beside Ren Xiu Ping now.

The traitor among Miao Ming Shen’s group was her.

Earlier, when Shen Cong Sheng used his killer move in the illusion, he avoided her, everyone saw that.

And now, her status was exposed.

Immortal Hua Die had a cold expression: "Fairy Tong Hua, to think my lord trusted you so deeply, when you had to fix your immortal aperture after tribulation, he helped you so much. Not only did he help you, he even invited you to explore the blue dragon whale, you actually betrayed our kindness with enmity! Why did you betray us? Where is your conscience?"

Tong Hua wanted to speak but she turned around and stopped looking at Miao Ming Shen and the rest.

Miao Ming Shen sighed heavily as he stopped Immortal Hua Die: "Fairy Tong Hua probably has her own difficulties, forget it, everyone has their own goals."

Tong Hua’s gaze flickered intensely.

"Lord... you are too kindhearted. How can we let this kind of people off?" Immortal Hua Die stomped her feet.

Ren Xiu Ping smiled arrogantly, he was the one who made Tong Hua a traitor: "Miao Ming Shen, you need to understand this situation clearly, you need to know who is the stronger side! Tong Hua was wise to have chosen us, if you surrender and hand over all your information, we might spare you."

Immortal Hua Die was still furious about it, this was their fortuitous encounter but these people wanted to snatch it away and threatened them, she rolled her eyes as she called out: "I’m so scared, why don’t you come attack me, my entire body is shivering from fear."

Shen Cong Sheng’s expression turned cold.

Ren Xiu Ping squinted as he smiled even more coldly: "Girl, you have a sharp tongue, do you think Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s methods can protect you for a lifetime? After you leave this place, when we get back to Eastern Sea, can any of you resist Lord Shen Cong Sheng? Even inside here, do you think Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangements are perfect without a single loophole?"

Immortal Hua Die’s expression froze.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest had grim expressions, especially Zeng Luo Zi, he looked at Shen Cong Sheng with fear in his eyes. After all, he was killed earlier by a killer move.

"It is uncertain who will win. Let’s go!" Miao Ming Shen did not want to waste time on arguments, he turned around and left this beach.

"This person had the special method to find the blue dragon whale, he definitely knows more than us. Follow him!" Shen Cong Sheng quickly ordered.

They could not fight now, following Miao Ming Shen was the best alternative.

The two groups walked with some distance between them, they moved in silence.

Soon, they got out of the beach, arriving in a dense forest.

"This forest is a bit strange, the leaves of the trees have empty heart shaped spaces at the center." Immortal Hua Die said in confusion.

"Hmm, these are just ordinary trees." Feng Jiang checked and touched a tree trunk with his hands.

With a soft sound, the tree that he touched collapsed, it shattered into a pile of wood dust.

"What is going on?" The immortals sensed a commotion and quickly gathered.

"These are not ordinary trees, they are rank seven immortal plants, cloud ladder trees." Shen Cong Sheng looked as he said grimly.

They arrived as well.

Seeing that the rank eight Gu Immortal was standing beside them, Miao Ming Shen and the rest felt their hearts tighten but they quickly relaxed.

Gui Qi Ye said arrogantly: "Old Shen, do you think we are ignorant? I know about cloud ladder trees, this tree has dense wood path and cloud path dao marks. Every hundred years, it grows by ten inches, which is one step of a ladder. How can these be cloud ladder trees? With such a height, they have to be a hundred steps at least, that means these cloud ladder trees have lived for ten thousand years? Hehehe."

But Shen Cong Sheng was calm and composed: "These are cloud ladder trees. You only know a portion of the details. Cloud ladder trees are a rank seven immortal material, the leaves of ten thousand year old cloud ladder trees would form the rank eight immortal material, cloud ladder leaf heart. Once all of the cloud ladder leaf hearts are taken away, the cloud ladder tree would collapse into a pile of wood dust, becoming an ordinary material."

Gui Qi Ye was stunned before he smiled coldly again, pointing forward: "Then you mean to say that this dense forest is filled with ten thousand year old cloud ladder trees? Hehe, this is too laughable."

Shen Cong Sheng nodded: "Cloud ladder trees are quite rare, of course, this forest isn’t made up of such a precious tree. But at the very least, this particular plant was a cloud ladder tree!"

Shen Cong Sheng was very certain while Gui Qi Ye stuck to his views, he pointed at a tree nearby: "Then according to Lord Shen Cong Sheng, this tree, this tree, and that tree are also ten thousand year old cloud ladder trees. Haha, look, all of their leaves have an empty heart shaped space. There are so many cloud ladder trees, how many rank eight immortal material cloud ladder leaf hearts are there? Isn’t there too much of this rank eight immortal material? How different is it from a plain cabbage you grow in your farm?"

The immortals were looking at Shen Cong Sheng, his expression also changed slightly.

On this island, investigative methods were not very useful, but he had already inspected his surroundings gradually.

He walked quickly and struck several tree trunks, once he touched these cloud ladder trees, they turned into wood dust.

Shen Cong Sheng gasped as he said to his subordinates: "These were all cloud ladder trees, but the leaf hearts on them had all been taken away. These are valuable rank eight immortal materials, quickly look for any that are left behind!"

The Shen clan Gu Immortals believed in Shen Cong Sheng, while Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua believed him to some extent, because of his reputation, they had to obey him and spread out to search.

As cloud ladder trees got destroyed one after another, none of the immortals found any cloud ladder leaf hearts.

The entire forest was made of cloud ladder trees, there were no trees left here.

Even while Shen Cong Sheng walked out of this dense forest, he started to suspect his own finding: "Are these really cloud ladder trees? If they are, there are simply too many of them, right?"

The immortals left the forest, they saw the yellow sandy ground, as wind blew, dust clouds moved in the air.

It was a desolate land.

This was everyone’s first impression.

"The air seems to have the smell of clear wind grass stems." Shen Cong Sheng sniffed as he crouched down, moving the soil and exposing the holes in it.

Shen Cong Sheng’s expression changed.

At this time, Zeng Luo Zi also sensed something strange, he called out: "This place must have an entire field of clear wind grass stems planted here in the past, I’ve smelt this aroma before, it is this. There are holes here, each is as large as a fist, the walls of the holes are all smooth and round, this is the effect of the roots of clear wind grass stems."

Miao Ming Shen was stunned: "Clear wind grass stem is a rank seven immortal material, this means that this area filled with holes was once an entire field of clear wind grass stems?"

"Even though it is unthinkable, don’t forget that we are inside the blue dragon whale now. This is the location of a Paradise Earth true inheritance!" Hua Die’s words were like a stone dropped into the hearts of the immortals.

Shen Cong Sheng frowned as he looked at Miao Ming Shen, asking: "Why is there someone missing from your side?"

Miao Ming Shen was stunned, he realized why he had felt something strange earlier, after hearing this reminder, he understood, indeed, someone was missing.

"Chu Ying is not around!" Feng Jiang said grimly.

"Where did he go?"

"Speaking of it, he died really early, he should have arrived here long ago."

"Did he awaken earlier than us, did he take away all of the immortal materials here?"

The immortals were all astute figures, because they were at conflict earlier and the atmosphere was tense, they did not think so much when exploring the island.

Once this topic started, everyone became anxious.

Shen Cong Sheng stopped following Miao Ming Shen, he moved rapidly and advanced.

Miao Ming Shen hesitated, he decided to follow.

The immortals quickly arrived in front of a huge pit.

This hole was tens of li wide, it was hundreds of feet deep, there were some fragments left in the hole.

Tu Tou Tuo picked up these fragments as he looked, shouting instantly: "Oh heavens! This is the rank seven immortal material rooster iron. Which bastard took everything away, only leaving behind these fragments?"

Tu Tou Tuo stared with wide eyes, he shouted loudly.

"Rooster iron only exists in mines exposed to open air. When roosters sing, heaven turns white[1], with such a wide span of rooster iron here, when wind blows, there will be resonance, rank eight immortal material heavenly white snow iron will be produced!" Shen Cong Sheng said with a cold tone: "We need to find that Chu Ying as quickly as we can."

All the immortals were anxious.

All these immortal materials were likely taken by Chu Ying.

They needed to find him!

They quickly spread out and called his name but they could not find even a trace of Fang Yuan. All they saw were holes and pits, dried rivers and a large field of land with their plants uprooted and taken away.

[1] A saying from Chairman Mao

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The island they were sent to was not big, the immortals did not gain anything from their exploration, they quickly gathered at the center of the island.

Over there, they made a shocking discovery!

A huge obelisk that seemed to be made of gold was radiating with a mild crystalline light.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House – Merit Obelisk!

The surface of Merit Obelisk had words appearing on it, introducing the background of this island and also the details of the Paradise Earth true inheritance.

To obtain the Paradise Earth true inheritance, one had to accept the missions on the Merit Obelisk, they would gain merit points when they complete these tasks. The more merits they had, the more valuable things they could exchange for.

If one did not accept this, they could only wait on this island, they could not leave and go to other places in the grotto-heaven world.

Of course, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was merciful and kind, he would not let them leave empty-handed. The immortal materials on this island were specially prepared for them to split among each other.

Three hundred days later, everyone would be transported away.

The immortals were shocked.

"There are immortal materials on this island after all. Those cloud ladder leaf hearts, clear wind grass stems, rooster iron and others were not fake."

"They were all taken by someone! Damn it, he took literally everything, he left nothing for us at all."

"It must be that Chu Ying."

"Where is Chu Ying? Why have we not seen him?"

"I found Chu Ying!" Immortal Hua Die suddenly shouted.

The immortals quickly gathered towards her, they saw that on another side of the Merit Obelisk, by looking at where Immortal Hua Die pointed, they saw words that appeared on the Merit Obelisk.

Merit Board Ranking – Chu Ying, eighty-two merit points.

Other than Chu Ying, there were nobody else.

"This person!" Ren Xiu Ping gritted his teeth in anger.

Right at this moment, Chu Ying’s merit points jumped again, from eighty-two to ninety-three.

Next, the Merit Obelisk flashed.

The immortals quickly took steps back.

The light faded as Fang Yuan appeared.

"Chu Ying!" Feng Jiang cried out.

"You finally showed up." Tu Tou Tuo had bloodshot eyes, he thought about the empty pit that was filled with rooster iron before.

"Oh, you are awake." Fang Yuan nodded at them, he said in a plain tone.

"Hey, what is wrong with your attitude!" Shen Tan shouted in displeasure.

Fang Yuan’s indifferent attitude made every immortal furious.

Shen Cong Sheng stepped forward with a cold expression and overbearing tone: "Tell me, did you take all of the immortal materials on this island?"

"Who else could it be but me?" Fang Yuan retorted, he was indifferent about Shen Cong Sheng’s overbearing tone. He quickly got to the other side of the Merit Obelisk and quickly browsed through the missions.

The immortals were furiously staring at him.

This person had taken all the benefits but still acted so arrogantly!

Ren Xiu Ping said grimly: "We have seen the text on this obelisk, all of these immortal materials are arranged by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable for us. Chu Ying, isn’t it too much to take everything yourself? You owe us an explanation!"

Fang Yuan did not even look at him, he pressed his palm at the obelisk and took another mission.

Swoosh.

White light flashed, he vanished again.

The immortals were shocked.

Shen Qi shouted in anger: "This guy!"

"Where did he come from? He is completely disregarding Lord Shen Cong Sheng and us." Ren Xiu Ping spoke with a livid expression, his voice was cold as ice.

"Investigate him after we go out." Shen Cong Sheng was a rank eight after all, as the leader of Shen clan, he quickly calmed down and started to mimic Fang Yuan, walking to the Merit Obelisk.

"Chu Ying is acting so fearlessly, he is merely relying on the fact that we cannot attack him in this paradise." Shen Cong Sheng thought to himself: "Chu Ying is merely a rank seven secluded lone immortal, we can deal with him later. The important thing now is this Merit Obelisk."

Fang Yuan’s actions earlier were a great example to the immortals here.

In the previous life, Miao Ming Shen and the rest came to the obelisk with suspicion, they first distributed the immortal materials on the island before going to accept the missions.

But now, Fang Yuan woke up in advance, he acted first and ransacked the entire island.

The only thing left to these immortals was this Merit Obelisk.

There were many missions on this Merit Obelisk.

Helping the merfolk in South Coast City to excavate the golden lotuses on silver lake.

Round fish island was drying up, it needed wells to be built.

Three stripes tribe lacked medicine, there was a plague spreading, they needed a lot of medicinal herbs.

Piper tribe was stuck in a fog, they were asked to lead them out.

Aurora Mountain’s spirit spring had an issue that needed to be dealt with immediately.

...

The Gu Immortals watched with a dazed expression.

Similar to the previous life, they encountered the same situation again.

These missions were only described briefly, they were not detailed, the Gu Immortals could not gain any useful information.

For example, this mission: Three stripes tribe lacked medicine, there was a plague spreading, they needed a lot of medicinal herbs.

What kind of force was three stripes tribe? Were there Gu Immortals? Were they an ordinary force or super force?

A plague was spreading, what kind of plague was it? There were many kinds of plagues that even rank eight Gu Immortals did not dare to handle.

They needed a lot of medicinal herbs, what kind of herbs did they want? Immortal materials? What method did they need to use?

Nobody knew.

The Merit Obelisk only had this one line.

The immortals were really unaware of the situation.

"Does that Chu Ying know anything?" Someone muttered.

The immortals were silent, their hatred, anger, and suspicion towards Fang Yuan intensified again.

Even though Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was known for kindness, this was an unknown environment, even the rank eight Gu Immortal Shen Cong Sheng was barred from fighting, the Gu Immortals had to be vigilant.

And looking at the rewards on the Merit Obelisk.

There was a large amount of immortal materials and Immortal Gu that could be exchanged for using merits!

Of course, there were some peculiar things here like titles or mortal Gu.

Shen Cong Sheng immediately saw one rank five mortal Gu, it was called good deeds Gu, this was the first time he had seen such a Gu worm.

To exchange for a good deeds Gu, one needed fifty merit points, it was the most expensive mortal Gu.

But the actual effect of the Gu worm was not written on the Merit Obelisk, Shen Cong Sheng knew nothing about it.

However, it had to be unique and special for Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable to put it up as a reward.

After the immortals discussed among themselves, they realized that they had to try this to find out. Shen Cong Sheng was the first to act, he quickly walked up to the obelisk to receive his mission.

In the previous life, the group of eight including Fang Yuan and Miao Ming Shen came to the Merit Obelisk, only ten missions had appeared to them. But now, because there were more people, it seemed that the number of missions had also increased correspondingly.

There were many missions, they were slowly taken.

Because they did not know anything, there was no fighting or snatching here.

Shen Cong Sheng’s mission was: Round fish island was drying up, it needed wells to be built.

As light flickered, he appeared in a desert at the next moment.

Shen Cong Sheng’s pupils shrunk.

He was a rank eight Gu Immortal with dense dao marks, he could not be transported using ordinary methods. But when he was transported here, it could not be blocked, a grand and mystical power brought him here instantly.

"As expected of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable." Shen Cong Sheng sighed internally, he looked around as his investigative method spread out over the surroundings.

Shen Cong Sheng quickly sensed something different: "Oh, my investigative method works properly here, it is not the same as the starting island."

Tens of li away from here, there was a small village in the desert.

Shen Cong Sheng stood on the spot, moving his ears as he listened to the conversation of the people in the village.

A moment later, he confirmed that he was on round fish island. This island was huge and had many villages, but decades again, vegetation had started to become sparse, right now, a large area desert had already spread around the remaining few villages.

Mortals and Gu Masters lived in the village, their lives were getting tougher.

"This means to say, I need to build water wells near these villages?" After learning of the situation, Shen Cong Sheng let out a breath of air as he relaxed.

This mission was much easier than he had expected.

They were all mortal level issues, not at the level of Gu Immortals.

Even if it involved immortals, he was a rank eight sound path great expert, he could deal with most issues.

Shen Cong Sheng thought about Fang Yuan as he muttered to himself: "That Chu Ying only has rank seven cultivation level but he accumulated ninety-three merit points so quickly. This shows that the missions must be very easy to complete."

Even after knowing the situation, Shen Cong Sheng did not rush to take action.

He needed to test many things here.

For example, could he ignore this mission and fly out of this place?

Could he communicate with the outside world?

How many methods could he still use in this situation?

Shen Cong Sheng did not interact with the mortals, he used sound path methods and secretly dug wells near the villages.

The desertification here was very severe, Shen Cong Sheng had to dig for a long time before he found some underground water deep below.

Using these sources of water, he created deep wells around the place.

Thinking about it, he used his methods to reinforce the walls of the well. Finally, he made the mouths of the wells and covered them with a thatched roof on top.

"To think that one day, I would have to do such manual labor." Shen Cong Sheng laughed.

He built a total of more than thirty wells, this mission was not difficult at all to this rank eight Gu Immortal.

In the process of completing it, Shen Cong Sheng tried many things, he probed the foundation of this paradise to a great extent.

For example, he could not leave this place, he was only able to move around this desert area.

His communication was also restricted, forget about treasure yellow heaven, he could not even send anything to Shen Qi or Shen Tan.

He was also unable to attack the ordinary villagers, all his offensive methods would fail and he would sustain backlash.

He could open his immortal aperture’s entrance and take out stuff from within, yet he could not take anything from round fish island to put into his immortal aperture.

Shen Cong Sheng also gained a lot of information from these mortals, these people were able to leave round fish island and tour the seas. In the past, there were conflicts among the villages, people had died.

In conclusion, Dragon Whale Paradise gave the inhabitants a lot of freedom, while the Gu Immortals who received these missions were greatly restricted.

As for how they were restricted, Shen Cong Sheng was unable to detect the method, he simply could not deal with it or get around it. This made him feel even more admiration towards Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

After completing the mission, Shen Cong Sheng said "return" in his mind, he was transported to the starting island again.

The Merit Obelisk appeared beside him.

He checked the board and saw that on the merit list, his name was there: Shen Cong Sheng, nine merit points.

Shen Cong Sheng frowned.

One mission only gave him nine merit points?

This reward was too little, it was out of Shen Cong Sheng’s expectations.

"Looking at this, does it mean that Chu Ying had already taken about ten missions before me?" Thinking of this, Shen Cong Sheng frowned even deeper now.

He looked at those rewards while feeling a chill in his heart.

Those Immortal Gu and immortal materials that he wanted needed more than ten thousand merit points!

"There is another problem, Immortal Gu are unique, if others get them first, I will lose my chance."

"Now that Chu Ying is so far ahead, we have to pick up the pace and catch up with him!"

Shen Cong Sheng was a rank eight but he felt a sense of urgency now, everyone else was feeling worse.

"First supreme elder." Shen Tan walked over and respectfully greeted Shen Cong Sheng. Even though he had finished his mission earlier, he did not rush to the second one, he waited at the obelisk.

In fact, the group of immortals had all agreed before the first transportation to communicate with each other after completing their missions.

Shen Cong Sheng, Shen Tan, Shen Qi, Shen Xiao, Shen Nai He, Ren Xiu Ping, and Tong Hua were the first group, while Miao Ming Shen, Feng Jiang, Immortal Hua Die, Gui Qi Ye, Tu Tou Tuo, and Zeng Luo Zi were the second group.

The two sides were distinctly separated.

Evidently, Shen Cong Sheng’s group was far too strong. However, in a special environment like the paradise, it was inconvenient for them to make a move against Miao Ming Shen and the others, so they had to watch as these enemies banded together as a group.

"Heaven always leaves a way out! Everyone, this is a great opportunity now, as long as we grab onto it, we will have a chance of dealing with Shen Cong Sheng in the future. We need to work hard, we need to unite for a glimpse of hope. Otherwise, if we work alone, we will not survive." Miao Ming Shen encouraged the Gu Immortals on his side.

Zeng Luo Zi, Tu Tou Tuo, and the rest nodded in agreement. They faced greater pressure than Shen Cong Sheng, because they felt more urgency to complete missions and raise their strength.

Even if they were safe inside the Dragon Whale Paradise, after three hundred days, they would be transported out and would need to face Shen Cong Sheng.

"Tell me, what have you all discovered?" Miao Ming Shen spoke.

All of them spoke about their findings one by one, without any concealment, there was even a lot of speculation that they made.

Everyone’s discoveries were similar to Shen Cong Sheng’s, Miao Ming Shen concluded in the end: "The restrictions placed on us by the paradise can actually be seen as a kind of protection for us, at least for the time being, Shen Cong Sheng is unable to lay his hands on us."

"The amount of merit points we received after completing a mission was only nine at most, it did not exceed ten. It seems that the reward for each mission is between one and ten."

"But I have a feeling that this Merit Obelisk will undergo more changes in the future."

Zeng Luo Zi and Tu Tou Tuo looked at each other, Zeng Luo Zi hesitated but still asked: "Brother Miao, since you can sense the exact location of the blue dragon whale, and bring us to it, is this place completely new to you?"

Miao Ming Shen smiled bitterly: "Brother Zeng and Brother Tu, if I said that I have no idea why I am able to sense the location of the blue dragon whale, would you believe me? Several years ago, information about the blue dragon whale began to appear inexplicably in my mind, but at first it was very vague. These bits and pieces of information had only gotten clearer recently, I finally realized that it was the blue dragon whale calling to me."

"If I really knew these arrangements and had any shortcuts, would I not use them? Would I continue to face Shen Cong Sheng's threat? When we were outside, Shen Cong Sheng attacked us, if I knew it was an illusion, I would have tried to die long ago."

"Friends, my words are all true, there is no deception at all!"

Zeng Luo Zi and Tu Tou Tuo saw Miao Ming Shen's earnest expression and nodded: "We believe you."

Gui Qi Ye suddenly said: "Speaking of which, I do recall one thing. Previously, when he was being chased in the sea, Chu Ying was being attacked by a sound blade, but his speed soared and he took the initiative to bump into an immemorial thunder phoenix, after which he got struck by its lightning and died."

"Yes, I saw that too." Feng Jiang also added.

"It's strange to actively seek death, it seems that Chu Ying really knows something about this place." Tu Tou Tuo's eyes burst out with bright light.

Previously, Fang Yuan did not know that dying by the hands of Shen Cong Sheng would also be accepted. To be on the safe side, he still chose the method of death from his last life.

As a result, he exposed a flaw.

It was like Shen Cong Sheng, who avoided Tong Hua earlier with his sound blades.

Miao Ming Shen's group discovered Chu Ying's peculiarity, It was the same for Shen Cong Sheng's group.

"Miao Ming Shen." At this time, Shen Tan walked in front of the group and took the initiative to approach Miao Ming Shen and the others.

Behind Shen Tan were Shen Cong Sheng, Ren Xiuping and the rest.

"There is no need to be nervous." Shen Tan smiled: "We are not here to find trouble with you all this time, but rather to seek cooperation."

"Cooperation? You guys are really shameless."

"Who was it who wanted to kill us earlier?"

Feng Jiang and Immortal Hua Die said with displeasure.

Miao Ming Shen, however, stopped them and looked at Shen Cong Sheng.

Shen Cong Sheng nodded slightly and said indifferently: "This was my decision. It is true that I was the one who made the move to attack you before, but let’s put ourselves in each other’s shoes and think about it, if you were me, would you let me off?"

"It’s not that I don’t want to kill you all, but with the situation as it is right now, then I can only cooperate with you."

"I swear on the reputation of my Shen clan, I promise that even after we leave this Dragon Whale Paradise in the future, we will not do anything to you, but rather let you all leave. "

"And all of you will need to tell me everything you know about the information you have regarding this place."

"The reputation of Shen clan..." Miao Ming Shen pondered, the immortals around him all looked slightly moved by this proposal as well.

Shen Cong Sheng was the first supreme elder or Shen clan, the promise of a righteous path figure held a lot of weight, and now he was staking the reputation of the entire Shen clan, he could be trusted to a high degree.

Of course, the best way was for both sides to set an alliance agreement.

Zeng Luo Zi and Shen Nai He were both rank seven information path Gu Immortals, they were unable to use information path methods here because the paradise restricted them greatly.

"You all can think about it, this is your only chance. If you miss it, don’t regret it if you go out of the Dragon Whale Paradise in the future." Shen Tan threatened with a smile.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest became increasingly silent.

The Merit Obelisk had made it clear that they would only stay here for three hundred days, and once the time limit was up, they would be sent out. At that time, they might have to face Shen Cong Sheng.

Shen Cong Sheng’s guarantee was certainly not completely assuring and he could go back on his word.

But with their own lives at stake, Miao Ming Shen and the others would certainly not let go of any possibility of survival.

Miao Ming Shen suddenly smiled and nodded: "I accept your offer. I’ll cooperate with you and tell you everything I know."

Shen Cong Sheng also smiled: "Good, a wise man submits to circumstances. I will let you live, go ahead and speak."

Miao Ming Shen’s smile turned bitter: "There’s actually nothing to say."

He repeated the things he had said to Tu Tou Tuo and Zeng Luo Zi earlier.

Shen Tan was furious: "You’re saying that you actually don’t know anything? Are you lying? Do you think our Shen clan is easy to fool?"

Shen Cong Sheng, however, had a look of deep consideration.

He felt that Miao Ming Shen’s words were probably true, lies could be told, but actions often could not deceive others. On the way here, Miao Ming Shen’s actions were all seen by Shen Cong Sheng. He did not seem like someone who knew the details of the Dragon Whale Paradise.

Gui Qi Ye interjected: "We analyzed it earlier, it seems that Chu Ying is very suspicious. He might indeed know some inside information!"

The immortals’ eyes shined with bright light.

Ren Xiu Ping smiled coldly: "Aren’t you stating the obvious? That person had actively sought death before, he came here and was the first to awaken, ransacking the starting island of all the immortal materials. And look at the Merit Obelisk, he’s got nearly a hundred merit points, hmm."

.Ren Xiu Ping suddenly became silent.

At this moment, white light flashed as Fang Yuan appeared again.

His mission was completed, his merit points went past a hundred, reaching one hundred and two.

The immortals gathered in a group, looking at Fang Yuan who was at the obelisk. He had appeared right when they mentioned him.

Fang Yuan also looked at the immortals. Wow, the atmosphere here was great!

Fang Yuan was a little surprised, but he did not feel anything strange about this.

Gu Immortals were all exceptional talents, these Gu Immortals were very perceptive and knew about benefits and harm, they prioritized their own gains. As long as Shen Cong Sheng stopped being haughty, it was possible that they would cooperate as Miao Ming Shen and the rest would worry about the future.

Shen Tan smiled and took the initiative to come over, approaching Fang Yuan: "Brother Chu Ying."

He took the initiative to greet, his attitude was much better compared to when he spoke to Miao Ming Shen.

In the current situation, Fang Yuan’s value was also clearly much higher than Miao Ming Shen.

But before he could send any invitations...

"Scram." Fang Yuan glanced at Shen Tan before he turned around and walked away.

Shen Tan’s smile froze on his face, the corners of his lips twitched as anger rose in his heart, he was about to shout but his shoulder was patted by someone.

It was Shen Cong Sheng!

Shen Tan quickly held down his anger, he did not dare to shout rashly, he only stared at Fang Yuan with a furious expression.

"Little brother." Shen Cong Sheng chuckled: "We can coope..."

"Scram." Fang Yuan said one word with a calm tone, he interrupted Shen Cong Sheng without hesitation.

Everyone was shocked.

Shen Cong Sheng’s eyes widened a little, he was dumbfounded at this situation.

How long had it been since anyone scolded him like this?

He was the first supreme elder of Shen clan, an Eastern Sea rank eight great expert, who would dare to scold him in his face?

Even normally, when people like Song Qi Yuan had a conversation with him, they would still keep a composed attitude when they conversed with each other.

But Fang Yuan scolded him without restraint.

Plain and straightforward.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest looked at Fang Yuan with immensely shocked expressions.

"This is a rank eight Gu Immortal, the first supreme elder of Shen clan, don’t be so reckless!"

"If you don’t relent now, what will happen when you get transported out of here three hundred days later?"

At this moment, everyone did not know whether to admire Chu Ying’s courage or shame him for his stupidity.

After Fang Yuan finished scolding, he immediately disappeared, he had taken another mission and left again.

The remaining Gu Immortals stood as they stared at the Merit Obelisk blankly.

Shen Cong Sheng suddenly laughed lightly, breaking the silence: "This Chu Ying is very courageous. I am looking forward to seeing his courage after we leave this place."

He had a smile on his face but his eyes were flashing with furious sparks, his killing intent had appeared!

"Miao Ming Shen, who in the world is this Chu Ying and what is his background?" Shen Tan turned around and shouted aggressively.

He had an overbearing attitude, Gui Qi Ye and the rest were unhappy as they stared furiously.

Miao Ming Shen sighed deeply and shrugged: "If I tell you that I’m not sure of his origin, would you believe me?"

"Hehe." The corners of Shen Tan’s mouth twitched and he laughed dryly, the look on his face showed his current thoughts.

What sort of lie was this?

If he did not know about Chu Ying’s background, would he invite this person to explore Paradise Earth’s true inheritance?

"Chu Ying, oh Chu Ying, I am going to die because of you." Miao Ming Shen smiled bitterly but he did not give up, he decided to throw this problem over to Ren Xiu Ping.

"The reason I trusted Chu Ying was because of Ren Xiu Ping. Brother Ren, explain it, is there a need to hide the matter anymore?"

Miao Ming Shen’s words made everyone’s gazes gather on Ren Xiu Ping.

Ren Xiu Ping shook as he felt an immense pressure, he had to explain everything that he knew.

The immortals learned about the reason behind Chu Ying’s involvement now.

Miao Ming Shen continued to explain: "Actually, I have not interacted with Chu Ying much. I only invited him to an auction in the past. Back then, Tong Hua and Tu Tou Tuo were around as well."

Shen Cong Sheng turned his gaze towards these two.

Tu Tou Tuo and Tong Hua spoke one after another, explaining all that they knew.

Shen Cong Sheng heard their words as he frowned deeply.

There was a lot of information but it was all useless! All that was known was already known, while all that was not known was still unknown.

They had nowhere to start and no way to target him.

"This Chu Ying is not a simple person." Shen Cong Sheng had a feeling, but he was still confident: "He is just a rank seven transformation path Gu Immortal after all, he is not my match."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Light flickered and faded at once, Fang Yuan appeared on a small island in the sea.

"I am here again." Fang Yuan smiled lightly.

He accepted the mission to collect Earth Trench black oil at the nearby sea of this island.

This was the first mission he accepted when exploring the Dragon Whale Paradise in his previous life, he was most familiar with it.

"Many changes have happened in the Dragon Whale Paradise compared to the previous life."

"Not only did the blue dragon whale’s location change, there are more Gu Immortals here now, the missions have also increased in numbers."

"This black oil mission only appeared after I completed ten or so missions."

In the previous life, he had used this mission to save the mermaid girl Xia Lin, using her as his pawn to have her become the saintess of the Merman City, he slowly found his way to regret sea and found regret Gu.

Once regret Gu flew to him, the venerable method activated, sending Fang Yuan to the stone lotus island in the River of Time. Using that, Fang Yuan got around Heavenly Court’s assault and inherited a Red Lotus true inheritance.

After rebirth, Fang Yuan designed a more optimal plan for himself.

During the battle in the River of Time earlier, Fang Yuan destroyed six Immortal Gu Houses from Heavenly Court, he destroyed the river suppression lotus sealing formation and killed many Gu Immortals, only Nine Spiritual Fairy and Feng Jiu Ge escaped.

As the price, that stone lotus island was destroyed too.

Without the stone lotus island, regret Gu’s venerable method could not activate.

This time, Fang Yuan intended to take down this Dragon Whale Paradise, regret Gu was only part of the bigger plan.

The entire island was under the effect of Fang Yuan’s investigative killer move, it had no secrets at all.

The island was quite ordinary, there were not many resources here, it had a fishing village and a low quality spirit spring, there were a few Gu Masters in the village but most of the people were mortals.

Fang Yuan did not enter the fishing village immediately, he went into the sea first.

In the sea, a group of weaving sea spiders were hunting.

Fang Yuan got around them and dived deeper.

When he got close to the Earth Trench, he found a group of seashell sharks swimming around.

Fang Yuan had great strength but he did not want to act abruptly, he only concealed his presence, arriving at the black oil.

Black oil was an immortal material, it was dangerous to Gu Masters. Once they came into contact with black oil, food path dao marks would be carved in their bodies.

This was a huge problem for Gu Masters.

On one hand, the conflicting dao marks would make the oil collecting Gu Masters experience a fall in strength. Oil collecting food path Gu Masters were just too rare.

On the other hand, Gu Masters had mortal bodies, as time passes, they cannot help but become affected by the black oil.

The black oil in the Earth Trench tangled and weaved together like huge pythons. They were almost still but if one observed closely, they would see that the oil was moving slowly in the sea.

Fang Yuan activated his method, everywhere he went, black oil moved like water and spread out over a wide area.

"I remember that this is the location." Fang Yuan split some of the black oil apart but he did not find the blue scaled mermaid Xia Lin.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

It was possible that his rebirth created some changes, Xia Lin’s life might have changed, she might not have come here.

"It’s more likely that she’s nearby. The time now is quite early compared to the previous life after all." Fang Yuan thought about it, he did not give up immediately, he used his methods to move away the nearby black oil.

There were many things in the black oil, there were sea beast corpses and different ores. Blue scaled mermaid Xia Lin was among them, she had fainted.

Her face was not the same as Xie Han Mo, but their disposition was very alike, a complex gaze flickered in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

He breathed out lightly as a bubble surrounded Xia Lin.

Xia Lin was saved, her eyes started to move, she barely opened her eyes before fainting again.

When she woke up, she realized that she was lying in a waterhole.

The sky was wide and clear, there was bright sunlight.

The broad leaves of a few large trees cast a dense shadow, like an umbrella, covering her entire body.

The breeze caressed her like a lover’s gentle hand, making Xia Lin feel cozy.

"Didn’t I get engulfed when collecting black oil?" Xia Lin’s memories slowly surfaced: "That’s right, I seem to have been rescued. I saw a vague white figure on the dark ocean floor."

Her body was still limp and weak, Xia Lin could barely raise her upper body, she looked around but saw no one.

"Who saved me?" She became very confused, looking down at the waterhole that she was half lying in.

There was a pool of clear water in the waterhole, it was crystal clear. Her blue scaled fish tail was shining with the reflection of the light in water.

"This must be the arrangement of my savior." Xia Lin thought, she could not help but feel warmth in her heart. This water was not seawater, it was the most appropriate water for a weakened merman.

"You are awake." Just at this moment, the tree leaves were moved aside as Fang Yuan walked in.

"Did you save me?" Xia Lin stared at Fang Yuan, who wore white clothing, she felt a hint of familiarity.

"You are very lucky, I happened to find you in that situation." Fang Yuan smiled slightly.

Xia Lin was extremely grateful and was about to get up to express her gratitude, but was stopped by Fang Yuan’s outstretched arm.

"Your body is still too weak. Eat something." Fang Yuan extended his hand and a trace of green wind flew around to the top of the tree and picked a fruit that resembled a coconut.

The green wind held the fruit and flew to Xia Lin’s face. The green wind was like a pair of scissors, moving around and opening the shell, revealing the delicate bright red flesh inside that was like a pomegranate.

Xia Lin took a small piece and put it in her mouth. The flesh was tender and juicy, it rolled down her dry throat and into her stomach. There was a warm feeling in her stomach, the fruit was very delicious.

Xia Lin’s eyes instantly glowed, she was so hungry that she took out a few more chunks and put them in her mouth, swallowing them whole.

"It is very delicious." She could not help but exclaim, but then she saw that Fang Yuan kept staring at her with his gentle gaze.

Her face instantly flushed red as she stammered: "May I ask for your name, benefactor, I will definitely repay the favor of saving my life."

Fang Yuan laughed: "This was a simple action, you do not need to do anything. In the future, stay away from the black oil, it is very dangerous there. You were lucky to have met me this time."

Xia Lin’s expression turned dark.

She was in a huge debt because of her grandfather’s funeral and had to risk collecting black oil to pay off the debt. To think that not only did she fail to get black oil, she even nearly died from this.

"But even if I survive, I’ll be corroded by the black oil and will die soon. Sigh, how can I pay off my debts and repay this benefactor?" Xia Lin had a kind nature, she felt troubled over this.

At this time, Fang Yuan’s gentle voice resounded in her ears: "Oh, right, you had black oil corrosion earlier, but it is not a problem anymore. I’ve already healed the injuries on you without any lingering after-effects."

"Ah!" Xia Lin was astonished and stared at Fang Yuan with wide eyes, dumbfounded.

This Gu Master in front of her could actually heal the problem from black oil corrosion! This was truly remarkable.

Fang Yuan nodded at her: "Little girl, you are young, don’t have such rash thoughts. You still have a long journey ahead of you. Go ahead and eat something, after you regain your strength, come with me. I came here to do something."

"Oh." Xia Lin was still in a daze.

Fang Yuan smiled and turned around to leave.

Xia Lin watched him pass through the forest and disappear for a long time before she reacted and began to continue eating the fruit in her hand.

The flesh of the fruit was delicious and juicy, the windy breeze brushed her face, she was lying in pure water, her heart was filled with warmth and tranquility.

"Don’t tell me this is just a dream?" As she ate, her tears flowed silently down her face.

She was nothing more than an ordinary, poor mermaid girl. Reality was cold and harsh for her before this incident. The only warmth in her life came from her grandfather who took care of her.

Her grandfather who was her only kin had died, Xia Lin was all alone now, her heart was hollow, her only goal in life now was to complete her grandfather’s water burial.

In the customs of merfolk, a water burial was the final journey, it would bring peace to the dead. But a water burial was expensive, Xia Lin paid a huge price for it.

As the girl ate, she sobbed soundlessly.

Fang Yuan stood outside the forest, looking at the sea, he knew the situation inside well. But he did not go in, he gave the girl ample time to adjust her mood.

In this life, he had a grand plan for Dragon Whale Paradise.

Xia Lin’s series of missions were not the most important.

For Fang Yuan to obtain regret Gu, he only needed to enter regret crying sea. Back then, he had made use of Xia Lin’s chain of missions to enter regret sea area. But other than this series, he had many other ways to get there.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan focused on getting regret Gu while Miao Ming Shen and the rest focused on doing missions, the more they did, the more they found out. The atmosphere then was much better than now. Miao Ming Shen and the rest interacted and left behind information path mortal Gu at the Merit Obelisk, sharing their gains with everyone without asking for compensation.

Their collective findings and gains all became Fang Yuan’s current wealth.

Thus, Fang Yuan had a deep and comprehensive understanding towards the Merit Obelisk and blue dragon whale.

Xia Lin’s missions were created by Fang Yuan himself, it required luck and used a lot of time. The truth was, after some time, when mid-sized missions appear, there would be a few useful ones to get into regret crying sea.

In the previous life, when these missions appeared, Fang Yuan already had Xia Lin as his pawn, because Miao Ming Shen and the rest were showing desire towards these missions, Fang Yuan did not compete with them.

"But now, since I took the mission and found Xia Lin, it means that I can use her again."

"This pawn is very useful, as long as I replicate the success of my previous life, I can indirectly control Merman Sacred City."

"Controlling this force will be quite helpful to my plans ahead."

Fang Yuan thought to himself.

"Benefactor, I’ve kept you waiting." A moment later, Xia Lin floated out of the forest. She recovered some of her strength and did not want to keep Fang Yuan waiting.

A white cloud supported her lower body, three feet away from the ground, helping her to move forward on land.

"Don’t call me benefactor, my name is Chu Ying, people call me Master Chu." Fang Yuan smiled.

"Master Chu." Xia Lin said.

"Mm, let’s go." Fang Yuan brought Xia Lin as they moved to the fishing village.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan brought Xia Lin to the small fishing village and met the village head.

The moment they met, he soul searched directly in front of his face. The entire fishing village was in a trance for a while, and then recovered without suspicion.

Fang Yuan collated this information and compared it to his previous life, he found that nothing had changed in the small fishing village.

Like in his previous life, he was still using his identity as a traveling Gu Master to contact these mortals.

First, he challenged the village’s Gu Masters and defeated them easily, then he taught them how to refine water shell Gu and gave them the recipe.

The villagers were all very grateful.

Fang Yuan then took them to the bottom of the sea to practice using these water shell Gu, he even taught them some healing methods to alleviate the corrosion of the black oil.

To completely heal from the corrosion of the black oil, one needed at least rank four Gu worms.

The Gu Masters in the small fishing village were simply not even close to rank four. The things Fang Yuan taught them were things that they could do.

During this process, Fang Yuan focused on teaching Xia Lin.

In the previous life, he had only given her water shell Gu, but now, he wanted to nurture her properly. He used wisdom path methods to directly hand methods over to her mind. At the same time, he corrected many of her mistakes.

Fang Yuan did not stay in the small fishing village for long, and when he left, the entire village fell to their knees.

Xia Lin wanted to follow Fang Yuan, but he stopped her and said with deep meaning: "This isn’t the end of our connection, we will meet again in the future."

Xia Lin was helpless and could only watch tearfully as Fang Yuan disappeared with a flicker of light.

Fang Yuan returned to the Merit Obelisk once again.

His merit points had risen by ten.

The initial missions on the Merit Obelisk were small missions, the rewarded merit points ranged from one to ten.

This time, Fang Yuan collected black oil and taught the villagers in the small fishing village to sustain a livelihood, he had completed the task perfectly.

At this time, Shen Cong Sheng and the others had all been transported away to complete their respective missions, there was only one person at the Merit Obelisk now.

It was Miao Ming Shen.

Miao Ming Shen was staring at the four sides of the Merit Obelisk which had moving words and characters, he was very patient.

He faintly felt that there was a mysterious connection between himself and the Merit Obelisk, the peculiar feeling was extremely hidden and also very weak.

But he had no idea how to grasp onto this opportunity.

A sharp light flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes as he saw this.

The secrets involving Dragon Whale Paradise were very deep and mysterious.

What method did Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable use to restrict Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan had no way to find out.

His method did not leave any traces, it was as if it were a naturally occurring phenomenon, like how there were males and females among people, and how the sky had a sun and a moon.

Gu Immortals could not make a move on each other or the inhabitants of this small world.

But there were differences and discrepancies in this rule.

For example, Fang Yuan had soul searched the mortals in his earlier mission, he even gave a lot of knowledge to Xia Lin through wisdom path imparting methods.

Was that not considered making a move on the inhabitants?

Of course it was.

But Fang Yuan had no ill intentions, he was trying to help them. Thus, he was not restricted at all in his actions.

But once he had any evil thoughts, these methods would not be usable, he would even face backlash from using these killer moves.

Or for example, the collection of black oil in this mission.

The excess black oil was all kept in the sovereign immortal aperture by Fang Yuan.

Normally speaking, other than the immortal materials on the starting island, Gu Immortals could not take the resources of the other areas for themselves.

But Fang Yuan had taken the black oil near the island to complete his mission, by reducing the number of food path dao marks there, it would allow other natural resources to grow.

This was a good thing for the island’s environment on the whole, so it was not restricted.

Not only did Fang Yuan complete the mission, he also collected a portion of the black oil as profit. This mission to collect black oil was obviously much more profitable than the others.

There were many missions on the Merit Obelisk, but there were also differences in missions, whether they were superior or inferior.

In the previous life, Miao Ming Shen and the rest had a lot of findings, these were all Fang Yuan’s exclusive information now.

Fang Yuan slowly approached the Merit Obelisk.

His footsteps interrupted Miao Ming Shen’s thoughts as he turned around to look, his pupils shrunk as he thought: "It’s Chu Ying!"

Fang Yuan smiled: "Brother Miao, your connection with the Merit Obelisk is too weak. This connection is mainly used to find this place, it will not be of much help to you from now on. I would advise you to actively complete your missions and accumulate more merits."

Fang Yuan’s polite attitude surprised Miao Ming Shen.

He had seen with his own eyes when Fang Yuan said ’scram’ at Shen Tan and Shen Cong Sheng.

He was quickly attracted to Fang Yuan’s words as he felt some shock: "He actually knows about the connection between me and the Merit Obelisk! This is a secret I have never revealed to anyone else. How did he know? Unless he is like me and can also sense the location of the blue dragon whale? Or maybe he can’t sense its location, but has other forms of connections instead?"

Miao Ming Shen looked at Fang Yuan, feeling that this person was getting increasingly unfathomable.

He was filled with doubts, he opened his mouth to ask questions, but wisely close to keep it shut.

Fang Yuan acted so arrogantly in front of Shen Cong Sheng, it was useless to try to force him.

"If he wants to tell me, he will definitely take the initiative to speak, if I try to ask him, I will not get anything I want." Miao Ming Shen sighed internally.

Fang Yuan passed by as his finger pointed at a certain line of text on the obelisk, he suddenly said: "You can take this mission, it is quite suitable for you. Complete missions and accumulate merit points, it is not simply about doing superficial good deeds, it is better to teach a man to fish than to fish for him."

Miao Ming Shen shook internally, he gulped as he said two words: "Thank you."

"You’re welcome." Fang Yuan smiled.

Giving Miao Ming Shen some guidance was not just a casual action.

On one hand, it was to sow discord among these people for his own convenience, and on the other hand, he was also trying to make some arrangements to affect Eastern Sea.

The secret regarding Miao Ming Shen’s ability was only announced in the previous life after a lot of futile attempts at finding out. Regarding the truth behind it, many immortals had reliable guesses.

Miao Ming Shen was quite popular in the lone immortal world of Eastern Sea, if he was forced by Shen Cong Sheng into a corner, it was likely that Qi Sea Ancestor or Wu Shuai could recruit and take him in.

Fang Yuan did not take a mission, instead, he went to the other side of the Merit Obelisk and exchanged for a title.

In an instant, his merit points that exceeded a hundred were reduced to single digits, plummeting from the first place to the last.

When Miao Ming Shen saw the change on the merit board, his eyes sparkled and his mind was filled with huge suspicions: "Chu Ying spent a hundred merit points, what exactly did he exchange for?"

Fang Yuan took his mission and vanished again.

Miao Ming Shen immediately came to the other side of the Merit Obelisk to check the list of things they could exchange for.

But how could he find out easily?

There were too many rewards that were priced at a hundred merit points, it was also possible to have a combination of rewards to expend a hundred points instantly.

Miao Ming Shen felt a sense of curiosity, he immediately realized that Fang Yuan’s action had a deep meaning, it must be beneficial to him, otherwise he would not have given up his advantage like that.

"Did Chu Ying deliberately express goodwill earlier so that I would help him hide this information?" Another thought appeared in Miao Ming Shen’s mind.

But soon he shook his head.

Fang Yuan’s merit points were right there, it was something that could not be hidden, soon, the other Gu Immortals would discover it.

With a flash of white light, Fang Yuan was transported to the bottom of the sea.

The seawater was murky, sand was churning, and a giant salamander was causing chaos.

This giant salamander had a smooth body without a single scale, its head was wide and large, its body was stout and flat, its limbs were very thick and short, and its tentacles were like tiger claws. Its claws and teeth were sharp, its gills were glistening with firm tiger whiskers.

This was a desolate beast, tiger king salamander!

The tiger king salamander rampaged and created shocking waves that affected the peace of the land.

The mission that Fang Yuan took on was to suppress it.

Fang Yuan did not rush to take action, he scouted first.

Soon, his brow furrowed slightly and a peculiar expression appeared on his face.

He could not find out the reason for the tiger king salamander’s rampage. There was nothing abnormal about its body or mind, but it was acting manically and unpredictably, wantonly destroying its surroundings.

Not only that, it even self-mutilated, it had clearly gone insane.

Attempting to attack the tiger king salamander, Fang Yuan discovered that this desolate beast’s battle strength had soared to the level of an ancient desolate beast.

"This is the same situation as the one that Miao Ming Shen’s group faced in the previous life." Fang Yuan sighed internally.

In his previous life, he had only completed the missions involving Xia Lin, there were few missions and he did not encounter this. After trying it in this life, he found that according to his knowledge and vision, he could not even see through this peculiarity.

The tiger king salamander was actually very beneficial to the environment.

It could swallow salt and sand to purify the seawater, making it crystal clear and saline, producing extraordinary natural resources.

A tiger king salamander is often the core of a pure and clean sea. This pure seawater could be drunk directly.

If it was possible, Fang Yuan did not want to kill this tiger king salamander. If he could pacify and calm it down, Fang Yuan would be able to reap a large amount of merit points.

But right now, it was obviously impossible.

Fang Yuan had no choice but to take action and kill it.

The corpse of the tiger king salamander acted as the extra profit for the mission and was kept in the immortal aperture.

Ren Xiu Ping returned to the starting island again.

And a group of people had gathered near the Merit Obelisk.

Seeing his arrival, a Gu Immortal of Shen Clan, Shen Xiao, said to him: "Congratulations, Brother Ren, you’re now at the top of the merit board."

"Ah? How is that possible!" Ren Xiu Ping did not believe it at first, but after witnessing with his own eyes, he was surprised and delighted.

His name was really ranked first, even Shen Cong Sheng was ranked second.

Shen Cong Sheng had also returned and was standing in front of the obelisk, his expression was a little dark.

Ren Xuping carefully looked at Shen Cong Sheng, he was thrilled that he had ’defeated’ the rank eight Gu Immortal, but at the same time, he was also a little worried.

Shen Cong Sheng cast his gaze towards Ren Xiu Ping.

Ren Xiuping quickly bowed his head and cupped his fists: "Lord."

Shen Cong Sheng nodded: "Ren Xiu Ping, in your opinion, what exactly did Chu Ying exchange that caused his own ranking to slip to last place?"

Ren Xiu Ping was dazed, only now did he realize that Fang Yuan was at the bottom of the ranking, he quickly calmed down and furrowed his brows: "Indeed, Chu Ying would rather give up the lead to spend his merit points, it is certain that the thing he exchanged for was very useful to him."

If it could be helpful to him, it would naturally be advantageous to the others as well.

But what exactly would it be?

The group of immortals had been discussing for a while now.

With a flash of white light, Fang Yuan appeared in front of everyone once again.

At the same time, his ranking on the merit board skyrocketed, once again rising to the top.

Chu Ying, ninety-eight merit points!

At once, the immortals became tongue-tied.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Small sized missions gave one to ten merit points. Meanwhile, mid-sized missions gave eleven to a hundred merit points.

Fang Yuan exchanged for a ’good person’ title, it allowed him to accept mid-sized missions.

Mid-sized missions were Gu Immortal level, the tiger king salamander that Fang Yuan dealt with this time was a rank six desolate beast but its battle strength had reached rank seven.

This mission’s difficulty was way beyond the limits of a mortal.

The higher the difficulty, the greater the reward.

"Thus, I earned over ninety merit points this time..." Fang Yuan realized: "The reason why I did not get a hundred is because I took away the tiger king salamander’s corpse. If I left it behind, the dao marks on the corpse would spread out and elevate the foundation of the surrounding environment."

Fang Yuan had done this purposely.

He was curious about the reason why the tiger king salamander went on a rampage.

Thus, he brought this corpse with him, planning to research on it later.

In the previous life, Miao Ming Shen and the rest encountered this situation many times, they researched together but did not find the root cause. This time, Fang Yuan wanted to try it himself.

The group of immortals looked at Fang Yuan and the merit board, their expressions and emotions were similarly terrible.

They had worked so hard to complete their missions, each one gave ten merit points at most. Fang Yuan however, got over ninety merit points from one mission.

This comparison was truly infuriating!

Even though small sized missions were simple, they wasted a lot of time. Mid-sized missions was much more efficient in terms of merit points.

Looking as Fang Yuan approached the Merit Obelisk, some of the Gu Immortals felt jealous, some were curious, while others felt despair.

At this rate, Fang Yuan was taking huge steps forward while they were crawling like snails, how could they ever catch up to him? He would only leave them in the dust as time passed!

Hua Die looked at Miao Ming Shen, wanting to ask Fang Yuan about this, but he shook his head at her.

Shen Cong Sheng looked over at Shen Xiao.

Shen Xiao had no choice, he had to force a smile and walk towards Fang Yuan.

"Brother Chu." He cupped his fists, speaking in an earnest tone and polite attitude: "Just name the price, as long as I can afford it, I will satisfy you."

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: "You want to know how I obtained so many merit points?"

"Indeed." Shen Xiao cupped his fists again: "I hope brother can teach us. Don’t worry, with my Shen clan’s foundation, we will not disappoint you. Furthermore, you are not just getting my friendship, you will get the friendship of Shen clan!"

Earlier, Shen clan tried to force Fang Yuan but he was indifferent and acted extremely arrogantly. Shen Xiao changed his tactic and tried to exchange for it using benefits instead, it was a wise move.

Fang Yuan laughed: "Sure, use a true inheritance of your Shen clan to exchange for it."

Shen Cong Sheng’s eyes shined when he heard this, he did not expect Fang Yuan to agree, he could not help but ask: "What true inheritance do you want?"

"It is up to you, if you don’t want to give an inheritance, Immortal Gu are fine too." Fang Yuan said nonchalantly.

Shen Cong Sheng’s lips twitched, he wanted an Immortal Gu? Dream on!

He thought about it and tossed out an information path mortal Gu.

Fang Yuan received it and looked through the content, there was a transformation path Gu Immortal true inheritance, it was rather incomplete, the truly valuable parts were still with Shen Cong Sheng.

Fang Yuan clicked his tongue as he tossed the mortal Gu back to Shen Cong Sheng: "Another one."

Shen Cong Sheng received the information path mortal Gu and erased the information inside, injecting a new wave of content. Of course, this was incomplete as well.

Fang Yuan received it and nodded, giving the information path mortal Gu back to Shen Cong Sheng: "Another one."

Shen Cong Sheng received the information path mortal Gu and looked at Fang Yuan, saying grimly: "Chu Ying, you want to look at so many of them, how much content do you want to see?"

Fang Yuan’s expression turned solemn: "Don’t worry, I, Chu Ying, act according to my principles, I am not someone who goes back on my words. Those who treat others as fools are the real fools. How about this, give me a portion of constant wave sound and I will tell you the reason why I gained so many merit points."

"Fine, I’ll believe you once." Shen Cong Sheng did not hesitate, taking out a conch from his immortal aperture and tossing it to Fang Yuan.

This conch was only the size of a palm, and was itself a desolate beast.

There was a wave sound stored in the conch, this wave sound was a sound path rank seven immortal material, a specialty product of Shen clan, it could produce sounds for years without ever stopping.

Fang Yuan inspected it and found nothing suspicious, he placed this immortal material into his sovereign immortal aperture.

He looked at Shen Cong Sheng and smiled, "Then I’ll tell you this secret. Do you want me to tell you alone, or do you wish to make it public?"

This time, it was Shen Cong Sheng’s turn to look solemn.

But he only hesitated for a moment and then smiled: "What is there to hide? Please speak directly."

As expected of an old expert who had been leading Shen clan for many years.

Once he said that, even the Gu Immortals on Miao Ming Shen’s side developed some good feelings towards Shen Cong Sheng.

Miao Ming Shen coldly snorted in his mind: "No agreement can be made here, Shen Cong Sheng can’t restrain Chu Ying at all. Chu Ying is trying to sow discord! Since he can tell Shen Cong Sheng alone, he can tell others in the future as well. Shen Cong Sheng knows this, so even if he is unwilling, he has no choice but to make it public."

"Good, Lord Shen Cong Sheng’s magnanimity is admirable." Fang Yuan turned around and placed his palm on the surface of the obelisk.

Words related to missions started to vanish before emerging again.

But these new words were different from before.

Thousand soul fog appeared on White Light Mountain, the living creatures were in dire need of help to clear it up.

In seahorse sea area, coral seahorses fought each other, a number of seahorse kings were rioting and needed to be suppressed.

The formation on gathering-separation island had not been repaired for years, causing serious disruptions to the lives of the islanders, it needed to be fixed.

Fish round island lacked seawater, one had to make it rain for three days and nights there.

...

The Gu Immortals were stunned.

These missions were clearly different from the previous ones, such as the thousand soul fog, which was a soul path rank seven immortal material, it was quite famous. Another example was that every coral seahorse was a rank five wild beast, while seahorse kings were at least desolate beasts.

Shen Xiao watched with glimmering eyes as he sighed deeply: "These are missions worthy of Gu Immortals."

Those small sized missions earlier were limited to the mortal level, they were simply weak in comparison to these missions.

Shen Xiao copied Fang Yuan and placed his hand on the obelisk but his expression turned to confusion: "Why can’t I accept these missions?"

"Of course not. I have used up a hundred merit points in order to accept these missions." Fang Yuan smiled.

The immortals quickly focused their attention on his words.

But Fang Yuan kept his mouth shut.

Shen Xiao became anxious, he cupped his fists at Fang Yuan: "Please do teach us, Brother Chu."

Fang Yuan looked at him with a slightly mocking expression with raised brows: "Why should I tell you?"

Shen Xiao’s expression froze: "We made a deal earlier."

"I know. You guys asked how I acquired a large amount of merit points. I have completed the transaction and told you the reason, it was because I received these missions. As for how to receive these missions, that is a different question." Fang Yuan said.

The group of immortals were dumbfounded.

Shen Cong Sheng’s expression turned dark while the Shen clan Gu Immortals looked at Fang Yuan with anger in their eyes.

Shen Xiao was stunned before he laughed again, only this time, it was clearly mixed with anger: "Brother Chu is really impressive at doing business. A single answer alone earned you a rank seven immortal material that is unique to my clan."

Fang Yuan nodded: "Shen clan’s constant wave sound is unique in the world, I really profited from this transaction. But I did not lie to you, I did not give you false information either. I, Chu Ying, am not such a person."

Fang Yuan showed a demeanor of having a conscience and bottom-line, it made all of the immortals here seethe with anger.

Shen Cong Sheng’s anger accumulated.

He was a grand righteous path rank eight, he was actually being toyed by this rank seven lone immortal Chu Ying who had no fame, how could he let this pass?

"After we leave Dragon Whale Paradise, I am going to deal with you properly!" Shen Cong Sheng swore in his heart, but he smiled and laughed heartily without showing any displeasure, he clapped: "Chu Ying, very impressive. You obtained the constant wave sound through your wittiness, that was your ability. Don’t worry, why would my Shen clan be so petty over a small matter? Come, let’s make another deal, tell me what you want in exchange for this information to get the mission?"

The group of immortals looked at Fang Yuan with eyes that could not help but reveal envy.

It was just so easy to earn immortal materials like this.

But from Shen Cong Sheng’s perspective, his clan was affluent, one or two rank seven immortal materials in exchange for precious information was not a bad deal.

But Fang Yuan shook his head: "I am not going to sell this information, you all can try it yourselves."

Shen Cong Sheng glared: "Chu Ying, I hope that you will think about it clearly!"

Fang Yuan, however, ignored him and disappeared again with a flash of white light.

Shen Cong Sheng was livid, he was not given any face at all.

"Chu Ying, don’t let me catch you outside!" Shen Cong Sheng swore in his heart. This was the first time he had seen such a rank seven Gu Immortal, he completely disregarded him.

Fang Yuan needed to maintain his advantage on the merit board, this was useful to his plan of conquering the paradise.

"As for Shen Cong Sheng and the rest... hehe, I don’t believe that you can stay united." Fang Yuan smiled coldly in his heart, his plan to sow discord did not work earlier because it was a minor action, but this time, he dug a pit, he was not afraid that Shen Cong Sheng would not jump in.

In a way, Fang Yuan needed external help. It was necessary to split up this huge group.

He could complete the mid-sized missions independently by himself, but after the mid-sized missions, there were large sized missions too.

This kind of mission often required different Gu Immortals to cooperate with each other and work together to complete it.

Although Fang Yuan had quite a few Gu Immortal subordinates hidden in his immortal aperture, it was useless. In this Dragon Whale Paradise, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s methods restricted this.

It seemed that only those Gu Immortals who had passed that test outside and were sent to the starting island while asleep were eligible to enter and leave this place, and also receiving and completing missions.

After Fang Yuan left, the atmosphere at the Merit Obelisk turned heavy.

Because Shen Cong Sheng had made a rather forceful request, he wanted the surrounding Gu Immortals to spend their respective merit points to exchange for those contentious rewards.

Shen Cong Sheng was betting that one of these rewards would be the one Fang Yuan exchanged for earlier!

Since Fang Yuan did not tell him, he was going to test it personally.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest were unwilling to do that but they had no choice, they had to make considerations for the future and could not offend this rank eight sound path great expert.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Shen Cong Sheng stared intently at the surface of the Merit Obelisk.

Although he did not show it, he was indeed feeling anxious at the moment.

As the first supreme elder of Shen clan, he was in a high position of power. As a rank eight great expert, he could be said to be standing at the peak of Gu cultivation. However, facing the Paradise Earth true inheritance, his foundation was simply too shallow and insignificant.

Fang Yuan was able to take on mid-sized missions, he had a huge advantage in getting the Paradise Earth true inheritance. Shen Cong Sheng was forced to do everything he could to catch up with Fang Yuan’s footsteps.

Although he had come here with a different purpose, the Paradise Earth true inheritance was right in front of him, he would not give up without trying his best to get it.

Therefore, even though Shen Cong Sheng knew that Fang Yuan had the intention of sowing discord, he still forced the other Gu Immortals to exchange for the various rewards.

In order to try to ease the emotions of the other Gu Immortals, Shen Cong Sheng also took out various immortal materials from his own immortal material to compensate them.

However, it was clear that these immortal materials were far less valuable than the Paradise Earth true inheritance.

The immortals were forced to comply with Shen Cong Sheng’s orders due to his authority, their inner resentment naturally grew deeper and deeper.

Shen Cong Sheng had lost the hearts of the people, and to make matters worse, these rewards exchanged by the group of immortals were not the one that allowed him to take on mid-sized missions.

"The rewards on this list are a bit too numerous, excluding those rewards exchanged before, there are still three most likely rewards left." Shen Cong Sheng felt a headache.

"Let’s take a gamble." He knew that time could not be wasted, after a moment of deep deliberation, he used his merit points to choose and exchange for one of them.

At the next moment, Shen Cong Sheng’s expression turned dark.

"This is not the one!" He gritted his teeth, feeling very dejected.

He had lost the gamble.

It was really bad luck.

As such, they had spent almost all of their accumulated merit points, but what they obtained, although helpful, were not very significant in this situation.

"Don’t tell me it is this ’good person’ title?" Shen Cong Sheng looked at the merit board, sighing deeply to himself.

It was useless to say anything now.

All he could do was to hurry up and accumulate more merit points, then continue to exchange for rewards.

"But before that, I still need to appease these Gu Immortals." Shen Cong Sheng turned to look at the immortals.

They had similarly unhappy expressions.

Shen Cong Sheng was quite eloquent, after saying some words, he pulled out a batch of immortal materials and gave them to the immortals.

Although the immortals received these immortal materials, their expressions only changed slightly.

In this Dragon Whale Paradise, Shen Cong Sheng had rank eight battle strength but he could not do anything to them. This key was the most important foundation for Shen Cong Sheng’s declining influence.

Swish swish swish...

The tides were rising and falling, the fishy sea breeze blowing on his face, Fang Yuan stood in the clouds, overlooking the sea market below him from the sky.

The sea market was a place where people sold and exchanged for cultivation resources, usually having fixed locations. Not long ago, Fang Yuan disguised himself as Qi Sea Ancestor to hold the Eastern Sea banquet, in a way, it was a super-sized sea market, it almost involved all of the Gu Immortals in Eastern Sea.

The same type of sea markets existed in Dragon Whale Paradise, and there were quite a few of them.

This sea market that Fang Yuan observed was centered around a small island, with numerous fishing boat-like Gu Houses surrounding the island.

For more than half of each year, this island would be flooded by seawater, so this sea market was not open all year round.

Because of its advantageous location, the island sea market became an indispensable trading area. Even if it was not open for half the time each year, as long as it opened, the surrounding Gu Masters and forces would flock to it.

Fang Yuan was very familiar with this sea island, he had come here in his previous life.

In his previous life, Xia Lin had been framed on this island by an unscrupulous merchant, the mission Fang Yuan had happened to take was to punish this merchant severely, he saved Xia Lin as a result.

In this life, Fang Yuan also took the mission and came here, but it was a mid-sized mission, completely different from the previous time in terms of characters involved.

The sea market was extremely lively.

There was a huge crowd of people moving around, having both humans and merfolk.

"Come, come, take a look, this is a superb crystal coral."

"There are three Gu house River Boats left, quickly buy them before they are sold out!"

"Purchasing grand soil, I will buy as many as you can sell..."

Xia Lin appeared.

She moved on the deck, observing the goods at the stalls as she made her way towards the core island.

Unlike before, she was energetic and her eyes had life in them, after receiving

Fang Yuan’s guidance and teaching after a life-and-death situation, she had improved drastically from the inside out.

Fang Yuan activated his investigative method, surveying the surrounding hundred li.

As soon as Xia Lin appeared, he found her.

Fang Yuan did not approach Xia Lin, but continued to scout the interior of the island, as well as the depths of the sea.

An immortal level formation gradually appeared in his perception.

Fang Yuan could not help but praise it in his mind as he looked at it.

The structure of this immortal formation was very profound, it was a formation that was mainly earth path and water path, its role was to sustain the island, managing the surrounding sea currents and improving the environment of the entire surrounding sea.

But now, this immortal formation was damaged, the earth path portion was eroded while the water path portion was not changed much.

There was originally a balance of earth path and water path. Now, with the weakening of earth path, water path became more overbearing. The island was able to remain open the entire year in the past, but because of the damage to the formation, it would be submerged in water for half of each year.

Fang Yuan wanted to repair the formation now.

Fang Yuan’s abilities, however, were still somewhat lacking. His formation path attainment level was not bad, being at grandmaster. But to use the natural dao marks to create a formation, he would have to be a great grandmaster.

At the same time, his water path attainment level was at grandmaster, while his earth path attainment level was only master.

And the problem was that this formation needed fixing in the earth path aspect.

"This formation is not the work of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, but a certain formation path great grandmaster instead." Fang Yuan analyzed.

If it were Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable himself, it would definitely gave the style and size of a formation like regret crying sea.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan and the others had discovered that they were not the first batch of Gu Immortals to come into the Dragon Whale Paradise.

There were also predecessors who had entered here before to receive missions and earn merit points.

Evidently, the formation Fang Yuan saw was the work of a certain predecessor.

"There’s no need to hurry, looking at the time, there should be some gain at Wu Shuai’s end soon." While Fang Yuan continued his surveillance and transmitted the information he detected to the time path clone for deductions, he also stealthily descended and mixed in with the crowd, following after Xia Lin.

Xia Lin entered a gambling den.

The door had three words written on it, Golden Jade House, it was clearly a high grade gambling den among the mortals.

This gambling den had tens of huge rocks in the hall, behind the hall were many rooms with an assortment of rock dissecting Gu worms for the customers to enjoy using.

"I’m here to return the loan." Xia Lin took out an information path mortal Gu.

Several months ago, her only family member, her grandfather, died.

Merfolk sea funerals were very expensive. In order to bury her grandfather, she had to borrow primeval stones.

To repay the debt, she had to take a risk and collect black oil, almost dying in the Earth Trench as a result. Fortunately, she met Fang Yuan and was saved miraculously, not only that, her strength even rose drastically thanks to his help.

Just like in her previous life, Xia Lin obtained gather oil Gu from Fang Yuan. Her efficiency in collecting oil increased, she quickly gathered a huge amount of primeval stones from selling oil.

The one who attended to her was a scarred merman, after taking this information path mortal Gu, he smiled deviously: "Lass, you must have seen wrongly, our agreement is not like this."

Xia Lin was slightly stunned, "What do you mean?"

The surrounding Gu Masters knew about Golden Jade House’s usual tricks, they saw this and shook their heads: "Sigh, another Gu Master has fallen for it again."

Xia Lin talked to the other party and finally reacted.

"You guys are shameless, you changed the agreement details, our contract was ten percent interest, but you raised it to sixty percent!" Xia Lin said with a furious expression.

The scarred merman’s face became solemn, he looked at Xia Lin with a vicious gaze: "Young lady, you cannot spread false news like that! Are you trying to ruin our reputation, this is detrimental to our business, who would come to our shop after this? Can you bear the cost of our losses?"

"Screw you! Even if I die, I will expose this shop’s evil deeds."

The scarred merman changed his tone as he said eerily: "Die? You are too naive, sometimes, being alive is worse than dying."

A sharp light shined in Xia Lin’s eyes: "You forced my hand!"

She shouted as she attacked.

Swoosh!

An explosion was heard as a torrent was shot out.

The scarred merman did not expect that in this situation, an innocent and naive lass would dare to attack him, a rank three, in his territory, the Golden Jade House.

The scarred merman was caught unprepared, he was washed away by the torrent, crashing into the wall as many decorations shattered.

The commotion was huge, the Gu Masters who were quietly choosing and dissecting rocks all came to watch.

A large number of eyes turned to look at Xia Lin and the scarred merman.

"What happened?"

"What happened?"

The scarred merman was lying in rubble, he looked at Xia Lin with extreme disbelief and anger.

He wanted to get up, but in the end, he only managed to raise his finger.

After that, he collapsed and stopped breathing.

"Dead... he died!"

"Oh heavens, who is this girl? She actually killed a merman in one move."

"He was a rank three Gu Master!"

The crowd went into a commotion, the Gu Masters were deeply shocked.

Xia Lin was also quite surprised by this, she was only rank two now, but the Gu worms that Fang Yuan gave her were all incredibly useful, they could form very powerful killer moves.

After Xia Lin used these Gu worms to form a rank two killer move, she killed a rank three Gu Master in one hit.

The mermaid girl was stunned.

She was dazed on the spot.

Fang Yuan smiled as he transmitted to her.

"Master Chu!" The mermaid girl heard his voice as her eyes shined, she spoke with deep joy.

But Fang Yuan did not show up, he instructed the mermaid girl on how to find an excuse to take over the entire Golden Jade House in a dignified and justified manner.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Jian Wen blessed land.

The palace was deep and had a magnificent number of structures. The shade of the trees was thick, the summer cicadas sang.

The long-closed doors of the palace were opened, all of the featherman girls along the way fell to their knees to greet the master of the palace, Xia Cha.

Xia Cha’s expression was unsightly, she was filled with gloominess.

She had tried all sorts of methods in her closed cultivation, but none of them could allow her to advance from a rank five Gu Master to a rank six.

All methods had been exhausted, leaving only one path in front of her - to purchase the rank six level second aperture Immortal Gu from Fang Yuan.

As the first supreme elder of Xia clan, Xia Cha originally had rank eight cultivation, but in the ambush battle of the River of Time, she was captured by Fang Yuan. Although she was lucky to survive, her rank eight immortal aperture had already been taken away by Fang Yuan.

After releasing Xia Cha, Fang Yuan took the opportunity to sell his second aperture Gu and extort the Southern Border super forces in another way.

As a result, Xia Cha was given the opportunity to cultivate again, she grasped it like a drowning man who was surviving by hanging onto a wooden plank.

Xia Cha had now regained rank five cultivation, but she was stuck at the most crucial step.

Advancing to Gu Immortal!

Her countless attempts to ascend to immortal had failed.

"Ugh." Xia Cha sighed, coming to terms with reality once and for all.

"Prepare fresh water for me to clean up, additionally, spread news that I have come out, ask second supreme elder and third supreme elder to come here." Xia Cha instructed the featherman maids beside her.

However, after waiting for an hour, Xia Cha did not see the arrival of second supreme elder or third supreme elder, but rather they transmitted that they had important matters to handle, they were unable to come.

"These two old scoundrels!" Xia Cha cursed in her heart, a chilly feeling assaulted her heart.

Although she was also clear that sooner or later there would be such a day, when it actually came, she still felt a chill in her heart.

To think that she had once been the center of authority, she made all sorts of sacrifices for Xia clan, she was the decision maker of all political affairs, but now she was just a rank five cripple who had to endure other people’s disrespect.

In the past, Xia clan’s second supreme elder and third supreme elder had to look up to her as their leader. In fact, their rise to their current status was all because of Xia Cha’s help of nurturing.

"It looks like... these old scoundrels are trying to gain independence." Xia Cha looked at the empty hall as she sighed in her heart.

There was not much anger in her, but more of a sense of helplessness and sadness.

Could she say that they were ungrateful? Not entirely. In fact, Xia Cha understood the choice that these Xia clan Gu Immortals made.

Because of her, Xia clan had already been extorted too harshly by Fang Yuan, their inventory was greatly depleted, even though they had painstakingly accumulated so many years of foundation, it was like them looking after Fang Yuan’s assets now.

Even if Xia Cha could regain her cultivation, she would have to start all over again, the resources expended in the long run would certainly be a huge amount.

Should they give the resources to Xia Cha or keep it for themselves?

After the initial panic and uncertainty, Xia clan’s Gu Immortals began to have an unsaid agreement with each other.

Xia Cha’s first supreme elder title was now just a hollow status. Her rank five cultivation level could not allow her to intervene in Gu Immortal level situations.

Xia Cha pondered for a long while before she took out an information path mortal Gu and gave it to a featherman maid for her to bring to the second supreme elder.

But in the evening, the reply from second supreme elder infuriated Xia Cha once again.

"Even the title of the first supreme elder has no value anymore." Xia Cha gritted her teeth.

It turned out that she had proposed a deal with the second supreme elder in the information path mortal Gu, Xia Cha was willing to hand over her own first supreme elder title to the second supreme elder. He would be able to rightfully sit on the throne of Xia clan’s highest position of authority, while only having to pay an amount of cultivation resources.

But Xia clan’s second supreme elder did not accept it, he politely rejected her offer.

Evidently, he had reached an agreement with the third supreme elder, they were going to make Xia Cha their figurehead and still let her continue to be the first supreme elder.

Xia clan’s situation was not the same as Ba clan.

Ba clan’s Ba Shi Ba encountered the same situation as Xia Cha, but he was already kicked off his position as the first supreme elder, the newly advanced rank eight Gu Immortal Ba De had taken the role instead.

Meanwhile, Xia clan’s Xia Zhao and Xia Chen Yuan were only rank seven in cultivation level, they both cultivated earth path.

Years ago, when Xia Cha first came to power, she was not a rank eight Gu Immortal yet, in order to take control of Xia clan, she had nurtured Xia Chen Yuan and Xia Zhao, to use them to contest against Xia clan’s existing factions.

Now that Xia Cha’s cultivation level had fallen to rank five, while Xia Chen Yuan and Xia Zhao still had their authority, they started having different ideas.

But as far as the righteous path was concerned, they did not dare to make a move on Xia Cha, who had shown great kindness to the two of them. They would rather let Xia Cha have the position of first supreme elder than to lose their own reputation.

Xia Cha knew that her influence over Xia clan had slipped to a dangerous point, and it was slipping faster and faster!

She had to become an immortal as soon as possible, otherwise, she would be completely pushed out of the circle of Xia clan’s higher-ups.

However, there was no way for her to break free from this predicament, as she did not have any capital to negotiate or transact.

Xia Cha’s situation was not an exception, but the norm.

The attitudes among the Southern Border righteous path forces had started to change.

The most important person causing this change was naturally Wu clan’s Wu Yong.

He had been relying on Heavenly Court and his own political skills to elevate his own reputation and influence in Southern Border’s righteous path.

The downfall of Xia Cha and Ba Shi Ba, these experienced rank eights, gave him an incredibly rare opportunity.

Despite the appearance of Lu Wei Yin, the Virtue Paradise behind him included a large number of mushroommen and not just humans. This gave them a natural political shortcoming in Southern Border’s righteous path, which Wu Yong grasped firmly and took full advantage of.

Lu Wei Yin did not pose an obstacle to Wu Yong, so his influence in the Southern Alliance was growing by the day.

There was already a faction within the Southern Alliance, its voice was becoming louder and louder, with Wu Yong being the main advocate. He advocated that the Southern Alliance should actively confront Fang Yuan and stop accepting his blackmail and extortion. Compromising with a demon like Fang Yuan would only fuel his arrogance.

The Southern Border righteous path forces had almost gotten back most of their hostages, they had also been hurt by Fang Yuan’s blackmail and extortion. Thus, more and more Southern Border Gu Immortals responded to Wu Yong’s call with an increasingly supportive attitude.

What Wu Yong exploited was precisely the hatred that the righteous path Gu Immortals felt towards Fang Yuan.

Under the moonlit night, Fang Yuan’s Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body traveled alongside Chi Qu You.

A secret transaction involving dream realms had just ended.

"Lord Chi, we should part here." Fang Yuan’s dream path clone smiled.

He was a temporary clone made from the dream realm, he had Gu Immortal cultivation and would self-detonate into a dream realm after reaching the time limit.

Chi Qu You cupped his fists and sighed: "Fang Yuan, it’s not that I am making things difficult, it’s just that the risk of this business has become bigger. Now that the situation is so tense, if we get exposed, my Chi clan’s reputation will be completely ruined."

The Pure Dream clone snorted coldly in his mind, Chi Qu You proposed to increase the price, no longer satisfied by the previous price. The given reason was that Southern Border’s righteous path was becoming more and more aggressive in dealing with Fang Yuan, Wu Yong gathering a huge force in Southern Border’s righteous path.

This reason was of course bullshit, the real reason was that Chi Qu You used this excuse to raise the price because he wanted to get even more dream path research results.

Fang Yuan wanted more dream realms, but now that it was getting harder and harder to extort Southern Border’s righteous path, the secret deal between Chi clan and Fang Yuan had become his main source again.

Chi clan controlled the dream realm formation, one of its kind in Southern Border, Fang Yuan could only steal a portion of the dream realms by working with Chi clan.

"I will explain this matter to my main body." The dream path clone left this sentence and directly flew away.

Chi Qu You stayed where he was and watched Fang Yuan’s dream path clone disappear into the sky, his face turning cold as he left with a soft snort.

It was not like he did not think of attacking the dream path clone.

But he lacked dream path methods to deal with a dream path Gu Immortal. Furthermore, he was also worried that Fang Yuan’s main body was likely to be around here waiting in ambush.

Fang Yuan himself was far away in Eastern Sea, but for this transaction, Wu Shuai had already arrived nearby with his Dragon Palace.

If Chi Qu You were to make a move, he would certainly not gain anything.

The Pure Dream clone soon returned to Dragon Palace.

This was a temporary clone with immortal-level cultivation, but after reaching the time limit, it would fall apart and turn into a dream realm.

"We cannot continue with Chi clan’s business anymore, unless we allow him to raise the price." The dream path clone said coldly, he opened his immortal aperture and let out a few dream realm bodies: "This batch of dream realms is likely the last batch we can get."

It could not be helped.

Fang Yuan and Chi Qu You did not make any kind of binding agreement.

Chi Qu You purposely raised the price by using the excuse of Southern Border’s attitude.

"The main enemy is in front of us, after this hurdle, this trivial Chi clan is nothing to worry about." Wu Shuai opened his mouth.

Right now, he could not make a move yet.

The more times he made a move, the more likely Heavenly Court would notice the true relationship between the Wu Shuai clone and Fang Yuan’s main body.

The killer move dreamy light smoke had to be used on Heavenly Court, exposing it on Chi Qu You was truly a huge waste, it would be like killing a chicken with a bull’s knife.

Rather than dealing with Chi clan, it would be more efficient to attack the formation directly.

In fact, with Fang Yuan’s main body staying in Eastern Sea, it would be possible to deal with Chi clan with just the strength of Wu Shuai’s forces.

But if he revealed these trump cards in advance, Heavenly Court would likely be so happy they might laugh in their dreams.

Small greed ruins big plans.

Moreover, by allowing Southern Border to preserve its strength, it could also cause more trouble for Heavenly Court in the future.

Directly destroying the enemy, although straightforward and easy, sometimes does not reap the greatest benefits. For example, Fang Yuan had released Xia Cha and Ba Shi Ba, they had already started feeling ostracized and neglected in their respective clans.

Fang Yuan would secretly sponsor them in the future.

Their current situation could be said to be caused by Fang Yuan. But besides Fang Yuan, they had nobody else to rely on.

Fang Yuan, on the other hand, needed these people to act as his eyes and ears, planting them in the righteous path forces of Southern Border, so that he would always maintain a certain amount of influence over Southern Border.

It was just that at the moment, Fang Yuan still lacked some means to restrict them.

Regarding this, the time path clone was already working night and day to make deductions.

Boom boom boom.

With a series of muffled sounds, the temporary Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies exploded one by one, turning into lumps of dream realms that fused with each other.

These were all earth path dream realms.

Wu Shuai sat on his dragon throne in the palace, his soul left his body and entered the dream.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Heaven and earth were gloomy, dark clouds loomed overhead, endless thunder roared and resonated.

Scarlet lightning flashed countless times in the dark rolling clouds of smoke, black clouds swirled like vortexes, lightning balls descended from the center of the swirling vortexes one by one.

These lightning balls were strangely shaped, resembling porcelain products, as large as a water tank, and glowing with red light.

Grand tribulation — Red Porcelain Lightning Ball Tribulation!

The lightning balls smashed down and erupted with crisp explosions.

On the ground, an Immortal Gu House silently suffered from the damage caused by the explosions of the lightning balls, large pieces of debris continued to fly into the air, before turning back into the corpses of countless Gu worms.

Inside the Immortal Gu House, Wu Shuai endured the sound of rumbling thunder in his ears and inspected himself first.

He found that he had turned into an earth path rank eight Gu Immortal, he had wide fingers and a large stature, his battle robe was already covered in damage.

And not far from him, there was a female immortal standing on the ground, her face was pale and her aura was not only weak but also a little strange.

She was using a certain light path healing killer move, and thus was covered in a layer of holy white light. But on her face, exposed arms, legs and feet, dark path dao marks that resembled ink lines appeared.

These dark path dao marks were so dense that they reached the extent of a rank nine immortal material, creating dao mark light, Gu Immortals could see it with their naked eyes.

The female immortal had clear rank eight cultivation level.

A light path rank eight Gu Immortal who had such a quantity of dark path dao marks, it made Wu Shuai very surprised.

And more peculiarly, the female immortal’s dark path dao marks were still transforming. Not only did they increase in quantity, their arrangements and positions were rapidly changing too.

The female immortal grunted, the killer move activation was successful, the halo around her stabilized while the dark path dao marks were also temporarily suppressed.

The female immortal was sweating profusely, she opened her weak eyes to look at Wu Shuai, smiling bitterly: "I can’t be saved. This is my strongest healing method, but it can only temporarily suppress the injury. When the time limit of the killer move is up, the injury will explode with terrifying power."

"Oh Zheng Yang, my most beloved, I can no longer accompany you. You have to live well." The female immortal said, tears flowing down her cheeks.

"No, there must be some way, there must be! You must never give up hope, this Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress of mine is made up of all the Immortal Gu I have, it can be considered to be number one in defensive power in all of history. We still have time, you have to keep working hard, I will always be there for you!" Wu Shuai shouted with tears in his eyes.

This was the natural development of the dream realm, he could not control it.

But after this conversation, Wu Shuai gained control of the body.

"Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress? Never heard of it..." Wu Shuai’s eyes shined with bright light, using the conversation earlier, he analyzed and searched for clues.

He inspected his own immortal aperture.

There was quite a bit of white litchi immortal essence in his immortal aperture, there were also a large amount of mortal Gu, but no Immortal Gu.

Like what Zheng Yang had said, he had used all of his Immortal Gu to construct this rank eight Immortal Gu House, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress.

"Which means to say, my biggest reliance is on this damaged Immortal Gu House?" Wu Shuai had a realization.

He started to try controlling this Immortal Gu House.

Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress had a complex structure, it used a hundred million Gu worms, among which there were more than twenty Immortal Gu.

Even Wu Shuai could not tell what the core Immortal Gu were at a glance! These Immortal Gu were cleverly positioned and had a mysterious relationship with each other, the design of the Gu House was as profound as a towering mountain range spreading across the entire countryside for ten thousand li, connecting heaven and earth, the mountain range had overlapping layers of intertwined mineral veins.

Wu Shuai was like a mortal Gu Master mining the mountain range, he had to excavate it layer by layer to uncover the minerals he wanted and figure out the connection between the ore veins.

"Just analyzing this Immortal Gu House itself is a huge difficulty! Furthermore, I need to rely on this Immortal Gu House to defend against the red porcelain lightning ball tribulation!"

Wu Shuai’s heart sank, he knew that this exploration was going to fail.

As expected, the following developments went as he had predicted.

Red porcelain lightning balls continued to explode as Wu Shuai tried to use his Immortal Gu House and slowly fix it.

But it was useless.

His understanding towards this Immortal Gu House was too low, even if he wanted to fix it, he had no idea where to start.

Eventually, the red porcelain lightning balls destroyed the Immortal Gu House, Wu Shuai and the female immortal became the sacrifices of the tribulation’s fury.

After leaving the dream realm, Wu Shuai started to heal himself.

This time, Fang Yuan’s main body was exploring Dragon Whale Paradise, before leaving, he had made ample preparations and arrangements. Not only did he pass the dream path Gu worms to Wu Shuai, he even gave a large number of guts Gu.

With guts Gu in his hands, Wu Shuai’s injuries were not a problem.

This dream realm exploration was different from the Dragon Palace dream realm, Wu Shuai could explore it multiple times until he succeeded.

Second failure, third failure, fourth, fifth...

After eight tries, Wu Shuai finally gained a clearer understanding of this Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress.

Even though he could not completely fix this Immortal Gu House, Wu Shuai was already able to repair it sufficiently to negate the red porcelain lightning balls’ damage.

Black clouds swirled in the sky, the red porcelain lightning balls gradually thinned out until they completely stopped.

But within the black clouds, a second grand tribulation was starting to brew.

The female immortal sighed: "Sigh... it was my fault for not listening to you, I went to search for the location where Reckless Savage Demon Venerable died, in the end, I caused this curse to occur and lead to an unceasing wave of calamities and tribulations."

"This is my just desserts. Zheng Yang, leave, I do not want to implicate you!"

On the female immortal’s body, the halo had noticeably dimmed. The dark path dao marks were tightly arranged, like pieces of black thread sewing up wounds, covering the female immortal’s skin and face.

Compared to before, the female immortal’s aura had weakened a lot, and at the same time, it became more peculiar, not only were the light and dark path dao marks intertwined, an adam’s apple was also growing in her throat!

Wu Shuai had yet to analyze the situation of the female immortal when a drizzle started to occur in the sky.

Even though it was a small rain, it was bone-chilling, there was a cold feeling that could freeze the soul.

The heat and smoke caused from the lightning balls earlier vanished entirely without a trace.

Howl howl howl...

The ghostly cries became louder and louder, before it resounded throughout the entire area.

Grey threads fell from the black clouds in the sky, extending towards Wu Shuai.

Wu Shuai’s heart sank, he recognized this tribulation: "This is the grand tribulation — Ghost Spirit Ice Silkworm Tribulation! A grand tribulation occurring right after the previous one, it seems this will not end."

Wu Shuai had to resist these silky threads forcefully.

The red porcelain lightning balls were powerful and destructive, while these ghost spirit silk threads were soft and troublesome.

Wu Shuai had no offensive methods, the Immortal Gu House Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress that he was relying on was also unfamiliar to him, he could not find any offensive methods that could be used.

Thus, Wu Shuai watched as these threads extended towards him and slipped in through the cracks and holes of the Immortal Gu House.

Wu Shuai tried to defend against them but Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress was already completely infiltrated, it broke apart after resisting for some time.

The silky threads wrapped around the female immortal while also attacking Wu Shuai, turning the two of them into solid cocoons.

At the next moment, Wu Shuai was chased out of the dream realm.

This time, he suffered heavy injuries, he saw darkness in front of him, he gulped and felt that his throat was dry, he almost fainted.

"Failing at the ghost spirit silk thread tribulation stage has caused tens of times the damage as before!" Wu Shuai smiled bitterly, in this situation, he had to recuperate first before trying again.

This injury would only be mild if it happened on Fang Yuan, it would not be severe, he could definitely explore it again.

But Wu Shuai was not the same.

Wu Shuai’s soul foundation was only at thirty million man soul, even though it rose later as he cultivated in Eastern Sea, he could not compare to the main body.

Wu Shuai was a dragonman who cultivated enslavement path, soul path cultivation was just a supplementary method. The stronger his soul foundation, the more soul path dao marks he would have, and the more it would restrict his enslavement path development.

But Fang Yuan’s main body was the sovereign immortal body, it had non-conflicting dao marks, so he could cultivate soul path alongside all his other paths.

After resting sufficiently, he went in again.

Failing time and again, challenging it continuously even after failure, Wu Shuai was in a difficult position.

He did not have the time path clone’s deduction abilities, even though he had Dragon Palace, dreamy light smoke was not useful for exploring dream realms.

The most reliable method, other than unravel dream, was the ability to recover rapidly using guts Gu.

As he slowly explored it, Wu Shuai finally had some breakthroughs and gains.

After learning the general information of Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, Wu Shuai gained the three killer moves of this Immortal Gu House.

The first was called accumulated soil mountain, the second was called peaceful burial, and the third was called heavy soil comeback.

The one that was an eyeopener to Wu Shuai was the first killer move, accumulated soil mountain.

This killer move was very special, it did not have offense, movement, healing or other aspects. It was an earth path killer move that had formation path effect, using this killer move, the Gu Immortal could stack earth path Gu worms to allow them to form an Immortal Gu House! This could be done even if the Gu Immortal using the killer move had zero attainment in formation path itself!

Because of this killer move, there was this Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress.

Gaining this killer move was also the same as gaining the foundation of the Immortal Gu House, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress!

It was no wonder Wu Shuai could not find any core Immortal Gu, this Immortal Gu House’s core was not an Immortal Gu but the immortal killer move accumulated soil mountain!

"Thus, I only need to activate this killer move and add earth path Gu worms into this Immortal Gu House to rapidly fix it."

After understanding this, Wu Shuai started to repair Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress while enduring the onslaught of the ghost spirit silk thread tribulation.

Boom!

The moment he repaired it, the female immortal self-detonated, the force of the explosion was greater than the grand tribulation, not only was Wu Shuai killed instantly, the entire Immortal Gu House was torn to shreds.

"I see, I still have to take care of this female immortal." After understanding this point, Wu Shuai entered the dream realm once again.

Immortal killer move – Peaceful Burial!

Using this method, the female immortal was temporarily sealed, her injuries were suppressed, she was receiving treatment from the Immortal Gu House.

After Wu Shuai fixed this Immortal Gu House completely, the third grand tribulation appeared.

Purple stars fell from the sky, this was a tribulation that fused poison path and star path – Rotten Poison Purple Star Tribulation.

Purple stars continued to descend and land on the Immortal Gu House, causing holes to form due to corrosion.

Wu Shuai did his best to endure it but even as he failed many times, this grand tribulation never stopped.

"The third grand tribulation seems to be unceasing, this is not normal. Don’t tell me?" After many failures, Wu Shuai had a flash of inspiration.

He tried to unseal the female immortal, without peaceful burial’s suppression, the female immortal went into a state of nearing death again.

"Zheng Yang, if a next life exists, I want to meet you again. Goodbye, my love."

While Wu Shuai defended against the grand tribulation with difficulty, she flew out of the Immortal Gu House through a hole that had formed on top.

Boom!

She self-detonated instantly, turning into a lump of pitch-black flames, burning intensely with a terrifying aura.

Heaven seemed to be enraged, at once, billions of purple stars shot down. The black flame was not large, but was incomparably tough when faced with the attack of the purple stars, although its size was shrinking, the extent of its loss was minuscule.

Seeing that this grand tribulation was ineffective, the black clouds in the sky transformed again, countless lightning bolts rained down like snakes, the black flame was instantly assaulted by countless bolts.

The black flame seemed to be nourished from this, it quickly expanded and grew to a mountain-like size.

The black flame’s appearance had changed already, it became a white-gold colored mist.

The grand tribulation in the sky continued to transform and attack the white-gold mist, the mist also transformed, turning into wind, ore, flower, grass, bird, or beast at times.

"What in the world is lurking in this female immortal’s body, so many grand tribulations are unable to do anything to it!" Wu Shuai was internally shook.

He acutely sensed that this realistic dream realm contained a certain deep secret in history.

This secret might be the reason behind the deaths of venerables, it involved the most profound secret of heaven and earth.

The female immortal died, but Wu Shuai’s dream realm continued.

He had to survive from the aftermath of this terrifying fight, he could only rely on Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress.

Eventually, after countless rounds of grand tribulations, that mysterious black flame was slowly extinguished bit by bit.

Even when just a tiny bit was left, the grand tribulation still targeted it and the battle lasted for over an hour.

"What in the world is this thing?" After the dream realm dissipated, Wu Shuai was still filled with deep shock.

He had put in so much effort, the rewards were similarly shocking.

At almost the same time as when the dream realm faded, the eyes of Fang Yuan’s main body, which was in Dragon Whale Paradise, shined.

"Oh, I advanced to earth path grandmaster."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Sea island, Golden Jade House.

"What is the purpose of inviting us here, little girl?"

"Quickly tell us, I’ve got things to do."

"That’s right, this is the only time each year that the sea market opens. We are wasting our time and money by being delayed here!"

Many Gu Masters gathered in Golden Jade House, staring at the blue scaled mermaid girl, Xia Lin, and spoke.

They were already a bit impatient from waiting.

Xia Lin looked around with a slight smile: "Everyone here is a respectable figure, so I’ll make it short. From now on, this island is my territory and under my control. If you all want to come here and make transactions, I’d welcome you with open arms, but you need to pay taxes, and you can’t stay on the island for a long time."

"As for the way to stay and live here for a long time? That is to join me and become my subordinate."

There was a sudden silence in the house.

Immediately, the Gu Masters went into an uproar. Was this a joke?

The few rank three Gu Master leaders all looked unhappy.

"Little girl, you’re too bold."

"Juniors these days, hehe, they really don’t know what fear is."

"Do you really think you can act so arrogantly after killing a rank three Gu Master? Don’t forget, you are just a rank two Gu Master."

Faced with many questions, Xia Lin felt apprehensive, but remembering that this was Master Chu’s order, she could only force a smile as she answered as instructed: "No need to doubt my words, now, you will know what I am relying on."

"What is it?" Immediately, someone asked.

Xia Lin was still smiling, because even if she said so, she had no idea what it was.

But at that moment, the ground began to shake.

"What’s going on?" Someone screamed as the ground shook more and more.

"Is it an earthquake?!" The Gu Masters were in a state of shock and panic.

Fortunately, this Golden Jade House was a Gu House and had some defensive effects.

But the outside world was already in chaos, with screams and shouts everywhere.

"No, I need to rush back to guard my shop."

"I’m leaving too!"

The Gu Masters tried to run out, but suddenly, a thick yellow light suddenly emerged from the ground.

The yellow light enveloped the entire island and blocked the entrance of the Gu House.

No matter what they tried, the Gu Masters could not break through the yellow light and were horrified: "What in the world is going on?"

"This is no ordinary earthquake."

"Xia Lin! You must know something!!!"

Someone saw that Xia Lin was still smiling, he had a flash of inspiration and screamed loudly.

As a result, all the Gu Masters in the room focused their attention on Xia Lin.

Xia Lin was also shocked, but at this moment, Fang Yuan’s voice was transmitted, instructing her on how to deal with the situation: "Everyone, there is no need to panic, this change is only beneficial for everyone. I will not say more, just watch it quietly, this change will not last long."

Xia Lin was keeping this a secret but the Gu Masters did not dare to look down on her.

This was clearly not a natural disaster but a man-made situation.

But who could do something of this magnitude?

Not mortals at least!

A word suddenly emerged in the minds of all the Gu Masters — Immortal!

This was indeed a method of an immortal.

Or more accurately, Fang Yuan was repairing the immortal formation at the bottom of the sea.

He took out portions of immortal materials from his immortal aperture and put them into the formation, before activating many killer moves to repair it.

Yellow light surged around the island, spreading around.

A brand new piece of land around the island condensed and appeared in the yellow light. Those ships that were originally around the edge of the island ran aground. The people on the boats were shouting and screaming, fixed in place by the yellow light, unable to move.

The yellow light gradually dissipated, the entire island had more than doubled in size.

At the edge of the new sea island, tides surged up, causing huge waves, countless fish and sea beasts revealed themselves.

Fang Yuan had started to fix the water path aspect after repairing the earth path side of the formation.

Finally, when he had completely mended the immortal formation, the huge waves on the surface of the sea gradually calmed down.

However, Fang Yuan did not stop yet.

He added a small subsidiary immortal formation on top of the foundation of this great formation.

After the small formation was built, he waved his hand again and gave the small formation to Xia Lin.

Thus, a white light descended from the sky and enveloped Xia Lin, before it merged entirely into Xia Lin’s body.

Xia Lin did not have any attainment in formation path, but this small formation designed by Fang Yuan was very friendly, Xia Lin suddenly felt that she had many new abilities instinctively.

This instinct was as natural as breathing, or like moving legs and feet, it allowed her to move the island’s land and the surrounding seawater using her thoughts.

Rumble...

Amidst muffled sounds, the entirety of Golden Jade House began to expand, growing larger and larger, quickly transforming from a small building to a beautifully ornate palace.

This was naturally also Fang Yuan’s doing, he had expanded Golden Jade House and created a formation core here, which was secretly connected to the formation deep under the sea.

This series of astonishing changes made the entire crowd of Gu Masters gawk and stand dumbfounded.

Xia Lin was showing a smile but she was also immensely shocked internally.

Fang Yuan’s words rang in her ears once again.

She read out the script: "Everyone, you witnessed it with your own eyes. I am fortunate to be accepted as a disciple of the great immortal. My immortal master has just laid out the immortal formation and ordered me to guard this place, I will be in charge of mortal affairs."

Saying so, Xia Lin willed as yellow light surged up, enveloping all of the Gu Masters present.

Xia Lin willed again as these Gu Masters gasped in shock, they were suppressed by this yellow light and could not move, they were all raised into the air, unable to retaliate.

Xia Lin smiled, the yellow light dissipated and these Gu Masters were released.

"This, this, this..."

"Immortal miracle, this is an immortal miracle. So there really are immortals in the world!"

"I reverently ask Lady Xia Lin, why did your immortal master set up an immortal formation here, I wonder what lord immortal has planned?"

Xia Lin just smiled, she had also just learned that Master Chu was actually an immortal! Her shock was no less than the others.

"Now, does everyone have anything you wish to say about my previous proposal?" Xia Lin looked around and asked in a warm voice once again.

The Gu Masters did not dare to question her again, they bowed their heads together, some even fell to their knees on the spot, saying that they wanted to follow Xia Lin, while some wanted to go under Fang Yuan as his disciple.

Xia Lin could only appease them one by one.

Fang Yuan’s divine sense went around Xia Lin, in the end, he only said a few words of advice to her before he left her to her own devices.

Although there were signs of immortals in Dragon Whale Paradise, be it his previous life or present life, Fang Yuan had never seen any native immortals.

Legends about immortals had been circulating within the mortal world, but they were only rumors.

This time, Fang Yuan displayed an immortal miracle and set up the immortal formation, leaving many things within the formation to Xia Lin. Soon, countless people arrived after hearing the news, some of them wanted to see the miracle, while others simply wanted to join Xia Lin as a subordinate.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan helped Xia Lin become the mermaid saintess. In this life, he had simply made an early move to support the growth of Xia Lin’s forces first.

In the following period of time, Xia Lin would maneuver between various forces and Gu Master experts, she would follow Fang Yuan’s instructions to establish her own force.

Even if there were things she could not do right, there was still a will left behind by Fang Yuan within the formation to tutor her and help her to make up for any flaws.

His investment in Xia Lin was actually not even a drop in a bucket.

Repairing the underwater formation was the most costly thing that Fang Yuan did.

Fang Yuan’s earth path attainment level rose, his weakness was eliminated as he rapidly found a useful method to fix this formation.

He had grandmaster formation path attainment level, he could not use natural dao marks, he had to use immortal materials. The immortal materials that he expended here were his greatest spending.

Not only was the difficulty of a mid-sized mission higher, the Gu Immortal also had to make investments sometimes.

Merit points were not so easy to earn.

Fang Yuan returned to the Merit Obelisk.

This mission gave him a hundred merit points, this was the limit of a mid-sized mission, his action of repairing the formation was perfect.

Thus, he became the undeniable number one person on the merit board, the gain of a hundred points made everyone else feel a strong sense of dejection.

This time, Fang Yuan did not leave in a hurry.

He started to research on the merit board.

His earth path attainment rose to grandmaster level, could he comprehend this Immortal Gu House?

If he could comprehend it and use some methods, would he be able to make loopholes in the Merit Obelisk and refine this entire Immortal Gu House?

Earlier, Fang Yuan could not do it and had to follow the rules.

But all along, he had not given up on the idea of getting this Merit Obelisk.

After looking at it for some time, deep disappointment flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

The Merit Obelisk contained the profundity of earth path, but also sound path, human path, and heaven path.

And looking at the foundation, earth path and sound path were just supplementary, the true cores were human path and heaven path.

"To have hopes of comprehending this completely, I will need to be a great grandmaster in all four paths." Fang Yuan realized this and smiled bitterly to himself.

It was unrealistic to try to refine this Merit Obelisk now.

That was only natural.

Before Fang Yuan, who knows how many Gu Immortals had come here. Among these predecessors, there were definitely outstanding people, but they were unable to do anything to this rank eight Immortal Gu House.

Fang Yuan’s foundation in this aspect was not deep, how could he possibly refine this rank eight Immortal Gu House easily?

There was no breakthrough in this area, so Fang Yuan had no choice but to continue to follow the rules, he continued to receive and complete missions.

When he reached nine hundred merit points, Shen Xiao finally screamed at the Merit Obelisk: "I finally found it, this is the one, this good person title!"

At this moment, Shen Xiao almost wanted to tear up from joy.

He quickly told Shen Cong Sheng about this discovery.

Soon, Shen clan’s Gu Immortals started to show signs of rising merit points.

Followed by Ren Xiu Ping, Tong Hua and the rest.

There were four groups on the merit board now.

The first group was a single person, Fang Yuan, he was way ahead.

The second group was the Shen clan Gu Immortals led by Sheng Cong Sheng, they were trying to catch up.

The third group was Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua, as they were attached to Shen clan, they had been informed of this secret after some time.

And the last group was Miao Ming Shen and the others, they had not learned about this.

After completing another mission, Fang Yuan’s merit points rose to over a thousand.

He looked at the merit board, laughing in his mind: "They finally found the good person title? These people are truly unlucky, maybe this is the result of my luck suppressing them."

He came to the board and started exchanging for a reward.

He spent a thousand merit points in exchange for the ’really good person’ title.

With this title, he could finally accept large sized missions.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Beehive island was a sea island that had a peculiar shape.

The entire island resembled a voluminous dark yellow beehive, with countless pits and holes on the surface of the hive, and a precise structure and countless tunnels inside.

A rank six Gu Immortal with broad shoulders and a thin waist, wearing jade green battle armor, was inside the beehive.

This man was one of the followers of Miao Ming Shen — Feng Jiang.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

The densely grouped red thread earthworms were shooting violently at Feng Jiang from all directions.

The red thread earthworms could shoot themselves out like the flicking of a zither, so fast that Feng Jiang could only see a red light.

The attack of the red thread earthworms was very sharp, and the swarms of red thread earthworms were able to make desolate beasts back away from them.

Feng Jiang fought as he retreated.

He was facing immense pressure, after a while, he was already covered in sweat.

Even though his battle strength surpassed desolate beasts and he had many killer moves, he received this mission to quell the red thread earthworm calamity near the beehive island, to allow its ecology to return to normal.

If Feng Jiang used his methods without holding back and unleashed his attacks, he could easily kill all of these red thread earthworms.

But in that case, beehive island would be heavily damaged, Feng Jiang would receive few merit points.

"Damn it." Feng Jiang had no choice but to retreat and fly out of the hive, floating in the sky.

The red thread earthworms were still in hot pursuit, shooting themselves into the sky and pursuing Feng Jiang.

From countless holes, large amounts of red threads were shot out, Feng Jiang sighed and pulled away from the hive, these red thread earthworms could not hit their target.

The red thread earthworms did not die from a fall of this height, their bodies were soft but tough, after they loitered around for some time, they went back into the hive again.

They did not follow the existing holes within the hive, but dug their own way through the hive’s walls.

This was very damaging to beehive island.

"There are too many red thread earthworms, and I’m afraid there are still desolate beasts inside. After all, I’m taking on a mid-sized mission."

"There is one more difficulty, the more the passage inside this hive extends inside, the narrower it becomes, it is very disadvantageous to me."

Beehive island was already covered in holes due to the red thread earthworms, if Feng Jiang fought inside, he might cause the destruction of the entire island.

Feng Jiang was silent for a moment before making up his mind.

He opened his immortal aperture’s entrance as he summoned a large group of wild bees. These bees were all elites that had rank five battle strength, their leader was even more powerful, it was a desolate beast bee.

The abdomen of this wild bee was of peculiar form, being gyroscopic instead of ellipsoidal, it was most broad at the waist, extending out to the tail while becoming increasingly thinner.

The surface of the gyroscopic belly had a black spiral pattern that was quite striking.

All the wild bees were covered with dense fluffy hair and had large, broad wings.

This was the yellow gyro bee.

Feng Jiang’s immortal aperture raised a large number of bees, yellow gyro bee was one of them with a unique status.

Even though ordinary bees formed into groups, they consisted of members from the same species. Different ones could not live together.

But not only could yellow gyro bees live with other wild bees, they could reproduce and even help to increase the numbers of the other species of bees.

The yellow gyro bees were the core bee group of Feng Jiang’s immortal aperture.

Feng Jiang was an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, he was rich in cultivation resources, keeping a variety of bees in his immortal aperture and having more than ten desolate beast wild bees. The yellow gyro bees had always been his main focus, but there were only three of them that were desolate beast level.

This time, Feng Jiang mobilized a large group of yellow gyro bees, he was taking a huge risk in this situation.

Under the command of Feng Jiang, the yellow gyro bees buzzed as if they were a yellow cloud that quickly burrowed into the hive.

There were still swarms of bees in beehive island, but they were completely at a disadvantage compared to the red thread earthworms in terms of size.

With the help of the yellow gyro bees, the bee group was confused for a moment before retaliating against the red thread earthworms entrenched in the lower part of the beehive island with a fierce attack.

This was a fight for survival between their respective groups, it was a tragic battle.

Beehive island continued to shake as cracks appeared on its surface, rapidly expanding in size.

Feng Jiang was prepared to take action, he immediately used methods to repair the island.

He let his bee group fight while he took on a support role.

He was quite lucky, when the red thread earthworms lost enough numbers, the sole desolate beast red thread earthworm retreated instead of fighting, leading its members away from the beehive.

Feng Jiang looked as millions of red thread earthworms gathered in the sea like a huge red current, swimming away. He sighed as the weight in his heart was lifted.

He hesitated for a moment, should he chase after the red thread earthworms or ignore them now?

While he hesitated, the red thread earthworms swam into the sea.

Feng Jiang gave up the thought of chasing them.

If he fought in the sea, he would have to give it his all, but there were many different sea beasts hidden within this sea area.

"I should not cause more uncertainty, let’s repair this beehive island first."

He spent a day and night repairing it.

Not only did he repair beehive island completely, he even reinforced many of its weaknesses. At the same time, he let out many bees in his immortal aperture and planted many special flowers to complete the ecology of this place.

After all this, beehive island became completely revitalized. Not only did it regain balance, it even had more potential for future development.

"This is a mid-sized resource point now." Feng Jiang sighed.

If possible, he wanted to take this beehive island for himself. But this was a merit mission, he was restricted by Paradise Earth, Feng Jiang had to give up on that idea.

After returning to the Merit Obelisk, Feng Jiang looked at his merit points and found that he gained over eighty points from this mission.

Feng Jiang stared blankly before regretting it: "I did not get a hundred points, it seems that my actions were not perfect. Back then, I should have eliminated the red thread earthworms, letting them leave means that they are likely to attack beehive island again."

"That might not be it. The mission wanted me to balance the ecology of beehive island, did I achieve that? I did not."

"This so-called ecology’s core was beehive island but the surrounding sea areas are also a part of it. I only modified beehive island but did not target the surrounding sea areas, that was my mistake."

Thinking so, Feng Jiang sighed.

A few days ago, after Fang Yuan returned to the Merit Obelisk, he saw the board and understood the situation, he explained the secret of the ’good person’ title to Miao Ming Shen and his allies.

Thus, Feng Jiang exchanged for the ’good person’ title and could receive mid-sized missions.

Now, he completed his first mid-sized mission but he was not happy at all.

Not only was it because he did not understand the mission’s requirements fully, he had also spent a lot for this mission.

In order to get the merit points, his yellow gyro bees could not be retrieved.

Of course, this exchange was not unfavorable.

Merit points were related to Paradise Earth’s true inheritance, Feng Jiang gave up his bee group but gained points that could be exchanged for Immortal Gu if he had ten thousand or more!

This trade was definitely worth it.

Because in the outside world, Feng Jiang did not have any way to get these Immortal Gu. No matter how many desolate beast bees he had, he could not exchange for an Immortal Gu using them.

"But mid-sized missions are quite tough, I am specialized in raising bees, this mission suited me well but I only got around eighty merit points."

"What about other missions?"

Feng Jiang looked at the board.

Many missions were listed but he could not take them.

For example, the mission to repair an immortal formation, Feng Jiang did not have any methods to repair immortal formations.

Or the one that required the healing of an ancient desolate beast’s injuries, Feng Jiang’s healing methods were not good enough.

Feng Jiang suddenly understood why Fang Yuan kept this ’good person’ title as a secret.

As long as he had a head start, Fang Yuan could choose missions that suited him, he could accumulate merit points rapidly.

But Feng Jiang thought about it and felt something strange: "No, even so, Chu Ying’s merit points are rising too quickly. He is almost perfectly completing every mission. Is transformation path really this useful?"

At this moment, Feng Jiang was stunned.

Because white light flashed as Fang Yuan appeared beside him.

"Lord Chu Ying." Feng Jiang greeted.

Fang Yuan nodded at him, his gaze was directed at the obelisk.

His merit points went from the bottom position and surpassed everyone to reach the top three again.

"He gained five hundred merit points at once?!" Feng Jiang saw this as his heart shook.

"I spent a thousand merit points to get the ’really good person’ title, it allowed me to receive even better missions." Fang Yuan smiled and explained.

Feng Jiang was stunned before bowing deeply: "Lord, thank you for the guidance!"

Fang Yuan nodded as he went to the other side of the obelisk, exchanging for his third title ’super good person’. His merit points instantly fell by five hundred, becoming the last position again.

Feng Jiang opened his mouth, he was curious about Fang Yuan’s action but he was astute, he did not ask when he saw that Fang Yuan was not going to talk about it.

Feng Jiang was certain that Fang Yuan had exchanged for something extremely useful.

"Looking at the time, they should be back already." Fang Yuan walked towards Feng Jiang, he did not receive a mission immediately.

Feng Jiang nodded, he knew that Fang Yuan was referring to Miao Ming Shen and others, he replied: "They should be here soon."

Feng Jiang did not have outstanding strength among Miao Ming Shen’s allies, yet he had already returned, the others were soon to arrive as well.

Fang Yuan did not mind the wait.

As expected, Miao Ming Shen and the rest returned quickly, they met with Fang

Yuan.

Feng Jiang quickly told the secret of the ’really good person’ title to Miao Ming Shen and others.

Miao Ming Shen had a thought: "This title of ’good person’ can exchange for mid-sized missions, while ’really good person’ can exchange for large sized missions. This is a series of titles, if one can find out about the ’good person’ title, the ’really good person’ title is no secret as well, they can easily connect the dots."

But even so, Miao Ming Shen felt very grateful to Fang Yuan.

Because Fang Yuan had told them about the ’good person’ title. Meanwhile, Shen clan and Ren Xiu Ping kept it from them.

The ranking on the merit board was very important, many rewards could only be exchanged once, the first person to get them would be the sole beneficiary.

"Brother Miao, you do not need to fear Shen Cong Sheng. I have a way to get far away from Shen Cong Sheng when we teleport outside, the distance is enough for us to stay safe." Fang Yuan lied but Miao Ming Shen and the rest felt deeply shocked.

Gui Qi Ye’s brows rose: "It is a reward on the Merit Obelisk?"

"Indeed." Fang Yuan nodded, but he had no idea if that existed.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest could not help but believe him.

Why?

Because Chu Ying’s attitude towards Shen Cong Sheng was simply courting death! The fact that he remained so fearless meant that he had some sort of assurance.

Fang Yuan continued: "I can receive large sized missions but I cannot complete them alone. I need all of your help."

Saying so, he received the large sized mission on the obelisk and shared the details with Miao Ming Shen and others.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest felt shocked, after receiving information of the mission, their expressions changed.

He could actually do that?!

The truth was, Miao Ming Shen had discovered this secret personally in the previous life.

The ’super good person’ title allowed one to share missions.

For Gu Immortals, mid-sized missions were difficult to do alone, having other people’s help made it easier. Even though they would share the merit points, if their efficiency at solving missions increased, the benefits far outweighed the costs.

Miao Ming Shen could choose to accept it or not. Fang Yuan could share missions but he could not force them to take it.

Miao Ming Shen only thought about it for a while before accepting the mission.

He had just completed a mid-sized mission, he had the same feelings as Feng Jiang.

Fang Yuan had an easy time because he cultivated every path, Miao Ming Shen and the rest were ordinary Gu Immortals, they cultivated one path and most of the time, only certain missions suited them.

Since completing mid-sized missions was not easy, and they had to put in a lot of investment, Miao Ming Shen was more willing to work with Fang Yuan and attempt something new.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Five lumps of white light, flashing abruptly in the sky, brought Fang Yuan, Miao Ming Shen and the others from the Merit Obelisk to here.

All five of them were familiar with the mission and headed down to get a bird's-eye view, each of them activating their investigative killer moves.

Fang Yuan was the first to observe the area and take a closer look.

His investigative methods had always been his shortcoming, but that was only relative to his enemies. When compared to Miao Ming Shen and the others, even his weaker aspects were still far superior to them.

This was a vast sea area.

The sea was raging, creating thousands of fierce waves, they were so powerful that countless sea beasts could be seen within the reflections of these ripples.

In this sea, there were five small islands.

First was jade shaking island with countless jade pillars, chiming and tinkling due to powerful winds.

Second was white bone island, it was pale white and had the corpses of beasts scattered around.

Third was hidden space island, it seemed illusory as if it did not exist.

Fourth was sword wind island, there were three tornadoes on the island that would never stop moving.

And fifth was treasure moon island, it was crescent shaped and was shrouded by the night sky at all times, every inch of sand on this island shined with faint moonlight.

Three of these five islands had begun to drift slowly with the current. Among them, sword wind island had the fastest flow and confusing direction of movement.

For the remaining two islands, jade shaking island was in danger, the pillars underneath the island were broken, and in a little while, just like the three islands, it would start to drift away on the sea surface.

As for hidden space island, however, it was very stable and remained firmly entrenched in the distance. This was because this island was filled with phantom path dao marks.

The main cause of the islands' drifting was the impact currents that ran deep under the sea.

These currents had become so large that they endangered the sea itself. Suppressing the currents, restructuring the ecology of the sea, and restoring the former five-islands chain were the contents of this large-sized mission.

Fang Yuan started to make calculations and deductions in his mind.

There were indications that this sea area had originally formed an intrinsic ecology with the five-islands chain as its core. Impact currents did not exist before, but now they were like a shark in a calm pond, causing severe destruction to the habitat and ecology of this sea area.

While Fang Yuan made his deductions, Miao Ming Shen and the rest also explored this entire sea area with their investigative methods.

They frowned and had serious expressions.

"This is a large sized mission? The difficulty is several times higher than a mid-sized mission!" Hua Die’s heart sank steeply.

Feng Jiang had an ugly expression as he thought: "I tried my best earlier to improve the ecology of beehive island but it was still imperfect. This large sized mission is not about balancing the ecology, but restructuring it. Each island is in greater danger than beehive island itself. And the five islands are only part of the mission, there’s still a large sea area and the underwater impact currents to resolve."

"This is very complex, to restructure the habitat of the sea area, we would need to change everything and meticulously alter the details. Without a wisdom path Gu Immortal, we will need to make many experiments and attempt the restructuring step by step. During this process, we would make many mistakes." Gui Qi Ye sighed in his heart.

Miao Ming Shen was calculating the gains and losses: "The mid-sized mission I just completed expended a large amount of my rank seven immortal materials. To restructure the ecology of this place, the resources invested, the immortal essence consumed and the energy spent will be an extremely large sum!"

The more Miao Ming Shen and the rest observed, the faster their morale slipped away.

The difficulty of the large sized mission made them feel like giving up.

The truth was, they started to regret it, following Fang Yuan blindly to accept this mission was not a wise decision.

"Brother Chu, let’s plan together." At this point, Miao Ming Shen could only smile bitterly and find Fang Yuan to discuss their actions.

He was not going to give up on it, just because they took the mission did not mean they could abandon it. In fact, in order to give up the mission, they needed to exchange for another title.

Bright light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes, with both time path clone and Fang Yuan making deductions at the same time, he had already arrived at a perfect plan.

He cupped his fists at Miao Ming Shen: "Brother Miao, I have already planned something, follow my instructions and we will definitely complete the mission."

Miao Ming Shen was stunned, although he did not believe it in his heart, he nodded without rebuking: "Please give the instructions Brother Chu, we will do our best!"

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: "Brother Miao is too polite, it will be good for both of us if we work together to complete this mission. The better we complete a large sized mission, the greater the returns compared to a mid-sized mission!"

"I’m only afraid we can’t complete it well." Miao Ming Shen sighed internally but did not say anything, he had already lost confidence in himself, he could only place his hopes on Fang Yuan now.

But Fang Yuan’s words were comfortable for him to hear.

Fang Yuan was not high and mighty, but rather he had an attitude of equal cooperation. This was different from Shen Cong Sheng.

"Brother Miao, I want you to occupy jade shaking island to guard against the impact currents. Please ask Gui Qi Ye to station at sword wind island and make sure that it doesn’t wander off. Ask Feng Jiang and Fairy Hua Die to guard treasure moon island island and white bone island respectively. I’m going to deal with hidden space island first."

Fang Yuan made the arrangements, Miao Ming Shen’s group was clueless to begin with, they followed Fang Yuan’s instructions.

With the four immortals in action, the islands were quickly suppressed, no longer drifting with the current, their speed of movement fell to a level that could be controlled.

Watching Fang Yuan descend on hidden space island, the four immortals had doubts in their hearts.

"Hidden space island is a phantom path island, it is the most stable place in the entire sea area, it is also the easiest part of the mission."

"Why is Chu Ying trying to deal with this island first? He should fix the other islands before trying to fix this hidden space island. After all, this island is almost non-existent, by dealing with it first, he will cause some obstruction when handling the other islands later."

"In my opinion, he should deal with the impact currents first. It is the cause behind the collapse of the five-islands chain. To restructure the ecology here, one has to deal with the root cause at the start."

Fang Yuan landed on hidden space island, quickly flying out afterwards, his speed was shocking to Miao Ming Shen and the rest.

Fang Yuan went to white bone island.

Under Hua Die’s observation, Fang Yuan took out immortal materials from his immortal aperture and threw them around at will.

"He is setting up a formation!" Hua Die was seeing Fang Yuan create a formation for the first time.

Fang Yuan was skillful and experienced, the process was very fluid, Hua Die watched with a sense of appreciation and amazement.

Soon, Fang Yuan finished setting up the formation.

Hua Die’s mouth opened with deep shock, she could not close it.

"Chu Ying actually used immortal materials to set up a formation! Doesn’t this mean he has grandmaster attainment in formation path?"

"So he is not a transformation path Gu Immortal but a formation path Gu Immortal."

"No, not true, when he defeated Ge Wen and saved us, he clearly used transformation path methods."

"Don’t tell me, he cultivates two paths?"

It was not that rare for Gu Immortals to cultivate two paths. But for Fang Yuan to be so proficient in both paths, with such high attainment, it was very rare.

White bone island’s arrangements were done, Fang Yuan activated this sub-formation and connected it to the main formation on hidden space island.

Due to the effect of the immortal formation, white bone island shook intensely, it anchored itself to the sea and showed no signs of movement anymore.

Hua Die finally understood Fang Yuan’s intentions: "So he was using hidden space island as the base to stabilize the other islands around it."

"Amazing, hidden space island is the best foundation for this chain, because the impact currents are useless against it. But..."

Hua Die soon realized a flaw: "But the other islands are using hidden space island as the anchor, this is the power of a formation, these impact currents will still hit these islands over time, as the formation continues to get damaged, it would break eventually, these islands will still float away in the end."

Fang Yuan did not show any inclination to dispel her doubts, soon after, he landed on the three remaining islands and set up his formation, stabilizing them all.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest looked at Fang Yuan with complex gazes.

Fang Yuan’s formation path attainment was too shocking to them.

Formation path grandmasters were very rare!

And earlier, Fang Yuan’s transformation path attainment was also exemplary.

With such strength, the mysteriousness of Fang Yuan intensified in the immortals’ hearts.

"However, stabilizing the five sea islands is just a good start."

"The real problem are the impact currents around the sea islands."

"Without water path methods, how can we deal with the sea currents?"

Miao Ming Shen and the rest talked among themselves. They could not transmit their voices in Dragon Whale Paradise, but they could still use information path mortal Gu like letter pigeon Gu.

The impact currents that rampaged in this sea area were too huge, Miao Ming Shen and the rest could only think of using immortal methods to attack the impact currents and destroy them bit by bit.

This method was crude and wasted a lot of time and immortal essence, the biggest flaw was that attacking these currents would cause tremendous damage to the surrounding sea area.

But other than that, Miao Ming Shen and the rest did not have any good ideas.

Boom!

Right at this time, Fang Yuan rose to the sky and activated the entire Gu formation.

Each of the five islands blossomed with rushing pillars of light of various colors, the power of the Gu formation soared upwards, breaking through its original limit.

"So this is the true power of the formation!" Miao Ming Shen and the rest had changes of expressions, they were dumbfounded.

These five islands’ dao marks were so dense that they could also be seen as a single gigantic immortal material. The immortal formation that Fang Yuan had set up naturally included them within the range that could be utilized.

"I am going to draw in the impact currents now. Everyone, continue to defend your islands, if any beasts attack or if any waves approach that would endanger the islands, I need you to stop them." Fang Yuan called out as his voice resounded in the sea area.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest quickly responded, saying they would do their best.

The formation buzzed and the five pillars of light gradually dissipated, turning into white light that scattered in the sky.

The light went into the seawater, staining the water around the island with a beautiful illusion of white light.

In this illusory white light, the impact currents were like a blue whale that had been stirred up by fish and shrimps, slowly moving its body, then swimming faster and faster and crashing towards jade shaking island, which was the closest.

Miao Ming Shen, who was on jade shaking island, gritted his teeth, he felt tremendous pressure, tensing up and going on full alert.

If the immortal formation’s defense was not enough, such a sea current could completely crush jade shaking island if it hit directly!

Boom!

The impact currents touched the formation and created a startling explosion.

A huge wave, up to ten feet high, pounded at jade shaking island.

Miao Ming Shen immediately flew up with a cry, using his killer move to resist it.

The impact currents were slowly turned around by this and moved to the left of jade shaking island. But before they could move away, they were drawn back by white bone island’s immortal formation.

The one guarding white bone island was Hua Die, and she almost groaned when she saw the sea current coming towards her.

In the discussions of Miao Ming Shen’s group, the impact current was to be repelled and slowly weakened, the best outcome was to break it up and scatter it completely.

But Fang Yuan was actually attracting the impact currents actively to hit the sea islands.

This was something that Miao Ming Shen and the rest wanted to avoid at all costs.

"Chu Ying is too crazy!" Hua Die soon had no time to think as the impact currents crashed into white bone island, the entire formation resounded with a scary creaking sound, before a huge wave was created.

There were also many sea beasts caught in the waves, Hua Die put up her best effort to resist them.

Like this, the impact currents, under the constant manipulation of Fang Yuan, hit the five islands one after another.

With each impact, the power of the currents was reduced by one level, they then circled around the island and became drawn to the next point.

After the impact currents crashed into the last island, they had less than half the power and momentum as before.

At this time, Fang Yuan activated the immortal formation once again, actually making the impact currents turn around and crash into the second last island.

Thus, the Gu Immortals defending the sea islands felt great fear again.

After the impact currents struck five times and returned to jade shaking island, the power of the currents hitting the island was almost nonexistent, they had almost turned to being ordinary currents.

The five islands shook lightly as the immortal formation stabilized completely. The impact currents quickly calmed down and began to flow at an even rate consistently.

In contrast, the hearts of the four Gu Immortals stirred with huge waves of disbelief and shock!

They did not expect that Fang Yuan would resolve the impact currents using such a method.

The impact currents, while still present, had become a protective layer that surrounded the island. Around the five islands, the impact currents flowed rapidly, faster than ordinary seawater, protecting the five islands while at the same time, helping the immortal formation to stabilize the five islands’ location.

If they had followed the plan of Miao Ming Shen and the others to destroy the impact currents, this sea area would surely be destroyed beyond recognition.

Fang Yuan’s move, however, cleverly avoided this drawback and instead made full use of the impact currents, turning the original calamity into a blessing and greatly enhancing the natural foundation of this sea area.

This was truly an incredible achievement!

Miao Ming Shen and the others were all impressed.

It was really difficult to do this.

Not to mention the arrangement of the immortal formation, just the matter of manipulating impact currents alone, even water path Gu Immortals were not even capable of doing that. To perfectly weaken the impact currents to a certain level, one needed to make precise calculations and deductions. When the impact currents return to jade shaking island, their power must be reduced to almost nothing. A bit more or a bit less would have greatly affected the overall situation and would not have gotten the incredible near-perfect balance it had now.

"The biggest problem has been resolved, the next step will be for you to repair the immortal formation, as well as restructuring the ecology of the island, as for the things beyond the impact currents, you can ignore them." Fang Yuan smiled.

He was quite satisfied with this result.

If new impact currents formed, these existing currents would engulf them and protect the islands under the effect of the immortal formation.

Fang Yuan would leave his will and a large amount of immortal essence here, as long as they remained, the five-islands chain would be very safe.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The impact currents were like hungry tigers at first, but after Fang Yuan’s arrangements, they became the pet cats that defended the five-islands chain.

After Fang Yuan completed this set up, the situation was already resolved.

What followed were some finishing touches.

These were not hard to do, but they were quite strenuous and required time and effort.

Fang Yuan was not going to bother himself with them.

Thus, Fang Yuan discussed with Miao Ming Shen, they left Feng Jiang and Fairy Hua Die here while the rest returned with him.

White light shined, Fang Yuan, Miao Ming Shen, and Gui Qi Ye returned to the starting island.

Ren Xiu Ping was currently looking at the missions on this merit point.

He was an enslavement path Gu Immortal, he had many desolate beasts and a few ancient desolate beasts in his hands. These beasts all had various abilities, his methods were quite wide-ranging.

However, even Ren Xiu Ping still felt the difficulty of mid-sized missions.

Fang Yuan and the others appeared beside him, causing his heart to jump as he secretly thought: "How could these three suddenly appear at the same time? Is it a coincidence?"

Fang Yuan nodded at Ren Xiu Ping and smiled slightly.

Ren Xiu Ping was stunned, this unexpected attitude of Fang Yuan made him not know how to respond for a moment.

Fang Yuan walked towards him as the obelisk’s words transformed, showing all of its large sized missions.

Fang Yuan swept his gaze around it and quickly received one of the missions.

Next, he shared this with Miao Ming Shen and Gui Qi Ye.

With another flash of light, the three of them vanished on the spot.

Ren Xiu Ping watched the entire process, his expression turned grim: "Chu Ying received a different level of mission from me, it is one tier higher. It seems that his merit points fell earlier because he was exchanging for another title to receive higher tier missions. This is very likely to be the title — really good person!"

The title of ’good person’ could exchange for mid-sized missions, while ’really good person’ could exchange for large sized missions.

This was a simple relationship, the Gu Immortals could easily guess it just by seeing the names.

But the problem was, so what if they realized it?

"Mid-sized missions are already so hard, large sized missions must be even harder!" Ren Xiu Ping felt gloomy internally: "And why were Miao Ming Shen and Gui Qi Ye able to move together with Chu Ying? Did they receive the same mission?"

This discovery was quite alluring to Ren Xiu Ping.

Mid-sized missions were difficult but if they had help, the difficulty would be shifted.

"Even though the merit points would be divided if many people receive the same missions, as long as we control it well, our efficiency at completing missions will increase, our overall gains will increase instead. Isn’t Chu Ying doing the exact same thing now?"

Ren Xiu Ping was a savvy person, after thinking about it, he understood Fang Yuan’s intentions.

Fang Yuan did not plan to hide it, in fact, he had purposely released the information.

Miao Ming Shen’s group could be roped in as allies, why couldn’t Ren Xiu Ping?

Their hatred earlier?

Hehe.

How could hatred compare to the benefits in front of them?

Ren Xiu Ping was not crazy, he was astute, thus, there was a chance of cooperation.

Ren Xiu Ping definitely had an alliance agreement with Shen clan.

But it did not matter.

The Merit Obelisk had such rewards that could eliminate the agreement restraints on a Gu Immortal.

Even without Fang Yuan’s reminder, Ren Xiu Ping must have seen that himself already.

The second large sized mission was naturally harder than mid-sized missions, but it was no problem for Fang Yuan.

After spending some effort, Fang Yuan resolved the big issues and left Miao Ming Shen and Gui Qi Ye to settle the minor problems.

When he returned to the Merit Obelisk again, he waited a little while before Hua Die and Feng Jiang returned.

Their return meant that the first large sized mission was completed.

Fang Yuan gained five hundred merit points, while Miao Ming Shen and the rest each gained around eighty points.

Fang Yuan looked at the numbers on the merit board as he calculated, this large sized mission gave a total of nine hundred and seventy-three points.

Fang Yuan and Miao Ming Shen’s group split up these points, Fang Yuan gained the bulk of them, getting five hundred points was about the same as completing a large sized mission alone.

Except that he spent way less time and effort on it.

Hua Die and Feng Jiang looked at each other, seeing the joy in each other’s eyes.

In this mission, they helped Fang Yuan resist the waves and settle the minor problems at the end. They only spent some immortal essence, time, and effort, but they gained more than eighty merit points from it.

Feng Jiang thought about the beehive island mission he completed alone, he spent a group of bees, including his desolate beast yellow gyro bee, but only got eighty points in the end.

Comparing the two, helping Fang Yuan complete a large sized mission was much easier and reaped greater rewards.

"Go and join with Miao Ming Shen to complete the second mission. I’d advise that we should all exchange for a group title. With a group title, we will be able to communicate with each other." Fang Yuan suggested.

A group title was not cheap, it required a hundred merit points.

But Feng Jiang and Hua Die did not hesitate, they listened to Fang Yuan and exchanged for this title.

Fang Yuan shared the second mission with them as Feng Jiang and Hua Die teleported to where Miao Ming Shen and Gui Qi Ye were.

Fang Yuan received the third large sized mission and went ahead to deal with it.

After Miao Ming Shen and the rest completed the second mission and returned to the starting island, the four immortals gained a sum of merit points listed on the merit board.

Miao Ming Shen and Gui Qi Ye also spent merit points to exchange for a group title, it allowed the four immortals to communicate with Fang Yuan constantly.

At this point, Fang Yuan already completed his arrangements in the new mission, he shared it with Miao Ming Shen and group.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest touched the obelisk and accepted the mission Fang

Yuan shared with them.

They were transported to Fang Yuan, he gave them some instructions before returning to look at the next mission on the Merit Obelisk.

Fang Yuan had an advantage in cultivating every path, his value was fully displayed here.

Even for Shen Cong Sheng, many of the missions here were impossible to complete, but Fang Yuan, from his perspective, had methods to solve most missions. What he had to do was to choose those that would give him the most benefits and complete them first.

With the help of Miao Ming Shen and the others, Fang Yuan saved a lot of time and effort, while they were also gaining much more merit points now due to the help of Fang Yuan.

The cooperation between them was of mutual benefit, but it was a problem for Ren Xiu Ping and Shen Cong Sheng.

These people watched as Miao Ming Shen’s group rose in position on the merit board, surpassing them and becoming part of the top rankers, it was truly infuriating but there was nothing they could do.

Looking at Fang Yuan’s merit points, he had reached several thousand! He was truly ahead, far surpassing any other immortal.

Because of their huge difference, the immortals lost all desire to catch up to him.

"Immortal Gu need at least ten thousand merit points to exchange, Chu Ying is not far away already." Many people saw this and felt complex emotions, they were in admiration but also felt dejection.

"This is so strange, how can Chu Ying successfully complete so many different types of missions?"

"He must know many secrets about this place, it is a pity that we cannot fight inside here!"

"Miao Ming Shen and his group have truly dog shit luck, how could they gain the help of Chu Ying like this?"

The immortals were extremely jealous.

Shen Cong Sheng sighed, the number of times he had sighed in the last ten days was more than the sum of the previous few years.

The ranking on the merit board was very glaring, Shen Cong Sheng’s position was even lower than Hua Die and Feng Jiang.

He was a great rank eight Gu Immortal, he actually was losing to two rank six Gu Immortals, how could he allow this? It was too embarrassing.

"If I can receive a large sized mission, my rank eight strength will be fully utilized, I will definitely gain a lot of merit points. But how can I let others receive the same mission as me?

The ’really good person’ title was obvious, but what was the title to share missions?

They needed to test this.

And these experiments would test Shen Cong Sheng’s luck, their merit points would also be wasted.

This would aggravate their situation from the already terrible situation now.

"I can make my Shen clan Gu Immortals use their merit points, but what about Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua? If I do that, will I just push them towards Chu Ying’s side?"

Shen Cong Sheng had some reservations.

He knew that his influence was continuously falling now.

After learning that Gu Immortal agreements could be removed using the rewards on the Merit Obelisk, Shen Cong Sheng became more cautious regarding his attitude towards Ren Xiu Ping and others.

Fang Yuan and Miao Ming Shen could cooperate to do missions together, he had a good lead.

Shen Cong Sheng wanted to copy him, he had to unite Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua, these two people cultivated paths that Shen clan lacked.

Shen Cong Sheng was already regretting it, he should not have forced Miao Ming Shen and the rest to spend their merit points to exchange for different rewards.

This action made the immortals go against him mentally, it was a wise action back then, but now it was a terrible idea.

This was not Shen Cong Sheng’s fault, after all, he did not know anything about the Merit Obelisk earlier.

The decisions he made back then was very appropriate due to the circumstances.

There were many types of missions on the merit obelisk, mid-sized missions started to become difficult.

Thus, the more paths one cultivated, the more advantage they would have in completing missions.

Fang Yuan had already united Miao Ming Shen and the rest, Shen Cong Sheng started to learn from his mistake, he became more gentle in his approach towards Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua.

His rank eight reputation was still around, while Ren Xiu Ping’s alliance agreement was not removed yet, and most importantly, Ren Xiu Ping had a grudge against Chu Ying and Miao Ming Shen.

All these reasons ensured that Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua were still on Shen clan’s side.

When Fang Yuan returned to the Merit Obelisk, a new large sized mission appeared — the demonic immortal in regret crying sea has lost his senses, please cooperate with the formation and kill him!

"Regret crying sea appeared?" Fang Yuan was slightly stunned before accepting this mission.

At this point, four missions regarding the merman city had appeared, but the merman saintess selection competition had not started yet.

The influence of Fang Yuan’s rebirth had greatly altered the missions on the Merit Obelisk.

With this mission, Fang Yuan would be able to retrieve regret Gu earlier.

This was a great thing!

Once he gets regret Gu, he would be able to advance his Immortal Gu to a higher rank, his progress would be faster than in his previous life.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sky was cloudy, there were vicious winds and choppy waves.

This was regret crying sea area, Fang Yuan and Miao Ming Shen’s group had already been here for some time.

"I regret it! I should not have killed so many people."

"I painfully regret it! I should not have chased after power, it would have been much better if I had stayed behind to look after my parents as a filial son!"

"I truly repent! I deceived everyone and concealed Immortal Gu, I let a friend, who trusted me the most, carry the blame so I could get benefits!"

Waves of crying sounds resounded in the immortals’ ears like immortal killer moves that messed with their emotions.

This was the center of the regret crying sea area.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest stayed in the sky while watching Fang Yuan who was in deep contemplation, they waited patiently.

Even though they did not have much formation path foundation, they also found the grand formation at the bottom of the sea.

This was clearly the work of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, Miao Ming Shen and the rest looked at it and felt how minuscule they were.

Fang Yuan was like this in his previous life, he sighed that this formation was as vast as the sky, he would need at least dozens of years to comprehend all the profundities of this large formation.

But now, this time needed decreased drastically.

"I need about eight years to fully comprehend and gain complete understanding of this formation." Fang Yuan thought.

The reason for such an improvement was none other than Fang Yuan’s earth path attainment level.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan did not have grandmaster attainment level in earth path, but this formation was a super immortal formation that was primarily earth path.

"There are no actions from regret Gu." Fang Yuan stared at a certain area at the bottom of the sea.

Fang Yuan was not surprised by this situation.

In order to stay in Dragon Whale Paradise, Fang Yuan destroyed the stone lotus island in advance. Without the stone lotus island, the venerable method used on regret Gu could not find its location, how could it activate?

According to the memories that Fang Yuan obtained on the stone lotus island, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had entered the stone lotus island and borrowed regret Gu.

Even though the stone lotus island had Red Lotus’ will and his lingering methods, how could it resist a living venerable?

Red Lotus’ will gave in, allowing Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable to borrow regret Gu, he even wanted to snatch Red Lotus’ inheritor.

This inheritor was naturally Fang Yuan.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan chose the stone lotus island but this time, he took everything from the stone lotus island in advance, he came to the Dragon Whale Paradise because he wanted to inherit this Paradise Earth true inheritance.

"In the previous life, regret Gu flew out and transported me away. Right now, it is showing no signs of movement, it seems that I need to take action myself." Fang Yuan gained some realization.

Venerable methods were grand and powerful, Fang Yuan was teleported by regret Gu to the stone lotus island without putting up resistance.

Seeing that regret Gu did not activate, Fang Yuan was quite happy about it.

After comprehending it for several hours, Fang Yuan recollected his scattered thoughts.

He thought about it for a moment before saying to Miao Ming Shen: "We need to use the formation to get rid of this demonic immortal. However, when Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable set up this formation, even though it has unparalleled power, it can only suppress and seal, it has no offensive power. My idea is, we will set up a supplementary formation outside and activate it to kill the demonic immortal trapped within the formation."

Miao Ming Shen and the rest nodded upon hearing this idea, they agreed with it.

If they tried to break the formation and release the demonic immortal, it would be extremely dangerous.

It was obvious that this mysterious demonic immortal was someone of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s generation. Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had died already but this demonic immortal was still alive.

In terms of lifespan, he had already lived for more than a hundred thousand years.

Who could live for so long?

Even Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, who had the longest lifespan among venerables, only lived for twenty five thousand years.

Having a longer lifespan than a venerable, just this point alone made the demonic immortal extremely terrifying.

"Everyone, no need to overestimate the demonic immortal." Fang Yuan smiled: "This formation has a lifespan extension method in addition to its sealing ability, this demonic immortal is in constant hibernation to extend his lifespan, this is the reason he is still alive."

Miao Ming Shen and the rest showed a more relaxed expression after he said that.

"Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable is truly merciful, not only did he not kill the person, after suppressing this demonic immortal, he even extended his lifespan!"

"Does Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable have Heavenly Court’s lifespan extension method? According to Heavenly Court’s method, not only a hundred thousand years, they can hibernate for millions of years."

"Sigh, how can we possibly try to understand the method of a venerable?"

Fang Yuan turned his gaze to Miao Ming Shen and said: "But for me to set up the supplementary formation, I need a Gu Immortal to suppress each formation core. When the supplementary formation is activated, the more Gu Immortals there are and the more formation cores there are, the greater the power of the supplementary formation will be. And in my plan, I need at least eight Gu Immortals to suppress the formation cores."

The good feelings of Miao Ming Shen and the rest faded away.

Including Fang Yuan, there were only five Gu Immortals here. Fang Yuan’s words meant that they had to invite at least three more people.

That was an interesting situation.

Because with the addition of Zeng Luo Zi and Tu Tou Tuo, they still needed one person.

And other than Shen clan’s Gu Immortals, there were only Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua left.

This was not acceptable to Miao Ming Shen’s group. Shen clan had suppressed them, while Ren Xiu Ping was their enemy and Tong Hua was a traitor.

Who do they invite?

Gui Qi Ye, Hua Die, and Feng Jiang showed difficult expressions.

However, Miao Ming Shen smiled and responded sincerely: "Brother Chu, the most important thing right now is the Paradise Earth true inheritance, it is a rare opportunity, so we should seize it! This is such a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity! What hatred do we have that we can’t put aside for a while? If we want to settle the score, we can do it after we leave. In my opinion, Zeng Luo Zi and Tu Tou Tuo can be invited, Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua can also be invited, and it will be even better if Shen clan’s Gu Immortals can also come."

After saying that, Miao Ming Shen added an additional sentence: "Of course, everything is up to you, Brother Chu."

Gui Qi Ye and the other immortals’ expressions changed, they wanted to say something but after Miao Ming Shen’s statement, they could not say anything.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, Miao Ming Shen was truly Miao Ming Shen after all!

Fang Yuan said warmly: "Brother Miao is truly magnanimous, I am in deep admiration. Let’s do that, I will set up a few supplementary formations first, the four of you will guard a formation core each and activate the formations to infiltrate the underwater formation. After that, I will invite the other Gu

Immortals in."

Miao Ming Shen said again: "I am friends with Tu Tou Tuo and Zeng Luo Zi, I can write them a letter to make sure they know what decision to make."

Fang Yuan nodded: "That would be good."

Eventually, Fang Yuan obtained a few information path mortal Gu from Miao Ming Shen.

Miao Ming Shen not only wrote letters to Zeng Luo Zi and Tu Tou Tuo, he even wrote to Ren Xiu Ping, Tong Hua, and Shen clan, inviting them on behalf of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan took a few glances at the content, there were no issues. Miao Ming Shen expressed his intention to work together in the letter, he said that their grudges could be put aside for a while, he also praised Fang Yuan’s methods and urged them to cooperate with him.

Fang Yuan could not help but reassess Miao Ming Shen.

The truth was, Miao Ming Shen’s letter was only the icing on the cake, this letter was not going to change anything.

Fang Yuan had a lot of confidence in successfully recruiting these people to begin with.

Even if Miao Ming Shen objected, Fang Yuan would still invite the other Gu Immortals. Miao Ming Shen knew that he was not someone crucial to Fang Yuan, he could be replaced, in order to gain more benefits in the future, he relented. If this is not a talented person, who is?

The process of recruiting Tu Tou Tuo and Zeng Luo Zi went very smoothly.

Fang Yuan only said a sentence and they quickly joined him, they even showed deep excitement.

After all, Fang Yuan was bringing Miao Ming Shen’s group to rise in ranking on the merit board, everyone could see how they suppressed Shen Cong Sheng.

Fang Yuan invited Tong Hua next, she hesitated and said she needed to think about it.

After that, Fang Yuan invited Ren Xiu Ping, he agreed to it without even thinking, he was even faster than Tu Tou Tuo and Zeng Luo Zi.

Ren Xiu Ping also brought slightly surprising news to Fang Yuan, Shen clan’s Gu Immortals wanted to join as well.

Shen Cong Sheng was the leader of the Shen clan Gu Immortals, without his consent, none of them would dare to defect over to Fang Yuan.

Thus Fang Yuan met with Shen Cong Sheng soon after.

"Chu Ying." This time, Shen Cong Sheng had a warm attitude, he also treated the rank seven Chu Ying as a rank eight equal.

"The reason why I came here is because of Heavenly Court’s information. Not long ago, Duke Long and Qi Sea Ancestor had a battle, I’m sure you have heard of it. In this battle, I captured Gu Yue Fang Zheng, in order to get him back, Heavenly Court gave me some important information."

"It turns out that this Dragon Whale Paradise has a rank eight response Immortal Gu, this Gu is extremely important to me and my Shen clan, I have been looking for it for many years."

"Shen clan is willing to cooperate with you, Chu Ying. If you see this Gu on the Merit Obelisk’s reward list, I hope you can pass it. If you encounter this Gu in a mission, my Shen clan would like you to capture it for us. We will offer you a huge reward!"

Fang Yuan’s expression changed: "Response Gu? This Gu worm is among the top ten of the List of Mystical Gu, it can emit a voice and anyone who hears this voice and responds to it will become enslaved. A rank eight response Gu can enslave rank eight Gu Immortals, this is such a precious Gu that your clan is unable to obtain, if you want to work with me, what rewards are you offering me? After all, within this Dragon Whale Paradise, we cannot set an agreement."

Shen Cong Sheng laughed loudly: "I have already prepared it. This cooperation will use the reputation of my Shen clan, you can record the entire process. Furthermore, I have something for you, this is a portion of our sincerity, please do accept it."

Saying so, Shen Cong Sheng took out a set of immortal materials and handed them to Fang Yuan.

The immortal materials had a lot of value, even Fang Yuan felt a little excited upon receiving them.

Regret Gu was right in front of him, he needed quite a bit of resources to advance all of his Immortal Gu, this set of immortal materials from Shen Cong Sheng had fixed this problem, it was something Fang Yuan really needed.

Fang Yuan nodded as he accepted the immortal materials.

Shen Cong Sheng added: "I hear that your current mission has a super immortal formation set by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable himself. I would like to go there, response Gu might be in it, even if it is not there, my Shen clan Gu Immortals can lend a hand to help you with this mission."

Fang Yuan pondered for a while before nodding: "It is my honor to receive the help of Lord Shen Cong Sheng."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Within the regret crying sea area, immortals were present.

Miao Ming Shen and the other three each stayed in a supplementary formation, they activated their formations as the power continued to seep into the underwater formation.

Fang Yuan was setting up his immortal formation now.

His aura was radiating at rank seven level, his body was covered in a light green halo, his eyes were filled with blue light, resembling lightning in the sea.

Waving his hand, a large number of mortal Gu flew into the sky like a swarm of bees, circling around and forming the shape of a supplementary formation.

Next, Fang Yuan took out immortal materials and used his killer moves to fill up this supplementary formation.

The newly arrived Ren Xiu Ping and others looked at Fang Yuan with gleaming eyes, they were silent upon seeing his formation arrangement.

The Gu Immortals all had complex expressions, even Shen Cong Sheng was the same.

"Being able to use immortal materials to set up formations, he is a formation path grandmaster."

"Chu Ying cultivates transformation path, to think that he has such attainment in formation path, this is very rare. How does he dual cultivate?"

"Perhaps he found a way to cultivate both transformation path and formation path without conflict, like how Heavenly Court’s Thunder Ghost True Monarch cultivated lightning path and soul path, or how Nine Spiritual Fairy cultivates transformation path and enslavement path."

"It is not as simple as just a formation path grandmaster, Chu Ying’s proficiency in creating formations is very high, and most impressively, he does not lack formation path immortal killer moves, his efficiency at creating formations is truly amazing!"

The immortals watched with increasing shock as Fang Yuan displayed his incredible formation path attainment.

"With such methods, he can handle a lot of missions on the Merit Obelisk."

"Most of the Merit Obelisk missions involve channeling of rivers and managing the ecology, this is very advantageous for Chu Ying."

"No wonder he could complete so many formations!"

"Ordinary formation path Gu Immortals need Immortal Gu to create immortal formations. But Chu Ying is a formation path grandmaster, he only needs to use immortal materials. This is too terrifying."

The Gu Immortals could not help but feel envy and jealousy, especially towards Miao Ming Shen and group who had joined Chu Ying much earlier and had a head start.

Ren Xiu Ping was already starting to consider if he should abandon Shen clan after this mission and defect to Fang Yuan instead.

Looking at the current situation, Fang Yuan was very magnanimous, earlier, even though Ren Xiu Ping was enemies with him, he had completely ignored it at the moment.

Ren Xiu Ping’s worry was that Fang Yuan already had Miao Ming Shen’s group, even Tu Tou Tuo and Zeng Luo Zi had a closer relationship to Fang Yuan than him.

"In Chu Ying’s perspective, he could simply cooperate with the people he liked. Why would he seek the cooperation of an enemy like me?"

Ren Xiu Ping had a thought: "Even though he had formation path grandmaster attainment level, being able to use immortal materials to set up formations, his greatest limitation is also immortal materials. If he lacks immortal materials, I can contribute them to him and deepen our cooperation and relationship."

Ren Xiu Ping decided to give up some of his personal benefits, that was the only way he could entice Fang Yuan into cooperating with him.

"This formation has been created, Ren Xiu Ping, please go and defend it." Fang Yuan spoke at this time.

He had already set up several formations, this was like the previous few ones, even though they were made in the sky, once they were completed, they would sink into the sea.

"Sure, sure." Ren Xiu Ping smiled as he flew down, he entered the formation without checking it closely.

Ren Xiu Ping did not have formation path attainment, even if Fang Yuan created the formation before his very eyes, he could not understanding the profundity of this supplementary formation, but he believed that with Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangements, Fang Yuan could not harm him.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable restricted Gu Immortals from fighting each other, it allowed them to trust each other to a large extent.

Fang Yuan continued to set up formations.

One, two three...

One by one, Gu Immortals entered their formations, the supplementary formations were getting stronger.

Ren Xiu Ping’s expression was not good now.

Fang Yuan seemed to have an endless supply of immortal materials!

During this period of time, he saw domination copper, earthly limit astral qi, green jade wind, dark inkstone, heaven flying jade...

Fang Yuan’s deep wealth silenced all of the immortals.

Ren Xiu Ping even gasped in shock several times.

With such wealth, how could he possibly compare?

And the thing that made Ren Xiu Ping the most dejected was Fang Yuan’s attitude.

He spent all of these immortal materials to create formations, he did not even blink or hesitate, he was completely indifferent about the cost!

Even though Fang Yuan lacked immortal materials, that was for the sake of advancing his Immortal Gu. The immortal materials used to create these formations were merely just a tiny portion of Fang Yuan’s treasury, even if he had to create another hundred supplementary formations, he could easily afford it.

Thus, Fang Yuan’s actions were simply showing that he was incredibly affluent in the eyes of Ren Xiu Ping and the other Gu Immortals!

After expending some time and effort, all the supplementary formations were finally created.

Shen Cong Sheng and the rest went into their own formations that were scattered all around the underwater formation, if one watched from above, it would resemble the tail of a peacock.

Every single supplementary formation resembled the feathers that formed the eye of a peacock tail, they gathered strength that flowed all the way into the underwater formation.

The supplementary formations looked similar but they all had different effects.

This was because Fang Yuan modified every supplementary formation according to the respective Gu Immortal using it, for example, Miao Ming Shen’s supplementary formation had space path immortal materials, it could raise his efficiency. Ren Xiu Ping’s supplementary formation had several spaces in it that could accommodate desolate beasts, it would allow him to use his enslavement path expertise.

Other than that, the supplementary formations also had specific locations. Fang Yuan placed the weaker immortals like Hua Die and Feng Jiang at the periphery. Shen Cong Sheng who was the strongest was closest to the underwater formation.

Fang Yuan also created a supplementary formation for himself.

He entered it.

This supplementary formation was a refinement path Gu formation, its only use was to amplify the power of Fang Yuan’s refinement path killer moves.

Within the supplementary formation, Fang Yuan activated his killer move — Refinement Formation Rain!

At once, rain started to drizzle above the sea.

Countless raindrops entered the underwater formation, the might of refinement path was displayed as Gu worms were refined by Fang Yuan one by one.

Shen Cong Sheng and the others did not find this rain powerful initially, but after a while, their eyes were opened wide.

Because during this short period of time, Fang Yuan had already refined the outer layer of the underwater formation.

"What killer move is this? It worked against this underwater formation!"

"It looks like a refinement path killer move?" Some were uncertain.

"Such a powerful refinement path killer move... does Chu Ying cultivate refinement path too?" Some found it unbelievable.

"This should be the effect of that supplementary formation!"

The Gu Immortals thought about it for a long time, they subconsciously decided to attribute it to the power of Fang Yuan’s supplementary formation.

If Chu Ying also had such terrifying attainment in refinement path, able to refine the formation of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, wouldn’t he be a triple cultivator?

How would Ren Xiu Ping, Miao Ming Shen, and all these other elites who cultivated one path feel!

Even if it was the power of the supplementary formation, these Gu Immortals were still immensely shocked.

Shen Cong Sheng’s pupils shrunk slightly, compared to the supplementary formation’s power, he was more shocked at Fang Yuan’s ambition.

He already understood it.

All of them controlling the supplementary formations were like crowbars while the underwater formation was like a tightly sealed wooden box.

The power of the supplementary formation invaded the underwater formation, it was like the crowbars trying to pry open the box.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan controlled the supplementary formation that was the core of this entire formation, it could flow in using the crack opened by the crowbars, to invade and turn these wooden boards into his own possession!

"Such formation path attainment, such ambition... he wants to take the entire formation for himself!"

"Chu Ying..." Shen Cong Sheng had a solemn expression, he secretly engraved this name into his heart.

This was not the first time Fang Yuan was using this refinement formation rain killer move.

This move used rank eight water refinement Immortal Gu as the core. Fang Yuan used many Gu worms to suppress the rank eight aura, disguising it as rank seven.

After rebirth, he annexed Lang Ya Sect and gained rank eight Immortal Gu Water Refinement, he created this move.

After returning to Southern Border, he used this killer move to refine Chi Qu You’s formation and captured many Gu Immortals inside the formation.

This time, Fang Yuan used it with rank seven aura again, with the concealment of the supplementary formation, Shen Cong Sheng could not tell that it was truly rank eight.

The power of a rank eight killer move was truly extraordinary, the underwater formation was slowly refined by Fang Yuan bit by bit.

The more he refined it, the greater his control over the formation, with the help of his supplementary formations, he progressed with great speed without much problem.

However, after he refined thirty percent of the formation, refinement formation rain’s effect fell drastically, his progress slowed down.

"Refinement formation rain is just a killer move, the actual effect depends on my understanding of this underwater formation." Fang Yuan expected this, he was not surprised, he was sufficiently patient.

He decided to spend some time here, to get regret Gu and the other Immortal Gu in the formation, his investments were worth it.

Originally, he was worried about the other Gu Immortals.

But now that Shen Cong Sheng had been invited here, Fang Yuan was not afraid that other Gu Immortals would use this time to surpass his contribution ranking.

The rate of formation refinement got slower and slower, eventually, Fang Yuan hit a brick.

This was an earth path rank seven Immortal Gu, its body was flat like a disk, yellowish brown, with a head and a tail, and four tentacles that look like hooks, growing evenly around the disk.

"This is territory Gu. Once a Gu Immortal plants it deep into the soil, it will emit a profound power that affects the surrounding soil and spreads out until it reaches its limit, everything that is within a thousand li of that territory will be controlled by the Gu Immortal." Fang Yuan recognized this Gu.

Territory Gu was very commonly seen.

Especially in Southern Border.

Many villages, even if they were not proficient in earth path, would try to get a rank three or four territory Gu. The village would plant this Gu in the soil and let a Gu Master in a position of authority use it, to raise and maintain their control over this territory.

Territory Gu was a very useful Gu worm but it was very expensive, it was often used by forces. Individual Gu Masters did not need it.

Territory Immortal Gu was actually kept within Dragon Whale Paradise, this Gu was quite useful to Fang Yuan as well.

Fang Yuan could conveniently use this Gu worm to manage his immortal aperture. He could alter the landscape of the territory that he creates using territory Gu.

Even if it was not useful, Fang Yuan still had to refine this earth path Immortal Gu. It was the key obstacle now, it stopped Fang Yuan from progressing further.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"It is a little troublesome, I need to make deductions. Everyone, take a rest for now." Fang Yuan spoke.

The obstacle of territory Gu not only blocked Fang Yuan but also the other Gu Immortals. No matter how they activated the supplementary formation, they could not penetrate the formation anymore.

The Gu Immortals started to rest, but not without talking among themselves.

"We finally met with an obstacle."

"I thought that Chu Ying would be able to continue refining it endlessly."

"Don’t joke, this is a formation that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable created personally, how in the world can this Chu Ying possibly refine such a formation?"

"But if he cannot refine it, what will happen to our mission?"

"Indeed, even though Chu Ying is a formation path grandmaster, deduction is the expertise of wisdom path. What can he deduce?"

The Gu Immortals had complex emotions.

On one hand, they could finally let out a sigh of relief after seeing Fang Yuan face an obstacle.

On the other hand, the fact that Fang Yuan was stuck meant that they were also not able to progress and gain more benefits.

The Gu Immortals wanted Fang Yuan to break through this obstacle but they were also inherently unwilling to see him succeed.

"Alright, I deduced it, let’s continue." Fang Yuan said.

"What?" The immortals were stumped, his speed was too terrifying.

Fang Yuan flew out of the supplementary formation and floated in the air: "To get through this obstacle, we need to modify the supplementary formations a little, everyone, don’t be anxious to take action."

Next, he willed as immortal essence got rapidly expended, supplementary formations followed his will and thought, changing locations. Some supplementary formations moved back while others moved in front, getting closer to the underwater formation.

Eventually, Miao Ming Shen’s supplementary formation was closely placed beside Ren Xiu Ping’s formation, they were tightly connected together.

Fang Yuan said to them: "Next, the two of you will lead the supplementary formations while the others help out."

Ren Xiu Ping and Miao Ming Shen nodded, they had complex expressions, not expecting that they of all people would actually cooperate.

After modifying the supplementary formations, Fang Yuan entered his supplementary formation again, he did not rush to activate refinement formation rain, instead he gave specific instructions to the immortals within these formations, using his own steps and methods to activate these supplementary formations in a particular manner.

The power of the supplementary formation changed, it was like a thin cluster of sand, falling through the cracks of the underwater formation and slowing down its operations bit by bit.

And this change was what Fang Yuan needed to make use of.

He quickly activated refinement formation rain and successfully refined territory Gu after a while!

After passing this obstacle, a new sense of ease was felt by the immortals as the supplementary formation’s power surged like a wave and rampaged in the underwater formation. Only after it took over sixty percent of the formation did it stop at a new obstacle.

A huge wave of shock emerged in the hearts of Shen Cong Sheng and the rest.

"So powerful!"

"To think that this Chu Ying is so impressive."

"More than half of this underwater formation belongs to him now."

"The supplementary formations he designed are very profound, they can be adjusted according to situations. This is not a fixed formation, it is a transformative formation!"

Fang Yuan’s performance surpassed their highest expectations, they could not help but feel deeply astonished.

Three days and two nights later, Fang Yuan refined a few more earth path Immortal Gu and a vast number of mortal Gu. At this point, the sixty percent of the formation was finally under Fang Yuan’s control.

"But the remaining forty percent is the core of this underwater formation. With just the supplementary formations and myself, we cannot break through it in the short term." Fang Yuan knew his own limits. He had already reached the current limit of his abilities after reaching this point.

After all, this earth path formation was created by Paradise Earth, his earth path attainment level was supreme grandmaster!

Fang Yuan tried to use the sixty percent that he refined to interfere with the remaining forty percent.

Fang Yuan tried to use the underwater formation against itself.

Guh.

A moment later, Fang Yuan suddenly coughed out blood as his soul shook, his face turned pale. Many supplementary formations including the one he was in broke apart, the Gu Immortals within fell into the water as they shouted in shock, each of them faced varying levels of backlash.

Fang Yuan’s plan failed, even though he controlled sixty percent of the formation, he could not do anything to the remaining core forty percent!

"As expected of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, even after over half of it was refined, it still remained unmoved." Fang Yuan’s heart shook.

He sighed to himself as he called out: "Everyone, I am sorry, I did not see the profundity of the formation and caused you to get injured."

The injured Gu Immortals shook their head, they quickly replied that they were fine.

In their opinion, it was outstanding that Chu Ying could reach this stage, he far exceeded their expectations.

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes as he thought: "It seems that we can only dismantle the formation now."

After resting for a while, he started to dismantle the formation.

Because the external sixty percent was already refined by him, the dismantling was very successful.

But this was not a normal dismantling process, Fang Yuan only took apart sixty percent of the formation, thus during this process, Gu worms were destroyed when the formation was taken apart. But Fang Yuan paid attention to the Immortal Gu and protected them, he successfully obtained them. As for the mortal Gu, even if some of them were destroyed, it was not a big deal.

Miao Ming Shen, Ren Xiu Ping, and the rest watched with wide opened eyes!

When they controlled the supplementary formation earlier, they could not sense the exact situation within the formation, there was only a faint connection.

Now that Fang Yuan dismantled the formation, they could see all of the Gu worms that he was getting.

"So many Gu worms!"

"I see so many long-lost earth path mortal Gu, they were all created when

Paradise Earth was still a Gu Master."

"There are also Immortal Gu, oh heavens, there are eight Immortal Gu!"

"Most of these Immortal Gu are rank seven, there are few rank six Immortal Gu!"

"Chu Ying took them all!"

"Indeed, he did not even give us a single one..."

The Gu Immortals watched as Fang Yuan took his Immortal Gu, they were staring in a daze, some of them were even salivating intensely.

Most of these were earth path Immortal Gu, they were not suitable for use but Immortal Gu were unique, they could be traded for other Immortal Gu!

Tu Tou Tuo’s eyes were bloodshot, he was almost spewing fire from them!

He was an earth path Gu Immortal, watching as Fang Yuan kept the earth path Immortal Gu in his immortal aperture, he felt his mouth turning dry and his heart palpitating intensely.

While dismantling the formation, he gulped several times, he wanted to speak but could only swallow his saliva in the end.

He really wanted to snatch these Immortal Gu!

But his logic told him that it would be the most stupid move to do so.

Even a rank eight like Shen Cong Sheng could not do anything, how could he?

In the end, Tu Tou Tuo heaved a deep sigh, he swallowed all of his envy and jealousy into his stomach along with his saliva.

His mind moved quickly, thinking of how to get these Immortal Gu. He knew that he was not crucial to this plan, so the only way was to deepen his cooperation and relationship with Chu Ying by displaying his value, it would help in the future when he asks Chu Ying to exchange Gu.

The only good thing was that Chu Ying cultivated transformation path and formation path, he did not cultivate earth path. Thus, there was a high possibility that Chu Ying would sell these Immortal Gu in the future.

The pitiful Tu Tou Tuo did not know that Fang Yuan’s earth path attainment level was at grandmaster, it was even higher than his!

After Fang Yuan dismantled the outer part of the formation, the immortals came to congratulate him.

"Congratulations, congratulations."

"Chu Ying, you’ve earned a fortune this time. Even though you used so many immortal materials, you gained a large number of Immortal Gu! It is truly a huge profit."

"To speak the truth, my saliva is about to drip to the ground."

"Outstanding methods, all I feel is admiration towards you."

"Chu Ying, I am Tu Tou Tuo, I am quite interested in these earth path Immortal Gu that you obtained. If you wish to sell or exchange them, please inform me, I am sure that you will be satisfied with my offer."

Fang Yuan thanked them one by one with calm emotions.

He simply had too many Immortal Gu already!

It could scare them all to death if he said the exact number.

And this batch of Immortal Gu that he just obtained was not his biggest gain recently.

Earlier in the River of Time, Fang Yuan defeated Heavenly Court, even though he lost the stone lotus island, his gains were huge.

He dismantled six Immortal Gu House from Heavenly Court, even though many Immortal Gu died in the battle, there were many Immortal Gu left.

For example, the core Immortal Gu of the river suppression lotus sealing formation, Suppression and Bone Seal; the two time path core of Moment Stage, Instant and That Time; Immortal Gu Permanence in Eternal Yacht; the Early Autumn, Mid Autumn, and Late Autumn of Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform; and the Immortal Gu in Sun and Moon Temple, Sun Day and Moon Month.

These Immortal Gu were mostly rank seven, some were rank eight!

As for Shark Flow Lever, even though it was completely destroyed without a single one left, it had a special construction style, it used a combination of desolate beasts and Immortal Gu. While Fang Yuan took his loot and gains from the battlefield, he reverse-deduced most of the contents of Shark Flow Lever using the clues he found. This gave him a huge inspiration, currently, Fang Yuan’s clone was already making deductions to try to incorporate Twelve Zodiac battle formation into his Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Right now, there was only forty percent of the underwater formation left in front of Fang Yuan and the others.

Using refinement formation rain would have little to no effect already.

The power of the supplementary formation could no longer do anything.

Even though Fang Yuan tried very hard, there was no progress. He understood that this underwater formation was like a hard tortoise shell, its defense was very tight.

"Should I wait for my clone Wu Shuai to raise my earth path attainment level or should I attack directly?" Fang Yuan thought about it, he decided to save time and attack now.

After all, he had so many people with him now, he had to make good use of them.

Immediately, he asked these Gu Immortals to attack while he and a few other Gu Immortals stayed to manipulate the supplementary formation.

Boom boom boom!

All sorts of killer moves were unleashed upon the underwater formation, causing huge ripples and waves.

The formation only had forty percent left, after being attacked by so many strong immortals, including a rank eight Gu Immortal like Shen Cong Sheng, its operations were hindered as all sorts of flaws appeared.

Fang Yuan was overjoyed, he quickly used the supplementary formation to invade the formation using these loopholes.

"I regret it!" Suddenly, from within, a loud crying voice resounded in the area.

"What was I doing? I should not have attacked the formation."

"I regret it! Why did I listen to Chu Ying?"

"I should not have come to Dragon Whale Paradise, now I am completely trapped, I truly regret everything."

...

The immortals quickly stopped their actions, their morale fell to rock bottom as regret Gu exerted its influence on them.

Only Fang Yuan remained unmoved, bright light shined in his eyes as he thought: "The demonic immortal within the formation is spreading the power of regret Gu to weaken its influence on him. He wants to escape!"

Bam bam bam!

Loud sounds were emitted from within the underwater formation.

The formation had flaws to begin with, right now, these gaps spread as they formed into a huge crack.

Shen Cong Sheng shouted loudly as he temporarily suppressed the effect of regret Gu, his eyes were bloodshot as he attacked the formation’s crack fiercely.

Immortal killer move — Grand Collision!

Boom!

The power of this move cooperated with the demon within, the formation broke apart as the sealed demonic immortal flew out like a black arrow.

Shen Cong Sheng was overjoyed, he flew closer: "Ancestor Shen Shang, I am a descendant of Shen clan, I am your junior!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sudden change occurred in front of all the immortals.

Shen Cong Sheng got close to the mysterious demonic immortal, he showed an agitated expression.

"Finally, I’ve finally found you, Ancestor Shen Shang!" Shen Cong Sheng shouted in a slightly trembling voice.

His true motive in coming here was to save his ancestor, Shen Shang.

Shen Shang was the most outstanding Gu Immortal in Shen clan, he had outstanding talent that was publicly recognized. In fact, when he was still a rank six Gu Immortal, a wisdom path rank eight great expert had said that he was the ’hundreds of years eastern immortal leader, with half of a venerable’s talent’, it meant that he would become the leader of Eastern Sea’s immortals in hundreds of years when he reaches rank eight, his talent was so high it could compare to half a venerable.

However, Shen Shang pursued strength and gradually fell into the demonic path, he started to commit heinous deeds.

His clan treasured his talent and even though they punished him, it was not a severe punishment, they protected him continuously.

Shen Shang did not change his ways, he became more daring and as a righteous path Gu Immortal on the surface, he acted like a demon.

Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world was kept in the dark, Shen clan managed to conceal the fact but they could not hide it from Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable took action, suppressing him, but did not expose his identity publicly.

Shen clan did not dare to publicize it, they only announced that Shen Shang had died from his tribulation.

After Shen Cong Sheng captured Gu Yue Fang Zheng, Heavenly Court contacted him and told him about Shen Shang’s information, in exchange for Fang Zheng.

Therefore, Shen Cong Sheng learned that Shen Shang was still alive, and that he was imprisoned within Dragon Whale Paradise.

In order to enter Dragon Whale Paradise, Shen Cong Sheng mobilized the whole of Shen clan to investigate and search in secret.

Right at this time, Ren Xiu Ping targeted Miao Ming Shen and attacked them, exposing clues leading to the blue dragon whale.

After Shen clan learned of this, Shen Cong Sheng led them to force Ren Xiu Ping to submit, they learned that Miao Ming Shen had a way to find the exact location of the blue dragon whale.

Miao Ming Shen gathered eight immortals to search for the Paradise Earth true inheritance in the blue dragon whale, Ren Xiu Ping and Shen Cong Sheng learned about it and followed them.

After that, it led to a series of events.

After Shen Cong Sheng came to Dragon Whale Paradise, he tried all the ways possible to find Shen Shang’s location, after a few missions, Shen clan Gu Immortal Shen Qi got the information of regret crying sea.

Shen Cong Sheng guessed that the demonic immortal in regret crying sea was likely Shen Shang!

However, he could not be happy for long because he heard of terrifying news.

Chu Ying actually accepted the mission to kill Shen Shang!

This shocked Shen Cong Sheng, he quickly contacted Fang Yuan, lying that he was looking for response Gu and offering a large amount of immortal materials to express his goodwill.

Thus, Fang Yuan brought Shen Cong Sheng into regret crying sea.

Shen Cong Sheng waited secretly and did not make a move, only at the last moment, he acted and saved Shen Shang with one attack.

This change made everyone dumbfounded other than the Shen clan Gu Immortals.

Immediately, Miao Ming Shen and the rest had dark expressions, their hearts sank to rock bottom.

Shen Cong Sheng was a rank eight Gu Immortal to begin with, they had another Shen Shang who was a rank eight Gu Immortal now as well. Back then, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had to suppress him personally, he definitely had outstanding battle strength that was not to be underestimated.

With Shen Shang, Shen clan’s strength rose greatly. Not only in Dragon Whale Paradise, but even in Eastern Sea, there would be a shocking change.

Currently, in Eastern Sea’s righteous path, Shen clan would be the only super force with two rank eight Gu Immortals!

Shen clan would become the strongest force in Eastern Sea.

This would have huge impact and bring immense benefits to Shen clan.

Back then, Heavenly Court exposed this secret to them, it was no wonder that Shen Cong Sheng immediately released Fang Zheng without caring about Qi Sea Ancestor, who was hinting that he wanted to get Fang Zheng.

"You are a descendant of my Shen clan?" Shen Shang floated in the air, looking at Shen Cong Sheng, his eyes shined with brilliance as he nodded: "Indeed, you are a member of Shen clan. What year is it now?"

Shen Shang had a hoarse voice, it was even more course than crows.

He wore a grey robe that was tattered, his face was pale and his hair was messy, his eyes were bloodshot and red. His peak rank eight aura radiated from his body with an intense force.

Shen Cong Sheng answered his question and told him that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had died long ago.

"So long has passed." Shen Shang sighed deeply: "Lord Paradise Earth died after all, sigh..."

His attitude towards Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was a bit strange.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable suppressed him but he actually called Paradise Earth ’Lord’.

After sighing, Shen Shang looked towards Fang Yuan and the other immortals.

He gazed around and understood the situation, he cupped his fists and smiled: "Good, it seems that my Shen clan has many talented people."

Afterwards, he focused his gaze on Fang Yuan as he spoke in a gentle tone: "Friend, I was able to escape thanks to you. It was mostly due to your effort, do you wish to join Shen clan and become our external supreme elder?"

He actually wanted to recruit Fang Yuan.

Indeed, Fang Yuan had displayed sufficient value already.

Just his formation path grandmaster status was something Shen clan wanted. And looking at his attainment and age, it was possible that he could break through to formation path great grandmaster in his lifetime.

Shen Cong Sheng cupped his fists towards Fang Yuan, adding: "Chu Ying, I lied earlier but I did not have a choice. Saving our Ancestor Shen Shang is extremely important to Shen clan, I hope you can understand."

Fang Yuan nodded with a plain expression, he even had a smile on his face: "Of course I understand, if it were me, I would do the same."

"But Shen clan wants to recruit me? Hehehe..." Fang Yuan laughed as he shook his head.

Shen Cong Sheng said coldly: "Friend Chu Ying, why are you laughing?"

Fang Yuan raised his eyebrows: "On what foundation is your Shen clan trying to recruit me? You guys are simply unqualified."

Shen Cong Sheng’s gaze turned cold as ice.

His Shen clan was an Eastern Sea super force, they owned seven large sea areas and thousands of middle and small sea areas, they even had two rank eights now. With such strength, they were not qualified to recruit a tiny lone immortal?"

"Hmph, Chu Ying, don’t be too arrogant."

"My Shen clan is giving you a chance, this is the magnanimity of our Ancestor Shen Shang."

"Don’t think too highly of yourself!"

Shen Xiao and Shen Qi quickly spoke, they flew out of the supplementary formations, gathering with Shen Cong Sheng and Shen Shang.

Shen Shang’s bloodshot eyes had deep killing intent, he looked at Fang Yuan and spoke with an icy voice: "Chu Ying? I need to remind you, you were all sent here by the Merit Obelisk, Paradise Earth’s method restricts you from fighting each other. But I have been trapped here for countless years, I am not restricted by the Merit Obelisk, so all of you can be attacked by me."

The expressions of Miao Ming Shen and the rest changed, their worst nightmare had come true!

What should they do now?

Right when they were helpless, they suddenly heard Fang Yuan laughing loudly as he pointed his finger at Shen Shang who was in the sky, provoking him to attack.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest were dumbfounded.

Was this courage or stupidity?

They could not tell.

Shen Shang’s eyes shined with blood red light as he lowered his voice that was filled with anger: "You are courting death, then go die!"

Saying so, he opened his mouth as a blood colored sound wave in a ball shape shot towards Fang Yuan.

The sound wave was very fast, in almost an instant, it flew through the sky and landed on the supplementary formation.

Boom!

The supplementary formation collapsed instantly, it did not even last for a moment.

An intense explosion occurred, a huge sea wave surged into the sky, it was tens of feet tall.

Before the wave landed, the explosion had already caused damage to the surroundings, Miao Ming Shen and the rest had to fly into the sky, away from their supplementary formations.

All of the supplementary formations were destroyed, Miao Ming Shen and the rest had ashen expressions.

Shen Shang’s attack was definitely at rank eight level, it was terrifying! From their perspective, there was little chance that Chu Ying survived that.

The truth was, they did not care about Chu Ying’s situation right now, they were more worried about themselves.

Because Shen Shang had proven his words from earlier with action, he could really attack Miao Ming Shen and the others!

"Ancestor is so powerful!" Shen Cong Sheng squinted, he knew the inside details. Shen Shang did not cultivate sound path primarily, the sound path method he used earlier was not his true strength.

"Chu Ying is dead meat!"

"Good that he died, I disliked him from the start."

"Indeed, he only had rank seven cultivation level but acted so arrogantly because he knew things about the Dragon Whale Paradise, he truly had no regard for us."

"He dared to provoke a rank eight, he truly wanted to die... die...."

Shen Xiao said as he suddenly stammered.

After the huge waves crashed down, new enormous waves were formed.

Within the steam and mist, a shiny ship that was covered in silver-white light appeared in front of all of the immortals.

Chu Ying’s arms were behind his back, he stood at the deck as he carried the same smile as before.

Shen Shang saw this as his pupils shrunk, he gasped with shock: "Rank eight Immortal Gu House?"

The other Gu Immortals were all stunned!

They were so familiar with this Immortal Gu House, no, in the current five regions, which Gu Immortal did not know about this Immortal Gu House?

"This is... Myriad Year Flying Warship!" Ren Xiu Ping cried out, he felt his scalp going numb.

"Chu Ying actually has Myriad Year Flying Warship, who in the world is he?" Shen Xiao was tongue-tied.

The immortals stared at Fang Yuan with fixed gazes, he gradually dispelled familiar face as he showed his true appearance.

After seeing his true appearance, all of the immortals’ hearts shook, none of them could stay indifferent.

Hua Die screamed out loud: "It’s Fang Yuan!"

She was too shocked, she had always felt that Fang Yuan was high and mighty, far away from people like them, to think that he was around her the entire time.

It was truly unbelievable!

"It’s Fang Yuan!!" Shen clan’s Gu Immortals gritted their teeth, some were breathing and gasping loudly.

"So that was it." Miao Ming Shen gulped as he swallowed his saliva. Chu Ying was a fake identity of Fang Yuan, after all, how could such a powerful lone immortal appear in Eastern Sea suddenly?

It was Fang Yuan after all!

Who was Fang Yuan?

He had inherited many venerable inheritances, he was someone who could not be assessed with common sense.

No wonder Chu Ying had such attainment in transformation path and formation path. This was just a fragment of Fang Yuan’s true strength.

Now everything made sense.

Shen Cong Sheng’s expression was pale as he gritted his teeth, in just a short time, sweat had gathered on his forehead already.

So it was this great demon Fang Yuan!

No wonder he had such an attitude, even against two rank eights, he showed such disdain towards Shen clan.

It was normal!

Shen Cong Sheng suddenly felt that it was a logical situation, all of his anger towards Chu Ying’s arrogance vanished completely without a trace!

Fang Yuan dared to provoke even Heavenly Court and kill their members, how could Shen clan even compare?

After his anger subsided, he felt intense fear afterwards.

He actually met with Fang Yuan, this was such a problematic person!

Shen Cong Sheng sighed in his heart, his luck was really bad, why did he meet Fang Yuan of all people?

At this moment, his rank eight strength could not give him confidence, he was panicking internally.

At this moment, Shen Cong Sheng heard Shen Shang’s voice: "Who is Fang Yuan?"

Shen Cong Sheng looked at Shen Shang who had a confused expression.

He felt that this was very strange!

This Gu Immortal only had rank seven cultivation level, he had only changed his appearance.

Why were they all so afraid?

Shen Shang looked at Shen Cong Sheng with a gaze that had slight questioning, it seemed to be saying: You are a great rank eight, why are you afraid of a rank seven, what is there to fear!

Even though Fang Yuan showed his appearance, he did not reveal his rank eight aura, it was still concealed.

Shen Cong Sheng blinked as he shuddered internally.

Could he remain calm?

Could he look at Fang Yuan using common sense and cultivation level?

He was a ruthless demon who dared to trample on Heavenly Court, he destroyed six Immortal Gu Houses belonging to Heavenly Court earlier, he even slaughtered a bunch of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals!

He was ruthless and scheming, even Heavenly Court was without options against him.

Now that Shen clan offended him, forget about two rank eights, even if they had a group of rank eights, Shen Cong Sheng would not feel safe at all.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

At this point, Fang Yuan was no longer like before.

Heavenly Court was the reason for his overwhelming fame and dominance. Even though he only displayed rank seven cultivation level, it was enough to intimidate most rank eight Gu Immortals in the world.

"Ancestor." Shen Cong Sheng sent an information path mortal Gu to Shen Shang, it contained everything they knew about Fang Yuan.

Shen Shang received the mortal Gu as his divine sense swept through it, he looked towards Fang Yuan with a new type of gaze.

"Fang Yuan? Even Heavenly Court cannot do anything against you, hahaha, interesting!" Shen Shang’s eyes burst out with blood red light, he laughed wildly: "To think that a person like you would appear in the world, this is wonderful, because now... I won’t feel lonely."

Saying so, a strong aura burst out of his body, overwhelming the surroundings and dominating everyone’s hearts.

Not only did Shen Shang not feel threatened by Fang Yuan’s information, he even became extremely motivated to fight.

Looking at Shen Shang’s action, Shen Cong Sheng felt a sense of confidence in his heart: "I’m likely not Fang Yuan’s match, but with Ancestor Shen Shang here who is not an ordinary rank eight Gu Immortal, the outcome is still unknown!"

While he was thinking that, a silver light shot out and filled Shen Cong Sheng’s vision.

"Damn it!" The alarms in Shen Cong Sheng’s mind rang wildly, he quickly retreated.

At the next moment, Myriad Year Flying Warship flew over, drawing a beautiful arc of light in the air as it traveled.

If he reacted slower and stayed on the spot, Shen Cong Sheng would have been hit by Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Shen Cong Sheng did not dare to imagine the result of that collision.

This was the advantage of an Immortal Gu House.

Activating immortal killer moves took time, but using an Immortal Gu House to charge and rampage would instantly allow one to unleash an offensive method.

Myriad Year Flying Warship shot off again.

Fang Yuan mobilized Myriad Year Flying Warship and went after Shen Shang, ignoring Shen Cong Sheng completely.

Shen Shang did not dare to test Myriad Year Flying Warship with his bare body either, he was forced into being chased around by Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Shen Cong Sheng and the other Shen clan Gu Immortals wanted to help out but they were helpless when they found out that they could not attack Fang Yuan.

"Damn it!" Shen Cong Sheng gritted his teeth, in this situation, Shen clan’s superiority in numbers could not be used, they could only watch as Fang Yuan fought against Shen Shang.

As for Miao Ming Shen and the rest, they did not dare to participate in such a battle, they were retreating already, hiding at a corner of the battlefield.

"Shen Shang, as an ancestor of Shen clan, all you can do is run around?" Fang Yuan mocked from within Myriad Year Flying Warship.

But even inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, he was still restricted by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s method. Fang Yuan had many subordinates in the sovereign immortal aperture but he could not let them out.

He could only control Myriad Year Flying Warship alone.

If he could let out his subordinates, his numbers would far surpass Shen clan.

"Hmph, arrogant junior!" Shen Shang was angered by Fang Yuan’s words, he stopped in the air and used an immortal killer move.

Shen Shang’s flying attainment was very high, he was able to fly rapidly, capable of catching up to Myriad Year Flying Warship.

In the process of escaping, he had been preparing his killer move, he finally unleashed it now.

Immortal killer move — Night Song!

The melancholic song quickly spread across the battlefield, and the sadness contained in it was like a tidal wave, constantly filling the hearts of the people.

The song had a slow tempo, it focused on the person’s vocals, along with the sounds of drums and zithers, it was traditional yet sad.

Hua Die and Feng Jiang who were at the periphery were already crying.

Miao Ming Shen, Ren Xiu Ping, and the rest all had sad expressions, they could not help it.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, Myriad Year Flying Warship shined with radiance as it helped him to block the power of night song.

But Shen Shang had already achieved his goal.

He activated night song, not to directly deal with the Gu Immortals here, but to create a battlefield environment.

The song enveloped the sea and sky, a trace of twilight mist spread out from the sound waves, permeating the entire field, and after a few breaths, the entire regret crying sea turned pitch black.

The Gu Immortals were trapped in this dark area and could not see anything, all they could hear was the sorrowful night song, their morale and battle intent fell drastically. If this continued, they were going to be defenseless.

Even though Fang Yuan was barely affected, the surrounding darkness meant that he had lost sight of his target as well.

Fang Yuan immediately activated his investigative method, to try to find Shen Shang’s location.

But Shen Shang sensed something as he laughed: "Fang Yuan, you fell for my trap."

Saying so, he activated a killer move — Sensory Injury.

Fang Yuan grunted immediately, he was directly hit by it.

He was shocked as he quickly realized: "This is a human path killer move! No wonder my Myriad Year Flying Warship could not guard against it."

Immortal Gu Houses had both offense and defense, they provided a huge assurance to the Gu Immortal and were very safe.

But this defense was not perfect.

When Fang Yuan designed Myriad Year Flying Warship, he considered most paths but human path was his weakness, he was not a human path grandmaster back then.

By the time he gained the attainment level, Myriad Year Flying Warship was already built, it could not be changed, he could only adjust it a little but there could not be major modifications.

And most importantly, Fang Yuan lacked defensive human path Immortal Gu.

"Shen Shang definitely has a high rank human path Immortal Gu!" After Fang Yuan was hit, he understood a bit of his enemy’s foundation.

In terms of information, Fang Yuan was the one at the losing end.

He did not know much about Shen Shang, but Shen Shang knew a lot about him.

Fang Yuan had trump cards of course, like his rank eight cultivation level, five restriction profound light qi, and others, but he intended to keep these methods as a secret, he did not want to expose them now.

Within this Dragon Whale Paradise, Fang Yuan could not attack Shen Cong Sheng, Miao Ming Shen, and Ren Xiu Ping. If they brought this information out of Dragon

Whale Paradise, it was easy for others to find out.

Thus, Fang Yuan decided to use the methods that he had already exposed before to fight.

Immortal killer move — Daybreak Sword!

Myriad Year Flying Warship’s aura surged as a blinding white light shot out.

From the silver-white light bubbled the water of the River of Time, from which countless strands of silver light emerged.

The silver rays quickly condensed and took shape, transforming into many sharp sword-like blades that shot out violently.

The group of flying swords whistled past, pointing straight at Shen Shang.

Daybreak flying sword was a genuine rank eight killer move, its power was immense, but when Shen Shang saw the group of flying swords, he laughed loudly and did not dodge.

Silver-white flying swords landed on his body.

Shen Shang’s body surged with a mysterious aura, he did not die but was covered in injuries.

But soon, all the injuries over his body disappeared and turned into dao marks.

"Incredible! The records in the clan are indeed correct, Ancestor Shen Shang was most proficient at healing." Shen Cong Sheng saw this scene and exclaimed in his mind.

When Shen Shang was still young, he was a healing physician. When he was a Gu Master, he began to travel Eastern Sea, and because of his powerful and unique healing methods, he soon became famous and well-known. He was also praised for his charitable acts, often helping the poor and needy without charging the slightest consultation fee, he received a warm welcome wherever he went.

Precisely because of his fame and reputation established in his youth, when he fell into the demonic path later and committed all sorts of demonic acts, Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals did not manage to link these crimes to him.

Within Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan squinted his eyes and felt something amiss: "This healing method is another human path killer move!"

Under normal circumstances, the injuries of Gu Immortals would have dense dao marks that were difficult to heal.

But Shen Shang possessed human path methods, he could heal himself with extreme efficiency and yielded quick results.

The group of flying swords continued to shoot out, many of them piercing through his body.

However, these wounds were completely healed almost instantly.

Immortal killer move — Mutual Injuries!

Shen Shang saw that the time was ripe and quickly unleashed the killer move that he had already prepared.

In Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan grunted as hundreds of wounds instantly formed on his body, wounds burst open and blood splattered everywhere.

The wounds were filled with human path dao marks, which then spread rapidly from the wounds, scattering everywhere while being connected as one.

Alarm bells rang in Fang Yuan’s heart!

These human path dao marks were like a hanging rope around his neck, once the numbers increased, it would endanger Fang Yuan’s life.

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan activated his wisdom path killer move first!

In an instant, the thoughts in his mind blossomed like fireworks, all sorts of thoughts collided, converged and fused into each other.

"Shen Shang’s methods are bizarre, he was able to bypass Myriad Year Flying Warship to directly injure me!"

"Such a terrifying killer move... His human path attainment level is definitely more than a level above mine, I’m afraid he’s a human path quasi-supreme grandmaster!"

"Any killer move needs to sense its target first, it can only take effect after it senses its target. How did he sense me?"

"I see. The previous night song killer move was just a trap to lure me into detecting him. He then followed this connection and found his way to me."

Everything in this world was interconnected.

When a fist hits a sand dune, a pit would appear on the sand, while the fist would also be covered in sand and mud.

Previously, Eastern Sea wisdom path Gu Immortal Hua An deduced Fang Yuan, but instead, Fang Yuan followed this connection and deduced Hua An’s situation.

Not long ago, Heavenly Court Gu Immortals moved to blockade the stone lotus island with the river suppression lotus sealing formation, and it was with this layer of suppression and sealing that Fang Yuan was able to follow this connection and destroy the river suppression lotus sealing formation.

Now, Shen Shang did the same thing to sense Fang Yuan, it followed the same logic.

In just half a breath of time, Fang Yuan had already figured it out.

He immediately made his move, making Myriad Year Flying Warship retreat while scattering the daybreak flying swords, while he began to activate a healing killer move on himself.

His reaction was so swift that it left Shen Shang slightly stunned.

At the next moment, this demonic immortal, who was suppressed by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable himself, laughed with a hint of madness: "Fang Yuan! Do you think you’ll be safe if you don’t attack me? Hahaha, watch closely!"

As he said that, he activated a killer move again, his five fingers spread wide and his palm pressed against his chest.

Immortal killer move — Light Injuries!

Shen Shang grunted as he was hit by his own killer move, his expression turned pale.

Within Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan’s body shook as he coughed out a huge mouthful of blood.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Non-conflicting dao marks!

The sovereign immortal body’s greatest advantage was also its greatest weakness, at this moment, it was fully exposed.

All along, Fang Yuan had been consciously avoiding this flaw, but Shen Shang’s killer move was too peculiar, it could not be guarded against.

Who could have thought that night song killer move was just a trap?

Shen Shang was chased by Myriad Year Flying Warship, it was a normal thing to use this killer move to conceal his own traces.

If Fang Yuan did not use an investigative method, Shen Shang would hide within the darkness, he would not be able to do anything.

The human path dao marks on Fang Yuan’s injuries grew rapidly!

The light injuries on Shen Shang’s body also affected Fang Yuan due to the killer move mutual injuries.

And in Fang Yuan’s case, because of non-conflicting dao marks, his light injuries became heavy injuries.

But thankfully, all sorts of healing killer moves had their full effect when used on Fang Yuan as well.

Thus, as he used a powerful healing method on himself, Fang Yuan instantly recovered.

Immortal killer move — Heavy Injuries!

Shen Shang snickered as he started to hurt himself, with greater intensity than before.

Fang Yuan’s body shook intensely, his vision turned dark as his seven orifices started to bleed.

"No! In terms of healing methods, I cannot compare to Shen Shang, I need to find another way." Fang Yuan understood as determination flashed in his eyes.

Immortal killer move — Heavy Injuries!

Immortal killer move — Heavy Injuries!

Immortal killer move — Heavy Injuries!

Shen Shang continued to injury himself as he turned crazy, he laughed loudly as blood spewed out of his mouth.

He heavily injured himself but rapidly healed as well, continuing the cycle.

This was such a strange fighting style, it made all the Gu Immortals dumbfounded.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest had nervous expressions, they were very worried.

Shen clan’s Gu Immortals were very excited.

Even though they could not see Fang Yuan’s condition, his flying swords had disintegrated while Myriad Year Flying Warship continued to back off.

"Ancestor Shen Shang actually forced back Fang Yuan! Impressive." Shen Cong Sheng was very excited, he could also see the rise of Shen clan.

Miao Ming Shen’s eyes shined with bright light as he thought to himself: "Not good, even though Fang Yuan has Myriad Year Flying Warship, Shen Shang’s offensive methods bypass this Immortal Gu House, it counters Fang Yuan. He is just a rank seven after all while Shen Shang is a genuine rank eight Gu Immortal."

Gui Qi Ye and Tu Tou Tuo were very confused: "This Shen Shang was suppressed by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable back then, it is not normal that he could live for so long."

"And the strange thing is, he does not lack Immortal Gu! When Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable suppressed him, didn’t he take away or destroy his Immortal Gu first?"

"Ugh!" Right at this moment, Shen Shang’s wild laughter came to an abrupt stop.

Surprise and confusion appeared on his face.

His connection to Fang Yuan was weakening rapidly.

How did Fang Yuan do it?

How could he break and get around this method so quickly?!

Immortal killer move — Self Cleansing!

Self cleansing could eliminate harmful dao marks on the user’s body, Fang Yuan used this killer move to quickly get rid of the human path dao marks on his body.

The blood red light in Shen Shang’s eyes flickered, he started to mutilate himself even more intensely, causing the human path dao marks on Fang Yuan’s body to grow rapidly.

As long as a single human path dao mark remained on Fang Yuan’s body, he could use this connection to attack Fang Yuan while bypassing Myriad Year Flying Warship.

But right now, Fang Yuan had already stabilized the situation.

Myriad Year Flying Warship gradually flew closer as Fang Yuan’s voice resounded from within: "It is my turn now, Shen Shang."

Twelve Zodiac ancient battle formation!

Bam.

With a loud sound, the huge grey stone giant appeared again.

The giant moved extremely quickly, its two hands grabbed towards Shen Shang as they spread open.

Shen Shang squinted and snorted coldly, he quickly retreated, attempting to pull some distance from the giant.

Under Fang Yuan’s manipulation, the grey stone giant only attempted to capture Shen Shang, it did not attack fiercely.

The grey stone giant had very powerful offensive methods, even though this was not the River of Time, it still had peak rank eight strength.

But he was currently using capture as the objective instead of hurting Shen Shang, Shen Shang had no choice but to dodge.

The battle went into a deadlock.

Shen Shang dodged the Twelve Zodiac battle formation while using killer moves to mutilate himself.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan manipulated Myriad Year Flying Warship as he healed himself, using self cleansing to get rid of harmful human path dao marks.

Myriad Year Flying Warship and the grey stone giant worked together, chasing after Shen Shang and obstructing him.

Shen Shang was already having some trouble dodging Myriad Year Flying Warship, with the addition of the grey stone giant, he fell into a disadvantage.

Every time he was about to get caught, Shen Shang would emit a loud scream that caused sound waves to burst out, opening a path for him.

Both sides continued to fight, rampaging in the battlefield, it implicated Miao Ming Shen’s group, as well as the Shen clan immortals.

Hua Die and Feng Jiang were first to give up, they were transported away from the battlefield.

Followed by Tong Hua, Tu Tou Tuo, Gui Qi Ye and the rest.

After that were Shen clan’s immortals, Miao Ming Shen, and Ren Xiu Ping.

Eventually, only Shen Cong Sheng was left in the battlefield, not everyone was qualified to watch a battle between rank eights after all.

Shen Cong Sheng’s expression became increasingly dark.

The battle was tilting in Fang Yuan’s favor, Shen Shang was getting into a difficult spot while Fang Yuan was having an easier time now.

"This lad has deep wisdom path attainment, he has countless thoughts in his mind, he can multitask easily. In this aspect, I am at the losing end." Shen Shang gritted his teeth, at this point in the battle, he felt like he had fallen into a swamp, the more he struggled, the deeper he sank.

The battle had already left his control!

Suddenly, Fang Yuan walked out of the cabin, arriving at the bow of the ship.

He pointed at Shen Shang as a time path killer move was unleashed.

Shen Shang was caught off guard, he could not dodge, after getting hit by this move, his movement slowed, the rate of time on him had been halved.

The grey stone giant used this chance to grab Shen Shang, it squeezed.

Shen Shang laughed loudly, his hair was messy and his eyes were bloodshot, he had no fear: "Go ahead and kill me!"

Fang Yuan snorted, he ordered the grey stone giant, it gripped to form a cage of ten fingers, imprisoning Shen Shang and preventing him from moving.

After understanding Shen Shang’s offensive methods, Fang Yuan easily countered it. As long as he was captured and not killed, he could not do anything to harm Fang Yuan.

Shen Shang struggled, he screamed wildly but could not escape.

Shen Cong Sheng saw that the situation was bad, he wanted to help but was quickly faced with backlash, he could not get away from Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s restrictions.

"I finally succeeded." Fang Yuan let out a breath of air.

Shen Shang lived up to his reputation, this person who was suppressed by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable personally really had some skills.

His methods were peculiar and strange, they were hard to guard against, Fang Yuan had fallen for them earlier.

Of course, Fang Yuan still controlled the situation without wasting many of his hidden trump cards.

In the worst case, Fang Yuan could return to the starting island, with this assurance, he could not lose to begin with.

"Ahhhh...." Shen Shang shouted loudly, his face was distorted.

Fang Yuan’s brows slowly started to furrow.

Shen Shang’s current situation was quite strange, he constantly laughed and struggled madly without using any immortal killer moves.

At the next moment, his bloodshot eyes turned pitch black, the black color spread until it filled his eyes.

With a light sound, a lump of black fire started to burn on his body.

Within the fire, Shen Shang’s body shook like he was having a spasm, he drooled uncontrollably as he waved his limbs around, he growled like a wild beast that was out of control.

The black fire on Shen Shang’s body was not eye-catching, but once it spread to the grey stone giant’s hands, the giant screamed in pain as it got burned by the fire.

After both hands got into contact with the black fire, they started to melt, completely defenseless against this strange black fire.

Fang Yuan’s gaze turned colder, the peculiarity and strength of this black fire was far beyond his imagination.

Seeing that the situation was bad, Fang Yuan quickly deactivated the ancient battle formation.

At the next moment, the grey stone giant vanished while twelve immemorial year beasts appeared in the sky.

Among them, two immemorial year beasts contacted the black fire and lost their reasoning, they rolled around in the sky, growling in pain as they struggled intensely.

Thankfully, the other ten immemorial year beasts acted like this was their biggest threat, after regaining freedom, they quickly fled from the black fire as far as they could.

Fang Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng frowned deeply with solemn expressions.

This black fire was too strange, the two of them could not tell what path this black fire belonged to!

At the same time, they felt an extreme feeling of threat, their skulls felt numb as they sensed this danger.

The black fire was like the enemy of all lifeforms!

The two immemorial year beasts were already covered in the fire, they growled as they fell to the ground.

Fang Yuan had a strong premonition, if these two immemorial year beasts fell into the seawater, the black fire would cause an even greater tragedy.

But he did not do anything, he went into Myriad Year Flying Warship and retreated.

Shen Shang who had lost the restriction of the grey stone giant floated in the air and laughed wildly like a lunatic.

Shen Cong Sheng called him several times but it went unheard. Seeing this strange situation, Shen Cong Sheng also wisely chose to retreat.

Right when those two immemorial year beasts were about to enter the water, a golden-white pillar of light shot out from the underwater formation, pushing these two immemorial year beasts up into the sky.

The underwater formation that had only forty percent left burst out with unprecedented power as it operated at full force!

The golden-white light expanded as it covered Shen Shang as well.

The black fire continued to burn Shen Shang and the two immemorial year beasts but the white-gold light pillar immobilized them on the spot.

Such a change caused Shen Cong Sheng to be stunned.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan made his move, daybreak flying swords flew out and pierced the white-gold light pillar, stabbing into Shen Shang.

"Stop it!" Watching that his ancestor was attacked by Fang Yuan, Shen Cong Sheng shouted anxiously.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly as he activated his flying swords with even greater intensity.

This odd black fire was very harmful, seeing that the underwater formation had taken action to stop it from even entering the sea, it was obvious.

Shen Cong Sheng could only watch helplessly.

Fang Yuan willed again as his flying swords split into two groups, the other group went to attack his immemorial year beasts.

Due to the attack of the daybreak flying swords, the black fire still burned but it had weakened by a very slight amount.

Daybreak sword was a rank eight killer move, yet it nearly had no effect!

Fang Yuan continued to attack, but the black fire suddenly changed, transforming into lumps of silver-white mist.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1909 Shen Cong Sheng“s Immortal Materials

"This black fire can still transform?" Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light, he shook his head immediately after, the silver-white mist still had a strange aura, it did not belong to any path .

The silver-white mist did not seem to be fundamentally different from the black fire, and while enveloped by it, Shen Shang was still going crazy, the two immemorial year beasts were also continuing to howl.

When Fang Yuan fired his daybreak flying swords again, he discovered that the power of the daybreak flying swords actually boosted the silver-white mist, causing the latter to increase in size.

Suspicious, Fang Yuan immediately changed his mind and went on a furious rampage with wind blades instead.

The silver-white mist was weakened again, but the rate of decline was still very small.

After the attack lasted for a while, the silver-white mist suddenly turned into three large whirlwinds, covering Shen Shang and the two immemorial year beasts.

Fang Yuan’s wind blades shot into the whirlwind and began to boost the latter’s power again.

Fang Yuan started to experiment and wisely began to swap his tactics.

Other Gu Immortals might have to stop but Fang Yuan cultivated all paths, he had an astonishing number of Immortal Gu at his disposal, he also had attainment level in many paths, he was even more skilled at transitioning to different paths.

Under Fang Yuan’s attack, the strange black fire kept transforming and getting smaller and smaller.

The two immemorial year beasts were the first to die without their corpses left, Fang Yuan was soon left with only Shen Shang as his target.

"Wait, wait! Fang Yuan, I have a huge amount of wealth to gift to you." Shen Cong Sheng could no longer watch this continue, he called out loudly.

To his joy, Fang Yuan actually stopped.

Fang Yuan looked at Shen Cong Sheng and smiled: "Do you want me to let your clan’s ancestor go? You should know that this is a demonic immortal, the very demonic immortal that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable suppressed personally in the past. You’ve seen his current state, crazy as a beast, delirious, and consistent with what is described on the Merit Obelisk. You still want to save him?"

Shen Cong Sheng looked deeply at the imprisoned Shen Shang in the pillar of light and made up his mind: "I believe this madness is only temporary. It would be too much of a coincidence if Ancestor Shen Shang happened to fall into permanent madness right when I was about to rescue him, right?"

"And what price can you pay for that?" Fang Yuan asked.

"How about you take a look at this?" Shen Cong Sheng pulled out an immortal material.

It was a bag.

The bag was not large and seemed to be the size of a grown man’s fist. However, the surface of the bag was covered with a pattern that seemed like gems or blue swirls.

If one stared closely, one would notice that these sapphire-like swirls were constantly rotating.

But when one came back to one’s senses, these lines were still lines, as if the scene had just been an illusion.

Fang Yuan, however, raised his eyebrows and lightly smiled: "So it’s the treasure blue beaver’s stomach pouch."

Treasure blue beaver was an immemorial desolate beast, often traveling between Eastern Sea and immemorial blue heaven. Now that immemorial blue heaven had shattered, the treasure blue beaver also went extinct. In history, the Gu Immortal who slaughtered the most treasure blue beavers was Old Immortal Kong Jue.

Old Immortal Kong Jue was one of the three supreme grandmasters of refinement path, comparable to Long Hair Ancestor. The treasure blue beaver that he went after and paid attention to was naturally extraordinary.

Not to mention, this stomach pouch alone was half an immortal aperture, it contained space path and water path dao marks, there was a whole small world inside of it, which could hide countless treasures. A Gu Immortal could obtain it and merge it into his or her immortal aperture, increasing the size of their grotto-heaven.

Because of this characteristic, the treasure blue beaver had been hunted down and killed extensively by Gu Immortals. It was no surprise that treasure blue beavers went extinct.

The stomach pouch of the treasure blue beaver could be said to be the most valuable thing in its body. And in today’s world where treasure blue beavers were extinct, the value of this stomach pouch was even higher than normal!

In short, this was an extremely rare and highly valuable treasure.

Fang Yuan reached out his hand and directly took this stomach pouch from Shen Cong Sheng’s hands.

The stomach pouch was light and the surface was very slippery.

Fang Yuan inspected it and found that nothing was tampered, so he put it into his immortal aperture in front of Shen Cong Sheng without any concern.

Next, he smiled: "Anything else?"

Shen Cong Sheng took a deep breath and pulled out a long black rod with much difficulty: "And this one too, catch it."

He gathered strength and threw the black rod at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan stretched out his arm to catch it, the rod was very heavy, but he also had a lot of strength path dao marks on him, it was naturally easy.

Unlike Shen Cong Sheng who was a pure sound path Gu Immortal.

This black rod was taller than Fang Yuan, it had the thickness of a goose egg, the surface was also very rough, the weight was not light, as if it was a crude iron tool.

However, Fang Yuan could feel a dense aura of life from it.

This was an ancient desolate plant!

But it had no roots, no branches, nor leaves, there was only the trunk.

At the top of the trunk, there were countless star marks, some of them were five-edged, some two-edged, compactly arranged, all of them were emitting pale starlight.

"Falling star rod tree." Fang Yuan spoke.

Shen Cong Sheng nodded his head and exclaimed: "Fang Yuan, your extensive knowledge is to be admired."

The growth conditions of this tree were still a mystery as it had been extraordinarily rare and low in quantity since ancient times.

It had the unique trait of constantly attracting stars, falling into the trunk of the tree and turning into a single star mark. That was why it was called falling star.

According to rumors, one of the motives that Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had when he traveled the world alone was to collect this tree.

The value of the falling star rod tree did not just lie in itself.

By planting it in the immortal aperture, the Gu Immortal could use it to create an entire system of orbiting stars. It was a unique ecology that brought incremental gains every year, and the total amount of gains over time, day after day, year after year, was almost impossible to estimate.

Like the treasure blue beaver’s stomach pouch, Fang Yuan placed the falling star rod tree into the immortal aperture once again, the natural demeanor that he had almost gave Shen Cong Sheng the illusion that this rare immemorial desolate plant belonged to Fang Yuan in the first place!

"What else?" Fang Yuan smiled: "These alone can’t exchange for a rank eight great expert."

Shen Cong Sheng gritted his teeth and said: "I’m sure this immortal material will be able to satisfy you."

This time, he took out a lump of water.

The water was constrained in a ball, constantly creating waves. The waves were not just on the surface of the water, but even within the water, it was rising endlessly.

Although there were countless waves, they were uncluttered.

The water waves rose and fell in unison, advancing at one moment and retreating at the next, it could be called an orderly advance and retreat.

When Fang Yuan saw this, his eyes shined with bright light and he said: "Advancing and retreating tidal water."

Indeed, this was one of the three great waters of the world, advancing and retreating tidal water.

It was a rank nine immortal material!

This point alone made it far more valuable than the treasure blue beaver stomach pouch and the falling star rod tree combined.

Not to mention that it had many wonderful uses.

"I have a total of twelve portions of the advancing and retreating tidal water here, I can give them all to you." Shen Cong Sheng gave his offer.

Fang Yuan could not help but sigh lightly: "Shen clan is worthy of being a super force of Eastern Sea, you really have impressive assets."

Shen Cong Sheng smiled: "We are flattered."

But at the next moment, Fang Yuan said: "But that’s not enough."

"It’s not enough?" Shen Cong Sheng’s pupils shrank as he showed an awkward expression.

Fang Yuan sneered and began to use his daybreak swords again, stabbing Shen Shang one sword at a time.

Shen Shang was still insane and kept on growling.

Shen Cong Sheng gnashed his teeth as he watched his ancestor being attacked: "My ancestor is insane now, he is not the same as an intact rank eight Gu Immortal. We both know that!"

"But as you said before, there should still be times when he doesn’t go crazy, shouldn’t there?" Fang Yuan was still sneering.

"Fang Yuan!" Shen Cong Sheng said in a low voice.

"What?" Fang Yuan raised his hand, a large number of daybreak flying swords shot towards Shen Shang.

Shen Cong Sheng almost gritted his teeth till they shattered: "Alright, what else do you want, Immortal Gu?"

"Of course I won’t be that greedy." Fang Yuan shook his head and said with ease: "I want immortal materials, but not like the three that you gave me. They are all too highly ranked, I need a large number of rank six and seven immortal materials, the larger the variety and quantity, the better it will be."

"Shen clan is one of the super forces of Eastern Sea, you own seven large sea areas and thousands of middle and small sea areas, you’ll even have two rank eight existences in the future. This little request should not be hard, right?"

"Of course... not." Shen Cong Sheng’s expression was heavy: "But what will our Shen clan get? A crazy rank eight? He is a hidden threat himself. And it’s a hidden threat that can even force the merciful Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable to personally take action to eliminate!"

Shen Cong Sheng was definitely a qualified leader.

When it came to the clan’s interests, he was logical to the point of being almost emotionless.

Undeniably, Shen Shang’s insanity had caused his value to plummet immensely. And the terrifying hidden danger he was carrying further reduced this value to almost a negative number.

Shen clan wanted as many rank eights as they could. But they did not want a crazy rank eight without any reasoning!

A rank eight without sanity was just a burden, unable to differentiate enemy and friend, they were a laughing stock for others, and would even bring calamity to Shen clan because of their reckless killing.

Shen Cong Sheng saw the hidden threat within Shen Shang and kept the worry in his heart. He also did not have the slightest confidence that he would be able to solve this problem.

Therefore, when he took out these three valuable resources in exchange for Shen Shang, he showed great sincerity.

Fang Yuan laughed and pointed his finger at Shen Shang: "He is your ancestor, the person you went to great lengths to save."

At this point, he paused: "Of course, this is by no means the only thing you will get. You’ll also gain... my friendship."

"Oh?" Shen Cong Sheng showed a look of sudden interest: "How so?"

"In today’s world, with the earth veins frequently shifting and the five regions fusing as one, it’s bound to be a chaotic world. Although Shen clan is in Eastern Sea, it is by no means a paradise. Eastern Sea has the most resources and wealth that lure people’s greed, even when the five regional walls exist, there is a steady stream of Gu Immortals coming here, what do you think will happen in the future?"

Fang Yuan spoke casually: "In this situation, what is the use of the differentiating righteous path and demonic path? If Shen clan and I join forces, it will be a strong partnership. Of course, we can keep this partnership hidden as much as we want. Your esteemed clan is extremely affluent, while I am free to do anything I want without burden."

"Central Continent is far more powerful than the other four regions, so if they attack Eastern Sea in the future, will Shen clan want to surrender or remain self-reliant? Even if you surrender, will all the super forces in Eastern Sea surrender? This is why, there is never a shortage of enemies, but allies like me are extremely rare to come across."

"The fact that you and I have met here is truly a great opportunity. If we continue to fight, it will only lead to a lose-lose situation. But if we help each other, it will be a win-win situation. Currently, we are dealing with the Paradise Earth true inheritance and Shen Shang, in the future, we will cooperate to deal with Central Continent and manipulate the entire state of the world!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1910 Everyone“s Immortal Materials

Fang Yuan’s words made Shen Cong Sheng go silent.

The sea breeze ruffled his clothes as he hovered in the air, deep in thought.

Fang Yuan stopped attacking with his daybreak swords and allowed him to ponder quietly.

The future of the five regions chaotic war had already been foreseen by all the major forces. Shen clan was a super force in Eastern Sea, but in such a chaotic situation, it was also like a rocky boat in a stormy sea.

Shen Cong Sheng was not stupid, other leaders of their respective forces also had great foresight, they were considering what direction they should take in the future when chaos ensues.

This was a big change, and if one was not careful, the tide of the great era would drown all those who did not plan well ahead of the storm!

This certainly included super forces.

Throughout history, even in relatively peaceful times, countless super forces had disappeared. Not to mention the great era when a venerable would appear, almost all of the existing order would be overturned, and in the midst of this, countless super forces would be destroyed and created, the situation of the five regions would become completely altered beyond recognition.

How should one attempt to live in such an era?

This was something that every Gu Immortal with foresight was wondering about.

Should they cooperate and join forces with Fang Yuan?

This was the question Shen Cong Sheng had to think about now.

In terms of qualifications, Fang Yuan was perfectly qualified to work with Shen clan, in fact, Shen Cong Sheng was still a little worried that Shen clan was the unqualified party. Because he himself was not a match for Fang Yuan.

But if he rescued Shen Shang and resolved the hidden threat in his body, along with Shen clan’s Immortal Gu House... They would have the foundation to cooperate with Fang Yuan.

Shen Cong Sheng knew that Shen clan needed external allies like Fang Yuan.

It might be unlikely in times of peace, but in the future, when the five regions chaotic war starts, there would be a great chance that Shen clan would be in danger and at the point of extermination.

At this time... Fang Yuan would certainly be unreliable!

It would be a blessing if he did not gang up on Shen clan in the first place.

Shen Cong Sheng knew very well about Fang Yuan’s demonic nature.

But what about the time when Shen clan needs to deal with an equivalent super force? For example, Xie clan, Cai clan, Hua clan, Tang clan, and even Song clan...

Shen clan was situated near the center of Eastern Sea, surrounded by many super forces, it was as if they were caught in a siege.

Without seeking a direction to break out and grow while they could, during the five regions chaotic war, they would end up as fodder for other powerful enemies.

Under such circumstances, if Shen clan could pay a large sum of resources in exchange for powerful help like Fang Yuan, why should they hesitate?

Fang Yuan possessed a rank eight Immortal Gu House, multiple venerable inheritances, and was able to repeatedly trample Heavenly Court underfoot. Such a powerful battle power was what Shen clan needed, it was something every super force desired.

If they did not cooperate with Fang Yuan now, what would they do if he worked with their enemies in the future?

In the current situation, Heavenly Court had to repair fate Gu, Fang Yuan wanted to deal with Heavenly Court, he needed a large amount of low ranked immortal materials, this was a great chance to cooperate with him!

Just like Fang Yuan said, this was a chance for both Shen clan and himself.

Both sides had their own needs.

Of course there were still many concerns, working with a demon like Fang Yuan was indeed very risky.

For example, if he goes back on his word in the future, he would still be free to do as he pleased, nobody including Heavenly Court could do anything about it, what could Shen clan possibly do with him?

Moreover, it is impossible to make an alliance agreement here, both sides lacked a basis for trust.

But in reality, even if there was an agreement, could they not break it themselves?

What if Fang Yuan goes back on his word in the future?

As long as they cooperated and achieved mutual benefits, why would Fang Yuan decide to turn on them?

Risk was definitely present, but how could anything in the world contain no risk?

Risk was secondary, profit was the main thing.

Shen Cong Sheng would not want anything that was high risk with low returns. But when the risk was great and the reward was also great, Shen Cong Sheng would never let it go!

The thing that Shen Cong Sheng appreciated the most was not Fang Yuan’s battle strength, but his decision to share the mission with Miao Ming Shen, and even with himself.

From this, Shen Cong Sheng could tell that Fang Yuan was different from ordinary demonic path Gu Immortals! He was rational, he had the ability to think and act like the righteous path.

Pondering for a long time, Shen Cong Sheng nodded slowly with a solemn expression: "This is a chance, for both you and me. Hehehe, fine, why not take a gamble? In the future, if one remains stagnant, they will fall off. If Ancestor Shen Shang regains his senses, I will definitely try to persuade him to stop attacking you."

"These are all the low ranked immortal materials that I currently have, please accept them." Shen Cong Sheng displayed his sincerity once again.

Fang Yuan kept them all into his immortal aperture, he had stopped using daybreak sword, he slowly retreated: "Good! I’m going down to retrieve the underwater formation."

Retrieving the underwater formation was a lot of work for Fang Yuan, but in the end, he succeeded.

Fang Yuan stabbed and injured Shen Shang, although the white-gold pillar of light did not stop it, the daybreak swords still caused damage to the pillar, thus damaging the underwater formation.

The underwater formation was already only forty percent left, Shen Shang had broken out of it, which caused a huge opening, in Fang Yuan’s eyes, it was full of cracks that he could target.

If he continued to fight, before Shen Shang dies, the underwater formation would probably collapse first.

Once it collapses, it was very likely to implicate the Immortal Gu inside. Fang Yuan could not control which Immortal Gu would be injured or destroyed, but if regret Gu gets destroyed, Fang Yuan’s plans would be severely thwarted.

This was also one of the reasons why Fang Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng had joined forces.

The formation was taken away by Fang Yuan, the white-gold pillar that extended towards the sky dissipated, while Shen Shang regained his freedom.

"Ancestor." Shen Cong Sheng shouted while retreating.

Fang Yuan manipulated Myriad Year Flying Warship and cautiously retreated.

Shen Shang was still shrieking, fallen into a state of insanity, there was not the slightest sign of awakening.

"Shen Cong Sheng, do you need me to lend a hand?" Fang Yuan asked.

"No need." Shen Cong Sheng stared at Shen Cong Sheng, unable to figure out what state or condition he was in, there was nothing he could do: "We’d better wait until ancestor awakens on his own."

"Fine." Fang Yuan said as he controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship, moving further away.

Just at this moment, Shen Shang suddenly moved, his body was like an arrow, flying away.

"Ancestor!" Shen Cong Sheng cried out and chased after him.

Fang Yuan likewise maneuvered Myriad Year Flying Warship to chase after him.

But Shen Shang was extremely fast, Myriad Year Flying Warship was only a little bit faster.

Fang Yuan did not dare to use Myriad Year Flying Warship to directly stop Shen Shang. Because of this, Shen Shang managed to fly out of regret crying sea.

Shen Cong Sheng and Fang Yuan wanted to continue their pursuit, but they were stopped by an invisible barrier.

"Damn it!" Shen Cong Sheng’s face was livid, he almost cursed out loud.

This was the method of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, which he had already experienced before, it prevented the foreign Gu Immortals from running around, so every mission had a certain limitation on where they could go.

This constraint did not take effect on Shen Shang, but it obstructed Fang Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng.

The two of them could only watch as Shen Shang flew away in a blur, eventually turning into a small black dot in the sky.

"It looks like he won’t come back." Fang Yuan sighed.

Shen Cong Sheng looked stiff and watched for a long time before finally regaining his usual demeanor. He turned to Fang Yuan and forced a smile: "In that case, let’s go back first."

Fang Yuan consoled, "Brother Shen, there is no need to be overly concerned, although your ancestor escaped, he cannot leave Dragon Whale Paradise. If he comes to his senses, he will definitely try to contact you by all means. If he is still insane, that would be even easier for us. The Merit Obelisk will not watch him endanger the environment and people, there will surely be more missions to come, just like this one, to kill your Ancestor Shen Shang."

Fang Yuan’s words were reasonable, Shen Cong Sheng listened and nodded repeatedly, the look on his face eased a little.

Under the Merit Obelisk, the atmosphere was tense and heavy.

Two groups of people were distinctly separated.

One group consisted of Miao Ming Shen, Zeng Luo Zi, Tu Tou Tuo, and the rest.

The other group consisted of the Shen clan members, with Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua around.

"I wonder what’s going on in regret crying sea..."

"Yeah, that is Fang Yuan after all. This demon has defeated Heavenly Court time and again, he is really scary."

"My clan has two rank eight Gu Immortals that can help out each other. Especially with Ancestor Shen Shang here, Fang Yuan isn’t anything to fear."

"Don’t forget, the reason why Fang Yuan was able to defeat Heavenly Court was because they were in the River of Time."

"But our first supreme elder is also restricted by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, so he can’t fight Fang Yuan anyway."

"Sigh..."

The Shen clan Gu Immortals whispered, while Miao Ming Shen’s group remained silent.

They were eager to teleport back and see how the battle progressed, but they were afraid that as soon as they teleported over, they would be affected by the horrific aftermath of the battle, and they might get caught up in it and die a terrible death.

No one was willing to take a foolish risk, so they were all here anxiously waiting for the results of the battle.

Two white lights flashed as Fang Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng appeared together.

"They’re back!"

"Why don’t we see Ancestor Shen Shang?"

"Fang Yuan is still alive, damn it!"

The immortals’ thoughts were shaking as their expressions changed.

"Hehehe, Fang Yuan, thanks to this information of yours, it will save me a lot of time and effort." Shen Cong Sheng exclaimed.

Fang Yuan smiled and waved his hand: "This is my sincerity. As I said, it will be a win-win situation if you and I cooperate."

The group of immortals were shocked again and became dumbfounded.

What the heck was this!

You two were just fighting each other earlier! Why were you suddenly on good terms?

What actually happened?

Where was Ancestor Shen Shang?

The Gu Immortals could not help but feel startled and amazed.

Shen Cong Sheng laughed: "I have reached an agreement with Fang Yuan to cooperate for now. Take out all the immortal materials you have on you."

"What?" The Shen clan Gu Immortals were dumbfounded.

Shen Cong Sheng nodded his head and emphasized: "This is the agreement we made, transfer all your rank six and seven immortal materials to him now."

"First supreme elder, this..." The immortals looked at each other.

Shen Cong Sheng showed a solemn expression and said in a deep voice: "This is an order!"

The Shen clan Gu Immortals were speechless.

What has happened?!

Oh great first supreme elder, what in the world are you thinking?

They were simply wondering if the first supreme elder in front of them had been controlled by Fang Yuan!

The Shen clan Gu Immortals dawdled before finally taking out their respective immortal materials and handed them over to Fang Yuan on the spot.

Fang Yuan smiled and received them one by one.

He knew that the Shen clan Gu Immortals would definitely not hand over all the immortal materials, but it did not matter, the materials that Fang Yuan needed for his refinement had been mostly obtained already.

After Shen clan’s Gu Immortals had finished handing them over, Shen Cong Sheng looked at Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua.

"Us too?" Ren Xiu Ping could not believe it as his expression turned livid.

Shen Cong Sheng’s gaze was cold as he nodded: "Shen clan will reward you for this."

Ren Xiu Ping almost cursed out loud.

Your Shen clan is cooperating with Fang Yuan, what does that have to do with me?!

I came to join your force but you treated me like this. This is just too...

Shen Cong Sheng saw Ren Xiu Ping’s hesitation and smiled slightly: "Do you still not believe in me, even if you don’t trust me, my Shen clan’s credibility is not worth your trust?"

"Lord, please forgive me, of course I believe you. It was just that I could not react in time." Ren Xiu Ping laughed and endured the pain while transferring most of his immortal materials to Fang Yuan.

Tong Hua had an extremely ugly expression but she had no choice but to follow him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Seeing that Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua were not spared as they handed their immortal materials to Fang Yuan, Miao Ming Shen and the rest became worried.

If Fang Yuan extorted them too, what would they do?

Reject him?

That was likely impossible.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest could not stay in Dragon Whale Paradise forever, they needed to return to Eastern Sea.

Even though it was unreasonable for Fang Yuan to take immortal materials from them, it was basically extortion, but for the sake of their future, Miao Ming Shen and the rest still had to lower their heads.

In this world, strength was the major deciding factor, followed by logic.

Just as Miao Ming Shen and the rest prepared themselves mentally, Fang Yuan ignored them as he looked towards the Merit Obelisk.

Shen Cong Sheng had also seemingly forgotten about Miao Ming Shen’s group.

Only Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua looked towards Miao Ming Shen’s group, the former had deep hatred while the latter had a complex emotion.

Fang Yuan looked at the Merit Obelisk.

Undeniably, he had completely failed in this mission to exterminate the demonic immortal Shen Shang.

This mission had vanished on the Merit Obelisk, not only that, Fang Yuan even found that a lot of merit points got deducted.

The others were not spared, they had all lost their merit points too.

"First supreme elder, your merit points!" Shen clan’s Gu Immortal shouted.

Shen Cong Sheng had an ashen and solemn expression.

He had lost the most merit points, even surpassing Fang Yuan’s losses.

Even though Fang Yuan fell from his first place position, he still had single digit merit points. Meanwhile, Shen Cong Sheng had negative merit points!

This situation surprised Fang Yuan as well. After all, this did not happen in his previous life.

"Brother Shen, it seems that the Merit Obelisk punished you the most because you attacked the underwater formation and released Shen Shang. Meanwhile, I did not work properly and even took away the underwater formation, that’s why I lost merit points as well." Fang Yuan analyzed.

Shen Cong Sheng’s expression changed, he showed some anxiety: "I just received information from the Merit Obelisk, I need to get a positive amount of merit points in ten days. Otherwise, I will be kicked out of the Dragon Whale Paradise, I will not be allowed to enter again."

Fang Yuan had a thought, with his wisdom path attainment, he quickly analyzed the hidden information behind this.

"It seems that Dragon Whale Paradise can be explored repeatedly. We can still return? But how do we find it?"

The biggest problem was finding Dragon Whale Paradise’s location in time.

Fang Yuan took a glance at Miao Ming Shen.

"Miao Ming Shen is able to sense the blue dragon whale and enter it, is this the qualification needed?"

Long ago, Fang Yuan had made some deductions.

Miao Ming Shen’s ability to sense the blue dragon whale was very mysterious, Fang Yuan could not tell what it was.

With Fang Yuan’s knowledge and attainment level in many paths, he could tell that even though Miao Ming Shen cultivated space path, the method he used was not.

This was very strange.

Precisely because it was too strange, Fang Yuan was wary and did not capture Miao Ming Shen to interrogate him about this method.

All sorts of clues pointed out that this method was not his own creation but originated from Dragon Whale Paradise itself, it came from the Merit Obelisk.

Shen Cong Sheng looked at his merit points, he frowned that the glaring number, he walked towards the Merit Obelisk: "Fang Yuan, I don’t have much time, I can’t talk anymore."

Fang Yuan nodded: "Go ahead, Brother Shen. If you need help, leave an information path Gu worm at the obelisk and I will definitely help."

Seeing the two being so friendly, the immortals behind them had weird expressions.

Shen Cong Sheng was a righteous path leader, while Fang Yuan was a publicly recognized demon in the five regions, was it okay for the two of them to have such a good relationship?

Shen Cong Sheng heard Fang Yuan’s words and smiled at him.

He believed Fang Yuan’s sincerity, but he believed that the price to get Fang Yuan’s help would be extremely high.

Thus, if he could resolve the problem, he would rather do it himself.

Shen Cong Sheng quickly accepted a mid-sized mission and left.

In Shen Cong Sheng’s case, this type of mission was the most efficient in earning merit points.

Fang Yuan was the second to walk to the Merit Obelisk.

He continued to choose a large sized mission.

"Hmm? A large sized mission to reclaim Immortal Gu..." At the next moment, he found a brand new mission on the Merit Obelisk.

This mission requested him to take back Immortal Gu, they were the ones that he took after dismantling the underwater formation.

Fang Yuan looked at the content of this mission closely.

This mission had a lot of details, it described the amount that each Immortal Gu was worth in points.

Fang Yuan counted the numbers, it was exactly what he had gained.

Next, he browsed through it, he found that this mission was basically created for him personally by the Merit Obelisk.

The truth was, earlier when Fang Yuan dismantled the formation, he had not checked through these Immortal Gu. Now with this mission, he could learn about their details without having to experiment personally.

From this, Fang Yuan learned that he gained three rank eight Immortal Gu, rank seven were in the highest quantity, and a good number of rank six Immortal Gu.

Each Immortal Gu had a huge resale value, even the lowest rank six Immortal Gu was worth ten thousand merit points.

The immortals behind him went into waves of gasps.

They also saw the mission on the Merit Obelisk.

At once, all of them had varying expressions, they were filled with envy and jealous that could not be concealed.

With this exchange rate, Fang Yuan only needed to contribute one rank six Immortal Gu to get at least ten thousand merit points. This was a huge amount, much more than what Fang Yuan had accumulated earlier!

It was absurd.

Earlier when manipulating the refinement path formation, they put in effort. After the battle started, they avoided the aftermath of their conflict and expended a lot of immortal essences while feeling great fear.

This mission to kill the demonic immortal failed, they did not gain anything.

But look at Fang Yuan!

He gained a huge number of Immortal Gu, if he exchanged them for merit points, the sum would be unthinkable.

Comparison created jealousy.

These immortals felt horrible, they were indignant and even angry but were not brave enough to act brazenly in front of the great demon Fang Yuan.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest were still fine, but Shen clan’s Gu Immortals, Ren Xiu Ping, and Tong Hua felt even worse!

After all, the other party had only lost immortal essence.

But they had even lost most of their immortal materials.

This situation was too bizarre!

Not only were there no gains, they even had to expend their own resources, this was truly a terrible feeling.

Fang Yuan did not want to give up a single Immortal Gu.

Immortal Gu were unique, such opportunities seldom knock twice.

If he needed merit points, he could simply earn them, why would he give up on his precious Immortal Gu for such petty gains.

Most of these Immortal Gu were earth path, for ordinary Gu Immortals, they would definitely sell those that were not their own path, Immortal Gu required resources to feed after all.

But Fang Yuan was different.

He cultivated all paths, earth path suited him well. Furthermore, he recently gained a lot in earth path attainment level, he wondered, should he use these Immortal Gu to form a third Immortal Gu House?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Earlier, Fang Yuan already had a grand plan to build three Immortal Gu Houses.

Right now, he had already created Myriad Year Flying Warship and Cooking Luck Pot, the final Immortal Gu House was not created yet.

Even though he obtained Divine Bean Palace and Dragon Palace during this period of time, these Immortal Gu Houses were used by his clones, they were necessary for his plans in the future, he could not use them personally to fight enemies.

And most importantly, Divine Bean Palace and Dragon Palace were not suited for his needs.

In Fang Yuan’s plan, he needed an Immortal Gu House that focused on defense.

Myriad Year Flying Warship specialized in speed, it made up for Fang Yuan’s weakness in movement, it was also crucial for fighting inside the River of Time.

Cooking Luck Pot was designed before Qin Ding Ling appeared, Fang Yuan planned to use it to suppress Heavenly Court’s weaker luck, to expand his own advantage.

The final third Immortal Gu House was meant for defense and healing. During the battle of fate Gu, there would definitely be intense fights and little time for recovery. Fang Yuan needed a powerful defensive Immortal Gu House in the battlefield so that he could gain precious time to heal himself.

This Immortal Gu House had to be able to resist even venerable methods to an extent!

"Earth path is sturdy, it excels in defense to begin with. I will use these earth path Immortal Gu to create my third Immortal Gu House, that will be perfect." Fang Yuan thought about it and made up his mind.

Fang Yuan had no idea now that clone Wu Shuai already obtained a method to create an earth path Immortal Gu House from his dream realm exploration.

This Immortal Gu House was called Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, it suited his requirements.

However, Fang Yuan and his clones had shared attainment but not linked memories, they needed to communicate to gain each other’s memories.

Eventually, Fang Yuan accepted a large sized mission to combine two sea areas.

"Who wants to come with me?" Fang Yuan did not rush, he turned around and asked.

The immortals looked at each other.

"Me." Miao Ming Shen was the first to react and step forward.

Behind him, Gui Qi Ye and the rest also followed.

"What about you?" Fang Yuan looked at the Shen clan Gu Immortals.

The Shen clan Gu Immortals were dumbfounded.

They had just turned on Fang Yuan earlier, they could not adjust their mindsets so quickly in this period of time.

Shen clan's Gu Immortals were not like Miao Ming Shen's group, the latter had experienced the benefits of working with Fang Yuan. In their first cooperation with Fang Yuan, it ended up as a failure.

Shen Xiao shook his head: "Thank you for the offer lord, we would like to look around first."

Shen Xiao rejected Fang Yuan politely, the other Shen clan Gu Immortal did not object to his statement.

Fang Yuan did not mind it, he smiled towards the last two people, asking: "Ren Xiu Ping? Tong Hua? What about you?"

Ren Xiu Ping had a grim expression, he did not speak, only shaking his head.

Tong Hua was currently startled and did not dare to say or do anything.

Fang Yuan expected them to act like this from the start. After all, he had just taken their immortal materials.

This showed Shen Cong Sheng's political ability as well.

Shen Cong Sheng ordered Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua to give their immortal materials to Fang Yuan, it seemed to have ruined their relationship, but the truth was, it made them helpless to do anything but stay with Shen clan.

In fact, they would even want to stay with Shen clan after leaving Dragon Whale Paradise to replenish their loss of immortal materials.

At the same time, this was a way for Shen Cong Sheng to suppress Tong Hua and Ren Xiu Ping. It made them realize who was calling the shots. Within Dragon Whale Paradise, they had to obey Shen clan, even after they leave, they still had to listen to Shen clan! After joining my Shen clan's boat, they still wanted to leave? Hehe, life was not that easy.

Fang Yuan knew Shen Cong Sheng's scheme, but he did not say anything.

With or without Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua, it did not matter, Fang Yuan's core benefits were untouched.

The five regional walls were still around, but the super forces were already starting to gather members and accumulate strength. Fang clan took in Old Ghost Bai Jun and Eagle Concubine, Shen clan took in Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua, was there anything weird? Longevity Heaven was even more overbearing, it united the entire Northern Plains Gu Immortal world, using the Huang Jin super forces to take in all of Northern Plains' lone and demonic immortals.

As for Central Continent, they achieved it long ago. The ten great ancient sects of Central Continent were subsidiaries of Heavenly Court, while most Gu Immortals or super forces were attached to the ten great ancient sects, controlled and kept under their watch.

Eventually, Fang Yuan brought Miao Ming Shen's group to the mission's location.

Floating in the sky, they looked down.

The Immortals saw these two sea areas, one blue and one green, with the blue sea towering high and the green sea hanging low. A large amount of seawater fell from the blue sea and rolled down into the green sea.

The seawater in both seas could not mix together, at the place where they met, the blue and green seawater touched each other, emitting a sneering sound, as a huge amount of clouds rose endlessly.

At the area where the two seas intersected, fish and insects were absent, this was almost a desolate place.

It was obvious that there was a major ecological problem.

Fang Yuan sighed: "It’s not simple to combine the two sea areas, it is necessary to take into account all the different aspects. We might as well explore and gather information individually. After that, we will assemble and discuss a plan."

Miao Ming Shen nodded: "That is reasonable."

Fang Yuan looked at Miao Ming Shen and smiled at him.

Although his own identity was exposed, Miao Ming Shen still cooperated with him. He was able to swiftly change his attitude and continued to follow Fang Yuan’s orders, this showed that he was something with great mental fortitude.

The immortals scattered and flew around the place, doing their investigations.

Fang Yuan was the only one who remained at the same place, using investigative methods while dividing his attention to look into the sovereign immortal aperture.

His greatest gain this time was regret Gu.

In his last life, he had followed the design of Regret Pool to use regret Gu as the core and create a refinement path Gu formation.

This life, however, did not need to be so troublesome. Fang Yuan had annexed the entire Lang Ya blessed land and possessed the extremely useful Long Hair refinement path formation, all he had to do now was to add regret Gu into this formation.

The formation certainly needed to be adjusted, Fang Yuan had already deduced it in advance.

At the moment, he only had to watch as regret Gu was placed in the vacant core position.

"Lord, Fang Yuan is a current generation demon, aren’t we a little too close to him?" In the process of detection, Gui Qi Ye took the initiative to fly to the side of Miao Ming Shen, looking worried.

Miao Ming Shen patted Gui Qi Ye’s shoulder: "Old Gui, you want to ask me why I treated Fang Yuan in this manner, almost acting like his subordinate, right?"

Gui Qi Ye smiled in embarrassment: "Lord, you are very perceptive."

Miao Ming Shen’s face was slightly solemn and he sighed: "I am left with no other choice. This is my first time entering Dragon Whale Paradise but there was a mishap. Shen clan discovered this place, do you think they will let this precious land go and allow us to come and explore it again in the future?"

"According to the nature of super forces, they will want to keep it all to themselves!" Gui Qi Ye said with certainty.

"Precisely." Miao Ming Shen’s eyes shined brightly: "We will definitely be suppressed and forced to surrender by Shen clan once we go out. If we do not surrender, we will be annihilated. But now we have a choice besides submitting to Shen clan."

"You refer to... Fang Yuan? I see, lord has great foresight, I am too foolish." Gui Qi Ye suddenly realized.

As lone immortals who knew such a precious place like the Dragon Whale Paradise, Shen clan would definitely take action against them in the future. Ren Xiu Ping alone was a strong enemy, not to mention the super force Shen clan.

Miao Ming Shen chose to be close to Fang Yuan in order to use his prestige as a shield and try to preserve the freedom of being a lone immortal.

When Shen clan decides to take action against them, they would have to take Fang Yuan’s feelings into account.

In the worst case, he would give up his status as a lone immortal and become the subordinate of either Fang Yuan or Shen clan.

This meant that he still had some room for planning and was not at a dead end.

Unlike Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua who had joined Shen clan long ago. Without external pressure, the super force would naturally take advantage of them. Could they refuse to hand over the immortal materials when Shen Cong Sheng asked them to do so? Did they dare to refuse?

By the time the group of immortals reached Fang Yuan, he had already finished arranging regret Gu.

Within the sovereign immortal aperture, the hairy man Gu Immortals were ready, they were high in morale as they prepared themselves to refine a large number of Gu.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone was organizing and planning the immortal material inventory, before fine-tuning and improving the Immortal Gu recipes according to the immortal materials at hand.

Fang Yuan needed to do it himself in his previous life, but with the whole of Lang Ya Sect helping him in this life, there was almost no need for him to intervene.

Thus, he saved a great deal of time.

With the fate battle getting closer and closer, this time was extremely valuable and precious!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The Long Hair refinement path formation buzzed continuously, the fire within the formation raged towards the sky, heat waves were pushing everywhere.

A rank six Immortal Gu was bathed in fire and light, suspended in midair, its surface gradually melting like wax.

"Hold steady!" Lang Ya land spirit controlled the formation as he shouted: "Open the inventory, let out the immortal material."

The hairy man Gu Immortals controlling the other formation cores quickly opened the inventory doors.

Thus, lumps of dog shit flew out of it slowly.

These were all immortal materials.

Some flickered with starlight, seemingly embedded with blue diamonds, they were the faeces of star desolate hounds.

Some had sharp spikes and looked dangerous, they were the faeces of remnant heavenly dogs.

And there were pure and clean ones that resembled white jade, they were the excrement of the jade statue white hound.

Star desolate hound, remnant heavenly dog, and jade statue white hound were ancient desolate beasts.

The dog shit slowly flew into the fire, melting rapidly in the flames. Some turned into smoke, and some were reduced to liquid.

The formation activated as three hairy man Gu Immortals took action at once, cooperating to process these dog shit immortal materials.

First, smoke spread out to surround the rank six Immortal Gu, before liquid started to flow and gather.

Lang Ya land spirit took charge of the refinement, it was extremely stable during the late stage processes.

Right when they were about to succeed, when the final portion of immortal material fused into it, an accident occurred. The flame changed color as the incomplete rank seven Immortal Gu within broke apart rapidly.

Lang Ya land spirit was shocked, he quickly activated the formation.

The power of regret Gu activated as the color of the flame within the formation returned to normal, not only that, the incomplete rank seven Immortal Gu was also restored to its former state.

They only lost that last portion of immortal material.

The Lang Ya hairy men calmed their emotions and continued to refine Gu.

After less than an hour, the flames inside the formation gradually dissipated, and rank six Immortal Gu within was refined into rank seven.

Rank seven — Dog Shit Luck!

The hairy man Gu Immortals were very excited while Lang Ya land spirit was also filled with emotions.

Originally, they were proud of their refinement path ability. Now with the help of regret Gu, they were simply a dragon flying through the air, their advantage expanded out of control.

At the same time, in Dragon Whale Paradise.

Fang Yuan sat on the cloud with Feng Jiang and the rest, watching Miao Ming Shen fly around the place.

The ecology of the two sea areas had almost been adjusted completely. The final difficulty was that there was still a shattered space between the two seas.

Miao Ming Shen was trying to get rid of this space, by eliminating it, the two sea areas could finally fuse into one.

Miao Ming Shen was a space path Gu Immortal, he was specialized in dealing with these shattered spaces.

Fang Yuan and the rest were free to idle and watch.

"Oh? Immortal Gu Dog Shit Luck has been advanced successfully. Progress is smooth." Fang Yuan sensed the commotion within the sovereign immortal aperture.

While his main body was doing the merit missions, three Immortal Gu had already advanced inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Their progress was really fast!

When ordinary Gu Immortals refine Immortal Gu, they would take years to do so, they would be very nervous and careful with each attempt, the risks were huge.

But Fang Yuan’s situation was different.

Lang Ya land spirit, the hairy man Gu Immortals, Long Hair refinement path formation, as well as the abundance of immortal materials, it allowed him to refine Gu with ease.

The three Immortal Gu that he had refined and advanced were from luck path, he had obtained them from dismantling Cooking Luck Pot.

Luck path was his focus now.

The dog shit luck Immortal Gu that he just advanced was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s former vital Gu, it had an incredibly powerful supplementary effect.

The only problem was that it was stuck at rank six and could not display its power. Now that it was rank seven, it could be used to some extent.

Fang Yuan had rank eight cultivation level now, his requirement for Immortal Gu also increased, he needed higher ranked Immortal Gu. Rank six was too low, while rank seven was barely good enough, rank eight suited him the most.

But if Fang Yuan wanted to refine a rank eight Immortal Gu, he would not be able to afford it. The investment needed was too high, and the risks were huge, he was likely to gain nothing.

After all, he could not ignore the outside world to cultivate, the external environment was very harsh, if he did not stop Heavenly Court from repairing fate Gu, his situation would deteriorate even further.

Currently, rank seven Immortal Gu were still barely usable to him.

Furthermore, these rank seven luck path Immortal Gu that he refined could be used to construct Cooking Luck Pot. At rank seven, Cooking Luck Pot would be able to affect rank eight.

"Hah!" Miao Ming Shen suddenly shouted, breaking Fang Yuan’s chain of thoughts.

Miao Ming Shen flashed with a blue halo, it spread out around him and soothed the shattered space, uniting it until the cracks were restored entirely.

"Lord has amazing methods!" Feng Jiang and the rest praised.

At this point, the large sized mission was completed.

"Outstanding methods, yours are superior to mine." Fang Yuan did not stint on praise. He had space path Immortal Gu and space path methods too, he could even use other paths to mimic the effects of space path.

But compared to Miao Ming Shen, even if he could achieve the same effect, the cost would be higher.

After all, experts focused on their own fields, Miao Ming Shen was a space path cultivator, while Fang Yuan barely researched about space path, he made little progress in this path.

Miao Ming Shen quickly cupped his fists: "Lord is too kind, I am not worthy of such praise."

Fang Yuan replied with some praise again as everyone went back to the Merit Obelisk.

In this mission, Fang Yuan gained the most benefits, followed by Miao Ming Shen.

Fang Yuan’s merit ranking rose to the top again.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest were no longer surprised. They had seen Fang Yuan’s ranking jump up and down like a monkey. He was often in the first and last place.

Fang Yuan’s gaze focused.

At this point, the other Gu Immortals were started to accumulate merit points. If Fang Yuan’s ranking fell again, he would not be able to get to the first position so easily again.

They continued accepting and completing missions.

Fang Yuan’s merit points soared continuously.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest followed after him the entire time, Fang Yuan used the advantage of cultivating all paths to resolve problems, while Miao Ming Shen and the rest resolved the minor issues for him.

This cooperation ensured that Fang Yuan remained at the top of the ranking, his status was getting more unmovable.

Miao Ming Shen and the rest also benefited, they started to break away from Shen clan’s group, becoming the second group on the ranking list.

The first group was naturally Fang Yuan alone.

Shen Cong Sheng did not turn to Fang Yuan for help in the end, he got back on track by completing multiple mid-sized missions within the allotted time limit.

His luck was not bad, he received one or two sound path related missions. As for other missions, even though he cultivated sound path, he had many methods to mimic the effects of other paths.

Shen Cong Sheng was a rank eight after all, his cultivation level methods were beyond the rest.

By the time Shen Cong Sheng’s ranking rose to the middle, Fang Yuan’s Cooking Luck Pot was reassembled already.

Rank seven Cooking Luck Pot.

A top tier Immortal Gu House that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable personally created, it had the power to affect rank eight.

The first thing that Fang Yuan did was to inspect his own luck.

Boom!

As if he heard a roar that seemingly resounded in his ears, Fang Yuan looked up and saw a giant flame cloud pillar, burning brightly and rising up into the sky, as if it was trying to hold up heaven and earth.

His luck was like a giant pillar, flames that were bright-red like blood surged. On the surface of the giant pillar, the end of the many traces of the flame carried a touch of black color in it.

"My strength is rank eight, my battle strength rivals Duke Long, I also have countless Immortal Gu, Immortal Gu Houses, and killer moves, so my luck is grand and vast."

"Blood-red flame means slaughter. The black color at the ends of the flame means a deadly situation. The deadly black qi has corrupted the surface of the pillar, it is trying to get in, this means that my death threat is coming from an external source. It must be Heavenly Court."

"Heavenly Court has yet to repair fate Gu, once they succeed, the black death qi will definitely expand by several times, it will eventually corrupt my entire luck pillar."

Fang Yuan looked again, within the huge pillar, there were countless faint phantom images flickering continuously.

At times, he saw a red lotus, a white crane, a beast phantom, or a lump of soil...

Fang Yuan wanted to investigate deeper but he saw that his vision turned blur.

Immediately, his body shook and his throat felt wet, he almost spit out blood uncontrollably.

Fang Yuan rapidly healed himself and looked above him, he saw that Cooking Luck Pot was floating quietly, there was a vast amount of luck inside while a crack had formed on the surface of the pot, luck was leaking towards the outside.

Fang Yuan smiled bitterly to himself internally.

His luck was too strong, even though this was rank seven Cooking Luck Pot, he could only barely see his luck.

After he looked at it for a long time, he would suffer backlash and Cooking Luck Pot would also be damaged.

The newly created Cooking Luck Pot needed to be fixed now. The crack was huge, the damage was severe, if left unattended, the crack would get larger and larger, he had to fix it immediately.

After checking his luck, Fang Yuan was both happy and worried.

He was happy that his luck was good, this was not strange, he had immense foundation, as well as methods in luck path.

The worry was that his hidden threat had started to appear, if he did not stop fate Gu from recovering, Fang Yuan’s crisis would become more dangerous. And because the fire pillar was burning intensely, it also meant that he could not last too long.

These types of burning luck often meant that the Gu Immortal was unrivaled in a short period of time, but it could not last long. After the pillar stops burning, his luck would fall into a period of weakness.

But that was in the future.

Fang Yuan made some deductions, his luck would be maintained at this level at least until Central Continent’s fate Gu battle, it could even be improved further.

Fang Yuan continued to receive missions, while the refinement path Gu Immortals within the sovereign immortal aperture also started to advance strength path Immortal Gu.

Missions to eliminate the black fire started to appear on the Merit Obelisk.

After Shen Shang escaped from regret crying sea, he was still in a state of madness, he unconsciously damaged the surroundings of the places he went to.

Fang Yuan was very interested in this odd black fire and immediately started to investigate it.

But he made no progress.

The black fire was very stubborn, even though it was a small lump, it could transform countless times when attacked, it could last for a long time.

As missions to clear the black fire appeared, Fang Yuan, Shen Cong Sheng, and the rest started to work together to complete them.

"Did you notice, this type of mission is getting rarer." On this day, Shen Cong Sheng talked to Fang Yuan while dealing with the black fire.

"Perhaps your Ancestor Shen Shang is about to regain his senses. With the location of these missions, we should be able to deduce his whereabouts." Fang Yuan analyzed.

"Indeed." Shen Cong Sheng had an expectant expression.

Right at this time, a rank eight Gu Immortal flew towards them in the sky.

Who else could it be but Shen Shang?

"Ancestor, this is great, you finally regained your senses. I have already negotiated with Fang Yuan, we will work together." Shen Cong Sheng was overjoyed, he quickly went over.

Shen Shang flew over and nodded towards Fang Yuan, he had a haggard expression, he frowned deeply as he said some shocking things: "The situation is quite troublesome, I have a huge problem. Before I resolve it, I need to be sealed again. Fang Yuan, you are proficient in formation path, I would like you to set up a formation to seal me if necessary."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the eyes of super forces, there was no such thing as eternal friend or enemy in the world.

This is the way of survival of super forces.

If this was not followed, super forces would not last for a long time. Naturally, Shen clan was not such a force, as it had existed even before the era of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, and had grown and flourished during Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s time, surviving to this day!

As an old generation member of Shen Shang, Shen Shang was not opposed to Shen clan and Fang Yuan joining forces, he even felt joyful about it.

This was because none of the Shen clan members here were a formation path Gu Immortal. If Shen Shang wanted to use a formation to seal himself, he would naturally have to use Fang Yuan’s method.

Hearing Shen Shang’s words, Shen Cong Sheng had a weird expression. He had gone to great lengths to save his ancestor, but he did not expect that his ancestor would now instead ask to be sealed by a formation again.

However, the reason for this was completely understood by Shen Cong Sheng, he was now silent as he looked at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s face turned a little grim: "Shen Shang, although your clan has joined forces with me, the Immortal Gu from the underwater formation already belongs to me. Now you are asking me to use these Immortal Gu and create an immortal formation to seal you... This is quite hard for me to accept."

Shen Cong Sheng quickly added: "We can negotiate this Fang Yuan. We can even trade Immortal Gu."

At this point, seeing that Shen Shang had regained his senses, he did not want to give up.

Fang Yuan shook his head slowly, he had a serious expression: "Shen Cong Sheng, did you forget about the contents of our missions earlier? The mission states that we need to eliminate the demonic immortal within the formation, that is Shen Shang. What does that mean?"

Fang Yuan paused before continuing: "It means that the Merit Obelisk does not think that Shen Shang will recover, it has decided that his problem is too severe to treat. Even if I create the formation, it will not help him."

Shen Cong Sheng’s expression changed, he wanted to speak but Shen Shang stopped him.

Shen Shang smiled towards Fang Yuan: "Fang Yuan, no need to have such concerns. I am not asking you to contribute your Immortal Gu, the Gu worms we will use for the formation are all mine. Look."

Saying so, he took out an Immortal Gu from his immortal aperture.

The Immortal Gu was like a silkworm, pale yellow in color, curled up in a ball and not stretched, making it even more exquisite.

"Shen Cong Sheng may have already explained my situation to you." Shen Shang said to Fang Yuan: "I’m most proficient in healing, and this is the human path Immortal Gu I created back then — Heal Injury. Using this as the core, I later developed a human path killer move called ’saving dead healing injuries’, if the difficulty isn’t too high, I can even revive a dead person on the spot!"

Fang Yuan looked at the Gu worm in front of him, he felt a little amazed.

This was a pure human path Immortal Gu, the shocking thing was that this was a genuine rank eight Immortal Gu.

Rank eight human path Immortal Gu!

Seeing that the immortals were silent, Shen Shang smiled and said again: "Have you found that human path methods are the most effective in dealing with the black fire?"

Shen Cong Sheng shook his head: "Not yet, but we know that healing killer moves will take effect if we use them on the black fire. But whether we use offensive or healing killer moves on the black fire, there is no difference."

Shen Shang nodded: "Watch."

Saying so, a wave of aura burst out of his body.

Watching him prepare a killer move, the surrounding Gu Immortals quickly retreated with deep alertness.

After Shen Shang regained his senses, he had no intention of harming anyone, he slowly stretched out his hand, aiming at the black fire in the distance.

His palm suddenly burst out with a stream of bright yellow light.

The light stream surged and spiraled forward, it was not fast, but eventually shot into the black fire.

The black fire only endured the yellow light for a moment before quickly dissipating.

Shen Shang stopped his killer move and said to the group of immortals: "As you have just seen, this is my killer move, saving dead healing injuries."

"It’s true that human path killer moves are quite effective against the black fire." Seeing the truth, Fang Yuan immediately nodded his head, acknowledging Shen Shang’s statement.

"They are indeed." Shen Cong Sheng rejoiced: "The previous underwater formation was an earth path immortal formation, it was difficult to resolve the problem on ancestor. But if you use our ancestor’s human path Immortal Gu, there will be greater hope."

Fang Yuan, however, did not agree just yet, he gazed at Shen Shang: "You are a human path quasi-supreme grandmaster?"

Astonishment flashed in Shen Shang’s eyes as he nodded: "That is correct. I didn’t expect that you are also proficient in human path."

Different professions were different worlds, this was the same for paths.

Since Fang Yuan could estimate Shen Shang’s human path attainment level, it meant that he also had some level of attainment in it.

All of the immortals turned their gazes towards Fang Yuan while feeling surprised, they sighed to themselves: This great demon renowned in the world was truly unfathomable!

Fang Yuan asked: "Do you have the formation chart?"

Shen Shang showed a helpless smile: "I have a formation chart but it is incomplete, I seem to have created it myself, but I can’t remember the entire thing."

"What do you mean?" Shen Cong Sheng tensed up.

Shen Shang sighed deeply: "I’ve lost my memory. Every time I fall into madness, a part of the memories I grasp will disappear. This is why I need to solve the problem in me as soon as possible, if it’s too late, I’m afraid I won’t even know who I am anymore."

Fang Yuan smiled and said: "Shen Shang, you’re lucky to have met me."

Shen Shang nodded his head and agreed: "This is indeed my good luck. It is very difficult to set up human path formation that meets my requirements, there are many conditions to do so. Firstly, you need the human path Immortal Gu, secondly, you need to deduce and modify the formation chart, and finally, you need to set up the formation. Setting up the formation requires formation path attainment, deducing and modifying the formation chart requires wisdom path attainment, and because it is a human path immortal formation, it also requires human path attainment."

"Any other Gu Immortal who specializes in formation path, even with rank eight cultivation, would not be able to satisfy my requirements. But you, Fang Yuan, meet all three of these conditions. So now, I really have to rely on you. Please do help me out!"

"Fang Yuan, whatever reward you need, feel free to ask, my Shen clan will definitely do our best to satisfy you." Shen Cong Sheng made a solemn commitment.

Fang Yuan nodded, as soon as Shen Shang said his request to set up the immortal formation, he realized that this was a good opportunity.

Not only would he be able to obtain a generous amount of immortal materials from Shen clan by just setting up the formation.

What he cared more about was Shen clan, Shen Cong Sheng, and Shen Shang.

By cooperating with Shen clan, he could influence the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world even more deeply and affect the situation of the entire world.

Although Fang Yuan’s human path attainment level was already grandmaster, he still had no clue on how to deal with those human path killer moves of Heavenly Court. It would be a completely different story if Shen Shang were to deal with them.

Heavenly Court was too powerful and had countless years of accumulation. Fang Yuan was not able to resist them alone, he needed the help of others to work together and fight against this giant.

Fang Yuan pondered for a moment and said his conditions.

To the surprise of Shen Shang and Shen Cong Sheng, the conditions Fang Yuan proposed were very relaxed and not harsh at all. Fang Yuan did not have much demand for immortal materials, nor did he ask for Immortal Gu.

The only condition that had to be fulfilled was the requirement that Shen Cong Sheng and Shen Shang must take action and become the enemy of Heavenly Court to stop it from repairing fate Gu.

But in fact, there was no need for Fang Yuan to bring it up, it was already the consensus of all the super forces in the world that they had to prevent the successful restoration of fate Gu!

Many of the ambitious people in the world were even more worried about fate Gu than Fang Yuan! After all, none of them were otherworldly demons, once Heavenly Court succeeds in their plan, their status and position would be unshakable.

A few days later, a brand new formation was built at the bottom of the sea.

Shen Shang entered the formation, with the main formation core controlled by Shen Cong Sheng and assisted by Fang Yuan.

The formation was slowly activated as a stream of profound white light formed chains that tied Shen Shang like a mummy.

Shen Shang was silent, sitting in a cross-legged position, soon his entire body was enveloped in a layer of pale white light mist.

A moment later, the formation came to a halt.

Fang Yuan, Shen Cong Sheng and the others found nothing, they could not detect a single bit of black fire within Shen Shang’s body at all.

Shen Shang sighed: "I have searched countless times before, the only time this black fire will appear is when I go mad again."

Fang Yuan’s eyes shimmered uncertainly: "Are you sure that you can’t remember all the things about the black fire?"

Shen Shang just shook his head.

Shen Cong Sheng sighed: "In that case, we will have to wait. This mission will be placed here for now, I will send a person specifically to stay behind to guard the formation."

This arrangement was very reasonable.

The Gu Immortals were restricted in their range of movement in Dragon Whale Paradise and could not travel in and out of places as they wished. Using the Merit Obelisk’s teleportation ability, as well as the group title, they were able to communicate instantly, and if Shen Shang went mad, they would quickly gather together.

Those arranged within the formation were bound to be Shen clan’s members, sometimes it was even Shen Cong Sheng himself who went to stay guard.

With this burden, Shen clan was not Fang Yuan’s match at all in the competition for the merit board ranking.

Time continued to pass day by day, Fang Yuan’s merit points rose from thousands to tens of thousands, and then from tens of thousands to even higher.

In the process, he also exchanged for titles from time to time. It was just that the secrets behind many titles were not clear to him either. In the previous life, Miao Ming Shen’s group had not explored it to this extent yet, so Fang Yuan could only guess and make deductions.

Fortunately, even if his deductions were wrong, the exchanged titles were all of some use.

Having so many merit points, Fang Yuan did not exchange for any Immortal Gu.

He did not lack any Immortal Gu, what he lacked were some rare immortal materials.

There were instances where Fang Yuan spent his merit points to exchange for immortal materials from the Merit Obelisk that would help the hairy man Gu Immortals’ refinement.

Fang Yuan had a large amount of immortal materials, but there were still some missing among the rarer ones. The Merit Obelisk made up for the last gap in resources.

By the time Fang Yuan made a new breakthrough, the first super mission appeared.

"Get rid of the black fire on the heavenly spine?" Fang Yuan was slightly startled: "Why is there still black fire that hasn’t been eliminated?"

Some time before, missions regarding the black fire had appeared one after another. The immortals completed these missions to clean up Shen Shang’s mess.

"Could it be that this isn’t left behind by Shen Shang?" There was a sudden flash of realization in Fang Yuan’s mind.

It was very simple to verify this conjecture, with the aid of the Merit Obelisk, Fang Yuan directly teleported to the mission location.

At the next moment, he was at the top of the clouds, the highest point in the sky.

There was no wind and the sun was warm.

"This is?" Fang Yuan’s pupils shrank as he looked up to see countless lumps of black fire burning silently.

The scale of the black fire was extremely large, as if this was a field of dark clouds in a rainstorm!

The total amount of black fire that Fang Yuan and the immortals had previously gone to great lengths to annihilate was a minute fraction of the black fire in front of him now.

"The scale of this black fire is appalling, it cannot have come from Shen Shang. In that case, there was already a hidden black fire problem in Dragon Whale Paradise from the start!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1915 Shen Shang“s Inheritance

The black fire was not burning in the air, it was attached to giant bones.

The giant bones were milky white and had a sacred aura.

The giant bones had a main trunk that extended from east to west, it could pierce through heaven and earth, it was like a dragon of the nine heavens that stretched beyond Fang Yuan’s vision. On both sides of the bone, there were countless neatly arranged branching giant bones that extended outwards, as if they were giant ivory tusks.

The entire skeleton was like the spine and ribs of a giant, singlehandedly holding up the sky!

"Heavenly spine..." Fang Yuan murmured, the sight before him was imposing, he was underneath the giant bones, being as small as a mosquito.

These bones were like gnarled trees, and the black fire gathered like clouds, covering most of the bones.

After evaluating it, Fang Yuan figured out a few details: "This heavenly spine is actually a rank nine bone path immortal material!"

That alone was incredible.

The heavenly spine should not be a human bone, which Gu Immortal had such a massive body?

Since it was not a human bone, it was a beast bone.

But how could there be such a fierce beast that could reach the level of rank nine?

It was impossible!

Rank nine was the level of a venerable, historically, they only appeared in the human race. Throughout history, there were only ten of them, while the rest of the races had rank eight existences at most, there were also immemorial desolate beasts or immemorial desolate plants as well.

Was it possible that there were rank nine desolate beasts or plants in this world?

Only such an existence would leave behind such a grade of immortal material after death.

"Other than that, is it something that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable created personally?" Fang Yuan was filled with questions.

This was very unlikely.

Because Fang Yuan had already seen through the function of the heavenly spine, its one and only use was to reinforce this Dragon Whale Paradise.

If Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable wanted to reinforce this paradise, he could have used earth path methods, or even sound path methods. These were his expertise, why would he bother to choose bone path?

"Also, why did Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable set it up like this, to specifically reinforce Dragon Whale Paradise? It’s as if Dragon Whale Paradise is very unsafe and could collapse at any moment."

"But the truth is, the blue dragon whale is a legendary immemorial desolate beast, its strength is near the pinnacle of the world. There are simply very few existences that can threaten it. If something can threaten its life, would there be a point in reinforcing Dragon Whale Paradise?"

"The biggest question is, why is there such a huge black fire on the back of the heavenly spine?"

This was clearly not caused by Shen Shang.

If Shen Shang was able to leak black fire of this scale, how could he still come back alive and volunteer to seal himself?

"What kind of connection is there between the black fire here and the black fire on Shen Shang’s body?" Fang Yuan kept deducing, and in the process, he saw a branching rib completely melt away in the black fire.

The black fire was fiercely corroding and constantly destroying the heavenly spine!

What would happen if the heavenly spine is completely destroyed?

Fang Yuan did not know, but it was definitely not something good.

He tried his hand as he manipulated Myriad Year Flying Warship, activating daybreak flying sword to attack the black fire.

As he expected, the black fire was like a sea, his attack was like throwing stones into the sea, unable to create any difference.

Fang Yuan tried for a while, but he had no choice but to stop. Even a character like him felt overwhelmed at the moment.

This was the difficulty of a super mission.

After pondering for a bit, Fang Yuan left the place, returned to the starting island, he went over to the underwater formation.

Shen Shang was still conscious, Fang Yuan informed him of the situation at the heavenly spine.

"Do you have any impressions of this place?" Fang Yuan inquired.

Shen Shang shook his head in distress: "No recollection of that at all. But it definitely has a connection with my black fire. If I can figure out the mystery of the black fire, I might be able to gain insight on the plan of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable back then, as well as the deepest secrets of Dragon Whale Paradise!"

At this point, Shen Shang paused: "I want to see it for myself, is that okay?"

"Of course." Fang Yuan responded immediately. Since he had told Shen Shang about this situation, he was not going to hide it.

To attempt to complete a super mission, relying on him alone seemed insufficient, he would have to gather the strength of all the Gu Immortals.

Soon, the group of immortals gathered together as one and arrived at the heavenly spine.

Seeing the sea of black fire clouds that filled the sky, the group of immortals had a change of expression as they marveled at it.

The group of immortals tried to exterminate the black fire, but the progress was extremely slight. It seemed that the larger the black fire was, the more difficult it was to eradicate it.

Among the immortals, only Shen Shang’s human path methods were sufficiently effective, the others were all outmatched by him.

After the plan to remove the black fire had lasted for several days, Hua Die was the first to give up.

It was not that she could not take it mentally, but the immortal essence expenditure was too high.

"This mission is too hard, I suggest we give up." Miao Ming Shen secretly approached Fang Yuan and discussed with him in private.

Even without him having to say anything, Fang Yuan had already wanted to give up.

By now, the immortals had done their best but only managed to eliminate a small area of the black fire. And such a scale was not even one-thousandth of the entire black fire.

"If I were to truly utilize my rank eight battle strength, this would certainly be much more efficient, but the result would still be too poor. Instead, I might as well complete large sized missions one after another, after a few times, I’ll be able to accumulate a large amount of merit points."

"I’m afraid only a venerable will be able to handle a super mission like this with ease."

Fang Yuan decided to give up.

Shen Cong Sheng and Shen Shang expressed their understanding.

But they were unwilling to give up, they only let the other Shen clan Gu Immortals follow him.

Shen Shang said to Fang Yuan: "I still want to explore it further, I will move along the main spine and see if I can find any clue or answer."

Fang Yuan looked at him deeply, nodding and leaving directly.

Soon, only Shen Shang and Shen Cong Sheng were left here at the heavenly spine.

"Take a walk with me." Shen Shang sighed.

Shen Cong Sheng followed and took the initiative to ask: "Ancestor, you purposely diverted everyone away, did you recall something?"

Shen Shang shook his head: "I am planning to hand over my human path inheritance to you."

Shen Cong Sheng was startled, he had an ominous feeling from Shen Shang’s tone as he quickly said: "Ancestor, you need not be in such a hurry. I believe that there will always be a way to resolve the problem in you."

Shen Shang smiled slightly: "I have not given up hope, but I have to make considerations for our clan. Leaving behind my human path inheritance for the benefit of our clan, it can be considered as me repaying the debt I once owed the clan!"

Shen Cong Sheng was silent.

Shen Shang continued: "At the underwater formation, I was not able to pass you my inheritance, after all, it was a formation set up by Fang Yuan himself. But here, it should be safe."

"I won’t pass my human path Immortal Gu to you, because I still need to use them. What I’m passing on to you is my experience in cultivation, and the various killer moves and Immortal Gu recipes I’ve created."

Shen Cong Sheng said solemnly: "I will definitely not fail to live up to ancestor’s good intentions."

Shen Shang smiled bitterly: "My memory is fragmented, what I remember is limited. Let’s start from the very beginning, I used to major in sound path, but then in an accident, I refined heal injury Immortal Gu, from which I saw that hope of human path."

"In order to convert to human path, I did many things in secret, all of which were against the rules of the righteous path. Our clan defended me and helped to cover up these incidents, but in the end, I couldn’t hide it from Lord Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable."

"When Lord Paradise Earth found me, I was no match for him, I couldn’t even take a single blow from him. But Lord Paradise Earth didn’t kill me, nor did he imprison me, but instead, because I had spent many years saving lives and helping the injured, he gave me a chance to redeem myself. And he promised me that if I could seize this opportunity, I might even be able to achieve my goal and successfully convert to cultivating human path."

"And so I came here, I cultivated bitterly in the underwater formation that Lord Paradise Earth had set up."

"The memories of my non-stop cultivation are completely blurred, I only remember that in the process, I received the help of the undersea formation and repeatedly broke through, progressing steadily."

"With heal injury Immortal Gu as the foundation, I developed and created saving dead healing injuries, light injuries, heavy injuries, fatal injuries, sensory injuries, seven laborious injuries, and other killer moves."

"Finally, one day, I created the killer move countless injury marks. From this killer move, I deduced the Immortal Gu recipe of injury mark Immortal Gu."

"I refined it and replaced my own vital Gu. With this Immortal Gu, any attacks that cause damage to me will be converted into the respective injury marks."

"The more injury marks I have, the more I can increase the power of mutual injuries killer move. In the battle earlier, Fang Yuan was forced to retreat by me because I used the killer move mutual injuries to cause him to be covered in injury marks."

"Remember that injury mark Immortal Gu is the core of my human path inheritance, while mutual injuries is my main offensive method."

Shen Cong Sheng’s heart shook as he listened, the true inheritance of human path created by Shen Shang was so profound that it shook him physically and mentally!

"Ancestor, this true inheritance that you started has great future prospects, perhaps it might be able to create an entirely new sub-path branching from human path." Shen Cong Sheng praised heartily.

"Hahaha." Shen Shang laughed proudly as he patted Shen Cong Sheng’s shoulder: "I’m afraid that I won’t be able to. The inheritance is left to you, if you are interested in the future, you can switch to human path. If you have no intention of doing so, just choose a suitable successor."

Southern Border.

Virtue Paradise.

A female immortal dressed in a purple silk robe, ornate and mysterious, came down the mountain step by step.

Her skin was white as snow and her black hair hung down to her waist, her eyes were like the deep pool, with a sense of sadness shrouding her face. It was Heavenly Court’s leader, the person who had Star Constellation Chessboard, the number one wisdom path great expert in the current world — Fairy Zi Wei!

At the moment, however, Fairy Zi Wei was covered in a thin layer of sweat and looked haggard, but her eyes were shining and her spirit was high.

At the foot of the mountain, Lu Wei Yin had been waiting for a long time: "Lady Zi Wei, it seems you’ve reached your goal in this journey."

Fairy Zi Wei smiled: "This climb has benefited me a lot. I have already obtained benevolence Gu, thank you for your generosity."

Lu Wei Yin also smiled: "Lady Zi Wei, it is not to help you, this is for the sake of the world, to maintain the peace of the five regions."

"But alas, in the current world, demonic immortals are rising. Not to mention Fang Yuan, recently in Western Desert, a blood path rank eight great expert has actually appeared, purposely finding trouble with super forces and repeatedly attacking various resource points. They are acting extremely arrogantly, and the methods are extraordinarily terrifying. The chaos is coming, I only hope that this Virtue Paradise will become an actual paradise safe from the chaos of the world."

Fairy Zi Wei sighed: "I understand what you mean. In the future, there will be generous rewards for you after the changes in the five regions. Farewell."

"Goodbye." Lu Wei Yin moved aside and gave way to her departure.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Dragon Whale Paradise.

At the Merit Obelisk, Fang Yuan and Shen Cong Sheng stood as they looked at the merit board together.

The super mission regarding the black fire was still around, but tomorrow was the final day of the three hundred days they could stay here.

Fang Yuan’s merit points stood at the top of the board, he had a huge amount. After he found out about the difficulty of the black fire mission, he chose only large and mid-sized missions to earn his merit points.

Miao Ming Shen and others worked alongside him and gained an abundant amount of points as well.

After realizing the difficulty of the super mission, Shen Cong Sheng and others wisely learned from Fang Yuan, now their merit points had also accumulated to a considerable amount.

"Three hundred days have passed by, it feels like we just arrived here yesterday." Shen Cong Sheng smiled bitterly.

This was a genuine land of treasures, by completing various missions, the Gu Immortals would be able to directly obtain Immortal Gu, Immortal Gu recipes, and various killer moves. Even a rank eight Gu Immortal like Shen Cong Sheng was attracted to this place and did not want to leave.

But there was no way, once the time limit was up, they would be kicked out of Dragon Whale Paradise.

"It’s a pity that this time, we did not explore all the secrets of Dragon Whale Paradise." Fang Yuan sighed with pity.

There were many more strange things about this Dragon Whale Paradise.

The black fire was one of them.

Where did this black fire come from? How could it transform to so many different forms? Why could its path not be discerned? And why were human path methods so effective against it?

Apart from the black fire, where did the heavenly spine left behind by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable originate? What was the true intent of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable?

What agreement did Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable and Shen Shang make back then? Shen Shang cultivated human path in the underwater formation, yet he was somehow tainted by the troublesome black fire.

Also, apart from Shen Shang alone, Fang Yuan did not see any other Gu Immortals. Were there no Gu Immortals in Dragon Whale Paradise in the first place? And where did the Immortal Gu in the Merit Obelisk come from? If they were all naturally produced, the number was simply too large.

After a moment of silence, Shen Cong Sheng said: "We’ll have to leave these secrets for the future when we can explore them again. It’s good that we have all exchanged for that title already, so once the blue dragon whale appears in the future, we will be able to sense it and explore it again."

Fang Yuan nodded his head, this was indeed a good discovery.

Just as he had deduced before, the reason why Miao Ming Shen was able to discover the exact location of the blue dragon whale was because of a title.

But it was unknown who had taken this title and quietly transferred it to him.

Of all the titles provided by the Merit Obelisk, there were very few types of titles that could be transferred.

There was also another discovery about titles.

After getting a certain title, the Gu Immortal could teleport to any location within a hundred thousand li radius when they leave Dragon Whale Paradise.

This was something that Fang Yuan had lied to Miao Ming Shen’s group before, but it existed in reality.

Right at this time, the words on the Merit Obelisk transformed suddenly.

Be they small sized missions, mid-sized missions, or large sized missions, even super missions were gone, only one ultimate mission was left.

Ultimate mission — Leave with the blue dragon whale and successfully return.

"This is?" Shen Cong Sheng gasped.

Fang Yuan frowned: "This means that above super missions, there are ultimate missions? This description is so vague, I’m afraid it is much harder than getting rid of the black fire!"

At this time, there was a new transformation on the Merit Obelisk.

Shen Cong Sheng stared with wide eyes as he read it: "The mission does not have a time limit, after receiving it, one can stay in the paradise indefinitely. After completing the ultimate mission, one will obtain the qualifications to become the Merit Obelisk Lord and retain their merit points."

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light, he thought to himself: "So Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable made his arrangements already to choose the Merit Obelisk Lord. According to his arrangements, I will be able to become the owner of this rank eight Immortal Gu House. It is a pity, a real pity."

Fang Yuan felt some regret.

He had already uncovered a correct method to obtain the Merit Obelisk, but his strength was limited. He could not even complete the super mission, let alone the ultimate mission.

The ultimate mission was obviously extremely difficult, even a rank eight Gu Immortal would have little hope.

This was easy to deduce.

The Gu Immortals that had come to Dragon Whale Paradise were far more than just Fang Yuan’s group. When the previous groups of people came here, some might have chosen to accept this ultimate mission, but the Merit Obelisk was still in an unowned state.

This meant that no one had ever succeeded!

There was another reason why Fang Yuan did not intend to accept the mission.

It was written on the Merit Obelisk that the time limit for this mission was indefinite.

If it took too long and he waited until he completed the mission before leaving, only to find that Heavenly Court had already completely repaired fate Gu, then what was the point of all this?

"Sigh..." Shen Cong Sheng let out a breath of air, he also regained his logic, recognizing the risks involved, he was no longer dreaming about it.

Fang Yuan stretched out his arm and pointed at the mission on the Merit Obelisk, analyzing it: "Brother Shen, this ultimate mission has given us some extra information. After choosing this mission, the Gu Immortal’s personal merit points will be preserved. This means that those who haven’t accepted it will have all of their remaining merit points cleared as soon as they leave Dragon Whale Paradise."

Shen Cong Sheng nodded repeatedly, his heart clenched: "I’m afraid that’s it. When we first came here, the merit ranking list was empty."

As such, the Gu Immortals would have to spend as much of their accumulated merit points as possible.

But exactly how they would spend it would require some consideration on the part of the Gu Immortals themselves.

The next day.

Somewhere in Eastern Sea, three white lights flashed, the three Immortals Fang Yuan, Shen Cong Sheng, and Shen Shang appeared.

All the Gu Immortals gave up on the ultimate mission and chose to leave.

However, Miao Ming Shen’s group did not leave with Fang Yuan, they still had reservations towards him.

Ren Xiu Ping and Tong Hua, on the other hand, left along with the rest of Shen clan’s Gu Immortals. After this, these two Eastern Sea lone immortals were considered to be completely on board and tied to Shen clan’s ship.

Fang Yuan turned around and looked back, only to see the sky was empty, the sea was calm, there was nothing behind him.

He did not want to give up on this, so he, along with Shen Cong Sheng and Shen Shang, kept scouting the surroundings, but found nothing after all.

"The three of us deliberately chose the location of the blue dragon whale, but where is the blue dragon whale now?"

"We can stop looking for it, this is the method of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. Even though the scene in front of us is very realistic, it might just be an illusion for all we know."

"Come to speak of it, we have not seen the true appearance of the blue dragon whale until now."

The three immortals sighed.

There were really quite many secrets involving the blue dragon whale.

The blue dragon whale was a legendary immemorial beast that was enlightened by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, it gained an immortal aperture and could cultivate, it should have intelligence rivaling ordinary people. But the entire time the Gu Immortals explored the paradise, they had never seen the blue dragon whale initiate contact with them.

The traces of the blue dragon whale were also very mysterious. When did it appear, how did it disappear, and where did it go in the process? Nobody knew.

The three Gu Immortals here were unable to find out the truth even after they had personally explored Dragon Whale Paradise.

Fang Yuan sighed internally, his original plan was to obtain both the blue dragon whale and the Merit Obelisk.

But the truth was, he had simply been dreaming.

This was a meticulous arrangement set up by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, it had some sort of mysterious purpose. It was like the Crazed Demon Cave in Northern Plains, which was created by Limitless Demon Venerable himself and was also a huge arrangement, Fang Yuan could only stop at the eighth level and could not enter the most important core, the ninth level.

"Wait, Crazed Demon Cave... crazed demon?" Fang Yuan suddenly had a thought.

Limitless Demon Venerable created Crazed Demon Cave that had demonic sounds that would cause living beings to go insane. Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable also had a black fire in the Dragon Whale Paradise that could cause insanity.

Was there some sort of relationship?

"Thinking about it, Dragon Whale Paradise had many insane living beings. For example, the tiger king salamander that I killed..." Fang Yuan pondered.

These living beings were beyond saving, Fang Yuan could not find out the reason, he could only kill them.

Other than the absence of black fire, they had nearly the same problem as Shen Shang.

From this point, it showed how powerful Shen Shang was!

This person, even with black fire on him, had only gone insane for some time, he relied on his immense human path foundation and dao marks to suppress it and regain his clarity.

Even Fang Yuan was not confident in achieving this.

He knew that even though he had many dao marks, they were not of human path.

"Currently speaking, Shen Shang is likely the number one person in the five regions when it comes to human path! Even that Old Man Zheng Yuan in Heavenly Court cannot compare to him."

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan inevitably considered the fact that the fate battle was not far away. It was likely that Shen Shang could cause some trouble to Heavenly Court in battle.

The three immortals could not detect the blue dragon whale and decided to bid each other farewell.

They all had significant gains from their expedition to the Dragon Whale Paradise. But the one who gained the most was undoubtedly Fang Yuan.

While alone, Fang Yuan transformed back into the appearance of Qi Sea Ancestor and returned to qi sea under concealment.

The large formation in the depths of qi sea was still in operation, and in the formation, he met Wu Shuai, who was guarding the place.

Wu Shuai had gone to Southern Border in order to trade dream realms with Chi clan. Chi Qu You saw the opportunity and raised the price, Wu Shuai thought of the big picture and did not want to accept Chi Qu You’s price, he planned to settle the score after everything was over.

But to think that Wu Yong found out about the loss of the dream realms. He became enraged, he went to Chi Qu You for a discussion.

Chi Qu You naturally denied all accusations, he refused to admit his involvement.

But after this warning, Chi Qu You had to stop and temporarily end the dream realm transactions.

Wu Shuai had no choice but to return to Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan met with Wu Shuai and learned about the current situation of the world.

It was quite bad.

In Southern Border, Wu Yong’s influence was growing. Because of the mysterious disappearance of the dream realms, Chi Qu You faced much suspicion. Wu Yong used this chance to consolidate his influence over the entire Southern Alliance.

In Western Desert, however, the clone Fang Di Chang, who Fang Yuan was placing much hopes on, was currently facing a tough predicament.

After he allied with several super forces to repel Heavenly Court, a blood path great expert appeared in Western Desert, he caused chaos everywhere. He seemed to hate super forces, Fang clan became one of his victims.

Other than this, an immemorial desolate beast started to cause havoc in Fang clan’s ice-fire desert.

This immemorial desolate beast was very crafty, Fang clan failed many attempts to capture or kill it.

As for Profound Literature grotto-heaven, Li Xiao Bai was having smooth progress.

In Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, Zhan Bu Du was facing a huge problem, his life was at risk.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

The sky could not be seen for the last few months, the entire grotto-heaven was covered in black poisonous smoke.

The poisonous smoke covered the entire sky and rumbled continuously, occasionally turned into dragon shapes that rampaged and caused destruction to the world.

Within Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, there were anguished cries, the future was bleak.

Star Collection City was the largest city in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, it was also now the largest gathering spot of all of humanity here.

The walls of Star Collection City towered high, there were many towers within the city.

Zhan Bu Du was standing on the highest tower, looking up at the rumbling poisonous smoke in the sky.

He looked exhausted and was bruised all over.

Behind him, a female Beast Warrior was healing his wounds.

"My main body has adjusted the speed of time flow in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven to become too fast, it caused frequent tribulations to descend. In this grotto-heaven, any calamity or tribulation will turn into a beast calamity.

However, before the former beast calamity is annihilated, the new one will arrive. These beast calamities are spread all over the place, taking the attention of all the Gu Immortals in the grotto-heaven. After gradually accumulating, they all merged together and became the monsters they are today! Sigh... this time, my main body has made a mistake."

Zhan Bu Du’s brows were locked in worry.

The Combat Beast Warrior who was treating his wounds advised: "Little Du, you’d better rest. You just fought a fierce battle for three consecutive days and nights without sleep. If this continues, no matter how tough your body is, you won’t be able to survive."

Zhan Bu Du sighed deeply: "I am now the strongest Combat Beast Warrior here, I must fight to the best of my ability. If I am on the battlefield, fewer people will be sacrificed!"

"Little Du, you’ve done well enough. If you hadn’t sensed something was wrong and informed everyone beforehand, we would not have had the major cities gather their civilians in advance. In that case, there would definitely be deaths and injuries. You are truly worthy of being our savior, you saved the lives of hundreds of thousands of people." The Combat Beast Warrior said.

Even though she was a senior Combat Beast Warrior, she felt deep appreciation and admiration towards this junior Zhan Bu Du.

Zhan Bu Du had managed to gain the recognition of everyone in this grotto-heaven during this period. Not only was it because of his high battle strength, but more crucially, his love for civilians, his selfless sacrifice, and his repeated battles on the front lines.

Right now, Zhan Bu Du was a great hero, he was a role model and the idol of all the commoners.

But in reality, Zhan Bu Du was only trying his best to preserve his possessions. Whether it was him or Fang Yuan, they had already regarded Beast Calamity grotto-heaven as their own property.

Although Beast Calamity grotto-heaven had preserved most of its vitality because of Zhan Bu Du’s timely warning, the things that had been lost were still enough for Zhan Bu Du to feel distress.

"Here we go again!" Zhan Bu Du looked tense suddenly.

The Beast Warriors around him also tensed up and looked up at the sky at once.

Only to see that in the sky, poisonous smoke fiercely swirled and roared like a dragon, a giant dragon made of poisonous smoke descended.

The dragon’s body was so huge that it stretched for eight hundred feet, and the dragon head was like a small mountain, ruthlessly crashing into Star Collection City on the ground.

Once it hit, half of Star Collection City would be instantly destroyed, and after the poisonous smoke spread, more than a hundred thousand people would die.

Of course, Zhan Bu Du would not allow this to happen.

With an eagle’s cry, an arrow-tailed eagle flew out of his immortal aperture.

Combat Beast Warrior transformation!

In an instant, he transformed into an eagle-headed person, fiercely flapped his wings as he flew high into the air.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Zhan Bu Du attacked madly, sending out countless wind blades that were extremely sharp and fierce like a storm.

Hundreds and thousands of giant wind blades hit the dragon head, the poisonous smoke dragon head lasted for a moment before collapsing.

"It’s Little Du."

"He helped us again."

"Worthy of Little Du."

The Combat Beast Warriors reacted one after another, expressing praises.

The civilians located in various parts of Star Collection City, upon seeing this scene, shouted "World Savior Zhan Bu Du", and soon, such voices quickly spread! All over the city, commotions were rising, filling the entire Star Collection City with frenzied cheers.

Zhan Bu Du did not relax but looked up into the sky vigilantly, shouting: "Attention everyone, another wave of attack is coming."

Poisonous smoke surged and more than a dozen poisonous smoke dragons suddenly appeared, rushing towards Star Collection City.

The people’s cheering came to an abrupt halt.

The Combat Beast Warriors were instantly pale as paper.

In the past, the attack was at most three to five poisonous smoke dragons, but now the number had multiplied fivefold, and it was simply not something they could resist.

"Is this going to be the end of us?"

"Damn it!"

"I don’t want to die!"

Just at the critical moment, the Star Snail Hall suddenly surged with a blinding starlight, and then a giant suddenly appeared and established itself on the battlefield.

The people were overjoyed, Zhan Bu Du also pretended to be extremely surprised, but in his mind he already knew: "The old fellow is finally willing to take action."

This was the current generation Combat Beast King, using the corpse of the Star Sea Snail to transform, he had the highest battle strength in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven and was also the final trump card.

When Fang Yuan had transformed into a bull-headed demon god, he had also fought with the Combat Beast King.

The giant was clad in heavy armor and kept punching, fist shadows shot out violently, like meteors rushing into the sky.

The meteors hit the poisonous smoke dragon heads with extraordinary effect. Several poisonous smoke dragon heads were destroyed on the spot, the momentum of the poisonous smoke dragon heads was ruthlessly stalled, which gave some crucial time for the other Combat Beast Warriors.

Next, the giant’s feet stomped on the ground and its hands supported the sky, a hemispherical curtain of starlight rose up, enveloping the city.

The poisonous smoke dragons were temporarily blocked out by the giant curtain of starlight, one by one the Combat Beast Warriors were enveloped in a layer of blue light, floating out and engaging the poisonous smoke dragons fiercely in battle.

The Combat Beast Warriors were merely flesh and blood, they were quickly at a disadvantage.

The poisonous smoke giant dragons kept on coming, no matter how many of them were blown up, there would be new poisonous smoke giant dragons produced.

"If this continues, I’m afraid that today will be the day Star Collection City gets destroyed." Realizing this, the Combat Beast King made up his mind at last.

He called out loudly, his voice echoing through the battlefield: "The situation is urgent, Little Du, go and take the last inheritance. You are our final hope to save everyone today!"

"This old fellow is finally willing to give me the last part of his inheritance!" Zhan Bu Du sneered in his mind.

Currently, he had already obtained the Beast Calamity true inheritance in various important places, and only the last part was missing.

He had been in Star Collection City for many days, but the current generation Combat Beast King had not mentioned anything about it. Zhan Bu Du also had to temporarily pretend that he did not know the last part of the inheritance was in Star Collection City.

"Little Du, go, I’ll be guarding this place."

"Quickly go, Little Du, it’s up to you."

"We’ll buy you time, even if it is the last moment of our lives, we’ll do our duty!"

The Combat Beast Warriors urged.

Undeniably, the Gu Immortals in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven were really different from the outside world of the five regions, they had the spirit to sacrifice and contribute their lives.

Zhan Bu Du flew to the underground of the Star Snail Hall and arrived at the last altar.

The altar shined brightly, the qilin heavenly spirit appeared all of a sudden.

"Oh young man, you are qualified to inherit the entire Beast Calamity true inheritance. It’s time to tell you the truth about the world." The voice of the qilin heavenly spirit was like that of a young child, crisp and cute.

After receiving the memories, Zhan Bu Du showed a look of shock and disbelief: "So our world is so small, the true way to use Gu worms is not by transformation! This is too unexpected."

"Heavenly spirit, what do I do now?"

The qilin heavenly spirit stood in front of Zhan Bu Du as it lowered its head: "Master, I don’t have any method now. Ever since the change in the tributary of the River of Time, the tribulations in the grotto-heaven had been appearing non stop. Among these tribulations, there is one myriad tribulation among them! I’m afraid I cannot escape this now, I will open the door now, master, you need to escape quickly."

The moment Zhan Bu Du inherited the complete Beast Calamity true inheritance, the qilin heavenly spirit acknowledged him as master.

Zhan Bu Du sighed deeply and was about to open his mouth, but suddenly his expression changed drastically, revealing genuine surprise: "No need, my main body has already arrived!"

At the critical moment, Fang Yuan’s main body finally arrived.

Looking at the poisonous smoke everywhere, Fang Yuan also felt a headache.

Zhan Bu Du ordered the qilin heavenly spirit to open the grotto-heaven’s entrance, Fang Yuan came in here with no obstruction.

Because he was no longer an intruder, and because the qilin heavenly spirit acknowledged a master, myriad beings assimilation transformation was no longer taking effect on Fang Yuan’s main body, he was able to come in personally.

Thus, the Combat Beast Warriors in the battlefield saw an unimaginable scene.

A man was floating in mid-air, his aura as strong as the sea. The poisonous smoke dragons seemed to be stimulated by the mysterious visitor, most of them turned towards Fang Yuan to kill him.

"Who is he?"

"Get away!"

"Oh no, it’s too late."

The Combat Beast Warriors roared in rage and despair as they watched Fang Yuan being heavily surrounded by the poisonous smoke dragons.

At the moment the poisonous smoke dragons descended on him, Fang Yuan made his move.

Rumble!

In an instant, qi currents surged as wind and waves soared. The sky and earth changed color, all the poisonous smoke receded.

Fang Yuan stood proudly in the sky, the poisonous smoke dragons around him dissipated, even the thick layer of poisonous smoke above his head was torn open to expose a huge hole. Bright light shined down through the round hole, causing Fang Yuan to be bathed in sunlight.

The Combat Beast Warriors opened their mouths one by one, extremely shocked.

As soon as Fang Yuan made his move, he displayed such intense might in battle. Furthermore,he did not use any transformations at all, he had used such great battle strength just by himself.

This scene caused the long-standing cultivation thought process of the Combat Beast Warriors to crumble.

For a moment, the crowd was at a loss.

At this time, Fang Yuan slowly spoke, his voice clearly entering the ears of everyone present: "Little Du, where are you? Father is here."

The group of immortals were surprised again!

Zhan Bu Du flew out, looking surprised and teary-eyed: "Father, you’ve finally come out of seclusion. Please save the world."

At the next moment, the entire Star Collection City went into an uproar.

It turned out that this mysterious man was actually Zhan Bu Du’s father, no wonder he was so powerful!

This was a secluded expert.

They were saved, they were definitely saved!

Fang Yuan sighed and spoke in a tone of bitter loss: "I never expected such a disaster to occur this time when I stayed in closed cultivation. It’s a pity that I was isolated from the outside world during my seclusion, if I had known earlier, I would never have let these poisonous smoke dragons wreak havoc for so long."

After saying that, Fang Yuan struck again and quickly dispersed the entire area of poisonous smoke.

However, there was too much poisonous smoke, spreading throughout the grotto-heaven, soon the poisonous smoke was replenished through the smoke at other areas.

"Father, the situation is now under control, let’s go down and take a rest first." Zhan Bu Du said.

"Okay." Fang Yuan nodded.

Thus, the two of them slowly flew into Star Collection City amidst countless gazes of adoration, longing, awe, and curiosity.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Heavenly Court.

Star Constellation Chessboard was half a foot off the ground, slowly rotating between Fairy Zi Wei and Feng Jin Huang, blossoming with brilliant starlight.

The specks of starlight were so dazzling that they resembled blue fireflies, lightly jumping, sometimes swirling around the two, sometimes burrowing into their brains and colliding.

The two sat opposite each other, both with their eyes closed and brows knitted tightly, pondering over some difficult question.

The starlight slowly disappeared, Star Constellation Chessboard flew into Fairy Zi Wei’s hands.

Fairy Zi Wei slowly opened her eyes, but Feng Jin Huang did not, she fell softly to the ground as she had passed out on the spot.

"This child..." Fairy Zi Wei was not nervous, she merely sighed.

She knew Feng Jin Huang’s condition like the back of her hand.

In the end, Feng Jin Huang was only a Gu Master, unlike Fairy Zi Wei who was a rank eight great expert. The original deduction speed arranged by Fairy Zi Wei was very suitable for Feng Jin Huang.

However, Feng Jin Huang insisted that she did not want to slow down the progress and waste Fairy Zi Wei’s time because of her own reasons. After all, Fairy Zi Wei was a key figure in Heavenly Court.

When Feng Jin Huang slowly woke up, she found that she had already left the deduction hall and had returned to Central Great Hall.

"Well done, Huang Er!" Duke Long looked at Feng Jin Huang and was extremely pleased: "You have actually improved the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, eliminating the flaw of this physique entirely. You are indeed worthy of being the fated Great Dream Immortal Venerable."

Feng Jin Huang was a little embarrassed from the praise: "Master, to be honest, I was only able to do so by coincidence. Do you remember the killer move shatter dream I created previously? This modification was done based on its results. The entire process was thanks to Lady Zi Wei’s deductions, I was only playing a minor supplementary role in modifying the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique."

Fairy Zi Wei smiled: "Little Huang Er, you’re too modest. It is precisely because you provided the correct direction that we were able to make our deductions. If not for that, I’m afraid that even if I had made many calculations, I would have gained nothing."

Duke Long spoke with great solemness: "Huang Er, this perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique is extremely significant to you, it is the key to your future achievements. You must grasp it well and remember that you must undergo immortal ascension using the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique in the future."

Feng Jin Huang had never seen such solemnity from Duke Long before, she nodded her head: "Yes master, I will definitely keep that in mind."

Duke Long nodded: "You can go, I still have important matters to discuss with Fairy Zi Wei."

"This disciple takes her leave." Feng Jin Huang immediately left obediently.

"This time, Huang Er was able to obtain the perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, you deserve credit for that!" Duke Long said to Fairy Zi Wei.

It was indeed so.

Not only did Fairy Zi Wei play a major role in the deduction, but the original Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique was also obtained because she looked through the memories of Spectral Soul.

Without this foundation, no matter how much inspiration or direction Feng Jin Huang had, she would not be able to make any progress.

Fairy Zi Wei smiled: "This is my duty. If you hadn’t captured Spectral Soul alive, I wouldn’t have been able to soul search him. Speaking of which, the one Huang Er has to thank is you, her master."

Duke Long shook his head slightly: "This is shameful, as a master, I actually have very little to teach. I don’t know anything about dream path, but fortunately, Huang Er possesses an extraordinary talent in dream path. It is also an honor for me to be able to do something for the future Great Dream Immortal Venerable. How has the practice of the killer move benevolent equality gone recently?"

Fairy Zi Wei’s face turned solemn: "There is no problem with benevolence Gu, as for the killer move, I have successfully activated it several times."

"Did you find anything strange?" Duke Long pursued.

Fairy Zi Wei denied: "Not at all."

Duke Long intoned: "This means that benevolent equality is effective. But why haven’t we seen any results?"

"Yes." Fairy Zi Wei’s eyebrows were knitted: "Using benevolent equality to deal with Spring Autumn Cicada is a plan we have had all along. Looking at Fang Yuan’s recent actions, all of them have been well planned and prepared, such as the battle in the River of Time, or the Dragon Palace fight, he had a good head start. He must have been reborn already, but why does no one on our side have memories of the previous life?"

The effect of benevolent equality was just as the name implied. Once Fairy Zi Wei used the killer move, the people that she looked at during the process would experience equivalent changes to their conditions.

For example, after Fairy Zi Wei used benevolent equality, she saw Fang Yuan’s rebirth. At the same time, she looked towards Duke Long.

Then if Fang Yuan self-detonated using the killer move spring autumn success, his memories would go back to his past self. Duke Long would receive the same treatment, his memories would also go back to his former self.

"We don’t know exactly what happened in Fang Yuan’s last life. Previously, it was speculated that we couldn’t borrow benevolence Gu, causing benevolent equality to be unusable. But now it seems we indeed gained this method."

"So was this result the effect of Fang Yuan’s rebirth, and we actually did not gain benevolent equality in our previous life, or was it because something happened to me in the previous life, causing me to not use benevolent equality on him?"

Fairy Zi Wei was in a predicament.

A while after being awakened and understanding the current situation, Duke Long proposed to use benevolent equality to deal with Spring Autumn Cicada.

Spring Autumn Cicada was refined by his disciple, Red Lotus Demon Venerable, Demon Venerable knew the ways to deal with this cicada.

The time of Fang Yuan’s rebirth was easily calculable by Fairy Zi Wei, it was at the time when Heavenly Court attacked Lang Ya blessed land.

The Fang Yuan before this and the Fang Yuan after this time had a different style of action and a completely different success rate in his plans.

Before Heavenly Court attacked Lang Ya blessed land, Fang Yuan failed to regain the upper extreme heavenly eagle and was trapped by Lu Wei Yin.

After that, Fang Yuan had countless adequate preparations to deal with Heavenly Court’s attack. Heavenly Court’s side was repeatedly restrained, their advantages could not be utilized while their disadvantages were infinitely magnified, yet Fang Yuan was just the opposite.

Duke Long pondered: "Actually, there is another possibility. In the previous life, you successfully used benevolent equality, but you saw no one else but Fang Yuan. Or perhaps this person is not a Gu Immortal who is loyal to Heavenly Court."

There was a slight flicker of light in the eyes of Fairy Zi Wei: "If that’s the case, then who could this crucial person be?"

Longevity Heaven.

Bzzz bzzz bzzz....

Orange-yellow light flickered endlessly, enveloping the sky of Longevity Heaven.

Next, an aura started from an extremely weak state and grew rapidly, soon filling the world and shaking people’s hearts.

Such a change had already attracted the attention of Five Elements Grandmaster, Bull Demon, and Flower Lady.

Five Elements Grandmaster was a lone cultivator of Northern Plains, but after getting trapped by Longevity Heaven, he felt despair after struggling and decided to join Longevity Heaven, he was not stationed in Longevity Heaven permanently.

Bull Demon and Flower Lady were a duo that took the role of North Desolation Immortal together.

"What happened?" Five Elements Grandmaster was very uncertain.

Bull Demon and Flower Lady looked at each other, seeing the joy on each other’s faces, the latter giggled: "West Desolation Immortal Bing Sai Chuan has awakened!"

"Bing Sai Chuan?" Five Elements Grandmaster’s brows rose, he felt that the name was familiar.

At this moment, there was a loud roar, ripples of light flickered in the sky, rainbows extended like rivers as they pierced through the horizons.

A figure walked down from the river, he had a tall body and soft facial features, but his eyes were extremely sharp and icy, emitting a cold gaze. From his right ear to the left corner of his lips, there was an ugly scar, it was flickering with white light, while emitting the coldness of a thousand year profound ice.

Five Elements Grandmaster was deeply shocked: "I remember now, this is the Bing Sai Chuan who was born in Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s generation, he was a rank eight legend, a time path great expert, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had tried three times before subduing him. He did not die, he is actually the West Desolation Immortal of Longevity Heaven?!"

Longevity Heaven was a bit different from Heavenly Court, it had Four Desolation Immortals and Eight Extremities, a total of twelve positions. Among which, the Four Desolation Immortals were only meant for rank eight Gu Immortals, while the Eight Extremities needed at least rank seven cultivation level, and they had to be elites among rank sevens.

"Greetings, Senior West Desolation." Bull Demon and Flower Lady quickly went to greet him while Five Elements Grandmaster followed after with a reverent expression.

West Desolation Immortal Bing Sai Chuan’s seniority was simply too high.

Bing Sai Chuan went up to the three, he nodded after looking around: "I am awake but I do not have much lifespan, time is limited. Give me the information of the current world, I need to know about it."

Longevity Heaven had very comprehensive information.

They had detailed information of the collapse of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, the reappearance of Dragon Palace in Eastern Sea, and Heavenly Court’s Central Continent Refinement Path Convention.

"Fang Yuan... he actually extorted Southern Border’s righteous path using rank seven cultivation level, while causing huge problems for Heavenly Court time and again in the River of Time. He is truly a world-shaking person!"

"Qi Sea Ancestor... able to fight equally with Duke Long? This is very rare, Eastern Sea has a lot of hidden depths."

"There’s also Fang Di Chang, he actually refined Divine Bean Palace. Haha, this world really has no lack of experts!"

After gaining intel, Bing Sai Chuan laughed loudly with a heroic aura.

After his laughter, Bing Sai Chuan’s eyes shined with bright light: "Since Fang Yuan is the person who destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, he is the crucial person who Lord Giant Sun Immortal Venerable mentioned."

Bull Demon, Flower Lady, and Five Elements Grandmaster were stunned.

Bing Sai Chuan’s words involved the deep secrets of history.

Did Giant Sun Immortal Venerable predict that Fang Yuan would destroy Eighty-Eight True Yang Building? If he could predict that, why would he let Fang Yuan succeed?

Bing Sai Chuan did not answer them, he gave his orders: "We cannot let fate Gu be repaired completely, we need to stop them during this Refinement Path Convention. We have to contact Fang Yuan now and make an alliance!"

"What?" The three immortals were shocked.

Bing Sai Chuan frowned: "Can any of you contact Fang Yuan?"

The three immortals shook their heads in a daze.

Bing Sai Chuan’s brows furrowed even tighter: "Then what are you waiting for? Do I have to search for the way to contact Fang Yuan myself?"

In the last life, Lang Ya Sect had joined Longevity Heaven, so they easily obtained a way to contact Fang Yuan from Lang Ya land spirit.

But now, Fang Yuan absorbed the entire four races variant human alliance including Lang Ya blessed land, Longevity Heaven was not involved.

Bing Sai Chuan wanted to contact Fang Yuan but he was stuck at the first step.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Northern Plains.

"Are you all prepared?" Xue Er stood in the snow crystal formation as she observed the tens of frost qi lumps.

"We are prepared, supreme elder." A female snowman rank five Gu Master knelt on the ground, speaking reverently.

"Then go, remember to attend to them enthusiastically. Of course, if you suffer any misgivings, do not take it wordlessly." Xue Er thought about it and said.

"Yes." The female snowman Gu Master left.

Xue Er sighed a little.

Ever since she had been placed here by Fang Yuan, she had been dedicated to the development of the snowman tribe. With the aid of Fang Yuan’s snow crystal formation, Xue Er worked hard and the size of the snowman tribe quadrupled under her command, turning into a huge variant human tribe.

"My husband has finally brought in the human race... If I had the time, I’d love to go see for myself. Unfortunately, I can’t get away here." Xue Er looked at the frost qi, she felt downcast.

She manipulated the formation, carefully maintaining it. Ever since Fang Yuan annexed Qi Sea grotto-heaven, his qi path dao marks had risen greatly, causing a tremendous impact to the sovereign immortal aperture, the effects had yet to stop, still gradually transforming every aspect of the sovereign immortal aperture.

For example, the snowman tribe with Xue Er in charge had been experiencing a surge in frost qi, every few months, Xue Er had to come here personally to manipulate the formation and maintain it.

If the frost qi gathers to a certain extent, beyond the limit, this frost qi would turn into a frost tide.

A frost tide would be a calamity for the physically weak snowmen.

As for the surroundings, it would be heavily damaged too. In fact, when the frost tide spreads out, it would be a problem for the whole of Mini Northern Plains.

Because of the regional walls, the other four mini regions would not be affected by the frost tide.

Not long ago, Fang Yuan sent a letter to inform Xue Er that a city would be placed near the snowman tribe’s location. By then, he would need the snowman tribe to gather their people and send gifts while interacting with the newcomers.

Xue Er naturally followed his instructions, but all along, her variant human group had been suppressed by humans all along, asking her to interact with the humans now made her feel some lingering fear from her past.

If possible, Xue Er would like the whole of Mini Northern Plains to be ruled by snowmen.

But that was just an impossible dream.

Fang Yuan was a human after all, when his immortal aperture gets developed to an extent, he would bring in humans to live. That was the sign that an immortal aperture was prospering and growing.

The snowman tribe’s group had just moved out when Mini Western Desert’s inkman group arrived at its destination.

As the Inkman City Lord, Mo Tan Sang flew high in the sky, quietly awaiting.

"It’s coming." Suddenly, his eyes shined with bright light.

In the sky, a dazzling rainbow light flashed brightly.

Around this colored profound light, the earth pushed out in all directions. The colored profound light grew larger and larger, gradually revealing the vague illusory phantom of a city.

This phantom became more and more real, eventually the brilliant light dissipated, adding thousands of miles of land to the original location.

A city was located at the center of the newly added land, it was the Sacred Eagle City of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

The inkman Gu Master group was already kneeling on the ground, praising and cheering at such a mystical sight, only when Mo Tan Sang gave the orders did they stand up.

The gates of Sacred Eagle City opened, the city folks inside had already been informed and quickly gathered into a welcoming party.

The two parties met at the city gates, as contact officially began.

The people of Sacred Eagle City curiously sized up the dark-skinned, white-haired inkmen, the inkmen gradually let go of their worries.

They had also been living under the heavy pressure of the human race for a long time, but they did not expect this new group of people to be so easygoing. The conversations stemmed from a place of equality, which made the inkmen happy from the bottom of their hearts.

"Is this Lord Mo Tang Sang?" The Eagle Warrior who was in charge of Sacred Eagle City flew towards Mo Tan Sang: "From now on, we will be in your care."

"Likewise, likewise." Mo Tan Sang smiled: "You don’t have to be too polite, we’re all allies here."

Mini Blue Heaven.

The cloud soil gathered into a small hanging continent.

After the starlight flashed, a majestic city was suddenly added to this originally empty continent.

This city was scarred and devastated, It was Star Collection City, which had resisted the poisonous smoke grand tribulation earlier.

In the center of Star Collection City, there was already a brand new Star Snail Hall, which was a mortal Gu House that Fang Yuan had purposely built.

As for the Star Sea Snail that originally served as the hall, it had been put into the treasury by Fang Yuan. This was an immemorial desolate beast, and the shell of the snail was an rank eight immortal material. If it was handed over to the old Combat Beast King, he would not know how to process it, he would only let the dao marks on the immortal material dissipate naturally. That would be too wasteful.

"Is this your father’s world? It is so huge." The old Combat Beast King quietly left Star Collection City as he flew around, sighing to himself deeply.

Accompanying him was none other than Zhan Bu Du: "This is Mini Blue Heaven. There are nine other places like this in my father’s immortal aperture world. I’m sure we’ll be able to live well here."

The old Combat Beast King nodded and asked: "How do we contact the others?"

"Use this. It is an information path mortal Gu." Zhan Bu Du took out a mortal Gu and handed it to the old Combat Beast King.

The Combat Beast King’s cultivation was at rank eight but his knowledge was very shallow, this simple information path mortal Gu made him marvel in awe: "I can’t believe that Gu worms can be this useful."

"This is how they should be used. The Beast Calamity true inheritance that I received says this as well." Zhan Bu Du smiled shyly: "Please don’t blame me, Grandpa Combat Beast King, my father wanted me to keep this as a secret."

The old Combat Beast King nodded: "I understand. I wonder what your father wants me to do?"

"For the time being, we would like Grandpa Combat Beast King and the other warriors to learn the traditional Gu cultivation method. This place is not safe, we have strong enemies outside." Zhan Bu Du said vaguely.

The old Combat Beast King was shook: "Your father is willing to impart the true cultivation way to us?"

"Of course he is. We are all allies." Zhan Bu Du smiled.

Fang Yuan annexed Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Getting rid of the myriad tribulation in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven expended a lot of his immortal essence and effort, but it could not stop Fang Yuan.

He almost singlehandedly got rid of the grotto-heaven’s crisis, Fang Yuan’s reputation also rose to its peak.

Next, with the help of Zhan Bu Du, the owner of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, he successfully annexed Beast Calamity grotto-heaven and brought it into his sovereign immortal aperture.

Different from the previous life, Fang Yuan had already made all the preparations now, he deduced everything in advance.

After annexing the grotto-heaven, he split up the grotto-heaven and placed the different parts all over the sovereign immortal aperture.

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven had several major gathering spots, some contained a portion of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven’s true inheritance.

Fang Yuan placed Sacred Eagle City, Dark Valley, Spirit Spring Forest, Mountain

Cliff City, Star Collection City in Mini Western Desert, Mini Southern Border, Mini Central Continent, Mini Northern Plains and Mini Blue Heaven respectively.

Of course, other than that, the many major resource points in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven were also handled properly by Fang Yuan.

Fully absorbing this grotto-heaven would take time.

The fusing of ecologies needed to reach a balance, time was needed for that, as well as the patience of the Gu Immortals managing the place.

Fang Yuan obtained myriad beings assimilation transformation again, the qilin heavenly spirit was also alive at the largest piece of territory.

Fang Yuan gained more than two hundred thousand transformation path dao marks from this!

In the previous life, Beast Calamity grotto-heaven gave him over a hundred thousand transformation path dao marks only. But in this life, because of Fang Yuan’s arrangements, there was ample time to trigger the second myriad tribulation.

The original owner of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven only survived the first myriad tribulation before dying. By the time Fang Yuan discovered Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, its second myriad tribulation was approaching.

After passing the second myriad tribulation, Beast Calamity grotto-heaven gained another hundred thousand dao marks.

Thus, in terms of transformation path dao marks, Fang Yuan gained about double of them this time.

The more dao marks he had, the better it was for him.

"Oh, Bing Sai Chuan has awakened, he wants to cooperate?" Fang Yuan received this information and smiled.

Even though Longevity Heaven could not contact Fang Yuan directly, they found a method to do so.

They knew that Southern Border’s righteous path had been extorted by him before, they definitely had ways to contact him. Thus, by finding one of Southern Border’s super forces, and paying a high price, they would gain this method.

Bing Sai Chuan immediately talked to Fang Yuan, saying that he wished to cooperate with him.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan was a little puzzled, but this time, he understood the reason.

"Bing Sai Chuan wants to work together and gather everyone’s strength to try to snatch fate Gu away."

"However, I need them to attack Heavenly Court as well, they will test the water for me and lure away some firepower."

Fang Yuan was wary about many things in Heavenly Court.

For example, Genesis Lotus’ painting path method, or the game of chess between two venerables in Imperfection Regret Pavilion.

Fang Yuan agreed to cooperate with Bing Sai Chuan.

This instead made Bing Sai Chuan have some doubts: "Why did Fang Yuan agree to this so readily? He is likely suspicious of us, he wants to see our future actions."

Bing Sai Chuan frowned, he felt that he should find an opportunity to fight together with Fang Yuan and show his sincerity.

But after thinking about it, Bing Sai Chuan could not find any suitable targets.

In the previous life, he had no such worries. Be it the River of Time’s stone lotus island or Dragon Palace, he could ally with Fang Yuan to fight.

But in this life, Fang Yuan changed many things. He obtained Dragon Palace in advance, the River of Time battle ended in Heavenly Court’s defeat, they had not recovered even now, still being fearful to step into this forbidden ground that Fang Yuan personally created.

Heavenly Court.

Qin Ding Ling looked at Feng Jiu Ge, smiling: "Tell me, since you approached me personally, what is your request?

Towards this exemplary junior who was also the Dao Guardian of the future Great Dream Immortal Venerable, Qin Ding Ling was quite appreciative.

Feng Jiu Ge hesitated for a while before speaking: "I would like to borrow a rank eight luck path Immortal Gu from senior — Responsive Luck."

Qin Ding Ling was slightly surprised, before she realized: "Sure, I agree to your request."

Saying so, she handed responsive luck Immortal Gu to Feng Jiu Ge on the spot.

Feng Jiu Ge was slightly stunned.

Qin Ding Ling said: "I know that you are creating a new killer move, this responsive luck Immortal Gu must be very helpful to you, otherwise, with your nature, you will not ask to borrow my Gu worm."

Feng Jiu Ge nodded, receiving responsive luck Immortal Gu: "That is correct."

He had already created an eighty percent complete destiny song, he found that rank eight fate armor Immortal Gu could not shoulder the grand and vast destiny song, he needed another luck path Immortal Gu as the core.

With Feng Jiu Ge’s current understanding, responsive luck Immortal Gu was the most suitable for him.

Qin Ding Ling looked at this Immortal Gu and sighed: "The Immortal Gu recipe for responsive luck Immortal Gu was not actually created by me, I had secretly taken a look at the manuscript written by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. In the future, if you use this Gu to deal with the Northern Plains Gu Immortals, we will give them a taste of their own medicine. I will give this Immortal Gu to you."

Feng Jiu Ge thanked Qin Ding Ling as he said: "This Gu is not enough, I will need to head to the River of Time, view the past and present, and observe the paths of all lives."

Qin Ding Ling frowned: "According to what I know, even though Heavenly Court is working at full speed, we have only created one time path Immortal Gu House as of now. Going to the River of Time now is simply courting death. Let me take a look at your luck, to try to find a hidden chance for you."

Feng Jiu Ge thanked her once again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The River of Time flowed endlessly.

Heavenly Court.

Discussion hall.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals gathered, there were few Gu Immortals who did not come, this was the largest gathering that Heavenly Court had in the last thousand years.

Duke Long sat at the highest seat, he looked around: "We have explained our plan, go ahead and execute it. Whether we can restore the glory of Heavenly Court will depend on everyone’s hard work."

"We will do our best!" All of the immortals resounded, they were very motivated.

The Central Continent Refinement Path Convention that would affect all five regions and the future of the world was about to begin!

Once news got out, the world was shaken.

Thanks to Fang Yuan’s intentional spread of news, all the Gu Immortals knew of the importance of this Refinement Path Convention. But mortal Gu Masters had no idea, they thought that this Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was like the usual ones in the past.

Gu Masters started to move, heading towards Central Continent.

Each Central Continent Refinement Path Convention would attract the Gu Masters of the other four regions to participate, it involved all five regions and was a huge event.

But this time was slightly different from the beginning.

Western Desert.

A huge group of Gu Masters stood in front of the regional wall.

A youngster sighed loudly: "Father, if I were not seeing this personally, I simply could not believe there is such an amazing thing in the world."

"This is the regional wall. Once we get past this, we will reach Central Continent." The middle aged Gu Master beside the youngster said: "After entering the regional wall, our vision will be restricted, by then, you need to stay by my side and not get lost. Understood?"

"Yes father, I will." The youngster nodded obediently.

"Mm." Zhang Quan looked at his son Zhang Ping, feeling very proud.

His son had strong refinement path talent, for his future development, Zhang Quan brought him on a journey to participate in the Central Continent Refinement

Path Convention, to train his refinement path ability and also to gain some knowledge.

"What sound is that?" At the next moment, Zhang Quan looked up in confusion.

Next, his pupils shrunk as he showed great shock.

A huge meteor that was the size of a hill crashed down towards them.

The surrounding Gu Masters screamed in fear.

"Why is this happening? We’re doomed!" Instantly, Zhang Quan felt great regret. If he had decided to travel to Central Continent alone, his son would not die with him.

Boom!

The meteor crashed down on the ground, causing an earthshaking explosion.

Zhang Quan and the rest died without intact corpses.

In the sky, an inkman Gu Immortal looked around coldly before leaving.

Similar scenes were happening all over the five regions.

These Gu Immortals were all Fang Yuan’s subordinates, they had received his order to prevent people from joining the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention.

Next, Fang Yuan publicly announced in treasure yellow heaven: "If anyone joins the Refinement Path Convention, you will be making an enemy out of me, one day, I will find you and settle the score!"

The Gu Immortals of the five regions sighed in amazement: The Central Continent Refinement Path Convention had just started but Fang Yuan made his move already. As expected of the Little Demon Venerable, he was rampant and brutal.

Heavenly Court was enraged!

Because the assault of Fang Yuan’s subordinates would cause much fewer Gu Masters to join the convention, it would be disadvantageous in repairing fate Gu.

Different from the previous life, Fang Yuan ordered his subordinates to only move around Northern Plains, Southern Border, Western Desert, and Eastern Sea. This way, Central Continent and Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals could not head to the other four regions and save these people.

During this period of time, if Central Continent and Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals head to the other four regions, they would be angering and provoking the other four regions’ super forces.

Heavenly Court could only accuse Fang Yuan of his heinous crimes and communicate with the righteous paths of the other regions to get them to take revenge on this terribly demonic act.

The righteous paths of the other four regions responded loudly but they took little action, even if they did anything, they were merely doing it superficially, creating a lot of noise but little effect.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan acted in Central Continent itself and was faced with much obstruction not long after.

In this life, Fang Yuan took action in advance, he immediately gained huge results in battle.

The waves of Gu Masters rushing to Central Continent immediately ceased.

Nobody wanted to die just because of one Central Continent Refinement Path Convention.

Furthermore, the four regions’ super forces had also stopped their own Gu Masters from joining the convention, it caused this current Refinement Path Convention to be very sparse in attendants.

Central Continent, Unification Sect.

As one of the sign up locations of the Refinement Path Convention, it was filled with people and commotion as well.

"The Refinement Path Convention is about to start! Strange, why do I not see people from the other four regions?" Luo Sheng sighed.

In the previous Refinement Path Convention, he had lost to a Northern Plains Gu Master by chance, this time, he was trying to find that Northern Plains Gu Master again for a rematch.

Luo Sheng was eager to prove himself.

"But Central Continent is too large, the five regions are too broad, geniuses are everywhere."

He looked around and found that three people here were tough opponents for himself.

One was an old man that had been reputed for many years, he was also a refinement path master. Another was a young man, and the last one was a young girl. The former had performed well in the previous convention while the latter was a rising star that had emerged in the last ten years.

"This Refinement Path Convention is still going to be that intense!"

"I must make good use of this opportunity, I cannot fail anymore..."

"I will prove myself, I will let my wife and children be proud!"

Boom!

At the next moment, a huge ancient year beast descended from the sky, crushing the entire hall to ruin.

All of his grand ambitions vanished into thin air.

The young Gu Master with a great future, the genius young girl who was thought of highly, they all died pitifully on the spot, their bones and flesh were mashed together, even the corpses could not be seen clearly.

In the sky, Bai Ning Bing’s figure flashed rapidly.

She was in charge of moving around, every destination she reached, she released ancient year beasts. As for the result, Fang Yuan said that she did not need to be concerned with that.

Earlier, Fang Yuan sent variant human Gu Immortals to kill Gu Master participants in advance. Now, he ordered Shadow Sect’s immortals to infiltrate Central Continent and use ancient year beasts to destroy the sign-up locations, to create bloodshed as countless elite Gu Masters face their end.

After learning of this situation, Heavenly Court immediately spread news of the truth.

"There really are immortals in this world..."

"The culprit behind everything is Fang Yuan!"

"Fang Yuan, you killed my father, I will definitely take revenge for this immense hatred!"

"Even rank fives are just ants if they do not become Gu Immortals."

"Immortals are high and mighty, why must I sacrifice my life for a mere Refinement Path Convention? Forget it, forget it."

"I must go! If I do not go, wouldn’t I fall into that Fang Yuan’s scheme?"

Some were fearful, some felt emotional, some backed out, while some became determined.

"They are trying to gather the rage of the people and accumulate human will." In the previous life, Fang Yuan did not know what Heavenly Court was doing, but now, he was deeply aware.

Fang Yuan quickly ordered his subordinates to stop.

Heavenly Court and Central Continent’s Gu Immortals gathered rage and hatred, they were about to take action when they found that Fang Yuan’s subordinates all vanished without a trace.

"Isn’t Fang Yuan trying to destroy the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention? Why did he stop?" The four regions’ super forces who were watching the show felt very perplexed.

In a secret meeting in Southern Border, Wu Yong analyzed some of Fang Yuan’s thoughts: "Fang Yuan had an early advantage, if he continues, Heavenly Court will deduce the locations of his attackers, he will lose many subordinates."

"Then will Fang Yuan attack again?" Someone asked.

"Of course." Wu Yong said without doubt: "But before that, we need to move out secretly too."

In the previous life, Fang Yuan attacked personally and caused destruction, not long after, he was marked by the killer move people’s accusation, he had to hide while his subordinates like Bai Ning Bing took action.

This time, Fang Yuan lurked and concealed himself while ordering his subordinates to cause destruction and bloodshed.

Others were not like Fang Yuan who could defend against Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions using wisdom path methods. Thus, Fang Yuan ordered Bai Ning Bing and the rest to hide themselves after causing some level of destruction.

The Refinement Path Convention had just started.

The huge battle had not begun, these subordinates were still very useful to Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was wildly continuing, but Fang Yuan’s group was nowhere to be found.

Fang Yuan gave the orders to retreat so quickly, the Gu Immortals of the five regions felt as if the slaughter earlier was not real.

"What is Fang Yuan doing?"

"The Central Continent Refinement Path Convention is still going on, why aren’t you doing anything!"

"You are the Little Demon Venerable, don’t bring shame to your reputation."

The four regions’ super forces were very anxious as they complained, they wanted Fang Yuan to attack and take the role of charging into battle for them.

But Fang Yuan, who had opposed Heavenly Court all along, went missing now, he was in hiding and could not be seen anywhere.

The four regions’ forces were about to feel some resentment towards him, as days passed, they watched as the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention continued to advance, all sorts of refinement path elites were progressing in the competition.

The number of test locations in Central Continent also shrunk greatly. Each area was now guarded by multiple Central Continent Gu Immortals arranged by Heavenly Court.

In this situation, Fang Yuan ordered again, various immortals including Bai Ning Bing, Bing Yuan, and Beast Calamity grotto-heaven’s Gu Immortals took action.

Central Continent, Xuanwu mountain range.

"Bai Ning Bing, you have committed too much evil, you will face retribution eventually!" A female immortal from Spirit Affinity House was guarding this place, she said that before escaping.

Bai Ning Bing snorted coldly: "She ran really quickly."

Xuanwu mountain range was a giant resource point of Spirit Affinity House, it had a huge area and was a publicly known immortal material treasure trove.

"Problems will come with waiting, I should act quickly." Bai Ning Bing started to loot the place.

Central Continent, Imprisonment Valley.

"It’s here." Steel Rush Warrior looked around.

Frost Butterfly Warrior came along with him: "Open!"

Once the killer move was used, a formation appeared in front of them.

Transformation!

The two rank seven Gu Immortals from Beast Calamity grotto-heaven did not hesitate to use their most proficient method. One turned into a giant with bull head and human body, while the other turned into a mini butterfly person that emanated frost energy.

As immortal killer moves were unleashed, the formation broke after resisting for a while.

"Southern thorns, the entire valley is made of immortal materials." Steel Rush Warrior was overjoyed.

Frost Butterfly Warrior was even more direct, freezing the southern thorns and looting them rapidly.

Central Continent, red river beach.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals who arrived were furious.

They were late, they only saw ruins left.

The blazing red stones that accumulated on the beach were all taken.

A clean sweep!

Fang Yuan was waiting silently earlier, but once he made a move, it shocked the world.

His Gu Immortals were almost fully deployed, even the hairy man Gu Immortals were sent out.

These people were instructed by Fang Yuan, they did not attack the sign-up spots that were heavily guarded, they targeted the resource points with weaker defenses instead.

Each time they broke into a resource point, these people would plunder it dry. After the plunder, they would use killer moves to completely destroy the place beyond salvation.

At once, the whole of Central Continent was set ablaze, all sorts of large resource points were plundered and destroyed.

Every time Fang Yuan succeeded in taking down an area, he would publish the results of his success in treasure yellow heaven.

The five regions’ Gu Immortals went into a clamor.

"How does Fang Yuan have so many subordinates!"

"So many Gu Immortals, he has greatly surpassed a normal super force."

"How much strength is he hiding?!"

After feeling shocked, they felt envy and admiration.

Fang Yuan’s subordinates had varying battle strength, but even the weakest Gu Immortal could succeed. For the Refinement Path Convention, Central Continent had lowered its defense of these resource points too much.

Many powerful Gu Immortals started to think: "Since these variant human Gu Immortals can plunder successfully, why can’t I?"

And many weaker Gu Immortals started to think: "Most of the good stuff will be taken by those experts, but I can still get the leftovers, right?"

Thus, similar to the previous life, the four regions’ Gu Immortals could not wait anymore, especially those demonic immortals and lone cultivators.

These people started to attack all the resource points around Central Continent.

The situation in Central Continent fell apart rapidly.

Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei had a dark expression.

No matter how great her self-control, seeing all the information sources regarding resource points getting plundered and looted dry, she felt deep anger within her.

"Fang Yuan..." She gritted her teeth, emitting an intense killing intent uncontrollably.

It was this culprit who stirred everyone’s desires and made Central Continent the hunting ground of the other four regions, it was plundered casually and suffered huge losses.

Be they Fairy Zi Wei, Duke Long, or Qin Ding Ling, they were helpless.

Central Continent was too big, it was at the center surrounded by the other four regions as well.

They had too few Gu Immortals, they could not send people to all the resource points, their manpower was severely lacking.

This gave thieves and bandits a chance to strike.

"People’s hearts have changed." Qin Ding Ling sighed.

Duke Long was indifferent: "Sacrifices are necessary for our grand ambition. We will focus on the Refinement Path Convention, these immortal materials can be given up. Once fate Gu is repaired, we will make them pay back a thousandfold."

Central Continent was currently being ravaged.

Fang Yuan’s timing was too impeccable, he chose the perfect moment where Heavenly Court was increasing its defense of the Gu refinement locations, these elites could not be lost as it would severely affect Central Continent’s potential. And for the moment, their loss would be detrimental to repairing fate Gu.

Fang Yuan’s target was also perfect.

For example, places like Xuanwu mountain range were too huge, it naturally had low defense. As for Imprisonment Valley and red river beach, he had looted them in the previous life, he knew their layout and defensive measures.

Together with his meticulous planning, Fang Yuan’s subordinates had a high success rate. The ease of his plunder and immense gains lured all of the other four regions’ Gu Immortals.

The Gu Immortals of all four regions quickly moved out to target the various resource points.

Central Continent had not given up on all their resource points, many important resource points were guarded by experts.

At once, all sorts of battles erupted, Gu Immortals fought and the moment they found that one resource point was too hard to take down, they would wisely give up and move to the next location.

Central Continent had so many resource points anyway, why would they be fixated on one area?

Western Desert earth path Gu Immortal Shi Gan Dang destroyed the earth qi rock forest and obtained a large amount of round kun stones.

Forgotten Daoist successfully stole the spirit bank spring water, even though it was defended by Ancient Soul Sect's expert Yang Feng.

Xiao Hu Chi, Xiao Shi Rang, and Pi Shui Han worked together and succeeded in their plunder, but because of the problem of distribution, they fought against each other.

Central Continent was full of conflict and fighting, it was utter chaos.

Fairy Zi Wei stayed in Heavenly Court, she felt that days were passing like years.

Eventually, Old Man Zheng Yuan spoke: "We have gathered enough human will now, we can use the first human path killer move."

Fairy Zi Wei was overjoyed, quickly asking him to make a move.

Old Man Zheng Yuan nodded, he stood up shakily as a grand and vast aura surged out of his body!

Immortal killer move — People's United Hearts!

The accumulated human will was expended rapidly, almost none was left.

At the same time, Central Continent's Gu Immortals, Gu Masters and even mortals became enveloped in a halo of light.

The halo flashed for a moment, it was like an illusion.

But Central Continent's people soon found something special.

Their hearts were connected, they could sense each other's thoughts and emotions.

The fear of being attacked, the sadness and hatred of having friends and family die, the worry towards one's own life, and the aspirations towards one's future...

Never had Central Continent's people been so tightly connected before in history.

Unfettered Scholar, who was hiding in the Gu refinement location, was discovered, he managed to exact revenge and kill the Central Continent Gu Immortal who was guarding the place.

Southern Border secluded immortal Zheng Qing was exposed too, but he had no animosity towards Central Continent or Heavenly Court, he was asked to leave politely.

"This human path killer move, people's united hearts, is truly amazing." Shen Shang communicated with Fang Yuan using treasure yellow heaven. His current location was unknown, Fang Yuan only knew that he had left Eastern Sea and could possibly even be in Central Continent now.

"What did you comprehend? Can we restrict these human path killer moves?" Fang Yuan asked, he had already given all of the information regarding these human path killer moves in his memory to Shen Shang.

Shen Shang sighed: "To negate these killer moves, the easiest way is to destroy the human will. Without human will as the foundation, these human path killer moves cannot be used. But I deduced that these human wills are kept in Heavenly Court."

"Then what about other ways?" Fang Yuan asked.

Shen Shang sighed again: "Then we can only unravel the killer move directly, this is very difficult, I will need a lot of time. Don’t worry, since I promised you, I will do my best. I do not want to see a complete fate Gu either."

Fang Yuan continued to wait patiently.

Wu Yong led the Southern Alliance immortals as they appeared on Hairy Foot Mountain.

"Follow me, let us destroy Infallible blessed land, let’s take all the success dao marks and make Heavenly Court taste failure!" Wu Yong announced.

"We will follow Lord Alliance Leader!!" The Southern Alliance immortals said together, they had high morale as they followed him.

Heavenly Court immediately received news about this.

Fairy Zi Wei’s face was grim as cold light shined in her eyes: "This Wu Yong."

"Wu Yong has moved out. Longevity Heaven is also about to take action, it is time for me to make my move." After receiving the news, Fang Yuan smiled as he appeared near Yi Tian Mountain.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Myriad Year Flying Warship floated in the sky, Fang Yuan looked at the formation in front of him with a smile.

He arrived at Yi Tian Mountain again, this time, he would definitely take all of the dream realms away.

This timing was truly impeccable.

Firstly, Wu Yong had led the Southern Alliance experts to infiltrate Central Continent, Southern Border was at its weakest now. Secondly, the huge battle had just started, this was likely the final period of free time for Fang Yuan.

"Different from the previous life, I had all the initiative this time, I defeated Heavenly Court repeatedly. The secret of my rebirth is known to all, Heavenly Court must have ways to counter it. Their arrangements will be different from the previous life, I should let the four regions’ Gu Immortals strike first while I observe their new methods."

Fang Yuan had a firm grasp of the situation.

At this point, Fang Yuan’s rebirth advantage was mostly depleted. His previous life’s memories were not reliable against a colossal force like Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court would not be so stupid as to not make changes.

If Fang Yuan took the lead as the vanguard, he would be stuck in endless battles, unable to get away from fighting. He might even die in the process.

After all, Heavenly Court’s foundation was unfathomable, Fang Yuan could not be sure that the venerable methods in his memories were all the methods left behind.

Immortal killer move — Refinement Formation Rain.

Rain started to fall from the sky, gradually infiltrating the formation.

There were naturally defending Gu Immortals in the formation.

The Gu Immortals were in panic.

The formation could not block him, the periphery had already been refined by Fang Yuan.

Even though this formation was set up by Chi Qu You, Fang Yuan had secretly undergone dream realm transactions with him, he gained a lot of information about this formation.

Fang Yuan’s formation path and wisdom path attainment, along with refinement formation rain, completely countered this formation.

"This demon Fang Yuan did not attack Central Continent, he came back to Southern Border!"

"What do I do?"

"Seek help?"

"Our rank eight Gu Immortals have all gone to Central Continent under the lead of Lord Wu Yong!"

"We still need to inform them about this!"

The Southern Border Gu Immortals conversed for a while, nobody dared to go out to fight Fang Yuan, but they had no reinforcements either. They had to use the immortal formation and add changes to it.

The immortal formation continued to change, Fang Yuan’s speed of refining the formation became slower instantly.

But Fang Yuan became happy internally.

The more this formation changed, the more he could comprehend the profundity within it. With the help of the light of wisdom, he could easily understand all of these secrets.

Within Central Continent, the Southern Alliance’s immortals had already entered the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

Wu Yong and the rest received this news.

"What? The dream realm was attacked?"

"That scoundrel Fang Yuan!"

"Can he see the big picture at all? He is actually attacking us at this time?!"

The Southern Alliance’s immortals were furious.

Wu Yong was silent for a while before speaking: "Of course he can."

"What does Lord Wu Yong mean?" Ba De had a livid expression. Fang Yuan’s actions were harming the benefits of all the Southern Border righteous path forces!

Everyone knew about the value of these dream realms, furthermore, they would get more important when the great era arrives.

Wu Yong smiled instead: "If Fang Yuan does not see the big picture, he would have attacked the dream realm long ago. He would not wait for us to go to Central Continent. Or maybe, he wants to make use of us as cannon fodder."

"Then aren’t we sacrificing ourselves for him?" Someone asked in an indignant tone.

"No." Wu Yong shook his head: "If fate Gu is repaired, its threat will be far greater than the otherworldly demon Fang Yuan. He has been reborn, it seems we took the initiative to attack like now in the previous life. But there is no choice, we need to attack. This is for the sake of the five regions."

"Everyone, before we left, I already told you that our region would likely get attacked. Be they your family, friends, or our territory, all of the destruction and slaughter pale in comparison to the big picture! If Heavenly Court gains a complete fate Gu, we will all be helpless, there will be no future for anyone!"

Wu clan said this as his eyes shined like lightning, he looked around as he declared: "This is my order, let all of the defending Gu Immortals retreat from the formation, do not make unnecessary sacrifices. I know this is a risky move, but even if my Wu clan headquarters get destroyed, I will not retract my words!"

Wu Yong’s determination shook the hearts of all the immortals.

They were all united now, the Southern Alliance immortals were tightly connected, they fought their way into the depths of the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

After Southern Border received Wu Yong’s orders, the defending Gu Immortals sighed in relief, they brought as many Immortal Gu as they could with them as they started to teleport away.

A moment later, Fang Yuan refined the formation, not a single Southern Border Gu Immortal was in sight.

After he dismantled the formation, he received an information path Gu worm, it was a letter that Wu Yong had specially written to him.

Fang Yuan’s divine sense swept through it, looking at the content.

The letter only had one sentence, it spoke of one viewpoint — The threat of Heavenly Court and Fate, Central Continent is strong, while the four regions are weak.

He did not say anything about asking Fang Yuan to stop.

"This Wu Yong..." Fang Yuan sighed to himself.

Earlier, he was a problem for Fang Yuan, using his political skills to restrict Fang Yuan’s extortion and causing him great loss. But now, Wu Yong asked the Southern Border Gu Immortals to stop defending, he made them retreat and saved Fang Yuan a lot of effort.

If these Southern Border Gu Immortals continued to defend, it would waste a lot of time.

After Fang Yuan takes the dream realm, he would save a lot of time, that meant he could find trouble with the righteous path of Southern Border. Wu Yong’s orders carried lots of risk, it was a bold move.

But Wu Yong was sure that Fang Yuan knew the big picture, he would not continue causing trouble in Southern Border.

It was like how Fang Yuan knew Wu Yong would not come back from Central Continent to defend these territories if he attacked.

And the truth was, Fang Yuan had no intention to find trouble with Southern Border’s righteous path at this moment.

After some effort, Fang Yuan took away all of the dream realms here.

Yi Tian Mountain saw the light of day again, the huge Gu Immortal battles engraved here could be seen all around the mountain, there was no sign of life here, everything had changed.

Fang Yuan started to head to Central Continent.

As he traveled, he transformed these dream realms into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

In the following battle, these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies would be a huge force of his. In the previous life, Feng Jin Huang was able to resist the detonation of his Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, in this life, it was likely that she could do the same.

But Feng Jin Huang was just one single mortal Gu Master. Fang Yuan had the initiative, he had several battlefields to approach.

Heavenly Court, Central Great Hall.

Duke Long, Fairy Zi Wei, and Qin Ding Ling watched over the situation.

Old Man Zheng Yuan was also invited here.

"The latest news, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals broke the first formation, they are going to the second formation. Fang Yuan appeared in Yi Tian Mountain and destroyed the formation, taking all the dream realms." Fairy Zi Wei suddenly said.

Duke Long said grimly: "Fang Yuan will not continue causing chaos in Southern Border, he will definitely go fight in Central Continent. It seems that we need to deal with these dream realms."

Fairy Zi Wei nodded: "We are very lucky that Feng Jin Huang created the perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, she can resist Fang Yuan’s dream path methods."

Duke Long chuckled: "You think this is luck? No, this is the power of fate! Heavenly Court will not lose this battle, we cannot lose."

At this moment, Fairy Zi Wei gasped as she showed a surprised expression: "Southern Border’s immortals have broken the second formation, they are going to the third one now."

"So fast?" Even Qin Ding Ling was shocked.

Within nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, the immortals had high morale.

"Chi Qu You, good job."

"As expected of the sole formation path great grandmaster in Southern Border!"

"With Lord Chi Qu You around, how can any formation stop us? Hahaha."

Just earlier, when the immortals went into the second sub-formation, Chi Qu You spoke: "Stop."

Next, he observed the area and led the immortals to quickly and delicately destroy the formation.

The immortals praised him but Chi Qu You shook his head: "The truth is, I did not see through this formation, I had received information from Fang Yuan."

The expressions of the Southern Border immortals froze.

Chi Qu You continued: "Using my method, I can break this formation rapidly. But that is a forbidden method that will expend my lifespan. It seems that Fang Yuan had been reborn. In the previous life, he must have broken this formation too, he knows about it clearly."

The immortals nodded, agreeing with him.

What they did not know was, Chi Qu You was the one who explained the profundity of this formation to Fang Yuan.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan rushed to Hairy Foot Mountain from Emperor City battlefield, in order to destroy the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, the immortals wanted to use the five regional limit formation. But without the complete formation chart, and having to create it within the enemy’s formation, it was too difficult.

Fang Yuan used his wisdom path and formation path attainment to cooperate with Chi Qu You and Black Extremity, working together to deduce the complete formation chart.

During this process, Chi Qu You gave Fang Yuan and Black Extremity an explanation on their experiences of breaking the earlier formations so that they could understand the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

Since Wu Yong asked the Southern Border immortals to retreat, displaying greater sincerity and determination, Fang Yuan was returning the favor by guiding them now.

After learning of this situation, Wu Yong had a slightly complex expression as he sighed: "It seems that Fang Yuan has already arrived in Central Continent."

Fang Yuan understood Wu Yong, but Wu Yong also understood Fang Yuan.

The two of them had an indescribable understanding.

Even though they wanted each other to die during normal times!

The truth was, in the previous life, in order to break the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, Fang Yuan also asked the Southern Alliance for dream realms.

Wu Yong did not hesitate but agreed instantly.

Fang Yuan was transported back to Southern Border, the defensive formation was opened and he managed to take the dream realms away.

But later, when Fang Yuan converted them into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies, Feng Jin Huang resisted them and he failed to destroy the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

Using Fang Yuan’s guidance, the Southern Alliance’s immortals broke through another two formations, their efficiency was out of this world.

Heavenly Court finally reacted in time, Fairy Zi Wei frowned and thought about the countermeasure when suddenly, rainbow light appeared above Heavenly Court.

Bright lights spread everywhere, rank eight Immortal Gu House Calamity Luck Altar shot out from within!

"Heavenly Court, we’re here." Bing Sai Chuan called out with great morale.

"We have been waiting." Qin Ding Ling slowly stood up.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Heavenly Court.

Colorful lights filled the sky, a huge rank eight Immortal Gu House flew out from within.

It had three floors of altars, grand and magnificent. There were multiple pillars holding each floor up, having white jade railings and shining aurora, it was eye-catching.

"Calamity Luck Altar!" Qin Ding Ling watched with shrunken pupils, her expression was complex.

She was looking at the Immortal Gu House that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable built personally, but the latter had passed away. Even if you were an Immortal Venerable, lifespan was limited.

"Heavenly Court." On the other hand, Bing Sai Chuan in Calamity Luck Altar was trembling with excitement.

At long last, he had finally attacked this place, commencing the great plan that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had entrusted to him — to seize fate Gu and refine destiny Gu!

"We really got in." The accompanying Five Elements Grandmaster was very shocked and surprised: "Is Heavenly Court’s defense really this weak?"

"Of course not." Bull Demon explained in a deep voice: "This is the arrangement of our Ancestor Giant Sun. Back then, Golden Hoop Great Immortal invited our ancestor to come to the Heavenly Court for a visit, ostensibly proclaiming that he wanted to invite Ancestor Giant Sun into Heavenly Court. At that time, Ancestor Giant Sun secretly set up this arrangement, leaving it for the future."

Five Elements Grandmaster could not help but inwardly be astounded at the words, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s strategy was planned so long ago but he actually managed to use it so far in the future!

"Go! We’ll use the route that Limitless Demon Venerable made when he previously attacked, we will attack Central Great Hall, ascend to Heaven Overseeing Tower, and seize fate Gu!" As soon as Bing Sai Chuan gave the order, the surrounding colored lights moved sharply.

Calamity Luck Altar was actually carried by the colored lights and moved to a distant place.

The qi wall left by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable had already activated, it sealed Calamity Luck Altar within the qi wall.

On the other side, Qin Ding Ling had a pale face as she fell to the ground.

She had already done her best to make some minor modifications to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangements. The so-called trap against Northern Plains would naturally be most effective with the help of a venerable method.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable left behind the killer move qi wall in Heavenly Court, it was everywhere. When the three Demon Venerables attacked Heavenly Court, they created three paths that had no qi wall along them. But all other areas were filled by the qi wall.

Qin Ding Ling worked her hardest to relocate Calamity Luck Altar into the qi wall.

At once, Calamity Luck Altar became immobilized, it faced a huge pressure from all directions.

Fairy Zi Wei quickly helped Qin Ding Ling to stand up as she said in admiration: "Senior, it was all thanks to you!"

Qin Ding Ling sighed and said with a solemn tone: "To think that even after I worked my hardest after waking up, I merely managed to move his method to a slight extent. Sigh..."

Duke Long walked slowly with a calm expression: "Let’s go, it is time to welcome our guests."

"Damn it! Heavenly Court knew that we were going to attack, they made use of that to set up an ambush!" Bing Sai Chuan’s expression changed, turning ashen.

The surprise attack that he had anticipated for so long had just started, but he already lost control of the situation.

He manipulated Calamity Luck Altar with all his strength but the killer move qi wall was too strong.

Even though this rank eight Immortal Gu House could barely move now with a snail-like speed, the most despairing thing was that the qi wall had a strong self-recovery ability. As Calamity Luck Altar moved, the qi wall behind it healed and mended together.

Just as Longevity Heaven’s people suffered a setback, Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals arrived in Hidden Dragon Cave.

"To think that Hidden Dragon Cave is here." Song Qi Yuan sighed deeply to himself.

Granny Rong snickered: "This place is quite secluded indeed, but there is no such thing as absolutely hidden in this world."

Yang Zi He added: "Back then, Di Zang Sheng wreaked havoc in Central Continent, Duke Long suppressed and sealed it here, it was a huge event. But because that was long ago in history, and because Heavenly Court wanted to exterminate the dragonman race, they were ruthless in eliminating the traces."

"Hehehe. Speaking of which, Duke Long is very vicious, for the sake of Heavenly Court, he sacrificed all of his children and descendants." Shen Cong Sheng criticized with a tone of disdain.

Eastern Sea’s eight Gu Immortals arrived here.

It was the same situation as the previous life.

To achieve this goal, Fang Yuan had put in a lot of effort secretly. On one hand, he used his status as Qi Sea Ancestor to hint to Song Qi Yuan and Hua Cai Yun, on another hand, he contacted Shen Cong Sheng using his own identity, and finally, the four rank eight lone cultivators in Eastern Sea were all Dragon Palace Dragon Generals, they obeyed Fang Yuan’s arrangements.

Fang Yuan was not sure about Hidden Dragon Cave’s location originally, but after getting Dragon Palace, he saw related records in it.

Back then, when Duke Long suppressed Di Zang Sheng, the dragonman race had put in effort too.

After getting this secret information, Fang Yuan spread it using the mouths of the Four Dragon Generals, influencing the decisions of all the different Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

These rank eight Gu Immortals from Eastern Sea were different from Southern Alliance and Longevity Heaven, they did not have any courageous spirit to take risks, in this life, they had no strong intention to gain Dragon Palace. Fang Yuan thus motivated them to release Di Zang Sheng from Hidden Dragon Cave and cause problems for Heavenly Court.

Once Di Zang Sheng gets released, the entire world would shake, blood would flow into rivers, living beings would die. There would be no need for these Eastern Sea Gu Immortals to fight.

Once Central Continent’s attention was drawn and they sent Gu Immortals to deal with Di Zang Sheng, they would be weaker elsewhere, Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals would have a great opportunity.

There was another advantage, Di Zang Sheng would target and attack Central Continent’s mortals.

The more people it killed, the more foundation Central Continent would lose.

Eastern Sea’s righteous path rank eights would not attack mortals with their status, it would ruin their reputation. Having Di Zang Sheng do the dirty work was best.

At the fringe of Western Desert.

The thin regional wall was in front them.

"The five regions are indeed fusing. The regional walls that once restricted our movement are already so thin and weak." Fang Gong looked at the scene in front of him as he sighed.

Fang Yuan’s clone, Fang Di Chang, had a high status in Fang clan, he managed to convince Fang clan’s first supreme elder and many Western Desert super forces to take action together.

This was a much stronger group than in the previous life.

But gathering so many Gu Immortals used a lot of time, they only managed to assemble now.

"Oh no, that blood path demonic immortal is causing chaos in my clan." Right at this time, Sun clan reported bad news.

"There is a brand new immemorial desolate beast attacking my clan’s oasis." Mo clan’s Gu Immortal also received bad news.

"Everyone! This is likely Heavenly Court’s scheme. They want to restrain us so that we cannot stop them from repairing fate Gu." Fang Di Chang analyzed.

Even though he had no proof, in order to stabilize these Gu Immortals, lying was fine.

"No, I need to get back."

"I objected earlier when you asked us to move out. Our base is too weak now, I was right after all."

"In my opinion, we should play safe. Western Desert’s resources are all in the oases, if they are destroyed, our clans will lose our foundation without the support of resources."

The Western Desert Gu Immortals discussed, they wanted to retreat.

"Damn it, Fang clan took too long to develop, we do not have enough influence and authority." Fang Di Chang gritted his teeth, he watched as a portion of Sun clan and Mo clan left.

"The nature of these two clan’s Gu Immortals is not so tough normally, I’m afraid Heavenly Court is involved with these two clans!" Fang Di Chang reacted at this time.

With the departure of a portion of Sun clan and Mo clan, the other clans also wanted to leave, otherwise, their balance would be disrupted.

Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world had gone into chaos earlier because of the rise of Fang clan, their relationship was tense now and nobody trusted each other.

There was another fundamental problem, in history, Western Desert had never experienced any large scale cooperation between super forces.

Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world did not have any domineering overlord in history, unlike Southern Border’s Wu clan or Northern Plains’ Longevity Heaven.

After some discussion, a portion of Western Desert’s Gu Immortals returned to their base. The rest of them still exceeded the numbers in the previous life, they passed the regional walls and arrived in Central Continent.

Heavenly Court.

Reports of battles were sent over rapidly.

"Hidden Dragon Cave is attacked by Eastern Sea’s rank eight Gu Immortals."

"Gu Immortal elites have appeared at Western Desert’s fringe, they are heading towards Emperor City."

Fairy Zi Wei spoke.

At this time, Duke Long slowly retreated from the front of the battlefield.

Calamity Luck Altar was surrounded by the qi wall, there was a sizable area of movable space around it now, Heavenly Court’s countless experts were attacking it from all directions.

If Calamity Luck Altar retaliated, these Gu Immortals would retreat into the qi wall and hide themselves, staying safe.

After several attempts, Bing Sai Chuan had to activate Calamity Luck Altar’s defense as they pressed forward.

Because of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals’ obstruction, Calamity Luck Altar could barely move forward slowly and with great difficulty.

Duke Long had nothing much to do, the battlefield in Heavenly Court was already secured, Longevity Heaven was trapped and they would eventually fall.

Duke Long heard Fairy Zi Wei’s reports as he said calmly: "Qi Sea Ancestor and Fang Yuan, have they not made a move?"

"Nothing at the moment." Fairy Zi Wei shook her head.

The two people Duke Long was most wary of were these two. Qi Sea Ancestor had unparalleled strength, he rivaled Duke Long and was someone that Duke Long had to focus and keep his attention on.

Meanwhile, even though Fang Yuan had rank seven cultivation level, he inherited Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s true inheritance, he might have some powerful method, he needed to be guarded against.

"Qi Sea Ancestor’s attitude is unclear, meanwhile, ever since Fang Yuan snatched Southern Border’s dream realms, he vanished. He has a lot of dream realms on his hands now." Fairy Zi Wei said slowly, she was going to analyze this further.

"What plan do you have?" Duke Long interrupted her.

Fairy Zi Wei said: "I plan to activate the formation and resist our external foes to force out Fang Yuan. There is also Qi Sea Ancestor who might possibly fight us, we need to force them to take action!"

Duke Long pondered before nodding: "Alright, we need to take the initiative. If we can establish our dominance in this battle, the five regions chaotic war will be much easier to deal with."

Fairy Zi Wei quickly left and sat down at the central area of a formation.

She activated the formation and released Star Constellation Chessboard. The chessboard floated in the air and rotated on its own, innumerable starlight specks that resembled fireflies flew in the sky, entering the formation.

Central Continent’s people soon noticed a strange phenomenon.

Many pointed at the sky and screamed: "Quickly look! There is starlight, there are actually stars in bright daylight."

"What is going on?" Fang Di Chang had just crossed the regional wall when he saw such a scene.

"Heavenly Court took action. This did not happen in my previous life." Fang Yuan also arrived in Central Continent, he looked at the sky silently while frowning.

Heavenly Court had indeed prepared something new.

At this moment, in the sky of Central Continent, bright lights shined, stars appeared during daytime, radiating heaven and earth!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Central Continent, Hidden Dragon Cave.

"What is going on?" Eastern Sea’s eight Gu Immortals saw the change in the sky.

In broad daylight, Central Continent’s sky was covered in stars that shined brightly.

"This is likely Heavenly Court’s method, but we do not know what effect it has." Qing Yue An frowned as he spoke.

"What is there to fear? We will deal with it when it comes, with our force, who can stop us? Unless Heavenly Court sends their main forces to face us." Yang Zi He laughed loudly.

"Indeed." Qing Yue An’s frown eased a little.

In this situation, Heavenly Court focused on repairing fate Gu, Hidden Dragon Cave was just a small area at the corner of the big picture, if Heavenly Court sent their main forces here to resist Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals, they would be disregarding the bigger problems, it would be a terrible decision!

"Enter the formation, destroy this formation and release Di Zang Sheng, he will cause chaos in the world, we will then gain our opportunity." Yang Zi He encouraged them without acting suspicious.

"Hmm... let’s wait for a while. Since we are going to take action, why the need to rush now?" Song Qi Yuan had a composed mentality: "Since Heavenly Court has already used their method, we need to at least find out what it does, right?"

Song Qi Yuan’s words made the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals hesitant again.

Yang Zi He and the other Dragon Generals cursed in their hearts, these Eastern Sea righteous path rank eights were truly indecisive. They had already shown hostility to Heavenly Court but still did not want to destroy the formation immediately!

They were concerned about this ridiculous starry sky because they were too worried about their own safety. If they were Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals, they would have entered the formation already. No wonder Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world had the most wealth but still stayed suppressed and unable to resist Gu Immortals of other regions.

Fang Yuan did not want these Gu Immortals to wait outside.

The Four Dragon Generals were enslaved by Dragon Palace, they were undoubtedly loyal.

Among them, Granny Rong smiled as she said: "If this method has just materialized and needs three days to take effect, are we going to wait three days here?"

"This..." Song Qi Yuan and the rest were uncertain.

But at this moment, from the sky, grand starlight pillars shot down rapidly.

The light pillars were shining in a bluish light, it was a grand sight.

More than ten pillars of light shot down together, encircling all eight Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

Next, the pillars faded away as a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal appeared in the location of each pillar.

The Eastern Sea immortals’ expressions changed.

In an instant, they were surrounded by Heavenly Court, the situation took a turn for the worse!

"You crawling worms dare to offend Heavenly Court!" Zhang Fei Xiong said in a cold and domineering tone.

"You will die today." Wan Zi Hong licked her scarlet lips, oozing with killing intent.

"Those who offend Central Continent will be killed." Qin Song had a solemn expression.

"Enough talk, I’m going to attack now, yayaya!" A female Heavenly Court immortal could not wait anymore, she charged forward.

Her body was plump to its limit, she was like a meat cannonball that shot towards the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals fearlessly.

Eastern Sea’s immortals were not united, they quickly split up.

The fat female immortal missed her target, she screamed in anger: "You cowards, why are you dodging, come, fight your mommy for three hundred rounds!"

"Flesh Whip Immortal is still so impatient." A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal who knew about this female immortal sighed helplessly.

"Flesh Whip Immortal is gentle and kind normally, but once she enters battle, she acts like what the rumors say." Many Heavenly Court Gu Immortals watched with surprise.

At once, the female immortal called Flesh Whip Immortal chased after Eastern Sea’s eight Gu Immortals while shouting vulgarities non-stop, she was extremely noisy.

"Vile woman, don’t be too arrogant." Qing Yue An could not take it, he turned around to battle.

Flesh Whip Immortal was overjoyed: "Someone finally stopped running!"

Boom!

The two used their killer moves that collided, causing a thunderous explosion.

A huge shock wave burst out and caused the surrounding clouds to disperse and change form.

"Quickly go and reinforce Little Whip." Qin Song ordered, among these Gu Immortals, he was the most senior, even Flesh Whip Immortal was his junior.

Central Continent’s immortals all charged forward at once.

Among them, there was Zhu Que Er who cultivated fire path and transformation path. There was Vortex Space Boy who cultivated space path and had terrifying killer moves. There was Ye Qiao Zi, Z, Wu Shuang, Yu Zhu Zi, and others, they were all famous Heavenly Court experts in history.

Not only did Heavenly Court’s side have more people, they even had excellent coordination, they created their battle tactic long ago, they erupted with great power.

Eastern Sea’s eight Gu Immortals were forced back time and again, they could not hold their own.

"This is a trap, let’s retreat!" Song Qi Yuan shouted with all his might.

His words immediately received the acceptance of the other three righteous path members, with the enemies being this strong now, they could not fight forcefully.

The Four Dragon Generals remained silent.

Without Fang Yuan’s orders, they would not abruptly retreat.

Amidst the chaotic battle, Zhu Que Er suddenly pushed with her palm as a flame light was shot out.

The flame light resembled a beautiful blade light as it slashed towards Granny Rong.

Granny Rong and Zhao Shan He were currently fighting, seeing the approaching blade, she did not dodge it.

At the crucial moment, Zhang Yin suddenly moved, a shadow appeared and blocked the flame light.

"Oh? There’s something weird going on with these two Gu Immortals." Zhu Que Er’s expression changed, she felt something amiss.

Compared to the previous life, she had woken up much earlier, she made many preparations. She had already obtained information regarding Granny Rong and Zhang Yin.

These two were lone immortals but they actually trusted each other this much, it was really rare!

But soon, Zhu Que Er found out that it was not only Zhang Yin and Granny Rong, Yang Zi He and Shi Miao were also weird, these four rank eights trusted each other completely, they were willing to let themselves be defended by one another in dangerous situations!

Because of their coordination, they were able to resist the attacks of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals without losing.

Fairy Zi Wei was currently looking at the situation from her formation core in Central Hall.

Starlight flashed in front of her, displaying the scene in Hidden Dragon Cave.

Even though she was in Heavenly Court, she obtained firsthand information of the battlefield.

"What’s wrong with these four Eastern Sea lone immortals? Their relationship should not be this close. Unless they set some sort of strict alliance agreement that allowed them to work together with complete trust?"

Fairy Zi Wei could not think more, it was not the time to deduce this now.

She considered it for a while before giving her orders.

After getting her orders, Old Man Bei Feng who was inside Hidden Dragon Cave became revitalized, he quickly activated the formation.

Intense lights appeared around the formation, its power spread out across the battlefield.

"Oh no!"

"Quickly leave!!"

"Once we enter the formation, they will take us out one by one."

Eastern Sea’s immortals were flustered, they quickly shouted.

But how could Heavenly Court’s rank eight Gu Immortals allow them to leave? Immediately, killer moves were used to obstruct the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, they could not get out, they were swept into the formation along with the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

Both parties entered Hidden Dragon Cave’s formation.

Old Man Bei Feng, who was controlling the formation, grunted as his face turned pale, blood flowed out of his nostrils.

Even though Hidden Dragon Cave’s formation was powerful, taking in so many rank eight Gu Immortals at once was beyond Old Man Bei Feng’s limits.

"Grandfather, are you okay?" Feng Chan Zi who was at the side asked with concern.

He was Old Man Bei Feng’s beloved grandson, if he did not make a mistake and was forced to guard Hidden Dragon Cave along with his grandfather, Old Man Bei Feng would have become a member of Heavenly Court already.

"But if I can make some contributions in this battle, Heavenly Court might recruit me!" Old Man Bei Feng’s eyes shined with bright light, he was filled with morale.

Eastern Sea’s rank eights were trapped in the formation, they were split up.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were also split up into different areas.

"This formation is mainly used to suppress and seal Di Zang Sheng, it does not have any power to cooperate with Gu Immortals in battle. Every Gu Immortal that enters the formation will be sent to a different area. Unless the formation is destroyed, there will not be two Gu Immortals in the same area."

Fairy Zi Wei knew about Hidden Dragon Cave’s formation, she ordered Heavenly

Court’s Gu Immortals to retreat.

While Eastern Sea’s immortals were trapped inside.

"I will leave this place to you." Qin Song said before leaving.

"Don’t worry, I will guard this place with my life. If anything happens, I will report it and seek reinforcements." Old Man Bei Feng said with a polite and serious attitude.

"Very good." Qin Song felt assured as he brought the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals to leave.

At this time, more than ten pillars of light shot down again, the blue starlight pillars enveloped all the Heavenly Court rank eights.

The pillars vanished, along with the rank eight Gu Immortals within.

Fang Di Chang and the rest traveled in their Immortal Gu House as they rushed towards Emperor City.

Even though the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was disrupted by Fang Yuan in advance in this life and had slower progress than the previous life, it was not even at the final round of the competition yet.

But evidently, Emperor City was the only place that could protect them while not interfering with the Gu refinement and the restoration of fate Gu. That place was already heavily guarded by Heavenly Court, Fang Di Chang thus asked the Western Desert immortals to head to Emperor City.

Western Desert’s immortals had surging morale.

But at the next moment, starlight pillars appeared again, as more than ten Heavenly Court Gu Immortals appeared.

"Kill!" Flesh Whip Immortal charged forward again.

But this time, Western Desert’s Gu Immortals were not flustered.

They were within their Immortal Gu Houses, they felt very safe.

Watching as Flesh Whip Immortal attacked, even though she was a rank eight Gu Immortal, she could not destroy an Immortal Gu House instantly.

"What method is Heavenly Court using? They could transport so many rank eights at the same time!" Fang Di Chang did not think anymore, he mobilized several Immortal Gu Houses to resist the enemies.

As a wisdom path Gu Immortal who controlled the strongest Immortal Gu House Divine Bean Palace, he was selected as the leader of the group, he had the highest authority.

Immortal Gu Houses charged without care, it was Heavenly Court’s time to dodge them.

But two Gu Immortals did not retreat.

One was Zhang Fei Xiong, he turned into a giant with a bear head and human body, he resisted Immortal Gu Houses with his body.

The other was Flesh Whip Immortal, she was a transformation path Gu Immortal, she transformed into a walking meat tree as her roots moved like legs, running rapidly, while her branches turned into countless whips that attacked in a frenzy.

Crack crack crack!

She was also resisting Immortal Gu Houses, several rank seven Immortal Gu Houses were forced to turn around and escape.

Within Divine Bean Palace, Fang Di Chang’s expression was dark.

"Heavenly Court made changes, but this change is simply too huge."

"Zhang Fei Xiong, Wan Zi Hong, and Zhu Que Er woke up in advance, even experts like Flesh Whip Immortal appeared."

"And most importantly, what killer move is this? It can transport more than ten rank eight Gu Immortals at once! This is simply unheard of!"

With this move, Heavenly Court had the initiative to mobilize their main forces to attack anywhere they wanted.

This was a very significant trump card in battle.

As long as this move was not destroyed, Heavenly Court could fight in several battlefields at the same time, they could deal with anything that came at them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1925 Heavenly Court“s Initiative

Crack crack crack!

The tower-like walking meat tree was charging at the forefront, thousands of octopus tentacle-like branches waved and created a sound of fierce wind whistling, they had awe inspiring might, the Western Desert Gu Immortal’s Immortal Gu Houses were forced to retreat.

Flesh Whip Immortal was able to resist Immortal Gu Houses singlehandedly, she was truly a rank eight expert slumbering in the Heavenly Court immortal graveyard, her strength was unquestionable!

Of course, this was also the advantage of transformation path.

"Let us!" At the crucial moment, Dong clan’s Gu Immortals spoke up.

Similar to the previous life, Dong clan still mobilized the rank seven Immortal Gu House Red River Wheel.

This Immortal Gu House looked like a water wheel or a giant tire, rotating while blazing with red flames, it crashed towards the walking meat tree.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals saw this and their gazes focused.

Immortal Gu Houses charged head on because it was the fastest method, it was usually not their strongest ability.

According to the different types of Immortal Gu used to construct them, Immortal

Gu Houses had different immortal killer moves.

Right now, Red River Wheel had used its own killer move with overwhelming might to attack Flesh Whip Immortal.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were nervous, similarly, Western Desert’s Gu Immortals were also nervous.

Red River Wheel was only a rank seven Immortal Gu House, it could resist rank eight, if it crashed into Flesh Whip Immortal, they would be evenly matched, it would be damaged too.

However, this result was still slightly favorable to Western Desert.

Even if both of them were harmed, Red River Wheel would be able to recover by replacing the dead Gu. Flesh Whip Immortal, however, would be physically injured, and subsequent healing and recovery would be quite troubling.

"Come!" At the crucial moment, Flesh Whip Immortal, instead of retreating, yelled in excitement and charged straight up.

"This person..."

"Defend her!"

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals reached a consensus in an instant.

Zhang Fei Xiong growled again, he turned into a giant with a bear head and human body, charging towards Red River Wheel.

"Red River Wheel is strongest at the front and back, but the sides are the weakest. Let’s help out Dong clan!" Immortal Gu House Jade Toad Castle was like a green meteor that crashed into Zhang Fei Xiong.

Wan Zi Hong smiled delicately as countless petals drifted over the battlefield and landed on Red River Wheel, its momentum continued to decline.

Fang clan’s Chicken Dog Coop came over to support, releasing chickens and dogs and other ancient desolate beasts to attack Wan Zi Hong.

Wan Zi Hong was still maintaining her killer moves and had no time to dodge, so Yu Zhu Zi and Ye Qiao Zi appeared around her. One of them sprinkled countless jade beads and made a tinkling sound, while the other emitted a mass of yellow light, sometimes slow, sometimes fast.

Chickens, dogs, and many other ancient desolate beasts were either smashed to death by the jade beads, or were temporarily trapped by the yellow light, hovering high in the air, unable to move.

"Damn it, this Wan Zi Hong is the demoness who scourged Western Desert in history and was recruited by Heavenly Court!" Dong clan’s Gu Immortals were inside Red River Wheel, looking at Wan Zi Hong and gnashing their teeth.

Dong clan was a Western Desert righteous path force and hated Western Desert’s demons the most, while this Wan Zi Hong was one of the most infamous demonesses in history.

Seeing the Dong clan’s Red River Wheel’s power was weakening, at this rate, it would be crushed by the walking meat tree. At the critical moment, a forest flower house-like Immortal Gu House was exerting its power behind the battlefield.

Wan Zi Hong gave a soft cry as she suddenly felt her killer move go out of control, countless petals rolled towards Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals instead.

Wan Zi Hong muffled a grunt as her killer move failed and the backlash caused her to suffer considerable damage.

Her eyes were like lightning as she stared at the culprit, it was Fang clan’s rank seven Immortal Gu House — Fallen Flower Hall.

Boom!

At the next moment, the walking meat tree and Red River Wheel finally collided together.

Both sides immediately flew backwards.

The walking meat tree had hundreds of severed fleshy tentacles, while the surface of the Red River Wheel’s wheel was battered beyond recognition, losing over three thousand Gu, Dong clan’s Gu Immortals quickly started to repair it.

"This... is really satisfying!" Flesh Whip Immortal gritted her teeth and struggled to maintain the form of the walking meat tree, although her injuries were not light, her fighting spirit was instead more vigorous.

She was about to charge up again, but was stopped by Zhang Fei Xiong.

"Let me fight, you should go back and heal your injuries." Zhang Fei Xiong had been knocked away by the Immortal Gu House earlier, he returned and immediately took the place of Flesh Whip Immortal.

Flesh Whip Immortal, however, was stubborn and would not retreat in a deadly battle: "I won’t! Let me charge, no one can stop me."

As soon as the words were said, a giant pillar of starlight shot down violently overhead, covering Flesh Whip Immortal.

Flesh Whip Immortal: "..."

In the next instant, she disappeared together with the giant pillar of starlight and returned to Heavenly Court.

In Heavenly Court’s battlefield, Calamity Luck Altar was still struggling to move forward, trying to break free from the qi wall, but Duke Long was firmly blocking in front of it.

Duke Long’s tall body was like cast steel, and even if it was just one man, Calamity Luck Altar could not deal with him.

Boom boom boom!

Every time Duke Long attacked, it was accompanied by a fierce explosion, and just by using transformation path killer moves, Calamity Luck Altar could not move forward.

After advancing ten steps, it would often be knocked back nine steps by Duke Long.

Flesh Whip Immortal swallowed a mouthful of saliva, gazing up at the heroic fighting stance of Duke Long, feeling envious in her heart, when would she have such powerful strength!

Light flickered around her, pale blue strands of flowing water wrapped around her, washing the dao marks away to heal her wounds.

This was a healing formation specially set up by Heavenly Court to greatly improve the efficiency of healing injuries.

"Heavenly Court’s teleportation method can move groups as well as a single person to and fro! This is really troublesome." Fang Yuan’s clone, Fang Di Chang, frowned deeply.

Although he could not see the healing formation in Heavenly Court, he could deduce it easily with his brain.

The key was that with such a method, Heavenly Court could quickly retreat. It was almost an extravagant hope for Western Desert’s side to kill or injure the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals. They had to kill with a single blow, denying Heavenly Court any chance to teleport and heal their members.

But how difficult was it to kill such experts among rank eight!

It was not just Fang Di Chang, the vast majority of the Gu Immortals recognized this, the morale of the Western Desert immortals began to plummet.

Fang Di Chang secretly gritted his teeth: "This is not good."

Immediately, he activated Divine Bean Palace to move to the front line: "Everyone, let me do it!"

The Western Desert Immortals were energized greatly, they hurriedly made way for Divine Bean Palace, casting expectant glances at it.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals saw an Immortal Gu House lofty as a mountain, majestic and imposing, rumbling and rushing as it attacked, all their hearts jumped.

The same name flashed in the hearts of the immortals — Divine Bean Palace!

Immortal killer move — Myriad Life Spring Lightning!

Divine Bean Palace shook intensely, countless sparks that resembled dragons or snakes coiled around the palace. Lightning gathered into beads of jade green lightning balls as they exploded around the palace.

Rumble...

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals dodged wildly, not daring to face the attack. Even transformation path Zhang Fei Xiong had reverted to his human body, flying around in a very sad state.

Myriad life spring lightning, life and death was interlinked, destruction and creation were gathered into one move. After exploding, dao marks would be left in the battlefield, creating an environment that was advantageous to the user.

"How can we fight this?" This time, it was the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals’ turn to feel helpless.

"It is, after all, an Immortal Gu House created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable himself."

"Sigh, how did it end up in the hands of Western Desert’s Gu Immortals!"

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were resentful and without options, all of them were thinking of retreating.

One of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals was pale and chubby, he was Zhao Shan He, who was now looking at Yu Zhu Zi.

Yu Zhu Zi nodded at him as they suddenly gathered together.

At the same time, the other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were surrounding the two of them, planning and defending around them.

Zhao Shan He was a food path Gu Immortal and Yu Zhu Zi was earth path, they both unleashed a move together — Sitting and Eating the Mountain Empty!

The killer move enveloped the entire battlefield, Western Desert's Immortal Gu Houses could not dodge it.

After it was used, starlight pillars flashed in the sky for an instant.

At the next moment, all of the Heavenly Court rank eights left the battlefield, the intense and chaotic battle was left with only Western Desert's Immortal Gu Houses.

Even though Western Desert's Gu Immortals forced back Heavenly Court, their expressions turned ugly.

Because they found out that many of the Gu worms in the Immortal Gu Houses were weakening, soon, their aura fell to rock bottom as Gu worms died one by one.

Not only that, the Gu Immortals in the houses were also getting hit, many of their immortal essence beads started to disintegrate and disappear.

"This was all caused by that move."

"What kind of killer move was it, not only did the Immortal Gu Houses get affected, but even the Gu Immortals inside the houses were not spared?"

"This should be the profundity of food path. Because of that, it's hard to defend against using our Immortal Gu Houses."

The Western Desert Gu Immortals discussed and exchanged ideas, they soon guessed correctly.

Food path had been too limited in circulation, Western Desert's righteous path did not have a lot of food path inheritances, their defense against it was too low, it was a weakness.

And most importantly, Zhao Shan He was a food path expert on Heavenly Court's side.

"This will not do!"

"Heavenly Court fights and retreats when they want to, as long as they give Zhao Shan He and Yu Zhu Zi the chance to use this move each time, we will lose all our strength and resources over time."

"Everyone! We must hurry up and rush to Emperor City as soon as possible to force Heavenly Court to fight us to the death. There, they won't retreat so easily."

Fang Di Chang analyzed the situation and advocated.

The Western Desert Gu Immortals agreed.

In a short period of time, they had no way to counter Heavenly Court's teleportation killer move and could only use this method to restrain Heavenly

Court.

Zhao Shan He and the others returned to Heavenly Court once again.

The injured ones all went to the healing formation to recover, while the rest were focusing on their recuperation while communicating with each other on how they should work better together.

After a fierce battle with Western Desert’s various Immortal Gu Houses, these Gu Immortals suffered no losses, and the most seriously injured person, Flesh Whip Immortal, was almost healed completely, alive and well once again.

Unlike the previous life, these Gu Immortals, because of their early awakening, not only possessed a full range of Immortal Gu, but they also had a certain level of mutual cooperation.

"Immortal Gu Houses are just hard to fight. Divine Bean Palace is the most troublesome of them all."

"What are you worried about? A few more rounds and Western Desert’s side will collapse. They won’t be able to reach Emperor City!"

"Have Fang Yuan and Qi Sea Ancestor not done anything? Quickly do something, we can’t wait anymore."

Gu Immortals were all experts that had huge reputation at some point in time, they were overflowing with confidence and morale.

The truth was, Fang Yuan was the one who caused this situation.

Since rebirth, Fang Yuan had been gaining victories over Heavenly Court multiple times, Star Constellation’s will felt a huge threat from this and awakened many Gu Immortals in advance.

It was unlike the previous life when Longevity Heaven attacked, in which Heavenly Court had fallen into a crisis and had to awaken many Gu Immortals in a hurry, they were unable to display their true battle strength.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1926 Northern Plains“ Retaliation

"Quickly stop them!" Fang Di Chang shouted.

Western Desert’s Immortal Gu Houses tried their best to stop Zhao Shan He and Yu Zhu Zi.

But in front of them, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were putting up a tight defense.

Roar!

Zhang Fei Xiong turned into a giant, obstructing an Immortal Gu House relentlessly.

Crack crack crack!

Flesh Whip Immortal turned into an immemorial walking meat tree, she waved her branches and whipped at the Immortal Gu Houses, they were knocked about and spinning around all over the place.

Bam bam bam...

All kinds of immortal killer moves erupted, as if they were large bursts of fireworks, incomparably splendid and powerful.

These were all rank eight killer moves of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, the Immortal Gu Houses of Western Desert suffered a serious obstruction, inevitably hesitating.

Taking advantage of this time, Zhao Shan He and Yu Zhu Zi finished their preparation and unleashed their immortal killer move, sitting and eating the mountain empty.

Western Desert’s Gu Immortals were hit again, they then helplessly watched as a giant pillar of starlight shot down, teleporting away the Central Continent Gu Immortals.

At the next moment, they returned to Heavenly Court.

As the Gu Immortals healed their wounds, they exchanged conversations.

"It’s really getting harder and harder to use the killer move, sitting and eating the mountain empty."

"After all, the other side has elites of an entire region, so they cannot be underestimated. As the saying goes, if a fool suffers sufficient losses, he will become wiser."

"But their strength has also been weakened quite badly, so they probably won’t be able to hold out after two more times."

The Gu Immortals were full of morale, and the more they fought, the higher their spirits became.

Guh.

At this moment, Qin Song’s face turned pale and he coughed out a small mouthful of blood.

His blood was yellowish brown, and there were countless small insects jumping around in the blood foam.

"Senior Qin, are you injured?" Zhou Xiong Xin, who was standing right next to Qin Song, asked with concern.

Zhou Xiong Xin was dressed in a white robe, he had a strong physique and a squarish face with thick eyebrows. In his last battle with Fang Yuan, he activated the fastest battlefield killer move in the world, rumor cage, and once caused Fang Yuan to fall into a dangerous battle. In the end, Fang Yuan was even more calculating and used the arrangements left by the organization Defy to plot and kill Zhou Xiong Xin.

But this time, Fang Yuan was reborn, Zhou Xiong Xin was thus alive and one of the many Gu Immortals that fought along with Heavenly Court.

Qin Song weakly shook his head: "This is an old injury, it is not from the fight earlier."

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals all gathered around to check on Qin Song’s state, even Fairy Zi Wei came here.

Qin Song was the key person now.

The reason why Heavenly Court was able to display such a powerful star cast killer move was not only with the help of the related formation and Star Constellation Chessboard, but also relying on Qin Song’s strength.

Qin Song was most skilled at teleportation.

In the previous life, he was the one who brought the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals on a long journey to quickly make their way to Di Zang Sheng. At that time, he did not have his complete set of Immortal Gu, he used killer moves without caring about his own condition, causing him to die prematurely.

This life, however, he had awakened earlier, the situation was much better. Not only were his Immortal Gu comprehensive, he also got to use an advanced lifespan extension method.

Qin Song’s seniority was very high, he had gone into hibernation long ago. During his hibernation, Heavenly Court had many new findings and improvement in their research on lifespan extension methods.

As time passed, there were bound to be improvements.

As a result, Qin Song’s lifespan was extended to a certain extent, but the repeated battles made him repeatedly exert himself, and his health declined rapidly. His lifespan was greatly reduced.

"Based on your current physical state, I’m afraid you can only use four movement killer moves at most. Beyond that number, your flesh and soul will all collapse." Fairy Zi Wei calculated for a moment and spoke.

"Four times?" Qin Song smiled and coughed out another mouthful of yellow blood with a calm demeanor: "It is enough to defeat Western Desert, and there’s still room to spare, so maybe we can deal a blow to Southern Border as well! Or maybe Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals. As for after my death, it will be up to all of you."

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were silent.

Only Flesh Whip Immortal grinned: "Don’t worry, Old Man Qin, I’m here."

There was nothing they could do about Qin Song’s state. The cause behind all of this was his old injury, an injury that he had brought with him from exploring Reckless Savage’s grave, it could not be treated in the past, and now it was still fatal.

Fairy Zi Wei, however, did not order a further attack, she was pondering in her head.

Without Qin Song, Heavenly Court would not have the ability to teleport in groups. Relying on Star Constellation Chessboard alone would be too inefficient and it would seriously reduce her own ability to deduce and calculate.

Fairy Zi Wei had experience in using star cast, this killer move consumed too many thoughts. If she had to use this killer move, she would no longer have the extra energy to look over the big picture.

This was clearly not worth it for Heavenly Court.

It would be fine if it was just one battlefield, but Heavenly Court was fighting in at least three battlefields, they were facing not only the powerful elites of the four regions, there was still Fang Yuan, the demon who had yet to do anything.

As the leader and strategist of Heavenly Court in both the previous life and this life, Fairy Zi Wei had to oversee the whole situation.

"What a pity, there is no wisdom path Gu Immortal awakening in the immortal graveyard this time."

"Fang Yuan has yet to make a move, and Qi Sea Ancestor has made no movements either. If we waste Qin Song early at this time, it will be bad if there is a sudden change in the battle in the future."

Fairy Zi Wei pondered deeply, unwilling to expend a key force like Qin Song in advance.

She always considered one thing: Fang Yuan possessed a killer move using Fixed Immortal Travel, as well as the ancient battle formation Omni-directional Travel, he could quickly appear in any place in Central Continent.

If Heavenly Court preserved the remaining uses of their star cast method, when they deal with Fang Yuan in the future, it would be much easier.

"Right now, we have four battlefields, they are in Heavenly Court, Hairy Foot Mountain, Emperor City, and Hidden Dragon Cave." Fairy Zi Wei looked around, analyzing as she spoke.

"Of these four battlefields, Heavenly Court’s battlefield is the most important. Once we are breached and fate Gu gets destroyed by Longevity Heaven, all hope is lost."

"The second most important is Hairy Foot Mountain. If Infallible blessed land is destroyed and we don’t refine enough success dao marks, it will have a huge impact on our ability to repair Fate. However, this is not irrevocable. Even if the Infallible blessed land is destroyed and we don’t have enough success dao marks, fate Gu would still be alive. In the future, with new developments in refinement path, we might be able to find other ways to repair fate Gu."

"After that is Emperor City. The Western Desert immortals are moving with their forces aimed straight at Emperor City. But after our repeated strikes, their vigor has been lost. Emperor City itself is already heavily guarded and defended by human path methods left by venerables. Even if it is destroyed and the elites are all dead, it is not very important. In a hundred years, more elites will emerge."

"Finally, there is Hidden Dragon Cave. Although there are many Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals, they are not looking to kill and only want to seek gains. The formation and Old Man Bei Feng alone won’t be able to defend against them, but delaying them for a while is more than enough. During this period of time, we only needed to support them once to stabilize the situation over there."

A Gu Immortal asked: "So, what is your decision?"

Fairy Zi Wei cast her gaze towards Calamity Luck Altar in the qi wall: "Let’s take care of Longevity Heaven first! With Heavenly Court secure and fate Gu safe, even if the situation outside is completely lost, we will always be in an impregnable position."

After a pause, she continued: "In addition to that, it will also allow Senior Qin Song to preserve his health, preventing Fang Yuan and Qi Sea Ancestor from suddenly making a move ."

"Great!"

"These are truly the words of a great strategist."

"I’m also feeling uneasy about trapping Calamity Luck Altar in our headquarters. After all, they are the descendants of Giant Sun, so they might unleash a surprising attack anytime."

"We will listen to you!"

After listening carefully, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals all approved of this plan.

As a result, the immortals stopped attacking at a long range, they entered the qi wall and fought Longevity Heaven fiercely.

The qi wall in Heavenly Court was left behind by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable. After so many years, except for the three paths that were opened by the three venerables, the rest of the qi wall was still strong and enduring.

And even worse was that the qi wall still retained its autonomous abilities.

Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were allowed to move freely in it, while Longevity Heaven’s Gu Immortals were restricted by a strong force.

There was a hemispherical battlefield in the qi wall, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals bombarded Calamity Luck Altar with a barrage of attacks with their backs against the wall.

Once Calamity Luck Altar retaliates, these Gu Immortals would rapidly retreat, entering the qi wall and using it to block Calamity Luck Altar’s attack.

Because of this, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were able to attack with their full strength, Calamity Luck Altar’s surface was filled with cracks.

As an rank eight Immortal Gu House, Calamity Luck Altar itself was extremely sturdy, and it was created by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable himself, so it had a clear advantage in charging. It was simply unreasonable.

But all along, it was always obstructed by a Gu Immortal.

This person was Duke Long!

His body was slowly growing minute by minute, his face was like iron, his body was robust, and the defense of violet-gold dragon scales all over his body was extremely amazing.

Transformation path killer moves were being unleashed as he desired. The moves were domineering and fierce, blocking Calamity Luck Altar firmly.

Be they Calamity Luck Altar or killer moves of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals that he was in range of, he held firm, as if he was a pillar of heaven, all of the rank eight killer moves felt like just a light breeze.

In the previous life, Duke Long and the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals fought for Dragon Palace, and although he succeeded, he was seriously injured. By the time the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was held, Duke Long was still injured, so his performance in battle was not so shocking at the start.

In this life, because Fang Yuan had obtained Dragon Palace in advance, Duke Long was in a fully intact state and could attack Calamity Luck Altar to the point where it could not inch forward.

"Duke Long... is actually so strong!" Bing Sai Chuan was livid.

The accompanying Bull Demon, Flower Lady, and Five Elements Grandmaster were all desperately trying their best to repair Calamity Luck Altar.

"This won’t work. Without breaking through the barrier in front of us, we won’t be able to get close to Heaven Overseeing Tower." In Calamity Luck Altar, Mao Li Qiu lay down on the ground, yelling out in dissatisfaction.

Bing Sai Chuan struggled for a while internally before he sighed: "There is no other way, activate the killer move call of the ancient."

Calamity Luck Altar suddenly stood still and abruptly exploded with a round of golden light.

The light was so dazzling that it caused Duke Long to squint his eyes.

Swish swish swish...

The sound of river waves surging through the battlefield resounded.

The phantom image of a segment of the grand River of Time appeared above Calamity Luck Altar.

"This is?!" Duke Long’s heart was slightly shaken.

Then, following the astonished eyes of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals walked out of the phantom River of Time one by one.

"Come on, eat one of my explosive lightning bolts!" The tall-bodied Nu Er Bao Xiong laughed wildly.

"To think that I can use this move to come to the future and participate in a huge battle, I am truly fortunate." Hei Fan had a slight smile.

"Wow! What a huge battle, oh heavens, I better hide somewhere." Liu Liu Liu had a delicate white face, he had a crafty look as his body vanished on the spot.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"What happened?"

"These are all historically famous experts from Northern Plains, they’ve actually been summoned here!"

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were all surprised.

Duke Long said in a deep voice: "Attention everyone, this is Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s time path killer move, call of the ancient. It can summon closely related Gu Immortals from the upstream of the River of Time to the present to fight for the user!"

"That’s interesting." Flesh Whip Immortal licked her lips, her fighting spirit surging as she rushed up.

"Let me do it." Zhang Fei Xiong transformed into a giant, together with Flesh

Whip Immortal, they crashed into Calamity Luck Altar from the left and right.

But at this time, Calamity Luck Altar was already guarded.

Nu Er Bao Xiong roared wildly and used his immortal killer move, lightning balls flew everywhere, exploding fiercely.

For a moment, Flesh Whip Immortal and Zhang Fei Xiong were both blocked by the lightning balls, their attacks were thwarted.

Zhu Que Er squealed and used her movement killer move, drawing a bright and stunning red trail of light through the air and circling behind Calamity Luck Altar.

"Don’t even think about it." A male immortal stepped out of the phantom River of Time to block Zhu Que Er.

He had a handsome face like jade, graceful and dashing, his gaze carried a faint smile, it was Dong Fang Yu.

Boom boom boom!

Zhu Que Er and Dong Fang Yu fought a fierce battle.

Immortal killer move — Sitting and Eating the Mountain Empty!

In the distance, Zhao Shan He and Yu Zhu Zi joined forces once again and successfully activated the killer move.

The killer move worked on Calamity Luck Altar with very little effect. Calamity Luck Altar was worthy of being created by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, its defense against food path was quite strong.

Ye Qiao Zi’s killer moves followed one after another. Wooden stakes were created out of thin air, forming a circle to trap Calamity Luck Altar.

Ye Qiao Zi grunted in a low tone again, and countless bright green vines grew from the wooden stakes, wrapping around Calamity Luck Altar and spreading upwards in an attempt to stain the phantom River of Time.

"It’s useless. This phantom River of Time cannot be attacked, only by defeating Calamity Luck Altar which is sustaining it can we put an end to this move." Duke Long was about to make a move.

But another Heavenly Court Gu Immortal suddenly teleported towards the phantom River of Time.

This Gu Immortal resembled a child with black hair, he had a small cowlick on the top of his head, his face was round and cute. It was none other than Vortex Space Boy.

His aura surged as a huge vortex appeared above it had, it had an immense suction force that destroyed anything that got drawn into it.

But the phantom River of Time remained unmoved, completely unaffected.

Another newly appeared Northern Plains Gu Immortal had just walked out, he could not react in time before the vortex sucked him in.

"Hahaha, at least I had some gains." Vortex Space Boy laughed as he exerted even more force.

Nian Er tribe’s expert was trapped inside — Nian Er Nong Fu.

He looked like an old farmer, his pants were rolled up, his legs were covered in mud, his back was hunched, wrinkles covered his face.

Trapped at this moment, he sighed: "Oh my, I’m going to die in battle as soon as I get out. Seriously? Of all the Northern Plains Gu Immortals, I’m the least proficient at fighting."

The small face of Vortex Space Boy puffed up as he did his best to grind and crush Nian Er Nong Fu.

Nian Er Nong Fu was guarded by a pale yellow halo of light, it was thin but very strong, firmly resisting the crazy force of the spinning vortex.

Another Gu Immortal came out from the illusory River of Time, seeing that Nian Er Nong Fu was trapped, he was about to rescue him.

However, Heavenly Court Gu Immortal Zhou Xiong Xin also arrived in time to stop the man.

Ye Lui Kou also came out, his skin was dark and his eyes were like a falcon, scanning the battlefield, he suddenly found the weakest Gu Immortal in Heavenly Court, Qin Song.

Qin Song’s weakened state was hard to conceal.

Ye Lui Kou sneered and attacked Qin Song straight away.

"Your opponent is me." A beautiful female immortal intercepted Ye Lui Kou while he was on his way.

Ye Lui Kou gazed at the female immortal, feeling a certain threat to his life: "Who are you?"

The female immortal smiled fawningly, but her words were murderous: "Your killer — Wan Zi Hong!"

As the two fought, golden light flashed and petals flew.

Figures flew in the sky or fought on the ground.

Intense explosions continued to resound, sparks were flying, bright lights were flashing.

Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal experts fought against Heavenly Court’s members.

Rumble!

Zhang Fei Xiong’s flesh was torn by Nu Er Bao Xiong’s explosions.

Crack crack crack!

Flesh Whip Immortal smacked Yuan Ben so hard that the white bone armor Yuan Ben was wearing got smashed to pieces, he was forced to retreat.

Nian Er Nong Fu was still resisting, while Vortex Space Boy was gritting his teeth, refusing to give up.

Surrounding the two who were deadlocked in battle, several Gu Immortals were also engaged in a fight.

The Gu Immortals were all beginning to suffer injuries, the air was filled with the thick smell of blood.

"Even though I used the killer move, call of the ancient, I am actually being pressured!" Bing Sai Chuan gritted his teeth, his heart growing heavier.

The trump card he had pinned his hopes on did not turn the tables around, it only saved him from defeat and deadlocked the situation.

In the previous life, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had awakened hastily from the immortal graveyard, and despite the emergency deployment of the Immortal Gu by Fairy Zi Wei, their battle strength was still crippled.

But this life was different, these Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had great battle strength and were in good condition, enough to fight with the strong Northern Plains and even suppress them. After all, there had been a lot of cooperation between the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, while Northern Plains’ historically powerful experts had just been summoned, they had heard of each other at most, in their own lives, how could they have worked together?

"This can’t continue. The longer call of the ancient lasts, the more experts it will continue to summon into battle." Fairy Zi Wei frowned, feeling both worried and glad.

Thankfully, she had placed priority on dealing with Longevity Heaven, this killer move was really troublesome. If they had used star cast earlier, the loss of Qin Song and the scattering of Heavenly Court’s experts would likely allow Longevity Heaven to succeed and rush out of the qi wall.

After all, there were few Gu Immortals left in Heavenly Court, and Yuan Qiong Du and the others had to preside over the refinement path Gu formation, the only main force that could block Calamity Luck Altar was Duke Long.

Duke Long gazed at the phantom River of Time for a while, before slowly withdrawing his gaze.

He sighed in his heart, he could not unravel this killer move, it was like how he could not deal with the ’support of the future’ killer move that Red Lotus Demon Venerable used back then.

"If it can’t be broken directly, then all we need to do is to demolish Calamity Luck Altar." Thinking of this, Duke Long slowly clenched his fists and stepped into the battlefield.

Ye Qiao Zi suddenly coughed blood, the killer move backlash caused him to suffer heavy injuries.

He had been cooperating with Duke Long to investigate and restrain Calamity Luck Altar. But how could the rank eight Immortal Gu House be so easily restrained?

Ye Qiao Zi had to retreat into the qi wall, while Calamity Luck Altar stirred, trying to break through the qi wall.

Duke Long silently approached Calamity Luck Altar.

"Block him!" Bing Sai Chuan ordered coldly.

He was someone from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s generation, while most of the experts of Northern Plains were descendants of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, so they naturally listened to him.

Nu Er Bao Xiong was the first to strike, hundreds of lightning balls smashed towards Duke Long.

Boom boom boom!

With a series of deafening explosions, smoke and dust rose, Nu Er Bao Xiong laughed wildly: "Have you tasted my power yet? Hahaha... uh."

A figure gradually walked out of the smoke and dust.

Duke Long’s face was indifferent, his body as straight as a spear, his violet-gold dragon scales still gleaming, leaving only a trace of ash at most.

Nu Er Bao Xiong was furious, he stared with glaring eyes, his aura soaring wildly: "Take this move from me again!"

He held his hands above his head and countless thunderbolts gathered into a huge deep blue lightning ball.

The surface of the lightning ball was lingering with electricity, but inside it was dark and deep, Nu Er Bao Xiong threw it like a meteor shooting towards Duke Long.

Duke Long was finally willing to avert his gaze, but only gave a glance at the lightning ball.

He waved his hand.

Rumble!

The air currents soared, forming a big hand, and with a slap on the back of his hand, the lightning ball was sent flying far away with ease.

Nu Er Bao Xiong’s powerful killer move was thus dealt with by Duke Long.

At the next moment, Yu Yang Zi, Liu Hui, and Liu Liu Liu attacked one after another, while Duke Long went straight to Calamity Luck Altar without looking at them.

Only by destroying Calamity Luck Altar would call of the ancient be stopped!

Boom!

Calamity Luck Altar was punched by Duke Long and sunk into the ground.

A fist crater appeared on the surface of the Immortal Gu House, a large number of Gu worms died in battle, even the Immortal Gu were damaged.

The killer moves of the Northern Plains experts seemed like a downpour of rain, drowning Duke Long.

But after the continuous bombardment, Duke Long was still standing, only a light layer of soot was added on his face.

"How is this possible?"

"How can this person be so strong!"

"He is Duke Long, the master of Red Lotus Demon Venerable!"

Someone identified Duke Long as the Gu Immortals of Northern Plains drew a sharp breath of cold air.

He was an old monster!

But at the next moment, the morale of the people of Northern Plains soared again. They had a brave nature, the stronger Duke Long was, the more excited they became.

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

"Decapitate this old fellow!"

"Protect Calamity Luck Altar and break out of the qi wall."

The Northern Plains Gu Immortals roared wildly, fighting to break out and setting off a flurry of attacks.

"These Northern Plains lunatics!"

"Hmph, brutish cavemen."

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had to retreat and back off for a while.

Faced with the relentless spirit of Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals to fight to the death, Duke Long could not continue to ignore it this time.

He snorted lightly: "Annoying pests."

As soon as his words fell, the aura around him changed.

Qi currents rushed and spread everywhere, while Duke Long’s body became firm like a mountain, his aura soared rapidly.

The killer move was prepared as Duke Long waved his hand.

Whoosh—!

Air was forcefully pushed aside, five grand qi waves flew forward overbearingly.

Everywhere they went, the killer moves of Northern Plains’ experts broke apart like paper, they could not stop the qi waves.

It was immortal killer move — Qi Current Scissors!

Duke Long extended his hand to the sky and pointed.

Immortal killer move — Qi Breath Mountain.

Rumble!

A huge translucent mountain created from qi currents descended and pressed down immediately.

The Northern Plains Gu Immortals wanted to escape, but several of them could not dodge, they were pushed down by the qi breath mountain as it crashed towards Calamity Luck Altar, turning into meat paste on the spot.

The entire mountain of qi currents pressed down on Calamity Luck Altar so hard that the ground was shaking violently.

Calamity Luck Altar was originally ready to attack, but now, it was immobilized.

Duke Long unleashed two moves in a row, the effect was immediate, he suppressed the entire battle.

Bing Sai Chuan’s expression was livid, his heart sank to rock bottom. He now realized that they could not break through the qi wall with their own strength alone! Ignoring the other Gu Immortals, just Duke Long alone was a mountain they could not pass.

It was not that Bing Sai Chuan had no other trump cards.

In the previous life, he asked Limitless to turn around, restraining Duke Long for a long time, he was unable to move entirely.

But in this life, Calamity Luck Altar was too far away from Imperfection Regret Pavilion, this method could not be used. In the previous life, Calamity Luck Altar reached Central Great Hall before asking for Limitless’ help.

"We can only ask Fang Yuan for help!" Bing Sai Chuan had a thought in his mind.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had once told Bing Sai Chuan: If the plan to attack Heavenly Court fails, and Longevity Heaven loses all hope of getting fate Gu, they would need to ask the crucial person for reinforcement.

"Who is the crucial person?" Back then, Bing Sai Chuan asked this question.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable then answered him: "Whoever destroys Eighty-Eight True Yang Building is the crucial person. When the time comes, you will definitely know."

Longevity Heaven’s plan was to refine destiny Gu, they needed to snatch fate Gu first.

But unlike the previous life, Bing Sai Chuan had suffered a serious setback this time. He had no choice but to ask for help from Fang Yuan.

By the time he received the letter from Bing Sai Chuan, Fang Yuan was already in Central Continent, hiding inside a formation of the organization Defy.

This large formation was set up by Shadow Sect and left for Defy to use as a base camp. However, after the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, Shadow Sect perished, Defy was uprooted by Fairy Zi Wei, resulting in this formation turning vacant.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan used this formation to successfully kill Zhou Xiong Xin. In this life, the situation had changed and Fang Yuan retreated early, not tangling with Zhou Xiong Xin too much in order to guard against the killer move people’s accusation. As a result, Zhou Xiong Xin survived and became a fierce member of the main force of Heavenly Court, while this formation in Defy was preserved.

"To think that Longevity Heaven would encounter such trouble." Fang Yuan’s eyes flickered as he rapidly pondered.

He had been unaware of the situation in Heavenly Court now, this letter containing Bing Sai Chuan’s request for help described their precarious predicament in detail.

Compared to the previous life, Fang Yuan soon found the key to Longevity Heaven’s problem, they were relocated into the qi wall the moment they arrived.

"It should be because of Qin Ding Ling. With a luck path Gu Immortal like her, Heavenly Court could find out Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangement in advance, they even managed to use this to ambush Longevity Heaven instead." Fang

Yuan understood.

"This is yet another change."

"There is also call of the ancient... so it turns out that once Calamity Luck Altar activates it, it can teleport immediately. In the previous life, Bing Sai Chuan used this against Duke Long."

Before getting this information, Fang Yuan had been wondering about Heavenly Court’s method to use star cast on a large scale, trying to find a way to break it.

How greatly Fairy Zi Wei valued it and did everything possible to preserve the method was how greatly Fang Yuan wanted to destroy it!

By now, Fang Yuan had deduced that this formation was in Heavenly Court, with the core being Star Constellation Chessboard and the countless stars scattered in the sky. The power of the formation was projected onto these stars, using them as the springboard to create a large scale star cast effect.

Fang Yuan did not deduce that Qin Song was the key figure.

In his previous life, Qin Song made a very brief appearance and died after escorting the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals to Hidden Dragon Cave.

Later, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals did not inform Fang Yuan of this information.

Lacking this crucial clue, Fang Yuan’s deduction had hit an impasse.

But now he had become somewhat aware of it.

"According to the information conveyed by Bing Sai Chuan, although Fairy Zi Wei did not participate in the siege, she also appeared outside the qi wall to observe the battle. That’s a bit strange, this massive use of star cast should exert all her effort, yet she’s still able to distract herself."

"Someone is helping her!"

"Who is that? Is there another wisdom path great expert? Or did others cooperate to create a successful large scale use of star cast?"

Fang Yuan quickly threw away this train of thought.

Now was not the time to contemplate this question, he had to make a decision as soon as possible!

As a wisdom path Gu Immortal, Fang Yuan was now like a chess player who was playing against Fairy Zi Wei.

Both sides had their own chess pieces.

Fairy Zi Wei was clearly a number of pieces ahead, not only in her own wisdom path attainment, but also Heavenly Court’s unity, and in the current situation, she had a distinct advantage.

Fang Yuan had a seemingly huge force at his disposal, but in reality, they were fighting on their own, he could only exert influence and push his agenda on the people of the four regions subtly.

Although his subordinates were numerous and far surpassed the previous life, few were qualified to participate in a battle of such a level.

Fang Yuan fully considered the entire Central Continent battlefield once again.

In Infallible blessed land, the Southern Border Gu Immortals entered the battlefield and fought, breaking formations one after another, but this was not a concern for the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, there were endless sub-formations.

In the battlefield of Hidden Dragon Cave, the Eastern Sea immortals were trapped in a large formation and were struggling to break it. However, it was clear that Old Man Bei Feng could still hold on for a while longer.

As for Emperor City's battlefield, the Western Desert Gu Immortals were still on their way, their morale was low too.

In Heavenly Court's battlefield, Longevity Heaven was completely at a disadvantage, and since they were ambushed by Heavenly Court, they had completely lost the initiative.

"Of the four main battlefields, the most important is still Heavenly Court's battlefield. Fate Gu is in Heavenly Court, if we want to win this battle, we must destroy fate Gu." Fang Yuan thought, just like Fairy Zi Wei's analysis, both sides knew where the most important place was.

"That being the case, we cannot lose in Heavenly Court! Longevity Heaven's performance is so disappointing, I was hoping that they would cause problems for Heavenly Court and trigger Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's painting path methods first."

Fang Yuan knew that he had to support Bing Sai Chuan even though he had deceived Fang Yuan for his own interests in the previous life, and also in this current life. For the sake of the entire situation, Fang Yuan had to provide support.

Heavenly Court battlefield.

Immortal killer move — Chaotic Dragon Fist!

Steel fists shook Calamity Luck Altar, the force of the punch caused tremors as countless Gu worms perished instantly.

Within Calamity Luck Altar, Mao Li Qiu shouted: "Let me out! Let me hold him back."

Bing Sai Chuan had a cold expression and shook his head: "No, you are no match for him. You'll be courting death if you go. You're not like the others, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals will target you."

Duke Long ignored Northern Plains' generations of experts, he let the other Heavenly Court members deal with them.

Heavenly Court knew clearly that they could only stop call of the ancient by destroying Calamity Luck Altar.

But once Mao Li Qiu entered battle, it would be different. It was a fierce general of Longevity Heaven, it had great strength and killing Mao Li Qiu would greatly weaken Longevity Heaven, he would definitely take action.

Immortal killer move — World Shaking Dragon Hammer!

Duke Long shouted, he raised his fists above his head and smashed down like a giant hammer.

The surface of Calamity Luck Altar shattered, a huge amount of Gu worms died, their carcasses flying everywhere. A large hole was smashed open on the surface of Calamity Luck Altar, it was only the size of a finger but the inside could be seen!

Duke Long roared: "Longevity Heaven, only defeat awaits you. This outcome was already predetermined from the moment you tried to attack Heavenly Court."

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals cheered, their morale climbing to its peak.

"The might of Duke Long is overwhelming!" Bing Sai Chuan sighed long and hard, feeling a sense of powerlessness.

"Why hasn’t Fang Yuan come to support us?" Five Elements Grandmaster called out, inevitably revealing a sense of trepidation.

"As far as I know, Fang Yuan is only rank seven, even if he repeatedly defeated Heavenly Court, he was only taking advantage of the River of Time. If he comes to support us, will he really be able to change the battle situation? Even if he brings out Myriad Year Flying Warship, the other side has Duke Long." Bull Demon spoke, expressing doubt.

Indeed, as of now, it would be difficult to resist Duke Long with just two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses.

Duke Long’s battle strength was too astounding!

What was even more unbelievable to them was that with every passing moment, Duke Long grew stronger endlessly.

This was unreasonable!

Mao Li Qiu snorted: "That lad took Reverse Flow River in front of my very eyes, at least with that killer move alone, even if he’s only rank seven, he can resist Duke Long and take the pressure off us."

"Fang Yuan will definitely support us." Bing Sai Chuan smiled: "I don’t know much about him, but I believe in Lord Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!"

Just as this was said, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals actually began to retreat.

They had the qi wall to rely on, thus retreating quite smoothly.

Soon, only Duke Long was left on the scene.

In the meantime, Zi Wei Fairy dispatched urgently: "Quick, we must send support quickly. The nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation in Infallible blessed land is about to collapse! Hidden Dragon Cave’s formation is also facing destruction!"

Zhou Xiong Xin and the others were shocked as someone asked: "How could the situation change for the worse so quickly?"

Fairy Zi Wei said: "Fang Yuan is making a move."

"Oh? Even so, the unceasing formation won’t collapse so swiftly!"

"He showed up in person?"

"Let’s take him out! We will kill this source of chaos for the sake of the world!"

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were all excited.

Previously, Fang Yuan had repeatedly defeated Heavenly Court, causing many of the Gu Immortals to become angry. After Fang Yuan relied on his knowledge to extend his advantage in the River of Time, Heavenly Court lost the lead and failed miserably during the battle of the stone lotus island, suffering huge losses.

Now that the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was held, Fang Yuan had to attack. The battlefield was placed in Central Continent, the Gu Immortals were eager to see how much territorial advantage Fang Yuan could exploit this time!

But Fairy Zi Wei shook her head slightly: "Fang Yuan has not shown himself, I’m afraid the ones outside are only his subordinates."

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were stunned.

Mere subordinates could cause the two immortal formations to break apart?

Fairy Zi Wei explained: "In Hidden Dragon Cave, Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace appeared, they used a large number of dream realms to erode the formation."

The truth dawned on the immortals, they had an understanding of Fang Yuan’s dream realm methods.

They had already expected this, dream path was an era ahead, it was only natural that the formation would be broken.

"But we have Feng Jin Huang guarding the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation. Although she’s only a rank five Gu Master, she can use the power of the immortal formation to unleash the dream path killer move shatter dream, and transform dream realms into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies." Zhou Xiong Xin expressed his confusion.

Fairy Zi Wei said in a complex tone: "That’s because he did not use dream path methods against the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, but rule path instead."

"Rule path?!" Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals gasped in amazement once again.

"Rule path?" Within the Infallible blessed land battlefield, the Southern Alliance immortals looked at the formation in front of them with great surprise.

They had broken several formations in a row, but they had learned from Fang Yuan that this was the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, while they were feeling annoyed and troubled, this nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation broke apart on its own.

When they exited the formation, the Southern Alliance immortals saw a large formation suspended high in the sky, constantly emitting a five-colored smoke miasma.

The smoke miasma infiltrated the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, forcing Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals to dismantle the sub-formations on their own.

"These are reinforcements of Fang Yuan, this formation was created by Southern Border Gu Immortal Tao Zhu, it is called the five regional limit formation, it can emit a smoke miasma and create a formation similar to the environment of the five regions’ regional walls." Wu Yong received a letter from Fang Yuan at this time and explained with a rather complicated expression.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"To think that there would be such an amazing formation that can counter the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation!"

"To think that our Southern Border’s Gu Immortal, Tao Zhu, created it..."

"It seems that we had greatly underestimated this person."

"Fang Yuan actually possesses this method, when did he get it?"

The Southern Border Gu Immortals conversed as they sighed in amazement.

Fang Yuan had extorted and blackmailed them, but now it was Fang Yuan who had stepped in to support them, which made the Southern Border Gu Immortals all feel quite complicated.

At this moment, the voice of Zhan Bu Du came from within the five regional limit formation: "Southern Border, please do not lower your guard yet. Heavenly Court will not sit around as they lose control of this battlefield, they will surely send reinforcements."

"In that case, please also open the immortal formation and let us defend within it." A Southern Border Gu Immortal replied.

Zhan Bu Du smiled lightly, not hiding his contempt in the slightest: "There is no need to say such naive words. Whether you all fight or retreat, it depends on your willingness. If you don’t want to fight, just scram."

"You..." The Southern Border Gu Immortal who answered had a change of expression from anger.

At this moment, more than ten giant pillars of starlight shone down, the main force of the Heavenly Court really did come to help out!

"This is the formation! Tear it down!" Zhang Fei Xiong took the lead.

Zhan Bu Du was silent and began to activate the formation with his concentration, the five-colored smoke miasma not only defended itself but also spread incessantly to the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation.

Even though the latter formation was created by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, it had to dismantle the sub-formations at the moment, it was stalling for as much time as possible.

"Let’s take action and do our best to protect the five regional limit formation." Wu Yong did not hesitate and immediately ordered.

"Lord, but this is Fang Yuan. Haven’t you been opposing..." Someone was unwilling.

Wu Yong gave this person a fierce stare and spoke in a stern tone, "Everything is for the big picture!"

His prestige was high, Wu clan was also the number one force in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, their leadership had become a tradition.

The Southern Alliance Gu Immortals immediately engaged in a fierce battle with the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

With their help, Zhan Bu Du was relieved internally, the pressure on his shoulders dissipated mostly, and the five-colored smoke miasma spread even more menacingly.

With the cry of a phoenix, flames dazzled and the figure of Prince Feng Xian appeared.

He had sharp eyes and a golden cloak on his back, he opened his mouth to breathe out a monstrous flame.

The flames burned in the five-colored smoke miasma, sweeping towards the immortals of Southern Border.

A rank eight Gu Immortal of Southern Border, Yi Hao Fang, immediately transformed into a sea beast and rode the water waves to stop the flames from spreading.

Jun Shen Guang transformed into a white light, moving through the battlefield, avoiding the four rank eights of Southern Border and attacking the remaining rank seven Gu Immortals.

Moving along with him were Zhou Xiong Xin, Zhu Que Er and others.

Unfixed Manor, Flying Sand Pavilion, and Bay Pavilion were all taken out as Southern Border’s rank seven Gu Immortals quickly entered them.

"Ahhh!"

A scream was heard as Vortex Space Boy carried the head of a Southern Border Gu Immortal in his hand.

Taking advantage of this moment, the rest of the Southern Border rank seven immortals entered the Immortal Gu Houses.

"You guys are moving too slowly." Vortex Space Boy looked at Zhou Xiong Xin and the others as he chuckled.

"Where are you going?!" Wu Yong snorted coldly and chased after him.

Vortex Space Boy retaliated with an immortal killer move, obviously prepared in advance.

Wu Yong raised his hand similarly, setting off a roaring tornado of wind blades, the two killer moves collided with a loud bang, air currents surged, the five-colored smoke miasma rumbled like a dragon.

Vortex Space Boy and Wu Yong grunted at the same time and their faces turned pale.

Immortal killer move — Sitting and Eating the Mountain Empty!

Taking advantage of this time, Zhao Shan He teamed up with Yu Zhu Zi once again to display this powerful killer move.

"Even if you have Immortal Gu Houses, so what?" Yu Zhu Zi snorted coldly.

All the Immortals in the Southern Border Immortal Gu Houses were hit by this move and their faces changed color, their Gu worms and immortal essence were all rapidly depleting out of thin air.

Wu Yong’s pupils shrunk, he advanced instead of retreating: "Defend me!"

Ba De and Chi Qu You immediately moved to his side.

The Immortal Gu Houses stayed at the periphery.

"Stop him!" Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were all experienced in battle, Wu Yong immediately drew all their firepower as he looked like he was about to launch a powerful killer move.

Chi Qu You and Ba De struggled to resist them but soon lost the ability to continue holding them off.

One of them was a formation path Gu Immortal while the other had just advanced to rank eight, how could they be a match for the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals?

In terms of strength alone, Heavenly Court was clearly superior to the immortals of Southern Border. Fortunately, Southern Border had Immortal Gu Houses as well as the five-colored smoke miasma created by Zhan Bu Du, they were huge obstacles for both sides to fight with their full strength, the difference in strength between the two sides was somehow balanced.

However, even though the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals knew well that the stronger the attacks they used in this miasma, the deeper the backlash they would suffer, they were still brave enough to fight to the death, having a relentless stance as they approached the five regional limit formation without any fear of their lives.

After some time, the Southern Border immortals’ battle formation started to show signs of crumbling.

Wan Zi Hong suddenly gave a delicate cry as flower petals flew, attacking the Southern Border Immortal Gu Houses in front of her and forcing them to move aside, forcefully creating a path to move on.

Zhang Fei Xiong followed, transforming into a bear-headed giant and slamming into the five regional limit formation.

Boom!

There was a loud bang and the formation trembled viciously.

Massive amounts of Gu worms perished, even Zhan Bu Du suffered backlash, spitting out a large mouthful of blood.

"Ah, that hurts!" The Formation Spirit was in the main formation, it howled miserably as its body suddenly became much more illusory, no longer as solid as before.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were no better.

They also suffered enormous backlash, but one by one, they gritted their teeth and tried their best to destroy the five regional limit formation.

"Oh no, the Southern Alliance won’t be able to defend against such a fierce attack from Heavenly Court." Zhan Bu Du secretly gritted his teeth.

The main power of the five regional limit formation lay in the five-colored smoke miasma, although its defense was also strong, it would never last long under the fierce attack of these Gu Immortals.

"But even if that’s the case, I’ll fight to the death and try to stall for as long as possible." Zhan Bu Du was already prepared to die.

Everything was for the big picture, even if it meant sacrificing this clone, he would have no regret.

Sacrifices should be made when necessary, clones were also merely chess pieces. It was just easier to fully utilize them.

Even if the five regional limit formation was broken and destroyed, it was still valuable.

On one hand, it temporarily maintained the Heavenly Court battlefield and protected Longevity Heaven’s members. On the other hand, it gave a crucial amount of time for the battlefield in Hidden Dragon Cave.

Hidden Dragon Cave.

A large amount of dream realms were eroding the battlefield, Old Man Bei Feng was livid but unable to do anything about it.

"Call for help, call for help, grandfather!" Feng Chan Zi shouted in a hurry, his face was pale and covered in cold sweat.

Old Man Bei Feng did not speak.

He had already requested for support, but Heavenly Court’s reinforcements were delayed, that did not make sense.

After all, Heavenly Court had a way to use a large scale star cast method, it would only take an instant for support to come over. If they did not appear at this time, they must have been held back by something.

A bad feeling filled Old Man Bei Feng’s heart.

Roar!

Already sensing the weakening of its bindings, the suppressed Di Zang Sheng within the formation was also struggling at this time, adding onto the burden of the formation.

Immortal killer move — Mountain Suppression!

Immortal killer move — Broken Mirror Shard Light!

Qing Yue An and Song Qi Yuan were the first to break through the restraints, and because of their efforts, the power of the formation was greatly weakened once again. The other Gu Immortals were able to successfully break through one after another.

The eight Immortals converged, and although they were still inside the formation, they had noticed the change.

"How could there be so many dream realms!" Zhang Yin pretended not to know and looked surprised.

"Perhaps Fang Yuan is helping us." Shen Cong Sheng deliberately said, he had actually gotten a message from Fang Yuan: "Who else can control the dream realms besides him?"

"Why is Fang Yuan here!?" Hua Cai Yun frowned.

"As the saying goes, great people see eye to eye, he may also try to target Di

Zang Sheng." Qing Yue An guessed as he healed his wounds.

"Then let Fang Yuan go release Di Zang Sheng, should we withdraw now?" Hua Cai Yun hesitated.

Right at this moment, there was a loud rumble as an Immortal Gu House broke the formation, charging towards the formation core.

This Immortal Gu House was a majestic palace, emitting an orange-golden glow, it was overbearingly magnificent, and the surface of the palace was filled with dragon-shaped carvings.

Hua Cai Yun, Qing Yue An and the others were stunned, although they were seeing it for the first time, they all guessed the name of this Immortal Gu House at the same time — Dragon Palace!

There was a loud rumble as Dragon Palace crashed through the core area.

Old Man Bei Feng howled and fell to the ground, he suffered a strong backlash, he was currently in a terrible state, having less than ten percent of his battle strength left.

Immortal killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

Dreamy light smoke, with a gentle movement, moved Old Man Bei Feng into the palace and sealed him with ease.

Feng Chan Zi who was beside Old Man Bei Feng also got swept into this smoke.

Seeing a rank eight Gu Immortal being suppressed so easily, the Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortals could not help but show changes of expressions. Only half of them were genuine, while the other half were disguising their emotions as they knew about the truth.

Wu Shuai controlled Dragon Palace, and after capturing Old Man Bei Feng, he plunged down into the depths of the Earth Trench, ignoring the eight Eastern Sea immortals.

Qing Yue An and the others looked very pale, realizing that they were being used as cannon fodder and bait by Fang Yuan.

A moment later, they heard another deafening dragon roar, the earth shook as heaven and earth changed color, a huge Evil Dragon slowly rose up.

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortals panicked and retreated, looking up.

The Evil Dragon Di Zang Sheng was so huge that it was like a mountain range, flying high in the sky, enveloping heaven and earth, it could shroud the brilliance of the sun and moon!

Thankfully, Di Zang Sheng did not find trouble with the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals and flew directly to the west.

"Central Continent is in for a world of trouble, haha."

"Strange, where did Dragon Palace go?"

"What? You want to fight against Fang Yuan? Let’s leave now."

"You all saw the move that Dragon Palace just used to capture Old Man Bei Feng, right? It’s a dream path killer move!"

The Eastern Sea immortals stopped their conversation, they did not dare to stay longer.

Fang Yuan’s demonic might had shocked rank eights, after all, Heavenly Court had been defeated by Fang Yuan several times. Now that he used the methods of Dragon Palace, he shocked these unsuspecting Gu Immortals even more.

"Di Zang Sheng has been released, it will definitely create chaos in Central Continent, creating a good opportunity for us."

"No, don’t forget how the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals appeared before the war started. I don’t want a dozen or so Heavenly Court rank eights suddenly appearing around me when I’m on the move."

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortals were also communicating while flying away, they frowned when this was brought up.

They had originally planned to release Di Zang Sheng to deplete Central Continent’s foundation and attract firepower to facilitate their actions. But Heavenly Court possessed the method to use a large scale star cast, nullifying the effectiveness of this plan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

To continue with their previous plan, Eastern Sea’s immortals would have to first unravel Heavenly Court’s method, otherwise, it would be too dangerous.

Shen Cong Sheng looked at the sky, thinking of the information that Fang Yuan gave him, he spoke: "It is not impossible to unravel Heavenly Court’s method. Heavenly Court purposely arranged a large number of stars in white heaven and used them to relocate Gu Immortals to anywhere in Central Continent."

The other Gu Immortals’ eyes brightened at the news.

"Then we should destroy these stars."

"But if we attack white heaven, wouldn’t we be provoking Heavenly Court, what if the main force of Heavenly Court besieges us again?"

Some Gu Immortals were hesitant.

Granny Rong spoke slowly and logically: "There is indeed such a risk."

Zhang Yin sneered: "What are you afraid of? If you can’t beat them, can’t you escape? Just pay some attention to prevent Heavenly Court from making use of a battlefield killer move, if we engage in a hit and run situation, can Heavenly Court waste their time chasing us?"

"Haha, Zhang Yin’s words are reasonable." Yang Zi He’s eyebrows raised, he caressed his palm and smiled: "Currently, the situation in Central Continent is chaotic with battles everywhere, Di Zang Sheng has even been released. We have already provoked Heavenly Court at this point, what is there to hesitate?"

Shi Miao acted like he was contemplating: "It seems that Heavenly Court cannot cope with so many battlefields at the moment. If not, why wouldn’t they come over to fight us? Why would they let us free Di Zang Sheng?"

Song Qi Yuan nodded: "Heavenly Court is already overwhelmed, it seems that the Southern Border Gu Immortals have found the location of Infallible blessed land and are storming the battlefield, attacking Heavenly Court’s formation. The

Western Desert immortals are heading to Emperor City. The Northern Plains Gu Immortals are still nowhere to be seen, but these barbarians are bound to join in the chaotic battle. And with Di Zang Sheng rampaging as well... In my opinion, I’m afraid Heavenly Court won’t be able to care about us yet."

With that, the Eastern Sea eight immortals reached a unified opinion once again and acted in unison, heading for white heaven.

They were still unaware that Longevity Heaven had already engaged with Heavenly Court in a huge battle.

In their case, Emperor City did not have anything valuable to loot. Infallible blessed land was attractive but Southern Border and Heavenly Court were already fighting there, it was better to avoid it.

Heavenly Court.

Fairy Zi Wei stayed in Central Great Hall to oversee the situation, all sorts of new information reached her continuously.

Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals entered white heaven, their motive was very clear, they wanted to destroy the stars that Heavenly Court had arranged.

But it was not a problem.

When they set up the stars as an arrangement, Heavenly Court made considerations. Fairy Zi Wei decided to ignore them.

These stars were placed in a scattered manner, they were far from each other, if Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals wanted to destroy them, they would need to spend a lot of time.

In other words, Heavenly Court was using these star immortal materials to stall eight rank eight Gu Immortals, this was extremely worth it, Fairy Zi Wei was happy to see them take action.

After all, with Qin Song’s condition, they could only use a large scale star cast method four more times. Before Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals destroy all the stars, these four uses would likely be expended.

What worried Fairy Zi Wei was Di Zang Sheng.

In truth, Di Zang Sheng escaping was not too worrying to Fairy Zi Wei.

But the problem was, after escaping, Di Zang Sheng acted very strangely, it did not create chaos and destruction wantonly, it flew away calmly and was not in a maniacal state.

This was different from historical records.

"Was it subdued by Dragon Palace?" Fairy Zi Wei could not help but think of this.

It was easy to deduce it.

Firstly, Heavenly Court had records that Dragon Palace was an enslavement path Immortal Gu House, everyone knew that. Secondly, Fang Yuan sent Dragon Palace to attack Hidden Dragon Cave, he must have had some intention. Dragon Palace displayed powerful dream path methods, with its battle strength, Fang Yuan would not use it in a non-crucial battlefield!

"If Fang Yuan’s previous idea was to use Dragon Palace to subdue Di Zang Sheng, then him dispatching his subordinates to set up a large formation to restrain the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation and attract the main force of our Heavenly Court to attack furiously is just bait. At the same time, the attack of the eight Eastern Sea immortals is also a smokescreen that he threw." Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes flickered with cold light.

"Fang Yuan was actually able to influence the eight immortals of Eastern Sea? How did he do it? Among the eight immortals of Eastern Sea, it seems there are members of Fang Yuan’s group, or those who secretly work with him. I’m afraid that there are quite a few of these members, there are at least two of them."

Fairy Zi Wei speculated: "But what if Fang Yuan coincidentally happened to be there? The eight immortals of Eastern Sea unexpectedly had the same goal as him, allowing him to benefit by chance. This is also quite possible. After all, Fang Yuan has Giant Sun’s true inheritance, his luck has constantly been good. Qin Ding Ling is on our side, but she is still healing. Altering Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangement had a much larger price than we expected."

Even if he was an opponent, Fairy Zi Wei could not help but admire Fang Yuan.

She also had to admit, Fang Yuan had done a beautiful job in the Hidden Dragon Cave battlefield!

The bad feeling in her heart was still deepening, Fairy Zi Wei’s attention was mostly focusing on Di Zang Sheng.

"Most likely, it is being controlled by Fang Yuan. Then where exactly is it going to reinforce the enemy?"

"Emperor City is the nearest battlefield, the elite Gu Masters have just arrived, they have yet to officially begin the final round of the Refinement Path Convention. Destroying Emperor City will greatly delay the restoration of fate Gu."

"It is also likely to go to the Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield. Wiping out the main force of Heavenly Court at once is also Fang Yuan’s style. Even if the main force of Heavenly Court is teleported back by me, he will still find a way to destroy Infallible blessed land. Once he destroys the blessed land, then at least this time, our restoration of fate Gu will have to be suspended."

"Of course, Heavenly Court’s battlefield is also a possibility. Since Longevity Heaven can come in unannounced, it is also possible that Fang Yuan can come. After all, he has obtained Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s true inheritance, so he might have access to such a backdoor secretly."

For the first time since the start of the war, Fairy Zi Wei felt passive.

If the large scale star cast method could teleport Duke Long as well, it would be great. However, unfortunately, Duke Long’s might became an obstacle to the teleportation. To make a comparison, the Heavenly Court rank eights were like a dozen rabbits, while Duke Long was a full-grown elephant, the difference between the two was considerably big, the star cast method could not move Duke Long.

Immortal killer move — Decomposition!

Northern Plains Gu Immortal Yu Yang Zi used his signature method, this killer move was largely the reason why he was famous in history.

Decomposition hit Duke Long directly, his body paused for a moment, as he looked at Yu Yang Zi, he had a plain expression: "Oh, that’s decomposition. You are Yu Yang Zi?"

When Duke Long said that, he was hundreds of steps away from Yu Yang Zi.

After he said that, purple-gold dragon-shaped qi flickered as he was teleported right in front of Yu Yang Zi.

At this moment, Yu Yang Zi’s pupils shrank to pin size as his heart pounded wildly with alarms and warnings.

He tried to retreat but it was clearly just an extravagant hope — his neck was steadily choked by a large hand.

It was Duke Long’s hand, covered in purple-gold dragon scales, with fingers as sharp as blades.

Yu Yang Zi had already activated his defensive killer move, but the killer move’s light was like glass, it shattered under the force of the monstrous dragon claws.

Before dying, Yu Yang Zi roared and self-detonated, an intense explosion resounded, the terrifying shock wave spread out intensely, shaking all the surroundings.

The smoke and dust dissipated, the figure of Duke Long remained standing like a pillar of heaven.

"Immortals of Northern Plains, what else do you have other than a lack of fear for death?" Duke Long’s tone was plain, but it spread throughout the battlefield.

The Northern Plains immortals gnashed their teeth, but could not refute it.

Although the main force of Heavenly Court had all withdrawn with only Duke Long left, even with only Duke Long alone, Calamity Luck Altar still could not make an inch of progress. They could only rely on call of the ancient to constantly summon powerful experts of Northern Plains in history to maintain the battle situation.

"And this!" Suddenly, Liu Liu Liu’s figure appeared behind Duke Long’s back.

Duke Long’s body shook.

The grey light dagger in Liu Liu Liu’s hand was thrust into his back, even the purple-gold dragon scales could not block this method.

This was Liu Liu Liu’s signature killer move — Despicable Penetrating Blade!

In the previous life, Liu Liu Liu had killed many members of Heavenly Court with this move, and even severely injured Fairy Zi Wei. At that time, if not for Wu Shuang blocking most of the power, Fairy Zi Wei would have died tragically in his hands.

"Good!" Seeing this scene, the Northern Plains immortals were suddenly energized.

Since the start of the war, no matter how furiously the Northern Plains immortals attacked, this was the first time that Duke Long was wounded like this.

However, Liu Liu Liu’s face changed abruptly, he could not hide his shock.

Although his killer move dagger had pierced into Duke Long’s body, it was like the blade got stuck in a block of iron, unable to move a single inch!

"A human path killer move? Not bad, it fits your temperament." Duke Long slowly turned around and stretched out his hand, steadily grasping Liu Liu Liu’s head.

At this moment, Liu Liu Liu suddenly realized: "Duke Long purposely got hit by my move, he used his body as bait to trap me!"

It was not that he did not want to escape, but he could not.

Like the dagger in his hand, he could not move.

Slap.

With a cracking sound, Liu Liu Liu’s skull was like a watermelon easily crushed by Duke Long, his headless corpse immediately fell down, the grey dagger in his hand dissipated instantly.

"Who else?!" Duke Long raised his arms and shouted, his body was like iron, having grown to twice the size of a normal man, his long purple hair dancing wildly in a monstrous wave of sounds.

The Northern Plains immortals responded to him with countless killer moves.

Rumble...

There were dazzling light shadows, countless killer moves were stacked on top of each other, Duke Long rushed out brutally, displaying world shaking dragon hammer and ruthlessly slamming into Calamity Luck Altar.

With a loud bang, Calamity Luck Altar flew back dozens of steps, creating a long trench on the ground.

The front that was hit by Duke Long was completely caved in, forming a shockingly deep pit.

"There is no time to repair damage of such a level!" Bing Sai Chuan thudded, his heart sinking violently.

Bull Demon, Flower Lady, and Five Elements Grandmaster were trying to repair Calamity Luck Altar, they froze at this moment.

If Calamity Luck Altar broke, Longevity Heaven’s members would immediately lose this battle, they would die without a proper burial!

But at the moment when Duke Long was about to attack again, a black light flew out from the River of Time.

The black light followed the hole in the front of Calamity Luck Altar and shot into its interior, transforming into a young and handsome looking Gu Immortal with curly black hair hanging down his waist.

With a wave of his palm, the young Gu Immortal’s dark light surged, quickly repairing the damage of Calamity Luck Altar and saving Longevity Heaven from the brink of defeat!

Bing Sai Chuan’s body shook intensely: "Seventh Prince!"

Duke Long snorted coldly: "So it’s Giant Sun’s child."

The young looking Gu Immortal was the seventh child of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he was known as Seventh Prince, he nodded: "Duke Long, with me, Qi Ci Lang, here, it will be much harder for you to destroy Calamity Luck Altar now."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1931 Shen Shang“s Solution

"This is Central Continent’s Emperor City?" Ye Fan followed the main group as they walked into Emperor City, he looked around and assessed the place.

He was a Southern Border Gu Master, but he had heard of Emperor City’s famous name long ago.

This was the largest mortal city in Central Continent, or rather, the entire five regions world. Here, rank three Gu Masters were very commonly seen, but in Southern Border, rank three Gu Masters were normally authoritative elders in their clans.

This was the first time Ye Fan visited Emperor City.

Emperor City lived up to its name, it was well guarded and had a grand structure, Ye Fan was not disappointed.

"However, compared to an Immortal Gu House, Emperor City is far inferior." Thinking of this, Ye Fan looked at the sky.

In the sky, there were several Immortal Gu Houses floating silently.

There was a pavilion, exquisite and small, there were countless bird cages hanging on it, birds chirped continuously. This was Heavenly Lotus Sect’s Canary Pavilion.

There was a garden that was exquisitely built, it was grand with white jade tiles and oozing with cold air, there were faint dragon roars heard occasionally, this was Ancient Soul Sect’s Immortal Gu House, Frost Dragon Manor.

There was also a seven-story tower, curtains were fluttering in the building, it was Wind Cloud Manor’s rank seven Immortal Gu House, Wind Sweeping Building.

There was also Combat Immortal Sect’s Edge Link Camp which had grand flags fluttering with the wind.

Other than those, Illusion Garden, Yue Yang Palace, and Sun and Moon Temple were there.

Ye Fan’s master was Lu Wei Yin, he learned a lot of information regarding Gu Immortals from him, he could discern most of the famous Immortal Gu Houses.

These Immortal Gu Houses were not as large as Emperor City, but they were much more dazzling, they were the center of attention that all of the city people were talking about.

At this time, a youngster beside him sighed: "It seems that the rumors are correct. The world is going to change, immortals are going to battle. A chaotic great era is coming, the difference between mortal and immortal will shrink! This is our plan too, isn’t that right, Brother Ye?"

Ye Fan looked at the youngster as he nodded: "You are correct, Brother Hong."

Similar to the previous life, Ye Fan and Hong Yi met in the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention and became sworn brothers after they interacted.

Hong Yi smiled: "This Refinement Path Convention is unprecedented, let those Gu Immortals fight in the sky, it is not something we can interfere in."

"Haha, that makes sense, let us have a true competition this time!" Ye Fan patted Hong Yi’s shoulders.

The two brothers were filled with fighting spirit.

Hong Yi said: "I have a feeling that the eventual winner of this Refinement Path Convention will be one of us."

Shen Shang’s ears twitched, he heard the entire conversation between Hong Yi and Ye Fan without missing a word.

These two were mortals, but Shen Shang kept a trace of his concentration on them at all times.

"In the future five regions chaotic war, these two youngsters likely have an opportunity to become immortal." Shen Shang was a human path quasi-supreme, he had a strong premonition when it came to humans.

Over at Heavenly Court, people’s united hearts and other human path killer moves were all used already, Unfettered Scholar and Zheng Qing had been expelled.

But Shen Shang still managed to disguise himself and enter the final competition ground, he was not suspected at all.

He was after all a rank eight Gu Immortal and also a human path quasi-supreme grandmaster!

Shen Shang observed his surroundings, he became gradually excited.

"My estimations earlier were not wrong, this Emperor City is one of the main human veins of Central Continent!"

Mountains had mountain veins, the earth had earth veins, and humans had human veins.

"Emperor City was created by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, after so many years of relocation and movement, it still remained as the largest gathering spot of humans, it stayed on the trail of Central Continent’s human vein all along."

"This place produces human talents, it is because of Central Continent’s main human vein. Heavenly Court’s generations of Immortal Venerables have left their human path methods here, hmm... I can vaguely sense their existence."

Fang Yuan used his rebirth as the reason to urge Shen Shang to take action and try to unravel the various venerable human path methods.

This was a challenging mission, it spurred on Shen Shang’s morale and ambition.

Fang Yuan and the rest could not sense any of the traces of these human path killer moves. But for Shen Shang, he could trace and locate them.

Thus, he disguised himself and entered Emperor City, he finally found a chance to destroy the venerable killer moves.

"Heavenly Court is collecting human will and storing it inside Heavenly Court for use."

"That place is too tightly defended, if we cannot enter Heavenly Court, we will not be able to destroy the human will. If we cannot destroy the human will, we cannot drain them of this resource."

"However... taking action here will also have superb effects."

"Heavenly Court is collecting human will, Emperor City plays a crucial role in this process, it is the largest shipment area they have to transport the human will."

"If I destroy this place, Heavenly Court’s efficiency in gathering human will would fall greatly."

But Shen Shang did not plan to cause destruction.

He had a greater objective.

He wanted to follow the traces with Emperor City as the anchor to find the venerable human path killer moves and reverse-deduce the profundities of their human path methods, to try to steal their knowledge!

Shen Shang was confident and daring.

He was not satisfied with just the reputation of unraveling a venerable killer move, he wanted to master the venerable human path methods and gain much more strength in the process.

"If my human path methods improve, it might be possible to get rid of the problem of the black fire, I will not go berserk anymore."

Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield.

Five colored smoke miasma rumbled, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals and Heavenly Court’s main forces had already fought for a long time.

Bay Pavilion, Flying Sand Pavilion, and Unfixed Manor were heavily damaged, they went to the second defensive line to get repaired.

At the front lines, there were four rank eights from Southern Border, as well as two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and Great Space Temple.

Heavenly Court’s main forces had no deaths, their morale was high.

Zhao Shan He prepared his killer move again, his aura was surging.

Zhan Bu Du quickly shouted: "Stop him! He is going to use that move again!"

Wu Yong and Yi Hao Fang gritted their teeth, they wanted to charge in but Ye Qiao Zi and Vortex Space Boy stopped them.

Zhou Xiong Xin and Flesh Whip Immortal joined hands to obstruct Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

Meanwhile, Zhu Que Er and Wan Zi Hong went from the right and left, bypassing the battlefield to attack the five regional limit formation directly.

Wu Yong and the rest were left with no choice, they had to return to being defensive.

They had too few people, it was hard enough to defend, they were not as agile and flexible as Heavenly Court’s group.

Zhao Shan He successfully used his killer move, he opened his mouth, he sucked in all of the surrounding five colored smoke.

A large amount of smoke was sucked into his stomach, which expanded at an observable rate. At the same time, his face and muscles turned multicolored.

Zhao Shan He actually swallowed the five colored smoke, creating a temporary cleared out area.

Without the restraints of the five colored smoke, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were able to use their full power, they unleashed all sorts of killer moves with terrifying power.

Wu Yong and the rest resisted, but their defensive line was not tight, killer moves were directed to get through the cracks, after a rough filter by their defenses, the rest landed on the five regional limit formation.

The five regional limit formation shook intensely, a large number of Gu worms died, a weakened Formation Spirit quickly tried to repair it.

Zhan Bu Du’s expression was ugly.

Relying on Zhao Shan He’s food path method, Heavenly Court managed to make a breakthrough, each time they used this method, the five regional limit formation suffered immense damage.

Even though they were repairing it at full speed, it could not keep up with the waves of attacks that kept on coming.

As damage accumulated, the five regional limit formation started to get into a dangerous spot.

What to do?

Emperor City.

The final round of the competition was racing against the clock to start.

Shen Shang was secretly happy.

He started to refine Gu, using this as a cover, he secretly prepared his killer move.

"We finally arrived!" Fang Di Chang drove Divine Bean Palace as he charged at the front.

Behind him was Western Desert’s main troops.

"To battle!"

"Force them back!"

"Defend Emperor City to the death."

Central Continent’s troops cheered and shouted, they faced off against Western Desert’s Immortal Gu Houses as battle erupted.

"Wonderful!" Shen Shang, who was paying attention to the outside world, cheered, with Central Continent’s forces being restrained, he had no worries left.

Right at this moment!

Bam.

He erupted with a strong Gu Immortal aura, he shouted as profound white light pierced through the hall, radiating in the entire Emperor City.

"The venerables have passed away, all of your human path methods should go as well!" Shen Shang’s eyes shined with piercing and blinding light.

Puff!

At the next moment, he spat out a mouthful of blood, his body cracked as his lungs burst, his intestines blew into tiny pieces that shot out of the wounds all over his body.

Failure!

"How can this be?!" Shen Shang could not believe this, he stared with wide eyes: "I had already..."

Not only did he fail to resolve the venerable methods, he even triggered them in advance.

This was human path killer move — Hope of the People!

White light flew around in the sky like a snowstorm, it gathered on the bodies of the Central Continent Gu Immortals, creating a pure white halo.

Human path killer move — Heroes Among People!

The white lights surrounding the Central Continent Gu Immortals started to shrink, while the Gu Immortals’ auras started to grow.

Howl!

Central Continent’s army roared, their morale soared as they charged towards Western Desert’s troops.

"Oh no!" Fang Di Chang’s expression changed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1932 Heavenly Court“s Grand Migh

The white light that spread across the sky was like drifting snow, filling the heaven and earth of Central Continent.

The first to benefit was Emperor City’s battlefield.

"So strong, such strong power!" Central Continent’s Gu Immortals had an incredible feeling, their bodies were surging with new strength. This strength was so grand and vast, it felt like an endless tide, sweeping through their bodies and minds constantly.

All their fatigue was gone.

Their minds were clear, their fighting spirit also rose sharply.

Be it rank six, seven, or even rank eight, they felt the same.

"This is the foundation of my Central Continent’s Heavenly Court!"

"My strength has at least doubled, and with such an increase, what enemies will I be afraid of?"

"Charge, kill them, we will defeat all the invaders! Let them know the might of Heavenly Court, the might of Central Continent!!"

The morale on Central Continent’s side soared like a rainbow, setting off a ferocious frenzy of attacks.

Western Desert’s side was retreating steadily.

"Retreat!"

"Quickly retreat!"

"Such an amplification is truly terrifying, what kind of killer move is this?"

"Let’s avoid battle for now, such a powerful killer move cannot last long."

The Gu Immortals on Western Desert’s side communicated in panic.

"It’s useless. This is the method of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the two human path killer moves are heroes among people and hope of the people respectively, they have no problem sustaining it throughout the entire battle." Fang Di Chang said.

The Western Desert side kept retreating, but Divine Bean Palace under Fang Di Chang’s control always remained in place, as if it was their support pillar, with no intention of retreating.

Fang Di Chang had a cold look on his face.

He did not expect that Shen Shang’s unraveling would actually cause the killer moves to activate in advance.

In the previous life, these two human path methods were a rather important trump card that changed the battle situation.

In this life, Fang Yuan had painstakingly plotted to ally with Shen Shang in order to resolve these two methods. But despite all of his efforts, the results were still unsatisfactory. As far as the current results were concerned, Shen Shang not only failed to restrain and get rid of the two killer moves, he even made the situation more troublesome.

Heroes among people targeted Gu Immortals themselves, causing their comprehensive battle strength to be amplified to at least double of the original!

The killer move had terrifying might, after gaining the amplification, the Gu Immortal’s killer moves, including Immortal Gu Houses and immortal formations, would be powered up as well. In a certain aspect, it was even more useful than Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s perfect pair killer move.

The waves of attacks were like stormy waves, bombarding Divine Bean Palace incessantly.

Divine Bean Palace was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, but it could not resist such impacts. The surface was cracked and damaged, a large number of Gu worms died quickly and miserably, facing destruction.

But the power of Divine Bean Palace was in recovery, it followed the cultivation style of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable.

Although a lot of the Gu worms perished, they would be replenished quickly. Injured Gu worms that did not die would even recover quickly!

Divine Bean Palace was like a golden reef, steadily supporting itself on the front lines, silently enduring the endless bombardment of Central Continent’s forces.

"As expected of Divine Bean Palace!"

"Fang clan’s Fang Di Chang is really a worthy leader."

"Let’s fight, since we’ve come this far, are we going to constantly run away?"

The morale of the Western Desert army was finally stabilized, their Gu Immortals no longer retreated and faced the Immortal Gu Houses of Central Continent.

At once, battle started between Immortal Gu Houses.

Canary Pavilion opened several bird cages, groups of birds flew freely, when they flew out of the bird cages, they swiftly grew and formed a flock of birds, like an overwhelming patch of moving dark clouds.

Western Desert’s Chicken Dog Coop was not falling behind, releasing a flock of desolate beast chickens and dogs to fight against it.

After a few moments of contact between the two sides, it became clear that the chicken and dog desolate beasts could not resist, many were killed.

"I’ll help you!" Dong clan’s Gu Immortals steered Red River Wheel to go and support them.

Red River Wheel was like a waterwheel, it rolled forward as a huge red light shot out of the wheel, it seemed to resemble a ribbon that tangled the bird group.

The molten flame birds were immediately suppressed, they were captured by the red light and were all subdued within Red River Wheel.

"Thanks for the molten flame birds!" Dong clan’s Gu Immortals laughed loudly, the power of Red River Wheel rose by twenty percent because of this!

Although Western Desert’s side gained a small profit, Chicken Dog Coop still had to cooperate with Red River Wheel to resist Canary Pavilion.

This was common sense.

In the battlefield, Western Desert’s Immortal Gu Houses often had to team up against one enemy.

The Immortal Gu Houses on Central Continent’s side all had great power. Yue Yang Palace shot out grand profound light, piercing the skies, Frost Dragon Manor emitted dragon soul and frost energy, Wind Sweeping Building rampaged with tornadoes, sweeping the battlefield.

From the first contact, Western Desert’s group was pressured and could barely resist.

"This cannot go on." Fang Di Chang observed the battlefield, he was a little worried.

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated.

Fang Di Chang knew about Central Continent’s strength but he was even clearer regarding the strength of his forces. Western Desert’s Gu Immortals would not fight to the death, this group that he brought was already the result of Fang Di Chang’s maximum effort.

With such intense battles, once any deaths occurred on Western Desert’s side, they would want to retreat.

Once someone retreats, others would follow.

In other words, this was not a real army, it was a gathering of dispersed forces, their morale could not be sustained.

Fang Di Chang led these people at such a crucial time, he had to be at the front lines, to ensure that they would remain in formation.

"I wanted to save this for the end... there is no choice." Fang Di Chang sighed, he sent out the divine bean soldiers that he had saved within Divine Bean Palace.

The quantity of yellow bean soldiers was the highest, they were the basic troops that were treated as cannon fodder.

Next were green bean soldiers that could shoot flying arrows, red bean soldiers could self-detonate, while black bean soldiers had the greatest defense.

As for blue and white bean soldiers, they had the lowest quantity, the former could reflect killer moves to an extent while the latter could heal bean soldiers.

Once the bean army was sent out, they stabilized the situation, causing a deadlock to occur. But the price to pay was that these soldiers were rapidly being expended.

Once the casualties hit a certain level, Western Desert’s side would be pressured once again. By then, Fang Di Chang would be out of trump cards, he would need to wait for reinforcements.

Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield.

Immortal killer move — Rumors Become Tigers!

Zhou Xiong Xin used his information path killer move as tigers formed into groups, roaring and attacking Wu Yong.

Wu Yong waved his hands repeatedly, and used countless wind blades to stop the tigers from pouncing at him.

To the side, Zhu Que Er and Ye Qiao Zi joined forces to attack him.

Wu Yong sighed and wisely retreated.

If now was earlier, he might have been able to fight them head on, but now after the amplification from human path killer moves, Wu Yong could only retreat.

Speaking of which, he had repeatedly tried to use the killer move unlimited wind, but he was always obstructed by Heavenly Court, unable to gain the precious time he needed to unleash this killer move.

"Fortunately, our side has Immortal Gu Houses which can act as fortresses for us to rest and recover. Oh no!" Wu Yong had just returned to rest in Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building when his expression suddenly changed dramatically.

His departure had made Chi Qu Yu’s position slightly more eye-catching.

Gu Immortals of other regions might not be able to make use of this, but Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were all experienced experts.

"Chi Qu You, quickly retreat!" Wu Yong transmitted.

Even without his warning, Chi Qu You already sensed something amiss, he quickly retreated.

"Where are you going?" Wan Zi Hong restrained Chi Qu You.

Wu Yong had to stop resting as he flew out.

Zhou Xiong Xin suddenly appeared above Chi Qu You, his five fingers spread out as he grasped.

Immortal battlefield killer move — Rumor Cage!

This was the fastest battlefield killer move in the world, the speed of setting it up was number one in the five regions.

Chi Qu You could not dodge in time, he was trapped in the battlefield.

Zhou Xiong Xin, Zhang Fei Xiong, and Zhu Que Er entered the battlefield, the other Gu Immortals stayed outside, blocking the reinforcement of Wu Yong, Yi Hao Fang, and Ba De.

"Chi Qu You is in danger!"

"Quick, we need to destroy this battlefield."

Wu Yong and the rest were anxious.

However, the rumor cage battlefield had already shrunk to a dot, it vanished. To find it, a lot of effort would be needed, and there were Heavenly Court Gu Immortals around obstructing them.

Immortal killer move — Sitting and Eating the Mountain Empty!

While the Southern Border immortals were trying to save him, Zhao Shan He and Yu Zhu Zi worked together again, using their killer move to heavily damage the Southern Border Immortal Gu Houses.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals suffered a great loss while their attention was diverted away.

And within rumor cage, Chi Qu You was in danger, at the brink of life and death.

This was an information path battlefield, Zhou Xiong Xin was the main attacker, while Zhang Fei Xiong and Zhu Que Er had transformation path attainment, they turned into information path immemorial desolate beasts to help with the battle.

Suddenly, Wu Shuang also entered the battlefield.

Human path killer move — Peerless!

This killer move was once used on Duke Long, it was very helpful. This time, it was used on Zhou Xiong Xin who was already amplified by a human path killer move, with this additional boost, his killer moves became even stronger.

Chi Qu You stared with furious eyes but he could not resist them, he was devoured by the information path tigers.

Rumor cage battlefield dissipated, Zhou Xiong Xin and the rest returned to the outside battlefield. Wu Yong and the rest could only see the torn and dismembered remains of Chi Qu You.

A formation path great grandmaster and first supreme elder of Chi clan had died!

Southern Border’s Gu Immortals were shaken, such a terrifying sacrifice had happened before their eyes.

"First supreme elder Chi Qu You!"

"He died in battle."

"Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals killed him..."

The morale of Southern Border was rapidly declining.

"Oh no!" Wu Yong had an ugly expression, Chi Qu You’s reputation was very high, his death was worse than if they lost Yi Hao Fang or Ba De, it was a huge blow to the Southern Border Gu Immortals’ morale.

However, Wu Yong could not do anything.

Even though he had the killer move unlimited wind, Heavenly Court did not let him use it. His special move farewell friend wind could also not be used, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had all been sleeping in the immortal graveyard, he had no opportunity to become ’friends’ with them.

"Our situation was tough to begin with, now that Chi Qu You is dead, it is even worse now!"

"What do I do?"

Wu Yong had already tried his best but the situation still left his control gradually.

"Persevere!" The light of determination flashed in his eyes.

"Heavenly Court must not be allowed to repair fate Gu, this is the consensus of all four regions. Western Desert has attacked Emperor City now, Eastern Sea and Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals will definitely also take action."

"And Fang Yuan..."

"I’ll wait for reinforcements!"

"That’s the only way now."

The Emperor City battlefield and Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield were completely suppressed and in a dangerous position, so was the battlefield in Heavenly Court.

Even though Duke Long was unaffected by the human path killer moves' amplification, he was still overwhelming, his strength alone suppressed all of Longevity Heaven's members.

And worse was that he had reinforcements.

"Qin Ding Ling!" Within Calamity Luck Altar, Qi Ci Lang looked at Qin Ding Ling while gritting his teeth.

Qin Ding Ling had recovered with the help of the human path killer moves, she joined the battlefield to assist Duke Long.

She had incredibly strong luck path attainment, she could target Calamity Luck Altar well, Qi Ci Lang and the rest were getting into a tight spot.

With a loud crash, Duke Long's fist defeated another Northern Plains' expert.

He looked at the phantom River of Time as he laughed loudly: "So what if you summon more people?"

"Longevity Heaven!"

"This time, none of you shall escape, you will all die!"

"No matter how many reinforcements you have, it will not change the situation."

Qin Ding Ling raised her head high as she snickered: "Exactly, how can the grand Heavenly Court be defiled by the likes of you!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Get him!"

"Don't let him get away!!!"

There was already chaos in the venue of the final competition of the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention.

Several rank eight Gu Immortals charged down.

Shen Shang's face was pale, he suffered a serious injury instead of unraveling the venerable methods. However, looking at the Central Continent rank eights that pounced down, he still sneered: "Just the few of you want to catch me?"

Next, his body flickered as he vanished.

Central Continent's rank eight Gu Immortals lost sight of their target, they used all sorts of investigative killer moves but could not find any traces.

"Where did he go?"

"Who is he, he is actually able to move freely in Emperor City!"

"This place is under the effect of people's united hearts, he could actually sneak in."

"The five regions are huge, hidden experts are everywhere."

The rank eight Gu Immortals exchanged words and after discussing, they each dispersed to continue their search.

Even if they searched Emperor City completely, even if they demolished it, they still wanted to find Shen Shang.

Shen Shang was currently hiding in a corner of Emperor City, far away from the venue of the final competition.

He was panting, but the fighting spirit in his eyes was not extinguished, instead, like adding fuel to a fire, it was growing stronger and stronger!

"Worthy of venerables, their methods exceeded my expectations." He exclaimed in his head and immediately sent another message to Fang Yuan.

"Fang Yuan, hold on! Give me some more time and I will definitely be able to unravel this move!" Shen Shang spoke with certainty.

Fang Yuan sneered: "How can I believe you?"

Shen Shang then explained: "I’ve already found out that the various human path killer moves of Heavenly Court’s venerables are based on a massive amount of human will. Without this foundation, no matter how powerful the human path killer moves are, they are useless without enough fuel."

Fang Yuan retorted: "But the human will is stored in Heavenly Court, it is too far from our reach."

Shen Shang smiled lightly: "Precisely so, I deduced another method, instead of eliminating the human will, we should help to develop it instead."

Fang Yuan gained some interest: "Tell me."

Shen Shang then said: "Heavenly Court collected the human will of Central Continent, so their people’s united hearts killer move can distinguish between friend and enemy. But if I add the human will of the other four regions, how can they possibly still have united hearts? The Heavenly Court and Central Continent Gu Immortals are also amplified by the killer move heroes among people because of Central Continent’s human will. If it contains the human will of the five regions, then heroes among people’s effect would also work on the rest of us."

Fang Yuan asked again: "Then how do you do this, how will we channel the human will of the other four regions into it?"

Shen Shang replied calmly: "On one hand, I have already made arrangements in Emperor City. On the other hand, the five regional walls are close to disappearing, not only will the five regions be unified by the earth veins, but the human veins will also be linked. In a way, we have to thank Heavenly Court for their propaganda. Now that the five regions all know that the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention is being held, the will of all five regions is concentrated here, except that Heavenly Court only collected the central part of it."

Fang Yuan was silent for a moment and suddenly said: "Then do it, I can’t maintain all of the battlefield, I can only try my best to stall for you. You have to fight for every second!"

"Of course." Shen Shang said without any hesitation.

Emperor City battlefield.

"Kill!" Combat Immortal Sect’s Gu Immortals shouted in unison.

Under their maneuvering, the Immortal Gu House Edge Link Camp suddenly surged in speed and rushed towards Western Desert Fang clan’s Inquiry Dock.

Inquiry Dock retreated sharply.

Edge Link Camp suddenly shined with a dazzling light, the light condensed into a giant horn that rushed into the sky.

It was Edge Link Camp’s killer move — Giant Horn Rush.

Normally speaking, Inquiry Dock would not be afraid of this method, but after the amplification of human path killer move heroes among people, giant horn rush’s power doubled!

Inquiry Dock was only an information path Immortal Gu House, it could not resist this fierce attack alone.

Fallen Flower Hall quickly tried to help it and moved closer to Inquiry Dock, but Wind Sweeping Building restrained it.

"We cannot lose Inquiry Dock, our Fang clan’s three Immortal Gu Houses can use the battlefield killer move peach blossom maze!" Fang Di Chang quickly gave orders to save it.

Peach blossom maze was able to trap rank eight Gu Immortals, and back then it was even able to trap Divine Bean Palace.

This killer move was famous and all the Western Desert Gu Immortals knew about it. It was just that since the battle started, Central Continent’s side had taken the initiative and did not allow Western Desert to set it up, so there was no time to activate peach blossom maze.

Several Western Desert Immortal Gu Houses supported Inquiry Dock at the same time, but at the next moment, Central Continent’s lineup changed and formed a large encirclement, separating Inquiry Dock from the reinforcements.

"Damn it!" Fang Di Chang’s expression sank, he had to move Divine Bean Palace to help it.

Divine Bean Palace was the support pillar of Western Desert’s troops, it should not be moved lightly. Once it was moved, it would cause Western Desert’s entire arrangement to change, which would result in a gap to form and allow Central Continent’s side to seize the opportunity.

But at this moment, there was nothing that Fang Di Chang could do.

At the sight of Divine Bean Palace moving, the Central Continent Gu Immortals were excited.

"Fang Di Chang fell for it!"

"He is a wisdom path Gu Immortal but the situation is forcing his hand after all."

"Attack, Western Desert’s battle arrangement has gone chaotic, if we grab onto this opportunity, we will claim victory!"

Rumble...

Central Continent’s Immortal Gu Houses erupted with a frenzy of attacks, it was like a tsunami that crashed towards Western Desert’s forces.

"Oh no." This scene was so devastating that even Fang Di Chang’s expression changed.

Western Desert’s defeat was right before his eyes!

Boom!

With a loud explosion, a grand Immortal Gu House entered the battlefield.

It was larger than Divine Bean Palace, with giant red-gold bricks and black-gold tiles around its walls, countless statues were embedded on the surface of the palace, each one of them was lifelike and full of brilliance.

"This is?!"

"Rank eight Immortal Gu House — Myriad Statue Palace!"

Central Continent’s attacks froze for a moment.

At the next moment, from within Myriad Statue Palace came the voice of Thousand Transformations Ancestor: "Central Continent’s Heavenly Court is simply going overboard! This time, I, Thousand Transformations Ancestor, will make you pay with your blood!!!"

At the crucial moment, Thousand Transformations came to the rescue and finally salvaged the battle at Emperor City.

Fang Di Chang let out a long breath and muttered softly: "There’s still some hope left in this fight."

Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield.

Rumble!

With a loud bang, a corner of the five regional limit formation broke again, it was like a pavilion that was see-through on all sides, the inside was visible to all.

The Formation Spirit was so weak that it was nearly transparent, Zhan Bu Du was heavily injured, he only manipulated the formation while kneeling, his seven orifices were bleeding, blood had gathered into a pool below him.

"Once we destroy this formation, there will be no obstacles left."

"Hmph, if you want to find trouble with Heavenly Court, you’re all not qualified enough!"

"Mere rats, all of you will become prisoners of our Heavenly Court."

As always, the main forces of Heavenly Court fought fiercely and furiously, their attacks were unceasing and increasingly coordinated, while Southern Border lost the rank eight pillar Chi Qu You, they could barely sustain the fight, they could not protect the five regional limit formation.

"It seems that my life ends here. But I am not going to let you guys have it easy either!" Zhan Bu Du gritted his teeth and decided to use one final move to self-detonate the entire formation.

Roar—!

Just before Zhan Bu Du was about to self-detonate, the loud roar of a dragon could suddenly be heard.

The sound of the dragon resounded throughout heaven and earth, shaking the entire battlefield.

Next, the five-colored smoke swirled violently and was brutally pushed apart by a huge object!

At this moment, Heavenly Court and the Southern Border immortals stared at the newcomer in shock.

It was a giant dragon, unimaginably huge, the dragon head alone was like a chain of hills, and the dragon’s body stretched endlessly!

A Gu Immortal’s body could not even compare to a piece of the dragon’s scales.

"Evil Dragon!"

"It is Di Zang Sheng!"

"Why is it here?"

Di Zang Sheng’s dragon eyes swept over the five regional limit formation and the Southern Border immortals, quickly fixing on the main Heavenly Court forces.

Heavenly Court’s immortals suddenly felt an extremely strong sense of danger that threatened their lives!

Roar—!

Di Zang Sheng roared again and rushed towards the Heavenly Court immortals.

"It’s our reinforcements!" The morale of the Southern Border immortals was boosted.

Wu Yong’s eyes narrowed, "Doesn’t Di Zang Sheng hate all humans? How can it be manipulated and be an enemy of Heavenly Court? Who’s controlling it? Who can manipulate it?"

For some reason, the image of Fang Yuan surfaced in Wu Yong’s heart.

"We’re finally saved." Zhan Bu Du sprawled on the ground in exhaustion. With the help of Di Zang Sheng, he was saved from the brink of self-detonating.

Heavenly Court battlefield.

Calamity Luck Altar was at its wits’ end.

Duke Long’s constant bombardment caused a huge accumulation of damage, Calamity Luck Altar was in tatters, Bing Sai Chuan who was controlling it suffered heavy injuries, Qi Ci Lang had already fainted long ago.

What caused this was just not Duke Long’s divine might, but also the help of Qin Ding Ling and Fairy Zi Wei.

Qin Ding Ling was able to use luck path to effectively disintegrate the defenses of Calamity Luck Altar. Fairy Zi Wei collected information from the battle and made deductions on the spot, telling Duke Long the best spots to attack.

With these three Gu Immortals working together, Longevity Heaven was in a precarious position. The destruction of Calamity Luck Altar was close at hand.

Once it completely breaks apart, Longevity Heaven will suffer a devastating blow, and the result of the battle in Heavenly Court will be decided!

Far away from Central Great Hall, at the peak of Star Zone Mountain, the two chess players’ figures playing against each other emerged at some point in the Imperfection Regret Pavilion.

No matter from any angle, one could only see a side of the faces of these two figures at most.

The woman had peerless beauty, while the man looked as cold as ice.

It was a contest between two venerables!

"It seems that our side has won this game by a little again." Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled slightly.

Limitless Demon Venerable nodded: "Heavenly Court awakened so many Gu Immortals in advance this time, aren’t you afraid of getting completely assimilated by heaven’s will?"

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable grasped a chess piece: "I still have some time. It seems that the person you are waiting for will not appear. Even if he arrives, it is too late."

Limitless Demon Venerable was silent but suddenly, his eyes shined with mysterious light, he seemed to have sensed something as he stood up and turned around to look at the Heavenly Court battlefield far away.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was stunned, she followed Limitless Demon Venerable’s direction and saw that white profound light started to appear in the battlefield, with a shrill sound, a tunnel was opened.

Myriad Year Flying Warship flew in through the tunnel, a Gu Immortal was standing on it.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had a deep gaze as she analyzed, this Gu Immortal was dressed in a white robe, his sleeves were fluttering and his black hair was hanging down to his waist like a waterfall. His face was extremely handsome, almost delicate like a beauty, and what attracted people’s attention most were his eyes, which were pitch-black as if they were connected to the ninth layer of the deepest abyss, devouring all light that approached it.

Fairy Zi Wei’s body shook as she said uncontrollably: "Fang Yuan!"

"So this is Fang Yuan." Qin Ding Ling coldly smiled.

"Regardless of who comes here, you cannot do anything!" Duke Long did not raise his head, he still stared at Calamity Luck Altar as he tried to deal the fatal blow.

"Is that so?" On Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan smiled lightly as he observed the battlefield.

He raised his hand slowly, his fingers outstretched as he aimed at the battlefield.

At the next moment, the killer move that he prepared for a long time burst out, grand qi surged as heaven and earth shook intensely.

Rumble!

The colossal qi wall that enveloped Heavenly Court lasted for a few breaths of time before shattering into countless qi currents, they were all drawn by a formless force into Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

At once, the entire place went silent!

Fairy Zi Wei and Qin Ding Ling stared in a daze as they shouted in disbelief:

"Rank eight?!"

"Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s qi wall was actually..."

Duke Long slowly raised his head, he ignored Calamity Luck Altar as his gaze became fixed on Fang Yuan, his expression was completely different from before.

Next, they heard Fang Yuan’s plain voice reverberate in their ears: "This unlimited qi sea killer move was modified by me, how is the power? Please do give me your honest opinion."

"Hahaha." Loud laughter was heard from within Imperfection Regret Pavilion.

Limitless Demon Venerable raised his head as he laughed in joy and satisfaction.

"Look." He pointed at Fang Yuan, turning around to face Star Constellation Immortal Venerable: "The person I am waiting for is here!"

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sighed deeply, she had a complex expression: "Indeed, he... has arrived."

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan appeared in the battlefield personally, charging into Heavenly Court!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Heavenly Court battlefield.

"This is the crucial person — Fang Yuan?" Bing Sai Chuan muttered, looking at Fang Yuan who was high in the sky.

Bull Demon and Flower Lady stared with their mouths wide open: "Didn’t they say Fang Yuan was rank seven? When did he reach rank eight?"

"This lad!" Mao Li Qiu gritted its teeth, feeling deep emotions inside.

The last time it met Fang Yuan was in Reverse Flow River, Fang Yuan had used the river to escape. Other than that, he was weaker than Mao Li Qiu.

But in their next encounter, he was able to destroy the primordial qi wall!

Without the primordial qi wall, Calamity Luck Altar was like a fish in water, it regained freedom.

The restraint holding them back was gone, they could see ways to attack and advance now.

"Oh no!" Fairy Zi Wei’s face turned pale, she could not think of a countermeasure immediately.

"Attack—!" At the next moment, Bing Sai Chuan’s voice resounded from Calamity Luck Altar.

The Northern Plains immortals summoned using call of the ancient all became energized, their eyes shined with bright light as they split up and attacked the surroundings.

These Northern Plains brutes had been suppressed for too long!

Only Duke Long, Fairy Zi Wei, and Qin Ding Ling were here, the three of them could not deal with so many Gu Immortals at once.

At the crucial moment, there was a tiger roar as a Shabi emerged. There was the cry of a crane as a green jade crane flew out.

These were two legendary immemorial beasts of Heavenly Court, one was Shabi Ninety-five, the other was Ruan Dan.

The two legendary immemorial beasts joined the battle, desperately blocking the Northern Plains immortals.

Fairy Zi Wei quickly returned to Central Great Hall, she needed to protect Old Man Zheng Yuan who was there.

Meanwhile, Qin Ding Ling charged towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan stood on Myriad Year Flying Warship as he observed the battlefield, seeing the scattered Northern Plains immortals, he nodded in satisfaction.

In order to destroy the qi wall, he had prepared this move for a long time.

Unlimited qi sea was the move that made Qi Xiang famous throughout the world back then. It was grand and vast, complex and everchanging, it could attack and defend, it was a comprehensive method.

It had potential for growth on its own, capable of growing stronger by gathering all the different qi in the world. After Qi Xiang created this move, he collected all sorts of qi and stored them inside the immortal aperture, including life qi, death qi, sword qi, blade qi, dusk qi, dawn qi...

The more types of qi gathered on large scales, the stronger unlimited qi sea was.

Not only would this move expend immortal essence, it also used up the stored qi. Even if they were not used, as time passed, these qi would naturally dissipate slowly.

Back then, Qi Sea grotto-heaven’s heavenly spirit used this move to survive many calamities and tribulations that the grotto-heaven faced, among which were myriad tribulations! When Fang Yuan was attacked by this move, unlimited qi sea was already weakened to its limit, even the heavenly spirit had to hibernate due to injuries.

Thus, the actual power of unlimited qi sea was not truly at the level when Fang Yuan saw it.

Since rebirth, Fang Yuan had been thinking of the method to destroy primordial qi wall.

After getting unlimited qi sea, he acutely sensed that this move was a counter to the qi wall.

However, the primordial qi wall was a venerable method, even if Fang Yuan had unlimited qi sea and great grandmaster qi path attainment level, he would need more than a decade to unravel the qi wall method while fully focused on making deductions.

The solution to this problem was Duke Long.

In order to recruit Qi Sea Ancestor, Duke Long used Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s qi path killer moves as bait. Even though Fang Yuan only obtained half of it, because of his insistence, the content included the primordial qi wall as well.

With it, Fang Yuan used the light of wisdom from wisdom Gu to barely deduce and modify unlimited qi sea before the great battle.

As for how Fang Yuan invaded Heavenly Court, he used heaven form. He added the time path killer move shrink time into heaven form, allowing him to rapidly invade the target area. After all, he had deep attainment in theft path and time path. As the Fang Di Chang clone was also comprehending the theft path Immortal Gu House, he gained a lot of inspiration and insight.

The qi wall was too crucial of an element!

With this qi wall, Heavenly Court’s enemies only had three routes to choose from, those were the paths carved out by past Demon Venerables.

But once the qi wall vanishes, they could roam freely in Heavenly Court, with their current defense, they could not guard against everyone.

The situation of the battle in Heavenly Court immediately was overturned.

Once Fang Yuan took action, he gave Longevity Heaven and himself the initiative, they now had control over the battle.

"Fang Yuan, let me, Qin Ding Ling, see your skills." Qin Ding Ling turned into a golden ray of light as she flew in the sky, towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan took a glance at her, this was their first encounter.

She was taller than normal people, her shoulders were broad, she stood straight and had a heroic aura. She had an outstanding air, especially her long legs, she was like innate royalty that ruled above the common man. Her nose bridge was tall and a little sharp, her lips were thin and her eyes were narrow and long, her gaze was emitting a cold light now. She was not a traditional beauty, she had an authoritative aura that was bred naturally within her, people would lower their heads and not dare to look at her directly, it was as if they could only look at her feet in order to not offend her.

"No wonder Giant Sun Immortal Venerable chose you as his concubine back then." Fang Yuan replied plainly, Qin Ding Ling’s attacks became even fiercer instantly.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, he manipulated Myriad Year Flying Warship to move quickly, evading Qin Ding Ling.

Qin Ding Ling’s heart jumped, she cried out in dismay internally.

She had great strength, having converted from metal path to luck path, her battle strength was second to Duke Long and nobody else in Heavenly Court, she had no clear weaknesses. However, her speed was inferior to Myriad Year Flying Warship.

At this moment, rapids surged below Myriad Year Flying Warship, pushing this rank eight Immortal Gu House to move through the battlefield, heading directly to the immortal battlefield.

Fang Yuan was passive earlier, but once he attacked, he aimed at Heavenly

Court’s weakness! The greatest weakness!

At this moment, even Duke Long could not let him pass.

The immortal graveyard was the most important place in Heavenly Court.

Even Duke Long did not know how many Gu Immortals were slumbering inside.

This was Heavenly Court’s greatest wealth, it was their immense accumulation over millions of years since creation.

In the previous life, even though Longevity Heaven reached Heaven Overseeing Tower, they could not threaten the immortal graveyard. But now that the qi wall was broken, there were countless paths to take, they could approach the immortal graveyard.

Duke Long gave up on Calamity Luck Altar, he flew rapidly and blocked the path of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Behind Myriad Year Flying Warship, Qin Ding Ling was chasing relentlessly.

At once, Fang Yuan was encircled by Duke Long and Qin Ding Ling.

"Don’t worry, I’ll help you!"

"Protect this person, he is the crucial person that Ancestor Giant Sun mentioned!"

"That’s right, even if we die, we need to protect him."

The surrounding Northern Plains immortals gathered towards Fang Yuan.

Bing Sai Chuan did not hesitate, he immediately mobilized Calamity Luck Altar to reinforce Fang Yuan. Right now, they had the common enemy Heavenly Court, they needed to work together.

Since Fang Yuan came to help them, Bing Sai Chuan had to return the favor, they had to resist Heavenly Court’s two strongest experts.

Bing Sai Chuan had no better option now.

If he let Duke Long kill Fang Yuan now, not only would they lose this source of battle strength, the rank eight Immortal Gu House Myriad Year Flying Warship would also become unmanned.

Facing this unprecedented attack, Fang Yuan had a calm expression. However, when he was about to use his method against the enemies, he suddenly felt a sense of fire qi emerging in his heart, causing him to burn with fury.

Next, a sense of sorrow qi pervaded his body, causing his defenses to fall rapidly.

Next, a lump of old qi entered his body and mind, causing his lifespan to decrease continuously.

There was also poison qi that spread around him, causing a lethal threat.

Unlucky qi crowded above his head, causing his luck to fall.

Silly qi filled his mind, the results of the collision of thoughts in his mind were all stupid ideas...

Frost qi entered his body, causing his movements to slow down...

All sorts of qi tangled around him, Fang Yuan’s battle strength fell to rock bottom, in just a few breaths of time, he fell to the level of a rank seven Gu Immortal, after some more time, he was even weaker than an ordinary rank six Gu Immortal.

Duke Long saw Fang Yuan’s aura weakening rapidly as he was surrounded by all sorts of qi, he felt overjoyed: "This is Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s method! Fang Yuan destroyed the qi wall, causing this move to attack him."

He had cultivated Primordial Origin’s true inheritance after all, he could tell what had happened.

But at the next moment, Duke Long saw a mild light shoot out behind him, it resembled a chess piece, rapidly entering Fang Yuan’s body.

Instantly, all of the qi around his body vanished, as if the former scene was an illusion.

Duke Long’s body and mind shook, he turned around at lightning speed, seeing that Limitless Demon Venerable’s silhouette had stood up from his seat for the first time in Imperfection Regret Pavilion, looking over at this battlefield from afar, Duke Long’s pupils shrunk slightly.

At the crucial moment, Limitless Demon Venerable made a move, cleansing all of the qi currents around Fang Yuan’s body.

The Northern Plains immortals saw this and their hearts eased.

Bing Sai Chuan was a little puzzled: "So Fang Yuan had a method to make Limitless Demon Venerable turn around. How did he do it? I did not see him make any actions earlier."

Immortal killer move — Dragon Roaring Wave.

Duke Long opened his mouth and roared loudly.

The sound waves of the dragon roar spread out rapidly, all over the place.

Immortal killer move — Body Flicker.

At the next moment, Duke Long teleported along with the dragon sound waves, directly appearing in front of Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan was still standing on the bow, the two were less than an arm’s length away.

One was the master of Red Lotus, the dragonman ancestor, Duke Long. The other was the inheritor of Red Lotus, the new dragonman ancestor, Fang Yuan!

"Oh no!"

"Fang Yuan is overconfident."

"Quickly return to the Immortal Gu House!"

The Northern Plains immortals felt like they were falling into despair, they screamed. Duke Long’s divine might was engraved in their minds, nobody could face him head on. Even Calamity Luck Altar, the legendary Immortal Gu House that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable personally created, could not resist Duke Long’s offensive methods. Longevity Heaven’s members were suppressed by Duke Long’s power, they had to hide inside Calamity Luck Altar, not daring to fight outside.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Claw Strike!

Duke Long snorted coldly, his right hand turned into a dragon claw as he slashed at Fang Yuan’s skull.

Slap.

At the next moment, there was a soft sound as Fang Yuan raised his furry left arm, blocking Duke Long’s dragon claw.

"He... he blocked it?!"

Be it Northern Plains’ immortals, Qin Ding Ling, or Fairy Zi Wei, they were all stunned.

Nobody had ever been able to resist Duke Long in a frontal assault, but he had managed to block it with such ease.

Fang Yuan’s appearance was completely changed, he turned into a bandit monkey.

Bandit monkeys were of strength path, their fur was golden and black tiger stripes covered their body. Fur grew out from their waist naturally to cover the crotch and the butt area, just like a kilt made of skin.

Bandit monkeys respected strength and arm wrestling was their main social activity. Young monkeys could arm wrestle immediately after being born. Arm wrestling was not only a game for bandit monkeys, it was also a commonly used method to resolve disputes.

There were Gu Immortals who recognized the bandit monkey, feeling surprised: "Since when did bandit monkeys become so strong?"

Ordinary immemorial bandit monkeys could not resist Duke Long’s attack, if they acted like Fang Yuan, their left arm would have been cut off on the spot.

Fang Yuan’s transformation was not so simple of course.

Before this, he had already used the killer move myriad beings assimilation transformation.

This was the ultimate method of Beast Calamity Immortal, it contained the highest profundity of transformation path, able to turn dao marks of all other paths into transformation path dao marks.

How many dao marks did Fang Yuan have now?

Qi path had over a million, refinement path had three hundred thousand, transformation path had two hundred thousand, and that was not all, they were just the three highest paths.

Just these alone, after using myriad beings assimilation transformation, gave him one million and five hundred thousand transformation path dao marks.

After Fang Yuan transformed into the bandit monkey, all of these transformation path dao marks turned into strength path dao marks.

One million and five hundred thousand strength path dao marks!

With just the dao mark amplification alone, Fang Yuan could resist Duke Long’s killer move.

Duke Long’s dragon claw strike landed on Fang Yuan’s left arm, it felt like he was punching a mountain.

A sense of danger appeared in Duke Long’s mind, but Fang Yuan’s right fist had already been launched.

Boom!

With a loud sound, Duke Long felt like he was a paper boat riding a ferocious wave, he felt like a mountain had slammed into him. An unimaginable force caused him to fly away at a speed that could not be observed with the naked eye.

Duke Long flew like a comet, crashing into the ground at lightning speed, with a loud crash, the surroundings shook, a huge dust cloud spread out.

Everyone was silent!

This time, fear and disbelief appeared on the faces of the Northern Plains and Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

Everyone’s attention was on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan stood at the bow of his ship while transformed into the bandit monkey, he looked down plainly at the pit he created.

It was the pit created by Duke Long who had been sent flying, it was thirty feet deep!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ever since the start of the battle, this was the first time anyone had seen Duke Long be sent flying far away from an attack.

Not only did Fang Yuan defend against Duke Long’s attack, he even retaliated and sent him flying!

This was far out of anyone’s expectations.

"He actually became so strong! What sort of growth speed is this!!" Mao Li Qiu opened its mouth, it stood up subconsciously, no longer lying on the ground.

"The crucial person that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable is waiting for... indeed, he lives up to Ancestor’s expectations!" Bing Sai Chuan sighed with a complex expression.

Unknowingly, Qin Ding Ling’s speed had fallen as she chased after Fang Yuan.

What a joke!

Fang Yuan sent Duke Long flying, what did that mean?

Even though Qin Ding Ling was strong, she knew her limits, she knew the difference between Duke Long and her. Back then, in order to perceive Duke Long’s luck, she paid a huge price and had to rest for many days to recover. Right now, the result of this collision eliminated any thought she had of observing Fang Yuan’s luck.

Qin Ding Ling was in quite an awkward predicament now.

She wanted to fight and kill Fang Yuan earlier, but now, after seeing this, oh heavens! What a fierce person!

Qin Ding Ling directly stopped moving, she did not dare to approach Fang Yuan anymore.

The transformation path cultivation level that Fang Yuan displayed earlier showed that close combat was not his weakness, it was his strength instead.

Qin Ding Ling changed her mind instantly, she decided to assist Duke Long instead, she did not want to fight Fang Yuan directly anymore.

"This is a monster!"

"To think that in the future after I died, such a demonic immortal would appear, this is so interesting."

"Let’s go, he does not need our help."

Northern Plains’ immortals quickly turned around, they left, spreading out to the surroundings.

Fairy Zi Wei frowned tightly, she had a heavy heart. Northern Plains’ immortals were moving around all over the place, all of them had their own chosen routes to advance, if they destroyed everything along their path, how could Heavenly Court stop them all?

Even if a large number of Gu Immortals woke up in the immortal graveyard now, they would need time to gather their Immortal Gu, it was too late now.

"I can only defend the most important areas now!" Fairy Zi Wei gritted her teeth, she made a painful decision, deciding to abandon the deadweight.

Dust clouds dissipated, within the huge pit, Duke Long stood up slowly.

"You really surprise me time and time again, Fang Yuan." Duke Long raised his head to look at Fang Yuan, he had a calm expression but his tone was eerie.

He was hit by Fang Yuan’s fist directly, his chest only caved in slightly. While he spoke, his wound healed completely as his chest returned to normal.

He was the dragonman ancestor after all, his recovery speed was shockingly fast.

Fang Yuan looked at Duke Long as well, upon seeing this, his expression did not change.

Everything was within his expectations.

Duke Long was not heavily injured, the attack earlier had a huge commotion but the effect on the enemy was small. He had only caught Duke Long off guard.

After all, Fang Yuan did not use any immortal killer moves then. He only raised his fist and attacked with the amplification of strength path dao marks.

With the support of over a million strength path dao marks, Fang Yuan’s bandit monkey form had immense strength, Duke Long could not compare to it. But he had many immortal killer moves defending him, he was tough as steel, even if he was sent flying, he was still intact.

Below Myriad Year Flying Warship, the water of the River of Time surged as this time path Immortal Gu House moved suddenly, it was like a huge flying sword, tearing through space and creating a dazzling rainbow behind it, it pierced towards the immortal graveyard.

Duke Long snorted coldly, a frenzied light flashed in his eyes as his deep killing intent surged without concealment, it was as if a fierce tide was raging.

He was now in a passive spot, with Fang Yuan’s attack, he had no choice but to defend, this was a terrible feeling.

Once the primordial qi wall was broken, Fang Yuan’s side gained the initiative, their target was the immortal graveyard.

Duke Long was sent flying by Fang Yuan’s fist earlier, his air of intimidation took a beating, he decided to focus on the enemy ahead now. The truth was in front of him, trying to engage in close combat with Fang Yuan in order to kill him was an impossible dream.

Immortal killer move — Qi Breath Mountain!

Rumble!

A grand qi current gathered and formed into a translucent mountain.

The mountain was hundreds of li large as it slammed down.

Fang Yuan was at the bottom of the mountain now, raising his head to look at it, the mountain pressed down like the entire world, he could not evade it.

Fang Yuan did not intend to evade it either.

He stopped his bandit monkey transformation as he turned into a majestic astral wind flying heavenly boar!

Astral wind flying heavenly boar lived in the sky, they were qi path beasts that could fly freely. They were agile like flying fish, they had agility incomparable with their boar bodies, they could charge into the heavenly wind qi wall with ease. With a leap, they could enter the heavenly wind qi wall and swim inside like fish in water.

Fang Yuan’s four legs stepped on Myriad Year Flying Warship, he did not raise his head, he only growled slightly.

Immortal killer move — Rampaging Qi Roar!

This was a qi path killer move but it originated from Lang Ya Sect’s treasury.

In the past, when Lang Ya land spirit controlled Heavenly Giant Solor, he used this move against the sharp tusk boar, killing this ancient desolate beast with one move on the spot.

Now that Fang Yuan used it, with his one million and five hundred thousand qi path dao marks, the power had risen by one thousand five hundred times!

Boom!!

The qi breath mountain exploded from Fang Yuan’s roar, countless currents spread out and formed tornadoes that swept the battlefield.

His killer move was broken, Duke Long suffered a backlash.

But this Dao Guardian of Red Lotus Demon Venerable still had great morale after suffering a setback, he used another move.

Immortal killer move — Qi Current Scissors!

He raised both fists, spreading out his ten fingers.

Countless pale qi currents moved out from his palms, they slashed towards Fang Yuan like thin threads.

In a few breaths of time, tens of thousands of pale white thread qi currents moved like a torrent or swarm of moths, approaching from all over the place.

Every qi current was like a blade, even if an immemorial desolate beast faced this move, they would be covered in cuts and injuries, until all of their flesh was removed and only a skeleton was left.

Against this move, Fang Yuan's astral wind flying heavenly boar form was not useful, he changed his form again.

This time, he turned into a crane.

It was a qi path immortal beast as well, single qi crane.

The flying crane was as large as a horse, it was beautiful and had a long proud neck, its wings were huge like two capes, spreading out on the bow of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Fang Yuan spread his wings and waved them, at once, thousands of feathers gave off shining light.

At the next moment, immortal killer move divine flick[1] was ready to strike, Fang Yuan unleashed it.

Cling cling cling...

Countless shrill sounds could be heard as qi currents shot out of his feathers, crashing into Duke Long's qi current scissors.

As the two offensive methods collided, most of them were dispersed by each other, only a small amount got past and hit Duke Long and Myriad Year Flying Warship respectively.

No matter which side, against such trivial lingering attacks, they did not even blink.

Immortal killer move — Moving Qi Ring!

Fang Yuan used another move as his beak opened, he blew as white qi came out.

The white qi spread out rapidly, entangling with the back of Myriad Year Flying Warship, causing its speed to rise sharply, shooting forward.

Duke Long's expression changed, he realized the problem and quickly chased.

According to conventional wisdom, moving qi ring was a qi path killer move, it would not be useful when it supported a time path Immortal Gu House. But Fang Yuan had modified this move himself, it was rank eight. With the support of a vast number of qi path dao marks, its power rose by a thousand times, it pushed Myriad Year Flying Warship forward while defying common logic!

Fang Yuan quickly got past the several Northern Plains immortals in front, he reached the immortal graveyard before anyone else.

Looking at the immortal graveyard, it was wide and large, there were countless gravestones on the lush grassland, each of these gravestones were different, some were golden, some were short, some did not even have gravestones but were half exposed coffins instead that were buried under the soil.

The sacred atmosphere of dignity and solemnity, filled with history, enveloped the immortal graveyard.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, he turned into the bandit monkey again, ready to attack the immortal graveyard again.

At this moment, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s silhouette sighed in Imperfection Regret Pavilion, grabbing three chess pieces and tossing them out.

The pieces did not attack Fang Yuan, they fused into the formation here.

Fairy Zi Wei was inside the formation core now, she controlled Star Constellation Chessboard to observe the situation.

After these pieces fell into Star Constellation Chessboard, Fairy Zi Wei felt the power of this formation rise as it broke its limit, reaching an unimaginable level!

Fairy Zi Wei was overjoyed, she quickly activated the formation and aimed it at Fang Yuan.

A huge starlight pillar shined down as Fang Yuan and Myriad Year Flying Warship vanished within the starlight.

At the next moment, another starlight pillar appeared behind Duke Long as Fang Yuan and Myriad Year Flying Warship appeared.

With the help of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s silhouette, Heavenly Court’s formation gained the ability to teleport people of Fang Yuan and Duke Long’s level.

"This is Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s method?" Fang Yuan noticed the situation and let out a breath of air, this did not happen in the previous life.

"I have so many dao marks but the starlight pillar can still teleport me forcefully. Impressive! However, I’m afraid this distance is its limit?" Cold light shined in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Next, he saw that several Northern Plains immortals were also forcefully teleported away from the immortal graveyard.

But these people vanished from Heavenly Court directly, they were likely sent outside.

Fang Yuan looked at other places.

A few Northern Plains immortals had already succeeded, they either destroyed resource points or Immortal Gu Houses.

He immediately realized something else: "It seems that the formation’s power is limited even after receiving the help of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. It can only allow Heavenly Court to defend some important areas."

Even so, it was enough for now.

Heavenly Court finally stabilized the situation, their losses were not severe.

Within Imperfection Regret Pavilion, Limitless Demon Venerable’s silhouette turned around and looked at Star Constellation Immortal Venerable: "You are quite generous, using three pieces like that."

"But now, you have the disadvantage in this game." Saying so, Limitless Demon Venerable’s silhouette smiled, he returned to his seat and sat down calmly.

"Back then, I threatened to destroy Heavenly Court and forced you to accept this game. A million years passed, our powers weave and influence this chessboard, we have been stuck at a deadlock. Now, I only used one piece but you used three, if I attack now, you will be in trouble." Limitless Demon Venerable smiled as he placed his finger at one spot on the chessboard, a brand new chess piece appeared on the board when he retracted his finger.

This chess piece contained the power of Limitless Demon Venerable’s silhouette, the spot it occupied was where one of the three pieces that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used earlier was situated.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s silhouette smiled indifferently: "Back then, your main body wanted to gain the heaven path foundation of Heavenly Court, so you set up this game. This chess game secretly connects to the Dao field that you created in your later years, Crazed Demon Cave, the more you win, the more heaven path foundation you gain, and the more helpful it will be for the derivation over in Crazed Demon Cave."

"That’s right, you’re absolutely right." Limitless Demon Venerable admitted to his greed, this was an open scheme, there was nothing to hide.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s silhouette smiled again: "There was no helping it in that situation, so what if you gained some heaven path foundation? Times are different now, your main body’s lifespan ran out long ago, you are already dead."

Limitless Demon Venerable’s silhouette was slightly stunned before his eyes shined with bright light, he realized: "Heavenly Court made arrangements in my Crazed Demon Cave as well."

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s silhouette praised truthfully: "Crazed Demon Cave is uniquely blessed, the venerables that came after you were unwilling to destroy it, a few of them even left behind their Dao fields. Over there, the few of us will definitely have a huge contest, but that is something for the future."

[1] Originally Qi Zai’s mortal killer move from chapter 1040.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1936 Heavenly Court“s Three Elites Against Fang Yuan

"It seems that to destroy Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard, I will need to destroy this transportation formation first!" Fang Yuan’s gaze flashed like lightning, he started at the formation far away.

The Myriad Year Flying Warship below his feet moved according to his will, the ship shot out like a large flying sword towards the formation.

Fairy Zi Wei was guarding the formation in the Central Hall.

Seeing Fang Yuan’s assault, she took a deep cold breath, she felt immense pressure towering over her!

"Fang Yuan, with me here, you will not move freely!" Duke Long roared as he stepped forward to block Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Seeing this, Fairy Zi Wei let out a sigh of relief: "Thankfully, we have Lord Duke Long guarding us!"

Boom!

Fang Yuan and Duke Long clashed, Duke Long was sent flying while Fang Yuan and Myriad Year Flying Warship only flew back by a thousand steps.

The aftermath of the combat stirred up thousands of storm clouds and set off monstrous air currents, the aftermath of which was so vast that it resembled a hurricane. The rank eight Gu Immortals were swept and blown away by the aftershocks. Even Calamity Luck Altar halted, Bing Sai Chuan and the others inside were unable to stand on their feet firmly, their bodies were shaking violently.

Subconsciously, everyone started to avoid Fang Yuan and Duke Long.

"Fang Yuan was blocked."

"As expected, only a monster can block a monster!"

"Let the two of them fight."

Only Qin Ding Ling gritted her teeth and forced herself to fly over, intending to reinforce Duke Long as his support.

Fang Yuan and Duke Long clashed again, tornadoes formed, lightning flashed and thunder roared.

Because of heavenly dragon’s last stand, Duke Long was getting stronger by the minute! Meanwhile, Fang Yuan had a large number of dao marks and Myriad Year Flying Warship, he had the upper hand for now.

Duke Long continued to move back as the two of them fought closer and closer to the teleportation formation.

Immortal killer move — Self-Moving Dragon Qi Wall!

Left without a choice, Duke Long roared as he spread his arms, a huge invisible qi wall appeared before Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan pushed Myriad Year Flying Warship to charge forward, after moving for a few dozen steps, he was stopped by the qi wall, unable to move further.

Duke Long started to cultivate Primordial Origin’s true inheritance long ago, he naturally knew about the killer move qi wall. This move was modified by him, Fang Yuan could vaguely see countless qi currents inside the wall. These currents were all dragon-shaped, the dragon heads spun around while chasing the tail, creating countless whirlpools.

These dragon-shaped qi currents were very profound, they could reduce the force of external impacts and greatly increase the qi wall’s durability.

Duke Long’s self-moving dragon qi wall could not be as firm as the primordial qi wall but it was very durable, it successfully obstructed Fang Yuan.

Even though Fang Yuan used unlimited qi sea to destroy the primordial qi wall, he had modified it according to his understanding of the qi wall in the first place.

Currently, Fang Yuan knew little about this dragon qi wall, it was impossible to replicate his former success now.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with brilliance, since he could not unravel this move, he had to use force instead.

He turned into a bandit monkey again, stretching his arms as he pushed forward.

Immortal killer move — Strength Path Giant Hand!

Rumble!

The surrounding thousand feet of air was pushed side, two translucent hands that were the size of mountains crashed towards Duke Long’s qi wall with immeasurable might.

Within the qi wall, Duke Long raised his head and spread out his arms, sustaining his qi wall killer move.

The two strength path giant hands moved for several hundred steps before becoming slower, unable to advance further.

Fang Yuan and Duke Long had solemn expressions as they exerted strength, falling into a deadlock.

"Good chance!" Seeing this, Qin Ding Ling realized that her chance to attack had arrived.

In the earlier battle, she could not find a chance to attack, she could only prepare her killer moves.

Once the chance arrived, she immediately threw out a small golden dagger.

The dagger was only the size of a thumb, it flew into the air and grew larger as it moved, by the time it reached the top of Fang Yuan’s head, it was already the size of a horse carriage.

Swish swish swish.

The golden blade swung down, attempting to slice off Fang Yuan’s luck advantage.

But Cooking Luck Pot suddenly appeared above Fang Yuan, it flew up and resisted the attack of the golden blade.

Clang clang clang...

The golden blade landed on Cooking Luck Pot, golden sparks appeared due to the collision.

In a few breaths of time, the golden blade slashed for several hundred times before fading away on its own.

Cooking Luck Pot completely defended against this killer move, even though cracks appeared on the surface, it was intact overall.

The golden blade was a rank eight luck path killer move, while Cooking Luck Pot had been elevated to a rank seven Immortal Gu House, it could resist rank eight attacks.

"Cooking Luck Pot?" Qin Ding Ling exclaimed in shock, recognizing it immediately.

She was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s concubine after all, she knew about the existence of Cooking Luck Pot.

"Your Cooking Luck Pot is only rank seven, even if it can block me ten times, can it stop me twenty times? Thirty times?" Qin Ding Ling snorted coldly in her mind, attacking Fang Yuan furiously.

Cooking Luck Pot was only rank seven, even though it could resist rank eight, Qin Ding Ling was not an ordinary rank eight Gu Immortal, she was specialized in luck path. Cooking Luck Pot could block her now but the duration would not be long.

Fang Yuan noticed this too, he immediately withdrew his strength path giant hands and stopped this immortal killer move.

Duke Long was still sustaining the qi wall, he could not attack, Fang Yuan was able to retreat with ease.

"Qin Ding Ling, you did well." Duke Long praised secretly.

In the deadlock earlier, Duke Long was in a disadvantage, over half of his dragon spirals in the qi wall had dissipated.

Thankfully, Qin Ding Ling interfered and forced Fang Yuan to retreat.

Thoughts clashed like lightning in Fang Yuan’s mind as he analyzed the situation.

He had abundant methods, but as long as the transportation formation existed, he could not use most of his methods casually.

Once he activates these methods and Fairy Zi Wei tries to teleport him forcefully, it might greatly disrupt Fang Yuan, causing his activation to fail.

Once his killer move fails, he would suffer varying extents of backlash.

If Fang Yuan suffered a backlash now, the consequences would be unthinkable!

Because of his dao mark amplification, the power was at least one thousand five hundred times! The backlash would be equally amplified.

And more terrifyingly, the sovereign immortal body had non-conflicting dao marks, Fang Yuan had to endure the complete backlash. That way, as long as Fang Yuan faced one backlash, he would likely die.

Only moves like strength path giant hand with low activation time could be used as they only needed few thoughts to maintain. Even if the killer move was destroyed, only the strength path giant hands would break apart, the Gu Immortal’s own backlash would be very marginal.

"In that case, let me try another move." Fang Yuan began to prepare his killer move.

He cultivated all paths, he had abundant methods, in this regard, even Duke Long and Thunder Ghost True Monarch, these dual cultivators, could not match up.

In a few breaths of time, Fang Yuan’s killer move was prepared.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Self!

Swoosh swoosh swoosh swoosh swoosh swoosh...

Countless Fang Yuan spread out into the sky from Myriad Year Flying Warship, a ten thousand person army was formed instantly.

The original myriad self killer move was turned into an Immortal Gu recipe by Fang Yuan, in which he refined Immortal Gu Myriad Self.

But the myriad self killer move that Fang Yuan used now was not the original version, it was a human path killer move that used myriad self Immortal Gu as the core!

At the next moment, all of the Fang Yuan clones charged towards the qi wall.

Their strength was lower than the main body of course, but because his main body had too many dao marks, all of these myriad self clones all had at least desolate beast level battle strength.

After using this killer move, Fang Yuan gained a desolate beast army that numbered to ten thousand. All of these clones were controlled by Fang Yuan with ease, as if they were extensions of his limbs.

A portion of the myriad self army charged towards the qi wall, some charged at Qin Ding Ling, while the bulk of them got past the qi wall and attacked the transportation formation behind instead.

Even though Duke Long’s qi wall was strong, it could not compare to the primordial qi wall. Duke Long’s heart jumped, he tried to cancel this move but Fang Yuan’s main body came charging with Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Duke Long grunted as he dispelled that thought, continuing to maintain the qi wall.

In a battle between experts, activating killer moves was not easy, but dispelling them was similarly difficult.

On the other end, Qin Ding Ling was surrounded by Fang Yuan’s clones as they fought. Qin Ding Ling was very powerful, these clones were no threat to her, but they were enough to distract her, she had to waste time and effort to deal with them.

Fairy Zi Wei took in a deep breath of shock.

She instantly realized, this was a huge test to her. If she failed the test, the transportation formation would be destroyed, it would cause a series of problems, the entire battle situation would crumble, the plan to repair fate Gu would fail!

"There is no time to mobilize Heavenly Court’s forces. I can only rely on myself!" Fairy Zi Wei had a determined expression as she did her best, instilling all of her attention into the formation.

She was wholeheartedly concentrating!

Star Constellation Chessboard buzzed incessantly, its chess pieces were shining in starlight on the surface of Star Constellation Chessboard, with three of them being the brightest.

These were the three pieces that Star Constellation’s silhouette had tossed over earlier!

Fairy Zi Wei’s mind had countless thoughts that resembled the starry sky, they shined brightly.

The formation activated, shooting out waves of starlight specks. Countless specks landed on Fang Yuan’s clones, very few missed their target, even though Fang Yuan’s clones were doing their best to dodge.

As long as they were hit by the starlight specks, they would be teleported outside of Heavenly Court, vanishing instantly.

These clones did not have the killer move heaven form, they could not rejoin the battle.

"Good!" Duke Long and Qin Ding Ling let out sighs of relief.

Fairy Zi Wei did not disappoint them, at the crucial moment, she gave a display of a wisdom path great expert!

Fang Yuan frowned lightly: "This will not do. Fate Gu is slowly being repaired, Heavenly Court has the overall momentum in this battle. Fairy Zi Wei cannot last long but she is planning to stall for time. Over here, I am obstructed by Duke Long and Qin Ding Ling..."

Fang Yuan looked at Longevity Heaven’s side again.

These people were obstructed by the transportation formation too, Calamity Luck Altar was charging towards Heaven Overseeing Tower but a starlight pillar was moving them back each time.

"If I ask them to reinforce me, they would receive the same treatment too. Furthermore, if they come here, I will not be able to use my methods freely, I should let them attack the surroundings to pressure and drain Fairy Zi Wei’s energy."

Duke Long’s qi wall could move, it could not block the myriad self clones but it could block Myriad Year Flying Warship wholeheartedly.

As Fang Yuan fought against Duke Long, he contacted Eastern Sea’s immortals.

Heavenly Court’s transportation formation had one great weakness, it needed stars as the springboard. Even within Heavenly Court, that was the case, the starlight pillars shot down from white heaven’s countless stars.

Fang Yuan could not destroy the transportation formation now, but it was the same if the stars in white heaven were destroyed.

Luckily, a group of Eastern Sea rank eights were there!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Eastern Sea’s eight Gu Immortals had already arrived in white heaven, they destroyed many stars.

Their ambition was not as large as Southern Border, Northern Plains, and Western Desert, they only wanted to plunder some Central Continent resources and expend its foundation.

Because they were worried that Heavenly Court would send reinforcements to stop them, they targeted the stars in white heaven instead.

Their strategy had coincidentally become the most crucial point in the entire battle right now!

Among them were Zhang Yin, Granny Rong, and the other dragon generals, Wu Shuai did not recall them, they were left in this group, to try to destroy the stars.

Wu Shuai made a wise decision.

If only Shen Cong Sheng, Qing Yue An, Hua Cai Yun, and Song Qi Yuan were left, they might not have enough guts to destroy the stars.

Eastern Sea’s eight immortals were quite efficient in destroying the stars.

The eight of them arrived in front of a giant sized star.

The star was so huge that these eight immortals felt very minute.

Heavenly Court scattered countless stars in white heaven, they were mutually connected, creating a web that had its own arrangements.

Each area had a giant star as the formation core, around the giant star were many large sized stars.

And around the large sized stars were countless mid and small sized stars, flying around casually, they did not have fixed locations.

Song Qi Yuan first flew onto the giant star as he shut his eyes, quietly sensing the connection between the stars.

More than ten breaths later, he shut his eyes, activating a light path killer move as he pointed far away.

Each time he pointed, a sharp profound light would shoot out of his finger at lightning speed, vanishing into the horizon.

Far away, mid and small sized stars exploded into smithereens.

This light path killer move was very special, it could trace the source of any light and attack it. It could even target gazes.

In the previous life, Song Qi Yuan used this move to destroy a star that Fang Yuan refined, causing his star eyes Immortal Gu to fail.

In this life, Song Qi Yuan used this move against Heavenly Court, the effect was immediate as well.

After Song Qi Yuan destroyed all of the stars he could sense, he stopped and nodded at Qing Yue An.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Mountain Ranges!

Qing Yue An gave a cry as the phantom image of countless mountains appeared, the entire mountain range crashed into the giant star.

The giant star was huge but it was just an immortal material, under the attack of the rank eight killer move, it shattered and was destroyed, breaking into countless star fragments.

Almost at the same time the giant star was destroyed, Fairy Zi Wei, who was within Heavenly Court’s transportation formation, sensed it.

Her expression changed.

The destruction of one giant star was not an issue. Heavenly Court scattered many stars in white heaven, the loss of one was insignificant.

But in this situation, it had a different implication.

Currently, Northern Plains’ immortals and Fang Yuan’s clones were attacking all the important areas of Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei had to activate the formation to transport them away.

The formation was constantly activated, it was like a person running while keeping a dangerous balance. If the person steps on a rock, no matter how small it is, they would lose their balance and fall, getting injured. The faster they are running, the heavier their injuries when they fall.

The transportation formation was being used so intensely now, if any errors happen when the destroyed star is needed for the process, the transportation formation would be severely damaged by its own backlash, it might get destroyed.

Fairy Zi Wei had thought that these Eastern Sea immortals held the lowest threat to them, but to think that in this situation and time, the eight Eastern Sea immortals were her most fatal threat!

She had to be careful now, any suspicious stars could not be used now.

Fang Yuan acutely sensed the changes in the formation, he attacked wildly while activating myriad self, and also transmitting information to Shen Cong Sheng.

Shen Cong Sheng received Fang Yuan’s message and understood Heavenly Court’s situation, he became very excited.

He urged the seven immortals: "Now is our best chance, Fang Yuan has already made his move, Heavenly Court cannot divert its attention. The more stars we destroy, the more problems Heavenly Court will face. Heavenly Court’s main forces are restrained in Hairy Foot Mountain, while Heavenly Court itself is being attacked by Longevity Heaven and Fang Yuan. If we do well here, we might have a chance of destroying Heavenly Court!"

Shen Cong Sheng’s words raised the morale of the other seven immortals, their efficiency went up at once.

Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield.

The sharp sound of phoenix chirping pierced the eardrums and ran through the battlefield.

The source of the sound was Prince Feng Xian’s killer move — Phoenix Chirping Divine Flame!

The flames burned with raging intensity, coiling around Di Zang Sheng’s body as it was set ablaze.

At the other side, Bai Cang Shui also used her killer move, countless water waves rushed towards Di Zang Sheng’s body without stopping even for a moment.

Di Zang Sheng was attacked by more than just these two people, it was just too large, Heavenly Court’s immortals had their own area to target and attack.

Di Zang Sheng roared continuously, it was attacked by flames and water, lightning and poison, but it still rushed towards the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, the attacks of the Heavenly Court immortals did not distract it successfully.

Its performance did not fit historical records, back then, Di Zang Sheng caused chaos and attacked everything in its sight, it was easily drawn away, it had never shown such a clear objective.

"Oh no! This legendary immemorial beast has likely been enslaved." Zhou Xiong Xin shouted.

Heavenly Court’s main forces did not have wisdom path Gu Immortals, but Zhou Xiong Xin cultivated information path, he was most skilled at collecting information and clues.

He even had information path killer moves that could mimic wisdom path effects.

After fighting for some time, Zhou Xiong Xin immediately deduced the truth behind Di Zang Sheng.

Di Zang Sheng was attacked by the Heavenly Court immortals, it was covered in injuries. In terms of defense, it was inferior to Duke Long, it also had no wild Immortal Gu, it was fighting with its own innate abilities.

Every time it waved its claws, it could create a gale. The Heavenly Court immortals avoided them, none of them wanting to try the feeling of being caught by Di Zang Sheng.

Each of its roars could set off shocking waves of sound, violently impacting everyone’s eardrums and hearts.

Its size was too large, even if it suffered countless blows, it was not a big deal to its entire body.

It endured the furious attacks of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, it persevered towards the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation as it began to cause destruction.

Heavenly Court’s immortals felt a sense of helplessness, against Di Zang Sheng, even if they used their full strength, they were like rats trying to topple an elephant.

"What do I do?"

"At this rate, the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation cannot sustain itself."

"Attacking the enemy will save it, we have to face offense with offense!"

Heavenly Court’s immortals had rich experience, they quickly found a countermeasure.

Vortex Space Boy and Jun Shen Guang moved ahead while Zhu Que Er and Zhu Que Er became the middle group, they all moved towards the five regional limit formation.

At this moment, Di Zang Sheng opened its mouth, an Immortal Gu House flew out.

This Immortal Gu House was shining in orange-gold light, it was grand and overbearing, this was the rank eight Immortal Gu House — Dragon Palace.

A wave of smoke flew out of Dragon Palace like an illusory dream.

"Dream path killer move?!" Heavenly Court’s immortals recognized it, they were shocked and fearful, quickly dodging.

Wherever dreamy light smoke went, Heavenly Court’s immortals dodged and gave way.

The light smoke covered the five regional limit formation and quickly retrieved it.

Heavenly Court’s immortals tried to use methods to attack dreamy light smoke but dream path killer moves were unstoppable in this era, all of their hard work ended up in vain.

The five regional limit formation was brought into Dragon Palace, Zhan Bu Du stored it away, after landing inside Dragon Palace, he met with Wu Shuai.

Wu Shuai used Dragon Palace’s methods to immediately heal him.

Heavenly Court was a strong foe, even though they were in a disadvantage, they could still retaliate. Heavenly Court’s main forces used the best tactic, forcing Zhan Bu Du to store the five regional limit formation.

This formation had already been attacked countless times, it was at its limits already.

Not only did Zhan Bu Du need healing, this five regional limit formation also needed to be repaired.

Without the formation, even though there was still five colored smoke in the battlefield, it lost its source and quickly dwindled.

Wu Shuai drove Dragon Palace directly into the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation with Di Zang Sheng, without tangling with Heavenly Court’s members.

"Hold on! We need to hold on!" The Gu Immortals controlling the formation shouted, the atmosphere was tense and solemn.

In order to protect Hairy Foot Mountain and Infallible blessed land, they had to keep the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation up.

However, be it the five colored smoke or Di Zang Sheng, they were fatally dangerous to the formation.

After entering the formation, Di Zang Sheng’s strength rose greatly.

It was restricted in the five colored smoke earlier, after all, it was a Central Continent legendary immemorial beast, it was not from the nine heavens.

Immortal killer move — Unlimited Wind!

While Heavenly Court’s main forces retreated, Wu Yong found a chance and permanently expended wind path dao marks to unleash the unceasing tornado.

The tornado rampaged, suppressing the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation from the outside, adding an additional problem to Heavenly Court.

Emperor City battlefield.

Myriad Statue Palace and Divine Bean Palace helped each other, firmly holding Western Desert’s ground.

Thousand Transformations Ancestor charged into the battle alone, using all sorts of powerful transformation path killer moves to force back Yue Yang Palace and Frost Dragon Manor.

Like Zhang Fei Xiong and Flesh Whip Immortal, Thousand Transformations Ancestor also had the ability to fight Immortal Gu Houses with his body!

But the overall situation was, Central Continent still had the upper hand.

They were all affected by heroes among people, this human path killer move was indeed a venerable method, it could not be assessed with common sense.

Within Emperor City, the competition was also at a crucial stage.

Hong Yi stared at the fire with his full concentration. No matter how the immortals fought outside, they could not disturb him.

Ye Fan was the same, he wholeheartedly wanted to compete with Hong Yi. But different from Hong Yi, he was using a light path refinement method, aurora lights constantly moved vividly, reflecting off his face.

In the competition ground, one by one, Gu Masters failed, success dao marks were sent to Infallible blessed land by batches.

Next, the success dao marks in Infallible blessed land were extracted by Heavenly Court and sent to Yuan Qiong Du.

Yuan Qiong Du controlled the refinement path Gu formation, he continued to repair fate Gu, he was making quick progress.

Within this refinement path Gu formation, there were Cong Yan and Che Wei defending the place with their full strength.

As Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals got near the formation, starlight would land on them, they would be teleported out without resistance.

"As expected of Lady Zi Wei."

"She is so dependable."

Che Wei and Cong Yan sighed.

"Persevere, persevere!" Fairy Zi Wei was covered in sweat now, her face was pale and her head was emitting steam from overheating.

She encouraged herself continuously: "The situation is still within my grasp, persistence will lead to victory!"

But at the next moment, Fang Yuan, who was on Myriad Year Flying Warship, laughed loudly.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Beings Assimilation Transformation.

Immortal killer move — Falling Star Rod Transformation!

He suddenly turned into a huge rod, black and thick.

Next, he used a star path killer move — Leading Countless Stars!

"Oh no!" Fairy Zi Wei’s expression changed, she felt like she was sitting on a wild horse carriage that could not stop.

The horse pulling it was rampaging, even if she held the reins, she could not stop this horse carriage anymore.

Boom!

At the next moment, the entire transportation formation self-detonated, starlight specks faded away, no longer shining down.

Fairy Zi Wei suffered an immense backlash, she was at the point of near death, falling unconscious.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1938 Heavenly Court“s Crisis

The transportation formation’s self-detonation shook all the surroundings as Heavenly Court’s battlefield froze for a moment.

Next, Northern Plains’ immortals erupted with cheers and caused a huge commotion.

"Zi Wei!" Qin Ding Ling turned pale with shock as she turned into a flash of light, saving Fairy Zi Wei from the rubble of the transportation formation.

Fairy Zi Wei had fainted, she was in poor shape, Qin Ding Ling needed to save her immediately.

Qin Ding Ling had no hesitation, she immediately retreated, no longer assisting Duke Long in battle. She knew her limits, she was not very useful for Duke Long, while Fairy Zi Wei was the strategist of Heavenly Court, she was vital and could not be lost.

Fang Yuan wanted to use this chance to kill Fairy Zi Wei of course, but Duke Long blocked his advancement each time.

Undeniably, Duke Long’s modified qi wall was very strong, it got past the immobile weakness of the primordial qi wall, it was agile and durable. After Duke Long used this move, even Fang Yuan’s Myriad Year Flying Warship could not break through it.

Within the qi wall, Duke Long had a grim expression, he treated Fang Yuan as the greatest enemy of his life, the disdain and contempt he showed earlier were completely gone.

Only until Fang Yuan destroyed the transportation formation did Duke Long realize: Fang Yuan’s myriad self killer move earlier was just a distraction, it was intended to stall for time.

Fang Yuan’s true method was waiting all along in the dark, once used, it caused a huge impact!

"Why does Fang Yuan have the method to break the formation so coincidentally?"

Duke Long knew that Fang Yuan was able to break the qi wall earlier because of his rebirth. But this transportation formation was definitely out of Fang Yuan’s expectations, he was troubled by it earlier after all, if he had seen it in a previous life, he would have been prepared against it.

"This means that Fang Yuan deduced the method to break the killer move during battle? How can that be possible?" Duke Long was perplexed.

Heavenly Court made such an arrangement, they naturally guarded against Fang Yuan, they knew about his wisdom path attainment.

With Fang Yuan’s foundation, he would need a lot of time to unravel this transportation formation.

Speaking of which, this was quite a coincidence.

When Fang Yuan explored the Dragon Whale Paradise, he had obtained the falling star rod tree from Shen Cong Sheng.

The growth conditions of this immemorial desolate plant were still a mystery as it had been extraordinarily rare and low in quantity since ancient times.

It had the unique trait of constantly attracting stars, falling into the trunk of the tree and turning into a single star mark. That was why it was called falling star.

According to rumors, one of the motives that Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had when he traveled the world alone was to collect this tree.

The value of the falling star rod tree did not just lie in itself.

By planting it in the immortal aperture, the Gu Immortal could use it to create an entire system of orbiting stars. It was a unique ecology that brought incremental gains every year, and the total amount of gains over time, day after day, year after year, was almost impossible to estimate.

Without this tree, even if Fang Yuan knew about the falling star rod tree, he could not transform into it. But after obtaining it, he observed and studied it, gaining the falling star rod tree transformation.

Other than the rod tree transformation, Fang Yuan also had Dong Fang Chang Fan’s myriad star fireflies, and Ye Lui Qun Xing’s leading countless stars killer move. These were all loot he gained in the past.

Leading countless stars was exceptional. It used the star fragments primarily and expended little immortal essence. Using the attractive force of star fragments, it could generate starlight magnetic force to continue manipulating stars. The more stars there were, the stronger this move would be.

Back then during the Northern Plains battle, Ye Lui Qun Xing used this move and was virtually unstoppable.

The killer move leading countless stars was targeted against stars and made use of them. On top of that foundation, Fang Yuan also had star path and formation path grandmaster attainment level, as well as the light of wisdom. By modifying the killer move in battle, he was able to achieve amazing results.

Duke Long was very shocked that he could destroy the transportation formation.

In Duke Long’s eyes, Fang Yuan started to become unfathomable.

On Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan dispelled falling star rod tree transformation and returned to his human form.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Self!

Bam bam bam...

A vast number of Fang Yuan’s clones appeared again, filling the sky, they were like fireflies that spread out to the surroundings.

Heavenly Court felt a little troubled, in this battle, they were suffering from a lack of manpower.

Even though Star Constellation’s will awakened many Heavenly Court rank eights earlier, because the transportation formation was destroyed, they were all stuck in Hairy Foot Mountain now.

"Troops far away cannot salvage the situation!" Duke Long sighed, he had no choice but to use a method.

Qi path immortal killer move – Qi Engulfing Mountains and Rivers!

At that instant, an unparalleled force descended from the sky, pressing down on the entire place.

The world became still, nothing was left unaffected.

Fang Yuan’s clones were all destroyed, Calamity Luck Altar was forced to the ground, resisting stubbornly with creaking sounds. The Heavenly Court Immortal Gu Houses within the range of this killer move were even more badly affected, they were directly destroyed as the place turned into ruins.

Fang Yuan and Myriad Year Flying Warship were not spared either, they were enveloped by qi engulfing mountains and rivers, the warship’s speed fell as it rapidly descended from the sky while bearing the weight of mountains and rivers.

Fang Yuan laughed loudly, instead of shock, he felt joy.

Duke Long’s qi engulfing mountains and rivers was quite familiar to him, in the previous life, when fighting for Dragon Palace, he had used it to claim victory.

But now, Duke Long had to use this move to destroy Fang Yuan’s myriad self. He was truly in a passive spot, he had to give up Heavenly Court’s own Immortal Gu Houses.

Immortal killer move – Immemorial Year Monkey Transformation!

Fang Yuan transformed again, all of his dao marks turned into one million and five hundred thousand time path dao marks.

Myriad Year Flying Warship itself was a time path Immortal Gu House, it was activated by Fang Yuan with full force now, its power rose drastically, it was re-energized and shot out like a flying sword, as if qi engulfing mountains and rivers did not exist!

Duke Long stared at Fang Yuan furiously, he could not catch up now, he watched as Fang Yuan charged towards the immortal graveyard.

Fang Yuan did not intend to target Heaven Overseeing Tower. Firstly, Heaven Overseeing Tower was defended by a formation now, time was needed to get in, secondly, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s painting path method was still around, Fang Yuan was wary against it.

The immortal graveyard was an important place of Heavenly Court, it was likely to have a venerable method, but Fang Yuan had to take the risk.

The immortal graveyard was a huge variable, destroying it now would greatly benefit Fang Yuan and the rest!

Within Imperfection Regret Pavilion.

Seeing that Fang Yuan approached the immortal graveyard, Star Constellation

Immortal Venerable’s silhouette’s expression changed as she grabbed a chess piece, preparing to toss it.

But at this moment, Limitless Demon Venerable’s silhouette smiled lightly as he placed a piece on the chessboard.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s silhouette stopped her action, if she tossed this chess piece, Limitless Demon Venerable would gain an absolute advantage, she would not be able to turn this game around anymore!

"Limitless, you really think highly of Fang Yuan." Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s silhouette sighed, she placed the chess piece back onto the board.

Next, her gaze turned sharp as blades, she said coldly: "But it is not so easy to stop me."

Before she finished her words, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made several moves at once, placing pieces on the chessboard continuously.

Limitless Demon Venerable quickly followed after her, not giving her any advantage.

Both sides exchanged moves, they placed over a hundred pieces in a few breaths of time, the entire chessboard was filled with pieces but the strange thing was, this chessboard seemed to have no size limit, no matter how many they placed, the chessboard could hold them!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s silhouette was restrained by Limitless Demon Venerable, Fang Yuan managed to reach the immortal graveyard by moving straight ahead without obstacles.

"Fang Yuan! If you do anything to it, I will make sure you die without a proper corpse!!" Duke Long was still chasing him from behind.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, using strength path giant hand.

Slam, his giant hand was huge but extremely fast, it slammed down rapidly.

But the process of the giant hand’s movement became very slow, space seemed the same but it was actually tens of thousands of li long now.

At the crucial moment, someone interfered, but it was not a venerable method.

"Who is it?!" Fang Yuan shouted, his eyes shined like lightning as he looked towards his left.

In Fang Yuan’s vision, a female immortal slowly revealed her appearance.

She had a peculiar appearance, her entire body was made of wood, she wore a green dress made from vines, even though she had a human face, one could see the trunk rings on her tree bark skin, her eyes were clear as a tranquil lake.

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, from her aura, this female immortal was close to Di Zang Sheng’s level!

"Human immortal, stop. Don’t try to destroy Heavenly Court, otherwise, I, Cang Xuan Zi, will have to stop you." The female immortal spoke, her voice was gentle but contained immense determination.

"Cang Xuan Zi?" Fang Yuan realized after a moment.

Heavenly Court had three legendary immemorial beasts, they were Shabi Ninety-five, Ruan Dan, and Cang Xuan Zi.

Cang Xuan Zi was a vast heaven vine, it was a unique existence in Heavenly Court, it did not need to follow orders, but only had to provide a batch of vast heaven fruits every thousand years.

In the previous life, when Longevity Heaven attacked Heavenly Court, Cang Xuan Zi watched the battle without doing anything. But to think that she would take action in this life when Fang Yuan invaded!

"It seems that Cang Xuan Zi and Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had some sort of special agreement, nobody else knows about it!" Fang Yuan snorted coldly, he mobilized Myriad Year Flying Warship to charge towards the immortal graveyard.

Cang Xuan Zi sighed, she turned into a green light and blocked Myriad Year Flying Warship.

With a loud sound, Myriad Year Flying Warship crashed into Cang Xuan Zi’s body, its momentum was halted while Cang Xuan Zi was sent flying away.

She spat out a mouthful of green blood, but she continued to attack Myriad Year Flying Warship.

"Fang Yuan, your life is mine!" At this moment, Duke Long arrived, he opened his mouth and bore his fangs, turning into blades that slashed at Fang Yuan.

Instantly, Fang Yuan became trapped from the front and back.

He was not flustered, he first pointed at Duke Long to use spring scissors, before pointing at Cang Xuan Zi as the Myriad Year Flying Warship below him shot out countless flying swords, they were all daybreak flying swords!

Spring scissors flew out and snipped the dragon fangs, before approaching Duke Long with an unstoppable force.

Duke Long had to retreat.

Daybreak flying swords shot out like a waterfall towards Cang Xuan Zi, after enduring it for a few moments, Cang Xuan Zi could not hold on anymore and retreated.

Fang Yuan yelled, Myriad Year Flying Warship soared into the sky again, before rapidly descending towards the immortal graveyard.

But distance was extended once again, an unobservable profundity was occurring around the surrounding space!

Fang Yuan turned around and stared at Cang Xuan Zi, saying a sentence fiercely: "You are courting death."

Cang Xuan Zi was covered in sweat, she had tried her best to use the space path killer move, but she could only stall Fang Yuan temporarily.

Thankfully, Duke Long was around, he attacked Fang Yuan once more but was forced to retreat yet again.

Fang Yuan’s strength suppressed both Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi.

The two sides fought for over a hundred rounds, the more they fought, the stronger Fang Yuan’s aura and the more injuries gathered on the bodies of Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi.

Rumble!

With a loud sound, Fang Yuan’s Luo Po seal landed on Cang Xuan Zi as she screamed, his giant hand slammed Duke Long to the ground.

"Duke Long, you are already old! With this aged body of yours, how long can you last?" Fang Yuan smiled coldly.

"Until I die." Duke Long was filled with determination and battle intent, one of his dragon horns was broken, his dragon scales were cracked, he was covered in blood.

But he would rather fight to the death!

Within the refinement path formation, Northern Plains’ past generation experts surrounded Cong Yan and Che Wei.

"Kill, kill them both!"

"They are already at their limit."

"How can merely two people stop us? Hmph, they are overestimating themselves!"

Northern Plains’ immortals were ready to attack, killing intent surged and filled the entire space.

Che Wei and Cong Yan were covered in blood, as long as they stood at the same spot for a few seconds, a pool of blood would gather below them.

"It seems that we are going to die here."

"Hehehe, then we will die. Even if we die, we will use our lives to get as much time as we can for Yuan Qiong Du."

The two looked at each other, they smiled with the determination to die.

"Come, this is our final battle!" As the weaker side, they shouted even louder than the Northern Plains immortals.

The Northern Plains immortals’ expressions changed.

"These are two respectable opponents."

"I will use my strongest killer move to send you off, this is my respect towards you both!"

Boom boom boom!

Intense battle erupted once again.

Emperor City.

Countless gazes were heatedly locked onto the final competition grounds.

Most of the Gu Masters had failed, they all left the stage.

There were only two people left, one was Ye Fan, the other was Hong Yi. The final victor would be either one of these two!

"The competition is ending, our mission to defend is about to succeed!"

"Persevere, everyone!!"

Central Continent’s troops cheered in advance.

"What do we do?" Thousand Transformations Ancestor could not take them down, he started to feel anxious.

Fang Di Chang was silent but he snorted coldly in his heart: "You are all too naive, so what if we are blocked? Hahaha, it has finally arrived!"

At this precise moment, the ground cracked open, the earth shook as a huge Earth Trench appeared, the terrifying crack expanded towards Emperor City!

"What is happening?"

"An Earth Trench! Damn it, Emperor City is in the path of the Earth Trench."

"Quick, save the people!!"

Central Continent’s troops were flustered, they wanted to salvage the situation. But Fang Di Chang was prepared from the start, he manipulated Divine Bean Palace and charged out to block the Central Continent troops.

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals had no choice but to block Divine Bean Palace in a panic, they did not have the strength to save the mortals in Emperor City.

"We are doomed!"

"Who can save us?"

"No, we cannot give up hope!"

Emperor City was in complete chaos.

River of Time.

The river water moved in waves, Feng Jiu Ge stood in a time path Immortal Gu House as he pondered with his eyes closed, he was quietly comprehending.

Suddenly, his eyes opened, his expression was of utter shock.

A stone lotus island slowly appeared in Feng Jiu Ge’s vision.

"This is..." At this instance, Feng Jiu Ge thought of the words Qin Ding Ling said before he left —

"I observed your luck for you, it shows that your fortuitous encounter is in the River of Time. Go, your fortune is there, it will lead you to great accomplishments! You originally wanted to go to the River of Time and increase your comprehension to complete destiny song, this is a wise decision, it cannot go wrong."

"Don’t tell me, this is my fortuitous encounter?" Feng Jiu Ge restrained the shock in his mind as he entered the stone lotus island.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Heavenly Court battlefield.

"You finally woke up!" Qin Ding Ling looked at Fairy Zi Wei who was slowly opening her eyes, she let out a breath of air.

"I..." Fairy Zi Wei was a little dazed but she soon regained her senses: "How is the battle situation now?"

"The situation is not good!" Qin Ding Ling said grimly, she spread her palms as a golden silhouette appeared.

Within the silhouette, one could see the scene of Fang Yuan suppressing Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi.

Immortal killer move — Purple-Gold Dragon-Shaped Qi!

After using this killer move, be it offense, defense, healing, or movement, all of Duke Long’s actions would have accompanying purple-gold dragon-shaped qi.

This was his main method in qi path, it was very comprehensive.

In the previous life, Five Elements Grandmaster died from this move by Duke Long.

But even in this state, Duke Long was repelled by Fang Yuan continuously.

Duke Long was still very strong, but Fang Yuan relied on Myriad Year Flying Warship, displaying unprecedented time path battle strength!

Spring scissors and summer fan had incredible power, even Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi could not block these attacks.

Fairy Zi Wei took a few glances and exclaimed: "Fang Yuan’s battle strength is so terrifying! He seems to have a transformation path method to turn all of his dao marks into the same path. Not only did he advance to rank eight, his dao marks are at an absurd number. How did he do it?"

"Rather than thinking about this, you should think about how we can resolve this crisis now!" Qin Ding Ling urged.

Fairy Zi Wei was silent for a while before analyzing as she pointed at the silhouette: "Lord Duke Long’s strength is not inferior to Fang Yuan, it is just that he is too passive now as a result of protecting the immortal graveyard. This gives Fang Yuan the initiative, Lord Duke Long has to endure every offensive killer move he uses to make sure the immortal graveyard is intact."

Fang Yuan could casually dodge Duke Long’s attacks but Duke Long had to block Fang Yuan’s attacks. This was too great of an advantage.

If one analyzed this, they would see that Duke Long and Fang Yuan were quite similar in power level. But Fang Yuan’s tactic was too wise, Duke Long would not be overly concerned if he attacked Heaven Overseeing Tower with high defense, but the immortal graveyard was different.

The primordial qi wall was destroyed by Fang Yuan, that was truly a huge move, it was crucial. It caused Duke Long to be taxed with defending against Fang Yuan’s attacks now.

Star Constellation’s will could have awakened more Gu Immortals from the immortal graveyard, but Limitless Demon Venerable was stopping her at the moment.

How could they resolve this issue?

Fairy Zi Wei started to think about this deeply but she felt a strong headache, the intense pain made her body shake as she almost fainted again.

"Be careful, your injuries are still quite severe!" Qin Ding Ling called out in concern.

Fairy Zi Wei nodded, frowning and enduring the headache, she spoke with difficulty: "The immortal graveyard is the biggest foundation and accumulation of Heavenly Court, we cannot lose it! We need to get rid of the problem which is Fang Yuan now, go and reinforce Senior Duke Long, get Gu Yue Fang Zheng to fight as well. He has been cultivating in the Demon Judgment Board recently, he progressed quite a bit. If you enter the Demon Judgment Board and coordinate with him, there will be good results."

"What about you?" Qin Ding Ling looked at Fairy Zi Wei with worry.

Fairy Zi Wei spat out a mouthful of blood: "I need to heal my injuries. Thankfully, there is a healing hall that can help me greatly. Don’t worry, this Immortal Gu House is at the periphery of the battlefield, it will not attract attention."

"Okay, be careful!" Qin Ding Ling hesitated for a moment before gritting her teeth and flying away.

Fairy Zi Wei felt her vision turning dark, after taking several huge breaths for a while, she stabilized her injuries and decided to move towards the healing hall.

Immortal killer move — Summer Fan!

Whoosh! Intense winds blew, sweeping everything in their path, rampaging through heaven and earth.

Duke Long grunted as he flew back by three hundred steps, countless purple-gold scale fragments were scattered along the way.

The storm also engulfed Cang Xuan Zi, the female immortal cried out in pain as her vines snapped, she used her defensive killer moves with much difficulty to resist the attack.

Her space path defensive killer move was quite amazing. Any move that landed on her would have to travel through a huge distance to reach her.

But no matter how long the distance was, the time path tornado still went into the immortal graveyard. Even though it only suffered a minor loss, still far from total destruction, Heavenly Court’s immortals still felt deeply pained when they saw that.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, looking at Cang Xuan Zi coldly.

He was not happy with the current situation.

Cang Xuan Zi... he did not expect her to participate, Fang Yuan knew nothing about her. Especially when she cultivated space path, Fang Yuan’s attainment level in this path was too low.

Without enough space path attainment level, even though Fang Yuan had wisdom path attainment level, he could not deduce anything useful.

"The bigger threat between them is Duke Long." Standing on Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan looked at Duke Long again.

Not long ago, when Fang Yuan used summer fan, Duke Long flew back by five hundred steps, but now, it was only three hundred steps.

Summer fan was an old killer move, even though Fang Yuan modified it, it had already been used before. At this point, Duke Long was getting used to dealing with it.

Of course, the bigger reason was that Duke Long was continuously getting stronger!

"Heavenly dragon’s last stand..." Fang Yuan muttered, he could feel what the Northern Plains immortals felt in the previous life when they fought Duke Long.

Duke Long was strong to begin with, and more terrifyingly, he was continuously getting stronger.

Fang Yuan knew that even though he had the upper hand now, it was because of his wise tactic of targeting the enemy’s weakness! Duke Long was forced to defend it.

In terms of real battle, if he fought Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi, they would be evenly matched.

Fang Yuan had Myriad Year Flying Warship, he coordinated well with it. This was the first time Duke Long was fighting with Cang Xuan Zi, and even though Cang Xuan Zi had deep foundation on par with Di Zang Sheng, she was unfamiliar with fighting techniques, it showed that under normal times she faced combat rarely.

Thus, Fang Yuan could also sense that she was getting more proficient in her methods as the fight went on.

After all, a battle of life and death was the greatest form of training.

"Time is pressing, if I cannot succeed soon, I will need to give up on this target." Fang Yuan took a look at Heaven Overseeing Tower, once Genesis Lotus’ method was activated, he would attack that place.

Before that, he should destroy the immortal graveyard first. After all, nobody knew which monster would emerge from it next! After all, including Duke Long, Heavenly Court should have a total of four Dao Guardians.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light, countless thoughts moved in his mind at rapid speed, countless battle tactics were being created.

At this point in time, he still had many trump card killer moves left. There was time cutting edge, unlimited qi sea, five finger fist heart sword, lead soul into dream, and other killer moves.

If he faced other enemies, these methods would decide the battle and kill them. But Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi were not simple characters, against them, if his move failed, they would be prepared against the attack, Fang Yuan would not be able to use them effectively anymore.

Kill Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi? It was not impossible for Fang Yuan!

But at the same time, Duke Long still had the killer move triple qi retraction, it was very threatening. If Fang Yuan got hit by it, the consequences would be severe. Fang Yuan was similarly wary of it.

Furthermore, other than triple qi retraction, did Duke Long have other methods of similar strength?

Fang Yuan was not sure.

At the same time, Cang Xuan Zi was quite an unknown factor, she had lived much longer than Duke Long and also had a complex relationship with Genesis Lotus, who knew what methods she could bring out, it would not be surprising.

Fang Yuan continued to attack, he aimed attacks at the immortal graveyard while looking for an opportunity.

Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi were experienced monsters, their battle experience was incredibly vast.

Fang Yuan tried for a long time but he could not create any opportunities.

Amidst the intense battle, a cloud of blood suddenly appeared.

The cloud of blood approached Fang Yuan, it had a peculiar aura.

Fang Yuan stepped softly as Myriad Year Flying Warship shook, a group of daybreak flying swords flew out and attacked the cloud.

The blood cloud was pierced by Fang Yuan, it was easily torn to shreds and vanished, but Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

At the next moment, Cooking Luck Pot appeared above him, blood markings appeared and stuck themselves onto Cooking Luck Pot, attempting to corrode Fang Yuan’s luck.

"Blood path killer move?" Fang Yuan’s heart shook, his attacks slowed down as he split his attention to mobilize Cooking Luck Pot.

But no matter how he tried to cook his luck, he could not get rid of the blood markings. To get rid of them, Fang Yuan would need to concentrate fully, it would expend a lot of his time.

Fang Yuan cast his gaze far away as an Immortal Gu House approached him.

This was a red tombstone with countless words moving on it, it was the rank eight Immortal Gu House — Demon Judgment Board!

"Fang Zheng... is that you?" Although lacking a clear reason, Fang Yuan guessed the identity of the person inside the Demon Judgment Board.

Within Demon Judgment Board, there was Gu Yue Fang Zheng and also Qin Ding Ling.

"Fang Yuan was hit!" Fang Zheng was surprised and joyful: "Thank you for amplifying the power of my killer move."

At this moment, behind Fang Zheng, Qin Ding Ling was placing both palms on his back as she helped him with her full strength.

Seeing that this move had effect, Qin Ding Ling was surprised too, she looked at Gu Yue Fang Zheng in a new light.

Fang Zheng only had rank seven cultivation level but like what Fairy Zi Wei predicted, the killer moves he created were very effective on Fang Yuan.

"Worthy of Fang Yuan’s nemesis, the pawn left behind specially by heaven’s will." Qin Ding Ling sighed to herself.

Heaven’s will attempted to destroy Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s plan, using Fang Yuan as the pawn. But Fang Yuan as an otherworldly demon was the greatest variable himself, thus heaven’s will arranged for Fang Zheng as well, to become the counter to Fang Yuan.

Thus, after Fang Zheng became the Demon Judgment Board Lord, he used the experience of the previous generations of Board Lords to create his own killer move, blood-kin heart revenge.

This blood path mimicked luck path, it also contained the profundity of human path. Qin Ding Ling’s amplification was only icing on the cake.

Blood-kin heart revenge activated again!

The blood cloud approached while Fang Yuan dodged it.

But the blood cloud followed him closely, it did not stop chasing after him.

"I’ve already used sovereign immortal fetus Gu, this body has no bloodline relationship with him, why is the blood cloud still approaching me?" At once, Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered with uncertainty.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan’s current main body was made from sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

Sovereign immortal fetus Gu was a consumable Gu worm, it could turn any life form into a pure bred human. Because the body was not created by normal birth, it had the trait of being half an otherworldly demon.

The sovereign immortal body had no blood relationship with Gu Yue Fang Zheng, he was only related to Fang Yuan’s rank six time path clone.

But his clone was currently hidden in the sovereign immortal aperture, isolated from the world. Could Fang Zheng’s method pierce through that boundary and sense the clone in his immortal aperture?

"Most likely, this move does not use our bloodline relationship but the mental connection with the user." Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, he felt that this deduction was more logical.

He had very little understanding of Fang Zheng’s killer move as he had just seen it.

Fang Yuan tried for a while and could not get away from the blood cloud. If he destroyed the cloud, blood markings would appear and attack his luck.

If others used this killer move, there would not be this effect.

But Fang Zheng was closely connected to Fang Yuan, not just in terms of bloodline. He was an arrangement of heaven’s will, both of their lucks were connected in some way. For example, after Fang Yuan obtained Cooking Luck Pot, Fang Zheng’s luck turned into a pot lid, it showed that he was a counter to Fang Yuan.

The connection of blood-kin heart revenge was much more complex than Fang Yuan thought.

The first aspect was bloodline connection, the second was the mental connection, and the third was their luck’s connection.

Using the resonance of their luck, the blood markings were able to corrode Fang Yuan’s luck.

This was a huge problem for Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan changed his target now, trying to destroy Demon Judgment Board and kill Fang Zheng directly. But whenever he made this choice, Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi would interfere, they would thwart his plan each time at the perfect timing.

Even if Fang Yuan’s attacks landed, it would only cause Demon Judgment Board to shake and crack. Afterwards, the Gu Immortals inside would repair it fully.

Demon Judgment Board was different from most of Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu Houses, it was comprehensive in defense, movement, recovery, and others, it had no clear weaknesses.

"If I had the all living beings luck inheritance, no, as long as I had heart blood Immortal Gu... even if I cannot unravel this move, it will alleviate my situation." Fang Yuan had a sensation back then, it was a pity that he could not obtain heart blood Immortal Gu during the qi sea banquet, that was truly a huge pity, to think that it would take effect here.

In the previous life, Fang Yuan lost the five regional limit formation, it was a huge pity. In this life, it was heart blood Immortal Gu.

Even though Fang Yuan had Spring Autumn Cicada and had the advantage of rebirth, when he changed things, the influence would spread out, his enemies and the entire world would generate new changes that would target him once again.

It was like someone shouting at a valley, no matter how he adjusted his voice or tone, the echo would also come back to find him.

At the qi sea banquet, Fang Yuan already felt something. But it was a pity that all sorts of undercurrents and circumstances forced Fang Yuan to let go of this opportunity.

From this aspect, one could see Spring Autumn Cicada’s weakness.

The rebirth provided by Spring Autumn Cicada was merely a second chance. Afterwards, especially later into the future, the situation would still depend on the user’s own actions.

If one kept relying on the advantage of rebirth, they might gain a lot during the initial stage, but they would be like overconfident swimmers in the sea, eventually drowning themselves.

Thus, even after being reborn for countless times, Red Lotus Demon Venerable only managed to damage fate Gu.

This way, with Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi as the main force, with Fang Zheng and Qin Ding Ling as the supplementary force using Demon Judgment Board, they attacked Fang Yuan together, finally resisting this demon’s great might.

"Fang Yuan is trapped!" Within Calamity Luck Altar, Bull Demon spoke, he had kept a lot of attention on Fang Yuan.

Of course, he was not the only one, all of the other Gu Immortals did too, after all, Fang Yuan’s victory or defeat would influence this entire battle.

Flower Lady hesitated: "Should we help him?"

The two look at Bing Sai Chuan. They knew that he was still concealing a trump card, they could ask Limitless to turn around.

In the previous life, Bing Sai Chuan used this trump card to temporarily trap Duke Long.

Furthermore, in this situation, as long as Duke Long was trapped, Fang Yuan would not have any restraints, he could break the stalemate.

But Bing Sai Chuan shook his head, his gaze was heated: "Let them fight, this is our best chance, let us take fate Gu and return to Longevity Heaven, we will refine rank nine destiny Gu!"

His original goal was this, with rank nine destiny Gu, Longevity Heaven would replace Heavenly Court’s position, they would rule the five regions.

Earlier, Bing Sai Chuan was trapped in a predicament, he had to give up on this thought and ask Fang Yuan for help. Now that Fang Yuan has taken action and changed the situation, Bing Sai Chuan’s situation turned for the better.

Be grateful to Fang Yuan and help him?

Bing Sai Chuan laughed coldly in his heart. Their grand ambitions were about to be fulfilled, after years of waiting and expectation’, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s goal of domination was close! How could he give up?!

As long as there was hope, he had to try, he could not give up!

At this moment, even though the refinement path formation was not destroyed, a path was already opened.

"Go! For Longevity Heaven, for Northern Plains, for Lord Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, go and retrieve Fate!" Bing Sai Chuan screamed in a loud voice.

The phantom images in the River of Time stirred, the historical experts of Northern Plains roared and echoed Bing Sai Chuan’s words.

Mao Li Qiu had entered battle long ago, using the killer move perfect pair to fight Shabi Ninety-five and Ruan Dan.

Bull Demon and Flower Lady also flew out of Calamity Luck Altar, engaging in their attack. Many Northern Plains Gu Immortals were with them, they had a much larger force than in the previous life.

"No!" Yuan Qiong Du’s eyes were red, he shouted for reinforcements but nobody came to help.

Yuan Qiong Du was inside the refinement path formation, he could not leave. At this moment, he was in grave danger himself.

Rank nine Fate was about to be repaired but if it was snatched away, their efforts would have been in vain.

Seeing this situation, Duke Long became anxious, he called out: "Fang Yuan, to think that they are also making use of you."

Fang Yuan casted his gaze at Heaven Overseeing Tower, with just this action, Bing Sai Chuan held his breath.

If Fang Yuan turned around now and attacked Longevity Heaven, what would they do?

Bing Sai Chuan had made this decision after shouldering huge pressure.

The truth was, Fang Yuan had been paying attention to Heaven Overseeing Tower’s situation. When he saw that Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals were going to Heaven Overseeing Tower, he became happy: Somebody was finally going to step on the land mine for him.

"Duke Long, you should be more concerned with yourself. I will kill you first before dealing with Longevity Heaven!" Fang Yuan shouted.

Duke Long was silent, his attacks went beyond his original limit yet again, becoming even stronger.

"Fate Gu!" Bull Demon and Flower Lady shouted, they charged up to the top of Heaven Overseeing Tower, seeing fate Gu.

But at the next moment, Genesis Lotus’ method activated.

"Ahhh!"

"What is this?!"

"Painting path, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s method!"

Like what Fang Yuan had expected, these Northern Plains Gu Immortals were all stuck inside the bamboo forest painting now.

This change was so unexpected that all the other immortals were stunned. Within Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan was dumbstruck.

Yuan Qiong Du, Cong Yan, and Che Wei gained some time to recover, they quickly rested.

Bing Sai Chuan gritted his teeth, phantoms moved in the River of Time but no Gu Immortals appeared, Mao Li Qiu was the closest to it but it was fighting against two legendary immemorial beasts, it could not leave.

In this situation, only Bing Sai Chuan could go himself.

At this moment, Qi Ci Lang woke up slowly.

"What are you hesitating for? Use Calamity Luck Altar to crash into Heaven Overseeing Tower!" Qi Ci Lang said.

When he was unconsciously, he still collected information about the outside world, once he woke up, he received the information.

Fate Gu was inside Heaven Overseeing Tower, it was the core component.

Fate Gu could only be destroyed by otherworldly demons, if Heaven Overseeing Tower was destroyed, the other core Immortal Gu might be destroyed but fate Gu would be intact.

But Heaven Overseeing Tower was a genuine rank nine Immortal Gu House, it had great defense. If Heaven Overseeing Tower attacked it, they would lose precious time. This was why Bing Sai Chuan sent Gu Immortals to invade Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Bing Sai Chuan could not decide.

He looked at the phantom River of Time again, some time had passed but no Gu Immortals came out. There were still many experts in Northern Plains’ history, like those forming Seven Extreme Desolation, they did not show up despite Bing Sai Chuan’s expectations.

Bing Sai Chuan’s expression was uncertain, even though he did not know the previous life’s situation, he sensed something amiss!

He was a time path great expert after all.

Being appointed by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable as the West Desolation Immortal, having slumbered for three hundred thousand years due to Giant Sun’s request, he was the crucial leader that was designated to achieve Longevity Heaven’s grand ambitions!

"This call of the ancient killer move is quite fishy, I cannot rely on it solely. Red Lotus Demon Venerable was once a righteous path member after all, nobody knows what his true objectives are."

Thinking of this, Bing Sai Chuan said to Qi Ci Lang: "Seventh Prince, please take action."

Qi Ci Lang spat out: "Are you a luck path cultivator? I am! I am more suited than you to control Calamity Luck Altar. How much of this Immortal Gu House’s power can you use? The urgent matter at hand is to... Bing Sai Chuan, fuck your ancestor!"

Qi Ci Lang had just said his words when suddenly, Bing Sai Chuan teleported him out, he could not help but curse.

Calamity Luck Altar’s control was in Bing Sai Chuan’s hands. Qi Ci Lang was able to control it earlier because Bing Sai Chuan gave him a portion of the authority.

"Seventh Prince, please attack quickly." Bing Sai Chuan spoke politely but Calamity Luck Altar was ready to attack.

Qi Ci Lang suspected that if he refused to act, Calamity Luck Altar would attack him first.

"Bing Sai Chuan, very good!" Qi Ci Lang gritted his teeth in deep anger.

Bing Sai Chuan was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s old general, his status and seniority gave him the assurance to deal with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s own son like this.

"Just you wait. If not for father’s ambitions..." Qi Ci Lang was furious and helpless, he charged into Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Yuan Qiong Du and the rest were helpless to stop him.

Since when could enemies enter and leave Heaven Overseeing Tower at will?

Yuan Qiong Du and the other two felt sadness in their hearts, they could only bank on Genesis Lotus’ arrangements activating again.

Qi Ci Lang carefully stepped onto the top of Heaven Overseeing Tower, he was immediately attacked by a jade light.

He received a shock, looking at Genesis Lotus’ painting on the walls, he tried his best to maintain his position but he could not resist it.

Right as he was about to be dragged into the painting, Bing Sai Chuan shouted: "Limitless, please turn around!"

In Imperfection Regret Pavilion, similar to the previous life, Limitless Demon Venerable did not turn around, he only tossed out one chess piece.

The chess piece flew into Heaven Overseeing Tower and floated above Qi Ci Lang’s head.

Qi Ci Lang’s body immediately regained freedom as the jade light got blocked by this small chess piece, only a faint amount of jade light remained around him.

Qi Ci Lang was overjoyed, as long as he got rid of the jade light, he would be able to move freely and snatch fate Gu!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Emperor City battlefield.

Rumble, dust clouds spread.

The earth cracked open, a large trench spread out and extended forward, swallowing everything in its path, approaching Emperor City.

Emperor City’s destruction was about to occur!

At this moment, there were still several Central Continent Gu Immortals guarding Emperor City, but to save the lives of everyone in such a short time, none of the Gu Immortals could do it.

Earth Trenches were formed naturally, nobody could predict where the next Earth Trench would appear. But only Fang Yuan knew.

Because this Earth Trench appeared in his previous life and destroyed Emperor City.

Both Central Continent’s and Western Desert’s forces were caught off guard, the Earth Trench was truly a huge shock to them!

But Western Desert was shocked and happy while Central Continent was shocked and fearful.

Right when Emperor City was about to be destroyed, an Immortal Gu House emerged and turned into jade light as it flew into the sky rapidly.

It was Divine Bean Palace!

"Stop him!" Central Continent’s Gu Immortals subconsciously shouted.

"What is Fang Di Chang doing?" Thousand Transformations Ancestor and the rest were quite surprised, Divine Bean Palace’s action was not what they had planned.

Fang Di Chang was shocked at the moment, not only could he not connect to the outside world, his entire body was immobilized.

Divine Bean Palace shook intensely, a formless force was restraining him completely.

On the painting that surrounded the walls, a lump of will emerged.

The will quickly gathered into human form, he had the appearance of a young man with a gentlemanly air, wearing green clothes and a white headband, his long hair extended to his shoulders.

Seeing this will, Fang Di Chang’s expression turned ashen, he shouted: "Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable!"

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable... the venerable with the most abundant immortal essence in history, the third generation Immortal King of Heavenly Court, the creator of Heavenly Lotus Sect, he was the one who cleansed the demonic trend, he restored order to the world.

Indeed, this was Genesis Lotus’ will!

"Damn it, he was hiding in the painting so I could not discover him?" Fang Di Chang understood at once, he had no understanding of painting path after all.

"But why did I lose control of Divine Bean Palace the moment Genesis Lotus’ will appeared, I am restrained here without any freedom left?" Instantly, Fang Di Chang thought of Qing Chou.

His heart turned cold, he had once thought he completely refined Divine Bean Palace but the cruel truth was exposed here, Divine Bean Palace still continued secrets, its owner was still Genesis Lotus’ will all along.

This method was a secret to both the real Fang Di Chang and Fang Yuan’s clone, they were unaware of it.

How could a venerable’s Immortal Gu House be taken so easily?

Boom, Divine Bean Palace landed on the ground, right in the center of Emperor City as if it was overseeing the situation.

An endless amount of green light spread out from Divine Bean Palace, the light was as warm as water, it was not glaring at all, radiating half the sky.

The whole of Emperor City was covered in green light. Within the light, paintings in all the corners of Emperor City started to surface and show themselves.

These were all paintings of the lives of people, they portrayed the scene of Emperor City at certain points in time.

There were marketplaces, crowded with people, vendors vied for attention while selling a wide variety of goods.

There were the silhouettes of courtyards of several houses, and on the tall trees in the courtyard, a few birds’ nests had young chicks waiting to fly. Under the trees, there was a group of children playing and chasing each other, full of hope for the future.

There was a group going towards the bride’s house, they traveled from the north with the groom riding on a large horse, behind him was a mortal Gu House carriage[1]. This kind of mortal Gu House was usually only used during marriage ceremonies in Central Continent, and the surface of the carriage was decorated with colorful blooming flowers. Behind the carriage was a group of servants carrying the bride’s generous dowry.

There was a teahouse, the street in front of the entrance was crowded with pedestrians, and the upper level of the teahouse was filled with guests who were eating breakfast while looking through the windows, watching the street. The banners of the teahouse, used to attract customers, fluttered along with the slight morning breeze.

There was also a painting depicting dusk. At the corner of the street near the city gate, there was a stall where a blind old Gu Master, who perhaps owned a wisdom path Gu worm, was acting as a fortune teller, predicting the future prospects of a female customer.

...

Be it dusk or dawn, the city gates or the vibrant markets, the contented lifestyles of the people in Emperor City could be clearly seen in these respective paintings.

Undeniably, this was a painting path method filled with the profundities of human path.

Immortal killer move — Contented Lifestyle!

"Emperor City actually has such a hidden method from Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable?"

"Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had once lived in Emperor City as a mortal for some time... Don’t tell me that these rumors were actually true?"

"Painting path is truly profound!"

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were joyful.

Western Desert’s side felt that the situation was turning bad.

Divine Bean Palace was connected with Emperor City and formed a gigantic Immortal Gu House. The central area was Divine Bean Palace, while the periphery was the former Emperor City.

As the Earth Trench approached, the monstrous mouth opened, attempting to engulf Emperor City.

But Emperor City had transformed already, it floated in the sky without moving at all.

The countless people in the city cheered loudly.

They jumped in joy as they cheered and shouted, they had escaped a certain death situation!

A group of people were sobbing with joy, they knelt down on the ground and started to kowtow to the paintings.

Suddenly, many new paintings appeared all over the place, the content of the paintings were the scenes of these kowtowing people.

This killer move, contented lifestyle, was able to draw power from mortals to strengthen itself.

As the power of the paintings accumulated unceasingly, it was transmitted into Divine Bean Palace.

Genesis Lotus’ will controlled this power, he had a form grasp of Divine Bean Palace, he looked towards Fang Di Chang with a seemingly smiling face: "Fang Yuan, I have to thank you for bringing Divine Bean Palace here, you prevented a catastrophe for the mortals."

This was Genesis Lotus’s arrangement when he was alive! In the previous life, Divine Bean Palace was not brought here by Fang clan, thus Emperor City was destroyed. In this life, using Fang Yuan’s clone as the tool, Divine Bean Palace appeared to save the mortals.

As his feeling of danger increased, Fang Di Chang struggled intensely.

But a profound power restrained him and directly sent him into the painting of Divine Bean Palace.

Fang Di Chang’s vision changed, when he took a second look, he was already inside the painting.

The scene was quite familiar to him, he saw a grey-white land with deep pits in it, he had planted the immortal beans here back then.

Right now, most of the beans were used up in the fight, there were only some sprouts left here, slowly growing.

Fang Di Chang found that he could move again but it was useless, no matter how he tried, he could not escape from this painting.

"I am sealed within the painting!" Fang Di Chang thought about Flower Lady in his previous life, she had been suppressed in the painting that was in Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Fang Di Chang tried to connect to his main body but he found that he could not communicate with the outside world. He could not even sense treasure yellow heaven, all of his communicative methods were ineffective.

"Calm down, calm down, I still have my final hope!" Fang Di Chang pondered for a moment before activating the killer move karma divine tree.

Thankfully, this move had been modified already, once he activated it, Genesis Lotus’ will, which was outside the painting, had a change of expression.

This method was truly the only way to resist, even Genesis Lotus’ will could not stop him.

At this time, in Emperor City, the final competition of the Central Continent Refinement Path Convention was undergoing.

This great competition was finally at its last moment, the victor was about to be decided.

"I succeeded."

"Success!"

Hong Yi and Ye Fan spoke at the same time, they refined the Gu refinement at the same time.

To decide the victor, a time path Gu Master would need to inspect the specific timing of their completion.

But at this moment, jade light shined, the two were enveloped by it, dragged by it and flying far away.

This jade light was extremely fast, it brought Hong Yi and Ye Fan into Divine Bean Palace almost instantly.

Genesis Lotus’ will in Divine Bean Palace gritted his teeth, seeing this, the two people brought by the jade light were extremely close to Fang Yuan, they were either his pawns or his capable subordinates!

Genesis Lotus’ will quickly activated Divine Bean Palace, the light that carried Ye Fan and Hong Yi took a twist as it landed in a painting of Emperor City, both of them were sealed as well.

"What is going on?"

"Who won?"

Hong Yi and Ye Fan looked at each other with a dumbfounded expression, they were currently inside a painting created by the killer move contented lifestyle, all they saw was a peaceful and serene environment in front of them.

This made them feel extremely confused.

"Where in the world are we?"

"Aren’t there Gu Immortals fighting outside Emperor City? Why can’t we hear anything?"

"Am I dreaming?"

Hong Yi gave himself a hard pinch, he gritted his teeth as he felt a sharp pain!

[1] We call it a Chinese Sedan, otherwise known as Litter(Vehicle), google for image.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield.

Only a small portion of the five colored smoke remained, Di Zang Sheng roared as it used its mighty strength to tear the formation. Its mountain range-sized body was still charging forward.

"Stop it!"

"Another sub-formation has been broken!"

"How many sub-formations do we still have?"

"Only one is left!"

"Quickly construct the sub-formations!"

"We can’t, its destructive force is too great, we won’t make it in time!"

The nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation was in chaos. Many Central Continent Gu Immortals were stationed here but got restricted by the five colored smoke, be it controlling the formation or constructing sub-formations, they had to face backlashes. The more powerful the person and the more strength they used, the stronger the backlash would be.

Di Zang Sheng was extremely powerful, it could break the sub-formations so quickly with just its physical strength!

And it was constantly becoming stronger.

The five regions’ regional walls grew increasingly fragile, the earth veins of the five regions were gradually merging into one, the Earth Trench that spread to Emperor City was huge evidence. Earth Trenches had already spread to the central region of Central Continent, this meant that the merging of earth veins had reached the highest point.

Be it the other four regions or Central Continent, the rapid spread of new Earth Trenches led to countless tragedies and deaths, human emotions were surging.

Di Zang Sheng was different from other legendary immemorial beasts, it was born from the power of earth veins fused with the negative emotions of humans.

Right now, Central Continent’s earth vein expanded to become the five regions’ earth vein, Di Zang Sheng’s strength rose to five times of before. Negative emotions were also increasing wildly in the humans of all regions, Di Zang Sheng’s strength was further soaring because of this!

Duke Long was growing stronger continuously because of heavenly dragon’s last stand.

And Di Zang Sheng’s strength was growing at an even more horrifying speed than Duke Long’s. As such, even though Heavenly Court’s main force was here, using all their abilities and staking their lives, they were unable to stop Di Zang Sheng’s charge.

Heavenly Court’s main force was furious.

"We can’t let it move forward."

"We must stop it even if we die!"

"Damned Evil Dragon."

"Get out of my way, let me stop it!" Zhang Fei Xiong suddenly roared, becoming a giant with a bear head and human body. He attacked with no fear of death.

Bam.

A muffled sound echoed, he was directly crushed into meat paste, dying on the spot.

This rank eight transformation path great expert could only obstruct Di Zang Sheng for a brief moment.

"Zhang Fei Xiong..." The eyes of Heavenly Court’s immortals were filled with tears.

At the crucial moment, the Heavenly Court members showed no hesitation towards sacrificing themselves!

"Let me." At the next moment, Flesh Whip Immortal went forward. She transformed into an immemorial walking meat tree, which was her strongest form.

Bam.

Another muffled sound echoed, Flesh Whip Immortal was smashed to pieces, her blood splashing everywhere.

"Flesh Whip Immortal!" The group of immortals cried out.

When she was needed, she charged ahead without any regard for herself. A grand rank eight, a genius of her generation, could only stall it for a breath of time.

Even the Southern Border immortals were visibly moved.

What was urging them to do so?

Seemingly... Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had all been like this since ancient times.

Their spirit had never waned, it had instead been fostered and enhanced.

Heavenly Court had never lacked brave members!

Primordial Origin might have passed away, but his spirit did not!

"Unfortunately, your efforts are futile." At Wu Shuai’s will, countless clones flew out of Dragon Palace.

They were Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies!

These dream path clones turned into a huge vanguard army and flew in front of Di Zang Sheng, attacking the final sub-formation.

"Watch this!" Under the immortals’ expectant gaze, Feng Jin Huang stood up, her youthful face was filled with seriousness and solemness.

She borrowed the immortal formation’s strength to activate immortal killer move shatter dream.

Bam bam bam...

Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies exploded directly, becoming lumps of dream realms on the spot that rotated and moved slowly.

Immortal killer move — Pure Dream Reality Seeker Transformation!

Feng Jin Huang activated another method.

These restored dream realms transformed back to human form again, but this time, they belonged to Feng Jin Huang.

With Feng Jin Huang here, dream path was no longer Heavenly Court’s weakness.

"What about this then!" Before Heavenly Court’s force could relax, a large formation was sent out from Dragon Palace at this crucial moment.

Five regional limit formation!

Five colored smoke spouted once again and rapidly spread to cover the whole area.

Heavenly Court’s main force had bloodshot eyes as Zhu Que Er shouted hoarsely: "Destroy it!"

Vortex Space Boy and Jun Shen Guang had already moved towards the formation.

"Too late." Zhan Bu Du exclaimed with joy from inside the formation.

He did not let down everyone’s expectations, at this crucial moment, he finished repairing the whole formation and joined the battle again!

Five colored smoke expanded and covered the sub-formation.

Puff puff puff.

The Central Continent Gu Immortals were still setting up the formation, they were caught unprepared and coughed blood repeatedly, most fainted on the spot while some even died from the backlash!

By now, they were all exhausted and the five regional limit formation became their death warrant.

As for the Gu Immortals controlling the main formation, they were forced to ease their strength while resisting the injuries from the backlash.

Roar—!

Di Zang Sheng took the chance to attack, it directly smashed into the final sub-formation. The nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation was finally broken at this moment!

The formation collapsed, the obstruction disappeared, Hairy Foot Mountain that had been hidden by the formation got exposed.

This mountain was small and inconspicuous, it was as ordinary as could be but it held Infallible blessed land.

The Gu Immortals who had been controlling the main formation were lying on Hairy Foot Mountain.

The formation’s destruction inflicted serious injuries on these Gu Immortals again, almost none of them were in a clear-headed state.

Most of the Gu Immortals had already lost their lives, while a small portion were in a dazed state. Feng Jin Huang, who had been protected tightly, also had a pale face, she fell down to the ground in exhaustion and did not have any strength to escape.

At this moment, she could only look on as Di Zang Sheng came charging, she could do nothing but wait for death.

A strong sense of death suffocated Feng Jin Huang.

"Am I going to die?" At this moment, this young female Gu Master felt a sense of loss.

"Protect Feng Jin Huang!"

"Save her."

"No need to care about Infallible blessed land, the final batch of success dao marks have already been sent to Heavenly Court."

Heavenly Court’s main force staked all their energy to rescue Feng Jin Huang.

"Wishful thinking!" The Southern Border Gu Immortals laughed wildly as they used their strength to hold back these Heavenly Court Gu Immortals as much as possible.

Wu Yong’s unlimited wind blew while making heavy sounds. This giant tornado stalled a large number of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

Jun Shen Guang and Vortex Space Boy charged to the front again. One cultivated light path, another space path, their activation speed of killer moves was fastest.

Immortal killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

Dragon Palace withstood all sorts of explosions and forcibly attacked Jun Shen

Guang and Vortex Space Boy.

Jun Shen Guang and Vortex Space Boy finally could not dodge, they were carried away by dreamy light smoke the moment they were struck.

After capturing these two, Dragon Palace had reached its limits and could not capture any more people unless these two were killed.

"Destroy Hairy Foot Mountain and Infallible blessed land!" Wu Yong shouted as he took the lead to charge in front. He was not on Heavenly Court’s side and naturally was unaware that Heavenly Court had already completed the task. Even if he were to destroy Infallible blessed land now, it did not have any influence on the big picture.

"Don’t even think about it!" A lump of fire obstructed Wu Yong, from which Prince Feng Xian flew out.

"By you alone?!" Wu Yong’s eyes shined with sharp killing intent, he suddenly disappeared and when he appeared, he was already behind Prince Feng Xian.

Immortal killer move — Farewell Friend Wind!

"We became friends at first sight, yet you have to go now. This is farewell, my good friend, let me send you off." Wu Yong smiled lightly.

Hearing these words, even Prince Feng Xian, a person who infiltrated and went undercover in Northern Plains for many years, turned pale with fright.

Next, Prince Feng Xian lost control over his body and slowly floated towards the front.

While floating, his hair, clothes, and limbs started to disintegrate.

"Damn it! Farewell friend wind is actually in Wu Yong’s hand!" Prince Feng Xian shouted inwardly but was unable to articulate his words.

He could not move at all, none of his methods could be used.

With the final obstruction gone, Wu Yong charged down towards Hairy Foot Mountain like an eagle hunting its prey.

The remaining Heavenly Court members wanted to reinforce but were held back by others.

Wu Yong revealed awe-inspiring might, before he had even truly descended, the wind pressure from him was already as heavy as a mountain, Feng Jin Huang could not even budge from this pressure and slowly closed her eyes in despair.

But the pain that she anticipated did not manifest.

Feng Jin Huang slowly opened her eyes in doubt and saw a figure blocking Wu Yong in front of her like an impenetrable fortress.

The moment she saw this extremely familiar figure, she cried out in joy: "Father!"

The rank eight Gu Immortal who appeared at the crucial moment was none other than Feng Jiu Ge.

He wore a red and white robe, standing straight like a spear or sword.

Hearing Feng Jin Huang’s cry, Feng Jiu Ge turned sideways and looked at Feng Jin Huang. His eyes under his sharp brows revealed warmth and concern as well as confidence.

Feng Jiu Ge did not say anything and only nodded at Feng Jin Huang before facing Wu Yong.

But just that nod made Feng Jin Huang feel immense security and let her relax completely. This groundless comfort was completely baffling and had no basis, but Feng Jin Huang believed in it, this was her father Feng Jiu Ge.

Wu Yong’s eyes emitted dangerous light.

"Feng Jiu Ge," Wu Yong mumbled this name as he exposed his killing intent: "You stopped me from chasing Fang Yuan before, I will settle the score with you properly now."

He then prepared his killer move, trying to use farewell friend wind again.

Feng Jiu Ge did not dodge or evade, he remained floating in the air as he slowly sang with a smile on his face.

His voice was illusory and deep, it was filled with conflict and was very unique.

Wu Yong was unconsciously influenced by the song, his attack paused.

Initially, the song was like a small stream of water in the mountains, flowing slowly. Gradually, the stream turned into flowing lava that expanded the river’s width, in the range of mountains, like a wandering dragon.

"Damn it, what song is this?" Wu Yong’s expression changed intensely, he began to struggle with difficulty, he had been the first to be struck by the move because he was the nearest.

The song made Wu Yong feel unwell, it made him feel like he had returned to when he was young, he was always shrouded under his mother Wu Du Xiu’s shadow and had received her strict teaching and restrictions. During that time, he could only receive her lessons obediently.

At the next moment, Wu Yong’s eyes opened even wider.

The farewell friend wind killer move he had used earlier on Prince Feng Xian had actually stopped.

"What song is this? It can actually break farewell friend wind?" Wu Yong was shaken.

Prince Feng Xian felt a different sensation.

He felt like he had returned to the past when he had disguised his identity and finally cultivated to rank eight in Northern Plains. He had a grotto-heaven and finally had a feeling of joy, no longer having to endure the overbearing attitude of Northern Plains’ super force Gong tribe.

Under the effect of destiny song, the Southern Border immortals were weakened and dispirited, on the contrary, Heavenly Court’s side felt free and elated, their condition picked up and their injuries recovered.

Destiny song’s ability was extremely comprehensive, what was even more amazing was that it could distinguish between allies and enemies. This was something that the previous life’s destiny song could never compare to.

Even Wu Shuai and the rest were constrained by the song, only Di Zang Sheng roared and forcibly endured the song, still continuing to charge forward!

Feng Jiu Ge concentrated on Di Zang Sheng. Di Zang Sheng’s body was so huge that it almost covered the sky and earth, just its dragon head was as big as a mountain. Feng Jiu Ge, in comparison, was as minuscule as an ant.

But at the next moment, the effects of the song concentrated and focused on Di Zang Sheng.

Di Zang Sheng felt like it had returned to the time when it was suppressed in Hidden Dragon Cave; it was in a dark cage, unable to regain freedom even though it had a thousand desires and endless strength.

Helplessness.

Di Zang Sheng started to slow down.

It wanted to roar and cry out, but it ended up letting out whimpers.

The immortals were shocked.

This scene was too shocking.

Feng Jiu Ge defeated Di Zang Sheng in one move!

This was the strongest legendary immemorial desolate beast of this age!! In the previous life, it could fight Duke Long who was at his final moments of life, if he had not captured Dragon Palace, it would have been impossible for him to handle Di Zang Sheng so easily.

"This is my personal creation, destiny song. It has just been completed, please feel free to critique it." Feng Jiu Ge continued to sing while transmitting his voice.

"Destiny song!!" The immortals, be they enemies or allies, engraved the name of this killer move deep in their hearts.

The moment this move appeared, it became famous.

From today onwards, everyone in the world would know of it!

Destiny was constantly moving, it had ups and downs. Who would not have low points in their life? Even Fang Yuan, even the venerables had times when they were at their lowest points. Destiny song could bring out the lows and highs of the destiny of all living beings.

At times, even heaven and earth will help you, at times, even heroes cannot emerge unscathed!

Feng Jiu Ge’s ninth song, sound path rank eight immortal killer move — Destiny Song!

"This is troublesome." Wu Shuai’s expression was extremely heavy.

"He actually created the complete destiny song. As expected of Feng Jiu Ge." Zhan Bu Du sighed heavily.

This battle situation was transmitted to Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei was naturally overjoyed.

Feng Jiu Ge had been in a state of comprehension, he took the initiative and requested to explore the River of Time. Qin Ding Ling inspected his luck and saw his fortuitous encounter, so she fully supported it. Fairy Zi Wei had thus secretly arranged a time path Immortal Gu House to send Feng Jiu Ge to the River of Time quietly.

Fairy Zi Wei believed Qin Ding Ling’s words and she also saw Feng Jiu Ge’s potential, but she had never imagined Feng Jiu Ge would actually give her such a huge surprise!

Rank eight immortal killer move destiny song, just this move alone raised Feng Jiu Ge’s strength to the peak, he became one of the strongest people in the world.

Heavenly Court wanted to restore rank nine fate Gu and seize fortune rivalling heaven Gu to try to refine rank ten destiny Gu. Longevity Heaven also had the same plan, but their target was set lower, they wanted to use the damaged fate Gu to refine rank nine destiny Gu.

But both sides had not expected that ahead of them, a Gu Immortal actually created the initial draft of the Immortal Gu recipe of destiny Gu!

Immortal killer moves could be condensed into Immortal Gu recipes.

The best example was Fang Yuan’s myriad self Immortal Gu, the refined myriad self Immortal Gu recipe had been derived from the killer move myriad self.

It was no exaggeration to say that this move alone allowed Feng Jiu Ge’s name to be written down in history.

Worthy of a Dao Guardian!

Such overwhelming talent, even Fairy Zi Wei felt stunned and dazzled, she admitted her inferiority.

"Father, you are amazing!" Feng Jin Huang stared at Feng Jiu Ge’s back with her eyes wide open, feelings of idolization and love almost overflowed.

The girl’s heart was filled with pride and joy at this moment.

"Yes, my father has never disappointed me."

At this moment, Feng Jin Huang was filled with bliss as she cheered inwardly: "Father, you are most amazing, your broad shoulders will forever be my most reliable support!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1943 Fang Yuan‟s Strongest Offense!

Heavenly Court’s battlefield.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Roaring Wave.

Immortal killer move — Body Flicker.

Duke Long’s figure suddenly appeared on the right of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Too close!

Almost at the same time, the daybreak swords that were floating around Myriad Year Flying Warship swarmed in and submerged Duke Long.

Countless dragon shaped tattoos floated around Duke Long’s body, blocking the powerful sword attacks.

This was Duke Long’s main defensive killer move — Nine Dragons Protection.

Nine was just a general number implying countless tattoos. This was a rare passive defensive method and usually stayed hidden on Duke Long’s skin, but when there was an attack, it activated automatically and did not need Duke Long’s wills or thoughts to be maintained.

Duke Long forcibly withstood the daybreak swords’ attacks with this move, then clenched his hands into fists.

Immortal killer move — World Shaking Dragon Hammer!

Boom!

The dragon hammer’s strike directly sent Myriad Year Flying Warship flying.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was sent flying, but it stopped suddenly. The surrounding space crumbled like countless pieces of glass. These glass pieces were extremely sharp and as long as they touched Myriad Year Flying Warship, they would leave behind deep marks, killing many Gu worms. Fang Yuan, who was standing on the deck, also got a cut on his cheek.

This was Cang Xuan Zi’s ability, she used space path killer moves to set up countless traps everywhere in the battlefield, they had extremely high power!

But this scene only flashed in Fang Yuan’s mind, it had not happened yet.

This was time path killer move — Three Breaths Future Vision!

Three breaths future vision was an investigative killer move that came from Hei Fan’s true inheritance, it allowed the Gu Immortal to see three breaths into the future related to them.

Due to Fang Yuan’s dao mark amplification, its power had increased by fifteen hundred times and thus could show its effect even when battling an expert at the level of Duke Long. However, this move was essentially only rank seven, so it did not show effect every time, it succeeded sometimes but failed at other times as well.

At the next moment.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Roaring Wave.

Immortal killer move — Body Flicker.

Duke Long’s figure suddenly appeared on the right of Myriad Year Flying Warship, just like the scene displayed by three breaths future vision.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly and controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship to move far away, brushing past the countless space path traps.

"What a pity!" Cang Xuan Zi sighed deeply in her heart, just a little and Fang Yuan would have triggered the space path traps.

She was floating in the air without any obvious movement, but she was secretly and quietly forming and laying space path traps.

After fighting Fang Yuan for a long time, the battle experiences that had remained deep within her memories were coming to life and her methods became more experienced.

After Cang Xuan Zi and Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable made a secret agreement three hundred thousand years ago, she had moved to Heavenly Court and lived a peaceful life, never having to fight again. But before this, Cang Xuan Zi’s name and the legendary immemorial beast’s position were personally established by her!

Fang Yuan controlled Myriad Year Flying Warship and dodged while observing Cang Xuan Zi.

Although Cang Xuan Zi’s battle strength was recovering, her combat style was obvious. She retained the habits of fighting as an immemorial desolate plant; her battle style leaned towards staying at one spot and attacking with long ranged attacks, using space path methods to create distance from her enemies before laying space path traps.

Her nature could be seen from her combat style, she liked to fish patiently, this also meant she was not aggressive and would not take risks.

Although many of Cang Xuan Zi’s methods were still mysterious, Fang Yuan had already begun to understand the details of Cang Xuan Zi. On the contrary, Duke Long was still unfathomable and not easy to comprehend.

Fang Yuan fought Duke Long in the previous life and he also knew Duke Long’s methods for the most part, but Duke Long’s combat style was ever-changing, he defended at times while becoming aggressive at other times. He suddenly attacked and evaded at times, making others unable to see a clear pattern.

This combat attainment was not just due to Duke Long’s battle experience but also his innate talent!

As far as Fang Yuan was concerned, defeating Cang Xuan Zi might be difficult but he had a high chance. But he was still unable to see even the slightest chance of defeating Duke Long till now.

"Unless I can break Duke Long’s defensive killer move!" Fang Yuan analyzed inwardly.

Duke Long’s main defensive killer move was nine dragons protection. Fang Yuan was collecting information during the battle and breaking it down.

But his gains were minimal.

It was extremely difficult to break a strong enemy’s killer move during a battle.

Compared to nine dragons protection, Fang Yuan wanted to break heavenly dragon’s last stand much more. But this killer move left no trace, Fang Yuan did not even have a way to gather its information.

Based on his original expectation, Steal Life was the best method to deal with Duke Long, but it showed no effect even after hitting...

"Wait, I seem to have neglected something?" Suddenly, a light of inspiration flashed past Fang Yuan’s mind.

But when he wanted to explore this inspiration, it was interrupted by an attack.

Fang Yuan did not even have to look to know that this was an attack from Demon Judgment Board.

This rank eight Immortal Gu House was truly an annoyance!

It did not have any weakness, its speed was so fast that it did not lose to Myriad Year Flying Warship and had extremely powerful defense. If it was one versus one, Demon Judgment Board could never be Fang Yuan’s match, but it would definitely consume some time.

Theft path methods were the best way to deal with this Immortal Gu House, but it was not easy to use them in front of Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi.

Fang Yuan had currently transformed into the immemorial year monkey which coordinated well with Myriad Year Flying Warship. If he transformed his dao marks to theft path, his battle strength would fall greatly, giving Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi an opportunity instead.

What made Fang Yuan even more wary was that even if he were to transform into a theft path immemorial desolate beast and used great thief ghost hand, his attack might not hit Demon Judgment Board. Even if it hit, it might not be able to steal Immortal Gu. Fang Yuan’s luck path superiority was already dealt for most part by Qin Ding Ling, Demon Judgment Board moreover had Gu Yue Fang Zheng who restrained Fang Yuan in terms of luck.

So, theft path methods were not the correct methods to change the situation.

"Fang Yuan..." At this time, Fang Zheng who was in charge of Demon Judgment Board had a complicated mood.

Could Fang Yuan be considered his own brother?

No.

Fang Yuan’s physical body had changed, his soul was also of an otherworldly demon.

Then, was he a stranger?

No.

The memories of childhood could not be erased, they had once been in each other’s company.

Anger?

There was.

Fang Yuan toyed around with him and disregarded his life, he definitely had a sinister scheme for putting him in Lang Ya blessed land.

Hatred?

Definitely.

Fang Yuan killed his own clan and had been the shadow and nightmare of Fang Zheng’s childhood.

What else beyond these?

Having experienced many things, Fang Zheng had slowly begun to understand Fang Yuan and even felt some admiration for Fang Yuan.

People often had to compromise in this world. Fang Zheng had started realizing his shallowness and gained an understanding of himself. The so-called A-grade aptitude was just a kind of narcissism, Fang Zheng had already become mature.

Besides understanding and admiration, Fang Zheng even felt a trace of gratitude towards Fang Yuan.

He was grateful to Fang Yuan for creating obstacles for him, for giving him suffering and hardships. These were all wealth that helped Fang Zheng grow to what he was now. If it were not for the hardships during the continental war in Lang Ya blessed land, how could Fang Zheng have merged the various cultivation experiences of the past Demon Judgment Board Lords and created the killer move blood-kin heart revenge?

Fang Zheng had once dreamed of a day where he could fight Fang Yuan and take revenge with his own hands.

But now that the moment really came, Fang Zheng felt a lot different from what he had imagined; he neither felt the pleasure of taking revenge nor felt satisfaction.

His thoughts were complicated, very complicated.

"Duke Long, Cang Xuan Zi, Fang Zheng, and Qin Ding Ling, besides them, there is also Fairy Zi Wei." Fang Yuan’s expression turned increasingly serious as he received attacks from all sides.

As Duke Long continued to grow stronger and the coordination of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals became more tight, Fang Yuan’s thoughts were almost fully used to maintain this battle.

His ability to analyze the whole situation was continuously falling.

Be it activating killer moves or controlling Myriad Year Flying Warship, both expended a lot of energy. Fang Yuan also needed to be aware of the overall situation, to keep an eye on all the battlefields, and secretly influence the Gu Immortals of other regions.

In fact, Duke Long’s group was also in the same state. The battle was becoming more intense, powerful and complicated killer moves involving many Gu worms were activated more frequently, which demanded more attention and control.

"If Fairy Zi Wei recovers, I will be at a disadvantage whether she joins the battle or takes charge of the overall situation." Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with coldness.

"Hahaha!" Duke Long suddenly laughed as he got the latest report of the battle in Hairy Foot Mountain, "Fang Yuan, no matter how many times you are reborn, it is useless. Use all your abilities, otherwise it will be too late."

Fang Yuan’s expression was grim as he also learned of the recent battle situation.

In the Emperor City battlefield, his clone Fang Di Chang was lost and Divine Bean Palace had defected to the enemy’s side. In the Hairy Foot Mountain battlefield, Feng Jiu Ge appeared and used the extremely powerful destiny song, which even made Di Zang Sheng fall into a disadvantage!

Heavenly Court’s foundation was truly too deep.

Fang Yuan was not only fighting against Duke Long’s group, he was also contending against Heavenly Court’s millions of years of accumulation!

The situation in the outside world was not dependable, as such, all the pressure was on Fang Yuan’s shoulders.

Fang Yuan’s gaze suddenly turned sharp like lightning: "Indeed, I cannot hold back anymore."

He was not able to find Duke Long’s weakness, but with the situation forcing him, even if there was no weakness, Fang Yuan had to use his full strength.

Myriad Year Flying Warship rose to the air, rapidly creating distance as Fang Yuan began preparing a killer move.

Duke Long did not give chase, he remained standing in the air, looking above with concentration. His expression looked like he was facing a great enemy, he no longer looked down on Fang Yuan.

Cang Xuan Zi took a deep breath and was extremely vigilant.

Qin Ding Ling, Fang Zheng, as well as Fairy Zi Wei who was recuperating at the edge of the battlefield fixed their gazes on Fang Yuan.

Even Bing Sai Chuan, who was crazily attacking the refinement path formation and bombarding Heaven Overseeing Tower, split a portion of his attention towards Fang Yuan’s every move.

Everyone was aware the victory or defeat in the following battle could very likely determine the outcome of the whole situation.

Immortal killer move — Twelve Zodiac battle formation.

Fang Yuan first summoned twelve immemorial year beasts, this method had already been revealed before.

But different from before, the Twelve Zodiac battle formation did not condense into a giant monster but transformed into a golden helm.

The helm was like a carriage wheel, it had six spokes and twelve handles; each handle had a carving of a year beast.

The Twelve Zodiac battle helm flew towards Myriad Year Flying Warship and merged into it rapidly. The dazzling silver Myriad Year Flying Warship suddenly had a large golden image that looked like flying sand, transforming at every moment. The golden image transformed into a coiling dragon at one time, a giant tiger at other time, a crowing rooster, or a ramming ox...

The twelve immemorial year beasts combined perfectly with Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Fang Yuan’s previous concept was fully displayed to the world at this moment.

"He actually merged an ancient battle formation into an Immortal Gu House perfectly!" Qin Ding Ling’s eyes opened wide.

Fang Zheng looked on, dumbfounded.

"Such amazing talent!" Even Duke Long could not help but praise.

He had never seen this sight, Fang Yuan was the first to achieve this in history!

Although it was said that ancient battle formations and Immortal Gu Houses were immortal killer moves in essence, no one had succeeded in combining these two killer moves prior to Fang Yuan!

"Careful, it is attacking!" Cang Xuan Zi shouted with a trace of panic. Myriad Year Flying Warship was letting out a frightening aura that even shook her.

Immortal killer move — Daybreak Torrent!

Myriad Year Flying Warship swooped down, leaving behind a trail of sonic booms.

It was already an outstanding rank eight Immortal Gu House, the Twelve Zodiac battle formation that merged with it even possessed a mighty strength that could match Duke Long’s. After they merged, their strength combined to a horrifying level!

Duke Long roared as he unleashed a qi wall.

Myriad Year Flying Warship’s momentum was slightly slowed before it broke through Duke Long’s qi wall.

Duke Long frowned as he activated qi wall again.

Myriad Year Flying Warship broke the qi wall again.

Duke Long erected the qi wall again while Myriad Year Flying Warship broke it again. After five times, Myriad Year Flying Warship’s momentum finally fell sharply.

Fang Yuan sneered, immortal killer move — Myriad Year Hunting!

At the next moment, the River of Time phantom under Myriad Year Flying Warship enlarged suddenly, countless year beasts surged out like a huge tide!

The sky-covering year beast army began attacking the immortal graveyard like a giant tsunami that engulfed everything.

The large army had countless year beasts, with large numbers of ancient year beasts, and even immemorial year beasts were not in a small quantity.

What was even more terrifying was that this year beast army moved to Fang Yuan’s will!

"Terrifying! Just this move alone can let Fang Yuan attack any super force in the world by himself!"

"Does he want to summon all the year beasts in the River of Time?"

"This is almost like a copy of call of the ancient! It is just that while Red Lotus’s method summons past Gu Immortal experts, Fang Yuan is summoning the year beasts in the River of Time!"

"But didn’t myriad year hunting only attract year beasts and had no ability to control them?"

"This is probably the qualitative change caused by the merging of Twelve Zodiac battle formation!"

Heavenly Court’s side was shaken.

Fang Yuan’s trump cards were truly peerless, he just used one and it showed towering might. Duke Long, Cang Xuan Zi and the rest immediately felt troubled.

The scale of this year beast army was too large, moreover, Fang Yuan was still summoning them with no end in sight.

The year beast army scattered and spread everywhere like a blossoming flower, attacking every corner of Heavenly Court; Heavenly Court’s side, which lacked manpower, was unable to defend properly.

Cang Xuan Zi clenched her teeth as she continuously activated space path killer moves to kill as many year beasts as possible in an attempt to ease the current pressure.

"Be careful!!" Duke Long suddenly shouted.

"Huh?" Cang Xuan Zi seemingly saw the image of a small knife, her pupils shrunk to the size of pins as she reacted but it was too late, she was already struck!

"How is this possible... so fast? I clearly arranged..."

Cang Xuan Zi gazed at Fang Yuan in incredulity. Her body stiffened, a bloody hole appeared on her forehead, piercing through the back of her head. The injury was filled with dense time path dao marks that even a legendary immemorial beast’s self-recovery could not regenerate.

Immortal killer move — Time Cutting Edge!

This was the supreme method of Central Continent’s Bo clan, once this knife was shot out, it would not miss, anyone hit by it would die. It had once shaken the whole Central Continent with terror.

The killer move’s contents were extremely complex and its steps were ever-changing. Among Fang Yuan’s methods, it was no doubt the number one in terms of complexity.

The more absurd thing was its activation conditions, its activation time could not cross three breaths. For this, Fang Yuan had to use the supplementary killer move shrink time every time he activated this move.

Its side-effect was also terrifying, every time it was used, a portion of the memories related to it would disappear. It was like an eraser, erasing the enemy while consuming itself.

After Cang Xuan Zi was struck, Fang Yuan’s mind immediately turned blank, most of the memories of time cutting edge turned vague.

"At this rate, after I attack Duke Long with it, I will completely lose this move." Fang Yuan’s mind was as calm as the snowy plains.

He glanced at Duke Long.

Without realizing, Duke Long retreated several steps.

Boom!

A loud sound resounded as Cang Xuan Zi fell to the ground. Her body returned to its original form in mid-air, turning into a giant green vine.

This green vine once held the sky and was like an extremely eye-catching heavenly pillar, but now it collapsed in the immortal graveyard without moving and had no life force.

The damage to the immortal graveyard from this crash was much more than the sum of all previous damage, but Duke Long did not care about this. His gaze was fixed on Fang Yuan.

He needed to concentrate fully to have a chance at blocking the time cutting edge that was amplified by at least fifteen hundred times!

In Demon Judgment Board, Fang Zheng’s mouth was opened wide and his head was soaked with sweat as he looked at the vast heaven vine that had collapsed on the ground.

Qin Ding Ling who was behind him was rigid like a statue.

"If this move had struck Demon Judgment Board, could we block it?" The same doubt flashed in the two’s minds but neither had the confidence to say they could defend against it!

This move was too horrifying, one move and it was unknown whether Cang Xuan Zi was still alive, her aura could not be detected.

"Don’t be terrified, he used myriad year hunting’s aura to conceal this move. If he used this move alone, its aura would be too grand and would not be hidden." At the crucial moment, Fairy Zi Wei’s words spread throughout the battlefield.

"As expected of a wisdom path great expert." Fang Yuan snorted coldly as the flaw was exposed.

Duke Long’s expression eased a little.

But at the next moment, Fang Yuan left Myriad Year Flying Warship and charged forward alone.

"He is going all out!" Duke Long’s heart shook.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Beings Assimilation Transformation.

Immortal killer move——Immemorial Sword Dragon!

Roar—!

Fang Yuan immediately transformed into a giant dragon.

Immemorial sword dragon!

The dragon was over three hundred meters in length, its two horns were long and sharp, its eyes were silver-white, its scales were pure-white and emitted dense sword intent.

All of Fang Yuan’s dao marks were transformed into sword path dao marks.

And everyone knew that sword path’s superiority lied in offense!

At this moment, Fang Yuan finally showed his strongest attacking form.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Roar—!

The tyrannical immemorial dragon roared as it swung its tail and moved, its speed was so fast that it left behind a white afterimage at its original spot.

Bam.

Demon Judgment Board was hit head-on and fell like a meteor.

Duke Long immediately rushed forward to reinforce it.

Fang Yuan sneered and rose to the air suddenly, leaving behind an afterimage.

In the air, he suddenly changed from an extremely active state to extremely still and his aura erupted.

Sword path killer move — Triple Layered Sword Wave!

The offensive killer move that was amplified by at least fifteen hundred times had power that was completely different from the past.

Giant waves surged and filled the battlefield. Every drop of the silver-white waves had sword path’s strength and was extremely sharp.

The sword waves did not target Demon Judgment Board or Duke Long but attacked the immortal graveyard.

From the start, Fang Yuan’s main target was the immortal graveyard.

Duke Long clenched his teeth as he used self-moving dragon qi wall.

The qi wall could only hold back the sword waves for eight breaths of time before crumbling to pieces.

Duke Long let out a muffled groan as blood flowed out of his nose.

He wanted to continue using the qi wall killer move but the towering sword waves had already reached the immortal graveyard.

Heavenly Court could defend with ease earlier because of Cang Xuan Zi’s space path methods that could shorten and lengthen distance. This gave Duke Long enough time to repeatedly activate qi wall to put up defense.

But now that Cang Xuan Zi’s vitality was gone and was lying dead on the ground, there was no more protection of space path methods, Duke Long had no time to activate the qi wall killer move again.

Duke Long was not a rank nine but a rank eight like Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan’s dao marks far surpassed his and he could only count on heavenly dragon’s last stand. But regretfully, till now, although Duke Long was becoming stronger constantly, there was still some gap between him and Fang Yuan. Especially when Fang Yuan revealed his trump cards and showed his strongest attacking form.

"No—!" Duke Long let out a sad and furious roar as he looked at the sword waves engulf and sweep through the immortal graveyard.

The Gu Immortals sleeping in the immortal graveyard could not resist at all, they were sliced into pieces by the sword waves.

Even the enormous vast heaven vine was being cut down repeatedly by the extremely sharp sword waves. Cang Xuan Zi did not wake up during the whole process, it seemed she was truly dead!

Demon Judgment Board rose to the air but Fang Zheng was dazed: "He really did it, he destroyed the immortal graveyard!"

"The immortal graveyard!!!" Compared to Fang Zheng, Fairy Zi Wei and Qin Ding Ling had a greater reaction. They were veteran rank eights and genuine members of Heavenly Court.

The immortal graveyard was not just an important area of Heavenly Court, it was even more a spiritual sacred land to them, it was defiled by Fang Yuan now. Countless predecessors sleeping inside were killed like chickens without being able to resist!

"Fang Yuan, I want you to die!" Qin Ding Ling cried out in sorrow.

"We have failed you all, seniors..." With a loud thud, Old Man Zheng Yuan fell as he knelt on the ground in Central Great Hall, crying silently.

Fairy Zi Wei felt her entire body turning numb, the immortal graveyard was heavily damaged, and as the leader and planner of Heavenly Court, she could not shirk this responsibility!

"It’s me, I am too incompetent..." Tears of sorrow trickled down Fairy Zi Wei’s face.

In Imperfection Regret Pavilion, the images began to fluctuate intensely.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s silhouette wanted to make a move but was firmly held up by Limitless Demon Venerable’s silhouette, she could only stare at Fang Yuan slaughtering Heavenly Court’s members and destroying the immortal graveyard.

Shock and anger filled Star Constellation’s silhouette’s face, her gaze was icy cold as she looked at her opponent: "Good, very good!"

Limitless’ silhouette smiled: "This is pretty good. Back when I invaded Heavenly Court, I also wanted to destroy the immortal graveyard. But bearing in mind that the scale of variant humans at that time was still enormous, and thinking for the humans, I did not make a move."

"Hmph, so what if you destroyed the immortal graveyard or even the whole of Heavenly Court. As long as you don’t destroy fate Gu, with heaven’s will continuing to favor humans, Central Continent can still establish a second Heavenly Court, or third or fourth immortal graveyard!" Star Constellation’s silhouette retorted.

"You are right." Limitless Demon Venerable’s silhouette heaved a sigh: "Fate Gu is the fundamental cause of your Heavenly Court, as long as it remains, your Heavenly Court will stand erect no matter how many losses you suffer. Instead, the more you suffer defeat, the tougher you will become, old will be eliminated and new blood will be brought in, you will be closer to the tides of the new era."

Eras changed constantly and Gu Immortal cultivation also developed without stopping.

The prosperity and decline of qi path and strength path was proof of this.

Limitless Demon Venerable had not touched the immortal graveyard back then because of this consideration. It was better to spare the qi path and strength path Gu Immortals who were left behind by the eras than let Heavenly Court bounce back by absorbing large amounts of rule path, wisdom path, and other paths’ Gu Immortals who would emerge in response to this.

"I am really curious, how long can you last over there now that the immortal graveyard is destroyed?" Limitless’ silhouette said with a smile.

Star Constellation’s silhouette could no longer be indifferent: "You are disregarding the big picture and bringing demise to the rule of humanity! You are unworthy of being a human venerable."

Limitless’ silhouette smiled coldly: "My main body was bound by this responsibility back then, but now... hasn’t humanity already achieved this goal? Humans should now pursue an even greater goal. You should know what I mean."

Star Constellation’s silhouette narrowed her eyes, falling into a rare silence.

"Fang Yuan, I will tear out your tendons and burn you to ashes!!" Duke Long roared, his anger and hatred had accumulated to an extreme level and he charged towards Fang Yuan without regarding anything.

Fang Yuan dodged and did not fight with Duke Long, he continued to activate triple layered sword wave.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The immortal graveyard was completely covered by sword waves, the sword waves even dug into the ground, not letting go of any hibernating immortal.

Heavenly Court’s millions of years of accumulation was destroyed overnight!

"Ahhhhh!" Duke Long’s hair was a mess, his face was distorted, and his eyes were bloodshot.

Every attack to the immortal graveyard was like a strike to his heart; he was bleeding internally and overwhelmed with grief.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Offspring.

At this critical juncture, Duke Long roared with fury; his purple dragon scales flew out and mixed with his blood, transforming into dragonman Gu Immortals.

They were of all shapes and sizes, with all kinds of appearances. There were rank six, rank seven, and even rank eight dragonmen.

Duke Long was not an enslavement path Gu Immortal but he had a similar killer move.

"This is a transformation path killer move that contains human path profundity!" Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk as he ridiculed: "Duke Long, oh Duke Long, you massacred the dragonman race back then, so the reason was to refine them into a killer move. Hahaha, how is your action any different from a demonic immortal? You disregarded morals and ethics, you trampled on your own blood and kin. Not only did you kill all your children and grandchildren, you even refined them into puppets to fight for you!!"

Duke Long did not refute Fang Yuan’s accusation, deep sadness showed in his eyes as he charged towards Fang Yuan again.

At the same time, the large number of dragonman Gu Immortals spread like a blooming flower, blocking the sword waves as well as countless year beasts.

At the level of Duke Long, there were indeed no apparent weaknesses.

A huge chaotic battle unfolded in Heavenly Court.

Demon Judgment Board was paving paths of blood through the year beast army. But the atmosphere inside Demon Judgment Board was stifling, Qin Ding Ling and Fang Zheng were both silent.

Duke Long’s dragon offspring killer move was indeed using the members of the dragonman race, Fang Yuan’s accusation was not false. It was no wonder Duke Long rarely used this move, he was forced to use it now because of Fang Yuan.

Many dragonman Gu Immortals surrounded the immemorial sword dragon.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly, he had already activated triple layered sword wave, he now activated another immortal killer move, golden thread sword.

Immediately, the sword dragon’s body turned hazy and its every scale emitted soft yellow light.

Each scale suddenly shot out a golden thread.

The number of scales on the immemorial sword dragon was the number of golden threads shot out, they were incomparably fast.

The golden threads pierced every obstacle in their way, the encircling dragonman Gu Immortals resembled honeycombs as the countless golden threads passed them.

Bam bam bam...

Suffering such a heavy injury, these dragonman Gu Immortals were unable to maintain their shape as they detonated softly, returning to scales and blood droplets.

Fang Yuan cleared all the enemies in his surroundings, the sword waves which he had activated just before were still spreading as he rode the waves down.

The immortal graveyard was already wiped out, the greatest variable was destroyed, and now, Fang Yuan charged towards Duke Long.

Cang Xuan Zi had no vitality, her vine body was also in a miserable state. Demon Judgment Board was unable to fight Fang Yuan by itself, if Duke Long fell, who could stop Fang Yuan?

Immortal killer move — Five Finger Fist Heart Sword!

Dragon claws clenched tightly, Fang Yuan’s aura suddenly fell to almost a negligible level.

However, warning signs were ringing in Duke Long’s mind. He shot forward, his purple-gold dragon-shaped qi flickered constantly and his figure appeared and disappeared, moving in all directions as he tried to evade crazily.

First sword!

Fang Yuan’s dragon pupils let out a strange light as a sword light shot out of his claws.

Fast! Fast! Fast!

The sword light’s speed was beyond belief.

Duke Long had just seen the light shoot out of Fang Yuan’s claws when he found the sword light was already in front of him.

In an almost impossible situation, he forcibly turned his body to one side.

The sword light brushed past him.

Blood splattered, a large cut spread from his left shoulder to his left chest. The cut was clean; bones, scales and even a part of the left lung were gone completely.

Five finger fist heart sword was truly horrifying!

If this had struck Duke Long’s head, it would have been severed immediately.

Since the start of the battle, this was the first time Duke Long felt a fatal threat. It had been a long time since he felt such a feeling.

Duke Long gave a loud roar and shot towards Fang Yuan like lightning.

Fang Yuan applauded inwardly.

Every sword in five finger fist heart sword required time to prepare. Duke Long saw through this weakness and took the chance to attack.

Fang Yuan’s dragon body moved as he retreated, trying to pull some distance from Duke Long.

Sword path’s offensive advantage was obvious, if it were an ordinary opponent, Fang Yuan could directly smash through them. But Duke Long was an extremely powerful expert, he could not be careless.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan’s immemorial sword dragon form similarly possessed an advantage in speed. Duke Long tried his best in chasing but found that he could not shorten the distance easily.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Gate!

A dragon gate appeared, there were two red pillars by the side with a dragon coiling around each of them, their upper body left the pillars and gathered in the middle, forming the top of the gate. The dragon mouths were open with a radiant dragon pearl in each of them, forming a scene of two dragons and two pearls.

Two dragon gates appeared simultaneously, one appeared in front of Duke Long while the other appeared behind Fang Yuan.

Duke Long disappeared into the dragon gate in front of him and appeared from the dragon gate behind Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s mind rang with warning signals as he dodged immediately, but Duke Long used qi engulfing mountains and rivers to delay his speed.

Immortal killer move — Chaotic Dragon Fist!

At the next moment, Duke Long’s fists smashed upon immemorial sword dragon’s head and kept on punching it, forcefully knocking Fang Yuan down to the immortal graveyard.

Bam.

The immemorial sword dragon crashed fiercely on the ground, dust, soil and stones flew everywhere.

Although the immemorial sword dragon struggled to raise its head, its claws were still intact and it continued to shoot the second sword light.

Five finger fist heart sword, second sword!

Duke Long was already on maximum alert. The moment Fang Yuan moved, he immediately dodged and appeared on Fang Yuan’s dragon back.

The second sword struck air, brushing past the dragon body and piercing the sky, forming a vacuum along the way.

Five finger fist heart sword’s sword lights were extremely fast but they could not curve. Duke Long might not be able to ward off the sword light but he could dodge. It was somewhat difficult to dodge the sword light, but he could observe Fang Yuan’s movement and judge when he was going to use the sword light, and thereby, dodge in advance.

Undoubtedly, five finger fist heart sword was an extremely powerful killer move and it had a huge advantage compared to time cutting edge — it would not be forgotten.

But because of Duke Long’s proper battle tactic, five finger fist heart sword became useless, Fang Yuan’s immemorial sword dragon had to face Duke Long in close combat.

In just a dozen or so breaths of time, Fang Yuan had already received many heavy strikes from Duke Long’s dragon fists.

There had never been a strongest Immortal Gu or killer move, only Gu Immortal!

Five finger fist heart sword’s most ideal environment was when the first sword was released. Fang Yuan was quite far from Duke Long and could use it for long-range attack while he was in an invulnerable position. Even if Duke Long’s reaction was extremely keen, he would be hard-pressed to defend against them and every sword could push him to a near-death state.

But when Duke Long closed in the distance and forced close combat, Fang Yuan’s dragon body instead became the obstacle for the sword lights and even became a cover for Duke Long.

Looking over the battle, Duke Long could be said to have restrained Fang Yuan’s five finger fist heart sword by using dragon gate. Without some distance, there was no space to effectively use five finger fist heart sword.

So, after the second sword, Fang Yuan immediately stopped using five finger fist heart sword and turned to golden thread sword.

Duke Long saw Fang Yuan’s dragon scales beginning to flicker with yellow light, he immediately chose to retreat far away with dragon gate.

Countless golden threads covered every inch around Fang Yuan, but Duke Long had already retreated.

But there was no issue, Fang Yuan once again pulled apart some distance between him and Duke Long, he could continue using five finger fist heart sword.

Duke Long’s situation turned dangerous, he had no choice but to get near Fang Yuan again and attempt close combat.

When he approached Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan would need to cancel five finger fist heart sword and change to other methods to fight Duke Long.

"This demon has modified five finger fist heart sword to this degree! He can casually cancel the killer move with no backlash. Or should I say that he has modified every sword strike into an individual move." Duke Long’s thoughts moved rapidly.

Five finger fist heart sword was Bo Qing’s trump card, how could Heavenly Court not know of it?

Duke Long knew a lot of information and it would have been easily countered if Fang Yuan had not modified it.

Duke Long’s dao marks were lower than Fang Yuan’s so he could not use defensive killer moves to ward off Fang Yuan’s various sword path methods, his best option was to dodge.

Fortunately, he had much more battle experience than Fang Yuan.

More importantly, as long as he did not die, he would continue to grow stronger along with his shrinking lifespan!

"Although I modified five finger fist heart sword and am able to cancel it freely, the amount of thoughts required have increased sharply, which makes me unable to use other offensive methods at the same time... the other problem is that Duke Long is getting stronger!" Fang Yuan was feeling anxious.

Previously, he could suppress Duke Long and Cang Xuan Zi, mostly because of his battle tactic — Fang Yuan attacked the immortal graveyard, Heavenly Court had no choice but to defend with all their strength and take a beating passively.

Now, the immortal graveyard was destroyed by Fang Yuan. There might be some hibernating Gu Immortals still alive in there somewhere, but Duke Long no longer was burdened.

Duke Long could now advance or retreat, he immediately showed his true strength and aura in battle.

Fang Yuan battled Duke Long, both were in a stalemate.

Duke Long was happy to see this, but Fang Yuan was not.

So, he turned his head and spat out a waterfall.

Immortal killer move — Myriad Thought Sword Waterfall.

The sword waterfall crashed down with a huge momentum, every drop of water was a sword thought.

Immortal killer move — Swordsman!

Sword thoughts surged and collided, forming human shaped warriors. They had the appearance of Fang Yuan and were wielding long swords. Countless swordsmen charged forward.

Fang Yuan created this move after becoming a human path grandmaster, it contained the profundities of sword path and human path.

The moment Duke Long saw this killer move, he retreated.

Fang Yuan took the chance to get free and charged towards Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Outside Heaven Overseeing Tower, Calamity Luck Altar was destroying the refinement path formation with ease. And inside the tower, Qi Ci Lang was struggling against the remaining jade light on his body.

Duke Long paled with fright when he saw Fang Yuan’s movement.

Demon Judgment Board went forward to block the path but was sent flying by one strike from Fang Yuan.

Right at this crucial moment, the sound of singing suddenly appeared in the battlefield and coiled around the immemorial sword dragon’s body.

Fang Yuan suddenly felt his condition slipping rapidly, like he had returned to the low point of his life where his actions were controlled by others, his talents and ambitions unable to be expressed, his freedom was lost and his future was dark.

The immemorial sword dragon’s speed fell sharply.

Duke Long quickly caught up and blocked Fang Yuan: "Great job, Feng Jiu Ge! Fairy Zi Wei!"

At the crucial moment, Feng Jiu Ge’s destiny song successfully obstructed Fang Yuan.

And the one who had guided him in time was Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei had opened Central Heaven Gate.

This Immortal Gu House was the gateway to Heavenly Court, it had the ability to transport people but it was far inferior to the enormous teleportation Gu formation and was only for convenience.

Destiny song continued, Fang Yuan’s battle strength kept falling while Duke Long strength’s kept increasing.

Boom boom boom!

The immemorial sword dragon was beaten back repeatedly by Duke Long and had no way to approach Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Since the battle started, this was the first time Fang Yuan fell into such a disadvantage. With no other choice, he stopped all sword path killer moves and began preparing reverse flow protection seal.

Duke Long saw him retreating and his aura fluctuating, he immediately knew Fang Yuan was preparing some other killer move but why would he give him the chance?

Duke Long roared, the purple-gold dragon-shaped qi around him chased and attacked Fang Yuan like a storm.

Fang Yuan’s immemorial sword dragon body was lacerated with scales and blood flying everywhere. What was even more terrifying was Duke Long’s that chaotic dragon fist could disturb thoughts, causing Fang Yuan’s killer moves to fail when activating.

At this difficult time, Fang Yuan opened his immortal aperture slightly and released the accumulated Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies flew towards Duke Long and self-detonated.

Duke Long was extremely wary and dodged immediately, stopping his offenses. Fang Yuan got some time and successfully activated reverse flow protection seal.

Duke Long could not help but sigh when he saw this move. The timing just now was perfect but he did not grab it, he had exchanged many moves with Fang Yuan and saw through Fang Yuan’s fighting style.

When Fang Yuan transformed into an immemorial beast or plant using the transformation path killer move, he could also transform all his dao marks into the same path. On such a basis, any killer move he used would have amplified strength. Even rank seven killer moves would be able to threaten rank eights.

Fang Yuan had many methods, it was very difficult to imagine that he had accumulated and cultivated them to such a degree in less than one hundred years. Even if he had venerable inheritances, it was still a shocking achievement.

Duke Long was certain: As long as Fang Yuan had enough time, he could reach an unprecedented height. Fortunately, fate Gu’s recovery was the crucial point and Fang Yuan had no choice but to invade Heavenly Court in advance.

Fang Yuan might be able to rely on some profound and terrifying methods to win against most of the enemies in the world. But facing an existence like Duke Long, a few methods were far from enough, he also needed a combat system that was sufficiently powerful and stable, with ample trump cards.

Just like Duke Long, his transformation path and qi path methods formed two sets of combat systems.

Nine dragons protection formed powerful defense, clear dragon vision was used for scouting, dragon claw strike, chaotic dragon fist, spiraling dragon fangs, and world shaking dragon hammer were in charge of offense; these four methods covered close, mid-range, and long range combat. World shaking dragon hammer was even more powerful and had the strength to turn around a situation. Dragon roaring wave and body flicker were standard movement methods and there was also dragon gate for long distance movement. Dragon offspring made up for the lack of capability to fight a group. In this combat system, the strongest method was heavenly dragon’s last stand.

As for his qi path system: there was qi wall and self-moving dragon qi wall as defensive methods; qi breath mountain, hidden dragon qi explosion, qi engulfing mountains and rivers, great qi hand explosion, and qi current scissors were offensive killer moves. Compared to his transformation path system, these offensive methods had much more obvious long range power. Purple-gold dragon-shaped qi was a jack of all trades, this killer move was so excellent that it provided help to Duke Long in all aspects. Naturally, its most important use was still for movement. Reverse worm dragon was a killer move that was specially prepared to target battlefield killer moves. The trump card of this qi path combat system was triple qi retraction.

Duke Long’s two combat systems included all aspects like offense, defense, movement, and so on, they also did not have weaknesses or gaps in the various aspects. What was remarkable was these two battles styles could complement each other. For instance, transformation path’s offensive methods were stronger in close and mid-range combat, while weak in long-range combat. Meanwhile, qi path’s offensive methods were the exact opposite.

Comparatively, there was no need for many trump cards. One for each system, two methods were enough.

In a real battle, the most useful were still those standard killer moves. For example, Duke Long had triple qi retraction, but he had not used it once in the fight with Fang Yuan. The battle was extremely fierce and Fang Yuan was not stupid enough to give Duke Long the opportunity to use it.

Another example was Fang Yuan’s five finger fist heart sword, this was a trump card method. But even though Fang Yuan used it, the effect was not decisive for the battle. Duke Long was still able to maintain the stalemate and it was essentially because his combat systems were even more comprehensive than Fang Yuan’s.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1946 Zi Wei“s Eerie Change

How many combat systems did Fang Yuan have?

Form what Duke Long saw, Fang Yuan only had two mature combat systems.

One was time path, and the other was sword path.

The time path system was the most comprehensive; three breaths future vision, year beast summoning, Myriad Year Flying Warship, spring scissors, winter coat, autumn perception, summer fan, as well as spring ploughing, summer hoeing, autumn harvest, winter storage, and so on covered the two main domains of battle and immortal aperture management. There were two trump cards; time cutting edge that was combined with shrink time, and the other was spring autumn success, the core of which was Spring Autumn Cicada!

Sword path had immemorial sword dragon transformation, triple layered sword wave, golden thread sword, dark assassination, myriad thought sword waterfall, swordsman, and other methods. Its trump card was five finger fist heart sword. This combat system took offense to the extreme, being even more powerful than time path style in this aspect, especially five finger fist heart sword which was modified by Fang Yuan. But there was nothing to commend about it in other fields, Duke Long’s combat systems were much superior in terms of movement, healing and other aspects. This formed shortcomings. In front of an enemy with extremely rich battle experience like Duke Long, these shortcomings turned into weaknesses which held back the offensive prowess of the sword path system.

Besides these two systems, Fang Yuan had many qi path methods as well, but as far as Duke Long was concerned, it was incomplete. Unlimited qi sea was clearly a trump card with a power that could break the primordial qi wall, but it had not been used after the first time, and it looked like the possibility of it being used again was low.

In the soul path aspect, Duke Long knew Fang Yuan had plenty of methods and the trump card killer move was no doubt Luo Po seal. But Heavenly Court and Duke Long had already made sufficient preparations for this. Fang Yuan not using any soul path methods from the start was a wise move.

Besides these, reverse flow protection seal was of rule path, myriad self was human path, strength path giant hand belonged to strength path, familiar face was transformation path, lead soul into dream, Pure Dream Reality Seeker Transformation, and switch soul in dream were dream path killer moves. These methods were terrifying, but they were all independent moves resembling large pearls, while a mature combat system was a pearl necklace formed from methods that complemented each other. This necklace formed from small pearls was more valuable than the large pearls.

Against most Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan could rely on the large pearls to change the situation and determine victory. But in front of Duke Long, the weaknesses of Fang Yuan’s combat systems became conspicuous.

"Fang Yuan, what you lack is time and I believe you have already felt it, it is such a pity, a mature combat system needs at least a few hundred years of accumulation!" Duke Long looked at Fang Yuan, his gaze sharp as blade: "Even if you used the inheritances left by predecessors to hasten your growth, it is still not perfect enough."

He activated spiraling dragon fangs to attack Fang Yuan from a distance but they were blocked by reverse flow protection seal.

Duke Long was not discouraged, reverse flow protection seal was quite powerful but it lacked a mature style to support it and make up for its weakness. Reverse flow protection seal’s greatest weakness was that it expended Reverse Flow River, despite Fang Yuan conserving it as much as possible after his rebirth, how could it endure such intense expenditure?

Reverse flow protection seal was an immortal killer move that used Reverse Flow River as the core, its defensive strength was terrifying and could reflect almost all external attacks. This move was created by Fang Yuan, from which one could see his astonishing talents. Unfortunately, Fang Yuan lacked a stable combat system for this trump card. For instance, supplementary defensive killer moves to defend and reduce external attacks, or a killer move to increase the power of reverse flow protection seal, or methods to restore Reverse Flow River itself.

Suppose reverse flow protection seal was a fish with exquisite flavor. Although it would be a delicacy even if it was eaten raw, if it was seasoned with salt, it could be turned into salted fish that could be stored for a long time. If it was accompanied with other ingredients like sugar, ginger, spring onion, or garlic, it could turn into all kinds of delicious meals, providing much more flavors.

Compared to Heavenly Court and Duke Long, Fang Yuan’s accumulation was still insufficient.

He could not avoid falling into a predicament.

Duke Long attacked again and again while enduring reverse flow protection seal’s backlash, forcefully expending Reverse Flow River. His healing methods were also extraordinary.

Feng Jiu Ge’s destiny song was shrouding over Fang Yuan all the time. Destiny song interchanged between strong and weak, triggering counterattacks from reverse flow protection seal. The profundities of the song actually weakened Fang Yuan even with reverse flow protection seal activated, but the weakening was much smaller.

What was even worse was that destiny song weakened Fang Yuan while amplifying Duke Long’s strength. Duke Long’s battle strength soared, growing increasingly stronger, he had the complete upper hand and his attacks were like tidal waves, showing extreme power!

Fang Yuan canceled immemorial sword dragon transformation and returned to his human form. The sword dragon’s body was enormous, using reverse flow protection seal on it expended Reverse Flow River much faster, it was much more steady with a human body.

Fang Yuan counterattacked continuously using Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies.

But soon, these Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were also targeted, they detonated and turned into dream realms. The dream realms then transformed back into new Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies which fought for Heavenly Court.

It was Feng Jin Huang!

Fairy Zi Wei had not only recalled Feng Jiu Ge through Central Heaven Gate, she had also recalled Feng Jin Huang. With her here, Fang Yuan’s dream path methods would be highly restrained.

Sure enough, Fang Yuan’s dream path methods were all targeted and dealt with.

"Feng Jin Huang!" Fang Yuan frowned inwardly: ’In the previous life, she used the immortal Gu formation to activate immortal level dream path killer move and spoiled my plan. And now, she is using immortal formation or an Immortal Gu House to target me once again?’

Fang Yuan really wanted to find her precise location and deal with her, but he did not have the freedom to do so at this moment.

He was not even able to approach Heaven Overseeing Tower, becoming further and further away from it.

The reason was that his opponents were Duke Long and Feng Jiu Ge!

The current and previous Dao Guardians had joined hands!

As for Fang Zheng and Qin Ding Ling in Demon Judgment Board, they were no longer able to interfere and began to deal with the year beasts and swordsmen that were all over Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court’s main force also started returning to Heavenly Court from Hairy Foot Mountain through Central Heaven Gate and joined in the clearing up work.

Year beasts and swordsmen were not their opponents and were defeated again and again.

Calamity Luck Altar was the focus of the joint attacks of Heavenly Court’s main force, some even entered Heaven Overseeing Tower; Qi Ci Lang could not move properly, his situation turning perilous.

"Not good! Heavenly Court’s main force has returned, doesn’t this mean Infallible blessed land has lost its purpose? Heavenly Court possesses enough success dao marks and can restore Fate completely." Fang Yuan’s face was grim, bad news was coming one after the other, and the situation was turning extremely disadvantageous and dangerous.

"Fairy Zi Wei, use benevolent equality quickly, his reverse flow protection seal will shatter soon!" Duke Long transmitted his voice.

"Yes!" At this moment, Fairy Zi Wei had already stabilized her injuries and could battle again. She activated an Immortal Gu House and flew to the sky, her sight contained Duke Long, Fang Yuan, as well as Feng Jiu Ge and the rest.

Immortal killer move — Benevolent Equality.

"Benevolent equality activated successfully, Fang Yuan won’t be able to escape this time!" Fairy Zi Wei transmitted her voice.

"Good job, Zi Wei." Duke Long laughed heartily and his attacks became more violent.

Fang Yuan was forced to retreat again and again.

"It is useless now, Fang Yuan, no matter how you persist, you will still be defeated." Fairy Zi Wei smiled.

But at the next moment, she heard a female voice: "Is that so?"

"Who said that?" Fairy Zi Wei was shocked, this voice was familiar and yet strange, what made her shocked was she had never detected any Gu Immortal existences near her.

"What are you looking for? I am you." Fairy Zi Wei was horrified to discover that she was actually replying to herself.

What is going on?

My body is actually out of control!

Soul, there is an issue with my soul!

Suddenly, the eerie light in her pupils grew and spread rapidly. The white part of her eyes were completely covered and turned pitch-black.

Fairy Zi Wei struggled and resisted with all her strength, but it was all in vain. In her last moment of clarity, she suddenly realized: She was controlled by Spectral Soul, every time she soul searched Spectral Soul, her soul had actually been tampered with slowly. Spectral Soul’s methods were too advanced, she had not been able to detect it at all. She had already been corroded and infiltrated by Spectral Soul’s power, the various decisions she made before Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention also had Spectral Soul’s influence in them.

It was just that Spectral Soul’s interference was small at the start. But later on, this secret influence kept on growing. And now, he could even cause Fairy Zi Wei to be under an illusion.

Just earlier, Fairy Zi Wei had not used benevolent equality but she thought she had already successfully activated it and even informed Duke Long!

"Maybe in the previous life too, I was taken over like this by Spectral Soul. Although I have benevolent equality, I did not truly use it." This was the last clear thought of Fairy Zi Wei.

At the next moment, she slowly raised her head and looked at the battlefield quietly with a black light in her eyes. Her lips curled up to form an extremely sinister smile.

She maintained the opening of Central Heaven Gate while approaching Soul Suppression Hall quietly.

She had the clearest picture of the locations here.

She quickly cleared all kinds of shackles and restored Spectral Soul’s freedom.

"Zi Wei pays respects to master!" She knelt down and prostrated before Spectral Soul with not even a trace of pride of a Heavenly Court member.

Spectral Soul was extremely weak, he turned into a translucent soul sphere which slowly floated towards Fairy Zi Wei: "Let’s go watch the show first."

Fairy Zi Wei held the soul sphere in both hands and walked out of Soul Suppression Hall.

At this moment, Wu Yong, Wu Shuai, and others also appeared in Heavenly Court’s battlefield.

"What’s going on? Fairy Zi Wei!" Duke Long roared, Central Heaven Gate was still being activated and actually brought these enemies as well.

Duke Long was unable to contact Fairy Zi Wei, his heart sank and he wanted to directly destroy Central Heaven Gate. But at this moment, Fang Yuan charged towards Heaven Overseeing Tower again.

Duke Long was seething with anger, but he was forced to intercept Fang Yuan and give up on his previous plan.

Gu Immortals entered one by one through Central Heaven Gate.

"Follow Lord Wu Yong!"

"So Heavenly Court actually looks like this."

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

"Heaven Overseeing Tower is there, follow me!"

The final decisive battle unfolded in Heavenly Court.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Come, come, take a look, this is high grade silk!"

"Candied fruits, candied fruits, buy three sticks and get one free."

"Sir, what do you need?" Inside a store that sold Gu worms, a clerk welcomed Hong Yi passionately.

Hong Yi first fixed his gaze on this clerk before carefully scanning the layout and decoration of the store. He frowned on the inside: "Everything here is so lifelike, what is going on?"

"I heard you have scholar Gu for sale?" Hong Yi asked.

"Oh, yes. But lord, this scholar Gu is a rank five Gu worm." The clerk was somewhat hesitant.

Hong Yi smiled lightly and released his rank five Gu Master aura, immediately causing a huge disturbance in the store.

The clerk’s face was filled with shock, the store manager was also drawn in by the aura. He cupped his hands and greeted Hong Yi respectfully, personally taking out a scholar Gu for him to observe.

"It is indeed scholar Gu." Hong Yi examined it carefully for a while, the doubts in his heart growing deeper, "May I test it?"

"Go ahead, sir." The store manager immediately gave scholar Gu to Hong Yi.

Hong Yi poured his primeval essence into scholar Gu. This scholar Gu immediately flew out from Hong Yi’s finger and landed on the ground, turning into a young handsome scholar.

The young scholar bowed respectfully towards Hong Yi with cupped fists: "Student greets teacher."

Hong Yi nodded in excitement. Scholar Gu was extremely rare, it was a human path

Gu worm, and Hong Yi had only heard of it in rumors.

Hong Yi took out a wisdom path mortal Gu and an information path mortal Gu from his aperture, throwing them to the scholar: "Use them."

The scholar received these two Gu worms and used them without any need for gaining familiarity, and he used them rather proficiently at that. In particular, some small habits during the activation were the same as Hong Yi’s.

"What do you think, sir?" The store manager asked with a smile.

Hong Yi nodded repeatedly: "Great, I want this Gu."

The store manager was exulted: "Great, it will be six hundred thousand primeval stones."

Hong Yi’s brows furrowed.

This price was not expensive, in fact, it was too cheap. The price for a rank five mortal Gu ranged from one hundred thousand to one million primeval stones, but this scholar Gu was a rare top quality rank five Gu, its price was definitely above one million. Moreover, there was no market for it, so it was difficult to get even with sufficient funds.

But it was being sold for only six hundred thousand primeval stones here!

Hong Yi had many fortuitous encounters and was wealthy, he immediately paid the sum and received this scholar Gu.

Coming outside the store, Hong Yi’s heart was fluctuating with waves: "This place is like Emperor City, but weren’t there immortal battles going on around Emperor City? But this place is peaceful. What is going on?"

"Also, there doesn’t seem to be any difference between here and reality, but looking carefully, there are a large number of human path Gu worms here. Scholar Gu is only one of them. Moreover, there are so many human path Gu worms here that it can even be called overflowing, but it is commonplace to these people. And the common fire path, water path, and other paths’ Gu worms are instead rare here. It seems like human path is the main cultivation path here."

"Really strange! I wonder what Brother Ye found on his end? I better go join him quickly."

After Ye Fan and Hong Yi were sent to the painting by Genesis Lotus’s will, they split up to explore the area after discussing with each other.

Hong Yi’s discovery was also discovered by Ye Fan.

But at this moment, in the corner of a street, Ye Fan saw an unexpected person.

"Master!" Ye Fan was astonished.

He had also bought a rank five human path Gu worm from a store, it was called hero Gu. He had just come to a corner to activate it, and the situation became different from when he activated it in the store.

Hero Gu actually transformed into his master’s appearance!

"No need to be shocked, my disciple. This is our chance encounter." Lu Wei Yin smiled.

Ye Fan immediately understood the meaning behind the words and was joyous: "Master, you know the oddity of this place? What place is this? Why did we suddenly end up in this place?"

Lu Wei Yin smiled lightly: "I need to explain from the beginning. Three hundred thousand years ago, in the Medieval Antiquity Era, Central Continent gave birth to an Immortal Venerable named Genesis Lotus. He created the killer move karma divine tree, and when he roamed Western Desert, he refused a child’s request to resurrect his parents, as a result, he saw a certain scene in the future where Emperor City was destroyed by an earth trench and all lives were extinguished."

"Therefore, he placed Divine Bean Palace in Western Desert. When he returned to Central Continent later, he used the painting path killer move contented lifestyle on Emperor City, forming a painting world. You two have your luck connected to Fang Yuan tightly, Genesis Lotus’s will was wary and thus it locked you in here."

Ye Fan was dumbstruck, the wealth of information made him unable to react for a while.

He was extremely shaken: "This matter is actually related to Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable? Also master, when did I connect luck with Fang Yuan?"

"That was done by Fang Yuan secretly, he wanted to accomplish something with the help of your luck. The upper extreme heavenly eagle was also his immemorial desolate beast." Lu Wei Yin replied calmly.

"Fang Yuan took the initiative to connect luck with me to get help from my luck?" Ye Fan was even more shocked.

Ye Fan had acknowledged Lu Wei Yin as his master and was thus half a step into the Gu Immortal world, and knew much more secrets than Hong Yi. He was extremely clear on what kind of big shot Fang Yuan was! Fang Yuan was an unparalleled demon, a powerful character that even Heavenly Court was without options against. He was actually connected to him, this was simply like a fairytale!

Lu Wei Yin shook his head: "Disciple, don’t look down on yourself. You are a person favored by the Heavenly Dao, you possess an innately strong luck. Although you are insignificant at the start, you will definitely make huge accomplishments in the future. In the entire five regions, there are not even ten people with luck like yours. It is not strange for Fang Yuan to want to get help from your luck."

"However, the Heavenly Dao balances everything, he once used your luck and obtained great benefits, now, you are also using him to obtain an enormous immortal fortune. The upper extreme heavenly eagle was only one of them, in front of you now is Genesis Lotus’ true inheritance!"

"Genesis Lotus’ true inheritance?!" Ye Fan exclaimed in shock once again, he suddenly understood and his gaze towards Lu Wei Yin changed: "Master, you know all this like the back of your hand. Does this mean this was all your plan?"

"Haha, my disciple, you overestimate me. This was all Lord Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangement, I am only his inheritor."

When Ye Fan heard the great name of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, he realized he had also become a follower of Paradise Earth, but he did not feel exulted as he was already numb from the shock.

Lu Wei Yin waved at Ye Fan: "We don’t have much time, we will talk as we move."

Ye Fan quickly followed, the two followed the crowd in the street and walked towards the front.

Lu Wei Yin explained in detail: "This Genesis Lotus true inheritance has extremely high value, it is divided into three parts. The first part is this contented lifestyle killer move, the second part is the luck of being the child of humanity, and the third part is the rank eight Immortal Gu House formed from Divine Bean Palace and Emperor City — Divine Emperor Palace!"

Lu Wei Yin continued after a slight pause: "We will first take the second part and make you the child of humanity."

Ye Fan questioned: "Master, what is the child of humanity? What should I do?"

Lu Wei Yin replied: "Central Continent is different from the other four regions, it uses the sect system and human path is most prosperous here with the deepest foundation. Emperor City is the greatest congregation of Central Continent’s human vein. Why do countless geniuses emerge here? It is because of the human vein. As long as you absorb the strength within the human vein, your luck will get a huge boost and you will gain the favor of human path, becoming the child of humanity. And to achieve this, we need Hong Yi’s help."

"Hong Yi? He is my sworn brother, how is this connected to him?" Ye Fan continued to be shocked.

Lu Wei Yin replied: "Fang Yuan connected luck with him as well, but his luck is different from yours, you are the favored child of the Heavenly Dao while he is one of the children of humanity of Central Continent, he is favored by human path. With his help, you can smoothly make use of Shen Shang’s actions and quietly obtain the recognition of the human vein. With the status of a child of humanity, we can then borrow Fang Yuan’s strength to attempt to get the first part of the true inheritance, or even the third part as well."

Divine Bean Palace, painting world.

"Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan..." A voice was heard intermittently in Fang Di Chang’s ears.

Fang Di Chang had already stopped using karma divine tree and was using wisdom path killer moves to think of how to get rid of this predicament when he heard this voice.

"It is Shen Shang’s voice! He learned of my identity from the main body?" Fang Di Chang hesitated, he had some guesses in his mind but he did not respond immediately.

Sure enough, Shen Shang’s voice continued to transmit: "Fang Di Chang, I already learned of your true identity from your main body. Who could have thought Fang Yuan had such an arrangement, he actually placed his clone inside a Western Desert super force. I am going to help you escape."

"Hmm? How are you going to help me?" Fang Di Chang was puzzled.

Shen Shang laughed: "You should know that I have been trying to decipher the venerable human path methods and I have already found the key to them."

"I know." Fang Di Chang nodded.

Shen Shang continued: "Divine Bean Palace and Emperor City have merged into one, I have all along been hiding myself and haven’t let Genesis Lotus’ will discover me, so I am still deciphering human path killer moves."

Fang Di Chang asked: "And what about them?"

Shen Shang explained patiently: "This is a perfect opportunity! I have been constantly transferring the four regions’ human will inside here. Originally, I had been unable to involve myself with Emperor City and disrupt the venerable methods from inside so I had to infiltrate it quietly. But now, Divine Bean Palace and Emperor City have merged. You previously refined Divine Bean Palace, it is just that your authority is lower than Genesis Lotus’ will. Use your karma divine tree killer move to shake the whole Immortal Gu House and coordinate with me to spread out the venerable methods so that everyone’s power is amplified."

"You want me to cooperate with you to break the venerable human path methods?" Fang Di Chang got to the point.

Shen Shang laughed: "We are helping each other!"

"Alright, I’ll work with you." Fang Di Chang did not hesitate, agreeing directly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Heavenly Court’s battlefield.

Immortal killer move — Finger Wind Dragon!

Wu Yong activated his killer move but was met with the joint attack of three Heavenly Court members.

"Die, Wu Yong!" Prince Feng Xian used inexhaustible flames that charged ahead while he stood behind, covered in flames. His offensive attack also had defensive properties, it was a stable choice of attack.

Zhou Xiong Xin attacked from behind, the killer move rumors become tigers roared, like a group of tigers that pounced towards Wu Yong.

And Ye Qiao Zi activated long range killer moves, vines grew out of thin air and spread towards Wu Yong, trying to bind him.

Wu Yong sighed internally, he had to retreat repeatedly. He moved back into Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

With the help of the Immortal Gu House, he resisted the fierce attacks of the three immortals.

But as such, his plan to approach Heaven Overseeing Tower was stopped.

"The amplification of the human path killer moves to Heavenly Court is too big....wait a moment, this is?!" Just as Wu Yong was getting a headache, specks of white lights appeared on Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and even entered his body.

Human path killer move — Hope of the People!

Human path killer move — Heroes Among People!

"Ahhhh." Inside the Immortal Gu House, other Southern Border Gu Immortals beside Wu Yong were roaring with vitality.

"This strength, this strength...." Old Treeman Ba De, who was fighting outside, looked at his own hands with shock.

Transformation path great expert Yi Hao Fang was similarly puzzled: "Why are Heavenly Court’s human path killer moves helping us?"

This heavy doubt was pressing down on the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals’ minds like a mountain.

"Shen Shang, you really didn’t let down my expectations, great job." Fang Yuan laughed heartily, he had also received the amplification and his condition was improving rapidly.

Duke Long’s face was ashen!

He was a dragonman, a variant human, he could not receive the amplification of heroes among people unlike Fang Yuan. When Fang Yuan returned to his human form, even if it was created with sovereign immortal fetus Gu, it was still a pure human!

Boom!

Duke Long was sent flying by Fang Yuan.

"What in the world is going on?" Qin Ding Ling transmitted her voice to Old Man Zheng Yuan, asking him anxiously.

Old Man Zheng Yuan was not dead yet and had already moved out of Central Great Hall. He was all along responsible for activating the human path methods left behind by Central Continent’s venerables.

The old man transmitted his panicked reply to Duke Long, Qin Ding Ling and the rest: "There is a problem in Emperor City. Someone is causing trouble, he poured in the human will of other four regions into Central Continent. Hope of the people and heroes among people distinguish allies based on human will. There was only Central Continent’s human will previously, but now the human wills of all five regions are gathered, so everyone will receive amplification."

Duke Long warded off Fang Yuan’s attacks while asking: "How can we resolve this issue?"

Old Man Zheng Yuan replied with a heavy voice: "I am giving it my all but I don’t have any confidence in succeeding!"

Duke Long’s heart sank further: "Who could have tampered with our venerable human path methods to this degree?"

He had never imagined the venerable human path killer moves to have such changes. The enemy did not break these two killer moves directly but instead expanded the effectiveness of the killer moves to everyone, this was no different from breaking them.

"Is it Shen Shang?" The soul sphere in Fairy Zi Wei’s hands shook lightly as if it was laughing to itself.

Back then, the information Fairy Zi Wei had given to Duke Long contained details of Shen Shang’s location. This action was made under Spectral Soul’s influence.

Duke Long, however, had full trust in Fairy Zi Wei. Moreover, at that time, Fang Zheng had been detained by Shen Cong Sheng and had to be exchanged for urgently, thus there was the series of later events. In the end, Shen Shang left Dragon Whale Paradise, infiltrated Emperor City and achieved this accomplishment.

"Perhaps I should say, this is worthy of Paradise Earth." The soul sphere shook once again.

Fairy Zi Wei was holding the soul sphere and continuously using wisdom path methods to imitate soul path and heal the soul sphere.

The soul sphere was becoming increasingly solid under her healing.

On the other side, Central Heaven Gate was still open, bringing in Gu Immortals from the outside world into Heavenly Court.

"Hahaha, bring all those people in, let them kill, let them die! The more they kill the better it is, the more deaths there are the better this is, hahaha." The soul sphere laughed madly.

The first batch who came were the Southern Border immortals in Hairy Foot Mountain, as well as Wu Shuai, Zhan Bu Du, and others.

Right now, the second batch of Gu Immortals was teleported over. They were Northern Plains’ reinforcements who allied with Southern Border’s group in the previous life.

The leader was an old man with a walking stick, Yao Huang.

As well as Heavenly Lord Bai Zu who was walking forward proudly.

Behind the two great rank eight Gu Immortals were Domination Immortal Chu Du who was famous throughout the five regions, Black Extremity Sun Ming Lu who schemed against Old Ancestor Xue Hu, as well as other Gu Immortal experts.

"Rank seven Gu Immortals will enter Immortal Gu Houses." Yao Huang swept his gaze around the battlefield and gave the command.

Even Chu Du had to listen obediently.

He was shaken by the fierce battle in front, this battle was not something rank sevens could interfere in.

Northern Plains had few Immortal Gu Houses, but they brought over three this time!

"Follow me, we will reinforce Calamity Luck Altar." Heavenly Lord Bai Zu took the lead to charge forward.

Yao Huang and the three Immortal Gu Houses followed closely behind.

Bing Sai Chuan cheered loudly inside Calamity Luck Altar, his attacks towards the refinement path formation were obstructed by the golden pearls left by Golden Pearl Immortal King. And now, he was being besieged from all directions by Heavenly Court’s main force.

Bing Sai Chuan was attacking the refinement path formation while repairing Calamity Luck Altar, he needed help and this batch of reinforcements came at a perfect timing.

"Kill!" Heavenly Lord Bai Zu shouted. His figure shook and split into countless clones that fought against the soldiers formed from the golden pearls.

Yao Huang did not want to appear weak, he waved his cane, a strong medicinal fragrance pervaded the battlefield immediately.

The three Immortal Gu Houses also arrived and defended Calamity Luck Altar.

Heavenly Court’s main force was immediately divided.

"Don’t even dream of leaving." Wu Yong used killer moves one after another, wishful wind whip, soft vajra wind chief, yin wind rope and many others were used alternatively to tie down the enemies.

Ba De, Yi Hao Fang and others also mimicked this.

"Damn it!" Most of Heavenly Court’s main force could only curse inwardly as they were pinned down.

If it were before, the Southern Border immortals would never have been able to pose such troubles, but with heroes among people’s support now, Wu Yong and others were amplified. Overall, they were still weaker than Heavenly Court’s members, after all, the latter were elites in rank eight, but it was still enough for them to become a threat.

"Charge!" Dragon Palace crashed through the battlefield, Wu Shuai and Zhan Bu Du were controlling it from inside.

Feng Jiu Ge had to avoid the collision, destiny song slowed down.

Fang Yuan immediately felt the suppression on him receding sharply, and adding on the amplification from heroes among people, he sent Duke Long flying once again.

Dragon tattoos wriggled around Duke Long, dragon fangs flew around and obstructed the incoming attacks.

Suddenly, a huge figure appeared.

"This is?!" Duke Long’s pupils shrank rapidly as he saw the giant figure.

Evil Dragon — Di Zang Sheng had taken the stage!

"Duke Long!!!" Di Zang Sheng spoke human voice, its roar gave rise to endless shock waves. It slammed down its claws on Duke Long like he was a ball.

Di Zang Sheng’s claws were cut by the dragon fangs and dripped with blood, while Duke Long collided into the ground, creating a hundred feet deep crater.

Di Zang Sheng’s enormous body pressed down.

Rumble!

The entirety of Heavenly Court shook violently, smoke and dust flew, covering the whole battlefield.

Di Zang Sheng flew up slowly, the ground that its stomach pressed on had already formed a shallow trench that spanned from the east to west of Heavenly Court. All the buildings, mountains and rivers in its path were turned into waste.

"He is above!" Zhan Bu Du suddenly pointed.

Duke Long was floating in the air, looking down at Di Zang Sheng. The dragon gate behind him disappeared slowly.

At the crucial moment, he had escaped the dangerous situation by using dragon gate.

"This Evil Dragon!" Duke Long clenched his teeth, his sunken chest bulged up rapidly and soon recovered to its previous state. Clearly, Di Zang Sheng’s attack had not been without effect.

On the other side, Myriad Year Flying Warship flew back and took in Fang Yuan again.

Fang Yuan looked at Duke Long and sneered, he directly ignored him and charged towards Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Duke Long’s eyelids twitched at this sight.

The force at Heaven Overseeing Tower’s side was barely resisting Calamity Luck Altar and was on the verge of collapse. If Fang Yuan and Myriad Year Flying Warship joined, the situation would directly collapse.

"Fang Yuan, don’t even think about it! Everyone gather and protect Heaven Overseeing Tower!" Duke Long sent his command, he himself was the first to move as he used dragon gate and blocked the path of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

"Get lost!" Dragon Palace came to reinforce, its owner Wu Shuai was resolute and direct, he released the suppressed Jun Shen Guang and Vortex Space Boy, and thus could activate the killer move dreamy light smoke again.

Dreamy light smoke engulfed Duke Long.

Duke Long’s heart pounded crazily, he had no choice but to dodge, leaving behind a path through which Fang Yuan moved forward.

"Damn it, this is a dream path killer move, my methods are useless." In a corner far away, Feng Jin Huang was hiding in an inconspicuous Immortal Gu House, stomping her feet in anxiety.

Right at this time, destiny song reverberated through the battlefield once again.

Heavenly Court’s condition rose rapidly and Duke Long also received great benefits, while Fang Yuan and the group’s offenses immediately weakened.

"Unbelievable, we entered Heavenly Court!" Eight Eastern Sea immortals joined the battlefield through Central Heaven Gate.

"Heavenly Court’s side is being besieged!" The eight immortals’ eyes brightened, especially when they saw Fang Yuan, Di Zang Sheng, Myriad Year Flying Warship, and Dragon Palace forcing back Duke Long and Feng Jiu Ge.

"Good, we will join and deal the final blow to them!!" The eight immortals’ morale soared as they joined the chaotic battle.

"How did they come here?" Fang Yuan was slightly surprised.

Zhang Yin, Granny Rong and the other dragon generals joining the battle was a given, but Qing Yue An and the rest were very conservative, why would they take risk in joining the battle?

"Hehehe, this is the side effect of heroes among people. When they received the amplification, they also received the influence of the four regions’ human will and hate Heavenly Court even more now." Shen Shang’s voice transmitted over: "A pity that Western Desert’s side is still in a stalemate against Central Continent’s Immortal Gu Houses and cannot participate in this battle."

"Shen Shang, well done." Fang Yuan did not hesitate to praise.

Shen Shang laughed heartily: "Naturally. But then again, you being able to control Central Heaven Gate was truly beyond my expectation. This move was truly spectacular. Ah, I can also feel Central Heaven Gate’s transportation power, we will join in a while and flip Heavenly Court upside-down, hahaha!"

Fang Yuan only smiled: "Then come fast!"

Central Heaven Gate’s change was beyond Fang Yuan’s expectations, but why would he cut himself short at this time? Even if someone was scheming from the dark, Fang Yuan would only follow the tides and prioritize in defeating Heavenly Court as well as destroying fate Gu.

"Damn it, why at this time..." Just as Shen Shang was about to accept the transportation, black fire appeared on his body. His internal threat had erupted again.

"I used all my strength to decipher the venerable killer moves and my injuries were left unattended..." This was Shen Shang’s last clear thought before he sank into madness and chaos.

The moment Shen Shang turned mad, Old Man Zheng Yuan sensed it.

The old man’s spirit was roused: "The enemy’s strength has disappeared! Regardless of the reason, I can use this chance to take control again and there is even a chance to turn around the situation. Hmm? Who is it?!"

Old Man Zheng Yuan suddenly shouted, Fairy Zi Wei appeared in front of him with empty hands and a smile on her face.

"Zi Wei? No, you are not normal!" The old man’s eyes shone sharply as he quickly retreated.

But at the next moment, a solid pitch-black soul sphere appeared behind him and entered his body.

"No!" Old Man Zheng Yuan seemed to have suffered a heavy attack as he collapsed on the ground, his eyes rolled and saliva foamed from his mouth while his body quivered continuously.

The twitching lasted for a while before Old Man Zheng Yuan became still all of a sudden, his eyes were the same as Fairy Zi Wei, turning completely black.

He stood up silently and wiped off the saliva, he lowered his hands and greeted the floating soul sphere respectfully: "This old servant pays respects to master!"

Spectral Soul let out a light grunt of agreement, he did not have any Immortal Gu currently but he was not without methods. The soul beast modification killer move he developed in the past had already become a type of innate ability of his soul. This innate ability could let him modify any soul and make the target offer their complete loyalty.

"Now, we should subdue Feng Jin Huang, I know her location as well and can also cut off that Immortal Gu House’s teleportation ability." Fairy Zi Wei said of her own initiative.

"No hurry." Spectral Soul, however, rejected her suggestion: "Feng Jin Huang is not only favored by the Heavenly Dao, she also receives the adoration of humanity itself, her luck is strong enough to be second only to Red Lotus Demon Venerable. Don’t think she is alone right now, the moment we make an attempt on her, we will be met with obstructions. Forget others, just Feng Jiu Ge alone is a huge problem. This person is strong enough to match Duke Long right now! We will observe the changes in the battlefield, let these people kill each other as their luck dissipates, then we will see if there is a chance to make a move on Feng Jin Huang."

Spectral Soul and the two servants walked out of the Immortal Gu House and observed the battlefield from far away.

Right now, Heavenly Court’s side was gathered around Heaven Overseeing Tower and defended with all their strength. Their situation had become extremely perilous.

The other immortals’ attacks were unusually fierce, they were under the amplification from heroes among people, but also the weakening from destiny song. With Fang Yuan and Di Zang Sheng at the lead, every minute action made Heavenly Court’s side nervous.

Duke Long and Feng Jiu Ge were like main pillars, one person blocked Fang Yuan while the other suppressed Di Zang Sheng, but both were disadvantaged since they had to defend Heaven Overseeing Tower as well.

Demon Judgment Board was struggling to defend against Myriad Year Flying Warship and Dragon Palace’s joint attacks.

Golden pearl soldiers were completely destroyed, Heavenly Court’s main force was on a constant retreat and the defensive line continued to pull back.

"Heavenly Court’s defeat is imminent." Fairy Zi Wei commented, the eerie light in her eyes flickered.

Only Yuan Qiong Du was standing on the top floor of Heaven Overseeing Tower. Cong Yan and Che Wei were lying on the floor, on the verge of death, there was no one to heal them and Heavenly Court also did not have the ability to spare manpower.

Originally, Qi Ci Lang was resisting the jade green light, but when Heavenly Court’s main force arrived, they easily handled him. Qi Ci Lang was still bound and could not resist at all, he was directly beheaded and died with grievance.

The refinement path Gu formation was already destroyed, Yuan Qiong Du could only continue restoring fate Gu by himself.

"Almost there, almost there!" Yuan Qiong Du mumbled, a fire was burning in his palm.

Boom!

Heaven Overseeing Tower suffered a heavy attack and shook violently. Yuan Qiong Du’s refinement was disturbed, he coughed out a large mouthful of blood and fell to the ground, unconscious.

Fate Gu’s restoration was forcefully halted!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Immortal killer move — Five Rotational Destruction!

Five Elements Grandmaster shouted in fury, he faced the sky with his palms and pushed, a five colored ring appeared.

The ring flew to the sky and let out a powerful attraction force, absorbing all kinds of killer moves and even desolate beasts.

Heavenly Court’s defensive line fell into chaos.

"Charge!" Southern Border’s Gu Immortals grasped this chance and activated rank eight Immortal Gu House Great Space Temple to charge in through the gap.

Heavenly Court’s Yu Zhu Zi gritted his teeth as he pointed at Great Space Temple and shouted: "Go!"

Most of the jade pearls floating around him flew out and struck Great Space Temple before detonating.

Bam bam bam...

The detonation of jade pearls resounded like thunder, jade fragments scattered everywhere and attached themselves onto Great Space Temple, actually slowing this rank eight Immortal Gu House by several times.

With this chance, Heavenly Court’s members quickly reinforced and used all their strength to force Great Space Temple out.

But, although Great Space Temple was forced out, Wu Yong made his move on the other side.

Immortal killer move — Finger Wind Dragon!

Immortal killer move — Chaotic Shooting Blades!

Wu Yong flicked his fingers repeatedly, throwing out several dark jade worms.

The small worms grew larger as they flew in the sky, expanding to ten feet, fifty feet, a hundred and fifty feet!

In just a few breaths of time, they turned into vicious wind dragons that was two hundred and twenty feet long, baring their fangs as they attacked Heavenly Court’s defensive line.

Wu Yong’s eyes flashed with a green light, the wind dragons roared and turned into countless jade wind blades, shooting everywhere.

The wind blades were sharp, cutting everything in their path, Heavenly Court’s main force could only grit their teeth and face the killer moves forcibly.

Using this chance when they were too occupied, Wu Yong turned around and infiltrated the defense line.

"Don’t even think about it!" A delicate voice sounded, flower petals flew in the sky; Wan Zi Hong blocked Wu Yong.

She had been paying heavy attention towards Wu Yong without daring to be careless. The moment Wu Yong made the move, she went to fill the gap.

Wu Yong sighed and could only drop the plan.

The Southern Border Gu Immortals inside Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building were shouting towards the Eastern Sea Gu Immortal Hua Cai Yun: "Go in quickly!"

Previously, Wan Zi Hong had been fighting with Hua Cai Yun and Qing Yue An. Right now, Wan Zi Hong went to fill the defensive gap which left behind a hole, letting Hua Cai Yun and Qing Yue An infiltrate the defensive line.

Hua Cai Yun and Qing Yue An glanced at each other and sensed the other had no intention to charge in, so they both chose to battle in the same place without having any intention to invade.

The human wills influenced the Eastern Sea immortals’ resoluteness, but the influence was limited. Right now, Hua Cai Yun and Qing Yue An were already feeling regret, how could they have joined the decisive battle in Heavenly Court because of a moment of hotheadedness?

Wasn’t it quite good and satisfying to plunder immortal materials in Central Continent?

Why did they have to fight to the death here!

They were not fools, the first ones to invade the defensive line would definitely be met with fierce counterattacks from Heavenly Court’s forces, they might even die if they were just a little bit careless.

Because she had seen through this, Wan Zi Hong boldly went to fill the defensive gap and block Wu Yong.

"The nature of Eastern Sea Gu Immortals is like this." Wan Zi Hong’s eyes shone sharply, she had a deep understanding regarding Eastern Sea.

But at the next moment, Shi Miao suddenly charged into Heavenly Court’s defensive line.

He was also an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, Heavenly Court’s main force were barely able to maintain the defensive line and when they were forced, they would let the defensive gap appear in front of the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals. But Heavenly Court’s main force would have never imagined that Shi Miao was already controlled by Dragon Palace and had become a dragon general, unafraid of death in battles.

Heavenly Court’s main force was dazed and allowed Shi Miao to smoothly charge into the defensive line and near Heaven Overseeing Tower. Just as he was about to charge inside, a figure suddenly appeared in front of Shi Miao.

"In your dream!" Duke Long’s voice resounded in Shi Miao’s ears.

Shi Miao had already put up his defenses, his skin was like a layer of rocks, extremely firm. But his tough skin was immediately pierced by Duke Long’s right hand and his neck was grabbed firmly.

Shi Miao immediately felt suffocation, an intense force spread from Duke Long’s right hand and cracked the rock skin on his neck.

"What kind of strength is this!" Shi Miao was horrified, he struggled with all his might but it was fruitless.

Just as his neck was about to snap, a sword light arrived.

Duke Long dodged immediately, but this was predicted, the sword light struck his waist, then passed through behind like a ray of light.

Duke Long’s body was almost cut apart by this sword light, an enormous wound appeared on his stomach from where blood flowed out without stopping.

The sword light continued with its momentum and struck Heaven Overseeing Tower. Fortunately, defensive measures were already activated around Heaven Overseeing Tower, it was not unprepared like when Bo Qing’s sword light cut it, a white barrier flickered around the tower before finally stopping the sword light.

"Fang Yuan!" Duke Long turned his head towards where the attack came from, at that direction was Fang Yuan who had once again transformed into an immemorial sword dragon.

The sword dragon’s claws were clenched into a fist, the attack just now was five finger fist heart sword!

This killer move had terrifying might, Duke Long absolutely could not sit idly and watch Fang Yuan use it casually. He immediately gave up on Shi Miao and used dragon gate to approach Fang Yuan.

But at this time, Shi Miao suddenly revealed a strange smile, his whole body melted and rapidly covered Duke Long’s body.

This change caught Duke Long off guard, and Fang Yuan was able to activate five finger fist heart sword again!

Second sword, third sword, fourth sword!

Every sword light struck Duke Long and passed through his body, the remaining force struck Heaven Overseeing Tower till it shook.

"Lord Duke Long!!!" This unexpected situation caused Heavenly Court’s immortals to pale in fright.

Even Duke Long had never expected Shi Miao to willingly give up his life to pin him down! Fang Yuan’s five finger fist heart sword struck him but Shi Miao was also struck.

There were three terrifyingly large sword wounds on Duke Long’s body, he was dripping with blood but he still had a breath of life left in him.

Shi Miao, however, could not be anymore dead. His form was a severed corpse, he died with a smile on his face.

"Duke Long, your life shall end here." Fang Yuan said softly before pointing the fifth sword of five finger fist heart sword!

The sword light seemed to pierce through time and space, no one could block its speed.

Heavenly Court’s immortals watched the sword light strike Duke Long with a horrified gaze.

At the moment of death, Duke Long’s eyes lost their light as he fell into a whirlpool of memories.

Childhood...

Duke Long was lying on the bed and crying: "Father, mother, don’t die, don’t leave me behind!"

"Child." Duke Long’s father rubbed his head and showed a carefree smile even when death was impending: "Don’t cry and don’t grieve. We suffered these fatal wounds to stop Di Zang Sheng’s rampage, this is our responsibility as members of Heavenly Court, and it is also something we are willing to do."

"Death is the final destination of life,the crucial thing is whether we died a worthy death."

"You will understand this when you grow up, my child." Duke Long’s mother spoke: "You will understand what our sacrifices signify. Although this leads to separation, it is also our honor and duty to protect humanity. The stronger one is, the greater their responsibilities. Protecting our people is the noble task that has been inherited by us and countless seniors. When you grow up, you will also continue to walk our path. We will be looking forward to your growth in the other world. You need to work hard and persevere."

Adolescence...

Young Duke Long was breathing heavily, he was knocked down by a puppet and was lying down on the ground.

A Gu Master laughed loudly from the side and clapped: "Little Long, your performance is already great. Get up, rest for a while."

"No, I can still continue to fight!" Young Duke Long used all his strength and stood up unsteadily: "I will double my efforts, work hard in cultivation and keep on growing stronger. This puppet in front of me is nothing. There will be a day when I will become an expert like my parents, I will become a Gu Immortal of Heavenly Court and follow their path!"

"Hahaha, such aspirations, I am really looking forward to your future." The Gu Master praised sincerely.

Adulthood...

"This is how it feels to be a Gu Immortal?" Duke Long passed the ascension tribulation and became a rank six Gu Immortal.

"Amazing, kid. You have become an immortal at such a young age. Thinking back to when I was your age, I was still competing with my rival in love, hahaha." A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal laughed.

"Thank you for guarding me during this period." The adult Duke Long bowed towards the Gu Immortal and said with great sincerity.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortal waved his hand: "You should have realized it by now, your identity is special. You are the Dao Guardian of the future Immortal Venerable, so your cultivation path will always be smooth, even if there are setbacks, it will only signify that you are going to reap even greater harvests later."

"Heavenly Court needs you, the future Immortal Venerable needs you, humanity needs you. Kid, becoming an immortal is not your end point, it is just your starting point. You can’t get complacent, you can’t stop moving forward. We all need you."

"Yes, I will persevere till I die. I will contribute every bit of my strength and every drop of my blood and sweat for Heavenly Court, for humanity, and for the future!" Duke Long swore.

Middle age...

"Rank eight cultivation, unimaginable... you actually accomplished this at your age!" Duke Tong said with a moved voice.

"Perhaps we should say, worthy of a Dao Guardian? Hahaha, with you, Heavenly Court can be even more prosperous." Duke Mei laughed brightly.

"I am flattered, seniors." The middle-aged Duke Long spoke modestly.

Duke Mei and Duke Tong glanced at each other, the former said: "So, have you considered our suggestion? Become one of us, lead Heavenly Court and guide the future Immortal Venerable seed."

Duke Long nodded with no hesitation: "Yes, I have already prepared myself!"

"Hahaha, then from today onwards, you are Duke Long."

"One of the three dukes of Heavenly Court, and also the most important one. Heavenly Court’s heavy responsibility will mainly rest on your shoulders."

Duke Long nodded his head slowly and said with a solemn expression: "This is the path I have been pursuing. This is the expectation that my parents and the countless seniors I have met in life hold, it is the result that Heavenly Court and humanity needs! This responsibility... I, Duke Long, will undertake it with no hesitation!"

Old age...

"Come back, Hong Ting, you can still turn around!" Duke Long called.

"Master, I failed to live up to your teachings and expectations, I am sorry, but I must revive them!" Red Lotus did not turn around, disappearing into the night.

Duke Long closed his eyes in pain, his body on the verge of collapsing. The disciple he had taught with all his heart for so many years chose to walk on such a path.

"I guided an Immortal Venerable to become a Demon Venerable, I have sinned!" Duke Long knelt before Duke Tong and Duke Mei.

"Get up, get up quickly." Duke Tong and Duke Mei held Duke Long’s arms and consoled him.

"You need to have faith, Duke Long, we still have hope."

"It is not your fault, Duke Long, we have all seen the efforts you have put in. It is Hong Ting who has disappointed us, not you."

"No." Duke Long shook off the two’s hands and said with an extremely solemn expression: "He is my disciple, if he is walking on the wrong path now, it is my mistake! It is my sin! I must pay for this, I will stake all my strength to make up for this mistake!! For Heavenly Court and for humanity, even if I have to give up everything, I will pull Red Lotus back to the righteous path!!!"

And finally, in his twilight years...

Duke Long was sitting cross-legged in the hall, his head lowered and his hair was disheveled.

Two trails of tears quietly trickled down his face.

In front of him on the cold floor were the corpses of people he was familiar with, these were dragonman corpses.

The pain in his heart submerged everything and roared like a tsunami, threatening to drown Duke Long.

He was originally blessed with the joys of familial bonds, but who could have thought he would have to suffer such an impact in his twilight years. What was even more sad was that the killer of his children and grandchildren was he himself!

This was the tragedy that he singlehandedly created.

"It is my fault, back then I should not have..." Duke Long’s voice was choked with emotions. He slowly raised his head, his gaze seemed to be under extreme weight as he slowly looked at each corpse. Joyful conversations and laughter along with blissful scenes of him with his grandchildren surfaced in his mind.

"It is not your fault, my children! Everything is my fault!" Duke Long’s back bent down, he used his powerless fist to pound his chest, light thumping sounds echoed in the hall.

"I was negligent in my care towards you, I did not guide you well, you ended up walking on the wrong path. I was wrong, I am not a good master, I am also not a good ancestor. But for the prosperity of humanity, for Heavenly Court, I had to sacrifice you."

"Believe me, I never wanted this outcome. But I have no choice, I might be a dragonman but my heart has always stood with humanity. I cannot let you disrupt the rule of humanity, that is the result gained after countless generations sacrificed themselves. And most importantly, your roots also lie in humanity!"

"If you want to blame someone, then blame me, I cannot beg for your forgiveness neither do I dare to do that. Let me bear all the sins, let me pay for them!"

"My children... I cannot bring myself to separate with you. You will merge with me, we will never be apart! As your ancestor, I have failed you and did not give you a beautiful life and stable environment to live in. But this is all I can do."

"I, Duke Long, am just a dying old man."

Present...

The fifth sword flew towards Duke Long so fast that it was already in front of Duke Long!

Whoosh.

There was a soft sound, time seemed to have been slowed down by countless times.

Duke Long’s head lightly separated from his neck.

Blood flowed out slowly and spurted out just as slowly.

He was beheaded by Fang Yuan with one slice!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Lord Duke Long!!!" The Heavenly Court immortals’ horrified cries resounded, but to Duke Long, these voices became increasingly weaker, at the start, they were like roaring waves, but almost at the next moment, they became light echoes from the horizon.

Is this the feeling of death?

I, Duke Long, am finally going to die?

Die here?

Thoughts were still flashing past Duke Long’s mind.

Die here?

He asked himself again.

Tired, I am really tired!

He had walked till now while bearing heavy duty and expectations, he withstood the burden of endless sins.

There were times when he really wanted to die!

When he first stepped into the immortal graveyard and hibernated, he had let his imagination run wild: If I died like this, it feels like it might be a pretty good thing.

But could he?

Could he?

He asked himself.

No....

He could not!

He, Duke Long, lived all his life while carrying a heavy burden: He shouldered the expectations of his parents, master, and companions, he shouldered the responsibility of Heavenly Court and humanity, he took on the blame for his disciple’s betrayal and the calamity he caused, he took on the sin of exterminating his offspring by his own hands.

He got injured, he got old.

His back slowly bent down, his gaze slowly dimmed.

He slumbered in the immortal graveyard, but when the time came, he crawled up and continued to bear his responsibility and mission!

"That’s right, I cannot die, I cannot!"

"I still need to deal with the enemies, I still haven’t cleared my sins, I still haven’t corrected my mistakes!"

"The immortal graveyard is already destroyed, if I fall now, Feng Jiu Ge will not be able to salvage the situation alone. Heavenly Court will be destroyed by the enemies."

"How can I fall now?"

"I cannot fall!"

"My companions need me, Heavenly Court needs me, humanity needs me!"

"They need me, Duke Long!!"

"So...."

"No matter how tired I am, even if I am extremely exhausted, even if I hibernate in the graveyard, even if I die, even if I have been beheaded!"

"I, Duke Long... cannot afford to fall!"

"I need to stand up, I need to..."

"Continue fighting!!"

Instantly, as if the entire universe was responding to his unyielding will!

A miracle happened!

Duke Long’s dimmed pupils suddenly burst out with shocking light that rushed towards the sky. The blood that spurted out of his neck returned rapidly, the countless qi in the surrounding condensed and brought his head back to his neck.

An extremely profound aura carried a true inheritance and entered his body, the wounds on his body started healing rapidly, he completely healed within a few breaths.

"It is Lord Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s method! And this qi path true inheritance... so triple qi retraction can actually be used in this manner!" Duke Long immediately comprehended, great joy surfacing on his face.

"Lord Duke Long, he has revived!" The miracle happened right in front of them, Heavenly Court’s morale bounced back.

Fang Yuan’s expression was still tranquil: "It is Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s method. There was a backup after all!"

"This is Heavenly Court’s foundation?" Wu Yong mumbled, his expression was dark, he felt powerlessness.

Duke Long raised his head and floated in the air, he spread out his arms and legs as he said: "I, Duke Long, will not fall right now. Oh Fang Yuan, let me show you the genuine... Triple Qi Retraction!"

"Triple qi retraction?!" This move’s reputation was too huge, the moment Duke Long said this, the three regions’ immortals slowed down their offenses in fright and uncertainty.

Fang Yuan’s expression was also solemn, he had personally witnessed the terrifying might of triple qi retraction.

Back then, Duke Long had used this move to determine his victory, directly defeating Purple Mountain True Monarch.

"Triple qi retraction has a total of three styles: First style, human qi retraction; second style, earth qi retraction; and third style, heaven qi retraction. Human qi retraction greatly reduces a Gu Immortal’s human qi and their condition will fall sharply. Earth qi retraction will extract earth qi and cause heavy damage to the immortal aperture. Heaven qi retraction will extract heaven qi and combined with the damage from the previous two styles, the immortal aperture will shatter directly. If one is hit by the first style, the second style and third style cannot be blocked. So, the key is in the first style!"

All kinds of information flashed through Fang Yuan’s mind.

He moved his dragon body and retreated cautiously. Although he had transformed into an immemorial sword dragon and seemed to have gotten rid of his human status, he was not certain if human qi retraction could extract his human qi or not.

Since this move was created by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, even if there was no transformation path back then, Duke Long would have definitely made relevant modifications to fill this gap.

Whoosh!

At the next moment, vast qi surged from all directions and winds moved like waves, gathering around Duke Long’s body.

Endless amounts of human qi, earth qi, and heaven qi gathered in Duke Long’s body, turning into countless qi path dao marks while also drastically raising his power in every aspect!

Fang Yuan’s eyes narrowed: "What is this? Triple qi retraction’s three styles are being activated at the same time, plundering a vast amount of qi to empower Duke Long. Is this a condition triggered by Primordial Origin’s method?"

Triple qi retraction’s effect had already deviated from its usual ability.

Power, power, an unprecedented power!

The feeling of power filled Duke Long’s body and mind. He stepped lightly, boom!

The air below him directly exploded as his body flew like a purple meteor and appeared in front of Fang Yuan in an instance.

Fast, extremely fast!

But Fang Yuan had no fear since reverse flow protection seal was still activated.

Boom!

Duke Long’s fist struck his head.

Fang Yuan was knocked down like a cannonball, he smashed into the ground, creating a deep pit.

Reverse flow protection seal immediately appeared shallow and illusory from this attack.

Fang Yuan shook his giant dragon head, shaking off the dizziness, when Duke Long appeared in front of his eyes again. Both sides were within one hundred steps.

Duke Long charged over, his whole body emitted blazing qi that raised his mighty disposition to the extreme.

Fang Yuan’s eyes were cold as he snorted inwardly.

Whoosh—!

Myriad Year Flying Warship had already been lying in ambush, and when Duke Long charged forward at this moment, it immediately pierced through the air, like a giant blade that cut towards Duke Long with a heavy shadow of death.

Struck!

Myriad Year Flying Warship was like a giant broadsword that cut Duke Long.

Boom!

Dust and soil flew before they were dispelled by the violent qi around Duke Long.

Duke Long was struck by Myriad Year Flying Warship, he was half-crouching on the ground, one hand holding the ground while the other hand released a powerful strength as it grabbed the front bottom part of Myriad Year Flying Warship — he actually held off the whole of Myriad Year Flying Warship’s weight with a single hand!

Crack, crack...

A series of sharp sounds could be heard, the muscles on Duke Long’s hands bulged as he slowly pushed back Myriad Year Flying Warship inch by inch.

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrank slightly, the Myriad Year Flying Warship of this moment was not the same as before, it was merged with Twelve Zodiac battle formation and was enough to rank among the top five Immortal Gu Houses in the world!

Duke Long actually resisted its full-powered collision with one hand.

The strength amplification Duke Long received from triple qi retraction had far surpassed Fang Yuan’s estimation.

Hah!

Duke Long breathed out as he exerted strength and stood up, he brought his other hand together and actually threw Myriad Year Flying Warship far away.

Fang Yuan observed the whole process with indifference, his dragon pupils reflecting Duke Long’s clear face. Fang Yuan swung his dragon tail and retreated quickly, leaving the Heaven Overseeing Tower battlefield.

Duke Long’s speed already surpassed Fang Yuan’s but he could only watch as Fang Yuan left. Because at this moment, Dragon Palace and three Immortal Gu Houses were attacking Feng Jiu Ge. Feng Jiu Ge had to split his attention to resist them, so destiny song unavoidably weakened. Di Zang Sheng was free and charged towards Heaven Overseeing Tower once again!

"Evil Dragon! Stop!" Almost in an instant, Duke Long appeared on Di Zang Sheng’s head.

Immortal killer move — Qi Breath Mountain!

An enormous translucent qi mountain took shape in a blink of an eye and pressed down fiercely.

Boom, heaven and earth shook, Di Zang Sheng’s head was pressed down to the ground by qi breath mountain.

Triple qi retraction increased the might of Duke Long’s qi path methods to a horrifying level.

However, after using this move, the qi around Duke Long fell sharply by thirty percent.

"A chance!" Seeing this, Five Elements Grandmaster, Wu Yong, and Zhang Yin attacked at almost the same time. Three long range killer moves attacked Duke Long.

Duke Long did not dodged and also did not use self-moving dragon qi wall, he actually let the killer moves engulf his body.

Smoke and fire rose, thunder rumbled.

The dazzling scene dissipated, Duke Long was still standing in the sky, standing tall and upright.

"Did you want to scratch my itch with these three small tricks?" Duke Long ridiculed loudly. The faces of Wu Yong, Five Elements Grandmaster, and Zhang Yin reddened with anger and shock.

"Triple qi retraction!" Duke Long shouted once again.

In an instant, vast qi surged and appeared from all corners of Heavenly Court before gathering inside Duke Long’s body within a few seconds.

Rumble!

Duke Long’s aura expanded once again, not only did he return to his earlier state, he even gained an extra layer. From the original ten feet, it broke through to twenty feet. The aura covered his whole body and the translucent fire burned high.

Duke Long’s purple hair waved wildly and his scales shone brightly.

Because of heavenly dragon’s last stand as well, Duke Long’s body right now had already far surpassed the size of an ordinary human, his body expanded several times and gave an extremely oppressive feeling.

Di Zang Sheng roared, unreconciled as it lifted its giant dragon head out from the pit.

Duke Long suddenly appeared to the side of Di Zang Sheng’s head and gave a straight punch. The huge force twisted Di Zang Sheng’s head and even its enormous body rolled away, destroying countless buildings of Heavenly Court in its way.

But Duke Long no longer cared about these, everything had to prioritize Heaven Overseeing Tower.

In the previous life, Di Zang Sheng’s battle strength could match Duke Long’s, but in this life, it was directly suppressed!

If it was said that Feng Jiu Ge used the profundity of destiny song to defeat Di Zang Sheng, then Duke Long suppressed Di Zang Sheng by relying on his own strength.

"I understand now. Although I destroyed the immortal graveyard, Heavenly Court still exists. When a Gu Immortal joins Heavenly Court, they will contribute their immortal aperture; countless grotto-heaven worlds merged together to form the current Heavenly Court. Every immortal aperture is a balance of three qi and contains heaven qi, earth qi, and human qi. Currently, Duke Long is using triple qi retraction not against us but on Heavenly Court." Fang Yuan’s thoughts moved lightning fast as he deduced the general details.

Heavenly Court’s three qi were naturally exploited by Duke Long and it could even be said to be an infinite supply. With such a powerful supplement, Duke Long’s battle strength exploded and suppressed Di Zang Sheng with just his body.

But out of Heavenly Court, the killer move triple qi retraction would lose such might. No such vigorous triple qi were around in the outside world and they could not be used by Duke Long freely.

That meant, Duke Long’s strength had limitations, he must stay inside Heavenly Court.

However, even though Fang Yuan saw through this weakness, it was useless.

Heaven Overseeing Tower was also inside Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan had to strive to destroy fate Gu, so he could not bypass Heavenly Court or the current Duke Long!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"No matter how strong Duke Long is, he is only one person. Charge! We will attack together, Heavenly Court's defensive line is so wide, let's see how he will defend it." Wu Yong shouted, his sharp gaze containing a trace of restlessness. Duke Long's astonishing performance had already triggered subtle changes in people's hearts, he could not let him act so unbridled!

Wu Yong controlled Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and took the lead, this move immediately made the Immortal Gu Houses around him start attacking once again.

Duke Long snorted, he suddenly disappeared and appeared to block Wu Yong's path. His expression was grim and was about to attack Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building when Dragon Palace also attacked him.

Immortal killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

Duke Long stared with wide eyes as he had no choice but to dodge.

One skill to dominate the world!

Facing the dream path killer move, no matter how strong he was, Duke Long did not dare to test it.

His evasion immediately made Wu Shuai, Wu Yong and others let out a sigh of relief.

Duke Long's mighty image that gave a feeling of being invincible was broken by this action.

The three regions' immortals' falling spirits became concentrated again.

"Fortunately, he dodged it." Thin beads of sweat covered Wu Shuai's head.

Dreamy light smoke might be a dream path killer move but it had a limited strength. Facing such a powerful Duke Long, it was like using a small fish net to capture a giant shark.

Duke Long could not resist dream path killer moves, the giant shark could definitely be trapped, but what about after that? The shark would struggle to break free and could tear the small fish net.

Back to the present, even if Wu Shuai captured Duke Long, it was far beyond Dragon Palace's ability to force such a powerful expert inside the palace, let alone suppress him.

The final conclusion might very well be Dragon Palace crumbling apart while Duke Long would be temporarily trapped inside a dream realm. But there was Feng Jin Huang who could deal with dream realms and quickly rescue Duke Long.

So, Wu Shuai's move was only a bluff. Duke Long took the bait because he was not aware of this dream path killer move's details.

This was also why Gu Immortals kept their killer moves hidden and would not display them easily. And when they showed their killer moves several times, they would actively modify them.

Duke Long retreated, the three regions’ immortals led a massive attack once again under Wu Yong’s lead, using this opportunity to gather and attack.

"Hmph, besides Lord Duke Long, Heavenly Court also has us!"

"You will definitely pay for underestimating us."

"With us around, don’t even think of succeeding."

At the crucial moment, Zhu Que Er, Bai Cang Shui, Zhao Shan He and others of Heavenly Court’s main force stepped forward, welcoming the violent attacks without fearing death.

"A bunch of old geezers. How much time do you even have left?" Hua Cai Yun sneered, countless thunder clouds shot out from beside her.

Boom boom boom!

The thunder clouds detonated ahead of time, they were all accurately intercepted by Yu Zhu Zi.

"How much time? We never cared! As long as we have a breath of life in us, we will crawl out from our graves!" Yu Zhu Zi shouted and pushed forward the back of his hand, a large patch of jade powder flew forward like fog.

"Retreat!" Facing the unknown killer move, Hua Cai Yun did not dare to test it and immediately retreated to be on the safe side.

"We will never lose this battle! Do you know why?" Zhou Xiong Xin wore a white robe and had thick eyebrows and a square face. He used information path methods, shooting out countless white arrows.

"Because since three million years ago, we have always been the pioneers of the eras, the backbone of humanity, the heroes of Central Continent. We will never forget the disgrace of becoming slaves to variant humans, we will never forget that peace is something we have fought for using our lives, and we will never forget that the happiness of the people needs to be guarded by each generation."

"As for you, you are petty people who don’t care about endangering humanity for your selfish interests. Short-sighted fools who cannot even see the future! Come, no matter what methods you have, no matter how many times you attack, you will only receive defeat!"

Zhou Xiong Xin shouted loudly, his endless arrows became stronger with his words; using attack as defense, the arrows forced back Five Elements Grandmaster, Yi Hao Fang, and other rank eights. They could only prioritize defense, the offense they had just started as well as their morale shrank rapidly."

"Look, this is our Heavenly Court’s perseverance!" Zhu Que Er and Prince Feng Xian combined their skills, flames surged and formed a completely new defensive line, firmly blocking the charge of several rank seven Immortal Gu Houses.

"Hmph, a bunch of babbling geezers. The immortal graveyard is already destroyed now, after killing you, let me see who else will stand up in Heavenly Court?" A famous expert in Northern Plains’ history, Liu Hui had just finished speaking when he felt his vision darken.

Duke Long suddenly appeared right before him!

Boom!

Immortal killer move — Dragon Claw Strike!

Liu Hui’s whole body let out a bright green light, his defensive killer move was activated with full power. But it only lasted for a second before it shattered, his whole body was slashed into pieces.

Liu Hui died immediately from Duke Long’s one attack.

Five Elements Grandmaster and others quickly retreated in fright, entering their respective side’s Immortal Gu Houses.

Duke Long swept his gaze around the battlefield and shouted: "You colluded with the otherworldly demon and attempted to overthrow Heavenly Court, you are all traitors to humanity. You don’t understand, even if we battle to the death, our three qi will still remain. This is the grand qi of humanity, it will last forever with mountains and the land itself. Triple qi retraction!"

Boom!!

A huge explosion sounded, the whole sky turned dark. Three qi flocked and gathered into Duke Long’s body from all areas of Heavenly Court.

Duke Long’s translucent blazing qi expanded wildly, giving a heart-shaking feeling to everyone.

Immortal killer move — Great Qi Hand Explosion!

Duke Long stretched his left arm and spread his five fingers, his palm pointed towards a rank seven Immortal Gu House.

At the next moment, he clenched his left hand.

Bam.

Great qi exploded, the rank seven Immortal Gu House split into pieces, exploding into countless fragments. Immortal Gu were all destroyed, the Gu Immortals inside also met with calamity, none survived and only bones, blood, and meat pulp were left behind.

The three regions’ Gu Immortals were horrified and stupefied.

Heavenly Court’s side cheered loudly.

"This is Heavenly Court’s power!" Inside Demon Judgment Board, Qin Ding Ling’s eyes shined brightly. Fang Zheng, however, was silent as he was shaken mentally.

The shock was not only to Duke Long’s strength, there was also a kind of turbulence going on in his mind.

At this moment, Fang Zheng began to understand the spirit of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals!

"Yes." Fang Zheng thought inwardly: "If there were no Heavenly Court in history, could there be the current human race? Generations of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals cleared away obstacles with their blood, making countless sacrifices to bring about the rule of humanity. Comparatively, Fang Yuan and these people disregard the big picture, destroying fate Gu is giving the variant humans a chance to rise up. They are indeed traitors to humanity."

Swish!

Right at this time, a sword light pierced through the battlefield, bringing forth a soft sound and a bloody figure.

Zhu Que Er slowly fell to the ground like a sparrow whose wings were cut, her body was directly slashed into two halves.

Immortal killer move — Five Finger Fist Heart Sword!

It was Fang Yuan! He was sinisterly roaming at the edge of the battlefield in his immemorial sword dragon form.

"Fang Yuan!" Heavenly Court’s immortals were furious.

Fang Yuan sneered: "I am here for my own interests! I don’t give a damn about what you are, you can be noble or insignificant for all I care. Today, I will destroy fate Gu, I will kill whoever dares to stop me, if an immortal blocks me, I will slay the immortal, if a demon comes, I will slaughter the demon in my way! Heavenly Court? Since you obstruct my path, you will meet with the same outcome!"

"Hmph, demon! You need to be executed!"

"Kill him!"

"Murderer, I will crush you to pieces!!"

Heavenly Court’s immortals cursed.

Roar—!

Di Zang Sheng recovered and collided into the defensive line again.

Dragon Palace cooperated and used dreamy light smoke.

Wherever the dream path killer move went, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals evaded. Feng Jiu Ge gave a light sigh, activating a killer move and turning it into a song warrior.

The song warrior threw itself into the dreamy light smoke. Dreamy light smoke thus had no more offensive ability and returned like a python that had eaten its fill.

Feng Jiu Ge could not directly break the dream path killer move, but he was able to block it by using this method.

Destiny song resounded once again, Di Zang Sheng roared discontentedly but was without options, and was once again suppressed by Feng Jiu Ge.

Far away, Spectral Soul and his servants had already arrived in front of a treasury.

Looking back at the battlefield, Fairy Zi Wei sighed: "I did not think triple qi retraction still had this use. Duke Long’s battle strength has risen to an astonishing level. Adding on Feng Jiu Ge’s assistance, Heavenly Court’s defensive line looks to be on the verge of collapse but is actually able to keep on lasting."

According to overall strength, Heavenly Court was naturally stronger.

But they had to defend Heaven Overseeing Tower and were thus extremely passive, even Duke Long was shackled by this.

Duke Long could easily kill rank eight Gu Immortals or rank seven Immortal Gu Houses, and Fang Yuan could similarly kill Heavenly Court members easily by using five finger fist heart sword. Duke Long had to leave the defensive line and choose to fight Fang Yuan far away.

If these two were allowed to attack the other side’s Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan would not feel even a little heartache, but Heavenly Court needed enough manpower to defend the place. Duke Long would never let Fang Yuan continue his slaughter.

On the contrary, if Fang Yuan endured Duke Long’s attacks, wholeheartedly attacking Heavenly Court’s main force was also an option. But if he chose to do this, he would have to bear Duke Long’s heavy attacks. Fang Yuan was not willing to do this, after all, he and the other three regions’ Gu Immortals allied only because of the situation. Sacrificing himself for them was too stupid and too risky.

Thus, Fang Yuan and Duke Long pinned down each other.

Feng Jiu Ge instead became the core of the battle, he took charge of Heaven Overseeing Tower’s defense while blocking Dragon Palace and Di Zang Sheng. His battle strength surpassed both enemies and allies’ expectations time and again.

Old Man Zheng Yuan narrowed his eyes: "Now, we just have to see who can break the stalemate. The crucial point is fate Gu. Heavenly Court has already harvested the success dao marks, but the refinement path Gu formation is destroyed, can Yuan Qiong Du alone be able to restore fate Gu in time? Master, if we interfere now, can’t we seize fate Gu?"

Spectral Soul laughed: "What will we gain by snatching it? Don’t think that they are fighting with all they have got, they are still holding back. There is more to this situation than meets the eye! The past venerables have gotten involved in this battle. We will talk after plundering this treasury and getting back the Door of Life and Death."

"Yes, master!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

On the side of a sect’s mountain, the landscape was green, clear water flowed by it and birds’ chirping could be heard.

"Little Du, what are you lying on the ground for?" A gentle and soft voice could be heard.

"Senior sister." The young Yuan Qiong Du opened his eyes and saw a girl bending over to look at him with her bright and smiling eyes.

The girl’s gaze moved to Little Du’s hand and let out a gasp: "Wha, Little Du, you refined a rank three Gu again. You are really amazing."

"But I am not happy, you know I don’t like cultivating refinement path." Yuan Qiong Du stood up while mumbling.

"Don’t be so dispirited, your talent is envied by so many people." The girl patted his shoulder and consoled.

But Yuan Qiong Du was still dispirited and his head slumped forward.

"Haha, how about this, I will share a secret with you. Few days ago, I found clues to a Gu Master inheritance in my father’s study room, it is hidden at some corner of the mountain. What do you think, do you want to search for it?" Senior sister’s beautiful gaze turned towards Yuan Qiong Du.

As expected, teenage Yuan Qiong Du could not endure boredom, his eyes brightened when he heard what was said: "There is such a fun thing? Wonderful, our sect’s mountain has inheritances left behind by predecessors after all. Gu Immortal inheritances are extremely rare but Gu Master inheritances are plentiful. Tell me the clues quickly, senior sister."

"Okay. The clue is a line of a poem, I have been pondering about it these few days, I will read it to you." Senior sister did not conceal it, and this was only a Gu Master inheritance. Her father was also Yuan Qiong Du’s master, a Gu Immortal existence.

Yuan Qiong Du clapped his hands after hearing it just once: "I understand. The clue is solved like this, match the first and last characters, then match second and the second last characters; it gives us a location."

Senior sister pondered for a bit and jumped with joy: "So it is there! Little Du, you are really smart, you guessed it immediately."

"Let’s go find it quickly." Yuan Qiong Du moved ahead.

"Wait for me." Senior sister quickly followed.

"Don’t worry, senior sister, I will give this inheritance to you, I won’t snatch it from you, haha." Yuan Qiong Du’s figure disappeared into the depths of the mountain forest.

Finally, the two found the inheritance inside a mountain cave.

"This is a fire path inheritance." Yuan Qiong Du and his senior sister inspected the inheritance carefully: "Will flame? A fire that uses will as the fuel. This method is quite original and stunning. How did the Gu Master who created it think of this? Interesting. Eh, this name, how could it be master?"

Yuan Qiong Du was extremely surprised.

Senior sister also felt surprised, saying uncertainly: "They might just have the same name?"

Yuan Qiong Du, however, pondered and his eyes shone: "Maybe not! Senior sister, I remember you saying that you found this clue in master’s study room."

"Yes, I was tidying up father’s bamboo scrolls, you know my father’s hobby is to collect these antiques. And by chance, a bamboo stick slipped from an aged scroll, and on it was the inheritance clue." Senior sister recalled her memory.

"This inheritance was set up by me when I was young." Right at this time, Yuan Qiong Du’s master slowly walked into the cave and appeared before Yuan Qiong Du.

Walking alongside him was Yuan Qiong Du’s sect uncle, who was short in stature, had a round face, and looked amiable.

Yuan Qiong Du and his senior sister quickly bowed and greeted at the same time: "We pay respects to master (father) and sect uncle."

Yuan Qiong Du curled up his lips: "Master, are you making fun of your disciples?"

"Of course not." His master shook his head, looking at the inheritance in Yuan Qiong Du’s hand with a trace of reminiscence.

"Hahaha, you clever brat." The fat sect uncle pointed at Yuan Qiong Du: "Your master and I just returned from Spirit Resonance Peak, we were just chatting along the way when we discovered your traces. I can guarantee that this inheritance was indeed left by your master during his youth. He wholeheartedly liked fire path back then and used five years to painstakingly gather primeval stones and purchase a rank three fire path Gu."

"But master clearly cultivates water path." Yuan Qiong Du’s eyes were wide open, having not expected his master also liked fire path, like him, when he was young.

"There was no other choice." The fat sect uncle sighed: "Our sect’s water path inheritance required an inheritor. How could an individual’s preference compare to the sect’s situation? Every Gu Immortal inheritance needs to be inherited from generation to generation. Every inheritor will improve the inheritance on the foundation of their predecessor, making the inheritance keep up with the times and not be eliminated. This is our responsibility. When your master gave up fire path, he personally arranged this inheritance. I was there at that time and saw him crying his eyes out."

"Cough cough." Yuan Qiong Du’s master interrupted: "Since you two discovered this inheritance, then it shall belong to you. Let’s go."

The two seniors left, leaving behind Yuan Qiong Du and his senior sister in the cave.

"Junior brother, I cultivate wood path, I don’t need this, so I will give it to you." Senior sister also said goodbye to Yuan Qiong Du.

Yuan Qiong Du gazed at the inheritance in his hand, slight waves undulated in his heart as he mumbled: "Master..."

He opened his eyes again.

Yuan Qiong Du saw that he was still inside Heaven Overseeing Tower.

"Damn it! I suffered a backlash during the refinement and fainted!" Yuan Qiong Du’s heart pounded madly as he recalled the scene.

The biggest taboo in Gu refinement was to be disturbed. It did not matter how heavy his injuries were, the main thing was whether fate Gu was alright or not. This was related to the plan that Heavenly Court had been executing for millions of years!

Yuan Qiong Du was almost already without hope.

As the only Gu Immortal to refine Gu, he had actually fainted. Could fate Gu, that was the target of the refinement, be unharmed?

Fate Gu would not be destroyed because of this, but it was very likely that most of the previous restoration results would disappear, it might even return to the original damaged state.

Right now, Yuan Qiong Du could only hope fate Gu’s situation was slightly better, his and Heavenly Court’s countless years of efforts must not go to waste.

But when Yuan Qiong Du raised his head to look at fate Gu, he was stunned.

"What?!"

A lump of fire had taken his place in the Gu refinement, fate Gu was quietly lying in the fire and was just half a step away from complete recovery.

After the shock, warmth surged in Yuan Qiong Du’s heart.

This was his will flame!

A fire which used will as fuel, he had obtained it from his master’s inheritance when he was young. Later on, he cultivated refinement path but did not forget fire path as well, he continued to improve the will flame and developed it to immortal level.

"Will flame has already become my most familiar and most skilled Gu refinement method. I probably activated will flame unconsciously when I fainted!" Yuan Qiong Du guessed.

This was not the first time this happened. In fact, throughout his life, in his countless Gu refinement experiences, there were many times when will flame took his place in emergencies. Every time he was unable to hold on, he would activate will flame to temporarily replace him and stabilize the situation.

After countless times, using will flame at the crucial times had already become his subconscious habit.

Yuan Qiong Du let out a breath of air.

He looked at the burning will flame quietly while thinking: "Rather than calling it a habit, more accurately, this is a type of responsibility."

He thought of his master and smiled: "Responsibility... Master, looks like I haven’t disappointed you."

Yuan Qiong Du knew his condition, his injuries were too heavy and he was not able to continue the Gu refinement. But hope was in front of him, he used his last bit of life and willpower to reinforce this lump of will flame.

"Burn, burn more." Yuan Qiong Du mumbled, he used his own life to light the will flame!

The will flame burned quietly, the fire brightened and became extremely stable.

Inside the fire, fate Gu finally moved past the final step, it achieved complete recovery!

While Yuan Qiong Du was already lifeless.

Like his master, like his senior sister, and like the countless Heavenly Court’s seniors, they had given their blood and sweat for the cause of Heavenly Court, using their own lives to build the foundation of Heavenly Court!

He was a true hero even in death!

Heavenly Court’s foundation, the large Central Continent was paved with blood and sacrifices.

The will flame dissipated.

"Hehehe." Cong Yan’s weak laughter resounded in the quiet top floor of Heaven Overseeing Tower: "Yuan Qiong Du has already accomplished his task, it is our turn now."

"But with our state, even transmitting our voices is troublesome, let alone activating Heaven Overseeing Tower." Che Wei said, his tone was quiet and deep.

Cong Yan replied back almost as if he was not worried: "There is still a way. The immortal essence remaining in my aperture is enough for me to activate my trump card, isn’t it so coincidental?"

Che Wei and Cong Yan were close friends, Che Wei immediately realized Cong Yan’s meaning: "Don’t do this, if you absorb my injuries, you will die immediately."

"What is there to fear about death? Right now, our companions are fighting outside, the defensive line is on the verge of collapsing, they probably don’t have the chance to send anyone else. Brother Che Wei, we have known each other for many years, your abilities are stronger than mine. But your journey has not been completed yet, you will soon create your own path, I really look forward to it... but it is such a pity that I won’t be able to witness it."

As Cong Yan spoke lightly, a light blue radiance spread from his body and covered Che Wei.

The two Gu Immortals had wounds everywhere, even their bones and flesh were smashed in. But following the blue light’s effect, Che Wei’s body began to recover while Cong Yan’s became more severe.

"My friend..." Che Wei closed his eyes before opening them, two trails of tears flowed down quietly.

Cong Yan was dead, Che Wei’s injuries were still severe but he used all his strength to barely crawl towards fate Gu.

"Activate, activate... I beg of you." Che Wei’s vision turned dark, he poured in all his immortal essence and could only pray quietly at this point.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

A long time seemed to have passed, but it was only an instant.

The grand Heaven Overseeing Tower began to slowly let out a pure-white light, the light gradually grew brighter and began to rise.

Several breaths later, the light shot to the sky and illuminated the whole battlefield like an emperor had descended!

The chaotic and violent battlefield paused immediately.

Almost all Gu Immortals raised their heads and looked towards Heaven Overseeing Tower.

The three regions’ Gu Immortals were pale and ashen, while tears and snot flowed down the faces of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals.

"Rank nine fate Gu has been restored!"

"Yuan Qiong Du did not fail us! He did it! This is too amazing."

"Heaven Overseeing Tower has returned to its peak state, we have won!"

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals cheered, their morale rose to the peak at once.

"Retreat, retreat!" Be it Wu Yong, Yao Huang, or Shen Cong Sheng and others, they all shouted to retreat with no intent to battle.

Bing Sai Chuan was still controlling Calamity Luck Altar, he transmitted his voice to Fang Yuan with an unresigned expression: "Do something quickly!"

Fang Yuan’s immemorial sword dragon transformation, however, began to retreat rapidly.

Duke Long gave up on Fang Yuan and used dragon gate to rapidly travel to Heaven Overseeing Tower.

"Fate Gu, fate Gu..." When he saw the completely intact fate Gu, he could not restrain his intense emotions anymore, tears flowed down as if he was released from a heavy burden.

The one who had injured fate Gu back then was his disciple Red Lotus, to make up for this mistake, Duke Long resolved himself and took on the heavy responsibility of restoring fate Gu.

"Hong Ting, master has atoned for your mistake. I did not let down Heavenly Court, I did not let down humanity!" Duke Long took deep breaths before he regained his cool. He looked outside the tower with a sharp gaze.

"Now, it is time for you all to die!" Duke Long shouted and activated Heaven Overseeing Tower’s strongest offensive method.

Immortal killer move — Fate Vanquish!

Light, light that filled heaven and earth, it was omnipresent, illuminating the universe and people’s hearts.

In just an instance, all the rank seven Immortal Gu Houses in the battlefield crumbled, the Gu Immortals inside fortunately survived.

Even Calamity Luck Altar and Dragon Palace were in miserable states. Bing Sai Chuan, Wu Shuai, Zhan Bu Du and others immediately used all their efforts in repairing the Immortal Gu Houses.

The surviving historical rank eight experts of Northern Plains dissipated after the light shone on them.

Countless year beasts and swordsmen of Fang Yuan that caused disaster to Heavenly Court were mostly destroyed, blood flowed like a river.

Mao Li Qiu’s perfect pair killer move was forcefully broken, Di Zang Sheng was suppressed to the ground and was actually unable to get up immediately!

Only Fang Yuan’s immemorial sword dragon form was completely safe.

He was a complete otherworldly demon who could not be targeted by the killer move fate vanquish and had a natural immunity towards it!

"Only you remain now, Fang Yuan!" Duke Long stared at the immemorial sword dragon with an intense killing intent and hatred.

It was this otherworldly demon that destroyed the immortal graveyard, destroying the largest portion of the millions of years of foundation of Heavenly Court!

This sin could not be forgiven, he must suffer a cruel death!

Boom—!

Duke Long flew out of Heaven Overseeing Tower and pierced through the sky towards Fang Yuan.

"Block him, stop Fang Yuan!" Duke Long roared, his voice resonated throughout the whole Heavenly Court.

Destiny song started in time as Fang Yuan’s retreating speed fell sharply.

Immortal killer move — Qi Current Scissors!

Duke Long neared and opened his palm; countless sharp qi currents formed extremely sharp qi blades that shrouded Fang Yuan like a storm.

Fang Yuan canceled reverse flow protection seal and charged through the qi blades’ encirclement, leaving behind a bloody trail in the sky.

Myriad Year Flying Warship quickly flew over and reunited with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan stepped on the deck and transformed into the immemorial year monkey, he then turned around and waved his arm. Immortal killer move — Summer Fan!

Wild winds surged, scattering all of the qi current scissors.

Fang Yuan stomped on the deck, Myriad Year Flying Warship gave off a buzzing sound and let out dazzling radiance as it activated a time path killer move — Myriad Year Hunting.

Splash splash splash.

The River of Time phantom under Myriad Year Flying Warship continued to bubble, countless year beasts were summoned once again and participated in the battle, spreading out everywhere.

At this time, Feng Jiu Ge moved ahead of Duke Long.

Immortal killer move — Submission Song!

Immortal killer move — Song Warrior!

Submission song’s power condensed into human form as it ran amok through the army of countless year beasts. Wherever it went, the year beasts, regardless of strong or weak, betrayed Fang Yuan and submitted to Feng Jiu Ge.

"Great job!" Even Duke Long felt surprised and joyous at this sight.

Previously, Feng Jiu Ge had been using destiny song mainly to maintain the battlefield and was unable to use other methods. Now that there was a chance, he immediately showed his abundant methods.

Duke Long once again neared Myriad Year Flying Warship and used killer moves like world shaking dragon hammer alternately, destroying daybreak swords. Cracks spread in Myriad Year Flying Warship and large numbers of Gu worms died instantly.

Fang Yuan was forced to retreat again and again, he had to use all his strength to repair Myriad Year Flying Warship while also blocking Duke Long and Feng Jiu Ge’s joint attacks.

"It is our turn to counterattack!" Prince Feng Xian led the wave of counterattack.

A sharp phoenix cry resounded, his whole body transformed into a phoenix. He spread his wings and flew, fire burned everywhere he went and turned into a sea of fire.

Bai Cang Shui attacked almost at the same time from the other end of the defensive line, pale towering waves shot out.

Jun Shen Guang was like a meteor as he moved across the battlefield.

Zhou Xiong Xin was accompanied by fierce information path tigers. Vortex Space Boy and Ye Qiao Zi attacked together. Zhao Shan He and Yu Zhu Zi once again used sitting and eating the mountain empty against the enemy Immortal Gu Houses.

Previously, because of Duke Long’s might, the three regions’ Gu Immortals were all withdrawn inside the Immortal Gu Houses.

Facing Heavenly Court’s wave of counterattacks, Calamity Luck Altar, Dragon Palace, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, and other Immortal Gu Houses were unable to resist and retreated while fighting.

Heavenly Court’s side continued to push with Heaven Overseeing Tower and Demon Judgment Board as the cores, continuously reducing the movement area of the three regions’ Gu Immortals.

Qin Ding Ling also flew out of Demon Judgment Board and used all kinds of luck path methods to amplify her side’s offenses to the maximum degree. After all, the enemy Gu Immortals were hiding inside Immortal Gu Houses, they could not attack casually and had to use the Immortal Gu Houses’ methods.

The three regions’ Gu Immortals were forced to retreat again and again, their conditions were already bad because of fate vanquish. Most of the Gu Immortals had to concentrate on repairing the Immortal Gu Houses, they could only endure the beating passively.

With no alternatives, Mao Li Qiu, Wu Yong, and some others took the risk to fly out of the Immortal Gu Houses and fought Heavenly Court’s side to strive for precious time for the repair of the Immortal Gu Houses.

"Hold on! If we can’t hold on now, leaving Heavenly Court will only be wishful thinking."

"Be careful of Heaven Overseeing Tower, especially fate vanquish!"

"How is Fang Yuan’s situation? Only he can resist fate vanquish."

Like in the previous life, the immortals entrusted their hopes to Fang Yuan once again.

Despite many of the Gu Immortals hating Fang Yuan, the current situation forced them to rely on him.

But what disappointed the immortals was that Fang Yuan’s situation was also similarly bad.

He was being pincer-attacked by Feng Jiu Ge and Duke Long, he was barely resisting the attacks with the help of Myriad Year Flying Warship.

The killer move fate vanquish with fate Gu as the core had no effect on Fang Yuan. But Feng Jiu Ge’s destiny song that was only rank eight was of an even higher plane, it not only included fate but also contained luck.

Luck was naturally effective against Fang Yuan. Before this, Fang Yuan had used luck path methods many times to help in his cultivation.

Destiny song was effective against Fang Yuan, greatly weakening him, almost offsetting the amplification from heroes among people.

On the contrary, Duke Long could not enjoy heroes among people but he was empowered by heavenly dragon’s last stand, triple qi retraction, and destiny song, increasing his battle strength to an unimaginably shocking level.

With Duke Long attacking and Feng Jiu Ge supporting him, Fang Yuan was unable to take them head-on and had to retreat again and again.

"Heavenly Court cannot be defeated!" Duke Long’s punches and kicks exploded the air as they landed on Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was like a small raft in a storm, it was sent flying and crashed on the ground.

"Fang Yuan, here’s another move for you." Duke Long charged down like a meteor, wanting to collide directly.

Fang Yuan looked at the sky and snorted, golden lights shone around Myriad Year Flying Warship as the Twelve Zodiac battle formation separated and transformed into a grey stone giant.

The giant stood on Heavenly Court’s ground and waved its hands, attacking Duke Long head-on.

Boom!

An explosion rang, Duke Long collided with the giant. Killer moves clashed, creating a powerful explosion.

The terrifying heat wave inflated like a giant balloon before bursting on the spot.

Tornadoes and shock waves engulfed everything, Fang Yuan and the almost crumbling Myriad Year Flying Warship retreated smoothly using this propulsion force.

Whoosh.

Wind roared as Duke Long’s monstrously tall figure suddenly appeared behind Fang Yuan.

Immortal killer move — World Shaking Dragon Hammer!

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk rapidly, he did not have the time to even turn around as he activated reverse flow protection seal.

Rumble!

Reverse flow protection seal finally reached its limits and broke apart.

Fang Yuan suffered Duke Long’s attack, although he had transformed into the immemorial year monkey, his back was almost pierced.

The enormous force sent Fang Yuan flying. After he fell to the ground, his body was dragged along the ground, leaving behind a long trail of blood and only stopping after crashing through three Immortal Gu Houses.

Duke Long gave a muffled groan, his body was shaking. Reverse flow protection seal reflected external attacks, the strength he struck Fang Yuan was also reflected to him in full, he had to suffer an even more serious impact than Fang

Yuan. After all, Fang Yuan had reverse flow protection seal to weaken the strength of the attack as well as the powerful body of the immemorial year monkey.

Duke Long panted heavily, he was not able to move immediately and concentrated on healing his wounds quickly.

At the edge of the battlefield, the immortal treasury was already looted clean by Spectral Soul and his servants, but they had yet to find the Door of Life and Death.

"Strange, the Door of Life and Death was clearly placed here." Fairy Zi Wei frowned.

"Looks like Duke Long has hidden many things from you." Spectral Soul said coldly. The Door of Life and Death was a secluded domain of heaven and earth and contained countless souls. Its importance to Spectral Soul was huge, but unfortunately, they could not find it.

"Master, Fang Yuan is not able to hold on, do we give him a hand to maintain the stalemate and get more time for ourselves?" Old Man Zheng Yuan asked.

Spectral Soul gazed at the battlefield and when he saw Fang Yuan’s position, he suddenly smiled: "There is no hurry, there is still a venerable who has not made a move yet."

Fang Yuan was collapsed in his own pool of blood in front of Embroidered Tower.

Three blood skins of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable were sewn in the air. Blown by the violent winds of the battlefield, these three blood skins actually loosened and waved around like banners.

In an instant, Fang Yuan sniffed a dense, fishy stench of blood!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan’s whole body was bathed in blood and filled with injuries. He snorted coldly and stood up, looking at Embroidered Tower in front of him.

Embroidered Tower was originally a mortal object that was left by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable to his disciple Star Constellation as her dowry. But according to the customs back then, its symbolic meaning was much greater. Later, when Star Constellation became Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, she turned Embroidered Tower into an Immortal Gu House that had extremely mystical powers.

Over a million years ago, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable invaded Heavenly Court. He stormed through Heavenly Court, passing Immortal Emperor Court, Hidden Space Pavilion, Sumeru Lake, Eternal Sand Cave, Million Heavenly King Gallery, Embroidered Tower, Central Great Hall, and finally stopping at Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable suffered some loss when he reached Embroidered Tower, Embroidered Tower used its trump card method — Dao Embroidery. Seven embroidery needles flew out elegantly. Reckless Savage Demon Venerable was forced to discard three pieces of his skin before he was able to go past it.

These three bloody skins were sewn into the air by countless dao mark threads.

After that, Embroidered Tower’s damage could not be repaired. And later, it was used to attack Spectral Soul in Yi Tian Mountain, the new damage added to the previous ones. This damage ruined Embroidered Tower and it could not be of any use right now.

Not only Fang Yuan, even Duke Long and other Gu Immortals saw the movement of the three bloody skins in the air above Embroidered Tower!

They looked like three bloody banners, fluttering savagely in the wind.

The left banner had a bird drawn on it, the bird had six legs but no wings.

The middle bloody banner had a drawing of a beast which was getting increasingly clearer. It opened its mouth but had no teeth.

The right bloody skin had a fish, it grew increasingly vivid and lifelike but it was clear that it had no gills.

Blood skins made wild sounds like an ancient gale that crossed a million years and roared in people’s ears. Or like a grand army that went to battle, clashes and collisions of steel and horses resounded!

The blood banners’ fluttering continued to amplify in commotion, they were like volcanoes that had been suppressed for countless years or like wild beasts that had accumulated their energy and was about to strike their prey!

Roar—!

The wild beasts roared.

They violently broke the dao mark threads that bound them, and turned into three blood red lights that landed around Fang Yuan.

Three beastly bizarre and resounding roars sounded and the blood red light dissipated, revealing three enormous beasts.

A glowing monstrous yellow bird that was like a small mountain, its six legs were thick and rough, its beak was hard and long, but it had no wings.

An azure-blue leopard with a big belly was sprawled on the ground, it kept on yawning and one could see it did not have even a single tooth.

And a fish with dark green scales was floating in the air, its head was raised high and its mouth was closed tightly. There was no trace of gills next to its eyes. The huge fish was motionless like a jade statue.

The immortals were shaken, even Duke Long’s expression turned solemn as he halted his attacks.

"There is an abnormality in the three bloody skins left by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable!"

"These three monsters have such shocking auras."

"Did Fang Yuan trigger a venerable’s method?"

"Wait a second, these three monsters, why do they resemble those three recorded in \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e?"

\u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e, chapter four states —

Ren Zu wandered alone on the vast land, his hair was disheveled and he seemed to have lost his mind: at times, he wailed, at times, he sat down in a daze, and at times, he laughed like a fool.

Fate Gu’s manipulation had separated him from his children, he also lost wealth Gu, Ren Zu was forced into a state of madness.

"Who am I? Where am I? What am I doing?" Ren Zu was at a loss and went crazy again.

One morning, a group of birds ran past Ren Zu.

These birds did not have wings, their six legs moved alternately as they ran on the ground, raising clouds of dust in their path.

Ren Zu jumped with joy when he saw these birds.

"So I am a bird!" He also spread his legs and ran wildly, joining the bird group.

The birds growled strangely towards Ren Zu: "You are a human, you use two legs to walk, you are not a bird. Leave, don’t disturb us, we are pursuing freedom Gu, we want to retrieve our freedom."

Ren Zu asked: "Why are you all searching for freedom Gu?"

The birds said with a heavy tone: "We once possessed freedom Gu, but we did not realize that. Only after losing it, we found that we no longer had wings and could not fly anymore. When we regain freedom, we will be able to spread our wings and soar to the sky again."

Ren Zu realized: "I understand, humans also need freedom. If humans don’t have freedom, they will be like birds who have lost their wings."

"Right! I remember now!" Ren Zu clapped and laughed madly: "I also need to search for freedom to get rid of fate’s shackles. After that, I can go wherever I want to go, and be with whomever I want to be forever."

The birds casted a strange look at Ren Zu: "Oh human, how can you have such preposterous thoughts?"

"Look at us, how can birds not have wings? So, chasing after freedom is part of our duty."

"But you humans are destined to be alone, all gatherings will end up in separation. Oh human, you want to pursue freedom but you also need to abide by your nature, you should not indulge in wild fantasies."

Ren Zu scratched his head, puzzled: "Is that how it works?"

The birds left behind their last words: "Oh human, let us give you some sincere advice. If you obtain freedom in the future, you must cherish it, don’t be like us and let go. Don’t let freedom Gu fly away, otherwise you will regret it."

After Ren Zu parted ways with the birds, he slowly forgot his identity and goals once again.

One afternoon, a leap of blue leopards passed by him.

The insane Ren Zu saw the group of leopards and shouted in joy: "So I am a leopard."

Ren Zu rushed into the group.

But the leopards pushed him away and shouted: "You are a human, not a leopard. You use two legs to walk, while we have four legs. Leave, don’t disturb us. We are pursuing freedom Gu, we want to retrieve our freedom."

Ren Zu asked: "Why are you searching for freedom Gu?"

The blue leopards looked depressed: "Sigh, we once possessed freedom Gu, but we did not realize it. Only after losing it, we found that we no longer had teeth and could not bite and tear apart our prey. When we regain freedom, we will be able to eat happily again."

Ren Zu realized: "I understand, humans also need freedom. If humans don’t have freedom, they will be like beasts with no teeth."

"Right!" Ren Zu clapped and laughed madly: "I need to search for freedom to get rid of fate’s shackles. I will possess countless delicacies and wines, endless wealth, and all kinds of comfortable and beautiful clothes."

The blue leopards were stunned before laughing loudly as they mocked Ren Zu: "Oh human, how can you have such preposterous thoughts?"

"Look at us, how can beasts not have fangs or claws? So, chasing after freedom is part of our duty."

"But you humans were born with empty hands and will pass away with nothing. Oh human, you want to pursue freedom but you also need to abide by your nature, you should not indulge in wild fantasies."

Ren Zu scratched his head, unsatisfied: "Is that how it works?"

The leopards left behind their final words: "Oh human, let us give you some sincere advice. If you obtain freedom in the future, you must cherish it, don’t be like us and let go. Don’t let freedom Gu fly away, otherwise you will regret it."

After Ren Zu parted ways with the leopards, he slowly forgot his identity and goals once again.

One evening, a school of fish swam past him.

Ren Zu saw the fish and shouted in joy: "So I am a fish."

Ren Zu joined the fish group and tried to swim like them.

There was a commotion in the fish group as they pushed Ren Zu away and shouted: "You are a human, not a fish. You use two legs to walk, while we have no legs. Leave, don’t disturb us. We are pursuing freedom Gu, we want to retrieve our freedom."

Ren Zu asked: "Why are you searching for freedom Gu?"

The fish sighed: "We once possessed freedom Gu, but we did not realize that. Only after losing it, we found that we no longer had gills and could not breathe in the water again. When we regain freedom, we will be able to swim in the water again."

Ren Zu realized: "I understand, humans also need freedom. If humans don’t have freedom, they will be like fish with no gills and cannot breathe."

"Right!" Ren Zu clapped and laughed madly: "I need to search for freedom to get rid of fate’s shackles. I will breathe freely and live on forever, I want eternal life!"

The fish sneered: "Oh human, how can you have such preposterous thoughts?"

"Look at us, a fish must have gills, so chasing after freedom is part of our duty."

"But you humans are destined to have no relation with eternal life, you will die of old age and illnesses. Oh human, you want to pursue freedom but you also need to abide by your nature, you should not indulge in wild fantasies."

Ren Zu frowned, feeling irritated: "Is that how it works?"

The fishes left behind their final words: "Oh human, let us give you some sincere advice. If you obtain freedom in the future, you must cherish it, don’t be like us and let go. Don’t let freedom Gu fly away, otherwise you will regret it."

After Ren Zu parted ways with the fishes, he slowly forgot the advice of the birds, leopards, and the fish.

"I am a human, I need to pursue freedom!"

"I need to get rid of the shackles of fate, I want to live forever with my loved ones, I want to enjoy life with enough wealth, I want to live on forever."

Many beings that walked past Ren Zu heard him, they shook their heads and stayed away from him.

"Let’s quickly leave, he is Ren Zu and he is talking nonsense again."

"He has already gone mad completely."

"How could he dare to have such thoughts?"

One day, freedom Gu flew towards Ren Zu on its own accord.

Ren Zu was joyous as he grabbed it.

"Oh freedom, I finally obtained freedom." Ren Zu was extremely happy but also felt puzzled as he asked freedom Gu: "This is really strange, the wingless birds are pursuing you, the toothless beasts are pursuing you, the gill-less fish are pursuing you, but you flew to me, what is going on here?"

Freedom Gu replied: "I didn’t fly to you, human, you once used attitude Gu to bully me, used love to bind me, and used wealth to bribe me. I loathe and hate you! I flew over because I was attracted by the cognition Gu on you."

Cognition Gu floated out of Ren Zu’s body and explained with a smile: "Ren Zu, because you have gone mad, you are thinking deliriously all the time. A human that desires companionship forever, a human who has an extravagant hope of living a life with no worries, a human who pursues eternal life; what else can this be other than a lunatic?"

Freedom Gu sighed: "Freedom of cognition is the greatest freedom. These delirious thoughts can strengthen me. Ren Zu, although you captured me, I will never work for you. Release me now!"

Ren Zu shook his head and grasped even tighter: "Freedom Gu, I will not let you go."

Freedom Gu sneered: "Then prepare yourself, don’t collapse from the pressure."

The moment it finished speaking, responsibility Gu flew over, pressing on Ren Zu’s shoulder.

"Heavy, so heavy!" Ren Zu almost bent over from the pressure.

Cognition Gu sighed: "Freedom and responsibility coexist, oh Ren Zu, you want to obtain freedom so you need to shoulder the responsibility. At least, you need to be responsible for yourself."

Ren Zu clenched his teeth and persevered, sweat flowed down his body like a river, soon, he knelt down on the ground.

He saw spider webs again.

Fate Gu’s spider silk wrapped around his whole body. Ren Zu was barely shouldering the heavy responsibility and had no strength to break free from the spider silk’s bindings.

Fate Gu’s spider silk constricted tightly, forming blood wounds everywhere on Ren Zu’s body.

Ren Zu shouted: "What is going on?"

Cognition Gu explained: "Oh human, the more freedom you experience, the more you will feel the restriction around you."

Freedom Gu laughed: "Just let me go, the longer you hold on to me, the more spider silk will bind you, the binding will become tighter and will even constrict you to death!"

Ren Zu shook his head: "No, I won’t let go, oh freedom Gu, I must have you!"

Countless spider silk pierced into Ren Zu’s flesh, Ren Zu howled in pain and rolled on the ground but did not let go.

"Hahaha!" Ren Zu began laughing foolishly again: "I can sense a Gu far away. Just this feeling alone makes me happy and satisfied."

Cognition Gu admitted frankly: "That is natural. Whoever obtains freedom Gu will also be able to sense the location of happiness Gu."

Ren Zu continued to persevere, he cried in pain at times and laughed happily at other times. The spider silk constricted tightly, tearing into his bones and leaving deep marks on them, but Ren Zu still did not loosen his hands.

In the end, he fainted from the pain.

After a long time, he slowly woke up.

Fate Gu’s spider silk was no longer constricting him, responsibility Gu also did not exert heavy pressure, while cognition Gu had disappeared.

"Wait, what about freedom Gu?" Ren Zu did not sense freedom Gu’s existence, and in his moment of panic, he opened his hands.

The moment a gap appeared, freedom Gu flew away and left Ren Zu behind.

Humans often did not understand freedom when they possessed it, only after losing it, they would come to a sudden realization.

Ren Zu was stunned when he saw freedom Gu flying away, he remembered the advice of the birds, leopards, and fish, he felt extremely regretful.

He tore out his hair painfully and rolled on the ground.

"I am better off dead." Ren Zu was overwhelmed with grief: "I would rather lose love, I would rather lose my life, I don’t want to lose freedom!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In Heavenly Court’s battlefield, be they enemies or allies, everyone’s gazes were gathered at one place!

Fang Yuan looked around him, he was surrounded by the three giant monsters. But the three giant monsters did not do anything to him, they were instead guarding him and looking at the surroundings with hostility, their affiliation could be seen with one glance.

"Reckless Savage Demon Venerable..." Fang Yuan’s expression was one of shock.

"Even if Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s method is helping you, you will still be defeated!!" Duke Long shouted, his voice resounding throughout the surroundings. He swooped down from the air like a red meteor, his determination did not waver even in front of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s method — He was going to exterminate all demons, he would quell all opposition in the world!

Immortal killer move — Qi Breath Mountain.

Duke Long’s palms aimed at Fang Yuan from afar and pushed.

Rumble!

With a loud sound, a giant qi mountain pressed down towards Fang Yuan and the three monsters.

Through triple qi retraction, Duke Long had a massive amount of qi path dao marks. Right now, all his qi path killer moves like qi breath mountain had their power amplified by countless times.

This qi mountain was much larger than before, its composition was also extremely solid. Be it in quality or quantity, both had a breakthrough!

Seeing this scene, whether it was Wu Yong, Bing Sai Chuan or others, they all revealed solemn expressions.

Just this qi breath mountain was difficult to resist, the best method was to dodge. But after qi breath mountain, there was a monstrous expert like Duke Long who could block all escape routes!

Fang Yuan clenched his teeth and was about to move.

But right at this moment, one of the three monsters transformed from the blood skins, the giant blue leopard, suddenly opened its mouth and took a deep breath.

Boom.

The whole qi breath mountain shrank rapidly and was absorbed by some formless force into the blue leopard’s belly!

The immortals were given a great shock, food path cultivator Zhao Shan He’s pupils shrank as he saw signs of food path from the blue leopard’s body.

Even Duke Long was stunned.

This powerful qi breath mountain was actually broken this directly.

After the blue leopard swallowed the qi breath mountain, its shriveled belly bulged by ten percent. Its eyes glistened as it stared at Duke Long with a chilling gaze like it was looking at a luxurious dinner!

Duke Long was utterly fearless, the three monsters might be unfathomable, but he still charged towards Fang Yuan. His speed even increased, bursting the air and producing sonic booms.

Fang Yuan was fully prepared for combat when one of the three monsters, the green fish, moved.

It only waved its tail slightly when it appeared before Duke Long all of a sudden. Its speed was so fast that it looked like instant teleportation, but it did not feel abrupt at all, everything happened smoothly and fluidly!

Duke Long’s field of vision had been wide a second ago, but now, his whole sight was filled with the enormous body of the fish monster.

The fish monster slammed its head fiercely.

Boom!

The monster’s head directly sent Duke Long flying with speed that was faster than earlier when he arrived.

He possessed transformation path and qi path dao marks, he was unprecedentedly strong. After using triple qi retraction several times, he did not even need nine dragons protection to guard against ordinary rank eight attacks! But when he knocked into the fish monster’s head, he felt like he had used his bare fist to strike a boulder!

In an instant, all the bones in Duke Long’s body shattered, his internal organs almost burst from the force, there were massive amounts of internal and external bleeding.

"Triple qi retraction!" Duke Long shouted, his sharply declining qi surged immediately.

Duke Long immediately activated qi path healing methods, and with shocking speed, his injuries recovered in a few breaths of time.

But because he chose to heal himself, he let himself crash through all the way, directly crashing into the boundary of Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court was a shared grotto-heaven, its limits were the aperture walls. Duke Long crashed into the aperture walls, the enormous force that still remained in his body poured into the aperture walls in the sky.

The immortals heard a loud collision, then they saw several cracks suddenly appearing in the sky behind Duke Long before quickly spreading like a spider web.

The immortals could not help but draw in sharp breaths.

The strength of the fish monster’s attack was simply unimaginable! Even Duke Long seemed to be unable to resist it.

And the fish monster was only an arrangement left behind by Reckless Savage

Demon Venerable, it had already existed for over a million years but it still had such might.

If so, how much strength did Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, who left this method, have?

Simply unimaginable!

The immortals recalled the evaluation about Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, he was publicly recognized as the venerable with the highest physical strength.

And now they saw this sight, it was truly so!

"This is Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s method!"

"We have not lost yet, we can still fight."

"Lord Duke Long has returned, his injuries have recovered and his aura has become even stronger!"

"What are you afraid of? We have the fully repaired fate Gu, the heavenly fate sides with us!"

The three regions’ Gu Immortals felt shocked and exulted at the unexpected reinforcements of three powerful beings, and their morale soared. Heavenly Court’s immortals similarly had a high morale, they had complete confidence in fate Gu and Duke Long.

Duke Long once again swooped in and fought with the three monsters. But he learned his lesson this time and prioritized using qi path’s long range attacks, avoiding close combat.

These three giant monsters’ strength was truly horrifying, even Duke Long did not want to be sent flying so miserably again.

His battle tactic was wise, the three giant monsters had terrifying strength but they had almost no methods.

After exchanging a dozen or so moves, Duke Long got a clearer understanding of them.

The six legged yellow bird’s speed was extremely fast and could shoot out yellow lightning from its mouth, but it was unable to fly. Its beak was extremely hard and sharp, even able to pierce through Immortal Gu Houses.

The green fish monster could float around with speed that was akin to teleportation of space path, it appeared extremely seamlessly and caught enemies off-guard. It could recover from any attacks almost instantaneously. Its strongest aspect was this — a horrifying regeneration rate that was much stronger than Duke Long using his qi path healing methods. But it had a weakness, its attack was fierce but the tempo was slow, the frequency of attacks was also quite low. After attacking once, it would be still for a while before it could attack again.

As for the toothless blue leopard, it could fly by stepping on air. Its strongest method was to devour all attacks. Not only this, it could even devour the heroes among people killer move from Gu Immortals’ bodies. This sight made Zhao Shan He feel dazzled. His food path methods were far from being able to devour amplifications, this contained food path profundities that he did not possess. If he could comprehend this, his enlightenment of food path would definitely progress one step further!

At the same time, the toothless blue leopard’s greatest weakness was also this almost innate devouring ability. Every time it devoured, its belly would bulge. After Duke Long and others intentionally fed it various attacks, the toothless blue leopard’s belly had become round and full, it started having trouble moving.

However, even though Heavenly Court’s side had probed the three monsters’ details, they still could not defend against them and were gradually falling into a disadvantage.

The three monsters had flaws, their strengths and weaknesses were extremely conspicuous. But no one dared to block their brutish rampage.

Adding in Fang Yuan, Wu Yong, Bing Sai Chuan, Shen Cong Sheng, Song Qi Yuan, and the rest supporting from the side, as well as restraining and getting rid of Heavenly Court’s various methods, Heavenly Court’s side was in a passive situation.

The three monsters’ target was Heaven Overseeing Tower, they seemed to have an enormous hatred towards fate Gu.

Heaven Overseeing Tower did not dare to confront the three monsters’ power, it could only retreat constantly. To defend Heaven Overseeing Tower, Duke Long shouldered huge pressure and was heavily injured time and time again, retreating to heal his injuries before joining the battle again. His purple hair was swaying wildly, his eyes were bloodshot, his whole body was bathed in blood that dyed his scales completely! His fighting spirit kept on rising, it had not fallen once.

Both sides fought around the three monsters and Heaven Overseeing Tower. The attacks went back and forth, it was highly intense. The battle kept on moving, wherever it went, the aftermath of the terrifying killer moves destroyed everything, creating countless ruins. The great Heavenly Court that was managed meticulously by Gu Immortals was heavily damaged from this battle.

Just as the three regions’ Gu Immortals were firmly holding onto the upper hand, Heaven Overseeing Tower suddenly stopped.

At the next moment, immortal killer move fate vanquish burst out again.

"Careful!" Wu Yong shouted. The three regions’ Gu Immortals were already on guard and reacted quickly.

After the white light dissipated, explosions resounded in Heavenly Court battlefield once again as the battle resumed.

But this time, Heavenly Court held the momentum. The three regions’ Gu Immortals could only defend while repairing the Immortal Gu Houses’ and their own injuries.

The three regions’ Gu Immortals gradually found their footing. Compared to the first fate vanquish attack, their situation was much better. The reason was that they had three giant monsters to rely on.

The giant monsters rampaged around the battlefield, under their attacks, Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were gradually dragged into a stalemate before being suppressed by the three regions’ Gu Immortals again.

At this time, Heaven Overseeing Tower activated fate vanquish again.

After this happened over and over again, the whole of Heavenly Court was filled with ruins.

The three monsters’ aura had clearly fallen, the Gu Immortals’ offense was also not as fierce as before. They were at a point where they had to consider the issue of immortal essence expenditure.

"Damn it, the situation is becoming increasingly bad." Wu Yong’s face was solemn, the three monsters were weakening from the repeated devastation of fate vanquish

"Back then, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable failed in his invasion of Heavenly Court, these three giant monsters are only arrangements left by him, they naturally won’t be able to resist the power of fate vanquish!" Bing Sai Chuan’s heart was turning cold.

If the three regions’ Gu Immortals failed to obtain a breakthrough when the three monsters were still active, they would definitely suffer a miserable and disastrous defeat after that.

This was something extremely obvious!

But Heavenly Court’s side used the wisest battle tactic. They moved continuously while avoiding the enemy’s attacks, making the enemy expend more energy. Especially, when fate vanquish activated, the advantage the three regions’ Gu Immortals obtained with difficulty turned into nothing, everything went back to square one.

And because they had Demon Judgment Board and Heaven Overseeing Tower, there was always a base camp around the front lines. The moment the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals faced danger, they could hide inside, thus there were no casualties. Naturally, this was also because the offense had weakened as both sides were beginning to conserve immortal essence.

"Master, the situation does not look good. Even Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s method cannot change the outcome. The current Heavenly Court has an intact fate Gu after all." Far away, Fairy Zi Wei was analyzing coolly.

Spectral Soul had already recovered his human form but his body was translucent. He held his hands behind his back as he observed the battlefield before glancing at the far away Imperfection Regret Pavilion.

Inside Imperfection Regret Pavilion, the two venerables’ silhouettes were still playing chess.

The chessboard was already filled with chess pieces, but the mysterious thing was whenever the venerable silhouette put down a piece, there would always be another free spot.

However, compared to before, the frequency of the two venerables placing the chess pieces had reduced by a lot.

Star Constellation’s silhouette held a chess piece and looked at the chessboard before glancing towards Spectral Soul’s direction.

"Are you okay with this? Spectral Soul stole a portion of the results of our game." Star Constellation’s silhouette said.

Limitless’ silhouette laughed: "Since he could get free and even steal our results, this is his own capability. These gains will help him, I am looking forward to the day when he can reach the realm that we were unable to reach."

Star Constellation’s silhouette was silent for a while before sighing: "You are truly a pure Dao pursuer."

"Unfortunately, heaven and earth is a cage that stopped me from pursuing my

Dao." Limitless’ silhouette said: "Which is why I want to pursue freedom."

Star Constellation’s silhouette immediately refuted: "Your freedom, however, will break this cage. And we both know what kind of scenery exists outside this cage!"

Limitless’ silhouette shook his head: "Our positions are different, saying anything else is of no benefit."

His silhouette was becoming increasingly illusory right now, only his eyes were still bright and letting out sharp lights. Limitless’ silhouette held a chess piece and looked at the chessboard for a long while, but he did not place the piece.

This match had already reached the most crucial point.

On the chessboard, Limitless’ silhouette’s situation was very bad, he was greatly disadvantaged. His pieces were surrounded from every direction by Star Constellation’s silhouette’s chess pieces, she had an obvious superiority.

Even though it was because of Heavenly Court’s accumulations, it was enough for Limitless’ silhouette to see the strength of his opponent, Star Constellation.

Star Constellation’s will was resisting heaven’s will on one hand, while also making arrangements throughout the five regions, she thought of countless aspects, her plans spanned across the past and present, throughout the universe. Forget about the arrangements that made three venerables’ invasions fail, just look at the current situation, Spectral Soul had regained freedom but did not obtain the Door of Life and Death.

This was probably Star Constellation’s ploy, even Fairy Zi Wei was in the dark, which was not likely to happen with just Duke Long’s scheming ability.

Indeed, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was worthy of being the only wisdom path venerable in history!

However, Limitless’ silhouette had not lost yet. His main chess pieces were all gathered together, the opponent could hardly defeat them. A forceful attack would definitely result in heavy losses, and it would also give the initiative to Limitless’ silhouette instead.

But for Limitless’ silhouette to counterattack and break through by himself, he was still lacking some strength. The whole encirclement was a dense congregation of the plans of Star Constellation’s silhouette, if Limitless’ silhouette attacked rashly, he would fall into a trap.

Thus, Limitless’ silhouette could only choose to defend while waiting for reinforcement.

This game between two venerables that had started in the Olden Antiquity Era and continued for a million years, it had finally welcomed the most crucial moment!

Indeed, Limitless’ silhouette still had reinforcements.

He had waited for a million years for this aid, both sides were aware of it.

"Now, we have to see the quality of our pieces." Star Constellation’s silhouette swept her gaze through the battlefield, when it stopped at Fang Yuan’s body, her gaze revealed complicated expressions.

Limitless’ silhouette was similarly looking in the same direction, mumbling: "Oh Fang Yuan, you have been like this since the start. You... how long are you planning to conceal your abilities?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan had all along been fighting on the front lines.

On one hand, he had been fighting with Duke Long and the rest, on the other hand, he kept on maintaining a cold and indifferent expression while pondering about the overall situation.

But ever since Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s method activated, he had an extra voice resounding in his ears.

"Have a good look, junior! The three monsters in front of you were transformed from my three immortal moves. These three immortal moves were created from the insights I gained after reading ’Pursuing Freedom’ in \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e, they were all created to pursue freedom."

"First move — Thunder Rush Yellow Bird Transformation, it uses attitude Gu as the core. Have you ever envied birds and wanted to fly freely in the sky? However, we humans are restricted since birth, we don’t have wings, why even talk about flying? But an even crueler situation is like the wingless birds, they already experienced the wonderful feeling of flying but they lost their wings. No matter who you are, where you are, you will face all sorts of limitations. If we are unable to change, unable to break away from all these, we will be like wingless birds, pursuing freedom but unable to catch it, what should we do then?"

"This is the core concept of this move, remember it, junior. Even if we face the strictest restrictions and are unable to pursue freedom, we still have a kind of freedom, we can freely choose what kind of attitude we use to face the cruel reality. Remember, your attitude is very important!"

"Second move — Devouring Blue Leopard Transformation, it uses mutation Gu as the core. Freedom is not a bad thing, but it is also not a good thing either. It can make you better and can also make you worse, just like the effect of mutation Gu. The fierce beast lacks teeth, but does that mean it can’t live on? If it does not have the freedom to bite, what’s the harm in devouring the food? Maybe it can even train your digestive system to become stronger."

"Third move — Internal Breathing Green Fish Transformation, it uses adaptation Gu as the core. Compared to it, how ugly does the world seem? We are assaulted by cruel facts, we are tormented by pain and hopelessness. When we are walking our respective paths, we will be covered in bruises sometimes, even being exposed with nowhere to escape. Humans change, the world is also going through countless changes, if we cannot keep up with the changes of time, we will be left behind by the whole world. Therefore, adaptation is key. If you don’t have gills, use your mouth to breath; if you don’t even have a mouth, then create a self-circulating internal respiratory system. Even if that means you have to walk slowly, even if you become nothing like a human in the end."

The voice was powerful and forceful as it explained the origins and details of the three monsters. These monsters were transformed from three transformation path killer moves left behind by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable.

After Fang Yuan triggered Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s method, this voice had peculiarly accompanied Fang Yuan, but no one else could detect it.

"Is this Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s voice?" Just as Fang Yuan was guessing, the voice changed.

From the stable and serious voice to a lively and flippant tone.

"Hey, you have already spoken so much, it’s my turn, it’s my turn!"

"Haha, kid, no matter who you are, you are definitely an otherworldly demon. Because only an otherworldly demon has hope of destroying fate Gu. So, when I left behind this true inheritance back then, I made it so that only an otherworldly demon can inherit it."

"But besides this, you still need to possess at least one of three Gu worms - attitude Gu, mutation Gu, and adaptation Gu. These three Gu worms correspond to three killer moves that can trigger my killer moves. When you arrive in the sky above Embroidered Tower, you can summon the giant monsters transformed by the killer moves and they shall be your strongest helping hand."

"Use them however you please, kill or loot if you like, or help people if you wish to. Of course, the best use would be to destroy fate Gu because seeing it really annoys me. Hahaha!"

"Of course, if you can trigger all three moves, then you can merge them into one move! This is a super, super, super powerful killer move that I created with great effort!"

"Once you grasp this move, you can use your human form to possess all the advantages of the three moves, moreover, there is no weakness in any aspect. That means, you will be like the wingless bird, moving as fast as lightning and shooting out lightning. You will also be like the gill-less fish, possessing extremely powerful regeneration ability. You will be like the toothless beast as well, devouring everything and storing them into your stomach."

"Are you stupefied? Isn’t it super amazing? Hahaha, come, bow before me!"

The flippant male voice spoke until here, when it seemed like it was kicked out and was replaced by the previous solemn male voice.

"The final combination move is called incomplete freedom transformation, it has three cores - Attitude, Mutation, and Adaptation. It has numerous steps and is highly complicated. Although you can use the three monsters to merge them into one, which is much easier than you using them independently, I still ask you to not attempt it lightly. Because this move’s effect works on your body, if it fails, you will be heavily injured at best, or even die in severe cases. Bear this in mind, bear this in mind!"

The heavy and solemn voice spoke earnestly, but soon, the previous flippant voice replaced it.

"Please, what you said is not important at all! Kid, let me tell you the important point! Once you activate this move successfully, you will have the strength to suppress all immemorial desolate plants and immemorial desolate beasts, the three monsters’ methods will become your innate abilities. You will become a human shaped beast that can battle through heaven and earth, rampaging around all over the world unhindered! You will immediately possess quasi venerable battle strength!"

"Of course, if you meet an old venerable like me, you will still kneel in the end."

"But these are not the most important points. There is one most crucial point, you must remember it."

Fang Yuan could not help but concentrate as he heard this.

He then heard that flippant and lively voice continue: "The most important part of the most important thing is once you activate this move, the three monsters will combine into a bloody cape and will hang on your back. This cape is truly... super cool! Junior, you must try it, it is really too stunning, you absolutely won’t regret it!"

Fang Yuan was speechless.

Following the voice, all kinds of information flowed in his mind, allowing him to understand all the contents of the three killer moves clearly.

Different from what the voice described, these three killer moves and the combination move were not complex at all and their steps were also not numerous.

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable lived in the Olden Antiquity Era after all, Gu cultivation styles were not overwhelming and were crude back then, unlike the present age’s delicate complexity.

It was not difficult to master these killer moves, especially for Fang Yuan who possessed deep wisdom path attainment.

"So, I should combine it like this..." Fang Yuan’s thoughts finished as he suddenly retreated and activated a killer move.

In an instant, the three monsters that were fighting at the front lines turned into three light rays - yellow, blue, green - and entered Fang Yuan’s body.

Such a strange change caught both sides unprepared.

The three lights covered Fang Yuan, emitting a majestic aura that spread in all directions and repelled all beings and objects.

The three lights merged quickly and turned blood red.

The blood red light suddenly condensed into one and covered Fang Yuan’s back, turning into a large blood red cape.

The cape fluttered with the wind like a war banner; the fluttering sounds echoed in every person’s ears.

"What change occurred again?"

"It seems like Fang Yuan inherited Reckless Savage true inheritance?!"

Both allies and enemies were shocked once again.

Looking at this familiar cape, inside Imperfection Regret Pavilion, Star Constellation’s silhouette recalled past memories.

A million years ago, a man charged into Heavenly Court.

He walked step by step, the ordinary steps, however, shook the land and sky of Heavenly Court.

He was clothed in beast skin, his body was extremely robust with muscles bursting out. Tattoos covered all the skin on his body, portraying countless beasts and plants of all shapes and sizes, some were vicious beasts, some were smart and exquisite life forms.

The aura he released was as lofty as mountains and as vast as oceans. The Heavenly Court immortals only took one look at him and felt a suffocating pressure.

He was wearing a cape. This beast skin cape was extremely wide and was sewn using human skins. It suited a large physique like Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s, if this were an ordinary person, a large portion of the cape would be dragging on the ground.

Every time Reckless Savage Demon Venerable killed a rank eight enemy, he would peel their skin and sew onto the beast skin cape. This was the custom of the beastman race, but Reckless Savage had learned and imitated it in his youth, before he became a venerable.

An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth!

Halfway through Heavenly Court, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable stopped in front of Embroidered Tower.

In the air, Star Constellation’s will manifested: "Reckless Savage, you cannot destroy fate Gu. Your strength originates from your fate. It is like how you cannot lift yourself up without relying on other methods."

"Of course I know this." Reckless Savage Demon Venerable laughed.

"Then what did you come for?"

"To fight!" Reckless Savage Demon Venerable raised his head and said it as a matter of fact with a flippant voice.

Star Constellation’s will: "..."

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable continued to laugh: "After becoming venerable and being invincible in the world, I felt an intense loneliness! No one could fight with me, I have killed almost all those variant human rank eights, the old and weak ones that are still alive have all hidden themselves. I also don’t have the interest to find them. Looking at the five regions, only Heavenly Court is somewhat interesting. To protect fate Gu, you guys must have left behind many methods. Even Limitless was stopped by you back then. Come, use all your methods, let us have a match."

Star Constellation’s will was silent for a long while before entering Embroidered Tower: "This Immortal Gu House in front of you is one of the methods my main body left behind."

"Roar!" Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s eyes brightened: "If so, I am attacking!"

The battle ended quickly.

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable clenched his fists and licked his lips, mumbling unsatisfied: "What is this, after just two or three moves, your Embroidered Tower is almost on the verge of collapse. But the start was pretty good. Relax, I won’t destroy your tower, we are all humans after all."

"Also, I will leave behind these three bloody skins. This is my inheritance!"

"No matter who, even if it is someone from your Heavenly Court, if they can inherit my inheritance, then it shall belong to them."

"Treat it as a memento of my visit to Heavenly Court. Don’t dismantle it, hehehe."

"I am really looking forward to it. I wonder which junior will obtain my inheritance, will they be shaken by my grand strength, or be bowled over by my incredible thinking?"

"Haha, it naturally is best for this junior to destroy fate Gu. If they can’t do this, I will truly be displeased!"

Star Constellation’s will was silent for a long while before speaking: "So your intention is to destroy fate Gu."

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable shrugged his shoulders: "That goes without saying. I have left my bloody skins here, if you have the skill, then destroy them! But I will leave you some kind advice, these three bloody skins are already connected with Heavenly Court’s dao marks. If you attack them recklessly, it will be the most direct attack towards Heavenly Court. Unless there is someone who has transformation path attainment rivaling mine, no one will be able to safely dismantle it."

Star Constellation’s will spoke: "There is a better way for you to destroy fate Gu, be an Immortal Venerable, become the Lord of Heavenly Court and be in contact with fate Gu all the time. I think with your wisdom, you will definitely think of a way to destroy fate Gu."

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable directly shook his head without even thinking: "I don’t want to!"

Star Constellation’s will frowned: "Why?"

"Because the title of Demon Venerable sounds much cooler than Immortal Venerable!"

Star Constellation’s will: "..."

It was strange, when Reckless Savage Demon Venerable said this reason, it actually gave off a feeling of being a natural fact.

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable turned around and looked at himself before waving his arms: "Take a good look!"

"Look at my thighs, they are so sturdy. Look at my arms, they are so muscular and well-defined."

"This is beauty, this is coolness!"

"And this cape, it is so bloody, it is also created from human skins, how domineering is it!"

Star Constellation’s will was unable to think properly for a moment, it could only respond after a good while: "So, you created this cape not for payback and revenge against variant humans?"

"Of course, there is the secondary reason, but the important thing is still its coolness!"

Star Constellation’s will: "..."

"Oh oh, right. These three bloody skins can combine into one move and its form is a bloody cape. It is quite similar to the one I use now. If there is a junior who wears it in the future, they will definitely be extremely cool beyond belief!"

"Men!" Reckless Savage Demon Venerable raised his arms and bent his elbows, showing his bulging muscles and praising himself: "Must be this cool."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Because of the change in Fang Yuan’s body, the fight in the battlefield had paused temporarily.

Duke Long was the first to react.

Immortal killer move — Spiraling Dragon Fang!

Fang Yuan’s condition was unknown, the three monsters actually transformed into a blood-soaked cape that hung on his back. Duke Long did not dare to be overconfident, he still had apprehension from the attacks of the three monsters, so he used a long range attack, spiraling dragon fangs, to probe.

Dragon fangs, sharp as blades, danced in the air. Fang Yuan did not dodge, he wanted to test his current defensive strength.

Chink chink chink!

Dragon fangs slashed his body, producing a series of sparks. After wearing the bloody cape, Fang Yuan’s defensive strength had increased to an outrageous level.

Duke Long’s pupils shrank at this sight.

Fang Yuan’s current defensive strength was already much higher than his, there were at least white marks left behind on Duke Long’s dragon scales if he let the dragon fangs strike him. But there was no damage to Fang Yuan, not even a trace of marks or wounds could be seen.

"The defensive strength is so astonishing, other aspects should also be similar." Looking at how Fang Yuan dealt with the dragon fang killer move, the immortals had such thoughts.

Heavenly Court’s side was very wary, while the three regions’ Gu Immortals looked at Fang Yuan with eager anticipation.

These Gu Immortals did not know that Fang Yuan’s ears were ringing with criticism at this moment: "Kid, you are the junior who inherited my true inheritance? Damn it, you look really ugly! Look at yourself, your face is like a woman’s, your arms and legs are so thin. How can your skin be so white and smooth? Where is your toughness as a man? Heavens! My inheritance is wasted in your hands."

Fang Yuan: "..."

During the process of combining the three monsters into incomplete freedom transformation, Fang Yuan needed to transfer his own will. However, after the bloody cape formed, Fang Yuan’s will transformed into Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s image, turning into Reckless Savage’s will!

This method was truly inconceivable! This showed that Reckless Savage might be a transformation path Gu Immortal but he also had an astonishing attainment in wisdom path.

However, Fang Yuan soon discovered that the source of the will transformation were the three monsters. As far as he was concerned, the so-called ’Reckless Savage’s will’ possessed no harm to him but had many benefits instead.

Reckless Savage’s will could attend to the bloody cape and help maintain the killer move, he could even quicken Fang Yuan’s understanding of the true meaning behind incomplete freedom transformation!

"Kid, make a move quickly. After so many years, there is not much left of the strength left behind by my main body. Quick, quick, charge, destroy fate Gu!" Reckless Savage’s will laughed loudly as he clamored in impatience.

"You talk too much, can you shut up?" Fang Yuan replied indifferently.

"Eh!" Reckless Savage’s will was stunned, he placed his hands on his cheeks and shouted in disbelief: "I was scorned upon! I, the great Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, was actually scorned by a junior! And by such an ugly guy at that!!"

Reckless Savage’s will kept on mumbling. Who could have expected the domineering Reckless Savage Demon Venerable to be such a chatterbox?!

Even without his reminder, Fang Yuan could sense that although incomplete freedom transformation was terrifyingly powerful, it consumed the foundation of the three monsters very quickly.

This move had a time limit.

"Since that is the case..." Fang Yuan squinted, looking at Heaven Overseeing Tower wickedly.

At that instant, every Heavenly Court Gu Immortal controlling Heaven Overseeing Tower felt a chill in their hearts!

"Be careful of Fang Yuan!"

"He is attacking!!"

"Steady, steady!"

Heavenly Court’s side was tense, their nerves stretched to the limits.

Boom!

At the next moment, Fang Yuan attacked. His figure crossed the sky like a bloody ray, he was directly charging towards the area with the most enemies — Heaven Overseeing Tower!

Fang Yuan’s speed was so astonishing that even Duke Long, who was already fully prepared, felt a great shock.

"Fang Yuan, stop!" Duke Long reacted and chased with all his strength.

"Hehehe, it is finally getting interesting." On the edge of the battlefield, Spectral Soul laughed loudly and commanded: "Old Man Zheng Yuan, start, activate everybody’s vision. I want everyone in the world to see this interesting sight."

"Yes, master." Old Man Zheng Yuan was a key that held the authority to activate Heavenly Court’s venerable human path methods.

And this move, everybody’s vision, was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable. Its unique power had been shown in Fang Yuan’s previous life.

It used people’s united hearts as the foundation and could let Central Continent’s mortals, Gu Masters, and Gu Immortals share their vision. As such, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals could observe all the enemy activities in Central Continent and could even stimulate the hatred of Central Continent’s people, gathering even more human will.

The more human will they accumulated, the more power the other human path killer moves like heroes among people would possess. In such a feedback loop, their strength would keep on growing stronger, this was the style that Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s killer moves had.

Immortal killer move — Everybody’s Vision!

In an instant, Central Continent was in an uproar, the five regions were in an uproar.

"What in the world is going on?"

"My eyes, my eyes have a problem!"

Mortals were shocked.

"It is the scene in Heavenly Court, what kind of method is this, it can allow everyone to witness the current situation!"

"Which side has the upper hand?"

Almost all the Gu Immortals of the five regions knew the inside story.

In the previous life, Central Continent’s people enjoyed the effects of everybody’s vision, but in this life, because of Shen Shang’s interference, human wills of the five regions were gathered together.

Because of this, everybody’s vision allowed everyone in the five regions to observe the battle in Heavenly Court.

The first scene the five regions’ mortals saw was Fang Yuan fighting his way to Heaven Overseeing Tower!

"Who is that person?" Even ordinary mortals felt intense suffocation when they saw Fang Yuan’s overbearing aura.

"Fang Yuan, you won’t succeed!" At the crucial moment, Gu Yue Fang Zheng and Qin Ding Ling controlled Demon Judgment Board to defend in front of Heaven Overseeing Tower.

"That is the rank eight Immortal Gu House — Demon Judgment Board!" The Gu Immortals who saw this scene, no matter which region they belonged to, cried out in shock.

"Fang Yuan is not stopping, he is charging right into Demon Judgment Board!"

"Has he gone crazy?"

"This is a rank eight Immortal Gu House."

However, at the next moment, the mouths of the five regions’ Gu Immortals opened wide in shock.

Fang Yuan directly collided into Demon Judgment Board.

The enormous collision force sent Demon Judgment Board flying, even though Gu Yue Fang Zheng and Qin Ding Ling were already controlling the Immortal Gu House with all their strength.

"Get lost!" Fang Yuan shouted as he punched with great force.

A huge dent appeared on Demon Judgment Board, countless fragments scattered and turned into Gu worm corpses.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng coughed out a large mouthful of blood and fell on the ground with a horrified expression on his face. Fang Yuan’s punch had almost pierced Demon Judgment Board!

After Demon Judgment Board was knocked down, Fang Yuan stomped it fiercely, an enormous and irresistible force pressed down on Demon Judgment Board like a mountain and it rapidly fell to the ground.

Fang Yuan jumped, his speed increasing as he continued charging towards Heaven Overseeing Tower.

But the next moment, Duke Long had already caught up to Fang Yuan.

"Fang Yuan!" He shouted wildly, his voice shaking the skies.

Fang Yuan turned around, his bloody cape swung and he started punching, creating a storm of fist shadows!

Duke Long had come prepared with a killer move, his palm pressed, it was qi breath mountain.

His left hand then formed into a claw shape as he activated immortal killer move dragon claw strike, while his right hand clenched into fist and activated chaotic dragon fist. At the same time, he spat his fangs, they turned into countless spiraling dragon fangs which moved around his body. The dragon images of nine dragons protection on his body floated out on their own initiative.

Bam Bam Bam Bam...

Fang Yuan and Duke Long fought fiercely, exchanging blows with each fist hitting raw flesh.

On one side was an inheritor of various venerables, an otherworldly demon, on the other side was a Dao Guardian, master of an Immortal Venerable. Their fight had broken the record of intensity in this battle so far!

Just the aftermath of their moves resulted in wild winds that pushed away all the people and objects. The terrifying collisions could directly destroy Immortal Gu Houses. Even rank eight Immortal Gu Houses like Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and Calamity Luck Altar stopped fighting. Those rank eight Immortal Gu Houses even retreated far away.

"Are these two monsters?"

"What kind of terrifying fight is this!"

The five regions’ Gu Immortals saw this scene through everybody’s vision, they gulped as their hearts pounded wildly.

In the absence of a venerable, Fang Yuan and Duke Long’s fight could be considered to be at the peak level of the current world!

Mortals gradually began to realize something.

"This is incredible! We are looking at immortals!"

"This world really has immortals!"

"Fights of immortals really are too terrifying. Look quickly, even the heavens seem to have been broken by them."

Mortals exclaimed in shock, the scene had far surpassed the limits of their imagination.

The storm of attacks did not stop, both sides were in a deadlock.

Duke Long could not receive amplification from heroes among people, but he had heavenly dragon’s last stand and destiny song’s help, as well as triple qi retraction. This method was an arrangement left by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, Duke Long was only a key to activating it.

At the edge of the battlefield, Spectral Soul smiled as he looked at Fang Yuan and Duke Long’s battle: "Since it has already reached this stage, then let me push it further. Zheng Yuan, release all the human wills."

Old Man Zheng Yuan was dazed, weren’t the human wills already released completely, were there any remaining? If there were, wouldn’t Old Man Zheng Yuan have used them before?

However, Spectral Soul pointed towards a direction, Old Man Zheng Yuan astonishingly discovered there truly was a portion of human will stored in a corner of Heavenly Court.

Spectral Soul’s understanding of Heavenly Court was actually clearer than Old Man Zheng Yuan himself!

’How many secrets of Heavenly Court does he grasp? Also, why would the past venerables retain a portion of the human will so secretly?’ Old Man Zheng Yuan was filled with questions.

"You don’t need to guess, just release them. What happens next will give you your answer." Spectral Soul chuckled.

Old Man Zheng Yuan had already submitted to Spectral Soul completely, he immediately nodded and activated his methods with no hesitation.

The human wills were released completely!

At the next moment, the power of heroes among people soared.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The moment the human wills were released, both sides’ Gu Immortals seemed to hear whispers of countless people.

"You must grow up healthily, my children."

"Lovers being able to be married is truly a great thing."

"May peace last for generations and generations. I’d rather be a dog living in peace than a person living in chaotic times!"

"Kill these lawless people, place judgment upon these atrocious evil-doers!"

"The righteous path will definitely be victorious."

"I believe that fairness and justice might come late sometimes, but they will never be absent."

"You must win, Heavenly Court. I can’t do anything, but I can pray for you."

The morale of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals soared, but soon, doubts surfaced on their faces.

Their enemies similarly received amplifications, moreover, it seemed like the three regions’ Gu Immortals received a slightly stronger amplification than them?

"Kill those righteous path hypocrites!"

"Destroy Heavenly Court, it sits in an ivory tower, who knows how many generations of Central Continent’s people it has exploited!!"

"Although I respect Heavenly Court’s spirit, I will never be able to achieve it. I am a Central Continent Gu Immortal, I admit my selfishness, I am only an ordinary Gu cultivator. However, Central Continent’s resources are plundered and occupied by the ten great ancient sects and Heavenly Court. Join Heavenly Court? That is too difficult. They even want me to offer my immortal aperture! How can I be willing to do that?"

"Bring down Heavenly Court, the more losses Heavenly Court suffers, the less the pressure on our four regions when the five regions merge."

"Heavenly Court has occupied the throne of the number one force for far too long. If it is overthrown, hehe, this will be interesting!"

...

Both sides fought once again, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were astonished to discover that heroes among people’s effect on the enemies was indeed stronger than themselves.

Why?

Heroes among people is clearly our Heavenly Court’s method!

Why was heroes among people helping the enemies more?!

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were bewildered as they began to fall into a disadvantage.

Wu Yong led his alliance once again, he was the first to charge out of Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and began to valiantly pave a way through battle. At this moment, he fully displayed the prestige and courage of Southern Border’s Wu clan!

His face was solemn and his eyes flickered with cold lights. The determination to destroy fate Gu had always been so intense and overwhelming!

In the past...

He stood in front of his mother Wu Du Xiu’s coffin, mourning in silence.

While he felt pain, he found there was a feeling of release and delight in the depths of his heart.

"Does this mean I am not filial?" Wu Yong questioned himself and slowly understood his true feelings: "No, it is not so. I am full of filial piety and respect towards my mother. But she was truly too strong, I could only choose to curl up and hide under her shadow. Now that she is gone, I finally have space to stretch myself."

Returning to the present.

Wu Yong’s determination was firm and his gaze was cold, he revealed the heated emotions inside his heart!

"Therefore, be destroyed, fate Gu!"

"I will mourn for you just like I mourned for my mother."

"Only with you gone can I, Wu Yong, have the freedom to chase after my ambition!"

On the other side, Calamity Luck Altar suppressed Demon Judgment Board.

Bing Sai Chuan had never felt such power!

Blood flowed wildly inside his body.

"You still don’t realize it, Qin Ding Ling! Despite the fact that you were the person sleeping beside Lord Giant Sun."

"Fate is fixed while luck is a variable. Why do you think Lord Giant Sun created luck path, why could he create luck path?"

"From a certain perspective, this is the wish of countless beings for luck path to appear! When your life is fixed, when every encounter you have is already determined, is there still any meaning in living? What difference is this from puppets or mindless zombies?"

"This is not my speculation, Lord Giant Sun said this to me personally!"

"And I inherited his will, after three hundred thousand years, I am still staking my life to fight, I am an old man who is willing to fight for such an aspiration!!"

Immortal killer move – Grand Collision!

Shen Cong Sheng actually took the initiative to attack Feng Jiu Ge.

Under Shen Cong Sheng’s attacks, Feng Jiu Ge had to retreat constantly, but he kept on maintaining destiny song, prioritizing on supporting his allies.

Shen Cong Sheng roared: "Feng Jiu Ge! We are both sound path Gu Immortals, even if you can’t see it, can’t you hear it?"

"Listen!"

"These are the innermost voices of almost all the world’s people!"

"They don’t want to be shackled any more, they thirst for freedom, even if this freedom is beyond impractical! Sometimes, people are like lunatics, they have foolish thoughts."

"I will be honest with you." Shen Cong Sheng actually cried tears of deep emotions: "I have never felt such feelings. It is as if there are countless people standing behind me, cheering and encouraging me. Perhaps this is how Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals felt when they fought for humanity back then."

"It was really the right decision for me to come to this battlefield!"

Bam Bam Bam Bam...

Close combat continued, moves after moves were exchanged as Fang Yuan and Duke Long fought head-on.

After the stalemate lasted for a while, Duke Long began to fall into a disadvantaged position.

Despite Duke Long gritting his teeth and wanting to endure, it was to no avail. Right now, he started to feel a sense of weakness and helplessness despite his overwhelming determination!

Among all the people present, heroes among people’s amplification on Fang Yuan was actually the strongest.

"Why? Why!? You are clearly a demon who brings disaster to the world, you are an atrocious demon who commits countless sins! Why would you receive the greatest help from the human wills?" Duke Long roared in shock and fury.

"Do you still not understand it? Duke Long! The current era is no longer the same, the hearts of the people have already changed!"

"In the Olden Antiquity Era, humanity sought for survival space. Thus, the three Demon Venerables held back when they invaded Heavenly Court."

"And now, it has already been over a million years since the Olden Antiquity Era has ended! Your Heavenly Court is unable to represent the will of all the humans in the world by now!"

Fang Yuan’s words were very vicious, they seemed to be sharper than dragon fangs as they pierced into Duke Long’s inner heart.

Fang Yuan used more than just his fists, every joint of his body turned into weapons as he attacked Duke Long.

Qi breath mountain was destroyed by him, spiraling dragon fangs were broken, Duke Long’s dragon claw strike and chaotic dragon fist were suppressed again and again by Fang Yuan!

Bam Bam Bam Bam!

Fang Yuan’s every attack produced sonic booms.

The blood cape let out a dark red radiance that covered Fang Yuan’s whole body, empowering his strength in all aspects to a terrifying degree.

Duke Long’s fingers were snapped by Fang Yuan, his fist fractured as he struck Fang Yuan’s fist directly! The nine dragon tattoos were howling in misery! They were already destroyed to a huge degree by Fang Yuan!

...

Countless years ago, there was a couple.

The male was called Tu Ji, the female was Ruo Li.

Tu Ji was a rockman and Ruo Li was a human immortal.

"I cultivate rule path, I have to believe in the rules of this world. All things have their own ordained path of which is fate. I believe I was able to meet you because I followed my fate, falling in love with you is the kindness of fate towards me." Tu Ji replied.

Ruo Li said: "What if I told you fate decreed that I would die at Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s hands?"

"What?!" Tu Ji was shocked: "Ruo Li, how many times have you checked this prophecy?"

Ruo Li gave a bitter smile: "Only once is enough, but I checked it many times indeed, every result was the same. Do you know why a wisdom path Gu Immortal’s prophecy is so accurate? That is because fate is always fixed. I will die at Reckless Savage’s hands, that is my fate."

Tu Ji was silent for a long while before he said with an almost decisive tone: "Then I... do not believe in fate!"

On what basis must she die at Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s hands?

On what basis must my lover not live a happy life?

If this is fate’s arrangement, then — I won’t accept it!

...

Duke Long was beaten back again and again by Fang Yuan. First, blood flowed out of his mouth, then all of his seven orifices started bleeding, this was because Fang Yuan’s punches had landed on his body and caused internal bleeding of his organs.

"Great! This feels really refreshing!" Reckless Savage’s will shouted from inside the cape, waving his hands in excitement: "Kid, although you look ugly, your style resembles me! I have to say, my opinion of you has changed. But I wonder why I feel that there is something lacking?"

Reckless Savage’s will thought for a while before clapping: "I know! You should roar in excitement, shout happily, this is the excitement of a man during battles!"

However, Fang Yuan’s face was cold as ice, his eyes were dark as the abyss with no trace of needless emotions.

As far as he was concerned, he was using this style of fighting to maximize the advantage of incomplete freedom transformation, there was nothing else to it.

With the powerful strength of the three monsters, Duke Long was already in a huge disadvantage when fighting him in close combat. But Fang Yuan maintained the attitude of attacking Heaven Overseeing Tower, which forced Duke Long to fight him in close combat.

Duke Long’s situation became increasingly grim, he was clearly defending more and attacking less.

He howled, he roared, but he was still forced back over and over again by Fang Yuan.

...

In Southern Border, there was a Gu Immortal called Tao Zhu.

"He is Tao Zhu?"

"Is he stupid? In order to research the pointless secret of the five regions, he gave up on that marriage!"

"He is a lunatic. I’ve often seen him heading to the regional walls for his research, he often ends up injured and in a sorry state."

He sacrificed almost everything to research the five regions’ regional walls, he endured countless people’s ridicule and even had to resist the secret oppression of many people.

The most fatal blow to him was the biggest joke that fate played on him!

Not long in the future, the five regions’ regional walls would disappear completely.

Even if Tao Zhu’s research made progress, it seemed to lose its meaning.

"But so what?"

"If this is fate, and I, Tao Zhu, am unable to resist or change it, so what?"

"I will still continue researching! Even if I fail in the end and obtain nothing, even if my life becomes a complete failure!"

"I will never resign myself to fate! Even if I understand there is a wall called fate in front of me, I will charge into it!"

"Even if I die from the collision, I will die with a smile and my head held high."

On what basis must I accept my fate?

Who gives a crap!

That is what I want to do!

This is how I want to live!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1959 People“s Hearts Have Changed

"Quick, reinforce Duke Long!" Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals moved, they did not dare to continue watching.

Duke Long and Feng Jiu Ge were two pillars of Heavenly Court, once Duke Long was defeated, the whole situation would again turn precarious.

Boom!

Fang Yuan suddenly kicked Duke Long’s hand.

Duke Long’s defense was wide open, Fang Yuan used the chance to approach closer and grabbed Duke Long’s purple hair with his left hand.

Then, he raised his right fist and punched. Punches after punches landed on Duke Long’s face and chest like cannonball strikes.

Duke Long was unable to free himself, he could only shout in desperation: "Triple qi retraction!"

Qi surged once again and gathered in Duke Long’s body, Duke Long’s condition strengthened by three times.

Bam bam bam! Fang Yuan continued to rain punches on Duke Long.

He kept on punching!

...

Over a million years ago, when Genesis Lotus became a venerable, he wandered the world disguised as a mortal.

One day, he arrived at a poor oasis village in Western Desert.

There, he helped the villagers solve some issues using a Gu Master identity, he was welcomed warmly by the young and old in the village.

A child was the most excited, even revering Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable to the point of prostrating himself.

Because he saw new hope in his life.

"Lord Gu Master, Lord Gu Master. I beg you, I beg you!" The child knelt on the ground and grabbed the hem of Genesis Lotus’s cloth as he looked up towards Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, his pure eyes were filled with tears and pleading.

"Speak, child, don’t kneel. I will definitely help you if I can." Genesis Lotus lifted the child warmly.

The child revealed a joyous expression: "It would be really great if you can help! Please resurrect my mother, she is my most important person and also the person who loves me the most in this world. My father abandoned us long ago. I could grow up all because she worked hard to raise me."

"But my mother died a few days ago, she died from exhaustion and illness. Even on her deathbed, she used her trembling hands to put the last half remaining biscuit in my hands, she saved it for me!"

"I cannot be without my mother!"

"I cannot be without my mother!"

"I beg you, Lord Gu Master. You could dig such a deep well and precisely find a water source. You can definitely resurrect my mother, right?!"

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable was silent.

The child was innocent, he did not know resurrecting the dead was far more difficult than digging a well. But Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable was the current venerable, the things that were impossible for others were possible for him.

But he could not!

He was an Immortal Venerable, he was Heavenly Court’s Immortal Venerable.

Thereupon, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable rubbed the child’s head and sighed: "This is not possible. No matter who it is, they will experience life and death. Your mother’s death is just her reaching her final destination, isn’t it a kind of release? Cheer up and live on bravely and happily , I believe your mother will definitely want you to live like that."

"No! I don’t want to!" The child shook his head rapidly: "I want my mother to revive!"

Genesis Lotus shook his head and sighed again: "I cannot resurrect your mother."

"Why? You can clearly do it!" The child opened his eyes, looking at Genesis Lotus with fury.

Genesis Lotus shook his head, not speaking anymore.

The child pointed at Genesis Lotus and shouted: "I hate you, I hate you, Gu Master! You can clearly resurrect my mother, but you don’t want to do it! You are too cold-blooded, you are really cruel. Is it because she is not your mother? If it were your mother, would you refuse so indifferently?"

Genesis Lotus sank into silence, he put himself in the child’s place and thought, then came to a conclusion as he said with extreme sincerity: "Yes, I will still do this. Everyone needs to accept death, no matter who they are. Because I know, this is all fate’s arrangements."

"To hell with your fate!" The child roared: "Do I care about your damned fate, I need my mother, I want my mother back!"

The child was quickly stopped by the nearby villagers, the villagers repeatedly apologized to Genesis Lotus.

Genesis Lotus waved his head, expressing he did not mind it.

He looked at the villagers stopping the madly struggling child when he suddenly went into a daze and his body shuddered!

At this moment, he suddenly understood.

The reason why he felt a vague unease when he traveled around the world.

Human hearts have changed, their greed is insatiable!

When humans became the rulers of the world, their desire was no longer about resisting the rule and suppression of variant humans, they had become increasingly insane and delusional.

Genesis Lotus looked at the child in front of him dazedly as he came to a realization: Weren’t the humans of the present age like the child in front of him? He was struggling wildly under the shackles of fate for an impractical wish. But was it truly impractical? Was resurrecting a dead person impossible?

Genesis Lotus was aware that this was possible. But... he could not do it.

This was not allowed.

However, does not being allowed mean that there won’t be anyone doing it?

Genesis Lotus suddenly felt loss and hesitation, a deep helplessness shrouded him. Even though he was a rank nine venerable, the number one person in his era!

He could stop the people from doing this with all his strength, but what about after his death?

Even if he used all his strength and energy in this life, and no one attempted to revive the dead, could he, Genesis Lotus, stop the people from having such thoughts?

The most terrifying thing were these types of thoughts!

How could he stop everyone’s wishful thinking?

He could not stop the desires that emerged in people’s hearts!

...

Duke Long was beaten to a pulp by Fang Yuan!

At the start, he counterattacked with all his strength, but Fang Yuan endured Duke Long’s counterattacks head-on with an unchanging expression.

Duke Long’s appearance was completely different now, his chest had caved in, his scales were scattered everywhere, and his aura had fallen sharply.

"Triple qi retraction!" Duke Long roared again, his aura rose and his injuries recovered immediately.

Bam bam bam! Fang Yuan still rained punches on Duke Long.

Duke Long had just recovered his features when his face was messed up by Fang Yuan once again. Soon, his bones fractured and blood flowed out from everywhere.

Duke Long did not retreat, he defended with all his strength while shouting: "Triple qi retraction!"

His condition recovered once again.

Reckless Savage’s will cheered from the cape: "Beat him, beat him! Beat him hard, squeeze him dry! I want to see how much accumulation Heavenly Court has to be able to let him expend it like this! Hahaha."

But Fang Yuan was calm all along, calculating the remaining strength of the three monsters’ combination.

His strength was weakening constantly.

Back when the three monsters had first appeared, the green fish was able to destroy all the bones in Duke Long’s body with just one headbutt. But after many fierce battles and being struck by fate vanquish several times, the three monsters did not have much strength remaining.

Fang Yuan activated incomplete freedom transformation and combined the strength of the three monsters, but all aspects of strength like defense, movement, and healing were being expended intensely.

Comparing accumulation, it truly could not match Heavenly Court!

Endless fist shadows converged, Fang Yuan suddenly raised his fist and struck with all his strength!

Boom!!

A loud sound was heard as Fang Yuan’s right fist lodged into Duke Long’s face. The horrifying strength burst forth, Duke Long instantly lost consciousness and crossed the sky in a blink of an eye like a meteor before crashing heavily on the ground.

He continued to fall deeper, his strong body pierced into Heavenly Court’s ground and created an unprecedentedly deep crater!

Duke Long was lying in the depths of the crater without moving. But triple qi retraction was activated once again, another round of endless qi converged into him.

Fang Yuan snorted and loosened his hand, a large handful of purple hair scattered with the wind, they were ripped out when he punched Duke Long.

Fang Yuan analyzed calmly.

Triple qi retraction was not activated by Duke Long, it was essentially a method left by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable. Even if Duke Long lost his consciousness for the moment, triple qi retraction still continued to support Duke Long.

Incomplete freedom transformation did not have much strength remaining. If this killer move was stopped midway, he could not use Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s strength to activate it again. Next time he used it, Fang Yuan would have to rely on his own strength.

Duke Long had stopped temporarily, Fang Yuan immediately turned around and charged towards Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Heaven Overseeing Tower had been continuing to move, but because of the interference from the three regions’ Gu Immortals, it was not able to go too far away from Fang Yuan.

"Stop him, stop him!"

"Stop Fang Yuan!!"

"No matter the cost, we must stop him!"

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals charged towards Fang Yuan like moths flying towards fire.

Ye Qiao Zi blocked the path.

Fang Yuan’s punch pierced through his wooden armor and killed him.

Zhao Shan He pounced at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan kicked, directly bursting his body!

Vortex Space Boy screamed as he appeared behind Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan grabbed the tiny head with his fingers, he then clenched his fingers into a fist, forcibly turning Vortex Space Boy’s head into a mush of blood and brain matter.

"Hahaha, this is the way!"

"Kill them, rip them to shreds!"

"Then, charge through the entire way!!"

Inside the bloody cape, Reckless Savage’s will laughed loudly while waving his hands as he cheered on Fang Yuan.

"Fang Yuan, don’t even think about it!" Duke Long flew once again, trying to stop Fang Yuan.

A palace suddenly appeared above him.

Dragon Palace!

...

The former Lord of Dragon Palace — Wu Shuai’s life seemed to be filled with tragedies.

Dragonman extermination was like an executioner’s blade that was always hanging above his and the dragonman race’s head.

Dream revelations came time and time again, in order to settle the matter of dragonman extermination, he had to use rank eight Dragon Palace while doing experiments on the dragonman body.

But to do that, Wu Shuai alone was not enough, he gathered all of the dragonman Gu Immortals and told them the truth, he begged them for help.

In the huge Dragon Palace, there was an unprecedented meeting, almost all of the dragonman Gu Immortals had gathered together.

"To do experiments, we need a vast number of dragonmen, almost all these people will die, even if they survive, they will wish they were dead. Thus, I cannot make this decision alone, if anyone objects, speak up now."

"I object!" Immediately, someone stood out.

Everyone turned to look, it was Wu Shuai’s cousin, the beloved seventh young master that Duke Long doted on the most.

Seventh young master pointed at Wu Shuai who was on his throne as he scolded: "You scoundrel, you are insane!!!"

"In order to gain Heavenly Court’s trust, you killed your most loyal sworn brother!"

"To conceal the secret of dragonmen reign supreme, you caused the death of your own father!"

"To refine dream token Immortal Gu, you actually used your most beloved wife as the Gu material!"

"Now, to deal with dragonman extermination, you even want to sacrifice all of your innocent dragonmen and do experiments on them?"

"Why is your heart so wicked, why are you so cold-hearted?!"

"You think that this so-called evidence will make us believe you? Hehe, you are too laughable, do you think we are all fools?!"

"Hehehe, no, you are not laughable, you are pitiful and sad!"

"You wanted to give your wife happiness, and in the end? You sacrifice her to refine a Gu. Hehehe."

"You wanted to make your father proud, and in the end? You killed him! You killed him with your own two hands!!"

"You promised Huang Wei a bright future, you gave him hope. But in the end you killed him. And now, what future is there?"

"Hehehe, hahaha!" Seventh young master laughed maniacally, his tears were almost falling out: "You tried so hard to lead the dragonman race to rise up, and in the end? In the end, the dragonman race is about to be wiped out, we are going to be extinct!"

"It was you, it was you! If you were not ambitious and took over South Flower Island, relocating our people, developing rapidly and causing conflict with the humans, why would all this happen? If the dragonman race lived quietly and peacefully, ancestor would not have the intention of wiping us out!"

"Wu Shuai, oh Wu Shuai, you are the strongest person in the dragonman race besides our ancestor, but what you gave us was not glory or hope, it was neither equality nor dignity. It was... destruction!"

"You are a real tragedy! Your whole life is a tragedy!!"

The entire hall was silent.

Wu Shuai sat on his dragon throne, expressionless.

At this time, a dragonman Gu Immortal slowly walked out from the crowd and stood in front of Wu Shuai, he then turned to face the crowd. This dragonman Gu Immortal said in a deep voice: "I support Lord Wu Shuai."

Seventh young master was astonished: "Third... third uncle, you?"

A second dragonman Gu Immortal walked out of the crowd and stood in front of Wu Shuai and faced the dragonman Gu Immortals. This dragonman Gu Immortal said in a loud voice: "I agree greatly with Lord Wu Shuai’s plan!"

Seventh young master was shocked: "Fifth uncle?!"

Then, the third, fourth, fifth person... all the dragonman Gu Immortals stood in front of Wu Shuai.

In the blink of an eye, seventh young master was left all alone.

He shouted in disbelief: "Have you all gone insane?!"

"If this is insanity, then we are all lunatics!"

"Hehehe, to become a lunatic like Ren Zu, I have no objections."

"Little Seventh, do you still not understand? How big of a tragedy is it for our lives and deaths to be in the hands of others! Even if this person is our ancestor, our progenitor, he cannot do this!!"

Wu Shuai slowly stood up from his dragon throne, his face was covered in tears.

"Everyone... I, Wu Shuai, hereby swear!" Wu Shuai’s voice was extremely hoarse: "I will stand with the dragonman race regardless of survival or extermination, I will contribute my heart, my blood, and all the spirit and determination that I have!"

"Even if I were to fail in the end, I will fight to the final moment of my life."

"Even if I die in the end, my spirit and determination will be inherited by others."

"Even if my spirit and determination are no longer in existence... even if only my name is left, I will continue to fight, I will never stop resisting!!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Boom!

Under the amplification of heroes among people, Dragon Palace was barely able to ward off Duke Long.

"Get lost." At the next moment, Duke Long sent Dragon Palace flying with dragon claw strike.

Duke Long’s field of vision became broad again, but he was not happy at all because Fang Yuan had already gotten close to Heaven Overseeing Tower.

Not only him, Wu Yong, Bing Sai Chuan, Shen Cong Sheng, and others had also moved in like a fierce tide. This wave of offense was terrifying.

Duke Long was already unable to block them in time and looked at this sight with overwhelming anger.

Right now, at this moment, even if Heaven Overseeing Tower turned phantom, it could not avoid this danger. Because Fang Yuan possessed dream path methods!

Feng Jin Huang could restrain his methods, but she was only a mortal Gu Master. Her strength was insufficient to go against the current Fang Yuan.

"Use fate vanquish quickly!" Duke Long shouted.

The Gu Immortals inside Heaven Overseeing Tower shuddered and did not care about enemies or allies, they activated fate vanquish again with desperation and anxiety.

The sky turned white!

Light was everywhere.

White light.

It filled the entire world, all the space in this world was filled with white light.

This was Heaven Overseeing Tower’s strongest method, it used rank nine fate Gu as the core to activate a supreme killer move!

Be they Heavenly Court or the three regions’ Gu Immortals, both sides were extremely familiar with this killer move.

White light filled the whole battlefield ruthlessly, not differentiating enemies or allies!

In an instant, regardless of which Immortal Gu House it was, they were all heavily injured or damaged!

"Damn it, damn it!" Wu Yong gritted his teeth as blood flowed out of the corners of his lips. He felt his ambition melting like snow in the white light: "This again, it is this move again! Whenever there is some breakthrough, fate vanquish will turn around the situation for Heavenly Court!"

"Huh?" Wu Yong’s gaze suddenly focused before revealing a complex expression.

There was still a blood red trace remaining in the empty battlefield!

What was that?

It was a cape, fluttering like a war banner!

"Oh oh oh oh oh!" Inside the cape, Reckless Savage’s will clenched his fists and beat his chest like an ape in heat.

He was extremely excited, shouting wildly: "This is it! This is it! Within heaven and earth, who else is there but me? At the crucial moment, you still need to rely on me! Cool, I am damn cool!!"

If it were just the three monsters, they naturally would not be able to resist the power of fate vanquish easily.

However, when they combined into one move and became connected to Fang Yuan as the core, using Fang Yuan’s complete otherworldly demon identity, fate vanquish was no longer able to harm them.

In the endless light, Fang Yuan’s white robe, black hair, and bloody cape were fluttering wildly with the wind.

He charged!

He pushed forward!

He did not stop at all!

"We still have... hope." From within the retreating Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan opened his eyes wide and stared at that bright red image moving in the white space.

Shen Cong Sheng coughed out blood repeatedly as he fell from the sky. He was also looking at Fang Yuan, using all his strength to fix his gaze on him!

He shouted inwardly: "Fang Yuan, you damned demon! Everything depends on you now!!"

Fang Yuan shot forward like a sharp arrow, he was like a star of calamity that rose to the sky from the ground, bringing chaos to the world and defying heaven itself!

"Charge, charge! The grandeur of men can be seen when they charge ahead, oh yeah!" Reckless Savage’s will continued to shout as his voice rang in Fang Yuan’s ears.

Be they Duke Long, Feng Jiu Ge, Heavenly Court’s immortals, or the three regions’ immortals, they forced their eyes open and fixed their gazes on Fang Yuan.

Heaven and earth was a scene of pure white, and in this whiteness, the path seemed to be exceptionally long and endless.

As if it spanned across history, from the past until now!

...

Over three million years ago, when variant humans were in prosperity, there was an inconspicuous human slave.

He was called Wei Yu Shu.

He heard of Heavenly Court’s location, he was not willing to be a slave anymore, he escaped and was chased after.

His master berated him coldly.

"Wei Yu Shu, when I bought you back then, you were only a child who did not even know about cultivation!"

"I taught you step by step and raised you into a Gu Immortal. Was it my protection and indulgence that allowed you to have such guts?"

"Tell me, why did you betray me?"

"Have I, Princess Ye Tong, mistreated you?! You lived in luxury and peace, you only needed to serve me and I have never treated you cruelly."

Wei Yu Shu smiled sadly: "But, even if I lived a much better life, I was still only your slave!"

The female inkman immortal was furious: "What is bad about becoming my slave? Many inkmen want to live your life but don’t get such a chance!"

Wei Yu Shu was dazed for a moment before he spoke slowly: "I did not think it was bad before, but when I heard there was a Heavenly Court in this world where humans live... I realized why I was always in low spirits and felt unhappiness. It was because I lacked one thing."

"Hehehe, I have read \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e, I am truly too stupid. I am even more stupid than those wingless birds, toothless beasts, gill-less fish! At least, they know they lost their freedom and are staking their lives to chase after freedom. But what about me? I did not even know I lost my freedom!"

"So, you want to escape, you want to reach Heavenly Court?" The female inkman immortal sneered: "You are too naive, you actually believe in the temptation of these devils?!"

Wei Yu Shu closed his eyes, his voice was hoarse: "It is not that I believe it, but I want to believe it."

"Heavenly Court was never the important point!"

"Without Heavenly Court, there can be Earthly Court, or even Human Court!"

"There will always be a place where a group of humans gather and pursue freedom!!"

...

A million years ago.

Duke Long snorted coldly: "Tell me, Hong Ting, who can do as they please in this world? Your thoughts are too childish, you think becoming an Immortal Venerable and leading the righteous path would not need sacrifices? What is there in this world that has no price to pay for? How shallow do you think the words ’righteous path’ are? Wrong! Maintaining Heavenly Court’s righteous path requires you to pay a price, it requires sacrifices. If you don’t even have this sacrificial mentality, then I will tell you, you don’t have the qualifications to enter Heavenly Court!"

Duke Long’s brows raised, his face cold as ice: "Who do you want to revive?"

"Every person who sacrificed themselves for me. My parents, Liu Shu Xian, and many others."

"Even if there are crueler tragedies, I will accept them! Master, disciple always had a question. Why? Why must we accept fate’s arrangements? If there was no fate, would the world truly fall into chaos? Is it not possible that the world will become a better place?" Hong Ting asked in an anxious tone.

...

The current era.

Duke Long looked at Feng Jin Huang and said solemnly: "Huang Er, you need to understand that you are the future Great Dream Immortal Venerable who will surpass all the past venerables! You will create dream path and be invincible in the whole world. Your glory will shine and spread for ages, becoming the eternal symbol and support of humanity. Don’t fear, don’t hesitate, take each success to press forward indomitably until you reach the supreme peak of this world!"

Feng Jin Huang’s eyes got brighter and brighter as she listened. She smiled with unparalleled beauty.

Duke Long also smiled.

Feng Jin Huang said: "If all this is predestined by fate, then... I do not believe in fate!"

...

Boom!

Fang Yuan directly broke through the roof of Heaven Overseeing Tower and entered inside.

A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal inside stood up to stop him.

Fang Yuan directly pierced his hands into his chest and pulled fiercely, ripping the Heavenly Court Gu Immortal into two halves!

Blood splashed on Fang Yuan’s face; his skin was white like snow, cold like ice.

Blood splashed on Fang Yuan’s black hair; the hair was like the night sky, letting out profound eerie light.

Blood splashed on Fang Yuan’s blood cape; the cape was touching the ground like it was paving a bloody path for the tyrant’s domination.

Fang Yuan took large strides and reached the center of the top floor. Fate Gu was right in front of him, it had always been there, as if it were constantly receiving offerings, offerings that it had been receiving for millions of years!

Fang Yuan grabbed fate Gu!

At this instance, even Reckless Savage’s will inside the cape was quiet, closing his mouth as he stared at Fang Yuan blankly.

Because he realized: This was the moment of truth for the whole of humanity, no, for the whole world.

At this time, Fang Yuan held fate Gu in his hands, his gaze was flickering with complex emotions.

He had finally caught fate Gu, this was a scene which he had imagined countless times.

His goal was achieved at this moment, but he did not think of himself and instead thought of \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e.

Ren Zu said: He wanted freedom and to get rid of fate’s shackles. After that, he could go wherever he wanted to go, and be with whoever he wanted to with forever.

The birds berated him: You humans are destined to be alone, all gatherings will end up in separation. Oh human, you want to pursue freedom but you also need to abide by your nature, you should not indulge in wild fantasies.

Ren Zu said: I want freedom and to get rid of fate’s shackles. I will possess countless delicacies and wines, endless wealth, and all kinds of comfortable and beautiful clothes.

The beasts ridiculed him: But you humans were born with empty hands and will pass away with nothing. Oh human, you want to pursue freedom but you also need to abide by your nature, you should not indulge in wild fantasies.

Ren Zu said: I want freedom and to get rid of fate’s shackles. I will breathe freely and live on forever, I want eternal life!

The fishes rebutted: But you humans are destined to have no relation with eternal life, you will die of old age and illnesses. Oh human, you want to pursue freedom but you also need to abide by your nature, you should not indulge in wild fantasies.

Ren Zu was puzzled.

Ren Zu was disgruntled.

Ren Zu was irritated.

Ren Zu became insane!

How can you have such thoughts?

Why can’t I have the same thoughts?

Why can’t a human be together forever with their loved ones?

Why can’t a human live life without worries and have endless wealth?

Why can’t a human have eternal life?

Because fate does not allow it?

Because it does not allow, therefore I cannot do it?! I cannot even think about it?!

On what basis?

On what damned basis?

On what basis am I not allowed to think about it?!

On what basis is eternal life forbidden?!

If such thoughts turn me insane.

Then let me become a lunatic!

If such pursuit makes me demonic.

Then let me become a demon!!

Fang Yuan looked at fate Gu and sneered coldly.

He clenched his fist lightly.

Crack.

A soft sound echoed.

Fate Gu was directly crushed into pieces.

Rank nine fate Gu —

Destroyed!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The moment fate Gu was destroyed, the whole battlefield returned to its previous state.

The white light formed by fate vanquish killer move disappeared completely.

Crack crack.

A series of crisp sounds echoed as countless cracks spread throughout Heaven Overseeing Tower. At the next moment, the whole of Heaven Overseeing Tower crumbled into pieces!

The grand Heavenly Court fell into deathly silence.

There was no trace of wind in the battlefield, but the immortals felt a hurricane blowing in their hearts!

Heaven Overseeing Tower turned into countless fragments that fell down along with Gu Immortal corpses. Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s painting path method turned into a ray of light that crossed the sky and flew far away.

Fang Yuan ignored it and quietly floated in the air, looking at Duke Long, Feng Jiu Ge, and the rest.

He had no expression and did not say anything, he only opened his palm slowly. Under everybody’s vision killer move, everyone in the five regions saw — the fragments of the destroyed fate Gu!

"Fate Gu has been... destroyed?"

"We won?!"

The three regions’ Gu Immortals looked at each other, seeing the astonishment and daze on each other’s faces.

"Unbelievable, we really did it!"

"This battle will definitely be remembered by later generations."

After coming to their senses, the three regions’ Gu Immortals cheered wildly!

On the contrary, Heavenly Court’s remaining Gu Immortals had ashen expressions and were dazed like puppets.

Fate Gu was Heavenly Court’s banner, their spiritual pillar.

It was more than a rank nine Gu worm, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable had relied on this Gu to create the rule of humanity, it gave humans the hope of freedom and courage to revolt.

After over three million years of inheritance and development, the significance of fate Gu was much greater to Heavenly Court. It was Heavenly Court’s foundation, a symbol, and also an eternally fluttering banner.

But now, this banner was taken down and torn by Fang Yuan!

Heavenly Court’s immortals felt that the pillar in their mind was taken away, their world had collapsed!

Even without the three regions’ Gu Immortals attacking or any external stimulation, they were dazed and did not know what they should do.

Even Feng Jiu Ge was silent, his destiny song that had kept on resounding throughout the battlefield stopped at this moment.

Far away, Feng Jin Huang was hiding in a secret underground Immortal Gu House, she was weeping silently: "Fate Gu... has been destroyed! How did this happen? Everyone clearly put in so much effort, not even hesitating to sacrifice themselves!"

Qin Ding Ling’s gaze was blank, she was like a lifeless statue.

The greatly damaged Demon Judgment Board rose to the sky, Fang Zheng who was inside looked at Fang Yuan with a highly complicated expression: "Fang Yuan, you actually accomplished it. In Heavenly Court, in front of the venerable methods, you destroyed fate Gu! So the gap between you and I is simply this big."

This gap made Fang Zheng feel despair, but a strange thing was Fang Zheng did not feel bitterness at this moment, instead he felt a trace of relief.

It was time to give up.

A person like Fang Yuan was different from everyone from the start. Thinking of rivaling him was wishful thinking from the start, a delirious thought even.

"Damn it, damn it..."

"We failed, fate Gu has been destroyed."

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals cried. They had used all their strength, given their everything, some crawled out of their graves to fight, some held on till the end, but they still failed.

"We have really failed our comrades who sacrificed themselves!"

"I am too ashamed to face my seniors!"

Shame surfaced on the Heavenly Court immortals’ faces, many even had the impulse to kill themselves.

"Don’t panic!" At this moment, Duke Long suddenly spoke, his voice spreading throughout the battlefield, shaking every Gu Immortal’s mind.

Duke Long flew to the sky, his expression was solemn as he knew this was the crucial moment.

Fate Gu had been destroyed, Duke Long could not afford to be upset or blame himself. He was the leader of Heavenly Court, he needed to try his hardest to deal with this issue!

What made him anxious was that even the deeply experienced Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were shaken like this. What would the people all over the world think about this sight?

If Fang Yuan scheming and defeating Heavenly Court time and again earlier was like a heavy slap to Heavenly Court’s face, then Fang Yuan destroying fate Gu was like shaking Heavenly Court’s foundation completely, destroying the status and reputation Heavenly Court had accumulated for over three million years!

Duke Long had to restore their morale and fighting spirit.

"Fang Yuan, you really think you destroyed fate Gu?" Duke Long suddenly laughed with no trace of listlessness, one could not sense any form of wavering in his tone.

Fang Yuan did not reply and only slightly raised his hand as he looked at Duke Long.

Immediately, the three regions’ Gu Immortals ridiculed: "Duke Long, have you gone blind? You can’t see the fragments of fate Gu?"

Some of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals looked with bright gazes, a spark of hope rising in their hearts: "Is the fate Gu that Fang Yuan destroyed a replica?"

But Duke Long shook his head, still laughing: "Hehehe, the destroyed fate Gu is the real one. But Fang Yuan, even though fate Gu is destroyed, has it really been destroyed forever, can we not refine it once again?"

"Huh?" The immortals were stupefied.

Immortal Gu were unique, this was an irrefutable truth of the world. If I had an Immortal Gu, others could not possess the same one.

But when this Immortal Gu was destroyed, others would have the chance to possess it.

Fate Gu was destroyed by Fang Yuan now, this was an ironclad truth. But this was not a genuine ending because Heavenly Court could refine it again!

"Does Heavenly Court have fate Gu’s recipe?" Shen Cong Sheng’s expression was grim as he asked.

"Heavenly Court has held fate Gu for over three million years, we had countless refinement path great experts and three Immortal Venerables in this period. Take a guess if our Heavenly Court has fate Gu’s recipe or not?" Duke Long smiled, his entire body letting out confidence and calmness.

"Damn it!" The three regions’ Gu Immortals were exasperated.

Duke Long laughed: "However, even if Heavenly Court did not have fate Gu’s Immortal Gu recipe, so what? Everyone, let me ask you, was the fate Gu in the Immemorial Antiquity Era refined by Ren Zu?"

"Of course not." Qin Ding Ling replied, she understood Duke Long’s intention and her eyes shone with life again: "Fate Gu was born from heaven and earth itself."

Duke Long nodded: "That’s right, Immortal Gu are born from nature which is why there are many wild Immortal Gu. Even if we cannot refine it, heaven and earth will refine fate Gu. The new fate Gu might be rank six or even rank nine directly. Who can say for sure?"

This time, the three regions’ Gu Immortals looked at each other.

After Duke Long mentioned this point, they suddenly realized that destroying fate Gu might not be a big deal!

If fate Gu was destroyed, so be it, it could be refined again.

"Even if it is refined, we can destroy it again!" A Gu Immortal shouted angrily, but even he himself did not have much confidence.

To destroy fate Gu this time, they had paid a huge price! Could such success really be replicated? Forget about anything else, just the point that only an otherworldly demon could destroy fate Gu blocked the path of many heroes and conquerors. Didn’t even three Demon Venerables fail?

"Damn it, how could we have failed to notice this?" A Gu Immortal was vexed, but thinking about it, he could blame himself for not considering everything properly.

After all, invading Heavenly Court and destroying fate Gu was already an enormous goal and could even be said to be wishful thinking. To realize this goal, the Gu Immortals had already exhausted their minds and energy. This was an impossible mission akin to a mortal ascending to heaven, even if they used all their strength and had inexhaustible will, it was still difficult to achieve.

Under such circumstances, who could afford to think of the matter after ascending to heaven?

In fact, when Central Continent held the Refinement Path Convention and four regions’ Gu Immortals invaded, who could say for sure that they could destroy fate Gu?

No one!

Even Fang Yuan, even venerables did not have such confidence.

Everyone was giving it a try.

After the attempt succeeded, the Gu Immortals were exulted. But what happens after realizing this goal?

Duke Long’s words were also the truth. The three regions’ Gu Immortals suddenly discovered that the price they paid, the battles and the effort they invested were all in vain, was it just an empty victory?

The three regions’ Gu Immortals were silent, their expressions gradually turning unsightly.

Wu Yong was sharp and sensed the change in people’s hearts and the fallen morale, he immediately refuted coldly: "Lord Duke Long, you have a sharp tongue. However, Heavenly Court’s failure is still a failure, you took great pain to defend and even hide fate Gu in Heavenly Court, yet we were still able to destroy it. In the future, even if you obtain fate Gu again, so what?"

"Hehehe, in fact, you need to be careful. Otherwise, when heaven and earth gives birth to the new fate Gu, you won’t be able to refine it yourselves. At that time, fate Gu will become a wild Immortal Gu, anyone will be able to possess it, it might not necessarily be obtained by your Heavenly Court anymore."

The three regions’ immortals’ eyes brightened and their morale soared.

Duke Long was smiling calmly: "Wu Yong, you are not wrong about it at all. Let’s say fate Gu becomes a wild Immortal Gu and is obtained by one of you, so what? Can you all... use it? Do you know how to use it?"

Even Wu Yong could not reply to this question.

Duke Long smiled proudly: "Fate Gu can never be used by Gu Immortals! Before the Remote Antiquity Era, it was held by variant humans but they could not use it. Over three million years, my Heavenly Court had several Immortal Venerables, but no one could directly use this Gu. Countless geniuses racked their minds and then conceptualized Heaven Overseeing Tower, it took three million years for us to research a killer move that could make use of fate Gu, and that is fate vanquish!"

"Do you understand the killer move fate vanquish? Do you know how to construct Heaven Overseeing Tower?"

The three regions’ Gu Immortals fell into silence.

Duke Long continued: "Only heaven’s will can use fate Gu. Back then, for the sake of humanity, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not hesitate to sacrifice herself and merged with heaven’s will, disturbing and influencing heaven’s will. Which is why, humanity that rose three million years ago is still flourishing now, we remained as the rulers of the world."

"And my Heavenly Court built the immortal graveyard to support Star Constellation’s will. Heavenly Court members all chose to hibernate in the immortal graveyard to provide constant help for Star Constellation’s will. Only then are we able to influence fate Gu and thus influence the position of humanity in the whole world!"

"Among you, who can achieve this?"

Duke Long swept his gaze throughout the battlefield, the three regions’ Gu Immortals were silent while Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals stood proudly, someone even added arrogantly: "No one! In the vast five regions, only Heavenly Court can accomplish this!"

"No, you are wrong, Duke Long." Bing Sai Chuan’s retort came from inside Calamity Luck Altar: "Even if we are unable to use fate Gu, we can use it as a Gu refinement material to refine destiny Gu! Fate Gu cannot be controlled by others, but destiny Gu can. This is the plan of our Lord Giant Sun Immortal Venerable."

Duke Long looked towards Calamity Luck Altar and gave a disdainful smile: "Even if you refine destiny Gu, does it mean fate Gu won’t exist?"

Bing Sai Chuan was unable to reply.

If fate Gu was used as a Gu material, when Longevity Heaven refined destiny Gu, fate Gu would be used up. In the future, there could still be a new fate Gu.

Duke Long sighed: "No matter what you do, fate Gu will still exist. Even if it destroyed now, it will appear again in the future. As long as it appears, will your efforts today have any meaning?"

The three regions’ Gu Immortals were silent.

"Of course there is meaning!" Duke Long answered himself with solemness and hatred: "The meaning of this is to give a chance for variant humans to rise up, for them to create an unimaginably bad influence on humanity."

"You cannot use fate Gu and how long will it take for you to refine destiny Gu? You don’t even have an incomplete Gu recipe of fate Gu! Once fate Gu reappears, it will be controlled by heaven’s will. Humanity will decline and variant humans will rise."

"And the one who led to this is all of you!" Duke Long berated and suddenly pointed towards Fang Yuan: "Especially you! You are the greatest evil! You destroyed the immortal graveyard, Star Constellation’s will won’t be able to interfere with heaven’s will like before. If humanity is exterminated in the future, you will be the main culprit behind everything!!"

"Fang Yuan, oh Fang Yuan, you think you obtained victory by destroying fate Gu?"

"Hehehe, at best, this is only a giant joke."

"My Heavenly Court thinks for humanity in all aspects, we offered our blood and sweat for the benefits of humanity, even sacrificing ourselves. And you people, for your own selfish interests, destroyed the great position that my Heavenly Court had maintained meticulously for millions of years."

"My Heavenly Court can refine fate Gu again in the future, we can refine it secretly! We won’t let the five regions know of fate Gu’s refinement, will you find out about it?"

"Can you all stop us in time?"

"Even if you stop us the second or the third time. What about after that? Who can guarantee you can stop us from refining it again and again?"

"We will only refine rank six fate Gu, it is far easier than restoring it to rank nine!"

"Also, every time we fight because of fate Gu, humanity will suffer heavy losses and greatly expend its foundation. This will give variant humans the opportunity to rise up against us!"

Duke Long lamented with deep emotions as he said this.

"Who is this old man? I did not know that Heavenly Court did so many things in consideration for our entire human race!"

"Why did they invade Heavenly Court, what were these Gu Immortals thinking?"

"These people are all demons, they disregarded the big picture for their own interests! They are accursed sinners!"

The five regions’ mortals resonated with Duke Long.

Most of the mortals had extremely little understanding of the Gu Immortal world.

And the Gu Immortals scattered in the five regions were also silent when they heard Duke Long.

Heavenly Court was powerful, Heavenly Court was domineering, Heavenly Court occupied almost all the cultivation resources of Central Continent, Heavenly Court’s ambition stretched extremely far and actively interfered in major events of the other four regions.

But no one was able to deny Heavenly Court’s contribution in protecting humanity.

This was a fact!

"Ahhh, this is somewhat troublesome. Although it felt extremely satisfying to destroy fate Gu, there is some emptiness after the adrenaline rush, this is a bit of a problem." Inside the blood cape, Reckless Savage’s will mumbled while holding his head.

"Hehe, Duke Long, are you done?" Fang Yuan’s expression was indifferent, after destroying fate Gu, this was the first time he spoke and broke the silence.

Duke Long looked at Fang Yuan, his brows furrowed as he started feeling uneasy.

Fang Yuan was too calm! According to Fang Yuan’s intelligence, how could he not see the crucial point? Duke Long tried to think from another perspective, if he were Fang Yuan, he would definitely use all his strength to attack and not give the enemies the chance to speak.

Because once Duke Long spoke, he would create this current situation.

Indeed.

Duke Long’s words restored Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals’ morale and also suppressed the enemies’ spirit, he also raised Heavenly Court’s prestige and it was simply turning the situation around!

Duke Long was worthy of being the leader of Heavenly Court, he not only possessed terrifying strength worthy of the main pillar, at the crucial time, he could even lead and boost morale, changing people’s hearts.

How could Fang Yuan not see this?

But he did not stop Duke Long, Duke Long could even vaguely see a trace of anticipation in his eyes.

So what was Fang Yuan anticipating?

At the next moment, Fang Yuan chuckled: "Oh Duke Long, who told you that destroying fate Gu meant the end of this battle? You seem to have forgotten someone."

Duke Long’s pupils shrank as he realized something.

He followed Fang Yuan’s gaze and saw a river.

That was a phantom silhouette of the River of Time!

Calamity Luck Altar carried Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s method — Call of the Ancient. From the start of the battle, this killer move’s power had condensed into a phantom River of Time in Heavenly Court.

Northern Plains’ past Gu Immortal experts walked out from this phantom river and created an extremely huge threat to Heavenly Court.

But as the battle continued, the phantom River of Time seemed to have gradually grown powerless as fewer and fewer of Northern Plains’ experts were summoned.

At the late stage of the battle, this phantom River of Time seemed to be motionless and showed no traces of new figures emerging.

However, when Fang Yuan destroyed fate Gu, this phantom River of Time seemed like a beast that had broken free of its shackles, it started surging wildly and turbulently.

Swish swish swish...

The river water surged, raising astonishing waves.

A figure walked out slowly and naturally from the giant waves.

All the immortals present heard his voice:

"In my youth I shined in the light of spring, horses trampled on flowers as fragrance of wine spread.

Love and hatred came with the waves, summer cicadas sang as I woke up in the middle of the night.

Planting red lotuses in the River of Time, going back in time with my tears run dry.

Through the vicissitudes of life I return to this stage, the myriad beings anticipate a life unbound by fate!"

He had the appearance of a young man, his gaze seemed to have experienced countless vicissitudes, he wore a red robe, his face was pure as jade, his eyes were bright like stars, and his skin was white as snow.

He walked out from the phantom River of Time and stepped into Heavenly Court’s battlefield.

Everyone watched, there was complete silence all around.

His gaze moved around before fixing on Duke Long’s body.

Duke Long shook, his expression was extremely complicated as he opened his mouth, his lips moved but no words came out.

The young man smiled: "Master, have you been well?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1962 I Have Destiny Immortal Gu“s Recipe!

"Wow, this person came out of the river!"

"Why is there a river in the sky?"

"The young man who walked out is really handsome!"

"I still think that the fairy in the red cape looks nicer."

Because of the killer move everybody’s vision, the mortals of the five regions saw this scene, they discussed enthusiastically and rowdily.

Mortals and Gu Masters might not understand the severity of the situation, but most of the Gu Immortals knew who this mysterious young man was.

At once, Gu Immortals of the five regions were shaken, it was as if a world destroying tornado was rampaging in their hearts.

"This Gu Immortal, it can’t be?"

"Is he Red Lotus Demon Venerable?!"

Among the generations of venerables, Red Lotus Demon Venerable was the most mysterious one. Back then, Heavenly Court used everything to nurture him but their efforts were in vain. Not only did Red Lotus not become an Immortal Venerable, he even became a Demon Venerable, betraying the righteous path and damaging fate Gu. There was also the problem of the dragonman race mixed within this, Heavenly Court had to disregard costs and make information path great experts use their most profound methods to eliminate the influence of this event.

Moreover, Red Lotus Demon Venerable had constantly been reborn, he changed his style of action and wanted to preserve Heavenly Court’s reputation for the sake of his master, he started to act secretly in the dark.

Thus, most Gu Immortals did not know the true appearance of Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

But they all heard the mysterious young looking Gu Immortal call Duke Long his master. He had also walked out of the phantom River of Time...

Everyone knew that Duke Long was the master of Red Lotus.

"But why did this happen? Didn’t Red Lotus Demon Venerable die?"

"He might be a new disciple of Duke Long."

The Gu Immortals of the five regions were uncertain, but Heavenly Court’s battlefield was full of experienced experts, there were many super forces behind them that had secretive information regarding Red Lotus Demon Venerable, they knew quite a lot of things.

Thus, be they Heavenly Court or the three regions’ Gu Immortals, they looked at the young Gu Immortal while dazed like rocks, they were numb from shock.

They recognized the young Gu Immortal’s identity.

It was really Red Lotus Demon Venerable!

The three regions’ Gu Immortals were shaken, Red Lotus Demon Venerable was the disciple of Duke Long, seeing his attitude towards Duke Long, it still carried concern and respect.

Heavenly Court did not dare to act rashly. After all, Red Lotus Demon Venerable had invaded Heavenly Court in the past, damaging fate Gu. After that, in order to repair fate Gu, Heavenly Court spent over a million years, countless resources and manpower. They managed to repair it in the end, but it was a pity that Red Lotus’ inheritor, Fang Yuan, destroyed it! It was truly infuriating!

And most importantly, there was Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s cultivation level!

He was a venerable with rank nine battle strength, once he appeared, who could face him in combat?

Even the powerful Duke Long, even the colossal Di Zang Sheng, even Fang Yuan who wore the blood battle cape, were no match for the rank nine Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

Nobody held any doubt regarding this.

The young looking Red Lotus guessed everyone’s thoughts, he walked on thin air as he got to the center of the battlefield, he smiled: "Everyone, no need to worry, I have already died. Now that fate Gu is destroyed while call of the ancient has barely any power left, I am merely Red Lotus’ will."

Red Lotus’ will was vivid and solid like it was the real person.

But upon close inspection, one would realize that there were differences between it and an actual Gu Immortal.

The immortals managed to discern this as they let out sighs of relief.

Red Lotus did not lie, this was his will, not his main body.

His reputation was too great, he appeared in a shocking manner, everyone could not help but think of it as the worst case situation. After Red Lotus informed them, they realized the truth.

The bad feeling in Duke Long’s heart was getting heavier.

Duke Long snorted coldly, shouting: "Red Lotus, even though you have died, you are still not willing to give up that heretical thought? You won this time, thanks to you, fate Gu has been destroyed by your chosen pawn."

Red Lotus shook his head: "Master, this is not a win, precisely so, I had to show up."

"What are you trying to do?" Duke Long frowned, the bad feeling in his heart intensified.

Red Lotus replied with action, his body flickered as he appeared before Fang Yuan instantly.

Fang Yuan looked at Red Lotus’ will with a calm expression, his gaze was dark like the night sky.

He had very deep ties with this venerable. The Spring Autumn Cicada that he had used to turn situations around many times was the time path Immortal Gu created by this person.

"You did very well. I am sure you’ve guessed what I am going to do now?" Red Lotus’ will smiled at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan replied: "Somewhat."

"Even though fate Gu is destroyed, the truth is that to use it as a Gu material to refine destiny Gu, we will need an otherworldly demon like you. Thanks to someone’s help, you finally became a complete otherworldly demon." Red Lotus’ will said this as he looked far away, towards the periphery of the battlefield where Spectral Soul and his servants were hiding.

Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan were perspiring profusely. Even though this was just Red Lotus’ will, he was simply too terrifying, finding out their hiding spot with one glance.

At the hiding spot, Spectral Soul had already returned to human form, he looked at Red Lotus’ will with a complex expression.

This was not the first time he had met Red Lotus’ will, his memories surfaced from the depths of his mind.

Back then, he became a soul path venerable, he entered the River of Time to explore its secrets. Even though Spectral Soul Demon Venerable cultivated soul path, with his foundation, he could freely enter and exit the River of Time.

As the mysterious fog appeared, a stone lotus island appeared in front of him of its own initiative.

He stepped onto the stone lotus island as Red Lotus’ will smiled and invited him: "I have been waiting, Spectral Soul. Let us make a deal?"

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable agreed to the transaction. Therefore, he learned of fate Gu, and also the truth behind the historical invasion of Heavenly Court by the three Demon Venerables. He gave up on the plan to attack Heavenly Court, he went to design and create sovereign immortal fetus Gu instead.

Red Lotus’ will looked at Spectral Soul, using his gaze as an indication — it is time to carry out our transaction.

Spectral Soul chuckled as he ordered Old Man Zheng Yuan: "Gather all of the human will, send it all to Fang Yuan."

Old Man Zheng Yuan immediately moved.

At once, the vast amount of human will from Heavenly Court surged. These wills were of all varieties and colors, they were filled with ugly desires or beautiful dreams, one could indulge in them and lose their way, they were beautiful and ugly at the same time. People wanted them but also hated them.

Red Lotus’ will looked at the vast amount of will that resembled a rainbow sea.

He turned around and smiled at Fang Yuan, before entering the ocean of human will personally.

The human wills engulfed him instantly, next, fire started burning out of nowhere, resembling blazing red lotuses that burned the sea of wills.

Duke Long saw this and became enraged, this was not something a mere will could achieve: "Red Lotus, back then when you attacked Heavenly Court, you actually left this arrangement behind!"

Before he finished speaking, Duke Long flew up, wanting to destroy the human wills.

"Don’t even think about it!" Wu Shuai was prepared for this, he manipulated Dragon Palace to stop him.

Both sides fought, Dragon Palace was soon forced to retreat.

"What are you all waiting for?" Duke Long shouted at all the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals jolted, they started to approach Fang Yuan and the vast sea of wills.

The three regions’ Gu Immortals were not going to watch, a huge battle erupted again!

"No matter what Red Lotus is doing, it must be disadvantageous to Heavenly Court, this is something we want to see." Wu Yong’s eyes shined with bright light, he shot out countless wind blades around him.

Di Zang Sheng roared angrily, it coiled his body around Fang Yuan and the human wills, resisting killer moves using its body as a shield, growling in pain but refusing to retreat.

Bing Sai Chuan rode in Calamity Luck Altar as he resisted Demon Judgment Board. He had a complex gaze, it looked like Red Lotus Demon Venerable was going to refine destiny Gu as well. This went against Longevity Heaven’s goal but he could not stop it or retreat now, he had to fight first.

The flames burned the human wills, emitting a dense, sharp fragrance.

After Red Lotus’ will fused into the human wills, the vast sea of wills cooperated with Fang Yuan, entering the flames.

Lumps of flames spread out, quickly expanding into a sea of fire.

The surrounding temperature rose, if rank six Gu Immortals were not putting up a defense, they would instantly melt due to the flames.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, the bloody cape protected him, he stood in the sea of fire but he did not make a move.

A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal could not help but laugh: "Fang Yuan is not making a move, he looks like he does not have destiny Immortal Gu’s recipe!"

Fang Yuan looked at the person who was speaking from within the flames, he smiled coldly as he tone carried a hint of pity: "I do not have it, but here in this battlefield, somebody does."

"Who?!" The fighting immortals all had this question in their heads.

"Find them and kill them!" The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals subconsciously had such thoughts.

"Find them and protect them!" The three regions’ Gu Immortals instantly made their decision.

Fang Yuan silently shifted his gaze towards Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge also looked at him.

The two looked at each other through the sea of fire, they stared at each other as if the surrounding fights in the battlefield were far away from them.

Feng Jiu Ge breathed in deeply, he slowly shut his eyes.

Next, he opened his mouth and started to sing, the tune of destiny song spread throughout the battlefield.

"Feng Jiu Ge has attacked again!"

"Let’s kill Fang Yuan, let’s exterminate the human will!"

"Exterminate the human will first, Fang Yuan is secondary."

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were energized, but at the next moment, they screamed in shock.

They were not powered up by destiny song, instead, the three regions’ Gu Immortals gained a boost in strength.

"Feng Jiu Ge, what are you doing?!" Duke Long was furious and shocked, he turned around and looked at Feng Jiu Ge like a furious blood dragon.

"Father!" Feng Jin Huang’s voice was filled with utter shock, it could be heard clearly as well.

"Feng Jiu Ge, why are you doing this? You betrayed Heavenly Court! How dare you, how can you do this!!" Qin Ding Ling screamed in a shrill voice, she was extremely furious. In order to nurture Feng Jiu Ge, she had even given him her responsive luck Immortal Gu.

But Feng Jiu Ge actually ’repaid’ her like this!

Feng Jiu Ge had a calm expression, he did not stop singing.

At this very moment, he betrayed Heavenly Court unhesitantly, joining Fang Yuan and the three regions’ allied forces!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1963 Feng Jiu Ge“s Red Lotus True Inheritance

The tune of destiny song filled the battlefield, but at this moment, Feng Jiu Ge’s opponent was Heavenly Court.

Regardless of the shock and perplexity of both sides, Feng Jiu Ge was immersed in his own singing, at the same time, memories surfaced in his mind.

During the second invasion of Lang Ya blessed land...

Fang Yuan set up a formation in the blessed land, Feng Jiu Ge and Chen Yi were isolated.

Feng Jiu Ge faced Fang Yuan alone.

"My Gu worms are vanishing mysteriously! How can this be? This should be a theft path method. Is it Fang Yuan’s method or this formation’s?" Feng Jiu Ge was shocked.

Because Fang Yuan had theft path methods, Feng Jiu Ge was at a disadvantage.

As time passed, his Gu worms got stolen one by one, among them were several sound path Immortal Gu.

Feng Jiu Ge’s battle strength fell greatly, he had to choose to use fixed immortal travel Immortal Gu to escape for now.

Suppress space Immortal Gu!

But Fang Yuan suddenly used his prepared method, Feng Jiu Ge failed to escape.

Immortal killer move — Great Thief Ghost Hand!

Next, Fang Yuan even stole the Fixed Immortal Travel that he was after.

Feng Jiu Ge’s heart turned icy cold, he knew that he was in a desperate situation!

But at this moment, he received Fang Yuan’s secret transmission: "Oh Feng Jiu Ge, I will not kill you, I will not steal fate armor Immortal Gu either. You and I are not on the same side, but you and Heavenly Court are not aligned in beliefs either. Face your true inner self, what do you truly want? Let me ask you, have you started comprehending destiny song already?"

Feng Jiu Ge initially thought that this was a trap by Fang Yuan to affect his fighting spirit and determination, but soon he became very perplexed.

Fang Yuan actually slowed down his attacks, he stopped forcing him.

This made Feng Jiu Ge think involuntarily —

"What does Fang Yuan mean by this?"

"He knows I have fate armor Immortal Gu? He reacted so perfectly when we attacked Lang Ya blessed land this time, he made ample preparations, does this mean he used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth?"

"If he really is reborn, what happened in the previous life? From his words, why does it seem like I will diverge from Heavenly Court?"

At this time, Fang Yuan transmitted again: "Oh Feng Jiu Ge, I know you are full of questions and suspicions. Don’t worry, as time passes, you will understand what I mean. Next, I will open the formation and give Chen Yi the false impression that he broke it. I am sure he will teleport you away, hehehe, we will meet again, Feng Jiu Ge."

"Fang Yuan, explain yourself clearly!" Feng Jiu Ge transmitted.

But at the next moment, an explosion occurred as the formation space that was isolated became connected.

Chen Yi saw Feng Jiu Ge in danger and quickly shouted loudly: "Hang on, I’m coming!"

"Be careful, the enemy has a way to steal Gu worms." Feng Jiu Ge hesitated briefly before immediately giving Chen Yi critical information.

During the fight, Fang Yuan attacked ferociously, he critically injured Feng Jiu Ge, fate armor Immortal Gu was activated.

In order to save Feng Jiu Ge, Chen Yi used karma relocation.

Feng Jiu Ge was shocked: "Fang Yuan was right, Chen Yi really had a way to send me out!"

"Feng Jiu Ge, you managed to escape this time, but next time will be different." Fang Yuan had a plain expression.

This sentence had a different meaning when it was heard by Feng Jiu Ge.

...

In the battle of Lang Ya blessed land, Heavenly Court lost.

After the battle, Feng Jiu Ge considered Fang Yuan’s words.

"He could have killed me but he did not take my life. Why?"

"Fang Yuan is a demon with a ruthless and vicious personality, he only cares about benefits! He let me go, there is only one reason, I will be a big help to him in the future."

"But I am a Central Continent member, a prospective member of Heavenly Court, the Dao Guardian of my daughter Feng Jin Huang! Don’t tell me... there will be conflict between me and Heavenly Court?"

"If Fang Yuan is reborn from the future, does that mean that in his previous life, I opposed Heavenly Court, I was his natural ally?"

As he held such concerns, Feng Jiu Ge did not inform Fairy Zi Wei of this situation.

The thing that moved him the most was the destiny song that Fang Yuan mentioned.

"Destiny song..." Feng Jiu Ge had a vague sensation and inspiration, but his inspiration was too faint and far away, he could not grab onto it.

But he knew that this was a direction.

He continued to explore it, soon gaining some fragmented comprehension.

Until one day, when he was stationed at Embroidered Tower, he looked at the three bloody skins left behind by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable.

All of the comprehension that he had during this period underwent a qualitative transformation.

Feng Jiu Ge’s soul was deeply stirred, he could not help but smile: "It seems that my next song will be — Destiny Song!"

...

In the battle of the River of Time.

Fang Yuan and Feng Jiu Ge met again.

"How is the creation of destiny song going?" They fought intensely on the surface but Fang Yuan was secretly transmitting to him.

Feng Jiu Ge: "Fang Yuan, what is it that you know?"

"Hehehe. Come to the River of Time more often, you should have realized that being here greatly helps your comprehension and creation of destiny song. But the most helpful thing is still the Red Lotus true inheritance on the stone lotus island." Fang Yuan said.

"What do you mean?" Feng Jiu Ge asked.

"According to my estimations, that should be a true inheritance that Red Lotus Demon Venerable specially left behind for you, it will help you greatly." Fang Yuan said.

Feng Jiu Ge hesitated for a moment before answering: "I will not owe you this favor without repaying it. Let me tell you this, in Heavenly Court’s Embroidered Tower, there are three true inheritances left behind by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable. Each one requires a key, they are attitude Gu, mutation Gu, and adaptation Gu."

"Oh?!" A sharp light flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

He did not think that Feng Jiu Ge was lying, the items were inside Heavenly Court, there was no need to lie. Back then, to repay the favor of saving him in the winds of assimilation, Feng Jiu Ge blocked Wu Yong’s assault. Now, it also fitted Feng Jiu Ge’s nature to expose this secret true inheritance to him.

In this battle, Fang Yuan still let him go, causing Feng Jiu Ge to survive again.

...

Central Continent’s Refinement Path Convention started, multiple battlefields were created as Gu Immortals fought intensely.

At such a crucial timing, Feng Jiu Ge was instead inside the River of Time.

"That... really is a stone lotus island?" Feng Jiu Ge was shook internally, the stone lotus island within the mist appeared in front of him, as Fang Yuan had predicted.

He saw Red Lotus’ will on the island.

Red Lotus’ will smiled: "You are finally here, Feng Jiu Ge. This is the true inheritance that I left specially for you."

Feng Jiu Ge frowned: "No matter how much you give me, it will not change my stance."

Red Lotus’ will shook his head: "I had never thought of bribing you, your choice is your own decision. I just feel that this true inheritance should be left to you. Of course, you can refuse to take it. Even if you destroy it, I am not going to stop you."

Feng Jiu Ge believed in himself, after considering it, he decided to accept the true inheritance, he immersed himself in a certain segment of the memories of Red Lotus’ life.

Red Lotus was undergoing tribulation, trying to get to rank nine venerable realm.

The terrifying might of the calamities and tribulations made Feng Jiu Ge extremely shocked and fearful!

After the tribulation was over, only half of the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals who helped Red Lotus were alive. The most painful thing to Red Lotus was that his wife Liu Shu Xian had died.

This was his most beloved woman.

"Don’t leave me, Shu Xian!" Red Lotus hugged Liu Shu Xian as tears poured down his face.

Liu Shu Xian smiled: "It’s no use, I have been struck by the tribulation. Having a trace of my soul left to take a final look at you is already an enormous fortune. How could I possibly ask for more?"

"I am useless, I am useless! I underwent tribulation but implicated you!" Hong Ting’s head was lowered with tears rolling down his eyes.

"No, Hong Ting. That tribulation could only have been blocked by my special physique. Even if you all sacrificed your lives, you would only have failed. I was born with one of the ten extreme physiques and encountered you, it was all fate’s arrangement. In your fatal moment, I suddenly understood the greatest meaning of my life, it was to protect you, to block the tribulation for you and help you ascend to the position of an Immortal Venerable! Now... I have accomplished it."

"No, No! Xian Er, I would rather not be an Immortal Venerable, I only want you to live, I only want you to live!" Hong Ting roared helplessly, his body was shaking and his tears were falling.

"Everything and everyone in this world has its own respective fate, it is fixed. Hong Ting, you cannot have such thoughts, you need to live on properly, your fate is to become an Immortal Venerable, lead Heavenly Court and spread the glory of the righteous path throughout the five regions... Do you know? I had always been wanting to see that scene, standing by your side and accompanying you as you bring fortune to the world with invincible might. Unfortunately, I won’t be able to see it..."

Liu Shu Xian’s life force gradually fell, until she died.

Hong Ting’s head was lowered and his back was bent deeply like an old man, a heavy shadow shrouded his face.

At this moment, he seemed to have lost all signs of life.

Incomparable grief, it was as if his heart had died!

Regret Gu formed in Red Lotus’ immortal aperture, he decided to change everything. For the sake of this, he turned on Duke Long and Heavenly Court.

He went on the opposite path!

Red Lotus used Spring Autumn Cicada to rebirth tens or hundreds of times.

The tribulation faded, this time, even though Liu Shu Xian was heavily injured, she still had one breath left.

"Xian Er, you are still alive, you are still alive, this is great!" Red Lotus was overjoyed.

Guh.

Liu Shu Xian suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood, her last breath was used up.

"Xian Er!!" Red Lotus was shocked, he looked at Liu Shu Xian’s corpse in a daze as his eyes turned red.

"I can still do it, I can see hope. As long as I continue working hard, I will definitely become strong enough to save Xian Er’s life!" A fierce light flashed in Red Lotus’ eyes, he muttered to himself as if he had gone into a demonic trance.

Rebirth after rebirth, he continued to be reborn.

Using the advantage of rebirth, he got stronger and stronger, he became more capable of handling different situations. He had abundant experience, he made use of every portion of resources and elevated his strength to his greatest limit.

However, like an endless loop, each time, he had to face the tribulation of becoming a venerable.

The scale and might of the tribulation was adjusted according to the changes that happened to Red Lotus! This made sure that the result of the tribulation had never changed.

Those Gu Immortals that should have died still died, including Liu Shu Xian.

Red Lotus continued to try without giving up. Ten times, a hundred times, a thousand times, ten thousand times!

He analyzed, he calculated, he maximized the value of every single resource he had, he asked for all the help he needed from Heavenly Court to the best of their ability.

...

"Xian Er!" Red Lotus hugged Liu Shu Xian.

Liu Shu Xian gave him a final glance: "It is great that you are safe." After saying that, she died.

...

"Xian Er!" Red Lotus hugged Liu Shu Xian again.

Liu Shu Xian did not have the strength to talk, she exerted her strength and wanted to raise her hand to touch Red Lotus' face but she did not succeed. Midway, her arms fell to the ground.

...

"Xian Er!" Red Lotus shouted furiously, he watched as Liu Shu Xian was reduced to ashes within the lightning tribulation.

...

"Shu Xian." Red Lotus looked at Liu Shu Xian who was badly poisoned, his footsteps slowed down.

Liu Shu Xian's entire body was black-purple, poisonous blood flowed out of her seven orifices, she smiled pitifully: "Hong Ting, don't be sad because of me. All the sacrifices are worth it, you must become a venerable, you will lead Heavenly Court and the whole of humanity."

These were her final words.

Red Lotus stopped walking, he stared at the pool of poisonous water formed from Liu Shu Xian's corpse, he held his fist as he gritted his teeth: "She died again! I need to continue working harder!!"

...

"Shu Xian!" After the tribulation, Red Lotus flew towards Liu Shu Xian again.

Liu Shu Xian shook her head, she was pale: "I am going to die, I can no longer accompany you, my most beloved."

"It will depend on the situation to see if you die. Let me check!" Red Lotus had not given up.

"I know my own condition, listen to me, at the final moment of my life, I want to tell you..." Liu Shu Xian's aura got weaker as she spoke weakly with pauses in the middle.

Red Lotus did not listen to her, he was focused on inspecting her body condition.

The result was that there was no way to save her, by the time he reacted, Liu Shu Xian who was in his arms had already died.

"There must be some way, I can definitely improve further!" Red Lotus reminded himself.

...

Attempts after attempts, failure after failure.

It was as if Hong Ting was trapped, no matter what method he used, even if he avoided the tribulation, Liu Shu Xian still died.

Feng Jiu Ge watched Red Lotus fail time and time again, he repeated attempts after attempts, an intense feeling of sadness and grief accumulated in his heart.

He watched as Red Lotus screamed, he watched as Red Lotus got agitated, he watched as Red Lotus gritted his teeth, he watched as Red Lotus left in hatred, as he went through another cycle of rebirth.

Each time, Red Lotus carried hope, but he gained disappointment instead.

The tribulation to become venerable was unavoidable, he could not give up on it, but he could not control it either.

Liu Shu Xian was a wall that could not be avoided. Each time Red Lotus was reborn, he would need to accept this cruel fact. Each time he tried, he would see his beloved woman die in the end. Each time he got injured, the pain in his heart would be the same as physical pain on his body, but Red Lotus still continued to rebirth, it was as if he were holding a knife to his heart, stabbing at it continuously.

Even though Feng Jiu Ge held deep admiration and sympathy for Red Lotus, he alerted himself to control his emotions, this might be a venerable method after all.

As an observer, Feng Jiu Ge kept a cool perspective, he gradually realized: In the initial stages, Red Lotus would still scream at heaven in great agony whenever she died.

But towards the later stages, Red Lotus stubbornly analyzed the situation with a rational mind, his expression was dark.

At the final stage, Red Lotus’ efficiency got higher and higher, whenever he saw that Liu Shu Xian could not be saved, he would instantly rebirth without any hesitation.

Finally, there was one attempt.

Liu Shu Xian fell on the ground, the bones in her entire body were broken, she laid in a pool of blood with her final breath left.

Red Lotus descended rapidly, quickly approaching her.

"Hong Ting... I am going to die, you must..." Liu Shu Xian smiled, watching as Red Lotus rapidly approached her.

Red Lotus had a cold expression, he looked at her impassively: "There is no saving you. I failed again but it is alright, I will never give up, I am going to try once more."

Liu Shu Xian was shocked: "Hong Ting, what are you saying?"

Red Lotus turned around and left as Liu Shu Xian who was behind him called out with her dying breath: "Hong Ting..."

Red Lotus moved quickly initially but when he heard Liu Shu Xian’s desperate cry, his footsteps slowed down as he came to a halt.

He looked down at his two hands.

In the deathly silence, Red Lotus stared with wide eyes, his body started to shake.

Suddenly, he felt like he could see himself, at this moment, he felt utter shock, there was a sense of immense fear in him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1964 Red Lotus“ Death

"Why? Why did I become such a scary person?"

In the past, Hong Ting would feel grief at Liu Shu Xian’s death, he would feel regret and hatred. He would hug Liu Shu Xian’s corpse as he knelt on the ground, crying his heart out.

But now?

Facing Liu Shu Xian’s death, seeing the final moment of Liu Shu Xian’s life, towards the lover who only wanted to spend her final breath talking to her most beloved, Red Lotus turned around and left!

Was this Liu Shu Xian not the real Liu Shu Xian?

Of course she was real!

Red Lotus was clear about this.

She was still her, that same Liu Shu Xian, regardless of how many times Red Lotus was reborn, her determination and actions had never changed. She was willing to sacrifice herself to protect her lover, she used her life to block his venerable tribulation!

But...

Liu Shu Xian was still Liu Shu Xian, but Hong Ting was no longer the same Hong Ting.

"Since when did it start? Since when did I turn into this?" Red Lotus asked his inner self.

This question was not hard at all, he soon found the answer.

His countless rebirths, his countless attempts, the countless times Liu Shu Xian died, and the countless times he received disappointment!

His heart was hurt time and again, he bled each time, before the scab formed, Hong Ting tore open his wounds once more.

He was hurt too many times, he felt pain too many times, he regretted too many times.

Too many times indeed, eventually, he got used to it, he became... gradually numb.

Thus, he started to calculate with precision.

Thus, he started to analyze rationally.

He used every resource he had to strengthen himself and equip himself. He tried different methods in search of the strongest and most likely solution to preserve Liu Shu Xian’s life when he underwent his tribulation.

When he started to think rationally, when he started to feel rational about Liu Shu Xian’s death, even though he forced himself to be rational at the start, he changed.

Next, slowly, step by step, he turned into someone that he did not recognize.

This person made him feel extremely shocked and fearful.

Followed by a deep sense of helplessness!

This scene left an extremely deep impression in Feng Jiu Ge —

Red Lotus stood on the spot, lowering his arms, he was young but his back was hunched, like an old man about to die.

Silently, two trails of tears flowed down his cheeks.

Silently weeping.

Behind Red Lotus, there was Liu Shu Xian who called him with her dying breath, hoping that he would turn around, so that she could see her most beloved person at the final moment of her life.

But Red Lotus did not turn around to look at her.

Red Lotus no longer loved her.

After all, if he really loved this person in his heart and she was about to die, would he coldly turn around to leave?

Of course he would not!

Even though his goal was to use rebirth to save Liu Shu Xian, that was only a deeply rooted objective that he had.

The reason behind it was no longer love.

It was truly laughable.

He wanted to save the most beloved person in his life, but along the way, Red Lotus lost his love.

No matter how many times Liu Shu Xian died, she did not betray him, she sacrificed herself for him.

But Red Lotus himself had changed.

He betrayed his past self, he betrayed Liu Shu Xian.

He wanted to rebirth and change the past, but to think that it was rebirth that changed him.

From now what, what should he do?

Since he no longer loved Liu Shu Xian, why should he continue to rebirth and try to save her?

Of course, he had other regrets, he loved his parents deeply.

But did Red Lotus dare to attempt this?

He could almost tell the results already. After witnessing the death of his parents time and again, he would get used to it, he would get numb, he would accept this result that was decreed by fate.

Red Lotus did not dare!

Then, should he accept this result? After rebirth, should he pretend to be unaware of everything, to follow the path set by Fate and become a venerable, before becoming the Heavenly Court Immortal Venerable that everyone including his master wanted to see?

Red Lotus did not want that!

He still had love in his heart, towards his parents and master. Because there was love, there was also regret.

He also had hatred in his heart, he hated Fate, because he no longer loved Liu Shu Xian, he also hated himself. He had all sorts of complex emotions in his heart, Red Lotus was unsure about them himself.

Red Lotus asked himself truthfully, he inspected his inner self.

He still wanted to destroy fate Gu.

But the intention was already different.

He started to research and found more of the hidden profundities within \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e. When he comprehended the crucial factor, love Gu, he successfully used it to save Liu Shu Xian’s life!

Of course, the price was that Red Lotus succeeded in the tribulation but did not become venerable.

As an observer, Feng Jiu Ge understood clearly: This was definitely a major breakthrough!

The venerable tribulation could not be controlled by man.

No matter how Red Lotus stalled it, he had to undergo tribulation eventually.

But using love Immortal Gu, he finally changed a fixed result! Instead of dying, Liu Shu Xian managed to survive.

Of course, there was a backlash of Red Lotus not becoming venerable, that was also a result.

Both results changed!

"Shu Xian, Shu Xian, you are still alive! You finally survived!" Red Lotus who succeeded was very excited, he hugged Liu Shu Xian.

Liu Shu Xian was in low spirits: "What is going on? Hong Ting, you did not become venerable?!"

Red Lotus laughed loudly: "That is because I used love Gu. Do you know how many times I was reborn while trying to save you? You should have died during the tribulation, but because of my countless attempts, I researched the human path methods contained within \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e..."

Red Lotus was incredibly excited, he talked about his difficult journey, his experiences and hard work, the trials and ordeals that he went through each time in his experimentation.

"But I finally succeeded, I finally succeeded!" Red Lotus raised his arms and cheered: "Even though this is a minor change, this is the proper direction. One day, I will succeed completely!"

Slap.

A crisp sound was heard as Liu Shu Xian gave Red Lotus a slap.

Red Lotus instantly froze, his cheering came to a stop as he stared at Liu Shu Xian.

Liu Shu Xian’s eyes had tears: "Hong Ting, are you still yourself? You actually had such heretical thoughts? You actually wanted to change the past! You defied fate, no wonder you failed to become venerable after the tribulation! You did all these just so I could survive?"

"All those people who helped you in the tribulation, what about the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals who were sacrificed? You said that you are doing all this for me, but have you ever considered my feelings?!"

"I, Liu Shu Xian, was born with one of the ten extreme physiques and encountered you, it was all fate’s arrangement. In your fatal moment, I understood the greatest meaning of my life, it was to protect you, to block the tribulation for you and help you ascend to the position of an Immortal Venerable!"

"But you actually did this! For me, you abandoned the most precious chance to become venerable!"

"If you cannot become venerable, what will happen to Heavenly Court? What will happen to the world? What about humanity?"

"You forgot your master’s teachings, you let down the expectations of your deceased parents! I am truly hurt, my heart really hurts!"

"I would rather sacrifice myself!"

"Your love towards me is just a small love. Greater love is for humanity, for the myriad living beings in this world!"

"Hong Ting, I am truly disappointed in you."

Liu Shu Xian cried profusely.

Red Lotus stared at Liu Shu Xian in a daze, after a long while, he let out a breath of air.

"So that was it." Red Lotus had a calm expression, his gaze became eerie and dark.

Liu Shu Xian grabbed his arms: "Quickly think of a method, you must have some way, right? Let everything return to its original path as decreed by Fate, even if I have to be sacrificed. How can our love compare to the greater love of heaven and earth, how can it compare to the grand ambitions of Heavenly Court?"

"Guh!" Liu Shu Xian’s body suddenly shook, she lowered her head as she looked at her chest.

Red Lotus’s hand directly stabbed into her heart, it was a fatal blow!

Liu Shu Xian looked at her lover in disbelief.

"Maybe killing you will return everything to its original path." Red Lotus looked at Liu Shu Xian in the eye as he said plainly.

Liu Shu Xian showed a blissful smile as he said: "Hong Ting, I was not wrong about you. Please... please become a venerable."

At the next moment, she died again.

Similar to the countless times Red Lotus had experienced, Liu Shu Xian died again.

But compared to the countless times Red Lotus had experienced, there was a difference.

Liu Shu Xian was truly dead!

In Red Lotus’s heart, she was completely dead!

From then on, she never lived again.

Red Lotus looked at her corpse with calm emotions, there was not even any ripple in his heart.

The woman he had once loved deeply, he was willing to give up anything for her, he was reborn time and time again, working hard to save this woman who he had never given up on.

But now, he killed her.

He personally killed her!

Red Lotus felt no regret in his heart, he even gained some insight.

The cause of this tragedy was in Heavenly Court, it was fate Gu.

At this moment, his determination to destroy fate Gu could not be any firmer!

Feng Jiu Ge felt the scene in front of him change.

Heavenly Court.

The battle was over, the entire area was in ruins.

On the damaged top floor of Heaven Overseeing Tower, Duke Long and Red Lotus faced each other.

Duke Long had evidently undergone a tough battle, he was covered in blood and injuries.

He looked at Red Lotus as he sighed deeply: "Oh Hong Ting, one mistake leads to countless mistakes, to think that you have already reached this point. You want to destroy fate Gu? Go ahead."

Saying this, Duke Long took the initiative to give way!

Red Lotus was slightly shocked, he walked towards fate Gu. Most Gu worms had fragile bodies, but no matter how much force he used, fate Gu was like the strongest object in the world, he could not destroy it.

"Regardless of what method you use, you cannot destroy fate Gu. Hong Ting, you are not the only one, be they Limitless Demon Venerable or Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, they came here in the past, but their methods were all useless against fate Gu."

"In this world, only a complete otherworldly demon can destroy fate Gu! But otherworldly demons are not complete when they come into our world. Thus, nobody in this world can destroy fate Gu."

Duke Long said this as he showed intense fatigue: "Hong Ting, come back! It is not too late to turn over a new leaf! Even though you have sinned greatly and made many mistakes, Heavenly Court and I are willing to give you a chance to redeem yourself, we can start over again!"

Even at this point, Duke Long was still urging Red Lotus, he was unwilling to give up.

Red Lotus was silent for a long time, he turned around to face Duke Long, smiling: "Oh master, since the two Demon Venerables could not destroy fate Gu, why did you not place fate Gu in front of me from the start, to let me try doing so and give up?"

Duke Long was silent.

Red Lotus continued as he smiled: "That means you are afraid too, right? You are afraid that I might have a brand new method that is able to destroy fate Gu."

Duke Long smiled bitterly: "Of course. Times are changing, Gu cultivation paths are emerging endlessly. Many theories in the past are no longer appropriate now, even I am unsure if there is really a way to destroy fate Gu. But at this time, I can no longer stop you, I can only take a risk and try. But you’ve seen the result yourself, too?"

Red Lotus pondered: "Fate Gu arranged the lives of everyone and everything in this world, you and I, even a rock or a ripple in a lake is part of this. But master, have you ever thought about it?"

"A human is not a rock nor a ripple, we have cognition. If a person is not happy with the life arranged by fate, what should this person do?"

Duke Long looked at Red Lotus: "You’ve read \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e too, when Ren Zu met fate Gu, he tried to escape from its restraints and pursue freedom Gu. What happened to him? He did not manage to grasp freedom, he lost himself and became insane, he sank into madness!"

"This is the outcome, this is the warning! A person has to accept their fate and live their life, they have to shoulder the responsibilities given to them by fate, they need to do what they are tasked to do!!"

Red Lotus laughed loudly: "I understand, thank you master for the teaching."

Duke Long saw that his expression was strange, he felt something amiss.

At the next moment, extreme fear and shock appeared on Duke Long’s face.

He found that as Red Lotus exerted strength in his fingers, the fate Gu in his hand was actually shaking lightly, cracks appeared all over its body.

"Red Lotus!!" Duke Long was furious, he attacked.

He went all out!

Red Lotus did not dodge at all, he was hit by Duke Long.

This was a fatal injury!

"You?!" Duke Long was shocked, he suddenly realized that Red Lotus had purposely angered him so that he would deal a fatal blow.

At the final moment of his life, Red Lotus still smiled as he faced Duke Long: "Master, I’ve always admired and cared for you, even after countless rebirths, my admiration towards you have never decreased."

"But now, I need you to understand something. Look at me."

"Fate has given such preferential treatment to me, arranging such high status and accomplishments. But I was not happy, I wanted to rebel. Then let me ask you, in this world, there are countless others who lead worse lives than me, what do they think of Fate?"

"People are not rocks or ripples, we have cognition. The truth is, cognitive madness is the most scary thing, it is the most powerful!"

Saying so, Red Lotus handed fate Gu to Duke Long.

"This is all I can do."

"Love Gu is able to damage Fate. Hehehe, master, are you shocked?"

"It is a pity that I am not an otherworldly demon."

"But I tried my best to make arrangements, I did everything that I could. I left hope for the future! Other than that, there is nothing to look forward to in my life, I might as well die like this now."

"But I believe that one day, one day in the future, fate Gu will be destroyed! Even if it is not me, someone else will do it."

"I want to believe that in the future, I will not be alone, a group of people will attempt to destroy Fate."

"Master, you cannot stop it, Heavenly Court cannot stop it, because you cannot stop people from thinking with their free will!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

On stone lotus island, Feng Jiu Ge browsed through the memories left behind by Red Lotus.

He returned to reality.

Red Lotus’ will was like a real person, extremely vivid: "Other than my memories, I have two things for you. One is rank eight future self killer move, the other is the Immortal Gu recipe of destiny Gu."

Next, Red Lotus’ will explained in detail: "Rank eight future self killer move will allow you to instantly gain pseudo venerable battle strength. After all, you are the Dao Guardian of the predestined Great Dream Immortal Venerable. In history, as long as Dao Guardians matured, they would have such a cultivation level. Future self will also allow you to utilize your strongest state in the future at this moment."

"As for destiny Gu’s Immortal Gu recipe, even though it is just an incomplete Gu recipe, it was created according to the destiny song that you will create in the future. It has the same origin as your destiny song."

"A thousand years later, you will create the complete destiny song. But I cannot give it to you directly, because fate Gu is not destroyed completely yet, it will not allow this."

"Thus, I used another method, converting it into a rank nine destiny Gu recipe, it will be a huge help to you, you will comprehend destiny song in its initial form."

Feng Jiu Ge was moved.

The true inheritance from Red Lotus’ will was completely suited for his needs, he could not refuse.

But he did not lose his cool, he acutely sensed the meaning behind Red Lotus’ will’s words.

"The initial form of destiny song?" Feng Jiu Ge asked.

Red Lotus’s will nodded: "Indeed. For the following thousand years, you will modify destiny song many times. Eventually, you will make this killer move extremely profound, at the last modification, this killer move will actually possess the ability to grow on its own. The more Gu Immortals hit by it, the more it can extract the power of destiny from them to grow further. This is an excellent killer move."

"However, I need to remind you something. As long as fate Gu still exists, your destiny song will be suppressed and sealed."

Feng Jiu Ge shook his head: "Red Lotus Demon Venerable, thank you for the true inheritance. I understand what you mean, in fact, before now, Fang Yuan had already reminded me many times. But I will not destroy Fate or resist Heavenly Court just because of your true inheritance."

Red Lotus’ will smiled lightly: "I am not asking for anything. I am only sharing my experience with you, I placed this crucial strength to break free from fate in your hands, as for your choice, that is up to you. The decision will be made by you in the end, won’t it?"

Feng Jiu Ge left the stone lotus island with a heavy heart.

Fate showed preferential treatment for Red Lotus Demon Venerable, even though it took his parents and lover, he was given unparalleled talent and aptitude, he had supreme strength and status. But Red Lotus was not willing to accept this.

People were not puppets, they had their own thoughts.

"Even the venerable Red Lotus was like this, what about me, a Dao Guardian?" Feng Jiu Ge thought about himself.

Seeing the growth of Feng Jin Huang could truly bring joy and happiness to her parents.

Let alone his Dao Guardian status, even without it, why would Feng Jiu Ge not defend his own daughter?

"But, is this Dao Guardian status something I like and truly desire?" Feng Jiu Ge asked himself in his heart.

The truth was, nobody had ever asked him about it.

Be they Duke Long, Qin Ding Ling, or even the supreme elders of Spirit Affinity House, nobody asked him.

It was as if this status was glory, it was something natural to accept, Feng Jiu Ge should have been overjoyed to receive it, there was no need to ask such a redundant question.

But was it really that case?

Feng Jiu Ge thought of another deeper question: "Why do people live?"

This problem was just too broad and deep, the answer varied according to the person, a thousand people would come up with a thousand answers, in fact, even the same person would have different answers at different time periods.

Feng Jiu Ge could not answer this question.

He could only take a step back and ask himself truthfully: "For what purpose do I live?"

Feng Jiu Ge could not help but think back to his life experience.

He loved music when he was young, he did not hesitate to cultivate sound path.

From the start of his cultivation journey, he wanted to create a total of nine songs, to express himself, to express all living beings, and to express heaven and earth.

After that, he found a fortuitous encounter in a mountain valley, he by chance discovered the inheritance left behind by a sound path great expert, Spatial Sound Immortal Master.

He started to cultivate in the valley alone, feeling no loneliness at all. He was immersed in the delight of music, he cultivated and lived every day in a fulfilling manner. In this valley, he easily passed the crucial tribulation and became a rank six Gu Immortal without causing a commotion.

After becoming a Gu Immortal, Feng Jiu Ge did not have any emotion of pride or desire to show off.

Everything was natural, plain and simple.

He continued to cultivate in the valley and develop his immortal aperture, going from rank six to rank seven.

One day, two Gu Immortals arrived in the valley, they sang with Feng Jiu Ge.

Back then, it was nighttime with the moon hanging high and light wind blowing gently, causing ripples in a glittering lake in the valley.

As the three Gu Immortals sang in harmony, time flew by rapidly, and they had sung till dawn.

The three stopped singing and started laughing. They did not greet each other, but left full of joy.

Afterwards, the two were framed and hunted by the righteous path, after Feng Jiu Ge learned of this, he did not hesitate, he stepped forward to help them.

Thereafter, the unstoppable legend was created, he fought against all ten great ancient sects alone, he became a renowned champion in the world!

The ten great ancient sects lost their reputation, they accused Feng Jiu Ge of being a demonic cultivator and joined forces to resist him.

Feng Jiu Ge was not afraid, fighting as he continuously traveled a huge distance, suddenly changing his tactic and going for the enemy headquarters, causing the ten sects to lose miserably. The scene was total chaos and there was nothing anyone could do.

During this process, Feng Jiu Ge met with Spirit Affinity House’s Fairy Bai Qing, they developed feelings for each other, Feng Jiu Ge went into Spirit Affinity House and became a righteous path member.

Afterwards, Spirit Affinity House’s reputation soared, by relying on Feng Jiu Ge’s strength, their territory expanded, firmly suppressing the other nine ancient sects.

Following that, Eighty-Eight True Yang Building collapsed, Feng Jiu Ge led his group to investigate the situation.

Thus, a series of future events occurred, he was by chance saved by Fang Yuan and repaid the debt in Southern Border, blocking Wu Yong for him. After repaying the debt, Feng Jiu Ge chased after Fang Yuan again.

Until this point, Fang Yuan let Feng Jiu Ge go multiple times and even reminded and guided him to the stone lotus island, gaining a Red Lotus true inheritance.

"If my entire life’s journey was arranged by fate Gu, was I willingly living this life?"

Feng Jiu Ge shook his head, he was more willing to see it from another perspective: "It was all my choice! Back then, I chose to stand up for the two immortals, I gave up my life of peaceful seclusion because of the anger in my heart, I wanted to seek justice."

"I married Fairy Bai Qing and had a child with her, that was because I loved her. I taught my daughter Feng Jin Huang and raised her into an adult, that was also my love to my child. It was not decreed by Fate."

"If Fate wants me to lose Bai Qing and Jin Huang, will I do the same as Red Lotus?"

"If I have a good chance at this moment, in which as long as I make a move, I can destroy Fate, will I do it?"

Destroying Fate went against his own benefits. After all, Feng Jin Huang was the Great Dream Immortal Venerable decreed by fate Gu!

"But does Feng Jin Huang herself really want to become Great Dream Immortal Venerable?"

Feng Jiu Ge suddenly realized that just like how nobody had asked him if he wanted his status as a Dao Guardian, nobody had asked Feng Jin Huang if she really wanted to become Great Dream Immortal Venerable.

Including Feng Jiu Ge himself!

It was as if everything was natural and a matter of fact, there was nothing to question.

Feng Jiu Ge asked himself an even deeper question.

"If Huang Er likes the fate of becoming Great Dream Immortal Venerable, while fate Gu is right in front of me and I can easily destroy it. Then, will I do it?"

This question made Feng Jiu Ge hesitate, he was unsure, he was perplexed, he was lost.

Reality did not give him time or space to think about this closely.

The battle to repair fate Gu was still in heated commotion now, Feng Jiu Ge had to join the battle.

On Hairy Foot Mountain, he saved Feng Jin Huang by singing destiny song.

With rank eight future self, he was one of the strongest Gu Immortals in the world. Destiny song's power made even Di Zang Sheng falter.

On the battlefield, Feng Jiu Ge met with Fang Yuan once again.

Fang Yuan transmitted secretly: "Oh Feng Jiu Ge, you finally created destiny song. What do you think of this killer move?"

Feng Jiu Ge was silent.

He had to admit that this was truly his song, it was a song that he would create with his personality. His voice was contained in this song.

Yes, he did not want to acknowledge the existence of fate, but he felt deep emotions towards the cruelty and profundity of fate. He observed the lives of countless people, they had their highs and lows, he saw the hope, struggle, joy, happiness, sadness, and despair of these people..."

"If one says that fate is fixed while luck is a variable, then I desire that variable to exist within the people and all lifeforms, these changes should occur from one's own choice!"

Feng Jiu Ge understood the truest intention in his heart.

"I did not create fate song, I created destiny song! This is the most honest thought I have in my inner heart."

At this moment, he realized the scheme that Fang Yuan and Red Lotus Demon Venerable had plotted.

They knew about his nature, so they did not try to convince him. They only passed destiny song to Feng Jiu Ge, and used Feng Jiu Ge's voice to convince himself.

Indeed.

This destiny song that Feng Jiu Ge sang allowed him to support the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals and raise their strength. When he sang for the enemies, they would weaken. But the truth was, he was singing for himself, he was singing to understand his true feelings!

And thus, he understood.

He loved Fairy Bai Qing, he also loved his daughter Feng Jiu Ge. But Feng Jiu Ge was not alive for their sake.

His wife and daughter were just choices he made in his life journey, they were part of his life, but not the entirety.

"For what purpose am I alive?"

This question brought him back to the starting point, he wanted to sing nine songs, to express life, to express heaven and earth!

Currently, he had already created nine songs. But he has not sang everything about life and the world yet, he had to continue singing.

But as he sang, fate restrained him, it was like an invisible pair of hands strangling him, how could he sing freely like this?

Seeing that Feng Jiu Ge did not reply to him, Fang Yuan transmitted while in intense combat: "Oh Feng Jiu Ge, your voice is your aspiration, how can the person who created destiny song be aligned with Heavenly Court?"

Feng Jiu Ge was calm as he replied secretly: "You know me well! But even so, I will not join you. Unless you can create a situation where we can easily destroy Fate, otherwise, I will not help you before that. Heavenly Court and Central Continent have treated me well, so everything still depends on you."

Fang Yuan chuckled: "Then watch properly."

Next, he purposely got hit by Duke Long, he fell towards Embroidered Tower, activating Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s hidden arrangement.

Unexpected to Feng Jiu Ge, Fang Yuan used Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s strength to overwhelm heaven, directly destroying fate Gu.

After that, upon hearing Duke Long’s words, Feng Jiu Ge realized that the battle had not ended yet.

When Red Lotus’ will appeared once more, Feng Jiu Ge gradually realized the plot that Red Lotus Demon Venerable had set.

Thus, when Fang Yuan asked for destiny Gu’s recipe, Feng Jiu Ge finally took action.

He helped Fang Yuan, he was also making his own choice!

In the past, when he helped the two immortals while challenging the ten great ancient sects, he had once said: "Neither demonic nor righteous, there is only Feng Jiu Ge in this world. To leave or to stay, I decide my own life and death."

Now, should he stay or leave?

This question could not puzzle him anymore.

He, Feng Jiu Ge, had turned from the demonic path to the righteous path, now, it was time to go back!

Because Feng Jiu Ge was still Feng Jiu Ge in the end.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Feng Jiu Ge!" Duke Long screamed, charging towards him.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Claw Strike!

Immortal killer move — Spiraling Dragon Fang!

Claw marks emerged, nearly ten feet long, cutting through the air with invincible might. Dragon fangs flew everywhere, like piercing sharp blades, circling and flying while emitting murderous aura.

Feng Jiu Ge retreated slowly as he continued to sing his destiny song.

Around him, there were several clones, they looked like him but had mystical powers.

Immortal killer move — Song Warrior!

Song warriors fought for Feng Jiu Ge, not only blocking the dragon claws and fangs but even fighting against Duke Long.

After several rounds, Duke Long destroyed a song warrior.

But next, a brand new song warrior appeared on the battlefield, engaging with Duke Long in combat.

Duke Long instantly understood that killing these clones was pointless, the true way to fight was to go after the source, to directly deal with Feng Jiu Ge.

Immortal killer move — Dragon Gate.

Duke Long crossed a large distance and approached Feng Jiu Ge.

Feng Jiu Ge calmly activated yang pass tune as he pulled apart their distance once again.

Duke Long was unable to fight Feng Jiu Ge in close combat, he could only use qi path killer moves to attack at a distance.

Feng Jiu Ge showed no fear, his destiny song continued to weaken Duke Long while he used his hands to unleash the triple extreme sound killer move, with drum fist, bell palm, and finger whistle.

Feng Jiu Ge fought against Duke Long while exchanging many blows, they unexpectedly were evenly matched!

Rank eight future self brought a qualitative transformation to Feng Jiu Ge’s battle strength.

While the three regions’ Gu Immortals hesitated on whether to help Feng Jiu Ge, they were shocked to realize: Feng Jiu Ge did not need anyone’s help!

The battle strength he displayed shocked everyone.

Duke Long was unable to take down Feng Jiu Ge, he was shocked and furious. At this point, he realized that even though Feng Jiu Ge was fighting earlier, he had been keeping his true strength hidden, he did not use his full power at all.

Right now, Duke Long wanted to destroy Red Lotus’ scheme. But Fang Yuan was a tough enemy, Duke Long knew about his strength, so he chose to fight Feng Jiu Ge instead.

As long as Feng Jiu Ge was disrupted and destiny song failed to activate, then Fang Yuan and the others would not have the Immortal Gu recipe, they would not succeed.

But Feng Jiu Ge’s strength far exceeded Duke Long’s expectations, he could only attack more aggressively while trying to take down Feng Jiu Ge as soon as possible.

Duke Long was stalled by Feng Jiu Ge, while Wu Shuai controlled Dragon Palace to defend Fang Yuan’s main body, Calamity Luck Altar was blocking Demon Judgment Board.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals unleashed a storm of attacks but the other three regions’ Gu Immortals and Di Zang Sheng stopped them.

The battle situation was tilting in the favor of the three regions’ Gu Immortals, but Fang Yuan was facing a problem now.

The sea of human wills was vast and turbulent.

Using the human wills as Gu material to refine destiny Gu was wishful thinking.

But it was a possible method.

Under the effect of destiny song, the human wills and flames merged, refined into a mystical Gu material that was formless and colorless.

Fang Yuan, who was controlling this Gu refinement session, had to endure the terrifying waves of human wills. He had to calm the human wills like subduing tides, sending them to the respective tributaries.

Fang Yuan’s expression quickly turned dark, his veins were bulging on his forehead, thoughts collided endlessly in his mind, he could not keep up with this expenditure, his storage of thoughts was rapidly used up, about to be emptied!

At the periphery of the battlefield, Spectral Soul and his servants kept a close watch on the situation.

Fairy Zi Wei saw Fang Yuan’s expression as she analyzed: "Oh no, Fang Yuan is not in good shape. I know about his wisdom path foundation, he is most skilled at blocking deductions and concealing his true location. But this refinement expends his thoughts and focuses on his cognitive ability. The sea of human will is truly terrifying, even I myself cannot last long in it."

But Spectral Soul smiled lightly, saying calmly: "Don’t worry, a certain venerable has already prepared for this. Fang Yuan should know what to do."

Spectral Soul could not help but recall the past.

When he was still alive, exploring Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

There, he found wisdom Gu, he also saw Giant Sun’s special will left behind by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Back then, he wanted to immediately take wisdom Gu for himself.

"Spectral Soul, I would like you to let wisdom Gu remain here." Giant Sun’s special will had to show up and stop him.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable smiled coldly: "You can’t stop me."

Giant Sun’s special will nodded: "Of course, you are the current Demon Venerable, invincible in the world, I have no way of stopping you. But I am sure you have made a deal with Red Lotus Demon Venerable already?"

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s expression changed, before coming here, he had obtained one Red Lotus true inheritance, he made a deal with Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

"You mean to say?" Spectral Soul Demon Venerable hesitated.

"That’s right, my main body has made arrangements in this wisdom Gu. When the crucial person arrives, he will destroy Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, this wisdom Gu will go along with him." Giant Sun’s special will said openly.

"So that’s it." Spectral Soul Demon Venerable looked at wisdom Gu deeply but did not take it.

At this moment.

"I’ve already given it my best effort... it seems I need to use wisdom Gu after all." Fang Yuan sighed.

By now, he had already guessed many of the venerable arrangements.

Wisdom Gu was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s arrangement, but unlike those of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable and Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, it had activated long ago. Back then, Fang Yuan was unaware of this.

Fang Yuan had just opened his immortal aperture’s entrance when wisdom Gu flew out by itself, floating above Fang Yuan as it emitted a divine radiance.

Fang Yuan instantly felt relaxed as his expression went back to normal, he felt a sense of ease.

"So that’s it." He inspected it closely, realizing: "Wisdom Gu is one of the Gu materials, no wonder it is so effective. With the addition of wisdom Gu, my thoughts are expended more slowly, but my immortal essence expenditure is huge. This rate of consumption is not something I can sustain."

Even though the sovereign immortal aperture’s rate of time was very fast and could accumulate immortal essence rapidly, Fang Yuan had undergone many intense battles, the expenditure was high as well.

Once he fails to keep up with the expenditure, the Gu refinement would be forced to stop, Fang Yuan would suffer an overwhelmingly terrifying backlash!

But Fang Yuan was not flustered, he was cool as ice.

He knew clearly, at this point in time, the venerables were not going to watch by the side.

As long as he still had a trace of value, he was irreplaceable, the venerables could not allow him to die at this moment.

"Next, it should be your turn to take action, Giant Sun..."

Far away in black heaven, a dark gold palace floated quietly in the sky.

In the palace, immortal zombie Giant Sun slowly opened his eyes.

He looked towards the south, the scenes in Heavenly Court were reflected in his eyes.

"We have finally reached this moment." Immortal zombie Giant Sun smiled before sighing to himself lightly: "Red Lotus, it was your scheme that worked after all."

Certain memories in his life started to surface.

On the stone lotus island, Gu Immortal Giant Sun who had yet to become venerable received Red Lotus’ gift.

At the same time, they also made a transaction.

"This is the incomplete Immortal Gu recipe of destiny Gu?" Giant Sun received this incomplete recipe and was immediately drawn to it. He was the creator of luck path, it had never failed him, but from this incomplete recipe, he saw a whole new world!

"Red Lotus, you are the one who damaged fate Gu, giving me the chance to create luck path. Now, you are gifting this incomplete recipe of destiny Gu to me, I owe you an immense favor!" Gu Immortal Giant Sun said solemnly.

"I will make the arrangements according to our agreement. I will leave wisdom Gu behind and create responsive luck Immortal Gu to help that unparalleled genius who will create destiny song. Furthermore, I will retain my final attack, as long as the situation advances to reach that stage, I will take action and help your million year plan succeed!"

Red Lotus’ will smiled: "I will thank you in advance. If my plan fails, please follow our agreement and try your best to refine destiny Gu yourself."

"Of course!" Gu Immortal Giant Sun said resolutely.

...

Within Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, immortal zombie Giant Sun slowly raised his right hand.

Boom—!

An enormous beam of light flew through the sky and shot towards Heavenly Court’s direction at an extreme speed.

This beam of light was so gigantic, like a large river that spanned across heaven and earth.

Wherever it went, it pushed aside all the air, the beam’s movement was accompanied by a deafening and majestic sound.

Such a grand and powerful killer move shocked everyone and sent them into a daze.

Even Duke Long, Feng Jiu Ge, and Fang Yuan felt incredibly small and insignificant upon seeing this move.

The beam of light started from black heaven above Northern Plains, piercing through the regional wall and directly bombarding Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court shook intensely, the world seemed to tremble as countless Immortal Gu Houses cracked and broke.

Within Imperfection Regret Pavilion, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s silhouette gritted her teeth.

She watched as Giant Sun’s attack approached, but Limitless’ silhouette was drawing her attention, forcing her to have no time to deal with it.

Giant Sun’s attack landed with unstoppable might, instilling itself into the sea of human wills and flames.

The three sources gathered and instantly formed a golden ball of light that was the size of a mountain.

Within the ball of light, flames flicked, human wills shined with rainbow light, incredibly dazzling. Fang Yuan remained unmoved at the center, he was controlling the situation.

Traces of pale white light started to spread out from his tightly grasped hands.

These traces of light were so familiar, Fang Yuan had a deep impression of them.

He was internally shaken: "Heaven path dao marks!"

Tens or hundreds of heaven path dao marks slipped out from the cracks between his fingers.

Fang Yuan opened his hands wide at this moment, with a loud sound, countless heaven path dao marks flew into the sky, entangling with each other.

Traces of dao marks went towards Fang Yuan’s body.

Fang Yuan grunted, intense pain assaulted him, causing his body and mind to shake!

"These are newly added heaven path dao marks on my body? Wait no, not just me..." Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light, he acutely sensed that many of the heaven path dao marks vanished all of a sudden, following the sources of the human wills.

"As expected." At this moment, Fang Yuan was finally certain about Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s plan.

He wanted to refine destiny Gu but he was not truly trying to refine a Gu.

Fang Yuan grasped this chance, doing his best to collect these heaven path dao marks.

With every single heaven path dao mark carved in his body, his sovereign immortal aperture’s foundation would rise by a level.

This was an unprecedented and huge fortuitous encounter!

Each complete heaven path dao mark would cause a small qualitative change in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture world.

After his trip to Crazed Demon Cave, Fang Yuan became even clearer of the immense value of this opportunity.

But the fusing of heaven path dao marks was very painful, even someone with a firm mind like Fang Yuan started to feel dizzy after gaining ten complete heaven path dao marks.

But he was the main person refining this Gu, he could not use other methods, otherwise, he would disrupt the Gu refinement and fail the process, that would be a huge problem.

Fang Yuan relied on his determination as he gritted his teeth and held on.

He was not the only Gu Immortal enduring pain, he was just one of countless people.

At the same time, in the vast five regions, countless mortals screamed in pain, the heaven path dao marks found their way to the sources of the human wills and carved themselves into these people’s bodies.

Each of these mortals could not endure even one ten-thousandth of a complete heaven path dao mark, many of them fainted at the first moment.

Those who could remain awake were fortunate, they were able to absorb more heaven path dao marks.

Pain!

Intense pain, pain that went beyond words.

Fang Yuan soon tore the skin of his lips as his eyes opened wide, even the corners of his eyes were torn, blood flowed out.

His entire body was shaking and covered in sweat, he still tried his best to continue fusing with each additional heaven path dao mark.

Soon, the Gu Immortals scattered across the five regions also started to endure this process.

Heavenly Court’s fighting came to a stop, all of the Gu Immortals’ expressions changed, they gritted their teeth as their faces turned red. With the addition of heaven path dao marks that automatically went to them, they were caught off guard and could barely endure this.

"No—!" Duke Long screamed in agony, at this moment, he finally realized what Red Lotus’ plan was.

Duke Long was unable to take down Feng Jiu Ge after so long, he could only turn around and hope for the best as he tried to attack Fang Yuan, but the intense pain also assaulted him.

Feng Jiu Ge persisted in using destiny song, seeing that Duke Long was leaving, he quickly attacked more intensely to stall for time instead.

With a loud sound, like splattering water, the mountain-like human wills vanished on the spot.

Success!

"People of this world, I have entrusted fate to you. All of you hold a portion of fate, from today onwards, there will no longer be fate in this world!" Red Lotus’ will spoke through the human wills, his voice was transmitted into the minds of everyone in the five regions.

The five regions’ humans were still in agony and indescribable pain.

Because of the intense and unbearable pain, there were many cases of suicide on the spot.

"Red Lotus—!" Duke Long shouted in anger, he finally got away from Feng Jiu Ge as he arrived in front of Fang Yuan.

But it was too late.

The last bit of Red Lotus’ will managed to gather into human form as it blocked the ferocious Duke Long for Fang Yuan.

"Master." The young looking Red Lotus smiled: "I succeeded at long last. Fate Gu has been split into countless portions by me and distributed to everyone in this world. It still exists, it has not been destroyed, but because fate has been fused with luck, it can no longer be used by heaven’s will."

Duke Long was furious, his eyes were red, his hair standing on end.

"Traitorous disciple!" He screamed, he charged even quicker now.

At the next moment, he completely destroyed Red Lotus’ will as he arrived in front of Fang Yuan.

Duke Long’s aura broke through its limit again, reaching an unprecedented level, his strength was so overwhelming that even Di Zang Sheng and Feng Jiu Ge felt a threat to their lives!

Fang Yuan did not move, he did not even put up a defense.

Duke Long charged with unparalleled might, but when he was still a step away from Fang Yuan, his expression changed.

His aura froze at once, his advancement stopped.

His lifespan — was exhausted!

It was slightly earlier than in the previous life.

Fang Yuan was not surprised, he had found the truth when he saw a bit of the scattered light earlier.

The truth was, back then in Eastern Sea, when his Qi Sea Ancestor identity used steal life on Duke Long, it was effective.

But the effect was low and not easily observable, Duke Long also had incredible concealment abilities.

Afterwards, in order to avoid fighting Qi Sea Ancestor, Duke Long even took out Primordial Origin’s true inheritance to successfully deceive everyone. This was because Duke Long did not know that Fang Yuan’s steal life killer move had a limited number of usages.

This also caused Duke Long to become even stronger than in the previous life at the same time period.

The hero of a generation, the pillar of Heavenly Court, the master of Red Lotus, and the creator of the dragonman race — Duke Long!

Finally, his life was over.

Before dying, he still charged at the forefront.

For Heavenly Court, for the sake of humanity, he had truly done everything that he could until his death.

During the intense war, he forgot the limit of his own lifespan. Thus, at the moment of his death, other than rage and killing intent, there was also confusion on his face.

"Lord Duke Long..."

"Damn it, you must be feeling very unwilling to die like this!"

"Senior Duke Long!!!"

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals cried out loud, their morale rose sharply, this was the will of the mourning troops!

Intense battle occurred again, the Gu Immortals of the three regions were actually suppressed by Heavenly Court which had fewer numbers.

Fang Yuan no longer participated in the fight.

He still endured intense pain as his gaze pierced past Heavenly Court, overlooking the entire five regions.

Earth shook as it produced waves of deep, rumbling noises.

At this moment, the regional walls that separated the five regions had completely disappeared. The earth veins were connected as the five separate regions merged into one!

Without the obstruction of the regional walls, people could freely move through the five regions with no obstructions. At the same time, the differences in heaven and earth qi also disappeared gradually.

The bloody cape on Fang Yuan's back slowly disintegrated, he raised his head slightly and took in a deep breath.

Ah, the air was filled with freedom.

From now on, there was finally a possibility of pursuing eternal life.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan's lips curled up as he revealed a faint smile.

"The great era... has finally arrived!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Volume 6: Demon Venerable's Eternal Life

"Wake up! Hey, wake up kid."

Peng Da opened his eyes with difficulty, in his blurred vision, he saw a human face. It belonged to a middle aged man, he had a beard and a pair of crystal clear triangular eyes, there was a white headscarf covering his head.

Peng Da was shocked.

He remembered sleeping in his room earlier, why did a stranger barge into his room suddenly?

He exerted force to sit up but at the next moment, he was stunned.

"Where am I?!" He was shocked to find himself in the middle of a desert, there were no clouds in the sky, the sun was blazing and it was extremely hot.

"Hahaha, this kid is dazed."

"He is really lucky, he was attacked by the desert wolves but managed to survive."

There was not only the bearded middle aged man, there were several others surrounding him.

Not far away, there was a group of camels resting on the ground.

"Kid, this place is called wolf desert, when we found you, your companions were already dead. The desert wolves ate their corpses, after we chased them away, we found that you were still alive."

"My name is Mo Li, I am the leader of this caravan, I saved you and healed your wounds. You are quite lucky to have met us, do you remember anything now?" The bearded middle aged man spoke and explained.

Peng Da was dazed in the desert, the heated sand and glaring sunlight made him gradually accept this.

It was not a dream!

"I transmigrated!"

"Damn it, something like transmigration really exists, and it happened to me of all people!"

"But how did I get here? Yesterday, I was still doing some programming and coding, but today, I ended up here."

"Looking at their attire and speech mannerisms, this is obviously another world."

"Also, why do I know this world’s language? It seems like speaking this foreign language is part of my innate ability!"

Peng Da could not help but feel nervous, his heart was pounding rapidly. This situation was really out of his expectations, he started to panic as he felt troubled internally.

But around him, there were several strong men staring at him, Peng Da had to force himself to stay calm as he held his head, shaking it: "I... I only remember my name is Peng Da. As for the rest... damn it, why don’t I remember a thing?"

"No way, you lost your memories?"

"This is so disappointing."

Everyone discussed.

The bearded middle aged man looked at Peng Da deeply, bright light flashed in his eyes: "Since you do not remember, forget it. I hope you can regain your memories one day, now, what plans do you have? Do you want to travel with my merchant caravan?"

Peng Da quickly nodded his head, he did not dare to travel alone in the desert: "Uncle Mo Li, I will definitely repay this debt of saving my life. No matter where you are going, please bring me along, I do not know where to go now."

He had a lost expression but he spoke truthfully. He had just arrived in this world, he did not know what to do.

"Then follow us." Mo Li nodded, instructing a person beside him: "Provide a camel for this kid Peng Da."

"Yes." Someone responded immediately: "Kid, follow me."

Peng Da was brought away to the camel, he stared with wide eyes, feeling shocked: "This is a camel?"

The Gu Master who brought him here felt strange: "Kid, are you really from Western Desert? You don’t even know about the fire pit camel?"

The fire pit camel did not have a hump, instead its back was concave, forming an oval pit. The person riding the camel would lie in the round pit, with soft fur and warm body temperature, it was very comfortable. The Gu Master started nimbly packing away the goods in the round pit and building a tent on top of it. A portion of the cargo was tied to the camel’s sides and the bottom of the tent.

Peng Da continued to pretend that he was in pain as he said: "I don’t remember, damn it, I don’t remember anything!"

That Gu Master gave him a glance: "I don’t care what you forgot, but remember this, our leader saved your life. Since you are joining our caravan, you are eating our food, drinking our water, and living in our quarters, you need to work. Understood?"

Peng Da quickly nodded: "Of course, please give me the instructions. I will do my best!"

"Mm." The Gu Master nodded lightly, showing slight satisfaction.

But at this time, the bearded man’s voice could be heard: "Don’t make life difficult for him, let this young man rest for now and recover from his mental fatigue. It was fate that we met in this huge desert, it is not easy to live here, no matter who you are."

The Gu Master sighed as he quipped: "Leader, you are still so kindhearted."

Peng Da heard this, he felt a sense of deeper gratitude towards Mo Li, he shouted loudly: "Uncle, thank you so much, I will definitely repay you!"

Mo Li laughed loudly: "Good, kid, go and recover on your camel for now."

Next, he shouted at everyone: "We’ve had enough rest, let’s continue on our way."

Thus, the camel bells rang as the merchant caravan moved forward again, traveling over this vast desert.

Peng Da lay on the fire pit camel’s back, he felt very comfortable.

After being alone, he was shocked to find that his body was not his original body, it was a body that belonged to this world. His skin was brown from tanning, his arms and legs were thick, his joints were bulging.

"So only my soul came over, I went into the body of an inhabitant of this world."

"No wonder I can speak their language. It is a pity that I did not gain this inhabitant’s memories."

"But this is not bad either. My original body was weak as I did not train it, but this body is very strong and young too."

Peng Da could not sleep, after inspecting his body, he started to look around and observe this world.

There was nothing in the desert, but the travelers were quite an eye-opener to him.

The food of the fire pit camel was actually some bright red charcoal.

The people in the merchant caravan could create water from nothing, they did not need to find oases or water sources. Moving in this desert was very secure because of them.

By night time, they started to prepare dinner. A Gu Master planted some seeds in the desert as trees grew out after a few breaths of time, bearing fruits.

Peng Da did not know what fruit this was but the flesh was tender and sweet, it was fragrant and filled his stomach with satisfaction.

Peng Da was amazed at every small detail of this world. When he ate dinner, he could not help but ask the leader Mo Li.

"Kid, it seems you really have amnesia! We are Gu Masters! These are Gu Master methods." Mo Li looked at Peng Da with a strange gaze.

"Gu Master?" This was the first time Peng Da heard this phrase.

Mo Li’s expression was even stranger now as he pointed at Peng Da: "Kid, you are also a Gu Master, in fact, you are a rank two Gu Master."

"What?!" Peng Da was shocked.

After some explanation, Peng Da realized what that meant, he became more excited.

"So a certain group of people of this world are called Gu Masters. They are able to cultivate using Gu worms!"

"Gu Masters rank from one to nine, most of the caravan members are rank two, Uncle Mo Li is the highest at rank three. Meanwhile, I am a rank two Gu Master, or rather, this body’s original owner was a rank two Gu Master."

"When Gu Masters cultivate to rank six, they will be known as Gu Immortals, they will be able to overturn mountains and seas, they can collect the stars and moon!"

"By rank nine, they will be invincible in this world, unparalleled and unmatched!"

"Oh heavens, this is such a wonderful world. Since heaven transmigrated me here, there must be a reason for my arrival."

"I must be unique, I will definitely rise above all others. Right! Once I get rank nine cultivation, I will be invincible in this world, that feeling must be very amazing!"

In Peng Da’s original world, he was a very ordinary person. He was an orphan with no parents, lovers, or any other attachments.

He was extremely excited, by night time, he could not resist the fatigue, he fell deeply asleep.

What he did not know was, the Gu Masters in the merchant caravan were talking about him.

"This kid actually lost his memories. What should I say? Is he really lucky or unlucky?"

"Is he really amnesiac or pretending to be so?"

"There is no need to do that? From what I saw, he was very shocked by the fire pit camels and our Gu Master methods, it is unlikely to be an act."

"Whether he lost his memories or not, he is still a rank two Gu Master, he will be useful to us, there was no loss in saving him." Mo Li said.

Nobody could refute this.

Gu Masters were far more valuable than mortals, if Peng Da was a mortal, these Gu Masters would not have bothered to save him after realizing he was still alive back then. But since he was a Gu Master, he had value to them, thus he was able to travel on the camel and also got food and water from them.

While they were talking, Mo Li suddenly frowned, his expression turned grim: "Listen, do you all hear something?"

Everyone’s expressions changed, at the next moment, this sound became louder, it was such a huge commotion that heaven and earth shook.

"Damn it! It seems like a hurricane, a super-sized hurricane!"

"This is a desert, why are there hurricanes?"

"Quickly move, protect the caravan and move out!"

The Gu Masters left the tent hurriedly but once they got out, they were stunned.

There was a boundless qi tide approaching from all directions, it was like a grand tsunami that overwhelmed heaven and earth. The qi tide was everywhere, it carried sand along with it and had an unstoppable might.

Extremely shocked expressions were shown all over the Gu Masters’ faces.

This was a calamity far worse than any hurricane, at once, the Gu Masters felt an intense threat of death.

The merchant caravan was doomed, they only wanted to save their own lives now!

"Escape!" Mo Li gritted his teeth, before he finished his words, he quickly retreated with all his strength.

The other Gu Masters quickly reacted as they mimicked him and escaped.

In the abandoned merchant caravan, the mortals screeched, the camels were stirred too.

They were helpless now, only death awaited them.

But within this chaos, Peng Da was still deeply asleep, he had no idea that this fatal danger was upon him.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sky was dark, there was only two to three faint starlight specks.

This was black heaven.

The surroundings were quiet, three Gu Immortals were moving stealthily in black heaven.

At the left was an elderly hunchbacked Gu Immortal, he had many wrinkles on his face, he was thin and dry like a stick, he was truly resembling a man about to step into his grave.

At the right was a female immortal, she had a graceful figure with hair that extended to her waist, and was adorned in a beautiful purple robe. Her eyes were like deep pools, with a sense of sorrow shrouding her face.

And at the center was a black robed Gu Immortal, he looked like a middle aged man with a pale face, his black hair was chest length, he had a deep and cold killing intent that surrounded his entire body.

They were Old Man Zheng Yuan, Fairy Zi Wei, and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

The three were moving quietly in black heaven, at this time, Spectral Soul paused and said plainly: "It’s here again."

Fairy Zi Wei’s and Old Man Zheng Yuan’s expressions did not change, they guarded Spectral Soul as they started to put up their defensive methods.

Soon, the three immortals heard a loud sound.

Next, a huge and wild qi tide came from all directions. Wherever the qi tide went, lifeforms perished, it was a terrible sight.

The qi tide crashed towards the three immortals, after several minutes, it went past them.

The three including Spectral Soul finally let out a sigh of relief, they canceled their defensive methods as they came out again.

Old Man Zheng Yuan looked towards the qi tide with an expression of sadness towards the people, he sighed deeply: "After the five regions fused into one, such a change actually happened. Once in a while, qi tides will surge, rampaging wildly all over the world. Not just the five regions, even the two heavens are not spared, they cause destruction everywhere they go, I wonder how many people will suffer from this."

Even though Old Man Zheng Yuan was subdued by Spectral Soul, he was only absolutely loyal to Spectral Soul, his original personality did not change.

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes flickered with uncertainty, she seemed to be deducing something but she soon gave up in dejectedness.

Fairy Zi Wei analyzed: "The heaven and earth qi of the five regions vary. Thus, when Gu Immortals go to different regions, absorbing the heaven and earth qi there would cause problems in their immortal aperture. This is also why Gu Immortals often have to return to their region to undergo tribulations. The difference in heaven and earth qi also caused the regional walls to form. Now that the five regional walls are gone, the heaven and earth qi of the five regions are converging into one, this is the reason for the birth of these qi tides."

"But it is impossible to calculate how long this qi tide phenomenon will last, or whether it will get stronger or weaker, we can’t even predict a trend."

To deduce the result of this question, it was likely that Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was needed, he had the deepest understanding of qi path after all. Other than that, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could also make such a large scale deduction.

Spectral Soul snorted coldly, his voice was hoarse and icy: "This qi tide is a hindrance to us! Wherever it goes, soul beasts are unable to resist it, even if they survive, their soul cores will be damaged."

Spectral Soul wanted to recover his strength now.

Devouring souls was the fastest method.

Originally, he wanted to retrieve the Door of Life and Death, but it was actually moved away in secret.

The fight in Heavenly Court was over now, in Spectral Soul’s current state, he could not take action rashly.

Thus, he brought his two subordinates to leave Heavenly Court and come to black heaven, they prepared to hunt soul beasts instead.

Within black heaven, there were countless soul beasts that formed into hordes. They often rampaged in black heaven with nether ants paving the way, they often had hundreds of thousands or even millions of soul beasts in an horde.

"Master, the qi tide is a calamity, please let us stay to help you." Old Man Zheng Yuan advised as a loyal servant.

Spectral Soul snorted coldly: "What use is there in staying by my side? I alone am sufficient, furthermore, I have tasks for you two."

Old Man Zheng Yuan and Fairy Zi Wei looked at each other as they said: "Please give us your instructions, master."

Spectral Soul squinted as he said eerily: "Back then, I expended my assets to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, leaving it for Fang Yuan to create a complete otherworldly demon. Now that fate Gu is destroyed, the plan succeeded, it is time to retrieve sovereign immortal fetus Gu now. I want you two to find and capture Fang Yuan alive, I will refine him back into sovereign immortal fetus Gu."

Spectral Soul’s strength was at its lowest now, otherwise, he would have taken action during the battle in Heavenly Court.

If he wanted to grow stronger now, there were three crucial things: Door of Life and Death, dream realms, and sovereign immortal aperture.

Now that the Door of Life and Death was gone, Spectral Soul felt slightly disappointed. But he could use soul beasts instead.

Most of his dream realms were taken by Fang Yuan. Even though Fang Yuan used a portion of them in Heavenly Court’s battle, the rest were still stored in Fang Yuan’s possession.

Spectral Soul needed to take back his dream realms, only with his dream realms could he regain his attainment level of great grandmaster in all paths.

Other than that, the sovereign immortal aperture was necessary too, it could ensure that Spectral Soul would quickly reach the apex of his strength.

Spectral Soul had reason to believe that the sovereign immortal aperture was well developed by Fang Yuan. If he could take it back, it would be the same as gaining Fang Yuan’s hard work.

If he could retrieve all three crucial keys, Spectral Soul would rise to the top, he would be unstoppable in this world!

He could not find the Door of Life and Death, but both the dream realms and sovereign immortal aperture were in Fang Yuan’s hands, it was understandable that Spectral Soul targeted Fang Yuan first.

Old Man Zheng Yuan frowned as he recalled: "Master wants to deal with Fang Yuan? After this demon destroyed fate Gu, he left Heavenly Court immediately and did not participate in the battle afterwards. He acted very strangely then, nobody knows where he went after that."

Spectral Soul smiled coldly: "That is because of the heaven path dao marks, Fang Yuan could barely save himself, he had to make that choice. Since he could discern the arrangement that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable placed on wisdom Gu and thus used it in the refinement unhesitantly, he naturally can infer the arrangements I placed in sovereign immortal fetus Gu as well."

"Thus, when refining the Gu, he used Red Lotus’ method to restrict me. Fang Yuan is very crafty, he managed to thwart my plan by borrowing others’ strength. Red Lotus wanted to see that happen as well, hmph, after I get rid of Fang Yuan, I will deal with this old scoundrel Red Lotus."

Spectral Soul and Red Lotus worked together to destroy fate Gu for good. Now that the plan succeeded, Spectral Soul and Red Lotus returned to being enemies.

Two tigers cannot share one mountain, not to mention two venerables.

"But how do we locate Fang Yuan now?" Fairy Zi Wei felt a headache.

Why was it that after changing sides and betraying Heavenly Court, she still had to face this troublesome problem!

When she was in Heavenly Court, she tried all ways possible to deal with Fang Yuan.

As a wisdom path great expert, she had noticed Fang Yuan’s threat long ago.

But so what?

Fang Yuan was too good at hiding and concealing himself, his most skilled wisdom path aspect was in blocking deductions.

And he was too vigilant, he never left any traces behind. Even if Heavenly Court wanted to find him, they were helpless and clueless.

Like how humanity had Immortal Venerables and Demon Venerables that the variant humans could not resist, they went into hiding and left even Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable without options against them.

Fairy Zi Wei lacked crucial clues, she could not deduce Fang Yuan’s location.

That was the case when she was in Heavenly Court, until now, it was still true!

Thus, she had to get help from Spectral Soul, hoping that this Demon Venerable’s soul had some way to deal with him.

But against this question, even Spectral Soul was silent for a while.

Sovereign immortal fetus Gu was refined by him personally, he had made an arrangement to sense the sovereign immortal body. But after the heaven path dao marks were absorbed by Fang Yuan, he lost his method. The connection was completely cut.

Eventually, Spectral Soul ordered: "We temporarily can’t find Fang Yuan, we have to force him to show up."

"How? Fang Yuan is a solitary demon, he has no attachments at all. Even if he did have friends or family, with his cruel nature, if we threaten him, he will not appear." Old Man Zheng Yuan felt very troubled.

Spectral Soul snorted coldly: "During Heavenly Court’s battle, everyone saw the scene of Fang Yuan destroying fate Gu through the killer move everybody’s vision. You will go spread the secret of the sovereign immortal aperture, tell everyone in the world that Fang Yuan was able to reach rank eight and destroy Fate because the sovereign immortal aperture can annex immortal apertures to avoid tribulations and raise his cultivation level rapidly."

"Once in a while, Fang Yuan will have to annex immortal apertures to sustain his life. Whoever kills Fang Yuan will gain countless venerable inheritances, they will even possess the sovereign immortal aperture, they will be qualified to become a venerable and become invincible in the world!"

After pausing, Spectral Soul continued: "In that case, Fang Yuan will be an enemy of everyone. We also have to tell everyone about his current weakness, that he has no battle strength due to the heaven path dao marks troubling him. If not, he would not have escaped immediately after refining the Gu."

"With everyone in the world helping us find him, where can Fang Yuan hide? Even if he can hide for a while, he cannot hide forever. Both of you will go and find the secret treasuries that I left behind afterwards, the cultivation resources that I did not need when refining sovereign immortal fetus Gu are kept there, they are not of low value. Using these resources, you can rebuild Shadow Sect and help me recruit more members."

"Fang Yuan’s subordinates like Bai Ning Bing and Hei Lou Lan are all outside now? If we find them, we might find clues to Fang Yuan."

Old Man Zheng Yuan and Fairy Zi Wei quickly responded.

Spectral Soul looked down at his feet, his gaze seemed to be piercing through the darkness and looking at the five regions: "The five regions fused into one, heaven and earth qi is converging as qi tides form and spread around the world. If the heaven and earth qi does not fuse completely, there will not be peace, it will be as if the five regional walls are thinned and spread all over the five regions. Thus, the Gu Immortals of the five regions will feel tremors in their immortal apertures as the two qi collide, they are forced to recuperate now. The stronger the immortal aperture foundation, the longer they need to recuperate."

"Fang Yuan will be forced to lay low for a very long time. But you two are ex-Heavenly Court members, you had phantom apertures so you are unaffected by this. We need to make use of this time, work hard!"

"As master decrees." Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan replied respectfully.

Spectral Soul waved his sleeves: "Then why are you still here?"

"Master, please take care! We will take our leave." Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan left quickly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1969 Black Heaven“s Gu Immortals

Roar—!

Within black heaven, an ancient soul beast was escaping in a hurry.

This soul beast resembled a horse but had a human face. On its face now was terror and fear.

The ancient soul beast was panicking and escaping in a random direction, soon, its movements slowed down as its anguished cries became softer and weaker.

After several breaths of time, it completely stopped in the sky, floating silently in the night sky.

Soundlessly, its colossal body disintegrated as a Gu Immortal appeared.

This Gu Immortal had a pale face and chest-length hair, he was Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul grabbed the soul core, which was the soul path essence of the ancient soul beast. But Spectral Soul was not satisfied, he placed this soul core into his mouth and ate it like a candy, swallowing it after a few seconds.

"Without using a soul path killer move, I need to wait a while to digest it completely." Spectral Soul said unhappily as he snorted.

After splitting up with Old Man Zheng Yuan and Fairy Zi Wei, he had been hunting soul beasts in black heaven.

But for some reason, maybe due to bad luck or the extermination of lifeforms due to the qi tides, he met very few soul beasts.

Until now, he had only met lone soul beasts or those that formed into groups of five or fewer. The quantity was so small that he even felt like he was not in black heaven!

"This efficiency is just too low!" Spectral Soul continued his journey.

"If my attainment level was still around, I can find the soul beast armies with just my instinct. Even Fang Yuan would not be able to escape my detection. It is a pity I need to start over!"

"However, fate Gu is finally destroyed. Heaven’s will cannot obstruct my path to becoming venerable again, after I succeed, I want to see who dares to obstruct me, even if it is a venerable, I will kill them."

"Oh?" While Spectral Soul moved stealthily, a flash of joy suddenly appeared on his face.

He finally found an army of soul beasts.

He got closer and saw that this soul beast army had over three million members. The quantity was not small, and what made Spectral Soul happy was that they had high quality.

He had only taken a quick glance but he already saw six immemorial soul beasts and over thirty ancient soul beasts!

"Kill!" The desire to kill emerged in Spectral Soul’s heart as he was about to charge over, but he noticed something.

This discovery was quite surprising: "Why are there soul path Gu Immortals?"

There were three Gu Immortals controlling the soul beast army.

Two males and one female immortal.

The female was at the center as the leader, she had a plain appearance and grey eyes, her rank eight aura was naturally emitted.

Of the two male immortals, one was tall and armored, with strong arms exposed and soul beast markings on his arms. The other was tall and thin, holding a bamboo staff.

The three immortals wore black robes of similar design, they were obviously from the same force.

"They are black heaven Gu Immortals." Spectral Soul soon discerned their aura, he snickered as he changed his earlier idea of charging in, he stealthily mixed in with the soul beast army.

The three immortals controlled the soul beast army with much difficulty, the two males were showing signs of tiredness, sweat gathered on their foreheads.

The rank eight female immortal seemed to have rested earlier, she spoke at this moment: "You two can stop, I will control the army now."

Hearing this, the two male immortals let out sighs of relief, the thin one started to boot-lick her: "Aunt, only you can control a soul beast army of such a size, even if the two of us cultivate for eight lifetimes, we would not even reach half of your strength."

The rank eight female immortal looked at the male immortal with displeasure: "If eight lifetimes are not enough to reach my level, you should just end your own life!"

"Ugh." The thin man knew that his boot-licking had backfired, he showed some awkwardness on his face.

The female immortal sighed: "You two are the most likely Gu Immortals in the clan to advance further besides me. Now that fate Gu has been destroyed, we are taking control of our own fate. The great era has arrived, the peaceful and quiet life of the past is long gone. You must have the spirit to work hard, if you do not have such an awareness, sooner or later our Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven will be drowned by the tides of the era!"

"Aunt, you have taught me a lesson." The tall and thin man nodded his head in succession.

As for the male immortal at the side, he remained silent.

The female immortal sighed again and continued: "The five regions were fused, the heaven and earth qi are merging, to the extent that qi tides swept across the whole world, even black heaven and white heaven are not exempted. Wherever the qi tide reaches, heaven and earth will shake, grotto-heavens can no longer be concealed, their positions will be exposed. This time, we as Gu Immortals of black heaven's grotto-heavens are meeting to discuss how to face this situation. At that time, the two of you will be representing yourselves as well as our Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, don't forget this."

"Yes, aunt (madam), don't worry, we will remember this!" The two immortals responded respectfully.

The three immortals did not know that Spectral Soul had already gotten near them, he heard their entire conversation without missing anything.

"So that's it." Spectral Soul realized: "With the convergence of the heaven and earth qi, the grotto-heavens concealed in black heaven and white heaven are affected too. The reason is the same as why the five regions' Gu Immortals are forced to recuperate. but the five regions' Gu Immortals are more affected while the two heavens are not as troubled, the Gu Immortals are still able to move around with difficulty."

Within black and white heaven, many grotto-heavens were hidden.

Even Spectral Soul could not precisely count the number of grotto-heavens here.

This current change in the world was unprecedented, all of the grotto-heavens were unable to hide anymore, they were like fish forced out of the water.

Spectral Soul felt that this was a perfect opportunity, he immediately continued to hide, following the three immortals.

After spending half a day, the three immortals controlled the army of soul beasts and finally arrived at their destination.

This was also a grotto-heaven.

The grotto-heaven's entrance was open, many people were already waiting outside, the commotion was not small.

The soul beast army of millions that the three Soul Pacifying immortals brought here was not exceptional at all, they were only superior to the norm.

"So our friends from Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven have arrived." Seeing the three immortals, a Gu Immortal flew out from a pack of night heavenly wolves.

This Gu Immortal had rank eight cultivation level, he had a pair of sharp eagle eyes and had an appearance of a resolute character.

"Night Heavenly Wolf Lord, you arrived early." The rank eight female immortal from Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven replied while smiling.

"Actually, we were late, Lady Cold Ash." Night Heavenly Wolf Lord smiled bitterly, pointing at the grotto-heaven entrance: "Those variant human Gu Immortals have entered already. I waited for you to enter together, otherwise, as lone rank eight Gu Immortals, we will be pushed aside."

Lady Cold Ash nodded with a grim expression: "We have gathered here today because of Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch's request. He is a snowman Gu Immortal to begin with, he opened up his Ice Crystal grotto-heaven as well, this will definitely be dominated by variant human Gu Immortals. Let's go in and see first."

Lady Cold Ash quickly arranged for the two rank sevens to stay behind and look after the soul beast army.

She only brought some immemorial soul beasts with her into the grotto-heaven.

Unknown to her, Spectral Soul had already possessed one of her immemorial soul beasts, he followed after them.

Once they entered the grotto-heaven, the temperature fell drastically, it was an icy world.

Looking at the ground it was all white. The mountain stood tall, made entirely of frost crystals, this was very rare.

At the peak of the frost crystal mountain, there was a palace made of ice and snow.

Lady Cold Ash and Night Heavenly Wolf Lord arrived in front of the palace hall, they left their accompanying immemorial soul beasts and immemorial night heavenly wolves outside, entering themselves.

After Spectral Soul looked for a while, he successfully saw through the foundation of this icy palace, he immediately found a loophole and entered the hall.

There was a snowman Gu Immortal sitting at the main seat, he had a squarish face and dignified demeanor, he was Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Other than that, there were three rank eight variant humans, they were rockman, hairy man, and eggman respectively.

"To think that in black heaven, variant humans are the superior force, they actually have four rank eights while the humans only have two." Spectral Soul thought about it for a moment before understanding why.

After humans dominated the world, variant humans could not live in the five regions anymore, they were chased into the peripheries of the world to live pitiful lives.

Black and white heaven became their top choices to relocate and live.

This place was extremely huge, once their grotto-heavens were concealed, even venerables would not be able to find them without sufficient clues.

Thus, black and white heaven became the foundation of the variant humans, they developed here.

Even though human Gu Immortals also explored both heavens, they only explored them to seek resources. Few rank eight Gu Immortals would place their grotto-heavens within the black and white heavens.

Human grotto-heavens were different from variant human grotto-heavens, the latter were taken care of by heaven’s will, their tribulations were weaker, but the former were different.

As time passed, more and more human grotto-heavens that were placed were destroyed, few could develop successfully. Meanwhile, the variant human grotto-heavens were able to last a long time, their forces grew stealthily.

The six rank eight Gu Immortals discussed for a long time.

"The five regions have become one, qi tides rampage the heavens. Our grotto-heavens will be exposed, I propose that we unite ourselves and resist the enemies of the five regions together!"

"How will we resist them? Even though our grotto-heavens are doing well, how can our resources compare to the five regions? Even if we all work together, we are not the match of the five regions’ humans!"

"Moreover, we cannot cooperate sincerely with each other, we are of different identities after all."

"Everyone, don’t worry, even though we are humans, our Soul Pacifying Ancestor was forced to live in black heaven, we have already broken all ties with the five regions."

"I’ll be more straightforward, my Night Wolf grotto-heaven does not want to expose ourselves. After all, we have an immense enmity with Northern Plains’ Longevity Heaven!"

"Friends." Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch spoke: "Do you all only want to go on the defensive, do you not want to progress further? Now that fate Gu has been destroyed, the reign of humanity has been disrupted. The five regions’ Gu Immortals need to recuperate now, this is the best chance for us to take action!"

"Because we were in black heaven, we became the least affected ones, we can move around with difficulty. If we don’t make use of this chance, we will regret it in the future."

"Immortal Monarch, what plan do you have?"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch sighed as he said with a grim expression: "The five regions are huge, they have abundant resources, even if our grotto-heavens are added together, we cannot compare to them. The world will definitely go into chaos, if we do not try to improve ourselves, when the five regions settle down, they will find a chance to eliminate us all. Only by taking this lead can we have a hope of survival."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1970 Heavenly Court‘‘s Dilemma

Lady Cold Ash flew first towards the entrance of Ice Crystal grotto-heaven.

The two rank sevens from Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven quickly went to receive her.

"Aunt." The tall and thin Gu Immortal asked in concern: "How was the discussion?"

Lady Cold Ash shook her head lightly, at this time, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord also flew out of Ice Crystal grotto-heaven.

The two conversed for some time before parting ways. Night Heavenly Wolf Lord brought his wolf group along while Lady Cold Ash led her soul beast army, going back to their respective grotto-heavens.

Along the way, the three immortals conversed, not knowing that Spectral Soul was lurking around them.

Spectral Soul had originally wanted to hunt the soul beasts, but after seeing this, he changed his mind.

Just by the name of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, he could tell its foundation was soul path. Seeing that Lady Cold Ash and the two rank sevens were soul path Gu Immortals, Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven must be a place filled with abundant soul path cultivation resources.

Let alone anything else, just the soul beast army that they controlled was a scrumptious meal to Spectral Soul.

"Qi tides rampage in the five regions and two heavens, the grotto-heaven forces in black and white heaven will not lay low. Hehe, I can use this to my advantage and assault the other venerable forces and speed up my growth!"

Spectral Soul not only had to deal with Fang Yuan, there were also venerable forces like Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven.

Now that fate Gu was destroyed, Spectral Soul was able to revive, the other venerables were also able to revive themselves.

With Fang Yuan missing at the moment, Spectral Soul had to consider the whole situation. Even though his true nature was killing, there were many ways to kill. Using others as one’s lethal weapon was also a high level killing method, he was going to use it now.

Lady Cold Ash and the rest did not know that their Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven was currently targeted by a huge monster, Spectral Soul. Meanwhile, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord returned to his Night Wolf grotto-heaven.

Many Gu Immortals in Night Wolf grotto-heaven quickly greeted him.

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord said: "Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch wants us to form an alliance to resist the five regions. This is quite a difficult situation."

Gu Immortal Ye Zhi nodded: "It is quite difficult. In the current situation, fate Gu is destroyed, the five regions merged, as the heaven and earth qi fuse together, qi tides rampage in the world, no grotto-heaven can conceal itself. We are small and lone forces, when the five regions attack us, we will not be able to resist them. However, we do not need to fight the five regions, we are humans but Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and the rest are variant humans after all. The five regions are stronger than the two heavens, this is an obvious fact, why can’t we join the five regions instead?"

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord laughed: "Ye Zhi, you know me best, that is how I feel too. If we work with the variant humans, we will be considered spies of humanity. Even if the five regions do not want to attack us, if we ally with the variant humans, they will want to."

Ye Zhi frowned: "But we cannot join the five regions. Firstly, Northern Plains of the five regions is impossible. Secondly, the other four regions might not welcome us. And finally, if we join them, we will be attacked by Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and the rest."

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord sighed: "Indeed, that is why I made an agreement with Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven’s Lady Cold Ash, we will advance and retreat together, we will combine the forces of the human grotto-heavens here. As for which region to join, in my opinion, Central Continent’s Heavenly Court is the most appropriate. We can secretly contact them first."

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord was an experienced leader, not only did he have rank eight cultivation level, he was shrewd in politics, nobody in Night Wolf grotto-heaven defied his rule.

Since he made a decision, the Gu Immortals in Night Wolf grotto-heaven did not dare to raise objections.

Heavenly Court.

Central Great Hall was finally repaired, Qin Ding Ling was currently the person taking charge.

They failed to repair fate Gu, Heavenly Court had undergone an intense battle, the damage was huge, even now, many areas were still in ruins.

"This is a humiliation!" Qin Ding Ling put aside the letter Gu as she rested temporarily. Her expression was calm but her eyes flickered with light, as memories surfaced in her mind, rage built up within her.

After Red Lotus' goal was achieved, Duke Long died while fighting and Fang Yuan retreated rapidly. But the three regions' Gu Immortals wanted to destroy Heavenly Court, nobody backed off.

At the moment of life and death, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable's method started to activate. All sorts of rage qi, unlucky qi, grief qi, and others plagued the three regions' Gu Immortals, their physical conditions weakened.

This move was originally meant to deal with Fang Yuan, but Limitless Demon Venerable blocked it for him. After Red Lotus' plan succeeded, the battle between two venerables in Imperfection Regret Pavilion also concluded, with Limitless laughing as the two venerable silhouettes faded away. Without Limitless' power to restrict it, Primordial Origin's method started to work again.

And the other good news was that even though Feng Jiu Ge turned on them, he only helped Fang Yuan to refine the Gu, he did not do anything against Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court was able to recover because of this and retaliate, maintaining their position in this difficult battle.

The three regions' Gu Immortals had no choice, with Dragon Palace, Calamity Luck Altar, and Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building as their foundation, they retreated gradually.

After leaving Heavenly Court, some people wanted to loot Central Continent but the first qi tide happened at this moment.

The immortal apertures of the three regions' Gu Immortals became unstable, they had to leave.

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals stopped chasing them, after witnessing Fang Yuan refine destiny Gu in front of them, their morale and fighting spirit had fallen.

After the battle ended, Heavenly Court, which was greatly damaged, tried to reduce its losses and take care of the aftermath.

Duke Long died while Fairy Zi Wei betrayed them for Spectral Soul, after Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals talked over it, they decided that Qin Ding Ling would be the new leader.

During this period of time, Qin Ding Ling had been the one in charge, taking care of all the matters, big or small.

Qin Ding Ling had a plain expression but a fire was burning in her heart. The great Heavenly Court had actually lost, it was a complete loss! She was eager to make up for this humiliation, but logic told her to not act rashly. Because everything had changed, Heavenly Court was no longer the old Heavenly Court, the enemies were no longer the same, even the world had changed.

After resting for a while, Qin Ding Ling continued to deal with the matters at hand.

"Oh?" She held an information path mortal Gu as her expression changed slightly: "Night Wolf grotto-heaven?"

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord was not willing to fight alongside the variant humans, he wanted to join the stronger side of the five regions. Among them, although Heavenly Court had lost this fight, it was still the number one human force for the last few million years.

Night Wolf grotto-heaven had grudges with Longevity Heaven, in the five regions, only Heavenly Court had the foundation to stand up against the vicious Longevity Heaven members.

In this information path Gu worm, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord also explained the ill intentions of the variant humans.

"Hmph, those of other races have such motives! Once fate Gu got destroyed, these variant humans jumped out immediately." Qin Ding Ling snorted, deep killing intense rose in her heart.

After calming down, Qin Ding Ling started to think about this situation.

Qin Ding Ling knew very little about Night Heavenly Wolf Lord and Night Wolf grotto-heaven. With just one information path Gu worm, she could not confirm if Night Heavenly Wolf Lord was really trying to sincerely join them, or if they were scheming against Heavenly Court.

"If this Night Heavenly Wolf Lord is sincere, how should we deal with Longevity Heaven and the variant human forces of the grotto-heavens?"

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord talked about the history of his ancestor truthfully in the letter, he did not conceal the grudges they had with Longevity Heaven.

Qin Ding Ling was slightly troubled.

Heavenly Court was at an unprecedented level of weakness.

Qi tides rampaged in the world, heaven and earth qi converged, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals who had phantom apertures were even more mobile than the Gu Immortals in black or white heaven.

But Heavenly Court could not move them.

Firstly, most of Heavenly Court’s members had limited lifespan. Secondly, they had to reinforce Star Constellation’s will.

Thus, a portion of Heavenly Court’s members had to enter the immortal graveyard to hibernate and help Star Constellation’s will, to prevent her from being completely assimilated with heaven’s will.

But in that case, Heavenly Court’s battle strength would be far lower.

Thus, Qin Ding Ling could not make up her mind.

"If only Fairy Zi Wei was still around." Qin Ding Ling sighed, the worry in her heart intensified.

Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan were enslaved by Spectral Soul, they left with him. The two of them knew a lot about Heavenly Court’s secrets, together with the soul of a Demon Venerable, who could underestimate them?

Qin Ding Ling thought about it for a while before feeling the severity of this situation, she decided to discuss it with Zhou Xiong Xin and the rest.

Zhou Xiong Xin suggested: "This is an important matter, but the situation is not very clear now. The six Gu Immortals including Night Heavenly Wolf Lord are merely the rank eights of the black heaven above our Central Continent. What about the other four regions’ black heaven? We do not know how many grotto-heavens there are, or how many rank eight Gu Immortals exist in these grotto-heavens. I am willing to go and investigate the two heavens myself!"

Zhou Xiong Xin cultivated information path, he knew the importance of information.

He had a phantom aperture and was not afraid of the heaven and earth qi convergence.

Qin Ding Ling agreed with his suggestion, she chose to continue keeping in contact with Night Wolf grotto-heaven while investigating the situation.

Jun Shen Guang took out an information path mortal Gu, saying: "The list of names have been chosen, they are all Gu Immortal seeds with great talent and aptitude. Most importantly, they are loyal to Heavenly Court and the ten great ancient sects. But there is one person whom I need everyone’s input and discussion on."

Jun Shen Guang’s list contained the names of many mortal Gu Masters, they were all exceptional geniuses.

Heavenly Court lost this battle and the immortal graveyard was even destroyed by Fang Yuan, everything had to be rebuilt from scratch. With the threat of the five regions chaotic war, Heavenly Court decided to nurture new Gu Immortals, disregarding the costs.

Qin Ding Ling received the Gu worm and looked into it.

There were many names on this list: Immortal Crane Sect recommended Sun Yuan Hua, Spirit Butterfly Valley recommended Xiao Qi Xing, Ancient Soul Sect had Gu Ting, Heaven’s Envy Manor had Wei Wu Shang... but at Spirit Affinity House’s section, the list was empty without a name.

Qin Ding Ling sighed as her expression turned complex.

She knew about the person Spirit Affinity House nominated, it had to be Feng Jin Huang.

But after the battle over Fate, Feng Jiu Ge betrayed Heavenly Court and went missing, his daughter Feng Jin Huang ended up in an awkward position.

She was originally Duke Long’s disciple and the future Great Dream Immortal Venerable. But with the death of Duke Long and the destruction of Fate, she was no longer certain to be Great Dream Immortal Venerable.

Zhou Xiong Xin’s concern was: If Heavenly Court continued to nurture Feng Jin Huang and she betrayed them like her father, what would they do?

Even though Feng Jin Huang was Duke Long’s disciple, the disciple that he nurtured wholeheartedly spent a million years to plot and destroy Heavenly Court’s fate Gu. Would his second disciple Feng Jin Huang also inherit this ’great tradition’?

"We will talk about this again next time."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Central Continent, Lake Heart Mountain.

Spirit Affinity House’s public blessed land headquarters was situated here.

Within the blessed land, there was an area called Quiet Rain Valley.

When Feng Jin Huang was strolling in the valley, it started to rain.

A drizzle.

The rain was mild and quiet.

Bathed in the rain, Feng Jin Huang slowed down subconsciously as she walked.

The air was fresh with the smell of grass, all around her was a faint field of greenery.

This rain did not feel cold, it was like jade, mild and calm.

Feng Jin Huang knew that this was called quiet rain. When it rains, all sounds would be absorbed and the surroundings would be silent. Heaven and earth would be soundless, one would be able to hear their own heartbeats and breathing.

Quiet rain was a rank six immortal material, this valley was the resource point that created quiet rain, this was why it was named Quiet Rain Valley.

After Feng Jiu Ge betrayed Heavenly Court and went missing, his wife, the mother of Feng Jin Huang, Fairy Bai Qing, requested to be transferred to Quiet Rain Valley to collect quiet rain, she said she would not leave this place.

Whenever there was quiet rain, the valley would have music that sounded like zither and flute, it was akin to Fairy Bai Qing’s anguished cries of sadness.

Feng Jin Huang had heard of this rumor and felt worried, she came to the valley to visit her mother.

The quiet rain was drizzling, there was indeed the music of zither and flute being emitted.

The sound of the zither spread out all around, like white clouds in the sky, ancient, melodious and pleasant to the ear. The sound of the flute, however, was high pitched, fluctuating almost abruptly, like a fierce hawk flying across the sky, sharply piercing the wind, tearing the sky.

At first, the sound of the zither resounded and the sound of the flute reverberated, alternating with each other, as if both sides were speaking, one sentence after the other.

Then, the zither and the flute began to approach each other, and gradually merged into one another. The white clouds were misty, and the eagles were flying across the clouds. The two abrupt sounds of music merged together, creating an indescribable beauty.

In the end, the sound of the zither and the flute become one and the same, forming a kind of mix, with the melodious sound of the zither and the clarity of the flute, it was unique and beautiful!

Feng Jin Huang was enchanted by the beautiful sound of the music. She went deeper into the valley and managed to meet her mother.

Fairy Bai Qing was sitting in a bamboo pavilion, with two Gu flying around her like white jade pearls. They were sound path mortal Gu, zither Gu and flute Gu.

When Feng Jin Huang entered the pavilion, the music slowly stopped.

Fairy Bai Qing had already known of Feng Jin Huang’s arrival, she turned around slowly: "This demonic immortal unification song was composed by your father when we fell in love, it is the symbol of our relationship. I still remember the first time your father played it for me, he told me: Immortals and demons are one to begin with, initially, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was known as Primordial Origin Demon Venerable by the variant humans as well. This song contains deep meaning and your father has been treasuring and not using it, but he played it during the fate war."

Saying so, Fairy Bai Qing’s tone changed as she looked at Feng Jin Huang fixedly: "The list of names has been announced already."

Feng Jin Huang nodded: "I know. The last time the sect recommended me, there was no reply from Heavenly Court. This time, the sect put Sun Yao’s name and it was quickly approved by Heavenly Court."

Fairy Bai Qing said plainly: "Originally, the sect still wanted to recommend you to go there, but Li Jun Ying and Xu Hao got in the way, they ended up promoting Sun Yao instead. How do you feel about such an outcome, my dear daughter?"

"Hehe." Feng Jin Huang smiled slightly, her smile brilliant as a flower, bringing a bright sunshine to the bamboo pavilion for a moment.

"Mother, why do you have to test me on this? Ever since father betrayed and turned against Heavenly Court, I’ve already prepared myself. Right now, the situation is already not bad, my dream path Immortal Gu was not taken." Feng Jin Huang said.

Fairy Bai Qing also smiled slightly at her words: "It’s not like there isn’t any forceful seizure in the righteous path, but it’s just that the act is often cloaked in a layer of righteousness and morality. It’s already good that you have come to this level of understanding. However, don’t worry too much, your father left Heavenly Court but created destiny song, his outstanding battle strength is evident to the world, Heavenly Court and Spirit Affinity House will not dare to touch you."

Feng Jin Huang revealed a look of displeasure: "Mother, you don’t need to make an explanation for father. Although I can understand father, I will not forgive him. For him to suddenly turn his back on Heavenly Court and not even telling us beforehand is simply abandoning his wife and daughter! One day, I will settle the score with him."

"Hehehe." Fairy Bai Qing laughed and shook her head, walking up to Feng Jin Huang and holding her hand: "You misunderstand your father. That demonic immortal unification song, which he kept as a symbol of our love, has never been used for anything other than singing in front of me. But he used it during the fate war to tell me that righteous immortals and demons are the same, his feelings for me had never changed, and even when he left the righteous path and returned to the demonic path, it wouldn’t end the relationship of our family."

"Do you believe me? As long as I give out the slightest hint of inclination to leave Spirit Affinity House, he will definitely take the initiative to bring me away. He understands me well and knows that I do not want to become a demonic path member. Therefore, he gave us both the opportunity to choose our side freely. He didn’t want his ideals to become a burden on us."

Feng Jinhuang snorted coldly: "Father would rather help Fang Yuan, the great demon, than help my master. It’s true that master was stubborn and was always nagging about fate and all that, but he was ultimately kind to us and truly had my best interests in mind. Father was simply too cold and heartless."

"Mother, since you are fine now, I’ll be leaving."

"Oh you." Fairy Bai Qing sighed, but did not ask her daughter to stay.

When Feng Jin Huang left Quiet Rain Valley, she met with two female Gu Masters.

One was beautiful while the other was cute, they were acquaintances of Feng Jin Huang, they were anxiously waiting outside the valley.

After seeing Feng Jin Huang, they showed joy on their faces as they went to her.

"Senior sister, we heard you came here so we rushed over to find you!" The beautiful woman was Qin Juan.

"Senior sister, sorry, I... I did not want to snatch your opportunity..." Sun Yao had a cute and round face, she was very anxious now.

Qin Juan and Sun Yao were good friends with Feng Jin Huang, they had always followed behind her.

But in the recent years, Feng Jin Huang followed Duke Long and went away to cultivate dream path, they did not meet much during this period.

Feng Jin Huang laughed aloud and stretched out her hand to nudge Sun Yao’s forehead: "Oh, you’ve done well this time, so why are you apologizing. The nomination quota is just a small matter, am I unable to become immortal without this funding? For me, becoming a Gu Immortal is by no means an obstacle. It’s just that I have to consider the kind of Gu Immortal I want to become. But for you, this is a rare opportunity, so seize it well."

After speaking to Sun Yao, Feng Jin Huang looked at Qin Juan: "You’ve always been quite active and have good perseverance, but this time, when fusing with the dao marks, why did you faint? If not, the nomination would have been yours this time."

Qin Juan did not dare to retort: "Senior sister, you are right, I have slacked off on my cultivation."

"No, that is not so, senior sister. Sister Qin Juan was injured at that time, she could not endure the ordeal and fainted." Sun Yao quickly clarified.

"So that’s how it was." Feng Jin Huang nodded her head and said regrettably: "It is indeed a great loss. Fang Yuan destroyed fate Gu and refined it into countless heaven path dao marks, which were dispersed to the people in the world. The more heaven path dao marks you absorb, the more beneficial it will be in the future. Be it cultivation or developing the immortal aperture, it will benefit with no harm. But there’s no harm in not having any, at best it’s just an opportunity. What determines your achievements in life will still depend on your own talents and efforts."

"Yes, Qin Juan will listen to senior sister’s teachings." Qin Juan bowed.

Feng Jin Huang smiled again: "Let’s go, I will give you two some guidance."

Qin Juan and Sun Yao revealed joyful expressions, the latter jumped around cheering: "That’s great, we haven’t been together for such a long time."

The three of them walked together, gradually leaving Quiet Rain Valley.

Within the valley, Fairy Bai Qing retracted her investigative method.

"Daughter, you’ve grown up." Fairy Bai Qing had a relieved expression.

Feng Jin Huang was very clear about her own circumstances, as well as Heavenly Court and the ten great ancient sects. Towards Feng Jiu Ge’s actions, she had her own opinion, but she was able to put it aside and make a clear judgment, she had a solid foundation of skills.

"Maybe, your betrayal has hastened our daughter’s maturity. We should let her walk on her own path."

"As a mother, all I can do is to wish the best for her."

"Of course, if some people in the sect do not know what is good for them and go overboard, I will not avoid conflict either." Fairy Bai Qing’s expression turned cold.

At the same time, on another mountain, Affection Peak.

Spirit Affinity House’s Li Jun Ying and Xu Hao went to visit Zhao Lian Yun.

Zhao Lian Yun had already become an immortal, she was assigned by Spirit Affinity House recently and became the Affection Peak Lord.

She was able to achieve what she had today thanks to the support of Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying, in addition to her own efforts. Zhao Lian Yun was also guided by the two immortals during her Gu Immortal cultivation journey and the management of her immortal aperture, so she was able to avoid many pitfalls.

Zhao Lian Yun remembered these debts in her heart, so when Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying visited her, she quickly came out of cultivation and attended to them personally.

But hearing their request, Zhao Lian Yun felt troubled.

"Seniors, you want me to use my status as the current generation fairy to deal with Feng Jin Huang and Fairy Bai Qing?"

"Indeed, now is the best opportunity! Feng Jiu Ge betrayed us and caused Heavenly Court to lose and Fate to be destroyed. If we target them now, we will definitely win." Xu Hao had a fierce expression.

The hatred between him and Feng Jiu Ge had a long history. In the past, he had hated Feng Jiu Ge so much that he held back key information and intelligence, almost causing him to die. Feng Jiu Ge had a very strong stance in his political manipulation, ostracizing the couple to the fringe of Spirit Affinity House in this power struggle. Most of the time, the two immortals were at a disadvantage against Feng Jiu Ge, they could only support each other with difficulty.

For them, Feng Jiu Ge’s betrayal was great news, it was worth celebrating.

"This..." Zhao Lian Yun hesitated: "Feng Jiu Ge has already betrayed Heavenly Court, seniors, I know that you have grudges with him, but why do you want to implicate his family?"

"Oh Lian Yun, we cannot be too kindhearted sometimes. Think about it, think about the time you competed with Feng Jin Huang over the fairy position." Li Jun Ying urged: "If we do not use this chance, we will regret it in the future. You do not need to worry about it, I will tell you something, our sect’s nominee was originally Feng Jin Huang but now she has been removed from the list."

"Seniors, people should let others off when possible." Zhao Lian Yun explained, she was not willing to do that. Conflicts should be resolved and not deepened, back then, when competing for the fairy position, both of them had used above board methods, Feng Jin Huang had a deep background but did not use any unscrupulous ways to deal with her as well.

Even though Zhao Lian Yun and Feng Jin Huang were competitors, Zhao Lian Yun admired Feng Jin Huang’s personality, she had no ill feelings towards her.

Xu Hao did not listen to her words: "Back then, did the demon Feng Jiu Ge spare us?"

"You are too kind for your own good, Lian Yun." Li Jun Ying frowned.

Zhao Lian Yun sighed to herself, she changed her words and explained: "Seniors, we need to analyze this situation deeply. Even though the sect nominated someone else, Heavenly Court did not directly take away Feng Jin Huang’s status. From that, we can see the attitude of Heavenly Court is still unclear towards her."

"Precisely because they are uncertain now, we need to deal the fatal blow and affirm their decision! The fight over authority will never cease, only when a true victor is decided can there be peace." Li Jun Ying said with deep meaning.

Zhao Lian Yun sighed again, she could only accept their request.

There was no choice, she owed them a big favor after all. Even though she was unwilling, people had to do some things that they did not want to in this world. They had helped her greatly, if she rejected them, what would others think?

Zhao Lian Yun was half an otherworldly demon, even though she was the current generation fairy, Spirit Affinity House still ostracized her. If she lost her relationship with Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying, she would truly become a loner.

The two immortals saw that Zhao Lian Yun agreed, they were overjoyed, they promised her a huge reward.

Zhao Lian Yun was not interested in the reward, after the two of them left, she continued her closed cultivation.

The destruction of Fate was actually great news to Zhao Lian Yun. With this, Ma Hong Yun’s revival would be much easier and less troublesome.

But Ma Hong Yun’s soul was still in Fang Yuan’s hands.

Thus, Zhao Lian Yun had to cultivate and raise her strength, to make preparations to save her beloved.

In the secret room, Zhao Lian Yun calmed down and inspected her own immortal aperture.

Lian Yun blessed land had 5700km2 of land, the rate of time was one-to-thirteen. The terrain was mostly grassland and plains.

But after the heaven path dao marks were absorbed, Lian Yun blessed land started to change in many aspects.

Firstly, the ground cracked to form huge trenches, next, there was torrential rain as huge rivers were formed. The rivers overflowed and floods plagued the surroundings.

After three days and three nights, the floods receded, leaving behind vast expanses of fertile mud. Small ditches and rivers connected to the main channel of the giant river, forming an elaborate and dense network of rivers.

Zhao Lian Yun witnessed the transformation of her immortal aperture the entire time, she was dazed and greatly shocked internally.

"With heaven path dao marks, the immortal aperture will transform and become closer to a truly balanced environment. Even though there are temporary losses, the potential and prospects will rise by many times."

Zhao Lian Yun had divine concealment from Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance. She did not face calamities and tribulations, this was beneficial and also detrimental, her immortal aperture development had always been a problem. But with the addition of heaven path dao marks, this problem was reduced greatly.

"If only I had more heaven path dao marks!"

"Sigh, what a pity that I only obtained six and a half heaven path dao marks, and they are all segmented too, I do not have a single complete heaven path dao mark."

"How many heaven path dao marks did Fang Yuan get? He was the person refining the Gu, he was the closest to these heaven path dao marks."

Zhao Lian Yun sighed.

She could not imagine it or find the answer, but she knew that the difference between her and Fang Yuan had been greatly increased again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1972 Fang Yuan“s Disaster Relief

"Wake up, wake up, kid!"

Peng Da groaned and barely opened his eyes to see a bearded uncle, slapping him in the face with a rough palm.

Peng Da was in a trance, and it was only then that he recognized the man in front of him.

"Uncle Mo Li." He called out: "Wasn’t I sleeping on the camel?"

Peng Da looked around, he could not help but be stunned once more.

There was sand everywhere, the caravan was nowhere to be seen, leaving only him and Mo Li, both were in a messy state.

"Ouch." Peng Da groaned as he realized he had bruises all over his body.

Uncle Mo Li looked at Peng Da and sighed: "You kid, I don’t know what to say about you, you are so lucky! Many Gu Masters fled desperately, they all died. You were deeply asleep but survived. However, if I hadn’t discovered your faint breath in time and dug you out, I’m afraid you would have been buried alive."

"Uncle Mo Li, you’ve saved me once again." Peng Da grabbed both of Mo Li’s hands, saying gratefully: "But what in the world had happened?"

"It’s a natural disaster, I’ve never seen it before." Uncle Mo Li let out a heavy sigh.

"So... what about our caravan?"

"Sigh, it’s just the two of us now."

What?! Peng Da could not help but stare with wide eyes and scream in his heart: "How can this world be so vicious, there was a natural disaster with no warning! I just slept for a bit and almost died again! My lord, what kind of world have I come to. It is simply a brutal and terrible place to live!"

"At least we’re still alive." Mo Li knocked Peng Da on the head: "Kid, you don’t look satisfied? To be alive after a natural disaster like that is the greatest of all blessings!"

"Look at me." Mo Li pointed his finger at his chest: "I’ve worked hard most of my life to own such a caravan. And now it’s all gone! Look on the bright side, otherwise we won’t survive until tomorrow. Sigh, it would be great if I could become an immortal!"

"Immortal? There are immortals in this world?"

Mo Li looked at Peng Da: "Did you forget everything?! You forgot even immortals? Sigh, I’ll explain in the future, let’s leave first."

Peng Da followed Mo Li as they left, heading towards the closest oasis.

Peng Da followed behind Mo Li and asked with caution: "Are there many disasters like this?"

"Of course!" Mo Li said in a vicarious tone: "It’s not easy for us to make a living in the desert. Sandstorms are the killers that visit often. Sometimes there are also flying blade hurricanes, and each gust of wind can condense into a huge wind blade that cuts everything wherever it goes. In addition to natural disasters, there are also vicious beasts. For example, we are in wolf desert, desert wolves are most plentiful here."

Howl—!

As Mo Li was saying that, a group of desert wolves suddenly emerged from under the desert.

"Wolves, wolves!" Peng Da jumped up in fright: "Oh heaven, they’re coming out from under the sand! So many heads, what do we do, uncle?!"

Mo Li looked pale and cursed out loud: "Damn it! Why weren’t these desert wolves wiped out by the natural disaster?"

It was not strange.

The qi tides were the phenomenon of fusing heaven and earth qi, it originated from the Heavenly Dao. But the Heavenly Dao would not wipe out all life, there was a chance of survival in every situation. Mo Li and Peng Da were able to survive, other lifeforms naturally had such an opportunity as well.

The desert wolves emerged from everywhere, but strangely enough, although they spotted Peng Da and Mo Li, they did not come to attack, instead they quickly assembled, howling and staring at the desert ground.

Rustle rustle....

With a series of moving sand sounds, golden scorpions emerged from the ground. These golden scorpions were all the size of a millstone, Peng Da watched with chills in his heart.

The golden scorpion group and the desert wolf group were engaged in a brutal fight.

Whenever a desert wolf was stung by a golden scorpion’s needle, it would immediately foam saliva at the mouth, fall to the ground, and eventually die. On the other hand, the golden scorpions could not fight against the desert wolves’ claws and teeth, and were often torn apart by the wolves’ claws.

The two groups of beasts fought, because they were weak in intelligence, they paid no attention to Mo Li and Peng Da who were close by.

Peng Da looked frightened and pale. This world was too dangerous, no matter which beast group won, they would surely still end up attacking the humans.

"We must break out!" Mo Li gritted his teeth with a firm expression.

"But uncle, we’re surrounded by golden scorpions and desert wolves." Peng Da wanted to cry.

"Do you want to wait to be eaten?" Mo Li said, about to move: "Kid, can you fight?"

"Huh? I, I can’t, I have amnesia."

"These desert wolves and golden scorpions don’t care if you have amnesia. Stay close to me and do your best to save yourself. There is at least hope for breaking out." Mo Li said and laughed, "If breaking out fails, you’ll have to go fill the bellies of the beasts. But don’t worry, you won’t die alone, there’s still me."

Peng Da could not help but roll his eyes, rather than dying like this, he would prefer to be buried alive!

Mo Li started to break out and Peng Da yelled: "Uncle, wait for me!"

He could only desperately follow behind Mo Li.

It was fine when they were still, but when they moved, they alerted the scorpion and wolf groups.

Almost at the same time, there were several golden scorpions and desert wolves, one left and one right, attacking them.

Mo Li grunted and activated his mortal Gu, but he only managed to repel two of the beasts before they got encircled by the groups.

"Breaking out has failed!" Mo Li sighed and gave up the fight.

Peng Da clutched his head and fell into despair, he stuttered: "Am... am I going to die?!"

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

At this moment, be they the mini five regions or the mini nine heavens, chaos was everywhere, the entire place was in a commotion.

Mini Southern Border’s mountains collapsed, the terrain became disorganized, Mini Central Continent’s river channels changed paths and caused torrential floods, Mini Western Desert had sandstorms everywhere that devoured cities and oases.

Mini Northern Plains.

An intense snowstorm was blowing, a pure white flame, fluttering in the blizzard, attached itself to wherever it burned.

This was the special fire immortal material — frost ice flame.

In places where the ice and snow path dao marks were dense, there would be a certain degree of probability that this special flame would be produced. Most of this flame was filled with ice and snow path dao marks, but the heart of the flame had dense fire path dao marks.

"We cannot let this frost ice flame spread everywhere!" Snowman Gu Immortal Xue Er was in charge of the situation, she tried to salvage it.

She was tasked by Fang Yuan to manage Triple Sacred Mountain, she controlled the snow crystal formation and focused on the growth of the snowman tribe’s expansion.

Frost ice flames started to spread on triple sacred mountain, once the flames grew to a certain size, be they snowmen or snow monsters, they were burnt to death while crying in agony.

The snowmen were in chaos, they escaped and trampled on each other, causing unnecessary deaths.

Amidst the raging chaos, only a handful of snowman Gu Masters were trying to maintain order. But unfortunately, even with their cultivation, it was difficult to do anything against the immortal material frost ice flame.

"Oh no, the frost ice flame has reached the ice path crystal essence!" Xue Er’s face turned pale, she became anxious.

She had just now tried to save more of the snowmen, and as a result, she had lost sight of this, allowing the frost ice flame to appear in the snow crystal formation.

The ice path crystal essence was the core of the snow crystal formation, Fang Yuan used the formation to spread out the frost energy created by the ice path crystal essence, that would constantly alter the environment inch by inch, creating a living habitat that suited the snowmen.

Xue Er felt deep regret as she watched the frost ice flame burn the ice path crystal essence, while being helpless against it.

Xue Er could not help but tear up and blame herself. The snow crystal formation was entrusted to her by Fang Yuan, it was the foundation for the snowman tribe’s growth, but it was actually going to be destroyed because of her mistake.

She felt that she had let down the snowmen, she had let down Fang Yuan.

But at this moment, a figure suddenly appeared.

"Fang Yuan!" Xue Er was stunned before happiness appeared on her face.

Fang Yuan grabbed the empty space in front of him, all of the frost ice flames within the formation were drawn away.

Fang Yuan suddenly grunted as his body shook, pale white traces appeared around his body all of a sudden.

From these pale white traces, Xue Er felt a vast power that surged in heaven and earth!

"These are... heaven path dao marks! Oh heavens, there are so many heaven path dao marks, he must have at least a thousand!" Xue Er covered her mouth in surprise.

"I will leave the rest to you." Fang Yuan smiled at Xue Er as he brought the frost ice flame away with him and vanished on the spot.

Xue Er felt relaxed but worry soon appeared in her heart: "My dear fiance has so many heaven path dao marks, no wonder he went into seclusion after the fate war and rarely fought. Sigh, I am so useless, I could not help him at all. I could not even defend this snow crystal formation!"

Fang Yuan appeared to help Xue Er alleviate the crisis of the snowmen in Mini Northern Plains, he immediately went back to his secret room to continue his closed cultivation.

When he was refining fate Gu, Fang Yuan had the best position, because he was doing his best to absorb the heaven path dao marks, he had more than three thousand heaven path dao marks on his body, they were all complete and intact dao marks!

One could say that he was the biggest winner in this plan that Red Lotus created.

But this benefit was too great, he could not process it in the meantime. The sovereign immortal body had non-conflicting dao marks, with the addition of heaven path dao marks, that also meant that Sovereign grotto-heaven gained three thousand heaven path dao marks all of a sudden.

These heaven path dao marks created a huge impact on Sovereign grotto-heaven.

The impact was in many different aspects and had varying effects. They could be as large as mountains and rivers shifting, but also small like a changing tributary channel.

"The way of heaven is to take away surpluses while replenishing deficits. It focuses on the balance of living beings, they limit each other. Even in an extreme environment like the snow crystal formation, the Heavenly Dao could alter it and create fire path dao marks within the ice and snow path dao marks, once the frost ice flame spreads its destruction, Mini Northern Plains would be completely altered beyond recognition."

"Of course, if we ignore it, my Sovereign grotto-heaven will benefit from this, we will create a complete ecosystem that has balance and good prospects in the future.

"However, this method consumes too much of my foundation, it is also what Red

Lotus Demon Venerable wants to see!"

Fang Yuan smiled coldly.

Fate Gu was destroyed, Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s plan succeeded, Fang Yuan no longer had any value to him. Thus, Red Lotus Demon Venerable schemed and used the heaven path dao marks to restrict Fang Yuan, to limit his growth speed.

However, even though Fang Yuan saw through this, he had to take the bait. It was because Fang Yuan noticed that sovereign immortal fetus Gu was tampered by Spectral Soul, he needed the heaven path dao marks to counter Spectral Soul’s arrangements.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable had been making use of Fang Yuan, it was evident from the rank seven future self killer move. But Fang Yuan also made use of Red Lotus, he used this Demon Venerable’s plan to destroy fate Gu, which was his biggest problem, he used Red Lotus’ million year plan to escape from the clutches of Spectral Soul’s arrangement.

Zhao Lian Yun allowed the heaven path dao marks to make the alterations but Fang Yuan decided to interfere with them.

The heaven path dao marks altered the sovereign immortal aperture, he actively participated, resisting and cooperating with the alterations to preserve his immortal aperture’s foundation.

This cooperation and resistance gave Fang Yuan a lot of insight.

Heaven path was merciless and impartial, human path was putting up a resistance, these two intertwined in Fang Yuan’s heart, shining in different radiance.

"Time is about right." A while later, Fang Yuan moved again.

This time, he stored the sovereign immortal aperture, his main body arrived in the world of the five regions.

He stood in Western Desert as he looked at a tree in front of him.

This tree was not even eight feet tall, the branches were short, thin and twisted like monstrous claws, making it look extremely ugly. But the strange thing was, it had an enormous shadow of light. This shadow of light was extremely large, reaching five or six hundred feet. The shadow of light was like a flourishing tree with many branches and leaves. The tree branches were white as snow, the flowers were pink like cherries. There were clusters of small fruits among the floral leaves that had yet to ripen, with all sorts of colors.

It was the thousand wish tree.

Around the thousand wish tree was Fang Yuan’s immortal formation.

Right now, he stored the immortal formation and took the thousand wish tree along with him, they were all sent into the sovereign immortal aperture.

This action caused a storm to surge, a vast air current spread out to the surroundings.

Fang Yuan did not care about this, he turned into a flash of light and flew into the sky.

The air currents rampaged in the surrounding deserts, causing loud sounds to be emitted.

Peng Da and Mo Li failed to breakout, they were surrounded by desert wolves, right when they were about to die, the air currents arrived.

The desert wolf group went into chaos as they scattered and escaped.

Peng Da jolted: "Another disaster!"

Mo Li stared with wide eyes as he looked and laughed: "Haha, we are saved! This is not a disaster, it is merely a normal hurricane. Let’s go!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

After the qi tide passed, clouds were sparse in the sky, it was a refreshing sight.

A yellow cloud flew high in the sky, sprinkling light sand behind it along the way.

There was a female immortal sitting on the yellow cloud. She had a corpulent body, her belly was bulging, her entire body resembled a water vat, she was a member of Mo clan, a super force in Western Desert. There was a title for her in Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world — Plump Lady.

Plump Lady did not dislike this title at all. She felt beautiful for being fat, and upon learning of this title, she liked it so much that she publicly called herself this from then on. In time, even her original name was forgotten in place of this title.

"Huh?" As the yellow cloud flew, Plump Lady suddenly had a change of expression, sensing something unusual.

Thus, the yellow cloud slightly contracted and flew down diagonally, changing its course slightly before suspending in mid-air.

Plump Lady stood up from the yellow cloud and looked down at the giant pit beneath her feet.

This giant pit was partially hidden by the wind blowing yellow sand and covering it, but Plump Lady was a native of Western Desert, she was all too familiar with the landscape of the sand pit.

"This isn’t a naturally formed sand pit, but rather an empty space left behind after something in it was drawn away."

"This aura... it’s the aura of an ancient desolate plant!"

Plump Lady’s eyes shined with bright light, she immediately understood: a Gu Immortal had secretly made a move to steal an ancient desolate plant from here.

Plump Lady snorted coldly as anger rose in her heart. Although she did not know what this ancient desolate plant was, this place was wolf desert, the territory of Mo clan. Stealing this ancient desolate plant was the same as stealing the Mo clan.

"This ancient desolate plant must be quite valuable since it is able to hide and conceal itself from the detection of our clan. I’m afraid that it has already been discovered by some people long ago but they just did not take it. Now that qi tides is causing disasters, this person who stole the ancient desolate plant must have been worried that they would endanger this ancient desolate plant, and that’s why they took it."

Plump Lady secretly analyzed the scene and carefully examined it.

The thief’s actions were very clean, no obvious clues were left behind. Feeling disappointed, she had to use an information path Gu worm to inform the Mo clan, hoping that the clan would send good investigators to track down and capture this damned thief!

And finally, Plump Lady used information path Gu worms to record the scene before leaving. She had a mission right now, she could not waste time here.

As she flew along, she saw an oasis. The oasis was vast, and there was a stone city at the center. The city walls were short, but the overall length was long, there were a huge number of mortals living in the city, it was Sand Wolf City.

Sand Wolf City was one of the main cities of Mo clan.

Plump Lady did not cover her tracks and flew directly from high in the sky to the City Lord Manor.

There were already people at the City Lord Manor who were ready to receive her, when they saw the arrival of Plump Lady, they all fell to their knees and shouted: "We pay our respects to revered immortal!"

"Get up." Plump Lady stored the yellow cloud and stepped on the ground in front of everyone.

"Revered immortal, the arrival banquet has been prepared. It contains the best wine and delicacies of Sand Wolf City, as well as fresh fruits that were just picked today." The city lord spoke.

Plump Lady, however, waved her hand, she was not interested, she only said: "Prepare a secret room for me to undergo closed cultivation. Also, I asked you to gather Gu Masters with aptitude and loyalty, how is it going?"

"It’s almost done. The vast majority of the city’s Gu Masters have already been screened." The city lord replied quickly.

"Very well. After three days, I will take them away. Now, you can go and attend to your own matters."

"Yes, I will do my best to complete this task to the best of my ability." The city lord promised in succession.

The door of the secret room closed slowly, Plump Lady activated the formation here with a wave of her hand.

She looked exhausted as her divine sense probed into her immortal aperture, when she saw the scene inside the immortal aperture, she inevitably let out another deep sigh.

Her immortal aperture was originally a land of yellow sand and it was flat. At the heart of the desert, Plump Lady had carefully laid out more than six thousand acres of sand farms.

Her sand farms mainly produced two types of immortal materials, they were light sand and cold-warm flowing sand. They were the main sources of goods that Plump Lady produced for a long time.

But after the fate war, Plump Lady absorbed five heaven path dao marks, her immortal aperture started to change. The landscape became uneven, more and more sand dunes were created. Furthermore, there was a trench, as if a knife had come straight down across the center of the desert, splitting the entire desert, thousands of acres of sand farms were lost.

"I don’t have wisdom path methods to make deductions and restrain this kind of natural development. Unless I hire a wisdom path Gu Immortal to take action, but my assets are not enough, I can’t afford it. I might as well save this expense in case of future mishaps." Plump Lady lamented in her heart.

Mo clan had Gu Immortals that cultivated wisdom path, but they were not close to Plump Lady. In fact, even if the relationship was close, the wisdom path deductions would still cost Immortal essence, they could not work for Plump Lady for nothing, right? Therefore, there had to be a reward.

"Furthermore, I recently absorbed heaven and earth qi, my immortal aperture is unstable."

Right now, the five regional walls were gone, the five regions’ heaven and earth qi had no obstruction and started to fuse. Western Desert’s heaven and earth qi was changing gradually, this caused the foundation of Western Desert Gu Immortals’ immortal apertures to start differing from the heaven and earth qi of the outer world.

When Gu Immortals absorb this heaven and earth qi, their immortal aperture would be unstable, there would be tremors.

The best way to deal with it was to cooperate with the change and continue absorbing and releasing heaven and earth qi. If one keeps themselves in closed cultivation, after the heaven and earth qi changes drastically, when they open the immortal aperture entrance to absorb heaven and earth qi, the tremors would be huge, the immortal aperture would suffer even more damage.

"If I had qi path attainment, I would be able to reduce the losses caused by the heaven and earth qi to a great extent."

Wisdom path was a difficult path while qi path had been declining for years, there were few qi path Gu Immortals left.

Plump Lady was only having dreams that were not realistic. In the end, she consoled herself: Even though she did not have wisdom path or qi path methods, other Gu Immortals were like her. Thus, she was not left behind in the dust by the majority of them.

But Plump Lady still felt intense danger in her heart.

This was something that all of the five regions’ Gu Immortals were feeling.

The five regions were unified, everyone knew that life was no longer going to be peaceful anymore. Be they lone cultivators or super forces, they were making preparations for the huge battles in the future.

This time, Plump Lady was tasked to go to Sand Wolf City and bring back Gu Immortal seeds for Mo clan to nurture.

In fact, Mo clan or Western Desert were not the only ones, all of the forces in the five regions and two heavens were making preparations now.

In the past, the five regions and two heavens were quite peaceful, super forces nurtured Gu Immortals while considering the provision of resources and their storage.

But now, everyone was preparing for war, they were going to mobilize these resources!

Thus, all of the forces focused on nurturing Gu Immortals than keeping resources. There was a common view: If they did not nurture enough Gu Immortals, their enemies would get all of their resources if they were wiped out in the future. If they did not use up those resources beforehand, that would be too wasteful.

Plump Lady looked at her sand farms in the immortal aperture while feeling heartache. She could not discard these farms, they were her only sources of revenue, they were her biggest financial support pillar.

Plump Lady had to preserve them.

The future was uncertain, she did not know how long the qi tides would continue, but she had to salvage them regardless.

"In the current world, I’m afraid only Fang Yuan will know how long these qi tides would last, he has Spring Autumn Cicada and can rebirth from the future after all." Plump Lady felt deep envy and admiration regarding this.

Plump Lady rebuilt the sand farms in her immortal aperture, fixing the Gu formations inside.

The area where the Earth Trench appeared could not be fixed. Thus, her six thousand acre sand farm was split into two.

"If only I had an immortal Gu formation." Plump Lady felt a bit of regret, Mo clan also had formation path Gu Immortals, when she created the sand farm, Mo clan’s formation path Gu Immortal had asked her if she needed help.

But Plump Lady rejected him.

On one hand, she did not want to expose her immortal aperture, on the other hand, she wanted to save cost.

After all, creating an immortal formation would use one of her Immortal Gu as the core. Plump Lady only had two rank six Immortal Gu herself.

Also, the payment of hiring the formation path Gu Immortal was not cheap.

"If I had created an immortal formation back then, my losses would be much lower. Sigh, how can anyone expect their own immortal aperture to be unsafe?"

Plump Lady thought of this and felt some envy towards the formation path Gu Immortal. During this period of time, he had been extremely popular with everyone, they were looking for him to create immortal Gu formations around their immortal aperture’s resource points to protect them.

Plump Lady felt a little bitterness towards the earth path she cultivated, earth path was skilled at changing terrain, but Western Desert had the most number of earth path Gu Immortals. Plump Lady’s earth path inheritance was also quite ordinary.

As for cultivating a second path?

Plump Lady did not even dare to think about such an absurd idea.

She was already facing problems cultivating just earth path in terms of time and finances.

Trying to juggle another path was courting death!

Moreover, only those rare and exceptional inheritances could allow one to dual cultivate. For example, an inheritance left by Thunder Ghost True Monarch or

Duke Long.

After repairing her immortal aperture’s sand farm, Plump Lady still had to buy some fertile sand.

Sand farms nurtured sand using sand, without enough sand-type immortal materials, the production would fall greatly.

Plump Lady took out her Gu worms and connected to treasure yellow heaven.

Treasure yellow heaven had all sorts of news, a large number of wills were conversing as they interacted.

Because of the huge change in the world, Gu Immortals could not move around now, on one hand, they had to absorb and release heaven and earth qi continuously to adapt to the main world, on the other hand, they also had to take care of their immortal apertures and repair them continuously like Plump Lady. Cases like Zhao Lian Yun who ignored the damage caused were quite rare.

Thus, Gu Immortals needed immortal materials or the help of Gu Immortals of other paths, treasure yellow heaven became a very popular destination for them.

"Another qi tide happened over here, a lot of deaths occurred."

"When are these qi tides going to end! Damn it, my fisheries have all been destroyed."

"I hate the fact that we cannot move around, the stronger the immortal aperture foundation, the longer we need to adapt to the heaven and earth qi and keep up with the five regions’ transformation."

The Gu Immortals sighed as they talked about the news of these qi tides.

Other than that, there was Fang Yuan’s arrest warrant!

A mysterious force described Fang Yuan’s circumstances, they were willing to pay a huge sum for his latest information.

Fang Yuan had the sovereign immortal aperture, his sovereign immortal body had non-conflicting dao marks. More terrifyingly, he could annex people’s apertures to skip calamities and tribulations, increasing his cultivation level. But now, Fang Yuan obtained too many heaven path dao marks, his strength had hit an all-time low. Whoever discovered his location would get a huge reward!

The sovereign immortal fetus Gu’s secret was completely exposed, this was not Heavenly Court’s doing. Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan had released the arrest warrant due to Spectral Soul’s orders.

"Too strong! This sovereign immortal body is too terrifying, it can cultivate all paths."

"I finally understand why Fang Yuan’s cultivation level rose so quickly! In the blink of an eye, he became a rank eight great expert."

"Who can have such a great fortuitous encounter?"

"Why does heaven favor this otherworldly demon! If I had his fortuitous encounters, I could achieve such great accomplishments as well."

The Gu Immortals were filled with jealousy and hatred.

"We cannot let him grow further, he can annex apertures, he is the enemy of all Gu Immortals."

"Let those experts handle him. I am just a minor character, why would I ever encounter Fang Yuan?"

"The reward is a huge amount of immortal materials, I wonder which lucky person will get them."

"Lucky person? Exposing the great demon Fang Yuan’s location would be offending him, you call that lucky? We have all seen Fang Yuan’s battle strength ourselves, even if he is at his weakest, how weak can that be? No matter how weak a person is, killing an ant is extremely easy regardless. Even if I find his location, I will not dare to expose him."

Plump Lady heard these discussions, she felt conflicting emotions within her.

The information had been released in treasure yellow heaven several days ago. It had received huge attention, it was the hot topic currently, without showing signs of dying down.

Everyone in the world had seen the fate war. Fang Yuan’s performance was shockingly terrifying. The world knew about his pseudo venerable battle strength, the title of the number one demon in the world belonged to him, nobody dared to contest this!

"Hopefully, I never meet such a person in my life. No matter how fat I am, my size cannot compare to such a huge demon. If I get involved in his matters, I will die without doubt."

Plump Lady was quite aware of her situation, she was only enjoying the show as a spectator.

But she did not know that she had once fought against Fang Yuan. In fact, the ancient desolate plant that was stolen earlier was taken by Fang Yuan!

While Plump Lady entered closed cultivation, two figures in sorry states supported each other as they moved towards Sand Wolf City step by step.

The city guards did not chase them away, they could tell that these two were Gu Masters.

The guard walked towards them and extended his hand: "Entry fee of one primeval stone per person."

"There’s still an entry fee?" One of the downcast Gu Masters started with wide eyes, he was Peng Da.

The middle aged Gu Master that he was supporting was naturally Mo Li.

The two of them were saved by the air currents generated when Fang Yuan took the thousand wish tree, after exerting effort, they finally reached Sand Wolf City.

"I have them." Mo Li was already prepared, he took out two primeval stones and handed them to the guard.

Peng Da took a look at these two primeval stones.

Along the way, he was taught by Mo Li, he could now inspect his aperture, he found that he had three Gu worms. He even understood the value of primeval stones, it was used as currency but also as a way to replenish a Gu Master’s precious primeval essence!

"Two primeval stones to enter a city." Peng Da sighed: "Uncle Mo Li, I will return this sum to you."

Mo Li patted his shoulder: "Let’s go kid. No matter how poor I am, I can still afford this fee. During this period, you should stay at my home, you are penniless and have no memory of this city, how can you live alone?"

Mo Li had guided Peng Da along the way, after finding that he knew nothing about Gu Master cultivation, he believed the words that he was amnesiac.

"Uncle, thank you so much. You saved my life and even helped me this much..."

"Don’t say that!" Mo Li interrupted Peng Da and brought him into the city.

Mo Li’s house was at the central area of Sand Wolf City, it was a huge house with a garden that had flowers growing in it.

"I am back!" Mo Li knocked on the door as his wife opened the door.

"You are finally back!" Mo Li’s wife was a rank two Gu Master, seeing her husband, she was happy and surprised: "I heard the qi tide appeared, I thought you..."

"I was lucky and lived, but my caravan is completely ruined, only the two of us survived. Sigh!" Mo Li sighed deeply.

"Being alive is the greatest blessing!" Mo Li’s wife turned her eyes.

"Auntie." Peng Da greeted after their conversation.

Mo Li’s wife chuckled: "Little lad, thank you for taking care of my husband along the way."

Peng Da’s face turned red as he said: "I am ashamed, it was uncle who took care of me during this journey, without his help, I would have died in the desert."

"As travelers outside, helping each other is necessary. Quickly come in." Mo Li’s wife was very welcoming.

Mo Li and Peng Da had a rough journey, but they were finally safe now.

After showering in Mo Li’s house, the two of them went to bed and fell sound asleep.

After sleeping from noon to night time, Peng Da was woken up by Mo Li for a scrumptious dinner.

After dinner, Mo Li said to his wife: "We still have some money left, even though my caravan was destroyed, as long as I am alive, I can rebuild a new caravan!"

But his wife had a hesitant look: "I haven’t told you this, I was hesitating, thankfully, you returned alive."

"What is it?" Mo Li was curious as he asked.

"After you left, the city lord sent orders that they would select Gu Masters that had A grade aptitude and were loyal to Mo clan. Supposedly, this is an order from the higher-ups, they want to nurture Gu Masters to become Gu Immortals."

"Oh? There is such a thing?" Mo Li hesitated: "The city lord put up a public notice? I went past the city gates quickly, I did not see it."

Mo Li’s wife continued: "Our son heard the news and wanted to sign up."

Mo Li laughed unconsciously: "To think our son would have such aspirations, but he only has B grade aptitude."

Mo Li’s wife laughed: "Aptitude is not too important, loyalty to Mo clan is most important. If we show enough loyalty, our son might be selected."

Mo Li realized at once, asking:" How much?"

Mo Li’s wife said a number, Peng Da’s mouth became wide open.

Mo Li’s wife was very troubled: "Even if we use all our remaining savings, it will not be enough. Husband, the decision is up to you."

Mo Li was silent for a moment before he resolved himself: "I will borrow! It is rare that our son is no longer lazy and wants to improve himself, this is a good thing. I will go and borrow shamelessly, I am sure we will gather enough funds."

"Husband..." Mo Li’s wife was touched but felt worried as well: "But our caravan was destroyed, I am afraid..."

Mo Li smiled as he patted his chest, feeling confident: "Don’t worry, I am a rank three Gu Master, my body is strong and my strength is intact. Everyone knows that I only need time, as long as my luck is not bad, I can recover from this loss!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The sky was light purple in color, gathered in mid-air was a large area of grey clouds resembling thick fog, making the view of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven quite unclear.

But the layout of this place was good, even Spectral Soul could not help but praise it.

He had disguised as a soul beast, he successfully infiltrated the grotto-heaven, after many days, he finally found out a lot of information about Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven.

This was a soul path grotto-heaven, there were a lot of soul path cultivation resources here, it had at least ten giant resource points! In history, it had once produced two rank eight soul path immortals at the same point in time, it was a very rare situation.

The biggest trait of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven was that it had a soul pacifying immortal killer move that influenced all lifeforms in this grotto-heaven. This killer move could pacify soul beasts and bring peace to Gu Immortals’ souls, it had a huge supplementary effect in soul cultivation.

There were three aspects in soul path cultivation, strengthening, refining, and pacifying the soul.

The most effective method to pacify the soul was using the water of Bewitching Lake, it was known as pacifying soul soup, the most delicious wine in the world. This was recorded in \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e.

The soul pacifying killer move in Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven was created by mimicking the pacifying soul soup. Even Spectral Soul thought that the effect of this move was good.

Within Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, soul beasts were the most plentiful of beasts.

It had raised soul beasts to begin with, now that Fate was destroyed and the five regions unified, in order to prepare for war, the Gu Immortals of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven went outside to hunt and store more soul beasts.

But the higher-ups with Lady Cold Ash as the leader still did not think this was enough, they sent even more Gu Immortals outside to search for even more soul beasts.

Thanks to the soul pacifying killer move, even if immemorial soul beasts went into Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, they would remain peaceful and would not rampage.

After An Xun returned to the grotto-heaven to rest for a few days, he received orders to go out and hunt soul beasts again.

"I am letting you command three thousand soul beasts with one immemorial soul beast as the guardian, do your best." Before leaving, Lady Cold Ash called for him.

An Xun was the tall and skinny Gu Immortal from earlier, he was the nephew of Lady Cold Ash, and also the Gu Immortal with the best prospects to go beyond rank seven in Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven.

"Thank you for the concern, aunt." An Xun said with difficulty: "But such a huge soul beast group, I do not have the ability to command them."

Lady Cold Ash waved her hand: "My killer move can allow you to command this soul beast group with ease for twenty days."

An Xun was overjoyed, he quickly thanked her.

He understood that his aunt was helping in secret and taking care of him. Even though Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven did not lack resources and had deep foundation, when nurturing Gu Immortals, seniority mattered.

Lady Cold Ash helped An Xun secretly, hoping that he would emerge victorious in the contest against An Chong and become the rank seven Gu Immortal who received the most support.

She was his aunt after all!

An Xun led the soul beast army and left Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, heading to black heaven for his hunt.

For the next few days, his gains were little, he became a little anxious.

"Logically speaking, after the qi tide passes, there would be many dead lifeforms, their souls would be left behind and form more soul beasts." An Xun could not understand why this was not happening.

Along the way, he did not meet many soul beasts, but he gathered a lot of qi path immortal materials, he did not know whether to laugh or cry.

Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven was a soul path grotto-heaven, these qi path immortal materials were almost unusable, they could only be traded away.

An Xun could not understand why, but Spectral Soul knew: "It seems that after the qi tide passes, qi path dao marks flood the area, causing other paths to be suppressed. Soul path is no exception, it is hard to form new soul beasts. In contrast, qi path immortal materials are going to increase in numbers, they will be at an absurd number in the future."

Spectral Soul saw the trend and felt a little strange internally: "To think that qi path would regain its former glory!"

Qi path had been declining, but with the current situation where qi path immortal materials get produced widely in the five regions and two heavens, the abundance of resources would lower the cost of cultivation. It would create a trend of numerous qi path cultivators.

Spectral Soul turned into an ancient soul beast and secretly followed An Xun, he left Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven for his own objectives.

He had already inspected Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, but he could not take action inside. Outside, it was a different story.

However, Spectral Soul did not act immediately, he patiently waited for a chance.

As expected, after more than ten days, An Xun encountered a group of soul beasts that numbered to more than a thousand.

"I finally met some." An Xun was overjoyed, he quickly manipulated the soul beast army to attack.

A huge battle began.

Initially, An Xun had the advantage, but soon, he found that an immemorial soul beast appeared in the enemy’s group.

He quickly let out his guardian, it was also an immemorial soul beast.

The two immemorial soul beasts fought intensely, creating a small battlefield for themselves.

The enemy immemorial soul beast was much stronger than An Xun had expected, his immemorial soul beast quickly fell into a disadvantage, about to be defeated.

An Xun was shocked, he quickly acted to help out his immemorial soul beast.

Eventually, An Xun paid a huge price of suffering injuries to exterminate the enemy immemorial soul beast.

An Xun felt regret that he could not capture the wild immemorial soul beast, he had tried many methods to subdue it but he failed, he had no choice but to kill it in the end.

After the battle, An Xun counted his gains and losses, despite his heavy injuries, he gained eight hundred soul beasts overall, among which were many ancient soul beasts.

"This should be enough." An Xun let out a sigh of relief, these gains were sufficient, he did not let down Lady Cold Ash and her expectations.

But right when An Xun relaxed his mind, Spectral Soul struck at lightning speed, flying into An Xun’s body.

An Xun’s face distorted as he shook intensely, after a while, he returned to normal.

Spectral Soul came out of his body as An Xun knelt down: "I pay respects to master!"

"Mm." Spectral Soul nodded with a tired expression.

He had an ability to enter a life form’s soul and forcefully modify it so that they would obey Spectral Soul from the depths of their soul with absolute loyalty.

But there were many limitations to this, he could not use it casually.

Back then, Spectral Soul subdued Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan when they were at their weakest. Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan were in poor conditions then, while she had also been subconsciously influenced by him over time.

Thus, in order to deal with An Xun, Spectral Soul had to wait until he was at his weakest.

The reason he caused this huge soul beast battle instead of directly attacking because he needed to deceive Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven. An Xun was a rank seven Gu Immortal, it was not easy for him to explore black heaven, there were investigative methods used on him. If anything happened to him, Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven would react to it rapidly.

"After subduing An Xun, I have an opening in Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, is Lady Cold Ash still far from my grasp? Hehe." Spectral Soul chuckled.

Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven had the most suitable cultivation resources for Spectral Soul, he could take control of it and use it to interfere in the world affairs to accomplish his goals.

"I have already created my opening here, it is far better than hunting soul beasts myself! I wonder what breakthrough Fairy Zi Wei has made already."

At the same time, in a certain Central Continent valley.

"Fang Yuan, you cannot escape." Fairy Zi Wei called out, using a purple meteor attack.

The purple meteor landed on Fang Yuan as it pierced his chest, creating a gaping hole.

Fang Yuan stared at Fairy Zi Wei, he fell with a loud sound and scattered into smoke.

"Another clone!" Even though Fairy Zi Wei was prepared for it, she still felt tired seeing this.

Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan had already killed hundreds of Fang Yuan’s clones.

She immediately captured and stored the smoke that the myriad self clone turned into.

Next, she took out a sealed clone of Fang Yuan from her aperture.

She instilled the smoke of the destroyed myriad self clone into the sealed clone.

Soon, the white smoke was absorbed by the clone, its cultivation level rose again.

These myriad self clones were summoned by Fang Yuan during the battle in Heavenly Court, Fairy Zi Wei had used the transportation formation to send them all over Central Continent.

Fairy Zi Wei was ordered by Spectral Soul to find Fang Yuan, after putting up the arrest warrant, all the information she received involved these clones.

Fairy Zi Wei had no choice but to pay them the reward as they had provided information. But she also went around laboriously to capture the Fang Yuan myriad self clones all over the continent.

If she left them unattended to, these clones would be the best concealment for Fang Yuan’s main body. Fairy Zi Wei also had another idea, what if Fang Yuan was hiding among these clones?

This was not impossible.

"Thankfully, these myriad self clones can sense each other, when I capture one, I can use the connection to find the next clone."

"But..."

Fairy Zi Wei watched as the sealed clone of Fang Yuan rose in cultivation level, she felt worried: "Fang Yuan’s human path attainment level is so high. These clones can actually devour each other and show such autonomy..."

"Fang Yuan’s strength is low because because of two reasons. Firstly, the heaven and earth qi are converging and forming qi tides, immortal apertures are becoming unstable, secondly, the heaven path dao marks he absorbed are also like a seal."

"Among the different paths, human path is the most suitable for dealing with heaven path. Who knows how many heaven path dao marks Fang Yuan gained, how long can they suppress him for?"

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The thousand wish tree was planted in Mini Central Continent.

An immortal formation with the thousand wish tree as the core was already set up, it started to activate now.

Due to the influence of the heaven path dao marks, Sovereign grotto-heaven had been encountering disasters and calamities endlessly, but even in this situation, Fang Yuan still spent effort to create and defend this formation.

"Good." After observing for a while, Fang Yuan smiled as he saw the formation working normally.

This was a human path formation, the thousand wish tree was a human path ancient desolate plant, with his formation path and human path attainment levels, Fang Yuan finally made such progress.

The formation in Mini Central Continent was the main formation, there was going to be four more human path sub-formations created in the other mini regions.

"I am trying to use human path to restrict heaven path, let’s see how well it works!" Fang Yuan held high expectations for this plan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Immemorial black heaven.

"They’re here!" An Xun shouted excitedly.

Under his silent supervision, a soul beast army of a thousand charged towards his ambush.

Once they entered his range, An Xun activated his ambushing soul beasts, attacking all of the wild soul beasts from all sides.

While An Xun controlled the soul beast army, he activated Immortal Gu and unleashed all sorts of immortal killer moves.

As his killer moves landed on them, the soul beasts on his side gained a boost in battle strength, speed, and defense to some degree.

This battle lasted for several minutes, An Xun successfully killed four hundred wild soul beasts while the rest were captured.

"Master!" An Xun gathered a pile of soul cores and offered them to Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul opened his mouth and absorbed all of these soul cores into his body, starting to digest them.

After last time when he secretly followed An Xun and enslaved him, Spectral Soul managed to get his plan started.

He secretly passed the profundities of soul path cultivation to An Xun, according to the soul path Immortal Gu that An Xun had, he personally created soul path killer moves for him.

An Xun’s strength continued to rise, he took many missions to capture soul beasts.

For this purpose, Spectral Soul created two methods, one could find out the location of wild soul beasts, the other was a simplified immortal formation that could lure soul beasts after it was set up.

With these two methods, An Xun captured wild soul beasts with much higher efficiency, each mission was completed to a high degree.

Lady Cold Ash saw that her nephew did not let down her expectations but even went beyond that and shined brightly, she was very happy about it.

Within Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, Lady Cold Ash was the only rank eight, she was naturally their leader.

Below her were An Chong and An Xun. Last time, when Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch opened his grotto-heaven and invited them, Lady Cold Ash brought the two of them with her, she wanted to let them gain some experience, and also let them meet up with others to become acquainted with other Gu Immortals.

When Lady Cold Ash was in the meeting in the grotto-heaven, An Chong and An Xun stayed outside the grotto-heaven and talked with the other rank seven elites of other grotto-heavens.

But Lady Cold Ash did not know that An Xun was already turned into Spectral

Soul’s slave. In fact, the entire Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, including herself, was currently targeted by Spectral Soul, their future was bleak.

The more missions he completed, and the higher the completion rate, the more advantage An Xun would have in this competition.

Lady Cold Ash could see this, the other Gu Immortals in the grotto-heaven also noticed this.

One day, Lady Cold Ash summoned An Chong as she instructed: "Since the last time Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch called for us to have a meeting, he was very active in asking the grotto-heavens to work together. But in Central Continent’s black heaven, there are many variant humans but only two rank eight humans including me. Thankfully, I have already contacted Granny Skeleton, she is a rank eight Gu Immortal of Eastern Sea’s black heaven. In this journey to Eastern Sea, you are representing Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, you will meet with Granny Skeleton and show our sincerity to cooperate."

"Yes." An Chong replied, feeling bitter inside.

He knew Lady Cold Ash’s intention.

By sending him on this mission, she was helping An Xun to claim victory, he was going to become the nurturing target of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven.

If An Xun performed similarly to himself, An Chong would feel unresigned and angry. But An Xun did really well, far better than him, even An Chong felt that he had no chance to win.

He accepted this mission, he took some immortal materials from Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven’s inventory as a meeting gift.

After leaving Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, he passed the heavenly wind qi wall and arrived in the five regions.

He concealed his traces and went from Central Continent to Eastern Sea. Next, he went through the heavenly wind qi wall in Eastern Sea and to Granny Skeleton’s area.

When the regional walls existed, Gu Immortals had a lot of trouble crossing regions. Many strong Gu Immortals would choose to travel using the two heavens.

But now that the regional walls had vanished, even a black heaven Gu Immortal like An Chong could travel through the five regions.

Black heaven had a dangerous environment, it would be troublesome if one met an immemorial desolate beast. Even though An Chong had an immemorial soul beast hiding in his immortal aperture, he only had rank seven cultivation level after all. Especially now when the qi tides were rampaging, the five regions Gu Immortals had to recuperate, they rarely moved around. Thus, it was easy for An Chong to travel.

Along the way, An Chong found that the five regions were facing huge disasters, the qi tides had caused much destruction.

Regardless, he did not meet with any unexpected mishaps, he successfully arrived in Eastern Sea and went up to immemorial black heaven. According to the communication method left by Lady Cold Ash, he successfully went into Shattered Bone grotto-heaven and met with Granny Skeleton.

"Fate has been destroyed, the qi tides are surging. With the current changing world, if we do not cooperate, the future will be uncertain. We are all humans, we should work together and stay united." Granny Skeleton did not create problems for An Chong, she agreed immediately.

Granny Skeleton continued: "However, in Eastern Sea’s black heaven, variant human forces are more dominant. Lady Cold Ash wants us to cooperate, why would Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch do nothing? He must be gathering the variant human forces of the other regions’ black heaven as well."

An Chong knew that Granny Skeleton would not say unimportant things, he quickly asked: "Senior, what insight might you have?"

Granny Skeleton said: "Since we are uniting the humans of immemorial black heaven, why don’t we include white heaven as well? I will not hide it from you, I have contacted many people already, the response is quite good. Among them, there is one key person, we need your help to persuade them."

Granny Skeleton paused and continued: "This person is a rank eight Gu Immortal, he is known as Old Immortal Hua Yu, he controls Profound Literature grotto-heaven. He has quite the reputation in Eastern Sea’s white heaven, if we can ally with this person, it will definitely bring along a number of white heaven Gu Immortals, we will save a lot of effort."

An Chong heard this and thought: Going to meet Old Immortal Hua Yu was not part of his mission, but if he could accomplish this feat, he would have a chance to compete with An Xun again.

Thinking of this, An Chong made his decision, saying to Granny Skeleton: "Since senior has already planned this, junior will set out for Profound Literature grotto-heaven."

Granny Skeleton praised: "Good, as expected of a member of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven. Old Immortal Hua Yu does not like to fight or kill, that is why he has little interest in an alliance. If you can succeed in this trip, I will reward you greatly!"

An Chong left Shattered Bone grotto-heaven and went to immemorial white heaven, meeting with Old Immortal Hua Yu.

Even though Old Immortal Hua Yu had little interest in an alliance, An Chong was representing Lady Cold Ash in this trip. The other party was also a rank eight Gu Immortal, Old Immortal Hua Yu did not dare to ignore them, he opened the door and invited An Chong in.

After seeing Old Immortal Hua Yu, An Chong gave the speech that he thought up along the way but Old Immortal Hua Yu was unmoved.

"My Profound Literature grotto-heaven does not involve itself in worldly affairs, we are a neutral party. Even though we do not want to make an alliance, the two of us can still exchange resources."

Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven produced soul path resources, it was quite useful for Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Seeing that he could not convince Old Immortal Hua Yu, An Chong thought that this transaction was at least better than nothing. This was the first time they were interacting, after several transactions, wouldn’t they get closer?

With a deeper relationship, requesting for an alliance would be much better hopes.

After saying goodbye to Old Immortal Hua Yu, An Chong was asked to stay by another Gu Immortal.

Gu Immortal Hua Song attended to him, he said: "You have traveled a long journey to come here, you should stay for a few days. During this period, the mortal imperial court is holding a world poetry competition, many beautiful poems will be created and recited then, it is quite interesting to watch."

An Chong had already heard from Granny Skeleton about the poetry culture of Profound Literature grotto-heaven. All of their Gu Immortals were scholarly and preferred literature works over beautiful women or wine.

An Chong wanted to improve his relationship with Profound Literature grotto-heaven, even though he had no interest in poetry or recital, he could not refuse their kind invitation, he agreed to stay.

The world poetry competition commenced.

This was an unprecedented event, Profound Literature grotto-heaven had never held such a huge competition before. Thus, all sorts of talents gathered from all over Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Other than the talented scholars who wanted to display their abilities in the poetry competition, many people came here to watch the grand event.

Thus, the capital city that was holding the world poetry competition became filled with people since a month ago.

People moved on the bustling streets, Li Xiao Bai and Teacher Jiang walked side by side.

"The world poetry competition has eighteen rounds, Xiao Bai, if you want to change your circumstances, this is the best chance. I understand your talent, you can pass the first ten rounds, but the latter eight will depend on your luck. Sigh, teacher cannot help you this time, we might even end up as opponents." Teacher Jiang sighed.

This was a grand event, Teacher Jiang also wanted to participate and compete with the other talented scholars!

After Li Xiao Bai heard this, he held down the urge to roll his eyes as he thought: "I am almost certain now that you will end up as my opponent, dear teacher."

Li Xiao Bai was Fang Yuan’s clone, he was sent into Profound Literature grotto-heaven as a pawn to take over this grotto-heaven.

Initially, Li Xiao Bai had a smooth sailing journey, he even received the affection of Su clan’s young miss, Su Qi Han. As a result, Li Xiao Bai became one of the ten great scholars, he had a chance to become Su clan’s son-in-law.

Next, while Li Xiao Bai was on his way to the capital city, the world shook as mountains collapsed and rivers flooded. The people in Li Xiao Bai’s group got injured while some died, they were trapped in the valley for months before Li Xiao Bai managed to escape for his life.

Because of this, he missed the opportunity and did not meet with the emperor. Without the emperor’s decree, his ten great scholar title was conferred to others.

Li Xiao Bai wanted to contact Su Qi Han but found that after hearing about his situation, she went to look for him and went missing as a result, even now, she had not returned yet.

After arriving in the capital city, Li Xiao Bai encountered many setbacks, people tried to target him secretly, he offended officials or royalty without knowing it, he had a tough time. If not for Teacher Jiang’s help, he would have ended up on the streets as a beggar.

But he knew why.

"Even though my main body destroyed fate Gu, our strong luck was almost completely expended in this battle. The result is that I as a clone also became really unlucky."

"This world poetry competition is the event created by Profound Literature grotto-heaven to choose new Gu Immortal seeds. Even though teacher does not know the details, he still chose to join, he is going to become my obstacle."

"I am so unlucky now, I will definitely face him. If I defeat him, this teacher might hate me for life. But this chance is too rare, if I do not use it to deal with the difficulties ahead, I will meet with more problems in the future!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1976 Li Xiao Bai“s Spring Poem

"Lord Gu Masters, please come in!" The waiter bent his back as he invited Hua Song and An Chong into the shop.

"This is a famous teahouse of the capital city, it is very crowded, I have come here many times in the past." Hua Song transmitted as he explained to An Chong.

The two had disguised as Gu Masters as they came to the capital city of Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

An Chong was more willing to observe the capital city from above the clouds. But since Hua Song had such interests, he could only accompany the person who invited him.

"I want a table on the fifth floor." Hua Song was very familiar with this place.

The two came to the fifth floor, they entered the room and saw through the windows that the streets were bustling with people outside, the street with the bronze gate where the first round of the competition was held was completely packed with people.

"These are the current generation scholars of my Profound Literature grotto-heaven, they are the hope of our future as well. Please observe." Hua Song sighed as he handed a rank five investigative Gu worm to An Chong, it could observe the target’s talent qi.

An Chong took a look and used it immediately, his field of vision changing immediately. He could now see the talent qi above the heads of countless scholars. These talent qi had all sorts of colors, some were taller than others, they all had different forms, it was an eye-opener.

"Since you have such a Gu worm to observe talent qi, what is the point of holding this competition?" An Chong asked.

Hua Song chuckled: "You might not know, talent qi is like cultivation level, even if one possesses a larger talent qi, they might not be able to use it properly in actual competition. Furthermore, this competition requires them to make poems on the spot, they cannot cheat. We want to test the upbringing of these scholars, some who have abundant talent qi might not have sufficient inspiration to create the highest quality poems."

An Chong nodded: "I see that the formations here are interlinked, they are able to amplify the creative thinking of the scholars?"

Hua Song nodded: "Indeed, you are very perceptive! Within the immortal formation, scholars are able to display greater abilities than usual, they will make full use of their talents."

As they spoke, the door was knocked.

After getting Hua Song’s permission, the waiter brought over an array of dishes and wine.

"Eight treasure duck, golden thread crispy sparrow, panda crab meat, they are all signature dishes of our teahouse, please enjoy the food." The waiter said.

Hua Song gave the waiter one primeval stone as a tip before he left the room.

Hua Song explained to An Chong: "Envoy, even though the tea here is mortal tea, it was created by Lord Hua Yu in his youth, when he was still a rank four Gu Master, he became the top scholar and thus this tea was named by him as the top scholar tea."

"Oh?" An Chong became interested now, this was the creation of a rank eight Gu Immortal in his youth.

"Then I will have to savor this well." An Chong drank it, he shut his eyes as he tasted the tea, in a daze, he felt a rush of excitement in his heart, it was as if he had attained success after decades of hard work, he finally gained the reputation and fame that he deserved, life was at its peak!

"Good tea, good tea." An Chong praised sincerely: "Even though this is a mortal tea, it has a trace of human path ingenuity within it!"

During the fate war, Central Continent’s Heavenly Court used multiple human path killer moves with shocking power, the entire world knew about it. Thus, human path became renowned in the world, everyone knew about it.

While the two immortals were enjoying their tea, the bronze gate of the first competition ground opened slowly.

The crowd of people waiting before the gate erupted into a huge commotion.

"It’s opening, it’s opening!"

"Don’t squeeze."

"Quickly let me in."

The crowds charged through the gate.

Li Xiao Bai was among them, but he was at the back instead.

He moved along with the people as he analyzed the rules of this competition.

"The world poetry competition has eighteen rounds, each one has a question, everyone has to answer it, regardless of how many people, their final product will be assessed and only half will be able to pass."

"Towards the later rounds, the numbers will continue being halved. Like this, once someone passes all eighteen rounds, they will fulfill the condition."

"If someone fails once, they will have to return to the previous round. If they keep losing and fall out of the first round, they will be out."

"However, this poetry competition will last for seven days. Everyone has three opportunities to try even if they get kicked out of the first round."

"This way, Profound Literature grotto-heaven will be able to pick the most eligible Gu Immortal seeds. Even if someone makes a mistake, they will have a chance to try again. But if any scholar fails to perform throughout the seven days, it will mean that they are not up to standard, they are not qualified to receive the grotto-heaven’s help to become an immortal."

Li Xiao Bai retracted his thoughts, he had already arrived at the first arena.

The arena was large but packed with scholars.

There were males and females, young and old, the number of people exceeded the thousands.

This was just the first day.

Li Xiao Bai waited for another fifteen minutes in the arena before all of the scholars had joined the first round.

There was truly a sea of people, the liveliness was overwhelming.

Thankfully, the first arena was an immortal formation space, it could expand casually and hold so many scholars without problems.

Bang... bang... bang!

As the drums rolled, a voice was transmitted into the scholars’ minds: "World poetry competition, first question – Spring, the time limit is five minutes."

After saying that, the voice vanished.

"The first question is spring?"

Many scholars frowned while many scholars showed happy expressions.

Li Xiao Bai thought to himself: "There are simply too many spring poems in existence, this question seems really easy. After all, most scholars would have some sort of verses related to this theme. Even though the world poetry competition requires the creation of poems on the spot, a person can easily modify existing verses to create their own new poems."

"But in reality, this question is quite the tough one." Li Xiao Bai had an expression of deep thought.

He knew that his poem was going to compete against the surrounding people. As long as he was stronger than half of them, he would progress to the next stage.

Many scholars noticed this as well.

Many people started to think, some sat down on the ground while others paced around with their arms behind their backs, some lowered their heads, muttering softly to themselves.

Li Xiao Bai’s thought was: "Which poem do I use, or steal?"

There were many spring related poems in his memory, they were all amazing classics.

But using a legendary classic from the start was not good, this would not allow Li Xiao Bai to explain himself in the future. He did not have top tier talent qi, if he took out a shocking poem now, he would attract suspicion.

If his luck was good now, Li Xiao Bai might take slight risks. But now that he was having bad luck, Li Xiao Bai decided to play safe.

While Li Xiao Bai was thinking about it, many scholars already started to make their poems.

Thus, all kinds of lights shining in all colors, weak or strong, appeared. Whenever the light fades from a scholar’s body, they would have some gains.

Some gained Gu worms, some gained a rise in cultivation level, some recovered primeval essence, while others recovered from fatigue.

This was the killer move known as assisting literary talents.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven’s creator, its original owner, had used this move before his death. Because of assisting literary talents, more and more scholars were encouraged to study, it eventually created the environment of Profound Literature grotto-heaven where most people were scholars.

Li Xiao Bai decided on his poem.

He coughed lightly before starting his recital.

"A moonlit night[1]."

"Deep into the night the moon shines on half a cottage, across the sky the Big Dipper lies, the Little Dipper tilts an incline."

"The warmth of spring is readily felt tonight, through the green window screen, insects buzz and hum."

After Li Xiao Bai finished his recital, a light buzzing noise could be heard around him, his entire body shined in an intense green light.

Whoosh.

The scholars around Li Xiao Bai felt an invisible pressure as the green light forced them to move aside, a huge empty space was created with Li Xiao Bai at the center.

"Such, such a strong light!"

"A famed poem has appeared!"

"To think that a famed poem would appear so quickly. I wonder who created it?"

Many scholars lost their train of thought, they all looked towards Li Xiao Bai with admiration and suspicion.

Li Xiao Bai had a calm expression but he was a little conflicted inside: "Sigh, I went overboard a little, the effect was so eye-catching, I gained too much attention."

He looked around, hoping someone would step up and take the attention away from him.

As the green light entered his aperture, his cultivation level rose.

"Oh! A famed poem has appeared, let me go read it." At the teahouse, Hua Song had a sensation.

After reading Li Xiao Bai’s work, Hua Song nodded in satisfaction: "Brilliant, brilliant! This Li Xiao Bai is very young but his poems are very mature."

"Normally, spring poems would use verses involving greenery or peach blossoms. But this poem uses another train of thought, using the night scene to conceal the spring light, it is quite interesting."

"The final verse must be created using Li Xiao Bai’s personal experiences. It has a refreshing, happy, and lively feeling."

"Poems take after the creator, this Li Xiao Bai has a superb mindset!"

Hua Song praised it for a while, as if he had just eaten a delicacy of the world. He looked at An Chong as he smiled: "I wonder what envoy thinks of this poem?"

An Chong felt a headache as he thought: "If you didn’t tell me, I wouldn’t know what’s so good about this poem. Sigh, he wants me to critique it, what should I say?"

[1] Poem by Liu Fangping.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1977 Li Xiao Bai“s Inner Conflic

Li Xiao Bai’s expectations were not disappointed.

After his recital, three more people stepped up.

One was a strong man wearing a golden mask, he was shining in a glaring golden light.

There was an old man wearing a cone hat, he was holding a cane as a green light moved around him.

There was also a woman, she had a slim body and wore a pink dress, her face was covered by a veil, after her recital, butterflies flew around her, it was a beautiful sight.

These three had created famed poems on the same level as Li Xiao Bai’s moonlit night.

Li Xiao Bai let out a sigh of relief: "This world has Gu worms to assist with poem creation. Gu Masters are also able to extend their lifespan and gain more experience in life. Thus, famed poems are more likely to appear than on Earth."

On Earth, moonlit night was a rare creation. But in Profound Literature grotto-heaven, it would not be unmatched.

Including Li Xiao Bai, the four of them had their own territory as they looked at each other.

The strong man, old man, and woman placed their gazes on Li Xiao Bai.

They knew each other, they had some sort of understanding towards their works, but Li Xiao Bai was a newcomer.

"Who is this young man?"

"His talent qi is not dense, how can he create such a famed poem?"

"Hehe, interesting guy."

Li Xiao Bai’s teacher, Teacher Jiang, also saw his student’s performance. He nodded in satisfaction: "Very good, Li Xiao Bai, it seems you are performing well today. Continue working hard."

In the end, no accidents happened, Li Xiao Bai moved to the next round and was teleported away.

After he regained his senses, he arrived in another arena.

"This is the fifth round, scholars, please wait patiently." Li Xiao Bai heard a voice in his mind.

Li Xiao Bai understood at once: "So the advancement has differences as well. The poem I made is enough to pass three rounds and directly reach the fifth round."

"This is quite a logical rule."

"But this means that the Gu Masters who reached this round are all people who created famed poems. Only half of these people can pass, the pressure has intensified now."

Li Xiao Bai looked around, he found two familiar faces.

It was the strong man and the woman from earlier.

After noticing Li Xiao Bai’s gaze, the woman nodded at him, she seemed to be smiling under the veil. Meanwhile, the strong man had an air of arrogance, after giving Li Xiao Bai a glance, he started to shut his eyes and meditate.

In the fifth round, there was only the three of them now.

"I wonder which round that old man went to."

"I should pretend to rest now."

When scholars made poems, they had to think with all their effort, but he only had to select a suitable poem for his use. This was too easy, he had to conceal the fact.

After waiting for several minutes in the fifth round arena, the second competition began.

He had more than twenty competitors, Li Xiao Bai felt a certain level of pressure in his heart.

The theme of the second competition was out — Travel, the time limit was the same as before.

"Travel? This question is the same as spring, it is so broad and easy to write, but creating a famed poem will be very hard!" The strong man sighed to himself.

The woman was thinking: "I am not well versed in this, what should I do?"

Li Xiao Bai was also contemplating: "Which poem do I copy?"

After thinking for a while, he felt that he could not use a classic poem, the effect would be too overwhelming, but he could not use a bad poem. Otherwise, he would fail to advance and be kicked back to the previous round.

Li Xiao Bai was a little troubled, it was not easy to gauge this situation.

He knew his own ability, but he did not know about others, he did not know what sort of poem to use to win but not gain too much attention.

"In the first round, I went overboard. I should not try for first place now." Li Xiao Bai told himself.

He waited patiently.

After a few minutes, some scholars already created their poems. After that, a few more started to recite their poems, colorful lights appeared.

Li Xiao Bai sighed to himself, thinking: "It seems that famed poems are not easy to create, these people did well in the first round but currently, they are only performing at an average level."

Li Xiao Bai soon had an idea of the situation but he did not start working, he was still waiting.

As the time limit was about to be up, he finally saw some famed poems.

One from the strong man.

He recited a poem with great battle intent, resembling the march of horses and spears, his entire body was flickering with golden light, one could hear the clash of spears and blades.

The second famed poem came from the woman.

She created a gentle poem, describing a young lady looking outside her room’s window, listening to the stories of travelers outside, imagining her own travel journey, it was quite impressive.

"Alright, it is my turn now." Li Xiao Bai coughed as he recited:

Date flowers fall on the villagers’ clothes,

The sound of reeling carts heard from every household,

Old men dressed in simple clothes sell cucumbers under the willow tree.

Feeling drunk and drowsy from the long journey,

The bright sun makes my throat dry, I thirst for a refreshing drink, I knock on the door of a mortal house, hoping to request for some tea.

He had copied Su Shi’s Silk-washing Stream.

After the recital, be it the strong man or the woman, they were evidently moved as they analyzed the poem.

"Good poem! This poem starts with description of the scenery and actions at the back, with the fusion of both, one can feel interested in the event."

"Even though he is writing about a scenery, he uses his voice to create an image, compared to normal descriptions, this is very vivid. The emotional part is also very interesting. This kid might be a Gu Master but he is very polite and courteous, he does not barge into a mortal’s house, he is truly a gentleman and has incomparable elegance."

"Reading his poem shows his nature. This young scholar is really promising!"

The surrounding scholars looked at Li Xiao Bai with a different gaze now.

Li Xiao Bai let out a breath of air, pretending that he was extremely exhausted.

"After this round, I should be able to advance. Not just that, my performance was really good, I did not gain too much attention but I also did not show inability."

Li Xiao Bai was quite satisfied with himself, after waiting for a while, the time limit was up.

He became stunned.

Most scholars failed to create a poem.

"This is the world poetry competition, I need to display my best abilities. If I use any inferior work, it will be too shameful."

"I did my best but could not create a satisfactory poem, even if I fail, I will not regret it!"

"This trip was worth my time, I got to hear three famed poems."

"Haha, in the worst case scenario, I might fall to the first round, so what? Goodbye!"

Those scholars that did not create a poem left in a carefree manner, while those scholars who made inferior poems showed shameful expressions.

Li Xiao Bai was calm on the outside but internally flummoxed: "How can you guys act so graciously?"

Even though he advanced, he had gained too much attention again. Earlier, he was quite satisfied with the situation, but to think these scholars would be so useless.

"Hmph, I had overestimated them." Li Xiao Bai thought.

There was nothing to say, he successfully advanced to the ninth round.

After patiently waiting for a while, the people gathered. This time, there was less than ten of them.

Many of them were famous scholars, they knew each other and greeted politely, they were calm and elegant on the outside, but were all feeling nervous internally.

At this point, the pressure of these competitors intensified again.

"I need to be stable, I cannot create a commotion again!" Li Xiao Bai clenched his fists, he kept reminding himself.

But this time, his opponents all performed well, more than half of the Gu Masters created famed poems.

Li Xiao Bai was the last one left.

Li Xiao Bai had a nervous expression but he was calm internally, he recited the poem that he had already prepared in advance.

With some flickering light, his cultivation level rose to rank four, he gained a new Gu worm.

This time, he planned meticulously, the poem he created was just borderline in the middle, he managed to advance successfully but he was at the bottom of the batch.

Right when Li Xiao Bai was feeling happy.

Cough!

Someone coughed out a mouthful of blood.

Ugh.

Someone fainted on the ground.

The strong man shook as he sat down with difficulty. The woman coughed for a long time with a pale expression.

Only Li Xiao Bai was left standing on the spot, unaffected.

At once, everyone’s gazes were on him again.

"This young man is very strong! Currently speaking, he has already created three famed poems."

"He did not get injured at all, it seems that he had not gone all out when he made his poem earlier."

"Impressive! After this competition, I need to befriend him!"

Li Xiao Bai: "..."

He was speechless.

Oh heavens, why did everyone overexert themselves?!

Wasn’t it just a poem competition, why were they risking their lives?

He wanted to pretend to cough blood too but it was too late now, he could not disguise himself anymore.

Li Xiao Bai had to continue moving to the next round with a plain expression.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Central Continent.

Fang Yuan stood under the thousand wish tree, looking up only to see a blazing light in the sky, there were specks and lumps, fading and flickering, it was truly a dazzling sight.

Looking at the ground, sand and dust rumbled as wind was blowing wildly.

Fang Yuan’s eyes flickered with cold light.

His heaven path dao marks were increasing in number!

He had originally gained three thousand or so dao marks from the Gu refinement, but now, he was approaching three thousand five hundred dao marks.

With the increase in heaven path dao marks, the number of other dao marks in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture was reducing in number.

This scene reminded Fang Yuan of his time in Crazed Demon Cave.

At the second lowest floor of Crazed Demon Cave, Fang Yuan saw the development of worlds. Countless worlds were destroyed as heaven path dao marks formed. The heaven path dao marks interlinked with each other or spread out themselves, forming new worlds.

At this moment, even though the sovereign immortal aperture was not destroyed and turned into heaven path dao marks, they were still modifying the various dao marks within this immortal aperture.

Of course, the heaven path dao marks were not just increasing. Sometimes, they fell in numbers, one heaven path dao mark turned into many dao marks of other paths, spreading throughout the world.

Using the transformation of these dao marks, in accordance with the Heavenly Dao, the environment of the entire sovereign immortal aperture was modified.

Like the scene that Fang Yuan was observing now, light was appearing in the sky, it meant that light path dao marks were increasing in numbers. There was also wind and rumbling sand on the ground, it meant that wind path and earth path dao marks were also increasing in numbers.

"If this goes on for a long time, the surroundings of the thousand wish tree would turn into a barren desert." The trend was too obvious, Fang Yuan smiled coldly to himself.

He had originally thought that the thousand wish tree was meant to be planted in a desert, but now, even though he was not wrong, his understanding was distorted.

The thousand wish tree was a human path ancient desolate plant, it used human will to create fruits. It was most suited to be grown in a bustling environment like a large city or market filled with people, the more human will the better.

However, the Heavenly Dao did not want the thousand wish tree to grow properly, it changed the heaven path dao marks to create a blazing sun and a vast area of sand, to isolate it from the living people.

In order to survive, the thousand wish tree had to change its own traits to adapt to this difficult environment and live.

But now that it was placed in Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture, the immortal formation created its own desert environment for it to slowly adapt and change, it would not be destroyed because of an unsuitable environment.

But outside the immortal formation was a fertile land with lush greenery and warm sunlight.

The immortal formation was not isolated, the thousand wish tree’s human path aura could be sensed by the Heavenly Dao. But these heaven path dao marks were not under Fang Yuan’s control, they could not change according to the environment within the immortal formation, they modified the environment outside the formation to stop the thousand wish tree’s growth.

Thus, Fang Yuan learned about some things.

"The thousand wish tree will finish growing in three hundred years, flower at its six hundredth year and bear fruit at the nine hundredth year. It will create exactly a thousand fruits at that time."

"This is something that everyone knows as a fact, but now it seems, this is not true."

"The thousand wish tree is restricted by the Heavenly Dao, its actual potential is much larger!"

"From now on, I will water it with human will, I will gradually change its habitat, its production will definitely rise greatly!"

This was a future plan, Fang Yuan came to the thousand wish tree today for another matter.

At his will, Cooking Luck Pot revealed itself above him.

Rank seven Cooking Luck Pot was large as a basin, it was shining in golden and white light, sacred and royal.

The pot had thick sides, about the thickness of a thumb, there were eight dragons at the base of the pot, coiling around each other and extending their claws to become the legs of this pot. At the top of the pot, one could see Fang Yuan’s exposed luck, it looked grey and damaged.

Even though Cooking Luck Pot was only rank seven, unable to contain all of Fang Yuan’s luck in this one pot, it was still possible to observe something from it.

Fang Yuan’s colossal luck was almost fully consumed in the fate war, after the fight, his luck became very low. This was his third hidden threat, aside from the qi tide and heaven path dao marks.

Fate was constant while luck was variable.

When one’s luck was poor, it meant that unfavorable developments might happen.

But now, Fang Yuan’s main body had immense battle strength that was pseudo venerable level, no matter how bad his luck was, he had the power to resist problems.

This was not a big issue for the main body, but he was worried about the luck of his clones.

Outside of Cooking Luck Pot were the luck of his respective clones.

The time path clone’s luck still resembled the River of Time, but the water was no longer flowing smoothly, it was chaotic and the front of the river was cut off, it looked quite worrying.

Zhan Bu Du’s luck was originally a mature eagle spreading its wings and flying, but now the eagle had fallen into water, it was covered by flowing water that made things difficult for him.

Li Xiao Bai’s luck was like a bright blooming flower. The flower was bright red and burning intensely in a red color. Within the flame, the petals bloomed, it might look like good luck but the hidden threat was huge. He was basically playing with fire, he would die if he could not control the flames.

Wu Shuai’s luck was like a coiling dragon, three of its dragon claws were holding onto a dragon pearl each. One had the silhouette of Dragon Palace, one had countless ants in it, while the third pearl had the image of Di Zang Sheng. Wu Shuai had the strongest luck among them, but he was surrounded by blade and sword qi, approaching from all directions.

Fang Yuan’s main body had poor luck, his clones were in even worse states.

Fang Yuan had sensed his clones’ problem long ago, it was not that he did not try to resolve it but his methods failed.

The heaven path dao marks restricted him, whenever he tried to use a killer move, they would interfere and cause his killer move activation to fail. Even if he succeeded, the power of the move would be greatly lowered.

"But this time, it should be different." Bright light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Fang Yuan multitasked, manipulating the formation around the thousand wish tree while also activating Cooking Luck Pot.

The thousand wish tree’s branches continued to shake, bright rainbow light shot out of the formation, entering Cooking Luck Pot.

Cooking Luck Pot started to modify the luck of his clones.

The surrounding world started to rage with intense winds and fierce lightning. Heaven path dao marks appeared one by one, some were all over the place while others appeared on Fang Yuan’s body.

The way of heaven was to take away surpluses while replenishing deficits.

The way of humans was to take away deficits while magnifying surpluses!

With the help of the human path immortal formation, Fang Yuan forcefully made modifications of certain degrees to the luck of his clones.

The time path clone’s river luck stabilized and became smoother.

Zhan Bu Du’s eagle luck started to shed its feathers in the water, it seemed like it was turning into a fish, adapting to the environment.

Li Xiao Bai’s flower luck started to crystallize under the intense flames, it no longer had a threat of turning to ashes.

Meanwhile, Wu Shuai’s dragon luck still remained in a coiling state, there was no change to the luck. The surrounding blade and sword qi, however, became much weaker, turning from dense smoke to light smoke. This meant that there would still be a fight but the scale of the battle would be much smaller than before.

"The problem of the clones is settled. The truly troublesome thing is the heaven path dao marks." Fang Yuan could increasingly understand the deeper intentions of Red Lotus as time passed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1979 Merman Court“s Vicious Gues

Eastern Sea, Merman Imperial Court.

The sound of instruments was complemented with delicious wine and food.

At the grand banquet, the three female immortals leading the Merman Imperial Court sat on the main seats as they entertained an unexpected guest.

"Good wine, good music, and even better dance!" The guest drank his wine in one gulp as he slammed the cup on the table, laughing loudly.

He had a square face, he was muscular and strong, his skin was snow white, his eyes and hair were icy blue in color.

Rank eight aura permeated from his body.

He was a snowman Gu Immortal from black heaven’s Ice Crystal grotto-heaven, it was the current generation Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Ever since the last meeting of the black heaven forces, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord secretly contacted Central Continent’s Heavenly Court, while Lady Cold Ash contacted the human experts like Granny Skeleton. Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch did not stay motionless, his target was not white heaven or black heaven, but the five regions instead. Thus, he went to Eastern Sea and approached the merman force.

Eastern Sea’s merman force had three leaders, they were all mermaid immortals, they were called Lian Ke Xin, Yu Zi, and Xie Ning Si.

Even though this was the first time the three female immortals were seeing Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, seeing that he was a variant human rank eight Gu Immortal, they held this banquet to welcome him.

Upon hearing Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s praise, Lian Ke Xin smiled and replied: "Thank you for the praise. These dancing Gu Masters all are the hope of our merman tribe, our Gu Immortal seeds. It is their honor to be praised by you, Immortal Monarch."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch laughed again: "Pardon my insolence, but if these merfolk are the hope of your tribe, I’m afraid you are going to be wiped from existence soon."

These words made many of the merfolk’s expressions change.

The dancing merfolk even became disorganized for a moment.

Lian Ke Xin remained smiling: "We already understand your intention in coming here. We are not going to be provoked by your words. For countless years, mermen have lived in Eastern Sea peacefully and harmoniously, we have been neutral all along, we will not participate in any conflict outside."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch shook his head: "Preposterous! Who does not want to live in peace? But in history, such peace can only be gained through conflict and war. The merman race received the help of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable back then, that is why you could live like this until now. In the entire five regions, only you are still a super force among the variant humans."

"But we have all seen the fate war already. Fate has been destroyed, the five regions have merged, the world is changing right in front of our very eyes. With disasters and calamities, conflict will ensue and last for a long time."

"Your Merman Imperial Court wants to stay out of this? Hehehe, how long has it been since Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable died? How much influence does he still have to protect you?"

Lian Ke Xin had a grim expression, she could not rebuke him.

Yu Zi snorted coldly beside her: "We have more than ten Gu Immortals and Immortal Gu House Floating Reputation Boat, how is it completely Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s credit that we are able to develop to today’s scale?"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch nodded: "I have heard of your Floating Reputation Boat long ago, but so what? It is just a rank seven Immortal Gu House. You have many Gu Immortals, but do you have a single rank eight Gu Immortal? Not a single one! Hehehe, forget about everything else, if I want to attack you now, can anyone stop me?"

The three mermaids had cold expressions, Xie Ning Si said: "Immortal Monarch, if you want to fight, you can attack now, we will show you the power of our merman race!"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch quickly waved his hand: "Don’t misunderstand, I am not trying to become enemies with you. We are all variant humans, in the current world where humans dominate, I want us to cooperate. Variant humans are friends, not enemies. I am here to seek an alliance, how can I possibly fight you?"

"I understand why you do not want to cooperate. But think about this, as long as I spread the word that the three of you have invited me here and show signs of wanting to join up with black heaven’s variant human forces to resist the humans, what will happen? Hehe."

The three mermaids looked at each other, they all had grim expressions.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch spoke gently but he had a tough tone, it was a forceful cooperation. If they rejected him, he would spread rumors and lie that the merfolk want to join him.

At this time, the fate war was known to everyone.

The things that Duke Long said to Fang Yuan exposed to the world that variant humans were going to rise up!

Once this news was spread out regarding the Merman Imperial Court and the variant humans, it would raise the paranoia of the humans, they would become a public enemy.

By then, with the usual behavior of humans, they would form into an allied army and eliminate the Merman Imperial Court first!

The human forces had been wanting to take down the Merman Imperial Court long ago, they were only restricted by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s influence. If the mermen wanted to harm the humans, regardless of whether anyone believed this lie, they would use it to deal with the Merman Imperial Court.

The Merman Imperial Court would be forced to resist, they would only be able to survive if they worked with Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch or other equally powerful alliances.

Thus, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s objective had already been fulfilled.

The three mermaids were troubled, they knew about the trend of the world, they were actively choosing Gu Immortal seeds and nurturing them.

They were mermen, they were variant humans, this status placed them in an awkward spot all along throughout the eras. During the five regions chaotic war, they would be in an even worse position when everyone was paranoid.

Thus, the merman tribe felt a strong sense of danger.

The three mermaids did not have much ambition, they only wanted to preserve their members during this new era. Thus, they did not want to antagonize Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, but they did not want to side with this ambitious leader and wage war on the humans either.

Seeing that the mermaids were silent, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch smiled again: "How about this, we are all variant humans, I do not want to force you. Let’s make a bet."

The three mermaids looked at each other, Yu Zi asked: "What bet?"

"We will have a three round competition, no matter what methods your tribe uses, as long as you can defeat me in one round, I will forget about the suggestion to make an alliance, I will leave without exposing anything about your tribe or spreading any rumors. But if I win all three rounds, it will mean that your merman tribe is just too weak, unable to even defeat a rank eight Gu Immortal like me, you will be in great danger anyway, you should work with me to ensure that your tribe survives the tides of time." Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch said slowly.

The three mermaids had no choice, they nodded and agreed to this bet.

In the first round, the three mermaids went all out, gathering the Gu Immortals of the tribe and creating the battle formation, merman wave sacred spiritual formation.

"Good formation, it can actually trap enemies." Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch took a look and praised it.

"Immortal Monarch, do you dare to enter?"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch laughed loudly, he went into the formation and attacked several times, the tides turned into ice and shattered, allowing him to escape easily.

The merman Gu Immortals suffered backlash, they were either lightly or heavily injured, they all had grim expressions.

"It is a pity you do not have any rank eight expert controlling the formation." Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch critiqued.

During the second round, the Merman Imperial Court used their Immortal Gu House Floating Reputation Boat.

After a hundred rounds of fighting, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch claimed victory again.

The three female mermen went into anxious discussions.

"Only the third round is left, what do we do?"

"If we lose again, we will need to cooperate with Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, what do we do?"

"Why don’t we use that?" Xie Ning Si suggested.

Lian Ke Xin and Yu Zi were stunned, they shook their heads: "No, we cannot use that, the influence is too large. Even without Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s rumor, we will become the target of everyone, our tribe will be exterminated!"

"If we do not use that, what will we do? Do we request help from Eastern Sea’s human forces?"

"No, we are all affected by the qi tides now, why would those humans come here to help us? Even if they come, the price will be too large."

"Oh? I thought of someone. Why don’t we ask Gu tribe’s leader for help?" Xie Ning Si asked.

Lian Ke Xin sighed, denying this possibility: "He is Gu tribe’s leader, even though he has rank eight cultivation level, he is a beastman that is in seclusion. We have a good relationship with him but if we ask him for help, that will be making things difficult for him. Furthermore, he might not defeat this Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch."

Yu Zi’s eyes suddenly brightened: "I thought of someone, this person might be able to help us, he might even win against Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch."

"Who?"

"Indeed, at this point in time, who can help us?"

Yu Zi blinked as she said: "Did you forget, there is currently a great expert at Gu tribe’s headquarters."

"Oh, him." Lian Ke Xin suddenly realized.

"Brilliant, I will contact Gu tribe’s leader now, we will ask Lord Wu Shuai for help!" Xie Ning Si said that as she rapidly got to action.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Eastern Sea, Gu tribe’s blessed land.

A grand palace was stationed here.

The whole palace shined with slight orange-gold light and was richly decorated, the pavilions and terraces were all grand and beautiful. It was the rank eight

Immortal Gu House — Dragon Palace.

Within Dragon Palace, dream realms were spread out. In other Immortal Gu Houses, nobody would dare to do this. But although Dragon Palace was an enslavement path Immortal Gu House, it had dream path Immortal Gu and was not at risk of the dream realm corroding it.

In front of the dream realm, Fang Yuan’s clone, Wu Shuai, had his eyes shut.

His body was here, but his soul was inside the dream realm, continuously exploring it.

Within the dream realm, Wu Shuai was the disciple of a medical clinic, he was trying to learn their skill.

A young man with broad shoulders and a thin waist stepped into the clinic with a valiant aura.

The young man had quite the status, the old doctor who owned the clinic had to attend to him personally.

"Doctor, ever since I won the fight last time, I have been feeling that my body has some lingering issues." The young man said.

The old doctor chuckled: "Come, I will check your pulse."

"Check my pulse?" The young man frowned, having a perplexed expression.

The old doctor said slowly: "This is a unique investigative method from my hometown, it can inspect illnesses. As a person’s heart continues to beat, their blood will flow through their veins and create pulses. Through my specially created healing Gu worm, I can inspect your pulse and find out the cause of your illness."

The young man had a surge of admiration: "Worthy of an experienced doctor. I’ve heard that heaven has heaven veins, earth has earth veins, and humans have human veins. Does this method to inspect the pulse make use of a human vein to target the cause of the problem?"

"Hahaha, that is precisely so, extend your hand." The old doctor smiled.

The young man extended his hand, the old doctor placed his finger on his wrist, closing his eyes to inspect it.

A moment later, the old doctor opened his eyes: "This is indeed an illness but it is not obvious on the outside, this is quite vicious. You were hit by a phantom path method."

The young man nodded: "Senior is completely right, my opponent was a Gu Master specializing in phantom path. I was hit by his attack and although I did not suffer injuries, it still felt weird. Usually at night, I could undergo activities with more than ten of my concubines, but now, I get extremely tired after engaging with one. Also, my waist often aches and my body feels hot, I perspire a lot when I sleep, I even feel dizziness at times."

The old doctor nodded: "This phantom path method is quite wicked, it targets your kidney. In other words, you have kidney deficiency[1]."

"Phantom path is troublesome indeed, what should I do now?" The young man asked.

The old doctor replied: "I will prescribe you some medicine, take it for a month, during this month, you should not engage in bedroom activities."

The young man had a difficult expression: "Senior, can you use Gu worms to heal me directly? If I have to hold it for a month, I’ll go crazy."

The old doctor shook his head: "Phantom path methods alternate between reality and illusion, we need ample time to deal with it. Even though my medicine is not a healing Gu worm, it is not far from an actual Gu recipe, it can definitely treat your problem. Other than this method, it will be hard to cure you. Unless you can find a doctor who has greater skill than me, he might be able to resolve your issue."

The young man sighed: "Senior is the greatest healer I know, I will follow your prescription."

The dream faded away, the exploration was successful.

"Human vein..." Wu Shuai’s soul returned to his body, he was still savoring the true meaning in this dream.

This dream realm gave him the true meaning of two paths, phantom path and human path.

Fang Yuan’s human path attainment level was at grandmaster but phantom path was only at ordinary. His main body still had the corpses of many Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, they had phantom apertures. But earlier, his phantom path attainment level was too low, even with wisdom Gu, he could not deduce the profundity of phantom path.

After the fate war, all of the dream realms were given to Wu Shuai to explore.

These dreams were all obtained from Yi Tian Mountain by Fang Yuan, even though a portion were used in the fate war, a large amount was still left.

After Wu Shuai left Heavenly Court, he returned to Eastern Sea and stayed in Gu tribe’s blessed land. Other than opening his immortal aperture’s entrance to draw in heaven and earth qi, he kept in closed cultivation, exploring dream realms to gain more true meaning, to raise the attainment levels of his main body’s many paths.

"Currently, my main body needs human path attainment level. After this exploration, even though we did not gain much human path attainment level and are still at grandmaster, it should be of some help to my main body."

Wu Shuai started to rest, preparing for his next dream realm exploration.

"Hmm?" He saw that there was an information path mortal Gu from Gu tribe’s leader in the hall.

"Gu tribe’s leader would not bother me with trivial matters, something important must have happened." Wu Shuai retrieved the information path mortal Gu and checked it.

"Oh, a rank eight snowman Gu Immortal called Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch is finding problems with the Merman Imperial Court?"

In the letter, the three mermaids promised that as long as Wu Shuai taught this evil visitor a lesson and forced him away, they would thank him with rewards. Gu tribe’s leader also used a polite tone to subtly request for Wu Shuai’s help.

"Of course I will help." Wu Shuai smiled lightly.

He had a portion of Fang Yuan’s five hundred years of memories.

Wu Shuai learned that in the previous life, when the regional walls vanished and the five regions united, there were qi tides too.

The five regions’ Gu Immortals were forced to recuperate, during this period, the forces in the two heavens came out and acted arrogantly for some time.

"To think that I would have a chance to interact with these grotto-heaven forces. This is a great opportunity! For my main body’s plans, I should do my best."

Bam.

The door of Dragon Palace opened, Wu Shuai came out of his closed cultivation.

At the banquet, the fragrance of wine spread but the atmosphere was very grim.

The three mermaids had cold expressions while Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch smiled at them.

The song and dance had ended, the hall was silent.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch drank a mouthful of wine as he asked: "I wonder if you have already decided on who to send for the final round?"

The three mermaids’ expressions turned darker but at this time, they received a letter, their faces glowed with joy.

Xie Ning Si said: "Since Immortal Monarch is eager, let’s start the third fight."

"Good." Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch placed down his wine cup: "How will we do this final fight, do tell me."

"We have invited someone to go against Immortal Monarch." Lian Ke Xin said.

"This lord has arrived already, prepare yourself, Immortal Monarch!" Yu Zi smiled coldly.

After a few breaths of time, following the mermaid immortals, Wu Shuai stepped into the hall.

"Who wants to fight me?" Wu Shuai asked, his voice reverberating in the hall.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch saw Wu Shuai and his expression changed, his casual and carefree attitude was no more, he said in shock: "You?"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had gained a lot of information about the fate war, Wu Shuai was one of the stars that shined, everyone in the world knew about him now.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch understood at once why the three mermaids had such confidence.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s heart sank, he knew about Wu Shuai’s strength, there was little hope in beating him.

But in this situation, he had no choice but to ask: "Greetings, Wu Shuai, to think that you are in the Merman Imperial Court. I wonder where Fang Yuan is?"

Fang Yuan snorted coldly: "I gained Fang Yuan’s help to revive, we were merely working together to resist Heavenly Court earlier. You are my opponent? Go ahead and attack."

Wu Shuai had a lofty expression, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was angry, his expression turned cold: "Wu Shuai, you have rank seven cultivation level, but your tone is very arrogant."

Wu Shuai smiled: "Whose tone is more arrogant? In terms of seniority, I am someone from Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s era! When I died of old age, your grandfather was not even born yet."

"You..." Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch stared with wide eyes.

"What? You came to look for problems with the mermen, let’s not waste time." Wu Shuai stared: "Not attacking? Then I will make my move!"

Saying so, he waved his hand, an Immortal Gu House flew out.

"Dragon Palace!" Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s pupils shrunk, he watched as the Immortal Gu House came crashing towards him.

He was not a transformation path great expert, he could not resist this famous Immortal Gu House head-on, he quickly dodged.

The three mermaids did not expect Wu Shuai to act so quickly, he attacked with no warning.

Xie Ning Si quickly urged: "Senior Wu Shuai, this is the merman hall, if you are going to fight, it would be better to do it outside..."

Boom!

Dragon Palace expanded again, the entire merman hall was blown apart.

As dust clouds rumbled, the mermaids and Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch flew out pitifully.

Dragon Palace rose to the sky as Wu Shuai stood at the door, looking down at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch: "Don’t run, little fellow."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s heart was pounding from the sudden assault, his throat felt dry: "Wu Shuai, you are a senior! Don’t rely on the power of the Immortal Gu House if you have guts."

"Oh, is that so?" Wu Shuai snickered.

The three mermaids felt something amiss, Yu Zi quickly shouted: "Senior Wu Shuai! These are the headquarters of merfolk, if you are going to fight, please do it outside..."

Before she ended her sentence, with a loud sound, Di Zang Sheng was released from Dragon Palace by Wu Shuai.

Roar——!

The Evil Dragon roared, creating colossal waves. Its body was like a huge mountain, squeezed within the blessed land. Its dragon tail waved as several mountains and valleys were flattened.

Countless merfolk scrambled and ran away, screaming in chaos.

The three mermaids were stunned, they did not know what to do.

"Come, fight." Wu Shuai crossed his arms as he said to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch with a plain tone.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch looked at the grand palace and the huge vicious Evil Dragon, he felt that he was very insignificant.

Even as a snowman who was extremely resistant to cold, at this moment, he felt a deep chill flowing down his spine.

After being quiet for some time, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch cupped his fists and said: "Senior, you are very powerful, junior admits defeat. Senior has won this battle."

The three mermaids were silent.

Wu Shuai only had rank seven cultivation level now, but nobody felt strange that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was admitting defeat to him.

Even without Dragon Palace, just the Evil Dragon alone could slaughter Heavenly Court’s two transformation path experts and survive the attack of countless Gu Immortals.

During the fate war, Di Zang Sheng had only lost to Feng Jiu Ge and Duke Long!

"Hmph, little fellow, you are quite smart." Wu Shuai chuckled as he stored away Di Zang Sheng and Dragon Palace.

"Next, let’s talk about the alliance." Wu Shuai descended and said this.

"Senior Wu Shuai!" The three mermaids were shocked.

"What? You still think you can isolate yourselves from everything?" Wu Shuai’s eyebrows were raised, he spoke in displeasure.

The three immortals did not dare to rebuke him.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was overjoyed, to think that there would be a turn of events, he stammered: "Se... senior, you mean to say?"

Wu Shuai patted his shoulder: "Come, let’s talk in the hall."

[1] The character for deficiency here is the same as phantom.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Because of Wu Shuai’s interference, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had to admit defeat. He had originally thought that his plan to ally with the mermen had failed, but to think that Wu Shuai had the same intention as him.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and the Merman Imperial Court made a bet, the loser won while the winner lost.

After the battle, Wu Shuai used the Merman Imperial Court to hold a talk with Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, their discussion got more animated, the three mermaids’ expressions turned grimmer.

Wu Shuai heard that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had already gathered the grotto-heavens for a meeting, he immediately requested to join them and even urged Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch to gather the remaining forces for a second meeting.

In Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s plan, the second meeting was going to happen much later, but Wu Shuai was urging him, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch thought: "With Wu Shuai’s reputation, I can use it to my advantage, it is possible to push the meeting forward without issues."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch knew that even if they gathered the grotto-heaven forces in black and white heaven, there would still be a huge internal threat. Among these forces, there was a small group of human forces.

He wanted variant humans to lead the alliance, thus, he had been looking for allies aggressively during this period. He had already contacted all of the variant human forces that he knew. Even the Merman Imperial Court in Eastern Sea was visited after all.

If he knew that Gu tribe was at the bottom of the sea, he would visit them too.

"But with this dragonman great expert Wu Shuai that everyone knows, even if the human faction gathers more people, they cannot match his influence, right?"

Wu Shuai attacked Heavenly Court as a dragonman and ended up as the victor, this result gave him huge prestige and reputation.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch thus held the second meeting in Ice Crystal grotto-heaven, the group was even bigger now.

"Golden Fur Immortal Monarch has arrived!"

"Blitz Cloud Heavenly Immortal has arrived!"

"Great Wisdom Immortal Mother has arrived!"

"Green Forest Great Sage has arrived!"

Many rank eight great experts of the variant humans came.

Golden Fur Immortal Monarch was a hairy man, he was covered in thick golden fur. Blitz Cloud Heavenly Immortal was a featherman, he had the appearance of a handsome young man. Great Wisdom Immortal Mother was an old female inkman. Green Forest Great Sage was a miniman, his entire body was covered in a green light.

This was the first time these four variant human Gu Immortals had attended the meeting.

As for the human rank eight Gu Immortals, other than Night Heavenly Wolf Lord and Lady Cold Ash, there were also newcomers, light path cultivator Crossing Heaven Immortal Monarch, wood path cultivator Black Locust and earth path female immortal Rainbow Rock Immortal Concubine.

There were only five human rank eights but almost ten variant human rank eights. Even though Lady Cold Ash tried to get more people to join, they were still unable to match the variant humans, in fact this gap was widening.

After a long discussion, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch announced: "We invited everyone here today, other than to discuss the matters of the world, there is also another important matter. Let me introduce you to a senior great expert!"

Everyone followed Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s hand gesture and looked towards the person.

Wu Shuai walked out from behind the veil, under everyone’s supervision, he sat down on the main seat.

"This is?" The immortals were shocked.

"So it is Wu Shuai." A variant human rank eight who was close with Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch quickly said.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch showed a look of displeasure: "Call him Senior Wu Shuai!"

The variant human rank eight had an embarrassed expression, under Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s gaze, he changed his sentence: "Junior greets senior."

With this adjustment, all the other immortals had to call Wu Shuai senior.

"Good." Wu Shuai nodded in satisfaction: "Seniority is important, but I would rather everyone call me Alliance Leader instead!"

"Alliance Leader?" The immortals looked at each other.

Wu Shuai laughed: "Indeed, now that grotto-heavens are exposed, the five regions’ Gu Immortals will attack us. They have not done anything now because of the qi tide, they cannot move around yet. We need to strengthen and help ourselves, we can only form an alliance to have any hopes of resisting the five regions!"

"Since ancient times, the most capable person will become the alliance leader. I have observed that nobody here can match me, if anyone does not agree, you can challenge me."

Before anyone could respond to Wu Shuai’s words, they heard a dragon roar.

Di Zang Sheng’s colossal body was exposed to everyone, blocking out the sun.

Next, an Immortal Gu House flew out of Wu Shuai’s immortal aperture, it was small and delicate, it floated in his palm while shining with radiance.

It was a miniature Dragon Palace!

Wu Shuai looked at the Dragon Palace in his palm before turning to the immortals, threat was clearly shown in his eyes.

The immortals’ expressions turned ugly, some went silent, they were furious but did not dare to say anything.

Even though Wu Shuai had rank seven cultivation level, everyone knew about the might of Dragon Palace and Evil Dragon. If everyone cooperated, they might have a chance against him. But the grotto-heavens were not close with each other, this was unlike the five regions where super forces interacted and conflicted with each other, they were familiar with one another. The black and white heavens were huge and dangerous, forces rarely met with each other, not to mention any cooperation.

"Hahaha!" Seeing no objection, Wu Shuai laughed loudly as he called out: "You are still not accepting your alliance leader?"

The immortals were silent, the atmosphere was heavy.

A moment later, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch stood up and cupped his fist at Wu Shuai: "Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch greets Alliance Leader!"

"Good, good." Wu Shuai pointed at him: "You will be the vice alliance leader."

Next, he looked at the other Gu Immortals with a vicious gaze.

The Evil Dragon shook its body outside, causing winds to form and clouds to scatter.

Seeing this, and with Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s initiative, all the immortals had to acknowledge Wu Shuai’s status with a cold tone.

Wu Shuai sat at the main seat and looked at the Gu Immortals: "I know what you think, your acknowledge my alliance leader position because of the situation, but I am really not trying to force you."

"This is a very rare opportunity for us all, it is likely our only chance to resist the five regions. If we do not use this chance, when the five regions go after us and our grotto-heavens get encircled, regret will do us no good."

"However, at the rate your discussion is going, when can you take action? By the time you come to an agreement, the qi tides will be over already. Without a strong leader like myself to unify the grotto-heavens, how can we take action swiftly?"

Wu Shuai spoke with a harsh tone but he made good sense, the Gu Immortals’ expressions became less hostile.

"Alright, enough of the useless talk, let’s discuss our next target to attack." Wu Shuai continued.

This time, even Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch felt surprised: "Lord Alliance Leader, isn’t it too early to attack now? Black and white heaven are too huge, there are still many grotto-heaven forces that we have not gathered yet."

"We can’t wait anymore. As long as we succeed in our attack and create a commotion, these people will approach us themselves. This is how the hearts of the people work." Wu Shuai waved his hand and said.

The immortals fell into silence.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had to continue asking: "Then in Lord Alliance Leader’s opinion, which place is most suitable for us to attack?"

"Heavenly Court of course!" Wu Shuai answered without hesitation.

"Heavenly Court?!" The Gu Immortals shouted in astonishment.

"Heavenly Court is weak now, we did not retreat of our own accord earlier. As long as we take down Heavenly Court, the five regions will be shaken, who would dare to target us?" Wu Shuai laughed loudly.

"This is not wise!"

"Heavenly Court has immense foundations, it is not a place we can target."

"Lord Alliance Leader, please reconsider."

The immortals shook their heads, nobody agreed.

"Hmph, cowards!" Wu Shuai smiled coldly in displeasure: "Then we will go after Divine Emperor City."

"This Immortal Gu House is known as the largest Immortal Gu House, it is made from combining Divine Bean Palace and Emperor City. It has a huge significance to Heavenly Court, it is the gathering spot of the human vein, it is the land-based Heavenly Court. If we can obtain it, it will be a huge blow to Central Continent, we can even gain a rank eight Immortal Gu House, and also Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s true inheritance."

Lady Cold Ash pondered: "Since Divine Emperor City is so important, if we attack it, we will infuriate Heavenly Court, the whole of Central Continent will resist and attack us. Since we are going after them as well, what difference is there compared to attacking Heavenly Court directly?"

"Of course there is a difference! If these people are all lured to Divine Emperor City, we can send another group to attack Heavenly Court." Wu Shuai raised his eyebrows.

The immortals heard this and broke out in cold sweat.

"He still wants to attack Heavenly Court after all."

"Doesn’t this mean that the group attacking Divine Emperor City will end up as cannon fodder?"

"Senior Wu Shuai is too aggressive, he wants to go against Heavenly Court no matter what!"

Wu Shuai had a look of displeasure: "What? You do not dare to attack Divine Emperor City?"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had an ugly expression, he spoke like he had constipation: "Please reconsider, Lord Alliance Leader, we..."

Wu Shuai waved his hand, saying unhappily: "Enough, I don’t want to hear more excuses. How about this, let’s get rid of Eastern Sea’s Xia clan first."

Wu Shuai finally exposed his true motive.

Southern Border had Xia clan, Eastern Sea also had Xia clan, these Xia clans were not the same but they were similarly super forces.

Wu Shuai had a huge appetite, his first target was a super force.

If he mentioned this earlier, he would face the objection of the immortals. But his first two targets were Heavenly Court and Divine Emperor City, the immortals found that compared to them, they could accept this target, Eastern Sea’s Xia clan, more easily!

Wu Shuai continued to analyze: "Eastern Sea’s Xia clan has the weakest foundation of all the super forces, they are at the bottom of Eastern Sea’s righteous path forces. Not just that, Xia clan is at the eastern most part of Eastern Sea, the location is remote, it suits our needs as a base."

"And even better, the territories of Xia clan and the Merman Imperial Court border each other, the Merman Imperial Court is our ally now, they can provide us a lot of help."

Saying this, Wu Shuai did not give anyone the chance to speak: "I have decided! Our target will be Xia clan."

Faced with such a domineering alliance leader, the immortals were quite displeased. But under the pressure of the Evil Dragon and Dragon Palace, they had no choice.

And most importantly, they were forced by the situation, they knew that if they did not use this opportunity well, if they did not gain an advantage now, the five regions would not let them off in the future.

"Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, this alliance leader position should have been yours. Are you really going to let him have it?" After this meeting, some Gu Immortals were not satisfied, they hinted towards Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch smiled coldly to himself, he replied: "The nail that sticks out gets hammered down, the winds howl around the highest peaks. This Lord Wu Shuai is helping us charge forward as the vanguard, so what if I give him the alliance leader position? We have now gained the help of both the Evil Dragon and Dragon Palace."

"If our plan fails in the future and the five regions’ Gu Immortals come after us, we can put the blame on Wu Shuai and get away ourselves."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1982 Xia Clan“s Catastrophe

Eastern Sea.

Reflecting shadow sea area.

The surface of the sea was like a smooth mirror without waves. Even when winds howled, the seawater remained unmoving.

Xia clan Gu Immortal Xia Zheng Qing was stationed here.

Reflecting shadow sea area was a giant resource point, it produced dark path and rule path cultivation resources in large quantities. Even though Xia clan primarily cultivated water path, these resources could be traded for huge profits.

Xia Zheng Qing was in closed cultivation now, suddenly, alarms rang in the formation around him.

"Is there an ancient desolate fish attacking the territory again?" Xia Zheng Qing initially thought that the sea beasts were causing chaos, he flew out of the formation.

But next, his entire body shook as he realized: "Enemies are attacking!"

Three rank seven Gu Immortals charged towards him together.

Xia Zheng Qing quickly activated the defensive formation.

At this time, there was a loud explosion as the formation shattered, a hairy man Gu Immortal carrying a huge hammer was covered in golden light as he charged into the formation, causing destruction!

Xia Zheng Qing spat out a mouthful of blood, looking fearful.

He immediately realized that the three immortals earlier were a distraction, this person was their main force.

"A rank eight hairy man Gu Immortal?" Xia Zheng Qing knew that he was not their match, he quickly transmitted to the clan as he activated the inner immortal formation, teleporting himself away.

At the next moment, he was transported to somewhere a thousand li away from the formation.

"Hahaha, he was transported here after all. Great Wisdom, very impressive." Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch praised.

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother shook her head: "If not for Lord Alliance Leader’s precise information, how could I have made such accurate deductions?"

Xia Zheng Qing took a look and felt despair!

There were two variant human Gu Immortals here, they both had rank eight cultivation level.

"Since when did rank eight Gu Immortals become so common?"

"Three variant human rank eights!"

Xia Zheng Qing could not believe it, he gritted his teeth: "Who are you people? Why are you going against our Eastern Sea’s Xia clan?"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch could not be bothered to talk with him, he waved his hand, his killer move was unleashed.

Xia Zheng Qing only had rank seven cultivation level, how could he resist a rank eight killer move, he was instantly frozen in ice.

Eastern Sea Xia clan’s headquarters, Hot Springs blessed land.

"Oh no! A strong group of enemies attacked, reflecting shadow sea is lost, even though Xia Zheng Qing used the immortal formation to escape, we have lost all contact with him!"

Xia Zheng Qing’s call for help had reached Xia clan.

Most of Xia clan’s Gu Immortals were gathered in the headquarters, they did not expect such bad news to appear out of nowhere.

"As the saying goes, while a person stays in their house, calamity descends from the sky!"

"Xia Zheng Qing sent information that there are both human and variant human Gu Immortals among the enemies, among them is a rank eight hairy man."

"Where did these people come from?"

"I’m afraid they are forces from black and white heaven. During the qi tide rampage, grotto-heavens are all exposed. To think there are still so many variant humans left, they even came to create trouble for us!"

"This is somewhat understandable. If they do not grasp onto this chance, when the qi tides subside, the five regions will investigate the grotto-heavens of black and white heaven. If we find any variant human force with rank eight Gu Immortals, we will exterminate them."

"Hehe, back then, even Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not find all of the hidden variant human grotto-heavens. But now that the world has changed, these variant humans are forced to expose themselves."

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals were not flustered, even though the information said that there was a rank eight variant human Gu Immortal, they still had an Immortal Gu Houses to resist the enemy.

But soon, more bad news came.

Light ripple sea and shooting fish sea were also taken down by these variant human Gu Immortals! The Xia clan Gu Immortals defending the two resource points were even weaker, they did not even manage to send any information over before losing contact.

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals were furious.

"We need to teach these variant human Gu Immortals a lesson!"

"Mere variant humans dare to bully us human super forces."

"Hmph, Whom the heavens would destroy, they first make mad. These variant humans have gone insane."

"First supreme elder, let use mobilize both Immortal Gu Houses and kill them all!"

"Yes, our clan’s three Gu Immortals have fallen into their hands. We need to save our clansmen and take revenge for this humiliation!!"

The Gu Immortals were filled with fighting spirit, they requested to fight.

Xia clan’s first supreme elder was Xia Rui Zhi, hearing the Gu Immortals’ words, his face was dark.

He shook his head: "It is not wise to attack now! We lost three resource points at once, these are all important places, we have powerful immortal formations protecting them. It is not normal that we lost them so quickly."

"Our clan does not have rank eight Gu Immortals defending us. If we mobilize both Immortal Gu Houses, our headquarters will be severely weakened. Right now, we are close to completing the Human Sea, we cannot be complacent!"

"In my opinion, we should defend ourselves fully until we complete Human Sea. By then, our foundation will rise greatly, we will be one of the top Eastern Sea forces. By then, dealing with the variant humans will have much greater effect."

Even though Xia Rui Zhi only had rank seven cultivation level, he had high reputation, after hearing his words, Xia clan’s Gu Immortals felt that it was logical, they no longer had such a strong desire to fight.

But at the next moment, a thunderous sound erupted as an Immortal Gu House broke through the defensive barrier, entering Xia clan’s public blessed land.

"Eastern Sea’s Xia clan, today, you will face extermination!" The door of the Immortal Gu House opened as Wu Shuai and the other grotto-heaven Gu Immortals appeared.

Xia clan saw this group of enemies, fear and shock became plastered on their faces.

"Dragon Palace!"

"Wu Shuai!!"

"So many variant human rank eights, oh heavens!"

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals turned pale, they were immensely fearful.

But Wu Shuai did not give them time to accept reality, he waved his hand: "Attack!"

Thus, at the next moment, the rank eights around him charged down and attacked.

Seeing this terrifying scene, Xia clan’s Gu Immortals felt their vision turning dark, some almost fainted on the spot.

Such a group completely overwhelmed and dominated Xia clan’s Gu Immortals.

Xia clan did not have a single rank eight while Wu Shuai had more than ten, how could they fight?

"My Xia clan’s blessed land is not Heavenly Court, why are there so many rank eight Gu Immortals attacking us?!" Xia Rui Zhi mumbled, facing such a strong foe, he felt despair.

"The enemies are too strong, we must retreat!" At this time, female immortal Xia Ying shouted at the Xia clan immortals.

Xia Rui Zhi shook as he gritted his teeth: "Go, we will leave, let’s get into the Immortal Gu Houses!"

Xia clan had two Immortal Gu Houses, they were both rank seven.

One was Whale Fishing Boat, the other was Golden Star Tower.

"You want to leave? Not so easy!"

"None of you will escape."

The variant human Gu Immortals attacked quickly, unleashing a myriad of attacks, the explosions resounded heaven and earth.

At the crucial moment, Xia Ying dodged an attack, managing to enter Golden Star Tower.

But she did not escape, she steered Golden Star Tower and went in front: "Everyone, leave, I will block them!"

Golden Star Tower charged relentlessly, using killer moves, golden stars shot out everywhere, the variant humans quickly dodged them.

The remaining Xia clan Gu Immortals found the chance and went into Whale Fishing Boat, escaping their headquarters.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Even though these variant human Gu Immortals have rank eight cultivation level, their battle strength is not high. Only Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch is passable."

"As for Eastern Sea’s Xia clan, even without a rank eight, they can rely on rank seven Immortal Gu Houses to put up a fight."

Wu Shuai stood near the door of Dragon Palace, he looked at the battlefield and observed the fight, he did not make a move.

Earlier, when attacking the three resource points, due to the difference in cultivation level, he could not tell. But in the current deadlock, he sensed many details.

Wu Shuai analyzed, he quickly realized the reason.

The variant humans were able to survive until today and develop well because of the help of heaven’s will.

Heaven’s will was disrupted by Star Constellation’s will, it could not make fate Gu show the sign of variant human supremacy. But heaven’s will could still influence calamities and tribulations.

Tribulations were the biggest obstacles in the rise of a Gu Immortal’s cultivation level.

The more prosperous humanity was, the more help heaven’s will would provide to the variant human grotto-heaven forces.

The difficulty of tribulations that these variant humans faced was many times simpler than normal human Gu Immortals! In fact, even for the human Gu Immortals in black and white heaven, because they were at odds with the five regions human forces, they were also given some special treatment. This was thanks to heaven’s will.

There were clear historical records about this.

Back then, variant humans ruled the world as overlords. Heaven’s will thus affected fate Gu and showed the revelation of humanity reigning supreme. On one hand, heaven’s will aided Primordial Origin and helped him to become an Immortal Venerable, it also took care of the humans, helping humanity develop and grow. On the other hand, heaven’s will also influenced the variant humans, dividing them and causing them to undergo intense internal conflict, they greatly weakened themselves.

"And because the two heavens are too huge, with each heaven having the total area of all five regions, there are so many rank eight Gu Immortals in black and white heaven. Other than the group I brought here, a small group are still left in the two heavens."

Wu Shuai thought about this as he started to move.

Dragon Palace slowly activated.

Xia Ying, who was inside Golden Star Tower, became anxious. It was very tough to deal with these rank eights now, she seemed to have the upper hand but she could not last long. Even if the battle tilted in the enemy’s favor at the next second, it would not be surprising.

"Good, Lord Wu Shuai is making his move!"

"I’m looking forward to it."

"It is a pity that our grotto-heavens have no Immortal Gu Houses. Only after fighting can we see that they really are the foundation of a super force."

The rank eight Gu Immortals had excited expressions, they were anticipating his action.

But under everyone’s gaze, Dragon Palace flew away from the battlefield.

The rank eight Gu Immortals were stunned.

What was going on?

At the next moment, Wu Shuai’s icy voice could be heard: "If more than ten rank eights cannot deal with one rank seven immortal and a rank seven Immortal Gu House, what is the point of your existence?"

The rank eight Gu Immortals were tongue-tied, they could not respond.

Eventually, they could only watch as Dragon Palace flew away.

"Oh no, he is flying towards Human Sea!" Xia Ying saw this, her heart jumped.

Xia clan felt very suspicious: "How does Wu Shuai know that our Xia clan’s base contains Human Sea? No, Human Sea is very deeply hidden, maybe he just wants to find some resources."

Wu Shuai left the battlefield, he went to the top of a certain lake, he stopped Dragon Palace’s movement.

"Human Sea should be here." Wu Shuai’s eyes shined with bright light, he activated his method.

A mystical light shot out from his palm, piercing hundreds of feet of lake water, reaching the bottom.

Next, the mystical light spread out towards the entire lake surface.

The water evaporated, turning into mist and dispersing, one could hear countless human voices from the dense white fog.

The voices of people became louder, the white fog turned into human silhouettes as they flew around in the sky.

At once, Dragon Palace was surrounded by white fog, countless silhouettes moved around Dragon Palace like ghost phantoms, there were tens of thousands of them.

"Come." Wu Shuai willed, the fog quickly gathered and condensed into white lake water that flowed into Dragon Palace.

The commotion created was huge, the two parties fighting in the battlefield could see it clearly.

"Wu Shuai actually went to collect loot while we are fighting with our full effort!"

"The fog is very special, it emitted dense human path aura. It must be a great treasure for Wu Shuai to retrieve it personally!"

"Don’t fear, as the alliance leader, how can Wu Shuai not lead by example? How can he gain our acceptance otherwise? He will definitely give a portion of the white fog to us later."

The rank eight Gu Immortals conversed with each other.

Xia Ying’s heart sank to rock bottom: "Wu Shuai actually knows about the existence of Human Sea! In fact, he has a method to take Human Sea away, how can this be possible?"

"The plan of constructing Human Sea was only known to us Xia clan Gu Immortals, we kept it as a secret all along. Even if Xia Zheng Qing and the rest were captured by Wu Shuai, only our first supreme elder knows how to retrieve Human Sea. How can he find an alternate method so quickly?"

"To think that the current Human Sea is still incomplete." Wu Shuai looked at the white fog in Dragon Palace, it was still showing human figures and shadows from time to time, it was creepy but quite amazing as well. Two different types of images had fused together in a natural way.

Wu Shuai smiled, he did not mind it.

To replenish Human Sea, he only needed to kill enough humans.

Because of the main body’s information, Wu Shuai knew that Human Sea was the work of Xia clan for many years, they were attempting to create a human path secluded domain in secret.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, during the five regions chaotic war, Human Sea was dazzling and impressive, it helped Eastern Sea’s Xia clan to rise up to the top.

But it was still far from an actual secluded domain after all.

In the future, Southern Border’s Chai clan gained some key comprehension from Human Sea, they started to create a similar artificial secluded domain — Human Mountain.

Wisdom path Gu Immortals of that time had deduced that if Human Sea and Human Mountain were fused together into one, they could form an actual secluded domain of heaven and earth!

"Human Mountain and Sea is too far away, but just Human Sea alone is sufficiently helpful to my main body." Wu Shuai was quite happy.

The most important thing was Fang Yuan’s main body after all.

The current biggest obstacle of Fang Yuan’s main body was the restriction of heaven path. This was Red Lotus’ scheme, Fang Yuan was trying to find a way to break out of this predicament.

He found that human path was a countermeasure, even though the thousand wish tree was a human path ancient desolate plant, it could not match the numerous heaven path dao marks.

Thus, Fang Yuan placed his sight on the Human Sea of Eastern Sea’s Xia clan.

Because of Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, Fang Yuan did not need to go personally, his clone Wu Shuai was able to head there and retrieve Human Sea easily.

After Wu Shuai stored Human Sea away, the battle had also concluded at the other side.

Xia Ying was unable to escape in the end, but many of the rank eights were injured as well. The one who defeated Golden Star Tower was Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

"Lord Alliance Leader, you took the chance to take the human path treasure, that’s not fair, right?" As the immortals gathered at the door of Dragon Palace, an anxious rank eight Gu Immortal questioned.

Wu Shuai glanced at him as Dragon Palace used its killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

The rank eight Gu Immortal who spoke was unguarded, the smoke easily swept him away into Dragon Palace before he was even able to say another word.

The immortals were stunned and fearful.

"Who else has a problem with me?" Wu Shuai crossed his arms, looking at the immortals.

He only had rank seven cultivation level, he was surrounded by a group of rank eights.

But the rank eight Gu Immortals looked at each other, they were pale and chose to keep silent, they did not dare to say a thing.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1984 Wu Shuai“s Political Skills

Facing Wu Shuai’s aggressive stance, the Gu Immortals of the two heavens lowered their heads, they did not dare to look at him directly.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch saw this, he cheered internally, Wu Shuai’s actions would cause him to lose the support of everyone. However, he also felt envious, when would he gain such huge battle strength to make everyone lower their heads in front of him?

After a while of silence, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch stood up at an appropriate timing, saying respectfully: "Lord Alliance Leader, dear allies, the most important thing now is to go after the remaining Xia clan members. Most of Xia clan’s Gu Immortals have escaped using Whale Fishing Boat, if we do not chase them now, it will be too late."

"Yes, yes." The immortals nodded, they started discussing this topic.

Many people casted gazes of gratitude towards Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, his words had undeniably given them a way to escape the embarrassment.

"Haha." Wu Shuai laughed loudly: "Chase? Why must we chase them?"

Wu Shuai continued: "We were able to take down the headquarters of Eastern Sea’s Xia clan, it was because we acted quickly and caught them off guard. From now, it will be difficult if we want to expand our territory. The whole of Eastern Sea and even the righteous paths of the five regions will become very cautious now."

"But if we allow this group of Xia clan Gu Immortals to escape, they will invite members of Eastern Sea’s righteous path to try to recover their territory."

"This way, those Eastern Sea righteous path members will need to leave their territories and come here to seek death. Isn’t that great?"

The immortals were stunned, they nodded in unison, agreeing that Wu Shuai’s analysis was sound.

"Lord Alliance Leader is very knowledgeable, it is natural that we cannot compare to him." Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch ingratiated.

But Wu Shuai had a grim expression: "I don’t care about all of these Eastern Sea super forces! There is only one person I am wary about, Qi Sea Ancestor."

"This old man can fight evenly with Duke Long, he had once held the qi sea banquet, he also did not help Fang Yuan nor Heavenly Court during the fate war. His stance is very important now!"

"It is likely that the righteous path will convince him now to fight against us. Of course, it is not strange if he chooses to continue staying in seclusion and not face us."

"I let these Xia clan members go, I am also trying to probe Qi Sea Ancestor’s intentions."

The Gu Immortals of the two heavens heard Wu Shuai’s words, they nodded as their expressions turned dark.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch took a glance at Wu Shuai, he thought: "Wu Shuai is Wu Shuai after all, he cannot be underestimated. He has both wisdom and political skills, it is just that he does not feel the need to use tricks against us."

But he quickly thought: "Qi Sea Ancestor’s attitude is very ambiguous. He had once worked with Fang Yuan and went against Duke Long, but later they reconciled. On the other hand, he also held the qi sea banquet, he welcomed Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal Jun Shen Guang, while also letting a demonic Gu Immortal sell blood path Immortal Gu in public."

"Alright." Wu Shuai waved his hand, breaking the immortals’ train of thought: "We chased Xia clan away, it is time to split the loot."

Thus, the atmosphere changed instantly, everyone got excited.

Eastern Sea was the richest of the five regions, as an Eastern Sea super force, Xia clan had ownership of many resource points, their inventory was filled.

These assets of Xia clan were split up by Fang Yuan and given to the Gu Immortals, each of them gained a considerable sum of wealth.

The Gu Immortals of the two heavens smiled, they felt extremely happy.

"The five regions are so rich!"

"This is merely the foundation of one Eastern Sea super force, it is already so much."

"Xia clan is useless! If my grotto-heaven had such resources, we would be far stronger than now."

And what surprised the Gu Immortals of the two heavens was that Wu Shuai took a much smaller portion of the gains that they had expected.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had a change of thought, he quickly said to the surrounding Gu Immortals: "Everyone, listen to me. We gained so much loot because of Lord Alliance Leader. He was the one who guided us towards victory. Without his information and plan, how could we take down Xia clan so easily? But currently, Lord Alliance Leader is taking the smallest portion of loot, this is not fair to him."

The Gu Immortals were stunned, they looked at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had a look of sincerity and admiration.

Wu Shuai looked at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch deeply in the eye: "I am a lone person, I do not need much in cultivation resources, nor do these resources suit me. If I need anything in the future, I will definitely take them. Since I have distributed this loot already, I will not take them back, but Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, your words reminded me of something."

"Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch." Wu Shuai spoke.

"This subordinate is here." Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch cupped his fists, showing a respectful attitude.

Wu Shuai smiled: "You are quite good."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch quickly bowed: "To receive such compliments from Lord Alliance Leader, it is my greatest blessing!"

Wu Shuai nodded: "Of course, my leadership is the greatest blessing that all of you have. As for you, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, as the vice alliance leader, you should not get the same amount of loot as the rest of the allies. I will make the decision, shooting fish sea will belong to you now."

"Lord Alliance Leader?" Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch quickly raised his head, feeling shocked.

Wu Shuai laughed: "I said you’ll get it, just take ownership of it. Don’t worry! I am here to back you up. If anyone dares to make problems for you, if you dislike anyone, just tell me, I will take care of them!"

Wu Shuai said this as he looked around, his dragon eyes emitting an aggressive light. The Gu Immortals all turned away, not daring to meet his gaze.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch obtained a giant resource point but he felt no joy internally.

He looked at Wu Shuai, seeing that seemingly smiling face, he could not help but shudder in a chill.

"As expected of the dragonman who once ruled his race, I underestimated him! This old monster must have realized my intentions." Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch noticed this, his back was covered in cold sweat.

He wanted to cause Wu Shuai to lose even more support from the rest of the people. But Wu Shuai had made use of his action and acted this way, it made all the other Gu Immortals feel that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was not happy with his gains, he wanted to use his status and the alliance leader’s dominance to gain more benefits.

After all, if the alliance leader gets more benefits, wouldn’t it be logical if the vice alliance leader also got more loot?

"Hmm? Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, you are not thanking me?" Wu Shuai stared at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, showing a smile filled with deep meaning.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch shuddered in his heart as he gritted his teeth and said with a hoarse voice: "This subordinate thanks Lord Alliance Leader."

Seeing that he had submitted, Wu Shuai did not feel any happiness, he was actually quite disappointed.

The Gu Immortals of the two heavens had been in seclusion for too long, due to their identities, they did not dare to move around or compete against each other.

Without competition, they could not be trained well. Even if heaven’s will helped them, Gu Immortal elites could not be nurtured.

Wu Shuai looked at the Gu Immortals of the two heavens, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was the only one with passable battle strength and attitude. The rest of the rank eights were simply a disgrace to other rank eight Gu Immortals!

It was no wonder that in Fang Yuan’s previous life, these people did not manage to create any big commotions.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

While Wu Shuai and the rest were splitting up the fortune of Xia clan, the atmosphere inside Whale Fishing Boat was grim and sad.

"First supreme elder, what do we do now?"

"The enemies are too powerful, there are more than ten rank eights, there was no way we could defend our headquarters!"

"Especially their leader Wu Shuai! If we retaliate, there is little hope of success."

"Sigh, it is a pity that Xia Ying and the rest sacrificed themselves."

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals were furious and helpless, they felt that the future was bleak.

Xia clan’s first supreme elder Xia Rui Zhi snorted coldly: "I don’t care who the enemy is, be it Wu Shuai or the rank eight Gu Immortals of the two heavens, they should not have taken our Xia clan’s territory. They will not stay arrogant for long! We are going to get help from Eastern Sea’s righteous path."

"Hmph, so be it if they are human Gu Immortals. But they are mostly variant human Gu Immortals with Wu Shuai leading them, we have already kept a copy of the battle scene, it is the best evidence against them. Eastern Sea’s righteous path and even the five regions’ righteous path will not allow this group of variant humans to grow stronger and larger!"

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals heard this, they recovered a bit of their morale.

Seeking reinforcements was the only way out, but the important thing to consider was which clan to approach.

Xia clan was situated at the eastern most area of Eastern Sea, towards their west was the Merman Imperial Court, towards the southeast was Tang clan, and towards the northeast was Xie clan. These three were not good targets to request for help.

The three of them were directly connected to Xia clan in territory, Xia clan’s relationship with the Merman Imperial Court was best but they were variant humans. Even though there were no mermen in the battle earlier, Xia clan did not dare to take the risk.

As for Tang clan and Xie clan, these two clans had conflict with Xia clan during normal times, if they went to ask these two clans for help, Xia clan’s Gu Immortals would not want to face their mockery.

After a round of discussion, Xia clan’s Gu Immortals moved in Whale Fishing Boat, they carefully went past the Merman Imperial Court, approaching Shen clan, which was further west, for help.

But because of this, their journey became much longer.

During Xia clan’s journey to seek help, information that they were invaded by Gu Immortals of the two heavens spread like wildfire in treasure yellow heaven, it shook the world.

"There are so many rank eight Gu Immortals among the variant humans! Is this information reliable?"

"It is nothing strange. Be it black heaven or white heaven, each of them is as large as the five regions together."

"These damned variant humans are hidden too deeply!"

"They are too daring, they dared to wage war on our human forces, they are courting death!"

"The thing that makes me angrier is that among these people, there are human Gu Immortals. What are they thinking? They are betraying their own race!"

At once, all of the Gu Immortals in the world discussed this matter.

Shen clan was no exception.

The letter requesting help from Xia clan had already reached Shen clan.

This was an important matter, Shen clan’s first supreme elder, Shen Cong Sheng, called all the Gu Immortals for a meeting.

"The reason why Xia clan is asking our Shen clan for help is obvious, there is no need to explain it. But should our Shen clan help them? Everyone, tell me your view." Shen Cong Sheng said.

"The enemy is too strong, why must our Shan clan face such a strong foe alone? Remember that Wu Shuai has Dragon Palace and Di Zang Sheng, he even possesses dream path methods, their battle strength is too overwhelming."

"That’s right, and even more worrying is that Wu Shuai has a relationship with Fang Yuan. Nobody knows how good their relationship is, but we know that they are close. If we target Wu Shuai, we might cause the great demon Fang Yuan to come after us!"

Shen Cong Sheng nodded: "You are correct."

He did not show any change of expression.

During the blue dragon whale trip, he had cooperated with Fang Yuan. But because they worked in secrecy, even Shen clan’s Gu Immortals did not know about it, Shen Cong Sheng could preserve his clan’s reputation as a result.

"I feel that we cannot refuse to help Xia clan! Xia clan is also a member of the righteous path, they came all this way to ask us for help, if we do not agree, what would Xia clan think of us? What would Eastern Sea think of us? What would the whole five regions think of us?"

"I agree, this is not just a conflict between us humans, this is the battle between humans and variant humans! If Shen clan does not show a clear stance, the people of the world will accuse us of our inaction."

Shen Cong Sheng nodded: "This is correct too. But the enemy is too strong, they have more than ten rank eights and even Wu Shuai leading them. Even if we have Ancestor Shen Shang here, we cannot resist such a group of enemies."

After the fate war, Shen Shang went missing after going insane. Even though Shen clan wanted to find their Ancestor Shen Shang, they did not succeed.

The entire world was watching now, it was likely that news in treasure yellow heaven had spread from Xia clan themselves.

Xia clan was using this method to force Eastern Sea’s righteous path forces to help them.

With the entire world watching, Shen clan had to help Xia clan. But Wu Shuai’s group was simply too powerful, they were too terrifying.

Even though Shen clan was a super force, against the allied forces of two heavens, it still felt very wary and unsure.

"Elders, I have a plan to resolve this problem." Ren Xiu Ping spoke.

After returning from the blue dragon whale trip, Ren Xiu Ping became Shen clan’s external supreme elder. Ren Xiu Ping was a person who followed the rules and kept a low profile, but now that they were in this situation, if Shen clan falls and chaos descends, he would also be implicated.

Ren Xiu Ping continued: "Wu Shuai has very high strength, but in this current Eastern Sea, there is another ancestor capable of resisting the Evil Dragon."

"You mean to say that person in qi sea?" Someone’s eyes brightened up.

"Indeed, Qi Sea Ancestor." Ren Xiu Ping nodded.

"Good plan, let’s do that." Shen Cong Sheng laughed and clapped, deciding on the spot.

For the next few days, Xia clan arrived in Shen clan, they wanted to borrow strength to reclaim their territory. Shen Cong Sheng came out to speak to them, they attended to Xia clan’s members warmly.

But when asked to fight against Wu Shuai, Shen Cong Sheng said that he had too little strength, he suggested that they should gather more righteous path forces.

Currently, qi tides were surging everywhere, almost all the five regions’ Gu Immortals were recuperating and resting, they did not dare to move abruptly.

Thus, Eastern Sea’s righteous path could not use much of its strength now.

But Shen Cong Sheng suggested that Xia clan should inform Qi Sea Ancestor of this situation, they should request for the ancestor to uphold justice for them.

Shen Cong Sheng copied Xia clan, before they asked Qi Sea Ancestor for help, they already published the news in treasure yellow heaven.

Thus, the entire world’s attention went to qi sea.

Almost all the Gu Immortals were waiting to see Qi Sea Ancestor’s response.

All the human Gu Immortals were hoping that Qi Sea Ancestor would step up as the senior of the rank eights, the person who resisted Duke Long on equal footing, he had the responsibility to lead them.

But many people were pessimistic about it. Because Qi Sea Ancestor was a secluded cultivator, he had an ambiguous relationship with the righteous path and demonic path, he had even worked with Fang Yuan before. From this aspect, there was quite a chance that Qi Sea Ancestor would not entertain these worldly affairs.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s response was rapid.

He announced in treasure yellow heaven: "There are those of other races having such motives, first there was Primordial Origin, now there is Qi Sea, we will not let these variant humans with ulterior motives bear roots here on our soil!"

Once he said that, the world world resounded with praises.

Qi Sea Ancestor, you are truly incredible!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1986 Heavenly Court“s Tactic

Heavenly Court.

The damage caused during the fate war was starting to recover. Having collated their losses, they really had suffered a huge setback.

Discussion hall.

Qin Ding Ling sat at the main seat as she looked around, observing the Gu Immortals and their wills.

Most of the Heavenly Court members had gone back to hibernating in the immortal graveyard. More than half of the immortal graveyard was destroyed by Fang Yuan, but Heavenly Court still had sufficient members left.

These members had little lifespan remaining, rather than dying of old age, they could display greater value by hibernating in the immortal graveyard.

What worried Qin Ding Ling was that even though these Gu Immortals went back into slumber, she did not receive any sort of message from Star Constellation’s will.

It was as if the fate war caused Star Constellation’s will to suffer a huge loss.

This made already become Qin Ding Ling’s greatest worry. Star Constellation’s will could interfere with heaven’s will but heaven’s will was also able to assimilate Star Constellation’s will. If she lacked support and got assimilated by heaven’s will, it would be a huge nightmare to humanity and Heavenly Court.

But Qin Ding Ling came here and gathered the immortals for a meeting, it was not because of Star Constellation’s will.

"Qi tides are rampaging, the two heavens are making a move. Wu Shuai is leading an allied army of the two heavens and has already taken down Eastern Sea’s Xia clan. Now, Xia clan has requested for Qi Sea Ancestor’s help, the two sides are opposing each other. What do you think we should do at this key moment?"

Qin Ding Ling asked.

She was a luck path Gu Immortal, she did not cultivate wisdom path like Fairy Zi Wei. Thus, when faced with this matter, Qin Ding Ling could not make a resolute decision, she needed to discuss it with the other Gu Immortals.

"Undeniably, the allied army of the two heavens is made up of variant humans, enemies of our Heavenly Court, we need to exterminate them!"

"In this aspect, Qi Sea Ancestor is quite a responsible person."

"Right now, the conflict between Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor is akin to the conflict between humans and variant humans. But the truth is, whoever wins between them is not the key, the most important element is someone else — Fang Yuan!"

"Indeed, be it Wu Shuai or Qi Sea Ancestor, they are both related to Fang Yuan. Wu Shuai claims that he has only cooperated with Fang Yuan, he has revived after a million years, aspiring to grow the dragonman race once again. As for Qi Sea Ancestor, he had once made an agreement with Fang Yuan, he went against Heavenly Court but changed his mind later when Lord Duke Long gave him half of the qi path true inheritance. During the fate war, Qi Sea Ancestor did not show up at all, it showed that Lord Duke Long had made a wise decision."

"I have a different opinion! Qi Sea Ancestor can likely be Fang Yuan’s disguise. In the past, we did not think of this because Fang Yuan only had rank seven cultivation level, but now that we know about the secret of the sovereign immortal body, it is likely that Fang Yuan had rank eight cultivation level then and disguised himself as Qi Sea Ancestor. Don’t forget that during the fate war, Fang Yuan destroyed the qi wall with a qi path method."

"His qi path method is called unlimited qi sea, it is the signature method of Qi Xiang of the Heaven Surveying Five Xiangs in the past. But the qi path methods that Qi Sea Ancestor used against Duke Long were very different from unlimited qi sea. It is quite unlikely that the two of them are the same person."

"But we cannot rule out this possibility."

"Speaking of which, Wu Shuai is much more suspicious than Qi Sea Ancestor. He might not be a disguised Fang Yuan, he could simply be Fang Yuan’s clone. As the leader of Shadow Sect, Fang Yuan definitely has a portion of Spectral Soul’s foundation. And a method Spectral Soul excels in is creating split souls. That was how he created Shadow Sect singlehandedly."

The immortals discussed among themselves.

Qin Ding Ling was hesitant, she felt a huge headache.

The immortals had their own viewpoints, nobody could convince the other. In the end, Qin Ding Ling had to make the decision after all.

Qin Ding Ling thought about it for a while before sighing: "Everyone, listen to me. Fang Yuan has familiar face, he can disguise as different people. Even though we need to be wary of this, we cannot ignore other possibilities just because of our suspicions. Wu Shuai might be Fang Yuan’s clone, Qi Sea Ancestor might be Fang Yuan’s disguise, these are possible truths."

"But at the same time, there is also the possibility that they are not that closely related to Fang Yuan. We cannot create enemies everywhere just because of this, forget about Wu Shuai, but for Qi Sea Ancestor, we cannot give up on winning over Qi Sea Ancestor just because of this possibility, can’t we try to make him an ally of Heavenly Court?"

Fang Zheng heard this as he hesitated and asked: "Senior Qin wants to recruit Qi Sea Ancestor?"

Qin Ding Ling nodded: "Lord Duke Long has passed away while Feng Jiu Ge betrayed us, our Heavenly Court desperately needs a pseudo venerable capable of holding the situation. In the past, Senior Duke Long used Primordial Origin’s true inheritance to gain Qi Sea Ancestor’s friendship. Even though he did not agree to join us, he had not shown up during the fate war either."

The immortals fell into silence.

Qin Ding Ling’s current plan was Duke Long’s former plan.

In the past, in order to repair fate Gu, Duke Long wanted Qi Sea Ancestor to stay out of the conflict. But now?

Heavenly Court needed someone with pseudo venerable battle strength to support them!

Currently, even though there was peace, the truth was that the rampaging qi tides and heaven path dao marks were forcing most Gu Immortals to stay inactive and recuperate from the damages caused, they could not take action.

But once the qi tides subside and Fang Yuan manages to refine the heaven path dao marks?

By then, the strongest person in Heavenly Court would be Qin Ding Ling, could she resist the Gu Immortals of the other four regions with ill intentions? Could she block Di Zang Sheng? Could she block Fang Yuan?

Heavenly Court knew about this threat, in history, they had also recruited Gu Immortals of the other four regions.

The obvious example was Wan Zi Hong, this female immortal was once a demoness of Western Desert, Heavenly Court had recruited her to join them. As long as one was a human, Heavenly Court could be magnanimous towards them.

"I am not against winning Qi Sea Ancestor over. But before that, we need to clarify his true relationship with Fang Yuan!"

"That’s what you say, but right now, Qi Sea Ancestor might not even feel any threat from our Heavenly Court."

"Haha, I think that for him, the attraction of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance surpasses everything."

Fang Zheng volunteered: "Currently, the conflict between Qi Sea Ancestor and Wu Shuai is our greatest opportunity. We can investigate and find out the truth from this. Of course, no matter the outcome, we cannot spare the Gu Immortals of the two heavens. Since we already have Night Heavenly Wolf Lord as our insider, I am willing to lead a group to Eastern Sea and exterminate these variant human Gu Immortals!"

Fang Zheng was the current owner of Demon Judgment Board, even though he had rank seven cultivation level, with this board, he could fight against most rank eight Gu Immortals.

Due to the influence of qi tides, the five regions’ Gu Immortals could not move around. But Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were different.

Most of them had phantom apertures, they were not restricted by this.

Right as Fang Zheng spoke, another Gu Immortal volunteered to join the group and head to Eastern Sea, in order to kill these variant human Gu Immortals.

Even though Heavenly Court lost, their motives and actions still followed the basis of defending humanity.

Qin Ding Ling smiled: "I got it! Why must we go to Eastern Sea? Wu Shuai is there right now, we can use him to probe Qi Sea Ancestor’s background. Let’s go to the two heavens and exterminate those grotto-heaven forces, we will uproot the allied army of the two heavens from their bases!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Heavenly Court is Heavenly Court after all..." Night Heavenly Wolf Lord looked at the information path Gu worm in his hand as he sighed to himself.

As he had expected, Heavenly Court really went ahead to deal with the two heavens alliance.

Earlier, he had predicted that such a situation would occur.

Those who live in a society have to follow its rules, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord had to join the two heavens alliance. Otherwise, his grotto-heaven would be attacked until it was destroyed.

But joining this force only helped to delay their own destruction.

When the five regions counterattack, the two heavens alliance would break apart, there would be huge casualties. None of these allies would be spared, Night Wolf grotto-heaven would also face a calamity by then.

From the start, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord had made up his mind to defect to the five regions. This was for his own sake, and also the future of the entire Night Wolf grotto-heaven.

Thus, he took a risk and went to approach Heavenly Court.

As the situation progressed, Qi Sea Ancestor went against Wu Shuai and Heavenly Court sent a secret group to attack the headquarters of the two heavens’ variant humans!

Since Night Heavenly Wolf Lord decided to defect, Heavenly Court’s Qin Ding Ling sent him a secret letter, asking him to be their spy and cooperate with Heavenly Court in this battle.

"Heavenly Court did not disappoint me after all!"

"Even though they lost in the fate war, despite everything, they still uphold the righteousness of humanity. They think for the whole of the human race without caring about sacrifices or benefits."

Such grandness resonated with Night Heavenly Wolf Lord.

Because he was a human Gu Immortal!

Compared to Heavenly Court’s magnanimity, be they Qi Sea Ancestor or Wu Yong, they were simply too petty. Even Northern Plains’ Longevity Heaven was the same.

What was the mindset that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left behind?

Hereditary monarchy!

Even if Night Heavenly Wolf Lord and Longevity Heaven had no grudges, he would not go to and attempt to join them.

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord did not hesitate, he immediately replied that he was willing to cooperate with Heavenly Court.

According to their agreement, the moment Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor collide, Heavenly Court would use the chance to attack! If these two do not fight, then a month later, Heavenly Court would still take action.

"It will depend on Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor now." Night Heavenly Wolf Lord waited in anticipation.

Other than Night Heavenly Wolf Lord, countless forces and Gu Immortals were also paying attention to the situation in Eastern Sea.

Southern Border’s Wu Yong was one of them.

"If Qi Sea Ancestor loses, the variant human forces will definitely expand their territory, they will develop rapidly like a growing snowball, they will become a huge threat to the five regions!"

"If Wu Shuai loses, the variant human forces will gather together in a defensive manner, this will be good news to the humans of the five regions. But that is not what I want to see."

Wu Yong was an ambitious person.

He wanted the world to be chaotic, the more conflicts there were, the more opportunities he had to try to reap benefits from the situation, to strengthen himself until he reached the top of the world!

Thus, he felt deep hatred towards the qi tides.

Because of the qi tides, the five regions’ Gu Immortals had to forcefully recuperate, he lost the chance to completely take down Heavenly Court.

It was a real pity.

"Lord, Empress Wu Ji and the others have revived. What do we do now?" At this time, Wu Ba Chong came to report the news.

He was the second supreme elder of Wu clan, he was an old and experienced man.

After fate Gu was destroyed, the most evident change was that revival methods became very easy to use. Earlier, Gu Immortal seeds like Empress Wu Ji had died on Yi Tian Mountain. But now, Wu clan’s Gu Immortals revived them all.

Wu Yong nodded: "These people are the hope of our future, they have experienced ample setbacks and training as Gu Masters. When they become Gu Immortals, they will definitely be elites among their peers. Impart them the method of immortal ascension and make ample preparations, ensure there are enough resources. I want Wu clan to gain more than ten Gu Immortals in the next few years!"

"Yes lord." Wu Ba Chong did not question this decision.

In the future, during the five regions chaotic war, there would be a long lasting struggle, it would not be settled quickly. By then, all of the different forces would need to compete using their foundation and long term planning.

"There is another matter regarding qi path." Wu Ba Chong said as he handed Wu Yong an information path mortal Gu.

Wu Yong looked into it and quickly browsed through the content.

This information path mortal Gu contained the information of all sorts of qi path immortal materials, they had all appeared as a result of the qi tides.

"It seems that qi path is about to flourish again. Does this qi harvest fruit really have such great effects?" Wu Yong sighed as he asked at the end.

Wu Ba Chong nodded: "Currently, many Gu Immortals have used it already, it is precisely so. This fruit is the essence of qi path and the fusion of the five regions’ qi, it is not normal. By placing it into one’s immortal aperture, it can turn into turbulent qi flows that can hasten the transformation of the heaven and earth qi. Whoever can get more qi harvest fruits will be able to get through this period of inactivity more quickly."

"Then collect more of this immortal material. Also, sort out and make a list of the clan’s inventory, collate a qi path inheritance. We are going to use it and try to cultivate qi path Gu Immortals." Wu Yong instructed.

"Yes." Wu Ba Chong answered.

Wu clan was specialized in wind path, they did not have much foundation in qi path. But such a huge force would naturally have accumulation in qi path to some extent, if they could put together many incomplete inheritances into a proper inheritance, they might be able to nurture one or two qi path Gu Immortals.

Of course, even if these Gu Masters became qi path Gu Immortals, they would not be promising in terms of future achievements.

But since Wu clan had to make up for their deficiency in this aspect, these Gu Masters could only sacrifice their future potential and become qi path Gu Immortals.

Southern Border, Luo clan.

Three Gu Immortals went deeply into Qi Jue grotto heaven.

"I broke through!" Luo Ran was excited.

His skin tone was white and he had a cold expression, he was a Luo clan general famous in Southern Border, having peak rank seven battle strength.

When the entire world was resting and recuperating, Luo Ran secretly brought two Gu Immortals from Luo clan and explored Qi Jue grotto heaven, he did not care about the changes in his own immortal aperture.

His hard work and efforts were not in vain, they finally broke through the difficulties and had a smooth journey ahead.

As they explored deeper, they arrived at the center of Qi Jue grotto heaven.

"To think that the qi tides would cause a change in Qi Jue grotto heaven, allowing us to progress more smoothly in here." Luo Mu Zi felt deep emotions about this.

"Let’s hurry up, the qi tides are rampaging in the world now, Qi Jue grotto heaven will only stay concealed for a short period of time. We need to find Qi Jue’s true inheritance before anyone else finds us. With this true inheritance, our Luo clan will be able to adapt to this great era and obtain the initiative!" Luo Hao Ze’s eyes shined with bright light.

Several days later.

Eastern Sea.

Qi Sea Ancestor suddenly appeared, creating countless qi waves that moved towards the headquarters of Eastern Sea’s Xia clan openly.

"Come!" Wu Shuai sensed it from far away, he smiled as Dragon Palace moved, he controlled Di Zang Sheng and fought bravely against the enemy.

A huge battle that concerned the whole world erupted all of a sudden.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Rumble!

With a thunderous sound, intense tremors filled heaven and earth. Endless qi waves surged out, Dragon Palace shined with radiant lights as it retreated continuously.

Qi Sea Ancestor did not pursue it, many layers of qi waves stacked around his body, like an impenetrable fortress.

Both sides fought for an entire day and night, they exchanged blows but neither party could do anything to the other.

All around the battlefield, countless eyes were watching. Eastern Sea’s righteous path, demonic path, and even lone immortals came here to watch the fight, naturally, there were also Gu Immortals of the two heavens.

"Senior Qi Sea Ancestor is truly powerful, his methods are grand and imposing, Wu Shuai’s attacks all ended up useless." Hua clan first supreme elder Hua Cai Yun sighed to herself.

Beside her, Qing Yue An said: "But Wu Shuai is not to be underestimated, he merely has rank seven cultivation level but is able to evenly match Qi Sea Ancestor."

Hua Cai Yun sighed: "Wu Shuai was reborn, he is also an old monster. The Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace that he controls is really powerful, if not for it, he would not be Qi Sea Ancestor’s match."

While the two conversed, a loud dragon roar resounded.

A huge demonic dragon that seemed like a mountain range appeared on the battlefield, it could be seen from a gigantic distance away.

"Oh heavens, such a terrifying giant dragon, this must be the number one immemorial desolate beast in the world?"

"This is Di Zang Sheng! I am shocked just by simply watching it fight, I cannot muster any battle intent against it. I can’t imagine how the Gu Immortals fighting against it felt."

"Wu Shuai finally let out the Evil Dragon, this proves that Qi Sea Ancestor has forced him to his limit. The following fight is the crucial part."

All of the Gu Immortals watching this fight were shocked. Many of them had not participated in the fate war, they only watched it through the killer move everybody’s vision. They saw the battle but did not experience it personally.

Their personal experience now was naturally creating a different feeling.

The Evil Dragon roared as it charged towards Qi Sea Ancestor.

Qi Sea Ancestor snorted coldly, his voice reverberating over the surroundings. He clapped both hands as an immortal killer move was unleashed, qi currents surged like a tsunami.

Di Zang Sheng charged forward but as it crashed into the qi currents, its movement halted.

Di Zang Sheng twisted its body and wanted to progress but the qi currents were endless, the great power could not be defied, it was forcefully suppressed on the ground!

Seeing this, the observing Gu Immortals gasped.

Qing Yue An, Hua Cai Yun, and Shen Cong Sheng cheered as expressions of joy appeared on their faces.

As for Zhou Xiong Xin and Jun Shen Guang who were sent here by Heavenly Court, they became stunned, quickly looking at each other.

"Thinking about the fate war, the two transformation path great experts of our Heavenly Court could not stop the rampaging Evil Dragon, they were suppressed by it. To think that Qi Sea Ancestor is able to stop it!" Jun Shen Guang was stunned.

Zhou Xiong Xin squinted, he assessed Qi Sea Ancestor from afar. His information path methods had been used already, seeking to collect information from the entire battlefield as the fight progressed.

Zhou Xiong Xin analyzed: "Qi Sea Ancestor is an expert who fought evenly with Lord Duke Long, it is not strange that he can resist Evil Dragon Di Zang Sheng. But his new killer move seems to have some elements of the primordial qi wall in it."

"Lord Duke Long once gave half of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance to Qi Sea Ancestor. To think that he has already innovated upon it after the fate war had just ended to create a brand new qi wall killer move."

Jun Shen Guang blinked: "Does this mean that during the fate war, Qi Sea Ancestor was in closed cultivation to comprehend this new killer move?"

Zhou Xiong Xin could not deny it: "We cannot be sure yet. But at least for now, Qi Sea Ancestor’s methods are very different from the qi path methods that Fang Yuan possesses."

Saying this, Zhou Xiong Xin sighed: "Qi Sea Ancestor’s origin is too mysterious, he is too deeply concealed. We have not even found any past details about him. Beforehand, we could use the River of Time to trace his origin and find out his past identity. But after fate Gu’s destruction, the River of Time has become extremely dangerous, it is filled with vicious waves, even if a time path great expert enters, they will be in great danger, we cannot enter it anymore."

Other than time path, there was still wisdom path.

But regrettably, Fang Yuan destroyed the majority of the immortal graveyard while Fairy Zi Wei defected to Spectral Soul, Heavenly Court faced an unprecedented lack of wisdom path experts.

Boom—!

An overwhelming amount of qi waves crashed down with heaven shaking might.

The Evil Dragon roared, it tried to move its mountain-like body, but Qi Sea Ancestor continued to suppress it from above.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s moves gave an unrivaled atmosphere, his every action contained the power to overturn mountains and seas, the great Evil Dragon was not his match.

The human Gu Immortals cheered to themselves.

At this moment, Qi Sea Ancestor’s reputation rose greatly in the five regions.

When the five regions’ Gu Immortals could not fight, when humanity was at its weakest, Qi Sea Ancestor had emerged to resist and defeat the variant humans, this was really satisfying to all the human Gu Immortals.

"This is the action of a true man!" Even though Xi clan’s first supreme elder did not come personally, he had sent a Xi clan Gu Immortal to witness this battle themselves.

Wu Yong was in Southern Border, upon seeing this, his heart sank as he pondered: "When we attack Eastern Sea in the future, this Qi Sea Ancestor will be a huge obstacle."

Qin Ding Ling was guarding Heavenly Court with a complex emotion. In the past, Heavenly Court would be the one standing up during such situations, fighting on the front lines, but this time, Qi Sea Ancestor took Heavenly Court’s place and shouldered the expectations of the human race.

Even though Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were still suspicious about Qi Sea Ancestor’s identity and his connection to Fang Yuan, after this battle, their impression towards him had undoubtedly improved greatly.

While the human Gu Immortals were feeling happy, the two heavens alliance felt solemn, all the Gu Immortals were fearful.

"How can this be! Even after using Di Zang Sheng, we cannot turn the situation around?"

"The humans are really strong! This is the foundation of the five regions, we chose to invade them so abruptly, we were simply too hasty."

"Hmph, even if we do not take action, these humans will still go after us. For the last few million years, they have been treating us variant humans like so."

"Indeed, we can only have any hope of surviving by taking the initiative."

"We cannot interfere in a battle of such a level, sigh, we can only hope that Lord Wu Shuai can claim victory!"

The variant human Gu Immortals continued to converse, their expressions were grim as their gazes turned uncertain.

There were many rank eight Gu Immortals among them, they had high cultivation and generally were characters of ancestor level in their respective grotto-heavens. But after witnessing this terrifying battle, nobody dared to participate.

"Qi Sea Ancestor, you have been arrogant for too long!" Right at this moment, Dragon Palace rose up, Wu Shuai’s voice came from within.

The immortals watched as Dragon Palace flew towards Qi Sea Ancestor like an orange-gold meteor.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s qi currents surged and blocked it but the effect was mild.

Dragon Palace rode the waves and advanced further, charging with great momentum. A dream path killer move was used, a trace of smoke shot towards Qi Sea Ancestor.

"Be careful!" Seeing this, many human Gu Immortals shouted while feeling very anxious, despite knowing their voices could not reach the battlefield.

Right now, dream path was invincible in the world. Qi Sea Ancestor had to dodge the attack as he retreated.

This time, Wu Shuai gained the upper hand.

The variant humans quickly became overjoyed while the human Gu Immortals let out sighs of relief, Qi Sea Ancestor was not hit by the dream path killer move, that was an ideal outcome!

The battle between Qi Sea Ancestor and Wu Shuai concerned all of the Gu Immortals in the world. Each clash shook people’s souls, it would directly affect the future of the five regions.

As the two sides continued to fight, the immortals heard loud noises from the west.

The loud sound came imposingly, with an unstoppable aura like a torrential flood.

The Gu Immortals heard this and quickly shifted their gazes, they saw that qi tides were approaching the battlefield from far in the horizons.

"During this crucial battle, the qi tides actually came to wreak havoc!"

"Quickly retreat, if we get hit by the qi tides, our immortal apertures will tremor and result in lots of losses."

"What about this battle?"

The Gu Immortals were stunned, this was an unexpected development.

Jun Shen Guang’s expression sank: "Oh no! Qi Sea Ancestor is an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, he is restricted by the qi tides, the situation will be severe. But Wu Shuai is a new dragonman Gu Immortal, after the refinement path modification, he is less affected."

This information came from Duke Long.

During the fate war, Duke Long secretly used dragonman extermination but could not end Wu Shuai’s life. Back then, he specially told them about this.

Humans alike dragons was the Gu refinement method created by Duke Long, it could turn humans into dragonmen. The first generation dragonmen were created by this method.

Heavenly Court had Duke Long’s information and also the method humans alike dragons, they could easily deduce a portion of Wu Shuai’s foundation. Thus, when they learned that Wu Shuai was leading the two heavens alliance to invade Eastern Sea, they were not surprised that he could fight.

Zhou Xiong Xin gritted his teeth: "Qi tides are a qi tide catastrophe, Qi Sea Ancestor is a qi path great expert, he definitely has an advantage in dealing with it compared to us! Now, let’s see how he deals with this change, it will be the turning point of this battle."

"Qi Sea Ancestor, even heaven is not helping you. Let’s see how long you can last in the qi tide!" Wu Shuai shouted excitedly, he moved Dragon Palace to assist the Evil Dragon as they attacked ferociously.

This sight made the human Gu Immortals grit their teeth as they retreated, many prayed in their hearts: "Senior Qi Sea Ancestor, you must persevere."

At the next moment, Qi Sea Ancestor laughed loudly: "Wu Shuai, you fell for it, I was waiting for you to fall for the bait."

As he said that, the qi waves turned around, like a blossoming flower returning to a bud, they encased Qi Sea Ancestor and Dragon Palace before condensing into a dot, vanishing.

In the battlefield, only Evil Dragon Di Zang Sheng was left growling and roaring.

"What battlefield killer move is this?"

"At the crucial moment, Senior Qi Sea Ancestor actually trapped Wu Shuai in a battlefield killer move. This is too amazing!"

"So Qi Sea Ancestor had been plotting all along."

"Wu Shuai is trapped in a qi path battlefield, isolated from the Evil Dragon, he is at a disadvantage now."

"That might not be true, Qi Sea Ancestor’s qi path battlefield is going to face the rushing qi tides, if the battlefield is destroyed, Qi Sea Ancestor will suffer backlash, he might end up in a disadvantage too."

"Now, it will depend on whether Qi Sea Ancestor is able to break into Dragon Palace first. If not, when his qi path battlefield is destroyed, Wu Shuai will gather with the Evil Dragon, Qi Sea Ancestor will be in huge danger."

The Gu Immortals on both sides were very worried.

They could not personally watch such a crucial battle. Not only that, they had to retreat away from the qi tides, otherwise, their losses in the immortal aperture would be huge.

Right as everyone was thinking about the qi path battlefield and how intense the battle would be, Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor were relaxing and drinking wine in Dragon Palace.

Other than wine, there was also food.

Fang Yuan’s clone and his main body were in harmony, the atmosphere was relaxed.

Wu Shuai clone gave the incomplete Human Sea to Fang Yuan’s main body.

After receiving it, Fang Yuan’s main body and Wu Shuai clone started to discuss their plans for the future.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"To think that the qi tide would come at such a crucial moment." Prince Feng Xian wore a golden cape, he sighed in pity.

Beside him was a female immortal of Heavenly Court, she was Bai Cang Shui, she said with deep meaning: "Isn’t that a good thing?"

Besides them, Gu Yue Fang Zheng was also here.

These three Gu Immortals were currently inside rank eight Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board, they were not in Central Continent, they had entered immemorial black heaven.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s expression changed slightly, he knew the deeper meaning that Bai Cang Shui was pointing out.

He could not help but think back to the instructions and arrangements that Qin Ding Ling gave him before leaving Heavenly Court.

"You and Gu Yue Fang Yuan were born together and counter each other, you are the arrangement of the Heavenly Dao. Even if Fang Yuan changes his body, this relationship will not change. Precisely so, you will lead the expedition this time, bring Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui to launch a sneak attack on the headquarters of the variant human grotto-heavens in the two heavens!"

Qin Ding Ling cultivated luck path, she placed great importance on Gu Yue Fang Zheng, knowing that the lucks of Gu Yue Fang Zheng and Fang Yuan were tightly connected, she could sense that they countered each other.

And facts proved this.

Qin Ding Ling’s awakening, the discovery of the dragonman blessed land, they were all variables that suppressed Fang Yuan.

Right now, Heavenly Court lost in the fate war, Duke Long died, Feng Jiu Ge betrayed them, the immortal graveyard was destroyed, while Star Constellation’s will had no response. The great Heavenly Court was at its weakest moment for the last million years.

Qin Ding Ling temporarily led Heavenly Court, she naturally had to make use of all the available strength to defend themselves and resist enemies.

Thus, the stronger Fang Yuan was, the more focus Qin Ding Ling placed on Fang Zheng.

In order to nurture Fang Zheng, Qin Ding Ling spared no expense on immortal materials, she even let him lead this expedition to train his leadership skill.

Fang Zheng was not a youngster anymore, he knew that this was an unprecedented opportunity that was rarely seen in thousands of years. Even though Heavenly Court lost, their foundation was still unfathomable, with such a huge organization supporting him, he had to grasp it.

Fang Zheng still had rank seven cultivation level now, he had not reached the condition to join Heavenly Court, thus, his rank seven blessed land was not handed over to them. The truth was, Qin Ding Ling needed him to grow stronger, thus, even when he becomes a rank eight Gu Immortal in the future, as long as he still had room for improvement, Qin Ding Ling would not make him give up his immortal aperture. After all, the Gu Immortal’s growth would almost completely halt after getting a phantom aperture.

"Senior Bai is right! Currently, with Qi Sea Ancestor and Wu Shuai stuck in battle, it is our best opportunity to launch an attack. Let’s go now."

Gu Yue Fang Zheng spoke as he acted swiftly.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board was immediately activated, it turned into a blood colored meteor that pierced through the grotto-heaven wall with a loud sound, entering Great Wisdom grotto-heaven directly!

The three immortals in Demon Judgment Board looked at Great Wisdom grotto-heaven, it had a beautiful scenery of lush mountains and flowing rivers. Inkmen lived here harmoniously, they had peaceful lives, there were many people here, it was a flourishing habitat.

A thick blood red light spread out rapidly from Demon Judgment Board, spreading throughout the world.

The essence of an Immortal Gu House was immortal killer moves, it was constructed using Immortal Gu and mortal Gu. According to the different Gu worms used, with different structures, Immortal Gu Houses had their own specialties.

Demon Judgment Board had great might, it showed a solid performance during the fate war. It was able to fight directly and managed to survive the war, this showed that Demon Judgment Board was one of the top rank eight Immortal Gu Houses in the world.

At this moment, Demon Judgment Board was unleashing an information path ability that had not been used in the fate war.

Wherever the blood red light went, all sorts of information gathered into Demon Judgment Board like a waterfall, before entering the minds of the three immortals.

Prince Feng Xian frowned, showing a look of hatred and disgust: "The inkmen here actually captured humans secretly and exploited them as slaves, they truly deserve death. These variant humans should all die! Let’s kill these ones here and soul search them first."

But Bai Cang Shui shook her head: "These are just mortals, even if we soul search them, they would not know many secrets of the higher-ups. We should give them a taste of their own medicine, let’s enslave them all and sell them as slaves in treasure yellow heaven, not only can we replenish Heavenly Court’s reserves with this, it can also display the authority of our Heavenly Court."

Fang Zheng frowned on the inside.

He had once lived for many years in Lang Ya blessed land with the hairy men due to Fang Yuan, he experienced the culture of the variant humans.

Even though these inkmen treated humans as slaves, he was still unwilling to kill the innocent.

But Fang Zheng did not rebuke the two immortals, instead he said: "These mortal inkmen are not important, the key now is to rapidly kill the inkman Gu Immortals here. Let’s take a look at this list of the Demon Judgment Board!"

A new list on the Demon Judgment Board appeared, the names of the inkman Gu Immortals inside Great Wisdom grotto-heaven were clearly written on it.

"Let’s go!" Fang Zheng shouted resolutely, activating Demon Judgment Board, they followed the connection to rapidly find the closest inkman Gu Immortal.

This inkman Gu Immortal had already sensed something amiss, he secretly went to gather with the other inkman Gu Immortals.

Seeing the approaching Demon Judgment Board, he flew desperately, but how could his speed match a rank eight Immortal Gu House?

"Ahhh!"

With a pitiful cry, this inkman Gu Immortal was directly killed by the charging Immortal Gu House. Blood red light captured his soul, it was brought to the three immortals.

The three immortals quickled used soul search to gain lots of precious information.

Within this Great Wisdom grotto-heaven, there were many inkmen and cities. The biggest city was at the center of the grotto-heaven, it had the largest number of inkman Gu Immortals gathered there.

Of course, at this moment, there were still a few inkman Gu Immortals scattered outside.

"Demon Judgment Board Lord, what do we do now?" Bai Cang Shui asked Fang Zheng.

Fang Zheng did not hesitate: "We will immediately attack that immortal city!"

Demon Judgment Board tore through the sky with outstanding speed, reaching the immortal city in a moment’s time.

During this period, the inkman Gu Immortals of the grotto-heaven had already gathered.

"Heavenly Court! We have no grudges with each other but you launched a sneak attack on us, can you still consider yourself righteous?" Within the immortal city, an inkman Gu Immortal shouted.

Prince Feng Xian laughed heartily: "Heavenly Court upholds the justice of humanity, your entire inkman group is full of evil demons, you deserve to be purged by everyone."

"What’s the point of arguing with them?" Fang Zheng acted more directly than Prince Feng Xian, he sent Demon Judgment Board to crash down on them.

The inkman Gu Immortals gritted their teeth and shouted: "Then you will have a taste of our Great Wisdom grotto-heaven’s main formation!"

At once, fog appeared and dyed the sky pitch-black.

Demon Judgment Board entered the fog and could not find its directions, it was completely trapped.

Not only that, the dense black fog was seeking to infiltrate the Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board.

Fang Zheng did not fluster, he first tried to use killer moves to probe it.

Lumps and lumps of blood flames spread out, wherever they went, black fog dispersed, but soon, the black fog seemed to have adapted, it devoured the blood flames aggressively.

Fang Zheng tried to attack several times but he failed each time.

Demon Judgment Board flew around the place but could not find any opening, it could not fly out of the black fog.

After thinking for a while, Fang Zheng used the strongest method in Demon Judgment Board, causing wanton destruction everywhere.

After a few minutes, a large amount of immortal essence was expended, Fang Zheng saw the black fog dispersing as they saw daylight again.

But the immortal city was already blown to bits, the surrounding thousand li were in ruins, countless lifeforms died from Demon Judgment Board’s attacks.

The defending inkman Gu Immortals were mostly dead, only one was still alive, holding his final breath.

He looked at Demon Judgment Board with a gaze of deep hatred, he gritted his teeth: "How laughable, the great Heavenly Court is actually using blood path methods! You slaughtered these innocent people with no sense of guilt in your heart, you are truly the most vile demons of the demonic path!"

Prince Feng Xian snorted coldly, replying in disdain: "Blood path is only a method, when used on you, it shows humanity’s righteousness."

"The owner of our Great Wisdom grotto-heaven will not let you off!" The inkman Gu Immortal said before dying.

"It’s over?" The person who caused this situation and claimed victory, Fang Zheng, stared with wide eyes in disbelief.

Bai Cang Shui knew how he felt, she smiled: "Board Lord, you think this is the fate war, where intense fighting would happen that persists for months?"

Fang Zheng heard this and had a realization, he sighed: "So that’s it."

The fate war was at the peak of the world in terms of battle strength. After

Fang Zheng participated in it personally, his impression of fights between Gu Immortals was elevated to a great degree.

Right now, he was fighting against rank six and seven inkman Gu Immortals using the rank eight Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board, he realized it was so easy! It was too simple!

"Then, what do we do now, Board Lord?" Prince Feng Xian asked.

Fang Zheng pondered before answering: "Right now, the owners of these variant human grotto-heavens are with Wu Shuai in Eastern Sea. Since we already won this fight here, we still have time to attack the other grotto-heavens. This assault is a great chance, we need to make good use of it. Senior Bai Cang Shui, stay here, guard the place and collect our loot."

For the sake of the ordinary inkmen, Fang Zheng did not let the more racist and violent Prince Feng Xian stay here, he chose Bai Cang Shui.

Bai Cang Shui and Prince Feng Xian looked at each other, seeing satisfaction in each other’s eyes.

Fang Zheng’s performance as the leader of this trip was quite commendable. Be it his decisions or mindset, he was dependable and had the aura of a great general.

"Then I will stay here. Please be careful yourselves." Bai Cang Shui expressed.

Fang Zheng nodded with a solemn expression: "Senior, don’t worry, I will not underestimate the enemies. I have not forgotten the most important point, that is the actions of Wu Shuai’s force."

Bai Cang Shui felt relieved upon hearing these words, they took their leave.

Eastern Sea.

The qi tide had just subsided, the Dragon Palace with a damaged appearance crashed into Xia clan’s headquarters.

"Oh, Lord Wu Shuai is back!"

"What was the result of the battle?"

"Lord Alliance Leader, you got injured?!"

The variant human Gu Immortals entered Dragon Palace, they saw Wu Shuai, who had a pale expression and was covered in bloodstains.

"Qi Sea Ancestor is formidable! I need to recuperate in closed cultivation." Wu Shuai coughed out mouthfuls of blood.

The variant human Gu Immortals were pale, overwhelmed by fear and panic.

Wu Shuai snorted coldly: "Don’t worry, I used up a major portion of Human Sea and unleashed human path methods, that Qi Sea Ancestor is also severely injured."

The variant human Gu Immortals let out sighs of relief, it turned out the battle had ended in a draw.

Right at this time, Great Wisdom Immortal Mother’s expression changed as she cried out in alarm: "Oh no! My Great Wisdom grotto-heaven was attacked, it is in imminent peril!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 1990 Wu Shuai“s Healing

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother’s words shocked all of the present variant human Gu Immortals.

Soon, they reacted to the news.

"We need to save them, these are our headquarters."

"Great Wisdom, do you know who invaded your grotto-heaven?"

"Heavenly Court!" Great Wisdom Immortal Mother had a dark expression, gritting her teeth in hatred: "The invading Gu Immortals used Demon Judgment Board, it is a Heavenly Court rank eight Immortal Gu House, this cannot be faked."

"Hmph, so it is Heavenly Court!"

"Heavenly Court is simply too shameless, they actually attacked without a proper declaration of war."

"Heavenly Court is an organization made by demons to begin with. The past Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was the biggest demon in the world, far beyond Fang Yuan in fact. These are the records that our races have clearly left behind."

While the immortals berated Heavenly Court, there was a sudden sound as Great Wisdom Immortal Mother directly knelt on the ground, kowtowing to Wu Shuai as she called: "Lord Alliance Leader, please help us uphold justice."

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother knew in her heart that she had no ability to save it. Just that rank eight Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board alone was an obstacle. That was not including the hidden Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortals in Demon Judgment Board.

Wu Shuai acknowledged her words: "Great Wisdom, no need to worry, stand up first!"

He seemed to have a livid expression but he did not find this strange at all. Heavenly Court’s actions were within his expectations, during the five hundred years of his previous life, Heavenly Court had similarly done such an invasion.

Wu Shuai said resolutely and solemnly: "Great Wisdom is one of us, now that Great Wisdom grotto-heaven is attacked by Heavenly Court, we need to save it. Not only that, we need to take revenge for the damage that Heavenly Court has caused to Great Wisdom grotto-heaven, we will not let this go!"

"Thank you Lord Alliance Leader!" Great Wisdom Immortal Mother felt relieved, she stood up shakily, she already had the appearance of an old woman, at this moment, she looked even more pitiful as she asked: "When will we set off?"

Wu Shuai pondered: "This is a huge matter, we need to make plans first, we cannot panic and lose our rationality. We need to save Great Wisdom grotto-heaven, but we also need to defend our Eastern Sea Xia clan territory. Even though I fought evenly against Qi Sea Ancestor this time, Eastern Sea’s righteous path will not let this go, they will retaliate. We worked hard to gain this territory, we must defend the fruits of our labor. Thankfully, we did not use any mermen earlier, in the following battle, the Merman Imperial Court can support us secretly as spies."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch stood up from the crowd at this moment: "Reporting to Lord Alliance Leader, I am willing to defend Xia clan’s headquarters. If the Eastern Sea righteous path attacks, I will do my best to defend this place, they will not pass until I die!"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s words were very heroic and grand, but in his heart, he was trying to avoid conflicting with Heavenly Court. There were many variant human Gu Immortals with similar thoughts, they all sighed now, they had been too slow, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch made a move before them.

Among them, some of the variant human Gu Immortals who were close to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch felt happy internally, if Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch defended the base, they would definitely be chosen to stay with him, after all, he could not defend the location alone.

"Very good." Wu Shuai nodded, he looked at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch with admiration: "Ice Crystal, you are very strong and have a vigilant nature, you are a powerful general in our alliance, I will be assured if you are defending it. After I recover from my injuries, you will defend Xia clan’s territory for me."

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother heard this and became anxious, you all are talking so much but why is nobody talking about the departure timing?

She started to urge again: "Lord Alliance Leader, fellow allies, there is no time, Great Wisdom grotto-heaven’s crisis is at hand, we need to save it immediately!"

Wu Shuai sighed: "After this battle against Qi Sea Ancestor, not only are my injuries severe, the healing is very troublesome. I need a lot of immortal materials to heal my physical body. The reason is because my dragonman body is different from Duke Long, I modified it and innovated upon the original version. When refining this body, I used a lot of rare immortal materials and paid a huge price. My healing will also require the same cost, regrettably, I lack a lot of immortal materials now, I need to make purchases in treasure yellow heaven."

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother had also heard rumors regarding the humans alike dragons method, she did not suspect his words as she asked: "May I ask Lord Alliance Leader how many immortal materials you require to heal your injuries? We can provide it."

Wu Shuai listed out the materials for her.

After hearing his words, all the variant human Gu Immortals took in sharp breaths.

The price was too huge!

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother was tongue tied as she gasped: "To think that Lord Alliance Leader’s body is so valuable and expensive!"

Wu Shuai smiled but did not speak, he only glanced towards Gu tribe’s leader.

Gu tribe’s leader immediately said: "I can testify for this, many of my people have turned into dragonmen, we expended far more immortal materials than this!"

This was a lie, but Gu tribe’s leader and Wu Shuai were very close, because he was an Eastern Sea rank eight, his words carried huge trustworthiness.

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother had naturally suspected that Wu Shuai was extorting them, but she did not dare to question him, the situation was not within her control.

After hesitating for a while, Great Wisdom Immortal Mother gritted her teeth as she said with difficulty: "Lord Alliance Leader, I am willing to fund and contribute the immortal materials to help you recover quickly."

The variant human Gu Immortals quickly took action, gathering the immortal materials.

Wu Shuai accepted the immortal materials but shook his head: "Even with all the immortal materials I need at least three days and two nights to heal."

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother heard his words and almost fainted on the spot.

She was extremely anxious, she was about to speak but Wu Shuai waved his hand, she could not say anything.

Because at the next moment, Wu Shuai added: "As the alliance leader, no matter which of your headquarters get attacked, I will definitely save them. Heavenly Court is our common enemy! But the situation is indeed tough now, how about this... Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, as the vice alliance leader, lead a group of people to save them in black heaven first. Try your best to preserve the foundation of Great Wisdom grotto-heaven."

"What?" Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch stared with wide eyes, showing a difficult expression. to think that this matter still ended up being delegated to him, he quickly thought about it but found that he could not refuse, he gritted his teeth: "I... will go. But I am too weak and powerless, I do not want to ruin the expedition, I would like to borrow Lord Alliance Leader’s Dragon Palace. With it, I can definitely complete my mission!"

But Wu Shuai shook his head: "I cannot lend Dragon Palace, I need it to heal my injuries."

"Is that so..." Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch wanted to speak.

But Wu Shuai’s expression changed as he said grimly: "Everyone, the situation is urgent now, we cannot talk about it further. Great Wisdom grotto-heaven is only the first target, will your grotto-heavens remain untouched? You need to save yourselves! Were I not the alliance leader, when faced with this situation, would you surrender to them? Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, I order you to go save them immediately, you can choose five people here to go with you."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch felt a strong pressure pressing down on him. He could only lower his head and accept the order.

He chose five Gu Immortals from among the people here, they were all rank eight Gu Immortals.

These were all leaders of forces close to him, there was no choice, resisting Heavenly Court to save Great Wisdom grotto-heaven was too dangerous, he did not want to get into trouble from internal strife.

However, right when they were about to move out, Great Wisdom Immortal Mother suddenly froze as she said dejectedly: "It’s too late, my Great Wisdom grotto-heaven has been completely taken down by Heavenly Court!"

The Gu Immortals gasped in unison.

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother fell to the ground as she knelt before Wu Shuai, sobbing: "Please take revenge for me, Lord Alliance Leader. My tribe has been doing its best to collect the fragments of the Qian Kun Crystal Wall, we have more than fifty percent now! If we can find another ten percent, we will be able to excavate the racial inheritance of our inkman race!"

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother directly exposed the racial inheritance of her tribe, the intention was obvious, she was trying to use benefits to lure Wu Shuai!

After hearing about the racial inheritance, the other Gu Immortals’ eyes started to shine.

At this moment, another Gu Immortal shouted in panic: "Oh no, my grotto-heaven is being attacked by Heavenly Court. Quick, quick! Go and save it!"

Wu Shuai looked at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch imposingly: "This is an urgent matter, aren’t you setting off?"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch gritted his teeth, he brought a number of Gu Immortals to return to immemorial black heaven.

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother and another pitiful Gu Immortal went back to reinforce the invaded grotto-heaven, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and the rest also went there, within Dragon Palace, less than half the Gu Immortals were left.

The remaining Gu Immortals had ugly expressions, most of them were shell shocked, after all, they could be the next target at any time.

Wu Shuai ignored them, he ordered them to defend Xia clan’s base as he shut the door of Dragon Palace, attending to his ’injuries’.

"These variant human Gu Immortals are truly not our match, hehe." Night Heavenly Wolf Lord was among the Gu Immortals, he was the only person here who had peace of mind.

"All these grotto-heaven Gu Immortals don’t have any interaction during normal times, they even guard against each other and think that they should keep more secrets to themselves! With such precaution against each other, how can they make any change? Even if they work together, they are still a disunited bunch! My decision to join Heavenly Court was right after all."

After this matter, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord was even more sure of his intention to work for Heavenly Court.

After parting with the immortals, he secretly informed Heavenly Court of this expedition.

Wu Shuai had created the two heavens alliance agreement, there were restrictions upon it naturally. But the information path dao marks on Night Heavenly Wolf Lord had already been removed by Zhou Xiong Xin and the others, thus, even though he was a traitor, no backlash had occurred.

In Heavenly Court’s Central Great Hall, Qin Ding Ling soon received news of this.

She thought about it but did not inform Eastern Sea’s righteous path, instead she told Fang Zheng.

Fang Zheng was already about to take down the second grotto-heaven, the remaining Gu Immortals in the grotto-heaven were still well hidden, Fang Zheng was anxious to find them.

After thinking about it, he decided to ask Prince Feng Xian to stay here and clean up the situation. He would bring Demon Judgment Board to the third grotto-heaven and assault it!

At the same time.

Eastern Sea, qi sea.

Qi Sea Ancestor had a pale expression, he sat at the main seat as he looked at Xia Rui Zhi and the rest.

The representatives of Eastern Sea’s righteous path forces were all here.

Qi Sea Ancestor looked at Xia Rui Zhi as he asked: "In this battle, I had the upper hand at first, but that Wu Shuai actually managed to use a human path method. This method was very powerful, it could create countless flying human figures. According to Wu Shuai, this is the foundation of your Xia clan, is it an artificial secluded domain of heaven and earth?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

After Xia clan first supreme elder Xia Rui Zhi heard Qi Sea Ancestor’s question, he became shocked.

After a while, he answered vigilantly: "Reporting to ancestor, my Xia clan was indeed creating an artificial human path secluded domain, it is called Human Sea. But this secluded domain does not have any offensive power. The reason why we created it was to deal with the future chaos and have a method to revive our Xia clan Gu Immortals."

Xia Rui Zhi spoke vaguely but he did not lie. The reason why Xia clan was creating Human Sea was to revive their Gu Immortals.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, Fang Yuan remembered that when Xia clan’s Gu Immortals died outside, they were not truly dead, they could revive from Human Sea. Although their Immortal Gu and immortal aperture’s accumulations would be lost, they would still retain their cultivation level and immortal aperture itself.

Eastern Sea’s Xia clan gained a huge reputation because of this, for the following period of time, they invaded Southern Border. Southern Border’s Gu Immortals fought against Xia clan, over time, they learned about Xia clan’s background and foundation, eventually, Chai clan mimicked Human Sea and created their own Human Mountain secluded domain.

Qi Sea Ancestor stroked his beard: "It seems that the reason why Wu Shuai led the two heavens’ Gu Immortals to invade your Xia clan was because of this Human Sea secluded domain."

All of the present Xia clan Gu Immortals looked at each other.

Xia Rui Zhi frowned as he muttered: "Was my Xia clan invaded because information got leaked and the allure of the Human Sea secluded domain caused enemies to attack? But this Human Sea secluded domain has not been completed yet."

Qi Sea Ancestor had a grim expression: "If Wu Shuai did not have a complete

Human Sea secluded domain, does that mean that after he completes it, he will have an actual Human Sea and his human path killer move will be even stronger?"

Xia Rui Zhi smiled: "Ancestor, don’t worry, the creation of Human Sea originated from an ancestor of my clan, it was refined by generations of descendants. Wu Shuai does not know of its profundity, if he tries to complete it, Human Sea will only dwindle and shrink."

Qi Sea Ancestor shook his head: "Wu Shuai is an old monster of the past, he made use of Fang Yuan’s power to revive successfully, this person is too scheming and crafty, he takes action with certainty. Each time he strikes, he is resolute and will always make great gains. Since he knew about your Xia clan’s Human Sea secluded domain, he might also know a way to complete it."

Xia Rui Zhi’s smile became more forced: "This possibility... is not likely. Only the top three supreme elders of my clan know about the creation method of Human Sea. Right now, they are all here, don’t tell me we have a traitor among us?"

Qi Sea Ancestor sighed: "It might not be a traitor. Don’t forget that Wu Shuai controls Dragon Palace which has dream path killer moves, he might have targeted you in your dreams."

"This..." Xia Rui Zhi’s smiling expression froze entirely.

If it were any other path, Xia Rui Zhi would still feel some confidence. But against dream path methods, he could not be certain.

"Lord Xia Rui Zhi, friends from Xia clan." At this time, a Tang clan Gu Immortal spoke: "Should you still be hiding it? You should tell us the creation method of Human Sea, let us refer to it and find out a weakness of Wu Shuai’s human path method."

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals were stunned.

The creation method of Human Sea was the deepest foundation of Eastern Sea’s Xia clan, how could they expose it like this?

Tang clan’s Gu Immortal was merely after Human Sea himself.

Tang clan’s member chuckled: "Pardon my words, but friends from Xia clan, what are you still waiting for? Your territory has been lost, you want to create a brand new Human Sea secluded domain from scratch? Do you know what the most important thing is now? When ancestor and Wu Shuai fought, it ended in a draw because of that human path killer move. As long as we can deduce this human path killer move, would we have to fear Wu Shuai and his army? By then, wouldn’t you get back your homeland?"

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals gritted their teeth in anger.

Tang clan was an Eastern Sea super force, they bordered Xia clan and had much conflict in usual times. Thus, they decided to make things difficult for Xia clan at this moment.

However, even though they were causing problems intentionally, their words made sense.

This was something even Xia clan’s Gu Immortals had to admit.

Xia Rui Zhi thought about it before making up his mind: "The method to create Human Sea is our Xia clan’s secret, we will not announce it publicly. I am only willing to contribute this human path essence to ancestor alone!"

Qi Sea Ancestor got injured from fighting Wu Shuai, Xia clan’s hopes were all on Qi Sea Ancestor now. Because the two heavens were led by Wu Shuai, Eastern Sea only had Qi Sea Ancestor able to resist the Evil Dragon and Dragon Palace collectively.

Xia Rui Zhi was trying to gain Qi Sea Ancestor’s favor now, he was making plans for his own clan.

But Qi Sea Ancestor shook his head: "I am only asking this to confirm the situation. Your Xia clan can keep this Human Sea creation method. I have no foundation in human path, even if I get it, I cannot deduce Wu Shuai’s methods."

Xia Rui Zhi became anxious and wanted to speak but Qi Sea Ancestor waved his hand to interrupt: "Xia clan does not have to worry. Wu Shuai is a dragonman, the two heavens alliance is also made up of mostly variant humans, they are public enemies of the five regions! If they invaded the other four regions, so be it, but they chose Eastern Sea after all, so as a human, I will resist these variant humans with all my effort."

"Ancestor is righteous and mighty!" The Gu Immortals present called out in unison.

Qi Sea Ancestor added: "But now, I have injuries from the battle, I need to recuperate in closed cultivation. As for Wu Shuai, his injuries are more severe, he will not take action during this period of time, there is no need to worry."

Qi Sea Ancestor paused before continuing: "When I recover, I will need you all to cooperate and gather an army to fight against the two heavens alliance."

"We will listen to ancestor."

"With ancestor leading us, Eastern Sea has nothing to worry!"

"Without ancestor, Eastern Sea would have suffered great losses already. It is truly Eastern Sea’s blessing to have ancestor defending it, this is the blessing of the people."

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortals continued to flatter him without stopping.

But Xia Rui Zhi had a worried expression, he and Xia clan’s members were currently homeless. During this period, they could not reclaim Xia clan’s territory, where were they going to go now?

Qi Sea Ancestor smiled lightly: "Before we attack, friends from Xia clan, you may stay in qi sea as guests."

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals instantly became overjoyed.

Xia Rui Zhi cupped his fists and thanked: "Xia clan will remember ancestor’s warm hospitality, we will definitely repay you in the future."

The other clans’ Gu Immortals looked at Xia clan’s Gu Immortals with different expressions now. Other than disdain and sympathy, they also felt envious and jealous.

Was this Xia clan’s fortune after a disaster? They were able to stay closely with Qi Sea Ancestor, as time passes, their relationship would deepen, they would be able to gain the backing of a great expert!

If they knew the truth, who knew what expression they would show.

After finishing their discussion, Qi Sea Ancestor went to recuperate in closed cultivation, the other Eastern Sea Gu Immortals also went back to their bases to make preparations for the upcoming battle.

Mermaid Lian Ke Xin was feeling nervous at the moment. The Merman Imperial Court had already joined the two heavens alliance, but Wu Shuai did not expose their identity, they were currently spies sent to gather information.

Feeling the cold breeze in the sky, Lian Ke Xin calmed down slowly as sorrow emerged in her heart: "Now it seems that Eastern Sea will be peaceful for this period of time without any fighting. But this is the calm before the storm, sigh, during the battle in the future, I wonder what action my Merman Imperial Court should take?"

Lian Ke Xin was one of the three immortals in charge of the Merman Imperial Court, she had high status and authority, but now she felt helpless and fearful.

The five regional walls vanished, everyone knew that the five regions were going to become chaotic and turbulent.

But the chaos had just started, Lian Ke Xin already felt like she was in treacherous waters, her future was bleak and dark, she could not see the light or hope of survival. If she was careless, then the entire Merman Imperial Court would even get completely devoured!

After hearing the report, Shen Cong Sheng learned of Qi Sea Ancestor’s decision.

"It seems that Eastern Sea is currently led by Qi Sea Ancestor after all." Shen Cong Sheng sighed: "If Ancestor Shen Shang returned, it would be different. Letting a secluded cultivator lead the entire righteous path..."

Shen Cong Sheng shook his head.

He had ambition, he wanted Shen clan to be the overlord of Eastern Sea, as the number one force.

Different from the other righteous path clans, Shen clan had Shen Shang, he was someone who could compete with Qi Sea Ancestor.

But Shen Shang’s whereabouts were unknown.

Shen clan had searched for him with full effort but they made no discoveries.

Shen Cong Sheng felt a huge headache regarding this: "Oh ancestor, where in the world are you?"

At the same time.

Divine Emperor City, painting path world.

Hong Yi and Ye Fan walked side by side on the bustling street.

At the corner of an alley, a group of muscular men surrounded a person as they kicked and punched.

"Stop!" Hong Yi could not watch anymore, he quickly stopped them.

After seeing the situation, Ye Fan was also furious: "Are you guys really hitting him? So many of you are bullying one beggar?"

The group of muscular men turned around: "Stupid kids, don’t meddle in others’ affairs! This lunatic is courting death, he scared my young master’s precious horse to death, my clan’s young master also fell to the ground. We will not rest until we beat him to death."

Hong Yi sighed: "You went overboard."

Boom boom boom.

Hong Yi and Ye Fan made their move, the group of muscular men were sent scrambling and escaping.

The beggar was curled up on the ground, he was covered in bruises, his body shivered as he muttered nonsensical phrases.

"He really is insane." Hong Yi sighed.

"Sigh, even if he is crazy, he is still human. He did not mean to scare the horse, right?" Ye Fan also felt some pity: "Come, let’s help him, we can’t leave him here like this."

The two brought the beggar into a secluded alley as they got him a few buns, placing it beside him.

After that, they left.

What they did not know was, after they left, the beggar regained his sanity.

"Where am I?"

"Damn it, the black fire wreaked havoc, I went mad again!"

This beggar was the person that Shen clan had been desperately trying to find, Shen Shang.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

People on the streets moved continuously, shops on both sides had bright signs and attractive banners.

"Wow! This is the world inside the painting. It is incredible! Everything seems so real!" Sun Yao’s body shook as her vision widened, after entering the painting, she could not help but shout in amazement.

The surrounding people looked towards this young lady with perplexed gazes.

But Sun Yao did not notice it, her eyes were wide open and shining as she looked around, filled with curiosity and excitement.

Sun Yao was a Spirit Affinity House Gu Master, she was chosen as a Gu Immortal seed by the sect and was given much assistance.

Spirit Affinity House’s original nominee was Feng Jin Huang, but because of Feng Jiu Ge’s betrayal, Qin Ding Ling hesitated.

Spirit Affinity House thus changed their nominee, Sun Yao took over Feng Jin Huang’s position.

However, the sect’s nurturing was different from what she expected. Spirit Affinity House only told Sun Yao about the background of this painting before sending her in.

Sun Yao moved around the different shops on the streets, having a lot of fun.

She had grown up in Spirit Affinity House, she only had senior brothers or sisters around her, they were all cultivators and according to the rules of the sect, they did not interact with the outside world very much.

Everything that happened here was very exciting and interesting to her.

She spent primeval stones to buy many sticks of candy, she ate them as she looked around.

She saw paper-cutting artists in the alleys, where pieces of red paper were quickly transformed with scissors into life-like butterflies and flowers.

She went into the theater to enjoy the opera, she saw the people with their painted faces, their exaggerated dresses, and their long, high-pitched singing.

She stopped at a corner of the street and saw two strong men putting up a performance of smashing rocks on their chest.

Suddenly, she was tapped on the shoulder.

Sun Yao turned around and saw a young man, with a squarish face and an honest appearance.

Before Sun Yao could open her mouth, this young man with an honest and righteous air smiled sheepishly and said: "Are you from the ten great ancient sects?"

Sun Yao suddenly stared with wide eyes and exclaimed in surprise: "Senior brother, you too?"

The young man then nodded his head and introduced himself with cupped fists: "I am Chen Da Jiang of Wind Cloud Manor."

"So it’s Senior Brother Chen!" Sun Yao was shocked, she returned the greeting in succession. Chen Da Jiang was the current generation number one disciple of Wind Cloud Manor, Sun Yao had already learned of his name before this.

Sun Yao had the feeling of seeing a celebrity. When Chen Da Jiang had first gained fame, she was nothing more than a follower of Feng Jin Huang.

Like Sun Yao, Chen Da Jiang was a recommended candidate from Wind Cloud Manor and was sent to the world of the painting.

The two of them met in a strange place, and even though it was only the first time they met, there was a natural closeness between them.

"Senior Brother Chen, I wonder what other arrangements the sect has made by sending us here for training." Sun Yao inquired.

Chen Da Jiang shook his head: "I don’t know anything about that either. I originally thought that by entering here, I would be able to get guidance on the next step of my cultivation. I didn’t expect that the sect would not have any arrangements."

The two of them had a fruitless conversation and decided to travel in companionship.

"Give me some food, please, our mother hasn’t eaten for three days."

"Please give some money, please help us."

"My father is gone, I am selling myself to raise money for his funeral, I beg for your help!"

The two wandered aimlessly into a street, but all they saw were starving people, there were many yellow-skinned people leaning on the corner wall. Many people were begging, cupping their hands or holding up broken bowls.

Pedestrians on the street, on the other hand, were in a hurry and avoided them, rarely stopping to give alms to anyone.

"How is this happening? They are just two streets apart." Sun Yao was greatly surprised when she saw this scene.

Chen Da Jiang analyzed: "This is the painting world of Divine Emperor City. Every major scene that happened in the history of Emperor City is merged into one painting. It looks like this is what happened in Emperor City during one of the famine disasters of history."

Sun Yao couldn’t help but overflow with sympathy: "Senior Brother Chen, even though they are only people in the painting and not real existences, they are so pitiful, I still want to help them."

Chen Da Jiang was impressed by Sun Yao’s words, he smiled readily: "This might sound funny, but I also have the same idea. Why don’t the two of us act together?"

"Awesome!" Sun Yao jumped at the chance and agreed to do so.

The two of them contributed money and effort, not only giving out primeval stones, but also purchasing porridge, buns, and other food to deliver to these beggars.

"Kind people!"

"Thank you, benefactors, we will never forget your act of kindness."

"Benefactors, please allow me to follow you two in return for your kindness!"

The people in distress were grateful and appreciative.

Just then, a shrill voice cut in: "What are you guys doing?"

When Sun Yao and Chen Da Jiang turned their heads, they saw a Gu Master wearing a white robe with a jade belt at his waist, his posture was as straight as a sword, an air of arrogance could be felt between his brows as he walked towards them.

"So it’s Brother Xiao Qi Xing of Spirit Butterfly Valley!" Chen Da Jiang greeted with cupped fists.

Sun Yao gasped, Xiao Qi Xing was also a well-known figure, she said in a panic: "Spirit Affinity House’s Sun Yao greets Brother Xiao."

Xiao Qi Xing sized up Sun Yao: "Are you the candidate of Spirit Affinity House this time? It seems that Feng Jin Huang has indeed been suppressed, this is not surprising at all, her father has openly betrayed Heavenly Court, this outcome is only natural."

As soon as this was said, Sun Yao frowned: "Senior Sister Feng wouldn’t care about these things."

"Hehe, she is indeed arrogant. Pity, what a pity, a fallen phoenix is worse than a chicken." Xiao Qi Xing revealed a mocking smile: "You guys are actually helping these beggars again? They’re not real people, why are you doing this for?"

"No reason, we just feel like helping them." Chen Da Jiang smiled.

"Hehe, sympathy..." Xiao Qi Xing shook his head in disdain: "That means you don’t know the importance of this journey, you’re wasting your time here!"

"Oh?" Chen Da Jiang’s eyes lit up: "What does Brother Xiao know?"

Xiao Qi Xing looked at Chen Da Jiang: "There is no harm in telling you, this painting world is so vivid because it is the effect of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s contented lifestyle killer move. We were all nominated by our sects to be trained by Heavenly Court and sent here for further nurturing. As I’m sure you’ve noticed, there are also Gu Masters cultivating here, but they cultivate mainly human path."

"What the sect wants is for us to cultivate human path. We will strive to ascend to become immortal using human path as our main path. Although this world is not real, the cultivation of human path is not fake. All the human path Gu worms we get from here can also be taken outside and used."

"So that’s how it is!" Sun Yao’s eyes widened but soon she expressed some doubt: "But why didn’t the sect tell me?"

Chen Da Jiang, on the other hand, simply asked: "Where did Brother Xiao learn about this inside information?"

Xiao Qi Xing smiled slightly, he puffed out his chest and said proudly: "Even Spirit Butterfly Valley has not informed me of this inside information, I had gone to ask my great grandfather to find out."

Chen Da Jiang nodded understandingly, seeing that Sun Yao was still puzzled, he explained: "Brother Xiao has a noble status and a wealth of knowledge, his great grandfather is Lord Gu Immortal Xiao Bai Hong."

"Oh, so that’s how it is." Sun Yao’s gaze towards Xiao Qi Xing changed again.

"Alright, I have to head to the military base now and join the city guards. I’ve already investigated it, only city guards can get soldier Gu, sergeant Gu, lieutenant Gu, captain Gu, and others. These human path Gu worms are very useful, they can build a strong foundation in our human path cultivation. We should go together, we can take care of each other." Xiao Qi Xing suggested again.

But Chen Da Jiang shook his head, "Brother Xiao, go first, I’m not done helping the beggars here."

Xiao Qi Xing looked at Chen Da Jiang and nodded: "You’re still the same as before, so what about you?"

He looked at Sun Yao.

Sun Yao hesitated and shook her head as well: "No, Senior Brother Xiao, I... I plan to help Senior Brother Chen."

"Haha." Xiao Qi Xing laughed as he showed a smile with deep meaning: "Then I will not disturb the two of you in your good work."

He left straight away, laughing coldly in his heart: "These two idiots have no idea what kind of opportunities they are missing out on!"

Xiao Qi Xing could not help but recall the words that his great grandfather had instructed him: "Oh Qi Xing, this trip into the painting world is an unimaginably great opportunity. If possible, you can even inherit Genesis Lotus' true inheritance and become the Lord of Divine Emperor City. You must do your best to grasp this opportunity! Remember, you must hurry up. You are only the first batch of candidates, Heavenly Court will also arrange for some rank six Gu Immortals to enter next. These people are also elites that Heavenly Court is focusing on nurturing, but the qi tides have not settled yet and they are all still resting and recuperating."

"After you enter the painting world, you will have to race against time and try to establish an early advantage so that you can deal with those Gu Immortal opponents in the future. Don't be afraid, these Gu Immortals can only follow the rules in the painting world. Inside it, immortals and mortals are basically equals."

Xiao Qi Xing's heart beat rapidly every time he recalled these words.

This was an unparalleled opportunity, of course he wanted to grasp it!

Sun Yao and Chen Da Jiang did not know the inside story, so Xiao Qi Xing wanted to coax them to help himself out. It was a pity that these two actually wanted to do good deeds, they were really not qualified to work with him. Xiao Qi Xing saw through this and was unwilling to waste precious time and energy on them.

"We brought steamed buns and porridge, eat slowly and don't choke." Sun Yao placed a bowl of porridge and steamed buns in front of Shen Shang.

Shen Shang was still covered in injuries and resembled a beggar, sitting in the shade at the corner like a stone statue.

Sun Yao also did not pay attention to it, after all, there were many such silent beggars. She did this to help others, not for the sake of listening to some words of gratitude and praise.

Shen Shang's eyes contained bright light as he looked at Sun Yao who was close to him, and also at the back of Xiao Qi Xing, who was about to disappear in the distance of the street.

"These people are all Heavenly Court's Gu Immortal seeds. In order to face the tides of the great era, Heavenly Court has made long-term plans."

"Xiao Bai Hong is too shortsighted and doesn't even know that he has harmed his own great-grandson. Sun Yao and Chen Da Jiang were previously kept in the dark, but now, although they learned some of the inside story, they still upheld their nature and acted according to their desires. These two will definitely benefit greatly if they continue."

Shen Shang thought to himself. Although these three people were transmitting their conversations, they could not hide it from a character like Shen Shang.

Shen Shang sighed in his heart.

"Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's arrangement is truly vast and grand, I really admire him."

"In history, the greatest human path true inheritance is \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e. Even though this book seems shallow, it is profound to the limit, only a small group of people can actually comprehend its true essence and create human path killer moves."

"However, to establish a path, these killer moves are too few and rare, they are like the moon beyond the clouds, normal people cannot reach them. Even though human path has such great potential, it has no foundations set upon it, it is unable to develop until now."

"But Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable created this painting world, he used the scenes of the mortal world for the past million years to derive the foundations of human path. He is making an immense contribution towards the development of human path! He is truly the foundational pillar of human path."

"The human path developments here are also very helpful to me. I wonder what happened when I was in a state of madness, how did I end up in here?"

"It is a pity I cannot contact Fang Yuan’s Fang Di Chang clone. What is happening over on his end?"

Shen Shang was the one who had previously collaborated with Fang Di Chang and successfully unraveled the venerables’ human path methods, adding a significant weight to tilt the balance of the battle in the fate war.

Shen Shang knew that Fang Di Chang had refined Divine Bean Palace before, he had a large level of authority over it. If they could collaborate once again, it would benefit both of them!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Southern Border.

In a valley, Shi Shi Cheng leaned over to check out the stone mushrooms within the valley.

If these stone mushrooms were in good condition, they would be five feet tall, shaped like a small tree with a cover like an umbrella. However, these stone mushrooms were short, just like stumps left behind after a tree was cut down. And instead of a healthy gray stone color, their bodies were covered in a distorted multicolored color, and one could tell at a glance that they were not normal.

"These stone mushrooms are ruined!" After Shi Shi Cheng finished his inspection and confirmed this, his expression was quite ugly.

Although his cultivation was only rank six, he was valued by Fang Yuan and arranged to lead the rockman tribe in Mini Southern Border. Shi Shi Cheng held Fang Yuan in high esteem and was dedicated to developing the rockman tribe, in order to live up to Fang Yuan’s expectations.

This stone mushroom field was a medium-sized resource point that he had personally constructed for the sake of the rockman tribe. In order to build this resource point, Shi Shi Cheng had specifically requested many immortal materials from Fang Yuan’s time path clone as the initial investment. At that time, he even vowed and guaranteed that there would be desirable returns!

As a result, reality was like a slap in the face of Shi Shi Cheng.

"What is happening?"

"I clearly followed the records of the tribe to carefully cultivate the stone mushrooms without any mistakes."

Shi Shi Cheng was very confused. A few days ago, these stone mushrooms were all growing normally and everything was fine. But after a few days had passed, these stone mushrooms had become like this.

"How can I explain this to Lord Fang Yuan?!" Shi Shi Cheng furrowed his brows and sighed.

At this moment, light flashed and Fang Yuan’s will was transmitted over in mid-air.

The will was solid and lifelike.

Shi Shi Cheng gasped and immediately bowed: "Subordinate pays respect to lord."

"Mm." Fang Yuan’s will waved his hand: "I already know about your situation here, the stone mushroom field was destroyed, no one can blame you, it was a natural disaster. You should go back for now, another batch of immortal materials will arrive in a while, and you can just build a second stone mushroom valley."

Shi Shi Cheng was overjoyed and thanked him, but also wanted to say something.

Fang Yuan’s will revealed an understanding smile: "Are you thinking of asking what caused these stone mushrooms to be destroyed?"

Shi Shi Cheng nodded: "Lord is perceptive, I would like to ask if these stone mushrooms can still be recycled in some way? It would be a pity to just throw them away."

The initial investment in building the stone mushroom valley was huge, it was certainly nothing in Fang Yuan’s eyes, but in Shi Shi Cheng’s opinion, it was an astronomical investment. Together with the effort and time he had invested in this place, he did not want to see all his efforts go up in smoke.

But Fang Yuan shook his head: "You don’t need to think about the details, if I can solve it, you will have no worries. If I can’t solve it, it’s useless for you to know. As for these stone mushrooms, none of them can be used, even if they are used as materials to refine Gu, they will only cause more harm instead. You can leave now."

"Yes, my lord!" Shi Shi Cheng took his leave respectfully, he was worried in his heart: "Why do we have such a big problem? According to his tone, it may not be possible to resolve the matter?"

Shi Shi Cheng left, only Fang Yuan’s will remained in this valley.

Fang Yuan’s expression was grim.

He scanned the entire valley first, the countless stone mushrooms in the valley had become twisted objects, the originally smooth surface forming countless creases. The colors were bright, like a gathering of poisonous creatures, giving people a sense of terror.

This was of course just the appearance.

In Fang Yuan’s eyes, he could see that the original earth path dao marks in these stone mushrooms had been disrupted and washed away, many different dao marks from other paths, including wind path, lightning path, poison path, dark path, fire path, and so on, were added instead.

Because of this, these stone mushrooms could only be discarded as waste material. At least currently, Fang Yuan had no means to utilize them.

"Heaven’s will!" Fang Yuan’s will suddenly sneered and discovered heaven’s will lurking in the valley.

With a loud sound, he transformed into a field of clouds and mist that covered the entire valley, pursuing and intercepting heaven’s will.

A confrontation between wills soon came to an end. Fang Yuan was victorious, he had managed to completely clear the heaven’s will lurking in this place, but of course, the price paid was not small.

After his will had gathered again, it was no longer as lifelike as before, but illusory as a shadow, giving the impression like it was going to fade away at any moment.

Fang Yuan sighed.

This victory only resolved the problem but not its fundamental cause, a new problem would occur again!

The stone mushroom valley was not just an isolated case, recently, there had been heaven’s will lurking all over the sovereign immortal aperture, many resource points had been destroyed.

Fang Yuan’s main body had obtained more than three thousand heaven path dao marks as he was the person refining Gu, managing to destroy fate Gu for good.

These dao marks did not belong to him and were imposed on him. The heaven path dao marks transformed on their own, causing the various environments of the sovereign immortal aperture to change, becoming more and more balanced and stable.

In the long run, this change would naturally do more good than harm, greatly increasing the development potential of the sovereign immortal aperture. However, if one looked at the immediate future, it would cause Fang Yuan to suffer heavy losses.

Fang Yuan was not a super force, all his possessions were in the sovereign immortal aperture. A great loss in this foundation of his would definitely affect his battle performance. Fang Yuan did not want to fall into the trap of Red Lotus Demon Venerable, he had been working hard to command the humans and variant humans in the grotto-heaven, constantly fighting against natural disasters. At the same time, he had successively retrieved the thousand wish tree and the incomplete Human Sea, using human path to restrict the heaven path effects.

With such a two-pronged approach, the situation of sovereign immortal aperture was greatly improved. However, Fang Yuan did not expect that the natural development of the heaven path dao marks would produce heaven’s will after some point.

The Heavenly Dao was impartial, it had no malicious intent against Fang Yuan, changing the environment was just a natural step of development. But this was not the case for heaven’s will.

Heaven’s will was produced from the Heavenly Dao, it was more flexible and resourceful. The Heavenly Dao was unable to eliminate Fang Yuan, the otherworldly demon that affected the balance of the world, so heaven’s will went one step further and began deliberately destroying the various resource points in the sovereign immortal aperture.

Heaven path dao marks could transform into other paths, so heaven’s will used this ability to completely disrupt the dao marks of the various resource points, turning them from orderly to a complete mess.

Stone mushroom valley was just one of them.

"I have the killer move heaven’s will dissipation, but the sovereign immortal aperture is too huge, the Heavenly Dao is constantly deriving new changes, it can produce heaven’s will anywhere in the entire grotto-heaven. It is too difficult for me to clear out all this heaven’s will! Even if I do my best, the efficiency is low."

Fang Yuan was clear that the way to settle the fundamental cause was to directly refine these heaven path dao marks, so that they truly belonged to the sovereign immortal aperture and himself.

But what the method to go about it was, he had no idea.

He had never heard of anyone cultivating heaven path before! The only known way was to use human path methods to suppress heaven path.

Fang Yuan thought for a long time and found two possible ways out.

The first one was Emperor City.

"Emperor City was carefully arranged by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, it has now become the sacred land of human path. If I can obtain it, I will definitely be able to greatly restrain the Heavenly Dao."

The second way was in Crazed Demon Cave.

"Crazed Demon Cave was set up by Limitless Demon Venerable in his later years, the eighth layer contains the derivations of the Heavenly Dao. In Crazed Demon Cave, the demonic sounds are rampant, driving lifeforms mad, all kinds of immortal materials turn into trash as dao marks are messed up. The situation is exactly the same as the stone mushrooms and other resources. If I can grasp all the secrets of Crazed Demon Cave, I should be able to improve my situation."

But these were two dangerous options.

Emperor City was located in the center of Central Continent, if Fang Yuan were to go there, he would definitely have to fight Heavenly Court. With his current strength, he would be able to defeat Heavenly Court. However! Fang Yuan’s fear was Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable and Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had schemed against him, causing him to lose his clone Fang Di Chang. When using luck inspection earlier, he did not find Fang Di Chang’s luck, it was likely that he had perished, the likelihood of his death was great.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable also schemed against him, if not for the heaven path dao marks, how could heaven’s will be produced in Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture? Of course, Red Lotus was also plotting against Spectral Soul. The heaven path dao marks were both dangerous and also a fortuitous encounter for Fang Yuan, it was also his protection. At the least, Spectral Soul could not use his hidden methods because of these dao marks.

If Fang Yuan wanted to take Emperor City, he would have to face the methods of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable and Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

As for Crazed Demon Cave?

It was also filled with danger.

The Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics had promised to join the fate war to Fang Yuan, but during the battle, none of them had shown up. Fang Yuan had tried to contact them, but they had completely vanished.

What happened in Crazed Demon Cave that caused the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics to mysteriously disappear?

Fang Yuan guessed that Longevity Heaven might have taken action. Fang Yuan realized that the consumption of wisdom Gu was part of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s scheme. Giant Sun’s single attack also made Fang Yuan realize that he was keeping some trump cards after all.

Now that fate Gu was destroyed, it was possible for venerables to revive. If Fang Yuan went to Crazed Demon Cave, it was likely that he would need to face the methods of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Limitless Demon Venerable.

There was one more thing that worried Fang Yuan, there were changes happening in the River of Time.

Ever since the destruction of fate Gu, the water of the River of Time had become extremely violent, vicious and dangerous. Even if Fang Yuan used Myriad Year Flying Warship, he could only barely enter the river and last for a moment before having to return to the five regions, he was unable to explore it for long.

Fang Yuan understood the reason.

In the past, the River of Time could move forward smoothly because everything was fixed, everything moved according to the path set by fate, no matter what existed, they had a specific trajectory of life experiences. This was why time path Gu Immortals could often "predict" things by watching the downstream segments. Red Lotus Demon Venerable was able to plot the destruction of fate Gu by observing the downstream events and learning many secrets of the future.

But now, once fate Gu was destroyed, everything no longer had a fixed path and could change at will. As a result, the River of Time has become extremely violent, everything has become turbid and chaotic.

With such a change in the River of Time, Spring Autumn Cicada could no longer be used for the time being.

Before, Spring Autumn Cicada could move through the river because the water was gentle. Now that the river had become violent and chaotic, once Spring Autumn Cicada was activated and entered the river, it would definitely be smashed to pieces by the river water. Unless Fang Yuan developed some other killer move that could use Spring Autumn Cicada.

"Although the river water is troublesome, it’s actually not a big problem. What I’m really worried about is still Red Lotus Demon Venerable. He’s the one who had built the stone lotus islands in the River of Time. I don’t know what other arrangements he has in the River of Time."

Fate Gu was destroyed at long last, Fang Yuan had finally gotten free of the Sword of Damocles hanging above his head.

However, the journey ahead of him was filled with mist, he was walking in a dangerous valley. Within the mist, which area could be explored, which area would lead to a cliff?

Would his path to eternal life, his lifelong ambition, be hidden within the mist?

If it existed, where would it be?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In immemorial black heaven, a group of Gu Immortals were traveling stealthily as they flew continuously.

These Gu Immortals had outstanding cultivation level, they were all rank eight variant human Gu Immortals. The leader was a Gu Immortal with pale skin and blue hair, he had a grim expression, it was Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had received orders from Wu Shuai to reinforce the headquarters of the grotto-heavens, to resist the invasion of Heavenly Court.

Along the way, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s heart was filled with worry: "This is not the same as my expectations... I made Wu Shuai the alliance leader so that he would be the vanguard. But in the end, to deal with Heavenly Court, I was the one sent out instead."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had the intention to reject this order, but the situation back then did not allow him to use any excuses.

"Wu Shuai suffered injuries against Qi Sea Ancestor, in a way, he was indeed used by us to resist Qi Sea Ancestor."

"As the vice alliance leader, I need to put in some effort too. It makes logical sense for me to reinforce them in black heaven."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch did not want to face Heavenly Court directly.

Regardless of win or loss, he would become an eyesore from Heavenly Court’s perspective.

Currently, he wanted Wu Shuai to attract the attention of the enemies. But the world was not as simple as he thought, society was vicious to everyone, right now, he was pushed forward as the vanguard.

"I am truly unable to go against the tides!" Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch sighed deeply to himself.

He definitely had to go save them, but the way to go about it was something that he could determine himself.

"Vice alliance leader, we found a large number of Gu Immortals ahead." The investigative Gu Immortal suddenly spoke: "They are our allies."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch nodded in response, unsurprised: "Go meet with them."

Even though Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch regretted his vice alliance leader position, it was already too late now, he could only take full advantage of the authority he had.

Before setting off, he had already used his status as vice alliance leader to order the remaining grotto-heaven forces to help each other out, in order to chase away Heavenly Court, they had to contribute their strength.

The two groups of Gu Immortals gathered, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch looked at the reinforcements, he felt rage building internally.

Chaotic Rock grotto-heaven sent an immemorial rock monster, Rotten Egg grotto-heaven sent six eggman Gu Immortals, they could form the ancient battle formation, Rotting Smell Vicious Cloud formation, while Strange Hair grotto-heaven brought an incomplete Immortal Gu House, Black Emperor Building. These three grotto-heaven forces that were close to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch brought their trump cards along with them, but other than them, the other forces were simply not putting in effort. Especially those human forces, they only dispatched several rank seven Gu Immortals without much sincerity.

"The enemy is right ahead but these grotto-heaven forces are still trying to preserve their strength! Sigh, grotto-heavens are too far apart, we do not have much interaction normally, even if we cooperate, it is only due to external pressure."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s anger soon turned into helplessness and dejectedness.

"In that case, I should conceal my own strength too, let’s just put up a superficial show. After all, the people I brought amount to quite a force already."

Heavenly Court was powerful, if possible, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch did not want to face them head-on. He knew his own limits, if he really charged forward fearlessly, he might not return alive.

While Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was thinking about this, his expression changed as his eyes widened, almost spewing fires of rage!

The other Gu Immortals saw Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s expression and turned around.

Someone asked: "Vice alliance leader, what happened? Have Xia clan’s headquarters fallen?"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch gritted his teeth: "Xia clan’s headquarters have Lord Alliance Leader, how can they fall! My grotto-heaven has been invaded by Demon Judgment Board, my tribe’s Gu Immortals are currently fighting them to the death, we need to reinforce them now!"

"This..." Great Wisdom Immortal Mother was still thinking of saving her grotto-heaven, she was hesitant.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch stared at her: "Your grotto-heavens have already fallen into the enemy’s hands, the outcome has been decided. But my Ice Crystal grotto-heaven is still resisting them, there is hope. We need to return to reinforce them immediately, if anyone does not help, I will report it to Lord Alliance Leader Wu Shuai!"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch made use of Wu Shuai’s name, and because the variant human Gu Immortals close to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch expressed their support, Great Wisdom Immortal Mother and the rest had to follow this order.

The immortals did not conceal their traces anymore, they flew towards Ice Crystal grotto-heaven with their fastest speed.

The grotto-heaven entrance opened as Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch flew in anxiously, while the rest followed.

Ice Crystal grotto-heaven was already in chaotic battle, Demon Judgment Board flew around like a meteor, slaughtering everything in its path, totally unstoppable.

The rank six and seven snowman Gu Immortals in Ice Crystal grotto-heaven were nowhere to be seen, they were controlling the formation to unleash a blizzard on Demon Judgment Board, but the effect was very minimal.

Suddenly, Demon Judgment Board shot out a sharp blood red light that landed on the control area of the formation.

The snowman Gu Immortals quickly put up their defenses, the blood red light seemed to be reflected by a mirror as it changed directions and shot elsewhere.

Boom!

There was a loud sound as heaven and earth shook, the blood red light exploded as the sky turned red. For the radius of several thousand li, the snowy and icy plain got completely obliterated.

"Ah, my blizzard icy plain!" Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch saw this and became overwhelmed with anger.

This icy plain was the largest gathering spot of the snowman race in Ice Crystal grotto-heaven, now that it was destroyed, nearly ten million ordinary snowmen died a terrible death.

The blizzard icy plain carried special significance to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch personally.

His coming-of-age ceremony was held in this blizzard icy plain.

Back then, his father had brought the young Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch to the periphery of the icy plain.

"You are an adult now, my son. The icy plain you see here is the location of your trial. You need to survive seven days here to pass the trial, you will be qualified to become a Gu Master and awaken your aperture."

The young Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch looked at this vast plain and felt lost, fear appeared in his eyes.

His father observed his expression and said: "Fear is normal because you might likely die here. The trial is fair, you need to experience the danger of death in order to be qualified to become a Gu Master. Even as a Gu Immortal, I cannot protect you from this, I can only give you a suggestion."

"What is that?" The young Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch asked.

"It is too difficult to live alone in the icy plain for seven days, there is barely any hope." His father shook his head: "But there are many snowman tribes in this icy plain, if you can follow the traces to find them, they will protect you."

"But I don’t know these people." The young Ice Crystal was worried.

His father explained meticulously: "Don’t worry, the snowman tribes will protect every person who is stranded, because these people will end up protecting the entire race in the end. They will definitely help you, my son, if you succeed the trial, regardless of your achievements, you will need to protect our entire race. This is how a snowman lives!"

As expected, the young Ice Crystal survived for three days and nights in the icy plain, chasing after the traces of snowmen tribes.

At the moment of life and death, he crawled his way to a hunter’s tribe near the periphery and was discovered, managing to survive.

The tribe took him in and healed him for free, welcoming him to become a member of their tribe.

Even though the young Ice Crystal left in the end, his experiences in that tribe were deeply etched into his heart, it affected him for the rest of his life until now.

After he became rank eight and inherited the title of Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, becoming the owner of the grotto-heaven, he developed the blizzard icy plain and made the sparse icy plain grow abundant with resources, the lives of the snowmen living in it improved greatly, their numbers increased gradually.

But now, it was all ruined!

All ruined.

By a killer move of a strong foe that affected the entire blizzard icy plain.

Not only were Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s efforts ruined entirely, his memories also became just memories now, he could no longer find them in real life.

Anger and hatred rose in his heart, burning intensely.

For a moment, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch became silent, he took in a deep breath.

The air in Ice Crystal grotto-heaven was always so cold, it was still extremely cold now.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch suddenly remembered his father’s teachings: "The tribe will definitely help you, my son, if you succeed in the trial, regardless of your achievements, you will need to protect our entire race. This is how a snowman lives!" "

Indeed.

It is time for me to protect my race.

Rumble!

At the next moment, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s aura erupted, creating an intense blizzard as he charged towards Demon Judgment Board.

All of the Gu Immortals behind him were shocked.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was actually so courageous!

"Reinforcements from the two heavens are here." Inside Demon Judgment Board, Gu Yue Fang Zheng took in a deep breath as his expression turned grim.

Many people had arrived, among which were various rank eight Gu Immortals.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was only rank seven but he was not flustered, all of his battles before this had tempered his own confidence and determination.

But the bigger reason was also the fact that he had absolute confidence in the rank eight Immortal Gu House, Demon Judgment Board!

"You created a grand commotion, but can you fight Demon Judgment Board?" Gu Yue Fang Zheng smiled coldly, instead of using any killer move, he directly used Demon Judgment Board to charge ahead.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch gritted his teeth, he was forced to retreat.

He was an ice and snow path Gu Immortal, he did not cultivate transformation path or strength path, how could he resist an Immortal Gu House with his body?

"Let’s join the battle too!"

"Quick, work together and help vice alliance leader."

The two heavens alliance shouted and attacked at once.

Seeing this, Gu Yue Fang Zheng moved Demon Judgment Board away to retreat from them, pulling some distance agilely.

Blood red light flickered in Demon Judgment Board, killer moves were unleashed. The immemorial rock monster became slower, the eggman Gu Immortals were covered in blood, they had to save themselves instead of assembling the ancient battle formation. The incomplete Black Emperor Building from Strange Hair grotto-heaven was also waiting at the back, not daring to contest Demon Judgment Board directly.

The other Gu Immortals were even less useful, even though there were many rank eight Gu Immortals, they were all scared about losing their lives, only using long ranged killer moves instead. Once the enemy got close, they would prioritize escaping first.

It was a disunited bunch!

This phrase appeared in Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s mind, he felt angry and anxious.

Ice Crystal grotto-heaven had nothing to do with them, they would not risk their lives for it. The only person that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch could rely on now was himself.

"I can only use that move now!" Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch made up his mind.

"Master, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s group is about to lose, should we help them?" Soul path Gu Immortal An Xun asked Spectral Soul secretly.

On this occasion, Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven sent him here, Spectral Soul came along and lurked in secret.

"Hehehe, they fought like this despite having so many rank eight Gu Immortals. The two heavens alliance is a joke." Spectral Soul laughed: "No need to be anxious, that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch has other tricks up his sleeve, let’s wait for now."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch floated in the sky, his aura surged continuously as his clothes fluttered with the wind.

Around him, countless traces of frost energy gathered, whipping up a storm.

Such power surpassed ordinary rank eight killer moves, once Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch succeeded in activating it, the power would definitely shake heaven and earth. Fang Zheng sensed this, he wanted to use Demon Judgment Board to obstruct it.

"Let’s lend Ice Crystal a hand!"

"Stop Demon Judgment Board!"

The Gu Immortals of the two heavens were not that useless after all, they quickly went ahead to block Demon Judgment Board.

At once, all sorts of killer moves were unleashed, it was like a display of fireworks.

Demon Judgment Board was obstructed by the bombarding killer moves, but at the crucial moment, a flash of blood red light shot out, about to land on Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was still activating his killer move, he did not move.

At the crucial moment, An Xun opened his immortal aperture’s entrance and let out an immemorial soul beast.

The immemorial soul beast moved quickly, standing in front of Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and blocking the blood red light entirely.

With a loud sound, an explosion occurred.

The immemorial soul beast growled in pain, half of its body was destroyed, it fell towards the ground.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch immediately looked towards An Xun with gratitude. The aura on his body was calming down, he had evidently passed the most dangerous moment, his killer move preparation was already done.

"Immemorial soul beasts have no blood, Demon Judgment Board’s blood path killer move had little effect." An Xun was very excited as he said: "Master, if not for your reminder, I would not have been able to block this blood red light, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch would have been in trouble."

"No." Spectral Soul analyzed: "The killer move that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch is using contains deep profundity, during the activation process, he gains an increased level of defense, even if he was hit, he would only be injured, the killer move activation would not fail."

"Heavenly Court! I’ll let you have a taste of my race’s unique killer move — Extreme Ice Crystal Light Immortal Suppression Coffin!" Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch shouted as all of the aura surging around him became completely concealed.

At the next moment, his entire body exploded and spread out into countless frost lights.

The frost lights shot out with extreme coldness! Everywhere they went, air would freeze into ice crystals before falling to the ground.

Fang Zheng felt something amiss, he wanted to activate Demon Judgment Board but how could his speed match the frost lights?

Almost at the same moment, Demon Judgment Board got hit by countless extreme ice crystal lights.

Crack crack.

Every crystal light that hit Demon Judgment Board turned into a small piece of ice attached to Demon Judgment Board.

Countless crystal lights shot towards it from all directions, Demon Judgment Board had nowhere to dodge, instantly, layers of ice started to form all over it.

Fang Zheng’s heart sank, he activated Demon Judgment Board and used a killer move to melt the ice layers.

But his speed could not match the rate at which the freezing was occurring, very soon, ice that was five feet thick formed all over Demon Judgment Board.

"Oh no, the thicker this ice layer is, the greater the effect of the frost lights that land!" Discovering this, Fang Zheng turned pale with shock.

This move was unavoidable from the start, it was quite powerful, but its true strength came much later. The longer it dragged on, the stronger this move would be!

Fang Zheng quickly tried to move Demon Judgment Board, expending the remaining rank eight immortal essence to activate Demon Judgment Board’s strongest killer move.

Blood red light spread out, a layer of ice quickly melted.

Next, the frost lights seemed to react, they quickly went towards the area that Fang Zheng was trying to break out from and made Demon Judgment Board’s ability much weaker.

The Gu Immortals were all stunned.

"Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch is actually so powerful!"

"He actually sealed Heavenly Court’s rank eight Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board with his own strength!"

"This is incredible, what is the name of the move?"

"Extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin!"

At once, all of the immortals muttered the name of this killer move, engraving it to their heart.

"This is the unique killer move of the snowmen from ancient times, hehe, to think that they have actually obtained a racial inheritance already." Spectral Soul who was inside An Xun laughed lightly.

An Xun understood after hearing this: "So this is a move from the snowman racial inheritance, no wonder it is so strong! Wait, no, can ancient killer moves still be used in the current era? The world now is very different from the past, wouldn’t such antique moves be outdated already?"

"Hehehe." Spectral Soul chuckled: "Back then when variant humans ruled the world, they had countless killer moves, those moves that were specially chosen to be kept in their racial inheritances are naturally more outstanding in many ways. Taking this extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin for example, its core is not an Immortal Gu but the variant human using it."

Spectral Soul’s depth of knowledge was not ordinary, he had once searched countless souls in the Door of Life and Death. Many of these souls came from the Olden Antiquity or Remote Antiquity Era, some were even from the Immemorial Antiquity Era.

Thus, Spectral Soul had a lot of information about these eras.

Even though his attainment levels had all fallen to rock bottom, his memories were still intact.

Like what Spectral Soul said, extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin was somewhat similar to Wu Yong’s unlimited wind killer move. When using unlimited wind, Wu Yong would expend his own wind path dao marks. As for extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin, not only would it consume Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s ice and snow path dao marks, it would also cost him his lifespan.

As the core killer move of the snowman Gu Immortals, extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin was not very affected by the progression of eras. At the same time, any other races’ Gu Immortals could not use this move even if they had it.

Fang Zheng’s forehead was already covered in sweat.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch displayed battle strength that far surpassed Fang Zheng’s expectations. The great Demon Judgment Board was actually sealed in ice, there was little hope of escaping.

Even if Fang Zheng wanted to fight Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, he had no way to do so.

Because Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had already turned into countless frost lights, this was the superiority of extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin killer move.

Seeing as Demon Judgment Board was about to be completely sealed in ice, at this time, a phoenix cry could be heard.

Following a loud sound of crashing waves, Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui arrived.

It turned out that while fighting Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, Fang Zheng had already informed Heavenly Court’s Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui.

Bai Cang Shui was originally cleaning up the battlefield, she could leave immediately. As for Prince Feng Xian, he gave up some gains there and rapidly came to reinforce Fang Zheng.

The two rank eight Gu Immortals saw Demon Judgment Board which was trapped, they shouted as one unleashed torrents of golden flames, while the other sent out huge waves.

The ice was attacked from the inside and outside, it could not last any longer as the external layer of ice quickly cracked, Demon Judgment Board which was inside got ready to retaliate.

The two heavens’ Gu Immortals saw this and wanted to attack but Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui suppressed them instead.

Even though they had many more rank eights than Heavenly Court, it did not matter.

In Gu Immortal battles, numbers were not the most crucial. Even though the two heavens had many people, they could not cooperate, their killer moves often interfered with each other. About half of their strength was limited because of this, even before they hit any enemies.

But if they were to fight alone, they would be fearful and cowardly, they would focus on preserving their own lives, unwilling to take any risk or get into danger.

Of course, the other reason was that Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui were elite rank eights with excellent battle strength. They were able to become Heavenly Court members, they naturally surpassed other rank eights.

The situation was in a deadlock, Spectral Soul acutely sensed that the ice layer was weakening, he instructed An Xun: "Quickly let out the soul beast army, lend your Immortal Gu to me now."

"Yes master!" An Xun did not hesitate, he quickly followed the instructions.

The soul beast army came out and attacked.

Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui did not care about them at first, they used two killer moves in succession, but the soul beast army split up and moved fluidly like water, dodging most of the killer moves’ effects.

Next, from the soul beast army, three immemorial soul beasts flew out to attack Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui.

As the two sides fought, the immemorial soul beasts were naturally unable to resist the two Heavenly Court immortals, but the immemorial soul beasts had the army to support them, at crucial moments, killer moves would help them out as well.

Even though Bai Cang Shui and Prince Feng Xian had the upper hand, the soul beast army successfully restrained them. They could not help Demon Judgment Board like before, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s frost lights began to regain their footing.

"This soul path rank seven immortal is quite talented!"

"I will go kill him!"

Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui communicated, the former moved as he spit fire, creating a path within the soul beast army as he charged towards An Xun.

An Xun ’turned pale with fright’, shouting: "He is coming, protect me!"

The two heavens’ Gu Immortals knew that enslavement Gu Immortals were most vulnerable to direct attack, they quickly responded.

Prince Feng Xian charged without stopping, he broke through all of the obstacles, but because of these obstruction, An Xun managed to pull some distance between them.

"You cannot escape." Prince Feng Xian smiled coldly as he charged again.

Spectral Soul would not personally take action in this public environment, he controlled An Xun’s body to retreat while using the other Gu Immortals to obstruct Prince Feng Xian.

Prince Feng Xian’s advancement was ferocious, the two heavens’ immortals were all shocked by his aggressiveness.

But Bai Cang Shui shouted: "Feng Xian, quickly kill him."

Prince Feng Xian gritted his teeth, he did not expect An Xun to be so hard to catch.

At this time, the frost light successfully trapped Demon Judgment Board again, the thick ice coffin sealed the rank eight Immortal Gu House at its center.

"Oh no!" Seeing this, Bai Cang Shui and Prince Feng Xian’s hearts sank.

Seeing that Heavenly Court’s side was in danger, at this time, heaven and earth shook, qi currents surged as the world roared.

"Qi tide again!" Spectral Soul snorted coldly.

Ice Crystal grotto-heaven had already been broken through when Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui attacked, it was connected to the outside world.

At this moment, qi tides surged in the outside world, instilling into the grotto-heaven harshly.

The qi tides implicated the battlefield, wherever it reached, people fell to the ground.

Ice Crystal grotto-heaven’s defensive immortal formation could not last any longer, it shattered, many snowman Gu Immortals fell into mortal danger.

The frost light around Demon Judgment Board flickered as it hesitated for a moment. But immediately, the ice crystal lights shot towards the snowman Gu Immortals as they turned into countless ice tubes that protected them.

But this way, Demon Judgment Board’s pressure lifted greatly. Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui saw this and quickly made their move, breaking the remaining ice layers and saving Demon Judgment Board.

The two immortals went into the Immortal Gu House, Demon Judgment Board left the battlefield rapidly while resisting the turbulent qi tides.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The grand qi tide soon filled up the whole of Ice Crystal grotto-heaven.

Spectral Soul sighed deeply, this was really a pity. he wanted the two sides to fight to their deaths before he reaped the rewards, devouring Gu Immortal souls was much more helpful than absorbing soul cores after all.

But his scheme was ruined by this qi tide.

"I do not have Dang Hun Mountain, I lack guts Gu, I can only devour soul beasts and soul cores. But this takes time to digest, it is not like guts Gu which can directly raise my soul foundation."

"Why the coincidence? Not long ago, when Qi Sea Ancestor and Wu Shuai fought, a qi tide appeared. This time, another qi tide showed up."

Thinking about this, Spectral Soul had a realization: "Don’t tell me that fighting between Gu Immortals will attract qi tides?"

Spectral Soul was only making a guess, he was not certain.

"It is a pity that my qi path attainment level is just ordinary. Otherwise, I will be able to come to a conclusion."

He had soul search and soul devouring methods, but these methods could not directly raise attainment levels. The only way to instantly raise one’s attainment level was through absorbing true meaning. The attainment levels that Spectral Soul had at his peak were all gained through actual cultivation from the memories he had soul searched, it was not easy to reach that level.

"Forget it."

"An Xun performed well this time, with such achievements, he might likely receive Wu Shuai’s audience."

"By staying in his body, I can get closer to Wu Shuai. There might even be a chance to enslave Wu Shuai and take Dragon Palace!"

Spectral Soul’s current plan failed, he quickly came up with a new plan.

He had a deep desire towards Dragon Palace which contained dream path Immortal Gu!

Amidst the surging qi tides, frost lights gathered into Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s aura was weak, his face was pale, the price to activate extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin was very high.

But he had almost singlehandedly sealed Demon Judgment Board, he was the biggest contributor to this victory.

The two heavens’ Gu Immortals came to visit him, their gaze was different from before.

Strength was the determining factor towards one’s status. Undeniably, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch who had extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin killer move far surpassed the other rank eight Gu Immortals of the two heavens in battle strength.

"Even though I saved Ice Crystal grotto-heaven, our race’s unique killer move was exposed." Even though he forced Heavenly Court to retreat, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was not happy.

Right now, he could only console himself that this move was very hard to counter, it could still be his trump card for the time being.

"Friends, I am not injured, I only need to rest. I hope everyone can help to protect my grotto-heaven." Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch said.

"Sure, sure."

"We are all part of the two heavens alliance, this is not a problem."

"Everyone, we will do our best to defend Ice Crystal grotto-heaven!"

The Gu Immortals of the two heavens resisted the surging qi tides in the grotto-heaven while Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch focused on repairing the hole created in the grotto-heaven’s aperture wall.

Even though the qi tides were powerful, with the cooperation of all the Gu Immortals, they soon settled down.

Because they had taken action swiftly, the qi tides did not cause much losses to Ice Crystal grotto-heaven.

"Vice alliance leader, take a look, we found something!" Great Wisdom Immortal Mother flew over to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch with some unexpected news.

A moment later, the immortals of the two heavens also arrived at the area.

They saw a fruit that was the size of a hill floating in the air. This fruit was translucent, it was completely formed from heaven and earth qi, it was shaped like a gourd, or a peanut.

"This is a qi harvest fruit?"

"After the qi tides appeared, people often found these qi harvest fruits produced. If Gu Immortals get them and use them in the immortal aperture, they can rapidly soothe the heaven and earth qi and hasten the progress of the heaven and earth qi fusion."

"But ordinary qi harvest fruits are just as large as a horse carriage. Why is this qi harvesting fruit so huge?"

The two heavens’ immortals discussed but could not come up with an answer.

"Master, is this really a qi harvest fruit?" An Xun asked Spectral Soul: "If it is, isn’t this Ice Crystal grotto-heaven benefiting from a disaster? As long as it absorbs this huge qi harvest fruit, will Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s immortal aperture be modified completely, he will no longer be affected by the qi tides?"

"This is a qi harvest fruit indeed, but whether it is a blessing or a disaster is unknown for now." Spectral Soul chuckled to himself.

As expected, when Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch tried to take this qi harvest fruit, he was shocked to find a deeper secret.

"Oh no!" Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s expression turned even more pale: "This qi harvest fruit is still growing, it is absorbing my grotto-heaven’s heaven and earth qi to grow further. If I take it away now, it will cause a huge commotion in the grotto-heaven, living beings will die, and an even more turbulent qi tide will appear."

The immortals gasped, after getting Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s permission, they quickly used investigative methods.

"We cannot let this qi harvest fruit continue to grow, who can help me get rid of this hidden threat? I will not be stingy on rewards." Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had a solemn expression.

But the Gu Immortals looked at each other, they were all helpless.

Almost everyone could pull out the qi harvest fruit by force, but that was harmful to Ice Crystal grotto-heaven, its foundation would be affected.

And according to their deductions, directly destroying the qi harvest fruit would create a new qi tide that would create a second qi harvest fruit later.

This way, to get rid of this threat permanently without harming Ice Crystal grotto-heaven, the difficulty was very high.

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother suggested: "We can’t do it because we do not cultivate qi path, but what about Lord Alliance Leader?"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had a look of worry, he sighed deeply: "Right now, we can only ask Lord Alliance Leader for help."

Wu Shuai soon received Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s request for help.

"My memories are limited, I did not know that the qi harvest fruit would become like this. Maybe the main body knows more things."

Wu Shuai quickly reported the information that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch gave him to Fang Yuan’s main body.

"Oh? The hidden threat of the two heavens’ grotto-heavens have been found, this is much earlier than in my previous life." Fang Yuan’s main body naturally knew about this.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, the two heavens’ Gu Immortals had also worked together, they attacked many places and caused a lot of trouble for the five regions.

Due to the qi tides, the five regions’ Gu Immortals were greatly restricted. But the two heavens’ Gu Immortals were able to move around, they were less affected by the qi tides.

Furthermore, when Gu Immortal battles reach a certain level, qi tides would occur.

Even though the two heavens’ Gu Immortals had low battle strength, with the help of the qi tides, they could defeat the five regions’ Gu Immortals.

But good times did not last long, soon, the two heaven’s Gu Immortals found that qi harvest fruits started to appear in their own grotto-heaven headquarters.

These qi harvest fruits used the grotto-heaven’s heaven and earth qi to grow, they were like stubborn pests, if left unattended, they would grow endlessly and eventually destroy the entire grotto-heaven world.

"Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch fought against Heavenly Court and caused the qi tides to appear in his grotto-heaven, that is the reason why qi harvest fruits appeared earlier than the previous life."

Fang Yuan sent the information to Wu Shuai, suddenly, he had a thought as he gained a burst of inspiration.

"Wait!"

"Maybe I can use these qi tides to deal with heaven’s will."

His situation was really bad now.

The main problem was the heaven path dao marks, he could not refine them in the short time, while these dao marks generated heaven’s will.

The heaven path dao marks had no ill intentions towards Fang Yuan but heaven’s will wanted to kill him, it tried all sorts of ways to destroy his sovereign immortal aperture.

And worse was that if Fang Yuan did not get rid of the heaven’s will, after accumulating to a certain level, even if the sovereign immortal aperture remained shut, the grotto-heaven’s heaven’s will could resonate with the five regions’ heaven’s will and expose his identity.

Once Fang Yuan’s location was exposed, if he stayed in qi sea, his cover as Qi Sea Ancestor would be blown.

However, it was difficult for Fang Yuan to get rid of heaven’s will.

The sovereign immortal aperture was too huge, Fang Yuan did not know where to start. He could not predict the natural developments of the Heavenly Dao, he could not know where heaven’s will would be created.

"I should try to let the qi tides rampage in my sovereign immortal aperture. Like a washing machine, they might be able to cleanse all of the heaven’s will away."

As Fang Yuan thought about it, he found that this was a very possible idea to execute.

It seemed dangerous but it was possible to use the two threats against each other, with his qi path and wisdom path foundation, it was a realistic solution.

Of course, whether this method could succeed or not, until it was used, Fang Yuan could not know for sure.

"If only I still had wisdom Gu, that would be great."

Wisdom Gu provided unlimited inspiration, with the light of wisdom, Fang Yuan could quickly and efficiently develop a killer move that could make use of the qi tides.

At the same time, in Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

"This is the center of the grotto-heaven!" Luo clan’s three Gu Immortals were all injured, they reached this place after much difficulty.

"What... what an incredible qi harvest fruit..." Luo Mu Zi was lost for words, the other two immortals were filled with shock.

According to the three immortals’ deductions, the center of Qi Jue grotto-heaven should contain the most valuable thing in the entire grotto-heaven.

At this moment, the three immortals saw that there was a tiny and exquisite qi harvest fruit here, it was extremely vivid, the surface had flowing lights that flickered dazzlingly.

It was the size of a gourd but it contained genuine rank nine immortal material aura. It had surging waves of vitality resembling the ocean, it pressed down on the hearts of the Luo clan Gu Immortals.

"This qi harvest fruit is not ordinary at all, it contains deep secrets, we need to research upon it."

"Strange, qi harvest fruits are produced by the qi tides, why is it hidden by Demon Immortal Qi Jue and kept here?"

"Unless he predicted that in the future, there would be disasters like the qi tides?"

"Take action!" Luo clan’s three immortals were talking when suddenly, they heard a shout, several variant human Gu Immortals showed up and attacked.

Luo clan’s three immortals were caught off guard, they were swept into a battlefield killer move instantly.

"Oh no, an ambush!"

"Someone else found Qi Jue grotto-heaven?"

"Who are you?"

Luo clan’s three immortals shouted.

The leader of the variant human Gu Immortals was about the size of a thumb, there were translucent wings behind him, this was a miniman Gu Immortal.

"Hmph, Luo clan immortals, I, Xiao He Jian, found this place twenty years before any of you." The miniman Gu Immortal smiled coldly as he said: "Attack, kill them all!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Days later, in the headquarters of Southern Border’s Wu clan.

Wu Yong stood at the peak of a mountain, he slowly opened his eyes.

In front of him were three mortals. They were all tied on a wooden pole, they were all unconscious.

Immortal killer move — Farewell Friend Wind!

Wu Yong breathed in deeply, his preparations were completed, he unleashed this peculiar killer move.

Without the emergence of any unique wind, the three mortals in front of him started to disintegrate, their skin, flesh, and bones scattered with the natural breeze. In an instant, even the clothes of these mortals vanished, nothing was left.

Wu Yong showed a satisfied smile at last.

During this period, he had modified farewell friend wind, the results were quite good.

Farewell friend wind was a wind path killer move with human path effect, it originally needed the user to touch the target’s body and say some parting words.

But now, these limitations were all modified by Wu Yong and removed successfully.

Even though the current farewell friend wind still needed the user to become friends with the target before usage, the range had greatly increased, it was much more usable now.

Wu Yong had lost a lot of his wind path dao marks during the fate war from using the killer move unlimited wind and his foundation fell.

But during this period of recuperation, he made some gains instead in terms of comprehension, his wind path attainment level rose to a new level. Because of that, he could modify farewell friend wind.

Wu Yong was not just satisfied with modifying farewell friend wind, the rise in his attainment level also meant a comprehensive rise in power.

Farewell friend wind was just one of the aspects.

"Next, I will modify the other killer moves, and even Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building! After modification, my battle strength will rise back to normal, it can even surpass my former level."

Right when Wu Yong thought about his future, an information path Gu worm flew towards him.

Wu Yong took it and read the information, his brows rose as he showed a surprised expression.

He was originally going to stay in closed cultivation for some time, but after receiving this information, he halted his plan.

Returning to his guest hall, he met with the two Gu Immortals that were looking for him.

These two Gu Immortals had the same clothing, they wore deep green short sleeve shirts and long black pants, they also had jade colored leg bindings.

Any Gu Immortal familiar with Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world would know that this was Luo clan’s signature attire.

Of the two Luo clan Gu Immortals who came, one was an old man with a bitter expression, another was a middle aged Gu Immortal with a pale face, he was evidently injured.

"Luo Zu (Luo Ran) pays respects to Lord Alliance Leader." Luo clan’s two Gu Immortals saw Wu Yong and immediately paid respects.

The Southern Alliance was created long ago, Wu Yong was the leader of this alliance.

Of the two Luo clan immortals, Luo Ran was a general of Luo clan, he was a space path expert with peak rank seven battle strength, he was an arrogant person. As for Luo Zu, he was a person of authority, he was the current first supreme elder of Luo clan. These two were so respectful to Wu Yong now, it was clear that they needed his help.

Wu Yong nodded: "We can sit and talk."

After the two Luo clan Gu Immortals sat down, Wu Yong asked directly: "What is the matter with Qi Jue grotto-heaven?"

Luo Zu breathed in deeply before explaining the entire situation. In summary, when a Gu Immortal of Luo clan explored white heaven using an Immortal Gu House, he discovered Qi Jue grotto-heaven by chance. Luo clan had been exploring it for many years, finally, with the help of the qi tides, they made a breakthrough and entered the central area of Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

But when they were about to obtain Qi Jue’s true inheritance, they were ambushed by variant human Gu Immortals. The three Luo clan Gu Immortals exploring it were caught off guard, the situation did not look good.

Thankfully, their leader was the space path expert Luo Ran, he used his trump card and escaped with the other two immortals.

The variant human Gu Immortals did not let them go, they pursued these three Luo clan immortals.

After Luo clan was informed, they immediately sent their Immortal Gu House to reinforce them, the two sides fought intensely at the heavenly wind qi wall. Even though those variant human Gu Immortals did not have high battle strength, their leader, the miniman Gu Immortal Xiao He Jian, was very outstanding. At the same time, the variant human Gu Immortals had an Immortal Gu House too, Luo clan was forced to escape back to Southern Border pitifully.

After passing the heavenly wind qi wall, the variant human Gu Immortals were afraid that Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world would gang up on them, they gave up on the pursuit.

Luo clan’s immortals were defeated, they returned to recuperate in their headquarters, feeling angry and helpless. After discussing for some time, they felt that they could not obtain Qi Jue grotto-heaven themselves, they should get the help of other forces.

After hearing their explanation, Wu Yong understood the situation.

"Due to the rampant qi tides, the grotto-heavens in the two heavens are exposed, this created the two heavens alliance. The alliance mainly comprises variant humans, they have Wu Shuai as their leader."

"This group of variant human Gu Immortals that defeated Luo clan must have a close relationship with the two heavens alliance."

"The two heavens alliance first occupied an area in Eastern Sea, Wu Shuai fought with Qi Sea Ancestor. After that, Heavenly Court attacked them, their vice alliance leader Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch forced Demon Judgment Board to retreat, creating a huge commotion."

"If Luo clan looks for Hou clan or Yao clan, even though they are super forces, they cannot deal with the colossal two heavens alliance. When the situation aggravates, they will still have to look for me in the end. Thus, they came to me from the start."

Thinking so, Wu Yong smiled, promising them: "Our Southern Border’s righteous path is united, now that Luo clan has faced a setback, as long as you are part of the Southern Alliance, we will help you out. As the leader of the Southern Alliance, I, Wu Yong, will lend my strength as well!"

Luo clan’s immortals quickly responded: "Alliance Leader is righteous and mighty."

But there was no joy on their faces.

This concerned a huge treasure like Qi Jue’s true inheritance, Wu Yong was sure to agree to help without doubt.

The important things were how to get true inheritance of Qi Jue, how would Luo clan and Wu clan cooperate, if they obtained the true inheritance, how would they split it?

Those were the true details to discuss.

While Luo clan’s immortals and Wu Yong were negotiating, Wu Shuai also received the audience of a Gu Immortal.

"The one asking to see me is a miniman Gu Immortal named Xiao He Jian?" Wu Shuai squinted.

"Yes." The reporting Gu Immortal explained: "This immortal has extraordinary strength, his reputation is long established, even though the Gu Immortals of the two heavens do not interact much with each other, we have all heard of this Xiao He Jian. His strength is likely on par with vice alliance leader."

The vice alliance leader was naturally Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

This time, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch used his immortal sealing coffin killer move to defeat Heavenly Court, his reputation surged, everyone in the two heavens alliance knew about it.

"What is the reason for his request to meet me?" Wu Shuai asked purposely.

"This subordinate... does not know." The reporting Gu Immortal lowered his head: "He says that he has a huge fortune to give to Lord Alliance Leader, he wants to join our two heavens alliance."

Wu Shuai smiled.

In the past, he did not know, but after the main body sent him some information of the previous life, he learned about this person.

This Xiao He Jian was quite a formidable figure in the five hundred years of his previous life, he was indeed an expert among the variant human rank eight Gu Immortals, he was able to contest Heavenly Court's members evenly.

Speaking of which, in the five hundred years of his previous life, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch did not have much reputation.

In terms of battle strength, Xiao He Jian and Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch were on the same level. Even though the two heaven's Gu Immortals were not very outstanding, they still had several incredible experts. If not for this, they would not have caused problems to the five regions in the previous life.

"Xiao He Jian explored Qi Jue grotto-heaven, he probably got into a conflict with Luo clan. Now that the Southern Alliance was created in advance and Luo clan suffered a loss, they would definitely find their allies, they might approach Wu Yong."

"Xiao He Jian has several grotto-heaven forces allied with him, but how can he resist the great Southern Alliance? Thus, he came to me, by joining my two heavens alliance, not only can he protect himself, he can also use my strength to resist the Southern Alliance and obtain Qi Jue's true inheritance."

"But this Qi Jue grotto-heaven is a dangerous area, in my previous life, Qi Jue grotto-heaven self-detonated, killing countless Gu Immortals in the process. The two heavens alliance also suffered a huge setback from this, the losses were so severe they never recovered."

Wu Shuai guessed that Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch died during this Qi Jue grotto-heaven explosion, otherwise, with his strength, he would not have stayed so low profile the entire time.

Considering this, Wu Shuai smiled coldly, thinking: "This Xiao He Jian is crafty, he wants to borrow our strength and use us to kill his enemies, since he wants my help, let's have a good negotiation with him."

"Go." Wu Shuai stopped thinking about it as he sat on his main seat, telling the Gu Immortal: "Tell Xiao He Jian to come in."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1998 Exploring Qi Jue Grotto-Heaven

The sky had a unified color, it was a sight of bluish jade.

Great winds howled, killing intent gathered.

Two Immortal Gu Houses faced each other.

One was a majestic palace shining in golden light, it was elegant and grand, this was Dragon Palace. The other was a two storey bamboo building, it was filled with vitality and looked delicate but exquisite, this was Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

The two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses contained many Gu Immortals inside them.

Wu Shuai sat at the main seat with two rows of Gu Immortals from the two heavens below him. On his left was Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and others, while on his right was the recently joined wood path great expert, miniman Gu Immortal Xiao He Jian. As for Lady Cold Ash, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord, and others, they were mixed among these two groups.

Not long ago, Wu Shuai met with Xiao He Jian, after some negotiation, they set off for Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

On the other side, Southern Alliance’s Wu Yong also knew the importance of speed, he quickly mobilized Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, bringing Wu clan’s and Luo clan’s immortals to immemorial white heaven.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was much faster than Dragon Palace, Wu Yong left later but arrived earlier, yet Qi Jue grotto-heaven could not be easily entered. While Wu Yong and the rest waited, Wu Shuai arrived with Dragon Palace.

The two sides met in white heaven, they immediately got into a deadlock.

“Wu Yong.” Wu Shuai spoke within Dragon Palace, his voice resounding in the battlefield: “Qi Jue’s true inheritance is in front of us, why don’t we each send three people out to fight, the winner will be the side which has two victories, they will get the true inheritance, while the loser gets the grotto-heaven, how is that?”

“Wu Shuai, why are you being so cowardly now?” Wu Yong snickered from within Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building: “Let the person fortunate enough under the circumstances get Qi Jue’s true inheritance, let’s fight for it using our respective abilities!”

As he said this, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building shot out like a rainbow, piercing into a certain opening within Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

Wu Yong had waited for a long time, he finally found an opportunity to get inside.

Even though Wu Yong brought Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building with him, and had Wu clan’s and Luo clan’s elites around him, in terms of scale, he could not match Wu Shuai. Not just in quantity, but the quality of their high end battle strength also differed greatly.

If they really used the rules Wu Shuai set to determine a victor, in one-on-one combat, Wu Yong’s side would be disadvantaged.

Furthermore, when Gu Immortals fight, heaven and earth qi would be disrupted, qi tides would appear. By then, the two heaven’s Gu Immortals would be less affected, their advantage would rise again.

Wu Yong was a formidable leader, how could he let his side fall into a disadvantage from the start?

“Lord Alliance Leader, there is no time to waste, let’s set out!” Xiao He Jian urged anxiously.

Wu Shuai looked at the openings in Qi Jue grotto-heaven, even though these openings varied in size, they were all milky white in color, formed from moving qi currents.

Earlier, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building had gone through the largest opening to get inside Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

After looking at it for a while, Wu Shuai understood some of its profundity.

“These openings vary in size, they are increasing in numbers, I’m afraid this is the immortal aperture entrance of Qi Jue grotto-heaven.”

Fang Yuan’s main body and clones had varying amounts of memories but they shared the same attainment levels. Wu Shuai also had the main body’s qi path attainment level, he could see it more clearly than others.

Just these holes alone made Wu Shuai’s eyes brighten as he felt some comprehension.

“Normally, immortal aperture entrances are closed, only used to connect the inside world and the outside. Qi Jue grotto-heaven’s entrance is unique, it is the most efficient way of maximizing the effect of that connection between worlds using the immortal aperture’s entrance. I wonder what gains I can make inside?”

Thinking so, Wu Shuai’s curiosity rose as he moved Dragon Palace towards the openings.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, this Qi Jue grotto-heaven was destroyed by self-detonation, it greatly affected the two heavens alliance and caused it to falter in the future. Many rank eight Gu Immortals died during this event.

Qi Jue grotto-heaven was dangerous, this was also why Fang Yuan did not take the initiative to explore it before the fate war.

But now that Qi Jue grotto-heaven was exposed, with an alluring true inheritance of Qi Jue inside and Dragon Palace’s protection, Wu Shuai also had nothing urgent to attend to, he could put effort into this now.

Dragon Palace got past the narrow opening, rapidly arriving inside Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

The immortals saw that all around them, there were white colored qi currents that surged and moved.

“Qi Jue grotto-heaven’s structure is quite special, it is not like ordinary grotto-heavens, there are white qi currents everywhere. These qi currents form into tunnels and countless tunnels turn this grotto-heaven into a maze, it is like the intestines of a giant. We need to get through these tunnels quickly and find the correct path to the central area. Qi Jue’s true inheritance is hidden there!” Xiao He Jian explained when they got in.

All the immortals inside the palace listened attentively.

Xiao He Jian did not say everything he knew earlier, to prevent Wu Shuai from leaving to snatch the true inheritance alone after getting the information, he had kept many secrets, he promised Wu Shuai that he would explain the situation after they arrived.

Dragon Palace moved around in the white qi current tunnels, quickly reaching a crossroad. On the left and right were two paths, they were identical in size and shape.

“How do we determine the correct route?” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch asked.

Xiao He Jian replied: “I cannot be sure about it either, we need to test the paths. The only rule here is that the closer we get to the center, the more valuable the monsters and resources within the qi current tunnels. At the most central area, the qi harvest fruit has reached rank nine level!”

“What about Luo clan?” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch asked another crucial question.

“Luo clan does not have a more accurate method either. In fact, their exploration speed was far slower than us. It was because of the qi tides that they gained an opportunity to get past many difficulties and reach the central area rapidly. Looking at our previous progress, my tribe was extremely close to Qi Jue’s true inheritance, we were just two obstacles away.” Xiao He Jian sighed, he felt somewhat of a pity regarding it.

The immortals heard this and relaxed slightly.

“In that case, even though they came inside first, in terms of advantage, we have the upper hand.” Great Wisdom Immortal Mother analyzed.

“Don’t be careless, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building is much faster than us.” Wu Shuai said plainly.

He chose a random path and moved Dragon Palace along it.

Along the way, the qi current tunnels became wider and taller, many qi path living beings were in them, creating special living environments that were isolated from each other.

Roar!

Suddenly, a group of qi monsters emerged from the thick tunnel walls, surrounding Dragon Palace.

These qi monsters had all sorts of strange forms, resembling bulls, goats, fish, or birds. However, their colors were similar, being close to orange-yellow.

“These are qi monsters created from luck qi.” Xiao He Jian said: “Even though there are no immemorial qi monsters, they are quite troublesome to deal with. Without luck path methods to protect us, if we kill them, our luck will fall.”

Immortal killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

At the next moment, a gush of smoke flew out from Dragon Palace, wherever it went, all of the luck qi monsters were swept away, suppressed within Dragon Palace.

“Uh.” Xiao He Jian was stunned but he soon reacted as he said respectfully: “A dream path killer move, truly worthy of Dragon Palace!”

As they continued, they saw an immemorial qi monster, it was pitch-black like a whale, its body was colossal.

Xiao He Jian had a grim expression: “Be careful, this is an immemorial qi monster created from hard qi, thankfully it is sleeping now. I’d suggest that we detour around it, let’s not…”

Boom!

At the next moment, Dragon Palace accelerated and crashed into the immemorial qi monster.

Dragon Palace shook intensely but the immemorial qi monster was pierced through, it retaliated in anger.

Dragon Palace charged and crashed into it again, and again!

The immemorial qi monster broke apart, turning into lumps of black hard qi. Next, Wu Shuai stored the hard qi in his palace.

“You can all split the spoils.” Wu Shuai kept most of the gains and passed the rest to the Gu Immortals.

“Alliance Leader is mighty!”

“All hail Dragon Palace!”

“Subordinate thanks Lord Alliance Leader.”

“With Lord Alliance Leader here, so what if they have Wu Yong?”

At once, the immortals expressed their gratitude as all sorts of praises erupted.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch smiled as he looked at Xiao He Jian, saying with deep meaning: “Try not to be shocked at these minor situations, it will cause us to lose face.”

Xiao He Jian had to nod in acknowledgment but he still felt deep shock internally: “Even though I saw the fate war, I can only see how powerful Dragon Palace is after witnessing it in action personally. If Dragon Palace is so strong, what about Duke Long, Fang Yuan, and Feng Jiu Ge?”

At once, Xiao He Jian’s emotions became rather complex.

On one hand, the stronger Dragon Palace was, the more hopeful he was. But on the other hand, as a great expert, seeing such a difference between them and seeing such a powerful existence made him feel some dejectedness.

Along the way, wherever they went, Wu Shuai took all of the loot that they could gather.

Qi Jue grotto-heaven was really the land of treasures for qi path, it was like the qi sea of ancient times. Not only were the qi path resources here in huge quantities, they also varied greatly in variety, there was basically anything one needed here.

Wu Shuai purposely displayed his might to intimidate Xiao He Jian. As a result, he exposed more secrets, according to him, when exploring this place, he found a Qi Breath Peak! Qi Jue grotto-heaven actually had such an extinct qi path resource, but regrettably, Xiao He Jian only took a glance at it, he did not have the ability to take it.

“This is the center of Qi Jue grotto-heaven?” Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building had just arrived at the destination, before Wu Yong could rejoice, his pupils shrunk: “Hmph, they weren’t slow at all.”

Behind Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, Dragon Palace arrived.

At the center of Qi Jue grotto-heaven was a huge hollow sphere. The sphere had many qi pillars that interweaved with each other, creating countless tunnels.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and Dragon Palace entered this area, it was like two flies had entered a beehive.

The qi pillars continued to move around, some were fast while others were slow, they even affected each other. Under Wu Yong’s control, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building moved carefully and avoided the qi pillars, taking sharp turns along the way.

“These qi pillars are special, they are at least rank eight immortal materials. We cannot touch them easily or unnecessary problems will occur.” Xiao He Jian quickly said.

This place was not suited for fighting, thus, in order to kill the three Luo clan immortals, Xiao He Jian had arranged a battlefield killer move.

But in the end, Luo clan’s Luo Ran was a space path Gu Immortal, he brought the other two immortals away by piercing through the battlefield, using this special terrain to get free from Xiao He Jian and the rest, escaping.

“No need for such trouble.” Wu Shuai waved his hand.

At the next moment, a dragon roar was heard, the Evil Dragon descended.

Boom boom boom!

The Evil Dragon charged ferociously, wherever it went, qi pillars broke and shattered, it created a path for Dragon Palace to move along from behind it.

“Hmm?” Wu Yong frowned.

Xiao He Jian’s mouth was open, he became dumbstruck.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

1999 Qi Jue, Xi

“Great!”

“Lord Alliance Leader is so powerful!”

“This is the power of our two heavens alliance!”

The morale of the immortals within Dragon Palace surged, they quickly cheered.

Evil Dragon charged ahead with an unstoppable might, Dragon Palace followed behind it casually.

“This dragonman brute!” The eyelids of Luo clan’s first supreme elder Luo Zu were twitching as he gritted his teeth.

The two clans’ Gu Immortals within Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building felt immense pressure. Evil Dragon was charging relentlessly like a mobile mountain range, in comparison, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was very delicate and small.

And most importantly, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building had to dodge the qi pillars, its advancement route was long and winding. But Evil Dragon moved forward in a straight line without obstruction, the distance between them was shortening.

“What do we do now?” The Southern Alliance’s Gu Immortals turned pale.

Wu Yong smiled lightly: “Wu Shuai uses strength to suppress others, he is making full use of his advantage. If I were him, I would do the same. Everyone, after the fate war, not only was Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building fully repaired, I even strengthened it further, we can block Di Zang Sheng for a period of time. Even though they are strong, we do not need to bother with them, we just need to get Qi Jue’s true inheritance before them.”

“Lord Alliance Leader is right!” The immortals nodded in agreement.

Any sort of conflict had its goal, Wu Yong could clearly see that their objective was Qi Jue’s true inheritance. Whoever gets it would be the winner, even if they suffer some losses while competing, so what?

But the Evil Dragon was really too strong.

It was the immemorial desolate beast with the strongest battle strength!

In the five regions and two heavens, there were less than five people who could fight this Evil Dragon head-on!

While Wu Shuai and Wu Yong were chasing after their goals, a third rank eight Immortal Gu House stealthily arrived outside Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

It was Demon Judgment Board!

Demon Judgment Board was controlled by Fang Zheng, not only did Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui come along, even Che Wei, who had recovered from his injuries, and information path great expert Zhou Xiong Xin were here.

Fang Zheng took the initiative to attack the two heavens previously, even though Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch forced them away, their gains were still huge. Prince Feng Xian and Bai Cang Shui obtained abundant loot from plundering the two grotto-heavens.

Even though Fang Zheng lost in battle, he had only lost some reputation of Heavenly Court, they did not lose benefits.

Heavenly Court was originally not sure of Qi Jue grotto-heaven’s event, after all, immemorial white heaven was huge, even during the qi tides when Qi Jue grotto-heaven exposed itself, Heavenly Court could not find it immediately.

But don’t forget that Night Heavenly Wolf Lord under Wu Shuai had submitted to Heavenly Court. The fact that Xiao He Jian joined the two heavens alliance was not concealable, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord learned of Qi Jue grotto-heaven’s secret and informed Heavenly Court as a result.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was very famous in history, he was a terrifying great expert who opposed Limitless Demon Venerable!

Especially when he cultivated qi path, in the current environment where qi tide surged, all new qi path resources were emerging in huge quantities continuously. The five regions’ forces wanted to research more into qi path.

Heavenly Court was no exception!

Even though they had Primordial Origin’s true inheritance, if Heavenly Court could gain Qi Jue’s true inheritance, it would mean that other forces could not get it. With this difference, Heavenly Court would have a great advantage against others.

Thus, Fang Zheng did not rest for long, he received Qin Ding Ling’s orders and brought four rank eight Gu Immortals to move to white heaven using Demon Judgment Board, arriving at this place.

“This should be Qi Jue grotto-heaven, but what is going on?” Fang Zheng had just arrived but he saw a shocking change.

He saw countless holes appearing, milky white qi currents surged endlessly as they moved around, the many new openings started to connect the grotto-heaven to the outside world.

These openings increased in numbers and continued to surface, there were too many of them, this would be a fearsome sight to others.

After more than ten breaths, a huge silhouette of Qi Jue grotto-heaven appeared. On the surface, there were countless white qi currents surrounding it, within the qi currents, there were countless holes breathing in and out.

The surrounding air was sucked into the grotto-heaven by a terrifying formless force. As for the loud noise that it created, the Heavenly Court immortals felt deafened all of a sudden.

“A huge change is occurring in Qi Jue grotto-heaven!”

“Wu Shuai and Wu Yong might have fought in the grotto-heaven.”

“What to do?”

Prince Feng Xian and the rest looked towards Fang Zheng, he was still their leader in this expedition.

Fang Zheng felt pressured, the choice in front of him was a difficult one. At this moment, he fell into hesitation, what should he choose?

At the center of Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

Boom boom boom!

Qi pillars continued to break and shatter as noise erupted endlessly.

The Evil Dragon destroyed everything in its path, but such a sight did not last long, after the qi pillars were destroyed, they turned into strong qi currents that intertwined together, surrounding the body of the Evil Dragon as they pressured it, trying to attack and kill it from all directions.

The Evil Dragon roared but its speed continued to fall, it was facing an unprecedented pressure from ahead.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and Dragon Palace were not having an easy time either.

These qi currents were like tsunami waves that constantly attacked, these two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses were like small rafts trying to float in this treacherous storm.

Huge qi currents collided and caused the two Immortal Gu Houses to shake, sometimes, the Immortal Gu Houses even spun around on the spot.

There was a shot of deep blue qi current, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building quickly tried to dodge it. But the deep blue qi current was too large and fast, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building exerted all of its strength before leaving and escaping after three breaths of time.

“Lightning qi!” Southern Border’s Gu Immortal gasped: “I’ve never seen such colossal lightning qi, this quality is on par with rank eight immortal materials.”

Lightning qi could only be collected during stormy weather.

It was not hard to collect lightning qi, but high ranked lightning qi immortal materials were very rare.

Rank eight lightning qi was even rarer.

If the situation were not so urgent, Southern Border’s Gu Immortals would want to collect the lightning qi.

“This is all Wu Shuai’s fault! By causing rampant destruction, Qi Jue grotto-heaven has gone into a berserk state.” Luo Zu gritted his teeth.

Wu Yong’s expression turned dark: “Qi Jue’s true inheritance is our primary goal!”

The lightning qi from earlier caused Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building to lose some Gu worms, Wu Yong quickly replenished them.

These immortal materials had incredible dense dao marks, this environment was very dangerous. If there were wind path qi current immortal materials, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building would have an incredibly good time here.

The change in Qi Jue grotto-heaven’s situation made the environment much more dangerous, but on the whole, Wu Yong’s situation had actually improved.

Because Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building suffered much less obstruction compared to Wu Shuai’s side.

Dragon Palace was much slower than Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

There were sharp blade qi, black hard qi, dark death qi… all sorts of qi currents were all at rank eight level. Wu Shuai gritted his teeth as he drove Dragon Palace forward, resisting them by force.

The Evil Dragon was left in the dust already.

Its body was too big, it was resisted by at least ten air currents or more, it could no longer be of use here.

“This is the foundation of Qi Jue grotto-heaven…” Wu Shuai had a solemn expression, his gaze flickered with uncertainty.

He had the disadvantage now but the situation had not been decided.

The two heaven’s Gu Immortals were also speechless at the moment. If not for Dragon Palace’s protection, who would dare to travel in this dangerous place? Many rank eight Gu Immortals felt their own weakness and insignificance at this moment.

“Demon Immortal Qi Jue is truly worthy of being the person who rivaled Limitless Demon Venerable in the past!”

The two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses did not give up, they moved towards the center with much difficulty, trying to obtain Qi Jue’s true inheritance.

But outside the grotto-heaven, Fang Zheng no longer had to hesitate.

“Let’s retreat first and observe the situation.” Fang Zheng ordered, Demon Judgment Board quickly retreated.

Prince Feng Xian and the rest were silent, they agreed with this decision.

Because right now, a change occurred again, raging qi currents appeared all over the place, a new qi tide had begun!

Fighting during a qi tide would cause the Gu Immortals to suffer backlash, even Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were no exception.

“It seems our earlier deduction was right.”

“The heaven and earth qi in our immortal apertures differ from the outside world, thus be it opening the immortal aperture entrance or fighting intensely, when it hits a certain level, a new qi tide will occur.”

“Demon Immortal Qi Jue is a five regions Gu Immortal, because of his foundation, now that his immortal aperture’s entrance is basically wide open, along with the fight between Wu Shuai and the Southern Alliance inside, they created a gigantic qi tide.”

“Let’s watch by the side and try to reap some benefits from the outcome.”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals conversed as they kept a close eye on Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

The powerful qi tide went through the openings and rapidly entered Qi Jue grotto-heaven.

Wu Shuai and Wu Yong instantly felt huge pressure as the wild qi currents became even stronger. Even though the rank eight Immortal Gu Houses were powerful, these qi currents made them helpless, they were often blown away to random places.

Bang… bang… bang!

As the two Immortal Gu Houses approached the center, they started to hear loud thumping sounds.

“What is going on?”

“What qi currents are causing these sounds?”

“No, this is someone’s heartbeat! Quickly look!”

The two Immortal Gu Houses arrived at the center of Qi Jue grotto-heaven, all of the Gu Immortals saw this sight —

At the point where all the countless qi currents merged was the eye of the storm, this place was completely tranquil and safe.

In this tranquil environment, there was a tiny and delicate qi harvest fruit, it continued to absorb the surrounding qi currents.

Countless qi currents of all types got absorbed into the qi harvest fruit and their traits were assimilated, becoming a part of the fruit.

Different from the previous situation, there was the form of a baby inside the qi harvest fruit!

The qi harvest fruit was like a woman’s womb, a human baby was curled up inside, growing and getting larger by the second.

“What is happening?”

“What in the world is going on?”

“This is a monster! It is actually absorbing rank eight immortal materials endlessly to strengthen itself!”

“It is about to be born, quickly stop it!”

The immortals’ expressions changed, Wu Shuai wanted to unleash the killer move dreamy light smoke, but the qi harvest fruit seemed to have sensed it, it shook and self-detonated.

The baby was successfully born, he had tiny arms and legs like he was malnourished.

At this time, the silhouette of a concave land appeared above his head. This concave land contained deep profundities, it gave off a rank nine aura. But this aura was far more perfect and refined than the incomplete Human Sea that Wu Shuai had previously.

This was a secluded domain of heaven and earth!

The baby raised his arms, he seemed to be using both arms to carry the silhouette of this secluded domain of heaven and earth.

“Xi—” He shouted out in a long tone.

At the next moment, all of the surrounding qi currents moved into the silhouette of the secluded domain of heaven and earth like river tributaries returning to the ocean.

The qi currents moved with incredibly shocking speed, within a few breaths of time, all of them went into the mysterious secluded domain of heaven and earth. Wu Shuai and Wu Yong could not even sense a single qi current around them anymore.

In the sky, only the baby and the two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses were left.

“We’re outside again.” Luo Zu found himself in the outside world.

“No, the whole of Qi Jue grotto-heaven turned into qi currents and got absorbed by him.” Wu Yong was unable to conceal his shock, everything was unexpected in this situation, he felt like he was used.

This was someone’s scheme!

“Who are you?” Wu Shuai shouted from within Dragon Palace.

The baby had grown into a boy, he breathed in deeply, the silhouette of the secluded domain of heaven and earth above his head went into his nose.

Next, he looked around and saw Dragon Palace and Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building, he also found the hidden Demon Judgment Board.

The boy smiled as he started to recite: (Chapter 1319)

“Climbed mountains to seek immortality, danger present in every step.

Dust specks float like light, dark Gu lurk in heart.

A dream like golden jade, thousands of years of loneliness.

Five regions and nine heavens, everything is in one breath[1].”

As he recited, his voice was young but his tone was aged: “Who else can I be? Yours truly, Demon Immortal Qi Jue.”

“Demon Immortal Qi Jue?!” The immortals were all shaken.

“Wait, if he is Demon Immortal Qi Jue, then the secluded domain of heaven and earth from earlier, it is ‘Xi’ from u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e?” Within Demon Judgment Board, Zhou Xiong Xin suddenly had a thought.

u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e had two very mysterious secluded domains of heaven and earth, there was little description regarding them.

One was ‘Hu’, the other was ‘Xi’.

[1] Breath written as qi in Chinese.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2000 - Might of the Demon Immortal

Demon Immortal Qi Jue!

The mysterious Gu Immortal stated his own identity, the entire place went silent.

The three sides’ Gu Immortals were shaken. According to history, Demon Immortal Qi Jue was someone who had been evenly matched with Limitless Demon Venerable in battle at some point!

Wu Shuai, who was inside Dragon Palace, frowned, he realized many things: “It seems that in my previous life, Demon Immortal Qi Jue failed to revive. Otherwise, there would not have been zero information about Demon Immortal Qi Jue's revival. There are two possible reasons, one is that fate Gu was not destroyed then, the second is that Spectral Soul succeeded in refining sovereign immortal fetus Gu, from all the signs known, he had already infiltrated Heavenly Court and gained complete control of the situation. He would not allow someone like Demon Immortal Qi Jue to revive."

Thinking of this, Wu Shuai snorted coldly as he willed.

Roar—!

At the next moment, the Evil Dragon moved.

Earlier, because of the countless qi currents obstructing it, the Evil Dragon was covered in injuries. But now that the whole of Qi Jue grotto-heaven was absorbed by Demon Immortal Qi Jue using an unthinkable method, the Evil Dragon regained freedom, it charged towards Demon Immortal Qi Jue with imposing aura again.

Once it moved, wild winds started blowing.

The Evil Dragon's colossal body was like a moving mountain range, engulfing heaven and earth.

Forget about Demon Immortal Qi Jue's tiny child body, even the great Dragon Palace could not match the Evil Dragon's body.

"Hehehe, come." Demon Immortal Qi Jue's vision was filled by Di Zang Sheng.

He was not flustered, instead he smiled calmly.

He did not dodge, he directly extended his small hand towards Di Zang Sheng.

Immortal killer move – Great Qi Grasp!

With a loud sound, endless white qi currents shot out of Demon Immortal Qi Jue's body, forming a giant hand with five fingers.

The hand was only the size of an Immortal Gu House at first, but it slowly inflated to the size of a hill. Three breaths of time later, the entire qi current hand had expanded to the size of the Evil Dragon's head.

But the milky white qi current hand continued to grow!

Di Zang Sheng had already reached it.

Bam.

The two sides collided, but out of everyone's expectations, Demon Immortal Qi Jue's qi current hand was easily destroyed in one move.

Di Zang Sheng did not slow down, continuing to pursue Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not dodge, he continued to face Di Zang Sheng casually.

Di Zang Sheng only charged for a few seconds before slowing down, it growled loudly like it was in great pain.

"My great qi grasp can form and scatter at will. It can grab mountains and seas if it takes form, but it can also invade organs when it scatters. How will you deal with it?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue stood arrogantly and said.

The immortals were shocked.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue used one move to subdue Di Zang Sheng, he had true pseudo venerable battle strength!

“Another demonic path expert!”

“Sigh, with the destruction of fate Gu, the world will go into chaos.”

“Demon Immortal Qi Jue had died more than a million years ago, that source of chaos Fang Yuan gave him the chance to revive!”

Inside Demon Judgment Board, Heavenly Court’s immortals gritted their teeth, they had ugly expressions.

After the fate war, the righteous path fell while the demonic path surged!

Duke Long, who was the pillar that held up Heavenly Court, died, Feng Jiu Ge, whom they entrusted their hopes to, betrayed them, while Fang Yuan, who was the culprit behind the destruction of Fate, still remained scot-free!

And now, there was this Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

There were sad cries as Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals realized that the future of the five regions and two heavens became much bleaker now.

They did not even think of recruiting Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Although in history, he had opposed Limitless Demon Venerable, there was also no possibility that he would ever join the righteous path.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue, just the demon in his name stated the obvious. After all, the saying goes: There are only wrong names, not wrong titles.

“Xiao He Jian, what are you really up to? You created such a huge enemy for our two heavens alliance!” Within Dragon Palace, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch suddenly shouted.

Xiao He Jian could not rebuke him, his face turned pale.

He felt a lot of lingering fear but also relief. He was relieved that he joined the two heavens alliance, otherwise, with just himself, he would have become the sacrificial lamb of Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s revival already.

“This is a scheme, I am a victim too.” Xiao He Jian voiced his innocence.

“This is a scheme, Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s scheme.” At the same time, Wu Yong sighed within Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building.

Luo Zu sighed deeply: “Demon Immortal Qi Jue is a qi path cultivator, but he actually predicted the events a million years into the future? What sort of level did he reach?!”

Wu Yong frowned slightly, he looked through Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building towards Dragon Palace.

He could understand Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s arrangements, but he had some doubt in his mind, did Wu Shuai know about this secret?

Now that Wu Yong recalled it, Wu Shuai had been controlling the Evil Dragon to create destruction all over the place, was it because he was straightforward and wanted to use brute force, or was he purposely trying to destroy Demon Immortal Qi Jue's arrangements?

Evidently, it was because of the Evil Dragon's rampant destruction that Demon Immortal Qi Jue was revived ahead of time.

Wu Yong was a formidable person with a sharp mind, the more he thought about it, the more he suspected Wu Shuai's actions.

"It is possible that Wu Shuai knows about Demon Immortal Qi Jue's existence. After all, he has some sort of relationship with Fang Yuan, and Fang Yuan possesses Spring Autumn Cicada, it is not strange that he knows some secrets." Wu Yong thought of Fang Yuan.

"Did Fang Yuan come here?" Inside Demon Judgment Board, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals were guessing.

Fang Yuan was a person who had been reborn, if he knew about the secret of Demon Immortal Qi Jue's revival, he might likely hide somewhere to make his move!

Precisely because of this concern, Demon Judgment Board did not take action. Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was also waiting for something to happen.

But Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not want to let them off.

"Today is the wonderful day I revived, come, come, let me see what methods the Gu Immortals of this current era have!"

Demon Immortal Qi Jue had the appearance of a boy but his tone was that of a man proud of his experience, he actually attacked again.

At once, milky white qi currents gushed out, filling the world with a tsunami, Heavenly Court, the Southern Alliance, and Wu Shuai's side were all enveloped.

"Hmph! Old scoundrel Qi Jue, don't be too arrogant, we are not afraid of you, we are just wary that Fang Yuan might be hiding somewhere." Wu Yong spoke, using Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building to retreat immediately.

Fang Zheng's voice resounded from Demon Judgment Board: "Precisely! Demonic path senior, even though you are famous in history, you cannot compare to the number one demon in the current world, Gu Yue Fang Yuan! This person destroyed my Heavenly Court's fate Gu, without him, you would not have revived."

"Fang Yuan? I will remember this name." Demon Immortal Qi Jue stretched his arms, qi currents shooting out rapidly: "But none of you will escape!"

He was like a bottomless hole, constantly shooting out milky white qi currents.

These qi currents were unique, ordinary immortal killer moves could not destroy them. At once, three rank eight Immortal Gu Houses fell into a predicament, their speeds fell drastically.

Wu Shuai snorted, he controlled Dragon Palace to advance instead of retreating, attacking Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue laughed loudly: "Good, someone with actual guts."

A trace of smoke flew out of Dragon Palace.

Immortal killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not dodge it, he was hit by the smoke, instantly disappearing.

Wu Shuai had a perplexed expression, he was like a fisherman spreading his web, he used all his strength to cast the web but in the end, he only caught some bubbles without any fish.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s body appeared again, this time, he was far away.

He looked at Dragon Palace deeply with an expression of wariness: “Good, I’ll remember this.”

He gave up on Dragon Palace, he went to attack Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and Demon Judgment Board instead.

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building emitted wild winds while Demon Judgment Board shot out powerful blood red lights, they both displayed their might.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s moves were mostly grand and wide ranged, he managed to suppress the two Immortal Gu Houses.

After more than ten rounds, bright light shined in his eyes as he shouted: “Good, good, good, to think that people have already created wind path and blood path, this is truly exciting. I did not waste my effort in arranging for my revival in this great era!”

“Other than you people, who else is there in this world?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue asked.

Wu Yong smiled coldly: “Ignoring anyone else, Eastern Sea has quite the formidable person. He also cultivates qi path, his battle strength is definitely higher than yours. He stays in qi sea, he calls himself Qi Sea Ancestor, he is the undisputed leader of the current Eastern Sea righteous path!”

“Oh? There is a qi path cultivator? Back in my day, qi path was already declining, to think that it would still linger until today! Very good, it seems I will need to meet him.” Demon Immortal Qi Jue laughed loudly in joy.

Wu Yong continued: “Other than Qi Sea Ancestor, there is also a sound path demonic immortal named Feng Jiu Ge. He has also defeated the Evil Dragon in one move with much greater ease than you. In the battle earlier, he betrayed Heavenly Court openly and now his whereabouts are unknown, but Heavenly Court does not dare to release an arrest warrant for him.”

“Feng Jiu Ge? Good, I’ll remember him. Anyone else?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s eyes shined.

Wu Shuai interrupted at this moment: “Get past us first, old man.”

As he said that, Dragon Palace flew over again.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue smiled lightly as he pointed: “Lower qi.”

Milky white qi currents gushed out and caused Dragon Palace to fall in altitude.

At this time, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building carried a storm with it as it charged towards Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue pointed another finger: “Upper qi.”

Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building was swept away by the qi currents, flying upwards uncontrollably.

Demon Judgment Board arrived in front of him.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue stretched out two fingers as he pointed at this house: “Upper-lower breathless qi.”

Demon Judgment Board erupted with a loud sound as it stayed stationary in midair. The Gu Immortals inside had changes of expressions, the immortal essence that they tried to instill became choppy, this rank eight Immortal Gu House was like a dying old man who could not take proper breaths at this moment.

“Juniors, I’m not going to play with you anymore. Go and spread the word, tell Fang Yuan, Qi Sea Ancestor, and Feng Jiu Ge that I will visit them soon. They can’t hide from me.”

Demon Immortal Qi Jue had just said this when his figure vanished, he did not appear anymore.

All of the immortals were wary now, after getting rid of the remaining milky white qi currents, they confirmed that Demon Immortal Qi Jue had truly left the scene.

“Do we pursue him?” Someone within Dragon Palace asked.

Wu Shuai snorted coldly: “Where did he go? Why don’t you tell me?”

The Gu Immortal who asked turned pale, he lowered his head, not daring to say another word.

“Let’s retreat.” Wu Yong smiled, not forgetting to salvage the morale: “Even though we did not have much gains this time, fighting against someone like Demon Immortal Qi Jue is worth the trip after all.”

“Sigh! After Fang Yuan comes Demon Immortal Qi Jue, I really do not know which great expert will revive next!” Fang Zheng was filled with worries, he mobilized Demon Judgment Board to quickly leave the battlefield.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2001 - Recruiting Qi Sea Ancestor

Demon Immortal Qi Jue revived, he suppressed Heavenly Court, Southern Border, and the two heavens. News of this battle soon spread in the entire Gu Immortal world, everyone in the world was shocked.

“To think that Demon Immortal Qi Jue revived!”

“The world is really going into chaos, I wonder how many great experts will revive next?”

“Demon Immortal Qi Jue was able to revive, there’s no reason the venerables cannot, right? Oh heavens!”

“No wonder they said Great Dream Immortal Venerable would be the strongest venerable in history. Being able to emerge as a venerable in this terrifying era means they have to be incredibly strong.”

While countless Gu Immortals made their guesses, the three parties involved were actively recuperating.

Dragon Palace.

“Sigh, I thought that I would be able to obtain Qi Jue’s true inheritance, to think that it was a trap!”

“Now that Demon Immortal Qi Jue has revived and we actually offended him, what do we do now?”

“It is all Xiao He Jian’s fault, he caused our two heavens alliance to fall into this awkward position.”

Most of the variant human Gu Immortals looked towards Xiao He Jian with animosity.

Xiao He Jian smiled coldly, he knew that this was the act of Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, attempting to suppress him.

He had just joined the two heavens alliance but because of his great strength and reputation, he was already threatening Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s status, this was the cause of the animosity from the opposing faction.

“Have you all said enough?” At the main seat, Wu Shuai snorted coldly in displeasure.

Instantly, Dragon Palace became silent, all the immortals shut up.

At this point, Xiao He Jian showed a shameful expression, he bowed to Wu Shuai, saying in a tone of sincerity: “Lord Alliance Leader, I am at fault…”

But before he continued, Wu Shuai interrupted: “Enough, keep quiet. Even if Demon Immortal Qi Jue comes, we have the Evil Dragon and Dragon Palace, what is there to fear? The most urgent matter now is the qi harvest fruits in your grotto-heavens.”

“Demon Immortal Qi Jue revived using a qi harvest fruit, this thing clearly contains secrets and profundities, we have not explored it sufficiently. How are we going to get rid of the qi harvest fruits in your grotto-heavens? If we do not act quickly, your grotto-heavens will be in danger.”

“Indeed, indeed.”

“Lord Alliance Leader is right!”

“My grotto-heaven has already started producing a qi harvest fruit, this fruit is absorbing the heaven and earth qi of my grotto-heaven, it cannot be removed by force.”

“The same situation is happening in my grotto-heaven.”

“Right now is not the time to take revenge on Heavenly Court or defend against Demon Immortal Qi Jue, the most important thing is to get rid of the qi harvest fruits in our grotto-heavens.”

At once, all the immortals in the palace changed expressions as the topic was shifted to the qi harvest fruit.

However, this talk bore no fruit, the palace soon became shrouded in an atmosphere of panic and fear.

Even Xiao He Jian was the same.

Even though his grotto-heaven had not produced any qi harvest fruits yet, at this rate of development, it was only a matter of time.

Even Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch did not have the mood to compete with Xiao He Jian.

His Ice Crystal grotto-heaven's qi harvest fruit was the largest, he was in the greatest danger.

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord also showed a bitter expression.

His grotto-heaven was not spared either, a qi harvest fruit was growing in it. Even though it was still small now, it was growing at a terrifying speed.

But Night Heavenly Wolf Lord was much less anxious than the rest.

“If the two heavens alliance cannot resolve it, I can get help from Heavenly Court.”

At this crucial juncture, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord felt that his decision to join Heavenly Court was extremely wise!

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord had a lot of expectations towards Heavenly Court.

After all, the first generation Heavenly Court Immortal King was Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, he was a qi path cultivator.

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord secretly informed Heavenly Court about this as he sought help from them.

Heavenly Court had sent Fang Zheng and the rest to Qi Jue grotto-heaven but Demon Judgment Board did not enter it at all, he did not know what happened inside.

After getting Night Heavenly Wolf Lord's information, Heavenly Court learned the truth.

Qin Ding Ling placed huge emphasis on Demon Immortal Qi Jue's revival using the qi harvest fruit, as well as the disaster occurring in the two heavens' grotto-heavens! This was because Heavenly Court was not exempted, a qi harvest fruit was also growing in it.

She immediately summoned the immortals to research and think of countermeasures.

Heavenly Court had deep foundations, even after the fate war, it was still the number one super force in the world.

Especially when they had Primordial Origin's qi path true inheritance, they had a huge advantage in qi path, they were at the peak compared to all others.

And most importantly, Heavenly Court's research into heaven path was quite extensive, they had great results. Back then, even Limitless Demon Venerable was after their heaven path findings, he made the bet with Star Constellation.

“Heaven, earth, and humans all have veins, humans have human veins, the earth has earth veins, and heaven has heaven veins.”

“The two heavens’ grotto-heavens are all situated on the heaven veins, thus they benefit greatly and the grotto-heavens are nourished by the heaven veins, producing even more resources.”

“However, the world is changing now as qi tides are produced. Qi tides appeared because of the unification of the five regions, the earth veins are becoming one. But the truth is, heaven veins are also merging into one, although the change is not very apparent now.”

Heavenly Court’s immortals found that the whole of heaven and earth was fusing into one. The five regions were just the start, the two immemorial heavens would start fusing together later as well. The five regions and two heavens were all separated originally, their heaven and earth qi were not the same. But with the fusing of the heaven and earth qi across all regions, qi tides would emerge as the places where they merge.

Wherever the qi tides go, abundant qi path immortal materials would be produced, qi harvest fruits were the quintessence of them.

The reason why the two heavens’ grotto-heavens produced qi harvest fruits was because they were situated on the heaven veins, they were facing the brunt of the initial impact.

“That is to say, as long as these grotto-heavens relocate away from the heaven veins, they will resolve the problem of the qi harvest fruit?” Qin Ding Ling asked.

“Theoretically yes, or at least, once they move away from the heaven veins, the growth of the qi harvest fruits in the grotto-heavens will stop.” Heavenly Court’s immortals answered.

Qin Ding Ling frowned: “Once grotto-heavens are placed, they are hard to relocate, unless one has some special method to move them around. Our Heavenly Court is too big, it has the foundation of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s immortal aperture along with the future generations of venerables, and countless immortal apertures of Heavenly Court members, how can we relocate Heavenly Court?”

Heavenly Court became silent, they fell into deathly silence.

“Maybe… Demon Immortal Qi Jue has a method?” Breaking the silence, Fang Zheng spoke.

Qin Ding Ling’s eyes shined with bright light.

That was true, the possibility of this was high!

Since Demon Immortal Qi Jue was able to revive using a qi harvest fruit, his understanding regarding qi harvest fruits should surpass everyone else. But to get him to cooperate with Heavenly Court, how hard would it be?!

“According to historical records, Demon Immortal Qi Jue will definitely not cooperate with Heavenly Court. Rather than him, we have a higher chance of getting Qi Sea Ancestor’s cooperation.”

“Indeed, we cannot resolve Heavenly Court’s crisis alone. To get rid of this qi harvest fruit calamity, we need a qi path great expert.”

“Duke Long had once given Qi Sea Ancestor half a portion of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance. During the fate war, Qi Sea Ancestor did not show up, he kept his promise. There is still hope of our cooperation now.”

“But Qi Sea Ancestor has some relationship with Fang Yuan…”

“In my opinion, this is a small matter. Ever since Qi Sea Ancestor appeared, all his actions state one motive. He wants to be the leader of Eastern Sea’s righteous path, be it the qi sea banquet or the resistance of the two heavens alliance, they show it clearly. His actions do not align with Fang Yuan’s interests, even if they cooperated before, it is not our problem.”

“Can’t our Heavenly Court settle this ourselves?”

“It will be too difficult, ever since the immortal graveyard was destroyed, Star Constellation’s will has not shown up once…”

“If we can cooperate with Qi Sea Ancestor, we might even be able to get him to join Heavenly Court. We really lack someone with pseudo venerable battle strength now.”

Qin Ding Ling sighed as she made her decision: “Let’s try it then.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2002 - Fragment of Xi

Immemorial white heaven.

Aurora lights moved in the air dazzlingly.

Eastern Sea rank seven Gu Immortal Qing Hui Zi flew around in the sky of aurora lights, unleashing immortal killer moves to continuously retrieve these aurora lights.

After gathering the rainbow lights in his hands, he turned them into balls.

The balls were then sent into his immortal aperture and buried in cloud soil. After some time, these aurora light balls would grow and sprout, becoming seedlings. By using lightning water and magnetic sound to water them, flowing light fruits would grow on them.

Flowing light fruits were a rank six immortal material, formed from extremely dense lights, having all kinds of color like red, brown, yellow, green, black, blue, purple.

Qing Hui Zi did not only pluck the flowing light fruits, he had his unique plantation methods. Precisely so, he was one of the three main sellers of flowing light fruits in treasure yellow heaven.

“With the qi tides weakening the heavenly wind qi wall, I can also get past them and explore immemorial white heaven for immortal materials. This is my fortuitous encounter.”

Qing Hui Zi sighed to himself.

Aurora lights were very common in the two heavens, they were produced abundantly.

Qing Hui Zi collected these aurora lights personally, it caused the cost of producing flowing light fruits to fall greatly, he could earn a huge profit.

As Qing Hui Zi collected the aurora lights, he paid attention to the heavenly wind qi wall below him.

He did not have the strength to survive long in immemorial white heaven, he could not even break the heavenly wind qi wall. Thus, he needed to pay attention to it constantly, once the hole created by the qi tides start to close up, he would need to return to Eastern Sea.

It was no joke.

If Qing Hui Zi got distracted and got trapped in immemorial white heaven, with his strength, he would not last until the next qi tide, he would die in this dangerous immemorial white heaven.

One could say that Qing Hui Zi was risking his life to get these aurora lights.

But Gu Immortal cultivation was not easy, even as a rank seven Gu Immortal, Qing Hui Zi needed to take risks to support his livelihood.

“Xi—!”

Right at this time, Qing Hui Zi heard a voice.

Next, winds blew and clouds shook, Qing Hui Zi was shocked to find out that the heavenly wind qi wall below him was being pulled away by a terrifying formless force.

In a few breaths of time, the surrounding tens of li of heavenly wind qi wall got sucked into the whirlpool at the center.

“What is going on?!” Qing Hui Zi was overwhelmed by fear and shock: “Is that an immemorial desolate beast? But I’ve never heard of any immemorial desolate beast with such strength!”

The heavenly wind qi wall vanished entirely, a secluded domain of heaven and earth that had a concave appearance could be seen.

Next, this silhouette of the secluded domain of heaven and earth went into the nose of a Gu Immortal who resembled a boy.

Qing Hui Zi saw this boyish Gu Immortal, his entire body and mind shook, he felt like cold water was poured on him, into the depths of his despairing heart.

“Ah, Demon Immortal Qi Jue!” Qing Hui Zi fell into deep despair: “Why am I so unlucky? I only wanted to collect aurora lights but I ended up encountering Demon Immortal Qi Jue!!”

The battle of Qi Jue grotto-heaven had happened recently but it could not be hidden, the world knew about it already.

Even though the killer move everybody’s vision wasn’t around for all the Gu Immortals to witness the battle themselves, Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s appearance and methods were widely spread already.

In the Gu Immortal world, there were a few people publicly recognized as terrifying beings that had to be avoided at all costs.

The number one person was Fang Yuan.

This demon had countless methods and outstanding strength, he did things without any regard or concern, he was ruthless and cruel, even Heavenly Court had no choice against him.

Wu Shuai was also on the list, he was the leader of the dragonmen, owner of Dragon Palace which enslaved Di Zang Sheng, he bore deep grudges towards humanity.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was a newly added person.

As for Heavenly Court and Qi Sea Ancestor, because of their factions, they would not bully the weak, thus they were not on this list.

After Qing Hui Zi saw Demon Immortal Qi Jue, he recognized the demon, he stared in shock, frozen on the spot like a statue.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue frowned as he looked at his palm.

His palm was tiny and smooth, his body was still small like a boy.

Thinking about his revival, Demon Immortal Qi Jue felt angry and annoyed.

If he had some more time, he would revive perfectly and have the body of an adult. But the Evil Dragon caused great destruction in its movement, he had to revive in advance, it caused his body's growth to be halted, his potential was limited.

After absorbing this heavenly wind qi wall, he finally recovered some losses from the intense battle earlier.

After resting, he was going to set off again.

“Junior, come here.” Demon Immortal Qi Jue looked towards Qing Hui Zi and called out.

Qing Hui Zi shivered, he went towards Demon Immortal Qi Jue with a bitter expression, fearing for his life.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue smiled lightly, he stretched out his finger as an eerie qi current flew out.

The qi current quickly surrounded Qing Hui Zi's body, he wanted to resist subconsciously but Demon Immortal Qi Jue shouted: “Don't move!”

Qing Hui Zi gritted his teeth, not daring to move at all.

He gave up on struggling, he let the qi currents enter his body and move around his soul.

After some time, Demon Immortal Qi Jue absorbed all of the qi currents that entered Qing Hui Zi back into his own body.

Instantly, he received a vast amount of information, he gained a much deeper understanding of the current era.

“This is truly a wonderful era filled with great excitement, interesting!” Demon Immortal Qi Jue's eyes shined as he spoke in amazement.

Next, he instructed Qing Hui Zi: “Hand over your Gu worms.”

Qing Hui Zi's lips twitched, for an instance, he wanted to resist but soon, logic took over his mind, he obediently handed over all of his Gu worms to Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

This action made Demon Immortal Qi Jue reassess him.

After taking away these Gu worms, Demon Immortal Qi Jue inspected all of them, he only took a few glances at Qing Hui Zi’s light path Immortal Gu before he placed his focus on those exceptional mortal Gu.

Especially Gu worms like soul search Gu, Demon Immortal Qi Jue was very interested in them.

At the end, he even returned the light path Immortal Gu to Qing Hui Zi.

Qing Hui Zi was very surprised.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue smiled: “Junior, you are not stupid enough to resist me. Who do you think I am? Why would I be greedy and take your trifling Immortal Gu? Scram now.”

Qing Hui Zi was in disbelief before it turned into deep joy: “Junior will never forget Senior Qi Jue’s magnanimity.”

“Hahaha, I searched your soul, why is there a need to thank me?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue laughed: “Go ahead and hate me, I don’t care. Even though this era is great, in the entire world, in the absence of the venerables, there are few people who I can take interest in. Even though I lack Immortal Gu, I have not sunk down to the level of snatching light path Immortal Gu. I want to take some qi path Immortal Gu!”

Qing Hui Zi instantly had a thought: “Senior, you want to go to qi sea?”

But at the next moment, Demon Immortal Qi Jue waved his sleeves impatiently.

Qing Hui Zi was surrounded by qi currents and could not move, he was sent flying by the movement of the qi currents.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue snorted, he did not look at Qing Hui Zi, he flew towards the direction of qi sea instead.

“I wonder how powerful this Qi Sea Ancestor is, hehe, I hope his qi path Immortal Gu will not disappoint me.” Demon Immortal Qi Jue carried great confidence as he went towards qi sea.

He flew in the sky of Eastern Sea, he was surrounded by qi currents as he moved rapidly across various sea areas.

He did not conceal his traces, causing huge waves along the way, the commotion shook the surroundings, his demonic might was exposed in full view. Along the way, he met several Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, these people scrambled in panic as they escaped.

“Oh?” Halfway through his journey, Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s expression turned to shock as he stopped his movement.

He felt a movement in his secluded domain of heaven and earth.

“Don’t tell me?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue was slightly stunned, he thought of something as joy appeared on his face.

He temporarily put aside the plan to head to qi sea, he changed directions and went southwest instead.

After some time, he arrived at a sea area.

The sky here had many white clouds, shrouding his vision, he could not see any starlight. Even when the sun was blazing, the sunlight could not penetrate the cloud layers, it only made the place brighter.

The surface of the sea was calm but inside it were countless currents. These currents were of all types and forms. They interlinked with one another, they moved in this sea area with absolutely no rhythm or pattern. Without the defensive methods of a Gu Immortal, mortal corpses would be torn to shreds in the currents instantly.

It was the turbulent flow sea area.

After inspecting it closely, Demon Immortal Qi Jue became quite happy: “Wonderful, wonderful. This sea area must have a fragment of Xi, that is the reason why it can create such turbulent currents.”

“To think that my luck would be strong after reviving.”

“I’ll retrieve this fragment first and absorb it before going to find that Qi Sea Ancestor.”

Thinking of this, Demon Immortal Qi Jue plunged into the sea, vanishing from plain sight.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2003 - Qi Jue Suppresses Qi Sea

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The disasters were still ongoing, the situation was slowly moving towards the abyss of doom.

Fang Yuan’s losses were severe. In order to save his resource points, he had already deployed the variant human and human Gu Immortals in his immortal aperture to different areas, they were tasked to take care of the resources and they were even given mortal Gu that could be used to detect heaven’s will.

Along with Fang Yuan’s time path clone and main body working together to get rid of the newly created heaven’s will, he managed to save all the large resource points in the sovereign immortal aperture.

However, as long as the heaven path dao marks were not refined by Fang Yuan, they would continue to produce endless heaven’s will in increasing quantity.

Even though Fang Yuan was using his full strength, he could not stop the situation from aggravating further.

He could only barely protect his resource points now, but the sovereign immortal aperture was too huge, resource points were only a small part of it. In most areas, heaven’s will was produced, moving towards the respective resource points like a huge army.

Fang Yuan knew that this situation was at its most crucial point now!

He could no longer cleanse all the heaven’s will, in order to prevent the grotto-heaven’s heaven’s will from linking with the five regions, he had to create an isolated secret space in qi sea, to prevent heaven’s will from detecting him.

As for the external situation, Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s revival was out of Fang Yuan’s expectations, Demon Immortal Qi Jue said that he would go and meet Qi Sea Ancestor, he was not joking.

There were both internal and external problems!

“Now, it will depend on the effectiveness of this immortal formation.” Fang Yuan’s concentration was invested into this rule path formation.

This formation was situated in Mini Blue Heaven, it floated on its own, it was a modified version of the five regional limit formation.

Fang Yuan had wisdom path attainment, he knew long ago that the situation would progress like this, he made preparations in advance and tried to come up with countermeasures early.

Not long ago, he gained some inspiration and decided to mimic the qi tides to deal with the heaven’s will in his immortal aperture.

And this rule path formation was the fruit of his research.

Rank eight immortal essence was already piled up at the side, stored into the immortal formation. With Fang Yuan’s thought, this huge formation that covered the range of more than ten li started to activate.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh…

The formation created huge winds, as the sounds of the wind resounded in heaven and earth, countless qi currents appeared from the formation, as if the entire sky was covered in steam, it was completely white, one could not see anything.

The formation suddenly emitted profound light. The profound light landed on the white qi and pushed it like a giant hand.

At the next moment, thirty percent of the white steam qi moved forward like a gushing fountain.

The profound light entered the white qi and modified it, causing the scattered white qi to become more concentrated.

Finally, the white qi that was pushed out turned into a qi tide as it swept towards the southeast direction firmly. Along the way, the qi tide was like a brush that cleaned up the surrounding heaven and earth qi in its path.

In terms of strength, the qi tide that Fang Yuan created could not compare to a true one. But its strength was quite amazing already, it could easily take the lives of mortal Gu Masters.

This was also why Fang Yuan set up the formation in Mini Blue Heaven, it was to prevent an accident from slaughtering countless lifeforms, it would cause him a huge loss.

After moving for an hour, this qi tide almost reached the aperture wall boundary of Mini Blue Heaven.

Fang Yuan inspected the results, he found that the heaven’s will that he had specially arranged here was all cleanly removed, not a trace was left. Furthermore, along the path that the qi tide moved, heaven and earth qi were well blended, it was peaceful and calm.

Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, this was good news.

With this formation, he could finally get rid of the huge problem of heaven’s will.

This carried huge significance to him!

If he could not get rid of heaven’s will, he would be trapped inside qi sea’s formation to prevent his location and identity from being exposed to heaven’s will.

The pressure that was weighing down on Fang Yuan dissipated to some extent.

Now that he looked at the qi tide again, he felt that he had a deeper understanding of it.

“Qi tides are created because of the differences in heaven and earth qi. It is like how water flows down a cliff to create a waterfall. The qi tides are similar, because of the disappearance of the regional walls, with the unification of earth veins, the different heaven and earth qi of the five regions merge and cause qi tides to appear.”

“In the future, when heaven and earth qi becomes the same in all five regions, there will no longer be any qi tides.”

“As for the five regional walls? The truth is, they are all qi tides in essence.”

The heaven and earth qi of the five regions were different, thus at the intersection points of these regions, there would be disparity in the heaven and earth qi. But because the earth veins were different back then, the heaven and earth qi could not fuse together like now, they eventually gathered and formed into dense regional walls.

Gu Immortals suffer backlash when using killer moves in the five regional walls, it was similar to being in the qi tides. The reason was that their own heaven and earth qi differed from those in the regional walls.

As for the five regional walls that Tao Zhu researched on for his entire life, they were simply just qi tides!

However, his research was focused on the aspect of rule path. His main result was five restriction profound light qi, from this name alone, it showed a connection to qi path.

Fang Yuan had Tao Zhu’s true inheritance, he had half a portion of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance, along with Qi Xiang’s foundation and his own qi path attainment level, he had immense foundation, Fang Yuan quickly made some progress and obtained gains.

“Next, I will need to modify this formation slightly and scatter the sub-formations all over the aperture, I will send out qi tides to eliminate heaven’s will.”

“The problem of heaven’s will has been settled, but the refinement of heaven path dao marks is still a huge problem.”

But Fang Yuan had to put this problem aside for now, because he had to guard against Demon Immortal Qi Jue, who was coming for him.

The identity of Qi Sea Ancestor was very valuable. During the fate war, Fang Yuan tried his best to conceal it, he did not expose any clues that they were the same person.

In order to preserve his Qi Sea Ancestor identity, Fang Yuan's main obstacle now was Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

On one hand, Fang Yuan used the formation to settle his internal threat, on the other hand, he waited patiently for Demon Immortal Qi Jue to arrive.

According to Fang Yuan's deductions, Demon Immortal Qi Jue was going to come here for a fight during this period of time.

After waiting for some time, one day, a change occurred above qi sea.

White qi waves surged in the sky, they were grand and unceasing, pressing down on qi sea with immense force.

Within the qi waves, Demon Immortal Qi Jue's boyish figure could be vaguely seen, filled with demonic aura.

Soon, his young but confident voice resounded: "Junior Qi Sea, I, Demon Immortal Qi Jue, have come here for you."

"Qi Jue, what is the matter?" Fang Yuan appeared, activating qi sea's formation as he stood on the surface of the sea, looking up and speaking.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue chuckled: "I have just revived, I do not have my Immortal Gu now. I heard that you are the sole qi path great expert at the peak of rank eight, I have come here to borrow some Gu."

"Hahaha, borrow Gu indeed." Fang Yuan laughed loudly, he could feel the arrogance in Demon Immortal Qi Jue's words: "The Immortal Gu are with me, whether you can get them will depend on your abilities."

Demon Immortal Qi Jue laughed as his young face showed deep battle intent: "Good! Junior, I like your personality, face this move of mine."

Immortal killer move – Great Qi Grasp!

Instantly, a milky white qi current hand flew out like a small mountain, pressing down on Fang Yuan.

This was the move that made Di Zang Sheng cry out in pain, it was incredibly profound, able to scatter or take form, Gu Immortals could not deal with it easily.

Fang Yuan breathed in deeply, he had a calm expression that showed no anxiety. He extended his hand and he pushed forward.

Rumble!

A qi wall that was a hundred li long soared up into the sky, it was grand and magnificent.

The qi wall collided into the hand, the hand was forced to retreat, it could not stop the qi wall from flying up.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue smiled lightly, he pointed his finger as the qi current hand scattered, attempting to infiltrate the qi wall in the form of countless currents.

But the attempt failed to do anything.

Fang Yuan’s qi wall was not only huge, it was densely packed, Demon Immortal Qi Jue had no way to penetrate it.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s expression changed at this moment: “This is a powerful qi wall, what is the name of your move?”

Fang Yuan said frankly: “I created this move specially for you, Qi Jue, I have not named it yet. Do you have any good suggestions?”

Demon Immortal Qi Jue squinted uncontrollably as bright light shined in his eyes.

The fact that Qi Sea Ancestor had just created this move was scarier than him having this move for a long time. This meant that Qi Sea Ancestor had very high qi path attainment level, he could observe the battle situation and modify his own qi path killer move successfully to deal with his enemies!

Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not know that Fang Yuan was focused on modifying the five regional limit formation, this qi wall killer move was merely a small part of his effort.

Even though Fang Yuan lost wisdom Gu, he still had abundant wisdom path methods.

As the qi wall continued to rise into the sky, the milky white qi currents that filled the sky had to retreat further upwards.

By the time it reached Demon Immortal Qi Jue, the qi wall suddenly transformed, it turned into two hands, one black and one white, clapping together from the right and left directions.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not dodge, he allowed the black and white hands to grab him.

As the hands started to exert pressure, at the next moment, there was a loud voice coming from within the hands: “Xi—!”

Both hands were instantly absorbed into the silhouette of a concave secluded domain.

This time, it was Fang Yuan’s turn to be shocked, he keenly sensed that the secluded domain of heaven and earth above Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s head was more complete than the last time he saw it.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue knew that ordinary methods could not work against Qi Sea Ancestor, he directly used his trump card.

Secluded domain of heaven and earth — Xi.

Fang Yuan tried to use his methods, all sorts of qi path killer moves attacked Demon Immortal Qi Jue, but Xi Land would absorb them all. It was like a bottomless hole, Fang Yuan could not fill it up no matter what.

With Xi Land above his head, Demon Immortal Qi Jue had the advantage, he could not lose.

He even started to critique Fang Yuan’s qi path killer moves casually.

“This pair of black and white hands is a nice concept, by including yin and yang qi, you can use the attraction force of the two to amplify the power of this move.”

“Your qi path defenses are also quite impressive. Every single thread of your clothes is made of wind qi, are you trying to mimic the heavenly wind qi wall?”

“It is a true pity. If it were before, you would still be a threat to me. But regrettably, I have recently dismantled the turbulent flow sea area and also completely fixed Xi Land. With this, I can counter all qi path methods in the world, Junior Qi Sea, you are no exception!”

“How is it? May I borrow your Immortal Gu now?”

The reason why Demon Immortal Qi Jue gained his reputation was because of this, it countered all qi path methods in the world.

All qi path killer moves would be absorbed by Xi Land, unless the killer move could surpass the limits of Xi Land. But the problem was that Demon Immortal Qi Jue had already fully repaired Xi Land, it experienced a qualitative change in battle strength.

In a way, it was easier for him to deal with Qi Sea Ancestor than Wu Shuai, who controlled Dragon Palace.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2004 Heavenly Court“s Reinforcements

Turbulent white qi covered the sky above qi sea in a chaotic fashion.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue stared down at Qi Sea Ancestor while emitting a grand demonic aura. The phantom image of Xi Land appeared in its full glory above his head, placing him in a highly advantageous position.

"Junior Qi Sea, is my cultivation enough to borrow Gu from you?" Demon Immortal Qi Jue said again.

Fang Yuan felt heaviness.

The previous exchange of moves had already allowed him to understand many details about Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

There was no need to mention the various killer moves possessed by Demon Immortal Qi Jue, his trump card was clearly the secluded domain of heaven and earth, Xi Land. With this secluded domain of heaven and earth, he could counter all qi path Gu Immortals in the world.

If it were other paths, Demon Immortal Qi Jue would not have such huge dominance. But Qi Sea Ancestor’s main cultivation happened to be qi path and was thus suppressed heavily.

This showed Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s nature.

He might be domineering in his actions, but he was not stupid, he knew how to play to his advantage. Thus, after he revived, he did not continue fighting with the three sides and chose to retreat wisely. He then completed his Xi Land along the way and increased his battle strength. Now, he appeared in front of Qi Sea

Ancestor and demanded to borrow Immortal Gu.

The moment he gains rank eight qi path Immortal Gu, his strength would definitely soar and firmly hold its position at the peak of the present age.

With just Qi Sea Ancestor’s methods, Fang Yuan was indeed not Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s match, but he was not panicked.

Fang Yuan always took action after planning first.

He had already known of Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s threat and modified qi sea’s formation. As long as he retreated into the formation, he would be able to resist for some time.

If Demon Immortal Qi Jue charged into the formation, Fang Yuan could detonate this large formation and create an opportunity to retreat.

Speaking of it, Fang Yuan had obtained this detonation method from Fang Di Chang. Back then, Fang Di Chang set a trap for Fang Yuan in Divine Bean Palace, he wanted to sacrifice wisdom path Gu Immortal Suan Bu Jin by detonating the Immortal Gu House inside Divine Bean Palace and thus break through the impasse and refine Divine Bean Palace in one move.

Fang Yuan saw through the scheme and captured Fang Di Chang. After soul searching, he obtained the method of Immortal Gu House self-detonation. He then modified the method and arranged it in qi sea’s formation.

The self-detonation would be extremely powerful, even if it did not threaten Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s life, it could obstruct him for a period of time.

Fang Yuan was very confident about this.

But...

If Fang Yuan used the formation’s self-detonation to retreat, the value of this Qi Sea Ancestor identity would fall sharply.

To preserve this identity, Fang Yuan intentionally restrained himself from using many qi path methods during the fate war. Even unlimited qi sea was used just once.

Were Fang Yuan to retreat, it would mean Qi Sea Ancestor was defeated by Demon Immortal Qi Jue. From then on, Qi Sea Ancestor’s reputation would fall greatly and his appeal to Eastern Sea would lower sharply.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue frowned slightly, he had spoken twice but Qi Sea Ancestor did not respond. His patience reached the limits.

He snorted and was about to continue attacking when a blood red ray of light suddenly pierced through the skies and shot right towards his face.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue dodged quickly and turned around to see Demon Judgment Board appear in the horizon.

"Heavenly Court, you again!" Demon Immortal Qi Jue sneered: "I am not looking for trouble with you but you are instead trying to provoke me. After such a heavy defeat in the fate war, what confidence do you have to act like this?"

"Heavenly Court defends humanity’s righteous path, our actions are not because of confidence but because of our beliefs!" A reply came from inside Demon Judgment Board.

This was not Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s voice, it was a female voice.

Fang Yuan’s heart shook slightly when he heard the voice: "Qin Ding Ling came personally? So the reinforcement shown by my luck actually refers to her!"

Demon Immortal Qi Jue pointed his finger towards Demon Judgment Board.

Qi currents surged and transformed, rapidly gathering into a lump. In an instant, hundreds of milky white qi spheres shot towards Demon Judgment Board like meteors, creating a series of explosions.

Demon Judgment Board’s momentum stopped and shook violently from the explosions.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was about to say something when his expression changed suddenly. He quickly withdrew and moved away from his spot like lightning.

The previous blood red ray of light shot by Demon Judgment Board actually turned around to attack him.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue evaded the blood red light but he did not expect golden light to shoot out from this blood red light.

The golden light condensed rapidly into a huge golden scissors above Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s head.

Crack, crack.

The golden scissors cut Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s head repeatedly, but the attacks seemed to be in vain.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue, however, paled suddenly.

"This is a luck path method!"

He quickly activated investigative killer moves and immediately felt a loss: "Damn it, these golden scissors are cutting my luck!"

Demon Immortal Qi Jue put great emphasis on maintaining his luck, after his revival and later dismantling turbulent flow sea area to replenish Xi Land, he had already consumed a lot of his luck. The attacks of the giant scissors were making things worse.

"Qi Sea, Heavenly Court, I will remember this. If there is a chance in the future, I will settle it with both of you properly." Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s voice resonated throughout the area.

After this sentence, he immediately entered milky white qi currents that filled the sky and left the battlefield rapidly.

"Retreating again?" Gu Yue Fang Zheng, who was inside Demon Judgment Board, was somewhat stunned.

On the contrary, other Heavenly Court members looked solemn.

Qin Ding Ling sighed and explained to Fang Zheng: "This is the terrifying thing about Demon Immortal Qi Jue. He always maintains his calm and has a clear judgment of the situation. We can only give him some trouble, but in the current situation, Qi Sea Ancestor would not just stay on the sidelines. With Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s battle strength, it won’t be difficult for him to oppose our joint attacks. But the battle will be intense and his plan to borrow qi path Immortal Gu has no chance to succeed. So he directly chose to retreat to preserve his strength."

Fang Zheng immediately realized: "I understand. Demon Immortal Qi Jue is a person from a million years ago after all, he has just revived and doesn’t have much contact with new paths. Against Demon Judgment Board’s blood path attack and your luck path golden scissors, he prioritized on dodging them. When he gets familiar with these paths and modifies his killer moves, it will be much more difficult for us to confront him."

"That is correct." Qin Ding Ling nodded: "Let’s get out and have a talk with Qi Sea Ancestor."

Heavenly Court Gu Immortals filed out with Qin Ding Ling taking the lead and Gu Yue Fang Zheng following closely behind.

They put away Demon Judgment Board of their own initiative, demonstrating Heavenly Court’s sincerity.

"Thank you for helping this old man get through this danger." Fang Yuan heaved a long sigh.

Qin Ding Ling was wearing a golden armor and a cape, and in combination with her tall body, wide shoulders and long legs, she emitted heroic aura. But this heroic aura was different from Feng Jin Huang’s, it had a natural nobleness to it that felt like it was innately above others.

But right now, Qin Ding Ling had a smile on her face as she showed the initiative to get close to Fang Yuan.

She spoke: "Ancestor, if not for your injuries, how could Demon Immortal Qi Jue be so rampant? Moreover, I saw that you were calm throughout the battle, you definitely have some trump cards up your sleeves. We might even have to ask for your understanding and to not blame us for interfering."

These words were so polite that Fang Yuan felt like it was similar to a warm spring breeze.

Heavenly Court’s attitude was different compared to his previous life. At that time, Heavenly Court was oppressive and gave no way out for others. But in this life, Heavenly Court’s leader took the initiative to treat others warmly.

After the fate war, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals’ attitude was completely different from before the war. Before the fate war, Heavenly Court had fate Gu and possessed huge advantages. But now that fate Gu was destroyed, Heavenly Court’s strength had diminished sharply, on one hand, they were actively recuperating, while on the other hand, they took the initiative to make alliances.

Qi Sea Ancestor became a goal in Heavenly Court’s eyes and was the best ally for them.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue wanted to find an expert to spar with, naturally, he would first look for Qi Sea Ancestor. After all, be they Fang Yuan or Feng Jiu Ge, their traces were vague and hard to find. However, Qi Sea Ancestor stayed in qi sea and could be found easily.

Since Heavenly Court wanted to ally with Qi Sea Ancestor, they naturally wanted to use Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

After all, adding icing on the cake cannot compare to offering help in times of need.

Heavenly Court helped Qi Sea Ancestor ward off Demon Immortal Qi Jue, it was not a casual action but was planned for a long time.

It was not only Fang Yuan who had been waiting patiently for Demon Immortal Qi Jue, Heavenly Court was also the same.

"Friends, please come in. Let this old man prepare a simple feast to express some gratitude." Fang Yuan led the Heavenly Court immortals into qi sea’s formation.

He prepared a feast and hosted the Heavenly Court immortals.

During the banquet, the Xia clan immortals who were staying as guests were also invited to join.

The Xia clan immortals were grateful towards the Heavenly Court immortals, they had a very enthusiastic attitude.

They had seen Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s fight with Qi Sea Ancestor, they felt very worried.

Their territory was already seized by Wu Shuai, so they could only put the hope of regaining their territory in Qi Sea Ancestor. If Qi Sea Ancestor was defeated or died, it would be a cruel blow to all the Xia clan members.

Thus, Heavenly Court helping Qi Sea Ancestor was like helping them.

When Qin Ding Ling saw the Xia clan immortals, she immediately expressed her sympathy and condemned the two heavens alliance. She even promised she would certainly fight against this large variant human alliance.

This attitude made Xia clan have an even better impression of them.

The face of Xia clan’s first supreme elder even reddened with joy.

This was different from the empty words of the other Eastern Sea super forces, Heavenly Court had truly taken actions. Previously, Demon Judgment Board carried three immortals and attacked the two heavens’ grotto-heavens, every Gu Immortal in the world knew of this.

Qin Ding Ling inquired about Xia clan’s recent situation.

All the Xia clan Gu Immortals replied: They were hosted well by Qi Sea Ancestor and would always be grateful, it was just that they had a worry about when they could return to their home.

Qin Ding Ling realized Qi Sea Ancestor’s intention.

"He is raising his reputation! His ambition is truly big."

Qin Ding Ling was happy to see this. As long as Qi Sea Ancestor had greed and ambition, they would have the foundation to cooperate.

Fang Yuan naturally did not invite the Xia clan Gu Immortals to join the banquet for no reason.

Through Qin Ding Ling’s attitude towards the Xia clan Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan was even more certain of Heavenly Court’s purpose in coming here. At the same time, he was also making this native force, Xia clan, serve as a witness. After all, as an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, having close ties with Heavenly Court would lower Qi Sea Ancestor’s authority in Eastern Sea.

After a few rounds of wine, Fang Yuan took the initiative to speak: "Friends from Heavenly Court, you helped me today, this old man shall remember this favor. If Heavenly Court has any trouble in the future, I am willing to contribute my strength to Heavenly Court."

This was a clear gesture.

Heavenly Court’s immortals were spirited when they heard it.

Qin Ding Ling put down her cup slowly and looked at Qi Sea Ancestor with a smile as she finally got to the main topic: "To tell the truth, Heavenly Court is indeed facing some issues currently. We came to ask for Ancestor’s help."

"Oh? Please explain." Fang Yuan asked straightforwardly.

Qin Ding Ling did not mention the matter of the qi harvest fruit emerging in Heavenly Court, instead she handed over an information path mortal Gu to Qi Sea Ancestor.

Fang Yuan probed with his consciousness and was immediately moved.

The content of this information path mortal Gu was the remaining half of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The moment Fang Yuan saw this remaining half of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance, he had a thought, it was not related to the true inheritance.

"Should I use this chance to capture these Heavenly Court Gu Immortals in one fell swoop?"

This thought was very attractive.

Qin Ding Ling was currently the temporary leader of Heavenly Court, Heavenly Court would definitely receive a huge blow if they lost her. Gu Yue Fang Zheng was arranged by heaven’s will and was a crucial character to restrain the otherworldly demon Fang Yuan. If Fang Yuan killed him, he would be free from this shackle. The accompanying Prince Feng Xian, Bai Cang Shui, and the rest were also pillars of Heavenly Court currently. If they were gone, it would be a great disaster to Heavenly Court and the whole of Central Continent’s righteous path.

But thinking about it, Fang Yuan gave up on this idea.

His current strength was not complete and he could not maintain his battle strength because of the heaven path dao marks.

On the surface, the Heavenly Court immortals were conversing happily and looked relaxed, but how could they not be on guard in Qi Sea Ancestor’s domain?

It was just that they pretended to be relaxed to show their sincerity and friendliness.

Even if Fang Yuan activated qi sea’s formation, the Heavenly Court immortals would definitely take out Immortal Gu Houses immediately and defend.

Were he to attack the Heavenly Court immortals right now, whether it resulted in victory or defeat, Fang Yuan’s Qi Sea Ancestor identity would be met with heavy scrutiny.

In truth, Fang Yuan was willing to cooperate with Heavenly Court.

Even though Heavenly Court tried all methods to create difficulties for Fang Yuan and attempted to kill him, even forcing him into near death situations, as long as there were enough benefits that were useful for him in pursuing eternal life, Fang Yuan was not conflicted over cooperating with Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court wanted to cooperate with Qi Sea Ancestor for their own benefits.

Fang Yuan would also similarly receive huge gains from cooperating with Heavenly Court.

There was no need to mention the long term benefits, merely Fang Yuan forcing back Demon Immortal Qi Jue with the help of Heavenly Court was enough to guarantee the value of this Qi Sea Ancestor identity. At the same time, Heavenly Court also took the initiative to give the remaining half of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance to him!

Fang Yuan was rather moved as he held the information path mortal Gu.

Back then, he had spent much thought and effort to scheme for this qi path true inheritance. Duke Long was shrewd, Thieving Heaven’s method could reduce his lifespan but he pretended it did not work and used half of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance to successfully stabilize Qi Sea Ancestor.

The remaining half was held firmly by Duke Long and Fang Yuan was unable to get it.

Fang Yuan did not hold any hope but who could have thought that after the fate war, he would actually obtain the remaining half of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance through Qin Ding Ling.

In the remaining half of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance, the triple qi retraction Fang Yuan coveted was recorded.

"Qin Ding Ling cannot be underestimated." Fang Yuan sighed in his head.

Without even mentioning any requests, Qin Ding Ling directly handed the remaining half of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance to Qi Sea Ancestor, the courage needed for this move was truly immense. Qin Ding Ling’s and Heavenly Court’s sincerity was shown fully.

"If Qin Ding Ling knew I was Fang Yuan, I wonder what expression she would show?"

Duke Long helped the enemy previously and now Qin Ding Ling continued this trend. Were Qin Ding Ling to know the person in front of her was the greatest culprit of the fate war and she had personally handed the true inheritance to him, she might cough blood from anger.

"I genuinely feel your sincerity. What troubles do you have, I will use all my strength to help Heavenly Court!" Fang Yuan stored the information path mortal Gu in his aperture, he already guessed Heavenly Court’s troubles.

Qin Ding Ling let out a sigh of relief as she saw Qi Sea Ancestor putting away the information path mortal Gu.

What she had been worried about was that possibility of Qi Sea Ancestor not agreeing to help. After all, Qi Sea Ancestor had been a secluded cultivator who did not care about things that did not concern him. Maybe the information given by the reborn Fang Yuan made Qi Sea Ancestor realize that if he were to continue his secluded cultivation, Heavenly Court would look for trouble with him, so he changed his way of doing things.

Qin Ding Ling did not know how Heavenly Court became enemies with Qi Sea Ancestor. But since Qi Sea Ancestor believed Fang Yuan’s words, it was clear Fang Yuan had provided enough evidence.

This was a mess that they were not responsible for, with the destruction of fate Gu, the future had changed, Heavenly Court was unable to find out anything about it. Qin Ding Ling could only rely on the current situation to infer and deduce.

It was normal for Qin Ding Ling to have some worries.

After all, Qi Sea Ancestor had a hostile relationship with Heavenly Court before and had only turned neutral because of Duke Long’s mediation. Right now, to recruit Qi Sea Ancestor, Qin Ding Ling had to take out something that Qi Sea Ancestor would not be able to refuse.

Qi Sea Ancestor accepted Primordial Origin’s true inheritance and immediately showed a firm attitude of helping Heavenly Court.

Qin Ding Ling was very relieved. Her scheme did not end here. Primordial Origin’s true inheritance was only bait, Qi Sea Ancestor would require suitable qi path Immortal Gu to activate the killer moves recorded in it.

And these qi path Immortal Gu were all in Heavenly Court’s treasuries.

These were the chips to tempt Qi Sea Ancestor later on.

"Perhaps we can still use Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s pressure to push Qi Sea Ancestor to join Heavenly Court." This inspiration emerged in Qin Ding Ling’s mind but was temporarily suppressed.

She began to explain the issues Heavenly Court was facing.

Fang Yuan stroked his beard as he ascertained his guesses. Just like he predicted, the qi harvest fruit appeared in Heavenly Court as well.

With Duke Long’s sacrifice and the immortal graveyard’s destruction, Heavenly Court no longer had a qi path expert to stabilize the situation, thus it was very difficult for them to resolve the issue of the qi harvest fruit.

Qin Ding Ling handed Primordial Origin’s true inheritance straightforwardly and also hoped this true inheritance could help Qi Sea Ancestor in dealing with the issue of the qi harvest fruit much more quickly.

Fang Yuan thought for a bit and nodded: "I will handle this matter of the qi harvest fruit. But I have no methods to deal with it now and need to be in closed cultivation for some time to research Primordial Origin’s true inheritance."

At this moment, Xia clan’s first supreme elder suddenly said: "Lord Ancestor, you are injured and have to recuperate first. Your safety not only concerns Eastern Sea but is also related to maintaining the overall situation of humanity and the variant humans."

He was worried and afraid that if Qi Sea Ancestor were to collaborate with Heavenly Court, Xia clan’s matters would be pushed aside.

Qin Ding Ling smiled: "You don’t have to worry, I am going to talk about the two heavens alliance now. Wu Shuai is currently a huge demon and also a sinner who invaded Heavenly Court, we absolutely won’t let him develop. We came here to ask for Ancestor’s help as well as to deal with this variant human force."

After a slight pause, she continued: "Heavenly Court is willing to take out immortal materials to finance Ancestor and Xia clan, to help you reclaim your lost land. In the future battles, if necessary, Heavenly Court will send reinforcements to lend a hand in fighting against the variant human races."

"Ah!" Xia clan’s first supreme elder exclaimed in shock and bowed: "Heavenly Court is righteous and worthy of being the number one force of humanity. I am extremely grateful, the whole of Xia clan is immeasurably grateful!"

Qin Ding Ling chatted with Xia clan’s first supreme elder for a while, deepening their relationship quickly.

Heavenly Court lost the fate war but it did not lack resources, it only lacked manpower.

In this trip to Eastern Sea, Heavenly Court wanted to entice Qi Sea Ancestor while also targeting Xia clan’s Gu Immortals. Roping in a native force of Eastern Sea would establish their foundation in the future five regions chaotic war.

This was a long-term plan.

The unfortunate thing was that Heavenly Court and Xia clan’s immortals did not know Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor were the same person in essence. This was truly a huge secret that would shock the world.

Fang Yuan nodded without hesitating: "I will never let the two heavens alliance exist in Eastern Sea, I will certainly drive them out and exterminate them thoroughly!"

Qin Ding Ling raised her hand: "In my view, the two heavens alliance has human forces as well, it is just that the two heavens alliance is being firmly controlled by variant humans currently. These human forces are not different from us, we are all humans. We should stick together and unite. So, there is no harm in splitting them first before we take action."

Fang Yuan immediately understood the meaning: "Could it be that some human forces in the two heavens alliance have already surrendered to you?"

Qin Ding Ling shook her head: "It is not like that. We were able to capture a rank eight Gu Immortal. She is called Granny Skeleton, the current owner of Shattered Bone grotto-heaven in the two heavens."

Granny Skeleton was persuaded by An Chong’s words and wanted to join the two heavens alliance. But halfway in her journey, she was ambushed and captured by Heavenly Court.

Naturally, it was Night Heavenly Wolf Lord who provided this information.

Lady Cold Ash wanted to unite the human forces in the two heavens and fight for authority in the two heavens alliance. She had already made Night Heavenly Wolf Lord one of her helpers, but she could have never expected Night Heavenly Wolf Lord to have already sided with Heavenly Court.

"Granny Skeleton?" Fang Yuan paused a bit before asking: "Is this person here right now?"

Qin Ding Ling shook her head: "My Heavenly Court uses virtuous means, we let her go after persuading her for some time."

The eyes of Xia clan’s first supreme elder opened wide at these words, he felt some worries regarding Heavenly Court’s ’naivety’ but did not speak up.

Fang Yuan, however, looked at Qin Ding Ling with deep meaning and smiled: "Looks like Granny Skeleton is a crucial character and the key to tempt her to join us should lie on the qi harvest fruit’s matter."

Qin Ding Ling laughed and raised her cup in praise: "Ancestor, you have discerning vision. The issue of the qi harvest fruit appeared in Shattered Bone grotto-heaven as well, if we can solve this issue, we can rope in Granny Skeleton and other human forces."

"Good plan!"

"If we can rope in these human forces, it would be their loss and our gain, this will be a great blow to the two heavens alliance, and there is even a chance they will disintegrate."

"Those of other races have different motives, the human Gu Immortals in the two heavens are of the same race as us. As long as we show enthusiasm and sincerity, it should not be difficult to recruit them."

Xia clan’s immortals smiled and conversed, some clapped and laughed, the atmosphere of the banquet became increasingly lively.

Fang Yuan had a smile as he observed the Gu Immortals’ expressions from his seat.

If they knew their enemy had already known of their plan before they even implemented it, how would they feel?

Fang Yuan’s gaze moved around before finally stopping on Qin Ding Ling’s face.

"Although she only cultivates luck path, her leadership is up to standard."

"At her level, she should have reached the level of being proficient in mimicking other paths too. Ordinary wisdom path rank eights are also not superior to this."

’Of course, there is still a large gap between her and Fairy Zi Wei.’

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2006 Shadow Sect“s True Members

Central Continent.

"This qi harvest fruit is mine!"

"Get lost."

"You wish."

The qi tide had just passed, a group of Central Continent lone immortals was fighting fiercely for around ten qi harvest fruits.

To grotto-heavens, the qi harvest fruits that emerged inside them were a huge calamity. But the qi harvest fruits that were left behind after the qi tides were precious treasures coveted by every Gu Immortal.

It had already been a while since qi tides appeared, the five regions’ Gu Immortals were fully aware of the excellent effect of the qi harvest fruit.

Gu Immortals did not need any qi path attainment, as long as they obtained qi harvest fruits and crushed them in their aperture, they could greatly improve the harmonization of heaven and earth qi. Thereby, gaining freedom of action earlier than other Gu Immortals.

Just as the immortals were fighting, a snowy ray of light pierced through the skies, shooting towards them.

The ray of light was sharp and fierce, shooting right towards a Gu Immortal.

This Central Continent Gu Immortal was only rank six, he sneered when he saw that the ray of light looked fierce but only had rank six aura, he activated his defensive killer moves.

Bam.

The ray of light struck the Gu Immortal and pierced through him.

"How?!" The struck Gu Immortal’s eyes were wide open, his expression filled with disbelief.

Both sides were rank six, so why was there such a huge gap!

"Who is it?"

"Ah, could it be Snow Demon!"

The remaining two Central Continent Gu Immortals were also rank six. They were pale with fright when they saw the Gu Immortal whom they had been fighting at a deadlock with die immediately.

The two immediately thought of a mysterious demonic immortal who had emerged recently, this person appeared often to fight for qi harvest fruits and was very vicious.

The two retreated quickly, not daring to fight.

That snow ray of light ignored them and moved straight towards its goal, looting the qi harvest fruits.

After the snow ray obtained them, it left immediately with extreme vigilance.

After moving for a few minutes and using various concealment methods, this snow ray of light stopped in a nameless valley.

The snow dissipated and the Gu Immortal’s appearance was revealed, who else could it be but Bai Ning Bing?

After the fate war, Bai Ning Bing was left outside and was not recalled by Fang Yuan.

Bai Ning Bing temporarily obtained freedom and did not want to return to Fang Yuan’s side, choosing to cultivate alone. Over this period of time, she was extremely active and had seized many qi harvest fruits, using them in her immortal aperture.

These qi harvest fruits she obtained would have negligible effects on Fang Yuan’s rank eight grotto-heaven. But to Bai Ning Bing’s rank six blessed land, the effects were conspicuous.

Bai Ning Bing originally possessed future self and could achieve peak rank seven battle strength. But after the fate war, the lower streams of the River of Time became violent, future self thus lost its effect, Bai Ning Bing’s battle strength returned to its original rank six level.

"After I get a few hundred more qi harvest fruits, I can battle with all my strength for two hours." Bai Ning Bing used the seized qi harvest fruits while estimating inwardly.

Suddenly, her heart jolted as she sensed something wrong, she immediately shot out of the valley.

But it was already late.

A purple light barrier trapped her rapidly, directly creating an independent space that was isolated from the outside world.

"This is an immortal battlefield killer move!" Bai Ning Bing frowned: "Who is it, come out!"

Clap clap clap.

Following resounding claps, Fairy Zi Wei revealed herself.

She looked at Bai Ning Bing with a smile: "You actually sensed me activating this battlefield killer move. Worthy of a genius chosen by Fang Yuan."

"It’s you!" Bai Ning Bing immediately recognized Fairy Zi Wei and her heart sank.

The enemy was a rank eight Gu Immortal, while her strength was only at rank six. She might still have some hope to resist if she had future self, but the current difference in strength was too big, it made her helpless.

Fairy Zi Wei fixed her eyes on Bai Ning Bing, asking with interest: "How did you sense it? I did not see you using any special investigative methods."

Bai Ning Bing’s expression was cold as ice as she replied: "It was only an instinct. You already put an ambush beforehand and waited for me to take the bait?"

Fairy Zi Wei chuckled: "You took action too many times recently, the clues are all with me, so it is not a difficult thing to deduce when you will make a move and where you will retreat to. Did you actually discover the danger with only your intuition? My immortal battlefield killer move did not leak any aura when it was activated."

At this time, another figure appeared not far behind Bai Ning Bing, it was Old Man Zheng Yuan.

Old Man Zheng Yuan coughed: "Lady Zi Wei, this is caused by human qi. Although Bai Ning Bing did not use any special investigative method, she has robust human qi. We must have agitated her human qi when we tried to trap her, which made her sense it intuitively."

Bai Ning Bing snorted and took on a combat stance: "You talk too much, let’s fight, Heavenly Court!"

Fairy Zi Wei’s smile became even brighter: "You are wrong, Bai Ning Bing, we are not representing Heavenly Court, but Shadow Sect. We did not come to kill you."

"What?" Bai Ning Bing was astonished: "You sided with Fang Yuan?!"

Old Man Zheng Yuan chuckled: "This junior Fang Yuan stole the position of Shadow Sect’s leader. We are representing the true Shadow Sect!"

Bai Ning Bing’s mind shook as she guessed the truth: "Spectral Soul has revived? You want to find trouble with Fang Yuan through me!"

"What do you think? Join us, don’t you want to get rid of Fang Yuan and free yourself from all the shackles?" Fairy Zi Wei enticed.

Bai Ning Bing sneered and stared deeply at Fairy Zi Wei: "Of course I want freedom. But what is the difference between joining you and siding with Fang Yuan? I will be even more restricted with you people than with Fang Yuan!"

She noticed what was wrong with Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan, they were clearly enslaved by Spectral Soul.

Standing with Fang Yuan, Bai Ning Bing had the feeling of being an ally at least. But if she joined the Shadow Sect in front of her, then she would only be Spectral Soul’s slave.

Fairy Zi Wei nodded: "But you don’t have a choice, do you?"

Old Man Zheng Yuan added: "Surrender or die, choose."

Bai Ning Bing’s silence did not last long, after a few breaths of time, she nodded: "I will join you."

Old Man Zheng Yuan approached and patted Bai Ning Bing’s shoulder: "This is a wise choice. Relax, we will deal with your information path alliance agreements. But your dragonman status is somewhat troublesome, it was Fang Yuan who helped you change that. The dragonman method he used probably went through many changes, it will be very difficult to get rid of this within a short period of time."

"No worries, I am already used to it." Bai Ning Bing said indifferently.

She was restricted by Fang Yuan first, then she entered Shadow Sect and was controlled by Old Man Yan Shi; later, she returned to Fang Yuan’s side again, transforming into the new dragonman. Now, she was clamped down by Fairy Zi Wei.

Bai Ning Bing was right, she was already used to it.

Almost at the same time, Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven.

"Aunt, this is the soul core I obtained recently, it is extremely strange, please appraise it." An Xun respectfully bowed and handed over a soul core.

Lady Cold Ash took this soul core and observed it carefully, her expression becoming increasingly strange.

She had seen countless soul cores, but this soul core gave her a feeling which she had never felt before. Just the dark light circulating on the soul core’s surface was beyond ordinary.

Suddenly!

The soul core transformed into dark lightning that struck Lady Cold Ash’s face, it quickly infiltrated her body and imprisoned her soul.

Lady Cold Ash’s body was tense, and when she reacted, she had already fallen to her own relative’s trap.

"An Xun, you!" Lady Cold Ash had been concerned with her nephew An Xun and nurtured him wholeheartedly, she had never expected to be betrayed.

Lady Cold Ash struggled before she stood up abruptly.

An Xun was given a great fright as he stepped back quickly.

But at the next moment, Lady Cold Ash’s energy dissipated and sat down again.

She groaned as dark light filled her eyes.

Soon, she could not struggle anymore and stood up silently.

An Xun prostrated on the ground: "Subordinate pays respect to master."

Spectral Soul’s voice came out from Lady Cold Ash’s mouth: "This body is quite good, I shall use this for now to get close to Wu Shuai."

Spectral Soul did not have guts Gu, so he could only devour soul cores and digest them slowly.

Over this period of time, he had already recovered some strength and immediately made a move on Lady Cold Ash.

After he had succeeded, it meant the whole of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven had fallen into his hands!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Roar—!

A huge, mountain-like immemorial soul beast with two horns on its head was howling.

But it was not showing its might and dominance, but madly struggling to flee.

Its tail was grabbed by an ordinary hand.

Then, an extremely terrifying absorption force spread out from the palm. There was a whirring sound resembling a wild hurricane as the immemorial soul beast was absorbed completely by the hand within a few breaths of time.

The owner of that hand let out a burp.

It was the rank eight soul path expert, owner of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven — Lady Cold Ash.

Her eyes were pitch-black and threads of black smoke coiled around her body. After a while, she stopped the killer move, the black smoke around her whole body were restrained, and nothing looked out of place from the outside.

But in fact, her body was already possessed by Spectral Soul and her soul had been devoured.

Spectral Soul sighed: "I am full again."

He got much more freedom with Lady Cold Ash’s identity. Over these days, he was actively devouring immemorial soul beasts, increasing and recovering his strength rapidly.

But Spectral Soul was not satisfied.

Devouring immemorial soul beasts was not like consuming guts Gu after all, Spectral Soul needed to digest them. Otherwise, the immemorial soul beasts would corrode his soul, make him lose his rationality and finally turn into a deformed soul monster.

The first choice in strengthening the soul was of course the guts Gu from Dang Hun Mountain, there was no need to digest them and they could be absorbed almost instantly.

The more Spectral Soul yearned for Dang Hun Mountain, the more he wanted to find Fang Yuan and kill him!

"Where exactly did this rascal Fang Yuan go to?" Spectral Soul thought of Fang Yuan and could not help but narrow his eyes.

Fairy Zi Wei had already informed Spectral Soul of the information she had gained from Bai Ning Bing.

This was great news to Spectral Soul.

Fairy Zi Wei had found clues of Ying Wu Xie, as long as they got hold of Fang Yuan’s subordinates, they would have enough clues to deduce Fang Yuan’s location.

"Fang Yuan obtained so many heaven path dao marks and has been missing since the fate war, his situation must be dismal. This is the best chance to capture him."

Spectral Soul had been a venerable, he queried himself and got the conclusion that even when he was at his peak, it would have been a difficult task to refine so many heaven path dao marks. Let alone the current Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was strong, but he was not a venerable after all and had a limited understanding of the heaven path dao marks.

"But I can no longer count on the arrangements I left in the sovereign immortal aperture."

Spectral Soul understood that heaven path dao marks developed naturally, the hidden arrangements he left behind were essentially dao marks and were certain to be transformed by the heaven path dao marks.

His methods would not be effective after they were transformed.

If they were effective, why would Spectral Soul have to go through such trouble to search and capture Fang Yuan’s subordinates, he would have already gone to kill Fang Yuan.

"After half a month, I can devour an immemorial soul beast again to recover my strength... hmm?" Just as Spectral Soul was planning, he suddenly received a message.

Spectral Soul immediately revealed joy: "Wu Shuai is convening rank eight Gu

Immortals of the two heavens alliance to discuss an important event, Lady Cold Ash is also summoned. Great, Wu Shuai is acquainted with Fang Yuan, he might even be Fang Yuan’s clone. I might be able to lure out Fang Yuan’s main body if I enslave him."

Spectral Soul immediately moved out of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven under Lady Cold Ash’s identity and rushed towards the headquarters of Eastern Sea’s Xia clan.

In the public blessed land, he smoothly entered Dragon Palace and saw Wu Shuai.

Wu Shuai was sitting on the main seat while the other people were divided into two rows. On his immediate left was vice alliance leader Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch; on his right was the recent addition, rank eight expert Xiao He Jian.

Below them were leaders of various variant human forces.

The human grotto-heaven owners were arranged further back. For instance, Lady Cold Ash’s position was almost close to Dragon Palace’s door.

The political state of the two heavens alliance was clear from these seating arrangements. Variant humans were dominant and had most of the authority, while human Gu Immortals were firmly at a disadvantage. It was not that they did not resist, but they were helpless. After all, Wu Shuai had a dragonman identity and it was natural for him to be closer to other variant humans.

’If I kill all of them, how much of my strength can I recover?’ Spectral Soul looked around with killing intent surging in his heart.

Sensing her gaze, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord who was standing opposite her nodded slightly, showing goodwill.

Spectral Soul had already obtained all of Lady Cold Ash’s memories: "This Night Heavenly Wolf Lord, maybe I can make a move against him first. This human rank eight Gu Immortal’s soul is much more suitable for my recovery."

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord thought: "This Lady Cold Ash can be used. My contribution regarding Granny Skeleton came from her. After this discussion, I should find her to drink tea and probe her intention. If I can rope her into Heavenly Court’s side, my contribution will be even bigger."

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord’s thoughts were normal.

In his opinion, the previous Lady Cold Ash did not lose hope and wanted to unite other human forces to counter the current alliance situation, raising the human forces’ position in the alliance. But right now, her plan was already useless, Granny Skeleton did not come at all. And with Heavenly Court already proceeding to the next plan, that was, to split up the whole two heavens alliance, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord saw his chance to make much more contributions!

Just as Night Heavenly Wolf Lord and Lady Cold Ash were scheming, Wu Shuai spoke: "I think you should all know why I convened everyone this time. That’s right, it is about the qi harvest fruit disaster."

"Qi harvest fruits have appeared in most of your grotto-heavens. These qi harvest fruits absorb the heaven and earth qi in the grotto-heaven to strengthen themselves, directly harming the grotto-heaven’s foundation. But ordinary methods cannot get rid of these qi harvest fruits, a rash move will only harm the grotto-heaven’s foundation."

"Today, I gathered everyone to try to collectively think of a good solution."

After Wu Shuai spoke, the immortals began to offer their suggestions.

Over this period of time, most of them had racked their minds and were completely focused on this problem.

These immortals might lack combat proficiency, but their foundations were instead stable and solid. Thus, they suggested many methods.

However, although there were many methods suggested, which were truly effective?

No one could guarantee or be certain!

None of them cultivated qi path as their main path, there were a few who cultivated qi path on the side but their attainment was low and could not be counted upon.

"There are many methods, let’s try them one by one, there should be a way to resolve this issue. So, what we need to do is to try these methods continuously. Who is willing to try it first?" Wu Shuai summarized and asked.

Dragon Palace immediately fell into silence.

No one wanted to be the guinea pig!

It was extremely crucial to clear up the qi harvest fruits. It was like a heart surgery, a slight mistake and it would be the end of the grotto-heaven. Even if they were fortunate and the grotto-heaven survived, its foundation would be heavily damaged and there would be massive losses.

"These Gu Immortals are really pitiful, fortunately I have already sided with Heavenly Court." Although Night Heavenly Wolf Lord showed a worried expression, he was calm.

He had been informed by Heavenly Court that they had already found the solution to the qi harvest fruit issue. So he was not the least bit worried.

But in fact, Qin Ding Ling only said that to stabilize Night Heavenly Wolf Lord and make him more loyal.

"It is both hard and easy to resolve the qi harvest fruit." Spectral Soul naturally knew some methods but he did not mention them.

His current thoughts were filled with how to attack Wu Shuai.

He could not make a move now with so many people present.

But how could he find a chance to be alone with Wu Shuai?

"The biggest obstacle is still this Dragon Palace." Spectral Soul was somewhat wary. Dragon Palace, in essence, was an enslavement path Immortal Gu House, Spectral Soul was not afraid about this. What he was worried about were the dream path methods of Dragon Palace.

Even Spectral Soul had to be vigilant regarding this, once he was captured by dreamy light smoke, he would immediately be defeated.

Wu Shuai saw the immortals becoming silent for a long while, he already knew their thoughts.

He smiled: "Since no one is willing to give it a try, we should find other people to try. There are many grotto-heavens in the two heavens, there are still people who have not joined us and are harboring unfathomable thoughts."

The Gu Immortals’ eyes brightened, they felt the alliance leader’s idea was simply too great!

Thereupon, the immortals resounded in agreement, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and others even boot-licked Wu Shuai.

"Which grotto-heaven do you think is suitable?" Wu Shuai asked.

At the next moment, various opinions emerged and a large number of targets were mentioned.

The one which was mentioned the most was Profound Literature grotto-heaven!

Old Immortal Hua Yu was a human with powerful strength as well as high prestige that allowed him to influence many of the surrounding grotto-heaven forces. If Wu Shuai could get rid of him and incorporate Profound Literature grotto-heaven into the two heavens alliance, there would be countless benefits.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2008 - All Destroyed!

Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

“Xiao Bai, here will do.” In the small path between mountains, Teacher Jiang stopped and spoke to Li Xiao Bai.

Li Xiao Bai showed sadness and reluctance: “I was able to survive in the capital city all thanks to teacher’s guidance and help. I will engrave this kindness in my heart and never forget it. But after this separation, I wonder when I can see teacher again!”

“You.” Teacher Jiang sighed and patted Li Xiao Bai’s shoulder, encouraging him: “Although you lost in this world poetry competition, your poems have already spread far and wide. Everyone knows your talent is worthy of the title of a great scholar. Moreover, Su Qi Han has already returned, the capital city is the arena for you to display your talents. Go back, teacher will look forward to your performance.”

Li Xiao Bai bid farewell to Teacher Jiang with eyes full of tears.

Li Xiao Bai rode a horse through the mountain path that was covered with trees while pondering about his future.

He lost in the world poetry competition, although his earlier performances were exceptional.

Like he had expected, he ran into Teacher Jiang in the later stage. This made Li Xiao Bai fall into an awkward situation — if he won against his teacher, his morals and character would be criticized and there would definitely be a tide of hateful remarks.

Li Xiao Bai had wanted to use his next chance to continue passing through the stages. But he kept on running into his teacher again and again.

Teacher Jiang was also helpless, in fact, he also did not want to succeed by stepping on his own student. But he had to grab onto every chance because he had also probed the biggest meaning behind the world poetry competition.

Li Xiao Bai ran into Teacher Jiang time and again, his hands were tied and he eventually lost the competition.

Although he felt pity about this, Li Xiao Bai felt thankful as well: “My previous performances were too exceptional and even excessive. If I were to succeed like this, there would definitely be a detailed investigation done on me. Even if I passed the investigation, because I don’t have a good background and am not a renowned person, I am very likely to be schemed against. Many people are coveting this opportunity to become an immortal, how could they let it fall into a minor character’s hand?”

The world poetry competition’s selections looked extremely fair, but in fact, where there were people, there would be conflicts of interests and many deals going on behind the scenes.

Just look at the list of candidates that passed the world poetry competition’s selection, they were either influential officials or renowned people, even the so-called dark horses have extraordinary roots and background.

“It doesn’t matter that I am not selected in this world poetry competition, there will be a second selection in the future.”

“Even if there is no second world poetry competition, don’t tell me I cannot become an immortal by relying on myself?”

“Hmm, what smell is this, it is so fragrant!”

Just as Li Xiao Bai was thinking, a delicate fragrance broke his train of thoughts.

This fragrance was really pleasing and smelled like the inky fragrance of a book.

Li Xiao Bai was immediately curious, how could there be such a fragrance in this mountain’s forest?

He rode the horse and followed the fragrance to its source.

After riding for a while, dense bush blocked the path ahead, Li Xiao Bai had no choice but to get off the horse and continue on his feet.

The fragrance became increasingly strong as Li Xiao Bai moved deep into the forest, he knew he was going in the right direction and was getting closer to the source of the fragrance.

Finally, he brushed aside some leaves and found a pine tree.

This pine tree was covered with pine cones and these pine cones were releasing the dense book fragrance. And on the branch of the tree, there was an exquisite and unique brown tree-house.

“Is someone living here? A mountain hermit?” Li Xiao Bai carefully approached and called out: “I am Student Li Xiao Bai, I accidentally passed through here and took the liberty to pay a visit. Please don’t blame me, sage in the mountain.”

But there was no sound from the treehouse.

Li Xiao Bai called out several times but there was still no reply. Seeing that there seemed to be no one in the treehouse, he walked towards the pine tree.

When he reached the pine tree, Li Xiao Bai made another discovery. The treehouse was not constructed on the tree, but was integrated into the tree, like it had directly grown from the tree.

Li Xiao Bai wanted to enter the treehouse to probe, but after circling around the tree, he found that the treehouse was completely integrated, with only windows but no doors.

“What do I do?” Li Xiao Bai thought and subconsciously placed his hand on the tree trunk.

Suddenly, the bark let out crisp sounds as it transformed. In an instant, a spiral staircase appeared around the tree trunk that moved towards the treehouse.

And a door appeared on the treehouse as well.

Li Xiao Bai only hesitated for a bit before stepping on the stairs and walking to the treehouse.

There were three rows of bookcases in the treehouse that were standing against the three walls. In the compartments of the bookcases were many Gu worms.

“Book fragrance spreads, talented scholars smell. Book house inheritance shall be left to the fated.” At this time, information was transmitted to Li Xiao Bai’s mind.

Li Xiao Bai inspected it and felt joyous.

“So this is an information path inheritance.”

“Although it is only a Gu Master inheritance with no Immortal Gu, there are various rank four and many rank five Gu worms. There is also detailed cultivation instruction, forming a complete system which suits me.”

“Speaking of which, my luck has been improving recently. Looks like my main body has already stabilized the situation.”

This inheritance was a peak level Gu Master inheritance, not only did it have many Gu worms, the pine tree itself was an exceptional mortal Gu House — Book House.

Li Xiao Bai stored Book House and returned back the way he came. He smoothly found his horse and hurried back to the capital city.

At the peak of the mountain, two figures were standing.

One immortal and one mortal.

The immortal was Hua Song, the mortal was rank five Gu Master Teacher Jiang.

Teacher Jiang had witnessed the whole process of Li Xiao Bai obtaining the inheritance and was extremely grateful: “Teacher, many thanks for helping my student.”

It turned out that Teacher Jiang’s teacher was Hua Song.

Hua Song smiled: “He is your student, according to the relationship, he is my grand-disciple. He belongs to our faction, how can I ignore him? When the world poetry competition started, I already noticed him. He clearly had the strength to pass the stages, but because he ran into you, he chose to limit himself. I had been hoping for you two, teacher and disciple, to succeed in passing the competition, but his luck seems to be quite bad, he ran into you again and again during the crucial rounds and was finally eliminated.”

“I am at fault.” Teacher Jiang lowered his head.

“Hahaha.” Hua Song patted Teacher Jiang’s shoulder: “You are really outstanding for being able to teach such a superb student. If this Li Xiao Bai had disregarded his teacher for fame and defeated you in front of everyone, I would have punished this kid severely. But he prioritizes this teacher and student relationship, his character is excellent. Although he failed this time, there is no harm in it.”

“It is this child’s fortune to be noticed by teacher. Just that, teacher, why didn’t you…” Teacher Jiang hesitated.

Hua Song sighed: “Although I am the host of the world poetry competition, if I were to act in favor of my personal gain, I would be criticized by other Gu Immortals and lose my reputation in front of Old Lord Hua Yu.”

“Moreover, Li Xiao Bai is still too young, he lacks tempering. If he suddenly became an immortal, it might lead to misfortune because of this good fortune. He should still continue to accumulate experience in the mortal world, a jade stone is useless if it is not polished.”

“Teacher is right, I was thinking too simplistically.” Teacher Jiang wholeheartedly admired his teacher and said excitedly: “I understand teacher’s effort. Teacher, you don’t want me to bear the feeling of guilt, so you gave Li Xiao Bai such a great inheritance, right?”

“It is good that you know that.” Hua Song smiled: “You are my student, you were selected this time and will be nurtured to become an immortal. You must concentrate wholeheartedly and not split your attention because of other matters. Concentrate on cultivation, don’t ruin my reputation.”

“Yes, teacher, I will definitely use all my strength!” Teacher Jiang cupped his hands and bowed solemnly.

Although Profound Literature grotto-heaven maintained neutrality and was not willing to participate in any fights, they understood chaotic times were coming so they did not hold back in cultivating Gu Immortals.

Teacher Jiang and others were handled and given plenty of resources with many Gu Immortals guiding them personally.

Teacher Jiang studied and practised hard everyday, using his time to the fullest.

Despite him using all his strength to study, his performance was still at low to mid level. This showed the talents of this batch’s Gu Masters.

Even the teaching Gu Immortals were secretly pleased. This batch was indeed full of the elites of Profound Literature grotto-heaven and everyone was an excellent Gu Immortal seed.

Over half a month passed, Teacher Jiang and the rest welcomed the most crucial moment of their lives — immortal ascension.

“With several teachers protecting us, the success rate of immortal ascension is high. Once I become an immortal, my future will undergo a complete transformation and elevation!”

Teacher Jiang was looking forward to it and studied with even more effort.

However, just as the first among them was about to undergo tribulation, there was an explosion and the whole of Profound Literature grotto-heaven shook fiercely.

Following the explosion, an Evil Dragon with the length of mountain ranges descended, filling the sky of Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Large numbers of enemy Gu Immortals appeared in all areas of Profound Literature grotto-heaven and attacked at the same time. The flames of war burned everywhere.

The place where Teacher Jiang’s group was in was given considerable attention.

“Die!” Wu Shuai controlled Dragon Palace and slammed down.

“It is Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace, we can’t block it! Retreat!” The Gu Immortals who were guarding this place were pale with fright as they retreated.

Rumble!

Earth quaked and mountains shook, dust and stones flew everywhere.

This learning palace that was arranged meticulously was completely destroyed. Teacher Jiang and the rest could not even dodge and were squashed into pulp, dying miserably.

The Gu Immortals who taught them felt their hearts bleeding at this scene. Their weeks of guidance were just about to show results, the greatest future potential of Profound Literature grotto-heaven was destroyed all at once by this attack.

Completely destroyed!

“Wu Shuai, my Profound Literature grotto-heaven has remained neutral and never created any difficulties for you. But you actually attacked my land and slaughtered innocents, you are too overbearing and sinful!” Old Immortal Hua Yu was alarmed and shouted in fury.

Wu Shuai laughed heartily inside Dragon Palace, suddenly, his laughter stopped: “Old Immortal Hua Yu, you don’t know when to advance or retreat, you don’t know what’s good for you! I sent messages for you to join time and time again, but you actually made excuses to ignore them, you simply show no regard for me. Today, I will make you and the entire world realize what the outcome of defying my will is! Attack!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2009 - Following Willingly

Attack—!

Wu Shuai’s shout triggered boundless wind and clouds, resounding throughout the grotto-heaven.

Many Gu Immortals in Profound Literature grotto-heaven had a change in their expressions, feeling panicked and worried when they sensed Wu Shuai’s ferocious might.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven had lived in peace for too long and had never experienced such an ordeal. Even the current grotto-heaven owner, Old Immortal Hua Yu, was extremely surprised.

Because Profound Literature grotto-heaven was an information path grotto-heaven and was most specialized in gathering all kinds of information and clues. They would definitely detect any invasion in advance.

However, Old Immortal Hua Yu and the rest were completely unaware of this invasion, and Wu Shuai’s surprise invasion could even be considered a masterpiece, he was able to teleport his Gu Immortals to various areas of the grotto-heaven, launching violent attacks at the various important areas and Profound Literature grotto-heaven’s Gu Immortals.

This ambush could be said to be extremely successful.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven suffered disastrous losses, not only did the meticulously selected future potentials like Teacher Jiang perish, even most of the Gu Immortals of Profound Literature grotto-heaven were killed.

“Persevere, this is our home, we cannot lose it. I have already requested for reinforcements, we cannot let these despicable thugs succeed!” Old Immortal Hua Yu shouted, slightly stabilizing the morale of the soldiers.

He then opened his mouth and moved his tongue, spitting out text characters.

These characters were like a storm as they shrouded Dragon Palace with dense frost energy.

Immortal killer move — Cold Words!

The moment Dragon Palace was struck by this move, layers of frost solidified on its surface which greatly slowed its speed. The frost continued to condense and spread, and in a blink of an eye, was already as tall as an adult’s calf. If this went on, the whole of Dragon Palace would be sealed in ice.

Wu Shuai snorted as he activated his defensive killer move.

The frost on Dragon Palace’s surface began to melt gradually, and Dragon Palace’s power continued to rise, letting out rays of orange light.

The orange light shot towards Old Immortal Hua Yu, who immediately changed the words he recited and used a movement method.

Immortal killer move — Quick Words!

At the next moment, his speed surged and he perfectly dodged the orange light.

Immortal killer move — Vicious Words!

Old Immortal Hua Yu spat out tides of characters from his mouth, these purplish black words were like poison arrows that shot and detonated on Dragon Palace.

Rumble…

The series of explosions forced Dragon Palace to retreat constantly, at the same time, large amounts of toxic smoke infiltrated Dragon Palace.

Wu Shuai was seated on the main seat, he did not panic upon seeing this and immediately activated defensive methods to resolve this danger.

Old Immortal Hua Yu's reputation was not undeserving, he truly had some skills, to be able to confront Dragon Palace without losing his ground.

Naturally, this was because Dragon Palace was an enslavement path Immortal Gu House and was most proficient in the enslavement aspect. Moreover, Wu Shuai did not reveal the Four Dragon Generals although he had already gathered them. What he used normally was the Evil Dragon, which had already become a trump card of Dragon Palace.

The Evil Dragon was rampaging!

The two heavens alliance's Gu Immortals were killing and looting!

Wu Shuai was not in a hurry at all, because the situation was extremely favorable to him.

Old Immortal Hua Yu became increasingly anxious as the battle continued, he knew he was already tangled up with Dragon Palace and would have to rely on external force to save Profound Literature grotto-heaven from the danger.

But could the reinforcements arrive in time?

Old Immortal Hua Yu was awaiting the reinforcements, but he knew there was not much hope. Although he had a high reputation, and Profound Literature grotto-heaven's relationship with the surrounding grotto-heaven forces was also quite close, but asking these people to reinforce him in fighting against such strong enemies?

Old Immortal Hua Yu placed himself in their position and thought: if a surrounding grotto-heaven was attacked and asked him for reinforcements, and the enemy was the two heavens alliance, he would also hesitate.

The two heavens alliance's Gu Immortals continued to wreak havoc.

Flames of battle rose everywhere as living beings were exterminated.

"Old Immortal Hua Yu, use your trump cards if you have any left, if you don't use them now, you won't be able to save your grotto-heaven. Hahaha." Wu Shuai laughed wildly.

Old Immortal Hua Yu was silent, his expression grim.

The aftereffects of their fight harmed everything around them, causing holes to appear in the grotto-heaven aperture walls, linking the inside to the outside world.

Suddenly, Wu Shuai's laughter stopped as he shouted in fury: "Old geezer Qi Sea!"

The moment he finished speaking, boundless qi currents surged in from outside and gathered into a giant hand.

The hand was as large as a mountain as it slammed into Dragon Palace and sent it flying far away.

Following which, a tall and sturdy figure appeared in the grotto-heaven's sky, looking down at Dragon Palace.

“Qi Sea Ancestor!” Old Immortal Hua Yu looked up and said with surprise and joy.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s appearance surprised him, but thinking about it carefully, he felt it was natural. Qi Sea Ancestor was the biggest enemy of Wu Shuai, he would not sit by and watch Wu Shuai leading the two heavens’ forces to do whatever he pleased.

Roar—!

Dragon Palace moved back while the Evil Dragon took its place.

Qi Sea Ancestor, however, held his hands behind his back with no intention to attack: “Wu Shuai, stop now, I can let all of you retreat. If we truly fight, your two heavens alliance will cease to exist.”

“You…” Wu Shuai’s furious voice came from Dragon Palace: “Qi Sea Ancestor!”

The Evil Dragon stopped, Wu Shuai seemed to be thinking.

Old Immortal Hua Yu let out a sigh of relief, looking towards Qi Sea Ancestor with an extremely grateful look.

Qi Sea Ancestor did this to preserve Profound Literature grotto-heaven and not let it turn into ruins. This was not easy! The two heavens alliance’s Gu Immortals were scattered everywhere, Qi Sea Ancestor could take the chance to attack them and deal heavy damage to the two heavens alliance.

But Qi Sea Ancestor did not do this, instead, he considered Profound Literature grotto-heaven. Moreover, prior to this, Old Immortal Hua Yu had never come into contact with Qi Sea Ancestor.

“Qi Sea Ancestor took such protective action for an outsider like me. He is truly worthy of being a famed expert and the leader of Eastern Sea’s righteous path!” Old Immortal Hua Yu was extremely moved.

However, at the next moment, the Evil Dragon attacked and Dragon Palace followed closely behind.

“Qi Sea Ancestor, it has been too long since the battle that day. Face my move again!” Wu Shuai shouted.

“Despicable!” Old Immortal Hua Yu cursed when he saw Wu Shuai sneak attacking.

But Qi Sea Ancestor was smiling as if he was already prepared: “Come.”

Boom!

At the next moment, the Evil Dragon and Dragon Palace crashed into a firm and solid qi wall.

The qi wall broke down but the Evil Dragon and Dragon Palace’s momentum was also completely exhausted.

“Old geezer Qi Sea, I am relieved that you are so energetic. We shall battle later!” Wu Shuai saw he was unable to gain any progress and started to retreat slowly.

Dragon Palace and Evil Dragon left the battlefield and moved out of the grotto-heaven.

The two heavens alliance’s Gu Immortals did not dare to stay any longer and started retreating, they were afraid of Dragon Palace leaving them behind in this dangerous place.

Wu Shuai’s group arrived fast and left just as quickly, leaving behind flames of war and ruin.

Old Immortal Hua Yu did not rush to provide disaster relief and stabilize the situation, instead, he flew towards Qi Sea Ancestor and bowed deeply: “Ancestor, you helped us in repelling the enemies. Everyone in Profound Literature grotto-heaven is grateful for your kindness.”

Qi Sea Ancestor smiled brightly as he held Old Immortal Hua Yu’s hands and pulled him up: “We are both humans, it is natural for us to band together and help each other against the variant humans.”

Old Immortal Hua Yu said with hatred: “Wu Shuai is trying to overturn humanity’s rule, he is a lunatic and a despicable fellow. He is an enemy of everyone in Profound Literature grotto-heaven, we won’t rest until he dies!”

Qi Sea Ancestor nodded: “In the current era, chaotic times are coming, who can stay out of it? It is good that you realize this!”

Old Immortal Hua Yu cupped his fists and bowed again: “Looking at the immortals in this world, only Ancestor’s might and prestige has spread everywhere, your moral conduct is worthy of being respected. From today onwards, Profound Literature grotto-heaven will be at your command, we will listen to your arrangements.”

Qi Sea Ancestor smiled: “Brother Hua Yu, let’s join hands in fighting the variant humans, we will protect our homelands and fight for a beautiful future.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

A tea ceremony was in session.

Old Immortal Hua Yu sat on the lower seat while he let Fang Yuan have the main seat.

Fang Yuan used Qi Sea Ancestor’s identity to talk with the Gu Immortals, obtaining first hand information regarding the part of white heaven above Eastern Sea.

There were not just Profound Literature grotto-heaven’s Gu Immortals who participated in the tea ceremony. After Qi Sea Ancestor repelled the enemies, Gu Immortals continued to arrive to reinforce them.

These Gu Immortals were from the surrounding forces and were late in reinforcing Profound Literature grotto-heaven, but Old Immortal Hua Yu asked them to stay and join this tea ceremony regardless.

Qi Sea Ancestor said frankly: He had already allied with Heavenly Court and wanted to recruit the human forces in the two heavens, to fight against Wu Shuai’s variant human alliance and defend the righteous path of humanity.

Old Immortal Hua Yu was naturally the first to support it, the other forces also responded quite passionately. Many of the Gu Immortals even express their willingness to join Qi Sea Ancestor’s faction to fight Wu Shuai’s violent and lawless alliance.

Some Gu Immortals hesitated while many others had to report to their superiors to come to a decision.

The tea ceremony ended. Fang Yuan was quite satisfied with the result.

The first step was important if he wanted to interfere in the two heavens’ grotto-heavens. With Wu Shuai’s active cooperation, almost all the two heaven’s Gu Immortals recognized Wu Shuai’s might and felt insecure. Everyone realized they could not evade this calamity because even a powerful force like Profound Literature grotto-heaven was almost exterminated. If not for Qi Sea Ancestor lending a hand, Profound Literature grotto-heaven would have ceased to exist.

Chaotic times were coming and no one could stay out of it. Only by stepping on the waves of chaos could they survive and grow stronger.

Qi Sea Ancestor needed only slight effort to persuade five grotto-heaven forces. Of course, it would take some more effort to integrate them. And important details like profit distribution and other rules had yet to be finalized.

Even so, Qi Sea Ancestor’s action had already caused a huge change in the two heavens’ forces, even affecting the overall situation of the conflict between humanity and the variant human races.

Fang Yuan naturally would not conceal this news, the moment the tea ceremony ended, he spread this news in treasure yellow heaven.

In an instant, the Gu Immortal world of the five regions was shaken.

Some sighed at the changing state of the world and the impending chaos, some praised Qi Sea Ancestor’s righteous move and felt he could shoulder the responsibility to lead humanity, some were guessing Wu Shuai’s next move, and some were thinking of Eastern Sea’s political situation. Qi Sea Ancestor was publicly recognized as the most powerful expert in Eastern Sea, now that he was so close with Heavenly Court, how would Eastern Sea’s righteous path forces face this relationship?

The five regional walls were gone, the independent five regions merged into one, changes in any one side could change the whole situation of the five regions. Every move of an expert with an identity and status like Qi Sea Ancestor could deeply influence the whole world.

Eastern Sea, Shen clan.

"Are there still no clues on Ancestor Shen Shang’s whereabouts?" Shen Cong Sheng sighed: "I don’t blame you, qi tides are appearing everywhere, Divine Emperor City is a very tightly protected area."

A Shen clan Gu Immortal asked: "First supreme elder, Qi Sea Ancestor has already allied with Heavenly Court now, they even handed over the latter half of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance. What should we do?"

Shen Cong Sheng replied: "I have already discussed this with Song Qi Yuan, Hua Cai Yun, and other first supreme elders. Qi Sea Ancestor is our Eastern Sea’s expert, he cannot be recruited by Heavenly Court. Every clan will take out a portion of cultivation resources from their treasuries and gather them into a big gift to build a good relationship with Ancestor."

Shen clan’s Gu Immortal nodded, not objecting to it.

Qi Sea Ancestor was the most valuable existence to rope in, besides his battle strength, it was also because he cultivated qi path.

Currently, Eastern Sea’s super forces were thinking of developing qi path and they would have double the results if they could get Qi Sea Ancestor’s help in this aspect.

Fang Yuan put on a great show before, everyone in Gu Immortal world thought Qi Sea Ancestor liked to give guidance and support the younger generation. This made Eastern Sea’s super forces feel there was a high possibility in this matter.

Western Desert, Fang clan’s headquarters.

Fang Gong’s expression was dark: "We are willing to pay such a huge price but Heavenly Court still doesn’t want to release Fang Di Chang?"

One of the gathered Fang clan Gu Immortals said: "First supreme elder, in my opinion, Heavenly Court is not sincere at all, they are just stalling for time and fooling us."

"Hmph!" Fang Gong slammed his right fist on the table.

He was furious but helpless.

In the fate war, Fang clan’s losses were the largest. Not only did they lose Divine Bean Palace, even their strategist Fang Di Chang was captured by the enemy and there was no news of him until now.

Fang clan naturally thought Fang Di Chang was captured by Heavenly Court. Thereupon, they secretly contacted Heavenly Court and wanted to pay a huge price to redeem Fang Di Chang.

But Heavenly Court had all along been stalling their request.

Fang Di Chang was extremely important to Fang clan, without him, Fang clan would be without a strategist.

After Fang clan refined Divine Bean Palace, they had the possibility of raising their status and becoming the leader of Western Desert’s righteous path. But Divine Bean Palace and Fang Di Chang were gone, destroying Fang clan’s dream of becoming the leader.

Fang Gong was in a very bad mood, especially after hearing of Qi Sea Ancestor’s actions.

"Qi Sea Ancestor has already begun to lead Eastern Sea, but me? Fang clan? We are just stagnating at the same spot! Sigh..." Fang Gong felt helpless.

The only thing that gave him some joy was that Fang Di Chang had already prepared for the future and had passed on Fang clan’s wisdom path inheritance to Fang Yun.

"Since Heavenly Court is not willing to release Fang Di Chang, we can only prioritize on cultivating Fang Yun." Fang Gong made the decision.

They could not wait any longer.

Time waits for no one!

Cultivating a Gu Immortal, especially a competent wisdom path Gu Immortal, required a long time.

Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

Qin Ding Ling looked at the intel and smiled, muttering to herself: "Fang clan is actually willing to pay such a huge price to buy back Fang Di Chang. If they knew Fang Di Chang was already replaced and is now Fang Yuan’s clone, what would they feel?"

Heavenly Court already knew of Fang Di Chang’s identity.

The current Divine Emperor City was guarded by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s will. He had already informed Qin Ding Ling of this.

Although Fang Di Chang was sealed in Divine Bean Palace’s painting, he had a portion of the authority and was resisting stubbornly, even Genesis Lotus’ will could do nothing about it.

"But it will be over soon." Qin Ding Ling smiled: "That earlier batch of Gu Immortal seeds we sent in are developing extremely well, they already possess strength to defeat Fang Di Chang. As long as we capture him, we can use the close connection between him and Fang Yuan to search for the location of Fang Yuan’s main body."

Spectral Soul was secretly searching for Fang Yuan’s main body, Heavenly Court was doing the same as well.

Qin Ding Ling knew Fang Yuan was in a poor state currently and it was the best time to kill Fang Yuan. If they could kill Fang Yuan, not only would it restore Heavenly Court’s reputation, there would even be enormous spoils of war. Be it the various inheritances on Fang Yuan, his Gu worms, his sovereign immortal aperture, secluded domains of heaven and earth, and so on, they were all things Heavenly Court wanted.

Qin Ding Ling was taking control of Heavenly Court in place of Fairy Zi Wei, although she was only a luck path Gu Immortal, she tried her best and was busy everyday, her hard work was showing results.

Internally, Heavenly Court was leading the ten great ancient sects, actively cultivating talents and recovering their strength.

Externally, Heavenly Court was allying with Eastern Sea, they roped in Qi Sea Ancestor first but the price was half of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance. They would soon capture Fang Di Chang, and their hopes of capturing Fang Yuan’s main body were even higher than Spectral Soul!

"Everything will get better."

"My Heavenly Court is and will continue to be the supreme leader of humanity!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Divine Emperor City.

Inside the painting, Fang Di Chang waved his hand, immediately, a large amount of white sand flew out and scattered around.

The white sand fell on the ground and immediately melted into puddles of milk that seeped into the ground.

Blop blop....

Air bubbles rose from the ground, the beans buried under the ground devoured the milk and grew rapidly.

In three minutes, Fang Di Chang expended the small amount of rank eight immortal material milk sand he had. The barren land became extremely fertile and green bean sprouts broke out of the ground surface.

"Again." Fang Di Chang took out a snow path immortal material.

The immortal material was thrown to the air and was digested by Divine Emperor City, turning into broken lightning rays that covered the whole bean field.

The broken lightning slightly touched the tender bean sprouts and agitated their growth potential, the bean sprouts began growing with a visible speed.

"Continue." After the lightning rays dissipated, Fang Di Chang took out the third immortal material.

Time continued to pass, about three days and three nights later, Fang Di Chang slowly stopped his actions.

He looked at the field, the beans had already grown into divine bean soldiers. They were standing in rows, silent and still like statues as they waited for Fang Di Chang’s orders.

Fang Di Chang sighed, thinking: "This is the last batch of divine bean soldiers. My immortal materials are basically all spent."

As a clone of Fang Yuan, after Fang Di Chang was schemed by Genesis Lotus’ will, he had been trapped in the painting.

Over this period of time after the fate war, he had been waiting for his main body to rescue him while using all his strength to accumulate troops.

But even by now, the main body had not come to save him, Fang Di Chang could only prepare to save himself.

He was now trapped in the painting, unable to contact the main body and even unable to access treasure yellow heaven. But he had refined Divine Bean Palace, so he still held a portion of the authority. This was the reason Genesis Lotus’ will was unable to do anything to him in a short period of time.

Fang Di Chang used this authority to borrow Divine Bean Palace’s strength in cultivating divine bean soldiers.

He was constantly accumulating divine bean soldiers, and now, their size had already reached an enormous scale.

"It is time, move out, invade and seize control of all the paintings!" Fang Di Chang gave a command without any hesitation. The divine bean soldier army began to set out.

They split into countless divisions as they moved towards the edge of the painting and invaded other painting worlds.

Outside Emperor City was a large farmland, wheat billowed in the autumn wind and many farmers were harvesting them.

"This year is an abundant year!"

"Yes, every family has made good harvests."

"What is this noise?"

The farmers were talking happily when they suddenly heard strange sounds and were bewildered.

A group of over three hundred divine bean soldiers charged into this painting world.

They discovered these farmers and behaved like sharks that smelled blood, they moved extremely quickly and killed anyone they saw.

"Run!"

"There are monsters, run!"

"Spare me. Spare...."

Guh.

Blood splattered everywhere, the last farmer’s head and body were separated, falling into a pool of blood.

Divine bean soldiers killed all the humans and occupied this painting world.

At another painting outside of Emperor City.

It was spring and the scenery was beautiful.

A large group of scholars, students and young ladies went for an outing.

In the midst of their joyful talks, several divine bean soldiers appeared suddenly, causing the girls to scream.

"They dare to offend our young ladies!"

"What are these things?"

The scholars and students looked curiously as the guards surrounded the divine bean soldiers.

The divine bean soldiers began to attack, the guards were already on guard so the battle went to a standstill.

"These strange things have bad intentions!"

"Where did these things come out from?"

"Forget that, let’s talk after killing them first."

The scholars and the students cooperated with the Gu Master guards and attacked, killing these divine bean soldiers without wasting much energy.

But soon, an army of a thousand divine bean soldiers arrived in this painting world.

This time, the guards, scholars and students were unable to resist, after a bitter struggle, most of them were killed and stepped on mercilessly by the divine bean soldiers, while a small portion retreated from this painting world and managed to survive.

Each divine bean soldier had extraordinary strength and was at least of desolate beast level, but in the painting world, they had to follow its rules, where the gap between immortal and mortal was minuscule.

Moreover, divine bean soldiers were transported to other painting worlds randomly, so their scales were not equal.

Fang Di Chang made a heavy attack but the divine bean soldier army was scattered everywhere and engaged in their respective invasions. Thus, some divine bean soldiers made good progress, some met strong resistance, while some were directly annihilated by the Gu Masters in the painting world.

Even so, Fang Di Chang soon revealed a satisfied smile.

"My guess was right."

"Divine Bean Palace’s paintings are connected with Emperor City’s paintings. Although I am sealed here, my divine bean soldiers originated from Divine Bean Palace and are of the same origin as the whole of Divine Emperor City, so they can move out."

"The more painting worlds these divine bean soldiers occupy, the more control I will have over Divine Emperor City. After gaining a certain amount of control, I can even go a step further and suppress Genesis Lotus’ will, becoming the owner of Divine Emperor City!"

Fang Di Chang’s huge move this time made the Gu Immortal seeds, sent by Heavenly Court into Divine Emperor City’s painting world, gather and discuss a plan.

"What is going on with these divine bean soldiers?" Chen Da Jiang frowned.

Sun Yao’s eyes were red: "I also don’t know, these monsters appeared and began killing wantonly, they are extremely vicious. Those pitiful beggars and homeless people were all killed by these monsters."

"Maybe this is our fortuitous encounter or maybe it is a test?" Tang Ru Qi guessed.

Ying Sheng Ji frowned: "I killed many divine bean soldiers, but I have not made any gains until now."

Wei Wu Shang analyzed calmly: "Divine bean soldiers are a product of Divine Bean Palace, according to rumors, Gu Immortals can raise these wood path soldiers in a large scale in Divine Bean Palace. When it is time to battle, the Gu Immortal can release them to fight the enemies. Previously, when Divine Bean Palace was with Western Desert, they scattered a large number of divine bean soldiers to fight our Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects."

"So what is the reason behind these divine bean soldiers’ sudden appearance?" Zhao Shu Ye asked.

Wei Wu Shang shook his head: "I don’t know, it has been some time since we arrived here but the painting world here is too vast and profound, we don’t know a lot of its secrets."

"What is the point of trying to figure out the reason?" Right at this time, Xiao Qi Xing walked over.

"Ah, it is Brother Xiao."

"What information do you have? Or do you know the truth of the matter?"

These Gu Immortal seeds asked one after the other, they thought highly of Xiao Qi Xing because he had the best progress among them.

He mixed into the military faction and continued to advance in ranks and was already a junior officer now.

Xiao Qi Xing said: "I don’t care about the reason behind these divine bean soldiers’ appearance, I only know the higher-ups have sent the order to mobilize the army to exterminate these divine bean soldiers. This time, I am leading my troops alone and need assistance. We will cooperate and kill these divine bean soldiers. There will definitely be rewards after the battle."

"It is fine with me. These monsters should be killed!" Chen Da Jiang said.

Sun Yao nodded: "These divine bean soldiers are too vicious, they are simply disregarding human lives. I will take revenge for those pitiful beggars and homeless people."

"Count me in too." Zhao Shu Ye also expressed her stance.

Soon, all of these Gu Immortals agreed and temporarily joined Xiao Qi Xing as his subordinates.

Xiao Qi Xing laughed heartily, he was pleased and proud with this huge increase in strength and manpower: "Move out! Let us kill these divine bean soldiers."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2012 Fang Di Chang“s Death

Divine Emperor City, painting world.

In the vast plaza, Xiao Qi Xing led a large group of troops and was facing a group of divine bean soldiers.

The scale of this group of divine bean soldiers was bigger than Xiao Qi Xing’s side.

"How do we fight them?" Sun Yuan Hua had just asked when the divine bean soldiers charged.

Xiao Qi Xing stopped his side from attacking and smiled: "Everyone, please stay put for now and look at how I fight them."

Saying this, Xiao Qi Xing flicked his fingers repeatedly, a large amount of Gu worms flew out of his aperture.

These Gu worms fell to the ground and turned into human shapes. Most of them were ordinary soldiers, a few clearly looked like elites, and an extremely small number of them looked much more brave and valiant.

"These are soldier Gu, sergeant Gu, lieutenant Gu?" Gu Ting narrowed his eyes.

"They should be." Wei Wu Shang counted roughly: "There are over five hundred of them, looks like Xiao Qi Xing progressed really well in the military camp to be able to accumulate so many human path Gu worms."

"Formation!" Xiao Qi Xing shouted while activating arrow formation Gu.

These soldiers immediately gathered, captains led lieutenants, lieutenants led sergeants, and sergeants led soldiers.

And the entire army formed a giant arrow that rushed head on towards the incoming divine bean soldiers.

"Charge—!"

Xiao Qi Xing’s army roared loudly, on the contrary, the divine bean soldiers were silent like there was no life.

The two sides were like colliding waves which began to mix into each other.

Xiao Qi Xing’s gaze was like lightning as he put all his attention on controlling his troops.

In the chaotic battle, his troops were further divided but they always maintained the most basic military formation.

On the contrary, the divine bean soldiers were a messy and disordered group.

After the initial stalemate, the situation began to slowly fall into Xiao Qi Xing’s grasp. Once he occupied the upper hand, this advantage snowballed and soon, it turned into absolute dominance.

Finally, Xiao Qi Xing’s side won a complete victory with all divine bean soldiers killed off.

"How is it?" Xiao Qi Xing returned with victory and showed off to the other Gu Immortal seeds.

Zhao Shu Ye rolled his eyes, not bothering to reply.

"Brother Xiao is truly amazing!" Chen Da Jiang raised his thumb.

"Hahaha." Xiao Qi Xing laughed heartily and said to Chen Da Jiang: "If you had walked the same path as me back then, you would also have such accomplishments today."

"We should continue. We have only cleared up one painting." Wei Wu Shang said.

"Don’t be careless. These soldiers are only yellow bean divine soldiers, they are the most basic type of divine bean soldier." Gu Ting said.

They continued to march forward and fight divine bean soldiers.

After a while, they arrived at the most flourishing street of Divine Emperor City.

Divine bean soldiers were wantonly killing the people in the city and it was a scene of chaos.

Sun Yao’s eyes turned red with fury. The first time she entered here, she had arrived at this street and enjoyed its flourishing scenes. She had never expected such a beautiful scene to be completely destroyed by the divine bean soldiers, everywhere was littered with corpses and blood flowed into a river.

"This will need everyone’s assistance." Xiao Qi Xing was modest for once: "The paths are narrow and vision is not clear, my troops won’t be able to move properly."

The other Gu Immortal seeds had no objections as they charged to the front lines and attacked.

Xiao Qi Xing stayed at the rear, observing the situation while controlling the soldiers to move forward.

He was deeply aware that he came to compete for Genesis Lotus’ true inheritance, these Gu Masters beside him were his greatest competitors. Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated, this was the best opportunity to gain information about these people.

These Gu Master elites of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects were indeed extraordinary.

Xiao Qi Xing had made a lot of progress, these Gu Masters were also not any inferior.

Ying Sheng Ji continuously took out doctor Gu, which took human forms and saved people everywhere.

Chen Da Jiang went through the outer gate, a group of officers moved around him as he joined the front lines with a long sword and a steel chain.

Sun Yao gave a bigger surprise to Xiao Qi Xing, three female dancers moved around her, their long sleeves fluttered in the wind and weakened the divine bean soldiers. Moreover, Sun Yao also held a human path killer move — Joy in Helping People; this move strengthened her allies.

As for Wei Wu Shang, he appeared and disappeared as he moved in the chaotic battle like a fish in water.

"This guy has already mastered thief Gu." Xiao Qi Xing realized.

These elites immediately shone brightly the moment they made their moves. Xiao Qi Xing also felt heavy pressure as he warned himself: "I really cannot underestimate these people!"

This chaotic battle lasted for five minutes before the whole street was cleared.

Without staying any longer, Xiao Qi Xing’s group marched towards other paintings once again.

The divine bean soldiers in their path were all annihilated.

Naturally, they were not the only group who were counterattacking. The warriors in the painting worlds also organized many groups and participated in the battle, killing the divine bean soldiers.

Ye Fan and Hong Yi were also mixed among other groups, they were secretly conversing.

"These divine bean soldiers are really odd, there are so many types of them."

"The ten great ancient sects’ members have also grown, we need to conceal ourselves and not be discovered by them."

They were the earliest people to enter the painting world.

At this moment, their accumulation far surpassed the Central Continent elites, but Ye Fan and Hong Yi could only move secretly. After all, the five regions world was the main world, once they were discovered by Heavenly Court, the situation would become a mess.

The counterattacking groups became faster the more they killed, their efficiency was increasing continuously and casualties were reducing.

After they had sufficient experience, they completely saw through the types of divine bean soldiers. Yellow bean divine soldiers were only cannon fodder, green bean soldiers could shoot flying arrows, red bean soldiers could self-detonate, black bean soldiers had the greatest defense.

After understanding the characteristics of the different divine bean soldiers, they began to launch targeted attacks. These divine bean soldiers were far weaker than their external appearance.

The counterattacking groups continued to gain victories and seized back more territories.

Finally, they gathered on the city walls of Divine Emperor City.

There was an ocean of divine bean soldiers outside the city walls, Xiao Qi Xing could not help taking in a sharp breath when he saw this.

The enemy force was overwhelming, it was not something their group could handle. They could only have a chance of defending the city by allying with other groups.

Divine bean soldiers rushed forward without any formation.

Xiao Qi Xing’s group attacked with long range skills from top of the city walls.

Divine bean soldiers were like ants as they began climbing the city walls.

The ones guarding the city staked their lives to counterattack, not retreating a step.

The whole battlefield was like a huge meat grinder, large amounts of lives were lost every second.

This battle lasted three days and three nights.

Xiao Qi Xing collapsed and sat weakly on the ground. His snowy-white military robe was already dyed red with blood.

Cheers spread continuously in the surroundings, they had won. This largest group of divine bean soldiers was completely exterminated by them.

Victory was assured!

Next would be to clear up the remaining small groups of divine bean soldiers in every painting.

"Wait a second, we seem to be able to walk out of Divine Emperor City."

"We can follow the path the divine bean soldiers took and attack their base!"

When they were clearing up the battlefield, many made a big discovery.

The troops began to gather once again and battled their way to Fang Di Chang.

In this painting world, Fang Di Chang’s strength was greatly reduced but he still had a group of divine bean soldiers around him.

"So you are the main culprit behind all these!"

"You are going to pay for your sins!"

"Why, why do you need to kill these innocent people, what grudge do you have against them?"

Emotions surged, but Xiao Qi Xing’s group glanced at each other and moved towards the rear silently.

"So the cause of the divine bean soldier calamity was him."

"He is a Gu Immortal of Fang clan, Fang Di Chang, who had once refined Divine Bean Palace."

"I did not expect him to still be alive, and he is creating chaos in the painting world!"

"Don’t tell me, did our sects send us here to get rid of him?"

"Strange, why didn’t Heavenly Court attack and kill Fang Di Chang directly? Maybe this is a test for us, or maybe we can only deal with him while following the rules of the painting world?"

Xiao Qi Xing’s group conversed quickly, their expressions were extremely serious. They were the ones chosen and nurtured by their respective sects, thus they had a lot of information about the Gu Immortal world, they had detailed information about the participants of the fate war.

"Kill!"

"Take revenge for our friends and family!"

"I will cut him into a thousand pieces!!"

The Gu Masters of the painting world attacked Fang Di Chang.

"A bunch of trash." Fang Di Chang stood at the center and commanded his troops calmly. The divine bean soldiers beside him changed their formation and moved smoothly like water. The cooperation between the various types of soldiers was extremely smooth and fluid.

Instantly, the warriors of the painting world suffered heavy casualties.

Xiao Qi Xing’s group was also shocked.

"The scale of these divine bean soldiers is quite small, how could they have such results?"

"With a Gu Immortal commanding them, they are completely different from before."

"What should we do? Battle or retreat?"

"Fight! We have numbers on our side, Fang Di Chang might be strong, but the gap between us is not the gap between immortal and mortal. We have a high chance of success!"

"Slaughter the immortal!!"

Someone shouted the slogan which made Xiao Qi Xing’s group extremely excited.

The moment they joined in the battle, the Gu Masters in the front lines felt like they had received strong reinforcements.

In fact, not only them, even Ye Fan and Hong Yi were also mixed in the battle, helping out secretly.

Fang Di Chang snorted coldly. Under his command, the divine bean soldiers’ formation kept on changing while being extremely stable.

Xiao Qi Xing’s group battled hard for a long time, but to their horror, they discovered that the casualty difference between the enemy and their side had reached a terrifying level. There were only negligible losses to the divine bean soldiers.

"What should we do?"

"An immortal is still an immortal in the end!"

"Let alone when Fang Di Chang is a wisdom path Gu Immortal."

Xiao Qi Xing’s group’s morale fell sharply and they had the thought of retreating, not daring to fight with Fang Di Chang.

But at this time, Fang Di Chang’s body shook suddenly as he coughed a mouthful of blood. He snorted coldly and looked up at the sky, laughing coldly: "Genesis Lotus’ will, you couldn’t endure it and took action after all."

Fang Di Chang was suppressed by Genesis Lotus’ will, his control over the divine bean soldiers was no longer as smooth as before.

Xiao Qi Xing’s group immediately felt the pressure on them reducing sharply, they were surprised and happy as they attacked once again.

Fang Di Chang’s divine bean soldiers continued to fall till they were all annihilated.

Fang Di Chang had no choice but to attack personally, he rampaged through the army, killing everyone in his path with no one being able to rival him.

This did not last long, his condition continued to deteriorate as he began to receive injuries.

After some more time, Fang Di Chang was soaked in blood and started to stagger.

"To think that I, Fang Di Chang, would actually die in such a place!" Fang Di Chang shouted in sadness as he self-detonated resolutely.

Boom!

The Gu Masters surrounding him were wiped out with no intact corpses.

After a short period of shock, the surviving Gu Masters shouted in joy.

"We won!"

"We finally killed the demon."

"Sob... father, mother, I have avenged you."

Xiao Qi Xing’s group was also excited and their faces were flushed red: "We killed an immortal! We succeeded in slaughtering the immortal!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Xiao Qi Xing’s group strolled along the streets.

The huge battle had just ended, the flourishing and bustling street had turned into a scene of desolation, with no pedestrians moving around. Even if there were, they were mostly injured ones.

"Fang Di Chang is not worthy of being in Western Desert’s righteous path! He slaughtered innocents and caused many deaths. Letting him die like this is really letting him go easy." Chen Da Jiang said hatefully.

Ying Sheng Ji sighed as he added: "Yes, this was once a place filled with rich vitality."

"Hehehe. You guys are truly funny." Wei Wu Shang laughed: "This is only a painting world, it is Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s killer move. The people here are not real existences. No matter how many are dead or injured, after a few years, it will be restored back to normal."

"Yes. Compared to these things, I am more curious about the rewards the sects will give us!" Gu Ting said.

Xiao Qi Xing’s eyes brightened: "We killed an immortal as mortals, and even got rid of the hidden disaster in Divine Emperor City. With such a huge contribution, not only our sects, even Heavenly Court should personally reward us, right? Hahaha!"

Xiao Qi Xing laughed heartily and was inwardly pleased.

He had the best performance and had contributed the most in putting down the divine bean soldiers and eliminating Fang Di Chang.

In terms of rewards based on contribution, he would be at the top!

In an alley which the group passed by, two beggars were sitting at a corner, looking at everything with indifference.

The behaviors of these ten great ancient sects’ Gu Immortal seeds naturally fell into these two beggars’ view.

"I owe my thanks to you, Brother Shen." One beggar transmitted his voice.

The other beggar laughed: "Should I address you as Fang Yuan, or Fang Di Chang?"

The other beggar replied: "I am only a clone, and strictly speaking, I can’t even be considered a clone now, I am only a remnant will. So, you don’t need to address me as Fang Yuan. As for Fang Di Chang, he is already dead, having died by self-detonation. I am a nameless person now, just a lowly beggar remains."

Shen Shang’s eyes shone: "You are too modest. Even without me, you were already prepared to use death to escape."

The other beggar nodded, not denying it: "In my previous plan, if I could occupy and seize the painting worlds with the divine bean soldiers, it would have been the best result. But the chance for this was not high. By preempting the actions to take after defeat, I was naturally prepared for everything. Self-detonation destroyed my body and soul, but this will was secretly left behind."

Pausing for a moment, Fang Yuan’s will continued: "I have to thank you for your help regardless. If I relied on just my methods, there is a high probability of Genesis Lotus’ will discovering me. But with you shielding me, it is a completely different case. Shen Shang, your human path attainment continues to grow by the day."

Shen Shang chuckled: "That is true. Since the fate war, after I deciphered the venerable human path killer moves, my human path attainment rose quite a bit. And after I arrived in this painting world, I acted as a beggar, observing and experiencing life which gave me a lot of insight. A beggar has a beggar’s advantage; beggars stand at the lowest level of society, they can observe the attitudes of people, experience kindness and harshness, feel hunger and fullness, warmth and cold."

Shen Shang then changed the topic, asking: "What do you plan to do now? Leave here or continue to stay?"

Fang Yuan’s will did not hesitate: "I am unable to leave here. Even if only a will remains of me now, it has only temporarily escaped the observation of Genesis Lotus’ will and has not grasped a way to leave. What about you?"

Shen Shang also shook his head: "I also haven’t found the method to leave. I have already secretly checked those Gu Immortal seeds of the ten great ancient sects. They are able to enter and exit here because they have obtained the approval of Genesis Lotus’ will. But I believe that as long as I continue to stay in hiding and research, my human path attainment will continue to accumulate and attain a qualitative change. By that time, I can find a method to leave this place."

Fang Yuan’s will looked deeply at Shen Shang, he could see Shen Shang was happy to stay in here.

However, when Fang Yuan thought of it, it was also not strange.

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had made this huge move, he created a special small world to develop human path.

Over here, human path was supreme and other paths were secondary. Human path had the greatest development while other paths had little progress.

At the same time, this world followed the rules of the mortal world, there was an insignificant gap between immortals and mortals, which was more beneficial for the development of human path.

Moreover, the inside and outside were separated, when outsiders came here, they would be isolated from the five regions and could not even connect to treasure yellow heaven. This stopped information from spreading outside or entering and corrupting the people here. Thus, it created an isolated sacred land of human path.

Shen Shang primarily cultivated human path. In here, he was like a gluttonous monster that saw absolutely rare delicacies, he was like a fish in water and even felt deeply attached to this place.

Fang Yuan’s will was currently possessing a body, it was created from Shen Shang’s beggar Gu.

He had two choices in front of him now. One was to wait for the main body to rescue him, the other was to cultivate alongside Shen Shang and use Shen Shang’s strength to get free.

All the information concerning the divine bean soldier calamity was gathered in Qin Ding Ling’s hands.

"Fang Di Chang died by self-detonation?" Qin Ding Ling frowned.

This result somewhat disappointed Qin Ding Ling, she had been hoping to capture this clone of Fang Yuan alive. And through him, deduce the location of Fang Yuan’s main body.

"I did not expect Fang Yuan’s clone to resolutely kill himself, but this also conforms to Fang Yuan’s vicious personality." Qin Ding Ling did not hold much doubts.

"If we could capture him alive, that would have been better. In the painting world, the gap between immortals and mortals is not big. Unfortunately, these Gu Immortal seeds have not grown enough and were unable to grasp the opportunity." Qin Ding Ling sighed inwardly.

Xiao Qi Xing’s group thought they made important contributions by slaughtering an immortal, but in her mind, Qin Ding Ling reviewed it poorly.

However, even so, Qin Ding Ling decided to reward these Gu Immortal seeds heavily. They were important cultivation targets after all.

After dealing with the matter of rewards, Qin Ding Ling put her attention on Eastern Sea’s conflict once again.

Eastern Sea’s conflict was the clash between humans and variant humans.

One side was led by Qi Sea Ancestor while the other was led by Wu Shuai. They had fought several times in the immemorial two heavens as well as sea areas of Eastern Sea, and the battles were becoming increasingly fierce.

After Qi Sea Ancestor saved Profound Literature grotto-heaven, he united several grotto-heaven forces in the two heavens.

Although Wu Shuai was defeated, he was not willing to show any weakness. On one hand, he gathered the forces of the two heavens that joined him, on the other hand, he ambushed and invaded those grotto-heaven forces that wanted to wait and see.

Wu Shuai’s direction was extremely clear and blunt.

Before attacking the five regions, he must clean up the two heavens to stabilize their base.

On one hand, this was because the distance between the two heavens’ grotto-heavens was short and they could dispatch troops easily. If Wu Shuai ignored this, when the main army was outside in the future, the grotto-heavens only needed to pose an attack and it could cause Wu Shuai’s army to end up losing their home ground.

On the other hand, qi harvest fruits of various sizes had appeared in grotto-heavens of Wu Shuai’s subordinates. Every time Wu Shuai attacked another grotto-heaven, he would test the variant human Gu Immortals’ suggestions to get rid of the qi harvest fruits. Wu Shuai’s side was in dire need of such trial and error.

Because of Wu Shuai’s violent strategy, more and more human forces in the two heavens sought Qi Sea Ancestor’s protection.

Qi Sea Ancestor defended the grotto-heavens while integrating various forces. But on the whole, they were still at a disadvantage.

Wu Shuai’s two heavens alliance was strengthening at a much faster speed than Qi Sea Ancestor’s.

He was actively protecting the variant humans’ benefits, which caused increasingly more variant human grotto-heavens to join him. In the two heavens, variant human grotto-heavens were much larger in numbers than human grotto-heavens.

The final batch of variant human forces who adopted the thought of waiting and seeing took the initiative to side with Wu Shuai. On one hand, they were forced to because of the situation, on the other hand, if they did not surrender, there was no hope in resolving the hidden danger of the qi harvest fruits in their grotto-heavens.

Wu Shuai’s prestige soared but the qi harvest fruit’s issue was still troubling him. The two heavens alliance tested many methods but they had all failed in eliminating qi harvest fruits.

Over at Qi Sea Ancestor’s side, the progress in researching the mysteries of qi harvest fruit was also quite slow.

Wu Shuai’s and Qi Sea Ancestor’s sides fought frequently, but there were not many casualties. It was because both sides were not focused on eliminating the other side, but on clearing up the danger of the qi harvest fruits.

"The one who knows the most about the mysteries of the qi harvest fruit is probably Demon Immortal Qi Jue. Unfortunately my strength is restrained at present and unable to deal with him." Fang Yuan sighed in pity.

He had already resolved the huge problem of heaven’s will, but he still had no clue as to how to refine heaven path dao marks.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue, who Fang Yuan was thinking about, had currently arrived at Western Desert.

"It should be nearby." Demon Immortal Qi Jue flew low and searched everywhere.

He did not succeed in borrowing Gu from Qi Sea Ancestor, so he used qi path investigative methods to search for other qi path Immortal Gu.

And on this search, he found several qi path Immortal Gu.

These qi path Immortal Gu were mostly wild Immortal Gu, they were naturally born after enormous qi tides, as for the rest, they were looted from other Gu Immortals.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not go overboard, he only looted qi path Immortal Gu and spared the Gu Immortals.

Moving and stopping along the way, Demon Immortal Qi Jue gradually left Eastern Sea and arrived at Western Desert.

"I deduced that a qi path Immortal Gu is near here." Just as Demon Immortal Qi Jue was mumbling, a Gu Immortal suddenly appeared within his investigative range.

Rank eight Gu Immortal, Red Heart Traveler!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Seeing this Gu Immortal, who was wearing a headband and a green robe, having a tall and powerful stance and handsome appearance, Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s mind shook: "That qi path Immortal Gu I deduced, could it be on this person?"

The moment this thought emerged, Demon Immortal Qi Jue attacked!

With a loud sound, a giant white qi hand moved to catch Red Heart Traveler.

Almost at the same time that Demon Immortal Qi Jue discovered Red Heart Traveler, Red Heart Traveler also discovered Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not recognize Red Heart Traveler, but Red Heart Traveler already had Heavenly Court’s first hand information on Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Seeing the white qi hand fly towards him, Red Heart Traveler’s heart jumped and he quickly evaded.

Red Heart Traveler was a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal and the previous Demon Judgment Board leader, he was very strong. During the fate war, he came to Western Desert and disguised as a blood path demonic immortal, attracting the attention of many super forces of Western Desert’s righteous path, thus restraining a large number of hostile forces for Central Continent.

Looking at the whole of Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world, Red Heart Traveler had the confidence to fight against almost any Western Desert Gu Immortal. But right now, his opponent was Demon Immortal Qi Jue, one of the strongest Gu Immortals in the present age.

Red Heart Traveler was well aware that he was not Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s match. The gap was too large, and the loser of this battle was certain to be him.

So Red Heart Traveler retreated without any hesitation.

At the next moment, Demon Immortal Qi Jue saw a lump of blood red light emerge behind Red Heart Traveler’s head, after which the latter’s speed increased sharply and was able to dodge his qi hand.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue exclaimed slightly, mumbling inwardly: "Blood path again? It seems like blood path is very prolific in this age."

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was naturally not willing to let go of Red Heart Traveler so easily, so he gave chase.

One chased and one fled, they had soon traveled over ten thousand li.

To his surprise, Demon Immortal Qi Jue discovered his main movement method was actually unable to catch up to Red Heart Traveler. Naturally, he was not left behind in the dust either.

"I have already modified my movement method but I am still unable to catch up to this person. Who is this person? A rank eight blood path Gu Immortal...."

Demon Immortal Qi Jue searched his memories and gradually found some clues.

He had previously soul searched Qing Hui Zi and obtained a lot of information.

Red Heart Traveler’s true identity was not exposed but he created havoc in Western Desert, and with the sensitive identity of a rank eight blood path expert, information regarding him was already spread in treasure yellow heaven and every Gu Immortal in the world had learned of it.

After chasing for some more time, Demon Immortal Qi Jue suddenly shouted: "Where exactly are you running to?"

His preparation was finished, he activated a killer move.

Red Heart Traveler immediately felt the surrounding qi currents engulf him, severely affecting his speed.

He sighed inwardly, he could only turn around and fight Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s moves were majestic and powerful, milky white qi currents surged like a tsunami with unstoppable might.

When they truly fought, there was no surprise, Red Heart Traveler fell into a disadvantage. But his methods also were not weak, blood red light spread and blood red flowers bloomed, there was no evil feeling, on the contrary, they were warm and righteous as they defended him.

Red Heart Traveler struggled with all his might, but in just several rounds, his whole body was soaked with sweat. He sighed internally: "As expected of a monster that was recorded in history, he is too strong!"

Red Heart Traveler felt he was like a small boat that was using all its strength to dodge and delay for time under the tidal wave-like attacks of Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

After several more rounds, Red Heart Traveler was already in a perilous situation.

At this time, there was suddenly a beast roar. An immemorial desolate beast drilled out from the desert and went for a surprise attack on Demon Immortal Qi Jue from behind.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was caught off-guard but he did not panic, he waved his hand and a mountain-like giant qi hand slammed into the immemorial desolate beast.

But just as this immemorial desolate beast was about to be struck by the giant hand, it suddenly let out bright light and transformed into an immemorial swallow that shot towards Demon Immortal Qi Jue like a black arrow.

"So it is a transformation path Gu Immortal! Haha, interesting." Demon Immortal Qi Jue was slightly surprised, he praised while he fought against this immortal.

The aid was from Nine Spiritual Fairy.

She and Red Heart Traveler had come to Western Desert together to help each other out.

With her reinforcement, Red Heart Traveler’s situation immediately turned better, he managed to escape from the horrible outcome of death.

"We can’t fight for long! This old demon is truly terrifying, we are not his match. We are only able to resist him now because he is not familiar with our methods yet." Red Heart Traveler hurriedly transmitted his voice.

He had fought Demon Immortal Qi Jue and felt the terror of an expert at the peak of the present age. Demon Immortal Qi Jue was unable to get rid of him because he had resurrected not long ago and had yet to completely adapt to the changes. If they truly fought, it was only a matter of time before Heavenly Court’s two immortals were killed by Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

"I have an idea, follow me!" Nine Spiritual Fairy transmitted her voice, retreating while fighting.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue chased after the two immortals all the way to a desert.

Nine Spiritual Fairy suddenly transformed into an immemorial desolate beast and held Red Heart Traveler in her mouth before plunging into the desert.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue snorted coldly: "Foolish action!"

With a clap of his hands, heaven and earth shook. Milky white qi current slammed the desert surface like a tsunami, the surrounding hundred li of desert was forcibly pressed down to over ten feet deep!

Nine Spiritual Fairy let out a muffled groan as she suffered heavy injuries.

Red Heart Traveler quickly used healing methods on her.

Nine Spiritual Fairy did not dare to return to fighting and concentrated only on moving deeper into the ground.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was just about to plunge into the desert and continue chasing when he suddenly heard a beast roar. At the next moment, a huge immemorial soul beast flew out of the nearby desert ground.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s pupils shrunk slightly when he saw this immemorial soul beast.

This immemorial soul beast had a strange shape and looked quite furious. It had a tortoise shell, four tiger paws, dragon tail, snake neck, and a human head. Its head was full of disheveled hair and its eyes were letting out ominous light and fury.

This was a legendary immemorial desolate beast with many Immortal Gu!

"Oh, you found Qing Chou." Seeing Demon Immortal Qi Jue tangled with the immemorial soul beast, Red Heart Traveler exclaimed in shock.

This immemorial soul beast was Qing Chou.

After Divine Bean Palace was seized by Fang clan, Qing Chou left Divine Bean Palace and hid itself in some areas.

But in the fate war, Divine Bean Palace and Emperor City had merged into one and Genesis Lotus’ was in control of it. After the fate war, Genesis Lotus’ will naturally handed all kinds of information to Heavenly Court.

Not only did Qin Ding Ling know of Fang Di Chang’s true identity, she also obtained information on Qing Chou. Divine Bean Palace had imprisoned Qing Chou for so many years, Genesis Lotus’ will had an extremely high understanding of it and knew of a secret method to find it.

Qin Ding Ling obtained this secret method and secretly commanded Nine Spiritual Fairy to search for Qing Chou and subdue it.

Qing Chou was a legendary immemorial beast, not only did it have outstanding battle strength, it also had a natural ability to recognize everything related to Spectral Soul. If Heavenly Court obtained it, not only could they deal with Fang Yuan, they could even deal with Spectral Soul, it could be considered as killing two birds with one stone.

Nine Spiritual Fairy had found Qing Chou’s location not long ago, but her strength was insufficient and she had no confidence in succeeding. When Red Heart Traveler ran into Demon Immortal Qi Jue, she thought of a plan to lure Demon Immortal Qi Jue into fighting with Qing Chou.

"Amazing, like this, we can watch from the sidelines and even possibly benefit from their conflict." Red Heart Traveler smiled.

"Qing Chou is not Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s match, we need to observe the situation before making a decision." Nine Spiritual Fairy talked while moving deeper into the ground, the further away they were from the battlefield, the better.

However, beyond the expectations of Heavenly Court’s two immortals, Demon Immortal Qi Jue felt something amiss and breathed out boundless qi currents that filled the sky.

He entered them and quickly disappeared.

Without an opponent, Qing Chou also chose to leave the battlefield, escaping to the horizons.

Deep underground, Heavenly Court’s two immortals looked at each other. Red Heart Traveler suddenly said: "Damn it! That Blood Sea true inheritance is going to be taken!"

Nine Spiritual Fairy was stunned for a moment before reacting: "You really found that blood path true inheritance?"

Red Heart Traveler nodded, sighing: "Heavenly Court’s clues were not wrong, the crucial key was the qi tide that exposed the Blood Sea true inheritance. I searched for over half a month before finally arriving at the location. But I ran into Demon Immortal Qi Jue over there."

Nine Spiritual Fairy was silent.

Meanwhile, Demon Immortal Qi Jue returned back to the original spot.

"It is really here!" He inspected for a while, discovering the target was still here and had not moved.

After trying for a while more, he successfully obtained this Blood Sea true inheritance.

Back then, Blood Sea Ancestor had set up hundreds of thousands of inheritance sites that spread over Central Continent, Southern Border, Northern Plains, Western Desert and Eastern Sea. Among them, there were nine true inheritances.

One of the true inheritances had now fallen into Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s hands.

"Blood path true inheritance... amazing, with this true inheritance, it will be several times easier for me to deal with blood path Gu Immortals."

"And this blood qi Immortal Gu is really suitable for me. Hahaha."

Demon Immortal Qi Jue laughed heartily.

Almost all the killer moves he activated before consumed qi path immortal materials. Now that he obtained a qi path Immortal Gu, his strength was raised further.

Although there was still some difference from his peak condition in history, he was already much stronger than when he fought Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2015 Sand Wolf City“s Huge Change

Western Desert.

Wind blew hard and sand flew everywhere. A merchant caravan pulled by camels was moving with difficulty through the barren desert.

"Oh heavens, we finally returned to Sand Wolf City." Inside the caravan, Peng Da spoke with deep emotions as he showed an exhausted expression.

Gu Master Mo Li was sitting on a camel to the side, he looked at Peng Da and laughed: "Kid, your words are quite different from when we moved out the first time."

Peng Da’s face flushed a little. When Mo Li had just organized the merchant caravan, Peng Da had been extremely excited and thought the adventure would be amazing and fun.

But after a few caravan trips, Peng Da had already fully realized his former naivety. In this world, peddling was not only difficult and extremely dangerous, it was also extremely tiring. With even some slight carelessness, his fragile life would be lost in the vast and merciless desert.

However, Peng Da’s emotions resonated with other Gu Masters in the merchant caravan.

"Yes, we are back home again."

"We did not encounter any danger in this journey, but it was truly exhausting. I am going to take a good bath after returning."

"I am already unable to control myself, I’ll go drink my fill at the tavern, hahaha."

Mo Li smiled, he thought of his wife as well as his son, who had changed a lot recently. His son was selected and was heavily cultivated, his prodigal son had truly turned over a new leaf.

These beautiful wonders of life gave Mo Li brand new hope and motivation. Being a caravan merchant was difficult, but he found joy in his own way.

"Wait, something is going on!" The investigative Gu Master who was at the forefront of the caravan suddenly shouted.

Peng Da immediately tensed up while also feeling somewhat strange. According to common sense, this was near Sand Wolf City and there should be no danger here. So why was there the sudden warning?

Mo Li immediately activated his investigative Gu worm, his body slightly stiffened as he shouted: "The situation is strange, rush forward with full speed!"

Peng Da and the rest did not know the reason but seeing Mo Li take the lead, they naturally believed in the merchant caravan leader and followed quickly.

When they got close to Sand Wolf City, they did not even need to use Gu worms to discover the abnormalities.

Puffs of gray smoke curled upwards, there was also fire and a burnt smell in the air that all came from Sand Wolf City.

Everyone in the merchant caravan had a bad feeling as they moved even faster.

Finally, they arrived in front of Sand Wolf City’s gate.

"Impossible!"

"What exactly is going on?!"

"Oh heavens, this is a dream, right? It must be a dream."

Some of the merchant caravan members simply knelt on the ground, some broke down and started crying, even the most stable, leader Mo Li, was standing in a daze.

Peng Da’s eyes were wide open as he looked at the scene in front of him in disbelief.

The flouring Sand Wolf City had now become ruins. There were corpses everywhere, rubble and wreckage littered the roads, fire burned and smoke was everywhere, the scene was too horrible to look at.

Mo Li mumbled when he suddenly jolted, running towards the inner city.

His movement jolted many people, Gu Masters began rushing to their homes.

Peng Da did not have a home so he rode a camel and followed Mo Li.

Mo Li was fast, and with anxiety burning his heart, he directly left Peng Da far behind. Fortunately, Peng Da had returned to Sand Wolf City several times and knew the path to Mo Li’s home.

When Peng Da reached Mo Li’s home, he saw ruins. Mo Li was kneeling on the ground, silently looking at his wife’s corpse that he had dug out.

Peng Da, however, sensed deep sadness from Mo Li’s silence.

"How could this be? What exactly happened here?" While Peng Da was sad, even more so, he was bewildered.

As far as he was concerned, Sand Wolf City was a large city with many Gu Masters stationed here, but it was actually destroyed and turned into a city devoid of life!

What kind of strength could have the power to destroy the whole of Sand Wolf City?

Was it a qi tide disaster?

But it did not look like that at all from the traces.

"This world is truly too dangerous. People are living in danger, even Gu Masters are the same. There is simply no safe place." Peng Da felt his insignificance growing increasingly.

He looked at Mo Li who was kneeling like a statue and opened his mouth several times before finally saying: "Uncle, we need to pull ourselves together. Don’t forget you still have a son."

These words shook Mo Li, his eyes lit up with some hope once again.

"Peng Da, thank you for your reminder! My son is still in the inner city area, he is a Gu Immortal seed and is heavily nurtured. He must be okay, he has to be guarded properly! Let’s go find him!"

Mo Li carried his wife’s corpse and rushed towards the inner city area with Peng Da.

The whole inner city area had turned into a huge crater.

The inner city area — was gone!

Several caravan members were standing at the edge of the crater, watching it blankly.

Mo Li walked towards them and looked at the huge crater in front of him, his face turned extremely pale and his lips trembled, unable to say anything.

Peng Da took in a sharp breath of air, he could see this huge crater was a beast’s footprint. Such a large footprint meant this beast was unimaginably huge!

"This is not man-made."

"A beast calamity!"

"A mountain sized beast attacked Sand Wolf City and killed everyone!"

The caravan members analyzed and started weeping again.

Mo Li fell into deathly silence and Peng Da did not know how to console him. Mo Li once had a beautiful home and now it was all gone, only he himself was remaining.

As far as Mo Li was concerned, as far as the surviving caravan members were concerned, fate was simply too cruel!

Boom—!

Just at this time, there was a sonic boom in the sky above everyone.

This sound immediately attracted everyone’s attention.

"Could it be that the giant beast did not leave?" Peng Da quickly raised his head and saw two figures floating in the sky.

"Gu Immortals!" The other Gu Masters shouted.

"Disaster befell this place as well." The Gu Immortals in the sky talked, their voices echoing and spreading below, they did not conceal it.

"This damned beast, it has caused my Mo clan to suffer such disastrous losses. Wait until I capture it, I will pull out its tendons and flay its skin to ease my anger." Another Gu Immortal said in fury.

"Let’s go, we will catch up to it soon." The two Gu Immortals quickly flew away.

The Gu Masters on the ground were silent for a while when someone suddenly started to cry out loud.

"Father, mother, you died so miserably. I, your son, cannot avenge you, but the immortals will uphold justice for you!"

Peng Da was silent, his mood was extremely heavy. At this moment, he suddenly had a realization: Even if one becomes a Gu Master, even if they are a rank five Gu Master, what use is it? Only by becoming a Gu Immortal could they have some sort of control over their own fate in this world.

"I want to follow them to take a look." Mo Li suddenly said with a resolute expression.

"Leader, are you crazy?" The surrounding Gu Masters quickly persuaded.

Mo Li’s attitude was firm: "I am incompetent! I cannot avenge my wife and child, but I will stake all my strength to see the death of the culprit with my own two eyes! If I can’t even grasp this chance, even if I live on, I will feel regret for the rest of my life!"

These words resonated with the remaining Gu Masters, they agreed and expressed that they wanted to move alongside Mo Li to see justice being upheld.

"Uncle, I also want to follow you." Peng Da said.

"You should stay behind, kid." Mo Li’s expression softened somewhat as he looked at Peng Da.

Peng Da smiled bitterly: "Uncle, you have saved me time and time again, you are my closest person in this world. Since I followed you, I will definitely not separate with you at this crucial moment. Let me continue to follow you, uncle!"

Mo Li looked deeply at Peng Da for a good while before nodding and saying with a hoarse voice: "Then follow me, rascal."

The group of Gu Masters followed the direction the Gu Immortals flew towards and left the ruins of Sand Wolf City.

On the way, the footprints of the giant beast was exceptionally obvious, which kept them on the correct path.

They rushed like this for a day and a night when they suddenly heard thunder in the horizon.

"This is not thunder, it is the fight between the Gu Immortals and the giant beast!"

"Listen closely, you can vaguely hear a beast’s howl."

The Gu Masters were excited as they sped up, wanting to get closer.

But at this time, a dark qi current sprayed out like a rainbow crossing the sky.

A thread of the qi current fell near the Gu Masters. A trace of the dark qi brushed past a Gu Master’s shoulder.

That Gu Master suddenly cried out in terror, his skin and muscles started rotting and he soon melted into a white skeleton!

Everyone was horrified at this shocking change and quickly escaped in all directions.

Fortunately, the dark qi dispersed with the wind and did not linger.

"It is too dangerous to go closer!"

"This is only the aftereffect of the fight between the Gu Immortals and the giant beast, we have no strength to resist it."

"If we move in any closer, we will lose our lives."

Most of the Gu Masters stopped and turned back.

"I still want to try it. You can leave." Mo Li was the only remaining Gu Master.

Peng Da still wanted to follow him, but this time, Mo Li’s attitude was firm, he drove him away.

Alone, Mo Li moved some distance with difficulty, when he climbed up a sand dune and looked, he could not help taking in a sharp breath at what he saw.

Far away in the horizon, dark fog covered everywhere.

The fog was clearly the dark qi current from earlier. In the dark fog, Mo Li could vaguely see a figure of a mountain-sized beast as well as the occasional lightning flashes.

Mo Li breathed in deeply and was about to continue moving forward when he was suddenly hugged from behind.

"Uncle, do you want to die? Don’t go any forward, you will lose your life!" Peng Da shouted.

"Brat, why haven’t you left yet?" Mo Li was furious.

Peng Da said with sincerity: "Uncle, you are my benefactor, how can I forget your kindness and watch you send yourself to death’s door? I know you want to die, your condition is not right, I have been following you all the way but you were unable to discover me! Uncle, live on, don’t kill yourself!"

But Mo Li was not persuaded: "Brat, get lost!"

"I won’t!"

"Screw off——! This has nothing to do with you. You are still young and have a long life ahead of you, don’t come here to die."

"Uncle, I will save you!"

"I don’t need you to save me, even if I die, I will stake my life to take revenge. Even if it is an insignificant attack, as long as it lands on that damned beast, I will be satisfied!!"

Boom——!

Just as the two were bickering, a hurricane flew over from the battle on the horizon.

The hurricane was like a pillar that connected heaven and earth, it moved quickly towards the two.

"Damn it!" Peng Da and Mo Li simply did not have the time to dodge and were swept away by the hurricane.

The two insignificant figures disappeared into the violent hurricane in an instant.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Western Desert.

Dark clouds covered the sky and thunder rumbled as the fierce fight of the Mo clan Gu Immortals with the mysterious giant beast continued.

"Die, beast!"

"I will tear out your bones and tendons as resources to compensate for the losses my Mo clan suffered."

The two Mo clan Gu Immortals were furious, the giant beast brought disaster to Mo clan, causing heavy losses. The areas these two were responsible for suffered even more severe damage.

"You want to kill me?" During the battle, the mysterious giant beast suddenly spoke human words.

Mo clan’s two immortals were shocked and their hearts jumped wildly.

At the same moment, the giant beast opened its mouth and shot out its long purple-red tongue.

The long tongue moved with astonishing speed and pierced through a Mo clan Gu Immortal’s body. Almost instantaneously, this Mo clan Gu Immortal was corroded by the strong poison and turned into nothingness.

Only the immortal aperture turned into an indistinct light speck and fell to the ground.

"You are a legendary immemorial beast!?" The remaining Mo clan Gu Immortal was horrified and retreated in panic.

But it was already late.

The mysterious giant beast was Qing Chou. It laughed coldly as ghost qi started surging around it. The dense layers of ghost qi turned into ghostly figures which blocked the Mo clan Gu Immortal.

Qing Chou closed in slowly: "Didn’t you want to kill me and pull out my bones and tendons?"

Mo clan’s Gu Immortal shouted in fear: "Spare me, I belong to Mo clan. Spare me and Mo clan won’t pursue you any further."

"Pursue me?" Hearing this, a trace of anger flashed past Qing Chou’s face: "You two idiots do not even know you are being used by others. Go and die!"

"Ahhh—!" The Mo clan Gu Immortal let out a painful shriek as ghostly figures pounced on and killed them.

After killing these two Gu Immortals, Qing Chou looked towards the desert.

Sand flew wildly on the ground, turning into a giant monster, it was an immemorial sand monster. This was the assistance brought by the Mo clan Gu Immortals, they were able to restrain Qing Chou by using it.

But the Mo clan Gu Immortals had not expected Qing Chou to be a legendary immemorial desolate beast with wisdom that surpassed ordinary humans. Qing Chou took advantage of this point, pretending to be an ordinary immemorial desolate beast, which made the Mo clan immortals complacent and relax their guard. Then with Qing Chou’s fierce counterattack, the immortals died.

With the death of the Mo clan immortals, this immemorial sand monster was no longer controlled; its movement began to slow down and it stood on the ground while looking at Qing Chou.

Qing Chou stared at the immemorial sand monster: "Get lost!"

The immemorial sand monster shook with fear and immediately turned around, plunging into the desert and escaping.

Qing Chou scared away the monster but the surrounding ghost qi intensified further, it looked at a certain area in the sky and sneered: "Two despicable worms, are you still not coming out?"

The moment its words came out, Heavenly Court’s two immortals, Nine Spiritual Fairy and Red Heart Traveler, slowly showed themselves. They were floating in the sky side by side and were looking down at Qing Chou.

Previously, when Red Heart Traveler was searching for the Blood Sea true inheritance, he was obstructed by Demon Immortal Qi Jue. After realizing Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s goal, Red Heart Traveler resolutely gave up on the Blood Sea true inheritance and continued to chase Qing Chou with Nine Spiritual Fairy.

After all, Qing Chou’s matter concerned Heavenly Court’s plan. And, even if he got the Blood Sea true inheritance, it would only raise Red Heart Traveler’s strength. The more important thing was clear with one glance.

Nine Spiritual Fairy and Red Heart Traveler possessed Heavenly Court’s secret method, so they continued to trace and soon discovered Qing Chou.

But the two did not dare to make a move rashly.

This was Western Desert, enemies were all around them, and it was not the territory of these two immortals. If they rashly started a fight, with the other being a legendary immemorial desolate beast, once the fight entered a stalemate, Western Desert’s native Gu Immortals would interfere and the situation would become too unstable.

After some discussion, Nine Spiritual Fairy transformed into an immemorial desolate beast and destroyed the surrounding resource points, attracting some Mo clan Gu Immortals.

The two Mo clan immortals brought an immemorial sand monster but they were not even able to make Qing Chou expend its energy, instead, Qing Chou discovered traces of the two Heavenly Court immortals.

With their plan failing and Qing Chou exposing their position, the two Heavenly Court immortals showed themselves and attacked.

Boom boom boom!

The two immortals were both rank eight and were extraordinary indeed. Their moves were violent and their attacks were like unceasing waves.

Qing Chou immediately fell into a disadvantage.

But Qing Chou was an immemorial desolate beast, its body was extremely tough and thick, there was no injury even after getting hit by several rank eight killer moves.

After dozens of exchanges, it became familiar with the techniques of the Heavenly Court immortals and began to slowly turn around the situation.

However, this did not last long, a qi tide began to appear.

It was because the immortal apertures of the dead Mo clan immortals had opened the entrance and started to absorb heaven and earth qi to stabilize themselves.

There was a difference in the heaven and earth qi in these two immortal apertures and the outside world, and along with the accumulated impact from the fights between the Gu Immortals and Qing Chou, a giant qi tide was formed.

Qing Chou suffered heavy restriction in the qi tide, its strength fell sharply. On the contrary, the two Heavenly Court immortals had offered their immortal apertures and only had phantom apertures, thus they were not affected too much in the qi tide.

Qing Chou roared and struggled but it was all in vain.

It then realized that the two Heavenly Court immortals still had another layer of planning. They did not just use the two Western Desert immortals, they even calculated their immortal apertures in their plan!

Just as Qing Chou was fighting bitterly, Peng Da shook his head and opened his eyes.

"Where am I?" After a moment of daze, he discovered he was being carried by Mo Li and they were moving on a huge sand dune.

"Uncle, you saved me again." Peng Da sighed.

"You are awake." Mo Li smiled.

"Uncle, you can put me down."

But Mo Li shook his head: "Your injuries are severe, although I healed you, you should not move within a short period of time."

Peng Da smiled bitterly: "I have troubled uncle again. Where is this?"

Mo Li replied: "Sigh, we were swept away for over ten thousand li by the hurricane, we are now going back."

Mo Li had lived many years in the desert, he naturally had a method to distinguish the directions.

Peng Da was immediately worried after hearing Mo Li’s words: "Uncle, you still want to return? You want to go back and die?!"

Mo Li was silent for a while, his voice was low and deep, containing resolution: "I also know returning is risky, but if I don’t even see the appearance of the killer of my wife and son, I will never be able to rest easy!"

"Uncle..." Peng Da did not know what to say. He understood the sadness and hatred Mo Li was feeling right now, and it was because of this, he was unable to persuade him further.

Mo Li continued: "Brat, I am thankful for your concern. After we travel a bit further, I will drop you off with enough water and food. It won’t be an issue for you to cross the desert and get to the nearest city."

"Uncle, I won’t leave, I can’t leave you alone."

"Don’t make a scene!"

"I am not making a scene, you are the one who is irrational!"

Just as the two were quarreling, the sand below Mo Li began to move and formed a huge whirlpool that sucked both of them inside.

Mo Li quickly used his Gu worms but it was of no use.

He was pale with shock: "What is going on? My Gu worms actually have no effect!"

Peng Da also tried with no result, his face was extremely pale: "Is this quicksand? We are going to be sucked in!"

This quicksand was too strange, their methods were useless on it.

The two were getting closer and closer to the center of the quicksand, their bodies were slowly buried under the sand and their faces were ashen.

"Am I going to die?" Peng Da mumbled.

Mo Li heaved a deep sigh: "I implicated you, Peng Da."

"I, I don’t blame you uncle. It was all my choice." Peng Da felt his heart beating wildly and his throat parched, he did not know what to express.

The feeling before impending death was really the worst!

But soon, Peng Da’s attention was caught by another thing.

He found that uncle Mo Li who usually had great mental fortitude was actually crying.

Mo Li sobbed: "I am going to die but my revenge has yet to be done! I did not even see the killer’s true appearance. I am too weak, too weak! I don’t even have the qualifications to approach the enemy. The gap between immortals and mortals is too big, I am only a mortal, I am like an ant!"

Peng Da opened his mouth to console Mo Li, but he did not know what to say.

At the next moment, the hot sand poured into his mouth as Peng Da quickly closed it. His whole body was buried and his sight was filled with darkness.

"Am I going to die?"

"I am dying like this?!"

"Hehehehe, I am truly pitiful, to think that my journey in this new world is going to end like this."

"I really don’t want to die, I really don’t want to die!"

Suddenly, in his dark vision, there were specks of starlight.

"Huh? I didn’t die?" Peng Da sat up and looked at the scene in front of him in disbelief.

He was now at the bottom of a dry well, the quicksand whirlpool continued to rotate in the entrance of the well, but the strange thing was that the sand did not fall down.

There was a mysterious force here that stopped the quicksand whirlpool and only allowed Peng Da and Mo Li to enter it.

"Uncle, uncle?" Peng Da immediately saw Mo Li and shouted twice before he got a reaction.

"Kid, you are awake? This is an immortal opportunity, we have struck gold!" Mo Li turned around, saying with excitement and shock: "This is very likely an inheritance left by a Gu Immortal."

"Uncle, you are certain?" Peng Da’s eyes opened in incredulity, this was too dreamlike, the ups and downs of life came too suddenly.

He was not a greenhorn who had just transmigrated, the current Peng Da had traveled with Mo Li’s caravan many times and knew about the Gu world. Gu Immortals and Gu Immortal inheritances were always a topic of discussion among Gu Masters in their idle time, he did not expect the unreachable thing to appear in front of him now.

"Damn it, damn it!"

"Why is there no reaction?"

Mo Li attempted many things and was getting restless but the starlight showed no reaction.

"Uncle, this might not be a Gu Immortal inheritance, right? I feel like you are thinking too much." At this time, Peng Da finally stood up and walked towards Mo Li.

Mo Li did not retort, he also began to doubt his previous judgment.

But right at this time, the starlight suddenly made a movement. Like tidal waves, they passed by Mo Li and entered Peng Da’s body.

The two were shocked.

This happened so fast that when they reacted the starlight had already entered Peng Da’s body.

Without the starlight, the well fell into darkness.

Mo Li activated his Gu worm, creating a lump of fire in his hand that brightened the well once again.

Peng Da was standing on the spot in daze like a statue with his eye eyes wide open.

Mo Li quickly neared him: "Peng Da, Peng Da! Are you alright?"

Only then did Peng Da react: "Un... uncle, you were correct, this is truly a Gu Immortal inheritance and it is Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s inheritance!"

"What, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable?!" Mo Li was shaken, they had a lot of understanding regarding venerable existences as well. Due to the current time and situation, the Gu Immortal world’s knowledge was no longer secret among mortals.

Mo Li’s gaze turned slightly complicated: "This means to say, Peng Da, you are an otherworldly demon? No wonder the inheritance did not respond to me."

Peng Da felt ashamed: "Uncle, I didn’t intentionally conceal it from you. It was just that..."

"Alright." Mo Li waved his hand: "So what if you are an otherworldly demon? You are still Peng Da, the person I know, isn’t that so?"

Peng Da was extremely moved and nodded his head quickly: "Yes! Thank you for understanding, uncle."

Mo Li shook his hand: "Alright, alright, you really struck it big this time. Since you inherited the Demon Venerable’s inheritance, then use the method to leave here quickly. Ordinary methods are useless here."

Peng Da felt ashamed: "The situation is like this, uncle, although I have many Gu worms, I cannot use them. This is the first time I am seeing these Gu worms and need a lot of practice. Moreover, according to the inheritance, I must use one of the killer moves to leave here."

"Then practise it quickly, ask anything you don’t understand, uncle will guide you!"

"Yes, thank you uncle."

"Is there still a need for thanks between us?" Mo Li smiled: "Practise quickly, we don’t have much water and food."

As the inheritor, it did not matter if Peng Da ate or drank in the well, but Mo Li could not share the same benefit.

Over the next few days, Peng Da practised without resting. He was only a mortal so the Gu worms he practised with were all mortal Gu.

This was the first time he was coming in contact with these Gu worms, although there were detailed explanations in the inheritance, he still needed to practise and master these Gu worms.

Mo Li helped Peng Da to study and learn, once they had some progress, Peng Da would hand the Gu worms to Mo Li for demonstration and guidance.

Mo Li was an experienced Gu Master, although he did not have the qualifications to inherit the Thieving Heaven true inheritance, he had much more efficient ways to probe these Gu worms.

Finally, Peng Da was barely able to master the usage of several Gu worms and found a way to use a killer move.

"Go on Peng Da, try to succeed in one attempt!" Mo Li encouraged Peng Da.

"Watch this, uncle." Peng Da used the killer move for the first time but it did not succeed.

The killer move activation failed and he suffered backlash, he coughed blood and fell on the ground.

"Peng Da, are you okay?" Mo Li quickly inspected Peng Da’s body.

Peng Da squeezed words out through his mouth: "I have disappointed you, uncle. But rest assured, I will definitely... ah!"

Suddenly, his eyes opened wide.

He then looked at his chest with an incredulous expression.

His chest was pierced through by Mo Li’s hand, his heart was destroyed because of this sneak attack!

"Un... uncle..." Even more blood started flowing out of Peng Da’s mouth.

Mo Li raised his head slowly, his eyes were filled with tears and his expression was extremely twisted, unfamiliarity and fear filled Peng Da’s mind.

Mo Li’s voice was extremely hoarse: "I want revenge, I want revenge! But the true inheritance chose you, uncle had no other options, Peng Da! You are too young, you practised for so long but you could not even master a killer move. Uncle cannot wait any longer, uncle cannot depend on you."

Mo Li then took out his hand.

Peng Da powerlessly fell onto the ground, his eyes helplessly looking at the entrance of the well.

He was dead.

But Mo Li did not stop, he activated his Gu worms and captured Peng Da’s soul.

"Alright, the Thieving Heaven true inheritance is mine now." Mo Li laughed. Peng Da’s blood was splattered on his face, his bloodstained face had a dazzling smile.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Central Continent, on a certain nameless and ordinary peak.

Four Gu Immortals arrived at the base of the mountain while concealing themselves.

"Hei Lou Lan is on this mountain." Ying Wu Xie looked at the peak and spoke.

At his sides were Fairy Zi Wei, Old Man Zheng Yuan, and Bai Ning Bing.

After Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan forced Bai Ning Bing to surrender, they obtained Ying Wu Xie’s whereabouts. Ying Wu Xie was a split soul of Spectral Soul and his mission had always been to rescue his main body.

But due to his strength and Fang Yuan’s arrangements, Ying Wu Xie could not enter Heavenly Court. After the fate war, fate Gu was destroyed and Fang Yuan escaped, while Ying Wu Xie wandered around Central Continent, resenting Fang Yuan for not saving Spectral Soul’s main body.

After Fairy Zi Wei provided enough evidence, Ying Wu Xie learned his main body was no longer in Heavenly Court and had gotten free by himself.

Ying Wu Xie was exulted, he directly abandoned Fang Yuan and joined Fairy Zi Wei’s group.

Through Ying Wu Xie, Fairy Zi Wei’s group learned that he had just recently separated from Hei Lou Lan. Thus, the four immortals quietly arrived at this place.

Ying Wu Xie said softly: "Hei Lou Lan is a formidable person, although her cultivation is low and her battle strength is not high because future self has lost its effect, she has great endurance and knows how to wait patiently, she is ambitious and cannot be looked down upon."

Ying Wu Xie did not doubt his side’s strength, but what he was most worried was if Hei Lou Lan would side with them and betray Fang Yuan or not.

In this aspect, Fairy Zi Wei was confident, she said with a smile: "I have full confidence in making Hei Lou Lan surrender. She has a complex relationship with Fang Yuan, but it is not firm. Hei Lou Lan wants to kill her own father for revenge, this is her greatest wish. Fang Yuan has captured Hei Cheng and because his strength is higher than Hei Lou Lan’s, she has always been controlled by him. We can use this to make her surrender."

Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated.

Back then, Fairy Zi Wei tried all sorts of methods to deduce Fang Yuan’s position, but could not do anything because Fang Yuan was slippery like an eel and his most skilled wisdom path aspect was in blocking deductions.

Fairy Zi Wei could not do anything against Fang Yuan, but she investigated everything about Fang Yuan’s subordinates. But at that time, even if she wanted to use these indirect ways to find Fang Yuan’s location, they all ended up in failure.

But now, Fairy Zi Wei was going against Hei Lou Lan. Those past failures had now become her source of confidence.

Immediately, Fairy Zi Wei made arrangements: "This time, Ying Wu Xie, you stay behind. Bai Ning Bing, you will approach Hei Lou Lan. You can say you obtained news from Ying Wu Xie and came to visit. When you near her, sneak attack and seal her in ice. After you get her under control, I will persuade her."

"How about I go with her?" Ying Wu Xie did not feel assured.

Bai Ning Bing glanced at him and flew away.

Ying Wu Xie quickly looked at Fairy Zi Wei, Fairy Zi Wei, however, shook her head: "We will watch it from here."

Bai Ning Bing flew across the sky like a flash of white light, she looked down at the peak and shouted: "Hei Lou Lan, are you here?"

After a while, Hei Lou Lan came out from a mountain cave and frowned slightly as she looked towards Bai Ning Bing: "Why are you here?"

Bai Ning Bing laughed and pointed at Hei Lou Lan: "I have joined Spectral Soul now and have come to capture you. Hei Lou Lan, if you are smart, then just let yourself be captured."

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes opened wide: "Are you for real?"

At the base of the mountain, Ying Wu Xie almost stomped his foot in anger: "I knew that Bai Ning Bing would spoil the matter. Her nature is eccentric and she prioritizes fun. She did this on purpose, she definitely felt this way would be more interesting!"

Sure enough, Bai Ning Bing’s laughter was heard: "Of course I am for real!"

Saying so, she turned into white light and charged at Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan had already been preparing and with a shout, she raised her hands and sent out a large amount of flames to counter the white light.

Bai Ning Bing was caught off-guard and was forced back to the sky.

But she looked even more excited: "Fire path method? You actually changed to this path? Haha, interesting, I already wanted to fight you! But how long can you block me for?"

Immortal killer move — Bai Xiang!

Bai Ning Bing directly activated her trump card method, her body was no longer a flesh and blood body, and was covered in overflowing frost qi that even shrouded the mountain peak.

Hei Lou Lan entered the mountain cave and Bai Ning Bing gave chase without being afraid of any traps.

The two fought inside the cave, causing explosions that cracked and shattered the mountain rocks.

After several exchanges, Hei Lou Lan fell into a disadvantage and her situation did not look good.

Hei Lou Lan’s aptitude, temperament, and natural talents were at top level, but her fortune was not good and she ran into Fang Yuan too early. Fang Yuan dominated her and used Hei Cheng to control her, which greatly influenced her cultivation.

Hei Lou Lan’s strength qi Immortal Gu, flying bear strength Immortal Gu, and self strength Immortal Gu became Fang Yuan’s possessions. Slavery Immortal Gu was also borrowed by Fang Yuan and consumed. Divert disaster Immortal Gu was destroyed when she underwent tribulation.

During the period of the fate war, Hei Lou Lan almost always relied on the killer move future self. Once the future self was broken, Hei Lou Lan returned to her previous self.

Fang Yuan did not summon her back, Hei Lou Lan also held ambitions and did not want to be controlled by Fang Yuan, so she actively searched for a way to be free.

She possessed her aunts’ true inheritances, and after enough pondering, she resolutely changed to cultivating Blazing Heaven Demoness’ fire path.

But unfortunately, before she had good progress, she was discovered by Fairy Zi Wei and was now chased by Bai Ning Bing.

Hei Lou Lan felt bitter inside, she wanted to retreat but was chased closely by Bai Ning Bing.

When she slowly lost the strength to attack and was about to be captured by Bai Ning Bing, a white light flew over from the horizon.

This white light appeared slow but was extremely fast, Bai Ning Bing’s Bai Xiang form actually could not dodge it and was struck.

In an instant, Bai Xiang froze in the air, no longer moving.

"Hei Lou Lan has reinforcements?!" Ying Wu Xie was shocked.

"Not reinforcements, this should be Longevity Heaven’s members." Fairy Zi Wei said with a smile.

Ying Wu Xie realized, Fairy Zi Wei had already taken Bai Ning Bing’s nature into her calculations, her main goal had been to use Bai Ning Bing to trigger Longevity Heaven’s ambush. The reason she did not send Ying Wu Xie was in fact because she wanted to protect him, Ying Wu Xie was Spectral Soul’s clone after all, he was truly one of them. And Bai Ning Bing, who possessed Bai Xiang, was the perfect candidate to probe the ambush!

"This is a time path killer move, is it Fang Yuan?" Hei Lou Lan had a complex expression as she looked towards the horizon through the gaps in the cave.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House Calamity Luck Altar appeared in the horizons, and in almost an instant, arrived at the center of the battlefield.

Calamity Luck Altar sent out a strong light that shone on the unmoving Bai Ning Bing.

Although the killer move Bai Xiang was amazing, Calamity Luck Altar was a rank eight Immortal Gu House that was personally created by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. If Bai Ning Bing was struck head-on, her death was certain.

Fairy Zi Wei quickly made a move, sending out a purple aurora to cover Bai Ning Bing while blocking Calamity Luck Altar’s powerful light.

"I was wondering who it was, so it turns out to be the leader of the defeated Heavenly Court!" Bing Sai Chuan’s voice came from Calamity Luck Altar.

Fairy Zi Wei shook her head slightly and flew to the sky with Old Man Zheng Yuan: "We have already joined Lord Spectral Soul, we are no longer in Heavenly Court’s faction."

Bing Sai Chuan sneered: "Like I care about which side you are on! Hei Lou Lan is my Longevity Heaven’s descendant, she is a member of Northern Plains. Don’t even dream of harming her!"

Fairy Zi Wei retorted: "The five regions have merged, all the regional walls have disappeared, what do you mean by Northern Plains? We will need to fight to decide where Hei Lou Lan goes."

Bing Sai Chuan did not speak any nonsense, he directly controlled Calamity Luck Altar to collide into Fairy Zi Wei.

A huge battle erupted!

Hei Lou Lan and Bai Ning Bing were put under control, unable to budge.

Hei Lou Lan’s face was ashen, she was fully aware that be it Heavenly Court or Longevity Heaven, they were trying to use her to search for clues about Fang Yuan!

This was the result of having low cultivation level, she had become an object for the two sides to fight over. No one asked her if she was willing or not.

This battle did not last long, both sides were holding back.

It was Fairy Zi Wei who took the initiative to stop: "No need to fight anymore, there is no harm in giving Hei Lou Lan to you."

Bing Sai Chuan had Immortal Gu House Calamity Luck Altar while Fairy Zi Wei was without Star Constellation Chessboard and was in a weakened state. The reason she attacked was because she wanted to trigger a qi tide and use it to claim victory.

But Bing Sai Chuan clearly knew of Fairy Zi Wei’s plan and made Calamity Luck Altar use all its might. Fairy Zi Wei saw the battle turning increasingly fierce and knew her side would have to use their full strength if they wanted to hold on until the qi tide arrived, so she directly chose to stop.

"We have a common objective, it doesn’t matter where Hei Lou Lan ends up in. Fang Yuan is at his weakest state currently, if we miss this rare chance and let him recover, it will be too late. We can even work together, what do you think, Bing Sai Chuan?" Fairy Zi Wei made a proposal.

Then, she showed evidence to prove her current faction.

"Who could have thought that there would be a day when we cooperate!" Bing Sai Chuan was silent for a while before sighing.

Both sides had their own venerable as their backer and they both wanted to kill Fang Yuan, they had the qualifications to cooperate as well as a common goal, so working together was indeed a wise choice.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Central Continent, deep beneath a certain Earth Trench.

Calamity Luck Altar was floating in the air, there were tall cliffs on both sides, while below it was unfathomable darkness.

It was emitting soft light and did not conceal its aura, scaring away any beast that tried to approach it.

At the middle of the cliff was a giant cave that was dug by Fairy Zi Wei and the rest.

Purple light flickered in the cave and a wisdom path formation was already set up, Fairy Zi Wei sat at the center and Old Man Zheng Yuan sat at the assistant’s position, on one hand, he was using human path methods to cooperate with Fairy Zi Wei, on the other hand, he was using a portion of the immortal formation to guard against Bing Sai Chuan.

After all, it was the first time these two sides were collaborating, they had to err on the side of caution.

There were several formation cores at the edges of the formation as well. Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, and Ying Wu Xie were sitting in these formation cores as the crucial clues.

Purple light swayed, rising and falling at times like tides.

After a long while, Fairy Zi Wei opened her eyes slowly and stopped this wisdom path immortal formation, the overflowing purple light dissipated slowly.

"How is it?" Bing Sai Chuan’s question came from Calamity Luck Altar.

Fairy Zi Wei sighed and shook her head: "It is still not enough. But this method is absolutely effective. These three have set alliance agreements with Fang

Yuan, their connections are extremely tight. As long as we capture even more Gu Immortals, we can deduce Fang Yuan’s exact location."

The large formation was dismantled and the Gu worms flew back to Fairy Zi Wei’s immortal aperture.

Ying Wu Xie and the others stood up.

Bai Ning Bing smiled: "This is not difficult. During the fate war, Fang Yuan had dispatched not only us but also a large number of transformation path Gu Immortals."

Hei Lou Lan added: "From what I know, these transformation path Gu Immortals were incorporated after Fang Yuan annexed an immemorial grotto-heaven. After the fate war, Fang Yuan disappeared without leaving behind any traces, these people should still be scattered around Central Continent."

Ying Wu Xie shook his head: "But these transformation path Gu Immortals don’t have a close connection with Fang Yuan, it is better if we look for Lady White Rabbit and Fairy Miao Yin, these two are crucial characters that are only second to us."

Fairy Zi Wei had stored all the Gu worms by now, she did not have formation flag Gu or similar methods, it was rather time-consuming every time she dismantled the formation.

She looked towards Calamity Luck Altar which had been guarding from the side: "It is better if we split our forces to search for White Rabbit and Miao Yin. If we encounter Fang Yuan’s transformation path Gu Immortal subordinates along the way, we can make the decision to make a move at our own discretion."

Shortly after, Bing Sai Chuan’s response came from Calamity Luck Altar: "Of course. For our following plans, we will need more communication between us."

Fairy Zi Wei nodded: "Indeed."

Although the scale of this cooperation was small and duration was short, it had huge significance and both sides had begun to trust each other.

Calamity Luck Altar picked up Hei Lou Lan while Bai Ning Bing and Ying Wu Xie stayed with Fairy Zi Wei, both sides separated and departed on their own.

Immemorial two heavens.

Crescent Moon grotto-heaven.

"Fairy Crescent Moon, you won’t surrender even if the alternative is death?" Xiao He Jian, Lady Cold Ash and the rest were looking down from high above, looking at the dying Gu Immortal in the ruins.

Fairy Crescent Moon had rank eight cultivation and was the owner of Crescent Moon grotto-heaven. She had the terrain advantage but she was completely outnumbered, she was only hanging on her last breath now.

She spat and said with hatred: "You bandits, my Crescent Moon grotto-heaven has no conflicts with the outside world and has never provoked you nor had any ambitious plans. I will never surrender to you!"

"Then die!" Lady Cold Ash was already impatient, she pointed her finger, a grey light shot out and struck Fairy Crescent Moon.

Lady Cold Ash put her hand inside her sleeve, Fairy Crescent Moon’s soul was carried by the grey light and brought to her.

"This is a rank eight Gu Immortal’s soul, devouring her soul will be much more effective and also much easier to absorb." Lady Cold Ash was Spectral Soul, but he was able to conceal it from the whole of Wu Shuai’s alliance.

Xiao He Jian looked at her: "Lady Cold Ash, you battled in the front lines and slaughtered countless enemies, collecting a vast number of mortal souls and many Gu Immortal souls. Those are your battle spoils, but Lord Alliance Leader specially asked for this rank eight soul. You cannot take it."

Spectral Soul was slightly stunned before smiling and handing this rank eight soul to Xiao He Jian: "Since our alliance leader wants it, why would I dare to take it."

Inside her heart, however, she was snorting coldly: "I shall hand this to you for the time being, in the future, I will settle both our old and new grudges together!"

Xiao He Jian nodded with approval and took Fairy Crescent Moon’s soul while consoling Lady Cold Ash: "Let’s go, let the others clean up here. Follow me to see the alliance leader and report the battle."

"I can finally get close to Wu Shuai. This is a good chance!" Spectral Soul’s mood lifted upon hearing that.

However, when the two arrived in Dragon Palace’s hall, they only saw Wu Shuai’s will sitting on the main seat.

Wu Shuai’s will heard the report and praised: "Lady Cold Ash, you made the most contributions in this invasion of Crescent Moon grotto-heaven, well done."

"It is our duty to work for alliance leader." Lady Cold Ash was extremely disappointed but showed a smile on her face.

"Alright, you can leave. When we hand out the rewards based on contribution later, you will not be disappointed." Wu Shuai’s will waved his hand.

The two left Dragon Palace, Spectral Soul, however, felt discontent inwardly: "It is really a pity that we were not able to see alliance leader."

Xiao He Jian glanced at her, feeling some disdain towards Lady Cold Ash’s conduct in trying to flatter the alliance leader when they were not even in front of him: "How can Lord Alliance Leader be available whenever you want? He has been in closed cultivation to resolve the danger of the qi harvest fruits. We only need to follow his orders."

"Yes."

Xiao He Jian’s expression softened as he patted Lady Cold Ash’s shoulder: "Work well and follow me, you will be able to play a key role in the alliance one day!"

"Then I will depend on lord’s guidance." Spectral Soul put up a performance while internally scheming on when to capture Xiao He Jian!

"It is good that you understand." Xiao He Jian smiled and walked forward.

He had joined the alliance because of Qi Jue’s true inheritance, as a lone force, he was suppressed by Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and others. But Xiao He

Jian’s strength surpassed ordinary rank eights, he was slowly stabilizing his footing in the alliance and had won over some Gu Immortals under him.

Lady Cold Ash’s performance had been extremely outstanding in the latest battle and she had displayed extraordinary battle strength, so despite her being a pure human, Xiao He Jian wanted to rope her in to his side.

On the other side.

"Granny Skeleton has arrived—!" The doorman shouted.

Granny Skeleton entered the hall and saw Qi Sea Ancestor on the main seat, she quickly cupped her hands and bowed, getting straight to the point: "Skeleton grotto-heaven is willing to come under Qi Sea Ancestor."

Qi Sea Ancestor nodded: "Hahaha, Granny Skeleton, you are wise. You will not regret joining my side."

Granny Skeleton sighed and asked: "I wonder when Lord Ancestor can get rid of the qi harvest fruit’s problem?"

"I have already made good progress in this, you can rest assured." Fang Yuan changed the topic, "Skeleton grotto-heaven is the nearest to Crescent Moon grotto-heaven. Crescent Moon grotto-heaven has now already fallen to Wu Shuai’s side, I am willing to send troops and station some Gu Immortals in Skeleton grotto-heaven, I hope you can cooperate."

Granny Skeleton sighed, although Fang Yuan did not show the ability to resolve the danger of qi harvest fruits, due to the outside world’s condition, Granny Skeleton could only lower her head and join him.

"With the current situation, there is really nothing else I can do. Currently, there are almost no unaffiliated grotto-heavens left in the immemorial two heavens. They have either joined Wu Shuai or have been recruited by Qi Sea Ancestor. Sigh, I wonder what the future will be like." Granny Skeleton did not obtain the answer she wanted and left worriedly.

The pressure on Fang Yuan was also increasing.

"A wisdom path great expert was deducing about me just now, the strength is also quite high! It seems like Fairy Zi Wei."

Fairy Zi Wei was deducing the whereabouts of Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan naturally sensed it. This was the same as a contest of the two’s wisdom path methods across space.

"According to my luck, this situation is not looking good. The fatal calamity is impending, danger is lurking everywhere, and there is only a trace of hope."

Fang Yuan’s Cooking Luck Pot might only be at rank seven, but he could glance at a portion of his luck and deduce the entirety from it.

Fang Yuan had already made positive progress regarding the qi harvest fruits. But he was still at his wits’ end on how to refine heaven path dao marks.

He was aware that this trace of hope fell on the heaven path dao marks. Only be refining the heaven path dao marks and recovering his strength could he get free from the incoming calamity. If he could not refine them or did not refine them in time, it would be dangerous.

"But where is this breakthrough point that I seek?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Western Desert.

The intense rank eight level battle was still continuing.

Qing Chou roared, its tongue shot out with lightning speed.

Bam bam bam...

The blood red figures that surrounded Qing Chou were easily pierced and destroyed by its tongue.

Every time the blood red figures exploded, Red Heart Traveler’s face would turn a shade paler. His brows were furrowed and his teeth were clenched shut, but his fighting spirit did not diminish as he used all his strength to maintain the battlefield killer move.

"Red Heart Traveler won’t be able to hold on for long like this." Nine Spiritual Fairy, who was fighting Qing Chou, had been paying attention to Red Heart Traveler’s condition.

They had tied down Qing Chou with a lot of difficulty, Red Heart Traveler had used a battlefield killer move and was able to temporarily entrap this legendary immemorial desolate beast.

However, Qing Chou had intelligence comparable to a human’s, after it discovered it was unable to break free from this battlefield killer move, it concentrated its attacks on Red Heart Traveler in order to break through.

Once Red Heart Traveler was unable to hold on, the battlefield would dissipate and Qing Chou could walk out free. With this experience, it would definitely be extremely vigilant and it would be almost impossible to capture it again in a short period of time.

"Fine! I can only use that move." Nine Spiritual Fairy gritted her teeth and made a huge decision.

Immortal killer move — Nine Spiritual Transformations!

Her body suddenly shook as she transformed back to her human form. She was a transformation path great expert and should be much stronger after transformation to another form. But right now, even though she returned to her human form, her aura was surging and she was even stronger than her previous self. Nine spiritual lights shot out one after another from her immortal aperture and formed an enormous nine-colored barrier of light, the barrier had nine layers with distinct colors.

Qing Chou had been concentrating on Red Heart Traveler, so it felt a great shock from Nine Spiritual Fairy’s sudden outburst and quickly split some of its attacks towards her.

But at this stage, the killer move nine spiritual transformations was already completed and had no flaws.

Nine Spiritual Fairy gave a clear roar, the nine-colored barrier shook and the nine layers of light mixed together, becoming extremely dazzling.

The mixed light sphere then transformed into a rhinoceros with a large head and small body, and was shining with various colors. It charged towards Qing Chou.

Qing Chou roared and gave up on Red Heart Traveler for the moment, and without dodging, it charged towards this rhinoceros.

With a loud explosion, the surroundings shook intensely.

After the two enormous monsters collided, it was actually Qing Chou who had to take a small step back while the huge rhino only stopped in its spot.

Qing Chou was shocked and furious, it had not expected this rhino to be so strong. As far as it was concerned, this multi-colored rhino was translucent and it could even see Nine Spiritual Fairy who was in the center, there was no feeling of it being a solid transformation. But the collision made Qing Chou realize: this multi-colored rhino was stronger than the previous solid transformations!

"Qing Chou fell into a disadvantage in the collision, this is the first time since the battle started! Nine spiritual transformations is indeed worthy of being a legendary transformation path killer move." Red Heart Traveler was happy and worried at this sight. The price of using nine spiritual transformations was very high, after a Gu Immortal cultivates the killer move nine spiritual transformations, they can only use it nine times in their life.

Nine Spiritual Fairy had chosen to expend one usage of such a valuable killer move on Qing Chou, it showed her determined will!

Qing Chou roared, its bestial nature was agitated, it charged at Nine Spiritual Fairy again.

But the multi-colored light sphere that Nine Spiritual Fairy was in changed suddenly, from a large rhino to a southern fire sparrow.

The fire sparrow spread its wings and flew to the sky.

Qing Chou charged at empty space, without even looking up, it activated its defensive methods.

Sure enough, at the next moment, Qing Chou heard the sharp cry of the fire sparrow, then the sparrow collided onto its back. Whoosh, blazing flames engulfed it.

Qing Chou’s hurriedly activated defensive methods only lasted for a few breaths of time before they broke.

Qing Chou counterattacked fiercely, beast roars and bird cries mixed together, the two sides were at a deadlock.

Red Heart Traveler finally had a brief respite and quickly used the time to adjust his condition. While regulating his breath and observing the battle, he started to feel worried.

"Qing Chou is too sturdy, although it is being suppressed and the battle tempo is firmly held by Nine Spiritual Fairy, it has sufficient stamina."

"On the contrary, Nine Spiritual Fairy might hold the upper hand and have control over the battle, but she cannot last for long. If there is no external help and this goes on, she will definitely run out of stamina and die."

Red Heart Traveler decided to take a risk.

He accumulated his strength while waiting patiently. After waiting for two hours, he finally saw a chance.

The chance was momentary, Red Heart Traveler immediately made his move!

He spat out a mouthful of blood. The fragrant blood flew to the air and started rotating. Like a miniature blood sun, it emitted endless blood red light, rushing to Qing Chou.

Although Qing Chou was in a fierce battle with Nine Spiritual Fairy, it had never let go of its vigilance against Red Heart Traveler.

However, when it used its killer move to block this tiny blood sphere, it was of no use. The blood sphere seemed to be illusory, it passed through the obstruction and struck Qing Chou’s chest, turning into a red sun insignia.

Qing Chou’s expression changed immediately, it could feel that its every movement was being tied down by the red sun insignia.

This was an extremely powerful seal, it quickly showed its might, it slowed down movement, interfered with killer moves, and lowered fighting spirit.

"Damn it, damn it!!!" Qing Chou roared and started attacking wildly.

Nine Spiritual Fairy used all her strength to hold Qing Chou back, but was being beaten back little by little.

With a loud explosion, Qing Chou finally broke through Red Heart Traveler’s battlefield killer move.

However, Red Heart Traveler had a smile of victory on his face.

Qing Chou’s whole body was bound by blood threads, the source of the countless blood threads was the blood sun insignia at the center of its chest.

"Success. Cough cough cough!" Red Heart Traveler coughed out large mouthfuls of blood, his face pale like paper.

Nine Spiritual Fairy quickly suppressed the increasingly slower Qing Chou while transmitting her voice: "Red Heart, do you need my help?"

Red Heart Traveler shook his head slowly and used a killer move with difficulty, healing his wounds while enduring the intense pain.

Nine Spiritual Fairy spent much effort before finally suppressing Qing Chou.

Looking at Qing Chou, who was bound by the blood threads like a mummy, Nine Spiritual Fairy praised: "What method is this, it could actually capture Qing Chou!"

Red Heart Traveler was barely able to reply: "This is a temporary move I created, I have not named it yet."

Nine Spiritual Fairy looked towards Red Heart, slightly widening her eyes: "I am truly amazed!"

Red Heart Traveler shook his head, smiling bitterly: "Don’t overestimate me. I detected that Qing Chou’s vital Gu was rank eight hatred Gu, so I made this move. If it were other legendary immemorial beasts, this move would be a joke. I could have the chance to use this move because you did not hesitate to activate nine spiritual transformations."

Nine Spiritual Fairy also shook her head: "Capturing Qing Chou concerns the plan of capturing Fang Yuan, this is an important matter for Heavenly Court and for the people of the world, how could I refuse to pay such a small price. But is this hatred Gu the one recorded in \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e?"

"Yes." Red Heart Traveler nodded.

Nine Spiritual Fairy sighed: "This explains why Qing Chou can distinguish its enemies. Unfortunately, it did not have a killer move to make full use of it. Now that we have captured it, we can take out the hatred Gu and use Heavenly Court’s killer move to find the location of Fang Yuan, Spectral Soul, and other demons!"

Red Heart Traveler restrained his aura: "Let’s go, we cannot stay here for long."

They had engaged in a fierce battle for a long while, although the battlefield killer move saved a lot of time and also concealed most of the traces of battle, there were bound to be Gu Immortals who would come to check this place.

Not to mention other forces, Mo clan’s assembled troops might already be rushing on their way.

Nine Spiritual Fairy and Red Heart Traveler had battled for a long while, their conditions were not perfect. They detained Qing Chou and moved towards Central Continent.

Sure enough, just a short while after they left, several Gu Immortals of Mo clan arrived with surging momentum in an Immortal Gu House.

"There was a fierce battle here!"

"Although there are few traces, it can be seen that it was a rank eight level fight."

"No wonder my clan’s Gu Immortals perished so quickly."

"Give chase, we have an Immortal Gu House with us, they won’t be able to run far!"

Mo clan’s group followed the traces and chased the two Heavenly Court immortals.

Several days went by again.

A sandstorm blew and a Gu Master was struggling to move in the desert.

He reached the center of the battlefield and saw the deep craters that were mostly buried by the sandstorm. He raised his head and roared.

This person was Mo Li, who killed Peng Da and seized Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance!

He went through all kinds of troubles to get here as soon as possible, thinking of seeing the true appearance of the culprit that killed his wife and son, but he was too late.

"I am going to find you and cut you to pieces!"

"No matter who you are or what monster you are, I will kill you!!"

Mo Li knelt on the desert and roared towards the sky.

Peng Da’s soul was floating beside him. Peng Da gave a cold laugh: "Hehehe, you, a mere mortal, wants to take revenge against an immortal beast?"

"So what if it is an immortal beast?" Mo Li’s eyes were red as he stared at Peng Da’s soul, his expression was malevolent: "I have Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance, I have Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance! I can definitely become a Gu Immortal and succeed in taking revenge!"

Peng Da laughed again: "There is another possibility as well, this immortal beast was already killed by the Gu Immortals. You have no target to take revenge against already."

Mo Li was stunned and was silent like a statue.

After a long while, he suddenly moved his hand and grabbed the throat of Peng Da’s soul, he seemed to be in a state of insanity: "No! It won’t die, I won’t allow it to die! It must die by my hands!!"

Mo Li continued to shout: "I will become a Gu Immortal, I have Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance, I can definitely take revenge! I can definitely take revenge! Tell me, tell me how to use the next Gu worm!"

While grabbing Peng Da’s soul, Mo Li activated his Gu worms, wisps of white smoke and sizzling sounds came from the area where Mo Li’s hand touched Peng Da.

Peng Da’s soul immediately let out a sharp screech from the unbearable pain: "I will speak, I will speak, this is called electric circuit Gu."

"Electric circuit Gu? What is this thing?"

Peng Da’s soul hesitated for a bit: "How can I explain this? You are not an otherworldly demon, you won’t be able to understand what an electric circuit is. Simply speaking, it is the path that electric currents move along."

Mo Li sneered: "What is so hard to understand about it? It is not like I have not read \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e! \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e has recorded that lightning Gu chose to cooperate with Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance to find a way out, they eventually managed to leave immemorial blue heaven. This should be the true meaning behind electric circuit[1]!"

Peng Da’s soul was stunned.

Mo Li kept on praising: "Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable is truly worthy of being a venerable. He actually has such creative thoughts, he must have obtained the inspiration from \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e, thus creating electric circuit Gu!"

Peng Da’s soul: "..."

[1] It can be read as ’Lightning Path/Road’ which is how these Gu world people interpret the Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2020 - Rank Nine Lightning Gu

Forest Lightning grotto-heaven.

“Forest Lightning Grotto Lord, you betrayed the two heavens alliance and actually colluded with Qi Sea Ancestor, this is an unforgivable sin and you will be executed for it.” Xiao He Jian looked down from above.

Behind him were a large number of Gu Immortals from the two heavens alliance. They were all standing silently and expressionlessly, showing the numerical superiority.

On the contrary, Forest Lightning Grotto Lord was facing the enemies alone, his strength paled in comparison.

Forest Lightning Grotto Lord gave a bitter smile: “Since you found out, I don’t have anything to say. But do you think I am willing to collude with the enemy? The alliance wants to experiment on the qi harvest fruit in my Forest Lightning grotto-heaven. None of the alliance’s previous attempts have succeeded and all the grotto-heavens they have tested on have detonated. I sided with the two heavens alliance for self-protection. But now, you want to sacrifice my home? Since that is the case, it is better to surrender to the enemy, I might even have some new hope.”

Xiao He Jian frowned, snorting coldly: “You have no confidence in our two heavens alliance and Lord Alliance Leader Wu Shuai. Perhaps this time will succeed.”

Forest Lightning Grotto Lord chuckled: “If alliance leader Wu Shuai had a fair disposition, I would have nothing to say. But he is clearly protecting variant humans while sacrificing humans. The grotto-heavens the alliance has experimented on are all human grotto-heavens. Wu Shuai is a dragonman after all, I have seen through this alliance’s farce! Human Gu Immortals present here, watch carefully, this will be your outcome in the future. After me, it will be your turn.”

Hearing this, the human Gu Immortals clearly had a slight change in expressions. Forest Lightning Grotto Lord had no doubt spoken of what they were worried about.

Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor were the same person, they naturally had a tacit agreement. They looked to be confronting each other on the surface, but were secretly dividing the two heavens’ forces. By now, there were no neutral grotto-heavens in the two heavens. The grotto-heavens in the two heavens were either destroyed or had joined Wu Shuai or Qi Sea Ancestor.

After the two sides divided the two heavens, they ceased fighting and began to find a way to solve the qi harvest fruit problem.

Compared to Qi Sea Ancestor who was researching in closed cultivation, Wu Shuai’s qi path attainment was clearly much weaker. So, Wu Shuai’s two heavens alliance had no choice but to experiment and be very rough with their actions to pursue efficiency. The experiments to eliminate the qi harvest fruits had failed many times and destroyed many grotto-heavens as a result.

When it was Forest Lightning grotto-heaven’s turn, Forest Lightning Grotto Lord was not willing to bet his home, so for self-protection and survival, he secretly contacted Qi Sea Ancestor.

He was truly an unfortunate guy, Qi Sea Ancestor and Wu Shuai were in essence the same person.

Qi Sea Ancestor was Fang Yuan’s main body and he informed Wu Shuai directly.

Wu Shuai thus sent the command to Xiao He Jian to gather some Gu Immortals to punish the traitor.

Looking at Forest Lightning Grotto Lord, Xiao He Jian sneered silently and said with impatience: “Who is going to get this criminal?”

Lady Cold Ash stepped forward like she wanted to be the vanguard: “Let me.”

Xiao He Jian nodded: “Good.”

Lady Cold Ash directly charged towards Forest Lightning Grotto Lord, Xiao He Jian was inwardly happy and thought: “Cold Ash is perceptive and has a lot of capability. My efforts to win her over were not a waste.”

Lady Cold Ash fought with Forest Lightning Grotto Lord, both were at rank eight and went at each other, neither yielding a step.

The other Gu Immortals of the two heavens alliance were watching the battle from atop the clouds. In a fight between Gu Immortals, for a group attack to work, they would have paid attention to cooperation. Different paths would cause conflicts between dao marks, if there was no skillful cooperation, it might instead waste their efforts.

Naturally, this did not hinder the observing Gu Immortals from accumulating their energy and attacking when there was a chance.

But the two heavens alliance’s Gu Immortals did not find any opportunity to sneak attack.

Lady Cold Ash gradually gained the upper hand and control of the battle. Forest Lightning Grotto Lord saw the situation was bad and immediately escaped below ground.

Lady Cold Ash was Spectral Soul’s disguise after all, how could Forest Lightning Grotto Lord be her match? The deadlock earlier was only a deception, it was nothing more than Spectral Soul’s act.

Xiao He Jian saw Forest Lightning Grotto Lord fleeing and laughed heartily: “Chase!”

The immortals gave chase.

They did not care about the large Forest Lightning grotto-heaven and only targeted Forest Lightning Grotto Lord. As long as they got rid of this sole rank eight, other resistances would not be an issue.

They even took the initiative to maintain the safety of Forest Lightning grotto-heaven, after all, this grotto-heaven needed to be tested on and they would have a share in the distribution of the resources inside it.

Forest Lightning Grotto Lord kept on moving deep underground.

Lady Cold Ash did not give chase and stayed beside Xiao He Jian.

Soon, the first group of Gu Immortals who had entered deep underground returned with soot covering them.

When he obtained their report, Xiao He Jian was slightly stunned: “There is such a thing? There is a lightning forest deep underground?”

The returning Gu Immortals naturally brought evidence.

Through methods similar to shadow image Gu, the two heavens alliance’s immortals saw a vast lightning forest.

In the pitch-black underground, lightning flashed and thunder rumbled every moment.

The flashes of lightning formed a tall silver tree. The tall tree only lasted for a moment, but it had large thunder leaves, many silver lightning branches and so on, they were materialized and tempted all the immortals.

“Heaven, these are all priceless lightning path rank eight immortal materials!”

“This is only the superficial wealth of the lightning forest. According to the records in u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e, the source of lightning forest is lightning Gu. The size of this lightning forest is enough to prove there is a rank eight lightning Gu here!”

“Forest Lightning Grotto Lord wants to resist by relying on lightning Gu?”

“Hmph, wishful thinking. How could a mere rank eight Immortal Gu oppose our two heavens alliance?”

The immortals discussed but no one was willing to enter the forest.

After all, the lightning forest was a dangerous area and Forest Lightning Grotto Lord possessed an enormous terrain advantage here. If they rashly invaded, it was very likely to be an unrewarding venture.

Xiao He Jian frowned: “Who will go capture Forest Lightning Grotto Lord?”

Lady Cold Ash stood up once again without hesitation.

Xiao He Jian showed a pleased smile: “Cold Ash, if you win, your contribution will be at the top for this battle.”

“Thank you.” Lady Cold Ash was about to move.

“Wait.” Night Heavenly Wolf Lord also walked out: “The Lightning forest is a dangerous region, let me accompany Cold Ash. If there is any unexpected mishap, I can be of some assistance.”

“Let’s do it that way then.” Xiao He Jian agreed to Night Heavenly Wolf Lord’s request.

Thereupon, the two immortals charged towards the depths of the underground. Other Gu Immortals along with Xiao He Jian were floating in the air, watching the battle as well as waiting patiently.

Lady Cold Ash charged to the bottom and arrived in front of the lightning forest. She directly opened her immortal aperture and let out countless soul beasts.

The soul beasts charged towards the lightning forest like a violent tide.

Rumble…

Lightning struck continuously and explosions resounded unendingly. There were severe losses to the soul beasts, they used their lives to forcibly pave open a path.

Lady Cold Ash and Night Heavenly Wolf Lord smoothly entered the depths of the lightning forest.

“I didn’t think Lady Cold Ash would actually deal with the lightning forest like this.”

“She is really resolved to suck up to Xiao He Jian regardless of the cost.”

“There have been many rumors recently about the alliance leader wanting to make Xiao He Jian a vice alliance leader?”

“The alliance only has one vice alliance leader, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, currently. It is not strange for Lord Wu Shuai to make this arrangement to keep the balance between his subordinates.”

“Lady Cold Ash might be a human Gu Immortal but she doesn’t want to have the same outcome as Forest Lightning Grotto Lord’s. So she wholeheartedly wants to climb ranks in the alliance, she is doing her best to protect her grotto-heaven.”

Gu Immortals observed the battle while conversing secretly.

After a while of effort, Lady Cold Ash and Night Heavenly Wolf Lord fought their way to the center of the lightning forest and saw Forest Lightning Grotto Lord once again.

Forest Lightning Grotto Lord was refining rank eight lightning Gu and quickly stopped the refinement when he saw the two immortals. He shouted in anger: “Stop! If you take one more stop, I will destroy this lightning Gu!”

The immortals were surprised.

“So this lightning Gu is still a wild Immortal Gu and Forest Lightning Grotto Lord has not actually refined it?”

“What is going on?”

“Haha, I understand! Forest Lightning Grotto Lord’s ambition is not small.”

“Oh, please explain.”

“If I am not wrong, this lightning forest should have been just an ordinary lightning path resource point at the start. But at a certain point, it gave birth to a wild lightning Gu. Because of this lightning Gu, the lightning path resource point gradually transformed into a small lightning forest. Forest Lightning Grotto Lord did not refine this wild lightning Gu, instead he added resources to grow this lightning forest. The larger the scale of the lightning forest, the lightning Gu, which is the source, will also keep on advancing further. Forest Lightning Grotto Lord kept on investing resources and finally advanced this wild lightning Gu to rank eight!”

The two heavens alliance’s Gu Immortals saw through the ambitions of Forest Lightning Grotto Lord.

Forest Lightning Grotto Lord was a lightning path Gu Immortal and was not proficient in refinement path. But this lightning forest was created naturally, it was simply nature refining Gu itself!

Forest Lightning Grotto Lord cleverly borrowed the power of nature and added momentum to the original foundation, his goal was to advance lightning Gu to rank nine level!

And during this process, if he refined this wild Immortal Gu, the process of nature refining Gu would be interrupted and could not be recovered.

Thus, Forest Lightning Grotto Lord had left this wild lightning Gu in its state and did not refine it.

It was extremely difficult to seize other’s Gu worms. But wild Immortal Gu were different.

A rank eight wild Immortal Gu, the crucial thing was that it even had the possibility of advancing to rank nine! This discovery was extremely huge, Xiao He Jian and the rest opened their eyes wide, revealing greed and wariness.

“This is of vital importance, we cannot be rash.” Xiao He Jian quickly transmitted his voice to Lady Cold Ash and Night Heavenly Wolf Lord.

Lady Cold Ash and Night Heavenly Wolf Lord paused their attacks.

Forest Lightning Grotto Lord spoke conditions: “As long as you spare me and my Forest Lightning grotto-heaven, I will offer this lightning Gu to you.”

Xiao He Jian quickly contacted Wu Shuai and reported this matter.

The matter concerned a future rank nine lightning Gu, Xiao He Jian did not dare to decide by himself.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2021 - Blue Heaven Shatters

Soon, Xiao He Jian received the reply. He personally flew underground and faced Forest Lightning Grotto Lord: “Alliance Leader has said that he can let you go, but Forest Lightning grotto-heaven must belong to the alliance. Of course, the alliance will not carry out any risky attempts on the qi harvest fruit in the grotto-heaven.”

“No!” Forest Lightning Grotto Lord’s attitude was extremely firm: “This grotto-heaven is my home, I will not give it up! It won’t change owners, this is my territory, what qualifications does the alliance have to seize it? I will look after the lightning Gu for the moment, retreat and don’t try to invade again from now on. I can set an agreement with the alliance to never seek lightning Gu. If the alliance wants rank nine lightning Gu, you can provide the resources to raise it in the lightning forest here.”

Xiao He Jian did not respond and only reported Forest Lightning Grotto Lord’s request to Wu Shuai.

Wu Shuai mumbled for a while, unable to come to a decision.

He then sent this information to the main body through secret methods and let the main body decide.

Fang Yuan fell into deep thought.

“Rank nine Immortal Gu have supreme might, it is indeed worth yielding a step. But this lightning Gu is only rank eight currently. To raise it to rank nine, who knows how many resources and how big of a price we have to pay. And there could be many unexpected mishaps during this process!”

“Another crucial point is that lightning Gu’s information cannot be concealed, this news will definitely lead to chaos. Be they Heavenly Court, Longevity Heaven, or other forces, they will all interfere. Wu Shuai’s and Qi Sea Ancestor’s forces must have an all-out battle in the end.”

Fang Yuan’s wisdom path attainment was deep and immediately deduced the future changes.

Forest Lightning Grotto Lord concealed the secret of lightning Gu because he wanted to keep it for himself. But now that he could not keep it, he could only use this chip to negotiate.

Since he could secretly contact the enemy, he would not just negotiate with Wu Shuai’s alliance, he was sure to contact Qi Sea Ancestor.

Fang Yuan’s Qi Sea Ancestor disguise protected humanity and had allied with Heavenly Court, he could never let a variant human force like Wu Shuai’s alliance obtain rank nine lightning Gu!

Thus, Qi Sea Ancestor would have to send troops.

At that time, Forest Lightning Grotto Lord would surely curry favor with both sides and strive to win some respite. This Forest Lightning Grotto Lord truly had high astuteness and was deeply aware of the way of survival of the weak.

But like this, it was bound to increase the friction between Qi Sea Ancestor and Wu Shuai. This was exactly what Fang Yuan had been trying to avoid.

And at that time, Heavenly Court would definitely add fuel to the fire, even Longevity Heaven, Demon Immortal Qi Jue, and the five regions’ forces would stir up the situation from the dark.

Although Fang Yuan was the leader of both sides, he was unable to restrict every subordinate. In the fight between these subordinates, if anyone died, Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor would need to take some action to preserve their side’s benefit and prestige. The situation would escalate and continue being irremediable until it finally leads to an all-out battle.

But if Fang Yuan suppressed the situation, this would not fit the attitudes of Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor. It would definitely be filled with giant loopholes in the eyes of wisdom path Gu Immortals. Heavenly Court would start to have doubts and the whole situation would turn even more dangerous.

Thus, this situation was not as simple as just a lightning Gu.

This would implicate many things, it would involve variant humans, humans, and even the overall situation of the two heavens and five regions!

Fang Yuan was unable to come to a decision immediately for such a huge matter.

After all, he had to think of many factors, the important thing was that his current strength had fallen. He was at his weakest state and now was the time when he needed to rest and recuperate.

“I remember lightning Gu is recorded in "The Legends of Ren Zuu", the power it showed was quite strong…”

Fang Yuan browsed through "The Legends of Ren Zuu".

"The Legends of Ren Zuu", chapter four, section thirty —

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance and Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence were sent flying away by fate Gu and were forced to leave Ren Zu, arriving at immemorial blue heaven.

Rumble!

Thunder rumbled unceasingly here. Lightning flashed, imprinting the sky and forming a forest of lightning.

“I am angry! I am angry!” The source of this lightning forest was a lightning Gu, it was roaring continuously.

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance and Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence were extremely afraid. The lightning was too strong, so long as a lightning bolt struck them, they would be heavily injured or even die.

They did not move at all, afraid of lightning Gu discovering them and bombarding them to death.

They waited patiently for lightning Gu’s anger to dissipate. They would move once it calmed down.

But lightning Gu was extremely angry and its anger did not show any signs of decreasing. The lightning forest kept on growing in size.

“What should we do?” Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence was worried: “How can we return to father? Brother, do you have any good suggestions?”

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance shook his head, his brows furrowed: “It is all fate Gu’s fault! It forcefully separated us from father, I am definitely going to take revenge in the future. Argh, my heart hurts every time I think of fate Gu.”

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance held his chest, he found his heart aching more and more.

How could this be?

He quickly opened up his chest and looked at the depths of his heart.

“Oh, why is there a Gu in my heart?” Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance was astonished: “It is no wonder my heart is in constant pain, this Gu was biting on my heart.”

Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence also saw this Gu worm: “Isn’t this love Gu? I heard father mentioning it before.”

“No, I am hatred Gu.” The Gu worm spoke: “Although I look similar to love Gu on the surface.”

Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence urged: “Hatred Gu, why are you gnawing on my brother’s heart, please stop quickly.”

But hatred Gu said: “I won’t! I am building my home here, I am changing your brother’s heart into a heart of hatred.”

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance was furious: “Who allowed you to build your home in my heart? Get out quickly, I don’t welcome you. If you don’t get out, I will crush you to death!”

Hatred Gu laughed loudly: “I was attracted by lightning Gu’s anger, but unexpectedly discovered that your heart is more suitable for my home. I won’t leave.”

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance was furious, he actually put his hand inside his heart and grabbed hatred Gu.

Hatred Gu was like a curved blade without a handle, Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance’s hand was pierced and bled as he grabbed it.

He clenched his teeth and exerted strength, crushing hatred Gu to death.

But at the next moment, hatred Gu resurrected from the blood and became even bigger.

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance crushed it to death again, hatred Gu revived once again, its size becoming slightly bigger again.

“It is useless.” Hatred Gu said: “Hatred cannot be killed, vengeance only breeds more hatred and grudges, the more you treat me like this, the more your hatred will increase.”

Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence was somewhat stunned and helpless against hatred Gu.

“It hurts, it hurts, it hurts!” Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance covered his chest, his face pale from the pain.

Hatred Gu was drilling in and out of his heart, creating holes after holes, transforming his heart into a heart of hatred.

The current Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance hated fate Gu even more.

“If I was not sent flying here by fate Gu, how could I have encountered hatred Gu? How could my heart be pierced by hatred Gu?”

“I will definitely destroy fate Gu, I will definitely take revenge.”

The more Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance thought, the more he hated. He was no longer afraid of angering lightning Gu, he stood up suddenly.

“Sister, let’s go, I don’t want to stay here.” Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance held Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence’s hand.

But Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence hesitated: “Brother, there is lightning all around us, we don’t know when it will strike, it is too dangerous.”

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance said: “Sister, don’t be afraid. The hatred in my heart has shown me a path, that is the path of revenge. There is no lightning on this path, as long as I follow it, I can find fate Gu and take revenge against it. Quick, follow me!”

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance dragged Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence.

The strange thing was that despite lightning bolts crackling around them, not a single one struck Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance and Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence.

The two ran and ran when they suddenly collided into something.

“What is ahead?” Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence touched the air in front of her and found it was like a transparent wall.

“This is the heavenly wind qi wall, the border of the immemorial nine heavens.”

Hatred Gu explained.

“Brother, there is a wall ahead, we cannot leave.” Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence said helplessly.

But Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance had a different perspective: “Where is the wall? I only see the path ahead, as long as we follow along this trail, we can definitely leave and find fate Gu!”

Time and again, Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance got up and rushed forward before colliding into the heavenly wind qi wall, his head bled as he fell to the ground. Then, he climbed up and charged forward again.

Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence wanted to stop him, but Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance did not listen.

Hatred Gu laughed: “It is useless. I have already built my home in his heart, although his eyes are open, he can only see the path that I point towards, he cannot see any other thing. Hahaha.”

Right at this time, lightning Gu sensed Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance and Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence, the terrifying lightning forest began to quickly spread towards them.

There was no road to advance or retreat, Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence was extremely anxious but did not have any ideas: “It would have been great if we still had wealth Gu!”

Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance did not listen to her, he continued to collide into the heavenly wind qi wall. Blood filled the ground.

Lightning Gu finally reached closer, Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence cried: “Am I going to die here?”

But Lightning Gu restrained its power and approached slowly, it let out a rumbling sound: “Don’t worry, oh humans, I won’t harm you or injure you. On the contrary, I want your help.”

Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence stopped crying and asked curiously: “Lightning Gu, you are so strong, how can we possibly help you?”

Lightning Gu: “I have been trapped here all along, immemorial blue heaven is large but I am already sick of it. I want to go out but I am unable to find a path that leads to the outside, thus I am angry. Anger often leads to hatred, so hatred Gu was attracted here.”

“But from your brother, I can see the path to exit. Therefore, humans, let us cooperate. I will help you break the heavenly wind qi wall and you will bring me out of here, alright?” Lightning Gu proposed.

Myriad Gold Wondrous Essence and Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance were very happy at this suggestion.

“I agree to it. Your help will be great.” Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance replied.

Thereupon, lightning Gu landed on Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance’s hand and started to emit a terrifying radiance.

Hatred Gu laughed loudly: “Let me lend you a hand.”

Lightning Gu obtained hatred Gu’s strength and became extremely powerful.

Rumble rumble…

Lightning Gu erupted with fierce strength, not only destroying the heavenly wind qi wall but even shattering the whole of immemorial blue heaven!

“Quickly leave!” Blazing Glory Lightning Brilliance was greatly shocked and knew that they had created a huge disaster, he quickly grabbed his sister and left with lightning Gu and hatred Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2022 - Heavenly Court Seeks To Fight

“According to u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e, hatred Gu and lightning Gu can cooperate and amplify each other’s power to form a terrifying killer move that directly destroyed immemorial blue heaven?”

Fang Yuan read it carefully again as he wondered, did this mean that these two Gu worms could counter heaven path?

Where were heaven path dao marks most gathered in?

Undoubtedly, the immemorial nine heavens.

Besides them, there was Fang Yuan’s body.

“This seems to be an avenue to resolve my current predicament.” Fang Yuan pondered: “But only lightning Gu is here, it won’t work without hatred Gu. Where is this Gu worm? Is there currently such an Immortal Gu in existence? If not, how do I refine it? If it exists, the situation is even more troublesome as I will need to scheme and plan to seize it.”

“In fact, even if I have these two core Immortal Gu, it is still a mystery on how to form them into that killer move. u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e is too vague about it.”

Just at this time, Qin Ding Ling personally sent a letter through treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan opened and read it, the letter Gu directly talked about Forest Lightning grotto-heaven’s matter. Qin Ding Ling was very eager about lightning Gu, and even wanted Qi Sea Ancestor to stop researching the qi harvest fruits for the time being and lead his subordinates to cooperate with Heavenly Court in fighting for lightning Gu.

“Why is Heavenly Court so anxious?” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light: “Also, they obtained the information too quickly. Looks like they have arranged some spies on Wu Shuai’s side.”

Qin Ding Ling was not Fairy Zi Wei after all, she was slightly hurried in doing things, which allowed Fang Yuan, who had deep wisdom path attainment to deduce some possibilities.

“Since that is the case…” Fang Yuan smiled bitterly, Heavenly Court’s urgent letter made him come to a decision.

Forest Lightning grotto-heaven.

Xiao He Jian’s expression changed slightly, he had received Wu Shuai’s command.

His gaze turned cold as he shouted: “Alliance Leader sent the command to kill Forest Lightning Grotto Lord without worrying about lightning Gu. It is nothing to lose a mere rank eight Immortal Gu. We must execute all the Gu Immortals of Forest Lightning grotto-heaven and then attempt to get rid of the qi harvest fruit. Don’t worry about the grotto-heaven’s resources, use all your strength to complete the task in the shortest time possible!”

“What?!” Hearing these words, not only Forest Lightning Grotto Lord, even Lady Cold Ash and Night Heavenly Wolf Lord were astonished.

This was a future rank nine Immortal Gu, Wu Shuai gave up on it so resolutely?

For an instant, none of the three immortals made a move due to the shock.

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord was Heavenly Court’s mole, he naturally thought of helping to preserve Forest Lightning Grotto Lord to harm Wu Shuai’s alliance.

And Lady Cold Ash was basically Spectral Soul, he also thought of preserving this point of conflict that would incite a fierce battle between Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor. As long as there was chaos, he could gain many chances to act.

Forest Lightning Grotto Lord suddenly shouted: “Xiao He Jian, such audacity, you actually gave a false command. Wu Shuai is expanding his strength, how can he give up on the future rank nine Immortal Gu? As someone who joined recently, you truly have ill intentions!”

Xiao He Jian’s expression turned cold from Forest Lightning Grotto Lord’s incrimination.

He did not retort, instead glaring at Lady Cold Ash and Night Heavenly Wolf Lord: “This is our alliance leader’s command! Are you going to believe a traitor or me? Attack!”

Saying so, Xiao He Jian did not wait for the two and charged in by himself.

Bam bam bam…

Killer moves were let out, destroying a large portion of the lightning forest.

“Charge!” The alliance immortals who were above ground also received Xiao He Jian’s order and came over, besieging this lightning forest.

Since the situation became like this, Lady Cold Ash and Night Heavenly Wolf Lord could not care about their own schemes, they sighed and joined the group in attacking.

“Wu Shuai, you are really cruel! You are so narrow-minded, you will definitely die miserably!” Forest Lightning Grotto Lord knew he was going to die and let out a vicious curse while exerting strength to destroy lightning Gu.

“In your dreams.” At the next moment, Lady Cold Ash suddenly appeared behind him.

Forest Lightning Grotto Lord stiffened, Lady Cold Ash took the chance and actually seized lightning Gu from his hands!

“What method is this?” The immortals were astonished.

Although Spectral Soul’s attainment levels had fallen to a miserable level, he still had plenty of methods. The accumulation of a venerable could not be estimated by ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals.

“Great job!” Xiao He Jian was exulted. He had held no hope in taking lightning Gu, but who could have thought it would truly be seized. This was Lady Cold Ash’s merit and his as well. By now, his vice alliance leader position was already half confirmed. The remaining half would be by completing the task given by Wu Shuai!

Forest Lightning Grotto Lord counterattacked madly.

To preserve lightning Gu, Lady Cold Ash had forcibly endured his attacks and got injured.

“Retreat and guard lightning Gu!” Xiao He Jian quickly came to help, he blocked Forest Lightning Grotto Lord for Lady Cold Ash.

To prevent interference, other immortals began to plunder resources while watching Xiao He Jian fight Forest Lightning Grotto Lord alone.

Forest Lightning Grotto Lord had already fought with Lady Cold Ash before, his condition was not optimal and almost all of his methods were exposed.

Based on the superficial strength shown, Xiao He Jian was stronger than Lady Cold Ash as well.

This battle held no suspense, and soon, Xiao He Jian defeated Forest Lightning Grotto Lord.

Forest Lightning Grotto Lord was not resigned to being defeated and was still thinking of escaping.

But the surrounding Gu Immortals had been observing the battle and encircled Forest Lightning Grotto Lord with no way for him to flee.

Forest Lightning Grotto Lord was beheaded and Forest Lightning grotto-heaven was destroyed. The alliance’s experiment on the qi harvest fruit failed this time as well.

Moreover, because Wu Shuai asked for the battle to be finished as quickly as possible, most of the resources in Forest Lightning grotto-heaven were destroyed. The participating Gu Immortals could only collect very few resources.

The greatest gain was that wild rank eight lightning Gu. But it was clear this was going to be handed to Alliance Leader Wu Shuai.

Fang Yuan thought for a good while before finally deciding to deal with the problem directly, getting rid of Forest Lightning grotto-heaven so that the conflict could not grow.

Wu Shuai’s fast decision not only astonished the alliance members, it even destroyed Heavenly Court’s plan.

Qin Ding Ling had obtained first hand information from Night Heavenly Wolf Lord and immediately contacted Qi Sea Ancestor.

Fang Yuan received the letter; in the letter, Qin Ding Ling was still insisting on seizing lightning Gu even though it had already fallen into Wu Shuai’s hands. Even if they could not seize lightning Gu, they had to destroy it!

"Looks like Heavenly Court is determined to get lightning Gu. Heavenly Court should have lightning Gu's Immortal Gu recipe, they can refine it themselves if this Gu is destroyed."

Fang Yuan was even more curious, why was Heavenly Court so anxious to get lightning Gu? Why did such the powerful Heavenly Court have such pressing needs for this Immortal Gu? Lightning Gu was not fate Gu after all!

Fang Yuan did not understand Heavenly Court's scheme, but Qin Ding Ling's attitude made Fang Yuan's previous plan fall through.

Fang Yuan made Wu Shuai destroy Forest Lightning grotto-heaven without any regards for the safety of lightning Gu to strangle the possible conflict to death and prevent a war between the two sides.

But Heavenly Court held an attitude akin to asking for battle, Fang Yuan also could not refuse it easily.

After all, Qi Sea Ancestor was allied with Heavenly Court.

How should he deal with this?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2023 - Inviting Qi Sea

Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Capital city, Su clan.

There was a book house erected inside a certain guest room's courtyard.

This book house was a mortal Gu House, it had the form of a tree house, covered with green leaves and branches.

Right now, Li Xiao Bai was sitting cross-legged inside the book house.

A beautiful girl was standing in front of him, she was Su Qi Han. Su Qi Han's expression was somewhat serious: "Xiao Bai, have you really thought it through? A vital Gu cannot be changed easily."

Li Xiao Bai nodded with a smile: "Qi Han, don't be too worried. I have thought it through properly, I am most interested in composing poems. So to me, poetry Gu is the most suitable vital Gu. It was just that I was not qualified to change my vital Gu before. But since this book house has extraordinary might and has the function of assisting me in changing vital Gu, how can I let go of such a chance?"

Su Qi Han sighed: "Since you have decided, I won't urge you anymore. I will guard you from outside."

"Mm." Li Xiao Bai did not stand on ceremony, directly closing his eyes.

After he obtained this Book House inheritance, he returned to the capital city and reunited with Su Qi Han. Although he lost in the poetry competition, he had already proven himself. Su Qi Han invited him to stay temporarily in Su clan, no one opposed to it, instead, this became a beautiful story.

Li Xiao Bai was not stingy, after staying in Su clan, he shared this Book House inheritance with Su Qi Han. The two spent almost every day in the book house, continuously cultivating, researching, and communicating intimately with each other.

Although the two had undergone intimate activities because of a coincidence, they did not have close feelings for each other. Su Qi Han's previous actions came from her own high moral character.

But over these days of contact, Su Qi Han increasingly appreciated Li Xiao Bai's talents and started to feel an attraction to him.

Li Xiao Bai obtained this fortuitous encounter but did not conceal it from Su Qi Han and shared it with her. From this, Su Qi Han saw that Li Xiao Bai's character was pure and kind, willing to give her anything, he was definitely not a heartless scholar.

Although the two had not been officially engaged, Su Qi Han had already treated Li Xiao Bai as her sole lifelong partner.

Su Qi Han walked out of the book house with worry: "This book house has high value and contains many branches of information path like verses, ditties, odes and songs. However, these branches are limited to Gu Master cultivation and there are no ways to advance to Gu Immortal. I have already hinted Xiao Bai many times that as long as he marries into and lives in my Su clan, he can obtain Su clan's Calligraphy Immortal cultivation technique. Unfortunately, he has no interest in calligraphy and is wholeheartedly focused on poems. Oh, since he likes it, I have no way to persuade him otherwise. If he accomplishes nothing in the future and stays as a Gu Master, I will work hard to become a Gu Immortal and an official of the Imperial Court. I will protect and take care of him for the rest of my life. I will watch him compose and recite poems, as long as he is happy, I am also happy."

Profound Literature grotto-heaven had an Imperial Court.

The high ranking officials of the Imperial Court were all Gu Immortals. Su Qi Han was Su clan's most beloved daughter and the apple of their eye, her aptitude and talents were astonishing as well, so it was natural for her to come in contact with Su clan's immortal cultivation technique.

"Young miss, you should take a rest, you will be tired if you keep on standing. With us here, Great Scholar Li's safety is guaranteed." The guards and the maids urged Su Qi Han.

Su Qi Han shook her head: "Stand guard outside the courtyard. I will personally guard him here."

The book house started shaking, gentle light spread from the inside to the outside through the windows.

A few minutes later, the book house turned silent, the leaves and the branches were no longer shaking.

Inside the book house, Li Xiao Bai opened his eyes slowly.

The process of changing vital Gu went smoothly, Li Xiao Bai looked inside his aperture and saw a Gu worm that looked like a heart; it had a red jade-like texture and was covered by a layer of light gold radiance.

It was his new vital Gu, rank five Gu worm — Poetry.

Poetry Gu was classified in information path and belonged to a side-branch of information path cultivation. The most common form of information path cultivation were oaths and vows, like sea oath Gu, mountain pledge Gu, promise Gu, black and white paper Gu. Second was transmitting information like goose Gu, paper crane Gu, butterfly letter Gu, flying sword letter Gu, messenger dove Gu, and so on. Thirdly was watching, listening, reading, and writing, for example, water text Gu belonged to the writing category. Beast language Gu was related to reading and speaking.

Verses, ditties, odes, songs, and so on were simply not mainstream.

Li Xiao Bai had made such a decision, it was no wonder Su Qi Han was worried about his future prospects.

But she did not know Li Xiao Bai’s true intention.

“This grotto-heaven’s environment is special as it is under the effect of the killer move, assisting literary talents. As long as I create great poems, I can obtain rewards and advance quickly. The five regions chaotic war is drawing close, such a way that can quickly increase one’s strength with no side-effect is priceless. Although Su Qi Han can get in contact with Gu Immortal cultivation methods, she does not know the outside world’s situation.”

“I have changed my vital gu to poetry Gu, next, I will practice poetic Gu and emotion poetry Gu, use gather poem Gu to gather poems externally and advance poem wall Gu. Additionally, I should also practice poem boundary Gu, this is an extremely outstanding Gu worm which effect is similar to a battlefield killer move.”

Just as Li Xiao Bai was thinking, the door was opened slowly and Su Qi Han entered with a concerned look.

“Xiao Bai.” Su Qi Han spoke softly.

Li Xiao Bai gave a light smile and nodded towards her: “Everything went smoothly.”

Su Qi Han smiled, her beautiful watery eyes revealed delicate concern: “That’s good.”

Boom—!

Suddenly, the sky shook and an explosion resounded throughout the grotto heaven.

“What’s going on?” Li Xiao Bai and Su Qi Han were alarmed and rushed out of the room, they looked at the sky but it was clear and blue. A gust of wind blew past them.

The wind only lasted for a very short period of time, and after it passed by, there was no other abnormality.

The mortals, Gu Masters, and even Gu Immortals living in the capital city sensed this suddenly appearing and disappearing abnormality. Most of the people were baffled, but a few Gu Immortal officials who knew the inside details were joyous.

“Success!” In a certain area of Profound Literature grotto-heaven, Old Immortal Hua Yu bowed deeply towards Qi Sea Ancestor in excitement: “Congratulations to Ancestor for successfully handling the qi harvest fruit calamity. Ancestor has saved the whole of Profound Literature grotto-heaven, this favor is the same as giving us new life! From now on, if you have any orders for me, I will undoubtedly use all my strength without question!”

Qi Sea Ancestor laughed heartily, lifting Old Immortal Hua Yu up: “No need to be so courteous.”

The immortals standing at the side were extremely happy.

“Ancestor has divine might!”

“Wu Shuai’s side tested repeatedly and destroyed so many grotto-heavens. Ancestor tried for the first time and succeeded, Wu Shuai can never match you.”

“I wonder when Ancestor can resolve our qi harvest fruit problem?”

“Yes, our grotto-heavens’ qi harvest fruits have already become extremely large and are getting closer to self-detonation.”

Gu Immortals praised loudly while also urging Fang Yuan to continue his work.

Fang Yuan waved his hand: “This test was a success but I sensed some flaws in it. I need to be in closed cultivation for three days to solve this issue. At that time, I will clear up the danger for everyone, wouldn’t that be even better?”

The immortals were exulted: “We shall listen to Ancestor’s arrangements!”

Fang Yuan smiled, a sharp light flashing across his eyes.

Heavenly Court.

Soon, Qin Ding Ling received this news and immediately showed joy: “Good, good! My choice to cooperate with Qi Sea Ancestor was indeed correct.”

Qi Sea Ancestor did not let down their expectations, not only creating a method to resolve the qi harvest fruit problem, but even succeeding after using it once. According to the information, Profound Literature grotto-heaven’s qi harvest fruit was not only safely removed, the fruit also burst and formed a harmless qi tide that swept past the whole grotto-heaven and raised the grotto-heaven’s foundation by a good amount.

Qin Ding Ling was in a great mood.

Over this period of time, Heavenly Court had already walked out of the shadow of defeat in the fate war. With Qin Ding Ling and the other Heavenly Court immortals’ schemes and efforts, good news came one after another.

Firstly, the variant human forces were restrained, secondly, Qing Chou was captured, and now, the qi harvest fruit’s danger was eliminated.

“But now, should we get rid of the qi harvest fruit in Heavenly Court first or try to fight for lightning Gu?”

Qin Ding Ling could not come to a decision by herself and gathered the Heavenly Court immortals for a meeting.

“Qi Sea Ancestor is worthy of being a qi path great expert, with this method, his force will be stable and in an impregnable position.”

“Wu Shuai’s alliance is still experimenting with various methods, their qi path attainment is too shallow.”

“As long as Qi Sea Ancestor defers for some time, there might not even be a need to start a fight and Wu Shuai’s alliance will break apart by itself.”

Qin Ding Ling shook her head at this optimistic plan: “Wu Shuai is a formidable person. Even a rabbit will bite if it is forced to a corner, let alone this dragonman. Once he obtains this news, he might immediately lead his troops to fight Qi Sea Ancestor.”

“That’s right. Qi Sea Ancestor can safely remove the qi harvest fruits, but Wu Shuai cannot. The longer their fight is delayed, the more unfavorable it is to Wu Shuai. It is very likely for Wu Shuai to send his troops.”

“In that case, we have to move ahead of time and ask Qi Sea Ancestor to resolve the qi harvest fruit in Heavenly Court.”

“You are right. Once the battle starts, Qi Sea Ancestor will not be able to deal with too many matters, he will definitely have to bear the full force attack from Wu Shuai. The situation is already like a conflict between fire and water, the fight won’t be stopped easily once it starts, and it might really be a life and death battle.”

Qin Ding Ling looked at Nine Spiritual Fairy: “How is the refinement of hatred Gu going?”

Nine Spiritual Fairy shook her head: “There has been a breakthrough just recently. Hatred Gu’s condition is extremely strange, it has already merged into Qing Chou. We found a method to refine hatred Gu just recently. It will take quite long to refine hatred Gu. But the good news is that if we succeed, we can manipulate Qing Chou as well.”

Qin Ding Ling nodded: “Since hatred Gu has yet to be obtained completely, there is no need to hurry in seizing lightning Gu. We will conceal this news as much as possible and invite Qi Sea Ancestor to come to Heavenly Court secretly and deal with the qi harvest fruit. After finishing this matter, we will then fight with Wu Shuai.”

The immortals did not have any objections.

“But how should we reward Qi Sea Ancestor?” A Gu Immortal asked.

“This is not difficult. Qi Sea Ancestor is very interested in the qi path Immortal Gu in my Heavenly Court’s treasury. In the previous letters, he had repeatedly asked to borrow these qi path Immortal Gu, but I did not agree and kept on making excuses.” Qin Ding Ling smiled.

Another Gu Immortal added: “We also need to be on guard against another person, Demon Immortal Qi Jue!”

Qin Ding Ling nodded: “I have also considered it. This demon is also a qi path great expert, if he collaborates with Wu Shuai, it will balance the situation of both sides again, he is a huge threat.”

“It is difficult to track Demon Immortal Qi Jue, who knows where he has gone now. He has just revived and is not familiar with the various paths of the present age. He is currently purchasing qi path immortal materials in treasure yellow heaven and exchanging for inheritances of every path, he is taking even Gu Master inheritances. Wu Shuai has chips to transact with him!”

Qin Ding Ling stressed once again: “So the current plan is to immediately invite Qi Sea Ancestor to Heavenly Court while hiding the information and striving for every second we can get!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2024 - Strategies of the Three Parties

Within Dragon Palace, the atmosphere was heavy.

“The situation has become like this, what do you all think about it?” Wu Shuai was the only person seated, he had already gathered the alliance’s immortals and explained to them the actions that Qi Sea Ancestor took inside Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Heavenly Court tried all ways to conceal the information but at the same time, Wu Shuai informed all of the Gu Immortals within the two heavens alliance.

After hearing this nightmarish news, the response was huge as all of the immortals’ expressions changed.

“Is this for real?” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch asked immediately before reacting to what he had said, his face turned pale: “I am not questioning Lord Alliance Leader, but this is truly too sudden and surprising.”

Wu Shuai snorted coldly: “Do I need to lie to you?”

“This is not good!” Xiao He Jian’s expression was solemn: “Qi Sea Ancestor is a qi path great expert, since Demon Immortal Qi Jue was able to use a qi harvest fruit to revive, then there is also a high chance that Qi Sea Ancestor can get rid of the threatening qi harvest fruits. If the enemy has a method to get rid of the qi harvest fruits, they will have a complete upper hand in this situation.”

“Indeed, indeed.”

“What do we do now?”

“My tribe’s grotto-heaven’s qi harvest fruit has already grown to a huge size, if we do not get rid of it, it will explode soon.”

“But our experiments have not succeeded once, we already ruined many grotto-heavens.”

“It is impossible for us to come to a peaceful truce with Qi Sea Ancestor, we should be wary of them using this chance to attack us!”

The immortals discussed as their tone contained fear and panic.

Spectral Soul who was acting as Lady Cold Ash stood among them, cheering secretly. He wanted the war to start as soon as possible, if there was chaos, he would gain a great opportunity to take action.

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord showed the same attitude as the rest but he was happy on the inside. He had already joined Heavenly Court, this situation was very advantageous to him.

“Panicking to this degree, what a disgrace!” Gu tribe’s leader suddenly shouted.

Everyone looked towards him.

Even though Gu tribe’s leader joined the two heavens alliance, he had always been silent. But everyone knew that he was the closest person to Wu Shuai. In terms of Wu Shuai’s trust, he surpassed Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian, who were both vice alliance leaders!

Gu tribe’s leader suddenly spoke, Xiao He Jian shook internally as he realized something. Before he spoke, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had already taken the initiative: “With Lord Alliance Leader here, we have nothing to fear. At this crucial juncture of life and death, I am willing to follow Lord Alliance Leader and listen to your commands.”

Xiao He Jian cursed internally but he quickly followed: “I will listen to Lord Alliance Leader’s decision!”

Wu Shuai nodded slightly, snorting: “The current situation is critical, if we sit and wait here, we will definitely perish, there is no exception. We have to fight with all our strength now for a hope of survival. They are able to eliminate the qi harvest fruit because of Qi Sea Ancestor’s method. As long as we do our best and kill Qi Sea Ancestor, we will gain complete victory. Even if we cannot kill him, as long as we gravely injure him, the situation will also be alleviated.”

After Wu Shuai said that, Gu tribe’s leader immediately shouted: “Alliance Leader is wise!”

Wu Shuai looked at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian, these two vice alliance leaders immediately shouted: “Alliance Leader is wise, this plan is superb!”

“What ideas do you all have? If anyone has a better suggestion, you can tell us now.” Wu Shuai purposely asked the other Gu Immortals.

But what ideas could these people have?

In fact, Wu Shuai said he was going to attack the enemies because he had no other choice now, this was their only hope. Other than this, could they surrender to Qi Sea Ancestor?

It was not that they did not know this, but nobody had the guts to say it. Forest Lightning grotto-heaven was the best example, everyone saw that pitiful end, who would still dare to follow in its footsteps?

“Since everyone agrees, we will discuss about the way we will send our troops, we will use our time efficiently and catch the enemy off guard.” Wu Shuai said as he decided with lightning speed.

Gu tribe’s leader added: “Lord Alliance Leader is right, every second we waste now will mean the enemy gets an additional second of advantage.”

Immediately, the immortals started to discuss their offensive strategy.

This discussion lasted nearly an hour before they came up with a refined plan.

Wu Shuai opened the door of Dragon Palace, ordering the immortals to make preparations, they would move out in seven days.

Night Heavenly Wolf Lord returned to Night Wolf grotto-heaven, he mobilized his forces and gathered more troops while quickly informing Heavenly Court of this new development.

After Qin Ding Ling received the information, she summoned the Heavenly Court immortals for a meeting.

“The situation has changed, it seems that Wu Shuai has some spies around Qi Sea Ancestor.”

“Like I said before, we cannot underestimate Wu Shuai.”

“Since Wu Shuai is going to take the initiative to attack, let’s use this chance to take him down!”

“That will be hard, they have Dragon Palace and Di Zang Sheng to defend them. Unless we can awaken some immortals from the graveyard, we will not have sufficient strength to deal with the enemies.”

“Time is too pressing, we have seven days and the situation will occur far away in Eastern Sea.”

“We can only inform Qi Sea Ancestor now and ask him to make preparations while pretending to be ignorant. When Wu Shuai attacks, he will definitely suffer a setback.”

“Did you forget that Wu Shuai has spies around Qi Sea Ancestor? If Qi Sea Ancestor learns this information from us, it will also likely alert Wu Shuai.”

Prince Feng Xian suddenly spoke at this time: “Why must we inform Qi Sea Ancestor?”

The discussions suddenly stopped.

“Qi Sea Ancestor is our ally, if we do not tell him about this, it will not benefit our alliance.”

Prince Feng Xian shook his head slowly as he smiled: “As long as we keep quiet, why would Qi Sea Ancestor find out that we know this? Our spy in the two heavens alliance has always been kept as a secret, if we tell him now, the spy might get exposed.”

“We ally with Qi Sea Ancestor because we need his strength to resolve Heavenly Court’s problem of the qi harvest fruit, we also want to use him as our pawn to gather an external force that can resist the variant human forces from getting stronger.”

Prince Feng Xian continued to speak: “And thirdly, if possible, we want to recruit Qi Sea Ancestor into becoming a Heavenly Court member.”

Qin Ding Ling looked at Prince Feng Xian: “Then in your opinion, what should we do?”

Prince Feng Xian breathed in deeply: “In my humble opinion, we should pretend that we do not know this and act according to our original plan. Now that Qi Sea Ancestor has already secretly moved out, he will arrive in Heavenly Court in three days. By then, we can get him to solve our problem of the qi harvest fruit.”

“Heavenly Court is huge and has immense foundation, the qi harvest fruit here is the largest in the world. Qi Sea Ancestor suggested us to create a qi path immortal formation, it will take at least six days to get rid of the qi harvest fruit. We can purposely delay the formation creation time, if Wu Shuai’s invasion succeeds, Qi Sea Ancestor’s force will suffer a huge loss.”

“Qi Sea Ancestor will become anxious and want to return to help them but as the person controlling the formation, how can he leave? Qi Sea Ancestor’s force will be without a leader, they will not be able to defeat Wu Shuai. In fact, even if they get wiped out, so what?”

“Our strength will not fall while Qi Sea Ancestor will become a loner. By coming to Heavenly Court secretly and failing to protect his force, causing its destruction, his reputation will fall to rock bottom. Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world will also look down on him. Who would respect someone who goes missing in battle while helping forces of other regions?”

“At that point, Qi Sea Ancestor will understand that his status in Eastern Sea will never recover. By then, we will have no worries anymore, we can send people to take revenge for him. During the process, we can move him with logic and emotion, by tempting him with future gains, I am sure there is a high chance we can get him to join Heavenly Court.”

The immortals were silent, they looked at each other before looking towards Prince Feng Xian.

At this moment, all of the immortals’ gazes became different from before.

After hearing Prince Feng Xian’s strategy, their impression towards him changed completely!

Prince Feng Xian’s arms were behind his back, he stopped speaking as he smiled.

This scheme was vicious, none of the Gu Immortals here thought of it except him, the reason was because of his own life experiences.

Prince Feng Xian came from Spirit Affinity House, he was used as a spy initially to develop in Northern Plains. After many years, he became rank eight and also married into Gong tribe, he was the strongest spy in Northern Plains that came from Central Continent.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals have been too used to being overlords, their mindsets were also too fixed in place. But all of the immortals here were rank eight elites, they soon understood that Prince Feng Xian’s plan was the most advantageous to Heavenly Court.

Even if Wu Shuai claims victory, so what?

Only the grotto-heavens in the two heavens would suffer. Even if Eastern Sea gets involved in the fight, its foundation would not be affected.

Even if Eastern Sea’s righteous path was toppled, that would only be one region. Humanity would still be the ruler of the world!

“Alright.” Qin Ding Ling looked at everyone’s expressions as she said, making a decision: “We will act according to Prince Feng Xian’s proposal.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2025 - Three Qi Immortal Gu

Heavenly Court was constantly filled with bright light.

Fang Yuan, who was disguised as Qi Sea Ancestor, had already arrived in Heavenly Court.

He floated in the air as he observed the qi harvest fruit in front of him.

The qi harvest fruit in Heavenly Court was large beyond common sense, it was like a towering mountain range, vast and colossal.

“Such a huge qi harvest fruit cannot even fit in an ordinary rank eight grotto-heaven, it will destroy the aperture walls from its sheer size. Only Heavenly Court has such a deep foundation and because of the use of Cang Xuan Zi’s space path fruits, the space inside is large enough to accommodate this qi harvest fruit.”

Fang Yuan sighed internally.

The last time he came to Heavenly Court, he had participated in the fate war with his original appearance and caused Heavenly Court to lose badly. This time, he was acting as Heavenly Court’s friend, he was here to resolve their problem of the qi harvest fruit.

Changes in situations and circumstances were often hard to predict.

“How is it?” Qin Ding Ling stood beside Fang Yuan, asking.

Fang Yuan nodded: “This is the first time I’ve seen such a huge qi harvest fruit, it shows that your foundation is truly unfathomable, this is truly the number one force in the world.”

After pausing for a while, Fang Yuan continued: “After my inspection earlier, even though my method is effective, this qi harvest fruit is too big. We need to set up the immortal formation first, the larger the qi path immortal formation, the more time we can save.”

Qin Ding Ling was slightly surprised: “Ancestor, to think that you have already come up with the immortal formation’s design.”

Fang Yuan shook his head: “No, the qi path immortal formation that we will set up is only going to amplify my qi path killer moves. The actual way to get rid of the qi harvest fruit is still through the qi path killer moves that I will use.”

Qin Ding Ling nodded upon hearing this, the explanation was logical.

She smiled as she took out a qi path rank eight Immortal Gu: “Heavenly Court does not lack qi path Immortal Gu, to resolve the problem of the qi harvest fruit, Heavenly Court is willing to use up our qi path resources. Ancestor, look at this Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan’s attention was drawn to this Immortal Gu.

“Don’t tell me this is… human qi Immortal Gu?” Fang Yuan’s pupils expanded as his expression changed.

Human qi Immortal Gu resembled a bee, it was thumb-sized and constantly moved its wings, floating above Qin Ding Ling’s palm, it emitted a cloud-like qi.

Qin Ding Ling handed human qi Immortal Gu to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan extended his hand and held the Gu, he looked at it fixedly and praised: “Good Gu, good Gu. This Gu is related to human path, it has immense potential for development!”

Qin Ding Ling smiled as she took out a second Immortal Gu, handing it to Fang Yuan.

This was earth qi Immortal Gu, it resembled a butterfly, brown in color, it also gave off a cloud-like qi.

Fang Yuan’s left hand held human qi Immortal Gu while his right hand held earth qi Immortal Gu, he looked at them with great interest: “Wonderful, wonderful.”

“And this is heaven qi Immortal Gu.” Qin Ding Ling said as she passed Fang Yuan a third rank eight Immortal Gu.

Heaven qi Immortal Gu resembled a dragonfly, it was green in color and had eight pairs of thin bluish wings, when it moved its wings, its entire body would emit a translucent qi current.

Fang Yuan had a solemn expression: “This heaven qi Immortal Gu is tightly connected with heaven path. Truthfully speaking, the method that I created to get rid of the qi harvest fruit only succeeded after I comprehended a trace of heaven path’s profundity. If I had this Gu, I would have succeeded much earlier.”

“Gu Immortals cultivate all sorts of paths, human path and heaven path are the most unique. Ancestor, you have already reached the peak of qi path, thus you are able to mimic other paths easily and comprehend the true meaning of various paths.” Qin Ding Ling praised before changing her words: “These three qi Immortal Gu are the core of triple qi retraction killer move, they are priceless treasures of Heavenly Court. Only Heavenly Court members can have them.”

Qin Ding Ling saw Fang Yuan’s expression and felt internally happy, she hinted to him that these Gu worms would be available if he joined Heavenly Court.

After hearing this, Fang Yuan showed a hesitant expression, but he was smiling to himself internally.

All of the expressions he showed were just an act.

If he really cultivated qi path solely, these three qi Immortal Gu would be incredibly alluring. Fang Yuan had tried many times already, these three qi path Immortal Gu were the cores of triple qi retraction, they could not be replaced. If he used other qi path Immortal Gu in place of them, even if he manages to create a triple qi retraction killer move, its value in battle would fall drastically.

Thus, even though Fang Yuan had the complete Primordial Origin qi path true inheritance now, he did not benefit much from it.

Furthermore, Qi Sea Ancestor was just one of Fang Yuan’s identities. He also had no lack of rank eight Immortal Gu. Attitude, Mutation, Wisdom Sword, Years Flow Like Water, Soul Beast Token, Regret, Spring, Summer, Big Qi, Region, Addition, Steal Life, Water Refinement, Advance Refinement, Dream Token, he simply had too many of them.

In Fang Yuan’s eyes, only rank nine Immortal Gu could truly excite him.

But rank nine Immortal Gu were too rare.

He originally had one, which was wisdom Gu. But this Immortal Gu was tampered by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable long ago, he had no choice but to sacrifice it in the fate war.

Qin Ding Ling lent all three qi Immortal Gu and let Qi Sea Ancestor familiarize himself with them, she also arranged several Gu Immortals to modify the qi path immortal Gu formation with Qi Sea Ancestor.

Having everyone’s help, the qi path immortal formation was finalized in a few days.

Fang Yuan and the Heavenly Court immortals started to set up the formation.

This qi path formation’s main owner was naturally Fang Yuan.

But in the other formation cores, there would be Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals stationed, they could help him out while also supervising his actions.

Qi Sea Ancestor was an outsider after all, even though he underwent an alliance agreement, he was still not a Heavenly Court member. How could Heavenly Court not guard against him?

The truth was, the assisting Gu Immortals were not the only ones guarding against him.

The core Immortal Gu of this qi path formation, Heaven Qi, Earth Qi, and Human Qi, were temporarily lent to Fang Yuan by Qin Ding Ling. If any situation occurs, Heavenly Court could immediately take them back and make Fang Yuan lose control of the entire qi path formation.

This qi path formation was modified along with several Heavenly Court Gu Immortals. Even if they had low qi path attainment, they still had general knowledge, it was hard to deceive them. Also, Fang Yuan did not conceal anything inside this qi path formation.

The formation was definitely not an issue.

“Earth qi Gu, go!” Fang Yuan first tossed earth qi Immortal Gu as he instilled immortal essence.

Earth qi Immortal Gu quickly flew out, it went into the ground below the qi harvest fruit.

Boom!

Suddenly, with a loud explosion, the ground below the qi harvest fruit started to shake, earth qi started to rise up continuously.

Fang Yuan started to collect the earth qi, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals around him also took action, some helped with the gathering while others set up small formations around the small holes that the earth qi emerged from.

While Fang Yuan was setting up his formation, deep underground at another area of Heavenly Court, there was a huge underground square.

Qing Chou’s mountain-like body was deep within this underground square, unmoving like a statue.

Bam…

Suddenly, a loud sound could be heard from afar.

The underground square shook slightly, several cracks appeared on the ground.

But Red Heart Traveler, who was defending this place, was not flustered, he immediately acted to stabilize the situation. The cracks on the ground could be seen disappearing at an observable rate.

“What’s the commotion?” Qing Chou suddenly spoke, but strangely, its voice was actually Nine Spiritual Fairy’s.

Nine Spiritual Fairy was actually inside Qing Chou’s body, trying to forcefully refine hatred Gu.

“From this commotion, Qi Sea Ancestor must have started to create his formation. He used earth qi Immortal Gu as the first foundation of the formation, it involved the earth vein. Meanwhile, we are at one of the main earth veins, thus we could feel the influence.” Red Heart Traveler spoke: “Earlier, you were at a crucial moment, so I did not inform you of this. But don’t worry, this cannot interrupt our plan.”

“Mm.” Nine Spiritual Fairy stopped worrying as she said: “Then let’s hurry up, if we can refine hatred Gu at the same time as the elimination of the qi harvest fruit, Heavenly Court will have a double celebration.”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals had already recovered from the trauma of the fate war, they became braver after the humiliation, they worked harder and had greater morale now.

Days later, the qi path formation was created, Fang Yuan was the main user and activated his method to eliminate the qi harvest fruit.

The qi harvest fruit was continuously shaved off from Fang Yuan’s killer move, but this qi harvest fruit in Heavenly Court was just too big, some time was needed to completely destroy it.

Days passed, the qi harvest fruit was removed by over ten percent.

Qin Ding Ling hurried to Fang Yuan as she showed a solemn expression: “Ancestor, the situation in Eastern Sea has changed, this is not good.”

Fang Yuan looked shocked: “What happened?”

“Wu Shuai suddenly led his alliance to launch an invasion, they have split into three groups, they are attacking the grotto-heaven forces that have submitted to our side. Because we were caught off guard, our losses are quite severe.” Qin Ding Ling said.

“News that I came here should have been kept a secret. How did this happen? How did Wu Shuai find out so quickly?” Fang Yuan’s expression changed, there was anxiety in his tone.

“Ancestor, you want to return to help Eastern Sea?” Qin Ding Ling purposely asked.

“That is so.” Fang Yuan frowned: “But this method needs my full attention, if I stop halfway, there might be problematic consequences.”

Qin Ding Ling cupped her fists at Fang Yuan: “Ancestor, please consider the big picture! It is unexpected that Wu Shuai attacked so soon, but if you return now, that will be what Wu Shuai wants to see. Only after eliminating the qi harvest fruit can we have a safe territory to count on. By then, you can lead our Heavenly Court’s immortals to return to Eastern Sea and retaliate, you can say that you went to seek reinforcement from Heavenly Court, but Wu Shuai attacked and trapped you temporarily. By gathering our strength, we will kill Wu Shuai and get rid of the two heavens alliance. That is the true way to seek victory.”

Fang Yuan did not speak, he only looked at Qin Ding Ling deeply.

Long after, he spoke in a grim tone: “Wu Shuai attacked with his full force, he must have been prepared for this. Does Heavenly Court know of their plans in advance?”

“Definitely not.” Qin Ding Ling shook her head, showing a firm expression.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, he showed a struggling expression as he sighed helplessly: “Forget it, I will stay here and control the formation until we get rid of the qi harvest fruit. But during this time, I need Heavenly Court to send people to assist Eastern Sea!”

Qin Ding Ling sighed as well: “We will do our best.”

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth as he said: “Once I get rid of the qi harvest fruit, I will need to return and help them. But these days of unceasingly controlling the formation will cause my battle strength to fall. I need Heavenly Court to give me the three qi Immortal Gu to kill the enemies and claim victory.”

Qin Ding Ling’s expression changed, even though Fang Yuan spoke politely, his request for reward was really absurd, it far exceeded Qin Ding Ling’s bottom line.

She rejected as she shook her head: “The three qi Immortal Gu are the treasures of Heavenly Court, only our members can…”

Before she finished, Fang Yuan interrupted: “Eastern Sea’s immortals are all my subordinates.”

Qin Ding Ling still shook her head: “We will remember ancestor’s sacrifice, but even as Heavenly Court’s leader, I cannot give you three rank eight Immortal Gu. At most, we can give you one as compensation.”

“How can one Gu compensate for the people in the grotto-heavens?” Fang Yuan showed slight anger.

Boom!

While the two were negotiating, a loud sound could be heard in the sky.

A rank eight Immortal Gu House directly charged in with a fierce aura!

Heavenly Court’s immortals were all shocked.

The Immortal Gu House that invaded Heavenly Court was Dragon Palace!

“How can this be?!” Qin Ding Ling could not waste time with Fang Yuan anymore, she immediately flew out of the formation to face the enemies.

Dragon Palace’s door opened as Wu Shuai sat on his throne, speaking from deep within Dragon Palace: “Qin Ding Ling, we meet again.”

“Wu Shuai, why are you here?” Qin Ding Ling shouted as several Gu Immortals gathered behind her.

Wu Shuai smiled coldly as he kicked a head that was near his feet.

This head fell from the stairs of the dragon throne, rolling into Central Great Hall. The person had died with his eyes wide open, it was Night Heavenly Wolf Lord.

“Old scoundrel Qi Sea can get rid of qi harvest fruits, your Heavenly Court wants to conceal this information and secretly eliminate your internal threat? Hehe, wishful thinking! I am here to destroy your Heavenly Court and also kill that old scoundrel Qi Sea, let’s see who in this world can stop my rise to supremacy!”

Wu Shuai said that as he stood upright, he waved his hand and shouted: “Kill!”

At the next moment, immortals rushed out of Dragon Palace, attacking with ferocious expressions.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Central Continent, deep beneath a certain Earth Trench.

Fairy Zi Wei controlled the wisdom path formation, purple light flickered within it without spreading out.

Within the formation, other than Bai Ning Bing, Hei Lou Lan, and Ying Wu Xie, there was Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit, as well as several other Gu Immortals.

After the fate war, these Gu Immortals were all left outside by Fang Yuan.

Fairy Zi Wei and the rest worked together with Bing Sai Chuan’s group, capturing all of these people.

As the purple light faded, the formation stopped working, Fairy Miao Yin’s expression was uncertain while Lady White Rabbit had anger in her eyes, they were both unable to move.

"Aren’t you surrendering?" Ying Wu Xie laughed coldly.

"Hmph, you traitor!" Lady White Rabbit shouted angrily.

Bai Ning Bing also came over with a cold and indifferent expression: "I would advise you to reconsider, after all, you have just lost your greatest value."

Fairy Miao Yin heard this, she became more uncertain.

At this moment, Fairy Zi Wei stored away the formation as she stood up. She was very weak now after using her full strength to make the deduction, the cost was high. But joy was apparent on her face.

"It looks like she succeeded." Bing Sai Chuan was waiting outside the formation, he smiled upon seeing this.

Hei Lou Lan walked towards Bing Sai Chuan from Fairy Zi Wei’s position, stopping behind him.

Fairy Zi Wei smiled lightly: "We have enough clues, we achieved success! I have already deduced Fang Yuan’s location, guess where this crafty demon is hiding?"

Bing Sai Chuan frowned: "Your question is an obvious hint in itself. Don’t tell me that this scoundrel Fang Yuan has been hiding in Heavenly Court?"

Fairy Zi Wei nodded: "According to my deductions, he is indeed in Heavenly Court now!"

The immortals heard this and showed varying expressions.

Ying Wu Xie gritted his teeth: "He is crafty indeed, his departure from Heavenly Court earlier was just a smokescreen, he must have been hiding in Heavenly Court all along."

Old Man Zheng Yuan sighed: "No wonder we could not find his main body!"

Bai Ning Bing laughed loudly, praising: "Exciting! This is truly Fang Yuan’s attitude."

Bing Sai Chuan frowned: "But how could he possibly hide until now without getting detected by Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals?"

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes flickered with bright light: "I can only deduce that he is in Heavenly Court now, he might not have been there the entire time. But in terms of ability, this demon is unfathomable. His growth is too fast, every time he fights, his enemies will see an explosive growth in his strength."

Bing Sai Chuan sighed: "Now that Fang Yuan is hiding in Heavenly Court, what can we do? Do we go and attack Heavenly Court? Should we inform Heavenly Court about this and let them kill him, but wouldn’t that allow them to get all of his inheritances?"

Bing Sai Chuan represented Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, they cared about the benefits of Northern Plains’ Longevity Heaven. Furthermore, they had spent a lot of effort to deduce Fang Yuan’s location, telling Heavenly Court about it was quite a loss for them.

Old Man Zheng Yuan reminded: "No matter what, we need to tell our master about this important information!"

Fairy Zi Wei replied: "I have already reported it to master when I stored the formation away."

Heavenly Court.

Intense battle erupted.

Boom!

Lady Cold Ash dodged with rapid speed, avoiding the explosion of a killer move.

She was the disguise of Spectral Soul, he had just received Fairy Zi Wei’s information, he was not in a good mood.

"Fang Yuan is in Heavenly Court now? Of course he is, I knew about that long ago!"

Memories surfaced in Spectral Soul’s mind regarding the event that happened days ago.

The Gu Immortals were called to assemble in Dragon Palace, Wu Shuai used the excuse that they were going to discuss the matter about attacking Qi Sea Ancestor.

But halfway through the meeting, Wu Shuai suddenly took action.

Dragon Palace roared, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord was caught off guard, he was hit by the killer move dreamy light smoke and was taken down without putting up a fight.

"Everyone, don’t panic, this person is a spy in our alliance, he is the informant of Heavenly Court." Wu Shuai pacified the immortals while taking out evidence.

Looking at the concrete evidence, the immortals were shocked and furious, they wanted Night Wolf grotto-heaven to pay the price for this betrayal.

Wu Shuai shook his head: "We definitely need to punish Night Heavenly Wolf Lord, but the urgent matter is not this. We need to look at the big picture!"

Gu tribe’s leader frowned: "Lord Alliance Leader, because of this traitor Night Heavenly Wolf Lord, our plan to attack has been exposed. If we go ahead with it, we will no longer hit our enemies by surprise."

Wu Shuai smiled grimly: "There is important information I have yet to tell you. Qi Sea Ancestor is not in Eastern Sea now, he has already gone to Central Continent’s Heavenly Court many days ago."

"This is good news!" Many Gu Immortals heard this and rejoiced.

But Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s expression was grim: "What’s good about this? The reason why we are attacking Qi Sea Ancestor is because of his ability to get rid of the qi harvest fruits for others. Now that he is not around, what is the point of our assault?"

The Gu Immortals who cheered became stunned, after realizing the situation, the atmosphere in Dragon Palace became much grimmer.

"Don’t worry, everyone." Wu Shuai spoke as everyone’s gazes landed on him.

He continued: "It is quite simple to resolve this problem. Since Qi Sea Ancestor has gone to Central Continent’s Heavenly Court, we will also head to Heavenly Court and kill Qi Sea Ancestor who is over there!"

"...What?"

"This..."

The Gu Immortals in the palace hesitated.

"It is not easy to attack Heavenly Court."

"Heavenly Court is the number one human force in the world, even though it lost in the fate war, we cannot possibly defeat it."

Many Gu Immortals wanted to give up.

But Wu Shuai snorted coldly: "You fools."

He scolded them in public, the loud noises in the palace became silent, all of the Gu Immortals did not dare to speak anymore.

"Why aren’t you thinking about the reason why Heavenly Court invited Qi Sea Ancestor to visit them in secret?" Wu Shuai purposely asked with a stiff expression.

Xiao He Jian, who reacted quickly, said instantly: "Does this mean that Heavenly Court also has the problem of the qi harvest fruit?"

Wu Shuai chuckled: "Your grotto-heavens have the problem of the qi harvest fruit, Heavenly Court is also a grotto-heaven situated in white heaven, why wouldn’t they have the same problem?"

After hearing this, the immortals realized at once.

This was actually just their own mentality. In their mind, Heavenly Court was the supreme organization, even though it lost the fate war, they still displayed terrifying might and foundation. They had only lost because of enemies like Fang Yuan and Red Lotus Demon Venerable. From the variant human Gu Immortals' perspective, this was not an illogical loss, it did not undermine Heavenly Court's terrifying strength.

And because of this, the variant human Gu Immortals subconsciously thought that even if Heavenly Court had the problem of the qi harvest fruit, they could resolve it themselves, after all, Heavenly Court was created by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, who became venerable through qi path.

"Lord Alliance Leader is wise!" Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch patted his forehead: "Heavenly Court invited Qi Sea Ancestor to resolve their threat of the qi harvest fruit, because even though they have their qi path inheritance, they lack a qi path Gu Immortal."

"Also, why did Heavenly Court choose to ally with Qi Sea Ancestor? Other than wanting to resist us, they also want to alleviate their own problems."

"Precisely." Wu Shuai looked at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch with an expression of praise: "You guys are not too stupid after all. Heavenly Court is at its weakest state now, while Qi Sea Ancestor has gone to resolve the qi harvest fruit problem. As long as we attack them during this period, the result will be shocking when we catch them unguarded!"

"If we attack Heavenly Court before Qi Sea Ancestor starts working on the qi harvest fruit, we will attack the qi harvest fruit and force them to go on the defensive. This way, we will hold the initiative and be able to retreat or advance at will."

"If Qi Sea Ancestor is using his killer move to eliminate the qi harvest fruit while we attack Heavenly Court, that will be even better! We can disrupt him with our full strength and cause Qi Sea Ancestor's killer move to fail and suffer a backlash. If we work harder, we might be able to kill him on the spot."

Wu Shuai said calmly.

"But what if Qi Sea Ancestor has already gotten rid of the qi harvest fruit by the time we attack Heavenly Court?" A Gu Immortal asked with caution.

Wu Shuai snorted coldly: "Heavenly Court's foundation is too deep, their qi harvest fruit is also very extraordinary, if Qi Sea Ancestor spends effort to get rid of it, his own condition will definitely slip. Of course, this is just the worst case scenario, but we are in an urgent situation in the first place, we will need to take risks for any hope. Other than this, do you have other ideas?"

Facing Wu Shuai's question, everyone was silent.

In this situation, they had no choice but to follow Wu Shuai and attack Heavenly Court.

But...

Many of the Gu Immortals were still hesitant, including their vice alliance leaders, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian.

"Or perhaps, we can try to experiment and find a way to get rid of the qi harvest fruit?" A Gu Immortal asked softly.

Wu Shuai’s expression sank a little, he scolded in his head: "These variant human Gu Immortals have been cowards for too long, they have absolutely no courage to take risks."

But Wu Shuai predicted this earlier, he started to laugh.

"Why is Lord Alliance Leader laughing?" Gu tribe’s leader asked.

Wu Shuai stopped his laughter as he said: "The truth is, I am also worried about bringing you fools to attack Heavenly Court. But I have invited a strong reinforcement to help us, because of him, I learned about Night Heavenly Wolf Lord’s betrayal."

"Oh? Who?" The immortals were curious.

Lady Cold Ash’s gaze flickered, having a guess.

At this moment, from behind Wu Shuai, a Gu Immortal walked out. He wore a white robe, his black hair extended to his waist, he had a peerless face with divine brilliance, cold light oozed out of his abyss-like eyes.

"Ahhh!"

"Fang Yuan..."

"It’s him, it really is him."

The immortals’ pupils shrunk as their expressions changed, all of them were shocked.

Under everyone’s gaze, Fang Yuan spoke slowly in a cold tone: "Heavenly Court has gone too far, now that I have regained my strength, I am about to attack them. Without Duke Long, who can stop me?"

His voice resounded in the palace, nobody dared to retort to him. Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and the rest had palpitating hearts, with a monster like Fang Yuan leading them, they gained a huge boost in morale and confidence!

Fang Yuan was someone who had defeated Heavenly Court, his battle strength was apparent to the whole world!

Undeniably, he was the number one demon in the current world.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2027 Heavenly Court“s Crisis

Roar—!

The Evil Dragon’s roar shook heaven and earth, whipping up storms and clouds. Its mountain range-like body moved at the front, followed by the immortals of the two heavens alliance, and finally, Dragon Palace at the end.

Primordial qi wall!

This was the method left by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, it appeared once again when Heavenly Court was attacked, but it could not stop Di Zang Sheng’s advancement!

"The five regions became one, this Evil Dragon has gotten much stronger! Furthermore... ever since the fate war, after Fang Yuan broke the primordial qi wall, even though it recovered a little, it is much weaker than before." Qin Ding Ling frowned, she quickly analyzed the situation, with just the primordial qi wall, they could stall for some time but they could not stop this Evil Dragon!

"Lady Qin, do you need me to battle?" At this moment, Nine Spiritual Fairy transmitted and asked.

Heavenly Court once had transformation path great experts, Zhang Fei Xiong and Flesh Whip Immortal, but now they were dead, Nine Spiritual Fairy was the only transformation path great expert left.

"No, we are only one step away from subduing Qing Chou, continue to refine hatred Gu." Qin Ding Ling transmitted before shouting: "Shabi Ninety-five, Ruan Dan, aren’t you going to fight yet?!"

Hearing a tiger roar and crane cry at once, two legendary immemorial desolate beasts appeared in front of Di Zang Sheng.

The three legendary immemorial desolate beasts fought intensely, causing the entire place to rumble.

After just a few rounds, Ruan Dan and Shabi Ninety-five started to retreat. They were in pitiful states, with just physical brawling, they were not Di Zang Sheng’s match.

Thus, they started to use killer moves, instantly, grey light shot out like blades, pill light exploded.

Di Zang Sheng roared, purple-gold light appeared on its body, blocking all of the offensive killer moves.

Next, the golden light faded away. Di Zang Sheng’s whiskers grew out rapidly, each of them shot out like countless snakes, the commotion was huge.

Facing this attack, Shabi Ninety-five and Ruan Dan had to retreat.

"This Evil Dragon actually has Immortal Gu now, it can use killer moves!" Qin Ding Ling’s heart sank, she took a look at Dragon Palace.

Di Zang Sheng was a legendary immemorial beast to begin with, it had superior intelligence and could use Gu worms to activate killer moves. But before the fate war, it was enslaved by Dragon Palace and had no time to obtain Gu worms. Thus, during the fate war, it could only fight using its physical body. That was why it could not resist Feng Jiu Ge’s destiny song, it was handled very quickly, even against other killer moves, it could only resist using its body.

But after the fate war, Wu Shuai made considerations to prepare Gu worms for Di Zang Sheng.

At that time, Wu Shuai was quite poor, he did not have excessive Immortal Gu.

Even though the main body had many Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan was moving around in Western Desert, he did not meet with Wu Shuai initially, also, even though he had Immortal Gu, they were not suitable for Di Zang Sheng.

But Wu Shuai had great luck, he grasped onto his opportunity and became the leader of the two heavens alliance.

With sufficient resources, Wu Shuai started to equip Di Zang Sheng. By now, Wu Shuai and his main body had taken over the two heavens alliance, by using the excuse of eliminating the qi harvest fruit, he destroyed several grotto-heavens and made forceful transactions with the Gu Immortals of the two heavens alliance, Di Zang Sheng finally gathered enough Gu worms to form some basic killer moves.

Di Zang Sheng suppressed Ruan Dan and Shabi Ninety-five, forcing them to retreat as it charged forward ferociously.

Qin Ding Ling yelled as she flew up into an Immortal Gu House. Several Immortal Gu Houses flew towards Di Zang Sheng, they formed a defensive line.

Di Zang Sheng’s advancement was halted, Shabi Ninety-five and Ruan Dan also joined the encirclement.

"We finally stopped it!" Qin Ding Ling calmed down slightly, but at this moment, she saw Dragon Palace flying around, towards the qi harvest fruit.

Heavenly Court’s qi harvest fruit was too huge and too eye-catching!

Wu Shuai was too vicious, he attacked the enemy’s weakness, Qin Ding Ling’s expression changed as she quickly moved a portion of the Immortal Gu Houses to block Dragon Palace.

"The situation is critical, if the qi harvest fruit is destroyed, the whole of Heavenly Court will face destruction! Quickly awaken the people sleeping in the immortal graveyard!" Zhou Xiong Xin urged.

"Or we can let Nine Spiritual Fairy and Red Heart Traveler join the fight!" Bai Cang Shui suggested.

Qin Ding Ling gritted her teeth, deciding: "Awaken those in our immortal graveyard!"

More than half of Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard was destroyed, there were only a small number of Gu Immortals left sleeping in it. But with the awakening of these people, they formed sufficient force to handle the pressure, their defensive line that was precarious became stable now.

"Go and attack the qi harvest fruit!" Wu Shuai gave an order to the alliance army.

These Gu Immortals had dispersed earlier, they were like scattered sand, trying to make their way through the qi wall and towards the qi harvest fruit.

Seeing this, Qin Ding Ling felt enraged, she gritted her teeth, she was furious: "I will grind the bones of these variant humans into ash, I will kill them all!"

The two heavens alliance’s Gu Immortals were not very strong but they had the numbers, and right now, Heavenly Court’s weakness was their lack of manpower.

"Don’t worry, there are many variant human Gu Immortals but they are all cowards. As long as we send one person to kill several of these invaders, they will lose their morale and not dare to progress further!" Prince Feng Xian suggested.

"Who can take on the task?" Qin Ding Ling quickly asked.

Che Wei replied with his actions, he turned into a flash of light and flew out of the Immortal Gu House, towards the qi harvest fruit.

"Die!" He flew like a great eagle, unleashing killer moves that were extremely powerful, his might could not be resisted.

"Ahh—!"

"What killer move is this?"

Out of two variant human Gu Immortals, one was heavily injured, the other was killed on the spot.

At the crucial moment, Che Wei displayed outstanding battle strength, both sides were similarly shocked.

After all, he had just defeated two variant human Gu Immortals with rank eight cultivation level.

"That killer move seems to be from a whole new path?"

"Too terrifying. Before we can understand its background, if I charge towards him, I will definitely be split into two by his blade."

"Let’s wait for Fang Yuan to attack instead!"

The Gu Immortals of the two heavens alliance were hesitant, they stopped moving forward.

"These useless trash!" In the depth of Dragon Palace, Wu Shuai frowned with anger showing on his face.

At the crucial moment, these variant human Gu Immortals were completely useless, they were not even qualified to be cannon fodder.

But Wu Shuai was prepared for this, he waved his hand: "Your turn to fight!"

Four figures flew out of Dragon Palace, they were the Four Dragon Generals, Zhang Yin, Granny Rong, Yang Zi He, and Old Man Bei Feng, who took the place of Shi Miao.

These four rank eight Gu Immortals were enslaved by Dragon Palace, they had absolute loyalty and did not fear death, they split up into four different directions and advanced.

Even though Che Wei was strong, he could only block one person.

"Protect me!" Qi Sea Ancestor transmitted to Qin Ding Ling: "Now is a crucial moment, if we stop here, the consequences will be unthinkable."

Qin Ding Ling almost wanted to grit her teeth till they shattered, the three dragon generals were very close to the qi harvest fruit, she had to take a risk and mobilize Immortal Gu Houses to block them.

At the same time, two Gu Immortals flew out of the Immortal Gu Houses to resist the dragon generals.

Roar—!

Right when Heavenly Court managed to block the Four Dragon Generals, over on Dragon Palace’s end, it exerted force to stop Ruan Dan. Using this chance, Di Zang Sheng rammed Shabi Ninety-five away as it charged forward, managing to reach the qi harvest fruit.

Di Zang Sheng opened its mouth and spat out a torrent of green qi.

The green qi shattered the immortal formation and hit the qi harvest fruit.

The qi harvest fruit shook intensely, Qi Sea Ancestor’s expression changed, he spat out a mouthful of blood, the killer move was halted, he seemed to have suffered great backlash.

"Oh no!" The expressions of Heavenly Court’s immortals changed.

"We succeeded!" The subordinates of Wu Shuai started to cheer, their morale rose.

The qi harvest fruit was damaged, it implicated Heavenly Court. The land of Heavenly Court cracked, Earth Trenches appeared, earth qi rumbled, heaven qi shook, the sky became chaotic as countless clouds and gusts of wind stirred.

Crack, crack.

The aperture wall of Heavenly Court started to crack, large pieces of the wall fragments fell off and created huge holes that connected to the outside world.

Even the fate war did not deal such great damage to Heavenly Court!

The appearance of the qi harvest fruit created a fatal weakness in Heavenly Court.

"Die!" Che Wei was enraged, his left hand was like a blade, his right hand was like a spear, both hands pushed forward as two golden-silver lights pierced Yang Zi He.

Yang Zi He died!

Wu Shuai laughed loudly, shouting: "Today is the day Heavenly Court faces destruction."

Qin Ding Ling’s eyelids twitched, even though Wu Shuai’s side suffered more losses, he was not wrong about it. With their greatest weakness, the qi harvest fruit, Wu Shuai had the initiative in this battle!

"Heavenly Court is facing a crisis, what should we do?" Even someone like Qin Ding Ling felt lost at this moment.

Amidst her feeling of loss, she also felt fear: "Don’t tell me Heavenly Court is going to be destroyed in my hands?"

Right at this moment, Qi Sea Ancestor transmitted to her: "The situation is quite critical, we need to take a risk."

Qin Ding Ling responded subconsciously: "What risk?"

"Earlier, my qi path Immortal Gu were destroyed, I can no longer use the previous method to eliminate the qi harvest fruit. But I had created a killer move that is incomplete, it can cause the qi harvest fruit to shrink temporarily." Qi Sea Ancestor said.

Qin Ding Ling’s eyes shined, she saw hope in this desperate situation, she quickly said: "Ancestor, please use it! As long as we get through this crisis, Heavenly Court will not disappoint you."

Heavenly Court’s greatest problem was the qi harvest fruit now. It was too big, like a mountain range, it was the biggest target for killer moves. But if it shrunk, it would be much easier to protect.

"We need to be fast, this killer move is not complete, I can only hold on for some time." Qi Sea Ancestor said as he flew towards the qi harvest fruit.

When he was about to crash into it, he turned into a human-shaped qi current that fused into the qi harvest fruit.

The qi harvest fruit shook, as expected, it started to shrink.

After a few breaths of time, it went from a mountain range-like size into the size of a horse carriage.

This change made the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals surprised but also happy.

An Immortal Gu House flew down and floated above the qi harvest fruit, it shot out a grand pillar of light that enveloped the entire qi harvest fruit.

Wu Shuai’s side rained down a torrent of killer moves but they could not affect the pillar of light at all.

Di Zang Sheng and Dragon Palace arrived again.

"Stop them!" Qin Ding Ling shouted, but their situation was too passive, they had no choice but to retreat.

The qi harvest fruit shrank again, it went from a horse carriage to the size of a normal gourd.

Seeing that they were about to lose again, Qin Ding Ling quickly asked: "Ancestor, can you move the qi harvest fruit away?"

Qi Sea Ancestor replied weakly: "This is already my limit! I researched on Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s revival method, I can only shrink the fruit but I cannot move it. This method has only been created haphazardly, it is not complete, you need to quickly think of a solution!"

Qin Ding Ling was out of ideas already, she originally wanted to send the members of the ten great ancient sects here to fight. But Central Heaven Gate of Heavenly Court, which could deploy members, was destroyed by Fairy Zi Wei during the fate war.

But at the next moment, the primordial qi wall shattered, countless qi currents landed on Di Zang Sheng’s body.

Di Zang Sheng’s battle strength fell rapidly, its threat level was lowered.

This was the backup method of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, it was used on Fang Yuan during the fate war. At that time, Fang Yuan could not break away from it, Limitless Demon Venerable had to take action to help him block these qi currents.

But now, the chess game had ended, the two venerables’ silhouettes were gone, there was nothing that could help Di Zang Sheng.

In an instant, Di Zang Sheng was suppressed by Shabi Ninety-five.

Heavenly Court’s crisis was temporarily alleviated.

On Wu Shuai’s side, they lost their most important battle strength, Dragon Palace had to step up and use the killer move dreamy light smoke, as Heavenly Court had no way of countering it, Dragon Palace’s demonic might surged.

"This cannot go on, our Heavenly Court lacks people with peak battle strength after all!" Qin Ding Ling gritted her teeth.

If Duke Long was here, how could these enemies act so ferociously?

"Qi Sea Ancestor has peak battle strength too but he faced backlash from the failure of the killer move. He is also not a member of Heavenly Court, why would he fight to the death for us?"

While Qin Ding Ling was thinking of this, Qi Sea Ancestor transmitted again.

"The biggest key now is to get rid of the qi harvest fruit. As long as it is removed, we can go on the offensive without worries. There is still hope now, my killer move only lacks the final part for completion! There is a high chance of success."

Qin Ding Ling’s heart shook: "What do you need?"

Qi Sea Ancestor replied: "I need Heavenly Court’s heaven path true meaning, I need to raise my heaven path attainment level and conceptualize the complete killer move rapidly to get rid of the qi harvest fruit!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

After hearing that Qi Sea Ancestor wanted heaven path true meaning, Qin Ding Ling smiled bitterly: "Even though Heavenly Court has deep foundations, we have never seen nor heard of heaven path true meaning."

"Oh? Why is that so?" Qi Sea Ancestor asked.

"Because nobody can cultivate heaven path. If it can be cultivated, why would our Heavenly Court create Heaven Overseeing Tower to make use of fate Gu?" Qin Ding Ling’s words were filled with deep emotions.

No Gu Immortal could cultivate heaven path, therefore, heaven path true meaning had never existed!

It was not easy for a Gu Immortal to leave behind true meaning.

To leave behind true meaning, wisdom path and rule path had the greatest ease. As for other paths, they had to reach a certain level of mimicking these paths to leave their true meaning behind. For example, Long Hair Ancestor’s refinement path true meaning or Reckless Savage’s transformation path true meaning.

After hearing Qin Ding Ling’s reply, Fang Yuan did not feel dejected.

He came prepared, his request was actually his probing towards Heavenly Court’s foundation, what if they had it after all?

Heavenly Court not having heaven path true meaning was not unexpected.

Qi Sea Ancestor (Fang Yuan) sighed deeply as he transmitted to Qin Ding Ling: "Then there is no hope. I can only come out and fight alongside Heavenly Court to kill these variant humans."

Qin Ding Ling instantly became anxious.

The qi harvest fruit was Heavenly Court’s fatal weakness, the reason why they could still maintain a deadlock was because Qi Sea Ancestor made the fruit smaller. Once he lets go and it returns to being mountain size, Heavenly Court would be in a difficult spot, the situation would be hard to turn around.

Qin Ding Ling was facing immense pressure now.

Some of her pressure came from the enemies, but a portion came from within her.

After the fate war, the immortal graveyard was heavily damaged, Heavenly Court's foundation was reduced, Qin Ding Ling had to take on this responsibility and manage all the affairs of Heavenly Court, which was on the brink of destruction.

She worked hard over these days, she had given it her all, she exerted her body and mind for Heavenly Court, trying to restore its former glory.

Similar to the other Heavenly Court members, Qin Ding Ling had an intense feeling of belonging to Heavenly Court.

But now, the enemies were attacking suddenly, they even had the fatal weakness of the qi harvest fruit, Qin Ding Ling sensed a huge danger: "Was Heavenly Court going to be destroyed in this fight? Was it because of her failure to defend it, would she be the biggest sinner of Heavenly Court's history?"

Rumble!

The intense battle continued, Dragon Palace rampaged unhindered.

Qin Ding Ling took charge of the situation, observing the battlefield, while mobilizing the people and communicating with Qi Sea Ancestor.

With both internal and external threats, the pressure was pushing her to make a gamble.

"Qi Sea, do not give up. Even though Heavenly Court does not have heaven path true meaning, we have abundant heaven path research results. I will hand them to you!"

Qin Ding Ling passed an information path Immortal Gu to Qi Sea Ancestor without hesitation.

"My plan succeeded!" Fang Yuan received this information path Immortal Gu, he sighed deeply in his heart as he looked into it immediately.

"Brilliant! Wonderful! Astounding!" Fang Yuan only saw a small portion but his eyes shined with bright light, he praised it continuously in his heart.

For the last three million years, Heavenly Court rose to become the number one human force in the world. These years, they initially followed the will of heaven, before trying to resist it later, followed by altering heaven's will and interfering with the Heavenly Dao.

Their heaven path research results were abundant, they undeniably had the most progress in the world!

Fate Gu was a heaven path Immortal Gu, it could not be used by anyone. But Heavenly Court forcibly created Heaven Overseeing Tower and unleashed a portion of fate Gu's might.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, why did Spectral Soul infiltrate Heavenly Court? A large portion of the reasons were to try obtaining the heaven path research results!

As for why Limitless Demon Venerable decided to make a bet with Star

Constellation’s will and set up a game of chess, wasn’t it because he wanted to use Heavenly Court’s heaven path research results to help in his plan within Crazed Demon Cave?

And now, they ended up in Fang Yuan’s hands.

Fang Yuan looked into them, his heart shook.

He saw two killer moves.

One was named heaven-human sensation, the other was called human executing heaven’s work, they were both created by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Heaven-human sensation allowed a Gu Immortal’s will to interact and fuse with heaven’s will. Human executing heaven’s work was built on the foundation of heaven-human sensation, it allowed a Gu Immortal to replace heaven’s will to a certain degree.

Precisely because of these two killer moves, Star Constellation’s will could interfere and affect heaven’s will, she could even replace heaven’s will to control fate Gu and allow Heavenly Court to have a decisive rule for three million years!

"The solution lies in this!" Fang Yuan acutely sensed that these two killer moves were the key to breaking out of his current predicament.

He took a risk to come to Heavenly Court now and deceive Qin Ding Ling, it was to achieve his goals, which were finally reached.

"Qi Sea, I wonder if these research results can help you complete the killer move?" Qin Ding Ling asked while in intense battle.

Fang Yuan coughed: "Your heaven path research results are quite helpful to me. But modifying a killer move right now carries risk, I need you to fight and stall for time, get me as much time as possible."

Qin Ding Ling gritted her teeth: "Ancestor, you need to be fast, we can only do our best. In the worst case, we have to give up Heavenly Court and save the Gu Immortals instead."

She had already made plans for the worst case scenario.

Fang Yuan continued to read.

Following the two killer moves were the concepts that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable came up with, Fang Yuan looked at them and gained deep enlightenment.

"My will represents heaven’s will, heaven’s will represents my will... so that’s it, so that’s it."

Fang Yuan remained stationary as he focused on comprehending this information, he allowed his clone, Wu Shuai, to continue leading the two heavens alliance to fight against Heavenly Court.

Because of Primordial Origin’s method, Di Zang Sheng was no longer as strong, Ruan Dan suppressed it. As for Shabi Ninety-five, it had already rejoined the defensive line, to become part of the force that resisted Dragon Palace.

Under Wu Shuai’s control, Dragon Palace charged around the battlefield unhindered, Heavenly Court was greatly troubled by its power.

But on the other hand, the Gu Immortals of the two heavens alliance were suppressed, they were not as powerful as each Heavenly Court Gu Immortal.

Compared to the Heavenly Court members, they were lacking in strength. Only two people had equivalent battle strength, they were the two vice alliance leaders, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian.

As for Spectral Soul, who was pretending to be Lady Cold Ash, he continued to conceal himself, on the surface, he was desperately fighting and unable to put up strong resistance.

"This is a prime opportunity! Fairy Zi Wei, bring everyone and participate in the battle in Heavenly Court!" Spectral Soul gave instructions: "Fang Yuan is in Heavenly Court, I will kill him, the members of Heavenly Court, and Qi Sea Ancestor."

Fairy Zi Wei received the instructions and asked: "Do we include Longevity Heaven’s group? Do we tell them about the situation in Heavenly Court?"

Fairy Zi Wei had only deduced Fang Yuan’s location, Bing Sai Chuan knew about it too. But he did not know about Heavenly Court’s current situation, he just thought that they were being cautious.

In that case, Bing Sai Chuan would need to conceal the information of Fang Yuan’s location. Even though he wanted to let them fight each other as well, if Heavenly Court captures or kills Fang Yuan, they would gain all of his inheritances and Immortal Gu, wouldn’t that be benefiting them?

Thus, Bing Sai Chuan’s plan was to continue working with Spectral Soul’s side and try to attack Heavenly Court together next time.

Spectral Soul recalled the attack from Giant Sun during the fate war and snorted coldly, he did not hesitate: "No need to tell them, hide this from them, your group will come alone!"

Thus, Fairy Zi Wei did not say anything, after leaving Bing Sai Chuan’s group, her group headed towards Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court was damaged and the aperture wall was cracked, it became connected to the outside world. Fairy Zi Wei and the rest could get in very quickly.

"Fairy Zi Wei’s group cannot turn the situation around, we need to wait until both sides suffer mutual loss before we can exert the maximum impact." Spectral Soul considered.

For him, the best case was for Wu Shuai and Heavenly Court to cripple each other’s battle strength. By then, if he took action, he would reap huge gains.

"But why hasn’t that scoundrel Fang Yuan done anything?" Spectral Soul observed Dragon Palace while at the same time, an Immortal Gu House from Heavenly Court attacked him.

Spectral Soul withheld his killing intent, he abandoned a group of soul beasts, retreating continuously.

In order to lay low, he decided to wait and endure.

But this Immortal Gu House came for him and used a killer move, a ray of profound light shot out towards Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul’s heart shook as he hesitated. He had the ability to dodge this but Lady Cold Ash did not. There was no choice, he abandoned another group of soul beasts to block the Immortal Gu House and stall for time.

"Die!" Che Wei suddenly appeared behind Lady Cold Ash, his body shined in golden light, his aura was sharp as a blade.

"Do you really think I’m easy to bully?" Spectral Soul was deeply enraged but he decided to keep up the act.

Boom!

Che Wei’s attack landed on Lady Cold Ash, she fell towards the ground as she coughed out mouthfuls of blood.

Lady Cold Ash’s aura weakened continuously until it was completely still.

"Dead!"

"I killed another one."

Che Wei did not sense Spectral Soul, he flew away in the Immortal Gu House, towards the other areas of the battlefield.

Spectral Soul remained on the ground like a corpse, not moving and pretending to be dead.

Boom boom boom!

A while after he landed on the ground, a series of immortal killer moves turned into lightning as they shot down, erupting around Spectral Soul’s body.

Lady Cold Ash was turned into char, half of her flesh was cooked and emitted the fragrance of meat.

"I’ll endure!" Spectral Soul gritted his teeth.

Bam.

With a loud sound, Di Zang Sheng also fell, it landed on top of Spectral Soul.

Next, Ruan Dan flew towards Di Zang Sheng and shouted excitedly: "Attack, attack, attack, attack, attack!"

Bam bam bam...

The ground shook intensely, Spectral Soul’s bones were almost all crushed: "I’ll endure!"

Di Zang Sheng and Ruan Dan flew away, soon, an Immortal Gu House came.

It was Dragon Palace.

Immortal killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

Wu Shuai used a dream path killer move and chased after Qin Ding Ling relentlessly.

Qin Ding Ling dodged the attack rapidly, the dreamy smoke killer move could not turn around in time, it was about to land on Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul: "..."

"Enough is enough!" At the next moment, he rose up abruptly, waving his hand, black qi permeated throughout the entire battlefield.

Whoosh, the ground shook, mountains rumbled, all of the Gu Immortals present were blown away by the impact.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2029 What“s The Situation?

"What... what’s the situation?" As black qi surged, Xiao He Jian was forced to retreat with shock on his face.

He saw the moment when Lady Cold Ash was killed by Che Wei, he felt a little pity for her. To think that soon after, she would actually revive!

"Was she pretending to be dead earlier, but because of bad luck, the dream path killer move almost hit her, so she had to retaliate? But... why does Lady Cold Ash have such battle strength?"

Not only was Xiao He Jian shocked, the other Gu Immortals had the same doubts.

But compared to Heavenly Court, the two heavens alliance was also filled with joy. After all, even though Lady Cold Ash was deeply concealing her strength, she was still one of them.

"That hit earlier has power similar to Duke Long. Is Lady Cold Ash someone on Duke Long’s level? Hmph, I refuse to believe it!" A Gu Immortal on Heavenly Court’s side flew out again, it was none other than Che Wei, who was displaying great might in this battle.

Che Wei flew towards Lady Cold Ash, all sorts of signs showed that the move earlier was Lady Cold Ash’s trump card, it could not be used often.

"Die!" Che Wei’s body radiated with golden light as he flew towards Lady Cold Ash like a crashing meteor.

At the same time, somewhere underground far from the battlefield.

Two Heavenly Court members were still trying to forcefully refine hatred Gu.

Red Heart Traveler controlled the formation while Qing Chou remained unmoving like a statue.

Nine Spiritual Fairy’s voice came from within the statue: "We are almost done, in just a few more minutes, we will thoroughly refine hatred Gu!"

Once she said that, Qing Chou’s dim eyes burst open, endless blood red light shot out of its eyes!

"What is going on?" Nine Spiritual Fairy shouted in shock.

"What happened?" Red Heart Traveler asked while instilling immortal essence, raising the power of the immortal formation.

But Qing Chou’s body started to shake with greater intensity.

"It’s hatred Gu... oh no!" Nine Spiritual Fairy suddenly shouted, she flew out of Qing Chou’s body like a flash of light.

Roar—!

Qing Chou regained freedom, it roared towards the sky, its voice resounded throughout the area, exploding with thunderous impact.

Boom!

At the next moment, Qing Chou charged out of the formation, flying towards the surface, leaving behind a damaged formation and two immensely shocked Heavenly Court rank eight Gu Immortals.

Red Heart Traveler, who was controlling the formation, suffered a considerable backlash, he quickly assisted the falling Nine Spiritual Fairy as he asked: "Qing Chou has flown to the battlefield, what in the world happened?"

Nine Spiritual Fairy was still in a daze, she said in uncertainty: "Maybe I saw wrongly, but at that moment, rank eight hatred Immortal Gu burst out with terrifying power, it... it had a trace of a rank nine Immortal Gu’s aura!"

At this time, the battlefield had already shifted its attention from Dragon Palace and the qi harvest fruit to Lady Cold Ash.

Lady Cold Ash’s attack was too powerful, it shocked all of the Gu Immortals.

Che Wei arrived before her, Lady Cold Ash only snorted coldly as her body flew up, turning into black light as she charged towards Dragon Palace!

At the same time, Lady Cold Ash shouted in a loud voice: "Fang Yuan, it is time for us to settle the score!"

Spectral Soul had a straightforward idea, since Fang Yuan was not showing up, he would force him out.

Times were different now.

During the fate war, Spectral Soul was very weak, he could only escape and recuperate using Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan’s strength. But now, he had already gained much of his strength, he was no longer weak.

"What is going on?" The immortals were truly stunned.

Lady Cold Ash actually ignored Che Wei, she went straight for Dragon Palace!

"Internal strife?" Che Wei’s movement halted for a moment.

"Wait and see first, this might be their scheme!" Qin Ding Ling wanted to play safe, she got the immortals to gather.

Wu Shuai frowned, he moved Dragon Palace to retreat.

But Lady Cold Ash was faster!

She placed her palm at the top of Dragon Palace.

It seemed like a weak action but it made the entire Dragon Palace fly out like a cannonball.

At the same time, the silhouettes of immemorial soul beasts appeared on the surface of Dragon Palace.

Roar roar roar...

Each immemorial soul beast silhouette that flickered would deal a huge attack to Dragon Palace. After more than ten immemorial soul beasts appeared, there was already a huge hole at the top of Dragon Palace, the pillars broke and tiles cracked, it was a terrifying sight.

Che Wei watched with sweat on his forehead, he knew the power of Dragon Palace, but Lady Cold Ash had dealt such damage to it with just one palm strike.

"So Lady Cold Ash is actually so strong! I was simply courting death earlier by attacking her." Che Wei immediately changed directions as he retreated.

"Lady Cold Ash, what are you doing?!" Xiao He Jian shouted.

"What soul path killer move is this, it has such power..." Even though Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch showed an angry expression, he was enveloped in cold sweat.

Dragon Palace was still retreating.

"Can you escape?" Lady Cold Ash smiled coldly, she was about to attack again when a huge shadow enshrouded her body.

Lady Cold Ash turned back to take a look, she saw Qing Chou, having the size of a mountain, it had gotten close to her at some point, opening its bloodthirsty mouth as it tried to devour her.

"Hmm?" Seeing this, even Lady Cold Ash’s gaze froze for a second.

Spectral Soul was aware of Qing Chou’s existence. But he did not expect to meet Qing Chou at this place and time.

Seeing that Lady Cold Ash was about to die, suddenly, her body turned into black smoke as she drifted away, dodging Qing Chou’s attack.

"Beast, scram!" Lady Cold Ash shouted, she stretched out her hand and placed it on Qing Chou’s head.

The scene from earlier was seen again, immemorial soul beast silhouettes appeared around Qing Chou as they flickered.

Bam bam bam...

Each time a silhouette appeared, an explosive sound would follow.

Qing Chou was soon covered in injuries but it did not retreat even in the danger of death!

Spectral Soul was just about to chase after Dragon Palace when Qing Chou blocked his path again.

"Spectral Soul, I will kill you, I will kill you!" Qing Chou shouted as it pounced at Lady Cold Ash.

Spectral Soul was enraged: "I have no time to waste with you."

He controlled Lady Cold Ash’s body as he prepared a terrifying killer move. Black smoke started to come out of Lady Cold Ash’s seven orifices, her aura was growing at a terrifying manner.

Black smoke gathered and moved towards Qing Chou.

Qing Chou’s offensive killer move went into the black smoke.

After a breath’s time, the black smoke scattered, Qing Chou’s killer move landed on Lady Cold Ash without becoming weaker at all.

Lady Cold Ash’s expression turned to shock, she was sent flying after being caught off guard.

"Rank nine Immortal Gu? No, just an incomplete product." Lady Cold Ash swallowed a mouthful of blood, she squinted her eyes and looked at Qing Chou, her expression was stern.

Nine Spiritual Fairy had just arrived in the battlefield, her pupils shrunk: "I did not sense wrongly, rank eight hatred Gu is going to become rank nine!"

"Qing Chou originated from the souls that Spectral Soul slaughtered. The core Immortal Gu that created Qing Chou was hatred Gu, but hatred Gu and Qing Chou had an extraordinary connection. Not only did hatred Gu create Qing Chou, Qing Chou is also nourishing and nurturing hatred Gu."

"Maybe hatred Gu was just rank six, or even four or five at the start. But as Qing Chou grew, its endless hatred allowed hatred Gu to continuously grow until now. It is already moving from rank eight to rank nine!"

Rank nine hatred Gu!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2030 Spectral Soul“s Demonic Migh

What was this situation?

Seeing that Lady Cold Ash got sent flying by Qing Chou, the immortals present were stunned.

The rank nine Immortal Gu aura was not fake, but it was too weak, the main part of the aura was still at the level of rank eight Immortal Gu. This was something that was unheard of.

An incomplete rank nine Immortal Gu?

All the immortals were bewildered.

Gu refinement had always been a strict process, be they human or hairy man refinement methods, they had their specifications.

This was true for both Fang Yuan and Long Hair Ancestor. There had never been a case where a Gu worm could still be used in battle during refinement.

But the truth was in front of them, the immortals had to admit the fact.

"What refinement method is this?" Many Gu Immortals became quite excited: "This will start a new trend of refinement path!"

"Spectral Soul? Qing Chou possesses hatred Gu, it should not be wrong. To think that Lady Cold Ash’s body was actually taken over by Spectral Soul."

"Seeing what Spectral Soul said, it seems that Fang Yuan is here too, hiding in Dragon Palace?"

The Gu Immortals were startled and puzzled.

Too many unexpected incidents had happened in this battle. Heavenly Court, the two heavens, Spectral Soul, and Fang Yuan all had their own plans, nobody knew the entire situation clearly. Even though Fang Yuan was reborn, he was the same.

Spectral Soul’s identity was exposed, Fang Yuan felt quite relieved about it.

Dragon Palace retreated even more quickly. Wu Shuai recalled the three dragon generals, at the same time, the Gu Immortals of the two heavens alliance guarded Dragon Palace against Spectral Soul.

Wu Shuai did not dare to risk letting the immortals of the two heavens alliance into his Dragon Palace, the appearance of Spectral Soul made everyone else suspicious as well.

"I can’t wait anymore..." Qi Sea Ancestor (Fang Yuan) gritted his teeth before activating his hidden method. He was originally intending to wait some more, but with Spectral Soul’s appearance and Qing Chou’s assault, he understood that the situation was out of his control, he needed to act quickly!

Fang Yuan immediately contacted Qin Ding Ling: "The modification has some results, protect me well, we will go into the critical period now!"

"Understood!" Joy flashed on Qin Ding Ling’s face, this was the best news she had heard since the battle started.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals shrunk back to form a tight defensive circle, they defended against Spectral Soul and Wu Shuai’s Dragon Palace.

Roar—!

Qing Chou charged towards Lady Cold Ash.

Hatred Gu’s rank nine aura was getting stronger, it seemed like Spectral Soul’s appearance had summoned the deepest hatred in Qing Chou’s heart, this intense feeling of hatred was rapidly helping to refine hatred Gu.

Hatred Gu activated, amplifying Qing Chou’s strength comprehensively. Especially offensive killer moves, their might was increased to a terrifying level.

Spectral Soul and Qing Chou fought, he actually got suppressed for some time.

The killing intent on his face became denser, after a few rounds, he spat out a mouthful of black qi.

The black qi was small and insignificant, but once it flew towards Qing Chou, it made Qing Chou’s movements slow, its attacks were no longer rapid.

Spectral Soul’s body shook, turning into countless phantoms and surrounded Qing Chou tightly.

Qing Chou possessed hatred Gu, it should be able to find out the real Spectral

Soul. But against the countless Spectral Souls, it showed a confused expression, having lost its target.

Spectral Soul’s main body suddenly appeared on the back of Qing Chou, he stretched out his palm and his entire forearm was stabbed into Qing Chou’s body.

Qing Chou’s body started to shiver, it felt extreme pain as it raised its head and roared!

Qing Chou unleashed immortal killer moves consecutively, ignoring its own state as it assaulted Spectral Soul who was on its back.

Spectral Soul endured the endless assault but continued to sustain his current method.

Qing Chou fell on the ground, with a loud sound, the earth rumbled, a huge pit was created.

Qing Chou rolled on the ground, it was unable to shrug off Spectral Soul.

"Oh no, he is trying to refine Qing Chou!" Qin Ding Ling saw what was happening, her heart jumped, she wanted to order the Gu Immortals to disrupt Spectral Soul.

But Wu Shuai moved one step earlier.

Dragon Palace unleashed dreamy light smoke as a cloud of pink smoke flew towards Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul was not afraid of other methods but dream path methods were still threatening.

He had no choice but to stop and retreat for now.

Qing Chou regained freedom as a result but it was very weak, it almost fell to the ground.

In contrast, Spectral Soul flew to the sky with an increased aura. Evidently, the method used against Qing Chou earlier was not just enslavement, it also had a special ability to extract its strength.

Seeing this, almost all the Gu Immortals’ hearts sank.

Qing Chou has a quasi-rank nine hatred Gu, its battle strength rose drastically, reaching the levels of Fang Yuan, Duke Long, and Feng Jiu Ge during the fate war, but it was ineffective against Spectral Soul.

Other than catching Spectral Soul off guard initially, once he was prepared, Qing Chou got easily countered afterwards.

In the end, Qing Chou was still an immemorial soul beast, it was against Spectral Soul, who was primarily a soul path cultivator and had the deepest knowledge of this. Spectral Soul had a bunch of methods to counter immemorial soul beasts, in fact, the reason for the creation of soul beasts was Spectral Soul himself.

"What a pity, I was so close to enslaving this legendary desolate beast. Hmph! Fang Yuan, you are courting death." Spectral Soul’s plan was foiled, he emanated killing intent with a cold expression, attacking Dragon Palace again.

The two sides fought again, Wu Shuai put in all his effort but he could not resist Spectral Soul’s methods, he was forced to retreat.

Spectral Soul’s demonic might was overwhelming, he dominated the entire battlefield without difficulty. Dragon Palace, which was showing great performance earlier, could not defend against his unparalleled power.

His killer moves were endless, they either had great strength or peculiar effects, they were all hard to defend against.

Spectral Soul had already recovered, even though he was not at the level when he refined sovereign immortal fetus Gu on Yi Tian Mountain, he had mostly regained his strength.

Wu Shuai controlled Dragon Palace to fight against Spectral Soul, during this time, Qing Chou and the rest also interfered, but they were all suppressed, the situation was getting increasingly dangerous.

After more than ten rounds of fighting, Dragon Palace was heavily damaged, the three dragon generals all died at Spectral Soul’s hands. Thankfully, there was the killer move dreamy light smoke that Spectral Soul was worried about.

The Gu Immortals of the two heavens alliance could not be depended on, they all hid at one side. Spectral Soul’s might was too terrifying, whoever got close would die.

"The time is about ripe." Wu Shuai finally received the instructions from his main body.

He let out a breath of air, driving Dragon Palace towards the qi harvest fruit.

Qin Ding Ling and the rest had formed into a defensive line, they became alarmed, they shot out endless profound lights.

Wu Shuai shouted: "Heavenly Court, if you still refuse to take action, after Spectral Soul kills me, you will all die as well."

Qin Ding Ling retorted: "Stop right now, whoever comes here will face our full-on assault!"

During the fight between Spectral Soul and Dragon Palace, Heavenly Court had been watching at the side, not doing anything. Qin Ding Ling and the rest were waiting for Fang Yuan, as long as he stayed motionless, they would not attack. Nobody knew what vile schemes this demon Fang Yuan was preparing after all!

Wu Shuai did not care, he steered Dragon Palace to get close to Heavenly Court’s defensive line.

Behind him, Spectral Soul chased relentlessly.

Qin Ding Ling’s expression was grim, she ordered: "Attack Dragon Palace, force it back!"

Rumble...

All sorts of killer moves landed on Dragon Palace, creating beautiful ripples of various colors in the sky. Dragon Palace was like a crumbling boat, riding against the dangerous waves.

Large numbers of Gu worms died, including Immortal Gu.

This battle caused severe losses to Dragon Palace, the price to repair it would be extremely high.

"Oh no, it is getting close!"

They watched as Dragon Palace almost went past Heavenly Court’s defensive line, at the crucial moment, Shabi Ninety-five and Ruan Dan came out to block Dragon Palace despite the danger.

But soon, Spectral Soul also arrived, chaos ensued.

"Die!" Spectral Soul’s killing intent surged, he soon gained the upper hand.

Heavenly Court’s defensive line was collapsing.

Right at this moment, Qi Sea Ancestor’s laughter could be heard.

Swish swish swish!

The originally condensed qi harvest fruit exploded into a tsunami, engulfing heaven and earth, clouds and winds raged, at once, the entire battlefield was filled with qi currents over a massive range.

At once, all the Gu Immortals lost their sense of direction, they could only see white qi in front of them, they could not even see their own fingers.

At the center of the qi currents, there was a baby shape gathering, it devoured the white qi.

In a few breaths of time, the baby grew rapidly, turning old as it became Qi Sea Ancestor’s appearance, having rank eight cultivation level!

Fang Yuan’s main body flickered, he waved his sleeves, a split soul that was prepared in advance flew out, carrying Gu worms and immortal essence into Qi Sea Ancestor’s body.

After the split soul arrived, the Qi Sea clone opened his eyes.

While Fang Yuan’s main body used the opportunity to enter Dragon Palace.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan had always taken action after planning, even though this venture to Heavenly Court was dangerous, he had made ample preparations.

He refined Heavenly Court’s qi harvest fruit into his qi path clone, while the main body went into Dragon Palace at this very moment. Even though there were many Gu Immortals in the battlefield, nobody found out the truth.

Fang Yuan’s qi path clone breathed in deeply, all of the white qi got absorbed into his body.

Next, he pushed with both arms as a thunderous sound occurred, a dense qi wall formed and pushed towards Dragon Palace and Spectral Soul with overwhelming might.

Spectral Soul’s eyes shined with bright light, black qi burst out of his body and crashed into the qi wall, emitting a loud sound.

The qi wall was corroded but the surrounding qi wall came to fill it up again. Spectral Soul made use of this timing to turn into black light and penetrate through it like a flash of lightning.

A portion of Spectral Soul’s focus was kept on Qi Sea Ancestor, while most of his attention remained on Dragon Palace.

Dragon Palace was huge, it would not be easy to pass the qi wall. Once Dragon Palace exposed a weakness while resisting the qi wall, Spectral Soul would take action and make use of Qi Sea Ancestor’s killer move to deal a huge blow to Dragon Palace.

Right when the qi wall was about to crash into Dragon Palace, its door opened, Fang Yuan stood upright, appearing in front of everyone.

Immortal killer move — Unlimited Qi Sea!

Fang Yuan was already well prepared, he raised his right arm now as he grabbed towards the qi wall with his five fingers.

The colossal qi wall shook as it collapsed, countless qi currents were drawn by a formless force, going into Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

"Fang Yuan!"

"He was here after all."

"This move again! During the fate war, he used this move to unravel primordial qi wall!"

The immortals saw Fang Yuan’s appearance as all of them shook.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were all ashen, after they lost the fate war, Fang Yuan had turned into a nightmare that shrouded over their minds.

The two heavens alliance’s Gu Immortals were joyful instead. Seeing Fang Yuan’s action, it was clear that he was on their side.

Spectral Soul’s pupils shrunk, Fang Yuan’s performance was quite shocking. He was troubled by the heaven path dao marks after all, how could he still display such immense battle strength?

The entire battlefield fell into peculiar silence.

Fang Yuan and Qi Sea Ancestor appeared at the same time, the entire battlefield’s situation was turned around in an instant.

Heavenly Court protected Qi Sea Ancestor, Spectral Soul was alone, while Fang Yuan was standing in front of Dragon Palace, the three strongest Gu Immortals prepared to face off against each other.

In the Gu world, strength reigned supreme, the following battle would depend on these three people.

"To think that this day would come when Heavenly Court fails to be the leader of this confrontation." Qin Ding Ling sighed in her heart as she transmitted to Qi Sea Ancestor, asking about his condition.

Qi Sea Ancestor immediately replied: "Even though I got rid of the qi harvest fruit, I suffered considerable injuries. I will need everyone from Heavenly Court to work together to survive this crisis."

Qin Ding Ling said again: "Heavenly Court’s greatest threat was resolved thanks to you, ancestor. After we survive this, Heavenly Court will definitely reward you satisfactorily!"

Qin Ding Ling was trying very hard to gain Qi Sea Ancestor’s help, at this moment, Dragon Palace flew out like an orange meteor towards the sky!

After this catastrophic battle, Heavenly Court was completely covered in holes. Dragon Palace escaped along one of these loopholes, easily leaving Heavenly Court and entering immemorial white heaven.

The remaining immortals looked at Dragon Palace’s figure with stunned expressions.

Even though Fang Yuan appeared and cooperated with Wu Shuai, the two of them had actually escaped.

Was this the showing of the number one demon?

"It seems that Fang Yuan has not recovered."

"Even though that move was ferocious and broke Qi Sea Ancestor’s qi wall killer move earlier, he was likely at his limit!"

"Do we chase them? This demon Fang Yuan is too crafty, I am afraid that this is just his plan to lure us out. He might have an immortal formation outside lying in ambush, waiting for us to head into his trap."

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals hesitated while the two heavens alliance Gu Immortals cursed in their hearts.

The expert and leader that they placed their hopes and morale on had actually escaped, they fled so quickly!

All of these two heavens alliance Gu Immortals were left in Heavenly Court, they were abandoned.

"Fang Yuan, where are you running to? Die here and now." Spectral Soul snickered as he used Lady Cold Ash’s body to rush out of Heavenly Court, chasing after Dragon Palace.

Roar—!

Qing Chou roared, it was gradually recovering the strength that it lost, even though the rank nine aura of its hatred Gu was not complete, it was already much denser than before.

"Spectral Soul, I want you to die!" Qing Chou, who had unresolvable hatred, did not hesitate, it chased after Spectral Soul.

Thus, in the battlefield, only Heavenly Court’s immortals, Qi Sea Ancestor, and the two heavens alliance’s Gu Immortals were left.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian looked at each other.

They were in an awkward situation now!

"We will chase them!"

"Protect Dragon Palace!!"

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian worked together for the first time, they shouted something that they did not believe in as they charged out of Heavenly Court.

The remaining two heavens alliance Gu Immortals followed after them, shouting and jeering as they also went out of Heavenly Court along with the two vice alliance leaders.

"Are we going to kill these variant human Gu Immortals?" Prince Feng Xian asked Qin Ding Ling.

Qin Ding Ling looked towards Qi Sea Ancestor, she thought about it before saying resolutely: "No! These variant human Gu Immortals are just minor problems, the most important thing is Fang Yuan. Two people will stay behind to take care of the place, the rest will follow me to pursue and kill Fang Yuan!!"

Fang Yuan was not in good condition now, it was the best time to kill him.

If they manage to kill Fang Yuan, the loot they could gain would be extremely favorable to Heavenly Court. Fang Yuan had too many good things, he had countless Immortal Gu and exceptional inheritances. Even without them, as long as they could capture his soul and extract the memories of his previous life, it would be incredibly precious to Heavenly Court!

In fact, even if Heavenly Court gets nothing from killing Fang Yuan, just the fact that he died at their hands would allow Heavenly Court to regain their morale, they would break free of the trauma of the fate war, they would be at the top of the world again.

"Even if we cannot kill Fang Yuan, we cannot let Spectral Soul kill Fang Yuan!" Furthermore, Qin Ding Ling was also wary of that old monster Spectral Soul.

"Ancestor..." Qin Ding Ling was about to speak when Qi Sea Ancestor interrupted her.

"No need to say anything, be it Spectral Soul or Fang Yuan, they are both demons, us righteous path members should execute them all. Time is pressing, our opportunity is slipping, we need to chase them now!" At the crucial moment, Qi Sea Ancestor displayed the demeanor of a heroic leader of the righteous path!

The Heavenly Court immortals felt much closer to him after hearing that.

Qin Ding Ling nodded gravely, without Qi Sea Ancestor’s help, they would not be able to chase Fang Yuan safely.

"The main body’s situation is strange, I need to look after him. These Heavenly Court Gu Immortals are much better cannon fodder than those two heavens alliance immortals!" Qi Sea Ancestor made his plan internally, leading the Heavenly Court immortals as they chased.

This way, Dragon Palace was at the front, followed by Spectral Soul, who was getting closer.

Followed by Qing Chou.

Followed by Qi Sea Ancestor and the Heavenly Court immortals.

As for the two vice alliance leaders of the two heavens alliance, they had already escaped from Heavenly Court with the other immortals, they scattered all over the place thinking only of escaping, nobody dared to join this battle anymore.

At this moment, Dragon Palace was still tightly shut.

Fang Yuan sat on the ground, modifying the two killer moves, heaven-human sensation and human executing heaven’s work.

Fang Yuan lacked more than half of the Gu worms needed for these killer moves. He had to modify the moves and swap out the Gu worms so that he could use these moves.

Immortal Gu were unique, these two killer moves were newly obtained, Fang Yuan had quite a bit of difficulty in the modification.

After attempting it for some time, Fang Yuan changed his tactic, he gave up on the Immortal Gu level and targeted the aspect of a mortal killer move.

Fang Yuan connected to treasure yellow heaven and soon gathered the relevant mortal Gu worms. With the necessary Gu worms and after modifying the move from an immortal killer move to a mortal killer move, the difficult became nearly nonexistent.

With these two mortal killer moves, Fang Yuan stopped the formation in the sovereign immortal aperture, no longer using qi tides to cleanse the immortal aperture’s nine heavens and five regions.

Soon, heaven’s will was produced.

Fang Yuan sent a portion of his will towards the heaven’s will.

Next, he activated the killer move heaven-human sensation, Fang Yuan fused into the heaven’s will.

After that, he activated human executing heaven’s work.

After a while.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with bright light: "I sensed... a certain group of heaven path dao marks!"

If he had to replace the word ’sensed’, Fang Yuan would choose another word, caught.

Originally, Fang Yuan knew about the heaven path dao marks in his body, but he could only let them be. But now, when he could sense them, it meant that these heaven path dao marks were under his control temporarily.

With this crucial breakthrough and Fang Yuan’s expertise in Gu refinement, it was only a matter of time until he refined all of these heaven path dao marks into his own.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Rumble!

With a loud sound, Dragon Palace shook intensely from the impact, a large portion of its roof cracked and fell. While falling, these fragments turned into Gu worm corpses, scattered by the intense winds in the sky.

Spectral Soul had caught up!

He was extremely fast, even though Wu Shuai was moving Dragon Palace at top speed, he could not reach Spectral Soul’s speed.

Spectral Soul’s body was covered in pitch black smoke, each time he attacked, Dragon Palace suffered great damage.

Wu Shuai had to put in his effort to repair it, thankfully, he had many Gu worms in his storage, he was amply prepared.

Fang Yuan frowned tightly, his expression was slightly grim.

He came to Heavenly Court using Qi Sea Ancestor’s identity to find a way to resolve his heaven path dao mark problem. Once his goal was achieved, he chose to retreat, Fang Yuan had never cared about the title of the number one demon.

However, even though Fang Yuan got what he wanted, he needed time now, what he lacked was sufficient time to execute his plan.

"Now, Spectral Soul is chasing after me, Heavenly Court will do the same, these people will not let me retreat easily. It is very difficult to escape from this situation!"

Fang Yuan’s movement ability had always been improving. Long ago, his strongest movement method was the killer move sword escape after transforming into an ancient sword dragon. After that was Omni-directional Travel, followed by Fixed Immortal Travel and the killer move comprising Fixed Immortal Travel as the core.

But among these methods, even Omni-directional Travel could not match Spectral Soul’s speed. Fixed Immortal Travel’s killer move might be usable but Fang Yuan was very weak now from the disturbance of the heaven path dao marks.

There was still some time until Fang Yuan could resolve this disturbance and fully refine the heaven path dao marks.

Fang Yuan tried to think about it from another perspective, be they Spectral Soul or Heavenly Court, they wanted him dead. The former used all of his accumulations to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu but Fang Yuan snatched it away. The latter’s headquarters were ravaged by Fang Yuan, their biggest pillar of support, fate Gu, was also destroyed by him. Heavenly Court was the leader of the righteous path, they cared about reputation, but in the fate war, Fang Yuan destroyed their reputation.

Before now, Heavenly Court could not find Fang Yuan so they did not do anything to him. In the future, when he recovered his strength, they would also be unable to deal with him.

Now that Heavenly Court found Fang Yuan, they would definitely try their best to kill him!

Such opportunities seldom knock twice, they could not let this chance slip by.

Fang Yuan knew about his circumstances clearly, thoughts collided in his mind continuously as he tried to find a solution for this problem.

But soon, his expression changed.

The heaven path dao marks on his body started to transform again, causing problems, their disturbance became stronger by several times.

When dealing with the qi wall earlier, even though Fang Yuan caused a huge scene, he was actually cooperating with Qi Sea Ancestor secretly, his true battle strength was not as it appeared.

But just this much, with Fang Yuan secretly using human path methods to counter the interruption of the heaven path dao marks, was already the greatest limit.

Externally, Spectral Soul was attacking Dragon Palace furiously, the walls were cracking, tiles were sent flying all over the place. Internally, the heaven path dao marks were wreaking havoc in his body, preventing Fang Yuan from doing anything.

The situation was dangerous, even surpassing the fate war. After all, Fang Yuan could still use Spring Autumn Cicada then, but now, this greatest trump card was unusable.

Fang Yuan could not rebirth, if he made a mistake now, he would die a pitiful death.

Spectral Soul emanated deep killing intent, it pierced through Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan’s hair stood on ends.

Fang Yuan’s lips curled up, he had already made a decision —

Head to Crazed Demon Cave!

The heaven path dao marks were interfering with Fang Yuan, preventing him from using many killer moves. Even if he could use them, the effect would be very low.

Fang Yuan had to borrow external help to alleviate this crisis.

Any other location would not be very helpful to Fang Yuan. After all, Dragon Palace was the one escaping and moving at the front, if he entered a dangerous place, Dragon Palace would face the brunt of the danger. The pursuer would benefit instead, Spectral Soul would have an easier time.

But Crazed Demon Cave was different. At the lower levels of Crazed Demon Cave, Fang Yuan could use the sovereign immortal body to travel to the next layer quickly, the rest would all be stopped in their tracks.

As for whether Spectral Soul could pass through, Fang Yuan did not know, but it was worth a gamble. Spectral Soul was not in perfect condition after all, he also did not have the sovereign immortal body!

"Even if Spectral Soul can forcefully make his way through, his battle strength would suffer. The lower layers are also extremely huge and mysterious, I can definitely stall for time against Spectral Soul in there."

Fang Yuan made up his mind, he immediately moved Dragon Palace in another direction, towards the north.

As for Wu Shuai, he focused on repairing Dragon Palace.

Spectral Soul saw that Dragon Palace was escaping, he breathed in deeply before rapidly approaching it.

He extended his hand and landed on Dragon Palace. Next, countless immemorial soul beast silhouettes flickered, each time they attacked, a piece of Dragon Palace’s walls shattered.

After an entire round of attacks, several pillars holding up Dragon Palace had cracks emerging.

Wu Shuai had a solemn expression: "Oh no, this killer move is extremely powerful, it can attack the Immortal Gu House both internally and externally. The core Immortal Gu of Dragon Palace are quite damaged!"

Fang Yuan’s main body squinted his eyes, Dragon Palace’s door was shut but his vision was unobstructed, he could see the situation outside.

Fang Yuan said calmly: "Spectral Soul used this soul path killer move earlier, but it is much stronger now. Evidently, he has modified it during this bit of time!"

This was truly terrifying.

Spectral Soul had great strength, even though he was no longer rank nine, he was definitely at Duke Long’s level of battle strength.

Even though he lost most of his attainment levels, it seemed that soul path did not fall by too much.

Even though Spectral Soul had only fought Dragon Palace for a short while, he had already comprehended the weaknesses of Dragon Palace, he could modify his killer moves to show much greater effect.

Furthermore, Spectral Soul had abundant battle experience, far deeper than Fang Yuan, during his era, he was renowned for killing everything in his way in the entire world!

After several more rounds, Dragon Palace could not resist Spectral Soul anymore, Fang Yuan sighed as he sent out another Immortal Gu House.

It was a silver-white ship with a long and thin body, it flew like a flying sword with silver light shining around it, stabbing towards Spectral Soul.

It was Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Spectral Soul moved in a flicker and dodged it easily.

Myriad Year Flying Warship turned around and used a killer move, targeting Spectral Soul.

At once, Dragon Palace tried to escape while Myriad Year Flying Warship helped to defend it. Spectral Soul chased after them with immense demonic might, the winds and clouds were raging around him.

Fang Yuan’s main body was disrupted by the heaven path dao marks, but because Immortal Gu Houses were individual structures, they were not restricted by this problem.

As long as the Immortal Gu House had Fang Yuan’s will and immortal essence, Myriad Year Flying Warship could still continue to fight.

However, Spectral Soul had formidable strength and all sorts of killer moves, not only were they strong and hard to defend against, they mostly had peculiar effects and easily overwhelmed Fang Yuan’s efforts, allowing Spectral Soul to firmly control this situation.

Even with the power of two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses, he was not Spectral Soul’s match.

"Most importantly, the Twelve Zodiac battle formation was completely destroyed during the fate war. Otherwise, with the combination of Twelve Zodiac battle formation and Myriad Year Flying Warship, even Spectral Soul would have some problems against them."

Fang Yuan considered the situation and did not change his plan, he still focused on escaping.

After getting the heaven path research results, Fang Yuan just needed time to gather his advantage. As long as he survives this problem, after he resolved the problem of the heaven path dao marks, it would be Fang Yuan’s turn to shine.

Spectral Soul was going all-out on offense. In his opinion, this was the best opportunity to kill Fang Yuan and reclaim the sovereign immortal body. Not just the sovereign immortal body, he could also get the dream realms that Fang Yuan obtained. Spectral Soul would be able to regain all of his attainment levels as a result.

In this world, what could allow Spectral Soul to rapidly regain his strength? Undoubtedly, it was Fang Yuan! Fang Yuan was simply a moving treasure chest in Spectral Soul’s eyes.

"Spectral Soul, die! I want you to die!!" Qing Chou approached him with wind and lightning surrounding it.

Myriad Year Flying Warship and Dragon Palace fought against Spectral Soul while moving, they could not travel quickly. Thus, Qing Chou caught up to them.

Qing Chou’s eyes were blood red, its face was distorted in a terrifying manner, it only cared about Spectral Soul!

In just this period of time, the rank nine aura of the hatred Gu within it got denser again, it was quite shocking to see.

Qing Chou got stronger again!

It growled, a human-faced lightning ball flew out of its throat.

The lightning ball was extremely fast, green-black in color, it was eerie and icy, moving without a sound.

Spectral Soul waved his hand, a giant whip made of black fog appeared, seeking to send the lightning ball flying.

But the face on the lightning ball snickered as it raised its speed, avoiding the whip as it approached Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul was about to use another killer move when the lightning ball self-detonated.

Rumble!

The might of the explosion was terrifying, Spectral Soul was sent flying far away.

The range of the explosion was wide, even Dragon Palace and Myriad Year Flying Warship were not spared, they both suffered some damage.

Qing Chou endured the aftermath of the explosion as it approached Spectral Soul relentlessly.

"This senseless beast!" After being disrupted for multiple times, Spectral Soul felt deeply enraged.

Fang Yuan used the chance to flee.

Spectral Soul saw Dragon Palace’s movement and became even more angry: "Little scoundrel, don’t think of escaping!"

Dragon Palace’s speed fell instantly.

At the areas where Dragon Palace was damaged, black smoke appeared and lowered its speed severely.

"What killer move is this? When did Spectral Soul use it?" Fang Yuan was shocked, at once, he had an idea of moving into Myriad Year Flying Warship instead.

But regrettably, black smoke also appeared on Myriad Year Flying Warship, it moved slowly too.

The black smoke faded away very quickly but Spectral Soul also regained his momentum, after forcing Qing Chou away, he approached Dragon Palace again.

At once, the three parties engaged in a chaotic battle.

Fang Yuan wanted to shrug off Spectral Soul but Qing Chou was overwhelmed with rage, it did not have any intention to cooperate with him.

Qing Chou only wanted to take revenge on Spectral Soul, it did not care about Fang Yuan, almost all of its moves also implicated Dragon Palace. At times, to protect himself, Fang Yuan had to fight Qing Chou as well.

After some time, Spectral Soul regained the upper hand again.

Even though he was just the soul of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, his battle strength was extremely high, he also fought differently from Duke Long’s dominance, he was more skilled at using ruthless attacks with piercing killing intent, he was vicious and maniacal.

But he had a terrifyingly clear understanding of the situation, he often made use of his opponent’s methods to make them cancel out each other’s moves.

Spectral Soul slowly attacked less and less, but in this chaotic fight, his advantage was rising bit by bit.

After noticing this, even Fang Yuan’s heart was turning cold.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"In terms of battle experience, I cannot compare to Spectral Soul!" During the three way chaotic battle, Fang Yuan sensed the difference between him and his enemy. Even though he had been reborn many times, in terms of total battle experience, Fang Yuan could not compare to a venerable.

"The main problem is that Qing Chou is not being logical, even though it attacks ferociously, it ignores its own condition, Spectral Soul made use of it many times. If this were a conscious Qing Chou, the battle would not be like this."

Fang Yuan felt the situation was unfortunate in his heart. Even though hatred Gu was progressing towards rank nine and Qing Chou was getting stronger, without any wisdom, no matter how strong it was, it was still toyed around by Spectral Soul.

Even after using Dragon Palace and Myriad Year Flying Warship, Fang Yuan still felt helpless. This was something that had never happened before.

Fang Yuan was still focusing on retreating, he fought while escaping.

Even though he was the weaker side now, as long as Spectral Soul could not activate a battlefield killer move to trap him, Fang Yuan was still free to escape.

Dragon Palace was the first to break through the heavenly wind qi wall, heading towards Central Continent. Myriad Year Flying Warship did its best to protect it.

Spectral Soul moved behind like a trail of black smoke, following after them closely.

Behind them were Qing Chou’s colossal body, crashing through the qi wall and leaving immemorial white heaven, reaching Central Continent.

Qi Sea Ancestor, Qin Ding Ling, and the rest had all left Heavenly Court, they were chasing behind.

When they found that Fang Yuan and the rest had entered Central Continent, Heavenly Court’s immortals became anxious.

"This scoundrel Fang Yuan could’ve traveled through the vast immemorial white heaven but he chose to go to Central Continent. Since he is in trouble, he wants to implicate the innocent people as well, he truly deserves a pitiful death!"

Qi Sea Ancestor snorted coldly: "Fang Yuan has been a problem for too long, if we can kill him this time, it would be the fortune of the people in the world."

As he said that, he used a secret method to tell the main body about their movement.

Fang Yuan immediately understood that Heavenly Court’s pursuers were arriving soon. But he had no solution, his speed was greatly dragged down by Spectral Soul.

When Heavenly Court’s group arrived, they found that Spectral Soul was suppressing Fang Yuan and Qing Chou.

Qin Ding Ling frowned as she hesitated, telling Qi Sea Ancestor: "Ancestor, please deal with Fang Yuan, kill him with your full strength."

But how could Qi Sea Ancestor attack the main body, he pondered and said: "In this situation, Fang Yuan is weak while Spectral Soul is strong. They are both demonic path overlords, if we deal with Fang Yuan and get hit by his final trump cards, Spectral Soul will be the eventual winner."

Qin Ding Ling shook her head: "Ancestor, you are not familiar with Fang Yuan, he is too crafty, he definitely has methods left unused. Maybe this situation is only a layer of his concealment, we need to kill him now, we cannot give him any opportunities."

Qi Sea Ancestor: "..."

Heavenly Court had suffered too much at Fang Yuan’s hands, Qin Ding Ling’s wariness and fear towards Fang Yuan surpassed even Spectral Soul!

But thinking about it, when Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was invincible in the world, he did not deal so much damage to Heavenly Court compared to the current Fang Yuan. It was quite easy to understand how Qin Ding Ling and the others felt like this.

Qi Sea Ancestor could only ask the main body secretly, what were they going to do?

If there was no choice, Qi Sea Ancestor would have to expose himself and fight Spectral Soul so that the main body could escape.

Fang Yuan replied: "Don’t worry, let me try something first."

Dragon Palace’s door opened, a Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body flew out.

Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique flew towards Spectral Soul, the latter’s pupils shrank as he retreated immediately.

Bam.

The Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body self-detonated, turning into a large lump of dream realm that floated in the sky, turning into a barrier.

Dragon Palace and Myriad Year Flying Warship used this chance to pull some distance away from them.

Spectral Soul got around the dream realm as he chased again.

But Qing Chou could not think properly, it got trapped in the dream realm.

Roar—!

The aura of hatred Gu burst out of Qing Chou’s body as it broke free from the dream realm, it chased after them again.

"This is?!"

"Qing Chou actually broke away from the dream realm, it was not trapped?"

"It’s hatred Gu! \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e has a vague description about it — hatred has no dreams!"

Fang Yuan was also quite shocked about this.

Qing Chou did not have any dream path methods but it used hatred Gu to break free. Dream path was ahead of the current era, it was unstoppable, but it could not stop Qing Chou’s hatred Gu?

"Hatred has no dreams... or rather, against rank nine hatred Gu, the dream realm was not big enough?" Fang Yuan had a thought.

It was like the killer move dreamy light smoke, if it landed on Spectral Soul, it would only trap him for some time before he got free, Dragon Palace would shatter from the internal impact.

Dreamy light smoke was too weak against Spectral Soul, but if it rose to rank nine level, the situation would be different.

Even so, when Spectral Soul was attacked with dreamy light smoke, he would still dodge it without hesitation.

He was very fast, moving like a specter, in close distance, it was almost the same as teleportation, it was too hard for dreamy light smoke to hit him.

However, the good thing for Fang Yuan was that Spectral Soul could not deal with dream realms currently.

"I obtained the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique method from Shadow Sect, Spectral Soul definitely knows about it. However, he lacks the crucial Immortal Gu, he cannot use relevant killer moves."

After sensing this, Fang Yuan immediately created many Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies and self-detonated them.

Bang bang bang bang.

In the blink of an eye, Dragon Palace and Myriad Year Flying Warship were surrounded by dream realms, there was no gap between them.

Spectral Soul snorted coldly, stopping his attacks.

"This Fang Yuan..." Qin Ding Ling gritted her teeth, Fang Yuan’s method was too shameless, Heavenly Court had no way to deal with it.

"Be careful of Spectral Soul!" Qi Sea Ancestor reminded them.

Fang Yuan suddenly enclosed himself, Heavenly Court’s members were in an awkward spot.

Spectral Soul looked at them coldly, Qi Sea Ancestor stood in front of them steadfastly.

Qing Chou growled angrily, it attacked Spectral Soul again without fear.

Spectral Soul said in displeasure: "Lowly beast! Since you want to die, I will grant you your wish."

His body vanished on the spot, at the next moment, he appeared on Qing Chou’s back. But right when Spectral Soul was about to attack Qing Chou, a qi path killer move shot towards him.

Spectral Soul had no choice but to resist it, Qing Chou used the chance to move away, it spat out a human-faced lightning ball again, escaping danger.

Spectral Soul looked at Qi Sea Ancestor with a cold gaze. Earlier, Qi Sea Ancestor was the one who attacked him.

Qi Sea Ancestor looked at Spectral Soul warily, at the same time, he explained to Qin Ding Ling: "We cannot let Spectral Soul succeed. He seems to be able to absorb the power of the immemorial soul beast, is it possible for Heavenly Court to capture Qing Chou again?"

Qin Ding Ling sighed: "We have already lost the best opportunity. Qing Chou’s strength rose greatly, we need to find another opportunity in order to forcefully refine hatred Gu."

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals did not blame Qi Sea Ancestor for making a move on his own, after all, what he did was very logical. From the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals’ perspective, Fang Yuan was trapped in the dream realm now, Qi Sea Ancestor was helping Qing Chou to attack Spectral Soul for the sake of Heavenly Court.

At the next moment, Spectral Soul attacked the Heavenly Court immortals.

Qing Chou followed closely behind him.

The three sided chaotic battle started again, but this time, Heavenly Court took the role of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was temporarily safe, he only had to take note of the moving dream realms. To form a tight defense, he needed to self-detonate Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies to fix any gaps in his defensive line.

Immortal killer move — Yin-yang Great Killer Hands!

Rumble!

With a loud explosion, two huge hands, one black and one white, appeared out of nowhere.

The two hands were so large they could loom over heaven and earth, they had an intrinsic pattern, at this moment, they grabbed at Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul suddenly shouted shrilly, when he appeared again, he was already right in front of Qi Sea Ancestor. At the center of the yin-yang hands where Spectral Soul was originally at, there was an immemorial soul beast.

Spectral Soul shot out a wave of black smoke that landed on Qi Sea Ancestor.

Immortal killer move — Heavenly Combat Cloak!

Qi Sea Ancestor retreated, heavenly combat cloak melted from the effect of the black smoke, but this strange move was blocked after all.

Even though Qi Sea Ancestor was a newly created clone of Fang Yuan’s, he had incredible strength from originally being Heavenly Court’s qi harvest fruit. With sufficient qi path Immortal Gu, his battle strength was not any lower than before.

Even so, Qi Sea Ancestor was suppressed by Spectral Soul, the situation was getting increasingly passive.

Qin Ding Ling led the Heavenly Court immortals to help Qi Sea Ancestor, she also ordered Spirit Affinity House to send Feng Jin Huang over to the fight.

Feng Jin Huang had dream path Immortal Gu, she could use pure dream reality seeker transformation to break Fang Yuan’s defensive line.

Qin Ding Ling’s target had always been Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan’s main body hid inside Dragon Palace as he watched the battle, using all of his time to refine as many heaven path dao marks as possible.

"Master, we have arrived!" During the chaotic battle, Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan led their group as they entered the battlefield.

Before Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals could react to it, far away, someone flew over as well.

"Let this old man join in the fun as well."

It was Demon Immortal Qi Jue!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2034 - Everyone Wants to Kill Fang Yuan

In this three sided chaotic battle, the appearance of Fairy Zi Wei's group and Demon Immortal Qi Jue made the situation increasingly complex.

"Go and block Heavenly Court." Spectral Soul ordered.

Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan quickly attacked with killer moves, the shining wave of attacks assaulted Qin Ding Ling and the rest with ferocity.

Other than Qi Sea Ancestor, Qin Ding Ling and the rest were all inside their Immortal Gu Houses, they were not afraid of Spectral Soul's reinforcements.

Heavenly Court's immortals were only furious, they were not angry about Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan's betrayal but the fact that he used a vicious method to enslave them.

Heavenly Court believed in Fairy Zi Wei's and Old Man Zheng Yuan's loyalty. They knew that it was because of Spectral Soul that they betrayed Heavenly Court.

Spectral Soul snickered: "How does it feel to fight against your former allies? It will be up to you to save them, if you miss this opportunity, you will likely never have another chance in the future."

Heavenly Court's immortals heard this, their attacks halted for a moment.

Qin Ding Ling had sharp brows, she frowned as she ordered: "Spectral Soul wants to make us unwilling to attack, he is stalling for time. Forget about Zi Wei's and Zheng Yuan's lives, killing them is the same as releasing them from this predicament!"

At the crucial moment, Qin Ding Ling displayed the foresight of a leader, she showed her resolute nature.

Spectral Soul heard this, he frowned lightly.

He started to act more quickly, attacking Qing Chou again.

Fighting against him, Qing Chou soon got suppressed.

"Stop him!" Seeing that Spectral Soul was trying the same thing again to extract Qing Chou's strength, Qin Ding Ling shouted: "Ancestor, please stop him!"

Even without her reminder, Qi Sea Ancestor had already flown towards Spectral Soul.

But at the next moment, a gush of qi currents flew out like a heavenly river, obstructing Qi Sea Ancestor.

Qi Sea Ancestor stopped his movement, he looked at the attacker: "Qi Jue!"

Demon Immortal Qi Jue smiled lightly, blocking his path: "Qi Sea, our previous battle was interrupted by Heavenly Court, that was not satisfying. Let us fight fairly this time."

The hearts of Heavenly Court's immortals sank.

At the crucial moment, Demon Immortal Qi Jue actually came to help Spectral Soul!

What sort of agreement did they make?

Fairy Zi Wei was surprised too, Demon Immortal Qi Jue was definitely an unexpectedly strong reinforcement!

Purple light flickered in her eyes as she realized: “Long ago, Demon Immortal Qi Jue had already started buying all sorts of inheritances in treasure yellow heaven of various paths. He is from the Olden Antiquity Era, he revived after the destruction of fate Gu. Using these inheritances, he can catch up to the current great era!”

“The reason why Qi Jue is helping us is likely because master made a deal with him, he sold a large number of inheritances.”

Fairy Zi Wei made an accurate guess.

Even though Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not expose his identity in treasure yellow heaven, he did not conceal himself either, his intentions were clearly known to everyone.

Since Heavenly Court could notice Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s actions, why wouldn’t Spectral Soul?

Because of historical reasons, Demon Immortal Qi Jue would not cooperate with Heavenly Court. But Spectral Soul was also in the demonic path, he had a vast number of inheritances, he was the most ideal person to transact with Qi Jue.

“Fang Yuan, you cannot escape today.” Spectral Soul smiled coldly, he arrived at Qing Chou’s back again.

At the next moment, he attacked!

Qing Chou growled angrily but its strength was being absorbed by Spectral Soul. As an immemorial soul beast, even with the quasi-rank nine hatred Gu, Qing Chou was completely countered by Spectral Soul.

Qing Chou’s aura fell greatly while Spectral Soul became more energized and lively.

After he finished his absorption, he kicked, Qing Chou fell towards the ground.

Next, he charged towards Fang Yuan at lightning speed.

Immortal killer move — Pure Dream Reality Seeker Transformation!

The dream realms surrounding Dragon Palace had a huge chunk missing, they turned into Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies as they flew into Spectral Soul’s immortal aperture.

Spectral Soul actually had enough Immortal Gu to unleash the killer move, pure dream reality seeker transformation!

He had purposely let Fang Yuan go earlier without using this move, now that he got rid of Qing Chou, he let his reinforcements block Heavenly Court and Qi Sea Ancestor while he finally went after Fang Yuan!

All the immortals were shaken.

The battle had been in Spectral Soul’s grasp since the start.

In history, Spectral Soul was renowned for his killing intent, but that did not mean that he could only kill to solve his problems. He was aloof, crafty, and vicious, but when he was alive, he had no need to use any of these methods, his own strength was sufficient to kill all problems.

But now that Spectral Soul’s strength was not much higher than his enemies, he started to use various methods to complement his battle strength.

At once, a large number of dream realms were reclaimed by Spectral Soul.

Fairy Zi Wei and the rest fought against Heavenly Court while Qi Sea Ancestor battled Demon Immortal Qi Jue, facing a disadvantage.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue had the secluded domain of heaven and earth, ‘Xi’, he resisted Qi Sea Ancestor, who cultivated qi path.

The situation was critical, Fang Yuan could not use the dream realms to stop his enemies anymore.

The door of Dragon Palace suddenly opened, several Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies flew out of his dream realm defensive line, directly heading for Spectral Soul.

Boom boom boom.

The Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies self-detonated, creating dream realms in the air.

Spectral Soul quickly dodged them, he managed to avoid being trapped by the dream realms.

But using this chance, Wu Shuai moved Dragon Palace out of the dream realm circle through one of the gaps, with Myriad Year Flying Warship following behind closely.

The intent of the two Immortal Gu Houses was obvious.

“Where are you trying to go?!” Spectral Soul shouted as he got past the dream realms, approaching them again.

Fang Yuan was his main target, he needed to be killed.

This was a prime opportunity, Spectral Soul was going to follow Fang Yuan no matter where he went.

Spectral Soul stared at Dragon Palace and Myriad Year Flying Warship, his eyes flickering with killing intent and determination!

At the next moment, Dragon Palace and Myriad Year Flying Warship split up, they escaped in two directions.

Spectral Soul was dazed.

What should he do?

When Myriad Year Flying Warship and Dragon Palace were inside the ring of dream realms, they were isolated from the outside, Spectral Soul had no idea which one Fang Yuan was hiding in.

There was only one Spectral Soul, he could not chase after both Immortal Gu Houses.

But Spectral Soul made his decision almost instantly, he shouted: “Demon Immortal Qi Jue, chase after Myriad Year Flying Warship! After we succeed, I will not stint on your reward.”

Demon Immortal Qi Jue chuckled as he used Xi Land to absorb one of Qi Sea Ancestor’s killer moves, he easily moved away and chased after Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Spectral Soul went after Dragon Palace instead.

After receiving his orders, Fairy Zi Wei started to retreat.

“What do we do?” Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals asked Qin Ding Ling.

Qin Ding Ling looked at Fairy Zi Wei and the rest, saying without hesitation: “Kill Fang Yuan first!”

But the problem that Spectral Soul faced earlier was also happening to Heavenly Court, which Immortal Gu House was Fang Yuan in?

“Do we just pick one and gamble on our luck?” Qin Ding Ling frowned, even though she was not willing to do that, Heavenly Court lacked wisdom path Gu Immortals, they could only do this.

“I can help you people.” Fairy Zi Wei suddenly stopped her movement as she said: “I have a way to deduce Fang Yuan’s location.”

Heavenly Court’s immortals were dazed.

“What method? How long will it take?” Qi Sea Ancestor asked.

“With our help, it will only take a moment.” Bing Sai Chuan’s voice resounded, everyone turned around, seeing that Calamity Luck Altar had arrived.

“They finally arrived.” Fairy Zi Wei let out a breath of air.

She was obviously the one who asked the Longevity Heaven members to come. Earlier, Fairy Zi Wei and the rest received orders from Spectral Soul to deceive Longevity Heaven and assault Heavenly Court on their own. But the situation changed too quickly, on the way here, Fairy Zi Wei analyzed the situation and made the plan to use Longevity Heaven’s strength.

After getting Spectral Soul’s permission, Fairy Zi Wei contacted Longevity Heaven immediately.

As Calamity Luck Altar approached, Bing Sai Chuan said: “Our lord said that this world does not need too many chess players.”

The immortals’ hearts shook.

Bing Sai Chuan’s lord was obviously Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

All the signs showed that this venerable had deep aspirations, he still had abundant will and strength left in the world.

In the current situation, Fang Yuan was the most likely person to become venerable. Immortal zombie Giant Sun did not want this to happen, thus, he changed his plan and decided to kill Fang Yuan before he could grow fully!

Qin Ding Ling gritted her teeth, she was stuck at a difficult contemplation.

Cooperate with Spectral Soul and Longevity Heaven?

The former was a demonic path venerable, the latter was a strong foe during the fate war, they were all responsible for the destruction of fate!

Ally with them?

Qin Ding Ling only thought about it for a few breaths of time before she squeezed out a word: “Alright.”

Like what Bing Sai Chuan said earlier, there was no need for too many chess players in the world. Fang Yuan was destined to be their enemy, he was a walking treasure chest, everyone wanted to kill him first, after that, Heavenly Court would deal with Spectral Soul and Giant Sun!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2035 - Qing Clan’s Revenge

Rough winds howled in the desert, while the oasis carried a warm breeze.

Sandstones piled into a mountain as hot steam rose. There was a calm lake beneath the sandstones, green trees were growing as their leaves rustled under the evening wind, creating the scene of a paradise in Western Desert.

Western Desert’s Qing clan’s base was situated at this oasis that was called the ‘Qing oasis’.

Qing clan’s Gu Immortals were all gathered in a hall. On the icy cold floor of the hall, there were several fragments of Gu worms, all of the Qing clan Gu Immortals were fixing their gazes on these fragments.

“Qing Heng’s life tablet Gu shattered?!”

“What is happening?”

“Qing Heng died, he had left to hunt the Southern Border Gu Immortal Ming You. Did he really die at Ming You’s hands?”

Qing Heng was a rank seven expert of Qing clan, even though he was sent by the clan to kill Ming You, the clan was very confident in him. Recently for some reason, news that Qing clan obtained Divine Bean Palace had spread, all the other super forces were probing them. With Qing Heng’s death, Qing clan became suspicious about the truth, was this a test by the Western Desert forces?

“Report—! We have accurate information, Ming You was the one who killed Qing Heng, he has great strength and acts ruthlessly.”

Qing clan flew into a rage.

“This Gu Immortal from another region has gone too far!”

“We need to kill this Ming You, we will grind his bones to dust, we will show the other Western Desert super forces the consequences of offending our Qing clan!”

“Before killing him, we should capture this Ming You and invite the other Western Desert Gu Immortals to watch. Only by pulling out his tendons and ripping his skin in public, to humiliate and torture him to death, can I feel satisfied from this revenge.”

“Kill!”

“Kill him!”

“He is merely a Gu Immortal from another region, he came to Western Desert alone, he actually dared to kill our Gu Immortal, he truly has no fear of heaven and earth.”

“Even though Ming You was able to kill Qing Heng, he only has rank seven cultivation level, if first supreme elder takes action, it would be too excessive, rumors would also spread that our Qing clan is bullying the weak. In my opinion, we should send out Qing Jing and Qing Hua Lan.”

“No, to play safe, we should send Qing Chen as well. With three immortals, they will definitely be able to capture that Ming You alive!”

“Let him experience regret and pain.”

“Hurry! Don’t let that scoundrel escape.”

“Kill Ming You, display the might of Qing clan!”

“Ming You must die, when our clan refines Divine Bean Palace in the future, our Qing clan will stand at the top of Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world!!”

…

These sentences echoed in Qing Chou’s ears, the scenes of the past flashed in Qing Chou’s mind.

Different from its usual fragmented memories, this time, its memory was very clear and complete. At the same time, the hatred in its heart surged in a tsunami, rampaging in Qing Chou’s entire body and mind.

Hatred!

Deep hatred!

Feeling increasingly intense hatred, Qing Chou opened its eyes.

Time flew by quickly, countless years had passed since then.

Qing Chou’s eyes were bloodshot.

It found that it was still lying on the ground, recalling that when fighting Spectral Soul earlier, it was sent flying to the ground, crashing and falling unconscious.

“Roar!”

Qing Chou roared as it stood up within the deep pit.

The rank nine aura of hatred Gu became even denser, the power of hatred surged throughout Qing Chou’s body.

“Ming You, Ming You!”

“Spectral Soul, Spectral Soul!”

Qing Chou roared towards the sky, its eyes were covered in rage, its hair was disheveled, even though Spectral Soul had already gone after Dragon Palace, the power of hatred Gu allowed Qing Chou to locate Spectral Soul easily without a problem.

Rumble!

Qing Chou had a mountain-like tortoise shell, tiger claws and dragon tail, as well as a snake neck and human head, it flew up rapidly as winds surrounded it, charging towards the direction of Spectral Soul. As for Fairy Zi Wei and the rest who were creating a formation in the sky, it ignored them.

Among these Gu Immortals in the sky, there was one elderly Gu Immortal, he had wide sleeves and fluttering white hair, he was Fang Yuan’s clone, Qi Sea Ancestor.

Seeing that Qing Chou was flying away, Qi Sea Ancestor let out a breath of air, no longer worried.

Earlier in Western Desert, even though Fang Yuan used familiar face to transform, he was still chased by Qing Chou.

Qing Chou possessed hatred Gu, because of the influence of karma divine tree, it had an intense connection to Spectral Soul and everyone related to him.

Fang Yuan’s main body could not deceive Qing Chou while Qi Sea Ancestor was Fang Yuan’s clone, he would definitely be sensed by Qing Chou as well.

But now, Spectral Soul and Fang Yuan were enemies, they wanted each other to die, thus, because of their changed relationship, Qing Chou no longer went after him.

“Even though Qing Chou’s threat is gone, Fairy Zi Wei is still a big problem.” Qi Sea Ancestor cast his gaze at Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei wore a purple-gold dress, she had a graceful figure with hair that extended to her waist. She moved mysteriously as she flew in the sky, her fingers fluttering like butterflies in the sky, countless Gu worms were sent out and used together, in the sky, an amazing wisdom path immortal formation was already taking shape, one could see its form already.

Old Man Zheng Yuan assisted at the side.

Qin Ding Ling, Che Wei, and the other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals looked at Fairy Zi Wei, they had complex emotions, there was hatred, anger, pity, and sadness.

There was a round altar that was almost in contact with the wisdom path formation, floating in the sky. It had white jade railings and shining aurora, this was rank eight Immortal Gu House Calamity Luck Altar.

Calamity Luck Altar was controlled by Bing Sai Chuan, he had a sharp gaze as he looked at Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals and Qi Sea Ancestor, not daring to relax his mind.

Calamity Luck Altar protected Fairy Zi Wei and the rest, as well as the wisdom path formation.

Longevity Heaven, who represented Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, had already cooperated with Spectral Soul’s Shadow Sect long ago.

“Fang Yuan has the potential to become a venerable, we cannot let him do as he pleases. If such a person becomes a venerable, it will not benefit any of us.” Bing Sai Chuan transmitted, he tried to convince Qi Sea Ancestor, Qin Ding Ling, and the rest, not knowing that Fang Yuan’s clone was right here.

Qin Ding Ling only listened to him, she did not reply.

The winds howled around her, causing her cape to flutter, she wore a tight golden armor and was tall and grand, she had a valiant demeanor.

She stared at the wisdom path formation at times, looking at the dream realms occasionally.

This dream realm was left behind by Fang Yuan. He had originally tried to use the dream realms to stop his enemies, but Spectral Soul plotted against him instead. Fang Yuan had to escape from this battlefield, this dream realm was left behind, shining and moving on its own continuously.

“Where is Fang Yuan now? I only saw that Dragon Palace and Myriad Year Flying Warship flew out of the dream realm and escaped the battlefield. There is a third possibility, he is still hiding in this dream realm!” Qin Ding Ling thought to herself.

Precisely because of this reason, she stayed behind to guard this dream realm.

Fang Yuan was too crafty, even though staying in the dream realm seemed stupid, there was a chance that Fang Yuan might do this purposely.

Seeing that the wisdom path formation was completing, Qi Sea Ancestor felt increasing pressure.

“I can’t wait anymore!” Thoughts collided in Qi Sea Ancestor’s mind, he thought: “Looking at Fairy Zi Wei’s attitude, with Bai Ning Bing and Ying Wu Xie at the lead, this formation might likely deduce the main body’s location. The main body does not have much foundation in information path, otherwise, if we could break our connection with Bai Ning Bing and Hei Lou Lan, even three of Fairy Zi Wei combined would not be able to do anything.”

“Fairy Zi Wei and the rest have great strength, with Calamity Luck Altar’s defense and Bing Sai Chuan’s wariness towards Heavenly Court, if I attack now, I will not be able to destroy the formation, Heavenly Court would instead get suspicious of me.”

The Qi Sea clone was powerful, but he could not turn this situation around alone and suppress everyone, the key person now was still Qin Ding Ling!

Qi Sea Ancestor listened to Bing Sai Chuan’s words while asking Qin Ding Ling in secret: “Looking at this situation, Shadow Sect and Longevity Heaven think highly of this formation. But can we trust them? Regardless of whether Fairy Zi Wei can deduce a result successfully, the formation is still under her control. If she tells us a location, how do we ensure that it is right? Will Fairy Zi Wei hide anything from us?”

The Qi Sea clone started to sow discord, he could not let Bing Sai Chuan ally with the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals too. Otherwise, the main body would face the pressure of Shadow Sect, Longevity Heaven, and Heavenly Court, it would be too much!

If this was the Heavenly Court from Fang Yuan’s previous life, they would definitely have no inclination to work with other forces.

But fate Gu was destroyed by Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court lost their greatest spiritual banner, they also suffered many setbacks and lost a lot of reputation. One could say that their title of the number one human force was already undeserved, they faced a lot of criticism.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were all elites, they learned from this lesson and started to change. Qin Ding Ling was the leader of Heavenly Court, she started to gather help and put down her pride, earlier, when Qin Ding Ling took the initiative to help Qi Sea Ancestor chase away Demon Immortal Qi Jue, it was the best proof of this.

Thus, the probability that Heavenly Court, Shadow Sect, and Longevity Heaven would work together was not low.

The Qi Sea clone’s words were very effective, Heavenly Court and Fairy Zi Wei could not trust each other. This way, even if Fairy Zi Wei’s deduction succeeded, it would not have any meaning.

Qin Ding Ling was silent for a while before transmitting to Qi Sea Ancestor: “I would like ancestor to go and chase after Dragon Palace and Spectral Soul.”

Qi Sea Ancestor was slightly dazed: “Do you know the location of Fang Yuan already?”

“I don’t.” Qin Ding Ling smiled at Qi Sea Ancestor.

The Qi Sea clone looked at Qin Ding Ling deeply in the eye, he realized that Qin Ding Ling knew what she was doing, she had never trusted Shadow Sect’s Fairy Zi Wei or Longevity Heaven, trusting them was stupid. The reason she stayed behind was to guard the dream realm and also rest and recover.

Heavenly Court lacked a peak rank eight battle strength, after leaving Heavenly Court, they also lost their territorial advantage. They seemed powerful and had great morale but if they were careless, they would suffer huge losses.

Heavenly Court could not afford to lose anymore!

Qin Ding Ling had to be vigilant and careful.

Right now, Spectral Soul was chasing Dragon Palace, Qing Chou was chasing Spectral Soul, while Demon Immortal Qi Jue was chasing Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Qin Ding Ling knew that Demon Immortal Qi Jue, who had Xi Land, was Qi Sea Ancestor’s greatest counter, even if Fang Yuan was inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, Qi Sea Ancestor would not be able to do anything to Demon Immortal Qi Jue even if he went there.

Instead, if Qi Sea Ancestor chased after Spectral Soul, he would be able to influence the situation.

From Heavenly Court’s perspective, Fang Yuan was someone who needed to die, Shadow Sect or Longevity Heaven were enemies as well. But Heavenly Court’s strength was not like before, they were very weak, even though Qi Sea Ancestor was on their side, he was still not their member after all.

Qin Ding Ling sighed deeply: “Fang Yuan is too crafty, even though him splitting up seemed simple, it allowed the pressure on him to decrease greatly, we have no choice but to stay behind and temporarily stop chasing him.”

“Spectral Soul is stronger than Demon Immortal Qi Jue, if he kills Fang Yuan and gets everything, this former Demon Venerable will rise up again!”

“Qi Sea Ancestor, we hope you can think for the sake of everyone in the world, let these two demons fight it out while our righteous path remains victorious in the end.”

Qin Ding Ling was a talented leader after all! Even though she was leading a weaker Heavenly Court, she had never given up, she made plans to try and raise their chances of victory as much as possible.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Go." Fairy Zi Wei called out as her fingers moved rapidly, producing countless shadows. The killer move activated, a thousand Gu worms flew out and turned into a vague purple shadow that filled up the final blank area of the wisdom path formation.

The Gu Immortals watched were all first rate Gu Immortals in the entire five regions, seeing this, they could not help but admit that Fairy Zi Wei was very skilled at setting up formations.

Fairy Zi Wei let out a breath of air, perspiration gathering on her forehead.

Her eyes stared at the formation before her, at this point, it was time to add in the core Immortal Gu.

This situation was quite peculiar, Fairy Zi Wei was setting up the formation in front of many strong foes. There was a chance that these Gu Immortals might attack her during the process, thus, Fairy Zi Wei used a rare method for this arrangement, she first placed the mortal Gu and set up a bare framework first, before filling it up with Immortal Gu at the end.

Fairy Zi Wei temporarily stopped her actions to catch a breather, she looked at Qin Ding Ling and Calamity Luck Altar.

Calamity Luck Altar was shining in brilliant light, the Gu Immortal controlling the Immortal Gu House, Bing Sai Chuan, knew about her worries, he transmitted: "With my protection, you can rest assured, quickly set up the formation."

Fairy Zi Wei did not have Fang Yuan’s formation flag Gu, otherwise, she would not need to set up this formation each time.

She knew that time was running out, after hearing Bing Sai Chuan’s words, she started to put Immortal Gu into the formation.

Each time an Immortal Gu was placed, the formation would shake once and shine in a beautiful purple light, the scene was incredibly beautiful, it was a pity that none of the Gu Immortals had the mood to appreciate it.

Inside Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan stared at the formation, guarding against any potential threats that would attack, he broke the silence as he said: "Hei Lou Lan, you have been with Fang Yuan for a long time, what do you think he would do in this situation?"

Hei Lou Lan was standing right beside Bing Sai Chuan, even though she was a woman, her face had strong contours, she possessed sharp and long brows, bright eyes and a heroic aura.

Hei Lou Lan heard the question, she thought about it and said: "Fang Yuan only has three options, Dragon Palace, Myriad Year Flying Warship, or to stay in the dream realm.

"Hiding in the dream realm is too risky for Fang Yuan. Not only can Spectral Soul take the dream realm away, Heavenly Court also has ways to deal with the dream realm. If I were Fang Yuan, I would not stay here and wait for death."

"Of course..." Hei Lou Lan smiled helplessly: "This is not guaranteed to be the case, thus, Heavenly Court chose to stay by the dream realm. Fairy Zi Wei has also stayed behind to make deductions using the formation, she is also observing the dream realm. She is a wisdom path great expert, she knows that she cannot interfere with the two Immortal Gu Houses, she is most needed here."

"Myriad Year Flying Warship is faster than Dragon Palace, this can deceive the enemy, but I do not think that Fang Yuan would hide inside it. This is because Myriad Year Flying Warship is still slower than Spectral Soul, but its defense is lower than Dragon Palace. If Spectral Soul chooses to chase Myriad Year Flying Warship and attack it, Myriad Year Flying Warship would not last as long as Dragon Palace."

Hei Lou Lan smiled coldly: "During the fate war, Fang Yuan lost his Twelve Zodiac battle formation, if it were still around, he would likely escape in Myriad Year Flying Warship. Thus, I think that Fang Yuan is most likely hiding inside Dragon Palace!"

Hei Lou Lan had an eerie gaze: "Spectral Soul likely thinks the same too, that is why he chased Dragon Palace while asking Demon Immortal Qi Jue to go after Myriad Year Flying Warship, he made precautions for both situations. Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body originated from Spectral Soul, he also has all of Spectral Soul’s dream realms. If Spectral Soul can kill him and reclaim the sovereign immortal body and the dream realms, he will rise up once again!"

"Even though we want to kill Fang Yuan, we cannot let Spectral Soul succeed. Even though Shadow Sect is working with us now, they have ill intentions. After all, Fairy Zi Wei managed to deduce the fact Fang Yuan was in Heavenly Court but they kept it from us, allowing Spectral Soul to attack Heavenly Court alone. Only when they needed our reinforcement did they call for us."

"Thus, in my opinion, we should just watch from the side and exert influence on the situation. If possible, it will be best if we can take down Spectral Soul, Fang Yuan, and Heavenly Court in one move!"

"Hahaha." Bing Sai Chuan laughed loudly, praising: "Good analysis! Quite impressive. Northern Plains’ Hei tribe was too disappointing, but you live up to Giant Sun’s bloodline. I’ll tell you the truth, after I woke up, I received information about you. After observing you for some time, I can say that you are a genius! It was just that your life was quite tough, you were schemed against by your father and suppressed by Fang Yuan, you merely lacked an opportunity to develop, otherwise, you would not be in this state."

Hei Lou Lan heard the praise, her gaze focused on Bing Sai Chuan’s face.

Bing Sai Chuan had a tall body, his face was gentle but there was an ugly scar extending from his right ear to his left cheek. He originally had a cold expression but now, he looked at Hei Lou Lan with admiration and satisfaction.

Hei Lou Lan’s heart jumped, an intense feeling appeared in her heart. Bing Sai Chuan’s appreciation towards her ability was probably the most valuable fortuitous encounter in her life!

After realizing that, Hei Lou Lan did not hesitate anymore, she stood straight and cupped her fists: "I will listen to lord’s orders!"

Bing Sai Chuan laughed loudly, before stopping as he looked at Hei Lou Lan with a solemn and serious gaze: "Good, Hei Lou Lan, are you willing to rebuild Northern Plains’ Hei tribe?"

Northern Plains’ Hei tribe had been taken down long ago, it was now occupied by Heavenly Lord Bai Zu to develop his tribe. Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals even became members of Bai Zu tribe, they were simply the disgrace of the Huang Jin bloodline.

Hei Lou Lan expressed her willingness to do so no matter what.

"But I am currently too weak..." Hei Lou Lan purposely showed a hesitant expression filled with difficulty.

Bing Sai Chuan waved his hand as he tossed her a Gu worm.

Hei Lou Lan quickly received it, she saw that this rank seven Immortal Gu looked like a black and gold beetle, it was very heavy, Hei Lou Lan did not recognize it at once.

Bing Sai Chuan explained: "Hei Lou Lan, you have the Great Strength True Martial Physique, you should cultivate solely strength path, your future will be very bright. You have our Huang Jin bloodline, you are a Northern Plainsman from birth, I am sure you will not disappoint me, we will not stint on your strength path resources from now on. Take this strong Gu first, even though it is rule path, it suits you very well."

"Strong Gu?!" Hei Lou Lan’s body shook.

"Alright, Fairy Zi Wei’s formation is ready, go inside first." Bing Sai Chuan instructed.

Hei Lou Lan left Calamity Luck Altar and went into the formation.

She had a plain expression but her heart was filled with deep emotions and turbulence. Strong Gu was recorded in \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e, it had a close connection to the Great Strength True Martial Physique. Bing Sai Chuan gave this legendary Immortal Gu to Hei Lou Lan, it showed how much he wanted to nurture her.

Hei Lou Lan realized in her heart: "It seems that my life is going to undergo a huge change now!"

\u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e, chapter five, section thirty-one states —

Ren Zu lost freedom Gu, he was anguished and only recovered after a long time.

Ren Zu was troubled, he asked cognition Gu: "Oh cognition Gu, how can I obtain freedom Gu again? After what happened last time, freedom Gu will not approach me anymore."

Cognition Gu answered: "Oh human, why do you desire freedom Gu so much?"

Ren Zu replied irritably: "Don’t you know the reason already? I am searching for freedom in order to break free of the restraints of fate."

Cognition Gu answered once again: "Then I have nothing much to tell you. Haven’t you told fate Gu the answer to this question already?"

Ren Zu was dazed before he recalled.

Before he went insane, he met fate Gu. When he was harmed by fate Gu, he shouted at it that he would use his own strength and wisdom to obtain freedom, he would eventually break free from fate’s control!

Ren Zu’s eyes brightened: "Oh Gu, I remember now, thank you for the reminder. I need to rely on myself to break free of fate. I already have my own strength, what I lack is my own wisdom. I need to let self Gu eat a mouthful of wisdom Gu, just like how it ate a part of strength Gu in the past."

"But where is wisdom Gu?" Ren Zu asked cognition Gu.

Cognition Gu: "I do not know. Wisdom Gu has been to many places, its location is not fixed. You can find wisdom in countless places, so human, you need to find it yourself."

Ren Zu nodded as he set off on his journey again.

He walked and walked and walked, one day, he saw two Gu worms chasing each other along the road.

One Gu worm was white and tiny, it escaped ahead as it begged for mercy: "Stop chasing me, stop chasing me, I do not want to be eaten by you."

The other Gu was clearly larger in size, it had thick armor and said in a deep tone: "I want to eat you, I want to eat you! No matter where you escape to, I will eat you!"

The tiny white Gu was about to be caught by the larger Gu behind, it suddenly saw Ren Zu and hid behind him: "Oh human, I beg of you, quickly save me."

Ren Zu saw that this Gu worm was so pitiful, it was chased by another Gu worm, unable to fend for itself, he felt like he was seeing himself.

At this instance, a new heart grew in his chest — the heart of sympathy.

Ren Zu stretched out both arms as he stopped the larger Gu: "Stop, stop chasing it."

The armored Gu shouted: "Hey human, are you obstructing me? No, you cannot stop me, you are unable to stop me."

"Why is that so?" Ren Zu was curious.

The armored Gu explained: "I am strong Gu, that is weak Gu. Since time immemorial, the rule of nature is that the strong prey on the weak. Thus, strong must eat weak, weaklings are the food of the strong."

Ren Zu sighed as he tried to convince the Gu: "Then why don’t you let it off just this once, look at how pitiful it is."

Strong Gu sneered: "Not even once! In the eyes of the strong, weaklings have no stature, there is no sympathy for the weak. This is because heaven and earth will never pity the weak, it will only marvel at the incredible feats of the strong. Weaklings are born to be subdued, controlled, and devoured by the strong."

Ren Zu saw that his words fell on deaf ears, he could only deny strong Gu forcefully: "I have already saved this Gu, go and eat others."

Strong Gu knew that it could not beat Ren Zu alone, it could only fly away in dissatisfaction: "I will be back."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bai Ning Bing, Ying Wu Xie, and the rest went into the formation one by one, finally, Fairy Zi Wei also went to the center of the formation, activating it.

The deduction was beginning.

Qi Sea Ancestor did not move, he stayed at the original spot.

"If I take action now to destroy the formation, will it help my main body?" Qi Sea Ancestor analyzed, he estimated his chances.

Once the formation was damaged or even destroyed, the Gu Immortals inside would suffer backlash, but Qi Sea Ancestor could not be certain of the exact effect.

Furthermore, if Qi Sea Ancestor struck now, the secret that he was Fang Yuan’s clone would be exposed for sure.

"If only I could convince Qin Ding Ling and the rest to strike together." Qi Sea Ancestor sighed internally.

Even though Qin Ding Ling was not a wisdom path great expert, she was not so easy to deceive. Qi Sea Ancestor did not even dare to say anything odd now, otherwise, Heavenly Court might find out the truth instead.

"Ancestor, time is pressing, you need to consider the big picture!" Qin Ding Ling was secretly sending transmissions to him, trying to convince Qi Sea Ancestor. She wanted him to chase after Dragon Palace and Spectral Soul, but Qi Sea Ancestor started to talk about payment instead.

Qi Sea Ancestor sighed: "Fairy Qin, precisely because of the big picture, I am being shameless in asking you for the three qi Immortal Gu. My methods are all known by the enemies, only with these Immortal Gu can I gain a boost in strength and catch the enemies by surprise. For the sake of the people, for the righteousness of humanity, I hope you will consider the big picture and give those three Immortal Gu to me."

Qin Ding Ling mentally rolled her eyes, this Qi Sea Ancestor was not just shameless, he was incomparably so, using this opportunity to ask for huge compensation. He wanted three rank eight Immortal Gu at once, the cores of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance! He was simply too greedy.

But Qin Ding Ling had many worries now, if she fell out with Qi Sea Ancestor, Heavenly Court would not have any peak rank eight battle strength, they would likely be targeted by Shadow Sect and Longevity Heaven.

Qi Sea clone purposely chose this current situation to exert pressure on Qin Ding Ling.

Qin Ding Ling sighed: "Qi Sea Ancestor, why must you force us now? Back then, in Eastern Sea, who helped you to resist Demon Immortal Qi Jue?"

Qi Sea Ancestor replied: "If we want to talk about favors, I am sure you all owe me more. I have already gotten rid of Heavenly Court’s biggest threat, the qi harvest fruit is gone now. Also, in this battle, I have never slacked off, I took risks alongside all of you."

Qin Ding Ling was silent for a while before she replied solemnly: "I can give heaven qi and earth qi Immortal Gu to you, but human qi Immortal Gu is out of the question. This is the bottom line of Heavenly Court, please understand our circumstances, ancestor."

Qi Sea Ancestor accepted the result.

The truth was, the Qi Sea clone did not think he would get all three qi Immortal

Gu to begin with. They were all rank eight Immortal Gu connected to Primordial Origin true inheritance, they were too valuable, far beyond the value of the supposed payment. Heavenly Court could have used other resources to pay him, but because the situation was really urgent now, the Qi Sea clone fought for the greatest benefit.

Of course, the fact that Qin Ding Ling gave the two qi path rank eight Immortal Gu to Qi Sea Ancestor on the spot caused all of the Gu Immortals to gasp in amazement.

Qi Sea Ancestor obtained two Immortal Gu, he said his goodbyes to the Heavenly Court immortals as he chased after Dragon Palace immediately.

"I finally got him to work." Qin Ding Ling felt very tired, but this outcome was not too bad. She would not give all three qi Immortal Gu to Qi Sea Ancestor, she had to keep at least one to use as bait against him.

Furthermore, Qi Sea Ancestor obtained two qi Immortal Gu, he only needed human qi Immortal Gu to be able to use the killer move triple qi retraction, this temptation was probably even greater now that he had two of them.

Dragon Palace flew rapidly in the wild winds.

In the dream realm earlier, Wu Shuai got sufficient time to put all his effort into repairing Dragon Palace, at least from the outside, it looked restored.

"The damage to the core Immortal Gu cannot be resolved quickly, this is already my limit!" Wu Shuai was very worried.

Behind Dragon Palace, a female rank eight soul path immortal was chasing it relentlessly.

It was Spectral Soul who was inside Lady Cold Ash’s body. He emanated black qi as he surged with killing intent, he locked onto Dragon Palace without any signs of hesitation or giving up.

"You cannot escape, Fang Yuan! Even if you escape to the ends of the world, I will definitely kill you." Spectral Soul had just said that when his pupils expanded.

Wherever Spectral Soul’s gaze landed, smoke that was pitch black appeared, quickly reaching Dragon Palace.

The smoke expanded rapidly, with a soft sound, it turned into a round spiral that had an immense suction force.

Wu Shuai was controlling Dragon Palace, he was caught by surprise as Dragon Palace’s speed fell, it fell towards the black smoke spiral.

"What move is this?!" Wu Shuai gritted his teeth, veins bulged on his forehead as he tried to move Dragon Palace to the sky.

Ever since they fought, Spectral Soul’s soul path methods had been endless, it was hard to guard against them. Especially when Spectral Soul was such an expert with abundant experiences, he could use these soul path killer moves beyond their usual limits.

Dragon Palace turned around with difficulty, attempting to fly away from the black smoke spiral from above.

Spectral Soul sneered, he pointed his finger. Black light quickly gathered on his finger, it shot out, instantly hitting the area around Dragon Palace.

The tiny black light expanded rapidly, turning into an immemorial soul beast.

Seeing that the immemorial soul beast was about to pounce on Dragon Palace, Wu Shuai was shocked, his pupils expanded rapidly.

If Dragon Palace got hit, its movement would be obstructed, it would fall into the black spiral along with the immemorial soul beast. In that case, the precious time that Fang Yuan obtained through this tactic would be completely wasted.

At the crucial moment, Wu Shuai shouted, his eyes shined with mysterious dazzling light.

Dragon Palace reacted to it, golden light erupted, a wave of pink smoke rapidly gathered, easily dragging the immemorial soul beast away, into the depths of Dragon Palace. The powerful immemorial soul beast could not resist it at all!

Spectral Soul was not surprised.

This was the dream path killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke.

Wu Shuai got rid of the immemorial soul beast, Dragon Palace managed to fly far above the spiral.

At this time, Spectral Soul’s body suddenly appeared near Dragon Palace, his eyes shined with cold light: "I have been waiting for this!"

At the same time, ’Spectral Soul’, who was far away, faded into nothingness.

Spectral Soul slammed with his palm, the silhouette of a soul mountain appeared and pressed down on Dragon Palace.

This soul mountain was huge, the top was beyond the clouds, looking from below, Wu Shuai’s entire vision was obstructed.

It covered the entire sky!

But the soul mountain’s appearance was very familiar to Wu Shuai.

"Isn’t this Dang Hun Mountain?" Wu Shuai was shocked and uncertain.

Bam!

With a loud sound, Dang Hun Mountain crashed down on Dragon Palace.

Dragon Palace’s beautiful roof met with a devastating blow. Countless tiles shattered, many Gu worms died at once.

And even worse was that due to the impact, even though Dragon Palace struggled, it was slammed into the black smoke spiral by the giant soul mountain.

The spiral surrounded the entirety of Dragon Palace, an immeasurable suction force started acting on it.

Dragon Palace spun around along with the spiral, losing its sense of direction. Wu Shuai had to leave his throne as he tried to think of a way to break out of this situation, but it was hopeless in the short term.

"Don’t tell me this is Spectral Soul’s truth strength?" Wu Shuai gritted his teeth.

Spectral Soul unleashed several killer moves in succession, Wu Shuai was very tired in trying to deal with them. The great rank eight Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace could not put up a resistance, with Spectral Soul's array of killer moves, he managed to suppress Dragon Palace forcefully.

Wu Shuai stared with furious eyes, he had to try and delay for time, he instilled immortal essence to try and fix the Immortal Gu House, wanting to maintain his defensive position.

"In this situation, the main body's safety is in my hands! But how long can I last?" Wu Shuai was completely unsure at this point.

Fang Yuan's main body was deep inside Dragon Palace.

The heaven path dao marks prevented him from doing anything now. The unlimited qi sea killer move he used earlier against the primordial qi wall was also prepared for a long time, he used human path methods to find a gap in the restriction of the heaven path dao marks, allowing him to make one move.

But with just that action, after breaking the qi wall, the heaven path dao marks reacted and started to obstruct Fang Yuan in another way.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan did not get greedy and quickly stopped using his killer move. Otherwise, the strong interference would cause his killer move to fail, he would suffer intense backlash.

Fang Yuan only found that human path could resist heaven path. Dream path might be effective but his attainment in dream path was not high enough.

Ever since he obtained Heavenly Court's heaven path research results, Fang Yuan had been researching on them.

He was fighting against time!

It was possible that a minute's or even a second's difference would lead to either surviving or dying.

Immortal killer move — Heaven-human Sensation!

Immortal killer move — Human Executing Heaven's Work!

Within the sovereign immortal aperture, Fang Yuan's will mixed with heaven's will, he sensed various heaven path dao marks.

Refine them!

Immortal killer move — Unrestrained Heavenly Mark!

This killer move was meant to deal with heaven path dao marks, Fang Yuan did not care about the cost, he expended rank eight immortal essence rapidly, he quickly refined three heaven path dao marks successfully.

"Wu Shuai, persevere, I have already made a huge breakthrough!" The moment Fang Yuan transmitted to Wu Shuai, a change occurred in the immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan's success infuriated heaven's will.

The heaven path dao marks were like angry beasts, they were originally scattered all over the place, but now they gathered together.

Rumble!

Thunder rumbled as lightning roared, dark clouds formed as wild winds blew.

The heaven path dao marks triggered a huge change, in just a few breaths of time, a tribulation was formed!

At that instant, earth shook as mountains rumbled, lightning flashed and shattered rocks, the earth was crying out in sorrow.

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped: "Don’t tell me that forcefully refining heaven path dao marks will anger the Heavenly Dao and cause a tribulation to occur? Or maybe the killer move I used has a problem?"

Lightning clouds continued to form and spread out. Soon, they spread over a hundred li, several thousand li, tens of thousands of li, and over a hundred thousand li!

Millions of lightning bolts flickered continuously, this was like a huge forest made of lightning bolts!

Myriad tribulation — Myriad Destruction Lightning Forest!

It was not an earthly calamity, a heavenly tribulation, or a grand tribulation, it was actually a myriad tribulation.

Only a rank eight Gu Immortal could face such a tribulation.

It was a myriad tribulation, they put fear into most rank eight Gu Immortals!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan immediately frowned, as if a huge rock was weighing on his mind, his expression turned grim.

He did not think that a myriad tribulation would occur.

Rank eight Gu Immortals stood at the peak of the Gu Immortal world, but for each one of them, every myriad tribulation was a troublesome hurdle.

In the current Gu Immortal world, most rank eight Gu Immortals have not gone through one myriad tribulation. For example, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang were like this, even Prince Feng Xian was the same.

Back then, why did Old Ancestor Xue Hu try all means possible to refine fortune rivalling heaven Gu? It was to deal with his first ever myriad tribulation in this life! It was a pity that he created a huge commotion and ended up with a huge loss, not only did Old Ancestor Xue Hu fail to refine fortune rivalling heaven Gu, he even lost the whole of Snowy Mountain blessed land.

Western Desert’s Thousand Transformations Ancestor had gone through one myriad tribulation. He survived it by a hairsbreadth, he was forced to recuperate for a long time. During the period, his beloved Fairy Cui Bo was killed by Fang Yuan, yet he could only send Dancer Hong Yun to investigate it.

Beast Calamity Immortal died after suffering heavy injuries from his first myriad tribulation, leaving behind Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Bo Qing was a rank eight Gu Immortal who had passed two myriad tribulations, Duke Long was too. Throughout history, both of them were top tier experts merely below venerable level.

Even though Fang Yuan possessed over a million dao marks after becoming a rank eight Gu Immortal, the truth was that he used the sovereign immortal aperture’s specialty to annex grotto-heavens, he skipped all his myriad tribulations.

Thus, Fang Yuan had not gone through a single myriad tribulation.

In his case, myriad tribulations were still huge problems. And the biggest issue now was that this current situation was really inappropriate to undergo tribulation. Fang Yuan could not estimate how long Wu Shuai could last, after all, Spectral Soul was a terrifying foe that they could not assess!

"I need to refine these heaven path dao marks as soon as possible, only after that can I face Spectral Soul!"

"But to refine heaven path dao marks, I need to undergo myriad tribulation?"

Fang Yuan felt like there was a tsunami now, he went up the mountain to avoid the flood but found out that this was actually a volcano! And now, this volcano was about to erupt.

Externally was Spectral Soul, internally was the myriad tribulation, at this moment, Fang Yuan fell into the greatest predicament of his life so far.

"No, I still have a chance!" Even in this situation, Fang Yuan remained calm, he was not flustered.

At the same time, at another area.

Myriad Year Flying Warship and Demon Immortal Qi Jue were escaping and chasing respectively.

Suddenly, ’Fang Yuan’ flew out of Myriad Year Flying Warship, using his killer move with ferocity as he forced back Demon Immortal Qi Jue temporarily.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue immediately used his investigative method, after confirming this, he transmitted to Spectral Soul: "Fang Yuan is here with me, I can’t deal with him alone. Come quickly! Otherwise, he might escape."

Spectral Soul heard the news and got stunned for a moment.

"Is Fang Yuan really not in Dragon Palace?" Spectral Soul thought rapidly, his attacks also slowed down as a result.

Right now, even though Dragon Palace was trapped, it was still a rank eight Immortal Gu House, it could last for a while.

Fang Yuan was rushing against time, Spectral Soul was the same. If he wasted time with Dragon Palace, even if he destroyed it, Fang Yuan would escape, then this entire pursuit would fail because he could not meet his goal.

Victory in battle was never important, only the benefits behind it mattered. Combat was just one of the ways to gain benefits, the glory of victory was completely irrelevant to Spectral Soul.

"Fang Yuan has familiar face, he can create a will and give it immortal essence and Immortal Gu to create a false impression of being the main body." Spectral Soul knew about this information, thus he was quite troubled now.

Even though he was strong, far beyond other Gu Immortals, he could be called the number one in the world, but Fang Yuan was crafty and hard to catch, this situation was quite vexing.

Spectral Soul knew he had to be vigilant, otherwise, he would follow in Heavenly Court’s footsteps. This Fang Yuan was just too good at escaping!

The sovereign immortal aperture was facing countless lightning bolts, ever since the myriad tribulation formed, it had been attacking non-stop.

Mini Southern Border suffered severe damage!

The Heavenly Dao sought to balance deficit and surplus, which area in the sovereign immortal aperture was the most developed? It was undoubtedly Mini Southern Border. Thus, the Heavenly Dao created this myriad tribulation that targeted Mini Southern Border.

"Myriad tribulation — Myriad Destruction Lightning Forest!" Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, doing his best to make arrangements. He ignored Spectral Soul who was outside now, he let Wu Shuai try to stall for time.

Rumble...

Cloud Bamboo Mountain was completely broken apart into countless pieces by the lightning bolts.

There were eight desolate beast cloud foxes living on the mountain, and eleven desolate plant spear tip bamboos, they were completely wiped from existence by the lightning bolts. Cloud qi roots, white hair ginseng and a vast number of ordinary spear tip bamboos were all destroyed too.

The seven colored cloud soil inside the mountain were also affected, they were scattered all over the place, after the damage from the lightning, their value fell drastically.

Cloud Bamboo Mountain was originally taken from Southern Border’s Chi clan by Fang Yuan, it had the weakest defensive formation, thus at this moment, it was completely decimated beyond recognition.

Soon, the other resource points started to face problems too.

"I need to solve this internal threat as soon as possible!" Fang Yuan thought to himself, but the power of the myriad destruction lightning forest was terrifying, he could not do anything about it, each of his actions were still restricted by the heaven path dao marks.

Thankfully, there was a bunch of Gu Immortals in the sovereign immortal aperture.

Among them, Xue Er, Shi Shi Cheng, and Mo Tan Sang were nurtured by Fang Yuan to become the new leaders of their variant human tribes. Their cultivation level was too weak, asking them to help out was simply sending them to death’s doors.

"I will help!" At the moment of crisis, an elderly Gu Immortal stepped up, emanating rank eight aura.

Since when did Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture gain such a powerful expert?

This elderly man was none other than the sole rank eight in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, the current generation Combat Beast King.

Ever since Fang Yuan’s plan succeeded and he annexed Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, all of the Gu Immortals inside were turned into his subordinates. After that, Fang Yuan gave them the true method of Gu cultivation.

During the fate war, most of the rank seven Gu Immortals were sent out to fight, until now, Fang Yuan did not have any time to recall them, they were still wandering around in the five regions.

Combat Beast King was a different case, because he had been cultivating inside Star Collection City, his strength rose greatly.

This was Fang Yuan’s backup plan during the fate war to guard against people trying to invade his immortal aperture.

During the fate war, this situation did not occur, and now that the sovereign immortal aperture had a myriad tribulation, with Fang Yuan unable to make a move, he could only send out the Combat Beast King.

Winds blew, starlight shot out.

The rank eight star sea snail corpse was taken out by Fang Yuan, handed to Combat Beast King. The Combat Beast King did not hesitate, he immediately used his killer move and turned into a giant covered in starlight armor.

The giant roared as his body flew up towards the sky of lightning clouds.

Crack!

When the giant reached half the distance, several lightning bolts combined into one, the pillar-like bolt shot down on the star armored giant.

If this were in the past, Combat Beast King would definitely die from getting hit by this. But after this period of cultivation, he had already learned how to use immortal killer moves.

Thus, the defensive killer move was used by Combat Beast King before he moved, it managed to resist the lightning bolts.

But the giant’s advancement was also halted at this moment.

The giant landed back on the ground, its majestic body shivering as sparks remained on its body, Combat Beast King’s limbs were going numb, his movements were greatly affected.

"Myriad tribulations are truly terrifying!" Combat Beast King was tongue-tied, he spoke with deep shock.

Fang Yuan frowned tightly.

Earlier, the lightning bolts combined to target Combat Beast King, that was the work of heaven’s will. The heaven path dao marks were too densely gathered now, heaven’s will was naturally being produced.

With the manipulation of heaven’s will, the terrifying myriad tribulation became even more adaptive, it led to despair.

"I have the killer move heaven’s will dissipation, I can even get rid of heaven’s will in dream realms. Unfortunately, I cannot use it now!" Fang Yuan sighed to himself, he needed to refine the heaven path dao marks, he had to mingle with heaven’s will and use both heaven-human sensation and human executing heaven’s work to capture the location of the heaven path dao marks. After that, he would use unrestrained heavenly mark to refine the relevant heaven path dao marks.

Thus, heaven’s will was necessary.

Once Fang Yuan gets rid of the heaven’s will, he would also not be able to refine these heaven path dao marks.

"But the heaven path dao marks gathered and created a myriad tribulation, this greatly affected my refinement of the heaven path dao marks, my efficiency is less than one percent of before!"

Originally, the heaven path dao marks were scattered all over the sovereign immortal aperture, they were like divided troops, Fang Yuan could refine them group by group, the refinement was very effective. But now that the heaven path dao marks gathered into one tight group, Fang Yuan would have huge problems in trying to target them, his refinement also started to have no progress.

With this speed of refining the heaven path dao marks, how long would it take?

Fang Yuan’s circumstances were really precarious!

"Oh no, I can’t hold on anymore!" When it rains, it pours, at this moment, Wu Shuai shouted loudly as he requested for Fang Yuan’s help.

This dragonman clone was also in a bind now.

Veins were bulging on his forehead, he was sweating profusely, Dragon Palace was trapped in the black smoke spiral, it was taking huge damage at all times. With cracking tiles and pillars, the whole of Dragon Palace was visibly shrinking.

Wu Shuai could only do his best to repair it, but his speed could not match Spectral Soul’s destruction.

Seeing that a crucial area was about to be destroyed, Wu Shuai had no choice but to ask for help.

Fang Yuan knew that his clone would not ask unless he was desperate. He sighed to himself as he switched his attention to the outside world.

After inspecting the situation, Fang Yuan immediately took action to help Wu Shuai with the repair of the Gu House.

They managed to alleviate the situation, but it was not enough!

Suddenly, Wu Shuai gasped: "Why are Spectral Soul’s attacks getting slower?"

Fang Yuan realized at once, he said: "I created a fake main body over in Myriad Year Flying Warship, it seems to have worked. Spectral Soul is hesitating now, he has always been worried that I would escape. He has no idea that Dragon Palace is about to collapse, he thinks the rank eight Immortal Gu House can still last for some time. If my ’main body’ in Myriad Year Flying Warship escapes during this period, even if he manages to take down Dragon Palace and kill you, his plan will fail regardless."

Wu Shuai’s eyes shined: "It will be great if we can deceive him now!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"It’ll be difficult." Fang Yuan sighed deeply.

Almost the same time as he said that, Spectral Soul, who was outside, attacked even quicker than before!

Spectral Soul shouted coldly: "Fang Yuan, you are truly a disappointment. How long are you going to hide? I’ll tell you the truth, Fairy Zi Wei has already deduced your location earlier."

"Entrusting your hope to deceit, this is the way of the weak. I gave you sovereign immortal fetus Gu, it was truly a waste!"

"Come out and fight me, in this case, even if you die, people of the world will not say that you were cowardly, being afraid of the strong while bullying the weak."

"Damn it!" Wu Shuai’s hope was dashed, he could not help but grit his teeth.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, frowning and not answering. From his perspective, what was the point of reputation? What he cared about was whether Fairy Zi Wei really succeeded in her deduction, was Spectral Soul trying to deceive him now, was it all an act just to bait out Fang Yuan?

The Qi Sea clone had already left, so Fang Yuan did not know about the situation over there.

"Even now, the wisdom path formation is still working, we cannot forget another possibility, that is Fairy Zi Wei trying to delay Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven’s action by telling Spectral Soul about the result secretly in advance. Sigh, I can’t care about it now." Fang Yuan sighed as he quickly tossed away this question.

It was not that he found out the truth, but Dragon Palace’s current condition was too dangerous, he had no choice but to take action.

Fang Yuan opened the door of his immortal aperture slightly, letting out the immemorial year beasts that he had prepared!

Several immemorial year beasts roared as they charged out of Dragon Palace, attempting to destroy the black smoke spiral, while a few of them charged towards Spectral Soul.

"Your efforts are futile." Spectral Soul made his move, black smoke spread out from his body and whipped up a dark storm, shrouding the surrounding over an immense range.

He pointed repeatedly with his finger, each attack only carried a trace of smoke but it was incredibly fast, the power was overwhelming. When the black smoke hit the immemorial year beasts, it immediately expanded into countless dense smoke chains that binded the immemorial year beasts.

The immemorial year beasts struggled but the black smoke chains were boosted by the black smoke spiral, they became thicker and tighter. The immemorial year beasts could struggle at first but soon they became unable to move, they were swept away by the spiral without resistance.

"These are just petty tricks, you are truly a disappointment, Fang Yuan." Spectral Soul flew up into the sky as he looked down at the black smoke spiral.

The great rank eight Immortal Gu House Dragon Palace was like a toy, once its details were exposed, it was completely toyed around with like a harmless object.

Wu Shuai gritted his teeth, activating the killer move dreamy light smoke.

Spectral Soul chuckled, spitting out several soul balls. The tadpole-like soul balls had tails, they moved rapidly in the air, quickly entering the immemorial year beasts.

Thin black qi appeared around the immemorial year beasts’ bodies, the black smoke chains fused into the black qi and caused it to become much thicker.

The three immemorial year beasts regained freedom, they growled angrily as they attacked Dragon Palace!

One of the immemorial year beasts directly jumped into the range of dreamy light smoke.

Their control was actually taken over by Spectral Soul.

Dreamy light smoke swept away one immemorial year beast, Wu Shuai felt powerless. With Spectral Soul controlling the situation now, he had ample time and initiative, dreamy light smoke could no longer pose a threat, it was just a small problem.

The soul path killer moves that Spectral Soul was using now were all unheard of by Fang Yuan and Wu Shuai, they had never seen any moves like these.

The foundation of a rank nine venerable was truly unfathomable!

High in the sky, the wisdom path formation continued to operate.

Fairy Zi Wei stayed at the central control area, she showed an appearance of working her hardest to make deductions.

Longevity Heaven’s and Heavenly Court’s immortals surrounded the wisdom path formation.

Qin Ding Ling silently looked at the wisdom path formation, just earlier, Heavenly Court transmitted news that the few Gu Immortals staying back successfully suppressed Di Zang Sheng.

Di Zang Sheng was hit by Primordial Origin’s qi path killer move, its condition was slipping rapidly. When Fang Yuan escaped, he abandoned it to its own demise. Now, it was not strange that Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals suppressed it.

This point alone showed how anxious Fang Yuan was, he even gave up something like Di Zang Sheng, it showed that he was at his weakest point.

And this fact amplified Qin Ding Ling’s killing intent towards Fang Yuan.

This was a rare opportunity that could not be lost!

After suppressing the Evil Dragon, the remaining Gu Immortals started to repair Heavenly Court grotto-heaven. They quickly fixed the holes, Heavenly Court’s crisis was finally alleviated.

This also allowed Qin Ding Ling to let out a sigh of relief, but she still had other worries.

"Qi Sea Ancestor has just left recently, with Dragon Palace’s speed and direction, it should have already reached Intestinal Gorge, right?" Qin Ding Ling thought to herself.

Fang Yuan escaped in Dragon Palace, moving out of immemorial white heaven and into Central Continent. This enraged Heavenly Court and also caused them to be worried that the aftermath of the battle might cause severe losses.

Intestinal Gorge was the northern entrance of Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range, it was created during the Olden Antiquity Era when a beastman expert died and fused with the surrounding mountains. It was under the control of one of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, Black Heaven Temple.

Qin Ding Ling had already transmitted the details to Black Heaven Temple, asking them to send out their Immortal Gu House and move along Intestinal Gorge. If there was a chance they would strike, if the enemies were too strong, they would abandon Intestinal Gorge and preserve their strength as the main goal.

After receiving Heavenly Court’s orders, Black Heaven Temple went into an alert state, they mobilized all of their strength and started to move out.

But after waiting for a long time, they did not see Dragon Palace nor Spectral Soul.

Qin Ding Ling did not know that Spectral Soul had already intercepted Dragon Palace along the way, they were still above the sky of Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range.

Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range was huge, extending over hundreds of thousands of li, compared to other mountain ranges, it was relatively gentle, the resources here were not abundant, most of the mountains were barren. Thus, even though it was in Black Heaven Temple’s territory, they did not care much about it.

This place mostly produced wind path resources, in the past, a rank seven Gu Immortal of Wind Cloud Manor came here to cultivate in seclusion, he managed to breakthrough to rank eight, it was Old Man Bei Feng. It was a pity that his life was filled with hardship, he first got captured by Fang Yuan during the fate war and became enslaved by Dragon Palace. In the intense battle earlier, Old Man Bei Feng died already.

He was not the only one, all of the Four Dragon Generals died in this battle. Even the strongest of the enslaved, Di Zang Sheng, was now suppressed by Heavenly Court.

On a certain mountain of Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range.

Several youngsters were herding sheep, they got into an argument.

A youngster was being bullied, he was the weakest and thinnest person here, he took several steps back amidst the argument.

"Wang Xiao Er, this mountain is occupied by us, there is no place for you here."

"Scram now, get lost from our sight."

Several youngsters wore thick leather jackets, they had muscular bodies and vicious expressions.

Wang Xiao Er’s clothes were patched up with many tattered areas, he looked like a beggar.

He resisted weakly: "But my sheep need to eat, if I do not feed them sufficiently, uncle and aunt will beat me up when I return."

The youngsters laughed loudly, the strongest one struck and pushed Wang Xiao Er to the ground.

"Go to the other mountain to herd your sheep, there is still some grass there. Scram now! Otherwise, I will break your leg!" The muscular young man threatened viciously.

Wang Xiao Er struggled to get up, he did not resist, he only moved his small group of sheep and left the mountain.

He walked with his thin legs, crossing rivers and steep paths. There was no road on the mountain, Wang Xiao Er often fell down and suffered bruises from the hard rocks on the ground, only the sheep behind him were traveling without any problems.

Wang Xiao Er finally found a small patch of grass, the sheep got tired and thirsty after running around, even without his command, they went forward and competed to eat the food.

Wang Xiao Er was so tired he laid down on the rock and watched the sheep fighting to eat, he sighed to himself: "Recently, the sorrowful winds in the mountains are getting more violent, there is less and less grass available. That is why they chased my sheep away from that grassland."

The patch of grass was tiny, it was completely gobbled up by the sheep after some time. The stronger sheep ate the most food while the remaining sheep growled in hunger.

Wang Xiao Er shook his head, this mountain had little grass, it was scattered all over the place. If he wanted to feed all the sheep, he would need to head to another mountain. It would not only waste time but energy as well.

"Oh sheep, oh sheep, at least you guys have food. In order to feed you all, I will definitely have to return late. I will definitely be beaten up by uncle and aunt, I will have to eat leftover rotten food."

Even though Central Continent was the most developed among the five regions, most of the mortals still lived difficult lives, it was common to starve.

Right at this time, there were suddenly rumbling noises heard.

Wang Xiao Er raised his head, this was a strange situation, why was there thunder rumbling in this bright sky?

After that, he slowly opened his mouth and saw a shooting star falling from the sky.

The shooting star became larger and larger in his vision, winds became stronger, the rumbling sounds were deafening, even the temperature of the air rose.

Wang Xiao Er was completely stunned, he froze on the spot, the surrounding sheep sensed the danger, they started crying out and running around.

Not just the sheep, the wild beasts on the mountains were also scrambling, the originally quiet mountain suddenly became very lively.

As the shooting star got closer, Wang Xiao Er finally got a good glimpse of it.

This shooting star was actually a mountain-sized beast!

The wild beast crashed down with a loud sound, coincidentally, it was the mountain that Wang Xiao Er lived on!

The mountains collapsed as rocks flew, earth shook as the mountain trembled, dust clouds rose up rapidly.

The village on the mountain was instantly destroyed, there were anguished cries of people mixed with the growls of beasts, Wang Xiao Er could hear these sounds spreading through the air currents produced.

Rumble rumble rumble...

As Wang Xiao Er stared with a frightened gaze, terrifying cracks were spreading on the ground, soon, the surroundings of the mountain peak also cracked, they fell apart piece by piece.

The youngsters who chased Wang Xiao Er away earlier all met with a disaster!

"Am I going to die?" Wang Xiao Er sat on the ground helplessly.

He seemed to have lost all of his strength, he could only watch as the dust clouds devoured him like a hungry beast that ate everything in its path.

Inside the dust clouds were countless rock shards carried by the wind.

One of them hit Wang Xiao Er’s forehead.

Before he fainted, his final thought was that of confusion, why did a giant beast fall from the sky?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Above the clouds, in the sky.

Dragon Palace barely managed to create a golden light to shield itself, but it was trapped inside the black smoke spiral, resisting against the ferocious attacks from the outside.

Only three immemorial year beasts that Spectral Soul took control of were left.

The rest were all defeated by Wu Shuai using Dragon Palace. As for their falling corpses and what mountains they destroyed, how many people they killed, nobody in this battle cared, they could not afford to bother with the devastating disaster that a mortal boy like Wang Xiao Er experienced.

The remaining three immemorial year beasts regained their senses after the black smoke dissipated, they fought against Spectral Soul once again.

But Wu Shuai had a heavy mood.

These immemorial year beasts were collected by Fang Yuan in an attempt to restore his Twelve Zodiac battle formation, at this crucial moment, he had to use them for battle.

The result was that due to Spectral Soul’s methods, they became used by him instead.

After the fight earlier, the remaining three immemorial year beasts were all injured, they could not be used to break out of this situation. Spectral Soul easily managed to resolve Fang Yuan’s method, he dealt with the situation without breaking a sweat.

Not only could Spectral Soul control soul beasts, ordinary enslavement path methods were also useless against him, he could use it against the enemy instead!

Wu Shuai was deeply worried: "At this rate, how long can we last?"

Fang Yuan frowned tightly, his opponent was Spectral Soul now, he was trying hard to maintain his defense, but inside sovereign immortal aperture, the myriad tribulation was rampaging and causing destruction. After this short while, Mini Southern Border lost many resource points, his losses were rapidly increasing.

The bigger problem was that even if Fang Yuan gave up a portion of his immortal aperture, he could not break free from the myriad tribulation. This was because the heaven path dao marks that created the tribulation were very special, they could move around. He had to endure the myriad tribulation forcefully to get past this biggest hurdle.

Spectral Soul’s eyes shined with cold light, he did not chase after his enemies and attack Dragon Palace again, instead, he looked away.

In his vision, a black dot appeared.

Soon, this dot expanded as a legendary immemorial beast showed its appearance, it had a tortoise shell, four tiger paws, dragon tail, snake neck, and a human head. Its hair was disheveled and it had a twisted expression filled with insanity.

It was Qing Chou who had caught up!

Spectral Soul did not avoid Qing Chou’s pursuit, instead, he started to smile coldly: "Since you are here to court death, that will be the best outcome."

However, when Qing Chou reached Spectral Soul, the corner of its tortoise shell split open as a pair of bat wings formed instantly! This was very similar to the wings of the green claw ghost winged lion.

Immortal killer move — Qing Mouth!

Qing Chou opened its mouth, as it had a human face, its mouth was not big, but right now, its mouth opened to form a huge green-black hole.

The hole expanded rapidly, it shot out and devoured Spectral Soul in one mouthful.

The hole rapidly shrunk as it entered Qing Chou’s mouth. Qing Chou swallowed as it gulped, a ball could be seen flowing down its snake neck, into its stomach.

"Good chance!" At this moment, brilliance flashed in Wu Shuai’s eyes.

"This move was left behind to deal with you, scumbag!" Qing Chou roared loudly in joy after devouring Spectral Soul, memories surfaced in its mind again...

"What, all three Gu Immortals we sent were killed by Ming You?"

"Impossible!"

"But that is the truth. Ming You first pretended to be weak and got injured on purpose, causing our three immortals to split up to look for him. He ambushed them at a corner and found the opportunity to launch a shameless sneak attack on them. Out of carelessness, all three immortals met with their demise."

Qing clan’s hall turned silent.

They wanted to restore their reputation but they ended up suffering even greater losses. A rank seven Gu Immortal was not easy to nurture, especially when they were elite rank seven Gu Immortals of Qing clan.

The losses were really huge for Qing clan, their foundation was definitely shook.

"Ming You deserves death! We were too careless... this lesson is very important, we need to remember it and pass it down to the future generations. I am going to deal with him personally." Qing clan first supreme elder said.

The immortals were silent, nobody expressed their objection.

Sending a rank eight Gu Immortal against the rank seven Ming You was really not something to be proud of. But Qing clan could not afford to lose anymore, all of the super forces in Western Desert were watching them like a joke!

However, when Qing clan’s first supreme elder was about to set off, he received a challenge letter.

This letter came from another Western Desert super force which had deep enmity with Qing clan, they requested a battle with Qing clan first supreme elder, wanting to use the result of this battle to decide their territorial boundary.

"Damn it, at this juncture!" Qing clan’s Gu Immortals shouted immediately.

"They are doing this on purpose. But the territorial boundary determines the ownership of a resource point, the benefits involved are too much. What do you think?" Qing clan first supreme elder hesitated at this moment.

"I will go and end Ming You’s life." Qing clan’s second supreme elder stood up.

"You?" The first supreme elder hesitated.

Second supreme elder smiled: "I only have rank seven cultivation level but Ming You is heavily injured, he needs to recuperate. We have already learned of his details, even though his methods are innovative and peculiar, they are mostly soul related. My immemorial desolate beast green claw ghost winged lion is his nemesis. Not just that, I created an immortal move called Qing mouth, I gained inspiration from the green claw ghost winged lion and created it. Once used, it can devour souls. Don’t worry everyone, I can definitely take this Southern Border Gu Immortal’s life."

"Alright, go ahead. Be careful on this trip." Eventually, first supreme elder nodded and agreed.

"With second supreme elder taking action, we will definitely succeed!"

"Ming You is as good as dead, he is not a threat, our problem now is still this challenge letter."

"Second supreme elder, you must avenge Qing Hua Lan and the rest!"

...

"I finally took revenge for all of you!" As his memories faded away, Qing Chou could not help become choked with tears, hot tears started to flow out of its red eyes.

Revenge was finally taken, it felt relieved and free.

"Such a familiar sight..." Spectral Soul spoke in a casual tone from within Qing Chou’s stomach.

Qing Chou’s body instantly froze.

Next, it felt bitterness.

Deep bitterness.

Intense bitterness!

An indescribable and unendurable bitterness!

Bitter, it was too bitter.

"Ugh..." Qing Chou’s expression turned pale, it gagged as it almost wanted to vomit.

It quickly gritted its teeth, enduring desperately.

The taste of bitterness surged like a huge tsunami, it crashed towards the limits of its endurance.

Qing Chou growled in pain, its entire body was shivering from the bitterness, it could no longer fly as it fell towards the ground.

While descending, it started to feel hungry!

It was as if there was an empty space in its stomach.

No, it was not just hunger, it was a sort of loss. It was as if its entire body was experiencing a loss.

"Now, you should know how Qing clan’s second supreme elder died in my hands? Indeed, I purposely got hit by Qing mouth killer move. Do you know why I am so confident? Hehe." Spectral Soul chuckled from inside Qing Chou’s stomach.

Long ago, when Spectral Soul was still young, before he went up against Western Desert’s Qing clan...

Ming You who was extremely successful in life met with a wild green claw ghost winged lion and suffered a terrible defeat.

"Impossible! The soul path I created actually failed to beat a beast. Even though it is an immemorial desolate beast, my soul path... how can my soul path be so pathetic and weak?!"

Ming You who was tired after a long fight fell to the ground, he stared at the green claw ghost winged lion with a crazed expression of disbelief and indignance.

The green claw ghost winged lion stood on four legs, it looked at Ming You who was on the sandy ground, its entire body was casting the shadow of death down on him.

Next, the green claw ghost winged lion lowered its head as it opened its bloodthirsty mouth.

Plop.

With a soft sound, the green claw ghost winged lion bit off Ming You’s leg.

Ah——!

Ming You cried out in pain, after losing his entire right leg, blood poured out of the wound.

The intense pain caused him to curl his body, twisting around on the ground.

Soon, the surroundings were dyed red from blood.

After biting off his right leg, the green claw ghost winged lion swallowed it and felt annoyed by the moving Ming You, it stretched out its right claw and pressed him firmly on the ground.

No matter how Ming You struggled, he could not resist the strength of this beast.

The green claw ghost winged lion lowered its head and bit off Ming You’s left arm this time, swallowing it.

Ming You cried out in pain again, his eyes turned white as he almost fainted from pain.

The pain was even more severe this time, earlier when his right leg was bitten off by the green claw ghost winged lion, it was a quick action, but this time, his left arm was torn off forcefully. There was still a small chunk of flesh left on his shoulder, the white arm bone could be seen with the naked eye.

Ming You resisted, he used a soul path killer move with his full strength, but all his attack only impacted the green claw ghost winged lion slightly, it did not move back at all.

Because of the attack, the green claw ghost winged lion lost its patience, it opened its mouth for the third time and ate Ming You entirely.

It started to move its teeth and chew.

Ming You’s body was pierced and minced, his bones were all shattered. His brain was not spared either, blood matter and brain matter mixed together, along with his minced flesh, they were all swallowed by the green claw ghost winged lion.

Only Ming You’s soul was left.

However, the green claw ghost winged lion could not digest human bodies, it only ate souls as food.

Ming You’s soul could not escape from the green claw ghost winged lion’s stomach, he was rapidly broken down by the gastric acid.

The shadow of death loomed over him.

Ming You’s soul shook intensely, he realized that death was approaching him.

"Am I going to die..."

"Dying in the mouth of a mere beast?"

Damn it!

Indignance!

"I am still too weak. I can do much more!"

"I can definitely do more things, I have just created soul path..."

But his soul path methods were countered by the green claw ghost winged lion. This immemorial desolate beast was simply the natural nemesis of Ming You!

"I cannot die here. I will not accept this outcome."

"There must be a way, there has to be a way!"

"My immortal aperture is still inside my flesh body, it is still with me. My Gu worms are around too... but soul path is useless here. I, I still have food path!"

But the food path killer moves he had could not resist the green claw ghost winged lion, otherwise, he would have used them already, he would not end up like this.

"If existing food path killer moves are useless, I will create new food path killer moves!"

This was wishful thinking, but for Ming You, it was his only hope, even though the hope was extremely slim.

Ming You did not think about the unlikeliness of this action, he only focused on thinking, doing his best to create his concept.

Never before was he so concentrated on something!

His soul was still eroding, it became smaller and smaller.

His thoughts were producing at an increasing slower speed.

Soon, even his thoughts could not move anymore.

"I... cannot... give up..."

"I have to think... I got it... \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e..."

"That’s right, didn’t Ren Zu get eaten as well?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

\u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e, chapter five, section thirty-two.

Ren Zu continued on his journey, after a while, a huge Predicament entered Ren Zu’s vision.

Strong Gu was inside this Predicament’s body, it laughed: "Oh human, I am back again. This time, I have help, let’s see what you can do!"

Ren Zu had to stop walking, even though the Predicament before him was huge, he did not fluster.

Long long ago, Ren Zu had been chased by a group of Predicaments as he escaped, but after he gave his heart to hope Gu, those Predicaments which feared hope escaped in panic.

"Oh hope Gu, I need your help."

Ren Zu summoned hope Gu but the light of hope did not scare away this Predicament.

What was going on?

"Haha!" Strong Gu laughed: "Oh human, this Predicament has gained my help, it will definitely be the greatest Predicament you have ever met in your life. With just hope, how can you possibly defeat it?"

Ren Zu could not think of a way.

At this moment, weak Gu that was shielded by Ren Zu spoke in a soft voice: "Oh human, thank you for protecting me. Don’t worry, I have an idea, let’s scare this Predicament away!"

"You can scare it away?"

Weak Gu shook its head: "Oh human, even something as weak as me has a method to survive in life. Against those that want to eat or bully me, I will often put up a deceiving disguise, to make others think that I am very strong."

"This world favors the strong. Even if we are weak, we need to disguise ourselves as strong beings or we will be bullied everywhere."

"Oh human, you can do it. Don’t you have fear Gu? Isn’t attitude Gu on your face?"

Ren Zu heard weak Gu’s suggestion and decided to try it.

He first twisted his appearance using attitude Gu, revealing his teeth and showing a fierce expression. Next, he used fear Gu to scare the Predicament as it bore its teeth, sprawling on the ground and staring at Ren Zu vigilantly.

Ren Zu was dazed: "Why didn’t we scare it away?"

Weak Gu urged: "Didn’t it jump earlier? This means that my method works, but we need to put in more effort. Oh human, why don’t you put attitude Gu on top of self Gu? What is the best form of deceit or disguise? It is to deceive even yourself. By doing that, we should be able to deceive the Predicament."

Weak Gu continued: "As long as the Predicament thinks that you are strong, it will definitely let you pass. That is because Predicaments often take the initiative to give way to the strong."

Ren Zu took off the mask on his face as he placed attitude Gu on self Gu.

However, it was pointless.

The Predicament did not run off in fear.

Ren Zu realized at once: "I understand now, when a person faces a huge predicament, putting up a facade will never solve the real problem."

Strong Gu laughed: "Oh human, stop wasting your effort. With me here to remind the Predicament, how can you guys possibly deceive it? You should not have saved weak Gu, weak people often like to jeer and taunt others, showing a ruthless demeanor to conceal their own weakness inside."

Ren Zu was helpless, he could only stall for time temporarily.

Suddenly, he had a flash of inspiration as he said to strong Gu: "You said that the law of survival is for the strong to eat the weak, I agree with that. But how do you prove that you are strong while we are weak? If you cannot prove this, on what basis are you allowed to eat us?"

Strong Gu was dazed: "It is because I am strong Gu and that is weak Gu."

Ren Zu shook his head: "Just your names alone cannot prove anything. Moreover, other than both of you Gu worms, myself and this Predicament are also here."

Strong Gu smiled coldly: "Then I have a good method to prove it! We will eat a portion of each other, whoever fails to persevere to the end will lose, whoever is weak deserves to be eaten."

Ren Zu saw that he could not stall for any more time, he had to take a risk: "Then we will do that. Don’t regret it! However, which of us will eat first?"

Strong Gu was confident in its strength, it chuckled: "So what if I let you go first?"

Ren Zu assessed the Predicament with his gaze, the truth was he had never eaten any Predicaments before.

Ren Zu thought about it before he had an idea: "Then I will eat the head of the Predicament first."

Thus, Predicament took off its head and gave it to Ren Zu.

Ren Zu only took a bite when his face became distorted, he almost vomited on the spot: "So bitter!"

It turned out that this was a huge bitter head[1].

Not just that, even though the Predicament lost its head, it was still standing, the neck that was missing a head did not bleed at all, there were no issues at all.

"Haha!" Strong Gu laughed: "Oh human, you chose wrongly, by just eating bitter heads, you cannot resolve any predicaments. Moreover, whether you are capable of eating this huge bitter head is another question altogether! If you cannot eat it, it means that you are a weakling, you deserve to be eaten by us."

Compared to the Predicament’s head, Ren Zu’s body was very small.

Ren Zu knew that strong Gu was right, he could not afford to lose. If he lost, not only would he fail to protect weak Gu, he would even lose his life and become the food of the Predicament.

Ren Zu could only frown as he opened his mouth, continuing to eat the bitter head.

After taking dozens of mouthfuls, Ren Zu suddenly stopped, he opened his mouth and almost vomited.

Hope Gu encouraged him: "Oh human, don’t vomit. If you grit your teeth, you can devour any hardship that comes your way. Humans do not just need to eat food, they also need to taste bitterness."

Ren Zu nodded as he continued to eat.

Halfway through, the fear Gu on his body started to shout: "Oh heaven, when will we ever finish eating it?"

Ren Zu also felt a trace of despair.

Courage Gu quickly said: "Oh human, you cannot be afraid of tasting bitterness. Don’t fear bitterness, suffering is only temporary, if you start to fear suffering, you will suffer for life."

With the help of courage Gu, Ren Zu finally managed to eat all of the bitter heads after great hardship.

Ren Zu wiped his mouth as he looked at strong Gu with difficulty: "You can choose now."

Strong Gu smiled: "Then we will eat your skin first."

Ren Zu had to pull off the skin on his body as he threw it to the Predicament.

The Predicament had no head, it stuffed Ren Zu’s skin down its neck. Ren Zu’s skin was completely eaten but its huge belly did not expand at all.

Strong Gu asked again: "Oh human, what are you going to eat next?"

Ren Zu was troubled now, he had just eaten the Predicament’s head, it was too bitter, even though he endured the process, his stomach was almost full now.

As for the Predicament, even though it had no head, it was still alive and standing.

"What should I eat now? I ate too much earlier, my stomach is reaching its limit, if I have to eat a lot, my stomach might burst and I’ll die." Ren Zu thought to himself, he had to eat the most important and fatal part of the Predicament’s body!

But which part of the Predicament’s body was the most important?

After thinking for a long time, Ren Zu finally had an idea, he said to strong Gu: "Then I will eat the part that you absolutely do not want me to eat."

Strong Gu snorted coldly: "Then you can eat some losses[2]."

It took out all of the losses from the Predicament’s body and gave it to Ren Zu for consumption.

These losses were not big, the quantity was not large either.

Ren Zu was quite surprised, because after these losses were taken out, the originally huge Predicament shrunk by a lot.

Rules and regulation Gu started to explain for Ren Zu: "Oh human, this is not strange. Predicaments vary according to people, since you ate such a huge bitter head earlier, you will have less losses to eat, thus, it became smaller."

Ren Zu became happy: "This is great. Even if I eat all of these losses, I will not reach my limit, it will not fill my stomach completely."

Ren Zu opened his mouth and ate a small loss.

It was so spicy!

Ren Zu could not even speak at this moment.

Continuing to eat.

Ren Zu opened his mouth as he breathed heavily, his empty eye sockets also started to tear up uncontrollably.

Eating again.

Ren Zu’s entire body was covered in sweat that merged with the tears flowing out of his eye sockets.

The most uncomfortable thing for Ren Zu was that budding flames started to appear in his heart. These yellowish flames resembled chicks, they gathered together in groups.

The more losses one ate, the more flames of resentment they would feel in their heart.

The more flames of resentment they had, the more uncomfortable it felt, even Ren Zu’s several hearts could not take it, they were going to be incinerated soon!

Right at this moment, the heart of nobleness grew in Ren Zu’s chest.

Compared to the other hearts, the heart of nobleness was able to endure the most flames of resentment. With this heart to bear the burden, Ren Zu finally managed to endure it.

Ren Zu ate all of the losses.

Strong Gu looked at Ren Zu’s bulging belly as he smiled coldly: "Oh human, you are almost at your limit, it is time for us to eat."

Ren Zu breathed roughly as he asked: "What do you want to eat?"

Strong Gu said: "I want to eat your flesh."

Ren Zu was helpless about it, he could only let it eat his flesh.

Ren Zu’s skin and flesh were inside Predicament’s stomach, he only had his bones, organs, and hair left.

...

In this deep and eerie darkness, only Ming You’s thoughts were flickering with much difficulty, radiating the light of hope near the end of his life.

"I... can do it..."

"Come on... come on..."

Food path killer move — Bitter Taste!

Food path killer move — Swallow Loss!

The green claw ghost winged lion was flying in the air, suddenly, its body shook as it fell towards the ground with a pitiful cry.

With a loud sound, it crashed into the desert, creating a deep pit.

The green claw ghost winged lion struggled intensely, causing the sand on the ground to turn into a huge sand wave.

It could not endure the immense feelings of bitterness, the flames of resentment burned intensely in its heart.

It knew that Ming You was the one causing problems in its stomach, it stabbed its claw into its stomach without hesitation!

After spending a long time struggling, it slowly came to a halt as its life force dissipated.

Using the hole that its claw created, Ming You’s soul flew out like a trace of smoke, bringing along his immortal essence and Gu worms, escaping from the stomach of the beast.

"I actually survived." Even he did not think that this would be the outcome!

His soul was dim, after floating and moving for some time, he collapsed onto the ground.

Only after resting for a long time did he recover slightly.

Looking at the dark sky, Spectral Soul who was still a young adult snorted coldly before laughing to himself: "Pathetic, truly pathetic. However, in this world, in this world... who does not struggle at death’s doors?"

"I swear!" Spectral Soul’s figure was blur and vague, he seemed to be pointing at heaven.

He used an extremely firm and determined, yet incomparably weak voice to shout with all his strength: "This is the last time I will struggle before death in my life! From today onwards, only I can cause others to struggle in the face of death, the five regions and two heavens can bear testament to my words!"

Heaven and earth was silent.

Going back to the present, his memories faded away as the battlefield reappeared.

Qing Chou was rolling around in the air, finally, it could not take it anymore as it vomited out Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul’s body was like a phantom, moving rapidly and reaching Qing Chou’s back.

He raised his right arm as his five fingers turned black like ink, it was quite peculiar. His five fingernails were longer than his fingers, they were white and sharp, emitting an icy and terrifying aura.

"Go ahead and struggle to death. Don’t worry, I will not let any of you feel even the slightest hope of survival!"

Spectral Soul’s eyes shined with a dark light, his five fingers stabbed at lightning speed.

Roar—!

Qing Chou’s body shook, all of its strength surged again as Spectral Soul quickly absorbed everything.

[1] The Chinese phrase for suffering/hardship is written as bitter head literally.

[2] Eat loss is the literal meaning of the phrase that means suffering a loss, being disadvantaged, or ending up in an unfavorable situation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Lightning flashed and thunder roared, causing destruction to sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Southern Border was ravaged by the myriad destruction lightning forest to a pitiful level, countless mountains collapsed, the earth cracked as deep crevices formed. Combat Beast King was bathed in blood as he fought, his injuries were getting more severe, the situation was getting tougher now.

He was using his life to forcefully hold on and maintain the situation.

"Compared to the might of heaven and earth, even if I am a rank eight Gu Immortal, so what?" Combat Beast King had been cultivating in sovereign immortal aperture, he gained a lot of knowledge and his strength rose greatly, giving him a boost of confidence. But now, facing the myriad tribulation, he could feel how tiny and insignificant he was.

The range of the myriad destruction lightning forest expanded again, because Fang Yuan’s main body had to deal with the fight outside, he was at a disadvantage. Against this myriad tribulation, even if Fang Yuan put in all his effort, it would still be a dangerous process, and yet half of his attention was drawn away to deal with Spectral Soul.

This was a myriad tribulation, countless rank eights had faltered at this hurdle!

Fang Yuan’s situation was quite unique, this was not his first myriad tribulation. He had not just skipped two myriad tribulations, this current one was created by the three thousand heaven path dao marks in his body.

A myriad tribulation created this way was extremely rare even in the long history of humanity.

Forced by the situation, Fang Yuan had to multitask, he dealt with the situation outside while simultaneously observing sovereign immortal aperture.

He looked at the heaven path dao marks that transformed into lightning path and cloud path to create this myriad tribulation, he suddenly comprehended something.

"I think I understand something now." At that instance, he realized the origin of the calamities and tribulations!

In the past, he knew that calamities and tribulations were controlled by the Heavenly Dao, it cared about balance, to take away surpluses while replenishing deficits. Every Gu Immortal and immortal aperture was a mass congregation of dao marks, thus, the Heavenly Dao had to take measures to maintain the balance.

Every once in a while, the Heavenly Dao would unleash its might, creating calamities and tribulations for Gu Immortals. But how could it create these calamities and tribulations? Fang Yuan did not know.

Right now, this question in Fang Yuan’s heart got answered by the scene before him.

It turned out that matter what kind of tribulation, it was actually created using heaven path dao marks. The heaven path dao marks could transform into any path, thus, there were the flying frost jumping lightning tribulation, four inferno cloud tribulation, dragon roar tribulation, heavenly drum thunder tribulation, wind flower calamity, snow moon calamity, profound white flying salt calamity...

These tribulations were of the various paths, there were many types of them, Gu Immortals could not guess what would come, thus they faced huge difficulties. The Heavenly Dao would even mimic venerable methods, for example, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s formless hand.

All these different tribulations were merely the manifestation, in essence, they were all heaven path dao marks!

The higher the Gu Immortal’s cultivation level, the more dao marks they would have, and the bigger the difference between them and the natural environment. The more imbalanced it was, the more heaven path dao marks would be drawn to them, and the stronger the tribulations they would face.

Nobody in the world could cultivate heaven path, even if a Gu Immortal passed a tribulation successfully, they would not gain heaven path dao marks. These heaven path dao marks would transform into the dao marks of other paths and fuse with the Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture.

Thinking about it, back in Crazed Demon Cave, the heaven path dao marks derived many strange and peculiar small worlds, after these worlds were destroyed, they transformed back into heaven path dao marks.

As for the immortal tribulation tempering aperture killer move that Fang Yuan obtained from Lang Ya Sect, it used the same logic.

Immortal tribulation tempering aperture killer move used the blessed land and grotto-heaven as the refinement target, using the killer move to connect the immortal aperture with the five regions world outside, influencing the calamities and tribulations and using it to temper the immortal aperture itself.

Lang Ya blessed land was once located at Northern Plains’ crescent lake. Around the vicinity of crescent lake were water path and refinement path dao marks, immortal tribulation tempering aperture killer move was often used to deal with the calamities and tribulations. Most often, water path and refinement path calamities would occur. After passing it, the immortal aperture would gain water path and refinement path dao marks.

The true effect of this move was to affect the transformation of the heaven path dao marks.

In Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s true inheritance, there were also luck path methods to weaken tribulations. For example, Dog Shit Luck and Fortune Rivalling Heaven. He was using luck path dao marks to interfere with the creation of tribulations by the heaven path dao marks, causing a favorable change to occur and weakening the might of the tribulations.

In Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, there was myriad beings assimilation transformation killer move, it limited the transformation of the heaven path dao marks, thus each tribulation turned into a transformation path beast calamity instead.

The exposing heavenly secret killer move that Fang Yuan obtained from Shadow Sect could precisely deduce the content of the following tribulation. Exposing heavenly secret killer move used heavenly secret Immortal Gu as the core, very evidently, it also targeted the root source, the heaven path dao marks, to make its deductions. Thus, each deduction was extremely precise about the content.

Immortal tribulation tempering aperture, luck path methods, myriad beings assimilation transformation, exposing heavenly secret... Fang Yuan had all of these methods, it was a pity that he could not use them now.

The heaven path dao marks restricted his actions, he could not activate any of these moves.

Only by using human path methods to resist heaven path could Fang Yuan gain some time and opportunity to activate other killer moves. Like earlier in Heavenly Court when he used unlimited qi sea killer move to deal with primordial qi wall.

Fang Yuan had a human path formation in sovereign immortal aperture that used the thousand wish tree as the core. But heaven’s will was not stupid, it knew about Fang Yuan’s information. Myriad destruction lightning forest also appeared in Mini Central Continent, it was attacking the human path formation, making Fang Yuan trapped in a tighter spot.

Roar—!

Beast growls resounded, a large group of soul beasts moved out towards the lightning clouds in the sky.

They charged relentlessly without any concern about their own lives.

These were all soul beasts, most were desolate beasts, there were some ancient soul beasts and four immemorial soul beasts.

These soul beasts were all captured by Fang Yuan in green ghost desert. Among them, the immemorial soul beasts were enslaved when Fang Yuan helped Fang clan to obtain Divine Bean Palace.

These soul beasts were usually kept in Mini Black Heaven.

Right now, Fang Yuan was facing a crisis, he had to make use of them.

The soul beasts were extremely fragile under the myriad tribulation, they were completely defenseless. In just a while, a hundred desolate level soul beasts perished from the lightning bolts, more than ten ancient soul beasts died as well.

Fang Yuan’s heart was cold as ice, he did not waver.

The soul beast group had already served its purpose, it drew the firepower away and took away the pressure, allowing Fang Yuan to gain some time.

This included the immemorial soul beasts, without Immortal Gu, they were just high tier cannon fodder against the myriad tribulation, but they were still useful as meat shields after all.

Fang Yuan did not dare to use the soul beasts against Spectral Soul.

The truth was, after Spectral Soul took control of the year beasts, Fang Yuan gave up on this aspect.

A huge amount of strength flowed like a tidal wave into Spectral Soul’s body.

Qing Chou struggled intensely, using killer moves to attack itself manically. However, Spectral Soul endured Qing Chou’s attacks forcefully as he continued to drain its strength.

Soul beasts existed in this world because Spectral Soul created soul path.

Spectral Soul understood soul beasts too well, not only could he make them loyal to him, he also has methods to extract strength from them to replenish himself.

Qing Chou’s struggles became weaker and weaker.

Spectral Soul looked at Qing Chou with great satisfaction, the hatred Gu within its body was already reaching completion, this fool was simply sending itself to death while contributing treasures as well.

Spectral Soul suppressed Qing Chou while keeping his attention on Dragon Palace, all along, he did not relax, he stared at Fang Yuan’s main body without looking away.

The entire situation was still under his control!

Whoosh!

Suddenly, winds blew as the air rumbled, two giant hands slammed towards Spectral Soul from the left and right.

One hand was black while the other was white, they were grand and majestic, containing deep profundities, it was the qi path killer move — Yin-yang Great Killer Hands!

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan’s qi path clone arrived.

Spectral Soul smiled coldly, black smoke spewing out of his body, from the smoke, two immemorial soul beasts flew out and slammed into the two qi path giant hands.

The qi path hands grabbed as the two immemorial soul beasts growled in pain, but they did not die just yet.

Qi Sea Ancestor could neither let go of them nor continue grabbing them at this moment.

If he grabbed onto them, his offensive momentum would be halted. If he let go, these two immemorial soul beasts would still attack him later.

Qi Sea Ancestor shouted as he waved both hands, letting them fly far away, bringing the immemorial soul beasts away from the battlefield.

Spectral Soul’s goal was achieved, he used two immemorial soul beasts to restrain Qi Sea Ancestor while also wasting his energy. After all, Qi Sea Ancestor had to sustain the two qi path hands to trap the immemorial soul beasts.

Qi Sea and Spectral Soul’s first round of fighting ended up as a simple exchange.

Spectral Soul used two immemorial soul beasts while Qi Sea Ancestor wasted some mental energy, immortal essence, timing. Both sides were evenly matched, in fact Spectral Soul lost a bit more, after all, the immemorial soul beasts had rank eight battle strength!

But looking at the big picture, Spectral Soul’s gains were slightly higher, he still continued to control the situation.

Because he controlled Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven secretly, it had many immemorial soul beasts, losing two was no issue. In contrast, Qi Sea failed to use this opportunity well, he originally wanted to disrupt Spectral Soul but was interrupted, this chance was wasted.

Spectral Soul made use of his advantage well, he continued to absorb Qing Chou’s strength to strengthen himself while weakening Qing Chou. On the whole, he had gained a lot from this first round of combat.

This round was just a tiny projection of their fight, yet it showed Spectral Soul’s abundant and rich battle experience, his vision loomed over the entire battlefield. His control of combat was so precise and flawless, even someone like Fang Yuan felt stifled.

Fang Yuan was not giving up obviously, he focused on repairing Dragon Palace while asking Qi Sea Ancestor to attack again.

Spectral Soul focused on three things at once, he suppressed Dragon Palace and used the black smoke spiral to damage it, he absorbed Qing Chou’s soul beast strength, he also used killer moves to resist Qi Sea Ancestor’s attacks.

Dragon Palace, Qing Chou, and Qi Sea Ancestor, these were three entities with top tier battle strength in the world, yet they could not turn the situation around even by being on the same side!

To speak the truth, Spectral Soul’s current strength was not too impressive, but he had the complete dominance over Dragon Palace, he countered Qing Chou’s abilities, and he even knew about Qi Sea Ancestor’s information.

"His soul path methods are used in succession, the moves complement each other and are tightly connected, this is an exceptional combat system. In contrast, my Qi Sea clone has only existed for a short period of time, he has too few methods that are all easily countered." Fang Yuan’s main body understood the reason.

Qi Sea clone’s most common offensive method was yin-yang great killer hands and his main defensive method was heavenly astral cloth robe. His foundation was too low, when observed by Spectral Soul, after just a few exchanges of moves, he would be able to create a countermeasure easily.

Be it battle strength, knowledge, or experience, Spectral Soul stood at the peak of the world. After all, he was once the invincible Demon Venerable that dominated the world!

Among the generations of venerables, Spectral Soul was publicly recognized as the one with the deepest killing intent.

He had gone through intense battles, he fought his way to the top, he was an expert that carved out his own bloody path through countless hurdles!

Under his venerable throne, there was a mountain of skeletons and sea of corpses.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Qi Sea Ancestor, how is the situation over there?" Amidst intense battle, Fang Yuan’s clone Qi Sea received Qin Ding Ling’s transmission.

Qi Sea Ancestor did not speak, he recorded the scene of the battle using an information path Gu worm and sold it to Qin Ding Ling in treasure yellow heaven.

Heavenly Court soon gained an understanding of the battle situation.

Qin Ding Ling was slightly shocked internally, Spectral Soul’s strength far surpassed her initial estimations, it seemed like Qi Sea Ancestor could not restrain Spectral Soul, at this rate, Spectral Soul might likely kill Fang Yuan and defeat Qi Sea, he would also absorb Qing Chou, he would be the greatest winner in this clash!

This was something Qin Ding Ling did not want to see.

Fang Yuan and Spectral Soul were supreme demons, it would be great if they both perished, the best scenario would be Longevity Heaven going down with them! That was the result Qin Ding Ling most wanted to see.

"We have our Immortal Gu House, if we join the fight, we can cause some changes to it. Even though Qing Chou is strong, it is a mistake to use it against Spectral Soul. Looking at Spectral Soul’s actions, it seems that he is sure that Fang Yuan is inside Dragon Palace. Then has Fairy Zi Wei already succeeded in her deductions and informed Spectral Soul?"

Qin Ding Ling guessed the truth but she was not certain.

She looked at the operating wisdom path formation and Calamity Luck Altar beside it.

If Heavenly Court could exterminate Fairy Zi Wei and the rest, that would be the best. Clipping Spectral Soul’s wings prematurely would result in fewer variables in this battle. It was a pity that Calamity Luck Altar was here, most of Longevity Heaven’s experts came along with it, Qin Ding Ling was not confident of taking down Fairy Zi Wei at this moment.

"Longevity Heaven..." Qin Ding Ling gritted her teeth.

Among the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals present, she hated Longevity Heaven most deeply. Back then, she was forced to become Giant Sun’s immortal concubine. She endured this humiliation and successfully switched to cultivating luck path, she eventually participated in the fate war. But at the crucial moment, Giant Sun immortal zombie’s attack tilted the balance of the final battle in his favor.

"Longevity Heaven, I will settle the scores with you one day!" Qin Ding Ling swore in her heart.

Right when Qin Ding Ling was thinking, a rank seven Immortal Gu House flew over.

This Immortal Gu House was owned by Spirit Affinity House, the first supreme elder and second supreme elder were inside it as they brought along an important person, Feng Jin Huang.

"Feng Jin Huang, quickly retrieve the dream realms before us." Qin Ding Ling ordered.

"Yes." The door of the Immortal Gu House opened as Feng Jin Huang stood on the steps, quickly using her method with a solemn expression.

She had dream wings Immortal Gu and the modified pure dream reality seeker transformation. In fact, this killer move was created by Fairy Zi Wei’s deductions.

As dream realms turned into human form, they flew into Spirit Affinity House’s Immortal Gu House.

Shadow Sect and Longevity Heaven were stirred.

Fairy Zi Wei’s eyes shined with brilliance.

Old Man Zheng Yuan quickly asked: "Fairy, do we take action?"

After all, these dream realms belonged by Spectral Soul, his attainment levels were inside them.

Fairy Zi Wei shook her head: "We will wait for now, these dream realms are just a small portion, they are not important. Fang Yuan is our main priority!"

At the moment, Spectral Soul’s side had a clear advantage. At this rate of development, Shadow Sect was greatly favored. Fairy Zi Wei did not want to upset the balance now and disrupt the overall situation.

Feng Jin Huang was just a rank five Gu Master, she was not even a rank six Gu Immortal. But her status was quite unique, she was Feng Jiu Ge’s daughter!

If anyone attacked her, it might cause Feng Jiu Ge to come.

Feng Jiu Ge’s future self had likely disappeared, similar to Hei Lou Lan and Bai Ning Bing. But even so, with Feng Jiu Ge’s own strength, he could participate in this fight, he was an uncertain variable.

Especially when this variable was not favorable for Shadow Sect, Fairy Zi Wei wanted to have less problems if possible.

Calamity Luck Altar’s Bing Sai Chuan had the same thought, he did not make a move in the end.

Feng Jin Huang was heavily protected by Heavenly Court’s immortals as she gradually collected the dream realms.

Qin Ding Ling had a complex emotion.

She eventually made this move, using Feng Jin Huang and thus, Feng Jiu Ge indirectly to intimidate their opponents. Since when did the great Heavenly Court fall to such a level?

The pride in Qin Ding Ling’s heart pressured her, but the logic in her mind told her to use all of the resources and influences they could gather!

Qi Sea Ancestor transmitted information again, requesting for Heavenly Court’s reinforcement.

Qin Ding Ling rejected his request politely, asking him to persevere some more time.

Thus, Qi Sea Ancestor changed his request: "Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range is closest to Black Heaven Temple, why don’t you ask them to send an Immortal Gu House to patrol the periphery of the battlefield. If I am unable to stop Spectral Soul from killing Fang Yuan, we can still rely on Black Heaven Temple."

Qin Ding Ling thought about it but did not tell Qi Sea Ancestor about her orders to Black Heaven Temple, she rejected: "Black Heaven Temple is not strong enough to participate in this battle."

Qi Sea Ancestor replied angrily: "This is a prime opportunity! If Heavenly Court hesitates and loses the chance, either one of these two demons getting stronger will be a problem for the righteous path."

Qin Ding Ling sighed: "Why wouldn’t I know that? But Heavenly Court is not as before, we need to act cautiously. If we send Black Heaven Temple’s Gu Immortals there, they would only die in vain. Please understand our plight!"

Qi Sea Ancestor felt a little dejected. Since Heavenly Court’s leader openly spoke of their weakness, they were really not the Heavenly Court of before, their style of action changed, Fang Yuan could not make use of them easily anymore.

While Qin Ding Ling and Qi Sea Ancestor spoke secretly, Demon Immortal Qi Jue was also asking Spectral Soul: "Fang Yuan’s main body is here, why aren’t you coming here?"

Fang Yuan placed his will in Myriad Year Flying Warship, he also left behind

Immortal Gu and immortal essence, under the effect of familiar face killer move, he could disguise his will very well.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue told Spectral Soul about this but the latter continued to fight Dragon Palace, not showing signs of leaving. This made Demon Immortal Qi Jue quite suspicious.

Spectral Soul directly replied: "Don’t forget about Fang Yuan’s familiar face. We cannot be sure of his location."

Demon Immortal Qi Jue became increasingly suspicious: "Spectral Soul, are you hiding something from me?"

Spectral Soul replied: "Don’t worry, just continue restraining Myriad Year Flying Warship, you will get your due remuneration."

But Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not fall for it, he smiled coldly: "Don’t worry indeed, I have a brilliant plan to find out which is Fang Yuan’s main body."

Saying so, he suddenly stopped dealing with Myriad Year Flying Warship as he flew towards Spectral Soul’s direction.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was stunned for a moment before quickly pulling away from Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Spectral Soul sensed something amiss, he quickly transmitted: "Qi Jue, don’t do anything foolish."

But Demon Immortal Qi Jue was firm: "Sometimes, we need to take a chance right? Or maybe, you can tell me the information that you just obtained?"

Spectral Soul snorted but did not reply.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue turned silent as he flew into the sky with an increased speed.

In a few breaths of time, Myriad Year Flying Warship appeared behind him again.

Seeing this, Demon Immortal Qi Jue laughed loudly: "Oh Spectral Soul, look, I found out the truth already. I can be certain that Fang Yuan’s main body is inside Dragon Palace now!"

If Fang Yuan’s main body was inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, he would have flown away already. But now, Myriad Year Flying Warship returned to stall Demon Immortal Qi Jue, it showed that Fang Yuan’s main body was unwilling to see Spectral Soul gain reinforcements, he had to stop Demon Immortal Qi Jue from leaving.

At this moment, Fang Yuan’s plan to deceive his enemies by splitting up has failed completely.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was a famous demon in history, his seniority was higher than everyone here, including Spectral Soul.

After sensing something wrong, he quickly tested his method to find out the truth.

Spectral Soul snorted coldly, showing displeasure. With Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s move, the situation got out of Spectral Soul’s control.

Spectral Soul was just using Qi Jue by promising benefits, they were wary of each other in essence, their relationship was merely because of mutual gains.

The reason why Spectral Soul did not want Demon Immortal Qi Jue to come over was because this uncertain variable could possibly get greedy and fight with him over the immense benefits of killing Fang Yuan!

Right now, from Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s actions, it showed that Spectral Soul’s worries were well justified. Demon Immortal Qi Jue definitely had his own ideas.

But Spectral Soul did not fluster.

Back when he lured Demon Immortal Qi Jue to join the battle, he had already thought of this. But there was no helping it, Spectral Soul had just regained his strength, Shadow Sect was still very weak. Because of the many variables in this battle, Spectral Soul had to increase the strength of his side, it was thanks to Fairy Zi Wei communicating with Longevity Heaven earlier, to rope them in with Shadow Sect temporarily, otherwise the situation would have been even more chaotic.

Did Bing Sai Chuan had no such intentions either? Was he really going to watch Spectral Soul kill Fang Yuan like that?

Of course not.

Fairy Zi Wei was a wisdom path great expert, she had deep considerations. She created the formation in front of Heavenly Court, it was to restrain them as well as Longevity Heaven.

This battle to kill Fang Yuan was not as grand as the fate war but it involved four parties, tens of Gu Immortals, and almost all of the peak experts in the current world.

These people plotted against each other and schemed deeply, Spectral Soul could sense acutely that his control over the situation was slipping.

Immortal killer move — Qi Wall!

During the intense battle, Qi Sea Ancestor pushed with both hands as a colossal qi wall formed instantly.

The qi wall was like a mountain as it pressed towards Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul pointed with his fingers as several immemorial soul beasts appeared, growling as they blocked the qi wall.

But Qi Sea Ancestor shouted suddenly as he raised his right fist, he spread out his fingers as his palm targeted Spectral Soul from afar.

Spectral Soul seemed to have sensed something as black smoke appeared around him in a ball shape, shielding him.

The moment Qi Sea Ancestor’s killer move was ready, he moved his palm away and targeted the black smoke spiral instead.

Immortal killer move — Great Qi Hand Explosion!

Bam.

Following an intense explosion, the black smoke spiral was completely torn apart as black qi flew all over the place. Dragon Palace which was greatly damaged moved quickly as it drew a golden trail of light in the sky, rapidly escaping!

At this point in the battle, Dragon Palace finally broke free.

Spectral Soul’s attention was drawn by Demon Immortal Qi Jue, Qi Sea Ancestor found this small loophole and quickly made use of his opportunity with some luck.

Spectral Soul looked at Qi Sea Ancestor deeply, other than intense anger and killing intent, there was also praise and admiration in his gaze.

Qi Sea Ancestor had made a brilliant move!

Now that Dragon Palace had escaped, Spectral Soul had to keep up with it, he had to abandon the heavy Qing Chou.

It was such a pity! Spectral Soul was only a bit of time away from completely subduing Qing Chou.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Fang Yuan, where are you trying to escape to?" Spectral Soul smiled coldly, black smoke oozing out of his body.

An immemorial soul beast as large as a giant python flew out of the black smoke, it pounced at Dragon Palace with strong winds around it.

The orange-golden light flickered on Dragon Palace as a trace of pink smoke flew out.

With the movement of the smoke, the immemorial soul beast easily got suppressed inside Dragon Palace without putting up a resistance.

It was immortal killer move — Dreamy Light Smoke!

Spectral Soul was only afraid of this method from Dragon Palace, but now that it was used, he immediately used the opportunity to move with increased speed, approaching Dragon Palace like a specter.

Immortal killer move — Qi Wall!

Qi Sea Ancestor pushed with both hands as winds blew wildly, a giant qi wall appeared out of nowhere and blocked Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul snorted coldly, breaking the qi wall but losing his battle opportunity.

Dragon Palace changed directions, the aura of dreamy light smoke became denser again.

Behind it, Qing Chou roared and wanted to chase them but it was powerless, in a few breaths of time, it was left in the dust.

Dragon Palace, Spectral Soul, and Qi Sea Ancestor fought while they traveled rapidly in the sky.

Qi Sea Ancestor played the role of a nuisance perfectly, he prevented Spectral Soul from succeeding multiple times.

Spectral Soul became annoyed, he started to attack Qi Sea Ancestor aggressively.

But at this time, Dragon Palace suddenly retaliated as it shielded Qi Sea Ancestor. Especially with the killer move dreamy light smoke ready to strike at any moment, Spectral Soul could not act too aggressively.

Thus, the situation went into a deadlock!

Spectral Soul had not returned to his peak condition, thus, when fighting against Dragon Palace and Qi Sea Ancestor, his battle strength was not much higher. Once they cooperated and assisted each other, even Spectral Soul felt a sense of helplessness, he could not fight against both enemies, targeting one of them would allow the other to act, it was hard to take action now.

At this time, Spectral Soul could not help but think of Qing Chou.

"I should not have weakened Qing Chou to this extent. If it still had some battle strength left, it would disrupt their cooperation!" Spectral Soul felt a little regret.

He was all alone and did not need cooperation, but Fang Yuan and Qi Sea Ancestor were different, they had to work together intrinsically to resist Spectral Soul.

Qing Chou was overwhelmed by rage, once it joined the battle, it would ruin Fang Yuan and Qi Sea Ancestor’s cooperation, Spectral Soul would have a lot of opportunities to strike.

But what Spectral Soul did earlier was not wrong either. If he could subdue Qing Chou completely, Spectral Soul’s advantage would rise, he would almost certainly claim victory.

It was a pity Qi Sea Ancestor ruined it!

He was merely a step away from completely subduing Qing Chou, but just that bit of time would allow Fang Yuan to escape from them, Spectral Soul could not take the risk.

This time, Spectral Soul had the advantage of being undercover, but what about next time?

Once Fang Yuan becomes cautious against him, would he have another chance?

Even Spectral Soul could not be sure.

Despite Fairy Zi Wei’s deduction method, would Fang Yuan be unable to counter it?

Heavenly Court was the best example, they could not capture Fang Yuan despite countless efforts.

What was the outcome?

Fang Yuan got stronger and stronger, he fought his way to Heavenly Court and destroyed fate Gu!

Even though Fang Yuan was backed by many individuals who paved the way for him, what made all of these people invest in him?

Were there no better candidates?

Even for otherworldly demons, there were many of them in the world.

Fang Yuan was used by heaven’s will and all these people, he was obviously someone who was unique and had great value.

Forget about the rest, just his ability to escape was something even Spectral Soul felt admiration towards.

Fang Yuan’s attainment in escaping was very deep, he had a scheming and crafty mind! He was most skilled by borrowing others’ strength, he could escape under the thumbs of many powerful forces, quickly raising his strength over time.

Spectral Soul had such rich battle experience, he knew deeply that someone like Fang Yuan had to be dealt with seriously. Once he struck, it had to be a fatal blow, he could not give Fang Yuan any time to rest or recuperate. This enemy was too good at making use of opportunity, he could easily gain a new lease on life and turn the situation around.

Fang Yuan was the type of person who could shine with a bit of sunlight, sprout with a bit of water, or create great problems with just a bit of time.

Indeed, Spectral Soul was wary against Fang Yuan.

Even he had to admit this truth.

Because he saw a trace of himself in Fang Yuan!

"Fang Yuan, defending will lead to your eventual loss, how long can you last? I will definitely kill you!" Spectral Soul said coldly, not forgetting to exert mental pressure on Fang Yuan.

"Qi Sea, after this battle, even if you hide, I will find you in Eastern Sea. I will destroy your qi sea and kill all of your subordinates!" Spectral Soul turned around and threatened Qi Sea Ancestor.

Qi Sea clone replied calmly: "The so-called Demon Venerable is actually resorting to trash talking."

Spectral Soul smiled coldly.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s expression quickly changed, black smoke appeared around him as it started to invade his body.

Spectral Soul used words to distract Qi Sea Ancestor, even though this was not a weakness, in Spectral Soul’s eyes, it was enough to create an opportunity for himself!

Qi Sea Ancestor quickly evaded it as Spectral Soul wanted to pursue him, Dragon Palace flew over and blocked Spectral Soul, bearing some of Qi Sea Ancestor’s burden.

Qi Sea Ancestor exerted all his strength to alleviate the problem on him, after regaining his footing, he went back into the battle.

It was a deadlock once again.

But this time, no matter how Spectral Soul provoked him, Qi Sea Ancestor showed no carelessness.

Like this, the three sides fought and whipped up countless storms, the impact of their clash spreading towards the northern direction.

They flew past Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range, entering Intestinal Gorge.

Black Heaven Temple’s immortals were hiding in Intestinal Gorge.

Several Immortal Gu Houses were concealed around Intestinal Gorge, leaking no aura at all.

Seeing that the battle far away was approaching them, Black Heaven Temple’s immortals immediately turned excited.

"Coming, they’re coming!"

"They’re finally here."

"The battle is so intense, is that female immortal Spectral Soul who is using the body temporarily?"

"Dragon Palace has been heavily damaged, Fang Yuan has no battle strength left, I’ve never seen him in a more pathetic state."

"He deserves it! If not for him, fate Gu would not have been destroyed. Be it Spectral Soul or Fang Yuan, they deserve to die!"

Black Heaven Temple’s immortals gritted their teeth, they had a different tone when speaking of Qi Sea Ancestor.

"When we take action later, we should avoid Qi Sea Ancestor."

"It was all thanks to him that Heavenly Court’s qi harvest fruit was completely removed."

"He is our alliance mate, he does not know that we are here in ambush, we cannot harm him."

Even though Qi Sea Ancestor and Dragon Palace were working together, Black Heaven Temple’s Gu Immortals did not feel surprised. Spectral Soul was too strong, they had to work together to resist him. Precisely because of Qi Sea Ancestor’s hard work, Fang Yuan and Spectral Soul were still opposing each other, expending their energy.

"Close, they are close."

"Let’s do it!"

Black Heaven Temple’s Gu Immortals were ready to strike.

Pew!

Right at this moment, Spectral Soul unleashed an aggressive killer move, black smoke rumbled as dark winds howled, several mountains were affected by the winds and instantly got disintegrated into dust.

Bam.

Qi Sea Ancestor had to unleash qi wall killer move to resist the dark winds.

Dragon Palace released intense golden light, shooting out a grand light pillar to fight offense with offense, attacking Spectral Soul.

Right when the pillar was about to hit, Spectral Soul’s body flickered as he vanished on the spot, evading the light pillar easily.

The light pillar tore through the sky, it was over a thousand feet long, creating a huge trench on the ground. At that instance, smoke rose as countless mountains collapsed.

A brand new artificially created Earth Trench appeared before the eyes of the Black Heaven Temple immortals!

After this eruption of attacks, Spectral Soul no longer had a chance to attack, he quickly stopped and continued to fight against Qi Sea and Dragon Palace as they flew away.

The Black Heaven Temple immortals hiding in the Immortal Gu Houses were silent.

The battle they saw earlier shook their minds and bodies!

"So this is their real battle strength!" Many people understood this and broke out in cold sweat.

Nobody spoke about attacking anymore.

The atmosphere was quite awkward.

Eventually, Black Heaven Temple’s first supreme elder coughed and broke the silence.

He purposely mumbled to himself: "No wonder Heavenly Court’s Lady Qin asked us to wait here and observe the situation."

"Indeed, indeed, Lady Qin is very wise."

"What do we do now?"

"Let’s continue waiting in ambush, they did not discover us. Maybe we will get a chance again?"

"That is right, even if we do not gain any opportunities, we can’t come here and do nothing right? We must collect information about this battle and inform Lady Qin at least."

Rumble!

Right when the Black Heaven Temple immortals were discussing, the intense battle in the sky erupted again.

At once, the sky turned dark, earth shook as mountains rumbled.

The aftermath of their collision created huge air currents that surged out. Trees were uprooted as mountain rocks flew, wild beasts cried out in pain, it was the sight of an apocalypse.

Black Heaven Temple’s immortals watched with wide eyes as Spectral Soul unleashed a black soul ball but Dragon Palace evaded it.

The soul ball fell into a nearby valley.

There was no sound, at the instance, with the valley as the core, the surrounding thousand li of mountains and valleys turned into black dust that flew away with the wind. The originally lively mountains vanished soundlessly, only a huge crater was left.

Gulp.

Someone swallowed their saliva, it was clearly heard by the Gu Immortals.

"What was that killer move earlier? It is so strange!"

"There are no records of it in history."

"It is not strange that Spectral Soul is able to use such powerful methods, but if it landed on us..."

"Not just us, even our sect’s Immortal Gu Houses might not be able to survive such an attack."

"Let’s... leave? Lady Qin asked us to act according to the situation, we are allowed to retreat if needed."

Black Heaven Temple’s immortals looked at each other before turning to the first supreme elder.

First supreme elder’s expression was extremely dark, he said with a solemn tone: "We need to preserve our strength, we cannot waste it here. If we die now, who will look after Black Heaven Temple? Lady Qin will not blame us, we are planning for the future."

The result was, Black Heaven Temple’s immortals came stealthily and watched as the battle in the sky flew away, after that, they stealthily retreated without a sound.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2045 Myriad Tribulation“s Transformation

"Fang Yuan, this is as far as you go!" Spectral Soul chased for some time before attacking again, he was very confident this time.

At once, dark winds howled, black clouds filled the sky, it was like an immensely thick wall appeared before Dragon Palace.

"This is... quickly retreat!" At this moment, Wu Shuai’s expression turned nervous, he noticed that this was a soul path battlefield killer move!

Black clouds spread out as Dragon Palace and Qi Sea Ancestor quickly retreated.

Immortal killer move — Soul Taker Battlefield!

This was Spectral Soul’s famous battlefield killer move.

Spectral Soul had used this move to kill countless enemies. Once the battlefield was activated, dark blue soul beasts would be formed within the dense fog, there would be countless soul beasts that appeared unceasingly. Living beings who died in this battlefield would have their souls taken and transformed into soul beasts, under the control of the killer move’s user.

When Dragon Palace was trapped by the black smoke spiral, there was still hope of escaping. But if it got trapped by soul taker battlefield, the chances of escaping would be close to zero.

Fang Yuan had Shadow Sect’s true inheritance, soul taker battlefield was included in this inheritance, he knew a lot about the move.

But now, Spectral Soul used this move openly, it was likely that he had already modified and improved upon it. In fact, Fang Yuan’s knowledge might be a trap from Spectral Soul.

At this moment, Fang Yuan and Qi Sea Ancestor did not dare to continue fighting, they quickly focused on escaping.

Spectral Soul rode on the endless black smoke as he chased after them.

When ordinary Gu Immortals used battlefield killer moves, they would need to cancel it if it could not trap the enemy.

But was Spectral Soul ordinary?

He used the split move technique to split soul taker battlefield into many parts. The first part was the black smoke, Spectral Soul could sustain it and move it around without any problem or weakness.

"Soul taker battlefield was created by Spectral Soul in his early days, he used it until the later part of his life. By then, he created an even stronger battlefield killer move — Hundred Million Slaughterfield. Why isn’t he using the stronger killer move? Unless, he does not have the necessary Gu worms?" Fang Yuan guessed.

Spectral Soul was also guessing: "After escaping from Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan has been going north. Where is he trying to go? Northern Plains? If it is Northern Plains, which location is he going to? Crazed Demon Cave?"

Now that the five regions were united and the regional walls vanished, Spectral Soul had a huge advantage. Without the regional walls, Fang Yuan only has several ways to shrug off these pursuers.

Spectral Soul was very familiar with the five regions, he guessed Crazed Demon Cave at the first try.

Even if Spectral Soul could not be certain, he knew that stopping Fang Yuan from going to the north was a wise decision. Thus, Spectral Soul moved his black smoke to spread out across the surroundings, forcing Fang Yuan to change directions as he flew back to Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range.

At the same time, in another battlefield.

"I’m done." Feng Jin Huang panted heavily as she stopped her killer move. Her forehead was covered in sweat. Using pure dream reality seeker transformation killer move like this placed a huge pressure on her.

But it was done now.

Under the supervision of Heavenly Court, Shadow Sect, and Longevity Heaven, more than ten rank eight Gu Immortals watched as Feng Jin Huang kept all of the dream realms away.

Fang Yuan was nowhere in sight!

"Fang Yuan was not hiding here after all." The Gu Immortals were disappointed but also sighed in relief secretly.

Qin Ding Ling immediately asked as she moved her Immortal Gu House closer to the wisdom path formation: "Fairy Zi Wei, I’ve given you so much time. Right now, tell me, where is Fang Yuan’s main body?"

Calamity Luck Altar quickly moved ahead as it blocked Qin Ding Ling, Bing Sai Chuan’s voice resounded from within: "Slow down, immortal concubine from Heavenly Court!"

He called Qin Ding Ling an immortal concubine, he was referring to her past as Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s woman.

But soon, Bing Sai Chuan changed the subject to Fairy Zi Wei: "But I hold the same suspicions as Immortal Concubine Qin. Fairy Zi Wei, I hope you can give us a satisfactory answer."

Bing Sai Chuan could not wait either.

Because after such a long time, Fairy Zi Wei still had not given them an answer, it was not like what she said to them earlier.

Fairy Zi Wei stopped using the wisdom path formation as she collected the Gu worms.

She made up an excuse on the spot: "The situation is different from last time, Fang Yuan is prepared against us. However, I found his location after all."

"Where?" Qin Ding Ling asked immediately.

Fairy Zi Wei had already kept away her core Immortal Gu, she answered: "Fang Yuan is in Dragon Palace."

She spoke the truth.

Trying to keep Fang Yuan’s location a secret now was pointless.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue had his own plan, he was already heading towards Spectral Soul’s location, Myriad Year Flying Warship followed closely behind it.

From one glance, it was obvious where Fang Yuan’s main body was.

"We will pursue them!" Qin Ding Ling ordered.

Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu Houses started to fly together as they guarded each other.

Shadow Sect and Longevity Heaven also followed suit.

But the three parties were quite spaced apart, the atmosphere was a little tense.

Fairy Zi Wei’s side was quite helpless here, she wanted to stop Heavenly Court here but the alliance with Longevity Heaven was not reliable, they were only allied in name.

As for Heavenly Court?

Qin Ding Ling could not confirm the truth behind Fairy Zi Wei’s words, but since Fang Yuan was not inside the dream realms, he had to be in Dragon Palace or Myriad Year Flying Warship. Looking at Spectral Soul’s actions, it was more likely that Fang Yuan was inside Dragon Palace.

Before they found Fang Yuan’s main body, Qin Ding Ling did not want to target Fairy Zi Wei. It was too much of a waste of time now, and in this period, if either Spectral Soul or Fang Yuan claims victory while Heavenly Court was not around, it would be a huge loss.

For Longevity Heaven, Bing Sai Chuan also wanted to see how things progressed. He did not want to act rashly, because their strength was not enough to suppress everyone, he needed to use his timing well and target Fang Yuan. If he managed to kill Fang Yuan, the gains would be immense.

All three groups targeted Fang Yuan.

It was really a rare chance to kill Fang Yuan, the opportunity would not present itself twice.

Boom!

With a loud sound, Dragon Palace crashed into a mountain like a shooting star.

But Dragon Palace did not stop there, it went deep into the mountain’s interior as a result of the huge force that sent it flying.

Qi Sea Ancestor quickly used qi wall to obstruct Spectral Soul from chasing after it.

But Spectral Soul smiled coldly, he moved around Qing Chou.

Instantly, Qing Chou’s eyes turned red as it attacked furiously.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s attacks were stopped by Qing Chou, using this chance, Spectral Soul flew downwards.

At the moment of crisis, a heavily damaged Dragon Palace flew out of the smoke, dodging Spectral Soul’s assault.

Not long ago, Qing Chou joined in the battle against Spectral Soul, but it was made use of instead.

Fang Yuan fell into danger again, Dragon Palace suffered a heavy blow, it was about to break, it could only escape and stall for some time.

The outside battle was tense, but inside Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture, a change had occurred even though the myriad tribulation was still rampaging.

Fang Yuan sacrificed his soul beast group resolutely, not only did they bear the brunt of the tribulation, heaven’s will’s attention was also drawn away.

The pressure on Fang Yuan lifted by a bit, there was finally a chance for him to activate the human path formation again.

The human path formation erupted with great might as a grand white light pillar shot into the sky, into the depths of the lightning clouds.

At once, the myriad tribulation’s lightning clouds froze.

Using this chance, Combat Beast King attacked, scattering countless Gu worms in the sky.

Fang Yuan’s divine sense enveloped them as he set up a formation rapidly.

In order to make this counterattack, he had made ample preparations. With his deep formation path attainment, he quickly created a formation in the sky.

Heaven’s will reacted after that, sending lightning bolts to attack together.

Combat Beast King roared as he intercepted the lightning bolts without dodging.

After over ten breaths of time, his star armor shattered, he fell to the ground while bathed in blood.

With a loud sound, he created a pit on the ground as he fell unconscious, either dead or alive.

Lightning bolts shot towards the formation again.

At the critical moment, the formation’s set up finally succeeded as it turned into a huge basin.

The basin shot out profound light that had a mysterious attractive force, it absorbed all of the lightning bolts that shot out.

The myriad tribulation was very fierce but the basin successfully absorbed and turned it into a pool of lightning plasma.

The lightning bolts continued to attack while the lightning pool grew in volume.

The lightning pool was not special, it was a common resource point for lightning path cultivators, almost all lightning path Gu Immortals would create one in their immortal aperture. It was like how light path Gu Immortals would create a Five Light Mountain.

But this lightning pool’s appearance was a huge help to Fang Yuan, it bore the brunt of this myriad destruction lightning forest tribulation. It was even more effective than the old Combat Beast King.

This was because this lightning pool’s core was not ordinary, it was a rank eight Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan had – Lightning Gu!

But good times did not last, heaven’s will controlled the myriad tribulation to target the newly formed lightning pool. As the water level of this pool rose gradually, it was about to overflow.

Immortal killer move – Unrestrained Heavenly Mark!

Fang Yuan directly used this killer move on the deep blue plasma in the lightning pool.

The plasma seemed to be made of lightning path dao marks, but it was actually formed from a small portion of those three thousand heaven path dao marks.

These dao marks were restrained by the lightning pool, they were sitting ducks. Due to Fang Yuan’s killer move, they were quickly refined, the efficiency was much higher than before!

One, two, five... ten dao marks!

The water level of the lightning pool stabilized before falling rapidly.

The lightning in the sky suddenly ceased.

Heaven’s will was not stupid, it knew that continuing with this would lead to failure, Fang Yuan would gain much more instead.

It started to transform the myriad tribulation.

Heaven path was inclusive of everything, it contained lightning path, it could turn into countless lighting bolts. It also contained other paths, it naturally had all sorts of forms to take.

Since Fang Yuan made a countermeasure, heaven’s will immediately stopped and changed its method to cause destruction to sovereign immortal aperture.

For ordinary myriad tribulations, the content would be fixed once it appeared.

But Fang Yuan’s myriad tribulation was special, it was made of over three thousand heaven path dao marks, heaven’s will controlled it personally, it could change forms at will.

This undoubtedly raised the difficulty of Fang Yuan’s tribulation by many times!

"This is too much..." As the old Combat Beast King woke up gradually, he had already separated from the star sea snail. Deep within the pit, his old body was buried in the fragments of the star sea snail, he looked at the changing myriad tribulation as this old rank eight Gu Immortal showed a deep expression of despair.

At the same time, in the external battlefield.

"Spectral Soul, I will lend you a hand!" Demon Immortal Qi Jue had finally arrived.

Spectral Soul gained reinforcements but he had an unhappy expression, he only snorted in reply.

He knew about Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s true intentions, but now was not the time for internal conflict.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Demon Immortal Qi Jue arrived and immediately attacked Qi Sea Ancestor. The secluded domain of heaven and earth above his head, Xi Land, was too powerful against qi path.

Qi Sea Ancestor was Dragon Palace’s greatest help, now that he was restrained, Dragon Palace’s situation became more dangerous.

But soon, Myriad Year Flying Warship arrived too and started to join the fight. Even though Fang Yuan faced much difficulty, he managed to drag this fight on.

Spectral Soul yelled, his body moved like a specter, his palm landed on Dragon Palace again.

Countless soul beast silhouettes appeared on the surface of Dragon Palace like a series of still images, a portion of Dragon Palace shattered, it was damaged both internally and externally.

Dragon Palace unleashed dreamy light smoke, Spectral Soul quickly retreated.

At the next moment, Demon Immortal Qi Jue pointed at Dragon Palace suddenly.

Qi currents gathered, they exploded instantly.

The exterior of Dragon Palace had already been blown to bits, only the main hall was left. Now that it suffered this powerful attack from Demon Immortal Qi Jue, a huge hole appeared on the roof of this main hall, it could be seen from the outside.

Spectral Soul saw this and smiled coldly, not holding back his praise: “Qi Jue, well done!”

At this stage, everyone knew that Dragon Palace was in grave danger, if they worked harder, they would be able to shatter it entirely.

Fang Yuan and Qi Sea Ancestor could cooperate, Demon Immortal Qi Jue and

Spectral Soul could do the same as well!

After Demon Immortal Qi Jue joined the fight, he suppressed Qi Sea Ancestor and cooperated with Spectral Soul. Even though they did not have close coordination, these two had abundant battle experience, they could find ways to work together.

And this cooperation pushed Dragon Palace beyond the brink of destruction.

When Fairy Zi Wei, Qin Ding Ling, and Bing Sai Chuan arrived, they saw that Dragon Palace shattered into countless fragments as they scattered everywhere.

Fang Yuan and Wu Shuai, who were inside Dragon Palace were exposed, but they quickly went inside Myriad Year Flying Warship, which came to pick them up.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was significantly faster than Dragon Palace, it immediately moved away and escaped.

The three groups of immortals were stunned before feeling great joy.

“Quick, Fang Yuan is done for!”

“Dragon Palace was actually destroyed!!”

“Even though Myriad Year Flying Warship is fast, in terms of defense, it is inferior to Dragon Palace.”

“We must kill Fang Yuan, we must restore Heavenly Court’s reputation.”

“Fang Yuan destroyed our Imperial Court blessed land, there is deep hatred between him and Longevity Heaven. We will kill him and take all of his true inheritances and Gu worms. We will pull out his soul and torture him for all eternity!”

“Fang Yuan, it is finally time for Shadow Sect to take care of you.”

“We will kill Fang Yuan first before we compete among ourselves. We must not let him have any chance of getting away during our conflict!”

The immortals rushed up, they pursued Fang Yuan with great enthusiasm.

This was the greatest predicament that Fang Yuan had ever been in since his rebirth. He was currently chased by the top three super forces in the world, most of the world’s strongest experts had gathered behind him. Qin Ding Ling, Fairy Zi Wei, and Bing Sai Chuan were Gu Immortals that left a name for themselves in history, there was even a fearsome being like Spectral Soul.

“Fang Yuan, you cannot escape.” Spectral Soul smiled coldly to himself, when he saw that everyone’s target was Fang Yuan, he did not chase them away, he allowed everyone to pursue him.

“Stay attentive, defend against Spectral Soul and Longevity Heaven.” Qin Ding Ling instructed.

This was truly an amazing sight.

Heavenly Court, Longevity Heaven, and Shadow Sect joined forces to pursue Fang Yuan, but because of their mutual wariness, they did not go all out.

Fang Yuan did not create a situation where the three sides clashed because they all were not simple characters. At the same time, Fang Yuan’s grudges with them were too deep, the wealth that he held was also too alluring.

Even if they held back, they were still sufficiently strong, their killer moves were all strange and unpredictable.

Not long afterwards, Myriad Year Flying Warship became covered in damages, many Gu worm corpses fell off it while it flew and escaped.

“At this rate, there is no way out!” Wu Shuai shouted: “Main body, our road to the north has been blocked, we can only go southwest now, this is hopeless. We cannot last much longer, Myriad Year Flying Warship is much frailer than Dragon Palace.”

Fang Yuan’s main body was sitting down and dealing with the myriad tribulation, he instructed: “Go underground, see if there’s any hope underground.”

Myriad Year Flying Warship was maneuvering in the sky, dodging Spectral Soul’s black soul ball, but a large number of killer moves still landed on it.

The white ship defended against the barrage of killer moves, soon, a portion of the ship turned dim as the white color turned to grey, it floated in the sky. Next, it vanished into thin air after intense winds swept it away.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was like an injured flying fish, it dived downwards, almost crashing to the ground.

“Follow it!”

“This ship will break with three more rounds of attacks.”

“Fang Yuan must die!”

“If we cannot obtain it, we will destroy the sovereign immortal aperture along with him, we cannot let others benefit from this.”

The three forces made similar decisions as they ordered.

Boom!

Myriad Year Flying Warship dived down underground like a white meteor.

As dust clouds rumbled, earth shook but it could not scare off the pursuers, they followed the hole that Myriad Year Flying Warship created as they dived in.

Bam bam bam…

Many killer moves continued to land on Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Myriad Year Flying Warship was starting to break apart, it was in a critical state.

“Hahaha, Fang Yuan made a foolish move, this is the underground, Myriad Year Flying Warship can’t move easily while we can hit it with great precision.”

“He can neither go up or down now! Fang Yuan, you demon, you slaughtered innocents and harmed the world, today you will face retribution, this is all just desserts!”

“Offending us will lead to your pitiful end!”

The immortals roared in anger.

Seeing that Fang Yuan was escaping in distress, all of the immortals’ morale surged to a peak level.

They just needed to put in a bit more effort to see Fang Yuan die right in front of them.

Within Myriad Year Flying Warship, Wu Shuai was covered in blood. With such intense attacks, Myriad Year Flying Warship could not be repaired in time.

Rumble…

After the immortals made their preparation, they started to attack again with a new wave of moves.

Countless killer moves were unleashed with some distance between them, trying to avoid nullifying each other, the terrifying wave of attacks swept towards Myriad Year Flying Warship layer by layer.

“Die!”

Bam.

At the moment of life and death, Myriad Year Flying Warship crashed into the rock in front and barged into a huge underground space.

Myriad Year Flying Warship had room to maneuver, it dodged most of the killer moves and escaped destruction. It was like a drowning person suddenly breathing in some air.

“What happened?”

“We entered Earth Abyss!”

“Is this Fang Yuan’s intention?”

“Chase him, we cannot let him escape.”

The immortals were stunned before charging through the rocks, arriving in the underground space.

It turned out that while Spectral Soul chased Fang Yuan, they went towards the southeast from Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range. Demon Immortal Qi Jue came from the east, he cooperated with Spectral Soul to force Fang Yuan to go southwest. Finally, because Fairy Zi Wei and the rest came from the south, Fang Yuan had to go west in the end.

After traveling west for some time, they arrived in Ancient Soul Sect’s territory.

Ancient Soul Sect was one of the ten great ancient sects, it had a long history, one of Ancient Soul Sect’s territories was a huge underground abyss.

The underground abyss was at least hundreds of thousands of square kilometers in size. The space was extremely large and the underground world was deep and secluded. There were all sorts of caves and tunnels, some were like labyrinths, some had giant underground lakes while some had flat ground.

Countless lifeforms lived here, in Fang Yuan’s previous life, endless beast tides emerged from Earth Abyss, attacking the surface and bringing disaster to Central Continent.

Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects spent several years before they were finally able to eradicate the beast tide from the surface. Afterwards, both righteous and demonic path Gu Masters and Gu Immortals moved together to explore Earth Abyss.

In the end, they found that this Earth Abyss was unfathomably deep, it had layers after layers, by the time Fang Yuan used Spring Autumn Cicada, they had already discovered a hundred and seven underground layers. It was impossible to estimate how many layers were still left.

“The environment here is complex, there are many lifeforms, the lower we go, the more immemorial desolate beasts there are, this is the best place to escape to.” Wu Shuai who was within Myriad Year Flying Warship realized at once.

Using Earth Abyss, Myriad Year Flying Warship’s situation started to improve.

But Spectral Soul and the rest also understood Fang Yuan’s scheme.

Many Gu Immortals stopped attacking with their full strength, they were wary against each other, but after getting so far, nobody wanted to give up.

Fang Yuan’s circumstances were dangerous, even though Myriad Year Flying Warship was not taking as much damage as before, it was still slipping towards the abyss of destruction.

Fang Yuan and Wu Shuai cooperated, they planned to the best of their ability, using the terrain, but still could not shrug off these pursuers.

The only difference was that these pursuers were now grouped into different categories.

The first and closest person to Myriad Year Flying Warship was Spectral Soul.

Followed by Qi Sea Ancestor, Demon Immortal Qi Jue, and Qing Chou.

The final group was Heavenly Court, Longevity Heaven, Shadow Sect’s Fairy Zi Wei, and the rest.

Boom!

Myriad Year Flying Warship, which was about to be destroyed, charged through the rocks again as it went to a lower layer.

Countless bats flew and escaped in panic.

In this layer, there were countless bats living around, it was like a huge black tide that had no end in sight.

Ordinary bats were turned into pulp by Myriad Year Flying Warship, while alerted immemorial black bats attacked while moving against the tide.

In this layer, black bats were the absolute rulers, because Myriad Year Flying Warship disturbed them, they were going to punish this daring invader.

“Oh?” Spectral Soul followed closely behind.

He saw the endless black bats, he became joyful and surprised.

“Fang Yuan, even heaven is not helping you, it seems that this layer will be the place you die.” Spectral Soul suddenly howled.

As the howling sound spread out, innumerable black bats died, even ancient black bats were not spared. Only immemorial black bats survived, they tried to move with difficulty in the air.

Once Spectral Soul’s howling ended, countless bat souls appeared from these bat corpses.

These souls quickly fused with his voice as black smoke enveloped Myriad Year Flying Warship from all directions.

Myriad Year Flying Warship quickly disintegrated from the invasion of the black smoke, it could not hold on anymore.

“Retrieve the core Immortal Gu, we will abandon ship!” Fang Yuan’s main body ordered.

Like how they sacrificed Dragon Palace earlier, they took back the core Immortal Gu with all their effort at the end. Dragon Palace’s core Immortal Gu Dream Token was already successfully retrieved.

But this was a dangerous move, when Immortal Gu Houses face destruction, the Gu Immortal retrieving the core Immortal Gu could only do their best and leave the rest to chance. There could even be times when they were too hasty to take out the core Immortal Gu, causing it to be severely damaged instead, eventually resulting in the Immortal Gu’s destruction.

At the next moment, Myriad Year Flying Warship broke apart entirely, Fang Yuan and Wu Shuai got exposed to the black smoke.

“He’s here! I will block him.” Wu Shuai stood before Fang Yuan.

“I said this before, your struggles are futile.” Spectral Soul approached as he spoke in an icy tone.

Qi Sea Ancestor and the rest had just arrived with the rest, he saw the overwhelming black smoke that shattered the silver-white light, Spectral Soul was attacking Fang Yuan’s main body.

“No!” Qi Sea Ancestor could not help them from this distance, he could only shout out in his mind.

At the moment before death, Fang Yuan suddenly smiled: “You fell for my trap, Spectral Soul.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2047 - Carelessness

When Fairy Zi Wei and the rest arrived, they could only see an endless stream of black bats.

In this layer of the underground abyss, black bats were the sole rulers of all the living beings, right now, they felt provoked, they went into madness and rage.

Immemorial black bats commanded ancient black bats while ancient black bats commanded desolate beast black bats, these desolate beast black bats controlled the countless ordinary bats. When Shadow Sect, Longevity Heaven, and Heavenly Court arrived, the furious black bats poured their anger that had nowhere to be vented at these three parties.

Even though the three parties contained the strongest Gu Immortals in the current world, they could not help but freeze in their steps.

“Why are there so many black bats!”

“We need to kill the immemorial black bats to get rid of these beasts.”

“There are too many of them, these black bats are simply endless, we cannot waste time here, our primary goal is still Fang Yuan!”

The three groups charged into the black bat groups, they tried to move in this dangerous environment.

All of the Gu Immortals were top tier rank eight Gu Immortals in the current world, even though there were countless bats, they were still unable to match the immortals in actual combat.

But by the time the immortals got out of the bat groups, they could not see Myriad Year Flying Warship, Spectral Soul, Qing Chou, or others.

“What happened?”

“Where are they? There are no clues left behind at all!”

“This is impossible, we chased them according to the traces left behind from their fight.”

The immortals were shocked and uncertain.

Calamity Luck Altar burst out with golden radiance, melting the surrounding bats, a huge space was created immediately.

From within Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan’s impatient voice resounded: “Fairy Zi Wei, tell me, where is Fang Yuan?”

Old Man Zheng Yuan snorted coldly: “Why would we know?”

Qin Ding Ling sneered: “Shadow Sect, do you really think we are ignorant of your tricks? You waited and did not chase them, wasn’t it because you were trying to disrupt us?”

Qin Ding Ling spoke in a sharp tone, it seemed like she was sowing discord but it sounded like the truth, Shadow Sect got into a predicament immediately.

Fang Yuan, Spectral Soul, Qing Chou, Qi Sea, and Qi Jue all vanished, it was just too strange. The three forces chasing them became extremely anxious.

Fairy Zi Wei was also frowning deeply as she said: “We have lost contact with our master. I believe that other forces have interfered, the important thing is to find them now, if we fight among ourselves, this external force will succeed in their goal.”

Bing Sai Chuan spoke in an icy tone, not concealing his killing intent: “Then show me the capabilities of a wisdom path great expert.”

“Hmph, just you watch.” Fairy Zi Wei said as she started to activate her killer move, making deductions rapidly.

Qin Ding Ling did not speak but her killing intent was not concealed either. If she found any tricks from Shadow Sect, Heavenly Court would definitely attack them immediately.

Creak creak…

The surrounding black bats approached again, the Gu Immortals hesitated for a moment before quickly attacking and resisting the black bats for Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei’s body was shining in a purple-gold light, aurora spread out constantly.

Fairy Zi Wei’s expression turned increasingly pale, immortal essence was expended rapidly until her body started shivering. Afterwards, she opened her eyes, purple light filling her pupils.

As the purple-gold light faded away, Fairy Zi Wei’s pupils returned to normal.

Her aura was significantly weaker now, it was clear that she had done her best in the deduction.

Under everyone’s supervision, she let out a breath of air: “I deduced it, a battlefield killer move enveloped all of them, causing us to not sense them anywhere.”

“Battlefield killer move?”

“Who is ambushing them here?”

“Hmph, do you have evidence?”

Fairy Zi Wei sneered, as a wisdom path great expert, she would naturally not end up empty-handed, she immediately split the bat groups apart as she directed the immortals to a trace of earth path aura that was about to dissipate.

After sensing the aura, the immortals started to analyze it.

“It is an earth path killer move indeed!”

“It really seems like a battlefield killer move.”

“Watch me, I will find it!”

A certain Gu Immortal of Heavenly Court made his move, he was very confident at the start but soon, he returned without any progress.

Soon, this trace of earth path aura dissipated, only the bat groups remained to fight against the three groups of immortals.

The immortals’ expressions were very ugly.

Some were still suspicious about Shadow Sect, some were thinking about ways to find the enclosed immortal battlefield, some were forced to fight against the black bats.

Longevity Heaven’s Bing Sai Chuan still held some suspicions.

Fairy Zi Wei had the heaviest mood, she dealt with the black bats as she asked Heavenly Court: “You should be most familiar with this earth path aura! Heavenly Court, what do you think?”

Qin Ding Ling was silent for a moment before she said: “Indeed, this resembles Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s method. We have the same idea now, to find this immortal battlefield and destroy it!”

“So it is Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s force, no wonder…” Bing Sai Chuan realized at once.

In history, among the ten venerables, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was the most skilled at using immortal battlefield killer moves. His capability in this aspect was publicly known as the number one among venerables! Right now, the Reincarnation Battlefield that he created was still existing in Central Continent, owned by the ten great ancient sects.

Why did Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable's force take action?

None of the immortals here were surprised.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable were on opposite sides, everyone knew that. Back then, Spectral Soul slaughtered everyone in his way, causing great terror and chaos, all of the people in the five regions lived in fear, the righteous path was weak while the demonic path surged. Ever since Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable started cultivation, he worked hard to turn this trend around, he restored peace to the world and suppressed the demonic path, he brought fortune to the world.

Because of the ideologies of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, they had always conflicted.

“To find Paradise Earth's battlefield and destroy it, the difficulty is just…” Bing Sai Chuan shook his head, even an expert like him hesitated and felt troubled.

“Why would Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable's force take action? And why would they wait here in ambush?” A Gu Immortal asked.

This question made Fairy Zi Wei's mood even heavier, a dark cloud loomed over her, shrouding her face.

“It must be Fang Yuan!” Even though there was no evidence, Fairy Zi Wei still said that with great confidence.

She had fought against Fang Yuan too many times, she was basically the loser each time. This feeling of defeat was too common to Fairy Zi Wei, she had experienced it countless times.

Each time she thought that victory was close, Fang Yuan would turn the situation around.

This current situation was also the same, Fairy Zi Wei felt very familiar with it.

Qin Ding Ling agreed with Fairy Zi Wei's deduction: “We chased after Fang Yuan, but from another perspective, he was leading us here. While chasing and escaping, this route was planned by Fang Yuan. If he cooperated with Paradise Earth's force and created this situation, it is indeed the easiest way. But why would Paradise Earth's force cooperate with a demon like Fang Yuan? We have not seen it ourselves, is this really Paradise Earth's force? Or rather, which force under Paradise Earth is it?”

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was the closest venerable to the current era, he naturally left behind the highest number of forces.

Different from other venerables, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had never intentionally focused on developing any single force.

Heavenly Court had Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, and Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, it was developed by the three of them through painstaking effort. Longevity Heaven was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's grotto-heaven, it was the foundation that he had left behind. Shadow Sect was operated by Spectral Soul's split souls for many years, it used Zombie Alliance as the front to slowly accumulate influence and strength.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was different, he helped and assisted many different forces. For example, the Merman Imperial Court in Eastern Sea, it was because he did not want to see the merfolk get bullied. There was also Southern Border's Mushroomman Paradise, it was made because he did not want to see the mushroommen get slaughtered mercilessly.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had the ability to turn an immortal aperture into a paradise, he helped many Gu Immortals in his life, he altered many grotto-heavens and blessed lands.

He even helped to enlighten many legendary immemorial beasts, for example, the blue dragon whale.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable did not just help humans, he also helped variant humans, or even other living beings that were in need.

Thus, he was the most loved venerable and also the most merciful. Even though Heavenly Court's Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable also helped out countless living beings, he was mostly focused on helping nature and repairing habitats.

The other venerables all had offensive methods but only Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable did not.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had also left behind his true inheritances in various places. Southern Border's Mushroomman Paradise was one of them, thus, their leader, Southern Border's Gu Immortal Lu Wei Yin, was also called Paradise Earth's inheritor, nobody could refute it. Before the fate war, Fairy Zi Wei even went to the Mushroomman Paradise and borrowed benevolence Gu.

All the immortals could not think of an answer now.

Because of Paradise Earth's actions, many forces and Gu Immortals were related to him in some way. There was no way of knowing which force it was exactly.

"Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable focused on removing Spectral Soul's influence his entire life, he was a merciful and benevolent person who brought peace. Would his force cooperate with a demon like Fang Yuan? It is not impossible. Didn't Heavenly Court cooperate with me temporarily as well?" Fairy Zi Wei's heart was filled with a solemn emotion.

The more she thought, the worse she found the situation.

The reason why Heavenly Court worked with Shadow Sect was so that Fang Yuan and Spectral Soul would fight each other, it would be great if these two demons were killed at the same time!

If Paradise Earth's force and Fang Yuan cooperated while having such thoughts, why would it be impossible?

With Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable's status and nature, he would not do something like laying an ambush. But the Immortal Venerable had died already, nobody knew the temperament of the force that he left behind, or even his inheritor!

"This situation must have surpassed master's expectations."

"But there can be a worse situation, that is, Fang Yuan planned all of this. He gave up on Dragon Palace and Myriad Year Flying Warship just so he could lure master into this battlefield.”

“No matter what the truth is, I need to do my best to save master!!”

Fairy Zi Wei sensed something amiss, she was very anxious. As a wisdom path great expert, any changes in her emotions needed to be assigned great importance.

Spectral Soul had an advantage against Fang Yuan of course, but against another venerable’s force, it would not be so certain. And most importantly, this was the venerable who purposely went against Spectral Soul in history, Paradise Earth!

At the same time, in the earth path battlefield.

Spectral Soul looked at the surrounding sand, his expression turned cold as ice: “Good, very good. So you are Lu Wei Yin, the current generation inheritor of Paradise Earth?”

A Gu Immortal stepped on a yellow cloud, he cupped his fists at Spectral Soul: “Lord Demon Venerable is very perceptive, I have been waiting here for a long time.”

At the side, Fang Yuan urged: “Lu Wei Yin, I lured him here already. Don’t expect me to take action now, show me your sincerity… urgh!”

Fang Yuan suddenly stopped speaking as he retreated rapidly.

It was too late!

In an instant, Spectral Soul suddenly arrived in front of him using an unknown method.

“Fang Yuan, you are too careless. It is a pity you got this far, but go and die now!” Spectral Soul stretched out his hand as he grabbed Fang Yuan’s neck.

Fang Yuan stared with eyes wide open, he could not break free!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Spectral Soul was indeed the Demon Venerable who killed his way to the top!

Any other person would be wary at the first moment and defend against an assault. But he had abundant battle experience, after falling into a trap, he made perfect use of an opportunity to attack instantly!

Undoubtedly, he chose a great timing.

Fang Yuan was pursued by three parties, the pressure was huge, after getting into this safe area, it was not strange that he would relax his mind.

Spectral Soul distracted him with words while preparing his killer move. This move had no aura or commotion, only Wu Yong in the current five regions could match him in this aspect. Once used, Spectral Soul turned the situation around, he grabbed Fang Yuan’s neck tightly.

Spectral Soul’s move was also extraordinary, it was called soul shattering hand. This move could only be used at an extremely close range, it was a close combat method.

In Gu Immortal battles, close combat was rare. Most engaged in long distance combat, only few paths like transformation path or strength path would focus on hand-to-hand combat. Soul shattering hand had an extremely close range, it was very limited in usage but Spectral Soul still held onto it without discarding it, the reason was because this move had incredible power, once it struck the enemy, it could easily decide the victor of the battle.

At the next moment, soul shattering hand activated!

A smile appeared on Fang Yuan’s face again, while Spectral Soul’s expression turned grim.

The ’Fang Yuan’ in his hand quickly turned into sand and scattered with the wind, it was actually a puppet made of sand!

As yellow sand flew in the air, Fang Yuan’s voice could be heard as he praised: "Spectacular indeed! Lu Wei Yin, your effort and time spent to specially create this illusory sand shifting shadow battlefield was not in vain."

Fang Yuan did not conceal his voice, Spectral Soul snorted coldly as he looked for traces, flying past the sand and arriving in front of Fang Yuan.

Spectral Soul attacked again while Fang Yuan did not dodge.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan scattered into countless sand specks again.

It was a rare sight as Spectral Soul finally frowned this time.

Lu Wei Yin’s voice was transmitted: "Fang Yuan, you are too kind. The truth is, Friend Spectral Soul is too strong, I had to set up my strongest battlefield killer move. I won’t hide it, even though this battlefield originated from Paradise Earth’s true inheritance, it has been modified by many generations, it has many changes done to it. The sand puppet double earlier can deceive the enemy’s senses and lure away firepower."

"Lu Wei Yin, do you want to lose your Southern Border Mushroomman Paradise? To think my Shadow Sect let you off purposely back then." Spectral Soul called out coldly, he stared at Lu Wei Yin’s sand puppet fixedly. He knew that Lu Wei Yin purposely spoke to target his morale, to exert mental pressure on him.

In a battle between experts, every word was a contest. Especially against information path Gu Immortals, every word they said was sharp like a blade or spear, the enemies could not be lax against them.

Fang Yuan ignored Spectral Soul and continued to speak with Lu Wei Yin: "Even though I used up two Immortal Gu Houses to lower this old monster’s wariness, this battlefield killer move has such power, it was not a waste. Now, it will depend on you."

Lu Wei Yin knew about Fang Yuan’s tribulation, in fact, the heavenly mark killer move that Fang Yuan had was also given to him by Lu Wei Yin!

As a matter of fact, Fang Yuan did not trust Lu Wei Yin. His original destination was not Earth Abyss but Crazed Demon Cave instead. Fang Yuan did not know a lot about Lu Wei Yin’s background, there was nothing much about him in the five hundred years of memories either.

Right now, not only was Spectral Soul stuck in the illusory sand shifting shadow battlefield, Fang Yuan was the same.

Fang Yuan’s two Immortal Gu Houses, Dragon Palace and Myriad Year Flying Warship, were also destroyed, he lost many Gu worms, even the few core Immortal Gu that he retrieved were all injured.

Spectral Soul snickered: "Fang Yuan, hide well. Maybe Lu Wei Yin will let you out? Hehehe, but it is not a problem, Paradise Earth died long ago, his earth path battlefield cannot trap me for long. Once I decipher this place, it will be your time to die!"

Lu Wei Yin did not answer, he activated the battlefield.

From the yellow sand flying around Spectral Soul, a figure flew out, it was Fang Yuan’s Qi Sea clone.

Qi Sea Ancestor saw Spectral Soul and got stunned, it was as if he had just charged through the sandstorm and did not expect to see Spectral Soul here.

But at the next moment, Qi Sea Ancestor made his move, unleashing qi path methods on Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul snorted coldly, he blocked the attacks and wanted to retaliate but saw that Qi Sea Ancestor got enveloped by the sandstorm, vanishing into thin air.

Spectral Soul immediately chased, he went into the yellow sand, but he could not see any sign of Qi Sea Ancestor.

Another figure approached, it was Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Spectral Soul was about to speak when he saw that Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s expression was strange, he became wary.

As expected, Demon Immortal Qi Jue attacked him at the next moment.

Spectral Soul resisted as he called out: "Qi Jue, what are you doing?"

Demon Immortal Qi Jue snickered: "Qi Sea Ancestor, since you provoked me, I will show you the true power of qi path!"

After hearing this, Spectral Soul became stunned, he thought: "Don’t tell me this earth path battlefield has another ability to confuse enemies?"

Since Spectral Soul could perceive the sand puppet as Fang Yuan without realizing so, it was not strange that Demon Immortal Qi Jue would get deceived and mistake him for Qi Sea Ancestor.

Spectral Soul and Demon Immortal Qi Jue fought for over ten rounds, Demon Immortal Qi Jue suffered injuries as he got devoured by the sandstorm again.

Next was Qing Chou.

"Spectral Soul, I want you dead! I want you dead!" Qing Chou was still insane, the rank nine aura on its body was extremely dense, Spectral Soul’s heart jumped upon sensing it.

Like this, at times he fought Qi Sea Ancestor, at times he fought Demon Immortal Qi Jue, sometimes, he even faced the legendary immemorial desolate beast Qing Chou.

They started to appear and disappear in the sandstorm, engaging with Spectral Soul while taking turns!

Spectral Soul had outstanding battle strength, far beyond them individually, but whenever he gained some advantage, Lu Wei Yin, who controlled the battlefield, would swap opponents and leave Spectral Soul helpless.

Even after several rounds of attacks, Spectral Soul could not break free from the yellow sand, he could only fight them.

Faraway in the battlefield, Fang Yuan was focusing on his tribulation. Wu Shuai guarded him with a vigilant expression, all around him, countless army ants gathered into a hollow ball, shielding him and Fang Yuan from the outside.

Within the sovereign immortal aperture, the myriad tribulation had already turned into a torrential flood!

Water levels rose, engulfing ten thousand li of land.

Fang Yuan’s five regions were all affected, a large number of small sized resource points were completely destroyed, Mini Central Continent’s spirit spring forest, Mini Northern Plains’ bone burial field, contact heart river bank, Mini Western Desert’s eerie fire dragon python, sand gull soil beach, Mini Southern Border’s become dragon mound, Heaven Sealing Mountain, and Mini Eastern Sea’s jade root lake were all heavily damaged. As for the few resource points that Fang Yuan defended heavily, they also met with a huge impact.

Fang Yuan’s losses were severe!

There was no helping it, he had done his best.

The good thing was that his hard work and sacrifices were not in vain, he had already refined more than twenty heaven path dao marks!

Against the initial myriad tribulation, myriad destruction lightning forest, Fang Yuan came up with a countermeasure after great effort. Due to heaven’s will’s manipulation, the heaven path dao marks immediately changed the tribulation, causing Fang Yuan’s previous method to become ineffective.

If this happened to most Gu Immortals in the current world, it would lead to despair. But for Fang Yuan, each time the myriad tribulation transformed, it was a great opportunity for him!

Because he had the killer move exposing heavenly secret.

Exposing heavenly secret allowed Fang Yuan to accurately predict what the next tribulation was, even though he could not prepare for it amply, it was still an opportunity he could use.

After all, the greatest problem and danger of tribulations was that they could not be predicted. Once they were known beforehand, their threat level would fall by many times.

Of course, even if myriad tribulations could be predicted, they were still myriad tribulations. Thus, the sovereign immortal aperture flooded and countless resources were destroyed.

Fang Yuan’s losses were huge, but it was not a bad thing entirely!

The myriad tribulation’s power continued to fall, because the essence of the Heavenly Dao was to maintain balance, the more losses Fang Yuan suffered, the weaker the tribulation would be, even if heaven’s will was here, it could not defy the natural operations of the Heavenly Dao.

More and more heaven path dao marks were refined by Fang Yuan, his speed of refinement was getting faster and faster!

The first step was the hardest, Fang Yuan sacrificed all of his soul beasts to create an opportunity in this biggest predicament of his life.

He succeeded!

Despite the myriad tribulation’s rampage, Fang Yuan already managed to regain his footing, he was slowly turning the situation around.

Spectral Soul fell into a tough battle.

Lu Wei Yin controlled the illusory sand shifting shadow battlefield, causing him to be in an extremely passive spot.

Qi Sea Ancestor, Demon Immortal Qi Jue, Qing Chou, and even Lu Wei Yin could attack Spectral Soul at the same time.

Qing Chou was overcome by rage, it was once used by Spectral Soul, but in here, Lu Wei Yin could relocate it easily, Spectral Soul had no opportunities to do so.

As intense winds blew, a sandstorm brewed, suddenly, all of the sand gathered into rocks, they flew around in their own vortexes.

Instantly, countless flying rocks enveloped Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul waved his hand as smoke flew out, some of the flying rocks melted in the black smoke but most of them pierced through it and shot towards Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul’s figure suddenly vanished, when he reappeared, he was already at the other end of the battlefield.

He dodged almost all of the flying rocks, but after these flying rocks flew into the sandstorm, they turned back into sand.

After that, the sand turned back into yellowish flying rocks that shot towards Spectral Soul.

"This move is called flying sand turning rocks, please evaluate it, Lord Spectral Soul." Lu Wei Yin’s voice resounded from within.

"Child’s play." Spectral Soul howled as his body shook, black smoke rumbled with him as the center, spreading towards the surroundings with rapid speed.

"Spin." As Spectral Soul vanished within the black smoke, he shouted again.

At the next moment, the black smoke turned into a vortex that started to rotate. Spectral Soul was at the center, he released black smoke while simultaneously absorbing it.

As the flying rocks flew into the black smoke, they corroded into sand before the black smoke swept them into Spectral Soul’s immortal aperture.

Seeing this countermeasure, Lu Wei Yin praised: "Brilliant, as expected of Lord Spectral Soul. However, I specially chose the location of my battlefield on this earth vein. No matter how many flying rocks you absorb, this battlefield can draw more earth qi from the earth vein as replenishment. Thus, unless you can deplete the entire earth vein, these flying rocks are endless."

These words did not affect Spectral Soul, the former Demon Venerable sneered with deep killing intent: "Lu Wei Yin, did you think this move only countered your flying sand turning rocks?"

"Oh no." Lu Wei Yin’s expression changed, there was no time to react.

At the next moment, all of the flying sand in the sky fell to the ground, a portion of the illusory sand shifting shadow battlefield was corroded by the black smoke, it returned to being a flat yellowish landscape.

"Shifting sand illusion was actually broken so quickly!" Lu Wei Yin’s expression was ugly.

Spectral Soul hid his true move deeply, he seemed to be dealing with the killer move, flying sand turning rocks, but his real target was shifting sand illusion. Now that this move was broken, there were no longer any sand puppets left.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue broke out of the illusion, while Fang Yuan’s real location was exposed.

"Fang Yuan, how long are you going to hide for?" Spectral Soul flew towards Fang Yuan without hesitation.

Wu Shuai fought to resist him, but the defense of the army ants became torn apart instantly by Spectral Soul.

A black soul ball shot out, after a few breaths of time, it reached Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan remained seated on the ground, he opened his eyes as he smiled lightly: "I don’t need to dodge."

Rumble!

An Immortal Gu House suddenly appeared, shielding Wu Shuai and Fang Yuan.

The black soul ball landed on the Immortal Gu House, erupting with immense might. However, this Immortal Gu House remained still like a mountain, it did not move!

"You still have an Immortal Gu House?!" At this moment, Spectral Soul’s pupils shrank, he frowned deeply.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2049 Spectral Soul“s Anxiety

An Immortal Gu House suddenly appeared in the battlefield.

It was like a mountain, but it was not tall. There were clear layers on this mountain from the bottom to the top, it was smooth on the surface, so it resembled a tower made of dozens of giant drums. This Immortal Gu House was yellowish brown, there was also a misty layer of sand covering its surface, giving it a strong feeling of sturdiness and peace.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House — Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress!

This earth path Immortal Gu House was obtained when Fang Yuan explored the dream realm. It was different from most Immortal Gu Houses in essence, because this

Immortal Gu House did not have any core Immortal Gu, its core was made of immortal killer moves.

Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress had three core killer moves, the most important one was accumulated soil mountain.

This move was very special, it did not have offense, movement, healing or other aspects. Using this killer move, the Gu Immortal could stack earth path Gu worms to allow them to form an Immortal Gu House! This could be done even if the Gu Immortal using the killer move had zero attainment in formation path itself!

Gaining this killer move was also the same as gaining the foundation of the Immortal Gu House, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress!

Thus, every Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress had a different appearance. In fact, even for the same Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, because the earth path Gu worms used were different, they could gain various forms and abilities.

Fang Yuan had created this Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress for some time already. He obtained the complete blueprint from the dream realm, he also gained a large number of earth path Immortal Gu from the blue dragon whale. The truth was, he had already obtained this rank eight Immortal Gu House before the fate war!

Right now, Fang Yuan took out this Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress to change the situation.

Spectral Soul’s assault did not work on Fang Yuan, Lu Wei Yin, Qing Chou, and the rest could force him to divert his target to them.

"I thought Fang Yuan was lying earlier to put up a front, I thought he was forced to abandon Myriad Year Flying Warship and Dragon Palace. Now it seems, he intentionally lured me into this trap!" Spectral Soul’s heart sank a little.

The truth was, Fang Yuan’s act of giving up the two Immortal Gu Houses did lower his wariness. After all, without Myriad Year Flying Warship or Dragon Palace, Fang Yuan really seemed like he was at his wits’ end.

To think that he had such a trump card!

Lu Wei Yin also felt surprised, thinking to himself: Fang Yuan was willing to pay such a huge price to lure Spectral Soul here. Is this a form of trust? Or is he testing our first cooperation?

The truth was, Fang Yuan had no other choice.

Even though he had been keeping this Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress a secret, it had one huge drawback. Its speed was too slow! If there was a list of fastest to slowest Immortal Gu Houses, this Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress would definitely rank at the bottom without doubt.

Honestly speaking, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress was the tortoise among Immortal Gu Houses, its speed was only superior to immortal formations, it was simply helpless. But such weaknesses came with great advantages, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress had an incredibly powerful defense instead!

If Spectral Soul or Lu Wei Yin knew about Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress’ weakness, they would understand Fang Yuan’s plight.

If he took out Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress earlier in the battle, he would not be able to get far, he would only be a target board, attacked by everyone. Even though Fang Yuan would have some temporary safety, the other forces could mobilize their people and gather to kill Fang Yuan together.

Thus, he could not stay at one spot, this was Central Continent, Heavenly Court’s territory, even though Heavenly Court was weak now, it was still governing the ten great ancient sects!

But here, when Fang Yuan used Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, the effect was completely different.

Spectral Soul had to defend against the attacks of Lu Wei Yin, Qi Sea Ancestor, and the rest, he did not forget to attack Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress in the meantime.

But Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress remained unmovable, it was a true fortress!

Even someone like Spectral Soul started to be emotionally affected. His main target was Fang Yuan from the start, but to get to him, he would have to destroy this Immortal Gu House. This huge obstacle was causing Spectral Soul to feel anxious internally.

If Spectral Soul ignored Fang Yuan and dealt with the enemies in this battlefield, Fang Yuan would gain more time to recuperate. This was something Spectral Soul did not want to see.

During the intense battle, Spectral Soul looked towards Qing Chou, thinking of using it to create an opening.

But Lu Wei Yin sensed it quickly, once Spectral Soul showed signs of targeting Qing Chou, he would use the battlefield killer move to teleport Qing Chou away.

Qing Chou only targeted its greatest enemy, Spectral Soul, it knew that Lu Wei Yin was trying to help it instead of Spectral Soul, it would not attack him abruptly.

Spectral Soul’s plans were thwarted in advance, he transmitted to Demon Immortal Qi Jue: "Qi Jue, focus on destroying this Immortal Gu House, I will definitely satisfy you with the reward!"

Demon Immortal Qi Jue hesitated: "Spectral Soul, you have higher battle strength than me, if you can’t succeed, how can I?"

Spectral Soul snorted coldly: "Who says I can’t do it? It will merely take some effort. We lack cooperation, the best move now is for me to deal with these enemies and the battlefield while you target Fang Yuan. You have the secluded domain of heaven and earth, Xi, as long as you pay some price, how hard can it be to destroy the Immortal Gu House?"

Spectral Soul’s main target was Fang Yuan but now, he had to look away from his target. Firstly, this Immortal Gu House had high defense, destroying it was too troublesome. Secondly, Spectral Soul and Qi Jue were just working together, their relationship was quite shallow, Qi Jue was not reliable at all. Asking him to attack was guarding against him, if anything happened, Spectral Soul could still break out of the battlefield, it was a relatively safer option.

Spectral Soul had the strongest killing nature throughout history, but he was not a fool who lacked wisdom or logic, he was not overwhelmed by his desire to kill.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue also did not want to be trapped in this battlefield, he did not doubt Spectral Soul’s decision to destroy the battlefield.

He thought about it for a while before laughing: "My Xi Land can break this earth path Immortal Gu House but the price is very steep, after all, I cultivate qi path and not earth path. After I succeed, it is likely that my Xi Land will be destroyed! But this deal is not impossible, it will depend on you, Spectral Soul, what price can you pay me to make such a huge sacrifice?"

"What, you think I can’t afford it?" Spectral Soul asked.

"You are a venerable, you have immense foundation, I am quite looking forward to it. But until now, the true inheritances that you gave me are high in quantity but lack quality, I am quite disappointed."

"Hmph! You mean to say, only venerable inheritances are good enough for you."

"Of course." Demon Immortal Qi Jue spoke openly: "Only venerable true inheritances are of value to me. In fact, I am interested in your true inheritance too!"

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was an old demon, in this situation, he actually wanted to extort Spectral Soul’s soul path true inheritance. This was a really shameless thing to do.

Spectral Soul was not willing to take this loss, he replied firmly: "Qi Jue, don’t forget about our goal! If you do not put in effort now, how can you kill Fang Yuan? We might both get trapped in this battlefield, ending up as their prey."

Demon Immortal Qi Jue became silent, the situation was quite tense now, this earth path battlefield had unfathomable depths, he had not understood it completely yet.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was merely testing him earlier, seeing that Spectral Soul was firm in his stance, he decided to work together and get over this hurdle first.

Even though Spectral Soul broke one layer of the earth path battlefield, the combination of Lu Wei Yin, Qing Chou, and Qi Sea Ancestor still placed a huge pressure on him.

Even though Demon Immortal Qi Jue countered Qi Sea Ancestor entirely, due to Lu Wei Yin’s control, Qi Sea Ancestor did not fight against Demon Immortal Qi Jue. Qing Chou was actually quite useful here, this beast fought without regard for its life, it created huge problems for Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Battlefield killer moves were hard to set up, but usually, after they were activated, the Gu Immortal would gain a huge advantage in the domain.

Enslavement path and formation path could allow one to fight against many enemies, it was because these two paths could allow one to gain huge strength if used well.

As for this illusory sand shifting shadow battlefield, it was created by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, modified by generations of inheritors, it was very threatening. Furthermore, this battlefield was created in Earth Abyss, combined with the earth vein, it had an unceasing amount of earth qi, Spectral Soul and Qi Jue were troubled.

Within the sovereign immortal aperture, the myriad tribulation was still continuing.

The myriad tribulation changed again, it was a flood earlier, now it turned into a blazing flame, razing everything to the ground and creating huge heat waves.

"I have already refined more than fifty heaven path dao marks!" Fang Yuan made some new progress.

Each time the myriad tribulation changed, it created danger for him.

But danger was accompanied by opportunity!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2050 - How Do We Fight This?

Along with his gains, Fang Yuan also paid a hefty price.

Mini Southern Border, which was the most prosperous of the five mini regions, was half devastated.

Immortal Succession Mountain was destroyed, washed away entirely by the flood. This mountain was a mid-sized resource point obtained from Hei Fan grotto-heaven, it once had the ability to help mortals ascend to immortal.

There was also Heaven Sealing Mountain. This mountain was created by Fang Yuan, it was small and unassuming, within the mountain itself, Fang Yuan had once set up a formation to seal his strength path immortal zombie body.

Other than them, there were also up to a hundred mountains and valleys. The greatest losses were Interior Rain Mountain, Copper Seal Mountain, and Bone Bird Peak.

Interior Rain Mountain’s peak was always shrouded by a layer of dark clouds from where light rain continued to fall. The drizzling rain was not ordinary rainwater, but rank six immortal material interior rain! This was a resource point that produced water path immortal materials, now it was in ruins.

Copper Seal Mountain was no longer whole, it used to have a red and squarish shape, it was like a large seal was standing upright in Mini Southern Border. This mountain did not have even a trace of soil, it was completely formed from all kinds of copper.

There was mortal level copper like chaotic sky copper, pragna copper, snow flower copper, and so on, and immortal copper like profound grey copper and ascending dragon copper.

Copper Seal Mountain was so special, it was heavily targeted by the myriad tribulation myriad destruction lightning forest. Now, half of the mountain was destroyed and charred, giving out dense smoke and sparks. The entire mountain had turned into a molten state, it emitted a terrible smell.

This mountain once produced domination copper, that was a rank seven immortal material! It was a pity that the tribulation struck, it could no longer produce any.

As for Bone Bird Peak, it used to have a large number of flower wing white bone birds, filled with vitality. Now, the entire mountain had collapsed too, all of the flower wing white bone birds died from the lightning bolts.

Lightning bolts destroyed mountains, floods destroyed forests.

Fang Yuan had originally obtained a large amount of musical trees from Hei Fan grotto-heaven, he created Mini Southern Border’s primitive forest using them. After this myriad tribulation, what forest could survive? Not to mention the beautiful qi death birds or the fragrant tea streams.

Mini Southern Border was almost completely devastated.

Only several areas were heavily protected by Fang Yuan.

Among them were the coiling thread caves, stalactite caves, and the dark inkstone mines. These resource points were all underground, it was easier to preserve them. Furthermore, the rockmen lived in these places.

Fire Bird Mountain was an exception, because it was quite isolated, it escaped this disaster.

This mid-sized resource point had fire path birds of all kinds growing in it. At the top of the volcano were fire phoenixes that were suppressed by the formation. The sunset parasol trees on the mountain absorbed lava as nutrients to grow, branches extended as leaves grew, they gave out the beautiful light of the setting sun, it was an amazing sight to behold.

Other than Mini Southern Border, the other four mini regions were also affected to some extent.

Mini Northern Plains’ shallow rock beach was obtained from annexing Han Dong blessed land. It was completely washed away by the floods, all of the pinkish red spirit snakes living in it died.

Mini Western Desert’s hound desert was obtained from Liu Yong blessed land. There were more than twenty desolate hounds there, they all died without a corpse remaining.

Mini Central Continent and Mini Eastern Sea, even the mini nine heavens were implicated by the myriad tribulation!

However, Fang Yuan could not care about it at this point.

Myriad tribulations had taken so many rank eight Gu Immortals’ lives, in the long history of the world, countless geniuses died primarily from them. If he was careless, even Fang Yuan could lose his life!

Fang Yuan not only had to deal with the myriad tribulation, he also had to face the three forces chasing after him!!

If losing some resources meant that he could improve the situation, why wouldn’t Fang Yuan do it?

What was more important, his life or these resources?

The answer was obvious.

Only by staying alive could he have any hope for the future.

In fact, even if all of Fang Yuan’s resources were destroyed, even if he lost the sovereign immortal body and his clones, as long as he was alive and got through this predicament, as long as he had one breath remaining, he would accept the result.

The most important thing was an unyielding spirit, how could mere success and failure determine his life!

“The loss of these resource points is actually helpful to me. The Heavenly Dao seeks balance, with these resource points gone, the myriad tribulation has weakened proportionately. Thus, my efficiency in refining the heaven path dao marks will continue to become higher! Hmm?”

Fang Yuan’s expression suddenly changed.

Rumble!

With an intense sound, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress shook harshly, hundreds and thousands of Gu worms shattered and died.

It was the move that Demon Immortal Qi Jue had been preparing for a long time!

Demon Immortal Qi Jue!

This old demon who had resisted Limitless Demon Venerable in history, he had vicious methods capable of weakening and damaging Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress. If he was allowed to continue attacking, he would eventually break through Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress.

It was not that Lu Wei Yin or the Qi Sea clone did not try to stop him, but Spectral Soul’s continuous attacks hindered them.

Spectral Soul’s body surged with black smoke, he attacked and defended at times, unleashing several immemorial soul beasts while using peculiar soul path killer moves. He not only protected Qi Jue, giving him ample time and opportunity to attack, he even probed illusory sand shifting shadow battlefield even further, he managed to break another layer of this battlefield!

“Lu Wei Yin, Qing Chou, and the Qi Sea clone are attacking Spectral Soul but he is still having an easy time. This current Spectral Soul is also just his remnant soul, he is still injured and has not reached the peak state he was in during the time he refined sovereign immortal fetus Gu.”

Fang Yuan sighed internally.

He could genuinely feel the depth of Spectral Soul’s strength!

“I cannot let this go on, Wu Shuai, go and join the battle, deal with Spectral Soul!” Fang Yuan instructed.

In this current situation, Spectral Soul and the other two forces wanted Fang Yuan dead. On the other hand, Lu Wei Yin carried on Paradise Earth’s will, he wanted to exterminate Spectral Soul.

Fang Yuan was the focus, but Spectral Soul was also crucial.

Fang Yuan did not feel great external pressure now, his wariness stemmed from Spectral Soul, he did not hesitate to use all his strength against him.

Wu Shuai joined the fight!

At once, army ants gathered and formed a river of ants, they swept towards Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul split a portion of his concentration and used killer moves to resist them.

Wu Shuai was Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone, he cultivated enslavement path, even though he had not cultivated for long, he inherited the inheritance of the dragonman race, as well as the actual Wu Shuai’s true inheritance.

After several rounds of attacks, Lu Wei Yin became hopeful as he thought: “Even though Wu Shuai does not attack often, he has rank eight cultivation level, his battle strength is quite incredible. With him around, we can finally place pressure on Spectral Soul!”

With him controlling the battlefield, even Qing Chou could join the fight, not to mention Wu Shuai who cooperated with them.

Wu Shuai soon mixed in with this group, their tempo became faster as they emitted greater pressure on Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul was the strongest in the world, but he had not regained his peak strength. Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Qi Sea Ancestor could fight him for over ten rounds even if they could not defeat him.

With Wu Shuai’s participation, a qualitative change appeared, it tilted the balance of both sides.

Lu Wei Yin and the rest attacked unceasingly, their attacks did not stop even once.

Spectral Soul started to get into a passive spot as he resisted their joint attacks.

Immortal killer move — Upper-Lower Breathless Qi!

Demon Immortal Qi Jue stretched out two fingers as he pointed at the top and bottom of Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress.

At once, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress became immobilized, Fang Yuan who was inside had a change of expression, he could not breath smoothly. Even worse was that his injection of immortal essence into Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress became choppy and inconsistent.

Immortal Gu Houses required a lot of immortal essence to work. The same applied to Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, after getting hit by this move, its defenses became much weaker.

A huge flaw in Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress became exposed.

It was just too slow, it had to resist most killer moves head on. Of course, it had immense defense, it could waste a lot of the enemies’ immortal essence.

Thus, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress was suited for a battle of attrition. Gu Immortals could heal up inside and analyze the enemy’s killer moves while using the defense to waste the enemy’s immortal essence.

Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress also lacked offensive methods. The truth was, Demon Immortal Qi Jue could ignore Fang Yuan and help Spectral Soul fight against Lu Wei Yin and the rest. Fang Yuan was currently troubled by the myriad tribulation, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress was of little threat to them in terms of offense.

Immortal killer move — Soul Explosion!

Spectral Soul suddenly turned around, he endured the attacks of Lu Wei Yin and the rest as he pointed with his fingers, more than ten black dots flew out.

The black dots shot towards the top of Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress before turning into more than ten immemorial soul beasts.

These immemorial soul beasts crashed down onto Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, their mountain-like bodies completely burying the Immortal Gu House.

At the next moment, boom!

A terrifying explosion killed these immemorial soul beasts on the spot, their sacrifices resulted in this intense explosion resembling a giant black ball.

The black ball rapidly expanded, in a few breaths of time, it grew to over the size of a hundred li!

The earth and mountains shook, the entire battlefield started to shake intensely.

Lu Wei Yin’s expression changed, he immediately went away to defend the battlefield. If this battlefield broke, even if one corner of it was destroyed, the entire situation would aggravate.

“Spectral Soul is so crafty, he actually had such a terrifying move!” Demon Immortal Qi Jue squinted, retreating to a safe distance: “Soul explosion is not uncommon, it is expected that he would detonate the immemorial soul beasts, but how could he perfectly fuse the detonation of more than ten immemorial soul beasts together like this?”

“Oh no, I wonder how our main body is doing?” Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor became worried.

“Roar!” Qing Chou was also implicated and got quite injured, the greater the pain, the more maniacal it became.

It did not care about anything, it attacked Spectral Soul again.

Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor had to follow suit, they could not allow Spectral Soul to absorb Qing Chou’s strength.

After using this move, Spectral Soul also turned pale. Against Qing Chou’s assault, he focused on defense while trying to recover. It was evident that the move earlier consumed a huge amount of his mental energy!

In truth, this soul explosion was very costly. Immemorial soul beasts had rank eight battle strength, Spectral Soul expended more than ten of them at once!

“I wonder how Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress is now?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue approached Fang Yuan.

As the dust clouds faded away, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress appeared in everyone’s vision again.

They saw that this earth path Immortal Gu House was thirty percent shorter, the surface seemed damaged but no holes were created.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue squinted as he sighed internally: “This Immortal Gu House’s defense is likely the highest of all Immortal Gu Houses that currently exist!”

Immortal killer move — Accumulated Soil Mountain!

Within the Immortal Gu House, Fang Yuan injected immortal essence as he activated the core killer move.

Countless earth path Gu worms flew up in sovereign immortal aperture, entering the Immortal Gu House. After three breaths of time, not only did Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress recover fully, its appearance also changed, instead of being round like before, it became more like a tower now, there were edges and sharp corners.

“This?!” Even someone like Demon Immortal Qi Jue stared at this with wide eyes, he felt a little empty internally.

This was too shameless.

Not only did Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress have high defense, its recovery speed was also this fast!

In the current world, most Immortal Gu Houses could not be easily repaired. When replenishing Gu worms, those positions were usually fixed. It was also not as easy as placing Gu worms into these specific positions, there was usually a need to use special Gu worms or killer moves to achieve this.

Immortal Gu Houses were a type of mobile immortal formation, to repair Immortal Gu Houses or immortal formations, one had to consider the influence that these actions would have on the main structure.

But Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress was different.

Looking at one example.

Repairing other Immortal Gu Houses was like stacking a Jenga tower, the Gu Immortals had to put specific Gu worms into specific holes. During this process, the Gu Immortal had to use methods to stabilize the tower while placing the Gu worms to try to prevent it from toppling.

But Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress was the opposite, because the core was made of immortal killer moves, no matter how many earth path Gu worms Fang Yuan put in, they could easily merge with the tower and have great stability. In fact, they could even alter the properties of the tower.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Spectral Soul spent so long dealing with Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, they had finally gotten some information about it, yet after Fang Yuan’s modifications, the entire fortress was different than before. Spectral Soul and Qi Jue’s probe had to start all over again!

“How do we fight this?” Similar thoughts emerged in the minds of Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Spectral Soul.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2051 - Giant Spectral Soul

Other Gu Immortals would feel despair at this moment.

“This rascal Fang Yuan is too good at turtling up, how can we kill him?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue asked with a tone that contained anger and frustration.

Spectral Soul also turned silent for a moment before he smiled coldly.

Instantly, a terrifying killing intent seemed to condense and solidify, emanating from his body, everyone could feel their limbs turning cold as they shook in their hearts.

After suffering a setback, Spectral Soul’s determination to kill Fang Yuan became even firmer!

“I will dismantle his tortoise shell! Go and deal with the rest, guard me.” Spectral Soul said as his soul flew out and devoured Lady Cold Ash’s body in one mouthful.

A soul giant that was as large as a mountain appeared before everyone!

The giant’s body was black as ink, it had muscular limbs and bulging muscles. There were two heads, one was scary while the other was cold and aloof. The first pair of eyes had blood red light in them, shooting towards heaven, the other pair of eyes was cold as ice, emitting a deep chill.

It also had six hundred pairs of arms that were raised up or lowered, some were tucked in while others were straight, it showed the stance of grasping the sun and moon, it had the potential to catch stars and whip up storms.

“Amazing giant!” Lu Wei Yin’s body shook as he praised, fighting spirit surged in him as he shouted: “Then take this move!”

He used all his strength to activate illusory sand shifting shadow battlefield.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Intense winds blew as yellow sand flew, countless rocks moved along, they slammed towards the black soul giant’s body like shooting stars.

The black soul giant only watched coldly as it raised its arms.

Two hundred pairs of arms stretched out and stabbed into the sandstorm. The ghost hands stretched out their fingers as they grabbed towards the sandstorm.

Unexpectedly, the formless sandstorm was grabbed onto like silk or threads in the sky!

The black soul giant pulled, snapping sounds could be heard continuously. The sandstorm was pulled apart, wind scattered as clear vision returned to the battlefield.

Lu Wei Yin’s eyes were bulging, his expression turned pale, Spectral Soul dealt with the battlefield so easily, he was deeply shocked!

“Let me.” Qi Sea Ancestor flew into the sky, staring at the black soul giant at equal heights.

Immortal killer move — Qi Breath Mountain.

Rumble!

A huge translucent mountain created from air currents descended and pressed down immediately.

This move was once used by Duke Long, it was part of Primordial Origin’s true inheritance, it managed to send Purple Mountain True Monarch flying. Right now, with Qi Sea Ancestor using it, the power was not to be underestimated.

Giant Spectral Soul looked at the mountain but approached it instead, he raised more than a hundred pairs of arms, at once, the entire battlefield seemed to have hundreds of black trees, resembling a forest!

The hundred pairs of arms blocked the qi mountain, emitting a loud sound.

The five sharp fingers of each of the ghost hands grabbed, the qi current mountain lasted for a breath of time before breaking apart.

Qi Sea Ancestor grunted, he was forced to retreat.

But Spectral Soul did not let him off, the angry head roared loudly and spat out a grand soul river. The soul river was made of countless ghosts and vengeful spirits, they cried out in agony and despair, causing the entire battlefield to freeze up for a moment.

Seeing the power of this move, Qi Sea Ancestor understood that this move was extraordinary, its might was many times higher than the self-detonation of the immemorial soul beasts earlier!

At this moment, Spectral Soul had used his true strength. Not only did he turn into a black soul giant, he even changed his killer moves, each attack became much stronger, they were all vicious and terrifying.

Qi Sea Ancestor waved his hands, two hands flew out of his wide sleeves. His index and middle fingers stretched out and drew a circle in the air, causing wind and clouds to move along.

Immortal killer move — Qi Current Scissors!

A translucent qi current flew out of his sleeves, moving rapidly.

These qi currents seemed weak but they were extremely sharp, they drew an arc in the sky before gathering to form a translucent qi current river.

With a loud sound, the qi current scissors river crashed into the vengeful ghost river!

The qi current scissors was forced back but the soul river also suffered some damage, it still managed to move as it quickly approached Qi Sea Ancestor.

Lu Wei Yin shouted as he activated the battlefield, creating a rock shield that intercepted the soul river at its weak spot.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s face was already flushing red, it was a tough contest of strength, he quickly used this chance to escape.

“Spectral Soul, why aren’t you going to die!!” At the same time, Qing Chou shouted as it approached from the left.

At the right of Giant Spectral Soul, Wu Shuai wordlessly manipulated his army ants that pressed down like a black cloud, attacking Giant Spectral Soul’s head.

Attacked from the left and right!

Spectral Soul did not move, three hundred pairs of arms resisted Qing Chou while a hundred pairs of arms attacked Wu Shuai.

Qing Chou was fighting without regard for its life, it advanced relentlessly.

Spectral Soul snickered as the fingers of his hands gathered into a sharp spear form, this move countered soul beasts!

At the next instant, a hundred pairs of arms stabbed into Qing Chou’s body, green-black blood oozed out and dyed the battlefield.

Seeing this blood, a bright light shined on the face of Spectral Soul’s angry head, he snickered coldly: “Soul beasts have no blood, but your body seems to have changed under the influence of hatred Gu’s refinement. Interesting! After this battle, I will dissect your body before attempting good and thorough research.”

In other words, Spectral Soul was completely confident in taking down Qing Chou.

Qing Chou growled in pain, its snake-like neck struggled intensely, its roars almost burst the immortals’ eardrums.

Its entire body emitted black smoke, almost the same as Spectral Soul. Not just that, it opened its mouth and shot out more than ten human faced soul balls that were covered in lightning!

All sorts of attacks landed on Giant Spectral Soul, it was like wind blowing on a tree, even though the leaves were moving, the trunk remained still and motionless.

Spectral Soul’s arms that were stabbed into Qing Chou pushed deeper, trying to destroy its body from the inside.

Qing Chou cried out continuously, it was heavily injured by Spectral Soul, unable to break free, its blood flowed like a river, this was a gruesome sight.

Seeing this, Wu Shuai who cultivated enslavement path and had a weak body did not dare to take a risk, he quickly retreated. He decided that unless there was no choice, he would only attack from afar.

The army ants were densely packed and moved like a cloud that could gather and split at will, they rushed towards the black soul giant’s eyes, nose, and ears.

Spectral Soul’s cold head snorted as he breathed out black smoke from his nose. The smoke spread out, wherever it went, army ants died without resistance, a large number of them fell at once.

“As expected of a former Demon Venerable!” Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s eyes shined with bright light, he was full of praise.

Spectral Soul unleashed his true strength, it immediately changed the situation!

Even though Lu Wei Yin and the rest had the territorial advantage as well as more people, they still got suppressed by him.

Spectral Soul struck several times to completely block them, after that, he went back and stared at Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress. Four hundred arms stretched out and clenched into fists, they punched at the rank eight earth path Immortal Gu House with black qi covering the fists!

Bam bam bam…

Each punch caused Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress to shake intensely.

As countless fists rained down, black qi also invaded the Immortal Gu House. Soon, the fragments began to fall off Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress’ surface, shattering into pieces.

Fang Yuan quickly used his killer move and added in earth path Gu worms to replenish it.

But other trouble came at the same time, inside his sovereign immortal aperture, the myriad tribulation transformed again!

Almost all of the heaven path dao marks gathered into a giant monstrous ball of flesh.

The flesh ball floated in the air, it was large as a mountain, more than ten times of Spectral Soul’s size, casting a shadow down onto the ground.

Countless black colored holes appeared on the flesh ball’s surface.

As the holes expanded, they emitted a huge suction force, soon, tornadoes began to form from these holes.

As the tornadoes moved, countless resources in the sovereign immortal aperture, even variant humans got swept away and sucked into the flesh ball.

At once, growling and crying could be heard as fatalities rose.

The flesh ball quickly digested them as it slowly expanded in size!

“Oh no, I have never seen this myriad tribulation before, it also seems to be able to grow, it can get stronger and stronger!” Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

He needed to deal with Spectral Soul’s attacks and the myriad tribulation in his immortal aperture.

Either one required his full attention and strength, nobody else could help him with this.

Fang Yuan could not attend to both ends, he had to choose what to give up.

“Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress can still last some time, but if I let the myriad tribulation grow further, it will exceed the limit of my capabilities!” Realizing the greater problem at hand, Fang Yuan chose to deal with the myriad tribulation.

Most of his attention was placed in the sovereign immortal aperture, his manipulation of Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress became slightly slower.

Combat Beast King had already awakened, he dragged his injured body and stood up while gritting his teeth, listening to Fang Yuan’s orders.

Xue Er controlled the situation on the ground, using the ice crystal formation to resist the suction of the tornadoes.

The flesh ball monster floated towards her slowly while being firm as a mountain, there was a huge pressure placed on Xue Er.

Immortal killer move unrestrained heavenly mark was still active, Fang Yuan had not stopped using it even for one moment! But now, its effect had fallen to its lowest point.

Countless thoughts collided in Fang Yuan’s mind, it was like a turbulent sea, the sight was spectacular.

Fang Yuan multitasked, he first activated a wisdom path killer move, the quantity of his thoughts expanded abruptly, even his mind seemed small in comparison!

A vast number of thoughts collided, allowing Fang Yuan to think acutely, he was able to use other killer moves now.

There was no choice, Fang Yuan activated the human path formation to interfere with the Heavenly Dao’s interference.

As the formation activated, it created a buzzing noise as it shined with a brilliant light. At this step, over half of Fang Yuan’s thoughts were already expended!

If this continued, the consumption of thoughts would exceed the production, he would soon run out of thoughts and Fang Yuan would turn into an idiot instantly.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth but was not flustered, he was prepared for this, there were many of his wills in the human path formation.

Fang Yuan’s wills took charge of the formation as it operated, allowing his thoughts to accumulate again. Fang Yuan only had to do the first step of activating the formation.

“Again!” Fang Yuan shouted internally as he activated the wisdom path killer move again.

The thoughts in his mind burst out again like a tsunami, the quantity rose continuously, almost filling up his entire mind!

For wisdom path Gu Immortals, having too many thoughts was a bad idea, they would take up all the space in the mind and prevent any collisions from happening, it was the worst case scenario.

Fang Yuan did not do something stupid, this was part of his expectations.

Seeing that these thoughts were about to fill up his mind, he placed his concentration on the sea of clouds in the sky.

It was a huge and wide sea of clouds!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Looming clouds spread out in the boundless sky, surging like tides as ripples splashed, it seemed like the sea but it also resembled countless cloud mountains, changing forms at will, having unlimited possibilities.

This was a killer move.

This killer move was Fang Yuan’s trump card, it was in fact his strongest offensive method at this moment!

Immortal killer move — Unlimited Qi Sea!

This move was — mystical!

After Fang Yuan’s modifications, it not only used rank eight Immortal Gu Big Qi as the core, it also had more than ten supplementary qi path Immortal Gu, as well as hundreds of thousands of foundational mortal Gu. There were even qi path immortal materials that could be expended to increase the power of this move.

This move was — incredible!

It could use all of the kinds of qi in this world, life qi, death qi, sword qi, blade qi, dusk qi, dawn qi... the more qi path immortal materials stored in it, the more powerful this move would be. When used offensively, it would expend immortal essence and immortal materials. When used defensively, it would absorb external qi currents.

This move was — powerful and unstoppable!

Qi Xiang left this move behind, resulting in Qi Xiang grotto-heaven surviving many myriad tribulations after his death. Myriad tribulations... most rank eight Gu Immortals in this world did not even dare to challenge their first myriad tribulation, they desperately delayed the time in their immortal aperture. But Qi Xiang grotto-heaven's heavenly spirit could use this move to get past myriad tribulations time and time again.

After annexing this grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan used the light of wisdom to modify unlimited qi sea before the fate war! After that, during this battle, he used this move to break the primordial qi wall and shocked everyone, including Gu Immortals, in the five regions.

The primordial qi wall was the creation of Primordial Origin, it not only had qi path Immortal Gu but also qi path immortal materials. Qi path had one trait, it was able to use qi path immortal materials in place of Gu worms to execute killer moves.

Fang Yuan used unlimited qi sea to break the primordial qi wall, he also absorbed the vast amount of qi path immortal materials inside the qi wall.

After the first time, Fang Yuan broke it again for a second time!

Not long ago in Heavenly Court, he used unlimited qi sea to absorb the immortal material qi currents in the primordial qi wall, breaking it apart.

After absorbing two qi walls and with Fang Yuan's exploration of Qi Sea grotto-heaven, he gained a huge amount of immortal material qi currents, it caused unlimited qi sea's storage to rise to an unprecedented amount. Thus, the power of this move reached a level that felt terrifying even for Fang Yuan!

As Fang Yuan willed, he unleashed the killer move unlimited qi sea!

The sea of qi rumbled, a huge white qi pillar gathered in the sky and shot down at the giant flesh ball monster.

The qi pillar was extremely thick, reaching a level that had never been seen before, even Qi Xiang would gasp at its majesty now.

Not only that, the qi pillar was covered in a layer of shining golden light, it gave off a tough feeling, it was extremely domineering!

Before the white qi pillar hit the flesh ball monster, a terrifying force acted on it from all directions, immobilizing the flesh ball monster in the air.

Boom—!

The white qi pillar crashed into the flesh ball monster like a falling monument, before rushing through it violently.

The huge sound created even deafened Xue Er, who was far away from the battlefield.

The qi pillar had an intense white light, Xue Er, who was hiding in the ice crystal formation had to shut her eyes to prevent them from being blinded.

The flesh ball monster could not resist the power of the qi pillar, it was suppressed on the grassland of Mini Northern Plains.

The grass and soil of the grassland had already been sent flying long ago by raging tornadoes before the qi pillar struck.

Thus, the flesh ball monster was pressed down on the barren grassland by the unstoppable qi pillar!

As the earth shook, hundreds of cracks formed below the flesh ball monster, resembling a spider web.

The white qi pillar was still continuing its assault, it had the power to destroy mountains and split seas! The great flesh ball monster made from the myriad tribulation got pressed on the ground like a defenseless chick, unable to struggle.

Ten feet, twenty feet, thirty feet...

As the flesh ball monster sank into the ground, its body became smaller and smaller. It continued to be disintegrated by the white qi pillar bit by bit!

The black holes all over the giant monster were shut, it tried to curl up, a pitiful cry could be heard from within its body.

This was the cry of heaven’s will!

The white qi pillar lasted for twenty breaths of time before fading away.

Not only did the sea of clouds in the sky shrink by eighty percent, the remaining clouds were sparse and thin. Fang Yuan quickly moved them away.

But the flesh ball monster was in a worse condition, its mountain-like body had shrunk to the size of Dragon Palace.

The flesh ball monster did not move, it remained in the pit like a corpse. This pit was over a thousand feet deep!

Fang Yuan’s main body breathed roughly, his brain was hurting along with each breath. In order to use this move, he exerted his mind to its limit, he used up too many thoughts, beyond the capabilities of his mind.

The myriad tribulation created from three thousand heaven path dao marks finally paused for the first time.

It was as if it got beaten into shock by Fang Yuan!

The opportunity was rare, Fang Yuan quickly hastened his action and used unrestrained heavenly mark to refine the heaven path dao marks.

In a short while, Fang Yuan refined more than a hundred heaven path dao marks. Together with his earlier gains, he had already refined over a hundred and sixty heaven path dao marks!

When Fang Yuan refined over two hundred heaven path dao marks, the Heavenly Dao finally reacted. The flesh ball in the hole vanished as it started to hail.

However, even though Fang Yuan could take advantage of this chance, he could only sustain this situation as he was forced to place his attention back to the outside world.

Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress was heavily damaged beyond repair, Giant Spectral Soul’s attacks were increasing in frequency, he had made huge advancements!

Spectral Soul swore to kill Fang Yuan, Lu Wei Yin and the rest tried to restrain him but Giant Spectral Soul ignored their attacks and endured them, while maintaining his firepower on Fang Yuan.

Even though Fang Yuan was doing his best to repair his Immortal Gu House, the situation was going downhill.

Bam.

Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress could not take it anymore, a hole was created, it connected to the outside!

Through this hole, Giant Spectral Soul’s four eyes emitted cold killing intent as he looked at Fang Yuan who was sitting inside.

He saw that Fang Yuan’s expression was pale after unleashing unlimited qi sea.

Fang Yuan was in bad shape now!

Spectral Soul had a realization, his incredibly deep battle experience made a decision for him, similar to Fang Yuan, he was going to use his trump card.

Immortal killer move — Eat Heart!

"I comprehended this move in my later years from \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e. Fang Yuan, it is over. The current Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress has no way of blocking this attack." Spectral Soul surged with killing intent.

And like what he said.

At the next moment, Fang Yuan grunted, his face became distorted, he grasped his chest in pain.

The intense pain in his heart felt like it was bitten by a fierce beast!

\u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e, chapter five, section thirty-three —

Ren Zu stared at the skeleton head: "Next, I will eat the most important part of the Predicament’s body."

Strong Gu laughed: "This is a stupid move! Oh human, your choice is extremely foolish."

The Predicament shook its body as it shrank. At the same time, countless Tribulations flew out of its neck and attacked Ren Zu.

The Tribulations were like fire, burning Ren Zu’s bones. The Tribulations were like hammers, charging at Ren Zu as his bones cracked. The Tribulations were like wind and rain, sweeping at Ren Zu’s lone body. The Tribulations were like flashing lightning, striking on Ren Zu continuously.

Fear Gu shouted: "Oh heaven, this is too scary, that human will die for sure at this rate."

Courage Gu encouraged: "Oh human, don’t be afraid."

Self Gu and attitude Gu shouted together: "I am very strong, I am very strong, all Tribulations are mere drizzles, they are insignificant breezes!"

Weak Gu, betrayal Gu, and fear Gu flew together, wanting to escape with Ren Zu: "Oh human, quickly run. Don’t believe in self Gu’s words, it has already been deceived."

Ren Zu was trapped in the Tribulations, he could not escape.

When Tribulations loom over you, it is not a simple matter of running away.

"This is too scary, let’s go, forget about the human." Weak gu, betrayal Gu, and fear Gu flew away together.

"You traitors!" Self Gu was furious, it grabbed onto these three Gu and bit them all.

The three Gu were injured but they were not stopped by self Gu, they quickly escaped from Ren Zu.

Self Gu wanted to chase them but rules and regulation Gu urged: "Don’t chase them. Escaping when Tribulations strike due to fear and weakness, betraying one’s self and courage in the process, it will only lead to death. Isn’t it good that they are gone? Weak Gu and betrayal Gu are unable to help us, as for fear Gu... if the Tribulations did not appear, fear would have been pointless. But since the Tribulations are here now, fear will only lead to greater pain in the human."

"You are absolutely right." Self Gu stopped.

Hope Gu flickered with light as it supported Ren Zu: "Oh human, as long as you still have hope in your heart during the Tribulations, there will still be hope in this situation."

Strong Gu could not stop laughing: "Oh human, you are truly pitiful, you easily believe in the words of hope. Don’t you know? Having only hope during the Tribulations will only cause them to continue longer, hope is the thing that lengthens the person’s pain. When you stop bearing any hope, you will feel relaxed in the Tribulations."

Ren Zu did not speak, he endured the attacks of the Tribulations with great difficulty.

No matter how bent his body became, he did not fall.

Strong Gu soon found the reason — on Ren Zu’s feet, there was a pair of independent wings. Even though the wings were small, they flapped stubbornly, helping Ren Zu to stand up despite everything.

Strong Gu continued to demoralize Ren Zu: "Oh human, I am starting to admire you. It is a pity that you are going to fall soon, look at your bones, they are covered in cracks now due to the Tribulations."

Ren Zu was silent.

Originally, Ren Zu’s bones were shiny and intact, there were no cracks at all. Now, his skeleton was covered in cracks, it seemed like it would shatter at any moment.

All the other Gu worms were silent, only hope Gu gave out light: "Oh human, don’t give up! Tribulations are not scary, the scariest thing is a person who has lost hope."

The light of hope Gu penetrated the cracks of Ren Zu’s bones, into his bone marrow.

In the life of everyone in this world, cracks would always form at some point, but those were the times where the light of hope would shine in!

Ren Zu’s bones absorbed the light of hope, they started to engulf the surrounding Tribulations.

Each crack was like a huge mouth, the larger the crack, the larger the mouth, and the more Tribulations it could devour.

"How could this happen?" Strong Gu was extremely shocked.

The more Tribulations that Ren Zu’s skeleton devoured, the stronger and firmer his bones became.

Tribulations could destroy people, but they could also toughen oneself!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

As the Tribulations continued, Ren Zu’s bones started to shine in a golden light.

The Tribulations became wilder as Ren Zu’s bones burned in flames, becoming dazzlingly golden.

Ren Zu started to straighten his back, he raised his head and puffed his chest, after enduring countless tortures, his skeleton shined like a golden pillar, he stood directly inside the Tribulations. This was the myriad tribulation golden skeleton.

And on Ren Zu’s skeleton head, a crown grew out naturally, it was the heaven connecting bone crown.

All of the tribulations and disasters that people suffer would become their crowns of achievement in the future.

Even though the Tribulations had not ended, Ren Zu could already speak at this time: "I know, Fate has arrangements, Tribulations are the arrangements it makes for people. But I can persevere, any Tribulations that seem unendurable are all in fact endurable to me."

Strong Gu was shocked and bewildered.

Self Gu realized at this time: "I understand. Oh human, you are someone who walked out of Ordinary Abyss, that is why you can endure these Tribulations that are impossible to endure."

Strong Gu saw that the Tribulations could not take down Ren Zu, it forced itself to stay calm: "Oh human, don’t forget, as long as you have hope Gu, these Tribulations will not stop. Are you going to delay our bet from earlier? I don’t care! I will treat it as if you passed the Tribulations. Now, it is our turn to eat you."

"Which part of me do you want to eat?" Ren Zu sighed.

Strong Gu laughed loudly, pointing at Ren Zu’s chest: "Next, I will eat your hearts!"

Ren Zu shook slightly, strong Gu’s choice was too fatal, how could a human live without his heart?

"Quickly take out all of your hearts, let us eat them!" Strong Gu shouted in excitement.

Ren Zu sighed as he hesitated, before taking out the heart of sympathy.

Strong Gu directly placed the heart of sympathy into the Predicament’s neck as the heart fell into its stomach. The Predicament’s stomach expanded slightly.

When faced with predicaments, people often lose their hearts of sympathy first.

Ren Zu took out his heart of nobleness next, the Predicament ate it as its stomach expanded some more, it seemed to have problems digesting it.

Ren Zu took out his original heart next: "Oh hope Gu, leave now. I do not want to implicate you."

Hope Gu resided in Ren Zu’s original heart, it did not fly out, instead it said: "I am not leaving, this is my home. Oh human, just toss me in along with it, I do not blame you."

Ren Zu had no choice, as strong Gu rushed him, he gave his original heart to the Predicament as food.

After the Predicament ate it, its belly expanded again.

Predicaments often caused people to lose hope as well.

Without hope Gu, all of the Tribulations around Ren Zu vanished. This caused the pressure on Ren Zu to fall, but he felt deep melancholy as well.

"Quick, oh human, take out your final heart and let us eat it!" Strong Gu pointed at the heart of loneliness in Ren Zu’s chest.

Ren Zu hesitated as he felt troubled, the heart of loneliness did not only contain his self Gu, it was also his final heart. Without this heart, Ren Zu might die.

Strong Gu laughed and threatened: "Quick! If you do not take it out yourself, we will make our move and eat you entirely!"

Self Gu had already been deceived, it called out in nonchalance: "Oh human, just give it to them. I do not care, you will not die either! We are the strongest."

"Give it to me!" Strong Gu grabbed the heart of loneliness in Ren Zu’s hand and stuffed it into the Predicament’s stomach through its exposed neck.

At this point, Ren Zu lost all his hearts.

He fell onto the ground, losing all signs of life, he could not stand up anymore.

Ren Zu died.

"Oh human, you died, we have regained freedom." Rules and regulation Gu flew away.

"There is no helping it, the human met with the greatest predicament in his life." Courage Gu and edge Gu flew away as well.

On Ren Zu’s corpse, only self Gu remained, it flew around him. Attitude Gu wanted to leave too, but self Gu grabbed onto it, forcing it to stay.

Strong Gu laughed happily: "Hahaha, oh human, you were nothing impressive after all. Hmm? Predicament, what’s wrong?"

The Predicament that strong Gu was attached to grabbed onto its bulging stomach as it rolled on the ground in pain.

Loneliness was extremely hard to digest, the stronger the Predicament, the lonelier one would feel.

Boom!

Suddenly, the Predicament’s belly burst open.

Ren Zu’s heart of loneliness, his skin and flesh fused to create a boy.

Strong Gu was flabbergasted: "Who are you?"

The boy said: "I am Ren Zu’s son — Great Strength True Martial!"

Before finishing his words, he jumped up and grabbed strong Gu.

Strong Gu tried to struggle while self Gu used the opportunity to approach and take a bite of it.

Strong Gu was injured, it got weakened.

"Where are you trying to go!" Great Strength True Martial shouted, he grabbed strong Gu and stuffed it into his chest.

Strong Gu went into his chest and got imprisoned in his heart, unable to escape.

"Don’t waste your effort, this is my heart of ambition, you cannot escape." Great Strength True Martial laughed.

Next, he found Ren Zu’s other hearts from the corpse of the Predicament and placed them back into his chest.

Ren Zu was revived once again!

...

Undeniably, a person’s heart was the source of their vitality, one of the most fatal weaknesses of a human’s body.

The food path killer move eat heart that Spectral Soul created was a greater creation than bitter taste and swallow loss. Even if these two moves hit his enemies, they could only tilt the balance of victory and defeat. Meanwhile, eat heart was a fatal attack, once hit without ample preparation, it could decide the outcome almost instantly!

This was a method that could claim victory!!

Fang Yuan was hit.

Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress had outstanding defense without doubt. But among all the Gu Immortal paths, food path was extremely well hidden, there were few defensive measures against it. Thus, during the fate war, Western Desert’s Gu Immortals were all without options against Heavenly Court’s combination killer move, sitting and eating the mountain empty, they were all hit by it.

Fang Yuan also had a food path inheritance, he also knew that Spectral Soul had a deep attainment in food path.

Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress was assembled by Fang Yuan, it could defend against food path originally.

But now, Spectral Soul broke a hole in this Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress!

Even the complete Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress would have difficulties blocking the killer move eat heart entirely, Fang Yuan would still be affected regardless.

At this moment, the intense feeling of death assaulted Fang Yuan.

He could not struggle, he had no way to struggle!

The Heavenly Dao in the sovereign immortal aperture seemed to have noticed this, it stopped conjuring new myriad tribulations as the dao marks scattered all over the aperture, trying to restrain Fang Yuan’s entire body.

Fang Yuan could not use any defensive methods, he could only wait for death.

Lu Wei Yin saw that the situation was bad, he quickly activated the earth path battlefield, yellow sand gathered into dragons that coiled around Giant Spectral Soul, squeezing and attempting to immobilize Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul smiled coldly, hundreds of arms blocked them as he defended easily. His four eyes were still staring at Fang Yuan, most of his attention was spent on sustaining eat heart.

"Oh no!" Lu Wei Yin’s heart sank.

Qi Sea Ancestor and Wu Shuai also felt chills flowing down their spines, they tried to desperately attack, but Spectral Soul did not even turn around for a moment.

Spectral Soul would rather suffer heavy injuries to make use of this opportunity.

He wanted Fang Yuan dead no matter what!

"Is... is everything going to end like this?" Fang Yuan’s mind was still quite empty, he did not have many thoughts left. This was the aftermath of using unlimited qi sea.

Spectral Soul was just too strong.

Worthy of the former Demon Venerable! The man who was invincible in this world during his era!

During that time, he killed until the world became shrouded in darkness, nobody dared to make a sound, all of the living beings in the world could only tremble under his shadow.

Only until the appearance of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, he spent his entire life to mend the wounds and scars of the hearts of the people.

Before Spectral Soul went all out, his battle strength was not much higher compared to the rest, yet he still had a firm control over the situation. After he used his full power, his battle strength rose greatly, he immediately surpassed everyone. The most despairing thing was that each of his decisions carried immediate effect, he did not give his enemy any opportunities to recover, there was no way for them to survive.

"No, even if there is only a trace of hope, I need to do my best!" Fang Yuan could not use any methods, even if he could use a killer move, he could not block the killer move eat heart.

Unless it was reverse flow protection seal!

The pain on Fang Yuan’s face vanished, his lips curled up as he revealed a mysterious smile, it was extremely unusual.

At the next moment, he shouted loudly: "If you do not take action now, when will you ever get another chance? Qi Jue!"

A pair of Spectral Soul’s pupils expanded, while another pair of eyes squinted: "Is... Fang Yuan trying to deceive me? No wait!"

One of his heads turned around, he saw Demon Immortal Qi Jue attacking!

Boom!

Demon Immortal Qi Jue activated his killer move, the Xi Land on top of his head flew down like a comet, crashing into Spectral Soul’s back.

Spectral Soul was greatly impacted, he also fell to the ground.

Puff puff puff!

Countless holes appeared on his body, it was like a deflating balloon, dark soul qi spewed out of the holes towards the outside.

Not only that, a hundred arms of Spectral Soul immediately fell onto the ground like decaying tree branches.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Ahhhh—! Qi Jue!" Spectral Soul screamed, staring at Demon Immortal Qi Jue with deep anger.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue retrieved Xi Land as he retreated, guarding against Spectral Soul’s retaliation.

"You idiot!" Spectral Soul stepped on the ground as a loud sound echoed, he finally stabilized his footing.

Even someone like him who had lived for so long became furious this instant, he was about to kill Fang Yuan but his ally actually attacked him.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue floated in the air, staring at Spectral Soul with deep vigilance.

He first frowned as he recalled Fang Yuan’s expression, it was evident that Fang Yuan did that on purpose so Spectral Soul would expose a weakness.

"Was Fang Yuan really at his wits’ end at that time? No, this is more likely Spectral Soul’s deception to distract me. The truth is, even if I was deceived, at this point, I can only continue to attack Spectral Soul!" Demon Immortal Qi

Jue made up his mind very soon.

With eat heart broken, Spectral Soul suffered a backlash. During this time, Fang Yuan quickly repaired Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, at the very least, he fixed that hole on it.

While recovering, Fang Yuan did not forget to attack using words: "Spectral Soul, don't be too angry now, the truth is, before you contacted Qi Jue, I had already reached an agreement with him."

"You made an agreement? Impossible, I checked secretly, you do not have any alliance agreements on you!" Spectral Soul retorted.

"I have just been revived, I will not trust any information path methods. Oh Spectral Soul, you tempted me with benefits, but Fang Yuan did that even earlier. And... he is much more generous than you!" Before Demon Immortal Qi Jue finished his words, he attacked again.

A qi path killer move erupted, the attack swept towards Giant Spectral Soul like a storm.

Lu Wei Yin and the rest saw this, they felt overjoyed.

Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor were unaware of this cooperation, seeing Demon Immortal Qi Jue's betrayal, they became very excited. The situation was tight earlier, but with Demon Immortal Qi Jue's action, the situation was immediately flipped around to their advantage!

Lu Wei Yin pondered and quickly realized: "After the fate war, I used Lord Paradise Earth's methods to confirm that Spectral Soul had not only regained freedom but was also getting stronger. Soon after, the secret of the sovereign immortal aperture got exposed in treasure yellow heaven. When I contacted Fang Yuan secretly to inform him, I wanted to cooperate with him to deal with Spectral Soul and Shadow Sect. But initially, Fang Yuan did not fully believe me."

"But soon after, Fang Yuan contacted me and agreed to this alliance. Now it seems that he had already contacted Demon Immortal Qi Jue and used him to confirm my information."

Lu Wei Yin was Paradise Earth's inheritor, the venerable had spent his entire life restoring peace to the world, he was at odds with Spectral Soul.

The reason why Lu Wei Yin participated in the fate war was to get rid of Spectral Soul's remnant soul for good.

But even after it ended, Lu Wei Yin did not find Spectral Soul's remnant soul.

Lu Wei Yin naturally did not give up, he paid a huge price and used Paradise Earth's method to deduce Spectral Soul's current condition, but he could not find his location.

Thus, Lu Wei Yin thought of Fang Yuan.

If Spectral Soul wanted to regain full strength, he would need to kill Fang Yuan. After killing Fang Yuan, Spectral Soul would regain sovereign immortal fetus Gu as well as his personal dream realms and attainment levels.

Lu Wei Yin used Paradise Earth's method and contacted Fang Yuan after great difficulty, but the latter was very wary in regards to him.

Fang Yuan had been reborn, he knew that Lu Wei Yin was not what he seemed like on the surface in supporting Heavenly Court, he had his own personal objectives.

Also, because Fang Yuan did not see Spectral Soul during the fate war when he invaded Heavenly Court, he trusted some parts of Lu Wei Yin’s information.

Soon after, the secret of the sovereign immortal body was exposed in treasure yellow heaven, it made Fang Yuan believe his words even more.

After Demon Immortal Qi Jue revived, Fang Yuan tried to contact him in secret but did not succeed once.

But coincidentally, Demon Immortal Qi Jue went to approach Qi Sea Ancestor for trouble. Using Qin Ding Ling’s reinforcement, Fang Yuan managed to force Demon Immortal Qi Jue to retreat, but the truth was, he secretly made a deal with Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

In order to gain Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s trust, Fang Yuan told him that Qi Sea Ancestor was his disguise.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue gained this hold on Fang Yuan and immediately understood that Fang Yuan was sincere in this cooperation.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue lacked knowledge of the Gu Immortal world at that time, Fang Yuan attended to his needs, he used his various true inheritances as the transaction goods.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was greatly moved but he was still very wary, he did not want to set an alliance agreement with Fang Yuan, he was afraid that Fang Yuan would use unknown information path methods to harm him.

Fang Yuan did not force him, they eventually came to a relaxed agreement that could not have any restraining power to either of them.

Fang Yuan provided true inheritances of various paths to Demon Immortal Qi Jue, while the latter gave Fang Yuan the secret of his qi path resurrection. Furthermore, he even followed Fang Yuan’s arrangement and sold a huge amount of qi path immortal materials in treasure yellow heaven to purchase inheritances of all paths.

Fang Yuan learned of the secret regarding Qi Jue’s revival, he immediately gained a huge breakthrough in resolving the qi harvest fruit. Thus, Qi Sea Ancestor was able to get rid of it. After that, Fang Yuan’s clone used Heavenly Court’s qi harvest fruit to create the Qi Sea clone successfully!

The truth was, with just Fang Yuan’s qi path attainment, he could not resolve the problem of the qi harvest fruit so quickly.

But Demon Immortal Qi Jue was contacted by Spectral Soul in treasure yellow heaven some time after that.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was greatly shocked, after hearing Spectral Soul’s words, he understood Fang Yuan’s intention.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Fang Yuan had a lax agreement, they could betray each other easily. Demon Immortal Qi Jue would not consider Fang Yuan’s benefits, he immediately negotiated with Spectral Soul in secret.

But soon, he realized that Spectral Soul’s offer was far inferior to Fang Yuan’s.

"How can a great Demon Venerable be so stingy?!" Demon Immortal Qi Jue first held disdain before he pondered: "Oh, I get it! Spectral Soul is the pioneer of soul path, he also has a food path true inheritance, but he wants to keep them and refuses to transact these two. Even though Shadow Sect had existed for so long, they only found very few venerable true inheritances. But Fang Yuan is the crucial pawn of heaven’s will and the ten venerables, many of these venerables invested in him, thus he possesses Red Lotus’ true inheritance, Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance, Giant Sun’s true inheritance, Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, Reckless Savage’s true inheritance, Primordial Origin’s true inheritance, Genesis Lotus’ true inheritance, Paradise Earth’s true inheritance, and Limitless’ true inheritance. Other than these, he also has Lang Ya’s true inheritance, the dragonman race’s true inheritance, food path true inheritance, Bo Qing’s sword path true inheritance, and many more. Damn... how can this one guy have so much wealth?"

After Demon Immortal Qi Jue understood the reason, a complex feeling emerged in his heart uncontrollably.

Fang Yuan could be said to be the wealthiest person in terms of true inheritances throughout history!

Even though Spectral Soul’s Shadow Sect had searched for such a long period of time, obtaining venerable true inheritances took a lot of time and effort, and they were usually incomplete. Every venerable would make each inheritance with a specific purpose. Even if Spectral Soul destroyed them, he would not gain much. His greatest gain was still that Red Lotus true inheritance, and that was left to him intentionally by Red Lotus Demon Venerable to allow them to cooperate.

Regarding Fang Yuan’s gains, Demon Immortal Qi Jue felt jealousy, envy, and hatred.

Fang Yuan was too rich, even though Spectral Soul was a Demon Venerable, compared to Fang Yuan in this regard, he was simply too poor!

After comprehending this, Demon Immortal Qi Jue gained a deeper understanding of Fang Yuan: "No wonder this guy was chosen to be the crucial person to destroy Fate! He is making use of me to defend against Spectral Soul while also harming him, he also knows my wants so even without an agreement, I would not betray him easily."

Fang Yuan had abundant wealth, he also knew that Qi Jue would go against Spectral Soul, he naturally acted very generously.

Spectral Soul was kept in the dark, he had to deal with the crafty Demon Immortal Qi Jue that showed signs of this betrayal, it was a stark contrast from Fang Yuan.

Of course, Demon Immortal Qi Jue would not side with Fang Yuan simply because of this.

He took advantage of both sides, on one hand, he told Fang Yuan about the price that Spectral Soul was paying, on the other hand, he requested for more things from Spectral Soul, Demon Immortal Qi Jue had been trying to gain the maximum benefits for himself all along. Up until he attacked Spectral Soul earlier, he had been interacting with both parties.

The sovereign immortal aperture’s situation was not optimistic.

The myriad tribulation transformed again, it became a boundless grey wind. Wherever the wind blew, ash and sparks would appear, in the end, it would burn and destroy everything, the grey wind would sweep through, leaving a huge empty land behind.

It was the myriad tribulation — Spark Blowing Grey Wind!

The heaven path dao marks turned into wind path and fire path dao marks, creating this myriad tribulation that Fang Yuan had trouble dealing with immediately.

Not only did the grey wind appear in the mini five regions, it also affected the mini nine heavens.

A lot of resource points were destroyed, the sovereign immortal aperture had always been developed by Fang Yuan, it reached twenty percent development, but now, half of that was gone.

During this time, Fang Yuan could only try to save the people instead.

There were many humans and variant humans living in the sovereign immortal aperture, they were gathered in cities, mountains or valleys. This was huge wealth, Fang Yuan could give up the rest but he had to preserve the lives of these people.

"Cough cough."

Inside Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, Fang Yuan continued to cough out blood.

He was heavily injured.

This was the result of Spectral Soul’s eat heart killer move.

The scene earlier was too dangerous, if it lasted for a few more breaths of time, Fang Yuan would have died. Even now, if Spectral Soul uses eat heart on Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress again, Fang Yuan would not escape death.

Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress could not fully resist the power of eat heart!

However, Spectral Soul no longer had a chance.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s betrayal changed the entire situation.

Earlier, Demon Immortal Qi Jue had Xi Land that countered Qi Sea Ancestor, he could shoulder some pressure for Spectral Soul. Now, Demon Immortal Qi Jue became the most troublesome person for Spectral Soul to deal with.

Immortal killer move — Great Qi Hand Explosion!

Qi Sea Ancestor activated his killer move, Spectral Soul sensed it, immediately moving a hundred arms as black smoke appeared around him.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s face flushed red, he felt like he was squeezing an expanding piece of metal, his killer move was about to break!

Immortal killer move — Upper-Lower Breathless Qi!

At the crucial moment, Demon Immortal Qi Jue attacked with his killer move, directly hitting Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul soon felt his breath going out of sync, his immortal essence flow became choppy, his defensive method that resisted great qi hand explosion became much weaker.

Using this chance, Qi Sea Ancestor exerted more strength into his move.

Boom!

Great qi hand explosion was successfully used, and at this moment, Demon Immortal Qi Jue used a supplementary method to double the strength of this great qi hand explosion.

Giant Spectral Soul was sent flying from the impact as tens of black arms exploded, he was covered in dust and smoke.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Swoosh!

Some parts of Giant Spectral Soul’s body broke out with countless holes of various sizes, from these holes, black soul qi spewed out rapidly.

As the soul qi leaked out, Giant Spectral Soul’s huge body started to shrink at an observable speed.

Seeing this, Lu Wei Yin’s eyes shined with bright light: "No wonder Spectral Soul used a physical body to fight earlier and did not turn into the giant immediately. This move gives him a temporary power boost but it cannot be sustained for long, it also has a severe problem in it!"

Giant Spectral Soul quickly healed his wounds and mended the holes, preventing soul qi from leaking further.

As he healed, he attacked in place of defense, hundreds of arms danced around and slammed at Lu Wei Yin and the rest, causing them to scatter and dodge.

Spectral Soul was actually even fiercer than before!

But Lu Wei Yin and the rest were calm, their morale rose as they saw the hope of victory!

"Create an opportunity for me." Demon Immortal Qi Jue suddenly transmitted to Lu Wei Yin and the rest.

Lu Wei Yin did not hesitate, he immediately activated the battlefield, a sandstorm concealed Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s traces.

Within the sandstorm, Demon Immortal Qi Jue had a solemn expression, almost all of his concentration was placed in his immortal aperture. A brand new killer move was carefully prepared by him, it was taking shape.

Spectral Soul sensed something amiss, he immediately charged into the sandstorm, attempting to disrupt Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s mysterious killer move.

Qi Sea Ancestor and Wu Shuai desperately tried to stop him but they could not stall Spectral Soul at all.

Qing Chou rammed towards Spectral Soul but was easily dodged.

Seeing that Spectral Soul was about to reach Demon Immortal Qi Jue, Lu Wei Yin stepped in.

He had outstanding defensive methods, even though he lacked offense, he was the one who could stall Spectral Soul for the longest time now!

Giant Spectral Soul fought with Lu Wei Yin, causing the latter to bleed from his nose and mouth, but he was unable to advance any further due to this obstruction.

Getting some crucial time, Demon Immortal Qi Jue took a risk and completed his killer move preparation.

Immortal killer move — Xi Xi!

The Xi Land above his head shined with profound light, directed at Spectral Soul. Seeing this, Spectral Soul roared with a trace of panic in his voice.

The profound light pillar emitted an intense suction force, forcefully draining the black soul qi from Giant Spectral Soul’s body!

Giant Spectral Soul’s body shrunk rapidly, all of his soul path methods fell drastically in strength.

Spectral Soul had a grim expression, he unleashed food path killer moves, bitter taste and swallow loss.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue got hit by them, his body shook, he almost failed to sustain the killer move, Spectral Soul nearly escaped.

But at the crucial moment, Lu Wei Yin strained his mind and pointed at Demon Immortal Qi Jue, shooting out two yellow lights.

One yellow light landed on Demon Immortal Qi Jue and spread around the battlefield.

Immortal killer move — All Life Is Bitter!

Instantly, all of the immortals here felt bitterness, even the illusory sand shifting shadow battlefield was sharing the burden of experiencing the killer move bitter taste.

The second yellow light entered Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s body.

Immortal killer move — Suffering Loss Is A Blessing!

Demon Immortal Qi Jue benefited from this, his body’s injuries started to recover, he laughed loudly in satisfaction.

Spectral Soul’s expression was dark.

After Lu Wei Yin used both killer moves, his aura diminished to an extreme low, he immediately escaped using the sandstorm.

From within the sandstorm, his voice was firm: "Spectral Soul, you committed too many sins and caused great harm to the world. Back then, countless Gu Immortals fell victim to your two food path killer moves! Thus, Lord Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable created these two moves specially to deal with you!"

They were his direct counter!

Spectral Soul was stuck in a passive spot instantly, his two killer moves were broken.

Once a killer move was broken, the user would fall into a passive state, even Spectral Soul was no exception. Simply because he was dealing with another venerable, someone who had opposed him over his entire life!

Bitter taste and swallow loss were countered, Spectral Soul wanted to use eat heart now.

This move was created in his later years, it had almost never been used, there was almost no possibility that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had a counter to it.

But Spectral Soul could not use it.

When he used eat heart earlier, many soul path Immortal Gu were destroyed, he also expended a huge amount of food path mortal Gu, he had paid a huge price to forcefully activate it.

Simply put, he could not use eat heart for the following short period of time.

Precisely so, Spectral Soul had been holding back eat heart, not willing to use it without a good reason.

After Spectral Soul escaped, he first ransacked Heavenly Court's storage before devouring Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, taking its entire foundation. Spectral Soul recovered his strength, he rose up again with great efficiency! However, it was undeniably that his gains in food path Immortal Gu were minuscule, he could not truly exert the full strength of his food path.

Food path was very rarely passed down, this was both Spectral Soul's advantage and disadvantage. Because there were too few food path Gu Immortals, there were also very few food path Immortal Gu around.

All in all, Spectral Soul had too little time to recover!

Ever since this battle to chase Fang Yuan started, Spectral Soul had been using countless soul path killer moves that were tough to deal with.

But in terms of food path, Spectral Soul only had three killer moves. Among which, eat heart was only used with great difficulty, it was a one-time use trump card.

Spectral Soul had countless soul path killer moves with terrifying and peculiar effects, they were hard to counter. But in terms of food path, there was nothing special, he only had three moves, for Lu Wei Yin and the others who had fought him for so long, it was hard to not accustom themselves to these moves.

It was like Fang Yuan's Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, when he used it earlier, it was shocking. But after a while of fighting, with its foundation exposed, Spectral Soul and Qi Jue quickly familiarized themselves with its weaknesses.

Trump cards were things that were best left unused as much as possible.

Spectral Soul's two food path killer moves were countered by Lu Wei Yin, he immediately suffered a backlash, his injuries were severe!

Killer moves could not be used carelessly, once they were broken, the outcome would be terrible.

But this was not Spectral Soul's mistake, in the earlier situation, soul path killer moves could not turn the situation around, food path was the wisest choice!

But Lu Wei Yin was someone with deep schemes, he was just Paradise Earth's inheritor, he was not the Immortal Venerable after all. Thus he kept these two moves concealed as trump cards, even though Spectral Soul used the two food path killer moves earlier, he did not show any hints. At the most crucial moment, he unleashed his counter and achieved the best result!

"Ming You, I will kill you, I will kill you!" After Spectral Soul suffered heavy injuries, Qing Chou attacked while roaring loudly!

It was like a mad beast, its expression was distorted and its eyes were red, bursting open and bleeding with green-black blood. Its body was covered in hundreds of holes, blood spewed out continuously, its injuries were scary to look at.

"Truly an amazing creation." For a moment, Giant Spectral Soul squinted his eyes.

Spectral Soul’s attainment in soul path was definitely unsurpassed in the world. He created soul path, causing soul beasts to exist in the world. Thus, his understanding of soul beasts was extremely thorough, nobody could know more than him! And yet, Qing Chou was different, a qualitative change had occurred within its body.

Facing Qing Chou’s attack, Giant Spectral Soul became overjoyed instead!

Since the fight started, Spectral Soul had gained great benefits from Qing Chou. For others, Qing Chou would be a huge problem, it was quite fatal. But for Spectral Soul, it was like a gentle rain, it came at a good time to allow Spectral Soul to absorb its strength and recover rapidly!

Qing Chou charged with extreme speed, it did not care about its own life.

The sole enemy in its life was right before it!

But as memories surfaced, its vision blurred again.

"Escape, quickly escape!"

"Can anyone save me, oh, ancestors of Qing clan, why are you not taking action?"

"Father! Mother! Where are you?"

...

Cries resounded, screaming filled the entire Qing oasis.

Rough winds howled in the desert, while the oasis carried a warm breeze.

This was Western Desert Qing clan’s blessed land headquarters, it was situated in a beautiful oasis of Western Desert.

The sandstones were like mountains, the still lake were like the sea, and the trees were lush and vibrant. However, this utopia that was Qing clan’s beautiful home turned into living hell.

A terrifying slaughter was ongoing, blood flowed into rivers, countless Gu Masters retaliated desperately but were unable to cause any problems for the perpetrator.

The young Spectral Soul, Ming You from Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, wore a black robe, he stood proudly in the sky, each time he attacked, he took away thousands of lives.

He looked down on the ground, countless people were running in the face of death, they were like pitiful ants.

"Qing clan, you are a great Western Desert super force, how long are you going to hide?" Ming You snickered and taunted: "It is too disappointing, are you going to watch your clan get slaughtered like this? Hehehe, the so-called Qing clan is nothing amazing after all!"

Qing clan did not have many Gu Immortals left.

Right now, they were in the deepest part of their blessed land headquarters, hearing Ming You’s voice, they felt extremely furious.

"This demonic path scoundrel is too arrogant and hateful!"

"To think that our second supreme elder would die at his hands, this is truly too unbelievable."

"Our great Qing clan actually ended up in this situation, nobody dares to go out and fight just this mere Ming You alone!"

"No, this is not all Ming You’s credit. Don’t you all find it weird that news of Divine Bean Palace was leaked out?"

Qing clan’s Gu Immortals discussed, some were sad and dejected, some felt they were helpless to do anything.

"Cough cough, you are right." Qing clan’s first supreme elder woke up from his coma.

"First elder!" Qing clan’s Gu Immortals were overjoyed, they cheered: "You are finally awake."

Qing clan’s first supreme elder still had a purplish complexion, his aura was extremely weak. He barely sat up on his bed as he said: "Ming You has likely cooperated with the other forces to deal with us. He is an open blade while the other forces are restraining us secretly, they are too vicious. Not long ago, to settle some territorial dispute and get a giant resource point, I was sneak attacked and suffered heavy injuries, I have no battle strength now. Recently, our clan’s giant resource points have all been attacked by demonic path Gu Immortals. After sending our Immortal Gu Houses to deal with them, our headquarters have fallen into a state of absolute weakness... cough, cough."

"First supreme elder, you need to rest, don’t exert yourself!"

"Yes, we will handle this!"

"As long as Qing clan survives this crisis, we will definitely take revenge on those vicious scoundrels."

Qing clan’s Gu Immortals quickly assured.

But Qing clan’s first supreme elder shook his head: "Don’t go and waste your lives, Ming You has incredible battle strength, he possesses an immense innate luck, he is not a simple character. We were too careless earlier, by the time we realized this and want to deal with him seriously, the other forces already started to restrain us. We need to be very vigilant in dealing with him now!"

Qing clan’s Gu Immortals were discussing earlier, but hearing the first supreme elder’s words, it seemed like he had other plans.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"First supreme elder, what idea do you have?"

Qing clan’s first supreme elder forced a smile: "The cause of everything, the origin of Qing clan’s predicament, is just one thing, Divine Bean Palace! Other than us, nobody wants to see Qing clan refine Divine Bean Palace successfully, even if we exert all our strength and give up our territories, even if we defeat Ming You, how can we deal with all the super forces?"

"Cough, cough." Qing clan’s first supreme elder paused before continuing: "So our best counterattack is to refine Divine Bean Palace."

An anxious Gu Immortal immediately asked: "How can we refine Divine Bean Palace rapidly?"

Qing clan’s first supreme elder sighed: "There is one method we can try!"

Qing clan’s immortals were very excited, they looked at Qing clan’s first supreme elder fixedly.

Qing clan’s first supreme elder slowly explained: "Earlier, we used hatred Gu to get past Divine Bean Palace’s defense, we made huge progress, we just need some time to refine it now. However, we lack the time we need, we can only take a risk and use that killer move now."

"What killer move?"

"Don’t tell me..."

Some Qing clan Gu Immortals had perplexed expressions while some had changing expressions, they recalled some vague rumors they had heard.

Qing clan’s first supreme elder nodded, excitement showed on his tired face: "This killer move was created by second supreme elder and I, he was the main user with my assistance. The killer move has extraordinary might, I will activate it while all of you participate and help. As long as we can unleash it, the current Divine Bean Palace cannot block it, any rank eight Gu Immortal will need to avoid it as well. No matter how strong Ming You is, he is still rank seven."

"We will do that!"

"First supreme elder, what do we name it?"

First supreme elder shook his head as he smiled bitterly: "Second supreme elder died before we could name it."

This old man was silent for a while before replying solemnly: "Let’s call it, Qing Chou[1], this is the revenge of Qing clan! Divine Bean Palace was the cause of our predicament and suffering, Qing clan needs to take revenge. We will use Qing Chou to refine Divine Bean Palace completely! These super forces with ill intentions will also face the revenge of our Qing clan one by one! That arrogant and vicious Ming You who caused us great harm will also face our revenge! Using Qing Chou, we will..."

"We will take revenge! We will repay this debt a thousandfold to those who hurt us. In this aspect, we will not be stingy, we will repay them fully!"

These words raised the spirits of the immortals.

"Qing Chou... truly a good name."

"First supreme elder is right, we must take revenge!"

"Let Qing Chou be the sign of our Qing clan's rise to greatness."

Qing... Chou...

Qing Chou...

Qing Chou?

Qing Chou!

Qing Chou's vision cleared up at once, it recalled everything, its memories were fully restored.

Facing Ming You's assault, Qing clan first decided to use the killer move Qing Chou to refine Divine Bean Palace. Next, they would go and fight to claim victory.

However, the Qing Chou killer move that they entrusted their hopes to did not fully refine Divine Bean Palace. Instead, it triggered a mysterious resonance with Divine Bean Palace, the entire sky shined with jade green light.

The mysterious light devoured Qing clan's immortals, it digested the entire Qing clan headquarters, including Qing oasis, it covered the surrounding ten thousand li!

Ming You was forced to retreat, after the mysterious light faded, the super forces came to check what happened, they saw that the great Qing clan territory was reduced to a huge and vast ruin.

The indignant Western Desert Gu Immortals searched the entire place thoroughly but they could not find anything.

As time passed, people went from disappointment to despair, they left this lifeless dessert eventually.

Only in some corner, a rank eight wood path Immortal Gu House with a dim hall and hatred Gu as the core within the hall was activating a killer move.

This killer move was called Qing Chou.

The killer move Qing Chou did not fail, it was only influenced by something and mutated in essence.

It turned into... a life form!

Countless vengeful souls who died terrible deaths fused together, a soul beast with hatred Gu as the core was born.

Initially, it was very small like a baby.

It opened its eyes, its gaze was crystal clear.

Next, it grew up continuously, without any idea of what was happening.

Its body started to grow as its physique became clear. It had claws, a tortoise shell, and a head with long hair.

Its size was initially the same as a rabbit, next it grew to a wolf's size, before a bull and then an elephant, eventually, it became as large as a mountain.

Countless vengeful souls cried out, from the moment it was born, they had been screeching in its ears, reverberating in its heart.

Every time it grew, these resounding voices would become louder and more muffled.

They were screaming, they were howling.

Qing Chou could not hear them clearly, it felt greatly troubled.

These voices were too annoying and muffled, they went on without stopping, it became confused, it became frustrated, it became angry.

Its thoughts became more chaotic, it became more ruthless and aggressive.

It growled, it slashed the ground of the hall with its claws, it crashed into the pillars using its shell, it bled from injuries as its hair covered its face.

The hall rapidly repaired itself but the voices still continued, they were getting more muffled and loud.

Qing Chou could do nothing.

It became dejected eventually.

It wanted to give up, it wanted to die.

But it did not do so, those vengeful voices were trying to remind it of something.

What was it?

What were those damned voices trying to say?

Tell me, tell me, why are you torturing me like this, why don’t you just let me die?!

Ever since the chaotic battle started, Qing Chou sensed Spectral Soul, its consciousness fell into chaos due to hatred Gu. Even though it was conscious, its mind was not clear.

It only knew how to kill, it knew how to charge and advance, it only knew how to fight! It wanted to exert itself, to use every drop of blood in its body to kill Spectral Soul, to exterminate Spectral Soul!

But now, Qing Chou’s mind was no longer in chaos, it regained clarity.

It was as if the clouds parted in the sky, everything was clear now.

Its memories were complete, it understood the whole situation from start to finish.

It... could finally understand the words of those vengeful souls.

These vengeful souls were screaming and crying all the time, they had never stopped or weakened at all.

Qing Chou heard them clearly now.

These vengeful souls were not screaming in pain or bitterness.

They were not crying out in grievance, they were not screaming their innocence.

They only said one thing — Qing Chou.

Qing Chou!

Qing Chou!!

You must remember the purpose of your existence!

You must remember the burden that you bear!

You must remember all your enemies!

Don’t forget it, don’t forget it for even an instance, don’t give up, don’t give up even for an instance.

Revenge, revenge, revenge!

Those clansmen who died pitiful deaths, those Qing clan members who had yet to fulfill their aspirations, we need to take revenge for the pain and suffering that was inflicted on us!

"Spectral Soul—!" Qing Chou screamed: "Have a good taste of this!"

"This is the revenge of Qing clan, after a hundred thousand years, the killer move that has been nurturing for a hundred thousand years—"

"Qing Chou!!!"

"Oh no!" At this moment, Giant Spectral Soul’s expression turned cold, his heart sank.

A qualitative change occurred in Qing Chou’s body, rank eight Immortal Gu Hatred which had been growing the entire time finally broke through at this moment, it became a genuine rank nine Immortal Gu!

Qing Chou’s mountain-like body shot out a jade green light that was familiar to Spectral Soul.

Within the green light, Qing Chou’s body transformed like flowing water.

It stood straight up, its four limbs turned into human hands and legs.

The huge pair of wings that it had turned into a full body armor.

Its shell turned into a shield, held by its left arm.

Its snake neck contracted rapidly, allowing its neck and shoulder to have the perfect proportion.

Next, a huge lump of light flowed from its long tail and snake neck, transferring to its right palm as it extended into a terrifying spear.

Giant Qing Chou charged towards Spectral Soul, the vast green light condensed and went into the tip of its spear.

The long spear stabbed forward with great force!

Giant Spectral Soul changed moves!

He had to make a change, if he used his earlier method on Qing Chou again, he would be courting death.

Spectral Soul grunted as he retracted his move, causing him to suffer backlash.

But he achieved his goal, he successfully changed killer moves. At the crucial moment, rumbling black smoke gushed towards Qing Chou, stopping its attack.

Seeing this, Wu Shuai, Qi Sea Ancestor, and Demon Immortal Qi Jue stared with wide eyes.

This seemed like a long process but in fact, it occurred too quickly and suddenly.

Qing Chou suddenly became stronger, it turned into a giant with a huge rise in battle strength.

Before Wu Shuai, Qi Sea or Qi Jue had time to celebrate, Giant Spectral Soul withdrew his killer move and retaliated instantly.

Seeing that this fatal killer move was mostly blocked by Spectral Soul, Wu Shuai, Qi Sea, and Qi Jue felt greatly disappointed, they could not help but admire Spectral Soul’s resolve and method.

He could actually swap killer moves within such a short time frame!

However, Lu Wei Yin smiled.

At the next moment, Giant Qing Chou’s messy hair rose up and tangled together like vines, gathering into the appearance of a huge tree.

This tree had lush leaves, it was a massive cover over Qing Chou’s head, it emitted a jade green light again.

Spectral Soul’s rumbling smoke was all blocked by this powerful light!

"This is?!"

"A venerable method!"

"Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s karma divine tree killer move!!"

Qi Sea, Qi Jue, and Wu Shuai were shocked.

Swish!

Giant Qing Chou’s attacks were no longer obstructed, the terrifying spear pierced through Giant Spectral Soul from the front to the back.

Following that, the green spear turned into jade green light and flowed into Giant Spectral Soul’s body like a torrent of water.

Giant Spectral Soul took several steps back, his aura weakened to an extremely low level.

Spectral Soul was covered in holes as soul qi leaked out along with some jade green light. Hundreds of arms covered these holes but could not stop the overwhelming green light from shining.

These mysterious lights were like swords or spears, bursting out of Spectral Soul’s body, radiating the entire battlefield.

Spectral Soul lost!

This was a truly fatal blow!!

Spectral Soul’s expression was cold as he muttered: "Genesis Lotus, Paradise Earth... good, you guys are really impressive."

Next, he smiled coldly, his killing intent surged instead, reaching an unprecedented level!

"Long long ago, I swore that I would only make others struggle in the face of death. Are you all... prepared for that?"

Spectral Soul’s words made everyone’s expressions change.

"Oh no!"

"Get away from him, quickly!"

"He is going to self-detonate!!"

"All of you, die with me." Spectral Soul roared.

Boom—!!!

[1] Chou means revenge

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2057 Spectral Soul“s Death

"Quickly, quickly, we need to be faster!" Fairy Zi Wei continued to urge herself internally.

She was the only wisdom path great expert here, the duty of unraveling this battlefield killer move ended up on her shoulders.

Fairy Zi Wei’s soul was modified by Spectral Soul, she was loyal to him, she exerted herself in trying to unravel this battlefield killer move.

However, Lu Wei Yin’s illusory sand shifting shadow battlefield was not a simple battlefield.

"This earth path battlefield is extremely sturdy, it also has a layer of vagueness. I’m afraid it uses Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s battlefield as the foundation and was modified from that!"

Fairy Zi Wei was frowning deeply, her mind was heating up, with her full effort, she managed to deduce some useful information.

But there was little progress overall.

Firstly, the battlefield killer move would shrink into a tiny spot once they were activated, isolating the inside and outside. Be it from within or externally, it was hard to unravel.

Initially, Fairy Zi Wei was able to break Fang Yuan’s yama battlefield in Lang Ya blessed land because she had Feng Jiu Ge’s fate armor Immortal Gu to locate yama battlefield.

By combining both internal and external influences, she had a breakthrough in unraveling that battlefield.

Secondly, illusory sand shifting shadow battlefield was not ordinary, it was the work of a venerable, improved upon by future generations.

It was already amazing that Fairy Zi Wei could find the exact location of the battlefield so quickly, it showed her incredible wisdom path attainment.

Fairy Zi Wei continued to use various methods, sometimes, she activated individual Immortal Gu, sometimes, she used wisdom path killer moves, sometimes, she even asked the Longevity Heaven or Heavenly Court Gu Immortals to probe the illusory sand shifting shadow battlefield continuously.

This was truly an unthinkable sight.

Shadow Sect, Longevity Heaven, and Heavenly Court were actually working together closely!

At the outer periphery, the black bat group was like a raging black tide that attacked constantly. Heavenly Court's Immortal Gu Houses were guarding against them, forming a tight defense that killed all the black bats that were daring enough to approach them.

In the inner area, Fairy Zi Wei was high in the sky with Old Man Zheng Yuan, Bai Ning Bing, and Fairy Miao Yin protecting her.

At the center, two Immortal Gu Houses were situated beside each other. They were Longevity Heaven's Calamity Luck Altar and Heavenly Court's Demon Judgment Board. Each time Fairy Zi Wei gave instructions, these two Immortal Gu Houses would cooperate and use their methods to attack a corner of the battlefield.

Qin Ding Ling and Bing Sai Chuan did not doubt Fairy Zi Wei's anxiety, they also lacked a wisdom path great expert, they were willing to put in effort for this.

Everything they did was for the eventual goal, Fang Yuan!

Originally, these three forces restrained each other while chasing Fang Yuan, they had their own vigilance.

But now that the battlefield killer move enveloped Fang Yuan and Spectral Soul, these three forces started to work together, exerting their effort and energy into unraveling this battlefield killer move.

Fang Yuan's craftiness and viciousness was deeply etched in everyone's minds, since he put up an ambush here, he definitely had ill intentions.

The three factions' Gu Immortals felt something amiss, they quickly worked together, attempting to thwart Fang Yuan's plans with all their effort.

It was truly a wise decision.

But...

Guh.

Fairy Zi Wei suddenly shook as she spat out a mouthful of blood.

"Oh?" Seeing this change, all of the Gu Immortals' attention was drawn.

Fairy Zi Wei wiped the blood off the corner of her lips, her expression was pale but she gritted her teeth, continuing her deduction.

"Heavenly Court nurtured a great immortal, for her master, she is really giving it her all." Within Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan sneered as he tried to attack the two forces with words.

Within the Immortal Gu House, Qin Ding Ling snorted coldly, frowning: "Why is my luck wavering so much?"

At the next moment, Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan suddenly took action, profound light flickered, the Shadow Sect immortals were all enveloped, before they shot outside like a meteor!

Bing Sai Chuan and Qin Ding Ling’s hearts jumped, they did not think anymore, quickly controlling the Immortal Gu Houses to follow after Fairy Zi Wei.

Boom!

A terrifying explosion occurred at this moment.

Calamity Luck Altar had just started to move when an immense force assaulted it from the back.

Bing Sai Chuan growled: "Zi Wei harmed us!"

Calamity Luck Altar suffered a huge blow, but its momentum rose as it charged towards Fairy Zi Wei with killing intent.

Within Demon Judgment Board, Fang Zheng lacked experience compared to Bing Sai Chuan and Qin Ding Ling. When the explosion occurred, Demon Judgment Board was still staying motionless on the spot.

Thus, Demon Judgment Board suffered much greater damage than Calamity Luck Altar.

At once, Fang Zheng felt like he had fallen into a tsunami, he was caught unguarded, the entire Demon Judgment Board was swept away by the explosion.

Rumble!

This explosion was created by Spectral Soul’s self-detonation.

After the explosion destroyed the illusory sand shifting shadow battlefield, the three forces’ Gu Immortals who did not know what happened were greatly affected.

Both Immortal Gu Houses, Calamity Luck Altar and Demon Judgment Board, were heavily damaged, even though Fairy Zi Wei deduced the explosion slightly earlier, there was too little time, the explosion quickly implicated them, they were sent flying everywhere.

The numerous Heavenly Court Immortal Gu Houses were also sent flying like kites, blown away by the intense force.

The black bat group was even worse, hundreds of thousands of bats, be they desolate beasts or immemorial desolate beasts, were instantly blown to pieces.

The ground shook as the world seemingly collapsed, the entire scene was very chaotic now.

An extremely damaged fortress appeared in the air.

Qing Chou, which had turned into a giant, was blown into three pieces, it landed on the ground.

Xi Land was greatly damaged, it was originally complete and intact, now only less than thirty percent was left.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was covered in blood as he flew out of this secluded domain of heaven and earth, he had a sharp gaze as he fixed his eyes on the fortress.

It was Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress!

This rank eight Immortal Gu House truly had top notch defense, even though it was heavily damaged, it still managed to block the force of Spectral Soul’s self-detonation.

At the next moment, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress was stored into Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture.

This Immortal Gu House was too slow, it could not be relied on all the time.

Fang Yuan appeared!

Instantly, he attracted the attention of all the Gu Immortals.

But Fang Yuan was not alone, Lu Wei Yin and Wu Shuai were also around him.

"Let’s kill Fang Yuan!" Calamity Luck Altar was not in good shape, Bing Sai Chuan gave up on it and let the rest repair, while he went to kill Fang Yuan himself.

This rank eight great expert who had once fought alongside Fang Yuan did not conceal his deep killing intent towards the latter.

"Fang Yuan, what did you do to master?!" Fairy Zi Wei stopped escaping, she screamed out as blood oozed out of her nose and mouth.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue had a child-like appearance but an elderly voice, he smiled coldly: "Didn’t you all feel the severity of the explosion earlier? Spectral Soul has already self-detonated and died."

What?!

The immortals heard this and were intensely shocked.

"The great Spectral Soul actually died?"

"The explosion earlier was too terrifying, it was clearly a soul path killer move, was it Spectral Soul’s final attack before dying?"

"But how can this be! A great Demon Venerable..."

"No, Spectral Soul is no longer a Demon Venerable."

"Even so, he still has the number one battle strength in the world, to think that he actually died at the hands of Fang Yuan and the rest!"

"Fang Yuan actually killed Spectral Soul??"

The immortals’ expressions changed, their pupils contracted as all of their gazes focused on Fang Yuan!

Even though Spectral Soul’s death was caused by everyone’s effort, Fang Yuan was undeniably the main perpetrator.

"Fang Yuan cannot be underestimated, he is too scheming, he actually managed to kill Spectral Soul, that is a former Demon Venerable!"

"He even destroyed fate Gu, it is not strange that he managed to achieve this."

"Kill him, we cannot let him escape. This demon being alive is truly the greatest misfortune of all lives in this world!"

"Yes, even if he was acting earlier, after killing Spectral Soul, he must definitely be in bad shape. If we don’t kill him now, when will we?"

The immortals shouted in unison.

"Fang Yuan, even if I have to die here, I want you dead!" Fairy Zi Wei’s expression was distorted, she gritted her teeth as she attacked.

On one hand, Fairy Zi Wei was modified by Spectral Soul and became extremely loyal to him, his death angered her deeply. On the other hand, she had constantly experienced failure as a result of Fang Yuan. In Heavenly Court, she failed, in Shadow Sect, she still failed, she kept losing to this Fang Yuan.

"Kill him, if Fang Yuan is not dead, the ones to suffer will be everyone present here." Demon Immortal Qi Jue called out as he attacked Fang Yuan as well.

At the same time, he secretly transmitted to Fang Yuan while chuckling: "Fang Yuan, when Spectral Soul self-detonated earlier, you did not let me into your Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, I’ll forget that. If you want to escape now, you will need my help, take out some venerable true inheritances, show me your sincerity!"

Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s Xi Land was greatly damaged but he retained most of his own battle strength.

This old demon was still working with Fang Yuan to fight Spectral Soul one moment ago, immediately after, he flipped and changed sides, using the three forces to threaten and extort Fang Yuan again!

Fang Yuan was really not in good shape, the sovereign immortal aperture’s myriad tribulation was still ongoing.

Beside him, Lu Wei Yin had a pale expression, his body was wobbling around, it would not be surprising if he fainted at the next moment.

Wu Shuai was looking terrible, even though his rank eight aura was not stable, he still retained some battle strength. Right now, he could only be sacrificed to try to stall for time. Even so, there was no guarantee regarding how much time he could fight for.

As for Qi Sea Ancestor, he was already put into Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture. Within it, Combat Beast King was still unconscious, Fang Yuan needed a Gu Immortal expert to manage the situation.

If not, Qi Sea Ancestor would be forced by the situation, to protect his main body, he would need to expose his identity.

"At the crucial moment, without any better options, I will need to sacrifice the Qi Sea clone and Wu Shuai clone to stall for time." Fang Yuan thought.

He transmitted to Lu Wei Yin: "What is the escape method that you mentioned earlier?"

When Giant Spectral Soul self-detonated, Lu Wei Yin made his move, forcefully activating the illusory sand shifting shadow battlefield and suppressing the soul explosion miraculously, even though it only lasted a few breaths of time, it managed to successfully gain them some time.

Using this time, Fang Yuan’s Qi Sea and Wu Shuai clone managed to hide inside Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress.

During which, Lu Wei Yin transmitted to Fang Yuan that he had a way to escape and leave Central Continent safely.

Precisely so, Fang Yuan let Lu Wei Yin into his Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress.

Firstly, Lu Wei Yin saved both of Fang Yuan’s clones, that was a move demonstrating great sincerity.

Secondly, because Lu Wei Yin’s battlefield killer move was broken, he suffered an immense backlash, his battle strength plunged and his threat level also diminished, Fang Yuan did not fear him now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Lu Wei Yin replied Fang Yuan immediately: "Fang Yuan, follow me!"

However, Fang Yuan replied: "No rush."

At the next moment, he smiled coldly, his arms were folded behind him, looking at the three groups of Gu Immortals and their Immortal Gu Houses, he spoke calmly and casually: "Very good, which of you want to die first?"

Saying this, intense aura burst out of his body, his rank eight aura was fully intact and not weak at all.

All of the immortals stared with wide eyes.

"Wasn’t he at his limit already?"

All of the excitement to attack was doused.

The immortals became hesitant.

Using this timing, Fang Yuan laughed loudly as he activated an immortal killer move, bringing Lu Wei Yin and the rest away, they turned into a sword rainbow, flying far away.

Different from earlier, Fang Yuan had already refined many heaven path dao marks, he had already gotten some freedom from the restrictions of the heaven path dao marks.

It was many times easier for him to use immortal killer moves now. Although he still needed to use the human path formation to attack the heaven path dao marks, he could already use other methods now.

"Fang Yuan escaped, chase him!"

"He was toying with us."

The immortals realized at once, they started to pursue him relentlessly.

All sorts of killer moves were unleashed, bombarding Fang Yuan and the rest.

It was as if the situation had returned to before, except Spectral Soul, Qi Sea Ancestor, and Qing Chou were gone, in exchange there was Lu Wei Yin instead.

But...

"Everyone, be very careful! The final struggle of this demon Fang Yuan cannot be underestimated."

"Let the other two forces fight, let’s save our energy."

"Fang Yuan is too scheming, in my opinion, he might still have a second battlefield killer move or an immortal formation."

"That’s right, in the Southern Border battle, Fang Yuan used a time path formation to trap the allied forces of Southern Border’s righteous path. Lu Wei Yin is also a devious person, he set up the earth path formation to trap Spectral Soul, he did the same thing as Fang Yuan. I was wrong about him!"

"The great Paradise Earth’s Southern Border inheritor actually collaborated with Fang Yuan so shamelessly!!"

The immortals’ words were filled with righteousness and heroism against the evil enemies, they transmitted thoughts and exchanged conversations, trying to come up with a plan.

They chased with a huge commotion, but they were all feeling internally fearful!

The current situation was already very different from earlier, it had changed almost completely.

Fang Yuan managed to kill Spectral Soul, this incredible feat made all three forces very wary and fearful.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan was devious and crafty, he was ruthless and vicious, his battle achievements were deeply etched into everyone’s hearts, the three forces’ Gu Immortals were filled with trepidation.

On one hand, even if Fang Yuan was near his limit, his final struggle would cause any of them to suffer huge losses, their plans would fail completely; on the other hand, the three forces were not just fighting Fang Yuan, they were also mutual enemies.

Earlier, Spectral Soul and Qi Jue took on the role as the vanguard, the three forces were happy to follow behind them and try to reap some benefits. But now, Spectral Soul was dead, even though Demon Immortal Qi Jue appeared imposing, he was secretly extorting Fang Yuan for his personal gains, why would he really fight with his true strength?

Speaking of which, the three forces’ Gu Immortals were wary of Fang Yuan, but was Demon Immortal Qi Jue not wary of him?

"Fang Yuan did not fight much in the few battles earlier. How much did he actually recover? Looking at his killer moves, they are clearly more complex and numerous, how much strength is he concealing? Does he have a fourth Immortal Gu House?" Demon Immortal Qi Jue thought to himself.

Earlier, Fang Yuan lost Dragon Palace and Myriad Year Flying Warship, he immediately took out Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress. These three Immortal Gu Houses were all rank eight, they were peak creations of enslavement path, time path, and earth path.

Fang Yuan’s abundant wealth truly shocked Demon Immortal Qi Jue. He would not be surprised even if Fang Yuan took out a fifth Immortal Gu House at this point.

"Just how deep is Fang Yuan’s foundation?! Aren’t the past venerables investing too much in him!" Demon Immortal Qi Jue gritted his teeth.

As Fang Yuan retreated, he suggested transacting using true inheritances, his attitude was tough at times, Demon Immortal Qi Jue could not make up his mind.

"Should I attack at this time?"

"How much strength does Fang Yuan have left? Would my gains be higher if I kill him?"

"But now, chasing and collecting true inheritances seems pretty good too..."

Among the people, Demon Immortal Qi Jue had the best time during this chasing period.

"We arrived! It is below this place." Lu Wei Yin suddenly transmitted.

Fang Yuan controlled the rainbow, he suddenly changed directions, he instantly broke through the rock layer, entering the next layer.

Rumble...

Fang Yuan and the rest heard loud rumbling noises around them.

A boundless earth qi river surged intensely as tides raged, Fang Yuan and the other two were surrounded by it, they felt like ants in the river, being extremely insignificant.

"This is... the manifestation of an earth vein?!" Fang Yuan was stunned before he soon realized it.

Lu Wei Yin nodded as he smiled: "Indeed, with the five regions becoming one, the earth veins have merged as well, with the movement of the earth veins, they will manifest themselves. It is about to reach that island."

Fang Yuan activated his killer move with difficulty as the sword rainbow shot down.

The sword rainbow was hard to maintain, it finally dissipated in the air after some time.

The three immortals fell onto a brown island, they were in sorry states.

This island was very small, it was only a few square kilometers in size. The island was deserted without any living beings, it had a plain terrain, there were three huge rocks at the periphery that resembled pillars, embedded into the grand earth vein.

Precisely because of these three rock pillars, the island remained unmoving despite the earth vein’s movement.

"Fang Yuan, where are you running?"

"Chase!"

"What is this place?!"

At this time, the three groups of pursuers also arrived at this layer.

Someone activated a killer move but found that the earth path dao marks here were too dense, they suppressed almost all other paths.

Gu Immortals had to spend a lot of effort activating killer moves unless it was earth path, otherwise, only Immortal Gu Houses could still move around freely.

"Oh no, Fang Yuan came here with a plan in mind."

"No matter what he is trying to do, we must stop him!"

"Quickly destroy that island."

The three forces’ Gu Immortals had imposing aura, they quickly got close.

However, Fang Yuan, Wu Shuai, and Lu Wei Yin attacked suddenly, destroying the three huge rock pillars on the island!

Without the support of the rock pillars, the island started to float away along the earth vein.

The three forces’ Gu Immortals chased but the island moved rapidly, the difference between the two was just too big, the island quickly pulled apart some distance and in a few breaths of time, shook off the three forces’ Gu Immortals.

The three forces’ Gu Immortals were dumbfounded.

What the heck was happening?

It was just an island but it actually moved so quickly!

"We really escaped from them. What is this island? Where will it bring us to?" Wu Shuai touched the hard ground of this island with his hands as he asked in amazement.

Lu Wei Yin continued to cough blood, destroying the rock pillars earlier caused his injuries to be aggravated.

He did not answer Wu Shuai, he looked at Fang Yuan instead: "Fang Yuan, you must have recalled it already?"

Fang Yuan nodded, the moment he saw this island, a flash of inspiration struck in his mind. By the time he landed, he had already recalled it.

"This is Flying Earth." Fang Yuan told Wu Shuai.

Even though Wu Shuai was his clone, Fang Yuan did not give him a copy of all his memories, this was a precaution.

If Wu Shuai got captured in the future and got his soul searched, these memories would end up helping his enemies after all.

"In the previous life’s five hundred years, the five regions became one, the two heavens combined, the earth veins of the five regions also merged and created many unique terrains. The people in the world called them the ten earths. They are Earth Abyss, Earth Trench, Earth Tunnel, Earth Cave, Earth Prison, Production Earth, Flying Earth, Formation Earth, Treasure Earth, and Tomb Earth."

"This island is one of the ten earths, Flying Earth, it is formed from the earth vein. It can move around in the earth vein as quickly as flying, its speed cannot be matched normally."

Wu Shuai finally understood: "So that’s it."

He continued to sigh: "With the changes in the world, the underground has also become much more interesting."

He knew the essence of this island, he asked: "Then where can we go?"

Fang Yuan shook his head: "I have only heard of Flying Earth, I have never interacted with it. We can only follow along its trail now, we cannot control the direction. Lu Wei Yin, I wonder if you have any method?"

In this ambush battle, Lu Wei Yin’s performance was very outstanding, Fang Yuan saw much value in him now.

This current generation inheritor of Paradise Earth had incredible power.

He first set up illusory sand shifting shadow battlefield, which was powerful enough to trap Spectral Soul and Qi Jue, it perfectly displayed the might of a proper battlefield.

Next, Lu Wei Yin controlled the battlefield and allowed the immortals to cooperate tightly while dealing with Spectral Soul. During the intense fight, Spectral Soul wanted to target Qing Chou but was obstructed by Lu Wei Yin multiple times.

After that, at the crucial moment, Lu Wei Yin displayed a powerful defensive killer move that blocked Spectral Soul’s rampaging attack, allowing Qi Jue to have enough time to use his xi xi killer move. This was the turning point of that battle.

In addition, Lu Wei Yin used all life is bitter and suffering loss is a blessing to counter Spectral Soul, causing him to suffer an intense backlash.

Finally, he forcefully maintained the battlefield and suppressed Spectral Soul’s self-detonation, allowing Fang Yuan’s clones to escape the crisis.

After the battlefield was destroyed, he was the one who guided Fang Yuan to this Flying Earth and escaped successfully.

Lu Wei Yin’s battle strength was definitely top tier in the current world, but Fang Yuan admired his nature even more. He was adept at enduring and persevering, he used the two killer moves, all life is bitter and suffering loss is a blessing, at the crucial moment to cause Spectral Soul to suffer a huge setback.

With his deep shrewdness and wisdom, Fang Yuan believed that Lu Wei Yin definitely had a method to control Flying Earth. After all, this involved earth path, it was Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s greatest expertise.

And as expected, Lu Wei Yin did not disappoint Fang Yuan.

He smiled and nodded: "I am not so skilled, but Paradise Earth’s inheritance has a relevant method to control Flying Earth’s direction and decide the place to stop at."

Wu Shuai heard this, his pupils shrank, he became quite cautious.

Lu Wei Yin seemed to have not noticed as he kept up his smile: "This earth vein travels along Western Desert, towards Eastern Sea, before reaching Southern Border and Northern Plains after that, I wonder where you want to stop at, Fang

Yuan?"

Fang Yuan smiled too: "Didn’t you invite me to be a guest of your Mushroomman Paradise earlier?"

Lu Wei Yin nodded: "Fang Yuan, now that Spectral Soul has been killed by us, I am sure you know of my sincerity already. This is not just my sincerity, this is also the sincerity of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable!"

"Even though I am not sure of the details, there is something written down in the inheritance that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable left behind — Gu Yue Fang Yuan is the Paradise Earth inheritor of the five regions! All of Paradise Earth’s forces will help him, they will assist him to become a Gu Venerable with their full strength!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2059 Paradise Earth“s Deeper Intentions

"What?" When Wu Shuai heard this news for the first time, he was stupefied.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was well reputed to be benevolent and kind, who did not know of his nature? He spent his entire life cleaning up the mess that Spectral Soul created, he did not have a single offensive method. All of his actions and words were meant to lead people to the path of kindness, he took joy in helping people.

Among the people he helped, were the numbers merely millions or tens of millions? In fact, not only humans, even variant humans and legendary immemorial beasts received his help. He even took action many times to repair mountains and rivers, he managed the natural resource points of heaven and earth.

Southern Border’s Mushroomman Paradise, Eastern Sea’s Merman Imperial Court, as well as the blue dragon whale, had all received Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s help.

Even Central Continent’s Reincarnation Battlefield was created by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable because he did not want to see bloodshed between Central Continent Gu Immortals, he used it to resolve their conflicts.

And Fang Yuan?

He killed people like cutting grass, he was cold and callous. For his personal benefit, he destroyed fate Gu and disregarded the prosperity of humanity.

In order to cultivate, he plundered resources everywhere. He extorted, he stole, he snatched, he used all methods possible.

Everywhere he went, there was blood, there was disaster.

And now that Spectral Soul was dead, Fang Yuan became the genuine number one demon in the world!

It was not strange that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable managed to deduce the existence of Fang Yuan, all the other nine venerables had done the same. But

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable actually wanted Fang Yuan to become his inheritor, he wanted all of the forces of Paradise Earth to help Fang Yuan ascend to the position of a venerable?

This was simply bizarre beyond belief!

"Has Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable gone mad?" Wu Shuai’s first thoughts after reacting were as such.

Immediately after, Wu Shuai thought: "Don’t tell me Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable wants my main body to become a kind person? This does suit his style of action."

Indeed.

Fang Yuan was a demon.

After news of the earlier battle spread out, it would shock the world, Fang Yuan’s title as the number one demon in the world would gain everyone’s agreement!

If such a demon could turn over a new leaf and become righteous, it was definitely good news for the world and the people living in it.

Wu Shuai was shocked but Fang Yuan was expressionless, he did not show any external emotions.

Because he had already heard such words before he communicated with Lu Wei Yin.

Fang Yuan recalled the scene back then on the Red Lotus stone island.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable arrived at the stone lotus island, when he spoke with Red Lotus’ will, he did mention that he wanted to snatch Fang Yuan as his inheritor.

For this purpose, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable took away regret Gu and placed it inside the blue dragon whale.

Because of this, future events happened, Fang Yuan entered the blue dragon whale’s grotto-heaven paradise, taking regret Gu and releasing Shen Shang.

Back then, the ultimate mission of the merit board seemed to have intentions of inviting Fang Yuan to stay in the grotto-heaven, to accept the mission and become the new owner of the blue dragon whale. But Fang Yuan did not give in to temptation, he chose to leave and participate in the fate war, to destroy fate Gu.

After the fate war, Lu Wei Yin contacted Fang Yuan, stating that he wanted to help the latter.

These two matters were related in essence.

Thus, it was not so hard for Fang Yuan to accept this.

"Ever since I was reborn, I obtained many venerable true inheritances. These are the investments of the past venerables, they used me as a tool to destroy fate Gu."

"I originally thought that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had the same idea, but to think that he had deeper intentions."

Thoughts continued to flicker and collide in Fang Yuan’s mind.

This was the greatest predicament of his life, it was truly a near death experience. The most dangerous moment was when Giant Spectral Soul used the killer move eat heart on him, Fang Yuan was truly defenseless at that moment, he had to gamble.

Thus, he forced himself to laugh and put up a perfect disguise, successfully hoaxing Demon Immortal Qi Jue to attack and betray Spectral Soul. That interrupted eat heart and allowed him to survive.

At that time, Fang Yuan was half a step from entering his grave.

What was the cause of this precarious situation?

Externally, Spectral Soul was chasing after him, trying to regain sovereign immortal fetus Gu and the dream realms.

Internally, there was Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s scheme, he used the three thousand heaven path dao marks to restrain Fang Yuan and forced him to be unable to fight.

Fate Gu was destroyed, Fang Yuan had no value remaining. However much help he had received in the past, he would suffer a proportionate backlash at this moment!

All of the venerables who invested in Fang Yuan also abandoned him, they had resolute killing intent.

In such a situation, one venerable stood out from the rest, he lent a helping hand at the crucial moment, pulling Fang Yuan up from the abyss.

What was Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s intention?

What did he want from Fang Yuan?

Why did he think that Fang Yuan would become a venerable?

Why did he want to help Fang Yuan become a venerable despite the huge cost?

Surrounded by brown soil, earth qi rumbled.

Flying Earth continued to move within the grand earth vein.

"According to my understanding, in the Prophecy of Three Venerables, the next venerable is Great Dream Immortal Venerable. Does Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable think I have the capability to become Great Dream Immortal Venerable?" Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered as he broke the silence, probing as he asked.

Lu Wei Yin replied: "The Prophecy of Three Venerables is well known to everyone, but now that fate Gu has been destroyed, the future is no longer certain. It is possible that Great Dream Immortal Venerable will emerge, it is also possible that this will not happen, right?"

"Fang Yuan, no need to say anymore, once you visit Mushroomman Paradise and receive Paradise Earth’s true meaning, you will understand everything. At that time, I will definitely welcome you enthusiastically."

Lu Wei Yin smiled but was not willing to speak anymore.

After this battle, he was certain that Fang Yuan would go to Mushroomman Paradise, but he would not go now.

Lu Wei Yin knew of Fang Yuan’s vigilance, he was a ruthless person but he was incomparably careful!

Even though Lu Wei Yin made such a huge contribution in this battle, if there was a chance, Fang Yuan would definitely kill him.

But Lu Wei Yin had been cautious, Fang Yuan had no such opportunities. When Spectral Soul self-detonated, he saved Wu Shuai and Qi Sea Ancestor, expressing his goodwill while also telling Fang Yuan he had a way to escape, that was the reason Fang Yuan let him into Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress.

When they got to Flying Earth, because he had a method to control it, he retained his value, Fang Yuan was unwilling to kill him.

But if he fainted, Fang Yuan would definitely deal the fatal blow, before soul searching Lu Wei Yin and learning of all the details.

Eventually, Fang Yuan chose to leave mid-journey.

He was pestered by the myriad tribulation, the most important thing now was to resolve it!

His battle strength was low now, otherwise, he would have attacked the weakened Lu Wei Yin.

Before departing, Lu Wei Yin spoke to Fang Yuan, expressing great sincerity: "Fang Yuan, I am sure you are deeply aware of the situation now. All the venerables want to kill you, this will not be your only predicament. We have very little time now, the actual circumstances are even more dangerous than during the fate war. If we act slowly, we will end up with terrible deaths. Thus, I hope you will come visit the Mushroomman Paradise as soon as possible."

Fang Yuan nodded, bringing Wu Shuai and leaving.

The two immortals left the earth vein, moving upwards. An hour later, they arrived at the surface, appearing in a desert.

There was nothing in the surrounding thousand li.

Wu Shuai suddenly smiled: "Lu Wei Yin seems to be in trouble. By helping us this time, and also being the leader of a variant human force, he is going to face the pressure of Southern Border’s righteous path."

Fang Yuan nodded: "This is indeed problematic for him. Southern Border’s righteous path is led by Wu clan, while Wu clan’s leader, Wu Yong, is an ambitious and formidable person, he will not let go of this chance. But with Lu Wei Yin’s political skills, I am sure he already has a way to resolve it."

Wu Shuai asked again: "Before parting, was Lu Wei Yin simply trying to scare us?"

Fang Yuan had a solemn expression, he shook his head slightly.

Wu Shuai’s mood became heavy.

"Let’s go, we will recuperate now, we really have no time left!" Fang Yuan said.

Earth vein.

"That demon Fang Yuan really escaped!" Inside Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu House, Qin Ding Ling stared with wide and furious eyes as she gritted her teeth, clenching her fists tightly.

This was the situation that she had not wanted to see, but it happened anyway.

Within Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan also let out a sigh.

He did not think that this would happen, the powerful and imposing Spectral Soul died while Fang Yuan, who was escaping from them, managed to flee. The biggest surprise was Lu Wei Yin, this inheritor of Paradise Earth was simply not worthy of being in the righteous path, he was Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s disgrace!

Of course, there was also the earth vein and Flying Earth.

The five regions were unified, the regional walls vanished, Gu Immortals of the five regions focused their attention on the fate war. The aftermath of the war had not settled, but qi tides already started to emerge, all Gu Immortals were busy dealing with them. Almost nobody had the time or energy at this time to explore the changes underground.

The earth vein was grand and vast, it was like a rumbling yellow river, creating huge commotions and sounds. Traveling around this turbulent earth vein was simply not easy.

The Flying Earth that Fang Yuan was on had already gone missing, the immortals traveled with great difficulty underground, their expectations regarding catching Fang Yuan became increasingly lower.

Wherever the immortals’ gazes landed, they would see an abundance of earth path resources around the earth vein. And within the earth vein, there were even higher quality immortal materials.

"With the changes in heaven and earth, even the earth has become so foreign and unfamiliar."

"These earth path resources are very heavy, it is too troublesome to take them from the earth vein, that is, unless one has exceptional earth path attainment."

"Just these earth path resources that we saw along the way, if we can use them well, we can definitely change the situation. Ancient Soul Sect, who owns this Earth Abyss, is going to benefit, if they can absorb these resources, they will definitely become a much more powerful force!"

These were elites among the highest tier of Gu Immortals, they had excellent knowledge and understanding.

The resources underground were too abundant, this would have great implications. The way to extract these resources efficiently and make use of them would affect the entire world’s situation in the future.

"Quick, take out some spare Gu worms, another three hundred were destroyed. Who can help me to replace the new Gu worms together?"

When Immortal Gu Houses moved in this earth vein, they would suffer the invasion of these earth qi, there would be increasingly more earth path dao marks carved on the Immortal Gu Houses.

That was unless it was an earth path Immortal Gu House, Immortal Gu Houses of other paths could not stay inside the earth vein for too long.

"Fang Yuan has disappeared for a long time already."

"Unless we can find another flying island like what they had, otherwise..."

"That Lu Wei Yin clearly had a method to control the flying island. He is

Paradise Earth’s inheritor, back then, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable cultivated earth path primarily."

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals did not say it explicitly, but they had intentions to retreat already.

Qin Ding Ling kept silent, she was unwilling, but Fang Yuan was actually going to successfully escape in front of their very eyes! She knew that Fang Yuan had already escaped for quite some time, there was almost no hope in catching him now.

But she still subconsciously kept silent.

After this battle, her trepidation towards Fang Yuan rose by several times. Spectral Soul went after him personally but could not kill him, instead, Fang Yuan managed to kill Spectral Soul in reverse!

"Gu Yue Fang Yuan... I underestimated you after all."

"No wonder even the wisdom path cultivator Fairy Zi Wei faltered in your hands time and time again."

"Wait, where are the Shadow Sect members?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Countless rock pillars flashed by with speed that resembled illusory figures.

These rock pillars were located in Earth Abyss, they naturally could not move. What was moving was Fairy Zi Wei’s group.

"Since Fang Yuan can kill master, he definitely has a method to escape. I have fought against him many times, I understand him too well!" Fairy Zi Wei said.

After Spectral Soul’s death, the weakest group became Shadow Sect.

Earlier, Fairy Zi Wei purposely shouted and drew Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court’s attention to Fang Yuan, she secretly transmitted and directed these Shadow Sect immortals to escape mid-journey.

After that, she did not even get to the layer with the earth vein, she directly left the battlefield with these Shadow Sect immortals.

"No!" While flying, Fairy Zi Wei suddenly stopped, saying: "Even though I am not sure how long Fang Yuan, Longevity Heaven, and Heavenly Court will fight, we need to make some preparations in advance."

Fairy Zi Wei cast her gaze towards Bai Ning Bing, Fairy Miao Yin, and Lady White Rabbit.

"Farewell to the three of you." Fairy Zi Wei’s tone became extremely cold.

Fairy Miao Yin’s expression turned ugly, evidently, Fairy Zi Wei was going to discard them as used pawns.

Lady White Rabbit was feeling uneasy, while Bai Ning Bing smiled as she rubbed her chin, nodding cheerfully: "Interesting, getting chased like this is common, but I have never experienced such a status myself."

Even if they objected, what could they do?

Fairy Zi Wei was a rank eight great expert, she could suppress the three of them!

Fairy Zi Wei nodded, bringing Old Man Zheng Yuan and Ying Wu Xie away, quickly vanishing from the sights of Bai Ning Bing and the rest.

"What do we do?" Lady White Rabbit asked, she was lost and unsure.

Bai Ning Bing chuckled: "We are in big trouble, I am sure we will be caught very soon."

White Rabbit stared with large and clear eyes, she asked: "Are you sure?"

Bai Ning Bing nodded but said: "We can’t be too sure, but Fairy Zi Wei is a wisdom path great expert, seeing her action earlier, doesn’t it tell you the truth? Even though we have low cultivation level, we have our value. Didn’t they find out Fang Yuan’s traces using us as the connection? But now, Fairy Zi Wei gave up on us instantly, it meant that she gave up the method to detect Fang Yuan. This shows how much danger we are currently in."

"What should we do, let’s leave now." Lady White Rabbit said anxiously.

"Why don’t we split up?" Fairy Miao Yin asked: "Whoever gets caught will be the unlucky one, White Rabbit, go with me."

Among Fang Yuan’s subordinates, Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit had the closest relationship. In this critical moment, she wanted to bring White Rabbit along with her.

"We can’t escape, but I have a good plan." Bai Ning Bing said, bright light flashed in her eyes.

"What plan?" Lady White Rabbit was curious.

But after Bai Ning Bing told them, the two rejected it instantly.

"Isn’t that too risky?" Lady White Rabbit was tongue-tied.

"You want to return to the black bat layer? You lunatic!" Fairy Miao Yin rolled her eyes.

Bai Ning Bing replied: "It seems dangerous there but the truth is different. With a vast number of bats in there, even pursuers will not detect us, they might go to the next layer while passing us by."

White Rabbit was dazed, it seemed that Bai Ning Bing’s words made sense.

"Do you think Lord Fang Yuan will return to save us?" Lady White Rabbit suddenly asked.

Fairy Miao Yin’s expression sank: "Don’t forget that we participated in the chase against him earlier."

White Rabbit was anxious: "But we were forced to, there was no choice. Lord Fang Yuan is so wise, why wouldn’t he understand it?"

Bai Ning Bing sneered: "You two are still hopeful about him? Not to mention that he is currently busy trying to save his own life, even if he could, with that cold aloof nature of his, why would he even come to save us? In fact, he would rather we die now, after we are dead, there will not be sufficient clues to deduce his location."

Lady White Rabbit was speechless.

Fairy Miao Yin gritted her teeth: "No need for more talk, White Rabbit, come with me. As for you, Bai Ning Bing, farewell."

Fairy Miao Yin had no interest in Bai Ning Bing’s suggestion, after much interaction with her, she knew that this person was a lunatic.

Bai Ning Bing shrugged her shoulders: "Go ahead."

As she said that, an intense wind blew, the odor of blood spread throughout the area.

Rank eight Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board arrived, Fang Zheng’s cold voice could be heard from within: "Where are you trying to go?"

Bai Ning Bing and the others were physically and mentally shaken, to think that their pursuers came so quickly!

Why was Fang Zheng here?

It turned out that after Heavenly Court, Longevity Heaven, and Demon Immortal Qi Jue lost sight of Fang Yuan, they lost hope while moving along the earth vein, they started to have other thoughts.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was the first to strike, attacking Calamity Luck Altar.

Within Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan was prepared for this, he blocked Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s attack.

Seeing that his attack failed, Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not feel dejected, he called out: "Heavenly Court! If you do not fight Calamity Luck Altar now, are you going to wait until Longevity Heaven invades Central Continent?"

Bing Sai Chuan heard this, his heart sank.

"You are not wrong." Qin Ding Ling laughed as she gave orders to Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu Houses, launching their attack as well.

However, Heavenly Court did not just encircle Calamity Luck Altar, they even targeted Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue snorted coldly: "Heavenly Court, your appetite is simply too big!"

Qin Ding Ling replied arrogantly: "Qi Jue, after that intense battle, how much battle strength do you have left? Go ahead and show us."

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was silent!

There was nothing wrong with Heavenly Court attacking him, it was a wise decision.

"However, Qin Ding Ling is acting resolutely, is she putting up a farce or..." Demon Immortal Qi Jue had no time to think, Heavenly Court’s attacks already arrived, and he had to defend himself.

The three parties fought above the earth vein.

"Fang Zheng, quickly go to the upper layers and pursue Shadow Sect. Fairy Zi Wei is able to use Bai Ning Bing and the rest to deduce Fang Zheng’s location. We can also do that, go capture these people, as for Fairy Zi Wei and Old Man Zheng Yuan..." Saying this, Qin Ding Ling hesitated.

But soon, she continued with a firm tone: "As for the two of them, kill them if you can!"

"Yes." Fang Zheng acknowledged her orders, he controlled Demon Judgment Board and left the battlefield.

Calamity Luck Altar and Demon Immortal Qi Jue were trapped, they watched as Demon Judgment Board left.

Fang Zheng flew rapidly within Demon Judgment Board, using the Immortal Gu House’s ability to find the traces of Shadow Sect.

Shadow Sect’s members were all on the board list, Fang Zheng quickly found Bai Ning Bing and the other two immortals.

"Rank eight Immortal Gu House — Demon Judgment Board!" Lady White Rabbit’s and Fairy Miao Yin’s hearts sank, they felt a huge pressure.

They wanted to tell Fang Zheng about the direction that Fairy Zi Wei escaped to but there was an alliance agreement made earlier, if they betrayed Fairy Zi Wei, the consequences would be severe.

Cold light flashed in Bai Ning Bing’s eyes, even with an enemy in front of them and possibly others behind, she still had an excited expression: "It’s you, I know that voice, Gu Yue Fang Zheng."

Gu Yue Fang Zheng had a flickering gaze, he looked at Bai Ning Bing through the Immortal Gu House: "Bai Ning Bing, to think that we would meet here at this time."

Memories from before surged in his mind, it was as if he had just drunk some liquor before the battle, his entire body was filled with heated battle intent.

"Bai Ning Bing!" He shouted loudly: "Do you still remember Gu Yue Qing Shu?!"

In Fang Zheng’s heart, Gu Yue Qing Shu was more of a brother than Fang Yuan to him. He was caring, he was gentle, he was responsible, he was admirable.

When he lived in Gu Yue village, even though Gu Yue clan leader took care of Fang Zheng and taught him personally, he was still a senior.

The care and concern that Gu Yue Qing Shu gave to Fang Zheng had always been kept in Fang Zheng’s heart.

But such a person was killed by Bai Ning Bing, Fang Zheng witnessed the entire battle that involved Qing Shu’s death.

"Gu Yue Qing Shu?" Bai Ning Bing was slightly dazed, how could she forget. Back in the day, she fought against Gu Yue Qing Shu, even though she killed the latter, she also lost an arm because of him.

But at the next moment, Bai Ning Bing turned a deaf ear, she laughed in disdain: "I would’ve forgotten if you did not mention him. That was an insignificant ant after all."

Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s eyes widened in response, blood filled his eyes as killing intent surged in his body.

"Bai Ning Bing, die!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Dan... danger." Lady White Rabbit’s expression turned pale.

"Quickly dodge it!!" Fairy Miao Yin screamed.

Demon Judgment Board became larger in the three immortals’ eyes, quickly filling up their field of vision. The intense winds made Lady White Rabbit’s breathing turn difficult.

Bam.

At the next moment, earth shook, rocks were sent flying.

Demon Judgment Board slammed into the tough ground with great intensity.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest split up and moved towards different directions, at the crucial moment, they evaded the attack.

Demon Judgment Board rose up, it charged again.

This time, it targeted Bai Ning Bing.

"So quick!" Bai Ning Bing’s pupils shrank, she focused herself to deal with the situation.

Demon Judgment Board was covered in a light red halo, granting it even more speed. It did not use killer moves, it only charged wildly with rapid attacks, Bai Ning Bing had to dodge continuously, spending her effort on evasion and having no chance to retaliate.

"What do we do?" Lady White Rabbit asked anxiously.

Fairy Miao Yin had an ashen expression, she replied: "Let’s go! This is their old grudge, let the two of them fight it out."

Lady White Rabbit was dragged by Fairy Miao Yin as they tried to escape the battlefield.

"Where are you going?" Gu Yue Fang Zheng suddenly turned around.

Even though he hated Bai Ning Bing deeply, he did not forget Qin Ding Ling’s instructions. White Rabbit and Miao Yin were crucial clues to find Fang Yuan, how could they be allowed to escape?

Demon Judgment Board let out a wave of powerful blood red light, it radiated in the battlefield, Bai Ning Bing and the rest were enveloped by this blood red light, their expressions changed.

Under this blood red light, they felt the blood in their bodies drawn by a powerful force, it was as if the blood in their bodies was getting sucked into Demon Judgment Board, it was very uncomfortable.

"If we do not resolve this problem, we might get sucked dry of all our blood!" Fairy Miao Yin said solemnly.

Immortal killer move — Bai Xiang!

On the other hand, Bai Ning Bing successfully unleashed her killer move, she turned into a white ice giant.

The blood red light instantly became ineffective on her.

The killer move Bai Xiang was the famous trump card of the Southern Border rank eight Gu Immortal, it allowed the Gu Immortal to temporarily convert their body into another type of lifeform.

This move was incredibly powerful, it created the White Terror that once shook Southern Border, leaving its own mark in history.

Once Bai Ning Bing used it, she changed her circumstances. The ice giant did not have any blood in its body, Demon Judgment Board’s killer move was useless against it.

Fairy Miao Yin’s heart sank, with Bai Ning Bing’s current condition, she could easily escape. But Bai Ning Bing did not do that, she attacked instead with great excitement and enthusiasm!

"This lunatic!" Fairy Miao Yin muttered, experiencing a complicated feeling.

However, when Bai Ning Bing’s killer moves landed on Demon Judgment Board, they was like waves hitting the reef. No matter how Demon Judgment Board was attacked, it did not even move one bit against the currents.

Fairy Miao Yin frowned deeply as she called out: "White Rabbit, use that move!"

Lady White Rabbit nodded solemnly, she quickly used the killer move, protecting herself and Fairy Miao Yin.

Fairy Miao Yin took a risk and accepted her protection, using this chance, she unleashed her killer move, wondrous hand profound sound.

She grew five new arms, causing her to have a total of seven arms.

The seven hands moved by themselves, the smooth long fingers were moving in a dazzling motion.

Ding ding, dang dang...

Cling cling, clang clang...

With the movement of her fingers, sharp sounds could be heard whenever they touched.

The sounds even caused sound waves to start appearing in the surrounding air.

Sound waves moved like a storm, creating a huge commotion as the attacks landed on Demon Judgment Board!

"Fairy Miao Yin, thirty-seventh position on the Demon Judgment Board, she has rank seven cultivation level and the Profound Sound true inheritance. Among which, her wondrous hand profound sound killer move can be raised alongside the core Immortal Gu until it reaches rank eight." Fang Zheng muttered to himself.

On top of his head, countless texts in blood gathered to form a scarlet name list. Be they Fairy Miao Yin, Lady White Rabbit, or Bai Ning Bing, their names were present.

Fairy Miao Yin and Bai Ning Bing worked together, while Gu Yue Fang Zheng still had a calm expression.

After all, he was inside Demon Judgment Board.

The rank eight Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board was extremely powerful.

Normally speaking, rank seven Immortal Gu Houses could resist rank eight, they were the foundation of super forces.

As for top tier rank eight Immortal Gu Houses, they could resist pseudo-Immortal Venerables!

During the fate war, Fang Yuan used Myriad Year Flying Warship and Dragon Palace to fight against Duke Long. In the earlier battle, he used three Immortal Gu Houses against Spectral Soul, they were all rank eight.

Demon Judgment Board was also rank eight, but it was specialized in investigation.

Against rank seven Gu Immortals like Bai Ning Bing, Demon Judgment Board’s battle strength was far superior, it could not be matched.

Waves of blood red light shot out of Demon Judgment Board!

These blood red lights shot down like rain, targeting Bai Ning Bing with an unceasing quantity.

Bai Ning Bing turned into a white ice giant, even though it was large and bulky, the giant’s movement was actually very agile and flexible.

She dodged continuously, none of the blood red lights managed to hit her once.

"But as long as I get hit once, I will suffer heavy injuries!" Bai Ning Bing knew this in her heart, she focused and fought, the dangerous situation was making her more excited and thrilled.

Suddenly, Demon Judgment Board shook lightly, Bai Ning Bing got immobilized.

Bai Ning Bing could not move, she was shot by tens of blood lights.

The white ice giant was punctured in many places, it was reduced to ice shards in a few moments.

Lady White Rabbit screamed while Fairy Miao Yin’s heart sank, the difference in battle strength was too great, they could not claim victory with just an advantage in numbers.

As the ice shards fell to the ground, an intense light burst out.

Within the icy light, the white ice giant reappeared.

Bai Ning Bing recovered fully!

This was the strongest aspect of the killer move Bai Xiang, as long as one shard was left, it could fully recover rapidly.

Fang Zheng was not surprised, he knew a lot of information about Bai Ning Bing. Long ago, the two were already enemies, Bai Ning Bing had fought against them many times, why would Heavenly Court not collect her information?

Furthermore, Demon Judgment Board had investigative abilities, the board list did not only include blood path demonic immortals. It was just that blood relation Immortal Gu made almost all blood path demonic cultivators unable to hide from it.

Bai Ning Bing got up and fought against Fang Zheng again, Miao Yin assisted her, half the blood red light in the battlefield dissipated.

As their blood was no longer affected, Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit flew out with preparation, they were about to escape.

Fang Zheng smiled lightly: "Not so fast!"

The dissipated blood red light turned into a ball that floated above the battlefield. Instantly, the blood suction force that vanished amplified by several times of before.

Bai Ning Bing shouted as she took action suddenly. Her ice path killer move hit the blood ball and caused it to scatter slightly.

"Surrender now!" Fang Zheng’s lips curled up, he activated Demon Judgment Board, the formless pressure caused Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit’s expressions to change.

At the crucial moment, Lady White Rabbit suddenly became ruthless, black shadows surged around her, enveloping her body.

Instantly, Black Tigress appeared on the battlefield!

Her eyes were pure black, her pupils could not be seen, only a dark and cold light was moving around. The area around her eyes was dyed black, her entire disposition changed from pure and innocent to vicious and ruthless.

Black Tigress took action, her dark path killer move landed on the blood ball with greater intensity than Bai Ning Bing’s attack, causing more than half of it to vanish.

Black Tigress and Miao Yin were almost killed by Demon Judgment Board, they managed to narrowly escape.

Fang Zheng was not flustered, he raised his hand, Demon Judgment Board’s aura changed.

With a change of method, he moved fluidly, blood qi surged, countless sand-like specks moved like stars, enveloping the entire battlefield.

"This is the killer move, blood speck star mark!"

"When was it used? I did not sense anything at all."

Even if Qin Ding Ling saw this, she would call out in praise. After Fang Zheng became the Demon Judgment Board Lord, he had improved greatly, he already learned to use the various methods of Demon Judgment Board, he could use the methods while managing to display his own style.

This time, even Bai Xiang was not spared, it got hit.

As the blood sand entered the three immortals’ bodies, red marks started to appear, causing their movements to be restricted, their thoughts became slower, their immortal essence could not be instilled smoothly, they felt like they were trapped in quicksand.

The difference between the two sides was just too big!

Normally speaking, when Gu Immortals fought, if one side wanted to escape, it would be hard to stop them unless a battlefield killer move was successfully used to trap the enemy.

But Demon Judgment Board was a top tier rank eight Immortal Gu House, it was initially created to hunt demonic path Gu Immortals. Thus, other than investigative methods, even though Demon Judgment Board could not create a battlefield, it had ways to stop demonic path Gu Immortals from escaping.

Bai Ning Bing and the rest were about to be captured by Fang Zheng, but the ground suddenly shook as earth qi spewed up from the lower layer, the currents actually managed to pierce through the tough layer of ground.

With a loud sound, the brown earth vein rushed up like a grand river.

"What is this?" Bai Ning Bing and the other two did not know what was happening, they were shocked.

Even though Fang Zheng knew, at this moment, he felt like he was seeing Evil Dragon Di Zang Sheng.

As earth qi surged and flooded this battlefield, the earth path dao marks took over everything here, they corroded the surroundings.

From the surging earth vein, Calamity Luck Altar and Demon Immortal Qi Jue suddenly emerged.

Xi Land was above Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s head, even though this secluded domain of heaven and earth was extremely damaged now, it was still useful. It was used earlier to draw all of the earth qi upwards earlier.

Meanwhile, Calamity Luck Altar was in charge of changing the direction of the earth vein on top of that effect, eventually creating this scene where the earth vein surged upwards!

"Longevity Heaven actually worked together with Demon Immortal Qi Jue?!" Fang Zheng was internally shocked.

Originally, under Qin Ding Ling’s deployment, Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu Houses encircled Calamity Luck Altar and Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

The two sides fought intensely, Heavenly Court was unable to defeat them, while Calamity Luck Altar and Demon Immortal Qi Jue could not escape either.

Bing Sai Chuan thus communicated with Demon Immortal Qi Jue, they knew the situation was not looking good.

The two were genuine experts with lots of experience, they were suspicious about Qin Ding Ling’s attitude and felt deeply worried.

Thus, the two sides cooperated seamlessly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In order to break Heavenly Court’s encirclement, Longevity Heaven and Demon Immortal Qi Jue collaborated, they made use of the earth vein to find a way out of Qin Ding Ling’s arrangement.

After Calamity Luck Altar and Demon Immortal Qi Jue left the earth vein, they quickly split up as they ascended to the upper layers.

Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu Houses also appeared after them.

Qin Ding Ling transmitted her voice to Fang Zheng: "Stop them!"

Even before her order, Fang Zheng was already prepared to do so.

Boom!

Demon Judgment Board shook intensely, a huge blood red beam of light shot towards Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Calamity Luck Altar.

The terrifying power of the attack made Miao Yin and Black Tigress shake internally.

In order to capture the three of them alive, Fang Zheng had been quite restricted, its current attack displayed the true power of Demon Judgment Board!

The intense blood red light assaulted, Calamity Luck Altar and Demon Immortal Qi were obstructed for a moment, they swiftly blocked it, Qin Ding Ling quickly arrived and tangled with them.

"Good job, Fang Zheng! After you’re done with those three immortals, come here and work together to deal with these people." Qin Ding Ling ordered again.

At this moment, Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s battle strength had fallen greatly after the fight against Spectral Soul, but as long as he worked with Calamity Luck Altar, they were evenly matched with Heavenly Court. Where was Qin Ding Ling getting her confidence from?

"Yes." Fang Zheng had a serious expression, the moment he received his orders, Bai Ning Bing attacked abruptly.

In fact, Bai Ning Bing’s ice path killer move had been prepared for some time, but Fang Zheng did not pay any attention to it. He had once controlled Demon Judgment Board to fight against rank eight ice path Gu Immortal Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, he was attacked by the snowman race’s immortal suppression coffin killer move. Fang Zheng still had a deep memory of that battle even now, compared to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, Bai Ning Bing was just rank seven, she was far inferior to him!

However, after Bai Ning Bing activated her killer move, Fang Zheng’s expression changed.

Bai Ning Bing did not attack Demon Judgment Board, instead, she targeted Fairy Miao Yin and Black Tigress!

Gu Yue Fang Zheng could only change his tactic in a fluster, blood red fog enveloped Miao Yin and Black Tigress at the crucial moment, blocking Bai Ning Bing’s attack.

"Bai Ning Bing, are you crazy! You actually attacked us!!" Fairy Miao Yin broke out in cold sweat as she screamed.

"No! This might be the best way." Black Tigress’ expression was shaken but she quickly understood it.

Fairy Miao Yin was dazed, soon, she also got it.

Fairy Zi Wei was once the leader of Heavenly Court, she knew everything about Heavenly Court. She had informed Ying Wu Xie and the rest about the details of the Immortal Gu Houses, Miao Yin, Bai Ning Bing, and White Rabbit were naturally not kept in the dark.

Because earlier, even though Spectral Soul led them, Fairy Zi Wei and the rest did not have an Immortal Gu House, they were weaker compared to Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court.

Thus, Fairy Zi Wei used information to make up for this gap.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng understood Bai Ning Bing and the rest quite well, but similarly, Bai Ning Bing and the rest also had a good understanding of Fang Zheng and Demon Judgment Board.

Especially the Immortal Gu House, its methods were difficult to change after creation, the more exceptional the Immortal Gu House, the more likely this was the case.

Why?

Taking Demon Judgment Board for an example, it was a top tier rank eight Immortal Gu House. Its abilities had reached the limit of a certain aspect, it was extremely hard to modify. Even if there were any good ideas, they might not be experimented on regarding this Immortal Gu House. Demon Judgment Board was extremely complex and was made of countless Gu worms. A single modification would change the entire structure, it would mean a complete makeover, that was as good as creating a new Immortal Gu House from scratch.

Fairy Miao Yin was not stupid, she had just failed to react at the first moment.

Now, she started to understand: "Southern Border’s Tie clan has Demon Suppression Tower, it most excels at imprisonment, but Heavenly Court’s Demon Judgment Board does not use such methods. Heavenly Court must have ordered Fang Zheng to capture us all alive. Thus, when fighting, Fang Zheng is very restricted, only against Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Calamity Luck Altar earlier, he used his full strength!"

As for why he wanted to capture them, the answer was obvious — to find Fang Yuan!

Fairy Zi Wei had constructed the wisdom path formation in front of all these Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, finally managing to deduce Fang Yuan’s location. Why would Qin Ding Ling not know about their value?

Using this as the starting point, Fairy Miao Yin soon guessed: "It seems that Fang Yuan escaped successfully, Heavenly Court wants to capture us and use us to find Fang Yuan in the future. Even though they lack a wisdom path great expert now, Central Continent’s ten great sects did not suffer losses, they have many wisdom path candidates. Furthermore, Fairy Zi Wei’s true inheritance has already been contributed to Heavenly Court, the wisdom path formation is likely part of the inheritance."

Thinking of this, Fairy Miao Yin thought of Bai Ning Bing and gritted her teeth: "Bai Ning Bing, you lunatic!"

But at the next moment, Fairy Miao Yin stared with her eyes wide open.

Bai Ning Bing’s insanity was beyond what she had expected, she actually dispelled the killer move Bai Xiang, she returned to a body of flesh and blood!

"Come, Fang Zheng, attack me!" Bai Ning Bing shouted as she moved like a white light, circling around Demon Judgment Board as she shot out countless icicles.

The icicles landed on Demon Judgment Board but could not penetrate it, only leaving behind some icy marks.

"Hahaha!" Black Tigress laughed loudly, she did the same thing as Bai Ning Bing, dispelling her defense and joining the battle.

"She went insane too!" Miao Yin sighed.

Black Tigress was ruthless and vicious, her nature was the opposite of White Rabbit. When she resolved herself, she even disregarded her own life.

The three immortals attacked Demon Judgment Board, especially Bai Ning Bing and Black Tigress who gave up on defense, they invested all of their energy into attacking, Fang Zheng was actually feeling quite troubled.

He wanted to capture these three female immortals alive, he did not want to kill them. Qin Ding Ling had already informed him, it would be best to get more clues to deduce Fang Yuan’s location. If one of them was killed, it could lead to a failure in the deduction next time. Fang Zheng knew the heavy responsibility on him.

But the Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board’s weakest aspect was the lack of methods to capture others. When Demon Judgment Board was created, which person in Heavenly Court would consider this aspect?

Demon Judgment Board, naturally by looking at its name, it meant killing demonic path Gu cultivators. What was the point of capturing them?

In this aspect,, Qin Ding Ling seemed to have made a mistake in asking Demon Judgment Board to capture them, but she had no other choices at the moment.

Among Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu Houses, Demon Judgment Board had the strongest investigative ability. Even though Fang Zheng’s cultivation level was low, Demon Judgment Board had an abundance of rank eight immortal essence and the wills of the past Demon Judgment Board Lords, it could display its full battle strength!

However, all Immortal Gu Houses had a fatal weakness, they were not flexible enough in terms of methods.

Demon Judgment Board was no exception, it was a final product that could not be altered. After it was created, its methods had always been the same until now, there had been no changes.

Fang Zheng fell into an awkward spot.

Using Demon Judgment Board, he had the upper hand, Bai Ning Bing and the rest were not his match. But just Demon Judgment Board alone could not capture them alive.

In terms of flexibility of methods, Gu Immortals far surpassed Immortal Gu Houses.

In the past, when facing this situation, the Demon Judgment Board Lords would take action personally. But Fang Zheng only had rank seven cultivation level, if he left Demon Judgment Board, Bai Ning Bing and the rest would be able to turn this around.

Right now, if Fang Zheng had a rank eight Gu Immortal helping him, it would be sufficient.

But why would he be given an assistant?

In the eyes of Qin Ding Ling and the rest, wasn’t Demon Judgment Board enough? He still needed more help?

Heavenly Court’s manpower was extremely lacking now, they could not deal with the situation easily.

"No, Lady Qin Ding Ling’s arrangement was logical, but I actually encountered two lunatics! It made the logical deployment completely illogical." Fang Zheng thought.

Who would be so crazy as to give up on defense against a strong enemy and only choose to attack?

Wasn’t that courting death?

But Bai Ning Bing and Black Tigress did that.

And amazingly, the results were quite favorable for them.

During the intense battle, Bai Ning Bing laughed loudly: "Gu Yue Fang Zheng, don’t you want revenge? Kill me, don’t you want to kill me? Come take action!"

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was silent.

Bai Ning Bing continued to provoke him: "This is why you are just a dog that Heavenly Court adopted. Your enemy is right in front of you but you do not even have the courage to try killing me. You are far inferior to your brother Fang Yuan!"

Hearing her provocative speech, not just Fairy Miao Yin, even Black Tigress was stunned.

She thought: "Hmph, I thought I was crazy enough to give up my defense. But looking at Bai Ning Bing, I pale in comparison."

Fairy Miao Yin and Black Tigress were very worried while Gu Yue Fang Zheng fell into silence.

Hearing Gu Yue Fang Yuan’s name again, he could not help but raise his head, looking at the blood text above his head.

The blood text formed into a giant name list, the rankings and names on it changed constantly.

Not long ago, Spectral Soul, who stood at the top of the list, vanished, replacing him was the person at the second position —

Gu Yue Fang Yuan!

Defeated Heavenly Court, destroyed Fate, killed Spectral Soul!

The number one demon of the five regions and two heavens!!

Fang Zheng smiled bitterly.

Regardless of time and place, even though he was the great Demon Judgment Board Lord, Fang Yuan’s name was still hanging above his head, Fang Yuan was still casting a shadow down on his life.

"Killing everyone on the Demon Judgment Board list is the grand ambition of the past generations of owners. But I know that I am not Fang Yuan’s match. For all my life, I could only look at his shadow and hear about his legends. But..."

"Bai Ning Bing!"

"You are merely ranked twenty-seventh on this list."

"Do you really think I won’t dare to kill you?"

"Where does your confidence come from?!"

Fang Zheng shouted loudly as Demon Judgment Board charged ahead as he spoke, in a breath of time, he arrived in front of Bai Ning Bing.

Intense winds blew towards her.

Bai Ning Bing had no time to dodge, at the next moment, Demon Judgment Board would crush her entire body to a pulp, she would die undoubtedly!

"No!" Fairy Miao Yin shouted in her head as her seven hands moved, shooting out profound sounds.

The profound sounds were multi-layered and attacked rapidly but they could not stop Demon Judgment Board.

Black Tigress spat out a mouthful of blood, she activated a method to block it but Demon Judgment Board still rampaged unhindered.

The two immortals could only watch in despair as Demon Judgment Board crashed into Bai Ning Bing and pressed down on her harshly!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Earth Abyss battlefield.

Boom!

Hit by Heavenly Court’s attack, Calamity Luck Altar shook intensely, Bing Sai Chuan had a cold expression inside it.

Legendary immemorial beast Mao Li Qiu exploded and shouted: "Let this Grandpa Mao go out and kill them all!"

Five Elements Grandmaster shouted: "Grandpa Mao, this place has a huge hole, we need to repair it together."

Mao Li Qiu snorted as it helped to repair Calamity Luck Altar, it mumbled: "Taking hits like this feels really terrible! Bing Sai Chuan, Calamity Luck Altar was given to you to control, don’t ruin master’s reputation and prestige."

Bing Sai Chuan frowned as he answered: "Mao Li Qiu, take a look outside, there is someone who is even worse than us."

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was the one that Bing Sai Chuan referred to.

He was indeed in a sorry state, Spectral Soul’s self-detonation caused his Xi Land to suffer huge damage, but it was his greatest reliance since reviving. Even though he had many exceptional true inheritances, he did not have time to modify killer moves. Thus, his qi path methods were all old fashioned, only killer moves that used Xi Land as the core were strong enough to be used in the battlefield.

But now, Xi Land was heavily damaged, Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s battle strength fell sharply.

"This cannot go on, Heavenly Court likely has strong reinforcements! Longevity Heaven, we need to work together again." Demon Immortal Qi Jue transmitted with great difficulty.

"Right now, Heavenly Court is at its weakest throughout history, why would they have reinforcements?" Mao Li Qiu mumbled.

"Don’t be careless, nobody can truly assess Heavenly Court’s foundation." After replying to Mao Li Qiu, Bing Sai Chuan agreed to Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s request for cooperation.

He had also sensed something amiss.

Thus, Calamity Luck Altar first exploded with a strong attack and shielded Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Next, Demon Immortal Qi Jue gritted his teeth and summoned Xi Land, drawing upon the endless earth qi.

Calamity Luck Altar took over again, pulling upon the gradually declining earth vein.

"Hmph, trying the same trick again, you all are simply looking down on me!" Qin Ding Ling suddenly left the Immortal Gu House, she came to the outside world and used a luck path killer move.

The killer move’s golden light shined everywhere, Bing Sai Chuan’s expression changed, he quickly withdrew his hand like it was bitten by a snake.

"So close! This killer move vaguely counters Calamity Luck Altar. If I was slow, Calamity Luck Altar would have to resist the pressure of the earth vein, it would be suppressed and unable to escape, becoming an easy target." Bing Sai Chuan sighed to himself, Qin Ding Ling’s method was out of his expectations.

Without Calamity Luck Altar’s guidance, the newly rising earth vein started to fall again.

But Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s and Calamity Luck Altar’s efforts were not in vain, giant pillars of earth vein tributaries spewed out randomly in all directions, towards the sky and ground.

An earth vein tributary that was like a yellow-brown river flowed across the battlefield of Demon Judgment Board and Bai Ning Bing’s group.

The three immortals were sustaining the battle with difficulty, resisting Demon Judgment Board.

Bai Ning Bing was still alive.

Even though she was crushed by Demon Judgment Board earlier, at the crucial moment, she used Bai Xiang once again.

Demon Judgment Board dodged, unwilling to fall into the earth vein tributary.

"Even heaven is helping me!" Seeing this scene, Bai Ning Bing’s eyes shined with bright light, she felt surprised and joyful.

Her body suddenly expanded from fifteen feet to over twenty feet instantly.

"The time to escape is now!" Bai Ning Bing stretched out her hands to Miao Yin and Black Tigress.

The two hesitated for a moment before allowing Bai Ning Bing to grab onto their hands.

Bai Ning Bing did not hesitate, she jumped into the earth vein tributary immediately!

"Don’t think of leaving!" Fang Zheng gritted his teeth as he drove Demon Judgment Board into the tributary as well.

The earth vein was extremely large, even the tributary was huge, after Demon Judgment Board entered it, it was like a small fish had entered the river.

"No, we can’t escape. Demon Judgment Board is a rank eight Immortal Gu House!" Fairy Miao Yin’s expression was pale.

After a short while, Bai Ning Bing was already unable to hold on.

A vast amount of earth path dao marks corroded her body, Bai Xiang was on the verge of collapsing, even though Miao Yin and Black Tigress were doing their best in terms of defense.

Bai Ning Bing smiled coldly, she was not flustered: "Of course we cannot match Demon Judgment Board, but now, it will depend on how resolute Gu Yue Fang Zheng is. Hehe."

At the moment of life and death, Bai Ning Bing actually laughed.

She turned around and dispelled Bai Xiang, exposing her true body.

Fairy Miao Yin and Black Tigress had already resolved themselves, they charged towards Demon Judgment Board alongside Bai Ning Bing.

"You people?!" Gu Yue Fang Zheng was shocked to see that Bai Ning Bing and the rest dispelled their defenses, he had to use a rainbow of blood red light to envelop the three immortals.

After receiving Demon Judgment Board’s help, the three immortals were saved from the outcome of getting crushed by the earth vein.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng felt a huge rock weighing on him internally!

What was this?

He actually became the one who helped Bai Ning Bing and the rest!

But Gu Yue Fang Zheng had to do this, he had to complete the mission given by Qin Ding Ling and capture them alive.

"Gu Yue Fang Zheng, do you have any method to capture us? If Demon Judgment Board had it, you would have used it already. In this situation, you will need to leave the Immortal Gu House and use your own methods! Come, let us take a chance." Bai Ning Bing could not speak, she could only think internally.

If they lost, they would be captured and left helpless. Once their value was extracted, they would be killed, becoming the sacrifices to raise Heavenly

Court’s reputation.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng stared with wide eyes, gritting his teeth tightly.

Bai Ning Bing had won this bet!

Fang Zheng did not have any special method to capture them.

Unless he took a chance and brought all three immortals into the Immortal Gu House.

But if Fang Zheng did that, he would be too stupid! Because that was simply letting the enemies into his territory. Just Fang Zheng alone could not deal with the three immortals.

"You are very crafty, but so what?" Fang Zheng said through the gaps between his teeth: "If I capture you, you will still live for some time. But now, you will die. Congratulations, your efforts in battle have reaped you such great rewards."

Fang Zheng spoke sarcastically before abandoning Bai Ning Bing and the rest, leaving the earth vein using Demon Judgment Board.

The strong Demon Judgment Board could not stay in the earth vein for long. Just this short period destroyed most of Demon Judgment Board’s mortal Gu.

Without Demon Judgment Board’s protection, Bai Ning Bing felt an immense pressure, their lives were at stake, they struggled at death’s door.

"Maybe Fang Zheng was right after all." Fairy Miao Yin smiled bitterly.

Bai Ning Bing snorted.

"What’s that?" Black Tigress suddenly shouted.

The three immortals were like tiny bugs flowing along the earth vein tributary. From the boundless brown color surrounding them, a dark hole suddenly appeared.

"Go!" The three immortals had no choice, at the crucial final moment, they went into the dark hole precariously.

At almost the same time.

In a dense and lush forest on the surface, Fairy Zi Wei, Ying Wu Xie, and Old Man Zheng Yuan were traveling.

"This distance is not safe enough, we will continue moving." Fairy Zi Wei saw that Ying Wu Xie was moving slowly, she quickly reminded.

Ying Wu Xie gritted his teeth but his expression was dazed, he said dejectedly: "My main body has died, what do we..."

Fairy Zi Wei looked at Ying Wu Xie solemnly: "Even if the main body is dead, we still have you. Ying Wu Xie, you are his split soul, from today onwards, you are our master!"

"But..." Ying Wu Xie was not feeling happy at all, he was in low spirits: "Even my main body died in battle, this entire world is no longer in Spectral Soul’s era."

Fairy Zi Wei frowned slightly, she was about to console him when Old Man Zheng Yuan suddenly spoke: "Something is up, don’t move, let me deal with it!"

At the next moment, he activated his killer move, his body shot out white light that enveloped the three immortals.

After a few breaths of time, heaven and earth shook, birds flew out of the forest, a loud collision could be heard from afar, resounding throughout the place.

The three immortals raised their heads, they saw that the sky was dyed green, a grand and majestic Immortal Gu House descended from the sky, it shrouded even the sun itself, moving rapidly even though it seemed slow.

This Immortal Gu House was so big, it was definitely the number one in the world in terms of size. Its rank eight aura was vast as the sea, intimidating all living beings. Within the Immortal Gu House, clamor could be heard, it was filled with human vitality, seemingly comprising all kinds of people.

"This is... Divine Emperor City?!" Ying Wu Xie was shocked.

"Divine Emperor City was created by combining Divine Bean Palace and Emperor City. Isn’t it stationary at the largest gathering point of Central Continent’s human vein? It could actually move?" Old Man Zheng Yuan was shocked as well.

Fairy Zi Wei pondered: "This Immortal Gu House was made by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, there must be a reason for its movement. Strange, why didn’t Qin Ding Ling relocate this house into Heavenly Court during the battle earlier?"

"So that’s it." Old Man Zheng Yuan used his human path methods to investigate, he found something.

"Too strong, this Immortal Gu House is too strong!" Old Man Zheng Yuan’s body shook, he was greatly shocked by his discovery.

"This Immortal Gu House contains countless people, it is filled with the profundity of human path. It can actually relocate the human vein gathering point with ease! Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s method is too amazing, his goals were too farsighted, he only exposed it now. Divine Emperor City gathers the strength of all the people inside, be they Gu Immortal, Gu Master, or mortal, they are gathered together and used in unison. Currently, this is likely the number one Immortal Gu House in the world!" Old Man Zheng Yuan praised, he sighed deeply.

"So that’s it, it was a pity that Genesis Lotus miscalculated, this Divine Emperor City did not make it to the fate war in time." Ying Wu Xie said.

Fairy Zi Wei shook her head lightly: "How can a venerable fail his scheme so easily? There are extremely deep secrets behind all these, don’t come up with a conclusion so casually."

The three immortals stopped in their tracks and hid in the forest, concealing their auras, as Divine Emperor City went past them and entered Earth Abyss, they finally let out sighs of relief.

"Let’s go." Fairy Zi Wei was ready to move.

But Old Man Zheng Yuan stopped on the spot, smiling bitterly: "I cannot follow after the two of you anymore."

Ying Wu Xie was surprised: "Why?"

Old Man Zheng Yuan sighed: "That Divine Emperor City has already become the gathering point of human path in the world, since I cultivate human path, I am restricted by it. Earlier, it probably sensed me but because there was something more important, it chose to ignore me. To play safe, I should part with master and Zi Wei."

Ying Wu Xie’s expression was grim, they suffered a setback again. Before this battle, Shadow Sect was full of people and prospered for some time. Now, only him and Fairy Zi Wei were left.

It was truly pitiful!

"Maybe trying to kill Fang Yuan was a terrible mistake!" Ying Wu Xie gritted his teeth, he felt extremely bitter internally.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Divine Emperor City was filled with noise and commotion.

The hundreds of thousands of people living in the city were looking towards the sky.

Profound green light had covered the sky of Divine Emperor City. Not only this, the city gates were also closed and guarded heavily.

"What in the world is going on?"

"You don’t know? There were notices posted at the city gates, announcing the city will be closed for a period of time. During this time period, there will be abnormal phenomena and there is no need to panic."

"I also heard of this notice, but I did not expect such a huge and grand phenomenon."

The city residents discussed with relative calmness, no large scale chaos emerged.

Northern city area.

"Where did that fellow Hong Yi go?" Cao Yu sighed as he walked out of a dark alley.

Accompanying him was Xie Lan.

The two were Universal Life Academy’s disciples, who were ordered to search for Hong Yi after he disappeared.

Regretfully, they had been at Divine Emperor City for two to three months now and had yet to make any progress.

Xie Lan frowned: "We have almost finished combing through Divine Emperor City by now and have contacted a dozen or so information path Gu Masters, but have not gotten any news regarding Hong Yi. This is probably the worst case scenario."

Cao Yu’s eyes opened wide: "Are you saying Hong Yi entered a painting world? How can that be?"

Xie Lan looked around in a hurry and lowered his voice: "Keep your voice down, such secret news have been circulating in the city recently. Painting worlds were arranged by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, they can take in the city residents and return them safely after a period of time. Especially these days, how many Gu Masters have come to Divine Emperor City because they heard this rumor and wanted to find an immortal opportunity?"

Cao Yu was at a loss: "If Hong Yi really is inside a painting world, how are we going to find him?"

Xie Lan was silent for a while before saying with a sigh: "If that is the case, then we can only wait."

Eastern city area.

"Master, please take care." A female Gu Master sent her master off.

Most of the surrounding pedestrians were staring at the phenomenon in the sky, only a few were astonished at this sight.

The female Gu Master was a renowned refinement path master who was ranked among the top hundred in the Refinement Path Convention, and she was actually being so courteous to an unknown Gu Master.

This unknown Gu Master was wearing a long robe and a straw hat which hid his appearance under the shadows.

The unknown Gu Master moved cautiously and maintained his silence as he disappeared into the corner of the street.

"What exactly is going on? Such a phenomenon is definitely a Gu Immortal’s doing." The unknown Gu Master moved along the empty alley and raised his head slightly to glance at the strange scene in the sky.

"Sigh, I did not expect to encounter such trouble in this trip to exchange Gu materials in the city. I just hope my identity won’t be exposed."

"Just in case, I will choose a remote tavern to stay in until the city gates open again."

The unknown Gu Master was worried.

This person was Ben Duo Yi, who was taught the nature Gu refinement technique by Gu Immortal Yu Mu Chun.

He cultivated day and night, making huge progress. However, the cost of cultivating refinement path was high, and with no one else to depend upon, he had to frequently sell the refined Gu to purchase cultivation resources.

He was a hairy man and was hiding his appearance by using Gu worms. He had to move with caution in this gathering area of humans.

All kinds of people lived in Divine Emperor City, there were even rank six Gu Immortals.

But no one could imagine that under the cover of the profound green light, Divine Emperor City had not only left its original spot, it even flew towards Ancient Soul Sect and entered Earth Abyss to fight Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Calamity Luck Altar!

Immortal killer move — Great Qi Cloud Explosion.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s killer move struck Divine Emperor City but it only raised slight ripples on the surface of the profound green light.

"This is probably the number one Immortal Gu House in the present age!" Even a person like Demon Immortal Qi Jue felt demoralized.

His current strength was simply unable to shake Divine Emperor City.

"So Qin Ding Ling’s trump card was this Divine Emperor City!" Inside Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan looked extremely serious.

Calamity Luck Altar was left behind by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, while Divine Emperor City was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable. In this confrontation between the two, Divine Emperor City firmly won against Calamity Luck Altar and by a huge margin!

Calamity Luck Altar was not huge, and when compared to Divine Emperor City now, it looked even smaller.

The number one large size Immortal Gu House in history, Divine Emperor City, was like a colossal jade cloud that seemed to cover heaven and earth as it obstructed Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Calamity Luck Altar’s escape route.

And in the rear, Qin Ding Ling led the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals. Among the several Immortal Gu Houses, Demon Judgment Board was at the front, taking the position of the vanguard.

As the intense battle started, Divine Emperor City suddenly let out loud human voices, following which, the profound green light bubbled and formed a huge whirlpool.

The whirlpool blew out spiraling green wind that covered Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s expression changed greatly, he could only take out the damaged Xi Land. But Xi Land was also unable to block this move, and at the next moment, Demon Immortal Qi Jue was absorbed into Divine Emperor City!

"Divine Emperor City suppressed Demon Immortal Qi Jue!" Inside Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan and the rest were horrified.

Even if Demon Immortal Qi Jue only had the damaged Xi Land, he had pseudo venerable battle strength. They did not expect there to be no disturbance in Divine Emperor City after he was absorbed.

Divine Emperor City’s might shook the minds of Longevity Heaven’s immortals.

It was no wonder Qin Ding Ling confronted them resolutely and had such a huge ambition as well!

"This is an emergency!" Bing Sai Chuan exclaimed in fright and activated the strongest method of Calamity Luck Altar without hesitating any more.

Golden lights shot out from Calamity Luck Altar and covered the surroundings.

The lights formed a broken path. The path extended far away, passing through the surface layer without damaging a single rock.

"Longevity Heaven, where are you trying to go!" Qin Ding Ling was aware that it was the crucial moment, she resolutely attacked and disturbed Calamity Luck Altar.

She cultivated luck path and opposed Giant Sun Immortal Venerable her whole life, and being an immortal concubine of Giant Sun before, she had a deep understanding regarding Calamity Luck Altar.

Calamity Luck Altar’s method was disturbed by Qin Ding Ling; the golden path started shaking immediately, unable to maintain stability.

At this moment, the profound green light around Divine Emperor City formed another whirlpool.

"Are we also going to be captured by Heavenly Court?" Hei Lou Lan’s heart sank as she sensed the worsening situation.

At this crucial moment, Five Elements Grandmaster hesitated for a bit before coming forward: "Let me hold them back, you should all leave!"

"No, little fellow, you cultivate formation path which will be very useful in the future. I, Grandpa Mao, am most suitable for this." Mao Li Qiu pushed Five Elements Grandmaster aside.

"Grandpa Mao..." Five Elements Grandmaster was stunned. Mao Li Qiu’s status in Longevity Heaven was much higher than his. He had thought that sacrificing himself was the most sensible arrangement in this situation, but did not expect Mao Li Qiu to stop him.

Under this situation, Heavenly Court would never go easy on them.

Mao Li Qiu would probably lose its life if it went!

Bing Sai Chuan took a deep look at Mao Li Qiu, Mao Li Qiu, however, said casually: "Bing Sai Chuan, I will leave Longevity Heaven to you. Don’t bring shame to Grandpa Mao, you must escape. Don’t disappoint master, otherwise I will haunt you even if I turned into a ghost."

Bing Sai Chuan gritted his teeth: "Hmph, so much nonsense. Even if you die, make sure you die in the most brilliant way."

He had fought alongside Mao Li Qiu many times before and had deep friendship although they were quite rude towards each other. It was the way of these Northern Plainsmen, they only knew to express themselves with rough language.

Mao Li Qiu laughed heartily: "Then you can rest assured, I am most proficient in this!"

Bing Sai Chuan quickly opened the Immortal Gu House and closed it immediately. In that single moment, Mao Li Qiu had charged out.

"Come fight me, little ones of Heavenly Court!" Mao Li Qiu charged forward bravely.

In an instant, Demon Judgment Board was sent flying by Mao Li Qiu.

Mao Li Qiu fought madly and was soon soaked in blood with many bone fractures.

Its laughter however became more resonant and its aura kept on rising.

Divine Emperor City activated the spiraling green wind towards Calamity Luck Altar again.

Mao Li Qiu clicked its tongue as it flew forward and blocked the spiraling green wind with its body. At the next moment, like Demon Immortal Qi Jue, it was locked onto by the green wind and absorbed into the profound green light.

Using this crucial time, Calamity Luck Altar turned into a lump of light that escaped through the golden path.

Divine Bean Palace, painting world.

Boom!

Boom!!

Within short intervals of time, two enormous explosions reverberated throughout the whole painting world.

"What’s going on?" Fairy Bi Xia and the rest were shocked and bewildered. They were cultivating with all their efforts inside the painting world and were completely unaware of what was going on outside Divine Emperor City.

"Something big has happened, Fang Di Chang." Shen Shang went up to Fang Di Chang with an excited expression.

Fang Di Chang was curled up in the corner of the alley, he was dirty and messy and his clothes were ragged. There was a bamboo cane beside him and a broken bowl in front of him.

He raised his head to look at Shen Shang and begged: "Lord, please give me something to eat, I have not eaten for three days and three nights now."

While secretly, he transmitted his voice: "Brother Shen, what happened?"

Shen Shang transmitted his reply: "I am not sure about the exact details. But two large paintings have been added at the edges of the painting world. Qi currents are gathered in one painting with wind howling all the time. The other painting is mysterious with beastly roars resounding again and again."

Fang Di Chang’s eyes shined with bright light, he felt deep interest.

He was schemed against by Genesis Lotus’s will, and his will had to escape secretly. With Shen Shang’s help, the situation was showing improvement.

Fang Di Chang did not know what happened outside the painting world. But this situation had appeared for the first time in the painting world. Maybe they could probe the deeper secrets of the painting world through this?

Some days later.

At some part of Southern Border.

The fog in the valley dissipated and two people walked out.

One had a handsome face with dragon horns on his head and imposing dragon pupils, he was rank eight enslavement path Gu Immortal Wu Shuai. The other was wearing white clothes, had black hair, deep pupils and fair skin, he was Gu Yue Fang Yuan.

"Over three thousand heaven path dao marks have been refined, what should we do next?" Wu Shuai asked, "Should we go meet up with Lu Wei Yin first?"

Fang Yuan, however, was staring at his palm with a complex expression, there was slight loss, some curiously, and some excitement on his face.

His lips curled up into a captivating smile as he gave an irrelevant answer: "These three thousand heaven path dao marks are really amazing!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Divine Emperor City, painting world.

Three yellow leopards charged out of the dense shrubs that resembled a huge forest.

There were two female leopards and one male, they were growling at Ye Fan, while showing their sharp fangs that still had some bloody flesh hanging from them.

Ye Fan was surrounded, his heart shook slightly: "The concealment ability of these three leopards is so strong, I only sensed them when they moved. As for their battle strength, I will know after fighting them."

Thinking of this, Ye Fan immediately threw out several Gu worms.

Boom boom boom.

White smoke burst and spread, three valiant warriors appeared around Ye Fan.

Human path Gu worm — vagrant warrior Gu.

"Go." With Ye Fan’s command, the three vagrant warriors immediately split up to deal with one leopard each.

Humans and beasts fought, after ten or so rounds, two of the vagrant warriors won while one lost.

Ye Fan slightly nodded his head as he appraised inwardly: "Vagrant warrior Gu is rank three and is specialized in fighting enemies on the move. These three leopards are also very nimble and have around rank three battle strength."

Ever since the Refinement Path Convention, Ye Fan had been cultivating inside the painting world. He not only had rank five hero Gu and rank three vagrant warrior Gu, he also had corresponding killer moves as well as relevant cultivation methods, so his progress was great.

Even so, he was frowning slightly at this moment.

"I have just entered the outside periphery of this growling beast painting world and there are already rank three strength enemies, it seems the level of this painting is rather high."

"I wonder what progress Hong Yi is making over there? It is time, I should return and join with him."

Ye Fan only came to probe some information. He was in charge of the growling beast painting world while Hong Yi went to inspect the qi howling painting world.

Ye Fan turned around and met Hong Yi along the way.

The two were like heroes who admired each other and had already become sworn brothers. While cultivating in the painting world, the two relied on each other as well as competed, the feeling of brotherhood deepened even more.

After learning of the situation on the other’s side, the two brothers walked while pondering over it.

"There is more to this than meets the eye."

"Why would two paintings appear all of a sudden? Could it be, the painting world can continue to grow?"

"Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s methods are indeed unfathomable!"

"We cannot completely explore these two new worlds with just us two. The best thing is to borrow the strength of the residents of the painting world."

"Yes, that makes sense."

Soldiers guarded the city gates, people continued to move out of the city while a small portion entered from outside the city.

The two newly added paintings brought a huge impact to the painting world. The painting world had limited space, while these two new paintings had vast space which attracted attention from everyone in the city, thus giving rise to a large wave of crazed exploration.

Ye Fan and Hong Yi blended into the crowd and returned inconspicuously to the city. But the two were unaware that the moment they appeared in the city gate, they were noticed by some people.

Shen Shang was sitting on the second floor of a teahouse near the city gate and was watching Ye Fan and Hong Yi, while talking with Fang Di Chang through voice transmission.

"Look at these two, they have made a lot of progress again! Their bodies are emitting dense human qi, extraordinary, they will definitely have outstanding achievements in the future. Brother Fang Di Chang, if you return to your main body one day, you can inquire about these two. You might be able to make great use of them."

Fang Di Chang was sitting near the entrance of the street in a beggar’s appearance. He replied secretly: "There is not much gap between immortal and mortal in the painting world. They have cultivated for so many days in here and are like fish in water, their strength can be said to be at the top level in here. Their exploration this time was quite short, if I had to deduce their journey, they probably only explored the periphery of the two paintings. From this, it can be deduced that these two painting worlds are very large, even Ye Fan and Hong Yi don’t want to enter the inner parts rashly."

Shen Shang chuckled: "As expected of Brother Fang, the former wisdom immortal of Fang clan, you are able to see the overall situation from just a few clues. Ye Fan and Hong Yi want to borrow external force, we might as well save our energy for now. Look, the ten children of human path are here."

In fact, even without Shen Shang’s reminder, there was already commotion at the other side of the street.

With Xiao Qi Xing at the front, Fairy Bi Xia, Sun Yuan Hua, Sun Yao, Ying Sheng Ji, Chen Da Jiang, and the rest appeared together, immediately causing a disturbance.

The passersby glanced at them and praised these ten people.

Fang Di Chang’s gaze concentrated slightly, Xiao Qi Xing’s group was the one that Shen Shang called the ’ten children of human path’. Shen Shang had already explained this, saying these ten had abundant human qi. Although it was inferior to Hong Yi and Ye Fan, it far exceeded ordinary people and they would have their own unique splendor in the future.

This was only natural.

These ten were selected from Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, they were Gu Immortal seeds Heavenly Court was cultivating. They were the ones who were specially supported to develop human path Gu Immortals.

Even a pig which obtained the full support of Heavenly Court and Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects would have great accomplishments in the future.

The ten children of human path showed their brilliance during the expedition against Fang Di Chang, their talents were showcased even more over this period of time and their progress was astonishing. They had become famous people in the painting world and were recognized by the city’s higher-ups, almost all the important tasks were entrusted to them.

The painting world was currently in an uproar with the addition of the two large paintings. The ten children of human path received the command to become the main force in exploring them.

"Besides the main culprit, Genesis Lotus’s will, these ten were the ones who forced me to escape with my will, my soul being destroyed. Don’t let me get any opportunity, otherwise I won’t mind cutting down your numbers." Fang Di Chang snorted coldly.

Although only a will remained of him, his strength had recovered by a lot.

This was all thanks to the mysterious and mystical human path!

When Fang Di Chang was cultivating silently, he gained a much deeper understanding of human path. The most striking characteristic of human path was having a Gu worm transform into a human.

For example, Hong Yi’s scholar Gu could transform into a scholar. Ye Fan’s hero Gu could transform into a hero.

After transforming into humans, these scholar and hero Gu worms would have a common man’s wisdom. Their disposition, thoughts, and way of doing things would become different depending on their types as well.

The most important thing was, when these Gu worms transformed into humans, they could use other Gu worms! Moreover their proficiency in using them originated from the Gu cultivator.

This was a terrifying thing.

Transforming the Gu worm into a human and giving them a group of Gu worms could instantly produce a Gu cultivator. Mortal level Gu worms that transformed into humans and could use other Gu worms were essentially regarded as Gu Masters. Immortal Gu transformed into humans were considered Gu Immortals!

Fang Di Chang could not help but think of his main body’s sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

Sovereign immortal fetus Gu’s effect and abilities were naturally not on the same level as these human path Gu worms, but they had a lot of similarities.

People crowded around the ten children of human path and moved out of the city gate.

This was the largest exploration scale.

After quietly looking at this scene, Fang Di Chang returned to the deserted alley and silently waved his hand: "Men."

Immediately, several beggars hurried towards him from their respective corners and greeted him with incomparable respect: "Sect leader, what instructions do you have for us?"

"Send some brothers to follow the crowd. They only have to probe for information." Fang Di Chang instructed.

Although the current him was formed from a beggar Gu, he was already a rank five five bags beggar[1].

This was not all, he borrowed Shen Shang’s help to purchase large amounts of beggar Gu, and used a sect token Gu to form a killer move, establishing this Beggar Sect.

At present, most of the beggars in the whole city were already under his command!

...

Immortal killer move — Myriad Thought Sword Waterfall!

Rumble!

With a loud sound, a grand waterfall appeared. The silver waterfall was majestic and vast, it fell from the sky onto a hill.

Each drop of water in this waterfall was a thought, it had the appearance of a sword.

Within a few breaths of time, the hill was flattened.

Fang Yuan stopped the killer move. The hill was completely gone and a shallow pool appeared in its place. The gurgling water was made of flowing sword thoughts.

"Indeed, the killer move’s power has been increased by several times and it activates even more smoothly!" Fang Yuan meticulously observed the effects of the heaven path dao marks.

After resolving the myriad tribulation, Fang Yuan was not in a hurry to meet Lu Wei Yin and instead searched for a place to rest and reorganize.

The reason he used myriad thought sword waterfall was because this was not an ordinary killer move.

Most killer moves were based on a single path and Gu worms of other paths could only be supplementary even if they were mixed in. For example, rule path’s five restriction profound light qi and time path’s time cutting edge.

And there were some exceptional killer moves. They were compound killer moves which used two or more paths primarily. For instance, this myriad thought sword waterfall which was formed from the combination of wisdom path and sword path.

Fang Yuan had a lot of such killer moves; myriad dragon, yama, great thief ghost hand, myriad ghost sword dragon, jade flow pearl, and so on. To go into details, myriad dragon was a compound killer move formed from enslavement path and transformation path, great thief ghost hand was formed from soul path and theft path, jade flow pearl was formed from refinement path and space path. Myriad ghost sword dragon was even more complex, it was formed from the merging of ancient sword dragon transformation, myriad self, yama child, emperor yama, and familiar face. Every usage of myriad ghost sword dragon expended four thousand soul path dao marks from Fang Yuan’s body.

These compound killer moves were much more powerful than single path based killer moves. Enemies had to consider two or more paths to think of a countermeasure, so they were much more difficult to resist as well.

These compound killer moves were normally used by Gu Immortals who cultivated multiple paths. For instance, Qin Bai Sheng cultivated soul path and metal path, he had a killer move called burning soul supreme gold which was a compound killer move formed from soul path and metal path. Every Gu Immortal who cultivated two paths had such killer moves; Heavenly Court’s Thunder Ghost True Monarch had them because she cultivated lightning path and soul path, Duke Long naturally had them as well.

Because of conflicting dao marks, Gu Immortals who successfully cultivated multiple paths were very rare, so compound killer moves were also very rare in Gu Immortal world.

Fang Yuan was able to cultivate many paths because of the sovereign immortal body, so he accumulated many compound killer moves.

But even so, these compound killer moves could hardly be used at the top level.

This was because although Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body did not have conflicting dao marks, the compound killer moves themselves would have a large internal friction because of their own conflicting dao marks, resulting in wastage of power.

"But heaven path dao marks have greatly improved this situation." Fang Yuan was able to sense this acutely and even verified his guess.

Right now, when he used compound killer moves like myriad thought sword waterfall, because of the reduced internal friction, the power had increased by several times!

"According to my deduction, if I use myriad ghost sword dragon now, the previous consumption of four thousand soul path dao marks would be reduced by a lot. Because of the reduced internal friction, I don’t need to expend so many soul path dao marks to balance the strength of various paths."

"Over three thousand heaven path dao marks still cannot remove this kind of internal friction completely, but what if the number increased even further?"

"In the future, can I use the help of heaven path dao marks to create a killer move that contains every path?"

At this point, besides the exception of certain unique methods, Fang Yuan no longer had interest in single path killer moves.

He had discovered a new and vast world ahead of him!

[1] The Beggar Sect in Jinyong novels uses the setting where each member carries at least one pouch-like bag and the number of bags he/she carries indicates his/her rank in the sect.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan was holding an information path Gu worm in his hand, the Gu worm had records of the previous battle of pursuit.

Its contents were roughly: Heavenly Court had a huge victory, Spectral Soul was dead, Fang Yuan escaped, Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Mao Li Qiu were suppressed, Old Man Zheng Yuan was taken captive, Shadow Sect’s Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie were still on the run, Qi Sea Ancestor, Bai Ning Bing, Lady White Rabbit, and Fairy Miao Yin were missing, the probability of them being dead was high.

"In this current age, even if there is no ranking chart of Immortal Gu Houses, Divine Emperor City is worthy of being the number one Immortal Gu House." Fang Yuan sighed.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, during the five regions chaotic war, information path great experts had jointly let out many ranking charts. There was fierce competition on every ranking chart, Immortal Gu House ranking was also the same.

But Divine Emperor City had not appeared back then.

Fang Yuan’s rebirth had led to all kinds of huge changes, now, even before the Immortal Gu House ranking was published, Divine Emperor City firmly held the position of number one.

"If this continues, even if there is an Immortal Gu House ranking in the future, Divine Emperor City’s number one position will be immovable." Fang Yuan estimated.

Divine Emperor City could suppress Mao Li Qiu and Demon Immortal Qi Jue, Fang Yuan was not astonished by this.

Divine Emperor City was created by merging Divine Bean Palace and Emperor City, although it did not have a rank nine Immortal Gu and was not a rank nine Immortal Gu House, it contained painting worlds.

This was Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s contented lifestyle killer move. It was a human path killer move with painting path effect that formed paintings of the lives of people. It was a rank nine level venerable killer move.

Against venerable methods, Duke Long was defeated and Di Zang Sheng was brought to its knees. Even if Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s Xi Land was not damaged, he would still only be at pseudo venerable level, and Mao Li Qiu was some distance away from being at pseudo venerable level.

"My Myriad Year Flying Warship and Dragon Palace are destroyed, even if they were still here, they would only be at peak rank eight level. Divine Emperor City can be considered to be half a rank nine Immortal Gu House. If Eighty-Eight True Yang Building had not been destroyed back then, it could contest for the number one position."

Eighty-Eight True Yang Building was refined by Long Hair Ancestor and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable together. It was divided into countless small towers that gathered wild Gu worms. After combining into one, they would form the main building and could even dispel calamities and tribulations.

When Giant Sun Immortal Venerable passed away, he had left behind Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, which could control the whole of Northern Plains’ political situation even though Giant Sun had already died. Northern Plains held countless Imperial Court contests, and the Huang Jin bloodline was able to hold supreme status in Northern Plains’ immortal and mortal world mainly due to Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

At present, Divine Emperor City was the largest gathering point of Central Continent’s human veins. It was the largest storage and cultivation ground of Central Continent’s geniuses, a sacred land of human path. Looking at the setup, it was similar to Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Even Fang Yuan felt wariness towards such an Immortal Gu House.

As for why Heavenly Court publicized this battle information, Fang Yuan understood it fully.

Heavenly Court was in dire need of a surge in morale.

Ever since their defeat in the fate war when Fang Yuan destroyed fate Gu in front of the whole world, Heavenly Court was simply stripped of its backbone. They lost their spiritual banner and it was even trampled on by Fang Yuan.

This outcome had enormous influence, the whole of Central Continent was covered in looming shadow. Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were furious and filled with hatred but were already fearful. The morale of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects fell much more and most were dispirited.

Central Continent was facing four regions and its situation was truly dangerous. If they were thought to be weak and easily bullied, when the five regions chaotic war starts, they would be besieged by the other four regions. At that time, even if Central Continent was strong like a tiger, they would still be torn to pieces by the hyenas.

Releasing this information would stabilize the internal forces and also frighten external forces, and Qin Ding Ling had to do this! Hiding the battle results might have some tactical advantages, but Qin Ding Ling was the leader of Heavenly Court and had to consider the whole world. So, she chose to give up the tactical advantage to recover the declining situation.

"Heavenly Court is filled with talents, even without a great expert like Fairy Zi Wei, they have Qin Ding Ling to stabilize the overall situation. Heavenly Court’s foundation is extremely deep, it is not just a front." Fang Yuan sighed, he approved of Qin Ding Ling’s decisiveness. He would do the same if it were him.

At their level, the five regions and two heavens were a chessboard. Fighting each other without any plans or vision might let them show off their strength for some time but it would lead them to a disastrous defeat.

Looking back at the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan.

There was no doubt that the biggest loser was Shadow Sect. Spectral Soul with pseudo venerable battle strength died, while the members were dead, missing, fleeing, or captured.

Next was Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s losses were severe!

Currently, the whole sovereign immortal aperture was in a miserable state. The vibrant Mini Southern Border was turned into ruins with only a few resource points remaining. The other four mini regions and the mini nine heavens were also not much better.

Many variant humans and humans died despite receiving Fang Yuan’s protection.

The previous Combat Beast King had fallen into a coma after blocking the myriad tribulation and had yet to wake up.

The loss in Immortal Gu was also the largest that Fang Yuan had ever experienced in his life.

First, two rank eight Immortal Gu Houses were destroyed. Dragon Palace’s core

Immortal Gu, Dream Token, was preserved, along with Myriad Year Flying Warship's Years Flow Like Water, but they were injured and needed to recuperate. Many other Immortal Gu were destroyed in the battle, including Precaution, Fight, and so on.

There were many losses to earth path Gu worms as well. Although Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress still remained, Spectral Soul's self-detonation was terrifying. By blocking this attack, Fang Yuan had lost seven earth path Immortal Gu and countless mortal Gu.

Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress was heavily weakened as a result.

Over this period of time, Fang Yuan had experienced the fate war, defended against myriad tribulations and the pursuit of others, his rank eight immortal essence was already close to drying up. He had almost finished all the immortal essence he had painstakingly accumulated before the fate war.

He had just made some progress in the Twelve Zodiac battle formation, but after the battle with Spectral Soul, he had to gather them again.

There was only a little of Reverse Flow River left, it could not be used.

Unlimited qi sea's strength had fallen to rock bottom and could no longer be considered a trump card.

Fang Yuan did not obtain any battle spoils from Spectral Soul. Spectral Soul's self-detonation had destroyed everything completely.

Undoubtedly, Spectral Soul was extremely hard to deal with, even in death, he did not leave behind any benefits to Fang Yuan.

After the chase, Fang Yuan's greatest gain was preserving his life, as well as over three thousand heaven path dao marks and the Qi Sea clone. He did not possess them originally, they were his gains from the fate war and from scheming against Heavenly Court. They had no association with Spectral Soul.

Even though Spectral Soul was dead, Fang Yuan also suffered in the aftermath.

Shadow Sect and Fang Yuan were losers, so was Longevity Heaven. They lost Mao Li Qiu, a legendary immemorial beast, and did not have any battle gains. It was just that when compared to Shadow Sect and Fang Yuan, their losses were much fewer.

After this was Demon Immortal Qi Jue, who lost a lot but also made a few gains. Demon Immortal Qi Jue had extorted many inheritances from Spectral Soul and Fang Yuan with no lack of venerable true inheritances. But his Xi Land was heavily damaged and he lost his freedom as well, imprisoned by Divine Emperor City.

So, this battle's biggest winner was Heavenly Court.

Spectral Soul died and Fang Yuan escaped with heavy losses. Heavenly Court then defeated Longevity Heaven, Calamity Luck Altar escaped Central Continent in a panic. Divine Emperor City suppressed Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Mao Li Qiu. Qin Ding Ling's group captured Old Man Zheng Yuan and put up a bounty for Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie. Qi Sea Ancestor, Bai Ning Bing, White Rabbit, and Miao Yin were speculated to have died in battle.

Such a battle result was truly impressive. It was a huge surge of morale to everyone in Central Continent.

Heavenly Court's battle result was spread all over the world. It was not just Fang Yuan who analyzed wins and losses, all the Gu Immortals were analyzing the overall situation too.

Among them, one person was the happiest.

"Brilliant, brilliant!" On the main seat in the hall, this Gu Immortal was holding the information Gu while praising repeatedly with joy in his eyes.

He was a middle aged man with an ordinary appearance, he had a strong body and sharp eyebrows. His expression revealed tyranny and some hints of ruthlessness.

He was Wu clan’s first supreme elder, rank eight wind path Gu Immortal, a formidable expert of the present age — Wu Yong!

Sitting on the first seat to the left was Wu clan’s second supreme elder, Wu Ba Chong. His battle strength was not outstanding in Wu clan, but he had the highest seniority, was steady, and dared to take on responsibilities. Previously, when every large force was creating difficulties for Wu clan, he came forward to stabilize the situation. He was a core member of Wu clan.

Wu Ba Chong asked Wu Yong respectfully: "I am not sure what good there is in this? Please enlighten me, my lord."

Wu Yong put down the information path Gu worm and explained with a burning gaze: "In the five regions and two heavens, the strong are respected. The so-called general trend is nothing more than the fight between those peak experts. Only when the strong ones are in a stalemate, will the weaker ones and super forces have space to grow. If a venerable is born, they would be invincible and rule as the sole leader, and all the heroes would have to lower their heads."

"Currently, with no venerable, the general trend flows with four people; Spectral Soul, Gu Yue Fang Yuan, Demon Immortal Qi Jue, and Qi Sea Ancestor. Besides them, there are super forces like Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven who can take part in the fight, with Immortal Gu Houses like Calamity Luck Altar and Divine Emperor City to influence the overall situation."

Wu Ba Chong felt puzzled and asked: "Divine Emperor City is publicly recognized to be the number one Immortal Gu House as it could suppress Demon Immortal Qi Jue. Calamity Luck Altar is slightly inferior but is also a very strong Immortal Gu House that showed its splendor in the fate war. Why put Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven below those four people?"

Wu Yong replied with a smile: "These two Immortal Gu Houses are indeed strong, but they can only be strong for some time. The greatest flaw of Immortal Gu Houses is that their methods are fixed. Once those methods are known, they can be targeted and countered. Immortal Gu Houses are difficult to modify, they are far inferior to individuals with pseudo venerable battle strength who can adjust themselves depending on the situation."

"Divine Emperor City is very strong since it could suppress pseudo venerable Demon Immortal Qi Jue. But when its methods are known clearly, its threat will fall by a level. Heavenly Court lacks a pseudo venerable, it is their greatest weakness. If Qi Sea Ancestor had not stood by Heavenly Court’s side in this battle, Qin Ding Ling would not have had such success."

"So it is like that." Wu Ba Chong realized, "I now understand lord’s happiness. In this pursuit battle, Spectral Soul died, Fang Yuan fled in distress, Demon Immortal Qi Jue was suppressed, Qi Sea Ancestor is missing with a high probability of being dead. This means the four pseudo venerables are mostly gone, and it is the perfect opportunity for us to develop."

Wu Yong nodded: "Naturally, it is better if such experts are dead. The most regrettable thing is Fang Yuan managed to escape, sigh, this demon is unfathomable, he cannot be evaluated by common sense. Maybe, when he appears again, he would be even stronger than before!"

Wu Yong’s expression turned heavy when he mentioned Fang Yuan.

Wu Ba Chong was also filled with worries.

Fang Yuan had deep conflicts with Wu clan, and now that Spectral Soul was dead, Fang Yuan was the number one demon in the world. If he recuperated and came to attack Wu clan, it would be an apocalyptic disaster.

Wu Yong continued: "We can do nothing about pseudo venerables. So we should take this chance to develop and strengthen ourselves, when Fang Yuan comes to trouble us in the future, we can at least have strength to fight back. If this situation doesn’t happen in the future, it will be preparation for the five regions chaotic war."

"Central Continent and Northern Plains are guarded by Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven. They have been operating for countless years and are like iron fortresses, let’s not talk about them for the moment."

"As for the remaining three regions, Southern Border, Western Desert, and Eastern Sea are all disunited."

"The wave of the great era has already risen, Wu clan needs to ride this wave and rise up. Western Desert is filled with sand and countless oases, it is easy to defend but hard to attack. Eastern Sea has plenty of resources but has never produced a venerable, their nature is the most gentle. We should first integrate the whole of Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, then capture Eastern Sea and Western Desert. With resources of three regions to help me, I will pass my tribulation and become a pseudo venerable, then cultivate rank eight Gu Immortals and construct a peak level Immortal Gu House. Finally, we will attack Central Continent and Northern Plains!"

"Lord!" Wu Ba Chong was hearing this for the first time, his eyes opened wide in excitement but he felt nervous at the same time.

This was an aspiration to take over the world!

Can Wu Yong bring Wu clan to the peak? Or will they be turned into dregs by the tides of the era?

"There has never been a venerable in wind path. If there is a possibility, maybe I can fill this gap. Who can say for sure what will happen in the future?" Wu Yong only thought this inwardly and did not say it out loud.

He was sitting on the main seat but his gaze seemed to pierce through the hall and into the sky.

At the next moment, Wu Ba Chong heard Wu Yong’s recital:

"The mirage of eternal life is not my pursuit, longevity without accomplishments is no less than shameful."

"Regional walls vanish as chaos ensues, the destruction of fate brings freedom to all."

"Eagle rules the sky and whale dominates the sea, without trying, who knows if I am a dragon or worm?"

"How can plain commoners ever understand why, I will never give up until my road ends!"

Wu Ba Chong was deeply moved as he stood up and knelt on the ground, swearing with a trembling voice: "This subordinate is willing to follow by lord’s side, for the grand ambition of Wu clan, I will use every ounce of my strength and lay down my life!!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Wu Ba Chong, get up quickly." Wu Yong’s laughter resounded in the hall.

Wu Ba Chong immediately felt a formless wind lifting him up firmly and gently.

"With your help, I will have nothing to worry about." Wu Yong was satisfied.

"I am ashamed." Wu Ba Chong bowed his head and cupped his fists, "My cultivation level is not enough to bear lord’s expectation. But from now on, as long as lord gives a command, I will stake my life to accomplish it!"

Wu Ba Chong was not acting, he had wholeheartedly pledged his allegiance.

Wu Yong was truly a formidable leader, the moment he took his position, he got rid of the spies inside Wu clan.

Although there was the matter of Fang Yuan disguising as Wu Yi Hai to make use of Wu clan as well as secretly stealing dream realms, Wu Yong put in vigorous effort and had taken back all the lost territories of Wu clan.

In the Southern Border giant dream realm event, Wu Yong and Heavenly Court had reached an agreement, they returned the super clans’ Immortal Gu, allowing him to gain incomparable prestige. Later, he led the Southern Border immortals to hunt down Fang Yuan, forcing Fang Yuan to flee from Southern Border to Western Desert in a miserable state.

During the Five Regional Mountain Range battle, he suffered a slight setback due to the schemes of Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin. But after the event, Lu Wei Yin could not defeat him and Wu Yong became the Southern Alliance’s leader in the end.

During the fate war, Wu Yong took the initiative to lead the Southern Alliance’s champions in the battle, disregarding Fairy Zi Wei’s threats. In this battle, Wu Yong led the immortals and attacked the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation, he unhesitatingly used the killer move unlimited wind which expended his wind path dao marks permanently. Be it his heroic bravery in the battle or the contributions he made, they were all deeply engraved in the minds of Southern Border’s immortals.

After the fate war, Wu Yong returned to the clan to rest and recuperate. He modified and improved his killer moves as well as Immortal Gu House Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building. At the same time, he handled Wu clan’s affairs, ensuring there was order and stability in Wu clan, which was growing day by day.

Whether it was in terms of cultivation, talent, battle strength, or leadership, Wu Yong was a rare genius from Wu Ba Chong’s perspective. Even his mother, Wu Du Xiu, was below Wu Yong in the current opinion of Wu Ba Chong and many other Southern Border Gu Immortals.

"I am getting old, this is all my life will amount to. It is my honor to be able to follow a person like Wu Yong. I am really looking forward to seeing how far Wu clan can grow under his leadership." These were the inner thoughts of Wu Ba

Chong.

Swoosh.

With a soft whistle, an information path Immortal Gu flew into the hall from the outside and landed on Wu Yong’s hand.

Wu Yong probed with his divine sense and immediately learned of the content.

Wu Ba Chong guessed: "It is definitely a huge matter if an information path Immortal Gu is sent to deliver the message. I wonder if it is good or bad news?"

Shortly after, he saw Wu Yong smile: "Good news keeps coming, take a look."

Wu Yong handed the information path Immortal Gu to Wu Ba Chong.

Wu Ba Chong received the Gu and inspected it carefully, he then understood Wu Yong had made a big accomplishment from his scheme, he had successfully lured the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts into the formation.

"The Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts, they really are the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts!" Wu Ba Chong was excited.

The Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts were a famous demonic path group in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world comprising seven members. Every generation of the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts brought a huge disturbance and many losses to Southern Border’s righteous path.

The Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts were arrogant and even infringed upon Wu clan’s benefits many times. As the leader of Southern Border’s righteous path, Wu clan naturally had to come forward to deal with this issue.

Thereupon, Wu clan and the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts could be said to be at odds.

Every generation’s first supreme elder of Wu clan dedicated themselves to exterminating the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts. And every generation’s Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts provoked Wu clan, as long as the colossal force Wu clan showed any weakness, they would attack like dogs hiding in the darkness, biting off a piece of flesh of Wu clan and run away immediately.

Wu clan was a super force and stably held the throne in Southern Border. But the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts were not ordinary, there was much evidence that suggested their inheritance was very likely to be from Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. As long as there was one person living in every generation’s Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts, the inheritance would continue. And with time, there would be another six demonic immortals besides the survivor.

The life and death battles in every generation made it so that Wu clan and the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts had irreconcilable conflict. Wu clan became the biggest enemy of the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts, while the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts became a sore point of Wu clan that could not be gotten rid of. Every new member of the seven ghosts was committed to taking revenge against Wu clan.

Wu Du Xiu had mentioned three regrets in her last words, one of them was regarding the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts. In her life, Wu Du Xiu had commanded from behind the scenes and even personally attacked and killed over ten members of the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts, but had not been able to get rid of all of them at once.

As long as there was one survivor of the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts, they would bide their time patiently and fill the vacancies.

But now, according to the information in the Immortal Gu, all of the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts had ended up in Wu Yong’s trap.

It was no wonder Wu Ba Chong was so excited.

Wu Yong took back the information path Immortal Gu and walked towards the outside while instructing: "The Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts are a disaster that Wu clan must get rid of. If we ignore them, they will definitely cause trouble for us and drag us down in the future. To be on the safe side, I will personally make a move this time."

Wu Ba Chong followed closely behind and asked for permission to take part in the battle. If they could kill the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts completely, it would be extremely significant to Wu clan!

But Wu Yong refused him: "I will take Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building with me, a lion uses its full strength even when hunting a rabbit. You need to guard the headquarters while I am gone."

"Yes." Wu Ba Chong could only helplessly accept the command.

Under his anticipating and respectful gaze, Wu Yong flew to the sky and disappeared into the horizon.

Wu clan’s headquarters was located on Wu Yi Mountain and Wu Yi Mountain was located at the extreme southwest of Southern Border.

If you looked at the whole Southern Border from high above, you could roughly see: the intersection of yellow dragon river and red dragon river formed a ’X’, and Wu clan’s territory was at the lower part of this ’X’. Shang clan was on the right side.

Among all the Southern Border super forces, Wu clan was at the extreme south. Wu Yong was very satisfied with this location, as Wu clan would not be surrounded by enemies from all sides like Central Continent.

The surroundings of Wu clan’s territories were isolated by yellow dragon river and red dragon river, the geography was highly beneficial to the clan’s rise.

"The biggest weakness of Wu clan currently is insufficient Gu Immortals. Even if we annex the surrounding lands in the future, we won’t have enough Gu Immortals to guard them."

As Wu Yong pondered over this, he thought of Fang Yuan.

It was Fang Yuan who created problems and havoc in Southern Border, making Southern Border go through many large battles. Not only Wu clan, the whole of Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world lost many people!

Wu Yong was flying towards the northeast extremely quickly.

After some time, a corpse mountain was already in his sight.

This corpse mountain that was beside the river was thousands of feet tall and there were large numbers of zombies living in it. It was close to the whirlpool at the intersection of red dragon river and yellow dragon river.

More accurately speaking, this corpse mountain was called Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian. In the past, a rank eight Southern Border Gu Immortal turned into an immortal zombie, and fought against allied attacks of super forces in this peak, finally dying here. As time passed, on the mangled corpse of this rank eight immortal zombie, due to the nourishment of the natural essence from the river, along with the aquatic plants in the river that rooted themselves, this place turned into a corpse mountain.

The corpse mountain produced transformation path zombie Gu, as well as qi path zombie qi Gu.

Before the headquarters of Southern Border’s Zombie Alliance was exposed, they had targeted this precious area and wanted to pay a high price to buy it from Wu clan to make it their headquarters, but Wu clan rejected them.

Later, Yao clan seized it from Wu clan. Wu Yong brought out Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building and took back the corpse mountain.

Because this resource point had high productivity and was also located at a strategic position, Wu Yong had stationed rank seven Gu Immortal Wu Zhen here.

After the fate war, qi tides emerged in the five regions. Qi tides swept the whole world, not only forcing the five regions’ Gu Immortals to recuperate, they even exposed many true inheritance secret areas and grotto heavens of the two heavens.

Blood qi Immortal Gu, which Demon Immortal Qi Jue had seized in Western Desert, was one of the Blood Sea true inheritances, its traces were exposed because of qi tides.

A true inheritance had appeared on Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian as well. All the traces revealed this true inheritance was left behind by that rank eight immortal zombie back then!

A true inheritance of this level might not catch the interest of Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Fang Yuan, but it was a rank eight great expert’s inheritance after all. It was enough for any super force to give it attention, it was reasonable for the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts to be tempted.

Wu Yong thus arranged traps, and now, the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts were all drawn into the trap and were just waiting for him to catch them.

An intense battle had already continued for some time at the peak of the corpse mountain.

"Cardinal directional wind formation! Such a pity that we, the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts, have a deep understanding of your Wu clan, this large formation cannot trap us!"

"The moment the formation breaks will be the moment your life ends, Wu Zhen!"

"Wu Zhen, the Corpse Emperor true inheritance appeared on Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian, but you intentionally concealed the information. Even if Wu clan’s reinforcements arrive, you won’t face a good outcome. How about you betray Wu clan and join us."

The Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts started to attack the wind path formation in four directions.

They had a lot of understanding of this formation because the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts had tackled the cardinal directional wind formation many times over the generations.

The formation was already on the verge of collapse.

Wu Zhen, who was controlling the formation from the outside, was riddled with wounds.

Suddenly, he received Wu Yong’s voice transmission. His face immediately brightened as he activated some methods.

The cardinal directional wind formation changed immediately, a gentle wind blew in and turned into Wu Yong.

"What? This formation actually changed!"

"Wu Yong came! Wu clan’s reinforcements came so fast?"

"Damn it, this was a trap."

The Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts were shaken but after the shock, their ferocity was stimulated.

"Kill!"

"Even if we die, we will make Wu clan suffer disastrous losses."

"If we kill Wu Yong, Wu clan will only be a joke!"

The Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts charged towards Wu Yong, but they were secretly discussing on how to break through.

Since it was a trap by Wu clan, the longer they stayed, the more unfavorable it would be for them. Moreover, Wu Yong was a powerful expert in the present age, he was a person at a level that was just under pseudo venerable.

The present Gu Immortal world publicly recognized Wu Yong, Qin Ding Ling, Bing Sai Chuan, Thousand Transformations Ancestor, and other experts to be on the same level, they were all experts merely below pseudo venerable level.

The Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts knew they were not Wu Yong’s match, but they still had hope.

Wu Yong used this cardinal directional wind formation to lure these Gu Immortals, although there were some changes to it, it was still the original cardinal directional wind formation.

It was because this large formation was not a battlefield killer move that the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts let down their guard and attacked rashly.

Seeing the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts charging towards him, Wu Yong sneered: "Cowards putting up a strong front, you are nothing much."

At the next moment, strong winds appeared and frosty air blew.

Winds roared and snow started pouring down like a blizzard!

Three ghosts of the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts were frozen solid, and after two breaths of time, two of them died from the coldness.

"What killer move is this?"

"It is so cold!"

This was the killer move that Wu Yong had created during his recent closed cultivation session — Snowy Wind of No Return.

The Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts’ formation was in chaos, Wu Yong’s eyes shone with sinister light: "Cowards, you are not qualified to be my enemies."

Green leaves emerged from the bodies of the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts, branches grew rapidly.

The remaining five ghosts screamed miserably as their life force was completely seized. Lush willow branches grew on the corpses.

It was another creation of Wu Yong — Willow Wind!

The seven ghosts died, but their souls flew out of the corpses and merged into one, becoming an immemorial soul beast.

The soul beast had the appearance of a bird, its whole body was completely black and it had seven heads.

Wu Yong’s expression was uplifted: "So it was the Seven Ghosts true inheritance, it is the incomplete product of Spectral Soul when he attempted to create the immemorial soul beast — Seven-Seven Profound Soul Bird. Jade Building, come to me!"

Wu Yong waved his hand, Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building crashed towards the seven-seven profound soul bird like a green meteor.

The seven-seven profound soul bird struggled with all its strength, using all kinds of killer moves. Unfortunately, its consciousness alternated between clear and chaotic, and was finally suppressed by Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building in the end.

"Lu Wei Yin, I should not have trusted you!" The seven-seven profound soul bird let out an indignant cry at the last moment before falling unconscious.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Lord!" Wu Zhen put away the cardinal directional wind formation in excitement.

He personally witnessed Wu Yong sweeping away the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts with methods that were never heard of before and were also extremely powerful.

Everyone knew of the price Wu Yong paid to use unlimited wind in the fate war.

Wu Zhen had not expected Wu Yong’s strength to increase so much in this period of time! In the whole battle, the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts were unable to counterattack at all.

Sensing the reverential gaze of Wu Zhen, Wu Yong smiled: "The Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts are rank seven at most, we could not deal with them properly because they rarely moved together. If they were not dealt with at once, our efforts would only be in vain."

Wu Yong’s expression turned slightly heavy: "You heard what the seven-seven profound soul bird said just now, what do you think?"

Wu Zhen immediately revealed a serious expression as he analyzed: "From their dying words, all of the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts attacked Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian not only because of our scheme, Lu Wei Yin had been urging them from behind the scenes as well! Lu Wei Yin... he could actually influence the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts, maybe we can make use of this!"

Wu Yong laughed heartily: "Not bad, Wu Zhen, well said."

Wu Zhen had already guessed Wu Yong’s next plan. In Wu Yong’s plan, the first step was to unite Southern Border.

And the greatest obstacle to do this was Lu Wei Yin.

Lu Wei Yin was the current inheritor of Paradise Earth in Southern Border. Because of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s influence and his contributions to Southern Border’s righteous path, Wu Yong could not easily make a move against him.

But who could have expected that during the pursuit against Fang Yuan, Lu Wei Yin actually helped Fang Yuan. This gave Wu Yong the perfect reason to make a move. And this time, Lu Wei Yin was secretly involved with the seven-seven profound soul bird, this gave Wu Yong the perfect excuse to lead the Southern Alliance and destroy the Mushroomman Paradise in the name of justice!

"Take care of your injuries, next, we will make a move against Lu Wei Yin and destroy Mushroomman Paradise!" Wu Yong’s eyes shone with cold light and imposing battle intent.

Wu Zhen hesitated for a moment before speaking: "Lord, isn’t it too early now? When qi tides appeared, many inheritances emerged in Southern Border. The Corpse Emperor true inheritance is only one of them. Currently, the Southern Alliance’s super forces are all actively exploring and gathering these true inheritances. If we hastily summon them, wouldn’t only a few show up and the other super forces conceal their strength?"

Wu Yong smiled and nodded: "You are right. The things you mentioned are one of the difficulties in attacking Lu Wei Yin and the Mushroomman Paradise. Besides this, there are several other difficulties. Firstly, Lu Wei Yin is extremely shrewd, he has all kinds of plans and unique methods, he is definitely not an ordinary opponent. Secondly, Mushroomman Paradise obtained Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s help, its foundation is deep and is not any inferior to the super forces. Thirdly, Lu Wei Yin helped Fang Yuan escape, if we attack him, we might have to fight Fang Yuan as well."

"Fight Fang Yuan?" Wu Zhen’s face immediately turned pale.

The current Fang Yuan was the number one demon in the world. Just the possibility of having to fight him was enough to make a rank seven Gu Immortal like Wu Zhen feel uneasy.

Wu Yong laughed, his tone rising slightly: "But these difficulties are only difficulties, if we are afraid to take action because of difficulties, nothing can be accomplished. Farmers need to farm, but if they don’t cultivate the land because they are afraid of drought, there would not even be a single grain of harvest. When fishermen fish, if they don’t spread the net because they are afraid of drowning, their baskets will definitely be empty. Will our Wu clan retreat because of these difficulties?"

Wu Zhen’s expression became solemn and he quickly cupped his hands: "Thank you for the guidance."

Wu Yong’s gaze was deep as he continued to explain: "This is the best time to attack Lu Wei Yin. A person like Lu Wei Yin will only make more preparations if he has more time, and Mushroomman Paradise will be increasingly hard to attack. It is obvious that Fang Yuan escaped because he did not have strength to fight. If we miss this chance and he recovers, there will be no hope of destroying Mushroomman Paradise."

"As for those righteous path super forces concealing their strength? Hmph, do they think the Southern Alliance is so easy to join? As the alliance leader, I will gain the chance to reorganize the Southern Alliance once and for all."

Wu Zhen no longer had any worries and was completely persuaded by Wu Yong’s plan: "I am willing to follow you, lord, and go on the expedition against the mushroommen."

Wu Yong nodded, saying a sentence before leaving: "Tend to your injuries first, the path of Wu clan’s domination will require your contribution as well."

At the same time, Eastern Sea.

Xia clan headquarters.

The atmosphere was tense in the discussion hall.

Over ten variant human Gu Immortals were divided into two groups and were in a standoff.

On the left side, Chaotic Rock Grotto Lord, Rotten Egg Grotto Lord, and Hair Monster Grotto Lord were clustered around Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

On the right, Xiao He Jian led Green Forest Great Sage and Great Wisdom Immortal Mother.

There was also a third group formed from human Gu Immortals, having Crossing Heaven Immortal Monarch, Black Locust, and Rainbow Rock Immortal Concubine in it.

During the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan, these variant human Gu Immortals were abandoned by Fang Yuan. After they escaped Heavenly Court, they returned to Eastern Sea.

Without Wu Shuai controlling the situation, these grotto-heaven lords of the two heavens were feeling panicky. Over these days, they were still pondering over how to resolve the qi harvest fruit disaster in their grotto-heavens, but made no progress.

"Xiao He Jian, are you prepared for when Lord Wu Shuai returns? I want to see how you will explain to Lord Alliance Leader why you promoted Lady Cold Ash repeatedly before!" Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch took the lead to reprimand his political rival.

Xiao He Jian’s expression was dark. Back then,he had promoted Lady Cold Ash to gather Gu Immortals and grow his force in contesting with Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s group. He had never expected Lady Cold Ash to be Spectral Soul’s disguise! Not only this, at the crucial moment, Spectral Soul made his move and chased Wu Shuai and Fang Yuan, eventually destroying Dragon Palace.

Spectral Soul created such huge losses to the two heavens alliance and Xiao He Jian naturally had to be held responsible.

Xiao He Jian’s expression was ashen in face of the accusation, he stared at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch: "It is not up to you to decide how much responsibility I bear. Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, don’t forget, we are both vice alliance leaders, we have equal positions! I am aware of how big a mistake I made, I am willing to accept any punishments from Lord Wu Shuai. But this is not only my responsibility. Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, could it be that you didn’t make any mistake? Think about it, who invited Lady Cold Ash into our alliance? Was it not you? You not only invited Spectral Soul, you even took in Heavenly Court’s spy, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord. Your responsibility is bigger than mine."

"You!" Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was furious.

After the defeat in the battle, Xiao He Jian had already realized his predicament. He had already made sufficient preparations for this meeting.

"Hehe. Speaking of which, isn’t it all caused by humans? Be they Lady Cold Ash or Night Heavenly Wolf Lord, they are both humans. Human Gu Immortals cannot be trusted!" Great Wisdom Immortal Mother added sinisterly.

She was an inkman Gu Immortal, her Great Wisdom grotto-heaven had been invaded by Heavenly Court and suffered heavy losses.

Later, the two heavens alliance organized a rescue, but Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had been worried about his own Ice Crystal grotto-heaven back then and disregarded Great Wisdom grotto-heaven.

Thus, there was a crack in the relationship between Great Wisdom Immortal Mother and Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, Xiao He Jian had sensed it and recruited her. Great Wisdom Immortal Mother, whose strength had greatly fallen, became a member supporting Xiao He Jian.

Green Forest Great Sage was also a miniman like Xiao He Jian, so he had a natural closeness to the latter.

With these two supporting Xiao He Jian with all their strength, Xiao He Jian was barely able to contend with Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s group. But it was only barely.

This time, Spectral Soul’s attack created a huge trouble for Xiao He Jian.

Thus, Great Wisdom Immortal Mother saw that the situation was bad and diverted the attention to the humans.

Her words immediately resonated with other variant human Gu Immortals.

"That’s right, humans are crafty, they cannot be believed easily."

"In my opinion, our two heavens alliance should be a pure variant human alliance!"

"The performance of these human Gu Immortals in the battle was truly bad!"

Variant human Gu Immortals resonated with the words and looked at the human Gu Immortals in the hall with unfriendly gazes.

Crossing Heaven Immortal Monarch, Black Locust, and Rainbow Rock Immortal Concubine were pale, and were standing close to each other.

The two heavens alliance had been established not long ago, they had formed for an extremely short period of time. Now that they lost their powerful leader, they immediately showed signs of collapsing.

Right at this time, a majestic sound reverberated throughout the blessed land headquarters.

"Alright, stop fighting!"

Following which, a golden light shot down like a heavenly pillar.

The golden pillar of light dissipated, revealing two immortals.

One was wearing a white robe, with dark hair and deep pupils, while the other was tall and handsome, resembling a heroic champion. They were Gu Yue Fang Yuan and Wu Shuai.

All the immortals in the hall were shaken.

With Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian taking the lead, everyone knelt down on one knee and greeted: "Greetings to Lord Alliance Leader!"

After hesitating for a moment, they greeted again: "Greetings to Lord Fang Yuan."

Wu Shuai raised his hand: "Get up."

He was standing beside Fang Yuan, and Fang Yuan was grandly sitting on the alliance leader’s seat.

The immortals had different expressions seeing Wu Shuai’s subordinate-like attitude towards Fang Yuan.

Wu Shuai directly said: "You don’t need to guess, I am a dragonman, but it is a fact that I am Fang Yuan’s clone."

The immortals were stunned for a bit before reacting, their expressions were even more complicated.

They were not overly shocked by this relationship. After Heavenly Court spread the battle results, the relationship of Wu Shuai and Fang Yuan was widely speculated. After all, Wu Shuai and Fang Yuan’s cooperation was extremely close in the battle, they were too trustful of each other, this was not common among demonic immortals.

The two heavens alliance’s Gu Immortals had already heard of these rumors, they appeared loyal and devoted on the surface but had many guesses inwardly.

So when Wu Shuai admitted it, the immortals did not find it hard to accept.

Wu Shuai continued: "The reason I gathered everyone is to rally our forces and vie for supremacy, while also to get rid of the qi harvest fruit disaster in your grotto-heavens."

The immortals’ eyes shone, one of them asked: "Could it be that lord alliance leader has a way to resolve it?"

Wu Shuai smiled: "I naturally don’t have a way to deal with it, but my main body has."

The immortals cautiously looked at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan wore no expression and his gaze was indifferent as he spoke for the first time: "Right now, you have two choices. One is to let me annex your grotto-heavens, only through this way can the qi harvest fruit calamity be resolved."

The immortals turned pale, some were furious but dared not to say anything.

At once, the hall fell into silence.

Rainbow Rock Immortal Concubine broke the silence and asked respectfully: "I wonder what the other choice is?"

Fang Yuan leaned back on the wide chair and narrowed his eyes: "The second choice is that you will all be killed by me, thereafter, I will annex your grotto-heavens."

All the immortals were deathly pale and it was a scene of complete silence.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2069 Eastern Sea“s Alliance Army

Facing the extremely forceful Fang Yuan, the variant human Gu Immortals gritted their teeth and their gaze flickered with dark light. Many glanced around, hoping someone would speak up.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan was currently the number one demon in the world, even Spectral Soul had died in his trap. His demonic prestige was increasing rapidly and the variant human Gu Immortals dared not to touch his nerve.

No one dared to resist Fang Yuan but no one surrendered and offered their headquarters either.

Anyone could see these Gu Immortals were not willing to!

Their grotto-heaven headquarters was the place where they lived day and night, it was their home and their sacred land. If they really offered their home to Fang Yuan, their friends and family would definitely blame them for the betrayal, and their own conscience did not allow it.

Back then, when Heavenly Court invaded Ice Crystal grotto-heaven, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch directly staked his life and did not hesitate to expend his lifespan to activate the killer move extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin. Great Wisdom Immortal Mother directly sold the racial inheritance regarding the Qian Kun Crystal Wall to Wu Shuai to save her Great Wisdom grotto-heaven. All these showed that the grotto-heavens of the two heavens had great significance to the variant human alliance’s members and they held an important position in their hearts.

But what could they do?

Fang Yuan’s power was known to the whole world. He was currently the number one demon, Heavenly Court was defeated by him, fate Gu was destroyed by him, and now, even Spectral Soul was killed by him!

After the pursuit battle, although Fang Yuan had only rested for a little over ten days, which was a brief time, the variant human Gu Immortals in the hall had no doubt that Fang Yuan could exterminate all of them!

Their only hope might be external reinforcements.

But where would these variant human Gu Immortals find external reinforcements?

Should they approach Heavenly Court or Longevity Heaven?

What a joke!

An even more crucial point was that almost all the two heavens’ grotto-heavens were facing the qi harvest fruit disaster. If they did not surrender to Fang

Yuan and let these qi harvest fruits grow, their grotto-heavens would be destroyed.

But if they surrendered to Fang Yuan, they would be giving their lives to Fang Yuan. After they joined his side, it would be easier said than done for them to leave him again.

Fang Yuan’s ruthlessness was already known to all. Previously, he had dispatched many of his subordinates to attack Central Continent, but after the fate war, Fang Yuan only escaped by himself, these subordinates were still wandering around the five regions. And just recently in the pursuit battle, Fang Yuan and Wu Shuai had left Heavenly Court using Dragon Palace, leaving the variant human Gu Immortals behind in Heavenly Court.

Who could feel safe following such a leader?

"Have you all thought it through? My patience is limited." Fang Yuan’s expression was indifferent as he gave an ultimatum.

The immortals’ mind shook, many were pale and broke out in cold sweat.

Among them, the human Gu Immortals felt the most regret.

If they had known this, they would have directly surrendered to Heavenly Court.

In the present age, humanity was the ruler and they would not accept the surrender of variant human forces. But it was a different concept if humans were to surrender.

In fact, during the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan, when they were escaping Heavenly Court, it was not that they did not think of imitating Night Heavenly Wolf Lord and surrendering to Heavenly Court. But they simply did not have the chance with the variant human Gu Immortals watching them like hawks.

So, it was not without reason that these variant human Gu Immortals showed doubt and suspicion towards the human Gu Immortals.

The hall was still deathly silent, Fang Yuan’s expression was indifferent, but the variant human alliance members felt increasing pressure.

Fang Yuan had not used any killer moves, but most of the Gu Immortals felt like they were suffocating and their thoughts were being suppressed.

Unable to endure such pressure, one of the alliance members, Golden Fur Immortal Monarch, clenched his teeth and agreed, offering his immortal aperture to Fang Yuan.

Golden Fur Immortal Monarch was a rank eight hairy man Gu Immortal, he had his own reasons for doing this.

He knew Fang Yuan had annexed Lang Ya blessed land and had rarely sent Lang Ya Sect’s hairy man Gu Immortals into battle. Golden Fur Immortal Monarch surrendered to Fang Yuan, thinking he would receive similar treatment.

Hairy men were proficient in Gu refinement, this had an enormous value which might preserve the lives of the people of Golden Fur grotto-heaven and even give them high statuses. It was far better than being slaughtered by Fang Yuan and forcefully annexed.

With Golden Fur Immortal Monarch agreeing, the remaining people felt even more pressure and urge to follow suit. It was like a gap appearing on a large dam and causing the flood to gush out of it.

But right at this time, alarms rang — a large group of Eastern Sea Gu Immortals were approaching this place with several Immortal Gu Houses!

Wu Shuai glanced at Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan nodded lightly. Wu Shuai turned around to look at the immortals: "The enemies have arrived, we will talk after repelling them."

The immortals finally let out sighs of relief.

If it were normal times and Eastern Sea's righteous path had organized a joint attack on them, these people would be extremely worried and fearful. But right now, they felt the pressure on them going away and were actually grateful instead.

Immediately, Wu Shuai and Fang Yuan stayed behind the scenes, while Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian led the variant human alliance to meet the Eastern Sea alliance army.

The Eastern Sea alliance army had many people. Shen clan's first supreme elder Shen Cong Sheng, along with Tang clan's first supreme elder and Xie clan's first supreme elder, were personally taking part in the battle.

There were many Immortal Gu Houses as well, over ten at least. Eastern Sea was rich and populous, and was the number one region in terms of resources, so it was also the number one in terms of the number of Immortal Gu Houses possessed, surpassing even Central Continent. Naturally, they had very few peak rank eight Immortal Gu Houses like Dragon Palace or Myriad Year Flying Warship.

Among the Immortal Gu Houses present, there was only one rank eight Immortal Gu House — Green Cloud Spark Warship, which belonged to Eastern Sea's Hua clan. Rank six Immortal Gu Houses were most numerous, after which was rank seven.

The two armies confronted each other in the sky, Xia clan's first supreme elder walked out of the Eastern Sea alliance army, it was rank seven Gu Immortal Xia Rui Zhi.

"Despicable variant humans, you disturbed Eastern Sea and invaded my home, your sin is too heinous. Today is the day you will all die!" Xia Rui Zhi shouted with a righteous aura.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch sneered: "Cowardly rat, you actually dared to come and court death."

Xiao He Jian also ridiculed: "Homeless dog, what gives you the confidence to challenge us?"

Xia Rui Zhi's face reddened with anger, he said through clenched teeth: "Variant humans, you deserve to die! I will fight first, who among you dares to face me alone?"

Xia clan's territory was seized by the variant human alliance; as the victim, Xia Rui Zhi naturally wanted to start the fight.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch immediately said: "A mere rank seven dares to start the fight. Never mind, my variant human alliance has no need to bully the weak, we will send someone with similar cultivation level to fight you."

Under Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch's instruction, a rank seven snowman Gu Immortal flew out and fought Xia Rui Zhi.

Both sides had just fought three rounds when Shen Cong Sheng stood up: "Who wants to fight me?"

Shen Cong Sheng was rank eight, his battle strength was also publicly recognized to be at the peak of Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world. This time, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian did not dare to be overconfident. Under Fang Yuan’s secret command, Xiao He Jian personally came out to fight.

Shen Cong Sheng and Xiao He Jian fought for a while, when another rank eight Gu Immortal from the Eastern Sea alliance army challenged, but he was not at Shen Cong Sheng’s level.

The variant human alliance had many rank eight Gu Immortals, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch thought for a while before sending a rank eight rockman Gu Immortal to meet the challenge.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The two armies confronted each other, and the intense battles in the three battle circles attracted countless gazes.

Xiao He Jian was a rank eight expert and in terms of strength, he was at the same level as a Heavenly Court member. And after returning from the blue dragon whale, Shen Cong Sheng also had a great improvement in his strength. The two were evenly matched.

But in the other two battle circles, the variant humans were at a disadvantage.

Chaotic Rock Grotto Lord was defending more than attacking, while the rank seven snowman Gu Immortal was already showing signs of defeat. His opponent was Xia Rui Zhi, who might be only at rank seven but was Xia clan’s first supreme elder after all, he had abundant resources and many methods.

After several more rounds, Xia Rui Zhi suddenly shouted and used a fatal killer move to strike the snowman Gu Immortal.

The snowman Gu Immortal could not dodge it, his expression turned to despair.

Right at this time, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch suddenly attacked Xia Rui Zhi with an ice path killer move.

Eastern Sea’s alliance army was furious, they took actions to protect Xia Rui Zhi while blocking Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s sudden attack.

Taking this chance, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch pulled back that rank seven snowman to his side.

"Variant human Gu Immortals, you don’t have any sense of honor indeed, losing the battle as well as disgracing yourselves!"

"It was a one on one fight and you actually interfered to save your people? Alright, since you don’t respect rules, then we shall attack together."

"Kill! Slaughter these variant human Gu Immortals!"

The Eastern Sea alliance army was furious, the whole army charged towards the variant human alliance like a rushing tidal wave.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and the rest had a change of expression..

Eastern Sea alliance army’s offense was fierce, over ten Immortal Gu Houses took the lead and wreaked havoc. Comparatively, the variant human alliance had more rank eight Gu Immortals, but they lacked an Immortal Gu House and could only use their own bodies to fight.

Right at this crucial moment, an ant army suddenly appeared, forming a dazzling torrent that charged at the Eastern Sea alliance army.

The Eastern Sea alliance army was immediately obstructed by millions of ants. Many of the Immortal Gu Houses were infiltrated by the ants and could only use all their strength in defending, at once, the formation was in chaos.

Wu Shuai slowly showed himself, even without Dragon Palace, he was still a rank eight expert!

"Lord alliance leader!" The variant human alliance’s morale soared immediately.

On the contrary, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals were pale in shock.

"Why is Wu Shuai here?"

"Wasn’t he together with that demon Fang Yuan?"

"If he is here, what about Fang Yuan?"

As if answering the questions of the Eastern Sea immortals, Fang Yuan’s figure also appeared.

"You guys have a lot of guts." Fang Yuan waved his hand with a slight smile, a five-colored ray of light shot out.

A rank seven Immortal Gu House was struck by the five-colored light; it started shaking violently for a few breaths of time before it was no longer able to resist and exploded violently.

The Gu Immortals inside were horrified as they exclaimed: "This is a compound killer move, it actually contains metal, wood, water, fire, and earth, a total of five paths!"

Fang Yuan snapped his fingers, countless butterflies made of light flew out.

The butterflies of light flew in the sky and charged upon all the Immortal Gu Houses like a rainstorm.

Immortal Gu Houses used their abilities and resisted with all their strength.

The light butterflies changed their colors and ingeniously dodged most of the attacks as they infiltrated the Immortal Gu Houses.

"This is also a compound killer move, it contains the profundities of transformation path and refinement path!"

"Don’t let these butterflies near the Immortal Gu Houses, they can forcefully refine Gu worms!"

The Eastern Sea alliance army shouted in chaos.

The variant human alliance’s immortals were dumbfounded.

With just his strength, Fang Yuan disrupted the whole Eastern Sea alliance army, this was pseudo venerable battle strength! This was the strength of the number one demon of the present age!

"Fang Yuan, how have you been?" At the crucial moment, qi currents surged like the roars of tidal waves, Qi Sea Ancestor appeared.

The Eastern Sea alliance army’s morale finally stabilized.

"Qi Sea Ancestor is making a move!"

"He also has pseudo venerable battle strength, only he can fight Fang Yuan."

"Qi Sea Ancestor also returned? Wasn’t he missing?" The variant human Gu Immortals were astonished, their expressions turning heavy.

The reason that the Eastern Sea immortals organized this army to attack the variant human alliance, aside from Xia clan actively contacting other forces and taking the initiative to offer many resources, was because Qi Sea Ancestor had secretly returned and gathered these immortals.

"Fang Yuan, let’s go!" Qi Sea Ancestor broke the heavenly wind qi wall and entered immemorial white heaven.

Fang Yuan laughed: "Since you are in such a mood, then I shall accompany you." Saying so, he also charged into immemorial white heaven.

No one dared to follow them, the sky over the Eastern Sea was already in chaos at this moment.

The fight between Fang Yuan and Qi Sea Ancestor in immemorial white heaven shattered the sky and caused darkness to loom over Eastern Sea.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan’s cold laughter could be heard: "Qi Sea, I am no longer the same as before. This is the killer move sword feather bladewing, let me see if you can block it."

When his words ended, the immortals saw countless sword feathers in the sky that pierced the heavenly wind qi wall and floated down, shrouding the whole battlefield.

Shortly afterwards, countless sword feathers formed into bright bladewings which rapidly cut everything in their path. The Immortal Gu Houses appeared extremely fragile in front of these bladewings, only the rank eight Immortal Gu House Green Cloud Spark Warship was able to resist them.

Xia clan’s Immortal Gu House, Whale Fishing Boat, had its final layer of defense penetrated, over ten bladewings flew in and started a rampage.

"Ahh!" Xia Rui Zhi let out a mournful howl, he was actually killed inside the Immortal Gu House!

The immortals were horrified.

"Look at another move of mine, heartache crying blood." After a while, Fang Yuan’s voice appeared again.

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortals immediately felt extreme heartache, and large amounts of blood flowed out of their mouth, eyes, and nose.

This was a compound killer move formed from blood path and wisdom path!

"There is also thunder note stream." After another while, Fang Yuan’s voice resounded throughout the battlefield.

Countless formless qi currents slashed the sky.

Qi currents weaved into a net that covered all the Gu Immortals and Immortal Gu Houses, engraving lightning and qi path dao marks on their bodies.

"Too horrifying! This is a compound killer move of refinement path, lightning path, and qi path."

"As long as we are trapped inside, we will constantly receive injuries."

"Retreat, retreat!"

Both sides could not continue to fight, they started retreating madly without daring to stay even a second longer in the battlefield.

"Fang Yuan, you have actually progressed so much in just over ten days!" Qi Sea Ancestor’s voice finally spread, his voice vaguely contained shocked emotions.

The Eastern Sea Gu Immortals’ heart turned cold when they sensed his tone.

"Qi Sea, you are still injured, how can you be my match? Today will be the day your life ends." Fang Yuan said, his voice was sonorous and resounded through the heavens, further horrifying the Gu Immortals.

Boom boom boom!

Loud explosions resounded like countless firecrackers were set off near the ears.

Both sides’ immortals looked up at the sky and saw qi waves fiercely moving around. The sky changed colors as if signifying the end of the world.

The enclosed heavenly wind qi wall fluctuated intensely. Right now, the thick qi wall gave people a feeling of fragile paper that was being torn by countless beasts.

Large amounts of powder scattered down.

This was the powder from splitting the heavens.

Qi Sea Ancestor and Fang Yuan had shattered the sky!

Shortly after, the immortals heard Qi Sea Ancestor’s exhausted voice: "Fang Yuan, it is easy for you to defeat me but you are dreaming if you think you can kill me."

Fang Yuan laughed loudly: "Qi Sea, where are you going?"

The terrifying explosions in the sky seemed to be showing signs of slowing down.

Both sides let out sighs of relief. The aftermath of these two pseudo venerables’ fight were too terrifying. They shattered the heavenly wind qi wall, these immortals could not imagine what the consequences would be if they were in the range of this fight!

"What are you in a daze for, attack!" Wu Shuai suddenly shouted, waking up the stupefied immortals, "Qi Sea is defeated, we must trap these remaining people here, our victory is secured when Fang Yuan returns."

"Attack!!!" The variant human alliance was roused, their morale rose to the peak from these words.

The immortals charged towards the Immortal Gu Houses.

They were attacking Immortal Gu Houses with their physical bodies, this battle tactic was obviously not sensible. But all the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals inside the Immortal Gu Houses were ashen and their hearts were cold.

If they said they were not afraid, they would be lying!

Even the Immortal Gu Houses were unable to give them any sense of safety.

"Retreat! Retreat!" Shen Cong Sheng shouted.

The Eastern Sea immortals fled without any hesitation.

The variant human Gu Immortals were most proficient in fighting these kinds of advantageous battles. They chased without resting and with imposing momentum.

After chasing for one hundred li, Fang Yuan returned and attacked.

The Eastern Sea alliance army looked extremely fragile in front of him, most of the Immortal Gu Houses were directly shattered.

"Obediently surrender now, offer up your Immortal Gu and you can still live." Fang Yuan called out, "All members of the variant human alliance, listen to my command, no one is to attack those who surrender!"

The variant human alliance won a huge victory in this battle! The Eastern Sea alliance army suffered many casualties and even more were taken captive by Fang Yuan. Many Eastern Sea Gu Immortals chose to believe in Fang Yuan, seeing that this was a certain loss, they surrendered and gave up resisting.

Although Fang Yuan was the number one demon in the world and was extremely vicious, he had once captured Southern Border immortals, and as long as the ransom was received he released them alive.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"No doubt, this is a very rewarding victory!"

"Eastern Sea’s righteous path is no big deal."

"I wonder if Qi Sea Ancestor died in battle? If he is dead, the whole of Eastern Sea will be ours!"

The variant human alliance Gu Immortals were extremely excited.

Fang Yuan detained the captives while commanding the variant human Gu Immortals to clean up the battlefield.

"Lord Fang Yuan, I am willing to follow you and offer my Golden Fur grotto-heaven!" Golden Fur Immortal Monarch suddenly knelt before Fang Yuan and proclaimed loudly.

The immortals were silent for a while before cries of pledging allegiance came from everyone.

The entire variant human alliance submitted to him without exception!

Wu Shuai was inwardly happy upon seeing this, while Fang Yuan was still indifferent.

This scene was within the expectations of these two.

If Fang Yuan forced these alliance members earlier, he naturally could suppress them even then, but it would not be like now when these people were willingly following him.

This arrangement that Fang Yuan and his two clones planned gave them a lot of gains.

One was the huge external pressure brought by the Eastern Sea alliance army’s attack. The members of the variant human alliance was forced to unite, they observed the dangerous external environment and the deep malice held towards the variant humans by the entire human Gu Immortal world!

The other was that Fang Yuan displayed his peak level battle strength, leading the variant human alliance to a massive victory. This gave a deep impression to the variant human alliance immortals that they could not oppose Fang Yuan, and also made them feel some sort of anticipation towards their future after submitting to Fang Yuan.

From the perspective of these variant human immortals:

One, all their grotto-heavens were facing the qi harvest fruit disaster. If they did not surrender to Fang Yuan, they would not be able to deal with it by themselves.

Two, the outcome of going against Fang Yuan was displayed in front of them, they could not do this if they wanted to live.

Three, although Fang Yuan was ruthless, he was strong. Following such an expert would give them a much brighter future than fighting alone.

Humanity had dominated the five regions for a long time, these variant human Gu Immortals of the two heavens swallowed their anger and bore with it, and were already habituated to their lowered statuses.

They lacked the spirit and state of mind that were possessed by the members of Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven. This was already shown in many of the past battles. The variant human alliance’s Gu Immortals had low fighting spirit and prioritized their own safety.

All these reasons made it almost certain that everyone in the variant human alliance would surrender to Fang Yuan.

After cleaning up the battlefield, Fang Yuan was not in a hurry to count his gains, he sent a command: "We will invade Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven and Night Wolf grotto-heaven!"

The immortals were shaken, once again feeling Fang Yuan’s forcefulness and tyrannical character.

Even this large battle could not satisfy Fang Yuan’s appetite, he still wanted to continue fighting and take down Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven and Night Wolf grotto-heaven.

Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven was a soul path grotto-heaven secretly controlled by Spectral Soul when he was alive. Now that Spectral Soul was dead, Fang Yuan was going to exploit the weakness and wipe them out.

As for Night Wolf grotto-heaven, its previous owner, Night Heavenly Wolf Lord, had surrendered to Heavenly Court, which was known by Fang Yuan and used to his advantage. Wu Shuai had killed Night Heavenly Wolf Lord in Dragon Palace, but to conceal the information, they had immediately invaded Heavenly Court and could not care about Night Wolf grotto-heaven at that time.

Now that Fang Yuan was free, he was going to take revenge and annex them.

Thereupon, the variant human alliance charged towards immemorial black heaven majestically.

The army drew closer, but before the battle even started, Night Wolf grotto-heaven opened its entrance. With Ye Zhi leading them, the grotto-heaven Gu Immortals moved out of their home and bowed to Fang Yuan, asking him to accept their surrender.

Fang Yuan did not start a slaughter, he took in all of them, then led the army towards Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven.

However, Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven was a scene of desolation.

After Spectral Soul had possessed Lady Cold Ash’s body, he had placed An Xun behind in Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven to take care of the logistics.

After the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan, only Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie escaped among the Shadow Sect members. After Fairy Zi Wei escaped, she immediately contacted An Xun and ordered him to flee.

An Xun fled, but naturally not with empty hands. Besides emptying out almost all the storage, he even detonated the qi harvest fruit before leaving, causing Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven to suffer severe damage.

The remaining Gu Immortals of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven had just patched up the holes and not even rested for a few days when they were faced with Fang Yuan’s army.

Against Fang Yuan’s army, Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven did not have any strength to fight back and was conquered almost instantly.

The remaining Gu Immortals of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven were led by An Chong. These people’s souls were not tampered by Spectral Soul and they had fought An Xun before he left, they were all injured to some degree.

Fang Yuan did not reject anyone and took them in as well.

Now, it was time to create a new agreement.

Fang Yuan learned from his previous lesson, he did not establish a connection with other subordinates and let his clone Wu Shuai take his place.

This way, even if a powerful enemy captured these subordinates in the future, they could only deduce Wu Shuai’s position through the clue from the agreement. Fang Yuan’s main body would be secure.

Now, Fang Yuan had completely taken over the variant human alliance!

But this was not enough.

The qi harvest fruits in many two heavens’ grotto-heavens had already become extremely large and were at the point of self-detonating.

Fang Yuan first went to Grand Swine grotto-heaven.

Under all the immortals’ gazes, Fang Yuan raised his hand and released white light. The white light lingered around the huge qi harvest fruit and turned into vast fog.

The fog blocked investigative methods. Fang Yuan was still not assured, he ordered the immortals: "Get back, don’t use any Gu worms or you might disturb my method."

The immortals obeyed.

White fog spread and shrouded Fang Yuan’s main body, outsiders were unable to tell what was going on inside.

Fang Yuan opened his sovereign immortal aperture, from which the Qi Sea clone flew out.

The Qi Sea clone went up to the qi harvest fruit, his eyes glowed like he had seen the most exquisite delicacy.

The Qi Sea clone stabbed his hand deep into the qi harvest fruit and used his qi path method.

Immortal killer move — Qi Jue Revival!

Fang Yuan had learned Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s qi harvest fruit revival method and modified it to create this method. He had used this move to create the Qi Sea clone previously.

Under the killer move Qi Jue revival, the qi harvest fruit started to shrink, turning into large amounts of qi path dao marks that were directly added to the Qi Sea clone’s body.

"After devouring this fruit, I will gain about sixty thousand qi path dao marks." Qi Sea Ancestor estimated with a joyous tone.

This amount was very impressive!

On average, an ordinary grand tribulation gave about seven thousand dao marks, while an ordinary myriad tribulation gave about eighty thousand.

If it were just grand tribulations, a qi path Gu Immortal needed to undergo eight or nine grand tribulations approximately to accumulate sixty thousand qi path dao marks. (The new dao marks from the grand tribulation included dao marks of the Gu Immortal’s main path as well as some dao marks of other paths.)

From another perspective: As long as Qi Sea Ancestor absorbed this qi harvest fruit, it was like passing half a qi path myriad tribulation without any risk!

So, Qi Sea Ancestor could make enormous gains by absorbing the qi harvest fruits.

Fang Yuan inwardly estimated: "The Qi Sea clone was made from Heavenly Court’s qi harvest fruit, he possessed over eight hundred thousand qi path dao marks the moment he was born. After absorbing three qi harvest fruits like this one, the amount will cross one million. My own qi path dao marks is also at this level. When the Qi Sea clone absorbs all the qi harvest fruits in the two heavens’ grotto-heavens, his qi path dao marks will surpass mine and accumulate to an unprecedented level!"

Fang Yuan’s one million qi path dao marks were obtained from annexing Qi Sea grotto-heaven. The Qi Sea clone was starting anew and accumulating by himself. But by relying on the killer move Qi Jue revival and the qi harvest fruits, his accumulation speed became truly terrifying.

Clearly, for a long time from now on, the Qi Sea clone would become Fang Yuan’s number one clone. Based on just battle strength, he would not be lower than the main body, and might even be stronger!

There were many factors that influenced a Gu Immortal’s battle strength, for instance the Gu Immortal’s individual battle attainment, the battle environment, the level of the Gu Immortal’s Gu worms, killer moves, Gu formations, Immortal Gu Houses, and whether the Gu Immortal had an excellent combat system or not.

But the top of these factors would always be the Gu Immortal’s cultivation level!

One thousand dao marks could grant a hundred percent amplification.

Besides freaks and monsters like Fang Yuan, Feng Jiu Ge, and the past venerables, on average: rank six Gu Immortals had zero to nine thousand dao marks. Rank seven Gu Immortals had ten thousand to thirty thousand. Rank eights had one hundred thousand to three hundred thousand.

So, the gap between the battle strength of rank seven and rank eight far surpassed the gap between rank six and rank seven. The gap between the latter stages of Gu cultivation would become increasingly bigger. Until they reached rank nine Gu venerable level where an individual could become invincible in the world, dominating everyone and everything.

Why was Northern Plains’ Old Ancestor Xue Hu was the number one rank eight in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world?

He was from the demonic path and lacked suitable Immortal Gu. The main reason was his ice and snow path dao marks far surpassed ordinary numbers.

"According to your estimation, how many dao marks does Demon Immortal Qi Jue have?" Inside the endless white fog, Fang Yuan asked the Qi Sea clone.

Qi Sea clone absorbed the qi harvest fruit while replying: "Maybe over five hundred thousand."

Fang Yuan nodded in agreement.

From the various traces in battles, Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s dao marks were slightly lower than Duke Long’s. It was very likely because of Fang Yuan and the Southern Alliance disturbing the revival process and causing Demon Immortal Qi Jue to hasten it.

But Demon Immortal Qi Jue had Xi Land.

Xi Land was a secluded domain of heaven and earth!

A complete secluded domain of heaven and earth was a rank nine level immortal material.

So, as long as the qi path killer moves used Xi Land as the core, they would gain terrifying strength, even Spectral Soul could not face them easily.

This was similar to how Fang Yuan had once used reverse flow protection seal to leave a group of enemies without options.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s killer moves were outdated and he lacked Immortal Gu, the two pillars that allowed him to have pseudo venerable battle strength were dao marks and Xi Land. After Xi Land was damaged, his battle strength fell sharply and he was finally imprisoned by Divine Emperor City.

The Qi Sea clone fully absorbed the qi harvest fruit and returned to the sovereign immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan withdrew the endless fog, the alliance members rejoiced when they saw the qi harvest fruit was completely gone.

"We are saved, our homes are saved!"

"As expected of Lord Fang Yuan, he is truly unfathomable and all-powerful!"

"Lord Fang Yuan, my home is in imminent danger, please save it first."

All kinds of flatteries were thrown at Fang Yuan.

Although not even a few of these Gu Immortals were good at fighting, their boot-licking skills were deep and improving day by day.

Fang Yuan then smoothly annexed this Grand Swine grotto-heaven and merged it into Sovereign grotto-heaven.

Grand Swine grotto-heaven was a rank eight transformation path grotto-heaven, it produced boar type desolate beasts, ancient desolate beasts, and even immemorial desolate beasts.

Fang Yuan’s transformation path attainment level was at great grandmaster, he naturally could annex it.

Why did he not annex it before?

It was naturally because this Grand Swine grotto-heaven had fused with a nine heavens fragment and had taken in heaven path dao marks, which invaded the heavenly spirit and caused it to become powerless and dull.

Fang Yuan could now refine heaven path dao marks, expanding the ’food option’ of sovereign immortal fetus Gu. From now, all grotto-heavens could be annexed by Fang Yuan, even if they had fused with a nine heavens fragment. (As long as the corresponding attainment level was sufficient.)

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan began to create compound killer moves once again.

His divine sense was inside the sovereign immortal aperture, observing all sorts of mortal Gu.

He casually took out two wind path Gu worms from them.

Rank one clear wind wheel Gu and rank two jade wind wheel Gu.

When the former was activated, it would create a light green cyclone below each of the Gu Master’s feet and increase their movement speed.

The latter was one of the possible advancements of clear wind wheel Gu. It could form a pair of jade green cyclones which circulated around the Gu Master’s arms like armbands, and could increase the Gu Master’s punching speed.

"I currently lack movement abilities in a large fight, why not use this as a base to create one?" Fang Yuan had an inspiration and fell into contemplation.

Ever since he fought the Qi Sea clone in immemorial two heavens, he had been thinking of this aspect.

Although it was a show to trick Eastern Sea’s righteous path and the variant human alliance, Fang Yuan had truly fought with the Qi Sea clone.

If it were not real, how could there have been such terrifying phenomena? That fight had even cracked the sky and caused the powder of the heavens to scatter down!

In this friendly spar, Fang Yuan had used all kinds of killer moves, most of them put up an excellent performance. Even the worst ones were at ordinary level, at least their performance was up to par, there was neither surprise nor disappointment.

This spar made Fang Yuan understand his deficiency. Although he had already created many compound killer moves, they were mostly offensive or defensive methods, he lacked movement killer moves.

The two wind path Gu worms gave Fang Yuan an inspiration.

In his conceptualization, when he activated the wind path Gu worm, two cyclones would condense below his two feet and they would continuously rotate like two wheels. As long as some time passes, the wheels would rotate increasingly faster and thus increase Fang Yuan’s speed continuously.

"Let me see how many wind path Immortal Gu I have."

Fang Yuan had very few wind path Immortal Gu on him, but the large battle earlier provided him many wind path Immortal Gu.

The variant human alliance members also had some.

If it was still not enough, Fang Yuan could also extort the whole of Eastern Sea’s righteous path and demand wind path Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan had too many options!

Soon, Fang Yuan obtained several wind path Immortal Gu from his subordinates and they were all of rank seven level.

After pondering over it and trying out many wind path Immortal Gu as well as referencing wind path killer moves, the initial form of Fang Yuan’s wind path killer move was created.

After the first activation, two cyclone wheels formed under both feet which could move the Gu Immortal’s body.

Fang Yuan frowned slightly after testing the killer move, he felt its greatest flaw.

Although this killer move would become increasingly faster, its initial speed was too slow and it would need some time for it to show even a slight improvement.

How to improve it?

This was actually a common issue with wind path killer moves. Be they a gentle wind or fierce gale, they both needed some time to reach their strongest state.

But there were naturally many methods to push their strength to the maximum at the very start. If one’s wind path attainment level was high enough, the killer moves could be modified to be extremely exquisite. They could also sacrifice a lot of time to prepare the killer move in advance and let it erupt at once. It was also possible to expend much more immortal essence to increase the strength.

However, Fang Yuan threw these methods to the back of his mind!

Because those were all ordinary solutions.

Fang Yuan targeted fire path instead.

Fire path’s explosive strength was far beyond wind path. Based on just burst potential, fire path was at the top one or two among all paths.

After choosing several suitable fire path Immortal Gu, this compound killer move’s modification was completed!

"Let’s name it fire-wind wheel." Fang Yuan casually chose a name.

The killer move fire-wind wheel had burst speed and could also become increasingly faster, the crucial points were that it consumed little immortal essence and also did not need much mental control.

Fang Yuan tried it once again and was rather satisfied with it. Fire-wind wheel was a rank seven killer move, but was at an extraordinary level that trampled upon at least seventy percent of all existing killer moves!

However, it would be a different situation if this killer move were in the hands of other Gu Immortals.

Almost no Gu Immortal with a clear mind would use it. Based on just the internal friction between wind path and fire path, this killer move’s practical results were lowered to rank six level.

Expending immortal essence for a rank seven killer move but getting rank six effect. This killer move would be lower than low grade in other Gu Immortals’ evaluation.

This was the advantage of over three thousand heaven path dao marks.

It greatly reduced the internal friction between different dao marks, giving hope to many killer moves in Fang Yuan’s hands.

Most importantly, the difficulty of deducing compound killer moves had fallen greatly for Fang Yuan!

If they were ordinary Gu Immortals who primarily cultivated wind path and were to conceptualize a killer move like fire-wind wheel, they definitely would not foolishly choose to use fire path Immortal Gu as another core. At most, they would use some other paths’ low rank Immortal Gu as supplementary, and the quantity would be few as well.

The most common result would be to use countless fire path mortal Gu to reduce the internal friction as much as possible. But with this, the killer move would include too many Gu worms; the difficulty of its activation would soar, the concentration required would increase, and the overall value of the killer move would also fall.

For a killer move to be practical, there could not be too many Gu worms, the immortal essence burden could not be too heavy, the effect had to be good, and there could not be an obvious flaw.

So, creating a killer move was an extremely difficult project!

But for Fang Yuan, he could conceptualize compound killer moves with not only dual cores, but three cores, four cores, and more. Wind path did not have burst potential, so he casually chose fire path.

Single path killer moves had limited space for modification.

Compound killer moves were even more so, because they had to consider internal friction, which caused the number of compound killer moves in history to be far fewer than single path killer moves.

Single path killer moves had always been orthodox, they were the most mainstream!

But Fang Yuan’s current situation was completely different.

Because of the great reduction in internal friction, he had much more room than ordinary Gu Immortals when creating and modifying killer moves. In his situation, the more paths there were in this world, the lower the difficulty of conceptualizing killer moves!

Because of this, Fang Yuan could rapidly create a large amount of compound killer moves in a short period of time.

He had countless Gu recipes and killer moves, so even if his wind path and fire path attainment levels were not high, he could find references and easily conceive a killer move like fire-wind wheel!

When he sparred with the Qi Sea clone before, Fang Yuan used killer moves like sword feather bladewing, heartache crying blood, thunder note stream, and refinement butterfly. They were only a small portion of the outstanding ones in his collection.

Three thousand heaven path dao marks might be few but they truly opened up a brand new world for Fang Yuan!

Since ancient times, countless heroes and experts had only lightly dabbled in this new world. They could only explore a few steps before they were forced to halt helplessly.

But with the help of heaven path dao marks, Fang Yuan made over ten steps, or even one hundred steps, easily obtaining an unprecedented achievement.

"Heaven path is all-encompassing and emphasizes balance of all beings, it is truly wondrous beyond words!" Over the next few days, Fang Yuan secretly created and modified compound killer moves, while leading Qi Sea Ancestor and Wu Shuai to clean up every grotto-heaven.

Most of the qi harvest fruits of the variant human alliance members were devoured by Qi Sea Ancestor, while some were left behind to grow in the grotto-heavens.

Fang Yuan annexed three rank eight grotto-heavens: transformation path Grand Swine grotto-heaven, time path Time Difference grotto-heaven, and rule path Novelty grotto-heaven.

The three grotto-heavens were rich in resources and had deep foundations. They were located on the nodes of heaven veins and had been taken care of by heaven’s will for many years.

Fang Yuan made ample arrangements. He split up these three grotto-heavens and placed them all over the sovereign immortal aperture.

For instance, Grand Swine grotto-heaven’s two super resource points were rolling fall cliff and pin tree snowfield.

Rolling fall cliff was home to a large number of desolate beast jumping pigs. These desolate beasts did not know how to walk and could only jump. When they grew to a certain size and their bodies were fattened enough, they would move to the tallest cliff and jump down.

A majestic waterfall flowed down the cliff. The water of the waterfall was boiling, containing endless fire path and water path dao marks, creating hot steam all year round.

When jumping pigs jump into the boiling waterfall, ten percent of them would die from the corrosion of fire and water path dao marks, while the remaining ninety percent would receive severe burns as well as bone fractures from the fall, barely surviving.

But as long as these jumping pigs survive, they would breakthrough to become deadly fat pigs!

Deadly fat pigs were not desolate beasts, their life essence had broken through to another level, becoming ancient desolate beasts.

Rolling fall cliff had an impressive number of deadly fat pigs and jumping pigs. The scale of the deadly fat pigs produced every year was number one in five regions and two heavens!

And pin tree snowfield was home to grand swines. The grand swine was an immemorial black pig, even its bones were black. Its body was as large as a mountain and its movement was slow.

Pin tree snowfield was extremely vast. Fang Yuan put it in Mini Northern Plains, increasing the area of Mini Northern Plains by twenty percent.

There were over five hundred grand swines of all sizes and ages.

Fang Yuan had all of a sudden become the largest pig farm owner in the world!

As for Time Difference grotto-heaven and Novelty grotto-heaven, they each had one super resource point.

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture had suffered severe losses due to the myriad tribulation. But annexing these three grotto-heavens immediately showed an improvement, the development of the grotto-heaven even increasing to twenty-five percent!

This development was slightly higher than before the myriad tribulation.

Previously, the sovereign immortal aperture only had one super resource point, it was Dang Hun Mountain which produced guts Gu. Next was the dragonfish resource point, which Fang Yuan had invested a lot into and grown to a giant resource point.

On one hand, Fang Yuan’s management of the sovereign immortal aperture involved seizing grotto-heavens like Hei Fan grotto-heaven and Qi Sea grotto-heaven, but how could these two grotto-heavens have the security of the variant human alliance’s grotto-heavens! Heaven’s will was even taking care of the latter.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan’s management also included creating eerie fire dragon python, sand gull soil, and Five Light Mountain. They were all at the initial phase and the investment in them was also little, their growth could not compare to the resources in the variant humans’ grotto-heavens.

Finally, Fang Yuan also focused on raising humans and variant humans but did not put his energy in investing resources on them.

After annexing, the follow-up arrangements were extremely diverse and numerous, Fang Yuan handed these to the humans and variant humans in the immortal aperture to deal with.

He started on refining the heaven path dao marks contained in these grotto-heavens!

As for Qi Sea Ancestor, he returned to Qi Sea.

Xia clan’s surviving Gu Immortals were all in qi sea and cried tears of joy when they saw Qi Sea Ancestor.

Qi Sea Ancestor was still alive, this was the greatest news!

Eastern Sea’s large and super forces had sent representatives to station in qi sea. The moment they received this news, they also let out sighs of relief.

Without Qi Sea Ancestor, they simply had no way to deal with Fang Yuan.

"This defeat is my fault." Qi Sea Ancestor took the responsibility, "Cough cough cough."

"Don’t say that, Ancestor! It was my Xia clan who conceived the plan to attack the variant human alliance."

"Sigh, I am too ashamed to face those comrades who died in combat..." Qi Sea Ancestor looked up and sighed, his eyes were slightly red.

"Qi Sea Ancestor, please heal your injuries for now. Tell us whatever resources you need, the whole of Eastern Sea will support you with all our strength!" Eastern Sea’s Shen clan Gu Immortal spoke, other super forces’ representatives also nodded with no objection.

Under everyone’s gaze, Qi Sea Ancestor coughed a mouthful of blood and sighed: "The important thing now is not my injury. Many of those in the two heavens who sided with me still have the qi harvest fruit problem in their grotto heavens. I need to get rid of these qi harvest fruits first!"

The immortals were immediately moved, the eyes of many Gu Immortals of the two heavens turned wet with tears.

"Qi Sea Ancestor, you are truly worthy of being the role model of Eastern Sea’s righteous path!"

"Lord Ancestor, we, the two heaven’s Gu Immortals, will follow your lead without question!!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Central Continent.

A new time path immortal formation’s activation had reached a crucial point.

"Go." Fang Yuan willed, a large lump of cactus honey shot into the formation.

This was a rank eight time path immortal material.

At the next moment, profound light erupted and turned into countless light specks, which then spread rapidly like silver-white fireworks.

The light specks dissipated rapidly without any indication, as if the formation that Fang Yuan had constructed with great effort had completely failed.

However, when Fang Yuan used his investigative killer move, he saw the phantom image of a pool in midair. This pool was similar to a year essence pool but it was not big, only about ten percent of the size of a year essence pool.

Fang Yuan observed for a while before nodding in satisfaction, this formation arrangement was a success.

With a thought, he opened the rank eight year essence pool in the mini nine heavens. A tributary of the River of Time flowed down and gathered into the newly constructed sub-pool.

When the water of the River of Time in the sub-pool had accumulated to a certain level, it started to operate on its own. The river water passed through the bottom and poured onto the ground below.

At the bottom of the year essence sub-pool was an area of white fog. The fog covered a marsh which had a large number of desolate plants — extreme marsh flowers.

Some of these flowers were in the shape of an erect bud that was the size of a house. Some were blossomed and looked like a trumpet with their petals connected, and strands of white mist constantly spread towards the outside from the pistil of the flowers.

This was the flower mist extreme marsh that Fang Yuan had constructed meticulously.

Rank eight Immortal Gu Regret’s food was the fresh extreme marsh flower mist.

Under the irrigation of the tributary of the River of Time, the whole flower mist extreme marsh’s time was sped up. The water of the River of Time continued to spread over the surroundings, but walls of blue translucent light appeared around the flower mist extreme marsh.

As such, the time acceleration was only limited to the range within the walls.

"Success, it can even be said to be perfect." Fang Yuan inspected several times and was greatly satisfied when he found no issues.

Fang Yuan had obtained the method of the light blue translucent walls from Time Difference grotto-heaven.

Time Difference grotto-heaven’s large resource points were all like this, encapsulated by walls of light, the rate of time inside was many times faster than other areas. Thus, Time Difference grotto-heaven had an outstanding production of time path resources.

Fang Yuan added the year essence pool on top of the original foundation, every sub-pool was in charge of regulating the time of a time path zone. The rank eight year essence pool was the main dam and these year essence sub-pools were secondary dams. The tributary of the River of Time drawn from the River of Time was first gathered into year essence pool and its largest distributary was spread over the whole immortal aperture, while many sub-distributaries gathered into secondary dams and sped up the production of the resources.

Like this, Fang Yuan’s resource production was accelerated by over ten times!

Naturally, this method was not just used to speed up the resource production, it could also be used on Gu worms.

When the Gu worms were placed in a slowed time path zone, their food requirement would fall sharply.

This method showed minimal effect in other Gu Immortals’ hands, the reason was simple — dao mark conflict. The time path zones were a time path method in essence, if they were used on Gu worms of other paths, the higher their rank, the lower the effect they would have on them.

Fang Yuan possessed heaven path dao marks which could reduce internal friction. After he attempted this method, he found the effects were quite wonderful.

On one hand, it could reduce the food requirement of the Gu worms; on the other hand, it could increase resource production. The issue of food for Gu worms was resolved before it even became a problem.

Qi Sea Ancestor left, but Fang Yuan was not idle during these few days.

The blessed lands left behind by the dead Eastern Sea Gu Immortals were almost all annexed by him.

And regarding the two heavens’ grotto-heavens, Fang Yuan intended to leave them alone for the moment.

First, the sovereign immortal aperture needed food and had to annex a grotto-heaven once in a while, it could also reset the countdown of calamities and tribulations, which allowed Fang Yuan to make arrangements flexibly.

Secondly, grotto-heavens were like flower pots that were growing the qi harvest fruits. Although there was not a big hope, if the qi harvest fruits could continue to grow, it would not only be a suppression towards the variant human alliance members, it could also nourish the Qi Sea clone.

As for the three grotto-heavens that Fang Yuan annexed before, they were necessary.

Fang Yuan urgently needed to replenish his immortal essence.

The efficiency of using immortal essence stones was too low in replenishing rank eight immortal essence, the main source was self-production.

But the immortal aperture’s immortal essence production depended on the immortal aperture origin core. And whether the immortal aperture origin core was strengthened or not, it depended on the immortal aperture’s development.

To increase the development, Fang Yuan had to annex those three grotto-heavens.

The fate war had consumed a large amount of Fang Yuan’s immortal essence reserves. Afterwards, Fang Yuan did not have any time to rest, he ran around many places during the qi tides, searching for a way to deal with heaven path dao marks. After finding the method, Fang Yuan entered Heavenly Court, which immediately started the pursuit battle.

Over this period of time, Fang Yuan had fought too many battles and almost all the battles were against strong enemies who were at the peak of the Gu Immortal world.

By now, Fang Yuan’s immortal essence reserves had already fallen below the warning line, he needed to rest and recuperate and could not fight anymore within a short period of time!

"Fortunately, I seized the year essence pool and have plenty of time path methods that are able to speed up my immortal aperture’s time flow to the limits. Otherwise, my immortal essence would have already been exhausted."

"Such a pity that I don’t have rank eight Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, otherwise I would not have to be worried about this."

Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus could produce rank eight immortal essence, its owner, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, had been the venerable with the largest immortal essence reserves! Since Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable began his cultivation, he seemed to have never had to worry about primeval essence or immortal essence. On the contrary, his enemies would often fall into the awkward situation of using up all their primeval essence and immortal essence when fighting Genesis Lotus.

Fang Yuan lacked immortal essence currently and it was delaying his recovery.

To explore dream realms, he needed immortal essence.

To cultivate soul path, he needed immortal essence.

He had lost many of his Immortal Gu and they needed to be refined. He had many low ranked Immortal Gu which needed to be upgraded. The injured Immortal Gu needed to be repaired using refinement path methods, which also required immortal essence.

Because of the lacking immortal essence, he had to reserve the final bit of it for any unexpected situations, so Fang Yuan could only put these tasks aside for the moment.

Only because the difficulty of creating compound killer moves was very small, he was able to barely manage it. Testing new killer moves no doubt required immortal essence, but it was within an acceptable range.

Besides accumulating immortal essence and deducing compound killer moves, Fang Yuan was relocating resource points as well as sorting out the immortal materials.

The resource points of the two heavens’ grotto-heavens that could be moved were all relocated by Fang Yuan. After all, these grotto-heavens were in the immemorial two heavens, they had to defend a vast area and would not be able to defend against enemy attacks in time.

The countless immortal materials were sorted out and stored in several storages within the sovereign immortal aperture. Fang Yuan imitated Heavenly Court and constructed several large disclosed storages as well as several highly valuable hidden storages.

The variant human Gu Immortals enjoyed the favor of heaven’s will and were truly rich.

Among the resources, wood path immortal materials were most abundant. Because Xiao He Jian and Green Forest Great Sage were minimen, besides them, there were also two wood path grotto-heavens.

There were naturally many immortal materials of other paths as well, but what gave Fang Yuan a pleasant surprise was he was able to get luck path immortal materials, and at an astonishing scale at that!

For example, luck path ancient desolate beast rolling cat, after collecting all of them, Fang Yuan discovered he had gathered dozens.

This small cat was extremely exquisite and could roll around on an adult’s stretched palm.

The rolling cat looked extremely endearing with its snow white fur, tender claws, and large shiny black eyes. Its purring sound was also extremely delicate, meow meow meow.... the listener’s heart would go wild.

There was also lucky jade, this was a rank eight luck path immortal material. It let out dazzling light from time to time and contained a dense number of luck path dao marks.

Tooth gap water was another luck path material. It looked no different from ordinary spring water, but if one drank it, it would get stuck in the gaps between teeth; it was not only extremely unpleasant, it even reduced the Gu Immortal’s luck sharply.

"The variant human alliance does not have anyone cultivating luck path. But these people were able to develop a utopia away from the rule of humanity, they secluded themselves from the world and propagated, their luck naturally would be high. Let alone when they have the favor of heaven’s will!" Fang Yuan carefully pondered, it made sense to gain these luck path immortal materials.

These luck path immortal materials were highly valuable to Fang Yuan and they came at the right time.

Because he needed to advance many luck path Immortal Gu but had only raised the rank of Cooking Luck Pot. Cooking Luck Pot’s rank was somewhat too low for the current Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan estimated he would earn a large amount of immortal materials and even Immortal Gu in the future.

Because those Eastern Sea Gu Immortal captives were still locked in the sovereign immortal aperture!

Fang Yuan’s extortion letters were already sent to every large force of Eastern Sea.

After the heads of Eastern Sea’s righteous path received the extortion letters, they sent them to Qi Sea Ancestor, hoping to listen to his opinion and ask him to decide.

Qi Sea Ancestor had just finished running around all the two heavens’ grotto-heavens that had allied with him and absorbed all of the qi harvest fruits.

Currently, his qi path dao marks had broken through two million!

In less than half a month, the Qi Sea clone’s strength rose explosively at a shocking rate.

The Qi Sea clone did not publicize and hid it for the moment, he would hide it however long he could.

"If those remaining qi harvest fruits could grow up again, it would be better." Qi Sea Ancestor secretly hoped, but he knew there was not much chance of this happening.

The qi harvest fruits were produced because of qi tides. Almost all the grotto-heavens were sitting on heaven veins, so they had major issues with this.

In the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan, the five regions’ qi tides showed no movements, which signified the merging of the five regions’ qi was near completion.

Qi Sea Ancestor was also pondering about his own cultivation.

He did not lack dao marks nor immortal essence, but killer moves.

Qi Sea Ancestor only had few presentable killer moves. Although he obtained Primordial Origin’s true inheritance, Heavenly Court was too familiar with the killer moves in it and they needed to be modified.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s ambition naturally was not limited to just this.

He wanted to create his own combat system!

His killer moves alone could bully some rank eight experts or the weaker pseudo venerables. But when facing people like Spectral Soul and Duke Long, he needed an excellent combat system.

The main factor that influenced a Gu Immortal’s strength was cultivation level. But killer moves, Immortal Gu, immortal essence, favorable conditions, and so on also were influencing factors. For instance, special killer moves like reverse flow protection seal could allow the Gu Immortal to bypass ranks in battle. A combat system was also one of the factors.

To most Gu Immortals, a combat system was not necessary. Because the mentioned factors were enough to create a difference in battle strength and decide victory or defeat.

But to Fang Yuan and Qi Sea, a combat system was a must.

Because when cultivation level, killer moves, Immortal Gu and other common factors could not decide victory or defeat, it would depend on who had a mature and more outstanding combat system.

Fang Yuan’s extortion letters made a round before finally arriving at Qi Sea Ancestor’s desk.

Qi Sea Ancestor did not even take a glance at them, because he was aware of the content.

"My injuries are not light, I need to recuperate in closed cultivation." Qi Sea Ancestor’s one sentence made Eastern Sea’s righteous path lose the will to resist Fang Yuan. Even Qi Sea Ancestor did not stand up, who else could resist Fang Yuan?

Pay the immortal materials obediently to get back their clans’ Gu Immortals?

Qi Sea Ancestor spoke once again: "I have already contacted Heavenly Court, maybe they will send their troops to reinforce us."

The Eastern Sea righteous path Gu Immortals felt complicated emotions and could not say anything.

After all, Qi Sea Ancestor was ’heavily injured’ and he even contacted Heavenly Court for them, he did not act indifferent towards them.

As a lone cultivator who sided with the righteous path, Qi Sea Ancestor had already done what he could!

As for those Xia clan Gu Immortals, they rested and recuperated inside the Qi Sea formation. Their first supreme elder was already killed by Fang Yuan, the remaining few Gu Immortals became much more obedient.

They had been anything but obedient before, especially when the variant human Gu Immortals escaped from Central Continent. These Xia clan Gu Immortals had been extremely happy and thought the chance to regain their home had come.

The result...

The result was, the Qi Sea clone went along with and made use of their plan, their last Immortal Gu House was dismantled, their first supreme elder was killed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Eastern Sea, Hot Springs blessed land.

Ever since Fang Yuan subdued the variant human alliance, he had been in closed cultivation within Xia clan’s headquarters.

And the dragonman clone Wu Shuai was representing him in handling the alliance’s daily affairs.

"I have taken note of your contributions, you may leave now." Wu Shuai’s voice rang in the hall.

"This subordinate takes his leave."

At the next moment, the palace door opened and two miniman Gu Immortals flew out; they were Xiao He Jian and Green Forest Great Sage.

After leaving the palace, the respectful expressions on their faces disappeared and were replaced by grief and helplessness.

The reason the two immortals were summoned was because Fang Yuan had taken a fancy to their wood path Immortal Gu.

Under Wu Shuai’s persuasion, the two immortals could only offer their wood path Immortal Gu.

Green Forest Great Sage transmitted his voice that was filled with anger: "Lord Xiao, what do we do now? My forest Gu is the core for many of my killer moves, I have lost almost all my battle strength without it."

Xiao He Jian’s expression was unsightly as well: "Hmph, you only lost rank seven forest Gu, I had to offer rank eight Gu myself."

The two naturally were not willing to contribute, but the situation was beyond their control, what could they do about it?

In fact, this situation had been happening often recently. Alliance members were all furious but did not dare to revolt.

"The list has been published!" Suddenly, an excited voice reached the two miniman Gu Immortals’ ears.

The two immortals changed direction and arrived in front of an information path mortal Gu House.

There was a list pasted on this mortal Gu House, and there were two large words written at the top: Contribution Board!

Looking below that, Xiao He Jian was listed at the top, his contribution points as high as four digits. As for Green Forest Great Sage, although he was not among the top three, he was top ten as well.

Green Forest Great Sage became slightly happier: "Lord Xiao, look, you are in first place! Alliance Leader did not deceive us, he really remembered our contribution to the alliance."

He was depressed earlier, but now his mood had gotten much better.

Xiao He Jian snorted while commenting in his head: "This is just an exploitation method of the higher ups! I did not expect this demon Fang Yuan to have such political skills as well."

"Sigh, I don’t have such indomitable strength like his and my headquarters still have the qi harvest fruit. In the current situation, what else can I do other than follow Fang Yuan?"

Xiao He Jian had outstanding strength and was not any weaker than a Heavenly Court expert. Unfortunately, even with his strength, he could only lower his head in front of Fang Yuan.

He was not willing to do so, but what could he do?

Circumstances often gave people no choice!

"Contribution board?" Soon, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and the rest also learned of this significant news.

"Over this period of time, alliance members were frequently summoned and pressured to offer Immortal Gu. Even Xiao He Jian was not exempted, what should I do?" Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was worried.

"My name has not appeared on the contribution board, this is not a good thing as a vice alliance leader." Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was feeling somewhat anxious.

But he was reluctant to part with his ice and snow path Immortal Gu.

"If so, I need to gather a batch of immortal materials and offer them. I have to be among the top on the contribution board!" Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch soon made up his mind.

Naturally, Fang Yuan could force all of his subordinates to hand over their Immortal Gu. But this action would be too unsightly. The tiny bit of unity gathered would dissipate. If this happened, Fang Yuan’s previous efforts would have somewhat been in vain.

Although Fang Yuan was a demonic overlord, he was also deeply aware of the righteous path’s tricks.

Putting up a contribution board could ease many conflicts and could also stimulate the enthusiasm of others.

Naturally, it was still the same in essence, the strong were exploiting the weak!

On the very day Fang Yuan put up the contribution board, a major event happened on Qi Sea’s end as well.

The Gu Immortals of Eastern Sea’s righteous path had gathered in the hall and appointed Qi Sea Ancestor as the alliance leader of Eastern Sea’s Righteous Qi Alliance!

Fang Yuan led the variant human alliance which became a huge threat to Eastern Sea’s super forces. Especially the miserable defeat not long ago, it had increased the wariness and worry of Eastern Sea’s large forces regarding Fang Yuan’s force.

Facing the bullying of the strong, the weak naturally had to work together.

Forced by Fang Yuan, every super force’s intention to unite had never been so strong!

As for the alliance leader’s position, there was no space for competition. All the clans jointly appointed Qi Sea Ancestor. Only Qi Sea Ancestor, who had pseudo venerable battle strength, could openly face Fang Yuan.

The Qi Sea clone did not pretend to be modest, this situation was within his expectations.

"Since I am the Righteous Qi Alliance’s alliance leader, I will give commands for the overall situation, I hope everyone will not merely pretend to obey the orders." Qi Sea Ancestor said solemnly.

"We don’t dare to." Eastern Sea’s righteous path immortals responded.

"There are three major tasks presently." Qi Sea Ancestor went into details, "First is the creation of an alliance storage, every clan has to offer a certain amount of resources, including not only immortal materials, but Immortal Gu recipes, immortal killer moves, and so on."

"The second task is to immediately create a contribution board and mission board. It will be fair and impartial, anyone who contributes to the alliance from now on will have their merits known to everyone. The Righteous Qi Alliance’s affairs should be handled by people who are qualified to take on the tasks."

"The third task is that alliance members should help and protect each other. If there is a traitor, other members must ally to get rid of the traitor, there must be no conniving."

"Reasonable, very reasonable." The immortals agreed.

They all knew that they could only create the foundation of the alliance by doing this. Otherwise, the Righteous Qi Alliance would only exist in name and would be better off not established.

Qi Sea Ancestor held the first group discussion.

The first topic was regarding the exchange of true inheritances and the communication of geniuses across various clans. Some clans had many refinement path Gu Immortals, while some were strong in wisdom path. Such collaboration could truly strengthen the whole Righteous Qi Alliance’s strength.

The second topic was a discussion on how to negotiate with Fang Yuan and get back the captured Gu Immortals.

All the clans hoped Fang Yuan could return the intact Gu Immortals with their immortal apertures. For this, they were willing to make a concession in terms of ransom.

The third topic was to contact Heavenly Court openly with the Righteous Qi Alliance’s name, hoping to ally with Heavenly Court and establish an even stronger alliance army to exterminate Fang Yuan and the variant human alliance.

After receiving this information, Wu Yong pondered quietly in the study room for an entire afternoon.

Recently, Wu Yong got rid of the Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts, increasing his reputation even more. However, soon afterwards, news of the fight between Fang Yuan and Qi Sea as well as the defeat of Eastern Sea’s righteous path was spread all over the world.

The following developments made Wu Yong feel like they were too much to take in.

Eastern Sea had split into two large alliances which entered the stage of confrontation!

"Lord." Wu Ba Chong sought an audience.

Looking at Wu Yong’s solemn expression, Wu Ba Chong knew of the situation and his tone became much more gentle.

The changes in Eastern Sea’s situation were a heavy strike to Wu Yong’s ambition.

Wu Yong had intended to invade Eastern Sea after uniting Southern Border. But now, Eastern Sea underwent a complete change, let alone the matter of two large alliances, Fang Yuan was openly occupying an area of Eastern Sea.

Wu Yong’s great plan that was just about to start was showing signs of failure already.

"Lord, do we still attack Mushroomman Paradise?" Wu Ba Chong asked.

Wu Yong’s gaze flashed, he was too familiar with Wu Ba Chong and asked directly: "What happened this time?"

Wu Ba Chong handed an information path mortal Gu.

Wu Yong received and browsed it.

He crushed the information path mortal Gu and slammed his fist on the desk. Bang, the brushes and papers were scattered everywhere.

"These cowards, scoundrels!" Wu Yong clenched his teeth, his gaze carrying a trace of malevolent light.

The information stated that a large number of Southern Border clans had secretly contacted Lu Wei Yin.

Their reason for doing this was clear.

Fang Yuan displayed the might of the number one demon in the world, which struck fear in these super forces!

They might not want to be directly affiliated with Fang Yuan, but not long ago, Lu Wei Yin had collaborated with Fang Yuan and ambushed Spectral Soul. So these super forces secretly contacted Lu Wei Yin to ally with him.

This was the way of survival for these super forces.

On the surface, they could not tolerate the existence of demon Fang Yuan, but secretly, there was communication between them. In case something happens in the future, there would be a trace of friendship and an opportunity to survive.

"Lord, demonic forces are rampant currently. Since lord has the great ambition of uniting the world, why not endure for some time and wait for a good opportunity?" Wu Ba Chong persuaded.

Wu Yong fell into silence.

He was aware of his plan and knew its pros and cons very well.

In the Gu world, strength ruled above all! In ancient times, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable led humanity in overthrowing the rule of the variant humans. And at present, pseudo venerables like Fang Yuan and Qi Sea Ancestor were leading the whole world. The result of their confrontation would influence the politics of all five regions.

An alliance of weaklings to fight the strong?

History proved that this would always end up badly!

The conflict of dao marks made numbers lose their advantage.

Since ancient times, it was not that no predecessors thought of putting effort in this aspect. Ancient battle formations and Immortal Gu Houses emerged at opportune timings, but what of it?

Look at the fate war, the main characters were Duke Long, Fang Yuan, Feng Jiu Ge and others. They were all Gu Immortals!

Even Demon Judgment Board, Dragon Palace, Di Zang Sheng and others only served as support.

Naturally, Wu Yong’s plan was not making an alliance of weaklings to fight the strong.

He wanted to plunder enough resources through the alliance to increase his cultivation and battle strength to pseudo venerable and even venerable level!

Developing a force was only a method to grow stronger, it could gather resources and pressure enemies. In the end, everything depended on oneself.

Looking at the history of the five regions, super forces were no more than vassals of the strong. A super force’s prosperity and decline was determined by the condition of their top experts.

After a long while, Wu Yong broke the silence and spoke: "Wu Ba Chong, your suggestion is reasonable. Alright, we will put off the attack on Mushroomman Paradise for the moment."

"We need to do several things now." Wu Yong said while tapping the desk with his finger.

"One, actively search and plunder all kinds of inheritances, strive to find venerable methods so that we can openly resist existences like Fang Yuan."

"Two, spread rumors boasting about Fang Yuan’s strength, emphasize on the conflict between Fang Yuan and Heavenly Court, and try to make them fight each other."

"Three, secretly take part in internal affairs of other Southern Border clans.

Assassination, instigation, temptation, no matter what methods are used, I want them to be more obedient!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Central Continent.

Flowing Silver blessed land.

"Spare, please spare me!"

"Retreat, she is demonic immortal Zi Wei! She is not someone we can fight."

"Such bad luck, we just invaded and demonic immortal Zi Wei arrives!"

The Central Continent Gu Immortals sighed as they escaped everywhere in a hurry.

"Did I let you leave?" Fairy Zi Wei sneered, purple radiance spreading from her whole body.

The radiance shone upon half the sky, most of the Central Continent Gu Immortals died miserably, and only one escaped alive.

Fairy Zi Wei was a rank eight Gu Immortal and a wisdom path great expert. Against these rank six and rank seven Gu Immortals, she displayed absolutely despair-inducing battle strength.

After easily killing the Gu Immortals, Fairy Zi Wei waved her finger, the Gu Immortals’ souls were pulled to Ying Wu Xie.

"Master’s soul foundation will greatly increase once again after devouring them." Fairy Zi Wei said with a smile.

Ying Wu Xie, however did not feel joy and was low-spirited: "Sigh, even if my foundation is stronger, so what? The main body is dead, I am merely a lingering split soul that is barely living."

"Master, don’t lose spirit." An Xun quickly persuaded, "I have brought almost all the soul path resources of Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven, they are food for your cultivation."

During this period of time, An Xun had already joined with Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie.

After urging Ying Wu Xie, An Xun said to Fairy Zi Wei: "Lady Zi Wei, did you intentionally let that transformation path Gu Immortal leave? Why did you do that? Are you hoping for him to bring in even more Gu Immortals?"

An Xun’s soul was tampered by Spectral Soul and had extreme loyalty towards Ying Wu Xie. He would object to anything that went against Ying Wu Xie’s benefits.

Right now, he was staring fixedly at Fairy Zi Wei with a questioning look.

Fairy Zi Wei sneered and did not respond.

Ying Wu Xie quickly lightened the mood: "If I am not wrong, that transformation path Gu Immortal should be Steel Rush Warrior. He is Fang Yuan’s subordinate, a Gu Immortal of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven. After the fate war, he has been drifting about in the outside world."

An Xun frowned and felt indignant: "It was Fang Yuan who killed our master’s main body, he is our sworn enemy. There is even more reason not to let him leave!"

Ying Wu Xie sighed: "At present, Fang Yuan’s demonic might is overwhelming, he has completely subdued the variant human alliance and is occupying a region of Eastern Sea. When he fought Eastern Sea’s righteous path alliance, he displayed pseudo venerable battle strength and should have already broken free from the shackles of the heaven path dao marks. He is now calling his subordinates to return, do you think any super force will dare to block them? Even Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects are turning a blind eye to it."

Fairy Zi Wei added: "Fang Yuan is crafty, despicable, sinister, and vicious. In his youth, he slaughtered his whole clan and relatives to increase his aptitude. He is cold and heartless, be it the fate war or the recent battle against Heavenly Court, he threw those subordinates away without any hesitation. Even if we killed this Steel Rush Warrior, can we inflict any loss to Fang Yuan?"

"Damn it!" An Xun clenched his fists as he realized: "This demon’s dominance has been established, we cannot destabilize him indeed. Not only this, even killing his subordinates poses a huge threat should Fang Yuan decide to investigate it. Since this demon has already recovered his battle strength, why has he not gone to fight Heavenly Court?"

Fairy Zi Wei analyzed while looting Flowing Silver blessed land: "I have a suspicion, that is Fang Yuan’s immortal essence reserves. It is very likely he lacks immortal essence currently. He may only have been putting up a front when fighting Qi Sea Ancestor, currently, he should be completely focused on recuperating."

"Are you sure?" An Xun’s eyes shone: "Maybe we can make use of this!"

Fairy Zi Wei fell into silence once again.

Ying Wu Xie gave a bitter smile: "Do you know what our greatest gain in fighting with Fang Yuan is?"

"What?"

"It is that this person, Fang Yuan, can never be estimated with common sense. According to the previous battles’ intensity and frequency, it is common sense for him to be lacking immortal essence now. But no one knows how many methods he has, how many venerables have provided resources for him, what miraculous methods he has brought back from his rebirth. Even my main body fell to his trap, it was not easy for us to escape, it is better if we don’t try to provoke him." Ying Wu Xie explained.

Fairy Zi Wei frowned, Ying Wu Xie’s words did not upset her, instead she felt somewhat worried about Ying Wu Xie’s morale.

Fang Yuan showed astonishing performances so frequently that Ying Wu Xie was now filled with fear. This was not the disposition of the grand Spectral Soul!

Ying Wu Xie was not just a split soul of Spectral Soul, he was the master whom Fairy Zi Wei and An Xun had devoted their loyalty to, they were looking forward to his rise.

To lift Ying Wu Xie’s spirit, Fairy Zi Wei pondered for a while and said slowly: "Fang Yuan is terrifying indeed. He has always been pressured by all forces. Be it the forceful push by great venerables or the pursuit of Heavenly Court when I led it, he had to keep on wandering around from place to place for a long time in a precarious state."

"According to my guess, Fang Yuan was only a chess piece, and the moment he destroyed fate Gu, the venerables who supported him abandoned him. Not only abandoned, they even want to get rid of him! Be it the shackles from heaven path dao marks or Spectral Soul’s pursuit, they are both evidence of this."

"But now, Fang Yuan has escaped the shackles and killed Spectral Soul. He is free from the venerables’ arrangements and obtained freedom. He never had the time to develop himself properly, but now he has."

"Currently, he is growing stronger with every moment of time at an unknowable speed. Even though I am a wisdom path great expert and have fought Fang Yuan many times, I am unable to estimate how strong he will be the next time he makes a move."

"But, no matter how strong he becomes, as long as he does not become venerable, he is not invincible." Fairy Zi Wei changed the subject.

Ying Wu Xie gave a bitter smile: "Who can say for sure, Fang Yuan might have already become a venerable the next time he makes a move."

"No." Fairy Zi Wei smiled, "The realm of venerable is not that easy to reach. Since ancient times, there have only been ten of them. Venerable ascension holds an enormous secret! All the clues point out that the venerables who helped Fang Yuan will not inform him of this secret."

"So that’s it!" An Xun clapped and said excitedly: "This is too good. As long as Fang Yuan does not become a venerable, he will only be a pseudo venerable, no matter how strong he is, there will be limits. Be they Qi Sea Ancestor or Divine Emperor City, they both can fight him."

Ying Wu Xie let out a breath of air: "That means, as long as Fang Yuan does not become venerable, we still have hope?"

Fairy Zi Wei nodded: "Although Fang Yuan is strong, there are many restrictions on him. Fate Gu is destroyed, the order of the world has turned chaotic. Since Demon Immortal Qi Jue revived, could venerables not revive as well? That would not make sense. Demon Immortal Qi Jue was only a pseudo venerable."

An Xun’s heart shook: "Lady Zi Wei, you once led Heavenly Court, can it be that you have some clues on venerable revival?"

Fairy Zi Wei shook her head slightly: "This is only my guess, I have no evidence. But one thing is obvious; the stronger the Gu Immortal, the more difficult it is for them to revive. Demon Immortal Qi Jue consumed a grotto-heaven and also borrowed the help of the qi harvest fruit. Even so, because of the severe interference during the revival process, Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s strength was not consistent with Heavenly Court’s records, it fell after the revival. A venerable’s revival will be countless times more difficult than Qi Jue’s."

As she said this, Fairy Zi Wei could not help but think of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable.

She already had many suspicions.

These last days, although she and Ying Wu Xie were pursued, Heavenly Court did not chase them intensely.

After carefully thinking of it, although Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s arrangements showed up during the fate war, they clearly were not focused on guarding Heavenly Court.

Under the control of Genesis Lotus' will, Divine Bean Palace and Emperor City combined, forming Divine Emperor City. But during the fate war, it only stayed in Central Continent and did not move.

And the battle not long ago proved Divine Emperor City could move.

And after the bamboo tree painting that Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable arranged at the topmost floor of Heaven Overseeing Tower absorbed many of Northern Plains' Gu Immortal experts, it flew out of Heavenly Court and left without a trace.

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had left behind various methods, but Fairy Zi Wei all along felt Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's focus was on other things, and not on defending Heavenly Court and protecting fate Gu.

"Fang Yuan might have also sensed this so he did not attack Divine Emperor City, I assume?" Fairy Zi Wei gazed towards Eastern Sea.

It was unknown who released the rumor in treasure yellow heaven, but rumors that were luring Fang Yuan and Heavenly Court into fighting were spreading wildly.

There was only one discussion in the whole of the world of the five regions' immortals — the fight between Fang Yuan and Heavenly Court's Divine Emperor City would decide who was the ruler of the world!

Wu Yong only started it, Western Desert's Gu Immortals, Eastern Sea's Gu Immortal world, Northern Plains' Gu Immortal world, and even the two heaven's Gu Immortals had strong motives to secretly give momentum to this rumor.

"This plan is quite good, but what kind of person is Fang Yuan, will he fall for it?" Fairy Zi Wei sneered.

The world's game of chess that involved all living beings was decided by the fight between several people. Although Fairy Zi Wei did not have the strength to participate, as a wisdom path great expert, she had the ability to observe this game.

Flowing Silver blessed land was looted completely and Fairy Zi Wei successfully obtained the Flowing Silver inheritance as well.

This was a metal path inheritance created by Silver Horn, a rank seven Gu Immortal of Central Continent.

It did not have much value to Fairy Zi Wei. Ying Wu Xie and An Xun also cultivated soul path, so the true inheritance's value was not big. The useful part of it were the immortal materials in the blessed land.

After making sure they did not miss out on anything, Fairy Zi Wei and the group immediately left this place.

Immemorial black heaven.

Under Bing Sai Chuan's lead, Hei Lou Lan arrived in front of Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

"Longevity Heaven actually hid such a trump card!" Hei Lou Lan was inwardly shaken.

The rank eight Immortal Gu House in front of her was much larger than Calamity

Luck Altar, its grand dark golden body revealed signs of vicissitudes that spanned across countless years, but had a disposition of being firm and unshakable.

"I brought you here to seek an audience with a person." Bing Sai Chuan led Hei Lou Lan inside the depths of Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

"You, you are?!" Hei Lou Lan’s eyes widened as she saw Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, who was sitting cross-legged on a cushion mat.

The intense reaction from her bloodline and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s appearance made Hei Lou Lan quickly confirm the identity of this person.

She immediately knelt on the ground and bowed: "This unfilial descendant greets Ancestor Giant Sun!"

"Good child, get up." Immortal Zombie Giant Sun smiled kindly.

A formless and gentle force lifted the agitated Hei Lou Lan.

She had just stood up when she heard Immortal Zombie Giant Sun continue: "You are my outstanding descendant, if we talk about who was unfilial, those Gu Immortals of Hei tribe were the unfilial ones. They are cowards who actually surrendered to an outsider — that junior Bai Zu."

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun paused before continuing: "Hei Lou Lan, from today onwards, you will cultivate in Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, in the future, you will go to Northern Plains and rebuild Hei tribe!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Bai Ning Bing opened her eyes and the first thing she saw was warm yellow light.

"You are awake." A seemingly familiar voice resounded in her ears, but she could not be certain.

A few breaths of time later, Bai Ning Bing’s vision became clearer.

She saw Fairy Miao Yin and Black Tigress beside her.

Bai Ning Bing barely had any strength left, she used her hands to push her upper body up: "Where is this?"

She looked around and saw she was in a cave. The cave was extremely peculiar, its form was like a sphere, and Bai Ning Bing’s group was at the bottom of the sphere.

The spherical cave’s inner walls had large patches of scattered yellow soil. From time to time, red lights flashed, like they were flowing on the yellow soil which seemed to condense into blood veins.

"Wait a moment, these are..." Bai Ning Bing was bewildered. She saw immortal materials embedded in the inner walls at set intervals of distance.

The first material she saw was a piece of copper near her.

The copper was firm and dominant, it was inlaid in the soil and glittered with cold metallic light.

"Isn’t this rank seven immortal material domination copper?" Bai Ning Bing recognized it.

She then saw a pure white iron lump not far from the domination copper.

The iron lump’s aura was even stronger than the domination copper; it was the rank eight immortal material white snow iron!

"What’s going on here? In the production area of domination copper, there would not be other rank seven metallic materials. But just a brief look and I can see more than five types of rank seven metallic materials."

"And white snow iron only appears in rooster iron mines, how could there be lone white snow iron here?"

"Looks like even you don’t recognize this place, Bai Ning Bing." Black Tigress said with disappointment.

Fairy Miao Yin said with a smile: "We only woke up a while earlier than you and are also greatly puzzled about this place. This place is too fantastic, it seems to be a storage for immortal materials. Not only metal path immortal materials, there are also materials of other paths. Take a look over there."

Fairy Miao Yin pointed towards the left of Bai Ning Bing.

Bai Ning Bing looked towards the direction and saw a small patch of soil where a dozen or so large round turnips were growing.

"I know, this is white wine turnip, white wine is produced inside it. Although it is only rank six, it is a rare food path immortal material." said Bai Ning Bing.

"Now look here." Fairy Miao Yin pointed again.

Bai Ning Bing discovered a lump of wind.

This wind had condensed into a lump, the size of a woolen ball, it was dark green and its sounds were low and deep.

Bai Ning Bing had obtained Bai Xiang grotto-heaven and followed Fang Yuan for a long time, she could be considered to be experienced and knowledgeable. After seeing this lump of wind, she narrowed her eyes as she thought of its relevant records.

"This is profound eerie wind, a rank eight wind path immortal material. It only appears deep in the underground, even Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals have a huge desire for it."

Metal path immortal materials like domination copper, white snow iron, and others; food path immortal material white wine turnip; wind path immortal material profound eerie wind. Besides these, Bai Ning Bing and the rest also discovered red snake iron, orchid vitality qi, dream soil and so on.

"What is this?" Bai Ning Bing and the group saw a small fox above them.

Its hairy tail and limbs were all trapped in the soil. When it saw Bai Ning Bing’s group had discovered it, it curled into a ball from fear and let out soft whimpers.

The three female immortals’ eyes widened, they were dazed for a while before they said in unison: "Blue smoke fox child!"

This was a rank eight transformation path immortal material, even \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e had records of it.

"What place is this?"

"Blue smoke fox child is already extinct, but this place has it."

The three immortals then discovered purple manor soil.

This was a rank eight immortal material which looked like a patch of soil with purple grains, purple smoke rose above from the ground. The purple smoke could only rise half an inch before it condensed back to even smaller grains that fell on the purple manor soil.

"This purple manor soil had long been completely extinct. Because its effect was too powerful, it only appeared for a brief moment in history." Fairy Miao Yin said with certainty.

Purple manor soil’s effect was extraordinary. A strand of purple smoke, when put inside an aperture, could raise a mortal Gu Master’s cultivation level. And when enough purple manor soil was put inside an immortal aperture, it could similarly raise a Gu Immortal’s cultivation level!

The three immortals searched roughly for a while and found that there was many kinds of immortal materials here. Although the quantity of each material was slightly little, their overall value was enormous!

"Crystal essence is the highest in quantity here. Earth path crystal essence, water path crystal essence, lightning path crystal essence, and so on. Could this be the legendary secluded domain of heaven and earth — Hu Land?" Black Tigress guessed.

Fairy Miao Yin shook her head: "Although \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e did not record it in details, since Hu Land is mentioned together with Xi Land, it should be similar to Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s Xi Land."

Bai Ning Bing smiled: "It is really amazing and mysterious! There are even heavenly crystals here, aren’t heavenly crystals a product of the nine heavens? We should be deep underground right now."

The three immortals continued to discuss and soon rejected the previous assumption.

"So crystal essence is not the highest in quantity here, it is the blood veins buried in the soil."

At every set interval of time, the earth blood veins would shine and flow like blood capillaries had grown in the ground. Because of them, Bai Ning Bing had discovered the flowing red light before.

Following the blood veins, the three immortals discovered its source, which was also their most important discovery.

A delicate little black-yellow heart.

With it as the source, the net-like blood veins spread out widely.

The three immortals looked at each other before shaking their heads, none of them recognized the history of this black-yellow heart.

"But this is clearly a luck path immortal material."

"It is rank nine, the most valuable immortal material here!"

"There are no signs of humans here, the work of nature really leaves one dumbstruck."

"The world is vast, it is truly mysterious and interesting, spectacular and exquisite. If us Gu Immortals don’t live a brilliant life, then we truly would have lived in vain, what meaning is there in such a life?" Bai Ning Bing was full of praise.

Fairy Miao Yin looked at Bai Ning Bing’s expression and sighed helplessly.

Bai Ning Bing was such a person, she concentrated on herself and pursued excitement, she did not care about life or death, let alone talk of any morals or ethics.

Fairy Miao Yin disliked Bai Ning Bing before, but if not for Bai Ning Bing risking her life to fight in the previous battle, Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit would have been Heavenly Court’s prisoners.

Black Tigress said: "This is great, these immortal materials will definitely be of huge help to master."

The master she was talking of was naturally Fang Yuan.

Fairy Miao Yin glanced at her, sighing helplessly in her mind once again.

She knew: Lady White Rabbit was not much different from Bai Ning Bing, she was also an abnormality. Lady White Rabbit’s true inheritance was extremely strange and was a top tier dual path cultivation technique.

Lady White Rabbit cultivated light and dark path, following the idea that light cannot exist without darkness and darkness cannot exist without light. When Lady White Rabbit’s cultivation was rank six, her transformation, Black Tigress, would be rank seven. When Lady White Rabbit possessed rank seven cultivation, Black Tigress would possess rank eight cultivation!

But this inheritance had a huge influence on the cultivator’s mental state.

Lady White Rabbit was pure and kind while Black Tigress was fierce and ruthless, both had extreme characters. Not only this, once the feelings of acknowledgement and reverence were accumulated in the depths of White Rabbit and Black Tigress, they were unable to be changed.

After the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan, Black Tigress was even more in admiration regarding Fang Yuan. Because even Spectral Soul was killed by Fang Yuan!

Hearing that Black Tigress wanted to offer these immortal materials to Fang Yuan, Bai Ning Bing’s face immediately turned dark. Her eyes let out a dangerous light as she took a step forward: "You actually have such a stupid thought?"

"Are you calling me stupid?" Black Tigress raised her brows and said furiously: "You really think I am afraid of you?"

"You two!" Fairy Miao Yin immediately stood between the two: "It was not easy for us to escape here. Our lives and freedom that we obtained by using all our efforts should not be used on strife between ourselves. What we need to consider is what we should do next!"

Bai Ning Bing and Black Tigress were persuaded as they stopped with a snort.

The three immortals continued to explore.

They dug a small hole and saw the raging earth qi outside the cave.

"We are still in the earth vein!"

"What do we do?"

"With just our strength, even if we collaborate, the risk is too high."

This discovery worried the immortals.

Fortunately, this place did not restrict communication with the outside world.

The three immortals easily connected with treasure yellow heaven and quickly understood the situation after the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan, as well as the rising storm in Eastern Sea during this period of time.

Black Tigress was exulted: "Master finally broke free from his predicament and became the number one demon lord!"

Fairy Miao Yin was somewhat worried: "I did not expect Heavenly Court to still have a trump card like Divine Emperor City. Even the powerful Demon Immortal Qi Jue was captured. Sigh, Heavenly Court’s foundation is truly too deep."

Black Tigress snorted: "What is a mere Immortal Gu House? Its methods are fixed and hard to change. As long as master probes all the methods of Divine Emperor City, it will be easy for him to crack this Immortal Gu House."

Black Tigress’ eyes were shining as she said in a firm tone: "I am going to return, master has already sent the word and summoned his subordinates. I will immediately return and continue to follow master!"

Fairy Miao Yin nodded, approving of Black Tigress’s thoughts.

She knew the five regions’ regional walls were gone, fate Gu was destroyed, and it would be a chaotic world in the future. To survive in this chaotic world, it was best to rely on the strong.

Naturally, Fairy Miao Yin knew of Fang Yuan’s ruthlessness and coldness, but she had nowhere else to go now.

Compared to Black Tigress, Fairy Miao Yin had limited loyalty towards Fang Yuan.

What she cared about was mainly herself.

So, when Fairy Zi Wei captured Fairy Miao Yin, Fairy Miao Yin had cooperated.

But the current situation was different, Fang Yuan was now recognized as the number one demonic immortal in the world. Even Heavenly Court was vaguely suppressed by him! Even if Fairy Miao Yin wanted to side with other forces, who would dare to accept her? Would they not be afraid of Fang Yuan knowing about it and coming to settle the score?

Bai Ning Bing sneered at the other two: "Looks like you still want to follow Fang Yuan? Hehe, do you have a brain or not? Who do you think is the cause of our situation? Wasn’t it Fang Yuan who abandoned you? He could abandon you once, he can naturally abandon you a second time, or even a third time."

"Why do you always want to rely on others? This is the best opportunity to gain freedom! Although our alliance agreement with Fang Yuan is still there, it has already been suppressed by Fairy Zi Wei. The world thinks we died in battle, even Heavenly Court is in the dark. You still want to return?"

Fairy Miao Yin sighed: "Bai Ning Bing, don't forget our status. We are wanted demonic immortals, listed on the Demon Judgment Board and hunted by the righteous paths of the five regions. What else can we do if we don't go to Fang Yuan? If we fight by ourselves, we will be discovered one day and be hunted for bounty by waves after waves of Gu Immortal experts."

Bai Ning Bing laughed loudly: "Running for our lives will definitely be exciting. Don't you have any anticipation towards it?"

Fairy Miao Yin rolled her eyes.

Black Tigress snorted: "Even if Lord Fang Yuan abandons me again, I am still willing to follow him!"

Bai Ning Bing and Fairy Miao Yin were speechless.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Central Continent.

Fang Yuan's months of arrangements (in the immortal aperture's time) had reached the crucial moment!

Within a square shaped pool, there was a small pavilion situated at the center.

Following Fang Yuan's will, a Gu worm slowly flew towards the pavilion.

This Gu resembled a round pearl, it was as large as a goose egg, the pearl had countless markings on it that were moving around, they were brilliant like a blooming field of lotuses, or the rumbling of clouds.

It was blood asset Immortal Gu!

This was a unique Gu created by Lang Ya land spirit by combining some blood path Gu recipes he bought in treasure yellow heaven.

Blood asset Immortal Gu's effect was to protect a portion of the immortal materials or Gu worms during refinement. If the refinement failed, some of these immortal materials or Gu worms could be restored afterwards using blood asset Immortal Gu.

Blood asset Immortal Gu was originally only at rank six, but not long ago, Fang Yuan had used the Long Hair refinement path formation to refine it to rank seven.

Blood asset Immortal Gu House slowly flew to the top of the pavilion where a golden seat was constructed.

Inside Fang Yuan's mind, thoughts surged like tidal waves. This step looked simple from outside, but in actuality, Fang Yuan spent one hundred thousand thoughts every second to complete this final step!

Splat.

With a soft sound, blood asset Immortal Gu finally landed on the golden seat.

Shortly after, as Fang Yuan transferred his immortal essence, the golden seat produced an attraction force that fixed blood asset Immortal Gu in place.

Blood asset Immortal Gu burst out with dense blood light.

The blood light was like water as it flowed down from the roof of the pavilion, dying everything in its path; the white jade-like pavilion was dyed crimson red.

After it dyed the pavilion, the blood light continued to spread and covered the calm pool.

The pool water became red like blood.

Slight waves appeared on the surface of the pool. Burble burble, waves struck the squarish rock walls surrounding it, but the waves immediately disappeared, as the pool became calm once again.

Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool’s construction was finally completed!

Fang Yuan wiped off the sweat on his forehead. After maintaining the tense state for over a month, he could finally relax.

He immediately felt an extremely intense exhaustion spread from his bones to his entire body.

"I consumed too much mental energy, a lot of immortal essence was also expended." Fang Yuan was aware of it, his mind was exhausted and he wanted nothing more than to fall asleep without caring for anything else.

He did just that.

This sleep lasted for two days and two nights.

Thereafter, he finally recovered his spirit.

Shortly after, Fang Yuan used his divine sense to inspect this Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool.

After inspecting once and finding there were no mistakes, he nodded in satisfaction.

To construct this refinement pool, he had racked his brains and spent an enormous effort!

And after paying such a price, the constructed Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool was without any doubt the peak creation of refinement path in the present world.

Fang Yuan’s Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool’s was conceptualized by merging Immortal Gu Houses and immortal formations together, such as Regret Pool, Refinement Cauldron, and Long Hair refinement path formation.

Regret Pool was one of the three legendary pools of the world along with Heavenly Pool and Wine Pool, they were all famous in history. When Gu Immortals refined Immortal Gu successfully in it, they could leave an insignia behind. When the Immortal Gu was destroyed, Regret Pool could be activated, using the power of the tributary of the River of Time and the preserved insignia to refine the Immortal Gu again, the success rate was about fifty to sixty percent.

Sun Ming Lu, one of the seven extremities of Longevity Heaven, imitated Regret Pool and constructed a super Gu formation, fate reversing sacrificial refinement formation, to refine rank eight Fortune Rivaling Heaven for Old Ancestor Xue Hu.

Refinement Cauldron was the most proud masterpiece of Long Hair Ancestor, it possessed the ability to forcefully refine Immortal Gu. In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan's previous life, Lang Ya blessed land relied on it to defend against seven waves of enemy attacks. The Immortal Gu of the Gu Immortals who invaded the blessed land were forcefully refined, and countless Gu Immortals were captured like this.

Long Hair refinement path formation was even more so the strongest foundation of Lang Ya Sect, the essence of its trump cards. The formation was extremely outstanding and only hairy man Gu Immortals could control it. In history, Long Hair Ancestor had refined Immortal Gu for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable by using this formation. Before the fate war, Fang Yuan had refined many Immortal Gu by similarly relying on the grand might of this formation.

If Fang Yuan's refinement path and time path attainment levels were not at quasi-supreme grandmaster, he would never be able to think of such a design.

Just the design of this Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool was unprecedented, and it was likely that no one in the future would be able to accomplish it as well. The price that Fang Yuan paid to construct this Immortal Gu House was shockingly high!

First of all, Fang Yuan dismantled the Long Hair refinement path formation that had a long history and was unparalleled; one of its cores, rank eight Immortal Gu Advance Refinement, was still used as a core, becoming a portion of the foundation of Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool.

Secondly, Fang Yuan used rank eight Immortal Gu Regret, which was the essence of Regret Pool, to construct the pavilion in the pool.

Thirdly, Fang Yuan specially constructed a year essence sub-pool outside to lead a tributary of the River of Time into the square pool. To accomplish this step, Fang Yuan arranged three rank eight time path Immortal Gu; Early Autumn, Mid Autumn, and Late Autumn (from Three Autumn Yellow Crane Platform).

Finally, Fang Yuan even put the incomplete form of Refinement Sea into the pool. Lang Ya land spirit had heavily invested in Refinement Sea because he wanted to create a refinement path secluded domain of heaven and earth. To successfully put in the incomplete form of Refinement Sea, Fang Yuan had to use rank eight Immortal Gu Water Refinement as well.

The entire Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool had four main cores; rank eight Immortal Gu Advance Refinement, Water Refinement, Regret, and rank seven Immortal Gu Blood Asset. Thus, it was named 'Four Elements'. There were over twenty supplementary Immortal Gu; rank eight Early Autumn, Mid Autumn, and Late Autumn were among the top ones. As for mortal Gu, there were over one hundred million, their types were as numerous as stars, this was simply unheard of.

Fang Yuan had used almost all his refinement path Immortal Gu in this, time path Immortal Gu, wisdom path Immortal Gu and other paths' Immortal Gu were also not invested in small numbers. Fortunately, he controlled the variant human alliance and also extorted Eastern Sea's Righteous Qi Alliance, only then did he have a sufficient number of suitable Immortal Gu.

With such an amazing investment without any regard for the cost, Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool had the abilities of Long Hair refinement path formation, Regret Pool, Refinement Cauldron, Refinement Sea, and so on. It was infused with various refinement path techniques like flesh body blood refinement technique, seven kill blood path Gu refinement method, Bei Luo ice refinement method, and so on. It could utilize refinement path killer moves like slumbering lightning python, wind grind, reflect snow, muffled thunder stone drum, dragon-shaped blizzard, heavenly light ring, refinement snake lifespan flower, omnipresent four seas, and even ’one step back, sea and sky expands’.

As soon as Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool was constructed, it became the number one refinement path Immortal Gu House in the entire history of Gu cultivation!

There was no debate, nothing could rival it.

"If news about it is spread, Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool can absolutely compete with Divine Emperor City and Eighty-Eight True Yang Building for the position of the number one Immortal Gu House."

Divine Emperor City was a human path sacred land, while Eighty-Eight True Yang Building controlled Northern Plains, raising the Huang Jin bloodline to its height. And Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool was as good as them.

It merged the essence of human style Gu refinement and hairy man nature Gu refinement. With it, not only could the cost of refining Immortal Gu decrease sharply, the success rate had also increased beyond imagination!

Whoever controlled this Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool would have an unceasing supply of Immortal Gu!

"But, Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool is not comprehensive. It is heavily focused on Gu refinement, and has almost no strength in other aspects like offense, defense, movement."

"Moreover, in this world, only I, Fang Yuan, can construct it. Even if other Gu Immortals get its blueprint, they can do nothing with it!"

If a Gu Immortal saw Fang Yuan’s design, they would praise it endlessly at first. But when they started delving deeper, they would begin to curse and feel disdain, they would think this design was too naive and absurdly impossible.

Because the design of Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool did not consider the case of conflicting dao marks in almost all the areas.

Only inside the sovereign immortal aperture, where there were no conflicting dao marks, could Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool be turned into reality.

In fact, as long as Fang Yuan took out Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool from his aperture, this Immortal Gu House would automatically collapse because of the severe internal friction and rejection of different dao marks!

In fact, it would not have been possible to construct this Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool when Fang Yuan had three thousand heaven path dao marks.

It was because Fang Yuan annexed three rank eight grotto-heavens, Grand Swine, Novelty, and Time Difference, and refined their heaven path dao marks, that he was able to meet the lowest requirement for refining Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool.

Each of these three grotto-heavens had merged with a nine heavens fragment before, and the nine heavens fragments contained heaven path dao marks.

Time Difference grotto-heaven possessed over seven hundred thousand time path dao marks and had over eight hundred heaven path dao marks.

Novelty grotto-heaven contained over one million and six hundred thousand rule path dao marks and had over one thousand nine hundred heaven path dao marks.

Grand Swine grotto-heaven had the most dao marks, with over three million and two hundred thousand transformation path dao marks and over three thousand three hundred heaven path dao marks.

At present, Fang Yuan’s heaven path dao marks had already grown to over nine thousand!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Most of the two heavens’ grotto-heavens possessed a vast number of dao marks.

The main source of these dao marks were not tribulations but the contribution of generations of Gu Immortals.

For instance, Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven had over seven million soul path dao marks! With such an amount of soul path dao marks, the grotto-heaven contained a large number of super resource points.

At the start, Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven only had over one hundred thousand soul path dao marks. After it fused with a large nine heavens fragment, it was free from calamities and tribulations.

With the favor of heaven’s will, Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven produced Gu Immortals generation after generations.

These Gu Immortals were humans, although they could casually choose their cultivation paths, most of them chose soul path.

Because the grotto-heaven had all kinds of soul path dao marks, it could be said they would enjoy a natural advantage in cultivating soul path. Even if Gu Immortals chose other paths, their number was extremely few and it was many times more difficult for them to obtain cultivation resources of other paths.

In fact, the two heavens were not places where ordinary rank six and rank seven Gu Immortals could explore.

Normally speaking, only a few rank seven experts and ordinary rank eights could take the risk to explore the two heavens to gather resources.

And after these soul path Gu Immortals died, almost all of their immortal apertures merged with Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven.

Although these Gu Immortals did not have the sovereign immortal aperture and there would be a lot of internal friction when merging immortal apertures, because their dao marks were mainly soul path dao marks, there was much more benefit than loss in merging.

As this continued for generations after generations, it had accumulated to the current number of over seven million dao marks!

Since the moment he started cultivating, be it in his previous life or now, Four

Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool was Fang Yuan’s largest investment. He had thrown in all the resources of refinement path into it, even using time path, rule path, wisdom path, blood path, and other paths.

With Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, Fang Yuan’s refinement path ability had a massive increase, becoming the number one in refinement path in the present world. Adding on his quasi-supreme refinement path attainment level, even over the long span of history, he was absolutely among the top three in refinement path.

But because he had invested many Immortal Gu of time path, rule path, and other paths, the relevant paths’ foundation had subsequently decreased.

Over this period of rest, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress had yet to be repaired, immortal essence reserves had already returned to normal, many Immortal Gu were invested, but because of a massive surge in his major paths’ dao marks, Fang Yuan’s overall strength had not decreased but increased instead!

Fang Yuan’s days were getting better.

Thinking of before, Fang Yuan had lived almost every day in a precarious state, he was forcefully pushed forward by schemes of venerables and hunted down everywhere by Heavenly Court. And now, Spectral Soul was dead, Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven were recuperating, Fang Yuan no longer had a lot of external pressure and he could formulate his cultivation plan much more relaxedly.

From a long term view, constructing Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool was absolutely a highly rewarding project!

"Now, it is time to refine and advance my luck path Immortal Gu to rank eight level." Fang Yuan looked at Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool with pride, he already had a plan.

When fate Gu existed, the ratio of fate and luck in the world was about nine-to-one. Now that fate Gu was destroyed, luck path’s influence had no doubt surged!

Especially when the five regions chaotic war was in accordance with the overall situation; the more chaos there was, the more effects luck path could display.

"My current immortal material reserves have already reached an unprecedented level, I have the capability to refine rank eight luck path Immortal Gu. But it is still not enough to construct a complete Refinement Sea. Hmm?"

Just as Fang Yuan was pondering, he suddenly received Black Tigress’ message through treasure yellow heaven.

"They are still alive and trapped in an earth vein. Interesting, they are hiding in Earth Treasury. This is good, Earth Treasury is one of the ten earths, every Earth Treasury holds abundant immortal materials, especially the rank nine luck path immortal material, favored heart, it is perfect for my current usage!"

Fang Yuan could not help feeling happy.

Rank nine luck path immortal material could refine rank nine luck path Immortal Gu.

But just a single Earth Treasury’s favored heart was far from enough.

Among Fang Yuan’s luck path immortal materials, most were rank seven while a small portion were rank eight. He clearly did not have the foundation to try refining rank nine luck path Immortal Gu.

But using rank nine immortal material to refine rank eight Immortal Gu could slightly increase the success rate as well.

With favored heart, Fang Yuan was like a tiger who gained wings!

Southern Border, Chi clan headquarters.

Bam.

The current Chi clan first supreme elder slammed the table fiercely and said through clenched teeth: "Outrageous!"

This rank seven Gu Immortal, who looked rather young, had pale white skin and dark eyes that showed signs of excessive drinking, was furious at this moment.

It was Chi Bang.

He was Chi Qu You’s son, Chi Qu You had greatly supported him and had internally appointed him as the next first supreme elder. Although Chi Qu You died in the fate war, because he had made sufficient arrangements, Chi Bang succeeded in inheriting the position.

After Chi Bang got the position, he sensed that the situation was greatly different from before.

Previously, he was under his father Chi Qu You’s protection, there was Chi Qu You to shelter him from any trouble. But now, he had to face the pressure directly.

This time, Southern Border’s super force Yang clan had given him a tough problem.

The cause of this was a sound path inheritance. This sound path inheritance was called Roar, it had a long history and its reputation was spread far and wide. It had been passed down since long ago.

The previous generation Roar inheritor was only rank seven but the one before that was a rank eight Gu Immortal.

That was to say this Roar sound path inheritance could let someone cultivate to rank eight, it had high value.

More importantly, this Roar inheritance was in Chi clan’s territory, but was extremely close to Yang clan as well.

After Chi Qu You died, Chi clan lost its only rank eight Gu Immortal and Chi clan was weak internally. Yang clan decisively made its move, encroaching on Chi clan’s border and surrounding the inheritance ground. At present, they were actively exploring that sound path blessed land.

Chi clan had to do something about Yang clan’s conduct. Their territory was invaded and this concerned their reputation. If they did not handle this properly, Chi clan’s reputation would drop to the floor.

But, what could Chi clan do to protect their prestige? Could Chi clan beat back Yang clan’s invading force?

Could they fight? How would they fight? If they could not fight, what should they do?

This was the problem Chi Bang was facing.

"What do you three think?" Chi Bang inquired the three rank seven Gu Immortals in front of him.

Chi Da Pi immediately said with a loud voice: "Of course, we fight back and kill those scoundrels of Yang clan!"

"Keep your voice down." Chi Bang quickly shook his head and looked at Chi Gui.

Chi Gui frowned: "First supreme elder, we need to consider this properly."

"What are you afraid of!" Chi Da Pi opened his eyes wide, "Yang clan does not have a rank eight Gu Immortal, they only sent two rank seven this time. If our Chi clan does not fight back, we would be the laughing stock of all of Southern Border’s righteous path."

Chi Gui heaved a sigh: "Even though they only sent two people, they are famous experts. Yang Yin Guang is proficient at freezing soul profound light, which is very hard to defend against. The other, Yang Wen Kui, dual cultivates wisdom path and information path, he is the brain of Yang clan."

"According to our investigation, Yang clan’s other Gu Immortals are stationed in Yang clan’s territory, but we cannot say for sure that Yang clan is not pretending and is secretly transferring their forces. Even if Yang clan is not pretending, we need to consider Yang clan’s Immortal Gu House as well. Since Yang clan invaded our territory, it is very likely that they have mobilized their Immortal Gu House, and it is being stored inside the immortal aperture of one of the two Yang clan immortals, just that they have not used it yet."

"Yes." Chi Bang nodded then looked towards Chi Shang: "What do you think about this?"

Chi Shang wore a white robe, he was handsome but his gaze looked somewhat distant.

"Chi Shang? Chi Shang?" Chi Bang called out softly.

But Chi Shang seemed to have not heard anything, his eyes looked towards the front in a daze.

The three immortals looked at each other before sighing in unison.

Clearly, Chi Shang’s mind was wandering again. He was the most hopeful genius of Chi clan to become a refinement path great grandmaster, he was called the formation devotee and would often blank out. He would even forget to eat when he thinks of a formation path problem. If not for the clan’s care, he would have likely forgotten to eat and died while immersed in his thoughts.

Chi Shang did not pay attention to Chi Bang. Chi Bang was inwardly furious, but he had to treat him nicely.

Before participating in the fate war, Chi Qu You had summoned Chi Bang to the study room and said to him: Chi Shang is the perfect helper that I am leaving to you.

In fact, the three Chi clan rank seven Gu Immortals in the study were the trusted aides that Chi Bang relied on.

But these trusted aides were unable to help him resolve this issue.

Chi Bang had to make the decision himself.

Right at this time, an information path Gu worm was passed on through treasure yellow heaven.

After Chi Bang browsed with his divine sense, his eyes brightened in joy: "Excellent, Alliance Leader Wu Yong heard of this matter and is willing to cooperate with our Chi clan. After expelling Yang clan, they won’t take the Roar inheritance and will even send their Immortal Gu House to help us. But they want us to reach a further agreement with them, mainly wanting our clan to set up many immortal formations in Wu clan’s resource points."

"There is such a good thing?" Chi Gui was greatly surprised. Wu Yong’s conditions were extremely good and he was inwardly moved.

"What do you two think?" This time, Chi Bang directly ignored Chi Shang, asking only Chi Da Pi and Chi Gui.

Chi Da Pi cupped his fists: "The decision is completely up to you, first supreme elder."

Chi Gui hesitated slightly: "If we rely on Wu clan to beat back Yang clan this time, it looks as if we have profited greatly, but Wu Yong is a formidable character, why would he make an unprofitable transaction?"

Chi Da Pi said: "Did you forget? Back then when Wu clan was weak, Yang clan seized Wu clan’s poisonous waterfall and went after their corpse mountain. Lord Chi Qu You took an Immortal Gu House to drive them away, then Wu clan seized back poisonous waterfall. Wu clan and Yang clan have enmity."

Chi Bang patted his forehead: "Right, Chi Da Pi is correct. Talking about it, Wu clan seems to have always been trying to rope us in. Back then when Yi Tian Mountain’s dream realms still existed, Wu clan brought our Chi clan along whenever they did the immortal opportunity business. Wu Yong is a formidable character, and although my father has passed away, my Chi clan still has value. This time, let Wu clan work for us while we sit back and relax, haha!"

Chi Gui saw that Chi Bang had already made the decision and could only suppress the unease in his heart.

He thought for a bit and added: "This time, if we ally with Wu clan, we need to consider Ba clan’s feelings and thoughts."

"Right, Ba clan..." Chi Bang felt a headache.

Super forces had been in power for a long time and had complicated relationships with each other. It was extremely troublesome to deal with them.

Ba clan wanted to get the position of overlord in Southern Border and wanted to replace Wu clan. There was a great deal of conflict between Ba clan and Wu clan.

And Ba clan had a close relationship with Chi clan, they were not merely allies, they had an alliance marriage!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"My Chi clan is facing difficulties but Ba clan is not doing anything to help. They even tried to interfere and support Chi Xu Zhi when I was about to take my position. Ever since that damned Chi Xu Zhi married a female immortal of Ba clan, his ambition has been rising day by day." Chi Bang’s tone was filled with hatred as he recalled.

He slammed the table: "I have decided to agree with Wu clan’s alliance, as for Ba clan... I will send a letter of explanation and hope they can understand."

The news of Chi Bang’s agreement to cooperate reached Wu Yong.

Wu Yong laughed heartily: "This young Chi Bang is no cause for concern!"

Clearly, Wu Yong’s plan was working smoothly.

With Chi Qu You dead, Chi clan’s internal structure was weak. Ba clan had a change of leadership, the previous first supreme elder, Ba Shi Ba, was captured by Fang Yuan and lost his immortal aperture as well as his cultivation. After Ba De took his position, Ba clan became unstable.

Wu Yong intuitively sensed the crack in these two clans. The incident regarding the Roar inheritance was like a heaven-sent opportunity to Wu Yong, how could he not grasp it?

"Good news, I have good news." At this time, Wu Ba Chong suddenly came before the door and sought an audience.

"Come in." Wu Yong said: "What’s the news?"

He rarely saw the stable Wu Ba Chong express such joy.

Wu Ba Chong said: "When Wu Bei was exploring Space Comprehension Pit, he unexpectedly discovered a large amount of dry clear qi!"

Wu Yong was slightly dazed before applauding: "This is indeed good news."

Wu Du Xiu had three regrets in her life.

The first was the group, Fierce Gorge Seven Ghosts, that Wu Yong had already eliminated. Second was she was not able to refine eight-faced prestige wind Gu.

Wu clan had been gathering immortal materials for eight-faced prestige wind Immortal Gu for many years, and only lacked one main material: dry clear qi.

Wu Bei unexpectedly obtained dry clear qi this time, which was enough for Wu clan to refine eight-faced prestige wind Gu.

"Wu Bei is indeed my clan’s lucky star. Reward him!" Wu Yong quickly thought before speaking.

"Eight-faced prestige wind Gu is a rank eight Immortal Gu, it is a major matter if we are to refine it, we must treat it seriously and make many preparations. Everyone in Wu clan needs to give their all for this refinement." As Wu Yong said this, he sighed: "Refining rank eight Immortal Gu is difficult, truly difficult! Even Fang Yuan, with Lang Ya blessed land’s help, will struggle with refining rank eight Gu. This is a serious matter, we might have all the immortal materials but we need to consider this carefully."

Wu Ba Chong’s excited state slowly calmed down.

"Lord is right, I was too rash."

Wu Yong was able to maintain calm and logic, Wu Ba Chong felt even more admiration towards him.

Wu Yong said: "We will put aside refining eight-faced prestige wind Gu for now.

Chi Bang has already agreed to ally with us, what we need to do now is to pressure Ba clan and make them unable to interfere in this matter."

Wu Yong took precautions and thought of everything, he had already started to get rid of this future obstacle in advance.

It was another round of planning and arrangements.

Wu Ba Chong left the study room while praising inwardly: "Lord Wu Yong has both battle strength and a strategic mind, would my Wu clan even have to worry about not accomplishing great things under his lead?"

Days later, in the sovereign immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone was controlling Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool.

"Rise!" The time path clone shouted, rank eight immortal essence poured in crazily.

Boom!

The blood-like water in the square pool suddenly rose towards the sky like a reverse waterfall.

The whole Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool began making noises, it was activated to its limit.

The blood waterfall rose in the air and formed a whirlpool at the top.

The whirlpool rotated rapidly while letting out brilliant radiance.

After the whirlpool absorbed a large amount of blood water, it gradually calmed down.

Finally, an Immortal Gu flew out of the whirlpool.

The whirlpool dissipated, the reverse flowing blood waterfall also fell down to the square pool; only some blood water remained in the pool.

Blood red light retreated like birds returning to their nest, to the top of the small pavilion in the pool. That was the position of blood asset Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan’s time path clone regulated his breath for a while before moving his will. The Immortal Gu that was floating in the air flew into his palm.

This Immortal Gu looked like a dung beetle.

Its whole body was golden yellow, it had three parts to its body; head, stomach, and tail. its head was like a crescent shovel which had paddle like tentacles in its sides. Its stomach had a horizontal ridge, and its tail was oval.

It had two pairs of legs and a pair of tails. Every tentacle was rough and thick, and had hard black barbs on their ends.

It was dog shit luck Immortal Gu; after having gone through Fang Yuan’s refinement, it had advanced to rank eight.

Dog shit luck Immortal Gu was the core Immortal Gu of Cooking Luck Pot.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable created luck path and left three great true inheritances: Self luck, all living beings luck, and heaven and earth luck. Cooking Luck Pot was the peak creation of the essence of self luck true inheritance.

Before the fate war, Fang Yuan had thrown in almost all his luck path Immortal Gu into Cooking Luck Pot.

This time, he dismantled Cooking Luck Pot and advanced the rank of all its luck path Immortal Gu.

Dog shit luck Immortal Gu was the primary target, but Fang Yuan succeeded in his first attempt at refinement.

Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool had fifty to sixty percent success rate even when refining rank eight Immortal Gu. This was such a terrifying success rate that if news about it were to spread, it would shake the whole Gu Immortal world; it might even lead to crazed attacks by Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court.

With rank eight Dog Shit Luck, Cooking Luck Pot’s rank had already advanced to rank eight.

If one were an ordinary Gu Immortal, they would stop here. But Fang Yuan was far from being satisfied, he would now advance qi luck Immortal Gu, connect luck Immortal Gu, luck plan Immortal Gu, luck inspection Immortal Gu, and so on.

The time path clone maintained the activation of Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool.

Following the rapid expenditure of rank eight immortal essence, the almost used up pool water began to fill up again.

This pool water was the refinement water of the incomplete Refinement Sea which was mixed with the water of the River of Time, and had gone through refinement path methods using water refinement Immortal Gu as the core, to form this wonderful creation.

The time path clone opened the hidden door of the Immortal Gu House’s storage, the luck path immortal materials inside began to fall into the pool.

Among them was the favored heart.

Fang Yuan had already brought back Lady White Rabbit and Fairy Miao Yin.

What he used was a killer move involving Fixed Immortal Travel.

The killer move Jade flow pearl was no longer suitable for the current Fang Yuan because of his enormous dao marks.

But it was of no issue, Fang Yuan had created many compound killer moves and had already created the new heaven and earth travel killer move!

With the help of over nine thousand heaven path dao marks, heaven and earth travel directly sent Fang Yuan to the nearby Earth Treasury.

In the heart of the mighty earth vein, Fang Yuan withstood the strong pressure leisurely and stored the whole Earth Treasury into his immortal aperture.

Bai Ning Bing had already left secretly but Fang Yuan did not care about her. There was clearly no reason to waste time on her at this moment.

After refining dog shit luck Immortal Gu, rank nine luck path immortal material favored heart shrunk a little. Another layer of its surface was refined and merged into the pool water.

Such usage of immortal materials had already reached the peak of brilliance.

Blood red light once again spread from blood asset Immortal Gu and covered the whole pool.

The pool water billowed, the immortal materials inside it melted and mixed with the blood water.

After a while, everything was in place. Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool’s efficiency in processing immortal materials was astonishing.

The time path clone threw luck inspection Immortal Gu into the water.

The second round of refinement had begun!

Immemorial black heaven, Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

A tribulation had just dissipated in Hei Lou Lan’s blessed land.

Hei Lou Lan revealed joy at the impressive gains of this tribulation. She could not have passed it alone, but with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s guidance and Bing Sai Chuan’s protection, she easily succeeded.

"It has not been long since I came to Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, but over this period, I have already gone through many calamities and tribulations; my strength has been increasing rapidly day by day."

"My previous feeling was not wrong, it seems Longevity Heaven really wants to heavily nurture me!"

Hei Lou Lan inspected her immortal aperture.

After she came and met Immortal Zombie Giant Sun for the first time, Bing Sai Chuan used time path methods to increase her immortal aperture’s time flow to an astonishing level.

At the same time, Longevity Heaven supported her with an endless stream of strength path immortal materials. There was simply no hidden threat of advancing too rapidly.

With such an abundant amount of strength path immortal materials, it would naturally attract strength path calamities and tribulations.

Longevity Heaven held the strongest luck path methods in the world which were extremely helpful in undergoing tribulations. Hei Lou Lan only had to sit back and enjoy the spoils.

With the support of the second largest super force in the world and being valued highly by Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, Hei Lou Lan deeply felt the advantage of relying on a force.

She did not need to worry about nurturing and refining Gu, and also did not need to go gather Gu recipes, killer moves and so on; someone would directly send them to her.

Even the management of immortal aperture and the arrangement of resource points were planned for her by specialized wisdom path Gu Immortals.

Hei Lou Lan only needed to ponder on the usage of Gu and train her killer moves.

Although she was a descendant of the venerable, her life was full of hurdles, and after meeting Fang Yuan, she had to endure even more hardship and face life and death situations many times. So, after obtaining the huge support, besides being extremely thankful, she cherished this opportunity even more so!

She was deeply aware of how precious such an opportunity was and how difficult it was to come by.

She cherished every minute and every second of her time, and besides the necessary rest, she cultivated hard every day.

Once in a while, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun would summon her to evaluate and guide her.

This time when he called for her, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was no longer able to watch Hei Lou Lan train in such a self-damaging way, he urged: "Hei Lou Lan, my descendant. Don’t be overly harsh on yourself, everything in the world emphasizes on balance between work and rest. Gu Immortal cultivation is also the same. If you carry on like this and stay in a tensed state all the time, it will instead be harmful."

Hei Lou Lan faced Giant Sun immortal zombie but still insisted on her thoughts: "Lord ancestor, the toughness I am experiencing is not too much to handle. In the past, I cultivated beside Fang Yuan and saw the effort he made. The world thinks he got his current accomplishments because of the help that venerables gave. But in my opinion, even if no one helped him, based on his character, he would still be able to stand out and wreak havoc in a region."

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was slightly stunned before smiling, appreciating Hei Lou Lan even more: "Looks like you are regarding Fang Yuan as your enemy and the goal to surpass. Good, with such determination and spirit, you are worthy of being my, Giant Sun’s, descendant!"

"But, it will be very difficult for you to surpass Fang Yuan, it is simply like a mortal trying to ascend to heaven. I won’t conceal it from you, Fang Yuan’s strength has been increasing rapidly in this period of time, the speed is extremely astonishing."

Hei Lou Lan looked at Giant Sun immortal zombie doubtfully.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun explained: "Although luck inspection Immortal Gu is no longer with me, Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace contains similar luck inspection killer moves, moreover because it has been here for too long, all the luck of the five regions and two heavens are in my sight."

"Recently, I have been looking at Eastern Sea repeatedly, over at Xia clan’s headquarters, the luck has been rising constantly and fiercely, even I have rarely seen such a case in my life."

"Spectral Soul, Heavenly Court, and my Calamity Luck Altar failed to kill Fang Yuan, finally giving him the chance to develop. He obtained the help of several venerables and has excellent character, as well as plenty of experiences from several rebirths. The more time he has, the stronger he will grow. If you want to catch up to him, you will only have a trace of hope if you make a desperate effort."

Hei Lou Lan’s expression was serious as she asked firmly: "Please instruct me, Ancestor, what way is there?"

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shook his head slightly: "It is not time yet, continue to cultivate hard for now."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2080 Fang Yuan“s Luck

Over two months had passed in the sovereign immortal aperture, a brand-new Cooking Luck Pot finally presented itself before Fang Yuan.

Its whole body was shining in golden light. When observed carefully, a platinum light would occasionally shine inside and outside the pot, giving a strong sensation of richness.

The sides of the pot were as thick as a child’s fist.

There were eight lifelike dragon statues around the outer edges of the pot.

These eight dragons’ tails were all at the base of the pot, coiling around each other and extending their claws to become the legs of this pot.

The eight dragon tails pointed in eight different directions, towards the north, south, east, west, northeast, northwest, southeast, southwest.

Each dragon claw was attached to the surface of the pot, the dragon bodies moved upwards as the dragon heads hung on the edge, looking inside. The dragon eyes were shut as if they were sleeping.

Cooking Luck Pot was now a rank eight Immortal Gu House!

Compared to before, not only had its size increased, the eight dragon statues were clear and vivid, unlike the blurry and crude image when Cooking Luck Pot was rank seven.

The current Fang Yuan possessed over nine thousand heaven path dao marks, the difficulty in conceptualizing compound killer moves had decreased sharply. So, even though Fang Yuan’s luck path attainment level was not high, he had the ability to modify Cooking Luck Pot and make it even stronger.

But after careful consideration, he gave up on this idea for the moment.

If Cooking Luck Pot were to be made like Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, then when it was used outside his aperture, its might would be reduced greatly. And Cooking Luck Pot needed to be used outside the aperture.

When Fang Yuan fought Qin Ding Ling before, Qin Ding Ling targeted Fang Yuan’s luck, but at the crucial moment, rank seven Cooking Luck Pot appeared above Fang Yuan’s head to block Qin Ding Ling’s rank eight luck path killer move.

At Fang Yuan’s level, because the enemies were too strong and had many methods, his defense had to be all-rounded. Fang Yuan not only needed to protect his body and soul, he needed to maintain his luck as well.

The strongest experts placed great emphasis and importance on their own luck.

Because it could affect a major part of their strength!

Even the recently revived Demon Immortal Qi Jue had such thoughts. Back when he fought Qi Sea Ancestor and Qin Ding Ling above qi sea, in order to preserve his luck, he chose to retreat wisely.

Fang Yuan raised the rank of Cooking Luck Pot to protect his luck. Cooking Luck Pot’s structure and origin made it such that it was weak in offense and strong in defending the Gu Immortal’s luck. Luck path offensive methods were mostly in the true inheritances of all living beings luck and heaven and earth luck.

The luck path Immortal Gu used in Cooking Luck Pot were all rank eight and were enough to defend his luck.

Naturally, Cooking Luck Pot still had Immortal Gu that were not rank eight.

For instance, food path Immortal Gu Cook was still at rank seven.

It was not that Fang Yuan did not want to raise its rank, he lacked the corresponding rank eight food path immortal material. Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool’s blood asset Immortal Gu’s situation was also the same, it was still at rank seven due to the lack of rank eight blood path immortal materials.

Rank eight food path immortal material and blood path immortal material were not easy to gather in a short period of time.

This was greatly related to their paths.

The more flourishing the path was, the more corresponding immortal materials there would be. They would be easier to gather and there would be many more Immortal Gu. There would also be a lot of Gu Immortals cultivating that path.

In Gu Immortal cultivation, the more Immortal Gu recipes were created, the more immortal materials were cultivated which then added on to the prosperity of the whole path.

Food path and blood path were never truly prosperous, there were also few Gu Immortals who cultivated them. Compared to food path, there were more blood path cultivators, but most of them were only Gu Masters. There were few blood path Gu Immortals, which was not much help in making blood path popular.

On one hand, it was because of Heavenly Court’s Demon Judgment Board. On the other hand, Blood Sea Ancestor, who created blood path, was only at rank seven.

Speaking of it, luck path was also never prosperous, but because Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had created and developed it, its reputation was spread far and wide.

Gu Immortals who truly cultivated luck path were not numerous.

After Giant Sun Immortal Venerable passed away, there were almost no luck path experts in history. Maybe only Qin Ding Ling could be barely considered one.

The main reason was because Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had hidden his three true inheritances deeply and did not spread them wantonly.

Qin Ding Ling could become a famous luck path expert because she had derived some foundation from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, and later, she changed her original path and spent countless years in comprehension before she was able to reach the success of today.

So, Fang Yuan felt extremely fortunate for being able to raise the ranks of so many luck path Immortal Gu.

Because luck path was not prosperous, it was difficult to gather luck path immortal materials. He was able to loot so many luck path immortal materials from the two heavens’ grotto-heavens, which was something that would not happen frequently.

Naturally, the success in refinement was mostly due to Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool.

Without Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, then it would have been impossible!

Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool had fifty to sixty percent success rate in refining rank eight Immortal Gu. This success rate was enough to mass-produce rank eight Immortal Gu.

A higher success rate led to lower expenditure of immortal materials, which saved Fang Yuan a large amount of luck path immortal materials.

If it were an ordinary Gu Immortal who had all of Fang Yuan’s luck path immortal materials and they were able to advance just one rank eight Immortal Gu successfully, they would already be immeasurably thankful.

When ordinary Gu Immortals refined rank eight Immortal Gu, their expenditure of immortal materials would be at least more than ten times of what Fang Yuan used!

Old Ancestor Xue Hu was a good example.

To gather materials to refine rank eight Fortune Rivalling Heaven, he spent all of his accumulations and even squeezed his subordinates dry, finally leading to the collapse of the whole of Snowy Mountain blessed land.

This was still the case when Old Ancestor Xue Hu had captured Ma Hong Yun, which saved him a large amount of luck path immortal materials!

Forget about Old Ancestor Xue Hu, even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had to cooperate with Long Hair Ancestor for Gu refinement.

With Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, Fang Yuan’s refinement path strength was absolutely among the top three in all of history. This advantage was just brought into play and had already shown a frightening performance, the benefits it brought were unimaginable for outsiders!

At least, Fang Yuan was aware that even Long Hair Ancestor, who had once cooperated with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, did not have as high of a success rate as him.

A new issue propped up in front of Fang Yuan, he was slightly worried of being too successful in advancing his Immortal Gu to rank eight; with too many rank eight, he would have to worry about their food.

The food of rank eight Immortal Gu was a lot more difficult.

Back then, to feed regret Gu, Fang Yuan directly created an enormous flower mist extreme marsh!

But Fang Yuan was already prepared in this aspect, his wisdom path attainment had always been supporting him silently.

Fang Yuan learned from Time Difference grotto-heaven and did not hesitate on spending a large amount of material resources and effort in constructing year essence sub-pools, which he spread over the whole of the sovereign immortal aperture, creating various time path zones.

With these zones and the help of over nine thousand heaven path dao marks, the problem of feeding rank eight Immortal Gu was alleviated to a huge degree.

Fang Yuan willed and activated rank eight Cooking Luck Pot to inspect his luck.

Cooking Luck Pot quietly floated above his head, it was slightly drifting earlier but was now stationary as it started to rotate slowly.

The previous Cooking Luck Pot’s rank was lower than Fang Yuan’s which led to Fang Yuan being unable to inspect all of his luck; every time, he could only inspect the portion inside the pot.

But now, Cooking Luck Pot could bear all of Fang Yuan’s luck.

Fang Yuan could finally witness the complete form of his luck again.

His luck was like a pure silver pillar of light, even though it was slim, it was tall, shooting towards heaven, seemingly trying to pierce the sky.

At the bottom of this dense pure silver light pillar, there was a lump of yellow qi guarding it, looking like a dust cloud that seemed to support the pillar.

At the top of the pillar, there were three clouds, one was black as ink, one was golden and dazzling, one was shining with starlight.

Such a scene made Fang Yuan fall into contemplation.

After a long while, he collected his thoughts and observed the luck again.

But this time, he did not observe his own luck, but looked at his clones’ luck outside Cooking Luck Pot.

Among the clones’ luck, the most majestic and grand naturally belonged to the Qi Sea clone.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s luck was like the ocean. Milky white qi currents flowed, becoming endless sea waves.

"The Qi Sea clone’s luck fits his name, they are both a qi sea." Fang Yuan knew the reason.

The luck’s appearance was tightly connected with the individual’s condition.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s qi sea luck not only originated from his name, but also because he took command of qi sea and controlled the qi sea formation. More importantly, several days ago, Fang Yuan had completely handed the killer move unlimited qi sea to the Qi Sea clone.

It was because the Qi Sea clone wanted to create his own combat system and wanted unlimited qi sea to be its core.

"The Qi Sea clone possesses over two million qi path dao marks, has many qi path Immortal Gu along with the complete Primordial Origin qi path true inheritance, and is also the Righteous Qi Alliance’s alliance leader. All these reasons gave birth to such a boundless white qi sea luck."

"But although this white qi sea is enormous, the qi currents are moving in disorder and chaos, which shows hidden undercurrents and threats."

Fang Yuan thought carefully and felt this hidden threat originated from two aspects.

First, the Qi Sea clone was attempting to create a combat system which was causing his thoughts to be in chaos. If he succeeded, maybe the qi sea would recover. if he failed, this internal chaos might still continue.

Second was the Qi Sea clone’s clone identity. The relationship of the Qi Sea clone and the main body was not exposed but there was the danger of it being exposed at any time. Demon Immortal Qi Jue already knew this but was suppressed by Divine Emperor City.

Once this secret was revealed, it would have a severe impact on Qi Sea clone, which was why there was a possibility of the qi sea luck falling apart.

"The Qi Sea clone is my strongest clone, he has rank eight cultivation and pseudo venerable battle strength. So, he has such a vast milky white qi sea luck. But it can be seen from this that the Qi Sea clone has a flaw; there is limited space to progress and grow."

Fang Yuan compared his own pure silver light pillar with the milky white qi sea luck, he could clearly see that the pure silver light pillar was shooting up towards the sky while the qi sea luck’s foundation was unstable, it could only suppress his current situation.

"If the qi harvest fruit plan shows results, maybe the qi sea luck could reach the clouds as well. Unfortunately, the qi harvest fruits left in the two heavens’ grotto-heavens are showing extremely slow growth. It will be very difficult for them to give any qi path dao marks to the Qi Sea clone anymore."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2081 Luck of Fang Yuan“s Clones

Second to the Qi Sea clone’s luck was Wu Shuai’s luck.

His luck had weakened by a lot.

Dragon Palace was destroyed and could not be constructed within a short period of time, the Four Dragon Generals were dead, and even Di Zang Sheng was suppressed in Heavenly Court.

Wu Shuai’s luck still had the flying dragon’s form. This was closely related with his dragonman identity.

When observed carefully, Wu Shuai’s dragon luck seemed to be formed from ants.

The countless ants gathered to form an ant-dragon luck.

"Besides handling the variant human alliance’s affairs as my representative, Wu Shuai is researching enslavement path methods to increase his battle strength. This is why there is the ant-dragon luck."

Fang Yuan observed his time path clone’s luck.

The time path clone’s luck was still in the shape of a miniature River of Time. But compared to before, it was much more vast and the water was flowing rapidly.

Zhan Bu Du’s eagle luck had not changed much.

But Li Xiao Bai’s luck had a huge change in appearance.

His luck had been a blooming flower with thin layers of nectar in its pistil, which signified how Li Xiao Bai’s cultivation would improve back then.

But now, his luck’s appearance had changed into a white wall.

There were three poems on the wall with different lengths. When read carefully, it was clear they were the three masterpiece poems that Li Xiao Bai had ’created’.

Every letter of the poem was pitch-black, which was even more conspicuous on the white wall.

Moreover, countless dark, inky characters were flying around the white wall, about to fly into the wall.

"This is his poem wall luck." Fang Yuan realized in his mind.

After Li Xiao Bai obtained the Book House inheritance, he progressed rapidly, walking on the path of becoming renowned in the world.

Not only did he change his vital Gu, he also roamed the world to collect poems, and formed three killer moves with the poems he created (copied and stole).

These three information path killer moves made him the number one Gu Master in Profound Literature grotto-heaven and also the Gu Immortal seed who was looked upon favorably by countless people. There were even discussions saying he was a talent that was hard to come by in several hundred years!

Li Xiao Bai’s outstanding achievements naturally attracted Old Immortal Hua Yu’s attention.

There were all kinds of indications that Old Immortal Hua Yu had decided to nurture Li Xiao Bai with all his strength!

The Qi Sea clone and Fang Yuan’s main body were aware of Li Xiao Bai’s recent condition, but they did not interfere and only watched from the side.

Back when Fang Yuan had created Li Xiao Bai, it was to scheme for Profound Literature grotto-heaven’s information path inheritance to fill the deficiency in his information path aspect.

However, because Profound Literature grotto-heaven was an information path grotto-heaven with extremely strict monitoring, Fang Yuan could not give too much support and Li Xiao Bai had to move ahead by himself.

The result was that only after Fang Yuan had gone through the fate war, the pursuit battle, killed Spectral Soul, and resolved the issue of heaven path dao marks did Li Xiao Bai finally show some advancement and progress.

Moreover, Profound Literature grotto-heaven was also in the Righteous Qi Alliance, most of the contents of its information path true inheritance could be obtained through the internal exchange between Righteous Qi Alliance members.

This was life.

Sometimes, plans could not keep up with changes; sometimes, changes could not catch up to plans.

Like this, the chess piece Li Xiao Bai had a new arrangement.

So, Fang Yuan was going to let him develop naturally.

Last was the pure dream clone’s luck.

The pure dream clone was still at rank five level, the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique body would attract dream path calamities and tribulations when undergoing immortal ascension. Even the current Fang Yuan did not have confidence to deal with it.

But the pure dream clone’s luck had also changed.

His luck was like a drifting pink fog that fluctuated constantly. But this lump of pink fog had condensed now, becoming a sandbox.

The sandbox was still pink in color, it was very small but yellow sand entered it continuously, turning into pink sand that strengthened the sandbox.

"Sandbox luck... what is this trying to say?" Even Fang Yuan was puzzled.

After activating wisdom path methods, Fang Yuan’s eyes shone sharply as he made some guesses, but they had to be confirmed.

Fang Yuan counted; unknowingly, he had already created eight clones.

Creating these clones was one of the gains Fang Yuan had from studying Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul relied on clones to create Shadow Sect and Zombie Alliance. Fang Yuan’s clones also gave him huge help.

"Among the eight clones, only Fang Di Chang was sacrificed. Huh? Wait, this is..." Fang Yuan suddenly discovered a piece of luck.

This piece of luck was vague, almost transparent, and gave an extremely weak feeling.

Fang Yuan had almost missed it, but after carefully observing it, he showed pleasant surprise: "This is Fang Di Chang’s luck? He is still alive!"

During the fate war, Fang Yuan was schemed by Genesis Lotus, not only losing Divine Bean Palace but also Fang Di Chang.

Such a long time had passed, Divine Bean Palace had already combined with Emperor City to form Divine Emperor City, becoming the number one Immortal Gu House in the world; Fang Yuan thought Fang Di Chang was already done for.

But he had never expected to gain some clues from this round of luck inspection.

"How did I not discover it before?"

"I see."

"Cooking Luck Pot has just advanced to rank eight, my luck inspection method is many times more powerful than before. Also, it is clear that Fang Di Chang made some progress in this recent period of time. Combining both of these causes, my connection with him was strengthened by a lot and I am able to see his luck now."

Although Divine Emperor City possessed painting worlds, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, who had left behind the killer move contented lifestyle, was active before Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Because of this, Divine Emperor City was rather weak in the aspect of luck path.

Discovering Fang Di Chang was alive and strengthening himself, this was a pleasant surprise. But Fang Yuan did not change his plan.

He had no plans to attack Divine Emperor City in the short term.

Divine Emperor City was not a Gu Immortal, its methods were fixed and hard to change, it was not a problem to let it be. And Fang Yuan was a pseudo venerable who had finally gotten the opportunity to rest and recuperate safely, it was a splendid time for him to focus on cultivating.

Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool was constructed and most of the grotto-heavens had yet to be devoured, Fang Yuan's strength would soar without stopping now. Why would he take the risk during this precious period of time to fight Divine Emperor City?

After inspecting his and the clones' luck, Fang Yuan understood a lot.

Cooking Luck Pot could allow Fang Yuan's main body to greatly increase his clones' luck, but Fang Yuan did not do so.

On one hand, the situation of both the main body and the clones was much better. After getting through the previous predicament, their luck was spontaneously rising, it was the so-called 'when misfortune reaches the limit, good fortune starts to rise'. So there was no necessity.

On the other hand, what this consumed was not immortal essence, but the luck of Fang Yuan's main body. After all, it increased the clones' luck by using the luck inside the pot.

"I should refine wood path Immortal Gu now." Fang Yuan once again invested in his Gu refinement project.

As for why he chose wood path, the reason was simple.

Fang Yuan had gathered a lot of wood path immortal materials and they were enough for refinement. The variant human alliance's Xiao He Jian and Green Forest Great Sage were rank eight miniman Gu Immortals, their grotto-heavens were wood path grotto-heavens which provided enough wood path immortal materials.

"Let's first raise Immortal Gu Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus to rank eight."

Divine Emperor City, painting world.

In the newly added growling beast painting world, a camp was being constructed rapidly.

The camp's location was selected after careful thought, it was in a strategically located area and there was a stream flowing near it.

Zhao Shu Ye was standing on a boulder and commanded the hundred craftsmen in constructing the camp.

"Although craftsman Gu has weak battle strength, it has broad usage." Fairy Bi Xia was standing beside Zhao Shu Ye and praised as she looked at the busy work site.

Zhao Shu Ye's head immediately lifted as he said proudly: "It is our Fairy Bi Xia who has good foresight. Craftsman Gu's prospects are much higher than thief

Gu, soldier Gu, and officer Gu. Besides processing immortal materials and constructing Gu houses, it can also refine Gu!"

Fairy Bi Xia nodded: "Yes, if not for your craftsman Gu, how could we have constructed ten camps and explored deeper into the growling beast painting world. But, how can you control so many craftsmen alone? This is an enormous burden to the mind. Did you use organization Gu?"

Organization Gu was a type of human path Gu worm which allowed human Gu to form a group. Fang Di Chang’s sect token Gu was also of this type.

Zhao Shu Ye laughed heartily and did not hide it: "Right, I used labor union token Gu and constructed a labor union. I am carrying union head Gu and gave supervisor Gu to twelve or so high ranked craftsman Gu. I have given one vice union head Gu out as well and still have three in my hand. No need to hurry, as my labor union continues to grow, they will have ample scope to show their abilities."

The two were discussing when the emergency bugle was played.

Fairy Bi Xia’s expression had a slight change: "Beast groups came to attack again."

Zhao Shu Ye said indifferently: "With Xiao Qi Xing and others here, we don’t need to worry."

Sure enough, at the next moment, Xiao Qi Xing’s voice spread throughout the camp: "All forces, attack!"

Thump thump thump thump thump...

There was a series of footsteps, and as the white smoke was blown away by the wind, the wide camp was filled with soldiers.

Soldier Gu were in the highest number, there was the small group leader level sergeant Gu, lieutenant Gu, the higher ranked captain Gu and even chief captain Gu were used.

The size of Xiao Qi Xing’s army had increased again in this period of time.

Divine Emperor City was truly the sacred land of human path cultivation!

The army charged towards the beast tide, both sides collided like huge sea waves.

After the stalemate lasted for a while, the orderly battle lines began to show uneven gaps; a large number of wild beasts and soldiers had died in the most intense areas. Immediately after, these gaps were filled by soldiers and beasts.

Roar—!

Several powerful beasts appeared. Their size was clearly larger than others, like fortresses rampaging on the battlefield.

Xiao Qi Xing’s expression showed a trace of seriousness: "The deeper we go in, the stronger the beast groups are. Everyone, please make your moves."

"Alright." Chen Da Jiang, Gu Ting, and the rest began to attack.

This large battle lasted for an hour, the beast tide retreated, and there were casualties in Xiao Qi Xing’s group as well.

After half a day, the camp’s construction was finished. The supply group along with merchants, peddlers, citizens, and even beggars settled in the camp.

These camps were like the strongest nails that were firmly fixed in their position, becoming the support for the ten children of human path to explore deeper.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

“Sect leader.”

“Sect leader.”

Fang Di Chang walked to a hidden corner of the camp where he was greeted by two to three beggars.

Fang Di Chang also had a beggar’s appearance with ragged clothes and foul odor coming off of him.

The ten children of human path organized a large army and entered the newly appeared growling beast painting world, playing the role of pioneers. At every set interval of distance, they would construct a stable camp before the logistics and support came to fill the camp, giving ample supplies to the army led by the ten children of human path.

Fang Di Chang had been following in secret and also mobilized Beggar Sect to look for an opportunity.

“How is the situation?” Fang Di Chang asked.

“Our sect brothers have been following the pioneering army.”

“Sect leader, the situation is good. We gathered many wild beast corpses and valuable skin and fur. We are going to be rich!”

“It is just that we got into a conflict with some merchants and guards because of this.”

Fang Di Chang frowned: “What are the casualties?”

His Beggar Sect developed quickly, its members were not only the human path Gu worms he used, there were also many of Divine Emperor City’s native beggars.

Hearing the number of casualties, Fang Di Chang’s frown became deeper.

“Although Beggar Sect is easy to grow, beggar Gu are the cheapest human path Gu worms with very low battle strength. They are disadvantaged when facing merchants, guards, and others. Only by uniting and forming a numbers advantage will they not suffer losses.”

Fang Di Chang sighed inwardly, Beggar Sect seemed to be enormous but it did not have much strength. It was not reliable to use Beggar Sect to deal with the ten children of human path in the future.

Fang Di Chang entered the tenth camp, but the ten children of human path had already marched even further and were constructing the twelfth camp.

“I can only rely on the beast tide now. The deeper we enter growling beast painting world, the stronger the beasts become.”

Fang Di Chang’s only hope was for the beast tides to defeat the ten children of human path.

Not only defeat, it would be even better if they suffered serious loss with casualties. Only then would Fang Di Chang have an opportunity to exploit.

“I can do nothing about this, my current strength is too low. The only thing I can use is Beggar Sect. The ten children of human path are all Gu Masters and possess primeval essence, they can only maintain their human path Gu worms for some time. But I am using Shen Shang’s immortal essence, which is akin to unlimited primeval essence, so I can maintain these beggar Gu all the time.”

As Fang Di Chang thought up to this point, his gaze suddenly darkened and a feeling of weakness spread from the depths of his body.

Fang Di Chang quickly took out human will Gu and placed it in front of his nose, breathing in deeply.

A gust of human will was absorbed into his body and merged with his will.

Fang Di Chang’s body was formed from a beggar Gu, it did not have a soul and only a will. And a will was difficult to maintain and would be expended rapidly when thinking.

Fortunately, in Divine Emperor City’s painting world, there was human will Gu.

Human will Gu produced human will, which could change into any form of will. With its help, Fang Di Chang’s will could continue to exist and be active.

At this time, in the depths of the growling beast painting world.

A lifelike will was floating in the air.

He was wearing a green and white robe, he had a gentle demeanor and had a smile on his face; he was Genesis Lotus’ will!

And below him, Mao Li Qiu was lying on the ground in a curled up position. It was bound by a huge formless force, making it unable to even budge.

Not only this, another powerful force was constantly extracting its dao marks.

“Dog shit Genesis Lotus, release me and fight me if you have the guts!” Mao Li Qiu shouted.

Genesis Lotus’ will shook his head: “Mao Li Qiu, are you still not conceding? You are in a hopeless situation, unless Giant Sun Immortal Venerable revives and comes to save you, your death is certain.”

“And you yourself are aware that there is no hope for that. Your only chance at survival is to surrender.”

“Otherwise, as time passes, your strength will continue to fall. Until… you die.”

Genesis Lotus’ will urged, his voice was persuasive and his expression was kind.

Mao Li Qiu, however, roared in fury: “Then so be it, I don’t want it, you can take all my dao marks!!”

Genesis Lotus’ will was astonished.

At the next moment, Mao Li Qiu not only released all his defense but also cooperated with the absorption force, abandoning his dao marks.

Amidst the dazzling profound light, countless dao marks spread towards the surroundings and entered growling beast painting world.

Some dao marks fell to the ground, turning into giant beasts of all kinds of sizes and shapes; some dao marks flew to the sky, condensing together into vicious birds that covered the sky.

The painting world was extremely profound, it could collect external dao marks and paint them into all kinds of birds and beasts.

But at this moment, with Mao Li Qiu’s full cooperation, the painted beasts surged in amount and soon surpassed the safety boundary.

“Oh no.” The expression of Genesis Lotus’ will changed, not having expected Mao Li Qiu to be so impulsive.

It was suppressed in the painting world, although it had a way to attack, it still had enough strength to defend. If it defended with all its strength, it could last for a long time. Therefore, Genesis Lotus’ will came to persuade it to surrender.

To Mao Li Qiu, the most sensible path would be to let the painting world wear down its strength bit by bit while holding on for as long as possible.

Like what Demon Immortal Qi Jue was doing; he was suppressed by Divine Emperor City and could not break free on his own, but he placed his hopes on the future.

Who could be certain of the future?

But Mao Li Qiu did not follow this logic, it went against the plan of Genesis Lotus’ will.

An unprecedented violent beast tide formed and rushed madly towards the army of the ten children of human path!

The ten children of human path had a huge change in their expressions the moment they saw the beast tide.

“Retreat, this beast tide is too fierce!”

“Even if we use all our strength, we are not their match.”

“Retreat, the urgent matter is to preserve our energy for later.”

The ten children of human path were all elites, they retreated without hesitation.

But retreating was not easy, the beast tide was like a tsunami that threatened to drown the world. Many birds moved faster than the beasts and pestered the pioneering army.

The ten children of human path fought a bloody battle and were finally able to carve a path out.

When they reached the eleventh camp, the whole army was reduced by half, they suffered immense losses!

The beast tide continued to rush forward as if it was endless!

The camp was constructed properly and had thick defense, but it was quickly showing signs of collapsing under the beast tide’s charge.

“Heavens, looks like we have completely angered these beasts.”

“This beast tide is so fierce, even if we add all the previous beast groups, they are not even one-tenth of this.”

“Retreat!”

The ten children of human path retreated to the tenth camp.

Fang Di Chang had already left earlier.

He had already received the information, and understanding the strength of the beast tide, he knew the tenth camp was definitely going to collapse.

Although he wanted to look for an opportunity to retaliate, he did not want to disregard his own safety. In fact, with just Beggar Sect’s strength, he might not be able to get revenge even if he staked his life.

The tenth camp also fell and was run over by the beast tide.

The ten children of human path could only retreat again and again, the beast tide also paid the price, but the scale was truly too large. It could completely bear the price!

Finally, the terrifying beast tide chased away all the humans.

The painstakingly built camps were destroyed with not even one remaining.

Not even ten percent of the troops following the ten children of human path survived, the other residents of the painting world faced even more severe losses.

The surviving group of people were in an extremely miserable state, they were all shocked and terrified.

The city gate closed shut. The city guards looked solemn, the beast tide had arrived in front of the city!

The ferocious beasts did not stop and began to attack the city.

The offensive and defensive battle lasted for three and three nights, the city was actually on the losing end. Many times, giant beasts directly climbed the city walls and carved a path of blood on their way to the inner areas, causing massive casualties.

At the crucial moment, large numbers of divine bean soldiers appeared and participated in the defense, beating back the beast tide.

“The divine bean soldiers are working for us!”

“Right. This was Divine Bean Palace’s killer move, and after we succeeded in slaying the immortal, the divine bean soldiers became our helpers.”

The ten children of human path were shocked and joyous, as well as deeply regretful.

Their losses were too severe this time, almost all their previous accumulations were gone. The only fortunate thing was that none of them had died.

Fang Di Chang had already left this city to a much further area.

Beggar Sect’s losses were also big.

The crushing defeat that Fang Di Chang hoped for had happened, but this level surpassed his expectations. Still, the ten children of human path helped each other and were united, he did not find any chance to attack them.

The beast tide disappeared, the large number of wild beasts returned to growling beast painting world. They scattered everywhere, making the difficulty of exploring growling beast painting world much higher than before.

The painting world was like a huge beast that was licking its wound. The claw that had stretched into growling beast painting world earlier had almost shattered.

“I did not expect growling beast painting world to be so dangerous, it can be deduced the other painting should also be at a similar level.” Shen Shang found Fang Di Chang.

The two exchanged information.

Fang Di Chang informed Shen Shang about the intel collected by Beggar Sect, for instance, the losses of the ten children of human path, as well as Ye Fan and Hong Yi’s performance in this expedition.

And Shen Shang informed Fang Di Chang of a huge discovery.

Shen Shang was the person who had explored the deepest and he witnessed the scene of the beast tide transformation!

“Using dao marks to paint, sure enough, painting path’s methods are mysterious and exceptional. But if so….” Fang Di Chang analyzed, “It seems like growling beast painting world is suppressing a great enemy of Heavenly Court in its depths. The battle between the beast tide and the humans is essentially a method to weaken this enemy and increase the suppression.”

Shen Shang approved of Fang Di Chang’s analysis as he said: “I wonder who is being suppressed inside? They are at least a rank eight Gu Immortal! The enemy of an enemy is a friend, we might have a chance of cooperating.”

“The losses to the army were severe this time, only one-tenth survived. In a short period of time, it should not be possible to organize an exploration army. Do we use this chance to go to the depths of the painting?” Fang Di Chang shook his head, “No, those beasts don’t care about anyone.”

Shen Shang nodded: “The gap between immortal and mortal is not large in this painting world. It seems we can only wait for the exploration army to be organized again. We can then take the chance to go deeper.”

When the large battle between the humans and beasts had settled in the painting world, Fang Yuan had secretly arrived in Mushroomman Paradise.

Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was successfully raised to rank eight and Fang Yuan also created a large number of compound killer moves.

Over on the Qi Sea clone’s end, the Qi Sea clone contacted Heavenly Court again and again to organize an alliance army to attack Fang Yuan’s variant human alliance. But although Heavenly Court had agreed, they did not show any signs of taking action.

Such an attitude made Fang Yuan believe the severity of the situation.

Mushroomman Paradise’s entrance opened, Lu Wei Yin personally welcomed Fang Yuan to the depths of the blessed land.

They had just sat down when Fang Yuan asked: “Is Spectral Soul still alive?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2083 - Lu Wei Yin’s Invitation to Tea

Gurgle gurgle!

The tea was boiling and was letting out yellowish-brown strands of steam.

In the small wooden cabin atop the mountain, experts that could influence the world were sitting in front of a small tea table.

One was the number one demon in the current world — Gu Yue Fang Yuan.

The other was Southern Border’s Paradise Earth inheritor Lu Wei Yin. His comprehensive battle strength might not reach pseudo venerable level, but his defensive prowess was enough to compete against a pseudo venerable.

The fresh mountain air blew in from the open window, mixing with the fragrance of the tea.

Fang Yuan gazed afar, outside the window were tall mountains and clean rivers, looking like utopia. Cranes flew, apes shrieked, desolate beasts and plants were abundant and docile.

There were treehouses and villages around the mountains, lots of commotion could be heard from chickens and dogs, there were columns of smoke rising from houses, it was a serene and tranquil atmosphere.

In the sky, there were many floating mountains. These mountains were made from float soil and could stay in the sky, there were many specialties in each mountain, their environments varied. Some had long green vines that extended like hair. Some had drizzles and beautiful rainbows. Some had waterfalls with huge crashing torrents that gathered in huge pools.

And this mountain that Fang Yuan was on stood majestically on the ground and was the tallest mountain in Mushroomman Paradise.

Fang Yuan had just sat down when he asked Lu Wei Yin: Was Spectral Soul still alive?

Lu Wei Yin only smiled and did not reply, instead concentrating on making tea.

The tea was prepared.

This was extreme serene mind tea, it was created with rank eight immortal materials. The tea fragrance was refreshing and seemed to be mixed with the smell of soil after rain.

The tea, the location, and Mushroomman Paradise itself seemed to complement each other. Right now, they were not distant immortals who were high and mighty, but were instead experiencing the joy of an ordinary farmer’s life and the tranquil state of mind.

“Please.” Lu Wei Yin handed the tea cup to Fang Yuan with both hands.

The tea had been boiling hot just earlier, but in just a few breaths of time, the steam disappeared and the tea turned into cooled tea .

Fang Yuan took a sip, but Lu Wei Yin directly lifted the large bowl-sized cup and took huge mouthfuls.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone, he gained some insight and copied Lu Wei Yin’s drinking method.

Gulp.

His Adam’s apple moved up and down as Fang Yuan took a large mouthful of tea.

This time, Fang Yuan had a very different feeling. The tea was not ice cold, but there was a gentle coolness that seeped into Fang Yuan’s organs and intestines. His internal heatiness was swept away, the tea was mellow and refreshing along with a trace of sweetness.

Gulp, gulp, Fang Yuan finished the whole cup of tea.

“Good tea.” He had a peculiar expression when he placed the tea cup down.

That one bowl of tea had added one thousand earth path dao marks in his body!

When a Gu Immortal passes a heavenly tribulation, they would only obtain seven hundred and fifty dao marks. And earthly calamities normally gave two hundred and fifty.

This extreme serene mind tea actually increased so many dao marks. It was akin to a Gu Immortal risking their life to pass a heavenly tribulation and an earthly calamity.

Lu Wei Yin spoke slowly: “This Mushroomman blessed land received Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s help and turned into a paradise, thereby being free from calamities and tribulations. Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable also left behind his Virtue true inheritance here, so this Mushroomman Paradise’s name became Virtue Paradise.”

“Before Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable became venerable, he cultivated and studied in this place. When he became venerable, he changed this place into Virtue Paradise and lived here for some time. Lord Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable created extreme serene mind tea during this period of time.”

“Although food path was passed down, it was kept secretive by Spectral Soul and was almost never exposed to outsiders. Lord Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable spent his life mending the disaster caused by Spectral Soul and brought order to the chaotic world. Thus, he did a deep research on food path.”

“He left behind many of his food path gains in Virtue true inheritance. In his view, food path had huge potential but there were too few people cultivating it. If it was truly developed, it could bring fortune to the world. For instance, this extreme serene mind tea is essentially a food path killer move formed from expending rank eight immortal materials. So, it can add earth path dao marks.”

“The talent of a venerable is truly deep and unfathomable.” Fang Yuan praised.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable created the killer moves suffering loss is a blessing and all life is bitter to counter Spectral Soul’s food path methods. These two methods played a crucial role during the ambush of Spectral Soul.

But Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable did not stop here, he pushed food path to an even higher level!

In the present five regions Gu Immortal world, almost all the tea and wine were incomplete food path Gu recipes. This was already acknowledged by Gu Immortals.

Just drinking wine or tea was merely to delight the tastebuds and show off one’s wealth, or maybe display the results of one’s refinement path improvement.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, however, completed this aspect and turned tea and wine into food path killer moves. Like this, food path finally showed its own unique splendor!

“Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s food path methods can change tea and wine into killer moves. After tasting the food, Gu cultivators can increase their dao marks. This is a method that can change the entire structure of the Gu Immortal world!” Fang Yuan realized.

The influence of this method was enormous!

In history, the main source of dao marks was to undergo tribulations.

But this food path method broke away from this situation.

Fang Yuan had eat strength Immortal Gu and could do this. But Immortal Gu were unique, while Paradise Earth’s food path method could be learned and referenced to create a number of other similar killer moves.

Eat strength Immortal Gu could not be popularized, but killer moves could be spread everywhere, these were two different concepts!

Fang Yuan’s gaze turned deep and dark.

Just this extreme serene mind tea was enough to show Lu Wei Yin’s deep accumulation and foundation.

This Virtue Paradise had deep foundation and did not lack rank eight earth path immortal materials. Lu Wei Yin could simply use this tea to accumulate earth path dao marks beyond common sense.

It was no wonder he could fight Spectral Soul.

Fang Yuan looked beyond the window once again and at this Mushroomman Paradise. His previous evaluation of this place was raised by several times.

This food path method was extremely beneficial to Gu Immortal cultivation. Virtue Paradise had many Gu Immortals, these Gu Immortals’ strength very likely surpassed other same ranked immortals.

But, since the start, Lu Wei Yin had only moved around by himself and did not reveal these other Gu Immortals.

This person’s shrewdness and patience made Fang Yuan have a different view of him.

Sensing the deep meaning in Fang Yuan’s gaze, Lu Wei Yin said modestly: “Fang Yuan, do not overestimate me and this Virtue Paradise. Although we have this food path method, the cost to use it is truly high. Virtue Paradise produces large quantities of earth path resources, but besides me, who cultivates earth path mainly, most of the Gu Immortals here are mushroommen and what they cultivate is poison path. There are also a few human Gu Immortals who cultivate wood path and water path.”

“This food path method’s efficiency is not that high. For instance, this bowl of extreme serene mind tea used a large number of rank eight earth path immortal materials to only give several hundred earth path dao marks.”

“Of course, Fang Yuan, you have the sovereign immortal body which does not have conflicting dao marks, so your gains should be greater than normal.”

Lu Wei Yin concluded: “Even Lord Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable said in his last words that this food path method is not even worth mentioning when compared to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, Red Lotus Demon Venerable, and other venerables.”

Venerable methods were extremely majestic and could change the world.

For instance, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable led humanity’s uprising and founded Heavenly Court. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable created wisdom path and tricked heaven’s will, setting the foundation for Heavenly Court to stand for countless years.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left behind his bloodline and created Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, taking the whole of Northern Plains as his courtyard.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable made arrangements that spanned over one million years to destroy fate Gu.

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable left behind his methods to create Divine Emperor City. The painting world developed and established the foundation of human path.

These were all arrangements that influenced not only one generation, they would result in endless development throughout the whole world!

Fang Yuan frowned as he guessed something from Lu Wei Yin’s tone.

He directly asked: “Since Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable mentioned Genesis Lotus in his last words, did he already know Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable would create Divine Emperor City?”

Lu Wei Yin nodded: “When Lord Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable roamed the world and saved lives everywhere, he got familiar with Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s methods. Back then, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable left behind Divine Bean Palace to restrict Spectral Soul and to plot against him when he had yet to be a venerable. Qing Chou’s core is hatred Gu which was formed through Divine Bean Palace, the relationship between Qing Chou and Divine Bean Palace is extremely close.”

“Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s original plan was to merge Qing Chou, Divine Bean Palace, and Emperor City during the fate war to form Divine Emperor City and protect Heavenly Court.”

“However, a mishap occurred before this time. Fang Yuan, you collaborated with Fang clan to drive away Qing Chou and seized Divine Bean Palace. Even though Divine Bean Palace merged with Emperor City afterwards, it lacked Qing Chou.”

“Without Qing Chou, Divine Emperor City’s strength was incomplete. The will of Genesis Lotus inside it probably wanted to protect the human path gains, so it did not participate in the fate war.”

Fang Yuan’s expression was complex: “So it was like this.”

Genesis Lotus’ plan was originally perfect.

During the fate war, Qing Chou could sense the existence of Spectral Soul’s damaged soul, it would possess rank nine hatred Gu and have pseudo venerable battle strength. Not only could it help Duke Long to guard Heavenly Court, it could even exterminate Spectral Soul’s damaged soul.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan unintentionally destroyed this plan.

Originally, Qing Chou had been nurturing hatred Gu inside Divine Bean Palace and strengthening itself. But after being driven away, this process was disrupted. Thereupon, during the fate war, Qing Chou did not have the expected battle strength and it was separated from Divine Bean Palace.

When the fate war ended, Genesis Lotus’ will contacted Qin Ding Ling, which was why Red Heart Traveler and Nine Spiritual Fairy collaborated and secretly moved to bring back Qing Chou to Heavenly Court.

So in fact, it was not Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable who plotted against Fang Yuan, but Fang Yuan who first broke Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s plan. This led Genesis Lotus’ will to have no options left other than to appear suddenly during the fate war and modify his plan.

So then, why was Fang Yuan willing to accept the alliance agreement and cooperate with Fang clan to drive away Qing Chou?

The crucial key was great thief Immortal Gu.

After obtaining great thief Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan created great thief ghost hand with the rank nine killer move ghostly concealment as the core and the rank seven great thief Immortal Gu as a supplement, forcibly stealing rank eight Soul Beast Token from Qing Chou’s body.

Without Soul Beast Token, Qing Chou’s strength fell sharply, which led to Fang clan’s victory.

And where did great thief Immortal Gu come from?

It was obtained by Fang clan from their Thieving Heaven true inheritance.

This can be called herbal tea which is also literally cooling/cooled tea.

Chinese medicine theory which is resolved by consuming ‘cooling’ food or drinks.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2084 - Spectral Soul’s True Main Body

“So Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable did not just arrange heaven form, this is also another arrangement but I did not notice it earlier.” Fang Yuan thought to himself.

He suddenly had a thought as he asked: “Is Qing Chou also alive?”

Towards the end of the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan, Divine Emperor City came to participate in the battle, causing a huge commotion, was it really to suppress Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Longevity Heaven?

Fang Yuan thought about the fragments of Qing Chou’s corpse.

What was Divine Emperor City’s true motive?

It was a debatable question!

Lu Wei Yin’s expression turned solemn as he sighed: “I only got an answer after returning here and recuperating for some time. What was the main reason why Divine Emperor City joined the battle? In that situation earlier, the aura of rank nine hatred Gu was completely gone, it seemed to have been destroyed.”

“However, Qing Chou is a living being formed from a killer move. I cannot be certain if it is dead or alive. Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s method is simply too unfathomable, we can only sigh in amazement!”

Turning a killer move into a legendary immemorial beast was simply too profound, even Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin could only watch without being able to decipher it.

Lu Wei Yin continued: “I cannot deduce Qing Chou’s current state, but regarding Spectral Soul’s situation, I am very clear about it.”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: “Please tell me.”

Lu Wei Yin beat around the bush for so long, he finally got to the main point.

He answered: “Spectral Soul can be said to be both alive and dead at the moment. because his true main body has always been inside the Door of Life and Death.”

Fang Yuan nodded as he sighed: “As I had expected.”

When Spectral Soul self-detonated, Fang Yuan already felt something amiss. After refining all of his heaven path dao marks, Fang Yuan thought back about the situation and had even more suspicions brewing.

The great Spectral Soul actually died like this?

Spectral Soul was the most heaven defying one out of all the venerables after all!

In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, Zombie Alliance was around while Shadow Sect hid in the dark, Spectral Soul secretly controlled the whole of Heavenly Court. Duke Long did not appear at all, he was evidently harmed by Spectral Soul. He even plotted against Feng Jiu Ge, using that chance to seize Lang Ya blessed land, he controlled the overall situation and was the mastermind behind the five regions chaotic war.

As long as Great Dream Immortal Venerable did not appear, Spectral Soul would be the greatest winner in this situation.

Thus, Fang Yuan invaded Hu Immortal blessed land and was aided by Song Zhong, managing to kill Feng Jin Huang.

Who was Feng Jin Huang?

In her childhood, dream wings Immortal Gu came to her, Feng Jin Huang was the prospective Great Dream Immortal Venerable!

Who was Fang Yuan?

He was an otherworldly demon, before Fate was destroyed, he was the only one who could create different outcomes.

And who was Song Zhong?

He was publicly Song Zi Xing’s son, but in reality, he was created from his blood fetus.

And Song Zi Xing?

He was known as the Blood Dragon, he was a member of Shadow Sect, one of Spectral Soul’s split souls!

In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, there were many hidden truths.

At that time, fate Gu was not destroyed, Demon Immortal Qi Jue could not revive, the other venerables could only watch as Spectral Soul wreaked havoc.

Spectral Soul was too overbearing, in the end, heaven’s will had to choose Fang Yuan to return to the past and change everything!

During the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain, on the surface, Fang Yuan successfully stopped Spectral Soul.

But was that really the case?

Spectral Soul knew that Fang Yuan had been reborn as a result of heaven’s will. According to his original plan, he would be able to control Heavenly Court and manipulate the five regions chaotic war, but heaven’s will would still obstruct him. If Fang Yuan failed, a second or third otherworldly demon might appear, Spectral Soul would never be able to stand at the peak of the universe.

Thus, he changed his plan, at that moment, he started working together with Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

Eventually, he gave sovereign immortal fetus Gu to Fang Yuan, creating a complete otherworldly demon!

After the fate war, fate Gu was destroyed by Fang Yuan.

Spectral Soul wanted to reclaim the sovereign immortal body.

His plan was perfect. He had no lack of soul path attainment level, with the sovereign immortal body, he would be able to annex Soul Pacifying grotto-heaven and others, instantly regaining his strength!

Thus, he would be ahead of the other venerables, he would have the initiative.

The advantage of being first was unimaginable, if Spectral Soul succeeded, he would be the strongest person, the entire world would be trampled under his feet.

But he did not succeed.

Red Lotus Demon Venerable plotted against him, while the heaven path dao marks restricted Fang Yuan, they also protected him.

Spectral Soul did not regain the sovereign immortal body, his growth became very different.

While chasing after Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven worked together, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s inheritor Lu Wei Yin also interfered, eventually managing to kill Spectral Soul.

Fang Yuan tried to put himself in Spectral Soul’s shoes, if he were Spectral Soul, what would he do?

Thus, he found a huge flaw in Spectral Soul’s plan —

It was too risky!

During the dream realm battle, Duke Long defeated Purple Mountain True Monarch and broke into the blessed land, capturing Spectral Soul and taking the Door of Life and Death.

Spectral Soul’s life was in the hands of Heavenly Court, if Fairy Zi Wei did not go after information and clues but killed Spectral Soul right away, would that not ruin everything?

Fang Yuan would not make such an arrangement if it were him.

What about Spectral Soul?

Even though he had the strongest killing nature, he was not stupid at all.

Thus, the most likely case was that the captured Spectral Soul was not the true main body of Spectral Soul!

If Fang Yuan were Spectral Soul, he would also create a clone to disguise as his main body and let Heavenly Court capture him.

Firstly, it would lower the enemy’s guard.

Secondly, the clone was a trap as well, Fairy Zi Wei fell right into it.

Thirdly, the amount of information and true inheritances that the clone had would not be the same as the main body, even if he was captured, the enemies would not gain much.

And finally, even if the clone was killed, the main body would not be affected.

Fang Yuan had two pieces of evidence regarding his suspicions of Spectral Soul.

The first one was Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was the crucial person in their pursuit of Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan and Spectral Soul used their respective true inheritances to lure Demon Immortal Qi Jue into becoming their ally.

Eventually, Fang Yuan won Demon Immortal Qi Jue over, Spectral Soul was forced to self-detonate and died.

After the battle, Fang Yuan recalled this contest, he felt that victory was simply too easily obtained, it was quite different from his expectations.

But if Spectral Soul was just a split soul, everything would make sense.

Spectral Soul did not predict the rebirth of Demon Immortal Qi Jue, because fate Gu was destroyed, all fixed traces were erased, the future was uncertain.

Spectral Soul’s plan was for his split soul to get captured by Heavenly Court, he would only place certain memories into it. These memories would not make Heavenly Court suspicious, but they would also not contain precious information like valuable true inheritances.

Thus, Fang Yuan won against Spectral Soul in this aspect.

The second piece of evidence was obtained by Fang Yuan recently.

Through luck inspection, he checked his own luck and found that at the top of his pure silver pillar of light, there were three clouds. Among them, one was pitch-black like ink.

Who could cause such disturbance to him?

This black cloud was obviously pointing towards Spectral Soul!

If Spectral Soul was still alive, would he let Fang Yuan off? Shadow Sect and Zombie Alliance spent years of accumulated resources and even the ten extreme physiques to create sovereign immortal fetus Gu. Would Spectral Soul let Fang Yuan off? Impossible!

On the other hand, with the revival of Demon Immortal Qi Jue, the world knew that it was possible for venerables to be revived now.

Spectral Soul’s main body had likely already planned for his revival long ago.

In fact, did the other venerables not have such plans?

In the past, due to fate Gu, nobody could revive. But now that it was destroyed, who would not want to revive?!

Nobody knew which venerable would be the first one to revive fully. Nobody was clear when they would revive. It was even possible that a venerable would revive at the next moment.

Thus, the situation was quite precarious for Fang Yuan.

Once a venerable revives, the value of his pseudo venerable battle strength would fall greatly. His status as the number one demon in the world would turn him into a target instead.

After the battle, Lu Wei Yin told him to use his time well before departing, this was what he meant.

Fang Yuan did exactly so.

After the battle, he used his time to its limit, he did not relax for even a moment.

Once his strength returned and was able to deal with risks, Fang Yuan came to Virtue Paradise.

He came here not for Lu Wei Yin, Paradise Earth’s true meaning, or to inherit Paradise Earth’s true inheritance.

He only had one objective.

“Tell me. Lu Wei Yin, how do I become a venerable?”

Fate Gu was destroyed, the future of the world became uncertain, anything could happen now.

Not only the Gu Immortal world, even Gu Masters were starting to see the turbulence of the future.

Fang Yuan was fighting, the mortal Gu Masters were also struggling.

Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range.

Four Gu Masters traveled together, they entered deep into the mountain range for investigation.

They had rank four cultivation level, together, they could resist rank five. In Central Continent’s Gu Master world, they were famous demonic path experts.

They were the Four Great Obscenities; Eastern Obscenity Chen Yin Dao, Western Thief Yu Ba Guang, Southern Disturbance Shi Bao and Northern Squandering Fan Chun Yao.

“Sorrowful winds are blowing again.” Yu Ba Guang alerted the rest, among the four, he had the most effective investigative methods.

“Quick, take out the Gu House.” Chen Yin Dao immediately ordered, he was the leader of the four.

The Gu House was kept by Fan Chun Yao, he was in charge of healing and support.

The four Gu Masters quickly hid inside the Gu House.

Sorrowful winds blew outside the Gu House, the entire place was creaking and shaking, from time to time, Fan Chun Yao had to replenish Gu worms in place of those that died from the sorrowful winds.

“A terrible loss, this is a terrible loss!” Fan Chun Yao shouted in grief: “Along the way, we already lost so much by resisting the sorrowful wind, is there really anything good in this Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range?”

Chen Yin Dao shook his head and smiled bitterly: “I cannot guarantee that, but as long as there is some hope, we need to take a risk! Not long ago, Gu Immortals fought on Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range, they might have left something behind by chance, it may allow us to ascend to immortal!”

The moment immortal ascension was mentioned, the other three Gu Masters started to breathe heavily.

“As long as we become immortal, who would dare to attack us four immortals? We will no longer be pursued by anyone.”

“Once we become immortals, those high and mighty female Gu Masters will all be at our mercy, right? Hahaha.”

“You need to be more ambitious! After becoming immortal, what’s the point of going after mortals? We can target immortal fairies!”

The Gu Masters looked at each other and started to snicker pervertedly.

What they did not know was, Heavenly Court had already cleaned up the battlefield, all those immemorial year beast corpses were taken away already.

The four of them came to the ruins and searched for seven days but found nothing of value at all.

Just as the four were anxious and furious, preparing to leave, they finally found something.

“There is a person here! Quickly come.”

“What’s so strange about seeing a person, there are so many corpses here, they are the villagers living on the mountains.”

“No, this person is still alive! And there is a weird phenomenon around him.”

“What?”

The other three Gu Masters rushed up and saw Wang Xiao Er who had tightly shut eyes, he was still barely alive.

Around him, there were several wild flowers and grass, they were rapidly blooming and wilting, alternating between green and grey with his every breath.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2085 - Four Conditions to Become Venerable

In this Gu world, looking at the past to the present, in the period of over three million years, ten Gu cultivators stood at the peak of the world, looking down on all the living beings.

In the long river of history, the five regions and two heavens had countless geniuses and heroes. If these people were akin to shining stars in the sky, then the ten rank nine Gu Immortals were each like suns, they were bright and dazzling, spreading their radiance over the whole world.

Their glory had never faded, their legends continued to be widespread.

They were the ten great venerables!

From the start of history until now, they were —

Three million years ago, Remote Antiquity Era: Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

One million years ago, Olden Antiquity Era: Limitless Demon Venerable, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, Red Lotus Demon Venerable.

Three hundred thousand years ago, Medieval Antiquity Era: Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

A hundred thousand years ago, Late Antiquity Era: Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

These ten stood at the apex, dominating the world with unparalleled might, they suppressed their entire era with no rival that could match them!

Their methods were terrifying, even after a long period, they still remained like eternal arrangements.

Their intelligent schemes spanned across the eras, existing throughout the past and present, they used all living beings as their pawns. Even after death, they still continued to influence countless future generations.

Towards these people, Fang Yuan had the deepest feelings in this aspect compared to everyone else in the world.

Fang Yuan was extremely clear about the gap between him and these venerables. Even though he was the number one demon of the current world, having pseudo venerable battle strength, he was not confident in fighting against a venerable.

Venerables dominated heaven and earth, everyone else other than them were ants.

The fate war was a huge lesson to everyone, any method left by any venerable could turn the entire situation around just like that.

Only a venerable could resist another venerable.

Putting it crudely, the reason why Fang Yuan succeeded in the fate war was because he struggled and managed to survive while sandwiched between the battle among the ten venerables and heaven’s will.

Towards these venerables who invested in him and treated him as a pawn, for every bit of admiration that Fang Yuan held towards them, there was also an urge to challenge them. For every bit of wariness he felt towards them, there was a bit of desire to match them.

If they could become venerables, why couldn’t I, Fang Yuan, do it?

Furthermore, in order to pursue eternal life, the so-called rank nine venerable cultivation level was merely the stepping stone for Fang Yuan.

The plan to become venerable had already been set the moment he was reborn!

Years ago, when Fang Yuan had just been reborn, he looked up at the sky during those nights, viewing the moon, he felt incredibly minuscule. But now, he had already risen to the skies, venerable level was merely his next step of advancement.

But how could he become a venerable?

Fang Yuan did not know, he was uncertain, he did not understand.

There was a huge secret behind the ascension of a venerable!

This secret had never been publicly spread.

The ten venerables seemed to have some sort of tacit agreement, they kept this secret together.

Nobody in the world could find out, they could only analyze using some clues and common traits that everyone knew.

Among the ten venerables, there were nine males and one female. This meant that there was no gender restriction in becoming a venerable, it was possible for both sexes.

Venerables possessed invincible battle strength but they were not omnipotent. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had once asked Long Hair Ancestor to refine Immortal Gu with them.

Two kings could not exist at the same time. In every great era, there was only one venerable, there had never been two venerables in the same time period. Contests between venerables were limited to the type in the fate war, where they competed using methods they left behind.

Each venerable possessed immense innate luck, phenomena could be seen for some when they were born, their lives were smooth sailing, for example, Red Lotus

Demon Venerable. Some were not apparent in their early days, they only grew explosively after a certain period of time.

Seemingly, in the growth of every venerable, there would be one Dao Guardian in existence. Each Dao Guardian played a monumental role in the journey of the venerable’s growth, they could be either friend or enemy.

It was publicly recognized that every rank nine venerable’s main path was at supreme grandmaster.

The venerables were still restricted by lifespan, there were records in history where venerables used their full strength to hunt for lifespan Gu.

The ten venerables were all humans, there had never been a variant human venerable.

However, just this information could not truly deduce the secret of venerable ascension. One of the most successful deductions in history was the Prophecy of Three Venerables. Immortal Yi Yan said that in the future, there would be Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, and Great Dream Immortal Venerable.

This deduction did not involve the details of the secret of venerable ascension. Furthermore, after Fang Yuan destroyed fate Gu, this prophecy was no longer set in stone.

Then, what was the secret of venerable ascension?

Fang Yuan needed to know about this secret urgently.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s success was the best example, it was likely that the venerables were going to revive.

Thus, the best way to deal with this possibility was for Fang Yuan to become venerable himself!

Fang Yuan understood deeply: No matter how many grotto-heavens he annexed or how many immortal materials and dao marks he had, he could not become venerable. Thus, the most important reason why he came to Lu Wei Yin was for the secret of venerable ascension. Other things, like Paradise Earth’s true inheritance or Paradise Earth’s true meaning, were just secondary gains for the current Fang Yuan.

Sitting opposite each other, Lu Wei Yin drank his tea as he smiled.

He was not surprised by Fang Yuan’s question.

He raised his head and placed down his tea cup, he raised three fingers and said directly: “There are four conditions to satisfy if you want to become a venerable.”

“First, the Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture origin core has to produce white litchi immortal essence.”

“Second, the Gu Immortal’s main cultivation path needs to have at least three hundred thousand dao marks.”

“Third, the Gu Immortal’s main cultivation path needs to be at least supreme grandmaster in attainment level.”

“Fourth, after meeting the first three conditions, the Gu Immortal has to break through the Heavenly Dao blockade, after which the immortal aperture origin core will undergo a qualitative change and produce rank nine yellow apricot immortal essence.”

Out of Fang Yuan’s expectations, Lu Wei Yin actually told him the secret of venerable ascension directly and honestly.

Fang Yuan originally thought that Lu Wei Yin would make a transaction regarding this and list some conditions for Fang Yuan. Or more accurately, there had to be a reason why Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable chose Fang Yuan as his inheritor.

Fang Yuan did not know what Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was plotting.

But he had already decided that as long as he could obtain the secret of venerable ascension, he would be willing to give in to some extent and work with Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

However, Lu Wei Yin did not conceal this secret, he directly said it to Fang Yuan.

This was like a transaction where both parties were meant to hand over the goods and money at the same time, but suddenly, the trader tossed the goods to the buyer first.

Lu Wei Yin’s action did not make Fang Yuan relax, he instead became more alert.

Lu Wei Yin had a deep scheming mind, Fang Yuan had lost to him once in the past and failed to regain upper extreme heavenly eagle. During the battle to pursue Fang Yuan, Lu Wei Yin worked with him and killed Spectral Soul together, this battle even showed Fang Yuan his strong mental fortitude and endurance.

How could such a person be so unwise?

Fang Yuan carefully thought about the four conditions of venerable ascension.

“The first two conditions are basically those of a rank eight Gu Immortal who has passed three myriad tribulations. I have already met this condition in qi path, time path, refinement path, and transformation path.”

“As for the third condition of the main cultivation path being supreme grandmaster, I have not fulfilled this criteria yet, but my refinement path, time path, and enslavement path are already quasi-supreme, the difference is not huge.”

“As for the fourth condition, breaking through the Heavenly Dao blockade?”

Fang Yuan frowned slightly as he asked: “What does the Heavenly Dao blockade refer to?”

Lu Wei Yin continued to explain for Fang Yuan: “The way of heaven is to take away surpluses while replenishing deficits, so all things are in balance and mutually restrict each other. A tall tree is the first to face destruction, soil that is nearest to the water will be the first to be swept away by the currents. But the way of humans is the exact opposite, it reduces the deficits and builds up the surpluses, by devouring the weak and continuing to learn, one can grow and make up for insufficiencies to become even stronger.”

“The Heavenly Dao does not want the number of Gu Immortals to increase while they at the same time get stronger, thus calamities and tribulations occur. Calamities and tribulations are part of the Heavenly Dao blockade. Before becoming a venerable, the Heavenly Dao will send a tribulation far greater than any myriad tribulation!”

“Other than that, there is lifespan Gu. Lifespan Gu is a heaven path Gu worm, it cannot be refined by people. Even though the ten venerables were invincible in their eras, they were still bound by it. During an era with a venerable in existence, natural production of lifespan Gu will continuously fall.”

“The third blockade is fate Gu, but you have already destroyed it.”

Fang Yuan pondered: “There are basically three types of Heavenly Dao blockades, fate Gu has been destroyed while lifespan Gu is of no concern for now, the remaining tribulation blockade is the greatest hurdle that I will face.”

“Is there a way to deal with the Heavenly Dao blockade? How did the venerables in history get past it?” Fang Yuan asked.

Lu Wei Yin answered: “There are ways to take shortcuts, luck path is one of them. The venerables in history all have immense innate luck, it mostly comes from two sources. The first is the favor of heaven’s will, the second is the adoration of human path.”

“Three million years ago, the variant humans were strong and disrupted the balance, the Heavenly Dao sought to deal with them, so heaven’s will favored Primordial Origin and allowed him to become an Immortal Venerable.”

“The best example of human path adoration is Red Lotus Demon Venerable. He is a child of humanity, he has extremely dense innate luck, when he was born, tribulation struck. The Three Dukes of Heavenly Court had to intervene and block the tribulation for Red Lotus.”

Fang Yuan raised his brows: “Thinking about it, can human path methods be a way of breaking through the Heavenly Dao blockade?”

Earlier, Fang Yuan had used human path methods to interrupt with the Heavenly Dao, allowing him to gain time to take action. In this aspect, he was quite experienced.

Lu Wei Yin nodded: “Indeed, human path methods are a good way of breaking through the Heavenly Dao blockade. Precisely so, the various venerables had a common trait, they all comprehended something from u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e and created their own top tier human path killer moves!”

They continued to converse for some time, Lu Wei Yin answered every single one of Fang Yuan’s questions to the best of his knowledge.

Fang Yuan finally understood the conditions to become venerable, he fell into deep contemplation.

After careful analysis, he found that only two points restricted him from becoming venerable: One was attainment level, the other was the Heavenly Dao blockade.

The latter could be dealt with eventually, Fang Yuan had Cooking Luck Pot in terms of luck path, he also had human path methods, he just had to elevate and develop them further.

The true problem was attainment level.

Quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment level, it seemed very close to the genuine supreme grandmaster, but that was actually very hard to reach.

If there was a suitable environment and sufficient time, Fang Yuan could work hard in cultivation and continue to deepen his comprehension, he believed that in this lifetime, he could definitely reach supreme grandmaster in at least one path.

But now, the revival of venerables had started to cast a shadow on his future.

“What method is there to allow me to get past this problem?”

Dream realms?

Obviously not.

Fang Yuan had already found out that the dream realms originating from Spectral Soul could only reach great grandmaster attainment level at most.

True meaning?

He thought about it: “Don’t tell me, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable left behind his true meaning so that my earth path could reach supreme grandmaster?”

Seemingly sensing Fang Yuan’s thoughts, Lu Wei Yin shook his head: “Lord Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s true meaning can only allow you to reach earth path great grandmaster. However, there is a solution in Paradise Earth’s true inheritance.”

Fang Yuan looked at the smiling Lu Wei Yin, an obscure light flashed in his eyes: “Oh, please do tell me.”

Lu Wei Yin thus said: “Fang Yuan, you have read u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e, you must know this secluded domain of heaven and earth, Primordial Domain. The truth is, if one can enter Primordial Domain, they would be able to make one of their paths reach supreme grandmaster.”

“Primordial Domain?” Fang Yuan was moved: “You know where it is.”

Lu Wei Yin’s eyes flashed with bright light: “At the deepest layer of Crazed Demon Cave!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2086 - The Secret of Venerable Invincibility

“Primordial Domain… is at the deepest layer of Crazed Demon Cave?” At once, thoughts collided in Fang Yuan’s mind rapidly.

u003cu003cThe Legends of Ren Zuu003eu003e did mention Primordial Domain but the description was vague and ambiguous, it depended on the reader’s own perspective and comprehension.

“Even if Primordial Domain has such power, is it really at the deepest layer of Crazed Demon Cave?” Fang Yuan would not believe Lu Wei Yin’s words so easily.

But this was quite possible.

Fang Yuan had been to Crazed Demon Cave, he had observed then that Paradise Earth went there and even created his own Dao field.

Fang Yuan could not enter the deepest layer, but Paradise Earth was an Immortal Venerable, his ability could not be easily assessed.

“If this is real, then Paradise Earth’s objective is in Crazed Demon Cave?”

Fang Yuan’s mind was turbulent but his expression remained unchanging.

Lu Wei Yin looked at his expression as he sighed internally: “This Gu Yue Fang Yuan is the number one demon in the world after all, no wonder heaven’s will and the venerables chose him as their pawn. Just this information is not enough to gain his trust!”

Lu Wei Yin had no choice but to continue speaking: “Primordial Domain is indeed at the bottom of Crazed Demon Cave, it is quite unique, it is both the beginning and the end, it contains the supreme profundity of the whole of heaven and earth. Limitless Demon Venerable used it and rank nine derivation Immortal Gu as the cores to derive new worlds and create brand new heaven path dao marks.”

“In a way, Crazed Demon Cave is far more important than even Heavenly Court!”

Lu Wei Yin said slowly as he exposed even more secrets.

During the Olden Antiquity Era a million years ago, humanity’s first Demon Venerable, Limitless Demon Venerable, attacked Heavenly Court and threatened to destroy it, forcing Star Constellation’s will to engage in a game of chess with him.

The chessboard was secretly linked to Crazed Demon Cave, as the two venerables schemed, their thoughts collided and new ideas were born, they created brand new heaven path gains.

These gains went into Crazed Demon Cave through the chessboard, helping Limitless with his derivation.

Star Constellation pretended to be unaware but she was prepared for this long ago, she went along with the plan.

The venerables of the future, like Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, all visited Imperfection Regret Pavilion and knew of the two venerables’ game, they understood the importance of Crazed Demon Cave.

During the fate war, the silhouettes of both venerables vanished within Imperfection Regret Pavilion, but this was only the end of a segment of their game. The true place to decide victory was still Crazed Demon Cave!

All the venerables knew this, they all took part in some way. For example, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable created his Green Lotus Dao field in the eighth layer of Crazed Demon Cave. Reckless Savage Demon Venerable created his Savage Wilderness Great World, while Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable made his Yellow Earth Great World.

This way, the situation became more complex.

Fang Yuan was shaken internally: “This has been one of my deepest suspicions so far. A portion of the venerables spent so much effort to create their Dao field in the eighth layer of Crazed Demon Cave, why did they want to defend their own big world so much? Unless, they are also after Primordial Domain?”

“Venerables have already become venerable, Primordial Domain is not necessary to them. Wait, that might not be the case!” A flash of inspiration sparked in Fang Yuan’s mind, he saw through the fog and observed a corner of the truth.

“Haha.” Lu Wei Yin laughed loudly: “Fang Yuan, you truly live up to your reputation, you are someone who did not falter to the venerables’ plots no matter how many were in your way. You have already understood a portion of it.”

“Indeed.” Lu Wei Yin continued: “Fate Gu has been destroyed, venerables can revive now. However, the stronger the Gu Immortal, the more troublesome and bigger the price their revival will be. If they are careless, even if they revive, they will not have their former strength. For example, Demon Immortal Qi Jue was interrupted by you and Wu Yong, his strength fell and he was no longer in his peak condition.”

“Venerables are the same. After they revive, even though they will not have their venerable blockade and will be able to regain rank nine cultivation level, the competition between venerables will be intense. Even though venerables left behind revival methods, they are still limited in the end. Thus, the venerables want to make their revival certain, it would be best if they had their former peak battle strength the moment they revived.”

Fang Yuan nodded continuously.

He could understand the venerables’ mentality.

When fate Gu was around, everyone was unable to revive. But all the venerables still left behind some methods, once fate Gu was destroyed, these methods would activate and allow them to revive.

However, venerables were in opposing factions, they had their own perspectives, they also schemed against each other.

Who would not want to be the strongest person in the world?

Who would want the existence of venerables other than themselves?

The venerables were wary of each other, they thwarted each other’s plans, even though they were dead, they still competed with each other in the dark.

Due to the long duration of history, this type of competition would usually benefit the venerables of the future eras. For example, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

But nothing was absolute.

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable came before Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, but his arrangements, Divine Emperor City and Qing Chou, still managed to harm Spectral Soul!

Or the situation of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable entering the Red Lotus stone island and taking away regret Gu, it was an easy task.

But all in all, this was the general trend.

Later venerables had a greater advantage in this contest.

Because the entire Gu cultivation world was continuously developing and growing. In the Remote Antiquity Era, in Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s time, there were only four to five paths, qi path was the strongest. But now? There were paths of all kinds, mainstream paths numbered to at least twenty!

Taking Divine Emperor City as an example, it was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable using his peak wood path and painting path attainment at that time, it could even mimic human path. But in terms of luck path, it was quite lacking. After all, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable only appeared after Genesis Lotus.

In fact, it was not certain if Divine Emperor City was still the peak product of wood path at this current time.

Three hundred thousand years had already passed since Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s era. During this long period, wood path had grown tremendously, countless geniuses emerged, they had their own developments, they promoted wood path to a new level.

Only painting path was still at its peak.

Why?

Painting path had been kept as a secret by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, it was not leaked to the outside world.

Thus, the current painting path was still kept at its peak state from back then.

This was also why a portion of the venerables held onto their own paths’ true inheritances and did not spread them widely.

Like Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path true inheritances.

Lu Wei Yin continued to expose more secrets: “Fang Yuan, do you know that Duke Long had moved the Door of Life and Death into Crazed Demon Cave before the fate war?”

Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered: “Heavenly Court knows that Spectral Soul’s main body is inside the Door of Life and Death, so they moved it away in advance and prevented him from succeeding his plot? No wonder Spectral Soul and Fairy Zi Wei could not find the Door of Life and Death even after ransacking Heavenly Court’s treasuries.”

Lu Wei Yin drank some tea before continuing: “Duke Long did not just relocate the Door of Life and Death, he even moved a portion of Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard into Crazed Demon Cave!”

Fang Yuan was stirred: “This means that I only destroyed a portion of Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard, the rest is inside Crazed Demon Cave. Is this the backup plan that Heavenly Court had? It does seem like the way of a righteous path super force. After all, Heavenly Court had limited Gu Immortals, even if they woke up, they could not retain their peak battle strength, Star Constellation’s will also needs some Gu Immortals to hibernate and support her.”

“I was about to get to Star Constellation’s will.” Lu Wei Yin’s gaze was bright as a torch, he stared at Fang Yuan: “Do you know that for a long time, Star Constellation’s will has not showed herself to tell Heavenly Court what to do?”

Fang Yuan was finally moved, he understood the implicit meaning behind these words.

Fang Yuan stared at Lu Wei Yin: “You mean to say, Star Constellation has already revived using her will?”

Lu Wei Yin nodded: “Although I am not certain, this is very likely to be the case. If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable revived, she would definitely lurk in the eighth layer and try to obtain the ninth layer’s Primordial Domain. Once she enters it, she will regain her supreme grandmaster attainment level in wisdom path, she will be able to use the primeval energy of the world for herself and become a complete and genuine Dao Lord!”

Fang Yuan frowned deeply.

He had originally thought that no venerable had revived yet. But from this conversation, he knew that it was likely at least one venerable had already revived.

And this revived venerable, the only female among them, was terrifying, the only wisdom path venerable.

This woman was so strong that even after her death, she could scheme against three Demon Venerables of the future. Even though the true details were quite different from what Heavenly Court publicly announced, it was true that Heavenly Court was saved by Star Constellation’s schemes and arrangements, surviving the onslaught of three Demon Venerables.

This contribution was undeniable, every time Fang Yuan thought about it, he could feel how terrifying it was!

As for why Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was no longer a wisdom path supreme grandmaster, Fang Yuan knew clearly.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable died three million years ago during the Remote Antiquity Era.

Too much time had passed!

Wisdom path had developed until today, it had already undergone a complete revolution in terms of improvement and elevation.

Quasi-supreme grandmaster meant that the Gu Immortal’s understanding of the path was already at the limit of heaven and earth, they were already touching that ceiling, they had almost completely understood the profundity of the path. But they were just inches away, unable to break through.

As for supreme grandmaster attainment level, not only did they need to comprehend the full profundities of the path, they also had to innovate further. At this level, each time the Gu Immortal improves, it would be an unprecedented feat, it would elevate the upper boundaries of the entire path, it would even elevate the whole of heaven and earth to some degree.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s wisdom path supreme grandmaster attainment level back in the day was no longer supreme grandmaster in today’s world.

Even though she merged with heaven’s will and studied Heavenly Court’s wisdom path research results at all times, this was still true.

Forget about the difference between Star Constellation’s will and a clone, just Heavenly Court’s wisdom path research results alone only represented a portion of the whole of wisdom path.

Only after Star Constellation Immortal Venerable entered Primordial Domain could her wisdom path attainment level return to supreme grandmaster, she would become a Dao Lord again.

“What is a Dao Lord?” Fang Yuan heard of a new concept from Lu Wei Yin once again.

This journey to the Mushroomman Paradise was truly valuable. He had already understood the conditions of venerable ascension, he also learned of the venerables’ schemes, and now, the term Dao Lord was likely concerning the secret of venerable invincibility!

As expected, at the next moment, Lu Wei Yin smiled: “Why could the past venerables be invincible in the world? The difference between venerable and pseudo venerable lies in the concept of Dao Lord. Why could venerable methods remain for so many years without dissipating? This is also due to the concept of Dao Lord.”

Before Fang Yuan could ask him, Lu Wei Yin immediately answered: “The so-called Dao Lord refers to the lord of a certain path. When a Gu Immortal becomes venerable and has supreme grandmaster attainment level, they will be the leader of that path, their own improvement would signify the improvement of the path, that would also be the improvement of heaven and earth, that person is a Dao Lord.”

“As a Dao Lord, the Gu Venerable can sense all of the natural dao marks of heaven and earth of that particular path and refine them! After refining the dao marks, the Gu Venerable can manipulate them at will.”

Fang Yuan could not help but feel shaken: “Refine them? Manipulate them at will?”

Lu Wei Yin continued to speak: “After every venerable becomes venerable, there will be a period of time when they roam the world. For example, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable or Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. But the truth is, during this period, they are refining the natural dao marks of the world, they are turning the entire world into their personal battlefield killer move.”

This was the secret of venerable invincibility!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2087 - Obtaining Southern Border’s Paradise Earth True Inheritance

“So this is the secret of venerable invincibility…” Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

This trip to the Mushroomman Paradise was truly not in vain!

Fang Yuan obtained a lot of secrets involving venerables, he also had some sort of guess towards Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s motive.

At this point, the signs shown in Fang Yuan’s luck inspection were verified.

His luck was like a pure silver pillar of light, even though it was slim, it was tall, shooting towards heaven, seemingly trying to pierce the sky.

At the bottom of this dense pure silver light pillar, there was a lump of yellow qi guarding it, looking like a dust cloud that seemed to support the pillar.

At the top of the pillar, there were three clouds, one was black as ink, one was golden and dazzling, one was shining with starlight.

These three clouds were phenomena that seemed to be obstructing Fang Yuan’s luck from rising further.

The black ink cloud should be Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. After all, the current Shadow Sect was already left with few members, it had little threat.

The starlight cloud was most likely the revived Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. It radiated mystery, it had an aura filled with wisdom.

As for that golden cloud, there was no need to guess, it was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. In the fate war earlier, Giant Sun's attack came from Northern Plains with imposing might, arriving in Heavenly Court with unparalleled strength!

During the battle to pursue Fang Yuan, even though they lost one legendary immemorial beast, Longevity Heaven's strength did not fall much, they still retained their foundation. The Huang Jin family was like the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent, it dominated Northern Plains and ensured that the whole of Northern Plains was controlled by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's bloodline descendants.

Crazed Demon Cave was in Northern Plains, there was no way to avoid Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Longevity Heaven.

“Maybe, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable chose to create Longevity Heaven in Northern Plains not because he was a Northern Plainsman but because of the crucial Crazed Demon Cave, he wanted to make his arrangements.”

Fang Yuan had many thoughts, he pondered about the deeper meaning of this.

If it were him, he would make the same arrangements.

If fate Gu was not destroyed, everything would not matter. But once it was destroyed, the venerables could revive. By then, whoever occupied Northern Plains and encircled Crazed Demon Cave would have the clear advantage!

Fang Yuan looked at Lu Wei Yin again: “Since Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable created the Yellow Earth Great World, then by helping me become venerable, does he also want me to help him revive successfully?”

Lu Wei Yin nodded and smiled: “Precisely. Back then, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable brought blessings to the world, but his main true inheritances were left in the five regions. Southern Border's Paradise Earth true inheritance is here. Eastern Sea's Paradise Earth true inheritance is in the blue dragon whale. Central Continent's Paradise Earth true inheritance is Reincarnation Battlefield. Northern Plains' Paradise Earth true inheritance is inside the Yellow Earth Great World. As for Western Desert's Paradise Earth true inheritance, someone seems to have taken it already.”

“Venerables have left behind their revival methods but they are limited. As long as they are destroyed in advance, these venerables will not be able to revive. But if they revive, the difficulty to take them down will be at a whole new level compared to before.”

“Now that fate Gu has been destroyed, the River of Time's lower stream is in turbulence and chaos, the world is experiencing an unprecedented shift in era. Who can be sure of what will happen in the future? Not just venerable revival, just talking about Great Dream Immortal Venerable alone, will she still appear? Pseudo venerable is just pseudo venerable in the end.”

“By now, Fang Yuan, I am sure that you no longer suspect our sincerity. As long as you help Lord Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable revive, we will be the closest allies. Not only will we give you Southern Border's Paradise Earth true inheritance, we will also provide clues for Eastern Sea's and Central Continent's Paradise Earth true inheritances, the value is simply immeasurable.”

Fang Yuan was silent.

Lu Wei Yin was here to convince him, he was not just qualified to do so, he was incredibly skilled!

“As expected, every venerable had extremely deep wisdom.” Fang Yuan was starting to understand the accuracy of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s scheme.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable did not need to worry that Fang Yuan would reject him!

Because the things that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable offered had immense value, not only would Fang Yuan be moved, he also needed these venerable secrets urgently.

The reason why Lu Wei Yin exposed these secrets to Fang Yuan earlier was not because he was stupid or generous.

It was because Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable knew about Fang Yuan’s nature.

To work wholeheartedly with a person like Fang Yuan, the first condition was that he needed to be assured. Otherwise, even though Fang Yuan was a risk-taker, with his immense vigilance, he would not help to revive a venerable while only being a pseudo venerable!

Thus, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable needed to help Fang Yuan become venerable.

Red Lotus and Spectral Soul were worried that Fang Yuan would become unstoppable when he became a venerable, thus they wanted to get rid of him. But Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable wanted to help Fang Yuan in this, while the other venerables were fighting alone, he had already cooperated with Fang Yuan.

Venerables were the strongest existences in heaven and earth, they were at the limit of the world. In a contest between such individuals, their strength would usually be quite equal, any bit of difference would decide the eventual outcome.

Thus, if Paradise Earth worked together with Fang Yuan, the advantage would be huge.

All these were simply alluring temptations.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable did not just tempt Fang Yuan with the present gains, he even lured Fang Yuan with the future benefits of working together.

Of course, other than allure, there was also pressure!

Lu Wei Yin had already told Fang Yuan clearly: The venerables want to revive in Crazed Demon Cave, would you not stop them? If not, after losing this opportunity, you will definitely suffer in the future.

Fang Yuan, look at what you’ve done in the past!

Longevity Heaven, Heavenly Court, and Shadow Sect were all his enemies, if the venerables revived, they would not let him off.

Even if they had no grudges, hehe, as a pseudo venerable closest to the level of venerables, would those revived venerables want more chess players in this world to compete with them?

Paradise Earth was a good person, he only expressed kindness to others. However, Paradise Earth’s magnanimity and scheming ability definitely lived up to his title as a venerable!

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable tempted and pressured Fang Yuan at the same time, what would he choose?

How else could he choose?

At the next moment, Fang Yuan nodded with a grim expression: “Alright, I agree to this. Let’s set the agreement.”

Lu Wei Yin waved his hand: “I believe in you, Fang Yuan, why would we need to set an agreement?”

He was bullsh*tting.

The true reason was that Fang Yuan had methods like myriad beings assimilation transformation, almost no alliance agreements in the world could restrict him.

Lu Wei Yin had no choice but to show his tolerance in this issue.

Fang Yuan was a logical person, if he was not logical and vigilant, he would not reach this stage today. Precisely because of his logic and wariness, he knew that working together with Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had benefits, while refusing had its demerits.

This was more effective than any alliance agreement in the world!

Lu Wei Yin slowly stood up: “Since we are in an alliance, Southern Border’s Paradise Earth true inheritance is yours now. Please follow me.”

Fang Yuan followed Lu Wei Yin and left the house, going to a mountain peak.

Outside the house, the sky was tall and the clouds were wide, the fields under the mountains were green, the breeze was gentle and the trees were swaying slowly.

Lu Wei Yin pointed at the base of the mountain: “Fang Yuan, firstly, this Mushroomman Paradise is now your property. You can freely annex it, of course, you can let it remain here as your territory in Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world.”

Fang Yuan was moved, this gift was not a small one. Mushroomman Paradise had existed for over a hundred thousand years, it had abundant resources, comparable with top tier grotto-heavens in the two heavens.

Let alone the giant resource points inside, just the countless mushroommen living here were definitely something unique among the five regions and two heavens! This was the best mushroomman resource in the world, there was no contest!

Next, Lu Wei Yin handed Fang Yuan more than ten Immortal Gu, they were mostly earth path.

Among them, one was an information path Immortal Gu that recorded the details of Southern Border’s Paradise Earth true inheritance.

Fang Yuan’s divine sense entered and saw everything at once, he found that this true inheritance had three components. The main part was the earth path true inheritance, there was the core killer move, paradise creation, after using this move, the immortal aperture would no longer have calamities and tribulations.

The second part was related to human path, Fang Yuan had seen the contents before, when Lu Wei Yin tried to reform Fang Yuan in the dream realm, Fang Yuan had obtained this Virtue true inheritance before.

This true inheritance had a weird requirement. It needed the inheritor to maintain a just heart, to be a virtuous person. The greater the user’s virtues, the easier it was when cultivating.

The core Immortal Gu was accumulate virtue Gu. As long as Fang Yuan did good deeds and acted kindly, it would continue to refine itself. The greater the accumulation of kindness, the higher the rank of the accumulate virtue Gu refined.

Accumulate virtue Gu had many incredible uses, the most useful one was to modify Fang Yuan’s physique into the Righteous Virtue Physique that was only inferior to the ten extreme physiques, but it did not have any of the ten extreme physiques’ flaws, it represented a limitless future and potential!

Fang Yuan only took a few looks before he sighed in amazement towards Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s talent.

Earlier, he had only interacted with a small portion in his dream, he did not understand its full profundity.

The human path segment of Southern Border’s Paradise Earth true inheritance opened a new door for Fang Yuan, he saw a new perspective of human path. It stemmed from the morals of people, developing in this direction. If Gu cultivators chose to cultivate this way, it would definitely create change and become a central part of Gu cultivation in the future.

If this cultivation information was spread widely, it would definitely cause the righteous path to prosper.

Additionally, the refinement method of accumulate virtue Gu was also incredible!

It was able to refine accumulate virtue Gu in the person’s body through acts of righteousness and kindness. This was a type of human body Gu refinement method, or rather, a human path Gu refinement method.

From this aspect, one could see that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had shocking refinement path attainment.

Fang Yuan currently lacked this essence of refinement path, it was a huge inspiration to him.

“I am only a quasi-supreme in refinement path, mainly consisting of the hairy man Gu refinement method. To become a genuine supreme grandmaster, I lack these things! But how many of these things are in existence? Where are they left at? This human path refinement method of accumulate virtue Gu seems to have some similarity with Qing Chou’s hatred Gu refinement.”

Fang Yuan thought about it for a while, he was secretly happy internally.

He next moved his attention to the third portion of Paradise Earth’s true inheritance.

This was regarding the dream path.

The core killer move was: three lifetime dreams reform a chosen one.

This killer move used fetus earth maze as the foundation to create a dream realm. It allowed the people who entered the dream to live in the same dream together for three lifetimes, one could experience the mortal lives fully and comprehend life and death, understanding the vicissitudes of human ways and forgetting the evil in their heart, turning over a new leaf.

Fang Yuan had already been hit by this move before, Lu Wei Yin was the user.

The reason why Lu Wei Yin understood Fang Yuan’s nature and goal so well was also because of this move.

Thus, Fang Yuan obtained two rank seven dream path Immortal Gu from him.

The first was dreaming Immortal Gu, it was the core Immortal Gu of three lifetime dreams reform a chosen one, it was not a surprise.

The other Immortal Gu made Fang Yuan very happy.

“Even though this Immortal Gu is only rank seven, it carries a huge significance in my case, its importance surpasses rank eight Immortal Gu, and even rank nine!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The dream path Immortal Gu held in Fang Yuan’s hands now was a round ruby-like jewel that was cut in half.

This semi-circular ball-shaped Gu worm looked very cute, its red color was also very attractive.

Its head was only ten percent of its body, its back was round and smooth, there were black markings all over, resembling a tortoise shell.

This was rank seven dream path Immortal Gu — Dream Armor.

It was a defensive dream path Immortal Gu!

Fang Yuan had many Immortal Gu currently, but he only had one dream path Immortal Gu, it was rank eight Dream Token, the core Immortal Gu of Dragon Palace.

Dream Token was shaped like a dragonfly, it had a round head and long body, with a pair of pink ruby eyes and four pairs of transparent wings. Looking closely at its thin wings, one would also see a faint layer of rainbow halo.

Looking at the two, Fang Yuan found that dream path Immortal Gu seemed to all look very pretty.

"I wonder what Dream Travel and Dream Wings look like?" Fang Yuan could not help but think.

He had five hundred years of memories, he knew that dream wings Immortal Gu was in the hands of Feng Jin Huang, while dream travel Immortal Gu was in Lady Poison Scorpion’s hands.

it was not that Fang Yuan had no intentions of targeting them.

All along, he could not effectively deal with Feng Jin Huang, while he had little confidence in regards to Lady Poison Scorpion.

In his previous life, Dream Travel, Carefree Travel, Fixed Immortal Travel, and Liquor God Travel were the publicly recognized four great movement Immortal Gu. Even though Fang Yuan was strong, Lady Poison Scorpion could travel through dreams and instantly enter any single dream realm.

"Currently, dream path is still not developed enough, dream realms have not manifested everywhere in the outside world. Dream path immortal materials are still rare, while dream path Immortal Gu are even rarer, and yet I already own three of them." Fang Yuan was quite happy with this result.

In the previous life, the manifested dream realms were even larger than Spectral Soul’s dream realm, they were everywhere in the five regions.

Thus, everyone could enter dream realms for exploration, it was unlike now where dream realms were occupied by the experts.

A vast amount of dream realms meant countless opportunities for Gu cultivators to excavate dream path Gu materials. With these materials, dream path started to develop rapidly as a path.

Thus, at this current time, dream path had only started to grow in its initial state. Thieving Heaven’s dream realm, Paradise Earth’s dream realm, and Spectral Soul’s dream realm were just small flames that could not boil this entire pot of water.

To boil the pot of water that was dream path, Spectral Soul’s dream realm was just too small, the entire world’s strength was needed.

In Fang Yuan’s case, the Immortal Gu Dreaming and Dream Token were even less important than Dream Armor.

Because Dream Armor was a defensive Immortal Gu.

With this Immortal Gu, he would have the capability of resisting dream path tribulations, the Pure Dream Reality Seeker clone would be able to undergo immortal ascension!

Fang Yuan recalled his luck inspection results earlier.

The pure dream clone’s luck was like a pink sandbox, it was very small but yellow sand entered it continuously, turning into pink sand that strengthened the sandbox.

The sandbox luck predicted that the pure dream clone would receive the help of Paradise Earth, now it seemed like that was truly the case.

Fang Yuan activated Cooking Luck Pot again to inspect his luck.

His silver luck pillar did not change much, the pillar of light only became slightly larger while most of the yellow sand below it had vanished.

The pure dream clone’s luck was still like a pink sandbox but no more yellow sand fell into it. The sand pile in the box was very tall, there was a feeling of collapse or breakthrough at the next moment."

"I gained Southern Border’s Paradise Earth true inheritance, with his help, the pure dream clone has the opportunity to breakthrough. But even so, the risks are still huge, I need to make even more preparation."

Fang Yuan quickly understood.

After Cooking Luck Pot reached rank eight, Fang Yuan obtained even more benefits from luck path.

He was increasingly feeling the advantage of luck path, it was no wonder that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable managed to rise to the top back then!

Crazed Demon Cave was definitely a place to visit, but Fang Yuan could not go now.

Currently, his strength was growing explosively, Fang Yuan intended to raise his battle strength to the limit before heading to Crazed Demon Cave.

Even though Lu Wei Yin claimed that the situation was extremely urgent, Fang Yuan had Luck Inspection, he knew that he still had some precious time left.

"More preparation leads to better future results, let me first research on dream path methods before I help the pure dream clone to ascend!"

Fang Yuan looked at himself, his dream path knowledge was undoubtedly the number one in the current world.

The knowledge of dream realm exploration that he brought along with rebirth was still the top tier research result of the current world, but his advantage was quickly shrinking.

However, after Fang Yuan was reborn, he still made incredible progress in dream path.

The killer move unravel dream came from his memories, from Shadow Sect, he obtained lead soul into dream, switch soul in dream, and pure dream reality seeker transformation. From Dragon Palace, he obtained dreamy light smoke, dream within dream, and dream revelation. And now from Southern Border’s Paradise Earth true inheritance, he obtained three lifetime dreams reform a chosen one.

Fang Yuan had more dream path killer moves than dream path Immortal Gu.

Many of the dream path killer moves had core Immortal Gu of other paths, there was no helping it, he used a vast number of dream path mortal Gu in place of a dream path Immortal Gu. For example, killer moves like lead soul into dream and switch soul in dream.

"What I need now is a dream path defensive killer move that uses dream armor Immortal Gu as the core. After that, I need a dream path movement method so that I can escape danger and gain some time to recuperate. After that is healing and finally offense."

Even though Fang Yuan’s dream path attainment level was ordinary, he was confident in creating new dream path killer moves.

The reason was that he had unrestrained heavenly mark, he could create a large number of compound killer moves!

Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court were definitely plotting to contest in Crazed Demon Cave, they would not send troops to attack Fang Yuan’s variant human alliance.

Not to mention approaching Fang Yuan.

As for the Southern Alliance led by Wu Yong, they would be glad if Fang Yuan did not find them for trouble. Why would they come to him and court death?

The external environment was unprecedentedly safe, Fang Yuan started to enter closed cultivation, he created dream path killer moves, he made good progress every day.

More than ten days later, Fang Yuan suddenly stopped, entering a daze.

He advanced to dream path master!

This was the explosive growth of his accumulation, it was extremely smooth after long periods of foundation building. When creating his killer moves, he had unknowingly succeeded and stepped into the next realm.

Ever since rebirth, Fang Yuan had been pressured by external forces, he had never invested any time or energy into dream path.

Until now, he started to truly cultivate dream path, he put effort into it.

Because his foundation was deep, he was able to progress rapidly from the start, raising his dream path attainment level.

Master attainment level — the Gu cultivator’s use of Gu worms had already reached an artistic level, they were no longer amateurs.

The most evident trait was the emergence of instinct. Their understanding of Gu worms and the conceptualization of immortal killer moves for that path had also turned into the cultivator’s innate ability. It was like a natural skill that came with them from birth, smooth and easy to use.

For example, Fang Yuan had a very vague idea of dream path Gu worm compatibility for killer moves, he had to try to find out if they would succeed or fail. But now, before trying, his instincts would tell him if some ideas were more feasible or if they were meant to fail even without trying, whether he would only waste his time, energy, and resource if he went ahead.

"Good! Having dream path master attainment level is truly icing on the cake! My dream path achievement is definitely at the top of the current world. But... this might change after some time."

In the memories of Fang Yuan’s previous life, there were many dream path geniuses. Among them were shocking talents like Feng Jin Huang and Lady Poison Scorpion, raising dream path attainment level was much easier for them compared to others.

Some people were born with compatibility with certain paths, talent was something that could not be explained. Especially for Great Dream Immortal Venerable seeds like Feng Jin Huang and Lady Poison Scorpion!

Fang Yuan had self awareness, he knew that others would surpass him soon in the aspect of dream path attainment level.

But Fang Yuan would not give up on developing dream path, he would not commit the same mistake as in his previous life.

Dream path was the great trend ahead, the revolution of the future, there was a huge advantage in a new path.

"But now is not the time to truly cultivate dream path!" Fang Yuan understood his circumstances clearly.

He had to become a venerable first to resist the external threats, only then would he have time and opportunities to develop his dream path slowly.

After hearing of the four venerable ascension conditions from Lu Wei Yin, after careful consideration, Fang Yuan guessed that refinement path would be the most likely path that he would become venerable in.

First becoming a venerable in refinement path, then going onto becoming venerable in other paths.

This was the advantage of the sovereign immortal body!

The other venerables would only be able to stare at his growth.

Even though Spectral Soul knew how to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, after failing in his pursuit of Fang Yuan, he had already fallen behind in terms of progress.

Fang Yuan had far greater potential for development than the current venerables.

At the same time, Central Continent, Spirit Affinity House.

In a certain Gu refinement secret room within Spirit Affinity House, Feng Jin Huang’s Gu refinement was reaching its crucial stage.

"I am about to succeed." Feng Jin Huang’s eyes shined: "As long as I refine this dream path mortal Gu, I will have defensive abilities in dream realms. This is definitely a huge breakthrough... urgh!"

Suddenly, the light in front of Feng Jin Huang exploded, the Gu refinement failed as she coughed out a mouthful of blood, falling down.

"How did this happen?!" Feng Jin Huang was extremely shocked, this was not supposed to happen, the dream path mortal Gu recipe had been checked more than ten times, how could there be a mistake?

Even if any mistake was present, it should not have triggered at this crucial point.

"This is not a problem with my Gu recipe, the problem is the Gu material!" Feng Jin Huang’s head was hurting greatly, but she still understood what had happened.

"When refining the Gu, I did my inspection. The Gu materials must have been tampered with, and it must be the work of an immortal, that is why I could not notice it."

"I was plotted against."

"Someone wants me dead!"

Thinking of this, a deep chill emerged from the depths of Feng Jin Huang’s heart.

She struggled to get up but halfway, she fell over.

Her face was pale as her aura weakened, the strength in her body dissipated as well.

"I am going to die here." Feng Jin Huang gritted her teeth as tears appeared in her eyes. her beautiful and elegant face was plastered on the cold ground, she had no strength to raise it herself.

"Master..." Before dying, Feng Jin Huang thought of Duke Long, her mother, and her father.

"I am not willing to die here!" Feng Jin Huang shouted in her heart.

Suddenly, she heard some quarreling outside.

"Fairy, fairy, you cannot go in!"

"I, Zhao Lian Yun, am the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House, I can use any Gu refinement room I want, why can’t I choose this best room?"

"Fairy, this room has been taken already, you barged in like this, what if an accident occurs when the person inside is refining Gu..."

"Accident? Hmph! How can there be any accident?" The moment she said that, there was a loud sound, the third door of the secret room was forcefully opened.

"Ah, what is going on?" The Gu Master in charge of the Gu refinement secret room became pale with shock.

"Her Gu refinement failed, she suffered a backlash. Quickly give way, how can a Gu Master like you save her from these injuries?" Zhao Lian Yun pushed the Gu Master aside, a dark light flickering in her eyes.

The Gu Master was covered in sweat, thinking about the history between Feng Jin Huang and Zhao Lian Yun, she was flustered and did not know what to do.

"Aren’t you scramming? If you interrupt my healing, can you bear the consequences?" Zhao Lian Yun called out again.

The Gu Master gritted her teeth: "Fairy... ah!"

Zhao Lian Yun waved her hand, a lump of profound light sent the Gu Master flying far away.

Zhao Lian Yun approached Feng Jin Huang as she squatted down.

The two peerless beauties looked at each other.

The Gu refinement secret room fell into dead silence.

This was truly a twist of fate, the two of them had reversed statuses at the moment.

Feng Jin Huang was not flustered in the face of death, she said calmly: "So you are the ones who want me dead."

She was intelligent, after seeing Zhao Lian Yun, she thought of Li Jun Ying and Xu Hao. The latter two had deep grudges with Feng Jiu Ge.

Zhao Lian Yun sighed as she extended her hand towards Feng Jin Huang.

Feng Jin Huang had no strength to resist, her vision fell into darkness.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Water vapor surged, three Gu Immortals flew rapidly among the clouds.

"Faster, faster!" The Gu Immortal in front was the current first supreme elder of Spirit Affinity House.

The three Spirit Affinity House immortals that were moving showed unease and anxiety on their faces.

It turned out that after Zhao Lian Yun forcefully sent the rank five Gu Master guarding the Gu refinement room away, this Gu Master felt very worried and went to inform the higher-ups of Spirit Affinity House.

After receiving the news, first supreme elder and the rest could not wait any more, they quickly rushed towards the place!

Nothing had to happen to Feng Jin Huang!

Earlier, even though Feng Jiu Ge betrayed them in the fate war and caused Fairy Bai Qing and Feng Jin Huang to fall from grace, Heavenly Court dealt with the issue calmly, they did not punish the two of them.

According to the rules of the righteous path, they could not punish them. This was because Feng Jin Huang and Fairy Bai Qing did not betray their sect, Feng Jin Huang was even the disciple of Duke Long.

During the pursuit of Fang Yuan, Qin Ding Ling handed out emergency orders. Spirit Affinity House’s first supreme elder personally controlled the Immortal Gu House and brought Feng Jin Huang to the battlefield, where she collected all of the dream realms that Fang Yuan left behind.

Feng Jin Huang made a huge contribution in this battle!

Before the first supreme elder left, Qin Ding Ling secretly transmitted to her and said: "Take good care of Feng Jin Huang. Even with the destruction of fate Gu, dream path is still the future trend of the world."

Spirit Affinity House instantly understood the intention of Heavenly Court — they still thought highly of Feng Jin Huang and wanted to nurture her. All of the dream realms that Feng Jin Huang collected were kept with her, Heavenly Court did not take a single one away!

The three immortals flew into the Gu refinement secret room directly.

"Fairy Lian Yun, you need to calm down... hmm?" The three immortals were surprised.

They did not see Feng Jin Huang’s corpse, instead, they saw that Feng Jin Huang and Zhao Lian Yun were facing each other.

Traces of blood was still seen on Feng Jin Huang’s lips but using their investigative methods, the three immortals found that she was very healthy, completely uninjured.

"What is going on?"

"Did Zhao Lian Yun really save Feng Jin Huang?"

"This is too strange. Zhao Lian Yun has always been part of the anti-Feng faction, Feng Jin Huang failed her Gu refinement this time, she came at a peculiar timing, she evidently wanted to deal a fatal blow. Why did this happen?"

The three immortals were unable to understand.

Looking at the situation, Feng Jin Huang had the upper hand, while Zhao Lian Yun’s expression was quite ugly.

"Feng Jin Huang, very well done!" Zhao Lian Yun looked at Feng Jin Huang deeply in the eyes, she spoke with deep meaning before leaving.

She walked past the three immortals without even greeting them, this went against her usual demeanor, it showed how terrible her mood was.

Feng Jin Huang wiped the blood traces off her lips as she smiled and greeted the three supreme elders.

The three immortals quickly understood the reason, they sighed in their hearts.

"This must be due to Feng Jin Huang’s plan, she must have sensed something and went along with the scheme to lure out the enemies, causing Zhao Lian Yun to expose herself."

"Ever since the fate war, Feng Jin Huang’s improvement has been very evident. Predicaments truly help to train people."

"But what should we do about their conflict?"

The three immortals were secretly troubled.

On one hand, there was the anti-Feng faction, Li Jun Ying and Xu Hao were the pillars holding this faction up, they helped Zhao Lian Yun become the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House. With her addition, the faction was already the number one force within Spirit Affinity House.

On the other hand, there were Fairy Bai Qing and Feng Jin Huang. This mother and daughter pair was not easy to deal with, they had deep foundations. Even though Feng Jin Huang seemed to have lost her grace, she was still very important to Heavenly Court. After all, her father was Feng Jiu Ge, even though he betrayed the righteous path, as long as he was not dead, Spirit Affinity House could not ignore his existence!

The conflict between the two factions became the greatest internal threat of Spirit Affinity House, but the first supreme elder was unable to do anything.

"Feng Jin Huang, if you want to refine Gu in the future, you can come to my mountain peak." The first supreme elder looked at Feng Jin Huang for a while before speaking amicably.

She pretended not to know about the fact that Zhao Lian Yun came to find trouble earlier.

There was no direct evidence.

The only evidence was the Gu refinement materials, but they were destroyed already.

Even if there was evidence, the first supreme elder would likely not want to deal with it. Having it manifest now would just trigger the internal threat, causing the decline of the sect.

The first supreme elder was very mature. She knew that Spirit Affinity House had fallen into some internal strife now, it was like a volcano bound to erupt soon. She needed to use a pot lid and cover the top, stalling for as much time as she could. During this period, she had to dig some routes to redirect the lava away and release the inner pressure to stabilize the situation.

Zhao Lian Yun returned to her mountain with a livid expression.

She did not enter the hall, she stood on the mountain peak, looking at the dark weather.

She knew that someone would come.

As expected, a while later, Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying flew over together.

This couple’s expressions were not good, along the way, they already knew that the plan had failed. But they still needed to find out the details from Zhao Lian Yun herself.

Before Xu Hao or Li Jun Ying spoke, Zhao Lian Yun already asked them: "How did Feng Jin Huang find out the flaw in the Gu materials? Do you have anything to say about this failure?"

Xu Hao was silent.

Li Jun Ying said grimly: "I underestimated Feng Jin Huang. Lian Yun, you know about my title as Illusory Fairy, I am skilled at such things. Especially when I became a shadow path great grandmaster recently, even if the Gu material were to be placed in front of first supreme elder, she might not have found out."

Zhao Lian Yun’s expression was cold as she waved her sleeves in anger: "But it happened anyway, what explanation do you have?"

Xu Hao spoke: "Maybe Duke Long left Feng Jin Huang some defensive methods. Or maybe this is the power of dream path. After all, we are not familiar with dream path, that demon Fang Yuan has also relied on dream path to fight strong enemies while he was weak."

Xu Hao continued: "Alright, this was our mistake. Fairy Lian Yun, according to our agreement, after helping us with this matter, we no longer owe each other anything. Since this plan failed, let it be, it was our fault after all, we will treat it as a completed task. From today onwards, we do not owe each other anything!"

Hearing his words, Li Jun Ying showed anxiety on her face, she wanted to speak, but Xu Hao stopped her with his hand.

Zhao Lian Yun’s expression eased at this moment, she nodded at the two immortals before turning around and leaving without speaking.

The two immortals saw that Zhao Lian Yun went into her palace, they had to return.

Along the way, Li Jun Ying said angrily: "If not for our help, how could this Zhao Lian Yun have gotten the divine concealment of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance? If not for our help, how could she have become the current generation fairy? She actually wants to keep a clear distance from us now, she is truly an ingrate. And husband, you actually let her off so easily, do you know that she is the best weapon for us to deal with Feng Jiu Ge! To think that you are a wisdom path cultivator, sigh."

Xu Hao smiled: "My dear wife, don’t worry. Even though we failed, there were gains too. Firstly, we learned about Heavenly Court’s intentions through the first supreme elder’s actions. Secondly, we now have Zhao Lian Yun on our side for good. Thirdly, we also found out some of Feng Jin Huang’s abilities."

Li Jun Ying was slightly dazed before she realized: "That’s right, even though we failed, Zhao Lian Yun also became enemies with Feng Jin Huang. Even if we do not look for Zhao Lian Yun, Feng Jin Huang will eventually ’repay’ her for this, the enemy of an enemy is a friend, so she is still on our side."

"Precisely." Xu Hao nodded.

Li Jun Ying smiled: "Husband, you are really a wisdom path cultivator, I was wrong earlier."

Xu Hao smiled, showing a gaze full of bitterness: "Feng Jin Huang is truly the daughter of Feng Jiu Ge, her attitude, talent, and dream path methods surpass my expectations. Our original plan was to use Feng Jin Huang as the bait to lure Feng Jiu Ge into attacking Spirit Affinity House angrily, to make him conflict with Heavenly Court."

Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying’s target was still Feng Jiu Ge after all.

Even though Feng Jiu Ge was strong and even ten of Li Jun Ying and Xu Hao together could not fight him, was there really a need to face him in combat?

Humans were the spirit of living beings, there were many ways to kill an enemy stronger than yourself.

Xu Hao, who cultivated wisdom path, thought of a plan to use Heavenly Court as the blade to exterminate Feng Jiu Ge.

This was the flair of a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he was skilled at using other people or situations to achieve his goal!

"This plan failed, I truly underestimated Feng Jin Huang. After this, she will definitely stay by her mother’s side, we will not have many opportunities to strike again in the future." Xu Hao was very worried.

Feng Jiu Ge had once suppressed Xu Hao, causing him to live a life shrouded by darkness. This was their grudge.

When Feng Jiu Ge was in Spirit Affinity House, his family occupied all of the resources, causing Li Jun Ying and Xu Hao to progress slowly in cultivation. This involved their benefits.

Feng Jin Huang cultivated dream path and was highly regarded by Heavenly Court, she was the forerunner of the new era. This was a future threat.

Spirit Affinity House and Heavenly Court could not be depended on, the only one who could defend Xu Hao’s benefits was Xu Hao himself.

If he did not do his best, who would help him?

"The journey of cultivation involves competition and conflict, we can only win if we stake our lives on important gambles." Xu Hao muttered, determination flashing in his eyes again.

Some days later.

Eastern Sea.

On a nameless island in a nameless sea area, Fang Yuan let out his dream path clone.

"Start." Fang Yuan said plainly.

The dream path clone nodded as he took a deep breath, shattering his aperture at the next moment.

The complete Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique’s aperture was different from an ordinary rank five aperture, it was constantly alternating between shattering and forming at all times, yet its aperture wall had a thin layer that was able to fix this dream path aperture in place.

At this time, Fang Yuan’s dream path clone only used primeval essence to assault the wall before it shattered.

At the next moment, formless heavenly power surged towards him from all over the place as the pure dream clone’s body started to rise into the air.

Rumble!

Clouds gathered in the sky as thunder rumbled.

The waves around the island became more intense, soon turning into huge tides!

The environment became quite hostile, using Gu worms in this area, be they immortal or mortal, would result in backlash.

If the backlash was severe, even Immortal Gu would be destroyed!

Heaven’s will was seemingly enraged!

Fang Yuan was a hated scoundrel, he actually wanted to become a dream path Gu Immortal in advance.

This was not part of the plan of heaven’s will.

This went against the arrangement of fate.

It could not be spared!

It could not be forgiven!

Fang Yuan looked up at the sky, his gaze was peaceful yet determined.

So what if the Heavenly Dao did not allow it?

Then contest!

Then fight!

In this world, the most reliable thing was neither your clan or sect, nor your family or lover, it was yourself.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan’s pure dream clone had already shattered his aperture to start the immortal ascension.

Once this process started, it could not be stopped. Either he became an immortal or he would face failure in death!

Heaven qi poured down like a calm yet swift breeze, earth qi rose up with a heavy and stable feeling.

The pure dream clone emitted a dense human qi as well.

The complete Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique was the eleventh extreme physique, it contained an immense amount of human qi to begin with.

As the three qi converged, qi currents surged and intertwined, creating a huge cocoon that enveloped the pure dream clone’s entire body tightly, leaving no gaps outside.

At this juncture, Gu Masters had to be mindful to regulate the three qi and fuse them together. The three qi had to be balanced, if human qi was slightly in excess, it would lead to self-detonation. If heaven qi was slightly more, the Gu Master would dissolve into the sky. If earth qi was slightly denser, the Gu

Master would turn into a fossil and suffocate to death.

This step was precarious.

But Fang Yuan had absolute confidence in the pure dream clone.

He had already given the pure dream clone an abundance of memories regarding immortal ascension. This not only included Fang Yuan himself but also those he soul searched. For example, the Northern Plains Gu Immortals like Hei Cheng, or Southern Border Gu Immortals like Xia Cha, there were also many Eastern Sea, Central Continent, and Western Desert Gu Immortals that Fang Yuan harmed.

In the long history of Gu cultivation, in terms of immortal ascension experience, the pure dream clone’s accumulation was definitely rare.

The difficulty of the pure dream clone’s immortal ascension was not the three qi, but the tribulation!

In the sky, heaven and earth qi rumbled like a turbulent sea. A vast amount of pink fog covered the sky of a few thousand li, it was grand and majestic, emitting a dense aura of dream path.

Fang Yuan’s main body was solemnly awaiting it, this immortal ascension definitely enraged heaven’s will greatly, the difficulty was far beyond ordinary.

Bam bam bam...

At the next moment, rumbling thunder could be heard unceasingly.

Within the sea of pink clouds, more than ten balls of light shot down.

These balls were all pink in color, they were large as mountains, the surfaces were smooth without any impurities.

The balls of light did not move quickly, they gave people a feeling of being weightless.

As the ten pink balls descended, they were aimed at the pure dream clone who was floating in the air.

Fang Yuan immediately acted to obstruct them.

There were countless thoughts accumulated in his mind, at once, his thoughts collided, killer moves were unleashed in rapid succession, creating a huge sky of fireworks that blocked the ten pink balls.

The following scene was a slight shock to Fang Yuan.

One pink ball shattered into countless bubbles that spread in the sky.

One pink ball engulfed everything in its path as it expanded by several times.

One pink ball shattered and turned into desolate beast nightmare demonic colts, rapidly approaching the pure dream clone.

One pink ball turned into a lump of dream realms that flew over.

One pink ball turned into a dream path Immortal Gu, rapidly vanishing into thin air.

...

The ten pink balls had varying effects, it was a chaotic scene!

Any ordinary Gu Immortal would have flustered by now, but with Fang Yuan’s deep wisdom path attainment, he made the most appropriate reaction right away.

He first released the desolate level year beasts in his immortal aperture to resist the nightmare demonic colts.

Next, he waved his sleeves, dense smoke flew out and captured all of the dream butterflies that got close to the pure dream clone.

After that, he used pure dream reality seeker transformation on the dream realm!

But this dream realm still approached the top of the pure dream clone’s head as its form changed violently, resisting Fang Yuan’s pure dream reality seeker transformation.

"It seems that this dream realm contains heaven’s will." Fang Yuan did not worry.

Even though he had not undergone a dream path immortal ascension before, he had already made many deductions regarding this.

This was one of the scenarios that he deduced.

A large amount of wisdom path and dream path Gu worms were rapidly activated in the sovereign immortal aperture, they formed a killer move, heaven’s will dissipation.

This killer move was modified by Fang Yuan, it was originally able to dispel the heaven’s will in dream realms but the efficiency was too low. After modification, by adding in dream path Immortal Gu, the speed became faster.

However, the brand new heaven’s will dissipation could not work on this dream realm.

"What is going on?" Fang Yuan frowned.

At the next moment, thoughts collided in his mind, inspiration flashed.

"This dream realm is fake!"

"This is why pure dream reality seeker transformation did not work earlier. Even if I use heaven’s will dissipation, the result is the same."

"But in that case..." A dark light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes as he hesitated for once: "Looking at the scene in front of me, what is real and what is fake?"

The seemingly chaotic tribulation had real and fake elements to it.

But even with Fang Yuan’s strength, he could not tell.

One skill to dominate the world, this was the power of dream path, even Fang Yuan’s main body succumbed to it unknowingly.

"Indeed, the pure dream clone is only undergoing immortal ascension, the tribulation cannot be this powerful. There were desolate beasts and dream path Immortal Gu... Why did I not realize this earlier?"

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk uncontrollably.

The dream path tribulation was truly peculiar, not only could it blur reality and truth, it could even silently affect Fang Yuan’s thoughts and mental state.

Dream armor Immortal Gu had been given to the pure dream clone long ago, Fang Yuan quickly used his compound killer move.

Using dreaming Immortal Gu as the core, his body started to shine in a layer of profound light, it was able to defend against some dream path abilities.

Fang Yuan instantly felt his mind clearing up, he was no longer disrupted when thinking.

But that did not help the tribulation that the clone was facing.

At this time, Fang Yuan could only stop his actions!

Just a mere rank six tribulation was able to force the pseudo venerable Fang Yuan to no longer take action.

Because soon, Fang Yuan realized that he could not decipher the reality and illusion of this scene, was that the case for the pure dream clone too?

Even though Fang Yuan felt that the pure dream clone’s cocoon had never changed location, it was likely that its traces had already been concealed.

If Fang Yuan did anything now, he might be killing the pure dream clone in reality!

At this time, dream path defensive methods became extremely precious.

Fang Yuan did not move, he let the dream path tribulation hit him, only using the compound killer move to defend himself.

As for the pure dream clone, he was defended by dream armor Immortal Gu.

The pure dream clone did not have the sovereign immortal body, he could not use Fang Yuan’s compound killer moves.

The pure dream clone also had to stabilize the three qi, he could not divert his precious thoughts into activating any dream path killer moves.

The truth was, Fang Yuan was only a dream path master, he could not create dream path killer moves compatible with the pure dream clone in this short period of time.

Thus, the pure dream clone directly activated dream armor Immortal Gu instead.

Even though dream armor Immortal Gu was rank seven, the pure dream clone had the immortal essence that the main body gave him.

Fang Yuan was very patient, he watched the dream realm descend upon his clone, he watched as the nightmare demonic colts got free from the year beasts and attacked the pure dream clone.

The dream path tribulation lasted for over forty-five minutes before the clouds in the sky dissipated.

Heaven and earth was clear again.

As heaven and earth qi faded away, the sea became calm again.

The nightmare demonic colts on the ground returned to their original form, they were actually the desolate level year beasts that Fang Yuan released earlier.

As expected, the cocoon was not far away, it was to the left of Fang Yuan!

This discovery made Fang Yuan’s heart turn cold. The cocoon was at a dangerous spot, if Fang Yuan used any killer move, he could likely implicate it.

By then, Fang Yuan’s main body would be the culprit that killed the pure dream clone!

The dream path immortal ascension was truly dangerous.

If Fang Yuan took risks, it was likely that his main body would be the biggest obstacle for his clone’s tribulation. Thankfully, Fang Yuan was vigilant and only did the tribulation after getting dream armor Immortal Gu.

Even so, this immortal ascension was very dangerous, he almost failed to pass it.

"This dream path tribulation even managed to affect my main body, let’s call it bewildering illusion dream tribulation." Even though Fang Yuan also had a compound killer move that contained dreaming Immortal Gu and could be used for investigation, this killer move was clearly not enough to decipher the truth.

The key was that he had too few dream path Immortal Gu.

Dream Armor was with the clone, the main body only had rank seven Dreaming and rank eight Dream Token.

If Dream Token was used alone, the user would die from using it, because this Immortal Gu uses all of the Gu Immortal’s foundation (immortal essence, emotions, true meaning) to create a dream realm.

The size and power of the dream realm would depend on the situation.

Back then, Wu Shuai was a peak rank eight Gu Immortal, he was a quasi-supreme grandmaster in enslavement path, after sacrificing his life, Dragon Palace gained the power to enslave the Four Dragon Generals.

Dream Token was very hard to use alone, killer moves that used it as the core were very difficult to activate. In Fang Yuan’s case, it was not even as useful as rank seven dreaming Immortal Gu.

The three qi fused into one lump.

The pure dream clone tossed a rank five dream butterfly mortal Gu into it.

At the next moment, there was a loud sound as the three qi exploded, creating an immortal aperture.

With the creation of the immortal aperture, it started to absorb the surrounding heaven and earth qi of the pure dream clone in a frenzy and grew rapidly.

The pure dream clone put in dream armor Immortal Gu and the rest, quickly soothing the three qi and stabilizing the newly created blessed land.

The blessed land was completed, even though it was not comparable to the sovereign immortal aperture, it was a super grade blessed land, far beyond high grade.

The complete pure dream clone had a ten extreme physique, thus, it was not strange to have a super grade blessed land that only ten extreme physiques could obtain.

With the blessed land, a portion of heaven and earth qi still remained.

The pure dream clone used the chance to refine his vital Gu.

The dream butterfly mortal Gu that he tossed in earlier was his vital Gu.

During the resonance with heaven and earth earlier, he learned of three dream path Immortal Gu recipes from natural inspiration, dream butterfly Immortal Gu was one of them.

Dream butterfly Immortal Gu successfully became rank six, Fang Yuan finally had a total of four dream path Immortal Gu now!

After the Immortal Gu was refined, new dream path tribulations appeared in the blessed land, but the might was far lower than the immortal ascension tribulation.

This time, Fang Yuan’s main body did not need to do anything.

Fang Yuan gave dreaming Immortal Gu to the pure dream clone, the latter used the three Immortal Gu to pass the tribulation.

"Dreamy light smoke of the otherworldly guest,"

"Calling out the inner soul of my nightly dream."

"Even if this is not fated for a hundred years,"

"I leave behind this mortal shell to seek reality in my dream."

After the tribulation, the pure dream clone sang his poem, he placed his palm by his chest, bowing at the main body: "From today onwards, my name is Meng Qiu Zhen[1]."

Fang Yuan laughed: "Good name. Meng Qiu Zhen, show me your dream path blessed land."

He was very interested in the dream path blessed land.

This dream path super grade blessed land had a total of 8000 km2 of land, the rate of time was forty-six times, the immortal aperture origin core would produce fifty-five green grape immortal essence each year.

This was the standard of a super grade blessed land, there was nothing out of the norm.

The truly satisfactory thing for Fang Yuan was the special environment of the blessed land.

"This is the best location to nurture dream path immortal material, the potential for development is huge, it did not disappoint me after all." After some observation, Fang Yuan was quite satisfied.

The severe lack of dream path immortal materials had always troubled him.

With this dream path immortal aperture, he had a foundation to develop more immortal materials.

Throughout history, the signature development of a new path was the emergence of Gu Immortals that cultivate the path! Because of the unique and enclosed environment, the Gu Immortal’s immortal aperture could rapidly grow a large amount of immortal materials of that path, these immortal materials would flow into the market and push the path to prosper and progress.

[1] Literally Dream Reality Seeker, he uses a part of the physique as his name, this is also what the last part of the poem refers to.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Kill, kill him!"

"Don’t let him bring the Immortal Gu away!"

"That Immortal belongs to me, Gu Diao Gui Men, don’t think of leaving."

The pursuing group was closing in, Feng Jin Huang had two paths ahead of her to choose from.

Only one could allow her to escape, the other path would lead to Diao Gui Men’s blessed land headquarters.

Feng Jin Huang did not hesitate, she chose the left path and rushed out.

With a loud sound, the view before her shined brightly.

Feng Jin Huang was slightly dazed, she soon found that her soul had returned to the outside world. The dream realm from earlier had already vanished.

"I passed the dream realm, as expected, that wild soul path Immortal Gu is the key!" After her soul returned to her body, Feng Jin Huang showed an excited expression: "This time, my soul path attainment level rose. Dream path master attainment level is really helpful when exploring dream realms."

Ever since that dangerous situation in the Gu refinement secret room, Feng Jin Huang benefited from the ordeal instead and advanced to dream path master.

The last scene of the dream realm earlier was also Feng Jin Huang’s first attempt, she did not know which way was the right one. But at the crucial moment, her dream path master instincts told her which was the correct route to take.

"It is a pity that I cannot control the instinct gained by becoming a dream path master, it works at times but does not have effect at other times."

"If I can become a dream path grandmaster, this instinct will be many times stronger, I can even use dream path Gu worms to form killer moves that mimic other paths as well."

Feng Jin Huang sighed internally.

This advancement to dream path master was already an incredible experience to her, she had been fortunate to succeed after facing immense danger and the threat of death.

Feng Jin Huang could clearly feel that her understanding and accumulated knowledge of dream path had been used up, she barely became a dream path master. To raise her attainment level again, she would need to accumulate more foundation next, this would take a long time.

After packing up, Feng Jin Huang stood up and pushed the door of the cultivation secret room open.

Passing the long walkway, she arrived in the living room.

Fairy Bai Qing had already cooked food, the table was full of delicacies.

Seeing Feng Jin Huang, Fairy Bai Qing smiled: "Huang Er, has your cultivation for today ended? Looking at your expression, you must have succeeded."

"Indeed, mother. Dream path master attainment level is truly phenomenal, it is so helpful for my dream realm explorations!" Feng Jin Huang sat down and described the final scene of the dream realm: "If not for my instincts, my soul would have gotten heavily injured now."

Fairy Bai Qing’s smile faded away: "I’ve already looked into it, that situation is quite clear now. The ones plotting against you are Li Jun Ying and Xu Hao. Li Jun Ying secretly became a shadow path great grandmaster but kept a low profile, allowing her to tamper with the Gu materials. But eventually, Zhao Lian Yun did not harm you but saved you instead. I am truly seeing this otherworldly demon in another light. No wonder she could become the current generation fairy, it was not just because she was the lucky person who received love Gu’s recognition."

Feng Jin Huang had a complex expression on her face.

She recalled the scene in the secret room, fear still lingering in her heart.

Back then, she was completely defenseless, she was fish on the chopping block, Zhao Lian Yun could decide her life and death.

Even though Feng Jin Huang survived without any danger in the end, this situation still stirred her inner heart greatly!

Fairy Bai Qing continued to speak: "Huang Er, I have already inspected your body, there are no problems. Did Zhao Lian Yun really just save you, she did not list any requests?"

Feng Jin Huang shook her head: "Even though she did not say it, I have already guessed her plan. After all, her eventual goal is very obvious. Mother, forget about this, let’s eat! After eating, I need to continue exploring dream realms."

Fairy Bai Qing nodded: "As long as you know what you are doing. But cultivating day and night all the time is no good, cultivation has its own pace to follow."

"Mother!" Feng Jin Huang interrupted Fairy Bai Qing: "I know about the concept of pacing myself, but I also know that I need to be stronger. I can only protect you when I am stronger, I do not want to be the one who is constantly protected. Only by getting stronger can I fulfill master’s dying wish and become a dream path Gu Immortal. Only by getting stronger can I make people like Zhao Lian Yun and Fang Yuan unable to bully and plot against me. Only by getting stronger can I face my father directly and engage with him in a fight to show him my true goals!"

Fairy Bai Qing was dazed for a moment.

Feng Jin Huang’s eyes were seemingly emitting bright light, two rays of light shot into Fairy Bai Qing’s heart.

Fairy Bai Qing held down her worries as she smiled: "Huang Er, since you have made your decision, go ahead and do it. I will support you all the way! If you have any needs, I will do my best to help you."

Feng Jin Huang left her seat and came to Fairy Bai Qing, she held her mother’s hands: "Mother, I know you love me. Do you have any method to get guts Gu? I need guts Gu the most now."

Fairy Bai Qing smiled bitterly: "Oh Huang Er, this request is too much for me. You know that guts Gu is only produced on Dang Hun Mountain, and this mountain is in the hands of that demon Gu Yue Fang Yuan, he has already stopped selling guts Gu publicly for a long time now. All of the guts Gu in the market are just the remaining stock that he sold in the past, with the quantity dwindling, the price is also getting higher."

Feng Jin Huang sighed: "Mother, you know that many methods can heal my soul but they will have certain side effects, nothing can match guts Gu. I must become a dream path Gu Immortal, if my soul has too many varying dao marks at that time, it will limit my future potential."

Fairy Bai Qing patted Feng Jin Huang’s hands: "I will do my best, sigh, if only your father was here..."

Feng Jin Huang’s expression changed as she said in displeasure: "Mother, don’t mention him in front of me!"

"Alright, alright, I won’t talk about him."

At the same time, Affection Peak.

"To think that the sect sent you to convince me." The owner of Affection Peak, Zhao Lian Yun, looked at the person with a smile.

Bu Zhen Zi smiled bitterly: "Fairy, please don’t take offense. This was a task given to me, I had no choice but to come here and talk to you."

Zhao Lian Yun’s smile widened: "You are too polite. Back then, when we went to Northern Plains and fought on Snowy Mountain, if not for your protection, I would have died already, please come in, I have prepared some tea for you."

Bu Zhen Zi was a rank seven Gu Immortal who cultivated phantom path, back then, he was ordered by the sect to protect Zhao Lian Yun, he showed a good performance in Reverse Flow River and was heavily nurtured after returning to the sect.

Spirit Affinity House’s higher-ups also considered this point, they sent Bu Zhen Zi here to convince Zhao Lian Yun to stop her actions.

Bu Zhen Zi arrived in the evening, when the tea ceremony ended, the moon had already appeared into the sky.

"Fairy, there is no need to send me off, I will take my leave now." Bu Zhen Zi cupped his fists, his expression was joyful, this discussion was quite successful, Zhao Lian Yun was far more magnanimous and easy-going than he had expected.

Zhao Lian Yun nodded: "Goodbye."

Bu Zhen Zi said sincerely: "Fairy, I have already understood your circumstances and problem, I will go and inform first supreme elder, please do not worry."

Zhao Lian Yun smiled: "I will have to trouble you then."

Zhao Lian Yun watched as Bu Zhen Zi left, even after his figure vanished into the clouds, she still remained standing at the top of Affection Peak.

Night winds howled, the surrounding mountains were covered in dense fog, nearly concealing even the bright moon in the sky.

This was Spirit Affinity House’s main headquarters, the moon in the sky was just an immortal formation in essence.

Zhao Lian Yun was dressed in white, her clothes moved along with the wind, she had long black silky hair and clear skin, her eyes were furrowed as she looked at the night sky.

She was Spirit Affinity House’s current generation fairy, her status was very high, even a rank seven expert like Bu Zhen Zi had to speak to her politely.

She had the Thieving Heaven true inheritance of divine concealment, she controlled love Gu, she could command people at will, it was really not easy for an otherworldly demon like her to reach this stage.

However, none of these made Zhao Lian Yun happy.

"Right now, I have become an immortal but you are not by my side. Sigh, being an immortal is no better than a mortal..."

The huge five regions and two heavens were still not her homeland, she could not truly feel at ease.

She was once favored by fortune, she encountered Ma Hong Yun, whom she entrusted her heart to.

But destiny was also cruel, she got separated from Ma Hong Yun, getting sold publicly as Feng Jiu Ge bought her, she participated in the Reverse Flow River battle but watched as Fang Yuan killed Ma Hong Yun in front of her.

She was used by Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying as a pawn, she had once knelt on the ground and begged, she tried all ways possible to become the current generation fairy.

She was given trouble at the secret inheritance peak, at that time, Spirit Affinity House’s Gu Immortals were very cold to her.

After hearing of Fang Zheng’s successful immortal ascension, she went to visit him and even brought gifts.

She helped Fang Zheng train his blood turns cold killer move.

With the help of Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying, she became the Affection Peak Lord. She knew about this couple’s scheme, but she had to agree to deal with Feng Jin Huang for them.

But not only did Feng Jin Huang not die, Zhao Lian Yun saved her instead.

This was Zhao Lian Yun’s scheme.

"Xu Hao and Li Jun Ying made use of me, but I can also make use of their hatred towards Feng Jiu Ge to manipulate them! If they want to deal with Feng Jiu Ge, they will need to rely on me. I can also use them to cultivate and grow faster. Thankfully, I have divine concealment, it allows me to face wisdom path Gu Immortals with ease."

"Bu Zhen Zi and I have some history of fighting together, we can become allies for benefits."

"Fang Zheng has already become the Demon Judgment Board Lord, my investment was truly worth it."

"And Feng Jin Huang also owes me this favor, maybe we can join hands to deal with Fang Yuan. After all, he snatched her Hu Immortal blessed land."

Zhao Lian Yun schemed with all her strength, a vague web that connected several forces was already forming around her.

She only had one goal, that was to retrieve Ma Hong Yun’s soul from Fang Yuan and revive her lover!

"Fang Yuan..." Zhao Lian Yun muttered, the worry on her face deepened immediately.

Fang Yuan was like the fog that covered this sky, he was grand and vast, compared to him, Zhao Lian Yun was insignificant and weak.

Her goal was like the moon in the sky, clouds covered it and hid everything from her, almost completely obscured.

She could not see the path ahead, she could not find a destination.

Zhao Lian Yun gritted her teeth, her body was like a weak white flower that would be blown away by the wind at any time.

But her eyes were still shining brightly.

"I need to persevere!"

"I cannot give up."

"If even I fail, then who can still save Hong Yun?"

"In this world, he can only rely on me. And I can only rely on myself!"

"Tomorrow, I will head to Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range. The traces of their fight can still be found there, I can gain first-hand information and deduce Fang Yuan’s current strength."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2092 Wang Xiao Er“s Amnesia

Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range.

In an ordinary and common cave, the four great obscenities of Central Continent chose to rest in this place.

Eastern Obscenity Chen Yin Dao, Western Thief Yu Ba Guang, Southern Disturbance Shi Bao and Northern Squandering Fan Chun Yao, they all had rank four cultivation level, they were infamous in Central Continent’s Gu Master world, they had taken the chastity and lives of many innocent girls.

At this time, these four men were standing in a circle, they stared at a young man who was unconscious, observing him.

"Why hasn’t he woken up yet?"

"He has been sleeping these last days, he has not even eaten anything but he is still full of vitality."

"Do you guys think he is an immortal?"

The four Gu Masters were talking about Wang Xiao Er.

Wang Xiao Er was an ordinary shepherd, but life was extremely cruel to him. During the battle to pursue Fang Yuan, the aftermath caused the mountain he lived on to be destroyed, all of his family members were dead.

But for some reason, Wang Xiao Er did not die, he even fell into this peculiar state.

"Think about it, when we first met him, the grass and flowers around him were blooming and dying constantly. He might be a Gu Immortal who joined that battle, he got injured and his enemies thought he was dead, but he used some method to preserve his life, except he fell into a coma afterwards." Yu Ba Guang tried to connect the events.

They were just Gu Masters after all, they did not have the information that Heavenly Court was spreading around in treasure yellow heaven.

"But if he is an immortal, why would an immortal dress like this?" Shi Bao pointed at Wang Xiao Er’s clothes as he showed a strange expression.

Wang Xiao Er’s clothes were tattered and patched up, he obviously had the lowest status in society, he was not even qualified to become a Gu Master.

Fan Chun Yao rubbed his chin: "If only we can soul search him, we would know the truth. But these days, even though we used all our soul searching methods, there was no effect. This is definitely something a Gu Master cannot do."

Soul searching methods had been widely spread ever since Spectral Soul created them, it was simply too convenient after all.

Any demonic path Gu Master who did not know a single soul searching method would be too ashamed to call themselves demonic.

The four Gu Masters gritted their teeth, they had never seen such a peculiar situation, they did not know what to do now.

Eight eyes stared at Wang Xiao Er fixedly.

Chen Yin Dao spoke: "Sigh, look at his motionless state, if only this were a female immortal."

The other three looked at each other.

"Hehehe." At the next moment, they chuckled knowingly.

After some silence, Shi Bao suddenly shouted: "Screw it, waiting like this will have no progress! I am going to take action."

"What are you thinking of doing?" Fan Chun Yao asked.

Shi Bao snickered: "This!"

Before finishing his words, he attacked abruptly, he activated an offensive Gu worm and shot out a red light at Wang Xiao Er.

"You are crazy!" The others were shocked.

But soon, all of their attention was drawn by the phenomenon around Wang Xiao Er.

They saw that traces of silver threads glowing around Wang Xiao Er, these threads easily blocked the red light, it weakened and dissipated instantly.

Shi Bao was dumbfounded, the others showed the same expression. They all knew that this was Shi Bao’s strongest method, but it was easily dispelled by this Wang Xiao Er.

"Looking at his aura alone, this is clearly just a mortal."

"But he managed to block Shi Bao’s attack in his sleep, this is something that even a rank five Gu Master has to block carefully."

"If he is not an immortal, what can he be? This is not something a Gu Master can do."

"Wait, his eyelids are moving!!!"

The four were shocked, the cave fell into dead silence.

Wang Xiao Er slowly opened his eyes, his vision was still blurred, his mind was in a mess.

He sat up.

Plop, plop... the four Gu Masters knelt down on the ground, shouting: "Immortal, spare us!"

Wang Xiao Er was shocked: "Who are you guys? Where am I? Wait, who am I?"

Wang Xiao Er hugged his head as pain could be seen on his face.

The four demonic path Gu Master looked at each other, a similar thought appeared in all their minds.

"Don’t tell me, the immortal... lost his memories?!"

Several days later.

In a valley at night, a raging bonfire was burning.

"Come, drink wine!" Chen Yin Dao placed his arm around Wang Xiao Er’s shoulder as he took out the precious wine that was kept for years, offering it to him.

Wang Xiao Er’s face was already red, he was covered in the odor of alcohol.

Once he took the bowl, Shi Bao smiled as he handed the fragrant barbecued meat to Wang Xiao Er.

"Come, eat, little brother." Shi Bao’s tone was so mushy he even felt like vomiting, this evil individual had never been so nice to anyone.

Wang Xiao Er was not only looking rosy, even his clothes had changed, the quality was much better than before.

He drank wine and ate meat as he said: "Brothers, you are really nice people, not only did you save me, you are treating me so well."

"Don’t mention it!" Chen Yin Dao patted Wang Xiao Er’s shoulder: "It was fate that we met."

At the same time, his heart was bleeding internally: "My wine that has been kept for more than ten years, I couldn’t even bear to drink it myself!"

"We are all people in the same situation, this is nothing." Yu Ba Guang returned, he had just arranged some investigative Gu worms in the surroundings, he showed an honest and dependable smile.

"Rely on family when at home, rely on friends when outside. As long as everyone helps each other, I believe this world will become a better place!" Seeing the other three’s performances, Fan Chun Yao did not want to fall behind as well.

They were all shocked by the scene in the cave earlier. After confirming that Wang Xiao Er was a Gu Immortal who had lost his memories, they decided to treat him like their own ancestor.

After all, if Wang Xiao Er regains his memories in the future, seeing how well the four of them treated him, he would not do anything bad to them.

Wang Xiao Er drank wine and ate meat, after filling his stomach, he went to sleep on the comfortable and large bed that the four of them prepared.

He had truly gotten amnesiac.

Even though he did not lose his ability to function as a person, he could not remember any of the details of his past.

During this period, the four Gu Masters had brought him back to the ruins but his memories did not return.

All that happened was that Wang Xiao Er remembered his own name, he told the four great obscenities.

Wang Xiao Er felt that life was very blissful.

But the other four Gu Masters felt like life was currently torture.

Since when did these four demonic path Gu Masters act so subserviently before? They were ruthless and cruel, they did things without worry, why would they put up this groveling attitude?

Thus, a few days later, these four Gu Masters could not take it anymore.

"Guys, even though I want to know the immortal ascension method from this immortal, this life is really too hard to live."

"I know, we have to be careful all the time, it is really stifling."

"My worry is, if this Gu Immortal recovers his memories, will he really reward us?"

"If he is a righteous path Gu Immortal, he will easily learn of our past deeds. What will he do to demonic path members like us?"

"If he is a demonic path Gu Immortal, if he recalls the scene of us attacking him, will he rip out our tendons and skin?"

The four of them had deep chemistry after years of living together, their thoughts were quite similar.

The four of them discussed for a while, they decided to get away from Wang Xiao

Er.

Life was too painful while reward was nowhere in sight, in fact, they might be awaiting death instead.

"How can we get free from Wang Xiao Er?"

"We can’t leave too directly, if he regains his memories, wouldn’t he come after us for trouble?"

"I have a good idea."

"Tell us, tell us."

"We are currently here, there is slaughter soul crater nearby, we will enter this place and get free from this problematic person!"

The next day.

The four Gu Masters brought Wang Xiao Er deep into slaughter soul crater.

Slaughter soul crater had a plain terrain, but the actual environment was very complicated.

This place was part of Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range, it was originally an ordinary mountain that had nothing special in it. But after the huge battle involving Fang Yuan, this place was implicated.

At that time, Black Heaven Temple’s Gu Immortals witnessed themselves how this slaughter soul sunken land formed.

Spectral Soul shot out a black soul ball but Dragon Palace dodged it.

This soul ball shot into the mountain valley.

There was no sound, at the instance, with the valley as the core, the surrounding thousand li of mountains and valleys turned into black dust that flew away with the wind. The originally bountiful mountains vanished soundlessly, only a huge crater was left.

The crater was formed by Spectral Soul’s killer move, it was filled with soul path dao marks.

The living beings who had once lived here were wiped out, but their souls remained.

Soul path dao marks, wind path dao marks, earth path dao marks, and others converged to form a dense fog, all sorts of soul beasts started to live in the fog.

The surrounding living beings either entered by mistake or were attacked by the soul beasts, either way, the more living beings that died here, the more souls that remained, this slaughter soul crater’s fog became increasingly denser.

The five of them carefully avoided many strong soul beasts, they went to the center of slaughter soul crater.

Yu Ba Guang made an excuse of scouting the area as he left, the other four did not move away.

Wang Xiao Er did not understand the situation, he asked: "Brothers, why are we here?"

"Clearly, we want to leave you here. Of course, we won’t do it directly, we will lure some soul beasts here and pretend to be outmatched, in order to protect you, we will lure these soul beasts away while risking our lives." Chen Yin Dao smiled to himself as he thought.

Other than putting up a show, the four great obscenities also had another thought.

In the event that this immortal died at the hands of the soul beasts, would he leave any inheritance behind?

Those who were in the demonic path were normally people with extraordinary guts.

The four great obscenities were outstanding members in this aspect.

Chen Yin Dao did not speak the truth of course, he patted Wang Xiao Er’s shoulder: "Brother, we came to Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range to collect some Gu materials. This slaughter soul crater was created by the fight between immortals, before it calms down completely, we have a lot of opportunities to get rich here."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Slaughter soul crater was still forming now, during the process of conflicting with the surroundings, many gaps would naturally appear. After it stabilizes and reaches balance with the surroundings, the living beings would return inside, beast groups and beast kings would guard their own territories and expand the crater. By then, outsiders would not be able to enter easily.

Right at this time, the howling of soul beasts could suddenly be heard.

Chen Yin Dao was slightly surprised: "Yu Ba Guang’s ability to lure beasts has increased."

But soon, they found something amiss.

What lured the soul beasts here was not Yu Ba Guang, but a group of Central Continent righteous path Gu Masters.

These people passed the soul fog and arrived in front of Chen Yin Dao, they were at first happy to see reinforcements but soon, their expressions changed.

Someone shouted: "Oh no, the four great obscenities!"

After observing the situation, Chen Yin Dao relaxed and smiled coldly as a sharp gaze flashed in his eyes: "This is my lucky day."

An intense battle ensued.

The Central Continent four great obscenities obtained great victory.

Not only did they kill some soul beasts, they even captured some righteous path Gu Masters alive.

"What a coincidence, these five remaining ones are all girls."

"Look at this one, she looks really cute."

"This one is not bad too."

"My favorite is this one, look at her tiny mouth and big eyes!"

The four demonic path Gu Masters assessed the girls with increasing fondness.

As their captives, the female Gu Masters were extremely fearful.

"What are you trying to do!"

"I’m warning you, don’t have any evil thoughts, otherwise, even if I die, I won’t let you succeed!"

"Hmph, I am a Gu Master of Spirit Affinity House, consider the consequences before you act."

Facing the threats of the girls, the four great obscenities laughed wildly instead.

"Yes, this is what I like, I love this expression."

"Go on and scream, shout louder, nobody is going to save you!"

"So what if you are from Spirit Affinity House? Back then, we even targeted Heavenly Lotus Sect’s Fairy Bi Xia. It was a pity that guy called Fang Zheng ruined it. Hmph, we will find him and settle the score eventually."

The four great obscenities slowly approached the female captives as they chuckled lewdly to themselves.

"Brothers, what are you guys doing?" Wang Xiao Er spoke from behind them, he was completely muddled.

The other nine people were all stunned.

Chen Yin Dao frowned.

The atmosphere from earlier was completely ruined by Wang Xiao Er’s words.

Shi Bao directly walked towards Wang Xiao Er and wrapped his arm around his neck, bringing him to the female Gu Masters as he chuckled: "Brother Wang Xiao Er, we will give you an eye opener today. You will learn what the true joy of the mortal world is!"

The other three obscenities looked at each other, they communicated with each other subtly and nodded.

All of them were daring people who had been on the righteous path’s arrest warrants for years, they lived lives of worry and danger, they were used to maximizing their happiness regardless of consequences.

Wang Xiao Er was going to be dealt with later anyway, in fact, dragging an immortal through the mud was also quite fun!

Let’s do that!

Thus, the four great obscenities surrounded Wang Xiao Er.

"Oh, so little brother does not know this. Don’t worry, us elder brothers will teach you!"

"Come on, this is a really fun thing to do."

"After one attempt, you will be hooked."

"Half the fulfillment of life lies here."

Wang Xiao Er nodded repeatedly as he asked with interest: "What should I do?"

Shi Bao had a muscular body and impatient nature, he immediately dropped his pants: "Do this!"

The female Gu Masters shouted in unison, some had their eyes shut.

"Hehe." Yu Ba Guang had a slim body, he also removed his pants.

There was another wave of screaming.

Fan Chun Yao was slightly chubbier, he pouted as he removed his pants, pointing downwards: "Look!"

The female captives screamed even louder now.

Shi Bao and Yu Ba Guang stared with wide eyes, they showed an indignant expression but the fact was right here, it made them feel helpless.

Chen Yin Dao quietly pulled down his pants.

The female Gu Masters’ screams reached an unprecedented peak.

The other three obscenities raised their thumbs in unison, saying: "As expected of our boss!"

"Let me do it too." Wang Xiao Er was excited, he quickly removed his pants.

"Eh?" The female captives gasped at the same time.

The four great obscenities cast their gaze at the same time.

The surroundings fell into a state of awkwardness.

Shi Bao was the most straightforward person, he walked towards Wang Xiao Er and patted his shoulders in sympathy.

"This is not your fault, you should blame your parents instead!" Fan Chun Yao consoled.

"Don’t worry, even though you have a poor foundation, this also proves that you have a lot of room for improvement. I have many Gu worms, I can help you." Yu Ba Guang encouraged.

Chen Yin Dao did not speak, he only thought to himself: "This Wang Xiao Er really lives up to his name[1]!"

"Let’s go, I can’t wait anymore!" Shi Bao walked towards the female Gu Masters.

"No, don’t come here!" The female Gu Masters quickly shuffled backwards, some had pale expressions, some had bright red faces.

"Let’s go together, together." Fan Chun Yao clapped.

"But they don’t seem too willing, this isn’t appropriate?" Wang Xiao Er asked softly.

"Don’t worry, don’t worry, just follow what we do." Chen Yin Dao encouraged Wang

Xiao Er.

Just as the five were about to take action, they heard a cold snort.

Instantly, the four great obscenities and Wang Xiao Er turned into motionless statues.

The female captives were extremely shocked.

Next, Zhao Lian Yun walked out of the dense fog.

She came here to try and deduce Fang Yuan’s strength through the traces he left behind, but now, her mood was very heavy.

While she was about to return, she found that a female Gu Master of Spirit Affinity House had gotten into danger, she immediately took action.

Thus, the Central Continent four great obscenities were taken down easily.

After expressing her identity, Zhao Lian Yun saved these female Gu Masters.

The female Gu Masters thanked her profusely, the Spirit Affinity House Gu Master was even filled with admiration and excitement: "Fairy Lian Yun, these four great obscenities have committed many atrocious acts, this is their retribution! These people have sinned greatly, even killing them is too cheap of a punishment."

Zhao Lian Yun smiled: "Taking their life is really too good for them. How can we uphold justice for those women they harmed? I have a good method, just watch."

Zhao Lian Yun waved her sleeves as the five guys started to move again.

Despite being so close in proximity, they could not see Zhao Lian Yun and the rest, they were stuck in some illusion.

"Beauty, here I come!" Shi Bao pounced at Fan Chun Yao.

After Fan Chun Yao was pushed to the ground, he continued smiling: "Ah, you are really rough."

The five men were stuck in a physical brawl, engaging in a chaotic ’battle’.

The female Gu Masters watched with dumbfounded expressions, they quickly turned red.

"Oh heaven." A girl covered her eyes but continued to peek through the gap between her fingers.

"This hurts my eyes!" Someone gasped.

"This position is possible?" A mature female Gu Master recorded this knowledge in her mind.

"Alright." Zhao Lian Yun waved her sleeve: "Leave with me, these people will continue with this until the soul beasts eat them or when they die of exhaustion."

The female Gu Masters were shocked by Zhao Lian Yun’s method, they obediently followed her and left the place.

But even Zhao Lian Yun could not have anticipated this, after a few minutes, silver threads started to shine around Wang Xiao Er’s body.

These silver threads radiated the surroundings, causing the five who were locked in intense physical engagement to awaken, they remembered everything that happened.

There was dead silence!

"We were so unlucky, a female immortal actually came!!" Fan Chun Yao was internally shocked.

"This female immortal is too vicious, that was more cruel than just killing us." There were tears in Yu Ba Guang’s eyes as he grabbed his hair and screamed internally.

"I actually, I actually..." Chen Yin Dao no longer had the disposition of a leader, his eyes were hollow, he muttered as he thought of suicide.

"Urgh!" Shi Bao started to vomit profusely.

"What happened guys?" Amidst the silence, Wang Xiao Er spoke with a confused expression: "Why did we stop?"

The four of them were shocked!

They turned around to look at the naked Wang Xiao Er, they were frozen like statues.

Wang Xiao Er scratched his head: "Brothers, why are you looking at me? Oh right, those female Gu Masters were all brought away. I thought they were going to play a game with us?"

Shi Bao stopped vomiting, the four of them looked at each other with complete silence.

"Erm..." After some time, Chen Yin Dao spoke with a trembling voice: "Brother Wang Xiao Er, you are really smart. Those women that we invited were... audiences. Didn’t you see their expressions? Think about it, they were all excited, very excited and focused, they were watching in amazement. We were helping these people feel joy and pleasure, isn’t this how us men should act?"

"As expected of our boss!" The other three obscenities raised their thumbs in approval.

Wang Xiao Er clapped with his fist and palm as he realized: "So that’s it, brothers, you are all good people."

Chen Yin Dao laughed loudly: "Of course we are."

Saying so, he wiped his tears away.

Next, he said to the other three: "So be it that this happened, don’t tell anyone about it. We are doing a good deed but we will not publicize it, this is how true gentlemen act."

The other three nodded rapidly.

Of course!

If they spoke about this, it would be too humiliating, what would everyone think of them?

Wang Xiao Er asked again: "Brothers, are we still going to play?"

The atmosphere froze once again!

Shi Bao cursed: "Play my ass! Play what?"

"They, they have all left, nobody is here to see it." Yu Ba Guang added in with a meek voice.

After getting scolded, Wang Xiao Er felt quite happy as he smiled innocently: "Oh, it is great that we’re stopping. Brother Shi Bao is right, my butt still hurts a lot now."

The scene fell into silence again!

Shi Bao slammed his fists on the ground repeatedly.

Yu Ba Guang lowered his head, biting his lips as blood started to appear.

Fan Chun Yao slammed his own head with his fists, trying to send himself into a coma.

Chen Yin Dao stared at Wang Xiao Er with wide eyes, his lips were shaking.

Wang Xiao Er looked at Chen Yin Dao as he asked in confusion: "Brother Chen, do you have anything to say to me?"

At the next moment, Wang Xiao Er realized: "Oh, I get it, does your butt hurt too?"

Cough!

Chen Yin Dao spat out a mouthful of blood as he fell down on the ground.

"Boss!"

"Boss!"

"Boss!"

The others who were still naked quickly ran over to him, trying to help Chen Yin Dao.

Chen Yin Dao was very feeble now, he barely managed to open his eyes as he said weakly, in an almost sobbing voice: "Go away... don’t touch me."

[1] In certain slangs his name sounds like ’small little brother’.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Days later.

Sunlight pierced through the darkness, radiating on the world.

In a certain valley near the periphery of Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range, Eastern Obscenity Chen Yin Dao, Western Thief Yu Ba Guang, Southern Disturbance Shi Bao and Northern Squandering Fan Chun Yao had already woken up, they were sitting on an icy rock, looking at the sky as they laid spread eagled, their eyes were hollow, there was no life in them.

Ever since that terrible ordeal in slaughter soul crater, every night, the four great obscenities and Wang Xiao Er would lose control of their bodies, they would engage in the indescribable activity together.

The four great obscenities would lose their senses each time, by the time they wake up, they would realize that they had done some horrifying act once again.

Even though Wang Xiao Er got rid of a portion of Zhao Lian Yun's method, some of it still lingered.

"This is a curse! The most vicious curse in this world!"

"That fairy from Spirit Affinity House looks so kind and delicate but she is truly too vicious, she is evil to the core!"

"I don't believe it, I don't believe it, maybe I am just dreaming now. I will wake up from my nightmare one day, right?"

"I am a great man, how can I do something so shameful, I have let down heaven and earth, I have let down my parents, I have let down myself!"

The four great obscenities were silent on the outside but they were all crying out in their hearts, feeling sadness and anger, regret and pain.

Wang Xiao Er walked out of the Gu House at this moment.

He had just woken up, he rubbed his eyes and looked at them, asking in concern: "Brothers, why are you up so early, you are all naked outside, you might catch a cold."

The four great obscenities' bodies shook intensely.

They turned around and looked at Wang Xiao Er, showing a complex emotion on their faces.

On one hand, they revered Wang Xiao Er, because of Zhao Lian Yun's method, if not for him, they would have died of exhaustion already. They believed in Wang Xiao Er's identity now, only an immortal could dispel another immortal's method!

But on the other hand, they hated Wang Xiao Er. Ever since they saved him, nothing good had happened. Not only did they return from Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range empty handed, they even received the greatest humiliation of their lives!

After a long silence, their boss Chen Yin Dao spoke bitterly: "Brother, you woke up."

"Yes, our exercise last night was too intense, I slept very soundly." Wang Xiao Er smiled innocently: "Recently, I've started to feel pleasure from this, brothers, what you told me earlier makes sense after all."

The four great obscenities' bodies shook again.

The four of them looked at each other, sensing the fear and horror in each others' eyes.

"Don't tell me this immortal was like this to begin with?!"

"What sort of person did we actually save!"

"Maybe he has the ability to lift our curse but he purposely chose not to, this is something we should think about."

"Is he really amnesiac, or is he pretending? If I like men too, as an immortal, I might want to play around in the mortal world as well…"

The four felt more terror as they thought about it.

They wanted to get away from Wang Xiao Er but they could not do that anymore.

Each time the curse activated, they needed Wang Xiao Er to dispel it. If they left, they might die the following night.

Thus, the four of them had to keep Wang Xiao Er happy, so that he would get rid of this fatal danger for them.

"Seriously, what is this situation!" Chen Yin Dao wanted to cry but he had to smile forcefully: "Xiao Er, this is nothing much, we enjoy blessings and endure misfortune together, we are brothers after all!"

After finishing his words, Chen Yin Dao stared at the other three.

They had to resist the disgusting feeling as they spoke in agreement as well.

"Indeed, this is our brotherhood!"

"Otherwise, why would there be a saying about brotherly relationships?"

"We were destined to meet, as your elder brothers, we need to take care of you."

Wang Xiao Er smiled and nodded: "It was really my fortune to have met you brothers."

"No, this is the greatest misfortune of my life!" The four of them screamed internally.

Wang Xiao Er added: "Let's continue to play tonight!"

"Don't remind me, you scumbag!!" The four of them cried out in anguish in their minds.

While Wang Xiao Er was away, the four of them gathered during the day.

"We cannot let this go on!"

"We cannot live life like this."

"Guys, do you think Wang Xiao Er really lost his memories or is he pretending?"

"We need to test it. Go capture a few mortal women tonight, no matter what, we need to let Wang Xiao Er know we are normal people. If he really lost his memories, we will turn him back to normal, if he is pretending, we will make sure he cannot put up with the act anymore!"

The four great obscenities shouted in unison, they were going crazy these last days.

This method was risky, but even if they angered the immortal Wang Xiao Er, death was still a good reward at this point!

At night time, the four great obscenities captured over a dozen mortal women.

The women were all brought into the Gu House.

Wang Xiao Er was a little excited: "Brothers, you have worked hard to invite such a large audience tonight."

"Brother, let us teach you something tonight." Chen Yin Dao patted Wang Xiao

Er's shoulder as he said solemnly.

"Alright, I will do my best to learn it, I will listen with my heart!" Wang Xiao Er clenched his fists, showing an excited expression.

But reality was still cruel to them.

When their activity reached the climax stage, the four great obscenities were shocked to find out — they could not do it!

"Quick, turn hard now."

"Oh, why, why did this happen?"

"I actually, I actually don't feel anything towards women. Waaaaaaaaa…"

"Why do I feel more excited and pleasured when I look at men now?"

The four men wanted to struggle but the curse activated at the next moment.

The female captives were shocked to see the battle of five men, it was a climactic fight, some of them were very excited while the others felt disappointment.

Some even wanted to join in but were sent flying with one slap.

This incident was a huge blow to the four great obscenities.

"Let's suicide, this is not a life that we can lead."

"Living is worse than death, I'd rather die now."

"Can anyone kill me, please come out now!"

The four of them were sick of life, they were listless and dejected all the time.

Seemingly granting their wishes, not long after, righteous path Gu Masters came to pursue them.

"We finally found you! You dared to target our Spirit Affinity House's disciple, did you really think we would let you off?" Qin Juan said with anger, attacking the four great obscenities.

The four great obscenities were in despair and felt life was not worth living, after leaving Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range, they did not bother to conceal their traces, they were no longer as vigilant as usual.

After hearing that they were alive, Zhao Lian Yun felt a little interested, she passed down a sect mission to kill these people and investigate the truth.

Qin Juan was close to Feng Jin Huang, but she did not know that this mission which carried a huge reward was listed by Zhao Lian Yun. The Spirit Affinity House Gu Master who got captured in slaughter soul crater earlier was close to her, thus, she took on this mission.

The four great obscenities screamed about not wanting to live every day, but at the moment of crisis, they erupted with an intense will to survive.

For half a month, they fought nearly ten times.

Qin Juan had rank five cultivation level, she suppressed the five of them.

Even though the four great obscenities were famous demonic path Gu Masters in Central Continent, they were just demonic cultivators that the ten great ancient sects allowed to live. These demonic cultivators were useful in training their sect disciples, thus, they made use of these people to act as a trial for their members.

The ten great ancient sects did not mind minor characters like the four great obscenities, thus they were allowed to cause chaos in Central Continent and hide successfully from arrests.

But the situation was different now, the Gu Immortal Zhao Lian Yun had sent a mission, the force pursuing them was different from usual.

The four great obscenities escaped with Wang Xiao Er as they tried to come up with a plan.

"We can't live in Central Continent anymore!"

"What do we do?"

"We can only go elsewhere, boss, you can decide for us."

Chen Yin Dao pondered: "Northern Plains is dangerous and lacks resources, we can't go there. Even though Eastern Sea is rich, the righteous path is fighting against those variant humans, it is too dangerous. Western Desert is full of deserts, and the environment is bad. Let's go to Southern Border instead."

"Alright, we will go to Southern Border!"

Southern Border.

Underground.

"According to Lu Wei Yin, it should be here. Mm, found it." Fang Yuan went deep underground, suddenly, his eyes shined as he found his target.

He saw that at the walls of this small Earth Trench, there was a field of pink grassland.

Each 'grass' was pink, moving without any wind.

Looking at the 'grass', each was thin and long, resembling fur.

"This is the earth dream fetus hair, Meng Qiu Zhen, come out." Fang Yuan opened his immortal aperture door as the pure dream clone came out.

Meng Qiu Zhen took a glance and praised it as he took action, using dream path methods to carefully store the earth dream fetus hair away.

After Fang Yuan obtained Southern Border's Paradise Earth true inheritance, he gained many earth path Immortal Gu, he also had methods to search for immortal materials underground and the ability to control Flying Earth.

The Mushroomman Paradise had existed in Southern Border for a long time, after tens of generations of accumulation, they found a lot of treasures deep under Southern Border.

Among the treasures, Fang Yuan found some locations with dream path immortal materials.

The earth dream fetus hair was just one of them.

Dream path Gu materials and Gu worms had appeared in the world long ago, for example, Fang Yuan's Dream Token and the spring dream fruit tree that Bo Qing and Mo Yao found.

This was like how water path Gu worms and materials existed during Ren Zu's era, but water path was only created by Central Continent's Shui Ni, the founder of Spirit Affinity House, during the Medieval Antiquity Era.

Dream path was similar.

Even though dream path had not been formally created, the dream path Gu worms and materials that existed in history had already appeared.

But dream path was different from water path, it would have an explosive growth in the future.

By then, the five regions and two heavens would be full of dream realms.

Because dream path Gu materials would be too easily obtainable, and because a vast number of Gu cultivators could use them, dream path would quickly progress as a path.

Countless dream path Gu Masters would cultivate more dream path Gu materials to refine more dream path Gu worms, pushing the progress of dream path to an unprecedented level!

If Great Dream Immortal Venerable truly appears, then dream path would reach its peak popularity in history.

Thus, Fang Yuan was not surprised that some dream path immortal materials were hidden away.

Meng Qiu Zhen successfully took the earth dream fetus hair, he went back inside Fang Yuan's sovereign immortal aperture.

Next, Fang Yuan went to another location, there were many nine tune dream flowers there.

Meng Qiu Zhen had a lot of things to do.

On one hand, he had to organize dream path killer moves, on the other hand, he had to plant resources and develop his immortal aperture.

According to Fang Yuan's plan, after these dream path immortal materials were successfully retrieved, Meng Qiu Zhen would have a complete set of dream path methods.

At that time, he would take the place of Fang Yuan's main body and invest himself into exploring dream realms.

To play safe, Meng Qiu Zhen would first use up Spectral Soul's dream realms before moving onto Paradise Earth's dream realms, just in case there was a trap.

Even though this was highly unlikely, Fang Yuan was still a vigilant person.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Meng Qiu Zhen was controlled by a Gu worm, his eyes were shut, he was brought into a secret location by someone.

"Alright, number three, you can open your eyes now." A shrill voice could be heard beside him.

The Gu worm suppressing Meng Qiu Zhen had been kept away, Meng Qiu Zhen opened his eyes and found that he was in a dark cave.

Meng Qiu Zhen was kneeling on the ground, in front of him was an old man.

The old man had a sharp voice, his face was covered in paint, he gave off a peculiar and cold feeling.

"This is the leader of Painted Faces — Sly Heart Old Man." Meng Qiu Zhen thought: "To think that I would meet this legendary person from a hundred thousand years ago."

Indeed, Meng Qiu Zhen was exploring a dream realm now.

This dream realm naturally originated from Spectral Soul.

This Sly Heart Old Man in his dream was a wisdom path and transformation path cultivator, he was a legendary person who existed between the eras of Spectral Soul and Paradise Earth a hundred thousand years ago. He was also the creator of a demonic path organization, it was called Painted Faces.

This organization was like Zombie Alliance and Shadow Sect, it was a huge organization that spanned across all five regions, something rarely seen in history.

All of the members in the organization had painted faces of various colors to differentiate their varying statuses.

Painted Faces was an assassination organization, killing Gu Masters was just an ordinary thing, when they were at their peak, they even had Gu Immortal experts, as long as the price was paid, they could kill Gu Immortals for their customers!

Meng Qiu Zhen had already entered this dream realm for a long time, he went from the initial one hundred and eighth position to third position.

"According to my instincts, if I can become the number one position in the organization, I will pass this dream realm." Meng Qiu Zhen was very certain, his dream path master instincts told him the answer already.

Sly Heart Old Man took out three Gu worms: "Number three, you want to become number two, but it will not be easy. There are three Gu worms here, choose one. Each one contains the details of a mission."

Meng Qiu Zhen secretly activated dream butterfly Immortal Gu.

Almost all the other paths' Gu worms could not be used freely in dream realms, but dream path Gu worms were not restricted.

After dream butterfly Immortal Gu was instilled with immortal essence, it vanished from within Meng Qiu Zhen's immortal aperture.

Meng Qiu Zhen first placed his gaze on the Gu worm to the left.

At the next moment, he saw that after he chose the Gu worm, he went into a seizure, saliva appeared from his mouth, he died on the spot.

Sly Heart Old Man looked at his corpse as he said coldly: "What a pity, number three, even though you are skilled in transformation path, your wisdom path attainment is too low, it was your bad luck to have chosen this."

Meng Qiu Zhen retracted his gaze as the scene vanished, he looked at the middle Gu worm.

At the next moment, he saw another scene.

After he took the second Gu worm, Sly Heart Old Man suddenly attacked.

With a loud sound, his palm slammed onto Meng Qiu Zhen's chest.

Meng Qiu Zhen was caught unguarded, his ribs broke, his heart burst, his eyes stared widely as he died on the spot.

Sly Heart Old Man sneered: "So you are the spy after all, you went after this Gu worm, not knowing the trap that I set, I had already gave out some false information to trick those spies of the righteous path!"

Meng Qiu Zhen retracted his gaze.

Evidently, the first two Gu worms could not be chosen, but the third one might not be correct either.

Meng Qiu Zhen wanted to continue checking but Sly Heart Old Man rushed him: "Quickly choose, what are you waiting for?"

Meng Qiu Zhen knew that this Painted Face organization was dark and cruel, they had no regard for human lives, if he waited anymore, Sly Heart Old Man would activate the Gu worm in his body and he would be punished, he might suffer heavy injuries or even die on the spot.

Thus, Meng Qiu Zhen did not use dream butterfly Immortal Gu again, he quickly spoke and chose the third Gu worm.

For just a moment, a complex expression flashed on Sly Heart Old Man's face.

After being silent for some time, Sly Heart Old Man nodded: "You chose the most appropriate Gu for you, it seems your luck is not bad. Maybe you can gain some benefits there, you might even be able to return alive."

Saying so, Sly Heart Old Man took a few steps and exposed the door behind him: "After opening this door, you will enter a tunnel, you need to walk quickly, do not stop, otherwise the tunnel will digest you. After passing it, you will reach a place, over there, do your best to survive. If you can find a way back and meet me once again, you will gain our organization's number one position."

"Yes, lord." Meng Qiu Zhen immediately got up, pushing open the door and entering the tunnel.

This tunnel was quite unique, it was round in shape but the inner walls were made of flesh and blood, there was slight vibrations in them as gastric acid flowed out constantly.

Meng Qiu Zhen activated the defensive method of this person but still felt deep pressure. Like what Sly Heart Old Man said, if he stayed for too long, he might really get 'digested'.

He quickly got past the creepy and wet flesh tunnel as he arrived in a huge world.

Within the primitive forest, fierce beasts roared as strange birds growled.

Far away, two beastman groups were fighting.

Meng Qiu Zhen turned around and looked back, the tunnel had already vanished, he only saw an ordinary mountain wall.

Meng Qiu Zhen was shook internally, to ensure that he could efficiently explore dream realms, the main body had given him many details of history: "That tunnel really is the intestine of the gluttonous demon frog, this is the place where Reckless Savage Demon Venerable left behind his true inheritance — Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven!"

Days later, the dream realm dissipated.

Meng Qiu Zhen had a tired expression as he started to inspect his gains.

"Transformation path and wisdom path attainment levels went up. Not bad." Meng Qiu Zhen was rather satisfied.

Forget about transformation path, but his wisdom path attainment level really needed a boost.

Especially when Fang Yuan knew his own luck, and the fact that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had very likely already revived.

The true Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven was naturally vast and boundless, but Meng Qiu Zhen was only in a dream realm.

Meng Qiu Zhen had dream armor Immortal Gu's protection, and also dream creation Immortal Gu and dream butterfly Immortal Gu as methods. Especially dream butterfly Immortal Gu, even though it was an investigative Gu worm, its use in exploring dream realms surpassed Dream Armor and Dream Creation.

Dream path master attainment level gave him instincts.

When instincts worked, Meng Qiu Zhen would use them to find the correct answers rapidly.

When instincts did not work, then Meng Qiu Zhen would use dream butterfly Immortal Gu to foresee the future possibilities of the dream realm and avoid danger, he would quickly find the most appropriate methods.

Like how Meng Qiu Zhen used dream butterfly Immortal Gu in front of Sly Heart Old Man earlier to find out the correct choice, in the past, Fang Yuan would have to test it one by one. If he chose wrongly, his soul would be injured, he would waste time healing himself and restart the dream realm all over again.

Even though Meng Qiu Zhen only had rank six cultivation level, his efficiency at exploring dream realms was many times that of Fang Yuan's main body!

Southern Border.

Central Continent's four great obscenities and Wang Xiao Er were forced into desperation by Qin Juan.

There was a sinkhole behind them.

"Don't come here, otherwise, we will jump off!" Wang Xiao Er shouted in anxiety.

Qin Juan smiled coldly as she walked closer: "Then jump, you will die if you do that. Behind you is Southern Border's Sun Moon Sinkhole, the pit is unfathomably deep, not just Gu Masters, even Gu Immortals cannot explore it easily. If you jump, you will surely die!"

The four great obscenities were currently injured, they gritted their teeth.

"Qin Juan, we'll remember you, you lunatic!"

"We already escaped to Southern Border but you actually pursued us all the way here, what are you after?"

"Even though we captured Spirit Affinity House's female Gu Master, no matter what relationship she has with you, we did not touch her at all."

"Qin Juan, you received a sect mission to kill us. But if we die like this, you won't be able to report your mission easily too, right?" Chen Yin Dao suddenly said with a deep gaze.

Qin Juan's movement froze for a moment.

But in just a moment, she realized that the enemy was trying to probe her.

And she fell for it, some information was leaked from this action.

Qin Juan concealed the shame in her heart as she placed her arms behind her back, looking at these defeated individuals, she said arrogantly on purpose: "I can't report it? Killing you is the best evidence I need! But it is not that I cannot let you live, hand over all your Gu worms and surrender, if I bring you back to Central Continent, you will still have a chance to live."

Chen Yin Dao sneered: "We know about the crimes we've committed. After Miss Qin Juan said that, it confirmed my guesses."

Qin Juan also sneered: "So what if you guessed it? Can you turn this around? Do you still have a chance?"

A strange expression appeared on Chen Yin Dao's face: "Actually, we still have hope. Brother Wang Xiao Er, we'll depend on you now!"

Saying so, he pushed Wang Xiao Er, who was hiding at the back, to the front.

Wang Xiao Er was shocked: "Brothers, I am not a Gu Master."

Qin Juan also felt confused, she had fought with the four great obscenities for this long, she knew that Wang Xiao Er was a mortal.

"Hmph, trying to bluster and act mysterious!" Qin Juan was about to attack.

But at the next moment, there was a loud explosion.

A huge air current surged as wind blew strongly.

Wang Xiao Er, Qin Juan and the others who were near the sinkhole were caught off guard, they were sent into the air by the currents before crashing down heavily.

"What happened?!" Everyone was shocked.

Next, the figure of a Southern Border Gu Master moved along this current as he flew into the sky.

"Kong Ri Tian, don't think of leaving!!"

The Gu Master who landed on the ground first was the demonic path Kong Ri Tian, he escaped without even turning around as he shouted: "Wu Ji, you are the leader of Wu clan, yet you are not keeping your promise!"

Wu Ji chased after him as she shouted: "What's the use of keeping my word to a demonic path scoundrel like you, leave behind the Gu worms of Sheng Tian true inheritance!"

Next, Shang Xin Ci, Xiao Yan, Counterfeit Master, Tie Ruo Nan, Yi Chong, and others also descended from the sky.

"Chase him, don't let him escape!"

"That is a Gu Immortal true inheritance!!"

As the group chased, a dust cloud was created along the way.

Qin Juan, Wang Xiao Er, and the rest were all stunned.

Seeing that he was about to be caught, Kong Ri Tian shouted at Qin Juan and the rest: "The people in front, whoever can help me escape will share this Gu Immortal true inheritance with me!!"

Qin Juan and the rest heard this, their eyes shined brightly.

"You cannot escape, everything belongs to my Wu clan!!" Wu Ji was enraged, she jumped into the air.

Both her fists were clenched, she raised them above her head as she activated a mortal killer move.

Boom!

As she landed on the ground, she slammed down, the ground shook, rocks were sent flying.

A huge vibration force spread to the surroundings rapidly, no one could avoid it in time, they quickly put up their defenses in a panic.

Qin Juan and the rest were also implicated, their expressions changed.

Wu Ji was the number one expert of the current Southern Border Gu Master world!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Southern Border, Wu clan headquarters.

"Quick, quick, bring me the white king head flower herb." Wu clan's rank six Gu Immortal Wu Zhen Zhu called out with an anxious tone.

She was controlling the formation, her thoughts were focused on it at the crucial moment, she could not distract herself.

Thankfully, there were a few rank five Gu Masters assisting her, hearing these words, they quickly got to work.

White king head flower herb was a rank six immortal material, it was tossed into the immortal formation.

This immortal formation of Wu clan was famous in history, it was called dead sea life retrieval formation. It originally belonged to an Eastern Sea rank eight Gu

Immortal, but after this Gu Immortal came to Southern Border and provoked Wu clan, they got killed instead.

Dead sea life retrieval formation was a healing immortal formation but the core Immortal Gu was only rank seven. That Eastern Sea rank eight Gu Immortal was indeed a rank eight Gu Immortal but before dying, all of their Immortal Gu were destroyed.

Wu clan spent a hundred years to finally refine the relevant Immortal Gu, managing to set up this dead sea life retrieval formation again.

Wu Ji and the rest had died on Yi Tian Mountain, the reason why they were able to revive was mostly because of fate Gu's destruction, and also due to the effect of this dead sea life retrieval formation.

As the formation slowly stopped, light faded as Wu Ji woke up in the formation with a pale expression.

"It seems that I revived again!" Wu Ji smiled lightly, she wanted to get up but her body was too weak, she only succeeded after three tries.

"You should relax a little, Wu Ji. This is the fifth time this month." Wu Zhen Zhu came to Wu Ji as she frowned deeply.

Wu Ji smiled indifferently: "Don't we have this formation? Even if I die, I can revive."

Wu Zhen Zhu scoffed: "Don't think so highly of Gu Immortal methods. Wu Ji, do you know that you almost died earlier, you managed to revive because of the dead sea life retrieval formation. But this method has less and less effect as a person uses it continuously, you are playing with your life! You have a good future, why don't you care a bit more about yourself, at this rate, you will die for real!"

Wu Ji raised her brows as her eyes shined brightly: "I'm someone who has died before, what is there to fear about death? Precisely because I had died before, I treasure life even more now."

Wu Zhen Zhu rolled her eyes in anger: "This is considered treasuring your life? Since you already obtained Sheng Tian true inheritance from Kong Sheng Tian, you can give it to the clan already, why did you still go after him relentlessly? Why did you not retreat even against the attacks of everyone?"

Wu Ji laughed loudly: "This is how I treasure my life. After dying once, I reassessed my own life, how should people live? Everyone has their own answer. This is my answer, the duration of life does not matter as much as the value of the life that is being lived."

"Even though I am not a Gu Immortal, I know about your circumstances. Lady Zhen Zhu, why do you think Gu Masters want to become an immortal so badly? After becoming an immortal, there will be countless calamities and tribulations, wouldn't they be courting death? How many Gu Immortals have died from tribulations? Don't they know the danger? Aren't they continuing to face danger head on because they want to obtain the true meaning of life?"

"In this great era, if I do not advance bravely, I will be letting down heaven for giving me this life, I will be wasting my second chance. I, Wu Ji, want to become immortal, I want to see things at a greater height, I want to gain more strength. This is the meaning of my life."

After hearing Wu Ji's words, a complex expression appeared on Wu Zhen Zhu's face.

She actually had high expectations of this junior Wu Ji, therefore she came to talk to her. But after talking, she found that she failed to convince Wu Ji, instead, she became the one who was convinced.

"Since you have decided this, I have nothing else to say." Wu Zhen Zhu sighed.

Wu Ji had a sincere expression as she bowed: "Lady Zhen Zhu, junior will remember the concern that you have shown to me."

Saying so, another Gu Immortal appeared: "Hahaha, Wu Ji, I heard your words earlier. As expected of the number one Gu Immortal seed of Wu clan, you did not shame our reputation."

"Wu Zhan Ping, you came here for…" Wu Zhen Zhu asked but she had a guess in her heart, she was quite happy for Wu Ji.

Wu Zhan Ping nodded at Wu Zhen Zhu as he looked at Wu Ji: "I am Wu clan's supreme elder in charge of guidance, Wu Ji, you have sufficient cultivation level and merit, I am tasked to guide you along the road of becoming an immortal!"

Wu Ji took in a deep breath, she clenched her fists unconsciously. This moment had finally arrived, she had been looking forward to it for a long time.

Wu Zhan Ping said solemnly: "Wu Ji, you are a senior of the mortal Wu clan, after being the clan leader for many years, you know of many Gu Immortal secrets. Our Wu clan cultivates many paths, we are most proficient in wind path, it is the reason why we are at the top of Southern Border's Gu Immortal world, our status is immovable."

"You can choose other paths too, we have almost all paths in our inventory, but I have a suggestion for you!"

Wu Zhan Ping had heard Wu Ji's words earlier, he liked this junior and was willing to say more things.

Wu Ji quickly replied: "Please teach me senior, I will listen."

Wu Zhan Ping continued: "Rather than choosing a path, it is more like you are choosing a true inheritance. Our Wu clan has the strongest wind path true inheritance, our first supreme elder Lord Wu Yong also cultivates wind path, he uses the strongest wind path true inheritance in Wu clan as well. However, there are many wind path cultivators, competition is very steep, I would not recommend you to choose it."

"Right now, Wu clan has two true inheritances that even us Gu Immortals feel desire towards, it is only that our paths have been set, changing it has too high of a cost. During normal times, we might have the opportunity to do that, but with the turbulent era now, chaos is everywhere, it is the best opportunity for you juniors."

Wu Zhen Zhu heard this, she agreed and said with happiness: "This means that first supreme elder is really taking out these three true inheritances to nurture our Wu clan's descendants?"

"Indeed, Lord Wu Yong has incredible foresight and magnanimity, everyone in Wu clan holds him in high regard." Wu Zhan Ping praised from the bottom of his heart, he told Wu Ji: "There are three true inheritances of high value that even us Gu Immortals want, I will list them for you, choose wisely."

"The first true inheritance is called Corpse Emperor true inheritance. He was a Southern Border rank eight Gu Immortal who turned himself into a zombie when his lifespan was near its end, hence the title. Corpse Emperor was in the demonic path, he was ruthless and vicious, causing super forces to join up and attack him. He died during the battle and his immortal zombie body turned into a corpse mountain upon his death. This mountain is hundreds of meters tall, zombies roam all over the mountain, it produces transformation path zombie Gu and qi path corpse qi Gu."

"Back then, Southern Border's Zombie Alliance wanted ownership of this mountain and offered a high price to buy it from us to use as their headquarters, but we rejected them. Right now, it seems like our decision was right. Zombie Alliance was a front of Shadow Sect, but that's not our issue now. The point is that with the shift of the era, a true inheritance appeared on Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian, which is this Corpse Emperor true inheritance."

"This is a rank eight enslavement path true inheritance, Wu Ji, if you choose it, Wu clan will definitely nurture you well. An enslavement path Gu Immortal can fight a group on their own, the problem with enslavement path is the huge amount of resources needed, but Wu clan can help you with it. The only downside is that this true inheritance lacks Immortal Gu."

Wu Ji considered it for a while before shaking her head: "Enslavement path is not my style, Immortal Gu are also hard to refine, I am not skilled in Gu refinement. It is too hard to cultivate this true inheritance well, even with the clan's help, I will not choose it."

"Alright, then onto the next one." Wu Zhan Ping continued to speak: "This true inheritance is a soul path true inheritance, it has a greater origin, it concerns Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!"

"This true inheritance is called seven-seven profound soul true inheritance, the most amazing method is to raise soul beasts and nurture them into seven-seven profound soul birds. Once a seven-seven profound soul bird is created, it is almost impossible to kill. Even if they were gravely injured, as long as one of them is still alive, they will reappeared in a short time. Even though this true inheritance also lacks Immortal Gu, it is able to bypass that and nurture soul beasts instead, the cultivation journey will be easier."

Wu Ji shook her head: "Even though soul beasts are strong, I dislike it. I cultivate my own body, raising soul beasts is like becoming a nanny, it does not suit me."

Wu Zhan Ping frowned slightly: "Choosing a true inheritance is not child's play, Wu Ji, consider it well before making a decision."

"Indeed." Wu Zhen Zhu also nodded: "Be it Corpse Emperor true inheritance or the seven-seven profound soul true inheritance, they are extremely rare, Wu Ji, you need to treasure this opportunity."

Wu Ji was unmoved: "Immortals, thank you for the advice, may I know what the third true inheritance is?"

Wu Zhan Ping: "The third true inheritance is the Sheng Tian true inheritance you retrieved. The person who left this true inheritance behind is famous in Gu Master history, he is called Kong Sheng Tian."

"Kong Sheng Tian had qi escape Immortal Gu, this Gu is incredible, it was once fourth place on the List of Mystical Gu. But in recently years, because of the number one demon in the world, Gu Yue Fang Yuan, Spring Autumn Cicada received public recognition and got elevated to the third mystical Gu, causing qi escape Gu to fall in ranking."

Speaking of Gu Yue Fang Yuan, Wu Zhan Ping and Wu Zhen Zhu showed complex expressions.

Wu Ji could acutely sense that these two Gu Immortals' breathing became slightly disoriented.

Fang Yuan had once disguised as Wu Yi Hai and made his way into Wu clan, even someone as intelligent and perceptive as Wu Yong fell prey to his acting. But Wu clan was no longer qualified to take revenge on him, over the course of the fate war and the pursuit over Fang Yuan afterwards, even the variant human battle that happened in Eastern Sea recently cemented Fang Yuan's throne of the number one demon in the world, nobody could topple his status.

Not wanting to continue talking about Fang Yuan, Wu Zhan Ping got back to the topic: "Kong Sheng Tian was a qi path Gu Immortal, he was most skilled at movement methods. The qi path movement killer move that he created back then was named Kong Sheng Tian, it is incredibly powerful. If you obtain this true inheritance, you will move unhindered in the world, you will always have the initiative."

"This true inheritance was retrieved by you after all, it could be said you are fated for it. But the Immortal Gu in the true inheritance are likely in the hands of that Kong Ri Tian now."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Wu Ji's expression sank: "If that Kong Ri Tian did not have Kong Sheng Tian's bloodline, I would not have lost that contest!"

Wu Zhan Ping shook his head: "You did not lose. That Kong Ri Tian has Immortal Gu but he is just a mortal, even though he escaped luckily, so what? He cannot run for long, many righteous path Gu Immortals are already targeting him. If my Wu clan's Gu Immortals succeed, this true inheritance's value will rise greatly, it will suit you more."

But Wu Ji still shook her head: "These three true inheritances are enslavement path, soul path, and qi path, they are all wonderful. It is a pity they do not suit me, I should continue cultivating my strength path."

"Hmm?" Wu Zhan Ping frowned.

Wu Zhen Zhu urged her: "Wu Ji, I know you have a strength path true inheritance, but that true inheritance has a low quality, its original owner was only a rank six Gu Immortal, it cannot compare to these three true inheritances at all."

Seeing that Wu Ji was unmoved, Wu Zhen Zhu continued to speak: "And most importantly, strength path is declining, it cannot compare to enslavement path or soul path. Even though qi path was declining, with the merging of the five regions, qi tides appeared and qi path started to experience a rise again. Choosing qi path is definitely wiser than staying with strength path."

But Wu Ji shook her head: "I'll choose strength path! Even though other true inheritances will allow me to have an easier time, if there is a strength path true inheritance, I'll still choose it. I will walk on strength path in my life, if I cannot use someone else's foundation, I will create my own."

Wu Zhan Ping was unhappy: "Wu Ji, you are not a Gu Immortal yet, you do not know the difficulties that we face. The benefits of these three true inheritances are simply indescribable, but you cannot feel them yet. Listen to me and choose one of the three, in the future when you cultivate on this long journey, you will be glad about the decision you made today."

Wu Ji's expression had never been so solemn, she bowed deeply at the two immortals: "Great immortals, I, Wu Ji, will never forget the care and concern that you have shown me. But if I do not choose strength path, I will regret it at the next moment. I have already decided on this, I will not change it further. Even if I fail in the future, I am willing to bear the consequences!"

"You!"

"Sigh…"

Wu Zhen Zhu and Wu Zhan Ping shook their heads, they felt pity for Wu Ji who had given up such a great opportunity.

Meng Zhen immortal aperture.

The sky here was filled with a pink aurora that constantly moved and changed.

At the center of the immortal aperture, there was a field of 'pink grassland', it was the earth dream fetus hair that Fang Yuan had spent a lot of effort to dig from Southern Border's underground.

There was also a small sea of flowers situated at the north-most part of the immortal aperture.

The flowers were all nine tune dream flowers, this type of flower only had one petal each, but it spiraled upwards from the roots and showed a spiral form with nine layers, it was quite peculiar.

At the southeast of the immortal aperture, Meng Qiu Zhen specially created a lake.

The lake had little water, it was hundreds of feet lower than the water level of the nearby shore. The entire lake was like a bowl that had a bit of water left inside it at the bottom.

This lake water was called dream river water, in the lake, there was a type of monstrous fish that looked like a tongue, it was bright red and moved agilely, it was called tongue tip small dream fish.

Finally, at the north-most part of the immortal aperture was a field of desolate bones.

Hundreds of huge bones were buried on the ground, a portion of them was still exposed externally.

These bones were also dream path Gu materials, they were obtained from the corpses of a few dream path ancient desolate beasts. Meng Qiu Zhen placed them here and set up the Gu formation, creating this bone dream sand farm.

The sand farm was nourished using the bone marrow, gradually turning the soil into dream sand.

Earth dream fetus hair, nine tune dream flower, dream river water, tongue tip small dream fish, and dream sand, these were all the dream path Gu materials that Fang Yuan obtained during this period of time.

Currently speaking, dream path Gu materials were still very rare.

Fang Yuan had almost ransacked the entire underground area of Southern Border but he only collected this much.

"But inside Meng Zhen immortal aperture, these Gu materials will be nurtured well, soon, a stream of immortal materials will be produced."

Meng Qiu Zhen was quite confident about this.

Even though there were dream path dao marks at these dream path Gu materials' original locations, the surrounding dao marks were still mostly earth path, they were suppressed and could not develop well, they were simply living between the cracks.

But now, they were moved into Meng Zhen immortal aperture, they were like flood dragons released into the ocean, or tigers entering a mountain, they could grow freely without restraint.

In this relaxed environment that was predominantly made of dream path dao marks, these dream path Gu materials would have great growth.

In addition, Fang Yuan had memories of the future, he had outstanding methods to nurture them, Meng Zhen immortal aperture's time difference with the outside world was also quite good.

"This way, my dream path development has finally gotten on track, as long as I work hard, I will have ample gains in the future." Fang Yuan assessed himself.

His investment into dream path would stop here.

In terms of dream path mortal Gu recipes and experience in exploring dream realms, Fang Yuan had five hundred years of memories, he still had the upper hand.

In terms of dream path Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan had four of them, he was definitely the top person in the current world.

In terms of attainment level, Fang Yuan was a dream path master, there might be others who were at this level as well, but he was without doubt still among the fastest group of people.

Furthermore, in terms of dream path Immortal Gu recipes and immortal materials, Fang Yuan was certainly the person with the number one results! He had two dream path Immortal Gu recipes that were undoubtedly accurate and exceptional. In terms of immortal materials, Fang Yuan also had an absolute advantage, Feng Jin Huang was just a mortal, even if Lady Poison Scorpion was a Gu Immortal, she was not an immortal ascended from the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique, she could not compare to Fang Yuan.

Comprehensively, Fang Yuan was definitely the number one person in the world in terms of dream path!

Such results already exceeded Fang Yuan's expectations. In his plan, he only had to maintain a certain lead in dream path.

And now was still not the time for the true rise of dream path.

Taking Meng Zhen immortal aperture for example, it was definitely the number one dream path Gu material production ground in the world, but it could only produce rank six dream path immortal materials, the quantity was also pitifully small.

Without sufficient dream path immortal materials, Fang Yuan could not raise the ranks of his dream path Immortal Gu.

The truth was, even though he had rank eight Immortal Gu like Dream Token and could use killer moves like dreamy light smoke, he could not gain an advantage against Duke Long or Spectral Soul in combat.

In battles of the highest level, dream path was only a special method that could intimidate and make the foes wary.

Fang Yuan wanted to explore Crazed Demon Cave, he would need to face the likely revived Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, who was inside the Door of Life and Death.

Facing such existences, his dream path methods that were still at the early stages of development were unreliable as his main methods.

"The truth is, by combining the perfect Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique and Spectral Soul's split soul method, I can create dream path Gu Immortals in bulk. But the extra dream path immortal apertures are useless, the greatest gain will still be natural inspiration, I will obtain new dream path Immortal Gu recipes. Even if I try to use the ascension tribulation to refine Immortal Gu, it will not be easy."

Tribulations were controlled by heaven's will, they could be strong or weak. When strong, there would be more heaven and earth qi, after succeeding the tribulation, there would be a lot of heaven and earth qi left behind to use for refining Immortal Gu.

But if heaven's will reduced the strength of the tribulation, there would not be extra heaven and earth qi, he could not refine dream path Immortal Gu in that case.

If heaven's will did that, Fang Yuan's gains would be very small. Firstly, the cost of creating Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies was high, he had to use a large number of dream realms!

If heaven's will tried something new and altered the tribulation contents, Fang Yuan would be in danger as well. After all, Fang Yuan's dream path foundation was already exposed to heaven's will last time.

Thus, recuperating for some time and using Meng Zhen immortal aperture to hide from heaven's will and develop rapidly, while refining new dream path Immortal Gu before undergoing tribulation was the best method now.

Continuing to invest in dream path would not have much relative returns. If Fang Yuan continued his investment, he would face heaven's will's suppression and also the pressure of being a frontrunner, it would be difficult and troublesome. He might as well wait until dream path flourished and dream realms were everywhere, after the trend grew to that extent, he could use the opportunity to develop, saving time and energy.

Thus, Fang Yuan did not want to keep the dream realms that he had.

In the hands of others, these dream realms would give them an opportunity to stay ahead of the era. Be it Western Desert's Tang clan, Central Continent's Feng Jin Huang, or Northern Plains' Lady Poison Scorpion, they would be the same.

But for Fang Yuan, the true value of these dream realms was that they could raise his attainment levels and allow him to annex more grotto-heavens.

Meng Qiu Zhen was truly the dream path clone that Fang Yuan took effort to create, his dream realm exploration efficiency was many times higher than the main body.

As Fang Yuan's attainment levels rose, he made great gains.

At the same time, he also continued to annex the grotto-heavens in the two heavens.

Each grotto-heaven had at least a million dao marks, a thousand heaven path dao marks, as well as a vast amount of cultivation resources.

These grotto-heavens had long histories behind them, Fang Yuan annexed everything, it was the same as instantly taking the accumulations of others for countless years.

Fang Yuan's strength grew time and again, each time, his improvement was huge, this speed was simply unheard of.

The specialty of the sovereign immortal body and the power of unrestrained heavenly mark, they surpassed the logic of the cultivation world. Either one would allow a person to rise to the top, leaving their name in history.

The most terrifying thing was when they were used together, the effect would be even greater! The actual result created would far surpass a simple addition of the two.

But be it a rise in foundation or strength, Fang Yuan still remained as a pseudo venerable.

He might be the number one pseudo venerable in history, but that was pointless.

Without becoming a venerable, there would be no qualitative change.

Fang Yuan cultivated secretly while annexing immortal apertures, he also inspected his own luck very often.

The silver white pillar of light was getting thicker, but the clouds above him were also growing in size. Be it the black cloud representing Spectral Soul Demon Venerable or the golden cloud representing Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, they were growing.

As for the star cloud representing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, it had expanded by several times, far surpassing the other two.

The situation had not reached the worst scenario yet, Fang Yuan still had time to continue his cultivation and recuperation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Rotten Mud Mountain was one of the famous mountains of Southern Border.

If it were in Western Desert, Eastern Sea, or Northern Plains, it might be more famous, but Southern Border had too many mountains, it had the most number of famous mountains in the five regions, Rotten Mud Mountain became quite inconspicuous, it gave people a feeling of being ordinary.

This place produced rotten mud, it was a common Gu material that had poison path and earth path dao marks, it had very little value in the market due to abundance.

During rainy seasons, Rotten Mud Mountain would turn into a temporary swamp, the rotten mud would turn into rotten swamp mud, which was a widely used Gu refinement material.

During winter, the rotten mud would combine with the ice and snow path dao marks and turn into rotten frozen mud, it was also a common resource. Because it was very fertile, when mixed in soil to nurture crops, the effect would be outstanding. Many Southern Border villages made use of it.

Furthermore, rotten frozen mud was the food of the smelly fart fat worm, thus, this Rotten Mud Mountain also produced the smelly fart fat worm as well.

The smelly fart fat worm was a rank one poison path Gu worm, it looked like black boar Gu, often sold by unscrupulous merchants as fake black boar Gu.

Similar to the smelly fart fat worm in name was smelly fart Gu, it was also a rank one poison path Gu worm. Similar to the smelly fart fat worm, smelly fart Gu was also living in Rotten Mud Mountain.

Living on what grew around them, there were several villages that survived using the resources of the Rotten Mud Mountain.

These villages were all scattered around the periphery of Rotten Mud Mountain, even though they competed with each other, they were more likely to work together.

Because Rotten Mud Mountain was a famous mountain, it could obviously produce immortal materials, the mountain even had poison path desolate beasts or ancient desolate beasts.

These villages did not have Gu Immortals, they were at most rank five Gu Masters, they would not dare to live on the mountain.

Rumble…

On this day, the people in the few villages heard thunderous sounds, they became shocked and uncertain.

"What is happening on the mountain?"

"Why is there thunder for no reason?"

"The mountain is dangerous, we Gu Masters cannot understand what is happening."

Next, people heard the shouting of people.

"Kong Ri Tian, you cannot escape! I know that you are hiding here, but can you hide here forever?"

"Come out now and hand over your Gu worms, I can still spare your life. If you miss this chance, after I search the mountain and find you, you will wish you were dead instead!"

Wu clan's Gu Immortal shouted, his voices creating sound waves that spread around the area.

The people in the villages at the periphery of the mountain were instantly shook.

"An immortal!"

"An immortal appeared. Oh heavens!"

"I know about this demon Kong Ri Tian, he specially targets pure and innocent girls, to think an immortal would go after him, he's dead meat!!"

"Did Kong Ri Tian get an Immortal Gu so an immortal is coming to snatch it?"

"Hmph! This is not snatching, the immortal is just upholding justice and righteousness."

"Do you guys think we will meet an immortal if we go there? Will we obtain a way to become immortal?"

After the fate war, everyone in the world learned of the existence of immortals. Before that, because most people lived in isolation, many people thought that immortals were just legends.

"Damn it!" Kong Ri Tian was covered in injuries, he hid in a rotten mud cave with a face full of despair.

"Sigh, Wu clan's immortal is too domineering. I have implicated you all!" Kong Ri Tian looked at Wang Xiao Er and the four great obscenities, feeling guilt.

On that day, after leaving the sinkhole, the situation turned chaotic. The four great obscenities were originally after Kong Ri Tian's immortal inheritance, but they ended up getting chased together.

Kong Ri Tian also knew about the four great obscenities' desire, he used the inheritance to lure them, they ended up working together and escaping for their lives.

After all, Sheng Tian true inheritance had only showed itself slightly, Gu Immortals did not pay attention to it yet. Kong Ri Tian only had to face rank five experts like Wu Ji or Shang Xin Ci.

The four great obscenities had great strength themselves, together with Kong Ri Tian who was a famous demon in Southern Border, they managed to escape by working together.

However, good times did not last, because Sheng Tian true inheritance was exposed, all the super clans started to go after it, they sent Gu Immortals out.

Kong Ri Tian and the rest got into huge danger, they hid everywhere they could, eventually ending up in Rotten Mud Mountain, but now, Wu clan's Gu Immortal was here to send them into despair.

"So be it if we die, so what?"

"Brother Kong, say no more, this is our fate!"

"Speaking of which, dying in the hands of an immortal is quite glorious too."

The Central Continent four great obscenities chuckled, they were all demonic path members, at this desperate moment, they displayed their grand attitude towards life.

"Alright, enough of such talk. Who said you would die?" Suddenly, from Kong Ri Tian's body, a will floated out.

Seeing this will, Central Continent's four great obscenities showed a complex expression.

This was Kong Sheng Tian's will, other than the will in Sheng Tian true inheritance, there were also Immortal Gu and immortal essence. This way, Kong Ri Tian had Gu Immortal methods to use.

This was also the reason why the four great obscenities did not attack Kong Ri Tian to snatch the inheritance.

These people were able to struggle until now from the pursuit of Gu Immortals, it was all thanks to Kong Sheng Tian's will.

"Lord ancestor, you are finally awake. Are your injuries healed already? Do you mean we can still survive?" Kong Ri Tian's eyes shined with bright light, he asked in succession.

Kong Sheng Tian's will sighed: "I am not injured, using Gu Immortal methods just takes a huge toll on me. Thus, I had to sleep and use Gu worms to replenish my will. As for whether you can be saved, of course you can! Why did I ask you to come here before I fell asleep? It was because this place allows us to escape from these people."

After saying this, Kong Sheng Tian took action and activated his Gu Immortal method.

Everyone was shocked to find out that a long tunnel secretly appeared in this rotten mud cave without any commotion.

They all entered the tunnel as they went deeper underground, arriving in a hall.

Kong Sheng Tian's will sighed deeply after returning here: "Back then, my main body spent a hundred years and used all sorts of clues to investigate and track down this place after much effort, I finally found this Hu Land. It was a pity that my body was too old then, I did not have long to live, I could only make arrangements and leave."

"Hu Land? Is it the secluded domain of heaven and earth recorded in \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e?" Everyone was surprised, they had heard of it before.

\u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e was simply too widely known in the world.

Kong Sheng Tian's will smiled arrogantly: "Of course! Hu Land shares the same reputation as Xi Land, it is a supreme secluded domain of qi path. Little Ri Tian, you know that my main body's most signature method was to shoot out currents from my body's pores and move rapidly. Hu Land and Xi Land are complementary[1], it is a perfect pair with my killer move, using it, we can definitely escape from these pursuers."

"That is great!!" Everyone was surprised and joyful.

Even though they did not fear death, the best situation was obviously to survive.

Kong Sheng Tian's will sighed as he added: "It is a pity that you are not a Gu Immortal, Little Ri Tian, you cannot bring this secluded domain of heaven and earth with you. Once I use this killer move, you will scatter and fly out like meteors, the speed is incredible and nobody can catch you, but this Hu Land will be left for those Gu Immortals outside."

Kong Ri Tian did not mind it: "Ancestor, keeping our lives is already good enough. Since we cannot bring the secluded domain of heaven and earth away, Wu clan can keep it safe for us now. One day, I will take it back, that Wu Ji or

Shang Xin Ci will moan under my legs, they will suffer for this!!"

Kong Ri Tian said this, his gaze turned ruthless, he emitted the aura of a demonic path member who had no fear for anything, he was filled with evil intentions.

Kong Sheng Tian's will laughed loudly: "Good, this is how my descendant should act like!"

Kong Sheng Tian was also a demonic path member back then, he liked descendants like Kong Ri Tian.

Speaking of which, even though Kong Ri Tian had committed countless sins, he did not lack talent or a proper nature. Otherwise, he would survive in Southern Border for so long and even gain the reputation of a strong demon.

Chen Yin Dao spoke: "Lord Gu Immortal, these people are my brothers, we would like to travel together. I heard from lord's words that we will be separated?"

Kong Sheng Tian's will nodded: "Indeed, if my main body was still here, I can use Hu Land to let you guys escape together. But I am only a will now, I can barely use Hu Land, be it direction or destination, I cannot control either. Maybe you can stay here and hide elsewhere, after I leave with Little Ri Tian, that Southern Border Gu Immortal might go after us instead."

Chen Yin Dao and the rest were troubled.

Since they could leave, they definitely should leave.

Staying here was too risky!

Central Continent's four obscenities were experienced with living like fugitives, they knew that staying behind was the same as courting death.

But if they escaped, they would not be together with Wang Xiao Er.

And if they were separated and the cursed activated…

"Brother Kong, I would like to speak to you." Thinking of this, Chen Yin Dao sighed deeply, he decided to speak the truth.

Kong Ri Tian was a little surprised, even though he cooperated with the Central Continent four great obscenities, he kept his guard up. But now that his ancestor was awake, he was not afraid of the four great obscenities' sneak attack.

Kong Ri Tian went to a corner with Chen Yin Dao as they conversed quietly.

"So that's it." Kong Ri Tiang gasped.

"Why else would we be like this?" Chen Yin Dao spoke very helplessly.

Kong Ri Tian blinked wildly: "I thought that Central Continent people had such interests, speaking of which, when I first saw that, I was shocked, to think that you brothers would have such interests!"

Their conversation could be heard as muffled voices in the air.

"Brothers, what do you think boss is telling Brother Kong?" Wang Xiao Er was confused, he asked in curiosity.

[1] Xi Land sucks in qi, Hu Land expels qi.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2099 Wu Yong“s Excitemen

The other three obscenities had ugly expressions too.

Kong Ri Tian was not just in the demonic path, he had the same 'hobbies' as them, they could be considered the same kind of people.

To think that they would have to expose the truth to him now, it was truly shameful and humiliating!

Hearing Wang Xiao Er's words, they even felt their anus tightening up.

The four great obscenities were already in deep anguish while Wang Xiao Er was starting to enjoy himself. Because he was a mysterious immortal, the four great obscenities did not dare to say anything.

Thus, the three of them gave vague replies: "Boss has his own good reasons for not telling us."

"Xiao Er, we need to believe in him."

"Boss is definitely thinking for our sake, he just does not want us to worry. This is not a problem!"

Wang Xiao Er felt a little embarrassed from their words: "I was wrong, I was wrong! Brothers, don't blame me, I was just curious."

After Kong Sheng Tian understood the situation, he returned to his ancestor Kong Sheng Tian's will and explained everything to him.

Hearing this, Kong Sheng Tian's will showed a peculiar expression.

"Let me try first." Kong Sheng Tian's will did not say that confidently.

"Immortal, please go ahead!!" Chen Yin Dao and the rest quickly shouted with expressions of endless gratitude.

Kong Sheng Tian's will was in no rush to treat them, he first used investigative methods to inspect their fortune.

After taking a look, Kong Sheng Tian's will had an idea: "Hmm, the size of these people's fortune qi is much larger than normal, it is not weak at all. Especially that Wang Xiao Er, is he really an amnesiac immortal?"

Kong Sheng Tian's will decided to save them.

The Central Continent four great obscenities were mere mortals, whether it was worthwhile to help them would depend on their fortune.

Kong Sheng Tian was a demonic path Gu Immortal, he naturally did things with a focus on benefits.

Just using Hu Land to let them escape would not consume much immortal essence, he would only have to use a method. But to treat the four great obscenities' problem would incur a huge cost.

Especially when the immortal essence that Kong Sheng Tian left behind were limited in quantity.

Next, Kong Sheng Tian started his true investigation.

A moment later, Kong Sheng Tian's will showed a serious expression, he shook his head: "I cannot treat your problem."

Kong Ri Tian was surprised: "Ancestor, even your methods cannot work?"

Kong Sheng Tian's will sighed: "I can heal most injuries in this world, but the immortal method on you guys is quite extraordinary, it is caused by the legendary love Gu. This Gu belongs to Spirit Affinity House, it seems that the person who used it on you is the current generation fairy. You are quite lucky to have even met Spirit Affinity House's fairy."

The four great obscenities' expressions turned pale.

Wang Xiao Er was confused: "Do my brothers have a huge hidden problem in their bodies?"

He became anxious: "All of you hid this from me, didn't we say that we would share good times and bad times together? What problem do you have, even though I can't help, I can at least try to share your burden!"

Wang Xiao Er said this, he got anxious, there was even slight rage in his tone.

The four great obscenities looked at Wang Xiao Er, feeling pain internally.

Or more accurately speaking, their butts were starting to hurt again.

Was it their good luck or bad luck to have met such a person? They were lucky because they could survive until now because of him. But why was it that they would rather have never met him?

"This is our fate." Chen Yin Dao sighed bitterly: "Immortal, since you cannot save us, we might as well stay here and wait for death."

Kong Sheng Tian's will chuckled as he waved his hand: "Even though I cannot save you, I have a method that can alleviate your problem. I can temporarily suppress this problem within you, it will not bother you for some time."

"You can do that!" The four great obscenities became excited, they quickly thanked him profusely.

Wang Xiao Er was also quite excited.

Kong Sheng Tian's will pondered again: "According to my deductions, your fortune does not exist in Southern Border, it is still in Central Continent."

"What?" The four great obscenities looked at each other, they were chased out of Central Continent after all, but hearing Kong Sheng Tian's words, they still had to return to Central Continent?

Kong Sheng Tian's will snorted coldly: "This is all I'll say, whether you believe it is up to you. Go!"

The reason he spoke to these mortals for so long was because of his inheritor Kong Ri Tian. As for Wang Xiao Er, Kong Sheng Tian's will did not want to involve himself.

If his main body was around, he might intervene.

But now, who knew what background Wang Xiao Er had? Was he really having amnesia or was he pretending? Even if he did lose his memories, looking at him, he still had defensive methods.

Kong Ri Tian had not become a Gu Immortal yet, he was even pursued by Southern Border's righteous path Gu Immortals, Kong Sheng Tian decided to act ignorant.

He wanted nothing to do with Wang Xiao Er.

"Go." Kong Sheng Tian spoke as he activated a killer move, utilizing Hu Land.

Normally speaking, when Gu Immortals used killer moves, a strong aura would leak out and cause others to be wary.

But Kong Sheng Tian's method could conceal the aura to a relatively perfect degree.

This method was really rare.

In the current five regions, only Wu Yong could do it.

This meant that when Kong Sheng Tian was alive, he was definitely a huge headache for his enemies, they could not easily defend against him.

Thus, when Wu clan's Gu Immortal found something amiss, it was all too late. He watched as these people flew away in all directions, unable to stop them.

Wu clan's Gu Immortal was upset but also filled with shock and uncertainty.

Because he found Hu Land!

"This is a qi path secluded domain of heaven and earth? I am going to make a huge contribution!" After Wu clan's Gu Immortal confirmed it, he became intensely happy, he started to contact Wu clan's first supreme elder Wu Yong.

When Wu Yong received the news, he was settling the clan affairs in his room.

"Hu Land?!" He immediately stood up from his seat, his eyes shining with bright light.

Next, he opened his mouth, he blew out a mouthful of green wind.

After the green wind moved around and grew into the size of a fist, it entered Wu Yong's mind.

Thoughts collided in Wu Yong's mind as they were constantly produced, the green wind would absorb them and assist in the collision speed, allowing him to think faster.

Even though Wu Yong was a wind path expert, his attainment level was beyond the level of mimicry, he could easily copy the trait of wisdom path.

"Hu Land is a secluded domain of heaven and earth, if Wu clan can obtain it, this might be the chance for me to start my domination!" Wu Yong was extremely happy, it was as if a fire burned in his heart, blazing intensely.

There were many secluded domains of heaven and earth recorded in \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e. For time path, there was the River of Time, for space path, there was space cave, also know as space door. For qi path, there was Xi Land and Hu Land. For rule path, there was Reverse Flow River, Cheng Bai Mountain, and Miniscule Mountain. For information path, there was Qian Kun Crystal Wall, Whisper Forest… and for soul path, there was Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley…

There were also some secluded domains of heaven and earth that comprised several paths, for example City Well, the Blue Sea of Life, and Ordinary Abyss.

Gu were the essence of heaven and earth, fragments of the Great Dao, even though secluded domains of heaven and earth had scattered dao marks, the total number usually surpassed rank nine Immortal Gu.

These secluded domains of heaven and earth were not just recorded in \u003c\u003cThe Legends of Ren Zu\u003e\u003e, very rarely, they had been obtained by Gu Immortals or super forces, leaving behind their own legends.

If a secluded domain of heaven and earth was used well, it could give a huge benefit to the super force. Even pseudo venerables and venerables would benefit greatly from them.

Ignoring anyone else, just the pseudo venerable Demon Immortal Qi Jue, he had used Xi Land to participate in a top level fight of the Gu Immortal world immediately after reviving.

Wu Yong knew: "For a super force, if they could develop a secluded domain of heaven and earth well, they would gain immense profits from a monopoly in the market, for example, like Dang Hun Mountain."

"For a Gu Immortal, a secluded domain of heaven and earth was the replacement of a rank nine Immortal Gu, it could shake the entire era, causing a new trend to emerge in the immortal world!"

Rank nine Immortal Gu were too hard to get.

There were not many rank nine Immortal Gu even in history.

For example, fate Gu, Heavenly Court spent millions of years trying to protect and restore it.

Or wisdom Gu for example, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable spent a lot of effort to keep it within Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

There was also hatred Gu, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable plotted for hundreds of thousands of years before succeeding.

The venerables in history were the group that had the most number of rank nine Immortal Gu, all of their vital Gu were rank nine. Other than them, the number didn't even reach five.

Thus, the value of a secluded domain of heaven and earth was apparent. Using a secluded domain of heaven and earth as the core to activate an immortal killer move would often have great effects.

Like Fang Yuan's reverse flow protection seal.

"I need to do my best and obtain this secluded domain of heaven and earth, I need to get it secretly and prevent information from leaking!" Wu Yong made up his mind.

The secluded domain of heaven and earth had huge implications if it was exposed, the whole of Southern Border would get involved, the other four regions might even come to snatch it.

But now, this secret had not been exposed yet, Wu Yong saw a great chance for himself.

Other forces only knew about Sheng Tian true inheritance, they did not know about this Hu Land.

Earlier, Wu clan's Gu Immortal had already fought against the other clans' Gu Immortals, they left on their own accord. Right now on Rotten Mud Mountain, there were no other lone and demonic cultivators.

In the past, if a rank eight inheritance like Sheng Tian true inheritance appeared, the entire Southern Border Gu Immortal world would be moved, many people would be sent out to fight for it.

But it was different now.

All five regions had inheritances appear, they were all exposed due to the qi tides.

Wu clan's Gu Immortal was able to defeat the competitors mostly due to this reason, the other super forces were busy dealing with their own territories, they were trying to get the inheritances of the highest value.

Sheng Tian true inheritance was just one of them.

Compared to Southern Border's righteous path, Wu Yong was more worried about the pseudo venerables.

"Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Qi Sea Ancestor are both qi path Gu Immortals, this Hu Land has huge significance to them."

"But luckily, Demon Immortal Qi Jue is currently suppressed by Divine Emperor City, while Qi Sea Ancestor is fighting against the variant human alliance led by Fang Yuan, he has no time to spare."

"As for Fang Yuan…"

Wu Yong was still most worried about Gu Yue Fang Yuan!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the past, Wu Yong chased after Fang Yuan and forced him to go from Southern Border to Western Desert. Now, Wu Yong was afraid that Fang Yuan would approach his clan and snatch Hu Land away!

Wu Yong knew that if Fang Yuan came for it, he would not be able to block him.

Immortal Gu were easily destroyed, Fang Yuan might act carefully, but these kinds of secluded domains were hard to destroy, he was almost certainly going to succeed in snatching it.

"Fang Yuan has the sovereign immortal body, he can cultivate any path, that is quite terrifying, Hu Land is definitely useful to him. If this Hu Land is exposed, my Wu clan will not be able to keep it, it will be taken away. By then, not only will we waste our time and resources, we may also incur deaths. Wu clan’s prestige may also fall, it will be better if we leave it alone!" Wu Yong thought about the situation.

He decided to send people and secretly take Hu Land away. If it got exposed during this process, he would immediately abandon it.

Even though Wu clan was big, it was not the match of someone like Fang Yuan!

In this world, the number of people did not matter, only individual strength was of importance.

"Those villages around Rotten Mud Mountain have no Gu Immortals, but we need to prevent the mortals and Gu Masters from exposing the news. Maybe we can make use of the ’beast tide’ to settle this problem."

"There is no rush to find Kong Ri Tian, we can just investigate it secretly. Hopefully, he does not expose his location before I get Hu Land."

If he still kept up the commotion, he would cause suspicions — Wu clan’s Gu Immortal was actually unable to capture Kong Ri Tian, wasn’t that too strange? What method did Kong Ri Tian use to escape from Wu clan’s rank seven Gu Immortal?

By then, they would cast their suspicions on Rotten Mud Mountain.

Thus, Wu Yong would rather have Kong Ri Tian hide himself these few days without exposing his location.

"To lure the attention of Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, I might need to activate my arrangement in Ba clan in advance to create a smokescreen for me to take Hu Land."

"Of course, there is the one biggest flaw in this plan, that is Kong Ri Tian."

"Kong Ri Tian has Kong Sheng Tian’s will, he can connect to treasure yellow heaven. At the crucial moment, if he exposes the secret of Hu Land, it would cause our Wu clan to suffer a huge amount of conflict."

"But this possibility is quite unlikely."

Wu Yong analyzed to himself.

Firstly, Kong Sheng Tian cultivated qi path, Kong Ri Tian would definitely cultivate qi path too. If Wu clan obtains Hu Land, from their perspective, they would want to compete with Wu clan in the dark and retrieve Hu Land without a commotion. They would not want a large number of competitors to emerge.

Secondly, if Kong Ri Tian exposed the secret of Hu Land, he would be the mortal enemy of Wu clan, it was not a wise thing to do since it would cause them to take revenge. At the same time, Kong Ri Tian would expose the secret that he was still escaping, other Gu Immortals would go and capture him.

Even though the possibility was unlikely, the chance was still there.

The risk of secretly taking away Hu Land was very huge to Wu clan!

But the benefit it involved was also massive, Wu Yong was willing to take the risk.

Some days later.

Above red dragon river, Wu clan’s, Xia clan’s, and Ba clan’s Gu Immortals were nervously anticipating a contest.

River water surged as ripples spread with explosive sounds, this was the fire thunder river segment of red dragon river, it produced fire path and lightning path Gu worms.

A newly discovered rank eight true inheritance was hidden at the bottom of this river segment.

The person who set up this true inheritance was called Fire Thunder Divine Lord, he cultivated fire path primarily with lightning path secondarily, even though he was a lone cultivator, he had above average luck and experienced many fortuitous encounters.

He was not a Southern Border Gu Immortal, he came from Western Desert.

He had once caused chaos in Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world, several Western Desert super forces chased after him. Even though he managed to survive, by the time he got to the fire thunder river segment of red dragon river, his injuries could not be healed, before dying, he made his arrangements.

Precisely because of his arrangements, this river segment turned into the fire thunder river segment gradually over time.

Fire Thunder Divine Lord’s methods were not eye-catching, they were very close to that of nature, even though this was the intersection of Ba clan and Xia clan, the two super forces did not notice anything strange, they thought it was a natural development.

Even though fire thunder river segment produced fire path and lightning path Gu worms, no Immortal Gu had ever been produced. Thus, Ba clan and Xia clan did not pay attention to it.

For mortals, even though the fire path and lightning path mortal Gu were alluring, the environment was too dangerous, few rank five Gu Masters would take the risk.

Thus, Fire Thunder Divine Lord’s true inheritance remained hidden for so long, until now when the qi tides swept through the world, it was unveiled.

Fire Thunder Divine Lord was a rank eight Gu Immortal, the rank eight true inheritance he left behind was quite high quality, it caused almost all of Southern Border’s super clans to compete for it.

After some probing and fighting, only three competitors were left.

One was Wu clan, the other two were Ba clan and Xia clan.

Ba clan’s current first supreme elder was Ba De, he was tall and had a plain look, he had a strong body with broad shoulders and chest, his skin that was not covered looked like thousand year old tree bark, there was even green moss growing on it.

He had a large mouth and broad nose, his eyes were covered by a black cloth, covering them completely. His dark green beard hung down to his waist, while his jade green hair extended to the back of his waist.

Ba De floated in the air as he called to Wu Yong: "Wu clan, you are overstepping your boundaries, this is the territory of my Ba clan. Regardless of what true inheritance it is, this belongs to Ba clan. Wu clan, as the leader of the Southern Alliance, the leader of Southern Border’s Gu Immortals, why are you not being a role model, are you ignoring the rules of the righteous path?"

Wu Yong smiled as he said gentlemanly: "Since when has this fire thunder river segment become yours? The territorial boundary between Xia clan and Ba clan is a sensitive area, Ba De, you need to speak more carefully, at least, you need to ask about the opinion of our comrades from Xia clan."

Before he finished, Xia clan’s Gu Immortal Xia Zhao spoke: "Lord Wu Yong, regardless of whether this is Xia clan’s or Ba clan’s territory, it is still our matter. Wu clan is far away at the southern-most area, even Qiao clan is nowhere close to the fire thunder river segment."

Even though Xia Zhao only had rank seven cultivation level, Xia clan’s original first supreme elder Xia Cha had already been turned into a mortal Gu Master by Fang Yuan, Xia Zhao was now the current first supreme elder, on the same status as Ba De. Thus, it was not strange that he spoke.

Xia clan and Wu clan had conflict between them even from before now, their relationship was not good.

Ignoring anything else, just merely in recent years.

Xia clan and Wu clan conflicted over Frosty Peak, Fang Yuan had disguised as Wu Yi Hai and forced Xia Fei Kuai away, winning the contest.

After that, Xia clan still made an attack and took over Qiao clan’s empty origin pit. Qiao clan was Wu clan’s subsidiary force, invading Qiao clan’s territory was offending Wu clan. After that, Wu Yong used Clear Jade Dripping Wind Tiny Bamboo Building to turn the situation around, Xia clan was forced to return empty origin pit.

Xia clan’s external supreme elder Immortal Yan Huang had once owned Moon Bowl, but Wu clan had already taken possession of this territory.

Thus, even though Xia clan and Ba clan were not harmonious, because Wu clan was the strongest among them, these two clans were actually standing on the same side now.

Qiao Si Liu’s expression changed slightly.

She was one of Southern Border’s three great fairies, her beauty was on par with Fairy Miao Yin.

Her cultivation level was also rank seven.

This time, with Wu clan’s action, Qiao clan had to show some effort as their subsidiary force, thus they sent Qiao Si Liu to accompany Wu Yong.

Qiao Si Liu knew about the rules of the righteous path, seeing Ba clan and Xia clan joining up against Wu clan, she became anxious internally.

Righteous path Gu Immortals had a set of rules to follow, they were not as free as the demonic path or carefree as the lone cultivators.

Even though Wu Yong was strong, seemingly the number one person in Southern Border, without a good righteous reason, he could not take Fire Thunder true inheritance by force.

At this moment, Wu Yong’s reputation and his status as the Southern Alliance Leader became the chains that bound him.

If Wu Yong took it by force, he would lose everyone’s support, Southern Border’s righteous path would lose faith in his impartiality as the alliance leader.

Wu clan was a powerful force but they did not cultivate fire path or lightning path, a rank eight fire thunder true inheritance was really not significant to Wu clan. If Wu Yong tried to take it now, Wu clan’s losses would be even larger instead!

Against Xia clan and Ba clan’s resistance, the smile on Wu Yong’s face became even more evident: "Go, bring the person here."

He instructed.

The Wu clan Gu Immortal behind him opened his immortal aperture’s entrance, a mortal Gu Master came out.

Wu Yong introduced: "This Western Desert Gu Master is the bloodline inheritor of Fire Thunder Divine Lord. Whether fire thunder river segment belongs to Ba clan or Xia clan does not matter, what is clear is that the Fire Thunder true inheritance in the river belongs to this little friend."

The expressions of Ba clan’s and Xia clan’s Gu Immortals changed.

Wu Yong smiled again with calm composure: "As righteous path members, how can we snatch other people’s inheritances? This true inheritance has its owner, it belongs to this friend from Western Desert. As the Southern Alliance Leader, I need to be impartial in my actions, if anyone suspects his identity, you can extract his blood and test it."

"As expected of Lord Wu Yong! So he came prepared." Qiao Si Liu’s eyes shined as she calmed down.

With this excuse, Wu clan had the right of reason, they could block any accusations that came at them, Wu Yong could use his full strength. In contrast, Ba clan and Xia clan fell into an awkward spot.

Ba De and Xia Zhao looked at each other, their expressions were ugly.

Wu Yong made such ample preparation, they were quite surprised.

Even though Wu Yong had just risen to power recently, his political skill was a huge lesson to the entire Southern Border Gu Immortal world.

Ba De and Xia Zhao knew that since Wu Yong brought out this bloodline descendant, his identity had to be authentic. Even if Wu Yong was faking it, he would have done it with a superb method that could not be seen through for now.

Ba De and Xia Zhao discussed among themselves and took a few steps forward.

Ba De had a solemn expression: "How can we return an inheritance of Southern Border to Western Desert?"

Xia Zhao added: "Since Fire Thunder Divine Lord died here and left his true inheritance in Southern Border, this is simply the will of heaven."

Ba clan and Xia clan could not back out, the true inheritance was in-between their territories, if they backed off now, would they still keep their reputation?

Wu Yong was not surprised by their words, he waved his sleeves:"Then let the three of us compete for it."

The situation had reached this stage, they could only fight to determine the outcome.

"Let me exchange blows with you!" Ba De shouted as he acted first.

Xia Zhao only had rank seven cultivation level, he quickly flew away and attacked from afar, helping Ba De to restrain Wu Yong.

Wu Yong laughed heartily, intense winds blew as the sky turned dark.

Ba De cultivated wood path, he activated his killer move, countless ancient trees and flying leaves appeared in the sky.

But against Wu Yong’s killer moves, the trees were sliced apart and the leaves wilted away.

After three rounds, Ba De and Xia Zhao got defeated by Wu Yong, the superior side was very obvious.

"Anything else to say?" Wu Yong smiled.

Xia Zhao had a livid expression, he remained silent. He could not help but recall the time when Xia Cha was still rank eight, at least back then, Wu Yong was not so arrogant.

"He actually became this strong!" Ba De was internally shaken as he clenched his fists: "But I still have another trump card killer move unused. If I try... can I defeat Wu Yong?"

Ba De thought about it, he relaxed his clenched fists.

Just this Fire Thunder true inheritance was not important enough for him to expose the killer move that he had kept a secret for years.

Ba clan and Xia clan left in the end.

Wu Yong brought the Western Desert Gu Master to the bottom of the river as he retrieved the Fire Thunder true inheritance.

The Western Desert Gu Master knelt down on the spot, requesting to join Wu clan.

Wu Yong agreed immediately.

This Western Desert Gu Master was called Zhong Yi, he had ample talent and a good character, he could become a Gu Immortal seed with some nurturing, Wu clan had no losses in taking him in.

Because of Fang Yuan, a number of Wu clan’s Gu Immortals had died. Wu Yong needed more Wu clan Gu Immortals to emerge now, thus he took in the surrounding Gu Masters of other regions as their clan’s future external elders.

"Congratulations to Lord Wu Yong, you easily defeated Ba clan and Xia clan, obtaining Fire Thunder true inheritance." Qiao Si Liu said with deep politeness.

"In the current Southern Border, who dares to contend with our lord?" Wu clan’s Gu Immortals gained a surge in morale, they spoke excitedly.

Wu Yong acknowledged their words, he said calmly: "Spread news of today’s battle, I want the entire Southern Border Gu Immortal world to hear of it."

"Yes." Wu clan’s Gu Immortals answered.

"Lord Wu Yong, I, mushroomman Gu Immortal Ke Xin Hong, seek your audience." At this time, a mushroomman Gu Immortal approached from the southeast direction, riding waves along the way.

"What?"

"A mushroomman Gu Immortal!"

"Does he come from Mushroomman Paradise? Such guts."

The Gu Immortals around Wu Yong had changes of expressions.

Ke Xin Hong wore a white shirt, he had a plain face, he did not conceal his appearance, there was a large mushroom above his head, looking like a hat.

Wu Yong’s heart jolted.

At the next moment, Ke Xin Hong transmitted to Wu Yong: "Lord Wu Yong, I come from Mushroomman Paradise, I carry the orders of Lord Gu Yue Fang Yuan."

Wu Yong’s expression did not change, he replied: "For what matter have you come?"

Ke Xin Hong smiled: "Sheng Tian true inheritance."

Wu Yong’s pupils shrunk immediately.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Wu Yong tried to stay calm as he exchanged some words with mushroomman Gu Immortal Ke Xin Hong.

"So Fang Yuan wants my Sheng Tian true inheritance but he has not discovered Hu Land!" After some probing, the worry in his heart was finally lifted.

The truth was, as long as Kong Ri Tian did not expose this secret personally, there was only a slight possibility that Hu Land would be discovered by anyone else other than Wu clan.

Back then, Kong Ri Tian and the rest used Hu Land to escape, no other Gu Immortal saw them.

"After Kong Ri Tian and the rest escaped, no news of them had emerged. Thus, outsiders like Fang Yuan would think that Kong Ri Tian is in my hands. Thus, he came to me for Sheng Tian true inheritance."

Wu Yong thought: "My actions earlier were not good enough. I should have announced immediately that Kong Ri Tian was captured by my Wu clan!"

Even though that was not true, if Wu clan publicized that, Kong Ri Tian would not come out to refute him anyway.

If Kong Ri Tian exposed himself, the Gu Immortals that were after Sheng Tian true inheritance would charge towards him like jackals, they would tear his weak little body to shreds.

"If Kong Ri Tian hears such an announcement from my Wu clan, he will also understand our motive. Keeping Hu Land a secret will also be ensuring his safety, he will not reject it."

Wu Yong had another plan, he could make up for his previous mistake.

Hu Land was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, it had immense value, if Wu clan wanted to own it, he would need to do it in secret!

"I can let you have Sheng Tian true inheritance." Wu Yong rapidly transmitted and replied Ke Xin Hong.

For Hu Land, giving up Sheng Tian true inheritance was a wise decision.

Moreover, this Sheng Tian true inheritance had just been obtained by Wu clan, it had contents but not Immortal Gu. The Immortal Gu and immortal essence were still in Kong Ri Tian’s hands.

Ke Xin Hong was slightly stunned.

Wu Yong agreed so readily, it was out of his expectations.

He was a Gu Immortal expert of Mushroomman Paradise, after Lu Wei Yin submitted to Fang Yuan along with the entire paradise, he became Fang Yuan’s subordinate.

This was the first mission that Fang Yuan gave him.

When Ke Xin Hong received this mission, he felt great internal pressure. He had heard of Wu Yong’s name long ago, along the way, he was thinking of what to do if Wu Yong rejected or refused to agree with this.

To think that he would agree so easily after they met.

"I finally understand the might and prestige of my lord now." Ke Xin Hong sighed internally, filled with deep emotions.

Ke Xin Hong added: "Lord Wu Yong, my lord is willing to pay for the entire Sheng Tian true inheritance."

It was Wu Yong’s turn to be stunned.

Hearing Ke Xin Hong’s words, it seemed like Fang Yuan wanted a fair trade? He was not going to extort or snatch it by force?

Wu Yong quickly reacted, he listed his condition.

Ke Xin Hong frowned slightly, because Wu Yong wanted a rank nine wind path immortal material, it was quite rare in the market.

Ke Xin Hong could not decide this alone, he quickly communicated with Fang Yuan.

After receiving an answer, Ke Xin Hong started to smile again as he looked at Wu Yong.

Using treasure yellow heaven, this transaction was quickly completed.

Fang Yuan obtained the full details of Sheng Tian true inheritance, while Wu Yong obtained a rank nine wind path immortal material.

"Fang Yuan has a large number of grotto-heavens from the two heavens, it is not strange that he has rare immortal materials. But he really went ahead to transact with me?!"

Surprisingly getting a rank nine wind path immortal material, Wu Yong’s preparatory work for refining eight-faced prestige wind Immortal Gu achieved a significant breakthrough.

But Wu Yong could not be happy!

Fang Yuan had the battle strength to snatch Sheng Tian true inheritance but he did not do that.

He only sent a mushroomman Gu Immortal and expressed his sincerity in making a fair trade, afterwards, he held his word and paid with a rank nine wind path immortal material.

"Fang Yuan is truly amazing!" Wu Yong sighed deeply.

As the saying goes, an expert swimmer would eventually drown, an expert combatant would die in battle, relying on one’s specialty without possessing other skills was a dangerous thing.

Once people started to rely on something, they would unknowingly stay within their comfort zone, they would develop a mental pattern. When they encounter problems, they would use their specialty trait to resolve the issues, as time passes, all of their other methods and perspectives would vanish. Eventually, they would face the greatest predicament of their lives, it might be their end.

But Fang Yuan did not do that.

He had great battle strength and could snatch the true inheritance, but if he did that, he would waste a lot of time and energy, there was even a chance of failing.

After all, the information could be erased.

But using this transaction, Fang Yuan easily obtained Sheng Tian true inheritance without a hitch.

Wu Yong analyzed: "This can mean at least two things."

"Firstly, Fang Yuan has a lot of immortal materials, one rank nine wind path immortal material is not important in his eyes!"

"Secondly, even though he is the number one person in the world, he still keeps his composure and scheming mind, he does not overly rely on his strength. Sigh, it would have been great if I managed to kill him back then. Fang Yuan has already grown fully, with such a nature, he is too terrifying."

When Sheng Tian true inheritance’s transaction ended, Fang Yuan’s main body was already in Western Desert.

Western Desert, Fang clan’s headquarters.

Fang clan’s supreme elders were almost fully gathered, they stared at Fang Yuan like he was a fatal enemy.

"Everyone, don’t be too nervous, really, I came here to make a transaction with Fang clan." Fang Yuan smiled.

But Fang clan’s immortals felt huge pressure weighing on them.

Fang clan’s first supreme elder Fang Gong said: "Is it our fortune or misfortune to have received your attention?"

"Everyone, we have quite the relationship actually." Fang Yuan started to activate his killer move.

As the aura leaked, all of Fang clan’s Gu Immortals stood up from their seats, they quickly activated their Immortal Gu, a battle was about to start.

"Fang Yuan, what are you doing?"

"This is our Fang clan’s headquarters!"

"Earlier when we were outside, you said you wanted to make a transaction, if you attack now, who will believe your words in the future?"

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals called out with intense nervousness.

Fang Yuan smiled coldly: "If I wanted to harm you, I could have attacked from the start, can your Fang clan stop me?"

As he said so, his appearance changed.

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals were shocked: "Suan Bu Jin?"

Fang Yuan activated familiar face again, changing into another appearance.

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals saw Fang Yuan’s appearance, they became shocked again: "Fang Di Chang?"

Fang Yun frowned, he was the adopted son of Fang Di Chang, seeing Fang Yuan’s transformation, he felt repulsed: "Lord Fang Yuan, did you come all the way to our clan just for this display of transformations to mock us?"

Fang Yuan looked at Fang Yun, saying with deep meaning: "Yun Er, during this time when I was gone, why didn’t you convert to wisdom path? Father gave you three wisdom path Immortal Gu and even my wisdom path inheritance. Fang clan has no wisdom path Gu Immortal at the moment, if you do not take up this responsibility, who will?"

"You, you!" Fang Yun pointed at Fang Yuan, he stared with wide opened eyes, filled with shock.

The other Fang clan Gu Immortals also had a change of expression.

They realized something from his words, they had a guess regarding the truth, the reality of it made them sink into panic.

"Indeed, I am Suan Bu Jin, who also became Fang Di Chang later on. I have interacted with you guys much more than you think." Fang Yuan looked around as he laughed heartily.

Fang Gong’s expression was livid, he could not wait anymore, he stood out: "What evidence do you have?"

Fang Yuan gave a bunch of evidence to the Fang clan Gu Immortals as he transmitted to Fang Gong, snickering: "Fang Gong, you and Fang Di Chang decided to sacrifice Suan Bu Jin to refine Divine Bean Palace, do you really want me to expose it?"

Fang Yuan not only had evidence, he even had accurate facts, Fang clan soon realized the whole story.

"So Fang Yuan infiltrated our Fang clan long ago!"

"He even became our external supreme elder!"

"Oh heavens, even our second supreme elder Fang Di Chang was replaced by him, we did not even notice!!"

After Fang clan’s Gu Immortals realized the truth, they all turned pale as cold sweat broke out.

It was too terrifying.

If not for Fang Yuan’s reveal, they would still think that Fang Di Chang was currently trapped inside Divine Emperor City.

Ever since the fate war ended, Fang clan had been trying to negotiate with Heavenly Court to get back their supreme elder Fang Di Chang.

"This means that Divine Bean Palace trapped your clone, while our second supreme elder died at your hands!" Fang Gong looked at Fang Yuan with a cold gaze.

Fang Gong was tall and sturdy, with long white hair and beard spreading around his head like a lion’s mane, he had bulging muscles that resembled rocks. Facing the murderer of his second supreme elder, if it were any other person, he would have attacked already.

But against Fang Yuan, he could only restrain himself, he looked at Fang Yuan with a complex gaze, there was anger and hatred in his eyes, but also helplessness and wariness.

Fang Yuan was too strong, his demonic might was unparalleled, his reputation was unmatched, Fang Gong did not dare to make a rash move!

Fang Yuan continued: "Saying that Fang Di Chang died at my hands is both correct and also wrong. Fang Di Chang’s body is destroyed but his soul is in my hands, do you want it back?"

Back then, to avoid the detection of soul lantern Gu, Fang Yuan did not kill Fang Di Chang, he only separated his body and soul.

Fang Di Chang’s soul was still kept in Fang Yuan’s hands.

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals heard this, they became excited.

"Fang Di Chang’s soul is in your hands?"

"Great, our second supreme elder can be saved!"

"No wonder Central Continent has been so vague all this time, so they did not even have our second supreme elder in the first place."

"In the current world, Fate has been destroyed, as long as Fang Di Chang’s soul is around, if he gets a Gu Immortal body, he would return to Fang clan again."

"If this Gu Immortal body cultivates wisdom path, then after Fang Di Chang revives, he will be an immense help to your entire clan!"

"Now tell me, friends from Fang clan, do you want to make a transaction with me?" Fang Yuan stated his ultimatum.

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals were silent, they looked at Fang Gong.

At the crucial moment, only a rank eight Gu Immortal like Fang Gong could make the decision!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2102 Going After Tian Nan“s true inheritance

The answer to Fang Yuan’s question was obvious for Fang clan.

Fang Gong nodded as he thought about his words before saying in a solemn tone: "Of course we are willing to transact, but Sir Fang Yuan, what do you want? If your request is too much, or if it exceeds our capability, then..."

Fang Yuan waved his hand, interrupting Fang Gong: "Firstly, I need Thieves Den. Secondly, I need Fang clan to take over green ghost desert and provide me with a vast number of soul cores, what I will give to you is not just Fang Di Chang’s soul. We can slowly discuss the details later."

Fang Yuan gave loose conditions, Fang clan’s Gu Immortals were excited about it but also held suspicions.

Fang Yuan seemed to know what they were thinking: "I can easily destroy your entire Fang clan, why would I need to resort to other methods? I’ll let you know, I’ve already done a transaction with Wu Yong. I am not a brutal person, killing is just a method. Unless I have to, I will not use brute strength to satisfy my requirements."

Fang clan’s immortals were shaken internally, Fang Yuan’s words had hidden meaning. He was saying that if they did not satisfy him, he would wage war on them, they would lose terribly and even get wiped out!

Fang Gong felt bitter internally, against this powerful and domineering Fang Yuan, what could he choose?

Actually, the moment Fang Yuan showed up, Fang clan no longer had a chance in the matter.

Fang clan had to cooperate with Fang Yuan, they had to undergo transactions.

Otherwise?

Death!

Heavenly Court could not stop Fang Yuan, Spectral Soul was even killed by him, even before that, Southern Border’s rank eight Gu Immortals were also harmed by him!

What could the mere Fang clan do against him?

Even a super force would be exterminated.

Looking at the past, Northern Plains’ Hei tribe had been destroyed, replaced by Bai Zu tribe.

There was also Qing clan, back then, they were incredibly powerful, but after provoking the young Spectral Soul, they were wiped out. Green ghost desert was now Qing clan’s graveyard, it was right beside Fang clan.

Sometimes, one person could wipe out an entire force.

In the Gu world, strength ruled above all!

Thus, even though super forces had deep foundations, they would often be very careful when dealing with lone immortals or demonic immortals, especially when engaging in combat.

In order to survive, Fang clan agreed to Fang Yuan’s requests.

The two sides negotiated for some time before they arrived at a conclusion.

Fang Yuan’s terms were too relaxed, Fang clan could barely believe this was real.

Was this the number one demon in the world, Gu Yue Fang Yuan?

Because reality was much better than their expectations, these Fang clan Gu Immortals’ moods improved drastically!

"I said before, I am not someone who enjoys killing brutally, cooperating with me has great benefits." The person who slaughtered his clan, killed all the Gu Immortals in Hei Fan grotto-heaven, participated in the Dong Fang tribe incident, partially accountable for Snowy Mountain blessed land’s destruction, annexed his allies in Lang Ya Sect and the variant humans, destroyed Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, captured Southern Border’s righteous path Gu Immortals, killed Gu Immortals from all the five regions and two heavens, participated in Heavenly Court’s climactic battle, and the one who slaughtered Spectral Soul, Fang Yuan, said with an earnest expression.

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals had twitching eyelids as they quickly agreed with him.

"Lord Fang Yuan is right!"

"Working with Lord Fang Yuan is our clan’s greatest blessing."

"Actually, we know about your circumstances back then, Lord Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court was simply too much of a bully!"

Fang clan’s Gu Immortals uttered words that seemed to be their heartfelt feelings, they showed no signs of insincerity.

Fang Yun and Fang Leng were still too young, they remained silent.

"If Lord Fang Yuan is interested in creating a clan, my Fang clan will do our best to help you!" Fang Gong ended the conversation with a promise that held great meaning.

Fang Yuan looked at him with a deep gaze before leaving.

At the next moment, he activated a killer move and vanished from everyone’s sight.

Fang Gong tried to induce Fang Yuan into creating a clan, it was for the sake of Fang clan. If their secret transaction was exposed in the future, Fang clan would be in a passive spot, their reputation would fall, they might even get attacked by other super forces.

But if Fang Yuan creates a clan, he would go from the demonic path to the righteous path. by then, if this transaction was exposed, Fang clan would only face some criticism.

Gu Masters and Gu Immortals who were lone and demonic cultivators could convert their statuses into members of the righteous path.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was one such example.

If a demonic or lone cultivator had enough battle strength to make the righteous path forces wary, they would not want to fight. When these Gu cultivators create their clan, if they were adept at dealing with the surroundings forces to create beneficial relationships, they might reach a certain agreement and balance, they would become part of the righteous path.

The truth was, many super forces in history, be they in Western Desert, Eastern Sea, or Southern Border, involved such cases.

Fang Yuan’s transaction with Fang clan made Fang Gong realize that Fang Yuan was someone with such political view and ability.

If a strong demonic cultivator stops focusing on fighting or killing, he would act like a righteous path member, he would be able to change his status.

"It is a pity that is not my goal." Fang Yuan smiled lightly to himself.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, he created the Blood Wing Demon Sect, at its peak, there were ten thousand members, he learned of the true essence of strength at that time.

In this world, a person’s strength can surpass an entire organization’s, any sort of organization was just icing on the cake.

Only when an individual had high battle strength would they truly be strong!

Even the number one super force, Heavenly Court, had to rely on venerable methods to survive at the moment of crisis. Otherwise, it would have been destroyed already.

"Thieves Den." Fang Yuan started his closed cultivation, deciphering this damaged Immortal Gu House.

Meanwhile, his clone in Eastern Sea, Qi Sea Ancestor, was also negotiating a transaction with Song clan.

Right now, there were only Qi Sea Ancestor and Song Xia Qi in the hall.

Song Xia Qi was a rank seven Gu Immortal of Song clan, he was tasked to be stationed in qi sea, he was their representative.

Right now, Song Xia Qi had an ugly expression, he could not sit still. Because earlier, he had received a "small" request from Qi Sea Ancestor — Tian Nan’s true inheritance!

Qi Sea Ancestor claimed that his descendants wanted some development in refinement path, thus he wanted to make a transaction with Song clan.

Song clan had once competed with Ruo Lai clan and Cai clan over the ownership of Ascending Heaven Plain, in the end, they won the true inheritance of Old Eccentric Tian Nan.

Old Eccentric Tian Nan was a genius of the Remote Antiquity Era, he had high seniority, the first refinement path supreme grandmaster recorded in history, he was on par with Old Immortal Kong Jue and Long Hair Ancestor.

Even after three million years, Old Eccentric Tian Nan’s true inheritance still had immense value.

Song Xia Qi was silent for a while before replying: "Reporting to ancestor, I would not dare to lie. Ever since we obtained this refinement path true inheritance, our Song clan has been researching upon it, we specially chose to nurture Gu Immortal seeds to make Tian Nan’s true inheritance one of our signature strengths in the future."

"This is a huge matter, I cannot decide on it, allow me to report it first. But I would guess that the result might disappoint you, ancestor."

Song Xia Qi said in a polite tone that he would report it, but he was clearly rejecting the idea.

Qi Sea Ancestor smiled as he waved his hand: "You do not need to worry, that was just a thought that I had. Since Tian Nan’s true inheritance is so precious to Song clan, why would I snatch it from you? We can forget about this matter."

Song Xia Qi had a grateful expression, as he stood up to express his gratitude, he mentioned several other super forces in Eastern Sea, they also had deep foundation in refinement path.

Qi Sea Ancestor had a compassionate smile as he said: "I’ll remember your suggestions, don’t be in a rush to leave, I have made some new tea."

Meng Qiu Zhen passed many dream realms recently, causing Fang Yuan’s food path attainment to jump through master level from zero foundation, becoming a grandmaster.

Qi Sea Ancestor was Fang Yuan’s clone, they shared attainment levels, while he organized his combat system, he created some new qi path tea as well.

After drinking the tea, Song Xia Qi bid farewell to Qi Sea Ancestor respectfully.

After returning to his estate, he used an immortal killer move to communicate with Song clan’s headquarters.

This matter concerned Qi Sea Ancestor, it was too important, Song clan’s immortals soon learned of this situation.

Song clan’s Gu Immortals put everything else aside as they quickly discussed.

"Hmph, back then our Song clan spent so much resources and manpower to gain ownership of Ascending Heaven Plain and obtain Tian Nan’s true inheritance. This Qi Sea Ancestor wants to take the fruit of our labor just like that? Wishful thinking!"

"I think it was inappropriate to reject him on the spot. We need to give Qi Sea Ancestor some respect, at least, we should listen to his offer."

"No, Tian Nan’s true inheritance is not for sale! Even though our Song clan specializes in light path and water path, these two true inheritances are not outstanding compared to other super forces. But with this Tian Nan’s true inheritance, our success rate of refining Immortal Gu will rise sharply, the benefit for our clan is long lasting and immense."

Song clan had been looking for a refinement path true inheritance all this time.

The truth was, many Eastern Sea super forces were doing the same.

Because Eastern Sea had the most abundant resources and immortal materials, once they had a high quality refinement path true inheritance, the amount of benefits they would gain far surpassed the other regions.

"Tian Nan’s true inheritance belongs solely to Song clan, this advantage might not be clear in the following years, but after decades or centuries, our Song clan’s strength will definitely surpass the other super forces!"

"But offending Qi Sea Ancestor like this might not be appropriate? Thinking about our current situation, after the qi tides settled, all sorts of inheritances emerged, us super forces have been competing for them. Once we get into a deadlock, Qi Sea Ancestor would make the decision as the leader of the Righteous Qi Alliance. We need to consider if Qi Sea Ancestor will become biased after this, when he makes a decision in the future, will he purposely strip away our benefits?"

During this period of time, Qi Sea Ancestor was truly very busy.

Eastern Sea’s righteous path forces joined his Righteous Qi Alliance, when they competed for true inheritances, it became the Righteous Qi Alliance’s internal affair.

At some point, it became a trend to ask Qi Sea Ancestor to make the decision in a case of dispute, more and more forces started to find Qi Sea Ancestor.

Fang Yuan had very profound political skills, Qi Sea Ancestor was able to make decisions that could satisfy both parties in the dispute most of the time.

Thus, Qi Sea Ancestor’s reputation rose every day.

Song clan’s Gu Immortal had such a worry, it was not strange.

"We can satisfy any of his other requests, there is nothing wrong with improving our relationship with Qi Sea Ancestor. But he wanted Tian Nan’s true inheritance... how do I put this? Qi Sea Ancestor has a really keen sense, as expected of someone who could contest with Fang Yuan!"

Earlier, Eastern Sea’s super forces were friendly to Qi Sea Ancestor, wanting to rely on him to resist Wu Shuai and the variant human alliance. But now, after the battle to pursue Fang Yuan, Qi Sea Ancestor was enemies with Fang Yuan, the attitude of many Eastern Sea forces including Song clan had changed a lot.

"Song Xia Qi, when you rejected Qi Sea Ancestor, what did he do?" Song Qi Yuan asked.

Song Xia Qi quickly replied: "He gave up very quickly, there was no change in his attitude. He is very understanding and magnanimous, he even asked me to drink his tea. That new qi path tea is really amazing!"

Qi Sea Ancestor named his new tea triple layered qi tea. This tea was made using heaven qi, earth qi, and human qi.

In the cup, heaven qi was at the top, resembling floating clouds. Human qi was condensed into a lump, resembling a pill that floated in the middle of the cup. Earth qi sank to the bottom, the fragrance of the tea was deeply concealed, only after it was drank would it emit the fragrance and leave a lingering aftertaste.

After Song clan’s Gu Immortals heard the description, the unease in their hearts faded away slightly.

"Qi Sea Ancestor is really magnanimous!"

"Our Song clan has always been respectful to him."

"Seeing his attitude, we should not have much to worry about. Even if he was angry, as the Righteous Qi Alliance Leader, he would not go overboard."

"Tian Nan’s true inheritance concerns immense benefits, it will be the core inheritance of our clan in the future, we cannot lose it!"

After the Song clan Gu Immortals discussed for a long time, they made up their minds — they would leave this as it is.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Several days later.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Dream realm.

After an intense battle of life and death, the opponent in front of Meng Qiu Zhen finally fell to the ground.

"I want to see who you really are!" Meng Qiu Zhen lost control of the body, he was acting as a young man who angrily went up and pulled off the opponent’s veil.

But the appearance shocked the young man deeply.

"Father, how can it be you?!" The young man shouted as his body trembled.

The one who fell was his father, he smiled in satisfaction as he said: "My son, you did well. You’ve learned all the killer moves of our clan, but your heart lacks sufficient hatred and sadness. I have a terminal illness anyway, I cannot live for long, it is better to sacrifice myself for you."

The young man broke into tears: "Father, why can’t we give up on hatred and live in seclusion? Why must we take revenge at all cost?"

The young man’s father stared at him fixedly: "Our entire family was killed by the enemy, your mother, your grandparents, your younger brothers and sisters, they were all killed. This hatred is above anything else, how can we not take revenge?! Remember, your father died because of this. If you do not take revenge, my death will be in vain, I would have died because of you!"

The young man’s body shook as he said in a hoarse voice: "Father..."

He wept in pain as a pale blue flame started to burn around his body at this time.

His father saw this flame as became very happy: "Good, good, good, such a powerful agony blue heart flame, it is enough to take our revenge, we can take revenge now..."

Saying so, the young man’s father took his final breath.

"Oh no." Meng Qiu Zhen cried out internally.

Seeing his father’s death, the agony blue heart flame on the young man’ body expanded rapidly, it burned with at least ten times of the intensity as before!

Meng Qiu Zhen’s soul was still in the dream, he instantly felt a surge of sadness, anger, and hatred, they poured into his heart like a torrential river.

"I cannot lose myself! This is the hardest part of the dream realm." Meng Qiu Zhen desperately held on but he started to lose his grip in a few moments.

Create dream!

Without a choice, he immediately used a dream path immortal killer move to defend his soul.

In a newly created dream within a dream, he was situated in a large room.

The room broke out in flames, it was burning in blue flames.

Meng Qiu Zhen quickly took action, extinguishing the fire all over the house, trying to save it.

After a chaotic period, the fire started to dwindle, the sturdy house was also burned to a crisp, only an intact guest room was left.

"I survived." Meng Qiu Zhen let out a breath of air, dispelling the killer move dream within dream as he returned to the original dream realm.

The final hurdle of the dream realm was simply too fatal!

Meng Qiu Zhen was almost engulfed by emotions, he nearly forgot about reality and the dream completely, submerging entirely into this dream.

Of course, each time he explored a dream, his main body would stay outside to guard against any accidents, he would take action if something happened.

This dream realm was finally passed.

Together with the gains of the earlier few dream realms, Fang Yuan’s fire path attainment level reached great grandmaster!

"Fire path attainment level reached great grandmaster, I can finally annex those fire path grotto-heavens in the two heavens. Looking at the time, Wu Shuai’s method should have activated already." Fang Yuan’s main body assessed.

Immemorial two heavens.

Fire Plain grotto-heaven.

On a vast grassland, there was red colored fire beard grass growing everywhere.

It was harvest season, Gu Masters of the grotto-heaven started to use Gu worms to collect the fire beard grass.

"Crack, crack..."

From somewhere, a terrifying sound could be heard from below.

The moment the Gu Masters sensed something, they were faced with a fatal threat.

Countless ants came up from underground, some were finger-sized, some were large as carriages, the number of ants was uncountably large, they instantly engulfed the entire fire beard grassland.

Skeleton grotto-heaven.

"What is going on? What is going on?!" The grotto-heaven Gu Immortal in charge of raising the bone armor hounds was flustered and helpless.

The thousand or so bone armor hounds that he was in charge of rearing started to growl in anguish, some were rolling on the ground, biting in a frenzy.

The Gu Immortal had a pale expression: "Oh no, I’m finished. Granny said that I had to take care of these bone armor hounds with utmost carefulness, but I actually screwed up so badly!!"

Some bone armor hounds started to die, a large number of ants crawled out of their corpses.

The Gu Immortal gritted his teeth in anger: "So these ants are the cause of this! I want you all to... ugh!"

The Gu Immortal was quickly shocked and uncertain.

Because more and more ants came out of the bone armor hounds, some were even coming out from the ground.

These ants were like raging tides, the size was growing rapidly, the Gu Immortal was very shocked. There was even Immortal Gu aura among them, the Gu Immortal did not dare to stay here, he quickly retreated.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Imperial Court.

"Your Majesty, Chuzhou[1], Qingzhou, Lianzhou and other areas are experiencing ant plagues."

"The ant plagues are too terrifying, in just half a day, hundreds of thousands of mortals died, a hundred cities got wiped out!"

"Within the ant plague, there are rank six and seven immortal ants, all of the officials in the various provinces are troubled."

The current dynasty’s emperor frowned with a solemn expression: "The ant plague is too vicious, it is not something we can resolve. The current matter at hand is to contact the Grotto Lord!"

Song clan headquarters.

"Grandpa, you’re so nice to me, thank you for the Immortal Gu!" Song Yi Shi held the rank six water path Immortal Gu in her hands as she spoke happily.

Song clan’s first supreme elder Song Qi Yuan was her grandfather.

At this moment, Song Qi Yuan looked at his beloved granddaughter, he said in concern: "Our clan is researching Tian Nan’s true inheritance, this water path Immortal Gu is our first success. But my dear granddaughter, don’t go around flaunting it, tell others that you captured this wild Immortal Gu by chance. Even though I am the first supreme elder, I cannot be openly biased towards you."

"I get it, I get it." Song Yi Shi looked at the water path Immortal Gu in her hands with overflowing joy, while she was toying around with it in her hands, her face suddenly turned pale as she held her tummy.

"So much pain, so painful!" She fell down weakly, her face had turned white like snow.

Initially, only her stomach was hurting, but soon, the unbearably intense pain spread to her entire body.

"My granddaughter, what’s happening?!" Song Qi Yuan was shocked, he quickly checked.

At the next moment, Song Qi Yuan found that there were countless ants roaming around in Song Yi Shi’s body, devouring her flesh.

The thing that made him even angrier was that these ants were actually eating away at her dao marks!

"Such evil ants, such vicious methods!" Song Qi Yuan quickly made his move.

A pure white light shrouded over Song Yi Shi, the light split into countless threads that entered her body, killing all of these ants in an instant.

Song Qi Yuan cultivated light path, his attainment level was very high, he used his methods with great proficiency, easily suppressing the situation.

But good times did not last long, soon, new ants grew out and continued to torture Song Yi Shi.

Song Qi Yuan’s brows were tightly locked, he felt heartache at her plight but also deep anger, he soon realized the problem.

It turned out that these new ants were emerging from Song Yi Shi’s immortal aperture!

"My granddaughter, bear with the pain, take a look at your immortal aperture!" Song Qi Yuan tried to speak to her in a gentle tone.

Song Yi Shi took a look at her immortal aperture as her face turned pale with shock, she cried with reddened eyes: "So, so many ants! Grandfather, my immortal aperture is going to be destroyed by these ants!!"

The terrifying ant plagues spread around the many Gu Immortals of the Righteous Qi Alliance.

The grotto-heavens of the two heavens were the main victims, Old Immortal Hua Yu, Granny Skeleton, and Fire Plain grotto-heaven’s owner were the main targets. Other than them, there were the Song clan, the Ruo Lai clan, and the Cai clan. As for the remaining Eastern Sea super forces, even though they faced the ant plague too, it was to a smaller extent, involving their external resource points.

Once the ant plague appeared, it immediately received the attention of the entire Righteous Qi Alliance.

"This ant plague is too strange, it is clearly targeting us!"

"We didn’t find anything strange earlier, the variant human alliance is completely intact!!"

"Such powerful ants, even an idiot knows that this is the work of Wu Shuai."

"To think that Wu Shuai is just a mere clone of Fang Yuan, yet he has such a terrifyingly vicious method."

The Righteous Qi Alliance soon found the culprit, they were furious and gathered to discuss it.

Many of the victims displayed the ants in their territories. The aura of these ants varied from weak to strong, from mortal to immortal. They came in all sorts of shapes and sizes, there was no clear pattern.

"These ants are very scary, the most terrifying thing is that they can devour dao marks to refine and raise their rank themselves!"

"They are too hard to eliminate, we could not find any ant eggs."

"And the biggest question now is, when did we get hit by this move?"

The Gu Immortals discussed among themselves while Qi Sea Ancestor sat at the main seat, holding this session for them. He had a worried expression but he secretly admired Wu Shuai internally.

"I’ve been trying to complete my combat system and create core killer moves. Thus, I asked the main body to get Sheng Tian true inheritance. To think that Wu Shuai has already gone one step further and innovated, creating an even more complex killer move, lingering poisonous ant plague."

Qi Sea Ancestor knew some details.

Even though Fang Yuan’s main body and Wu Shuai did not tell him, they were not keeping things a secret either. In their interactions, they exposed some details.

It turned out that after Meng Qiu Zhen became an immortal and obtained multiple dream path Immortal Gu, his efficiency in exploring dream realms rose tremendously.

Fang Yuan’s food path and poison path rose to grandmaster level. Clones shared his attainment levels, Wu Shuai used his quasi-supreme refinement path and enslavement path attainment levels, as well as wood path grandmaster, to create a qualitative change and make a breakthrough.

Originally, Wu Shuai’s ants came from Green Ant Ascetic. Even though this method had great battle strength, a long time had passed since his era.

This time, Wu Shuai referenced the killer move Qing Chou, on the basis of Green Ant Ascetic, he made a breakthrough and allowed his ants to devour dao marks to auto-refine themselves into higher ranks.

But Wu Shuai’s main body could not use the move, only Fang Yuan’s main body could use it.

Lingering poisonous ant plague was in essence a compound killer move comprising poison path, enslavement path, refinement path, wood path, and food path, it even expended unrestrained heavenly marks!

This move had an incredibly powerful concealment effect, it began by using the advantage of poison path, possessing concealment and infectiousness. After the killer move’s dao marks infect the target’s immortal aperture, it would turn into miniature ants that devour the surroundings to grow stronger and increase in numbers. After they reach a certain size, they would turn into the terrifying ant plague.

To completely get rid of the ant plague, one would need to eliminate the respective dao marks.

But currently, the Righteous Qi Alliance had not found out this fact yet.

Even if they knew, they would not have efficient methods to deal with this compound killer move either.

[1] Actual cities in China.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the hall at the bottom of qi sea.

The representatives of the clans in the Righteous Qi Alliance gathered with many different wills, discussing on how to resolve the lingering poisonous ant plague.

The ant plague had just been discovered, the clans did not have any good ideas.

Thus gradually, their gazes shifted towards Qi Sea Ancestor.

The grotto-heaven owners that resided in the two heavens were already gritting their teeth, they asked Qi Sea Ancestor to stand up for them.

The ant plague harmed almost all the two heavens grotto-heavens’ Righteous Qi Alliance members, these people were considered closest to Qi Sea Ancestor, as for Eastern Sea’s forces, only Song clan, Ruo Lai clan, and Cai clan were affected.

Thus, Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals deduced: "Did this method originate from the two heavens? Song clan, Ruo Lai clan, and Cai clan got hit by it because they have Ascending Heaven Plain?"

Nobody suspected Qi Sea Ancestor to be the culprit.

Because the ones who suffered the most were Qi Sea Ancestor’s closest allies in the Righteous Qi Alliance.

After staying silent for a moment, Qi Sea Ancestor said: "We need to resolve this ant plague. In my opinion, this problem is even greater than the qi harvest fruit from before. As long as the qi harvest fruit does not explode, it would not damage the grotto-heaven. But this ant plague harms Gu Immortals and their foundations at all times."

"Among us here, some have not encountered this problem. But if we do not try to resolve this now, nobody will be spared in the future!"

The immortals in the hall were all very worried.

Gu Immortals were astute people, everyone acknowledged Qi Sea Ancestor’s words. If not for this, they would not have gathered to discuss this so quickly.

The ant plague was like a fire, even though it was only burning some people now, if it was not put out in time, everyone would be affected by it eventually.

Qi Sea Ancestor continued: "Resolving this ant plague will not be like the qi harvest fruit problem. During that time, I could still try to solve it, but this ant plague does not concern qi path. Thus, we will have to rely on all of you, we must work together to get through this."

"We need to gather the wisdom path Gu Immortals of the respective clans and make deductions together. During the process, if they need any Immortal Gu, killer move, a particular path’s Gu Immortal great expert, or even the help of a true inheritance, you need to provide it without holding back."

Qi Sea Ancestor’s expression became increasingly solemn: "Even if we cannot resolve this, we need to be able to suppress and slow down the ant plague for now. If we cannot even suppress it, we will need to wage war on the variant human alliance again!"

Qi Sea Ancestor spoke with a firm tone, his expression was very serious.

The hall fell into silence.

The Gu Immortals stopped talking.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s words made good sense.

The terrifying part of the ant plague was that it consumed the foundation of the Gu Immortal.

If it could not be restrained or stopped in time, the ant plague would grow increasingly strong while the Righteous Qi Alliance would became weakened severely.

After a long time, a clear difference in strength would be apparent between the Righteous Qi Alliance and variant human alliance, if they did not attack early and deal with the variant human alliance, eventually, the Righteous Qi Alliance would not have the strength to contest the variant human alliance anymore!

The killer move lingering poisonous ant plague involved many paths and even used up unrestrained heavenly marks. This killer move was at the strategic level, it had terrifying might.

"But waging war on the variant human alliance? Isn’t that simply waging war on Gu Yue Fang Yuan and Wu Shuai?"

"How can we be Fang Yuan’s match? Even Spectral Soul fell at his hands!"

"But if we do not fight, are we going to wait for death?"

"There is no longer an option for us, this demon Fang Yuan is too overbearing!"

"No, even Heavenly Court could not do anything against Fang Yuan, even though our Righteous Qi Alliance has many members..."

"Isn’t Fang Yuan also accumulating strength right now?"

"Maybe we can get help from Heavenly Court?"

"Hmph, Heavenly Court is not worthy of being the leader of the righteous path, our Lord Alliance Leader has already contacted them, wanting to work together to deal with the variant human alliance. They have been stalling with excuses."

"In my opinion, the best situation is for us to work together and resolve this ant plague!"

"Even though Fang Yuan is behind this, he has not taken action personally, this is his probe towards us. We need to perfectly resolve this ant plague and show him our strength!"

The immortals in the hall discussed, they soon came to a consensus.

They did not want an all-out battle to the death.

Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals did not have the same nature as Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals.

Furthermore, all of the clans were busy competing for the newly exposed true inheritances, they were too busy, why shouldn’t they strengthen themselves instead of pitting their lives against the enemies?

For normal fights, they would be wins or losses, there was hope, that was why people would want to fight.

But to fight against Fang Yuan to the death?

It would not lead to the enemy’s death, they would certainly die themselves!

All the Gu Immortals did not say this but they had the same opinion internally.

Heavenly Court’s distressed state, Spectral Soul’s loss, all these proved that Fang Yuan had terrifying might and incredible craftiness.

Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals did not know that Spectral Soul’s main body was still around. In their eyes, Fang Yuan even managed to kill a former venerable, his strength was simply too much, his demonic might was unparalleled.

Unless they had absolutely no choice, they did not want to provoke such a person!

"In that case, let’s try to resolve the ant plague." Qi Sea Ancestor’s final sentence ended this meeting.

The Righteous Qi Alliance started to put in effort to research on how to resolve this.

But was the killer move lingering poisonous ant plague so simple?

The more the Gu Immortals from the Righteous Qi Alliance researched, the less confident they got. Facing everyone’s expectations, even the wisdom path Gu Immortals doing the deductions felt increasing pressure as time passed.

Days passed, they did not produce any good results.

All the clans were unhappy, Qi Sea Ancestor also personally came to ask about it.

The wisdom path Gu Immortals with Hua An at the lead had to ask: "Don’t be anxious, we have a discovery! The ant plague contains wood path profundity, these ants are able to grow while growing is a specialty of wood path. This is likely because Fang Yuan fought against Qing Chou and gained some inspiration from it."

To be honest, these wisdom path Gu Immortals were quite impressive to have realized this.

Thus, Eastern Sea’s wood path experts were brought over and participated in the research.

There was no result again.

The wisdom path and wood path Gu Immortals felt increasing pressure, they shouted: "Enslavement path, enslavement path! The ant plague contains enslavement path profundity, these ants are organized in an orderly manner, they work in unison to create a huge plague, this is the power of enslavement path."

Thus, the Righteous Qi Alliance’s enslavement path experts also joined in the group and participated in the research.

But the research still made no progress.

The wisdom path, wood path, and enslavement path Gu Immortals could not stand the pressure, they shouted again: "We need poison path experts!"

There were not many poison path experts but they still existed.

Under everyone’s expectations, the poison path experts also joined in the research.

"We also need food path experts! These ants have the ability to grow from devouring food." The researching Gu Immortals said in agreement.

However, food path Gu Immortals were just too rare.

After talking among themselves, the immortals had to invite the famous Eastern Sea lone immortal, Zui Xian Weng.

Zui Xian Weng had many acquaintances, he had some sort of connection with most of the righteous path forces, but he was not currently in Eastern Sea.

"We need refinement path as well! We found that the core of the ant plague is refinement path! Undoubtedly, after Fang Yuan obtained Lang Ya Sect, his refinement path attainment is too deep. These ants are able to devour dao marks and refine themselves into Immortal Gu, this is too shocking!"

Eastern Sea’s clans quickly put in effort together, they sent most of their clan’s refinement path Gu Immortals over.

With everyone’s collective effort, progress in the research was showing.

These clans’ elites were really talented people.

But they could not find the most important and fundamental result!

Did this single move, lingering poisonous ant plague, overwhelm the entire Eastern Sea righteous path?

That was the fact of the matter.

This was simply unbelievable to the Righteous Qi Alliance’s Gu Immortals, but they had no choice but to admit it!

Shen Cong Sheng said some words that showed deep wisdom: "At this point, I’ve already understood some things. That Fang Yuan has the sovereign immortal body, he cultivates all paths, he is an all-rounded genius. This compound killer move comprises poison path, wood path, refinement path, food path, and enslavement path profundities, he put the specialties of all these paths together in an intrinsic manner."

"As for us? We can only cultivate one path, or two at most. If we cultivate poison path, we cannot understand wood path. if we cultivate wood path, we know nothing about food path. Because of this, even if we work together, we cannot solve this ant plague problem."

Even now, the Righteous Qi Alliance had not discovered that lingering poisonous ant plague killer move also comprised heaven path profundity.

However, nobody in history had ever cultivated heaven path, it was normal that they did not discover this.

"How can a person cultivate every path like this?!"

"Speaking of which, Spectral Soul is too useless. Shadow Sect and Zombie Alliance spent over a hundred thousand years of accumulation to refine a rank nine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, but he actually lost it to Fang Yuan like this!!"

"Creating compound killer moves is simply as easy as breathing for him. After some time passes from now, he is going to have even more new methods."

"This demon only used one move to send us into panic and helplessness."

"Why is it that our Eastern Sea has to be the one suffering from this number one demon’s method?!"

The Righteous Qi Alliance could not find a solution, while venting their frustrations out loud, they felt disdain towards Spectral Soul, they felt increasing hatred towards Fang Yuan, along with dense wariness, they also felt helpless and tearful about their own fate.

"In that case, let’s fight with them!" Qi Sea Ancestor surged with fighting spirit, he said with a firm tone.

"Lord Alliance Leader, the situation has not reached that stage yet." A Gu Immortal immediately interjected.

Qi Sea Ancestor sighed: "Our Righteous Qi Alliance’s losses have been severe these days, carrying on like this is pointless, we will fall into that vicious Fang Yuan’s trap. If we wait anymore, we will not have the strength to fight anymore."

These days, the two heaven’s Gu Immortals suffered tremendous losses.

Among Eastern Sea’s righteous path forces, Song clan, Cai clan, and Ruo Lai clan suffered the most losses. As for the other clans... even though the ant plague also affected them, it had just started for them after all.

Thus, most of the righteous path clans did not want to wage war now.

Of course, this situation was something that Fang Yuan intended for when he took action earlier!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"We still have hope!"

"We are not in a truly desperate situation yet."

"That’s right, even though we gathered most of the elite Gu Immortals of our clans, we have not taken out our true inheritances for them to use as reference."

"With these true inheritance contents, if we can come up with ideas together, there is a high chance of resolving the ant plague crisis!"

Qi Sea Ancestor was silent for a while before nodding slowly: "The situation is very severe, I believe all of you know that even without me saying it. Thus, everyone needs to contribute their true inheritances, please show us your utmost sincerity! If anyone dares to hide their inheritance or conceal it, don’t blame me for taking matters into my own hands."

"As long as we can get rid of the ant plague, the entire Righteous Qi Alliance will benefit. Everyone’s efforts will be rewarded and compensated, I believe that our contribution board would be the best answer to you!"

To resolve the ant plague, all the clans started to make contributions.

Hua clan took out their snake poison qi thread true inheritance, Nan Gong clan took out great profound true inheritance, Xie clan took out remnant leaves true inheritance, Su clan took out big belly true inheritance...

Originally, even though Righteous Qi Alliance had a contribution board, there were few names on it.

Before this, Qi Sea Ancestor also asked the clans to exchange inheritances and killer moves mutually, but these were all superficial exchanges. After all, if there was no need to, who would take out their unique inheritance to trade to others?

But now, the situation was different.

Not only did the contribution board's length get longer, the intensity of the competition over rankings also rose, the names on the list moved up and down constantly.

Different inheritance details had varying value, some were more precious than others, while some were hard to assess.

But Qi Sea Ancestor was Fang Yuan's clone, they shared attainment level, he had deep knowledge about this and gave all the clans' inheritances an appropriate assessment of value.

Even if the contributor was not happy with it, Qi Sea Ancestor would gather the immortals and discuss together, each time, his arguments would convince all the Gu Immortals and leave them unable to rebuke him.

As this happened with increasing frequency, Qi Sea Ancestor's prestige also rose as well.

The Righteous Qi Alliance's members were all in awe towards Qi Sea Ancestor's wealth of knowledge.

"First supreme elder, are we really handing over Tian Nan's true inheritance?"

"This is Tian Nan's true inheritance after all!"

"Back then, in order to get Ascending Heaven Plain and obtain this true inheritance, we spent so much effort and suffered immense hardship!"

Song clan's Gu Immortals went to find Song Qi Yuan, they were very unwilling.

Song Qi Yuan sighed deeply as he said helplessly: "Can't you see the current situation? It has gone out of our control. Everyone knows that we possess Tian Nan's true inheritance, they have already been asking us to contribute it time and time again, even dragging it until now is our limit. Xia clan gave their molten casting true inheritance while Tang clan contributed their myriad fusion true inheritance, if we do not give them Tian Nan's true inheritance, we will not be able to explain for ourselves. Everyone is looking at us now, who would let us off?"

Song clan's Gu Immortals turned silent.

The situation had unknowingly gone out of their control.

Initially, all the clans had good intentions, in order to avoid war and to resolve the ant plague, they contributed some true inheritances.

Even though these true inheritances were of wood path, food path, and other relevant paths, they were not too important or valuable.

But even if the value was not high, they were still ranked accordingly.

Some people became higher ranked, some were lower ranked.

If the difference was not obvious, so be it.

But this contribution board indicated everyone’s contribution very clearly!

The clans at the top would feel unhappy when they looked at it: "Why did we contribute so much while others make barely any contribution? Let alone the rest, doesn’t that clan have that true inheritance we need? Why are they still keeping silent? Look at us, we even gave up our important true inheritance!"

With such pressure, those at the lower end of the list had to choose some inheritances to contribute.

This way, the people at the bottom would go to the top, they would feel unhappy again. If they still ranked below the rest, they would be mocked at by the top contributors, they might even face humiliating criticism: "Is this all that your clan has? You can’t even give us anything good, you dare to call yourselves a super clan?"

Gu Immortals were astute people, when they took out their inheritances, they would think of offering those with similar value, to make sure everyone had around the same ranking.

But how could that happen?

There were too many names on the contribution board, who could be certain that their inheritance was ’just about right’?

And even if some Gu Immortals felt that it was about right, others would think differently.

Even if everyone was happy about it, hehe, don’t forget who the person evaluating these inheritances was!

Qi Sea Ancestor pretended to be regulating this exchange but he was creating problems for them secretly!

Thus, all the different clans competed and mocked each other, the competition became intense. The clans started taking out more and more valuable inheritances, this led to the pain of loss, which turned into anger and unhappiness when they saw those people who contributed less than them.

Thus, the situation got out of their control.

All the clans had to take out their top tier true inheritances, Song clan was not the first one. And Tian Nan’s true inheritance was already an eyesore to some people, they wanted it to be contributed.

"I’ve already given up this true inheritance, why is your Song clan keeping Tian Nan’s true inheritance, do you think this is the right thing to do?"

"Hmph, my clan’s sacrifice is so big, I need to make sure Song clan suffers as well."

"Song clan’s Tian Nan’s true inheritance definitely has huge value. Using this chance, we can obtain it easily while having a good reason for it, this is great!"

All the clans had many Gu Immortals, these were all elites.

The contribution of true inheritances became a competition, it turned into a political conflict between the clans, the Righteous Qi Alliance’s members were tearing at each other, while the biggest beneficiary was the high and mighty Qi Sea Ancestor who watched this spectacle from his main seat.

Fang Yuan not only obtained Tian Nan’s true inheritance, he also got several other refinement path true inheritances.

There were also some food path inheritances that he was interested in.

Undoubtedly, Eastern Sea was very rich, these super forces had very deep foundations.

They definitely had even better things, but it was not wise to ask them for more. If the pressure intensified, it might backfire instead.

What made the Righteous Qi Alliance slightly happier was that after the immense contributions, they finally saw some results.

Even though they could not get rid of the lingering poisonous ant plague, there were methods that could restrict its growth now.

Brainstorming was still an effective strategy.

Even though Fang Yuan’s killer move was unique, with the hard work of the entire Eastern Sea righteous path, it was only a matter of time until they resolved it.

Using one killer move to decimate the entire region’s righteous path was impossible to begin with.

Killer moves were fixed, they had flaws, that was why Gu Immortals could improve upon them.

Fang Yuan did not think this would work, his true motive was to get refinement path inheritances, everything else was an added bonus.

He wanted to become venerable through refinement path!

He had to become venerable to reach a qualitative change, that would give him the strength to resist Star Constellation, Giant Sun, and Spectral Soul.

Of course, it was not that Fang Yuan could not snatch these inheritances using force.

His current battle strength had surpassed the entire Eastern Sea righteous path.

But the efficiency was just too low, how could it compare to the speed of their willing contribution? Also, true inheritances could be destroyed, it was a risky thing to do. And finally, it would waste Fang Yuan’s time and energy, his growth would become slower, Fang Yuan would also waste his luck.

All these super forces had immense foundation and huge luck, fighting against them would expend his own luck.

When he went to Crazed Demon Cave, Fang Yuan would need to face venerable opponents, it was better to conserve his strength instead of wasting it.

This was also why Fang Yuan made transactions with Southern Border’s Wu clan and Western Desert’s Fang clan.

Fang Yuan’s main body soon got hold of the contents of Tian Nan’s true inheritance and the others.

Among all the inheritances that the Righteous Qi Alliance took out, Tian Nan’s true inheritance had the highest value. Right now, on the contribution board, Song clan was placed at the top spot.

Old Eccentric Tian Nan described his grand and maniacal ambitions in this true inheritance.

He wanted to refine the immemorial two heavens and even the five regions, to turn them into his own external immortal aperture!

There was no doubt about it, he failed.

Even a venerable could only refine the dao marks of their own path in the outside world. Yet, Old Eccentric Tian Nan wanted to refine all the dao marks of the world.

In Fang Yuan’s case, this was completely possible in theory. When Gu cultivators refine Gu, weren’t they just refining the relevant dao marks or dao fragments of the Gu?

The biggest obstacle to Old Eccentric Tian Nan was none other than heaven path.

He found that no matter what idea he came up with, he could not refine heaven path dao marks.

Eventually, he found an extremely risky method but ended up failing. In historical records, Old Eccentric Tian Nan had an eccentric nature, he tried to refine the heavens and ended up dying as a result.

It was said that being half a step ahead of the era was genius, while being one step ahead of the era was insanity.

Old Eccentric Tian Nan was such a lunatic.

Two million years passed and the eras progressed, one person who managed to resolve Old Eccentric Tian Nan’s biggest problem finally appeared.

Limitless Demon Venerable!

He succeeded in his heaven path refinement.

Over a million years passed again, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable entered Crazed Demon Cave in his exploration, he obtained Limitless Demon Venerable’s method that could do this.

Indeed, it was unrestrained heavenly mark.

The unrestrained heavenly mark killer move that Lu Wei Yin gave to Fang Yuan had a long history, it was not created by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, Paradise Earth merely modified it, the source was Limitless.

And what surprised Fang Yuan was that in this Tian Nan’s true inheritance, there were Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s notes.

It turned out that Reckless Savage Demon Venerable had also obtained Tian Nan’s true inheritance in Ascending Heaven Plain.

Even though he learned the true inheritance’s details, he did not destroy it, he even made it more sturdy to pass on to the future generations.

In his later years, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable returned here and added his own refinement path experience in Tian Nan’s true inheritance.

"This old man Tian Nan is really daring, speaking of which, if I can refine the entire Heavenly Dao, that would be so cool!"

"It is a pity that refinement path does not suit me, I still prefer close combat using my body."

"But... I can make use of those remaining beastmen. Didn’t they want to use food path to claim victory? Hehehe, wishful thinking!"

"They think I have not discovered that gluttonous demon frog."

Using the notes, Fang Yuan saw that the mystery of the past history was unveiled to an extent.

In historical records, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable used the lingering beastmen in his old age to create Reckless Savage grotto-heaven, he left behind his true inheritance inside it.

It turned out that Reckless Savage Demon Venerable was using Tian Nan’s true inheritance to scheme against and make use of those beastmen’s methods instead.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The night wind howled in his ears.

Fire Plain Grotto Lord flew in immemorial white heaven.

He concealed his traces as he moved, if others looked, they would only see a vague figure moving rapidly. The only thing was that the trail he moved on had high temperature, but wind soon blew the anomaly away.

Fire Plain Grotto Lord had rank eight cultivation level, but in an environment like immemorial white heaven, he still had to be very careful.

If he acted more brazenly, he would cause immemorial desolate beasts to attack him.

Especially those fire path immemorial desolate beasts, they had a huge interest in Fire Plain Grotto Lord.

Fire Plain Grotto Lord was not weak of course, but he was not in the frame of mind to bother with such problems. If he wanted to hunt immemorial desolate beasts in immemorial white heaven, he would need to plan and make preparations beforehand.

Fire Plain Grotto Lord rushed back to his grotto-heaven as he assessed his own body.

The ant plague in his body had already been suppressed.

Fire Plain grotto-heaven was affected long ago, the Gu Immortals in the grotto-heaven had also been hit by this vicious method.

Poison path excelled in traits like concealment and infectiousness, the Righteous Qi Alliance was right to ask poison path experts to participate in the research.

"The situation is stabilized at least, but Fire Plain grotto-heaven is still in deep trouble, we need a lot of contribution points to salvage it." Fire Plain Grotto Lord was very worried.

Fire Plain grotto-heaven’s losses were severe this time.

Inside the grotto-heaven, the largest fire beard grassland had perished, turning into ruins. The fire beard grass that had great vitality was gone without a trace, not even the roots were left.

The vermilion flame wolves and red grass horses were also nearly extinct. The ant plague spared nothing, these wolves and horses were all eaten with no bones left behind.

"Our losses are too severe, but we still need to spend a huge sum to salvage this disaster!" Fire Plain Grotto Lord frowned tightly.

The Righteous Qi Alliance members paid such a huge price to research and gain some results that could suppress the lingering poisonous ant plague killer move.

Even brothers became sensitive when it came to money, not to mention this Righteous Qi Alliance that had barely any cohesiveness.

For the groups to survive and resist the powerful Fang Yuan, Wu Shuai, and the variant human alliance, they created the Righteous Qi Alliance.

Eastern Sea’s righteous path paid a huge price for this, they would not allow the rest to use these gains without paying a cost.

According to the rules set by Righteous Qi Alliance, Fire Plain Grotto Lord had to pay a huge amount of resources or use high quality true inheritances in exchange for contribution points, which could be used to save Fire Plain grotto-heaven.

But what else could he do except that?

Fire Plain Grotto Lord sighed deeply in his heart.

He was filled with worries towards the present and the future.

"This is only the first move by that demon Fang Yuan! This is likely just a test, but our clan has already suffered greatly. He will definitely make a second or third attack."

"Fang Yuan possesses the sovereign immortal aperture, he can annex rank eight grotto-heavens. Those grotto-heavens of the variant human alliance are dwindling, he has already annexed many of them. My clan’s Fire Plain grotto-heaven is definitely on his hunting list!"

"Or more accurately speaking, all the grotto-heavens in the two heavens are now his prey."

Ever since Fang Yuan annexed Grand Swine grotto-heaven and Time Difference grotto-heaven, he had not stopped annexing others.

The variant human alliance had been subdued by him long ago, they could only watch as he annexed their grotto-heavens, helpless against Fang Yuan.

Many were definitely furious that their homelands were annexed by Fang Yuan, but they did not dare to say anything in spite of their rage.

The commotion from the annexing of the apertures was too great, it was impossible to hide.

Therefore, Fire Plain Grotto Lord and others clearly were aware of this information.

"The enemy is too powerful, our Righteous Qi Alliance is clearly at a disadvantage. If we cannot match them in combat, we can only place our advantage in development." Fire Plain Grotto Lord analyzed inwardly.

The grotto-heavens of the two heavens had limited space, after countless years of development and accumulation, they had long since reached the point where they had no more development potential.

However, Eastern Sea was vast and rich, even if all these grotto-heavens were added together, they could not compare to the size and wealth of Eastern Sea.

This advantage was also the source of Righteous Qi Alliance’s confidence against the variant human alliance. Even though the latter occupied Xia clan’s territory, they only had a tiny area of Eastern Sea.

In this aspect, the Righteous Qi Alliance had a clear advantage.

"Fang Yuan can also tell that we have this advantage, thus he used the compound killer move to weaken us."

"He is definitely not going to stop here, by then, us Gu Immortals of the two heavens will become his main targets."

"Sigh! When will we finally be able to... hmm?!"

Suddenly, the scene before Fire Plain Grotto Lord changed abruptly.

The surroundings were covered in blue fog that trapped him in many layers.

Fire Plain Grotto Lord quickly stopped moving, he activated his defensive and investigative methods.

At the next moment, his expression changed.

"Battlefield killer move! Who are you, how dare you attack a member of the Righteous Qi Alliance! Come out, don’t try to act mysterious!" Fire Plain Grotto Lord shouted.

But he only heard a wave of chuckling noises that resembled a child’s voice.

The laughter spread around Fire Plain Grotto Lord, causing this rank eight Gu Immortal to be unable to discern where the voice was coming from.

Suddenly!

A child attacked him from the huge blue fog without any notice.

He stretched out his chubby little arm and quickly grabbed at Fire Plain Grotto Lord’s back.

Fire Plain Grotto Lord had already used an investigative killer move, even though its range was restricted to less than half of the usual because of this battlefield killer move.

But it was enough for Fire Plain Grotto Lord to detect this child’s action.

However, Fire Plain Grotto Lord was still too slow, the mysterious child succeeded.

Fire Plain Grotto Lord grunted as he was hit by the move.

Bam.

At the next moment, Fire Plain Grotto Lord unleashed a fierce attack and sparks of flames burst out and slaughtered the mysterious child on the spot.

The child died but there was no blood or flesh, he turned into a lump of blue fog.

"This mysterious child is made from the battlefield, but thankfully, the attack is not strong. Still, my defensive killer move was weakened by this, it has half of its strength left!"

Fire Plain Grotto Lord started to feel uneasy and anxious.

He needed to break this battlefield killer move quickly, even if he could not, he had to create a hole and communicate with the outside world to seek help.

Fire Plain Grotto Lord started to use his methods, he attacked the surroundings and tried to break the battlefield.

But it was useless, his methods were like harmless wind, the surrounding blue fog was endless and limitless.

From time to time, mysterious children would appear from the blue fog, they were either male or female, having blue eyes. They surrounded Fire Plain Grotto Lord as they attacked continuously.

Fire Plain Grotto Lord was clearly able to detect their appearance but he could not stop them from attacking, each time, he got hit by them.

"This seems to be a wisdom path battlefield! It is influencing my thoughts, causing me to act slower and slower, I cannot attack in advance to stop the children."

While Fire Plain Grotto Lord was thinking, his expression suddenly changed.

He felt that a fire path Immortal Gu was stolen by the children from his immortal aperture.

Fire Plain Grotto Lord quickly destroyed the child but the surrounding blue fog surged towards him, sweeping the exposed fire path Immortal Gu away.

Fire Plain Grotto Lord chased after it for a while but could not find anything.

"Oh no! This is a theft path battlefield, these mysterious children can steal my immortal aperture’s Immortal Gu when they attack!!"

"I cannot stay here anymore, it is too dangerous!"

Originally, Fire Plain Grotto Lord felt that even though these mysterious children could not be guarded against, they were not strong, he could last a long time.

But now, Fire Plain Grotto Lord became deeply shocked, his hair was standing on end, his expression turned very ugly.

There was a pessimistic guess in his heart.

"This is a compound battlefield of theft path and wisdom path, or at least, it definitely contains these two paths!"

"I’ve never heard of such a compound killer move before."

"If this is a new killer move, then the user is most likely..."

Fire Plain Grotto Lord thought of a name.

He could not help but shudder.

Just this name alone made him break out in cold sweat.

He wanted this guess to be wrong, but at the next moment, Fang Yuan’s figure slowly emerged.

Life was this cruel after all.

"Gu Yue Fang Yuan..." Fire Plain Grotto Lord took in a sharp breath, his eyes were staring wide as he looked at Fang Yuan in a daze.

This was the number one demon in the world, he was smiling and appearing in front of him.

"This is my new killer move, what do you think about it? Fire Plain Grotto Lord, obediently hand over your Immortal Gu and Fire Plain grotto-heaven, I might allow you to surrender." Fang Yuan said calmly, the surrounding blue fog concealed his body, making his smile even more peculiar and sinister.

This battlefield killer move was Fang Yuan’s newest creation.

Fang Yuan ventured into the territory of battlefield killer moves, the results were quite promising.

This killer move used sneak attack Immortal Gu as the core, it was a compound battlefield killer move that contained wisdom path, theft path, refinement path, time path, and others.

After getting the information of Fire Plain Grotto Lord’s route from Qi Sea Ancestor, Fang Yuan arranged an ambush here and used this method to test out the effect of his new killer move.

"Gu Yue Fang Yuan, I am not your match. Let me... let me consider your request." Fire Plain Grotto Lord had a hoarse voice as he lowered his head.

At the next moment, blazing flames started to burn around Fire Plain Grotto Lord’s body with a loud sound.

Immortal killer move — Furious Red Heart Flames!

"Fang Yuan!" Within the fire, Fire Plain Grotto Lord shouted: "Don’t force me! With just one thought, I can burn all of the Gu worms and resources in my immortal aperture."

"Let me off! Give me a way out, let me leave the battlefield, I will hand my Gu worms to you." Fire Plain Grotto Lord said with a distorted expression.

He knew that Fang Yuan was vicious and heartless, he tried to use this threat to survive.

But Fang Yuan snorted coldly: "Do you think I care about those few Immortal Gu? Or even the resources in your immortal aperture? Hehe, go ahead and burn. Incinerate your entire immortal aperture if you can, that will be a show!"

Fang Yuan did not take action personally, he vanished into the blue fog behind him.

Next, a large number of blue eyed children jumped out and attacked Fire Plain Grotto Lord continuously.

Fire Plain Grotto Lord was extremely furious and sad as the children attacked him. After enduring for a few breaths of time, he growled in anger as the flames exploded around him, he had actually burned himself to a crisp!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

An exposed immortal aperture floated in the air, its entrance was not open but it absorbed the surrounding heaven and earth qi, Fang Yuan easily grabbed onto it.

His immortal killer move could capture and relocate immortal apertures, it had originated from Blazing Heaven Demoness’ fire hand killer move.

Now, this method had been modified by Fang Yuan into a compound killer move, its power rose greatly, the effects were shocking.

Next, Fang Yuan deactivated the compound battlefield killer move and used heaven and earth travel to leave the place.

Soon, the immortal aura leaked and the surrounding ancient desolate beasts and immemorial desolate beasts were attracted.

Fang Yuan could not conceal his aura yet.

It was not his expertise.

After arriving at a safe location, Fang Yuan tossed Fire Plain Grotto Lord’s immortal aperture into the sky.

This was a rank eight grotto-heaven, it could only be attached to the two heavens, it would not land in the five regions.

After the grotto-heaven door opened, it took in heaven and earth qi and quickly settled into this location.

But Fang Yuan did not move in, he only sent his immortal aperture’s Gu Immortals to scavenge the grotto-heaven.

During this time, Fang Yuan annexed more grotto-heavens, his dao marks increased in numbers again, the amount was so much that if he entered this unstable grotto-heaven, he might cause it to burst.

Soon, his Gu Immortals returned, there were no Immortal Gu and they only brought very few immortal materials.

"Everywhere is burning, everything went up in flames."

"These are the only resources left, lord, please forgive us!"

"The newly born heavenly spirit is also trying to destroy everything in the grotto-heaven, this seems to be the obsession left by that rank eight Gu Immortal."

His Gu Immortal subordinates reported.

Fang Yuan did not mind this, he let them back into the sovereign immortal aperture.

After the grotto-heaven stabilized, Fang Yuan would forcefully annex this grotto-heaven.

Even if the heavenly spirit was unwilling to, Fang Yuan had a method to suppress the heavenly spirit, he had already modified it into a compound killer move.

Fang Yuan’s ability at modifying compound killer moves was limited to only usual killer moves and battlefield killer moves.

When using his usual killer moves and battlefield killer moves, all the Gu worms were inside Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture, with the amplification of the unrestrained heavenly marks, he could unleash the might of a compound killer move.

As for ancient battle formations, Gu formations, and Immortal Gu Houses, their Gu worms were all in the outside world, without an environment of unrestrained heavenly marks, even if these methods were turned into compound killer moves, there would be no effect.

As Fang Yuan annexed grotto-heavens, he thought about the battlefield killer move he used earlier.

This killer move was not strong enough offensively, it was focused on combining theft path and wisdom path. But in actual combat, this battlefield killer move’s effect was not good.

Fire Plain Grotto Lord was just an ordinary rank eight Gu Immortal, but Fang Yuan only managed to steal one rank eight Immortal Gu from him.

Immortal Gu were too easy to destroy, the Gu Immortal could destroy them with a single thought.

Even if Fang Yuan exerted his wisdom path methods to the limit, he could only affect the thinking speed of rank eights, he could not stop all their thoughts.

It was extremely difficult to reach that step.

Unless there was a huge difference in actual strength.

Fire Plain Grotto Lord was a rank eight Gu Immortal after all, he had many dao marks that naturally protected him. Furthermore, he also had decent defensive killer moves.

In history, almost no wisdom path Gu Immortals could reach this step against other similarly ranked immortals.

Looking at it carefully, certain people like Peeping Gentleman, Sect Leader Mei, Finger Deducing Steward and others had such achievements (many situations were unique and could not be replicated), but the total number was still less than five.

Even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was not in this list.

Of course, nobody knew if she could reach this step, there were no clear records in history.

This showed that it was extremely difficult to suppress all the thoughts of a similarly ranked expert and make them unable to resist at all, even if it was only for a short period.

The strongest methods of wisdom path Gu Immortals against their enemies were still emotion based.

Thought, will, emotion; these were the three main wisdom path cultivation aspects.

In this case, Fang Yuan’s compound battlefield killer move did not have much value in actual use, it needed to be modified further.

Even the best theories had to be tested in practice.

Like a combat system.

Creating a combat system out of nothing by simply staying in isolation was very difficult. There was a need for a powerful opponent or intense battle of life and death to test if a combat system was really superb or not.

Thus, as Fang Yuan considered his own combat system these last days, he felt some gratitude towards people like Duke Long or Spectral Soul.

Precisely because of them as reference, Fang Yuan had the qualifications to create his own combat system.

After annexing this rank eight grotto-heaven, Fang Yuan’s fire path dao marks rose in numbers again.

But Fang Yuan was not satisfied, he continued to move.

This time, he placed his sights on Fire Plain grotto-heaven.

Immortal killer move — Heaven Form!

Fang Yuan created a huge entrance into Fire Plain grotto-heaven through brute force.

The heavenly spirit of Fire Plain grotto-heaven was a rabbit.

Because it had devoured a nine heavens fragment before, the rabbit was dazed and slow. But now, it was jumping around, screeching in fear and panic.

The Gu Immortals of Fire Plain grotto-heaven noticed this and became very uncertain and shocked.

"The heavenly spirit is muddled but the past Grotto Lords have used the killer move humanly flame smoke to help it gain a bit of clarity compared to heavenly spirits of other grotto-heavens!"

"As long as the grotto-heaven faces danger, the heavenly spirit will be uneasy, this is a warning for us."

"When the ant plague occurred, the heavenly spirit became anxious already. In the grotto-heaven’s history, there were several disasters too, for example, when immemorial desolate beasts attacked or when enormous fires burned, the heavenly spirit became uneasy."

"But we have never seen the heavenly spirit in such a wild mood, its voice even went hoarse from growling!"

The immortals in Fire Plain grotto-heaven looked at the heavenly spirit with increasingly uneasiness as well.

The heavenly spirit was becoming increasingly frenzied, its expression was fearful and it even slammed its head at the surrounding pillars.

Unfortunately, the heavenly spirit was not a real rabbit, it would not faint from this no matter how hard it hit the pillar.

"Go investigate! We need to get a result, we need to know what the danger is!"

"This danger is very severe, it might lead our Fire Plain grotto-heaven into the brink of destruction!"

"Quickly contact the Grotto Lord, only he can make the decisions in such a serious matter."

"Is the ant plague going to continue intensifying?"

Fire Plain grotto-heaven’s Gu Immortals were very anxious, they quickly got to action.

"Oh, oh no! Grotto lord’s life tablet Gu and soul lantern Gu have been destroyed!"

"What?"

"How is this possible?!"

The immortals of Fire Plain grotto-heaven became dazed.

Next, they found a huge hole in the sky.

Fang Yuan used heaven form killer move without concealing himself, he came openly and grandly.

If Fire Plain Grotto Lord was still alive, he might be able to use the entire grotto-heaven to resist Fang Yuan for some time while waiting for reinforcements.

But now, he was already dead.

"Fang Yuan, it’s Fang Yuan..." Seeing the person beyond the hole, many of Fire Plain grotto-heaven’s Gu Immortals became anguished.

"Why did this demon come for us?" Even more Gu Immortals turned pale as they shuddered with fright.

"Grotto lord is dead, this demon Fang Yuan might likely be the culprit. What are we going to do?"

"Everyone, we’ve already requested for help from Righteous Qi Alliance, now is the time we stake our lives and fight for survival!"

"This is our home, the place where we were born and grew up in, our friends and family all live here. We cannot run! We cannot let that demon devour our homeland like this!!"

After their initial panic, the immortals gathered their spirits and united to resist Fang Yuan.

"It is a pity I cannot go inside now." Fang Yuan rubbed his chin as he thought, looking at the huge hole formed by heaven form, he could only stand outside.

He had too many dao marks, according to his calculations, this Fire Plain grotto-heaven could not hold him either.

As long as Fang Yuan went in, with the conflict of dao marks, countless cracks would spread from this hole, the fire path dao marks inside would be forced to squeeze to the surroundings.

Seeing that the Gu Immortals were resolved to fight, Fang Yuan smiled coldly as they flew into the sky and attacked heaven form, he opened his immortal aperture.

At almost the next moment, a group of Gu Immortals led by Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit flew out of the sovereign immortal aperture, charging into Fire Plain grotto-heaven.

Gu Immortals of both sides engaged in intense combat.

At once, flames danged as lightning flashed. Figures flew around in the sky, clashing and parting, shock waves could be felt at intervals, killer moves were unleashed like fireworks, many Gu Immortals lost their lives amidst this beautiful show.

Immortal killer move — Wondrous Hand Profound Sound!

Fairy Miao Yin wore a pink dress, her two original arms were white like snow, the remaining six were translucent and pink, formed from her killer move.

Profound sounds spread out, attacking her surroundings in all directions.

Once Fairy Miao Yin appeared, she created a huge battlefield that enveloped three rank seven experts of Fire Plain grotto-heaven.

After several rounds, the three rank seven Gu Immortals got suppressed and fell into a disadvantage.

Fairy Miao Yin disregarded immortal essence expenditure, there was a reason for her current desperate attitude. She was once captured by Shadow Sect, she had to work with them and provide clues about Fang Yuan for Fairy Zi Wei.

There was a clear contrast between her and Lady White Rabbit, after returning to Fang Yuan, she knew she had to perform well to make up for her past mistakes.

Fairy Miao Yin wanted to perform well, the other Gu Immortals had similar thoughts.

Bing Yuan led the snowman Gu Immortals, she sent a wave of frost energy that froze the enemies. Shi Zong directed the rockman Gu Immortals as they unleashed a large number of falling meteors together, causing huge losses to the enemies. Inkman Gu Immortal Mo Tan Sang was a qi path cultivator, he waved his hands as a large number of qi gathered and moved, he attacked and caused a huge commotion, causing the enemy Gu Immortals to fall out of formation.

Comparatively, the hairy man Gu Immortals were slightly weaker.

After all, the hairy man Gu Immortals mostly cultivated refinement path.

But there were exceptions to this.

Golden Fur Immortal Monarch was covered in golden thread-like fur as he held a hammer and charged forward, he had ferocious might, raising the morale of others as well.

Strange Hair Grotto Lord was covered in black hair, he activated the incomplete Immortal Gu House Black Emperor Building and rampaged all over the place, having already killed one Gu Immortal from Fire Plain grotto-heaven.

Their Golden Hair grotto-heaven and Strange Hair grotto-heaven had been annexed by Fang Yuan, becoming a part of the sovereign immortal aperture.

As for Lang Ya Sect’s hairy man Gu Immortals, the best performance was from rank six Gu Immortal Twelfth Hair, he cultivated enslavement path secondarily and controlled multiple desolate beasts, creating quite a commotion.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

There were mushroomman Gu Immortals as well.

Even though the mushroomman blessed land had not been annexed by Fang Yuan, most of these mushroommen had already relocated into his sovereign immortal aperture. Ke Xin Hong was the strongest Gu Immortal among them, his poison path methods were extraordinary.

It was not long before Fire Plain grotto-heaven started to lose on all ends.

Not only did they have fewer numbers compared to Fang Yuan’s subordinates, even when rank sevens fought against each other, Fang Yuan’s subordinates were still stronger.

As Fang Yuan’s subordinates attacked, they killed several more Gu Immortals of Fire Plain grotto-heaven.

In the end, the remaining Gu Immortals lost their morale, they wanted to surrender but Fang Yuan ordered for them to be killed regardless.

Next, they cleaned up the battlefield.

Fire Plain grotto-heaven cultivated fire path primarily, most of the immortal materials were also fire path.

Even though some were lost due to the ant plague, because the grotto-heaven’s Gu Immortals did their best to preserve the materials, there was still a large quantity of valuable resources.

For example, there were twenty-eight charcoal lakes, distributed all over Fire Plain grotto-heaven.

Every charcoal lake’s location was meticulously calculated, there were huge advantages in placing them there.

Fang Yuan had once constructed his own charcoal lake, but it was inferior to any single charcoal lake of Fire Plain grotto-heaven.

These charcoal lakes were self-producing, especially at the depths of the lakes, a large amount of immortal material fire charcoal was produced.

Other than charcoal lakes, Fire Plain grotto-heaven also had a huge forest.

Fire date forest!

Fang Yuan even found several ancient desolate plant giant disaster blazing trees.

This type of tree was covered in raging flames, nothing could get close to it. More impressively, this giant disaster blazing tree would cause bad luck to whatever life forms got close to it.

This was an immortal material that contained fire path and luck path.

The two heavens' grotto-heavens of Fang Yuan's subordinates contained a certain quantity of luck path immortal materials at minimum, Fire Plain grotto-heaven was no exception, it had luck path materials too.

Other than these, Fang Yuan also gained a large amount of flames.

The largest quantity was date flame.

This flame was vermilion red in color, it was condensed into a lump and the fire was very well hidden within. Even though it was an immortal material, even a mortal could hold it with their hands without getting burned to ashes.

Other than date flame, there was also phoenix song flame, black lantern blind fire, elephant tusk flame, firefly flame, flying flame, dragon snake dancing flame, and others.

What disappointed Fang Yuan slightly was that even though there were many types of flames, there were none of the rank nine unique flames of heaven, earth, and human.

The so-called three flames of heaven, earth, and human were the heaven flame bright light glorious ring fire, earth flame azure divine stone furnace fire, and human flame raging wave rising dragon fire.

After collating the immortal materials, he looked at the Immortal Gu.

There were very few Immortal Gu gained, he only obtained three.

One was a fire path Immortal Gu that was heavily injured, it was a Gu worm that was let out, Bing Yuan was very fortunate to have obtained it.

The other two were ant Immortal Gu, one was golden in color and large like a mountain, it resembled red copper. The other was small as a thumb, its body was extremely long, like a soft white noodle.

The red copper immortal ant could spit out fireballs while the white noodle immortal ant could produce large numbers of ants.

These were all the products of the lingering poisonous ant plague killer move.

When ants devoured the Gu materials within Fire Plain grotto-heaven, they would continue to refine themselves. Those that were mortal Gu could be elevated into Immortal Gu.

But Fang Yuan could not guess or estimate what Immortal Gu would be produced.

From these two ants, he could still barely see their origin.

The red copper fire ant should have been an arrow ant, its mouth could shoot out sharp spikes. After shooting three spikes, it would be weak, it would not be able to fight even a worker ant.

The white noodle immortal ant should be a queen ant. It was huge and had no offensive or offensive methods, but it could rapidly produce worker ants, soldier ants, armor ants, arrow ants, and others.

Army ants were just vicious insects in essence, but they could raise their strength, from being an ordinary beast, to beast king, to desolate beast, to ancient desolate beast and finally, to immemorial desolate beast level.

This just was like the dark web spider in the River of Time which was an immemorial desolate beast, or the tiger-striped honey bee in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> that was also an immemorial desolate beast.

But after Wu Shuai’s modifications, these ants that the lingering poisonous ant plague produced had undergone a qualitative change, they all became Gu worms!

Even though Gu worms also ate food, they were the hosts of dao mark fragments.

The value of a mortal ant Gu far exceeded an ordinary ant or insect.

These ant Gu were all tough and strong, they had intense vitality and fighting spirit. A hundred ant Gu could easily slaughter a hundred ants of the same rank.

Most Gu worms had fragile bodies that could be easily crushed, but some also had tough exoskeletons and strong vitality.

For example, the chainsaw golden centipede that Fang Yuan used in the past.

The chainsaw golden centipede had two main advancement routes.

One was the rank four chainsaw killer centipede, the other was the flying vajra centipede, having rank three, four, and five versions.

When Gu Masters used these two Gu worms, the former could slaughter strong enemies while the latter could pierce bones and flesh, drilling into the enemies’ body.

Even at Immortal Gu level, such Gu worms existed.

Like the sword legged dragon centipede Gu.

Rank seven sword legged dragon centipede Gu was seven li long, it had a centipede body and dragon head. Its countless limbs contained sword path dao marks, allowing it to carry tens of thousands of swords with it. Once it coiled around its prey, these sharp swords would attack from all directions, creating bloody holes in the ancient desolate beast, it was very fierce.

Wu Shuai elevated the essence of his army ants from insect to Gu, they gained a huge amount of potential for growth.

But this method had huge flaws.

The first flaw was the immense expenditure. Originally, ants could breed themselves with just some resources expended. But to create ant Gu, Gu materials would be expended for the refinement. Other than that, ant Gu also needed to be fed. The price of feeding ant Gu was many times higher than raising normal ants!

The second flaw was regarding the level of rank six and above.

Because Immortal Gu were unique, even though there could be countless desolate level ants of the same variety, there could only be one Immortal Gu of each breed.

If there were just a few ant Immortal Gu, then overall, the earlier army ants with desolate beasts would be easier to form and have greater overall strength as well.

"However, if I use this method to cultivate them, the new army ants will also be able to expand greatly in numbers." Fang Yuan observed the red copper fire ant and white noodle queen ant as he thought.

These two ants were Immortal Gu but Fang Yuan could not recreate them, he did not know their Immortal Gu recipes.

These ant Gu had successfully ascended after devouring the Gu materials and immortal materials in Fire Plain grotto-heaven.

The ant plague was extremely huge, involving almost the entire grotto-heaven, but only two ant Immortal Gu were produced in the end.

The killer move lingering poisonous ant plague contained refinement path profundity, it stood at the apex of the current world’s hairy man nature Gu refinement technique!

Nature Gu refinement technique used the natural dao marks of the outside world to refine Gu and greatly raise the success rate.

The moment Fang Yuan created lingering poisonous ant plague, his attainment in the nature Gu refinement technique already surpassed Long Hair Ancestor in every aspect!

These ants could refine and ascend themselves, it was not just due to the Gu materials of the outside world, most importantly, Fang Yuan was expending his own unrestrained heavenly marks.

Long Hair Ancestor did not have any unrestrained heavenly marks after all.

"Using lingering poisonous ant plague, I can nurture a large number of ant Immortal Gu. As long as I have a large number of ant gu, if I expend a lot of resources, I will have a continuous stream of ant Immortal Gu produced. Even though Immortal Gu are unique, after obtaining red copper fire ant, I can still produce ant Gu like red copper water ant or yellow gold fire ant!"

With just a slight difference, the Immortal Gu would still be considered unique.

Fang Yuan made his deduction, he realized that the key obstacle to this was not the uniqueness of Immortal Gu but the resources needed.

Using this method to nurture ant Immortal Gu had too high of an expenditure.

Refining the two rank six Immortal Gu, red copper fire ant and white noodle queen ant, took so much in resources from Fire Plain grotto-heaven, it was sufficient to refine more than ten rank seven Immortal Gu normally.

The efficiency of using the resources was too low!

Other than immortal materials and Immortal Gu, there were also some Gu cultivation inheritances gained from taking down Fire Plain grotto-heaven.

The most valuable one was Fire Plain true inheritance.

Even though Fang Yuan did not get it from Fire Plain Grotto Lord, there was the original copy in Fire Plain grotto-heaven.

Fire Plain true inheritance was a high quality fire path true inheritance, it had a profound method called furious red heart flames. Fire Plain Grotto Lord had used it before his death to threaten Fang Yuan to let him off, it was used in his suicide.

There was also the killer move humanly flame smoke, this was a fire path killer move with human path effects. For Fang Yuan, it was quite valuable.

"Lord, what do we do with these people?" A subordinate Gu Immortal asked.

Fire Plain grotto-heaven was a human grotto-heaven, there were over a hundred million purebred humans here.

If they were all moved into the sovereign immortal aperture, the burden would be immense.

Fang Yuan thought about it and gave his orders plainly: "Kill them all to construct Human Sea."

Thus, the variant human Gu Immortals took action and engaged in a merciless slaughter.

A hundred million humans were all slaughtered, their bones, flesh, intestines, and soul were collected and classified into different groups of Gu materials, they were transported into the sovereign immortal aperture’s inventory.

Their human qi was completely taken by Human Sea.

This incomplete artificial secluded domain of heaven and earth was obtained from Xia clan by Fang Yuan.

In order to become venerable, Fang Yuan would need to get past the Heavenly Dao blockade, these human path methods needed elevation to deal with it.

After cleaning up the battlefield, Fang Yuan annexed the immortal apertures of all these Gu Immortals, before finally targeting Fire Plain grotto-heaven.

He moved most of the resources in the grotto-heaven into Mini Red Heaven.

Because of his constant annexing recently, the sovereign immortal aperture had undergone a huge change, its development was currently at eighty percent!

The sovereign immortal aperture’s Gu material inventory was completely full, more than ten more inventories were made in succession.

Be they the mini nine heavens or the mini five regions, they all had many resource points in them, at least hundreds or thousands of them.

After careful and meticulous deduction, Fang Yuan finally allocated all these resources to the most appropriate locations.

"Mini Red Heaven is almost full as well, the sovereign immortal aperture feels packed now." Fang Yuan sighed in his heart.

He felt that he was like a hungry fatty recently, he ate too much in a short period, he could not digest it well.

Normally, Gu Immortals cultivated one path, their immortal aperture’s environment was quite simple and easy to manage. Most Gu Immortals did not have a huge immortal aperture, only space path Gu Immortals had the largest immortal apertures.

Fang Yuan, however, was different.

He cultivated all paths, the environment of his immortal aperture was very complex, almost all sorts of resources could be grown inside.

At the same time, his sovereign immortal aperture was also the largest and most unprecedented aperture, even a venerable’s grotto-heaven might not be this big!

Thus, there were many things that he had to consider during this development.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2109 Wu Shuai“s Life In Danger

Fire path resources could not be placed too closely with water path resources, otherwise, they would affect each other’s growth, not only would production shrink, they might even be destroyed.

But isolating all fire path and water path resources was also not a good idea.

Because fire path resource points also affected each other, they were not completely harmonious.

There were also a lot of immortal materials which had two types of dao marks, like giant disaster blazing tree’s fire path and luck path.

A lot of Gu cultivation resources had dao marks of two paths or more.

Some resource points that produced immortal materials needed a lot of ordinary Gu materials in the vicinity for production to occur.

Some resources needed specific wind or water to grow as well.

There were also resources that needed an opposite environment. For example, frost ice flame was a fire path immortal material produced in an area of dense ice and snow path dao marks.

Thus, Fang Yuan had prepared for this, long ago, when annexing immortal apertures, he had specially split them up into portions and placed them scattered over the sovereign immortal aperture.

All in all, Fang Yuan was mimicking the characteristics of the five regions and nine heavens.

For example, Mini Southern Border had many mountains, Fang Yuan chose to put earth path resources there most of the time.

Or for example, Mini Red Heaven was fire based, so Fang Yuan placed his fire path resources there.

Fang Yuan could now feel the intricacy of the distribution of the five regions and nine heavens. Using this design, most resources could be classified and arranged, it could greatly lower the need for him to make deductions, he could control the influence of these resource points on each other more easily.

But it was not enough.

Each time Fang Yuan annexed a grotto-heaven, he would gain dao marks of a certain path.

With an increase of dao marks, there would be some influence for the following period of time on the entire sovereign immortal aperture.

Earlier, when he annexed Qi Xiang grotto-heaven, the sovereign immortal aperture gained a huge boost of qi path dao marks, currents started to appear all over the immortal aperture. There was the largest quantity of heaven and earth qi, allowing the sovereign immortal aperture to have no need to open its entrance and absorb external heaven and earth qi for some time.

After that, there were profound yin qi, luck qi, blood qi, astral qi, domination qi, life qi, death qi, righteous qi, orchid vitality qi, elderly qi, and other immortal materials.

Dao marks affected the entire sovereign immortal aperture, allowing it to produce resources gradually from a blank state. It started with mortal Gu materials, after dao marks accumulated, a qualitative change would occur, becoming immortal level Gu materials.

These resources were naturally formed as a result of dao marks.

The sovereign immortal aperture was gradually filled up like this, it reached eighty percent development now.

Other than resources, an increase in dao marks would also affect the production of existing resources.

After annexing Fire Plain grotto-heaven and gaining a bunch of fire path dao marks, the entire temperature of the immortal aperture would rise gradually, many water path or wood path resource points would suffer as a result.

If he gained metal path dao marks, a large amount of ores would appear in the soil, the fertility of the soil would change, affecting the growth of the vegetation above.

If he gained water path dao marks, there would be more rain, over time, floods might occur.

If he gained poison path dao marks, some plagues or diseases might erupt instead of being seasonal, they might spread widely and rapidly.

If he gained transformation path dao marks, many lifeforms might mutate when they grow, some might have different forms or natures, causing problems to their original groups.

Thus, during this period of time, the sovereign immortal aperture had not been peaceful.

Many strange things occurred at random times occasionally.

Like earlier, Mini Eastern Sea had eerie winds appearing out of nowhere.

Profound eerie winds swept the area, causing small islands to form on the surface of the sea.

But the area in which these profound eerie winds blew did not need islands, the earth path dao marks would obstruct the sea waves, while the soul path dao marks would kill the weak life forms and create soul beasts, changing the natural habitat.

Fang Yuan initially suspected the two neighboring sea areas, they were right at the core of the profound eerie winds, they were very plausibly the source of them.

But after some tests and deductions, Fang Yuan found that the reason was two far away sea areas, their dao marks influenced each other, like the repulsion of magnetic waves, causing profound eerie winds to be created between them.

As for situations like wild beast mutation that caused problems to beast groups, the spread of plagues and diseases, the increase of ores that destroyed the homes of rockmen, the burning of forests for no apparent reason, the fall of ice shards from the sky and others, they happened continuously.

All of the defending Gu Immortals were extremely busy, they went around taking action and salvaging the situation.

Fang Yuan’s main body also took action frequently, setting up immortal formations at the important resource points, like he was patching up torn clothes.

"The boost of dao marks carry uncertainty, only time can digest and assimilate such issues. I need to let the sovereign immortal aperture develop and naturally acclimatize to these situations."

"Originally, the sovereign immortal aperture had a huge space and sparse resources, it was hard for them to affect each other. but now, after reaching eighty percent, there are too many resources that are closely packed together, their influence on each other is also not between two resources, but a large group of resources in the vicinity, they affect each other in a chain-like manner."

"And worse is that I used Time Difference grotto-heaven’s method to construct year essence pools and created different time path regions. Because the areas have varying time flow, my deductions are even more complicated."

"When I bring in more immortal materials in the future, the deduction difficulty will rise by a hundred times! It is beyond my capabilities." Such deduction difficulties were simply too high, Fang Yuan was helpless about it.

"Furthermore, even if I can deduce the results, I will still need to modify the location of the respective resources. Each time I relocate them, it would be like a huge surgery, expending a lot of my resources, time, and energy."

"I am afraid that eighty percent is my current limit!"

After understanding this, Fang Yuan felt admiration when he looked at the five regions and two heavens.

The five regions and two heavens had far larger space than the sovereign immortal aperture, but all of their resources were appropriately located, they influenced each other in a harmonious way.

Even when the five regional walls vanished, when the earth veins merged, even after the heaven veins merged, these resource points were still unchanged, they were barely affected.

"I see, this is — heaven path!"

Fang Yuan’s body and mind shook intensely, at this moment, he could sense the law of balancing of heaven path deeply!

"If my heaven path attainment level can rise to master level, I will be able to resolve this predicament and make a breakthrough, I can continue to develop the sovereign immortal aperture even further. What a pity, what a pity..."

In history, nobody had ever cultivated heaven path, even though Limitless Demon Venerable created unrestrained heavenly mark, he was still a rule path cultivator. As for Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, he cultivated earth path.

Fang Yuan might be the Gu cultivator who had the deepest venture into heaven path.

Fang Yuan activated Cooking Luck Pot, inspecting his own luck.

He saw that above the silver white pillar of light, there were still three clouds that were continuing to get larger.

But the silver white light pillar that represented Fang Yuan forcefully grew to around four times the original size. It was originally thin and slim, but now it was slightly ’thicker’.

This was caused by the annexation of Fire Plain grotto-heaven.

Because Fire Plain Grotto Lord and Fire Plain grotto-heaven had their respective luck, after Fang Yuan killed and devoured the grotto-heavens, he also expended some of his own luck.

After some time, Fang Yuan’s luck would recover and grow even thicker.

In terms of the growth of luck, Fang Yuan was naturally the winner among them.

"It seems that my tactic is correct, my development far surpasses the three venerables during this period. But..." Fang Yuan pondered.

He acutely sensed that even though the silver white light pillar expanded to four times of the original, it was no longer as condensed as before, it was quite loose now, the light was also no longer as clear as before.

"The reason why my silver white light pillar grew this much is because I annexed many grotto-heavens, my foundation rose sharply. Other than that, I also created and modified many compound killer moves, my time path clone also made many rank eight Immortal Gu."

"But these things only reached a quantitative change, without qualitative change, it is still too loose."

"For example, the sovereign immortal aperture is still very unstable, the resources are not assimilated into the environment yet, I’ve only used some methods to forcefully place them here. If I am careless, a disaster will occur, I will suffer huge losses and my luck will fall."

"And even though I have many rank eight Immortal Gu and compound killer moves, I still do not have a proper combat system that perfectly uses them, I cannot link them together!"

"Thus, the silver white light pillar is loose."

Fang Yuan could feel the amazing aspect of luck path once again.

Through luck inspection, not only could he understand his current circumstances, he could also inspect his own flaws and weaknesses.

With this, he even had the direction that he was going to pursue next.

Fang Yuan took a look at the luck of his clones as well.

Qi Sea Ancestor, Zhan Bu Du, Meng Qiu Zhen, and the rest had increased luck.

His connection with Fang Di Chang was also becoming clearer.

But Wu Shuai’s dragon luck was not in good shape, it was actually near the brink of collapsing!

"What is going on? Don’t tell me that after creating lingering poisonous ant plague, it actually led to a bad result?" Fang Yuan soon ruled out this guess, he was quite confused internally.

Among his clones, Wu Shuai was the safest in terms of circumstances.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s true identity was a hidden threat.

Meng Qiu Zhen faced danger when exploring dream realms.

Zhan Bu Du had already been sent away by Fang Yuan to lurk elsewhere.

Li Xiao Bai was a mortal Gu Master, he did not have much control over his situation.

The time path clone made use of Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool to refine a large number of rank eight Immortal Gu, yet he only had rank six cultivation level, if any accident occurs, he would die from backlash.

Even though Wu Shuai was also trying to get stronger himself, his main responsibility was to manage the variant human alliance. How could he be in danger?

And this was a fatal danger that could cost him his life!

Central Continent.

In an underground cave somewhere, an elderly Gu Immortal with a reddened nose laughed loudly: "I finally got here, I did not waste my effort for the last ten or so days without sleep!"

There was a rank eight Gu Immortal true inheritance in front of him!

The will that had been slumbering for a long time was awake, he looked at the elderly Gu Immortal: "If you want to obtain the true inheritance of myself and my wife, you need to agree to one condition."

"What condition?" The elderly Gu Immortal squinted and asked.

The Gu Immortal will sighed: "In my later years, I took in a traitorous disciple named Wu Shuai. He actually enslaved both me and my wife! If you want to obtain this true inheritance, you will need to shoulder the responsibility of taking revenge."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The elderly Gu Immortal’s eyelids twitched, he had a certain guess, he asked: "So you are Senior Green Ant Ascetic, your wife must be Senior Wine Fairy?"

The Gu Immortal will nodded: "Indeed."

The old Gu Immortal let out a breath of air: "To speak truthfully, this junior is a Gu Immortal of Eastern Sea, Zui Xian Weng, over a million years have passed since your death."

The Gu Immortal will was slightly stunned before sighing: "Such a long time has passed... back then, to prevent that traitorous disciple from finding us, we specially hid our inheritance in an extremely concealed area, to think that it ended up like this, that traitorous disciple must have died already."

After pausing for a while, the Gu Immortal will thought of something and said: "Wait, Zui Xian Weng, put away your defensive method, let me test the truth of your words. How can I know if you are not one of my traitorous disciple’s subordinates that came here to trick me?"

Zui Xian Weng hesitated for a moment but did not attack immediately, he was not confident in dealing with the arrangements here.

He spoke the truth: "I do not know if Wu Shuai is dead or not, but the situation is like this..."

Zui Xian Weng quickly explained everything, Green Ant Ascetic’s will became stunned again, what in the world had happened?

Was this still Heavenly Court?

Fate Gu was actually destroyed!

Gu Yue Fang Yuan!

It was hard to imagine the existence of such a great demon in the world, truly a misfortune for the common people.

Green Ant Ascetic’s will only accepted the facts after a long time.

"To think that the world became like this after a million years. Fate Gu was destroyed, even Duke Long lost and died! Whether that Wu Shuai actually revived or if he is just Fang Yuan’s clone is no longer important, since that Fang Yuan inherited Dragon Palace, he will also inherit this grudge!" Green Ant Ascetic’s will said firmly.

"So Zui Xian Weng, are you willing to oppose Fang Yuan for this true inheritance?" Green Ant’s will asked.

Zui Xian Weng was silent for a long time before taking in a deep breath, gritting his teeth: "I am willing to do that!"

"Alright, we will make the agreement."

According to the instructions of Green Ant’s will, Zui Xian Weng made his vow.

"Accept this inheritance, the two of us put all our effort into it, we created a killer move called golden bottle drunken wine!"

"Golden bottle contains green ants, drunken wine dilutes dragon qi! Army ant was created by me, I hid the one weakness of these ants extremely deeply, that traitorous disciple had no idea all along."

"As long as you use this golden bottle drunken wine killer move, you will be able to send the army ants into chaos and cause a backlash on the user. Most importantly, this is a food path killer move, it is hard to guard against!"

"So senior has prepared for it." Zui Xian Weng’s eyes shined with bright light: "I cannot stay in this place for long, senior, please go into my immortal aperture, you can inform me of the remaining information later."

"Okay." Green Ant’s will flew into Zui Xian Weng’s immortal aperture, the latter took all the inheritance away and left.

Zui Xian Weng only took a glimpse of the inheritance details before feeling great joy internally.

This inheritance contained Green Ant Ascetic’s enslavement path inheritance as well as Wine Fairy’s food path true inheritance. The value of the enslavement path true inheritance was not high for Zui Xian Weng, but the Wine Fairy true inheritance was simply too valuable to him.

"It was not a waste of my effort to come here, it was worth it!" A smile appeared on Zui Xian Weng’s face.

But the moment he left the place and arrived in the outside world, his expression immediately changed.

A battlefield killer move had been set up, it activated at once and trapped Zui Xian Weng.

"Heavenly Court! Qin Ding Ling!!" Zui Xian Weng was shocked to find out that Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were surrounding him.

The leader was a female immortal, she had a tall nose, thin lips and eyes, a body covered in golden armor, her legs were long and smooth, she wore a white cape on her back, she radiated an elegant and noble aura, she had an air of indomitability!

She was the current leader of Heavenly Court, rank eight luck path great expert, Qin Ding Ling!

Zui Xian Weng’s heart sank to rock bottom, he broke out in cold sweat: "It seems that I will lose my life in this fight."

Thoughts flashed rapidly in his mind, Zui Xian Weng gritted his teeth and cupped his fists: "I am willing to contribute all my inheritances, I will make contributions to the righteous path."

Qin Ding Ling smiled brightly, emanating with heroic aura: "Green Ant Ascetic’s and Wine Fairy’s inheritances are good, but is our Heavenly Court so greedy? We are the righteous leaders of over three million years, the number one super force in the world. Since you had the fortune to find this inheritance, then it belongs to you. Please do us the honor, sit down and have a cup of tea."

Saying so, Qin Ding Ling sat cross legged in the air, she took out cushions, a table, and cups.

Zui Xian Weng sat down without a choice, Qin Ding Ling personally poured tea for him.

Tea fragrance spread out, but Zui Xian Weng felt his heart turning cold as ice, his entire body was shivering, his cold sweat could not stop pouring.

What status did Qin Ding Ling have, she was actually treating an Eastern Sea lone immortal like Zui Xian Weng in such a respectful manner? She certainly had huge motivations behind this.

"Feel free to drink it." Qin Ding Ling stretched out her arm, smiling as she pointed.

Zui Xian Weng had no choice but to take a sip, he immediately placed the cup down, he asked while faking calmness: "I wonder what Lady Qin wants to say to me?"

The smile on Qin Ding Ling’s lips became even wider.

She spoke casually: "Haven’t you already guessed my intention? Zui Xian Weng, you are a smart person."

"No need to be so pessimistic, in the current world, even though demons have the upper hand, it is only temporary. Even throughout the history of millions of years, the righteous path has been dominant for most of the time, while the demonic path can only hide at some corners. We are currently in a special era, so some geniuses will wreak havoc, don’t think that they are domineering and overpowering, they are merely the pioneers that will pave a road for the venerables ahead."

Zui Xian Weng lowered his head, not daring to make eye contact with Qin Ding Ling.

His arms were placed on the table as he clenched them uncontrollably, his palms were covered in sweat.

"In this tough situation, no matter what overbearing request Qin Ding Ling states, I have no choice but to agree to it." Zui Xian Weng sighed in his head with great sadness.

But Qin Ding Ling took out some evidence immediately after: "Not long after, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable will revive and return to Heavenly Court, she will lead the rise of Heavenly Court once again."

Zui Xian Weng saw the evidence and became deeply shocked: "Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s revival?"

Qin Ding Ling smiled: "Fate Gu has been destroyed, even venerables can be resurrected now. Demon Immortal Qi Jue is the best example now, but he has already been suppressed by my Heavenly Court. If even Demon Immortal Qi Jue can revive, how can our venerables not do so? Our Heavenly Court has three venerables, throughout the world, which super force can rival us?"

Zui Xian Weng stared in a dumbfounded manner, thoughts started to collide rapidly in his mind.

He had already decided to say yes, but after seeing proof of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s revival, the balance in his heart was tilted towards Heavenly Court.

Even though Fang Yuan was strong as the number one demon, he only had pseudo venerable battle strength.

He could not compare to a venerable.

In the millions of years of human history, there had only been ten venerables, each one had shown their invincibility in their respective eras!

Venerables were invincible!

No matter how many pseudo venerables there were, they could not match a venerable in the end.

While Heavenly Court had the most number of venerables — Primordial Origin, Star Constellation, Genesis Lotus! Other than that, the only other super force that had a venerable was Longevity Heaven.

Zui Xian Weng’s expression became calm gradually.

"I am willing to work for Heavenly Court!" He said in a solemn tone: "Let’s set the agreement."

Qin Ding Ling shook her hands: "No need for that. With that Fang Yuan’s ability, he will notice if we make an agreement. Furthermore, you need to return to Eastern Sea and join the Righteous Qi Alliance."

"We will not set an agreement?" Zui Xian Weng was stunned.

Qin Ding Ling added: "Write me a copy of the true inheritance, Heavenly Court will try to provide you the relevant Immortal Gu."

Zui Xian Weng was stunned again, he sighed in his heart: "No agreement and they are also giving me Immortal Gu?"

Qin Ding Ling waved her hand again: "You can leave now."

"This subordinate takes his leave." Zui Xian Weng left the battlefield with completely stunned emotions.

It was truly unbelievable.

He was freed just like that!

What Zui Xian Weng felt was deep admiration.

He started to admire Heavenly Court from the depths of his heart!

"This is the calibre of the number one force in the world! Qin Ding Ling is not afraid that I will not follow the agreement. With this attitude, she clearly doesn’t think much of the inheritance, I am merely just one of her casual pawns. If I do not follow the agreement in the future, unlike Fang Yuan, can’t Heavenly Court easily deal with me?"

Zui Xian Weng was filled with a chilly feeling internally.

While watching him leave, Fang Zheng could not help but ask: "Lady Qin Ding Ling, we’re letting him go like this? What if he goes to join Fang Yuan and betrays us? Wouldn’t we be giving this inheritance to Fang Yuan as well? Are we going to give up this method to counter Wu Shuai?"

Fang Zheng was very familiar with the content of the inheritance.

It turned out that Heavenly Court had found this inheritance long ago, but before taking it, Qin Ding Ling had some intuition. Her instincts told her to not take the inheritance, it would be better to make her move three days later.

Qin Ding Ling followed her instincts and waited for three days, finally trapping Zui Xian Weng.

At this point, she realized the meaning behind her intuition.

Qin Ding Ling smiled: "Fang Yuan possesses the sovereign immortal aperture and has annexed many grotto-heavens, he even has Paradise Earth’s inheritor and the variant human alliance under him, we cannot estimate the speed of his growth at all. If we set an agreement with Zui Xian Weng, it will leave a huge piece of evidence behind."

"However, when Zui Xian Weng drank the tea, I had already used my method to influence his luck. This will cause him to become enemies with Fang Yuan without doubt."

Fang Zheng was not convinced, he held onto his beliefs: "Even so, I feel that we should gain a complete hold of this inheritance and use it as a trump card against Fang Yuan. This Zui Xian Weng is just a lone cultivator of Eastern Sea..."

Qin Ding Ling chuckled: "You are underestimating Zui Xian Weng while also overestimating the value of this inheritance."

"Zui Xian Weng is a person who can endure hardship, he is a wise man who knows his circumstances, he possesses one of the three pools in the world, Wine Pool, he is a food path expert. The inheritance of his lineage has always been passed down very stably, while his luck is also very deep and sturdy!"

"Food path is powerful, while Zui Xian Weng cultivates food path solely, he can almost be considered a representative figure of this path. This has significant meaning!"

"As for this inheritance?" Qin Ding Ling shook her head: "In my opinion, the most valuable thing is not the killer move golden bottle drunken wine, but that human path wine drinker Immortal Gu recipe."

This inheritance that Green Ant Ascetic and Wine Fairy created together contained a human path Immortal Gu recipe.

Wine drinker Gu.

Similar to hero Gu, scholar Gu, craftsman Gu, and farmer Gu, except that it was not at the mortal level, it was an Immortal Gu!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Zheng blinked a few times, having understood something: "You mean to say that even if golden bottle drunken wine is effective and kills Wu Shuai successfully, he is still just a clone of Fang Yuan’s, it will not truly shake his foundation. Right now, with Dragon Palace destroyed, Wu Shuai’s biggest use is gone."

"Meanwhile, the wine drinker Immortal Gu recipe is the symbol of human path prosperity, it will be the path that our Heavenly Court will focus on in the future!"

Qin Ding Ling patted Fang Zheng’s shoulder: "You have learned well!"

"No matter how strong Fang Yuan is, he is not a threat unless he becomes venerable."

"Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has already succeeded in Crazed Demon Cave, the most urgent matter is to bring her back now. No matter how great of a commotion Fang Yuan causes, he is just like a cicada’s cry at the end of autumn, he has few days remaining."

"I am not Fang Yuan’s match while Heavenly Court cannot afford another loss, thus, I have been dragging on the matter about the Eastern Sea Righteous Qi Alliance."

"Right now, we need to put in effort for the Crazed Demon Cave battle. It will not be easy to bring back our venerable, we need to conserve strength and prioritize on that."

"As long as Star Constellation Immortal Venerable returns to Heavenly Court, even ten of Fang Yuan added together cannot cause any problems for us."

"Yes, you are absolutely right!" Fang Zheng did not refute nor hold any suspicions towards Qin Ding Ling’s plan.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had already proven her strength in history!

She had succeeded Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s position and stabilized the fruits of humanity’s labor, she expanded on the prosperity of humanity by getting involved in the other four regions. Before dying, she plotted against three Demon Venerables and preserved Heavenly Court when they attacked, she was truly a great and noble contributor.

Fang Zheng sighed internally: "Fang Yuan, I am not your match. Right now, even Heavenly Court is inferior, but someone can deal with you in the end. Throughout history, evil has never prevailed! If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable makes a move, can you stop her? You are already finished, even though I understand you, I will not pity you. You deserve a bitter end, this is the price to pay for all the sins you have committed!"

Fang Yuan inspected the inheritance in his hand.

He read through it rapidly.

With Meng Qiu Zhen exploring dream realms for him, all of his attainment levels were rising shockingly.

Using these attainment levels, all sorts of inheritances felt shallow in his eyes. Only a small number could give him a decent surprise at times.

These inheritances mostly came from Qi Sea Ancestor and the variant human alliance.

Because of the qi tides, Eastern Sea’s exposed inheritances were mostly gathered into Fang Yuan’s hands now.

Of course, there were still some excellent inheritances that were kept secret by the lucky forces not contributing them.

But Fang Yuan did not mind it.

At his current level, most inheritances in the world had little to no value from his perspective. His attainment was too high, in just a few breaths of time, he could create a superb inheritance himself.

These inheritances were merely a small supplement to his theories and knowledge base.

"Treasure yellow heaven also has inheritance transactions, this is really a rare sight." Fang Yuan suddenly thought of something, he could transact most of these inheritances that he currently had.

What was the point of transactions? It was to exchange with others for some things that you were more suitable with, in order to cultivate more smoothly.

Because doing this had benefits for Fang Yuan to become venerable.

One of the four venerable ascension conditions was to break through the Heavenly Dao blockade.

The Heavenly Dao sought balance and suppressed Gu Immortals and venerables. The more widely spread these inheritances were, the stronger the cultivators would become, and the more effort the Heavenly Dao would need to suppress them.

This way, when Fang Yuan reaches a crucial moment in his venerable ascension, the Heavenly Dao blockade that obstructed him would fall in strength relatively.

This point was proven by historical records as well.

During the ten venerables’ eras, countless geniuses emerged one after another, grand heroes existed at the same time, being as numerous as the stars in the sky!

"To breakthrough the Heavenly Dao blockade, other than luck path, there is also human path. Divine Emperor City is the sacred land of human path, if I can obtain the human path essence inside it, it will help me greatly!" Fang Yuan thought.

Divine Emperor City, painting world.

In a market within the city, people gathered together to watch the performance at the center of the square.

A middle aged man with a muscular body wore beast skin clothing and held a leather whip in his hands as he swung it.

As the leather whip moved, it emitted cracking sounds.

A leopard danced around on the ground while following the tune of the whip.

The middle aged man suddenly stored his whip, he placed his head into the leopard’s huge mouth.

The leopard opened its mouth widely, its teeth were sharp as blades, only millimeters away from the man’s skull.

The surrounding audience gasped loudly.

But the leopard did not bite it, after waiting for some time, the middle aged man moved his head out again.

Immediately, applause resounded.

The middle aged man took out a bronze bowl and walked around the audience while holding it.

He moved quickly as he raised the bowl, shouting: "Friends, if you have money, please support me, otherwise, please help to promote my performance. Haha, if you think this was enjoyable, don’t hesitate to give some tips."

The middle aged man’s entertaining performance was well liked by the audience, a large number of primeval stones were tossed into the bronze bowl as they emitted sharp sounds.

Not far away, a human path great expert, Eastern Sea’s rank eight Gu Immortal Shen Shang, watched with a stunned expression.

"This is the reason why I got you to come here." Fang Di Chang said, as he sat beside Shen Shang and drank tea.

Shen Shang finally retracted his gaze.

"Amazing, amazing!" He praised uncontrollably: "This Divine Emperor City painting world is really amazing."

The middle aged man was a beast tamer, this profession had never existed in the painting world before. But after the ten children of human path led their troops to explore growling beast painting world and returned in failure, they recuperated for some time and this profession appeared.

In the market, in addition to hero Gu, scholar Gu, soldier Gu, and craftsman Gu, there was a new type of Gu — beast tamer Gu!

Once beast tamer Gu was activated, it could turn into a beast tamer.

Beast tamers were specialized to deal with wild beasts, they were more proficient at taming wild beasts to use for themselves.

Evidently, this new beast tamer Gu was created to deal with growling beast painting world!

"Who created this new Gu worm?" Shen Shang asked.

Fang Di Chang shook his head: "Beast tamer Gu appeared so naturally, I did my best to investigate but I found no specific targets."

Shen Shang nodded: "Your Beggar Sect is the strongest information collection organization in here. It might not be a person, it might be this painting world itself or Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s arrangement."

Fang Di Chang took in a breath of human will Gu to replenish himself before saying: "Now that beast tamer Gu has appeared, growling beast painting world will be at a disadvantage, it is only a matter of time until it is taken down. The scariest part of human path likely lies here. I underestimated this path after all."

Shen Shang moved his fingers around the cup as he concluded: "Now it seems that there are three types of human path Gu worms. The first are profession Gu, for example, craftsman Gu, hero Gu, and beast tamer Gu. The second are organizational position Gu, for example your beggar sect Gu and sect elder Gu. The third type are human emotion and virtue Gu, for example, traveling son Gu and doting mother Gu."

"Human emotion and virtue Gu? Brother Shen, it seems that you have made great progress in your cultivation recently, that is an appropriate classification." Fang Di Chang congratulated.

Shen Shang waved his hand: "I am ashamed, that is merely a classification of my own opinion."

Traveling son Gu and doting mother Gu were once regarded as emotion path Gu worms, but in essence, they were actually human path.

This was quite a common sight in history as well.

The essence of Gu worms usually only showed itself after the path progressed to a certain level.

"The painting world is really the sacred land of human path, I am feeling quite expectant now. When the ten children of human path leave this place and bring human path to the world of the five regions, I wonder how big the commotion will be, many different Gu worms will be classified into human path by then."

Shen Shang said with deep emotions: "I believe that many human path Gu worms scattered and forgotten somewhere in the world will gain recognition from people once again."

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had truly made a noble achievement!

Before him, human path was like the leaves on a tree, it only concerned a small individual group of cultivators.

But Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable created the painting world, he held up the tree of human path and supported its trunk, allowing it to grow and nurture.

Human path was no longer empty internally, it was a complete path now. It had most of the foundational roots and sturdy roots, it even had countless leaves on it.

Fang Di Chang did not speak, he was feeling increasingly worried in his heart.

Even though he had not gotten a clear understanding of Divine Emperor City and the painting world’s profundities, there was already something that was certain to him.

Human path was bound to prosper, Heavenly Court had already started to focus on developing this path!

"I am afraid that developing human path has become Heavenly Court’s main strategy! This path is not simple, what should my main body do now? He might not even know this yet, I am only a lump of will that is barely surviving. How can I inform my main body of this crucial information?"

With the destruction of fate Gu, anything could happen in the world.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had already revived, the Prophecy of Three Venerables was no longer certain, human path and food path had the chance of prospering in this new era.

Dream path was mentioned in the Prophecy of Three Venerables, it was originally the fated path that was meant to prosper or even rule over this new era!

In the past, human path was something that only venerables or individuals with great talent could comprehend. But after Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable strengthened its roots and foundation, human path was already suitable for everyone to cultivate. Heavenly Court owned Divine Emperor City, this was a huge advantage in itself.

As for food path, this path was created in the Olden Antiquity Era and had never been widely spread. Now, without the restriction of Fate, it also started to show signs of prosperity.

The entire world had gone chaotic because of Fang Yuan.

The dead were reviving, secluded paths were now starting to prosper.

As for the future?

Fang Di Chang shook his head, the future was too complex and uncertain, he could not see clearly beyond this chaos.

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

Hei Lou Lan was summoned by Immortal Zombie Giant Sun.

"Hei Lou Lan, my descendant, it is now time for you to risk your life." Immortal Zombie Giant Sun got right to the point: "You want to surpass that Gu Yue Fang Yuan? Now is your chance! Go into Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Hei Lou Lan woke up and opened her eyes in a daze.

"Where... is this?" Her blurry vision started to clear up, she found that she was lying on a stone bed.

Around the stone bed, there was a large tent made of skin.

At the center of the tent, there was a huge pot hanging on a metal rack.

The pot was bubbling and seemingly contained boiling soup. At the bottom of the pot, there was a red rat spewing fire continuously.

"You woke up?" The flap of the tent was pulled aside as a person walked in.

This was a beautiful middle aged woman, her clothes were quite simple, she had a beast skin top and skirt, her shoulders, tummy, and half of her breasts were exposed.

On her chest and back, there was a blue phoenix tattoo, not only was it very vivid and lively, it even emitted a faint blue light.

Hei Lou Lan struggled and managed to sit up.

During the process, she found that her clothes had been changed as well, it was the same as the middle aged woman, having a wild and brutish style.

"I am Desolate Extremity Lu Tong Lan, you are now inside Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven." The middle aged woman smiled as she walked towards Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan had fully woken up now.

Longevity Heaven had the Eight Extremities, their names were Heaven, Earth, Black, Yellow, Space, Time, Flood and Desolate respectively. Black Extremity was Sun Ming Lu, he cultivated formation path. This woman in front of her was Desolate Extremity, she had been staying within Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven.

"Lady Lu, what should I do?" Hei Lou Lan inquired. Immortal Zombie Giant Sun had only told her to listen to Desolate Extremity’s instructions after arriving here.

Lu Tong Lan smiled: "In here, you should call me Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader. Your current identity is my illegitimate daughter, I birthed you long ago and left you outside. Recently, when relocating the tribe, I found you by accident and brought you back."

"Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven has countless tribes, we coexist with the beasts, it is very different from the five regions. Every ten thousand years, all the tribes would gather and hold the Myriad Tribes Ceremony. This is your fortuitous encounter!"

"Alright, now, you need to start drinking soup."

Lu Tong Lan scooped a huge bowl of hot soup and passed it to Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan sat at the side of the bed, she held the hot metal bowl, the fragrance of food drifted into her nose.

She was currently hungry, she immediately drank a large mouthful.

But when the soup entered her mouth, it had a peculiar and spicy taste, it was not nice at all!

"Cough cough!" Hei Lou Lan was not prepared for this, she almost gagged on reflex.

But Lu Tong Lan had a solemn expression: "Drink it, this soup is extremely important for you, you need to finish every single drop of it in the pot. Drink."

Hei Lou Lan knew that this was Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s arrangement, she frowned as she drank one bowl, followed by another.

By the third bowl, she could not take it anymore, her stomach was bloated and painful.

Lu Tong Lan had been guarding her the entire time, seeing this, she nodded: "Stop here for now, your body is at its limit."

Hei Lou Lan started to experience diarrhea, it was very serious, she almost went weak from it.

But Lu Tong Lan did not let her off, even though Hei Lou Lan was lying down in a weak state, Lu Tong Lan brought the bowl over and poured the hot soup into her mouth.

Hei Lou Lan drank as the diarrhea intensified, she felt extremely terrible.

"What is the point of drinking this soup?" Hei Lou Lan asked.

Lu Tong Lan answered: "Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven is different from the five regions, those who succeed in life are those who can eat well. I specially prepared this soup for you to expand your appetite. During the process of having diarrhea, your body is adapting to it. Even though it is initially very severe and seems nearly fatal, the symptoms will gradually become lighter. In less than three days, you will be back to normal and feel extremely hungry."

Hei Lou Lan stayed in the stone bed for two days and nights before regaining her strength, she could barely walk again.

By the third day, like what Lu Tong Lan had said, she recovered her strength and the diarrhea was gone, her appetite increased and her stomach growled since the early morning.

Lu Tong Lan cooked soup for Hei Lou Lan again.

"This is meat soup, it is different from before." Lu Tong Lan said while taking out five to six rats and tossed them into the pot.

The rat struggled in the pot, squeaking loudly.

Lu Tong Lan’s expression did not change, she took out several poisonous snakes of various colors, tossing them into the pot.

The snakes and rats gradually melted in the soup, floating at the top like colorful mud.

Lu Tong Lan took out several black rocks that resembled charcoal and tossed them inside as well.

Hei Lou Lan’s eyelids were twitching at first, but soon she understood certain details.

"Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader, are you refining Gu?" Hei Lou Lan asked in curiosity, she saw that when making the soup, Lu Tong Lan used many refinement path techniques.

Lu Tong Lan continued to cook the soup as she smiled and said: "Hei Lou Lan, you are quite perceptive. This snake-rat soup is already done."

Hei Lou Lan was stunned, she watched as Lu Tong Lan stopped cooking the soup.

"Did the Gu refinement fail? This is a pity." Hei Lou Lan said: "After all, the snakes and rats used earlier were ancient desolate beasts."

But Lu Tong Lan shook her head: "I said before, I am brewing soup, not refining Gu. The snake-rat soup is very perfect, you need to drink it all."

"What?" Hei Lou Lan was stunned again.

Lu Tong Lan scooped a huge bowl of soup and passed it to Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan drank a mouthful and frowned immediately, this soup was ten times as disgusting as the diarrhea soup earlier! With just one mouthful, her entire tongue went numb, even her throat was gradually becoming numb.

By the time she finished the hot soup, her entire body expanded like a balloon, even her skin and flesh were bloated, hair started to grow on her body rapidly.

The hair grew extremely quickly, after a few minutes, Hei Lou Lan’s hair almost filled the entire tent.

And the hair had various colors.

Red, orange, yellow, green, azure, blue, purple, white, black, there were various colors of differing quantity, none of them were the same.

Lu Tong Lan inspected the hair, even counting the number of hairs of each color meticulously.

Next, at her will, the blue phoenix tattoo on her chest floated up and spat out a lump of blue fire.

The blue fire burned the hair, in almost an instant, all of Hei Lou Lan’s newly grown hair was gone.

Hei Lou Lan stared with wide eyes and asked curiously: "What method is this? It is really amazing, I am completely unharmed."

Lu Tong Lan smiled: "This is my blue phoenix totem. Inside Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven, totems are the mainstream way of cultivation. Even though we use Gu worms as well, totems are the symbol of our strength and status."

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes shined with bright light: "If I am not wrong, this totem is not simple, each line and marking on the totem is a dao mark! The essence of the totem is a killer move! There actually exists such an amazing method in the world, does everyone cultivate totems in here?"

"Hahaha." Lu Tong Lan laughed even louder: "Hei Lou Lan, you are the genius that our lord chose to send here indeed. You saw the essence of the totem with just one glimpse. Indeed, our Gu cultivation killer moves use Gu worms or expend Gu materials. While Gu worms are fragments of the Great Dao, Gu materials are agglomerations of dao marks. The totems here use the same logic, it is just that the cultivation way uses Gu worms to assist slightly, the main method is still to rely on our consumption and digestion."

"Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven is Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s immortal aperture, this Demon Venerable left his immortal aperture within the body of the gluttonous demon frog, allowing this grotto-heaven to have a food path environment."

The gluttonous demon frog was a legendary immemorial beast, it contained an unimaginable number of food path dao marks.

With the influence of food path dao marks, within Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven, humans could eat Gu materials to increase their corresponding dao marks. Using the Gu worms here, they can gradually construct their own totems.

Hei Lou Lan did not guess wrongly, totems were a special type of killer move. Normally, they would stay on the surface of the Gu cultivator’s body. Once primeval essence or immortal essence was instilled, they would turn solid and fly out to fight.

"Totem killer moves have a lot of advantages, ordinary killer moves need to activate Gu worms and expend thoughts when they are used spontaneously. But totems only need to be constructed beforehand, you can save a lot of effort and time as a result!"

"In the five regions outside world, even though Gu Houses also contain fixed killer moves, totems can be refined and improved upon continuously. Meanwhile, strong Immortal Gu Houses have no room for improvement." Lu Tong Lan continued to explain.

Hei Lou Lan started to frown: "I have the Great Strength True Martial Physique, I should cultivate strength path, but this totem seems to be a transformation path killer move?"

Lu Tong Lan shook her head: "Not quite so."

"The other specialty of totems is that they can be suitable for all Gu paths. I, for example, cultivate fire path, after devouring all sorts of materials, I used Gu worms to construct my blue phoenix totem killer move. This totem is a fire path killer move, it is very suitable for me."

"As for you cultivating strength path, you can also construct your own strength path totem."

Hei Lou Lan cupped her fists and said solemnly: "Please teach me, senior."

"Of course." Lu Tong Lan pointed at the empty pot: "The snake-rat soup I gave you to drink earlier is meant to decipher your physique and learn what ingredients you are suitable to eat, and what kinds of ingredients are the best for your natural absorption and contain the most nutrients you need, as for your totem, it is something unique to you, only you will know what it truly becomes."

There were countless totems, even if they looked similar, each one was different.

Lu Tong Lan continued to speak in concern: "Hei Lou Lan, you need to make use of your time and quickly construct your totem. This killer move is the only method you can use when you join the Myriad Tribes Ceremony."

After Hei Lou Lan understood all this background information, she started to wholeheartedly cultivate this method.

Each time Lu Tong Lan cooked something, she would eat it without leaving anything behind, using this food path environment to allow her body to absorb dao marks.

Lu Tong Lan initially boiled soup, gradually, there was meat and vegetables, she also added more grains as well.

All of the food had one similarity, they tasted horrible.

But Hei Lou Lan was an ambitious person, as long as it could raise her strength, she could eat anything regardless of the taste, even if she felt intense pain in her stomach countless times, as if she was in living hell.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Hei Lou Lan cultivated while sitting on the stone bed.

Long after, she opened her eyes slowly.

She lowered her head and looked at her chest, there was a totem.

The totem was very simplistic and only had a few strokes, however, the markings were very clear, one could see a black cat that was drawn on it.

The black cat was young and small, it looked very adorable, its tail was raised up as its back was crouched, its front paws grabbed the ground, as if it was going to pounce at the next moment.

"Desolate Extremity lent me the relevant Gu worms, using them, the first form of my totem killer move has been completed."

Hei Lou Lan calculated the time in her mind.

Ever since she came here and cultivated the first form of her totem, thirty days had passed.

During these thirty days, Hei Lou Lan did not leave even once, other than eating and attending to daily affairs, she only cultivated the entire time.

She did not relax or slack off at any moment, she worked really hard.

Suddenly, there was an argument outside the tent.

"Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader, you are going overboard!"

"Indeed, these last days, you used so many ingredients in our inventory for your illegitimate daughter."

"Initially, you used the ancient desolate beast single horned deer to increase your daughter’s appetite. After that you made the snake-rat soup and used ancient desolate beast snakes and rats just to find out the recipe most suited for your daughter! After that, you have been consistently draining our reserves dry, the ingredients you pick are at least desolate beast level."

"We nominated you as the leader but you are being so selfish, you have let down the entire tribe’s expectations!"

Hei Lou Lan heard this and showed a peculiar expression.

It seems that the tribe elders were currently questioning and blaming their tribe leader Lu Tong Lan.

"Speaking of which, I have been using a lot of immortal materials recently, is Desolate Extremity unable to control the situation anymore?" Hei Lou Lan guessed.

At the next moment, Lu Tong Lan’s voice resounded: "Tribe elders, no need to be angry. I am doing this for the sake of our tribe. Lan, come out."

Hei Lou Lan heard this and finally left the tent that she had stayed in for a month’s time.

This was a valley with lush greenery, there was a river not far away.

There were tents of various sizes all around, they formed into a tribe.

The tent that Hei Lou Lan was in was right at the center, it was the safest location. At the same time, this was the largest tent in this place.

At the area outside of the tent, a group of people confronted Lu Tong Lan.

These people were also wearing beast skin and exposed a large portion of their body, most of them were elderly people, being all Gu Immortals. The thing that attracted Hei Lou Lan’s attention were the totems on their bodies.

"Lan, come over here." Lu Tong Lan waved.

Hei Lou Lan did not speak as she walked towards Lu Tong Lan.

The tribe elders’ gazes were focused on Hei Lou Lan’s body, or more precisely, on her chest.

The expressions of the elders started to change.

Some were in disbelief, while some became very excited.

"This, this is?"

"Has my vision gone bad?"

"Can anyone confirm with me, is this the dark capital strength tiger?!"

Lu Tong Lan smiled: "Indeed, this is the dark capital strength tiger totem!"

The tribe elders were silent, their bodies were shaking from agitation.

Lu Tong Lan continued: "I know what you want to ask, since my daughter has the dark capital strength tiger totem, I am sure you all understand she has the sacred physique! Only the sacred physique can cultivate the dark capital strength tiger totem."

The elders gasped at once.

Lu Tong Lan waited for some time, after their discussions became softer, she continued: "Now, do you still think that I am being selfish?"

"Of course not!" An elder shook his head and said with a firm attitude.

"This is the sacred physique, it allows a person to directly advance in the Myriad Tribes Ceremony and challenge the Predicament!" An elder stared at Hei Lou Lan with a heated and excited gaze.

"As long as the sacred physique survives in the Myriad Tribes Ceremony, our entire tribe will benefit from it, we will become one of the back-up sacred tribes." Another elder started to dream about the beautiful future.

"Sacred physique? Are they referring to my Great Strength True Martial Physique?" Hei Lou Lan calmed down because she knew that the entire situation was still firmly within Lu Tong Lan’s control.

Lu Tong Lan’s lips curled up: "Why just the back-up, can’t we directly become the sacred tribe?"

The elders’ expressions froze before quickly shaking their heads.

"Tribe leader, don’t be so hasty!’

"Your daughter has rank seven cultivation level but to become the winner of the Myriad Tribes Ceremony, her cultivation level is not high enough."

"We need to be patient, as long as she becomes rank eight, we will not need to challenge anything, according to the customs, she will be the Sacred King!"

"We need to protect and nurture her in order to become the sacred tribe. Why do we need to take a risk?"

Lu Tong Lan was silent for a while before nodding: "Elders, you are right, I was too hasty. But undeniably, the stronger Lan becomes, the higher our position in the Myriad Tribes Ceremony, and the more benefits our tribe will receive. Isn’t that right?"

The elders nodded: "Of course."

Lu Tong Lan suddenly bowed: "Thus, I hope everyone can understand and help to improve Lan’s totem with your full effort. The more benefits she receives, the more gains we will have later on!"

The elders reacted and some nodded in agreement, while others pointed at Lu Tong Lan and smiled brightly: "So this was all part of your scheme, Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader."

Because of Lu Tong Lan’s meticulous arrangement, Hei Lou Lan was accepted by the tribe at her first appearance.

Hei Lou Lan also understood that one of the main reasons why Immortal Zombie Giant Sun sent her here was because the Great Strength True Martial Physique was really useful in Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven.

Afterwards, Hei Lou Lan asked Lu Tong Lan why the Great Strength True Martial Physique was considered the sacred physique in this place and why it had such a huge status.

Lu Tong Lan answered: "The rumor is that Reckless Savage Demon Venerable has the Great Strength True Martial Physique. Nobody can confirm if this rumor is true or not."

This was not important, Hei Lou Lan soon left this information behind.

She continued cultivating her totem killer move.

This time, not only did Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader Lu Tong Lan help her, the entire tribe was also chipping in.

Hei Lou Lan’s totem soon grew from a small cat into a black leopard.

At this point, the elders’ help also started to dwindle.

Throughout the process, the immortal material expenditure was immense. But the good news for Hei Lou Lan was that her dark capital strength tiger totem had incredible power when used, far beyond her previous methods.

The dark capital strength tiger totem became her strongest killer move!

"But this is not enough!" Desolate Extremity Lu Tong Lan said truthfully once after cultivating: "Since our lord sent you here, I will do my best to nurture you and not let our lord down! Those elders did not use up their inventory, but I do not have much resources left. Don’t worry, in a few days, the situation will change."

The elders had their descendants too, even though Hei Lou Lan had the sacred physique, she was still the tribe leader’s descendant, the elders would not expend all their resources for her, this was a natural thing.

Several days later, Blue Phoenix Tribe was suddenly attacked by their mortal enemy Fire Blend Tribe, they suffered huge losses and were forced to escape from the valley.

While retreating, Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader led her troops and retaliated harshly. Fire Blend Tribe was caught off guard and was forced out of the valley, allowing Blue Phoenix Tribe to regain their territory.

Fire Blend Tribe was not resigned to give up, they stayed outside the valley and went into a stalemate with Blue Phoenix Tribe, waiting for an opportunity to arise.

Late at night on this day.

Lu Tong Lan brought Hei Lou Lan away from the gathering point, going to a cave in the valley to meet Fire Blend Tribe Leader.

Fire Blend Tribe Leader looked at the shocked Hei Lou Lan and smiled while explaining: "I am Yellow Extremity Jiao Huo."

It turned out that this situation was just Lu Tong Lan’s and Jiao Huo’s performance.

Jiao Huo took out a large amount of immortal materials and handed them to Lu Tong Lan: "These are all the Gu materials I can find that are suitable for Hei Lou Lan."

"Other than that, we have these..." Jiao Huo had a strange expression as he took out several corpses.

These were the corpses of Fire Blend Tribe’s Gu Immortal elders who had died from battle earlier!

Lu Tong Lan also took out several corpses, these were the ones sacrificed from

Blue Phoenix Tribe.

In front of Hei Lou Lan, Jiao Huo started to cut the meat while Lu Tong Lan prepared the pot and flame.

Hei Lou Lan was stunned: "You want me to eat these people?!"

Jiao Huo cut the human flesh as he smiled: "No need to think of them as humans, just treat them as immortal materials. Normally speaking, when Gu Immortals die, as long as they are not immortal zombies, their dao marks will go back into their immortal apertures. But the Gu cultivators here are different, their immortal aperture will be digested by Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven before it falls in place, the totem killer moves on them are created by dao marks, they are fixed and contain the most value within the body."

Saying so, Jiao Huo picked out a few pieces of meat from the pile and tossed them into the pot.

Lu Tong Lan stirred the meat soup while saying: "Hei Lou Lan, there aren’t many pieces of meat that suit you. But because they are humans after all, they are easier for you to absorb, it will help greatly in your totem’s growth!"

Hei Lou Lan turned pale as her voice changed slightly: "Is the act of eating people popularized in this Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven?"

Lu Tong Lan looked at the human meat soup in the pot as she said plainly: "Of course not. Even though eating people can help the growth of totems, it is still a demonic act. Publicly eating your tribesmen means you are a demonic path member, you will face judgment. That is why we brought you here secretly to hide from the rest. You have the sacred physique, but if you are found to be eating people, your status will be lost. There is no helping it, we have little time, to raise your strength to the limit, eating humans is the best way."

"It’s cooked, go ahead and eat."

Lu Tong Lan served the soup as Hei Lou Lan received it with a numb expression.

The human meat soup was far more delicious than all the food she had been eating previously. But after her first mouthful, Hei Lou Lan started to vomit intensely.

Lu Tong Lan and Jiao Huo looked at her calmly.

Hei Lou Lan vomited until even her gastric acid came out, she asked the two: "Have you eaten human flesh as well?"

Lu Tong Lan shook her head, but Jiao Huo nodded and said: "I was the first to arrive, after some time, my identity as an outsider was exposed and I got hunted down. All of my rations were consumed, I fell into desperation and had to eat people to raise the power of my totem killer move. Relying on that, I managed to survive and change my identity, eventually becoming the current Fire Blend Tribe Leader."

Lu Tong Lan said with a calm tone: "Hei Lou Lan, you can choose not to eat it. We will not force you to do this, we are only trying to complete master’s tasks to the best of our abilities. I have not eaten human flesh before, I can understand why you reject it. This is only a method to become stronger, you can also eat other ingredients to help your totem grow, it will only take more time."

"It will take more time?" Hei Lou Lan’s ears twitched.

She smiled bitterly as she muttered to herself: "The difference between me and him is already so large like a heavenly chasm, if I do not make good use of my time, how can I ever surpass him? If it were him in this situation, would he choose to eat the human meat?"

The answer was obvious!

"I’ll eat it." Hei Lou Lan had a solemn expression as she came to the pot.

She drank the soup with huge gulps, she ate the meat in large mouthfuls!

Lu Tong Lan’s expression changed while Jiao Huo nodded slightly.

Such a person... it was no wonder their lord had such a high evaluation regarding her!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven.

The myriad tribes were gathered on Moon Field Slope.

"The Myriad Tribes Ceremony is held here?" Hei Lou Lan looked at the barren land and expressed her disappointment.

Every Myriad Tribes Ceremony was held at Moon Field Slope.

But in Hei Lou Lan’s opinion, this place was empty and desolate, there was yellow sand everywhere, nothing else was in sight. When wind blew, sand would stir and move in the air visibly.

"The Myriad Tribes Ceremony is different from the Thousand Tribes Ceremony, it is a grand event that involves the entire Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven, held once every ten thousand years. This is my first time taking part in it too." Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader, one of the Eight Extremities, Desolate Extremity Lu Tong Lan, replied.

Behind them were the Blue Phoenix Tribe members.

Half a year ago, there was an intense fight between Blue Phoenix Tribe and Fire Blend Tribe, the result was that Blue Phoenix Tribe lost many Gu Immortal elders. But as a result, Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader gained a deeper control of the entire tribe.

"Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader, Sacred Child!"

"This is the Sacred Child?"

"Hahaha, I’ve heard that Blue Phoenix Tribe produced a Sacred Child, this is making us envious."

Entering Moon Field Slope, Lu Tong Lan met a few familiar faces. These people were either famous experts, tribe leaders, or elders, they had high authority and status.

Hei Lou Lan’s reputation had already spread recently, her identity as a Sacred Child was too eye-catching.

"Hmph!" A cold grunt could be heard as Fire Blend Tribe Leader stared at Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader, Hei Lou Lan, and the rest with a furious gaze.

Around him, there was also a group of tribe leaders and elders.

"Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader, you came too slowly, are you afraid?" Jiao Huo asked arrogantly.

Lu Tong Lan immediately retaliated with a cold laugh: "Even if I am afraid, it will not be because of you. What fear can you create?"

"Tribe leaders, the Myriad Tribes Ceremony is about to begin, if anyone fights, they will be the enemy of the myriad tribes, we will use them as the ceremonial tribute." The elder of a large tribe saw this situation and came over.

Immediately after, the elder said to Jiao Huo: "Fire Blend Tribe Leader, why are you still here? My tribe leader has already held a banquet, you cannot be late."

Jiao Huo snorted coldly, leaving some words for Lu Tong Lan: "I'll let you off for now."

Saying so, he led the people around him and left.

"Fire Blend Tribe Leader, this guy..." After he left, the tribe leaders around Lu Tong Lan spoke out.

"Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader, even though Fire Blend Tribe Leader lost to you half a year ago and his strength fell greatly, you cannot be careless, he has already gone over to Yellow Bell Tribe."

"Yellow Bell Tribe is a super tribe, not just its tribe leader but even the first elder have rank eight cultivation level!"

These experts spoke one after another, detailing the information of Fire Blend Tribe Leader.

Hei Lou Lan listened without making a sound, gaining a deeper understanding of Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven's situation.

"The situation here is not too different from the five regions, the weaker forces still have to join larger forces. Lu Tong Lan and Jiao Huo are two of the Eight Extremities, even when they cultivate in here and use totem killer moves, they are still superior to others, being experts among rank sevens. Thus, a group of people gathered around them."

"But the truly top tier forces are still existences like Yellow Bell Tribe. It seems that Jiao Huo's plan succeeded, he made use of his tribe's weakness as an excuse to get close to Yellow Bell Tribe."

"Who could ever imagine that these two irreconcilable enemies were actually the closest allies in this world?"

Hei Lou Lan felt deep admiration towards these two people and their methods.

Days later, the Myriad Tribes Ceremony began.

"In the name of Great God Reckless Savage, Purple Gold Tribe offers thirty golden sand carps as tribute!"

"In the name of Great God Reckless Savage, Ice lake Tribe offers three fetus lions as tribute!"

"In the name of Great God Reckless Savage, Yellow Bell Tribe offers a vast heavenly sparrow group, ten sight plundering vines, and one outsider as tribute!"

At the central field of all the tribes, they took turns to slaughter and contribute their sacrificial tokens.

Some tribes were weak, they only contributed desolate beasts. Some tribes that were slightly inferior to Blue Phoenix Tribe offered ancient desolate beasts instead.

As for the strongest forces like Yellow Bell Tribe, they offered a large amount of ancient desolate beasts and plants, or even several immemorial desolate beasts and plants.

From time to time, outsiders would be captured and brought here to be killed in public view.

These outsiders were all Gu Immortals with at least rank seven cultivation level. The outsiders that Yellow Bell Tribe executed were even rank eight Gu Immortals!

"If these things were given to me as food, my totem would grow by a large amount." Hei Lou Lan felt it was a pity.

Be it desolate beasts or Gu Immortal corpses, once they landed on the yellow soil, they would melt like candles, absorbed into the earth gradually.

It was as if this ground was a silent beast devouring all of the sacrifices without making a sound.

"This Moon Field Slope contains a huge secret, it is definitely not so simple!" Hei Lou Lan thought, she watched as the sacrifices sank into the yellow earth ground, the soil that was dyed red slowly returned to its yellow color.

No matter what cultivation level the outsiders have, each time they were sacrificed, the myriad tribes would cheer.

The cheers were loud like tsunamis or earthquakes, it was truly stunning.

Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven had existed for so many years, rumors had definitely spread. Even Immortal Zombie Giant Sun had sent people in regularly, others went in as well.

"Good, kill them all! These otherworldly demons deserve death!"

"In historical records, each time the Myriad Tribes Ceremony is held, these otherworldly demons will appear."

"Let’s kill all of these outsiders, how dare they invade our world!"

Hei Lou Lan listened to their discussions while feeling deep and strange emotions surging internally.

The inhabitants of Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven saw this grotto-heaven as the whole world, they treated outsiders as otherworldly demons, not knowing that the outside world was even larger!

This made Hei Lou Lan think of City Well in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, as well as the minimen living inside it.

The sacrificial ceremony lasted for a day, other than the super tribes who were allowed to openly hold their ceremony at the central field, the other tribes could only do their sacrificial ceremonies at their own camps.

On the night of the ceremony, there was a large bonfire celebration.

Leather drums made stunning noises as tens of thousands of bonfires were lit, countless people who wore beast skin clothings and feathered accessories danced around their bonfires as they laughed, danced, sang, and enjoyed themselves thoroughly.

Many men and women were attracted to each other, they held each other’s hands and left the bonfire, returning to their own tents, away from the laughter and noise outside, to engage in the most intense and enjoyable ritual on their beds.

Of course, some approached Hei Lou Lan too.

"This is the Myriad Tribes Ceremony, the most sacred moment of all. Lady Sacred Child, we are a match made in heaven, we will produce the most outstanding offspring." The son of a tribe leader brought a large amount of immortal materials and approached Hei Lou Lan.

This young man belonged to a super tribe, on the same level as Yellow Bell Tribe. His father was the tribe leader, a rank eight Gu Immortal, while he himself was rank six.

Hei Lou Lan had an ugly expression, she rejected him on the spot.

The young man laughed instead: "Great, I didn’t want to get close to you anyway, you are too ugly. But father gave me orders I could not defy, I had to come here. Hopefully, we never meet again!"

Other than the young man, an elderly rank eight expert also came to her.

He brought a large amount of extremely valuable immortal materials.

"With these immortal materials, Sacred Child, your totem will reach greater success!" The elderly rank eight Gu Immortal spoke: "Even though you are ugly, I am old and still do not have a son, we can cooperate and achieve a win-win status."

Hei Lou Lan had a cold expression and rejected him as well.

The old rank eight Gu Immortal shook his head and sighed before leaving: "Sacred Child, you are still too young, after missing this opportunity, it might never come to you again. Not everyone can accept your ugly appearance, only people like me who have already gone past that stage can ignore the opinions of everyone else."

Hei Lou Lan almost screamed at him to scram.

Even though she did not care about her appearance, she was still a great beauty at heart.

Her parents were both extremely good looking, she inherited their good genes and was beautiful enough to be a fairy of Northern Plains.

But within Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven, the concept of beauty differed greatly from the outside world.

The inhabitants here worshiped muscles, skin color should not be pale or smooth, they had to be dark and rough, giving people a sense of strength and power.

Thus, in this place, Hei Lou Lan was an ugly woman rarely seen in a hundred years.

The first time anyone sees Hei Lou Lan, they would subconsciously think: It was no wonder Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader abandoned this daughter in the past, she is simply too ugly! But possessing the sacred physique despite the ugliness, heaven is truly balanced and impartial.

On this night, Hei Lou Lan was pestered repeatedly until daybreak.

The Myriad Tribes Competition started!

At the area in front of every tribe, there was a blank space.

It was the field for their competition.

"I, Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader, challenge Stardust Tribe Leader by betting a divine peacock feather." Lu Tong Lan brought Hei Lou Lan to the area of Stardust Tribe.

She was challenging the tribe for Hei Lou Lan.

"It seems that Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader is after that white thread tendon of the five emperor eel." Stardust Tribe Leader smiled bitterly as he walked into the empty space.

In the Myriad Tribes Ceremony, a challenge could not be rejected.

"Please start." Lu Tong Lan instilled immortal essence, her blue phoenix totem shined in bright light, turning solid and flying towards Stardust Tribe Leader.

Stardust Tribe Leader gritted his teeth, shouting as his totem flew into the sky, turning into a single-horned mountain goat.

The single-horned mountain goat crashed towards the blue phoenix, creating a huge cloud of stardust.

The blue phoenix dodged as it chirped, spitting out a torrent of blue flames.

The blue flames were extremely hot, the single-horned mountain goat was swept by the flames and got encircled, it tried to break out several times.

Each time the single-horned mountain goat tried to act, the blue phoenix would intercept and force it back.

"Lu Tong Lan definitely has a stronger totem, but the main reason for this situation is the difference in combat attainment of the two tribe leaders." Hei Lou Lan watched at the side and realized.

"As expected of Blue Phoenix Tribe Leader, sigh, I admit defeat." Not long after, Stardust Tribe Leader said.

He needed to preserve his strength, the Myriad Tribes Ceremony had just started. If he got injured and could not fight anymore, more people would challenge him and cause him to lose more immortal materials.

Lu Tong Lan stopped immediately.

Stardust Tribe Leader arranged for the white thread tendon of the five emperor eel to be given to the winner.

Both sides did not go overboard.

"Stardust Tribe Leader, if you encounter any difficulties in the future, you can send a letter to my Blue Phoenix Tribe. If it is a trivial matter, we will definitely help you." Lu Tong Lan said before leaving.

Stardust Tribe Leader’s expression soothed.

Even though one could not reject challenges in the Myriad Tribes Ceremony, they could invite others to help them out. This was also why many weaker forces chose to join or side with super forces of their own accord.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

With the full support of Desolate Extremity Lu Tong Lan, Hei Lou Lan started to devour a large amount of immortal materials again.

After digesting them, her totem finally reached greater success!

"Good, your dark capital strength tiger totem has formed completely. With just this move, you are a peak expert among rank sevens, even in the outside world of the five regions." Lu Tong Lan was very happy: "Now, if you are interested, you can give it a go."

The Myriad Tribes Ceremony had reached a cruel stage of the competition.

Every day, a large number of tribes were defeated, their experts got injured, and they lost many resources in their inventories. There were even those who went after their enemies, they did not bet on immortal materials but a person’s life instead!

What made Hei Lou Lan feel a chill inside was that any Gu Immortal who died during the Myriad Tribes Ceremony would be sacrificed on the spot, merging into the yellow soil land.

Blue Phoenix Tribe was still in a good state.

Because of Hei Lou Lan’s identity as a Sacred Child, as long as she was alive, when she reaches rank eight, the entire Blue Phoenix Tribe would be elevated to the Sacred Tribe, they would have high authority.

Thus, almost nobody provoked Blue Phoenix Tribe.

Even if some people felt jealousy and hatred, wanting to attack Hei Lou Lan before she grew stronger, they would be filled with caution, they would not attack the Sacred Child during this important event, it was disrespectful to Great God Reckless Savage after all!

During the day, the myriad tribes engaged in continuous combat. At night, countless tribe leaders and elders conversed in secret, forming alliances while working and scheming together.

Lu Tong Lan and Jiao Huo were also secretly in contact.

Anyone who wanted to target Blue Phoenix Tribe might likely contact Fire Blend Tribe, the opposite was also true.

Blue Phoenix Tribe, which possessed a Sacred Child, attracted a lot of jealousy, even including those people who were friendly to Lu Tong Lan normally!

Fire Blend Tribe did not have a good time either, they lost a good number of elders half a year ago, they became weaker and had to join Yellow Bell Tribe as a subsidiary force.

But Yellow Bell Tribe had enemies too.

All of the experts continued to fight and kill.

But thankfully, because only totems could be used in battle, the death toll was much lower.

In normal situations, other killer moves would be used in a battle of life and death. Totems were mostly trump cards, a good number of non-totem killer moves were also held as trump cards.

Hei Lou Lan gained a lot of insight these few days.

She saw all sorts of totems, she recognized many outstanding experts.

Her totem had already reached greater success, the path ahead of her was to continue eating with the dark capital strength tiger as the foundation, to fuse with other dao marks and gradually turn it into a totem that suited Hei Lou Lan specifically.

But there was another path, she could construct a second or third totem.

Experts who had many totems had a larger range of methods, but because their efforts were split, the quality of their totems were lower as well.

By investing the same effort and resources, cultivating one totem was naturally stronger.

As for which route to take, Hei Lou Lan was still thinking about it: "In historical records, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable had countless totems, each one was extremely strong. They had at least rank eight battle strength, some were even at pseudo venerable battle strength. It seems that Reckless Savage Demon Venerable took the second path."

As days passed, the situation of the myriad tribes changed rapidly every day.

Initially, those normal tribes with only Gu Masters started to lose and assimilate into each other rapidly. But this situation actually extended to the super forces as well, eventually, even a super force like Yellow Bell Tribe showed signs of downfall!

When three rank eight Gu Immortals died on Moon Field Slope, this yellow soil land started to emit a faint yellow light.

In this yellow light, a road slowly appeared before them.

"Myriad Life Road has appeared!"

"Huff... the myriad tribes challenge has finally ended."

"Only publicly recognized experts can enter the Myriad Life Road and find the immortal opportunities left behind by Great God Reckless Savage!"

Hei Lou Lan had some realization too: "So all the sacrifices are meant to open up this Myriad Life Road."

As the one with the sacred physique, she did not need to be tested, she was qualified to enter the Myriad Life Road immediately.

After the tribes discussed among themselves, they chose eighty-eight people.

There were eleven people of each respective rank.

Among the tribes, there were no rank nine Gu cultivators, thus the maximum number was only eighty-eight.

For some reason, this number struck a chord with Hei Lou Lan.

Under countless envious gazes, eighty-eight people stepped onto the Myriad Life Road.

From the outside, the Myriad Life Road looked like an illusory image. But when Hei Lou Lan and the rest stepped into it, they felt a completely different sensation.

"It feels like there is really a road, I can step on it firmly." Hei Lou Lan walked for over ten steps, her expression changed gradually.

She was accompanied by Lu Tong Lan.

Not far away behind her, there was Jiao Huo.

These two were part of the Eight Extremities after all, they had successfully emerged from the competition and became one of the eighty-eight chosen people.

"Walking on this Myriad Life Road, every step expends our strength, will, and even immortal essence." Hei Lou Lan said.

Lu Tong Lan added: "More accurately speaking, our foundation and strength are depleted at a certain rate proportionately."

There was fairness for everyone walking on this road, they experienced the same difficulty.

Gu Immortals were stronger than Gu Masters, but the difficulty level for Gu Masters was decided according to their own strength.

This caused many Gu Masters to move ahead of the Gu Immortals instead.

"I found a Gu worm, they are crawling on the ground, once we pick them up, they can be instantly refined!"

"Quickly look, there are so many food ingredients, this is worth a fortune."

Many people shouted and cheered, they quickly gained some plentiful rewards.

The myriad tribes outside could not see this scene, they could only see eighty-eight figures that shrunk to the size of black dots as they became concealed by the heavenly road in the sky.

Hei Lou Lan observed closely and soon found something strange.

"The heavenly road is uneven, the slope is upwards at times and downwards at times. When going up, there will be Gu worms and Gu materials, when going down, even though there are no rewards, we will expend less of our strength." Hei Lou Lan analyzed, suddenly gasping in shock: "Strange, this feels like something depicted in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>!"

She quickly looked at Lu Tong Lan as the latter smiled: "You are right, this is Upslope Road and Downslope Road."

Hei Lou Lan could not help but shake internally!

Her eyes shined with bright light: "This means to say, I can obtain the legendary ability Gu and effort Gu here?"

Lu Tong Lan replied: "That will depend on your fortune. If these Gu worm really exist here, I am sure they will be near the end of the heavenly road."

Hei Lou Lan gritted her teeth as she made up her mind: "This is a fortuitous encounter that I cannot let go of! In history, Gu worms that are mentioned in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> are all top tier Gu worms, they either have terrifying strength or incredible abilities. Ancestor Giant Sun was right, I need to make the best of this supreme opportunity to have a chance of surpassing that guy, Fang Yuan!"

Hei Lou Lan started to move ahead.

Lu Tong Lan instructed her: "Don't take the Downslope Road, try to walk on the Upslope Road. This is the guidance of our lord."

Hei Lou Lan was a little bewildered.

Normally speaking, the Downslope Road had a small expenditure on the person, it was most logical to walk on it. Only until the second half of the heavenly road should one start walking on the Upslope Road.

But Immortal Zombie Giant Sun's advice was the opposite.

Hei Lou Lan hesitated for a moment but decided to trust Immortal Zombie Giant Sun.

She and Lu Tong Lan walked together, trying to go on the Upslope Road as much as they could.

They found a lot of Gu worms and materials while walking on the Upslope Road, yet most were just mortal Gu and materials.

Not long after, they started to find immortal materials. As for the Gu Immortals who traveled the same distance as them, because they walked on the Downslope Road quite often, their rewards were fewer and also kept within the range of mortal materials.

Hei Lou Lan realized at once: "The heavenly road does not calculate distance traveled but the quality of the road traveled instead. It does not split into the first or second half, it only sees if we are giving it our full effort when we walk on the road. By putting in my full effort, I have a chance of making desirable gains. But if I slack off and take the easy path, I might consume all my strength without gaining anything significant."

Lu Tong Lan and Hei Lou Lan continued ahead.

When they found the first rank six Immortal Gu, the first Predicament also appeared.

Predicaments had all sorts of shapes and sizes, they were translucent and had various colors.

The Predicament in Hei Lou Lan's path was light brown in color, it resembled a raccoon with the size of a mountain, blocking the heavenly road.

"Predicament, a wild beast recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>. It is extinct within the five regions, to think that it still exists here. But since this is the heavenly road, there is nothing strange about it."

Hei Lou Lan took in a deep breath, working with Lu Tong Lan to attack the Predicament.

The Predicament roared as it charged towards Hei Lou Lan and Lu Tong Lan.

The two of them felt their vision blurring and changing, they arrived in a light brown secluded space.

"We are inside the Predicament, we were eaten by it." Lu Tong Lan immediately said.

Predicaments were very special entities, rumor had it that the first person who created a battlefield killer move took inspiration from researching the Predicaments.

Each Predicament could also be treated as a natural battlefield killer move.

Within the Predicament, calamities and tribulations formed and descended.

Lu Tong Lan took the lead: "I will block the calamities and tribulations, Hei Lou Lan, you will break out of the Predicament!"

Hei Lou Lan was stunned: "What should I do?"

"You have the Great Strength True Martial Physique, according to the records of <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, you are a counter to these Predicaments! I do not know what you need to do, but just go ahead and try. Remember, you cannot spend too much time, the tribulations within the Predicament are unceasing!" Lu Tong Lan instructed.

Hei Lou Lan gritted her teeth, activating her strength path killer moves and attacking the place randomly.

A moment later, joy flashed on her face as she felt a movement in the space.

The tribulations became fiercer.

But Lu Tong Lan was very happy: "Continue with that, this Predicament is already staking its life to fight!"

Hei Lou Lan suddenly thought: She had the Great Strength True Martial Physique, but others did not. What could they do if they faced a Predicament?

"Dark capital strength tiger, come out!" Hei Lou Lan willed as she expended a large amount of rank seven immortal essence.

Roar!

With a surging black light, the huge black tiger condensed into solid form and charged ahead.

With a loud sound, a huge hole was formed.

"Let’s go!" Hei Lou Lan and Lu Tong Lan flew out of the hole together, returning to the outside world.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The Predicament growled, clenching its body at the area of the injury.

The dark capital strength tiger totem created a huge hole and caused it to weaken greatly.

Its body continued to shrink like a burst balloon, until it was only half of its original size, before the hole closed up and mended itself.

After stabilizing its condition, the Predicament did not dare to attack Hei Lou Lan anymore, it screeched and ran away.

Hei Lou Lan did not chase it, she picked up the rank six Immortal Gu and continued on the road with Lu Tong Lan.

The two walked on the Upslope Road with all their effort, gaining greater and greater rewards.

A while later, they obtained two rank six Immortal Gu and one rank seven Immortal Gu.

Their encounters soon alerted the others, they started to use their full strength to walk on the Upslope Road.

Gradually, some expended all their strength and fell from the heavenly road, crashing onto the yellow land of the Moon Field Slope.

Some encountered the Predicaments but did not manage to break out, dying inside. There were some who defeated their Predicaments but lost too much strength, they had gloomy expressions.

Predicaments were a mystical type of wild beasts in essence, one’s battle strength had to be greatly exceeding their endurance limit for them to lose. Only strength path methods had greater effect.

Hei Lou Lan felt more difficulty as she walked.

After defeating two more Predicaments, she found that from a total of eighty-eight people, only thirty or so were left.

"I am starting to lose my ability to continue, a lot of my strength has been depleted, while the Predicaments that show up are getting stronger. My remaining battle strength is only enough for one more Predicament." Hei Lou Lan gritted her teeth, feeling unresigned.

"Don’t worry, I have a way, let’s continue." Lu Tong Lan patted Hei Lou Lan’s shoulder with an optimistic attitude.

After encountering another Predicament, Lu Tong Lan used her blue phoenix totem and worked with the dark capital strength tiger to defeat the Predicament.

"Be careful, don’t let it escape!" This time, Lu Tong Lan shouted and acted in time, not allowing the Predicament to escape as they killed it successfully.

"Eat it." Lu Tong Lan cut the Predicament’s flesh and gave Hei Lou Lan a piece.

Hei Lou Lan had read <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> before, she understood something.

Each piece of the Predicament’s meat that she ate, she felt her strength returned by a portion. After she and Lu Tong Lan devoured the entire Predicament, her strength had mostly recovered.

But this way, the method was exposed.

Many Gu cultivators saw this and started to mimic them.

But a portion of the Gu cultivators were not surprised, they knew about this long ago.

"You cannot overeat the Predicament’s flesh, otherwise, your heart will burn and your mind will collapse." Lu Tong Lan sighed: "Let’s continue."

After several more minutes, Jiao Huo chased up to Hei Lou Lan and Lu Tong Lan.

"What do you want?" Lu Tong Lan pretended to be unhappy as she called out.

Jiao Huo snorted coldly: "Only seven of us are left, we want to cooperate, of course. We can settle the score outside, but here, we need to look at the big picture!"

Lu Tong Lan was silent.

"Tribe leader Jiao Huo is right, the Predicaments are getting stronger, we need to work together." Yellow Bell Tribe Leader also arrived, he looked at Hei Lou Lan and said: "Sacred Child, you are qualified to cooperate with us and fight together."

Next, Yellow Bell Tribe Leader looked at the others: "Since everyone could reach this far, we are all qualified to work together. What do you think?"

Among the seven that were left, one was rank six, two were rank eight, while the last four were rank seven.

Everyone looked at each other, turning silent for a moment.

"Working together will allow us to get further indeed!"

"But how do we distribute Immortal Gu and immortal materials?" The rank six Gu Immortal asked the crucial question.

If they had to compete, he would definitely lose against them.

Yellow Bell Tribe Leader pondered and spoke: "There is no need to fight over Immortal Gu and immortal materials, we can take them in turns. As for the sequence, we can discuss it. If anyone ignores the rules, they will be everyone’s enemy. The Myriad Life Road only appears once every ten thousand years, whoever disobeys the rules will face the pursuit of everyone!"

"Okay." The other rank eight Gu Immortal agreed.

But regarding the sequence, everyone argued for a long time.

The one who was placed first naturally would get the lowest value of resources. The one who got the later rewards would gain greater value. But who had the confidence to last until the end?

Right now, everyone was near their limit, otherwise, they would not have cooperated. If their position was later and got eliminated before they could gain the rewards, it would be a huge loss!

Everyone thought about it for a while before deciding the sequence and continuing on.

After defeating two Predicaments, the first rank eight Immortal Gu appeared!

According to the sequence, it belonged to that rank six Gu Immortal.

Under everyone’s gaze, the rank six Gu Immortal collected the Immortal Gu with trepidation.

The two rank eight Gu Immortals did not snatch it, their turn was later, this rank six Gu Immortal also had a decent status, his father was a famous rank eight expert.

With the appearance of a rank eight Immortal Gu, the group of seven became quite tense.

Moving along another segment of the Upslope Road, there were no Predicaments blocking their way, but the group found a dragon horn grass.

Dragon horn grass was an immemorial desolate plant, it was shaped like a coral, similar to a dragon horn, every segment was the length of a finger, it would grow by one segment every month.

According to the sequence, it was Jiao Huo’s turn now.

Jiao Huo collected the dragon horn grass while feeling helpless internally, he wanted an Immortal Gu, Longevity Heaven did not lack such immortal material resources.

"Everyone, I can’t continue. I’m really sorry, please understand, I am not trying to leave after getting my reward!" After walking for some time, the rank six Gu Immortal said with a pale expression and shaking body.

Yellow Bell Tribe Leader nodded: "Go back, at this rate, you will die of exhaustion."

The rank six Gu Immortal bowed deeply and fell towards the ground.

While in the air, he fell unconscious, luckily, there were people waiting for him at the ground.

After the rank six Gu Immortal left, the trend started as people also reached their limits. First was the other rank eight Gu Immortal, followed by Lu Tong Lan.

That rank eight Gu Immortal had not reached his turn yet before getting eliminated, he had an ugly expression when he left.

Lu Tong Lan was also at her limit, she instructed Hei Lou Lan to be careful before leaving.

Only four were left, they were Hei Lou Lan, Jiao Huo, Yellow Bell Tribe Leader, and a young rank seven Gu Immortal.

"What Gu is this?" Everyone’s eyes lit up.

Everyone saw an extraordinary rank eight Immortal Gu, it looked like an ant with the size of an adult’s fist, it emitted a rainbow colored light.

"This is quantity change Gu!" Yellow Bell Tribe Leader laughed heartily, it was his turn now.

With this Immortal Gu, he could make the target go from one to ten, ten to a hundred, increasingly greatly in quantity. Of course, the immortal essence expenditure was also raised accordingly. Some targets could not be multiplied, for example, any Immortal Gu.

Of course, this Immortal Gu could be used in combat as well.

For example, if the enemy shot out a torrent of flames, quantity change Gu could reduce the number of flames and weaken the enemy’s offenses rapidly.

However, they had to defeat this Predicament in order to get the Immortal Gu.

After an intense battle, everyone won and shared the meat together.

Yellow Bell Tribe Leader was the happiest, not only did he get a top tier Immortal Gu, his strength also recovered to an extent.

Everyone continued on their way.

A Predicament blocked them again, but there was nothing on the ground.

One could not turn back on the heavenly road, they were forced to engage in a tough battle, killing the Predicament and eating its flesh.

Everyone recovered some more strength.

Walking on the Upslope Road, a rank eight Immortal Gu appeared.

It was a rhinoceros beetle that resembled an ingot of steel, it was thickly armored and stoutly built.

"This is actually... fortitude Gu!!"

"Fortitude Gu, did I see wrongly?’

"It really is fortitude Gu, this is an Immortal Gu recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>!"

Everyone was shocked as they looked towards the rank seven Gu Immortal. According to the sequence, it was his turn.

This Gu Immortal was really the greatest dark horse in this Myriad Tribes Ceremony. His entire body was shaking from excitement now!

After an intense battle, the Predicament shouted pitifully and fell on the ground.

Everyone split the meat while the rank seven Gu Immortal took fortitude Gu.

"This trip was worth it, it was worth it!" The rank seven Gu Immortal muttered to himself, feeling excited.

Yellow Bell Tribe Leader spoke to recruit him.

"I’ll consider it." The rank seven Gu Immortal rejected immediately, Yellow Bell Tribe Leader frowned before relaxing his expression immediately.

"This person will not have a good time in the future." Hei Lou Lan saw this but did not expose it. The rank seven Gu Immortal’s pride had swelled up, he was disregarding Yellow Bell Tribe Leader, thinking he had immense value himself.

But it was not strange, Hei Lou Lan knew that it was obvious: In the future, many people would go ahead and attempt to recruit this rank seven Gu Immortal. Maybe this rank seven Gu Immortal might get sick of hearing such words.

Everyone set off again.

Predicaments blocked the way, but there were no Immortal Gu or immortal materials.

One could not backtrack on the heavenly road, they had to kill this Predicament.

But Jiao Huo rejected the Predicament’s flesh.

"I can’t eat it anymore, I am at my limit. If I eat any more, my heart will burn and I will die." Jiao Huo sighed, looking at Hei Lou Lan deeply before leaving.

Only Hei Lou Lan, Yellow Bell Tribe Leader, and the rank seven Gu Immortal were left.

Hei Lou Lan had chosen her reward earlier, now that Jiao Huo was out, according to the sequence, it was Yellow Bell Tribe Leader’s turn again.

But after several segments of road, they had no gains, they even met two Predicaments, after an intense battle, even though they gained some flesh, the recovery could not match the expenditure, their strength fell sharply.

"Don’t be anxious or dejected. I’ve seen the pattern already, the further we go, the more the Predicaments and the fewer the Immortal Gu and immortal materials, but any rewards that show up are all top tier!" Yellow Bell Tribe Leader tried to raise the morale, he was the next beneficiary, he did not want his efforts to be wasted here.

Like what he said, they finally saw another rank eight Immortal Gu in the end.

This Immortal Gu was shaped like a spider but it was a long body and many compound eyes, shining in blue and red crystal lights, it seemed like a fusion of ruby and sapphire.

"Ability Gu! Another famous Immortal Gu from <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>!" Hei Lou Lan was tongue-tied.

"This Immortal Gu is incredible, it is even better than my fortitude Gu." The rank seven Gu Immortal also gasped.

"Kill this Predicament, I’ll stake my life to kill this Predicament!!" Yellow Bell Tribe Leader’s eyes were red, he spoke while breathing roughly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

The three of them charged towards the Predicament, this was truly a battle of life and death!

The three had insufficient strength left, while this Predicament was strong beyond their expectations.

Calamities and tribulations befell endlessly, the three immortals did their best and used their trump cards, they squeezed out every ounce of potential in them.

Hei Lou Lan’s dark capital strength tiger totem was crippled, Yellow Bell Tribe Leader’s golden bell totem was greatly damaged, the cost of repairing it would be huge. As for the rank seven Gu Immortal, he had rain eagle totem and thunder fish totem, they both lost their ability to fight, but thankfully, this rank seven Gu Immortal had a method to fuse the two damaged totems into the thunder rain fish eagle totem.

They avoided death narrowly!

After fifteen minutes of stalemate, the three immortals risked their lives and finally killed the Predicament.

Yellow Bell Tribe Leader was lying on the ground, he did not even have the strength to laugh, he could only cough: "Ability Gu is mine! You two are very skilled, regardless of whether you join my Yellow Bell Tribe, I will owe you both a favor. What are you doing!!!"

Suddenly, Yellow Bell Tribe Leader stared with wide eyes as he shouted in anger.

Because he saw that the rank seven Gu Immortal had secretly moved away and took the ability Gu on the ground.

"What else? I am snatching the Gu." The rank seven Gu Immortal placed ability Gu into his immortal aperture right in front of Yellow Bell Tribe Leader.

Cough!

Yellow Bell Tribe Leader coughed out a mouthful of blood and fell unconscious, falling from the heavenly road.

Hei Lou Lan gritted her teeth in anger: "I was just a step away, damn it!"

She wanted to snatch ability Gu too, but it was a pity that her location after leaving the Predicament’s body was bad, she was the furthest person from the Immortal Gu.

Thus, that rank seven Gu Immortal succeeded.

The rank seven Gu Immortal smiled at Hei Lou Lan before falling from the sky.

"I do not have the strength to continue." Hei Lou Lan sighed deeply, even though she had great gains in this trip, she did not obtain any top tier Immortal Gu.

Right when she was about to leave the place, she suddenly froze as her palm seemed to have touched something.

"It feels like... an invisible Gu worm?"

Hei Lou Lan looked at it with deep focus, because she had touched the Immortal Gu, she could sense this Gu worm’s strength path aura.

"An invisible rank eight Immortal Gu? What can it be? Don’t tell me..." Hei Lou Lan was extremely happy, she grabbed the mysterious Immortal Gu and left the heavenly road.

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, chapter five, section thirty-four –

Legend says that Ren Zu encountered the greatest Predicament in his life, he ended up creating his seventh child, Great Strength True Martial, and was saved as a result.

Ren Zu and Great Strength True Martial started to travel together.

Great Strength True Martial asked: "Father, where are we going now?"

Ren Zu replied: "My son, you still do not know the situation, I will explain it to you. I originally wanted to save your brothers and sisters, but fate Gu arranged everything, not allowing us to have a reunion. Right now, we need to break free from fate’s control in order to be with our family again."

After hearing the story, Great Strength True Martial could not help but shout in anger: "This fate Gu is too wicked."

At the same time, strong Gu also shouted in his heart: "Experts hate restraints, especially fate."

Ren Zu patted Great Strength True Martial’s head and consoled: "Don’t worry, I have already thought of a way. I will use self Gu to gain strength and wisdom, after, I will obtain freedom Gu and break free from fate Gu’s control. Now, let us go to a place called Qian Kun Crystal Wall, we will search for wisdom Gu there."

Great Strength True Martial nodded: "Let us go there then."

Ren Zu and Great Strength True Martial walked and walked, the road was uneven, there were many upslope and downslope roads.

Strong Gu encouraged Great Strength True Martial: "Oh human, walk on the Upslope Road, even though it is a harder journey, there are often good things there!"

Great Strength True Martial nodded: "Experts like to walk on the Upslope Road."

Great Strength True Martial took great effort to walk up the Upslope Road, he looked around and called out: "There’s nothing here at all."

"No, it is right by your feet, pick it up now." Strong Gu instructed.

Great Strength True Martial squatted down, searching the ground with his hands, as expected, he found something hard, it was an invisible Gu.

"I found something good." Great Strength True Martial laughed: "So it is effort Gu."

Ren Zu found it strange: "My son, how did you find out its name? We can’t see what it looks like."

Great Strength True Martial scratched his head: "The moment I obtained it, I saw effort Gu’s appearance. As for why I know this is effort Gu, well, every expert should know what effort is. This is natural, there is nothing strange about it."

After all, you cannot see the effort of other people.

The pair of father and son set off again.

"This is great, now that I have effort Gu, it will help me greatly." Great Strength True Martial walked as he looked at effort Gu, feeling very happy.

He continued to choose the Upslope Road.

Ren Zu asked curiously: "Is effort Gu really that amazing? Can it allow you to achieve success?"

Great Strength True Martial shook his head: "Effort might not necessarily lead to success, but effort will give you a result. Regardless of the result, whether you put in effort or not will show a difference."

Ren Zu was very worried: "Oh son, you have just been born, don’t be deceived by the Gu. I had once been deceived by wisdom Gu. I see that you are covered in sweat and pant heavily each time you walk on the Upslope Road, I do not see effort Gu helping you at all. I’ve heard of such rumors too, effort Gu can sometimes lie to you."

Great Strength True Martial shook his head as he wiped the sweat off his forehead: "Father, because you cannot see the effort I put in, you misunderstood things. You cannot understand the amount of effort I put in to walk this Upslope Road. Actually, the result of my effort is below my feet, every step, I move higher and further. There are many good things on the Upslope Road, humans cannot obtain them without effort."

"Is that really the case?" Ren Zu was half convinced and suspicious.

Ren Zu and Great Strength True Martial continued on their journey.

Great Strength True Martial kept walking on the Upslope Road, he continued to move up higher, he obtained authority Gu and fortitude Gu.

In the later part of the road, he found humility Gu and forgiveness Gu as well.

These two Gu worms took the initiative to follow Great Strength True Martial.

Great Strength True Martial asked for the reason while they replied matter-of-factly: "Because humility (forgiveness) is the authority of an expert to begin with."

Because Great Strength True Martial walked on the Upslope Road, an ability Gu suddenly appeared within him.

Great Strength True Martial held ability Gu as he said to Ren Zu: "Look father, this is the result of effort Gu. It awakened my potential, I have my own ability now!"

Ren Zu asked: "Then what is the use of this ability Gu?"

Great Strength True Martial shook his head: "I am not sure. People will only know their abilities and their strength after they use them. But it is definitely useful, it can last my entire lifetime."

Ren Zu shook his head, he still felt that his son was deceived by the Gu.

Ren Zu and Great Strength True Martial continued walking, the situation on the road was getting worse.

Downslope Road was easier to walk on, but it was getting rarer, there were more and more segments of Upslope Road.

Not only so, more and more Predicaments appeared on the road.

"Isn’t there an easier road to walk on?" Ren Zu was helpless.

Cognition Gu flew towards Ren Zu: "Oh human, there is no other way. The more valuable thing you try to pursue, the more segments of the Upslope Road you need to walk on, and the more Predicaments you need to overcome."

Ren Zu and Great Strength True Martial had to continue on their way.

Indeed, as cognition Gu had said, they encountered more and more Predicaments, their road was completely blocked.

Ren Zu said: "Don’t be afraid of the Predicaments, we still have our hope."

"But hope alone cannot defeat the Predicament, at this time, you will need me." Great Strength True Martial’s ability Gu spoke.

Great Strength True Martial used his ability, defeating many Predicaments.

Ren Zu sighed at long last: "My son, your ability Gu is too amazing, it can actually do this. It seems I have underestimated your effort and ability."

Great Strength True Martial smiled: "Often, we humans do not lack abilities, we lack the opportunities to display them."

Strong Gu shouted in his heart with great ambition: "Kill them all, let’s eat them all! That way, we can become even stronger."

Great Strength True Martial killed many Predicaments, he started to eat the Predicaments’ head.

"So this is a bitter head? It is really bitter. But I can feel myself getting stronger."

He started to eat the Predicament’s loss.

Great Strength True Martial immediately spat it out: "Experts do not like to swallow losses."

He also ate the Predicament’s flesh.

Strong Gu got bigger, Great Strength True Martial also became more muscular than before.

Strong Gu was very satisfied about this change: "In this world, only by becoming stronger can one avoid getting bullied."

Great Strength True Martial gave some of the meat to Ren Zu: "Oh father, eat something, you are too skinny."

Ren Zu was so thin he looked like a rack of bones.

Eventually, Great Strength True Martial tossed ability Gu into the tribulation.

Ability Gu went through great hurdles and difficulties, but it got larger and stronger as well.

All sorts of tribulations and difficulties were prime opportunities to train one’s ability, to develop one’s ability, and to increase one’s ability.

...

Several days later, in Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan looked at the two rank eight Immortal Gu in his hands, they were fortitude Gu and ability Gu!

"This time, my clone Zhan Bu Du did a great job, this is a great gain for us." Fang Yuan was very happy internally.

It turned out that after the fate war, Fang Yuan sent Zhan Bu Du into Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven immediately.

Fang Yuan knew about Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven long ago, there was information about it in the five hundred years of his previous life. Ma Hong Yun had once entered and walked on the heavenly road, obtaining fortitude Gu in the end.

Even though Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven was secluded, there were ways to sneak in. Otherwise, there would not be so many outsiders sacrificed during the Myriad Tribes Ceremony.

Before annexing Lang Ya Sect, Fang Yuan knew about Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven but did not have ways to enter.

But Lang Ya Sect could.

Lang Ya land spirit had once tried to recruit Chu Du, he even asked Fang Yuan to help in this matter. It was because Lang Ya land spirit had this method, he wanted to send Chu Du inside to explore and gain benefits.

The most popular paths in Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven were food path, strength path, and transformation path, among which, pure strength path cultivators were the most successful.

After annexing Lang Ya Sect, Fang Yuan gained control of this method.

He used it to send Zhan Bu Du inside.

And his gains were much larger than expected.

"Fortitude Gu is useful to me, ability Gu also has great prospects in the future. As for Hei Lou Lan, she went to Longevity Heaven and is receiving a lot of attention and help, it seems. It is a pity that Zhan Bu Du did not have the strength to kill her at that point in time." Fang Yuan did not feel much pity about this.

Hei Lou Lan was not important, the key was Crazed Demon Cave and the impending conflict between venerables!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Meng Qiu Zhen was exploring another dream realm.

Deep in the mountains, Meng Qiu Zhen sat cross-legged on a cliff with a torrential waterfall below him.

"Immortal, immortal!" A young man was covered in injuries, he crawled towards Fang Yuan and begged him to take him in as a disciple.

"You want me to be your master?" Meng Qiu Zhen smiled while feeling surprised internally, he tried to decipher the rules of this dream realm.

In the past, Fang Yuan would need to test it himself, but now, Meng Qiu Zhen had the dream path Immortal Gu, Dream Butterfly!

He activated dream butterfly Immortal Gu secretly to investigate while stalling for time as he spoke: "You are a mere mortal, but since you are able to find me after so many hurdles, this means we are fated. I have three cultivation paths, I will impart you one of them."

The young man was overjoyed, he kowtowed continuously on the hard ground, a dull sound was heard each time.

Meng Qiu Zhen said: "The first path is formation path, it emphasizes on..."

Meng Qiu Zhen continued to explain, he said the truth without any lies in his words.

The young man nodded in hesitation: "Lord immortal, even though formation path is very complex, I am willing to work hard!"

Meng Qiu Zhen shook his head, saying: "No hurry, my second path is strength path, it is powerful and direct, the advantage lies in..."

After Meng Qiu Zhen finished his words, the young man became very excited: "I want to learn strength path!"

Meng Qiu Zhen smiled again: "I have a third path, wisdom path. Strength path is very common but wisdom path is rare, it can benefit you immensely. Among which..."

After a lengthy description, the young man was overwhelmed with excitement: "Lord immortal, lord immortal! I am most willing to learn wisdom path, please teach me."

At this time, dream butterfly Immortal Gu finished investigating the dream realm.

The dream realm was not small, it had eight scenes.

It turned out that the immortal had once unknowingly destroyed a mortal village, causing the death of the young man’s parents.

The young man became all alone, he suffered greatly in the mortal world, not knowing who his enemy was.

After much effort, he finally became the disciple of this immortal. He had great aptitude and had the Ten Extreme Physique, he was very suited for wisdom path cultivation.

When the young man found out that his enemy was his master, he started to exact revenge.

In the final scene, the master and disciple turned on each other, this was a difficult dream.

"No matter what I impart, this disciple will learn it completely and even innovate to surpass the master. Furthermore, he will cultivate wisdom path secondarily and have incredible wisdom path methods."

"Thus, this first scene is the most important chance to weaken this disciple!" Meng Qiu Zhen realized internally.

Without dream butterfly Immortal Gu, he had to test it himself, he definitely could not pass with his first try, his soul would get injured.

Meng Qiu Zhen would need to recuperate, wasting time and resources. After that, he would need to restart and explore the dream realm again.

But with dream butterfly Immortal Gu, he had the initiative, he was not in such a passive spot.

Even though dream butterfly Immortal Gu could only investigate the situation, the value of information was simply priceless.

Looking at the young man, Meng Qiu Zhen thought about it and smiled: "Then I will impart you my wisdom path cultivation. This method was not created by me, but I modified it personally, I named it — Nine-nine Multiplication Table."

"Nine-nine multiplication table?" The young man’s eyes shined, just from the name, he felt that it was grand and impressive, it had an immortal flair.

Meng Qiu Zhen continued to spout nonsense: "Nine is the perfect number, nine times nine represents the concept of countless and boundless, the multiplication method is the rule of all beings, the extreme profundity of the natural order, those who lack aptitude cannot comprehend it. Come, let me teach you the first killer move — One Times One is One!"

The young man held his breath, he listened attentively and muttered to himself: "One times one is one, one times one is one, one times one is one."

Not long after, at the final scene.

"Master, this is my final..."

"Shut up! Don’t call me master, you traitorous disciple, I am not your master."

"No, even so, I will call you my..."

"Shut up! I worked so hard to nurture you, I imparted my strongest method, the nine-nine multiplication table to you, but yet you repaid my kindness with enmity!"

"No, master. No matter how angry you are, it is a fact you killed my parents, there is no resolving that grudge. For the last time, I will call you my..."

Meng Qiu Zhen did not care, he directly used his killer move on his disciple.

The disciple was constantly interrupted, he could not call him ’master’ for the last time.

Meng Qiu Zhen wanted to see this. Because he understood this disciple, who had created his own raging emotion killer move, it was incredible, it could use wisdom path to allow all sorts of emotions to surge in power. If he managed to say it, he would feel a sense of freedom, he would be able to use the killer move freely.

Once he activated the killer move raging emotion, he would gain a huge advantage in this dream realm, Meng Qiu Zhen would face great difficulty in trying to pass it.

The battle progressed like how Meng Qiu Zhen predicted, he kept attacking and did not give his disciple a chance to talk.

His disciple was constantly suppressed, without a choice, he had to give up on his strongest raging emotion killer move and use the nine-nine multiplication table method instead.

Immortal killer move — Eight Times Eight Is Eighty-Eight!

After a long time of fighting, his disciple finally used his killer move.

Cough!

He had just activated the killer move when it failed immediately, he suffered a backlash and became gravely injured.

"This killer move is wrong! Master, don’t tell me you..." The disciple looked at Meng Qiu Zhen in disbelief.

"Oh my foolish little disciple, I’ll tell you the real name of this killer move — Eight Times Eight Is Sixty-Six!" Meng Qiu Zhen snickered coldly as he attacked viciously[1].

The disciple lasted only a few rounds before his head was taken, he died with grievance.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan’s main body was comprehending killer moves now.

Using Gu worms alone often had all sorts of demerits or side effects. To fix this or to reduce the side effects, Gu cultivators started to use multiple Gu worms together in cooperation.

Killer moves were naturally developed on this basis.

Killer moves involved the use of multiple Gu worms, among the three aspects of nurture, use, and refinement, they came under ’use’.

When cultivators developed killer moves, they were surprised to find that natural killer moves existed in nature all along. From the bodies of desolate beasts or desolate plants, these cultivators found that they had many innate abilities, these abilities were all profound and mystical, like the upper extreme heavenly eagle’s ability to enter and exit blessed lands and grotto-heavens.

The upper extreme heavenly eagle had dense space path dao marks on its body, these dao marks were distributed in a certain pattern, following the rules of space path to grant it the ’innate ability’ to enter and leave blessed lands and grotto-heavens.

Thus, the essence of killer moves was dao marks.

"In this aspect, totem killer moves are the closest to the original form of killer moves." Fang Yuan praised internally.

Totem killer moves were developed in Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven, they did not exist elsewhere.

Totem killer moves had very high status, they could complement ordinary killer moves and battlefield killer moves, being on the same level as them.

With regard to using Gu, other than using single Gu worms, there were ordinary killer moves, battlefield killer moves, ancient battle formations, current generation Gu formations, as well as mortal and Immortal Gu Houses. But now, on this foundation, there was a new type — totem killer moves!

Compared to other ways of using Gu, totem killer moves had a clear advantage.

The most obvious one was that activating them was easy and quick, even a fool could control them. Totem killer moves needed very few thoughts, they were reliant on primeval essence or immortal essence instead. Unlike ordinary killer moves which needed to activate every single Gu worm, the processes were very different.

Secondly, totem killer moves were easy to assemble, the maintenance cost was also low. The Gu worms of ordinary killer moves needed constant feeding. The cultivator would also need a lot of time to find appropriate Gu worms. As for totem killer moves, they only needed the corresponding food ingredients. Gu materials were much easier to find than Gu worms!

The cost of feeding Gu worms was very high, but once totem killer moves were created, they would exist on the user’s body, not requiring further food. Of course, if they were damaged, they would need to be repaired. By then, the cultivator would need to eat the respective food ingredients.

Thirdly, totem killer moves were very easy to publicize, many people could use them at the same time. Also, totem killer moves were suited for all paths!

Of course, there were disadvantages as well.

For example, the cost of creating a totem was not low. Also, with the creation of a totem, it would greatly affect the Gu cultivator’s future cultivation, after all, it contained dao marks. And finally, totems were powerful but they had fixed methods, they were easy to counter. This was quite similar to Gu Houses.

Fang Yuan thought about it, he felt that the totem killer moves had some similarity to beast strength phantoms.

"These Demon Venerables and Immortal Venerables have unimaginable talent. Even though Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s personality was quite unexpected, his scheming abilities are top notch."

Originally, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s grotto-heaven only had strength path and transformation path dao marks.

But from what Fang Yuan learned from Old Eccentric Tian Nan’s true inheritance, he used the beastman’s method against them, fusing his own immortal aperture into the gluttonous demon frog’s body.

This was simply akin to the action of a deity, it could not be described in plain words!

The gluttonous demon frog was a food path legendary immemorial beast, with it encompassing the immortal aperture, and along with Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s method, Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven started to develop a food path environment.

This food path environment was crucial!

It was because of the food path dao marks that Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven’s cultivators could use refinement path methods to cook while having low food path attainment, creating the food that could allow them to cultivate totem killer moves.

In the outside world, without the help of a food path environment, Gu cultivators could not create such food so easily.

"This is actually food path cultivation!"

Fang Yuan thought about Southern Border’s Paradise Earth true inheritance.

In this true inheritance, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable developed food path, allowing tea recipes to become food path recipes. Using Gu materials to create tea, the cultivator could drink it to gain dao marks.

The essence of the totem killer moves in Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven was the same.

Gu cultivators could absorb the dao marks of Gu materials into their own bodies and create totem killer moves gradually. Totem killer moves were very suitable for their own cultivator, because during the process, their bodies would choose to absorb whatever it could absorb as nutrients.

"Hmm?" Fang Yuan’s expression changed slightly, his thoughts were interrupted for a moment.

"My wisdom path reached great grandmaster attainment level." He could feel this change immediately, but his expression remained tranquil and peaceful.

[1] This is the author’s idea of a joke, possibly regarding readers talking about his mathematics skills.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2119 Li Xiao Bai“s Immortal Ascension

Soon, Fang Yuan placed the matter of his wisdom path attainment level aside as he continued his comprehension.

"Be they Reckless Savage Demon Venerable or Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, they have a deep understanding of food path. In this aspect, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable is inferior to Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, he only made use of the gluttonous demon frog. But the way he used the food path environment to create the totem killer move archetype is truly too amazing." Even Fang Yuan could not stint on the praise towards such a move.

If one truly cultivated totem killer moves purely, they would need to undergo continuous deductions.

But in Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven, Gu cultivators only had to devour food ingredients and use the food path environment to naturally select the most suitable nutrition by their bodies themselves, those dao marks would develop into all sorts of totems on their own.

This was like using food path to make up for any deficiency in wisdom path, allowing countless totem killer moves to be born.

As for the Gu materials that the Gu cultivators devoured, where did those come from?

They were naturally produced by Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven itself.

Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven had bountiful transformation path dao marks, there were many mutated beasts and plants here, they had mutated and developed forms that far surpassed the five regions in diversity.

The wild beasts or plants living in Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven were all unique existences in the grotto-heaven, they could not be found elsewhere.

When Gu cultivators devour the mutated Gu materials, their totems would also continue to change and elevate. From this perspective, the Gu cultivator was making use of Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven’s natural development to allow the totem killer moves to develop as well. Eventually, they would produce stunning results.

Just what Zhan Bu Du heard when he lurked in there was that there were over nine thousand basic totems in Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven.

Dark capital strength tiger, rain eagle totem, thunder fish totem, and golden bell totem were just part of them. Not to mention that aside from these basic totems, there were also unique totems that belonged to certain individuals.

"These totem killer moves are not very helpful to me, but there is high reference value in all the recipes that exist here!"

Fang Yuan originally had a food path true inheritance, it came from Shadow Sect and was the original food path inheritance in the world. Not long ago, Fang Yuan also obtained Southern Border’s Paradise Earth true inheritance, obtaining all sorts of food path killer moves, there were tea recipes that could increase the number of dao marks on a Gu cultivator’s body. And now, Fang Yuan obtained all sorts of recipes to create totem killer moves.

Combining all of his accumulations, food path had developed to a certain degree, Fang Yuan was starting to see its true profundity and depth.

"All along, I thought that food path most excelled in feeding Gu and reducing the burden on the Gu cultivator. But the truth is, this is only one advantage of food path, the true power of food path is to help the Gu cultivator gain extra dao marks and raise their foundation!"

The advantage of food path was to sustain the livelihood of the Gu cultivator and Gu worms, while also using specific methods to make the target even stronger than before.

Fang Yuan had wisdom path great grandmaster attainment level, his wisdom path deductions were elevated to a new level. Thus, Fang Yuan could deduce all sorts of food path killer moves from just these recipes alone.

Food path had a huge difference compared to other paths, most food path killer moves were used on the user themselves.

Fang Yuan had a lot of immortal materials, if he expended them to form food path killer moves that were used on the sovereign immortal body, he would gain a vast number of dao marks!

Fang Yuan estimated: "If I compare the benefits, annexing grotto-heavens gives me the most dao marks, each time, I will gain millions of them. But now that the sovereign immortal aperture is reaching its peak capacity, the balance of the habitat is already close to toppling, if I continue with that, I will start to experience unfavorable losses instead."

"Using these food path killer moves to increase my dao marks might have small gains each time but with enough attempts, I can also accumulate a huge amount of dao marks."

"Additionally, to prepare for Crazed Demon Cave, I need to create some defensive food path methods against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable."

Spectral Soul’s killer moves, bitter taste and swallow loss, left a huge impression on Fang Yuan.

He could not ignore them!

At the same time, because food path was not popularized, ordinary Gu Immortals could not effectively defend against it. Thus, if Fang Yuan developed some food path offensive methods, there might be great results too.

Fang Yuan held expectations towards food path, but the extent was not big.

Because his enemies in Crazed Demon Cave were either Star Constellation Immortal Venerable or Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. The latter’s proficiency at food path was definitely higher than Fang Yuan, while the former had wisdom path quasi-supreme grandmaster attainment, the former leader of Heavenly Court, how could she falter so easily against food path?

"The enemies are too strong, food path is only a minor method, it cannot be used on that stage. But development is still necessary, I need to have defense against it at least. When I fight against Spectral Soul again, I will not be disadvantaged in food path anymore."

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan gave his time path clone new missions to refine another batch of Immortal Gu.

During this period of time, the time path clone had been using Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool to refine rank eight Immortal Gu without pausing.

A large number of Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan possessed had already been elevated to rank eight!

Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool had a terrifying success rate for refining rank eight Immortal Gu. Together with his huge stock of immortal materials and rank eight Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus’ immortal essence, there was nothing that could stop Fang Yuan from refining rank eight Gu in bulk.

Most of his Immortal Gu were rank eight already.

The time path clone started to have free time, he refined some rank six or seven Immortal Gu as well.

Fang Yuan had a vast number of Immortal Gu recipes. These Immortal Gu recipes mostly came from Lang Ya Sect, while a portion came from his various inheritances. Even without Immortal Gu recipe, with Fang Yuan’s increasingly powerful wisdom path methods and quasi-supreme grandmaster refinement path attainment level, he could also create his own with some casual deductions.

Earlier, the time path clone had already refined a batch of theft path Immortal Gu.

Most of these Immortal Gu were rank six, a few were elevated to rank seven.

Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool could refine rank eight Immortal Gu in bulk, those rank six and seven Immortal Gu were simply too easy in comparison.

The only thing stopping Fang Yuan was the fact that Immortal Gu were unique.

In this world, Gu Immortals had to make immense preparations until they reached their limit to refine Immortal Gu, after all that hardship and difficulty, they might not even succeed. The success rate was just too low! If anyone found out that Fang Yuan was refining Gu like this,they would be in disbelief and shock.

The truth was, Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool was something that surpassed the limits of any Gu Immortal’s imagination!

As for the theft path Immortal Gu that he refined, Fang Yuan used them to reconstruct Thieves Den.

The previous Thieves Den Immortal Gu House had been used too many times, it was the original version made by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, it was no longer suited for Fang Yuan. Thus, Fang Yuan used it as the foundation to modify and make adjustments.

Even so, he was mainly focusing on repairing and replenishing lacking Gu worms, he made few modifications, after all, this Immortal Gu House came from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, be it structure or killer moves, it was close to being perfect. Fang Yuan could modify it because the eras had changed, new Gu worms were developed that suited Thieves Den even more.

Cooking Luck Pot, Thieves Den, and Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, these were the three main Immortal Gu Houses that Fang Yuan focused on.

With Fang Yuan’s current refinement ability, he could definitely reconstruct Dragon Palace and Myriad Year Flying Warship.

But thinking about it, Fang Yuan wisely chose to give up on them.

These two Immortal Gu Houses had been used too many times, everyone knew about their information, they were also peak creations that had little room for modification.

If Fang Yuan rebuilt them and used them in battle, they would definitely be countered.

Ordinary enemies were still fine, but Crazed Demon Cave had Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, there could even be Limitless Demon Venerable!

If Di Zang Sheng were still enslaved under Fang Yuan, there was still a bit of value in Dragon Palace. Unfortunately, Di Zang Sheng was sealed by Heavenly Court, if Fang Yuan attacked Heavenly Court for it, he would waste a lot of effort and time, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would have more opportunities to make her moves.

"Rather than rebuilding Immortal Gu Houses, I should design new ones. And the new Immortal Gu Houses that I conceptualize should revolve around my combat system as well."

Qi Sea Ancestor had already been preparing his own combat system, Fang Yuan was also facing the same difficult question.

"Against venerables, I need to have an outstanding combat system. It is a pity that Duke Long is dead while Demon Immortal Qi Jue is sealed, without them as my grindstones, I will have a lack of experience in creating my combat system."

Fang Yuan had always been considering his own combat systems.

He actually wanted some people with equivalent battle strength to show up so that he could have the inspiration to make a mature combat system.

Currently, Fang Yuan’s most mature combat systems were sword path and time path, he used them during the fate war. Now that he gained rank eight fortitude Gu and ability Gu, he might be able to create a combat system around strength path as well.

Bzzz bzzz bzzz....

Cooking Luck Pot started to vibrate.

"Oh?" Fang Yuan raised his head and observed his own luck as well as those of his clones.

Soon, his expression became quite peculiar.

On the surface of his silver-white pillar of light, many small grey clouds formed.

Fang Yuan observed them carefully, he soon found that these external clouds came from Li Xiao Bai.

The luck of other clones was tranquil, but Li Xiao Bai’s luck was changing intensely.

Fang Yuan deduced internally: "So Li Xiao Bai is undergoing immortal ascension. Looking at how his luck is changing, he is going to have a small problem. But why does this problem involve my main body? And looking at this, it has a huge relationship with me!"

Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Thunder rumbled and lightning flashed, the sky was covered in dark tribulation clouds.

Li Xiao Bai was dressed in white and he floated in the air, a thick cocoon of triple qi layers covered his entire body.

Li Xiao Bai was at the crucial moment of his immortal ascension!

"Xiao Bai, you must persevere." Su Qi Han was very worried, she stared at him with a fixed gaze, at the person whom she loved dearly.

Boom.

A pale green lightning ball shot down from the dark clouds with a trail behind it, approaching Li Xiao Bai.

Su Qi Han shouted in shock, at the crucial moment, Li Xiao Bai used his killer move and created a poem wall that blocked the lightning ball.

"This Li Xiao Bai is actually able to balance the three qi while blocking the tribulation with relative ease!" Far away, a young-looking man stared with eerie eyes, gritting his teeth.

"If you really become an immortal, then I, Du Zhi Xiao, will never be able to make it big. Oh Li Xiao Bai, blame yourself for being too outstanding. Being born in the same era as you is truly the misfortune of everyone who is forced to be a side character."

The young man Du Zhi Xiao said while shooting out a wave of grey smoke.

The grey smoke floated up and entered the tribulation cloud, causing it to become turbulent as the clouds rumbled intensely, shooting out three pale green lightning balls in response.

"What is happening? Someone made a move!" Su Qi Han watched as her eyes turned red: "Xiao Bai is in danger!!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Seeing that the tribulation lightning was about to hit Li Xiao Bai, Su Qi Han flew into the sky.

She charged up relentlessly, wanting to sacrifice herself to block the lightning.

"Sigh, this foolish daughter." A figure suddenly appeared, stopping Su Qi Han.

Su Qi Han saw the person who came and became joyful and surprised, shouting: "Father!"

He was the current dynasty’s Imperial Minister Su, a rank seven Gu Immortal of Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

"Li Xiao Bai is my son-in-law, why would I let him die on his own? Just be patient and watch, don’t create trouble." Imperial Minister Su consoled Su Qi Han while sighing internally.

Truly, daughters would leave the parents to be with their husbands eventually.

Even though Imperial Minister Su appreciated Li Xiao Bai’s aptitude, he was against Li Xiao Bai’s actions.

Originally, Imperial Minister Su wanted Li Xiao Bai to marry into his family and to impart him Su clan’s inheritance, so that Li Xiao Bai could undergo immortal ascension and become an official in the Imperial Court, he would progress smoothly and become a support pillar of Su clan.

But Li Xiao Bai continued to wander outside and gather more knowledge, he did not want to become an official, this action made Imperial Minister Su very unhappy.

Minister Su had made his attempts to recruit him in the past, but Li Xiao Bai’s vision was too broad, why would he care about the small Imperial Court within Profound Literature grotto-heaven? He was Gu Yue Fang Yuan’s clone, he had grand ambitions, this Profound Literature grotto-heaven could not hold him down.

"Even though this lad does not know what’s good for him, he is still a Su clan member, the man that my daughter loves. Even though he is too rash in undergoing tribulation this time and does not know fear, I need to protect him!" Imperial Minister Su sighed deeply, waving his robe, a bright rainbow shot out, blocking the three pale green lightning balls.

"Damn it, damn it! Imperial Minister Su came after all!" Du Zhi Xiao watched with and shuddered in anger, he screamed internally with indignance: "Li Xiao Bai, you are simply too lucky, such a great person actually defended you. I hate it, I hate everything about you!"

Du Zhi Xiao watched as his plans were about to fail, right at this moment, a figure appeared on his left.

This figure appeared from the sky, it was clearly a Gu Immortal.

The masked Gu Immortal charged towards Imperial Minister Su.

Imperial Minister Su had to fight against him, he showed anger on his face: "Come! I have many political enemies, which one of them are you? You have such methods!"

The masked Gu Immortal spoke in a hoarse voice: "Imperial Minister Su, you understand it as well. Your son-in-law is exceptional but he is simply too dazzling. It is better if your Su clan is not so strong! Don’t even think of helping him now."

"Someone is helping me?! Hahaha, great, wonderful!" Du Zhi Xiao was slightly stunned before becoming extremely happy, he started to jump around in joy.

"Father!" Su Qi Han shouted from the ground: "Help Xiao Bai."

Boom.

The tribulation lightning struck again, Li Xiao Bai had to use his killer move and create a poem wall.

Du Zhi Xiao screamed wildly: "Don’t even think of blocking it!"

Grey smoke appeared from his body again, raising the power of the tribulation.

The poem wall was broken by the tribulation lightning, but most of its might was blocked, only the pale green fire was left on Li Xiao Bai’s body, burning him.

"Xiao Bai!" Su Qi Han was deeply shocked, she charged towards him without second thoughts.

Since she could not resolve this problem, she would rather die together with Li Xiao Bai!

But at the crucial moment, Li Xiao Bai’s hand pushed out of the cocoon, he waved at Su Qi Han: "Don’t be rash, in this situation, in this danger, I gained a surge of inspiration, I have a feeling, I have the urge to recite a poem."

"What?" Su Qi Han was stunned.

Imperial Minister Su and the masked Gu Immortal also froze halfway through their fight.

Imperial Minister Su could not help but turn to look, the reason was that in the current dynasty and mortal world, there were many rumors of Li Xiao Bai surviving fatal danger by creating and reciting poems spontaneously.

"Again? I want to see if you have the ability to surpass the might of heaven itself!" Du Zhi Xiao had an extremely grim and dark expression.

In the past, he had an overwhelming advantage with victory in sight. In the end, because of Li Xiao Bai’s poem, he turned the situation around and won.

This experience became the great psychological trauma of Du Zhi Xiao’s life!

Everyone listened attentively as Li Xiao Bai recited:

Under the pine trees I ask of a disciple,

He replies, his master had gone to gather herbs.

Somewhere in the mountain he was for certain,

Within the dense clouds, his figure is hidden.

A chain of black characters flew out of Li Xiao Bai’s mouth, becoming four segments that revolved around him.

A few breaths later, the poem turned into dense smoke that moved turbulently around him.

The pale green fire on Li Xiao Bai’s body got completely absorbed into the smoke.

With a soft sound, the white clouds vanished while the pale green fire was extinguished, no longer able to obstruct Li Xiao Bai.

Du Zhi Xiao was dumbfounded.

Imperial Minister Su praised immediately: "Good poem, good poem. The diction is concise and straightforward, the words used can stir deep emotions, there is profundity in its plainness. To describe complex feelings with simple words, yet the sentiments are sincere and exciting!"

Su Qi Han raised her hands to her chest and looked up at Li Xiao Bai, her eyes shining with adoration: "Xiao Bai is truly a genius! The poem is free of flashy descriptions and feels very natural, but has vivid descriptions and appropriate intensity. Green pines and white clouds. The green and lush pines contain unparalleled vitality, the vast white clouds are thick and dense, remote and elusive, it makes one think of the autumn waters and beautiful women that remain as figures within the fog. It’s so beautiful, this poem and its meaning is really too beautiful!"

The masked Gu Immortal laughed: "I understand, I understand now. Li Xiao Bai, you are a true secluded genius, the white clouds in the poem show your high purity, the pines represent your upright attitude. You want to get away from the mundane mortal realm and go to the world of pines and clouds that is beyond. I was simply worrying for nothing, how can a person like you lower yourself to the Imperial Court? Forget it, forget it, I’m leaving, I’m leaving. With talent like yours, if you die, it is the loss of the entire world in terms of poetry development! I don’t want to be a sinner whose rotten reputation goes down in history."

As the masked Gu Immortal said that, he turned around and left.

Imperial Minister Su, who had a complex expression, was left behind.

"He left? He let him go just like that?!" Du Zhi Xiao spat out a mouthful of blood, he stumbled backwards for a few steps, barely controlling himself and not falling over.

"This happened again, another person was convinced by Li Xiao Bai’s literary talent once again. I am indignant, I am not convinced, this is the treatment that I should receive instead!"

"Ahhhh!" Du Zhi Xiao screamed madly as grey smoke appeared from his body again.

At the same time, Du Zhi Xiao’s appearance turned old, he went from a young man to a middle aged man.

The grey smoke floated to the air and was discovered by Imperial Minister Su: "You are the one causing trouble? Du Zhi Xiao, the former number one scholar in the world, to think you would act so despicably!"

Du Zhi Xiao smiled bitterly: "Number one scholar in the world? I am no longer number one, I will reclaim this title personally!"

Imperial Minister Su called out: "It seems that I am forced to kill you today."

"Wishful thinking!" Another person flew over from the right of Du Zhi Xiao.

This Gu Immortal was also masked.

"Another person is helping me?" Du Zhi Xiao was overjoyed.

The masked Gu Immortal fought against Imperial Minister Su, who was helpless to intervene anymore, watching as the grey smoke flew into the tribulation cloud.

The tribulation’s power rose again, three pale lightning balls shot towards Li

Xiao Bai.

Imperial Minister Su was very angry: "I have many political enemies, which one of them are you?"

The masked Gu Immortal smiled coldly: "So what if you manage to guess it? Your son-in-law cannot block this tribulation cloud, he is dead meat!"

"Xiao Bai!" Su Qi Han shouted again, her voice was filled with agony, her expression was of despair.

But Li Xiao Bai waved his hand again: "In this situation, in this danger, I gained a surge of inspiration, I have a feeling, I have the urge to recite a poem again."

"What?? Again? I don’t believe it, I don’t believe it!" Du Zhi Xiao shook his head in madness.

Imperial Minister Su was still worried: "Stimulation from danger can allow a Gu cultivator to gain a burst of inspiration and create a work that is divine and change his situation for the better. This has happened many times in the history of the current dynasty, but such situations often use up the Gu cultivator’s potential, it cannot be forced. Li Xiao Bai is in danger!"

"Xiao Bai, I believe you, quickly recite it." Su Qi Han was filled with confidence.

Li Xiao Bai coughed once, sighing internally.

He did not want to keep a high profile, but there was no helping it.

His methods could not resist the tribulation alone, he had to rely on Profound Literature grotto-heaven’s killer move, assisting literary talents.

This killer move was used by Profound Literature grotto-heaven’s original owner, as long as the grotto-heaven existed, it would be effective.

As long as a purebred human created or recited outstanding poems or writings of any kind, they would obtain recognition and reward from this grotto-heaven.

Earlier, because of Li Xiao Bai’s poem, he was rewarded and the pale green fire was extinguished.

Thus, Li Xiao Bai recited again:

Over a thousand hills with no birds in flight,

The myriad paths had not one footprint in sight.

A straw hat man sits in a small lone boat,

Fishing alone in the cold frozen moat.

Once the poem was recited, the tribulation lightning dispersed, the effect was simply too good!

"Good poem, this is a divine poem! Fishing alone in the frozen water, it is eerily quiet and chilly cold. Comparing a thousand hills and a lone fishing boat, the absolute contrast produces absolutely breathtaking effects. In this backdrop, the intense yin produces yang instead, a reverse reaction occurs and the fishing action becomes full of vitality and vivid movement, everything becomes crystal clear, showing the poet’s clean inner heart, surpassing the mortal realm and having pride that is transcendent to all. I get it now, i really understand now. Li Xiao Bai, you never wanted to be an official from the start! You have such incredible talent, I really cannot bring myself to kill you, I am leaving!" The second masked Gu Immortal sighed with deep emotions, he praised intensely before leaving.

Cough!

Du Zhi Xiao coughed out another mouthful of blood, falling to the ground.

"This again, this again! I know his poems are good, really good, but that makes my heart hurt even more. I am really sick of such praises, it is disgustingly sickening, I want you to die, I want you to die!"

Du Zhi Xiao summoned the grey smoke again, turning from a middle aged man to an old man.

Li Xiao Bai was faced with a crisis again.

"Is there really a point in this?" Li Xiao Bai was really troubled: "I need to recite another poem now?"

He did not want to do that, it was too flashy and outstanding.

It would cause suspicions!

Thus, before he became renowned in the world, Li Xiao Bai controlled himself and only recited two poems. During the tribulation now, he recited another two new poems, it seemed that he was about to recite yet another ’new’ poem now.

"I really can’t do anything about you, fine, I’ll recite it!" Li Xiao Bai looked at Du Zhi Xiao who was lying on the ground, he felt very helpless about this situation too.

Li Xiao Bai recited loudly:

The sun beyond the mountain glows,

The Yellow River seawards flows.

One can enjoy a grander sight,

By climbing to a greater height.

Li Xiao Bai’s crisis was alleviated, the tribulation clouds dispersed, his three qi exploded into a new immortal aperture, he became an information path Gu Immortal!

"Oh heaven, since I was born, why did you create Li Xiao Bai?" Du Zhi Xiao shouted loudly in incomparable grief, he had a look of sadness, anger, helplessness, and hatred as he took his last breath.

"From today onwards, you are Poet Immortal Li Xiao Bai!" Imperial Minister Su flew to Li Xiao Bai with a complex expression.

He sighed: "The younger generations will surpass us in time, I had underestimated you all along. I wanted to make you an official of the Imperial Court, but your aspirations are too grand, compared to you, I am a mere commoner. It is truly laughable, from today onwards, go ahead and roam the world as you please, just don’t let down my daughter."

"What?" Li Xiao Bai opened his mouth, he wanted to say that being an official was a good idea, he could have resources and a larger network. But his poem had already been recited, his ’aspirations’ were shown.

Thus, Li Xiao Bai had to say: "Father-in-law, don’t worry, I will protect Han Er."

Li Xiao Bai and Imperial Minister Su descended to the ground.

"My husband, you are too amazing! Your talent is vast as the sea, it cannot be estimated through logic anymore." Su Qi Han sprinted towards Li Xiao Bai.

Imperial Minister Su heard his daughter’s words and felt a little uncomfortable internally, but he could not refute these words, after all, he had just witnessed the situation earlier with his own eyes.

Li Xiao Bai rubbed his nose, thinking that he had created too big of a commotion this time, he had to go along with the flow: "To speak the truth, ever since I was born, I had always felt that I was different from the rest..."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2121 Heaven“s Envy Immortal Gu

From Du Zhi Xiao’s corpse, an Immortal Gu floated up and appeared on his chest.

This Immortal Gu seemed like it was made of crystals, it looked like a flea and was as large as a fist, curling up into a ball and staying completely silent.

"This Immortal Gu allowed a mortal like Du Zhi Xiao to exert influence on the tribulation?" Li Xiao Bai cleaned the battlefield of loot, he naturally found this Immortal Gu.

To activate Immortal Gu, immortal essence was normally needed. But there were exceptions that did not face such a limitation.

"It seems that this peculiar Immortal Gu can be activated by a mortal." Su Qi Han said.

"This Immortal Gu is very uncommon, let me check." Imperial Minister Su looked at this Immortal Gu with a peculiar expression and used his information path methods.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven was an information path grotto-heaven, it focused on collecting and accumulating information. Even though Profound Literature grotto-heaven was physically secluded, it had not dared to isolate itself from the world, it still maintained contact with the outside world.

And Imperial Minister Su was an important person of the Imperial Court, with his authority, he could gain access to much of the Imperial Court’s secret information.

Soon, he got the answer: "This is heaven’s envy Immortal Gu!"

"Heaven’s envy Immortal Gu?" This was the first time that Su Qi Han had heard of this.

Imperial Minister Su explained: "Heaven’s envy Immortal Gu is a heaven path

Immortal Gu, there are other similar Gu like heaven’s rage Immortal Gu, heaven’s sorrow Immortal Gu, and others. This type of heaven path Immortal Gu cannot be activated even by a rank nine venerable."

"Father, you must be wrong? We saw Du Zhi Xiao activate this Immortal Gu with our own eyes to create trouble for husband." Su Qi Han retorted.

Imperial Minister Su shook his head: "I’m not done yet. Immortal Gu like Heaven’s Envy is quite special, it can resonate with emotions of envy and jealousy to activate itself. But the price to use it is huge, often requiring lifespan. Thus, Du Zhi Xiao turned from a young man to a middle aged man, before becoming an old man."

Su Qi Han was dazed, she could not help but think of <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, saying: "I remember that in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, there are similar records. Don’t tell me strength Gu and wisdom Gu are also heaven path Gu worms?"

Imperial Minister Su smiled faintly: "I am not sure about that either, even though <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> states that, heaven path Gu worms cannot be used by any Gu cultivator, the most famous example is fate Gu. You’ve both seen the fight during the fate war yourselves."

Su Qi Han pouted unhappily, thinking: "I thought that this Immortal Gu would be useful to Xiao Bai, but to think that it is a heaven path Immortal Gu. This Immortal Gu requires envy and jealousy to activate on its own, but my husband is someone with great personality, a noble and special individual in this world, how can he have such emotions? And the price of using it is too high as well, the lifespan needed is too much!"

Imperial Minister Su saw his daughter’s disappointment, he smiled and said: "Xiao Bai, this heaven’s envy Immortal Gu is yours. As for how to deal with it, that is your matter. If you offer this Gu to the Imperial Court, according to the rules, you will be compensated."

Su Qi Han’s eyes shined with bright light.

Li Xiao Bai pondered: "Can I exchange for an information path Immortal Gu?"

Imperial Minister Su had a difficult expression: "That..."

Su Qi Han coyly grabbed Imperial Minister Su’s sleeves: "Father! Our heaven’s envy Immortal Gu is rank seven, we will take the loss and just exchange for some rank six information path Immortal Gu."

Imperial Minister Su flicked his daughter’s forehead as he said jokingly: "You silly lass, you’re looking down on the Imperial Court. Do you think Gu Immortals are so stupid? Even if a heaven path Immortal Gu is rank eight, it has little actual value, it is far inferior to a rank six information path Immortal Gu."

For her lover’s sake, Su Qi Han did not give up: "Father! You are the current Imperial Minister."

Imperial Minister Su sighed, what else could he do, this was his beloved daughter.

"I’ll think of a way and find a chance for Xiao Bai." He answered.

Su Qi Han smiled brightly, pressuring: "Father, I am sure that you can succeed!"

Imperial Minister Su smiled bitterly: "Little girl, I’ve never seen you so confident in your father before."

Li Xiao Bai was calm all along, he thought: "Father-in-law has many political rivals and enemies, if I ask him to get an Immortal Gu exchanged from the Imperial Court, he would face many obstructions, the chance of success is low. Even if he succeeds, he will lose a lot of his political power and bargaining chips, that is not a wise act."

Thinking of this, Li Xiao Bai said: "Father-in-law, Han Er, no hurry in giving it up. I’ll try to put this heaven’s envy Immortal Gu up in treasure yellow heaven and see if anyone wants to buy it."

Imperial Minister Su nodded: "That is a good idea, but Xiao Bai, don’t be too optimistic about it Even though heaven path Immortal Gu are rare, nobody can directly use them, this is a well known fact. Who would use their own useful Immortal Gu to exchange for an unusable heaven path Immortal Gu?"

Su Qi Han sighed: "That is true."

Li Xiao Bai nodded: "I’ll just give it a try."

Imperial Minister Su advised: "Don’t dwell on it, putting an Immortal Gu up on treasure yellow heaven requires a continuous fee."

Li Xiao Bai’s expression suddenly changed: "Someone bought heaven’s envy Immortal Gu!"

"What?" Imperial Minister Su was stunned.

Su Qi Han called out in joy: "What price did they pay?"

Li Xiao Bai said with uncontainable excitement: "I... I already made the transaction. They are offering me rank seven poem wall Immortal Gu, this is an offer I cannot reject."

Li Xiao Bai’s immortal ascension did not have excess heaven and earth qi to refine his vital Gu into an Immortal Gu. A large part of the reason was due to heaven’s envy Immortal Gu.

Li Xiao Bai did not have the ten extreme physiques, he only obtained a high grade blessed land.

But in this transaction, Li Xiao Bai obtained his first Immortal Gu, and it was rank seven at that.

Imperial Minister Su looked at the poem wall Immortal Gu in Li Xiao Bai’s hands, he stared in disbelief: "Someone actually bought this heaven path Immortal Gu? They even offered an information path Immortal Gu of the same rank? Which fool is this?"

The ’fool’ that Imperial Minister Su spoke of was none other than Gu Yue Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had always been paying attention to Li Xiao Bai’s situation. Even though Du Zhi Xiao and heaven’s envy Immortal Gu were out of his expectations, Fang Yuan had also not thought of interfering with Li Xiao Bai’s development, but having an Immortal Gu was simply too important to Li Xiao Bai.

He had to help in this aspect.

Treasure yellow heaven was a safe place, nobody would be able to investigate the identities of the people undergoing this transaction.

With Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, Fang Yuan had a high success rate in refining rank eight Immortal Gu, not to mention rank six or seven.

The time path clone directly refined poem wall Immortal Gu and raised it to rank seven.

He wanted to create some opportunity to hand this Immortal Gu to Li Xiao Bai, but to think that he would appear in treasure yellow heaven and sell heaven’s envy Immortal Gu.

With such a great opportunity, Fang Yuan immediately grabbed onto it.

The transaction ended quickly.

Li Xiao Bai obtained rank seven poem wall Immortal Gu, even though he was only rank six and had insufficient cultivation level, this rank seven poem wall Immortal Gu was good enough to be his core Immortal Gu.

On the way back, Imperial Minister Su sighed to himself internally: This Li Xiao Bai’s luck was simply unrivaled!

"So this heaven’s envy Immortal Gu is the thing that caused my luck resonance." Fang Yuan obtained heaven’s envy Immortal Gu and found that Cooking Luck Pot was vibrating slightly.

After inspecting it, he realized the truth of the matter.

Looking at his silver light pillar again, the clouds on the surface had gathered into one, giving one a feeling of congruity. The clouds revolved around the pillar as they moved slowly, not only were they clearly defending it, they were rising up too, clashing with the clouds that were at the peak of the pillar of light.

Fang Yuan was deeply shaken: "It seems that this heaven’s envy Immortal Gu is the key to dealing with those venerables?"

Fang Yuan started to use wisdom path methods for deductions, sharp light flickered in his eyes for a long time, afterwards, he started to instill immortal essence into heaven’s envy Immortal Gu!

Heaven’s envy Immortal Gu shook intensely, resisting him stubbornly. But it could not stop Fang Yuan’s powerful invasion, it started to falter.

A moment later, heaven’s envy Immortal Gu absorbed a portion of the immortal essence and spat out a lump of grey smoke.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with immense brilliance!

"I actually refined a part of heaven’s envy Immortal Gu! Furthermore, I can actually activate a heaven path Immortal Gu!! Is it because of my unrestrained heavenly marks?"

Fang Yuan’s unrestrained heavenly marks had already passed ten thousand in number. Every grotto-heaven that he annexed would provide the sovereign immortal aperture with a number of heaven path dao marks, which would be refined by Fang Yuan into unrestrained heavenly marks.

Earlier, he used his rank eight immortal essence to forcefully refine heaven’s envy Immortal Gu, he actually succeeded partially.

Afterwards, he successfully activated heaven’s envy Immortal Gu!

Fang Yuan did not lose any lifespan.

Fang Yuan calmed down and inspected it carefully, he found out new information: "Even though I can activate heaven’s envy Immortal Gu, I cannot fully utilize it. I have only partially refined heaven’s envy Immortal Gu, I’ve only barely managed to gain its recognition. Thus, I cannot exert its full strength yet."

Fang Yuan’s thoughts clashed rapidly: "This should be the result of having unrestrained heavenly marks, I am different from everyone else. If I continue gaining unrestrained heavenly marks, will I be able to further refine heaven’s envy Immortal Gu, or even completely refine it?"

"Wait!"

Suddenly, a flash of inspiration appeared in Fang Yuan’s mind, it was like lightning that pierced the darkness, creating a huge commotion in his mind!

At this moment, Fang Yuan’s lips became a bit dry: "Heaven’s envy Immortal Gu is a heaven path Immortal Gu, fate Gu is too. Since I can refine heaven’s envy Immortal Gu, does that mean that I can refine fate Gu and control fate as well?"

Southern Border.

Tribulations were raging, while Wu clan’s Gu Immortal Wu Zhen controlled the situation.

He focused his attention on that qi cocoon.

Suddenly, a person shouted from within the cocoon, breaking out of it and creating an immortal aperture, becoming an immortal.

It was Wu Ji!

In this immortal ascension, not only did she obtain a super grade blessed land, her vital Gu even became an Immortal Gu.

Wu Zhen could feel Wu Ji’s aura, he sighed: "Wu Ji, you chose strength path after all."

Wu Ji had no regret, she laughed: "This is precisely the path I seek!"

And on Shang Liang Mountain.

Shang Yan Fei gathered his children in the same hall.

He had died on Yi Tian Mountain, but because of fate Gu’s destruction, he was revived by Shang clan’s Gu Immortals.

Right now, he sat on the main seat with blood red light surrounding his body.

"Congratulations to father for succeeding in the immortal ascension, you have surpassed the mortal realm and become a blood path immortal!" Shang Qiu Niu was the eldest son, he was the first to speak.

After that, the rest of his children also congratulated him, including Shang Xin Ci.

Shang Yan Fei waved his hand: "Blood path has a poor reputation, keep the fact that I am now a blood path Gu Immortal as a secret. I gathered you here today because I want to distribute the family assets now, before I enter closed cultivation. The great era has arrived, I want you all to become immortals too and lead the new tides of this great era!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In the hall, Shang Yan Fei sat on the main seat.

He wore a black robe, his hair was red like blood, his face was that of a handsome young man. His children were all seated in the hall, gathered together.

Under their gazes, Shang Yan Fei took out a stack of beast skins.

Each beast skin had markings on it, vividly drawing a certain dragon-like beast. At the corner of the skin, there was text written in ink, giving off the dense aura of primitive civilization.

"These are the nine children dragon drawings[1], I had obtained them from a Gu Immortal’s corpse in my younger days by chance. It is a pity this immortal opportunity is not suitable for me, even after asking Shang clan’s supreme elders, I could not unravel it. Now, I will pass these nine children dragon drawings to all of you, I hope you can unravel the mystery and gain your own immortal opportunities."

Saying this, Shang Yan Fei diverted his gaze from the beast skin, looking at Shang Qiu Niu.

"Qiu Niu, come here." He called.

"Father." Shang Qiu Niu left his seat, walking towards Shang Yan Fei.

Shang Yan Fei passed him the first beast skin: "This is the Qiu Niu drawing, I gave you this name because of it as well. You are the eldest son, you have a dependable nature, I am very assured. This revival is the greatest opportunity in your life, don’t let me down."

Shang Qiu Niu stretched out both hands and received the beast skin: "Father, I will do my best and not disappoint you."

"Ya Zi, come over as well." Shang Yan Fei waved his hand and called his son: "From today onwards, broaden your horizon and don’t dwell on petty matters, it will benefit you."

"Yes, I will remember father’s teachings." Shang Ya Zi took the beast skin and returned to his seat.

Shang Yan Fei called for his children one by one, distributing the nine children dragon drawings while saying words of encouragement.

Shang Xin Ci remained seated, she was not called.

She observed carefully, realizing that the nine children dragon drawings had varying beast drawings. For example, the Chao Feng drawing had a divine beast with a noble aura that could not be sullied. The Pu Lao drawing resembled a coiling dragon. The Bi Xi drawing looked like a giant tortoise that could carry mountains and rivers. There was also the Bi An drawing, it was like a fierce tiger with ferocious aura.

There were only nine beast skin drawings, they were soon distributed, but he had more than nine children.

Shang Yan Fei called for Shang Tuo Hai as well: "You have been managing the merchant caravan well. I will give you this entire caravan then. Other than that, I have a water path inheritance, it is the inheritance of a water path immortal. Even though it is largely incomplete, the contents are still worth a lot, I hope you can still continue to work hard in the future."

After that, he called for Shang Yi Fan: "This is a rank five Gu Master inheritance but it has clues to an immortal inheritance. It will be up to you in the future if you try to find it."

And finally, Shang Yan Fei called for Shang Xin Ci.

"Father." Shang Xin Ci walked towards her father.

Shang Yan Fei sighed: "I've already distributed all my wealth, only this house is left. Oh Xin Ci, among my children, you are the one who most surpassed my expectations. If you do not mind it, take this house."

Once he said that, the hall went into a commotion.

His other children looked at Shang Yan Fei and Shang Xin Ci, they wanted to speak but found that they could not.

It was clearly Shang Yan Fei's doing.

Under everyone's gazes, Shang Xin Ci replied with a calm expression: "I will thank father for this gift."

After the gathering ended, most of Shang Yan Fei's children came together secretly.

"Sigh, father actually gave the house to Shang Xin Ci."

"He did not even let us voice our objections!"

"It seems that father really wants Shang Xin Ci to be the clan leader. What should we do?"

"This is too unfair! What did we all get? Some absurd things or broken inheritances. As for that Shang Xin Ci? She is going to become the clan leader, she will definitely be nurtured by the clan and become a Gu Immortal seed!"

Initially, Shang Yan Fei was still a young master, he was suppressed by an alliance of other young masters. He took a step back and abandoned the position of young master of his own accord, becoming an ordinary clansman. During that fallen period, he stayed in this house.

Afterwards, when he became the clan leader, he maintained this place as a reminder to himself and later generations. The clan banquets were always held here as a result.

Afterwards, when Fang Yuan and Bai Ning Bing left Qing Mao Mountain to roam the world, when they escorted Shang Xin Ci to Shang Liang Mountain, they were also attended to in this house.

Shang Yan Fei gave this house to Shang Xin Ci, there was deep meaning behind it, it meant that he was giving the position of clan leader to her.

Even though Shang Xin Ci was already the clan leader for some time, according to rules and customs, she had to be appointed by the previous clan leader, that would leave no flaws for others to criticize.

"Father is too biased!"

"That’s right, he loves Shang Xin Ci the most, what can we do?"

"Everyone, are we going to watch this happen? She is merely an illegitimate daughter!"

"Hmph, after I died, all of you are so useless, you actually let her become the clan leader."

"I did not decide the clan leader, there were instructions from the higher-ups, what can we do?"

"In my opinion, our Shang clan’s supreme elders are too muddle-headed."

"Shang Xin Ci and Fang Yuan have a mysterious relationship, I’m afraid the higher-ups are thinking about that too."

Everyone’s discussions came to a halt.

After a moment of silence, Shang Yi Fan said: "Fang Yuan lived on Shang Liang Mountain for some time in the past, but what sort of person is he? He is someone who can influence the entire world, why would he care about ants like us? Shang clan’s supreme elders are overthinking it, can’t they see that even after so many years, Fang Yuan has not helped Shang Xin Ci even once?"

These words injected life into the stale discussion.

The remaining children brightened up again.

They agreed in unison that Fang Yuan had already forgotten about Shang Liang Mountain and everything that happened here, they were simply unwilling to give up on the position of clan leader.

Shang Yi Fan continued to speak: "Shang Xin Ci has a huge force, but it is not impossible to fight her. We need to work together to win, we can go ahead and split her forces."

Shang Ya Zi snickered: "We need to use a multi-pronged approach so Shang Xin Ci cannot deal with everything at once. I met with an expert some time ago, if we can get his help, Shang Xin Ci will definitely face a lot of problems, her reputation will fall."

Days later.

The study room’s atmosphere was tense.

Shang Xin Ci frowned as she listened to Shang Bu Li’s report, sighing deeply: "To think that the situation is so severe, in just a few days, those budding issues have already swept through the entire market of Shang Liang Mountain."

A few days ago, counterfeit goods started to appear in Shang Liang Mountain’s Gu worm market. These fake Gu were identical to the real ones, even if they were used, the effects would be the same. But after some time, they would expose themselves and self-detonate, the buyer would suffer huge losses.

These fake Gu appeared in Shang clan’s market, it greatly affected their prestige.

The situation was very severe, Xiao Die stood beside Shang Xin Ci as she said to Shang Bu Li in displeasure: "Lord Shang Bu Li, you are in charge of the market. There has to be some time that passed for the situation to develop like this, why did you hold back the information and not report it?"

Shang Bu Li snorted coldly in anger: "I was too useless, I disappointed you, clan leader. The situation is too severe now, I cannot make any amendments, I will resign now, please don’t stop me."

"You!" Xiao Die was dazed from shock, she said: "Who are you trying to scare?"

Shang Bu Li looked at Xiao Die coldly: "You are just a servant, I am magnanimous and will not blame you. But clan leader, I am resigning now, please approve of it."

Shang Xin Ci looked at Shang Bu Li deeply before replying calmly: "In that case, I will approve your resignation."

"Goodbye!" Shang Bu Li chuckled as he left.

"Is he really leaving things as it is?" Xiao Die was stunned.

"Clan leader, Lord Shang Tuo Hai seeks your audience." At this time, Xiao Lan reported.

Shang Xin Ci’s gaze flickered for a moment before answering: "Let him in."

Shang Tuo Hai came into the study room and saw Shang Xin Ci’s expression, nodding: "So you realized it."

Shang Xin Ci asked: "Because of the clan leader position?"

Shang Tuo Hai: "Precisely. Shang Bu Li had control of the slave market and had great business, but after your rise, because you did not like such cruelty, you banned the slave trade, causing Shang Bu Li to manage Shang Liang Mountain’s Gu worm market instead. He has already been convinced by them, he is involved in this fake Gu conspiracy."

"This old fiend!" Xiao Die gritted her teeth in anger.

Shang Tuo Hai added: "This is not everything, Shang Bu Li is just the first to defect, more will appear soon."

Shang Xin Ci nodded: "And what do you want from this?"

Shang Tuo Hai replied plainly: "We are both illegitimate children. Even if you fall, I will not become the clan leader. I will rarely return in the future, I will lead the merchant caravan and explore the world, I want to become immortal too! But I cannot rely on the clan, if you become immortal in the future, I hope my act of kindness now will be repaid."

"I’ll remember this."

"Goodbye."

Seeing Shang Tuo Hai leave, Shang Xin Ci had a complex emotion.

After leading Shang clan for so many years, Shang Xin Ci had developed many abilities and broadened her horizons. From her perspective, among Shang Yan Fei’s children, Shang Tuo Hai definitely was top three in terms of ability, he was a prime choice in both talent and personality. It was a pity that he lacked opportunities, he did not receive the favor of greater existences.

"Fate has been destroyed, the great era is here. Countless people are competing and fighting for that chance of immortality." Shang Xin Ci sighed to herself internally.

Afterwards, like what Shang Tuo Hai reminded her about.

Zhu Ba and Wan Qian Shan resigned of their own accord. Xiao Yan got the news that some fire path Gu materials he needed were far away, so he went to search for them.

Xiong Tu, Xiong Huo, and Xiong Feng also received some information on how to save their ancestor Xiong Yan Po.

Zhou Quan and Wei De Xin also became ’coincidentally ill’, they were bedridden.

At once, Shang Xin Ci was without her capable subordinates, she was alone without external help.

Those Gu Masters who bought fake Gu gathered together and started to create problems.

Shang Xin Ci had to bring Xiao Lan and Xiao Die to the scene and take control of the situation.

"These Gu worms are all fake, is Shang clan selling fake goods now?"

"Since Shang clan’s leader is here, tell us, what will you do!"

"I spent most of my assets to buy a rank four Gu worm from you, but it turned out to be a fake Gu!"

"Shang clan’s Auspicious Festival is held annually but there are actually fake goods sold to harm us buyers, this is simply unacceptable!"

"And more despicably, even though there are sales going on, the prices were actually adjusted upwards, it ended up being the same price as the market rate."

Facing all of the intense rage, Shang Xin Ci was still calm as ice: "Shang clan will pay all of you back twice the amount of your losses."

Just one sentence made the surroundings silent.

Shang Ya Zi and the rest who were watching from the dark became anxious, they started to give instructions.

From among the people, someone suddenly shouted: "Compensation, we demand compensation on the spot!"

"That’s right, you give us open promises but use dirty tricks in the dark, this is all Shang clan’s ploy!"

"Shang clan is selling fake goods, can we really trust your words?’

"I don’t care, your shop cheated us of our hard earned money, I want to destroy it!"

The lurking experts within the crowd took action and attacked Shang Xin Ci.

Shang Xin Ci stretched out her hand, using a killer move to protect the shop behind her, she managed to block all of the attacks.

Xiao Lan and Xiao Die were ready to strike but Shang Xin Ci stopped them.

Light flickered in her eyes as her aura erupted, she activated a battlefield killer move.

The killer move pushed outwards, trapping all of the people who caused trouble, the noisy street instantly became silent all of a sudden.

"So powerful!"

"To think that Shang Xin Ci has such hidden strength!"

Shang Ya Zi and the rest watched with intense shock.

At that moment, they felt like they were looking at their father Shang Yan Fei, she had the air of a peak rank five expert!

[1] Search up nine sons of the dragon for their in-depth descriptions. The names of some Shang children are also from there.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2123 Xin Ci“s Immortal Opportunity

Shang Xin Ci had a benevolent nature but she showed an extremely strong stance now, suppressing the entire situation at the moment.

This was the Gu cultivation world — experts reigned supreme.

Even though Shang Xin Ci trapped everyone, she did not punish them, instead, she upheld her promise of paying them twice the amount back.

Even though she understood that people were intentionally causing this problem, she did not do anything to these people, she let them off.

"Shang Xin Ci actually released them!"

"Hmph, the excessive benevolence of a woman."

"To think that she did not make a move, if it were me, I would rather kill them all than let any possible culprit escape."

Shang Ya Zi and the rest discussed in secret, they expressed their disdain to conceal the unease in their hearts.

Shang Qiu Niu had a complex expression: "Maybe this is the difference between Shang Xin Ci and us. This might be the reason why father favors her to become clan leader."

"Shang Qiu Niu, what are you saying?" Someone immediately rebuked.

Shang Qiu Niu said plainly: "You saw it yourselves, Shang Xin Ci had strength that surpasses all of us. When she took the role of clan leader, she also stabilized Shang clan’s position, all of our businesses made great profits. Even though she stopped the slave trade, our profits only fell for some time before rising again, far higher than before."

"We need to admit that Shang Xin Ci’s capability surpasses us, right now, her reputation of benevolence had already spread widely. Father noticed this and gave the position of clan leader to her, he is not being biased or showing favoritism."

Shang Qiu Niu revived from death, the experience was his precious wealth, allowing him to think more rationally and calmly when situations occurred.

But immediately after, Shang Yi Fan smiled coldly: "Brother Qiu Niu, even if that is true, so what? Whoever becomes clan leader will be nurtured by the clan into an immortal. This is an immortal opportunity! So what if Shang Xin Ci surpasses us in ability and character, so what? Are you not going to vie for this opportunity?"

Shang Qiu Niu was silent for a while before nodding as he said solemnly: "I have to try!"

After Shang Xin Ci released the troublemakers, she went to pacify the shop owners.

An elderly man walked to Shang Xin Ci shakily as he expressed his gratitude: "If not for clan leader’s appearance, I would have gotten into trouble. Sigh, it was because my vision was blurred and I lost my cool to greed, I believed in rumors and bought some cheap goods. To think that they were all fake."

Xiao Die pouted: "You’re an old man, you’ve been in Shang Liang Mountain for so many years, this shop has been managed by you for so long, how can you be so shortsighted?"

The old man looked ashamed.

"Xiao Die." Shang Xin Ci expressed her understanding: "The Gu cultivators living here are also not having it easy. If it were me, I would want to earn more for my business, this is a logical thing."

Xiao Die snorted as she looked at the old man: "Old fellow, you were lucky to have met my young miss. Make sure you use your vision in the future, don’t go after cheap gains, do you understand?"

"Yes, yes, I understand." The old man quickly replied.

"Young miss, let’s go, seeing these people makes me angry. If they were not after cheap gains, why would the market be flooded with fake goods?" Xiao Die turned around and looked at Shang Xin Ci.

But the elderly man spoke: "Clan leader, please wait."

Shang Xin Ci asked: "Is there anything else?"

The old man spoke in trepidation: "I’m ashamed, I’m truly ashamed! I bought such a large batch of fake goods, they cannot be sold anymore. But if I destroy them, it would be a huge loss! Clan leader, didn’t you say you will compensate us?"

"What?!" Xiao Die heard these words and exploded, she pointed at the old man’s nose and shouted: "Old fellow, do you know no shame? You made a mistake while our clan leader defended you, yet you know no gratitude and even want to extort us?"

Xiao Lan was also disgusted by such behavior, she added: "You are already so old but your actions are truly despicable. Must all your losses be shouldered by our Shang clan? Even throughout this entire world, is there such a logic?"

But Shang Xin Ci stopped her two servants, she looked at the old man and the sellers behind him.

Shang Xin Ci’s tone was still calm as before: "Old sir, thanks for reminding me. As the Shang clan leader, I will not go back on my promise. Since I agreed to double the compensation, I will do my best to follow it. You can get twice the compensation for the fake goods you imported."

"Thank you, clan leader!"

"Clan leader, you are the kindest clan leader I’ve ever seen!"

"Clan elder, you saved my entire family, without this compensation, we would be forced out of our homes."

All of the Gu Masters spoke, some teared up, some knelt on the ground, kowtowing to Shang Xin Ci.

"Let’s go." Shang Xin Ci brought her two servants away, arriving at the entrance of the street.

The two servants were very indignant.

Xiao Die grumbled: "Young miss, you are just too kind. Not only did you release those troublemakers, you even compensated them twice the amount."

Xiao Lan also said: "Young miss, I know you are kind hearted and pity those people. But be it buyers or sellers, there are bad people among them. By compensating them all together, we have fallen into the culprit’s schemes, they want to expend our primeval stone reserves."

Shang Xin Ci nodded: "Those are just primeval stones, we can still earn them back in the future even if we lose them now. But if Shang clan’s reputation is ruined, then we will need to spend a lot of effort and time to rebuild it."

"If I mind these primeval stones instead, I would fall into the culprit’s trap. The loss of primeval stones is not important, Shang clan’s reputation is a bigger problem, I will not be a proper clan leader after all. They can use this excuse to take me down from the position of clan leader."

Shang Xin Ci spoke warmly and calmly, she showed no anxiety, giving people a feeling of peace.

The two servants understood after this.

Xiao Lan said in admiration: "So that is it. Young miss, you are really amazing, you see things so clearly!"

Xiao Die pouted: "Young miss is right, but this matter is too infuriating. That old man might not be a bad person but he is taking advantage of us to earn a profit now! Why are they not going after the culprit who caused them a loss, instead trying to bully us good people. If Lord Fang Yuan were here, he would beat these people till they pissed themselves, they would not dare to get up from the ground, who would dare to bully us!"

Xiao Lan stared at Xiao Die, stomping on Xiao Die’s foot.

Xiao Die jumped from the pain, sticking out her tongue and apologizing to Shang Xin Ci: "Sorry young miss, I spoke out of line."

Ever since Fang Yuan’s and Lu Wei Yin’s battle when he was hit by the killer move, three lifetime dreams reform a chosen one, after Shang Xin Ci returned to Shang Liang Mountain, each time she heard of Fang Yuan’s name, she would fall into agony and sadness uncontrollably.

Thus, the name Fang Yuan started to become taboo around Shang Xin Ci.

On the way back, the three of them were silent.

After reaching the end of the street, Xiao Lan said: "Young miss, Lord Zhou Quan and Wei De Xin have been sick for a long time, let’s go visit them and see how they are feeling."

Xiao Die gave Xiao Lan a thumbs up secretly.

They tried to divert Shang Xin Ci’s attention to other matters instead.

Shang Xin Ci nodded: "You are right, let’s go visit them."

The three of them arrived at Wei De Xin’s accommodation.

"Stop right there, who are you, why are you acting so suspiciously!" Xiao Die found someone suspicious at the entrance.

The suspicious Gu cultivator looked at Shang Xin Ci and his expression turned grim, but he was relaxed internally, knowing that Shang Xin Ci was a benevolent person, he answered: "I am Wu clan’s Gu Master, I am here to send a letter to Lady Wei De Xin."

Xiao Die’s expression changed as she looked at Shang Xin Ci: "Young miss, oh no. Lady Wei De Xin must have gone to Wu clan after seeing this terrible situation."

Shang Xin Ci knocked on Xiao Die’s head: "Don’t spout nonsense, Sister Wei is not such a person. She is the sister of Wei Shen Jing, it is not strange that they exchange letters. Come inside with me."

Shang Xin Ci let that Wu clan Gu Master leave, she entered the house, seeing Wei De Xin who was bedridden.

Wei De Xin had obviously found out about the conflict that occurred earlier, she handed an information path Gu worm to Shang Xin Ci the moment they entered, but Shang Xin Ci smiled and did not receive it.

Wei De Xin explained: "Those people have outstanding methods, they schemed against Zhou Quan and I, causing us to be bedridden. But I will not falter so easily, I sent a letter to my brother and asked for his help."

Xiao Lan was overjoyed: "That’s great. Lord Wei Shen Jing is known as the Counterfeit Master, his ability at creating counterfeit goods is well known in Southern Border. If he can help us, we will definitely be able to solve this predicament of the fake goods!"

Shang Xin Ci smiled: "Not long ago, in Sun Moon Sinkhole, I met with Wei Shen Jing and we chased after the demon Kong Ri Tian."

Wei De Xin sighed: "Back then, Wei clan was plotted against by Shang clan, who was the mastermind. My brother was forced to roam outside, he had to join Wu clan to preserve his life. He bore hatred towards Shang clan and did not understand why I chose to join you. But he sent this letter to praise your character and morals, he sighed in admiration and said he understood my action."

"It is a pity he is busy now. Wu clan’s clan leader Wu Ji has succeeded in her immortal ascension, she nominated my brother recently. Wu clan is focusing on promoting external elders, they want to make outsiders their Wu clan external Gu Immortals. My brother is facing a test now, he can only explain the situation to us but he cannot come personally."

"Ah!" Xiao Lan and Xiao Die looked at each other in deep disappointment.

Shang Xin Ci continued to smile: "It is truly a great fortuitous encounter for Brother Wei, if he loses this chance, he will regret it for life. Even though I am facing a problem, I cannot hold back Brother Wei from his great opportunity, after all, any competition to become immortal is filled with danger and difficulty. If Brother Wei needs help, we must lend him a hand."

"Clan leader, you are truly a great person, it is a pity I cannot help you." Wei De Xin sighed.

"Sister Wei, I still need to thank you. But you are currently injured, don’t trouble yourself with this. Go ahead and recuperate, I have already gotten a solution for this problem." Shang Xin Ci’s smile expanded.

Wei De Xin looked at her while sighing internally in her heart.

She had a deep understanding of Shang Xin Ci, she knew that this expression meant that Shang Xin Ci had no countermeasure or solution currently.

This situation was quite problematic, Shang Qiu Niu and the rest had cooperated. If this problem was not properly resolved, it might really affect Shang Xin Ci’s position as clan leader.

Shang Yan Fei passed the clan leader position to Shang Xin Ci but there were rules in the righteous path. If Shang Xin Ci was chased out of this position, Shang Yan Fei, who had already exercised the role transfer, could not intervene to defend her anymore.

"Shang Xin Ci cannot save herself now, but she does not want to trouble me, so she said those words." Wei De Xin understood this, she smiled: "Since clan leader has a solution, I will rest at ease, I am going to recuperate now."

"You should." Shang Xin Ci smiled and said.

"Leave now, don’t disturb my recuperation." Wei De Xin waved her hand, she knew that Shang Xin Ci’s time was pressing, she did not want to waste her time.

The trio was ’chased’ out just like that.

After leaving Wei De Xin’s place, they went to visit Zhou Quan.

Zhou Quan said: "I’ve already learned of the matter that happened. Clan leader, you did the right thing!"

"In the past, I would not be able to see it clearly. But after these years, I’ve learned much from Steward Zhou and Sister Wei." Shang Xin Ci said humbly.

Zhou Quan looked at Shang Xin Ci, initially, he was forced by Fang Yuan to become Shang Xin Ci’s subordinate and help her.

But gradually, he noticed Shang Xin Ci’s nature and was shocked that there was such a person in the world.

If Shang Xin Ci was mindlessly benevolent, Zhou Quan would look down on her and leave.

But Shang Xin Ci had a perceptive nature despite her poor cultivation talent, she grew rapidly under Zhou Quan’s and Wei De Xin’s guidance, rising to the next level. Now, not only did she have strength, she could even manage the entirety of Shang clan.

Zhou Quan was pleased at her growth while also feeling admiration.

Because Shang Xin Ci had a consistent demeanor, she had her own bottom line. Her kindness and benevolence had never wavered because of the darkness and cruelty of the world. In contrast, from the cruelty and sadness she had seen, she noticed the pity and agony behind them, affirming her heart of kindness.

This was something that was very rare!

Before leaving, Zhou Quan reminded them: "Even if you pay them double, you can only lessen the problem, you cannot solve its root cause. The problem is the fake goods after all, you need to find the source and put a stop to it. You also need to find out the rest of the fake goods in the market and remove them. After these two problems are resolved, you will be able to truly get past the problem."

At night.

In the other room, Xiao Lan and Xiao Die had fallen asleep.

But Shang Xin Ci looked at the fake Gu on the table as she showed an expression of worry.

She smiled to herself soundlessly.

To prevent the rest from worrying and because of her clan leader responsibilities, Shang Xin Ci had always acted confidently. Only when she was alone would she show her true emotions.

At this moment, she was like a delicate flower facing an impending storm, it was truly heart aching to see her expression.

She was helpless against the fake Gu in front of her. The truth was, she had already done her best to get this far!

In the silent night, she let out a deep and helpless sigh.

"Clan leader, why are you sighing?" From within the fake Gu, light shined and gathered into the image of an old man.

Shang Xin Ci had a surprised expression, because this old man was the shop owner who asked her for compensation earlier!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Seeing the old man’s appearance, Shang Xin Ci thought of many things at this instant.

The mysterious old man was so strong, Shang Xin Ci did not even detect his method to lurk within the Gu worm.

He came with unknown intentions, he could either be having kind or malicious intentions. He might even be the culprit behind this fake Gu incident, this might even be one of Shang Ya Zi’s plans.

But Shang Xin Ci was more willing to believe that the mysterious old man came with kind intentions.

Shang Xin Ci said solemnly: "I sighed earlier because Shang Ya Zi and the rest chose to pull me down from the clan leader position in order to fight for that immortal opportunity. But they did not care that these schemes would bring great misery and losses to others. In fact, they completely disregarded Shang clan’s reputation, they only cared about themselves."

"But I can understand their choice. Who does not want to become a Gu Immortal and transcend the mortal realm, gaining great abilities? But does becoming a Gu Immortal mean one must treat the people as insects? Isn’t there another way, a kinder and less damaging way for the weak?"

The old man heard this and sighed deeply: "Shang Xin Ci, oh Shang Xin Ci, I’ve stayed in Shang Liang Mountain for years, I believe that you mean this from the bottom of your heart, thus, I decided to help you!"

Shang Xin Ci bowed deeply but her expression was still calm and tranquil: "May I ask for senior’s name?"

The old man smiled bitterly: "I am merely a pitiful person who is at his wits’ end, I do not dare to expose myself. I know you are suspicious towards me, but I come with goodwill. You are someone worthy of my help, after becoming the clan leader for so many years, you know that to trust a person, what they say is not important, only their actions speak louder than words."

Shang Xin Ci nodded: "Please teach me senior, I am willing to listen."

The old man said: "I know the person who created the fake Gu as well as his residence. His name is Feng Tian Yu, your brother Shang Ya Zi befriended him and asked him to do this by offering huge benefits."

"Feng Tian Yu?" Shang Xin Ci’s gaze flickered: "I know of this person, he is in the righteous path, once the young clan leader of a village. He has incredible refinement path attainment, he is a refinement path master, having rank four cultivation level. When he was rank three, he refined a rank five Gu worm. Although the rank five Gu died after half a day, he achieved instant reputation from that. Regrettably, his clan lost in a conflict and faced extermination, he was no longer the young clan leader that had limitless prospects, becoming a lone cultivator instead."

Shang Xin Ci was the leader of Shang clan, she knew the information of Southern Border’s expert Gu Masters very clearly.

The old man nodded: "Feng Tian Yu has already reached rank five, but he keeps it a secret and only shows rank four cultivation level. I have a method for you to convince him and turn him over to your side, becoming your loyal subordinate."

Shang Xin Ci was very curious.

Feng Tian Yu had rank five cultivation level now, like Shang Xin Ci, he was also a refinement path master, extremely popular in Southern Border. Such a person would receive royal treatment anywhere he went, if he wanted to rebuild his clan and create Feng clan again, he would become the clan leader, a righteous path leader in the Gu Master world.

How could such a person submit easily?

The old man did not conceal anything, he told the method to Shang Xin Ci immediately.

Shang Xin Ci’s expression changed: "Senior wants me to lie to Feng Tian Yu?"

The old man smiled: "That is not lying, it is true that you are acquainted with Fang Yuan. Of course, strictly speaking, it is still a lie. But Shang Xin Ci, if one lie can save countless people, will you do it? You have no other choice now, Feng Tian Yu is the culprit behind the fake Gu after all."

The old man’s smile became wider: "In this world, being a bad person is not easy, but being a good person is even tougher. Because a good person has to defeat the bad person while defending their own morals and beliefs. Oh Shang Xin Ci, I am only giving you a method, as for what you are going to do with it, that is entirely up to you."

Shang Xin Ci did not hesitate: "Thank you senior, the method is very good, I am going to give it a try."

"Very good." The old man laughed: "This is why I like you. You have benevolence but you are not blinded by it, you know how to use various methods to deal with evil. In this world, pure kindness is akin to suicide, it can even harm your friends and family. But you are not like that, you are realistic in your goals, you are a truly practical good person."

At the end, the old man added: "This Gu worm contains a Gu Immortal true inheritance, I think this is the cultivation path most suited for you. Take a look, whether you cultivate it or not is entirely up to you."

Saying so, the old man’s image vanished.

At the same time, a Gu worm flew up from the table, floating in the air, away from the pile.

Shang Xin Ci held it and inspected the details.

A moment later, joy flashed on her face as she muttered to herself: "Good deeds Gu?"

Shang Liang Mountain had an outer city as well as the inner city. The inner city was split into first, second, third, fourth, and fifth inner city.

The first inner city was called the central inner city, the political heart of Shang clan, and also their military base. Shang Xin Ci stayed here.

The second inner city was also known as the clan city, only Shang clansmen could stay here. Tokens were needed to enter.

Feng Tian Yu stayed in the third inner city.

The entire third inner city was extremely expensive and valuable, it used star stones everywhere. Not only buildings, but even the walking paths were made of star stones. At one glance, starlight could be seen in one’s entire vision.

The streets had few people, quiet and serene, like a star palace.

There was no inn, there were only gardens.

Small gardens were rented at thirty primeval stones per day, while large gardens were a hundred primeval stones!

Feng Tian Yu was staying in a large garden.

He drank high quality tea and sat in a half inclined chair, his door was open as a breeze blew into the garden, he looked at the beautiful view of the bamboo forest.

"Brother Feng, you are truly enjoying yourself." Shang Xin Ci’s voice resounded all of a sudden.

Feng Tian Yu shook intensely, he was so shocked he almost fell from his chair.

But at the next moment, he reacted and the Gu worms in his aperture got ready to strike. He turned around and looked at Shang Xin Ci, calming himself forcefully:

"So Shang clan’s leader has visited me, I am truly honored beyond words. Clan leader, your method is really amazing, I set up three Gu formations here after all, you actually managed to enter so stealthily, is there anywhere in the world that can keep you out?"

Feng Tian Yu mocked Shang Xin Ci’s action of being like a thief, but she was not upset, she retorted: "How can my methods compare to you, Brother Feng? You caused a huge commotion in the market, the fake Gu flooded the market and resulted in conflict, as the clan leader, I almost lost all my reputation."

Feng Tian Yu was shook internally, he did not expect Shang Xin Ci to find him so quickly.

"How can this be? I am sure that my fake Gu have no clues leading to me, is there a problem over on Shang Ya Zi’s end?"

Feng Tian Yu thought while sitting up, denying it entirely: "Clan leader, don’t try to scare me, the blame of selling fake Gu is not something a small fry like me can shoulder."

Shang Xin Ci chuckled as she took a few steps, arriving at the door and looking outside, speaking with her back facing Feng Tian Yu: "Brother Feng, do you still not understand? Whatever I claim as the truth, even without evidence whatsoever, is the truth."

Feng Tian Yu could not help but feel shocked: "This Shang Xin Ci has a reputation for benevolence, everyone knows that, but after seeing her today, to think that she is such a domineering person!"

He felt immense pressure.

Shang Xin Ci’s sudden appearance threw Feng Tian Yu into an extremely passive spot.

He was originally lying on the chair, he had a poor posture, he had to try to modify his posture while exchanging words with Shang Xin Ci, sitting upright gradually.

But Shang Xin Ci seemingly did not notice, she went past him and walked to the door, facing the outside with her back facing Feng Tian Yu, not concerned with his petty actions, she even gave him a chance to sneak attack her.

But Feng Tian Yu did not dare to move at all!

The more confident Shang Xin Ci was, the more wary and nervous Feng Tian Yu felt. Even though they had the same cultivation level, he had already unconsciously placed himself at the lower position.

Shang Xin Ci turned around, smiling: "Brother Feng, come work for me."

"What?" Feng Tian Yu stared with wide eyes, he was stunned, but soon, he laughed: "Shang clan leader, do you know the price that Shang Ya Zi paid to hire my service?"

Shang Xin Ci chuckled: "No matter what price he offered, you will definitely not be able to reject my offer."

Feng Tian Yu let out a breath of air, his eyes shined with brilliance as he stood up.

The moment Shang Xin Ci tried to recruit him, he understood that she was not able to resolve the fake Gu incident, otherwise, she could create a commotion and lead Shang clan’s troops to kill him.

"So she still needs my help." Feng Tian Yu gained the psychological upper hand again.

He assessed Shang Xin Ci while smiling: "Then I will listen, I am sure that the great Shang clan leader will give me an offer befitting your status."

Shang Xin Ci raised her right index finger: "Firstly, your life."

Feng Tian Yu’s expression changed, his voice turned more grave as he spoke coldly: "Clan leader, do you think I am helpless against you?"

Shang Xin Ci smiled confidently: "Don’t worry, Brother Feng, you have rank five cultivation level, no need to be nervous."

Feng Tian Yu was internally shaken, she knew his actual cultivation level, she came prepared, this situation was perilous!

Shang Xin Ci added: "Other than that, if you perform well, you might be able to receive Lord Fang Yuan’s audience."

"What?!" Feng Tian Yu’s expression changed again.

Shang Xin Ci spoke without stopping: "Don’t be so shocked, Brother Feng. I know far more things than you can ever imagine."

"I’ll tell you the truth, I’m sure you know about my relationship with Lord Fang Yuan. I was able to discern your identity because I got help from Lord Fang Yuan’s hairy man Gu Immortal subordinates."

"I handed up a fake Gu and that hairy man Gu Immortal actually praised it. He said that you are a genius, if you are able to progress further, you might gain Lord Fang Yuan’s recognition and become his subordinate.

"Seriously? Is this true?" Feng Tian Yu was extremely excited, his face was flushed red.

Shang Xin Ci smiled: "Why would I lie to you? Since I can find you, I can easily take you down, what’s the point of wasting my breath here?"

"I am sure you know my situation. The reason I became clan leader was because of Lord Fang Yuan. To tell you the truth, Shang clan has already cooperated with Lord Fang Yuan in secret."

Feng Tian Yu chuckled: "Shang clan? Lord Fang Yuan is the number one demon in the world! If Lord Fang Yuan wants to take something from Shang clan, will you dare to say no?"

"But I admire Lord Fang Yuan’s refinement path talent the most!"

"Back then on Three Kings Mountain, I was blessed to have watched the scene of Lord Fang Yuan refining Fixed Immortal Travel personally. That was truly the greatest fortune of my life."

"I had once used rank three cultivation level to refine a rank five Gu worm that lived for half a day. But Lord Fang Yuan actually refined an Immortal Gu as a mortal! And he did it in that dangerous situation."

"His talent, his aptitude, his strength, and his wisdom is number one in the world! Since then, I believed wholeheartedly that Lord Fang Yuan would become renowned in the entire five regions and two heavens!"

"As expected!"

"Lord Fang Yuan defeated Heavenly Court in front of everyone in the world, he destroyed fate Gu!"

"And the greatest thing was that he used a refinement path method to destroy fate Gu. From then on, fate Gu can no longer exist in this world."

"From then on, all of us broke free of the restraints of fate!"

"He is a warrior, a hero, a savior. He has made the greatest contribution for the whole of humanity in history!"

"But no one understands him, they think he is in the demonic path, they are just too shallow, they are too ignorant! Lord Fang Yuan is an unprecedented existence, he is a great hero that only appears once in a billion years!"

"But I understand those so-called righteous path people. They are petty figures who feel fear, these weaklings and cowards are shamelessly trying to slander Lord Fang Yuan after realizing they can no longer harm him! They are obstructing the rise of humanity, they are sinners that obstruct the development of the world!!"

"Lord Fang Yuan is too outstanding, he is too amazing, he is too noble!"

"If I can follow him, if I can follow in the footsteps of such a noble figure, I... I do not know what else I can say."

"Huff, huff!"

"Amazing, this is too unbelievable."

"Today is simply the happiest day of my life!"

"Unbelievable, Lord Fang Yuan is actually taking me in as his subordinate. This is unbelievable, oh heaven!"

Feng Tian Yu got more and more excited as he spoke, his entire body was shuddering, he was almost about to burst out into spontaneous spasm.

His eyes shined with such a bright light as they turned red and tears gathered in his eyes, even Shang Xin Ci was feeling a chill as she looked at him.

That mysterious old man was not wrong at all.

Feng Tian Yu was a most fanatical admirer of Fang Yuan.

In fact, Fang Yuan’s rise, his stories, the scene where he destroyed fate, all of them were widely spread.

Most demonic cultivators saw Fang Yuan as their idol, they looked at him as their goal and inspiration.

Even in the righteous path, there were many who admired him secretly, looking up to his courage in challenging the experts of Heavenly Court, he had incredible wits and was able to scheme despite danger.

Feng Tian Yu was not special, he was just one of them.

But because he had once interacted with Fang Yuan, and because of their similarities in refinement path, he who had once been a blessed young master experienced his entire family being slaughtered, the terrible ordeal in his life made his personality even more twisted and extreme.

Thus, because of his life experiences, he treated the strongest refinement path expert in the current world, the grand and legendary figure who he cannot surpass in this life, Fang Yuan, as his target for fanatical idolism.

Even though Shang Xin Ci did not produce any solid evidence, as long as there was hope, as long as there was a chance for him to get close to his idol, the divine existence in his heart, it was enough for him to feel extreme excitement, he could not control himself.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Several days later.

Second inner city of Shang Liang Mountain.

Shang Ya Zi and the rest had gathered together for a discussion, but they were soon enraged to find out that they were encircled.

"Zhou Quan, Wei De Xin! You are too daring, you dare to gather a bunch of Gu cultivators in the second inner city!"

"What are you trying to do? We are Shang Yan Fei’s children, the blood siblings of your master Shang Xin Ci!"

"You outsiders dare to interfere and take action against Shang clan members on this Shang Liang Mountain?"

Shang Ya Zi and the rest were furious, they screamed loudly, getting their voices to spread out around the entire second inner city.

The second inner city was the residence of Shang clan’s members, the commotion attracted the attention of countless clansmen.

Soon, hundreds of clansmen gathered here as they encircled Wei De Xin and Zhou Quan’s group instead.

"What is going on?"

"Commander Wei De Xin and Steward Zhou Quan, they are Shang Xin Ci’s most loyal subordinates."

"They are encircling Shang Qiu Niu, Shang Ya Zi, and the rest!"

"These two are simply too daring, they are trying to take action against our Shang clan’s members openly!"

"Don’t be rash, without Shang Xin Ci’s instructions, why would these two dare to make a move?"

"A good show is going to start! This is clearly a fight over authority."

Shang clan’s members discussed, the matter was getting heated, more clansmen were arriving.

Wei De Xin smiled coldly.

Zhou Quan announced loudly: "Recently, fake Gu have been rampantly spread in

Shang Liang Mountain, we have already investigated the truth. You are all the culprits behind this, quickly surrender. Our leader is kind and merciful, she might let you off with a light sentence."

Shang Ya Zi and the rest shook internally.

Shang Yi Fan stepped out: "Bullshit! You dare to accuse us without evidence. Shang Xin Ci was clearly the one without ability or morals, she could not handle this problem, so she wants to put the blame on us? She is simply too wicked!"

"Don’t worry, there is no need to deny it now." Wei De Xin interrupted: "Since we are publicly arresting you, we have concrete evidence."

"What evidence?"

"Where is Shang Xin Ci?" Ask her to come out and speak."

"That’s right, why is she letting you two handle this, you are merely Shang Xin Ci’s two dogs!"

Shang Ya Zi and the rest screamed.

Zhou Quan smiled coldly: "Everyone, are you afraid now?"

"We are descendants of Shang clan, we fear nothing! But often, forceful courage is stupidity. If we leave with you, in your territory, we will be forced to submit, even if we are innocent, we will be tortured and forced to accept this blame, we will become the culprits in the end!"

"Since you have evidence, then tell us right here, right now, in front of everyone in the city!!"

Shang Qiu Niu and Shang Chi Wen spoke.

Shang Ya Zi and Shang Yi Fan frowned.

"That’s right, that’s right, speak clearly in front of everyone here!"

"That’s right! You are encircling the young clan leaders of our Shang clan!"

"Even if they are no longer the young clan leaders, they are not people that you outsiders can bully."

The Shang clan members at the periphery shouted.

Zhou Quan laughed: "Everything is within clan leader’s expectations, alright, since you want evidence, I will leave you speechless. This is the evidence!"

Zhou Quan waved his hand as a large pile of Gu worms appeared on the ground.

Wei De Xin added: "Right now, all of Shang Liang Mountain’s fake Gu are gathered here."

Shang Yi Fan laughed: "That’s it? Taking a bunch of Gu and framing it on us?"

Zhou Quan laughed: "Of course not. We have solid facts that Feng Tian Yu is the person who refined these fake Gu. Furthermore, he is among you right now, he is naturally instructed by you."

Instantly, countless gazes gathered on Feng Tian Yu.

Shang Ya Zi and the rest were scheming, as a crucial person, Feng Tian Yu was naturally involved.

"It is Feng Tian Yu indeed!"

"Why is this refinement path master here?"

"I only recognized him just now."

"It really is Master Feng."

The surrounding talks became louder and rowdier.

Shang Ya Zi could not endure it anymore, he stepped forward and shielded Feng Tian Yu as he shouted: "Zhou Quan! You are framing us, this is a slander against a good friend of mine. We will not let this go! This matter is far more severe than you accusing us of this issue!! If you do not have solid evidence that Brother Feng is the person who made these fake Gu, I will seek an audience with father, I will ask him to uphold justice!"

Zhou Quan laughed: "Of course I have evidence. Tell me, Feng Tian Yu, are you the one who refined these fake Gu?"

Shang Ya Zi and the rest were dazed.

Next, the group heard Feng Tian Yu speak in a natural tone as he admitted: "Steward Zhou is right, I was instructed by Shang Ya Zi’s group to refine the fake Gu and create problems in the market, they want to harm the current Shang clan leader."

"What?"

"What?!"

"Brother... Brother Feng, you?!!"

At this moment, the scene went silent.

Shang Yi Fan and the rest stared at Feng Tian Yu, their expressions were of disbelief and shock.

Shang Ya Zi turned around abruptly, rage and shock prominently displayed on his face.

Feng Tian Yu had actually betrayed them so suddenly?

What was he after?

How can this be!

Did Shang Xin Ci offer him an even greater price?

Impossible!

In order to hire Feng Tian Yu, Shang Ya Zi and the rest had expended their own wealth. How could Shang Xin Ci gather so much resources in such a short period of time?!

But this actually happened to them.

It was a fatal blow to Shang Ya Zi and the rest!

"No, you are not Brother Feng!" Shang Ya Zi’s expression was twisted, he struggled: "You must be an impostor, no, even if you are real, I am sure that vicious woman Shang Xin Ci has you under her control!"

Shang Ya Zi’s screams were so pale and weak at this moment.

Zhou Quan spoke: "Don’t worry, Master Feng Tian Yu is not the only person I have as witness. The rest of you, what do you have to say?"

At the next moment, Shang Qiu Niu sighed deeply: "I admit, we committed this mistake."

"Shang Qiu Niu!!"

"Eldest brother, you?"

"Are you insane?’

However, Shang Qiu Niu was not the only lunatic, there was also Shang Chi Wen.

She also stood up and agreed with Zhou Quan’s accusations.

Shang Ya Zi almost coughed out a mouthful of blood, Shang Yi Fan shook in anger: "You two, you are going to be the death of us!"

Shang Chi Wen smiled: "Not just us."

She had once managed the battle stage, she had a good relationship with Shang Xin Ci. Back then, Shang Xin Ci’s information business also helped her.

Shang Qiu Niu waved his hands: "Not long ago, Feng Tian Yu and Shang Xin Ci approached me, since Master Feng Tian Yu has already joined her, what can we do? There is no chance of winning. Shang Xin Ci has amazing methods, we cannot upset her position as clan leader. We have lost, admit it."

The crucial point was still Feng Tian Yu!

Shang Ya Zi realized this, he stared at Feng Tian Yu with a gaze that could devour him whole: "Feng Tian Yu, answer me! I know you are not someone who goes after beauties. You are such an aloof person, having only interest in refinement path. I do not believe that Shang Xin Ci has such charisma to win you over entirely. Tell me, why is this happening?"

"Hmph." Feng Tian Yu snickered coldly: "How can mortals understand my pursuit? Quickly surrender!"

"You guys can all die!" Shang Ya Zi exploded entirely, he attacked.

Shang Yi Fan and the rest followed after.

Shang Qiu Niu, Feng Tian Yu, Zhou Quan, and Wei De Xin were also prepared for this, both sides burst into a chaotic battle.

Shang clan’s members continued to watch, they did not interfere.

"The situation is quite clear now."

"To think that Clan Leader Shang Xin Ci is so amazing!"

"This is a miracle, someone was actually able to win over Master Feng Tian Yu."

"Empress Wu Ji had also tried to recruit him with a high price in the past, she was very sincere but Master Feng paid her no heed!"

Shang Yi Fan’s and Shang Ya Zi’s group soon fell into a disadvantage.

Zhou Quan and the rest came prepared, Shang Qiu Niu and Shang Chi Wen even betrayed them. This happened too suddenly and peculiarly, Shang Ya Zi was caught unguarded.

"No! I cannot lose, I still have a trump card. You guys forced me to do this, you guys forced me!!" Seeing that he was about to be captured, Shang Yi Fan shouted as he threw out a mortal Gu House.

The mortal Gu House was like a cage, it exploded, a mud monster was released.

At first glance, this mud monster was obviously extraordinary.

It had a vague human figure, mud moved along its body as countless faces surfaced.

These human faces had twisted expressions, they were filled with extreme hatred, everyone felt a chill upon seeing them.

"You bastard[1]!" The mud monster suddenly shouted as it attacked Zhou Quan and the rest.

Zhou Quan and the rest fought against it, they were heavily suppressed.

The flow of the battle was instantly overturned.

"Let’s go!" Shang Yi Fan shouted loudly.

The mud monster did not differentiate enemy and ally, it had great strength, rushing into the crowd and slaughtering innocent mortals, creating chaos.

During the chaos, Shang Ya Zi and the rest escaped narrowly.

They could no longer stay on Shang Liang Mountain, they escaped and became demonic path Gu Masters.

The mud monster caused huge destruction and losses to second inner city.

Not only did it have terrifying battle strength, it was even nearly unkillable, its regenerative ability was outstanding too.

Eventually, Zhou Quan and Wei De Xin exerted all their effort, with the help of Shang Xin Ci, more than ten Gu cultivators were sacrificed before this mud monster was sealed again.

The fake Gu crisis was alleviated, not only did Shang Xin Ci keep her clan leader position, she even took Feng Tian Yu in as a subordinate, her reputation soared.

But Shang Yi Fan’s final struggle also left a huge problem for Shang Xin Ci to settle.

After receiving the report, Shang Yan Fei smiled.

Shang Xin Ci’s performance did not disappoint him, in fact, he was even pleasantly surprised.

He did not think that Shang Xin Ci would be able to achieve this.

The thing that satisfied him the most was that Shang Xin Ci did not really target Shang Ya Zi and the rest, she only dealt with the troublesome mud monster.

As for Shang Yi Fan’s and Shang Ya Zi’s group, since they had failed entirely, it was a better end for them to become demonic path Gu Masters.

"They all have my hidden blood path methods, they can be protected during critical danger. The qi tides are rampant, immortal opportunities are hidden everywhere. If they want to become immortal, they will need to work hard and find their own opportunities."

Shang Yan Fei had never overly doted on his children, he had forced his brother and sister to commit suicide when he first became clan leader.

He had once ignored all objections and expended much resources to murder every single person in a village. He murdered all those who surrendered, and their skulls piled into a hill, in front of those elders who first objected to his decision to retaliate.

He appointed people based on merits, even for his own children. There were fifteen Shang clan young master positions originally, but after his rule, he reduced it to ten.

"This matter has been settled, I need to set off and find the other Blood Sea true inheritances now. Blood Sea Ancestor... the more I investigate it, the more mysterious I find this person." Shang Yan Fei was finally at ease, his children had all grown up, they went on their own journeys now, they had their own destinies to follow. As for himself, he was going to find his own opportunities for development.

[1] It’s the same one from Ni Xiang’s arc.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

In Shang Liang Mountain’s first inner city, Shang Xin Ci was handling the clan affairs.

"Second inner city’s reparations are finished, the fake Gu incident has also been settled." Shang Xin Ci inspected an information path mortal Gu in her hand with a slight smile on her face.

She then used her primeval essence to add new content into this information path Gu worm.

She made a decision that all the items in Shang clan’s managed stores would be sold at a discount with the reason being ’the losses to the Gu Masters because of the fake Gu incident’.

"Like this, we can greatly increase Shang clan’s reputation as well as earn primeval stones and make up for the losses caused by the double compensation."

Shang Xin Ci’s delicate fingers loosened, and this information path mortal Gu let out a light as it flew out of the study room.

Shang Xin Ci picked up another information path mortal Gu on the desk.

The mortal Gu’s information came from Shang Chi Wen.

Ever since Shang Bu Li resigned, Shang Xin Ci handed the task of managing Shang Liang Mountain’s market to Shang Chi Wen.

The information in the mortal Gu said that there were a group of merchants who were hoarding goods to push up the prices. Shang Chi Wen’s suggestion was to kill them all.

"Sigh, for their own self-interests, these people have harmed countless ordinary people!" Shang Xin Ci sighed in her head, she pondered and wrote a new message in the information path mortal Gu: Only kill the main culprit, let go of the others.

After this information path Gu worm also flew out, she looked at the third information path Gu worm that contained a request for help.

In the periphery of Shang clan’s territory, a village encountered a beast tide and was in danger of being exterminated.

This village was a Shang clan vassal, but they only had several rank three Gu Masters and had little to no presence.

"Saving people is like quelling a fire, such distress calls should have been delivered urgently, why did it come through the regular affairs channel?" Shang Xin Ci frowned.

She understood the reason.

Her subordinates knew that, with her nature, she would definitely spare no effort to rescue them.

But the current situation was the opening stage of the great era, all kinds of inheritances were being fought over. Both mortals and immortals of Shang clan were extremely busy. Taking out some of their manpower to do this arduous and fruitless rescue task was a huge loss of human resources, as well as a loss of future profits.

"Considering the time, it might be too late already. Sigh, the hearts of the people..." Oftentimes, Shang Xin Ci felt her own insignificance. Like now, she could only sense her subordinates’ thoughts but was unable to change them.

The longer she held this Shang clan leader position, the more she felt her powerlessness. Compared to Shang clan or even the entire world, she was really nothing important.

"Maybe this is the reason why almost all Gu cultivators stake their lives on chasing strength."

Shang Xin Ci pondered for a while, but still decided to assign a group of Gu Masters to commence on the rescue.

Even though it was very likely for that village to have already been destroyed by the beast tide by the time the rescue team set off.

The fourth information path mortal Gu mentioned good news.

A new qi path resource point was discovered in the surroundings of Shang Liang Mountain, and required Shang Liang Mountain to station some force there or support the nearby village.

Shang Xin Ci let go of the information path mortal Gu one by one, occasionally, Gu worms would fly into the study room.

Unknowingly, night passed and dawn arrived.

A dazzling information path mortal Gu flew in front of Shang Xin Ci.

Shang Xin Ci’s mind jolted: "A task from the higher-ups."

Shang Xin Ci quickly took the Gu and looked into it. This information path mortal Gu’s content was indeed about a huge matter.

The matter concerned the contest for Fur blessed land.

This Fur blessed land was located at the central region of Southern Border and contained Fur true inheritance, it was exposed because of the qi tide. Because of its remote location, it did not belong to any one of Southern Border’s super forces, so it was fought over by all the super clans.

Righteous path Gu Immortals discussed and decided to send out Gu Masters to determine the winner, Gu Immortals were not to interfere.

The information path mortal Gu also had some secret information regarding the owner of the blessed land, Fur Immortal.

This immortal was a dual cultivator in wood path and transformation path. But she did not have an excellent method and was only carelessly dual cultivating. It led to conflict between wood path and transformation path dao marks, her battle strength was low her whole life and she was the target of bullying in the Gu Immortal world.

"None of the super forces have an interest in such a true inheritance, except, the blessed land’s location holds true value!"

"It is not within our borders, in the event that our Shang clan wins in this contest and obtains this blessed land, it is only an exclave which will be difficult to manage."

"But, this territory can be transacted. I believe those super forces near the blessed land will definitely be willing to purchase it."

The curtain to the great era was pulled upon, there would definitely be huge commotion and unrest in the future.

At that time, this kind of blessed land would be a bridgehead for the super forces to expand their territories, or be an important front-line defense area, its value was high.

After all, these Southern Border super forces might not have any methods to relocate immortal apertures.

Shang Xin Ci evaluated inwardly.

Benefiting from the change in eras, she was exposed to even more information on Gu Immortals than Shang Yan Fei when he had been a clan leader.

Thus, even though Shang Xin Ci was only a rank five Gu Master, she had a deep understanding of the Gu Immortal world’s situation.

"This is the most important priority for Shang clan, time is pressing, it must be dealt with immediately!" Shang Xin Ci felt troubled.

Despite having recruited Shang Qiu Niu, Shang Chi Wen and the rest, at the crucial moment, she had too few subordinates.

"Feng Tian Yu is not only a refinement path master but has rank five cultivation as well. I can let him take on the role of the head this time." Shang Xin Ci summoned Feng Tian Yu as she thought this.

Soon, Feng Tian Yu received the message and went up to the study room.

"Enter." Shang Xin Ci willed and the study room’s door opened slowly.

Her study room was a mortal Gu House.

Feng Tian Yu had an excited expression: "Clan leader, I have good news to tell you!"

"Oh, what news?" Shang Xin Ci asked with a smile.

Feng Tian Yu: "I have been researching that strange mudman over these days, and I have discovered a shocking secret!"

"This mudman might be crazy and disorientated in thoughts, but he responds properly as long as we ask one question at a time."

"I asked him question after question like this and learned of his origin."

"His name is Ni Jian, he had been a young clan leader of a village. One day, a demonic path expert appeared and slaughtered everyone in the village, including him."

"But after he died, he was revived by a qi path Gu Immortal. This qi path Gu Immortal inquired about the culprit and after getting the answer, he was disregarded and left alone."

"This mudman Ni Jian was extremely strong, having near immortal level strength, but after such a long time, he has weakened to this state."

"I did not expect this mudman to have such an amazing history!" Shang Xin Ci sighed,"But how did such an ordinary village get connected to a Gu Immortal?"

Feng Tian Yu said with even more excitement: "This is the point that I pursued, I found that Ni clan’s people have a huge secret! Once in a while, a Gu Master in Ni clan will awaken their bloodline. If they survive, an Immortal Gu will grow inside their body!"

"Immortal Gu?" Shang Xin Ci’s brows rose subconsciously.

"This Immortal Gu was the reason for the Gu Immortal’s attention." Feng Tian Yu’s eyes shone, "This is too strange. A mortal Gu Master’s body can actually give birth to an Immortal Gu! More importantly, the slaughtered Ni clan village was only a separated branch. There are many other clan branches that are blood-related to him in several areas of Southern Border."

Shang Xin Ci asked: "So, you are thinking of?"

Feng Tian Yu nodded: "Right, I want to request clan leader to allow me to investigate this huge secret! If we can grasp this kind of refinement path method, we can refine Immortal Gu while only being mortals."

Shang Xin Ci pondered before saying: "Then, go ahead with it, I will send some people to help you."

"No need, no need." Feng Tian Yu shook his hand, "I am a rank five Gu Master, even if rank four Gu Masters accompany me, they will only slow me down. Moreover, if such a contribution can be made, it will definitely be huge. I need to accumulate contribution points to have hope of seeing Lord Fang Yuan in the future!"

Shang Xin Ci nodded, seeing that Feng Tian Yu’s attitude was so resolute, she could only let him go.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Yellow Heaven.

A group of Gu Masters with the same surname arrived beside the gold fragment current.

An old clan leader whose hair had gone white and had rank five cultivation, stood with his back facing the gold fragment current as he called out towards the group of people.

"It has been about a dozen years since we mysteriously arrived at this place from Southern Border."

"Although I don’t know what the reason is, it is definitely the doing of a Gu Immortal level existence!"

"Our Ni clan bloodline is all gathered in this place."

"Over this dozen years, our Ni clan has been developing and growing, the number of our Gu Masters has increased by ten times! However, recently, the weather of this mysterious place has become uncertain with dangers emerging constantly. Right now, in front of us, we have a life and death crisis."

"The gold fragment current is continuing to rise in water level, we must create more channels for the current! Otherwise, when the water overflows and turns into a flood, the surrounding thousand li will be completely submerged, we will lose our home and will no longer be able to live here."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2127 Sovereign“s Commotion

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Western Desert.

An enormous pitch-black city occupied the desert.

This was a large city with rigid structure. The entire city was a hexagon and its walls had gone through the weathering of time. The city walls were more than two hundred li long, they were a hundred feet tall and tens of feet thick.

If a person stood on the grassland, they would see what looked like a huge black beast sprawling. If they got closer, they would need to raise their heads to look up at the huge city gate and walls.

Every edge of the city had defensive towers that were filled with countless holes that could shoot out arrows.

Every few li apart, there would be a wide path for horse carriages to move on.

There were even very secretive armories within the city walls.

Passing the city walls, one would arrive at the vibrant world within.

The city had many streets and shops, there were great numbers of houses and palaces. People and carriages were bustling, there was an endless flow of activity. Loud noises could be heard constantly, this was truly a lively city.

This was Inkman City!

It was created by the legendary inkman Immortal Yi Yan, and was a smaller version of Emperor City. Later, it was captured by Fang Yuan and moved to Mini Western Desert.

At this time, two inkman Gu Immortals, Mo Tan Sang and Mo Qi Yi, were floating in the air and looking at the surroundings with grave expressions.

"These toxic vines and windmill trees have spread over ten li in just three days, they are only around twenty li from Inkman City." Mo Tan Sang said.

Mo Qi Yi frowned: "We have already cleared them up over ten times, but every time we exterminate them, they grow back rapidly. Are we going to have to relocate again?"

Right now, the surroundings of Inkman City were covered in vegetation.

These vegetation were formed from purple-black toxic vines and huge azure-gold windmill trees. It was like a terrifying tsunami of plants engulfing everything in its path.

Mo Qi Yi sighed: "These vegetation have already started producing desolate plants, it is even more difficult for us to clear them up now. If we are not able to get rid of the source, even if we clear them up for thousands of times, we won’t be able to solve the root issue. I thought we had moved to a good place, but I did not expect the environment here to be dozens and even a hundred times worse than Northern Plains!"

Mo Tan Sang patted Mo Qi Yi’s shoulder: "Master has already sent people to help us, it is better if you speak less of such complaints."

Mo Qi Yi immediately kept quiet.

His master was the number one demon in the present world, a ruthless and vicious existence.

"Look, our reinforcements have arrived!" Mo Tan Sang suddenly pointed towards the faraway horizon with joy.

Mo Qi Yi looked towards the direction and saw four Gu Immortals flying over.

There were two snowman Gu Immortals, one hairy man Gu Immortal, and one mushroomman Gu Immortal. Among them, one snowman female immortal was tall and vibrant, she had blue eyes and hair, and looked pure and noble, she was Xue Er.

Mo Tan Sang and Mo Qi Yi quickly went forward to greet them.

Xue Er’s identity was special.

Back then, because of what happened with Fang Yuan and her, on the surface, Xue Er’s identity was Fang Yuan’s fiancée!

Naturally, Fang Yuan had never acknowledged it, but he had not denied it either.

The snowman tribe, especially the snowman Gu Immortal behind Xue Er, Bing Yuan, was always trumpeting about this relationship, which led to every Gu Immortal in the sovereign immortal aperture knowing of it.

"I did not expect Lady Xue Er to come personally."

"With your help, my Inkman City’s crisis can be considered to be resolved!"

Mo Tan Sang and Mo Qi Yi flattered.

Xue Er: "Inkmen and snowmen might be of different races, but both sides have already cooperated back when we were in Northern Plains. I came this time to help you two as well as to request for you to come back to help my snowman tribe once this matter is resolved."

The snowman tribe was living in Mini Northern Plains and had also encountered trouble.

The two inkman immortals quickly expressed they would give full support.

Bing Yuan: "We have already investigated the situation on our way. I and Xue Er will activate ice and snow killer moves, to freeze and slow down the growth of the vegetation to buy time for you."

The hairy man Gu Immortal: "I brought a large number of hairy man Gu Masters with me, we will modify Inkman City into one entity, forming a large Gu House. It will be extremely convenient for you to relocate in the future."

The mushroomman Gu Immortal: "I can solve the issue of the toxic vines, these toxic vines are a disaster to you, but they are superior cultivation resources for my mushroomman tribe. Moreover, I have already found the source of the toxic vines. By fighting poison with poison, I can make use of the toxic vines to fix this area of vegetation and stabilize it for some time."

The two inkman Gu Immortals showed both joy and new worries.

Mo Tan Sang asked the hairy man Gu Immortal: "Back in Northern Plains, Inkman City had a population of over eight hundred thousand, it has already crossed one million and two hundred thousand now. Modifying Inkman City will probably have some effect on the residents. Master had instructed me to preserve the lives of the residents and help them progress with all my strength..."

The hairy man Gu Immortal raised his hand and interrupted Mo Tan Sang: "You don’t need to be too worried. Our Lang Ya Sect has already received master’s command to modify all the cities in the sovereign immortal aperture. Every city has a specific blueprint, most of them will become mortal Gu Houses, while several large cities will be raised to become Immortal Gu Houses! I need to congratulate you two, Inkman City is one of the cities chosen to become an Immortal Gu House!"

Mo Tan Sang and Mo Qi Yi looked at each other, seeing the excitement on each other’s faces.

Mo Tan Sang was speechless and could not help asking: "Isn’t this too big of an investment? Master is actually so resolute! I naturally hope for such things to happen more often, but if this delays master’s cultivation and uses up a lot of master’s Immortal Gu, then wouldn’t it be our fault?"

The hairy man Gu Immortal laughed loudly: "You are underestimating master! How can you estimate master’s might and plans? Master’s refinement path attainment has already surpassed the predecessors, reaching a level that you and I are unable to speculate. This evaluation was not made by me, Lang Ya land spirit personally said it."

"Currently, it is extremely easy for master to refine Immortal Gu. You have not seen those blueprints, they are all different and ingenious. Just choose one of them, it will take those ordinary Gu Immortals several years or even a dozen years to design them. But master casually drew them within a few minutes."

"Master’s attainment and wealth rivals the scale of mountains and seas. This investment you see is just an insignificant amount to master."

This hairy man Gu Immortal’s face was filled with fanatical reverence when he talked of Fang Yuan.

"I was wrong, I should be punished!" Mo Tan Sang quickly apologized.

That mushroomman Gu Immortal added: "Although us mushroommen have moved to this world just recently, we were immediately certain of the boundless potential of this world. To create the sovereign immortal aperture, Shadow Sect used up all of their accumulations. The important thing is it is able to show infinite grandeur in the hands of a divine hero like master."

"Every time master annexes a grotto-heaven or blessed land, there will be a huge surge of dao marks in the sovereign grotto-heaven and a large number of territories will be added out of nowhere. Just take these toxic vines, this species has never appeared in the five regions, and their toxicity is extremely strong."

The mushroomman Gu Immortal addressed Fang Yuan as master, it was natural and without any hesitation.

Although they had joined only recently, they were extremely optimistic and excited about their future.

Mini Southern Border.

At the base of Fire Bird Mountain, Shi Shi Cheng, Shi Zong, and other rockman Gu Immortals were controlling an immortal Gu formation.

As the immortal Gu formation started activating, the shaking Fire Bird Mountain reluctantly calmed down.

"Success." Shi Shi Cheng let out a breath of air and relaxed his mind.

Shi Zong said: "Master annexed Fire Plain grotto-heaven as well as immortal apertures of its immortals and Fire Plain Grotto Lord, causing a huge increase in fire path dao marks in the sovereign immortal aperture. This Fire Bird Mountain is a volcano and almost erupted because of this, fortunately, we discovered it in time and set up an immortal formation to suppress it. But from now on, someone needs to stay and preside over the immortal formation."

Shi Shi Cheng nodded: "We need to do that, but the number of Gu Immortals we can mobilize are already few, and now we are going to have one fewer."

Shi Zong heaved a sigh: "Yes. We are already hard-pressed to control these territories, it can be imagined how troublesome it is for master to look after the whole sovereign immortal aperture."

Shi Shi Cheng: "Didn’t master take in many members of the variant human alliance and station them everywhere in the sovereign immortal aperture to salvage the situation? There is no choice, master annexed too frequently in this period of time. There is a huge increase in dao marks, and countless resources of every path."

Shi Zong shook his head: "What kind of person is master? He should have already known of these demerits beforehand. We don’t need to be concerned for master, it is better if we look after our territories properly. Like this Fire Bird Mountain, it is not feasible to suppress it with just the immortal formation. We must modify this Fire Bird Mountain and make it adapt to the changed environment."

Shi Shi Cheng agreed: "Yes, the resources in the past all developed naturally bit by bit over a long period of time. But here, there are huge increases in dao marks, even this volcano was at the point of erupting. We must modify and quicken the volcano’s adaptation process artificially. It is just that fire path is not the specialty of us rockmen, we need to send a request to Star Collection City."

Mini Blue Heaven, Star Collection City.

This was managed by the previous generation’s Combat Beast King.

In the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan, this rank eight Gu Immortal had made a great contribution by resisting the tribulation formed from three thousand heaven path dao marks.

After that, Fang Yuan personally healed him.

Fang Yuan had annexed too many apertures, causing instability in the sovereign immortal aperture. Fang Yuan then arranged Star Collection City as the main city and ordered the Combat Beast King to oversee the overall internal affairs of the sovereign immortal aperture.

"The issue of Inkman City at Mini Western Desert has been resolved."

"Mini Southern Border’s Fire Bird Mountain was suppressed by using the formation. But they want fire path Gu Immortals to go modify the volcano? This needs to be coordinated."

At this time, an information path Gu worm flew over while making loud sounds.

Combat Beast King’s expression changed: "Where did the rank eight disaster appear again?"

He quickly inspected the Gu worm and found that the source of the disaster was a huge fire rain formed in Mini Red Heaven.

Fire rain often appeared in Mini Red Heaven, and after the increase in fire path dao marks, its emergence had become much more frequent.

But this wave of fire rain was different, it kept on growing and shot through a charcoal lake, forming rank six level killer move meteor rain.

As the meteor rain entered mini orange heaven, its strength increased to rank seven level.

As it entered Mini Yellow Heaven, it resonated with metal path dao marks and its might increased to rank eight.

"Damn it! Only I can deal with this disaster. But it is already too late to go and resolve it now!" Combat Beast King’s face was slightly pale.

He came from Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, the Gu Immortals there felt that it was their responsibility and glory to protect mortals.

Combat Beast King’s heart was in deep pain: "I cannot salvage this. This disaster covers a thousand li. Dozens of resource points as well as the human Ni clan and rockman metal water branch tribe will be annihilated."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ni clan’s Gu Masters were using all their strength to deal with the gold fragment current.

They first used mortal Gu to make a grand embankment, then they dug a canal to draw away a portion of the river, the rising gold fragment current was gradually receding.

However, a large number of lifeforms lived in the gold fragment current.

Ni clan’s army had invaded the territory of the river fish, frightening these fish monsters.

All kinds of river monsters swam to the surface and attacked, some even charged to the shore and attacked Ni clan’s Gu Masters while letting out strange sounds.

Ni clan specialized in earth path, their basic Gu worm was rank one mud Gu. Earth path specialized in defense, Ni clan Gu Masters had constructed lines of defense and were prepared for the fight.

But the number of river monsters was high and they even had stronger myriad beast kings.

Under the frantic offensive waves of the river monsters, the defensive lines of Ni clan’s Gu Masters broke one by one.

"Persevere!"

"Kill!"

"Avenge our clansmen!"

"Hold on and carve the future of our clan!"

Mud and blood splattered everywhere, groups of Gu Masters rotated as they resisted the attacks of the river monsters.

The Ni clansmen were brought into the sovereign immortal aperture and had been secretly nurtured by Fang Yuan, the number of their Gu Masters had increased by a lot. Adding on the strong survival pressure in Mini Yellow Heaven, these Ni clansmen had to unite and foster a harmonious environment.

In this defensive battle, Ni clan’s army showed astonishing battle strength and resolute fighting spirit!

Finally, there were fewer river monsters and Ni clan’s army was able to hold on.

They then began their counterattack.

The river monsters did not have much internal organization from the start, and under this sudden change of situation, they began to collapse rapidly.

The Ni clan Gu Masters carved a path of blood, leaving behind countless river monster corpses in their way.

These corpses were Gu materials, they were rich battle spoils.

Ni clan Gu Masters killed their way to the gold fragment current, various kinds of Gu worms were activated, their attacks landed on the river, raising countless dazzling golden waves.

"We won!"

"Quick, set up the Gu formation, it is not the time to rejoice yet."

"Yes, we must quickly set up the Gu formation, otherwise new waves of river monsters will come out."

Ni clan Gu Masters were setting up the formation with all their efforts.

They had meticulously prepared for over half a year for this, making proper plans and arrangements.

However, just as the Gu formation was about to finish setting up, the whole gold fragment current and the cloud soil they were on began to vibrate.

"What’s going on? The river monsters are attacking again?"

"Something is wrong! Something is wrong!"

"Look up, oh heavens!"

Gu Masters exclaimed in shock, when they looked towards the sky, they all stiffened like rocks.

Because they saw the meteor rain falling from the sky.

Some of these meteors were only the size of a small field, while some were as large as a mountain.

And there were tens of thousands of them!

The large number of meteors whistled through the air, leaving behind blazing trails in their path as they pressed through the atmosphere and rained down with an irresistible momentum.

"We’re doomed!" The faces of Ni clan’s Gu Masters were deathly pale.

"Does heaven want to exterminate my Ni clan?" In the deathly silent battlefield, an elderly Ni clan Gu Master howled with grief and fury.

"I am not ready to die like this!" The current generation Ni clan leader, who was also the current generation Ni Xiang, clenched his fists, "We were close to success, my clan sacrificed so much to curb the flood, the beautiful future was already in sight. But now, we are going to die."

Everyone was hopeless.

Nature’s might was so horrifying that these Ni clan Gu Masters did not even have the thought of resisting, they all felt their insignificance, this was the sorrow and helplessness of the weak.

But right at this time, the sky that was lit by the meteor rain dimmed suddenly.

Howl howl howl...

Ni clan Gu Masters heard waves of cries which seemed to have come from the nine layers of hell.

Temperature began to fall down rapidly, and the countless Gu Masters felt their hearts shaking!

"What... what is that?"

"Oh lords in heaven!"

"A black giant?!"

The Ni clan Gu Masters were horrified and in despair as they watched the scene before them with wide eyes.

They saw a giant appearing slowly, it was pitch-black like the abyss. Its body was so large that when it bent its leg, a huge shadow was cast on the ground.

As the giant stood up, its height was even more horrifying, directly reaching the sky with clouds floating beside its shoulders.

The black giant had two heads, its terrifying four eyes let out a dark, malevolent light that seemed to shoot through the sky!

Its hundreds of hands were raised high with their claws opened, forming a scene like that of an extremely ferocious and strange forest.

One of the pitch-black giant’s head opened and breathed out a dark soul river.

The soul river was tumultuous, whipping up astonishing waves that drowned a large number of meteors.

The giant’s other head opened and sucked in. Many small meteors were directly absorbed into its stomach.

Bam bam bam...

Its ghostly claws and giant arms moved through the air, catching the hill sized meteors!

Waves surged up and down in the Ni clansmen’s hearts.

"It is truly capable of holding up heaven and earth, picking moon and stars at will!"

"This world was actually concealing such a terrifying monster!"

"Compared to this giant, our Ni clan cannot even be considered as ants."

Almost the entire meteor rain was stopped by the giant, only some fragments fell to the ground.

Some of these fragments fell on the gold fragment current and some fell on the cloud soil, they would definitely bring unknown influences to the original ecology.

The meteor rain died down and the giant also left, the enormous body slowly disappearing from the Ni clansmen’s sight.

After a long while, the surviving Ni clan Gu Masters erupted with cheers.

And the greatest contributor to this, the black giant, turned into a ray of soul light that entered Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body.

Indeed.

This black soul giant was the soul of Fang Yuan’s main body!

After Fang Yuan inherited Shadow Sect’s true inheritance, he had gained the supreme cultivation method of soul path.

This method divided soul cultivation to two layers: First layer was human soul, the cultivation starting from single man soul to hundred man soul, thousand man soul... until the highest hundred million man soul. Hundred million man soul was the limit of human soul, where it turned from phantom to solid and could interfere with the material world.

The second layer was desolate soul. Because fate Gu was damaged by Red Lotus Demon Venerable, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable found a way to break through the limit of human soul. Once the soul broke through to desolate soul, the soul’s essence would transform, the soul alone possessing desolate beast level battle strength.

Fang Yuan’s soul had already reached desolate soul level, his soul cultivation had never stopped and now had already reached sixty million desolate soul!

Ten desolate soul, hundred desolate soul, thousand desolate soul, ten thousand desolate soul, hundred thousand desolate soul, million desolate soul, ten million desolate soul, and hundred million desolate soul!

Reaching hundred million desolate soul meant the Three Headed Thousand Arms Demon Soul which possessed quasi-rank nine battle strength, the soul could directly resist calamities and tribulations, defying the heavens and stamping the earth, slaughtering deities and ghosts, shocking the world with unmatched might!

This was the peak level of soul foundation, and also the limit that the world could contain.

Hundred million desolate soul had three heads and thousand arms, Fang Yuan had not reached that level yet.

Fang Yuan’s soul cultivation was similar to the previous Spectral Soul’s, they both had two heads and over six hundred arms.

"Soul cultivation is really amazing."

"Just the soul itself has pseudo venerable battle strength. If it uses immortal essence, it can even activate killer moves."

"More importantly, such killer moves aren’t used through Gu worms, but through the arrangements of dao marks like a natural ability."

Fang Yuan ruminated.

His soul manifestation had breathed out a tumultuous soul river, which was referenced from Spectral Soul’s ability during the pursuit against Fang Yuan.

According to Spectral Soul’s techniques, Fang Yuan transformed the referenced soul path killer move into soul path dao marks and engraved them on his soul.

Thereupon, this soul river killer move became an innate ability of Fang Yuan’s soul.

As long as the related arrangement of dao marks was not destroyed, Fang Yuan could quickly activate this killer move without a need for Gu worms. This was an extremely simple, convenient, and quick method!

"Soul cultivation innate abilities, totem killer moves, as well as formation path great grandmaster that can use natural dao marks to set up the formation... they are all the same in the end."

"With the supply from Fang clan, I don’t lack soul cores, and it is not difficult to cultivate to the peak hundred million desolate soul."

"This method can be one of my trump cards, it cannot be revealed casually."

The five regions and two heavens were monitored by heaven’s will at all times, if Fang Yuan used this method in the outside world, it would be known by heaven’s will. There was no such threat inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

"Let’s look at the situation now." Fang Yuan activated Cooking Luck Pot and observed his luck.

"Hmm?" Fang Yuan frowned.

His luck did not look good.

At this time, his silver light pillar had become increasingly loose and was actually showing a sign of collapse!

Those three clouds above the silver light pillar had also changed.

The starlight cloud occupied the highest position, this signified Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was the greatest threat.

Below this was Spectral Soul’s pitch-black luck cloud. Although it was suppressed by the starlight cloud, it had spread some darkness that penetrated into Fang Yuan’s silver light pillar like roots, showing signs of taking root and sprouting!

And the golden cloud that represented Giant Sun had become much thicker, although it was below the other two clouds, it showed signs of accumulating energy and biding its time.

And besides the previous clouds, an anomaly had also appeared around the silver light pillar.

The indistinct shadow of a raised hill was projected on the surface of the silver light pillar...

Southern Border.

The travel-worn Feng Tian Yu stopped his footsteps.

He was gasping for air: "I have finally arrived."

Feng Tian Yu’s journey was arduous. He wanted to find other branch villages of Ni clan, but found nothing.

That went without saying. Fang Yuan had already moved all the Ni clansmen into his aperture long ago.

Feng Tian Yu was not able to make any contribution and was extremely disappointed. But on his way, he found that this mud monster Ni Jian could devour mud Gu materials to increase its strength!

"All the Ni clansmen have disappeared mysteriously. If I return in disgrace like this, I won’t be able to give any explanation, and it is also not my style. I might as well raise this mud monster’s battle strength, and when Shang Xin Ci questions me after I return, I can give a proper reply."

Therefore, Feng Tian Yu moved around until he arrived at... Rotten Mud Mountain.

Rotten Mud Mountain might not be too famous, but it was still considered a famous mountain. Although there were poison path dao marks, it mostly contained earth path dao marks. These mud Gu materials were everywhere on the mountain and were suitable for feeding Ni Jian.

"It seems like a beast tide occurred here, the Gu Master village down the mountain is also destroyed. Alright, let me explore it alone."

Feng Tian Yu had rank five cultivation and also had Ni Jian with him. He moved up the mountain and gave the suitable mud Gu materials to Ni Jian to devour.

After several days and nights in the mountain, Feng Tian Yu arrived in an area.

Suddenly, Ni Jian spat out the mud Gu materials.

"What’s going on? The mud here actually contains qi path dao marks?" Feng Tian Yu was astonished after investigating the reason.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"This luck..." Fang Yuan frowned slightly.

Over this period of development, his luck had some growth, but the suppression from the three venerables had become even more clear now.

"I am growing day by day, but the three venerables are indeed beyond ordinary, they have stabilized the situation again."

"There may be some changes if my luck manages to solidify."

Fang Yuan sighed inwardly.

At present, he needed to stabilize the sovereign immortal aperture. The troubles in the sovereign immortal aperture were continuing to increase, unlike Fang Yuan’s previous expectations where he thought the abnormal changes would decrease with time.

With no choice, Fang Yuan placed many of the variant human alliance’s Gu Immortals inside. With these Gu Immortals working day and night along with himself taking frequent action, they managed to stabilize the unrest in the sovereign immortal aperture for the time being.

Moreover, he still needed to create a suitable combat system.

And the most important thing was to become venerable in refinement path!

Becoming a venerable would produce qualitative change.

Refinement path was divided into two major Gu refinement styles: hairy man heaven and earth style and human isolation style. Fang Yuan’s hairy man heaven and earth style had already reached the peak and he could not improve anymore, currently, he was exploring the peak of human isolation style.

He gained a huge insight from Qing Chou’s style and the accumulate virtue Gu refinement technique of Paradise Earth’s true inheritance.

And the Ni clansmen could condense Immortal Gu in their bodies, it was the result of Ni clan Gu Immortal Ni Ren using a human path Gu refinement technique back then. In fact, this was very similar to Red Lotus Demon Venerable’s method of destroying fate Gu and preventing it from emerging again!

"If I can reverse deduce Ni Ren’s Gu refinement technique from Ni clan, I will be able to fill a huge gap in refinement path. Maybe, I can even ascend to refinement path supreme grandmaster!"

The best situation was if Fang Yuan could ascend to venerable before entering Crazed Demon Cave.

That would be the most stable.

If he could not become a refinement path venerable before then, the second best would be to raise his strength to the limits.

One was to get rid of the problems in the sovereign immortal aperture and annex all the two heavens’ grotto-heavens, reaching the maximum accumulation.

Second was to form his own combat system.

Crazed Demon Cave was the greatest challenge Fang Yuan would face.

Because he was not facing just one Immortal Venerable, but several!

Currently, it looked like there was only Star Constellation, Spectral Soul, Giant Sun, Paradise Earth, and Limitless. But almost all the other venerables had entered Crazed Demon Cave and explored it.

When the time arrived, who would decide to jump out would be really uncertain.

Especially when the River of Time was so chaotic, even if Fang Yuan’s Spring Autumn Cicada was raised to rank eight, it could not be used.

Fang Yuan only had one chance!

Finally, Fang Yuan’s gaze moved to the surface of the pillar of silver light.

The previous clouds represented heaven’s envy Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan already knew of it.

But what was this indistinct projection of a protruding hill?

Fang Yuan was not sure.

Southern Border, Rotten Mud Mountain.

"Nature is really amazing. There are actually qi path Gu materials in this Rotten Mud Mountain!" Feng Tian Yu praised.

These Gu materials had no value to Ni Jian.

Because Ni Jian could only recover his strength by increasing his earth path dao marks.

What Feng Tian Yu did not know was that these mud containing qi path dao marks were not a natural creation. It was the result of Kong Sheng Tian’s will activating his killer move with the help of Hu Land.

Kong Ri Tian, Central Continent’s four great obscenities, and Wang Xiao Er were able to escape because of this. It was unknown where they were now.

"This is strange, this amount of qi path mud is quite a lot. Is there a qi path immortal material buried deep under the ground? How could there be so much qi path mud with no rhyme or reason?"

Feng Tian Yu moved around, feeling increasingly odd.

He was a refinement path master, and had a lot of knowledge and experience.

He searched around before finally stopping at one area and ordered Ni Jian to dig.

However, even after digging for two days and nights, Feng Tian Yu did not discover any good loot.

After Wu clan’s Gu Immortals secretly took away Hu Land, they had naturally cleaned up the scene. Even Gu Immortals would not be able to find out anything from just this qi path mud.

After all, qi tides had swept the world before, and qi path Gu materials emerged everywhere.

Western Desert.

Sand Heap blessed land was exposed because of qi tides, and Gu Masters continued to enter and explore it.

However, the environment here was extremely treacherous.

Wind raged and carried rough sand that cut like knives.

On the ground, sand waves rose and fell. If one was even a little careless, they would be buried under sand waves tens of feet high.

The only areas where one could stay in were the sand heaps that appeared inside the sand waves.

The sand heaps were of all sizes, even the smallest ones were the size of a hill.

There was space inside the sand heaps, not only was it tranquil, there were also a large number of cultivation resources.

At this time, inside a sand heap, a group of Gu Masters were surrounding a rank five Gu material. The atmosphere was solemn.

"I saw this wisdom bead grass first."

"Bullshit! We were clearly the ones who discovered it first."

"Everyone deserves a share, what is the use in talking about who discovered it first?"

While the Gu Masters were arguing, someone suddenly attacked.

The others were caught unprepared, and the person who got sneak attacked was heavily injured, shouting furiously: "Mo Li, you have such guts, you dared to attack me!"

Other Gu Masters immediately split up and stared at the attacker while also being vigilant of one another.

This Gu Master was a middle aged bearded man, he was wearing a white scarf on his head, and his triangular eyes let out a sinister light.

He sneered: "I was most wary of you. Now that you are heavily injured, my greatest obstacle is gone. Hahaha, all of you, die!"

The Gu Masters were stunned before erupting with fury.

"Mo Li, you have lost your mind!"

"Alright, let me see what ability you have to speak such words."

"Hehe, you have angered all of us. Everyone, attack together, let’s get rid of this bastard first!"

Facing the group attack, Mo Li felt even more thirst to battle.

"Come, I will let you know my true strength." His whole body began shining with blue electricity.

He slowly rose to the air.

The chaotic and disorderly electric arcs became clear electric threads that covered Mo Li like they were clothes.

The killer move was activated successfully, Mo Li shouted: "Golden-red armor!"

Crack crack.

Pieces of armor floated out from his body, the hundred or so pieces followed the electric circuit and pieced together into one complete armor.

In an instant, Mo Li was dressed in full-body armor.

This armor let out metallic light, the golden and red lights emitted a domineering aura.

The armored Mo Li charged at the Gu Masters like an eagle.

At first, the Gu Masters attacked wildly, but the golden-red armor did not suffer any damage, there was only some soot left on its surface.

The Gu Masters were pale with shock as they began to evade and defend.

The armored Mo Li only charged around like a brute and many Gu Masters immediately died from the collision.

The remaining Gu Masters lost their will to fight and began to run everywhere.

Mo Li laughed coldly inside the armor, he then activated the armor’s killer move.

At the next moment, the golden-red armor stretched out both hands, a circular marking shone on both his palms before several electric arrows flew out abruptly.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

The electric arrows flew with extreme speed, killing all the fleeing Gu Masters.

The battlefield became quiet immediately.

Mo Li slowly landed on the ground, the golden-red armor separated into pieces and disappeared. After that, the electricity weaved clothing also dissipated slowly.

Mo Li half-knelt on the ground, his breathing was rough and his face was sweating profusely.

"Although this golden-red armor has absolute might, the expenditure is too high. In just tens of breaths of time, my primeval essence, stamina, mental energy, and thoughts have been emptied. If not for your complete support, I would have only lasted half the time." Mo Li mumbled.

Peng Da’s soul floated out: "Don’t we have wisdom bead grass now? We can refine electric brain[1] Gu with it, with its addition, the consumption of golden-red armor will reduce by more than half and the time it can be maintained will increase by at least double!"

"Yes." Mo Li smiled and picked up the wisdom bead grass.

After Mo Li killed Peng Da and seized his Thieving Heaven true inheritance, he had been cultivating painstakingly. The killer move golden-red armor was his greatest achievement.

With this killer move, Mo Li’s battle strength was able to surpass rank five Gu Masters for a short period of time.

And the reason Peng Da was cooperating with Mo Li was because Mo Li had encountered a life and death crisis before this, if Mo Li died, Peng Da’s soul would also disappear. Mo Li promised Peng Da that as long as he helped, Mo Li would help resurrect Peng Da.

Peng Da and Mo Li reached an agreement.

"Let’s go, we have ransacked this place already." Mo Li came out of the sand heap and arrived outside.

The strong wind almost blew him into the sand waves.

Mo Li activated his defensive method to endure the devastating sandstorm as he observed the surroundings.

He could not see other sand heaps and could only sand waves crashing down loudly.

Mo Li endured for about seven minutes before he finally saw a new sand heap.

"Such a large sand heap! This is the largest sand heap I have seen! There must be a lot of resources inside." Mo Li was exulted and was just about to jump into it.

Suddenly, the sand heap exploded.

Several figures flew out of it.

"Gu Immortals!" Mo Li’s heart shook, he immediately retreated.

The Gu Immortals were fighting in the air, their fight seemed to shake heaven and earth, and even dispelled the large sandstorm.

"This is the power of a Gu Immortal, so frightening. Even if I have golden-red armor, I cannot endure the collateral damage of their confrontation." Mo Li watched secretly, his heart jumped wildly and his mouth was dry.

Mo Li observed carefully and gradually saw the actual battle situation — several Gu Immortals were attacking one person.

This besieged Gu Immortal provoked them while laughing wildly without any worries.

Amidst the chaotic battle, a shadow suddenly intruded.

This intruding Gu Immortal left shortly afterwards, disappearing in the blink of an eye.

The Gu Immortal, who was sneak attacked by this figure, roared: "Ling Hu Xu, you dare to steal my Fang clan’s possessions!"

Ling Hu Xu laughed loudly: "Who asked you to be the nearest person to me? I didn’t expect you to actually carry so many soul cores. Looks like Fang clan’s plans in green ghost desert were quite successful."

The Fang clan Gu Immortal was restless and furious: "Ling Hu Xu, I will advise you to leave those soul cores alone! You are provoking a huge trouble."

"Haha, will I be intimidated so easily? Goodbye!"

[1] This has the same characters as computer.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Ling Hu Xu was a Western Desert demonic immortal who cultivated theft path.

Gu Immortal Fang Dong Xi of Fang clan could not restrain his anger. Sand Heap blessed land appeared too suddenly, Fang clan was unable to take out manpower within a short period, and could only mobilize him, who was the nearest to the blessed land.

He had not expected that the batch of soul cores he harvested in green ghost desert would be stolen by Ling Hu Xu during the chaotic battle.

"These soul cores are to be handed to Fang Yuan! I cannot lose them!" Fang Dong Xi was quite unlucky, he had a lot of resources in his immortal aperture, but what was stolen was the stuff that could not be lost.

Fang clan and Fang Yuan’s cooperation could not be exposed.

Fang Dong Xi could not announce it and could only give chase.

Ling Hu Xu’s cultivation had recently advanced to rank seven and his speed was extremely fast. Fang Dong Xi had already decided to chase him without resting.

But just as he was about to leave, he was obstructed by Shi Kang’s killer move.

"Shi Kang, what are you trying to do?!" Fang Dong Xi shouted.

Shi Kang smiled coldly: "Fang Dong Xi, you and these people attacked me for so long, and you want to leave just like this?"

Fang Dong Xi’s eyelids twitched in anger: "Shi Kang, you should rejoice that I am not going to attack you. Did you make some agreement with Ling Hu Xu in secret? The grand Shi clan is actually cooperating with a demonic bastard!"

The moment Fang Dong Xi spoke, he immediately made false charges.

But because of this disturbance, Ling Hu Xu had already disappeared.

Shi Kang laughed madly: "I have been in closed cultivation for several years, this is my first battle after coming out, it must be famous throughout the world. Don’t even think of fleeing, come fight! All of you are the stepping stones for my name to spread far and wide."

The other Gu Immortals’ faces darkened upon hearing that.

Fang Dong Xi said through gritted teeth: "Shi Kang, you are the one who spoke insolently and provoked us, which was why we encircled you. But because we are all from the righteous path, we did not use our full strength. Now, you have not only allied with Ling Hu Xu, you are showing so much contempt towards us, you are really looking for death! Everyone, attack!"

"Good, I also want to see what methods Shi Kang has gained over these years."

"Shi Kang, I have not seen you for several years and your guts have become so big. You think only you made progress?"

This time, Fang Dong Xi took the initiative to attack first, other Gu Immortals also attacked seriously from the sides.

Fang Dong Xi fought for a while before swapping with another Gu Immortal. Several Gu Immortals fought Shi Kang in turns!

Shi Kang did not get any breather, the pressure on him was several times higher than before.

The battle was rapidly becoming disadvantageous to him, but he was laughing with excitement: "Come, come!"

The Gu Immortals continued to battle intensely, and having observed the battle for a long while, Mo Li flew to that largest sand heap while clenching his teeth.

The Gu Immortals had flown out of this sand heap, they must have left many resources which had no importance to them.

"Fortune is found within danger!" Mo Li was originally a merchant. Right now, his spirit of taking risks was stimulated.

Mo Li entered the sand heap, he could still hear the sounds of the Gu Immortals’ battle. Shortly afterwards, he found that his choice was correct.

As he moved deeper, he collected a large number of Gu materials on the way.

Previously, there were many wild beasts and vicious plants inside the sand heap. But because the Gu Immortals had already explored it, the beasts and plants were already killed off.

There were corpses of wild beasts everywhere, from thousand beast kings to even myriad beast kings.

These resources were insignificant to Gu Immortals who tossed them aside casually, but they were incomparably abundant gains to Mo Li.

It was like he had picked countless battle spoils for free.

"I have struck it rich, we’ve struck rich!" Mo Li was extremely excited.

He also saw many giant craters as well as terrifying poisonous blood.

It was obvious that the desolate beasts and ancient desolate beasts were taken away by the Gu Immortals, but the huge ruins quietly displayed the horror of immortal fight.

"If I were exploring it, I might have become food for these ferocious beasts."

Thanks to the Gu Immortals who explored it already, Mo Li entered the core area of the sand heap.

Originally, this was the place with the most valuable resources, but Mo Li did not make any gains.

This place was already ransacked by the Gu Immortals.

"If an immortal material was left out, even if it was only a leaf, it would be an enormous fortune!" Mo Li was not resigned, he was going to search this area completely.

He really ended up discovering a large rock buried under the ground.

"This is a rank four Gu material, flying rock, it contains qi path and earth path dao marks." Mo Li sighed, this gain was far below his expectations, but it was better than nothing at least.

Mo Li was just about to lift this flying rock when the rock split apart.

A young man fell out from the split rock!

"What is this?" Mo Li was shocked before being curious.

This youngster was clearly a mortal, how could he appear here sealed in the flying rock?

Mo Li woke up this mortal young man.

The young man stated his identity: "I am Wang Xiao Er, from Central Continent. Uncle, thanks for saving me. Where is this?"

Mo Li gave a malevolent laugh as he grabbed Wang Xiao Er’s clothes: "Speak, how did you appear here?"

Wang Xiao Er stammered: "I... I don’t know."

Back then at Southern Border’s Rotten Mud Mountain, Kong Sheng Tian’s will had activated the immortal move using Hu Land and transported everyone.

But he had forewarned that the killer move would transport them to random locations.

Like that, Wang Xiao Er was sent to Western Desert and coincidentally fell here.

And for some unknown reason, he was sealed by the flying rock and fell into deep sleep.

Although Wang Xiao Er knew some reasons, he wanted to preserve the secret of the whereabouts of the four great obscenities.

Mo Li had plenty of worldly experiences, he could tell from Wang Xiao Er’s expression that he was lying.

Bam.

Mo Li punched Wang Xiao Er so hard that Wang Xiao Er’s nose bled: "Tell the truth, tell me everything you know, otherwise I am going to make you wish for death!"

Peng Da’s soul suddenly came out and stopped Mo Li: "Stop!"

Mo Li stared at Peng Da’s soul with an ominous gaze: "Brat, what are you trying to do?"

Peng Da’s soul said through clenched teeth: "Uncle Mo Li, you are a rank five Gu Master, and he is only a child, a mortal. Why do you need to resort to cruel means against him? The Uncle Mo Li that I met was a person who saved me in the desert, and told me about living outside and helping each other. Uncle, don’t deceive your conscience because of hatred! You are not this kind of person!"

"Shut up!" Mo Li shouted and smacked Peng Da’s soul to the side, "How do you know that I am not this kind of person? Even if I was not like this before... humans change!"

Mo Li walked towards the frightened Wang Xiao Er: "Since you don’t want to speak, I can only soul search."

Wang Xiao Er suddenly screamed, pointing towards Peng Da’s soul: "Ghost, there is a ghost, a ghost!"

Peng Da’s soul: "..."

"Stop making a fuss! Do you think that I will turn you into a ghost as well?" Mo Li punched Wang Xiao Er to the ground.

He had just finished speaking when a strange existence appeared while laughing: "Good, amazing. Young man, I have a high opinion of you."

Mo Li, Wang Xiao Er, and Peng Da’s soul turned solemn, the three pairs of eyes stared at this existence that had appeared all of a sudden.

Wang Xiao Er shouted: "A talking pig? But why is there only the head and no body?"

Mo Li, however, shook with excitement: "Idiot, this is Sand Heap blessed land’s land spirit!"

Mo Li walked towards the land spirit: "Speak, land spirit, what is your condition for acknowledging a new master?"

The pig-head land spirit floated above Wang Xiao Er and looked down: "My condition is simple, the person who can take the most beatings will be my master."

It then laughed towards Wang Xiao Er: "Young man, I think highly of you."

Peng Da’s soul realized at once: "I understand, no wonder the Gu Immortal named Shi Kang was so rampant outside, he is trying to be beaten up through all means."

The pig-head land spirit smiled: "That Gu Immortal took a beating from ancient desolate beasts for a while, so he saw me and learned of the conditions to be my master. But he doesn’t realize that it is not the one who can take more fierce beatings who will become the blessed land’s master. Taking a beating is a grand cause. Not only do you need the ability to resist the beatings, you also need to have a firm and indomitable spirit to take the beatings!"

"Look at this youngster, he is obviously lying but even if he is beaten and is facing someone he cannot defy, he is still stubborn. This spirit to take a beating is worthy of admiration."

"So there is this way." Mo Li’s eyes shone brightly as he saw hope of contending for the ownership of the blessed land.

The battle in the sky was still continuing.

But the attacking Gu Immortals had started to feel something amiss.

"Shi Kang, is this your strength after closed cultivation? You have been beaten to the point where it is difficult for you to even speak, if not for us holding back, you would have already died!" A Gu Immortal scoffed.

Shi Kang’s face was already swollen and blue from the beating, his vision was blurry but he still laughed: "Nonsnc! I few grat. Peak conditon, fight five hundr ronds, no problm."

Another Gu Immortal said: "On account of our two clans’ close relationship, Shi Kang, just retreat. How much blood have you coughed from the beatings? Anymore and you might not have any left."

Shi Kang opened his mouth to retort but coughed out a mouthful of blood: "Bulsht! I haf lot o’ blood, can cough coupl o’ mthfuls."

Fang Dong Xi sneered: "Shi Kang, even if you are most specialized in defensive killer moves and can turn into a rockman, you cannot hold out for long. You have already become the laughing stock of Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world in this battle, if we fight any longer, you will be crippled. If you are sensible, then take out some resources to compensate for our losses. My Fang clan will let bygones be bygones!"

Western Desert’s righteous path had rules, they did not go overboard in their contest over the inheritances. These resources in Sand Heap blessed land were not worth it to stake their lives.

Shi Kang was beaten so miserably that it had already surpassed the usual standard of contending. Could they kill him and attract the retaliation of Shi clan, causing this dispute to escalate? This was something that all the Gu Immortals including Fang clan did not want to see.

Shi Kang raised his head and was about to speak, but the slight exertion caused his right leg to crack in a crisp sound.

Shi Kang held his right leg and pressed it on the broken area while activating a killer move, rocks filled the gap and his rockman transformation was back in one piece for the moment.

Shi Kang still did not want to show weakness, he shouted at Fang Dong Xi: "Cme, I cn stil fiht!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

With the situation in this state, Fang Dong Xi and the rest stopped attacking.

"Strange!"

"This is really odd. Something does not make any sense."

"Shi Kang is not a suicidal person, there might be great benefits involved for him to push himself this hard."

As for what benefits, the Gu Immortals had a similar guess.

"Shi Kang entered with us and had only gone into that sand heap earlier. Could it be?"

The Gu Immortals suddenly flew down and entered the sand heap again.

Shi Kang was really anxious this time as he gave chase.

He yelled and cursed but no one cared.

The immortals arrived at the center of the sand heap within moments and witnessed a painful scene.

They saw Mo Li lying on the ground with his legs spread open, he was gnashing his teeth while his body shook from the intense pain.

Wang Xiao Er was standing in front of him and fiercely kicking the part between Mo Li’s legs, the most vital area of a man.

On the other side, Peng Da’s soul was also attacking Mo Li.

What attracted the Gu Immortals’ attention was the pig-head land spirit.

The pig-head land spirit was cheering loudly: "Good, this way of taking a beating really makes people marvel! What moves me even more is this spirit, what kind of spirit to take a beating is this! Exposing your vital area openly and allowing such fierce attacks. And you, Mo Li, have persevered without a thought of giving up. What fearless courage! Your dazzling spirit continues to move me."

"Ah ah ah! Then, then you... ahh! Are you moved... ahh! Will you recognize me... as your... your master?" Mo Li’s tears fell from the pain as he shouted.

The pig-head land spirit said with a solemn expression: "Soon, soon! You have already surpassed that Shi Kang."

Mo Li wanted to cry: "You, you, you... ahh, you said that just before... ughh!"

"Stop them!" Fang Dong Xi shouted first.

"A mere mortal wants to obtain a blessed land?" The Gu Immortals made their moves.

Shi Kang was also among them, his head was soaked with cold sweat as he rejoiced. The other Gu Immortals discovered this secret, if not for that, he might have been defeated by this audacious mortal.

Immortal moves shrouded the entire place, they descended like a tsunami.

Mo Li’s group was deathly pale.

"Mother!" Wang Xiao Er held his head and tried to run.

"Land spirit, save me!" Mo Li was lying on the ground, his legs tremblings intensely.

The pig-head land spirit shook its head and flew away: "I cannot save you. To become my master, you need to have the spirit to take a beating, but even more than that, you need to have the strength to take the beatings."

But right as Mo Li was about to die miserably, there was a loud sound, and all the killer moves were destroyed.

"Who?"

"Come out!"

Three mysterious figures appeared from the corner.

Their bodies were shrouded in a layer of profound light, hiding their appearance and gender.

They stood silently, but their auras were closely connected and actually suppressed the side of Western Desert’s righteous path.

Fang Dong Xi and the rest became solemn like they were facing a huge enemy.

"This profound light and this kind of image...."

"You? You are the legendary Yi clan!"

"Western Desert’s Yi clan? There really is this super clan?"

There existed a hidden super clan in Western Desert, with powerful strength and a long history, seemingly existing since ancient times.

But this was only a rumor between Western Desert’s super forces, and there had never been clear evidence.

"Since you know of our Yi clan, then retreat." One of the three mysterious figures spoke. Their voice was also modified, gender-neutral and hoarse.

Fang Dong Xi snorted coldly: "Cowardly people who dare not show themselves, who knows if you are really from Yi clan."

"You want us to retreat just like this? Aren’t you too arrogant?"

"You are even more arrogant than Shi Kang."

Shi Kang rubbed his nose and was about to speak when another person said: "Look at the price of Shi Kang’s arrogance, your outcome will be the same."

Shi Kang: "..."

A chaotic battle broke out.

Yi clan’s three Gu Immortals had tacit cooperation, they had clearly trained together for years. They immediately gained the upper hand.

Western Desert righteous path might have been suppressed but they had superiority in their numbers.

The pig-head land spirit floated near the edge of the battlefield and watched the battle excitedly.

Gu Immortals prioritized defense to become the blessed land’s master. They did not dodge the attacks they could dodge, and even moved towards the attacks.

They were also fighting for Mo Li; after all, he was the person who was thought highly of by the land spirit. If they could help him get the ownership, they would win this battle.

Finally, after a strange, fierce battle, Mo Li was taken away by Yi clan.

Wang Xiao Er was captured by Fang Dong Xi.

And the person who became the blessed land’s owner was Gu Immortal Shi Kang. He had not wasted his efforts after all.

Fang Dong Xi returned to Fang clan and reported the outcome of the battle.

The matter concerned Fang Yuan, Fang clan’s first supreme elder Fang Gong immediately convened the clan’s Gu Immortals to discuss about it.

"We should kill Ling Hu Xu!"

"The issue now is, how do we explain this to Fang Yuan."

"We will tell the truth and let Fang Yuan kill Ling Hu Xu! But we need to hide our transaction with Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan is the number one demon in the world who cultivates all paths. We are unable to deal with Ling Hu Xu because he cultivates theft path and is proficient in escaping. If Fang Yuan were to take action, Ling Hu Xu would definitely die an extremely miserable death."

"That is not appropriate." Fang Di Chang shook his head, rejecting this suggestion.

His soul was traded to Fang clan by Fang Yuan, and he obtained freedom once again. Right now, he had possessed a rank five Gu Master’s body and was preparing to undergo immortal ascension again, he was part of this discussion right now.

Fang Di Chang continued to analyze: "Do you think that possibility is likely, or is it more probable for Fang Yuan to find trouble with us instead?"

"What is the reason for Fang Yuan’s transaction with our clan? It is because our clan is the closest to green ghost desert, and he needs countless soul cores to cultivate his soul. After all, he inherited Shadow Sect’s true inheritance."

"If my grand Fang clan cannot even handle this properly, we will no doubt lose our value in Fang Yuan’s eyes. At that time, what do you think he will do?"

Fang clan’s immortals felt their hearts turning cold from this analysis.

Fang Gong nodded: "I approve of Fang Di Chang’s words. Fang Yuan could step on Heavenly Court, it is very easy for him to deal with Fang clan. We cannot fight him!"

"Besides this, our clan also benefited plenty from transacting with Fang Yuan. The numerous immortal materials in Fang Yuan’s hands are the most important transaction gains for our clan."

Fang Dong Xi was troubled: "But this time’s soul core quantity cannot meet the requirement. Tomorrow is the day to hand over the goods, what reason will we use to delay it? If Fang Yuan wants to investigate this, he can easily realize the truth. But if we don’t lie and say the truth, won’t our value fall greatly in Fang Yuan’s eyes?"

Fang Di Chang said: "We must tell the truth. But since the soul cores are not enough, we will use other things to compensate for them. Won’t it be okay as long as Fang Yuan is satisfied?"

Fang Hua Sheng was worried: "Fang Yuan has a large number of venerable true inheritances, his standards are extremely high. Our Fang clan does have some items that can satisfy Fang Yuan, but every one of these items is a foundation of our Fang clan. We cannot hand over our foundation because of Ling Hu Xu, can we?"

Fang Di Chang laughed: "You are thinking too deeply. In my opinion, this matter is easy to resolve."

Fang Gong asked: "What plan do you have?"

Fang Di Chang: "Didn’t we already soul search Wang Xiao Er? Although he is only a mortal, his body is mysterious and his experiences are also quite amazing. We know about Hu Land, this secluded domain of heaven and earth should already be in Wu clan’s hands now. We will hand this information to Fang Yuan, it should satisfy him."

"Is that going to work?" Some were doubtful.

Fang Di Chang shook his head: "Don’t treat Fang Yuan like us normal people. Spectral Soul and Qing Chou are already dead, Demon Immortal Qi Jue is suppressed, Qi Sea Ancestor was defeated by him. He is now the number one person in the world! Even if Wu clan is the number one super force of Southern Border... Hehe, they still won’t be able to protect Hu Land."

Fang Gong nodded: "Then, let’s do that. If Fang Yuan is not satisfied, we can only incur a greater loss once again."

He then sighed: "Such a pity about Hu Land. If only my clan knew of it, we would definitely conceal it and dig it up secretly. Now, we can only give it to Fang Yuan."

Fang Di Chang said in a heavy tone: "Fang Yuan should be satisfied. This person is terrifying! The most terrifying thing is not his strength, but his broadmindedness instead. He doesn’t bother about trifling matters in order to accomplish the major goal, his broadmindedness and shrewdness are unfathomably deep and vast like mountains and seas."

"What gives me chills is that even though he is the strongest person in the world, he is still willing to trade with us and will not resort to brute force if he can."

"This kind of person is not someone our Fang clan or Heavenly Court can deal with. I am afraid that only the rumored venerable revival can curb such a terrifying demon."

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Yellow Heaven.

At some corner of Ni clan, a Gu Master who had been unconscious for several days woke up dazedly from his bed.

"An Immortal Gu condensed inside my body!" The Gu Master looked weak and pale, but he could barely hide his joy.

"From today onwards, am I going to rise up towards the peak of my life?" The Gu Master was extremely excited, he had rank four cultivation and knew of Ni clan’s secret.

"In the whole of Ni clan, there are three Gu Masters who have passed the difficulty of bloodline condensation and survived, and with me now, there are four who possess Immortal Gu. Now that I have an Immortal Gu, I will be Ni clan’s fourth elder even though my cultivation has not reached rank five!"

The Gu Master’s mind was filled with plans for his beautiful future, little did he know that his condition over the past few days as well as the thoughts going through his mind right now were all seen by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan fell into thoughts: "Ni Ren’s method is indeed an ingenious human isolation style refinement technique. After the event of the gold fragment current, although Ni clan lost a lot of Gu Masters, the surviving Gu Masters passed the cruel trial. After they returned to the clan, the phenomenon of bloodline condensation appeared successively. Over forty people got a fever and fell unconscious, but only two woke up successfully and refined Immortal Gu inside their body."

Right at this time, a message disturbed his thoughts.

"Hmm? Hu Land?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Southern Border, Wu clan.

Over fifty Gu Masters were gathered in the hall.

"First supreme elder! Supreme elder Wu Qiao, supreme elder Mountain Moving." Gu Masters greeted together with solemn expressions and hardly concealable excitement.

Wei Shen Jing was among them.

He had finally emerged from the cruel competition and obtained the opportunity to become an immortal.

Besides him, there was Divine Doctor Sheng Shou and Wu Shen Tong, these two had been revived through the dead sea life retrieval formation. There was also Zhong Yi, the Western Desert Gu Master who had inherited Fire Thunder true inheritance.

These fifty or so people were geniuses of their generation and were Gu Master elites selected by Wu clan.

"You may stand." Wu Yong was sitting on the main seat, to his left was Mountain Moving Old Monster, and to his right was Wu clan’s rank seven Gu Immortal Wu Qiao.

"The information on immortal ascension and the matters to pay attention to regarding immortal ascension have already been given to you. Over the following period of time, you should start closed cultivation and come out only when you feel you have the certainty to ascend to immortal. Our Wu clan’s Gu Immortals will help you resist the immortal ascension tribulations with all their strength. You may leave now." Wu Yong raised his hand.

The group of around fifty Gu Masters retreated.

Wu Yong smiled towards Mountain Moving Old Monster: "Supreme elder Mountain Moving, I shall hand the matter of these Gu Masters’ immortal ascension to you."

Mountain Moving Old Monster was not a Gu Immortal originating from Wu clan, his surname was Qin and his name was Jing Sheng, he was previously a lone immortal.

When Fang Yuan was disguised as Wu Yi Hai, there was the issue of Mount Snail where he reached an agreement with Mountain Moving Old Monster. Mountain Moving Old Monster obtained most of the benefits of Mount Snail, but this immemorial desolate beast still belonged to Wu clan in name.

But in the end, Fang Yuan’s identity was exposed and Wu Yong went after him.

Mountain Moving Old Monster’s situation immediately became awkward.

Wu Yong was a formidable character, why would he let go of this opportunity? He immediately exerted pressure on Mountain Moving Old Monster; using both forceful and persuasive measures, he made Mountain Moving Old Monster become Wu clan’s external supreme elder.

Back to the present, Mountain Moving Old Monster quickly agreed to Wu Yong’s command: "I am in deep admiration of first supreme elder’s broadmindedness. I will stake all my strength to make sure the tribulations cannot harm anyone."

"Good." Wu Yong laughed, "I, Wu Yong, guarantee that the Wu clan I govern is fair with rewards and punishments."

"I shall take my leave and make preparations." Mountain Moving Old Monster left.

He knew the meaning behind Wu Yong’s action.

He was an external elder of Wu clan, external elders were usually ostracized.

But Wu Yong’s move was too revolutionary, he actually supported so many Gu Immortal seeds at once. What raised Mountain Moving Old Monster’s attention the most was that these fifty or so Gu Masters were mostly outsiders.

Wu Yong ordered Mountain Moving Old Monster to be in charge of this matter: on one hand, he was worried of Wu clan’s Gu Immortals being biased towards the clan members if they were put in charge; on the other hand, it was to reassure Mountain Moving Old Monster, using action to tell him — I, Wu Yong, am different from ordinary leaders!

When Mountain Moving Old Monster left, Wu Yong’s gaze moved towards Wu Qiao.

Wu Qiao had been keeping silent and was feeling uneasy under Wu Yong’s gaze.

Wu Qiao had been Wu clan’s third supreme elder with high authority and status. But he was enticed by Qiao clan and had supported Fang Yuan, who had disguised as Wu Yi Hai. This action was the same as betraying Wu clan’s benefits!

Later, Wu Qiao was in charge of guarding Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian but lost it to the enemies. This was a great stain to his reputation.

After Wu Yong took the position, he suppressed Wu Qiao to the limit. Wu Qiao’s situation declined day by day and he was even stripped of his third elder position.

"Wu Qiao." Wu Yong spoke, "What do you think of my decision to support so many Gu Immortal seeds?"

Under Wu Yong’s gaze, Wu Qiao’s forehead became covered in sweat. He took a deep breath before standing and bowing, saying in a sincere manner: "Lord Wu Yong, I think this action has far more benefits in long term. I give my full support to it!"

Wu Yong laughed, he raised his tea cup and took a sip, before asking leisurely: "Then tell me how you will give full support?"

Wu Qiao took a deep breath and said what he had already prepared before.

Wu Yong did not comment and only nodded as he put down the cup: "Do it."

Wu Qiao was exulted, he quickly requested for leave. He did not leave directly like Mountain Moving Old Monster, instead he stood at the door and bowed deeply towards Wu Yong before leaving slowly.

This attitude was extremely respectful.

Only Wu Yong remained in the discussion hall.

He was expressionless, but was sighing inwardly.

This time, he invested all the resources of the clan to support the immortal ascensions of over fifty Gu Masters, this move could be considered crazy.

His move had caused dissatisfaction in many Wu clan Gu Immortals.

The main reason was that among these over fifty Gu Masters, less than half were Wu clansmen while the rest were outsiders.

Many Wu clan supreme elders including Wu Ba Chong thought: Wu Yong’s action was shaking Wu clan’s foundation!

"These short-sighted people." As Wu Yong recalled the recent times, when these people admonished his actions openly or secretly, he could not help but snort coldly.

Wu clan’s greatest issue was the lack of Gu Immortals, there was not enough manpower to guard their territories. Let alone when they were planning to expand in the future.

However, Wu clan had few Gu Immortal seeds as well.

Even when they lowered the standard and revived some Wu clan Gu Master elites, the number of Gu Immortal candidates was only eighteen.

Although Gu Immortals could deal with the tribulations, the crucial point in immortal ascension was the balancing of three qi. Outsiders could not help in this, the Gu Master had to rely on themselves.

Eighteen Wu clan Gu Immortal seeds, according to history, only one or two among them might succeed in immortal ascension.

That would not do!

What use was there in gaining one or two rank six Gu Immortals for Wu clan?

This simply could not satisfy Wu Yong’s ambition!

Thus, Wu Yong disregarded his subordinates’ opposition and recruited outsider Gu Masters to be Gu Immortal candidates. Moreover, Wu clan treated them fairly and gave them full support.

"It is not that these people cannot see the situation, but they raised opposition because it threatened their own benefits."

"They have really disappointed me. Their vision is too narrow, without the five regional walls now, our Wu clan’s enemies are not just Southern Border forces, but the entire five regions. And among the five regions, the most terrifying enemies are in Central Continent."

"Central Continent’s sect system..." Wu Yong sighed.

With his foresight and wisdom, he was already clear of the superiority of the sect system. That was the reason he gave full support to outsider Gu Immortal candidates and recruited outsiders to become Wu clan’s external supreme elders.

But even with his prestige, he encountered such opposition and resistance, it could be imagined what the situation in other super forces would be like.

Wu Yong had excellent political skills, he dealt with this situation by deploying Mountain Moving Old Monster and supporting Wu Qiao.

Mountain Moving Old Monster was an external supreme elder, for the sake of his own future in Wu clan, he would definitely do his best to support those outsider Gu Immortal seeds in their ascension.

And Wu Qiao was an astute person.

He saw Wu clan’s situation and Wu Yong’s plan.

To get back onto Wu clan’s political stage, even if he did not approve of Wu Yong’s move, he had to grab this opportunity, becoming Wu Yong’s dog and standing against those opposing supreme elders.

Like this, Wu clan’s internal disorder was quickly resolved by Wu Yong.

"There will be five or six among these seeds who will succeed in immortal ascension. I hope one of my Wu clansmen becomes a qi path Gu Immortal. Hu Land can be used then."

"In the future, if I am lucky enough to refine eight-faced prestige wind, my strength will rise by another level. Adding on Hu Land, my Wu clan will be among the top super forces in all five regions."

Wu Yong’s mood turned much better when he thought of Hu Land.

He thought very highly of Hu Land.

If not for him cultivating wind path primarily and having accumulated a lot of wind path dao marks, he might have converted to qi path for Hu Land.

Wu Ji did not choose qi path and persisted on strength path, which had actually disappointed Wu Yong.

Hu Land’s value was extremely high, this could be seen from Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

As long as a set of killer moves involving this kind of secluded domain of heaven and earth was created, the Gu Immortal would have near pseudo venerable battle strength.

Hu Land could be taken as a quasi-rank nine Immortal Gu, while it would be extremely difficult for Wu clan to obtain a rank nine Immortal Gu. Even refining a rank eight Immortal Gu was a huge trial to Wu clan.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Be it Mini Blue Heaven’s Star Collection City, Mini Western Desert’s Inkman City, Mini Northern Plains’ Triple Sacred Mountain, or other areas, Gu Immortals were cheering in excitement.

Just the previous moment, Fang Yuan had issued the latest contribution board, mission board, and exchange list.

The contribution board and mission board were issued long before, but it was the first appearance of the exchange list!

It was this exchange list that made all the Gu Immortals in the sovereign immortal aperture excited.

The exchange list contained a large number of rank six and rank seven Immortal Gu, a dazzling lineup of immortal moves, Immortal Gu recipes, and countless immortal materials.

The Gu Immortals in the sovereign immortal aperture only needed to spend their accumulated contribution points to exchange for any cultivation resource on the exchange list.

"I have never seen such a rich list of immortal materials and such enormous immortal material reserves!" Even Lang Ya land spirit, who was extremely knowledgeable, was dumbstruck when he saw the exchange list.

"There are rank six to rank nine immortal killer moves, including common killer moves, battlefield killer moves, the present age Gu formations and Gu Houses, and even ancient battle formations. Eh? What is this totem killer move? I have never heard of it before." Many Gu Immortals exclaimed in shock.

The Gu Immortals who came from the variant human alliance cared much more about the Immortal Gu in the exchange list.

"Even these Immortal Gu can be exchanged?"

"Am I dreaming?"

"How difficult is it to refine Immortal Gu, but here, we only need to accumulate a certain amount of contribution points to exchange for an Immortal Gu?"

All of the Gu Immortals were moved.

They suddenly realized that becoming subordinates of Fang Yuan was a really fortunate thing!

"Our future is so bright after following master!"

"This is too good, looks like Lord Fang Yuan wants to nurture us."

"I have never seen a force have such wealth. Master’s foundation is truly inestimable."

The Gu Immortals’ eyes shined with excitement, their faces reddened, and some even cried in joy.

Some quick ones immediately looked at the mission board.

Previously, the tasks they completed were mandatory and they did not have much enthusiasm. But it was completely different now!

"Eh? The first task is so strange! Request for Lord Fang Yuan to protect us from tribulations, and we also get such rich contribution points in return?"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2133 Shi Zong“s Tribulation

Fang Yuan was secretly observing his subordinates’ reactions.

He had issued the exchange list after careful consideration.

Previously, Fang Yuan had thought the sovereign immortal aperture’s chaotic phenomena would pass with time. But they were instead becoming more severe.

Sometimes, some strange situations occurred, which were so serious that Fang Yuan’s main body had to deal with them.

If he could increase the strength of the sovereign immortal aperture’s Gu Immortals by a level or two, the chaotic state of the sovereign immortal aperture would be dealt with much more properly.

Fang Yuan had no way to completely resolve the issues in the sovereign immortal aperture, so he could only alleviate them.

Naturally, regardless of how he strengthened them, these subordinates would not have the ability to take part in the contest within Crazed Demon Cave. Fang Yuan also did not have such extravagant hopes.

Nurturing these subordinates required a large amount of resources.

Fang Yuan had devoured many of the two heavens’ grotto-heavens and plundered the countless years of accumulations of these grotto-heavens, he naturally did not lack the resources to nurture them.

On the basis of cultivation resources, Fang Yuan had already surpassed most of the super forces in the world.

Even if Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven had much more accumulation than Fang Yuan, they could not copy his action.

Fang Yuan possessed Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, it was extremely easy for him to refine rank six and rank seven Immortal Gu. That was why he could domineeringly place all kinds of Immortal Gu on the exchange list and let his subordinates exchange for them.

If Fang Yuan needed to use some Immortal Gu that they exchanged for in the future, he could just throw a compulsory mission at the person. Who would dare to go against Fang Yuan’s decree?

At that time, Fang Yuan would give even more contribution points in exchange, the subordinate whose Immortal Gu was seized might even be quite happy.

The heated reactions of his subordinates was within Fang Yuan’s expectations.

These Gu Immortals who were stimulated by the exchange list began to crazily accept the tasks, and took the initiative to go to various areas of the sovereign immortal aperture to work like bees.

As for the first task on the mission board, the Gu Immortals were discussing if Lord Fang Yuan had made a mistake?

But even after a few days, the task content had not changed.

The Gu Immortals became increasingly covetous, the contribution point reward of this task was sizable.

Shi Zong was the person to study the new exchange list for the longest time.

Recently, Shi Zong had been distressed over a huge issue.

He was the first supreme elder of Northern Plains’ rockman tribe, he was rank seven and was about to face his third grand tribulation.

Rank seven Gu Immortals faced an earthly calamity every ten years, a heavenly tribulation every fifty years, and a grand tribulation every one hundred years.

Earthly calamities and heavenly tribulations were not big issues to Shi Zong. But a grand tribulation was huge trouble, the previous two grand tribulations had almost destroyed Shi Zong’s confidence.

The third grand tribulation was imminent, Shi Zong was thinking of ways to delay the grand tribulation.

But he had turned the whole exchange list inside out and was still unable to find a trace of hope.

"The exchange list doesn’t have any methods to delay calamities and tribulations!" Shi Zong frowned.

"Does master not have such methods? Obviously not!" Shi Zong’s gaze locked on the first task in the mission board.

"Looks like master is encouraging us to accept this task."

Shi Zong was enticed.

His rockman tribe came from Northern Plains’ northern icy plain, Fang Yuan had forced them on his ship.

But by now, Shi Zong found that this ship had already become a warship with a bright future and unimaginable fortune.

Since ancient times, the main criteria of a leader was — making use of both benevolence and authority.

Fang Yuan had no lack of authority, so when the exchange list appeared, it changed many people’s hearts.

Shi Zong did not dare to betray Fang Yuan and had seen the benefits of following Fang Yuan, he thought for a long while and decided to take the risk, accepting that task!

He accepted the task openly and did not conceal it.

And soon, the news regarding him accepting the first task spread throughout the sovereign immortal aperture’s Gu Immortal world.

"Shi Zong is a veteran rank seven Gu Immortal. If he can pass the tribulation successfully, he will become a rank eight!"

"Let’s see what’s going on with this task."

"Sigh, I also wanted to accept this task. I did not expect Shi Zong to seize the initiative. This is a good opportunity to express loyalty to master."

Not long after Shi Zong accepted the task, he was summoned by Fang Yuan’s time path clone.

The time path clone was going to manage Shi Zong’s immortal aperture and make preparations for the tribulation.

Shi Zong opened his immortal aperture, Fang Yuan’s time path clone personally took control and stuffed earth path immortal materials inside his immortal aperture.

Worry soil, green pond rotten soil, diamond soil, great lake soil, concealing heaven dust, grand soil, region sand, impermanence rock, smoky warm jade, thousand year frost jade essence, dark inkstone, marrow sucking stone, regret water rock, round kun stone, hibiscus stalactite, stone heart liquid, eight-parts jade, and so on; the large number of earth path immortal material made Shi Zong speechless.

After coming to his senses, Shi Zong’s heart jumped in fright.

"Gu Immortal calamities and tribulations are the result of Heavenly Dao seeking balance. Right now, my earth path foundation has increased to such an astonishing amount; my grand tribulation will become even more terrifying. Ordinary Gu Immortals want their calamities and tribulations to be as weak as possible, but master is completely the opposite, it is as if he wants the grand tribulation to become a myriad tribulation!"

Several days later, the time to undergo tribulation was here.

Fang Yuan’s main body arrived at an ordinary sea area of Eastern Sea and opened his immortal aperture, letting Shi Zong out.

Shi Zong greeted Fang Yuan first before placing his aperture in the outside world.

The blessed land’s door was opened and started absorbing a large amount of the outside world’s heaven and earth qi.

Fang Yuan stood outside the entrance.

He could not go in.

He had too many dao marks; previously, when he attacked Fire Plain grotto-heaven, he was unable to go in as well, let alone this tiny rank seven blessed land.

The grand tribulation was on time.

First was the arrival of heaven path dao marks, then these heaven path dao marks transformed into dao marks of other paths based on the state of Shi Zong’s blessed land.

Most of these dao marks were of earth path.

The transformed dao marks used and expended heaven and earth qi to turn into calamities and tribulations.

If Fang Yuan used big family qi Gu right now, he could absorb the tribulation qi and weaken the grand tribulation.

Right now, Fang Yuan was looking forward to the grand tribulation becoming even stronger.

Soon the grand tribulation took shape, Shi Zong’s face turned pale.

"Yellow sky dust cloud! Heavens, it saw my immortal aperture was very prosperous and I had too many earth path resources, so this is specially targeting them."

Yellow sky dust cloud would gain increasingly powerful suction force along with time and absorb the immortal aperture’s earth path resources.

The more earth path resources it absorbed, the stronger it would become, its range would increase and it would become denser with much more powerful suction force.

Among all the grand tribulations, yellow sky dust cloud was absolutely among the top few hated grand tribulations.

Shi Zong tried several killer moves, although they were effective, the effect was very little on such a large yellow sky dust cloud.

"I can only rely on master now!" Shi Zong’s expression was dismal.

Right at this time, Shi Zong saw multi-colored and dazzling totems fly out of Fang Yuan’s body and enter the blessed land, before charging into the yellow sky dust cloud.

These totems were of various types and shapes. There existed ferocious tiger and leopard, agile deer and rabbit, lush trees, as well as spinning flying rocks.

But no matter which one, they all emitted rank eight aura!

Shi Zong’s body and mind shook together: "Oh heavens! More than twenty killer moves, all at rank eight level. Master actually has such terrifying strength!"

These were all totem killer moves.

Ever since Fang Yuan obtained the cultivation method of thousands of basic totems from Zhan Bu Du, he would cultivate this move whenever he had some free time.

Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven was the sacred land for cultivating totem killer moves, it was very difficult to cultivate totems outside of this place. Because there was no such food path environment, almost all the food recipes would lose their effect when placed in the outside world.

Fang Yuan, however, was different.

He had deep food path attainment, he modified these food recipes and turned them into killer moves.

With the help of these food path killer moves and countless Gu materials, Fang Yuan was able to cultivate over twenty totems.

These totems were all at rank eight level and were carefully selected by Fang Yuan, their power naturally would not be low. What was even more amazing was once these totem killer moves were formed, they were extremely easy and convenient to activate.

Fang Yuan willed, activating over twenty totems at once. In other words, he activated over twenty rank eight killer moves in an instant!

It was because he possessed the sovereign immortal body that he could fearlessly cultivate totems of so many paths. If it were other Gu Immortals, they would never be able to accomplish this.

Shi Zong watched with a stupefied expression.

Because at that moment, the extremely thick yellow sky dust cloud that covered the sky was shredded by these totems.

"Too vicious, too terrifying!" Shi Zong’s thoughts fluctuated intensely.

But although the grand tribulation was destroyed violently, it did not stop. Instead it was trying hard to condense again.

However, the moment a trace of yellow sky dust cloud condensed, it was instantly torn into pieces by the totems.

Heaven’s will did not give up but the totems were even fiercer.

Inexplicably, Shi Zong suddenly felt that the grand tribulation was somewhat pitiful.

Immortal killer move — Heaven-Human Sensation.

Immortal killer move — Human Executing Heaven’s Work.

Immortal killer move — Unrestrained Heavenly Mark!

Fang Yuan made his move from outside the entrance, refining all the heaven path dao marks from the grand tribulation.

But the unrestrained heavenly marks fell on Shi Zong’s blessed land.

But it was not a problem.

Fang Yuan took out an Immortal Gu House, it was the repaired Thieves Den.

Thieves Den’s killer move — Steal Dao!

The theft path killer move’s working principle was to use theft path immortal materials as the catalyst, the theft path dao marks in the immortal materials would be consumed instantly and the dao marks in the outside world would be stolen. The stolen dao marks must be attached to these theft path immortal materials.

So, if the stolen dao marks were disorderly, the immortal materials would have no value, like those immortal materials found everywhere in Crazed Demon Cave.

In short, Thieves Den had the ability to steal the outside world’s dao marks but did not have a method to use them.

Moreover, Thieves Den was already a peak level creation and could not be modified, it had no room or potential for improvement.

These stolen unrestrained heavenly marks formed a heaven path immortal material.

Fang Yuan took this heaven path immortal material and activated a food path killer move — Devour Heaven and Earth!

This killer move was Fang Yuan’s gain from his recent cultivation.

Fang Yuan’s food path attainment level was grandmaster, he had countless food path killer moves and deep wisdom path attainment, it was not difficult for him to create a killer move to devour heaven path immortal materials.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

After consuming this heaven path immortal material, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture gained nine more heaven path dao marks.

The grand tribulation that sent Shi Zong into despair, when turned into heaven path dao marks, merely amounted to nine. Moreover, this grand tribulation’s strength was much higher than normal, a normal grand tribulation would give less than nine heaven path dao marks when transformed.

"Probably around seven." Fang Yuan estimated.

This could not compare to the gains from annexing the two heavens’ grotto-heavens.

Each of the two heavens’ grotto-heavens gave Fang Yuan several thousand heaven path dao marks. Fang Yuan devoured grotto-heavens one after the other, his sovereign immortal aperture’s development had already reached eighty percent.

At present, his heaven path dao marks numbered over two hundred thousand!

Fang Yuan wanted to become venerable through refinement path, so he prioritized annexing refinement path grotto-heavens, which increased his refinement path dao marks to over six million!

"Currently, the sovereign immortal aperture cannot annex any more grotto-heavens. So I can only use this method to gain heaven path dao marks."

"Although the increase each time is small, Gu Immortals undergoing tribulations is a process that will never stop. Little droplets of water make a mighty ocean, I can accumulate a substantial amount with this method."

In the long run, this path of helping Gu Immortals undergo tribulation was quite bright.

The two heavens’ grotto-heavens accumulated for a million or so years to have such foundations. But if Fang Yuan annexed one, there would be one less.

There was, however, an unending stream of Gu Immortals.

Shi Zong’s tribulation succeeded and he advanced to rank eight.

When he returned to the sovereign immortal aperture, he immediately received the congratulations of many people and was asked about the exact details.

Shi Zong was already prepared, he had used Gu worms to record the complete video of his tribulation.

When this video was spread, it brought a strong impact to the sovereign immortal aperture’s Gu Immortal world.

"Master is so strong!"

"He used over twenty rank eight killer moves in an instant, is he still human?"

"These are totem killer moves? They look quite convenient!"

From the start, the Gu Immortals were attracted by the totem killer moves. When Thieves Den appeared, they exclaimed in shock again.

When the video reached the end and the yellow sky dust cloud was completely destroyed by Fang Yuan, the Gu Immortals sighed, deeply moved.

"Master’s methods are unimaginable, he can really destroy calamities and tribulations beforehand."

"In history, these calamities and tribulations will calm down only after they have vented everything. But Lord Fang Yuan has unfathomable powers, he can get rid of calamities and tribulations ahead of time."

"It can be inferred that this task is a huge fortune. Not only can we increase our cultivation level, we can also get a sizable amount of contribution points."

"Didn’t you hear what Shi Zong said? Although he passed the tribulation and became a rank eight Gu Immortal, he did not gain any new dao marks."

"Ah? There was such a thing. No wonder this task compensated us with contribution points."

Shi Zong did not hide this, he was somewhat hesitant at first, but after the tribulation, Fang Yuan personally ordered him to publicize the truth.

No gain in dao marks, this news was like a bucket of cold water that poured on these excited Gu Immortals.

The Gu Immortals began to calm down.

This result needed to be properly considered.

No gain of dao marks was a huge loss to Gu Immortals. After all, undergoing tribulation was the main way of gaining dao marks.

Over the next few days, there was no movement. But when Shi Zong used these contribution points to exchange for two rank seven earth path Immortal Gu and three earth path killer moves, another person accepted the task of undergoing tribulation.

After that, more and more Gu Immortals began to imitate this, and it soon formed a wave in the sovereign immortal aperture’s Gu Immortal world.

These Gu Immortals were shrewd, they had calculated the gains and losses.

Although they would lose a batch of dao marks, the value of the gained contribution points was far higher than the losses.

The Gu Immortal’s battle strength and immortal aperture’s environment would indeed weaken from the loss of these dao marks, but dao marks was only one of the factors.

There were many factors which determined a Gu Immortal’s battle strength. For instance, Immortal Gu was a main factor, immortal killer moves as well were much more important than some thousands of dao marks.

The immortal aperture’s environment would be influenced, but the Gu Immortals could exchange for all kinds of immortal materials to create even more resource points to fill this gap.

What made the Gu Immortals choose this path was that there was a special entry in the exchange list that allowed the Gu Immortals to supply the immortal materials and expend some contribution points, to ask for Fang Yuan’s clone to use food path killer moves to increase their corresponding dao marks!

These various reasons created an unending supply of Gu Immortals who underwent tribulation.

Fang Yuan’s heaven path dao marks continued to increase.

Southern Border.

Ke Xin Hong was flying through the clouds.

He was communicating with his friend.

"You don’t know that all the Gu Immortals are accepting the assisted tribulation task. Some Gu Immortals whose tribulations are still far away will choose an option in the exchange list, it requests master’s time path clone to accelerate their immortal aperture’s time flow! They are using every means possible to accept this task."

Ke Xin Hong read up to here before replying with the information path Immortal Gu: "It is because the contribution points for this task are sizable, moreover, whoever obtains the contribution points first will be able to move a step ahead and do more missions, entering a beneficial feedback loop. Look at that Shi Zong, he has been thriving recently. His strength has surged, he can do and take on more difficult tasks, obtaining even more contribution points much faster."

"Unfortunately, I received a mandatory task now and have to go on a diplomatic mission to Wu clan. Otherwise, I would have been the first to accept this task."

His friend replied soon: "You need to be careful, you are going to Wu clan’s headquarters to demand Hu Land. That is a secluded domain of heaven and earth, and Wu Yong is the Southern Alliance’s Leader!"

Ke Xin Hong, however, was confident: "I am quite hopeful for this trip. Even if it fails, Wu Yong won’t do anything to me. You have not personally realized and witnessed master’s power and influence. Alright, I have arrived, I will contact you later."

Ke Xin Hong slowly flew down.

Below him was Wu Yi Mountain.

Wu clan’s headquarters was located here.

Seeing Ke Xin Hong, two Gu Immortals immediately flew up from Wu Yi Mountain, at the front was Wu clan’s second supreme elder Wu Ba Chong.

Ke Xin Hong had already notified them before coming here.

Wu clan’s earnestness could be seen, they had sent Wu Ba Chong to welcome him.

"Envoy, please come in." Wu Ba Chong led Ke Xin Hong to Wu clan’s headquarters.

"You came from afar and must be tired, how about resting for a while." Wu Ba Chong was polite.

Ke Xin Hong shook his hand: "Let’s get down to business first."

"Alright. Please wait a while, our first supreme elder is handling some clan affairs."

Ke Xin Hong nodded and waited patiently.

He could understand that the leader of the great Wu clan could not be available so casually. Whether he was really busy or not, they had to put up this show.

After five minutes, Wu Ba Chong came again and led Ke Xin Hong towards the guest hall.

Ke Xin Hong saw Wu Yong there.

Ke Xin Hong did not speak nonsense and said directly: "Lord Wu Yong, I come with master’s sincerity to have another transaction with your noble clan."

Wu Yong and Wu Ba Chong looked at each other, they had profited a lot in the previous transaction. Wu Yong asked with a smile: "I wonder what transaction it is?"

Ke Xin Hong smiled: "Master is willing to pay a price to buy the Hu Land in your possession."

Instantly, Wu Yong’s pupils shrank and killing intent surged in his heart!

"What?!" Wu Ba Chong could not sit still, he stood, "What Hu Land? How could my Wu clan have this secluded domain of heaven and earth? Fang Yuan is definitely mistaken."

Ke Xin Hong smiled and did not refute.

Wu Yong’s expression was dark as he interrupted Wu Ba Chong: "Alright, Ba Chong."

Wu Ba Chong immediately stopped denying it, but there was indignance and anger on his face. Veins popped up on his clenched fists as he stared rigidly at Ke Xin Hong.

If gazes could kill, at this moment, Wu Ba Chong would have already killed Ke Xin Hong a hundred times with his gaze.

Ke Xin Hong only looked at Wu Yong, turning a deaf ear to Wu Ba Chong.

He bowed: "Lord Wu Yong, what is your reply?"

Wu Yong suddenly showed a smile: "Since Fang Yuan wants to trade, of course we can. I believe he will definitely pay a satisfying price."

Ke Xin Hong could not help but feel a chill when he saw Wu Yong’s attitude.

Wu Yong was really terrifying, in such a short period of time, he accepted this fact and made the most sensible choice!

Ke Xin Hong took a deep breath and said the price: "Master is aware that Lord Wu Yong desires rank eight Immortal Gu, Eight-faced Prestige Wind. Master is willing to personally refine this rank eight Immortal Gu."

"What?" Wu Ba Chong’s expression changed again as he bellowed furiously: "Hu Land can be seen as a quasi-rank nine Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan is not taking out even one rank eight Immortal Gu and wants to exchange with such conditions. You are too insincere!"

Wu Yong said through clenched teeth: "This is indeed somewhat too overboard."

Ke Xin Hong smiled: "Wu clan excels in wind path, your only qi path foundation is in Sheng Tian true inheritance. Although Hu Land is a secluded domain of heaven and earth, it doesn’t have much value for Wu clan."

Wu Ba Chong immediately refuted: "You can’t say that, any path’s attainment can be developed. Although my Wu clan excels in wind path, could it be that we cannot excel in qi path in the future? With Hu Land, I would rather change to qi path and replace my vital Gu! With such huge prospects, which super force would be willing to give it up?"

Ke Xin Hong glanced at Wu Ba Chong: "Second supreme elder, you are spot on, quite insightful. It is indeed correct, with Hu Land, the prospect of qi path is highly favorable. But..."

As he said this, Ke Xin Hong intentionally paused before saying deeply: "The prerequisite is... you need to possess Hu Land."

"You!!!" Wu Ba Chong’s killing intent erupted and he looked ready to attack.

Ke Xin Hong’s hidden meaning was that Wu clan could not keep Hu Land. Since they could not keep Hu Land, it was useless to mention any qi path prospects.

Ke Xin Hong looked towards Wu Yong and bowed again, saying respectfully: "Lord Wu Yong, I will be frank. If your noble clan is not satisfied with this price, we are willing to refine three rank eight Immortal Gu for your clan."

He then continued with a bitter smile: "This is my side’s bottom line and there won’t be any concession. Lord Wu Yong, please understand. I am only a messenger, I cannot make decisions."

Wu Yong was silent for a while before smiling: "You are an excellent messenger. I agree to your conditions. Wu Ba Chong, bring Ke Xin Hong to take Hu Land and send the rank seven fan wind Gu as well."

"First supreme elder!" Wu Ba Chong was indignant.

"Go." Wu Yong was solemn.

"Sigh!" Wu Ba Chong heaved a deep sigh as he looked at Ke Xin Hong with hatred.

"Follow me!" Wu Ba Chong quickly moved past Ke Xin Hong and walked out of the hall.

Wu Yong sat on his seat without moving.

The guest hall had bright lighting, but Wu Yong’s face was dark and heavy.

Losing Hu Land had a huge impact on him!

"How did Fang Yuan know about Hu Land? Did he capture Kong Ri Tian?"

Wu Yong had a lot of doubts but he did not want to investigate it. Since the matter had already reached this stage, there was no meaning in talking about this.

After a long while, Wu Ba Chong returned to report: "Ke Xin Hong has left. Lord, should we send some people in disguise and ambush him?"

Wu Yong shook his head: "With Fang Yuan’s wisdom, how could he not have expected such a loophole? Don’t do unnecessary things."

Wu Ba Chong said through clenched teeth: "Damn it. Our grand Wu clan cannot protect Hu Land!"

Wu Yong said with a heavy voice: "We need to remember this. In here, in Wu clan’s headquarters, we were forced to sell the secluded domain of heaven and earth! This is my disgrace, and also Wu clan’s disgrace. In the future, if there is a chance, I will clear this humiliation and pay it back a thousand fold. Fang Yuan, just you wait!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Fang Yuan was holding heaven’s envy Immortal Gu in his hand.

Under the continuous supply of rank eight white litchi immortal essence, heaven’s envy Immortal Gu let out a light, crystal-like radiance.

This Immortal Gu seemed like a flea made of crystal, it was as large as a fist and was curled up like a ball.

Suddenly, the crystal radiance from heaven’s envy Immortal Gu burst, turning into countless broken crystal lights that shone dazzlingly!

"Success!" Fang Yuan was shocked, at that moment just now, he had actually refined this rank seven heaven’s envy Immortal Gu.

The curled-up crystal flea stretched its body and meekly lay on Fang Yuan’s palm.

"I am probably the first person in history to completely refine heaven’s envy Immortal Gu."

At this moment, Fang Yuan had created history!

But, within an instant, his excited emotions calmed down.

He already had many unprecedented achievements.

"In this recent period of time, I have repeatedly helped my subordinates undergo tribulations. Although the heaven path dao marks gained each time are small in quantity, the numbers accumulate eventually."

"Adding these heaven path dao marks, I am finally able to refine heaven’s envy Immortal Gu completely, breaking the previous limit."

"My guess was right!"

The fact was proved in front of him: As long as the unrestrained heavenly marks reached a certain number, heaven path Immortal Gu could be refined.

In the long river of history, there were countless Gu cultivators with geniuses as numerous as stars in the sky, and the ten venerables like ten large suns. But none of them truly cultivated heaven path.

Limitless Demon Venerable and Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable might have grasp of the killer move unrestrained heavenly mark, but from what Fang Yuan knew, they had not delved deeply into heaven path.

The former cultivated rule path and the latter cultivated earth path. Maybe Limitless Demon Venerable researched unrestrained heavenly mark to cultivate heaven path, but he had already become a rule path Demon Venerable at that time and could not turn back anymore.

From this, the advantage of the sovereign immortal aperture could be seen again.

Cultivate every path!

A brand-new unknown path emerged before Fang Yuan.

Heaven path!

Unrestrained heavenly mark was the key to starting heaven path cultivation.

This path had huge prospects and terrifying advantages, even mortals could understand a thing or two!

"Heaven path comprises everything and balances everything, all living beings, be they immortals or mortals, powerful or weak, are included in heaven path. All kinds of Immortal Gu, secluded domains of heaven and earth, are also under the restrictions of heaven path. Heaven path controls calamities and tribulations, it controls lifespan Gu. Venerables were powerful for an era, but when compared to heaven path, they are like a burning torch."

"If I walk this path...."

Fang Yuan could not help but daydream.

Apart from anything else, just lifespan Gu and fate Gu, these two factors made him feel a trace of excitement.

Every venerable in history was troubled by lifespan Gu, and fate Gu had never been directly controlled by Heavenly Court. Even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not have any solution, she could only become one with the Dao to interfere with heaven’s will and distort the power of fate Gu.

"Among all the paths, the starting threshold of heaven path is the highest. One must grasp the killer move unrestrained heavenly mark first."

"I have only stepped on the road of heaven path, I still need to walk a long distance before I can touch the deeper profundities like lifespan Gu and fate Gu!"

"The battle of Crazed Demon Cave is imminent, I won’t be able to accomplish this before the battle."

Although he had officially stepped on the cultivation path of heaven path and its prospects were bright and huge, Fang Yuan did not intend to fully delve into it.

The situation did not allow him to do so.

"At most, I can invest once more in heaven’s envy Immortal Gu."

Cooking Luck Pot brought enormous convenience to Fang Yuan, letting him know that heaven’s envy Immortal Gu might be the key in the battle of Crazed Demon Cave.

Heaven path’s cultivation road was going to be long, and Fang Yuan had just taken the initial step. But heaven’s envy Immortal Gu could be developed further.

"I have completely refined heaven’s envy Immortal Gu, but it is only at rank seven. If I create its corresponding killer moves, it might be quite impressive at rank eight level. However, in my battle with venerables, rank seven will not be enough."

"I need to raise heaven’s envy Immortal Gu to rank eight!"

Fang Yuan possessed Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, but this was slightly troublesome.

Fang Yuan had a batch of heaven path immortal materials. It might not be enough if he were to try to refine many heaven path Immortal Gu, but it was enough to use on just heaven’s envy Immortal Gu.

However, Fang Yuan’s heaven path attainment was ordinary, he was not even at master level. Although his refinement path was as high as quasi-supreme, it would be quite difficult to research heaven’s envy Immortal Gu’s rank eight recipe.

It was not that there was no chance of success, but it would take too much time and energy.

In his initial estimation, it was going to require two to three years of deductions at the very least.

This was undoubtedly not feasible for Fang Yuan.

"Looks like I need to copy Wu Yong and raise some Gu Immortal seeds, before helping them undergo the ascension tribulation." Fang Yuan quickly found a way.

Fang Yuan did not care about the minimal gains in heaven path dao marks from immortal ascension of rank five Gu Masters. But when Gu Masters undergo immortal ascension, they would have a one-time opportunity to experience natural inspiration.

With this opportunity, the Gu Master questioned heaven and earth, and almost all their questions would be answered.

Since heaven and earth could produce heaven’s envy Immortal Gu naturally, it definitely had heaven’s envy Immortal Gu’s recipe.

Fang Yuan did not demand much, he only needed a correct version of the Immortal Gu recipe of heaven’s envy Gu, he could rely on his refinement path attainment to modify it to suit himself.

Moreover, Fang Yuan could also ask for some insights when asking heaven and earth.

For instance: "On the basis of certain kinds of heaven path immortal materials and the current situation, which heaven’s envy Immortal Gu recipe is the easiest to refine?"

As he thought of this, he put a new task on the mission board and listed it at number one.

"Search for loyal and devoted Gu Immortal seeds who are suitable to undergo immortal ascension!"

Almost at the next instant, all the Gu Immortals in the sovereign immortal aperture knew of this task.

Ever since the establishment of the exchange list, these Gu Immortals had gone crazy!

Many of them had not even slept for months, using Gu worms to forcibly maintain their conditions, to complete tasks and earn contribution points.

Fang Yuan offered them the most suitable environment, reducing the difficulty of these Gu Immortals’ cultivation to the minimum. Almost every day, they could feel their strength increasing.

Even if this increase was only a little, a little progress every day would accumulate to a terrifying amount after several days.

It was this euphoric feeling of experiencing the increase in their cultivation and strength that made these Gu Immortals unable to stop.

What gave Fang Yuan a pleasant surprise was that one of the human Gu Immortals developed an incomplete transformation path Immortal Gu recipe because of this — hard liver Gu.

This human Gu Immortal primarily cultivated transformation path, he was Solid Rock Warrior, who came from Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

Hard liver Gu strengthened the Gu Immortal’s liver, giving them lasting and vigorous energy which then allowed them to complete all kinds of laborious tasks without needing to rest. But if it was used excessively, the liver would harden to the limit and trigger a terrifying explosion, inflicting heavy injuries and even death.

After Fang Yuan got familiar with the Gu, he modified and completed it, and even created rank six to rank eight Gu recipes.

After using Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool to refine it, rank eight hard liver Immortal Gu was used as the core of a Gu formation.

Fang Yuan named this Gu formation as liver life formation[1], it operated all year round and collected a fee for every use. If the Gu Immortals were interested, they could hand over some contribution points to enter, after they come out, they will be full of energy and motivation!

"Did you liver today?"

"How much longer can you liver for?"

"I feel like my liver is about to explode."

Such conversations had already become a common daily topic between the Gu Immortals.

So, when Fang Yuan put up this task, the Gu Immortals were like red-eyed sharks that had smelled blood.

"Great task!"

"It was published by master himself."

"The reward is extremely abundant!"

"I cannot, I have not slept in three months. I want to rest a little."

"What rest! Go and liver! The great era is in front of us, we must grasp this excellent cultivation opportunity!"

The Gu Immortals moved out towards all kinds of places to gather Gu Immortal seeds.

In just a short while, this task was completely taken.

The Gu Immortals who could not take it were extremely vexed.

Some shouted regretfully: "Oh, this task was quite excellent, but I missed it!"

Every task on the mission board had a limited quota to prevent Gu Immortals from taking just the tasks with the highest rewards, which would result in unreasonable and wasteful distribution of manpower.

Fang Yuan handed the task of gathering Gu Immortal seeds to his subordinates.

He estimated there would be quite a lot of Gu Immortal seeds, it was going to surpass super forces like Wu clan.

It was because Fang Yuan had annexed many forces like Lang Ya Sect and the two heavens’ grotto-heavens, which had extremely deep foundations and long history. They definitely did not lack Gu Immortal seeds.

Using the little spare time he had, Fang Yuan personally went to strengthen Ni clan.

He quietly set up a year essence sub-pool in Ni clan’s territory, forming a time path zone.

Ni clan’s time would pass much faster, which would increase the rate of Immortal Gu production, it would become much more convenient for Fang Yuan to comprehend Gu refinement profundities of human isolation style.

"The sovereign immortal aperture has a huge number of variant humans, but not many humans."

"Most of the humans are from Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, but it can be foreseen that in the future, Mini Yellow Heaven’s Ni clan will probably become the top human force."

Fang Yuan thought to himself.

He had just finished setting up the time path zone when Ke Xin Hong’s message arrived.

The latter’s diplomatic mission to Wu clan was successful and had obtained Hu Land.

Immortal killer move — Heaven and Earth Travel!

At the next moment, Fang Yuan moved from Eastern Sea to Southern Border, appearing in front of Ke Xin Hong.

After putting Ke Xing Hong in the sovereign immortal aperture, Fang Yuan returned to Eastern Sea.

He secretly arrived in a nameless sea area and toyed around with Hu Land as he waited for Qi Sea Ancestor.

"For you." Fang Yuan handed Hu Land to Qi Sea Ancestor.

The Qi Sea clone quickly received it and said excitedly: "Good, good, I have a premonition! With Hu Land, my combat system will be completed!"

"I will wait in anticipation." Fang Yuan’s main body left shortly after.

He was also pondering about his combat system and had made much progress, but was still far away from completing it.

[1] In Chinese medicine, the liver gets damaged/heaty if one does not sleep properly at night. In this case, ’livering/ liver torture’ is a common Chinese Internet term for staying up all night to game etc.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2136 Fang Yuan“s Secluded Domains of Heaven and Earth

Immortal killer move — Landscape as Before!

Fang Yuan activated the killer move.

The previous landscape as before Immortal Gu was only at rank six. But two months ago, Fang Yuan had successfully raised it to rank eight.

Rank eight was the limit of landscape as before Immortal Gu.

The limit of most Immortal Gu was at rank eight. After advancing to rank eight, they would have arrived at their peak and could not be advanced anymore.

Gu were the essence of heaven and earth, fragments of the Great Dao. These fragments had their respective limits, those with higher limits could accumulate slowly and reach rank nine, while those with lower limits might even be forced to stay at rank six.

There were many Immortal Gu, although they were unique, they covered almost all aspects imaginable. For instance, Fang Yuan used the killer move lingering poisonous ant plague, which gave birth to two Immortal Gu — red copper immortal ant Gu and white noodle immortal ant Gu. If there was a slight change, there might be another kind of Immortal Gu. For instance, dark-gold immortal ant, black noodle immortal ant, and so on.

Among all the Immortal Gu, only a small portion could truly advance to rank nine.

Rank eight landscape as before Immortal Gu was still a time path Immortal Gu. But the killer move Fang Yuan was using right now was a compound killer move.

It contained profundities of not only time path, but also earth path, water path, rule path, soul path, and other paths.

Under the effect of this compound killer move, Reverse Flow River let out soft gushing sounds as it started expanding at a rapid pace.

After Fang Yuan’s nurturing over this period of time, the compound killer move that was used dozens of times showed great effects, Reverse Flow River, which previously only had a little trace left of it, had become a long narrow river!

Fang Yuan had all along been trying to restore Reverse Flow River, and he finally got a good result now.

He had previously thought of using orderly well.

This killer move was a rank nine killer move and came from Shadow Sect’s true inheritance. This move used City Well as the core, it could modify secluded domains of heaven and earth, removing the conflict between dao marks, which made it convenient to restore them.

Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley, and Miniscule Mountain had experienced this move.

But Fang Yuan had never been able to grasp this killer move.

Because he lacked its crucial core Immortal Gu, Immortal Gu was unique, that core Immortal Gu was already in someone else’s possession. Fang Yuan had thought of modifying this killer move but it was extremely difficult.

This was a rank nine rule path killer move, it had already reached a peak level where it had no room for improvement.

At least, Fang Yuan was unable to see any.

His rule path attainment level was at great grandmaster, and not quasi-supreme. He was still some distance away from seeing through this kind of rank nine killer move.

"Reverse Flow River is recovering faster right now, but at the later stage of its recovery, Landscape as Before’s compound killer move will experience a fall in effectiveness continually, until it becomes negligible."

Landscape as Before’s compound killer move was at rank eight level, while the complete Reverse Flow River was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, which was equivalent to rank nine in terms of quantity of dao marks. Because of the huge amount of dao marks, they could sometimes be used as quasi-rank nine Immortal Gu.

Naturally, this depended on the Gu cultivator’s ability.

Conceptualizing killer moves with the secluded domain of heaven and earth as the core was only the start, the crucial point was how exceptional the created killer moves were, and if they could fully use the secluded domain of heaven and earth or not.

For instance, Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal made use of Reverse Flow River only at the intermediate level.

His Luo Po seal was only at the elementary level of secluded domain usage.

Orderly well killer move was different, it made use of City Well to the highest degree, and was at the advanced level.

There was no killer move that completely used secluded domains of heaven and earth.

Secluded domains of heaven and earth were not Immortal Gu, after all.

Immortal Gu was alive and could be used fully as long as immortal essence was transferred into them. But secluded domains of heaven and earth were non-living, their usage was limited.

An Immortal Gu was a connected body of fragments of dao marks. A secluded domain of heaven and earth was an amalgamation of countless dao marks, these dao marks were piled together, some were straight or bent, some were continuous threads, some were entirely different, and some were intertwined. There was no way to make use of all the dao marks.

Even venerables were not an exception.

This could be seen from the killer move orderly well.

"I have gathered quite a lot of secluded domains of heaven and earth. Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley, Reverse Flow River, City Well, Hu Land, as well as the incomplete Refinement Sea, Human Sea, and Qian Kun Crystal Wall."

Dang Hun Mountain was the first secluded domain obtained by Fang Yuan, he even entered Northern Plains to find a way to repair it.

Luo Po seal, which used Luo Po Valley as the core, had once helped Fang Yuan kill Gu Immortal experts.

There was no need to talk about Reverse Flow River, in that event of Old Ancestor Xue Hu refining fortune rivalling heaven Gu, Fang Yuan had relied on reverse flow protection seal to shock the world while being hunted by Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court.

City Well was obtained from the turbulent flow sea area, Fang Yuan had used it as a trap to kill many Eastern Sea Gu Immortals.

Hu Land was the easiest to obtain, he bought it forcefully from Wu Yong. Naturally, it was possible because of Fang Yuan’s strength and reputation. These things had been accumulated since his rebirth, while being on the verge of life and death, and going through countless large battles.

The incomplete Refinement Sea came from Lang Ya blessed land, it showed Long Hair Ancestor’s ambition. Unfortunately, although Fang Yuan obtained it, he did not have enough spare effort, time, and resources to complete it. Currently, the incomplete Refinement Sea was being intensely consumed by Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool.

The incomplete Human Sea came from Eastern Sea’s Xia clan. Wu Shuai led the variant human alliance to invade Xia clan’s territory, killing or driving Xia clansmen away, and looting this incomplete Human Sea.

The last was Qian Kun Crystal Wall. Put simply, it was a bunch of grey-white stone slabs.

The surface of the grey-white stone slabs were filled with black ink lines. Some were straight while others were curled, there were thin and thick lines. The lines were drawn over one another, some looked like letters while others looked like drawings of scenery.

Legends said that if one gathered all of the stone slabs, they could piece back Qian Kun Crystal Wall and the Gu cultivator would be able to enter Book Mountain again.

If one looked at the history of humanity, they would find that generations of Gu Masters, Gu Immortals, or even Immortal and Demon Venerables collected these stone slabs before.

Fang Yuan had obtained countless grey-white stone slabs from Great Wisdom Immortal Mother. According to what Great Wisdom Immortal Mother said, these stone slabs could form half the Qian Kun Crystal Wall!

Fang Yuan had obtained a batch of grey-white stone slabs from other sources like Lang Ya Sect, and the storage of the two heavens’ grotto-heavens. Naturally, the number of these stone slabs could not compare to what Great Wisdom Immortal Mother had, and there were also fake goods among them.

Great Wisdom Immortal Mother’s grey-white stone slabs were from the inkman race’s true inheritance.

There were many fake goods among the stone slabs circulated in the market. But the grey-white stone slabs in the inkman race’s true inheritance were all genuine.

"According to the records in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, Primordial Domain was originally inside Qian Kun Crystal Wall. Unfortunately, Limitless Demon Venerable took it away and put it in Crazed Demon Cave. Even if I construct Qian Kun Crystal Wall now, I won’t be able to enter Primordial Domain."

Fang Yuan tried all ways to increase his battle strength, these secluded domains of heaven and earth were naturally going to be made use of.

Reverse Flow River was being restored, killer moves using Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley as the core were also being developed. Hu Land was given to the Qi Sea clone, Fang Yuan did not have time to put his effort into this.

Among all the secluded domains of heaven and earth, Fang Yuan paid the most attention to the incomplete Human Sea.

Back then, he chose to invade Eastern Sea’s Xia clan mainly because of this artificial secluded domain of heaven and earth.

"All the venerables have human path killer moves, so I need to have some foundation in human path. Even if I don’t become dominant in this path, I need to have means to defend against it."

Fang Yuan had suffered during the fate war.

The venerable methods were mostly human path methods, every move was terrifyingly powerful or had amazing effects, influencing the whole war.

Previously, Fang Yuan had ordered his subordinates to kill a hundred million humans in Fire Plain grotto-heaven to use in the incomplete Human Sea.

But this was not enough.

The previous resources were all spent, Human Sea was still some distance from completion.

"The variant human alliance also has many human grotto-heavens with large numbers of humans. But it is not convenient to target these humans."

"Firstly, it will cause dissension in these human grotto-heavens’ Gu Immortals. Secondly, these humans will be moved to the sovereign immortal aperture in the future, and are foundations for me to develop human path. Lastly, there are so many humans in the world, why do I need to sacrifice my own people?"

Fang Yuan then issued a task — slaughter humans and gather resources.

Compared to the previous tribulation task, this task was obviously cruel and reeked of blood.

"Master is a demonic path member after all." Many human Gu Immortals lamented.

"But, I quite enjoy slaughtering the outside world’s humans!" This task resonated with variant human Gu Immortals.

"Forget it, as long as it is not our grotto-heavens suffering, what does it have to do with us if other humans die?" Those owners of human grotto-heavens were glad about their allegiance.

Soon, over ten Gu Immortals quietly moved out from the territory of Eastern Sea’s Xia clan.

There were many fishing villages in Eastern Sea’s islands.

Birds chirped and dogs barked, smoke spiraled upwards.

"Kill." A miniman Gu Immortal flew towards these fishing villages and ruthlessly activated Immortal Gu.

Leaves fell down like a rainstorm, killing countless men and women, old and young, blood splashing everywhere.

"Back then, us minimen were captured by you humans. My mother was strangled to death in front of me by human Gu Immortals. I am only taking back some interest!" The miniman Gu Immortal’s face was filled with hatred.

On a certain island in Eastern Sea, there was an enormous city.

Two variant human Gu Immortals united to bring forth a tens of feet high tsunami.

At the juncture of life and death, an Eastern Sea lone immortal walked out and blocked the tsunami.

"Stop, I am Gu Ming Xu. This is my homeland, I wonder what the issue is? Why are you implicating these innocent people?" This Gu Immortal shouted furiously.

The two variant human Gu Immortals came down from above the clouds and revealed their appearance.

"So it was Warm Sun Immortal Lord."

"Immortal Lord, you are wrong. Back then, this place had been the homeland of us hairy men. But you humans occupied it forcefully, my hairy man tribe fortunately had the protection of our supreme elder, so we were able to survive in the two heavens."

Gu Ming Xu could not restrain his anger when he saw the two variant human Gu Immortals: "So you are variant humans. You are really audacious, this place is near Eastern Sea’s Tang clan. I have already requested reinforcements. Get lost, if you don’t escape now, it will be too late!"

The two variant human Gu Immortals laughed loudly as they said: "Immortal Lord, why do you pretend to not know from where we came? Our master is Lord Gu Yue Fang Yuan! Let alone Tang clan, even if the whole of Eastern Sea’s righteous path arrive together, they will be like chickens and dogs in front of our master."

"Gu Ming Xu, stop trying to put up a front."

"We are here to kill your fellow humans, to let you taste the pain and suffering we felt back then."

Gu Ming Xu lamented inwardly: "How can there be a demon like Fang Yuan, he actually sent variant humans to attack his own race! He is a traitor to humans, he has no bottom line and no sense of propriety. Damn it! Damn it!!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Qi sea.

Because Qi Sea Ancestor lived here, the qi sea sea area had become the Righteous Qi Alliance’s headquarters.

At this moment, a banquet was being held inside the qi sea formation.

Qi Sea Ancestor sat on the main seat while the representatives of Eastern Sea righteous path forces sat to his left and right.

Sitting to the left of Qi Sea Ancestor was a food path Gu Immortal.

He was an old man with a brandy nose, he raised his wine cup high and toasted Qi Sea Ancestor: "Lord Ancestor, I offer this toast of spring sea blossom wine to you!"

Qi Sea Ancestor nodded, his seat was high above the others which gave him a naturally overlooking vision.

Qi Sea Ancestor took a sip before commenting lightly: "Zui Xian Weng, your spring wind petals wine is quite good, it has a vague poetic flavor of youth."

This food path Gu Immortal was Zui Xian Weng.

After he inherited Green Ant Ascetic and Wine Fairy’s true inheritance in Central Continent, he was then silently persuaded by Qin Ding Ling to be a chess piece.

According to Qin Ding Ling’s arrangements, Zui Xian Weng returned to Eastern Sea and rested for a period of time before taking the initiative to side with the Righteous Qi Alliance.

Everyone in the Righteous Qi Alliance welcomed him warmly.

Because Zui Xian Weng was among the outstanding lone cultivators of Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world.

Zui Xian Weng possessed wine sea, he held a wine reception every year where he invited heroes and warriors of Eastern Sea. His connections were extremely wide, and he himself had good relations with all the large Eastern Sea righteous path forces.

There was a huge political significance for a representative character like him to join the Righteous Qi Alliance, just this significance itself had a huge value.

Because, although the Righteous Qi Alliance was established, most of its members were of Eastern Sea righteous path super clans. Besides them, there were also some two heaven’s Gu Immortals who had joined Qi Sea clone.

Few Eastern Sea lone immortals joined the Righteous Qi Alliance.

Demonic immortals were even rarer.

Zui Xian Weng joining the alliance would definitely be a model example which would change some trend of Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world, maybe, other lone and demonic immortals would take the initiative to join.

Besides these, there was another reason which was somewhat connected to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s lingering poisonous ant plague killer move had caused a huge disturbance in Eastern Sea’s righteous path. They were forced to take out their hidden true inheritances to research the killer move, only then were they able to find a way to restrain it.

During this event, the Righteous Qi Alliance had wanted to invite Zui Xian Weng. However, at that time, Zui Xian Weng had already gone to Central Continent and was secretly searching for Green Ant’s true inheritance.

Zui Xian Weng cultivated food path, which was rare in the five regions and two heavens.

While rarer things were often more precious.

Zui Xian Weng was worthy of being recruited!

Qi Sea Ancestor discussed with Eastern Sea’s super forces and held a large welcoming banquet. Not only were they trying to leave a good impression and gain the approval of Zui Xian Weng, they were also proclaiming the Righteous Qi Alliance’s attitude towards lone and demonic immortals.

When Zui Xian Weng saw Fang Yuan, he was extremely respectful and even had a flattering expression.

For instance, now.

Zui Xian Weng’s wine was clearly called spring sea blossom wine. But Qi Sea Ancestor called it spring wind petals wine.

Whether Qi Sea Ancestor had not heard clearly or if it was a slip of tongue, Zui Xian Weng did not ponder on it, he bowed: "Many thanks to Ancestor for bestowing the name!"

"Amazing, amazing, spring wind petals wine not only suits the characteristics of this wine, it is also filled with poetic sentiment, making one feel like they are being caressed by spring wind, while flower petals flutter in the air."

"It is a great honor for this wine to be bestowed a name by Ancestor. With Ancestor’s granting of this name, I believe this wine will be known throughout the five regions!"

"Hahaha." Qi Sea Ancestor laughed heartily as he pointed at Zui Xian Weng, "Old Weng, you are quite witty."

The various clan representatives also chimed in, their complements were like waves that followed Zui Xian Weng and moved towards Qi Sea Ancestor.

These Gu Immortals were praising while cursing silently.

’I did not think this old guy Zui Xian Weng to have such a shameless side."

"Truly a boot licker."

"But it is not strange. He holds a wine reception every year where he invites all the forces. He has some skills in social interaction."

Tang clan’s Gu Immortal Tang Tang was just about to raise his wine cup, when an information path mortal Gu flew in.

He viewed it with his divine sense.

’What?! The variant human alliance has attacked!’ His body jolted, he was greatly shocked.

But after reading the information properly, he relaxed somewhat.

"Fang Yuan only sent ten or so Gu Immortals over different areas of Eastern Sea to kill mortals."

"What is he trying to do?"

"Not long ago, he invaded Fire Plain grotto-heaven and slaughtered a hundred million humans!"

Tang Tang was pondering, when he recalled the incomplete Human Sea.

After Fang Yuan invaded Eastern Sea’s Xia clan, the information about this artificial secluded domain of heaven and earth had spread far and wide. So the Righteous Qi Alliance was well aware of it.

At this time, another information path Gu worm flew over.

"Gu Ming Xu is requesting reinforcements from my clan?" Tang Tang’s heart stirred slightly.

This Warm Sun Immortal Lord was a lawful lone immortal, Tang clan had always wanted to recruit him but was rejected by him. Who could have expected a crisis to appear out of nowhere, Gu Ming Xu actually offended the variant human alliance.

In the request letter, Gu Ming Xu had clearly expressed: If Tang clan can provide help, he will join Tang clan!

"My Tang clan cannot offend a person like Fang Yuan! Isn’t this trying to push my Tang clan into the fire?" Tang Tang sneered mentally.

They could not give support.

Tang Tang immediately crushed this information path mortal Gu and treated it like he had not seen it.

Fang Yuan’s target this time were only the mortals, moreover, he avoided the people of the super clans.

So, Tang clan did not suffer any losses.

As for reputation, Tang clan’s reputation would fall a little because they did not retaliate. But, other clans were also the same, Fang Yuan’s action was not targeting just Tang clan.

Since everyone was losing reputation, it was same as nobody losing any reputation.

"As long as the situation doesn’t worsen, this is only a small matter. Let Fang Yuan kill however many he wants." Tang Tang continued to enjoy the banquet.

After receiving this message, he began to deliberately observe the surrounding Gu Immortals.

Sure enough, these people received the news one after the other.

"Fang Yuan’s subordinates are slaughtering mortals?"

"They are not our clansmen anyway, why provoke Fang Yuan because of this?"

"Eastern Sea has so many mortals, even if some are killed, the population will be restored in ten years."

"Let’s drink, let’s drink."

"Hahaha, good wine!"

The atmosphere became even more lively. As the banquet continued, these Gu Immortals were starting to get drunk, their faces flushed red as they enjoyed themselves.

Tribulation clouds surged continually.

A large amount of water splashed around in the time path clone’s immortal aperture, like fish jumping madly.

This was a grand tribulation — Jumping Time Fish Tribulation.

"The outcome is set." The time path clone was observing the whole process calmly.

With the main body helping personally, there would definitely be no issue.

The jumping time fish tribulation was not strong, it was an ordinary type of grand tribulation.

Heaven’s will did not trouble Fang Yuan, which was rare. But the time path clone was not surprised.

"In the recent period of time, my main body has not only helped Gu Immortals to undergo tribulations, he is also helping those Gu Immortal seeds to undergo immortal ascension. With him present, unless it is a dream path tribulation, there will be no issue. Heaven’s will realizes this fully, the calamities and tribulations are ordinary so that the main body won’t gain more heaven path dao marks."

While the time path clone was thinking, the tribulation clouds in the sky were almost gone.

Fang Yuan did not continue to attack, instead he took out ability Gu to give it a try.

But ability Gu was almost destroyed.

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> clearly stated ability Gu would continue to grow stronger in calamities and tribulations. But Fang Yuan was unable to find a way to strengthen it.

According to simple deduction, the records in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> stated that calamities and tribulations were Gu materials to advance the rank of ability Gu.

Fang Yuan gave it a try right now, but discovered that calamities and tribulations were not suitable as Gu materials and were extremely hard to control. Fortunately, Fang Yuan had made ample preparations and was able to preserve ability Gu.

After obtaining this outcome, Fang Yuan did not hold back and destroyed the final lump of tribulation cloud.

This time, he did not devour the heaven path dao marks.

He left behind the time path dao marks from the tribulation in the time path clone’s immortal aperture.

He did not touch the clone’s foundation.

"Now, I also have rank eight cultivation." The time path clone was filled with emotions, "From now onwards, I shall use the name He Chun Qiu, what do you think?"

"Up to you." Fang Yuan’s main body replied plainly.

Currently, among Fang Yuan’s eight clones, Qi Sea Ancestor, Wu Shuai, the time path clone He Chun Qiu, and Zhan Bu Du had advanced to rank eight.

But Fang Yuan already did not lack rank eight Gu Immortals under him at present.

Southern Border.

Human Smoke Mountain.

This was Chai clan’s headquarters.

Almost all of Chai clan’s Gu Immortals were assembled, and with Chai clan’s first supreme elder leading them, they welcomed three variant human Gu Immortals.

These three variant humans were snowman, hairy man, and rockman; they were Bing Yuan, Golden Fur Immortal Monarch, and Shi Zong.

"People of Chai clan, the three of us came with master’s order, we are here to discuss a trade with you." As the leader of this trip, Bing Yuan spoke.

Chai clan’s immortals were in serious and heavy moods.

It was not only because of Fang Yuan’s reputation, but because of these three variant human Gu Immortals’ auras.

Be they Bing Yuan or Golden Fur Immortal Monarch or Shi Zong, they were all at rank eight!

"What does Fang Yuan want? Could my Chai clan have something of interest to him?" Chai clan’s first supreme elder asked.

"No need to be modest, Lord Chai Gan." Bing Yuan smiled, "My master is willing to purchase your noble clan’s human path results, including the killer move congregated human talent, the human path mountain Human Smoke Mountain, as well as many mortals raised by your clan."

"What?!" The expressions of Chai clan’s immortals changed.

"Fang Yuan is going too far!"

"He is trying to dig up our Chai clan’s foundation."

"The main thing is, if we cooperate with this demon Fang Yuan, what reputation would our grand righteous path Chai clan still have?"

Chai clan immortals criticized softly.

The expression of Chai clan’s first supreme elder was unsightly, he muttered for a while before asking: "My Chai clan does nurture the most mortals, these people live good and content lives in Human Smoke Mountain and do not cause trouble for anyone. I wonder what Fang Yuan wants to buy them for?"

Shi Zong sneered: "Of course, to kill them all."

Golden Fur Immortal Monarch had a crazed expression: "These humans your Chai clan is nurturing have abundant human qi, this is extremely good. Master’s Human Sea is only lacking the final step. With these people, it can finally be completed."

Chai clan immortals were shaken.

"Disregarding lives so casually, this demon deserves death!!!" One female immortal, Chai Ke Qing, shouted furiously.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Thousands of years ago.

Southern Border, Human Smoke Mountain.

A cave at the peak of the mountain opened quietly, and an old man walked out of it.

He had an ashen expression.

In the past, he could not find lifespan Gu and could only use other lifespan extension methods. His lifespan was at its end right now, even if he found lifespan Gu or other methods, it would be of no use.

"I, the grand Chai Fu, cultivated to rank eight as a lone cultivator, but in the end, I still lost to lifespan. How sorrowful, how hateful!"

Chai Fu was filled with anger and sadness that was deep as the sea.

He walked down the mountain numbly, but a village at the base of the mountain gave him a surprise.

"Before I went into closed cultivation, there had been no humans inhabiting this place. But in just several years, this place became so lively?"

"I, the grand rank eight Gu Immortal Chai Fu whose name is spread throughout the Southern Border Gu Immortal world, won’t live for long, but you mortals are living so well!"

Looking at the men and women in the village doing labor work and children playing around, Chai Fu’s anger and hatred surged so much that he was about to slaughter all these villagers.

But at the next moment, he forcibly closed his eyes, his body trembled for a while before he gradually calmed down.

Chai Fu restrained the evil intentions in his heart as he smiled bitterly: "I, Chai Fu, might not be a good person, but I have never targeted people who have not offended me, and have never slaughtered innocents."

"Sigh, so be it if I die. What else can I do?"

"Even the ten venerables were unable to escape death."

"It is easy for Gu Immortals to live long, but how hard is eternal life!"

Chai Fu had looked back over his whole life when he was in closed cultivation. He had no regrets in his life, he had a clean record and was without lingering concerns.

With nothing else to do, Chai Fu disguised as a passing old Gu Master and entered the village.

"Is he a traveling doctor?" The villagers misunderstood Chai Fu’s identity.

Chai Fu went with the flow and used that identity, receiving warm welcomes from the villagers.

There were Gu Masters in the village, but the highest was only at rank three, and they were not specialized in healing.

Many villagers asked for help from Chai Fu, and with Chai Fu’s ability, it was a small matter for him to treat their illnesses.

Chai Fu was even more revered because of this, and at the same time, he also learned of this village’s origin.

"So these people are actually my descendants from over a hundred years ago!"

This discovery made Chai Fu feel some lingering fear and thankfulness. Fortunately, he did not make a move earlier and slaughter them.

Shortly after, Chai Fu began to think about the meaning of life: "Maybe this arrangement of fate is for me to leave behind something."

Chai Fu had already thought of leaving behind his inheritance, and now his thought had solidified.

"It just so happens that I got an inspiration during my closed cultivation and thought of a human path killer move. Looks like fate is never aimless, it wants me to use this move here."

This killer move was congregated human talent!

Chai Fu had been conceptualizing a lifespan extension method, but he did not expect the final result to be this.

Congregated human talent was a human path killer move that could concentrate the aptitude of many people into a small group.

Chai Fu used this move as the foundation and the favorable location of Human Smoke Mountain to establish his super force, Chai clan.

Since the establishment of Chai clan, they had gathered and nurtured outsiders. They then used the killer move congregated human talent to transfer the aptitude of countless outsiders to Chai clansmen.

Thus, geniuses always emerged in Chai clan.

And those outsiders had mediocre aptitude, they could not cause any problems.

Chai clan had this huge advantage and could rise continually, aspiring for the position of number one super force of Southern Border. However, there were Ba clan and Xia clan near Chai clan.

The three clans were near each other and had always been in dispute. Whenever one clan was more powerful, it would be jointly attacked by the other two clans.

Adding on that Chai clan had previously been near the five regional walls and had small territory, it lacked in resources, even though they had a large number of geniuses, they did not have sufficient cultivation resources.

After the five regional walls disappeared, Chai clan became extremely excited. Because they could march towards Central Continent.

However, not long after the regional walls disappeared, qi tides engulfed the world. After the qi tides, inheritances appeared everywhere. All the super forces in five regions, even lone and demonic immortals, were scrambling everywhere for these inheritances.

In fact, even if this wave calmed down, Chai clan would still be in an awkward situation.

Would they dare to attack Central Continent?

Central Continent had the ten great ancient sects, and in terms of strength, they were stronger than Southern Border. Even more terrifying was that Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects had the same superior — Heavenly Court!

Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects fought each other, but if foreign enemies appeared, they would unite like one body.

And now, Chai clan encountered the greatest danger over the recent years —

Gu Yue Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan sent three rank eight variant humans to discuss a trade with Chai clan, but their terms were excessive.

Fang Yuan directly asked for congregated human talent, Human Smoke Mountain, as well as the countless outsider mortals that Chai clan was nurturing.

This was directly excavating Chai clan’s core foundation that established their status!

It was no wonder everyone in Chai clan looked unsightly, Chai clan’s Gu Immortal Chai Ke Qing even shouted in anger: Fang Yuan deserved death!

"Impudent! You dare to curse my master. Looks like your Chai clan is asking for extermination." Shi Zong shouted.

"No need to report to master, us three will attack and exterminate Chai clan now!" Golden Fur Immortal Monarch directly took out his two large hammers with surging killing intent.

The expressions of Chai clan immortals changed intensely, they activated defensive killer moves and rose to the air.

A large chaotic battle seemed to be imminent.

"All of you, stop right now." Bing Yuan stopped the fight with a dark expression.

"Bing Yuan, this..." Shi Zong and Golden Fur Immortal Monarch looked at Bing Yuan.

Bing Yuan was the last to advance to rank eight among the three. Naturally, she had safely passed her tribulation with Fang Yuan’s help.

But Bing Yuan was Xue Er’s grandmother, and Xue Er had an extremely terrifying identity that made countless Gu Immortals wary.

She was Fang Yuan’s fiancée!

Thus, Shi Zong and Golden Fur Immortal Monarch had no questions about Bing Yuan’s leadership position among them, and they were obedient too.

"Restrain your aggression first." Bing Yuan spoke.

Shi Zong snorted as he restrained his aura. Golden Fur Immortal Monarch reluctantly put away his hammers while staring at these Chai clan Gu Immortals.

Chai clan’s first supreme elder let out a sigh of relief, and under his lead, Chai clan Gu Immortals also returned to ground as a show of sincerity.

Bing Yuan’s expression was solemn as she said to the Chai clan immortals: "We did not come here to make enemies out of Chai clan, we indeed came to do a trade."

"My master is a benevolent lord, his demon title is only a misunderstanding by the outside world."

"It is just that those people who misunderstood master did not have a good ending. But what can my master do? Are you going to show your neck and wait for death when others come to kill you? There is no such logic in this world."

"I believe you can understand it and won’t add to master’s problems."

Bing Yuan’s words not only contained threat, she even distorted reality with her words.

Chai Gan did not want to refute, he cupped his fists and said: "I apologize for my clansman’s careless remark. But if we agree to your condition, it will be akin to losing the foundation of our clan. Back then, when fate Gu still existed, it was Heavenly Court’s foundation. Does this mean Lord Fang Yuan would request to buy fate Gu from Heavenly Court? Would Heavenly Court sell it? Trying to buy a super force’s foundation out of nowhere, there is no such logic in this world, isn’t that so?"

Bing Yuan smiled coldly: "Chai clan, that is your own problem. Don’t try to take advantage of us variant humans, and don’t try to take advantage of our master. Our master is benevolent, but besides a fair transaction, do you still want master to help you think of a way to maintain your foundation?"

Golden Fur Immortal Monarch snickered: "Isn’t it simple if you want to keep your foundation? Just surrender to our master."

Shi Zong immediately added with sincerity: "Yes. If you become our master’s subordinates, your future will be bright. If you keep on living like this, there are no prospects for you."

The three rank eight variant humans revealed proud looks.

They were deeply aware of this over the recent period of time.

Chai clan was silent.

They were using this tactful way to express their refusal.

The three variant human Gu Immortals did not persuade much, let alone elaborate on it. They would rather have fewer competitors.

Bing Yuan continued to urge: "You are all aware in your hearts, if master wants to forcefully demand the resources, he will personally make a move. Why would he send us three to negotiate? Isn’t this an unnecessary move? You can rest assure of master’s sincerity, take a look."

Bing Yuan opened her hand, revealing a rank eight Immortal Gu.

The Chai clan immortals were stunned and astonished, they transmitted their voices to each other and discussed.

"Fang Yuan is really willing to pay a price?"

"I thought that he was going to demand those things forcefully."

"Be careful, this Gu may be fake. Fang Yuan is crafty and sinister, we cannot be deceived by him!"

After the rapid conversation, Chai Gan shook his head: "It is a good Gu, we can see Lord Fang Yuan’s sincerity. But I am ashamed to say that even though I am Chai clan’s first supreme elder, my cultivation is only at rank seven, how can I be worthy of a rank eight Immortal Gu?"

Bing Yuan smiled: "Don’t be in a hurry to refuse, take a look."

Bing Yuan opened another hand, revealing another Gu.

It was another rank eight Immortal Gu!

This time, many Chai clan Gu Immortals were moved.

Bing Yuan observed their expressions and said with a confident smile: "That’s right, you did not see it wrongly. This Immortal Gu is perfect for your Chai clan, this Gu is what your Immortal Gu House lacks. If you add it, your Immortal Gu House will become a rank eight Immortal Gu House."

Chai Gan’s grave expression was also somewhat swayed.

If Chai clan had a rank eight Immortal Gu House, they could fight against rank eight Gu Immortals, and even participate in the peak battle between pseudo venerable level existences.

Their power and authority would rise to another level!

It was a qualitative breakthrough!

But at this time, Chai Ke Qing yelled: "Fellow supreme elders, don’t be deceived by the demon Fang Yuan and these variant human Gu Immortals. Even if these Immortal Gu are real, our Chai clan belongs to the grand righteous path, how could we lose our identity and honor for benefits! We must never collude with these demons. If we agree to this trade, what difference is there between us and the demonic immortals that we despise? If Ancestor Chai Fu were still alive, he would definitely berate us furiously!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

"Hahaha." Golden Fur Immortal Monarch laughed, "You are wrong, little girl."

Shi Zong added: "It doesn’t hurt to tell you. Your Southern Alliance’s leader, Wu Yong, has already traded with us several times. He purchased a rank nine wind path immortal material from us, and also handed rank seven fan wind Gu to us to raise it to rank eight."

"What?" Chai clan’s Gu Immortals were shaken.

Bing Yuan smiled: "Demonic path, righteous path, what’s the difference? If my master converts to righteous path, who will dare to not accept him? In fact, not only Wu clan, Western Desert’s Fang clan is also secretly working with us. Currently, Fang clan is using all their strength to develop green ghost desert and is supplying countless soul cores to master."

There was another round of disturbance among the Chai clan immortals.

They had heard of Western Desert’s Fang clan and also knew of their recent movements. What impacted them even more was that Wu clan was secretly cooperating with Fang Yuan.

"How can that be?" Chai Ke Qing called out, "At least try to make a better lie. Lord Wu Yong is our Southern Alliance’s leader, how can he reach agreement with you? Everyone, you should not listen to these variant humans’ nonsense, they are just making lies to deceive us!"

But this time, Chai clan immortals were silent.

Chai Ke Qing had undergone immortal ascension just recently and had done so through relationships. Although she had talent, she had always been taken care of by Gu Immortal seniors and was not aware of how the world worked.

Her understanding of the Gu Immortal world was even less than Shang Xin Ci.

Since these variant human Gu Immortals said this, Chai clan’s immortals believed that it was likely to be true!

Because they only needed to investigate it and would be able to find clues.

Since the variant human Gu Immortals had said it, they were not afraid of being verified, they could even provide direct evidence.

Chai Ke Qing did not believe Wu Yong would do such things, but Chai clan’s immortals were people who were experienced and aware of worldly affairs. Not long ago, they themselves had reached an agreement with Lu Wei Yin secretly to leave a way out.

Bing Yuan continued: "My master is determined to create the secluded domain of heaven and earth — Human Sea. I think you all know about master’s nature. Even if all the people in the world oppose him, he will do it, he will not give up because someone obstructs him!"

"You can also inquire about the recent events in Eastern Sea."

"We variant human Gu Immortals moved all around in Eastern Sea and slaughtered humans, it was to gather resources to complete Human Sea."

"Did any Eastern Sea righteous path super force oppose us openly?"

"Hehehe. The righteous Qi Alliance even has Qi Sea Ancestor, a pseudo venerable, but he pretended not to see it. Let alone your Southern Alliance."

The will of Chai clan’s immortals were shaken, they started conversing secretly.

"There are indeed many tragedies happening in Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world."

"Yes, these variant human Gu Immortals might be detestable, but their words are not without logic."

"Eastern Sea’s Righteous Qi Alliance has the pseudo venerable Qi Sea Ancestor, but it still ended up like this. Not to mention our Southern Alliance which doesn’t even have such an expert."

"The worst thing is, Wu Yong secretly collaborated with Fang Yuan."

"Fang Yuan’s influence is truly terrifying!"

"The enemy is strong while we are weak, it will be sensible to preserve our strength for the future."

No matter how much they hated to admit it, Chai clan knew they were not Fang Yuan’s match, they were not even the match of these three rank eight variant humans in front of them. What made them even more hopeless was that even if they retaliated, the Southern Alliance would not provide them any protection. Even if the Southern Alliance provided protection, they would not be able to protect them.

Chai clan’s Human Smoke Mountain had countless humans.

If they really fought, these people were Chai clan’s weaknesses and Chai clan would not be able to protect them.

In history, when Ba clan and Xia clan caused troubles for Chai clan, they relied on this point, as long as they made a threatening move towards Human Smoke Mountain, Chai clan had to act carefully.

By now, Chai clan was already inclined towards cooperating with Fang Yuan.

There was nothing that could be done about it.

The enemy was strong while they were weaker by a huge degree!

Only Chai Ke Qing was still continuing: "Everyone, listen to me..."

"Shut up!" Chai Gan could not endure it anymore, he waved his hand and sealed Chai Ke Qing, making her unable to even budge.

Chai Ke Qing was shocked, she had never expected her first supreme elder to do this!

This method surprised the three variant human immortals.

When Chai Gan used this move, not even a slight aura leaked out from the start to finish.

Without being able to sense the aura, the three variant human Gu Immortals were unable to judge what path this killer move belonged to.

Chai clan was a Southern Border super force after all, it had some foundation.

Chai Gan’s expression was cold as he stared at a Chai clan Gu Immortal: "Chai Dui Shan, control your own descendant."

"Yes." Chai Dui Shan immediately walked towards Chai Ke Qing and placed his hand on her shoulder.

Instantly, the seal on Chai Ke Qing was strengthened further.

Chai Ke Qing’s mind shook intensely, her expression was one of incredulity. Her eyes moved towards the side and reddened as she looked at the ancestor that had once been so tall and grand in her heart.

Seeing this, the three variant human Gu Immortals had a similar thought —

The outcome was set!

A day later.

While Chai clan’s headquarters were empty, Human Smoke Mountain was attacked by the biggest beast calamity of the past hundred years. An earth path immemorial desolate beast dug out from the ground.

At that time, Chai clan’s immortals had gone out to fight for blessed lands, inheritances, and so on, and only a few rank six Gu Immortals were left to guard the headquarters.

In order to protect the common people, the Gu Immortals left behind, with Chai Ke Qing as the head, used killer moves without caring for losses to Chai clan.

This move inflicted damage on both enemies and oneself, although the immemorial desolate beast was killed, Human Smoke Mountain was heavily damaged and was almost turned into a crater.

Fortunately, they were able to protect some clansmen.

"Although there is a difference between immortals and mortals, Chai clan holds no such differentiation."

"Human life is most important, mortal lives are as precious as Gu Immortal lives! Even if we have to sacrifice our lives, it is worth it if we can save more lives."

"This is my Chai clan’s principle, it is our integrity as part of the righteous path!"

Chai clan’s first supreme elder Chai Gan proclaimed his words that were full of righteousness to Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world after the event.

The three variant human immortals set off on a journey back in secret.

Human Smoke Mountain was naturally attacked by them.

According to the agreement between the three variant human immortals and Chai clan, Chai clan sold Human Smoke Mountain as well as most of the mortals on Human Smoke Mountain, only keeping their own clansmen. They also kept some random outsiders to put up a show.

Chai clan Gu Immortals did not make a move, the three variant human immortals dug up Human Smoke Mountain and slaughtered countless mortals.

Lastly, the three immortals took away Chai clan’s human path results, while leaving a fire path true inheritance and three rank eight Immortal Gu to Chai clan.

"Hahaha, master’s bottom line was five rank eight Immortal Gu for this mission, I did not think we would complete this mission with just three." Shi Zong laughed.

"Even if Chai clan is a super clan and has been in Southern Border for a long time, they are truly inept. Just three rank eight Immortal Gu were enough to blow them away." Golden Fur Immortal Monarch also showed his disdain.

At present, there were over twenty rank eight Immortal Gu listed on the sovereign immortal aperture’s exchange list!

These rank eight Immortal Gu were of various paths and could be exchanged for using contribution points!

Fang Yuan had been helping many Gu Immortals undergo tribulation, which spiked the number of rank eight Gu Immortals in the sovereign immortal aperture. Because of this, Fang Yuan put some rank eight Immortal Gu on the exchange list.

This move stimulated all the rank eight Gu Immortals, they were excited to the point of madness.

Even though many Gu Immortals knew clearly: Fang Yuan was dangling a carrot in front of them so that they would work for him like a mule.

But this carrot was too large and too glossy, it really made them salivate!

How hard was it to obtain a rank eight Immortal Gu, how hard was it to refine it?

The Gu Immortals simply could not resist this temptation!

"Congratulations, Bing Yuan, for saving two rank eight Immortal Gu for master. When we return, you will definitely be rewarded with lots of bonus contribution points." Golden Fur Immortal Monarch flattered.

Fang Yuan’s task rewards were not fixed, they could change according to the change in situation.

Bing Yuan laughed reservedly: "Actually, I don’t care much about contribution points. I saved the two rank eight Immortal Gu not for contribution points, but to help my family. You know that my Xue Er is Lord Fang Yuan’s fiancée after all."

"This again."

"Bing Yuan is showing off her relationship with master again!"

Shi Zong and Golden Fur Immortal Monarch looked at each other secretly, seeing the complex emotions in each other’s eyes.

They had heard of Bing Yuan mentioning this relationship so many times that they started feeling nauseous. But even so, every time they heard it, Shi Zong and Golden Fur Immortal Monarch could not help but feel envious.

Not willing for Bing Yuan to stay on this topic, Shi Zong said: "Our side is clearly so strong, why do you think master still used such a huge price to trade with Chai clan?"

Golden Fur Immortal Monarch immediately replied: "In my opinion, master traded with Wu clan, Chai clan, and Fang clan, probably because he wants to convert to righteous path."

Shi Zong heaved a sigh: "If I had status and strength like master's, I would run wild, who can stop me? Hehehe, a mere Chai clan will be turned to ashes with just a flick of my finger. Will I still talk business with these people?"

Bing Yuan snorted coldly: "Which is why you will never become an existence like master. Master's considerations are always far-sighted, how can we reckon what he is thinking? If we make guesses, it is no different than ants trying to estimate the sun and moon."

"Yes, yes." Golden Fur Immortal Monarch quickly added, "Actually, even if we turn to righteous path, our lives will be pretty good. Just look at those Chai clan Gu Immortals holding back their anger, it was really refreshing. I, a hairy man, finally get to experience the taste of equality."

The three immortals looked at each other and saw smiles on the others' faces.

Bing Yuan said: "Whether master walks the righteous path or demonic path, we only need to know one thing. That is, we follow master's decision. If master wants to negotiate and do business, then we will do business. If master wants to kill someone, we will go kill that unlucky fellow."

"Naturally!" Golden Fur Immortal Monarch patted his chest strongly.

Shi Zong also nodded, saying with emotions: "In the history of humanity, besides Ren Zu, I only respect master!"

Over this recent period of time, Fang Yuan's subordinates had a huge transformation.

The transformation on the surface was the rapid increase in their cultivation level and strength. And the internal mental transformation was that their loyalty towards Fang Yuan was increasing rapidly.

The authority of the supreme demon, harsh agreements, and terrifying battle achievements made these Gu Immortals feel dread and not dare to rebel. On this basis, Fang Yuan only needed to give some benefits and these Gu Immortals would feel deeply grateful to him!

And currently, Fang Yuan's treatment towards them was something the other forces simply could not match.

Such huge benefits made these Gu Immortals gather tightly around Fang Yuan.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2140: Establishing Dao Veins

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

A huge butterfly was fluttering in the air.

This butterfly was pure-white and let out graceful cloud light. Its speed was sometimes fast, sometimes slow; when it was fast, it was almost like teleportation, and when it was slow, it moved leisurely like fluttering leaves.

This was a totem killer move – Cloud Light Butterfly.

The totem killer moves Zhan Bu Du brought from Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven had extremely high value.

Based on their grades, these totem killer moves were divided into: basic totems, unique totems, and super totems.

There were thousands of basic totems, including dark capital strength tiger, golden bell totem, rain eagle totem and so on.

After the cultivators of Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven refined a basic totem, they continued to develop the totem, making it a totem unique to them.

These totems were different for different Gu Immortals.

For instance, Zhan Bu Du combined rain eagle and thunder fish into kunpeng totem, which was his unique totem. It could not be copied by others because this totem was closely related to the distribution and scale of Zhan Bu Du’s dao marks.

Above unique totems were super totems.

There were extremely few of these totems and they were rare to the point of being only rumors and legends.

Zhan Bu Du only heard of them and had not seen any.

Many Gu cultivators of Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven also were doubtful regarding this grade of totem.

But in Fang Yuan’s opinion, they should exist.

“According to legends, super totems can leave the Gu cultivator and exist by themselves, they possess the ability to cultivate and can act by themselves. Isn’t this speaking of Qing Chou?”

Qing Chou was originally a killer move, but through Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s arrangements, it turned into an immemorial desolate beast.

Even the grand Spectral Soul went down because of Qing Chou.

All the myriad paths reached the same point in the end.

When totem killer moves were cultivated to the limit, they would be like Qing Chou, transforming from a dead killer move to a certain living form.

From another angle, Gu refinement was also the same.

Gu cultivators refined many dead Gu materials into a living Gu worm.

And Gu worms and killer moves were the same in essence.

Life, Gu worms, killer moves, and others, they were just a manifestation of ‘Dao’.

“Unfortunately, I still cannot improve totem killer moves into compound killer moves at the moment.” Fang Yuan sighed inwardly.

When totem killer moves were used to deal with the enemies, they had to leave the sovereign immortal body and would no longer be under the protection of unrestrained heavenly marks.

“Maybe in the future, when my heaven path attainment increases, I can use heaven path dao marks with totem killer moves to create compound totem killer moves.”

Fang Yuan already made some estimations.

His heaven path attainment level needed to increase.

In fact, his heaven path attainment had been rising all along.

He was continuously refining heaven path dao marks into unrestrained heavenly marks, and was using heaven path Gu like heaven’s envy Immortal Gu, these experiences gave him insights towards heaven path.

But his heaven path was still far from reaching master level.

Master level heaven path attainment was the starting point for qualitative change.

Fang Yuan continued to cultivate totem killer moves.

So far, he was accumulating totem killer moves.

Fang Yuan carefully selected these totem killer moves from the basic totems, and after perfecting them, they were at rank eight killer move level.

A message appeared that disturbed Fang Yuan’s cultivation.

Fang Yuan stopped his cultivation and inspected this message.

This message came from Lu Wei Yin.

The letter focused on the method of artificially creating earth veins.

“My thought of modifying the sovereign immortal aperture is possible after all.” Fang Yuan thought with some joy.

Over this period of time, Fang Yuan had published the exchange list and invested greatly to nurture his subordinate Gu Immortals. Because of this, Fang Yuan’s subordinates had a huge increase in their strength, they became extremely active and took the initiative to do missions everywhere.

The sovereign immortal aperture’s situation had already stabilized.

Fang Yuan estimated he could annex three more grotto-heavens before the ecosystem started breaking down again.

But Fang Yuan was not satisfied with this.

It was best if he could devour all the grotto-heavens and increase his strength to the limit before the battle in Crazed Demon Cave.

When he goes to Crazed Demon Cave in the future and faces off against venerables, he would have a much easier time.

However, even if Fang Yuan placed all the variant human alliance Gu Immortals inside the sovereign immortal aperture, including Qi Sea Ancestor to overlook the whole situation, he could not annex all the two heavens’ grotto-heavens.

Even if he could do so, Fang Yuan would not do it.

If he did it, the sovereign immortal aperture’s ecosystem would turn completely chaotic, and with just a little carelessness, it would break apart.

Currently, Fang Yuan was in a secure environment and there was already this threat. When he fights with venerables and they discover this weakness, they may have some special methods to exploit this weakness.

In fact, Fang Yuan’s silver luck pillar was loose and not condensed, it was hinting to Fang Yuan that this obvious weakness was very likely to be used by venerables.

Just relying on manpower did not work, Fang Yuan racked his brains and finally thought of another method.

That was to construct veins!

Heaven had heaven veins, earth had earth veins, and humans had human veins.

The so-called vein was extraordinary and special, not only was it an agglomeration of dao marks, but it also contained the characteristics of movement.

Heaven veins might be formless, but they contained abundant heaven path dao marks. At the same time, these heaven path dao marks were not constantly unchanging, they circulated and transformed continuously.

So when qi tides swept the world, there were qi harvest fruits every time they dissipated. And in the two heavens, because almost all the grotto-heavens were placed on a heaven vein node, the qi harvest fruits’ emergence became even more obvious, turning into a calamity.

Earth veins were similar.

After the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan, earth veins appeared and spread throughout the five regions. Fang Yuan, Lu Wei Yin, and others used the characteristic of the earth vein movement to escape smoothly.

Why were there abnormal situations occurring in Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture?

What was the truth and source of it?

Where was the crux of the issue?

When Fang Yuan researched it, the answer he got was very thought-provoking.

The answer was — the non-conflicting dao marks of the sovereign immortal aperture!

By right, there should be conflict between different dao marks. But there was none of it in the sovereign immortal aperture, dao marks of all paths were harmonious.

Excessive harmony was not a good thing.

There was no absolute good or bad in the world!

Just like when Ni clan encountered the meteor calamity.

This meteor calamity was extremely destructive and Fang Yuan had to personally make a move to resolve it.

The source of this meteor calamity was just a spurt of fire rain in Mini Red Heaven.

After Fang Yuan annexed Fire Plain grotto-heaven, his fire path dao marks had a massive surge which caused frequent fire rain in Mini Red Heaven.

And among all the fire rain, one spell continued to grow and happened to shoot through a charcoal lake.

The fire rain’s dao marks and charcoal lake’s dao marks merged together, forming rank six level killer move meteor rain.

As the meteor rain entered Mini Orange Heaven, it combined with the dao marks on its way and its strength increased to rank seven level.

As it entered Mini Yellow Heaven, it combined with metal path dao marks and its might increased to rank eight.

When it was above the Ni clan army, the scale of these meteors was already dense enough to fill the sky, reaching tens of thousands!

The smallest were only the size of a small field, while some were as large as a mountain.

If there was the presence of conflicting dao marks, this calamity would have not occurred. It was very likely that when the fire rain shot through the charcoal lake, it would be restrained by the earth path dao marks in the charcoal lake, its might would fall sharply and it would end there.

But because of the harmony between dao marks in the sovereign immortal aperture, after the fire rain went through the charcoal lake, it became meteor fire rain.

After Fang Yuan realized this crucial point, he understood how to end the issues in the sovereign immortal aperture.

It was simple, that was to make the dao marks in the sovereign immortal aperture conflict!

Once there were conflicting dao marks, the sovereign immortal aperture’s biggest issue would be solved easily, it would be stable like the outside world’s five regions.

Lu Wei Yin’s letter also confirmed Fang Yuan’s idea.

He mentioned: When Shadow Sect refined sovereign immortal fetus Gu, Mushroomman Paradise had also secretly helped.

Spectral Soul might or might not have realized this issue.

But that was not important.

Spectral Soul and Paradise Earth might oppose each other, but they reached a tacit agreement through Red Lotus Demon Venerable because of fate Gu.

Lu Wei Yin analyzed: the fundamental reason for sovereign immortal fetus Gu being rank nine was non-conflicting dao marks. But if it were to be taken a step further and raised to rank ten, the dao marks had to conflict.

This conflict was not taking a step back, but instead, to make the sovereign immortal body’s dao marks follow the master’s intention, it could either be non-conflicting or conflicting dao marks at will!

Making the dao marks conflict could resolve the sovereign immortal body’s greatest flaw — strong attack, weak defense!

However, Fang Yuan clearly did not have enough capability to accomplish this.

Even Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was unable to do this.

After all, that would not be rank nine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, but rank ten!

Rank nine Immortal Gu were already rare and mighty, rank ten was only a rumor of legends.

Fang Yuan had lived for hundreds of years but had only heard rumors of two rank ten Immortal Gu.

One was destiny Gu, one of the main materials for refining rank ten destiny Gu was rank nine fate Gu.

Another was eternal Gu. This legend originated from <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

Currently, from Lu Wei Yin’s letter, Fang Yuan learned of the possible third rank ten Immortal Gu — sovereign immortal fetus Gu!

Fang Yuan could not accomplish conflicting dao marks, then what should he do?

Easy!

Since he could not create conflicting dao marks, Fang Yuan went to the extreme, to make dao marks even more harmonious and condense them.

But this cohesion and harmony was selective, and would be under Fang Yuan’s control.

What was the solution?

Fang Yuan did not need to think much before the method of vein construction emerged in his mind.

There were many kinds of dao veins.

Heaven vein, earth vein, human vein, fire vein, water vein, and so on.

In Eastern Sea, undercurrents interwove under the sea, forming a natural route for transportation of goods. Many of Eastern Sea’s caravans made use of Gu worms to go deep under the sea and used the undercurrents to move rapidly, in a short time, they could travel for ten thousand li, or even a hundred thousand li, to engage in trade.

This was actually one of the forms of water veins.

Southern Border’s Paradise Earth true inheritance naturally contained the way to construct artificial earth vein. But Fang Yuan still wanted to consult Lu Wei Yin regarding the specific way to put it into practice.

Regarding him and Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, Fang Yuan was always on guard.

For instance, Fang Yuan had never let Lu Wei Yin enter the sovereign immortal aperture. Or for example, Fang Yuan preserved Paradise Earth’s dream realms and Mushroomman Paradise, he did not make a move on them without deep consideration.

“Adding in Lu Wei Yin’s suggestion, I can modify my previous idea and get an overall mature way to implement it. I can let those Gu Immortals finish the early steps.”

“Or maybe, I should let Meng Qiu Zhen explore Paradise Earth’s dream realms first and raise my earth path attainment, which would make it much more convenient for constructing the earth vein.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2141: Fang Huan’s Revival

Central Continent.

In the depths of an Earth Trench.

Inside a pitch-black cave, two cold rays of light shone suddenly.

This was Bai Ning Bing’s gaze.

As she ended this closed cultivation session, she had not only created an ice path killer move, but also gained some insight towards ice path.

“I can clearly feel my understanding of ice and snow deepening by a little, I am not far from grandmaster level.” Bai Ning Bing mumbled.

“Such a pity that after I converted to dragonman, my comprehension speed of ice and snow path fell sharply. My current master level is mostly the accumulation from before.”

Previously, Bai Ning Bing possessed Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique and had an extremely high innate advantage when cultivating ice path and soul path. Her attainment levels in those paths could increase rapidly.

But after converting her body, it influenced this aspect.

Dragonman was specialized in enslavement path, if Bai Ning Bing were to change to cultivating enslavement path, she would have an advantage in it. But the level of this advantage could not compare to the help the Northern Dark Ice Soul Physique provided in cultivating ice path and soul path.

Man was the spirit of all living beings, the talent of the ten extreme physiques was far superior to the talents of the variant human races.

Bai Ning Bing cautiously walked out of the cave.

This cave was formed naturally and was at the side of a cliff in the Earth Trench.

Bai Ning Bing activated breath concealment ice pearl, shortly after, an ice thread-like thin line appeared on her slender and fair neck, circling around it.

This move was created by Bai Ning Bing and was not from Bai Xiang’s true inheritance.

The killer move did not let out any aura when activated. Because the aura was stored as tiny ice pearls on the ice thread.

The disadvantage of this move was that it sacrificed some of its power, and once there were too many ice pearls, they would combine into one and turn into a noose that would strangle Bai Ning Bing, causing serious injuries or even death.

“I must conceal my aura when exploring this deep into the Earth Trench.” Bai Ning Bing’s expression was calm as she quietly activated an investigative killer move to scout her surroundings.

After she left the Earth Treasury, she started cultivating in the depths of the Earth Trench. She was chased down by wild beast groups and suffered a lot.

Fortunately, with the killer move Bai Xiang, as long as a fragment of her body remained, Bai Ning Bing was undying, otherwise, she would not have survived until now.

“There are three immemorial desolate beasts within a hundred li radius, as well as an ancient desolate beast group.” Bai Ning Bing quickly understood her surroundings.

She only had rank seven cultivation, it was extremely dangerous for her to live in this environment. Even ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals found it difficult to explore this place.

With huge risks came huge rewards.

The cultivation resources here were at rank eight level. Even if Bai Ning Bing could not use them, she could sell them in treasure yellow heaven and buy the resources she needed.

Bai Ning Bing liked taking risks, most people would be on tenterhooks about this kind of life, but she immersed in it and enjoyed the thrill of being at the brink of life and death.

“Although it is dangerous to cultivate here, there is still a chance of survival. But in the five regions and two heavens, it is even more dangerous, be they Fang Yuan, Shadow Sect, or Heavenly Court, they will all hunt me down.”

Bai Ning Bing had a clear judgment of her situation.

“Hmm?” Bai Ning Bing had just walked out of the cave when her expression changed slightly.

She sensed that most of the wild beasts suddenly acted like cats that had smelled fish, beginning to rush towards one direction.

Some beasts and beast groups were unmoved, but they were soon engulfed by the will of the majority of the beasts and rushed forward as well.

Thereupon, a massive beast tide formed rapidly under Bai Ning Bing’s gaze.

“What’s going on? These beasts seem to be attracted to something, they gave up on their fights and territories to go after it. What could it be?”

Bai Ning Bing could not help but feel curious.

Without any hesitation, she immediately activated a movement killer move as she joined the beast tide.

The beast tide started gathering together, countless ancient desolate beasts and some conspicuous immemorial desolate beasts were surrounding an area.

This area was also on the precipice of the Earth Trench, it protruded slowly like a burial mound. At this moment, it was letting out yellowish-brown and red light.

The light was like water as it moved around dazzlingly.

On the peak of the burial mound, there was a tombstone! The tombstone seemed to have writings but they were obstructed by the light. They could not be seen even by using investigative killer moves.

Bai Ning Bing had already transformed into Bai Xiang state and joined with the beast groups.

“What place is this? There is such a dense earth path and fire path aura here. What is hiding here? Immortal materials? Or Immortal Gu?”

“But why is there a tombstone? The tombstone seems to have some characters written on it. Is it made by someone? Who is buried there?”

Bai Ning Bing looked at the surrounding beasts.

She had a trace of understanding: “Most of these beasts are earth path and fire path beasts, no wonder they were attracted here. There are only beasts of other paths here and they were forcefully pulled in by the beast tide.”

Boom!

Right at this time, the two lights over the burial mound suddenly shot towards the sky, turning into a giant yellow-red pillar of light.

The beasts roared in excitement.

Some beasts began to charge towards the pillar as if trying to get the top spot, but they were soon knocked down and trampled by the beasts behind them.

The beast groups fell into chaos and madness, fighting and killing each other as they charged towards the pillar of light.

But even if some beasts reached the front and collided with the pillar, they did not get what they wanted. The pillar of light remained unmoving, it was like a large mountain that refused to budge an inch.

Bai Ning Bing was a Gu Immortal and had intelligence far above the beasts. She hid outside the chaotic battle, and although she was still implicated, she mainly observed the changes.

As time passed, there were heavy casualties among the beast groups with corpses scattered everywhere. The yellow-red pillar of light also started to shrink, seemingly converging into the burial mound.

The beasts became even more frantic, their bloodthirsty, pained, and chewing noises filled Bai Ning Bing’s ears.

“This vast world is truly profound without limits and it has endless mysteries to explore. Let me see what is going on.” Bai Ning Bing began to move closer towards the mound.

When the beasts had killed each other and the survivors were riddled with injuries, the yellow-red light was completely absorbed by the mound.

The tombstone on the mound also dug into the earth.

The mound seemed to have reached the point of qualitative change as it suddenly split apart.

Crack crack.

Thin cracks spread all over the mound.

Shortly after, the mound burst open from the inside and a Gu Immortal’s aura leaked towards the surroundings.

A naked male immortal opened his eyes and looked at his surroundings in a daze: “Who… who am I?”

But at the next moment, he started becoming clear-headed as he recalled many things.

“I, I remember, I am Fang Huan.” The male immortal’s eyes shrunk in amazement and shock.

Roar—!

Beast groups roared and pounced towards the naked immortal agitatedly.

The male immortal opened his eyes wide and flew to the air: “I am alive again! I am Fang Huan, I am — Lava Demon Lord!”

Bam!

A huge sound erupted as red light waves spread from the male immortal’s body.

The light waves surged like a tsunami, drowning its surroundings.

Everywhere they passed by, the red light waves burned everything; most of the beast groups were burned to death instantly, and some of the surviving beasts were even more injured. Some were lying on the ground on the verge of death, while a small portion of the beasts went berserk as they charged towards the male immortal.

The male immortal Fang Huan’s expression turned solemn as he let out the red light waves again.

The red light swept the whole battlefield, causing a large number of casualties, but there were still several immemorial desolate beasts that managed to reach Fang Huan.

Fang Huan could not keep his composure anymore as he shouted towards Bai Ning Bing: “Lend me a hand. I will reward you heavily after this!”

“Okay.” Bai Ning Bing agreed without hesitation and attacked directly.

Within a short period of time, she easily killed those several immemorial desolate beasts.

It was because they were already heavily injured.

“Many thanks, friend! Fortunately, with your help, I could… ahh!” Fang Huan was suddenly cut into two at the waist.

Bai Ning Bing grabbed his head, holding his upper body as she smiled cruelly: “I thought about it, it is still more convenient to soul search directly.”

Fang Huan stared at Bai Ning Bing with wide eyes.

This female immortal had light-blue vertical dragon pupils and had a pair of spiral dragon horns. Her glistening silver hair was shiny like crystal, extending to her waist. Her skin was snow-white, and on her peerlessly beautiful face, there was a hint of crazed indifference.

“Such a beautiful woman…” Fang Huan died with his eyes wide open

Bai Ning Bing searched Fang Huan’s soul but was unable to obtain any valuable information. Although Fang Huan revived in the mound, he was still muddle-headed and did not know many things.

Bai Ning Bing landed on the broken mound and searched carefully.

There were still no gains.

“This area had such a large scale of earth path and fire path dao marks, but they have disappeared completely, and it is no different from ordinary ground now.”

But Bai Ning Bing looked at Fang Huan’s body: “No, to be more accurate, these dao marks condensed into the immortal body.”

“Wonderful, truly amazing.” Bai Ning Bing praised repeatedly.

Through soul search, she knew this Fang Huan was from a previous generation. He cultivated earth path, but later inherited heart fire true inheritance, so cultivated fire path as well. He did fire monster business and had been one of the tycoons of this business in treasure yellow heaven.

He had died long ago, but for some reason, he actually revived!

“This grave-like mound seems to have the same effect as Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard, it can let Gu Immortals revive?!” Bai Ning Bing was excited about this discovery.

She had made a huge gain this time.

Not only did she discover the mysterious mound, she also captured Fang Huan’s soul and obtained his inheritance as well as cultivation insights.

The even bigger battle spoils were the beast corpses that filled the battlefield.

There were many rank eight immortal materials here! Rank seven immortal materials were even higher in number.

Sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Southern Border.

Rumble!

With a loud sound, a mountain landed on the ground like a large stamp.

The famous mountain was red and squarish. This mountain did not have even a trace of soil, it was completely formed from all kinds of copper. It was Copper Seal mountain.

Previously, Copper Seal mountain was targeted by the tribulation of the three thousand heaven path dao marks, half of it was split by the lightning, giving out dense smoke and sparks. The entire mountain had turned into a molten state and emitted a terrible smell.

But now, after Fang Yuan issued the corresponding missions, Copper Seal mountain was repaired by many Gu Immortals. It was not only restored to its former state, it was even larger now.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2142: Ideas About Resources

“Alright, we have finally moved this Copper Seal mountain now.” The exhausted Gu Immortals let out breaths of relief.

One rockman Gu Immortal did not rest and began to prepare.

After a long while, he activated an earth path killer move.

Under the effect of this killer move, Copper Seal mountain seemed to shake slightly. The base of the mountain started emitting a thin earthen-yellow radiance.

The threads of light gathered and formed a translucent, golden earth path mountain root.

The mountain root pierced the ground and began to spread quickly.

The rockman Gu Immortal continued to maintain the killer move, he had an expression of difficulty, his immortal essence was consumed rapidly.

Finally, he could no longer continue and stopped the killer move.

The mountain root stopped spreading rapidly and paused. It had entered deep underground and began to grow with normal speed.

In the coming years, this mountain root would join with the surrounding dao marks, maintaining and helping to stabilize Copper Seal mountain.

Trees had tree roots, while mountains had mountain roots. If they were casually moved, the roots could be broken and result in their destruction.

Therefore, moving famous trees and mountains required special wood path and earth path methods, otherwise, there were more disadvantages than advantages in moving them forcefully.

The rockman Gu Immortal sat cross-legged on the ground and started to recover.

He was extremely tired, his immortal essence expenditure was also the highest among the immortals. Naturally, after the mission completion, his contribution points would be that much higher as well.

As for the other Gu Immortals, they had finished resting and started to carry out the final inspection.

After a while, the immortals gathered once again.

“That will do, this Copper Seal mountain’s state is good.”

“The mountain root’s situation is also pretty good. Such a famous mountain and mountain root can completely bear the task of being an earth vein node.”

“Master is truly majestic and bold. He is actually constructing an earth vein in the entire mini five regions. This plan is really too grand and will need at least ten years to complete. It really makes me admire him endlessly.”

The immortals nodded, they had the same feeling.

“Alright, let’s leave. We need to relocate the next famous mountain.”

“There are not many Gu Immortals who can relocate mountains, but there will be fewer tasks like this as we continue finishing them, the contribution points are also abundant. Let’s work hard and try to finish some more.”

“Yes, yes. Recently, if someone cannot continue, they will make a trip to the liver life formation. No one wants to give up on those contribution points!”

“I already went before this.”

“Haha, is that so? I also went there!”

The immortals left Copper Seal mountain while conversing.

If the mini five regions were looked from high above, one would see about ten groups of people working hard to relocate mountains.

Of course, it was not just famous mountains.

Besides famous mountains, there were also the ten earths that could act as earth vein nodes.

There was a detailed description regarding ten earths in Southern Border’s Paradise Earth true inheritance.

The ten earths were: Earth Abyss, Earth Trench, Earth Tunnel, Earth Cave, Earth Prison, Production Earth, Flying Earth, Formation Earth, Treasure Earth, and Tomb Earth.

These ten earths could bear the task of being earth vein nodes.

The first step in Fang Yuan’s artificial earth vein construction was to arrange all kinds of earth vein nodes in the mini five regions. He would then use earth path methods to connect the nodes. Lastly, he would make adjustments.

Currently, Fang Yuan could only create half of the ten earths: Earth Abyss, Earth Trench, Earth Tunnel, Production Earth, and Formation Earth.

The other five earths were beyond his ability.

For example: Tomb Earth.

The formation of this earth was shrouded in mystery, even Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable could not see through it.

Gu Immortals could revive in this area.

Tomb Earth’s tombstone was also extremely mysterious, possessing the ability of information path. It seemed to be able to extract and condense all the information of the Gu Immortal’s life from the River of Time.

The greater the reputation of the Gu Immortal, the more detailed the writings on the tombstone, which seemed to provide more help towards the Gu Immortal’s revival.

The specific relation between them had to be verified.

At present, Fang Yuan’s subordinates were all moving mountains.

Mountains usually acted as earth vein nodes and not the ten earths.

These mountains needed to be at least of famous mountain level.

“There are not many famous mountains in the sovereign immortal aperture. I estimate they can only cover thirty percent of the earth vein nodes in the first step of the plan.”

The artificial earth vein project was extremely large and needed the most investment. Fang Yuan had annexed a large number of grotto-heavens and obtained an inestimable amount of cultivation resources, but now, he was starting to see the limits.

Fang Yuan still had a famous mountain which he did not use.

That was the recently obtained Human Smoke Mountain!

“It is better to keep this mountain. My intuition is telling me that if I continue to use Chai clan’s human path research results, I will be able to condense the essence of Human Smoke Mountain and form an incomplete Human Mountain!”

Fang Yuan was a human path grandmaster, his intuition regarding human path was much more accurate than human path masters.

After killing many mortals raised by Chai clan, Human Sea was complete, but Human Mountain had yet to form.

The combination of Human Mountain and Human Sea would definitely be extremely powerful. Even in five hundred years of his previous life, Fang Yuan had not seen it.

But this was a long-term project.

The investment in constructing a secluded domain of heaven and earth was extremely big, much bigger than the investment in an artificial earth vein!

The reason the incomplete Human Sea could be completed was because there were the painstaking accumulations of Eastern Sea’s Xia clan.

It was at its final stage and required human path resources.

Eastern Sea’s Xia clan suffered from their righteous path identity and could only collect the resources secretly. How could they dare to be like Fang Yuan, killing and massacring openly!

Firstly, Fang Yuan chose the targets of slaughter cleverly, he did not cross the limits of the Righteous Qi Alliance, they ignored it.

Later, he paid attention to Chai clan’s mortals.

Fang Yuan decisively gave up on a portion of the benefits to negotiate forcefully. Even a super clan like Chai clan finally submitted to Fang Yuan’s demonic might, lowering their head to cooperate.

“I am starting to lack resources.” Fang Yuan frowned slightly.

The plan of constructing Human Mountain was definitely far away in the future.

In fact, the incomplete Refinement Sea was also on the verge of being consumed.

Fang Yuan had invested too much in this recent period of time.

In fact, he had looted countless cultivation resources. These resources mostly came from two heavens' grotto-heavens, which had a long history spanning several hundreds of thousands of years, and even a million years.

But it would not last long!

Fang Yuan had been refining rank eight Immortal Gu on a large scale, at the same time, he used rank six and rank seven cultivation resources to nurture his subordinates.

Fang Yuan had too many Gu Immortals under him!

Just Lang Ya Sect alone had many hairy man Gu Immortals, the variant human alliance had even more Gu Immortals. There was also the group of variant human Gu Immortals like Bing Yuan, Shi Zong and Mo Tan Sang.

Beast Calamity grotto-heaven's human Gu Immortals were close to ten, including Combat Beast King.

And there was also Lady White Rabbit, Fairy Miao Yin, as well as Fang Yuan's clones Wu Shuai, Zhan Bu Du, and others.

Not long ago, mushroomman Gu Immortals joined him. Among them, the strongest was Ke Xin Hong.

The size of Fang Yuan's subordinate Gu Immortals far surpassed normal super forces. Even Longevity Heaven could not compare to him, that was to say, only the former Shadow Sect that had Zombie Alliance, and Heavenly Court that had the ten great ancient sects under it, could compare to him.

Were Wu clan to possess this many Gu Immortals, Wu Yong might be laughing happily even in his dreams. A formidable character like Wu Yong did not care about the difference in races, he only cared if they were usable or not. Naturally, it would be better if they were all human Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan was expanding so much that no amount of cultivation resources would be enough for him to use.

Fortunately, his foundation was extremely robust and could last for this long.

But now, it was beginning to show signs of exhaustion.

"Looks like I need to plunder resources again." Although his accumulations were still there, Fang Yuan was preparing for the future.

"I have already looted the resources of the variant human alliance. Only a portion of the grotto-heavens remain now."

"Mushroomman Paradise's situation is also the same. Almost all the mushroommen have moved over, let alone the resources accumulated there."

Fang Yuan analyzed.

He had placed his hopes on Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven, but from the information Zhan Bu Du brought, Fang Yuan knew Longevity Heaven had placed its forces in Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven.

Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven itself was very powerful and was difficult to conquer. There were definitely forces eyeing it other than Longevity Heaven.

So, although that place had plenty of resources, Fang Yuan did not want to target it at the moment.

Eastern Sea’s blue dragon whale also had abundant resources.

But it was also not possible.

Ever since the last time he left, Fang Yuan had not been able to find any traces of the blue dragon whale.

He had used the killer move heaven and earth travel to try to enter the blue dragon whale’s immortal aperture, but failed mysteriously every time.

“There is still a group of two heavens’ grotto-heavens who submitted to Qi Sea Ancestor, they are all humans. These grotto-heavens also have plenty of cultivation resources. Maybe, I can cooperate with Qi Sea clone.”

For the moment, Fang Yuan did not want to invade super forces like Chai clan and Wu clan.

That would expend his own luck.

Any super force possessed enormous luck and had a few tricks up their sleeves.

There might not be many benefits and the risks were definitely huge. More importantly, even if he invaded super forces, Fang Yuan did not want to take over too much of the outside world’s territories.

It was much better to develop the sovereign immortal aperture, both his territories and himself were in one body, it was extremely flexible and convenient.

Other Gu Immortals did not have the sovereign immortal aperture, so it was more beneficial for them to occupy territories. If they possessed the sovereign immortal aperture, they might also make the same choice as Fang Yuan.

A strong wind suddenly blew over from Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool and charged towards the skies before dissipating.

He Chun Qiu brought good news, Wu clan’s fan wind Gu was advanced successfully, though it failed two times in the process.

Rank eight fan wind Gu!

In recent times, Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool had gone through some adjustments and its ability was much stronger now.

Including fan wind Gu, Fang Yuan had already refined over fifty rank eight Immortal Gu with Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool.

“I can sell true inheritances on a large scale in treasure yellow heaven and exchange for cultivation resources. The profits from doing Gu refinement business are also quite amazing.” Fang Yuan thought of two ways to gather resources.

According to Fang Yuan’s current refinement path strength, he was only unable to refine rank nine and rank ten Immortal Gu, as well as some specific rank eight Immortal Gu.

For instance, Fang Yuan lacked sufficient rank eight luck path immortal materials for fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2143: Tiger Poison Gu

“You have only seven days left to live!”

Meng Qiu Zhen entered Paradise Earth’s dream realm, what welcomed him was this sentence.

“What?” Meng Qiu Zhen blurted out in astonishment.

In front of him was an old mushroomman granny.

She sighed and said in a guilty tone: “Little Mi, your grandmother is too useless, I really have no way to treat your illness.”

Using this short time, Meng Qiu Zhen quickly scanned his surroundings. He found that not only was there a mushroomman in front of him, he himself was also a mushroomman.

And right now, they were in a hut that was specific to mushroomman culture.

This hut had deep-green walls, it was constructed with special grass and mud. The roof of the hut was made with straws.

The furnishings inside the hut were simple and revealed this was a doctor’s home.

“Grandma, is it really hopeless? Is there really no other way?” Meng Qiu Zhen pretended to be in disbelief while trying hard to find clues regarding this dream realm.

The mushroomman granny hesitated for a moment before saying: “There is a way.”

Meng Qiu Zhen immediately asked: “What way?”

The mushroomman granny shook her head and walked towards a table.

There were medicine pots all over the table; some were white, some were gray, but most were black.

Some of these medicine pots were opened, they were filled with dried medicinal herbs or pitch-black medicinal liquid. Whereas some medicine pots were covered tightly with lids.

The old granny seemed to be in a complicated mood, she subconsciously moved these medicine pots before gradually calming down.

With her back towards Meng Qiu Zhen, she said: “The one thing I can think of that can possibly save you is not a method, but a person.”

“A person?” Meng Qiu Zhen got near to the old granny, he saw these medicine pots actually contained Gu worms.

The old granny sighed: “Sigh, you know her too.”

Meng Qiu Zhen had no idea who she meant, but he had plenty of experience and developed quite a glib tongue, he said: “Could it be her?”

“Indeed, her. My tribe’s previous witch, Huang Wan,” said the old granny.

Every mushroomman tribe had a witch. Different from the merman tribe’s saintess, witches did not hold authority, but they usually had high reputation.

Because witches were the most capable female doctors in the mushroomman tribe.

Without the witch’s support and blessing, the mushroomman’s next tribe leader would face questioning and might even be unable to take the position.

“You only have hope of survival by looking for the previous witch, Huang Wan.” The old granny emphasized.

Meng Qiu Zhen immediately asked: “Then, where is she?”

“Whip Mountain.” The old granny looked at Meng Qiu Zhen: “Little Mi, you are a good child, I have watched you grow up. The plague is terrorizing the tribe but you should not have been infected, it was because you helped me treat others of your own accord that you got infected. You also know a thing or two about Huang Wan’s matter. Although she is extremely strong, she betrayed the tribe, so you can only go look for her personally. The tribe won’t help you.”

Meng Qiu Zhen nodded, he keenly sensed that the old granny had some hidden meaning behind her words.

He suddenly had a flash of inspiration and asked: “But grandma, I simply cannot reach there with my strength. I must see Huang Wan to obtain her help. Not only to keep my life, but more than that, I want to bring back a way to treat the illness!”

“Good child, good child.” The old granny was relieved, “That is what I want you to do. Rest assured, you are taking the risk to go to Whip Mountain, your journey will be filled with dangers and Whip Mountain is moreover a human territory. How can I, your grandmother, let you go like that?”

The old granny turned sideways and opened all of the medicine pots on the table: “You can take three of the Gu worms here. They will provide a huge help to you.”

“Many thanks, grandma!” Meng Qiu Zhen said while thinking: It was like this indeed.

He had plenty of experiences in exploring dream realms. With just this conversation, he had already probed the key of this dream realm stage.

“The crucial hidden point of this stage of the dream realm is the selection of Gu.”

“If I did not sense the old granny’s hidden meaning and mentioned it, I might not have gotten the chance to select Gu.”

“Choosing three Gu worms will definitely lower the difficulty of the dream realm.”

“But which three would be better for me?”

Meng Qiu Zhen carefully observed the Gu worms while secretly activating dream butterfly Immortal Gu.

With the help of dream butterfly Immortal Gu, Meng Qiu Zhen soon found various clues of the second stage.

“Choose quickly, stop wasting time needlessly. You need to treasure every breath of time you have.” The old granny urged.

Meng Qiu Zhen said through clenched teeth: “Grandma, let me consider for a bit longer.”

The old granny said with a cold face: “Hmph, you are already in this situation, you must be decisive. Choose three Gu worms immediately, then leave the valley through this secret passage. If this time passes, that passage will be closed for seven days. Choose quickly!”

Meng Qiu Zhen was not able to put it off any longer, but fortunately, he had already gotten much information in this short period of time.

“I choose these three.” Meng Qiu Zhen quickly chose three Gu from the tens of medicine pots.

“Good. You chose well. Huang Xiao Mi, time is pressing, I can only help you till here, leave now!” The old granny’s voice had just ended when Meng Qiu Zhen’s sight turned dark.

The dream realm entered the second stage.

He had rank three cultivation, and using his Gu worms as well as the three new Gu, he traveled rapidly through the mountains, although it was arduous.

He walked through the dangerous man-eating forest, passed the high fog, and crossed the death marsh. He was now facing his final obstacle, a thousand beast king level black bear.

Meng Qiu Zhen fought a long and bitter battle with the black bear.

Finally, the black bear collapsed on the ground.

Its thick body shrank within a few breaths of time like a balloon that was poked.

In just a short while, its blood, flesh, and organs turned into purple poison which flowed out of its wounds and orifices.

Meng Qiu Zhen carefully squatted and took out tiger poison Gu.

This rank three tiger poison Gu was one of the three Gu he chose in the first stage of the dream realm. Once activated, it could emit tiger poison.

Tiger poison Gu was like a black scorpion, but its head had golden markings that resembled the character for ‘king’.

It came out of the white silver aperture and started absorbing the poison that was all over the ground.

Soon, the poison was completely absorbed by it, and its body was slightly enlarged.

With a shift of Meng Qiu Zhen’s will, tiger poison Gu obediently flew back into his aperture.

"The first stage had many poison Gu. Like snake poison Gu, dove poison Gu, bee poison Gu, and so on. Against the thousand beast king level black bear, bee poison Gu, which is restrained by bear physique, should never be selected. Snake poison Gu and dove poison Gu have rather slow effects. Only tiger poison Gu is specialized in dealing with this kind of large beast and its effect takes place quickly as well. Moreover, when used with poison liquid Gu, tiger poison can change form and become extremely practical in battle."

In the fight with the black bear king, Meng Qiu Zhen used poison liquid Gu and tiger poison Gu to form a poison liquid tiger.

The poison liquid tiger was able to fight the black bear king head on, it greatly made up for Meng Qiu Zhen's weakness in direct combat. Meng Qiu Zhen stayed at the back and continuously used poison path Gu worms to help the poison liquid tiger and claimed victory in the end.

Naturally, tiger poison Gu also had its disadvantage.

The disadvantage was quite big as well.

There was a common saying that even tigers would not hurt their cubs, tiger poison Gu had no effect towards infantile targets.

According to dream butterfly Immortal Gu's information, Meng Qiu Zhen had already known in the first stage that the black bear was the final obstacle and also the most difficult one.

He acted according to the conditions and selected the most crucial tiger poison Gu.

"Tiger poison Gu's toxicity and venom quantity has fallen greatly, even though I gathered the remaining poison after the battle."

"Tiger poison Gu needs time to recuperate, my overall power has decreased quite a bit. Fortunately, this is the final obstacle, and this is a dream realm, not the real wilderness."

"Huh? What happened?"

Meng Qiu Zhen's expression changed slightly.

The second stage of the dream realm was still stable and did not disappear like he expected.

"Is there still another obstacle? It can't be. Dream butterfly Immortal Gu already scouted everything."

"Wait a moment, in the search before, there was also a mortal."

This mortal did not have Gu Master cultivation, so Meng Qiu Zhen did not think much of it. Maybe, if tiger poison Gu was not selected, the mortal would provide some help to the Gu cultivator exploring the dream realm.

But now, Meng Qiu Zhen realized this mortal seemed to be a crucial factor.

According to the gathered information, Meng Qiu Zhen naturally knew of this mortal's location.

He immediately moved towards the location.

Halfway on his journey, his strength started decreasing rapidly.

“What’s going on?” Meng Qiu Zhen immediately inspected himself and turned pale, “The plague has erupted! There were clearly about two more days left. Could it be, the battle with the black bear expended too much of my energy, and my body is unable to bear it so the plague erupted earlier?”

This plague was specific to mushroommen, once it erupted, mushrooms would grow all over the body.

The bigger the mushrooms grew, the more vitality they would extract from the mushroommen.

The plague broke out so violently that when Meng Qiu Zhen discovered it, he was already sapped of his strength and collapsed on the ground.

“Is this dream realm exploration going to end here?”

“I haven’t even seen Paradise Earth’s face.”

To help the main body’s plan of constructing earth vein, Meng Qiu Zhen started the exploration of Paradise Earth’s dream realm ahead of time.

“No, I still have hope.”

“Persevere, I must persevere, this place is not that far from that mortal’s location.”

Although Meng Qiu Zhen was powerless and could only lie on the ground, it had not reached the worst situation yet. At least, he had strength to breath and could use the Gu worms in his aperture.

He immediately activated a healing Gu worm and started delaying for time.

The healing Gu could not cure the root problem and only lessened the threat of the plague. But its effect was minimal like a child trying to stop a car.

“Damn it, the battle with the black bear king expended over half of my primeval essence. My primeval essence will be used up soon.”

Meng Qiu Zhen was forced into a predicament again.

But right at this time, he heard rustling noises.

“It’s that mortal’s footsteps. Good!” Meng Qiu Zhen’s eyes shone as he used all his strength to shout: “Help… help…”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2144: Pulling Mushrooms

Even though he used all his strength to shout, Meng Qiu Zhen’s voice was still faint.

“Who is asking for help?” A mortal girl pushed aside the brambles and came to the place.

“Here, look below…” Meng Qiu Zhen spoke, his voice so faint that it was like a whisper.

The mortal girl did not hear him, mumbling: “Did I hear wrongly? Sigh, it is getting late, I need to quickly gather mushrooms and sell them in Tu clan village. Eh? There are so many mushrooms here!”

The mortal girl saw Meng Qiu Zhen.

But right now, Meng Qiu Zhen’s body was already covered with mushrooms.

The mortal girl squatted and started picking the mushrooms on Meng Qiu Zhen’s body.

Every mushroom she picked, the cause of Meng Qiu Zhen’s falling vitality would decrease by one.

His illness was alleviated rapidly and his strength slowly recovered.

“That’s right, there are still two days before my illness truly breaks out. For now at least, my life should be safe!”

Meng Qiu Zhen quickly realized.

He then spoke: “Girl, the mushrooms on my body are delicious, it doesn’t matter if you pluck them all.”

The mortal girl jumped from shock.

“Don’t be afraid, I am also a person. It was me who asked for help earlier, thank you for saving me, kind girl.”

“But I did not do anything.”

Meng Qiu Zhen gave a forced smile: “Pluck all the mushrooms from my body and that will be saving me. These mushrooms are harmful to us mushroommen, but they are harmless and even beneficial to other races.”

The girl was shocked before smiling: “So you are a mushroomman, I have heard rumors about you guys since I was a child, the rumors said you were gentle and never harmed people. I had never seen a living mushroomman before I met you.”

Meng Qiu Zhen quickly said: “Pick the mushrooms quickly, I can’t last much longer.”

The girl’s hands were nimble, she rapidly picked the mushrooms from Meng Qiu Zhen’s body.

He was out of the hopeless situation and rescued from the brink of failure.

“There is still one last mushroom!” The girl said seriously.

“Wait.” Meng Qiu Zhen’s expression changed, “You don’t need to pick that mushroom — ahhh!”

The girl blinked her pure eyes and her face reddened slightly: “I can’t pull it out, does it hurt?”

Meng Qiu Zhen was pale as he took a sharp breath: “Don’t pull it.”

But the girl shook her head, saying stubbornly: “That won’t do, mushroomman big brother, you said it earlier, I need to pick all the mushrooms from your body for you to be cured.”

“Don’t, don’t, don’t… ahhh!”

The girl pulled up her sleeves, showing an extremely serious and cute expression: “Hmph, I don’t believe I can’t pull it out!”

Meng Qiu Zhen: “Ahhughhh—!”

…

Amidst the miserable cries of Meng Qiu Zhen, the second stage was finally passed.

His sight changed from a chaotic whirlpool of colors to gradually clearing up.

This was a bustling and busy market with people walking everywhere.

“This is Tu clan village?” Behind Meng Qiu Zhen, the mushroomman Huang Xiao Mi, who was covered tightly, said in a low voice.

Meng Qiu Zhen’s mind shook slightly.

In the previous two stages, he had played the role of Huang Xiao Mi, but in this third stage, his identity was actually changed.

This situation was not common.

Meng Qiu Zhen quickly inspected himself.

“Huh, I became that human girl.” Meng Qiu Zhen sighed inwardly.

Huang Xiao Mi’s strength was barely enough, and now, Meng Qiu Zhen was a mortal, a young girl at that.

The change in identity caused Meng Qiu Zhen to feel some doubts.

What was the main mission in this Paradise Earth dream realm?

In the previous two stages, he had Huang Xiao Mi’s identity and had estimated the dream realm’s main mission was to save the mushroomman tribe by curing the plague.

But now that his identity changed, Meng Qiu Zhen immediately felt his speculation wavering intensely.

“No matter what, since Huang Xiao Mi followed the human girl into Tu clan village, I should still try to help Huang Xiao Mi to find the mushroomman witch.”

Meng Qiu Zhen decided to continue following the previous trail.

“Fang Tu, you came? Quick, the position beside me is very good, take it quickly. The evening market is not like the morning market, it only lasts for a short period of time.” A middle-aged uncle waved at Meng Qiu Zhen.

“Thank you, uncle.” Meng Qiu Zhen thought for a bit and placed her basket filled with mushrooms at the space beside the uncle.

Huang Xiao Mi silently helped Meng Qiu Zhen set up the mushrooms.

The middle-aged uncle took a glance and exclaimed: “These mushrooms are really fresh.”

“Naturally.” Huang Xiao Mi said proudly.

The middle-aged uncle’s gaze moved towards him: “This is?”

“This is my distant relative, he came to help me.” Meng Qiu Zhen quickly replied.

The middle-aged uncle did not ask anymore, the evening market had already started, crowds of people were moving around and everyone was busy.

Some were busy buying, some were busy selling.

The traded goods were all mortal materials like mushrooms, vegetables, bean cakes, and so on. This was a mortal market and had daily necessities. There were no transactions of Gu worms, unless a merchant caravan passed through Tu clan village.

After about five minutes, the crowd began to grow sparse.

At this time, sounds of disturbance came from ahead.

“Step aside, step aside!”

“Move aside, can’t you see Lord Green Beast is here?”

A young man shouted, five to six people were pushing through the narrow pavement.

Everywhere they went, pedestrians made way in fear and nervousness, while some even showed disdain and hatred inwardly.

“Fang Tu, hide quickly. Don’t let that ‘beast’ see you.” The middle-aged uncle quickly reminded.

“Ah?” Meng Qiu Zhen was dazed.

“Lady Fang Tu!” At the next moment, the leader of the group, the bald youngster, shouted. His eyes let out a sneaky light as he noticed Meng Qiu Zhen from far away.

“What’s going on?” Meng Qiu Zhen narrowed his eyes as he saw the bald youngster walking towards him with quick steps.

The bald youngster had thick brows and large eyes but had not even a single hair on his head; instead, there was a tattoo of a green beast on his head.

The bald youngster rubbed his green beast tattoo and smiled widely: “Lady Fang Tu, you are selling mushrooms again. I want to buy them.”

“Oh?” Meng Qiu Zhen was inwardly vigilant while asking, “How much do you want to buy?”

The bald youngster raised a finger: “I want to buy one kilogram. Help me pick the big and good ones.”

Meng Qiu Zhen began to pick the mushrooms.

“This is good, hmm, that one is also good, I want them.” The bald youngster nicknamed ‘Green Beast’ pointed here and there.

“Eh, I told you, I want this one and that one!” The bald youngster said.

“Which ones do you want?” Meng Qiu Zhen frowned, sensing that the young man seemed to be toying with him.

The bald youngster grinned: “Forget it, Sister Fang, let me help you, we will choose together.”

The bald youngster acted immediately.

“Soft, so soft.” He chose several mushrooms and said.

Meng Qiu Zhen replied: “These are all fresh, I picked them just today.”

“Smooth, so smooth.” The bald youngster praised again.

Meng Qiu Zhen slowly looked up and said with a frown: “You are touching my hand!”

“Ah, sorry, sorry.” The bald youngster laughed.

Meng Qiu Zhen opened his eyes wide: “You are still touching?!”

“Accident, it was an accident!”

Meng Qiu Zhen was speechless, he was actually being molested!

“Pfft, shameless guy, actually molesting an innocent girl in broad daylight!” Huang Xiao Mi could not endure it anymore, he shouted.

“Who are you? Why are you standing beside my Lady Fang!” The bald youngster was immediately provoked and stared at Huang Xiao Mi.

The two started arguing, sparks seemed to be flying in the air.

“This is the limit of dream butterfly Immortal Gu.” Meng Qiu Zhen sighed inwardly.

Dream butterfly Immortal Gu could inspect the details of the next event of the dream realm, but it could not inspect what the owner of Dream Butterfly would encounter.

Because the changes in the dream realm would occur when the Gu cultivator entered and interacted with the dream realm.

Meng Qiu Zhen had already inspected the bald youngster and this Tu clan village’s market in the previous stage. But he was unable to know what he would encounter specifically in advance.

The two argued in front of Meng Qiu Zhen, their argument got increasingly heated to the point of nearly exchanging blows.

Meng Qiu Zhen was just about to persuade them to stop when a flash of inspiration hit him, and he kept quiet.

“Ugh, I am getting angry! Brat, you are looking for a beating!!” The bald youngster suddenly rubbed his head and attacked.

“Hmph, who is afraid of you!” Huang Xiao Mi did not show weakness, attacking immediately.

The two started fighting.

“Don’t fight, don’t fight.” Meng Qiu Zhen called out while retreating. He was in a mortal body now, and had no ability to interfere in a Gu Master’s battle.

But fortunately, be it Huang Xiao Mi or the bald youngster, they both cared about Meng Qiu Zhen.

When Meng Qiu Zhen retreated to a safe distance, they started using Gu cultivator methods.

After several rounds, Huang Xiao Mi was clearly at a disadvantage and was not the bald youngster’s match.

“This ruffian is really strong!” Meng Qiu Zhen was slightly surprised. He was well aware of Huang Xiao Mi’s strength, after he acted as the latter in the first and second stage of the dream realm.

But he did not expect the bald youngster to be so strong, he had already suppressed Huang Xiao Mi.

“Wait a second, you are not a human, you are a variant human.” The bald youngster suddenly called out.

In the heat of the battle, Huang Xiao Mi’s identity was exposed.

“Amazing, you spy, what are you trying to do by entering my Tu clan village? You definitely have bad intentions! Hahaha, I am going to make a great contribution!”

The bald youngster continued to shout: “Attack him together, he is a mushroomman, we don’t have to uphold the moral of humanity against such a person!”

“Despicable! If you are a man, fight me alone!” Huang Xiao Mi was heavily outnumbered and captured, but he was still shouting indignantly.

“Hahaha. I will be Tu clan’s hero by catching you!” The bald youngster laughed, kicking the bound Huang Xiao Mi, “Just lie still, you variant human.”

After saying this, the bald youngster ran towards Meng Qiu Zhen and asked in concern: “Sister Fang, are you alright? You definitely had no idea or were forced by this mushroomman. Haha, how will you thank me now?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2145: Being a Bystander

Meng Qiu Zhen shook his head, saying in an impatient tone: “Brother Mi is a good person…”

The bald youngster interrupted him, shouting hurriedly: “As expected, the scheming mushroomman threatened Lady Fang. Let’s go and report to the elders. Move!”

Under everyone’s gaze, Meng Qiu Zhen went with the flow and entered Tu clan village with the bald youngster, Huang Xiao Mi, and the rest.

On the way, the bald youngster reminded Meng Qiu Zhen softly: “Sister Fang, you need to report properly, otherwise you might be implicated as well. Variant humans like this mushroomman are vicious things, he is already sure to die!”

Meng Qiu Zhen did not respond.

The tied Huang Xiao Mi shouted: “That’s right, I deceived Fang Tu and threatened her. You are creating a huge trouble for your Tu clan by capturing me! Someone will definitely come to save me.”

Huang Xiao Mi was saved by Fang Tu, he clearly did not want to implicate his benefactor, thus saying this intentionally.

The bald youngster led Huang Xiao Mi to Tu clan village’s prison, and received praises from Tu clan village’s elders.

After everyone left, the bald youngster invited Meng Qiu Zhen to his home: “It is already late, Sister Fang, come to my home to have dinner and stay for the night. Back when we were neighbors, we used to play together. My mother will also be very happy if she sees you!”

“So this ‘Green Beast’ had this kind of relationship with Fang Tu?” Meng Qiu Zhen nodded and let the plot develop.

Soon, Meng Qiu Zhen followed the bald youngster to his home.

This was an ordinary two-storied bamboo building.

Only the bald youngster and his mother lived here.

The bald youngster opened the door to the kitchen and said loudly: “Mother, look who I brought?”

“Ahh, Little Fang. I haven’t seen you for many days. Are your parents okay?” The bald youngster’s mother was very enthusiastic.

“They are both fine, thank you, auntie.” Meng Qiu Zhen said half-heartedly.

The bald youngster’s mother nodded, smiling: “Little Fang is here as a guest, take a seat, I will prepare some dishes.”

The bald youngster said impatiently: “Mother, you should prepare more delicious food. This meal will be your son’s celebration feast as well.”

“You brat, what have you done this time?” The bald youngster’s mother frowned.

The bald youngster patted his chest: “Mother, your son made a huge contribution this time! I arrested a mushroomman and locked him in prison.”

“What?” The bald youngster’s mother paused.

The bald youngster quickly narrated the event.

The bald youngster’s mother frowned as she looked at Meng Qiu Zhen: “Little Fang, this brat likes to talk nonsense, is what he said true?”

“Yes.” Meng Qiu Zhen nodded before adding: “But big brother Huang Xiao Mi is a good person. I…”

Before he finished speaking, he was once again interrupted by the bald youngster: “Alright, Sister Fang, I have warned you several times. You can say this at home, but don’t talk about it outside.”

“Okay, okay.” The bald youngster’s mother waved her hand, “Brat, there is no more soy sauce left. Go to the nearby shop and get some soy sauce.”

“Ah?”

“Hurry up and go, how can I make food without soy sauce?”

“Oh, alright, alright.”

After the bald youngster left, his mother walked towards Meng Qiu Zhen: “Come, Little Fang, tell auntie what is going on?”

The dream realm’s third stage passed like this.

Fourth stage.

Deep in the night, underground prison.

“My identity changed again?” When Meng Qiu Zhen came to his senses, he immediately realized this.

He had left the mortal Fang Tu’s identity and become a Gu Master again; moreover, his cultivation was rank four!

“I am actually the bald youngster’s mother now?” Meng Qiu Zhen shortly discovered that the bald youngster’s mother was actually a mushroomman.

Meng Qiu Zhen immediately had a guess: “My current identity is probably that Huang Wan.”

This dream realm originated from Paradise Earth, what was special about it was the identities in the different stages of the dream realm were not fixed.

“I might even play the role of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable in the next dream realm.” Meng Qiu Zhen smiled.

Till now, he had not seen even the shadow of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

In the first stage of the dream realm, Meng Qiu Zhen learned that Huang Xiao Mi’s mushroomman tribe had a former witch - Huang Wan. She had great strength and was the only doctor that might be able to cure the plague.

However, he knew from the old granny that this former witch Huang Wan was expelled from the tribe for some reason.

“This mushroomman Huang Wan concealed her identity and lived in Tu clan village, a human territory. She even adopted a human child to perfectly conceal her identity. If that bald youngster knew his ‘mother’ was actually a mushroomman, I wonder what expression he would show?”

Meng Qiu Zhen laughed.

He used a very short period of time to get familiar with the Gu worms on him.

The Gu worms were comprehensive, covering attack, defense, movement, healing, and other aspects. Meng Qiu Zhen intuitively sensed some of these Gu worms could combine to form a mortal killer move.

Unfortunately, the situation now did not allow Meng Qiu Zhen to test the killer move or its possible combination.

“The third stage already gave obvious clues. Although this mushroomman Huang Wan was expelled from the tribe, her heart is with the tribe. She immediately moved during the night to save Huang Xiao Mi.”

“I must move quickly!”

Meng Qiu Zhen immediately went deeper into the underground prison.

The structure of the underground prison was simple and clear.

Very soon, he saw Huang Xiao Mi, who was tied to the wall in the deepest part of the prison.

Meng Qiu Zhen used his Gu worms, silently melting the lock on the prison door.

“Huang Xiao Mi, wake up.” Meng Qiu Zhen walked towards Huang Xiao Mi and was about to inspect his condition.

Suddenly, ‘Huang Xiao Mi’ detonated, turning into ash that covered Meng Qiu Zhen.

Shortly after, alarm bells rang and guards started shouting.

The whole prison started emitting dark-yellow light. The concealed Gu formation was activated.

“Oh no, it is a trap!” Meng Qiu Zhen helplessly discovered that ‘Huang Xiao Mi’ had completely disappeared.

He hurriedly retreated, using poison Gu to corrode the Gu formation but it showed little effect.

“Such guts! Breaking into my Tu clan’s jail!”

“It is indeed like that captive said, someone came to save him. Hmph! Surrender quietly and we might spare your life!”

Two elders with similar faces like they were twins were transported by the Gu formation and arrived in front of Meng Qiu Zhen.

Meng Qiu Zhen sneered as he started the fight.

The battle lasted for sixty rounds before he was defeated and captured by the two elders.

The dream realm dissipated.

“I failed.” Meng Qiu Zhen’s soul returned to his body as he sighed.

Paradise Earth’s dream realm was not easy to explore, but Meng Qiu Zhen had plenty of experience, he reached the fourth stage before failing.

His soul was quite injured, Meng Qiu Zhen began to think about the events while healing his soul.

“Those two elders are really strong! They both have rank four cultivation, and they have extremely good teamwork when fighting, like they are one person.”

“Not only do I have to fight those two elders, I also have to deal with the Gu formation. It is quite straining.”

“Naturally, there is another important reason, I am not familiar with poison path Gu worms. I should use this time to deduce the hidden poison path killer moves.”

“Hmm, there is another reason as well…”

Meng Qiu Zhen reflected on himself and realized he had been fretful in the dream realm.

Although that fake Huang Xiao Mi deceived his initial detection methods, if he was in his normal mental state, he would not have rashly entered the prison, and would have used Gu worms to inspect the situation once again.

“At that time, Huang Wan’s mood was extremely anxious and I was unknowingly affected by it, clouding my judgment.”

There were emotional disturbances in the previous three stages as well, but they were all suppressed by Meng Qiu Zhen.

At the fourth stage, the dream realm’s emotions would naturally be deeper than the third stage.

This was also one of the difficulties of exploring dream realms.

Using this time, Meng Qiu Zhen deduced five poison path killer moves which were mostly based on bee poison Gu.

Entering the dream realm again, Meng Qiu Zhen inspected patiently this time.

He made an astonishing discovery: Not only was Huang Xiao Mi fake, the whole underground prison was also fake.

“This is a fake prison, the real prison is still below. The Gu formation’s main body is also below!”

Meng Qiu Zhen carefully entered the real underground prison.

Tu clan village’s real underground prison was unexpectedly complicated and extensive!

The underground prison was like an ant nest, it was filled with thousands of paths intersecting each other, Meng Qiu Zhen felt like he had entered a maze.

“The whole mountain seems to have been dug and made into a prison.”

“This Tu clan village is clearly an ordinary force, but it was actually able to do this?”

“No, there is a trace of Earth Tunnel here!”

Meng Qiu Zhen was probing carefully and soon discovered traces of one of the ten earths, Earth Tunnel.

“This mountain must be of famous mountain level, it contains a natural Earth Tunnel. Tu clan village just slightly developed the Earth Tunnel and was able to gain a large amount of resources. No wonder they were able to nurture two rank four elders.”

Meng Qiu Zhen was moving everywhere in the prison.

The underground prison was mostly empty, and there were more beasts than mortals locked up in it.

Meng Qiu Zhen was still unable to find any clues even after some time. The dream realm had exhausted a large amount of his soul foundation by now.

“Those two Gu Masters!” Meng Qiu Zhen suddenly heard the sounds of Gu cultivators traveling through the Earth Tunnel from ahead.

He quickly moved aside and hid.

Swish, swish.

The two Gu Masters slipped out from the Earth Tunnel.

“The two rank four elders.” Meng Qiu Zhen was observing secretly, and immediately recognized them.

They were all along in the underground prison, so they were able to reach the fake prison immediately in the previous situation.

The two elders talked while moving.

“This mushroomman is quite tight-lipped, he actually endured such cruel torture!”

“Even if he does not say it, we are already aware that a mushroomman tribe has been hiding in the surroundings of Tu clan village. It is just that we don’t know the specific location.”

“Right, we must obtain the specific location of the mushroomman tribe from this captive and eliminate them!”

“In a few days, we will be able to remove the defensive methods on his soul. At that time, we will know everything by searching his soul.”

The title is literally translated as buying soy sauce.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2146: Prison Break

The two elders gradually stopped, entering another tunnel as they moved along instead.

The two of them rapidly left the place.

Meng Qiu Zhen’s eyes twitched.

The scene in front of him reminded him of certain memories in his mind.

“In the five hundred years of the main body’s previous life, during the five regions chaotic war, a super clan known as Tu clan emerged in Southern Border. Their Gu Immortals were most skilled at digging tunnels and using them to launch sneak attacks in battle. Does this have anything to do with this Tu village?”

There were several possibilities regarding this.

Firstly, Tu village’s inheritance was excavated by someone. Secondly, Tu village’s bloodline was spread by descendants, they rose to become immortal during the era of abundant dream realms, or they were simply secluded Gu Immortals. Thirdly, Tu village’s members revived in Tomb Earth.

Meng Qiu Zhen successfully found his way to Huang Xiao Mi after following the route of the two rank four elders.

Huang Xiao Mi was curled up in a corner of the cell, having fallen asleep.

This time, Meng Qiu Zhen investigated carefully, after finding out that there were no traps here, he entered the prison cell.

He immediately found that Huang Xiao Mi was in poor shape, at the brink of death.

Huang Xiao Mi had the mushroomman plague to begin with, it was quite fatal. If one had insufficient resistance, they would die.

Today, he first fought against the bald youngster before getting interrogated by the two elders, his entire body was overgrown with mushrooms.

If Meng Qiu Zhen did not arrive in time, he would die in just a few more breaths of time.

Meng Qiu Zhen sighed to himself, it was a close shave, if he came later, this dream realm exploration would have failed entirely.

He immediately tried to save Huang Xiao Mi, thankfully, he was prepared for this.

The mushrooms on Huang Xiao Mi’s body continued to shrink until all of them went back into his body.

“Who are you?” Huang Xiao Mi was barely able to open his eyes, his vision was still blurred.

Meng Qiu Zhen answered immediately: “I am Huang Wan, I have already used a killer move to suppress the mushroomman plague in your body. Your situation is dire, your life force is almost depleted. I cannot pull out the mushrooms casually as it will consume your life as well.”

Huang Xiao Mi immediately thanked: “Thank you for saving my life, senior.”

“Sigh, it is still too early to say that. Let’s go out, I need to research on this plague. You don’t have much time left.” Meng Qiu Zhen said.

He had not created a poison path killer move that could heal Huang Xiao Mi’s illness yet.

However, the next scene might request for him to heal this mushroomman plague.

Naturally, that was just his guess.

While searching for Huang Xiao Mi earlier, Meng Qiu Zhen did not have a chance to activate dream butterfly Immortal Gu, thus he did not know what the following scenes would be.

“You need to persevere, let’s go.” Meng Qiu Zhen helped Huang Xiao Mi to get up as they left together.

But halfway through, they met the bald youngster.

“Stand there! As expected, someone came to save you.” The bald youngster shouted.

The two elders were behind him as well, they were furious and shocked.

“Such guts! Vicious thief, you dare to break into the prison!”

“Quickly activate the formation, capture this person as well.”

Once he said that, the Gu formation activated, the two elders fought while the bald youngster assisted them.

Meng Qiu Zhen sighed internally as he fought against them.

He had many poison path killer moves, they were evenly matched after fighting for some time.

But soon, the bald youngster saw a weakness and attacked Huang Xiao Mi instead.

Huang Xiao Mi could not resist, he was a huge burden to Meng Qiu Zhen.

Meng Qiu Zhen had to grit his teeth as he helped Huang Xiao Mi time and again. Eventually, he lost the initiative and got suppressed by the two elders.

In the end, Huang Xiao Mi was killed by the bald youngster, dying on the spot.

“All variant human mushroommen deserve to get killed!” The bald youngster shouted with a righteous tone, filled with excitement.

At the next moment, the dream realm shattered.

Meng Qiu Zhen returned to the sovereign immortal aperture, healing himself while collating his insights about the dream.

“I used dream butterfly Immortal Gu earlier to investigate this dream realm but I did not find the bald youngster. To think that after exploring this dream realm to a degree, it would develop on its own and create new characters.”

“Why did the bald youngster come to the prison?”

“From his tone, he seemed to have discovered my traces, what method did he use to find me?”

“Unless, he already found out about the secret of his identity, he knows that his ‘mother’ is a mushroomman variant human? So he went along with the flow?”

After his injuries were healed, Meng Qiu Zhen went back into the dream realm with several questions to answer.

The route did not change, Meng Qiu Zhen arrived at the prison cell in advance.

He lurked at a corner and watched as Huang Xiao Mi was beaten and interrogated by the two elders.

These elders had outstanding strength, more importantly, they had the help of the Gu formation, Meng Qiu Zhen did not want to use brute force.

After two failures and accumulating experience, his own strength already surpassed the original Huang Wan. But his greatest weakness was still Huang Xiao Mi.

His earlier failures already proved that as long as Huang Xiao Mi died, the dream realm would fail.

It seemed that this scene of the dream realm required him to save Huang Xiao Mi successfully.

Meng Qiu Zhen waited patiently, after the two elders left, he immediately went to Huang Xiao Mi’s side.

Not waking him up first, Meng Qiu Zhen directly used the poison path killer move to get rid of the mushroomman plague in Huang Xiao Mi’s body.

Next, Meng Qiu Zhen woke Huang Xiao Mi up.

Huang Xiao Mi found out that his illness was cured, he was overjoyed: “Thank you senior! Please save the mushroomman tribe, many of our members are afflicted with this plague.”

Meng Qiu Zhen nodded, giving Huang Xiao Mi some poison path Gu so that he had some battle strength.

Huang Xiao Mi did not need Meng Qiu Zhen’s help, he was barely able to walk on his own as they sneaked out.

But this time, the bald youngster still found them along the way.

“Stand there! As expected, someone came to save you.” The bald youngster was very excited.

Meng Qiu Zhen had a peculiar expression as he asked: “I used many methods to conceal my traces, how did you find us?”

The bald youngster chuckled: “I’m not afraid to tell you, with my genius talent, I created a move called earthly underground qi. After I captured this mushroomman, I secretly used this tracing killer move, how can you get rid of it in such a rush?”

“Not bad, even though you are an external member of the clan, you have some talent.”

“Very good, all thanks to you, we found this problem today. This is your merit.”

The two rank four elders looked at the bald youngster in a renewed light.

“Thank you, lords!” The bald youngster was very excited, he had the demeanor of a lackey: “I will do my best.”

Meng Qiu Zhen: “…”

After an intense battle, Huang Xiao Mi still died in battle.

Meng Qiu Zhen failed his third exploration.

After deep analysis and deductions, he went into the fourth exploration.

This time, he sneaked in early and hid in a corner. After the two elders left, he immediately entered the prison cell, healing Huang Xiao Mi’s illness and even giving him healing Gu worms.

“Wait here and heal yourself continuously, do not step out of the cell. There is a tracking method on you, if you try to get out, the enemy will find out.” Meng Qiu Zhen instructed: “After I kill the crucial Gu Masters, when you see this healing Gu worm fly in the air, get out and escape.”

Huang Xiao Mi was very obedient, he nodded: “I will listen to senior’s instructions.”

Meng Qiu Zhen made the optimal arrangements and left the cell.

At the other side, with the development of the dream realm, the bald youngster appeared.

He was summoned by the two elders and made his way to them but was suddenly attacked by Meng Qiu Zhen.

“Hmm?!” Even though the bald youngster had great strength, he was not Meng Qiu Zhen’s match, not to mention that Meng Qiu Zhen had prepared for this assault.

The bald youngster died on the spot.

But Meng Qiu Zhen found that he could not move, an intense feeling of sadness, guilt, and regret overwhelmed his heart, he found that he lost control of his body.

“What is going on?”

“It seems that I cannot kill the bald youngster?”

“Maybe because they lived together for so long, the mushroomman Huang Wan had already treated him as her real son.”

The feeling was so intense that even with Meng Qiu Zhen’s fortitude, he could not suppress it.

Mushroomman Huang Wan shuddered as tears flowed down her cheeks, it could not be stopped.

Clank clank clank…

Alarm bells suddenly rang, the Gu formation was activated as the two elders found their way to Meng Qiu Zhen.

They must have gotten suspicious after waiting for the bald youngster for so long, they came over to check.

Eventually, Meng Qiu Zhen’s exploration failed as well.

“So this guy cannot be killed either?” Meng Qiu Zhen was troubled.

Because he could not unravel and dispel that earthly underground qi killer move.

Even though it was a mortal killer move, Meng Qiu Zhen did not know what Gu worms were used in it. And more importantly, even if he knew, could the Gu worms on him achieve such an effect?

“If only I knew how many Gu worms the bald youngster had. It is a pity I have already lost the opportunity to find out.”

In the third scene, Fang Yuan’s identity was Fang Tu. If he tried to investigate, with the bald youngster’s affection for her, he should have gotten some clues.

Earlier, when Fang Tu sold mushrooms, the bald youngster flirted with her, it was a great opportunity.

But back then, Meng Qiu Zhen had not thought of this.

Because dream butterfly Immortal Gu did not let him see this scene. Back then, the bald youngster did not exist in this scene in the first place, the dream realm changed on its own after saving Huang Xiao Mi, causing the bald youngster to appear.

Now, after reaching this scene, the earlier ones had vanished already.

After deep consideration, Meng Qiu Zhen went into the dream realm again.

This time, he did not enter the cell directly and wait there.

Getting there early was useless.

Meng Qiu Zhen had to wait for the elders to leave before he could try and save Huang Xiao Mi.

Meng Qiu Zhen set up some arrangements on the route that the elders would take instead.

He used create dream Immortal Gu to establish a complicated tunnel along the way.

After making his arrangement, Meng Qiu Zhen came to the prison cell, the two elders had just left.

He immediately saved Huang Xiao Mi but did not leave him in the cell, bringing him away directly.

The two elders were just about to meet up with the bald youngster but they lost their way.

With this crucial gap in time, Meng Qiu Zhen successfully brought Huang Xiao Mi away.

During this period, the bald youngster chased them and wanted to stop them.

But Meng Qiu Zhen did not kill this troublesome guy, instead making him faint on the spot. After stopping Huang Xiao Mi from taking revenge, he successfully passed the scene of the dream realm.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2147: War

The Gu Masters reacted and quickly retreated.

Meng Qiu Zhen stomped on the ground with a loud sound, a hole immediately appeared below him.

A Gu Master was caught off guard, he fell into the trap.

“Wanting to restrict me with this method?” He was just about to fly out of the pit, when Meng Qiu Zhen held a huge rock that was the size of a horse carriage and tossed it down.

“Don’t…”

Boom!

The huge rock crashed down and sent the Gu Master into the pit, losing all signs of life. From below the rock, bright red blood started to spread into a puddle.

“What are you doing? Are you crazy!”

“You are actually attacking our own clan member, a Tu clansman?”

The remaining two Gu Masters watched this as their hearts jumped intensely.

“Aren’t you guys indignant?” Meng Qiu Zhen snickered as he approached.

Even though the bald youngster had limited Gu worms, against Meng Qiu Zhen’s combat attainment, how could these mortal Gu Masters resist him?

After a short while, they were all sprawling on the ground.

“Stop it, stop it, we give up!” The Gu Masters pleaded in a hurry.

The sixth scene of the dream realm.

Meng Qiu Zhen became the mushroomman Huang Xiao Mi again.

His injuries had healed already, the mushroomman plague was successfully healed through Huang Wan’s secret treatment.

Huang Xiao Mi also obtained some poison path Gu from Huang Wan. Using these Gu to form killer moves, he could completely get rid of the plague that troubled his mushroomman tribe.

Huang Xiao Mi moved stealthily in secret, trying to escape.

The surroundings of Tu clan village had surveying Gu Masters that did patrols regularly.

A group of rank two Gu Masters, with a total of five members, were moving in the forest.

“Stop, we will rest here.” The leader suddenly extended his hand, instructing.

The moment the group rested, a colorless and odorless poisonous gas spread towards them.

Boom boom boom.

The five Gu Masters fell on the ground, falling unconscious.

“Huang Wan’s poison path killer move might only be effective against rank three and below Gu Masters, but it has no aura at all when used, it is very valuable in realistic situations.” Meng Qiu Zhen evaluated as he set off again.

He could not kill these Tu clan Gu Masters, even though they could not resist him now.

Once he killed them, Tu clan village would get alerted, they would chase after him.

But a change happened before Meng Qiu Zhen’s very eyes.

The dream realm suddenly changed, a Gu Master group led by the bald youngster met with Meng Qiu Zhen head on.

“Variant human thief, you are still here? Stop there! Where are you trying to escape to?” The bald youngster was slightly stunned before shouting and chasing after him.

“It seems that this happened in history as well.” Meng Qiu Zhen was helpless about this.

Dream butterfly Immortal Gu could not detect such sudden changes in advance.

In fact, even if he saw it, Meng Qiu Zhen could not do anything about this.

No matter what route he chose, with the natural development of the dream realm, the bald youngster’s group would still meet up with Meng Qiu Zhen regardless.

And looking at it from another perspective, this was a necessary event for this dream realm.

Only by escaping from the bald youngster’s pursuit could he successfully pass this scene.

An exciting chase and escape battle erupted between the two sides.

The bald youngster chased while Huang Xiao Mi, who had recovered, did not waste time fighting him, he escaped while setting up traps, killing the rest of his group members.

The bald youngster was the son of Huang Wan, to play safe, Meng Qiu Zhen did not attack him.

Eventually, Meng Qiu Zhen successfully escaped.

The bald youngster stood behind him without any hope of catching up, he shouted: “Mushroomman thief, I will remember you! One day, I will kill you!”

Their grudges intensified.

Seventh scene.

Eighth scene.

Ninth scene…

Meng Qiu Zhen acted as the bald youngster ‘Green Beast’ at times, while acting as Huang Xiao Mi at other times.

Using the poison path killer move that Huang Xiao Mi brought back, the mushroomman tribe successfully healed from the plague.

But war ensued.

Even though the location of the mushroomman tribe was not discovered, with Tu clan village’s rampant searches and investigation, they could not hide for long.

The two sides started to send their Gu Masters to engage in small interactions and battles.

The two sides suffered heavy losses, but because of that, champions appeared.

Tu clan village had the bald youngster, who was Huang Wan’s adopted son. The mushroommen had Huang Xiao Mi, the tribesman of Huang Wan.

The two interacted occasionally, fighting against each other frequently.

Because of their contest, their strength grew rapidly, they reached rank four at the same time.

On both sides, their clansmen and tribesmen died terribly at each others’ hands.

They became the greatest enemies of each other’s lives!

Finally, at the twelfth scene of the dream realm.

Meng Qiu Zhen acted as Huang Xiao Mi, he set up a trap and sowed discord, causing Tu clan village’s higher-ups to feel wariness against the bald youngster.

‘Green Beast’ was not a Tu clansman after all, he was not truly one of them.

The mushroommen set up a trap that did not seem obvious, it seemed to be the true gathering spot of the mushroomman tribe. Tu clan village immediately dispatched the bald youngster to go and probe them out.

Even though the bald youngster knew that something was up, he was uncertain.

After going and investigating, the bald youngster fell into a trap, he was in a life-and-death crisis.

“Green Beast, today, you will die!” Huang Xiao Mi shouted, leading his troops to encircle and attack the humans who were lower in numbers.

“Even if I die, I will drag down ten mushroommen with me to die together!” The bald youngster shouted.

He was bathed in blood and covered in injuries but his morale was high, even the mushroommen attacking him realized that this person was a true warrior!

Eventually, the bald youngster used up all his strength and primeval essence.

He was all alone.

Tens of mushroomman corpses were lying around him.

“You variant humans will not live for long.”

“Damn it, damn it!”

“I want to kill my enemies, but I have no way of doing that anymore.”

The bald youngster smiled coldly as he knelt on one knee, raising his head up with pride and arrogance.

He shouted at Meng Qiu Zhen: “Huang Xiao Mi, come and kill me! Even if I die at your hands today, I have merely lost to the schemes of those Tu clan elders.”

“You understood it after all.” Meng Qiu Zhen smiled coldly as he walked forward, ready to deal the final blow, but suddenly a change occurred.

Huang Wan concealed her appearance and appeared suddenly, a wave of white poisonous smoke spread out, she saved the bald youngster successfully.

But at the next moment, a human Gu Master who had rank five cultivation level made his move.

Boom!

With a loud sound, not only was the white smoke dispersed by the human Gu Master, everyone’s vision cleared up and he even obstructed Huang Wan from escaping.

Huang Wan held onto the bald youngster as they landed at the periphery of the battlefield.

“Village head!” The bald youngster was overjoyed when he saw the rank five human Gu Master, he also looked at the female Gu Master who saved him.

From this female Gu Master, the bald youngster could sense a familiar yet foreign aura, he asked in curiosity: “Benefactor, who… are you?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2148: Le Tu

At this time, Tu clan village’s Gu Masters appeared from all directions, surrounding all the mushroommen as well as Huang Wan and her son.

The mushroommen fell into panic as they got encircled.

Huang Xiao Mi shouted: “Don’t panic! I have already requested for help from the tribe, they will arrive shortly. We need to persevere until then!”

The mushroomman Gu Masters forced themselves to calm down.

Tu clan village’s leader did not attack directly, he took a few steps forward and stared at Huang Wan with a complex gaze: “Wan Er, as expected, you came.”

Huang Wan snorted coldly: “What do you want?”

Once she said that, the bald youngster realized at once, his body and mind shook, gasping: “Mother?!”

Her identity was exposed, Huang Wan got rid of her concealment and returned to her original appearance.

“At this point in time, I can’t hide it from you anymore, little rascal.” Huang Wan looked at the bald youngster and sighed deeply with a melancholic expression.

The mushroommen were all shocked.

“This is… the previous generation witch?”

“Why did our former witch save the human Gu Master Green Beast?”

“From their conversation, it seems that they are mother and son?”

“So Huang Wan was exiled from the tribe because she had an affair with Tu clan village’s head, they even had a son!!”

The truth was unveiled before everyone, they quickly understood the whole situation from start to finish.

“Mother! Are you really my mother? Are they speaking the truth?!” The bald youngster was so shocked he could not control himself.

All along, he had lived as a pure human, to think that he was actually a mixed breed of human and mushroomman.

Huang Wan sighed deeply: “They are all correct, I am sorry for hiding it from you for so long!”

The bald youngster took in a deep breath as he stumbled back for a few steps, looking at Huang Wan with wide opened eyes.

He had never seen his mother’s mushroomman form, with the truth of his identity exposed, he could not accept it so easily.

Tu clan village’s head looked at the bald youngster deeply before turning his gaze to Huang Wan: “Wan Er, is he really our son? I did not expect that after leaving me back then, you would stay behind and lurk within Tu clan village. You even raised our son all alone, it has really been tough on you.”

Huang Wan snorted coldly: “You are Tu clan village head, while I am the witch of the mushroomman tribe, we are destined to be separated. But our child is innocent, I only stayed in the village for a reason. That was because my son, a hybrid, will not be accepted by the tribe. Thus, all these years, I let him grow up in Tu clan village, eventually, I would reveal the truth to you and make you take him in.”

Saying so, Huang Wan looked towards the bald youngster, saying gently: “Didn’t you ask me who your father was when you were young? Now you know. I had my own plans, but reality is often not under people’s control, today’s scene was something I did not anticipate. Child, no matter what, regardless of how much you hate me or your father, you need to remember something: People who live in this world, be it humans, variant humans, or mixed breeds, have to be happy and blissful, they should not dwell on grudges or hatred, a big heart will allow you to see a big world, thus, mother named you Le Tu .”

Hearing this, Meng Qiu Zhen was shaken internally.

“What, ‘Green Beast’ is Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable? He actually has mixed blood, but how can a mixed breed become one of the ten human venerables?!”

“No wonder I felt such intense emotions after killing Le Tu as Huang Wan earlier, causing the exploration to fail.”

“So it turns out my deductions were wrong, they really are mother and son!”

“Mother, say no more.” Le Tu shook his head as he stepped backwards, looking at Huang Wan in disbelief: “How… are you a mushroomman?”

Huang Wan’s heart jumped: “Ah Le, you lived among the humans since you were born, I know you cannot accept it immediately, but…”

Boom!

The ground behind Huang Wan cracked open as a Tu clan rank four elder came out and sneak attacked her.

Huang Wan was caught off guard, she was sent flying as she spat out a mouthful of blood while in mid air.

This Tu clan rank four elder did not have strength to chase her after using this move, he had a twisted expression: “Huang Wan! Back then, you saved Huang Xiao Mi, my brother died at your hands. For today, I practiced this cracked soil shattering life killer move for a long time, how does it feel? Hahaha.”

“Mother!” Le Tu subconsciously ran towards Huang Wan.

“Lady Huang Wan saved our mushroomman tribe from the plague, quickly save her!” Meng Qiu Zhen shouted too.

“Too late, my fellow Tu clan village members, kill them all!” Tu clan village head shouted as he unleashed a barrage of attacks.

The mushroomman Gu Masters quickly defended against their enemies, they were unable to care for anything else.

“Lord village head!” Le Tu was anxious at the moment, he could not call that person his ‘father’, he defended Huang Wan as he looked at Tu clan village’s leader in disbelief.

Le Tu was not a three year old, he was a veteran in war, he knew about people’s hearts. When the situation occurred earlier, Tu clan village’s leader had used words to distract Huang Wan, he used Le Tu to draw away her attention and kept the elder hidden so his sneak attack succeeded.

“You made this decision after all!” Huang Wan stared at Tu clan village’s head, her former lover, with a cold expression.

The situation was urgent, there was no time for healing. She quickly suppressed her injuries and stood up.

“I am the head of Tu clan village, I am responsible for all the lives of my Tu clan village’s members. Moreover, culling variant humans is the righteous duty of all humans!” Tu clan village’s leader snorted as he attacked.

“You have such a cruel and wicked heart!” Huang Wan screamed before pushing Le Tu aside, fighting against Tu clan village’s leader.

Boom boom boom.

The two fought with a huge commotion, the effects of their attacks spread out, causing unguarded Gu Masters to die continuously.

Thus, the surrounding Gu Masters moved away, creating a huge space for these two to fight in.

“Stop fighting!” Le Tu was anxious, he screamed in his anxiety and helplessness.

His body was in poor condition, he could not join the fight now.

“Ah Le, escape!” Huang Wan shouted.

“Ah Le, you are a mixed blood but you are still my son. I’ve seen all your achievements so far, quickly come and help the village, these mushroommen deserve death!” Tu clan village’s leader shouted.

“Stop fighting, stop fighting!” Le Tu’s entire body shook, he was completely lost at the moment.

A dark light flashed in the eyes of Tu clan village’s leader as he thought of a plan.

His cultivation level was higher than Huang Wan, with the latter injured from the sneak attack, Tu clan village’s leader had the upper hand, he controlled the situation.

Tu clan village’s leader purposely forced Huang Wan to approach a certain Gu Master of Tu clan village.

This Tu clan Gu Master unfortunately fell into Huang Wan’s attack range, but his cultivation level was only rank two.

Huang Wan did not think much about it, her attack landed on this Tu clan Gu Master and killed him on the spot!

“No!” Le Tu shouted, subconsciously running over.

It turned out that this Tu clan Gu Master was his close ally, they had gone through dangerous situations many times in the past.

“Go away, Ah Le!” Huang Wan saw that Le Tu charged in, she screamed with a pale expression.

Tu clan village’s head used the chance to attack thrice, landing three attacks on her as she fainted on the spot.

“Mother!” Le Tu shouted, using his body to block the leader’s path, protecting Huang Wan behind him: “Don’t harm my mother!”

Tu clan village’s leader burst out with killing intent, he was about to attack when he suddenly heard some shouting from afar.

“The mushroomman tribe’s reinforcements!”

“Their tribe leader arrived too.”

Tu clan village’s head squinted as he thought: “We came here stealthily without many people, but they are all elites, it is not worth losing them over these mushroommen. Moreover, so what if we win? As long as we cannot find the mushroomman tribe’s hideout, they will not lose against us.”

Thinking so, Tu clan village’s head ordered: “Retreat.”

“What are you thinking of doing?” Seeing Tu clan village’s head approach, the bald youngster called out nervously.

Tu clan village head sighed as he showed a gentle expression on his face: “Le Tu, I will not attack you. You are my son after all, but your mother, she is a mushroomman.”

“A variant human!” His voice suddenly became sharper and louder.

“Do you want to side with the variant humans?!” Tu clan village’s head shouted again.

Le Tu gritted his teeth but did not speak.

“All these years, how many mushroommen have you killed? Do you think they will accept you if you side with them?” Tu clan village’s head smiled coldly.

Le Tu snorted coldly, staring at Tu clan village’s head fiercely: “I want my mother to live! If you have any ill intentions towards her, I will not let you off.”

Tu clan village’s head chuckled: “If you continue keeping her in that state, in just a while, she will die from her injuries.”

“This…” Le Tu was completely lost at the moment.

Tu clan village’s head suddenly attacked, causing Le Tu to faint, he brought both son and mother away.

“Kill!”

“Kill these humans!”

“Bring Huang Wan back, she knows the secret of our tribe’s hideout!!”

The mushroomman Gu Masters chased relentlessly.

The Huang Xiao Mi that Meng Qiu Zhen was portraying also shouted among them, but he did not do anything.

Because he had already used dream butterfly Immortal Gu to check the next scene.

After the mushroomman Gu Masters failed in their pursuit, Meng Qiu Zhen arrived at the next scene.

This time, he became Huang Wan again.

His body was bound by chains that pierced through his bones, he had no primeval essence at all, he was completely out of strength.

In the dark prison cell, the door was suddenly opened.

Tu clan village’s head walked in.

Meng Qiu Zhen squinted, from the situation of the previous scene, this was clearly an ambitious and formidable person!

Tu clan village’s head smiled, he came prepared.

“You know my objective, don’t be too rash to reject it. Let me show you this.” Tu clan village’s head took out an information path Gu worm.

Immediately, a video played itself in the air, the scene within it was vivid and lively.

In a well decorated room, Tu clan village’s head opened the door and met with Le Tu.

“I heard from my subordinates that you are awake, I immediately came to meet you, my son.” Tu clan village’s head had a warm expression.

Le Tu was covered in bandages, the moment he got out of bed, his body wavered as he fell back onto the bed.

“How is my mother now?” Le Tu immediately asked in an urgent tone.

These are the same characters as Paradise Earth, his later venerable title.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2149: I Confess Everything

Tu clan village head sighed deeply: “Your mother is a noble mother, for your sake, she took a huge risk and stayed within Tu clan village for so many years.”

Tu clan village head’s tone suddenly changed: “But I cannot let her off, she is a mushroomman, a variant human!”

“You are also clear about these mushroommen. Those of other races will have different motives, the best outcome for these mushroommen is death!”

“But you are different, you are my son. You know that I have no other children, you are my only son!”

“Ah Le, come and help me. Only I can accept you here, this Tu clan village is your home.”

“As your father, I owe you a lot, I will do my best to make up to you in the future.”

“After this huge battle, you have already accumulated sufficient credits. I know that you want the Tu surname, originally, the village would need to test you, but father will allow it now. From today onwards, you will be a true Tu clansman. With the new surname, you will no longer be Le Tu, you will be called Tu Le!”

“Child, father is proud of you. This is your new life!”

Le Tu laughed loudly, his voice was filled with mockery and sadness.

The goal that he had always pursued was finally achieved, but he felt no sense of accomplishment or happiness.

“I don’t want the Tu surname, I want to exchange for my mother’s life using all the contributions I’ve done for Tu clan village over these years!” Le Tu called out.

But Tu clan village’s head had an expressionless face, he shook his head with a firm attitude.

Le Tu gritted his teeth, blood flowing out from his teeth as he pointed at Tu clan village head: “If you kill my mother, I will not live alone. In fact, I will stake my life against yours!”

“Ah Le!!” Tu clan village’s head shouted coldly.

Le Tu did not speak, he stared at Tu clan village head fixedly.

The atmosphere in the room became immensely tense.

The father and son stared at each other with a deathly gaze, eventually, the expression of Tu clan village’s head changed.

He shifted his sight towards the ceiling as he sighed deeply to himself.

His sigh was filled with complex emotions. There was anger, hatred, helplessness, and sadness.

Tu clan village’s head looked at Le Tu deeply as he said with deep emotions: “All these years, father did not discover you. I really owe you a lot, my son. If I had taken care of you, things would not have gotten to this stage.”

“Never mind!”

“Since it was my fault, I will satisfy your request.”

“I will let your mother escape, but I will only let her go secretly.”

“However, the mushroomman tribe needs to be eradicated, not a single one of them will be left!”

“This is your father’s limit, it is also the greatest compromise I can give you as the head of Tu clan village. Ah Le, you need to understand my difficulties as well.”

Le Tu’s expression was immediately moved, he gulped: “Village… village head, as long as you let my mother off, I don’t care about those mushroomman tribe members!”

All these years, Le Tu had been fighting against the mushroomman tribe, they had immense grudges and mutual hatred.

He only cared about Huang Wan after all.

“Good child!” Tu clan village’s head was very excited, he patted Le Tu’s shoulders: “But I cannot let your mother go now. You know that even though we have the advantage, as long as we cannot find the mushroomman tribe’s location, we cannot obtain true victory.”

“But your mother knows the location of the mushroomman tribe, she knows how to find them. Ah Le, I need your help, convince your mother to tell us this secret.”

“I promise you, I assure you, as long as we eliminate the mushroomman tribe and get rid of this huge threat, I will let your mother off and she will live in peace for the rest of her life.”

“This…” Le Tu hesitated.

Even though he wanted to eliminate the mushroomman tribe, he understood that his mother had deep feelings for her tribe.

Tu clan village’s head patted Le Tu’s shoulders, saying in a kind tone: “Father will not force you, think about it yourself. You are still injured, you need to recuperate. I will give you enough time to think, I believe in you!”

The video ended here.

Tu clan village’s head smiled coldly as he approached Huang Wan: “What do you think? Do you want your own son to come and convince you personally?”

“Think about it, Wan Er.”

“You can disregard your own life, but what about your son’s life?”

“If our relationship really turns sour, neither of you will have a good ending.”

“I may not kill him.”

“But I just need to send him to fight on the front lines and kill all of your tribesmen, what do you think?”

Meng Qiu Zhen looked at Tu clan village head with a look of appreciation: “Unscrupulous and shameless, you are quite something.”

“Hahaha, a great person would not mind small sacrifices! Have you just found out about it, it is too late now!” Tu clan village head laughed loudly, but he felt that Huang Wan’s gaze was not normal.

Meng Qiu Zhen nodded in a serious manner: “Exactly why I appreciate you.”

As his laughter stopped abruptly, Tu clan village’s head could not believe what he had just heard: “What did you say?”

Meng Qiu Zhen had a straightforward attitude, his gaze flickered: “Actually, you don’t have to go through the trouble, don’t you want to know the location of the tribe? I’ll tell you directly.”

“What?” Tu clan village’s head was dazed.

Meng Qiu Zhen shrugged.

During this period, he used dream butterfly Immortal Gu to check the next scene, and the following one as well, he obtained crucial information.

In the end, Tu clan village’s army attacks the headquarters of the mushroomman tribe, this meant that Tu clan village’s head would learn of the location of the mushroomman tribe eventually.

In history, Huang Wan might not have exposed the location even after interrogation and torture, or after Tu clan village’s head threatened her using her son.

But this was the dream realm, Huang Wan was not really Huang Wan, she was Meng Qiu Zhen.

“Not only will I tell you the location of the tribe, I’ll even tell you that the tribe has a small secretive tunnel. You can send elites to attack it while the main troops are at the front.” Meng Qiu Zhen suggested.

Tu clan village’s head had a look of deep disbelief and suspicion.

The more cooperative Meng Qiu Zhen was, the less he believed in the words that were said.

Tu clan village’s head was silent for a moment before he laughed coldly: “As a captive, you dare to toy with me? Good, very good, to think that you would disregard your own son, you are such a cold blooded person.”

“No, listen to me. I am really telling you the truth.” Meng Qiu Zhen said sincerely.

But Tu clan village’s head shook his head, his voice became even colder: “I won’t listen! Do you think I will believe you?”

“You can test out what I just said.” Meng Qiu Zhen could not help but roll his eyes.

Tu clan village’s head continued his cold snicker: “Do you think I am stupid? In the earlier battle, your mushroomman tribe created a trap. This time, it must be a trap too. You want me to lose my elite members.”

Meng Qiu Zhen sighed deeply: “If you do not test it, what will you do now? Without knowing the mushroomman tribe’s location, how can you attack?”

Tu clan village’s head laughed loudly: “I am prepared for that.”

Clap clap clap.

He clapped and said: “Master Wu Xiao, please come out.”

“Wu Xiao greets Tu clan village’s leader.” A Gu Master with a grim expression, having a tall and thin body, was created by the dream realm.

“I’ll let you know, this is the famous doctor of Southern Border, Master Wu Xiao. Did you think I came unprepared?” Tu clan village’s head introduced.

Meng Qiu Zhen sighed: “What’s the point of all this?”

Wu Xiao walked forward and used Gu worms to investigate Meng Qiu Zhen and said: “Reporting to village head, this captive has tight defenses, if we soul search her abruptly, not only will her soul dissipate immediately, it will even cause a backlash on the attacker and cause them to get badly poisoned.”

Tu clan village’s head nodded: “Precisely so, I asked for you to come here. Master Wu, you cultivate soul path, you can use soul healing methods and are one of the six great doctors of Southern Border. In the current Southern Border, only you can resist the mushroomman poison path methods, while preserving their souls at the same time.”

Wu Xiao smiled proudly: “Village head, I am flattered, please watch me as I use my methods now.”

Wu Xiao started to use his killer move on Meng Qiu Zhen.

Meng Qiu Zhen grunted, intense pain assaulted him as his body shuddered, cold sweat broke out.

The dream realm intensified at this moment, causing his soul foundation to dwindle.

“Stop it, don’t you want to know their location? I’ll tell you directly, isn’t that enough?” Meng Qiu Zhen shouted.

“Do you think I will believe you? Wan Er, I know you too well, saying such words is an insult to my intelligence!” Tu clan village’s head snorted and waved his sleeves in anger.

“Ahhh… ahh…” Meng Qiu Zhen pretended to cry out in agony: “I am telling the truth!”

Tu clan village’s head was enraged: “You dare to lie further!”

“Ahhhh…” Meng Qiu Zhen pretended to have broken down: “I can’t take it anymore, I’ll tell you, I’ll tell you everything.”

Tu clan village’s head waved his hand: “Say no more, I will soul search you either way.”

Meng Qiu Zhen shut his mouth at this moment.

He was certain now.

At this juncture, he needed to pass the dream realm’s test.

Some dream realms were like this, they could only be passed after expending soul foundation. If one’s soul foundation was too low, they would die in this dream realm.

Guh.

Suddenly, Doctor Wu Xiao spat out a mouthful of blood.

He took several steps back, his forehead was covered in sweat, he panted heavily, there was purple blood flowing down his lips.

“Amazing, impressive! A poison within a poison, to think that there is such an amazing method in the world. To think that I was actually hit by it, it seems that I have to use my final method.”

Wu Xiao turned his gaze to Tu clan village head, reporting: “But this method has a drawback.”

“What drawback?”

“This is considered forceful soul search, the target would go insane, but their insane words are truthful thoughts!”

Tu clan village’s head did not even look at Huang Wan, he said without hesitation: “Please go ahead and use your method, there is no need to hold back.”

“Yes.” Wu Xiao immediately took action.

A few moments later, Huang Wan went insane, she lost her mind completely.

This was the first time Meng Qiu Zhen had encountered such a situation.

This condition directly influenced his thoughts as well.

“Tell me the mushroomman tribe’s location.” Tu clan village’s head asked.

Meng Qiu Zhen wanted to tell him the truth but his words that came out were: “La la la my homeland exists in my heart. Hehehe.”

Huang Wan started to smile foolishly.

“How do I get into the mushroomman tribe’s headquarters?” Tu clan village’s head continued to ask.

“Use your legs to walk in, of course, you can crawl too. Hahaha…” Huang Wan started to laugh madly again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2150: Crazy Mother

Tu clan village head became anxious, he started to fire off questions.

But even though Huang Wan spoke the truth each time, her replies were all nonsensical.

Tu clan village head did not get the answer he wanted, he looked towards Doctor Wu Xiao with an unkind gaze.

Doctor Wu Xiao was shocked too: “Amazing, too amazing! This mushroomman’s will is too strong, even though she lost her mind and has fallen into insanity, she became even purer as a result, each of her actions resonate with her true feelings. In her heart, she will definitely not betray her tribe, even if they exiled her. Tu clan village head, there is nothing else I can do.”

“You...” Tu clan village head was very angry, he controlled himself: “Then Master Wu Xiao, you can go rest now.”

In the jail cell, only Tu clan village head and Huang Wan were left.

Tu clan village head looked at Huang Wan and laughed coldly: “Don’t worry, even if you are crazy, I can still make use of you. If I cannot get an answer from you, I will capture more mushroomman higher-ups and ask Master Wu Xiao to take action. I do not believe that I cannot find out the location of your mushroomman tribe!”

Thus, in the next scene, Meng Qiu Zhen turned into Huang Xiao Mi.

The elite Gu Masters of the mushroomman tribe were beside him.

The night was dark, they had already stealthily arrived near Tu clan village.

“Brother Xiao Mi!” Fang Tu secretly went to receive him.

These years, Fang Tu had received the help of Huang Wan and Le Tu, she started her cultivation journey and was now a rank two Gu Master.

She had received immense help from Huang Wan, because of her fortuitous encounter, she bore goodwill towards the mushroommen.

“How is the situation?” Meng Qiu Zhen asked immediately.

Fang Tu answered: “The village head is already prepared, tomorrow morning, Auntie Huang Wan will face the trial publicly, she will be beheaded! On the other hand, I have already found out about the location where Le Tu is kept in.”

“Alright, we will split into two groups, one group will head to the execution ground and lay in ambush. The other group will save Le Tu and pass him those Gu worms that we prepared.” Meng Qiu Zhen instructed.

The sky gradually lightened up.

Right when Huang Wan was about to be beheaded, Meng Qiu Zhen led the mushroomman Gu Masters to attack the execution ground.

“You came after all.” Tu clan village head laughed.

“Everything has gone according to leader’s estimations.” The elders praised.

“Mother!” On the other hand, Le Tu also arrived with his reinforcements.

Tu clan village head frowned: “You chose the other side after all! Forget it, today, I will slay my kin in the name of justice, I will correct my past mistakes. Kill that pair of mother and son! Try your best to capture all the remaining mushroommen.”

A chaotic battle started.

Tu clan village soon gained the upper hand, this was a trap that they had set in the first place.

The mushroomman tribe also predicted this but there was no choice. Huang Wan was the former witch, she knew too many secrets of the tribe, she could not be allowed to stay in Tu clan village.

Huang Xiao Mi and Le Tu fell into tough combat, they were surrounded by strong foes.

“To think that the day would come where we fight on the same side.” Le Tu looked at Huang Xiao Mi, smiling bitterly.

Meng Qiu Zhen suddenly laughed heartily: “Don’t worry, our reinforcements are here.”

At the crucial moment, the dream realm changed once again as a large number of mushroomman Gu Masters joined the fight.

It turned out that the mushroomman tribe leader had gone all-out, he led the entire tribe to attack Tu clan village in a last ditch attempt.

To win or to die trying!

There was no other possible outcome!

Most of Tu clan village’s higher-ups were at the execution ground, because of their temporarily weakened defenses, the mushroomman army actually broke in and charged all the way into Tu clan village.

An intense battle erupted.

The village head and tribe leader were both rank five, they fought against each other.

Le Tu and Huang Xiao Mi’s alliance became the crucial element that could break this stalemate.

They were too familiar with each other, even though this was their first alliance, they had immense coordination in working together.

Both of them had rank four cultivation level, once they joined hands, their battle strength rose greatly, even Tu clan village’s head could not resist them.

In the end, the mushroomman tribe won while Tu clan village suffered a terrible loss.

The remaining Gu Masters escaped into the prison, resisting with all their might, desperately attempting to survive.

Meanwhile, Tu clan village’s head was heavily injured, he was on the brink of death, captured by the mushroomman tribe.

“Mother, how are you? What happened to you?”

Le Tu managed to save his mother in this chaotic battle after suffering huge injuries. But he found that Huang Wan had already gone mad.

Huang Wan looked at Huang Xiao Mi: “Son, oh son, you must live in happiness and bliss. That is why I named you Le Tu. Come, smile for mother, show me a smile.”

“Oh mother...” Le Tu was covered in tears: “It was my fault, if I had not barged in, you would not have gotten hit by the village head! You would not be in such a state.”

At this time, Wu Xiao was brought over.

He begged for mercy: “Don’t kill me, don’t kill me! I know what happened to your mother.”

“Speak!” Le Tu roared.

Tu clan village head who was heavily injured smiled and replied in a cold tone: “Hahaha, your mother cannot be saved, she had gone completely insane. That’s right, I caused it, this Doctor Wu Xiao is the direct culprit behind it as well.”

“You will all die!!!” Le Tu’s expression was distorted, he was about to make a move.

But Huang Wan suddenly stopped him: “Don’t kill him, don’t kill anyone! That is not good, you must be a kind person, you stupid rascal.”

“Mother, you finally recognized me.” Le Tu cried.

Slap.

Huang Wan suddenly slapped as Le Tu became stunned.

“Who are you calling mother! My son is right here.” She grabbed Huang Xiao Mi, patting the latter’s chest: “This is my son.”

“Look at my son!” Huang Wan said proudly: “My son is so strong and tall! He is such a wonderful lad.”

“Oh son.” Huang Wan was smiling earlier but suddenly, she cried: “Mother let you down. I hid your identity from you and shaved your head because I was afraid that your hair might grow into a mushroom cap instead. Will you blame me?”

Le Tu wept in agony as tears flowed like a river.

But Huang Wan paid him no attention, she only looked at Huang Xiao Mi.

For the first time, Le Tu looked at Huang Xiao Mi in a pleading gaze.

Huang Xiao Mi nodded as he acted: “Mother, I won’t blame you, you will always be my wonderful mother.”

Huang Wan shed tears of joy as she said: “Stupid rascal, I’m glad you forgive me. But don’t kill your father, don’t kill anyone else. I want you to live in peace and happiness, that is all I want. Let them off, conflict and slaughter only breeds deeper conflict and hatred, it will make you empty, it will torture you, it will make you unhappy.”

“If you are not happy, you will not be Ah Le anymore.”

The surrounding people were silent.

Even Tu clan village head was the same.

“You want me to spare these people?!” Le Tu’s eyes were red, he clenched his fists as his expression became distorted with rage.

“How can I do that?!” He forced that question out through the cracks between his teeth.

Tu clan village head smiled coldly, he had already lost completely, he became disheartened, he had no fear towards death.

But Doctor Wu Xiao suddenly shouted: “There is hope, there is still hope! Your mother still has a chance of regaining her sanity.”

Le Tu grabbed Wu Xiao’s shoulder and lifted him up: “Tell me, what method is it?”

Wu Xiao quickly answered: “Even though your mother is mad, she still has a bit of her mind left in her. Look at her actions and words, they are pure and sincere, this is her inner heart. As long as you do not go against her wishes, in time, her condition will not aggravate, her mind will grow and recover.”

“After that, with my healing, she will definitely be able to recover, there is still hope!”

Wu Xiao shouted for his life, in order to live, he did not give up any opportunities.

Bam.

Le Tu threw Wu Xiao to the ground.

“Ah—!” Le Tu raised his head to the sky and shouted in pain and agony.

His two enemies were right in front of him, they were completely defenseless, but he could not take revenge!

For the sake of his mother, he had to follow her wishes.

“Fine, for my mother’s sake, I will spare you two today.” Le Tu gritted his teeth, he used so much force that his teeth were bleeding.

The dream realm ended here.

Meng Qiu Zhen’s soul returned to his body, he sighed deeply to himself.

“To think that Paradise Earth had such an arduous and difficult life.”

“Heroes often experience difficulties beyond an ordinary man.”

“No wonder he had no hair in the depiction of his appearance that was left behind in history. But that green beast tattoo is also gone.”

“Paradise Earth is actually the mixed blood of human and mushroomman? How did he become venerable?”

“After that, did he manage to save his mother?”

“When he was still young, he had a rash temper and deep killing intent, he was no different from any other person. How did he end up being the person he was?”

The dream realm gave Meng Qiu Zhen many questions.

And they could not be answered for now.

But the fact was that his attainment level had risen.

Fang Yuan’s earth path attainment level jumped to great grandmaster!

Not only that, his poison path attainment also rose to great grandmaster.

Before this, Fang Yuan’s poison path attainment level was at grandmaster. This dream realm that Paradise Earth left behind contained the true meaning of both earth path and poison path.

Fang Yuan took a risk to raise his dream path clone into an immortal, the gains were quite apparent now.

Not only were food path, poison path, and earth path elevated to great grandmaster, even luck path and ice and snow path were grandmaster now. Space path, metal path, wind path, cloud path, lightning path, information path, light path, and dark path were also at master level.

After passing Paradise Earth’s dream realm, he only had a few dream realms left.

Before the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Fang Yuan would definitely be able to use up all of these dream realms.

At this moment, he had basically no weakness in most cultivation paths. However, painting path, weapon path, and pill path were still blank.

This could not be helped.

These paths did not exist in any of Spectral Soul’s dream realms.

This might be part of Spectral Soul’s plan, or maybe even he did not have attainment in those paths. After all, they were produced after Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s era. Meanwhile, painting path was kept in the hands of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, he did not let any information leak out, it was even more secretive than Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path inheritance.

Moreover, a portion of Spectral Soul’s dream realms were taken by Feng Jin Huang while pursuing Fang Yuan.

But she obtained very few dream realms.

It was not worth it for Fang Yuan to take them back.

After all, Feng Jin Huang had immense luck.

After becoming an earth path great grandmaster, Fang Yuan immediately started to modify the details of his earth vein project, he saved a lot of cost and reduced the time needed for it.

“Looking at the time, Ke Xin Hong should have already arrived in Southern Border’s Wu clan and met with Wu Yong?”

Fang Yuan counted and planned.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2151: Refining Gu in Exchange for Famous Mountains

Southern Border.

Wu Yi Mountain, Wu clan’s headquarters.

In a hall.

Ke Xin Hong had a faint smile as he greeted politely: “Ke Xin Hong pays respects to Wu clan’s first supreme elder.”

Wu Yong sat and smiled: “Esteemed envoy, no need to be so polite.”

Ke Xin Hong spoke openly and straightforwardly: “I came here with fan wind Gu, it has already been refined and raised successfully. Please do examine it now.”

Wu Yong could not help but feel surprised: “So quickly? Does Fang Yuan have a method to refine fake Immortal Gu, is he here to scam me?”

He received it and checked thoroughly, there were no flaws at all.

“It is a genuine rank eight Immortal Gu. But how can Fang Yuan refine a rank eight Immortal Gu in such a short period of time?” Thinking of this, Wu Yong was uncertain again.

In his mind, Fang Yuan’s main traits were craftiness, viciousness, shamelessness, unscrupulous, and ruthlessness. This number one demon in the world could not be assessed using common sense.

“Envoy, please hold on, our Wu clan Gu Immortal will come and check it.” Wu Yong answered.

Wu clan had their own refinement path Gu refinements, but they were not strong.

Wu clan was not specialized in refinement path, they were best at wind path. Not only in Southern Border, even in the five regions, Wu clan was first rate in wind path.

After a few minutes, Wu Yong received information that rank eight fan wind Gu was the real thing, it could not be fake.

Wu Yong had a complex emotion.

Immortal Gu were unique, because rank eight Immortal Gu were too hard to refine, they had an extremely important significance!

Ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals did not even have one rank eight Immortal Gu. For example, Old Ancestor Xue Hu lost everything that he had worked to accumulate for many years on Snowy Mountain blessed land after trying to refine fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu.

Of course, this was because his ambitions clashed with Heavenly Court’s and Longevity Heaven’s benefits.

“Even though the world has been changing in the last few years, with the movement of earth veins and rampaging of qi tides, a vast amount of immortal materials surfaced, it will likely cause a large increase in rank eight Immortal Gu. But for ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals, especially the lone immortals, they will still face problems getting one rank eight Immortal Gu.”

“To think that my Wu clan has gained a new rank eight Immortal Gu.”

Wu Yong was happy but also gained increasing wariness regarding Fang Yuan.

“Even though I know that Fang Yuan had annexed Lang Ya Sect, it is still hard to believe that his refinement path ability has become so incredible, it feels like he had an easy time refining a rank eight fan wind Gu with no problems encountered at all.”

On the other hand, Ke Xin Hong added: “Since you have checked it, which two Immortal Gu does your clan want to refine next? I can bring them both back next time.”

Wu Yong became hesitant.

Should he pass the seven-faced prestige wind Gu to Ke Xin Hong?

If he could refine eight-faced prestige wind Gu, Wu Yong would gain a huge boost in strength. But precisely so, seven-faced prestige wind Gu was extremely important.

If he gave it to Fang Yuan and the latter snatched it, what would he do?

“Come to think of it, there are many options.” At this moment, Wu Yong felt that three chances were too few. He would want nothing more than to raise all of Wu clan’s Immortal Gu to rank eight!

“To think that you acted so quickly, I am quite spoiled for choice at the moment, I need to think about it carefully. Envoy, why don’t you stay here and give me three days to consider?” Wu Yong asked.

Wu Ba Chong heard this and added, urging Ke Xin Hong: “Speaking of which, this is the third time you’ve come to Wu clan, let us host you and bring you around.”

“Alright.” Ke Xin Hong smiled lightly: “I do like Wu clan’s style a lot, I’ll trouble you with my stay. As for first supreme elder’s considerations, I understand. In fact, I have been tasked with another mission, I wonder if your clan would like to undergo another transaction with us?”

“What transaction?” Wu Yong became alert.

He thought of the secluded domain of heaven and earth Hu Land, it was akin to a quasi-rank nine Immortal Gu, but Fang Yuan forcefully bought it.

Thinking of this, Wu Yong felt a slight heartache again.

Ke Xin Hong explained the details while Wu Yong fell into contemplation.

Wu Ba Chong shouted in shock: “What? Fang Yuan wants to dig away our Wu clan’s famous mountains? In return, he will refine rank eight Immortal Gu for our Wu clan?”

“Precisely.” Ke Xin Hong nodded.

Wu Ba Chong snickered: “How can that be? Any famous mountain is a large resource point at least. Most of them are giant resource points, a select few are super resource points, they can produce rank eight immortal materials! Even though you can refine rank eight Immortal Gu, you are still using our Immortal Gu as the foundation to raise their rank, you are not giving us additional Immortal Gu.”

“Furthermore, Immortal Gu are hard to feed, rank eight Immortal Gu are too. Even if they are refined, they will expend our resources. Yet, famous mountains are able to produce resources continuously, they will almost never dry out. You want to take our famous mountains, you are trying to cripple our foundation, what intentions do you have, what schemes are you up to?!”

Towards the end, Wu Ba Chong was basically screaming in anger.

But Ke Xin Hong was prepared for this, he spoke calmly: “Not so, not so at all. Elder Wu Ba Chong, you are too pessimistic about this. Think about it carefully, your clan has just gotten many Gu Immortal seeds to undergo immortal ascension recently, but you only gained six new immortals, with most of them being external members.”

“Even with more Gu Immortals, Wu clan’s territory is too big, you cannot defend it. Since that is the case, you might as well sell some territories. In that case, not only would Wu clan have higher ranked Immortal Gu, you will even have sufficient manpower.”

“Furthermore.” Ke Xin Hong continued: “Immortal Gu are unique, I am sure Elder Wu Ba Chong knows how priceless rank eight Immortal Gu are. Immortal materials can be sold and bought, but can Immortal Gu be easily bought? They are unique, they can only be traded. Even if treasure yellow heaven is the number one market in the world, let me ask you, how many Immortal Gu have been traded in it over these years?”

“The five regions are now one, the five regions chaotic war cannot be avoided. Gu Immortal battle strength is the most important thing, you can only consider the rest after having sufficient strength to defend yourself. A rank eight Immortal Gu can cause your clan’s strength to rise sharply, not only can you protect yourself, you can invade others and gain a huge amount of wealth in war.”

“This...” Wu Ba Chong hesitated.

Ke Xin Hong looked at Wu Ba Chong, he cast a secretive glance at Wu Yong without showing any signs, continuing to convince them.

“Human Smoke Mountain is Chai clan’s headquarters, they sold it to us recently.”

“What? There is such a thing?” Wu Ba Chong was stunned.

Ke Xin Hong did not elaborate further, he took a step back: “If Wu clan does not want this trade, we will not force you. This time, other than bringing back Immortal Gu for refinement, I also need to find other clans and undergo this trade with them.”

Wu Ba Chong’s expression changed mildly.

If Wu clan did not deal with Fang Yuan but the other clans did, their battle strength would surge instead.

Even if they give up on resources now and lose future potential, what if they decide to expand through invasion?

By then, if Wu clan refuses to work with Fang Yuan, their battle strength would be surpassed by other clans, by then, Wu clan would fall from their throne of the number one Southern Border force, they would be bullied by others.

Wu Yong tapped on the table with his finger as he fell into deep thought.

“Fang Yuan is so domineering even when doing business, he gives others no way of rejecting!”

“However, even though Ke Xin Hong is trying to convince us, he is not wrong about it.”

“This trade is sensible, but we need to control the extent of our dealing!”

At almost the same time, in Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

“Gan Ni pays respects to master!” Earth Extremity of the Eight Extremities knelt before Immortal Zombie Giant Sun.

Earth Extremity Gan Ni was a female immortal, she cultivated earth path and refinement path, her refinement path attainment was quite deep.

At this moment, she held four rank eight Immortal Gu and handed them over respectfully.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun inspected them for some time and felt pleased: “Gan Ni, you are our Longevity Heaven’s refinement path expert indeed. Since the fate war until now, you received my orders and refined four rank eight Immortal Gu, you have made a huge contribution.”

Gan Ni quickly answered: “It was all thanks to master’s luck path methods, otherwise, with just my mere talent, we could not have refined so many rank eight Immortal Gu in these few years. But because of that, Longevity Heaven’s luck fell greatly...”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun interrupted her as he waved his hand: “In this world, there are losses where there are gains. To refine these Immortal Gu, luck expenditure was a necessary investment.”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun took one of these four Immortal Gu and observed it carefully in front of him.

This Gu had a peculiar shape, it was cubic and resembled a wooden box.

This was imitation Gu, it was eighth place on the List of Mystical Gu, originating from Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable!

If one placed this Gu with any Immortal Gu in the world together for some time, the Gu cultivator could activate imitation Gu to turn itself into that Immortal Gu.

Immortal Gu were unique, but imitation Gu could bypass this logic to some extent. However, the imitated Gu could not compare to the real one in power.

Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable asked Heavenly Court for human qi Immortal Gu and failed.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable took another path, refining imitation Gu and turning it into human qi Immortal Gu. Next, with this ‘human qi Immortal Gu’ as the core, he established Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Other than this imitation Gu, the other three rank eight Immortal Gu were all blood path Immortal Gu!

Divine Emperor City.

Light flickered, the ten children of human path came out of the painting world, returning to the real world.

“We... are finally back.”

“It is a pity that we did not manage to take down those two new paintings.”

“We were nurtured by Heavenly Court but the time is up, we needed to leave.”

“What are you worried about? Even though we did not take it down entirely, the situation has been set. There are so many beast tamers in the painting world, even cultivators have appeared. Moreover, with the deep foundation that we created, there is no chance of failure.”

“That’s true.”

After the ten children of human path conversed for some time, their sect’s Gu Immortals arrived to bring them back.

Qin Ding Ling and the rest concealed their traces, watching the scene unfold before them.

“These ten people are the human path immortal seeds of our Heavenly Court. Regardless of the results from this Crazed Demon Cave expedition, we need to nurture these people, invest fully in them!” Qin Ding Ling announced.

“Yes, madam.” The Gu Immortal in charge listened to Qin Ding Ling’s words and engraved it in his mind.

“Let’s go.” Qin Ding Ling turned around and said to Genesis Lotus’ will.

Genesis Lotus’ will nodded.

At the next moment, Divine Emperor City moved, the huge city flew up again, heading straight from Central Continent with unparalleled momentum.

The target was Crazed Demon Cave!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2152: Earth Vein’s Initial Formation

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Several variant human men gathered into a circle, they were busily engaging in an important business.

“Slowly, slowly.”

“Guys, relax a little, don’t be so anxious.”

“Faster, faster, I can’t endure it anymore.”

Bam.

A loud sound was heard.

A gigantic hill landed on the ground.

This hill was not tall, it did not have clear waters of beautiful vegetation, there were mostly dust rocks and iron cloud stones on the mountain, causing it to look grey in most areas.

And most amazingly, this entire hill was completely silent.

Even though there were many life forms, when Gu Immortals spoke here, no sound could be transmitted unless they used specific methods.

This was silent hill.

It had the same reputation as Western Desert’s anti-sound desert, famous in the world. Any sound path killer move used here would be greatly weakened and suppressed.

Silent hill was a famous mountain in Southern Border, but because it produced little resources, it had not been very useful to anyone.

This time, Fang Yuan sent envoys all over the place to negotiate in transactions.

Silent hill was sold to Fang Yuan as a result, these variant human Gu Immortals moved in groups, they were in charge of moving silent hill back into a specific location of the sovereign immortal aperture.

But relocation was just the first step, next, they had to develop its mountain roots.

The one in charge of this was a rockman Gu Immortal.

He activated a method as silent hill’s mountain roots began to grow rapidly, stabbing into the surrounding environment.

“Deeper, go deeper!” The leader instructed as he suddenly sighed: “Sigh, why did you stop? Are you finished so quickly?”

The rockman Gu Immortal said impatiently: “Say, leader, can you keep quiet? I want to go deeper too, but I only have rank seven cultivation level. This is a famous mountain, it is very exhausting to influence and manipulate its mountain roots!”

But the leader said: “That’s why I said you need to work harder. Your cultivation level is too low, when will you become a rank eight?”

The rockman Gu Immortal rolled his eyes: “Boss, I was still rank six some time ago, I only went to pass the tribulation and reached rank seven because of our master. I also want to reach rank eight, but that is just too difficult.”

The other Gu Immortals quickly spoke.

“Leader is right, in our group, you’re the only one that can deal with the mountain roots, allowing them to grow thick and long. If you were stronger, we would complete our mission to a greater extent, we would receive better rewards as well.”

“You are in charge of the mountain veins, your contribution is the highest among us!”

“I heard that you went to sleep recently?”

“I have not slept in two months, I have been doing mountain relocation missions the entire time.”

“Master has such grand ambitions and inspirations, he is managing a project to create artificial earth veins. But this plan will eventually be completed, aren’t we grabbing onto this chance when it is available to us? Look at the other groups, the more missions they complete, the fewer we will have for ourselves.”

The other Gu Immortals stared at the rockman Gu Immortal, they had a look of expectation and disappointment.

The rockman Gu Immortal was very helpless: “Don’t you guys know? We rockmen have no lack of sleep in our lives. Because our bodies are too heavy, it is a huge burden on our soul. We need to sleep to pacify our soul.”

“Then use the liver life formation!”

“I already used it.”

“On master’s contribution board, aren’t there soul path methods to raise your soul foundation?”

“But I cultivate earth path, soul path methods are less effective on me. Instead of using my contribution points on them, I might as well raise my earth path attainment instead.”

The leader gritted his teeth: “Stop arguing, let’s pool our funds and help our little rockman brother. Let’s gather some points and raise his soul foundation.”

The other Gu Immortals agreed together.

Right now, the rockman Gu Immortal was their group’s weakness, if he got stronger, the entire group would benefit from it.

Fang Yuan handed out all sorts of missions, they were created after wisdom path deductions, their contents were simple but they had deep meaning.

Be it the difficulty of the mission or the content itself, Gu Immortals often had to cooperate with others, it was hard to do any mission alone.

This gave the Gu Immortals of various races a chance to work together intimately.

After a long period of cooperation, they naturally developed camaraderie and friendship.

Thus, within the entire sovereign immortal aperture, all the different tribes and races were seamlessly fusing together into one big community.

Humans, rockmen, feathermen, inkmen, snowmen, and others, they were all working together, contributing blood and sweat for the sake of building their wonderful homeland.

“Excellent, silent hill has been relocated already. All the famous mountains are distributed around the mini five regions, the most basic requirement has been met, we can now start developing the earth vein.”

Fang Yuan had been paying huge attention to the famous mountain relocation plan.

After seeing the situation over at silent hill, he started to take action personally.

In order to construct the earth vein, he had already created many immortal formations in the important areas of the mini five regions.

At this moment, Fang Yuan willed as immortal essence was expended, the immortal formations started to activate on their own.

The ground of the mini five regions was shaking with greater intensity as time passed.

The variant humans living in the various areas were lost and confused, while some showed expressions of joy.

“What is happening? Is there another earthquake?” Most of the mortal Gu Masters did not understand the situation.

“Master has started to take action. Oh heavens, he is affecting the entire mini five regions in one go, this is truly a huge project!” The Gu Immortals sensed the situation, they all felt intense joy and also deeper admiration towards Fang Yuan.

Rumble...

The ground continued to rumble but the extent was not too severe, there was not much loss from this.

An earth vein started to form in a chain due to the effect of the Gu formations in various areas, using the famous mountains as its various nodes.

This earth vein crossed through the mini five regions, it was present in Mini Eastern Sea, Mini Central Continent, Mini Northern Plains, Mini Southern Border, and Mini Western Desert.

If one looked from above, this earth vein would resemble an irregular geometric shape, the lines were very clear and simple, it barely covered the area of half the mini five regions.

The earth vein was successfully constructed, the ground returned to normal.

The immortal formations of various places came to a halt, they were basically fueled by immortal materials that were almost completely expended, the formations were now incomplete and could not be used again.

Fang Yuan started to carefully assess the outcome.

He was very patient and thorough, after some time, he nodded in satisfaction.

It had gone according to plan, the entire earth vein was created perfectly, no flaws could be observed.

Of course, this had to do with the simple design of the artificial earth vein, it was simply too crude.

The truth was, the hardest part of the artificial earth vein project was not the creation of the earth vein. The problem was the way to gather enough famous mountains to use as the nodes of the various regions’ earth vein.

The second hardest thing was the method to create an artificial earth vein.

“The earth vein is completed in its initial state, it is quite crude now and does not have an immediate impact on the entire sovereign immortal aperture. In fact, it might even cause problems to occur frequently during this initial period, but after some time when things go back to normal, the sovereign immortal aperture will become more stable than before!”

Fang Yuan estimated in his mind, he withdrew his attention from the sovereign immortal aperture and used Cooking Luck Pot to inspect his luck again.

With one glance, Fang Yuan’s eyes shined, joy was expressed in his gaze.

The creation of his artificial earth vein had a huge effect on his luck.

His luck was originally a grand pillar of silver light, but it was quite loose like cloud soil, it could scatter with one touch.

Now, even though the silver pillar was smaller, it became more condensed.

This was quite an assuring development.

“But the luck of the other venerables has also grown stronger.” Fang Yuan frowned to himself.

At the top of the silver light pillar, three clouds were looming over it, they represented Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Star Constellation’s cloud was still in control of the first level, it had expanded slightly.

Spectral Soul was at the second level, while Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was at the third.

But there was an odd scene now, Star Constellation’s cloud seemed to be devouring Spectral Soul’s cloud.

This scene was quite confusing to Fang Yuan, he had many guesses in his mind but he was not certain about anything.

There was also another transformation.

At the bottom of the silver light pillar, yellow-brown dust started to spin around it again. This earthy dust moved around the silver light pillar, seemingly stabilizing it.

Through luck inspection, Fang Yuan confirmed that the artificial earth vein plan was very useful to himself, he became even more resolved to continue this plan.

“But after getting an earth vein, I can no longer use myriad beings assimilation transformation.” Fang Yuan reminded himself.

Myriad beings assimilation transformation killer move was the ultimate method of Beast Calamity Immortal, it contained the highest profundity of transformation path, able to turn dao marks of all other paths into transformation path dao marks. It could even influence heaven path dao marks, thus all sorts of tribulations could turn into beast calamities.

Fang Yuan’s main body could not use it anymore.

This move that transformed dao marks had a huge effect on the sovereign immortal aperture’s habitat.

Fang Yuan had a terrifying number of dao marks now, ignoring anything else, just refinement path dao marks alone amounted to over six million. If these six million dao marks suddenly turned into another path’s dao marks, the sovereign immortal aperture would not be able to adapt to the change.

By then, a huge issue would occur in the environment, the terrifying tribulation that occurs would have unimaginable consequences!

For example, it was like a fish swimming in water but the water turned into lava, it was easy to guess the outcome of the fish.

In the past, when Fang Yuan used myriad beings assimilation transformation, the sovereign immortal aperture’s development was still quite low, there were very few life forms inside. At that time, he also had far fewer dao marks.

If he used myriad beings assimilation transformation now, there would be too many dao marks transformed, it could not be done. But if he transformed fewer dao marks instead, against venerables, it would not have any purpose in combat.

Immortal killer move — Heaven and Earth Travel!

At the next moment, Fang Yuan's main body went from Eastern Sea to Southern Border.

A tall mountain peered into the clouds, frost energy emanated from it, its mountain roots were cut already, Fang Yuan was here to retrieve it after the preparations were done.

This was Frosty Peak.

Back then, Fang Yuan disguised as Wu Yi Hai and sneaked into Wu clan, he had gotten into conflict with Xia clan over this mountain.

Frosty Peak was a famous mountain of course, it produced ice and snow path resources. However, the originally white and beautiful Frosty Peak was now littered with holes all over as a result of excessive excavation, not only was it ugly, the production of resources was also affected.

Thus, this Frosty Peak was sold to Fang Yuan by Wu clan.

At this moment, there were many Gu Immortals surrounding Frosty Peak.

Other than the variant human Gu Immortals that Fang Yuan dispatched, Wu clan's Gu Immortals were here as well, Wu Yong was among them.

"Fang Yuan, have you been well?" Wu Yong took the initiative to greet him, showing a complex expression at the same time.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2153: Lord Fang Yuan, Time to Get Going!

Wu Yong wanted to meet Fang Yuan personally.

If the pursuit of Fang Yuan had just ended, Wu Yong would not dare to get close to him at all.

Fang Yuan was the number one demon in the world, Wu Yong would not dare to approach him, there was a threat of getting killed.

It was too dangerous!

But now was different.

Fang Yuan had an entire series of methods for foreign affairs, he engaged in transactions with many major forces without using brute strength.

The initial effect might be small but after so long, super forces like Wu clan, Fang clan, and Chai clan could see that Fang Yuan was someone who could work with principles and rules.

After these super forces reassessed Fang Yuan, they decided to work with him.

It was not easy to reach this stage.

Would a rabbit have the guts to make transactions with a wolf?

"But this man in front of me achieved this feat." Wu Yong looked at Fang Yuan while feeling complicated internally.

Wu Yong was a current generation hero, his talent and aptitude were top rate even among rank eight Gu Immortals. Seeing Fang Yuan’s actions these days, even Wu Yong sighed to himself as he developed feelings of admiration.

Having strength but not abusing it or bullying the weak casually, this was not something easy to achieve. On the surface, this seemed like the demeanor of someone with self-control and an understanding that one could not abuse their advantage or they would eventually falter. But the truth was, he was unaffected by greed or ambition, his logic had always suppressed other emotions.

In the current world, no, throughout time, throughout the history of mankind, how many people could reach this stage?

Fang Yuan could even make these weaker forces undergo transactions with him without worries. Initially, there was only Wu clan, but Wu Yong soon found that almost all super forces were transacting with him, they sold some useless famous mountains in exchange for the chance to refine rank eight Immortal Gu.

This was not easy.

It showed that Fang Yuan had incredible interpersonal skills.

Be it through threatening or temptation, even if he used other methods, the result was that he succeeded.

“Fang Yuan is truly an incredible person! Even though he started from the demonic path, his mannerism and mindset has never been restrained by shallow ideas like factions.”

“He can be righteous or demonic, he can either help the world or cause chaos in the world, everything depends on the methods he adopt. Even throughout history, such a demon is truly the most terrifying.”

“Being born in the same generation as this person is also my blessing.”

Wu Yong was wary of Fang Yuan, he had felt disappointment and rage because of Fang Yuan, but he had also gained morale and inspiration, he even saw the beauty of life because of Fang Yuan.

Because from Fang Yuan, he saw himself, it was a testament to his own ideals.

He had too many similarities with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s series of actions during this period allowed Wu Yong to see Fang Yuan’s vision, he knew that Fang Yuan was someone who saw ten steps ahead of each action.

“Since everyone’s opinions and actions have changed because of Fang Yuan, why can’t I try to cooperate even more deeply with him?” After losing Hu Land, Wu Yong developed this thought.

What to do with an enemy you could not beat?

The best way was to cooperate with them, to turn from enemies to allies!

Cooperating with Fang Yuan had huge potential for gains, it was very helpful to Wu clan.

Wu Yong was someone with high restraint, but he also had the honor of the righteous path.

Except that the honor of an ambitionist like him was worth less than a piece of paper. As long as the benefits were high enough, Wu Yong could tear this paper into pieces with no second thought.

Thus, Wu Yong took the initiative to come and meet with Fang Yuan personally, he wanted to talk and try to see if he could deepen their cooperation!

Seeing Wu Yong, Fang Yuan also revealed a faint smile.

Wu Yong had once chased after his life, but so what?

If you can kill me, that is testament to your strength! This is a world where the strongest survive, if I die because of you, that is because I am weak, it is my own lack of capability, it is my fault!

The weak were devoured by the strong, was this not a natural thing?

Thus, in Fang Yuan's heart, he had never felt any pointless hatred or grudge.

Wu Yong came here of his own accord, his intention to cooperate was obvious, then let's cooperate!

For Fang Yuan, working with Wu clan had benefits and gains too.

Wu Yong was the leader of the Southern Alliance, while Wu clan was the number one super force in Southern Border. They would become a role model for other forces if they chose to cooperate.

Like how Fang Yuan traded with other forces for famous mountains, he had used Wu clan's transaction records to tempt them.

But just when Fang Yuan was about to talk with Wu Yong, a Gu Immortal flew over in the sky.

This Gu Immortal was dressed in a grey hemp garment and conical hat, he had a muscular body and a chin that was wide and thick, it was Lu Wei Yin.

He had always been calm and composed, but now, he showed an anxious expression.

Lu Wei Yin saw Fang Yuan and shouted from afar: "Lord Fang Yuan, I finally found you!"

"What's the matter?" Fang Yuan smiled.

Lu Wei Yin flew towards Fang Yuan, casting a glance at Wu Yong but not greeting him.

Wu Yong became quite curious, he had never seen Lu Wei Yin in such a frantic state.

Lu Wei Yin spoke directly in front of Fang Yuan: "Lord Fang Yuan, do you know that yesterday, Divine Emperor City brought Heavenly Court's immortals from Central Continent straight towards Northern Plains' Crazed Demon Cave!"

"Oh?" Fang Yuan's expression moved slightly.

Lu Wei Yin continued: "Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has likely revived, if she joins up with Heavenly Court, they will be able to work together, Crazed Demon Cave's situation will be very dangerous. There is no time, we need to head there immediately and take control of the situation!"

"What?" Wu Yong heard this and felt incredibly shocked.

What in the world was going on?

Why were Heavenly Court and Crazed Demon Cave involved in something?

Wu Yong was very perceptive, he immediately realized that this was an incredibly important fight. Regardless of the result, it would definitely affect the entire Gu Immortal world, as well as the five regions and two heavens!

But Fang Yuan was not anxious, he consoled Lu Wei Yin: “Your information network is really broad. But don’t worry, don’t be anxious, I still have matters to settle.”

Saying this, Fang Yuan used a method to put Frosty Peak into the sovereign immortal aperture.

“How can I not be anxious?” Lu Wei Yin took off his hat as he stared with wide eyes, urging: “We are going against Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven, the location is also Limitless Demon Venerable’s Crazed Demon Cave, as well as that secluded domain of heaven and earth, Primordial Domain. Lord Fang Yuan, we cannot lose our initiative in this fight.”

“What? What? Heavenly Court, Longevity Heaven... Limitless Demon Venerable... and Primordial Domain? The secluded domain of heaven and earth recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>?” Wu Yong had more and more questions in his mind, he felt more anxious as well.

He wanted to know everything.

Fang Yuan had a solemn expression: “I know that you want to make contributions, I’ve already promised you. If Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable wants to revive, I will help you. But I have my own judgment towards the situation, if I do not use my time to strengthen myself, how can I go up against the venerables? There is no need to rush me any further.”

“This...” Lu Wei Yin pondered without speaking further.

Fang Yuan turned to Wu Yong as he smiled again: “Wu Yong, regarding the sale of famous mountains, I think we can expand the scale of transactions. For example, Moon Bowl, Corpse Mountain, Phoenix Peak, or Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian, and others.”

Wu Yong showed a difficult expression: “These famous mountains have higher value than Frosty Peak. The true value of Phoenix Peak is that phoenixes will gather every year to lay eggs. If you take the mountain, it might not have great value anymore.”

“As for Corpse Emperor Yu Ding Tian or Corpse Mountain, they are things that Wu clan needs. Not long ago, we obtained the enslavement path true inheritance of the Corpse Emperor, we are trying to develop and use it, these two mountains are not for sale.”

“As for Moon Bowl, as long as the price is reasonable, we can consider selling it.”

Wu Yong spoke with a sincere tone but his mind was wandering elsewhere.

He had been anticipating this conversation for a long time. But because of Lu Wei Yin’s words earlier, Wu Yong’s attention was drawn away to the issue instead.

Fang Yuan negotiated with Wu Yong for some time, Lu Wei Yin was left unattended beside them.

Fang Yuan truly needed more famous mountains now.

Even though the earlier transactions were helpful, they were mostly useless mountains. But if Wu clan led the transaction, this huge deal between Fang Yuan and Southern Border’s super forces could go one step further.

After the discussion, Fang Yuan waved his sleeves: “Alright, I’ll see you both another time.”

Lu Wei Yin stretched out his hand: “Lord Fang Yuan...”

Before leaving, Fang Yuan cast a cold glance at him: “I have other matters to attend to.”

Lu Wei Yin could not speak any of the words that he had bottled up inside.

At the next moment, heaven and earth travel was activated, Fang Yuan vanished on the spot.

He really had things to do.

This time, he went to Rotten Mud Mountain and took the mountain.

“Sigh!” Lu Wei Yin sighed deeply to himself.

Wu Yong smiled: “We have not met for some time. Why don’t we...”

Lu Wei Yin waved his hand: “Wu Yong, I have matters to attend to, when I am free, I will definitely visit Wu Yi Mountain.”

Saying so, Lu Wei Yin left.

He did not have the mood to explain things to Wu Yong.

Wu Yong also had a bunch of bottled up questions, he felt horrible internally.

He immediately turned his gaze towards the variant human Gu Immortals that were present.

His smile did not change, he asked these people.

But what did these variant human Gu Immortals know?

The leader replied calmly: “Without master’s permission, how can us subordinates speak out of line? Please do not blame us, Lord Wu Yong, we need to continue moving the mountains.”

Wu Yong was helpless as he watched these people leave.

Even though he spoke to Fang Yuan and achieved his original goal, Wu Yong could not be happy.

He sensed acutely that he was starting to get left behind by Fang Yuan and others. He had no idea what was going on in Crazed Demon Cave, for example.

“No wonder Fang Yuan is trying to work with the major forces... Star Constellation Immortal Venerable revived? One can only imagine the pressure he is facing.”

“Maybe I should use this to haggle for more conditions with Fang Yuan?”

After understanding Fang Yuan’s difficulties, Wu Yong started to develop some thoughts.

“Wait.” His eyes burst with bright light: “Lu Wei Yin could have transmitted those words to Fang Yuan, why did he speak in front of me purposely? It is likely that I can gain more information by asking him. He rejected me earlier to try to raise his status and get a higher price.”

Wu Yong smiled bitterly internally.

He knew that if he contacted Lu Wei Yin now, he would be extorted by the latter.

But if he did not ask for information, how could he know if there was a chance to benefit from this situation?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2154: Looting Everything

Immemorial white heaven.

Intense winds blew, Fang Yuan’s hair fluttered in the wind as a result.

After preparation, he activated his killer move.

A rank eight earth path grotto-heaven was devoured by the sovereign immortal aperture under Fang Yuan’s method.

Like what he did earlier, Fang Yuan did not annex this grotto-heaven wholly, he chose to split it into different portions and placed them into the sovereign immortal aperture’s various areas.

Of course, because this was a rockman earth path grotto-heaven, most of it landed in the mini five regions, only a small portion ended up in the mini nine heavens.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

As profound light faded, a mountain range appeared in Mini Central Continent out of nowhere.

“It’s here, it’s here, our tribe’s Myriad Ravine Mountain Range!” Shi San Bai was incredibly excited.

“Yes, this is our former Sacred Mountain, but now that it is inside the sovereign immortal aperture, it has become quite ordinary.” Shi Gua Bi had a complex expression, he felt dejected but also happy.

These few rockman Gu Immortals gathered together for this moment.

They were the Gu Immortals of this former grotto-heaven, but they were sent into Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture in advance.

During this period of time, their cultivation levels rose rapidly, they also gained many Immortal Gu. They were simply on a whole new level than before.

“Let’s go, let’s go in.” The rockman Gu Immortals flew into Myriad Ravine Mountain Range.

“Greetings to supreme ancestor!”

“The ancestors have finally returned!!!”

Myriad Ravine Mountain Range still had a large number of rockman Gu Masters, after seeing the rockman Gu Immortals, they cheered loudly.

“Indeed, this is our new home.”

“We have a bright future living here.”

After the rockman Gu Immortals gave them a speech, they started to take action.

They had missions to do.

This Myriad Ravine Mountain Range was a famous mountain too, it was going to be one of the cores of an earth vein.

Fang Yuan spent several hours annexing this earth path grotto-heaven, during the process, certain changes developed in various places across the sovereign immortal aperture.

In Star Collection City, Combat Beast King held the fort as he observed the commotions in the sovereign immortal aperture along with other Gu Immortals.

“During this period of time, master annexed several grotto-heavens and caused the dao marks to rise in number. It can be expected that the various areas of the sovereign immortal aperture will have increasing commotion over time, with rising intensity.”

“Isn’t this good? The more incidents there are, the more missions we have to do.”

“Sigh, when will our tribe’s grotto-heaven be annexed by master?”

The Gu Immortals talked among themselves, feeling expectant towards their future prospects.

Their mindsets had already changed drastically.

In the past, they were against Fang Yuan annexing their grotto-heavens, but now the situation was different, they looked forward to it. It was as if they could not gain their master’s acknowledgement if their grotto-heaven had not been annexed. Many Gu Immortals who had their immortal apertures annexed felt that they were a true part of the sovereign immortal aperture, they felt superior to the Gu Immortals of the two heavens.

“Lord Fang Yuan, Lord Fang Yuan!” Lu Wei Yin shouted.

He flew over from afar.

Fang Yuan turned around and smiled: “It has been tough on you, you came all the way here to immemorial white heaven.”

Lu Wei Yin smiled bitterly, he said in an urgent tone: “Lord Fang Yuan, you must know why I came here. Let’s set off now, do you know that yesterday, a rank eight Immortal Gu House flew from immemorial black heaven to Crazed Demon Cave.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “Many people saw that, the Immortal Gu House should be the one that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left behind, Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, right?”

“Indeed.” Lu Wei Yin nodded continuously, staring at Fang Yuan: “Right now, Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court have moved. If we still do not start taking action, we are going to lose this prime opportunity.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “Fine, let’s go.”

“Really?” Lu Wei Yin heard the answer he wanted, but he could not believe it.

These last days, he had used information path methods to urge Fang Yuan to go, but he kept on refusing it.

To think that Fang Yuan was actually going to move now.

“Can I confirm when Lord Fang Yuan will go?” Lu Wei Yin was still in disbelief.

Fang Yuan smiled: “How about now?”

Lu Wei Yin was overjoyed: “Lord Fang Yuan is truly resolute, that is the best answer, let’s go, let’s go!”

The truth was, Fang Yuan had already decided to go to Crazed Demon Cave now.

He had already used up all of the dream realms, his attainment levels rose accordingly.

Quasi-supreme grandmaster: refinement path, time path, enslavement path.

Great grandmaster: theft path, transformation path, rule path, qi path, fire path, wisdom path, water path, earth path, poison path.

Grandmaster: blood path, strength path, star path, dark path, formation path, soul path, sword path, human path, wood path, food path, phantom path, luck path, ice and snow path.

Master: dream path, space path, metal path, wind path, cloud path, lightning path, information path, light path, sound path.

As for the remaining paths like bone path, they were not at master level yet, but he still had some progress. Heaven path was the same.

Even though he did not reach Spectral Soul’s level, Fang Yuan’s attainment levels were already top rate in the current world. Be it breadth or depth, he could be considered the number one person in the world!

After all, Spectral Soul lost his attainment levels after leaving behind the dream realms, while Star Constellation and Giant Sun would not retain their supreme grandmaster attainment levels even if they revived now.

Of course, he still had insufficiencies.

For example, painting path, weapon path, and others, they were completely blank.

These paths were just too rare, painting path was intentionally concealed by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, while weapon path was crudely created by Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal Che Wei recently.

With the rise of attainment level, Fang Yuan could annex more grotto-heavens, the sovereign immortal aperture reached its limit once again.

If there was some time to digest the new gains, the sovereign immortal aperture would become more stable.

But there was neither time nor opportunity.

Through luck inspection, Fang Yuan found that the situation had worsened again, even though there was still leeway, it had clearly gotten quite severe.

With a resolute decision, Fang Yuan immediately went to Northern Plains with Lu Wei Yin.

Ever since that pursuit battle over Fang Yuan ended, he had already used all his time to the limit, recuperating and raising his strength as much as he could.

Now, it was time to face the venerables head on!

Years had passed, Fang Yuan returned to Crazed Demon Cave again.

Initially, when he first came here, he only had rank seven cultivation level and was restricted by an alliance agreement.

Now, he looked down towards Crazed Demon Cave, ready to engage in battle with venerables.

The first layer of Crazed Demon Cave was a huge land of yellow soil.

This was a huge cave, it was almost circular at the entrance, spanning hundreds of kilometers, it looked extremely grand.

Inside the cave, there was a lush rain forest, filled with the colors yellow and green. Desolate beasts formed into groups, vines and trees tangled together, growling could be heard everywhere, it was a primitive sight.

“We will go down from there.” Lu Wei Yin said.

“No rush.” Fang Yuan raised his hand: “These immortal materials are useful to me.”

He opened his immortal aperture’s entrance, many variant human Gu Immortals were let out.

These Gu Immortals were talking among themselves, they went down in groups, causing chaos in the entire first layer.

“Quick, there is a desolate plant here!”

“Dig it up, bring it back.”

“Oh oh, there’s a group of desolate beast monkeys here, let’s work together.”

“Squeak squeak...” The monkey group cried out together.

“These rocks are immortal materials, bring them back, bring them all back.”

“These are all contribution points!!”

The Gu Immortals worked enthusiastically, they were like a group of bandits that entered a mortal village.

Even though the first layer of Crazed Demon Cave had wild beasts and plants, Fang Yuan’s subordinates were superior in numbers, there were also many rank eight Gu Immortals among them that possessed rank eight Immortal Gu and rank eight killer moves.

The first layer of Crazed Demon Cave was completely looted!

Lu Wei Yin watched with a dazed expression.

In just this short period of time, how did Fang Yuan’s subordinates become so strong, didn’t their strength rise too absurdly?

“I have too many people under me, our resource expenditure is very high, especially when I made the artificial earth vein recently. This is really embarrassing.” Fang Yuan smiled.

Lu Wei Yin quickly waved his hand: “Of course not, I feel admiration towards you instead. In the current world, only Lord Fang Yuan is capable of making use of these chaotic immortal materials.”

Because Crazed Demon Cave had demonic sounds at set intervals, dao marks would become chaotic and all the immortal materials would be useless. Living beings would rampage and lose their senses, even rank eight Gu Immortals became lunatics in such an environment.

A while later, the first layer that was filled with vitality became a barren land.

The variant human Gu Immortals were still not satisfied as they brought the vast amount of resources back into the sovereign immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin went into the second layer after that.

Crazed Demon Cave’s second layer was an incredibly hot land of burning rocks. A large amount of rocks were piled up together, big and small, the large ones were like huge elephants, the small ones were like pebbles.

These Gu materials also had chaotic dao marks, but they were mostly made of fire path and earth path dao marks.

“Take them all.” Fang Yuan ordered, the variant human Gu Immortals moved again.

They swept the area like a locust swarm, emptying the entire second layer.

After that, Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin went into the third layer.

The third layer was covered in dense fog, it had a vast number of fog worms and cloud bamboos. These life forms were also senseless and chaotic, they were all taken down or chopped down and collected by the variant human Gu Immortals.

There was even a Fog City here.

A ghost city of dead people.

The Gu Immortals who died in Crazed Demon Cave gathered together with vengeance and created this Fog City.

When Fang Yuan came here before, he avoided it as he had rank seven cultivation level, if he entered it, he would definitely die, there was no way to escape.

But it was different now.

Fog City?

Mine.

Take it away!

After looting everything in his path, Fang Yuan arrived at the seventh layer of Crazed Demon Cave.

He spent much less time compared to his previous expedition.

Back then, Fang Yuan was led by Not Immortal, they kept taking detours. The deeper they went, the more turns they had to make, sometimes, the straight distance seemed to be short, but they had to make a long detour. With their strength back then, detours actually saved them more time than taking a straight path.

But now, Fang Yuan moved unhindered.

No matter what obstacles he met along the way, he placed them all into the sovereign immortal aperture.

The seventh layer of Crazed Demon Cave was filled with bright colors. The rocks, grass, soil, and trees were all shining in bright lights.

Every piece of soil or rock here was a quasi-rank nine immortal material.

But the dao marks were chaotic, they could not be used at all.

Of course, that was the case for most Gu Immortals in the world.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2155: Paradise Earth’s Sacred Tomb

Fang Yuan was the exception, of course.

As demonic sounds rang, Fang Yuan had already prepared himself. Back then, he was able to deal with the demonic sounds, now, it was simply too easy.

Under the demonic sounds’ influence, dao marks of the same path in the seventh layer gathered together and formed large areas of beautiful rainbow lights, they were no longer as scattered and random as before.

“Such an incredible sight!” Lu Wei Yin sighed in amazement: “Eh...”

At the next moment, he saw Fang Yuan taking out Immortal Gu House Thieves Den.

Steal dao killer move activated!

Large numbers of dao marks were stolen, forming into corresponding rank nine immortal materials within Thieves Den.

These rank nine immortal materials were very pure, they only had one path’s dao marks, they had immense value.

Lu Wei Yin watched, he became tongue-tied.

He estimated that in just over ten breaths of time, Fang Yuan obtained at least three rank nine immortal materials!

Rank nine immortal materials!

Wasn’t he obtaining them simply too easily?

Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin moved together, everywhere they went, large areas of dao marks vanished.

The beautiful sight turned into something that resembled cheese gnawed by rats, everywhere Fang Yuan went, there were large pieces of black and white spots.

Lu Wei Yin watched, his eyes turned slightly red.

Fang Yuan’s gains were too huge, the benefits were large enough for him to feel envy internally.

“Such wealth, he’s earned a fortune! This is the first time I’ve seen anyone gain a vast number of rank nine immortal materials so easily!!” Lu Wei Yin shouted internally to himself.

He could no longer guess how many rank nine immortal materials Fang Yuan had obtained.

The only thing he was knew, his gains were huge, enormous, unthinkable.

Continuing to move forward, they finally arrived at the entrance of the eighth layer.

Fang Yuan’s expression was slightly pale, the burden of using Thieves Den and the killer move steal dao along the way was not small, especially in terms of immortal essence expenditure.

Lu Wei Yin became slightly worried: “Lord Fang Yuan, do pay attention to your immortal essence storage.”

“No need to worry.” Fang Yuan smiled mildly: “I have rank eight Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.”

Lu Wei Yin heard this and his expression froze before replying: “Impressive, impressive, as befitting of Lord Fang Yuan.”

At the entrance, Fang Yuan saw three paths ahead again.

One path was filled with golden light, luck surged around it. It was the luck path left behind by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

One path was dark and horrifying, killing intent filled it. It was the soul path left behind by Spectral Soul when he entered the eighth layer.

One path was humble and plain, giving a virtuous aura. It was Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s path.

Because Lu Wei Yin had methods prepared beforehand, he could enter Paradise Earth’s path.

But Fang Yuan waved his hand, Thieves Den activated, the three paths were completely devoured, they disappeared.

A large number of rank nine immortal materials were produced as a result.

Lu Wei Yin moved his lips but he did not manage to say anything, he followed Fang Yuan into the eighth layer wordlessly.

Nothingness!

This was a boundless void that resembled a huge ocean with no shore in sight.

Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin who entered were like two bugs in the ocean, extremely minuscule and insignificant.

Fang Yuan had once come here, he had a deep impression of the place.

In this boundless void, countless worlds were created and destroyed, deriving brand new heaven path dao marks.

He had once tried to enter the ninth layer but he did not succeed.

This void was evidently the profundity of phantom path, but Fang Yuan did not have phantom path attainment back then, he could not deduce the location of the ninth layer's entrance.

This time, he came prepared.

His phantom path attainment level had reached grandmaster.

Immediately, Fang Yuan used his phantom path method.

"Hmm?" At the next moment, Fang Yuan raised his brows: "The void here is different from the one I experienced last time."

But Fang Yuan could not point out the exact difference.

Even though he made huge progress in phantom path, he was still very far from understanding or breaking Limitless Demon Venerable's eighth layer arrangements.

"Please follow me." Lu Wei Yin activated a certain killer move and found his direction, leading the way.

Fang Yuan followed after Lu Wei Yin.

Along the way, he saw worlds created and destroyed, it was truly an extraordinary sight.

But different from before, these worlds were moving along the void, no matter which world it was, they went in the same direction.

Fang Yuan's deductions finally had some results.

He was evidently moved: "I understand now, this void is contracting. At the final moment, all of the worlds and heaven path dao marks will be squeezed together, they will be completely fused into one. Is this Limitless Demon Venerable's plan?"

Lu Wei Yin shook his head: "I only know the location of Yellow Earth Great World, we need to hurry and head there."

The two immortals flew for a few more hours before finally seeing their destination.

"This is?!" Lu Wei Yin expressed shock on his face, because he did not just see Yellow Earth Great World, he also saw the worlds that Reckless Savage and Genesis Lotus left behind.

Fang Yuan squinted: "The three great worlds are fusing into one, not just that, there are also many small worlds following beside them."

These worlds were motionless within the void.

Each world was like a bubble, the three great worlds were the largest bubbles, being green, yellow, and red respectively. The three worlds were joint together at the center, the periphery was filled with smaller bubbles that were linked to the surface of the three great world bubbles.

“Oh no, lord, please look!” Lu Wei Yin pointed at the yellow bubble and said anxiously.

Fang Yuan turned his gaze and saw that Yellow Earth Great World was currently attacked by the joint efforts of the other two great worlds.

Even though the view outside the bubble was quite vague, Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin could still sense the intensity of the battle inside. Especially when the connecting area of the three worlds was filled with corpses, it was the most intense area of the battle.

“Lord, with my method, Yellow Earth Great World will not resist us. Let’s go and reinforce them!” Lu Wei Yin charged in like a falling meteor.

Fang Yuan followed after him, his body was also shrouded in a yellow light.

It was this yellow light that allowed them to easily pass through the bubble and enter Yellow Earth Great World.

Looking at the great world, the thing that attracted Fang Yuan’s gaze the most was that huge mound at the center.

This mound resembled a mountain, the mountain itself was quite flat, it looked man-made.

But Fang Yuan could see the true essence of the mountain at first glance: “This is Tomb Earth of the Ten Earths? This is such a huge tomb.”

This unprecedented tomb had a tombstone on it.

The tombstone had six words written on it — Tomb of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable!

Seemingly sensing Lu Wei Yin and Fang Yuan, the tomb suddenly emitted a grand pillar of light.

It rose up into the skies, resembling a pillar that held up heaven itself, the entire battlefield froze, everyone’s eyes were attracted to it.

“The Sacred Tomb is shining, heaven and earth can bear testament to it. Our sage has arrived!” After a few breaths of time, a huge roar erupted in Yellow Earth Great World, it was like a huge tsunami.

The people of Yellow Earth Great World became energized and surged with morale, they started to counterattack.

Green Lotus Great World.

This was the Dao field of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, look at it, forests and vegetation were abundant, it was filled with greenery and vitality, giving off an unfathomable aura.

In this densely green world, there was a black and white mountain.

At the peak of the mountain, there were rows of chairs that extended downwards.

The top two chairs were unoccupied, while Qin Ding Ling sat at the fourth seat!

“Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin arrived after all!” After receiving the information, Qin Ding Ling snorted coldly.

During the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan, Lu Wei Yin took the initiative to help Fang Yuan, not only did he help to kill Spectral Soul, he even helped Fang Yuan escape.

Lu Wei Yin was Southern Border’s Paradise Earth inheritor, after that, Paradise Earth’s intention to cooperate with Fang Yuan became obvious.

The Paradise Earth Sacred Tomb at the center of Yellow Earth Great World was also openly seen to everyone, the Gu Immortals of the three worlds knew of it.

Thus, there was nothing strange about Lu Wei Yin and Fang Yuan showing up here.

Qin Ding Ling gritted her teeth as she said: “Currently, we need to split up into two groups, one group will advance and attack Yellow Earth Great World, the other will aid Demon Judgment Board in suppressing and resisting Savage Wilderness Great World as well as restraining Longevity Heaven. As for the other Gu Immortals, you can go conquer the small worlds in groups.”

“Originally, our side was cooperating with Longevity Heaven to devour Yellow Earth Great World, but now that Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin showed up, Yellow Earth Great World is no longer meat on the chopping block, we can suffer losses if we are careless.”

Saying so, Qin Ding Ling stood up and bowed to the Gu Immortal on the third seat: “Lady Ming Hao, please allow this subordinate to use Divine Emperor City and personally lead the group invading Yellow Earth Great World to resist Fang Yuan.”

Qin Ding Ling was originally the leader of Heavenly Court, but here, she was only fourth place, she had to obey the three fairies at the top.

Currently, the first and second fairies were not around, only the third Fairy Ming Hao was here to control the situation.

This Fairy Ming Hao had the appearance of a three to four year old girl, she was cute and delicate, her large eyes shined with sparkling starlight specks.

She blinked her large and shiny eyes, she pondered before replying with a childish voice: “I’ve heard of Fang Yuan, but do you need to deal with him personally? Let them go instead.”

Saying so, her tiny arm waved as a Gu worm flew out.

This information path Gu worm flew to the middle of the mountain and landed in front of two Gu Immortals.

These were neither human nor variant human Gu Immortals.

One was an old tree with a thin and dry trunk, it had countless branches of different length but had no leaves on them. It had thin and long roots that number to a hundred. The tree’s name was Mu Cha Lang.

The other was a long bamboo that was green like jade, its name was Qing Hao Zi.

Qing Hao Zi floated in the air, casually and peacefully sleeping.

Mu Cha Lang was lying on the mountain rock that seemed like a chair, its branches wrapped around a small rock like a person resting his legs on a stool, it was very relaxed.

After seeing the information path Gu worm, Mu Cha Lang stood up immediately.

It extended its branches to nudge Qing Hao Zi: “Stop sleeping, stop sleeping, the sage has sent an order.”

Qing Hao Zi waved back and forth because of the nudge but it did not land on the ground.

After getting awakened, it straightened its body and remained in the air: “To think that we are going to move out so quickly.”

Next, the two immortals left the mountain, leading their troops to the front lines.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2156: Heaven Extremity Gai Mei

Savage Wilderness Great World.

A grand and ancient dark gold palace floated in the sky.

It was Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

Within the palace, Bing Sai Chuan sat on a cushion with one information path Immortal Gu on the tiny table in front of him.

Several Gu Immortals were standing towards his left and right.

Bing Sai Chuan stared at the information path Immortal Gu, he frowned slightly.

Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin came together, it created a huge uncertainty in the battle of the three great worlds. What should Longevity Heaven, which occupied Savage Wilderness Great World, do?

Should they retreat first or send more people to probe Fang Yuan’s strength?

Bing Sai Chuan could not decide immediately.

He thought for a while and cast his gaze towards the first person on his left.

A fatty was sitting there.

The fatty was lying down on the table, fast asleep, there was even saliva flowing out of his mouth, onto his sleeves and the table below.

Bam bam bam!

Bing Sai Chuan knocked on the table with his knuckle several times.

The fatty was woken up by this noise, he opened his sleepy eyes and asked in a daze: “What happened?”

Bing Sai Chuan withheld his anger: “Gai Mei, you are the Heaven Extremity, you cultivate wisdom path. The newest information is here, I want you to deduce what our following actions should be.”

Saying this, the information path Immortal Gu flew and landed on the fatty’s head.

The fatty did not use his hand to touch it, he looked into the Immortal Gu directly, his pupils shrank immediately.

“What? That demon Fang Yuan is here?” The fatty shrugged: “See, weren’t my previous deductions correct?”

Bing Sai Chuan knocked on the table again: “I want you to deduce what action our side should take for this situation. Originally, Yellow Earth Great World was weak, with our control over Savage Wilderness Great World, and Heavenly Court’s control over Green Lotus Great World, we could invade Yellow Earth Great World and strengthen ourselves before deciding the victor between us. But now that Lu Wei Yin and Fang Yuan appeared in Yellow Earth Great World, if we attack it by force, they might counterattack and expend our strength instead.”

Bing Sai Chuan was not afraid of Fang Yuan’s counterattack, he was worried about the impact on the overall situation instead.

After all, the current situation was more complex than before, the three worlds were resisting each other. If any two forces went ahead and fought too intensely, the third force would benefit.

“Then let me deduce it.” The fatty Gu Immortal, Heaven Extremity Gai Mei, waved his loose sleeves and stretched out five fat fingers, he pretended to make a deduction.

“Oh, I deduced it, let’s follow our original pan.” Gai Mei said.

Bing Sai Chuan watched with a dumbfounded expression: “Can you use your Immortal Gu to activate a killer move and make a proper deduction?!”

Gai Mei blinked innocently: “What? How did you know I was pretending? You actually found out, you are so smart! You must be the wisdom path cultivator instead, right?”

Veins bulged on Bing Sai Chuan’s forehead: “Do you think you are Southern Border’s Wu Yong? You have no methods to conceal your aura, hurry up and make a deduction!”

Gai Mei waved his wide sleeves again, exposing his five fat fingers, he was about to make a deduction when he suddenly sighed: “Sigh! Forget it, the killer move is too tiring to activate. Why don’t we just ask our lord ancestor instead?”

Bing Sai Chuan was livid with anger, he shouted: “Absolutely not! Our lord is working with Earth Extremity, Black Extremity, and Space Extremity to deduce Limitless Demon Venerable’s plot, how can we disturb him?”

“Currently, Heavenly Court already has the initiative, they obtained Book Mountain. We are relying on our lord to have any hope of catching up to Heavenly Court. Heaven Extremity, can’t you see the big picture?”

Gai Mei pouted unhappily: “Stop calling me Heaven Extremity all the time, I didn’t even want to be Heaven Extremity, you guys forced it on me.”

Yellow Extremity Jiao Huo who was sitting beside Gai Mei tried to convince him: “Brother Gai, just help out and make the deductions. This is not just about the strength of Yellow Earth Great World, it also concerns Fang Yuan’s possible actions.”

“This demon Fang Yuan has no regard for his identity as a human. I am more worried that he might relocate the local Gu Immortals of Yellow Earth Great World and the ones he captures from our forces into the sovereign immortal aperture. Look at what he did in the five regions, he recruited the variant humans to become his subordinates and almost rejected nobody. In my opinion, it is likely he would do this.”

“In that case, it might foil our lord’s plans.”

Jiao Huo spoke, trying his best to convince Gai Mei, but he still shook his head, smiling instead: “Actually, you guys don’t have to be so worried. Isn’t Heavenly Court just as worried as us? Let’s see what Heavenly Court is doing now, wouldn’t that do? They are guarded by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, she is the number one wisdom path expert in history, she is definitely better than me at deductions.”

Jiao Huo’s expression froze: “Even so, if Heavenly Court deduces first, they will gain the initiative. If we join them in their plan, we will fall behind them.”

“Regardless, I am not going to work!” Gai Mei rolled his eyes as he went back to sleep on the table.

Jiao Huo and Bing Sai Chuan stared at him angrily, but he completely ignored them.

“Charge, charge with me!”

“Force back all of these enemies.”

“Charge—!”

Thousands of Gu Masters engaged in battle on the ground, the front lines looked disorderly, blood flowed everywhere.

The sky was the battlefield for Gu Immortals as they fought, more than ten Gu Immortals engaged in a chaotic battle at once.

On the ground, Yellow Earth Great World’s Gu Master army launched a powerful counterattack, while in the sky, Yellow Earth Great World’s Gu Immortals were suppressed.

Yellow Earth Great World’s sage had already descended, the Gu Masters were spirited and motivated, but in the battle between Gu Immortals, morale alone could not make up for their difference in strength.

After all, Yellow Earth Great World had fewer Gu Immortals than Green Lotus Great World.

This could not be helped.

The three great worlds were made one after another, Savage Wilderness Great World had the longest history, but it had a lot of internal conflict over the years. Green Lotus Great World was second while Yellow Earth Great World was the most recent. After all, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was the most recent venerable.

Yellow Earth Great World had very few Gu Immortals to begin with, it was even attacked by the joint force of two other worlds, they had fewer and fewer Gu Immortals gradually, the situation was dire.

“Our sages have arrived, there is still hope.”

“I will defend Yellow Earth Great World, I will defend my homeland!”

The Gu Immortals of Yellow Earth Great World shouted together, raising their morale.

Green Lotus' side laughed coldly.

"Even if your sages arrive, they cannot stop us from killing you guys."

"You have sages but so do we. The result of this battle will not change!"

"We don't want to do this too, but we have orders from our sage, we need to kill all of you and devour all the worlds to prevent the apocalypse from happening."

The Green Lotus Gu Immortals continued to attack.

Yellow Earth's Gu Immortals were specialized in defense, even though the situation was dangerous, they were barely able to hold the line, struggling at the brink of defeat.

Right at this time, from the huge tunnel connecting Yellow Earth Great World and Green Lotus Great World, two armies appeared.

They were led by the Gu Immortals Qing Hao Zi and Mu Cha Lang.

Immortal killer move — Spring Upon Withered Tree!

Mu Cha Lang shouted as green leaves appeared all over its entire tree body, the new leaves flew out and landed on the Green Lotus Gu Immortals.

The Green Lotus Gu Immortals were not severely injured to begin with, their large injuries became small while their small injuries healed completely.

The condition of the Green Lotus Gu Immortals improved immediately!

Immortal killer move — Green Life Taker.

Qing Hao Zi flew with extreme speed, creating a green trail in the sky, piercing the body of a Yellow Earth Gu Immortal.

The Yellow Earth Great World's Gu Immortal was a black bear, it grabbed its empty chest.

After gasping, it fell to the ground.

The Yellow Earth Gu Immortals were anguished.

After dealing the fatal blow, Qing Hao Zi looked at these Gu Immortals arrogant and said: "The Sacred Mountain gave orders, you will all die."

Mu Cha Lang laughed loudly: "So what if your sage is here? The eventual victor will only be our Green Lotus Great World!"

At the same time, in another battlefield.

Savage Wilderness Great World's main forces were fighting against another group of Yellow Earth Great World inhabitants.

"Die! Die! Die!"

A six legged black tiger that was as large as a mountain charged around in the sky, it managed to grab a Yellow Earth Great World Gu Immortal.

"I finally caught you!" The six legged black tiger laughed and exerted force with both claws.

Swoosh!

With a soft sound, the giant-like Yellow Earth Gu Immortal was torn into two by the six legged black tiger, dying on the spot.

“Hahaha!” The six legged black tiger laughed loudly, the giant’s blood spurted all over its face, the tiger licked and showed a maniacal and bloodthirsty expression.

“Little Rock Monarch was killed by Hei Liu Biao.”

“Let’s retreat, we are not these people’s match.”

“Indeed, our sage has already arrived, let’s return and ask him to take charge of us.”

The Gu Master armies were still fighting on the ground, but in the sky, Yellow Earth Great World’s Gu Immortals had lost their fighting spirit, they wanted to retreat.

Suddenly, there was an eagle cry as white light flashed in the sky.

Everyone turned to look, they saw a snow wing eagle pecking a Yellow Earth Gu Immortal and devouring him whole.

“Xue Li Du!”

“He ate another person!!”

The Yellow Earth Gu Immortals were furious and shocked.

Snow wing eagle Xue Li Du said in a shrill voice: “Escape? Don’t even think of running!”

The morale of the Yellow Earth Gu Immortals collapsed at once.

At Paradise Earth’s Sacred Tomb.

“Kan Ke La greets both sages!”

“Big Rock Monarch greets both sages, we implore you, please save our Yellow Earth Great World!!”

A group of Gu Immortals knelt on the ground.

They were either beasts or plants. Some even had peculiar forms, some seemed like they had been formed from casually molded clay, some were like children’s doodles, there were no pure humans.

These Yellow Earth Gu Immortals were all injured, some had severe injuries, on the brink of death.

But because of the commotion that Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin caused when they arrived, these sick and injured Gu Immortals came over.

Fang Yuan took a glance at them, seeing a ‘familiar person’.

This was a giant grey fish, it resembled a goldfish but had the size of a whale.

When Fang Yuan first entered the eighth layer, he met with this fish and forcefully enslaved it, it was named Little Flower.

Right now, as Little Flower saw Fang Yuan, it was very excited and wanted to say something, but in this situation, it chose to control its emotions as the timing was inappropriate.

Fang Yuan nodded, saying: “I wanted to see the ones behind Green Lotus Dao field as well.”

“Lord Fang Yuan, you cannot attack rashly.” Lu Wei Yin suddenly transmitted.

Fang Yuan looked at Lu Wei Yin with a peculiar gaze, seemingly saying: ‘Didn’t you invite me here because of my battle strength?’

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2157: Rushing Forward Together

Lu Wei Yin secretly transmitted as he explained in detail: “Lord Fang Yuan, you may not know this, because of your high battle strength, it will trigger a retaliative method from Limitless Demon Venerable. After our obvious arrival, why did Heavenly Court send more troops to provoke us? It was to probe our strength and try to lure you into attacking, which would be the best outcome for them.”

“What are the details about this?” Fang Yuan asked.

Lu Wei Yin smiled bitterly: “I’m not sure about the exact situation, but I know that Limitless Demon Venerable exerted huge effort to create Crazed Demon Cave back then, it was to make derivations regarding the Heavenly Dao, to find the true path of eternal life. At this point in time, the arrangement is finally about to reveal the result and bear fruit.”

“The current eighth layer void is contracting and shrinking now, all the various worlds are lured to the center, fusing into or annexing each other, until only one great world is left in the end.”

“And this great world might be the result of Limitless Demon Venerable’s derivation, it might contain the answer to eternal life.”

“If we attack abruptly and cause a huge commotion in battle, we may disrupt the eventual derivation of Crazed Demon Cave, Limitless Demon Venerable’s method will immediately activate to deal with us.”

“That will incur an unfavorable loss to our side.”

“Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven will be happy to see that happen. If we end up suffering mutual losses with Limitless Demon Venerable’s method, we will be less threatening to them while Limitless Demon Venerable’s method will also be exposed, they will be able to discern information about it.”

Fang Yuan pondered: “In that case, we can only make a move when the final great world is formed? Then why would Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven come here early to take charge of their respective great worlds?”

Lu Wei Yin explained patiently: “More precisely, only people with battle strength like yours cannot make a move. I am still able to take action here.”

“If our side can control Yellow Earth Great World and emerge victorious, we will have the upper hand in the final battle. When the final great world is created, the amount of control we have over it will determine our gains. Thus, we need to invade more worlds and devour them to expand our territory.”

After his transmission, Fang Yuan finally understood the situation.

Currently, he could not take action.

Once he took action and caused a big commotion, he would disrupt Crazed Demon Cave’s final derivation, it would trigger the retaliative method of Limitless Demon Venerable.

Of course, Fang Yuan could suppress his strength to take action.

But there was no need to.

Suppressing his strength would mean that Fang Yuan was about as strong as other Gu Immortals, he might be slightly superior but that would not have an impact on the overall situation. In fact, after making many moves, Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven would gain information about his methods, he would even waste his luck in advance.

Thus, Lu Wei Yin invited Fang Yuan over mainly to deal with the final eventual battle.

Once the final world was formed, Fang Yuan, Star Constellation, and Longevity Heaven might have equal battle strength, they would fight it out for the final fruit in Crazed Demon Cave.

At that time, they would fight for real.

Before that, Lu Wei Yin could still make a move (he was pseudo venerable battle strength only in terms of defense) to try to make Yellow Earth Great World the victor of this war.

This would have significant impact on the final battle.

If Lu Wei Yin could succeed, Fang Yuan would gain the initiative later.

“Even if Yellow Earth Great World cannot win in this battle, we cannot let the other two worlds gain too much of a lead. As long as we defend the Sacred Tomb, during the final battle, Lord Paradise Earth will be able to revive successfully. By then, our battle strength will reign above the other two forces.” Lu Wei Yin explained his meticulously crafted plan to Fang Yuan.

The conclusion was to defend now and counterattack later.

Defending their base initially while stirring conflict in secret, to make Savage Wilderness Great World and Green Lotus Great World fight each other and expend their strength, to make sure the three forces were eventually matched in the end.

At the later stage, after Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable revives, he would gain Fang Yuan’s support and use their superior battle strength to gain victory over the others.

This was a logical arrangement to bide for time, it suited Lu Wei Yin’s nature.

But...

This was not Fang Yuan’s style.

Fang Yuan looked at the kneeling Yellow Earth Gu Immortals before turning to Lu

Wei Yin, smiling: “Taking hits passively is not how I do things. Since we cannot use our top battle strength easily, it means that Heavenly Court is taking advantage of the fact that we lack subordinates.”

“In that case...” Fang Yuan smiled as he looked towards Green Lotus Dao field: “Everyone, come outside.”

Saying so, he opened his immortal aperture’s entrance.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh.

A large number of Gu Immortals flew out.

“We pay respects to master!” Dozens of Gu Immortals greeted at once.

Their voices were thunderously loud, all of the Gu Immortals had evident excitement on their faces.

“The details are listed on the mission board, go.” Fang Yuan waved his hand casually.

Swoosh swoosh!

These Gu Immortals immediately split into two groups, charging towards the two battlefields.

The kneeling Yellow Earth Gu Immortals were dumbfounded.

“How did so many Gu Immortals appear at once!”

“These people seem to be calling that handsome sage master.”

“We are saved, Yellow Earth Great World is saved!”

After the Yellow Earth Gu Immortal reacted, they all relaxed and some even wept in joy.

Not just them, even Lu Wei Yin was shocked.

He had seen Fang Yuan dispatching variant human Gu Immortals all over Southern Border to collect mountains, he also knew that Fang Yuan led the variant human alliance, his force was not small.

But after seeing the main force that Fang Yuan sent out, Lu Wei Yin was filled with shock.

“So many Gu Immortals, they number to over fifty!”

“And from their aura, there are eighteen rank eight Gu Immortals, the rest are all rank seven Gu Immortals.”

“How can there be so many rank eight Gu Immortals?”

“The rank seven Gu Immortals also have surging auras, they are close to the realm of rank eight already.”

“No, there is no way Fang Yuan has zero rank six Gu Immortals, this means that these Gu Immortals are not his entire force?”

“That’s right, Fang Yuan’s clone Wu Shuai has not showed up either.”

As Lu Wei Yin analyzed, the disbelief in his heart intensified.

He also felt worried.

“Did Fang Yuan spend all of his recent time nurturing these subordinates? According to his personality, he should not be this unwise...”

“Also, even though these Gu Immortals are high in number and have high cultivation level, who knows how high their actual battle strength is.”

The ones that Lu Wei Yin was confident in were Xiao He Jian and Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

Front lines.

“Go and die!” Qing Hao Zi killed another Yellow Earth Gu Immortal.

But its injuries were not light either.

It had to temporarily stop its movement and go to Mu Cha Lang.

After Mu Cha Lang’s healing killer move was used, Qing Hao Zi recovered greatly.

“This is all thanks to you, my old friend.” Qing Hao Zi was overjoyed.

Mu Cha Lang said in admiration: “This is all I am skilled at, I feel admiration towards your ability to kill so many people. But don’t be too rash and forget your defense, the final struggle of these Yellow Earth Gu Immortals will not be simple to heal if you get hit.”

“Don’t worry.” Qing Hao Zi raised its bamboo tail: “I will try to kill four people.”

“Hey, you guys should calm down, leave some for me to kill.” Qing Hao Zi called out loudly as it entered the battlefield again.

Right at this time, a group of Gu Immortals flew over from the sky.

They were led by rank eight snowman Gu Immortal, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

He shouted: “We are the subordinates of Yellow Earth Sage, Gu Yue Fang Yuan, we are here to help and kill the Green Lotus Gu Immortals!”

The Gu Immortals were stunned.

The Yellow Earth Gu Immortals who were in deep peril saw hope, they became overjoyed.

The Green Lotus Gu Immortals started to feel their hearts pounding wildly.

It could not be helped.

Together with Mu Cha Lang and Qing Hao Zi, they only had eight people.

But there were over twenty Gu Immortal reinforcements!

Among them, there were nine rank eight Gu Immortals!

On Green Lotus’ side, only Mu Cha Lang, Qing Hao Zi, and Old Forest Moss had rank eight cultivation level.

Weren’t their reinforcements simply too large?!

Mu Cha Lang gritted its teeth, shouting: “Don’t be scared by numbers, who knows what their actual battle strength is!”

The Green Lotus Gu Immortals regained their morale upon hearing this.

That’s right, cultivation level was just part of the battle strength, only by fighting could their true strength be seen.

If they did not even dare to fight and retreated immediately, how would they face the sages on the Sacred Mountain?

The Green Lotus Gu Immortals disregarded the Yellow Earth Gu Immortals, they faced Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s group instead.

Immortal killer move — Snow Avalanche!

Immortal killer move — Crashing Rock Slide!

Immortal killer move — Great Earth Collapse!

Immortal killer move — Refine Life!

Immortal killer move — Multi-layered Five Poisons!

...

Bam Bam Bam Bam...

The Yellow Earth Gu Immortals who were disregarded opened their mouths in shock as they watched.

The moment they fought, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s group erupted with their full strength.

All sorts of killer moves were sent out like fireworks, the commotion was huge, resounding in heaven and earth.

Green Lotus’ group also unleashed killer moves but the quantity was lower, their strength was also largely inferior.

Only after just one round, the Green Lotus Gu Immortals faced a terrible loss.

“Retreat, quickly retreat!” Old Forest Moss shouted.

“How can this be? The other side has so many rank eight Immortal Gu!” Qing Hao Zi shouted.

He had become a rank eight Gu Immortal long ago but he had never obtained a rank eight Immortal Gu, in this life, he had not even seen three rank eight Immortal Gu!

But Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was quite unsatisfied, he scolded: “Don’t launch a barrage like this, it is very wasteful, understand? The moves conflicted with each other, half of it was wasted, only thirty percent landed on the enemies! Find your individual targets and don’t let them escape!”

Even though the first round had huge commotion, a lot of the moves’ strength was wasted.

The outside world was not the sovereign immortal aperture after all.

Thus, the Green Lotus Gu Immortals managed to survive.

But the first round of combat gave them huge gains too.

The Green Lotus Gu Immortals were completely scared and lost their morale, they wanted to retreat now.

But Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s group had advantage in number, they dispersed and encircled the enemies.

Battle resumed.

The Green Lotus Gu Immortals were soon beaten up harshly, they were battered and bruised.

“These Gu Immortals have an absurdly perfect set of Immortal Gu!” Qing Hao Zi shouted.

“We can only focus on one aspect, but all of them have superb healing methods.” Mu Cha Lang said bitterly.

“They have too many killer moves, they are all incredible methods!” Other Gu Immortals shouted.

Fang Yuan’s refinement path attainment was number one in the world, Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven could only look at him in admiration.

After obtaining a vast number of immortal materials from the various grotto-heavens, compared to other forces, Fang Yuan had the highest number of Immortal Gu in the world.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2158: Too Brutal!

Immortal Gu were unique, Immortal Gu were the most fundamental.

After sovereign immortal aperture’s Gu Immortals obtained Immortal Gu, they were also able to easily exchange for corresponding killer moves.

Even though they lost some dao marks, these gains were simply too immense, completely negating the flaw of fewer dao marks.

A moment later, the Green Lotus Gu Immortals ran with all their strength.

Only three rank eights escaped, the rest were all killed by Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s group.

“Without a battlefield killer move, we cannot kill Gu Immortals efficiently.” Bing Yuan sighed.

“Cannot kill efficiently?” The Yellow Earth Gu Immortals looked at the five corpses on the ground, their hearts beating wildly.

“Too timid, too timid!” Shi Zong sighed in pity: “They actually ran away, they are a disgrace to all rank eights!”

The Yellow Earth Gu Immortals looked at each other and transmitted secretly:

"Even if I have rank eight cultivation level, I would have ran away in this situation too?"

"How can we face our master with just these results?" Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch gritted his teeth, making a decision: "Chase, we will pursue and kill them!!"

The Yellow Earth Gu Immortal were shocked, they quickly urged: "Everyone, don't be too rash. There are still a number of Green Lotus rank eight Gu Immortals, they did not join the battle."

"Indeed, we barely managed to win this fight, we should go on the defense instead."

"Green Lotus Great World has many Immortal Gu Houses with terrifying strength, many Gu Immortals were killed on the spot because of their rampage."

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was completely unmoved, he looked at the Yellow Earth Gu Immortals indifferently: "We are the subordinates of Sage Gu Yue Fang Yuan, we only obey his orders. You can all stay and clean up the battlefield."

Be it the Immortal Gu or immortal apertures of these fallen Gu Immortals, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch's group did not take any.

That was Fang Yuan's order.

The Gu Immortals and Immortal Gu that belonged here were part of Limitless Demon Venerable's derivation results.

Killing these Gu Immortals would promote the fusion of the great worlds.

At the same time, in another battlefield.

Xiao He Jian and the rest arrived before Hei Liu Biao and Xue Li Du.

"So many reinforcements!"

"Wonderful, we're saved."

There were only two Yellow Earth Gu Immortals left.

"Be careful, these two are powerful rank eight experts from Savage Wilderness Great World, they are very strong!"

"They are specialized in…"

"Noisy!" Xiao He Jian took charge as the leader, he shouted and interrupted the advice of the Yellow Earth Gu Immortals.

This miniman Gu Immortal's eyes seemed to be glowing red, he pointed at the mountain-like six legged black tiger and shouted: "This guy belongs to me, I will fight anyone who contests with me!"

Roar—!

Hei Liu Biao was triggered: "Tiny little bug, you are going to die, I will kill you, no Gu Immortal had ever treated me with such an attitude!!"

Hei Liu Biao charged in a frenzy towards Xiao He Jian.

The Yellow Earth Gu Immortals were deeply scared and shocked.

“Numbers do not determine everything!” Xue Li Du also smiled coldly, charging into the Gu Immortal group.

Bam Bam Bam Bam…

An array of fireworks erupted, it was a beautiful sight.

Bam.

With a loud sound, Hei Liu Biao crashed onto the ground, creating a huge and deep crater.

It stared with wide eyes, struggling to get up.

Boom!

Xiao He Jian flew like a meteor, charging down.

Behind him were five to six rank eight Gu Immortals, they also attacked.

Bam bam bam bam!

The ground shook intensely, dust clouds rose, almost covering the rays of the sun.

With an intense wind that swept by, the dust clouds were dispersed.

The crater was even deeper now.

Hei Liu Biao was lying at the bottom of the crater, holding onto its last breath, its six tiger claws were twitching.

“I told you guys not to interfere!” Xiao He Jian shouted.

“On what basis?”

“Whoever kills it gets the contribution points!”

The other Gu Immortals shouted in retaliation.

Xiao He Jian rolled his eyes: “We all attacked, so who killed him? Who can be sure of it?”

“Easy, we can split up the contribution points. Whoever gets the largest part of the corpse will get the most points.”

Nobody knew who was the one who suggested this.

But at the very next moment, the rank eight Gu Immortals flew down into the pit, splitting up the corpse of Hei Liu Biao.

“The leg is mine!”

“Hmph, I only got a tail! Give me back the butt.”

“Head, this tiger head, hahaha, it is mine!”

The rank eight Gu Immortals shouted loudly, some were happy while others were dejected.

Those who did not get enough body parts directed their gaze towards snow wing eagle Xue Li Du.

But Xue Li Du had been killed already, it died even earlier than Hei Liu Biao.

The corpse was also completely split up between the Gu Immortals.

The Yellow Earth Gu Immortals watched in a daze.

Too brutal.

Too brutal!

Weren’t these Gu Immortals the subordinates of the sage? Why were they so brutal?

Not only did they kill the Gu Immortal, they even dissected the corpse.

And they were so happy when dissecting the corpse?

Too brutal!

Too vicious!

Yellow Earth Great World was created by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, his ideal was to live in harmony and peace, emphasizing on unity and love. Even though Yellow Earth Great World had its own internal conflicts, the main trend had always been the same.

The action of Fang Yuan’s subordinates was completely the opposite of Yellow Earth Great World, this was a huge contrast to the expectations of these Yellow Earth Gu Immortals.

“There are some Gu Immortals left.” The rank eight Gu Immortals’ eyes flashed.

But those rank seven Gu Immortals quickly shouted: “Before coming here, we already decided that the rank sevens belong to us. You rank eights already took the bulk of the gains, shouldn’t you leave some to us?”

The rank eight Gu Immortals pouted: “Then hurry up, don’t waste time! Otherwise, we will help you out and take a portion of the contribution points…”

“Wishful thinking!” The rank seven Gu Immortals quickly exerted effort and killed all of the Savage Wilderness Great World Gu Immortals in a moment’s time.

“Hahaha, these Gu Immortals are so stupid, none of them ran away.”

“Indeed, I was afraid that we lacked a battlefield killer move and could not stop them from escaping.”

The Gu Immortals started to discuss heatedly.

The two Yellow Earth Gu Immortals looked at each other, they had peculiar expressions.

The Gu Immortals of Savage Wilderness Great World were combat maniacs, their ferocity was always the thing that made Yellow Earth Great World and Green Lotus Great World’s Gu Immortals wary. Savage Wilderness Great World’s Gu Immortals would rather fight to the death than retreat, they were courageous maniacs who did not care about their own lives when they were in combat.

But in the perspective of the sage’s subordinates, they were stupid?

“How much did you snatch?”

“I only got this much.”

“Heh, only? You earned a lot!”

“Hehe, it was all thanks to master who handed out such a lucrative mission.”

The Gu Immortals collated their gains as they tossed away the corpses in their hands.

Fang Yuan had given specific instructions, be it immortal aperture, body, or Immortal Gu, they were all to be thrown away.

These subordinates did not dare to defy him.

Seeing the scattered corpses, the two Yellow Earth Gu Immortals’ eyelids twitched.

If you were going to throw them away, why snatch them with such intensity earlier?

Was it just for fun?

What sort of monsters were these Gu Immortals!

The two Yellow Earth Gu Immortals who had just mustered up courage to express their gratitude instantly lost all motivation to do so.

They breathed in deeply and wanted to speak but suddenly, Xiao He Jian’s group’s expression changed.

“Master sent orders, we need to gather with the other group and attack Green Lotus Great World.”

“Go, let’s go! Don’t let Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s group gain the initiative.”

Swoosh swoosh.

The Gu Immortals left rapidly in a hurry, leaving the two Yellow Earth Gu Immortals who stayed behind with a dazed expression on their faces.

They looked at the Gu Master battlefield that was still fighting (Yellow Earth Gu Masters were already moving forward and pursuing the enemies), they felt completely lost for words.

For some reason, they started to feel pity for the Green Lotus Great World’s Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan watched from afar, capturing the scenes of the two battlefields with his eyes.

After those Gu Immortal corpses landed on the ground, they were quickly absorbed into the world. Immortal apertures disintegrated rapidly, the Gu worms inside faced the same end, there was no winds of assimilation produced, no traces were left at all.

Fang Yuan was not feeling calm internally.

“This is the profundity of refinement path!”

“Except that Limitless Demon Venerable is not refining Immortal Gu, he is refining the entire world.”

“If I want to become venerable on the path of refinement, this is an aspect that I lack as well!”

In his later years, Limitless Demon Venerable wanted to break free from Fate and obtain the way to attain eternal life, but he could not find an answer from Heavenly Court of that time.

Thus, he created Crazed Demon Cave, he decided to use his own method and derive the method of eternal life.

After all, fate Gu was still around back then, completely intact.

The unified great world that was formed in the end might be the result of his plan, it might contain the method of eternal life. And now, the fighting and slaughter of these Gu cultivators became the fuel and sacrifice for this derivation.

After understanding this, Fang Yuan would not take the corpses of these Gu Immortals or their Immortal Gu.

This huge battle between worlds was definitely going to have countless dead Gu cultivators, be it mortal or immortal.

As for how many could survive in the end? Would there be thousands, or just one person?

Nobody knew.

But so what if that was the case?

Be it Fang Yuan, Lu Wei Yin, Heavenly Court, and Longevity Heaven, they did not care about that answer.

They had their own objectives.

The Gu Immortals born here obeyed the orders of their sages, they fought and killed, using their lives and wits to resist the others, they were necessary sacrifices that were determined from the start.

Fang Yuan casted his gaze towards Green Lotus Great World, he saw that his army had gathered and invaded Green Lotus Great World.

“If an outsider Gu Immortal died here, what would happen?” Fang Yuan had a calm gaze as he watched with anticipation.

These Gu Immortals were just his pawns after all!

When it was time to sacrifice them, Fang Yuan would not be stingy to do so.

“But I should prevent unnecessary deaths if possible.” Thinking so, Fang Yuan said to Lu Wei Yin: “Friend Lu, I would like you to go and help out my subordinates. If the situation turns dangerous, your life is the highest priority, you can ignore the rest if necessary.”

Lu Wei Yin nodded and he flew away.

Fang Yuan’s subordinates were so ferocious, Lu Wei Yin was quite pleased and surprised.

At the same time, he agreed with Fang Yuan’s plan.

They were already behind to begin with, having such a large force, they had to work hard and catch up to the rest, to make up for their difference!

Savage Wilderness Great World.

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

Bing Sai Chuan looked at the information path Immortal Gu on the table with a grim expression: “To think that Fang Yuan’s force is so powerful, Hei Liu Biao and Xue Li Du are powerful rank eight experts in Savage Wilderness Great World, they actually died so easily.”

“But now, Fang Yuan’s two groups have gathered to attack Green Lotus Dao field.”

Saying so, Bing Sai Chuan let out a breath of turbid air, feeling emotions of joy and gladness.

He was glad that he did not send reinforcements, because Heavenly Court sent more troops against Fang Yuan, he sent his army to find trouble with them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2159: Fairy Ming Hao

“That’s why I said we should continue with our previous plan, my deduction was not wrong.” Heaven Extremity Gai Mei drank wine and ate snacks while saying shamelessly.

Bing Sai Chuan could not be bothered to retort him, he looked at the rest: “Fang Yuan has such a huge force, it is very unexpected. If he attacks us, we will land in a passive spot. Even though Savage Wilderness Great World has the most Gu Immortals, most of them have their own intentions, they do not obey orders. If we could unify and rule them, we would have been the number one world long ago, suppressing Heavenly Court.”

Heaven Extremity rolled his eyes: “Don’t you know the reason? That Yellow Earth Great World was the arrangement of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable to begin with. Green Lotus Great World is also created by Heavenly Court’s Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable. Meanwhile, Savage Wilderness Great World was made by Reckless Savage Demon Venerable but our lord obtained it, without a proper relationship, how can we convince them?”

Bing Sai Chuan could not help but tap on the table: “Forget about the reason, let’s try to deal with the current problem. Do you guys have any good ideas to recruit those savage Gu Immortals?”

Green Lotus Great World.

Once in a while, an information path Gu worm flew over.

Qin Ding Ling was frowning deeper.

“Fang Yuan’s subordinates are so ferocious, in just half a day, not only did they defeat our main troops, they even invaded and broke three of our defense lines!”

“We’ve already lost close to twenty Gu Immortals, the defeated rank eight Gu Immortals have suffered huge injuries, they came to the mountain to seek an audience with the sage.”

“Oh?” The third seat Fairy Ming Hao showed an expression of curiosity: “As expected of Fang Yuan I guess. To think that he is skilled at nurturing subordinates too.”

After pausing for a moment, Fairy Ming Hao asked in a child-like voice: “This means to say that Longevity Heaven also sent more troops out?”

“Yes.” Qin Ding Ling nodded: “After sensing that Fang Yuan gathered his groups to attack us, Longevity Heaven immediately sent more people to stall Lady Yu Xiu’s group, this might be the scene that Fang Yuan wants to see.”

Fairy Ming Hao laughed heartily: “Since they want to attack us, let them come. Withdraw our defense lines, let them come and attack us.”

“Yes.” Qin Ding Ling immediately ordered and reorganized the troops without a hint of questioning.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian moved unhindered, they charged all the way until the center of Green Lotus Great World, below the Sacred Mountain.

Looking at the mountain, they saw that it had a peculiar appearance.

The entire mountain was black and white, all of the mountain rocks looked like they were drawn with black lines and filled with patches of white paper.

All of the life forms on the mountain were also altered.

They were all white paper people that were drawn with black lines.

A tiny white paper person flew down from the mountain, after leaving the area of the Sacred Mountain, she turned back into flesh and blood, looking like a cute and innocent young girl.

Xiao He Jian and Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch looked at each other, feeling that the situation was not simple.

The latter half of their trip was unhindered, that made them uneasy already.

And after reaching the enemy’s headquarters, they only sent one rank eight Gu Immortal.

This was Heavenly Court!

No matter how weak they became, they had those rank eight Gu Immortals who escaped earlier at least right?

Why did they send a little girl?

Even though Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian had surging momentum, they were already feeling uneasy internally.

This army was mainly made up of people from the two heavens’ grotto-heavens.

They had spent most of their lives hiding in the grotto-heaven, living a life of trepidation and fear, afraid that the five regions’ humans would discover them.

If Fang Yuan did not have such demonic might that suppressed them, and also with the huge increase in their strength and confidence during these few fights, they would not dare to attack with such intensity in their previous state.

“What do we do now?”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian transmitted their thoughts, sending out one person to test the enemy’s strength.

This Gu Immortal was Ke Xin Hong.

He cultivated poison path and was the strongest expert of the mushroomman Gu Immortals.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian did not choose their own members, they chose him instead.

After all, the mushroommen were the last group that joined Fang Yuan, they did not join the current major factions. Thus, as the seniors, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian worked together to target them.

And truthfully, many people were jealous of Ke Xin Hong recently.

He had the most envoy missions, he was almost the sole beneficiary of these missions that could gain huge rewards by just talking.

Many Gu Immortals were jealous.

Ke Xin Hong took in a deep breath, stepping forward and facing Fairy Ming Hao.

Brilliance shined in his eyes, he had soaring fighting spirit.

On one hand, after many envoy missions, he gained a lot of animosity from the rest, he needed to prove himself through combat. On the other hand, he wanted to use this chance to make a huge contribution, to make sure the mushroomman tribe was the number one faction in Fang Yuan’s subordinate force, he would be able to protect his tribesmen in the future.

“Our mushroomman tribe joined master the latest, we are naturally ostracized by the senior members.”

“Even though we want to establish a good relationship with Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian, it seems that master does not want to see that.”

“Why did master give me envoy missions time and again, he might not have planned this from the start, but as time went on, his intentions became increasingly deep.”

“Master has a total of two factions under him, they are the variant humans and the humans. There are fewer humans, forget about them now. There are far more variant humans instead, led by Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian, these two groups are getting larger and more influential, as time passes, they will definitely clash over benefits, because of their large influence, master will not be able to control them easily.”

“Thus, from the start, master did not want us mushroommen to join them. The reason why master gave me envoy missions time and again is to help our mushroomman tribe gain power and sow discord between the variant human forces.”

Ke Xin Hong sighed internally.

The longer he joined Fang Yuan, the more he felt Fang Yuan’s unfathomably deep schemes, as well as his experienced political skills and methods.

Ke Xin Hong had already expected Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian to ostracize him in such situations.

He calmed his mind and collected all his scattered thoughts, he gathered his spirits and looked at the young girl, cupping his fists: “I am Ke Xin Hong, I would like to exchange pointers with you.”

The young girl smiled: “I am Fairy Ming Hao, Ke Xin Hong, I know about you, is your poison path method used like this?”

Saying so, Ming Hao moved her tiny arm as poisonous fluid flew out.

Each lump of yellowish brown poisonous fluid flew into the air and turned into a goose.

Soon, an army of poisonous geese danced around in the sky, changing their formation constantly.

Ke Xin Hong was shook internally: “This is my uniquely created method, why can she use it?”

“Is she also a poison path Gu Immortal?”

“But why can she use my unique method?”

Ke Xin Hong stabilized his mind: “Fairy Ming Hao, that is an amazing method, but this move has a variation move, watch.”

Saying so, Ke Xin Hong used the same poison path killer move.

After the geese were formed, they cried out as poison seeped out wherever their voices reached.

Ming Hao’s eyes shined, she moved her poisonous geese to fight them as she observed carefully.

After a few breaths of time, she smiled and laughed: “So that’s how it is, look, is this how the move works?”

Saying so, she activated Ke Xin Hong’s variation move and caused her own geese group to cry out as well.

“What?!” This time, not only was Ke Xin Hong shocked, even the other subordinates were shook.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian thought to themselves: “This immortal is very strange, she can mimic other people’s killer moves. But she only has rank eight cultivation level, our army is huge, how can we falter to one person?”

The two of them had similar thoughts, they immediately ordered and led the other immortals to get around Ming Hao and attack the Sacred Mountain behind her.

Fairy Ming Hao sighed: “Oh you guys, can’t you play along? Why are you in such a rush?”

Saying so, her aura surged as she resonated with the Sacred Mountain behind her.

Next, the Sacred Mountain made of black lines and white paper shot out profound lights that had countless killer moves flying out of them.

Fang Yuan’s subordinates were busy resisting the attacks.

Bam bam bam…

After an intense clash of killer moves, Fang Yuan's subordinates' attacks were all dealt with.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian showed expressions of shock.

"What killer move is this? It can actually mimic all of the killer moves that we used earlier?!"

"This mountain is not normal, it is not just a famous mountain, it is a secluded domain of heaven and earth!"

"Is this the legendary Book Mountain recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>?"

Fairy Ming Hao chuckled: "This killer move was casually created by me, it uses humility Gu as the core, it is called humble reciprocation. This move can use the information recorded on Book Mountain to deduce and unleash the killer moves that you use. Every killer move that you use is a present for me. Thank you very much."

"Is that really Book Mountain?"

"Humble reciprocation? That is clearly a human path killer move."

Fang Yuan's subordinates were shook internally, they attacked again.

But Fairy Ming Hao unleashed humble reciprocation killer move again, dealing with all of their offenses.

Fang Yuan had many subordinates but they were all stopped by one person.

"Master often told me that a lack of reciprocation is a lack of proper manners. After receiving so many gifts, I should return the favor. Take these." Fairy Ming Hao raised the intensity of her attacks.

The attacks came in waves, they were hard to block.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian had to use their full strength to defend and retreat.

At the crucial moment, a muddy yellowish light shot out and blocked most of the attacks, helping Fang Yuan's subordinates stabilize their footing.

It was Lu Wei Yin who had helped.

Fairy Ming Hao casted her gaze and smiled: "You are the current generation Paradise Earth's inheritor? You finally showed yourself?"

Lu Wei Yin frowned deeply, bowing at Fairy Ming Hao: "Greetings to Fairy Ming Hao, I wonder what is your relationship with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable?"

Fairy Ming Hao blinked cheekily: "Make a guess?"

Saying so, she stretched out her tiny finger and pointed at Lu Wei Yin.

Boom!

A five pointed starlight speck shot out with intense speed, once it was activated, it arrived before Lu Wei Yin.

Lu Wei Yin's expression did not change, he did not dodge either.

The starlight speck arrived before him and got blocked by a yellowish light wall, turning into nothingness.

Lu Wei Yin sensed something from this as he raised his brows, saying with peculiarity: “Carefree Wisdom Heart?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2160 Book Mountain

“You are quite perceptive.” Fairy Ming Hao smiled.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Around her, starlight specks continued to shoot out towards Lu Wei Yin.

Lu Wei Yin flew up against the attack and started to engage in battle.

Initially, he was able to fight evenly with Fairy Ming Hao. But soon, he started to get suppressed.

Fairy Ming Hao only used the flying stars to attack her enemy.

Initially, she shot out the flying stars one by one, but soon, they started to shoot out in groups of three, five, or even ten at once.

The power of her flying stars did not increase, but Lu Wei Yin faced increased pressure when they landed on him!

“These flying stars are very profound, this seems to be an endless consecutive move! I am going to face greater and greater pressure as time passes.” Lu Wei Yin had a grim expression as he felt fatigue in defending himself.

Both sides only fought for some time, Lu Wei Yin had to retreat as he fought, Fairy Ming Hao had the complete advantage.

Each time she waved her hand, a large cloud of fragmented starlight specks flew out.

Each time the stars shot out, their quantity rose, they were already over a hundred in number.

Starlight shined as the stars moved in the air, the sound of air getting pierced was unceasing, it was a dazzling sight.

“This Ming Hao cultivates wisdom path and star path, she definitely has pseudo venerable battle strength. I should retreat for now!” Lu Wei Yin had intentions of retreating.

Fang Yuan also gave out orders to retreat at the appropriate time, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and the rest let out a sigh of relief as they quickly backed out.

Fairy Ming Hao smiled: “You all came here to seek death, why don’t you stay here for good?”

Fairy Ming Hao attacked the immortals.

“Don’t even think about it!” Lu Wei Yin blocked her.

Fairy Ming Hao chuckled, a mysterious light flashed in her eyes, shooting towards Lu Wei Yin’s forehead.

Lu Wei Yin felt an indescribable change in his mind, he only had the capacity to store up half of his original thoughts.

At the same time, when his thoughts moved, they became much faster but each time, they would stop preemptively. It seemed like all of his remaining thoughts became ‘rash’, they collided impatiently, trying to deduce the results more quickly.

Lu Wei Yin fell into a predicament immediately.

When using killer moves, he needed to mobilize thoughts.

The more killer moves he used or the more complex they were, the more thoughts he would need to use.

But now that he had only half his thoughts left, he could not think as easily as before. More importantly, even when these thoughts collided, they would resolve in advance, he could not get the most useful result that he wanted.

This was quite fatal.

Once Lu Wei Yin’s thoughts end preemptively when he activates a killer move, towards the end when he prepares his killer move, it would end up in failure.

With the killer move activation failing, Lu Wei Yin would suffer a heavy backlash himself.

“Such an incredible wisdom path method!!” Lu Wei Yin was helpless, he could only defend himself, he could not care about the rest.

Fairy Ming Hao grasped the absolute advantage, she immediately ordered the rank eight Gu Immortals of the Sacred Mountain to move out and chase after Fang Yuan’s subordinates and kill them.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian retreated with huge losses.

Along the way, they lost nine Gu Immortals, among which three were rank eight Gu Immortals.

The immortal apertures of these Gu Immortals landed on the ground and got absorbed by Green Lotus Great World, their Immortal Gu were also quickly dissolved.

When the Gu Immortals died, their obsession was left behind but Fang Yuan did not see the birth of any land spirit or heavenly spirit.

After Fang Yuan’s subordinates returned to Yellow Earth Great World, Fairy Ming Hao judged the situation and stopped her advances.

Lu Wei Yin led the immortals to meet Fang Yuan, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian quickly knelt down and sought for forgiveness.

But Fang Yuan consoled them amicably: “This loss is not your fault. I could tell clearly that this Fairy Ming Hao had outstanding strength, she possesses pseudo venerable battle strength. To think that this place could nurture an expert of such a level.”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and the rest were relieved, they started to calm down.

While retreating, they were all worried that Fang Yuan would be enraged and kill them all to vent his anger.

After that, Fang Yuan sent out these Gu Immortals to be stationed at all the various defense lines of Yellow Earth Great World. The emphasis of their defense was on the boundary and connection points of Yellow Earth Great World and the two other great worlds, Green Lotus Great World, and Savage Wilderness Great World.

“I am ashamed. To think that Heavenly Court actually has such a female immortal, she possesses an incredible combat system, I am not her match.” Lu Wei Yin said with an expression of guilt.

Fang Yuan also consoled him.

Fang Yuan knew that Lu Wei Yin had already used his full strength at this point.

After all, in the previous fight, he had worked with Lu Wei Yin to fight against Spectral Soul and Heavenly Court, it was a near death situation, during that time, Lu Wei Yin had no way of concealing his strength if he wanted to live.

When fighting against Fairy Ming Hao, Lu Wei Yin had already used all of the methods that Fang Yuan knew he had. Yet, he was still not the enemy’s match.

“Since this is war, there will be sacrifices. Maybe in the future, you and I might lose our lives too. This is the world of the Gu Immortals, we do not need to harp on it.” Fang Yuan was quite satisfied with this result.

The conclusion was that Fang Yuan’s losses were smaller than Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven. This was considered a victory.

Furthermore, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian even forced someone like Fairy Ming Hao to take action, Fang Yuan gained useful information about her.

Fang Yuan nurtured Gu Immortals for the purpose of sacrificing them to begin with.

If these cannon fodder could display their value, it would not be his loss.

“The biggest pity is that Lord Fang Yuan lost many Immortal Gu.” Lu Wei Yin added: “But now, Northern Plains’ Paradise Earth true inheritance is right before us, lord might have something to gain from it.”

Lu Wei Yin was referring to Paradise Earth’s Sacred Tomb.

Even without his explanation, when Fang Yuan sent him on this mission, he had already done his investigations.

“The tomb of Paradise Earth contains extraordinary profundity, I have not gotten any useful leads yet.”

Fang Yuan said frankly before asking: “Do you know anything?”

Lu Wei Yin smiled bitterly: “I am ashamed, I know nothing about it.”

Fang Yuan nodded and said: “The wisdom path killer move that hit you earlier was the key that resulted in your loss, what do you think about it?”

This wisdom path killer move was too powerful, since it was exposed already, Fang Yuan wanted to create a counter for it.

Lu Wei Yin thought about it and said with uncertainty: ‘It seems that the core Immortal Gu of that move is… pride Gu?”

Fang Yuan nodded again: “That is what I deduced as well.”

Lu Wei Yin took in a deep breath of cold air: “Fairy Ming Hao is not a simple person. She possesses the Carefree Wisdom Heart Physique, she also has humility Gu and pride Gu, this reminds me of the description within <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.”

“According to what I know, there is no such person in the history of Heavenly Court, and she seems to have a deep connection with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.”

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, chapter five, section thirty-five states —

Ren Zu and Great Strength True Martial went through great hurdles and finally arrived before Qian Kun Crystal Wall.

Qian Kun Crystal Wall was straight and stood upright in the void, it was like a huge mirror that reflected everything that happened in the world.

Ren Zu and Great Strength True Martial went inside Qian Kun Crystal Wall.

Numerous flowers, birds, fish and insects converged into a colorful dazzling shadow that filled Great Strength True Martial’s vision. The sound of the waves, thunder, and birds’ singing in his ears rippled together, there was a fresh, sweet, exciting, spicy taste dancing on his tongue. At times, he felt like he was walking on a steep mountain path, at other times he felt like he was swimming in the waves, and at other times he felt as if he was falling from a great height.

“Father, father! Where are you?” Great Strength True Martial shouted.

But Ren Zu could not hear Great Strength True Martial, he could not see Great Strength True Martial, the color of white filled his vision, it was boundless and vast.

“Oh son, where are you?” Ren Zu sprinted, wanting to find Great Strength True Martial.

Ren Zu ran and ran and ran, after a long time, he saw a black dot at the furthest point within his vision.

Initially, he felt happy and thought it was Great Strength True Martial. But when he approached the black dot, he found that it was actually a huge mountain.

This mountain was very special, the mountain rocks and vegetation were made of white paper, the streams and waterfalls were made of black ink.

This was Book Mountain.

At the foot of Book Mountain, there was a village with many inkmen living in it.

Ren Zu went into the village, causing a huge commotion to arise.

“This is really a rare sight.” The inkman spoke: “When ordinary lifeforms enter

Qian Kun Crystal Wall, they would get lost after a few steps, they cannot resist the allure of the material world or the countless temptations within it, they can never reach here. You are the first person to arrive here.”

Ren Zu was confused: “Why so?”

The inkman elder replied: “Oh human, you are only left with a skeleton, you cannot see, hear, taste, smell, or touch, it allowed you to roam Qian Kun Crystal Wall freely without losing your life.”

Qian Kun Crystal Wall existed when the world was first created, it reflected everyone and everything, it contained all the secrets of the world’s past and present. Once a person enters it, they would face the barrage of endless information, after some time, they would die from information overload.

After Ren Zu heard this, he felt very worried about Great Strength True Martial, he asked the inkman elder about the way to survive, the elder thus brought Ren Zu to ascend the mountain.

On Book Mountain, there was a largest ink waterfall, and below it was a deep pool.

The inkmen called this pool literature spring.

The ink waterfall continued to flow as it landed on the literature spring, water splashed about. These black color splashes flew in the air as the water droplets formed into ink texts.

“If a person wants to continue living in Qian Kun Crystal Wall, the ink text will be your best helper. The reason why we inkmen can live here is also because of the ink text.” The inkman elder told Ren Zu about this big secret.

Ren Zu received the inkman’s advice, he collected a lot of ink texts and left the mountain.

Every time he walked for some distance, he would leave behind some ink texts as reference points.

In this vast world of whiteness, the pitch black ink text became very conspicuous. Even though ink texts faded over time, using them, Ren Zu no longer walked on unnecessary trails, he eventually found Great Strength True Martial.

Great Strength True Martial received Ren Zu’s ink texts, every step he walked, he would leave behind some ink texts.

The ink texts recorded the information that barraged Great Strength True Martial, turning them all into pieces of literary work. These literary pieces turned into pieces of tiles that were layered below Great Strength True Martial’s feet.

Great Strength True Martial was finally free, his eyes were not blurry, his ears were not buzzing, he could no longer smell the mix of countless fragrances as well.

Stepping on these tiles, he followed Ren Zu back to the inkman village.

Ren Zu asked the inkman elder again: “Oh elder, how can I find wisdom Gu inside Qian Kun Crystal Wall?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2161 Carefree Wisdom Heart

“The inkman elder told Ren Zu: "Even though wisdom Gu often stays within Qian Kun Crystal Wall, it is hidden very deeply. To find it, you will need to venture deep into the crystal wall, it will not be possible with just ink texts and the tiles that are formed below your feet. These tiles only record all sorts of information on the superficial level, with the endless barrage of other information the limited ink texts within the tiles will change in content, they will disappear quickly and cannot last for long."

The inkman elder said again: "Oh human, you need to turn all the information into knowledge. Only with knowledge can you explain information clearly, you will be able to write them down in words, ”

“allowing you to create a real path instead of just tiles made of texts."

Ren Zu was troubled: "How can I turn them into knowledge?"

The inkman elder laughed: "There are many bookworms on Book Mountain, they record the knowledge that our inkman seniors have left behind. Oh human, you can go look at them."

"It is not difficult to gather the knowledge yourself either. Firstly, you need memory Gu to store all of this information inside your mind. Next..."

Before the inkman finished his words, cognition Gu appeared, saying to Ren Zu: "After that, I can help you to refine knowledge."

The inkman elder nodded with a smile: "Indeed, cognition can produce knowledge."

Ren Zu: "Then I will thank you all in advance.”

“The inkman elder shook his head: "No need to stand on ceremony."

Cognition Gu: "Don’t say that human. We have always been good friends, and this situation benefits myself as well."

If cognition did not take in new information, it would quickly get outdated. Only by receiving new information and thinking about it could cognition create useful new thoughts that were healthy and vibrant, innovative and lively.

Ren Zu gathered many bookworms on Book Mountain, he obtained a lot of new information.

Next, with cognition Gu’s help, he created many new knowledge from the vast amount of information.

He used ink texts to write down his knowledge, scattering them on the ground and creating a black path made of ink texts.

Ren Zu and Great Strength True Martial walked on this path, they walked for a long time, far longer than any of their previous trips.

"Oh no, I don’t have enough knowledge left." Ren Zu walked to the end of the path, feeling very dejected and upset. He had gathered many ink texts but the knowledge in his mind was insufficient already.

Ren Zu and Great Strength True Martial’s first attempt failed, they had to return to Book Mountain.

Great Strength True Martial continued to collect ink texts while Ren Zu gathered all the bookworms, with cognition Gu’s help, he refined even more knowledge from them.

With more and more knowledge, Ren Zu found that his mind was getting filled up.

“I have too much knowledge now." Ren Zu was very satisfied, he said confidently: "Let’s go, I am sure we can reach the deepest part of Qian Kun Crystal Wall this time!"

However, they still failed in their second attempt.

"Why did this happen? My mind was already filled with knowledge." Ren Zu said dejected: "This is all the knowledge I can hold."

"No, oh human, look closely again." Self Gu suddenly spoke to remind him.

Ren Zu inspected his mind, he found a Gu hiding inside it.

Ren Zu realized at once: "So you are occupying my mind, preventing me from getting more knowledge. What Gu are you?"

The Gu answered: "I am pride Gu."

Ren Zu said anxiously: "Can you hurry and get out, you are occupying such a huge area, I want to fill the place with knowledge instead."

But no matter how anxious Ren Zu was, or how he urged, pride Gu refused to leave.

When Ren Zu was out of ideas, Great Strength True Martial spoke: "Oh father, don’t be anxious. Don’t forget that I still have humility Gu. I will give it to you."

Great Strength True Martial took out humility Gu and gave it to Ren Zu.

Pride Gu was chased away by humility Gu, it had to fly out of Ren Zu’s mind and land on Great Strength True Martial instead.

Strong Gu was very happy: "The strong have their own pride!"

After Ren Zu chased pride Gu away from his mind, he returned to Book Mountain to continue gaining knowledge.

“After Ren Zu gained humility Gu, he realized that the more knowledge he had, the more he found ”

that he was lacking knowledge, and the more he wanted to fill his mind with even more knowledge.

Ren Zu’s mind was quickly filled.

Self Gu urged him: "Oh human, stop now, your mind is already full of knowledge."

But Ren Zu replied: "But I think that it is insufficient, I am certain that I still do not know a lot of things, I need to continue gaining knowledge."

Ren Zu continued to refine his knowledge, his mind was getting bloated, it was hurting and could not hold anymore information, but humility Gu made him feel like he was still lacking in knowledge.

Suddenly, there was a loud boom.

Eventually, Ren Zu’s mind could not take it anymore, it exploded from an overload of knowledge.”

The knowledge scattered on the ground as a little girl stood up from within.

"Father, father." The little girl hugged Ren Zu’s leg happily: "My name is Carefree Wisdom Heart, I am your daughter."

...

Northern Plains.

Sincerity grassland.

Chen Cheng was dressed in green, his arms were crossed behind his back as he stood arrogantly upright.

He stared at the foreign female immortal before him as he shouted: "Who are you? Why did you request to meet me here?"

The female immortal standing before him wore a half-mask covered her nose, mouth and cheeks, only revealing the upper half of her face which ”

showed her strong contours, sharp and long brows, bright eyes and a heroic aura.

She wore a dark gold armor that covered her whole body, bringing a heavy feeling of suppression on any that looked at it, she was definitely not an ordinary person.

"You can address me as Fairy Black Moon." This female immortal said.

"Fairy Black Moon?" Chen Cheng raised his brows: "Where are you from?"

Now that the five regions were merged, Gu Immortals no longer had region specific auras, that was why Chen Cheng asked the question.”

Fairy Black Moon smiled lightly: "My identity and origin are not important. Chen Cheng, you are called the Sincerity Immortal, you cultivate rule path. Back then, you had an agreement with your friend, the loser in the battle would recognize the winner as their owner and assist them. Do you remember this?"

Chen Cheng’s pupils shrank as he frowned: "I was young and arrogant then, I did not know what that truly meant, that was why the agreement was made. I was still a mere Gu Master back then, who are you exactly? You know such an obscure secret!"

Fairy Black Moon smiled coldly: "I’m only asking you, Chen Cheng, is this agreement still effective?"

Saying so, she took out a token.

Chen Cheng received it as his expression changed again: "This token is real, where did you get it? What relationship do you have with my friend?"

Fairy Black Moon said again: "I said these are not important."

Chen Cheng took a deep breath, he said with a solemn expression: "I understand now, you want us to have a fight, if you win, you will make me your servant! Since you took the initiative to find me, I am sure you are confident in your own strength. But I need to remind you, even though I am a lone cultivator, after roaming Northern Plains for so many years, I have gathered many trump cards. If you win this battle, I will acknowledge you as my master. But if you lose, I will be your master!"

Fairy Black Moon laughed heartily: "Everyone calls you the Sincerity Immortal, someone who keeps his words and promises. After meeting you, it seems that this is true after all. Let’s fight!"

Chen Cheng was furious: "Regardless of who you are, today, I will see what you are capable of!"

At the next moment, thunder rumbled as the battle of two immortals ensued.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

He Chun Qiu was taking charge of Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool.

Splash splash splash.

The water of time moved erratically, creating the mesmerizing sound of waves.

A rank eight Immortal Gu was quickly forming, landing in He Chun Qiu’s hands.

"Good, all of the destroyed rank eight Immortal Gu have been refined successfully." He Chun Qiu nodded, feeling satisfied about the progress.

Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool had the ability of Regret Pool, any Immortal Gu that it refined would have an insignia left behind. When the Immortal Gu is destroyed, Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool would use the power of the tributary of the River of Time together with the insignia to refine the Immortal Gu again, the success rate would be higher than refining a new rank eight Immortal Gu normally!

When Fairy Ming Hao forced Fang Yuan’s subordinates to retreat earlier, Lu Wei Yin expressed his pity over the destroyed Immortal Gu.

But he did not know that Fang Yuan’s refinement path methods were unimaginably powerful, in just a few days, he refined all three rank eight Immortal Gu that were destroyed in that battle.

But Fang Yuan was still not satisfied with his current refinement path attainment.

Several days had passed since Ming Hao defeated Lu Wei Yin and the rest.

These days, the three worlds were quiet and safe, battle had stopped, there was temporary peace.

Since it was not time for the actual fight yet, Fang Yuan used this time to comprehend the profundity of the place.

He had already investigated Paradise Earth’s tomb, there were countless dao marks distributed in it, the structure was complex and profound, the scale was immense, he could not unravel it in a short time.

Fang Yuan spent most of his energy on the countless big and small worlds here, trying to comprehend the refinement path profundity that they contained.

"Sage, Savage Wilderness Great World’s envoy seeks your audience." At this time, a Yellow Earth Gu Immortal reported respectfully.

"It’s Bing Sai Chuan." Lu Wei Yin came over as well, bringing accurate information with him.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly: "It is about time they came here."

Earlier, the loss of Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian was actually part of Fang Yuan’s scheme.

Even though Heavenly Court lost to him before, Fang Yuan had never underestimated their foundation.

Heavenly Court placed a huge focus on Crazed Demon Cave, they even brought Divine Emperor City over, how could Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian defeat Heavenly Court?

With the current situation, even though Longevity Heaven, Heavenly Court, and Fang Yuan had one of the three great worlds each, Heavenly Court was still the dominant party.

The three sides were contesting but there was still the strongest and weakest side among them.

Together with Bing Sai Chuan taking the initiative to cooperate with Fang Yuan during the fate war, after Lu Wei Yin and the rest returned in defeat, Fang Yuan waited patiently for Bing Sai Chuan’s envoy to come.

It was just that Bing Sai Chuan, one of the Four Desolation Immortals, actually came here personally.

It showed Longevity Heaven’s sincerity right away.

"Friend Fang Yuan, have you been well?" Bing Sai Chuan smiled.

But Fang Yuan’s expression was cold: "I am working together with Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable to help him revive. Bing Sai Chuan, it is really unwise that your Longevity Heaven wants to cooperate with us. After all, when the time is ripe and Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable revives, our strength will rise sharply, we can even suppress Heavenly Court."

"This..." Bing Sai Chuan’s expression froze immediately.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2162: Cooperating Once Again

The purpose of Bing Sai Chuan’s visit was obvious, he wanted to work with Fang Yuan and resist Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan did not want to waste time, he directly stated the obstruction towards their cooperation instead.

Paradise Earth’s tomb was huge as a mountain, Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court knew about it long ago.

The reason why they attacked Yellow Earth Great World earlier was also because of this.

Bing Sai Chuan was a rank eight expert renowned in history after all, he laughed, the stiffness on his face vanished at once: “Fang Yuan, do you know where this Book Mountain originates from?”

Fang Yuan had a thought: “Book Mountain is not originally an arrangement of Heavenly Court?”

Bing Sai Chuan nodded: “Indeed, that is so. Book Mountain was originally in the ninth layer of Crazed Demon Cave, but because of Heavenly Court’s immense foundation in wisdom path, they comprehended a portion of the profundity and took out Book Mountain from the ninth layer in advance.”

“Oh?” Fang Yuan did not acknowledge nor reject the answer.

But Lu Wei Yin’s expression changed.

This was something that the Gu Immortals of Yellow Earth Great World did not know of.

After all, it happened deep within Green Lotus Great World.

“Heavenly Court has such a method? They have already started comprehending the ninth layer and even managed to bring out Book Mountain? Did Limitless Demon Venerable’s retaliative method not activate?”

Bing Sai Chuan sighed deeply: “If it worked, we would not have come here so urgently to seek an alliance.”

Fang Yuan replied in a solemn tone: “Did you see Star Constellation Immortal Venerable?”

Bing Sai Chuan shook his head: “Not even once.”

Fang Yuan asked again: “Then what is the relationship between Fairy Ming Hao and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable?”

Bing Sai Chuan replied honestly: “Since the arrangement of Limitless Demon Venerable exists, until the right opportunity arises, we will not use our full strength, thus, we did not force Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to show herself. But Heavenly Court had three female immortals that appeared, they all possess pseudo venerable battle strength, Fairy Ming Hao is one of them.”

“These three female immortals are Ming Hao, Yu Xiu, and Feng Ya respectively, they cultivate wisdom path with star path secondarily. Your side has already seen Fairy Ming Hao’s strength, Fairy Yu Xiu is stronger than her, days ago when we fought, our side had to send reinforcements to stall them and form a stalemate.”

“As for Fairy Feng Ya, she seems to be even stronger but she has never taken action, she has been secluded in Crazed Demon Cave to comprehend the ninth layer profundity. Book Mountain is the fruit of her labor.”

Lu Wei Yin could not help but sigh: “Heavenly Court is the number one force in the world after all, their foundation is unfathomably deep. After Duke Long died, they lacked pseudo venerable battle strength, but to think that three of them were hidden in Crazed Demon Cave! This shows the importance Heavenly Court is placing on Crazed Demon Cave.”

Bing Sai Chuan added: “Other than these three pseudo venerables, there are also rank eight elites like Qin Ding Ling. In addition, regarding the forces they have out in the open, there are Divine Emperor City, Demon Judgment Board, and Heaven Overseeing Tower. With Heavenly Court’s foundation, it will not be strange for them to bring out more Immortal Gu Houses.”

Lu Wei Yin gritted his teeth: “Heavenly Court even transferred a portion of the immortal graveyard into Crazed Demon Cave, this immortal graveyard was created here by using the Tomb Earth they collected. At the crucial moment, the immortal graveyard’s slumbering experts in history would awaken, they have terrifying strength too.”

“Precisely so.” Bing Sai Chuan concluded: “Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin, both our sides need to cooperate. Otherwise, how can we force Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to show up? How can we defeat three pseudo venerables? How can we ensure the revival of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable?”

Bing Sai Chuan’s intention was obvious.

Heavenly Court’s advantage was too great, if they were not stopped in time, even before Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable revives, Heavenly Court would have won already!

Thus, there was a need for them to work together.

Lu Wei Yin looked at Fang Yuan, who nodded slightly, agreeing to this cooperation.

Longevity Heaven seemed to have no fear regarding Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s revival, they were very confident in themselves, their trump cards were definitely not few. But currently, with Heavenly Court in the lead, they had to do something to slow them down.

Savage Wilderness Great World and Yellow Earth Great World stopped fighting between themselves, they sent out troops to attack Green Lotus Great World together.

Even though there was cooperation with Longevity Heaven, the extent was quite limited.

Fang Yuan suggested that they should exchange true inheritances. He wanted to use venerable true inheritances of equal value to exchange for Longevity Heaven’s luck path true inheritance of Giant Sun.

Bing Sai Chuan rejected him with a polite tone but his attitude was firm.

Fang Yuan also suggested that they should exchange immortal materials. He wanted rank nine luck path immortal materials but Bing Sai Chuan rejected him as well.

Fang Yuan’s force had already inflated to this level, when he sent out his subordinates earlier, even Bing Sai Chuan was completely stunned from their collective strength.

Bing Sai Chuan and the rest had a strong opinion against Spectral Soul and Red Lotus! To help Fang Yuan destroy fate Gu, they had truly given him too much help.

In just these few days, Fang Yuan’s force had already grown to this terrifying level!

And what about his own strength?

How much had he grown until now?

In this situation, how could Longevity Heaven make a transaction with Fang Yuan? Wouldn’t that be helping his growth?!

Due to the cooperation of Fang Yuan and Longevity Heaven, the situation changed greatly.

But Heavenly Court seemed to have predicted this, even though the two sides attacked with their full strength, they were still defending themselves firmly.

At times, when the defensive lines were about to break, Fairy Ming Hao and Yu Xiu would take action personally, either maintaining Heavenly Court’s position by forcing enemy Gu Immortals to retreat, or using the battle opportunity to invade Savage Wilderness Great World and Yellow Earth Great World instead, causing huge destruction and countless deaths.

Fang Yuan also saw Fairy Yu Xiu’s strength for the first time.

Fairy Yu Xiu had an exceptional combat system. Her attacking methods were very special, they relied on the difference between the two sides’ attainment level. The bigger the difference, the stronger the attacks.

Ever since the first time they reached the base of Book Mountain, Fang Yuan’s subordinates made no such advancement again.

Like this, the three sides fought with each other, the situation was in a deadlock, days went by one by one.

A large number of Gu cultivators died, their sacrifice made the three worlds grow larger with an increasing number of stable dao marks. The more Gu cultivators died in this place, the more the boundaries of the three great worlds faded, and the larger the area which the worlds were connected to became.

On this day, at the peak of Book Mountain.

Fairy Yu Xiu gathered the Heavenly Court immortals, she spoke: “Right now, Fang Yuan and Longevity Heaven have cooperated, this is giving us huge pressure. Our immortal graveyard has a backup hidden force but Fang Yuan’s Wu Shuai clone has not shown up yet, Longevity Heaven is also hiding their strength.”

“Since the situation is now in a deadlock with all three sides wary of each other, the small worlds around the three great worlds will be the key to our victory.”

“These small worlds might be weak but they still have Gu Immortals. If we can get them to join us, we will gain an advantage in the fight between the three forces.”

During this time, Fang Yuan and Longevity Heaven cooperated, managing to suppress Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court was losing more and more members.

Zhou Xiong Xin sighed: “These small worlds are easy to defend but hard to attack, even though we tried many times and are able to win by force, very few Gu Immortals decided to join us sincerely.”

Prince Feng Xian added: “These Gu Immortal inhabitants lack sufficient intelligence, they are very stubborn as well, most of them bear animosity towards the three great worlds. They think that fusing their world into the great worlds would cause the destruction of their homeland, they hold a firm attitude.”

“Thus,” Fairy Yu Xiu smiled: “I will hold a lesson at the peak of Book Mountain to teach the countless masses. Any Gu cultivator, mortal or immortal, can join this session.”

“How will you do that?” Wan Zi Hong asked.

Fairy Yu Xiu explained the details, Heavenly Court’s immortals had changes of expressions.

“Lady Yu Xiu has such an incredible method? We are truly in admiration!”

“In that case, we will not have to worry about these Gu cultivators not joining us sincerely.”

“These lowly Gu cultivators actually have such a great fortune to be able to get a Dao lesson from Lady Yu Xiu, this is too good for them.”

“Haha, they are all just cannon fodder, they will be sacrificed in the end, there is no harm in doing this.”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals discussed among themselves, the atmosphere slowly became relaxed.

Divine Emperor City.

Qi howling painting world.

A group of beggars stood around Fang Di Chang, facing a huge elephant.

The huge elephant was pure white in color, its four legs stomped on the ground, it was unmoving like a sturdy mountain.

The beggars were in a stalemate for a long time, their morale was falling, they started to feel like they could not resist this huge elephant.

Fang Di Chang was frowning deeply: “This qi monster is made from righteous qi, the longer we fight it, the more disadvantageous it is for us.”

Qi monsters had all sorts of shapes and sizes they were not fixed, they could be made from all kinds of qi, having varying temperament and strength.

For example, qi monsters made of domination qi would be domineering, qi monsters made from death qi would love to be in places filled with many deaths. Qi monsters made of life qi would have strong recovery abilities, while qi monsters made from luck qi would be hard to kill, once they were killed, the benefits to the Gu cultivator would not be small.

Even though Fang Di Chang was Fang Yuan’s clone and shared his attainment level, he had lost his body and soul. With just his will left, he resided within the human path beggar Gu.

Thus, he could not resist this white elephant made of righteous qi.

But thankfully, the righteous qi white elephant was not rampaging, it did not make a move in the end, only staring at the beggars.

“I have arrived!” Shen Shang finally fought his way to them.

After finishing off his earlier opponent quickly, he came to help out Fang Di

Chang.

He fought against a group of blood qi monsters earlier, he was bathed in blood.

Fang Di Chang immediately sighed in relief as he made the beggars fall back and let Shen Shang in.

Shen Shang fought against the white elephant using human path methods.

This rank eight Gu Immortal was indeed the human path quasi-supreme grandmaster chosen by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, he quickly gained the upper hand.

But right when he was about to finish off the elephant, the ground started to shake.

Rumble…

About ten thousand bull shaped qi monsters stampeded together while creating huge dust clouds behind them.

Shen Shang and Fang Di Chang's expressions changed.

The righteous qi elephant screeched in fear as it escaped in panic.

Shen Shang did not bother with it, he grabbed Fang Di Chang and quickly ran in another direction.

The stampede of countless bulls was like a tsunami that swept heaven and earth, it could not be stopped.

Shen Shang and Fang Di Chang managed to escape with their lives, they watched as the bulls charged away.

"These qi monsters are made of charging bull qi, but isn't the size of the group too big, who can block it?" Shen Shang sighed.

Fang Di Chang replied: "The bulls are running towards the closest camp. Who knows how many will die, but that camp is going to end up in ruins."

Shen Shang nodded: "Indeed, once the camp is destroyed, we can only retreat to another camp further back. Our exploration will get tougher."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2163: Endless Learning

The two of them had deduced something earlier, thus they worked together and explored deeper into qi howling painting world, in order to find and communicate with Heavenly Court's enemy at the depths of the painting.

The enemy of an enemy was a friend.

But even after Shen Shang and Fang Di Chang did their best, they could not reach the deepest part of the painting.

Qi howling painting world was too huge, Fang Di Chang’s strength was at a limit, even though Shen Shang had rank eight cultivation level, it was severely restricted in here, the difference between mortal and immortal was not evident.

The only good thing was that Shen Shang’s illness was greatly alleviated here. Ever since he entered the painting world, he had not relapsed again.

According to Shen Shang’s estimations, the dense human path environment here was helping him.

“Sigh, the ten children of human path have left. Without their help, how can we get through this painting and meet the one suppressed at the deepest part of the painting?” Fang Di Chang sighed.

Shen Shang was about to speak when his expression changed suddenly, he shouted: “This is?!”

Next, Fang Di Chang also sensed the aura of a rank eight Immortal Gu rapidly spreading towards him.

The two no longer cared about qi howling painting world, they quickly returned to the central area of the original painting world.

The two of them saw a rank eight Immortal Gu at the same time, it was floated in the air, shining with radiance.

“Divine Emperor City is truly deep, it actually contains this legendary Immortal Gu!”

“If I am not wrong, this should be the learning Gu recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>!!”

The two conversed, seeing the shock on each other’s expressions.

“Learning Gu is a human path Immortal Gu, this is likely the highest ranked human path Immortal Gu in the current world.” Fang Di Chang sighed.

“I get it now!” Shen Shang’s eyes suddenly shined with bright light: “Why did beast tamers and qi cultivators appear earlier? It was the result of this learning Gu’s effect. Of course, this should not be the only Gu used, it is likely a killer move. Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had such grand ambitions, his arrangements were truly deep.”

Fang Di Chang frowned: “But why did this learning Gu activate on its own now? Did something happen in the outside world?”

Shen Shang was troubled, he did not know about the situation outside.

But he quickly reacted: “This is a prime opportunity! Learning Gu must be one of the cores of Divine Emperor City, regardless of what is going on outside that caused this core to be used alone, at this point, Divine Emperor City’s intact structure has a crack in it, we can find this weakness and make use of it!”

“Good idea!” Fang Di Chang’s pupils expanded as he looked at Shen Shang excitedly: “Let us work together and explore the secret of Divine Emperor City.”

At the same time.

Crazed Demon Cave.

Eighth layer.

Green Lotus Dao field, above Book Mountain.

Fairy Yu Xiu sat at the peak of Book Mountain, within her immortal aperture, Divine Emperor City’s learning Gu spread out its radiance, cooperating with Fairy Yu Xiu’s other Immortal Gu to form a human path killer move —

Endless Learning!

At the middle and bottom of Book Mountain, there were countless Gu cultivators.

The killer move’s radiance was light blue in color, it spread down and covered all of these Gu cultivators.

Their bodies shook intensely.

“This is?!”

The immortals’ expressions changed, they were filled with deep shock.

An indescribable profundity of the Great Dao flowed into the depths of their hearts like a gentle river.

The attainment levels of these immortals started to rise!

“There is actually such an incredible killer move in this world, if I am not experiencing this personally, I will not be able to imagine it!”

“This is the teaching of the sage, the sage is merciful and benevolent!”

Many Gu Immortals were so touched they shed tears on the spot, others knelt down on the ground, kowtowing to Fairy Yu Xiu at the peak of the mountain.

These were all non-standard Gu Immortals, but they were receiving the most traditional Gu cultivation method now.

They were all clear about how hard it was to raise attainment levels!

This was truly an unprecedented fortuitous encounter for them!

“In this world, there are indeed other methods to raise attainment level other than dream realms. Human path… Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had already made his arrangements to this degree. It is definitely not wrong for Heavenly Court to develop human path!” Qin Ding Ling was very excited internally.

Heavenly Court’s members, with her at the lead, sat down together and closed their eyes to comprehend calmly.

Fairy Yu Xiu opened her eyes slightly, looking down below her with a glance.

Sweat had gathered on her forehead, all the thoughts in her mind were used to sustain this move.

Endless learning was a human path method of strategical value, its benefit for any super force was huge beyond imagination.

Its greatest advantage was that it did not expend the user’s true meaning, it created true meaning in the mind of the targets instead!

Rule path and wisdom path Gu Immortals were more adept at extracting their own true meaning compared to other paths.

When other Gu cultivators take the true meaning, their attainment levels of the corresponding path would rise sharply.

But the Gu cultivator who extracted their true meaning would experience a fall in attainment level, the losses could not be regained.

This was why true meaning was so rare in the world.

Endless learning was a killer move that made use of Fairy Yu Xiu’s attainment level, the secluded domain of heaven and earth Book Mountain, as well as learning Gu.

This move could create new true meaning in the mind of the targets.

Once the true meaning was created, it would be instantly absorbed by the Gu cultivator and cause their relevant attainment level to rise.

This was the greatest advantage of the killer move endless learning, it did not consume anyone’s attainment level.

But at the same time, this advantage was also its weakness.

Because the true meaning created by the killer move had limitations.

The limitations were the Gu cultivator themselves.

The Gu cultivator’s aptitude, talent, comprehension and personal experiences were conditions that restricted their production of true meaning.

Attainment level profundity of the same level would vary across the different people who were comprehending them. If one reached their limit and could not comprehend the profundity, they would start to develop illusions.

As expected, not long after, Gu cultivators on Book Mountain started to see illusions.

Some of them saw surging golden lotuses, some saw azure rain, some saw surging bloody water, some saw bone forests, or rainbow colored phoenixes that growled loudly.

“I, I can’t persevere anymore!” A moment later, someone spat out blood and fainted.

More and more people followed.

But some Gu cultivators were still enduring.

With this, the talent, personal experiences and comprehension of the Gu cultivators were also clearly distinguished.

But by the time, those among Qin Ding Ling’s group started to waver as sweat appeared on their foreheads, about ninety percent of Green Lotus Dao field’s native Gu Immortals had already fallen.

“Even if these natives become Gu Immortals, they are still inferior to humans, who have the highest natural talent and intelligence.” Fairy Yu Xiu nodded to herself.

After some observation, she had already gained a clear understanding of the strengths and weaknesses of the Gu Immortals from Green Lotus Dao field.

When Qin Ding Ling and the rest started to waver, the other Gu cultivators on the mountain had already fainted.

Bai Cang Shui fainted, Zhou Xiong Xin also fainted, followed by Jun Shen Guang.

Eventually, only three Heavenly Court members were left.

They were Qin Ding Ling, Che Wei, and Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

“Brother?” Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s eyes were filled with blood, he grunted before fainting.

Thereafter, Qin Ding Ling smiled bitterly as she lost consciousness as well.

Che Wei lasted until the end.

Fairy Yu Xiu nodded to herself: “As expected of the creator of weapon path. Hmm? I actually misjudged.”

Fairy Yu Xiu’s expression suddenly changed as she shifted her gaze from Che Wei to a meteor at the bottom of the mountain.

This meteor was large as an elephant, it was also a Gu Immortal.

Earlier, it had fallen into a state of semi-unconsciousness. Even Fairy Yu Xiu did not expect that a certain strength would gather within the rock.

At this point, the mystical strength reached its limit, there was a qualitative change occurring.

Rumble!

With a thunderous sound, the meteor shattered as golden light shined in all directions.

From the piercing and blinding light, a rock monkey flew out.

The rock monkey landed on the ground and scratched its ears, shouting: “Brilliant, truly brilliant!”

Plop.

At the other end, Che Wei could no longer endure it, he fainted on the spot.

Fairy Yu Xiu’s expression became even more peculiar: “This rock monkey is born from heaven and earth, it is extraordinary. It even has incredible talent surpassing Che Wei. With such potential, it will definitely reach great heights in the future!”

“Amazing, amazing.”

“What a pity, what a pity.”

Fairy Yu Xiu sighed continuously.

She was referring to Limitless Demon Venerable when she said ‘amazing’.

Limitless Demon Venerable created Crazed Demon Cave, the derivation of new heaven path dao marks went on for over a million years, the results were huge. This rock monkey was the proof of it!

This rock monkey’s potential and comprehension ability even surpassed Heavenly Court’s members, it defeated Che Wei!

If this rock monkey was nurtured well and grew successfully, it might create its own path in the future.

But this rock monkey was destined to have a pitiful ending, it could not live for long.

It was meant to be Limitless Demon Venerable’s sacrifice!

Even Heavenly Court could not let it off.

Because it was not a pure human.

This was also why Fairy Yu Xiu said ‘what a pity’.

The rock monkey lasted for a few more minutes before falling on the ground, unconscious.

Fairy Yu Xiu stopped using the killer move, she started to rest.

Even though she did not consume her attainment level, the price of using this move was quite high. Be they thoughts, immortal essence, or her own lifespan, they were expended.

Not long after, the Gu Immortals started to wake up.

They started to cheer, unable to control themselves.

Their attainment levels had all risen, the problems that they faced normally with killer moves or incomplete Immortal Gu recipes were all resolvable now.

Many Gu Immortals even had new ideas regarding the modification of their current killer moves.

“Thank you, sage, for imparting the Dao to us!”

“Sage has unsurpassed virtue for imparting the Dao to us!”

The Gu Immortals knelt on the ground of their own will.

Fairy Yu Xiu smiled, her voice spreading throughout Book Mountain, before spreading to the entire Green Lotus World: “Three days later, I will hold another session to impart the Dao on Book Mountain again.”

The immortals were stunned, at the next moment, a thunderous cheer resounded.

Three days later, not only on Book Mountain itself, even a large number of Gu Masters gathered near the base of Book Mountain.

Gu Masters could only surround Book Mountain but not ascend it, on the mountain base and the sides, many new Gu Immortals showed up.

These Gu Immortals came from various small worlds, hearing that a sage was imparting the Dao on Book Mountain, they came of their own accord to benefit from it.

Fairy Yu Xiu used endless learning again.

As illusions started to show up, everyone saw different sights.

“I can see many flowers!”

“So many pig heads are flying in the sky…”

“Fairy, don’t run, you can’t escape from me! Hehehe…”

“That rascal is dead meat, I’m telling you, even a Gu Immortal cannot save him!”

“The man of my dreams is an unparalleled hero who will come and marry me while riding on a rainbow cloud, even though I am also a man.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2164: Ant Poison Appears Again

All sorts of illusions appeared.

Soon, the Gu Masters outside of the mountain quickly fell unconscious one by one.

Next, the ones on the mountain, those Gu Immortals who had attended the previous session also fainted in succession.

During the first session, they had already reached their limits. After just three days, the growth of their foundation was very limited.

Even Heavenly Court’s members were no exception.

After them were the various mutant Gu Immortals of the small worlds. They had deep foundations and this was their first time attending the Dao lesson.

“Hmm?” Fairy Yu Xiu expressed her surprise again.

Among these mutant Gu Immortals, she found another genius this time.

It was a lump of deep green colored tornado, it persevered until the end. The aptitude and comprehension ability it displayed was equally matched with the rock monkey.

When this tornado Gu Immortal fell unconscious, Fairy Yu Xiu also stopped using her killer move.

By the time they awakened, she announced again: Three days later, the next session will be held.

For the third Dao lesson, even more Gu Immortals came.

Not only the mutants of the various small worlds, even Savage Wilderness Great World’s and Yellow Earth Great World’s Gu Immortals came.

Eventually, the one who lasted until the end was a lizard Gu Immortal.

This immortal came from Savage Wilderness Great World, its aptitude was on par with the rock monkey and tornado, they were extraordinarily talented.

Fairy Yu Xiu conducted three Dao lessons in total, the influence was not just kept in the three great worlds, it even spread to the remaining small worlds. Not only the small worlds at the boundaries of the three great worlds, but even many other small worlds that were currently being drawn to the central area.

Fairy Yu Xiu achieved her goal, the effect was evident.

Their impression on the various Gu Immortals of Green Lotus Grand World improved greatly, many Gu Immortals chose to join them.

Yu Xiu chose three leaders from among them, they were the rock monkey Bu Tian Kong, the tornado immortal Nie Kuang Feng, and finally, the lizard Gu Immortal from Savage Wilderness Great World, Duan Hu.

But a large number of Gu Immortals still chose to watch on the fence.

These Gu Immortals mostly came from small worlds, their worlds were still moving now, they had not landed near the three great worlds yet.

“Since this change occurred in the void, the unification of the worlds cannot be avoided, we need to find a good allegiance!”

“Indeed, we are all rulers of our small world, we can influence where we end up in to a certain extent.”

“Green Lotus Great World’s sage gave a Dao lesson, I wonder if the other two worlds’ sages will do the same?”

Unavoidably, these Gu Immortals started to hold expectations.

A capable person will often choose to find a capable leader.

Even though they were native Gu Immortals that were not human, they had ample intelligence and were quite astute.

From Fairy Yu Xiu’s Dao lessons, they sensed that she was trying to recruit them.

The three great worlds were in heated conflict, the amount of losses was huge and severe, it was the stage for them to shine on.

They even started to spread the word.

“If the other two great worlds do not give such a benefit, we will join Green Lotus Great World!”

“The three great worlds have existed for so long, Green Lotus Great World’s sage imparted wisdom on everyone, they are truly magnanimous and benevolent. I am sure that the other two worlds’ sages are the same.”

“We will join whichever world gives the greatest benefits.”

These Gu Immortals wanted to gain the most benefits for themselves.

As for which world they would end up joining?

Haha, they can decide that after getting the benefits!

The situation changed abruptly, Lu Wei Yin quickly went to Fang Yuan for a discussion.

Lu Wei Yin sighed: “Currently, Heavenly Court has the initiative again, after cooperating with Longevity Heaven, we managed to destabilize Heavenly Court’s advantage over us, but with Fairy Yu Xiu’s Dao lessons, all our efforts ended up in vain. But thankfully, the situation is salvageable, how should we go on to recruit those Gu Immortals who are still on the fence?”

Fang Yuan was silent.

These mutant Gu Immortals who were still roaming around were top tier cannon fodder, Heavenly Court’s recruitment of them was a great move.

Fairy Yu Xiu’s method also expanded Fang Yuan’s horizons.

“Learning Gu… endless learning…”

Other than the dream realm, this was the first time Fang Yuan saw a killer move capable of directly raising attainment levels.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, he had no recollection of such a killer move.

From what he gathered and from Lu Wei Yin’s information, there was no warning or hint that such a killer move existed.

This meant that the killer move was likely a new creation of Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court had deep foundation and countless elites who progressed and developed with time.

Lu Wei Yin looked at Fang Yuan as he said: “This killer move is extraordinary, it can raise the power of an entire force. Attainment level is very hard to raise, even I am slightly moved by Heavenly Court’s offer. There is also something more worrying, within <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, there are records that Ren Zu and the other two went into Primordial Domain using true meaning.”

“Heavenly Court possesses the killer move endless learning, this means that they have a method of creating true meaning that is unique in this world. This method might allow them to enter Primordial Domain earlier than others, or even like Book Mountain, they might be able to obtain Primordial Domain from the ninth layer!”

Fang Yuan nodded slightly.

Lu Wei Yin was very astute, all of his words made sense.

Primordial Domain was the key factor in the conflict of the three parties, even if a venerable revives successfully, to become a true Dao Lord again, they need to rely on Primordial Domain.

One could say that whoever obtains Primordial Domain first would gain the greatest advantage, they would become the eventual winner of this fight!

Fang Yuan pondered: “Endless learning is truly incredible and useful, but we also have a strategic level killer move ourselves. I have already used it.”

Lu Wei Yin’s expression turned to joy as he guessed: “That lingering poisonous ant plague killer move?”

Fang Yuan nodded while adding: “I used this move in Eastern Sea before, let’s see how Heavenly Court deals with it. Other than that, we need to keep an eye on Longevity Heaven, I am quite curious about their following actions.”

Lu Wei Yin thought about it and added: “Lord, since you have already used lingering poisonous ant plague, we should take the initiative to attack and exert pressure, when Heavenly Court is busy dealing with it, they will not have the time or energy to resist this move.”

Fang Yuan had already shut his eyes: “You can go handle this matter. I want to deduce the Paradise Earth true inheritance here.”

Lu Wei Yin immediately took his leave, his best idea was to communicate with Longevity Heaven and attack in unison.

After getting Lu Wei Yin’s invitation, Longevity Heaven did not hesitate, they cooperated smoothly.

The truth was, their pressure was higher.

Many Gu Immortals defected from Savage Wilderness Great World to Green Lotus Great World, even more than Yellow Earth Great World. The most famous among them was Duan Hu.

This rank eight expert was very famous in Savage Wilderness Great World, with him taking the lead to join Heavenly Court, the influence on Longevity Heaven was dire.

Days later, Longevity Heaven and Fang Yuan sent out their troops again to attack Green Lotus Great World.

In the sky, Gu Immortals fought intensely.

“Kill!” Golden Fur Immortal Monarch held two large hammers on both hands as he attacked aggressively.

He was covered in thick golden fur, he had many Immortal Gu and killer moves, allowing his defense to be tight, he had no worries about charging forward.

The formation of Heavenly Court’s mutant Gu Immortals were disrupted many times because of him.

“Don’t be too arrogant.” A child-like wood path Gu Immortal with grass growing on his head gritted his teeth as he blocked Golden Fur Immortal Monarch.

Golden Fur Immortal Monarch’s advancement was halted, he fought against this immortal.

After dozens of rounds, there was no clear victor.

“Hmph!”

“I am Grass Head Child, I was born with an Immortal Gu, I am blessed with great fortune.”

“You have Immortal Gu, but my Immortal Gu are also not fewer than yours!”

This wood path Gu Immortal shouted with a confident disposition.

Suddenly, his expression became distorted as his body started twisting around.

“So itchy!” Suddenly, Grass Head Child could not endure the intense feeling.

Wave of ants crawled out of his body, piercing his grass skin.

“What is going on? What are these things!” Grass Head Child was shocked, he quickly retreated.

“Hahaha, where are you going!” Golden Fur Immortal Monarch saw the chance and chased relentlessly.

Grass Head Child was hit by the killer move lingering poisonous ant plague, he was greatly distracted and lost his momentum, after several rounds, he was smashed into pulp by Golden Fur Immortal Monarch’s hammer, dying on the spot.

Similar scenes were occurring to the other mutant Gu Immortals.

With the activation of lingering poisonous ant plague, the situation was immediately changed.

Originally, Heavenly Court had many mutant Gu Immortals, they were able to enter a deadlock with Fang Yuan’s subordinates who were better equipped, but now that their immortal apertures were getting attacked, they lost all their morale, they had no will to fight.

“Run!”

“Why are there ants on my body as well?”

“Don’t kill me, I surrender!”

The formation collapsed entirely, Fang Yuan’s subordinates chased after them and obtained great results.

“This is the outcome for siding with Green Lotus Great World!”

“All the Gu Immortals who sided with them faced the judgment of lingering poisonous ant plague.”

“Kill all the captives, our master has given orders, we will not accept them!”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and the rest cheered loudly, resounding in the entire battlefield.

They worked with another group from Longevity Heaven, making great advances and forcing Heavenly Court’s mutant Gu Immortals to run in fear, unable to retaliate.

The defeated mutant Gu Immortals found that they could not resolve lingering poisonous ant plague killer move, they had to rush to Book Mountain and kneel towards the peak, requesting for the sage’s help.

At the peak of Book Mountain.

Qin Ding Ling frowned: “Fang Yuan used that move after all! If we cannot resolve it, our great advantage is going to be lost entirely.”

Many of the mutant Gu Immortals were still watching in anticipation.

If Green Lotus Great World was too weak, even if the benefits were huge, they would not join them.

After all, great benefits were pointless unless one had sufficient lifespan to enjoy them.

At this moment, Fairy Yu Xiu defended Book Mountain while Fairy Ming Hao went to the front lines, preventing Longevity Heaven’s troops from causing any more trouble.

Fairy Yu Xiu was also quite troubled: “You have already given us the information of this lingering poisonous ant plague killer move. This is quite an impressive move, it contains poison path, enslavement path, refinement path, wood path, food path, and even heaven path profundity.”

“It contains heaven path profundity?” Qin Ding Ling was deeply shocked: “No wonder Eastern Sea’s Righteous Qi Alliance can only alleviate the effects of this move but not remove it completely!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2165: Operation of Heaven and Earth

Peak of Book Mountain.

Regarding Fang Yuan’s lingering poisonous ant plague, Fairy Yu Xiu explained: “Thankfully, this move had already been used in Eastern Sea before, you also made Zui Xian Weng infiltrate Righteous Qi Alliance and obtained first-hand information about it. Thus, I am prepared against it.”

“But the current lingering poisonous ant plague has been modified by Fang Yuan. My original method isn’t going to be suitable, I need to modify it as well.”

Qin Ding Ling heard this as her expression eased up slightly: “That will be good.”

Fairy Yu Xiu smiled: “I only need three days to succeed. During this period, Heavenly Court can spread the news regarding lingering poisonous ant plague to everyone.”

Qin Ding Ling acknowledged and left.

Not long after, the mutant Gu Immortals learned of the situation, they became very angry.

“Yellow Earth Great World’s sage is truly too vicious!”

“I’ve heard that Yellow Earth Great World’s Gu Immortals are united and harmonious. To think that their sage is such a vicious person, this is really a huge disappointment to everyone.”

“In comparison, Green Lotus Great World’s sage is really magnanimous, they have the disposition of a sage. Even Savage Wilderness Great World’s sage pales in comparison.”

The observing Gu Immortals were very disappointed. They waited for so long but neither Longevity Heaven nor Fang Yuan gave the response that they wanted.

They gained nothing from waiting, Yellow Earth Great World and Savage Wilderness Great World directly sent their troops and started the war!

These mutant Gu Immortals were very disappointed, but they also started to get angrier.

“The sages of these two great worlds are acting like this, are they not afraid that we will join Green Lotus Great World?”

“Hmph, the sages of these two worlds are too high and mighty.”

“Forget it, I will join Green Lotus Great World instead!”

All of the observing mutant Gu Immortals chose to join Heavenly Court.

“Heavenly Court’s wisdom path method is quite formidable. The emotions of these mutant Gu Immortals were influenced, according to what I know, many Gu Immortals made the decision to join Heavenly Court in a spurt of anger.” Lu Wei Yin sighed as he explained to Fang Yuan.

Heavenly Court first spread information of Fang Yuan’s vicious method before helping the mutant Gu Immortals resolve their lingering poisonous ant plague without asking for compensation, finally, they even used a method to influence the emotions of these mutant Gu Immortals.

After this series of actions, not only did they alleviate lingering poisonous ant plague’s terrifying effect, they even retaliated and caused Fang Yuan and Longevity Heaven’s position to be worse than before.

“Currently, Heavenly Court has recruited many mutant Gu Immortals, their advantage in numbers is increasingly evident. Should we recall our troops at the front lines?” Lu Wei Yin asked.

Fang Yuan smiled as he waved his hand: “Heavenly Court is formidable, according to my deduction, this mysterious wisdom path killer move contains heaven path profundity too, it is similar to heaven’s will and has the ability to influence the thoughts and emotions of living beings.”

“Lingering poisonous ant plague has been troubling the Righteous Qi Alliance but Heavenly Court managed to resolve this move so easily.”

“In fact, I even modified this move once again.”

“However, Longevity Heaven is taking action now, let’s watch and see before making a decision.”

Gu Tou Luan was one of the mutant Gu Immortals who joined Heavenly Court.

After making the agreement with Heavenly Court, she traveled through the void and returned to her small world.

Using several days, she set up an immortal formation.

This immortal formation was Heavenly Court’s reinforcement, after activating it, it could influence the travel route of the small world, allowing it to land on the boundary of Green Lotus Great World.

“Green Lotus Great World’s sage is truly unfathomable. This immortal formation is amazing and has huge power but the expended immortal essence is so little.”

Gu Tou Luan praised internally as she activated the immortal formation.

The immortal formation burst out with profound light, spreading from the inside to the outside of the small world.

The small world had always been moving towards the center of the void, but under the effect of the immortal formation, it started to change its trajectory slightly.

“Hmm?!” After several breaths of time, Gu Tou Luan’s expression turned to shock.

“What is going on? I activated the immortal formation but the small world is uncontrollable, it is forcefully moving towards another direction!”

“Is the immortal formation ineffective?”

Gu Tou Luan quickly checked and was shocked to find out: It was not that the immortal formation was useless, but a profound force had been influencing her small world from long ago.

Compared to this vast force, the immortal formation had no strength to counter it.

Gu Tou Luan could only watch as her homeland flew and landed on the boundary of Savage Wilderness Great World.

This was not a unique situation, many small worlds were influenced and landed on Savage Wilderness Great World, while others were still on their way.

Gu Tou Luan and the other mutant Gu Immortals were stunned.

They joined Green Lotus Great World, but their own small worlds ended up in Savage Wilderness Great World, they would definitely be absorbed by Savage Wilderness Great World and fuse into it.

“This is the method of Savage Wilderness Great World’s sage!”

“Unbelievable, that sage already took action long ago. He is actually able to attract all the small worlds.”

“Only those small worlds at the periphery were spared.”

“What do we do?”

Many Gu Immortals were starting to feel regret. Had they known this, they would not have joined Green Lotus Great World so quickly.

Peak of Book Mountain.

“This is Giant Sun’s heaven and earth luck method.” Qin Ding Ling sighed: “Fate is fixed while luck is a variable. Longevity Heaven disregarded the cost and brought Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace here, they have already started to influence the heaven and earth luck of the eighth layer of Crazed Demon Cave. Thus, these small worlds were all drawn to them.”

“It is a venerable method after all.” Fairy Yu Xiu sighed. Even though they could understand Longevity Heaven’s method, they had no way of resolving it.

Not only because Longevity Heaven was superior to Heavenly Court in terms of luck path methods.

But because this method was used by Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, to resolve it, they had to destroy the palace.

And Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace had been hiding deep within Savage Wilderness Great World, now that pseudo venerables could not use their full strength, who could reach it and destroy it?

Heavenly Court had no answer, they could only sit and wait.

This way, Heavenly Court gathered most of the mutant Gu Immortals, they had advantage in numbers. Longevity Heaven obtained most of the small worlds, Savage Wilderness Great World was growing and expanding rapidly.

Only Fang Yuan’s side was the weakest, during this period, not only did they not recruit many mutant Gu Immortals, they also failed to get many small worlds.

Heavenly Court started to instruct the mutant Gu Immortals to retaliate, the front lines that went deep into Green Lotus Great World started to be pushed away outwards again.

Gu Masters gathered into armies, fighting and killing all over the battlefield.

Immortals fought in the air, it was an intense battle.

Rock monkey Bu Tian Kong roamed unhindered, with a sudden roar, it vanished on the spot.

“This move again!” Bing Zhuo’s eyelids were twitching, he quickly looked around him: “Where? Where will he show up?!”

But Bu Tian Kong did not attack Bing Zhuo, it teleported behind Shi Zong instead.

“Take my fist!” Bu Tian Kong shouted.

Shi Zong quickly defended himself but his defensive killer move was quickly broken through.

Bu Tian Kong’s fist pierced Shi Zong’s chest, protruding out of his back.

Bu Tian Kong snickered, its body shook as a killer move was activated, Shi Zong exploded and shattered into pieces that flew everywhere.

Shi Zong and Bing Zhuo were rank eight Gu Immortals, while Bu Tian Kong also had rank eight cultivation level, to think that he managed to kill Shi Zong while going up against two opponents.

“No matter what formation this is, I will send it flying!” At the other end, Nie Kuang Feng, who was inside the Rotting Smell Vicious Cloud formation, shouted.

The six eggman Gu Immortals from Rotten Egg grotto-heaven formed into the ancient battle formation Rotting Smell Vicious Cloud as they trapped Nie Kuang Feng for some time, at this point, they were unable to hold on anymore as the latter broke out from within.

The six eggman Gu Immortals spat out blood in response, they were either dead or injured.

And on another battlefield.

Duan Hu fought against Lu Tong Lan.

Lu Tong Lan was the Desolate Extremity of the Eight Extremities, but she actually fell into a disadvantage.

Duan Hu’s attacks were powerful and wild, its body was tough like a mountain, when colliding, it felt like one was colliding with the world itself, Lu Tong Lan’s blue phoenix totem killer move was almost destroyed in the fight.

“These three immortals were born with immense innate luck, they are the luck children of Crazed Demon Cave’s eighth layer. Originally, Yellow Earth Great World should have produced such an expert too, it is a pity…”

Fang Yuan understood the reason behind these three immortals’ existence, he casted his gaze at Paradise Earth’s tomb.

Using luck inspection killer move, he saw that this Paradise Earth’s tomb had immense luck that resembled a yellow soil mountain, it was unmoving and incredibly dense.

These days, with their losses at the front lines, many of Fang Yuan's subordinates also died.

But Fang Yuan remained calm as ice, these fatalities were just numbers to him.

The longer this dragged on, the more advantageous it was for him.

Fang Yuan had already comprehended a lot of the profundities regarding Paradise Earth's tomb, in the past he did not have the ability to create his own Tomb Earth, but now, he could create a huge graveyard in the sovereign immortal aperture to act as a node of the earth vein.

Most of Fang Yuan's time and energy were spent comprehending the refinement path profundity here.

Ordinary Gu Immortals refined Immortal Gu, while Limitless Demon Venerable refined the worlds of heaven and earth.

This gap in refinement path was now quickly filled up by Fang Yuan, he was even gaining huge results from it.

At the same time, Fang Yuan gained a deeper and clearer understanding of Limitless Demon Venerable's arrangements.

"It is time." Fang Yuan muttered lightly, he gazed afar with his deep abyss-like eyes.

Crack!

A shocking flash of lightning landed on the battlefield.

The immortals on the battlefield were shocked.

In an instant, lightning bolts crashed down like a forest, the immortals had to stop and retreat immediately.

Thereafter, tribulations of various intensity rained down like a torrent, occurring to all three great worlds and their boundaries.

At the peak of Book Mountain, Qin Ding Ling was shocked: "What is going on?"

After making some deductions, Fairy Yu Xiu explained confidently: "This is Limitless Demon Venerable's method, so it turns out that when the fusion of worlds reach a certain stage, tribulations will befall."

At the same time, Fang Yuan's gaze focused on these tribulations that were extremely far away.

Waves of comprehension emerged in the depth of his mind.

"All tribulations are superb methods in refining heaven and earth."

"Gu Immortals manage their immortal aperture, under normal circumstances, their main source of dao marks come from tribulations."

"When Gu Immortals successfully pass a tribulation, they would gain a large number of dao marks. These dao marks will modify the immortal aperture and cause the environment to change, this is the refinement of heaven and earth."

By expanding this logic, all tribulations were refinement path methods.

Fang Yuan smiled lightly.

At this point, the refinement path profundity regarding the refinement of the world and heaven and earth had already been comprehended by him to a large extent.

“Earlier, my luck gave me an indication. Now is the time to use that move.”

Fang Yuan started to activate heaven’s envy Immortal Gu!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2166: Heaven Envies Heroic Geniuses

The sky was in chaos, Gu Immortals fought intensely everywhere.

Wild winds blew, wind blades shot all over the place.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch paused for a moment, his body was surrounded by wind blades from all directions.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s square face was covered in frost, he snorted coldly, he shot out immense crystal frost qi that destroyed all the wind blades.

But at the next moment, Nie Kuang Feng suddenly arrived right before him.

Nie Kuang Feng was a green tornado to begin with, it condensed into a ball and burst out with a terrifying suction force!

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch wanted to dodge but it was too late, he was trapped by the tornado, unable to escape for the moment.

“Oh no!” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s expression changed.

It was too late to use extreme ice crystal light immortal suppression coffin now.

Normally speaking, the stronger the killer move, the longer the time needed to use it. When fighting against Nie Kuang Feng, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch could not find the time or opportunity to use this move.

At the crucial moment, this move could no longer be used. During a deadlock, using this move would expose weaknesses for the enemy to exploit. Even if he used it, with the enemy on guard, the effect would not be decisive either.

“Hehehe, this is my signature killer move — Wind Suction Life Twister! I spent thirty years to painstakingly create it, before spending a hundred years to modify it. Nobody has ever survived against this move, you will be no exception.”

Nie Kuang Feng laughed wildly.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s expression was grim, it was too late to dodge now, he could only activate his defensive killer moves desperately.

“Ahh—!”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch cried out in pain.

First, his arms were absorbed into Nie Kuang Feng’s body, even though they were covered in thick ice crystals, they only lasted for a few moments before disintegrating.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s arms were directly shredded into particles!

Next was Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s body.

“I am finished.” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch felt despair at this moment, but suddenly, a bolt of black lightning shot down.

Nie Kuang Feng was directly hit and suffered a huge blow, its suction force stopped for a moment.

The speed of Nie Kuang Feng’s wind ball tornado fell greatly, within the green wind, there was a large area of black ink-like color that got corrupted.

“Damn it, tribulations appeared again.” Nie Kuang Feng gritted its teeth.

Since several days ago, tribulations started to occur at all corners of the various great worlds.

Especially places with more Gu Immortals, they would encounter more tribulations.

Now that there were many Gu Immortals fighting intensely on the battlefield, it was not strange to have many tribulations occurring here.

Nie Kuang Feng’s attention was drawn to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch again: “Die!”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch tried his best to break free but he could not get away from Nie Kuang Feng’s suction force, he was pulled into Nie Kuang Feng’s body inch by inch.

“I am finished!” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch felt despair at this moment once again, but suddenly, a bolt of black lightning shot down.

Crack, the black lightning bolt landed on Nie Kuang Feng.

Nie Kuang Feng froze again, the black color in the green wind tornado became denser.

“This tribulation is so strong, it can actually cause such injuries to me.” Nie Kuang Feng sighed, growling at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch: “But you cannot escape, your life is mine!”

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was sucked into the tornado again.

“It seems that my life is really going to end here.” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch sighed again, but at this moment, a bolt of black lightning shot down on Nie Kuang Feng.

Nie Kuang Feng’s movements froze, the tornado twisted and almost seemed like it would explode!

“What happened?”

“What is going on with this tribulation?!”

“Why did it hit me three times in a row? I am so close to Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch yet it did not even hit him once?”

“Is his luck that good? I don’t believe it!”

“I’ll suck him in with me!”

Crack.

Black lightning shot down, landing on Nie Kuang Feng.

Nie Kuang Feng refused to believe its luck: “I’ll do it again.”

Crack.

“I do not believe it, I’ll draw him in!”

Crack, crack, crack!

Nie Kuang Feng could not take it anymore.

As black lightning bolts continued to shoot down, they landed on his head without any deviation.

Nie Kuang Feng’s body almost collapsed, it could not draw in Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch anymore.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch took the chance to retreat, quickly getting away from Nie Kuang Feng.

“I actually survived? What in the world is going on?” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch was lucky to survive, he was filled with disbelief and surprise.

Far away, black lightning continued to land on Nie Kuang Feng.

No matter where Nie Kuang Feng went, black lightning seemed to target it specifically.

No, not only black lightning, soon, tribulations like blood dragons and grey spirits also went to approach Nie Kuang Feng.

Nie Kuang Feng was going crazy, at this moment, it felt like the entire world was going against it!

Of course, tribulations also landed on other Gu Immortals, but Nie Kuang Feng experienced the most animosity from these tribulations.

While Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch healed himself, he observed and found another person who faced the same situation as Nie Kuang Feng.

It was rock monkey Bu Tian Kong!

This unlucky monkey was currently fighting against several rank eight Gu Immortals like Solid Rock Warrior.

Countless bats and white flying cranes attacked him, disrupting the rock monkey’s attacks and causing it to lose momentum.

Even though Solid Rock Warrior and the rest were also affected by the tribulations, they were less targeted and found an opportunity to retaliate fiercely.

The rock monkey was very troubled, in this situation, it could only turn from offensive to defensive.

Peak of Book Mountain.

“What is going on?” Qin Ding Ling stood up, her expression had changed.

Book Mountain was an information path secluded domain of heaven and earth, because of Heavenly Court’s method, it had been collecting the information of the two battlefields.

Thus, even though Qin Ding Ling stayed at the headquarters, she quickly observed many of the changes in the battlefields.

Currently, Heavenly Court’s troops had already moved into Savage Wilderness Great World and Yellow Earth Great World.

The tribulations in Savage Wilderness Great World were quite low regardless of strength or quantity.

Green Lotus Great World had an ordinary number of tribulations.

But Yellow Earth Great World was clearly abnormal, not only were they more severe, they even targeted Nie Kuang Feng and Bu Tian Kong.

“What is going on here?” Qin Ding Ling was uncertain and shocked.

Fairy Yu Xiu had started her deduction long ago, after getting the result, she said: “Amazing move, this should be Fang Yuan’s work. This mysterious killer move can actually amplify calamities and tribulations of heaven and earth, prioritizing the targets that have the most outstanding aptitude and talent.”

“Nie Kuang Feng and Bu Tian Kong represent the small worlds and Green Lotus Great World respectively, they are two of those who have the greatest innate luck among all the inhabitants of Crazed Demon Cave’s eighth layer.”

“Thus, they were targeted specifically!”

“Hmm?” Saying this, Fairy Yu Xiu’s expression suddenly changed: “This killer move’s range is increasing rapidly, it has already arrived here.”

“Oh no.” Qin Ding Ling’s expression changed yet again as she raised her head to look up.

Above Book Mountain, tribulation clouds rumbled, covering the entire sky with endless thick layers of over ten thousand li of space!

“The tribulations are still intensifying, what is going on?” Qin Ding Ling gritted her teeth, even someone like her felt a terrifying might from the tribulation clouds above her.

Fairy Yu Xiu’s expression was grim: “This tribulation is targeting Fairy Feng Ya. She possesses talent Gu, she has been in closed cultivation to deduce Limitless Demon Venerable’s arrangement to the best of her abilities.”

When wisdom path Gu Immortals made deductions, they were also exposing themselves.

Thus, heaven and earth detected Fairy Feng Ya’s existence, it started to create a tribulation to exterminate her!

“Fang Yuan’s mysterious killer move actually makes use of Limitless Demon Venerable’s arrangement to attack our Heavenly Court, he is really vicious.” Qin Ding Ling said in anger: “Lady Yu Xiu, please allow me to bring Divine Emperor City to the front lines and find trouble with Fang Yuan so that he cannot use this move casually.”

“No. That is exactly what Fang Yuan wants to see.” Fairy Yu Xiu shook her head and said with a firm attitude: “The key now is to protect Fairy Feng Ya. We will gather our formation and resist the tribulation, we will give Fairy Feng Ya the most optimal environment to make deductions.”

At almost the same time, in Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun also sensed Fang Yuan’s method, he praised in amazement: “This method contains heaven path profundity, it is truly out of my expectations that Fang Yuan seems to be cultivating heaven path! I wonder what the name of this move is?”

“Hmph!” Desolate Extremity Jiao Huo said in displeasure: “Fang Yuan has already allied with us, yet he is using this move on our Savage Wilderness Great World as well, causing our subordinates to face its effects too.”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun smiled lightly: “When we made the alliance agreement, he had already considered this, thus he used the loophole and is not breaking our alliance. After all, this move is mainly targeting the Gu Immortal Duan Hu.”

“But our Gu Immortals are being weakened by the tribulation, that is the truth.” Jiao Huo said.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun nodded, his gaze turning deeper: “He is forcing me to take action. Hahaha, very interesting, then I shall make my move to deal with this method.”

“Master!” All the Gu Immortals in the hall shouted in concern.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun waved his hand: “Don’t worry, the fate war has ended for a long time already, my strength has been recovering steadily. Moreover, I am taking action now not just to deal with Fang Yuan’s killer move but also to participate in the operations of the worlds, I want to observe Limitless Demon Venerable’s arrangements more deeply.”

At the next moment, Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace shot out with a beam of light soaring to the sky, it was grand and powerful, shining in golden radiance.

“Very good, Longevity Heaven took action already.” Fang Yuan soon sensed the commotion at Savage Wilderness Great World.

He looked over there, his gaze crossing a huge distance as he analyzed Savage Wilderness Great World.

“Longevity Heaven had a trump card indeed.”

“At this moment, Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace activated and surged with luck path aura. This effect mixed into the operations of the worlds, combining with Limitless Demon Venerable’s arrangements to hasten the fusion of the small worlds.”

“No, there is also the method of all living beings luck in use.”

“Longevity Heaven’s subordinate mutant Gu Immortals are being taken care of, they are facing less pressure from the tribulations now.”

Fang Yuan observed for some time and gained great insights.

At his current level, he could already gain comprehension of other paths using his own as a foundation. Right now, by just observing a move from Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, Fang Yuan could deduce a lot of the profundity of all living beings luck and heaven and earth luck.

The move that Fang Yuan activated was called heaven envies heroic geniuses, it used heaven’s envy Immortal Gu as the core and targeted those people with outstanding talents.

Originally, Fang Yuan wanted to use this move on venerables, but now, it was unleashed at a superb timing, it complemented Limitless Demon Venerable’s arrangements and used his power to allow this move to spread out across the various great worlds, amplifying its strength!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2167: Wooden Statue Lord Wu Guang

It rained not long ago.

The sky of Northern Plains was pale white, it looked extremely clear.

A Gu Immortal lowered his altitude, he was only tens of feet above the ground, flying rapidly as he scanned the area below him, seeming trying to find something.

This Gu Immortal was bare chested, his body was well proportioned and his muscles were bulging. He has an ordinary face, a sharp nose and pursed lips, giving the impression of a man with perseverance.

He looked at the ground with lush growing grass, a field of green filled his vision. But observing closely, he found that the ground below the grass were cracked and shattered, there was something going on here.

Because the Northern Plains Gu Immortal had sensed something amiss here, he came to investigate.

Now, he had already inspected the range of a hundred li.

Suddenly, a green shadow flashed in the crack of the ground.

“Found you!” The Northern Plains Gu Immortal’s eyes shined, he flew down rapidly with a grey shadow around him, he was filled with determination like an eagle hunting its prey.

Rumble!

The Northern Plains Gu Immortal directly crashed into the ground, causing a huge explosion, rocks flew while grass swayed in the air from the shock wave.

The Gu Immortal hit the target with one attack!

“Hmm?” At the next moment, his pupils contracted.

The ground cracked open, revealing a huge body below the topsoil, it resembled a huge yellow dragon.

But looking closely, it was not a dragon but a huge trunk of a ginseng.

The ginseng trunk was yellow in color, covered in wrinkles and gave people a feeling of great strength.

Even though it was attacked, the ginseng trunk exploded with terrifying power, as if a giant dragon was turning over its body.

Boom, boom, the surrounding ground was cracked again, grass and soil splattered, the Northern Plains Gu Immortal was sent flying by this action.

He flew up into the sky and saw the entirety of the ginseng. In the surrounding hundred li of area, yellowish ginseng roots were protruding out of the soil, it looked like a forest had appeared.

Several hundred roots that resembled yellow dragons attacked the Northern Plains Gu Immortal in a frenzy.

The Gu Immortal took a deep breath, grey shadows appeared around his body.

Under the cover of the grey shadows, his figure became blurred like a shadow, he alternated between intangible and solid.

As the ginseng roots landed on his body, they passed through like he was an illusion, there was no effect.

The Northern Plains Gu Immortal was like the moon in the lake, no matter how the water rippled, he was completely unaffected.

The Gu Immortal thus regained his footing and started to prepare his offensive method.

As the killer move was unleashed, greenish grey wooden spikes with the size of ancient trees stabbed into the ginseng roots, pinning them to the ground.

The Gu Immortal continued to use this move as the surrounding ginseng roots fell in number.

“What a good thing!” The Northern Plains Gu Immortal was called Wu Guang, he was a rank seven wood path Gu Immortal, titled Wooden Statue Lord.

He observed the ginseng roots for some time, his gaze becoming increasingly heated.

This yellowish ginseng was a mysterious product, even the wood path cultivator Wu Guang did not know much about it.

But this was quite a common situation. After the five regions merged, earth veins rumbled and qi tides surged, a vast quantity of cultivation resources appeared one by one, among which were many strange and mysterious things.

This ancient desolate plant was one of them.

It was found by Wooden Statue Lord Wu Guang by chance.

This gigantic ginseng had extraordinary value.

If Wu Guang could successfully obtain it, it would be a profitable source of revenue in the long run. But it was not easy to subdue a wild ancient desolate plant, compared to those desolate plants who were cultivated from saplings.

Subduing an ancient desolate plant required enslavement path methods, this was not Wu Guang’s expertise.

But he was not asking for much now, he wanted to kill the giant ginseng and get a huge quantity of immortal materials.

Problems would arise if this dragged on, he was currently in the territory of the Huang Jin bloodline tribes, if they found him, the lone immortal Wu Guang would not reap any gains.

Immortal killer move — Decaying Wooden Death!

After the roots surrounding Wu Guang thinned to a certain extent, Wu Guang pushed with both palms, a loud explosion could be heard, a grey light pillar shot through the sky, landing on the trunk of the ginseng.

On the ginseng trunk, a huge hole was formed, it got instantly pierced by the light pillar.

The roots that were still attacking Wu Guang seemed to have lost all their strength, they fell to the ground like feeble insects, no longer having their strength like before.

“It is over.” Wu Guang smiled lightly, but suddenly, his expression changed!

Rumble!

At the next moment, the ground shook intensely like heaven and earth was flipping around. A thousand ginseng roots appeared at once, they were tall and mighty, each being over a hundred feet in height, roots filled the entire place as their shadow cast down on Wu Guang’s body.p

Wu Guang was greatly shocked to realize that the ginseng trunk he perceived earlier was merely a larger branch of the entire plant.

“This ancient desolate plant likely has tens of thousands of years of history. It is very close to rank eight, it is at the peak of an ancient desolate plant!” Wu Guang was deeply shook.

Countless roots slammed down.

Wu Guang quickly dodged them.

But right at this moment, the wild Immortal Gu living in a certain part of the ginseng burst out with power, causing Wu Guang’s speed to fall rapidly.

Wu Guang was hit by many roots at the same time.

At the crucial moment, the grey shadows appeared again!

A thousand ginseng roots rampaged like huge whips, cracking the air as they moved, creating huge shock waves.

Wu Guang’s body shook intensely, his immortal essence expenditure was very high.

“Oh no.” Wu Guang could sense the aura of death. At this rate, his immortal essence storage was going to be emptied.

Even though he relied on a defensive method and managed to stay alive, this defensive killer move had a huge flaw, once activated, the Gu Immortal could not move, they had to stay at the same spot.

Wu Guang fell into danger again.

The situation changed too quickly, at the next moment, he was at the brink of life and death.

Wu Guang was feeling bitter internally.

He had been too overconfident, he did not investigate the situation more clearly.

As a matter of fact, the ginseng had been moving underground, it was not easy for Wu Guang to find it and force it to come to the surface. If he had to make a thorough investigation, by the time he finished, the ginseng would have escaped into the ground already.

“It is too late to say anything now, to think that I, Wu Guang, would die in the hands of an ancient desolate plant.”

As his immortal essence dried out, Wu Guang started to feel despair.

Roar—!

Right at this moment, a fierce tiger attacked.

The tiger was black in color and gave off a metallic luster, it was huge like a mountain and had sharp and powerful claws, it easily tore the ginseng roots to shreds, it was extraordinarily fierce.

“What ancient desolate beast is this? No, wait, this is a killer move.” Wu Guang stared with wide eyes, feeling surprised and curious.

The black tiger fought against the ginseng roots, the two were stuck in a deadlock, being evenly matched.

Rumble!

At the next moment, the ground shook again.

The ginseng roots suddenly straightened before falling to the ground with a loud thud, no longer moving again.

“What? This mysterious ancient desolate plant got killed by someone in one move!” Wu Guang was shocked, his internal worry became much deeper.

Often, humans were much scarier than beasts or plants.

Wu Guang did not need to think to know that the Gu Immortal who killed the ancient desolate plant was very strong, extremely strong!

Once Wu Guang escaped death, he saw a green robed Gu Immortal.

Wu Guang knew this person, he immediately cupped his fists: “So it was you who saved my life, Chen Cheng.”

Gu Immortal Chen Cheng waved his hand: “I was only assisting, the one who saved your life is my master.”

“Master? Whose servant did you become?” Wu Guang was shocked.

At this moment, the ground cracked as a figure flew up into the sky.

Wu Guang stared with wide eyes at this female immortal, she wore a half-mask that covered the lower half of her face.

Her brows were sharp and her eyes shined with brilliant light, she wore a black-gold armor with an aura of domination around her, intimidating her foes.

The one who entered the ground to kill the mysterious ginseng was Hei Lou Lan.

Roar—!

The black tiger roared as it returned to her, turning into a tattoo on Hei Lou Lan’s skin.

It was the totem killer move — Dark Capital Strength Tiger.

Wu Guang had never seen this move or even heard of it, upon seeing this sight, his shock intensified.

Hei Lou Lan looked down at him at an angle: “I saved you, how will you repay me?”

Wu Guang’s body shook, he quickly expressed his gratitude: “I will not forget the debt of saving my life! I wonder what I can do for you? As long as you tell me, I will do my best to complete your request.”

But Hei Lou Lan laughed as she looked at Chen Cheng: “I see that you are acquainted with him, what use does this person have?”

Chen Cheng: “Master, we are heading to Crescent Moon Mound to challenge Yin Wu Que, this person has a close relationship with him, he can lead the way.”

Wu Guang quickly added: “I am acquainted with Brother Yin, but the challenge...”

Chen Cheng smiled as he explained: “Master succeeded in her cultivation, she came out of seclusion to challenge the experts of the world, she wants to face off against the various geniuses. I lost to her and according to the agreement, I became her servant.”

Wu Guang took in a deep breath: “So that’s it...”

He was hesitant.

Yin Wu Que was his good friend, if he had to lead this expert to his friend for a fight, regardless of result, he would feel very troubled.

But Hei Lou Lan did not care about Wu Guang’s feelings, she said: “Lead the way.”

Wu Guang shook internally.

Hei Lou Lan’s tone was filled with dominance that did not allow rejection.

Wu Guang was sure that if he defied her, he would end up like the ginseng earlier.

“Please follow me, benefactor and Chen Cheng.” Wanting to preserve his own life, Wu Guang led the way.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Milky white sea water rose and fell with the tides, the sea was covered in thick fog, one could not see anything including their five fingers.

In this milky white fog, countless people seemed to be moving in it rapidly at all times.

Shi Zong’s mind was completely chaotic, he was muddled and dazed, he was submerged in the sea water at times, while floating in the white fog at other times.

He could vaguely hear a voice calling him: “Shi Zong, since you are awake, why are you not coming out?”

Thus, he followed this voice and walked out of the sea, arriving at the shore.

He was bare naked with no clothing on him, after leaving Human Sea, he suddenly jolted awake.

Looking at the dense white fog and sea around him, he checked his own body.

He was in disbelief: “Didn’t, didn’t I die already?!”

“Shi Zong, you have already revived in master’s secluded domain of heaven and earth, Human Sea. But your cultivation level has been lost, you are a mortal and will need to cultivate from the start again.” The Gu Immortal who led him out smiled as he said.

Shi Zong was speechlessly dazed, after a while, he fell to the ground as he knelt by the shore.

“I was able to revive all thanks to master’s kindness and generosity!” Shi Zong raised his head and shouted, tears flowing down his face in excitement.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2168: Unifying Human And Gu

Before Fang Yuan entered Crazed Demon Cave, the secluded domain of heaven and earth Human Sea had already been completed.

In order to construct the complete Human Sea, Fang Yuan ordered the slaughter of countless humans, he had unsurmountable sin and blood on his hands, but he also achieved his goal as he obtained the results that he expected at this moment.

Evidently, if news that dead Gu Immortals could revive through Human Sea spread among his subordinates, Fang Yuan’s force would gain a huge boost in morale!

The truth was, in the five hundred years of his previous life, Human Sea secluded domain was used by Eastern Sea’s Xia clan.

In Fang Yuan’s first life of five hundred years.

When Xia clan’s Gu Immortals died outside, they were not truly dead, they could revive from Human Sea. Although their Immortal Gu and immortal aperture’s accumulations would be lost, they would still retain their cultivation level and immortal aperture itself.

Eastern Sea’s Xia clan gained a huge reputation because of this, for the following period of time, they invaded Southern Border. Southern Border’s Gu Immortals fought against Xia clan, over time, they learned about Xia clan’s background and foundation, eventually, Chai clan mimicked Human Sea and created their own Human Mountain secluded domain.

In the five hundred years of his previous life, fate Gu was only damaged but not entirely destroyed. Now, fate Gu was completely gone.

Thus, Human Sea could revive Gu Immortals with much less difficulty.

But Fang Yuan did not let those Gu Immortals who revived become Gu Immortals again immediately.

Firstly, to revive a Gu Immortal who retained their cultivation level, it would cause a huge expenditure to Human Sea. After a few uses, he would need to slaughter a massive number of humans and variant humans to replenish it.

It was not that Fang Yuan could not bear to do that, but it was troublesome.

Also, if these Gu Immortals became mortals again and had to cultivate all over again, Fang Yuan could make use of them.

Firstly, these revived Gu Masters had the foundation of a Gu Immortal, they had rich cultivation experience, it was probable that they would succeed in immortal ascension again. During their ascension, the natural inspiration would be a good chance for Fang Yuan to get answers he wanted!

Secondly, when these Gu Immortals re-cultivate, they would need to undergo tribulations, Fang Yuan could help them with that and gain heaven path dao marks.

Finally, after these Gu Immortals cultivate from the start, they might gain inspiration and innovate new killer moves. In the process, they would also be more reliant on Fang Yuan, it would mean that he would gain greater control over them.

But at this moment, after using the killer move human revival sea, his heart shook as inspiration flashed in his mind.

At this moment, he obtained a crucial breakthrough in refinement path.

“So the human body Gu refinement method is like this.” Brilliance flashed in Fang Yuan’s mind, a light sense of joy appeared in his heart.

The so-called Human Sea revival method was in essence using a Gu cultivator method to refine the human body and soul. This was a human path method indeed, but it was also using Gu to refine a human!

Fang Yuan lacked insight on the human body Gu refinement method earlier. When he researched on Ni clan, he found that the human body Gu refinement method was related to blood path and others, this conclusion was not wrong.

“Using a human to refine Gu and using Gu to refine a human, the two are interchangeable in essence.”

These two were like the two sides of a coin, they existed with one another.

The true core was — Unifying Human and Gu!

It was like sovereign immortal fetus Gu, it was a Gu worm that could turn into a human body after activation. But it did not provide a soul, instead, the sovereign immortal body would be created with the most compatibility with the Gu cultivator’s soul.

When Fang Yuan used Human Sea to revive a Gu Immortal, he was refining a human body and also a human soul.

Looking at the legendary immemorial desolate beast Qing Chou, it was originally a killer move that was converted into a life form.

This meant that any life form could be created with a Gu cultivation method!

This was totally possible in theory.

And the truth was, this was already hinted in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

In <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, chapter three section fourteen, it was clearly stated. The myriad lifeforms in the world were originally secluded domains of heaven and earth – Gu worms within the Blue Sea of Life. These Gu worms were washed ashore by the waves of the Blue Sea, turning into all sorts of lifeforms.

All the countless methods converged into the same origin.

Using Gu to refine Human, using Human to refine Gu, Human and Gu were one to begin with!

Although Fang Yuan understood this logic, he had only fully comprehended the complete details of this logic at this moment in time.

This comprehension broke through the thin barrier that obstructed him, Fang Yuan could see a bright scene beyond it.

He only needed to make a small deduction now to design a killer move that could unravel Ni clan’s Gu Immortal method, he could extract all sorts of Immortal Gu from the Ni clan members’ bodies.

It was not easy to reach this stage.

Fang Yuan had a foundation in this aspect already, after all, he used the human isolation style Gu refinement method in the five hundred years of his previous life.

In this life, he had all sorts of encounters and accumulations in this aspect.

Even though Ni clan was not his breakthrough point, by studying and analyzing them, Fang Yuan gained a deeper foundation.

Eventually, the immense foundation led to a qualitative change, Fang Yuan unexpectedly succeeded in his breakthrough due to Human Sea.

Throughout history, refinement path had two styles.

The first was the hairy man nature Gu refinement method, it used nature and dao marks to refine Gu.

The opposite was Limitless Demon Venerable using Gu worms to refine heaven and earth.

The second was the human isolation style. Ni clan’s Gu Immortal, the refinement path quasi-supreme Ni Ren, used humans to refine Gu, implanting all sorts of Immortal Gu deep within the bloodlines of his Ni clan descendants.

The opposite was sovereign immortal fetus Gu, the Human Sea revival method, and the Blue Sea of Life which used Gu to refine human.

“The depth of refinement path supreme grandmaster should likely comprise these four aspects. Currently, I have already comprehended human and Gu refinement methods, I only lack the final ‘using Gu to refine heaven and earth’ aspect! By comprehending the arrangements of Limitless Demon Venerable, I have already broken through this hurdle, I have passed the initial stage with no obstacles remaining, as long as I continue progressing, I will eventually comprehend all the profundities.” Fang Yuan evaluated.

Treasure yellow heaven.

Bai Ning Bing’s divine sense roamed around within it.

She was selling immortal materials.

Ever since she saw Fang Huan’s revival by chance and killed him, Bai Ning Bing obtained a large number of desolate beast and ancient desolate beast corpses. She even obtained the true inheritance from searching Fang Huan’s soul.

Bai Ning Bing’s immortal materials were already about to be sold out.

Only the last portion was left.

“How are you selling these immortal materials?” At this time, a divine sense came and asked for the price.

Bai Ning Bing explained the sale price.

After Little Immortal Xing Luo heard the price, she shrank slightly and wanted to bargain: “Can it be a little cheaper?”

Immediately after, Little Immortal Xing Luo stated her quote: “If you sell at this price, I’ll buy it directly!”

Bai Ning Bing wanted to refine Gu herself, she created the killer move breath concealment ice pearl, if she could refine an ice pearl Immortal Gu, it would supplement this killer move greatly.

She had already collected most of the immortal materials now, Bai Ning Bing did not excel at trading, she wanted to nod and agree to the transaction when suddenly, another divine sense got closer.

“Oh, someone is actually selling the mala[1] duck’s neck? This food path ancient desolate beast is very rare, where did you find it from?” The divine sense asked.

Bai Ning Bing was unwilling to expose clues about herself, she asked directly: “Are you buying or not?”

“What price?”

Bai Ning Bing expressed the price while the divine sense said: “I’ll buy it, I’ll buy everything. Do you need immortal essence stones or immortal materials?”

Bai Ning Bing gave the list of ice and snow path immortal materials she needed.

The divine sense smiled: “I have them all, just wait a moment.”

In Eastern Sea, Zui Xian Weng withdrew his divine sense and contacted the Righteous Qi Alliance.

The Righteous Qi Alliance had abundant immortal materials in the inventory, Zui Xian Weng used his contribution points to exchange for some ice and snow path immortal materials.

Next, he sent these immortal materials into treasure yellow heaven, allowing Bai Ning Bing and Zui Xian Weng to complete the transaction.

After getting the immortal materials she wanted, Bai Ning Bing turned around and left treasure yellow heaven.

Central Continent’s Little Immortal Xing Luo’s divine sense was still lingering around: “It’s such a huge pity.”

She failed to obtain the immortal material she wanted.

Little Immortal Xing Luo was a lone immortal, she was a single person with only rank six cultivation level. She could not match Zui Xian Weng in wealth, not to mention the fact that he took out ice and snow path immortal materials that the seller requested.

“I’ll continue looking around.” Little Immortal Xing Luo was very disappointed but she did not want to give up, she continued to look around in treasure yellow heaven.

“What is this?” Not long after, she was shocked to find that a huge mountain appeared in treasure yellow heaven!

“Who put an entire mountain in here?” Sensing this situation, Little Immortal Xing Luo stared with wide eyes as this was the first time she had seen such a ‘gigantic’ transaction.

The appearance of the mountain caused a small commotion to occur.

Many divine senses came over and many Gu Immortal wills even gathered to observe the commotion.

“Who is so amazing to be able to sell an entire mountain?”

“It is not easy to do this, they will need deep earth path attainment.”

“This mountain is quite good, it contains abundant moon path dao marks. But this large resource point is very valuable, who would sell it? Selling it in treasure yellow heaven will also incur a huge fee of immortal essence stones.”

The discussions had just started when this mountain vanished instantly.

“Someone actually bought it!”

“It seems that the transaction was made beforehand.”

“The mountain earlier seems to be Southern Border’s Moon Bowl?”

It was indeed Southern Border’s Moon Bowl.

Fang Yuan had left a batch of Gu Immortals in Southern Border, Eastern Sea and various areas.

After negotiating with Wu clan, Moon Bowl was sold by Wu clan, sent into the sovereign immortal aperture through treasure yellow heaven.

“Moon Bowl has arrived, catch it, catch it!”

“Good, good, move to the left, move a bit to the right.”

Bam!

The earth shook slightly as Moon Bowl landed on the ground.

Immediately, a rockman Gu Immortal came forward and used a killer move, manipulating Moon Bowl’s mountain roots to stab into the ground, turning it into a node of the earth vein.

The other variant human Gu Immortals were free for the moment, they watched while conversing.

“Did you hear? Shi Zong revived!”

“Not just Shi Zong, any Gu Immortals who died in the outside world were revived through Human Sea.”

“Master has divine might, he is all-powerful! Reviving us Gu Immortals is nothing more than a piece of cake!”

“But we will lose all our cultivation level and need to start all over again.”

“Hmph, there is only hope for the future if we are alive, so what if we become mortals? We just need to re-cultivate!”

“If only I can receive the missions for combat.”

“Don’t even think about it. Those Gu Immortals who are able to take those missions have strong battle strength, even though you have rank seven cultivation level, you have just advanced, your still lack sufficient Immortal Gu.”

“That’s right, we need to take one step at a time. Let’s work hard and do these missions to elevate ourselves first.”

While a portion of Fang Yuan’s elite subordinates fought outside, the rest helped to manage the sovereign immortal aperture, they worked hard and contributed their blood and sweat.

Even though unexpected events constantly occurred in the sovereign immortal aperture, it was still orderly and well managed.

[1] Mala is the spicy and numbing flavor in Chinese cuisine, which is made from Sichuan peppercorn, chili pepper and various spices simmered with oil.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2169: Shocking Find of Thieving Heaven’s True Inheritance

Northern Plains.

A few rounds of an intense battle had just passed.

Yin Wu Que retreated constantly while pointing his finger, aiming at Hei Lou Lan.

Immortal killer move — Crescent Moon Thrust!

Ching!

At the next moment, there was the crisp sound of unsheathing blades as a translucent pale blue crescent moon shot out from the ground like a sword towards Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan was prepared against this, she jumped up at almost the same time, avoiding it.

Yin Wu Que’s pupils contracted slightly, this move was very fast and ordinary Gu Immortals could not dodge it easily. But Hei Lou Lan succeeded in that, it showed that she had an exceptional investigative killer move.

“My method has only failed against Tian Xia Xin and Zhou Ye Zi. The former is a wisdom path Gu Immortal capable of deductions while the latter cultivates time path, he had an investigative method that could peer a few breaths into the future.”

“To think that today, it would fail against this mysterious female immortal. Even though this person cultivates strength path, she is not to be underestimated!”

Thoughts flashed in Yin Wu Que’s mind as he retreated at the same time.

Rumble!

Hei Lou Lan exerted strength as her body charged forward like a meteor, pushing aside the air in front of her, arriving before Yin Wu Que in a few breaths of time.

Yin Wu Que gritted his teeth, he raised both hands and used a killer move — Moon Rise.

Moonlight gushed out of his forehead as he started to float up, but before he got far, Hei Lou Lan’s fist already landed.

Bam.

With a loud sound, Yin Wu Que was sent flying by Hei Lou Lan like a rubber ball.

His thin body was sent flying far away, he landed on the ground and bounced along the surface for tens of steps, causing a gorge to form in his path.

Raising his head again, Yin Wu Que’s vision was filled with Hei Lou Lan’s figure, as well as her fist!

Yin Wu Que’s heart jumped.

The fist earlier caused considerable injuries to Yin Wu Que despite his defensive method.

He did not want to face another punch.

“You fell for it!” Yin Wu Que suddenly smiled, he stretched out five fingers and aimed at Hei Lou Lan.

Clang, clang, clang, clang, clang!

Instantly, five translucent light blue crescent moonblades shot out, they were created from nothing, targeting Hei Lou Lan who was at the center from all directions.

Hei Lou Lan’s eyes shined with cold light, she did not dodge but attacked with her fist instead.

Yin Wu Que’s smile froze on his face, he watched as this fist got larger and larger, before landing on his eye socket.

Boom!

Yin Wu Que was originally lying on the ground with his head raised, after taking this terrifying hit, his head was pushed down into the huge pit that was created below him.

Ground shook as rocks were sent flying.

The spectators, Wooden Statue Lord Wu Guang and Sincerity Immortal Chen Cheng, had twitching eyelids as they watched Yin Wu Que get punched, they could feel his pain from over there.

Yin Wu Que was sent crashing underground from this punch, he was tens of feet below the ground surface.

Dust clouds spread but Hei Lou Lan did not chase him, she retreated rapidly instead!

Clang clang clang...

An unceasing number of moonblades were produced and shot towards Hei Lou Lan in a frenzied state.

Hei Lou Lan had a calm expression as she continued to dodge. Her actions were simple and agile, most of the moonblades were evaded while some were shattered by her fists.

Yin Wu Que attacked desperately, he finally obtained some time to regain his footing.

He flew out of the deep pit, rising towards the sky.

Currently, he was covered in dust and one of his eye sockets had cracked, the eyelid was swollen and turning purple, the vision in his eye was extremely blurred, his gaze flickered with lingering fear.

“The two punches earlier almost made me unconscious. It was so dangerous! Thankfully, the moon has already risen successfully.” Yin Wu Que let out a breath of air.

Earlier, moon qi appeared from the top of his head, it had already gathered into a waxing crescent moon hanging in the sky under broad daylight.

The moonblade killer move was still being used continuously as Hei Lou Lan dodged while diverting some attention to look at the waxing crescent moon in the sky.

“Earlier, the moonblades could only be formed from the ground, but now they can appear from thin air, is this the effect of the moon in the sky?” Hei Lou Lan thought rapidly.

As her thoughts collided, they sparked brightly: “But this amplification is not worth paying such a huge price, Yin Wu Que endured two punches from me in order to activate this crescent moon.”

Hei Lou Lan was calm and composed internally.

Earlier, she took the initiative to attack, now, she focused on defense, her actions were meticulous and allowed her to advance or retreat at will.

Yin Wu Que was still using his moonblade killer move.

Crescent moonblades continued to form, the attack was unceasing, but Hei Lou Lan managed to defend herself stably and even had the chance to attack the crescent moon in the sky with her fists.

The waxing crescent moon suffered an impact from her punch, but it only shook slightly like the mirage in a desert.

“The crescent moon is getting larger?” Bright light flashed in Hei Lou Lan’s eyes as she found out new information at this moment.

“So that’s it.” Hei Lou Lan had some sort of insight in her mind.

After she stopped moving back, she charged ahead instead, enduring the attacks of the crescent moonblades in order to attack Yin Wu Que.

Yin Wu Que’s heart jumped: “This female immortal’s combat instincts are too powerful, it seems that she has seen through my combat system!”

Yin Wu Que had an immortal opportunity in his earlier days, he inherited the inheritance of a certain Olden Antiquity moon path Gu Immortal great expert, he thus had a complete and stable combat system.

The waxing crescent moon was hanging in the sky, it amplified the various moon path killer moves of Yin Wu Que. At the same time, when Yin Wu Que’s moon path killer moves get destroyed or countered, the lingering moon path dao marks would be absorbed by the waxing crescent moon, causing it to grow.

The waxing crescent moon would grow into a half moon, before becoming a full moon.

Once it becomes a full moon, Yin Wu Que’s offense and defense would be amplified to the strongest state.

Because Hei Lou Lan had seen through this tactic, she started to use her strongest offenses.

Yin Wu Que knew from the start that he was not Hei Lou Lan’s match at the moment, he had to choose a delaying tactic to retreat while blocking her offenses.

Hei Lou Lan engaged in a full frontal charge.

The two immortals chased and escaped respectively, they fought intensely, rocks were sent flying wherever they went, nobody in their path was spared.

Immortal killer move — Eight Directional Strength Fight!

Hei Lou Lan shouted as her body flickered, eight figures flew out and encircled Yin Wu Que.

Yin Wu Que was caught unguarded and got surrounded in the middle.

“Oh no!” Yin Wu Que’s expression turned pale at once.

...

Fang Yuan’s divine sense expanded and spread out in the sovereign immortal aperture.

The sovereign immortal aperture was simply too big, it was hard to inspect it entirely, he had to extend his divine sense for some time before he could see the entire landscape.

Strange events were still occurring in various places, but with Star Collection City controlling the situation, these events were mostly dealt with by Gu

Immortals nearby.

There was no longer any disturbance, Fang Yuan focused on observing the earth vein this time.

Originally, the earth vein was already created but it was crude and simple. More than ten nodes formed into a line which made a circle around the five regions, connecting the first and the last nodes.

But after this period of development, although the current earth vein was still following a singular trail, there were many branches developing away from the main trail already, it was no longer as empty as before.

“After some time, the nodes at the end of these branches will be interlinked to form a second ring that is even larger. By then, the earth vein will have two different layers of connected lines.”

In the current five regions, not only were Southern Border’s super forces transacting with Fang Yuan, the Righteous Qi Alliance was also preparing for this matter under Qi Sea Ancestor’s orders.

Two sea islands had already been sold to the sovereign immortal aperture through treasure yellow heaven, they were used as the earth vein nodes in Mini Eastern Sea.

Eastern Sea’s righteous path forces were still kept in the dark.

They did not know that the buyer was Fang Yuan.

There was profit to earn, a large sum at that, thus they were very enthusiastic.

Fang Yuan had abundant capital now, even though he faced a lack of resources in his initial investment period, this problem no longer existed.

Fang Yuan had a vast number of immortal materials!

He used these immortal materials to pay for the sea islands and famous mountains.

The immortal materials from the first six layers of Crazed Demon Cave were chaotic and could not be transacted. But the seventh layer’s dao marks were obtained by Fang Yuan through Thieves Den, they became pure rank nine immortal materials.

These rank nine immortal materials were all extraordinarily valuable, there was no way to quantitatively define the price. Thus, Fang Yuan’s wealth also soared, giving him great confidence in transactions.

The truth was, if he did not use them to refine Gu, these rank nine immortal materials could only be sold to rank eight Gu Immortals or super forces.

Rank six or seven Gu Immortals were not able to even make use of rank nine immortal materials.

These immortal materials were too high-end, even many rank eight Gu Immortals did not have the capability to use them.

Only those super forces wanted to stock up on them.

After inspecting the earth vein and seeing nothing wrong, Fang Yuan retracted his divine sense after noting that the development was progressing well.

As his attention returned to the main world, Fang Yuan willed as Cooking Luck Pot shook slightly.

Fang Yuan started his luck inspection.

He saw that some changes had occurred to his silver light luck pillar.

The silver light pillar had become more condensed.

It was half the size of earlier, but the density was at least five times of before!

Be it the earth vein construction or Fang Yuan’s own refinement path comprehension, they were reasons that caused the silver light pillar to become more condensed.

The three clouds representing Star Constellation, Spectral Soul, and Giant Sun were still at the top of the pillar of light, showing intentions to suppress and obstruct him.

But at the bottom of the silver light pillar, the original soil dust circulating around had already turned into a mound that covered the silver light pillar, it seemed like the foundational base of the pillar.

“Recently, I have been comprehending Paradise Earth’s tomb, I gained some insight, I can now create my own Tomb Earth.”

“Using Tomb Earth, I can make Gu Immortals revive! Even the Immortal Gu that they had when they were alive can be produced alongside the person.”

“Looking at the luck phenomenon, if I can comprehend Northern Plains’ Paradise Earth true inheritance, it will help me greatly too!”

“Huh?”

Right when Fang Yuan was thinking, his luck changed again.

He saw that above the silver light pillar, a dazzlingly bright star appeared between the three clouds.

This star was shining in a silver-white light, it penetrated the cloud layer and shined directly onto the surface of the silver light pillar. They were similar silver lights, they seemed like they would benefit the silver light pillar a lot.

“What is going on?” Fang Yuan’s body shook: “So that’s it! I understand now.”

He gazed afar, through ten thousand li, looking at the central area of the intersection between the three great worlds.

A small world revealed itself over there, emitting the intense aura of Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable.

It was Thieving Heaven’s space!

It was very likely to contain one of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritances!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2170: Thieving Heaven Versus Limitless

Crash crash crash....

A series of brutal assaults hit Yin Wu Que, who was on the ground.

Yin Wu Que shielded his head with both arms, he was curled up into a ball, desperately activating his defensive killer move!

However, after a barrage of punches and kicks, his defensive method soon broke apart.

“I admit defeat, I admit defeat!” Yin Wu Que shouted loudly in panic and desperation.

“Fairy Black Moon, it’s over, spare him.” Wu Guang who was at the side came to urge her.

Hei Lou Lan was only wanting to spar and had no intention to kill, immediately, she stopped using her method.

She turned to Chen Cheng and asked: “Yin Wu Que has been defeated, who is the next opponent?”

While she was asking, two Gu Immortals flew over from the sky.

One female and one male immortal.

The male had a skinny body and a sharp face, he had bean-like eyes, he emitted rank seven light path aura.

The female immortal had the body of a young child, her eyes were watery and bright, her petite body was cute and delicate, she was a rank seven wood path Gu Immortal.

They were Liu tribe’s Liu Chang and Liu Luo.

Chen Cheng and Wu Guang looked at each other, they did not speak.

Liu Luo was the first to ask: “What is happening here?”

As nobody answered her, Liu Luo quickly turned to Yin Wu Que.

Yin Wu Que was still lying on the ground, he received Wu Guang’s treatment as he smiled bitterly: “This Fairy Black Moon came to challenge me, she has outstanding methods, I am not her match.”

Liu Chang heard this and his eyes shined, he smiled and said: “Fairy Black Moon? May I have the honor of knowing your name? To think that a new outstanding figure would emerge in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.”

Liu Luo mocked Yin Wu Que: “Yin Wu Que, do you know the difficulties of a lone immortal now? Our Liu tribe invited you to be our external supreme elder, it is something that would benefit you. At least, after joining our tribe, if any Gu Immortal challenges you, it will incur the wrath of my Liu tribe!”

Yin Wu Que smiled bitterly and shook his head: “Thank you for the repeated offer, but I am used to being alone, I have no intention of joining any super force.”

Liu Luo frowned: “Can you not see what’s good for you?”

Ever since the fate war ended, in order to prepare against the five regions chaotic war, Longevity Heaven had ordered the various Huang Jin tribes to unify Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world. Many Gu Immortals were recruited into Huang Jin tribes, while many demonic immortals were killed as well.

At the other side, Hei Lou Lan showed no intention of answering Liu Chang’s question.

She said to Chen Cheng: “Let’s go.”

“Hold on!” Liu Luo’s sharp voice interrupted her, she looked at Hei Lou Lan: “You are very brazen, do you not know that Yin Wu Que is the target of our Liu tribe’s recruitment? Now that you injured him, you want to leave so easily?”

“Sister.” Liu Chang called out, feeling helpless internally.

Liu Luo had just gone from rank six to seven, with the rise in strength, her temperament was also more arrogant now.

If she was alone, she might not act like this, but with her brother Liu Chang here with her to rely on, Liu Luo showed a casual and carefree attitude.

But because Liu Chang doted on his sister, he did not chide her, he stared at Hei Lou Lan: “Fairy, why be in a rush to leave? Are you interested in joining our Liu tribe? If you can become Liu tribe’s external supreme elder...”

“Shut your dog mouth.” Hei Lou Lan replied plainly.

“What?” Liu Chang was stumped.

Liu Luo stared with wide eyes, she was filled with rage and shock: “How dare you! Bitch...”

Before she finished, Hei Lou Lan interrupted again: “Two dogs that block my way, bark once more and I will kill you.”

Seeing that the situation was going out of control, Chen Cheng quickly came in to mediate the situation.

Liu Luo called out in a shrill voice: “Today’s matter will not end like this, I want to see if...”

Boom!

Hei Lou Lan attacked fiercely, a strength path phantom appeared before Liu Luo abruptly, punching the latter’s face and sending her flying.

“Sister!” Liu Chang was enraged, he was about to attack.

Boom, he was also sent flying by Hei Lou Lan.

Liu Chang was a famous rank seven expert of Northern Plains, his strength far exceeded Liu Luo, he quickly stabilized his footing and said: “You dare to attack us Gu Immortals of Liu tribe?”

Boom boom boom!

Eight strength path phantoms appeared around Hei Lou Lan, the dark capital strength tiger totem was also summoned, beating the Liu tribe siblings to a pulp.

“This, this, this...” Chen Cheng watched with a dumbfounded expression.

“It cannot be resolved amicably now.” Wu Guang was tongue-tied, he smiled bitterly towards Yin Wu Que: “So Fairy Black Moon’s temperament is like this, Brother Yin, it was really lucky that you managed to survive at her hands.”

Yin Wu Que snorted: “If Fairy Black Moon really kills the Liu tribe siblings, do you think Liu tribe or Longevity Heaven will let us off?”

Wu Guang was dazed, he showed an unsightly expression.

“Are we going to take action to help the Liu tribe siblings?” Wu Guang asked helplessly.

Yin Wu Que gritted his teeth: “Do you want to hug Longevity Heaven’s smelly feet? Ever since Giant Sun Immortal Venerable created the Imperial Court contest, the entirety of Northern Plains became his kingdom. For the last three hundred thousand years, have we, the lone cultivators of Northern Plains, not suffered enough?”

Most of the immortals knew about the truth behind the Imperial Court contest.

Northern Plains’ lone immortals and demonic cultivators had a poor impression of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. Back then, Five Elements Grandmaster, who was still a lone cultivator, invaded Longevity Heaven, he was the proof of this mindset.

Longevity Heaven desired to rule Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world, but the difficulty was too high.

Many Gu Immortal experts did not want to submit to the Huang Jin tribes, they did not want to obey the words of these people they detested.

With the exception of two cases.

One was during the five regions chaotic war, when Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world faced great external pressure, these Gu Immortals would have no choice but to band together as one.

The second was if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable revives successfully, his invincible might would force all these demonic immortals and lone cultivators to submit to him.

The truth was, even in the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, Longevity Heaven managed to unify Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world because of Ma Hong Yun.

Ma Hong Yun had the power of Fortune Rivalling Heaven, he seemed to be someone who started from a humble origin, he was able to unite many lone and demonic immortals as a result. But he was in fact Longevity Heaven’s chess piece, an arrangement of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

By relying on this, Longevity Heaven was able to unify Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world after the five regions chaotic war started.

But now, the five regions chaotic war had yet to start while Ma Hong Yun was killed by Fang Yuan, the difficulty for Longevity Heaven to unite Northern Plains was simply much harder.

“Fairy Black Moon, I will definitely find you in the future to repay the shame of today’s defeat.” Liu Chang brought Liu Luo away, they escaped in anger.

He was very strong but he could not display his strength.

Hei Lou Lan targeted Liu Luo constantly, it made Liu Chang hold many reservations, he could only take hits passively, it was a terrible feeling.

“They finally escaped.” Chen Cheng let out a breath of air, he had been holding his breath in anxiety earlier.

“Hmph, they cannot escape. After I defeat the lone and demonic immortal experts, I will challenge these Huang Jin tribes, I will let the whole of Northern Plains know of my might.” Hei Lou Lan smiled coldly.

Chen Cheng was feeling a headache, he did not expect his master to have such grand ambitions. not only did she want to defeat the lone and demonic immortals, she even wanted to challenge Northern Plains’ overlords, the Huang Jin super tribes!

“Fairy, if you have such an ambition, I, Yin Wu Que, am willing to travel alongside you as your entourage.” Yin Wu Que was standing with Wu Guang’s help, he walked towards Hei Lou Lan.

“Oh?” Hei Lou Lan raised her brows.

Yin Wu Que smiled bitterly: “The truth is, if I do not travel with you, when Liu tribe’s Gu Immortals come to find me, they will not let me off. I do not want to be a member of the Huang Jin tribe.”

“Alright.” Hei Lou Lan nodded: “Back then, Chu Du also wanted to challenge the Huang Jin tribes. We both cultivate strength path, how can I be inferior to him? Let’s go together.”

“I will come along too.” Wu Guang said: “This is an interesting matter, I want to watch it with my own eyes.”

Thus, Hei Lou Lan’s group grew larger again.

Crazed Demon Cave, eighth layer.

Three hundred thousand years ago.

In the void, worlds were created and destroyed like bubbles.

Suddenly, chains appeared, making loud clanking sounds as they formed into a chain domain that intertwined in the surrounding area.

“I was actually discovered.” Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was slightly surprised, having been forced to reveal himself.

Limitless Demon Venerable’s will appeared: “Do stop, new venerable. The Space Door that you seek is not here.”

As he spoke, countless chains shot out towards Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable from all directions.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable moved like lightning, traversing between the chains, he was agile like a fish in water.

“Limitless Demon Venerable’s will?” Excitement shined in his eyes: “How do you know I am looking for Space Door? Are you saying that because you do not want me to destroy your arrangements in Crazed Demon Cave? You hid the ninth layer too deeply, I actually could not decipher it immediately, why don’t you let me in and take a look, as long as Space Door is not there, I will take my leave!”

Limitless Demon Venerable’s will said: “Thieving Heaven, even though I do not leave Crazed Demon Cave, I know many things about the current world. The current you cannot even control yourself, how can I allow you to enter the ninth layer?”

“Cannot control myself? Why can’t I control myself?” Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable raised a brow: “I just want to go home, I just want to go back and see my friends and family, but all of you want to obstruct me!!”

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable spoke with increasing agitation.

Limitless Demon Venerable was silent, the chains attacked even more fiercely now.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable snorted coldly, he stopped moving far away, no longer dodging.

A blinding blue jewel-like light burst out with radiance, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable activated his killer move, the blue light faded, forming into a huge suit of armor around his body, turning him into a metallic giant.

The metallic giant was covered in electric sparks, it moved rapidly towards Limitless Demon Venerable’s will.

The endless chains came to obstruct him but they were all pushed aside by the metallic giant.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable rode in the metallic giant and charged his way forward, forcing his way to the central area of the chain domain, grabbing onto Limitless Demon Venerable’s will.

But at the next moment, Limitless Demon Venerable’s will dissipated.

At almost the same time, another lump of Limitless’ will appeared, saying calmly: “This is Crazed Demon Cave, my will can regenerate endlessly in here, there is a limitless supply of it.”

“Is that so?” Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable smiled coldly: “Then have a taste of my methods.”

Bam bam bam...

A shocking battle erupted at once.

Within the void, countless worlds were implicated, they were all destroyed in the process.

Limitless Demon Venerable’s will had the territorial advantage, he was able to fight evenly with Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable initially. But as time went by, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was superior after all, he started to gain the upper hand.

Limitless Demon Venerable had died long ago, this was only his will controlling Crazed Demon Cave after all.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2171: Four Venerables Repair The World

The lightning giant attacked, each action carried unparalleled lights.

Countless chains swayed and targeted Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable as they sealed and slashed.

The damage caused by the two venerables continued to spread out, the entire void was shaking intensely, it seemed to be unable to sustain the pressure.

One by one, small worlds were implicated, they were rapidly destroyed and unable to last a few breaths of time.

Within the lightning giant, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s expression became increasingly twisted, blood surged in his eyes as his aura became more vicious and wild.

“Take this move!” Thieving Heaven shouted as the lightning giant’s mountain-like body stopped on the spot.

The surface of its body started to transform rapidly, with the crisp sound of clanking metal, cannons started to extend out of its body in all directions.

Boom—!

Thousands of cannons fired at once, countless rays of light pierced the void, a rainbow color of red, orange, yellow, green, blue, purple, and others dazzled the entire heaven and earth.

As light rays shot out and crossed a vast distance, they destroyed everything in their path, many chains that Limitless Demon Venerable’s will controlled were easily decimated.

“This move actually comprises metal, wood, water, fire, earth, and other paths. Each color of the cannons represent a different path. Oh no!” Limitless Demon Venerable’s will was shaken.

The defensive line that he had established was penetrated, exposing the two great worlds that he was protecting.

One world had rampaging wild beasts, the other was covered in lush greenery.

They were Savage Wilderness Great World and Green Lotus Great World.

Most of the cannons were blocked successfully but a hundred of them still shot towards the two great worlds mercilessly.

“What? These two worlds contain life?” Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was internally shocked.

He could see clearly, his twisted expression froze on his face, clarity returned to his eyes that had turned blood red.

Earlier when he explored the void, he saw that the small worlds were devoid of life, they were deathly silent.

Thus, he did not care about the destruction of these small worlds.

But Savage Wilderness Great World and Green Lotus Great World contained living beings, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable did not want to be a mass murderer.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable gritted his teeth, he used all his strength to control the lightning giant and turn the cannon in another direction.

All of the cannons narrowly avoided the two great worlds.

Guh.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable spat out a mouthful of blood.

By forcefully changing his attack direction, he had to endure the backlash of the killer move.

The lightning giant that had been powerful and unstoppable was no longer shining, it dimmed by a lot.

The battle of the two venerables came to a halt at this moment.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable breathed roughly while Limitless Demon Venerable’s will was protected by countless chains, he fell into deep thought.

At the crucial moment, he saw the former’s true nature.

“I can open the pathway and let you enter to take a look.” A moment later, Limitless Demon Venerable’s will said.

“What?” Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was surprised.

But he immediately understood the reason, blood traces were still lingering on Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s lips, with his relatively severe injuries, he could not heal them in the short period.

He chuckled: “Then what are we waiting for?”

Limitless Demon Venerable’s will opened a path as he led Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable into the ninth layer of Crazed Demon Cave.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable first saw a large mountain that was black and white in color.

“This is the Book Mountain recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>?” Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable dispelled his lightning giant killer move, he expressed his surprise.

Limitless’ will smiled: “Book Mountain is one of the cores, with it, this crazed demon ninth void formation can continue to grow. Each time a new genius Gu cultivator appears in the world, they would help with the progress of their respective path, Book Mountain will absorb the new knowledge and develop the crazed demon ninth void formation to continuously improve and develop.”

“Initially, the eighth layer’s void was very small, there were no worlds at all. But afterwards, as rule path, phantom path, and refinement path developed in the five regions, this place also continued to expand and grow.”

“Small worlds first appeared, before they quickly increased in number. Reckless Savage Demon Venerable left behind Savage Wilderness Great World, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable created his Green Lotus Dao field, greatly promoting the growth of the crazed demon ninth void formation. In time, living beings will be created and destroyed alongside the small worlds, no longer limited to the current two great worlds.”

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable went deeper, he started to see blocks of floating ice, they had various sizes and all sorts of strange shapes.

“This is the truthful floating ice? No wonder I did not find them when exploring the River of Time, so it was you who found and kept them here.” Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable realized.

And finally, he arrived at the deepest part of Crazed Demon Cave.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable showed a downcast expression, he felt very disappointed: “Space Door is not here after all.”

Limitless’ will did not lie to him.

Limitless’ will said: “Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, if you do not believe me, you can continue to look. Space Door is not here.”

“How can I find Space Door? That is my only hope of returning home!” Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable inquired.

Limitless’ will shook his head: “If I knew about it, why would I need to fight you earlier? Oh Thieving Heaven, please go back, what you seek is not here.”

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was in a daze, he did not speak for some time.

“No... maybe, this is what I am looking for?” Suddenly, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable emitted a peculiar laugh.

His expression was twisted, his eyes were blood red, his tone and mannerism of speech had changed completely, his voice was hoarse as if this was another person speaking.

“Oh no!” Limitless’ will had a change of expression too.

The thing he was worried about the most had still happened in the end.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable continued to speak in a hoarse voice: “If I am not wrong, hehehe, this is the place where the world boundary of the Gu cultivation world is at its thinnest. Oh Limitless Demon Venerable, your crazed demon ninth void formation is using this place to pierce through the world boundary and bring those things that are beyond the world to act as the raw materials. That is how the eighth layer developed these great and small worlds, right?”

“Say, if I were to break this boundary and leave the Gu cultivation world entirely, will I be able to find a way back?” Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable said that as his eyes widened, the aura of excitement and insanity grew more intensely on his body.

Limitless’ will replied solemnly: “Impossible!”

“You are a Gu Venerable yourself, do you not know the power of those things beyond the world? You have already experienced their strength, haven’t you?”

“How long do you think you can last outside?”

“The venerable is the strongest person in the world, but even if you can last a long time, you will reach your limit eventually.”

“Can you be sure that you will coincidentally find your original world before you reach your limit?”

“You need to know, you are not the only otherworldly demon, the worlds outside of the Gu cultivation world are more than just your original world.”

“But!” Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable raised his hands as he shouted: “But do you know? Do you know how much I want to return?!”

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable then lowered his head, his fingers stabbing into his hair as his eyes were hollow, he muttered: “Do you know how tough it has been for me?”

“When I was a mortal, I told myself that if I became a Gu Master, I will be able to find a way home.”

“When I became a Gu Master, I told myself that after becoming a Gu Immortal, I will be able to find a way home.”

“After becoming a Gu Immortal, I consoled myself again, if I become venerable, I will be able to go home.”

“But now, I am already a venerable! And yet, I cannot find Space Door! Where is Space Door?”

“Even if I find Space Door, can it really let me return home?”

“Gu Venerables are the strongest! There is no road ahead of me anymore. Sometimes, I will dream of Space Door, I dreamed that I found Space Door but realized it was completely useless.”

“Whenever I wake up from such a nightmare, I will be covered in cold sweat.”

“I admit that I am afraid, I am afraid that I cannot find Space Door, I am afraid that the truth behind it will send me into utter despair.”

“Can you understand my feelings?”

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s breathing became rougher, he looked at the deepest part of Crazed Demon Cave, the thinnest part of the world boundary.

He suddenly laughed, his eyes lit up as he said in a hoarse voice: “So let me take a risk now! I will pierce this world!”

“Stop it!!” Limitless’ will shouted.

He was already prepared, he used his full strength to stop him.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was instantly trapped by the surrounding chains.

But at the next moment, another Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable appeared in front of him, he raised his arms high and slammed down fiercely.

Boom!

With a loud sound, the world boundary was broken, the most terrifying tribulation in the world descended!

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable went out of the broken hole immediately.

But Limitless’ will no longer had the time to pursue him, he tried his best to seal the broken boundary.

But terrifying tribulations were spewing out of the hole, Limitless’ chains could not resist them, they could not even get close.

After a few breaths of time, the hole expanded to twice of its original size.

“The situation is critical, if we do not mend this hole now, the entire world will be destroyed. Please lend me a hand!” Limitless’ will shouted loudly.

Reckless Savage’s will flew out of Savage Wilderness Great World, bringing with him countless fierce beasts.

Genesis Lotus’ will flew out of Green Lotus Great World, bringing along countless trees and grasses.

The power of three venerables could only maintain the situation, they could not fix this hole!

The hole did not expand but the three venerables were already dead, just the power left behind by their main body could not salvage the situation.

As the three venerables’ power weakened, their expressions turned unsightly.

“To think that the world is going to be destroyed.” Genesis Lotus’ will smiled bitterly.

Limitless’ will sighed: “I should not have taken the risk to let him in.”

“No.” Reckless Savage’s will said grimly: “In that situation, even if all three of us took action, we could not stop Thieving Heaven, after all, we cannot take his life. Even if we force him away several times, he can still come back and challenge us until our strength is depleted.”

“This is all my fault, Limitless, release me, I can help you.” Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable said regretfully.

One Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had left through the broken boundary, while another Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was still trapped by Limitless Demon Venerable’s chains.

“You?” Genesis Lotus’ will was surprised.

“Who is the one who left earlier?” Reckless Savage’s will asked.

“That is Sha Xiao.” Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable smiled bitterly: “He is my Dao Guardian. He is also...”

The situation was urgent, Limitless’ will interrupted him, asking: “What plan do you have?”

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable said: “Do you know why fate Gu’s control over otherworldly demons is limited? That is because every otherworldly demon who comes into this world will carry their original world’s insignia. Those are otherworldly dao marks.”

“Next, I will use the otherworldly space path dao marks on my body to create a subspace and block this hole. Using the opportunity, I want you all to use your full strength and quickly mend it!”

Without hesitation, Limitless’ will retracted his chains: “Go ahead.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2172: Demonization

Crazed Demon Cave, eighth layer.

Large and small worlds were rapidly fusing together, all sorts of calamities and tribulations were rampaging in the worlds.

The fighting between Gu Immortals was also extremely heated.

Weaklings would lose their lives from the shockwaves of clashes between experts, strong individuals were also unable to defend themselves in this huge chaotic battle, they were like small boats facing a tsunami, with slight carelessness, they would be overturned and face death.

“Weak, too weak.”

“Who else can stop me?”

“Die!!!”

“Hahaha!”

Bu Tian Kong continued to provoke its enemies, it charged unhindered, nobody on the battlefield could stop it.

It was favored by the innate luck of Crazed Demon Cave to begin with, under the effect of endless learning, its attainment level rose sharply. Afterwards, it received Heavenly Court’s help and gained Immortal Gu and killer moves, its strength rose explosively.

Nie Kuang Feng and Duan Hu were also like it, at this moment, the three of them were the strongest Gu Immortals shining in this battlefield.

“Vile beast, don’t think you can act so arrogantly!” Fang Yuan’s four rank eight subordinates surrounded rock monkey Bu Tian Kong.

Bu Tian Kong instantly felt pressure as it stretched out its tongue, licking its lips with excitement and cruelty shining in its eyes: “Very good, you have nice numbers. Who are you guys?”

“Lightning Lion!” Lightning Lion Warrior said as he activated a transformation path killer move, turning into the Lightning Lion Warrior that had a lion head and human body.

“Remember me, I am Dharma!” Dharma Lion Warrior also activated his transformation method, turning into a lion head and human body warrior.

“Steel Rush.” Steel Rush Warrior turned into a rhino person.

“Frost Butterfly.” Frost Butterfly Warrior shrank in size, becoming the size of an adult’s fist, it had a human shape with butterfly wings and could let out powerful frost energy.

In Gu Immortal combat, individuals often fought alone.

But these four Gu Immortals cultivated transformation path, they did not have conflicting dao marks, furthermore, they were familiar with each other, they had all originated from Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

They originally had rank seven cultivation level, but with Fang Yuan’s help, they all became rank eight.

Immediately, the four warriors surrounded Bu Tian Kong, they fought intensely.

Their battle went on until the sky turned dark, as if they could go on until the sun and moon lost their luster.

Bu Tian Kong was encircled and its injuries intensified, but it was getting more ferocious in combat.

Fists, legs, head, body, knees, elbows, all of these body parts were Bu Tian Kong’s weapons.

Fist shadows flashed as collisions occurred, Bu Tian Kong would send one person flying each time. But the four were transformation path experts, their bodies were tough and sturdy, even though they were sent flying, they would quickly return and maintain the encirclement, giving Bu Tian Kong huge pressure.

The battle of the five went from the sky to the ground, before going back to the sky again.

Everywhere they went, other Gu Immortals dodged with all their might.

“Awesome, awesome!”

“Again, again!”

Bu Tian Kong got more and more excited, it felt its mind becoming clearer as all sorts of inspiration of killer moves surged internally, the barriers that it felt before were starting to loosen.

It was one of the three luck children of Crazed Demon Cave’s eighth layer, its talent and aptitude were superb and unmatched.

The strong external pressure were an opportunity to squeeze out even more of its potential in this situation.

The rock monkey got fiercer and fiercer, it was originally not proficient with Heavenly Court’s killer moves, but now, it had already mastered them, it even fused the moves into its own combat style.

“This rock monkey is terrifying, even with the four of us working together, we cannot kill it.” Lightning Lion and the rest were feeling worried.

Even though they were still encircling the rock monkey, they felt that they were trying to suppress a volcano.

The volcano was storing up strength at the moment, turning external pressure into its own driving force. Once it reached its limit, the volcano would erupt, the commotion would shock the world, it would retaliate with a fatal attack.

“Quick, kill him!”

“Make use of master’s method, let the tribulations wear it down!”

The four immortals communicated in secret, their cooperation also got smoother.

All along, Fang Yuan’s heaven envies heroic geniuses killer move had been exerting its effect.

The tribulations were used by him to target Bu Tian Kong, Nie Kuang Feng, and the rest.

Of course, most of the tribulations were a form of refinement path method to refine the various small worlds, and the conflicting dao marks between the great worlds.

Especially with the eruption of tribulations within and outside small worlds.

These explosions caused small worlds to be destroyed and completely fuse with the three great worlds.

During this process, Savage Wilderness Great World had the greatest gains.

However, there was a small world that acted independently, it was ‘outstanding’ among the small worlds, no matter how the tribulations attacked it, it remained unmoved.

It was Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space.

Ordinary small worlds were spherical bubbles, while Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space was cubic with sharp edges.

No matter what the tribulations did, it remained in its original shape.

Within Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s gaze was already on this true inheritance space of Thieving Heaven.

“Otherworldly Demon.” He snorted, memories surfacing in his mind as his expression turned unpleasant.

Back then, Giant Sun became an Immortal Venerable, he went into Crazed Demon Cave’s eighth layer and learned of the true details regarding the four venerables repairing the world.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had disregarded the entire Gu cultivation world for his selfish desire, he almost caused the world to be destroyed.

Even though he extracted his own otherworldly space path dao marks at the crucial moment to seal the gaping hole by creating a subspace, the crack was already created, it could not be mended fully.

The other three venerable wills gave it their all and paid a huge price.

Other than Limitless’ will, Genesis Lotus’ and Reckless Savage’s wills had to fall into deep slumber afterwards.

Using the opportunity, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable got rid of Reckless Savage’s will and took over the control of Savage Wilderness Great World.

“When Thieving Heaven left behind this true inheritance, other than to seal the hole he made, he had a deeper motive, that was to leave it for the crucial person three hundred thousand years later — Gu Yue Fang Yuan.”

“However, I made my move in advance to dismantle a portion of the true inheritance, I obtained the killer move perfect pair and imitation Gu.”

Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space paid a huge price to block the hole back then, it became flawed and was not intact anymore.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun thought about the situation.

“Since Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance has appeared, with Fang Yuan’s possession of self luck true inheritance, he can use luck inspection to find out that this is his fortuitous encounter.”

“He will definitely go there.”

“And Heavenly Court will send troops to stop him.”

“The greatest enemy is still Heavenly Court!”

Heavenly Court had the initiative, they were maintaining their advantage. Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was a luck path cultivator, he could not match true experts of wisdom path in deductions.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun decided to watch Fang Yuan’s conflict with Heavenly Court and try to reap the gains of their fight. The main thing was to deal a heavy blow to Heavenly Court!

Peak of Book Mountain.

Fairy Yu Xiu, Qin Ding Ling, and the rest were also looking at Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space.

“Thieving Heaven’s space has appeared. Since it could block the hole back then, it would not be destroyed by the tribulations within this void. We need to deal with it quickly, it is becoming our obstruction.” Fairy Yu Xiu said.

“Hmm?” Qin Ding Ling suddenly received important information, she quickly said: “Our informant in Yellow Earth Great World said that Fang Yuan has already gone to Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space. But Longevity Heaven is very quiet, they are not doing anything.”

Fairy Yu Xiu was not surprised: “Of course he would go, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable left behind this true inheritance for him after all. As for Immortal Zombie Giant Sun who is in Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, he will go there as well.”

Saying so, Fairy Yu Xiu smiled: “Qin Ding Ling.”

“Yes.” Qin Ding Ling replied solemnly.

“Let’s go. We will go find Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun.” Fairy Yu Xiu stood up gradually.

Excitement flashed in Qin Ding Ling’s eyes, she said hesitantly: “Don’t we have to mind Limitless Demon Venerable’s retaliative method anymore?”

“Don’t worry, Thieving Heaven’s space is not part of Limitless Demon Venerable’s arrangements, he needs us to destroy it or have Fang Yuan inherit it so that it will disappear. This space is an obstruction to Limitless’ derivation, he will be more than happy to see us destroy it.” Fairy Yu Xiu answered.

Heavenly Court’s troops moved out!

Divine Emperor City brought Fairy Yu Xiu, Qin Ding Ling, and others along as they departed from Book Mountain.

At the same time, Demon Judgment Board moved with Fairy Ming Hao and Gu Yue Fang Zheng inside, they also left the front lines.

Even though Green Lotus Great World was facing the attack of Longevity Heaven and Fang Yuan, because of Fairy Yu Xiu’s earlier actions, Heavenly Court had many mutant Gu Immortals joining them like Bu Tian Kong, Nie Kuang Feng, and Duan Hu.

These Gu Immortals forced Yellow Earth Great World and Savage Wilderness Great World into a disadvantage.

Immortal killer move — Spiraling Green Leaf Blade!

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Countless flying leaves moved like blades as they spiraled towards Nie Kuang Feng from all directions.

Nie Kuang Feng laughed wildly, its body moving agilely between the flying leaves, dodging while also directly charging past the blades that it could not avoid.

It turned into a tornado at times, the wind blades around it were very sharp and thin.

Xiao He Jian gritted his teeth, he watched as Nie Kuang Feng approached rapidly, feeling intense pressure in his mind.

He had already fought Nie Kuang Feng for several minutes now.

Even though heaven envies heroic geniuses could restrain Nie Kuang Feng, it could not kill him. Nie Kuang Feng had Heavenly Court’s help and managed to recover quickly, it was now treating Xiao He Jian as its own prey.

“Die!” Nie Kuang Feng shouted.

“You fell for it!” At the crucial moment, two figures appeared beside Xiao He Jian.

One was a miniman Gu Immortal, Green Forest Great Sage, the other was Black Locust, the owner of Giant Locust grotto-heaven, who was also another wood path cultivator.

Xiao He Jian’s killer move changed at once as the three immortals cooperated, their strength grew explosively.

Flying leaf blades turned into seeds that were planted on Nie Kuang Feng’s body.

Countless vines started to grow from them, tying Nie Kuang Feng up tightly.

Nie Kuang Feng was a tornado to begin with but these vines were still capable of binding it, interrupting its immortal essence usage.

Thus, Nie Kuang Feng’s killer moves could not be sustained for long, the immortal essence flow became unsteady and the power of the moves fell to rock bottom.

More and more vines appeared, growing longer and longer, they almost covered Nie Kuang Feng completely, leaving no gaps at all.

“Don’t... force me.” Nie Kuang Feng struggled but it was getting weaker.

“We finally caught this guy!” Black Locust was overjoyed.

The three wood path Gu Immortals looked at each other, showing expressions of joy.

Xiao He Jian was very happy now, because Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch lost to Nie Kuang Feng earlier, while he defeated the latter. Comparing the two, it allowed Xiao He Jian to suppress Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch.

But at this moment, Nie Kuang Feng’s aura started to become quite peculiar and strange.

The vines had already turned into a huge ball, but Nie Kuang Feng’s voice could still be heard from within: “I am going to demonize... every time I fall into a desperate predicament, I will demonize.”

“I don’t want to undergo demonization.”

“Because once I demonize, I will lose my consciousness until I destroy and kill everyone and everything in the world that I am in!”

“But you guys forced me, you forced my hand...”

“Ahhhhhhh!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2173: Perish with the Wind!

“Ahhhhhhh!”

Nie Kuang Feng shouted loudly, the louder its voice, the stronger its aura, it soon reached a shocking and unprecedented level.

Boom!

With a loud sound, the vines were torn into countless pieces.

Nie Kuang Feng regained its freedom.

But currently, it was not a deep green tornado, it had turned into a reddish brown demonic wind.

Intense winds blew, it instantly crossed several thousand steps of distance, arriving before Green Forest Great Sage.

Green Forest Great Sage had already used his defensive killer move, but after the reddish brown demonic wind devoured him, his aura quickly weakened before completely dying after a few breaths of time.

The demonic wind stopped for a moment, it was like a shark that could smell blood as it charged towards Black Locust who was nearby.

“Be careful!” Xiao He Jian quickly moved to help.

But after a few rounds, the demonic wind still managed to kill Black Locust.

The demonic wind finally targeted Xiao He Jian.

Xiao He Jian could not match Nie Kuang Feng, he had to retreat as he fought.

After a few rounds of combat, his tiny face showed a grim expression, his forehead was covered in sweat.

The aura of defeat and death was getting denser.

Rumble!

Lightning tribulations continued to strike but Nie Kuang Feng did not care about them, it was terrifyingly strong.

Elsewhere.

“Stop!” Lu Wei Yin shouted.

But Bu Tian Kong’s fist still landed, smashing Steel Rush Warrior’s skull into mush.

Thereafter, Bu Tian Kong growled, Steel Rush Warrior’s soul was shattered.

Steel Rush Warrior could not be more dead, his headless corpse fell from the sky like a broken rag doll.

Be it his body or immortal aperture, they were absorbed by the great world as nutrients.

“Who else?!” Bu Tian Kong raised its head and roared, it was overflowing with fighting spirit, rivaling the nine heavens and resounding in the world.

At this point, the four rank eight Gu Immortals attacking it were all dead, they were mercilessly killed in a horrific manner.

Lu Wei Yin sighed as he flew towards the rock monkey.

The rock monkey stared at him fiercely: “Are you the next one? Very good, I will kill you, even if you are Yellow Earth Great World’s sage!”

Lu Wei Yin shook his head: “I am no sage. Bu Tian Kong, your killing intent is too overbearing.”

Lu Wei Yin had to take action against Bu Tian Kong personally.

Bu Tian Kong killed too many Gu Immortals, if it was not stopped, the overall situation of this Gu Immortal battle would be affected.

Boom boom boom!

Lu Wei Yin and Bu Tian Kong exchanged blows.

This time, Bu Tian Kong was finally suppressed.

Even though it was strong and could kill many rank eight Gu Immortals, it was still not pseudo venerable level. In contrast, even though Lu Wei Yin lacked offense, his defense was firmly in the realm of pseudo venerable level.

Lu Wei Yin endured Bu Tian Kong’s fierce attacks with much energy to spare.

“You are not a sage, yet you are so strong already?! Good, very good!”

“Come and attack me, try and kill me, I have not sensed any fatal killing intent against me for some time already.”

“Why are you not attacking? Why do you only defend yourself?”

“Are your attacks so weak and useless? You are too disappointing!!”

The rock monkey continued to shout as it moved rapidly like lightning in the sky, its attacks were like furious lightning bolts from heaven, its power was rising endlessly.

But Lu Wei Yin got distracted.

Because he heard that Fang Yuan had already left for Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space at the center.

“Oh no!”

“Lord Fang Yuan, please stop.”

“Even though that small world might contain Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance, it will be targeted by Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven together.”

“Heavenly Court has already sent their main troops, there are many Immortal Gu Houses and Gu Immortals. Longevity Heaven has also sent Calamity Luck Altar.”

“Now is not the time for a climactic battle, if Star Constellation Immortal Venerable attacks Paradise Earth’s tomb while you are away, what will we do?”

Lu Wei Yin transmitted time and again, but Fang Yuan did not even respond to it.

Lu Wei Yin gritted his teeth, his expression turning unsightly.

“No matter how strong Fang Yuan is, he is still just a pseudo venerable, he is not a true venerable.”

“I need to help him!”

“If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable shows up and kills him, who will protect Paradise Earth’s tomb, who will stall for the crucial time?”

While thinking of this, Lu Wei Yin’s vision suddenly turned dark.

Bam.

At the next moment, rock monkey Bu Tian Kong’s fist landed squarely on Lu Wei Yin’s face.

“You dare to be distracted? You are looking down on me, you will pay a terrible price!” Bu Tian Kong shouted.

Bu Tian Kong flew towards Lu Wei Yin as they got closer again.

Lu Wei Yin was forced to retreat, he quickly used his killer move.

It started to rain.

Tribulation rain fell on Bu Tian Kong’s body, greatly slowing it down while also corroding its defenses.

At the same time, Lu Wei Yin’s killer move showed effect.

Yellowish brown dust started to appear below Bu Tian Kong, they moved around and gradually sealed it.

“Get lost, get lost!” Bu Tian Kong shouted, using killer moves in a frenzy, trying to sweep away all of the rain and dust surrounding it.

But the rain and dust gathered together increasingly, eventually sealing it entirely.

A lump of soil that trapped Bu Tian Kong fell from the sky, after landing on the ground, it turned into a huge soil mountain.

“Just stay put here.” Lu Wei Yin immediately flew towards Thieving Heaven’s space.

“No!”

“I won’t give in, these things cannot hold me down!”

“Roar—!”

Bu Tian Kong shouted, its voice resounding like thunder as it reverberated in the battlefield.

With a loud sound, the mountain was shattered, dust clouds emerged, from within the broken rocks, it flew out again.

“What?” Lu Wei Yin was stunned.

Bu Tian Kong’s performance was out of his expectation, how could it escape so quickly?

Bu Tian Kong resisted the tribulations while flying to catch up to Lu Wei Yin.

Boom!

The two exchanged killer moves again, while Lu Wei Yin was held back this time.

“This monkey’s killer moves are getting stronger, so that’s it.” Lu Wei Yin understood at this moment.

The tribulations were aiding Bu Tian Kong all along, as long as it was not killed, it would continue to undergo tribulations and gain more dao marks, that was why Bu Tian Kong got increasingly stronger as it fought.

“I want this heaven... to no longer shroud my vision!” Bu Tian Kong shouted as it used a move that shot out a rainbow, sweeping away the dark clouds of the surrounding five hundred li.

“I want this earth... to no longer bury my heart!” Bu Tian Kong shouted as it stomped on the ground, mountains collapsed, as Lu Wei Yin, who had his defensive method broken through, watched in surprise.

Bu Tian Kong was already in a state of insanity, it found Fang Yuan who was not far away, it abandoned Lu Wei Yin and went for Fang Yuan instead!

“Be careful!” Lu Wei Yin quickly advised: “This monkey is not simple.”

Fang Yuan did not turn around, it was as if he heard nothing, he only looked at the subspace in front of him.

Bu Tian Kong moved rapidly and seemingly teleported behind Fang Yuan.

“I want all life... to understand my intention! I want this sage... to perish with the wind!!” Bu Tian Kong shouted, activating the strongest killer move it had used in its life.

Winds, clouds, and thunder roared, the world changed colors at this moment!

“Hmm?” Fang Yuan turned around slightly, waving his hand lightly towards the back.

At the next moment, Bu Tian Kong fell like a comet, crossing the entire battlefield and slamming into several mountains.

After a chain of loud explosions, it created a huge gorge of several kilometers on the ground.

Finally, it lay on the ground, its eyes were wide open but it did not move at all.

It was dead.

The unceasing chaotic battles and heated battlefields turned silent at this moment.

Nie Kuang Feng, who was unstoppable and killing everything in its path, froze in its reddish brown demonic wind state.

Fang Yuan cast his glance upon it.

Nie Kuang Feng shuddered immediately.

At the next moment, endless fear filled its mind and body!

“I will die, I will die, I am going to die!!”

It went out of its demonized state, immediately gaining clarity.

“Escape!!”

It quickly flew away, ignoring its opponent, Xiao He Jian.

Xiao He Jian was heavily injured and was on the verge of death, he had no way to fight back, with just one attack, he would die.

He stared with a dumbfounded look as Nie Kuang Feng escaped from the battlefield in a crazed state.

Fang Yuan turned around again, looking at Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space with a calm expression.

He turned to look at Heavenly Court’s army, Divine Emperor City and Demon Judgment Board were arriving soon.

He looked at the other side.

Longevity Heaven’s Calamity Luck Altar shined with a golden aurora, it was arriving too.

A cold and ruthless light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes for a moment, he turned into a white ray of light as he entered Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space.

“Charge, we will fight inside!” Fairy Yu Xiu immediately ordered.

Once Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu Houses arrived, they also entered Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space.

They could not use their full strength outside, if they went past the limit, they would face Limitless Demon Venerable’s retaliative method.

At the same time, it was easier to destroy Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space from the inside.

Fang Yuan’s vision changed rapidly, when he regained his sight, he was already in this true inheritance space.

Every true inheritance space that Thieving Heaven left behind could be considered an artificial secluded domain.

This was a strange space, it had warm lights but no mountains, rivers, wind, or land, it was completely empty.

But there were some peculiarities in here, there were black lines that extended everywhere, covering every inch of the space.

These lines were either thick or thin, they all gave off a terrifying aura that Fang Yuan felt fearful towards.

At the same time, he felt familiarity in this aura.

He quickly thought of the mysterious black fire in the blue dragon whale’s grotto-heaven.

Even though Fang Yuan did not know what happened three hundred thousand years ago, after seeing this, he realized immediately: “It seems that this true inheritance space is going to collapse soon. I need to quickly comprehend the mysteries here and decipher where the true inheritance really is.”

The last time he entered a true inheritance space of Thieving Heaven, he obtained ghostly concealment.

That time, Fang Yuan went in through open door Gu and close door Gu. At that time, the true inheritance space was very stable, it had many winds of assimilation tornadoes inside. Only an otherworldly demon could dispel the wind by touching them.

Because of that, Fang Yuan accidentally saved Feng Jiu Ge.

After all the tornadoes had vanished, Fang Yuan successfully obtained ghostly concealment, it was a smooth process.

But this space was different.

There were no tornadoes at all, if Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance really existed here, it would be hidden deeply and would require deductions.

But Fang Yuan was not rushing to make deductions, he took out a formation from his immortal aperture and placed it within this space.

It was the five regional limit formation.

The five regional limit formation activated, five colored smoke spewed out.

In a few breaths of time, five colored smoke spread out in the surrounding ten li, it was so dense that one could not see their own fingers.

After Heavenly Court’s troops entered Thieving Heaven’s space, they went inside the five colored smoke and immediately felt suppressed.

“These are... the five region’s regional walls?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2174: I Became Handsome, I Became Stronger!

“Why are the five regional walls mixed together in here?!”

“Is this an arrangement of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space?”

“No, this is Fang Yuan’s five restriction profound light qi, he had modified it, it is as if the five regional walls are replicated.” Fairy Yu Xiu quickly deduced.

Fang Yuan’s five restriction profound light qi and five regional limit formation were exposed during the fate war, with these clues, it was not an issue for a wisdom path great expert like Fairy Yu Xiu to deduce.

Boom!

Fang Yuan suddenly appeared, his killer move landing on Demon Judgment Board.

Demon Judgment Board was instantly swept away deep into the dense fog.

“We cannot fight here, Fang Yuan has the sovereign immortal body, he is unrestricted!” Gu Yue Fang Zheng shouted.

“Originally, the five regional walls had disappeared completely, to think that Fang Yuan would reproduce them, it seems that he has been preparing for this battle for a long time.” Fairy Ming Hao gritted her teeth before ordering: “Find the five regional limit formation and destroy it!”

Southern restriction purple-black miasma light qi, central restriction white-gold saint light qi, northern restriction jade licorice light qi, western restriction red raging flame light qi, and eastern restriction blue water light qi. They were all different now, having being elevated to a whole new level, they were already on par with the five regional walls that existed in the past.

Back then when Tao Zhu researched on the five regional walls, he created the methods of five regional limit formation and five restriction profound light qi.

Fang Yuan used the foundation of his life’s research and made a breakthrough, he reached a height that Tao Zhu had never seen in his life.

Fang Yuan had the sovereign immortal body, he was completely unaffected in the five regional walls, other Gu Immortals, however, were restricted by the regional walls, no matter what Gu worms they used, they would have to face a backlash.

With this difference, Fang Yuan’s advantage was too huge, Heavenly Court did not want to see this situation.

In the past, they would not be affected by central restriction white-gold saint light qi, but now was different, with the merging of the five regions and the rampage of qi tides, the entire world’s aura has been unified, Gu Immortals were no longer differentiated by regions.

And this new combined aura of the five regions was not any of the previous five regional qi.

Thus, no matter which region the Gu Immortal came from, they would be suppressed within this five restriction profound light qi.

Boom boom boom!

Fang Yuan dealt a heavy blow to Divine Emperor City, causing this huge city’s green surface layer of light to shake and tremble.

But Divine Emperor City was too huge, even Fang Yuan could not destroy it for now.

From Divine Emperor City, a female immortal flew out, she was a young lady with a beautiful appearance, it was Fairy Yu Xiu.

She surged with battle intent as she went to Fang Yuan: “Gu Yue Fang Yuan, do you dare to fight me?”

At this time, another Immortal Gu House arrived in Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space.

It was Longevity Heaven’s Calamity Luck Altar.

Bing Sai Chuan’s voice resounded from within: “Fang Yuan, why don’t we join hands and dismantle this Divine Emperor City first!”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly and replied: “No, currently, Demon Judgment Board has been thrown into the five regional walls, while Divine Emperor City is too big and hard to send flying. Your side will stall Divine Emperor City while I will go and destroy Demon Judgment Board!”

“Fang Yuan...” Bing Sai Chuan wanted to urge him.

But Fang Yuan turned around and went into the five colored smoke without hesitation.

“Ignore him, our target is Divine Emperor City!” Within Calamity Luck Altar, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun sat at the main seat as he ordered.

“Yes, master!” Bing Sai Chuan immediately moved Calamity Luck Altar, which crashed towards Divine Emperor City like a comet.

Fairy Yu Xiu gritted her teeth, she had to defend it.

Lu Wei Yin also arrived at this moment.

“Lord Fang Yuan!” He only managed to see Fang Yuan’s figure disappearing into the five colored smoke.

“Sigh!” Lu Wei Yin sighed deeply, he did not dare to enter the five colored smoke deeply, he had to communicate with Bing Sai Chuan and attack Divine Emperor City instead.

The five regional limit formation continued to function as five colored smoke poured out endlessly.

Within the dense smoke, Demon Judgment Board charged everywhere, trying to find the location of the formation. Outside the dense smoke, Divine Emperor City and Calamity Luck Altar fought intensely.

“Found it!” Inside Demon Judgment Board, Fairy Ming Hao’s eyes suddenly opened.

She was a pseudo venerable level wisdom path great expert, her full strength was nothing short of extraordinary.

But this deduction also dealt heavy damage to her, after all, she was using wisdom path killer moves in the five regional walls.

“Good, if we destroy this formation, we will be ruining one of Fang Yuan’s trump cards!” Gu Yue Fang Zheng flew with great morale, charging with Demon Judgment Board.

The five colored smoke became denser as Demon Judgment Board’s luster became dimmer, Gu Yue Fang Zheng was sustaining a huge backlash, his face soon turned pale as blood oozed out of his mouth.

Boom boom boom!

Fang Yuan found them and used killer moves continuously with terrifying strength.

Demon Judgment Board was facing greater difficulty in defending itself, it moved precariously ahead.

“Ignore him, destroy the formation!” Fairy Ming Hao’s child-like appearance was filled with boldness and determination.

Demon Judgment Board paused for a moment before shooting out a blood red beam of light.

The blood red light was thick and powerful, it landed on the formation with an extremely fast speed.

The surface of the five regional limit formation radiated with five colored lights, it shook slightly but did not collapse.

“How can this be?” Within Demon Judgment Board, Fang Zheng was very shocked.

He was clear of this move’s power, even within the five regional walls, it should not be this weak.

Fairy Ming Hao understood the reason immediately, her pupils shrank slightly: “Fang Yuan invested a lot into this formation, it has at least eight rank eight Immortal Gu and the defense is high, we cannot destroy it in a short period of time!”

The five regional limit formation used Region and Limit as the cores originally, as well as a vast number of mortal Gu.

Afterwards, Fang Yuan added earth vein Immortal Gu, followed by Formation Spirit and Formation Flag.

During the fate war, these Immortal Gu were mostly rank seven.

But the current Fang Yuan was different, while recuperating, he did not just modify the five regional limit formation again by raising its defense, he even raised all of the Immortal Gu in this formation to rank eight.

His wealth was simply unimaginable!

The full powered attack of Demon Judgment Board could not even remove one layer of the five regional limit formation’s defense. In fact, because they activated a powerful killer move, the backlash was even greater.

This famous rank eight Immortal Gu House was now covered in cracks, it was near the point of breaking apart.

“What should we do now?” Fang Zheng could not help but be flustered internally.

Fang Yuan was attacking outside and giving him huge pressure. Their goal of trying to destroy the five regional limit formation was also impossible now.

“I advise that we retreat!” Fang Zheng gritted his teeth, suggesting to Fairy Ming Hao.

Fairy Ming Hao nodded: “Fighting here is too unfavorable. But it is fine, destroying this formation was only one attempt, even if we fail, there is no consequence on the eventual outcome. Let’s go!”

Fairy Ming Hao left Demon Judgment Board and opened her immortal aperture’s entrance, storing this Immortal Gu House.

Next, in front of Fang Yuan’s surprised gaze, she vanished on the spot!

Soon, Lu Wei Yin, who was fighting outside, transmitted to Fang Yuan that Fairy Ming Hao had suddenly appeared beside Fairy Yu Xiu, he also asked about the situation on Fang Yuan’s end.

“The two pseudo venerables Ming Hao and Yu Xiu are able to teleport to each other instantly?” Fang Yuan guessed.

Fairy Ming Hao did not succeed in destroying his five regional limit formation, while Fang Yuan also failed to destroy Demon Judgment Board.

In essence, this was a draw, Fang Yuan might have a slight upper hand.

But the situation was still stuck in a deadlock.

“As long as the five regional limit formation is still functioning, five colored smoke will continue to spread and fill the entire true inheritance space.”

“But this will take too long, neither Heavenly Court nor Longevity Heaven will want to stay in here until then.”

Fang Yuan pondered rapidly.

The five regional limit formation was not a battlefield killer move, it could not restrain people, they could enter and exit freely.

It would take too long for the five colored smoke to fill Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space, during this period of time, Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance might be discovered by someone, or the space might collapse because of the intense fights.

Fang Yuan flew out rapidly, leaving the five colored smoke, he went to the battlefield of Divine Emperor City and Calamity Luck Altar.

On one hand, he was wary of Heavenly Court’s deduction ability, similar to his refinement path attainment, Heavenly Court’s wisdom path attainment was a huge advantage for them. Fang Yuan had to restrain them from having the time to deduce the true inheritance’s location.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan had to join the battle and make deductions in his mind as well.

Divine Emperor City floated in the sky while spreading green light, it was grand and imposing, remaining unmovable.

Calamity Luck Altar was like a golden comet, Bing Sai Chuan manipulated it to its limit, it flew around Divine Emperor City continuously, launching all sorts of attacks.

Between the two Immortal Gu Houses, four pseudo venerables, Fang Yuan, Lu Wei Yin, Ming Hao, and Yu Xiu were fighting.

The two sides were first evenly matched, but soon, Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin fell into a disadvantage.

Fairy Ming Hao and Fairy Yu Xiu were very powerful, they each had a mature combat system.

Fairy Ming Hao’s flying stars seemed like a singular move but they were all consecutive moves. By repeatedly hitting the same target, Fang Yuan would have to endure increasing damage each time.

Fairy Yu Xiu’s methods were also very profound, she used her attainment level to suppress others. It was hard for ordinary Gu Immortals to find a countermeasure.

Lu Wei Yin fell into a tough battle due to Fairy Yu Xiu’s focus on him.

While Fang Yuan also had a taste of the power of Fairy Ming Hao’s pride Gu.

Thoughts collided in Fang Yuan’s mind with great issues, many powerful and complex killer moves could not be used, the risks were too great.

And most importantly, Ming Hao and Yu Xiu had incredibly well coordinated cooperation.

Their coordination was extraordinary, Fang Yuan had never seen anything like it before.

Because of this, while Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin worked together, they were suppressed by the two fairies.

“The cooperation of Yu Xiu and Ming Hao has produced a qualitative change, if I fought alone, I would have lost already!” Lu Wei Yin had a solemn mood.

The opponents were working together impeccably, their cooperation was simply not humanly possible, they gave off a natural feeling, as if it was only reasonable for them to work together this perfectly.

While Ming Hao and Yu Xiu fought against Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin, they even had time to help Divine Emperor City resist Calamity Luck Altar.

“Fang Yuan, you want Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance?” Fairy Yu Xiu smiled: “Then you need to know that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had once been here and damaged Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space, he took out a portion of the true inheritance by force. Thankfully, you are allies, you can ask for it.”

Fairy Yu Xiu easily tried to sow discord.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly as he said to Lu Wei Yin: “Go deal with Divine Emperor City, I will handle these two.”

“Lord Fang Yuan, without me, if you fight alone...” Lu Wei Yin was hesitant.

Fang Yuan looked at him coldly: “Leave, you are hindering me.”

Lu Wei Yin gritted his teeth as he flew away from Fang Yuan.

Seeing this change, Fairy Ming Hao and Yu Xiu saw the weakness in their enemies, they looked at each other before launching rapid attacks at Fang Yuan together.

Fang Yuan opened his immortal aperture’s entrance and let out a young Gu Immortal.

Rank eight transformation path Gu Immortal Zhan Bu Du!

Immortal killer move — Incomplete Freedom Transformation!

The young man shouted as a blood red cape appeared on his back, fluttering with the wind.

“I became handsome, I became stronger!” Zhan Bu Du clenched his fist, staring at the two female immortals with a shining gaze filled with surging fighting spirit.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2175: Giant Sun Takes Action

In Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space, the battle between two Immortal Gu Houses had been ongoing for some time.

It was very intense.

“Come fight!” Zhan Bu Du shouted as he descended like a ferocious dragon, charging towards the two Heavenly Court pseudo venerables, Yu Xiu and Ming Hao.

Yu Xiu and Ming Hao split up at once, retreating at the same time as they created a long distance.

Zhan Bu Du missed his target again, he snorted coldly with some anger internally.

He was one of Fang Yuan’s clones, he cultivated transformation path and rose to rank eight, he had his own totem killer moves. But his own battle strength was still far from the peak of rank eight, he was not the match of experts like Qin Ding Ling or Wu Yong.

But once he used the killer move incomplete freedom transformation, he would instantly reach pseudo venerable battle strength!

Incomplete freedom transformation was not simple at all, it was extraordinary.

This transformation was made up of three moves: internal breathing green fish transformation, devouring blue leopard transformation, and thunder rush yellow bird transformation.

After Zhan Bu Du used incomplete freedom transformation, he gained the advantages of all three killer moves without any of their drawbacks.

He could move like lightning, shoot out lightning bolts, possess immense recovery and regeneration, and also the ability to devour all attacks.

Even though he was human, each action held divine strength that could intimidate demons or deities! He could directly suppress all immemorial desolate beasts or plants, he was basically a moving calamity that could fight heaven and earth, dominating all that were in his way!

Even Ming Hao and Yu Xiu did not dare to fight Zhan Bu Du head on, they engaged with him from a distance.

However, when their various killer moves got close to Zhan Bu Du, they would either be devoured or endured forcefully, before his regeneration took place and healed his body completely.

After a few rounds of combat, Ming Hao and Yu Xiu lost their enthusiasm to fight against Zhan Bu Du.

The enemy was too resilient but also very fast, thankfully, he lacked in the wisdom path aspect, while Yu Xiu and Ming Hao were experts in this.

Thus, they started to use wisdom path killer moves to weaken Zhan Bu Du, while deducing and preempting many of his attacks to dodge them.

It was very wise that Fang Yuan gave incomplete freedom transformation to Zhan Bu Du.

He was a pseudo venerable in the first place, using incomplete freedom transformation was quite wasteful, giving it to Zhan Bu Du would produce another pseudo venerable instantly.

Once Zhan Bu Du took action, the situation changed.

Fang Yuan and Zhan Bu Du worked together to deal with Ming Hao and Yu Xiu, they regained their footing as Heavenly Court lost the initiative, they went into a deadlock again.

Zhan Bu Du frowned deeply: “These two are extremely slippery and utilize their advantages well, I am unable to use my expertise against them. And their cooperation is simply too fluid, even though the main body and I have the closest of relationships, we are still not as well coordinated as them. It is likely because they are both wisdom path great experts!”

Rumble...

While moving around, both sides launched killer moves again, causing a beautiful display of fireworks to occur, the firepower was getting more intense.

Fang Yuan’s main body was still showing a cold expression.

Ming Hao and Yu Xiu were also secretly scheming.

“From the start, Fang Yuan has not been using his full strength, he is making deductions while fighting! He wants to deduce the location of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance.” Fairy Yu Xiu was very clear of her enemy’s actions.

Fairy Ming Hao gritted her teeth: “He also has the Qi Sea clone, that is another pseudo venerable battle strength, if he is let out, this will get more troublesome. If we work together, we can resist the three of them for now, but this crafty Fang Yuan will definitely use the numbers to his advantage, he will ignore us and focus on Divine Emperor City!”

Heavenly Court actually knew about Qi Sea Ancestor’s true identity.

As it turned out, Qin Ding Ling knew this secret some time ago but she did not expose him at that time.

During the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court did not know. But afterwards, Qin Ding Ling learned about the truth from Heavenly Court grotto-heaven.

After all, the Qi Sea clone was created in Heavenly Court, Heavenly Court’s qi harvest fruit was used in the process!

Heavenly Court had existed for millions of years, it naturally had ways to find out.

Precisely because of that, when the Qi Sea clone used the name of the Righteous Qi Alliance and invited Heavenly Court to send Gu Immortals against Fang Yuan, Qin Ding Ling did not give an affirmative response.

Fairy Yu Xiu transmitted: “Qin Ding Ling is a passable leader of Heavenly Court, when Heavenly Court lacked a pseudo venerable battle strength, she controlled herself and caused Fang Yuan to be misled into thinking that the Qi Sea clone was not be exposed, thus not using him now. Right now, we are benefiting from that.”

Fairy Ming Hao nodded secretly: “We can’t kill Fang Yuan here, but we cannot let him obtain the Thieving Heaven true inheritance here, we need to try and destroy this true inheritance space from the inside!”

The battle intensified but the strange thing was that neither side truly treated the opponent as their opponent.

Fang Yuan was doing his best to make deductions, he was not using his full strength in battle.

Zhan Bu Du was sent out to restrain the two Heavenly Court pseudo venerables as well. After all, he could cooperate better with his clone compared to Lu Wei Yin.

Meanwhile, Heavenly Court focused on destroying Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance.

As for Longevity Heaven.

Calamity Luck Altar had been finding trouble with Divine Emperor City, all sorts of killer moves were unleashed without restraint, not caring about this true inheritance space.

Evidently, regardless of what Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was after, he still had the intention to destroy this space so Fang Yuan could not gain anything!

Even though Longevity Heaven was allied with Fang Yuan, they were only doing so out of pressure from Heavenly Court.

They did not want to see Fang Yuan get any more help.

Especially when this help came from Thieving Heaven!

Divine Emperor City’s green light continued to shine densely, defending it from any attacks no matter how fierce or intense they were.

Divine Emperor City was not only defending itself, it also had offenses!

Immortal killer move — Divine Bean Soldier!

Yellow bean soldiers charged ahead, green bean soldiers shot out arrows like rain, red bean soldiers self-detonated, black bean soldiers defended at the center. There were also blue and white bean soldiers mixed among them, having their own tasks.

Each time Lu Wei Yin attacked Divine Emperor City, he would face the encirclement of these divine bean soldiers.

Lu Wei Yin used his offensive killer moves and caused great losses to these divine bean soldiers, less than ten percent of them survived.

This result shocked Lu Wei Yin, despite him being specialized in defense, his offensive methods were also at the peak of rank eight, to think that he could not completely eliminate these divine bean soldiers.

The reason was because of Divine Emperor City's other move — Graft Wood.

This move could allow the divine bean soldiers to be connected together and share the damage they suffered. The bulk of the damage went to Divine Emperor City, while the divine bean soldiers bore the rest of the burden. Thus, these divine bean soldiers were very hard to kill in battle!

After Lu Wei Yin spent a long time to break out of the encirclement, when he approached Divine Emperor City, countless lightning bolts shot towards him.

It was immortal killer move — Myriad Life Spring Lightning!

Countless sparks that resembled dragons or snakes, as well as jade green lightning balls that exploded.

After they exploded, the remaining wood path dao marks would remain in the area and modify this battlefield gradually.

Thankfully, this was Thieving Heaven's true inheritance space and not the five regions, thus this move's power could not be fully displayed.

After Lu Wei Yin endured the lightning bolts and got closer, the jade lights around Divine Emperor City started to turn into spirals as they shot out painting path killer moves.

These painting figures had countless forms, like flowers, birds, fishes, or insects, they were extremely varied and gave Lu Wei Yin a huge problem.

"Painting path is very unique, my attacks cannot get rid of them, I can't conceal myself with my defensive methods either, this is a problem."

Painting path was kept as a secret by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, this was Lu Wei Yin's first encounter with it, there was no helping it, he felt he was without options.

Lu Wei Yin was unable to break Divine Emperor City's defense, Calamity Luck Altar was similar.

Calamity Luck Altar was a rank eight luck path Immortal Gu House, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable created it personally, it displayed great might during the fate war, but right now, it could not do anything to Divine Emperor City.

The reason was that Divine Emperor City shot out rays of white light from time to time, Calamity Luck Altar had to dodge them each time without being careless.

This was human path killer move — Broken Homes and Dead Family!

This move countered Immortal Gu Houses, during the fate war, Immortal Gu House Chicken Dog Coop was only grazed by it and the entire Immortal Gu House broke apart without a single Gu Immortal inside surviving.

This was the human path offensive killer move that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable created, Calamity Luck Altar was restrained by it.

At once, Calamity Luck Altar could only guard the surroundings. This structure with three floors of round altars and multiple pillars holding it up, having white jade railings and shining aurora, was acting like an irritating fly that was moving around a person.

However, it was also not strange.

Calamity Luck Altar displayed great might earlier when fighting against Gu Immortals. The truth was, its most valuable method was the killer move calamity luck revolution. This move could turn all sorts of calamities and tribulations into becoming harmless to the immortal aperture, instead nourishing it accordingly. Longevity Heaven relied on Calamity Luck Altar to survive countless tribulations and grow over time.

That was the use of Calamity Luck Altar, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left it in Longevity Heaven before dying for this reason as well.

Divine Emperor City, painting world.

Fang Di Chang and Shen Shang worked together to comprehend the mysteries within.

“There is a huge disturbance in the outside world, it is likely a huge battle! Divine Emperor City possesses the methods of Divine Bean Palace and Emperor City, now that these methods are used so frequently, it shows that the ones attacking Divine Emperor City are not weaklings.” Shen Shang said.

This was a good thing for them.

The more these methods were used, the more they could observe and comprehend the wood path, painting path and human path profundities within.

“Is it my main body attacking Divine Emperor City now?” Fang Di Chang guessed: “Or maybe someone is trying to save the existences within growling beast painting world and qi howling painting world?”

Right at this time, Shen Shang’s and Fang Di Chang’s expressions changed, they stood up in shock as their gazes pierced through the room, towards the painting world’s sky.

In the sky, golden aurora gathered into two giant hands.

These two hands shrouded heaven and earth, they were unimaginably big, the left hand grabbed qi howling painting world while the right hand grabbed growling beast painting world.

Genesis Lotus’ will growled loudly, the power of painting path burst out to suppress the two giant hands.

Within Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space.

The battle was at the final critical moment, the entirety of Thieving Heaven’s space was covered in black lines, at the brink of destruction.

Zhan Bu Du gritted his teeth, he felt anxious internally: “The main body has not deduced the true location yet, he might not make it in time!”

“The time is now!” Within Calamity Luck Altar, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun took a look at Fang Yuan before taking a step out.

At the next moment, he appeared on the battlefield.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2176: Primordial Domain!

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable?!” Fang Yuan’s pupils contracted, even though he had a guess already, he could not help but feel internally moved.

Golden light burst out in the battlefield, Divine Emperor City shook intensely as if something was breaking out from within.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun bellowed.

In the painting worlds, countless citizens looked up at the sky dumbstruck, they saw two hands flying in the sky, directly smashing two huge holes in the painting worlds!

The two hands flew out of Divine Emperor City unobstructed, disintegrating in the battlefield, revealing Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Mao Li Qiu.

“I was saved?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue was filled with surprise and joy.

“Master!” Mao Li Qiu saw Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and was choked with tears: “I knew you would come and save me, woof!”

Mao Li Qiu’s body immediately shrunk, it became tiny and jumped into Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s arms.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun showed a doting smile as he petted Mao Li Qiu’s head: “You are still the same, you bark like a dog when you are excited.”

“Woof woof woof!” Mao Li Qiu looked up at its master and barked with tears flowing out of its eyes.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable? He has already recovered to this degree.” Fairy Ming Hao was shocked.

“Ignore him, use our full strength to stall Fang Yuan, we are about to destroy Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space!” Fairy Yu Xiu reminded.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, opening his immortal aperture’s entrance.

Qi Sea Ancestor flew out.

Immortal killer move — Unlimited Qi Sea!

At once, vast qi surged, rushing towards him from all directions.

Ming Hao and Yu Xiu were intercepted by this move, while Fang Yuan used the chance to dive into the five colored smoke.

“It’s here!” He finally found the location of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance.

The five colored smoke had reached it already.

Fang Yuan instantly went there and took away the remaining content of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance.

At almost the next moment, Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space collapsed.

“Quickly leave!” Lu Wei Yin and the rest quickly retreated.

After Fang Yuan withdrew the five regional limit formation and became the last person to leave, Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space vanished into thin air at almost the same time!

“He succeeded after all.” Fairy Ming Hao sighed.

Fairy Yu Xiu smiled: “This true inheritance has been half devastated already, no need to worry, our goal has been achieved in this fight. Let’s go! The crucial part starts now.”

Fairy Yu Xiu stored Divine Emperor City, the two immortals vanished instantly.

Seeing this, Fang Yuan revealed an expression of contemplation.

“Lord Fang Yuan.” Lu Wei Yin quickly gathered alongside Zhan Bu Du, Qi Sea Ancestor, and Fang Yuan.

At the other side, there was Calamity Luck Altar and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun!

Both sides did not talk, even though they were allies, they both knew about the dependability level of their alliance.

“Four pseudo venerable battle strengths...” Bing Sai Chuan, who was within Calamity Luck Altar, was tongue-tied, in just a short period, Fang Yuan’s strength had grown to such a level.

Longevity Heaven’s Gu Immortals were not fools, the moment Qi Sea Ancestor appeared, they realized he was Fang Yuan’s clone.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable...” Fang Yuan looked at Immortal Zombie Giant Sun as he squinted, maintaining silence.

Even though the other party was an immortal zombie now, he still had extraordinary strength and profound methods, the moment he took action, he broke into Divine Emperor City and saved Demon Immortal Qi Jue and Mao Li Qiu, who were sealed inside the painting worlds.

Right now, Mao Li Qiu was curled up in Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s arms, wagging its tail in joy, how could one even imagine that this was a proud legendary immemorial beast?

As for Demon Immortal Qi Jue, he stood at one side without much embarrassment, his expression was hesitant and suspicious.

He was saved by Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, but the moment he came out, he saw Longevity Heaven, Heavenly Court, and Fang Yuan in a three-way battle, after that, Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space got destroyed, what in the world was happening?

The scale of the battle was huge, the situation was complex, Demon Immortal Qi Jue could not process it immediately.

“Fang Yuan.” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun nodded at Fang Yuan, taking the initiative to speak: “This is Heavenly Court’s scheme.”

Fang Yuan raised his brows: “Oh? How so?”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun pointed at the place where Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space was destroyed: “According to what I know, Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space was added in much later, it was used to salvage the situation. Because it greatly affected Limitless Demon Venerable’s derivation, its destruction is something that Limitless’ will is happy to see.”

“At the same time, Heavenly Court’s Feng Ya is trying to deduce Limitless Demon Venerable’s arrangements, she is also obstructed by this space. Now that it is destroyed, her progress will be smooth sailing.”

“Earlier, when I deduced Limitless’ arrangements, I had fought against her from afar, she is the strongest wisdom path expert among the three pseudo venerables. She has already come into contact with the other core of the ninth layer — Primordial Domain!”

“Heavenly Court came here to obstruct you from getting Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance on the surface, but their true intention was to force me to take action by using the captives in Divine Emperor City as bait.”

“Without my obstruction, seeing that Feng Ya has not shown up even now, it is likely that they have made a breakthrough there. Their advantage and initiative has grown even larger.”

The moment Immortal Zombie Giant Sun finished his words, Fang Yuan’s expression changed slightly.

The other immortals’ pupils shrank, along with Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, they all turned towards the direction of Green Lotus Great World.

The immortals looked past a vast distance, seeing that at the center of Green Lotus Great World, a lump of phantom image appeared at the peak of Book Mountain.

This phantom image was pure white and humongous, it was far larger than even Book Mountain, having the shape of a ball, with the inner area shining dazzlingly with white light.

The immortals were all shaken.

Lu Wei Yin’s expression turned ugly as he said: “Primordial Domain!”

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, chapter five, section thirty-six states —

Carefree Wisdom Heart was born, she was intelligent and witty, Ren Zu liked his eighth child a lot.

But at the same time, Ren Zu was vexed: “My mind shattered, what do I do? I cannot store more knowledge anymore. Sigh, it seems that only the two of you can help me now.”

Thus, Carefree Wisdom Heart and Great Strength True Martial used their own minds to store up more knowledge.

They filled their minds with knowledge, before moving along with Ren Zu.

Ren Zu and his children started their third attempt.

Before they took a step, they would scatter ink text and knowledge, the text would describe their knowledge and form a small black path.

Ren Zu and his children walked on this small path.

But when they finished using their knowledge and reached the end of the ink text path, they did not see any signs of wisdom Gu.

Ren Zu’s third attempt failed again.

Great Strength True Martial shrugged in disappointment: “What do we do now? We have already done our best, but our knowledge is still insufficient. We cannot hold any more knowledge in our minds.”

Ren Zu sighed, he was also quite helpless.

At this time, hope Gu flew out: “Oh human, don’t be disappointed, I am here.”

Ren Zu was surprised: “How can you help me?”

Hope Gu answered: “Oh human, I can awaken your aperture[1].”

Hope allowed people to gain enlightenment (awaken their aperture).

Thus, hope Gu exerted effort to create an aperture for Ren Zu.

Humility Gu laughed: “Then let me help you as well, human. When you have humility, your capacity will be larger, you will be able to hold more things.”

Thus, the aperture expanded in size.

Ren Zu obtained the aperture and felt very happy: “This place is really huge, I can store so much knowledge! This is wonderful.”

Ren Zu and his children went to Book Mountain again, they refined their knowledge and searched for ink text.

Ren Zu stored a lot of knowledge into his aperture, even he did not know the quantity he took.

Ren Zu and his children set off on their fourth journey, they stepped on the ink text path and entered deep into Qian Kun Crystal Wall.

They went very deeply and searched many places, they changed directions countless times but still could not find wisdom Gu.

They had no choice but to return to Book Mountain.

This time, because the exploration took too long, the ink text path that they created when they set off was unable to endure the endless barrage of information, a large portion of it faded away.

Ren Zu found the inkman elder and asked: “Why can’t we find wisdom Gu?”

The inkman elder replied: “Sometimes, when we inkmen explore the place, we would encounter wisdom Gu. But you three have searched the entire Qian Kun Crystal Wall but did not find wisdom Gu, it means that it is intentionally hiding from you, it does not want to meet you.”

Carefree Wisdom Heart quickly asked: “Then where is wisdom Gu hiding at?”

The inkman elder pondered and said: “Oh humans, you have searched the entire Qian Kun Crystal Wall. If wisdom Gu is still inside here, it can only hide in one place. That place is called Primordial Domain, it is the most mysterious part of Qian Kun Crystal Wall.”

“Qian Kun Crystal Wall has a record of everything that happens in the world, it contains infinite information. Primordial Domain contains the information of the world since creation, it also has the information of the ends of all living beings. It is both the starting point and the ending point. It has nothing, yet it comprises everything.”

Great Strength True Martial was overjoyed: “We have not gone to Primordial

Domain yet, oh inkman elder, tell us how to get into the Primordial Domain."

The inkman elder shook his head: "It is not that I do not want to help you, but we inkmen have also only heard of the location, we have never entered it. Oh humans, we inkmen admire you a lot. You possess knowledge that far surpasses us, thus, if you want to enter Primordial Domain, you need to rely on yourselves."

Ren Zu and his children had to make their own research.

Carefree Wisdom Heart had a find, she shouted joyfully: "I found it, I found it!"

"Oh daughter, what did you find, why are you so excited?" Ren Zu asked in curiosity.

Carefree Wisdom Heart opened both her palms: "On my right palm, I found right Gu. On my left palm, I found wrong Gu."

"These two Gu are born in your body, they are ordinary looking and are much less presentable than my authority Gu. What help can they give us?" Great Strength True Martial was very prideful, he spoke nonchalantly.

Carefree Wisdom Heart answered: "These two Gu allow us to differentiate and classify our knowledge. Look at our knowledge again, the truth is, much of it is right at this moment, but after some time, those pieces of information will be wrong. There is also much of it that is right when placed here, but wrong when placed there. I think that if we use the knowledge that is always right at all times and use it to make our text path, we will be able to reach Primordial Domain."

Ren Zu nodded: "Your words are quite logical. Let us try it."

But no matter how they looked, they could not find such knowledge.

Great Strength True Martial's strong Gu said proudly: "Oh humans, you are wasting your effort. Because in this world, there has only been strong and weak, there has never been right or wrong, thus, your actions are in vain, you cannot classify right and wrong."

[1] Awaken aperture in Chinese can also mean enlightenment/reach an understanding.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2177: Venerable Invincibility

"Qian Kun Crystal Wall contains everything that happens in the world, all of the information comprises genuine events with no lies. Using right and wrong will not be able to differentiate them at all, because since they exist, or rather, since they existed, they are all logical information."

Carefree Wisdom Heart was criticized, but her eyes shined with bright light: "I get it, the existence of everyone in the world, regardless of right or wrong, is logical, because this is the true meaning of their existence. This is what true meaning is!"

"Be it information or knowledge, they are a type of expression of true meaning, a form of revelation. If we can grasp true meaning, not only can we explain what is right, we can also explain what is wrong, it can explain everything!”

“Let us search for it.”

The three of them started to dig up true meaning from the vast sea of knowledge.

Great Strength True Martial was the first to get impatient, Ren Zu also lost his perseverance soon, but only Carefree Wisdom Heart remained calm and composed, her expression was serious and solemn.

After a long time, Great Strength True Martial pointed at Carefree Wisdom Heart, he gasped in shock: “Look, another Gu grew on your body!”

The newly born Gu was called serious Gu.

After Carefree Wisdom Heart obtained it, she became very happy: “With this Gu, I will be able to recognize true meaning more easily.”

After a long time, Ren Zu pointed at Carefree Wisdom Heart as well: “Look, another Gu appeared on your body.”

The second Gu was called learning Gu.

Carefree Wisdom Heart started to learn knowledge, she converted knowledge into things that she truly understood, she was no longer just storing them using memory Gu.

She started to understand more and more knowledge, soon, a third Gu appeared on her body.

The third Gu was called talent Gu.

“I found it, I found it!” One day, Carefree Wisdom Heart shouted with joy, with the help of self will Gu, learning Gu, and talent Gu, she finally found the true meaning of knowledge.

“Quickly tell us, what does true meaning look like?” Great Strength True Martial was very happy as he asked.

But Carefree Wisdom Heart shook her head: “The true meaning contained within will be lost if I try to convey it in words.”

“Then write it out using ink text.” Great Strength True Martial thought about it and suggested.

But Carefree Wisdom Heart shook her head again: “The meaning can only be understood, it cannot be passed down in text!”

Ren Zu waved his hand: “Forget it, since you possess true meaning now, let’s head out immediately.”

Carefree Wisdom Heart was filled with true meaning, they set off from Book Mountain as she scattered ink text on the ground, the path was much wider than before, it was also more sturdy.

Ren Zu and his children walked on the great path and arrived in Primordial Domain.

Within Primordial Domain, they met wisdom Gu.

Wisdom Gu was quite helpless, it had already hidden itself so deeply but Ren Zu still found it, self Gu managed to take a bite out of it in the end.

...

Crazed Demon Cave, eighth layer.

Center of Green Lotus Great World.

At the peak of Book Mountain, everyone was present.

Che Wei took the fifth seat, Qin Ding Ling took the fourth, Fairy Ming Hao took the third, Fairy Yu Xiu took the second, while Fairy Feng Ya took the main seat.

Fairy Feng Ya’s hair was tied up in a bun, she was old but not wrinkled, she retained her beauty and elegance.

Her entire body was covered in a thin layer of dazzling light, it was the sign that she possessed talent Gu.

Currently, she was taking charge of the situation, exerting power in secret to force Primordial Domain to appear at the top of Book Mountain.

After Thieving Heaven’s space was destroyed, Yu Xiu and Ming Hao brought all of their troops with them as they teleported back to Fairy Feng Ya’s side.

Fairy Ming Hao sighed: “To think that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had such deep painting path attainment, he easily managed to save Mao Li Qiu.”

Heavenly Court had indeed wanted to use Mao Li Qiu and the rest to force Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to take action.

Heavenly Court was clear of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s protective nature towards his descendants and kin.

But unexpectedly, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable managed to easily save the captives without issue.

“He is a former Immortal Venerable after all, this is nothing strange.” Qin Ding Ling said: “Furthermore, our side benefited the most from this battle.”

Fairy Yu Xiu was hesitant: “It is still unclear which side benefited the most. We expanded our advantage while Giant Sun Immortal Venerable took back Mao Li Qiu, and Fang Yuan also obtained the remainder of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance. For some reason, I am feeling quite uneasy.”

Fairy Feng Ya looked at Primordial Domain in the sky as she said: “The situation is clear now, Giant Sun and Fang Yuan will send their troops against us. We will remain here and stay on the defense, as long as we can endure their attacks, we will grasp the key to this battle and return victorious, we will rebuild the glory of Heavenly Court! Everyone, do you have confidence in this?”

Hearing this, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were riled up with great morale, they answered together.

“It was all thanks to Lady Feng Ya’s planning that we have such a great advantage now!”

“We need to defend it at all cost! We cannot lose again.”

“Even if we sacrifice our lives, there is no regret.”

“In my opinion, even though there are many enemies, Giant Sun and Fang Yuan will not work together sincerely, they will be guarded against each other.”

Yellow Earth Great World.

Lu Wei Yin looked at Fang Yuan and frowned deeply: “Primordial Domain has appeared, Heavenly Court’s wisdom path attainment is truly incredible, we cannot wait any longer. The situation is really terrible.”

Primordial Domain had already been exposed, but Heavenly Court only managed to get that far, they had not truly obtained it yet.

Even so, Heavenly Court’s advantage was immense.

Because Primordial Domain was far more important and crucial than Book Mountain!

As long as a venerable entered Primordial Domain, they would regain their supreme attainment level and become a Dao Lord again. Whoever entered Primordial Domain first would turn the advantage into victory, they would be the eventual winner of this Crazed Demon Cave battle.

Not only that, after this, when the venerable who became a Dao Lord went back to the five regions, they would take control of the world’s situation. Thus, they would likely become the winner of the five regions chaotic war, ending up as the new ruler of the world.

“Lord Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court is about to obtain Primordial Domain. We need to attack with full force, if we cannot stop Heavenly Court, we will experience defeat this time.” Lu Wei Yin said with determination.

Originally, his tactic was to defend first and retaliate later, but now, they had no choice but to go on the offense.

“How do we use our full strength?” Fang Yuan asked.

Lu Wei Yin showed a conflicted expression immediately.

Heavenly Court had a clear wisdom path advantage.

Ever since the start of the Crazed Demon Cave battle, Heavenly Court had held the initiative and advantage at all times.

Heavenly Court’s three pseudo venerables cultivated wisdom path, due to their planning and foresight, their advantage was not just maintained, it was even expanded.

Right now, Heavenly Court even managed to draw out the other core of the ninth layer, Primordial Domain. And more terrifyingly, they did not cause Limitless Demon Venerable’s retaliative method to trigger.

This meant that Heavenly Court had already comprehended a lot of the ninth layer’s profundity, they were able to avoid Limitless’ method from activating.

All along, Fang Yuan did not see Limitless’ will manifesting, it was likely that it had already been destroyed.

Lu Wei Yin sighed deeply in admiration: “Back then, Limitless Demon Venerable fought his way to Heavenly Court and forced Star Constellation’s will to play a game of chess with him, they comprehended and deduced together, obtaining all sorts of heaven path research results that were secretly sent into Crazed Demon Cave for the derivation here.”

“But at the same time, Heavenly Court’s methods also infiltrated Crazed Demon Cave, when Heavenly Court managed to draw out Book Mountain from the ninth layer, I had already felt something amiss. Now that they are about to bring out Primordial Domain, I can see that their wisdom path attainment is truly unmatched.”

“Now that Heavenly Court has the initiative and territorial advantage, we are all forced to attack them while they only need to defend.”

“And the worst thing is that we cannot truly use our full strength!”

Fang Yuan nodded slightly: “That is also my worry. Heavenly Court is skilled in wisdom path, why would they not know that both of our sides are going to attack them desperately? But they still went ahead with this, it means that they are confident in stopping our attacks. And their confidence might likely stem from Crazed Demon Cave.”

Heavenly Court was able to bring out Book Mountain earlier, they also took out Primordial Domain now without activating Limitless Demon Venerable’s retaliation. One reason was their superb wisdom path method, the other was that Heavenly Court’s infiltration of Crazed Demon Cave had lasted for over a million years, they had deep foundations.

Fang Yuan could clearly not reach that level of understanding, if he used his full strength, he would likely face Limitless’ retaliative method.

This meant that Heavenly Court was making use of Limitless Demon Venerable!

“This is the problem with fighting wisdom path experts.” Lu Wei Yin continued frowning, the truth was, he still had a deep worry internally but he could not express it.

That was Gu Yue Fang Yuan’s strength.

Fang Yuan was a pseudo venerable indeed with outstanding strength, he was the strongest person in the world before the trip to Crazed Demon Cave.

But now?

He was facing Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

The appearance of Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was a huge blow to Lu Wei Yin. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, who had yet to appear, also placed a huge pressure on him internally.

Could Fang Yuan fight against these two enemies?

The truth was, Lu Wei Yin had no confidence in him.

Venerables were invincible!

This was the truth of the world in the last few million years of human history.

Because Lu Wei Yin had no confidence, he made the plan earlier to defend first and retaliate later.

Fang Yuan might be able to defend against a venerable for some time, but only a venerable could defeat a venerable!

These were Lu Wei Yin’s true thoughts.

At the same time, Fang Yuan’s subordinates had the same mentality.

Even if these people idolized and admired him, they were not brazen enough to think that Fang Yuan could defeat a venerable.

Venerables were invincible!

Back then, during Primordial Origin’s era, variant humans ruled the world, did they lack pseudo venerable battle strengths?

They had them, and the numbers were not few.

But they had never held any hope of defeating a venerable.

Indeed, Fang Yuan had unfathomable strength and was able to easily defeat other pseudo venerable Gu Immortals. But this was not strange, even though pseudo venerables surpassed the peak of rank eight, among themselves, their difference in strength could still be huge.

But if Fang Yuan had to fight against a venerable, nobody would think that he could win, they would only think of how long he could last.

“As long as Fang Yuan lasts until Lord Paradise Earth revives, we will win. But now, Heavenly Court is pressuring us to take action. If we fight now, we might not make it in time for Lord Paradise Earth’s revival!” Lu Wei Yin felt like a stone was weighing down on his heart.

Fang Yuan looked at the Primordial Domain far away as he said expressionlessly: “The situation is as such, we have to attack forcefully. Let’s follow our agreement with Longevity Heaven earlier and send out our subordinates.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2178: Intense Battle

Crazed Demon Cave, eighth layer.

Primordial Domain’s silhouette remained motionless in the sky, it was getting more vivid and condensed.

The fusion of Green Lotus Great World, Yellow Earth Great World, and Savage Wilderness Great World was also getting deeper, only a small part of the boundary walls remained to obstruct their connection.

All of the small worlds had already fused into the three great worlds, Savage Wilderness Great World gained the greatest benefits, they had the most people.

This was thanks to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s heaven and earth luck method, causing most of the small worlds to fall towards Savage Wilderness Great World.

Fang Yuan sent out almost all his Gu cultivators, charging towards Heavenly Court’s Book Mountain.

Longevity Heaven also sent troops with surging might and morale.

Heavenly Court was already prepared against them, Duan Hu and Nie Kuang Feng led their troops as they defended on both sides.

“As long as it is not a sage, nobody is my match!” Nie Kuang Feng roared.

It swept around with a huge fierce wind, the entire battlefield was pressured with wind, creating a great commotion.

“The enemy is in front of us, we need to work together to obtain victory!” Xiao He Jian looked at Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, the latter nodded with a solemn expression.

In the earlier battle, these two variant human Gu Immortals had fought against Nie Kuang Feng and lost individually. Not only did many Gu Immortals die, Xiao He Jian and Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch were also heavily damaged, they barely survived.

This time, after recovering their strength entirely, they decided to face Nie Kuang Feng together, putting down their grudges and rivalry.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch waved his hands imposingly as frost qi shot out, shrouding Nie Kuang Feng and slowing its movement, reducing its speed.

Xiao He Jian shot out green leaf blades that moved from all directions, they had impressive power.

Nie Kuang Feng whipped up a strong wind, heaven and earth changed colors, the leaves and frost winds were scattered everywhere.

Immortal killer move — Extreme Ice Crystal Light Immortal Suppression Coffin!

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch gave a roar, his aura got completely concealed, not a single bit leaked out.

At the next moment, his entire body exploded and spread out into countless frost lights.

The frost lights shot out with extreme coldness! Everywhere they went, air would freeze into ice crystals before falling to the ground.

“Hmm?” Nie Kuang Feng was shocked, it tried to dodge but how could it avoid in time?

It was shot by countless crystal lights, sealed in the mountain-like ice coffin.

“The thicker the ice, the stronger the amplification of the crystal lights that land on me!” Nie Kuang Feng struggled desperately but could not escape, facing the pressure of death, it went into demonization.

Crack...

From the inside, cracks started to appear and spread around the ice coffin.

“Oh no , I can’t trap it anymore.” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch sensed the threat.

But at this point, Xiao He Jian’s move was finally prepared.

Immortal killer move — Cut Grass!

Xiao He Jian’s palms slashed down like blades, aiming at Nie Kuang Feng, who was stuck inside the ice coffin.

Immediately, two blades of leaves appeared and fell slowly, stabbing into the cracks between the ice and piercing Nie Kuang Feng’s body.

Nie Kuang Feng’s body instantly shook.

Xiao He Jian attacked without stopping, Nie Kuang Feng’s body shook as the green tornado got weaker and thinner, its resistance also started to fall.

“I am willing to surrender...” Nie Kuang Feng said weakly.

“Our master has orders, we will not accept anyone’s surrender!” Xiao He Jian replied coldly.

In the end, Nie Kuang Feng lost its life at the hands of Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian.

Once Nie Kuang Feng died, the mutant Gu Immortals were left without a leader, many were killed while the rest escaped in desperation.

Fang Yuan’s army charged forward and reached the base of Book Mountain.

At the other end, Space Extremity and Desolate Extremity of Longevity Heaven’s Eight Extremities worked together and killed Duan Hu.

The two armies arrived at the center of Green Lotus Great World.

Heavenly Court had only obtained Book Mountain recently, they only managed to set up their formation around it.

This formation was known as four-way star formation, it had four sub-formations in four different directions, defending Book Mountain tightly with no gaps present.

At the peak of Book Mountain, Fairy Feng Ya continued to use her killer move without stopping, drawing out Primordial Domain, which was in the sky.

The two armies discussed for a while before attacking the four sub-formations.

Mao Li Qiu led its group to attack the west formation.

Gai Mei led a group to attack the north formation.

Xiao He Jian led a group to attack the east formation.

Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch led a group to attack the south formation.

The remaining ones were led by Bing Sai Chuan and Lu Wei Yin, they firmly supported the four vanguard groups.

The moment Mao Li Qiu entered the formation, countless starlight specks shot down like a torrential rain with countless droplets.

Mao Li Qiu growled as it expanded and became much larger, its purple fur was smooth and thick, the starlight could not penetrate it.

It charged around in the sub-formation with other Gu Immortals following it, attacking, killing, and causing destruction.

“Vile beast, you are here to cause problems again. We will kill you this time!” The star formation shook as two Gu Immortals flew in.

Nine Spiritual Fairy and Prince Feng Xian.

Nine Spiritual Fairy turned into an immemorial desolate beast to block Mao Li Qiu. The transformed immemorial desolate beast was superior to the real immemorial desolate beast, Mao Li Qiu was soon suppressed, its energy was expended and its body was hurting.

Prince Feng Xian activated his fire path killer move, all sorts of birds rained down with flames, killing more than ten mutant Gu Immortals of Savage Wilderness Great World in one move.

Mao Li Qiu was unable to resist, it had to retreat.

Elsewhere, Gai Mei went up against Zhou Xiong Xin and Jun Shen Guang.

Zhou Xiong Xin activated information path killer move and attacked, while Jun Shen Guang turned into a ray of light to support him. They worked together in unison with one as the attacker and one as support.

Yellow Extremity Jiao Huo used a totem killer move and fought against Zhou Xiong Xin, they were evenly matched.

But Gai Mei, on the other hand, was shouting loudly, he was running around and dodging Jun Shen Guang's attacks.

"Quickly go, quickly go." Gai Mei grabbed onto Jiao Huo's shoulder and dragged him away, ignoring the latter's stare.

Longevity Heaven's two groups returned without result, Fang Yuan's two groups were even worse.

Xiao He Jian and Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch were trapped, they could not even retreat.

"These two immortals met with Heavenly Court's Che Wei and Wan Zi Hong, they are in great danger, quickly send help!" The reinforcement letter had already reached Lu Wei Yin.

Che Wei created weapon path, his methods were getting more mature, his status was only below Qin Ding Ling.

Wan Zi Hong was originally a demonic immortal of Western Desert, she was recruited by Heavenly Court. During the fate war, she displayed great abilities, and now that her Immortal Gu were fully with her, her battle strength returned to its peak, she was very powerful.

Bing Sai Chuan and Lu Wei Yin held an emergency meeting: "This four-way star formation is a star path formation, we cannot take it down by force. It is simply too hard with Heavenly Court's elites guarding all four areas. Lord Fang Yuan was able to destroy the nine-nine consecutive unceasing formation with that thing, I am sure he can deal with this formation too."

Bing Sai Chuan was talking about the five regional limit formation.

Lu Wei Yin nodded and was about to speak when suddenly, a Gu Immortal came out of Yellow Earth Great World.

This female immortal had snow-white skin, her ears were like rabbit ears, her eyes were blood red, it was Lady White Rabbit.

Lady White Rabbit had become a genuine rank eight Gu Immortal with Fang Yuan's help.

Lu Wei Yin laughed and said to Bing Sai Chuan: "I've already asked Lord Fang Yuan for help, I wanted to borrow the five regional limit formation to break the formation using a formation. Lady White Rabbit, thank you for the hard work."

Lady White Rabbit smiled: "Of course I need to work hard for master, I'll even give up my life, this is nothing. But master did not pass me the five regional limit formation, he said that this formation does not have a specific target range, its effect takes too long and won't be effective. Thus, I brought other methods.”

Bing Sai Chuan was curious: “Lord Fang Yuan’s methods must be extraordinary, please allow me to have a look.”

Thus, Lady White Rabbit took out several Immortal Gu Houses from her immortal aperture.

Rising Cloud City, Profound Frost House, Unbreakable Golden Fortress, Dragon Soul Dark Castle, Red River Pavilion, Red Heavenly Altar, Scarlet Palace!

A total of seven Immortal Gu Houses which were all at rank eight.

Bing Sai Chuan was completely dumbstruck.

“Master said that he could only create these few Immortal Gu Houses in the short period of time. He has already given orders, we will charge with these Immortal Gu Houses as the vanguard.” Lady White Rabbit said.

It turned out that ever since Fang Yuan entered Crazed Demon Cave and collected a vast amount of immortal materials, he had ordered the time path clone He Chun Qiu to use Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool to refine Immortal Gu.

After all sorts of rank eight Immortal Gu were created, he started assembling Immortal Gu Houses.

Fang Yuan did not intend to construct Immortal Gu Houses originally, they were not very useful to him.

But after entering the eighth layer, he could not fight with his full strength here, he made preparations to arm his subordinates instead.

He had no time indeed

These Immortal Gu Houses were all modified on the basis of Cloud City, Dark Flow Giant City, Profound Ice House, Unbreakable Iron Fortress, Blood River Chariot, Nightmare Castle, Green Wave Pavilion, Weaving Cocoon Manor, Golden Altar and other Immortal Gu Houses.

Strictly speaking, these were considered only partial innovations.

But against Heavenly Court, even with three wisdom path pseudo venerables, they could not easily decipher and break them, they needed to spend time on deductions.

That was enough!

Lu Wei Yin became very happy, he distributed the Immortal Gu Houses and charged through into the formation, saving Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch and Xiao He Jian.

Afterwards, the seven rank eight Immortal Gu Houses swept through the battlefield, breaking two more sub-formations.

The two groups gathered towards Book Mountain.

At the peak of Book Mountain, Fairy Feng Ya’s eyes were shut as she used her method. Ming Hao and Yu Xiu were taking charge of the situation.

Seeing so many Immortal Gu Houses, Fairy Yu Xiu had a grim expression: “Fang Yuan is so rich and has terrifying refinement path methods. It seems he intends to progress in refinement path!”

“Thankfully, his wisdom path is inferior to us, these Immortal Gu Houses are all not new, they have an origin that we can trace.” Fairy Ming Hao said as she used her killer move.

Human path killer move — Humble Reciprocation!

Book Mountain shook as countless killer moves were unleashed like fireworks.

In the sky, Primordial Domain surfaced with rumbling tribulation clouds, calamities and tribulations were unceasing.

On the battlefield, countless killer moves filled the vision, surging like sea waves that crashed down in all directions.

Against such an endless tide of killer moves, Fang Yuan’s subordinates hid inside the Immortal Gu Houses, moving against the waves.

Longevity Heaven had many Gu Immortals but they could not all enter Calamity Luck Altar.

Thus, Bing Sai Chuan took out five Immortal Gu Houses.

Wide Building Harem Palace, Internal Delight Harem Palace, Red Bean Harem Palace, Lovesick Harem Palace, Young Peach Harem Palace.

They were the five palaces that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable placed in the five regions when he was alive, they were all rank eight.

The foundation of an Immortal Venerable was displayed in full view!

“My lifetime accumulation cannot even rival Fang Yuan, he seems to have an overflowing number of rank eight Immortal Gu. Is he trying to become venerable through refinement path?” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun looked at the battlefield as he thought.

Fang Yuan was observing the battlefield as well while comprehending Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance.

This Thieving Heaven true inheritance contained imitation Gu and the killer move perfect pair originally, but Fang Yuan only obtained the rest.

But this remaining portion was very important to Fang Yuan.

The true inheritance content was about refinement path, it talked about how Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable created a fake Qian Kun Crystal Wall in his time, how he created fake Immortal Gu and so on.

“Other than the four aspects of refinement path that I summarized earlier, there is also this aspect!”

“Refining fake Gu...”

“Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable left this true inheritance to me with deep intentions.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2179: Battle of Book Mountain

Book Mountain was surrounded in the two colors of black and white, Gu Immortals fought intensely as they could be seen everywhere.

Immortal killer move — Great Qi Cloud Explosion!

Demon Immortal Qi Jue stretched out his finger and pointed consecutively.

Instantly, the air in front of him surged and gathered into a lump.

Several hundred white qi comets shot out at once, blocking the attacks of Book Mountain.

Fairy Ming Hao had been using Book Mountain to unleash the killer move humble reciprocation. Relying on this terrifying move, she was able to suppress the forces of Fang Yuan and Longevity Heaven.

These killer moves were all recorded in Book Mountain, there were a variety of them, this was a human path killer move in essence but the released attacks had the power of their original paths.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue faced offense with offense, after destroying the current wave of attacks, he sighed and retreated.

After he was saved by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he did not interact with Longevity Heaven or Fang Yuan, he moved on his own and quickly learned about the current situation.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue also did not want to see Heavenly Court obtain Primordial Domain.

He wanted to enter Primordial Domain, in fact, to raise his qi path attainment level to supreme grandmaster, how could he allow others to snatch it first?

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was alone and could not take down Heavenly Court. But with Fang Yuan and Longevity Heaven working against the colossal force, he would not be Demon Immortal Qi Jue if he did not make use of this opportunity.

“To think that attacking Book Mountain is so dangerous, I can’t even reach the middle of the mountain.” Demon Immortal Qi Jue frowned.

When he was suppressed by Divine Emperor City, he lost many of his qi path dao marks. Furthermore, the secluded domain of heaven and earth that he relied on, Xi Land, had only about thirty percent left after the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan.

Bubble bubble...

As if a tsunami had struck, another wave of attacks swept down from the top of the mountain like a waterfall.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue had no choice but to retreat again.

“Charge, charge up!” A rank eight Immortal Gu House went past him, completely ignoring Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

That was the rank eight Immortal Gu House that Fang Yuan created, Unbreakable Golden Fortress.

The Gu Immortals in the Unbreakable Golden Fortress saw Demon Immortal Qi Jue but did not pay any attention to him. When Demon Immortal Qi Jue first appeared, he was quite the hot topic, but seeing that he had attacked Book Mountain too, Fang Yuan’s subordinates also learned of Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s stance.

Seeing Unbreakable Golden Fortress charge up and resisting the endless wave of killer moves, Demon Immortal Qi Jue could not help but show some envy in his eyes.

In this battle, Immortal Gu Houses were simply too important.

They provided the Gu Immortals strong defense, otherwise, as just a single person, how could he advance while resisting endless tribulations and killer moves?

Unbreakable Golden Fortress reached the middle of the mountain, in the fireworks of killer moves around it, there was a bloody shadow that flashed by.

At the next moment, the huge bloody shadow arrived, showing itself.

This was a huge red tombstone with text characters moving around it, it had a dense aura of blood path, this was Demon Judgment Board!

“Don’t think of moving further!” Within Demon Judgment Board, Gu Yue Fang Zheng spoke.

Bam.

With a loud sound, the two Immortal Gu Houses crashed into each other.

Unbreakable Golden Fortress’ advancement was forcefully halted.

Demon Judgment Board shot out blood red light that resembled a beam, it hit Unbreakable Golden Fortress.

Unbreakable Golden Fortress raised its defense and blocked the blood red light, but it was still forced down from the middle of the mountain by an unstoppable force.

Even though Unbreakable Golden Fortress was a rank eight Immortal Gu House, it was still far from Demon Judgment Board, which was a peak creation.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng breathed roughly.

Heavenly Court had few Immortal Gu Houses.

Even including Divine Emperor City, Heaven Overseeing Tower, and Divine Emperor City, they only had six.

Right now, these six Immortal Gu Houses were used to defend themselves, dealing with the Immortal Gu Houses that attacked them.

Over on Longevity Heaven’s end, Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace did not move out, but Calamity Luck Altar and the five Harem Palaces totaled to six, they were equally numbered with Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu Houses.

While Fang Yuan suddenly brought out seven Immortal Gu Houses!

This was out of their expectations.

They had originally thought that Fang Yuan would reconstruct Dragon Palace or Myriad Year Flying Warship, but to think that he would start over and bring out seven Immortal Gu Houses like Unbreakable Golden Fortress.

So be it if he made new ones, but these Immortal Gu Houses were all rank eight.

Seven rank eight Immortal Gu Houses gave Heavenly Court an immense pressure in guarding themselves.

Heavenly Court only had around half the Immortal Gu Houses of their enemies, while Longevity Heaven’s Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace and Fang Yuan’s Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress had yet to join the battle, this made the hearts of Heavenly Court Gu Immortals sink.

Under Fang Zheng’s control, Demon Judgment Board went around to force back the invading Immortal Gu Houses, attempting to maintain their defensive circle.

“The enemies are very strong, we can maintain the situation now with Divine Emperor City, Heaven Overseeing Tower, and myself as support. But if this goes on, we will not last long.”

Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s expression was pale, he understood this internally.

He felt like he was reaching his limit already.

The intensity of the battle was too high.

Demon Judgment Board not only had to go around to fight against the many Immortal Gu Houses, it also had to resist the bombardment of killer moves and tribulations.

The expenditure of immortal essence was shocking even for Fang Zheng.

Demon Judgment Board’s damage level was also increasingly severe. Back then in Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space, Demon Judgment Board had already been heavily hit by Fang Yuan, it had already been repaired earlier. Now, its current damage was newly created.

If Fang Zheng was alone, he might have already lost control of the situation. Thankfully, Demon Judgment Board had the wills of the previous Demon Judgment Board Lords, these wills were helping him to rapidly repair the Immortal Gu House.

“Since when did our Heavenly Court’s foundation lose to others?” At the peak of Book Mountain, Fairy Ming Hao maintained the killer move humble reciprocation while sighing to herself.

In Heavenly Court’s case, the situation was quite bad. Even though Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals fought desperately to defend themselves, the defensive line was already wavering, the Immortal Gu Houses might break through at any moment and arrive at the peak.

At the peak of Book Mountain, Fairy Feng Ya was still using her full strength to use the killer move and try to obtain Primordial Domain, she could not be interrupted.

Fairy Ming Hao and Yu Xiu looked at each other, the latter waved her hand: “Go.”

A tiger roar and crane cry resounded in the battlefield.

Two legendary immemorial beasts, Shabi Ninety-five and Ruan Dan, charged down the mountain.

Even though Heavenly Court did not have any more Immortal Gu Houses, they had two legendary immemorial desolate beasts. Immemorial desolate beasts had tough bodies, legendary immemorial desolate beasts were even tougher.

Shabi Ninety-five and Ruan Dan charged towards Rising Cloud City from the left and right, ignoring all the killer moves and tribulations above them.

Rising Cloud City was controlled by Fairy Miao Yin, she was about to charge into the battlefield when two legendary immemorial beasts pincer attacked her.

Fairy Miao Yin quickly used her killer move, Rising Cloud City spewed out endless cloud qi to push the Immortal Gu House upwards rapidly.

But Ruan Dan flapped its wings and flew above Rising Cloud City, activating a killer move and slashing with the crane leg, shattering the roof of Rising Cloud City and destroying countless mortal Gu.

Bam.

At the next moment, Shabi Ninety-five charged fiercely and knocked Rising Cloud City over, causing it to roll down the mountain.

Fairy Miao Yin’s figure staggered, she wanted to control Rising Cloud City to ascend again but it did not respond to her, her immortal essence was instilled without getting any response.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was to the left, upon seeing this, he immediately flew over.

He gave a cry, Xi Land’s silhouette appeared above his head.

Immortal killer move — Xi Xi!

Xi Land erupted with immense attraction force, absorbing the qi ring around the surface of Rising Cloud City into Xi Land.

After getting released, Rising Cloud City immediately regained freedom.

“Thanks!” Fairy Miao Yin thanked and was about to move the Immortal Gu House back into the battlefield when she suddenly heard Fang Yuan’s orders.

Fairy Miao Yin was stunned.

But she reacted quickly and brought the other Gu Immortals out of Rising Cloud City.

“Lord Qi Jue, my master ordered me to gift this Rising Cloud City to you!” Fairy Miao Yin said.

“What?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue was stunned before laughing heartily: “Fang Yuan is truly generous, I will receive it with thanks.”

Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not stand on ceremony, he entered Rising Cloud City, it flew up and attacked the mountain again.

At the middle of the mountain, Shabi Ninety-five and Ruan Dan worked together and pushed down Dragon Soul Dark Castle.

Lady White Rabbit led the immortals inside Dragon Soul Dark Castle, she did not charge anymore, instead, returning to the base of the mountain to join up with Fairy Miao Yin.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue finally reached the middle of the mountain, he saw Shabi Ninety-five and his eyes lit up: “Good beast, I lack a steed myself.”

Demon Immortal Qi Jue kept Rising Cloud City and only attacked Shabi Ninety-five.

The two fought for a few rounds, Shabi Ninety-five soon fell into a disadvantage, it started requesting for help.

This legendary immemorial beast cultivated qi path, it was completely countered by Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

“Don’t fear, I am here!” Ruan Dan came over to help, it spat out a bright red pill.

“What path is this?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue sensed the mysterious aura of the pill, he did not dare to be careless, he brought out Rising Cloud City and went inside.

Boom!

The pill landed on Rising Cloud City and self-detonated, the intense shock wave spread out everywhere, a corner of Rising Cloud City was destroyed in the process.

Even though pill path was not specialized in offense, it was still a new path that Rising Cloud City could not guard against.

“Hahaha, Ninety-five, you owe me a favor!” Ruan Dan laughed proudly.

Shabi Ninety-five pouted and was about to answer when its expression suddenly changed: “Be careful!”

Ruan Dan’s heart shook as it quickly jumped.

But the mysterious enemy was even faster.

“Can you escape?” Hearing the voice, Ruan Dan felt like its long neck was grabbed by a tiny hand.

Compared to its mountain-like body, the normal human-sized hand was definitely tiny.

But Ruan Dan felt a shudder when this hand touched its neck, it screamed in a shrill voice.

Because it twisted its neck and saw a young man wearing a red cape, standing on its back.

It was none other than Fang Yuan’s transformation path clone, Zhan Bu Du!

At this moment, he had already used incomplete freedom transformation killer move, his battle strength rose to pseudo venerable level.

“Wait.” Ruan Dan screamed, but Zhan Bu Du snickered and exerted strength.

At the next moment.

Boom!

An intense explosion resounded like thunder.

Book Mountain shook, black and white rocks were sent flying.

At the next moment, a huge pit appeared on the ground.

Ruan Dan was beaten unconscious by Zhan Bu Du, its body was motionlessly embedded into Book Mountain, its mouth opened as blood flowed out.

But soon, a bright light flashed on Ruan Dan’s body.

Its injuries healed quickly, it regained its consciousness.

“Thankfully, I have my killer move, life-saving recovery pill!” Ruan Dan woke up and wanted to struggle.

But Zhan Bu Du’s fist was already raised.

Bam bam bam...

With a series of punches, Zhan Bu Du slammed down on Ruan Dan’s head each time, causing the whole of Book Mountain to shake. Only until he smashed Ruan Dan’s skull completely and brain matter flowed out did he stop attacking.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2180: Qi Sea Versus Yu Xiu

Against Zhan Bu Du, the great legendary immemorial beast Ruan Dan was completely unable to put up a fight.

But at the next moment, a bright light flashed on Ruan Dan’s corpse again.

Immortal killer move — Life-Saving Recovery Pill!

With the effect of the killer move, Ruan Dan’s smashed skull started to heal, it was soon revived.

“Pill path...” Zhan Bu Du also showed a look of surprise.

Ruan Dan’s healing killer move was formidable, it could actually revive it from that state.

Even with Zhan Bu Du’s pseudo venerable battle strength, he could not easily get around it. After all, even the main body did not understand pill path.

“Since I cannot unravel it, so be it, I want to see how many times you can revive!” Zhan Bu Du showed a ruthless expression.

Boom boom boom.

He punched time and again, each punch landed heavily on Ruan Dan, killing it on the spot.

The poor Ruan Dan had just revived and did not react in time before its skull was smashed again.

Immortal killer move — Life-saving Recovery Pill.

A few breaths of time later, the recovery method activated again.

But this time, the killer move’s shining light became much dimmer.

“Persevere, Ruan Dan, I will save you!” Shabi Ninety-five shouted, rushing from another area to help out.

Even though it constantly argued with Ruan Dan normally, the two of them had a close friendship. Especially after major battles like the fate war, their camaraderie had already improved greatly.

Even if this was Zhan Bu Du, Shabi Ninety-five did not care about anything else, it wanted to save its friend.

“Hmph, trying to leave? Do you think I am not here?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue shouted in anger as he used a killer move that landed on Shabi Ninety-five’s back.

Shabi Ninety-five suffered a heavy blow, it growled in pain and fell from the sky.

Seeing that Ruan Dan died at Zhan Bu Du’s hands again, at the peak of Book Mountain, Fairy Ming Hao’s frown became deeper.

Zhan Bu Du was an opponent that gave the three fairies, Feng Ya, Ming Hao, and Yu Xiu a huge headache.

He had terrifying strength and overwhelming defense, together with the abilities of internal breathing green fish transformation, devouring blue leopard transformation, and thunder rush yellow bird transformation, Zhan Bu Du had no weaknesses at all, the three immortals did not know how to deal with him.

If this were a normal battle, the three immortals could rapidly move and attack him from a distance, restraining and weakening him.

But now, Heavenly Court had to defend Book Mountain.

This was a defensive battle.

And the worst nightmare for a defensive battle was someone like Zhan Bu Du. If he managed to charge unhindered and went beyond the defensive line, it would be trouble.

But the three immortals had discussed it already, they had a plan against Zhan Bu Du.

Immediately, Fairy Ming Hao willed and transmitted some words to Genesis Lotus’ will inside Divine Emperor City.

At the next moment, a jade light spiral appeared on the surface of Divine Emperor City.

From within the spiral, a giant flew out from the center.

The giant wore golden green armor, its left hand held a shield, its right hand held a spear, it was bursting with vitality and life force, its aura was immense.

The giant recited —

A hundred thousand years of unending hatred,

Killing the enemy with a shattered body.

Awakening once more in Divine Emperor City,

Qing Chou exists under the karma divine tree.

It was the legendary immemorial desolate beast — Qing Chou.

During the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan, Qing Chou killed Spectral Soul, but it was also completely blown to bits by Spectral Soul’s self-detonation, reduced to countless pieces of flesh.

Divine Emperor City retrieved these pieces of flesh and revived Qing Chou again.

The current Qing Chou was no longer in its initial form of turtle shell, tiger claws, dragon tail, snake neck, bat wings, and human head. It was now a completely armored and equipped warrior.

Qing Chou arrived before Zhan Bu Du and its towering body slammed down like a mountain, its spear pierced the air as winds blew intensely, as if a giant dragon had struck.

“Come!” Zhan Bu Du did not retreat but moved ahead, his figure flashed and appeared at Qing Chou’s forehead immediately.

Zhan Bu Du punched fiercely, hitting Qing Chou’s helmet.

With an intense sound, a huge force caused Qing Chou to move backwards, its colossal body landed on the middle section of the mountain, causing Book Mountain and its surroundings to tremor.

Zhan Bu Du flew down and rained a flurry of fists, the attacks were intense and unceasing.

If Qing Chou let the punches land without obstruction, it would end up like Ruan Dan.

At the crucial moment, a giant tree formed above Qing Chou’s head, absorbing the force of Zhan Bu Du’s punches.

Immortal killer move — Karma Divine Tree!

At the next moment, the divine tree shook as countless fists shot out from between the leaves.

It was Zhan Bu Du’s earlier wave of attacks.

This move had once caused trouble to Spectral Soul, Zhan Bu Du also felt troubled, he was forced back by the fists.

Qing Chou took the chance to stand up as Zhan Bu Du floated in the air, resisting Fairy Ming Hao’s humble reciprocation killer move while regaining his footing.

Qing Chou roared and took large strides forward, it arrived before Zhan Bu Du with two steps, waving its long spear to attack him.

Rumble!

Two figures continued to fight intensely, they exchanged blows and caused the entire place to tremor, their offenses caused a huge commotion.

“I get it now, so this was Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s objective. Qing Chou has been completely subdued by Divine Emperor City, it is now the general of the divine bean soldiers. This is the strongest divine bean soldier!” Zhan Bu Du had a realization.

A few rounds later, he gained the upper hand again.

Qing Chou was not an ordinary legendary immemorial beast, but Zhan Bu Du was currently using incomplete freedom transformation!

He had genuine pseudo venerable battle strength, Qing Chou could not win.

Heavenly Court also did not expect a win, they only wanted to stall for time.

It was like how Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable invited Fang Yuan in order to stall for time as well.

As long as time passed and Heavenly Court obtained Primordial Domain, their advantage would be expanded, they would be able to claim victory!

Immortal killer move — Unlimited Qi Sea.

A figure suddenly appeared, carrying with him an endless sea of qi that surged together, shrouding the rays of the sun.

It was Qi Sea Ancestor!

Seeing that Zhan Bu Du was obstructed, Qi Sea Ancestor immediately chose another direction to attack the mountain.

At the peak of the mountain, Fairy Yu Xiu sighed as she was forced to take action, she left the mountain and fought against Qi Sea Ancestor.

Qi Sea versus Yu Xiu!

One was a qi path pseudo venerable, the other was a wisdom path pseudo venerable.

The former attacked fiercely, wanting to devastate Heavenly Court, but the latter was resolved to defend this base even at the cost of her life.

Qi Sea Ancestor attacked grandly with incredible attacks, qi tides swept the area, accompanied by pillars of white qi that shot out at times.

Fairy Yu Xiu however, was graceful and elegant, she moved agilely and dodged the endless wave of attacks while activating all sorts of wisdom path killer moves.

She had an exceptional combat system which used her attainment level to suppress others, it was extraordinary and even Immortal Zombie Giant Sun would be affected by this move.

But her enemy was Qi Sea Ancestor.

Qi Sea Ancestor was the clone of Fang Yuan, he shared attainment levels with the main body!

Fairy Yu Xiu tried many times with no success, for Fang Yuan, it was not hard to resist her attacks.

Fang Yuan was a master in dream path, space path, metal path, wind path, cloud path, lightning path, information path, light path, and sound path.

He was a grandmaster in blood path, strength path, star path, dark path, formation path, soul path, sword path, human path, wood path, food path, phantom path, luck path, ice and snow path.

He was a great grandmaster in theft path, transformation path, rule path, qi path, fire path, wisdom path, water path, earth path, poison path.

He was even a quasi-supreme grandmaster in refinement path, time path, and enslavement path!

With such attainment levels, how could Fairy Yu Xiu suppress him?

Fairy Yu Xiu had no choice, she had to use other methods against Qi Sea Ancestor.

Fairy Yu Xiu was unable to display the power of her combat system, but thankfully, she was familiar with Qi Sea Ancestor’s methods.

Even though Qi Sea Ancestor had Primordial Origin’s true inheritance, he obviously could not use those killer moves against Heavenly Court. As for other killer moves like heavenly astral cloth robe, yin-yang great killer hands, unlimited qi sea, and others, they were all used many times and were known to everyone.

“Let me help you!” Lu Wei Yin flew over, assisting Qi Sea Ancestor.

Fairy Yu Xiu used her strongest killer move to suppress Lu Wei Yin through attainment levels, effectively weakening him.

But Qi Sea Ancestor gained a greater advantage with his help, managing to approach Book Mountain.

At this time, Calamity Luck Altar burst out with a golden light.

The golden light surrounded Book Mountain and spread around the battlefield like vines. Wherever the golden light went, tribulations would transform and target the peak of Book Mountain instead.

And Book Mountain was also shaking intensely from the infiltration of the golden light.

Fairy Ming Hao’s body shook unsteadily, her face turned pale as her pupils shrank: “This must be Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s doing! To think that he managed to counter humble reciprocation after it was only used for a second time!”

She gritted her teeth, even though she was unwilling, she had no choice but to withdraw humble reciprocation killer move.

If it continued, she would lose her life.

Earlier, when Fang Yuan and Lu Wei Yin first entered Yellow Earth Great World and led their army to attack Book Mountain, Fairy Ming Hao had stopped them using humble reciprocation.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was exceptionally talented, he thought of a way to counter this move in such a short time and successfully dealt with it now.

Without the endless tribulations obstructing them, Longevity Heaven’s immortals had a clear path now, many of them cheered loudly in the Immortal Gu Houses as they attacked from all directions.

Fairy Ming Hao gritted her teeth, Fairy Feng Ya could not take action against them now, while Fairy Yu Xiu was fighting outside, in this situation, they had to rely on her.

Immortal killer move — People’s United Hearts.

Immortal killer move — Hope of the People.

Immortal killer move — Heroes Among People.

The scene during the fate war was displayed again.

Light spread out towards the Heavenly Court immortals, causing their strength to rise sharply!

But this was not enough.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals and Immortal Gu Houses were just too few in quantity.

“Then awaken.”

“Friends from Heavenly Court, our comrades!”

“The people of the five regions and two heavens need you, Heavenly Court needs you now!!”

Fairy Ming Hao shouted loudly.

From the northwest direction of Book Mountain, an immortal graveyard radiated with countless rays of bright light.

From the light, two figures walked out.

One was an old man with a benevolent countenance, his brows were particularly peculiar, they were like two exquisite dark brown roots that extended down from his forehead to his chest.

The other was a middle-aged man with a very robust physique, his face and muscles seemed to be made from brass as they let out cold metallic luster.

“I heard the call.” The old Gu Immortal, Duke Mei, squinted and said.

“Where are the enemies?” The middle aged Gu Immortal Duke Tong looked beyond a vast distance, locking his eyes on Calamity Luck Altar.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2181: Duke Mei, Duke Tong

Crucial information regarding the battle entered the minds of Duke Mei and Duke Tong.

At the moment when they saw the battlefield themselves, they also learned of the current situation.

Duke Mei sighed: “Duke Long...”

Back then, when he first saw Duke Long, the latter still had black hair and was a youngster.

The moment Duke Long joined Heavenly Court, he met with Duke Mei.

Even though Duke Mei was a senior, he quickly greeted in return: “Friend, you are a Dao Guardian, the happiness of all living beings is resting on your shoulders.”

Duke Long replied solemnly: “I will do my best for the world, even if I have to sacrifice my life, there is no regret!”

Time passed, when Duke Mei reawakened in the five regions, Duke Long had already died ahead of him.

“Duke Long, you died a good death, throughout your life, you did not turn on the promise you made from the start.” Duke Mei said with deep emotions, before flying forward: “And now, it is our turn.”

Within Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan’s eyes shined with bright light: “The immortal graveyard... so it was nearby all along, Heavenly Court has brilliant methods after all, we could not find it even with repeated investigations.”

Be it Longevity Heaven or Fang Yuan, they had already confirmed the information of the immortal graveyard. They had expected Gu Immortals to awaken during this battle.

“Quickly look, Fang Yuan’s side is making a new action!” One of the Eight Extremities shouted.

Bing Sai Chuan quickly shifted his gaze, he saw that four Immortal Gu Houses, Profound Frost House, Dragon Soul Dark Castle, Red River Pavilion, and Red Heavenly Altar, had changed locations, flying down the mountain.

Bing Sai Chuan could not help but feel shocked: “It seems that Fang Yuan has a plan already, but mobilizing four Immortal Gu Houses at once, isn’t that too much?”

Fang Yuan had a total of seven Immortal Gu Houses, now that Rising Cloud City was given to Demon Immortal Qi Jue, and after moving four Immortal Gu Houses away, there was only Unbreakable Golden Fortress and Scarlet Palace left on the mountain.

Currently, the most important thing was to reach the peak of Book Mountain and ruin Heavenly Court’s killer move so that they could not obtain Primordial Domain.

Right now, Fang Yuan diverted his forces to attack the Gu Immortals of the immortal graveyard, he was putting his emphasis on the wrong target.

But at the next moment, the four diverted Immortal Gu Houses split up.

Profound Frost House and Red River Pavilion went to help Zhan Bu Du in fighting Qing Chou.

Dragon Soul Dark Castle and Red Heavenly Altar charged towards Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard.

Bing Sai Chuan realized at once, he yelled in his mind: “So Fang Yuan is trying to free up Zhan Bu Du!”

Zhan Bu Du had incomplete freedom transformation, he was powerful and unstoppable, he was the crucial battle strength for Fang Yuan’s side to ascend the mountain.

Even though Fairy Ming Hao’s humble reciprocation killer move was broken now, there were three pseudo venerables at the top of the mountain, if ordinary rank eight Immortal Gu Houses charged to the top, they would be suppressed by the three.

Divine Emperor City was at the middle section of the mountain, it was a tough hurdle too.

It had the killer move ‘broken homes and dead family’, that was the biggest counter to Immortal Gu Houses.

Thus, letting Zhan Bu Du take the lead was the wisest decision.

Dragon Soul Dark Castle and Red Heavenly Altar flew rapidly, soon arriving before Duke Mei and Duke Tong.

Duke Mei took in a deep breath, he straightened both arms and aimed at the two Immortal Gu Houses.

Vines suddenly appeared around Dragon Soul Dark Castle and Red Heavenly Altar, these vines were dry and tough, they bound the two Immortal Gu Houses tightly.

“Oh no, the immortal essence storages in the Immortal Gu Houses are being absorbed by the vines!” Fang Yuan’s subordinate Gu Immortals realized this and shouted in anger.

The two Immortal Gu Houses started to counterattack.

The surface of Red Heavenly Altar radiated bright red light, melting all of the dried vines around it.

Dragon roars could be heard from Dragon Soul Dark Castle, the vines around it were snapped and sent flying.

But with this amount of time, Duke Tong’s killer move was already prepared.

Two different sized bronze rings formed instantly and attached themselves to the two Immortal Gu Houses and spinning rapidly, buzzing loudly.

The bronze rings were flying too quickly, they seemed like vague shadows that immobilized the Immortal Gu Houses that they were surrounding.

Heavenly Court had learned from their lesson. During the fate war, because of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s method, Longevity Heaven managed to directly enter Heavenly Court, catching them off guard. In that battle, even though Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals awakened, because they lacked Immortal Gu, they did not display their true battle strength.

But now, Heavenly Court prepared the Immortal Gu of their hibernating Gu Immortals in advance.

Thus, Duke Mei and Duke Tong were able to immediately act and restrain the two Immortal Gu Houses.

But good times did not last, suddenly, a dragon soul appeared from within Dragon Soul Dark Castle, the dragon soul made several attempts before managing to destroy the bronze ring.

Next, Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit flew out of their Immortal Gu House, attacking Duke Mei and Duke Tong.

Fairy Miao Yin activated wondrous hand profound sound, her eight arms stretched out elegantly.

Lady White Rabbit had lumps of light surrounding her, her aura surged intensely.

The two immortals charged forward, Duke Mei was the first to block them, after a few rounds, Lady White Rabbit noticed a weakness and got around Duke Mei to attack Duke Tong.

Duke Tong was interrupted, he had to cancel his bronze ring killer move and fight White Rabbit instead.

The four immortals clashed and parted continuously, nobody could interrupt their battle.

Duke Mei and Duke Tong had rank eight cultivation level and their battle strength was on par with Qin Ding Ling, but they did not have pseudo venerable battle strength like Duke Long.

Dragon Soul Dark Castle and Red Heavenly Altar regained freedom, they charged at the immortal graveyard, trying to destroy it!

Rumble!

These two Immortal Gu Houses had just charged forward when a Gu Immortal repelled them.

This Gu Immortal had a calm expression, his nose was tall and his eyes were deep, his shoulders were lifted up as they held up one mini mountain each.

“With me, Uncle Feng, here, don’t even think of destroying the immortal graveyard.” Uncle Feng blocked the path of the two Immortal Gu Houses, he had the demeanor of a person trying to stop an army.

Fang Yuan’s subordinates were not ready to give up, they controlled the Immortal Gu Houses to attack.

But Uncle Feng fought similarly to Lu Wei Yin, they were specialized in defense, even with the attack of the two Immortal Gu Houses, he still held them off.

“What do we do now?” A Gu Immortal in Red Heavenly Altar asked.

Currently, Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit were fighting against Duke Mei and Duke Tong, the mission of destroying the immortal graveyard was in the hands of these two Immortal Gu Houses.

“No worries, he has already been hit by our method.” The immortals in Dragon Soul Dark Castle snickered.

Guh.

As he said that, Uncle Feng’s expression turned ashen, he spat out pieces of soul fragments.

“A soul path method?” Uncle Feng frowned.

In his era, there was no soul path.

Right at this moment, a newly awakened Gu Immortal flew out of the immortal graveyard.

“It seems like my awakening was timely.” This female immortal was just a soul, she had no body.

She blew at Uncle Feng lightly.

This blue-gray breath reached Uncle Feng’s body and quickly fused into his soul.

Uncle Feng felt a sense of relief, his soul injury was rapidly healing.

“Oh no, this is Heavenly Court’s soul path great expert from Spectral Soul’s era, Fairy Maiden Soul who is on par with Thunder Ghost True Monarch. She is most skilled at healing methods!” The Gu Immortals in Dragon Soul Dark Castle had a change of expression.

The ones in Red Heavenly Altar gritted their teeth: “Kill this healing Gu Immortal first, otherwise, all our efforts will be nullified by her.”

The battle erupted again, the two Immortal Gu Houses focused their target on Fairy Maiden Soul.

All sorts of killer moves were unleashed, Uncle Feng defended desperately, both sides gave it their all as the sky turned dark from their clash, winds and waves were rising.

While they were in a deadlock, another immortal awakened and joined the battle.

This immortal had a round head and large ears, he wore a loose robe and qi path aura surged around him.

Boom boom boom!

As the air exploded, the qi path immortal charged in between the two Immortal Gu Houses.

“Take this move — Rugged Fiendish Qi.”

The qi path immortal shouted as he waved his sleeves, blowing out countless traces of fiendish qi.

The fiendish qi gathered and took form, becoming huge rocks that turned into mountains and valleys, enveloping the two Immortal Gu Houses.

Red Heavenly Altar and Dragon Soul Dark Castle tried to charge out at the first moment, destroying countless fiendish qi mountains.

But after these mountains shattered, they quickly formed again to obstruct the Immortal Gu Houses.

“This is... Senior Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch!” Uncle Feng and Fairy Maiden Soul were surprised.

Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch was a famous qi path expert renowned in history, after he became rank eight and traveled the world, he purposely looked for the fiendish qi sea springs and created the Shabi from them. He refined a total of ninety-nine Shabi, he formed a grand army with them. These Shabi were compatible with his immortal killer moves, he could use them extremely well, during that era, almost nobody could rival him.

The current Shabi Ninety-five was one of them, after a long period of time, its strength had risen to legendary immemorial beast level.

With the help of Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch, Heavenly Court managed to defend the immortal graveyard.

Thereafter, more and more Gu Immortals awakened, Heavenly Court survived the initial stage which was the most dangerous, they started counterattacking.

Many Gu Immortals directly got around the small battlefield and tried to reinforce Book Mountain.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable! Are you there? Come out and meet me!” Golden Hooped Great Immortal shouted in deep anger.

He had once invited Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to tour Heavenly Court, during that time, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable planted a seed that erupted during the fate war, causing Longevity Heaven to arrive in Heavenly Court and cause huge losses to them.

“Ninety-five, come here.” Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch blocked Demon Immortal Qi Jue and beckoned Shabi Ninety-five.

“Master.” Shabi Ninety-five was filled with admiration and fear, it went to Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch with injuries all over the body.

Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch petted it lightly, Shabi Ninety-five instantly became revitalized, its injuries mostly healed.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue had a dark expression, with the appearance of Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch, his plan of capturing Shabi Ninety-five became hopeless.

“Stop him!” Right at this moment, Fairy Ming Hao shouted.

Zhan Bu Du moved like a raging dragon, he arrived at the middle of the mountain from the southeast direction.

Behind him, Qing Chou was chasing relentlessly but it was obstructed by Profound Frost House and Red River Pavilion, it could not move quickly enough to stop Zhan Bu Du.

Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch took in a deep breath: “You are one of the clones of the current generation demon, Fang Yuan? Let me have a taste of your power.”

Right when he was about to go, Demon Immortal Qi Jue blocked him.

The latter chuckled: “You think you can leave?”

Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch had a solemn expression: “Since senior insists, then I, the junior, will have to risk my life to face you in battle.”

“Where are you going?” Gu Yue Fang Zheng shouted loudly.

Demon Judgment Board which was flying around the place quickly arrived, but with a loud sound, it was sent flying by the Unbreakable Golden Fortress that had just arrived as well.

“Help Zhan Bu Du to fight his way to the peak of the mountain.” The other immortals saw a chance, they took action and blocked the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals for Zhan Bu Du.

Fairy Ming Hao saw this and sighed deeply, she had no choice but to fly out and stand in front of Zhan Bu Du: “Wait...”

“Get lost!”

Zhan Bu Du shouted, sweeping his arm fiercely.

Boom!

Fairy Ming Hao’s body was covered in dazzling starlight, even though she blocked this move, her entire person was sent flying like a cannonball, she crashed through many rocks on Book Mountain before stopping.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2182: Hu Elevation!

Fairy Ming Hao’s body shook as she quickly stood up.

She was not injured, but the issue here was that she could not block Zhan Bu Du.

In this current situation, Zhan Bu Du’s threat level was far greater than the Immortal Gu Houses.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Fairy Ming Hao stomped lightly as she quickly flew out, her palm stretched out as tens of stardust specks flew around.

Zhan Bu Du did not dodge, he allowed the stardust to land on him, he was as fierce as a dragon or tiger, only aiming for the mountain peak.

Fairy Ming Hao gritted her teeth, she could only fly forward and face Zhan Bu Du in close combat.

Zhan Bu Du kicked and she was sent flying again, he completely ignored her.

“Charge!” Some Gu Immortals saw Zhan Bu Du ascending to the top of Book Mountain, they were about to cheer when suddenly, starlight flashed before them.

Zhan Bu Du was enveloped by starlight and quickly vanished, when he reappeared, he was at the base of Book Mountain.

The immortals were shocked before understanding why.

This killer move was not new, it had been used during the fate war.

As expected, when Zhan Bu Du raised his head to look above Book Mountain, he saw a tiny and delicate Immortal Gu House.

Which other chessboard looking Immortal Gu House could it be but Star Constellation Chessboard?

Star Constellation Chessboard radiated with starlight, any enemy that approached the peak of the mountain would get enveloped by starlight and forcefully teleported elsewhere, it was an impossible position.

Fairy Ming Hao charged at Zhan Bu Du again, trying to stall him while feeling nervous internally: “Hopefully, no one can break this killer move!”

This move had been used before.

The more a Gu Immortal uses their method, the greater the risk of it getting seen through.

Zhan Bu Du’s gaze turned slightly dim, he soon made a decision.

He endured Fairy Ming Hao’s furious attacks as he charged to the top again at full speed!

He seemed to have made no advancement, but he had succeeded in his goal. Fairy Feng Ya was originally fully invested in retrieving the Primordial Domain, now, she had to multitask and control Star Constellation Chessboard, her efficiency was greatly reduced.

Fang Yuan’s side had to continue exerting pressure to distract her.

Fairy Ming Hao had an outstanding combat system, the more stars that hit the target, the greater the damage they would progressively take.

Zhan Bu Du initially resisted the stars which could not even pierce his skin. But after hundreds of stardust strikes, he was bathed in blood. When the attacks reached over a thousand, his wounds were deep until bones could be seen.

During this period, he had already failed in three attempts to charge up.

He was transported by Star Constellation Chessboard each time.

“It seems that at this moment, nobody can break this method.” Fairy Ming Hao relaxed at long last.

During this period, Gu Immortals had taken action, but Star Constellation Chessboard’s killer move was constantly modified by Heavenly Court to a mild extent, allowing it to display effectiveness even now.

“This cannot drag on.” Qi Sea Ancestor had been fighting against Fairy Yu Xiu all along, seeing Zhan Bu Du’s state, he made a decision.

He waved his sleeves, a silhouette flew out, taking the place of the main body to deceive Fairy Yu Xiu.

Fairy Yu Xiu quickly exposed this fake body but Lu Wei Yin flew in front of her, desperately blocking her.

Because Fairy Yu Xiu was stalled for a moment, Qi Sea Ancestor, who was far away summoned a secluded domain of heaven and earth above his head.

“Hu Land?!” Demon Immortal Qi Jue was fighting against Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch, at this moment, both of them turned around together and shouted in unison.

“Move aside.” Qi Sea Ancestor’s sleeves fluttered intensely along with his beard, his face was flushing red.

Lu Wei Yin quickly dodged to the side.

But Qi Sea Ancestor suddenly changed directions, aiming towards Book Mountain instead.

“Oh no!” Fairy Yu Xiu saw this and her heart jumped, she quickly used a killer move, disregarding the danger as she stood between Qi Sea Ancestor and Book Mountain.

Immortal killer move — Hu Elevation!

Hu Land suddenly shook intensely as countless qi currents shot out of it fiercely.

Qi currents surged intensely and grandly, there was righteous qi, evil qi, blood qi, strange qi, and others, they had gathered into a single force under the effect of Hu Land, they were tightly connected and inseparable!

Bam!

Heaven and earth shook, it could astound demons and gods.

An immensely thick qi beam shot out abruptly, it flew towards Book Mountain with terrifying force that could split heaven and earth.

Fairy Yu Xiu gritted her teeth, she used the strongest defensive method that she possessed, traces of fresh wisdom path insignias surrounded her body, radiating over the world.

As the qi beam approached, the wisdom path insignias were quickly melted, and Fairy Yu Xiu’s tiny body was quickly submerged in the vast force.

The qi beam was obstructed by this and lost thirty percent of its power, but it still moved towards Book Mountain with an unstoppable momentum.

“Don’t even think of it!” At the crucial moment, Bai Cang Shui controlled a rank eight Immortal Gu House and charged forward.

With a heaven-shaking sound, Heavenly Court’s rank eight Immortal Gu House only lasted for a few breaths of time before disintegrating.

On Book Mountain, Star Constellation Chessboard shot out a beam of light that landed on Bai Cang Shui through the gaps of the Immortal Gu House, bringing her away.

Without Bai Cang Shui controlling it, the Immortal Gu House quickly got destroyed by the qi beam, turning into scraps.

Next, even the scraps were blown to oblivion by the qi beam!

The qi beam’s power weakened by another twenty percent, but it was less than a hundred steps away from Book Mountain.

At the crucial moment, a golden green giant appeared.

It was Qing Chou.

Qing Chou raised its shield and blocked the qi beam.

Boom.

The qi pillar sent Qing Chou crashing into Book Mountain as well, creating a huge pit that was hundreds of feet deep.

Even as the qi beam dissipated, the lingering aura permeated the battlefield.

Qing Chou did not move at all, its shield was destroyed and a huge hole that was completely see-through appeared on its chest.

Divine Emperor City quickly came over with flickering green light, a spiral appeared and sucked Qing Chou’s dead body back into it.

Elsewhere, starlight specks started to shine beside Fairy Ming Hao as Fairy Yu Xiu appeared.

Her hair was disheveled, she was in a pitiful state.

Her expression was pale, her body was unstable, she fell to a half-kneeling position on the ground immediately after.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s Hu elevation killer move was terrifyingly powerful, he defeated Yu Xiu, destroyed the Immortal Gu House, and killed Qing Chou in just one move!

But Qi Sea Ancestor was in poor condition as well.

After using this move, he lost thirty percent of his immortal essence storage, he even expended ten thousand qi path dao marks.

Chains started to appear from the space around him, binding Qi Sea Ancestor in a fixed position.

“Qi Sea Ancestor’s killer move was too powerful, it caused Limitless’ retaliation method to trigger!” Lu Wei Yin saw this and his expression changed slightly.

If this Hu elevation was not used on Book Mountain, which was guarded by Heavenly Court desperately, it would have caused immense destruction to the great worlds.

That would severely affect Limitless Demon Venerable’s final derivation.

Thus, Limitless Demon Venerable’s method activated, restraining Qi Sea Ancestor immediately.

Qi Sea Ancestor wanted to struggle but was helpless to find that he could not move, the chains even moved into his mind, stopping the collision of his thoughts, there were also chains in his immortal aperture that sealed all his immortal essence.

Lu Wei Yin quickly went to him and guarded his body.

The peak of Book Mountain was still not taken down, the Primordial Domain silhouette in the sky was becoming more vivid, but Bing Sai Chuan smiled from within Calamity Luck Altar: “Heavenly Court is at their wits end too.”

Earlier, even though Heavenly Court blocked Hu elevation at the critical moment, they had expended their trump cards, they were exhausted now.

Bing Sai Chuan could tell that they were weakened, he immediately said to the Eight Extremities behind him: “The time is now, go and attack Book Mountain!”

Heaven Extremity Gai Mei, Earth Extremity Gan Ni, Black Extremity Sun Ming Lu, Yellow Extremity Jiao Huo, Space Extremity Chang Bai, Time Extremity Man Xin Yi, Flood Extremity Yu Yi Yi, and Desolate Extremity Lu Tong Lan, they were all mobilized.

Once they left Calamity Luck Altar, the eight of them activated an ancient battle formation – Eight Extremities!

This ancient battle formation was very special, normally speaking, ancient battle formations gathered the strength of many Gu Immortals into one, but this ancient battle formation split the gathered power into eight Gu Immortals, causing the Eight Extremities’ battle strength to surge immensely, making them go from rank seven to rank eight elites.

Once the Eight Extremities moved out, from the direction of Yellow Earth Great World, a group of people came.

They were led by Fang Yuan’s enslavement path clone Wu Shuai, and the giant formed from the Twelve Zodiac battle formation.

Originally, Fang Yuan was waiting at the back while observing the situation, once he saw a chance, he mobilized his people to attack.

Heavenly Court’s pressure intensified at once.

In order to prevent the Gu Immortals from breaking through, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals flew out of their Immortal Gu Houses.

Instantly, the battle surrounding Book Mountain reached the most intense climax.

Almost each breath, there would be a killer move unleashed.

Countless killer moves weaved together and created a beautiful fireworks of varying colors, from within the dazzling display, there was deep killing intent.

Red Heart Traveler suddenly held up a sun of blood that shone brightly, shielding Nine Spiritual Fairy.

Nine Spiritual Fairy gave a clear roar, the nine-colored barrier shook and the nine layers of light mixed together, becoming extremely dazzling.

Next, the mixed light sphere flashed as Nine Spiritual Fairy transformed into a colorful rhinoceros.

The rhinoceros had a large head and small body, it was shining with various colors. It spoke human language: “Thank you!”

Saying so, it charged towards the Twelve Zodiac Giant.

Rumble!

The two huge existences clashed, dust clouds rose and rocks were sent flying.

The moment Nine Spiritual Fairy left, Yellow Extremity Jiao Huo appeared behind Red Heart Traveler.

Pew!

As flames surged, Red Heart Traveler was caught unguarded and got hit by Yellow Extremity, his defensive killer move was pierced and he got substantially injured.

“How can this be?” Red Heart Traveler was shocked but quickly retaliated.

But at the next moment, Yellow Extremity pierced through space, escaping far away.

Red Heart Traveler saw this, his heart sank, he could tell that Yellow Extremity was a fire path cultivator, but he managed to unleash a space path method.

“So Longevity Heaven’s eight extremities killer move can not only connect the thoughts of the Eight Extremities together and share their vision, they can also share killer moves!”

Under the effect of the killer move eight extremities, the Eight Extremities cooperated smoothly, the battle strength they displayed was beyond imagination.

Red Heart Traveler became incredibly alert, he swiftly dodged attacks.

At the next moment, countless army ants swept the base of the mountain like a tsunami, quickly rising to the middle of the mountain.

Wu Shuai did not step onto the mountain, he was outside manipulating his army.

Divine Emperor City sent out countless divine bean soldiers to fight against the army ants.

In the chaotic battle, a figure flew out like a rampaging dragon, there were huge waves wherever he went. There was a cape behind him that was blood-red in color, he was Zhan Bu Du!

Fairy Yu Xiu had already gone to obstruct the Eight Extremities, while Fairy Ming Hao was sent flying by Zhan Bu Du again.

“Stop him!” Fairy Ming Hao shouted loudly.

Ruan Dan was nearby, it hesitated upon hearing this, not daring to move forward.

Zhou Xiong Xin gritted his teeth, he stood before Zhan Bu Du.

Immortal killer move — Rumors Become Tigers!

Fierce tigers roared, charging towards Zhan Bu Du with imposing might.

Zhan Bu Du sucked in with his mouth as the tigers were absorbed into his stomach, he easily arrived in front of Zhou Xiong Xin.

Zhan Bu Du punched directly, piercing Zhou Xiong Xin’s chest as his hand appeared behind the victim.

Zhou Xiong Xin’s eyes were wide open, he died on the spot.

Zhan Bu Du waved his arm, this corpse was sent flying, he met with the awakened Gu Immortal Fairy Maiden Soul next.

Zhan Bu Du shouted loudly, his monstrous strength obliterated Fairy Maiden Soul, her soul was completely destroyed.

Zhan Bu Du stomped as he finally arrived at the top of the mountain, this time, Star Constellation Chessboard had ceased attacking as well, it did not shoot out any more star pillars.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2183: Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

Star Constellation, as a child, was laughing happily.

She wandered around the back mountain, roamed the multi-colored flower fields, and played with the sweet mountain springs.

She teased a young, intelligent leopard cat which she had saved coincidentally.

These last days, she would often come to the cave to see it, feed it, and play with it.

“You are playing around again?!” A voice suddenly came from behind.

The child Star Constellation’s body shook, she felt her skull turning numb as she slowly turned around and saw the white robed, solemn-looking Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable.

“Master...” Star Constellation lowered her head, saying softly.

“Give your hand.” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable brought out a ruler.

Star Constellation gritted her teeth as she stretched out her small white hand.

Slap.

The ruler struck her palm and left a red mark.

The intense pain struck her, but Star Constellation fought back the tears.

“The homework that you did recently is a total mess, instead of training killer moves, you are playing with a cat here?” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable looked at the leopard cat behind Star Constellation.

The child Star Constellation immediately brimmed with tears: “Master, don’t be angry, don’t chase Little Yellow away. Its injuries have just healed, I promise I will definitely practice my killer moves.”

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable fixed his gaze at Star Constellation, but Star Constellation drummed up her courage and held her gaze, like she would protect the leopard cat no matter what.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s expression was stiff, he picked up the child Star Constellation: “Come with me.”

Star Constellation felt a strong wind brushing past her face and could not open her eyes.

After some time, the roar of the wind suddenly stopped and she felt her feet touching the ground.

“Take a look.” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s voice reached her.

Star Constellation opened her eyes and saw that she was in a ruin.

Her pupils shrunk, her sight was filled with burning houses and corpses of man, woman, old, and young...

“This village was peaceful and quiet, but because it is near the regional wall, a group of variant human bandits invaded and massacred everyone.”

“Do you know how often this situation occurs?” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable asked.

The child Star Constellation was deeply shocked, shaking her head subconsciously.

“This kind of situation is happening almost every day.” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable heaved a sigh, “Not only at the periphery of Central Continent, there are remnant variant humans even deep within Central Continent itself. They come out occasionally and kill us humans.”

“Heavenly Court is already established in Central Continent, humanity has firm dominance, while the variant human super forces have gone into hiding or have left Central Continent. As for the other four regions? Variant humans still hold power. Do you know why that is the case?”

The child Star Constellation answered quickly: “I know! I heard from the senior brothers and sisters that master roamed the five regions and attacked all the variant human super forces. No matter how many variant human Gu Immortals there are, they cannot beat you. But they all hid away, so we cannot find them.”

“Right.” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable nodded his head, “When immortal apertures are placed in the world, they shrink down to the size of a speck, searching them is extremely difficult, like searching for a needle in the ocean.”

“Because of this, even though humanity has me, an Immortal Venerable invincible in the world, we are still unable to get rid of those variant humans.”

“Although we have taken control of Central Continent, the other four regions are still not liberated. Because our human population is too small, we cannot compare to variant humans.”

“Even if we target the four regions’ variant human Gu Masters and mortals, even if we kill them all, as long as those variant human blessed lands and grotto-heavens exist, they can easily nurture countless variant humans.”

Once blessed lands and grotto-heavens hid, they were difficult to find, and the time inside was much faster than the outside world. The population inside could increase much more rapidly.

Every once in a while, the blessed lands and grotto-heavens could open their entrance and release the extra population in the four regions.

“These Gu Immortals’ immortal apertures are the foundations of the variant humans. If we cannot find their specific locations, when I die, humanity will still be in a perilous situation, the past tragedy will repeat once more.” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable heaved a deep sigh and stroked the child Star Constellation’s hair, “This is why you need to work hard! Fate has decreed that you will become the future Immortal Venerable and create wisdom path.”

“With wisdom path, we can deduce the location of most of the blessed lands and grotto-heavens, we can kill those variant human Gu Immortals and ensure the prosperity of humanity for countless generations ahead.”

“Xing Su[1], you need to understand that with every moment you spend playing around, more of our people will die under the blades of the variant humans. Among them, there are many old people, and also many who are the same age as you. While you are playing, the children who are of your age lie in a pool of blood, unable to see the sun of tomorrow.”

The child Star Constellation was pale as paper as she pursed her lips in silence.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable used his killer move again, bringing her back to the back of the mountain. He did not instruct her anymore and left her by herself.

Several days later.

The child Star Constellation parted with the leopard cat Little Yellow.

Despite Little Yellow being very reluctant to leave, she still returned it to the forest.

When she was alone, she squatted on the ground and held her knees, weeping softly to herself.

“Although master is completely right, I am only just a child. The senior brothers and sisters can have fun, so why can’t I?”

“Is it simply because fate decreed me as the future Immortal Venerable?”

The child Star Constellation cried for a long time till nighttime, the sky was filled with stars.

She slowly stood up, her small, round face still had tear stains.

A lump of starlight gushed out of her heart.

Star Constellation held this starlight and threw it on the back of the mountain.

This lump of starlight bore a vague resemblance to her shadow.

The child Star Constellation said to this starlight shadow: “Actually, I don’t want to become an Immortal Venerable, but fate cannot be changed. Everyone is so kind to me, I need to think for them as well and bring happiness to the whole of humanity.”

“If there is a second life, I want you to play all you want and make up for my regret in this life!”

The starlight shadow did not leave.

The child Star Constellation looked at her and said: “Let me give you a name. Since master often praises my wittiness, bright eyes and white teeth, let’s call you Ming Hao.”

The starlight shadow seemed to be very happy after receiving the name, it left quickly.

Teenage Star Constellation grew into a young lady, and she was now an immortal.

She did not just stay in closed cultivation, she often traveled to different places to enrich her experience.

There was no use in just cultivating behind closed doors, because what she needed to do was not to inherit Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s legacy, but to create wisdom path.

When she was traveling Eastern Sea with a disguised identity, she became acquainted with a Gu Immortal.

Under some coincidences, she and this Gu Immortal ran into each other time and again. They joined hands to fight and got rid of variant human tribes, they explored sea trenches, and so on. Their friendship deepened, which eventually turned into feelings of fondness.

But...

“You are a variant human!” When Star Constellation saw her beloved’s true appearance, she stepped back in shock.

“Xing Er, I did not hide it on purpose, please listen to my explanation.” Her beloved one was anxious.

Star Constellation, however, shook her head and flew up to the sky.

The man gave chase without letting up, but because of his heavy injuries, he fell from the sky in the end.

When he gained consciousness, he found that he was lying on a beach and Star Constellation was beside him.

“You saved me, Xing Er! I know it is you, where are you? Come out and meet me!” The man was both surprised and happy as he struggled to get up and shouted with all his strength, but he received no reply after all.

In the end, he could only leave the island.

Under the setting sun, looking at his lonely receding figure, Star Constellation stood on the beach and revealed herself.

Her eyes were brimming with tears along with reluctance to part with him: “Why do you have to be a variant human? How great would it be if you were human? Do you know that I already thought of marrying you? According to customs, master had already prepared Embroidered Tower for me as dowry.”

“But I cannot do it.”

“Because I am Star Constellation, the future Immortal Venerable of humanity.”

“I need to get rid of the variant human Gu Immortals for my people, if I become your wife, how can I attack them? Once the variant humans get comfortable, what will happen to the future of humanity?”

Her master’s anticipation, the hope of humanity, and the support of the people around her; all of these burdens were weighing on Star Constellation’s shoulders.

But her heart still ached!

The pain of unfulfilled love almost tore her soul apart.

Starlight started to gush out of Star Constellation’s heart.

She held this lump of starlight again.

She mumbled to the starlight shadow: “Since he praised my beauty and talent, I will name you Yu Xiu. If there is another life, please live well for me, don’t care about the future of humanity, don’t think about the safety of people, for just once, live for yourself and be selfish, go ahead and love, you can cry to your heart’s content!”

The starlight shadow rippled as if replying to her.

In her later years, Star Constellation had already become a venerable.

Inside a hall, she sat on the main seat, looking at her senior sister who had always supported and taken care of her, she was like her own mother.

“Let me do it!” The senior sister shouted, “Ah Su, you are the great Immortal Venerable, you cannot sacrifice yourself to merge with heaven’s will.”

“No.” Star Constellation shook her head softly, “Precisely because I am the Immortal Venerable, I need to do this.”

The senior sister’s eyes were filled with tears: “Ah Su, you were only three years old when you became master’s disciple. I have taken care of you this entire time, I looked at you grow bit by bit, mature step by step, and finally become the Star Constellation Immortal Venerable of humanity.”

“No one knows better than me how much sadness and pain you have endured in this process. You have already sacrificed too much over these years.”

“Now, you have already done a great job and fulfilled everyone’s expectations. Don’t make sacrifices anymore, you still have a lot of time to do what you want to do.”

“Didn’t you often complain to me? Although your life seemed great and you have been praised by countless people, you still hold many regrets. Ah Su, you deserve a better life from now on.”

“You have sacrificed too much for humanity, it is time for you to live for yourself.”

“So this time, let me assimilate with heaven’s will.”

Star Constellation smiled, her figure flashed and appeared before her senior sister.

She softly wiped her senior sister’s tears and took out a lump of starlight from her heart.

“Senior sister.”

“You praised me for my great magnanimity. I shall name this starlight shadow Feng Ya, let her accompany you in my stead. I was an orphan from birth, you looked after me all my life, you are my sister and also like my mother. How can I let you do this?”

“In any case, I have already sacrificed and given up so much, it is already like a habit for me. Haha.”

“Let Feng Ya stay and look after you, she will help me make up for the regrets in life.”

“I have left behind three starlight shadows, they are also my arrangements for revival.”

“I do not want to see the day where I can revive, but if the situation aggravates to that degree and I revive, I will listen to you, my senior sister. Forget about this world or the whole of humanity, I will live for myself and myself only!”

“For once, I want to be selfish too.”

Crazed Demon Cave.

When Ming Hao, Yu Xiu, and Feng Ya woke up, they received devastating news.

Fate Gu was destroyed, Heavenly Court had fallen to an abysmal state, the great demon Fang Yuan had risen up, the righteous path was declining while demons surged, Central Continent was surrounded by danger on all fronts.

I once vowed to myself!

I want to live my own life..

To live for my pleasure, to live for my love, and to live for my happiness.

Was I wrong?

I had already completed my mission, I created wisdom path, I already got rid of most of the variant human Gu Immortals, I even led humanity on the path of prosperity.

It was time I took a rest.

But why?

Why did I subconsciously make plans and arrangements?

Why am I still fighting here?

Why?

Fairy Ming Hao looked at the rising fire and smoke, she curled her lips.

Fairy Yu Xiu looked at Demon Immortal Qi Jue and the Eight Extremities with a cold gaze.

Fairy Feng Ya looked at the charging Zhan Bu Du and smiled plainly.

At this moment, starlight flickered on the bodies of the three fairies, resonating with bright radiance.

The three immortals recited together —

A life of selfless giving,

Worrying and helping the people.

Sacrificing my body and life,

For starlight to radiate the world.

Everything changed upon revival,

The five regions became unrecognizable.

Only my heart remained the same,

The three avatars unite to save heaven!

Starlight connected and fused into one, its radiance rising towards the sky.

The light soon formed into an immortal with peerless beauty, her eyes shone brightly like stars in the sky.

Star Constellation?

Star Constellation.

Star Constellation!

[1] Star Constellation’s name which also became her title later, much like Paradise Earth.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2184: Immortal Venerables Enter Primordial Domain

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable?!”

On the peak of Book Mountain, the scene of three star avatars joining into one and turning into Star Constellation Immortal Venerable shocked the immortals, who were bathed in blood.

Although the immortals already expected the revival of venerables with fate Gu being destroyed, when a venerable really revived in front of them, they still could not help but feel intense shock.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

The only female among the ten venerables. She created wisdom path, inherited Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s will, developed Heavenly Court, assimilated with heaven’s will, and helped Heavenly Court resist three Demon Venerables.

Her name was always resplendent in the history of humanity, her glorious reputation had never dimmed.

Now, she had revived!

“Star Constellation, take this punch!” Zhan Bu Du did not have any hesitation as he stepped on the mountain peak, and with a thunderous voice, he attacked Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s revival did not surprise Fang Yuan.

In fact, he already had some speculations regarding the identities of Ming Hao, Yu Xiu, and Feng Ya.

These three had extremely high strength, they were all pseudo venerables.

Just this point alone was enough to explain the problem!

Heavenly Court was persistent in repairing Fate and had worked for it for over one million years. But in the crucial fate war, there was only one pseudo venerable battle strength – Duke Long – defending Heavenly Court.

But right now in Crazed Demon Cave, Heavenly Court had suddenly brought out three pseudo venerable battle strength experts, this proved that these three female immortals had revived only after the destruction of fate Gu.

If not for this, how could they not participate in the fate war?

Since they were revived pseudo venerables, their names should have been renowned in history, but they were shrouded in mystery.

More importantly, there was no trace of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable from the start.

With these several clues and his strong wisdom path attainment, Fang Yuan deduced that the probability of these three immortals being Star Constellation was increasingly obvious.

It was like how Fang Yuan could create clones like Qi Sea Ancestor, Zhan Bu Du, and Wu Shuai, why could Star Constellation Immortal Venerable not do the same?

It was just that Star Constellation’s three avatars were more profound and mysterious than Fang Yuan’s clones — The three fairies could become Star Constellation by fusing together!

Zhan Bu Du showed no fear against the revived Star Constellation. Before his punch even landed on Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the intense wind from his punch blew Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s long hair into the air.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, however, was smiling.

At the next moment, Zhan Bu Du struck Star Constellation, but he passed right through her.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s figure vanished like an illusory bubble.

This was fake, it was merely an illusion.

Zhan Bu Du realized this and quickly activated an investigative method, but could not detect Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s main body.

“Star Constellation, please hold on.” Suddenly, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s voice came from Calamity Luck Altar.

Golden light drifted in the air, revealing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s figure.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used a killer move.

Inside her immortal aperture, Fairy Feng Ya’s talent Gu, and Fairy Yu Xiu’s serious Gu and learning Gu, which were temporarily taken out from Divine Emperor City, activated one after the other.

Immortal essence was consumed intensely, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s figure turned illusory again.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s golden light could not obstruct her any longer.

Under everyone’s gaze, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable flew to the sky grandly and entered Primordial Domain!

“Damn it!” Zhan Bu Du gritted his teeth as he gave chase.

However, although he caught up to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, she was like a silhouette that could not be disturbed by Zhan Bu Du. She quickly entered the depths of Primordial Domain.

But Zhan Bu Du passed through Primordial Domain.

“Without special methods, there is no way to enter Primordial Domain!” Zhan Bu Du’s eyes burned with anger.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was revived.

But she did not fight Zhan Bu Du, instead choosing to directly head to Primordial Domain.

She was a venerable, she could not make a move casually; otherwise, she would be suppressed by Limitless Demon Venerable’s methods just like Qi Sea Ancestor.

She directly left without caring for Heavenly Court’s immortals, Book Mountain, and the whole battlefield, but this became a fatal move!

Lu Wei Yin’s expression was ashen and extremely unsightly.

Primordial Domain was the crucial factor of the battle in Crazed Demon Cave.

The reason they attacked Book Mountain furiously was to obstruct Heavenly Court from obtaining Primordial Domain. They never expected that even though Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was unable to get Primordial Domain, she could directly fly into it.

Zhan Bu Du lacked suitable methods and could not block her.

In fact, even Immortal Zombie Giant Sun made a move but was unable to obstruct Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

“What do we do?” Lu Wei Yin was at a loss.

Once Star Constellation Immortal Venerable entered Primordial Domain to replenish her lost attainment level, she would quickly become a wisdom path supreme grandmaster and regain her status of the wisdom path Dao Lord.

“Is Heavenly Court going to continue controlling the future of this world?” Bing Sai Chuan sighed dejectedly.

“Not necessarily.” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun sneered, “Let’s go!”

At the next moment, Calamity Luck Altar shone with dazzling golden light.

The golden light shot everywhere before joining together and making a path that stretched forward.

It was Calamity Luck Altar’s killer move — Luck Changing Golden Light Path!

At the same time, Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace that was stationed in Savage Wilderness Great World also let out a majestic light.

Ever since Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace was brought into Crazed Demon Cave, it had actively participated and cooperated with Limitless Demon Venerable’s deductions regarding the development of the worlds, it had gotten deeply involved.

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace’s light shone on Calamity Luck Altar, creating mysterious changes in the luck changing golden light path.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun flew out of Calamity Luck Altar and followed the golden light path into Primordial Domain.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was unable to stop Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, but he possessed the number one luck path attainment in the world. He made use of Calamity Luck Altar and Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace to enter Primordial Domain.

Longevity Heaven’s immortals cheered as they saw this.

But Fang Yuan’s subordinates were pale.

“Damn it, damn it!” Lu Wei Yin’s expression was extremely unsightly.

Although Longevity Heaven cooperated with Fang Yuan, their main goal was to make use of him. Right now, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun directly abandoned Fang Yuan and entered Primordial Domain himself.

It was obvious that he was seeking to replenish his luck path attainment level in Primordial Domain and become a luck path Dao Lord once again!

Both Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven threw Fang Yuan aside.

“Is this a venerable’s foundation?” Xiao He Jian heaved a sigh.

“Should we retreat?” Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch’s will started to waver.

Fang Yuan was the source of these variant human Gu Immortals’ confidence, but currently, it was obvious Fang Yuan could not compare to the two venerables. This made the variant human Gu Immortals’ morale fall sharply.

“No need to worry.” At this time, Fang Yuan’s main body came over from Yellow Earth Great World.

His expression was still calm.

Lu Wei Yin’s eyes shone with hope: “Lord Fang Yuan, you have a way?”

Fang Yuan nodded, looking towards Rising Cloud City: “Qi Jue, let’s cooperate once again.”

Demon Immortal Qi Jue flew over from Rising Cloud City: “Heh, I knew you had ulterior motives when you gave me the rank eight Immortal Gu House. But your killer move has no issue, come, let’s work together!”

Fang Yuan stretched out his hand, taking out Hu Land from the Qi Sea clone’s immortal aperture.

At the same time, Xi Land appeared above Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Hu Land and Xi Land came together and shone on each other.

Lu Wei Yin was exulted when he saw this: “I get it, <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> has records of this!”

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, chapter five, section thirty-seven.

Wisdom Gu was bitten by self Gu, it felt very angry and decided to take revenge.

Wisdom Gu found lie Gu: “No matter what I say, my words are filled with wisdom, they will advise and help others. This won’t do, so I came to you for help.”

Lie Gu asked: “How do you want me to help you?”

Wisdom Gu said: “This is easy and simple. Ren Zu and his children are in Primordial Domain now. In front of Primordial Domain is Xi Land, while behind it is Hu Land. Go to Primordial Domain and deceive Ren Zu, tell him Hu Land is in front while Xi Land is behind.”

Lie Gu was puzzled: “That can help you take revenge?”

Wisdom Gu laughed loudly: “Humans need to breathe in first before they can breathe out. Meanwhile, Xi Land and Hu Land are the breathing of heaven and earth. Just follow my instructions.”

Lie Gu followed wisdom Gu’s arrangements and went to Primordial Domain. It told Ren Zu: “Human, you need to be careful. You are in a mystical place, you will reach Hu Land if you go forward and Xi Land if you move back.”

Ren Zu had been thinking of leaving Primordial Domain, he thought: “The beastmen once advised me to not go to Hu Land. In that case, I shall head towards the back and go to Xi Land.”

Ren Zu moved towards the back of Primordial Domain with his children Great Strength True Martial and Carefree Wisdom Heart.

Thus, they arrived at Hu Land.

“This is not Xi Land!” Carefree Wisdom Heart knew they had been deceived.

Ren Zu patted his chest: “Fortunately, I died once and betrayal Gu has already left me. Otherwise if I care[1], betrayal Gu will harm me.”

But Great Strength True Martial suddenly realized something and shouted: “This is bad!”

“What’s wrong?” Ren Zu was just about to ask when self Gu flew out of his body.

Self Gu left Ren Zu, leaving behind a sentence: “Oh human, after you put attitude Gu on me, you deceived even yourself, so don’t blame me for leaving you.”

Back then, Ren Zu protected weak Gu. Weak Gu urged Ren Zu to put attitude Gu on self Gu to deceive himself; creating the perfect deception that managed to even deceive the Predicament.

If humans deceived themselves, their sense of self would leave and the person would lose themselves.

Ren Zu was angry and anxious: “What to do, self Gu left me. How can I obtain freedom without it? How can I break free of the restraints of fate?”

“Self Gu once took a bite of betrayal Gu, so it gained the inclination to betray. I was already dissatisfied with it.” Great Strength True Martial’s ability Gu shouted.

The skilled were naturally dissatisfied with themselves.

“Self Gu will be out of our sight soon, we need to give chase!” Carefree Wisdom Heart reminded.

The three immediately chase after self Gu.

Self Gu left very fast and dove into a river.

The river’s surface was calm with ice of all sizes floating on it.

“This is the River of Time, the ice floating on the river is called truthful floating ice.” Ren Zu’s group recognized it immediately, they had gained this knowledge in the Qian Kun Crystal Wall.

Ren Zu looked afar and said: “I think self Gu is hiding in the center of the floating ice, let’s quickly go and catch it!”

[1] ‘Care’ is read as ‘At Hu’ here, its a word pun.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2185: Fang Yuan Enters Primordial Domain

Ren Zu’s group sized up the situation by the riverside.

Every piece of floating ice in the River of Time was a piece of truth.

Ren Zu observed for a long while before pointing towards a floating ice: “This floating ice is neither big nor small and has a smooth surface, let’s step on this.”

But Great Strength True Martial said: “This floating ice is clearly too small, it is not enough for us three.”

Carefree Wisdom Heart shook her head: “This floating ice is quite big but there are many spikes on it, they will pierce our feet.”

Even when looking at the same truth, from the perspectives of different people, they could be big or small, minor or severe, difficult or easy. Some could accept it, but some could not.

Ren Zu's group discussed for a long while before they chose a floating ice and stepped on it.

When Ren Zu stepped on this ice, he immediately cried and sniveled; Great Strength True Martial shouted in anger, while Carefree Wisdom Heart laughed happily.

When looking at the same truth, different people would have different feelings and emotions regarding it.

Ren Zu and his children could only endure this.

“Every piece of floating ice in the River of Time is a cold and silent truth. But we humans have hearts, we feel emotions when we come across truths, and when truths and emotions mix, they create different situations[1] for everyone.” Carefree Wisdom Heart recalled the knowledge in her mind.

The floating ice carried the group and drifted for a while before it started shrinking and submerging.

“Let's jump to that floating ice.” Ren Zu pointed towards the left, at his front.

Before the floating ice under them submerged, the three jumped to the second floating ice.

This piece of truth created different emotions in Ren Zu's group.

The longer they stood on the floating ice, the more these emotions accumulated.

As the floating ice continued to sink, the emotions they felt also changed. Some went from angry to happy, while others went from happy to depressed.

“I can't endure this anymore, I feel horrible.” After persisting for a while, Ren Zu said while grasping his heart, “Let's jump to that floating ice.”

The three jumped over, but shortly afterwards, Carefree Wisdom Heart said: “I cannot stand this situation, I am also feeling extremely down. I even want to die.”

Ren Zu's group of three quickly changed to another floating ice.

No matter what truth they came upon, in reality, they could be endured by gritting one's teeth. The most dreadful thing was the suffering of the heart.

If the heart could not endure it, the person would be unable to continue moving forward.

After changing several pieces of floating ice, Great Strength True Martial felt the least amount of discomfort: “I am still fine.”

Strong Gu shouted proudly in his heart: “There are too many situations in the world, but it has always been the weak who suffer more than the strong.”

Fortitude Gu called out: “The credit here goes to me because I have been helping you since the start.”

Fortitude Gu could suppress emotions.

Suddenly, two Gu worms grew on Carefree Wisdom Heart’s palms.

The Gu on the left palm was called Good. The Gu on the right palm was called Bad.

“Humans, we can help you distinguish which situation is good and which is bad.” Good Gu and bad Gu said together in a soft voice.

Thus, with the help of good Gu and bad Gu, Ren Zu’s group was able to choose a piece of floating ice that had a good situation.

All three of them felt happy when standing on this floating ice.

When the floating ice started to submerge and good situations turned bad, the three jumped away.

Like this, the three gradually turned happy, then ecstatic, before finally becoming euphoric. They could not move forward anymore as they drowned in emotions of endless joy.

The three forgot about their situation, the truthful floating ice they were standing on submerged completely, they fell into the river one after the other.

...

Crazed Demon Cave, eighth layer.

Xi Land!

Hu Land!

The two secluded domains of heaven and earth let out misty white light that mixed into one and formed a horizontal pillar of light.

“The final step.” Fang Yuan let out a breath of relief as he activated a killer move.

Qi aura flew into the light pillar, forming a vortex in the middle.

The vortex shot to the sky, and when the white light vortex touched the surface of Primordial Domain, it expanded and shrouded the whole Primordial Domain like a fog.

Fang Yuan followed the white vortex of light and went into Primordial Domain!

“Amazing, amazing! Primordial Domain is in between Xi Land and Hu Land, using these two secluded domains of heaven and earth, he managed to locate Primordial Domain.” Lu Wei Yin praised loudly as he followed after Fang Yuan.

Behind him were pseudo venerable battle strength experts like Zhan Bu Du, Demon Immortal Qi Jue, and Qi Sea Ancestor.

After these immortals entered Primordial Domain, the white vortex dissipated rapidly, disappointing those Gu Immortals who had been thinking of making a move.

Fang Yuan was floating in Primordial Domain, frowning deeply.

The moment he stepped in, countless inspirations appeared in his mind.

But this was not a natural process, it was like a forced instillation, Fang Yuan experienced an indescribable pain.

This pain did not come from his body or soul, it came from his mind.

His mental state had been like a lake with no waves, being tranquil like a giant mirror. But now, there were fierce waves moving roughly.

This was like a process where an infant who only knew how to eat, drink, sleep, and excrete got forced to learn the joy of a child jumping and playing. If infants jumped and played, they would injure themselves.

It was also like a child who thought toys were the most precious thing, but was forcefully instilled the perspective of an adult — that money was the most important thing.

A Gu cultivator’s attainment level was very hard to raise. By entering Primordial Domain, Fang Yuan was increasing his attainment level unnaturally and forcefully, it went against the law of nature.

Fang Yuan clenched his teeth and endured it.

There was no trace of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, who had entered earlier. Fang Yuan also did not concentrate on them, he quickly inspected his body and came to a realization.

“Many paths’ attainment levels are increasing rapidly! Refinement path is also among them, but rule path’s progress is the fastest.”

Fang Yuan thought about it and started to move in Primordial Domain.

He used a method which allowed him to fly in Primordial Domain like a free bird.

Primordial Domain crumbled apart wherever he went.

Fang Yuan’s heart sank.

Although Primordial Domain was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, it was extremely fragile!

Fang Yuan did not even attack, it was just that he had too many dao marks, even Primordial Domain could not endure it.

Fortunately, before those areas of Primordial Domain collapsed, the attainment levels they contained were transferred into Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan felt a sense of urgency.

“I must find the correct direction quickly.”

“If those areas in the Primordial Domain that contain refinement path are destroyed, it will be terrible!”

Fang Yuan was unfamiliar with Primordial Domain, but all kinds of thoughts clashed in his mind and his profound wisdom path attainment allowed him to quickly understand his situation.

Primordial Domain contained the profundities of all paths, any Gu cultivator could benefit from it.

Fang Yuan acutely adjusted his direction and moved in Primordial Domain, gaining a lot of progress in his refinement path attainment level.

His direction was correct, and soon, his rate of progress in refinement path became the highest, among several other paths that were growing too.

Fang Yuan’s feeling at this moment could not be expressed in words.

Even though he was feeling incomparable pain and his mental state was unstable, he also felt full and satisfied, at the same time, there was also an increasing ‘thirst’!

This ‘thirst’ was towards knowledge, towards attainment levels.

“It is no wonder that in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, after Ren Zu obtained knowledge, he was not satisfied, he kept taking in more knowledge until his brain reached its limit and exploded.”

Fang Yuan felt a sense of resonance with Ren Zu.

“Almost, almost there!” Fang Yuan endured the pain as joy appeared on his face.

His intuition was telling him strongly that he was only a short distance from refinement path supreme grandmaster.

Rumble!

Right at this time, Primordial Domain shook and large areas started collapsing and breaking apart.

Fang Yuan’s refinement path attainment level that had been rising stopped abruptly.

“Giant Sun, Star Constellation!!!” Fang Yuan’s gaze turned cold and sharp.

He looked far away, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable were fighting.

They selected the location of their fight really well, it was in the main area of refinement path.

Once this portion of Primordial Domain was destroyed, Fang Yuan’s refinement path attainment level could not increase anymore.

In previous fights, Fang Yuan had probed many weaknesses of Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court; similarly, details about him were also taken notice of by Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

They were aware that Fang Yuan wanted to break through in refinement path.

Since they came to Primordial Domain a step earlier, how could these two venerables watch without doing anything?

Thus, as they fought, they destroyed the future prospects of Fang Yuan!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable must have taken the initiative to attack, and although Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was in an alliance with Fang Yuan, he was definitely happy to take advantage of the situation.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable saw Fang Yuan’s main body, immediately pointing at him.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Hundreds of deep blue stars shot towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan gave a shout, his whole body emitting seven-colored radiance.

Immortal killer move — Seven Kills Rainbow!

Metal path’s yellow light, wood path’s jade-green light, water path’s light blue hue, fire path’s red light, earth path’s brown light, wind path’s green radiance, and lightning path’s deep blue light; seven lights from these seven paths mixed together and shot forward in a drill shape.

Bam!

The seven kills rainbow destroyed most of the stars and continued towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Starlight flashed around Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, blocking this killer move. But she still staggered, and her face revealed surprise.

“What killer move is this?”

It was naturally a compound killer move.

This seven kills rainbow was modified from the five technique rainbow. The latter was once used by Fang Yuan in Eastern Sea when the Righteous Qi Alliance attacked Xia clan headquarters to retrieve Xia clan’s lost territory.

Five technique rainbow used metal, wood, water, fire, and earth, for a total of five paths. But seven kills rainbow went a step further, containing the swift wind and violent lightning.

It was hard for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to defend against such a killer move.

Because to block this move, she had to simultaneously consider metal, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and lightning, these amounted to seven paths!

There were many killer moves that seemingly involved many paths, but they were without any substance in essence.

For instance, when Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable fought with Limitless’ will in Crazed Demon Cave, he had used a killer move that imitated other paths’ strength.

The essence of the killer move was still one path, it was just that it imitated other paths.

In fact, to deal with his killer move, only theft path needed to be targeted.

But seven kills rainbow genuinely contained the strength of seven paths.

With just one exchange with Fang Yuan, even the grand Star Constellation Immortal Venerable felt troubled!

One aspect was the difficulty of defending against compound killer moves, the other aspect was Fang Yuan’s vast dao mark accumulation.

He had too many dao marks, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable might have been able to match it before, but the current her had just revived.

The three avatars merged into one, their dao marks were also added together, which became the current Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s foundation.

But clearly, the number of dao marks that Star Constellation had was lower than Fang Yuan.

[1] The Chinese character for situation/thing is made up of truth and emotion.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2186: Snatching Primordial Domain

Crazed Demon Cave.

Primordial Domain.

Fang Yuan’s main body finally fought against a venerable!

Immortal killer move — Sword Tongue Dragon Soul.

Fang Yuan roared again, his body shook and over a hundred evil dragons rapidly condensed around him.

The evil dragons roared and charged towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

“Another compound killer move?” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s pupils shrank slightly, she immediately noted that the evil dragons in front of her contained profundities of at least transformation path and enslavement path.

Fang Yuan’s dao mark quantity was horrifying, although Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could fight him head on, that was not her style.

She was a wisdom path supreme grandmaster!

This was true in her previous life, it was also true now.

Her body immediately flickered as the surrounding starlight split into a thousand specks, each of time transformed into one Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

“Hmm?” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun quickly activated his investigative method to distinguish the real body.

Fang Yuan’s pupils shrank, but he still ordered the dragons to charge forward.

The dragons fought with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s illusions, instantly, the whole battlefield was turned into a chaotic scene.

The evil dragons bit, swung their tails, stabbed with their horns, or used their claws, some even shot out sharp sword qi with their tongues...

At the start of the fight, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s illusions were caught off-guard and suffered heavy losses.

But not long later, they realized the patterns of these evil dragons, Star Constellation Immortal Venerables stabilized the situation and began to counterattack.

The methods of these Star Constellation illusions were ordinary, each illusion only had one killer move and there were only six kinds of killer moves altogether.

But these Star Constellation illusions had extremely high cooperation, not much inferior to the three avatars.

The Star Constellation illusions used their numerical advantage, about ten illusions would attack one evil dragon and kill it after sacrificing several illusions.

Fang Yuan’s evil dragons began to decrease rapidly in number.

“Fang Yuan’s sword tongue dragon soul has enslavement path profundity, so they can be controlled. But he is far from being Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s match in terms of wisdom path.” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun evaluated inwardly.

“But Fang Yuan knows his strengths and weaknesses as well as the enemy’s, it would not be worth the effort if he put his attention on carefully controlling the dragon souls. So he is just activating this move repeatedly.”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun did not interfere for the moment, he just observed from the side.

While observing the battle, he continued to activate his methods. Crimson light flew and wrapped the surrounding areas of Primordial Domain, pulling them into his immortal aperture.

Information was extremely important to Gu cultivators.

Especially when facing an enemy like Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, killer moves were most effective during the first time they were used.

Fang Yuan did not use other methods, he was still activating sword tongue dragon soul without stopping.

Groups of evil dragons that numbered over a hundred each continued to rush to the battlefield.

They were killed by the Star Constellation illusions, but they soon gained the upper hand in terms of overall strength.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was inwardly surprised: “So this move contains soul path as well?”

He saw these evil dragons being annihilated, but gradually, the souls of the evil dragons appeared. At first, these dragon souls were extremely weak, their battle strength was only ten percent of the evil dragons.

But as evil dragons continued to die, the scattered soul path dao marks in the battlefield surged continuously; the dragon soul beasts born from the deaths of these evil dragons also grew increasingly strong.

Twenty percent, forty percent, sixty percent...

The evil dragon souls’ battle strength continued to increase, finally defeating the Star Constellation illusions and tilting the battle situation in Fang Yuan’s favor.

And when there were only dozens of illusions remaining, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s main body could not remain hidden.

She smiled at Fang Yuan and actually retreated from the battlefield, taking her leave.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly.

From this fight, he gained a deeper understanding of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s nature.

Even though Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had revived and clearly had the battle strength to fight Fang Yuan head on, she did not battle frontally, she was very rational and flexible in thoughts.

It was like how she retreated this time and made Fang Yuan’s efforts go to waste.

These soul path dao marks on the battlefield were advantageous to Fang Yuan, but with Star Constellation’s casual retreat, Fang Yuan had to give chase, giving up this favorable battlefield.

It was not pleasant at all to fight with such an opponent.

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, hold up.” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun smiled, magnificent lights appeared and blocked Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

“Good!” Fang Yuan praised, taking the chance to catch up.

It seemed like the alliance agreement between Longevity Heaven and Fang Yuan was still effective.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s choice could be explained easily.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun saw Fang Yuan’s battle strength, and adding on the fact that he was still in his immortal zombie body, he regarded Heavenly Court as the main enemy.

Were Fang Yuan to be weaker, he might have been jointly attacked by Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, to get rid of this easiest target and prevent him from obtaining benefits while the two venerables fought.

Fang Yuan fought Star Constellation Immortal Venerable once again, while Immortal Zombie Giant Sun barely made any moves.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable lightly waved her jade-like hands, sending out a flurry of stars.

The stars were extremely fast, whistling through the air as they shot at Fang Yuan’s body.

Fang Yuan had tried to dodge them before, but these stars had homing ability, they reached him no matter how he dodged.

Fang Yuan would need a long time to deduce and plan before he could decipher this killer move.

Crack crack.

Soft sounds echoed as the light barrier around Fang Yuan started to break.

This light barrier was a compound killer move as well, it had outstanding defense, but under the continuous attack of the stars, it had already broken several times.

The power of each flying star never changed, but they were tightly connected as a consecutive move.

This was very terrifying.

Suppose that a flying star’s power was one, the first star would have the battle strength of one, second would have at least three, third would have six...

Their strength increased progressively, reaching a terrifying level at the later stages.

This was Fairy Ming Hao’s combat system.

The barrier of light collapsed, Fang Yuan immediately used a new defensive method, a halo shone above his head.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled. Just like what Heavenly Court’s intel described, Fang Yuan was very cautious. After using the defensive killer move a few times, he would change to a new one, afraid that his defensive killer move would be deciphered, which could cause heavy injuries or even death if he was caught off-guard.

In fact, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s plan was exactly this.

However, every time she got some results in her deductions, Fang Yuan would readjust his methods, making her deductions pointless.

“Fang Yuan, you are really well-prepared for this battle, you have been changing your killer moves so frequently, I am really curious how long can you continue this for?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable spoke while using a killer move.

This wisdom path killer move was formless and invisible. It created a whirlwind out of thin air, but it did not target Fang Yuan, instead targeting the surrounding Primordial Domain.

In an instant, all the areas of Primordial Domain within thousands of steps were emptied by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

On the other side, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun sent out golden light similarly, absorbing a small area of the Primordial Domain into his aperture.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with dark light.

These two venerables had extraordinary methods, they had been absorbing Primordial Domain even during the battle.

Fang Yuan’s accumulation was much inferior when compared to them.

He had also tried, but did not find an effective method to collect the Primordial Domain, he could only watch as these two made gains.

“Since it is so...”

Fang Yuan resolutely activated a killer move.

Flames flew and lightning shot out.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun had been collecting Primordial Domain when the lightning-fire wave formed by Fang Yuan’s killer move swept over and emptied out the areas of Primordial Domain around him.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun failed to gain anything, but he remained silent.

Fang Yuan activated another move.

Strong winds blew, an ice storm filled the area.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was implicated once again, the areas of Primordial Domain he was about to absorb into his immortal aperture were destroyed once again.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun clenched his teeth while taking a look at Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan activated another move.

Eerie souls moved and golden light shone, destroying all the surrounding areas of Primordial Domain.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun could not help but glance at each other; the former was no longer smiling, while the latter’s eyes were twitching.

“If I can’t have it, you can also stop dreaming about it!”

With this thought, Fang Yuan attacked without any restraint.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun needed some time to collect the Primordial Domain, flaws appeared during this process.

Fang Yuan was directly destroying Primordial Domain, which was much faster and more convenient.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was interrupted again and again, but Fang Yuan used the excuse of attacking Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. He did not suffer restrictions from the alliance agreement, and there was no obvious point to criticize.

He was really feeling impatient, as he transmitted his voice to Fang Yuan: “Fang Yuan, let’s negotiate. If you block Star Constellation Immortal Venerable while I collect the Primordial Domain, we can split the gains with a seven-three ratio!”

“No, I want half!” Fang Yuan immediately answered, as if he had been waiting for this.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was naturally unwilling: “Without my method, you won’t be able to collect even a portion of the Primordial Domain. If you dare to comprehend the Primordial Domain now, you will be met with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s attacks, the risk is too high.”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was not wrong.

It was not difficult to interrupt the instillation of Primordial Domain.

But even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not dare to comprehend Primordial Domain while fighting, and was only trying her best to collect it.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun put forward a fair argument, but Fang Yuan paid him no attention.

Boom...

Lightning exploded and qi waves rose as the surrounding Primordial Domain was once again destroyed by Fang Yuan’s killer move.

Primordial Domain might have been a secluded domain of heaven and earth, but it was different from Book Mountain and Dang Hun Mountain, it was fragile.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun gritted his teeth.

Fang Yuan used actions to tell him: It had to be fifty-fifty! If you don’t agree, then even you, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, won’t get any Primordial Domain.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun could only relent: “Alright, we will split it fifty-fifty!”

Fang Yuan continued: “Giant Sun, can I trouble you to put half of the Primordial Domain in treasure yellow heaven at your own convenience?”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun could not help but open his eyes wide.

Fang Yuan urged: “Don’t worry, with me disturbing her with all my strength, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable will not be able to collect much of Primordial Domain.”

These words were a reminder to him: Look, Heavenly Court is still our biggest enemy. Also, weakening Heavenly Court was also Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s intention all along.

“Alright.” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun sent half of his Primordial Domain into treasure yellow heaven to express his sincerity.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily, attacking Star Constellation Immortal Venerable even more fiercely.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was only one person, she was starting to suffer losses after Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Fang Yuan collaborated to target her.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2187: This Rascal Fang Yuan!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable fell into a disadvantage.

Fang Yuan was in charge of disturbing her, while Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was collecting Primordial Domain. Although Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also obtained some with difficulty, her opportunities were decreasing rapidly as she fought with Fang Yuan.

After this situation lasted for a while, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made a decision.

She resolutely activated a killer move, attacking Primordial Domain!

The Primordial Domain’s stability was like an avalanche, at first it was only a small piece that got affected, but in just a short while, the collapse became increasingly severe.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun gave a shout, sending out a golden-red aurora light.

He succeeded in obstructing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s killer move;

however, she activated the killer move again.

“Fang Yuan!” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun shouted.

Even without Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s reminder, Fang Yuan was already attacking fiercely to force Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to defend and give up on destroying Primordial Domain.

This time, it was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s turn to use killer moves continuously.

Since the battle started, this was the first time she had taken the initiative to attack!

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s response was not fast enough. Many of these offensive methods were used for the first time by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was not able to effectively block them.

Rumble...

After dozens of moves, Primordial Domain was completely destroyed.

Most of the destruction was done by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

“Star Constellation, you live up to your reputation!” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun praised in amazement.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable saw that her efficiency in collecting Primordial Domain could not compare to Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s joint effort, so she directly attacked Primordial Domain instead.

Such decisiveness and rationality, she was indeed an Immortal Venerable of human history, the second generation Immortal King of Heavenly Court!

“Hmm? This place is...” Fang Yuan’s expression was slightly strange.

Primordial Domain was completely destroyed, but he did not fall down from the sky, instead, he found himself in a void.

There was no trace of the worlds of the eighth layer of Crazed Demon Cave.

“This is Crazed Demon Cave’s ninth layer!” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun said.

He slowly flew over and stood a hundred steps away from Fang Yuan as they faced Star Constellation Immortal Venerable together.

Previously, Heavenly Court used Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance and the captives in Divine Emperor City to lure Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun into taking action, giving them time to seize the Primordial Domain.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Fang Yuan responded extremely quickly, mobilizing all their forces without caring for consequences.

Heavenly Court had experienced the fate war and were no longer in their prime condition, they could not block the joint attack of the two forces.

Since they could not seize it, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could only choose the next best alternative, she directly flew into Primordial Domain and raised her wisdom path to supreme grandmaster attainment level.

However, Fang Yuan, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, and other pseudo venerables also entered Primordial Domain.

The battle situation gradually escaped from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s grasp, forcing her to destroy the whole of Primordial Domain.

Primordial Domain was not seized by her, it was actually still in the ninth layer. The moment Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, Fang Yuan, and other immortals entered Primordial Domain, they had also entered Crazed Demon Cave’s ninth layer!

“The void in this ninth layer is far smaller than the eighth layer. Is this the truthful floating ice depicted in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>?”

Fang Yuan stared at Star Constellation Immortal Venerable while also noticing the mysterious floating ice behind her.

These bluish-white floating pieces of ice were of all sizes and had a huge quantity. They were floating quietly, they did not rotate by themselves, but because of the attractive forces between them, they flew around in groups. All the flying floating ice groups were slowly orbiting around the center.

From afar, these orbiting pieces of truthful floating ice looked like a giant ball on the whole.

The truthful floating ice’s orbit was filled with mysterious profundity, Fang Yuan felt dizzy after just taking several glances.

He intuitively sensed that these truthful floating ice pieces were continuing to grow bigger.

“Looks like this formation is the foundation for the construction of the whole of Crazed Demon Cave. Book Mountain and Primordial Domain are the cores that Heavenly Court took out from this formation.”

“Amazing, truly incredible!”

“This rank nine formation keeps on orbiting and deducing, these truthful floating ice pieces are its gains. Those dead Gu Immortals and immortal apertures in the eighth layer are the fuel for this formation and also the clues for deductions.”

“If so, the derivation Gu recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> and Limitless Demon Venerable’s study of eternal life are at the center of the formation?”

Just as Fang Yuan was thinking this, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun shouted in a cold tone.

At the next moment, a luck path killer move pierced through Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable dissipated like a bubble.

Her true body appeared, but it was no longer in front of Fang Yuan, she had already entered the rank nine formation.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s expression sank slightly: “Such a good method, this illusion was destroyed with one touch, but even I was unable to detect it was a fake. If not for a fluctuation in my luck, I would still have no clue. We need to move quickly! Limitless Demon Venerable used everything to arrange Crazed Demon Cave and it has been deducing for over a million years. We can’t let these gains go to Heavenly Court.”

Why would Fang Yuan hesitate, he immediately moved with Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and arrived at the periphery of the formation.

The two immortals stopped.

“This formation is really terrifying, all the truthful floating ice are formation cores and also the safest places. All the other areas besides them are extremely dangerous. If we stop at other areas, we will be crushed by the formation.”

Fang Yuan’s heart jumped as he saw this.

This rank nine formation’s crushing force came from the fusion of sacrificing countless Gu Immortals and great worlds, even he would not be able to endure it.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun inspected for a bit and jumped on a piece of truthful floating ice.

Be they the leading Star Constellation Immortal Venerable or Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, they both made the same choice. Fang Yuan was naturally going to follow them.

He jumped on an elephant sized truthful floating ice.

The moment he stepped on the floating ice, a strong guilty conscience attacked Fang Yuan’s heart, like he was a bandit that had invaded a peaceful village.

Fang Yuan’s expression changed slightly as he quickly resisted this strong emotion.

After adapting to it, Fang Yuan jumped to the second truthful floating ice.

This time, an intense sadness engulfed his heart, the intensity was higher than before.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth and adapted to it with difficulty.

He looked ahead, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun had already jumped to the fifth truthful floating ice, while Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was far ahead, already at the central area of the formation.

“I don’t have time!” Fang Yuan was hurried, he quickly jumped to the third floating ice.

The outcome of the fight in the Primordial Domain was not ideal to Fang Yuan.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun were likely to have already regained their supreme grandmaster attainment level, while Fang Yuan’s refinement path was still lacking.

However, since the opponent was the grand Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, this outcome was also within Fang Yuan’s expectations.

The Primordial Domain’s battle was already like that, he could not let these two venerables get their hands on Limitless Demon Venerable’s eternal life research results as well.

“Eternal life ... eternal life...” Fang Yuan mumbled.

Reaching eternal life was Fang Yuan’s goal and dream, even if he did not obtain it, he could not let it fall into other people’s hands.

The deeper into the formation, the higher the intensity of the emotions brought by the truthful floating ice.

These emotions were of all kinds, some were happiness, some were grief, some were sadness, some were anger...

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was still taking the lead.

Her advantage in this formation was extremely obvious!

Firstly, the game of chess back then was the fight between Limitless' will and Star Constellation's will.

Secondly, Heavenly Court had already begun infiltrating three hundred thousand years ago, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's Green Lotus Great World was the best proof.

Lastly, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable cultivated wisdom path.

Wisdom path had three aspects, thought, will, and emotion.

Dealing with emotions and even using them to battle was what wisdom path was most proficient in.

With all these reasons, it was no wonder Star Constellation Immortal Venerable rushed to the formation instead of fighting.

"But...." Star Constellation Immortal Venerable stepped on a truthful floating ice and gazed back, her brows slightly furrowed.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was rushing forward, constantly drawing nearer to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was not surprised about this.

The deeper into the formation, the more terrifying the intensity of the emotions and the more obstruction they created for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun had not hesitated to leave Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace behind to take part in the deductions. He himself had seized Reckless Savage Demon Venerable's Savage Wilderness Great World in his era.

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable came after Limitless Demon Venerable.

When Reckless Savage Demon Venerable entered Crazed Demon Cave, it was over a million years ago!

Thus, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun also had a high understanding of Crazed Demon Cave.

And his luck path methods also helped him to choose the most suitable path.

"But why is Fang Yuan also getting close? It even seems like he is going to surpass Immortal Zombie Giant Sun?" Star Constellation Immortal Venerable frowned.

This was beyond her expectations.

Heavenly Court had naturally handed all the information about Fang Yuan to her.

So, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable knew Fang Yuan very well.

She knew that although Fang Yuan's wisdom path attainment was also extremely high, his specialty was not in deducing but in guarding against others' deductions.

From this, it was clear that though Heavenly Court’s expedition against Fang Yuan had failed repeatedly, they had considerable gains as well.

At least, under Heavenly Court’s pressure, Fang Yuan had to give up on deductions, the handling of emotions, and other aspects of wisdom path, he could concentrate only on raising his defense against deductions.

Right now was obviously Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s time to profit, but how could Fang Yuan still pursue them closely?

Not only was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable surprised, even Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was astonished.

He watched as Fang Yuan jumped forward rapidly and surpassed him!

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun sensed a peculiar aura from Fang Yuan’s body.

Suddenly, he understood the truth.

“Fortitude Gu!” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s mind jolted, gritting his teeth.

He recognized the aura of fortitude Gu.

Fang Yuan had never been good at hiding his aura, and there was also no need to hide it at this moment.

“So it was him!”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun finally realized that the biggest mastermind who plotted against Hei Lou Lan in Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven was Fang Yuan!

“This rascal took away fortitude Gu and ability Gu from Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven.”

“These two strength path Immortal Gu are at rank eight...”

“Fortitude Gu can suppress emotions, no wonder he is at ease in this formation!”

“Don’t tell me, Myriad Beast Fusion Color Heaven is also Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s arrangement to help Fang Yuan?”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s thoughts started to run amok.

He suddenly had a bad feeling.

“Although I seized Savage Wilderness Great World, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable still arranged for Fang Yuan to obtain fortitude Gu and ability Gu... Then, the portion of Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance that I extracted before, could it also be bait arranged by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2188: Bedazzlement

Northern Plains.

Two figures were flying in the air and exchanging killer moves rapidly; air currents and thunder resounded constantly.

Among them, the male immortal who was dressed in a white robe cultivated light path. He had a skinny body and a sharp face, and his eyes were small like beans.

Meanwhile, the female immortal was covered in dark gold armor and was wearing a half mask, her every move was filled with domineering aura.

Besides these two, there were over ten Gu Immortals watching the battle in the surroundings.

“Big brother, quickly kill this bitch!” The female immortal Liu Luo shouted with her gaze fixed on the battlefield.

Beside her were Liu tribe’s Gu Immortal elders.

Besides them, other Huang Jin tribe Gu Immortals also came, like Chanyu tribe’s Chanyu Xiong and Gong tribe’s Gong Tong Kuai.

The male immortal in combat was a famous rank seven expert of Northern Plains’ righteous path – Liu Chang.

The female immortal was Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan used Black Moon as her alias and challenged experts everywhere. After defeating Chen Cheng and Yin Wu Que, she continued to challenge lone and demonic immortal experts. She was not defeated even once, her reputation rose rapidly, shocking Northern Plains.

The two siblings Liu Chang and Liu Luo had failed to recruit Yin Wu Que, and even came into conflict with Hei Lou Lan.

To take revenge, Liu Chang publicly challenged Fairy Black Moon.

Once the news got out, it immediately shocked Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

This battle was the result of that!

Immortal killer move – Light Horse Crossing.

Liu Chang activated a killer move, a small steed appeared below his legs, carrying him into the sky with a rapid speed.

This movement killer move was exceptional, it allowed Liu Chang to maintain a fixed distance from Hei Lou Lan throughout the battle.

After the loss against Hei Lou Lan the previous time, Liu Chang sensibly chose a long ranged battle tactic in this battle.

“Big brother, this is it!” Let that bitch suffer more and die in vain later! Hahaha.” Liu Luo cheered on Liu Chang with a shrill voice, her laughter was very painful to the ears.

But right at this time, Hei Lou Lan’s figure disappeared from her spot.

It was an illusion!

“When did she do it?” Liu Chang was shocked and knew he was tricked, subconsciously dodging.

But Hei Lou Lan’s true body immediately appeared behind him.

Bam bam bam...

Fist shadows rained down and enveloped Liu Chang firmly.

Liu Chang screamed while trying his best to activate defensive killer moves to endure the beating.

Liu Luo’s laughter stopped abruptly.

Hei Lou Lan’s attacks were extremely fierce, even the Gu Immortal spectators felt their eyelids twitch.

“Great!”

“Awesome beating.”

“She finally caught this crafty Liu Chang!”

Among the spectators, the lone and demonic immortals cheered and praised.

In this group, besides Chen Cheng, Wu Guang, and Yin Wu Que, there were also many other people.

Some of these people were defeated by Hei Lou Lan, while some heard of Hei Lou Lan’s deeds and followed her of their own accord.

“Lady Black Moon has the upper hand.” Wu Guang transmitted his voice while smiling.

“Don’t you feel that Lady Black Moon has grown stronger recently? Now that I think of it, Lady Black Moon has been challenging others continuously, her battle strength has been rising during these challenges. Brother Wu, could it be that you don’t sense it?” Yin Wu Que was bewildered.

Wu Guang mumbled, shaking his head and transmitting his voice: “I also noticed it. But how could there be such rapid progress and growth in this world? It might be that Lady Black Moon was hiding her strength before, or maybe she had been in closed cultivation all this time and started to connect her methods with the increase in her battle experience, thus, it caused us to feel that her battle strength is increasing rapidly.”

Yin Wu Que nodded and was about to speak, when there was a change in the battle.

Gu Immortal Liu Chang was indeed worthy of being a famous expert in Northern Plains, after some efforts, he finally escaped from Hei Lou Lan’s attack range.

Hei Lou Lan naturally did not want to let him go and immediately gave chase.

But Liu Chang suddenly stopped, smiling darkly towards her: “Black Moon, you have fallen into my trap!”

Immortal killer move — Bedazzlement!

In an instant, intense light exploded, enveloping the whole battlefield.

The Gu Immortal spectators closed their eyes immediately, even Hei Lou Lan shut her eyes subconsciously.

But when she opened her eyes again, the scene was still completely white.

She was struck by the killer move bedazzlement, her vision turned into a scene of white and she could no longer see.

“Damn it, Liu Chang actually learned this killer move.”

“No wonder he was not afraid to openly challenge Lady Black Moon!”

“This move is Liu tribe’s trump card method. Once a Gu cultivator is hit with this move, it will be extremely difficult for them to recover unless they use Liu tribe’s special recovery method.”

Many lone and demonic immortals had changed expressions, the mood immediately became heavy.

This battle was not just a simple fight between Liu Chang and Hei Lou Lan.

In the current situation, this battle already held much political meaning.

Fairy Black Moon, who had no roots or background, represented the lone immortal faction. While Liu Chang represented Northern Plains’ righteous path.

Ever since the fate war, Northern Plains’ Longevity Heaven had been actively uniting Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

Lone and demonic experts like Yin Wu Que were actively recruited by the Huang Jin tribes, and the recruitment process was extremely forceful.

So be it for the few lone immortals who were willing to accept this, however, the main thing was that most of the lone immortals and demonic immortals rejected this. But being lone forces, they did not want to offend those Northern Plains righteous path forces, so they kept silent even though they were furious.

Under this situation, Hei Lou Lan’s appearance was like a rallying banner for these Gu Immortals.

Hei Lou Lan dared to issue challenges everywhere without fearing the Huang Jin tribes, which gave these lone and demonic immortals a huge boost of morale.

Especially now that Snowy Mountain blessed land was destroyed and the demonic head Old Ancestor Xue Hu had hidden himself, the lone and demonic cultivators needed a leader.

Because of this, Wu Guang, Yin Wu Que, and others followed Hei Lou Lan on their own initiative. Many lone and demonic immortals came to observe this battle and support Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan was struck by the killer move and could not see anything. These Gu Immortals became extremely anxious and worried.

Liu Chang easily retreated, smiling.

Immortal killer move — Vitality Glow.

His injuries began to heal slowly.

Immortal killer move — Gleaming Light.

Light shone around him, like countless gleaming fish scales.

“This is not good!” Chen Cheng frowned, “This move restricts investigative methods.”

Yin Wu Que and Wu Guang stopped conversing secretly as they fixed their gazes on the battlefield.

Even if Gu Immortals could not see, they had all kinds of investigative methods. But with Liu Chang using this killer move, other investigative methods might be useless.

Since she could not see, Hei Lou Lan simply closed her eyes.

She was not panicking, instead, she sighed lightly: “Liu Chang, oh Liu Chang, it is such a pity, you missed your final chance.”

Liu Chang was stunned before scoffing: “Fairy Black Moon, who are you trying to bluff? You have already lost, how can you counter my Liu tribe’s bedazzlement killer move in this battle? There is no use in stalling for time!”

Hei Lou Lan did not retort.

She replied to him with her actions.

A killer move was activated.

Immortal killer move — Dark Capital Strength Biao!

A black tiger condensed into solid form.

“This move again?” A trace of solemness flashed on Liu Chang’s face.

“It is different now!” Yin Wu Que’s eyes shone, “This dark gold tiger seems to have grown wings?!”

“What? I didn’t see it clearly.” Wu Guang quickly replied.

The moment the totem black tiger condensed, it disappeared, many including Wu Guang did not see it properly.

“Where is it? Does it have the ability to hide itself?” Liu Chang’s expression changed slightly as he activated investigative methods.

But at the next moment, his pupils shrank to pin size, his face was filled with shock and horror.

The giant dark gold tiger appeared behind him!

Whoosh.

The tiger swatted, sending Liu Chang flying like a rubber ball.

Howling winds rang past Liu Chang’s ears while his vision spun like a whirlpool, he felt terrified internally.

That attack had huge strength, almost destroying his defensive killer move.

“It is not that the black tiger has a concealment method, the reason is its speed, it is too fast, simply too fast to react to!”

The dark gold tiger’s speed was so fast that it had already surpassed the limit of what the Gu Immortals’ naked eyes could perceive. It was like a phantom, appearing and disappearing suddenly.

Every time it appeared, it sent Liu Chang flying.

Liu Chang was completely at a disadvantage with no strength to retaliate.

If he could use light horse crossing, he might be able to escape for some time. But right now, he had fallen into a passive position and had to focus all his strength in maintaining his defensive methods, otherwise, he might be turned into meat paste by the black tiger.

Rumble!

The black tiger’s strike sent Liu Chang flying to the ground.

Dust clouds rose, a deep crater formed, Liu Chang remained unmoving, he had fallen unconscious.

“Brother!” Liu Luo screamed shrilly, pointing at Hei Lou Lan, “You bitch, you killed my brother. How dare you do this! I want you to die, I want you to die!”

She was about to charge forward but was stopped firmly by a Liu tribe elder.

Right at this time, a feeling of joy spread in her heart.

Liu Luo was stunned.

She felt incredulous at herself: “Big brother is in such a state but I feel happy?!”

The other righteous path immortals also had a change in their expressions, they were all feeling happiness.

Gong Tong Kuai slightly shook his head to calm himself, saying in a quiet voice: “Liu tribe’s fairy, please don’t be anxious, Brother Liu is not dead yet.”

“Calm down, so many people are looking, don’t cause Liu tribe to lose face!” A Liu tribe elder berated and flew towards the battlefield.

He cupped his fists towards Hei Lou Lan: “Fairy Black Moon, you have won this battle.”

He had just said that, when he almost started crying.

An intense wave of sadness filled his heart.

Hei Lou Lan nodded: “Okay, so what about this battle’s wager?”

She did not feel well either.

First was the baffling happiness, followed by the intense sadness, what in the world was going on?

Liu tribe’s elder forcefully calmed down, replying to Hei Lou Lan: “It has been sent to treasure yellow heaven.”

Since Liu Chang lost, and with so many people watching, Liu tribe’s elder had to openly send a considerable amount of cultivation resources to treasure yellow heaven.

Treasure yellow heaven had treasure light to distinguish value of the items, at the same time, it also showed Liu tribe’s openness and upright handling of the loss.

The immortals present used their Gu worms to connect to treasure yellow heaven, they saw Liu tribe’s wager indeed.

“That secluded domain of heaven and earth is still there!”

“More accurately, this is a portion of the Primordial Domain.”

“I wonder which great expert is openly transacting the Primordial Domain!”

The Gu Immortals’ attention was drawn to another direction.

Not long ago, a portion of the Primordial Domain had appeared in treasure yellow heaven, shocking the entire five regions’ Gu Immortal world.

Yin Wu Que shouted to bring back the attention of the immortals: “According to the agreement, please dispel the bedazzlement killer move on Fairy Black Moon’s body.”

“Naturally.” Liu tribe’s elder used a killer move straightforwardly, restoring Hei Lou Lan’s vision.

Hei Lou Lan slightly nodded at the Liu tribe elder, and withdrew the dark capital strength biao which was beside Liu Chang.

This totem killer move had gone through modifications, its battle strength surged and it had already become her unique method!

Chen Cheng breathed a sigh of relief when he saw this: “Lady Black Moon’s reputation is going to rise even higher.”

Liu Luo carried Liu Chang, while saying with hatred: “Black Moon, don’t be pleased with yourself. Our righteous path is filled with experts, you might have won against brother by chance, but can you win against others? Let’s not talk of others, just Chu tribe’s first supreme elder Chu Du is someone you won’t be able to surpass.”

However, right at this time, an intense emotion of affection rose in her heart.

Liu Luo’s expression turned twisted immediately.

“What’s going on! Why do I have such a strong feeling of affection when I look at this Black Moon whore?”

Hei Lou Lan did not feel well either, but her expression did not change as she sneered: “Chu Du? I have heard of his name, he also cultivates strength path. I am challenging him next!”

The lone and demonic immortals’ expressions changed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2189: The Answer To Eternal Life

Crazed Demon Cave.

Ninth layer.

Four Gu Immortals arrived at the periphery of the Crazed Demon formation.

“This is the truthful floating ice?” Zhan Bu Du’s eyebrows rose.

“Seems like it is not easy to enter deep into this formation.” Qi Sea Ancestor was solemn. Unlike the main body, they did not have the assistance of fortitude Gu.

“Star Constellation is at the front, nearest to the center of the formation. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable is second, while Fang Yuan is the last.” Lu Wei Yin’s heart tensed up as he looked ahead.

Fang Yuan did not have the upper hand, so Lu Wei Yin had to do his best to help him!

Demon Immortal Qi Jue stared at the formation in front of him, he mumbled softly as if recalling something of the past: “Limitless, this fellow...”

He leaped forward and stepped on a piece of truthful floating ice.

The other three immortals glanced at each other before moving as well.

The record in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> was true, the pieces of the truthful floating ice were of different sizes and shapes in the eyes of different people, the emotional impact they felt were different as well.

Because of this, Gu Immortals could not move forward in a group. The best method was to move alone, choosing the floating ice most suitable for oneself.

Fang Yuan had been maintaining the activation of fortitude Gu.

This Gu was only at rank eight level, while this Crazed Demon formation was as high as rank nine.

The deeper he went into the formation, the stronger the emotions he felt. When he had just activated fortitude Gu, these emotions could be ignored and he did not feel anything.

But now, Fang Yuan felt like when he had just stepped on the formation and started probing it.

As for Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, after these two recognized Fang Yuan’s method, they brought out their trump cards.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun activated familial emotion Gu, sharing his emotions to others.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable brought out a mysterious secluded domain of heaven and earth!

This secluded domain looked like a cage as well as a lantern, Fang Yuan could not help but recall a certain chapter in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

The two venerables’ foundation was much deeper than Fang Yuan’s.

They had also made ample preparations for Crazed Demon Cave.

Thus, Fang Yuan still fell back to the last position among the three.

Fang Yuan did not give up, continuing to move forward while gritting his teeth.

The situation was getting worse.

The emotional impacts became stronger, shaking his mind and spirit.

But Fang Yuan was happy instead.

Since he was receiving such fierce emotional impacts here, the two venerables who were ahead would face even fiercer emotions.

Fang Yuan’s perseverance soon got favorable results.

The leading Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was moving increasingly slower, she needed to rest for a long while after stepping on a piece of the truthful floating ice before she could move forward.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s speed became slow, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was the same.

Gradually, the distance between the three Gu Immortals started to shorten.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable often looked back, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun who was in the middle also stopped often and observed Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Fang Yuan. This was a difficult journey, the three immortals fully realized each other’s vast tenacity and patience.

After this situation continued for a while, a change occurred.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood, she collapsed on the truthful floating ice.

Her body flashed with deep blue starlight.

After the starlight dimmed, it actually split into three, becoming three avatars again!

“Could it be that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s revival is not complete and she has only revived temporarily? The stable state is still in the form of three pseudo venerables?” Fang Yuan’s thoughts shook.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun felt an urge to take action: “A chance!”

He gritted his teeth and persevered, slowly surpassing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation’s three avatars stopped on the same truthful floating ice, they were trying to recuperate as soon as possible.

When Fang Yuan overtook them, he hesitated for a moment.

Should he take advantage of this situation?

Fang Yuan quickly suppressed this impulse.

Right now, he was deep in Limitless’ Crazed Demon formation, if he were to even make an attack, he might trigger Limitless’ countermeasures. His situation might be even more severe than the Qi Sea clone’s.

Moreover, if Fang Yuan were to fight with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, would it not be giving an advantage to Immortal Zombie Giant Sun?

Look at Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, he directly went to the center of the formation without paying attention to Star Constellation’s three avatars.

“If regaining supreme grandmaster attainment level gave these venerables the initiative, then gaining Limitless Demon Venerable’s deduction results might let the winner rise above other venerables!”

Fang Yuan was increasingly certain of this speculation.

“It is time!” Fang Yuan stopped on a truthful floating ice piece, enduring the vast emotional impact as he activated an immortal killer move.

Immortal killer move — Calm and Steady!

The killer move’s effect was immediate, the vast and strong emotions that were crushing Fang Yuan and almost destroyed his mental state disappeared almost completely.

Fang Yuan possessed countless Immortal Gu recipes along with just as many killer moves.

This calm and steady killer move was part of them.

This move required two main cores, calm Gu and suppression Gu.

Fang Yuan did not have calm Gu and was unable to refine immortal level calm Gu, but he had fortitude Gu. Previously, Fang Yuan had been moving while modifying the killer move, and was finally able to use this move now.

As for suppression Gu, Fang Yuan had it.

Speaking of which, he needed to thank Heavenly Court.

Before the fate war, Fang Yuan had fought several battles with Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals in the River of Time. In one such battle, Fang Yuan destroyed the river suppression lotus sealing formation, obtaining suppression Gu from it.

Suppression Gu was rank eight, fortitude Gu was also rank eight.

The killer move with two rank eight cores would naturally have stronger effect than just fortitude Gu alone.

Fang Yuan’s speed increased again!

However, he had already been somewhat far from Immortal Zombie Giant Sun before, so despite trying his best, Fang Yuan could not catch up to him.

“I did not expect Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to be the first to reach the center!” Lu Wei Yin heaved a deep sigh.

Under Fang Yuan’s, Star Constellation’s three avatars, and other pseudo venerables’ gazes, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun suddenly stopped.

He stopped on the truthful floating ice that could be said to be one step away from the largest truthful floating ice at the center.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun showed hesitation at this moment.

What was he hesitating for?

While he was hesitating, Fang Yuan caught up.

“Fang Yuan, it is somewhat strange here.” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun spoke.

Ever since he and Fang Yuan entered the formation, they were competing secretly. The mood between the two became strained, this was their first conversation.

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone as he carefully sized up the truthful floating ice in front of him. For a moment, he was unable to find any clues.

But he did not take a risk to step forward.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was the best model.

He was so close to success, but he still stopped. It could be seen that there was definitely something strange.

“It is odd indeed.” Fang Yuan nodded, revealing an expression of realization.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was slightly surprised. The reason he stopped was because his luck path investigative killer move showed a slight fluctuation, making him feel something wrong, but he was unable to tell what it was. However, looking at Fang Yuan’s expression, did he realize a crucial point?

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun had been putting a lot of attention on Fang Yuan.

In his view: Fang Yuan was chosen by heaven’s will, he had talent that ordinary people could not match. To cause the destruction of fate Gu, many venerables helped Fang Yuan. Moreover, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, and Reckless Savage Demon Venerable were still helping him now!

Even if Immortal Zombie Giant Sun did not think highly of Fang Yuan, he could not disregard the other venerables.

So, he did not find it strange for Fang Yuan to see a crucial clue when he could not.

“Please enlighten me on what you found out.” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun said.

Fang Yuan was surprised, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun had the dignity of a grand venerable, but he actually took the initiative to ask for guidance with no mental obstruction.

However, Fang Yuan had actually not noticed anything.

Therefore, he first looked back at Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Those three fairies were still at the original spot, resting with their eyes closed.

Then, Fang Yuan looked at Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, smiling: “The eternal life research results are not easily obtained, but we can share them. Giant Sun, how do you want to pay?”

No matter what the oddity was, he would first extort some benefits from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s eyes shone, he was just about to speak when a person actually came out of the truthful floating ice at the center.

“Huh?” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s attention was immediately attracted.

Fang Yuan was also stunned.

Afterwards, Star Constellation’s three avatars, Lu Wei Yin and the rest also discovered this abnormality.

A rank seven Gu Immortal came out of the truthful floating ice.

Fang Yuan even recognized this rank seven Gu Immortal!

It was Not Immortal of the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics!

The Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics were wisdom path Gu Immortal Secret Schemer, earth path Gu Immortal Pang Shan, and rule path Gu Immortal Not Immortal respectively.

These three lived in Crazed Demon Cave, they had been trying to find a way to enter the deepest layer of Crazed Demon Cave, to obtain the secret of eternal life.

Regarding this goal, they and Fang Yuan were kindred spirits.

The Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics did not have enough strength, they could not even enter the eighth layer, so they took in the strength path Gu Immortal Chu Du. Chu Du then invited Fang Yuan, which was how Fang Yuan entered Crazed Demon Cave.

Later, to prepare for the fate war, Fang Yuan came to Crazed Demon Cave to invite the Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics to take part in the battle.

The Three Crazed Demon Eccentrics agreed, but they were not seen throughout the fate war and even after it. Thus, they lost contact with Fang Yuan.

Who could have thought that Not Immortal would actually appear here!

Not Immortal looked at Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and was stunned, immediately showing a vigilant expression. He did not recognize Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, but from the terrifying aura, he knew this immortal zombie could not be provoked.

He then looked at Fang Yuan, his brows rose as he revealed joy: “Fang Yuan, you are finally here!”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s mind jolted, he immediately turned around to look at Fang Yuan: “Fang Yuan, you made such deep arrangements, I am in admiration.”

Fang Yuan shook his head: “How could I possibly arrange this? Not Immortal, I wonder if Secret Schemer and Pang Shan...”

Not Immortal immediately replied: “They are inside.”

He then showed an ashamed expression: “The three of us agreed to your request to participate in the fate war and fight Heavenly Court. But that day, there was suddenly a change in Crazed Demon Cave, and us three were pulled into here. With Limitless Demon Venerable’s will’s guidance, we understood the full details.”

“Because us three lived here for a long time, our sincerity was finally seen by Lord Limitless’ will. He arranged for us to be here to cooperate with the formation, by controlling practice Gu to carve this piece of truthful floating ice.”

“Once all the worlds in the eighth layer are merged into one, they will disappear completely and turn into clues and energy for this Crazed Demon formation’s derivation. Then, we will finish carving this truthful floating ice and find the method of eternal life!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2190: Star Constellation’s Scheme

“Method of eternal life?” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s eyes shined with bright light.

Not Immortal did not hide anything. The immortals present on the scene were all peak experts of the current five regions, they all heard it.

In an instant, the immortals’ hearts pounded with excitement.

Gu Immortals could obtain longevity, but they were bound by lifespan, Fate, and other restrictions. Even though Fate was destroyed now, and lifespan restrictions were greatly relaxed, they could still be killed by a stronger enemy.

Eternal life was absolutely greater than longevity.

Speaking of longevity, the ten thousand years old turtle living in the sea could also be considered to have longevity, but it could not be considered to have eternal life.

Eternal life meant that everyone and everything could not threaten the individual’s existence.

It meant complete invincibility.

Be it time, space, or living beings, none could threaten an entity with eternal life.

The concept of eternal life was paramount and above all.

Even venerables only had longevity and could not be said to have eternal life! Especially now that multiple venerables existed in the same era, they threatened each other’s existence.

Shortly afterwards, there was commotion ahead. Secret Schemer also came out from the central truthful floating ice.

Secret Schemer cultivated wisdom path, after seeing the situation in the formation, his mind shook as he quickly said: “Us three need to maintain the activation of practice Gu at all times, there has to be someone activating it and carving this truthful floating ice piece continuously.”

“It is still too early now.”

“It is not ready yet. The great worlds in the eighth layer are still not destroyed, so many lifeforms are still living.”

Secret Schemer then urged: “Fang Yuan, I am aware of your goal. But right now, it is best if you don’t step in here. Us three have already used all kinds of methods, after we stepped on this truthful floating ice piece, we are unable to get off. That is, unless the derivation is complete or the formation is destroyed!”

“He is right!” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun nodded.

After he stopped, he had been secretly activating methods to investigate and deduce.

He still needed some time, but with Secret Schemer’s reply, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun checked it and realized Secret Schemer was not lying.

Secret Schemer was solemn, but showed anticipation as well as resolution, continuing: “The most important thing now is to protect this formation and hasten Limitless Demon Venerable’s arrangements, letting this formation complete its derivation. Fang Yuan, we have the same goals, please protect the formation and guard against all these malicious characters. The three of us will stake everything including our lives to maintain the usage of practice Gu.”

They did not know Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s true identity, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also split into three avatars, their intel seemed to stop at the period before the fate war.

Fang Yuan’s thoughts moved rapidly, he first nodded towards Secret Schemer before looking back at Star Constellation’s three avatars with a solemn expression.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun sighed and turned to look at Star Constellation’s three avatars as well: “I don’t want us to be schemed against.”

The moment he said that, Ming Hao, Yu Xiu, and Feng Ya opened their eyes.

Starlight emerged as the three fairies converged once again.

At the next moment, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable appeared.

“Rise.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable said softly.

There was a sudden change in Crazed Demon formation, the truthful floating ice’s orbiting speed became faster and seemed to trap Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun inside.

Star Constellation’s will and Limitless’ will had been deriving heaven path research results using their game in Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court had infiltrated Crazed Demon formation deeply, they were able to take out the cores, Book Mountain and Primordial Domain, so how could they not know about the situation of Crazed Demon formation’s derivation?

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used this to exploit Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s lack of information. Her main body personally moved to lure Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun deep into Crazed Demon formation.

Be it Primordial Domain or Crazed Demon formation, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Fang Yuan would not let Star Constellation Immortal Venerable obtain either easily.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used this to trap Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun.

Crazed Demon formation changed, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Fang Yuan quickly tried to get back.

However, Crazed Demon formation had become a lot more dangerous than before. Truthful floating ice pieces even collided with each other, if they were careless and fell off the floating ice, they would be crushed to a pulp by the terrifying strength of the formation.

Even if they wanted to jump to a different floating ice, they would need to deduce and wait till the formless force between the floating ice pieces weakened before they could take the risk.

Fang Yuan was already deeply in danger as he hopped over several truthful floating ice pieces, he turned around and inquired loudly: “Secret Schemer, can you three control this formation?”

Secret Schemer shook his head: “We three are only in charge of activating practice Gu.”

Not Immortal was pale: “As expected of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, she actually infiltrated the formation to such a degree that she can even be considered half the formation’s owner. She activated the formation but did not influence its derivation, instead she is accelerating it; Limitless Demon Venerable’s arrangements will not trigger from this!”

Secret Schemer replied in a loud voice: “Please don’t destroy these truthful floating ice pieces. They are all a part of the formation, this concerns the success or failure of the derivation. If you two make a move, you will definitely cause Limitless Demon Venerable’s retaliative method to trigger!”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s expression became unsightly.

“Friends, take a rest. We will exchange pointers later.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled and retreated after leaving behind these words.

Lu Wei Yin and the other pseudo venerables instantly prepared themselves for this huge enemy.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable ignored them, she flew out of the formation and disappeared into the void.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was worthy of being the number one person in wisdom path. Currently, Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun were unable to get free, pseudo venerables like Qi Sea and Qi Jue would not be able to obstruct Star Constellation Immortal Venerable even if they hurried back to the eighth layer.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had infiltrated Crazed Demon formation to such a shocking degree. Once she unifies the great worlds in the eighth layer and gains a hold of all the sources of fuel and clues for Crazed Demon formation’s derivation, her grasp over Crazed Demon formation would rise massively!

It was possible that Crazed Demon formation might even change owners!

One could easily fall into a trap if they were careless when fighting against wisdom path Gu Immortals. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s scheme was the same, it progressed step by step and was interlinked with each step as it latched onto the enemy’s weaknesses; even Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun could only fall into the trap unknowingly.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was solemn as he looked at Fang Yuan: “The situation is urgent, I wonder if Friend Fang Yuan has a good plan?”

Fang Yuan shook his head, sighing indifferently: “This Crazed Demon Cave battle has ended in Heavenly Court’s victory. They have prepared for many years and spent a lot of energy, and with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable leading them, it is only natural for them to gain victory. Looks like Heavenly Court is still going to lead the five regions for a long time. But as long as I have a breath left in me, I won’t let Heavenly Court have an easy time.”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun stared at Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan did not look at him, he was continuously deducing the violent formation, looking like he wanted to retreat.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun gritted his teeth before laughing and shaking his hand: “Friend Fang Yuan, it is too early to be discouraged, please look at my method!”

At the next moment, golden light spread out from Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s body.

The threads of golden light shone on the surrounding truthful floating ice pieces, constantly dying the floating ice pieces with a golden hue.

At the same time, a majestic rank eight Immortal Gu House flew over from outside the formation.

It was Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace!

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace stopped outside the formation for a while before entering the formation directly.

Lu Wei Yin and the rest exclaimed in surprise, thinking that Immortal Zombie Giant Sun wanted to break out forcibly.

However, Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace safely entered and orbited alongside other truthful floating ice pieces. It acted like a piece of truthful floating ice as well, just that its appearance was somewhat strange.

“Friend Giant Sun, you have a great method!” Fang Yuan could not help as he praised.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun snorted: “Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could infiltrate the formation, but my luck path methods are also not inferior. It is just that before the formation stops, I won’t be able to take out Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace. Let’s leave quickly!”

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace took part in the operation of Crazed Demon formation, so Immortal Zombie Giant Sun could also influence this formation now.

He also copied Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and accelerated the formation; at the same time, he made a way out conveniently.

Relying on this, he and Fang Yuan retreated together.

As for Lu Wei Yin, Qi Sea and the rest, they were also brought away by Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun to the eighth layer.

In this while of delay, the combat in the eighth layer had almost stopped completely.

Heavenly Court was victorious!

Only half of Longevity Heaven’s Eight Extremities remained, Bing Sai Chuan was also severely injured.

The casualties on Fang Yuan’s side were even more severe. Experts like Xiao He Jian and Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch had perished.

“Star Constellation!” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun shouted with fury as he charged forward.

This time, he was much more active than in the Primordial Domain.

Fang Yuan moved right behind him.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable remained at her spot and did not evade.

The other immortals quickly got out of the way in panic.

Boom boom boom!

The three sided battle erupted once again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2191: Fighting And Entering The Immortal Graveyard

Rumble...

Thunder rumbled ceaselessly. Immortal Zombie Giant Sun breathed out countless golden rays; Star Constellation Immortal Venerable emitted beautiful starlight; Fang Yuan’s killer moves engulfed the battlefield.

Worlds shook like a huge pancake, mountains and rivers continued to be destroyed completely.

In such a battlefield, the three great worlds became food on a chopping board.

Fang Yuan breathed out indifferently; countless sword qi flew out like lumps of clouds, blocking the starlight. He then pushed with his hand as another killer move shot out like a divine wind that roared like dragons or tigers.

Fang Yuan was not able to do anything more than that in combat.

He had too many dao marks, his killer moves were also too powerful. He could only choose the weakest among those to use.

In fact, although the fight between the three was filled with explosions, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable were also like Fang Yuan, they were holding back.

This was not Primordial Domain.

They could show their skills fully in Primordial Domain, but this was the eighth layer. Crazed Demon formation still needed the great worlds to act as clues and fuel, if this place was destroyed, it would definitely trigger Limitless Demon Venerable’s retaliative measures.

“But it doesn’t matter, we only need to restrain Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.” Fang Yuan was happy to accept this outcome.

Both him and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun were delayed in Crazed Demon formation, resulting in Heavenly Court’s victory in the fight between the great worlds.

With their return now, another change emerged in the overall battle situation.

Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun joined hands to obstruct Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, while Zhan Bu Du and the rest counterattacked.

Qi waves surged as Demon Immortal Qi Jue ran rampant in the battlefield.

The phantom image of the damaged Xi Land appeared above his head, facing Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch and Shabi Ninety-five once again.

Shabi Ninety-five roared towards the sky as it charged into the battle.

Immortal killer move — Xi Xi!

Demon Immortal Qi Jue was already prepared, immediately using his strongest method. Shabi Ninety-five’s qi path killer move was absorbed by Xi Land, increasing Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s foundation.

Shabi Ninety-five got a huge fright, retreating quickly.

If not for Xi Land being damaged and only thirty percent of it remaining, even some parts of Shabi Ninety-five’s body would have been devoured.

“Senior, let me lend you a hand!” At the crucial moment, an Immortal Gu House in the shape of a tombstone flew over.

It was Gu Yue Fang Zheng in Demon Judgment Board.

Immortal killer move — Blood Extraction Light!

A scarlet blood light pillar pierced the skies and shot towards Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

“If not for my Xi Land being damaged and only thirty percent of it remaining...” Demon Immortal Qi Jue flew away, dodging this vast attack.

Right at this time, a qi wall suddenly spread out and seemed to connect heaven and earth, it suppressed Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals.

Qi Sea Ancestor had made his move.

There was similarly a secluded domain of heaven and earth above his head, it was Hu Land.

Using Hu Land as the core, his various qi path killer moves had boundless might and unparalleled vastness.

Qi wall killer move was originally only limited to defending, but Qi Sea Ancestor did the opposite, spreading it to entrap enemies.

Even Demon Immortal Qi Jue was surprised at such power.

He took several glances at Hu Land specially, commenting inwardly: “Truly the secluded domain of heaven and earth that is comparable to Xi Land. It is just that Xi Land is good at absorbing, while Hu Land is specialized in releasing. If both lands were gathered and used together in a complete circulation...”

Boom boom boom.

On the other side, Zhan Bu Du wore the blood-red cape and moved like a flash of red lightning.

Everywhere he went, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were beaten badly.

Qing Chou was already killed by Qi Sea Ancestor’s Hu elevation, even if it was revived, it would need to recuperate for a long time in Divine Emperor City, and would not be able to participate in the battle for this period of time.

Without Qing Chou and the fact that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was unable to use her full strength, the bulky Zhan Bu Du once again became a headache for Heavenly Court!

Zhan Bu Du tore through the sky, closing in on Duke Mei.

“Duke Mei, careful!” Duke Tong shouted while hurrying from afar.

Duke Mei shouted with fury: “Junior, don’t be arrogant!”

He activated his strongest method, his eyebrows and hair fluttered and grew tens of feet long.

His snow white hair could become hard and soft, it was used for both attack and defense. The skillful series of moves even immobilized the violently charging Zhan Bu Du.

Zhan Bu Du only felt that he could not use his strength. His violent force was diverted and dispelled, it was very stifling.

He immediately opened his mouth and roared, yellow lightning erupted from his roar, destroying the countless hair in his surroundings like they were dry twigs.

A part of the incomplete freedom transformation was thunder rush yellow bird transformation. This move was a fierce and powerful method that shot yellow lightning, its power was magnified several times in Zhan Bu Du’s hands.

Zhan Bu Du broke through the obstacles and arrived before Duke Mei, directly punching ahead.

Duke Mei’s killer move was broken, the backlash caused him to reveal a weakness. He dodged a second late as the punch broke his head like a watermelon, his brain matter splattering everywhere.

Duke Mei died but his phantom aperture that contained all kinds of Gu worms, immortal essence, and immortal essence stones flew towards the immortal graveyard.

Zhan Bu Du tried to catch it but the phantom aperture passed through his palm like an illusion.

Seeing Duke Mei dying right before him, Duke Tong shouted furiously: “Demon, you will pay with your life!”

His muscles that were bulging and shining with brass luster rained down punches after punches. Every punch broke through the sound barrier and had horrifying momentum.

Zhan Bu Du laughed fiercely: “Come at me.”

He charged head-on and fought Duke Tong in close combat without dodging.

Bam bam bam!

Punches and kicks interchanged, Zhan Bu Du just attacked without defending. Duke Tong’s punches struck his body, the pain made Zhan Bu Du attack even more wildly.

Soon, Duke Tong was unable to hold on and fell into disadvantage.

Heavenly Court Gu Immortals hurried over to reinforce him, using all kinds of killer moves to attack Zhan Bu Du.

Zhan Bu Du’s movements slowed down immediately as he was attacked by lightning, golden spears, and so on.

His robust body shook slightly, he endured it all and grabbed Duke Tong’s hand.

“You can’t run away!” Zhan Bu Du laughed malevolently, exerting strength in his hand.

Crack, Duke Tong’s large and rough arm was broken completely!

Duke Tong shouted in pain, his leg kicked like a whip, creating countless leg shadows that drowned Zhan Bu Du.

Zhan Bu Du’s eyes shone with a fierce light as he punched Duke Tong’s chest.

The two immortals staked their lives in attacking the other, blood and flesh splattered everywhere.

Duke Tong kicked Zhan Bu Du’s two shoulders again and again, Zhan Bu Du’s neck and face turned purple from a lack of blood flow. While his rib bones were shattered, his heart that had no protection was also destroyed by Zhan Bu Du!

Duke Tong’s heart was destroyed, but he still roared and continued to attack.

Zhan Bu Du gave an evil grin, he stretched out his hands like a bear and clasped Duke Tong’s head.

Zhan Bu Du pressed viciously; first, he pressed his thumbs into Duke Tong’s eyes, squeezing the eyeballs till they burst. Shortly after, with a crisp crack, Duke Tong’s head broke into pieces.

Finally, Zhan Bu Du clenched his fingers, crushing Duke Tong’s brains, his face, and the crushed head together.

Only then did Duke Tong’s attacks stop, his body fell while his phantom aperture flew away with his Immortal Gu.

Zhan Bu Du’s gaze was vicious as he followed the phantom aperture, his gaze landing on the immortal graveyard.

Just as he was about to charge into the immortal graveyard, an Immortal Gu House flew over and blocked his path.

Divine Emperor City!

Zhan Bu Du showed a solemn expression, he restrained his fearless momentum slightly.

After all, Divine Emperor City had the strength of painting path, Zhan Bu Du could not defend against it; if he was careless, he would also be captured and sealed in painting world by Divine Emperor City.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable resisted Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Fang Yuan while observing the whole battlefield, a trace of worry showed up on her face.

Heavenly Court lacked manpower. They could have the upper hand if they just fought Fang Yuan or Longevity Heaven. But when these two sides allied, they were in disadvantage.

Especially now that she was tied up and Heavenly Court lacked pseudo venerable battle strength, Heavenly Court was being beaten back by Zhan Bu Du and the rest’s crazed attacks.

Immortal killer move – Humble Reciprocation!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable moved her left palm, a small phantom image of Book Mountain floated on it.

Thousands of killer moves bloomed like fireworks or like a chaotic tidal wave as they poured out in a torrent.

These killer moves had their respective target, each targeting their original owners. Demon Immortal Qi Jue, Qi Sea Ancestor, Zhan Bu Du, and the rest were ‘taken care of’, they had no choice but to divert their attention and focus on defending.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was also engulfed by golden rays, he was also targeted by humble reciprocation.

Undoubtedly, this move was truly suitable for the current situation.

It was not that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not have powerful methods like Hu elevation, but if she used them, it would trigger Limitless’ countermeasures.

And humble reciprocation was only ‘returning’ the other Gu Immortals’ attacks, the power of each move was not high and did not cross Limitless’ bottom line.

At the same time, these killer moves targeted their original owners and not the three great worlds. Their owners had to focus on defending instead, this greatly stabilized Heavenly Court’s situation.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was holding Book Mountain while pointing with another hand; stardust shot towards Fang Yuan.

She needed to pin down Fang Yuan herself.

Because Fang Yuan’s killer moves could not be ‘returned’ by humble reciprocation.

These killer moves were compound killer moves, only Fang Yuan with his sovereign physique could use them. So, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had to target Fang Yuan herself.

Fang Yuan gave a cold snort, suddenly using the compound killer move wind-light-fire-lightning wheel!

This move was modified from fire-wind wheel, adding in profundities of light path and lightning path.

Five rings surrounded Fang Yuan, the five rings rotated and carried him away rapidly.

Fang Yuan had been secretly inspecting and discovered that the aura of Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard kept on growing stronger, it was extremely odd. With Book Mountain already in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s immortal aperture, only the immortal graveyard was left outside. It was a vital area of Heavenly Court!

Humble reciprocation burdened the mind and consumed too much thoughts, even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was burdened.

Fang Yuan retreated from the fight and charged towards immortal graveyard, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable immediately experienced what Fang Yuan felt when she ran away from the fight before.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable quickly moved to stop Fang Yuan, but Immortal Zombie Giant Sun noticed this. Even though there had been no communication, he decisively moved to stop Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Fang Yuan’s main body charged into the immortal graveyard alone.

“Not good, this demon Fang Yuan is here!”

“He finally discovered the immortal graveyard’s secret.”

“That’s fine, we don’t have to keep on hiding here.”

Duke Mei, Duke Tong, and others appeared to block Fang Yuan with a decisive and furious expression.

All of them had actually been revived!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2192: Invading The Door of Life and Death

Immortal killer move — Year Beast Summoning.

Fang Yuan waved his hand, dozens of immemorial year beasts appeared from the air above him.

To complete the Twelve Zodiac battle formation, he had kept on fishing immemorial year beasts and gathered a complete set after much difficulty. As for these, they were all leftovers.

Immemorial year beasts roared and howled as they streaked across the air towards the immortal graveyard.

Duke Mei and Duke Tong were still blocking Fang Yuan’s path.

At the same time, many Gu Immortal figures appeared from the immortal graveyard. They were those who had died in the battle before.

The Gu Immortals moved out, stopping all the immemorial year beasts.

Fang Yuan came to a realization after seeing this: “It seems like the Gu Immortals who revived in the immortal graveyard have intact cultivation and dao marks as well. As for the Gu worms, their phantom aperture brings them back to the immortal graveyard when they die.”

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal revival method was extremely advanced, with almost no flaws.

“Fortunately, Fang Yuan discovered this ambush in time!” Lu Wei Yin felt fortunate. If they were continued to be kept in dark, when the battle fell to a stalemate, and these Gu Immortals attacked, Longevity Heaven and Fang Yuan’s side would be caught off-guard.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sighed inwardly.

The reason she concealed these Gu Immortals and did not let them participate in the battle immediately was to ambush at the crucial time, it was also to preserve strength for Heavenly Court.

The expedition to Crazed Demon Cave was not a fight to the death between the three sides, it was a competition to seize the derivation results of the Crazed Demon formation.

In this aspect, the main player was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable herself, others like Fang Zheng and Che Wei did not have the qualifications to take part in this kind of contest.

Moreover, with Heavenly Court weakened to a great degree, they had little manpower. Even if Star Constellation Immortal Venerable obtained the Crazed Demon formation’s derivation and governed Heavenly Court in the future, she would need manpower to control Central Continent. She could not be a leader with no followers.

But now, Fang Yuan had discovered these people.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was aware: This demon Fang Yuan was crafty and cruel with not even a little pride, since he found this weakness, he was definitely going to take advantage of it.

People like Reckless Savage Demon Venerable disdained attacking those that were weaker than them.

Although Spectral Soul Demon Venerable slaughtered countless lives, he treated everyone the same. He killed the weak, he killed the strong, slaughter had become his nature and madness had seeped deep into his bones.

But Fang Yuan purposely bullied the weak! He liked attacking and bullying the weak, but if he met someone stronger, he would go into hiding. Before the fate war, Heavenly Court searched for him repeatedly, but he kept on hiding, using wisdom path methods to guard against deductions.

Stardust flew, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had no choice but to move to support the immortal graveyard.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun naturally stopped her with all of his methods.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used the illusion killer move once more, even if Immortal Zombie Giant Sun could find out the real copy, he would need some time to check.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable succeeded in returning to the immortal graveyard.

But in just this short while, Duke Mei and Duke Tong had died miserably at Fang Yuan’s hands once again.

Fang Yuan tried to catch their phantom apertures, but did not succeed.

“If the immortal graveyard is not destroyed, these Gu Immortals will still revive with their cultivation level restored. This is a big problem!” Lu Wei Yin also hurried over.

Following Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s movement, other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals also returned to the immortal graveyard.

The situation once again turned into an offense and defense battle. Heavenly Court was still the defending side, but this time, they were not guarding Book Mountain, instead, they were surrounding the immortal graveyard and fighting an intense battle!

“Hmph, once we kill these Gu Immortals and destroy the immortal graveyard, Heavenly Court will only have Star Constellation Immortal Venerable left. Hahahaha.” Zhan Bu Du let out crazed laughter filled with killing intent.

However, Heavenly Court seemed to have expected this situation.

This immortal graveyard was already modified, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals flew down and acted as the formation cores, forming an immortal formation.

The immortal formation created fog that quickly spread across the whole battlefield. Inside it, Gu Immortals could not see clearly, like they were inside thick clouds.

Not only this, Gu Immortal figures were still rising from the immortal graveyard.

Zhan Bu Du and the rest fought with these figures, these figures had the same battle strength as their main bodies, but after they were killed, they only broke apart into lumps of fog.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun deduced for a while and said: "This is a painting path formation, but it also contains human path methods. This formation uses Divine Emperor City as the core, Heavenly Court Gu Immortals as supplementary cores, and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable as the main formation core. It will be extremely difficult for us to break this formation, do you have a good plan?"

Fang Yuan shook his head, his expression turned cold.

Once they entered a deadlock, it would be very disadvantageous to him.

Heavenly Court had infiltrated the Crazed Demon formation very deeply, they had a huge lead. If Heavenly Court was allowed to stall for time, when the three great worlds broke down into fuel for the Crazed Demon formation and the derivation of eternal life succeeds, Heavenly Court would have a much higher chance to seize the results than Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun.

Heavenly Court was not a match for Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun's alliance in a frontal fight. But under Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's strategic and decisive leadership, Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun were the ones who fell into a passive state.

Fang Yuan was aware of the severity of this situation, immediately replying: "I know a bit about human path methods, but I don't know the first thing about painting path. Giant Sun, you are proficient in painting path, we need to join hands to have a chance at deciphering this formation."

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun nodded slightly, he had the intention of allying as well.

Immediately, the two stopped attacking. They only ordered Lu Wei Yin, Zhan Bu Du, Bing Sai Chuan, and the rest to try attacking the formation, so that they could gain all kinds of clues and test their speculations.

Fifteen minutes went by, Qi Sea, Qi Jue, and the rest continued attacking with no success, their injuries accumulated instead.

Heavenly Court's formation was still standing firmly.

Fang Yuan suddenly made his move, the Human Sea in his sovereign immortal aperture became turbulent, causing the fog in the outside world to fluctuate as well.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun acted as well, spitting out rays of golden light. The golden light spread throughout the whole formation like ripples.

Wherever the golden light went, the fog dissipated, revealing the immortal graveyard.

The two sides’ alliance army saw this and cheered.

But this did not continue for long, the golden light dissipated quickly; the fog was restored almost immediately, blocking the sight of the immortals again.

Zhan Bu Du and the rest tried to attack the formation, but they failed. They could not even sense the locations of the formation cores.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was astonished for a moment before smiling bitterly: “This formation should have already broken, but the main formation core is Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. She forcefully used a wisdom path method to stabilize this formation!”

Gu Immortals were the foundation of killer moves, the main part of any methods was still the person. Under Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s control, this formation of Heavenly Court’s was forcefully stabilized, firmly obstructing Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s and Fang Yuan’s alliance army.

Fang Yuan slowly shook his head: “Looks like we won’t be able to break this formation in a short period of time.”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun did not reply, silently agreeing with this judgment.

When he and Fang Yuan attacked just earlier, it was already their strongest method that was allowed in this situation. Since it could not break this formation, they would need half a month or so to deduce and break this formation.

According to the current fusion rate of the great worlds as well as the Crazed Demon formation that was accelerated by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, half a month was enough for the derivation to be complete.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s expression returned to normal, asking brightly: “Good formation! Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, can you tell me the name of this formation?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s voice came from within the fog: “This formation is called Transient White Cloud City Suppression, it was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable but was not perfected. Only now, after Heavenly Court explored deeply into human path, we managed to fortunately complete it.”

Right at this time, Fang Yuan attacked once again, causing the formation fog to turn chaotic.

Fang Yuan continued: “Giant Sun, since we cannot break the formation, we need to weaken Star Constellation Immortal Venerable for the future.”

“That is reasonable.” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun immediately shot golden light which spread throughout the whole formation.

Wherever the golden light went, the fog disappeared and everything was cleared.

But, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable still stabilized the formation, soon, the battlefield was covered in fog again.

Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun attacked again and again, while Star Constellation Immortal Venerable stabilized the formation every time. Both sides had no other choice.

As this stalemate continued, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s expression changed suddenly, he felt some changes in luck.

After dozens more rounds, Divine Emperor City suddenly shook, an immortal flew out of the painting world.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun took this chance and shot out golden light, instantly, rays of golden light spread like ripples.

Divine Emperor City’s shaking caught Star Constellation Immortal Venerable off-guard, the formation was not stabilized, causing the formation to break. Many Heavenly Court Gu Immortals who acted as the formation cores started coughing blood, every one of them was heavily injured!

Zhan Bu Du took the lead to kill his way into the immortal graveyard, shouting towards that Gu Immortal who broke through the painting world: “Shen Shang, ally with us in attacking Heavenly Court!”

This crucial character who broke the formation was the pseudo venerable of Eastern Sea’s righteous path who cultivated human path, Shen Shang.

Shen Shang was shocked mentally and physically, but he immediately joined Fang Yuan’s side without any hesitation and attacked Heavenly Court.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable heaved a deep sigh as she waved her sleeve. She took all the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals and Immortal Gu Houses, and entered deep into the immortal graveyard.

Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun naturally would not give up. They chased all the way and saw a secluded domain of heaven and earth in the depths of the immortal graveyard.

This secluded domain of heaven and earth was a tall pitch-black door, it emitted an aura of eeriness, deathly silence, terror, and power.

Secluded domain of heaven and earth — Door of Life and Death!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable entered the Door of Life and Death, but Fang Yuan and the rest slowed down.

It was not easy to enter the Door of Life and Death.

< > recorded this in detail, Ren Zu had once asked wisdom Gu for guidance, wisdom Gu told Ren Zu the path to enter the Door of Life and Death was called the path of destiny. Living beings could enter the door through the path of death; if they wanted to exit, they needed to walk through the road of life. The path of death was filled with suffering Gu, while the road of life had three obstacles – Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley, and Reverse Flow River. Within the Door of Life and Death, there was Pacifying Soul Lake, fairness Gu, and so on.

Not only these, according to Fang Yuan’s intel, it was clear that the Door of Life and Death had Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s main body as well as Ren Zu’s eldest son Verdant Great Sun’s soul!

Now, there was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and the Heavenly Court immortals.

The Door of Life and Death had become a dangerous area.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable entered the Door of Life and Death with no hesitation, there was close to zero possibility of there being no arrangements inside.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2193: Spectral Soul’s Shocking Awakening

Looking at the Door of Life and Death in front of him, Fang Yuan immediately recalled his previous luck inspection result.

The dark clouds that represented Spectral Soul Demon Venerable were corroded by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s starry clouds.

“Let’s look at it again.” Fang Yuan willed and used Cooking Luck Pot.

His silver light pillar luck had condensed a bit. The dust around the base of the pillar was getting increasingly thick and solid, as for the three clouds above the pillar, the starry clouds and dark clouds had almost merged into one, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s golden cloud was still suppressed to the bottom.

The starry clouds and dark clouds had become even larger, they were already beginning to corrode Fang Yuan’s silver light pillar.

This change clearly indicated a problem.

“Heavenly Court has prepared abundantly in Crazed Demon Cave, looking at this, it seems like Spectral Soul Demon Venerable has actually allied with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable?”

“According to the current state, Heavenly Court has too much of a lead.”

“It is very likely that the final victor will be Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.”

Previously, there was Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance, an external factor, that affected the silver light pillar.

But when Fang Yuan observed his luck now, there was no external factor remaining.

In fact, at his level, there were extremely few external factors that could influence him and this battle in Crazed Demon Cave.

Only factors like Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance had the ability to influence it.

“Looks like I will have to rely on myself to resolve this situation.” Although the result of the luck inspection was not good, Fang Yuan activated his method decisively.

A finger-thick rainbow of chaotic colors wriggled out of his body.

The rainbow first linked to the Qi Sea clone, granting him a multi-colored radiance that covered his whole body. The rainbow came out again and connected to Zhan Bu Du.

“This move will protect you when you move in the Door of Life and Death.” Fang Yuan said to Lu Wei Yin, Shen Shang, and Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue smiled: “I have my own way.”

Shen Shang and Lu Wei Yin received this move.

Thereupon, the multi-colored rainbow connected them as well.

At the other side, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun put Calamity Luck Altar in his immortal aperture, his whole body was covered in a barrier of golden light. Right now, he was staring at above Fang Yuan’s head.

Ordinary Gu Immortals naturally could not see the hidden Cooking Luck Pot, but Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was its creator, he could somewhat sense it.

Cooking Luck Pot’s strong aura astonished Immortal Zombie Giant Sun.

But thinking back to this battle in Crazed Demon Cave and refinement path accomplishments of Fang Yuan, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun did not feel it strange.

Both sides activated their methods and charged into the Door of Life and Death.

They smoothly entered the Door of Life and Death without encountering any setbacks.

Inside the Door of Life and Death was a scene of vast darkness.

When Fang Yuan and the rest entered, it was like many torches were lit in a dark night. In an instant, countless soul beasts were startled, they started howling and roaring.

The soul beasts began to attack frantically, while Fang Yuan and the rest defended.

“So many soul beasts?!” Shen Shang was astonished.

“This is the place with the greatest concentration of soul beasts. The soul beasts here are beyond a hundred million, it is an inestimable number!” Lu Wei Yin said while activating a killer move which formed earthen walls.

“There are too many soul path dao marks here, my killer moves can’t even achieve fifty percent of their effects!” Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s face paled slightly after he tried several killer moves.

There were all sizes of soul beasts with all kinds of strength. There were countless ordinary soul beasts, as well as an inestimable number of desolate and ancient soul beasts. There were also many immemorial soul beasts.

The soul beasts were like a pitch-black tsunami, endlessly and fearlessly moving towards Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, trying to drown these Gu Immortals.

“What about Star Constellation Immortal Venerable?” Qi Sea Ancestor asked.

“If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable keeps on hiding, how can we find her in this situation?” Zhan Bu Du frowned.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Fang Yuan had not attacked yet, they were activating all kinds of methods to inspect and try to find Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s traces.

But soon, the two gave up.

They failed.

“Since it is like this....” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun snorted, his whole body emitting golden light.

Instantly, it was like a sun had appeared in the dark Door of Life and Death!

The sun rose high, illuminating all the surrounding space!

The light was extremely piercing, wherever it reached, countless soul beasts melted like ice, without even being able to let out a scream.

The immortals were shocked.

“Could this person be?!” Shen Shang’s eyes opened wide as he finally recognized Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s identity.

The power of this move was absolutely beyond Qi Sea Ancestor’s Hu elevation.

Fang Yuan also could not help taking a few glances, his pupils shrinking slightly.

Since the battle in Crazed Demon Cave began, this was the first time he saw Immortal Zombie Giant Sun taking such an action. In Fang Yuan’s hands, luck path was mostly used as support, but when Immortal Zombie Giant Sun used it at this moment, it showed extreme offensive power!

The golden light spread far, even immemorial soul beasts could not resist it. In an instant, there were uncountable casualties.

The battlefield that spanned thousands of li was cleared completely. At the periphery of the battlefield, a lake was revealed.

The lake was calm with no ripples. Even under the illumination of the golden light, it was still motionless like a mirror.

Pacifying Soul Lake!

There was a mountain range beside Pacifying Soul Lake.

The mountain range was majestic, it was so tall and vast that it seemed to touch the sky and spread beyond the range of the immortals’ sight.

“Since when is there a mountain here?”

“<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> has no records of it.”

“This mountain is so dark, it is bursting with demonic aura. This is too strange!”

“Is Star Constellation Immortal Venerable on this mountain? Maybe this pitch-black mountain range is Heavenly Court’s arrangement?”

The pseudo venerables discussed, but right at this time, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun suddenly said: “Found her.”

Fang Yuan’s gaze also moved over.

Following his gaze, the immortals discovered Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

She was standing at the peak of the mountain. Starlight twinkled around her and her sleeves fluttered in the air, adding splendor to her unmatched elegance.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked down at the immortals, saying with a smile: “The enemies are here, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, you should wake up.”

Her voice was calm, but it quickly spread and reverberated in this special world, like an echo in an empty valley.

At the next moment, the dark mountain range that spanned across heaven and earth shook, a voice could be heard: “Who... is disturbing my sleep?”

The mountain range shook with increasing intensity, the entire world was shaking, the ground cracked and mountains shattered!

Two blood-red suns suddenly appeared, each was much larger than Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s attack earlier.

These were Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s eyes!

This vast mountain range before the immortals was actually Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s main body!

“Strong enemies? Who are you... Kill, I will kill you!” Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s murmur shook the air, producing a vast whirlwind.

There was something wrong with his condition, he actually did not recognize Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Fang Yuan, as if he had lost his memories.

Bam Bam Bam Bam...

Hands spread out from the mountain range, in an instant, it was like countless giant trees had grown and formed a terrifying forest of arms.

Rumble...

A huge explosion rang as Spectral Soul Demon Venerable changed from an inclined position to sitting cross-legged.

Even when sitting cross-legged, his shoulders still reached high into the sky, the immortals could not even see his head and could barely see most of his chest.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s main body was too huge. Compared to him, Fang Yuan and the immortals were like ants beside an adult.

Lu Wei Yin, Demon Immortal Qi Jue, and the rest were pale with fright.

They could sense that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s main body was not just huge, the aura he emanated almost suffocated them. The soul path dao marks on him were too dense and of an enormous scale, even the current Fang Yuan could not compare.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable opened his eyes, the two blood sun let out ominous light from the dark cloudy fog.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable opened his mouth and breathed out.

At the next moment, dark soul fog moved with the fierce wind and covered the whole battlefield.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

The violent wind howled by their ears, the pseudo venerables’ expression changed one after the other.

The dark soul wind was extremely terrifying, it shook them so intensely that they were almost swept away.

The soul wind did not target just their bodies, it also specially attacked their souls.

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan called out, the multi-colored rainbow suddenly brightened, helping these pseudo venerables stabilize their souls and resist the soul wind.

“Fang Yuan!” Demon Immortal Qi Jue could not hold on, quickly asking for help.

Fang Yuan immediately activated the multi-colored rainbow, linking him as well and helping him resist the wind calamity.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable saw that no one was blown away, he shouted in anger and pressed down with one of his huge hands!

The huge palm seemed to cover the world, it carried ferocious might and wind and lightning roared alongside it. It gave a feeling of being unblockable and unavoidable.

The giant palm’s target was Demon Immortal Qi Jue!

Among the auras of the pseudo venerables, his aura was the weakest. He had been sealed for a long time in Divine Emperor City, much of his dao marks were extracted.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue wanted to dodge, but the giant palm had the ability to instill fear, he would not be able to move in a short period, and could only defend passively.

Boom!!!

The earth shook.

The immortals dodged, only Demon Immortal Qi Jue was left in the area.

He frantically used many defensive killer moves, but he was like an ant trying to fell the tree, he was instantly slammed down by the giant palm.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s aura rapidly fell to rock bottom.

Spectral Soul’s giant palm stamped on the ground and did not move. The palm that was stable as mountain roots or towering like a heavenly pillar let out a strange aura.

“One hand of Spectral Soul can suppress a pseudo venerable?” Even Immortal Zombie Giant Sun revealed an astonished expression, saying, “Save him quickly! Spectral Soul is trying to seal Qi Jue!”

Even without his reminder, Zhan Bu Du had already charged forward.

He was like a meteor as he pierced through Spectral Soul’s arm with a loud crash.

Zhan Bu Du laughed loudly and was about to turn around to attack again, when another hand pressed down with an incredible speed.

Boom!!!

Another loud explosion rang, Zhan Bu Du was also slammed down on the ground by the giant palm, his aura falling violently.

“Even with such a large size, it is actually so fast!”

“Too terrifying!”

“Save them, we cannot wait anymore.”

Qi Sea Ancestor, Lu Wei Yin, and the rest quickly attacked. The two heavenly pillar-like arms began to collapse from the strong attacks.

Right at this time, dozens of arms fell down from the sky.

Immortal killer move –Ten Li Time Wind.

With a cold snort, Fang Yuan raised his arms and pushed forward with his palms.

Immediately, boundless wind rose, blocking the dozens of giant arms.

This move contained the profundities of time path, rule path, and wind path. When Fang Yuan’s palms formed into a claw shape, it could confine the enemy and lock the time of the target.

However, currently, Fang Yuan’s hands were raised high, he was trying to grip with his fingers using all his strength, but they were trembling hard and he was unable to contract into a clenched shape.

He could only slow these dozens of giant arms, he could not completely lock their time.

“Good job!” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun praised, his figure suddenly transformed and became a soft rain of golden light.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2194: Unification of Three Worlds

Immortal killer move – Golden Top Ox Hair!

The drizzle of dazzling golden light increased rapidly, it quickly spread and covered the dozens of giant arms.

Golden light rained down endlessly, penetrating into the pitch-black giant arms.

The giant arms shook, golden flowing veins appeared and moved up the arms while interweaving into an exquisite web.

When the golden web covered over half of the giant arms, the giant arms started shaking extremely fiercely.

The pressure on Fang Yuan reduced sharply, the giant arms could not even budge under the infiltration of the golden web.

This golden top ox hair killer move clearly also had the ability to confine its enemies. But it was different from Fang Yuan’s ten li time wind, it infiltrated the target’s body and controlled their movement.

When the golden web covered the giant arms completely, these dozens of giant arms came under Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s control. They moved up and attacked Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s main body!

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was furious, at that instant, a thousand or so giant arms came down, destroying these dozens of traitorous arms.

The golden web lost its attached targets, turning back into a drizzle of golden light.

Amidst the golden light drizzle, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s figure appeared slowly.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable gave a shout, his thunder-like voice shook the whole Door of Life and Death.

A grey tornado immediately formed and moved towards Fang Yuan’s group.

The grey tornado did not have absorption force, instead it had a huge repulsive force. Wind blades that were sharper than Luo Po wind rotated and cut the souls.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, Fang Yuan, and the immortals quickly retreated. Soul beasts rushed over from afar, but were dismembered by the wind blades.

After these soul beasts died, they were absorbed by the grey tornado, changing into grey soul bombs.

A soul bomb struck and exploded on Lu Wei Yin. Lu Wei Yin’s soul was immediately injured heavily, he almost fainted.

He had exceptional defense but faced this situation. Other immortals like Qi Jue and Shen Shang were even more miserable, their souls might have been swept away if not for Fang Yuan’s help.

The number of soul path dao marks in the Door of Life and Death was unimaginable.

Before Spectral Soul Demon Venerable awakened, these pseudo venerables could only use fifty percent of their strength because of the dao mark suppression.

Now that he awakened, pseudo venerables could only use twenty percent of their strength. Even Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun could only use fifty percent of their strength!

“What’s going on? Spectral Soul is also a supreme grandmaster.”

“Although Spectral Soul Demon Venerable lost his physical body, he has already modified himself into gaining a soul beast body!”

“He has almost merged with the Door of Life and Death. With this environment, all his killer moves are amplified greatly, he can easily suppress us. This is the power of a Dao Lord!”

“What now?”

The immortals could not help but hesitate.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s battle strength far surpassed the expectations of many of them.

Another crucial point was that the Door of Life and Death had too many soul path dao marks.

When fate Gu was intact, the soul of every dead being returned to the Door of Life and Death. Even when fate Gu was damaged, most of the dead beings’ souls still returned here.

Countless years accumulated, countless souls gathered and broke down to form the current Door of Life and Death.

Among all the secluded domains of heaven and earth, the Door of Life and Death was likely to have the highest number of dao marks!

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun collaborated to destroy the grey tornado and detonate the thousands of grey soul bombs.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable bent over slightly, thousands of giant arms attacked from all sides. It was like the sky was falling, creating a suffocating feeling!

Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun began to use all their strength.

The giant arms were destroyed one after the other. Their fragments fell to the ground, immediately changing into soul beasts that charged forward to fight once again.

Lu Wei Yin and the other pseudo venerables were in charge of killing these soul beasts.

After the soul beasts died, their fragments combined to form new soul beasts.

Moreover, these newly born soul beasts were stronger than the previous soul beasts. They possessed talents and abilities, thus they could counter Lu Wei Yin and the other Gu Immortals.

Fang Yuan, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, and other Gu Immortals were at a disadvantage.

They were struggling to cope with the countless soul beasts and endless giant arms that attacked unceasingly.

Right now, soul path fully displayed its combat advantage by fueling itself through killing!

“Die! All of you, die!!” Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s mind became even more chaotic, roaring like a wild beast.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled, her clear voice was not suppressed by the chaotic battlefield, instead it reached the immortals’ ears: “Everyone, your valiance really makes me feel admiration. Fang Yuan, Giant Sun, I’ll take a quick leave first.”

Saying this, she leisurely retreated. Her body streaked across the dark world like a meteor, easily leaving the Door of Life and Death.

Since the battle began, she had been standing on Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s head, even though she was openly leaving now, she did not attract Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s attention.

This situation was frightening to see.

The grand Spectral Soul Demon Venerable actually became Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s puppet!

Lu Wei Yin suddenly shouted, his face was pale: “Oh no, Lord Fang Yuan! Star Constellation will definitely unite the three great worlds and destroy Paradise Earth’s tomb. We must quickly go and stop her!”

However, this was easier said than done.

Spectral Soul’s main body was a genuine Dao Lord inside the Door of Life and Death!

A soul path supreme grandmaster.

A complete rank nine venerable!

On the contrary, Fang Yuan was only at rank eight, and though Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was also a Dao Lord, how could he use the outside world’s luck path dao marks to amplify himself in the Door of Life and Death?

Heaven and earth travel?

Fang Yuan had already tried it secretly, but it had no effect.

Heavenly Court knew Fang Yuan had fixed immortal travel Immortal Gu, how could they not have prepared for it?

No killer move was invincible. Just like Fang Yuan’s ghostly concealment killer move, it showed no effect inside the Door of Life and Death!

The three great worlds were rapidly melting.

The boundaries had already shrunk by thirty percent.

As for the void in the eighth layer, it was originally vast and infinite, but the boundary was now sticking close to the bubbles of the three great worlds.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable returned here and immediately set up a formation.

The formation activated, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals split and invaded Savage Wilderness Great World and Yellow Earth Great World.

These two great worlds’ main forces had almost all died in battle. Only a few remained, they were the old and weak Gu Immortals with no battle strength left, or elite Gu Masters.

Be they the former or latter, they had no ability to block Heavenly Court’s advancement.

Heavenly Court continued to push in, setting a sub-formation after occupying each territory.

These sub-formations resonated with the main formation which was personally controlled by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. The sub-formations let out grand lights that shot towards the sky and shone on the surroundings, making the vast and desolate Savage Wilderness Great World, and the hilly Yellow Earth Great World bloom with green.

Weeds and tree saplings grew at a visible speed, quickly forming a dense forest.

This was only the visible phenomenon, the true essence lied in Green Lotus Great World expanding continuously as it absorbed the other two great worlds into its territory!

If looked from above, the green color that was like moss spread from the Green Lotus Great World and slowly covered the other two great worlds.

After covering them, the lush green became even deeper in color.

At first, it was only light green, many areas with the sub-formations turned into deep green. The deep green then turned into dark green.

The three great worlds finally merged!

After reaching a certain extent, a storm started brewing indescribably.

The storm was not large, but its range was astonishing, covering the whole world.

Wind blew like the qi tides of five regions, it quickly merged the primeval energy of the great world and distributed it evenly.

“Limitless Demon Venerable’s heaven and earth refinement method has already reached the peak. If I am not wrong, this wind will continue to grow until it becomes the winds of assimilation!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable controlled the main formation, she personally took part and helped the great worlds unite, so she gained many insight from this.

In fact, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable accounted for almost half of the heaven path research results in the Crazed Demon formation!

Why did Limitless Demon Venerable go to Heavenly Court in his later years and play this game with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable?

The reason was simple.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had merged with heaven’s will of her own accord. The killer move human executing heaven’s work was extremely profound, while she altered heaven’s will, she was also comprehending heaven path.

So, Limitless Demon Venerable competed with Star Constellation to extract the heaven path mysteries, he also received the help of this wisdom path supreme grandmaster, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, to deduce new heaven path research results.

Limitless Demon Venerable cultivated rule path, only by cooperating with the creator of wisdom path, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, could he realize the insane concept of Crazed Demon Cave!

Limitless Demon Venerable achieved his goal, while Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also gained many benefits.

The three avatar fairies’ method of influencing the emotions of many mutant Gu Immortals and making them join Heavenly Court was a result of heaven path.

Being able to control Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was also an embodiment of heaven path research results. Naturally, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable took advantage of this situation. Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s main body already had flaws.

“The three worlds have merged, the outcome has been decided.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable let out a breath of air, her eyes shining with starlight.

She had succeeded.

Fang Yuan and Longevity Heaven’s alliance was very powerful. But she relied on her incomparable wisdom path attainment to take a lead step by step, maintaining her advantage and not letting the other two sides surpass her.

Although Heavenly Court was weak, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used Book Mountain, Primordial Domain, the Crazed Demon formation, and the Door of Life and Death, she used everything that could be used to help claim victory.

This was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

This was the power of wisdom path!

Heavenly Court had already infiltrated the Crazed Demon formation, now that they united the three worlds and got hold of massive clues and fuel, it was like letting half of the Crazed Demon formation falling into Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s hands.

“It is your turn now, Paradise Earth.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s eyes shone coldly.

She did not like Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable.

Even though Paradise Earth had the name of Immortal Venerable and had extremely high reputation, he loved and defended variant humans. Paradise Earth left Merman Imperial Court in Eastern Sea and also Mushroomman Paradise in Southern Border.

What repulsed Star Constellation Immortal Venerable even more was Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s identity.

Paradise Earth had gone through many fortuitous encounters in his life that could have allowed him to change his fundamental identity to that of a pure human. But he did not do so, he was always a mixed blood which could never be accepted by Heavenly Court.

Immediately, sub-formations buzzed and tore the earth.

Ground crumbled, deep ravines spread quickly from all sides to Paradise Earth’s tomb.

Paradise Earth’s tomb was broken apart.

Afterwards, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gave a cry, her gaze looking at the distant sky.

Soon, endless starlight condensed and solidified in the sky, turning into meteors that fell to the ground.

Like a rainstorm, the meteors smashed onto Paradise Earth’s tomb.

Bam bam bam...

The explosions rang, starlight and rock fragments flew everywhere.

After a few minutes of time, Paradise Earth’s tomb was leveled and turned into ruins.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2195: Paradise Earth’s Revival

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s gaze crossed through thousands of miles and landed on the ruins of Paradise Earth’s tomb. She checked carefully before giving a satisfied nod.

She collected the main formation, while Heavenly Court’s immortals were in charge of collecting all the sub-formations.

Heavenly Court members gathered in one place and moved with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

After Primordial Domain disappeared, the eighth layer and ninth layer could be easily traveled to and fro.

They left the eighth layer and entered the ninth layer.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable personally pointed the way forward. Qin Ding Ling, Che Wei, Fang Zheng, and the rest stepped into the Crazed Demon formation one after the other, they each stopped on a truthful floating ice piece.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable told them the control method of the truthful floating ice in detail, she then went towards the center of the formation and faced the central truthful floating ice.

“Lady Star Constellation, what are you going to do?”

“If you insist on forcing your way, we will immediately activate practice Gu and destroy this truthful floating ice!”

Not Immortal was alarmed. Pang Shan and Secret Schemer immediately appeared, they tried to threaten Star Constellation.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled: “Truthfully, you three being able to control practice Gu was beyond my expectations. I had already sealed Limitless’ will, I did not expect him to still be able to bring you three here. However, the reason why I sealed Limitless’ will was just as an additional layer of assurance.”

“I am going to use all my strength to accelerate the Crazed Demon formation. This formation that Limitless set up back then is indeed astonishing and extraordinary, reaching the peak of the world. But he is still a rule path Gu Immortal and not of wisdom path. He naturally realized this, if not, why would he invade Heavenly Court and bet with me?”

Pang Shan and Secret Schemer looked at each other. The latter thought for a bit and mustered his courage to ask: “Since Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has the same thought as us, why not come in? We are willing to hand over practice Gu.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled: “That is not necessary. This area is the Crazed Demon formation’s core, it is easy to enter but difficult to exit. It also concerns the final deduction results, if I forcefully break out, I may destroy this truthful floating ice, ruining the million year derivation.”

“I am already in control of half the Crazed Demon formation, and only with me leading my Heavenly Court’s immortals outside to prevent any unexpected situation, can I safely push this Crazed Demon formation to the limit.”

“I am already aware of your ambitions. No need to hesitate, go carve the truthful floating ice.”

Pang Shan and Secret Schemer gritted their teeth. Right now, Fang Yuan was missing, and it probably bode ill rather than well. Since Heavenly Court had already controlled the situation, and these three immortals were unable to go out, even if they could go out, they definitely were not Heavenly Court’s match. They could only continue to drill the truthful floating ice and resume their work.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable began to activate the formation step by step.

Under her influence, the Crazed Demon formation’s form started changing again and again, the derivation efficiency also continued to rise.

Many of Heavenly Court’s members were controlling a truthful floating ice piece each, they listened to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s arrangements as they controlled their respective truthful floating ice.

The melting speed of the eighth layer’s great world sped up by several times.

Many peripheral truthful floating ice pieces were starting to thaw and shrink. But the central truthful floating ice piece was continuing to expand in size.

There would only be one truthful floating ice piece left in Crazed Demon formation at the end.

If Limitless’ arrangements succeeded, then the one who obtained this truthful floating ice could gain eternal life!

Because the truth of eternal life would already be carved.

“Worthy of Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. Under such a bleak situation, she fought one battle after another and made Heavenly Court emerge victorious.” Qin Ding Ling was moved.

“With such a person leading Heavenly Court, our deaths would be without regrets.” Duke Mei and the rest conversed happily.

“No one else is more suitable than Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to obtain eternal life! With her leadership, our Heavenly Court will definitely become a supreme existence once again, we will unite the five regions just like Crazed Demon Cave’s three worlds.” The immortals were looking forward to a beautiful future.

When Heavenly Court did not have an Immortal Venerable in charge, there was the tradition of having a wisdom path Gu Immortal lead them.

Past experience proved the sensibility of this system.

Now that the creator of wisdom path, a wisdom path supreme grandmaster, the number one person in wisdom path, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, was controlling Heavenly Court, no one in Heavenly Court had any objection!

Even if Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable and Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable were to revive, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would still be much more suitable than them to obtain eternal life.

Inside the Door of Life and Death.

“All of you must die... why are you still not dead?” Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was sitting cross-legged. Pacifying Soul Lake was only a puddle in comparison, while Fang Yuan and the immortals were like insignificant ants.

But this group of ants made Spectral Soul Demon Venerable extremely angry.

Boom boom boom!

Countless giant arms attacked these ants.

Lu Wei Yin, Demon Immortal Qi Jue, and the rest used all their strength to counterattack. They were only second to peak level battle strengths like that of Fang Yuan, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, but they were in an extremely miserable situation here.

If not for Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun helping them time and again, some of them might have already perished.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s main body was at rank nine, after transforming into a soul beast body and his attainment level having been raised to supreme grandmaster level, he had become a Dao Lord.

Originally, a venerable that had just become a Dao Lord was still not invincible, they had to refine dao marks of their path in the outside world and raise their strength.

But it just so happened that this Door of Life and Death was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s territory, he had occupied it since long ago.

And the Door of Life and Death had the highest number of soul path dao marks in the world, even Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun were in a disadvantage.

The longer this dragged on, the more disadvantageous it would be for them. Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was aware of this, so they fought while finding an exit path.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun made deductions and smiled bitterly at Fang Yuan: “This is not good. When Star Constellation Immortal Venerable left, it was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who took the initiative to open a path. He has already completely refined the Door of Life and Death and become this place’s master. It is impossible for us to leave like Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!”

Fang Yuan fixed his gaze on Spectral Soul Demon Venerable: “Who could have expected Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to turn Spectral Soul Demon Venerable into a puppet. Giant Sun, you should know that in the five hundred years of my previous life, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable possessed the sovereign immortal body and became the greatest mastermind behind the five regions chaotic war. He infiltrated Heavenly Court and made them a mere figurehead. Now, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable can be considered to have taken revenge for Heavenly Court.”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was solemn: “There is no use in saying these things now. Our hope lies with you.”

Fang Yuan nodded: “I know, I have already begun deducing!”

He knew what Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was pointing towards.

Back then, when Ren Zu tried to leave the Door of Life and Death through the road of life, he encountered three obstacles; Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley, and Reverse Flow River.

Ren Zu failed when he was in Reverse Flow River, if not for this, he could have escaped the Door of Life and Death.

And now, Fang Yuan was the Gu Immortal with the most secluded domains of heaven and earth. In fact, he had Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley, and Reverse Flow River!

As long as these three obstacles were used to create the road of life, they could escape the Door of Life and Death through it and return to fight Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Fang Yuan had a bitter expression: “Deductions need time and clues. I have no clue about this road of life, I just have these obstacles. And this Door of Life and Death has long been modified by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and merged into himself, there is a huge difference between it and the records in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>. Furthermore, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable does not have a clear mind, I need to split my attention to guard against his mad attacks.”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun heaved a sigh: “Spectral Soul Demon Venerable has astonishing attainment in soul path, he made the Door of Life and Death much more exceptional than before! Even though the situation is already like this, I still hope you will give your best effort.”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s expression changed suddenly: “It is here again, follow me!”

He suddenly threw out Calamity Luck Altar.

Immortal killer move — Luck Changing Golden Light Path!

A dazzling path of golden light formed instantly.

The immortals knew the situation, quickly stepping on the path of light and letting it bring them away.

At the next moment, countless soul bombs, each the size of a mountain, shot down while having tadpole-like tails.

The giant tadpole soul bombs detonated with horrifying strength, the path shook intensely from the explosion and dimmed rapidly.

But the immortals managed to escape from the soul bombs.

They had already suffered once, Shen Shang and Demon Immortal Qi Jue had gotten heavily injured from the explosion. Fortunately, Shen Shang cultivated human path and was an expert in treating these injuries, he displayed human path’s superiority, healing the immortals quickly.

After that time, every time the soul bombs attacked, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun used luck changing golden light path and moved the immortals away.

This move was extremely profound, it could forcibly create a survival route in a hopeless situation.

Soul beasts attacked and soul bombs detonated around the light path, many of their attacks canceled each other which instead kept the light path safe.

If it was before, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun could have already escaped with this move. But this Door of Life and Death was different, it was extremely troublesome; even if Immortal Zombie Giant Sun used luck changing golden light path multiple times, he could not succeed.

“Careful!” Qi Sea Ancestor alerted.

After all the soul bombs detonated, a soul river crashed down.

Countless wronged ghosts formed a black river. The ghosts cried and howled, the tragic and furious sounds slightly slowed the immortals’ thoughts.

The soul river was extremely huge, covering thousands of miles!

The immortals could not evade it, so they used all kinds of methods. For a moment, they were carried up and down by the soul river, being tortured physically and mentally.

Profound light surrounded and protected Fang Yuan. Multi-colored rainbow bound other pseudo venerables, preventing them from getting washed away.

Under this perilous situation, once the pseudo venerables left the group for some time, they would die a miserable death.

The crucial point was that if they died here, their souls would be used by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to target the remaining people.

This was what Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was good at.

So, Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun were helping themselves by saving these people.

“I can hardly look after myself, how can I quickly deduce the road of life in this situation?” Fang Yuan showed a difficult expression as he looked at the tumultuous soul river.

The situation was bad, as time passed, Fang Yuan’s chance of victory would be increasingly low.

If they were delayed for a long time in the Door of Life and Death, if Star Constellation Immortal Venerable obtained eternal life, she might come back to finish them with greatly increased strength.

At that time, if there was no improvement, Fang Yuan would not just be defeated but might even lose his life!

Right at this time, in the great world in Crazed Demon Cave’s eighth layer, a yellow light shone.

The yellow light covered the ruins.

This was Paradise Earth’s tomb!

The yellow light erupted, shooting towards the sky, before changing direction towards the Door of Life and Death.

A Gu Immortal appeared in the yellow light.

“Buried in the earth for a hundred thousand years,

Brushing dust off my clothes as I rise once more.

Wishing for all lives to be equal,

May all living beings compete in harmony.”

After the recital, the Gu Immortal said: “Spectral Soul, please open the door. Paradise Earth... is here to pay a visit.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2196: Spectral Soul Versus Paradise Earth

For an instant, the fighting in the Door of Life and Death suddenly stopped.

The furious Spectral Soul Demon Venerable stopped roaring, countless giant arms stopped moving like space had frozen.

“What happened?” Qi Sea Ancestor was puzzled.

At the next moment, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable opened his huge mouth, letting out an earth-shattering roar.

The roar contained anger, hatred, as well as excitement towards meeting a great enemy!

“You revived…”

“You revived as well!”

“I finally meet you. Since you are here, come in.”

“So that I can… kill you!!”

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable did not remember Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, but he seemed to have a deep impression of Paradise Earth.

Suns of blood color rose in the sky, these were Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s eyes.

He had three heads; only one head had awakened in the previous battle, now the remaining two heads also opened their blood colored eyes!

The entrance of the Door of Life and Death opened, forming a huge vortex that let out a terrifying suction force.

The entrance opened and closed in an instant. When Fang Yuan and the rest came to their senses, a Gu Immortal was pulled into the Door of Life and Death.

He had a shiny bald head and wore plain clothing.

He had a kind expression and his entire body let out a faint radiance.

“Paradise Earth!” Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun called out.

“Lord Paradise Earth, you succeeded in reviving!?” Lu Wei Yin was surprised and happy. He suddenly shouted, “Careful!”

Bam bam bam…

Hundreds of giant arms repelled the air as they ruthlessly charged towards Paradise Earth while producing thunderous rumbles.

Battle erupted once again!

The Crazed Demon formation turned chaotic.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were heavily injured, their expressions were pale and bewildered.

This was all caused by Paradise Earth’s revival.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable revealed an astonished expression.

Ever since the battle in Crazed Demon Cave started, this was the first time she showed such an emotion.

The reason was that although Paradise Earth revived, his revival method was beyond Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s expectations.

“I thought you would revive as an earth path venerable, but to think you would take another path.”

“I underestimated you.”

“You actually converted to heaven path, Paradise Earth’s tomb was only a target. Only through its destruction could you revive.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable let out a breath of air, but did not move towards the Door of Life and Death. At the moment, the Crazed Demon formation was rotating like a tornado, she could not get away easily.

Moreover, although Paradise Earth revived, he had converted to heaven path and the tomb was destroyed much earlier by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, so his current cultivation was only at pseudo venerable level.

If Yellow Earth Great World had annexed the other two great worlds and Paradise Earth’s tomb was destroyed along with the great world, the revived Paradise Earth might have venerable cultivation!

Right now, the main focus was still on the Crazed Demon formation. The sensible Star Constellation would never abandon the larger goal for smaller gains. Moreover, even if she returned to the Door of Life and Death, her battle strength would also be suppressed greatly, it would not be worth the effort.

Inside the Door of Life and Death.

“Careful!” Lu Wei Yin’s shout had just landed.

A giant web appeared in front of Paradise Earth.

The milky white web was extremely thick, every thread of the web had the size of an elephant, giving a monumental and majestic feeling.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s attacks were completely blocked by this giant web.

“What kind of killer move is this, it actually has such defensive prowess!?”

“This aura, I have never felt it before…”

“Wait a moment! Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable does not have rank nine cultivation, he is only at rank eight level like us!”

Demon Immortal Qi Jue, Zhan Bu Du, and the rest were greatly shaken.

“This is a heaven path killer move! Paradise Earth converted to cultivating heaven path, he revived but did not regain his venerable cultivation, this might be the price!” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was somewhat aware.

Fang Yuan’s emotions were slightly complex.

He had also once considered progressing in heaven path.

Who could have expected Paradise Earth’s scheme to be deeper than his, he had even greater progress. Through this revival, he directly became a pseudo venerable in heaven path!

Using heaven path’s advantage, the suppression of the Door of Life and Death on Paradise Earth was the smallest.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was roaring in fury, he half-squatted from his cross-legged position!

Thousands of giant arms attacked, the five fingers of every hand were placed together like a drill, and the sharp nails stabbed like spears.

Countless giant hands stabbed the web of light, Paradise Earth’s expression did not change, but the heaven path giant web that did not even budge before was shaking slightly.

“Although he cultivates heaven path, he is only a pseudo venerable. Reinforce him.” Fang Yuan immediately saw through the situation and alerted others.

Lu Wei Yin was the first to charge forward, but was blocked by giant arms midway.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan and the rest followed closely to reinforce Paradise Earth.

After Spectral Soul Demon Venerable adapted, the giant arms changed shape, a large number of spikes extended from the fingernails, his action changed from poking to tearing.

Slash, slash… countless giant arms tore layers of webs of light, continuously breaking them.

Although Paradise Earth only had pseudo venerable cultivation level, his defensive method was exceptional and was at Immortal Venerable level. It was just that when Spectral Soul Demon Venerable used his full strength, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had to retreat even after obtaining the reinforcement.

The immortals’ situation was still as perilous as before.

After blocking for a while, Paradise Earth transmitted his voice: “Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s condition is strange, his mind is not clear, his emotions were probably tampered with by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. I have a method that can dispel all emotions and make someone’s rationality as calm as ice.”

Wisdom path had three main elements; thoughts, wills, and emotions.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was definitely at the peak in these three aspects.

Fairy Feng Ya deduced Limitless’ arrangements, always being ahead of others. This was the attainment of thoughts.

Limitless’ will was sealed by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, this was a method of will.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s emotions were agitated and in disorder, he did not have even a trace of rationality. This showed Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s might in terms of emotions!

Regarding this, Fang Yuan, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, or other pseudo venerables had all made an attempt.

However, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s condition was the same, never showing a sign of regaining his sanity.

The immortals’ attempts failed, they agreed that it was because Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s method was exceptional. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was a wisdom path supreme grandmaster, the number one in the world in this path, since she left confidently, she naturally had full confidence in her method, she believed this method would not be broken for a short period of time.

Right now, although Paradise Earth mentioned this idea, the immortals did not object, they cooperated with him quickly.

Spectral Soul’s attacks were extremely fierce, Paradise Earth’s appearance had agitated his state even further.

All kinds of soul path killer moves were used one after the other; some were sinister, some were weird, some were domineering, and some were unrestrained. The immortals were too busy dealing with them.

Paradise Earth was protected at the center, but he was disturbed again and again. The killer move’s activation progress was minimal.

After a long while, Fang Yuan snorted coldly: “All of you, move aside!”

The immortals quickly retreated.

Fang Yuan’s face was indifferent but his eyes shone as he faced the tsunami-like wave of soul beasts. He opened his arms and roared towards the sky.

Along with his roar, specks of light flew out of his immortal aperture.

The specks were of all kinds of color, they rapidly collided in the air, turning into dragons, wolves, tigers, fishes, and other beings.

These were all totem killer moves!

Countless totems of all kinds and shapes charged forward. Wherever they went, soul beasts cried out miserably as they were torn into shreds, burned into ashes, drowned, cleaved by lightning…

In an instant, Fang Yuan released hundreds of totems that he had gathered on his body.

These killer moves were all at rank eight, that was to say, Fang Yuan used hundreds of rank eight killer moves in an instant.

Peerless might!

The immortals immediately felt the pressure on them reducing sharply.

Countless soul beasts were slaughtered, even when the giant arms attacked, ten or so totems attacked one giant arm and destroyed them.

“Thirty percent of my immortal essence was used up!” Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, returning to the group.

The immortal essence expenditure of releasing so many totem killer moves was extremely terrifying.

According to Fang Yuan’s current immortal essence reserves, he could only use this move three times at most.

Among the present Gu Immortals, the lowest cultivation was at pseudo venerable. Yet. when they looked at Fang Yuan, their expressions were all shaken and even contained vague fear.

Totem killer moves were quick and convenient, but Fang Yuan released so many totems at once, which was the thing that really shocked them.

Ignoring anything else, with just this method, Fang Yuan could exterminate almost any super force in the world!

Even Immortal Zombie Giant Sun stared at Fang Yuan for a while.

He knew of totem killer moves, so he understood the advantages and weaknesses of this kind of killer move.

Totem killer moves were indeed quick and convenient, but they were difficult to nurture.

However, Fang Yuan had actually nurtured so many rank eight totems, this made Immortal Zombie Giant Sun shocked at Fang Yuan’s wealth.

“Good method!” Paradise Earth praised before concentrating on preparing his killer move.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s three heads opened their mouths and breathed out a vast soul river.

Three soul rivers converged into a soul river of an unprecedented scale. It crashed down like dark clouds covering the sky.

Totem killer moves flew and charged into the soul river as they fought.

The soul river’s speed of descent fell, while these totems’ radiance was extinguished one by one.

Thoughts moved rapidly in Fang Yuan’s mind, all kinds of thoughts sparked as he madly dispatched the totems and coordinated their actions.

His immortal essence was expended rapidly, his mind was beginning to overheat as it reached the limits of his wisdom path capability.

Totem killer moves were far superior to immemorial desolate beasts because they could coordinate with each other and be controlled casually. More importantly, each of them possessed extreme prowess, comparable to immemorial desolate beasts that had wild Immortal Gu, or even immemorial desolate beasts that grasped immortal killer moves.

These totems gained twenty-two breaths of time for Paradise Earth.

Finally, Fang Yuan heaved a sigh as he collected the remaining twelve totems in his immortal aperture.

These totems survived fortunately but they were in an extremely damaged state. The other hundreds of totems had all died in battle.

Naturally, accompanying their deaths were countless soul beasts and dozens of Spectral Soul’s giant arms.

Fang Yuan retreated to the depths of the group, he had to rest his mind and it seemed difficult for him to battle for some time.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun stood up and took his place.

He had already prepared his killer move, using it with no hesitation.

Immortal killer move — Unforeseen Disaster!

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun grabbed at his head repeatedly with his palms that were covered in a layer of light.

The pure gold light around his palms was rapidly dyed black and red.

Every time Immortal Zombie Giant Sun grabbed, he threw them as well.

The dark-red bad luck flew in the air, turning into lumps of dark-red clouds that flew everywhere.

Each lump of dark-red cloud was not large; wherever they went, soul beasts within a hundred li howled for a few breaths of time before losing their lives, giant arms broke, large segments of the soul river also broke apart.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun repeatedly grabbed his bad luck and threw them at his enemy.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s body itself was becoming unstable after being hit by this method. His left head shouted as it used burning soul bursting luck, his luck immediately rose and offset Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s method.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun attacked for a while before stopping.

It was not that his immortal essence was not enough or his mind got tired, it was because he had used up all his bad luck.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2197: Killing Spectral Soul?

“This method is really good.” Fang Yuan was slightly moved as he observed Immortal Zombie Giant Sun.

If he could use all of his bad luck to attack, then his own luck would always remain at the highest level.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun had an excellent combat system, this method definitely had high importance in this combat system.

With Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s help, Paradise Earth got the time to prepare and activate his killer move.

Immortal killer move — Emotionless Heaven and Earth!

White waves of light spread from between Paradise Earth’s brows, the light waves immediately spread towards the whole battlefield and covered Spectral Soul Demon Venerable completely.

Waves of light activated one after the other, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable did not feel anything at first, but he soon showed a response. The killing intent in his blood-red pupils decreased rapidly as they revealed flickers of rationality.

But at this time, the silhouette of a figure showed itself on Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s stomach.

The immortals heard this figure speak: “Heaven and earth is emotionless, that is correct, but humans have emotions.”

Saying so, this figure laughed.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s pupils were filled with killing intent once again, the trace of rationality just earlier had vanished without a trace.

“Who was that?” The immortals were astonished.

Clearly, this figure had caused Paradise Earth’s killer move to fail.

“Is it Verdant Great Sun?” A thought emerged in Fang Yuan’s mind.

According to Spectral Soul’s memories and the records in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, Ren Zu’s eldest son Verdant Great Sun’s soul lay on the shores of Pacifying Soul Lake.

But right now, there was nothing around Pacifying Soul Lake.

It was very likely that Verdant Great Sun’s soul was devoured by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

But for some reason, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who cultivated soul path and food path could not ‘digest’ Verdant Great Sun, he was instead controlled.

It was very likely that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had played a crucial role in this.

Paradise Earth revealed a troubled expression at seeing his killer move have no effect.

Spectral Soul attacked once again, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Fang Yuan glanced at each other as the former said: “Fang Yuan, have you gained any comprehension?”

Fang Yuan shook his head, his expression was solemn: “There is no progress.”

“I have an idea.” Shen Shang suddenly said, “Since the fate war, I have been lurking inside Divine Emperor City while cultivating human path. Besides the gains, I also pondered on how to get out of difficult situations, so I thought of a human path method. Right now, I have already deduced ninety percent of this method, only the final ten percent remains. When I saw Lord Paradise Earth activate the human path killer move, my intuition told me that this is the final ten percent I require. With it, I can complete this killer move.”

“This…” The other Gu Immortals murmured softly.

Shen Shang’s intention was to ask for Paradise Earth’s heaven path research results, this was quite an impudent request.

There was an example here, despite Fang Yuan having three crucial secluded domains of heaven and earth, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun had never asked to borrow these secluded domains of heaven and earth to deduce the road of life to escape from the Door of Life and Death.

But in the current situation, Shen Shang’s overbearing request had some reason behind it.

The crucial point was that he and Paradise Earth had a peculiar relationship.

Shen Shang was an Eastern Sea Gu Immortal, he secretly committed many sins to cultivate human path. After Paradise Earth learned of it, he immediately took action.

Shen Shang could not even take one strike from Paradise Earth, but instead of killing or confining him, Paradise Earth gave him a chance to atone for his sins.

Thus, Shen Shang entered the blue dragon whale and cultivated bitterly.

After obtaining Paradise Earth’s help, Shen Shang made progress time and time again, advancing stably.

With heal injury Immortal Gu as the foundation, he developed and created saving dead healing injuries, light injuries, heavy injuries, fatal injuries, sensory injuries, seven laborious injuries, and other killer moves. Later, he created the killer move countless injury marks, from which he deduced the Immortal Gu recipe of injury mark Immortal Gu. Finally, he refined injury mark Immortal Gu, and changed it to his vital Gu.

When Fang Yuan explored the blue dragon whale’s aperture, he released Shen Shang.

Shen Shang cooperated with Fang Yuan according to Paradise Earth’s instructions and participated in the fate war. At the crucial moment, he played a key role and set the crucial foundation for Fang Yuan’s victory over Heavenly Court.

Shen Shang’s and Paradise Earth’s relationship could be said to be extremely close.

Back then, when Shen Shang cultivated human path in blue dragon whale, he had received Paradise Earth’s guidance.

The connection between the two was very deep, second only to the relationship between Lu Wei Yin and Paradise Earth.

Thus, Shen Shang made this seemingly impudent request. Because back then, Paradise Earth guided him, there was a high chance of him guiding Shen Shang again now that he had revived.

The only difference was that it was human path before, and now it was heaven path.

Sure enough, like Shen Shang expected, Paradise Earth directly imparted the information of emotionless heaven and earth to him without any hesitation.

“I thank lord’s guidance!” Shen Shang bowed with his hands cupped before him, his voice slightly shaking from excitement.

Paradise Earth nodded, saying with a smile: “Shen Shang, your appearance here can be considered a fortune. Whether we can leave here or not will depend on your talent.”

“Junior will do his best to not let down lord’s expectation!” Shen Shang was even more excited.

He was a grand pseudo venerable, but in front of Paradise Earth, he positioned himself as a junior and was extremely humble and respectful.

He was indebted to Paradise Earth!

In fact, many people and forces were indebted to Paradise Earth.

Everyone knew Paradise Earth was the most popular among the ten venerables, even many people of Central Continent respected him.

The amount of good deeds Paradise Earth had done over his life and the number of people he had helped was inestimable!

After receiving Paradise Earth’s approval and encouragement, the other Gu Immortals were slightly expectant of Shen Shang.

Most of them were still placing their hopes on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had made crucial breakthroughs during battles before, he had created reverse flow protection seal, he was the person who defeated Heavenly Court. There were precedents for this.

Moreover, at present, Fang Yuan’s position was higher than Shen Shang’s.

The immortals fought and evaded Spectral Soul’s attacks.

Another head grew on Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

This was because Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, Paradise Earth, and Fang Yuan’s joint attacks had cleaved one of his heads into two.

However, the halved head split, one turning into two, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable gained another head.

Not only the head, no matter how many of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s arms were destroyed, they quickly grew again.

His arms were increasing in number, becoming even more sturdy and strong.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s strength was still continuing to grow!

The fiercer Fang Yuan’s group counterattacked, the faster the speed of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s growth.

Nurturing strength through battle!

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was already a special venerable, but he could still grow. Compared to the full strength he used before, his strength had clearly risen a lot.

The immortals were not able to estimate his limits, which firmed up their decision to leave.

It was too disadvantageous to fight Spectral Soul Demon Venerable inside the Door of Life and Death.

There were endless soul beasts, there was no use no matter how many were killed.

All kinds of soul path killer moves covered the world, forcing the immortals to defend with all their strength and concentration.

“Hmm?” Fang Yuan suddenly showed a peculiar expression.

This change in expression immediately attracted the gazes of the immortals.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun asked with hope: “Fang Yuan, you made some progress?”

Fang Yuan nodded before shaking his head: “Yes, there is progress, but it is not the road of life. Let me try this!”

The moment he said this, Fang Yuan’s aura turned eerie and dark.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture, Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley started buzzing and shaking slightly as they resonated with each other, emitting an increasingly bright radiance.

After the preparation was complete, Fang Yuan’s aura became restrained. He pushed his palm, from which a lump in the form of a grey-white square seal flew out.

The square seal’s speed was slow, but wherever it passed by, all the souls disintegrated into ashes.

A large area of the soul beast army was immediately cleared up, even immemorial soul beasts did not have a trace of resistance against this grey-white square seal, they were thinner than even paper!

The vast soul river that had been shrouding the sky also crumbled apart.

Most of the soul path killer moves were greatly suppressed and weakened in front of this grey-white square seal.

The immortals surrounding Fang Yuan were also terrified, a bone-chilling cold feeling spread from the depths of their soul.

The whole battlefield was silent, even Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s breath turned rough when he guarded against this square seal.

Since the battle started, this was the first time he was breathing roughly and stopped his tsunami-like attacks!

Immortal killer move — Dang Hun Luo Po Seal!

“Strong… too strong…” Shen Shang was shaken.

Even Paradise Earth’s eyes opened wide, turning speechless!

“This move is terrifying, it can be considered as soul path’s nemesis!” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was stunned for a bit before complimenting. He saw the grey-white seal rise up, a hundred of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s giant arms that were in its path were destroyed.

Even though the grey-white square seal was finally destroyed, the areas where Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s hundred or so giant arms were destroyed still remained empty for a while as if the regenerative ability was exhausted.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s unforeseen disaster killer move was similar to Dang Hun Luo Po Seal, but these soul beasts could still resist unforeseen disaster killer move for a while. However, against Dang Hun Luo Po Seal, they had no ability to resist.

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh: “I am ashamed, I did not manage to deduce the road of life, but gained this instead.”

“This move is called Dang Hun Luo Po seal, it uses the two sacred lands as the cores, its foundation is the Luo Po seal I created before.”

“Spectral Soul had once said that Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley were sacred lands for soul cultivation. My killer move was developed from the foundation of soul path and suppresses it fundamentally. It is a pity that I only have the two sacred lands, if I had Pacifying Soul Lake as well, I might be able to restrain all soul path methods completely.”

Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s eyelids twitched, from Fang Yuan’s tone, it seemed he was still not satisfied with this killer move?

“Great!” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun praised again, encouraging, “Fang Yuan has already combined the two obstacles now, if you can add in Reverse Flow River as well, you should be able to deduce the road of life.”

Zhan Bu Du gave another suggestion while pointing towards a direction: “No, from what I see, as long as we put this move to good use, with us supporting my main body, there is a huge chance of killing Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. Take a look!”

Following Zhan Bu Du’s finger, the immortals immediately discovered: It was deathly silent in the areas destroyed by Dang Hun Luo Po Seal, they did not restore quickly like before.

As for Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, although the hundred or so giant arms destroyed were regenerating, the speed was very slow.

Dang Hun Luo Po Seal was a pure soul path killer move, it was amplified in the Door of Life and Death. The soul path dao marks that this move left behind were like the winds of Luo Po Valley and the vibration force of Dang Hun Mountain, they made it difficult for soul beasts to condense into being.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun frowned, analyzing: “Although Spectral Soul Demon Venerable is a Dao Lord and can control the soul path dao marks here to amplify himself while suppressing Fang Yuan’s Dang Hun Luo Po seal, his state of mind is not clear, he only has a Dao Lord’s instincts, so Dang Hun Luo Po seal can also receive amplification here!”

The immortals’ eyes shined as they saw a new possibility —

Killing Spectral Soul?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2198: Star Constellation Versus Giant Sun

Thoughts began to surge rapidly in the immortals’ minds!

Dang Hun Luo Po Seal was truly amazing, it was a killer weapon against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, who had lost his sanity.

Zhan Bu Du was correct. In the current situation, there was indeed a possibility of relying on Dang Hun Luo Po Seal to kill Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

“Barring unexpected surprises, it is feasible indeed...”

“It will be very difficult to find an escape route under Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s crazed attacks. However, directly eliminating Spectral Soul Demon Venerable is also an option!”

“This place is controlled by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, there is small hope of finding a way out. But going against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and killing him will definitely be a life and death battle!”

They were all speculating.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s expression sank: “The fact is, don’t we need to step past the obstacle, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, to leave the Door of Life and Death? Even if we shake him off and leave the Door of Life and Death, what if he chases us? At that time, we will have to deal with both Star Constellation and Spectral Soul! It is better to use this chance when Star Constellation Immortal Venerable is busy with infiltrating the Crazed Demon formation to kill Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!”

The immortals’ minds jolted.

“Indeed.” Lu Wei Yin mumbled, “We will need to go against Heavenly Court to fight for the eternal life research results. If we can kill Spectral Soul Demon Venerable now, Heavenly Court’s threat will immediately be halved.”

“Hmph!” Zhan Bu Du snorted coldly, “What are you still hesitating for? Everyone, the longer we delay, the deeper Star Constellation’s infiltration becomes, she will be closer to the eternal life research results. Regardless of which plan we choose, we need to decide now.”

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, however, frowned, saying in a heavy tone: “It is not that simple, Fang Yuan. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable is the number one expert in wisdom path, will she leave behind such an obvious loophole? Right now, I am worried that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s control over Spectral Soul Demon Venerable has a time limit. Once the time limit is up, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable might get out of this predicament by himself. At that time, we will have Spectral Soul Demon Venerable as an ally.”

“If we really attack Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, whether we win or Spectral Soul Demon Venerable wins, even if it is a draw, both sides will be injured, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable will still be the biggest winner.”

The immortals were silent.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun made sense, since this was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, there was no such thing as overestimating her planning.

“Giant Sun, when do you think Spectral Soul Demon Venerable will leave the control and gain his rationality?” Fang Yuan asked with a sharp gaze, “Let’s take your speculation a step further. Suppose Star Constellation Immortal Venerable intentionally left this loophole and lured us into thinking this way, in fact, even if Star Constellation can only control Spectral Soul Demon for some time, if she were to obtain the eternal life research results during this time, what do we do?”

“Then, Fang Yuan, you are intent on fighting to the death? Under this situation?” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun fixed his gaze on Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not yield, matching his gaze.

The atmosphere between the immortals suddenly became tense.

Right at this time, Shen Shang shouted: “I succeeded, I succeeded. My killer move is complete!”

Paradise Earth said with a heavy voice: “Shen Shang, what are your chances?”

“Eighty percent!” Shen Shang was excited, “This move was incomplete before as it lacked heaven path results. But the lacking part is not the crucial core. My intuition is telling me strongly that this move has an eighty percent success rate. There is still room for improvement, but it is already complete now and can be used.”

Fang Yuan and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun retracted their gazes.

Fang Yuan said: “Then, let’s protect Shen Shang while he attempts it.”

Previously, Fang Yuan and the rest succeeded in protecting Paradise Earth. With Dang Hun Luo Po Seal, there was no problem in protecting Shen Shang.

Immortal killer move — Heaven Always Leaves A Way Out For People!

After a while, amidst the tidal wave-like offense of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, Shen Shang activated the killer move, creating a narrow path.

The path was long and winding, it could not compare to luck changing golden light path. But it pierced through the Door of Life and Death, the immortals even saw the vague scene of the outside world at the end of the path.

The immortals were surprised and joyous.

Shen Shang laughed heartily, calling out with his arms raised: “It succeeded.”

Paradise Earth smiled: “I was right about you.”

“Hundreds of years eastern immortal leader, with half of a venerable’s talent, your reputation matches your abilities indeed.” Qi Sea Ancestor cupped his fists.

“We all owe you a favor for getting out of this predicament.” Demon Immortal Qi Jue did not stint on praising.

“Let’s go.” Zhan Bu Du still took the lead, he was very suitable in opening up a path.

The immortals did not have any hesitation, they protected each other as they stepped on the narrow path.

Shen Shang’s killer move was unique, even the Door of Life and Death could not stop these Gu Immortals from escaping successfully.

When the immortals got out of the Door of Life and Death, they prepared for a fight.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s mad roars came from the Door of Life and Death, the whole giant door shook constantly.

But in the end, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable did not step out of the Door of Life and Death!

“So it was like this, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable is not able to exit the Door of Life and Death for some reason.”

“No wonder Star Constellation Immortal Venerable lured us inside.”

“Maybe Spectral Soul Demon Venerable can come out, but Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s method of control is most effective inside the Door of Life and Death.”

The Gu Immortals let out sighs of relief as they made guesses.

“Quick, let’s go to the Crazed Demon formation. So much time has passed, who knows how much progress Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has made?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue reminded.

Before the immortals left, they used their methods to try to destroy the immortal graveyard.

However, the killer moves were all absorbed by the Door of Life and Death.

“No use. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s arrangements are exquisite, this immortal graveyard is closely connected with the Door of Life and Death. If we want to destroy the immortal graveyard, we need to destroy the Door of Life and Death first.” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun sighed and left.

It was because they saw through this, he and Fang Yuan had chosen to invade the Door of Life and Death.

Naturally, there were also many other reasons.

“This method can be broken, and we can separate the immortal graveyard from the Door of Life and Death. But we don’t have time. Let’s go, onwards to the Crazed Demon formation!” Fang Yuan also turned around and left.

The immortals did not delay as they followed closely behind.

After the destruction of Primordial Domain, the eighth and ninth layer could be easily traveled to and fro.

When Fang Yuan, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, and the rest once again arrived before the Crazed Demon formation, only thirty percent of this formation remained.

A large number of truthful floating ice pieces were already melted, the remaining truthful floating ice pieces had expanded several times their previous size.

Bam.

Right at this time, a truthful floating ice piece suddenly detonated, turning into countless ice fragments.

Most of the ice fragments dissipated on the spot, and a small portion floated towards the formation, joining other truthful floating ice pieces.

“In this battle, Primordial Domain was lost, Giant Sun, Star Constellation, and even Spectral Soul have already become supreme grandmasters. If these eternal life research results derived by the Crazed Demon formation for over a million years are also seized by these people, that would truly be a crushing defeat!”

“If I cannot compete for it, I might have to destroy the final truthful floating ice piece and let no one gain anything.”

Fang Yuan’s gaze was icy as he charged towards the formation.

The other Gu Immortals also charged forward.

This group contained the strongest people of the current world; Fang Yuan, Giant Sun, Paradise Earth, Qi Sea, Zhan Bu Du, Shen Shang, Qi Jue, and Lu Wei Yin. This lineup was truly horrifying and suffocating.

“Terrifying!” Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s face was pale, he felt the intense killing intent even inside Demon Judgment Board.

“Don’t even think of it!” Even under the huge pressure, Heavenly Court Gu Immortals still walked forward.

It was Duke Mei!

Not only Duke Mei, Duke Tong, Golden Hooped Great Immortal, and others moved forward to block the path.

“Get lost!” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun shouted coldly. Golden light bloomed, turning into a giant palm that sent several people flying.

Hu Land appeared above Qi Sea Ancestor, qi waves surged and turned into a qi wall that blocked Ruan Dan and Fairy Maiden Soul.

Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch attacked while riding on Shabi Ninety-five, Shen Shang and Demon Immortal Qi Jue were stopped by the killer move, their momentum stopping immediately.

“Damn it!” Demon Immortal Qi Jue furiously activated the killer move Xi Xi, suppressing Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch.

Shen Shang attacked in coordination with a cold expression.

Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch held on for a few breaths of time before he was killed by Qi Jue and Shen Shang. Shabi Ninety-five was also hacked into two, dying on the spot!

Although Heavenly Court’s members were strong, they were too weak in front of Fang Yuan’s group, of which the weakest was still at pseudo venerable level.

Moreover, they did not have the help of immortal formations or Immortal Gu Houses in this fight, they were using their lives to delay the enemies.

In just a short while, Heavenly Court’s side suffered huge casualties.

However, they also achieved their goal; Fang Yuan’s group’s momentum slowed down.

“Heavenly Court has the Door of Life and Death and the immortal graveyard, so what if these Gu Immortals died? They will revive soon without any loss to their battle strength.”

“If we want to fight our way into the formation, we need to control a part of it.”

Lu Wei Yin and Zhan Bu Du called out.

Starlight appeared, before Lu Wei Yin and Zhan Bu Du could react, they were sent flying by the starlight.

Starlight specks shone as Star Constellation Immortal Venerable revealed herself. She looked around and sighed: “You are all too anxious, Crazed Demon formation’s derivations are at the final juncture, you cannot act recklessly. What will we do if Limitless’ painstaking efforts of over a million years are destroyed?”

Fang Yuan’s expression was cold, while Immortal Zombie Giant Sun smiled and said with his gaze fixed on Star Constellation Immortal Venerable: “Since that is the case, I might as well wait for them. But we cannot waste time now. Star Constellation, let us settle this once and for all!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s gaze lingered: “I would like to see your skills too. Please go ahead and make your move.”

The moment she finished speaking, the void fluctuated, stardust flew, creating vertical and horizontal starry paths, forming a grand chessboard.

At the center of the chessboard was the Crazed Demon formation, while Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan, Longevity Heaven, and other Gu Immortals were all inside the chessboard.

“Star Constellation Chessboard!” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s eyes shone sharply.

Paradise Earth smiled as he came to realization: “So Star Constellation Chessboard was an Immortal Gu House as well as an immortal formation. But there are no records of this transformation.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable answered Paradise Earth: “This was modified by me after I regained my Dao Lord status. Please do critique it.”

Qi Sea Ancestor attacked directly without waiting for her to finish speaking.

Qi surged and shook the surroundings.

For a moment, starry paths vanished and stardust was swept away.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable threw down a chess piece.

The chess piece turned into Nine Spiritual Fairy in midair. Nine Spiritual Fairy had already activated her transformation path killer move to turn into a kingfisher, she shot towards Qi Sea Ancestor with an astonishing speed.

Qi Sea Ancestor fought with her. After three to four rounds, there was still no clear victor.

Nine Spiritual Fairy was clearly strengthened by the formation.

After five to six rounds, Nine Spiritual Fairy had already transformed three times, but was starting to fall into danger.

But right at this time, chess pieces fell down; Wan Zi Hong, Bai Cang Shui, Jun Shen Guang, Zhou Xiong Xin, and other immortals attacked. The battlefield instantly turned chaotic.

After just a few rounds, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun saw the ingenuity behind this.

These Heavenly Court members were formation cores of Star Constellation Chessboard Formation. Under Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s control, their coordination was extremely good.

As more and more Gu Immortals entered the battle, the situation became increasingly chaotic, and Heavenly Court’s advantage got bigger.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun snorted coldly, he broke free from the chaotic battlefield and charged directly towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not evade this time, she met Immortal Zombie Giant Sun head on.

A fight between two venerables could be said to be unprecedented!

Starlight flickered strongly, golden light spread, the whole battlefield was dyed golden and blue.

The aftermath of the two venerables’ fight created a vast qi tide that was much worse than the past qi tides.

On one end, there was a wisdom path supreme grandmaster, the second generation Immortal King of Heavenly Court, an unmatched strategist with dazzling achievements. On the other end, there was the number one person in luck path who changed the luck of countless lives, he controlled Northern Plains and spread his bloodline widely.

They were evenly matched!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2199: Star Constellation’s Difficulty

All kinds of killer moves and methods were activated endlessly by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun.

Some killer moves were domineering, spanning across heaven and earth. Some methods were exquisite and dazzling, splitting the universe.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was like a golden meteor, charging forward bravely.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s body flickered as she moved around in Star Constellation Chessboard Formation, leaving behind starlight shadows that attacked Immortal Zombie Giant Sun.

Moreover, even when fighting, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was still controlling Star Constellation Chessboard Formation to help Heavenly Court members.

Prince Feng Xian used phoenix flames, Bai Cang Shui let out a large blue river, flower petals rained down below Wan Zi Hong... All kinds of killer moves were used repeatedly, and under Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s support, the conflicts between them were greatly reduced, forming waves of attacks that followed one after the other with short gaps between each other. Lu Wei Yin and others got a feeling of Heavenly Court’s attacks being continuous and unending.

Fang Yuan frowned, commenting in his mind: “Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has astonishing wisdom path attainment, even though Immortal Zombie Giant Sun is fighting her, he is not able to force out her limits. She still has the energy to support others and control the whole battlefield.”

“So, from another angle, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun also hasn’t used his full strength?”

The two venerables were fighting, although there were huge explosions and countless methods used, their power did not go beyond Qi Sea Ancestor’s Hu elevation killer move.

Be they Star Constellation Immortal Venerable or Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, they were wary of triggering Limitless’ countermeasures.

A venerable’s foundation was unfathomable, if any one side were to trigger Limitless’ countermeasures, the other side would gain an advantage.

Naturally, the important thing was that both venerables wanted to obtain the eternal life research results!

The value of this research was enormous to the point of being inestimable.

In the deadlock between venerables, if a venerable could obtain the eternal life research results, they could likely break the balance and become the strongest among the venerables!

Even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun were coveting the eternal life research results, so they had to restrain themselves right now. If they destroyed this formation in the midst of the intense battle, that would be a huge problem.

They were not Limitless, these truthful floating ice pieces were nurtured for over a million years. If any one of them was destroyed, the venerables would not be able to substitute it.

“Since it is so....” Fang Yuan’s eyes shined brightly for a while, he suddenly commanded, “Qi Sea!”

Qi Sea Ancestor received the main body’s voice transmission, he immediately used a killer move without hesitation.

Immortal killer move — Hu Elevation!

The terrifying qi path killer move descended once again.

The immortals evaded immediately.

Even the allied group of Qi Jue and Lu Wei Yin was the same.

“Are you insane?’

“Aren’t you afraid of triggering Limitless’ retaliation again?”

“No, maybe this is Fang Yuan’s intention. Truly... amazing!”

The Gu Immortals were bewildered for a while before coming to a realization.

Lu Wei Yin’s group was joyous, while the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were worried.

Sure enough, at the next moment, chains appeared from thin air and bound Qi Sea Ancestor.

But the thing was, Qi Sea Ancestor was currently on Star Constellation Chessboard Formation.

Limitless’ countermeasures attacked Qi Sea, they naturally would not leave Star Constellation Chessboard Formation out.

Fang Yuan wanted to get the help of Limitless’ countermeasures to break Star Constellation Chessboard Formation!

But at the next moment.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable suddenly got away from Immortal Zombie Giant Sun: “Fang Yuan, your scheme is wonderful, but how could I have not prepared for such a huge flaw? Please take a look.”

The moment her words landed, starlight bloomed, many of the horizontal and vertical starry paths moved and attached on Limitless’ chains.

After a few breaths of time, Limitless’ chains were bound by starry paths and were under Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s control now.

Star Constellation Chessboard Formation was not disturbed by Limitless' countermeasures, instead, it made use of them. The strength of these chains were used to make Star Constellation Chessboard Formation even firmer.

"How could this be?!" Demon Immortal Qi Jue's expression changed.

Lu Wei Yin said through gritted teeth: "Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has prepared too well, her infiltration of Crazed Demon Cave is too deep."

This was not strange.

After all, when Crazed Demon Cave was just constructed, Limitless Demon Venerable attacked Heavenly Court and made a bet with Star Constellation's will.

That was to say, Heavenly Court had begun infiltrating Crazed Demon Cave the moment it was established.

This infiltration lasted over a million years!

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun obtained Savage Wilderness Great World, his infiltration of Crazed Demon Cave was about three hundred thousand years or so, it was not even half the time of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's infiltration.

Moreover, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable cultivated wisdom path, which excelled in infiltrating.

And Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable's Yellow Earth Great World was only established over a hundred thousand years ago.

As for Fang Yuan, he was the most miserable one.

Although he came in touch with Crazed Demon Cave about ten or so years ago, his infiltration time of the Crazed Demon formation was almost zero.

If the Door of Life and Death was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's home ground. Then Crazed Demon Cave was over fifty percent the home ground of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, while Immortal Zombie Giant Sun only had less than half the home ground advantage. Fang Yuan was like a guest, his understanding of Crazed Demon Cave mostly came from Paradise Earth's information.

Star Constellation Chessboard gained Limitless' chains, becoming even more powerful.

Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were unafraid of death, they used their lives to tie down the pseudo venerable opponents.

After all, an Immortal Venerable was helping them.

Naturally, they could not obstruct Fang Yuan's main body!

Fang Yuan's main body moved towards the sky and joined Immortal Zombie Giant Sun's and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's battle.

As for Qi Sea Ancestor, he was bound by the chains. He could not even be put back into the sovereign immortal aperture, and could only leave his protection to Zhan Bu Du and others.

"Then, let's try this move." Fang Yuan took a deep breath, his gaze shining brightly.

Immortal killer move — Five Restriction Profound Light Qi!

Five colored light qi rapidly spread from around Fang Yuan. Be they Heavenly Court Gu Immortals or Lu Wei Yin’s group, they all retreated.

They would suffer backlash every moment they fought in this five restriction profound light qi.

Five regional walls were manifesting once again through Fang Yuan’s hands!

“This move again!” Prince Feng Xian and others gritted their teeth.

This move came from Tao Zhu, it had repeatedly made things difficult for Heavenly Court during the fate war and in Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space.

Right now, it became Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s issue!

Five restriction profound light qi was spreading in Star Constellation Chessboard Formation, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable immediately felt its effects as she started suffering backlash.

Those chains of Limitless on starry paths began to shake, eager to take action.

“Five restriction profound light qi is suppressed in this formation. But it looks like Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has not been able to find a way to break it.”

“However... this method will trigger Limitless’ countermeasures.”

Fang Yuan observed carefully.

It was not strange for it to trigger Limitless’ countermeasures. Five restriction profound light qi was the nemesis of Gu formations and Immortal Gu Houses, the Crazed Demon formation was also restrained. Inside five restriction profound light qi, the Crazed Demon formation would also suffer backlash, breaking apart eventually.

Limitless’ arrangements would naturally detect this threat, so it was normal for five restriction profound light qi to trigger the countermeasures.

This was why Fang Yuan did not use five restriction profound light qi earlier.

As for the Door of Life and Death, there were too many soul path dao marks, even five restriction profound light qi would be suppressed. Moreover, even if the light qi became dense and formed five regional walls, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and the rest would also be endangered, it was not worth it.

But the current situation was different.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s methods were amazing, she actually used Star Constellation Chessboard Formation to forcibly merge Limitless’ chains. At this stage, Fang Yuan suddenly used five restriction profound light qi to oppose it!

In an instant, the amount of things Star Constellation Immortal Venerable needed to calculate increased by over ten times.

She had to deal with Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, help Heavenly Court members fight the pseudo venerables, forcibly control Limitless’ chains, and also accelerate the Crazed Demon formation to quickly produce eternal life research results.

Now, Fang Yuan activated five restriction profound light qi in Star Constellation Chessboard Formation, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had to endure the backlash as well as suppress Limitless' chains.

Fang Yuan's five restriction profound light qi was of extreme threat to the Crazed Demon formation, Limitless' chains were doing everything they could to shackle him. But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable must suppress it, if she did not suppress it and let it take effect freely, it would severely interfere and ultimately destroy Star Constellation Chessboard Formation.

Once the formation was destroyed, just these Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, even if they had the immortal graveyard, could not block the bloodthirsty pseudo venerables.

At that time, even if Star Constellation Immortal Venerable blocked Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Fang Yuan, she would not be able to guard the eternal life research results, and the pseudo venerables would gain them.

There were no two ways about it, Heavenly Court had too little manpower after all.

Even though Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had revived, her enemies were too numerous!

“Five restriction profound light qi, what an amazing move!” Shen Shang praised as he saw through the situation.

Even he felt bad for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2200: Luck Gamble!

Fang Yuan activated five restriction profound light qi which inflicted backlash to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable at every moment. But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable needed to suppress Limitless' chains and control them, she was basically protecting Fang Yuan.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable heaved a deep sigh.

Even if she was the number one person in the wisdom path, she had more problems than she could cope with.

From her point of view: Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was the strongest enemy in her life, she had to pay enough attention to him. Comparatively, Fang Yuan's threat was lower, but he could not be ignored. After all, many venerables had invested in him, even Star Costellation's will had invested in him when Spectral Soul refined sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

Fang Yuan could not be left alone, if he was allowed to act as he pleased, he would give her huge problems!

Having this understanding, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable suddenly took out Book Mountain.

A chess piece flew out, it was Zhou Xiong Xin!

Zhou Xiong Xin landed on the middle of the mountain and controlled it with all his strength.

Book Mountain let out golden light, they were actually Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s luck path killer moves.

These luck path killer moves attacked Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, stopping him temporarily.

Almost at the same time, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable attacked Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan did not activate Dang Hun Luo Po Seal.

This method was amplified by his countless dao marks, it was far stronger than Hu elevation. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could disregard the cost to retrieve Star Constellation Chessboard Formation and release Limitless’ chains.

Adding on the previous accumulated ‘hatred’ towards five restriction profound light qi, Fang Yuan would be fiercely shackled by Limitless’ chains, his situation would be even worse than Qi Sea Ancestor’s.

At that time, Fang Yuan would lose his battle strength, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could take out Star Constellation Chessboard again and make the situation greatly advantageous for Heavenly Court.

Naturally, in the process of Star Constellation Chessboard being stored and taken out, it would be damaged, and even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would suffer damage.

But how great would this damage be?

According to Fang Yuan’s estimation, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could endure it.

So, Fang Yuan did not attack, instead he retreated into the five restriction profound light qi.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled.

Fang Yuan’s action was within her expectations.

Information about Dang Hun Luo Po Seal had already been transmitted from the Door of Life and Death. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was slightly disappointed that Fang Yuan did not use this method.

But, Fang Yuan retreating into the five restriction profound light qi made it convenient for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to take her next action.

At the next moment, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gave a cry. Hundreds of vertical and horizontal starry paths twisted and turned like water waves, they quickly gathered and weaved an azure sphere, covering all the five restriction profound light qi and Fang Yuan inside.

Fang Yuan was actually sealed.

Five restriction profound light qi was still continuing to spread, but the space inside the azure sphere was vast. It would take a long time to fill it completely.

“An excellent response.” Fang Yuan praised.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used wisdom path and star path to imitate space path. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not break five restriction profound light qi, but found a way to restrain it.

This response was amazing, not only did she use Star Constellation Chessboard Formation to a whole new level, there were extraordinary methods like dao embroidery used as well.

Fang Yuan was trapped, but he was not hurried.

He waited for Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s performance.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was extremely shrewd, he definitely realized Heavenly Court’s weakness and his side’s advantage.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable took the risk to deal with Fang Yuan, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun had a good chance of success over on his end. On the contrary, if Star Constellation Immortal Venerable dealt with Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, Fang Yuan could make some arrangements. Although the strength of these cheap tricks was small, they would definitely cause great annoyance to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. If they were not resolved immediately, these cheap tricks would become the key to suppressing Heavenly Court!

Sure enough, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun shouted, a giant wave of golden light pushed Book Mountain aside as it charged towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Book Mountain was sent flying like a meteor.

Zhou Xiong Xin, who was on the mountain, was already smashed to a pulp. This was the price of forcefully controlling Book Mountain!

This rank eight expert used all his strength but only stopped Immortal Zombie Giant Sun for a few breaths of time. This was the case even when he had Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s help, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun had also restrained his strength to prevent damaging Limitless’ formation.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun managed to get some free time, he immediately began preparing a method.

This chance did not come easily. When he fought with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable earlier, they attacked constantly, he had no such chances.

However, at the next moment.

“This killer move is finally complete.” Golden Hooped Great Immortal suddenly appeared, “Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, you fooled me, I invited you to Heavenly Court as a guest, but you took the chance to make your arrangements. During the fate war, Heavenly Court headquarters was ambushed by your Longevity Heaven!”

The moment he finished speaking, Golden Hooped Great Immortal used his life and all his cultivation to activate a killer move.

The mysterious light shone down and fell on Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s head, turning into a golden hoop.

The golden hoop bound Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s forehead, causing his mind and body to turn slightly sluggish.

A female immortal appeared behind Immortal Zombie Giant Sun.

It was Qin Ding Ling!

“Giant Sun, I am repaying you for all the humiliation you have given me back then!!” Qin Ding Ling shouted, slamming her hands on Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s back.

Immortal killer move — Luck Gamble!

A black and white Gu worm resembling a die flew out of Qin Ding Ling’s phantom aperture, it rolled rapidly before coming to a stop.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun — Three!

The die Gu worm rolled once again before coming to a stop, revealing a number on its surface.

Qin Ding Ling — Five!

Bam!

In an instant, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s vast luck was transferred to Qin Ding Ling.

Qin Ding Ling’s body shook, her face reddened, and her teeth clattered together. She could only endure with all her strength and had no strength to fight for the moment.

“Back then, when I forcibly took away a portion of Crazed Demon Cave’s Thieving Heaven true inheritance, a mysterious Immortal Gu escaped, I could not catch it in time. It seems like it was obtained by you in the end.” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun came to a realization.

Qin Ding Ling perspired profusely as she took in the endless luck while replying with hatred: “To deal with you, I gave up on metal path, I sealed and buried myself deep under the earth in a metal coffin, cultivating in seclusion as I comprehended luck path. During these three hundred thousand years, this gamble Gu was attracted to me and came to the metal coffin one day. From that moment, I realized this was the backlash of you forcefully taking Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance, it is also my fortuitous encounter to take revenge. Gamble, gamble, let us gamble with our lives!”

The intense golden light around Immortal Zombie Giant Sun dimmed rapidly.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s expression turned solemn.

The foundation of his combat system was based on powerful and prosperous luck. He had all kinds of killer moves that helped him to maintain positive and powerful luck, for instance, the unforeseen disaster killer move he used in the Door of Life and Death, to extract his bad luck to deal with the enemy. Although it reduced the size of his luck, his luck path methods quickly restored it, on the whole, his luck became even better.

Once Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s positive luck was stronger than the enemy’s, his defense, offense, healing and other aspects would also rise based on the difference, always being higher than his enemy’s.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s methods were extremely powerful and exquisite. Under the support of such a combat system, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was invincible.

His luck path methods had never been spread, how could other Gu Immortals seize his luck?

Most Gu Immortals’ luck would fall to rock-bottom within ten or so rounds, while

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s strength would continue to rise.

While it looked like Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was in a stalemate with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the fact was that he had already accumulated a huge advantage in terms of luck. At the final juncture, when the Crazed Demon formation stops and the eternal life research results emerge, without Limitless’ retaliation anymore, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun could erupt with extreme strength.

But now, Qin Ding Ling dug at his foundation!

Qin Ding Ling had almost performed a miracle!

Just based on gamble Gu, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s retaliation would not be able to accomplish this.

Just Qin Ding Ling alone also could not accomplish this.

Even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s arrangements and schemes alone could not dig at Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s foundation.

But these three factors joined to achieve a miracle-like achievement!

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun immediately activated a killer move, his thoughts increased and collided rapidly: “I fell for Star Constellation’s scheme.”

“She had already prepared this trump card to deal with me, but just did not have a chance before.”

“When Fang Yuan used five restriction profound light qi, she saw the chance.”

“She intentionally left to deal with Fang Yuan, even throwing out Book Mountain, it was just to show me weakness.”

“She succeeded after all!”

Book Mountain was a secluded domain of heaven and earth, but in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s eyes, it was only a chess piece that could be casually thrown.

In fact, many Heavenly Court members on Star Constellation Chessboard Formation were all Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s chess pieces.

Even Fang Yuan was used by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to lure Immortal Zombie Giant Sun!

Just like how Immortal Zombie Giant Sun took Heavenly Court as his enemy, Heavenly Court also considered Longevity Heaven and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun as an obstacle.

Fang Yuan?

Although Fang Yuan was very strong, even destroying fate Gu, he was selected by heaven’s will and received the help of venerables. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used Fang Yuan, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable also made arrangements for Fang Yuan...

Fang Yuan was a chess piece.

Even if Fang Yuan’s ambition was huge, wanting to become a refinement path venerable, turning into a player from a chess piece, Primordial Domain was already destroyed, how could he become refinement path Demon Venerable?

If he could not become venerable, even if he had more dao marks, he would only be a pseudo venerable.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had already returned to being Dao Lords!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable left Fang Yuan and returned to fight Immortal Zombie Giant Sun.

“Go.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable pointed at Qin Ding Ling, Star Constellation Chessboard Formation activated, the chess piece Qin Ding Ling immediately disappeared on the spot and appeared at the edge of the battlefield.

The killer move luck gamble was already activated, Qin Ding Ling had completed this crucial part!

Luck gamble!

After Qin Ding Ling recovered, she activated the killer move again.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun — Three!

Qin Ding Ling — Two!

Boom...

At this time, Qin Ding Ling’s luck surged out and transferred back to Immortal Zombie Giant Sun.

Luck gamble killer move’s power was like this, it could not be controlled by people. The numbers determined victory or defeat, but the outcome was determined randomly, even Qin Ding Ling, who was the user could not influence it.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2201: Damn You, Fang Yuan!

Back then, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had expended his own theft path dao marks to refine this gamble Gu!

Gamble Gu gave random results that could not be influenced by anyone.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was special, he was an otherworldly demon who possessed otherworldly dao marks. Thieving Heaven’s space was founded on the basis of his otherworldly dao marks. Meanwhile, gamble Gu was refined with his otherworldly theft path dao marks.

Gamble Gu did not have any offensive power by itself, it was powerless no matter what the result was. But the luck gamble killer move that used it as the core was extremely dangerous.

Whether it succeeded or failed, there was no way to predict it.

But it was because of this characteristic, even Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s luck could not interfere with it.

The probability of winning the luck gamble was equal for both Immortal Zombie

Giant Sun and Qin Ding Ling.

Qin Ding Ling won the previous time, now, it was Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s win.

However, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun did not feel any joy.

Because whether she lost or won, Qin Ding Ling would only profit.

The reason?

It was due to the profundity of luck path.

Luck was essentially categorized into two types: good luck and bad luck. The size of luck varied from person to person; in general, the higher the cultivation, the larger the luck.

Comparing Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s and Qin Ding Ling’s luck.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s luck was extremely vast, it was at Dao Lord level. There was little bad luck, while good luck occupied the majority of it.

And Qin Ding Ling?

Qin Ding Ling’s luck was far smaller than Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s. Bad luck occupied most of it, while good luck was little.

Qin Ding Ling was only a rank eight expert, her luck would naturally be smaller than Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s.

Luck was a variable! She was against a powerful enemy like Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, with the luck of all living beings influencing each other, even if she had good luck, it would be affected and turned into bad luck.

Thus, firstly, Qin Ding Ling’s luck was far smaller than her opponent’s. She was basically gambling with a smaller chip, this was a huge advantage in itself.

Secondly, Qin Ding Ling had a lot of bad luck, when it was transferred to Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, it would contaminate his luck as well.

The basis of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s combat system was positive and powerful luck. This had two crucial points, one was he needed to have vast luck, the other was that his luck needed to be positive, which meant the more good luck he had, the better.

If Qin Ding Ling won more and lost less in the luck gamble, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s luck would greatly decrease. If Qin Ding Ling won less and lost more, even though Immortal Zombie Giant Sun would obtain her luck, it would mostly contain bad luck.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun fell into a dilemma.

He had many methods to transform his bad luck into good luck. But this process would spend immortal essence and mental energy, he would be sacrificing many opportunities when he battled Star Constellation Immortal Venerable again.

Even worse was that once he turned his bad luck into good luck, and he lost to Qin Ding Ling in the next luck gamble, what would he do?

Would he not be reinforcing the enemy?

Bam bam bam...

There was a chain of self-detonations, over thirty truthful floating ice pieces were destroyed.

There was only ten percent or so remaining of the Crazed Demon formation!

The Crazed Demon formation’s power continued to weaken, there was also only about forty percent remaining of the great world in the eighth layer. Everything was used to nurture the central truthful floating ice piece.

The three Crazed Demon Eccentrics continued to carve the truthful floating ice, their expressions becoming fanatic.

The strength of Limitless’ countermeasures originated from the Crazed Demon formation. If not for this, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable or Immortal Zombie Giant Sun would have already destroyed the source of Limitless’ countermeasures.

Back then, Limitless Demon Venerable had deliberately arranged it as one whole to make others hold themselves back if they wanted to obtain eternal life research results. They had to accept the threat and be indistinctly restricted by the countermeasures.

As the Crazed Demon formation continued to disappear, the upper limits of strength in the Gu Immortals’ fight continued to rise.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun used more powerful methods.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable similarly raised the strength of her skills.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was being hindered by Qin Ding Ling, he unavoidably fell into a disadvantage.

“We must kill Qin Ding Ling!” This became a general consensus.

Not only Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, other pseudo venerables also attacked.

But this was Star Constellation Chessboard Formation, since Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s painstaking scheme against Immortal Zombie Giant Sun succeeded, how could she let Qin Ding Ling be attacked easily?

“The situation is not good, we need to reinforce Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!”

“If we want to support Giant Sun, we need to kill Qin Ding Ling. At worst, we need to disturb and break her killer move.”

“But Star Constellation Chessboard Formation can transfer her anywhere instantly, so we still need to destroy this formation first!”

After back and forth discussions, it still returned to the starting point.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Stars shot forward one after the other, destroying the protective golden light, and forcing Immortal Zombie Giant Sun to retreat.

Guh.

He coughed out cold, dark corpse blood. Starlight shone on his chest, no matter how his golden light spread, the starlight was still shining brightly. His injuries were very heavy!

Because of Qin Ding Ling impeding him, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s battle strength had fallen sharply. He was actually showing signs of defeat in the battle with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

Looking at Immortal Zombie Giant Sun coughing blood, the expressions of Lu Wei Yin and the others changed.

Was Immortal Zombie Giant Sun going to lose in the battle of two venerables?

The previous battle situation already proved that Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was the strongest battle strength in the allied forces, second was Gu Yue Fang Yuan. If Immortal Zombie Giant Sun were to be defeated, that would mean the allied forces lost!

However, no matter how unwilling Lu Wei Yin and the rest were, they were aware that it was normal for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to have such an advantage.

There were many factors that influenced a fight between Gu Immortals.

One was cultivation level and number of dao marks. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun were equal in this.

Second was immortal essence and Immortal Gu. Both sides were about the same.

Third was battle experience. It was a draw between Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun.

Fourth was external environment, whether it could be used or not. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable exceeded Immortal Zombie Giant Sun in this aspect, at least, it was true for the moment.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun used Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace, Calamity Luck Altar, and Savage Wilderness Great World. He then allied with Fang Yuan, deliberately destroyed Primordial Domain, then allied with Fang Yuan again to explore the Crazed Demon formation and the Door of Life and Death.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable fought many battles using the strength of Book Mountain, Primordial Domain, Crazed Demon formation, immortal graveyard, Door of Life and Death, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, Green Lotus Great World, Star Constellation Chessboard, and Limitless’ countermeasures.

Fifth were combat methods. Gu formations, battlefield killer moves, Gu houses, and all kinds of killer moves. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Immortal Zombie Giant Sun were both excellent beyond doubt in this aspect, it was hard to tell who was better.

Sixth was combat system.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s combat system contained extremely powerful potential for later, but it was miraculously cracked by Qin Ding Ling.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also possessed an exceptional combat system which she had been using all along.

This combat system was the combined combat systems of Ming Hao, Yu Xiu, and Feng Ya.

In the offensive aspect, the main method was Fairy Ming Hao’s flying star killer move.

Wisdom path Gu Immortals often used exquisite killer moves because of the superiority of their path. These killer moves usually contained many Gu worms and had complicated procedures for activation. This was why the calculation ability of wisdom path Gu Immortals was extraordinary, only then could they control their killer moves properly.

But in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s combat system, the flying star method was almost the only method in the offensive aspect, it could be said to be extremely lacking and unvaried!

Was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable intentionally throwing away the obvious advantage of wisdom path?

That was not the case.

First of all, the killer move flying star looked simple but that was not true. If it was used repeatedly one after the other, every move would be a consecutive move. Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was hit by so many stars that by now, the injuries caused by the stars had reached the point of inflicting serious injuries.

Secondly, the deficiency in the offensive aspect was exactly Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s ingenuity.

Looking at the whole combat system, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable took out the calculation requirement from the offense aspect and transferred it onto herself, letting her have an immense grasp over the battle situation at all times!

It was because of this grasp over the situation that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could use all the surrounding resources to the limit, even as the weak side, she could win against the strong, against the strong alliance army that had high numbers, she actually led Heavenly Court to the height of victory.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s combat system could use the environment to suppress enemies and use emotions to affect them. Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was one of the victims.

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable were equal in many aspects. However, in this deadlock, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s combat system was obstructed, while Star Constellation Immortal Venerable continued to maintain her combat system and her advantages.

These advantages were insignificant alone, but they stacked together until Immortal Zombie Giant Sun fell into the danger of losing!

“Fang Yuan, it is time to stake our lives and fight, what are you still hesitating for?!” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun suddenly shot towards the azure sphere.

Luck path killer moves erupted like a rainstorm, attempting to break the sphere and release Fang Yuan.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was already guarded against this. She immediately attacked, star shadows flickered, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun suffered a heavy attack again, his killer move was also destroyed halfway.

“We must help Fang Yuan, he will reinforce Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.” Lu Wei Yin called out.

Paradise Earth sighed: “Sigh, if my tomb had not been destroyed, I would have venerable cultivation level now and be able to resolve this predicament.”

“These damned fodder!” Zhan Bu Du waved his punch, killing another Heavenly

Court member. However, these Heavenly Court Gu Immortals would revive shortly afterwards, there was no way to kill them completely.

What’s more, there was still Qi Sea Ancestor behind Zhan Bu Du.

Half of the Limitless’ chains on Qi Sea Ancestor had already disappeared.

On one hand, other Gu Immortals were helping him, on the other hand, the Crazed Demon formation itself was shrinking. The upper limit of strength in the Gu Immortals’ fights was continuously increasing, there was now a much higher tolerance for the killer move Hu elevation.

However, Qi Sea Ancestor still did not have the strength to protect himself, he required Zhan Bu Du’s constant protection.

“Everyone, protect me!” Paradise Earth shouted, retreating to the center of the group.

The other immortals protected him and gave Paradise Earth precious time to use his killer move.

Heaven path killer move — Heavenly Summary Earthly Norm.

A mysterious aura spread from his body and charged towards the azure sphere like an air wave.

This killer move was extremely profound, it could restore heaven and earth to its normal state, it was the nemesis of battlefield killer moves.

It was perfect to break the encirclement!

The azure sphere was already enduring the pressure from Fang Yuan, now that the killer move heavenly summary earthly norm hit, it immediately collapsed.

Fang Yuan gave a loud shout, as he flew out like a tiger let out of its cage.

“Paradise Earth, I hope you can lend me a hand again!” Fang Yuan sent out a multi-colored rainbow, taking Paradise Earth as he charged towards Qin Ding Ling!

Heaven path killer move — Heavenly Summary Earthly Norm!

Paradise Earth took in a deep breath, after using the killer move, his orifices started bleeding, his face became pale as paper.

Formless air currents moved forward, everywhere they went, starry paths broke down, turning into nothingness.

Without the starry paths, it was difficult for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to move Qin Ding Ling.

Her eyes flickered with cold light, she immediately gave up on rescuing Qin Ding Ling and fiercely attacked Immortal Zombie Giant Sun instead.

“Damn you, Fang Yuan!” Immortal Zombie Giant Sun roared, his chest was torn from the attack and his soul was heavily injured.

At this time, Qin Ding Ling was killed by Fang Yuan.

However, Immortal Zombie Giant Sun could not turn the situation around. Thousands of stardust shot towards him, he destroyed most of them but several hundreds still struck his body.

So much starlight accumulated in Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s injuries that they were already intense like fire!

Immortal Zombie Giant Sun was close to death.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable continued to attack him ruthlessly.

The final fatal attack!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2202: Chu Du’s Danger

Northern Plains.

Chu tribe headquarters.

“First supreme elder is still in closed cultivation? Today is the day of the battle.” Chou Lao Wu continued to rub his hands together. He was thin with a slightly humped back, his naturally sad face looked even more depressed right now.

“Relax, since first supreme elder agreed to Black Moon’s challenge, why would he retreat just before the fight? We just need to wait patiently.” Hao Zhen was leaning on a wall with arms crossed in front of him, he showed a composed expression.

He was a middle aged bearded man, he was tall and muscular. He and Chou Lao Wu were good friends, the two could activate a signature killer move called wind thunder roar together.

Because of this, Chou Lao Wu and Hao Zhen were called the wind and lightning demons. After siding with Chu Du, they became second only to Chu Du as the strongest battle strength of Chu tribe!

“Actually, avoiding the battle is also an option.” In another direction, Immortal Wang suddenly said softly.

He had a short stature, he had a red nose and small triangular eyes, he was a transformation path Gu Immortal who was proficient in transforming into dog breeds.

“What did you say?!” Hao Zhen was infuriated, he quickly approached Immortal Wang, staring at him with furious eyes, “Is first supreme elder someone who avoids a battle? He is the mighty Chu Du, are you trying to defame first supreme elder?”

Hao Zhen held Immortal Wang by his shirt and raised him to the air.

Immortal Wang was immediately furious, shouting: “Let go! You brute, if you don’t let go, don’t blame me for attacking you!”

Seeing the situation getting out of hand, Chou Lao Wu quickly pulled Hao Zhen away, while Li Si Chun held Immortal Wang.

Li Si Chun had a square face with thick eyebrows and huge eyes, his nose bridge was very tall, his chest had thick black hair that was exposed, he was a man but he wore a flowery skirt.

He tapped his fingers together and said in a feminine voice :”Come on, don’t argue, okay? I am already agitated, if we have an internal fight now, then our Chu tribe will really face a crisis.”

Immortal Wang snorted coldly, flinging away Li Si Chun’s hand: “This is Chu tribe’s crisis. We should deal with it cautiously! If first supreme elder was still a lone force, it would not matter to us if he battled or not. But he is not, he is our Chu tribe’s first supreme elder. Do you know what the consequences will be if he loses? You brute!”

Hao Zhen snorted, not saying a word.

Because he knew Immortal Wang was not wrong.

Chu Du established a sect called Chu Sect. He used his connections and methods to invite many immortals to go against Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, but he allied with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu later and forced these Gu Immortals into joining him to form Chu Sect.

His actions turned the situation around.

After establishing Chu Sect, Chu Du used his charisma and tricks to subdue the people’s hearts.

But good times did not last long. Under the pressure of Longevity Heaven and the Huang Jin tribes, Chu Du was forced to change Chu Sect into Chu tribe.

Thus, Chu Du took in his trained strength path Gu Immortals as his adopted children, removing the sect system and using the tribe system to rule.

Even so, Chu tribe was still being doubted and pressured because Chu Du had no children of his own.

Thereupon, Chu Du took the initiative to participate in the fate war, this decision helped to stabilize Chu tribe’s status.

The situation changed again now.

Fate Gu was destroyed, the rumors of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s revival kept on growing larger. Longevity Heaven sent a command to Northern Plains’ righteous path to subdue lone and demonic immortals, attempting to unite Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world.

Lone and demonic immortals were extremely resistant towards this, they felt disgusted towards the Huang Jin tribes.

Because of this, Bai Zu tribe and Chu tribe became much more attractive to join.

Many of the lone and demonic immortals were solitary. They would rather choose to join Chu tribe and Bai Zu tribe than join the Huang Jin tribes.

Chu Du was of lone cultivator origin, Bai Zu tribe’s Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was too.

These two tribes benefited from this and expanded quite a lot.

As a result, they were being watched secretly by Longevity Heaven.

“Sigh, where did this Fairy Black Moon come from? Her origin is mysterious, it is like she came out of a rock, we cannot investigate her background at all.”

“Northern Plains is such a large region, there are many hidden experts, what is so strange about Fairy Black Moon? But she actually challenged first supreme elder, she is just asking for humiliation!”

“Not necessarily. Objectively speaking, this person is extremely strong. After she appeared, she continuously challenged many experts, but has yet to face a defeat. In the most recent challenge, she even defeated Liu Chang. Fairy Black Moon revealed new methods in almost every battle. Her totem killer move is her trump card, and she is even rumored to be an inheritor of Reckless Savage.”

Chou Lao Wu and the group discussed.

Currently, Hei Lou Lan had a huge reputation, she won repeatedly, displaying peak rank seven battle strength that was comparable to rank eight strength! And also because of the rumors of being Reckless Savage’s inheritor, her overall prestige suppressed Chu Du.

“I can already see Fairy Black Moon’s aims. She has huge ambitions, she gathered so many people around her, challenging people to gain reputation. Right now, she has already become a symbol and banner of the demonic path and lone cultivators. It was an inevitable matter for her to challenge Lord Chu Du. Even if she did not challenge him now, she would have to challenge sooner or later. Because once she wins, her reputation will double at least, and she will have authority to lead Northern Plains’ lone and demonic immortals!” Hao Zhen analyzed.

Under the pressure, lone and demonic immortals who were willing to surrender to the righteous path had already surrendered.

The remaining ones were recalcitrants.

And these recalcitrants had a few tricks up their sleeves. After all, without strength, they had no qualifications to be stubborn.

And to these recalcitrants, Chu Du, who had established a righteous path tribe and worked with the Huang Jin tribes, even having participated in the fate war, was clearly Longevity Heaven’s dog. To them, he was even more hateful than the Huang Jin tribes.

If Fairy Black Moon defeated Chu Du, she would definitely win their hearts. Her gains would no doubt be much more remarkable than when she defeated Liu Chang.

On the contrary, Chu tribe was already being suppressed by Longevity Heaven, it had to fully rely on Chu Du.

Chu tribe was not tied together using blood relationship, the master-disciple system also could not be openly established. The tribe was mostly maintained by Chu Du’s charisma alone.

Chu Du was the spiritual banner of Chu tribe, should this banner collapse, Chu tribe would definitely suffer heavily. Their progress would be severely obstructed, they would lose their grasp of the people’s hearts, they would start to decline rapidly.

People like Chou Lao Wu were worried. Right now, they had already become Chu tribe’s core members who enjoyed the benefits.

They did not want Chu tribe to decline.

“Sigh, if we could ask for darling, Lord Fang Yuan’s help, that would be great.” Li Si Chun sighed.

Immortal Wang shook his head: “No, that is too risky. Lord Fang Yuan’s demonic might is indeed awe-inspiring, maybe even Longevity Heaven will show restraint.

But what if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable revives in the future? Although Fang Yuan is strong, he is not a match for a venerable. If we do this, it will just be a short term pleasure. But it is actually a stupid way to isolate ourselves from Northern Plains' righteous path."

"Keep quiet. They are here." Chou Lao Wu suddenly reminded.

More than ten Gu Immortals came this time.

Half were Chu Du's adopted sons, they cultivated strength path and had ordinary cultivation level.

The rest were those lone and demonic immortals that Chu tribe had recruited recently.

Although their strength was higher than the adopted sons, their loyalty was unable to be verified for the moment, so it was rather troublesome to use them.

"External elders, where is lord father?"

"First supreme elder?"

"It is already the appointed time, why has first supreme elder not appeared yet?"

These people asked all kinds of questions.

"Who allowed you to come?" Hao Zhen walked forward, Chou Lao Wu, Immortal Wang, and Li Si Chun stood behind him, coldly watching these newcomers.

At this moment, the four immortals restrained their internal conflict and stood up as one.

"External elders, please don't blame us, we are really concerned about our adopted father's safety."

"Yes, since we joined Chu tribe, Lord Chu Du is our leader. Is it wrong for us to feel concerned?"

It became noisy again.

Their anxiety was clear as day.

Hao Zhen was just about to berate them when an aura spread, which made the immortals turn around.

The closed bronze door of the secret room opened. Chu Du walked out slowly with an indifferent expression.

"First supreme elder."

"Lord father!"

"Hmm." Chu Du nodded slightly, smiling as he looked around, "Since you are here, hold the line for me."

Chu Du's mood was heavy.

The actual situation was much more serious than what Li Si Chun and the rest discussed.

These recently recruited lone and demonic immortals were opportunists, there might even be spies among them.

The adopted sons looked respectful and humble, but in fact, they already held resentment towards Chu Du. On one hand, they blamed Chu Du for cultivating them into strength path that had uncertain prospects, on the other hand, when they underwent immortal ascension, Chu Du used them to absorb Reckless Savage’s true meaning, causing them to suffer huge losses.

Chu Du was aware: Chu tribe seemed to be united, but it was already at the juncture of declining!

If he could win against Fairy Black Moon, Chu Du could still maintain the original state. If he were to be defeated, Chu tribe would definitely decline, and it would likely be a disastrous decline. People would look down on them, no one would join, they would keep on growing weaker until Chu tribe members became cannon fodder in the five regions chaotic war.

“Lord, with so many people leaving, what about our territory’s defense?” Chou Lao Wu asked.

Chu Du waved his sleeve, saying with a carefree tone: “It doesn’t matter. How many resource points do we have that are truly valuable? As for the headquarters, Gu Immortals need to be stationed, draw sticks to settle it.”

Although Chu tribe was established, they had few resource points and were of poor quality. It could be said they were lacking resources to develop.

Like this, a few unlucky Gu Immortals were selected to guard the headquarters. Chu Du took almost all the Chu tribe Gu Immortals towards the appointed battlefield.

Chu Du was not even a little panicked, moving leisurely.

On the way, Gu Immortals of the Huang Jin tribes appeared and joined Chu Du’s group.

These Gu Immortals might exclude Chu tribe and Bai Zu tribe secretly during normal times, but they naturally stood beside Chu Du when facing an outsider like Fairy Black Moon.

When they were halfway through the journey, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu appeared.

Only then did Chu Du truly let out a sigh of relief.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2203: Blood Sea Clone

It was only Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s clone, but it was still at rank eight, the immortals quickly paid their respects.

Chu Du was satisfied.

Although Heavenly Lord Bai Zu did not personally come to back him up, Chu Du knew Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had an exquisite method that could let the clone and main body switch places instantly. Thus, with this clone here, it was no different from Heavenly Lord Bai Zu personally being here.

At this crucial moment, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was a reliable partner for Chu Du.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had been paying a lot of attention to the impending battle of Chu Du and Fairy Black Moon.

After all, with Longevity Heaven above them and the unity of the Huang Jin tribes, Bai Zu tribe and Chu tribe had to stay allied and endure the immense pressure together.

It was just that he had a really urgent mission at this time.

The only one that could summon him was naturally Longevity Heaven.

Currently, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was in Longevity Heaven, beside him was the current generation South Desolation Immortal — Yao Huang.

Seeing Heavenly Lord Bai Zu slightly out of sorts, Yao Huang understood inwardly, smiling: “Bai Zu, who do you think will win in the fight between Chu Du and Black Moon?”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu retracted his consciousness, smiling bitterly: “From my angle, I naturally hope Chu Du can win. However, Fairy Black Moon is no small character, her strength is hard to estimate. This will definitely be a fierce battle!”

“Lord Bai Zu is correct.”

“Both cultivate strength path, one has been renowned for a long time, while the other’s reputation is rising rapidly. It is indeed hard to tell who is stronger, only the fight will determine the winner and the loser.”

“That Fairy Black Moon seems to have inherited Reckless Savage’s true inheritance, her strength path attainment cannot be underestimated.”

“In my view, Chu Du still has a higher chance of winning. After all, he is a legendary person who had once pressured the whole of Liu tribe!”

The moment these words came out, Liu tribe Gu Immortals snorted coldly with displeased expressions.

A large group of Gu Immortals had gathered around Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang, they were all from Huang Jin tribes.

As the Gu Immortals were discussing, Five Elements Grandmaster suddenly flew over: “Alright, the formation is set, please enter the formation.”

A large formation was set up in front of the immortals.

Beautiful blood-red lines were all over the formation.

The Huang Jin tribes’ Gu Immortals stopped talking as they entered the formation, among them was Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, who brought Hei tribe’s Gu Immortals.

Soon, only Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Yao Huang remained at the periphery of the formation.

Yao Huang looked at the formation, saying suddenly: “It is good if Chu Du wins, but if he fails, Black Moon might really rise to power. Did you secretly help Chu Du?”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu shook his head: “I won’t lie to you, I had suggested this to him, but it was rejected. He only wants to use his strength path attainment to fight this battle. To him, this strength path battle holds extraordinary significance.”

Yao Huang thought to himself, smiling inwardly: “Chu Du will lose, and it is a certain loss. Hei Lou Lan was nurtured by our Ancestor, her strength is beyond her peers, and with effort Gu helping her, her cultivation level, killer moves, and other aspects are progressing rapidly. Meanwhile, Hei Lou Lan already knows the information regarding Chu Du. With this win, Hei Lou Lan will become a leading character in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world. Later on, she will be able to lead lone and demonic immortals with her every action.”

Right at this time, the sky of Longevity Heaven suddenly changed, warning alarms started ringing!

This was the arranged signal!

“How could it be so early?” Yao Huang’s expression changed greatly, as he shouted, “Quickly activate the formation!”

Even without his reminder, Five Elements Grandmaster, who was in charge of the formation, was already activating it.

The formation buzzed loudly as blood-red light bloomed.

The

This formation was actually a rank eight blood path immortal formation!

The blood path formation produced a mysterious strength that quickly disappeared from the formation and transferred to a mysterious place.

At this time.

Crazed Demon Cave, ninth layer, in Star Constellation Chessboard Formation.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made the fatal move!

Whoosh.

Suddenly, the near-dead Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s body burned with blood-red flames.

Countless Gu worms shone and flew around inside Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s aperture, forming a killer move that drew in the blood path divine power from Longevity Heaven!

Among them, familial emotion Gu was the first core, next to familial emotion Gu was imitation Gu. This time, imitation Gu had already transformed into blood relation Gu, which was the second core.

The blood path divine power quickly spread throughout Immortal Zombie Giant Sun’s body. His ice-cold immortal zombie black blood burned intensely like boiling water.

Golden rays shot out from the black blood and spread rapidly like water. After a few breaths of time, all the blood in Immortal Zombie Giant Sun turned into the color of gold.

His dry black skin, like that of a withered tree, became filled with vitality as it regained a white luster.

Thorn-like hair quickly grew and draped down to his shoulders.

His eyes that were dark and dim earlier started shining in golden light now.

His entire body began to grow taller, he had a slightly hunched back earlier, but was now standing tall with bulging muscles, he became a middle aged man of over nine feet in height.

Boom!

Blood colored radiance spread, causing winds and clouds to stir.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had completely revived!

The whole revival process was extremely short. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable found that she was not able to break the blood-red barrier of light around Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, and even sensed hints of a trap around Immortal Zombie Giant Sun, so she watched from the side.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s gaze was deep: “As I expected, Blood Sea Ancestor was your clone.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled, showing his white teeth: “Star Constellation, you cultivate wisdom path primarily with star path as your secondary path. Genesis Lotus cultivates wood path and painting path. Thieving Heaven cultivates theft path primarily with space path as the secondary path. With one main and one specialty path, us venerables can compete with each other on equal grounds. And in my case, I chose blood path.”

“It is just that the timing was not right when I was alive. Only after countless years past my death was there enough foundation for my Blood Sea clone to create blood path. And talents emerged in Heavenly Court as well, there first were Gu Immortal Fei Shuang and Ning Xue, this master and disciple pair who hunted down my Blood Sea clone. Later, refinement path great grandmaster Lian Shen Ke refined blood relation Immortal Gu which almost destroyed my plan. Fortunately, I had backup methods.”

Heavenly Court had already felt something strange about Blood Sea Ancestor.

Thus, they constructed Demon Judgment Board to suppress blood path.

Although Immortal Zombie Giant Sun succeeded in reviving, the progress of blood path was seriously impeded, it did not develop into a mainstream path and was always treated like a detestable path. Even though super forces researched it, they only did it behind closed doors.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s original plan was to keep luck path a secret while borrowing the strength of the world to perfect blood path, but blood path ended up being obstructed.

If blood path had been prosperous, the current Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s strength would have risen much more.

“Forget it, how can everything go as one wishes?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable heaved a sigh, his gaze moving past Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, past the formation, towards the distance.

There were only a few truthful floating ice pieces left in the Crazed Demon formation.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable solemnly gathered her concentration.

In front of her was a fully revived Giant Sun Immortal Venerable with no trace of injuries, and although his strength had not been restored to the peak state, it was similar to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s.

And Qin Ding Ling was still in the process of revival. Luck gamble was already used before and would be difficult to use again with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable already on guard against it.

Star Constellation and Giant Sun’s fight was definitely going to be an uncontrollable battle of life and death.

However, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable felt troubled if she had to fight without any considerations. The current situation was not simple, she had various misgivings.

At this time, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable suddenly sighed: “Star Constellation, the eternal life research results are right before our eyes, let’s hold off our fight for the moment. How about we join hands and get rid of these irrelevant people first?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was dazed for a bit before nodding with a smile: “That is appropriate, we should do that.”

These two venerables were still fighting a life and death battle earlier, but they were actually working together now!

This was undoubtedly a wise move.

It would be a shame if bystanders got benefits when two tigers fought.

Thereupon, the sensible Star Constellation and Giant Sun were naturally going to get rid of the weak ones first!

Boom!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable directly charged towards Fang Yuan, countless golden light rays shot at Fang Yuan like spears or swords.

This was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable showing his sincerity to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Fang Yuan was with Paradise Earth, and he had killed Qin Ding Ling not long ago.

“You defend while I attack.” Fang Yuan said to Paradise Earth.

Paradise Earth hesitated for a bit before nodding.

Heaven path killer move — Heavenly Web Protection Veil.

Milky white light web appeared once again, the heavenly web was pure without any dust. There were large gaps but they did not allow anything in.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s golden light rays were completely blocked by the heavenly web.

This was the void, there were no outside world’s luck path dao marks to amplify Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. On the contrary, they were also under the threat of Limitless’ countermeasures. It was not like in the Door of Life and Death where Spectral Soul Demon Venerable obtained amplification from countless soul path dao marks and could also use his full strength without any restraints.

Five restriction profound light qi!

Fang Yuan attacked from afar, five colored smoke spread rapidly.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not slow down, he kept on charging closer.

Golden light constantly flowed around his body, when Giant Sun Immortal Venerable entered the five restriction profound light qi, the five colored smoke flowed away from him.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable closed in on Fang Yuan and used a killer move.

A golden hand quickly flew out and grabbed at Fang Yuan’s head.

The giant hand was about to pluck Fang Yuan’s luck, but at the next moment, Cooking Luck Pot showed itself. It shook fiercely as it blocked the giant hand.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used another move, the golden hand was reinforced and strengthened greatly.

But as it tried to pluck with more force, Cooking Luck Pot’s retaliation became even stronger, even directly flicking away the giant hand.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable already knew Fang Yuan had Cooking Luck Pot and that it was quite strong. But this attempt still shocked him: “How many rank eight Immortal Gu did he use to raise Cooking Luck Pot to this level?”

Even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was feeling troubled right now.

With the protection of such a strong Cooking Luck Pot, most of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path methods were useless against Fang Yuan.

Normally speaking, the reason Gu Immortals could hardly fight Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was because it was difficult for them to guard against Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path methods. Once Giant Sun Immortal Venerable attacked their luck, they had few methods to block it, and there was furthermore a low chance of blocking it.

But Fang Yuan’s situation was different.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2204: Two Venerables Versus Fang Yuan (Double Chapter)

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s attacks were blocked. Fang Yuan took the chance to counterattack, but at this time, a ray of starlight landed on Fang Yuan’s forehead with an incredible speed.

Fang Yuan’s head leaned back slightly from the attack. Seeing his defensive methods weakened by thirty percent, he quickly moved away.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable flew over and coordinated with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to pincer attack Fang Yuan!

At this moment, Fang Yuan was facing the attacks of two venerables!

All the immortals were tongue-tied.

No matter how strong Fang Yuan was and how much reputation he had, was he worthy of being targeted by two venerables?

But thinking about it carefully, the immortals understood why.

After all, among all the pseudo venerables, Fang Yuan possessed the greatest threat! Besides Fang Yuan’s main body, Qi Sea Ancestor and Zhan Bu Du were also Fang Yuan’s clones. Thus, he also had the largest force here.

And the seemingly lone Demon Immortal Qi Jue had already made a secret deal with Fang Yuan back during the pursuit battle against him, they had cooperated for a long time.

With the sharp increase in pressure, Fang Yuan prioritized on evading. He defended against the two venerables’ attacks while shouting to Paradise Earth and the other immortals: “We must join hands and unite. Otherwise, with the eternal life research results right in front of us, the two venerables will not let you gain benefits easily. They will definitely kill us first!”

Without much hesitation, Shen Shang, Paradise Earth, Demon Immortal Qi Jue, and others agreed, attacking one after the other.

It was just that their efforts could not lift the pressure off Fang Yuan.

In Star Constellation Chessboard Formation, the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals tied down the pseudo venerables even if they had to sacrifice their lives.

Fang Yuan was beginning to flee everywhere, falling into a passive state.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable suddenly mobilized Star Constellation Chessboard formation to slow down Fang Yuan’s flying speed. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable took the chance to attack, a ray of golden light shot out from his hand.

Fang Yuan could not dodge in time and was illuminated by the golden light.

At the crucial moment, Fang Yuan had to activate his renowned defensive method.

A long robe appeared on him. This long robe had wide sleeves, it was white like snow. On the surface of the robe, there was slow flowing water, it was the same appearance as Reverse Flow River earlier.

Not just that, the surface of the long robe had faint mist surrounding it. There was also a strip of light that was deep azure, it was curvy and wavy, resembling a long sash, it coiled around Fang Yuan’s arms, the back of his neck, and around his waist again.

Immortal killer move — Reverse Flow Protection Seal!

Reverse flow protection seal was outstanding, it immediately reflected Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s golden light and the flying stars that followed closely behind.

Fang Yuan finally gained a slight respite, but he did not dare to relax.

His hands opened wide.

His left hand released five colored smoke, it was five restriction profound light qi!

His right hand pressed down towards the starry paths, activating a sinister and baleful compound killer move, rotting poisonous dark ash!

This move contained the profundity of wood path, poison path, dark path, and fire path. It could corrode everything and destroy their internal structure. As time passes, its damage would become even fiercer. Even when this killer move was canceled, there would still be continuous corrosion, but the corrosion would become weaker.

Fang Yuan had once tried this move on an immemorial year beast.

He had stopped this killer move in just a few breaths of time.

But the struck immemorial year beast cried miserably for three days and three nights before it finally turned into a pile of rotten grey ash. Fang Yuan blew it away with just a light breath.

Fang Yuan was not using this move to target Star Constellation Immortal Venerable or Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

He was targeting this Star Constellation Chessboard Formation!

He must first destroy this formation!

Heaven path killer move — Heavenly Summary Earthly Norm!

On the other side, Paradise Earth activated his killer move again. He had the same intention as Fang Yuan; great minds thought alike, he wanted to first dismantle this formation as well.

The heaven path killer move’s power was beyond ordinary, everywhere it went, starry paths vanished and starlight dissipated, restoring it to the original void.

“Paradise Earth...” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable frowned as she threw out numerous stars. Most of them still targeted Fang Yuan, but a small portion attacked Paradise Earth.

Even though Paradise Earth only had pseudo venerable cultivation, he had converted to heaven path. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was unable to ascertain his methods for the moment, so she had to be on alert against him.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable controlled the whole situation and was always calm. As long as there was something odd, she would suppress it immediately.

With Star Constellation Immortal Venerable targeting him, Paradise Earth also had to be on guard.

“This reverse flow protection seal is indeed difficult to deal with, but Fang Yuan, how long can you hold on for?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used powerful killer moves one after the other.

These killer moves were all reflected back, but Reverse Flow River’s water level also fell sharply.

Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal was renowned all over the world, it was not that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had not prepared for it. It was just that he had not personally dealt with Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal, and after Fang Yuan modified it later, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could only choose the method of consuming it.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable frowned slightly.

With a shift of her mind, starry paths shook, a grand rank eight Immortal Gu House followed the starry paths and entered the battlefield.

It was Divine Emperor City!

Inside Divine Emperor City, Genesis Lotus’ will was solemn as he activated a method that he had prepared for a long while.

Painting path killer move — Scenic Portrait!

Instantly, Fang Yuan’s portrait appeared inside Divine Emperor City’s painting world.

Fang Yuan’s portrait stood in front of Genesis Lotus’ will, he was motionless with his eyes closed, he had no expressions.

After Genesis Lotus’ will used this killer move, his form began to turn unstable.

He clenched his teeth as he activated another painting path killer move called ink slicing thread.

Thin lines of ink suddenly flew out of the hands of Genesis Lotus’ will, they started slicing the cheeks of Fang Yuan’s portrait.

Almost at the same time, Fang Yuan, who was fighting Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, suddenly shook.

His left cheek was cut, the injury was a thin line from which black ink flowed out from.

“What’s going on?!” Fang Yuan’s pupils shrunk, and almost immediately, his sharp gaze fell on Divine Emperor City.

“This is a painting path method, it is definitely Divine Emperor City’s doing and very likely involves Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable!” Fang Yuan’s thoughts moved like lightning.

He was right.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable planned before taking action. Since she could prepare the killer move luck gamble against Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, she would not neglect Fang Yuan.

Although Fang Yuan had not used reverse flow protection seal for a long time, it did not mean he had no way of using it.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s plan would never forget Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal!

The killer move scenic portrait was already created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable. Later, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable worked together with Genesis Lotus’ will to modify it, to target Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal.

Fang Yuan had just stabilized his footing with the help of reverse flow protection seal when Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used this method.

Reverse Flow River could essentially reflect everything, however, reverse flow protection seal was created by Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan had almost no understanding of painting path, his attainment level in it was blank.

Fang Yuan was aware of this flaw, so he had already gathered some painting path mortal Gu. However, it was far out of its depth against a painting path method at this level.

As such, Fang Yuan was hit by the killer move scenic portrait.

This was also the reason why most venerables cultivated two paths.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable cultivated wisdom path and star path, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable cultivated wood path and painting path, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable cultivated luck path and blood path, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable cultivated earth path and heaven path, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable cultivated transformation path and strength path, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable cultivated theft path and space path...

Venerables often cultivated one main path and one specialty path.

The first path would be the primary one which could be widely spread. The other path would be kept secretive and mysterious, information about it would be sealed tight.

For instance, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable cultivated wisdom path as the primary, with star path as her specialty. Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable cultivated wood path as the primary, with painting path as his specialty.

Fang Yuan’s current situation showed the advantage of doing this.

Fang Yuan could reflect wood path methods, but he was a stranger to painting path, so painting path methods were effective on him.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s situation was slightly special, he had planned to take blood path as the primary, and luck path as his specialty.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable created luck path when he was alive, he was the only one to possess luck path. Thus, he kept luck path a secret, but to help Fang Yuan and his ambitions, he left a portion of the luck path true inheritance in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building and with Lang Ya land spirit.

After he died, he tried all ways to use his clone to create blood path. He had planned to make blood path the most common path, thus the Blood Sea clone spread blood path everywhere. He wanted to get the help of others to help him perfect and promote blood path.

Inside Divine Emperor City, Genesis Lotus’ will used another painting path killer move, brush stroke.

A painting brush swept past Fang Yuan’s portrait, leaving ink traces wherever it brushed.

At the same time, ink-black injuries appeared on Fang Yuan’s body. The injuries deepened quickly.

Compound killer move — Man as Before!

Fang Yuan activated a killer move again to heal himself constantly.

But with this, he had no choice but to cancel the rotting poisonous dark ash killer move, which only left five restriction profound light qi for his counterattack.

Simultaneously activating multiple killer moves did not surpass Fang Yuan’s wisdom path limits. But Fang Yuan had to leave some capacity for thinking to deal with any sudden event.

Otherwise, once an unexpected situation occurred, and Fang Yuan’s reaction was slightly late, it would give the enemy an opportunity.

After all, his enemies were venerables, they were not the likes of Qin Ding Ling and Bing Sai Chuan.

Moreover, these two venerables had allied!

Pressure, immense pressure that was like a mountain pressed down endlessly on Fang Yuan, it would not stop until it killed him.

Fang Yuan was in a disadvantage all along, his situation continued to be more troublesome.

This was the hardest battle of his life!

Comparatively, the battle in the fate war was not so heated.

“Fang Yuan is in danger!” Paradise Earth and the others wanted to help, but were always blocked by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

The two venerables’ attacks were concentrated on Fang Yuan, they only used the remaining small portion of energy to block the other pseudo venerables.

Finally, Fang Yuan’s Reverse Flow River was expended, he had no choice but to cancel this move.

Without the obstruction of this move, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable laughed as he activated an already prepared killer move.

The killer move was formless, Fang Yuan was instantly hit.

Sovereign immortal aperture shook violently, lightning flashed as tribulation clouds gathered.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled: “Fang Yuan, the core of this move is Calamity Luck Altar, it can change fortune to misfortune. Your sovereign immortal aperture has too many resources, and it has developed extremely well. How large of a tribulation will form once such a deep fortune turns into calamity?”

Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Northern Plains.

Sacred Eagle City.

Tribulation clouds billowed. At the previous moment, it was still a scene of blue skies and white clouds, now the world had turned dark.

“What’s going on?” The residents of the city looked at the sky.

Shortly afterwards, noisy sounds rose from Sacred Eagle City.

“Tribulation clouds, there are tribulation clouds again!”

“What is happening?”

“Quick, go ask the City Lord for help.”

The city residents were terrified and panicked as they ran towards the City Lord Manor.

Sacred Eagle City’s residents were mostly humans who came from the former Beast Calamity grotto-heaven.

In this life, Fang Yuan had secretly accelerated Beast Calamity grotto-heaven's calamities and tribulations to subdue it. This caused tribulation clouds to cover the whole of Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, creating a huge number of casualties.

These residents had such a painful experience, so when they saw the tribulation clouds that was almost the same as in their memory, they immediately acted like spooked cats, screaming and fleeing madly.

Inside the City Lord Manor, a transformation path rank seven Gu Immortal looked at the sky, a bitter expression was on his face too.

He was the recently promoted Sacred Eagle City Lord. He was originally only at rank six, but he received Fang Yuan's help, and his cultivation advanced to rank seven. After accepting a mission, he became this Sacred Eagle City's City Lord.

"This tribulation is so huge, Sacred Eagle City only has three Gu Immortals. We might not be able to stop it, it is better to ask for reinforcements from Triple Sacred Mountain!" Sacred Eagle City Lord immediately sent a request for reinforcements.

Triple Sacred Mountain was the center of Mini Northern Plains, it was the gathering area of snowmen, and was the most developed area. It was looked after by Fang Yuan's fiancée, Xue Er.

Different from the five regions, humans lived peacefully with other variant humans the inside sovereign immortal aperture, helping each other without any discrimination.

Sacred Eagle City's residents were very isolated and ignorant. When they first moved into the sovereign immortal aperture, they were helped extensively by Xue Er and the snowmen, so they had good feelings towards the snowmen.

As for Sacred Eagle City's Gu Immortals who came from Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, these Gu Immortals were also vastly different from the five regions' Gu Immortals in regards to their philosophy of life. They took the duty of protecting mortals as their glory.

Adding on Fang Yuan's rule and management, all the races in sovereign immortal aperture lived unitedly.

The human Sacred Eagle City Lord did not have any mental barrier in asking for reinforcements from the snowmen. At the same time, he had a lot of faith in Fairy Xue Er's help.

Mini Western Desert.

An enormous pitch-black city was standing in the depths of the desert.

It was Inkman City.

Inkman City Lord Mo Tan Sang's cultivation had also advanced to rank seven. He had around eight Gu Immortals under him, but they were just rank six.

"The scale of this tribulation is so huge, its power will definitely be unprecedented." Mo Tan Sang's expression was solemn, he felt heavy pressure.

He reacted almost immediately and sent out commands.

Two Gu Immortals were dispatched to maintain the security and prevent the residents from taking vicious actions, like rioting or stampeding.

Additionally, four Gu Immortals were dispatched out of the city to look after white steel bowl valley, rotten swamp, hibiscus trees, and other resource points. If the situation became urgent, these Gu Immortals could immediately retrieve as many of these resources as possible and temporarily place them in Inkman City’s storage.

Mo Tan Sang’s status was similar to Xue Er’s. He was almost like the person in charge of Mini Western Desert, he governed not only Inkman City, but also many other locations.

Mini Blue Heaven.

A grand city was on a continent above cloud soil.

In the heart of the city was a mountain-like hall made from a star snail.

This hall was in uproar at this moment.

A rank eight elderly man was sitting inside solemnly as he listened to the reports from various Gu Immortals.

He was the old Combat Beast King, he was appointed as Star Collection City Lord by Fang Yuan and was in charge of overseeing the internal affairs of the sovereign immortal aperture.

“This tribulation is too sudden!”

“It is even more terrifying than the one in Beast Calamity grotto-heaven, it is much larger and covers the whole sovereign immortal aperture!!”

“City Lord, what should we do?”

“Master has taken away almost all the rank eight Gu Immortals and the strong rank sevens for the fight at this time. Although most of them have revived, they are at Gu Master level. Our manpower is too few, how do we deal with such a tribulation?!”

“Even if there were no casualties, could we deal with such a tribulation by combining our strength? That is impossible! Only an existence like master can protect our home from such a tribulation...”

Combat Beast King raised his hand, the hall gradually quietened: “Master is wise and mighty, he will definitely make a move when he should. But right now, we should remember our responsibility — to protect our home! Even if we die, it cannot crumble our will. Everyone, this is a difficult test, master is watching us, our clansmen are watching us. As Gu Immortals, if we cannot protect them, if we are afraid of dying, how can we raise our heads in pride later on?”

“We are willing to fight with all our strength!” The Gu Immortals shouted together with surging morale.

Death was not terrifying.

Even if they died, they could revive through Human Sea.

The terrifying thing was escaping in the face of danger and leaving a bad impression on Fang Yuan.

There was no doubt that Fang Yuan’s will was paramount in the sovereign immortal aperture, he ruled everything.

In Crazed Demon Cave.

Dazzling and vast golden light flowed like a sea wave.

Fang Yuan retreated rapidly with a solemn expression.

He no longer had reverse flow protection seal. Facing the two venerables, his situation was perilous, almost like walking on a steel rope between cliffs.

What was even worse was the trouble in the sovereign immortal aperture.

“This is a method of all living beings luck...” Fang Yuan looked at Giant Sun Immortal Venerable with a malevolent killing intent.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s gaze was eerie, he observed the tribulation aura on Fang Yuan’s body becoming denser before he put his mind at rest.

Fang Yuan possessed Cooking Luck Pot which could indeed stop most of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path methods, however, Fang Yuan still could not compare to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable in terms of luck path foundation.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable sighed lightly: “Fang Yuan, you have such talent and aptitude, I really don’t want to kill you. It is such a pity that your character determined your outcome. I have to get rid of you. If you are really allowed to keep on developing, there will be a day when you comprehend all living beings luck and heaven and earth luck through the self luck true inheritance. It is much easier to get rid of you now.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable appreciated Fang Yuan’s talent, but was even more wary of him!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable continued to attack while speaking.

Fang Yuan was forced to retreat again and again.

Although he had cooperated with Fang Yuan time and again, when they truly fought, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable seemed to be even happier than Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to get rid of Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan’s expression was solemn, his eyes shone sharply as he kept silent.

He continuously activated all kinds of compound killer moves, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had never heard of or seen these killer moves before.

Because of this, it was rather troublesome for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to deal with them.

Fang Yuan relied on this to barely maintain his footing.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled: “I am getting more and more amazed by you, such brilliant and numerous compound killer moves have really broadened my horizons. A pity, it is a pity that these killer moves are unsystematic, you still don’t have your own combat system!”

“But this is not your fault.”

“I used close to one thousand years to perfect my current combat system back then.”

“Moreover, making a combat system is not just about time, it also needs plenty of worthy opponents to be created successfully.”

“Fang Yuan, how many years have you lived even after adding up all your lives?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled, while speaking, he inflicted another deep injury on Fang Yuan’s chest.

Fang Yuan did not speak.

Comparing foundation, he was indeed inferior to venerables.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had a smile on his face as he saw Fang Yuan’s tribulation aura increasing by double in just a short while: “You already felt it, right? The greatest profundity of my move lies in the number of calamities and tribulations. As many resource points, Immortal Gu, Gu Immortals, desolate beasts, and so on as are there in the sovereign immortal aperture, there will be an equivalent number of calamities and tribulations.”

“Those who are struck by this move need to resolve countless calamities and tribulations at the same time. Difficult, this is extremely difficult. Fang Yuan, I won’t give you an opportunity to save yourself.”

Saying so, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable attacked once again.

His attacks were unceasing and majestic, Fang Yuan could only block them, and was unable to do anything to the sovereign immortal aperture.

It was a scene of an abyss in the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Central Continent.

Flower mist extreme marsh.

Large meteorites dragged long tails as they smashed on the ground.

Bam bam bam...

The meteorites erupted and flames spread, burning the mist, marsh, and extreme marsh flowers around them. Only dry land was left behind.

From the inferno, tall flame monsters stood up.

As the flame monsters wreaked havoc, a Gu Immortal streaked across the sky.

It was Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone — Wu Shuai.

With a thought from Wu Shuai, ant groups flew out and fought with the flame monsters.

Mini Southern Border.

There was a downpour on the whole dark inkstone mine.

The corrosive rain inflicted heavy damage on the dark inkstones.

A rockman Gu Immortal was stationed here, he used all his strength to activate his killer moves but could only protect a small part of the mine.

Star Collection City was in chaos.

“Every resource point in the mini five regions and mini nine heavens is being attacked by different types and scales of calamities and tribulations.”

“The Gu Immortals on Fire Bird Mountain are requesting for reinforcements!”

“Ghost fire is burning pin tree snowfield, if we don’t stop it on time, the ghost fire will destroy the whole snowfield.”

“The Hairy Man continent is being bombarded by lightning, one of the cities is already drowned by a tsunami!”

"A terrifying beast calamity has appeared in Mini Black Heaven, thousands of green claw ghost winged lions are hunting down soul beasts!"

Bad news came one after the other.

Combat Beast King subconsciously clenched his fists. Despite already being prepared mentally, when the calamities and tribulations really broke out, the severity of the losses made him unable to maintain his calm for some time.

But from start to finish, he maintained his solemn expression.

At this time, when all the Gu Immortals were panicking, as their backbone, he could not panic!

He sent out various commands, Star Collection City began to operate frantically. Manpower and resources were dispatched to every place as they began to deal with the calamities and tribulations.

But there were too many calamities and tribulations, not only was their range huge, they were of various types. Every calamity and tribulation needed to be dealt with using different methods.

This was an extremely difficult challenge to the Gu Immortals stationed in the sovereign immortal aperture.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2205: Black Fire

News of the first Gu Immortal to be heavily injured and near death arrived.

Combat Beast King's heart immediately tensed: "So quickly?"

His mood became even heavier.

The more casualties the Gu Immortals suffered, the lower the resistance the sovereign immortal aperture could put up. If this continued until a certain extent, the situation would be irredeemable, like an unstoppable avalanche.

Combat Beast King gritted his teeth: "Send the orders, Mini Black Heaven does not need to be saved, give up on rescuing any desolate beasts, ancient desolate beasts, and even immemorial desolate beasts! We will protect the large cities first, second are the important resource points. How are the results of the wisdom path Gu Immortals' deductions?"

Star Collection City naturally had wisdom path Gu Immortals.

"We have not even deduced half of them, there are too many calamities and tribulations." A wisdom path Gu Immortal said with sweat all over his head.

"Take out whatever results you have to deal with this situation first!" Combat Beast King almost stamped his foot.

The results were soon obtained, Combat Beast King made the decision on the spot, Star Collection City began to mobilize Gu Immortals.

"Oh?" Wu Shuai was the first to receive this command.

A strange expression flashed by his face before he slowly retreated.

In the short while of his fight with the flame monsters, flower mist extreme marsh was already completely destroyed, while the majority of the flame monsters still remained.

There were too many of them, even though Wu Shuai used all his strength, he could only eradicate a small portion of them.

These flame monsters’ target was already destroyed, so their hostility gathered on Wu Shuai.

Seeing Wu Shuai retreat, the flame monsters immediately chased after him.

Wu Shuai led them to the west and met another Gu Immortal midway. A group of qi monsters were chasing after this Gu Immortal.

The two Gu Immortals were in the center, but the flame monsters and qi monsters fought with each other.

“It is feasible indeed!”

“These calamities and tribulations are not formed naturally, but were created because of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s killer move.”

“Since they are only formed through luck path and is not controlled by heaven’s will, they are like an army without a leader. We can use calamities and tribulations to deal with calamities and tribulations.”

Wu Shuai was slightly happy.

This was the deduction result of the wisdom path Gu Immortals.

Some Gu Immortals gathered acidic rain, while some Gu Immortals directed the heavenly river towards the desert...

Under such operations, the sovereign immortal aperture’s situation finally eased.

“We have stabilized the situation!” Combat Beast King let out a breath of air. In just a short period of time, his face was covered with sweat.

Calamities and tribulations came too fiercely, if their reaction had been slightly slow, it might have resulted in destruction. Fortunately, they used every moment, seized the initiative, and stabilized the situation.

But this was far from enough.

Calamities and tribulations were still playing out in many places, those that could consume each other were only a small portion.

The whole sovereign immortal aperture was still being destroyed by calamities and tribulations, losses increased at every breath of time.

“The tribulation clouds above the flower mist extreme marsh have disappeared completely.”

“Most of the tribulation clouds above the pin tree snowfield have dissipated!”

“The dark inkstone mine is completely destroyed, but the tribulation clouds are also destroyed!”

“Something is wrong!!! There is an abnormal situation.”

“Reporting! Over twenty tribulation clouds all over the mini five regions are showing identical changes.”

“This is the... earth shaking heavenly light tribulation!”

Combat Beast King had just relaxed, when he heard the devastating news.

“This is bad!” His expression turned pale. From combining the information, in the map of the mini five regions in his mind, earth shaking heavenly light tribulations were appearing in crucial areas.

Bam bam bam...

Yellowish brown pillars of light shot out from tribulation clouds, the light pillars struck the ground and continued to pierce down into the ground.

A large amount of tribulation clouds swarmed into the yellowish brown light pillars. They suddenly lit up, and this light flowed down the light pillars into the depths of the ground.

Boom—!

Explosions rang, the earth shook fiercely.

Boom—!

Boom—!

Boom—!

Earth shaking light pillars in the mini five regions were continuing to exert power, earthquakes were becoming even more intense.

Terrifying shockwaves continued to expand. Everywhere they passed by, earth shook, mountains crumbled, rivers changed courses, and seas roared.

“This luck path method targets the resources in the immortal aperture. Now that those resource points are destroyed or damaged heavily, earth veins became the conspicuous target!”

“That’s why there are so many earth shaking heavenly light tribulations, they just happen to cover all the earth vein nodes and are seeking to destroy them.”

Wu Shuai’s face was cold as ice.

Although these calamities and tribulations triggered by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not have heaven’s will to control the overall situation, there would be this kind of change at the later part. It greatly made up for the lack of commands.

“However, you think the earth veins we constructed painstakingly can be destroyed so easily?”

Wu Shuai sneered, activating a formation.

Earth vein formation was activated, thick and grand aura spread rapidly. The powerful tremors underground were forcefully suppressed.

Next, the Gu Immortals dispatched by Star Collection City reached the tribulation areas, and began attacking earth shaking heavenly light pillars.

The huge heavenly light pillars began to break down one after the other. The sovereign immortal aperture’s Gu Immortals coordinated to get past this difficulty.

The tribulation clouds changed again. This time, they formed beast calamities in various areas. Immemorial desolate beast level golden steel earth rats emerged from everywhere and besieged the earth vein nodes.

Seven to eight earth vein nodes were destroyed before these golden steel earth rats were eradicated. A small portion of the earth rats were enslaved by Wu Shuai.

Tribulation clouds changed again, but they were still targeting earth veins.

The immortals defended the earth veins strongly using all their strength, they cooperated tightly.

Although earth vein nodes continued to decrease in number, the situation was turning for the better.

The calamities and tribulations were of all kinds, but their targets were still earth veins. This was a controllable factor, which brought a lot of convenience to the immortals.

Over ten or so calamities and tribulations targeted earth veins, but after they were repelled by the immortals, the tribulation clouds that covered the whole sovereign immortal aperture had mostly disappeared.

However, when the immortals thought the tribulations had finally passed, an aura that made the hearts of all living beings in the sovereign immortal aperture shake appeared all of a sudden!

At first, this aura was extremely small.

But soon, the aura grew rapidly in the deepest part of the tribulation clouds.

Amidst the immortals’ puzzled and terrified gazes, a fire burned in the depths of the tribulation clouds.

The fire was black!

The black fire had just appeared, when it burned all the remaining stubborn tribulation clouds.

The black fire grew rapidly, and started falling down. Wherever it passed by, be it ground or the air, they were all burned into nothingness.

The immortals breathed in sharply, the power of the black fire was horrifying, it was like the nemesis of all existences!

“Isn’t this black fire like the one in the dragon whale grotto-heaven? It actually appeared here! Giant Sun Immortal Venerable is truly formidable!” Wu Shuai’s heart jumped. Even an expert like him felt extreme threat from the black fire.

There was nothing else to say, the immortals used their methods to defend against the black fire.

However, all the methods were of no use.

Even when Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit used all their strength, they could only extinguish a little of the black fire.

Moreover, once the black fire was destroyed to a certain extent, it would change form, transforming into black water, black lightning, and so on, killing many Gu Immortals who were caught off guard.

At the crucial moment, He Chun Qiu took action.

“Don’t panic! The main body also expected this scene, and taught me a countermeasure.” He Chun Qiu said as he activated a human path formation.

The human path formation had the thousand wish tree, and also the secluded domain of heaven and earth, Human Sea.

Bam bam bam...

Lumps of white light flew out from the formation.

These lumps of light were extremely large, they flew everywhere in the mini five regions. As long as the black fire spread, the white light would pounce on it.

The black fire was quickly dissipating, it changed its form again. But no matter what form it took, it was still continuing to be extinguished by the white light.

The white light’s effect was excellent, but the black fire continued to gather and grow.

“It will be really dangerous if this continues!”

“Human path killer moves are effective, but they cannot compare to the black fire’s growth.”

“What should we do?”

The immortals panicked.

“Oh no, black fire has appeared on Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley!”

“The earth vein formation is also being burned!”

The situation worsened rapidly, He Chun Qiu, Wu Shuai, and the rest were pale.

The situation was out of control!

The human path formation left behind by Fang Yuan was also implicated.

What to do?

These Gu Immortals had already tried their best, but they could do nothing.

They could only depend on Fang Yuan’s main body!

Fang Yuan’s main body was continuing to dodge, his whole body was bathed in blood, his hair were disheveled, and his arm was broken. He was in a miserable state.

He simply could not counterattack and gain any initiative against the two venerables. Five restriction profound light qi was forced to stop, one phrase could be used to describe the current Fang Yuan — hanging onto his last breath.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s methods were truly terrifying and dealt with Fang Yuan’s methods by destroying their foundation.

The Gu Immortals left behind to guard the sovereign immortal aperture could do nothing more, their only hope lay with Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan did not have such an opportunity.

The two venerables attacked like a storm, arriving one after another, not giving him the chance to catch a breather.

“I must resolve the black fire!” Fang Yuan clenched his teeth. If he ignored the black fire, his sovereign immortal aperture would be as good as destroyed.

Immortal killer move — Hu Elevation!

Suddenly, a qi path killer move descended, temporarily blocking a venerable.

Qi Sea clone had made his move, he was finally freed from the shackles.

“Here I come!” Zhan Bu Du roared. He was freed from the responsibility of protecting Qi Sea, he rampaged and fought his way to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Fang Yuan’s main body took the chance to retreat.

Immortal killer move — Humanly Flame Smoke!

He activated his method to save the human path formation first. Then, he coordinated with the human path formation to deal with the black fire that was scattered everywhere.

Burning white flames shrouded the black fire, and started tearing it apart.

The main body’s abilities were indeed extraordinary, the black fire’s growth was immediately impeded.

However, Zhan Bu Du and Qi Sea Ancestor were being beaten back.

“Paradise Earth!” Fang Yuan retreated towards Paradise Earth.

Paradise Earth took a deep breath, as he activated heavenly web protection veil once again.

With his help, Fang Yuan obtained a brief respite. When the two venerables broke the heavenly web, Zhan Bu Du and Qi Sea Ancestor arrived to reinforce him.

The battle had lasted until now, but the two venerables were unable to take Fang Yuan’s life. Both frowned.

Crazed Demon formation was shrinking rapidly, the limit on the venerables was being released.

Their attacks became increasingly terrifying, Fang Yuan could only flee miserably.

Immortal Gu House — Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress!

Fang Yuan hid inside the Immortal Gu House and activated a killer move. This move used ability Gu as the core, it had the effect of absorbing the black fire!

The deadlock inside the sovereign immortal aperture finally began turning for the better.

Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress protected Fang Yuan for a while before it was broken by the combined strength of the two venerables.

“Die!” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable suddenly used a vicious killer move.

“Protect me!” Fang Yuan cried out in alarm, he was unable to dodge in time.

At the crucial moment, Zhan Bu Du flew over and used his body to block the killer move.

Boom!

A huge explosion rang, Zhan Bu Du was torn into pieces, dying immediately.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2206: Fighting Over Eternal Life

Fang Yuan’s eyelids twitched.

The other pseudo venerables’ hearts sank heavily.

On the contrary, the morale of Heavenly Court’s immortals surged.

Fang Yuan lost Zhan Bu Du, one of his main clones. Zhan Bu Du’s immortal aperture was also quickly absorbed by the Crazed Demon formation.

But fortunately, under the control of Zhan Bu Du’s will, his various Immortal Gu were sent in time to treasure yellow heaven.

However, black fire was still wreaking havoc in the sovereign immortal aperture!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable attacked once again.

Fang Yuan clenched his teeth as he ordered the Qi Sea clone to block the calamity.

Qi Sea clone did not have tough body like Zhan Bu Du, his death was certain against Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s attack. But Fang Yuan could only choose to sacrifice this clone to protect himself.

However, at the next moment, starry paths shook and twisted, forming an azure sphere that trapped Qi Sea Ancestor.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was caught unprepared, his killer move bombarded the starry path sphere and destroyed it instantly.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable turned around to look at Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the latter heaved a sigh.

Lu Wei Yin and the rest’s spirits shook. This was the first lapse in the cooperation of the two venerables!

This was really fortunate!

Qi Sea clone managed to escape death, he continued to protect Fang Yuan by his side.

The situation in the sovereign immortal aperture had only turned slightly better. As long as Fang Yuan let go of his control by even a slight bit, the situation would erupt again, and the whole immortal aperture would face destruction.

A huge sound rang as the void shook.

Crazed Demon Cave’s eighth layer disappeared completely, the final merged great world turned into nothingness, and countless living beings became sacrificial offerings.

The Door of Life and Death with the immortal graveyard flew away, they were stored by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable in her immortal aperture.

Crazed Demon Cave had a total of nine layers. The first seven layers were swept clean by Fang Yuan, the eighth layer was completely gone, only the final ninth layer remained.

And in the Crazed Demon formation in the center of the ninth layer, only the final truthful floating ice piece remained.

The three Crazed Demon Eccentrics were on the floating ice, they were activating practice Gu together, like they were carving the final part.

Seeing this scene, the immortals felt their mind shake, while Fang Yuan silently let out a sigh of relief.

The danger had passed!

He had finally passed the most difficult time.

Indeed, like Fang Yuan expected, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not attack him anymore. Both stopped on their spots, looking at each other.

The atmosphere changed subtly.

The two venerables had allied to get rid of the pseudo venerables. But Fang Yuan used every method he could to hold onto his last breath.

The venerables’ plan had failed.

Right now, the eternal life research results were already close to completion. The most important thing now was to seize these results!

Whoever tangled with those pseudo venerables would be giving the other venerable a chance.

“Success, we succeeded!” The three eccentrics slumped on the ground, shouting hoarsely and excitedly.

Immortal killer move — Luck Gamble!

The two venerables’ stalemate lasted for a while, when Qin Ding Ling came out of the starry paths.

She used the killer move once again, targeting Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Almost at the same time, Golden Hooped Great Immortal appeared again, using his golden hoop to trap Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Compared to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable clearly held the upper hand.

As long as Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was struck by these methods, his combat system’s foundation would be hit, and he would fall into a disadvantage. Even if he were to not be hit, he would have to slow down for a while to deal with Qin Ding Ling and Golden Hooped Great Immortal.

With just those few minutes of advantage, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable might be able to last until the end and seize the eternal life research results.

However, right at this time, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled: “Star Constellation, you have good methods, but you seem to have forgotten something?”

At the next moment, a rank eight Immortal Gu House suddenly shone brightly. Most of the void in the ninth layer was filled with this light.

It was Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace!

This Immortal Gu House was already placed in the Crazed Demon formation by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had used this to break out of the trap, Fang Yuan and others had also escaped alongside him.

From that moment onwards, this Immortal Gu House had been comprehending the Crazed Demon formation’s workings until it was shaken off.

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace was not a piece of truthful floating ice after all. After it was thrown out, it hid deeply, and even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable seemed to have failed to sense it.

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace was not simple, it had comprehended Crazed Demon formation’s workings and was compatible with this world.

Right now, it was activated by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. It immediately affected the Crazed Demon formation and caused unrest in Limitless’ chains.

The Star Constellation Chessboard Formation that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable arranged had forcefully merged with Limitless’ chains and also restrained the various pseudo venerables, including Fang Yuan. It was already at its limits.

Right now, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable suddenly made his move, allowing the chains of Limitless to break free from the starry paths, thus causing the whole Star Constellation Chessboard Formation to collapse.

Guh.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable coughed out blood, she had suffered a terrifying backlash.

Using this chance, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable rushed forward, rapidly closing the distance between him and the Crazed Demon formation.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not have time to heal her injuries, she took out that mysterious secluded domain of heaven and earth once again.

This secluded domain was like a lantern and also like a bird cage.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable aimed the lantern-like secluded domain of heaven and earth at Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s back and shook it lightly.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was immediately disturbed by immense emotions, his speed fell sharply.

Starlight specks shot out around Star Constellation Immortal Venerable as she gave chase.

Bam bam bam...

The two venerables fought, storms blew from the aftershock, the world shook intensely.

Fortunately, this was the void, otherwise, nothing would be left!

The two venerables held each other back, reaching that final mountain-like large truthful floating ice at almost the same time.

The two venerables suddenly stopped, their expressions were strange.

Pang Shan of the three eccentrics woke up at this time. He was extremely fat before, but was now skinny, as if all his essence had been drained.

“What happened?”

“Why are there still no eternal life results?!”

“We were just a little short!”

“But we don’t have any strength left...”

Pang Shan’s gaze was dim, he was not in the right condition. He seemed to have become crazy, murmuring to himself.

His voice awakened the other two immortals.

Secret Schemer’s expression was unsightly. He was slumped on the ground, and was barely able to cup his fists towards the two venerables: “Venerables, the eternal life research results are just lacking a step, no, half a step. As long as either of you activate practice Gu for a little while, this truthful floating ice will be carved successfully!”

The two venerables were silent.

This final truthful floating ice was not a small matter!

Whoever went in would not be able to come out for some time. If they wanted to come out, they needed to completely carve this truthful floating ice.

But was it that easy?

The eighth layer was destroyed, there were no more great worlds to provide fuel and clues to the Crazed Demon formation.

That was to say, they needed to contribute their own strength to carve this truthful floating ice.

The contribution amount was very crucial. If they needed to contribute too much, even if the venerable who entered the truthful floating ice held the lead, their battle strength would fall. Finally, they might play into the hands of the other venerable who was in a perfect state!

Be it Star Constellation Immortal Venerable or Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, they both had scruples. They stood silently for some time.

On the other side, the fight between the pseudo venerables and Heavenly Court Gu Immortals was still continuing.

“Duke Tong, don’t you like stopping me?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue smiled fiercely as he pointed with his finger.

Boom boom boom!

Qi spheres burst, Duke Tong exploded into pieces with not even a bone remaining.

“Endless spears!” Che Wei shouted, countless spears shot out from around him like a dense forest.

Lu Wei Yin charged through the spear forest and grabbed.

A yellowish-brown giant hand flew out and grabbed Che Wei.

“Without Star Constellation Chessboard Formation, even if you have unparalleled talent, how can you block me?” Lu Wei Yin sighed. The yellowish-brown giant hand clenched, forcefully pressing Che Wei into meat paste.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were inferior to the pseudo venerables after all.

Previously, even inside Star Constellation Chessboard formation, these Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were hard pressed to block the pseudo venerables, they died constantly on the battlefield.

They relied on the immortal graveyard to revive and participate in the battle again, balancing their weak battle strength.

Now, without Star Constellation Chessboard formation and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to control the overall situation, these Heavenly Court Gu Immortals immediately got outmatched. They were slaughtered one after the other, unable to block the pseudo venerables.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted coldly when she saw this, immediately making a move to help.

How could Giant Sun Immortal Venerable let go of this chance, he immediately acted to block Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

The two venerables fought once again!

Both venerables had equal strength. Using the brief respite, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable opened his immortal aperture and let out Calamity Luck Altar.

At the same time, he transmitted his voice: “Bing Sai Chuan, go!”

Calamity Luck Altar quickly charged towards the truthful floating ice, Bing Sai Chuan received Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s command and flew into it.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted as she shook the lantern again.

Calamity Luck Altar’s movement stopped immediately. Bing Sai Chuan, who was in charge of Calamity Luck Altar suddenly grasped his chest, he knelt down and started crying.

He blamed himself endlessly, sobbing: “It is all my fault, it is all my fault! I am wrong, I am to blame. If I was slightly stronger, I could have assisted master in defeating Heavenly Court and obtaining the eternal life research results. What is the point of my life? I have let down master. Sob sob sob... I should just die!”

Saying so, Bing Sai Chuan actually activated a killer move to kill himself!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable sighed, he endured Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s attacks while summoning Calamity Luck Altar to his side.

Golden light flowed and entered Bing Sai Chuan’s body and mind.

With Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s help, Bing Sai Chuan broke free from the guilty emotions.

His head was covered in cold sweat, he felt lingering fear: “If not for master, I would have killed myself! This is Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s method? Master has been enduring such terrifying emotional torture all along?”

As he thought of this, fear rose in Bing Sai Chuan’s heart.

His face was pale as he slumped on the ground, his body shivering intensely.

He opened his mouth and breathed heavily, but still felt suffocation.

His heart was filled with fear, he was scaring himself to death!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable took action and saved Bing Sai Chuan once again.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled. She got a hold of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s weakness, she also bullied him for not having an excellent method to revive his subordinates.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had to avoid colliding with her, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable opened her immortal aperture, letting out Qin Ding Ling and the other immortals.

These Gu Immortals were killed by Lu Wei Yin’s group, but had revived shortly after in the immortal graveyard.

The moment these people exited Star Constellation’s immortal aperture, they spread out and flew towards the truthful floating ice.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2207: Limitless’ Revival!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable coldly activated various methods and killed all these Heavenly Court members.

The two venerables held each other back, exchanging moves one after the other, not letting the other’s subordinates enter the truthful floating ice.

The situation was at a deadlock once again. While the battle continued, a figure suddenly closed in on the truthful floating ice.

It was Shen Shang!

“Seeking death!” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shouted, golden light shooting out of his eyes.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also attacked Shen Shang at the same time.

Shen Shang shouted and quickly retreated, Paradise Earth and Lu Wei Yin used all their strength to protect him.

The two venerables’ attacks broke past layers of defense and reached Shen Shang.

Shen Shang cried out, fainting immediately from the attacks. His injuries were so terrifying that he was only lingering on a single breath.

After fighting for so long, the two venerables were filled with anger, and also knew the limits of the strength they could use now. Shen Shang’s attempt triggered the two venerables’s nerves, he was immediately attacked by both venerables!

Shen Shang’s miserable state caused the pseudo venerables to feel their hearts shaking.

The two venerables used action to tell them that if they wanted to fish for profits right under their eyes, this would be their outcome!

The situation continued to be at a deadlock. The two venerables held each other back, their attention focused on each other, letting the pseudo venerables watch from the sidelines.

And it was an extravagant wish for the pseudo venerables to try to charge into the truthful floating ice. Once they showed any movements, they would be attacked by both venerables.

After Shen Shang’s attempt, Paradise Earth, Qi Jue, and others tried to grab onto opportunities during the fight between the venerables, but it was all in vain.

Lu Wei Yin was heavily injured, while Paradise Earth was lightly injured and was panting heavily.

Soon, Shen Shang woke up, his injuries were severe and were difficult to heal in a short period of time.

When Demon Immortal Qi Jue noticed something wrong, he immediately retreated and gave up on the chance. Thus, his condition was quite good.

As for Fang Yuan, he did not make many moves. He just observed the fight while saving his aperture.

He had finally resolved the black fire!

But he paid an astronomical price.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture, every large and small resource point was damaged. Dang Hun Mountain and Luo Po Valley were burned by black fire, they were in a ruined state.

Many Immortal Gu were also destroyed by the black fire, even more Gu Immortals died.

Sixty percent of the Gu Immortals were dead, including the old Combat Beast King.

Fang Yuan was almost back to his original state due to this tribulation, his foundation had fallen by seventy to eighty percent!

“Only twenty percent of my immortal essence is remaining.” Fang Yuan inwardly calculated.

He had time path methods to accelerate the immortal essence production as well as the help of Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, but his expenditure was too huge.

Let alone the immortal essence expenditure when constructing resource points and refining Immortal Gu, just the repeated large battles caused the immortal essence reserves to fall sharply. Fang Yuan's calculations were of no use, he had no room to save them.

Using just twenty percent of his immortal essence to face the two venerables who were in their optimum states was extremely dangerous.

Boom boom boom!

The two venerables attacked, the power of their killer moves continued to increase, surpassing the previous limit.

The Crazed Demon formation was continuing to operate, Limitless's chains emerged out of thin air and shot towards the two venerables.

The two venerables blocked Limitless' chains, while attacking even more fiercely!

At first, the two venerables were rather restrained. But as the stalemate continued, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable broke the limit and triggered Limitless' chains.

He defended against the chains while attacking Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, quickly gaining the upper hand.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was forced to raise the power of her killer move as well to deal with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. Like this, she also provoked the attacks of Limitless' chains.

The situation was gradually going out of control. The two venerables fought and competed fiercely with each other, gradually using stronger killer moves.

At first, there were only hundreds of chains, but soon, the number increased by several times as they mixed into the venerables' fight.

The pseudo venerables had to retreat again and again, almost forced to the edge of the ninth layer.

“The two venerables are really going all out!”

“No, more accurately speaking, they have no way to hold back. Even though they are aware that this is not optimal, they cannot do anything about it. The vicious competition has already started.”

“What should we do? We won't be able to hold on for long if this continues!”

“So this is a venerable's true strength. Us pseudo venerables don't even have the qualifications to observe the battle closely.”

These pseudo venerables conversed.

Paradise Earth looked at Fang Yuan: “Fang Yuan, do you have a good plan?”

Fang Yuan's face was pale, his aura was extremely weak. He smiled bitterly and shook his head.

However, a change occurred right at this moment.

The two venerables' killer moves collided and exploded, but the leftover power of the moves hit the truthful floating ice.

The truthful floating ice was heavily damaged. Crack, crack, countless cracks appeared on the floating ice.

The three eccentrics were also heavily injured, Pang Shan even died immediately!

“Floating ice, the floating ice!” Secret Schemer coughed blood, but was still shouting in worry. His face was twisted, there was not even a slight bearing of a wisdom path Gu Immortal.

“What are you doing? You idiots. These are the eternal life research results, we just need a person to continue activating practice Gu. But you are actually destroying it!!” Not Immortal hit his chest and stamped his foot, scolding and pointing at the two venerables. He had fallen into a hysterical frenzy.

The pseudo venerables’ expressions looked unsightly, but the two venerables did not listen.

The damage to the eternal life research results shook their hearts.

But they could not stop.

By now, the battle had come to such a state that whoever stopped would be suppressed by the other side, they would suffer a huge loss.

The two venerables had equal strength. Once one side suffered a huge loss, it would influence victory and defeat.

The victory and defeat here was not just about eternal life research results, but also the overall situation of the five regions. Be it Giant Sun Immortal Venerable or Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the winner would influence Longevity Heaven’s and Heavenly Court’s prestige, even determining who the five regions would come under!

Naturally, retreating might be an option too.

But if one retreated, the other side would quickly interfere and obtain the eternal life research results, they could just send someone to complete the final step and obtain the eternal life research results!

Thus, they could not retreat.

Although some of the eternal life research results were destroyed, the main part was still there.

But if they continued to fight like this without anyone willing to retreat, if they were unable to determine victory or defeat, the eternal life research results might really be completely destroyed.

The two venerables were naturally aware of this.

But they could not step back.

Even if everything was destroyed in the end and no one obtained it, it was still better than letting the enemy obtain it!

“Fang Yuan.” Under such a situation, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable suddenly shouted, “Heavenly Court is our common enemy, lend me a hand, I will split the eternal life research results with you, just like Primordial Domain.”

The immortals were astonished.

Not long ago, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had been trying to kill Fang Yuan. But now, he actually took the initiative to request for an alliance.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was actually so shameless?

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable reacted immediately, shouting: “Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court always had the intention of recruiting you, we had tried to recruit you in the past. Now that fate Gu is destroyed, why can’t our sides join hands?”

All the immortals were astonished once again.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable acted like this, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also did the same, did all venerables behave like this?

But soon, the immortals accepted this seemingly absurd fact.

A venerable’s strength surpassed pseudo venerables, but Fang Yuan was different. Not long ago, the two venerables had joined hands to attack him, but he held onto his last breath!

Currently, the two venerables were in a stalemate. Fang Yuan had enough strength to participate, whichever side he joined, the other side would immediately fall into a disadvantageous position.

Just based on the current situation, a slight disadvantage might be enough to decide victory and defeat. Even if the venerables still had spare strength and safety nets, if they could recruit Fang Yuan to get rid of the other side’s trump cards, there would be no loss.

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Venerables, you both have good plans! It is not impossible to get my help. But can you pay the price?”

Fang Yuan had no fear!

His aura had fallen to rock-bottom, the tribulations had ruined his sovereign immortal aperture, but the situation was already different.

No venerable was foolish enough to find trouble with him, because it was not worth it.

Even if the two venerables joined hands again, Fang Yuan was not tied down by the black fire tribulation, he could hold on for some time. What’s more, it was impossible for the two venerables to join hands anymore!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable fell out with Fang Yuan, but he took the initiative to make up for it. It was because Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was strong, and Fang Yuan was weak.

The similar reason applied to the relationship between Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Fang Yuan. Despite Fang Yuan’s and Heavenly Court’s deep enmity, with the eternal life research results right in front, they could work together indeed.

Why not?

Fang Yuan was never a person who was blinded by emotions.

But the falling out between the two venerables could not be easily patched. They were extremely wary of each other. They would only work together if an even stronger force appeared, in which they believed it was more advantageous to do so!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled: “Fang Yuan, I can give you all of my

Primordial Domain!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable bid right after: “I can also give all of my Primordial Domain to you, we can also transact my wisdom path true inheritance and Genesis Lotus’ wood path true inheritance. Not only you, Fang Yuan, this invitation goes to Paradise Earth, Lu Wei Yin, Shen Shang, Qi Jue, and everyone as well, my Heavenly Court’s bearing is known to all. I am willing to swear in the name of Star Constellation...”

Crack crack.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had yet to finish speaking when everyone heard a crisp sound.

Secret Schemer and Not Immortal stared at the truthful floating ice with wide eyes.

Cracks spread and filled the truthful floating ice.

“Did that attack from earlier completely destroy this truthful floating ice?!” Not Immortal shouted while holding his head.

The immortals stared at the truthful floating ice.

If the truthful floating ice broke down completely, what would they be fighting for?

Bam.

At the next moment, a soft sound rang. The truthful floating ice completely broke down, the crystal fragments flew everywhere before gradually dissipating.

Only a human shaped ice was left in the middle.

The form and outline of this human shaped ice were very vague at first. But in just a few breaths of time, it became lifelike. And in another few breaths of time, it was filled with flesh and blood.

Finally, under the immortals’ stupefied gaze, the human shaped ice turned into a Gu Immortal.

“Forever been the Dao-Seeking Crazed Demon,”

“Looking up towards life, death, and the universe.”

“Through a million years of planning and accumulation,”

“On this day, Limitless achieves true eternal life!”

This immortal recited and slowly opened his eyes. His expression was plain, but it shocked Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, and Paradise Earth.

“Limitless?” Paradise Earth could not believe it.

“Limitless!” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable frowned tightly.

“Limitless Demon Venerable, how could you revive? This is impossible!” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable cried out involuntarily.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2208: True Eternal Life

The most shocked person was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

She had penetrated incredibly deeply into Crazed Demon Cave and Limitless' formation. Even after countless investigations, she did not notice that Limitless' revival method was in this Crazed Demon Cave.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had the same investigation results as her.

Precisely so, the two venerables fought so intensely earlier.

But the truth was in front of them, Limitless Demon Venerable had actually managed to revive.

“Don't tell me, when the final piece of truthful floating ice was successfully carved, Limitless Demon Venerable revived and attained eternal life in one step?” Fang Yuan was also shaken.

Fang Yuan could also sense acutely that the current Limitless Demon Venerable's aura far surpassed the other two venerables.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could feel this difference even more deeply.

Facing Limitless Demon Venerable, they seemed to be up against towering mountains and vast oceans.

“This is not in line with historical records, did Limitless Demon Venerable really surpass the venerables and attain eternal life?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's eyes flickered with golden light.

“His current condition is extremely strange, his aura is so strong that even master cannot compare to him.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was shocked and suspicious.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked at each other and moved at the same time, attacking Limitless Demon Venerable with fierce methods.

Limitless Demon Venerable smiled lightly, chains flew around in a spiral, easily resolving the methods of the two venerables.

The two venerables were shocked internally but their fighting spirit soared, they launched even stronger killer moves in response.

Limitless Demon Venerable only defended instead of attacking, even after a few rounds of barraging, they did not manage to harm a hair of Limitless Demon Venerable.

Limitless let out a soft sound as he waved his hands, at once, space rippled, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable retreated immediately.

Paradise Earth and Fang Yuan did not dare to linger either, they quickly dodged.

At once, around a thousand steps of Limitless Demon Venerable, other than Not Immortal and Secret Schemer, there was nobody else.

Giant Sun had a grim expression.

Star Constellation had a deep gaze that flickered with starlight, she seemed to be making deductions with her full strength.

Limitless Demon Venerable smiled: “I do not wish to be enemies with all of you. The fruit of eternal life has been obtained after a million years, but I have not truly tested it yet.”

“How do you want to test it?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable asked.

“Watch.” Limitless Demon Venerable turned around slightly.

All the immortals stared fixedly.

At the original spot that Limitless Demon Venerable was in, a tiny hole appeared.

Through this hole, the Gu Immortals could see a vast sea of — Chaos!

It seemed like black, yet it was not black. It seemed like white, yet it was not white.

If one said it was light, it would be light. If one said it was darkness, it would be darkness.

Almost no descriptive word in the world could accurately describe it.

Because chaos was just chaos after all.

Chaos was the greatest calamity!

“You lunatic, you actually broke the world boundary again, aren’t you afraid that the entire world will be destroyed?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable called out.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also added in with a solemn tone: “Limitless, I know about your aspiration. But if you intend to go ahead with this and destroy the five regions and two heavens, even if I have to sacrifice my life alongside Heavenly Court, we will exterminate you!”

“Both of you, calm down. The hole is not big, I merely want to test the result of this eternal life. Us venerables are invincible in the world, yet we are plagued by tribulations that originate from this chaos.”

“Of the venerables here, who has not gotten injured from the chaos? Who has not suffered an ordeal because of it?”

“Crazed Demon Cave has been active for a million years, there is one most clear indicator if we want to know if the eternal life obtained is successful.”

Saying this, Limitless Demon Venerable extended his arm into the hole.

The other venerables and the various Gu Immortals held their breaths subconsciously, staring at him fixedly.

Limitless Demon Venerable did not activate any killer move, he was using his own body to do this experiment.

He was simply too daring!

Even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would never attempt this.

Even though they could last for some time in the chaos, that was the result of them using their full strength to defend their bodies.

If they acted like Limitless Demon Venerable, who did not put up any defense, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would be completely obliterated with just a slight touch of the chaos! Unless they managed to cut off the body part in time.

Limitless Demon Venerable placed his arm in simply like this, after a while, he pulled back his arm.

His arm was pitch-black, it seemed like charcoal created after a tree was completely burnt.

But when he clenched his arm, the ‘black charcoal’ on the surface instantly vanished into thin air, exposing a slightly smaller arm.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s mouth was wide open as he said dejectedly: “Is this... the true realm of eternal life?!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sigh to herself: “I understand why I did not deduce it now. When you created Crazed Demon Cave, you had constantly been making use of the chaos outside the world. You lunatic!”

Back then, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable nearly destroyed the world, the reason was that he created a huge hole.

And at the deepest part of Limitless’ formation, he broke the world boundary and created a tiny hole.

If there was a commotion in the Crazed Demon formation and this tiny hole became larger, it would be trouble. The entire Gu world might be destroyed as a result.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable called Limitless a lunatic, she was not wrong at all.

For the last million years, the world had been on the brink of destruction. And the reason for this was Limitless Demon Venerable.

Limitless Demon Venerable looked at his arm and sighed softly, replying Star Constellation Immortal Venerable: “In my previous life, I had already reached the end of the road. Even when I asked the Heavenly Dao, there was no possibility of eternal life. I was pitifully restrained by fate Gu, after searching long and hard, through laborious planning, I designed this Crazed Demon Cave. I simply had no other choice but to use this method.”

“But to play safe, I involved Heavenly Court in this.”

“With you guys around, even if a problem occurred in the Crazed Demon formation and the hole got larger, you would do your best to fix it.”

Hearing this, how could Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s expression possibly be amicable?

She realized now that the reason why Limitless Demon Venerable drew her into the gamble was not just because he needed her wisdom path attainment or Heavenly Court’s strength to derive new heaven path research results. The deeper intention was to bring in Heavenly Court’s involvement as an assurance.

If Crazed Demon Cave became a problem, Heavenly Court would have to clean up after Limitless Demon Venerable.

But because of Heavenly Court’s perspective, they would spare no expense in repairing it, they would be willing to do so in fact!

“But...” Limitless Demon Venerable added: “This is still not at the level of eternal life. Don’t you think so too, Paradise Earth?”

Paradise Earth nodded slowly and expressionlessly.

Fang Yuan had some sort of realization, the true realm of eternal life would be complete indestructibility against the chaos. Limitless Demon Venerable had clearly not reached that stage yet.

“Just a bit more, I am lacking by just a bit.” Limitless Demon Venerable continued to shake his head, sighing deeply.

He turned his gaze towards Demon Immortal Qi Jue: “Qi Jue, Qi Jue, can you lend me a hand?”

Demon Immortal Qi Jue snorted coldly: “Why must I help you?”

Limitless Demon Venerable took out practice Gu, smiling: “This Immortal Gu was prepared for you to begin with, Qi Jue, for this moment, I have already waited for you for over a million years.”

Demon Immortal Qi Jue laughed loudly until tears flowed out: “So my revival was really part of your schemes. Hahaha, too laughable, simply too laughable. This is so disappointing, so disappointing!”

He was not mocking Limitless Demon Venerable, he was laughing at himself.

He had always felt resentful and unresigned after losing to Limitless Demon Venerable. After revival, he had always wanted to take revenge.

But at this moment, he finally understood the huge gap between him and Limitless Demon Venerable.

Limitless Demon Venerable was quiet as he watched Demon Immortal Qi Jue cry and laugh, afterwards, he tossed practice Gu to the latter.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue had a complex expression at this moment.

He recalled the scene of the deepest memory he had.

“Limitless, you want to become a venerable, but did you ask me? With me around, you can dream on about becoming a venerable!” Demon Immortal Qi Jue sneak attacked Limitless Demon Venerable and succeeded.

Because he knew that once Limitless became a venerable, he would no longer have a chance of winning.

This battle lasted nine days and nights.

Thereafter, Demon Immortal Qi Jue lost.

His eyes were blood red as he called out to Limitless Demon Venerable: “You have passed the tribulation long ago and became a venerable already. Why did you seal your own cultivation level to fight to the death with me?”

Limitless Demon Venerable was bathed in blood, he had struggled at death’s doors several times during the intense battle.

He smiled lightly: “Because you are my Dao Guardian, only when I am at the brink of death can I understand the true relationship between a venerable and their Dao Guardian. And the truth has been proven, my guess was not wrong after all. I have already comprehended the secret behind the Dao Guardian.”

Demon Immortal Qi Jue stared with wide eyes: “To prove such a guess, you even disregarded your own life? Even though you had already become a venerable, even though you are already invincible in the world?!”

Limitless Demon Venerable replied plainly: “Even though I became a venerable, this is merely another cultivation level. Compared to this, I would prefer to pursue the Great Dao.”

...

“Limitless, oh Limitless. Even a million years cannot change your nature. You are still that Limitless I know!” Demon Immortal Qi Jue pointed at Demon Immortal Qi Jue and shouted.

Limitless Demon Venerable smiled: “Like how I am still Limitless, you are also still that Demon Immortal Qi Jue, right?”

Demon Immortal Qi Jue gritted his teeth, he seemed to have become too helpless to rage, he grabbed practice Gu and flew towards Limitless Demon Venerable: “You are right, I am still me. Then let’s do it!”

Bright light flashed in Limitless Demon Venerable’s eyes: “Good! You are my Dao Guardian, our destinies are intertwined, according to my deduction, only with the help of the Dao Guardian can a venerable go one step further, to break through the realm of venerable and attain eternal life!”

Demon Immortal Qi Jue gritted his teeth: “Then let me see what is true eternity!”

Saying so, he activated practice Gu.

The light of practice Gu enveloped Limitless Demon Venerable’s entire body.

Limitless Demon Venerable’s body expanded rapidly, he went from a normal person’s size to a ten foot giant.

In contrast, Demon Immortal Qi Jue became weaker and weaker, his aura fell to rock bottom, he had no choice but to stop using practice Gu.

As for Limitless Demon Venerable’s aura, it was completely concealed, no different from an ordinary mortal.

But anyone could tell that the current Limitless Demon Venerable had become powerful to a point which nobody could fathom. Because even against the investigative killer moves of the various immortals, he was no different than a common man.

The immortals could not see through him!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, Paradise Earth, and the others did not move, they watched in anticipation.

Even if they wanted to stop him, it would be too difficult.

Limitless Demon Venerable took in a deep breath before stretching his arm into the hole of the world boundary again.

A moment later, he pulled back his arm, it was completely intact!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2209: Limitless’ Death

Everyone was silent.

Even for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, after seeing Limitless Demon Venerable’s intact arm, they fell into extreme shock.

After a Gu cultivator became an immortal, they would face earthly calamities, heavenly tribulations, grand tribulations, and myriad tribulations. After becoming rank nine, the calamities and tribulations would become even more terrifying.

Venerables faced a grand tribulation every ten years, a myriad tribulation every fifty years, and a chaotic disaster every one hundred years!

This chaotic disaster originated from the chaos outside the world boundary.

Each time it arrived, the venerable’s life would be in danger, they had to use their full strength to fight for a chance of survival.

Ordinary Gu Immortals did not know this, but all the past venerables had gone through these terrifying chaotic disasters, they knew about the terror of this tribulation.

And now, Limitless Demon Venerable tested it with his own body, without even using any defensive methods, he resisted the chaos and returned unharmed!!!

This scene was a huge shock to the present venerables.

As for people like Fang Yuan who knew the details while not having experienced them personally, his shock was not as great as the venerables.

“You did it.” A while later, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sighed deeply and said.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable remained silent.

“No, he hasn’t. This is not true eternal life yet!” Paradise Earth suddenly spoke, he had a tone and expression of certainty.

Everyone looked towards him.

“Indeed, I have not. This is not considered eternal life.” At the next moment, Limitless Demon Venerable agreed with the words as he showed an expression of dejectedness.

Next, he made a shocking move.

He opened his mouth towards the hole of the world boundary and started to suck in.

A large amount of chaos was sucked into Limitless Demon Venerable’s stomach!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable watched with contracted pupils, they could not help but take in a deep breath.

If a venerable was considered a child, the chaos would be fire. earlier, when Limitless Demon Venerable placed his hand into the chaos, he was roasting his flesh with the fire. But now, he was even more daring, he was swallowing fire!

After Limitless Demon Venerable sucked in a large amount of chaos, he sat down in a cross-legged fashion.

At the same time, chaos seeped out of the hole and rushed towards his head, shoulders, and body like a flowing river.

Limitless Demon Venerable activated his killer move for the first time, an immensely strong aura burst out and shook the minds of all the immortals present.

Everyone watched silently, they knew that Limitless Demon Venerable was currently giving it a try.

This was an advancement!

He was trying to advance to the true realm of eternal life!!

Ever since he was a child, he had maintained a heart of curiosity.

He was like an innocent child who was filled with desire to explore the unknown.

He wanted to know everything, he wanted to know the truth.

He did not pursue fame or fortune, the status of a venerable did not make him feel any pride or arrogance.

He had once reached the peak of the world, the end of heaven and earth.

But he still wanted to continue moving!

Yet, there was no road ahead of him.

Thus, he planned meticulously and worked with Star Constellation, dragging the entire Gu cultivation world along with his dangerous plan of creating the Crazed Demon formation, he prepared for a million years just for this moment.

All of it was to pursue the truth!

No road remained ahead of him.

Thus, he moved his legs and exerted all his strength to step into the boundless darkness.

He wanted to carve out his own road!

This was the final push.

Limitless was doing his best!

A long time passed, but it felt like an instant.

Whoosh.

Black fire started to spew out of Limitless Demon Venerable’s nose and ears.

The immortals’ hearts shook.

Next, Limitless Demon Venerable opened his eyes slowly and looked at the immortals, saying plainly: “I failed.”

“No! I am still around.” Demon Immortal Qi Jue shouted and made his move, using all his strength to activate practice Gu.

A wave of profound light shot towards Limitless Demon Venerable’s body from Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

The black fire on Limitless Demon Venerable was quickly extinguished!

Limitless Demon Venerable gained some time to rest, he laughed loudly and shook his head: “Qi Jue, you can stop now.”

“How can we determine the result before putting in all our effort?” Demon Immortal Qi Jue rebuked in anger, “Are you willing to give up like this? The true eternal life... I want, I want to see it too!”

Demon Venerable sighed, a complex expression could be seen on his face: “I failed even after a million years of accumulation. Don’t you get it? Eternal life — does not exist.”

At the next moment.

Bam.

Limitless Demon Venerable shattered abruptly, turning back into countless fragments of truthful floating ice.

“No!!” Secret Schemer and Not Immortal screamed in unison, grieving like they had lost their loved one.

Limitless Demon Venerable failed!

Because Demon Immortal Qi Jue had too close of a connection with him, the chaos instantly approached him, as it swept past him, he vanished without a trace!

The great pseudo venerable did not even manage to last three breaths of time.

The power of the terrifying chaotic disaster was evident with one glance!

The immortals were still in a daze.

This battle in Crazed Demon Cave that took a million years of accumulation and also all the venerables’ planning ended like this?

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable revived, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable also revived, Paradise Earth changed to cultivating heaven path, while Spectral Soul Demon Venerable lost his reasoning. In the end, Limitless Demon Venerable suppressed everyone in strength, but he still failed to succeed.

He died, he died on the road of exploration.

Eternal life?

It was a mere dream.

There was nothing!

It did not exist!!

“How could he fail? How could he fail!” Not Immortal shouted.

Secret Schemer held his head and muttered dejectedly: “There is no eternal life... hehe, there is no eternal life... hehe.”

He had gone insane!

“Does eternal life really not exist in this world? Venerable is the limit, there is no... road ahead?” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable muttered to herself.

She had asked the question that all the immortals were wondering!

But nobody could answer it.

Limitless Demon Venerable might be the most qualified in this aspect, since he had already surpassed everyone else by a huge margin.

But he had died.

It failed.

He died from the chaotic disaster.

Using his life, it seemed like he exposed a cruel truth to the immortals.

Whoosh!

Right at this moment, the sound of wind could be heard.

Fang Yuan suddenly made his move, snatching a piece of the truthful floating ice!

The immortals were instantly jolted awake.

Limitless Demon Venerable died and turned into pieces of truthful floating ice.

Most of the truthful floating ice had been destroyed in the chaos, but a small portion remained.

The chaos... could not do anything to them!

They were the eternal life results derived by Limitless’ Crazed Demon formation, they were definitely the essence of his hard work!!

Limitless Demon Venerable died, but his million years of hard work had not gone down the drain, he left behind abundant results!

Snatch them!!

There was nothing else to say, after the immortals reacted, they attacked almost at the same time.

Rumble...

A large number of killer moves were activated, colliding into each other and exploding loudly.

Heaven shook and the earth cracked!

Not Immortal and Secret Schemer did not even manage to make a sound before they died on the spot.

But the remaining pieces of the truthful floating ice were intact and still shining radiantly!

This was expected.

Even the chaotic disaster could do nothing to them, venerables and pseudo venerables were also unable to damage them with their killer moves.

Rumble...

The scene was chaotic, killer moves influenced each other as the immortals restrained one another.

“Get lost!!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shouted angrily, golden light surged in the sky, exploding fiercely like a crashing tsunami, everywhere it went, nothing could stop it.

Fang Yuan and the other pseudo venerables quickly dodged.

The golden aurora light suddenly turned into a spiral that sucked in a piece of the truthful floating ice.

Seeing this, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted coldly and scattered some flying stars, hundreds or thousands of them radiated with starlight and crashed into the golden aurora, getting mutually destroyed.

As Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not succeed, the truthful floating ice that was taken by the golden aurora was free again, it floated freely in the void.

This was the largest truthful floating ice, all of the remaining truthful floating ice fragments were merely its size after being added up. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was attempting to take away half of this eternal life result that took a million years to nurture, how could that happen? Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would not allow him to succeed!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s gazes were locked onto each other.

Right at this time, Lu Wei Yin suddenly made a move, targeting the small truthful floating ice fragment that was closest to him.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not move, but starlight appeared out of nowhere, sending Lu Wei Yin flying.

At almost the same time, Fang Yuan was also stopped by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

He wanted to target the other truthful floating ices but golden light shot down like needles, almost piercing his body.

The two venerables opposed each other, but they held the same attitude towards Fang Yuan and the rest.

Be it Star Constellation Immortal Venerable or Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, they were very domineering, they did not want the truthful floating ice to end up with anyone else.

Lu Wei Yin and Fang Yuan were obstructed, at this time, the pseudo venerables had to prepare and wait for another moment to arise when the two venerables fought again.

The hole was gradually expanding.

Limitless Demon Venerable had already died. Before he died, he was able to suppress the tiny hole.

But after his death, the power he left behind was weakening, even though chaos did not seep out of the hole in the world boundary anymore, that was going to happen soon.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable took a look at the hole in the world boundary, he spoke calmly to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable: “Star Constellation, why don’t we have a ceasefire again and deal with these pseudo venerables first. We can then fix the world boundary’s hole and split the truthful floating ice between ourselves. How’s that?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable nodded and replied to him with her direct actions.

Immediately, starlight danced around and shot everywhere, launching fatal attacks towards Fang Yuan and the other pseudo venerables.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s killer move soon followed.

Fang Yuan and the rest had to dodge everywhere, they escaped in distress.

Limitless Demon Venerable died and the Crazed Demon formation was destroyed, without Limitless’ retaliation method, the two venerables were free to attack.

Of course, they did not use their full strength, even in the current situation. The reason was that they were guarding against each other.

Even so, Fang Yuan and the rest were in dangerous situations, they were often struggling in the face of death.

“I can’t continue resisting these two venerables’ power. Everyone, I’m leaving first.” Fang Yuan shouted and dragged Qi Sea Ancestor along, wanting to leave the ninth layer.

Paradise Earth frowned immediately.

Crazed Demon Cave only had the ninth layer left now, if Fang Yuan left, the two venerables would not have the opportunity to chase him.

Because anyone who left would be giving the other venerable a chance.

It meant giving up the snatching of the truthful floating ice!

Because next, as long as either venerable made a move to seal the ninth layer of Crazed Demon Cave, the pseudo venerables would have trouble trying to come in again after they leave.

As long as they stalled for some time, the two venerables would be able to keep away the truthful floating ice, after that, they would be able to easily deal with the pseudo venerables!

But right at this moment, the two venerables snorted coldly together.

“Others can leave, but you, Fang Yuan, cannot!”

“Please leave behind the truthful floating ice that you snatched away earlier, you cannot bring this away with you.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable spoke one sentence each, expressing their honest attitude.

Among the Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan was the first to get a piece. Everyone else including the two venerables had not obtained anything yet.

And Fang Yuan’s piece was quite big too, it was at least ten percent of the entire truthful floating ice!

At this moment, the two venerables cooperated again, dealing with Fang Yuan together.

Fang Yuan’s expression changed.

Earlier, the two venerables worked together to deal with him, but the pressure now was incomparable to before.

Soon, Fang Yuan was forced to activate reverse flow protection seal again!

Reverse Flow River was nearly depleted earlier, but after it was replenished during this period of time, the river water had risen slightly in sovereign immortal aperture.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s killer moves were quickly reflected back to them.

However, for these two venerables, reverse flow protection seal was only a slight bother, it was a mere obstacle.

As long as they used skillful methods, they would be able to resolve it in some time.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2210: Paradise Earth’s Death

“Paradise Earth, I am willing to share my truthful floating ice with you. Right now, we cannot afford to leave each other in the lurch, we must be united and work together.” Fang Yuan shouted.

Paradise Earth nodded: “Fang Yuan, you are right!”

Saying so, he made his move.

But he disregarded Fang Yuan, he targeted a piece of truthful floating ice.

The truthful floating ice was quickly kept in Paradise Earth’s immortal aperture.

At the same time, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable targeted that largest truthful floating ice again!

As long as he obtained this, he would be the biggest winner in this Crazed Demon Cave situation. The two venerables were unable to defeat each other, if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable wanted to leave, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not stop him.

“Don’t think about it!” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had a cold gaze.

Bam.

Killer moves collided, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable managed to repel Giant Sun Immortal Venerable again, but she could not stop Paradise Earth in time.

Heaven path method!

The heaven path method that Paradise Earth used to take the truthful floating ice was very profound, his aura was initially concealed to the limit, even the two venerables could not detect it. After activation, the move was extremely fast, even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not stop it in time, allowing Paradise Earth to succeed!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sighed deeply, she took out that mysterious secluded domain of heaven and earth again.

This secluded domain of heaven and earth looked like a lantern, once Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used her killer move, she lifted the lantern and shined it on all the Gu Immortals.

At the next moment, a tsunami made of endless emotions surged into the immortals’ hearts!

Their expressions changed abruptly, they resisted with difficulty.

Fang Yuan activated fortitude Gu while Giant Sun Immortal Venerable instilled immortal essence into familial emotion Gu, Paradise Earth activated the killer move emotionless heaven and earth instead to resolve it.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snickered, she took out Book Mountain again.

Book Mountain shined with dazzling light, all sorts of killer moves were replicated and unleashed on the Gu Immortals.

There was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s method, Qi Sea Ancestor’s and Demon Immortal Qi Jue’s killer moves, Paradise Earth’s killer move, and even Limitless Demon Venerable’s method!

At this moment, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable finally unleashed her full strength, using the two killer moves with these two secluded domains of heaven and earth as the cores to suppress everyone that was currently present.

Her expression paled immediately, the starlight specks around her dimmed, she had consumed over ten billion thoughts to do this, they were nearly fully expended.

Using this time, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable activated Book Mountain, Limitless’ chains flew out to grab the truthful floating ice and send it into her immortal aperture.

This truthful floating ice was not the biggest one, but it contained an Immortal Gu!

Nobody noticed this Immortal Gu except Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Precisely because of it, she was willing to temporarily give up the largest truthful floating ice piece and grabbed this smaller piece first.

After collecting the Immortal Gu, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable immediately stopped her killer move, she stored away Book Mountain and focused on defense.

Her action was very wise.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could no longer control himself.

At the next moment, he shouted loudly, golden light shot out fiercely with his retaliation.

Attacks rained down harshly, forcing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to retreat continuously, she was like a helpless floating duckweed in the storm.

Using this opportunity, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable took a piece of the truthful floating ice as well.

This was not the largest truthful floating ice piece, but it was the one closest to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Because he knew that he could only suppress Star Constellation Immortal Venerable for a few breaths of time, there was no time to take the largest truthful floating ice!

As expected, at the next moment, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable recovered and attacked Giant Sun Immortal Venerable again.

The two venerables fought intensely, because they were using their full strength while trying to get the truthful floating ice pieces, they did not have the time or energy to spend on other matters. This gave the pseudo venerables a good chance.

Fang Yuan and Paradise Earth took three or four pieces each.

Lu Wei Yin, Shen Shang, and Qi Sea also obtained one or two pieces.

Not long after, the truthful floating ice fragments were all taken except for that final largest piece!

The two venerables had considerable injuries now, their attempts to take it were all thwarted by the other party.

The two venerables raced against time, attacking the pseudo venerables again.

This time, they fought with more motivation. After all, the pseudo venerables all had some truthful floating ice pieces on them.

“Oh?” While the two venerables suppressed the pseudo venerables, they started to feel a little surprised.

Because Paradise Earth was displaying greater battle strength than before!

Almost every breath of time, his strength grew by some extent, his aura was already inching closer to the level of a rank nine venerable now.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s eyes shined with bright light: “So that’s it. Paradise Earth, because you converted to cultivating heaven path, and because this truthful floating ice is closely related to heaven path, you can draw strength from it to raise your cultivation level, this is a brilliant method!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable spoke with a tone of admiration, but her killing intent surged correspondingly as well.

Earlier, when Fang Yuan asked for help, Paradise Earth ignored him to snatch that truthful floating ice, so this was the reason!

Evidently, as long as he could get sufficient truthful floating ice pieces, Paradise Earth would be able to alleviate the flaw of being prematurely revived and become a venerable again.

And this time, he would not be an earth path venerable, but most uniquely, a heaven path venerable!

Once Paradise Earth became a heaven path venerable, his strength would likely rise up to the top of the world.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable were not going to sit around and watch this happen.

Fate Gu had been destroyed, the entire world was pretty much ruled by them. Nobody would want to see the return of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, especially when this Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable would have far greater strength than them!

There was no communication, the two venerables worked together for the third time.

This time, they gave up on Fang Yuan, focusing on Paradise Earth instead.

Paradise Earth activated heaven path killer moves consecutively to block the two venerables’ attacks, but soon, he showed signs of being unable to continue.

Even though the heaven path methods were vast and profound, the two venerables had greater strength now.

Paradise Earth fell into a life-and-death crisis, he shouted at the rest: “Please lend me a hand!”

Lu Wei Yin and Shen Shang hesitated for a moment before tossing their truthful floating ice pieces into treasure yellow heaven at almost the same time.

Paradise Earth took the truthful floating ices from treasure yellow heaven and quickly used them to raise his cultivation level.

His aura grew once more, he was only inches away from reaching venerable level.

“I am only one step away, Fang Yuan!” Paradise Earth transmitted urgently.

Fang Yuan snickered: “I can give you the truthful floating ice, but Paradise Earth, can you pay a sufficient price that will satisfy me?”

Paradise Earth gritted his teeth, he immediately sent the Northern Plains Paradise Earth true inheritance into treasure yellow heaven, along with all sorts of heaven path killer moves and his own heaven path cultivation experiences.

Of course, the most important thing was the alliance agreement.

To get the most crucial truthful floating ice, Paradise Earth made a huge concession!

Fang Yuan placed a small piece of the truthful floating ice into treasure yellow heaven, the two quickly made the transaction.

“Haha, Paradise Earth, you can have the final truthful floating ice pieces too!” After the transaction was done, Fang Yuan shouted loudly.

Paradise Earth’s heart shook.

Indeed, at the next moment, both venerables erupted with killer moves surrounding Paradise Earth, barraging him with attacks!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable raised the lantern high up, endless emotions assaulted his heart.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable grabbed with his hands continuously, attacking Paradise Earth’s luck.

Paradise Earth was covered in terrifying injuries, he was like a mortal hanging on a cliff, moments away from dying.

Shen Shang, Lu Wei Yin, and even Fang Yuan and Qi Sea Ancestor attacked from afar, using killer moves to try to help out Paradise Earth.

But it was no use!

Paradise Earth gritted his teeth, struggling desperately. The truthful floating ice melted gradually, helping him to push to the level of a venerable once again!

But at the crucial moment, Paradise Earth’s killer move had a peculiar mistake.

The killer move failed and the backlash triggered, Paradise Earth’s cultivation level was stuck at the final step.

The two venerables’ attacks arrived and instantly engulfed Paradise Earth.

“Quickly save him!” Lu Wei Yin shouted and was the first to move.

The other pseudo venerables’ hearts jumped too as they took action.

The two venerables were not willing to see Paradise Earth getting saved, they chased after him too.

The pseudo venerables used all their strengths and disregarded their own danger, managing to block Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s attacks with great difficulty.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s starlight still hit Paradise Earth’s body.

Paradise Earth shouted loudly, veins bulged on his face as he used all his strength to activate a killer move.

With his defensive killer move broken, his body became covered in countless holes that were ravaged by the starlight, but his healing method was still effective, Paradise Earth was forcefully holding onto his last breath.

At this time, Qi Sea made a move, shielding Fang Yuan, who quickly got closer to Paradise Earth’s side.

“Fang Yuan!” Lu Wei Yin and Shen Shang jolted, the light of hope shined in their eyes.

The two venerables’ expressions sank slightly.

Right as Fang Yuan was about to save Paradise Earth...

Boom!

Fang Yuan’s palm slammed onto Paradise Earth’s back and penetrated his chest.

Paradise Earth was already at his last breath, Fang Yuan’s attack was the fatal blow that he could not endure.

At the moment before his death, Paradise Earth’s eyes stared wide as he grabbed Fang Yuan’s hand.

“Paradise Earth, rest in peace.” Fang Yuan smiled lightly.

At the next moment, Paradise Earth’s dwindling aura dissipated entirely.

He died with eyes wide open!

The entire scene shook.

The two venerables looked at Fang Yuan with peculiar expressions.

Lu Wei Yin’s lips were trembling, he broke the silence and shouted in a hoarse voice: “Fang Yuan, what have you done?!”

“Fang Yuan, this...” Shen Shang’s eyeballs were almost going to pop out.

Qi Sea Ancestor stopped beside Fang Yuan’s main body, showing a strange expression as well.

Everyone knew that in this situation with two unrivaled venerables, Paradise Earth was their only hope of resisting them. But the one who killed this hope was not the two venerables, but Fang Yuan himself!

Was Fang Yuan crazy?

He actually did something like this!

It was too absurd.

“Something’s not right.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable muttered to himself.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable frowned slightly as well but did not speak.

The two venerables saw that Fang Yuan was keeping away Paradise Earth’s corpse into sovereign immortal aperture so calmly, they sensed a slight change in the atmosphere.

“Fang Yuan, how are we going to get out of this?” Shen Shang asked anxiously.

“Without Lord Paradise Earth, how can we resist the two venerables?!” Lu Wei Yin was stomping his feet and staring at Fang Yuan angrily.

Fang Yuan smiled plainly: “It is simple, wouldn’t it be fine if I am a venerable?”

Saying so, he no longer concealed his aura, exposing it at this moment.

Rank nine cultivation level!

At once, the entire battlefield went silent.

“Mere tricks.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted coldly, starlight flowed like water as it surged towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan breathed out lightly, a qi tide poured out and blocked all the starlight.

At the other end, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable also tried to probe, golden needles shot down like a torrential rain.

Fang Yuan waved his hand, red aurora filled the sky, incinerating all of the golden needles.

The pupils of the two venerables shrank.

Lu Wei Yin, Shen Shang, and even Fang Yuan’s clone, Qi Sea Ancestor, were tongue-tied.

Even against the attacks of the two venerables, Fang Yuan blocked them perfectly, he displayed genuine rank nine cultivation level!

Did he really become a venerable?!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2211: Fang Yuan Becomes Venerable!

Rumble...

Fang Yuan’s killer moves shot out, forcing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to retreat.

“What in the world is going on?”

“Since when did Fang Yuan become a venerable?!”

Lu Wei Yin and Shen Shang watched as Fang Yuan fought the two venerables, they had complex emotions and asked Qi Sea Ancestor urgently.

Qi Sea Ancestor was also confused, he smiled bitterly: “I had no clue either.”

Lu Wei Yin and Shen Shang were speechless, Fang Yuan had hid this so deeply that he even deceived his own clone!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable remained silent.

Because they found that Fang Yuan’s strength had vaguely surpassed either of them!

He was still a rank eight pseudo venerable earlier, how did he turn into a genuine rank nine so suddenly?!

The two venerables were very confused and suspicious.

“Strange, strange, very strange!” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable attacked fiercely, golden light rained down with imposing might.

Fang Yuan responded with a shout, his prepared method was activated, forcefully suppressing the overwhelming golden light.

“The dao marks on his body far surpass Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!” Seeing this, Lu Wei Yin and the rest felt their hearts jumping.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable took in a deep breath of cold air secretly, he focused his eyes and activated a method.

At the next moment, his vision changed, he started to observe the luck above Fang Yuan’s head.

Initially, Fang Yuan’s luck was completely hidden, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could only see Cooking Luck Pot.

But soon, after Giant Sun Immortal Venerable intensified the force of this move and golden blood flowed out of his eyes, he finally got through Cooking Luck Pot’s defense and saw Fang Yuan’s true luck.

He saw a silver pillar of light that connected heaven and earth, it was grand and condensed.

At the base of the silvery pillar, there was a brown grave, it had mostly dissipated now, only a small part was left.

Seeing this, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had a thought, he sighed to himself: “This is Paradise Earth’s luck, on one hand, it can stabilize the foundation of the silver light pillar, but on the other hand, it is also digging away and replacing Fang Yuan’s foundation. It was the biggest threat to Fang Yuan’s luck initially, now that he killed Paradise Earth, this threat has been removed! This remaining part of the grave is the foundation of Paradise Earth that Fang Yuan has yet to devour completely.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable raised his head again, looking at the top of the silver light pillar.

Earlier when they joined forces, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had observed Fang Yuan’s luck. Compared to then, Fang Yuan’s silver light pillar was no longer blocked by three clouds at the top.

It shot right through them, truly looking like it was holding up the heavens and supporting the earth!

The three clouds could only revolve around the top part of the silver pillar.

This meant that the three venerables could no longer hold Fang Yuan down.

Among the three clouds, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s cloud had turned into a golden-blood colored cloud, it was at the top. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s clouds were below his, they seemed to have the trend of tearing apart.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was moved again: “Is this hinting that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable is quickly breaking free from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s control?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was not surprised.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was someone on the same level as Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, it was already an incredibly shocking achievement that she could control him. But it was unrealistic to try fully controlling a venerable.

“If Spectral Soul Demon Venerable escapes from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s control later, what will happen?”

“No matter what, in terms of luck alone, Fang Yuan has truly become a venerable!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable believed in his own luck path methods, he was finally convinced at this moment.

At this time, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable looked towards Fang Yuan with some rage in his eyes.

How did Fang Yuan become a venerable in the blink of an eye?

Looking at his expression and attitude, it seemed like he held indifference towards rank nine cultivation level, what did he take this venerable status as?

If rank nine venerables could appear so easily, then what would Giant Sun Immortal Venerable amount to?

What would the past venerables amount to?

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was also considering rapidly: “Fang Yuan has rank nine cultivation level indeed. I underestimated his craftiness and shrewdness! When did he become a venerable? Did he have this cultivation level from the start? All the signs do not point to that possibility. He had secretly become a venerable during a certain moment in the Crazed Demon Cave battle. But... he clearly lacked attainment level.”

In the contest in Primordial Domain, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable ganged up on Fang Yuan and destroyed the refinement path portion of the Primordial Domain.

“Wait!” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable suddenly turned his head, retreating as he looked at Fang Yuan, asking: “Did the Thieving Heaven true inheritance contain refinement path true meaning? So you had the necessary refinement path attainment level long ago.”

Fang Yuan smiled, but his attacks became even fiercer.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was sent flying by consecutive attacks.

Using this timing, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable shot out countless flying stars that flew like lightning, landing on Fang Yuan’s back one after another.

Fang Yuan staggered from the hit, he almost lost his balance and fell forward.

But immediately after, he straightened his back and wiped it with his hand.

Starlight specks were shining intensely on his back, they were the dao marks left behind by the flying stars.

But after Fang Yuan wiped them, all of these dao marks were refined into his own!

The power of rank nine refinement path!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s heart jumped.

It was terrible to her that Fang Yuan had such a method. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s combat system did not excel in powerful individual offensive methods, she mainly relied on consecutive hits. And the key to these consecutive hits were the dao marks that the flying stars left behind.

With these dao marks, the following flying stars would be able to deal increasingly greater damage to the enemy.

But Fang Yuan refined these dao marks into his own, the flying star consecutive move was easily broken.

If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable continued to use this move, she would not be fighting Fang Yuan but funding him instead!

Fang Yuan easily got rid of the flying star consecutive move and launched his own counterattack.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not deal with him head on, she had to temporarily retreat.

“He is very proficient with this refinement path killer move, it shows that Fang Yuan came prepared. But he held back the entire time, waiting for the final moment of this Crazed Demon Cave fight and after he became rank nine to utilize this trump card!”

At this moment, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable finally understood the true extent of Fang Yuan’s craftiness.

The killer move was prepared long ago, otherwise, it could not be used so quickly after Fang Yuan became rank nine. If he used it earlier, the effect would be great too, but he refused to activate it, causing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to assume that he was helpless against the flying star killer move.

At the final battle, he used it and caught Star Constellation Immortal Venerable off guard immediately.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable suddenly had a flash of inspiration, she realized a portion of the truth at this moment as she spoke: “Fang Yuan, well done, you purposely did that during the Primordial Domain contest. You purposely held back and gave up on competing for Primordial Domain, thus Giant Sun and I destroyed the refinement path part of the Primordial Domain. You were purposely pretending to be weak so that we would look down on and put less attention on you!”

Hearing these words, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s heart lit up, he could not help but feel more anger towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan remained smiling as he said plainly: “Star Constellation, you are thinking too highly of me.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled coldly: “Fang Yuan, don’t think of deceiving us anymore. Regardless of whether Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance had refinement path true meaning, before you entered Primordial Domain, you were already extremely close to supreme grandmaster attainment level. After entering Primordial Domain, you realized that even if you gave up a portion of the refinement path Primordial Domain, you could still become a refinement path supreme grandmaster by yourself.”

“Thus, you purposely held back and let Giant Sun and I seemingly ruin your chances of becoming a venerable.”

“There were many benefits in this.”

“Firstly, becoming a venerable would mean breaking through the Heavenly Dao blockade, you would need to undergo tribulation and it carries many risks, you have to find the right timing to do so. Once you become a supreme grandmaster openly, we would be on guard against you.”

“Secondly, even if you became a venerable quickly, before the three worlds united, Limitless’ eternal life result was still far away from us, everyone needed to wait. Furthermore, because of Limitless’ retaliation, even if you became a venerable, you could not use your strength.”

“Thirdly, if you were not a venerable, we would subconsciously ignore you. In our minds, even if Paradise Earth was just a pseudo venerable, he was still more threatening than you.”

“Finally, everyone was holding back during the Crazed Demon Cave battle, a lot of trump cards were not revealed. For example, you did not know how much I had infiltrated the Crazed Demon formation. Thus, you concealed your methods and waited for the situation to become clearer, after we went through our methods, before trying to claim victory!”

While defending against Fang Yuan’s attacks, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable analyzed and exposed Fang Yuan’s schemes to everyone.

Be they Giant Sun Immortal Venerable or Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, they did not want a third venerable contesting with them.

Paradise Earth was the best example.

He was trying to become a venerable under the attention of the two venerables, in the end, he got heavily injured because of them.

As Giant Sun Immortal Venerable listened to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s explanation, his mind became increasingly clear.

With a loud howling sound, he stepped on a giant golden aurora and charged at Fang Yuan.

At the same time, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also pincer attacked Fang Yuan from another direction.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2212: Refine Gu, Refine Human, and Refine Heaven!!

Seeing the fierce attacks of the enemies, Fang Yuan quickly dodged for the time being.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable pursued relentlessly as he shouted: “Back then, when I fought my way into the Door of Life and Death, I wanted to probe Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s trump card and learn of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s current condition. But you also went inside, it was truly a great scheme! If you remained in the outside world, you would need to deal with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, who went out. But if you followed me, you would be able to see the strength of Heavenly Court and my Longevity Heaven.”

At that time, because of Heavenly Court’s arrangements, the Door of Life and Death was tightly connected to the immortal graveyard, it could not be destroyed forcefully in a short period of time.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable secretly inspected their lucks, after learning of this peculiar change in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s lucks, he wanted to find out the reason. If possible, he wanted to ruin this ‘intimate relationship’ between them.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable knew that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had hidden cards too, but he went inside the Door of Life and Death regardless.

Because he had his own trump cards.

When he used the blood path method to revive, no matter how severe his injuries got, he would be fully healed.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had been trying to make the best use of this trump card, he tried all ways possible to probe more of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s methods.

From Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s perspective, this was the first time he was fighting against a venerable.

Venerables had immense foundation, he needed to probe carefully.

To destroy the immortal graveyard, he had to target the Door of Life and Death. By going inside, he could inspect if there was really a relationship between Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. If possible, he would destroy that connection and save Spectral Soul Demon Venerable before working together. Or if possible, he could even try to take the Door of Life and Death for himself!

With all these intentions, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable managed to find out Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s method involving emotions on this trip.

When Star Constellation Immortal Venerable left the Door of Life and Death, did Giant Sun Immortal Venerable really not have any way of stopping her?

That was not the case.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was happy to see Star Constellation Immortal Venerable leave.

Firstly, the eternal life result still needed some time to nurture, he had already left behind his investigative method in the Crazed Demon formation, that was Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

Secondly, three parties were contesting in Crazed Demon Cave then, other than Green Lotus Great World’s Heavenly Court, and Savage Wilderness Great World’s Longevity Heaven, there was also Yellow Earth Great World’s Paradise Earth.

In the end, through this contest, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable forced Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable to revive prematurely, causing him to only have pseudo venerable cultivation level.

When Paradise Earth went into the Door of Life and Death, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not use his biggest trump card before leaving. Even though he did not save Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he managed to ally with Paradise Earth.

Boom!

As Fang Yuan retaliated, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s killer move was broken, he was forced back again.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable yelled: “Fang Yuan, I am sure you wanted to see Paradise Earth’s premature resurrection as well. Such great acting, truly great acting skills! After leaving the Door of Life and Death, I was hit by Qin Ding Ling’s method and fell into a disadvantage. I needed you to take action but you were trapped by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. That was your intentional excuse! You purposely made the Qi Sea clone activate Hu elevation, that way, the Qi Sea clone would be restrained again, while Zhan Bu Du was unable to get away. You managed to watch openly as our two sides fought and expended each other's strength!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable said while gritting his teeth.

Back then, he still had an immortal zombie body, he was suppressed by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and schemed against by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, his combat system's foundation was uprooted. Even though the situation was dangerous, Giant Sun was not flustered.

Because he still had the greatest trump card unused!

Giant Sun held back and waited because he wanted to see the trump cards of these other people.

In the end, Paradise Earth made his move.

Paradise Earth did not attack Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, instead, he tried to help Giant Sun, after failing, he immediately saved Fang Yuan.

This showed that Paradise Earth's intentions were not simple either.

However, after Fang Yuan was ‘saved’, he still refused to help out Giant Sun, instead, he went to kill the unimportant Qin Ding Ling.

This way, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had no choice but to use his blood path trump card, reviving completely.

Fang Yuan succeeded in killing Qin Ding Ling, but how could he deceive Giant Sun Immortal Venerable with such superficial actions.

Giant Sun was very clear of it in his heart, since he exposed his true strength, he immediately changed his position and joined up with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to deal with Fang Yuan.

Because of this, Fang Yuan was attacked by two venerables, he had to expend Reverse Flow River, but still got hit in the end, his immortal aperture suffered calamities and tribulations.

“Wait!” Thinking of this, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable realized and called out: “During that time, you used the opportunity of your immortal aperture getting hit to obscure the aura and use the chance to break through the Heavenly Dao blockade, by stacking tribulation with tribulation, you deceived everyone and got past the final tribulation, becoming a venerable!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable finally understood everything.

Back then, he thought that he had succeeded when he inspected Fang Yuan's falling luck and the aura of calamities and tribulations in his aperture. But to think that Fang Yuan was making use of this to secretly tackle the Heavenly Dao blockade and break through an even stronger tribulation.

With just Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's method, he could definitely not create black fire in Fang Yuan's sovereign immortal aperture.

The black fire was the remnant product of the chaotic disaster.

Fang Yuan did not speak, he attacked fiercely, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable resisted with difficulty.

He stared at Fang Yuan and continued to speak: “Through that method, you became a venerable without anyone noticing. I originally thought that you were not skilled in aura concealment methods, but to think that your attainment in this aspect is shocking, you have been concealing your aura the entire time! You actually deceived me, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, and wait, even Paradise Earth was deceived!”

Fang Yuan was the greatest liar, he lied until the very end. All of these venerables were toyed around by him!

Lu Wei Yin and Shen Shang looked at each other, feeling the shock in each other’s hearts.

The fight between the venerables was getting more intense, they started using their full strength, causing the rest to be pushed away to the boundaries of the void, along with the Qi Sea clone.

Looking at Fang Yuan who was holding the upper hand, Lu Wei Yin and Shen Shang had complex emotions.

On one hand, they were shocked and in admiration that Fang Yuan broke through successfully to become a venerable, he was even suppressing two noble existences who were famous in history. But on the other hand, Lu Wei Yin and Shen Shang were furious.

They had a close connection to Paradise Earth, while a large part of his death was attributed to Fang Yuan’s scheme.

In the end, Paradise Earth had no choice but to expose his great secret — he could absorb truthful floating ice to raise his cultivation level!

Fang Yuan purposely made a transaction with Paradise Earth and shouted so loudly, triggering the two venerables to use their full strength on him.

In the end, the attacks of the two venerables helped out Fang Yuan, he managed to kill Paradise Earth.

Crafty, scheming, evil!

Such words revolved around the hearts of Lu Wei Yin and Shen Shang, they could not help but describe Fang Yuan as such.

Rumble...

As the golden light faded and starlight dimmed, Fang Yuan was incredibly domineering, his aura was surging like a rising tiger over ten thousand li.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable were feeling bitter internally.

After so long, they had already expended many of their trump cards in combat. Their injuries were still lingering, there was simply no time to heal them.

In contrast, Fang Yuan had been staying low-profile and hiding his strength, his schemes were simply too deep.

Boom!

The three venerables clashed again.

Fang Yuan held the upper hand once more.

The two venerables were forced back, they spat out blood together, their injuries becoming more severe.

Fang Yuan wore a snow-white robe, his hair was long and fluttering, he dominated the battlefield, with his aura surmounting mountains and rivers.

He firmly grasped the upper hand as he suddenly recited —

In my youth I knew the hardships of the world,

Yet I still aspired to soar above the clouds.

A journey of cold winds and uncertainty, A lone traveler experiences a life of ups and downs.

A heart of steel forged from countless setbacks, A lifetime of effort to forge one sword.

Today my sword aims beyond the clouds,

Refine Gu! Refine Human! Refine Heaven!!

Fang Yuan’s attacks were like a surging tide, enveloping all the surrounding battlefield, approaching from all directions of the world.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not resist them, they retreated time and time again.

Fang Yuan grabbed with his hand, the final truthful floating ice went towards him.

“Don’t think about it!” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted coldly, she had to toss out the Door of Life and Death at the final crucial moment.

The Door of Life and Death erupted with an immense suction force, while Giant Sun Immortal Venerable attacked at the same time, his killer move landing on Fang Yuan.

In order to take the truthful floating ice, Fang Yuan exposed a weakness and was sent into the Door of Life and Death by the two venerables.

“Our tactic succeeded!” The two venerables looked at each other, having expressions of joy flashing at the same time.

But at the next moment...

Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley, and Reverse Flow River!

A killer move with all three secluded domains of heaven and earth as the cores was activated by Fang Yuan.

A road of life was suddenly formed, extending out of the Door of Life and Death.

Fang Yuan instantly returned to the battlefield, leaving Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, who was extremely furious and agitated behind in the Door of Life and Death.

The two venerables stared with wide eyes!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s eyelids were twitching intensely, this was the move that he wanted Fang Yuan to conceptualize when he was trapped in the Door of Life and Death. Fang Yuan kept delaying it and showed an expression of helplessness, eventually failing in his deduction. But now, seeing that Fang Yuan was using it so proficiently, it was clear that he had already practiced it many times.

Before the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Fang Yuan already had this killer move!

But he still used Dang Hun Luo Po Seal to make an excuse for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and the rest.

Seeing that the Door of Life and Death could not trap Fang Yuan, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable let out a soft sigh.

At the next moment, the Door of Life and Death opened, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable flew out immediately!

He was still in an agitated state, his mind was not clear, he did not attack Star Constellation Immortal Venerable but furiously targeted Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Fang Yuan.

Using this chance, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable wanted to snatch the truthful floating ice.

The scene became very chaotic.

Immortal killer move — Dang Hun Luo Po Seal!

With one attack by Fang Yuan, a thousand of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s arms severed.

After Fang Yuan became venerable and passed the black fire tribulation, his dao marks had already exceeded Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

Fang Yuan roared and made a push, eventually taking that final truthful floating ice for himself.

“Star Constellation, I’ve already done my best.” From within Spectral Soul’s belly, Verdant Great Sun’s voice could be heard sighing.

Next, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s expression changed, becoming blank.

His roaring and emotions of hatred vanished, he ignored Fang Yuan and Giant Sun as he charged towards the hole expressionlessly.

Bam.

With a loud sound, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had actually used his own body to block the hole of the world boundary.

The immortals were shocked, the entire scene became silent again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2213: Chu Du Versus Hei Lou Lan

This was a nameless grassland, the ground was dry and desolate, there was barely any vegetation except yellowish wilting wild grass.

The sky was gray and hazy, no sunlight could be seen.

A cold and dark wind blew on the faces of the immortals.

At this ordinary location, tens of Gu Immortals were gathered!

All of their attention was placed on two people.

The male immortal wore a yellowish brown leather robe unique to Northern Plains, he had a red and thick leather belt, as well as pitch-black leather shoes.

The loose robe could not conceal his muscular body, while his face was nothing extraordinary, he looked very plain.

But nobody present could ignore him despite that.

Because his name was Chu Du.

The Domination Immortal!

And opposing him, there was a female immortal.

The female immortal wore a half-mask covering her nose, mouth and cheeks, only revealing the upper half of her face, which showed her strong contours, sharp and long brows, bright eyes and a bold aura.

She was Fairy Black Moon, a powerful expert who challenged countless people and had never suffered a loss since her rise in Northern Plains' Gu Immortal world!

As for her true identity as Hei Lou Lan, few Gu Immortals knew.

Not long ago, Hei Lou Lan defeated one of the most prominent members of Liu tribe, rank seven Gu Immortal expert Liu Chang. She challenged Chu Du thereafter.

Chu Du did not back down, he directly agreed.

Once news of this battle was spread, the tension of Northern Plains' Gu Immortals rose, they paid huge attention to it.

Right now, the time for the two immortals' fight had arrived.

“Chu Du, you have finally arrived.” Battle intent surged in Hei Lou Lan's eyes, blazing like flames.

“The contest of strength path, I have been looking forward to this.” Chu Du replied happily: “Regardless of the outcome today, fairy, I would like to invite you to my Chu tribe as a guest, we can exchange our experiences in cultivating strength path.”

Hei Lou Lan snorted coldly: “Chu Du, I've heard of your great name since long ago. But if you want to exchange pointers, we will have to see if you are qualified.”

Chu Du smiled: “Please have the first move.”

Hei Lou Lan did not stand on ceremony, her body flew out like lightning, rising up and flying towards the upper clouds.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

Waves of human figures descended from the clouds, crashing towards Chu Du like meteors.

Chu Du raised his head and immediately retreated upon seeing this.

He was very fast, after pulling some distance, he used his killer move as he pushed with both palms.

Boom...

A surge of great strength burst out, air currents were generated, Hei Lou Lan’s strength path phantoms shattered like bursting bubbles against this powerful attack.

Chu Du pushed with his palms again, clearing out the dark clouds in the sky, exposing the clear skies and radiant sunlight.

Hei Lou Lan, who had hidden herself in the cloud layer was also exposed as a result.

Hei Lou Lan had a serious expression, after the concealment of the dark clouds, her killer move was already prepared.

At the next moment, her hands clenched into fists, raising them above her head before slamming them down towards Chu Du’s direction.

With a thunderous sound, air was squeezed and distorted as the fist shadows instantly arrived in front of Chu Du.

Chu Du raised both arms, blocking the attack.

Bam.

There was a loud collision as he was forced back by a hundred steps.

But soon, he stopped in the air, shrugging his shoulders, a layer of dust fell from his sleeves.

He was completely unharmed!

Hei Lou Lan was not surprised at all, she continued to rain down a flurry of unceasing attacks.

Chu Du blocked her attacks time and time again while retaliating in response.

Both sides were separated by some distance, they attacked with long-ranged methods that caused incredible commotions.

The observing immortals were all staring at the two of them with fixed gazes.

“So exciting, to think that strength path Gu Immortals would have so many outstanding long-ranged methods.”

“Currently, it seems that Fairy Black Moon and Chu Du are evenly matched.”

“Hmph, now is too early to make that conclusion,” Chou Lao Wu snorted coldly, “Strength path Gu Immortals are strongest at close combat, they are still using long-ranged methods to probe each other now.”

Chu Du was firm as a mountain while Hei Lou Lan displayed many outstanding long-ranged methods, after more than ten rounds of combat, the two sides suddenly charged and clashed in the center.

With that loud sound, all of the immortals jolted.

“They are fighting seriously now!”

“This is an extremely rare contest of strength path!”

“Whoever wins this will be the number one strength path cultivator in the current world.”

In the current five regions, there were very few strength path Gu Immortals.

After all, strength path had been declining for a long time, far beyond half a century worth of degradation.

Before Hei Lou Lan appeared, Chu Du was publicly recognized as a strength path expert in the five regions, he had quite the reputation. With the sudden appearance of Hei Lou Lan, most Gu Immortals were shocked by her path. To think that another anomaly would arise in strength path!

Under everyone’s gaze, the two continued to rain down punches and kicks at each other, it was an intense fight.

Attacks and defenses were unleashed and put up continually, each move had an incredible amount of strength in them.

Be they Chu Du or Hei Lou Lan, neither had the intention to retreat, they fought strength with strength, ferocity with ferocity!

The battle between strength path Gu Immortals could be said to be plain and simple, it was not as glamorous as other paths. But in the hearts of many Gu Immortals present, a chill started to form.

“Even though strength path is declining, strength path Gu Immortals are not to be underestimated.”

“If I had to fight against either Chu Du or Fairy Black Moon, the outcome would be disastrous!”

Each attack by Chu Du or Hei Lou Lan would cause a thunderous sound that twisted and distorted the air, air currents surged as wind continued to form from their impacts.

Compared to long-ranged methods, strength path excelled more at close combat.

A Gu Immortal with superb cultivation in strength path would be threatening in their every punch and kick.

Their advantage in close combat was regarding the aspect of attack frequency.

Hei Lou Lan and Chu Du fought quicker and quicker, the observing Gu Immortals tried to imagine themselves as either party and felt cold sweat pouring down their foreheads.

“In the future, if I meet any strength path Gu Immortal, I must not let them get close to me!”

“The punches and kicks are unleashed too frequently, there is no time to prepare killer moves in such a fight. Without killer moves, how can anyone defend against such intense attacks?”

More than ten rounds passed again.

Chu Du gradually gained the upper hand.

Even though Hei Lou Lan was strong and had many methods, her combat experience still paled in comparison to Chu Du.

Her cultivation time was far less than Chu Du.

Chu Du accumulated his advantage through his immensely rich combat experience. After adding up all these advantages, he started to suppress Hei Lou Lan.

Chen Cheng, Yin Wu Que, and the rest had grim expressions.

“This cannot go on, I need to take a risk!” Hei Lou Lan’s gaze turned sharp as a blade, flashing for an instant.

She knew that if she did not change her fighting style now, if this went on, she would definitely lose.

At the next moment, Hei Lou Lan shouted loudly as she rained punches and kicks on Chu Du with rapid intensity.

Chu Du was like a reef by the sea, no matter how intense the waves were, he remained motionless.

Hei Lou Lan was not surprised, while Chu Du defended himself, she quickly moved back and started preparing her killer move.

Chu Du smiled as he quickly approached her!

“Oh no!” Chen Cheng saw this and gasped aloud.

The observing Gu Immortals saw this and knew that Chu Du had waited for this opportunity for some time.

Chu Du erupted with shocking speed, rapidly getting closer to Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan had no choice but to helplessly stop her killer move activation, she fought against Chu Du with punches and kicks, blocking the other party’s unceasing attacks.

But because of this, by stopping her killer move midway, the activation failure caused a backlash that caused severe internal injuries to Hei Lou Lan.

Chu Du created a battle opportunity, he made great use of it and fought against Hei Lou Lan until she could only defend herself.

Chu Du had the complete advantage now!

A wave of cheers erupted.

These voices came from Chu Du’s god-children as well as the supreme elders of Chu tribe.

“Hmph, don’t rejoice too early.”

“Fairy Black Moon has not used her trump card yet!”

Hei Lou Lan’s supporters had grim expressions, they rebuked.

Totem killer move — Dark Capital Strength Biao[1]!

At the next moment, Hei Lou Lan’s body shook.

A tiger roared, its huge black claws sent Chu Du flying.

The giant black tiger flapped its wings and vanished on the spot, appearing behind Chu Du.

Chu Du quickly defended himself, even though he blocked the dark capital strength biao's attack again, his body was still sent flying like a cannonball, crashing towards the ground from the force created.

"It's here! Fairy Black Moon's signature method — Dark Capital Strength Biao!" Someone shouted in excitement.

Chou Lao Wu had a cold expression, this was the first time he saw it: "This totem killer move is too convenient. It can stay dormant on the skin during normal times and be activated with a single thought when needed."

"Indeed." Hao Zhen gritted his teeth, "If not for this move, our first supreme elder would have obtained victory already."

[1] Tiger with wings.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2214: You Have Won This Battle

The dark capital strength biao was incredibly fast, it was hard to deal with in the first place.

More importantly, after Hei Lou Lan stabilized her position, she quickly used a healing method on herself before joining the fight again.

She had great coordination with the dark capital strength biao, they attacked from the left and right, firmly suppressing Chu Du.

Chu Du was in a pitiful state, many areas of his robe were torn, showing that his defenses were no longer holding up.

Blood soon appeared on his lips, his injuries were slowly accumulating.

Chu tribe's Gu Immortals had grim expression, in the current situation, they could not see hope of Chu Du turning this around.

The dark capital strength biao gave Hei Lou Lan too great of an advantage!

"You will lose!" Hei Lou Lan shouted with momentum, unleashing her killer move, eight directional strength fight.

Chu Du was surrounded by countless figures, he could not break out for the time being.

Suddenly, a shadow casted down from above him, it was the dark capital strength biao!

It opened its mouth to bite at Chu Du. If this bite connected, Chu Du would be heavily injured, if not dead.

At the moment of crisis, Chu Du laughed loudly instead: "Finally caught you!"

At the next moment, strength path giant hand appeared and grabbed forcefully.

The dark capital strength biao was caught unguarded and growled loudly, it wanted to struggle.

But after only one breath of time, the strength path giant hand firmly held onto it and slammed it to the ground.

Boom!

There was a loud sound as the ground shook, rocks were sent flying and dust clouds rose.

Immortal killer move — Battle Strength Transpiration!

Chu Du suddenly erupted with an intense aura as his body expanded to the size of a ten meter giant.

His entire body turned red, all of the pores on his body opened up, as his sweat turned into steam, surrounding his body.

Immortal killer move — Heaven and Earth Combined Strength!

Chu Du straightened both arms before clapping them together in front of his chest.

At the next moment, the immortals gasped, Hei Lou Lan’s expression changed.

The surrounding thousand li were enveloped by a formless force, the Gu Immortals were restrained and unable to move easily, they felt like bugs that had fallen into oil.

Affected by this killer move, the speed of the dark capital strength biao fell drastically, its threat towards Chu Du also plunged to rock bottom.

“This is a quasi-battlefield killer move!” Hei Lou Lan gritted her teeth, Chu Du’s move was amazing and beyond her expectations.

“I did not want to use this.” Hei Lou Lan snorted internally, activating the expend strength Immortal Gu in her immortal aperture.

This rank seven Immortal Gu was lent to her by Longevity Heaven secretly, other than that, there was also a killer move that used expend strength Immortal Gu as the core, it was called seventy-percent expended strength.

At the crucial moment, Hei Lou Lan immediately activated this move.

This move’s preparation had no aura and was stealthy, only when it was used, it unleashed an overwhelmingly extraordinary burst of aura.

Chu Du quickly tried to dodge but he did not succeed.

After getting hit by this move, every action or killer move of his took much more effort to complete, by at least more than fifty percent.

While Chu Du’s condition fell, Hei Lou Lan unleashed a flurry of attacks again.

The battle was in a heated stage, both sides were stuck in a deadlock.

The observing immortals retreated at once, they left the range of heaven and earth combined strength, becoming more at ease as they continued to watch the battle.

“Regardless of this battle’s result, these two are peak characters among Northern Plains’ rank seven experts!”

“Such terrifying battle strength, I’m afraid they might be able to challenge rank eight Gu Immortals as well.”

“Chu Du, Black Moon... they are the support pillars of strength path in the current world, undoubtedly.”

The Gu Immortals sighed to themselves, at this point in the battle, be they Chu Du or Hei Lou Lan, they had earned the respect and recognition of everyone.

Such evenly matched opponents made the immortals even more excited to see the eventual winner.

“Awesome, this is really great.” Chu Du had many bone fractures and his robe was dyed red, but he laughed heartily and expressed his excitement towards this battle.

Hei Lou Lan gritted her teeth and did not speak, she had gotten into a disadvantage once again.

The reason was still the difference in combat experience.

Chu Du was superior to Hei Lou Lan in every tiny detail. As they accumulated,they eventually affected the entire battle.

Hei Lou Lan tried all ways to regain her footing but the more she fought, the more tiny weaknesses she exposed, giving Chu Du even more opportunities to take advantage of.

“He was clearly hit by my seventy-percent expended strength, how can he still have such stamina?” Seeing that Chu Du was not getting tired, Hei Lou Lan could not help but feel a bit shocked.

Chu Du had outstanding strength, even though Hei Lou Lan was using her full strength, she could not take down Chu Du.

Currently, she could only hope that the effect of seventy-percent expended strength would tire Chu Du out.

But another ten or so rounds passed.

Before Chu Du even got tired, Hei Lou Lan was already completely at a disadvantage, the situation was dangerous!

Hei Lou Lan gritted her teeth secretly, she was not willing to fail. In this situation, she could only take a risk and try.

At the next moment, the dark capital strength biao growled and jumped towards Hei Lou Lan.

Hei Lou Lan advanced instead of moving aside, entering the dark capital strength biao’s body in mid air.

With a flash of dark light, the dark capital strength biao shrank in size, turning into a half-beast half-man form, it became a layer of armor on Hei Lou Lan’s body, it seemed like smoke or an illusion.

This was a higher level use of a totem killer move!

When the Gu Immortal combined with the totem, their battle strength would surge immensely!

“Chu Du, time to go down!” Hei Lou Lan shouted, the biao wings flapped, she instantly arrived before Chu Du.

Chu Du raised his arms.

Hei Lou Lan’s iron fists landed on his arms, the huge force erupted like resounding thunder, the surrounding air was forced aside as Chu Du flew out uncontrollably towards the ground.

But Chu Du landed with both feet on the ground, creating a huge and long trench behind him. While he was still retreating, Hei Lou Lan suddenly appeared above him.

Boom!

There was another attack as Hei Lou Lan sent Chu Du flying to the ground again.

Bam bam bam...

Hei Lou Lan floated in the air, raining down fist shadows incessantly.

The ground shook as smoke appeared, her terrifying strength caused the spectators to turn pale.

“Lord Chu Du!”

“Godfather!!”

Chu tribe’s Gu Immortals shouted loudly in worry.

Hei Lou Lan was too powerful now, she was almost dominating the scene, Chu Du had no way of retaliating.

“Enough... stop now, Black Moon.” From the pit, Chu Du’s voice could be heard as he spoke with difficulty.

But Hei Lou Lan did not listen to him, she continued to punch endlessly.

“Is Chu Du admitting defeat?” Wu Guang was excited as he spoke.

“Something is not right! Master seems to be in a weird state.” Chen Cheng’s expression changed.

Hearing this, everyone realized that Hei Lou Lan’s gaze was like a wild beast, she seemed to have lost her reasoning, she could only control this killer move through her instincts to slaughter.

Chu tribe’s Gu Immortals were all happy now.

“There is still hope!”

“Great. As long as first supreme elder gets through this, he will win!”

“This killer move is too powerful. If Fairy Black Moon’s killer move activation fails, she might face a backlash and even lose her life.”

But right at this moment, a figure flew out.

It was Chu Du!

But what Chu Du did next was out of everyone’s expectations.

He had forcefully endured the rampaging attacks, disregarding his own life to approach Hei Lou Lan and place his arm on her shoulder.

A huge vibration force was emitted, Hei Lou Lan and the dark capital strength biao were separated.

Hei Lou Lan regained her senses and her pupils shrank immediately.

She was shocked to find out that her left fist had penetrated the right side of Chu Du’s chest! But Chu Du used a method to save her and prevent her from suffering the immense backlash from her killer move.

“Why?” At once, Hei Lou Lan fell into deep confusion and disbelief.

But right at this moment, the dark capital strength biao’s ferocity did not lower, it appeared behind Chu Du and bit harshly.

“Stop!” Hei Lou Lan shouted internally and willed to try to stop the dark capital strength biao.

In this situation, if Chu Du was hit by it, he would definitely die!

But the dark capital strength biao was not under Hei Lou Lan’s control, it was incredibly fierce.

Right when Hei Lou Lan thought Chu Du was about to die, a surge of aura burst out of Chu Du’s body.

His killer move was unleashed, the dark capital strength biao was sent flying from one attack.

The immortals were shocked!

“Rank, rank eight cultivation level?!”

“Chu Du became a rank eight Gu Immortal?”

“Our first supreme elder is rank eight? When did he advance?!”

Hei Lou Lan stared with wide eyes and looked fixedly at Chu Du: “Why?”

While speaking, she retracted her left hand from Chu Du’s chest and placed it on his shoulder.

A killer move was activated by Hei Lou Lan, it was not an offensive killer move but a healing method instead.

Chu Du’s expression was pale, he accepted her good intentions as he smiled: “Ever since you started challenging people, I started noticing you, Fairy Black Moon.”

“Do you know? Even if you did not challenge me, I would issue you a challenge as well!”

“To have a fair battle!”

“Because... strength path has been silent for far too long.”

“Your emergence made me really happy. Continue on this path, Black Moon.”

“Revitalize strength path and let it shine gloriously again!”

Chu Du expressed his aspirations.

Looking at his dazzling eyes, Hei Lou Lan was silent.

The dark capital strength biao had returned after being repelled by Chu Du.

But now, Hei Lou Lan regained control of it.

The dark capital strength biao was heavily damaged, it went back onto Hei Lou Lan’s skin.

Hei Lou Lan looked at Chu Du deeply before leaving.

Before departing, she said: “Chu Du, you have won this battle.”

This battle that caused a commotion in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal ended in Chu Du’s victory, but the exact outcome of this fight was far beyond everyone’s expectations.

Once Chu Du displayed rank eight cultivation level, he became a higher-up in the Gu Immortal world, be they himself or Chu tribe, their reputation soared!

And in that intense battle, Chu Du first sealed his own cultivation level to fight against Fairy Black Moon as a rank seven. He then disregarded his own life to save her.

Such actions caused the neutral Gu Immortals to gain good feelings towards him. Even those who supported Fairy Black Moon like Yin Wu Que, Chen Cheng, and Wu Guang secretly felt admiration towards him.

After returning to Chu tribe, his god-children suggested to hold a celebratory banquet and invite the immortals, to make use of this result and elevate Chu tribe’s status.

But Chu Du rejected it without second thought.

He was very low-profile regarding the result of this battle.

However, news that he became a rank eight Gu Immortal still caused a huge commotion in Northern Plains’ current situation.

Days later, Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven let out even more surprising news that shook the world.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had revived successfully, while Gu Yue Fang Yuan had become a refinement path Demon Venerable!

The world was in an uproar, all the immortals were shocked.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2215: Heaven Refining Demon Venerable!

Fang Yuan returned to Eastern Sea.

Under the setting sun, the surface of the sea was dyed red. Birds were chirping out loud, a warm sea breeze was blowing.

This place was some distance away from Eastern Sea’s Xia clan, it was not considered close.

“This place will do.” Fang Yuan quickly descended, landing on a relatively small deserted island.

Several investigative killer moves were activated, Fang Yuan had complete control over the island, he did not detect any threats or suspicious matters.

Fang Yuan directly took out the five regional limit formation.

Soon, five colored smoke mixed together and enveloped the island, before spreading towards the sky and sea.

If he were still rank eight, after escaping from Crazed Demon Cave, he would choose the headquarters of Eastern Sea’s Xia clan, or go to immemorial white heaven in secret and hide himself to recuperate.

But Fang Yuan had rank nine cultivation level now, he was a venerable, he could do things openly without fear.

If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable or Giant Sun Immortal Venerable came to attack him now, Fang Yuan would be happy to see that happen.

Fang Yuan slowly shut his eyes as his divine sense peered into the sovereign immortal aperture.

He had already accumulated several beads of rank nine immortal essence.

Rank eight immortal essence was known as white litchi immortal essence, rank nine immortal essence was slightly larger and looked like an apricot, it was orange-yellow in color.

It was yellow apricot immortal essence!

Fang Yuan was familiar with the appearance of rank nine immortal essence since long ago, because he had obtained Giant Sun’s immortal essence as well as Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s remaining immortal essence.

But now, he felt some surging emotions internally.

After all, this was his personal yellow apricot immortal essence!

Using the yellow apricot immortal essence, Fang Yuan activated a method!

Refinement path killer move – Refine Self!

A pale yellow light that was the size of a fist flowed out from the area near Fang Yuan’s stomach. The yellow light flowed slowly around his entire body.

The emphasis was on Fang Yuan’s injuries.

Fang Yuan had over a hundred injuries, most of them were only dealt with superficially while he was on the way back.

Even now, many of the wounds were still bleeding and covered in golden light or starlight specks, they were lingering on his bones, or his mashed up flesh.

As the pale yellow light appeared, all of the starlight and golden aurora was cleansed. This meant that the dao marks that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left on Fang Yuan’s body were all refined by him.

But the process of refinement was not comfortable, an intense pain could be felt.

Fang Yuan’s body was shivering, his expression turned pale, soon, sweat covered his forehead.

Eventually, the pale yellow light lingered on the area of Fang Yuan’s detached arm. After an hour, the light faded away.

Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, he finally relaxed.

After resting for a moment, he immediately used a compound killer move, man as before.

At the next moment, his injuries were fully healed, his arm was also fully restored.

But when Fang Yuan exerted strength using that arm, he still felt a sense of weakness from it.

But this was already satisfactory to him.

Fang Yuan had severe injuries but Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable were also no better.

He was almost certain that their efficiency at healing injuries was lower than him.

Because Fang Yuan had the killer move refine self, this killer move could refine all of the dao marks on the Gu cultivator’s body into their own. The origin of this move was the killer move that Fang Yuan once used, self cleansing.

Using this, in the battle of Crazed Demon Cave, Fang Yuan refined all of the dao marks of the flying star killer move, countering Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s consecutive move.

His physical injuries were healed, while his soul was at its peak condition, Fang Yuan started to resolve the matter of the sovereign immortal aperture.

The sovereign immortal aperture had a tribulation earlier because of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s killer move. At almost the same time, because of Fang Yuan’s secret manipulation, he challenged the Heavenly Dao and endured the chaotic disaster.

The entire sovereign immortal aperture suffered huge losses, its foundation had fallen, compared to before the Crazed Demon Cave expedition, it had about twenty percent remaining.

It was simply in tatters, this was a pitiful sight.

“But I predicted that this would happen before the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, I prepared for it!”

Fang Yuan focused his mind, thoughts were expended, he activated another compound killer move — Landscape as Before.

The year essence pools and the sub-pools in various areas of the sovereign immortal aperture all opened their dams now.

The accumulated water of the River of Time formed into a vast silhouette under the effect of landscape as before, sweeping through the mini five regions as well as all the mini nine heavens.

The silhouette of the water of the River of Time soon receded entirely, but what remained were various resource points of mountains and rivers that were completely restored.

The Gu Immortals in the sovereign immortal aperture saw this sight and cheered loudly, their morale surged.

Fang Yuan lightly let out a breath of air.

Back then, when he created the year essence sub-pools and created time path areas, he had already prepared to use landscape as before for such a purpose.

After using this method, the water of the River of Time in the year essence pools was almost used up, the sovereign immortal aperture’s time difference with the outside world also fell greatly.

A considerable amount of time was needed, until the year essence pools could gather enough water of the River of Time to accelerate the sovereign immortal aperture’s time again.

At this point, forty percent of the sovereign immortal aperture’s foundation had just been restored.

Which meant that the sovereign immortal aperture only had forty percent in total of losses remaining, this greatly reduced the time, energy, and resources needed to reconstruct his foundation.

The forty percent of losses were created by the chaotic disaster.

Even landscape as before was not useful for this. The Gu Immortals that died from the chaotic disaster were also not able to revive through Human Sea.

He had a lot of other losses as well.

The immortal essence expenditure was huge, he once had a vast amount of rank eight immortal essence, but now, he had about ten percent left, it was way below the safety margin, he was in a dangerous state.

This was also why Fang Yuan stopped and did not continue fighting against Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

But the good news was, as a venerable, Fang Yuan produced yellow apricot immortal essence, it was much more useful than white litchi immortal essence.

The bad news was, rank eight Immortal Gu Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus that once helped Fang Yuan greatly in terms of immortal essence storage became much less useful now.

At the same time, because the sovereign immortal aperture’s time slowed greatly, Fang Yuan’s immortal essence production speed was not high.

During this period of time, Fang Yuan needed to rest and manage his immortal essence, he also had to refine the natural dao marks of the outside world, he would need a lot of immortal essence.

“The lack of immortal essence is huge, while immortal essence stones are barely useful to me anymore.”

“If I ignore everything and raise the sovereign immortal aperture’s rate of time to the limit, that will not work either!” Fang Yuan frowned slightly.

Venerables faced a grand tribulation every ten years, a myriad tribulation every fifty years, and a chaotic disaster every one hundred years.

Unless they were dream path, pill path and so on, grand tribulations and myriad tribulations were no threat to Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan was only wary about the chaotic disasters every one hundred years.

Even though he had already gone through one chaotic disaster in Crazed Demon Cave.

That was only the Heavenly Dao blockade, it was far weaker than the chaotic disasters that would occur every one hundred years!

If the sovereign immortal aperture’s time was too fast, Fang Yuan would quickly have to face the chaotic disaster, if he got heavily injured in the process, or even near the point of death, the other venerables would take advantage of the chance.

The replenishment of immortal essence was a problem, other than this, Fang Yuan also lost a large number of Immortal Gu.

In the first parts of the Crazed Demon Cave fight, after Gu Immortals died, Fang Yuan did not retrieve their Immortal Gu or immortal apertures.

In fact, the seven Immortal Gu Houses that Fang Yuan took out in Crazed Demon Cave, including Rising Cloud City, were all lost as well.

Fang Yuan’s losses were so severe that no super force in the world barring Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven could afford to endure them.

Thankfully, in the later parts of the Crazed Demon Cave fight, Fang Yuan purposely reduced his losses in this aspect. For example, when Zhan Bu Du died, the will that he left behind sent many of his precious transformation path Immortal Gu into treasure yellow heaven.

Other than Immortal Gu and immortal essence, many Gu Immortals died as well.

Steel Rush Warrior, Frost Butterfly Warrior, Xiao He Jian, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, and even Fang Yuan’s clone Zhan Bu Du, they had all died in Crazed Demon Cave. There were also those who died in the sovereign immortal aperture when they defended against the tribulations.

Most of them were revived through Human Sea, they had to re-cultivate to become immortal again.

There was also a group of them who could not be revived. Among them was the old Combat Beast King, a rank eight Gu Immortal.

Even Fang Yuan felt that it was a pity.

This old man had worked laboriously without complaint, he made great contributions towards the sovereign immortal aperture. But he was killed by the black fire, Fang Yuan could not revive him.

Other than these material losses, Fang Yuan also had some hidden losses.

Most importantly, he exposed too many killer moves.

In the Crazed Demon Cave battle, Fang Yuan had no choice but to expose many of his compound killer moves, as well as trump cards like refine self, totem killer moves, and others.

For a long time, these killer moves could not be used, they needed to be modified.

When he fights against the venerables in the future, if he were to use these killer moves without modification, Fang Yuan would be taking a huge risk.

But compared to his losses, Fang Yuan’s gains were much higher!

In the Crazed Demon Cave battle, Fang Yuan had immense gains, he was undeniably the biggest winner out of everyone!!

Firstly, Fang Yuan ransacked the first seven layers and obtained a vast amount of chaotic dao mark immortal materials.

In the eighth layer of Crazed Demon Cave, he used Thieves Den to gain a vast amount of rank nine immortal materials. These rank nine immortal materials were enough for him to try to refine a rank nine Immortal Gu.

The second thing was Primordial Domain.

Fang Yuan had about the same amount of the Primordial Domain as Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, which was slightly less than Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Primordial Domain was extremely valuable, especially for Fang Yuan.

The third thing was Paradise Earth’s Northern Plains true inheritance, as well as his heaven path cultivation experiences. These included the method to digest truthful floating ice and raise one’s own heaven path cultivation level.

The fourth was information.

After the battle of Crazed Demon Cave, Fang Yuan gained an in-depth understanding of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, as well as the Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven that they belonged to!

He was no longer kept in the dark like before.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s methods, their combat systems, as well as Heavenly Court’s Door of Life and Death immortal graveyard, Transient White Cloud City Suppression painting path formation, Ruan Dan’s pill path, Longevity Heaven’s Eight Extremities formation, Calamity Luck Altar’s luck changing golden light path, and others.

The fifth gain was also Fang Yuan’s greatest gain.

His cultivation level rose to become venerable level.

This was a peak qualitative change!

From now onwards, he went from a chess piece to a player, he could openly plot against the world and rule over the five regions.

The history of humanity and variant humans would have no choice but to remember his name.

At this point, he stood on the same plane as the ten predecessors, he was like a sun that shone throughout the ages. All other Gu Immortals, regardless of their heroism or talent, were mere stars in the sky.

Gu Yue Fang Yuan!

The eleventh venerable of the Gu cultivator world.

A demonic cultivator who became venerable through refinement path.

According to Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven, his title was —

Heaven Refining Demon Venerable!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2216: Crying Because of Fang Yuan

Eastern Sea.

Shen clan headquarters, purple rosewood myriad sparrow island.

An elderly Gu Immortal stood in front of a stone door as he waited patiently.

The elderly Gu Immortal radiated rank eight aura, he was the current first supreme elder of Shen clan, holding high authority — Shen Cong Sheng!

Rumble...

As the door of the secret room was opened, two Gu Immortals walked out from within.

The person in front wore a grey robe and had shoulder length black and white hair, it was Shen Shang.

As a cultivator of human path, the stay in Divine Emperor City was his fortuitous encounter. After leaving Divine Emperor City, the black fire injury in his immortal aperture was completely healed, his battle strength surged to pseudo venerable level.

Shen Shang walked out of the stone door and stayed at the side, smiling at the Gu Immortal behind him: “Please come in.”

This Gu Immortal wore a grey hemp garment, it was very simple and plain, but his muscular body could not be concealed. He wore a conical hat that could not hide his pale face and weakened state.

It was Lu Wei Yin, who had survived the battle in Crazed Demon Cave.

Lu Wei Yin bowed slightly and said: “Senior Shen’s human path methods are extraordinary, thirty percent of my injuries have healed already. I can only repay this debt in the future.”

Shen Shang laughed heartily: “No need to worry about it, don’t call me senior either. We fought together in Crazed Demon Cave, having close cooperation, with our friendship, you can just treat me as an equal.”

Shen Cong Sheng laughed as well: “Seniors, the banquet has been prepared, please come with me.”

Before Lu Wei Yin gave any modest reply, Shen Shang laughed and grabbed his arm, bringing him to the banquet enthusiastically.

The banquet was held outdoors in the open, at the peak of rosewood myriad sparrow island.

There were three people in the pavilion, Shen Shang sat at the main seat, Lu Wei Yin sat beside him as the guest, while Shen Cong Sheng sat at the end respectfully.

There was no need to comment about the beautiful and delicious food and wine on the table, Lu Wei Yin only took a small bite before he gazed afar.

He saw that the sea was calm as a mirror, having no waves at all, the setting sun was radiating brightly, and the evening clouds were like blazing flames.

“Such a beautiful sight.” Lu Wei Yin praised.

At this moment, the countless birds and sparrows chirped on the island, countless purple rosewood branches shook with the cries of the birds, emitting beautiful sounds.

At once, the blend of sounds created a medley that spread far and wide, towards the sea and sky that stretched to the horizon.

Lu Wei Yin could not help but show an expression of indulgence, he shut his eyes to savor the moment. After a long while, he opened his eyes and let out a breath of air: “I’ve heard of the reputation of Eastern Sea Shen clan’s rosewood myriad sparrow island. After seeing it today, it truly lives up to that reputation. After surviving Crazed Demon Cave and seeing this beautiful sight, my heart has calmed down, sigh, it is great to be alive.”

Lu Wei Yin’s strength was at the peak of rank eight, aside from his defense, which was firmly at pseudo venerable level.

However, the battle in Crazed Demon Cave made him feel extremely weak.

There were many crises and trials that caused Lu Wei Yin to be on the brink of death multiple times, recalling these dangerous moments, Lu Wei Yin still felt some lingering fear now.

Shen Cong Sheng showed an expression of curiosity as he inquired: “If not for Heavenly Court’s and Longevity Heaven’s declarations, the entire five regions would still be kept in the dark. What exactly happened in Crazed Demon Cave? Not only did Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable revive, Gu Yue Fang Yuan even became Heaven Refining Demon Venerable?”

Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven both suffered losses, even though they had gains too, Fang Yuan was the biggest winner. Thus, they did not describe the details of Crazed Demon Cave to the rest of the world.

With this huge commotion, after the initial shock of the Gu Immortals, they started to gain deep curiosity.

Shen Cong Sheng was no exception.

Lu Wei Yin and Shen Shang looked at each other before retelling the complex story of the battle in Crazed Demon Cave together.

After Shen Cong Sheng heard their story, he became silent.

The pursuit of Limitless Demon Venerable, the scheming Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the powerful Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, the pitiful Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, and the immense restraint of Gu Yue Fang Yuan...

This battle was at a whole new level!

To the extent that even Demon Immortal Qi Jue, Zhan Bu Du, Qi Sea Ancestor, Lu Wei Yin, and Shen Shang were mere side characters in comparison.

The price of this battle was also shocking beyond belief.

Pseudo venerables like Zhan Bu Du and Demon Immortal Qi Jue died. Fang Yuan lost about fifty Gu Immortal subordinates, only half of Longevity Heaven’s Eight Extremities were left. And in Crazed Demon Cave, countless lifeforms including Nie Kuang Feng, Bu Tian Kong, and Duan Hu had died!

Eventually, Limitless Demon Venerable failed in pursuing eternal life, while Fang Yuan ended up as the biggest winner.

Shen Cong Sheng frowned and asked the two immortals: “There are three things I do not understand. Firstly, if I were Limitless Demon Venerable, why would I rush at that moment and take such a risk? With such strength, couldn’t he have suppressed the entire world and built another formation if this Crazed Demon formation was not enough to achieve his goal?”

Shen Shang shook his head slightly: “Limitless Demon Venerable is a true Dao pursuer, after a million years of preparation and planning, how could he relent without giving it a test?”

Lu Wei Yin added: “He could not last long in that condition either. Although he seemed to have revived, he was not a true living Gu Immortal. At least, after his death, he did not have a flesh-and-blood body, there was no immortal aperture either, in fact, he turned back into truthful floating ice.”

“So that’s it.” Shen Cong Sheng nodded and asked again: “Secondly, are they really ignoring Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and letting him remain in the void of the ninth layer of Crazed Demon Cave?”

Lu Wei Yin pondered and said: “Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was first manipulated by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and experienced a surge in emotions, he almost lost his memories and only vaguely remembered Lord Paradise Earth. Afterwards, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was released from the Door of Life and Death by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, he actually went to block the hole of the world boundary of his own accord, that was out of our expectations.”

“He did not regain his memories and sanity like what we anticipated. There were no changes in his emotions, it was like he was completely emotionless, but he treated the world boundary’s hole as the biggest threat. He used his body to block it and ignored everything else, that was truly a strange condition, as if... he was a soul beast.”

Shen Shang said: “Us two discussed between ourselves regarding Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s condition, but we had no conclusion. Now it seems that even the venerables have no answer, they can merely make guesses. After Fang Yuan gained the upper hand and snatched the final truthful floating ice, while Spectral Soul Demon Venerable focused on suppressing the world boundary’s hole, the three venerables stopped fighting. After the battle of Crazed Demon Cave, they are all severely weakened, since the hole is handled by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, ignoring him is the best move for now.”

Saying so, Shen Shang looked at Lu Wei Yin and said: “As for what they will do in the future and whether Spectral Soul Demon Venerable can regain his sanity, none of us can guess.”

Lu Wei Yin nodded, his expression turned more solemn.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had a deeply murderous nature, without regaining his sanity, he could only stay in the ninth layer void and not escape. But if he regained his sanity, the five regions and two heavens would fall into chaos.

Shen Cong Sheng asked his final question: “And thirdly, Fang Yuan’s schemes to become a venerable were exposed by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. But there are still things I cannot understand. How did Fang Yuan get so many new killer moves? He had an endless number of compound killer moves, totem killer moves, and even Dang Hun Luo Po Seal that made use of Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley, and Reverse Flow River. I really cannot understand it, I thought Fang Yuan was always specialized in the wisdom path aspect of blocking others’ deductions. His wisdom Gu was also used up in Heavenly Court, how could he still have so many killer moves?”

“Unless he has made some important progression in wisdom path? But isn’t this growth simply too big?”

“So be it if he had Dang Hun Luo Po Seal, but that killer move that allowed him to escape from the Door of Life and Death used the three secluded domains of heaven and earth as the cores, he had nearly replicated the road of life.”

Lu Wei Yin and Shen Shang shook their heads, they had no idea either.

The former sighed: “If Fang Yuan was not so unpredictable, he would not have become the biggest winner in this contest.”

The latter said: “Regarding this, I have some guesses.”

The three immortals ate and spoke, discussing their theories.

After filling their bellies, Shen Cong Sheng took out a cup and made tea for Lu Wei Yin and Shen Shang.

Lu Wei Yin took a look and became quite curious, he asked: “Is this your six sound tea?”

Shen Cong Sheng smiled: “It is just a small creation, allow me to embarrass myself.”

Lu Wei Yin had a serious expression: “Shen clan’s six sound tea is famous in the world, to think that I am lucky enough to try it. There is a term in luck path called ‘every cloud has a silver lining’, there is also another saying ‘there is bound to be great fortune after surviving a huge crisis’. Haha, I am really lucky today.”

Six sound tea was a set of six tea cups.

These six cups of tea had very specific details when it came to the brewing process, temperature, cup used, sequence of drinking, and exact way to drink.

Shen Cong Sheng expended rank eight immortal materials to brew the first cup of tea, it was called autumn wood sound.

This tea was crystal clear, it was like the sky devoid of clouds, extremely pure and intact. The moment Lu Wei Yin drank it, he felt refreshed, his mind became clear, it was pure and cleansed. It was as if he had turned into a carefree flying bird, or a cool breeze, moving casually in the autumn skies, forgetting all his worries.

Shen Cong Sheng made the second cup of tea, it was called cloud flow tea.

This tea had a special texture, it was soft as cotton unlike normal tea. It melted when it entered the mouth, turning into a slightly cold stream of water that flowed down his throat, it was drunk in one mouthful without doubt.

He made the third cup of tea, it was called river mournful cry.

But halfway through, tears flowed down Shen Cong Sheng’s cheeks, he failed to brew the tea successfully.

“I am ashamed, I am ashamed.” Shen Cong Sheng quickly wiped his tears and apologized.

Lu Wei Yin’s injuries had been treated by Shen Shang, he was also hosted so enthusiastically by them, he knew that the main show was coming, he quickly asked what they wanted to hear: “First supreme elder of Shen clan, why are you crying?”

Shen Cong Sheng answered: “Thank you for the concern, I am merely tearing up in guilt. It has been a thousand years since my Shen clan was established. To think that it would face the crisis of extermination during my generation, I, Shen Cong Sheng, am truly incompetent and useless. This beautiful rosewood myriad sparrow island and our countless clansmen are all going to perish.”

Shen Shang sighed deeply.

Lu Wei Yin asked: “Are you two worried about Fang Yuan?”

“Precisely. Not long ago, information spread that this Lord Demon Venerable returned to Eastern Sea, picking a mortal island to set up his five restriction profound light qi that encompassed the surrounding ten thousand li! I am truly worried and fearful now, the whole of Shen clan is worried and fearful, in fact, the entire Eastern Sea Gu Immortal world is worried and fearful!” Shen Cong Sheng said this, a large amount of tears flowed down his face again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2217: Delicious Wine Becomes Flavorless

The great Shen clan first supreme elder was crying with a tearful expression now.

Part of it was definitely Shen Cong Sheng’s inner fear towards Fang Yuan, but he had deeper goals as well.

With the combined announcement of Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven, such news could not be fake.

Fang Yuan became Heaven Refining Demon Venerable, while news like Qi Sea Ancestor being Fang Yuan’s clone became known throughout the world.

Before this, Eastern Sea’s righteous path had been defending Qi Sea Ancestor as they made the Righteous Qi Alliance, to contest against the variant human alliance under Fang Yuan’s control.

It turned out that both leaders were Fang Yuan after all, it could be said that the entirety of Eastern Sea’s righteous path clans were toyed around in the hands of Fang Yuan.

After Shen Cong Sheng found out about the truth, he felt anger and humiliation, but soon, fear and unrest followed.

Shen clan was an Eastern Sea super force, it had huge businesses and seven seas under its control, but how could they face Fang Yuan?

Back when Fang Yuan was still a pseudo venerable, Eastern Sea’s super forces had joined together unprecedentedly and nominated Qi Sea Ancestor to lead them. This caused their situation to stabilize.

Now that Fang Yuan was a venerable, Shen clan and the other super forces could not escape his wrath.

Because they were located in Eastern Sea, they could not move elsewhere.

Even if they wanted to move, where could they go?

Southern Border and Western Desert were impossible, since the absence of a venerable meant that Fang Yuan could chase after them if he was unhappy, and they would be doomed.

Other than those regions, Central Continent and Northern Plains each had their own venerable who could resist Fang Yuan. But they already had their own super forces, how could Shen clan and the rest develop there? If they stayed in Eastern Sea, Fang Yuan would bully them, but if they went to Central Continent or Northern Plains, would Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable not suppress them? The five regions chaotic war was bound to happen, if Shen clan joined either venerable, when war broke out, they would be used as cannon fodder.

Thus, Shen Cong Sheng gathered the elite Gu Immortals and discussed for a while, he decided that joining Fang Yuan was the best choice for them.

Even though it was quite embarrassing, Fang Yuan was now a Demon Venerable, everyone would understand their actions.

After Shen Cong Sheng made up his mind to join Fang Yuan, he thought about it more deeply: Since he was going to join Fang Yuan, Shen clan had to be the first clan to do so, it would give them more advantages. If Shen clan took the lead and worked with a pseudo venerable like Lu Wei Yin, stirring other Eastern Sea righteous path forces to join Fang Yuan, they would leave a good impression on Fang Yuan.

Shen Cong Sheng secretly told this plan to Shen Shang, after he thought about it for a while, he decided that it was possible. Thus, they had to convince Lu Wei Yin first.

Shen Shang felt that they had a good chance of convincing Lu Wei Yin.

Even though he had only met Lu Wei Yin shortly, they had a deep connection. Shen Shang had once received Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s guidance while Lu Wei Yin was his Southern Border inheritor.

If they looked at this from the Central Continent sect system, they were disciple brothers.

Furthermore, during the battle of Crazed Demon Cave, Lu Wei Yin and Shen Shang had worked together without any internal conflict. After returning, Shen Shang used his human path methods to heal Lu Wei Yin. If he were to use only his own earth path methods, it would take a long time to recover!

At once, Shen Cong Sheng cried while Shen Shang drank tea by the side, they were both waiting for Lu Wei Yin’s response.

Lu Wei Yin sighed internally.

He had already understood that Shen Shang had an unclear relationship with Fang Yuan, they had worked together during the fate war to fight Heavenly Court. In Crazed Demon Cave, after Shen Shang left Divine Emperor City, he immediately cooperated and fought against Heavenly Court as a result of Fang Yuan’s words.

Then what about Lu Wei Yin?

Where should he go?

Lu Wei Yin had been considering this question for a long time.

After the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, the situation of the world changed drastically.

Three venerables were in a standoff, but there was still the possibility of other venerables reviving.

Everything needed to be reconsidered.

Lu Wei Yin, who had pseudo venerable battle strength, was clear of his own situation. Fighting against a venerable was courting death. But in certain situations, pseudo venerables were still capable of influencing the victory and defeat of venerables.

The battle in Crazed Demon Cave was proof of this.

When Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable got into a deadlock, they first invited Fang Yuan before asking the other pseudo venerables to join their side. These people were the crucial pieces needed to tilt victory in their favor.

In Crazed Demon Cave, even after the three venerables stopped fighting, Fang Yuan and the other venerables did not deal with Lu Wei Yin and the rest.

Other than the fact that they were in poor condition and were wary of each other’s actions, thus being unable to take risks, if they tried to kill the pseudo venerables and failed, they would be forcing them to join the other sides.

Thus, Lu Wei Yin and the rest returned safely.

Lu Wei Yin pondered for a while before saying: “If Lord Paradise Earth were still around, I would definitely follow him. The reason why I helped Fang Yuan to ambush Spectral Soul during the pursuit battle was to use his strength to help Lord Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable revive. But now, he has been killed by Fang Yuan...”

Lu Wei Yin gritted his teeth, showing anger on his face.

If Paradise Earth were to be killed by either Giant Sun Immortal Venerable or Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, Lu Wei Yin might still feel better.

But it was Fang Yuan who killed Paradise Earth.

While Fang Yuan managed to escape from Spectral Soul Demon Venerable because of Lu Wei Yin’s desperate attempt to ambush him.

Shen Shang observed his expression and knew that Lu Wei Yin’s emotions were surging, he understood why Lu Wei Yin felt so conflicted as well.

Shen Shang did not speak. He had received Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s help in the past, it was not appropriate to speak now.

Shen Cong Sheng had no such issue, immediately urging: “In my opinion, Lord Lu Wei Yin, you do not need to be too conflicted. Back then, you helped Fang Yuan mostly because of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s will.”

After pausing for a while, he added: “Furthermore, even though Fang Yuan took Lord Paradise Earth’s life, that was merely the final hit. The most important culprits were Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.”

Lu Wei Yin sighed as he looked up, he had no choice but to nod as he said: “You are right.”

He smiled bitterly: “The situation has changed, the world is no longer like before. Without Lord Paradise Earth, I, Lu Wei Yin, am merely a wandering vagrant. Even though Mushroomman Paradise is still around, the mushroommen have all entered the sovereign immortal aperture already, they are Fang Yuan’s hostages. I am troubled by both choices, I cannot calm down. Shen Shang, we have a deep friendship forged from battles, I wonder what your opinion on this matter is? I would like to hear your view.”

Shen Shang coughed before saying: “I will not lie to you, friend, I want to join Lord Heaven Refining Demon Venerable. The truth is, back in the blue dragon whale, we had already worked with Lord Fang Yuan. Afterwards, we collaborated in both the fate war and the battle in Crazed Demon Cave. Through our multiple cooperations, Lord Fang Yuan had not let us down once. Of course, can we say that Fang Yuan is dependable? That is complete nonsense, he is still a Demon Venerable after all. But Shen clan’s foundation is here, if we try to move, it will be too risky. After considering the pros and cons, this is the only thing we can do.”

Gu Immortals could not cultivate without resources.

Shen clan was huge and had many Gu Immortals, they needed even more resources to maintain the cultivation of all their members, while promoting new Gu Immortal seeds as well.

Of course, each Gu Immortal had their own immortal aperture.

But just the resources inside one’s immortal aperture were not enough to be self-sufficient. Otherwise, treasure yellow heaven would not be this popular with everyone.

The sovereign immortal aperture was able to be self-sufficient, but it was unique.

Even though it could be refined again, the amount of immortal materials needed, including the ten extreme physiques, and also the tribulation during the Gu refinement, made the risks and investments too great to bear.

Hearing Shen Shang’s words, Lu Wei Yin’s expression turned grim as he nodded: “Brother Shen has helped me a lot, since that is your decision, then I will follow you this time.”

Shen Cong Sheng and Shen Shang glanced at each other while muttering internally: Sly old fox.

With these words, Lu Wei Yin wanted to use this decision to repay the favor of having Shen Shang heal his injuries.

As expected, a pseudo venerable like Lu Wei Yin was a genius among geniuses, he could not be deceived under most situations.

Shen Shang coughed and said: “It is for the best that you have decided to do this. We can help each other out in the future as well.”

Shen Cong Sheng quickly made use of this conversation, suggesting that Shen Shang and Lu Wei Yin should take the lead to get all the other Eastern Sea super forces to join Fang Yuan as well.

Lu Wei Yin predicted that this would happen, he nodded and agreed on the spot.

Shen Cong Sheng brewed his six sound tea again.

After enjoying the tea, Shen Shang brought the satisfied Lu Wei Yin into their secret room again for treatment.

Shen Shang’s and Lu Wei Yin’s injuries were very severe.

Just one round of treatment was not enough. Even if Shen Shang was using human path methods, to get rid of these venerable dao marks on their wounds, time was needed.

On the morning of the second day, Shen Cong Sheng set off and visited the other super clans.

His plan to rope them in was quite successful.

These super forces were all based in Eastern Sea, they soon heard from Shen Cong Sheng that Shen Shang and Lu Wei Yin were going to join Fang Yuan.

With the death of Demon Immortal Qi Jue in Crazed Demon Cave, there were only three pseudo venerable battle strength experts left in the world.

Among the three of them, Shen Shang and Lu Wei Yin wanted to join Fang Yuan, while Qi Sea Ancestor, the leader of the Righteous Qi Alliance, was Fang Yuan’s qi path clone!

This trend was simply too overpowering, the other Eastern Sea super clans soon joined in.

Of course, not everyone wanted to join Fang Yuan.

Xia Xuan, Xia Jia, and the other Gu Immortals had already decided to leave Eastern Sea and betray the Righteous Qi Alliance the moment they heard Longevity Heaven’s and Heavenly Court’s announcements.

These Xia clan Gu Immortals were truly pitiful.

First, their foundation was devoured by the variant human alliance, they then joined Qi Sea Ancestor to try and reclaim their territory. But the result was that Qi Sea Ancestor and Fang Yuan had played them entirely, killing the important Gu Immortals of Xia clan like Xia Rui Zhi.

“This demon Fang Yuan killed our clansmen and devoured our foundation, this enmity is greater than heaven!”

“Eastern Sea, we will be back one day!”

“Let’s go, Zui Xian Weng is going to arrive here soon on patrol.”

“Hehe, don’t worry, in order to escape today, I specially found some rare wine for Zui Xian Weng. With his nature, he is going to be completely drunk today.”

Xia clan’s Gu Immortals conversed while secretly flying from Eastern Sea to Central Continent along the surface of the sea.

Zui Xian Weng watched as they left, until they vanished into the horizon.

This elderly Gu Immortal sighed deeply, he had a worried expression.

He had already regretted his promise to Qin Ding Ling. He was now Heavenly Court’s spy that had infiltrated the Righteous Qi Alliance.

Heavenly Court had instructed him a day ago to purposely let these Xia clan Gu Immortals go.

“I succeeded this time because it was an easy mission, but next time?”

Zui Xian Weng thought about Fang Yuan, who had venerable cultivation level, all the wine that he had become flavorless.

“How did he suddenly become a venerable out of nowhere?!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2218: Fang Yuan As An Escape Route

A tiny bamboo stick, on which five cicadas were skewered, was placed above the fire grill.

The bamboo stick was unusual, while the fire was also not ordinary, these five cicadas were all rank five fire path Gu worms named purple smoke cicada. Once the infusion of true essence, can emit purple smoke, obscuring a piece of heaven and earth.

If in the mortal world, each purple smoke cicada would cause bloodshed among Gu Masters, but here, they were just food.

The person cooking the cicadas wore a white robe and had thick hair, he was sitting on a folding stool that displayed his tall and thin body.

It was Northern Plains’ rank eight Gu Immortal Heavenly Lord Bai Zu!

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had a hobby that was well known in Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world. He loved to cook Gu worms and create these delicious dishes from time to time.

He personally cooked these dishes, other than for himself, he also gave them to his Bai Zu tribe members as a reward. Anyone who received such a reward would feel incredibly honored. This was Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s acknowledgement after all!

At times, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu would also invite his Gu Immortal friends as guests to enjoy his cooking.

At this moment, Chu Du sat in front of Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, he was the single esteemed guest that was invited!

Chu Du continued to chew as the number of purple smoke cicadas on the skewer fell to one.

“Brother Chu, how’s the taste?” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu grilled his cicadas while smiling and asking.

Chu Du smiled too: “It has great flavor! To think that after grilling these purple smoke cicadas, they would actually have the flavor of chicken meat but also the sweetness of taro. It is a crunchy snack and one skewer is definitely not enough.”

“Hahaha.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu laughed: “Everyone knows that I was a lone cultivator initially. Long ago, when I roamed Northern Plains aimlessly, I barely had enough clothes or food. One time, when I failed to capture a Gu worm, I accidentally crushed it with my foot. Half a month of effort became wasted as a result.”

“I could not bear to leave it there! I felt angry and regretful. Thus, I cooked that Gu worm and ate it, the flavor was terrible and I had diarrhea for seven days and night, I almost died as a result.”

“After that ordeal, I became more determined and ruthless. I swore that when I made it big, I would frequently eat Gu worms to take revenge.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had a drifting gaze.

Chu Du was solemn.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had never said such words to him, he seemed to have the intention to go into a deeper conversation.

Chu Du knew that this was the result of exposing his rank eight cultivation level, they were on equal levels now.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu laughed again as he steered the topic back: “My grilled cicadas are just a hobby, there is good flavor but no benefits at all. This is not like those super forces with deep foundations, their famous teas and wines are passed down for generations and modified each time. Some of their better creations can even grant dao marks after consumption.”

Chu Du nodded as he said analytically: “Ever since the Battle of Yi Tian Mountain and the actions of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, who has incredibly profound food path methods, Heavenly Court, which was his enemy, started to research food path and gained much result. The qi tides that swept the world also caused five or six food path inheritances that I know of to be circulated. These were mostly sold in treasure yellow heaven and were bought by many people, allowing them to benefit greatly. As a result, food path started to spread among people.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu nodded and sighed: “With the destruction of fate, the unification of five regions, and the reign of three venerables, the chaotic war is about to start. This has never happened in human history. Food path originated from beastmen and was purposely concealed by people even when it was spread. But with the great era now, food path cannot be hidden anymore. I wonder how many food path experts will appear in the future? Food path is becoming like this, strength path will also not stay the same. Brother Chu, I know that you are focused on promoting strength path, that is impossible during normal times, but in this great era, you have a good chance of success.”

Chu Du laughed involuntarily, he had fought against Fairy Black Moon earlier and risked injuries to save her, it showed his aspiration to everyone.

Chu Du’s eyes glimmered: “Now is still too early. Currently, there are less than five true strength path experts in the five regions. Other than me and Fairy

Black Moon, there is only the first supreme elder of Western Desert’s Fang clan, who is the most famous one. To revitalize strength path, I need to get more Gu cultivators to choose strength path in their cultivation. I cannot change the environment of the world, but I can create more strength path experts to push this tide along!”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu finally reached the topic he wanted, he interjected: “Brother Chu, you are forgetting one strength path expert. In his early days, he mostly relied on strength path methods. And now, he is high and mighty, far beyond the realm of us ordinary people.”

Chu Du was stunned for a moment before realizing that Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was referring to Gu Yue Fang Yuan.

Chu Du knew what Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s intention was in mentioning Fang Yuan, he cooperated and said solemnly: “Gu Yue Fang Yuan was able to become a venerable, it is truly out of my expectations. Back when I first met him, I felt that this person was not simple, he could not be estimated with common sense.”

“Afterwards, I was fortunate to fight together with him several times, I found that this person had a hardy nature, he had both brains and brawn. Anyone with such a nature would not submit to being below others.”

“But he had a special identity, he was the single chosen person by heaven’s will to rebirth, he also received the investment of many venerables in an attempt to destroy fate. In his life, he had encountered so many dangerous situations and predicaments that even throughout history, nobody could compare to it.”

“Finally, he managed to take that final step and become one of the strongest people in the world. After my initial shock and suspicion, I analyzed this and felt that it was a natural thing.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu listened, he nodded, saying: “You are exactly right.”

Next, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu subconsciously quietened his voice as he moved his body forward, saying to Chu Du: “I wonder if Brother Chu has stayed in contact with this Heaven Refining Demon Venerable...”

Chu Du did not answer openly, he asked: “Oh? Brother Bai Zu, you mean to say...”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu shrugged and raised both palms, smiled bitterly: “In the current situation, Brother Chu, why the need to ask an unnecessary question? We became acquainted from our initial conflict, even though we made our respective tribes, in this Northern Plains, we are ostracized constantly.”

“In normal times, we both have rank eight cultivation level, other than Central Continent, as long as we are alive, our forces can stay strong in any other place.”

“But now, we are in the unprecedented great era!”

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable revived, and he has a reputation for being the most caring towards his descendants.”

“My Bai Zu tribe was established by devouring Hei tribe’s foundation, which is a Huang Jin bloodline tribe.”

“To speak the truth, Brother Chu, I have not been able to eat or sleep well recently, I am filled with worries.”

Chu Du quickly consoled: “No matter how protective Giant Sun Immortal Venerable is towards his descendants, you still have rank eight cultivation level.

Longevity Heaven has been trying to unify the entire Northern Plains Gu Immortal world, if he kills you, he will lose the support of many people. If the current world were ruled by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable alone, we might be in danger. But with three venerables in power now, we have hope of surviving.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu still had a bitter expression: “However, there are countless ways for the stronger party to deal with us. Brother Chu, ever since our tribes were created, the other Huang Jin tribes have been ostracizing us. Haven’t we seen enough of their methods? Giant Sun Immortal Venerable does not need to target us, when the chaos starts, he can just push our tribes to be the cannon fodder, it is a simple thing to get rid of us.”

Chu Du heard this and nodded lightly. Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had expressed his inner worry as well.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu wanted to contact Fang Yuan through Chu Du, he was not thinking of joining Fang Yuan immediately.

After all, Fang Yuan had been given the title of Heaven Refining Demon Venerable by Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court.

Everyone in the world knew about Fang Yuan’s nature, ruthlessness and cruelty was a part of it.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu wanted to leave an escape route for himself, so that he could use it when a crisis appeared.

And the truth was, Chu Du had the same idea as him.

“To speak the truth, I have not contacted Fang Yuan for a very long time.” Chu Du sighed and said the truth.

Chu Du added: “Everyone knows about my relationship with Fang Yuan. It is too dangerous to contact Fang Yuan now with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s existence. If I get exposed, disaster would strike.”

Even though he said that.

Chu Du had already made up his mind, while the three venerables were resting, he would secretly contact Fang Yuan and try to create a backup plan for his Chu tribe.

The concurrent reign of three venerables shocked the world.

After the shock, most of the forces and Gu Immortals started to think about their own circumstances.

At the same time, Fang clan’s first supreme elder, who was known as the most famous strength path expert by Chu Du, was also holding a meeting now.

In the study room.

Fang clan’s first supreme elder Fang Gong sat down and said with a tone of lingering fear: “To think that Fang Yuan became a Demon Venerable! Thankfully, our clan did not reject him and made the transaction with him. Otherwise, if we offended him, we could have defended against him back then, but now, we would face his revenge. Our entire clan would get into a crisis of life and death.”

At the side, Fang clan’s third supreme elder, rank seven Gu Immortal, Fang Hua Sheng said: “The truth is, our Fang clan was deceived by Fang Yuan for so long, but that is nothing big, he is someone who became venerable after all.”

Fang Di Chang snorted coldly, showing a look of displeasure.

He had deep grudges with Fang Yuan. Back then, he schemed against Fang Yuan but got killed and captured instead. Even though Fang Yuan released his soul later, that was part of the transaction that allowed him to get a vast amount of soul cores as well as Thieves Den.

Right now, Fang Di Chang had another body, even though he had rank five cultivation level, he was already preparing for his immortal ascension.

Although his cultivation level fell, his status remained unchanged. After all, his adopted son, Fang Yun, was holding up his faction, he was still trusted by the whole of Fang clan.

Even though Fang Di Chang's wisdom path methods were weaker now, he still had his unique perspective.

He smiled coldly and analyzed: “On the surface, Fang Yuan has become a Demon Venerable and the current situation is unprecedented! Something like three venerables coexisting at the same time has never happened, but even among them, there are subtle differences.”

“Look, Heavenly Court exposed Giant Sun Immortal Venerable of creating and cultivating blood path, they also claimed that Fang Yuan was Heaven Refining Demon Venerable, they are the most aggressive side.”

“Longevity Heaven rebuked Heavenly Court and said that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was cultivating blood path to benefit the world, it was his great benevolence. At the same time, they also called Fang Yuan a Demon Venerable.”

“Among the three, only Fang Yuan has not spoken. After the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, he has been recuperating in Eastern Sea. This shows that he is the weakest among the three venerables.”

“In the future, the three venerables will have a huge battle, I still have a chance of revenge. Our Western Desert is situated deep in Western Desert, we have a great location. When the five regions go to war, the boundaries of the various regions will be chaotic. We only need to lay low and develop secretly. If the three venerables have a winner among them, we will join that side. If the venerables die, our Fang clan has hope of becoming an overlord of Western Desert.”

Fang Gong and Fang Hua Sheng listened to his analysis and could not help but nod slightly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2219: No, I Am Great Love Immortal Venerable!

After that, Fang Di Chang emphasized: “Looking at the five regions, Northern Plains, Central Continent, and Eastern Sea all have a venerable leader, while Southern Border has a righteous path alliance. Only our Western Desert is still divided and disunited.”

“One can say that Western Desert is the weakest of the five regions.”

“In this situation, we cannot take the lead to cause problems or show our stance.”

“If other forces recruit us, we will try to balance ourselves and secretly join them while ensuring that our benefits are the priority. Back then, our Fang clan was attacked because we obtained Divine Emperor City. We cannot commit the same mistake again and become the target of everyone, that is too foolish.”

Fang Hua Sheng and Fang Gong nodded again.

Even though Fang Di Chang had lost his cultivation level, he still had his wide-ranging perspective.

Southern Border.

Tian Lan Mountain, Luo clan’s headquarters.

In the main hall, most of Luo clan’s Gu Immortals were gathered, those that did not come personally also sent their wills instead.

Luo clan’s first supreme elder had rank seven cultivation level, he looked around before speaking: “In the era of three reigning venerables, chaos will ensue. What should Luo clan do? If you have any ideas, do say them now.”

Luo clan’s Gu Immortals looked at each other, soon, one of them spoke.

This person cultivated space path, he was Luo clan’s number one general, Luo Ran, who had peak rank seven battle strength, even surpassing the first supreme elder.

Luo Ran spoke: “Everyone, news of the reign of three venerables shocked everyone, after thinking about it, I decided to look at it from another perspective. If I were either of the three venerables, I would first devour Southern Border and Western Desert. After all, weaklings are the easiest targets, it is not good for Eastern Sea, Central Continent, or Northern Plains if the three venerables fight now. The wisest decision is to strengthen myself first and take more territory and resources before fighting the other venerables.”

“Our Luo clan is at the northern end of Southern Border, we are closest to Central Continent. If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable wants to interfere in Southern Border, our Luo clan would have to face her first!”

Luo clan’s immortals nodded with a cold expression.

Ever since the disappearance of the five regional walls, their pressure had been intensifying daily. They had to search for backup plans and escape routes for Luo clan.

Luo Ran continued to speak: “With the reign of three venerables, unless our Southern Border also has a venerable, even if all the Southern Border Gu Immortals worked together cooperatively, we are not the match of any of these three venerables. As for the other super forces who are deeper inside the region, they might still have the choice of staying out of the war, but our Luo clan is stuck between Southern Border and Central Continent, when conflict starts, we will need to stick to one side.”

Once he said that, all of the Luo clan immortals became stirred.

One of them stood up directly and shouted angrily: “Luo Ran, are you saying that our Luo clan should surrender before fighting? Are you going to ignore the righteousness of our clan throughout the generations? We, Luo clan, defend the glory of righteousness, are you going to abandon that?”

Everyone turned to look, the person who said that was Luo Fei.

Next, many Luo clan Gu Immortals added in their comments that sided with Luo Fei.

“When our Luo clan had once prospered, we almost threatened Wu clan’s position, how can we act so cowardly?”

“Indeed, venerables are no doubt invincible. But in the current era, with the reign of three venerables, and the possibility that other venerables might revive in the future, the future is certainly uncertain, we cannot give up now.”

“In my opinion, none of the three venerables now are worth joining. Heavenly Court has the sect system, if our Luo clan joins them, we need to change our clan system. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable is most protective of his descendants, Bai Zu tribe and Chu tribe are being ostracized by Northern Plains’ Huang Jin bloodline. Meanwhile, Heaven Refining Demon Venerable has a lot of enmity with our clan, if we lower our heads to him, I will look down on myself!”

Seeing everyone’s anger and riled emotions, Luo Ran quickly waved his hand: “Everyone, I did not consider it through.”

Luo Fei stared widely: “Lord Luo Ran, you are the number one expert of Luo clan, if even you have such thoughts, we will be too disappointed!”

Luo Ran had an expression of guilt: “I was wrong.”

Luo Fei added: “According to my view, the situation is not very dangerous. With the reign of three venerables, they are wary of each other while being restricted, they will not make a move easily. In the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Demon Immortal Qi Jue and people like Xiao He Jian have already died, Fang Yuan lost many powerful subordinates. Right now, his main body is recuperating in Eastern Sea without doing anything, he does not have the strength to interfere in other regions.”

“Additionally, even though our Southern Border has no venerable, we have the Southern Alliance and the Alliance Leader Wu Yong. During the fate war, Lord Wu Yong led our Southern Border righteous path and did not disappoint us even once! Why can’t we hold expectations towards him and ourselves for now?”

After saying these words, Luo Fei sat down.

Many Luo clan Gu Immortals also nodded slightly, agreeing with her words.

Luo clan thought positively about Wu clan.

Because back then, Luo clan suffered a loss when exploring Qi Jue grotto-heaven, they were pursued and had to seek help from Wu clan to preserve their strength.

After some time, Luo Zu announced the end of the meeting, only Luo Ran stayed behind to talk to him secretly.

“Sorry you had to do this.” Luo Zu said apologetically.

Luo Ran shook his head: “Joining Heavenly Court was my true intention to begin with. I was just probing them today, but it seems that Luo clan does not want to give up yet, they think that it is too cowardly. On the other hand, that information path Immortal Gu was only the idea of Immortal Crane Sect, even if our Luo clan wants to join Central Continent, we need to contact at least Heavenly Court, right?”

Luo Zu sighed: “Our Luo clan has always been an upright and righteous force, I am too useless to lead everyone, I am worried about Luo clan’s safety. But you are right, now is not the time yet, we need to continue contacting Immortal

Crane Sect in secret.”

Central Continent, Immortal Crane Sect.

Verdant green trees grew as clear winds blew.

In a pavilion near the middle of the mountain, a young Gu Immortal was blowing his flute.

As the sound of the flute spread, an immortal crane fluttered in the sky.

The young looking Gu Immortal wore a clean white robe, his eyebrows were green and long, extending to his waist. It was the enslavement path immortal He Feng Yang, he was known as the Winged Crane Flying Immortal.

“I succeeded in passing my tribulation and became rank seven. But to think that the moment I came out of seclusion, I heard the shocking story of the reign of three venerables.”

“Not only did Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable revive, there is even a new Heaven Refining Demon Venerable!”

“Gu Yue Fang Yuan...”

He Feng Yang felt complex emotions.

Back then, he was the one who asked Lord Sky Crane to head to Southern Border’s Gu Yue village, he also dealt with Fang Yuan when trying to get Hu Immortal blessed land.

“If I made up my mind back then and took action personally, could I have killed Fang Yuan?”

This thought emerged in He Feng Yang’s mind constantly.

But soon, He Feng Yang shook his head. The chances were that he would fail. Because behind Fang Yuan, there was the contest of heaven’s will and the other venerables. Also, even if he could have killed Fang Yuan, what was the point of saying it now?

Fang Yuan was already a Demon Venerable.

While He Feng Yang had just gotten past rank six and advanced to rank seven.

He Feng Yang felt dejected internally, but he also had other emotions like envy.

He worked so hard for so many years, but he watched as a mortal like Fang Yuan rose rapidly in strength, eventually becoming a venerable! Fang Yuan had far surpassed him, he could not even see his shadow.

But through this flute music, He Feng Yang slowly calmed down.

“Everyone has their own opportunities.”

“Fang Yuan was able to reach this stage, other than fortuitous encounters, he also had wisdom and courage to fight, he saw through many chaotic situations and had often gotten into dangerous situations.”

“But I am not without hope. During peaceful times, spending resources on enslavement path is wasteful for the sect. But with the arrival of the five regions chaotic war, as an enslavement path cultivator, the sect will think highly of me, they will give me more attention and resources.”

“Furthermore, I acted of my own accord and secretly sent Luo clan an information path Immortal Gu in the name of Immortal Crane Sect to try to recruit them. Since Luo clan’s first supreme elder has not destroyed the information path Immortal Gu yet, this shows a clear attitude.”

“If this succeeds, it will be a huge accomplishment, I will get a lot of sect contribution points. By then, I can exchange for an immortal pill from Heavenly Court so that Little Nine can become an ancient desolate beast!”

He Feng Yang looked at the nine palace crane in front of him and smiled.

This nine palace crane was a desolate beast with a close relationship with He Feng Yang. Back then, it was hit by a time path Immortal Gu and regressed in age, becoming younger and younger until it became a baby. He Feng Yang tried his best to save it, paying a huge price for it to recover fully.

Eastern Sea.

Five colored smoke rumbled as it contracted, eventually going back into Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan sat cross-legged on the nameless island, he saw a wide area before him without any smoke left.

Next, a large group of Gu Immortals came towards him. When they were a thousand steps away, they landed on the surface of the sea and kowtowed towards him, showing their subservience.

These were Eastern Sea’s righteous path Gu Immortals, the various first supreme elders of the respective clans were among them.

Of course, they were led by the pseudo venerables, Shen Shang and Lu Wei Yin.

Fang Yuan was stunned for a split second before understanding the situation, he laughed: “A wise man submits to circumstances, everyone, please get up. From today onwards, I will treat you equally like my other subordinates.”

The immortals showed expressions of gratitude as they said together: “We pay respects to Heaven Refining Demon Venerable, we are willing to give our lives to Lord Demon Venerable!”

But Fang Yuan shook his head slowly: “At this point, I should make a declaration to the world.”

He connected to treasure yellow heaven and started to make his declaration.

“What, Heaven Refining Demon Venerable? I do not accept this title!”

Shen Shang and the rest were stunned.

“I am not in the demonic path, I am a righteous path member. All my past actions have been to seek blessings for all living beings in the world. I disregarded my own life and experienced countless crises to destroy fate, I granted freedom to everyone in the world! However, corrupt forces like Heavenly Court still try to suppress and slander me even now, they are trying to obstruct me!”

“I was best friends with Lord Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. In the battle of Crazed Demon Cave, he entrusted me with his wishes before dying, after becoming venerable, I will emulate Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, I will work for the harmony of the five regions!”

“Everyone, do not believe in rumors, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable was not killed by me, Star Constellation and Giant Sun cooperated to end his life.”

Fang Yuan spoke in a righteous tone.

Shen Shang and Lu Wei Yin stared at him blankly.

The other Eastern Sea righteous path leaders were also listening like this was a dream.

Fang Yuan suddenly raised his volume, he said in an energetic tone: “Everyone, I want you to remember, I, Gu Yue Fang Yuan, am Great Love Immortal Venerable! From today onwards, I will create my Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, I will bring benefits to the world and peace to the five regions!!”

News soon spread rapidly in treasure yellow heaven, every Gu Immortal in the world heard of it.

Be they Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Chu Du who were currently grilling food, or the three higher-ups of Fang clan who were discussing secretly, or Luo clan’s immortals, or He Feng Yang, they all received this shocking news.

But Fang Yuan did not stop, he continued to speak.

He placed a list in treasure yellow heaven that contained a vast number of Gu worm names. If any Gu Master or Gu Immortal paid the appropriate price, he would refine Gu for them. For mortal Gu, he did not restrict quantity, while in regards to Immortal Gu, he could even refine rank eight Immortal Gu for them!

The five regions went into an uproar.

“This is my promise as Gu Yue Fang Yuan, a refinement path venerable!”

“Gu worms are the core of our cultivation, they are our foundation. But all along, they have been too rare and hard to refine, especially Immortal Gu.”

“Because of this, the first thing that I will do to benefit the world is to refine Immortal Gu for everyone. Regardless of our past grudges or enmity, be it friend or foe, I will not mind it, I will refine Gu for everyone equally. This will prove the great love in my heart!”

“I know what you are worried about. But in fact, I have already made many transactions with various forces and Gu Immortals, I refined many Immortal Gu for them.”

“For example, I’ve transacted many times with Western Desert’s Fang clan, this is all evidence!”

In Western Desert, Fang Gong, Fang Di Chang, and Fang Hua Sheng stared with wide eyes.

Fang Di Chang, who had earlier emphasized that they should ‘keep a low-profile and not cause public outrage’ turned pale immediately.

“Or for example, Southern Border’s Wu clan. I have refined more than one rank eight Immortal Gu for Wu Yong, the evidence is here!”

Wu Yong:”...”

Luo clan’s members: “...”

Luo Fei held her head and felt like her heart had broken: “Why? Lord Wu Yong, you actually cooperated with Fang Yuan secretly... why?!”

“Or for example, Northern Plains’ Bai Zu tribe, I have many possible areas of cooperation with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, we have been in close contact.” Fang Yuan continued to announce.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was like a stone statue, the skewer in his hand that he was roasting went up in flames.

Chu Du looked at him, seemingly saying: Brother, what is wrong with you? Since you have been in contact with Fang Yuan all along, why did you want to use my connection with him?

Fang Yuan continued to say: “Not just Northern Plains, Central Continent is involved too. For example, Immortal Crane Sect’s He Feng Yang, I have been in contact with him since my younger days, we have truly become acquainted as a result of past conflicts.”

“Slander, this is pure slander!!” He Feng Yang smashed the jade flute in his hand, he shivered intensely.

Finally, Fang Yuan said: “Whether you believe me or not, that is up to you. Risks exist all the time, but what if this is true? Why don’t you try first?”

“Everyone, please give me some of your trust!”

“Since long ago, countless people have misunderstood me. Thus, allow me to prove now to the people over the world that I am truly Great Love Immortal Venerable!!”

After Fang Yuan’s declaration.

Winds blew on the surface of the sea.

The kneeling Eastern Sea Gu Immortals raised their heads and looked towards Fang Yuan in a daze.

Looking at them, Fang Yuan showed a kind and sincere smile: “Everyone, please get up. You have already joined my Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, you will receive greater preferential treatment as the first batch.”

“I guarantee you that.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2220: Blending of Black and White

Li Xiao Bai followed several information path Gu Immortals, they carefully waited in ambush.

“Xiao Bai, black and white heaven are fusing together now, the commotion is huge and the environment is dangerous. Later, when the hound groups fly over, you should focus on watching rather than taking action, do you understand?” A rank seven information path Gu Immortal instructed.

Li Xiao Bai quickly nodded: “Yes, I will listen to the seniors.”

He was acting obediently, without the arrogance of a great scholar, all the information path Gu Immortals here had a good impression of him.

Li Xiao Bai had become a rank six long ago, he was an information path Gu Immortal. Because of his talent, he was also the most favored Gu Immortal junior in Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

These information path Gu Immortals came from Profound Literature grotto-heaven, they were at least second-grade officials in the grotto-heaven’s Imperial Court.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven had a special system, Gu Immortals entered the Imperial Court and most of them held important positions and roles. After Li Xiao Bai became a Gu Immortal, he also started to work for the Imperial Court.

The only exception was Old Immortal Hua Yu.

He had rank eight cultivation level and stayed in the background, controlling the entire situation.

“They’re here.” After a while, the Gu Immortal in charge of investigation spoke.

The immortals quickly displayed several killer moves, they concealed themselves even more deeply.

Soon, Li Xiao Bai saw a group of remnant heavenly dogs running towards them while stepping on air.

These were all space path ancient desolate beasts, they ate space path Gu worms as food.

“A total of three hundred and sixty-eight remnant heavenly dogs, and four heaven swallowing hounds.” Li Xiao Bai cultivated information path, he was most skilled at collecting information, after taking a glance at them, he noticed the size of this hound group.

Remnant heavenly dogs were ancient desolate beasts, after they grew to an extent, they would become heaven swallowing hounds.

Heaven swallowing hounds were immemorial desolate beasts that ate nine heavens fragments, grotto-heaven, and blessed lands as food. They had always been a huge threat to the two heavens’ grotto-heavens.

As the dog group continued to approach, Profound Literature grotto-heaven’s Gu Immortals started to work together, they secretly used a killer move.

This killer move had no commotion or sound, it spread out rapidly.

Initially, the dog group had no change, but after more than ten breaths of time, three heaven swallowing hounds stopped and bared their fangs, looking in the same direction with expressions of vigilance.

The final heaven swallowing hound also slowed down.

The four heaven swallowing hounds barked at the same place for a while, afterwards, three of the heaven swallowing hounds brought most of the remnant heavenly dogs to move on another route, towards a different direction.

The final heaven swallowing hound brought more than twenty remnant heavenly dogs as they continued on their original path.

The Gu Immortals of Profound Literature grotto-heaven had been hiding all along, after the dog group left their field of vision, they showed themselves and sighed in relief.

“Alright, it has been settled.”

“Most of the hounds have been misled by us, they think that direction has sumptuous food, but there are soul beasts there instead.”

“Haha, we have also used information path methods on those soul beasts, once the dog group goes there, they will think that the soul beasts are hiding an immortal aperture. They will kill each other without us taking action.”

“The remaining heaven swallowing hound was not tricked by us, it likely has the protection of an Immortal Gu. But with this number that we lured over, Lord Hua Yu has enough to work with.”

“Xiao Bai, did you see clearly? When your cultivation level rises to rank seven in the future, you need to complete such missions often as well. Our Profound Literature grotto-heaven cannot move and is placed in one spot in the sky, but we need to resolve lots of problems before they even occur.”

Li Xiao Bai immediately answered: “I will work harder!”

These Gu Immortals immediately moved along the direction that the heaven swallowing hound went earlier.

This heaven swallowing hound brought a few remnant heavenly dogs with it, getting ambushed midway by the battlefield killer move that Old Immortal Hua Yu set up in advance.

After a large battle, the heaven swallowing hound died. There was a wild Immortal Gu after all, but it was destroyed in the battle.

There were some remaining remnant heavenly dogs that managed to survive, they escaped along the cracks of the battlefield killer move.

They were space path beasts after all, running away was their expertise.

But afterwards, they met with Li Xiao Bai’s group.

After a few rounds of killer moves, these remnant heavenly dogs became minced corpses. Li Xiao Bai also took action, he used some immortal essence but did not play a big role.

However, he showed an expression of excitement and lingering enthusiasm, the other information path Gu Immortals looked at him and had a deeper impression of him being a cute young junior.

Old Immortal Hua Yu collected and stored the battlefield killer move as the immortals quickly greeted him.

Old Immortal Hua Yu nodded and looked at everyone, when he saw Li Xiao Bai, he smiled at the latter.

He liked this young junior a lot and appreciated his talent.

In his heart, Li Xiao Bai had a good upbringing and was the most talented Gu Immortal in the last hundred years of Profound Literature grotto-heaven’s history, he was the future of the grotto-heaven.

“Sigh! To think that Qi Sea Ancestor is actually a clone of Heaven Refining Demon Venerable!”

“Fang Yuan is scheming and crafty, I was deceived by him completely. If not for Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven exposing the truth, I would continue to be used by him.”

“What Great Love Immortal Venerable, such words can only deceive idiots.”

“Sigh, I cannot trust any outsider. Only these Gu Immortals in front of me are trustworthy.”

Qi Sea Ancestor had once personally helped Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Thus, Old Immortal Hua Yu respected Qi Sea Ancestor greatly. After joining the Righteous Qi Alliance, he had been following Qi Sea Ancestor’s leadership enthusiastically.

But now that Qi Sea Ancestor’s identity was exposed, all of that respect towards him turned into rage and humiliation!

Old Immortal Hua Yu had surging emotions, but he kept calm on the surface and controlled the situation. While ordering the Gu Immortals to clean up the battlefield of all traces, he also sent them to search the area.

They were all information path Gu Immortals, they soon cleared the battlefield of all noticeable traces or clues.

Other than that, the investigative Gu Immortals also brought back some information —

“The heavenly wind qi wall of the immemorial two heavens has mostly dissipated, the fusion of the two heavens will get more severe as time passes. Not only are the two heavens’ beasts fighting more frequently, the dao marks of the two heavens are also undergoing huge changes. Some are conflicting with each other while others are fusing together and creating greater effects, they cannot be separated.”

In fact, the heavenly wind qi wall had started dissipating long ago. Now that the five regional walls were gone and qi tides swept the world, the two heavens’ fusion also reached the most intense moment.

This resulted in the intense commotion.

All the grotto-heavens that were in the two heavens were facing problems continuously throughout the period.

Earlier, the dog group was a huge threat to Profound Literature grotto-heaven so it was dealt with in advance.

But what worried Old Immortal Hua Yu and the other information path Gu Immortals was not just the trouble ahead of them, but also the bigger situation of the five regions and two heavens.

After Fang Yuan returned, he publicly announced himself as Great Love Immortal Venerable and set up his Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.

Immediately, the two pseudo venerables, Lu Wei Yin and Shen Shang, brought the various super clans of Eastern Sea’s righteous path and submitted to Fang Yuan.

Thus, the Righteous Qi Alliance and the variant human alliance jointly entered the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.

Old Immortal Hua Yu and the others ended up in an awkward position.

Speaking of which, they were members of the Righteous Qi Alliance, as were Granny Skeleton and others. But all along, because their foundation was in the two heavens, they were vaguely ostracized by Eastern Sea’s super forces.

But that was nothing originally.

Old Immortal Hua Yu, Granny Skeleton, and the rest only needed to continue getting Qi Sea Ancestor’s support.

But now, with the exposure of Qi Sea Ancestor’s identity as their greatest enemy, Fang Yuan’s clone, they had all along been trying to gain Fang Yuan’s favor!

Old Immortal Hua Yu and Granny Skeleton could not help but feel stunned.

Concurrently, the changes in the two heavens made them busy and tired as well.

Right at this time, Fang Yuan announced himself as Great Love Immortal Venerable and made a declaration that shook the world, the five regions’ Gu Immortal world went into an uproar.

Ever since Gu Yue Fang Yuan started cultivating, he had been ruthless and slaughtered countless innocents, he was clearly a demonic path member, how could he change his identity so easily with just some words?

If changing one’s faction was so easy to achieve, what was the point of the righteous path?

Old Immortal Hua Yu scoffed in his heart but he was clear of the truth.

Fang Yuan’s declaration was a joke. But with his strength as a Demon Venerable, who would dare to laugh?

Look at those Eastern Sea righteous path forces who submitted at the first second!

Even if Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court made fun of his words, what could they do to Fang Yuan?

“I cannot drag this on anymore.”

“Fang Yuan has already taken in Eastern Sea’s righteous path, our two heavens’ forces cannot watch anymore.”

“But should we join Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court, or Longevity Heaven?”

Profound Literature grotto-heaven was not in the heaven of Central Continent or Northern Plains, this was the reason why Old Immortal Hua Yu joined the Righteous Qi Alliance earlier.

Now, joining Fang Yuan was the most convenient outcome.

Yet, they would not be able to preserve Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Why?

Everyone knew that Fang Yuan had the sovereign immortal aperture, the two heavens’ grotto-heavens were his targets to annex.

Since they could not keep their homeland anyway, what was the point of joining Fang Yuan?

And honestly speaking, Old Immortal Hua Yu really hated demons like Fang Yuan.

Old Immortal Hua Yu started to think more broadly, there were many options in front of him.

But which choice should he pick? It was a tough question!

Longevity Heaven.

At the most central area, there was Calamity Luck Altar.

The four directions of Calamity Luck Altar had the Four Desolations.

And around the Four Desolations, there were eight areas for the Eight Extremities.

Above the Four Desolations was golden light that radiated and enveloped the place. Above the Eight Extremities was a spreading aura of green light.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already returned to Longevity Heaven for some time already.

Whoosh.

A soft sound echoed.

The final few star path dao marks on Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s body went ablaze, they vanished completely.

“My injuries are finally healed.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable let out a breath of air: “Next, I need to refine the luck path dao marks of the five regions and two heavens to regain my strength as a Dao Lord!”

In the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not use genuine venerable level strength in combat.

Because they were in the void, there were no natural dao marks for them to refine.

If there were, every action of a venerable would be amplified and strengthened by the natural dao marks, they would become very terrifying.

This was like how Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had the amplification of countless soul path dao marks in the Door of Life and Death.

But strictly speaking, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was not considered a true Dao Lord, because he did not have his sanity.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already refined all of the luck path dao marks in the world back in his time. But after his death, these dao marks went back to the control of the Heavenly Dao.

Thus, he had to refine them again before he could use them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2221: Fang Yuan’s Principles

Longevity Heaven’s luck path dao marks were originally from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s immortal aperture, because it did not devour any nine heavens fragment, heaven’s will had not taken over it.

As long as he fought in Longevity Heaven, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s strength would be even greater than Spectral Soul Demon Venerable in Crazed Demon Cave!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s own luck path dao marks could not match Spectral Soul Demon Venerable in number. But with the colossal number of dao marks in Longevity Heaven, he surpassed Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s main body.

And most importantly, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was sane and clear-minded!

“It is a pity that I cannot fuse this original immortal aperture into my current body.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not lack methods to move an immortal aperture.

Once he fused with Longevity Heaven, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s strength would surge immensely. His luck path dao marks would greatly surpass and suppress Fang Yuan. By then, he could travel the five regions and two heavens without any worries!

After all, Longevity Heaven was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s peak cultivation creation, it was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s foundation after passing three chaotic disasters.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan had only passed one Heavenly Dao blockade, he had survived the chaos tribulation in Crazed Demon Cave, it could only be considered a small chaotic disaster.

But right now, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had a reason why he could not absorb Longevity Heaven.

Because he cultivated blood path now.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable wanted to use blood path as his main path and luck path as his specialty, his plan was to cultivate both paths.

Since he had planned this for so long already, he naturally had a superb blood-luck dual cultivation method. But he did not have the sovereign immortal body, no matter what he did, conflicts of dao marks still existed.

Right now, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had only started cultivating blood path officially for a short time, he had many luck path dao marks but few blood path dao marks, this difference was already the limit. If he fused with Longevity Heaven now, he would gain a surge of luck path dao marks that would suppress blood path entirely, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s dual cultivation plan would fail.

“Although I cannot regain Longevity Heaven now, in terms of refining natural dao marks, I have the biggest advantage, that is my immortal essence!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had the largest immortal essence storage of the three venerables! Currently, he had a thousand yellow apricot immortal essence beads.

Most of it was left behind in Longevity Heaven during his first life.

He had an even larger quantity stored back then, but there was continuous expenditure as time passed, because Longevity Heaven could not produce any more immortal essence after Giant Sun’s demise, eventually, only less than ten percent of his immortal essence was left.

“But this quantity is definitely the highest among everyone!” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was confident about this.

Because he knew that Heaven Refining Demon Venerable Fang Yuan had just advanced, his rank nine immortal essence storage was zero. As for rank eight immortal essence, he definitely had some but it was a small quantity as well.

It was obvious.

Ever since Fang Yuan's rebirth, his cultivation level had risen rapidly, he had almost participated in all the major fights. He also refined so many Immortal Gu and made various Immortal Gu Houses, with such an investment, how could he have a lot of immortal essence left?

And the thing that made Giant Sun Immortal Venerable most glad was that Fang Yuan got hit by his luck path killer move in Crazed Demon Cave — Fortune and Disaster Coexists.

Even though Fang Yuan made use of this killer move to end up deceiving him, it was undeniable that the sovereign immortal aperture suffered huge losses in the end. Together with the small chaotic disaster, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable estimated that the sovereign immortal aperture was definitely in a pitiful state right now!

This was Fang Yuan's situation, but Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also could not have more immortal essence than Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

The reason?

The reason was quite simple.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's era was too long ago. Even if she left behind a large quantity of immortal essence, Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals would have expended them over the years.

In fact, three Demon Venerables, Limitless Demon Venerable, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, and Red Lotus Demon Venerable, invaded Heavenly Court after Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's era.

When Heavenly Court resisted the three Demon Venerables, could they have avoided the use of venerable methods which expended the immortal essence left by the venerable?

"Regrettably, the two heavens are fusing and the heaven path dao marks are gathering with the change of environment, I had no choice but to retrieve Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace. Otherwise, my advantage would be even greater."

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had no choice but to move Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace back.

WIth Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace in immemorial black heaven, it could continue to arrange luck path dao marks and participate in the operations of heaven and earth, as well as the luck of living beings. It could allow the black heaven above Northern Plains to become Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's territory that he could manipulate.

Back then, in the Reverse Flow River battle, Heavenly Court organized a group to head to Northern Plains, but they suffered a loss in immemorial black heaven. It was mostly the effect of Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

Now, with the fusion of the two immemorial heavens, the luck path dao marks that Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace arranged in the past were affected by the change, they became chaotic and broken. If he forcefully protected these luck path dao marks and resisted the changes of the Heavenly Dao, the whole of Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace would be affected and face destruction.

These days, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had been healing himself while observing the situation, he had a rather clear understanding of it now.

In the five regions and two heavens, no matter how the environment changed, the battle between the venerables was the only thing that mattered.

For Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, be it Star Constellation Immortal Venerable or Heaven Refining Demon Venerable, they were both unprecedented enemies. In the short term, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could not find a way to exterminate these two enemies, he could only try to weaken them while maintaining his advantage.

The abundance of immortal essence was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s advantage.

“If I use this advantage well, I will be able to refine the luck path dao marks of the world first. On this basis, if I fight against either of the two venerables, I will be able to gain the upper hand!”

“Once I gain the upper hand, I will have to heavily cripple Heavenly Court or Fang Yuan. If I can’t do that, a lot of trouble will ensue.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable felt a sense of urgency internally.

If he missed the opportunity of using this early period of advantage, as time passed, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would plot and scheme deeper as a wisdom path expert, she would get harder to deal with.

There was another point, they had to guard against Star Constellation Immortal Venerable secretly reviving the other Immortal Venerables of Heavenly Court!

This was the same for Fang Yuan too.

Right now, his immortal essence storage was at its lowest, once it started to rise, with his refinement path ability, he would refine Immortal Gu on a large scale, his strength would rise greatly, far beyond now.

“Refinement path venerable...” Thinking of Fang Yuan’s declaration as Great Love earlier, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could not help but frown slightly.

He could already predict that Fang Yuan’s strength would cause a huge impact on the Gu Immortal world.

This strength was so colossal and unprecedented that even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could not tell what the future would become because of Fang Yuan’s actions.

After all, there had never been a refinement path venerable in history.

Refinement path was different from the other paths.

Gu cultivation had three major aspects, nurture, use, and refinement. Refinement path was one of these three aspects, this was a special trait that no other path had!

Heavenly Court.

“Cough, cough, cough.” In a tightly shut secret room, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable coughed out several mouthfuls of blood.

The injuries from the battle in Crazed Demon Cave had not recovered yet.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable cultivated wisdom path and star path, she was not as skilled as Giant Sun Immortal Venerable in terms of healing, who cultivated blood path.

Gu Immortal injuries were usually very troublesome.

Venerables were no exception to this.

Heavenly Court did not lack outstanding healing methods, but for the case of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, very few were suitable.

Because she had too many wisdom path and star path dao marks, healing methods of all other paths were barely usable. Human path was an exception but in the whole of Heavenly Court, there were no human path pseudo venerable experts. This was the lowest requirement to heal a venerable's injuries.

Thus, other than healing herself, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had no other methods.

“I still have six hundred and seventy-one yellow apricot immortal essence beads.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable frowned: “I did not have many to begin with, some were consumed during the battle in Crazed Demon Cave as well. I still have injuries on me, if I continue healing myself, yellow apricot immortal essence beads would be rapidly expended again. After that, I still need to refine Heavenly Court's dao marks and the natural wisdom path dao marks of the world...”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable calculated precisely.

She had sufficient immortal essence for now, but wisdom path experts calculated ten steps in advance, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was definitely deducing more than that.

The immortal essence storage was not enough for her to refine the wisdom path dao marks of the outside world.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's situation was different from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

There were a large number of wisdom path dao marks in Heavenly Court, but they did not belong to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Because Heavenly Court had annexed nine heavens fragments, even though Star Constellation Immortal Venerable contributed her own immortal aperture to this place, her original dao marks had all been assimilated and taken over by heaven's will.

Of course, during the process of refining dao marks in the outside world, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's current immortal aperture would still produce rank nine immortal essence continuously.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable felt that this was an extremely dangerous situation! Giant Sun Immortal Venerable or Heaven Refining Demon Venerable might attack at any time!

Thus, the more immortal essence she had in her storage, the better.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable must have more immortal essence than me. As for Heaven Refining Demon Venerable, he is the weakest among us in this aspect.”

“But he cannot be underestimated! This man is... very special.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable thought of this as she revealed a complex expression.

Fang Yuan’s earlier declaration of being Great Love Immortal Venerable shook the entire world.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was wary of Fang Yuan’s refinement path ability, while Star Constellation Immortal Venerable focused on his nature.

In the history of the ten venerables, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was noble and grand, Limitless Demon Venerable was a crazed Dao pursuer, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable enjoyed slaughter, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable was wild, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable was indifferent, while Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable was obsessed...

But no matter what, each of these venerables had their own pride and arrogance in some way.

But Heaven Refining Demon Venerable Fang Yuan?

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable squinted her eyes, she had never seen a venerable with such a nature. He simply did not know the limit of what the word ‘shameless’ was, he did not care about his ‘face’, he distorted truth and lies, even lying with a calm expression and deceiving with a righteous tone.

What Great Love Immortal Venerable?!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was certain that this title was part of Fang Yuan’s current plan, it was a method to achieve his current goals. If it was said that anyone in the world could go from demonic to righteous, Fang Yuan was the least likely one among them all.

If he felt the need to make a move, he would do it regardless of how many innocent lives would be sacrificed.

By then, the declaration of Great Love Immortal Venerable and all related promises would be completely forgotten by him like a baseless fart.

But if he felt that going back to the righteous path had benefits to be gained, he would make another similar declaration with no shame in his heart.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had finally understood Fang Yuan clearly now.

“If I have to say that this person has a principle, then his principle is to have no bottom line.”

“And if I say this person has a bottom line, then his bottom line is to have no principle!”

This was simply a thoroughly shameless person.

When Star Constellation Immortal Venerable felt a headache regarding him, this shameless fellow had already become venerable.

And the thing that made it hard for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was that this shameless venerable had an incredibly deep understanding of the human heart, to the extent where he could predict their every thought.

His actions were bound to create a huge wave in the Gu Immortal world before gathering countless people to his side!

The temptation of Immortal Gu was too great!

Even if they could not trust him now, some risk-taking Gu Immortals would still try their luck.

Once Fang Yuan displayed sufficient sincerity, the entire five regions’ Gu Immortal world would fall into his palm.

“Even Heavenly Court will not be spared from this...” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled bitterly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2222: Fang Yuan’s First Public Deal

Western Desert.

The silent desert suddenly exploded as sand flew in the air, a huge mountain-like beast appeared from underground.

This beast had the shape of a python, it had a crocodile head and six sharp eagle-like claws.

Dragon crocodile!

An immemorial dragon crocodile.

The dragon crocodile roared, the sound waves spread widely, but there was a trace of fear and panic in its voice.

The dragon crocodile had the ability to climb clouds and soar to the sky, after leaving the desert, it flew straight up.

But midway, the dragon crocodile’s body shook suddenly as it spewed out a torrent of flames from its huge mouth.

The dragon crocodile growled in pain as it fell to the ground, creating a huge sand wave as a result.

After it struggled for a while, it gradually quietened down and stopped moving entirely.

After a while, three Gu Immortals came out of its mouth.

Two males and one female.

They were from three super forces of Western Desert respectively, being Shi Kang, Zuo Qiu Yan Ming, and Tuoba Feng Yan.

Shi Kang cultivated earth path while the other two cultivated fire path.

It was a fact that the most common cultivation path among Western Desert’s Gu Immortals was fire path.

“The final dragon crocodile is dead.”

“According to our three clans’ agreement, this dragon crocodile belongs to Sister Yan Ming.”

The only female here, Zuo Qiu Yan Ming, nodded as she opened her immortal aperture’s entrance, placing this immemorial dragon crocodile into it.

She observed within her immortal aperture and showed a smile on her face: “This immemorial dragon crocodile’s corpse is good, many dao marks are preserved. It was all thanks to Brother Feng Yan’s plan that we killed it like this.”

“I’m flattered.” Tuoba Feng Yan smiled: “If not for Brother Shi Kang’s method, we would not have been able to enter the dragon crocodile’s stomach and take this risk. The biggest credit goes to Brother Shi Kang.”

“I’m flattered as well, this is our mutual effort.” Shi Kang smiled as he replied modestly.

Dragon crocodiles lived in immemorial black heaven, but recently with the fusion of both heavens, their living habitat was badly affected, after a dragon crocodile group lost in a territorial fight, they had to escape from immemorial black heaven.

They wandered along a route, passing Zuo Qiu, Tuoba, and Shi clans territories.

These three clans negotiated and each sent a rank seven Gu Immortal expert to get rid of these dragon crocodiles that were in poor condition already.

Shi Kang, Zuo Qiu Yan Ming, and Tuoba Feng Yan worked together, spending three days and nights to wipe out this dragon crocodile group.

But right when they were about to return to their own clans, they received orders from their clans simultaneously.

“Oh? Wan clan wants to gather the clans and attack Fang clan together?”

“Hehe, so the first one that acts is Wan clan after all.”

“Now it seems, because us three are the closest to Wan clan’s territory, they sent us this order together.”

The three immortals discussed for a while before deciding to travel together.

“Even though this is not far from Wan clan, we still need to rest and reorganize ourselves.”

“Indeed, we need to treat our injuries first.”

“The dragon crocodile corpses in the immortal apertures have to be dealt with too.”

Shi Kang thought about it before smiling: “On this journey to Wan clan, we will pass by myriad ore desert. That resource point is guarded by my clan’s Shi Zhong, we can go there and rest.”

For resting, the environment of the wilderness was definitely worse than a resource point.

Every resource point had an immortal formation, it was safer too.

Zuo Qiu Yan Ming and Tuoba Feng Yan looked at each other before turning to Shi Kang and nodding, the latter said: “Then we will trouble you this time.”

Shi Kang laughed heartily: “Gladly!”

Myriad ore desert was relatively flat and the surrounding view extended to the horizon, the ground was a cracked rocky terrain with no vegetation growing.

But below the desert, there was a different world all together, a large amount of ores were gathered here, a hundred thousand rockmen were living here as miners, excavating all sorts of materials for Gu Immortals.

But these rockmen were all mortals, they were Gu Masters at best. With limited strength, they could only excavate mortal ores.

Thus, Shi clan sent a Gu Immortal to guard this place while simultaneously excavating immortal ores.

This was a tough mission, normally speaking, a Gu Immortal sent here was someone who got ostracized by the clan.

Shi Zhong was such an example.

Shi Zhong's father betrayed the clan and caused huge losses to them, not just in resources but also Gu Immortals' lives.

In order to gain trust, Shi Zhong changed his name to Shi Zhong[1] to express his loyalty to the clan. But that did not change anything.

At this moment, Shi Zhong's divine sense was moving about in treasure yellow heaven.

In treasure yellow heaven, the most eye-catching thing now was that huge piece of Primordial Domain!

"This is the legendary secluded domain of heaven and earth! In the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable sold this to Heaven Refining Demon Venerable Fang Yuan. If I can get a piece, how good would that be?"

Shi Zhong felt incredibly envious.

The reason why he knew about the origin of this Primordial Domain was because Fang Yuan had spread the news.

The idea was simple, he wanted the world to know that even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made a transaction with him, what was there to fear?

Of course, now that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was exposed as the creator of blood path and had also started cultivating it, he was labeled as a Demon Venerable by Heavenly Court.

Above the Primordial Domain, there was a will.

This will had a human-shaped form, he wore a white robe and had black hair, his facial features were peerless, it was Fang Yuan's will.

"Heaven Refining Demon Venerable..."

"If I ask him to refine Gu, will I be able to obtain wealth Gu?"

"No, that is too risky."

"Wealth Gu is my hope of rising up, how can I give the Gu recipe to Fang Yuan. If he succeeds in the refinement but does not give the Gu to me, I will be making a stupid mistake. There is nothing I can do to a venerable!"

This thought only flashed in Shi Zhong's mind for a second.

Shi Zhong had obtained an incomplete Immortal Gu recipe of wealth Gu in his early days.

Wealth Gu was a legendary Immortal Gu, if Shi Zhong could refine it, he would soon become incredibly wealthy and accumulate lots of cultivation resources, breaking free from the clan’s restraints.

In order to refine wealth Gu, Shi Zhong had secretly used humans to refine Gu. If such a demonic act was exposed, he would be in huge trouble.

Even though he took such a huge risk, he had tried to refine it for over a hundred times but all his attempts ended in failure. He was still far from success.

Shi Zhong had naturally heard Fang Yuan’s declaration, but he did not dare to risk it.

Wealth Gu was all the hope he had!

“Oh? Gu Immortals are getting closer.” Right at this time, the immortal formation suddenly alerted.

Shi Zhong’s expression changed, he immediately went out of treasure yellow heaven and controlled the immortal formation.

At this time, Shi Kang was leading the other two immortals as they stayed in the sky, at the edge of the formation, without entering deeply as they waited.

After Shi Zhong contacted them and verified their identity, he learned of their intention.

“I am so glad that Brother Shi Kang came here. Please, everyone, come in!” Shi Zhong showed sufficient enthusiasm.

The three immortals entered the immortal formation and rested for a while, Shi Zhong held a small banquet and invited them to join.

He even specially gave the main seat to Shi Kang.

After Shi Kang rejected it a few times, he sat down on the main seat.

As the other two immortals saw this situation, they thought of a rumor and understood why.

Compared to Shi Zhong, Shi Kang was a popular person in Shi clan. Not long ago, he had defeated everyone else and obtained Sand Heap blessed land.

On this trip, after killing the dragon crocodiles, Shi Kang did not need to hand them over to the clan, he sold many of them in treasure yellow heaven directly.

Seeing such a treatment, Zuo Qiu Yan Ming and Tuoba Feng Yan felt very envious.

“This time, Wan clan is leading everyone and gathering Wan clan’s forces to attack Fang clan, what do both of you think?” After some drinking, Shi Kang asked.

Zuo Qiu Yan Ming said: “Wan clan and Fang clan have deep grudges, it is not strange that they are leading this. Since they are using a proper reason, there is no issue with their action. But I think that Wan clan’s decision now will cause problems in the future.”

“That’s right, I hold the same view.” Tuoba Feng Yan put down his glass: “Firstly, with the disappearance of the five regional walls, Western Desert has several clans by the borders of the regions, it is difficult to get them to make a bold move.”

“Secondly, Fang clan is not weak, their first supreme elder has rank eight cultivation level and they most excel in Immortal Gu Houses!”

“Thirdly, Fang clan has a good relationship with many clans. During the fate war, they had led everyone in the fight, causing their reputation to rise greatly!”

“And fourthly, which is the most important reason. The reason why we are targeting Fang clan is because of their trading with Fang Yuan, but this is also our fear. Who knows what their exact relationship with Fang Yuan is?”

Shi Kang nodded continuously, sighing: “Brother Tuoba’s analysis is sound and clear, I agree completely.”

Shi Zhong did not speak, he was in deep thought.

Tuoba Feng Yan’s analysis was simple and Shi Kang knew it as well, but he had to ask this.

Because Shi Kang represented Shi clan, he had to talk with Zuo Qiu Yan Ming and Tuoba Feng Yan to see what their clan’s intentions were as well.

Now that he knew their views were aligned with Shi clan, Shi Kang felt more relaxed.

“Come, drink wine, drink wine.” Shi Kang raised his cup and smiled warmly.

After the meal, the three immortals thanked Shi Zhong before setting off for Wan clan.

Shi Zhong stored away the cups, he had a heavy mood.

Shi Kang’s treatment by the clan was too good, it was simply the opposite of him.

Earlier, when Shi Kang was in closed cultivation, the clan provided him all the resources he needed. After Shi Kang took Sand Heap blessed land, the clan rewarded him immediately! The dragon crocodiles he killed were all kept as his property, it was a lucrative job. As for the journey to Wan clan, there were no risks and the outcome was basically decided, he would be welcomed by Wan clan. Instead of a mission, it was like a reward.

“Sigh, my hope still lies in wealth Gu. When can I refine this Gu successfully.”

“Heaven Refining Demon Venerable... no, I will not ask for anyone’s help. The risk is too big.”

Even though Shi Zhong set such a determined goal, after a hundred failures in refining the Gu, he had already started to feel dejected.

His intuition vaguely told him that with his strength alone, the chance of refining wealth Gu was slim!

Thus, unknowingly, he entered yellow heaven again with his divine sense.

Within treasure yellow heaven, Fang Yuan’s will suddenly opened his eyes as he spoke in a grand tone: “This rank seven movement Immortal Gu, capture wind Gu, has been refined as per the request of Southern Border’s Wu Yong, we will make the transaction now.”

“What?” Shi Zhong was shocked.

At this moment, every Gu Immortal who was inside treasure yellow heaven gasped.

Under everyone’s gaze, Wu Yong’s will got close to Fang Yuan’s will, the latter tossed rank seven capture wind Gu to Wu Yong’s will.

Wu Yong’s will nodded and said nothing, he left treasure yellow heaven with the new Immortal Gu.

“Someone actually made a transaction with Fang Yuan! And it is actually Southern Border’s Wu Yong.” Shi Zhong had a dazed expression.

[1] Zhong means loyalty

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2223: Fang Yuan’s Protection

Southern Border.

Wu Yi Mountain.

Wu clan’s blessed land headquarters.

Wu clan’s Gu Immortals were gathered, Wu Yong sat at the main seat. Most of the Gu Immortals here were present, only a few individuals had no way of coming and sent their wills instead.

“These last days, we have received letters from Ba clan, Tie clan, Luo clan, Hou clan, and the others. Take a look at them.” Wu Yong waved his hand, more than ten information path Gu worms flew out.

As Wu clan’s Gu Immortals looked through them, their expressions turned grim and dark.

The contents of these information path Gu worms, to put it mildly, were empty of value. They were merely using a righteous tone to condemn and question Wu Yong as to why he would make a deal with a demon like Fang Yuan! Some of them even threatened to withdraw from the Southern Alliance, arguing that Wu Yong was not qualified to take up the role of the alliance leader, they demanded that the alliance leader should be replaced by a more capable person.

“These fellows...”

“Hmph, they are shameless!”

“I can’t stand this, there are many super clans involved here, most of them have once worked together with Lu Wei Yin right? Back then, Lu Wei Yin and Fang Yuan cooperated to kill Spectral Soul and escaped from Heavenly Court’s pursuit. Now, they have the nerve to come and reprimand us?”

“They want to change the alliance leader? Hehe, in the whole of Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world, is there anyone more suitable than Lord Wu Yong?!”

Wu clan’s Gu Immortals discussed among themselves, speaking in an angry tone.

Wu Yong did not speak, he drank tea calmly as he listened to the immortals’ conversations.

The immortals got louder and more riled up, their tone became agitated and they wanted to exact revenge on those clans.

Wu Yong put down his cup at this point, raising his hand slightly.

The immortals saw this and immediately kept quiet, many of the Wu clan Gu Immortals who had stood up uncontrollably in anger quickly sat down.

Wu Yong’s gaze swept across everyone as the hall fell into silence.

“This is my Wu clan.” Wu clan was expressionless but he was incredibly pleased internally.

Ever since he took charge of Wu clan, he had been leading them through crises, they experienced many battles and even chased after Fang Yuan. Most importantly, Wu Yong had incredible political skills, he gained the loyalty of the whole of Wu clan.

Among them, there were not just the original Wu clan Gu Immortals, but also the new lone immortal external elders, and the newly advanced rank six Gu Immortals of recent times.

In the earlier discussion, these people did not raise any objection or suggestion towards Wu Yong’s decision and method.

This showed how much prestige Wu Yong had in his clan!

“Supreme elder Ba Chong, explain the situation to everyone.” Wu Yong said plainly.

“Yes.” As the second supreme elder, Wu Ba Chong stood up and said to the present Gu Immortals: “Days ago, Heaven Refining Demon Venerable, no, I mean Great Love Immortal Venerable, personally sent us a message, he contacted first supreme elder and insisted for him to undergo a public transaction. Thinking of Wu clan, which cannot block Fang Yuan’s rage, first supreme elder had to endure the humiliation and agree to Fang Yuan’s request.”

Wu clan’s immortals looked at each other.

Some had a change of expression, some clenched their fists, while some gritted their teeth, they could feel the immense pressure from Fang Yuan just by hearing this account.

Fang Yuan acted in an unrestrained manner, in this situation, it was logical for Wu Yong to be forced into such a transaction.

But at the next moment, Wu Yong laughed loudly: “Oh Ba Chong, no need to say this to them. We are all one family, I will tell you the straightforward truth.”

The immortals tensed up and focused.

Bright light shined in Wu Yong’s eyes: “This is not my first transaction with Fang Yuan. Before this, we have already done several secret transactions, Fang Yuan’s evidence is not fake.”

Saying so, Wu Yong paused for a second.

Seeing that the hall was silent and that every Gu Immortal still looked at him with a heated gaze, Wu Yong nodded in satisfaction, continuing: “The reason for this is very simple. Firstly, be it the previous Fang Yuan or the current venerable Fang Yuan, he is an existence that we cannot provoke. Secondly, making transactions with Fang Yuan benefited us greatly!”

“Our Wu clan gained several new Immortal Gu recently, they were all Fang Yuan’s creations. If we had to refine them ourselves, we would have spent many times the immortal materials without any success.”

Wu clan’s immortals were silent.

Wu Yong looked around and went past Wu Ba Chong, his gaze ending up on Wu Qiao.

Wu Qiao shuddered and instantly stood up, speaking in a shivering voice: “But, but... now that these super forces are reprimanding us, how should we deal with it?”

Wu Yong smiled as he nodded at Wu Qiao: “Good question.”

Saying so, he extended his hand, all of the information path mortal Gu flew back to him.

Wu Yong blew lightly, a slight breeze went in the air, destroying all of the information path mortal Gu immediately.

“These so-called accusations are completely useless.” Wu Yong snickered coldly: “Will they dare to attack us?”

The immortals were stunned.

Wu Yong leaned back on his chair, he was high and mighty as his gaze swept down on everyone: “Do you still not understand? Everyone — times have changed!”

“The fate war, the pursuit battle against Fang Yuan, and the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, after all these, Heavenly Court’s foundation has already been expended. Even though Star Constellation Immortal Venerable revived, she had no choice but to announce that the other two venerables were of the demonic path!”

“But both Giant Sun and Fang Yuan are also claiming themselves to be Immortal Venerables, they do not agree with the Demon Venerable title.”

“What is immortal? What is demonic?”

“What is righteous path? What is demonic path?”

The immortals were all shaken.

Wu Yong laughed: “With the conflict of three venerables now, the five regions and two heavens will enter an unprecedented great era! If we still use our former judgment to differentiate righteous and demonic, we will only be devoured by the terrifying tides of the new era!”

“Didn’t you see how Fang Yuan spent no effort to recruit the entire Righteous Qi Alliance? Our Southern Alliance, against these venerables, is completely useless and powerless. It is impossible to lead a group of sheep to defeat a fierce tiger. Furthermore, against these venerables, we are not even considered sheep.”

“The only thing that can fight a venerable is a venerable!”

“Us pitiful worms need to survive between the cracks of the venerables. We need to work hard and absorb more nutrients to strengthen ourselves, if we can gain the pity of destiny, we might have a chance of survival.”

“Give up the so-called pride of the righteous path, break free from the restraints of cheap morals and virtues, abandon your superiority complex as a Gu Immortal, these are all superficial and worthless things. Like the information path mortal Gu I destroyed earlier, a venerable can kill all of us Gu Immortals with just a simple breath as well.”

Finally, Wu Yong raised his volume and said solemnly: “Work your very best, spend every minute and second of your life to fight for survival in this terrifying great era!”

“Yes, we have learned much from first supreme elder’s wise words!” Wu Ba Chong, Wu Qiao, and the other Wu clan Gu Immortals stood up and replied solemnly.

Western Desert.

Wan clan headquarters.

A banquet had just ended, in the main hall with many used cups, there were only several Wan clan Gu Immortals left.

Rank six Gu Immortal Wan Zhui Qing smashed the cup in his hand on the ground in anger.

“These hypocritical and vicious clans, they are a disgrace to Western Desert! Don’t they have the glory and resolution of the righteous path?!” Wan Zhui Qing shouted in anger, his face was flushed red.

“Zhui Qing.” Wan Xiao frowned slightly.

“Am I wrong?” Wan Zhui Qing was still furious: “These last days, we held a small banquet every three days and a large banquet every five days, but what about these Gu Immortals? They are all giving vague replies and refuse to give definite answers!”

“Zhui Qing!” Wan Xiao shouted.

“Forget it, forget it.” At this time, Wan clan’s first supreme elder left his seat with a solemn expression, but his back seemed to be bent and weak.

The remaining Wan clan Gu Immortals fell into deep silence.

Outside Wan clan’s headquarters, Tang Fang Ming and Tang Miao flew in the sky while looking at the stars, they were very relaxed.

“Occasionally coming out to relax is a good decision, brother.” Tang Miao smiled.

Tang Fang Ming nodded, having the same feeling.

He was the rank seven Gu Immortal expert in Tang clan who received the most support, but different from Shi Kang, the reason why Tang Fang Ming was supported and placed great importance upon was because he had extraordinary talent and aptitude in dream path exploration.

This time, they went to Wan clan because Tang Fang Ming’s beloved sister Tang Miao wanted to go sightseeing.

“Brother, Wan clan attended to us really nicely, they are very determined to deal with Fang clan as well. After negotiating with the various clans these days, Wan clan has already relented multiple times. When do you think the alliance army will be formed?” Tang Miao asked.

Tang Fang Ming smiled coldly: “The alliance army against Fang clan is not going to be created.”

“What, why?”

“Let’s take an example.” Tang Fang Ming sighed, “Currently, the five regions and two heavens is like a forest with three fierce tigers that are exceptionally scary.”

Tang Miao’s eyes lit up: “Brother, you mean the three venerables?”

Tang Fang Ming nodded: “Other than these three fierce beasts, there are many birds, rabbits, and fish. Right now, a small bird called Wan wants to deal with a small rabbit called Fang. The bird knows it cannot win alone so it gathered other birds and rabbits to try to pay a high price, in order to bully the individual.”

“However, the rabbit named Fang is currently leaning on a fierce beast. Nobody knows if the fierce beast will get angered if they touch this rabbit. If the fierce beast moves, no matter how many animals the bird named Wan gathers, they will all become food for the fierce beast.”

Tang Miao was somewhat surprised: “Brother, you mean to say that this is the reason why these super forces cannot form an alliance army?”

Tang Fang Ming nodded again with a solemn expression: “No matter how harmonious the banquet is, or how intense the negotiation between Wan clan and the others get, they are all superficial in nature. The truth is that these animals are shivering in fear and deeply alert regarding the beasts. If any of them move in the forest, none of the animals can stop them.”

Tang Miao took in a deep breath: “Thankfully, our Tang clan has been in contact with Lord Fang Yuan since long ago, we have undergone countless transactions. In my opinion, since Southern Border’s alliance leader Wu Yong made a transaction with Fang Yuan publicly, our Tang clan can also...”

“Absolutely not!” Tang Fang Ming said: “Every action by Lord Fang Yuan contains deep meaning. The reason why he exposed evidence earlier and showed the transactions with many forces and Gu Immortals, without mentioning our Tang clan, is because he is protecting us!”

“Our Tang clan cannot compare with Southern Border’s Wu clan, or even Fang clan, we are a weak force in Western Desert, because of our territorial location, we would be easily ganged up on and attacked.”

“At this time, we cannot cause any commotion or raise attention to ourselves. We should only continue to work with Lord Fang Yuan in secret, we cannot waste his efforts.”

“Of course, the information of Wan clan gathering the forces can be sold to Fang clan as a favor from us.”

“Fang clan and Lord Fang Yuan have many transactions, from this angle, they are our natural ally.”

Tang Fang Ming spoke frankly, but he had a clear view of the situation, Tang Miao listened with shining eyes, gaining realization as well.

But at this time, Tang Fang Ming’s expression changed slightly.

“Brother, what’s wrong?”

“Gu Immortals are transacting with Fang Yuan again in treasure yellow heaven, there are three people this time! Among which, two are from Northern Plains and Central Continent.” Tang Fang Ming replied quickly with a flash of excitement in his eyes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2224: Power of a Refinement Path Venerable

A lump of fire was burning quietly in Fang Yuan’s hand.

The fire was only the size of an infant’s fist, its color changed constantly. If a refinement path expert saw it, they would shout out in shock.

Because the change in the color of the flame was only the superficial appearance, the essence was something different.

For example, red flame meant fire refinement. When it was white, that was light refinement. When it was icy blue, that was ice refinement...

Fang Yuan clenched his fist lightly, the flame disappeared instantly.

Fang Yuan kept silent as he fell into deep contemplation.

A long while later, he blinked his eyes and retracted all of his scattered thoughts.

During this period of time, he had been personally refining Immortal Gu and did not activate Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool at all. He refined more than ten Immortal Gu that were mostly rank six and seven, it was not an accomplishment for someone like Fang Yuan.

But in this process, Fang Yuan gained a considerable harvest.

His current refinement path attainment level was at supreme grandmaster! Any Gu refinement method was very easily discerned by him, he could understand their full profundity. No Gu recipes had hidden secrets in the eyes of Fang Yuan.

Right now, Fang Yuan could modify most recipes with a single attempt. Even for the more profound Immortal Gu recipes that needed some time to modify and expended a lot of effort to deduce appropriate immortal materials, by simply using Fang Yuan’s refinement path intuition, he could just take a look to understand the exact direction that the Immortal Gu recipe should go in.

Fang Yuan tried many times, his attempts confirmed that this intuition gave correct answers with certainty!

This was the same for modifying refinement path killer moves and Gu refinement methods. Once, when Fang Yuan was refining Gu, he had an inspiration and thought of a new Gu refinement method, he succeeded on the first try!

When he personally refined Gu, Fang Yuan could feel a sense of control.

This sense of control greatly raised the success rate of refining Immortal Gu. When he refined the various Immortal Gu, when he got to a certain point of the refinement process, Fang Yuan would have a feeling that success was guaranteed.

Even if the Gu refinement was going to fail, Fang Yuan still had the sense of control. He could predict the failure of the Gu refinement in advance.

After all, even a refinement path venerable could fail when refining Immortal Gu.

On one hand, it was the refinement method. If any human error occurred, failure was guaranteed.

On the other hand, the various paths still had their own constraints. For example, refining fire path Immortal Gu would need a large amount of fire path immortal materials. Fang Yuan's control over the fire path immortal material would be much lower naturally since his fire path attainment level was way inferior to refinement path.

"But when I try to refine refinement path Immortal Gu, the success rate is basically a hundred percent. Of course, I have not tried to refine rank nine refinement path Immortal Gu yet."

Fang Yuan had already confirmed this point.

Refinement path Immortal Gu would use a large amount of refinement path immortal materials, Fang Yuan's control over these refinement path immortal materials was a hundred percent!

On this point, be they Old Eccentric Tian Nan, Old Immortal Kong Jue, or Long Hair Ancestor, they could not compare to Fang Yuan.

Because Fang Yuan was a refinement path venerable, he could refine the natural refinement path dao marks of the outside world.

Refinement path immortal materials contained refinement path dao marks, they were also subjected to this. Thus, Fang Yuan had perfect control over these immortal materials.

Thus, as long as there were no errors in the refinement method, with few immortal materials from other paths, the refinement path Immortal Gu's refinement would have a success rate that was infinitely close to a hundred percent!

In terms of Gu refinement success rate, Fang Yuan had already surpassed Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool.

This was under the condition that he had little practice and was not proficient in many refinement path methods and killer moves yet.

Even though Fang Yuan was a refinement path venerable now, he still had a long way to improve in terms of refinement path.

"Other than practicing more and gaining experience, in the future, when my other paths' attainment levels rise, my success rate in refining Immortal Gu of those paths will also rise rapidly as well!"

"It is a pity that I cannot retrieve the Primordial Domain in treasure yellow heaven yet."

Fang Yuan did not have a way to retrieve the Primordial Domain, thus, he kept the Primordial Domain that he obtained from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable in treasure yellow heaven, he continued to pay the fee for storing it there.

Thinking of treasure yellow heaven, Fang Yuan recalled the three Gu Immortals that transacted with him earlier.

These three came from Southern Border, Central Continent, and Northern Plains.

They had open transactions that used their real names, thus the five regions' Gu Immortals learned of the details.

The Southern Border Gu Immortal was a member from Qiao clan, which was Wu clan’s vassal, the open transaction between Qiao clan’s Gu Immortal and Fang Yuan was likely instructed by Wu Yong to alleviate the political pressure on Wu clan.

Other than that, there was the lone immortal from Northern Plains and demonic immortal from Central Continent.

The truth was, after Wu Yong’s transaction, there were many Gu Immortals who wanted to secretly contact Fang Yuan for Immortal Gu refinement.

But Fang Yuan’s rule was that the transaction had to be openly done, thus, many Gu Immortals hesitated.

Only a few Gu Immortals, because of their own nature or external pressure, accepted Fang Yuan’s rule of an open transaction.

Afterwards, Fang Yuan chose these two people.

They did not have high cultivation level, they were rank six Gu Immortals that were at the bottom of the Gu Immortal world.

Maybe it was because of their identity at the bottom, these two were more inclined to take risks and try to change their current situation.

It was like how poor people often disregarded their lives, while rich people were cautious and scared of dying.

Of course, these two people were no longer in Northern Plains and Central Continent.

Nobody knew what Heavenly Court’s and Longevity Heaven’s reactions would be after they made a transaction with Fang Yuan. These two Gu Immortals were not stupid, they escaped to another region immediately.

In the past, this action would have many drawbacks.

But with the dissipation of the regional walls and the unification of the five regions, as well as the movement of qi tides, the heaven and earth qi of the five regions became the same, there were no longer differences.

Thus, no matter which region a Gu Immortal went to, they would not be restricted by heaven and earth qi.

“The following period is crucial.” Fang Yuan did not know what the reactions of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would be, he was anticipating them with alertness and wariness.

According to his deductions, there were four possible reactions from the two venerables.

First, they could send subordinates to kill these two rank six Gu Immortals. This was easy, Fang Yuan purposely chose them back then because they were weak.

If these two died at the hands of Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan would be very happy.

Second, the two venerables cooperate to attack Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan was very wary against this situation, but he wanted to see this as well.

Third, the two venerables target treasure yellow heaven instead.

This situation would be the same as crippling the foundation of Fang Yuan’s Great Love Gu refinement plan.

But the possibility was too slim, ever since treasure yellow heaven appeared, it had existed until now. During this time, Heavenly Court, Longevity Heaven, Shadow Sect, and other geniuses and outstanding experts wanted to find treasure yellow heaven, but they all failed.

Even now, Fang Yuan did not know where treasure yellow heaven was.

It was truly an extremely mysterious existence.

Fourth, which was the most likely situation that the two venerables would choose, was to ignore Fang Yuan’s Gu refinement business since they could not stop it anyway. They would target other aspects, like elevating their cultivation and forces, to try and use other advantages against Fang Yuan’s Great Love Gu refinement plan.

“The truth is, ever since we left Crazed Demon Cave, the contest between me, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had already begun. Whoever can develop the best will have the greatest advantage in our upcoming fights.”

“Advantages may not become victory in the end, but as advantages accumulate, the eventual outcome will be affected for sure.”

Fang Yuan had a clear recognition of his standing among the three venerables.

Recalling the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Fang Yuan was aware that he could win because he had the most accurate combat tactics.

Because Fang Yuan only showed pseudo venerable battle strength, and because the venerables had been using him as a pawn all along, they did not think much of him subconsciously.

Be they Giant Sun Immortal Venerable or Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, they treated each other as the greatest threat.

This gave Fang Yuan a lot of room to maneuver.

But venerables were not so easily deceived.

Thus, Fang Yuan purposely exposed his ambition in refinement path, causing the two venerables to find out that he was trying to become venerable through refinement path.

After that, when he had sufficient accumulation in refinement path attainment level, he purposely gave up the fight over Primordial Domain in front of the two venerables.

With the refinement path portion of Primordial Domain destroyed, both venerables knew that Fang Yuan could not become venerable in the short term, they let their guard down against him.

On this basis, Fang Yuan continued to expose his weakness.

For example, Zhan Bu Du had been extremely high-profile in the few fights he was in, it caused a huge headache for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Thus, Fang Yuan purposely let him die at Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s hands.

Or for example, reverse flow protection seal, Peaceful Soil Heavy Mountain Fortress, and other methods that the venerables knew about.

Fang Yuan purposely used up these methods so that the venerables would be even less on guard against him.

Fang Yuan had even planned to sacrifice the Qi Sea clone purposely.

But even at that extent, the two venerables were still not assured about Fang Yuan, at certain times, they worked together to try to eliminate him first.

That was the most dangerous moment for Fang Yuan.

He had both internal and external threats, his life was hanging on a thread in many situations. After all, Spring Autumn Cicada could not be used.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan got through those ordeals and finally saw the light of day at the end of the tunnel.

The two venerables consumed each other’s strength, while Limitless Demon Venerable’s appearance and Paradise Earth’s venerable ascension attempt caused the two venerables’ attention to be shifted to them.

Eventually, Fang Yuan took a chance to kill Paradise Earth and repel the two venerables, becoming the greatest winner in this battle in Crazed Demon Cave.

Other than the proper combat tactics, the most important criteria for victory was that Fang Yuan had made all sorts of preparations before the battle started.

Fang Yuan obtained ability Gu and fortitude Gu, they were extremely useful in Crazed Demon Cave.

Fang Yuan raised the cultivation level of his subordinates, allowing White Rabbit and Miao Yin to fight against Duke Mei and Duke Tong.

Fang Yuan deduced and modified many killer moves like Dang Hun Luo Po Seal, road of life, several hundred totem killer moves, heaven envies heroic geniuses, and countless compound killer moves.

Fang Yuan even created the artificial earth vein and defensive food path methods, he also prepared dream path killer moves.

Most of them were used in Crazed Demon Cave, if he had not made ample preparation, even if Fang Yuan had the proper tactics, he could not last until the end.

“I became a refinement path venerable and gained the most benefits in the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable are placing a huge focus on me now.”

“I need to do everything to raise my strength and develop further, that is how I can accumulate my advantage in the contest of three venerables.”

The results of development now would be the crucial factors affecting the victory of the contest of three venerables in the future!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2225: Enemies On One Hand, Cooperation On The Other

Northern Plains.

Longevity Heaven.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable held onto an information path mortal Gu as he thought to himself and sighed with a calm expression: “To think that as a venerable, I will actually be unable to do anything against a mere Northern Plains rank six lone immortal.”

With Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s temper and nature, Gu Immortals publicly transacting with Fang Yuan were simply provoking him!

In the past, such a Gu Immortal would have already died countless times.

The pride of a venerable was not to be trampled.

But now...

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable summoned one of the Eight Extremities and said: “Go, secretly transmit to the Huang Jin tribes to try to recruit this person. Whoever succeeds will receive my special reward.”

“Yes.” The member of the Eight Extremities answered and left respectfully.

At this time, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could not make any statements personally, it would be disadvantageous to him and Longevity Heaven.

But he could let the Huang Jin tribes take action.

This was the political skill of an experienced ruler.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable knew that Fang Yuan’s Great Love Gu refinement plan could not be stopped. It was an open scheme that everyone could see, but the desires of Gu Immortals could not be suppressed.

If Giant Sun Immortal Venerable tried to stop it, or if he ordered people to kill this Northern Plains lone immortal, he would lose the hearts of the people in Longevity Heaven.

He might be able to suppress it for a while, but the more he stifled it, the deeper this discontent would accumulate, and when it erupts in the future, a huge problem would occur in Longevity Heaven.

Eventually, the result would be simple —

Northern Plains’ lone immortals and demonic cultivators would find Fang Yuan for public transactions. After that, they would leave and escape to the other regions. Most likely, they would go to Eastern Sea, which was under Fang Yuan’s control.

That was the same as Fang Yuan using Immortal Gu to lure these lone immortals and demonic cultivators of Northern Plains to Eastern Sea, strengthening his own Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would not fall for such an open scheme.

“Fang Yuan is too arrogant, he does not have enough immortal essence but he dares to publicly provoke us, hmph, we need to retaliate!”

If the battle in Crazed Demon Cave let Giant Sun Immortal Venerable learn of Fang Yuan’s battle strength, then currently, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable learned of Fang Yuan’s shrewd and ruthless political skills.

Thinking about it, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable took out an information path Immortal Gu from his immortal aperture.

The information path Immortal Gu quickly flew towards Central Continent.

Central Continent, Heavenly Court.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was also thinking of a way to deal with Fang Yuan’s method.

She called for He Feng Yang and personally talked to him before giving him a mission.

When He Feng Yang left Heavenly Court, he was still in a confused state.

The mission that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gave him was to publicly transact with Fang Yuan and refine a new Immortal Gu!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s countermeasure was even more simple than Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s.

Since Fang Yuan declared that he would show his great love to the world, refining Gu for enemies and allies alike, Heavenly Court would use this to their advantage. It was a fact that they could not stop his scheme, thus, making use of it to gain benefits was a wise choice.

Of course, Heavenly Court and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would not make transactions with Fang Yuan openly, this was still not acceptable. After all, they had denounced Fang Yuan as a Demon Venerable earlier.

As for the transaction between Fang Yuan and He Feng Yang, be it success or failure, Heavenly Court would stay indifferent towards it, showing a political attitude that they would not care about the actions of the ten great ancient sects in this aspect.

This way, the ten great ancient sects would get involved and obtain many Immortal Gu, that would raise the strength of Central Continent as a whole.

If Fang Yuan were to reject them or state an absurd price, it would go against his earlier declaration, causing him to lose his credibility.

Weakening Fang Yuan’s credibility was also a sort of victory for Heavenly Court.

Qin Ding Ling appeared with two information path Immortal Gu.

“Oh?” After Star Constellation Immortal Venerable took a look at them, she fell into contemplation.

The first one came from Southern Border’s Wu clan.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked into it, Southern Alliance Leader Wu Yong, the first supreme elder of Wu clan, wanted to have an open transaction with Heavenly Court.

Wu Yong seemed to have forgotten that he had led the Southern Alliance to oppose Heavenly Court during the fate war!

A hint of appreciation flashed past Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s eyes.

“This Wu Yong is truly remarkable.”

“Earlier, he had transactions with Fang Yuan, now, he wants to transact with Heavenly Court too.”

“His ambitions are not small...”

“But it is good too, agreeing to this will benefit Heavenly Court.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made a decision to hold transactions with Wu Yong immediately.

On one hand, she was showing her attitude that she was tolerant towards any transaction with Fang Yuan.

On the other hand, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was also trying to pull Wu Yong to her side. Fang Yuan and Wu Yong were very close now, if she rejected him, he might likely join his side.

This was not something Star Constellation Immortal Venerable wanted to see.

As for the second information path Immortal Gu, it came from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

The content was simple, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable wanted to cooperate with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to take action against Fang Yuan together.

Of course, they were not going to ally without any basis.

After all, during the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had cooperated to a certain extent against Fang Yuan, who became venerable.

The battle in Crazed Demon Cave had just ended, the venerables had not gotten much stronger since.

If the two venerables joined hands against Fang Yuan now, they would only be asking for humiliation, it would not end well.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s idea was to continuously use luck path methods to survey Eastern Sea and investigate Heaven Refining Demon Venerable. If Fang Yuan made any attempt to refine rank nine Immortal Gu, a huge fluctuation in his luck would be observable, by then, they would use the chance to deal with him!

Right now, Fang Yuan was very strong, both Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would be repelled by him, but his advantage was not big enough, so the two venerables were still quite calm.

However, once he refines a rank nine Immortal Gu, he would have to expend a huge amount of immortal essence. Especially during the crucial moments of Gu refinement, if the two venerables find a chance to attack Fang Yuan’s major flaw, he would be at his weakest.

If Fang Yuan fails the Gu refinement, he would suffer a terrifying backlash as well.

After all, the refinement of a rank nine Immortal Gu was extremely significant!

Regarding Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s suggestion, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable agreed without second thought.

The truth was, she had her own set of investigative methods to spy on Eastern Sea as well, she was guarded against Fang Yuan, who could be refining rank nine

Immortal Gu at any time.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable placed great focus on Fang Yuan’s refinement path attainment.

The contest of three venerables was neck and neck, if either side gained a rank nine Immortal Gu, their strength would rise immensely. That would no longer be a contest of equal strength, even territories could be lost then.

The truth was, even if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not send a letter, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would have sent one to him.

If Fang Yuan was truly given the chance to display his specialty and refine a rank nine Immortal Gu, he would gain the biggest advantage.

That was something neither of the two venerables wanted to see.

This secret plan to stop Fang Yuan from refining rank nine Immortal Gu started with the subtle cooperation of the two venerables.

“If Fang Yuan takes a risk to refine rank nine Immortal Gu, we will strike.”

“But even if I cooperate with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, I still need to mind my immortal essence expenditure.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable understood that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had more immortal essence than her, but if she expended too much immortal essence when targeting Fang Yuan, even if she spent the same amount as Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, it would not benefit her.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s biggest advantage was in immortal essence quantity after all.

If that situation occurred, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s advantage would be even bigger then.

That was also part of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s secret scheme.

Eastern Sea.

“Oh?” Fang Yuan’s expression changed slightly.

Currently, he was refining Immortal Gu while communicating in treasure yellow heaven, he also considered the arrangements and development of his immortal aperture with great ease.

Now, he had received He Feng Yang’s request for a transaction in treasure yellow heaven.

“He Feng Yang is actually asking me for an open transaction, it seems that this is Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s idea.” Fang Yuan immediately understood the truth.

Without Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s permission, how could He Feng Yang dare to do this?

“Worthy of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.” Fang Yuan praised.

It was a wise and logical countermeasure.

The contest of forces and the fight between experts had never been as simple as allies and enemies. But according to the specific situation, one needed to have the flexibility to change sides.

Sometimes, your enemies could become your allies, you could even work together with your enemies while simultaneously plotting against them.

But this reaction was within Fang Yuan’s expectations.

Regarding He Feng Yang’s request for a transaction, Fang Yuan’s will agreed on the spot.

If he rejected this, it would weaken his credibility and reputation.

Furthermore, what reason was there to reject it?

This was beneficial to Heavenly Court and Central Continent, but it was even more useful for Fang Yuan!

After all, he was the seller who set the price.

It was natural that Heavenly Court and Central Continent were going to benefit.

This was a mutually beneficial transaction where both sides got what they wanted. The losing side was naturally Longevity Heaven.

When Fang Yuan and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable become stronger, Longevity Heaven would be left behind.

But once Longevity Heaven sees this situation, they would want to catch up, even if they were unwilling, they would make transactions with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan would obviously not reject them, by then, he would be the party that benefits the most out of this.

“Since you want a rank seven Immortal Gu, hand me the nine central stone forest.” Fang Yuan quoted his price to He Feng Yang.

Nine central stone forest was an earth path resource point, it could be used as an earth vein node.

The exact value when compared to a rank seven Immortal Gu was not clear. For the short term, the rank seven Immortal Gu was definitely more valuable. But for the long term, a nine central stone forest that could continuously produce earth path resources definitely surpassed just one rank seven Immortal Gu.

This quote was very expensive, far higher than Fang Yuan’s earlier price for refining Gu. He Feng Yang could not make a decision, but he had Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s orders.

On the whole, this price was still in the acceptable range, so He Feng Yang agreed to it.

“In the future, when Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven transact with me further, I will ask for more earth path resource points for fixing earth veins in my sovereign immortal aperture.”

The sovereign immortal aperture had already started to prosper and develop.

The current plan was to construct a water vein.

Since the Righteous Qi Alliance joined Fang Yuan, they had to show their sincerity. Fang Yuan gave orders without holding back, he asked the clans to contribute a batch of water path resource points.

“I have tens of yellow apricot immortal essence beads now. I cannot take a risk in refining rank nine Immortal Gu yet, these immortal essence beads are insufficient.”

“Let’s refine those heaven path rank eight Immortal Gu first.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2226: Light Fire

Southern Border.

A group of five Gu Masters were sprinting rapidly on the road.

The leader had rank four cultivation level, he had an ordinary face but was exceptionally capable.

It was Shang clan’s Gu Master Xiao Yan.

Moving fire Gu.

He was activating a fire path Gu worm now to travel. Each step he took, flames would be ignited on the ground, causing a huge trail of fire to burn along his path.

Behind him, the four Gu Masters all had rank two cultivation level, they were gritting their teeth as they followed him.

“Lord Xiao Yan, let’s rest for a while, we don’t have enough primeval essence.” While running, a rank two Gu Master suggested.

“Mm...” Xiao Yan slowed his speed but he was still running.

This was the wilderness, if Gu Masters did not have sufficient primeval essence, they would face great risks in surviving. A rank two Gu Master was also not qualified to explore the wild, they lacked the capability and strength.

But right now, Xiao Yan had a mission to do.

“According to the information, if I am any later, the fire in the village will be unstoppable. I need to hurry there now!”

“Last time, I was misled by the enemy’s information and went out to search for fire path Gu materials, causing Lady Shang Xin Ci to face great danger.”

“This time, I need to work hard and complete this mission to make up for my mistake!”

Thinking of this, Xiao Yan made up his mind, he ordered: “You four, go rest, I will head there first. After you are done resting, catch up to me.”

“Yes!” The four Gu Masters answered.

Xiao Yan’s speed rose to its limit, he quickly went into the forest.

A few hours later, he arrived at his destination, a small village that was under Shang clan’s control.

“Lord, you finally came! The village has already prepared some wine...” The village head was a rank four Gu Master, he spoke to Xiao Yan politely.

But Xiao Yan waved his hand: “The fire is more important, we need to resolve this issue first.”

The village head was overjoyed: “Lord is wise! Please come with me, to speak the truth, I have been very anxious these days!”

The village head brought Xiao Yan to the back of the mountain.

Xiao Yan saw that in a crevice at the back of the mountain, there was a white dazzling flame burning intensely.

“That’s right, this is light fire!” Xiao Yan stared from afar as his pupils shrank: “This light fire is too big, it covers a range of at least two hundred paces, this is beyond my capabilities.”

Light fire was a type of special fire, it was a rank five Gu material. From what Xiao Yan knew, this Gu material could be used to refine rank five light path or fire path Gu worms.

From the perspective of a Gu Immortal, the essence was clear. This light fire contained fire path and light path dao marks.

“To think that I could not find any special fire earlier no matter how I searched. But once I took this mission, I found such a large area of light fire.”

“Lady Shang Xin Ci purposely gave this mission to me, she is simply too kind and merciful.”

“Sigh, this gratitude...”

Xiao Yan sighed internally, he gradually understood Shang Xin Ci’s intention.

He slowly got closer to the light fire.

As the distance shortened, he felt deeper emotions internally, he became angry for no reason.

This was not strange.

This was the effect of the light fire, the closer one got to this Gu material, the angrier they would become.

Xiao Yan tried to use fire path methods and quickly kept away a lump of the light fire that was the size of a basin.

Xiao Yan nodded internally.

His earlier evaluation was right, such a large field of light fire could not be taken by him alone, but he could keep most of it. Afterwards, the four rank two Gu Masters would arrive and help him to complete this mission successfully.

But they had to be quick.

Gu materials like light fire would spread and grow rapidly in the day. But now was night time, the light fire’s growth was suppressed.

This was also the reason why Xiao Yan rushed there at full speed while leaving his subordinates behind.

“Before they get here, I need to make arrangements in the surroundings in case of enemies.” Xiao Yan immediately used his alert methods near the light fire.

Guarding against others was a necessity.

Furthermore, in order to retrieve this light fire, Xiao Yan had to use his full strength.

“Why are there still mortals in the surroundings?” While surveying the location, Xiao Yan found that there were many mortals praying within the mountain’s forest, towards the fire.

The village head quickly guaranteed that he would chase these mortals away, for the following period, he would not let these mortals interrupt Xiao Yan and his subordinates.

Next, the village head explained the reason.

It turned out that because the sky had gotten strange recently without white heaven or black heaven, day and night could no longer be differentiated.

Thus, the Gu Masters of the five regions and even mortals were deeply shocked and fearful.

On a certain night, fire rain fell from the sky. Lumps of heaven flames landed in the range of ten thousand li around the village, these mortals were shocked by the phenomenon and thought that heaven was angry and punishing these mortals by burning them to death. Thus, they were all kneeling here and praying for forgiveness.

“Foolish.” Xiao Yan snorted coldly but his expression became milder.

He could understand them.

When the sky first changed, he was also extremely fearful. but with the information from Shang Xin Ci, he learned that even though this was a huge event, it was not dangerous to them. Even if there were danger, it was not something that Gu Masters at Xiao Yan’s level should care about.

At the same time.

Immemorial white heaven.

Or more accurately, in the fused black and white heavens.

A few tens of thousands of li away, Fang Yuan watched the huge sun from afar.

The sun seemed to be moving forward slowly, but it was traveling rapidly on a fixed route, going from east to west, before u-turning and going back from west to east, repeating the process endlessly.

Whenever the sun went to the extreme east of immemorial white heaven, or the extreme west, twelve hours would pass exactly.

With the swap of black heaven and white heaven, the five regions would be enveloped by the night sky.

And in white heaven that was above black heaven, the sun would go on the return route from west to east, spending twelve hours to reach the starting point.

By then, black heaven and white heaven would swap again.

Thus, in the view and perception of mortals, the sun had always appeared from the east of white heaven when the night sky fades. When it was dusk, the sun would vanish into the extreme west as the night emerges.

The sun was very large.

Among the eleven venerables, even Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, who had the largest body that resembled a mountain, was far inferior to the sun.

The size of the sun, in Fang Yuan’s estimation, was about the size of giant hero sea area, and that was one of the largest sea areas in Eastern Sea.

Originally, in immemorial white heaven, the sun’s travel route had absolutely nothing in its way.

But now, with the fusion of both heavens, the environment changed abruptly and chaotically.

While Fang Yuan was observing, a large area of black clouds blocked the sun’s path. Whenever the sun moved forward by a little, a large portion of the black clouds would dissipate.

Of course, the sun was not completely unharmed, from time to time, sparks would fall off the surface of the sun.

These heaven flames would land on the black clouds or scatter elsewhere. An even smaller portion of them would land in the five regions.

From Fang Yuan’s perspective, the collision of the black clouds and the sun was like the collision of two groups of dao marks. The former was dark path and cloud path, while the latter was light path and fire path.

“The black cloud is bound to lose but the sun’s expenditure is also considerable. With such an intense change, it is no wonder that heaven form has turned chaotic, and is also at the brink of breaking apart.”

Fang Yuan was originally refining heaven path Immortal Gu, the reason why he suddenly changed his plans and came up to the two heavens of Eastern Sea was because of heaven form.

Heaven form was left by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, it was considered half a Thieving Heaven true inheritance.

Back then, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had encountered a natural heavenly spirit in immemorial white heaven by chance.

This natural heavenly spirit could not be brought out of white heaven or placed into one’s grotto-heaven. It was filled with heaven’s will that was constantly replenished at all times. Even Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable could not use his human will to refine it forcefully.

After thinking long and hard, he found a solution. He forcefully condensed it and created an immortal killer move, calling it — Heaven Form!

The refinement of heaven form needed a long period of time and generations of wills to cleanse. One day, it would be truly refined by a Gu Immortal, by then, it would be usable.

Afterwards, this heaven form killer move was obtained by the Heaven Surveying

Five Xiangs who made the thousand year bet, eventually ending up in Fang Yuan’s hands.

Heaven form was a huge help to Fang Yuan, especially in terms of invading the two heavens’ grotto-heavens, as well as displaying great use during the fate war.

Heaven form was like a one-legged crane that was covered in snow-white feathers which had no dust or dirt, it had a long beak that was red in color.

When activating it, it would spread its wings and fly elegantly. When it was inactive, it would shut its eyes and stand on one leg, its neck would coil up on its back as it rested silently.

Heaven form had been kept in immemorial white heaven all along, Fang Yuan could not take it away.

Because its foundation was in immemorial white heaven.

Now that immemorial white heaven and black heaven were fusing, heaven form’s foundation was affected. Fang Yuan had to help it in time and stabilize its form, otherwise, without external aid, it would be destroyed!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2227: Fang Yuan’s Loving Consolation

The white crane-like heaven form cried out in front of Fang Yuan.

It was in great pain, its body twisted and curled up at times.

Fang Yuan’s fingers were spread like blooming flowers as he activated his refinement path killer move, traces of green and fragrant wind moved around the white crane like chains coiling on its body, stabilizing its form.

Heaven form was originally declining in condition, but after using this method, its collapse was slowing down.

But that was not enough.

The white crane continued to cry out.

“Don’t worry, I am around, I will protect you.” Fang Yuan continued to console it.

This was a killer move from an information path Gu Immortal, because it was special and had refinement path effect, Lang Ya land spirit kept a copy of it.

After Fang Yuan’s modification, he abandoned the original name and called it loving consolation, it seemed like information path but was actually a refinement path method, after returning to its roots, the effect was greatly elevated.

This move could allow the Gu Immortal to use words of consolation on an incomplete Immortal Gu to affect the refinement process.

For example, if on the brink of failure, Fang Yuan consoled it repeated as such:

“I know you can do it!”

“Work hard!”

“You can definitely succeed, believe in yourself.”

If these words of consolation reached the incomplete Immortal Gu that was about to break apart, its condition would stop worsening, it could even recover and succeed in refinement in the end.

However, this move had certain restrictions.

Firstly, the effect was continuous, each sentence had little effect on the process, only through an accumulation of non-stop speech could there be an evident effect. Thus, during refinement, if there was a sudden accident and this move was not used in time, or maybe the effect of this move could not catch up with the speed of deterioration, then the refinement process could not be salvaged.

Secondly, this move could only be used on an incomplete Immortal Gu. That was to say, the refinement must reach a certain stage before this could be used. Otherwise, without an incomplete Immortal Gu formed, this move could not even be used. Many Gu recipes refined Immortal Gu immediately, there was no intermediate step of forming an incomplete Immortal Gu first, thus, this could not be used in such situations.

But Fang Yuan could use it now.

Because this situation was a little special.

Heaven form was originally intact, but with the fusion of black heaven and white heaven, it suffered major injuries and could be treated as an incomplete Immortal Gu.

Of course, the basis was that Fang Yuan was a refinement path venerable and had the attainment level and methods to treat the rank nine killer move, heaven form, as a Gu worm undergoing refinement.

“Don’t worry, with me around, you can rest assured.” Fang Yuan continued to speak gently.

But heaven form’s cries were getting louder.

Suddenly, heaven form’s snow-white feathers started to blaze up. It was originally an ember but the fire soon grew after a few breaths of time, becoming the size of a human palm.

Fang Yuan immediately took action, breathing in deeply and activating his killer move as two lumps of qi that were white and blue respectively blew out of his nose.

The two breaths first landed on the feathers and extinguished the flames before turning into frost and preventing the fire from starting again.

“Thankfully, I used this refinement path killer move before, I am considerably familiar with it.” Fang Yuan was glad internally.

If not for that, he would not be able to handle it in time.

The larger the fire, the greater the cost Fang Yuan would have to bear when he dealt with it. If the fire spread throughout heaven form’s body, then this killer move would be destroyed, even Fang Yuan could not save it then.

“You must pull through, your master believes in you!” Fang Yuan said lovingly.

The white crane’s cries became louder and sharper.

“What’s going on?” Bright light shined in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Soon, he realized the problem.

A wave of black poisonous liquid appeared in the white crane’s body and started spreading rapidly, corroding everything and causing the killer move to be nearly destroyed internally.

The white crane vomited intensely as black liquid came out of its mouth.

Fang Yuan grunted and knew that he could not use a fire refinement method, otherwise, it would trigger the previous fire. Thus, he pointed.

Instantly, a hundred green light specks flew into the white crane’s mouth like a swarm of insects.

The green light spread around the poisonous liquid and grew rapidly.

Stalks of green grass grew rapidly, absorbing all of the poison in the white crane’s body.

Fang Yuan flicked his finger again as golden light flowed like water, entering the white crane’s body and cutting all the grass away.

Powder also entered the white crane’s body and helped to heal it at this time.

“Everything will be over soon, there is light at the end of the tunnel, don’t give up!” Fang Yuan encouraged it again.

But the white crane screeched intensely, its body started to twitch like it was shocked by lightning.

Next, its long and elegant body started to inflate like a balloon, it got larger and larger, seemingly reaching its limit and about to explode.

Fang Yuan quickly stretched out his hand and grabbed with five fingers as a huge rod appeared in his palm.

“Just one refinement path killer move is not enough!”

Fang Yuan’s thoughts flashed rapidly like sparks in his mind, he manipulated the Gu worms in his immortal aperture and prepared another killer move.

At the next moment, sharp icy spikes appeared on the huge rod.

Boom.

Fang Yuan exerted strength into his arm and slammed down on the white crane’s body. It immediately cried out in pain and looked at its master in utter disbelief.

But Fang Yuan was still smiling gently: “You must believe in master, believe in yourself too.”

Boom.

Fang Yuan waved the rod and slammed down again, the white crane’s inflated body was forcefully deflated, powerful air currents gushed out of the holes on its body that were left by the spikes.

Boom.

Fang Yuan smiled gently: “White crane, be good, work harder.”

Boom!

Fang Yuan smiled sincerely: “White crane, you are so cute, persevere on, we will succeed eventually.”

Boom boom!

Fang Yuan smiled mercifully: “No matter what you experience, don’t ever give up. With me around, I won’t let you die.”

The huge rod slammed down once more, while the white crane had already broken down mentally!

Boom!

After a loud impact, it nearly fainted.

There were no movements anymore.

However, its body returned to the original size, it no longer was inflated but was covered in injuries, it was barely still alive, no longer displaying the power of a rank nine killer move.

Fang Yuan stored away the huge rod with icy spikes.

He nodded in satisfaction and muttered to himself: “Although it is my first time trying these two moves together, my refinement path venerable intuition is not wrong, there are no mistakes at all. The effect is just as strong as I expected.”

“This move is not like loving consolation, it has wide usage, I can practice it more in the future!”

“Next time, if such a situation happens, I will use this again.”

As if the crane heard Fang Yuan’s words, its ‘corpse’ shook intensely and its mouth was tightly shut.

With the fusion of white heaven and black heaven, heaven form fell into a deep predicament, Fang Yuan had to guard it at all times and use refinement path killer moves to stabilize it whenever an issue occurred.

“The difficulty is not high now, but the future is uncertain. By guarding heaven form, I am also restricted greatly, the more I try to save it, the more immortal essence I will waste.”

Fang Yuan did not have much immortal essence to begin with, this made the problem even worse.

“But I cannot abandon heaven form!” Fang Yuan had to preserve this killer move, from his luck inspection through Cooking Luck Pot earlier, Fang Yuan analyzed and found that heaven path was his best choice in getting past his current predicament.

Like now, while guarding heaven form, he was also refining other heaven path Immortal Gu in the sovereign immortal aperture!

A new heaven path Immortal Gu was refined!

This heaven path Immortal Gu looked like a crystal spider, it was clear and transparent with no flaws on the body. The spider's eight legs were slim and long, its body was also small and raised high by the eight legs.

Rank eight heaven path Immortal Gu — Heavenly Web!

This Gu was the core of the heaven path killer move, heavenly web protection veil. Back then in Crazed Demon Cave, Paradise Earth used it multiple times, it had outstanding defensive properties, it was definitely on par with Fang Yuan's reverse flow protection seal.

After Fang Yuan killed Paradise Earth, he found that there were only two heaven path Immortal Gu in his immortal aperture.

One was heavenly web Gu, the other was heavenly birth Gu.

Heavenly birth Gu was used by Paradise Earth to revive, it was also his core Immortal Gu when converting from earth path to heaven path.

There were also many other Immortal Gu.

Like information path Immortal Gu Summary, it could allow a Gu Immortal to deduce the general summary of a complicated information.

Or for example, rule path Immortal Gu Normal, it could allow the target to recover to their normal condition.

By using these Immortal Gu, Paradise Earth formed many heaven path killer moves like heavenly web protection veil, emotionless heaven and earth, heavenly summary earthly norm, and others.

These Immortal Gu were all destroyed by Paradise Earth's will before his death.

Currently, heavenly web Gu was refined, Fang Yuan had to refine heavenly birth Gu next.

Heavenly birth Gu could heal Immortal Gu, when used with Fang Yuan's refinement path killer moves, it could have an effect on heaven form!

Fang Yuan had his own heaven path accumulation before this: Rank eight heavenly secret Gu, heaven's envy Gu, and the heaven envies heroic geniuses killer move that he used in Crazed Demon Cave, as well as the heaven form that he was saving now.

After making huge gains from looting Paradise Earth, Fang Yuan gained a large increase in heaven path foundation.

"Especially in Paradise Earth's heaven path research results, there is a method called obscured heavenly secret that can use the power of heaven path to conceal oneself, it is very useful to me!"

Fang Yuan's greatest objective was the killer move obscured heavenly secret. After that, it was to refine heavenly birth Gu and stabilize heaven form.

Obscured heavenly secret could be modified, in theory, the more heaven path Immortal Gu used in the move, the greater the concealment effect.

Fang Yuan had to resolve his predicament of insufficient immortal essence, he had two choices right now.

One was to develop his immortal aperture. But accelerating the time in sovereign immortal aperture was not a good idea, Fang Yuan could only expand his Great Love Gu refinement plan and try to get more resource points added into his immortal aperture to raise his immortal aperture origin core and produce more immortal essence.

The other solution was to advance Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus!

Rank eight Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was extremely helpful to Fang Yuan, without it, Fang Yuan would have run out of immortal essence in Crazed Demon Cave.

It had such an incredible effect, whoever used it would understand why it was Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's vital Gu!

Fang Yuan was now a rank nine venerable, rank eight Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was not suitable for him. If he advanced it, rank nine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus would definitely allow Fang Yuan to break out of this predicament!

However, if he tried to advance it now, the information would no doubt be exposed.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable were watching him closely.

Fang Yuan knew this clearly.

He was now rank nine, rank eight Cooking Luck Pot could only barely help him. When he tries to refine rank nine Immortal Gu, his luck would fluctuate immensely, against Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Cooking Luck Pot would not conceal the luck entirely.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was a wisdom path venerable, it was even harder to conceal the information from her.

“The moment I refine my rank nine Gu is also my weakest moment, the two of them will definitely cooperate to attack me. Thus, this obscured heavenly secret killer move is the crucial factor.”

Cooking Luck Pot could not deceive Giant Sun Immortal Venerable because it was luck path.

But obscured heavenly secret was heaven path, it was like how Fang Yuan had little countermeasures against pill path and painting path.

Against heaven path, even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would be helpless.

“But this method has a hidden threat, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had assimilated with the Dao three million years ago, while Heavenly Court has an immense foundation in heaven path research results. How long can obscured heavenly secret conceal the truth from her?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2228: Control of Immortal Essence Stones

Central Continent.

Three rank six Gu Immortals were surrounding an ancient cloud beast and attacking it.

“Be careful!”

The ancient cloud beast suddenly transformed and raised its speed, attacking the woman among the three immortals.

The female immortal was not fazed, her white blouse moved like a blooming flower, a vague silhouette blocking the cloud beast’s attack.

But this ancient cloud beast also attacked more fiercely, even though it was blocked, it did not retreat, instead, it changed its form and enveloped the female immortal entirely.

From outside, it looked like the ancient cloud beast had devoured the female immortal.

“Fairy Lian Yun!” Shi Zheng Yi shouted and wanted to activate an information path killer move anxiously.

But beside him, Yu Yi Ye Zi stopped his action: “Wait! If you use this move and pierce the cloud beast, what if you injure Fairy Lian Yun?”

Shi Zheng Yi stopped and gritted his teeth: “Then what do we do?”

Yu Yi Ye Zi, who had the appearance of a young man, showed a solemn expression: “In this situation, I can only try to use that move.”

“What move?” Shi Zheng Yi felt that it was too dangerous: “Don’t tell me you are not familiar with it yet?”

But Yu Yi Ye Zi had already started preparing the move.

Sensing the aura of the killer move, the cloud beast enveloped Zhao Lian Yun and rushed towards them.

Shi Zheng Yi immediately used his method to try to stall the ancient cloud beast.

He opened his mouth wide and his tongue could be seen.

The information path killer move activated as Shi Zheng Yi spoke rapidly without stopping.

The power of words affected the ancient cloud beast’s body as a formless power accumulated and stalled its movement.

After more than ten breaths of time, Shi Zheng Yi finally heard Yu Yi Ye Zi’s voice, he deactivated his killer move with joy and dodged to the side.

Yu Yi Ye Zi’s palms aimed at the ancient cloud beast as two beams of light shot out of them.

The beams were pale blue, after landing on the ancient cloud beast, they started to dissolve.

Zhao Lian Yun, who was trapped inside the cloud beast, struggled intensely, she put in more effort and finally broke free from it, regaining freedom.

“Alright, my turn!” Shi Zheng Yi saw that Zhao Lian Yun had escaped and quickly made his move, cooperating with Yu Yi Ye Zi and using an offensive killer move.

Two killer moves landed on the ancient cloud beast, with a loud sound, this ancient cloud beast exploded on the spot.

The ancient cloud beast’s corpse turned into lumps of clouds, most were immortal materials. After Zhao Lian Yun and the rest collected the materials, they rested on the spot.

“It was my fault, I got trapped by the cloud beast and caused our immortal materials to not be high in quality.” Zhao Lian Yun apologized.

“This loss is nothing. We only have rank six cultivation level but fought against an ancient cloud beast, winning is already a huge achievement, we cannot ask for more.” Yu Yi Ye Zi consoled.

Shi Zheng Yi talked loudly: “Ever since the battle of Reverse Flow River, we have not been able to meet up often. While the two heavens are fusing together, with beast groups escaping from the two heavens to Central Continent, we are able to meet again to stop the calamity. Why bother fussing over the small details?”

The friendship of the three immortals was built up during the Reverse Flow River battle.

Even though Fang Yuan was the biggest winner in that battle, the three of them had performed very well in the battle, they were saved by Wei Ling Yang who risked his life, and they managed to hair-raisingly escape with their lives under the reinforcements of Central Continent later.

After they returned to their sect, they received a lot of nurturing.

Zhao Lian Yun smiled and said after Shi Zheng Yi: “Since we do not mind the small details, I would like Shi to accept this gift.”

Saying so, she landed an information path immortal material to Shi Zheng Yi.

Shi Zheng Yi was very happy: “Wait, this is trash talk petal flower? This is an immortal material that I need to refine my Immortal Gu!”

He did not stand on ceremony, he took this rank six immortal material and inspected it carefully.

Zhao Lian Yun turned to Yu Yi Ye Zi and smiled as she handed him a refinement path Gu Immortal true inheritance: “I got it.”

Yu Yi Ye Zi was very happy: “The refinement path inheritance I cultivate is called eight refinement gates, to think that the rumors are true, a certain generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House actually created the ninth gate on the foundation of this inheritance. Ah ah ah, Fairy Lian Yun, how can I repay you?”

Zhao Lian Yun shook her head and smiled: “This is something within my abilities, it is also your good luck. Thankfully, I am the current generation fairy, otherwise, I cannot have such authority to take the true inheritance.”

“As for thanking me, of course I need something too.” Zhao Lian Yun said in a casual tone like she was joking: “When you become rank seven or eight Gu Immortals, try to take care of me.”

Shi Zheng Yi and Yu Yi Ye Zi’s expressions turned slightly dim.

They knew about Zhao Lian Yun’s situation.

Zhao Lian Yun had Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable’s rank nine killer move divine concealment, she was unable to undergo tribulations so her cultivation level could not advance.

In contrast, Shi Zheng Yi and Yu Yi Ye Zi’s cultivation levels had increased significantly since the battle of Reverse Flow River.

Shi Zheng Yi gritted his teeth and said: “To speak the truth, I have been trying to find a way for you to break through this limitation. Gu Immortals go through tribulations because of the Heavenly Dao’s balancing, heaven’s will manipulate calamities and tribulations to form. Fairy, you cannot undergo tribulations because divine concealment hides you from heaven’s will. The solution is simple, you just need to unravel divine concealment.”

“Divine concealment is a rank nine killer move, the difficulty of breaking this killer move is too high. But with the reign of three venerables now, breaking a rank nine killer move is not impossible. But destroying the killer move is too wasteful. I think, maybe you can find Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to help, she is a wisdom path venerable, I am sure she has a solution.”

Zhao Lian Yun smiled bitterly: “Star Constellation Immortal Venerable is high and mighty, how can someone like myself even get to meet her?”

“Fairy Lian Yun, do not look down on yourself. The fact that you own rank nine love Immortal Gu means that you will not be ignored.” Yu Yi Ye Zi urged: “But to get Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s help, according to the rules of the ten great ancient sects and Heavenly Court, you will need to pay a huge amount of contribution points. But now, you used your contribution points to exchange for this true inheritance that you gave me, thus... I hope you will take all these cloud beast immortal materials.”

Shi Zheng Yi laughed heartily: “Then I will do the same, this is just a small token of my gratitude.”

Zhao Lian Yun immediately shook her head: “I understand your concern. If I bring back these cloud beast corpses and hand them over, I will get more contribution points than what I spent for the true inheritance. Even so, the amount that I lack to get Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s help is still too much.”

“It is better to invest in you two first and raise your strength to rank seven or eight before you come back and help me, wouldn’t that be more efficient?”

Zhao Lian Yun made a lot of sense, after listening to her, Shi Zheng Yi and Yu Yi Ye Zi decided to keep the cloud beast corpses.

“Even so, Fairy Lian Yun, please accept these immortal essence stones.”

“Yeah, in the following fights, a lot of immortal essence will be expended. At the crucial moment, you can replenish it using immortal essence stones to deal with dangerous situations.”

Shi Zheng Yi and Yu Yi Ye Zi spoke again.

This time, Zhao Lian Yun did not reject them, she took both of their immortal essence stones.

“I do not have many immortal essence stones indeed.”

“In fact, the sect is rarely giving out immortal essence stones now. Do you know what’s going on?” Zhao Lian Yun asked.

Yu Yi Ye Zi and Shi Zheng Yi shook their heads, they were in the same situation.

Shi Zheng Yi was an information path cultivator after all, he had heard some vague rumors: “The ten great ancient sects are all lower sects of Heavenly Court, all of our immortal essence stones are distributed by them. Ever since the fate war, Heavenly Court has started to reduce the amount of immortal essence stones distributed. By now, they have basically stopped giving out any immortal essence stones. The ten great ancient sects have their own immortal essence stone storage, but to save for the future, they also stopped handing them out.”

Yu Yi Ye Zi also said: “Recently, when transacting refinement path immortal materials in treasure yellow heaven, I also noticed this. There are increased transactions in treasure yellow heaven, but most of them are done through resource trading, the circulation of immortal essence stones has dwindled.”

“Is Heavenly Court trying to influence the five regions’ Gu Immortal world through immortal essence stones?” Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes shined with bright light.

All along, the immortal essence stones in the market of the five regions and two heavens were from Heavenly Court.

If Heavenly Court had control of the source, their influence would be huge.

The group that was most heavily affected were the rank six Gu Immortals, and they also had the largest number in the Gu Immortal world.

As one’s cultivation level rose to become rank seven or eight, their dependence on immortal essence stones would fall.

And this was very inconvenient for Zhao Lian Yun.

There were mainly two aspects. Firstly, having the transactions in treasure yellow heaven was inconvenient. Secondly, once Zhao Lian Yun had little immortal essence, she would not be able to replenish it quickly without immortal essence stones.

“Don’t tell me that Heavenly Court is trying to reduce the number of transactions among the Gu Immortals of the five regions so that they can prevent the lower ranked Gu Immortals from fighting in advance?” Zhao Lian Yun thought to herself.

The phenomenon of reducing immortal essence stones became noticed by more Gu Immortals.

Because there was only one source, which was Heavenly Court, other forces could not do anything about it.

During normal times, immortal essence stones were used as currency for Gu Immortals to trade, but during war times, they were important tactical resources as Gu Immortals could replenish immortal essence with them!

After realizing this phenomenon, the various forces of the five regions started to buy immortal essence stones and stock up on them, this made the supply of immortal essence stones became even lower than before.

Naturally, Fang Yuan had noticed this himself.

"Heavenly Court is trying to weaken the strength of the other forces before war erupts, while raising the value of their own immortal essence stones?"

He was very interested in the secret behind Heavenly Court's immortal essence stones.

Be it Shadow Sect's true inheritance, or Paradise Earth's true inheritance, he had not found any clues. Even during the fate war when Fang Yuan attacked Heavenly Court and destroyed the immortal graveyard, he did not find out the secret of the immortal essence stones.

Heavenly Court limited the flow of immortal essence stones, it caused a huge headache to countless forces and Gu Immortals, but for Fang Yuan, the problem was small.

One immortal essence stone was equivalent to one green grape immortal essence bead, each of Fang Yuan's yellow apricot immortal essence beads were worth a million immortal essence stones!

Several days had passed since Fang Yuan arrived in the immemorial heavens and stabilized heaven form.

"Let's start."

He let out a breath of air and started to prepare an immortal killer move.

Heaven path killer move — Obscured Heavenly Secret!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2229: Giant Sun's Attack

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Eastern Sea.

Jade green water flowed like a large dragon, moving rapidly on the surface of the sea.

Several rank six Gu Immortals were chasing and trying to stop it.

"Quick, the water is flowing towards you."

"Watch this!"

Boom! The water flow rippled, a huge wave of over a hundred feet rose.

"I blocked it! But be careful."

Two rank six Gu Immortals were engulfed by the wave instantly.

"Damn it!" The remaining Gu Immortals used their methods to desperately stop it.

In the end, the jade green water flow did not manage to escape the sea area.

Once time was up, white light surrounded ten li of the sea surface.

He Chun Qiu appeared and shouted, grabbed the air with his hands.

Immediately, the surface of the sea rippled and surged with waves, after more than ten breaths of time, a water path formation was built on it.

This water path formation had a rank seven water path Immortal Gu as the core, the main formation had already expended a batch of water path immortal materials.

As the jade water flowed into the water path formation, it turned into a spiral whirlpool that moved on its own, emitting splashing sounds.

The rank six Gu Immortals here flew into the sky, after seeing this, they cheered uncontrollably.

He Chun Qiu inspected the formation again and ensured there were no issues before he also let out a breath of air.

At this point, the jade green water flow resource point had been placed here.

Jade green water flow was a rank seven immortal material, it had a very famous trait in that it would always be moving without ever stopping.

After Fang Yuan created the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance and took in the Righteous Qi Alliance, he extorted Eastern Sea’s righteous path for a batch of water path resource points, this jade green water flow was one of them.

He Chun Qiu was in charge of placing this jade green water flow here. He made an immortal formation and ordered the rank six Gu Immortals to trap this jade green water flow, preventing it from escaping elsewhere. After several days of effort, it was finally completed.

From this day on, the resource point would not only produce jade green water flow, it would also be one of the water vein nodes!

With further development in the future, this might form into a jade green water flow sea area.

“Divine rift whirlpool, seven treasures sea spring, underwater thousand year profound ice island, cleansing water region, rolling pearl water treasury... These last few days, Mini Eastern Sea gained more than ten water vein nodes, only three more are needed before we can form one water vein ring.”

While He Chun Qiu was thinking, one of the rank six Gu Immortals asked politely: “Master, I wonder what other instructions there are?”

He Chun Qiu waved his hand at them, a time path killer move was immediately activated, their wounds healed at once.

“You may go back.” He Chun Qiu said.

The Gu Immortals left after expressing their gratitude.

They were very busy and needed to go around the place to resolve problems and stabilize the environment of the sovereign immortal aperture.

The number of missions in Star Collection Hall was innumerable.

While watching them leave, He Chun Qiu sighed to himself.

After the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, the sovereign immortal aperture faced two main problems.

The first problem was that strange phenomena were still occurring commonly. The sovereign immortal body's non-conflicting dao marks was the root cause. The more dao marks there were, the greater the problem.

After Fang Yuan became venerable by passing the mini chaotic disaster, he gained a huge number of refinement path dao marks. At the same time, he had been building resource points recently, they were also made of dao marks.

The second problem was that the sovereign immortal aperture lacked manpower.

During the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, he lost about fifty Gu Immortals. A portion of them had died in the mini chaotic disaster, they could not be revived. Among which, there was the Combat Beast King. Most of the rest revived, they were all Gu Masters now.

The current situation was quite peculiar, these people could not quickly ascend to immortal yet.

Thus, even throughout the sovereign immortal aperture, the strongest people were He Chun Qiu, Wu Shuai, Lady White Rabbit, Fairy Miao Yin, and the other rank eight Gu Immortals.

Establishing resource points and setting up formations, these were tasks that only He Chun Qiu and Wu Shuai could do.

Although they did not cultivate formation path, they were still Fang Yuan's clones and shared his attainment levels, other people simply could not do it.

He Chun Qiu had already entered the liver life formation multiple times recently, he had no time to rest at all.

"Maybe, I should ask the main body to give orders and deploy a portion of the Merman Imperial Court's merfolk Gu Immortals to help us?" He Chun Qiu thought to himself.

Compared to the humans, the variant humans were more reliant on Fang Yuan, they were less likely to betray him.

At the same time, Mini Eastern Sea did need to relocate and move in a number of merfolk as well.

Compared to the other four mini regions, Mini Eastern Sea only had hairy men on the three major continents, although the population was not small, other areas had no variant humans at all, they were too empty.

The sovereign immortal aperture was developed and managed by the clones and subordinates, while Fang Yuan's main body focused on guarding heaven form.

Boom boom boom.

Fang Yuan's huge rod continued to slam on it.

This time, there were no ice spikes on the rod, it was burning in flames instead!

Heaven form was gritting its teeth, not daring to emit any cries as it curled up into a ball. The frost that appeared on its body out of nowhere was smashed by the rod before being melted by the flames.

As the black and white heavens became fused to a greater extent, heaven form's condition was getting more unstable.

But Fang Yuan was still quite relaxed.

While stabilizing heaven form, he also activated obscured heavenly secret repeatedly to practice it and gain more insight about the move.

The obscured heavenly secret killer move that he used now was the version that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable had.

Paradise Earth did not have heavenly secret Immortal Gu, thus he used heavenly web Gu as the core with a large amount of heaven path immortal materials.

After these heaven path immortal materials were used, Fang Yuan’s body became covered in a new layer of heaven path dao marks, resembling a fishing net.

Whenever anyone made deductions or tried to investigative Fang Yuan, this layer of the fishing net made from the heaven path dao marks would rapidly change form, the lines would contract and twist rapidly, distorting everything from the original state.

“Thus, obscured heavenly secret’s true effect is not to conceal myself from all deductions, but to perfectly mislead them and cause them to arrive at a wrong result.”

Fang Yuan had already recognized the essence of this move.

“Once the fishing net’s heaven path dao marks are depleted, this obscured heavenly secret would lose all effect.”

“Conversely, the more heaven path immortal materials I consume, the more heaven path dao marks would be used to construct this fishing net, which would cause this obscured heavenly secret killer move to become even stronger and long-lasting!”

Because of this, Fang Yuan saw hope of deceiving the two venerables!

Theoretically, as long as he had enough heaven path dao marks, he would be able to prevent the two venerables from finding out that he was refining Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.

Right now, Fang Yuan had more than a hundred yellow apricot immortal essence beads, once he reached the minimum requirement, he would start refining Gu.

Fang Yuan was anxious to refine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus because he knew that now was the best time to do it!

The battle in Crazed Demon Cave had just ended, the three venerables’ methods were all exposed, while they could not modify their methods yet. Thus, in a fight, Fang Yuan had a greater advantage.

After all, he had more dao marks than Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

If he missed this chance, once the two venerables modified their methods, the result of their fight would be uncertain.

“Immortal essence stockpile is my weakness. If I do not use this chance to fix this flaw, in our standoff in the future, my immortal essence reserves will always be below the two of them, I will always be restricted by this!”

Fang Yuan knew he had to take risks.

Longevity Heaven.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable suddenly shouted, his eyes widened, his gaze pierced through Longevity Heaven and cast down on all five regions.

“Good, with the amplification of Longevity Heaven’s luck path dao marks, I can see all the luck of the lifeforms in the five regions!”

Heavenly Court first looked at Heavenly Court.

After a while, he turned to Eastern Sea but could not find Fang Yuan.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was shocked, he quickly searched and found a type of luck in the mixed black and white heaven.

This luck was burning like a furnace, there were cracks on the surface and little firewood at the bottom, there was an immortal crane that resembled a cloud or mist within it, burning slowly in turmoil.

“Heaven form?!”

Instantly, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s eyes burst out with bright light.

He laughed heartily as he understood Fang Yuan’s current condition.

“This heaven form killer move is left by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable, it was used by Fang Yuan during the fate war to invade Heavenly Court. With the fusion of both heavens, heaven form’s foundation is unstable, it needs Fang Yuan’s protection.”

“This rank nine killer move is extraordinary, with Fang Yuan restricted by it, now is the time for me to strike!”

During the fate war, Fang Yuan exposed heaven form. Longevity Heaven had cooperated with him multiple times, thus, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable knew about this information.

After seeing this, the Northern Plains Immortal Venerable set off to Eastern Sea, he moved quickly and resolutely, without a moment of hesitation!

In the mixed black and white heaven, Fang Yuan sighed while smiling slightly.

He had sensed Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s investigation earlier, he purposely dispelled obscured heavenly secret to test it out, the result was that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable moved out to attack him.

“Since Giant Sun is coming, what about Star Constellation?” A dark light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2230: Star Constellation’s Attack

Eastern Sea.

Deep within icy sea area.

In the pitch black bottom of the sea, a huge ice mountain filled the vision of two Su clan Gu Immortals.

These two Su clan immortals had rank seven cultivation level, one was Su Chen, he was specialized in healing methods. The other was Su Ming Wan, he cultivated dark path.

The two Gu Immortals were traveling within a rank seven Immortal Gu House.

This Immortal Gu House was called Moving Frame Pavilion, it was a rarely seen strength path Immortal Gu House. The body of the house was like a pavilion, with eight big thick blue-gold pillars supporting the pavilion roof and pressing down on the pedestal. The blue-gold pillars were not straight, but bent with an obvious curvature, the two ends were inwardly curved and the middle section expanded outwardly.

On the whole, the entire Moving Frame Pavilion looked like a huge bird cage with the two Su clan Gu Immortals inside it.

The Moving Frame Pavilion emitted a layer of dark blue light, blocking the sea water that was outside it.

Even so, a cold chill still permeated the place.

After facing the icy mountain for some time, the eyebrows and hair of the Su clan Gu Immortals were covered in frost.

“So cold.”

“This ice mountain is made from thousand year profound ice, Moving Frame Pavilion does not have enough defense against it, we need to act quickly!”

Su clan’s Gu Immortals conversed while activating Moving Frame Pavilion together, unleashing a strength path method.

Instantly, there was a loud sound as a corner of the thousand year profound ice mountain was cracked by a formless force and floated towards the two Su clan immortals.

After reaching a certain distance, Su Chen immediately took action to move this thousand year profound ice into his immortal aperture.

Boom boom boom.

Moving Frame Pavilion continued to exert strength as pieces of the thousand year profound ice mountain were moved into their immortal apertures gradually.

But good times did not last long, the surrounding ice poison starfish were alarmed by them and quickly approached aggressively.

Su clan’s two immortals tensed up immediately.

“I will lure them away, you should take as much as you can!” Su Chen immediately flew out of Moving Frame Pavilion.

In this deep sea, even though he was a rank seven Gu Immortal, trying to lure away the ice poison starfish group was still a risky thing to do.

Su Ming Wan who was left in Moving Frame Pavilion was not safe from danger either.

Who knew what would happen next?

It was not easy to retrieve the thousand year profound ice, even for a super force like Su clan which sent two rank seven Gu Immortals along with an Immortal Gu House that could rival rank eight Gu Immortals, it was still full of danger.

But there was nothing else Su clan could do.

As an Eastern Sea righteous path super force, after joining the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, they were extorted by Fang Yuan and had to contribute water path resources.

Fang Yuan’s requirement towards the water path resources was very high, he needed them to be usable as the water vein nodes.

Naturally, Su clan did not lack such resource points, but they did not want to give up their personal wealth.

Coincidentally, Su clan was situated close to icy sea area, deep within this sea area, there were abundant ice and snow immortal materials.

Thus, they planned to collect the profound ice here and hand it to Fang Yuan to satisfy his request.

“Quick, be quicker.” Su Ming Wan raised his speed to the limit, but he still had insufficient thousand year profound ice.

There was no helping it, without Su Chen, his efficiency plummeted.

And worse was that a shark group in the sea got disturbed by them, they swam towards Moving Frame Pavilion.

“Sigh, we have no choice but to retreat!” Su Ming Wan sighed deeply, feeling helpless inside.

He had only found this underwater thousand year profound ice mountain after much trouble, but after this excavation, the environment would be greatly affected, causing a chain of reactions to occur.

The stable ecology would instantly become chaotic, the beast groups here would start fighting against each other. Even if they did not fight, they would be wary against each other. If any commotion occurs, they would attack together, and more terrifying, a beast tide might occur.

For the following period, trying to excavate thousand year profound ice here would have much greater risks!

Su Ming Wan and Su Chen’s best choice was to leave and find other suitable targets next.

But right when Su Ming Wan was about to leave, there was a surging aura above the sea.

Su Ming Wan’s expression changed intensely.

This aura was grand and imposing, it was mighty and unstoppable, all of the sharks that were swimming were intimidated, they escaped in panic.

Su Ming Wan’s expression was filled with shock: “This is a venerable’s aura!”

At the previous moment, he felt that a huge sun had flown above his head, across the sea area.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable! He is attacking Eastern Sea?!” Su Ming Wan was flustered and panicked, he quickly informed Su Chen about this.

Su Chen was not far away, he was also stunned at the moment.

“Quick, tell first supreme elder about this! Giant Sun Immortal Venerable seems to be moving towards our Su clan.” Su Chen could not help but shout in fear.

“Are the two venerables’ battle going to take place in our Su clan’s territory?” Su Ming Wan was shocked by this guess, his face was as pale as white paper.

However, contrary to their guesses, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not move straight ahead, his speed fell quickly as he stopped above icy sea area.

Next, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s rank nine aura spread out in an unrestrained manner, showing his grand and domineering attitude.

The entire sky rippled with golden light.

The golden light spread rapidly to the sky and sea, expanding in all directions!

Sensing the terrifying aura of the venerable, almost all the underwater lifeforms escaped in panic.

Thanks to this, the two immortals’ predicament was resolved.

But they were not happy about it, instead, they started to guess: “What is Giant Sun Immortal Venerable trying to do?!”

“Oh? Giant Sun stopped at icy sea area.” In the immemorial two heavens, Fang Yuan quickly sensed this situation.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not conceal his traces at all, it was like he was trying to tell Fang Yuan openly — I have arrived!

Immemorial two heavens.

“So his plan is to stop above icy sea area after all.” Fang Yuan had a calm expression.

After the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable recovered to some extent, but his battle strength would not have risen by much.

After leaving Longevity Heaven, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s dao marks would be far inferior than Fang Yuan.

Thus, for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, even if he saw Fang Yuan’s situation, attacking him abruptly would not have any benefits, only Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would gain from this.

It was very wise that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable chose to enter Eastern Sea.

He was currently refining Eastern Sea’s natural luck path dao marks!

Once he refines all of Eastern Sea’s luck path dao marks, then Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would have a territorial advantage when fighting in Eastern Sea.

Even if he was not in Eastern Sea, he could activate killer move from Northern Plains that would be effective in Eastern Sea.

One could say that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was planting a tower in Fang Yuan’s base camp. It could inspect Eastern Sea’s situation during normal times, and in battle, the activation of luck path dao marks would allow him to launch attacks on the entire Eastern Sea!

Fang Yuan could not do much to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

He could not leave, unless he abandoned heaven form to return to Eastern Sea and face him.

But in that case, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable only had to retreat and leave, while Fang Yuan would lose a rank nine killer move.

If Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not retreat and fought against Fang Yuan in attrition, Fang Yuan's immortal essence reserves would dwindle further!

In the event they fought, although Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would be at a disadvantage, he would not be killed so easily.

Fang Yuan had expected this to happen.

Long ago, when the heaven vein of the immemorial two heavens started to fuse, Fang Yuan had already deduced the crisis of heaven form.

This problem occurred after the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, from Fang Yuan's perspective, this situation was already very good.

The collapse of heaven form was a problem.

Fang Yuan needed to try to resolve it while using the chance to create an opportunity to refine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.

He did not have enough immortal essence now, it was not time to advance the Gu, thus, he could also not expose obscured heavenly secret yet.

When Giant Sun Immortal Venerable checked on Fang Yuan, he immediately retracted this move.

For a person like Fang Yuan, his own weaknesses and flaws were things he could exploit to use against his enemies.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was already influenced by him, next, it was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's turn!

Heavenly Court.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's beautiful eyes looked at Eastern Sea.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable...” She muttered.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable chose to stay in icy sea area, it was really an amazing choice on his part.

Icy sea area was at the western-most part of Eastern Sea, it was closest to Central Continent. By refining the luck path dao marks of Eastern Sea, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was also trying to threaten Central Continent.

“After sensing Fang Yuan's issue, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made a move. But he did not fight against Fang Yuan, this shows that his battle strength has not risen much, and he is also guarding against me!” Thoughts collided rapidly in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's mind.

If there were only Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Heaven Refining Demon Venerable in existence, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would definitely fight his way to the immemorial two heavens now and attack Fang Yuan.

After all, he had abundant immortal essence, even though Fang Yuan had higher battle strength, he could not kill Giant Sun.

A battle of attrition was very beneficial to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

After the battle, Fang Yuan’s immortal essence reserves would shrink, he would not be able to utilize his advantage as a refinement path venerable, even rank nine killer move heaven form would be affected and might get destroyed.

But with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable around, the situation was different.

If Giant Sun Immortal Venerable pitted himself against Fang Yuan, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would benefit the most. From this point, it could be seen that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was helping Fang Yuan.

“Heaven form...” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable squinted slightly.

This rank nine killer move could not be allowed to exist!

During the fate war, this was the killer move that allowed Fang Yuan to break into Heavenly Court.

As long as heaven form existed, Fang Yuan could break into any grotto-heaven in the immemorial two heavens. This was a huge threat to both Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven.

After thinking about it, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable came up with a plan.

At the next moment, she connected to treasure yellow heaven and contacted Fang Yuan.

“Great Love Immortal Venerable, I want your help in refining some Immortal Gu, what do you think?” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable said while smiling.

In the immemorial two heavens, Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered slightly.

He had also expected Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to find him.

Fang Yuan understood the intention of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, he said: “What Immortal Gu do you want? Also, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, how will you deal with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable replied immediately: “I need star thought Immortal Gu, star eyes Immortal Gu, and permanence Immortal Gu.”

Fang Yuan was silent for a while before replying: “Sure, but I need to see your sincerity first.”

“Okay, here is my sincerity!” Before Star Constellation Immortal Venerable finished her words, she turned into a star rainbow that flew straight for Northern Plains.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2231: Refining Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was very daring, she flew rapidly and went deep into Northern Plains — the former location of Imperial Court blessed land.

She did not target any of the Huang Jin tribe members, she acted like Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, staying in the sky and starting to refine the natural wisdom path dao marks of Northern Plains!

At once, starlight shined in the sky, spreading rapidly to the surroundings.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not move into Longevity Heaven directly.

Although it seemed like this was the best opportunity to attack Longevity Heaven, since Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was far away in Eastern Sea, the truth was that it was not easy for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to enter Longevity Heaven.

Grotto-heavens were condensed into one spot in the sky, unless the immortal aperture's entrance was open, outsiders could not get in easily.

This was also why heaven form had immense value.

Furthermore, even if Star Constellation Immortal Venerable managed to get inside Longevity Heaven, she could not destroy the rank nine grotto-heaven in a short period of time.

By then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would come back and defend the grotto-heaven, he would fight against Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. In that case, if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable gives up on Fang Yuan and fights Star Constellation Immortal Venerable instead, not only would there be risks of getting injured, he would expend more immortal essence as well.

That would benefit Fang Yuan too much!

In this contest of three venerables, they were mutually wary of each other, while thinking of ways to attack the others, these venerables also had to maintain their own development speed.

This situation was very complex now.

If one acted rashly without consideration, they would be courting death.

Having judgment was very important.

If one made an appropriate move with just the right intensity, they would gain a bit of advantage in this stalemate of the three venerables.

The three venerables knew this, thus, each of their actions contained deep meaning and considered the reactions of each other. In most cases, they reacted according to the situation.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had already calculated her current actions clearly.

This was the most advantageous move for her!

Firstly, Fang Yuan had to be weakened.

This person was too shameless and had no bottom line.

In Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's mind, even if they had the same battle strength, Fang Yuan would still be a bigger problem than Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Currently, Fang Yuan’s circumstances were very troublesome. The difficulty of maintaining heaven form would only increase with time, because more than half of his heaven path research results came from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, she knew about this clearly.

Fang Yuan had to guard heaven form while expending immortal essence. This depleted his already low reserves.

And now, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable came to Eastern Sea to refine its luck path dao marks, this was a way to weaken Fang Yuan as well.

At the same time, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable requested Immortal Gu from Fang Yuan in exchange for making a move, this was also a way to weaken him.

In addition, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was also weakened by this move.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had the advantage of immortal essence, this was something that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable knew.

With this advantage, if Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not disrupt him, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s dao mark refinement rate would always be higher than Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Additionally, for Heavenly Court, Northern Plains’ Gu Immortal world had a bigger threat than Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortal world, it was a well known fact that Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals had outstanding battle strength and bravery, this was something that Eastern Sea lacked.

“Star Constellation!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable who was in icy sea area gritted his teeth, his expression turned ugly.

But he did not move from his position, he continued to refine the luck path dao marks.

Because Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not attack Longevity Heaven or the Huang Jin tribes, this was not something that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could not endure.

If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable went beyond this, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would return and fight with her.

This was undeniable!

If a strong enemy tried to step over one’s bottom line, there had to be fierce retaliation. Otherwise, the enemy would think that one was easy to bully, then in the future, life would only get tougher.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not step over Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s bottom line, so there was no intense desire for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to return to Northern Plains.

So what if he returned?

By then, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could just leave, but could Giant Sun Immortal Venerable chase after her and barge into Heavenly Court?

Even if he reached Heavenly Court, could he fight against Star Constellation Immortal Venerable? Would Fang Yuan not benefit from that?

If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable left and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not chase her, if he returned to Eastern Sea, what if Star Constellation Immortal Venerable went back to Northern Plains again?

If they did this repeatedly, what would be the point of it all?

Was traveling not costly on immortal essence?

If Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did that, he would not be able to refine many of Eastern Sea’s luck path dao marks, yet he would spend a lot of time and immortal essence, was that not a huge joke?

The situation was different for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Even if she attacked or retreated multiple times, she would still get Fang Yuan’s Immortal Gu.

Thus, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable chose not to move, he continued refining Eastern Sea’s luck path dao marks.

But at this time, Fang Yuan approached Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

“Giant Sun, why must we behave like this? We are both victims of Heavenly Court, they have the deepest foundation and Central Continent is the strongest region, this is an undeniable fact. Furthermore, not long ago, Heavenly Court denounced us as Demon Venerables! We need to join hands and deal with Heavenly Court instead.”

“Look at the situation now, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has openly gone to Northern Plains to refine the wisdom path dao marks there, she is simply disregarding your existence.”

Fang Yuan urged him while suggesting: “Why don’t we have a transaction, I will pay you Immortal Gu in exchange for you refining Central Continent’s dao marks.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable laughed as he replied: “Fang Yuan, it seems that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made such a transaction with you too. Since the five regions are one, and the regional walls no longer exist, I can not only refine Eastern Sea’s luck path dao marks here, but also Central Continent’s. If you want me to let Eastern Sea off, I need to see how many Immortal Gu you can give.”

When Fang Yuan and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable were still bargaining, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable contacted him again.

“Fang Yuan, you have already seen my sincerity. It is your turn now.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable asked for Immortal Gu directly.

Fang Yuan was silent for a moment before sending permanence Gu into treasure yellow heaven.

Speaking of which, this permanence Gu belonged to Heavenly Court at first.

Back then, Fang Yuan had obtained it after destroying Heavenly Court’s Immortal Gu House, Eternal Yacht, in the River of Time.

After Star Constellation Immortal Venerable received permanence Gu, she inspected it before hearing Fang Yuan’s new suggestion: If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable attacked Longevity Heaven or any of the Huang Jin tribes, he would pay her even more Immortal Gu.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled: “If I do that, it will not be just three Immortal Gu.” Her attitude was quite similar to Giant Sun Immortal

Venerable who was talking on the other end.

Fang Yuan snorted in his heart.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was a wisdom path Immortal Venerable after all, in this situation, she was gaining the most benefits.

Fang Yuan was merely trying to stall for time now to undergo refinement.

As long as he refined rank nine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, these losses would all be worth it, even if he had to increase the chips!

But the problem for Fang Yuan now was that he lacked immortal essence!

“It seems that I must accelerate the time of the sovereign immortal aperture.” Right now, Fang Yuan’s gaze was like a hawk, he stared at heaven form sharply, it shivered in response.

Fang Yuan did not want to raise the speed of time in the sovereign immortal aperture, but there were no alternatives.

At this point, he had already paid a considerable price to get this opportunity. And Fang Yuan’s biggest worry was that such an opportunity seldom knocked twice, in the future, he might not be able to do this anymore!

If the opportunity presented itself, he had to grab onto it!

Within the sovereign immortal aperture, Fang Yuan’s time path clone He Chun Qiu started to use time path killer moves.

One after another, killer moves were activated, the raging water of the River of Time was drawn into the year essence pool. Next, through it, the water was diverted to the respective sub-pools.

The time path zones that the year essence pool controlled had faster time flow now, it was obvious when compared to the surroundings.

And this difference was expanding and getting more evident.

After Fang Yuan became venerable, the sovereign immortal aperture’s rate of time became quite close to the five regions, but now, after he used this method, the difference became larger again.

This was a huge threat, of course.

Normally speaking, a chaotic disaster occurred once a hundred years, now, it might arrive in seventy or eighty years.

Once Fang Yuan’s chaotic disaster arrived, the other venerables would find the chance to attack him together, at that time, he would face both internal and external threats!

Fang Yuan had a determined expression, he resolved himself after making this choice.

Whether this gamble was worth it would depend on the future.

As the sovereign immortal aperture’s rate of time rose, the production of yellow apricot immortal essence also started to accelerate.

The development of the immortal aperture was improved greatly as well.

The three venerables were in a deadlock now.

As days passed, the five regions’ Gu Immortal world focused on these three venerables, observing their actions and discussing their possible future decisions.

Because He Chun Qiu used too many time path methods in this period, he had to recuperate and rest.

Thus, Wu Shuai led the other Gu Immortals and formed the first water vein.

Fang Yuan was facing greater difficulty in maintaining heaven form now.

While Star Constellation Immortal Venerable asked him for a second Immortal Gu.

“Star Eyes, Star Thought...” After hesitating for a while, Fang Yuan chose to give star thought Immortal Gu to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Immortal killer move — Obscured Heavenly Secret!

On this day, Fang Yuan finally used this killer move officially, it marked the start of Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus’ refinement.

This time, obscured heavenly secret was modified by Fang Yuan, it contained a few more heaven path Immortal Gu. Not only was it stronger and thicker, it could even allow him to control the range of obscured heavenly secret to a certain extent.

Fang Yuan was not stingy now, he directly used sixty percent of his heaven path immortal materials.

At almost the same time as obscured heavenly secret’s activation, within the sovereign immortal aperture, the refinement to advance Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus also started.

Inside Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, Wu Shuai, He Chun Qiu, and around ten hairy man Gu Immortals got to their stations and started to wait for the refinement to start.

This was an incredible group that gathered, but they were only helping out now.

The divine sense of Fang Yuan’s main body was present now, he was going to refine Gu personally!

Rumble...

Jade light shot out, surging like a flowing river.

Fragrance spread everywhere, causing people to feel delighted.

This was just the first step, but a small mountain of rank nine wood path immortal materials were already expended.

Rank nine Immortal Gu were all extraordinary, while Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s vital Gu, it was also the most helpful Gu to Fang Yuan now.

This was a huge uncertainty!

Therefore, Fang Yuan soon sensed a huge fluctuation in his own luck.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2232: Furnace Luck

Fang Yuan willed in his mind, rank eight Immortal Gu House Cooking Luck Pot started to activate.

Fang Yuan diverted his gaze and looked up above him.

He saw that his rank nine refinement path luck was like a furnace.

The furnace seemed to be made of clay, there were many cracks on the surface that made it look like it was poorly created.

At the bottom of the furnace, there was a pile of firewood burning intensely. This showed that Fang Yuan was currently using all of his immortal essence reserves!

Within the furnace, two lumps of clouds were intertwined.

One lump was an immortal crane cloud that was white in color with black spots inside, it resembled heaven form. This cloud was close to breaking apart, but each time it was about to collapse, heat would be emitted from the furnace to forcefully gather it again.

The other lump of cloud was smaller, it resembled a green lotus. The green lotus cloud was the opposite of the immortal crane, the latter was close to breaking apart while the former was too tightly compacted. Most of the furnace's heat was used on this green lotus cloud, it was trying to melt a piece of limestone.

The green lotus cloud was mostly condensed, only a small portion melted and spread out, flowing towards the cracks of the furnace and sinking to the bottom, as if it was trying to take root.

“The furnace is too crudely made, it is filled with cracks, that shows that my foundation is not stable, the sovereign immortal aperture also has another hidden threat, because it has not gone through an actual chaotic disaster, there is huge room for improvement.”

“The immortal crane cloud is heaven form, while the green lotus cloud is my attempt at refining Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.”

“What about the luck of other venerables?”

Fang Yuan tried to look, but he could not see anything beyond the furnace luck.

When he was rank eight, his luck was like a silver light pillar, while the other three venerables' lucks were like clouds floating around him.

Right now, he had become a refinement path venerable, but he could no longer see the venerables' lucks.

Fang Yuan knew the reason.

Other than the two venerables' defensive methods, the main reason was that Cooking Luck Pot's rank was too low. It was only rank eight, it was already outstanding to be able to see Fang Yuan's own rank nine luck. Of course, there were still specific details that could not be seen through it.

If it had to observe the other two lucks and see how they related to Fang Yuan's own luck, the difficulty would be beyond Cooking Luck Pot's capability.

“But even if I can see the luck relationship, I cannot use it as reliable information.” Fang Yuan thought.

Before the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Fang Yuan used luck inspection multiple times.

Now that he recalled it, the luck phenomena regarding Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable were quite accurate, the main reason for what he saw was that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was split into three existences, while Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was not in his normal state, and they were also not luck path cultivators.

The golden aurora luck of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was clearly not reliable.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable revived through blood path methods, but this important information was not shown in the luck phenomenon. At the same time, his combat system had a terrifying aftereffect, this was also not exposed.

The golden aurora luck that symbolized Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was suppressed most of the time.

Evidently, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had used luck path methods to conceal his own luck and mislead Fang Yuan.

He was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, the former luck path venerable, he was also clear of how Cooking Luck Pot worked, it was not strange that he achieved this.

Fang Yuan was currently thinking of using obscured heavenly secret to deceive the two venerables. The truth was, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already been doing this before the battle in Crazed Demon Cave!

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool.

Grey fire was burning intensely, it was huge like a mountain.

Wood path immortal materials were put inside one by one as they melted like candles.

At the bottom of the fire, there was a ten thousand year profound ice.

Rank eight Immortal Gu Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was sealed within the profound ice!

The Gu Immortals present were tense and nervous originally, but more than ten days had passed since the refinement started, all of them were starting to feel excited and joyful.

“All of the immortal materials have successfully melted.”

“At this rate of progress, in just ten or so days, the advancement will succeed!”

“What sort of incredible Gu refinement method is this! On the surface, it looks like the fusion of ice refinement and fire refinement, but in essence, this is the perfect combination of the profundity of the human isolation style and hairy man natural Gu refinement method.”

“There are also many crucial points that are filled with mystery. Even if we participated personally and watched the entire process closely, we cannot understand the deep meaning contained within. Master is truly worthy of being a refinement path venerable, the difference between us is night and day!”

But right at this time, Fang Yuan’s expression sank.

“Oh no, the Gu refinement is going to fail!”

An intense refinement path intuition filled his mind and body.

Fang Yuan bore no doubt towards this intuition, at the first instant, he realized the truth —

There was a problem with the processing of the wood path immortal materials!

These wood path immortal materials seemed to be fine, but there was a tiny flaw in each step of the process. As these flaws accumulated, they became significant enough to destroy the entire refinement attempt.

If he continued, there would be no point, Fang Yuan made a decision to terminate the Gu refinement attempt!

“What? Why did we stop?!”

“Everything was gone smoothly.”

“Fool, master made a decision, it has to be right. We are too weak, how can we understand him? Immediately follow his orders and do it!”

Within Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, the ten or so Gu Immortals worked chaotically as they gradually stopped the Gu refinement.

After a day and night, under the full effort of Fang Yuan and the rest, the first refinement attempt stopped.

All of the rank nine immortal materials that they invested were wasted.

The Gu Immortals all had mild injuries, even Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool was damaged.

But what made Fang Yuan feel the most loss was the expenditure of yellow apricot immortal essence.

As the main person involved in this refinement, he suffered the most severe injuries!

Immortal killer move — Refine Self.

Fang Yuan used his killer move and refined all of the wood path and refinement path dao marks while feeling glad internally.

“Thankfully, I became a venerable and gained such precise refinement path intuition, even during the process of refining a rank nine Immortal Gu, I still hold the initiative!”

Having the initiative made the situation completely different.

Like this time, Fang Yuan sensed that he would fail and immediately stopped. By doing this, he suffered much fewer losses and most importantly, their injuries were also kept to a minimum due to their precaution.

Rank nine Immortal Gu refinement was not a simple thing, without intuition, if one failed suddenly, more than half of these Gu Immortals would die, while Four

Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool would be destroyed completely, or if he was lucky, a small portion might remain.

But Fang Yuan would suffer much deeper injuries, it was certain to incapacitate him!

But now that he took the initiative to stop, the loss of resources and Gu Immortals, and the Immortal Gu House’s damage were kept to a minimum, rank eight Immortal Gu Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was also intact with no damage taken.

Of course, this had to do with the refinement plan that Fang Yuan came up with meticulously.

This time, he chose to use ice refinement to isolate rank eight Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus first, he would only use it in the last few steps.

“If only I could get some success dao marks from Infallible blessed land, that would be great.”

“Or maybe, if I can raise my wood path attainment level, my ability to process these wood path immortal materials will increase, it will help this situation!”

Fang Yuan speculated inwardly.

Even Fang Yuan had not understood completely what the secret behind Infallible blessed land’s success dao marks was.

He was a refinement path venerable, theoretically, he was the number one person in refinement path in the world, his supreme grandmaster attainment level allowed him to grasp every single refinement path method in the world.

But Infallible blessed land was the racial inheritance of hairy men, even until today, Heavenly Court had not managed to take control of it, they were very wary against it. Success dao marks were too helpful for Gu refinement, according to Fang Yuan’s deductions, it not only contained refinement path profundity but also the essence of human path.

This could be speculated by reading <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

Precisely because of the human path profundity, Fang Yuan could not replicate the success dao marks now.

After a temporary rest.

Fang Yuan healed himself while stabilizing heaven form, he also used investigative killer moves to observe the two venerables’ actions.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was in icy sea area, while Star Constellation Immortal Venerable went deep into Northern Plains, they were both focused on refining natural dao marks.

“The best situation is to maintain the status-quo.” For this goal, Fang Yuan was willing to pay more Immortal Gu to them.

This was a necessary investment!

“However, the two venerables are unable to fully refine the natural dao marks of both regions. I do not have much time left!”

Fang Yuan understood this clearly.

It was a simple thing, Eastern Sea and Northern Plains were huge and contained innumerable dao marks, even these two venerables could not refine them all in a short period of time.

This was an easily proven fact.

He only had to check historical records and see how long the venerables took to roam the world after reaching rank nine.

“The two venerables are limited by not just time but also immortal essence!”

“Once the two of them run out of immortal essence reserves, they will not be able to continue refining natural dao marks, they will stop then. After all, they need to keep a portion of their immortal essence for combat and potential unexpected occurrences.”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan gritted his teeth.

This Gu refinement failure was very disadvantageous to him.

Because it did not fail early but only occurred past the halfway mark, he had to start all over again.

Fang Yuan had too little time, he estimated that there was only one chance left.

“No, one chance is too few.”

“It has been tested that even as a rank nine refinement path venerable, my success rate of refining rank nine Immortal Gu is far lower than rank eight.”

“It seems that I need to gamble harder!”

Fang Yuan immediately ordered for He Chun Qiu to take action in the sovereign immortal aperture again.

Time path killer moves were used in succession, sovereign immortal aperture’s time flow rose again!

But Fang Yuan paid a huge price for this.

Because he had just used time path killer moves earlier, the effect of the current methods were too little. In order to raise the time flow forcefully, Fang Yuan had to use other time path methods.

And the result was that He Chun Qiu’s time path dao marks were all used up in the process!

It could be said that this time path clone was basically useless now.

But in the current situation, with Spring Autumn Cicada being unusable, it was not a huge concern that the time path clone became useless.

After everything was prepared, Fang Yuan started to refine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus again while racing against time!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2233: Black Heaven’s Heavenly Spirit

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

“Quick, take my place, I can’t hold on anymore.”

“I’ll come!”

“Huff... we finally got through another stage.”

Within Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, the assisting Gu Immortals were all breathing roughly.

After the first failure, Fang Yuan continued to experience two more failed attempts.

He had no lack of rank nine wood path immortal materials, but time was pressing, he had no choice but to use more aggressive methods.

He changed the procedure of the Gu refinement.

Rank eight Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus had to be protected, but the steps before that became more simplified. As a result, the expenditure of immortal essence became more intense, each step became more complex and needed the full effort of the assisting Gu Immortals.

Evidently, they were reaching their limit.

Fang Yuan frowned deeply.

A few days passed but the two venerables did not move, the situation was getting more troublesome for him.

Not only was there little progress in refining rank nine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, heaven form was also becoming harder to protect.

The fusion of the immemorial two heavens had reached the most intense moment.

In the sky above the five regions, black and white mixed together while changing rapidly. Day and night alternated at a rapid speed, mortals and beasts looked up in fear, they felt like the apocalypse was impending.

Even the sun’s route had changed!

Everything that stood in its path, be they the black clouds or the soul beast army, they were all obliterated.

The heaven form white crane cried out profusely, Fang Yuan tried using refinement path methods but could only slow down the accumulation of its injuries.

Heaven form was getting more and more damaged.

But Fang Yuan had already reached his own limit, he could not modify heaven form anymore. After all, he was currently refining a rank nine Immortal Gu!

“The most crucial factor is time.”

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable are about to stop as well.”

Fang Yuan had already given the third Immortal Gu Star Eyes to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, he could still stall for a bit of time.

Furthermore, Fang Yuan had been wasting time conversing with Star Constellation

Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, using the suggestion of transacting Immortal Gu to delay the inevitable.

During this period, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had used their own investigative methods to probe Fang Yuan's situation.

But because of the outstanding effects of obscured heavenly secret, Fang Yuan managed to conceal the truth.

Fang Yuan had already expended a lot of immortal essence, his reserves were hitting rock bottom, meaning his battle strength had also fallen. If the truth was exposed, the two venerables would join hands to attack him!

Deep in Northern Plains.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked at the fusing heavens as starlight flashed across her eyes.

“It is about time.”

“Now is the most intense moment of the heaven veins' fusion, it is also the most important moment.”

“If Fang Yuan gets through this, he may likely get to keep heaven form.”

“But how can we let this happen?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled, she moved and vanished on the spot like a stream of starlight.

She quickly returned to Crazed Demon Cave.

Because she was familiar with the place, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable easily arrived at the ninth layer void.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was trapped here, upon seeing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, he roared and charged at her.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was prepared for this, she blocked Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's attacks while activating a method to form an opening.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable flew through this opening as Spectral Soul Demon Venerable chased after her, causing them both to arrive in Northern Plains.

“What?” At almost the same time, Fang Yuan and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had a sensation.

“Is Star Constellation Immortal Venerable thinking of releasing Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to slaughter living beings of my Northern Plains?!” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable frowned.

He had considered this possibility earlier.

But this was not the style of Heavenly Court.

As expected, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not guess wrongly, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable retreated while luring Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to the two heavens.

“Hehehe, Fang Yuan is in trouble.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable relaxed his mind, he started to observe the show as a spectator.

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, what are you doing?!” Fang Yuan immediately questioned her in treasure yellow heaven, speaking furiously: “I gave you three Immortal Gu earlier!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled: “Precisely so, I will tell you this secret that nobody knows.”

“Back then, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable did not want to create soul path, his goal was killing path.”

“He is a person chosen by fate, he had immense innate luck and countless fortuitous encounters. Once, when he explored immemorial black heaven, what do you think he saw?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable spoke in a delicate tone.

Upon hearing her words, Fang Yuan’s expression sank as thoughts emerged in his mind.

This was not hard to guess.

Firstly, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was not in the right state of mind, he lost his sanity and even went to fix the hole in the world boundary in Crazed Demon Cave.

Secondly, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was currently trying to lure Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to the immemorial two heavens, she wanted to give Fang Yuan trouble.

But what kind of trouble was it?

Even though heaven form could only remain in immemorial white heaven, it could still move around despite being on the brink of destruction.

Thus, in theory, as long as Fang Yuan avoided battle and brought heaven form around at a quick speed, he only had to get away from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

By then, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable without sanity would only attack Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. After all, she was the most threatening person to him.

But now, since Star Constellation Immortal Venerable took such an action, she definitely had ways for Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to target Fang Yuan instead.

With Fang Yuan’s current predicament, the most likely answer became obvious.

Fang Yuan snorted in his heart.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable explained the truth: “It seems that you have guessed it. Indeed, back then, before Spectral Soul became a Demon Venerable, he had already obtained food path methods. Once, when he explored immemorial black heaven, he by chance found immemorial black heaven’s heavenly spirit.”

“Spectral Soul was eager to create killing path, he sensed the opportunity of that from the heavenly spirit. Thus, he used food path methods to devour this immemorial black heavenly spirit into his stomach and fused it with himself.”

Immemorial black heaven’s heavenly spirit!

Back then, since Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable could find a natural heavenly spirit in immemorial white heaven, why was there no such thing in black heaven?

The reason was that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had devoured black heaven’s heavenly spirit.

“Fang Yuan, I will keep those three Immortal Gu. I need to return to Northern Plains and refine more wisdom path dao marks. I will leave Spectral Soul Demon Venerable with you.” After saying this, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable turned around and left.

Seeing that she was leaving, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable showed a hesitant expression.

Staring at Star Constellation Immortal Venerable who left, he turned towards Fang Yuan as there was something that attracted him even more.

Fang Yuan’s expression was grim.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was still in the heaven above Northern Plains, but he had already sensed heaven form which was in Eastern Sea. Evidently, after he devoured black heaven’s heavenly spirit, although he did not manage to create killing path, he still grasped a lot of profundities that allowed him to create soul path.

When Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was trapped in the ninth layer, he could not sense the five regions and two heavens, but once he arrived in the immemorial two heavens, he clearly sensed the heavenly spirit.

“Black heaven’s and white heaven’s heavenly spirits originate from the immemorial two heavens, they are like a blessed land’s land spirit and a grotto-heaven’s heavenly spirit, they hold authority and control over the two heavens.”

“Precisely so, heaven form, which uses white heaven’s heavenly spirit as the core, is able to find many of the grotto-heavens in white heaven, it can even help me invade Heavenly Court.”

“Now, with the fusion of both heavens, the two heavenly spirits of black and white heaven are also seemingly fusing together. No matter which side devours the other, they will gain a huge boost in strength and become the new core of the newly fused heaven!”

All sorts of reasons flashed in Fang Yuan’s mind.

Over at the other side, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable made his decision, he charged towards Fang Yuan’s direction, seemingly following his instincts.

He had a huge body that was no longer human, but he had genuine rank nine cultivation level, he was extremely fast and simply looked like he was teleporting in black heaven.

Fang Yuan sighed, seeing that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was getting closer, he took heaven form and started to fly away...

The sun!

The sun was something that existed in immemorial white heaven, it was the biggest counter to immemorial black heaven.

After Spectral Soul Demon Venerable devoured black heaven’s heavenly spirit, he would also face such restrictions.

Fang Yuan did not move all over the place.

Firstly, heaven form was very unstable now, if he moved quickly, it might break apart. Secondly, the sun was a favorable environment for heaven form. And thirdly, if Fang Yuan went elsewhere to fight Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, the other two venerables might sense his weakness and take action!

Fang Yuan’s main focus was to refine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus now.

He had to stall for more time and complete the refinement!

Roar—!

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable started to chase Fang Yuan.

Black colored gas spread out into countless chains that shot towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan snorted and used a bit of his attention to destroy the black chains.

His speed rose again as he approached the sun.

As the distance shortened, the intense heat and light forced Fang Yuan to shut his eyes. If not for his defensive methods, he would have already been incinerated.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable chased relentlessly.

He spit out a grand soul river while shooting countless soul spears and triggering explosions. He used all sorts of methods to stop Fang Yuan but midway, the sun’s light limited the power of his methods, by the time they reached Fang Yuan, the methods broke apart by themselves.

Heaven form was crying more pitifully now.

The closer it got to the sun, the more light path and fire path dao marks there were, heaven form could not take much more.

“I can’t get any closer, otherwise, heaven form is going to break apart.” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, he followed after the trail of the sun, maintaining a certain distance.

But then, after Spectral Soul Demon Venerable finally arrived, he started to fight against Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan fought as he retreated, he had to defend heaven form while dealing with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. He also had to refine the rank nine Immortal Gu, thoughts were being consumed rapidly in his mind, his immortal essence reserves reached a critical level!

The situation was perilous!

This could not go on, if he fought now, his weakness would be exposed, obscured heavenly secret could not hide anything in that case.

A ruthless light flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes, he knew that those two venerables were currently watching the commotion here with their full attention!

“I can only sacrifice heaven form now!”

At the next moment, Fang Yuan secretly activated obscured heavenly secret.

But this time, the heaven form immortal material he chose to expend was the core of heaven form — the immemorial white heavenly spirit!

Heaven form cried out as it looked at its master in fear.

But in a few breaths of time, it vanished from existence entirely.

A vast number of heaven path dao marks that piled into a dense mountain shrouded Fang Yuan immediately.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable became enraged, Fang Yuan had destroyed heaven form in front of him and left nothing behind.

At the next moment, soul path killer moves erupted, attacks surged like a huge tidal wave in the sky.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, he turned around and flew towards the sun!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2234: Refinement Completed!

Immortal killer move — Seven Kills Rainbow!

Fang Yuan pushed with his palm as a rainbow light shot out.

Bam!

With a loud sound, the rainbow light expanded by tens of times its original size, the huge heavenly beam swept around and destroyed all of the surrounding soul smoke.

After getting a clear path, Fang Yuan raised his speed and successfully broke out of the soul smoke.

At once, the intense sun filled Fang Yuan’s vision, the terrifying light and heat wiped out the soul smoke that trailed behind him.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable shouted furiously, tearing its thin layer of soul smoke and chasing again.

“Still following me?” Cold light flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

At the crucial moment, he sacrificed the white heavenly spirit, without the burden of heaven form, it was like he had put down a mountain on his back.

Earlier, he could not get close to the sun because of heaven form.

Without this worry anymore, Fang Yuan approached the sun even more closely.

The terrifying white light almost blinded his eyes. The temperature rose intensely, even with three defensive methods, Fang Yuan still felt difficulty in breathing, he was covered in perspiration.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who was behind him activated killer moves again, hundreds of arms that were thick as huge trees appeared. Black smoke surged from his body, spreading to the surrounding few li.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable got closer to Fang Yuan while covered in thick smoke.

“He wants to use a battlefield killer move to trap me?” Surprise flashed in Fang Yuan’s eyes as he took action to destroy the black smoke.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable immediately suffered a backlash, his aura weakened greatly.

Most of Fang Yuan’s attention was on sovereign immortal aperture, he had not stopped focusing on the matter of refining Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.

Frankly speaking, the current Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was giving Fang Yuan very little pressure!

The lack of sanity was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s greatest weakness.

Like earlier, he followed his instincts and tried to use a battlefield killer move to trap Fang Yuan, it was too stupid. Fang Yuan easily broke it and caused him to suffer a huge backlash.

Earlier in Crazed Demon Cave, Fang Yuan, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, and Paradise Earth were inside the Door of Life and Death, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had incomparable battle strength then.

But now, without the soul path environment, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s threat became much lower.

“And most importantly, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable is not in a good condition now, he must have paid a huge price to deal with that hole in Crazed Demon Cave!”

“This means that the hole has likely been fixed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable already.”

Fang Yuan knew that if there was a hole in the world boundary, the Heavenly Dao would use methods to heal itself. But because the chaos outside surged endlessly, self-healing was very difficult. The larger the hole, the more difficult it would be.

Back then, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable created a hole that needed several venerables to work together to mend it.

But the hole in Limitless Demon Venerable’s Crazed Demon formation was the smallest. The formation resisted the chaos and kept the hole small, allowing Crazed Demon Cave to exist for so long.

After the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable went to fix this hole, he used his own foundation to resist the surging chaos, allowing the Heavenly Dao to have an opportunity to fix it.

Thus, there was no surprise in this outcome.

If the hole still existed, with Heavenly Court’s stance, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would not lure Spectral Soul Demon Venerable away. The truth was, if the hole was still around Spectral Soul Demon Venerable would not come out either. According to Fang Yuan’s deductions, he would focus on the hole as his first priority!

“It is a pity that ghostly concealment has no effect, otherwise, I can get away from Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.”

Fang Yuan inherited Thieving Heaven true inheritance’s ghostly concealment, but the venerables knew about this.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, and even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had ways to counter it.

“Ghostly concealment was created in Thieving Heaven’s time, after three hundred thousand years, it is already outdated in the venerables’ eyes.”

Fang Yuan wanted to modify it too, but he lacked theft path and soul path attainment levels.

But even without ghostly concealment, Fang Yuan could still get away from Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

At the next moment, the battlefield killer move that he prepared for a long time activated!

The killer move expanded and enveloped Fang Yuan, it then condensed into a small dot and vanished completely.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable attacked the original spot with countless attacks but there was no effect, he could only move around the area while growling in anger.

“I cannot waste this chance, such an opportunity will not come again!” Inside the battlefield killer move, Fang Yuan’s eyes shined with brilliance, he started to refine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus with his full strength.

This was his last chance.

Within Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, flames surged as an icy river melted, pieces of rank nine immortal materials were placed into the fire like cheap vegetables.

At the core of the fire, there was a droplet of red liquid, it was as dense as molten lava.

The red molten liquid was covered in a layer of golden radiance, it slowly dripped onto Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.

Under Fang Yuan’s full control, the red molten liquid slowly permeated and spread around the surface of Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.

All of the Gu Immortals were silent and did not dare to breathe heavily.

Because they knew that these last few steps were the most crucial!

If he fails, rank eight Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus would be heavily damaged or even destroyed.

Fang Yuan went missing!

At the moment Fang Yuan entered the battlefield killer move, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used their strongest investigative methods.

Under the protection of obscured heavenly secret, they only saw that Fang Yuan went into the battlefield, they did not find out the truth that he was refining Gu.

“So he used this move after all...” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was not surprised.

If Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was sane, Fang Yuan would not do something so stupid. But because he was currently unable to think, it was a brilliant decision to do this and avoid him.

“He wants to use the sun to weaken Spectral Soul?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable guessed.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable stayed at the spot where Fang Yuan vanished, but the sun was still moving forward.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled lightly, she immediately contacted Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and gave a suggestion to work together.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could not help but feel moved.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not suggest to make a move on Fang Yuan, instead, her new target was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was not clear headed now, he had also left the Door of Life and Death. Even though he had venerable cultivation level, he was the weakest one. Now was the best time to kill him.

If Spectral Soul Demon Venerable regained his sanity, then there would be a new chess player in the five regions and two heavens.

That was something neither of the three venerables wanted to see.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable not only contacted Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, she also spoke to Fang Yuan.

“This old woman is brewing a good scheme.”

“Not only did she get Immortal Gu from me, she also refined Northern Plains’ wisdom path dao marks. After destroying my heaven form, she wants to kill Spectral Soul Demon Venerable now!”

The methods of wisdom path Gu Immortals usually came consecutively, they were hard to deal with over time.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was the strongest wisdom path Gu Immortal in history, her methods and schemes made even Fang Yuan and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable wary.

However, it was undeniable that this suggestion was very tempting.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was in such a state, he had strength but not sanity, he was the best prey.

“Normally, I will definitely be moved. But now, refining Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus is the most important thing.” Thinking of this, Fang Yuan still agreed to the suggestion.

It was too suspicious if he refused.

On one hand, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable might think that he was lacking immortal essence and did not want to take action, it might cause them to pincer-attack him.

On the other hand, if Fang Yuan hid in the corner, the two venerables would not truly fight Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. They did not want him to reap the benefits as a spectator after all.

Currently, in the sovereign immortal aperture, the sixth drop of red molten liquid had already entered Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.

Fang Yuan agreed to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable while contacting Giant Sun Immortal Venerable: “Giant Sun, I’m afraid Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has a deeper scheme in mind. Don’t forget that she once controlled Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. It is likely that she will use us to weaken him before attempting to take control again.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable responded quickly: “Heavenly Court is still very strong, while Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s schemes are unfathomable. However, we must try to kill Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, if he regains his sanity, it will be a problem for us all!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable also agreed to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s suggestion.

This was beneficial to him after all.

He had abundant immortal essence now, if everyone fought, they would use up immortal essence, his advantage would become even greater!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable went into the two heavens, they started to fight against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

After a few rounds, under the urging of the two venerables, Fang Yuan had to cancel his battlefield killer move and join in the fight with his main body.

It could not be helped.

If he did not go out, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would break his battlefield killer move together and force him out.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable could not think clearly now, he was helpless against a battlefield killer move but the two venerables were different.

Starlight shined while golden light surged, Fang Yuan’s totem killer moves also followed after them.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was encircled and ganged up on, he landed in a pathetic state and lost several hundred arms.

He retaliated fiercely with soul rivers and black soul lightning balls that exploded continuously.

His main target was still Fang Yuan!

“If he devoured the white heavenly spirit, his ability to think would return. Is that why he hates me so much...”

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth but did not dodge!

Within the sovereign immortal aperture, he reached the final step.

The ninety-ninth molten liquid landed on Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus and started to spread.

Rumble...

Fang Yuan’s vision turned dark, his body was covered in the cries and screams of anguished souls.

Multiple layers of defensive killer moves erupted as Fang Yuan bled from his seven orifices, his soul was shaking intensely.

“What happened?”

“Did he make a mistake?”

The two venerables retreated to the side, in the earlier situation, Fang Yuan should have had time to dodge.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked at each other, they did not make a move.

They would not save Fang Yuan of course, but due to conflicting dao marks, if they attacked him, they would be weakening the soul path attack.

Using this chance created by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s attack, Fang Yuan stalled for the last bit of time he needed.

Boom!!!

Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool erupted with unparalleled light, Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was successfully elevated at this moment, its rank nine aura surged like a tsunami, spreading rapidly and filling the entire aperture!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2235: Spectral Soul Alone Is Nothing To Fear

Rank three Heavenly Essence Treasure Lotus.

Rank four Heavenly Essence Treasure Monarch Lotus.

Rank five Heavenly Essence Treasure King Lotus.

And above rank five... Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus!

The Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus that he obtained from Lang Ya Sect was finally raised to rank nine at this moment.

This rank nine Immortal Gu still had jade green lotus leaves, its surface was bright and smooth, like it had a layer of glaze. At the center of the lotus, there was the bud of a lotus flower.

The lotus flower had pure white jade-like petals, they were flawless and perfect, seemingly out of this world.

Once rank nine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was refined, it activated on its own, absorbing the surrounding primeval energy to convert them into clear dew beads.

These pure dew beads gathered as they flowed along the glazed leaves, gathering into the bud at the center droplet by droplet.

The white jade flower bud absorbed the dew droplets and started to turn pink at the top.

Fang Yuan personally refined this Immortal Gu, he was clear about this, the white jade flower bud would gather more dew droplets and turn from white to pink, and from pink to bright red.

When the flower petals turned red completely, it would bloom and reveal the jade green lotus pod inside.

Within the lotus pod, there would be eighty-one lotus seeds, each of them was a yellow apricot immortal essence bead!

After the yellow apricot immortal essence beads were extracted, the lotus flower would contract and turn white again. Next, it would absorb the clear dew droplets and restart the process again.

“Rank nine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s vital Gu, ranked sixth on the Immortal Gu list..” Information flashed past Fang Yuan’s mind, all of them proved the immense value of this Immortal Gu.

But the truth was, Fang Yuan knew that this sixth placing of the Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was too much of an underestimate.

The reason?

Before fate Gu was destroyed, venerables were invincible, they ruled their own era as the sole supreme entity.

Even though Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had rank nine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus and became the richest venerable in history in terms of immortal essence, this advantage was useless in his life.

In his era, he was the only venerable, he had no use for most of his rank nine immortal essence. Without any opponent, even an expert could only live his life mundanely!

But now was different, fate Gu was destroyed and the reign of three venerables appeared, others might even revive later.

“Oh Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, in my hands, you will shine brightly like never before!”

Fang Yuan was joyous.

This result made all the earlier risks worth it.

Even though he paid a terrifying price.

Adding in his earlier failures, Fang Yuan used up thirty percent of his rank nine wood path immortal materials!

“The crisis is not over yet.” Fang Yuan analyzed calmly to himself.

Surrounding him, a black soul river surged endlessly.

“Break.” Fang Yuan shouted and activated his killer move, he barged out like a shooting star.

Without the Gu refinement burdening his thoughts, he had a lot of usable strength now.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable attacked again while Fang Yuan retreated.

“Fang Yuan, let’s cooperate to attack him.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable reminded.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable also stared at Fang Yuan intently, he used luck path methods unceasingly to try and see how much immortal essence Fang Yuan still had.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, his expression was livid as he said angrily: “Are you two bullying me because of my age? We were all meant to attack together, but I ended up facing the brunt of his attacks, not only did you two not help me, you even let Spectral Soul Demon Venerable go off while you watched this by the sidelines? Is this your so-called cooperation?”

Saying so, he activated a compound killer move as yellowish brown light shot out to block Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s attack.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was silent before smiling and saying: “Fang Yuan, you are mistaken. Even though we cooperated, our dao marks conflict, making a move would have had negative effects instead.”

Saying this, she waved her hand as a large amount of stardust landed on Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, breaking several hundred of his arms.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable also took action, golden light descended like sand and grinded away at Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s luck.

Fang Yuan relaxed his mind at this moment, he sighed to himself as he thought: This obscured heavenly secret killer move is really useful.

The situation earlier was simply too perilous.

As long as the two venerables sensed something wrong with Fang Yuan, they would attack him without restraint. But at that worst timing, he had too little immortal essence and could not fight them.

If they attacked him, Fang Yuan would have no choice but to try and run.

Even though Fang Yuan did not have the white heavenly spirit anymore, this was still a worthwhile trade off.

Even with all of Fang Yuan’s methods, it was only because he expended the white heavenly spirit that he could deceive both venerables at such a close range.

But Fang Yuan did not know how long he could continue to deceive them.

As Spectral Soul Demon Venerable roared, he activated burning soul bursting luck to block Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s golden sand.

But Spectral Soul Demon Venerable still charged at Fang Yuan!

Because Fang Yuan destroyed the white heavenly spirit, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable bore huge hatred towards him.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, he did not fight back with force, he flew towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable instead.

The three venerables fought against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, they had their own positions that were far away from each other. But now, Fang Yuan and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable moved quickly, they got close to her rapidly.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted coldly as starlight flew out of her mouth and rained down like a storm.

The starlight rain surrounded Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s body like a river while shooting stars of various sizes shot out of the ripples.

Instantly, countless flying stars appeared in the battlefield, it was a dazzling sight!

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had such a move to summon so many stardust specks in a short period of time...” Fang Yuan shook internally.

These stardust specks were harmless to him.

He only had to wipe them to refine all of these star marks, he had the perfect counter to this combat system.

But Spectral Soul Demon Venerable could not do that.

Because he was not sane, after getting hit by the stardust specks, his body became covered in injuries, he roared angrily but his injuries accumulated.

“Good chance!” Fang Yuan turned around and fought again, he unleashed another killer move.

This was a refinement path method.

The killer move shined with intense radiance, enveloping Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and eroding his soul beast body wherever the light went.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable frowned deeply as she shouted: “Fang Yuan, what are you trying to do?!”

The reason was that although Fang Yuan hurt Spectral Soul Demon Venerable with this move, the refinement path killer move was also used on the star path dao marks.

Fang Yuan got rid of over half the star marks that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable accumulated over this time.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable benefited from this and went back to a relaxed state.

“A small blunder, it is just a mistake.” Fang Yuan laughed heartily.

After a few rounds went by, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable also frowned, he spoke with a tone of anger: “Fang Yuan, what are your true intentions?!”

Fang Yuan said innocently: “I am trying to attack Spectral Soul Demon Venerable along with you. But we have conflicting dao marks, and a lack of cooperation normally, this will get better if we continue to fight.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted coldly together.

Fang Yuan was doing this on purpose, he was acting like a nuisance, disrupting Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s attacks.

After a few more rounds.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shouted angrily: “Fang Yuan, enough is enough! The immemorial soul beasts you released are all countered by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. After devouring them, he recovered by thirty percent.”

Fang Yuan rubbed his nose: “I did not know that he had such methods.”

Saying so, he brought out a few more immemorial soul beasts.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s eyes shined with starlight specks, she stared at Fang Yuan and said in an icy cold tone: “You are still letting more out?!”

Fang Yuan smiled plainly: “Star Constellation, don’t worry, I used a method on these immemorial soul beasts, this is part of my plan. Just watch.”

Not long after, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable saw that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s injuries were recovering even more rapidly, his mental energy also recovered as well.

Before the two venerables questioned him, Fang Yuan rubbed his nose: “Oh, it seems that my plan failed.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable stayed silent while Star Constellation Immortal Venerable wanted to speak, but Fang Yuan suddenly snorted coldly: “Give me a minute I need to prepare a powerful method!”

Saying so, he flew up to the sky and looked down at the battlefield.

The two venerables looked at each other before taking action to obstruct Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

After Fang Yuan’s preparation, a huge field of fire clouds appeared above him. From them, flaming meteors descended, they were all around the size of mountains, there was a long trail behind them as they crashed into Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Following his instincts, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable roared towards the sky, but he saw that these meteors flew past him without landing on him at all!

Countless meteors flew across the battlefield, descending rapidly.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s expression turned colder as her eyes sparked like lightning, Star Constellation Chessboard appeared above her head.

A large number of pieces flew out of the chessboard and hit the flaming meteors rapidly, destroying them.

Fang Yuan was confused: “Star Constellation, what are you doing?! These flaming meteors are very useful to me, I have a second move to use with them.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gritted her teeth: “If I did not stop them, these meteors would have pierced the heavenly wind qi wall and landed in Central Continent.”

Fang Yuan smiled coldly: “Star Constellation, we are trying to kill a venerable, are you unwilling to pay a small price like this? If this happened in Eastern Sea, I would not have interfered. With this level of sincerity, you think we can kill Spectral Soul Demon Venerable today?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable stared at Fang Yuan: “Fang Yuan, don’t go overboard! Among the three of us, who do you think has the least sincerity?”

Fang Yuan’s expression also turned cold: “Star Constellation, do you think I am such a person? To kill Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, I gave you multiple

Immortal Gu and even lost my heaven form killer move!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable were speechless.

It was clearly Fang Yuan’s poor planning that got him targeted, he was too weak and unable to protect his rank nine killer move, but now, from his tone, he wanted to seek compensation from them?

How could that be possible!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable spoke: “Fang Yuan, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable is targeting you. The two of us are helping you to deal with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable now.”

But Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “Do I need your help? I can easily take care of this. You two can return to Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court, I will fight against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable in Central Continent and Northern Plains to the best of my abilities, and I will take his life in the end. Just Spectral Soul alone is nothing to fear!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2236: Secretly Unsealing Truthful Floating Ice

Fang Yuan said while unsealing more immemorial soul beasts.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable moved rapidly, grabbing these immemorial soul beasts and devouring them into his stomach.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s eyelids were twitching while Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s expression turned dark.

Earlier, Fang Yuan emphasized on the words ‘Central Continent, Northern Plains’, he was clearly using these regions to threaten them.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable suggested that they should kill Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, regardless of her motive, this suggestion itself was a good one.

But because of Fang Yuan’s actions, he was clearly disrupting the two venerables and using it as a threat to extort something from them to make up for his losses this time.

The two venerables smiled coldly to themselves, they understood why he would do this.

If they placed themselves in Fang Yuan’s perspective, they would do the same thing.

After all, Fang Yuan was a new venerable, he did not have a deep foundation like the other two, he lacked immortal essence as well, these reasons caused him to lag behind the two venerables. If they fought against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he would face the greatest risk.

Even if Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was killed, in terms of snatching battle spoils, because Fang Yuan lacked immortal essence and would not be able to last longer in combat, it was likely that he could not outdo these two venerables. In fact, after they kill Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, if he runs out of immortal essence, the two of them would attack him immediately!

Fighting in this situation was very disadvantageous to Fang Yuan.

As for the two venerables?

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable secretly transmitted: “Giant Sun, Heaven Refining Demon Venerable spent a lot of immortal essence to guard heaven form, he is currently at his weakest. You know that he is a greater threat than Spectral Soul Demon Venerable! Why don’t we...”

Before Star Constellation Immortal Venerable finished, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable interrupted: “Star Constellation, you can make a move first, I will support you!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted: “Giant Sun, your words lack sincerity.”

Whoever attacked Fang Yuan first would face his retaliation first.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable said that nicely, but if Star Constellation Immortal Venerable attacked, would he still help? What was in his best interests was to watch Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Heaven Refining Demon Venerable fight it out.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable wanted to work with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to fight against Fang Yuan. The truth was, she felt more wary against Fang Yuan!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable also wanted to see Fang Yuan’s death.

They all knew that Fang Yuan had the least amount of immortal essence among them.

But how low was low?

They had to make sure of this quantity first.

According to their investigative methods, Fang Yuan still had a portion of his immortal essence reserves.

If either of the two venerables wanted to kill Fang Yuan, they would need to pay a terrifying price. And in this situation with three venerables, they simply could not take the risk.

The two venerables working together was the best choice for them.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not trust each other at all!

They were also worried that if they forced Fang Yuan’s hand, he might attack Central Continent and Northern Plains!

Normally speaking, Gu Immortals had their own unspoken rules, they would not attack mortals or Gu Masters. This was something very disgraceful, especially for a venerable, their pride would not allow them to make such actions.

“But with Fang Yuan’s principles and bottom line, he would not hesitate to do so.” Both venerables agreed on this point with no uncertainty.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was the most protective of his descendants, how could he allow Fang Yuan to slaughter them openly?

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was the second Immortal King of Heavenly Court, how could she watch as Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects get destroyed by Fang Yuan? She would become a great sinner of Heavenly Court!

Thus, both venerables did not dare to act excessively.

“Sigh, now it seems that we cannot kill Fang Yuan or Spectral Soul Demon Venerable this time.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sighed to herself: “In that case, what’s the point of wasting time here?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable wanted to retreat now, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was thinking of the same thing.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable still felt some grudge towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, he transmitted to her secretly: “I have to say, Star Constellation, if you really want to use Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to deal a blow to Fang Yuan, you should have stalled for more time so that he would waste more immortal essence on heaven form!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted coldly: “The fusion of the two heavens was short and intense, now is the most unstable moment, it is extremely hard to sustain heaven form. Fang Yuan is a refinement path venerable, with his ability, he should have been able to protect the killer move while resisting Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.”

“Who could have thought that he would resolutely sacrifice the white heavenly spirit and give up on this rank nine killer move!” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable showed an expression of pity.

She did not know the truth.

Fang Yuan had done his best at that time, the refinement of a rank nine Immortal Gu took too much of his attention, he had no choice but to give up on heaven form.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable sighed as well: “Star Constellation, don’t you understand? Even though Fang Yuan is a demon, he is extremely cautious. He seems to be taking huge risks at times, but he is extremely vigilant inside. Although many of his actions seemed rash and risky, he had done so because of Spring Autumn Cicada, he was greatly assured!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted coldly, she did not want to talk with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable secretly anymore, she spoke out loud: “In that case, forget about it. We’ll meet again, everyone!”

Saying so, she turned around to leave.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled at Fang Yuan and left just as quickly as her.

Fang Yuan purposely moved slightly slower than them, he was stunned before retreating, but Spectral Soul Demon Venerable pursued him.

Fang Yuan transmitted to the two venerables: “You two left so abruptly, you still want to talk about sincerity?! Spectral Soul Demon Venerable has lost his sanity, are you going to let him slaughter the innocent lives in the world? You two are so cruel, you are vicious people, how can you call yourselves Immortal Venerables?”

After Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable heard his words, they could not help but think of his ‘mistakes’ earlier which helped to heal Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable kept quiet and did not reply.

While Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled and said: “Fang Yuan, we underestimated you in Crazed Demon Cave which resulted in your success. But now, you have to work harder, there is no need to say such things in the future. How can simple words affect the battle between venerables? Powerless excuses will only sound like the expression of the weak.”

“Good, good, good.” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth and said these words forcefully before he went silent.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable bore deep hatred towards Fang Yuan, even though the two venerables left, he still chased Fang Yuan relentlessly.

After Fang Yuan toyed around with him for some time, he used the same trick to activate a battlefield killer move and conceal himself again.

After Spectral Soul Demon Venerable lost his target, he remained at the area and growled angrily, refusing to leave for a long time.

“Good, while Fang Yuan is trapped, I can use this chance to refine Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable returned to Heavenly Court and said in satisfaction as she saw this.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was still on the way back to Northern Plains, he thought: “In this contest of three venerables, Fang Yuan suffered the greatest losses. Not only did he lose the rank nine killer move heaven form and several Immortal Gu, he also expended some immortal essence. If he was not crafty enough to help Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he will be in a worse state.”

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable...”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s eyes shined with bright light.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had refined many Northern Plains wisdom path dao marks, the size surpassed the luck path dao marks that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable refined in Central Continent.

The reason was because Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s emphasis was on Fang Yuan’s Eastern Sea, although he refined some Central Continent luck path dao marks, the total quantity was only half of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was not assured, after returning to Longevity Heaven, he used luck path investigative methods.

With some buzzing sound, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable first checked Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s luck, it had gotten slightly stronger.

He looked at Fang Yuan’s luck, it was still the same broken furnace as earlier.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable then inspected his own luck and frowned lightly.

“Even though my luck grew stronger, the external threat has grown significantly. What is going on? Where is this threat coming from?”

There were too few things that could threaten a venerable.

“Fang Yuan? No way.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shook his head.

“The other venerables? Like the possible revival of Reckless Savage Demon Venerable or others?”

“The most likely ones are from Heavenly Court! Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gained a lot this time, while Heavenly Court’s two other Immortal Venerables have yet to revive!”

“It seems that my greatest enemy is still Heavenly Court. In comparison, although Fang Yuan is a venerable, his foundation is too thin. In the contest of venerables, one step behind will cause him to lag by many steps later. In the future... if we maintain our advantage, we can just guard against his possible retaliation.”

Currently, in terms of venerable battle strength, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was the least threatening.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was the strongest, especially in Longevity Heaven, using his previous life’s dao marks, he could forcefully inspect the luck of the other venerables. This was something that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not do.

But in the outside world, without Longevity Heaven’s luck path dao marks, even if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used similar methods, he could not reach such an effect.

“Maybe I can try to attack Heavenly Court?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable suddenly had such a thought.

Once Star Constellation Immortal Venerable refines Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks, she would receive a greater amplification than Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!

This was because not only had Star Constellation Immortal Venerable contributed her own immortal aperture into it, all of the previous generation wisdom path Gu Immortals had also done the same, becoming part of Heavenly Court’s foundation.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable soon shook his head, rejecting this idea.

Firstly, he did not have heaven form, the luck path method he used to invade Heavenly Court earlier had been dismantled, he could not get in easily anymore.

Secondly, fighting against Heavenly Court’s Star Constellation Immortal Venerable now would expend his immortal essence, it would allow Fang Yuan to catch up.

“In the contest of three venerables, neither can make a move easily. We need more situations like today’s to truly claim victory.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable sighed, he did not stay in Longevity Heaven for long, he went back to Northern Plains to refine the luck path dao marks.

Fang Yuan was still ‘trapped’ in the battlefield killer move, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had not left yet.

But Fang Yuan was not anxious.

“I’ll show weakness for a while longer to relax the two venerables’ guard.”

“But undoubtedly, this obscured heavenly secret killer move is so useful!” This was not the first time Fang Yuan praised this move.

Right now, obscured heavenly secret’s temporary heaven path dao marks were extremely dense, they were like a huge fishing net that wrapped around his entire body.

Within the sovereign immortal aperture, after the first blooming of Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, Fang Yuan gained ninety-nine yellow apricot immortal essence beads!

A flash of light sparked in Fang Yuan’s eyes as yellow apricot immortal essence was rapidly expended, soon, he activated a heaven path method.

Using this heaven path killer move, he started to unseal the truthful floating ice that he obtained from Crazed Demon Cave.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2237: Heaven Path Master

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

The blue-white truthful floating ice was shrinking inch by inch.

In the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Fang Yuan obtained several pieces of truthful floating ice, among them, one was quite large.

As yellow apricot immortal essence got rapidly expended, his heaven path dao marks also grew in numbers rapidly!

Fang Yuan’s heaven path dao marks had reached two hundred and forty thousand already, after unsealing the truthful floating ice for six hours, his heaven path dao marks grew by sixty thousand. Ten thousand dao marks per hour, it was quite a good gain.

But this was not his own gain.

Fang Yuan’s rule path, wisdom path, transformation path, strength path, earth path, wood path, and others were rising.

“These paths correspond to Limitless Demon Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable... These venerables all went into the eighth layer of Crazed Demon Cave, they had their respective investments.”

“No, that’s not all.” After unsealing the truthful floating ice for sixteen hours, Fang Yuan found that his other paths’ attainment levels were rising too.

But the growth in the other paths was much smaller and almost unobservable. Only after a long time and with sufficient accumulation could there be any significant changes.

Among all the paths, the attainment level that rose the most was heaven path!

Fang Yuan’s foundation in heaven path was actually very weak.

He had only cultivated it for a short time after all. All of his foundation were obtained from predecessors, for example, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s human executing heaven’s work, or Limitless Demon Venerable’s unrestrained heavenly mark killer move.

Several days later in sovereign immortal aperture, his heaven path dao marks grew to a million and two hundred thousand. His heaven path attainment level went all the way from ordinary to master level!

Fang Yuan stopped for now.

He had expended over a hundred yellow apricot immortal essence beads.

If Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus had not bloomed once more during this period, Fang Yuan would not be able to keep up the expenditure.

“I need to save some immortal essence in case of a venerable battle.”

Fang Yuan carefully assessed his gains.

The heaven path master attainment level gave him a comprehensive growth!

Regarding his heaven path Gu recipes, killer moves, and the understanding of the Heavenly Dao, he had renewed insight and even deeper comprehension.

The most crucial thing was the conflict of dao marks!

His earlier intuition was not wrong, after becoming a heaven path master, he would be able to create a conflict dao mark method to completely solve the sovereign immortal aperture’s problem.

The sovereign immortal aperture had many different phenomena occurring, the origin was because of the non-conflicting dao marks, they had fused too easily.

Once conflict arose, sovereign immortal aperture would be elevated to a new level, it would regain peace.

Fang Yuan immediately used wisdom path methods to fully deduce the relevant killer move.

Several days passed.

Fang Yuan stored the battlefield killer move and left the immemorial two heavens.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable stayed for a long time but eventually gave up. Now, he was rampaging in the immemorial two heavens while eating soul beast armies and also fighting against the sun.

Fang Yuan had no heaven form killer move left, he could not sense Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who was far away.

But Fang Yuan got back to Eastern Sea successfully.

He landed deep in Eastern Sea and started to refine the natural refinement path dao marks of Eastern Sea.

At once, profound light surged as rank nine aura spread like a tornado to the surroundings, the countless lifeforms nearby fled in fear.

Song clan’s Gu Immortals were the first ones alerted, after seeing this, they understood: Great Love Immortal Venerable was refining the natural refinement path dao marks.

Song clan’s first supreme elder quickly gathered the Gu Immortals to discuss the matter, they wanted to meet Fang Yuan and offer him a gift.

After all, Fang Yuan was currently in Song clan’s territory.

However, they were soon informed by Wu Shuai that the members of the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance were not allowed to disturb Great Love Immortal Venerable now.

Song clan’s members signed in relief but they also felt disappointed.

While Fang Yuan refined the natural dao marks, he also continued deducing his heaven path killer moves.

Not long after, he gained some results.

But Fang Yuan was not satisfied yet.

This newly deduced heaven path killer move was not much different from Paradise Earth’s heavenly summary earthly norm.

Heavenly summary earthly norm was able to arrange heaven path dao marks to allow the target to recover to their normal condition, it was the counter to battlefield killer moves.

Fang Yuan’s deductions allowed heavenly summary earthly norm to go one step further.

When used in the sovereign immortal aperture, it could allow the environment of the immortal aperture to change into the environment of the five regions and two heavens.

The natural dao marks of the five regions and two heavens were definitely conflicting. Thus, after converting them, the sovereign immortal aperture’s dao marks would also conflict.

“If I use this killer move hundreds or thousands of times, my sovereign immortal aperture will become like the five regions and two heavens, it will no longer have any strange phenomena.”

“But in that case, I will lose my advantage of non-conflicting dao marks, the losses will be too severe and I cannot cultivate all paths again.”

That was a cost Fang Yuan could not accept.

Looking at the sovereign immortal aperture’s advantage and its abnormal phenomena, the former was naturally more important.

“Can’t the conflict appear and disappear according to my will? Segregating the locations of conflicting dao marks like the time path zones?”

Fang Yuan sighed internally.

He had no idea on how to start realizing this concept.

Maybe when his heaven path attainment level reaches great grandmaster or higher, he might be able to achieve this?

This time, Fang Yuan did not have any intuition regarding this, he could not be certain.

“Speaking of which, sovereign immortal fetus Gu is a human path rank nine Immortal Gu. To resolve my current problem, maybe I should target human path instead?” Fang Yuan had a flash of inspiration, he saw a new direction to move towards.

He had found the solution in terms of heaven path, but the price to pay was something that Fang Yuan could not accept.

Would human path work?

Back then, to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable sacrificed the ten extreme physiques.

Speaking of human path research results, Fang Yuan thought of his clone who was trapped in Divine Emperor City.

After Shen Shang broke out of Divine Emperor City, he only brought back news of the clone who was still lurking inside Divine Emperor City.

“In the current world, Shen Shang is definitely one of the top human path experts, if I want to get his human path research results, what sort of price should I pay?”

Heavenly Court.

“Oh? Fang Yuan left the two heavens and went back to Eastern Sea, he has started refining natural dao marks.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable soon heard of Fang Yuan’s actions.

“Even though he has the least immortal essence, he became venerable through refinement path. In terms of refining dao marks, it should be his expertise.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was very concerned with Fang Yuan’s speed of refining dao marks.

If Fang Yuan’s efficiency was too high, she would join up with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to deal with Fang Yuan together.

Otherwise, if he surpassed them in this aspect, it would be a huge problem for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not want to think about Spectral Soul Demon Venerable now.

The contest of three venerables had reached a new stage.

Whichever venerable refined the most natural dao marks would have the greatest advantage.

“When refining the dao marks, I can multitask by modifying killer moves and changing my combat system. This will grant me an advantage in the future fight between the venerables.”

“Star Eyes, Star Thought, Permanence...”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable stared at these three Immortal Gu in her immortal aperture as her gaze became focused.

After obtaining them from Fang Yuan, she had already inspected them a hundred times but found no problems.

Yet, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was still a little suspicious.

She was not a refinement path venerable after all, although she had some achievements in refinement path, she could not compare to Fang Yuan at all, this was undeniable.

It was like asking Fang Yuan to compare with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable in wisdom path, they were not on the same level.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had spent a hundred years of time to refine rank nine wisdom Gu in her previous life.

“Even if I find no issues with them, this does not mean that Fang Yuan did not tamper with them. But this possibility is quite small... I also have to use these Immortal Gu no matter what.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable decided to take a risk.

She cultivated wisdom path primarily with star path secondarily, her combat system revolved around these two paths. But currently, her main method, the stardust killer move, was countered by Fang Yuan.

If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable wanted to gain an advantage in their future fight, she would need to modify it greatly.

In her modification plan, star thought Gu, star eyes Gu, and permanence Gu had a huge role to play. Otherwise, why would Star Constellation Immortal Venerable request for Fang Yuan to make them?

Longevity Heaven.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable retracted his gaze from Eastern Sea.

“Now, I need to pay attention to Fang Yuan’s refinement progress.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable reminded himself while checking his own immortal essence reserves.

He only had over five hundred yellow apricot immortal essence beads left.

The refinement of natural dao marks expended a lot of immortal essence.

Longevity Heaven could not produce immortal essence, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was relying on his own rank nine immortal aperture, the production speed was similar to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Be it Longevity Heaven or Heavenly Court, the revived two venerables were on the same level as Fang Yuan, they had not gone through the first chaotic disaster.

“Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture has immense foundation far surpassing me and Star Constellation. Thus, using the same amount of time, he can produce more immortal essence than us.”

“Also, he has a large number of blood path Immortal Gu!”

Thinking of this, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s expression turned a little dark.

He cultivated luck path mainly with blood path on the side, he naturally needed a lot of blood path Immortal Gu.

But Fang Yuan had refined many of them already, although they were kept at rank six, Immortal Gu were unique.

This ruined many of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s wonderful plans.

Earlier, when guarding heaven form, Fang Yuan negotiated with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he used these blood path Immortal Gu as the bargaining chip to haggle with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable managed to get three Immortal Gu from Fang Yuan, but Giant Sun Immortal Venerable got none.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was brooding over this.

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable knows that Fang Yuan has the sovereign immortal aperture, as long as the latter’s refinement speed is fast, I will contact her.”

“It is unlikely that she will reject my offer to work together!”

“By then, I will work with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to fight against Fang Yuan again. While expending his immortal essence, I can also extort those blood path Immortal Gu from him.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made various plans.

He did not know that Fang Yuan was in possession of Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, thus, he was more wary of Heavenly Court now.

But now, there was no opportunity for him to attack Heavenly Court or Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Fang Yuan’s possession of those blood path Immortal Gu also greatly hindered his own blood path cultivation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2238: Sunken Fish, Song Yi Shi

With the fusion of both heavens, the surface of the sea became light and dark at alternate times.

The sun and moon appeared together, all living beings were sent into chaos, in addition to the reign of three venerables, this was an unprecedented situation.

As tides ebbed and flowed, winds blew gently as Fang Yuan sat on a cloud, he slowly opened his eyes.

He had already spent some time refining Eastern Sea’s refinement path dao marks, he had some insight now.

Currently, he had already refined over half of Song clan’s territory in terms of refinement path dao marks, the range had spread to poetic emotion sea area in the northwest, and also Ascending Heaven Plain in the southeast.

All the refinement path dao marks in this area belonged to Fang Yuan.

Currently, even without shutting his eyes, Fang Yuan could sense many things related to refinement path.

He had an extremely clear understanding of the quantity and distribution of refinement path dao marks in this area.

All sorts of refinement path Gu materials deep under the sea, the fish and shrimps that contained refinement path dao marks, even the location of aquatic plants and others could be sensed by him.

Currently, Fang Yuan had many thoughts in his mind, he needed to test them.

He willed and stopped the refinement of dao marks, instead, he used an investigative killer move.

At the next moment, his gaze pierced through the sea and went thousands of li deep, seeing a huge fish.

This fish was as large as a building with five to six storeys of height. The fish had a sharp front and back, with a thick middle section, it was like a shuttle. The scales were grey-black and did not shine, they had a rough texture that felt like gravel.

This was a sunken fish, it contained rule path and refinement path dao marks.

The sunken fish was at least an ancient desolate beast, there were also immemorial desolate beasts among them.

Fang Yuan was looking at an immemorial desolate beast sunken fish.

The sunken fish had a special trait, every few years, it would move its tail and come to the surface to breathe fresh air, that would cause it to be swept by the currents. And because it was heavy, it would continuously sink to the bottom while the currents moved it away.

Whenever it moved its tail and exerted force to reach the surface, the scales of the sunken fish would fall off its body in the process, after it breathed enough fresh air, scales would grow on it again and it would become motionless, floating with the currents while sinking downwards.

These scales that fell off its body seemed heavy but they were light and delicate, most would float to the surface of the sea. After a long time, these scales would be swept ashore, Gu Masters would pick them up and treat them as treasure.

The sunken fish scales were crucial Gu materials to refine beauty Gu, they had high value.

On this point, they were like the feathers of the falling goose.

“But to refine beauty Immortal Gu, I will need to use both immortal materials, sunken fish scales and falling goose feathers.” While looking at this sunken fish, Fang Yuan’s lips curled into a faint smile.

He had the same sensation as earlier when he refined dao marks.

“If I refine the refinement path dao marks in the sunken fish’s body, what would happen?”

Fang Yuan had refined the dao marks of the natural world earlier, it did not include the dao marks of lifeforms like the sunken fish.

Fang Yuan tried it out immediately, he chose a refinement path killer move and modified it a little to allow him to forcefully refine this sunken fish from a far distance!

The forceful refinement had just started when the lazy sunken fish jolted like it was shocked by lightning, it moved its tail quickly and tried to swim far away.

It erupted with speed that did not match its huge size, a huge current was formed in the sea because of the force generated.

“Where are you going?”

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, he activated another method.

The sunken fish immediately stopped moving while Fang Yuan forcefully refined all of its refinement path dao marks.

After the refinement, Fang Yuan’s sensation of the sunken fish became several times clearer!

Fang Yuan let go of the restraint as the sunken fish regained freedom, but its emotions were very negative, there were fear, anger, numbness, sadness, and others, it was as if the fish was undergoing a turmoil and could not continue living its life.

“What happened?”

Fang Yuan slowly observed the sunken fish, he saw that it had stopped eating food.

The food of the sunken fish was not seaweed or fish, it was underwater sea soil.

Every few years, the scales on the fish would turn into ordinary Gu materials or fall off on their own, they could not ensure its safety. Thus, it would sink to the bottom and eat a large amount of soil.

This sunken fish that Fang Yuan tortured had lost most of its scales. Normally speaking, it should sink to the bottom of the sea and eat soil now.

“Did it lose the will to live after I brutally did that?” Fang Yuan shook his head, he quickly used a wisdom path method.

After some deductions, he understood the reason.

The sunken fish ate sea soil to fill its stomach, but also to produce more scales.

The source that produced its scales were the refinement path dao marks on its body.

Because of these refinement path dao marks, it could digest the sea soil and draw nutrients from them, converting them into thick immortal material scales.

But now, all of its refinement path dao marks were refined by Fang Yuan, it lost this ability.

Thus, even though it lacked scales, it did not attempt to eat sea soil.

In order to test his findings, Fang Yuan used a food path killer move on this immemorial sunken fish.

Soon, the sunken fish got hungry.

This time, it chose to eat the sea soil.

But good times did not last, soil soon accumulated in its stomach but could not be digested quickly. If Fang Yuan did not dispel the food path killer move in time, the immemorial sunken fish would have died from stuffing itself with sea soil without being able to digest it.

Fang Yuan used just a few methods to completely cripple an immemorial desolate beast.

“What if I return the dao marks to it?” Fang Yuan started to deduce again, he soon made a refinement path killer move that had an accompanying wisdom path killer move.

Fang Yuan first used the wisdom path killer move to raise the mood of the sunken fish and started to guide it.

Next, he used a refinement path method to teach the sunken fish to refine all of its refinement path dao marks.

Not long after, the sunken fish regained its refinement path dao marks, light returned to its eyes as its life became less bleak, the negative emotions also left it.

It quickly refined the sea soil in its body and turned them into immortal material fish scales.

Fang Yuan nodded, this result was in line with his guess.

Next, he refined the refinement path dao marks of the immemorial sunken fish again.

The sunken fish: “...”

It fell into a state of intense and complex emotions like numbness, fear, anger, and shock.

Fang Yuan used brute force to chase it away to the bottom of the sea, which had fewer refinement path dao marks that Fang Yuan had already refined.

As he expected, his sensation of this immemorial sunken fish became much weaker.

But when Fang Yuan placed this immemorial sunken fish to a place with more refinement path dao marks, his connection to the sunken fish became much clearer and stable.

Fang Yuan waved his hand, seawater erupted, the refinement path dao marks within one li were all destroyed by him.

In his sensation, this place became somewhat like a black hole.

After Fang Yuan placed the immemorial sunken fish into this black hole, he could not sense the sunken fish at all.

“This proves that my refinement path sensation is extended through the dao marks. This is like how a spider uses its webs.”

Fang Yuan’s refinement path sensation was limited to the areas where he had refined dao marks.

These last days, he stayed in the deepest part of Eastern Sea and built his own spider web. If he or his prey left the range of the web, then he would not be able to sense anything.

Fang Yuan felt quite satisfied about this discovery.

Because Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had also refined a portion of Eastern Sea’s luck path dao marks.

As long as Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not personally interact with this area of luck path dao marks, he would not have any luck path sensation, he would not be able to use the dao marks to do anything.

“Of course, I cannot rule out the possibility that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable has immortal killer moves that can allow him to bypass distance and make use of the luck path dao marks he refined in Eastern Sea.” Fang Yuan reminded himself.

After confirming many guesses, Fang Yuan had a lot of gains.

He did the same thing again and returned the immemorial sunken fish’s dao marks to it.

After that, he stopped torturing the poor fish and let it swim away in fear and panic.

Fang Yuan fell into deep thought.

“Even though refinement path dao marks are present all over the five regions and two heavens, they are not evenly distributed, some areas have more dao marks while others have fewer.”

“For me, the more abundant the refinement path dao marks, the better.”

“In that case, after I refine these dao marks, my refinement path sensation will get stronger. When fighting or refining Gu in such an environment, the amplification will be huge.”

“Huh? What was this situation?”

Fang Yuan’s expression changed slightly, he could sense an intense refinement path fluctuation from far away.

“Poetic emotion sea area.”

Fang Yuan immediately used his investigative method and saw through the truth, he quickly found the source of the refinement path fluctuation.

It was Song Yi Shi.

Poetic emotion sea area was the territory of Song Yi Shi, she had built a palace in the underwater volcano.

Currently, she was cultivating in her palace, her clothes were all taken off, exposing her snow-white flesh and slender figure.

She was activating a water path killer move, endless steam was produced.

The steam covered her entire body, making her beautiful face even more alluring than normal.

Fang Yuan understood at once: “So that’s it.”

He immediately deciphered that Song Yi Shi was practicing her water path defensive killer move.

Eastern Sea’s Song clan specialized in water path, they had a signature water path inheritance called flowing water. This inheritance had defensive killer moves like noncorroding flowing water, emotionless flowing water, flowering flowing water and others, they guarded against poison path, wisdom path, and wood path respectively. There were also killer moves like flowing water carriage for movement, thin flowing water that reduced immortal essence expenditure, flowing water wine party that mimicked food path effect, or moving cloud flowing water that helped with killer move activation.

“Song Yi Shi is currently using noncorroding flowing water. This is a passive defensive method, the essence is to carve water path defensive killer move on the body. Once a poison path attack lands, it will activate on its own.”

“This is a form of Gu refinement in essence, except that the target is the Gu Immortal’s physical body.”

“No wonder I can sense it.”

Fang Yuan realized and took a close look.

He had incredible attainment levels, he was a supreme grandmaster in refinement path and a great grandmaster in water path.

After looking for a while, he deciphered all of the profundities of noncorroding flowing water.

Fang Yuan gained some interest.

It was a great opportunity, he had new ideas to test out.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2239: Same Origin

Song Yi Shi cultivated for six hours before stopping her killer move.

She let out a breath of air and opened her eyes, she saw that a lump of steam that was vague and illusory flowed from her arms to her legs, finally stopping at her chest.

Song Yi Shi looked at the steam and felt joyful internally: “At this rate, I can complete my cultivation of this noncorroding flowing water killer move in half a month.”

“Strange, why did this cultivation session feel more effective than before? Is it just me?”

Song Yi Shi shook her head slightly.

She inspected her immortal essence.

There was little immortal essence left, she also lacked immortal essence stones now.

“Sigh, Heavenly Court is the source of immortal essence stones, once they stopped distributing those, the entire market’s immortal essence stones fell greatly in number. I have grandfather’s help in secret, but all other Gu Immortals should be having a tougher time!”

Song Yi Shi sighed to herself.

If she had enough immortal essence stones, she would use them to replenish her immortal essence now to continue cultivating the noncorroding flowing water killer move.

But now, she had to slow down and let her immortal essence produce immortal essence naturally. After it accumulates to a degree, she could resume her cultivation.

“After I complete the noncorroding flowing water killer move, I will move on to emotionless flowing water. My clan’s flowing water inheritance is our signature inheritance, it is renowned in Eastern Sea, being quite exceptional even in the five regions. Passive defensive killer moves are rare to begin with, normally speaking, Gu Immortals can only cultivate one of them, they cannot stack many passive defensive killer moves.”

“But my clan’s flowing water inheritance has a unique concept, it is ingenious. By using the same core, we can stack passive defensive killer moves.”

Thinking of this, Song Yi Shi felt a little proud of her background.

But soon, such emotions vanished.

“Sigh, I am still far from success.”

“After completing emotionless flowing water, I will undergo tribulation and reach rank seven.”

“With the contest of three venerables and the fusion of two heavens, the five regions chaotic war may erupt at any time!”

Song Yi Shi was originally the prized jewel of her clan, she was doted on by her grandfather and received the support of the clan, having no lack of resources. Her incredible appearance also made her one of the six beauties of Eastern Sea.

But her carefree life could no longer return.

The situation was changing too rapidly, Song Yi Shi felt no sense of assurance at all. Currently, all of Eastern Sea’s righteous path super forces had joined Fang Yuan’s side, this was something unimaginable in the past!

The external pressure forced Song Yi Shi, this prized jewel, to have an intense urge to cultivate.

Especially when Song clan’s first supreme elder, Song Qi Yuan, who was also her grandfather, gave Song Yi Shi some exciting news.

In the letter, Song Qi Yuan nagged endlessly before mentioning the orders of the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, they were going to pick a number of merfolk Gu Immortals from the Merman Imperial Court to live in sovereign immortal aperture.

Even though Fang Yuan did not specify the ratio of male to female he wanted, the Merman Imperial Court purposely chose some female immortals with the most beautiful appearances and elegant demeanors.

In addition, Fang Yuan had never been known to have any love interests, he had always faced great external pressure all the way until he became a venerable, now that he could rival Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven, his pressure fell immensely.

Along this train of thought, Song Qi Yuan mentioned Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Back then, after Giant Sun Immortal Venerable became venerable, he took in all the beauties of the world and created five harem palaces.

Afterwards, he mentioned the other venerables.

All the ten venerables had partners in their lives, only the number was different.

Even the unmarried Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had once been in love, it involved a certain variant human Gu Immortal...

Song Qi Yuan vaguely suggested an idea in order to probe the intention of his beloved granddaughter.

“If Great Love Immortal Venerable wants to choose a wife or concubine, will Song clan offer me to him?!” Initially, Song Yi Shi was very angry.

But a few days later, she calmed down and thought about it rationally: “Grandfather will not force me, he is only raising this possibility and wants to see if I am willing to do so.”

“However, if Great Love Immortal Venerable orders this personally like Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and wants to collect beauties, how can I escape? How can Song clan protect me?”

Song Yi Shi, who had always been proud as a crane, felt bitter and helpless internally after she realized this.

“If such a situation occurs, I cannot burden this clan which nurtured and raised me. Grandfather loves me so deeply, he funded me and gave me water clothing Immortal Gu secretly, if not for this Immortal Gu, how could I have modified the killer move and successfully cultivated the flowing water inheritance? How can I repay him? How can I let my unwillingness lead to Song clan’s extermination?”

“How can I be this selfish?” Song Yi Shi thought of this and felt a deep sense of guilt internally.

Along this thought, she thought of the deeper aspect.

“If Great Love Immortal Venerable has such intentions, for the sake of the clan, I need to offer myself to him. Why should I wait until then? Why can’t I go further and take the initiative instead? If I can succeed, by just sacrificing myself, I will ensure the prosperity of Song clan for countless years!”

“Sigh, I’ll stop thinking about this...”

Fang Yuan did not know that just one order from him led to such distorted thoughts of his subordinates.

In fact, Fang Yuan did not know that Song Yi Shi was having complex emotions now, he was looking at his recent gains.

When Song Yi Shi cultivated, Fang Yuan had secretly used methods through the refinement path dao marks in poetic emotion sea area to help her out.

Fang Yuan gave it a simple try, the effort was as mild as breathing, but Song Yi Shi’s cultivation gains rose by at least ten percent.

“If I use my full effort, Song Yi Shi’s cultivation efficiency will rise by tens of times!”

“She is undergoing water path cultivation, because it is a passive defensive method, it has something to do with refinement path. If this were a genuine Gu refinement attempt, my influence would be even greater.”

“This means that I can use refinement path to help others refine Gu. At the same time, I can also ruin their attempts. Or at least, without my permission, nobody can refine an Immortal Gu in my refinement path dao mark domain!”

This was terrifying.

The power of a venerable was displayed at its fullest.

Fang Yuan was overjoyed but he also had a heavy mood.

If his refinement path could have such an influence, it meant that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would have the same influence in luck path and wisdom path.

“If I refine all the refinement path dao marks in the five regions and two heavens, while invigilating the world at all times, if any Gu Immortal tries to refine Immortal Gu, I will be able to ruin the attempt. In that case, can I make it such that only my faction can refine Immortal Gu?”

Fang Yuan thought of this problem.

But soon, he shook his head.

If Gu Immortals refined Gu in their own immortal apertures, Fang Yuan could not influence them.

Because immortal apertures were isolated worlds of their own.

But if a Gu Immortal refined Gu outside, Fang Yuan would be able to sense and influence it.

Putting aside the issue of Song Yi Shi, Fang Yuan placed his attention on a certain coral group deep in the sea.

These corals contained abundant refinement path Gu materials, they were a natural refinement path resource point of heaven and earth, they had very high value but had not been discovered by anyone.

Fang Yuan pondered and searched meticulously.

He used time path killer moves to observe the formation of this coral group.

Why did such a refinement path resource point form?

Thousands of years ago, there was nothing here.

But a sunken fish died here.

The refinement path and rule path dao marks of the sunken fish spread out and influenced the surroundings.

After a few hundred years, the sunken fish’s corpse decomposed entirely, while the environment also stabilized.

Initially, all sorts of fish and shrimps came here in groups. Afterwards, middle sized and large sized beasts also moved here.

The sea currents were turbulent, causing seeds and corals to be swept over.

After thousands of years of development and natural selection, due to lucky opportunities and evolution, this resource point was created now.

Fang Yuan’s focus was on the refinement path dao marks of the coral group.

For thousands of years, the refinement path dao marks here had been increasing and decreasing, being extremely unstable. Eventually, the group grew to this size.

“As long as I replicate the development of this refinement path resource point, with enough time, I can create such a refinement path resource point anywhere in the sovereign immortal aperture!”

Of course, there was an easier method, which was to directly create a refinement path formation and consume immortal materials to create an environment that was similar to this coral resource point.

But this method needed the formation to have some Immortal Gu, it also expended immortal essence.

Meanwhile, creating a refinement path resource point through a naturally developed dao mark distribution would not expend immortal essence or require Immortal Gu.

In truth, Fang Yuan had always been using the latter method for his development of the sovereign immortal aperture, by setting up immortal formations everywhere, he instantly created resource points. For example, the earth vein nodes and water vein nodes were all formations that he created.

These formations not only used Immortal Gu, there were also formations that used immortal resources as the core.

This was a quick method that needed very little time, but the cost was very high.

While natural development had low costs (no Immortal Gu was needed, while immortal materials were slowly accumulated naturally), but the time needed was too long.

“No matter which method it is, they have the same origin, they are all just killer moves.”

Immortal formations were killer moves, while naturally derived dao mark distribution was also a type of passive killer move. It was just that this killer move was not defensive but was used to develop an environment.

“Wait.” Fang Yuan thought of the killer moves divine concealment, ghostly concealment, and spaceless tunnel.

Divine concealment and ghostly concealment both created thick and dense clothing of dao marks on the soul, they were like tightly weaved silk clothing. They did not expend immortal essence and were passive defensive killer moves.

Additionally, spaceless tunnel was created by Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable as well, it was used in various places of the five regions and two heavens, shortening travel distance. This killer move from three hundred thousand years ago was still active now, but with the fusion of two heavens, it should have already been mostly destroyed.

“The essence of these killer moves has no difference from the coral resource point.”

Fang Yuan thought of fortune rivalling heaven Immortal Gu.

This Immortal Gu was a consumable Gu that could give the Gu Immortal immense luck to rival the heavens after use, no longer consuming immortal essence anymore.

What was the difference in essence between it and the coral resource point?

Fang Yuan then thought of the incomplete Refinement Sea.

This was the refinement path secluded domain of heaven and earth that Lang Ya land spirit wanted to create with all his effort!

“What is a secluded domain of heaven and earth? It is merely an agglomeration of dao marks of a specific path to form a certain special effect. Dang Hun Mountain produces guts Gu, while Qian Kun Crystal Wall can reflect everything that happens in this world.”

“Secluded domains of heaven and earth are the extreme form of resource points, they are also the other aspect of Gu worms and killer moves.”

“Thus, everything has the same point of origin?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2240: Refinement Main, Heaven Specialty

“Knowledge obtained from theory always feels shallow, one needs practice to understand it completely.” Fang Yuan muttered to himself.

Understanding that all things had the same point of origin was one matter, putting it into practice was another.

Fang Yuan completely comprehended the essence of killer moves like divine concealment and ghostly concealment, but he had done so through refinement path. Because of the limitation of theft path attainment level, he could not modify ghostly concealment yet.

He had the ability to create refinement path killer moves similar to divine concealment and ghostly concealment, although it would be a difficult process and the price to pay would be great.

During this period where the three venerables contested, if Fang Yuan invested a lot of his time and energy into creating a top tier refinement path killer move, it would be too risky.

The timing and opportunity did not allow Fang Yuan to do so.

However, the refinement path resource points of the five regions and two heavens had a lot of value to him as references.

After Fang Yuan simplified them and took out the true core, he would be able to modify them into mature passive killer moves that could be used to develop the immortal aperture.

Basically, these passive killer moves were very rare among killer moves, they had great value.

The most common ones were defensive methods.

Song Yi Shi’s pride came from this reason.

Duke Long only had one of such a move too, it was called nine dragons protection.

As far as Fang Yuan knew, Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable created no more than five of such killer moves like divine concealment and ghostly concealment in his life.

The creation of a killer move starts with the use of multiple Gu worms by a predecessor to gain experience gradually. The Gu cultivation predecessors took reference to the innate abilities of the living beings in the five regions and two heavens to rapidly establish the foundation of killer moves.

Until today, the Gu cultivators had already hit the limit of this world.

For example, Duke Long created the dragonman race, Lang Ya land spirit created an artificial secluded domain, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable created soul beasts, he turned all sorts of soul path killer moves into dao marks that were carved onto soul beasts to grant them innate abilities.

All of these accomplishments showed that Gu cultivators had already rivaled the natural world, they were able to grasp the profundity of heaven and earth.

And Limitless Demon Venerable went one step further.

He made an arrangement in Crazed Demon Cave, breaking the world boundary to create a hole and even making brand new heaven path dao marks. He had surpassed the entire Gu cultivator world singlehandedly.

This was the first time Fang Yuan was refining the refinement path dao marks of the outside world.

With his supreme grandmaster attainment level and manual practice, Fang Yuan gained a lot of insight.

To conclude —

The five regions and two heavens had a vast number of refinement path dao marks, but they were not evenly distributed, some places were dense while others were sparse. These refinement path dao marks were very stable and hard to change, normally speaking, their growth was extremely slow and needed a lot of time to accumulate.

These refinement path dao marks could be seen as the basis of the entire world’s refinement path foundation.

On this foundation, a large number of beasts, plants, and lifeless Gu materials were produced and nurtured.

These beasts and plants were related to refinement path, they were refinement path resources.

Normally speaking, in places with dense refinement path dao marks, the relevant resources would also be more abundant and high quality. In places with sparse refinement path dao marks, there would be fewer refinement path resources and of lower quality.

The refinement path dao marks and resources had a deep influence on each other. For example, the coral group that Fang Yuan saw earlier was a refinement path resource point, the source was an immemorial sunken fish that died thousands of years ago, its refinement path dao marks scattered in the surroundings and a portion was left behind in that location.

The dao marks that Fang Yuan refined here were the refinement path foundation of the world.

Refinement path resources were not included in this.

The natural dao marks that Fang Yuan refined were like a huge spider web. As long as Fang Yuan was in range, he would be able to sense all refinement path activities within the web.

This was the so-called refinement path sensation.

Fang Yuan had a vague sensation of the refinement path resources, he could also sense the refinement path activities of Gu cultivators.

In places with dense refinement path dao marks, the sensation would be more intense, stable, and clearer. For example, he would be able to find small-scale ordinary refinement path Gu materials.

Conversely, if the refinement path dao marks were sparse, the refinement path sensation would be weaker. In those regions, Fang Yuan would only be able to sense refinement path immortal materials.

If there was a hole in the spider web, or if a Gu Immortal refined Gu in their immortal aperture, Fang Yuan would not sense anything.

Using the refinement path dao marks that he refined, Fang Yuan could influence everything in that range, he could interfere with the living beings as well as the natural environment.

For example, he could help Song Yi Shi cultivate, strengthen refinement path resource points like the coral group, or even create a top tier refinement path passive killer move (like spaceless tunnel) that could exist indefinitely.

Simply using refinement path dao marks to amplify his own strength was only the most basic use.

“From the angle of refinement path, in the entire Gu cultivation world, the five regions and two heavens are just a giant immortal material. This immortal material comprises everything, it has dao marks of all paths.”

“Even though I became a refinement path venerable, I can only refine a portion of this huge immortal material. This is true for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, and all other venerables.”

“Owning a portion of heaven and earth, this is what a Dao Lord entails!”

“The other venerables are only able to become the Lord of one Dao, but I am different.”

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body had non-conflicting dao marks, he cultivated all paths. The other venerables could do one main path and one specialty path at best, their main path would become their venerable path, while their specialty path would be used to fight and compete.

In theory, Fang Yuan could cultivate all the paths and become a venerable of all paths!

This was the intention of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable when he spent all his effort to refine sovereign immortal fetus Gu.

Fang Yuan had incomparable potential, the limit of his growth was unimaginable.

“The other venerables also know this, the only reason why they did not kill me is because I displayed incredible battle strength in Crazed Demon Cave, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable knew that the price to kill me was too great, they could not take the backlash.”

Fang Yuan did not continue to refine dao marks.

He decided to stop for now.

Even though Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus had bloomed again in the sovereign immortal aperture and gave him nearly a hundred immortal essence beads again.

Even though he had all sorts of refinement path methods to raise his refinement efficiency by many times, far surpassing the venerables.

This was obvious.

Refinement path most excelled in this aspect.

In terms of refinement path, he far surpassed the other two venerables, this was the advantage of refinement path to begin with.

“However, I cannot display my advantage now, it will overly agitate those venerables.” Fang Yuan thought to himself.

Once he used his advantage, the two venerables would move.

Although they felt that they had some advantage, if they saw that Fang Yuan’s dao mark refinement speed was so fast, they would not sit still, they would have to come and stop him.

Fang Yuan was not afraid of getting attacked by them.

After all, he had enough immortal essence reserves now, although the quantity was not high, the two venerables could not kill him in a short time, as they fought, Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus would gradually accumulate an advantage for Fang Yuan.

But there was no point in going this far!

Most importantly, it would cause Fang Yuan’s secret to be exposed, the existence of obscured heavenly secret, the loss was not worth the gain.

Blindly using one’s advantage was the biggest trap in life.

Fang Yuan knew deeply that assessing the situation was most important.

“Next, I need to refine dao marks with a slower speed, my efficiency should be around the same level as the two venerables, but I need to stop multiple times to pretend that I am out of immortal essence. Of course, I cannot be overly weak, otherwise, they will want to work together to get rid of me.”

Fang Yuan had a good grasp of this situation, he knew what to do.

He had abundant life experience after all.

Especially in the five hundred years of his previous life, all sorts of failure, pain, and losses became the valuable foundation that supported him.

“Keeping a low profile while profiting greatly! By the time I expose this secret, I am sure the two venerables will not be able to keep their cool.”

Fang Yuan activated Cooking Luck Pot to inspect his luck again.

His luck still resembled a furnace.

Fang Yuan had inspected this many times already, he had some guesses about it.

This was caused by his status as a refinement path venerable, his luck's appearance was stabilized and would not change for a period of time.

The furnace was still quite crude, it had cracks remaining.

But from the vast number of cracks, two or three of them had mended.

This was because the sovereign immortal aperture had already completed the first earth vein, the second one was on the way. It had also completed the first water vein.

These were all helping to stabilize his foundation.

And compared to the past, there was a huge change on the surface of the furnace, there was a lotus flower pattern.

The lotus flower pattern was clearly referring to rank nine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus. It showed how significant this Immortal Gu was to Fang Yuan!

The lotus flower pattern went one round around the outer layer of the furnace, it extended to the bottom and turned into several lotus roots.

These lotus roots went deep into the bottom of the furnace and burned together with the firewood that represented immortal essence.

Compared to the weak fire earlier, the furnace was fully lit now, the flames expanded by several times, showing great growth.

There was no lid on the furnace, the scene inside could be seen.

The immortal crane cloud that symbolized heaven form and the green lotus cloud that was Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus were both gone now.

Instead, there was a piece of blue-white ice, symbolizing the truthful floating ice. The blue-white ice was heated in the furnace, slowly melting and generating a beautiful halo.

At the top of the furnace, there was a large amount of reddish brown sand dust, floating like a cloud.

The reddish brown sand dust condensed into one lump and slowly went into the furnace.

It was easily melted and infused into the furnace, fixing the cracks and slowly making the furnace smoother from its crude state.

“This should be referencing my action of refining natural dao marks. If I go all out on this, the sand dust will pour down rapidly and block my opening of my furnace, it can even put out the fire at the bottom. Excessive progress is not good, this shows the terrible outcome of facing two venerables’ suppression at the same time.”

Fang Yuan had used luck inspection many times, he was able to reference the phenomena he saw to actual events that were happening more easily.

Even though rank eight Cooking Luck Pot was too low in rank and did not suit the current Fang Yuan, it still displayed the profundity of luck path, reminding Fang Yuan that the most important variables to him now were refining dao marks and also heaven path development!

“The refinement of dao marks can progress slowly, but I also need to unseal the truthful floating ice in secret. Right now, immortal essence is not my burden, it is my advantage instead. I need to use all my immortal essence and convert my resources into foundation and strength.”

Venerables all had one main and one specialty path.

Fang Yuan had planned from long ago to use refinement path as his main, and heaven path as his specialty.

Refinement path was his main cultivation, but refinement path itself was weak in the fighting aspect.

This was a publicly known fact.

In this situation, Fang Yuan needed another path to support his battle strength. This path should have few cultivators, for example, painting path. That would allow him to catch enemies off-guard and prevent them from having precaution against him.

Even though there were many paths in existence, Fang Yuan did not have many choices, looking at his situation, heaven path was the best choice!

There were almost no heaven path cultivators, the criteria was too hard to achieve.

Heaven path itself was very special and had extraordinary potential, its might was also unrivaled.

Refinement path as main, heaven path as specialty.

This was Fang Yuan’s current cultivation plan.

The Heaven Refining Demon Venerable title that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gave to Fang Yuan was truly appropriate.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2241: Too Beautiful

“We pay respects to Lord Alliance Leader.” A group of mermaid Gu Immortals showed a respectful attitude as they bowed before Fang Yuan’s feet.

Fang Yuan looked around and was a little surprised.

He found that all these merman Gu Immortals were female, they were either seductive, innocent, or cold. The two strongest ones had rank seven cultivation level, the other four were rank six.

“All female immortals...” Fang Yuan thought.

This was not good.

He let these mermen enter the sovereign immortal aperture in order to procreate and develop in numbers. Without male merman Gu Immortals and a total of six female immortals, they could not grow properly.

However, Fang Yuan recalled that in merman society, females had higher status than males. They would elect a saintess but not a saint.

In addition, the Merman Imperial Court sent these female immortals without any males as a form of reverence towards Fang Yuan as well.

“You are all members of the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, after entering the sovereign immortal aperture, we will be one big family. Remember the rules and abide by them, you will be informed of the details later.”

Saying this, Fang Yuan opened his immortal aperture’s entrance.

“We will obey alliance leader’s teachings!” The female immortals quickly responded before entering obediently.

At the next moment, their vision changed completely, they found that they were in the vast sky, below them was cloud soil and a city was far away, it resembled a huge sea snail that radiated with starlight specks.

“Did you raise your head earlier?”

“No, I’ve never been so close to Lord Alliance Leader, I lowered my head the entire time.”

“I mustered my courage and took a peek at him before entering the immortal aperture, oh goodness, Lord Alliance Leader is simply... too beautiful!”

“Lord Alliance Leader has venerable cultivation level, he also takes care of us variant humans, and most strikingly, he is so beautiful. I’ve never seen such a beautiful and gentle higher-up before.”

These two rank six mermaid Gu Immortals were quite close, they spoke with excitement and expressed their reverence and adoration towards Fang Yuan.

As for the other two rank six female immortals, they had solemn expressions and did not speak.

“Silence.” One of the two mermaid leaders said unhappily: “Is Lord Alliance Leader someone you can talk about so casually? We are inside the sovereign immortal aperture now!”

The female immortals lowered their heads and stopped speaking, but they communicated with their expressions, unable to conceal their excitement.

The other leader, Lian Ke Xin, stretched out her hand and grasped Yu Zi’s hand, consoling her.

Lian Ke Xin, Yu Zi, and Xie Ning Si were the three leaders of the Merman Imperial Court, this time, when Fang Yuan decided to move some of them into the sovereign immortal aperture, how could the Merman Imperial Court refuse?

After receiving the orders, the Merman Imperial Court held an emergency meeting for a day and night.

Eventually, the Merman Imperial Court chose two of their leaders and four mermaid immortals with outstanding beauty to offer to Fang Yuan. To do this, they broke up two couples, one of which was already close to getting married.

The Merman Imperial Court did not have any rank eights, their top battle strengths were the three leading first supreme elders with rank seven battle strength, by sending two away at the same time, it showed how resolute they were.

After that, they omitted the males and only chose the most beautiful female immortals, they were trying to get closer to Fang Yuan to curry his favor.

This was not strange.

Humanity was the undisputed overlord of the world, the Merman Imperial Court had already gotten used to such a subservient lifestyle after many years.

Back then, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable took action to protect the Merman Imperial Court. After his death, his influence dwindled and the Merman Imperial Court started to have alliance marriages with Eastern Sea’s righteous path forces, they also liked to take in lone immortals of Eastern Sea through marriage.

The Merman Imperial Court was used to such treatment.

Because of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, they were accepted by Eastern Sea’s human forces. Now that Fang Yuan was venerable and took control of Eastern Sea, the Merman Imperial Court was unlike other human forces, they could not join Giant Sun Immortal Venerable or Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, they could only choose Great Love Immortal Venerable, who was closer to variant humans.

Thus, even though the two female immortals bore grudges after getting separated from their partners, for the sake of their people, they still chose to sacrifice their own happiness!

But earlier, when they met with Fang Yuan, they suffered a huge blow.

The mermaid immortals knew about Fang Yuan’s appearance, be it Heavenly Court or other forces, they had shown videos of him. The female immortals knew about Fang Yuan’s beautiful appearance, but after meeting it, they were still shocked by his peerless features!

This was not just external beauty, there was also the fact that he contained abundant dao marks, each of his actions had the aura of the Great Dao, he emitted extraordinary charm from his entire body, his incomparable capacity and aura subdued everyone that he met.

Even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, despite having many dao marks, would not be as charming to merfolk.

Because mermen were born with water path dao marks, while Fang Yuan had over two million of them, this brought them closer naturally.

Yu Zi was one of the leaders this time, she was the one who most advocated to contribute everything and use beauty to get closer to Fang Yuan.

However, after seeing Fang Yuan, she was deeply shocked, she felt that she was mud when compared to the pure cloud-like Fang Yuan, she felt ashamed of herself.

Lian Ke Xin and Yu Zi were very close, along with her personal experiences, she understood why Yu Zi was feeling this way.

She grabbed Yu Zi’s hand and secretly transmitted: “No matter how beautiful Lord Fang Yuan is, he is still a man. As long as this fact remains, we have hope. Think of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.”

Yu Zi nodded and slowly regained her calm.

At this time, a hairy man Gu Immortal flew over.

“I am Twelfth Hair, I have come to receive you.” Twelfth Hair spoke.

Yu Zi quickly smiled, after a short conversation with Twelfth Hair, she cast a glance at Tang Qiong.

Tang Qiong was a supreme elder of the Merman Imperial Court, she had yellow scales and was gentle and beautiful, her smile showed dimples that amplified her cuteness. Even though her status was lower than Yu Zi, Lian Ke Xin, and Xie Ning Si, she was only below these three. She was given great authority by the three of them, she spent her time on managing the political affairs, she had outstanding interpersonal skills.

After getting Yu Zi’s approval, Tang Qiong went up and handed Twelfth Hair a seashell.

Twelfth Hair saw that this shell was a rare rank seven refinement path immortal material, he took it with a smile and showed a warmer attitude: “Everyone, please come with me. Your first stop will be Star Collection City, this is the central control area of the sovereign immortal aperture.”

Star Collection City was not on a huge piece of cloud soil, after flying for some time, they quickly entered it.

Under Twelfth Hair’s guide, the mermaid Gu Immortals went into the main hall and greeted the person in charge.

The Gu Immortal in charge of this main hall was a woman who cultivated sound path, her rank eight aura spread throughout the hall.

She was wearing a pink dress, her eye sockets were deeper than normal, her nose had a tall bridge, she also had a pair of seductive and moving eyes, it was Fairy Miao Yin.

The mermaids quickly greeted her.

Fairy Miao Yin sat at the top seat and looked down at these Gu Immortals, she spoke with a solemn expression: “You have just arrived here, you need to learn about the rules of our sovereign immortal aperture and obey them forever. The sovereign immortal aperture does not raise useless people, no matter who you are, you need to work hard to gain anything. The contribution board has a clear list of tasks that you can do, the worst thing you can do is slack off. Do you understand?”

“Yes, we will remember Lady Miao Yin’s teachings.” The mermaids responded.

Fairy Miao Yin nodded before casting her gaze at Twelfth Hair: “Since you took the mission to lead the mermaid Gu Immortals, you will bring them around and get familiar with Star Collection City’s arrangements.”

Saying this, Fairy Miao Yin waved her hand, dozens of Gu worms flew out.

Twelfth Hair acknowledged and took these Gu worms, he said to the female immortals: “Follow me.”

The mermaid immortals took their leave and followed Twelfth Hair, they all let out a sigh of relief.

“This Fairy Miao Yin was originally a rank seven Gu Immortal in Southern Border, but after following Great Love Immortal Venerable, she became a rank eight.”

“She spoke in such a tone, I’m afraid she knows our intention, so she wants to suppress us.”

Lian Ke Xin and Yu Zi transmitted to each other.

On the other hand, Tang Qiong carefully asked Twelfth Hair about Fairy Miao Yin’s status, was she the Star Collection City Lord?

Before coming, the Merman Imperial Court made ample preparation. They had prepared gifts for Fang Yuan’s well known subordinates like Fairy Miao Yin and Lady White Rabbit, but because of the tense atmosphere earlier, Tang Qiong could not offer the gift.

Twelfth Hair shook his head: “Originally, the Star Collection City Lord was the noble Combat Beast King, but he died during the tribulation. Now, Miao Yin, White Rabbit, Wu Shuai, Qi Sea, and the other rank eights are taking turns to station in Star Collection City.”

After hearing this, the mermaid Gu Immortals let out sighs of relief again.

This Fairy Miao Yin was not the Star Collection City Lord, she did not have too much authority.

Yu Zi’s eyes brightened, she knew that the chance to meet Fang Yuan’s main body was too rare, but his clones were inside the sovereign immortal aperture, if she could get close to one of them, the goal would be achieved.

The mermaid immortals followed Twelfth Hair and arrived at Star Collection City’s central square.

In the square, there were three huge pillars.

There were countless words moving around the surface of the pillars, they made up three large boards.

Before the mermaid Gu Immortals looked at them closely, Twelfth Hair already handed out Gu worms.

These were the Gu worms that Fairy Miao Yin gave to Twelfth Hair earlier. Each of the mermaid Gu Immortals obtained five of them, they were rank five mortal Gu.

Three of the Gu worms were familiar to the mermaids, they knew that these were used for the contribution board, mission board, and exchange board respectfully.

Fang Yuan listed three boards, they did not just exist in the sovereign immortal aperture, be it the variant human alliance or Righteous Qi Alliance, there were such arrangements. Thus, the mermaid immortals knew them.

Twelfth Hair spoke: “You will live in the sovereign immortal aperture from now on, your lives will be quite different. From now on, unless master gives orders, you will not go outside. You can take a look at these three boards, these are our internal boards, the external boards in the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance are quite different from them.”

Right now, be it the Righteous Qi Alliance or variant human alliance, they had all joined the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.

These were two conflicting forces, but now, they were one force.

Everyone felt very complex emotions.

But under Fang Yuan’s venerable cultivation level, regardless of their willingness, they had to follow him!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2242: Sovereign’s Three Boards

Star Collection City Square.

Yu Zi and Lian Ke Xin looked at a contribution board at the same time.

This contribution board had a lot of reference material, whoever stood at the top would be the most important subordinates, Fang Yuan’s capable generals, they were targets that the mermaid immortals had to befriend.

Looking at the contribution board, they could also roughly see the power levels of the factions of Fang Yuan’s subordinates and gain more insight.

Thereafter, they saw the number one name on the contribution board — Sixth Hair!

“A hairy man?”

“This person’s contribution points are far above the second person. For the time being, nobody can catch up to him.”

Even though Yu Zi and Lian Ke Xin had just arrived, they could see that Sixth Hair’s foundation and accumulation were immensely deep.

“Starting from the second place, the difference in points is not huge anymore.”

Lian Ke Xin quickly saw some familiar names from the top ten contributors.

Like Fairy Miao Yin, Lady White Rabbit, Mo Tan Sang, Xue Er, Shi Shi Cheng, and others.

What made Yu Zi and Lian Ke Xin take notice was that there was a strange name in the top ten positions.

“Lang Ya land spirit? Is this Lang Ya blessed land’s land spirit?”

“A land spirit can be ranked on the contribution board as well?”

“This shows how magnanimous Lord Fang Yuan is, he treats humans, variant humans, and land spirits equally.”

The top ten members of the contribution board were mostly variant human Gu Immortals. This had deep political meaning, the two former rulers of the Merman Imperial Court were very pleased about this, they felt a sense of excitement.

They also saw Twelfth Hair’s contribution points soon, he was eighteenth place.

The nineteenth place was the black hound land spirit.

At the next moment, the nineteenth place black hound land spirit took over the position of Twelfth Hair and knocked him down.

Twelfth Hair noticed this too, he coughed in embarrassment and said with a tone of slight envy: “This black hound land spirit is really lucky. Right now, with the fusion of two heavens, remnant heavenly dogs and heaven swallowing hounds are escaping in groups, they have been constantly caught by Gu Immortals and brought into our sovereign immortal aperture. Currently, these hound groups are taken care of by the black hound land spirit, after they are healed and inspected, they will be released into Mini White Heaven. This is why the black hound land spirit is getting so many contribution points.”

Lian Ke Xin and Yu Zi nodded repeatedly, while thinking to themselves: “Actually, there is no need to explain this. We don’t really care about how a land spirit beat you in contribution.”

They were concerned about Fairy Miao Yin, Lady White Rabbit, and the most important person — snowman Gu Immortal Xue Er.

The reason was that Bing Yuan had been bragging in the variant human alliance whenever she could that Xue Er was Fang Yuan’s fiancée, this was widely spread news.

As their former enemy, the Righteous Qi Alliance had been collecting such information, they also paid huge attention to this.

Thus, the mermaid immortals learned of this.

However, when they were about to ask for the information of these crucial people, a wave of screams could be heard near them.

Yu Zi frowned and was about to scold them, but she heard the four mermaid immortals say together: “Leaders, look at the exchange board.”

Lian Ke Xin and Yu Zi could not help but turn their attention away, immediately, their pupils contracted as they revealed expressions of shock.

The exchange board of the sovereign immortal aperture was truly different from the one in Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.

There were too many good things!

Lian Ke Xin and Yu Zi were getting dizzy from browsing the list.

There were all sorts of rewards listed, Gu worms of all paths were available, there were lots of rare and extinct mortal Gu, there were over a thousand Immortal Gu available from rank six to eight. There were countless Immortal Gu recipes, immortal materials, and immortal killer moves. There were hundreds or thousands of Immortal Gu House construction methods, and the immortal inheritances even made Yu Zi and Lian Ke Xin stare with wide eyes.

“This is water path great expert Chang Guan Shui’s inheritance, he cultivated water path mainly with information path on the side. He has a killer move called one watery chapter[1], it is extremely famous in history!”

“This is the inheritance of our merfolk expert, Third Princess, she was the most powerful mermaid of the Remote Antiquity Era, she had resisted Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable on many occasions, she created the water path rank eight immortal material, too much water, it has already gone extinct, to think that we would see it here.”

Yu Zi’s and Lian Ke Xin’s hearts palpitated as they read on.

Fang Yuan promoted himself as Great Love Immortal Venerable, he started to do transactions of Gu refinement in treasure yellow heaven, all of the mermaid immortals knew of the prices he set.

Although the prices were fair, they were incomparable to this.

“Using contribution points to exchange for things we want, this is much easier than making transactions in treasure yellow heaven or exchanging with the external board.”

“What did I see? We can apply for Lord Fang Yuan to personally help us pass tribulations! He is truly Great Love Immortal Venerable!”

Lian Ke Xin and Yu Zi licked their lips uncontrollably, their desire towards contribution points rose to an unprecedented level.

They cast their heated gazes towards the mission board along with the other four female immortals.

Evidently, if one wanted to get cultivation resources from the exchange board, they would need contribution points, while the source of contribution points were missions.

There were many missions on the mission board.

Within Mini Purple Heaven, a large number of ancient desolate beast mixed heavenly eagles had turned into immemorial desolate beasts for some reason, the mission was to investigate the truth.

Dog shit was falling from the sky in Mini Northern Plains, piling into mountains and polluting the frost dragon’s lake, the mission was to investigate the cause of the dog shit and get rid of it.

The dragon scale sea area in Mini Eastern Sea was flowing in reverse, a lot of seawater had entered the mini nine heavens, the mission was to fix the immortal formation and rebuild dragon scale sea area.

Inkman City Lord Mo Tan Sang got pregnant inexplicably, an expert in abortion was needed now.

...

The mermaid immortals looked at the mission board and fell into temporary silence.

The quantity of these missions was out of their expectations.

In normal situations, the immortal apertures of Gu Immortals were calm and peaceful, they only had to rebuild areas after going through tribulations or when they had new resource points added. They were not like the sovereign immortal aperture, which had strange events occurring at every moment.

The mermaid immortals looked for a while, they felt worried but also happy.

The worry was that even though the sovereign immortal aperture was Great Love Immortal Venerable’s immortal aperture and was renowned in the world, it was not peaceful at all, there were chaos everywhere, it would not be easy to live in here.

But they were happy because the chaos meant an uncountable number of missions, they had no lack of contribution points to earn.

Twelfth Hair had been observing the mermaid immortals’ expressions, he sighed: “I’ll speak the truth, the sovereign immortal aperture is currently in a state of peace. You have not seen the situation when master annexed the two heavens’ grotto-heavens, when he gained a huge number of dao marks, strange phenomena occurred endlessly. Inside the sovereign immortal aperture, there was not a single idle person at that time.”

“Currently, even though there aren’t many situations occurring, after the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, we lost many Gu Immortals, although most of them revived, they cannot ascend to immortal yet. You can see for yourselves, there are many many missions now, but some areas need people to guard them. For example, Star Collection City is too important, we cannot lose it. In addition, with many strange situations occurring, we need at least one rank eight Gu Immortal guarding the aperture at all times, because there are too many missions, master brought all of you into the sovereign immortal aperture to help out.”

“Earlier in the hall, Fairy Miao Yin spoke bluntly but she was not wrong. If you want to gain the acknowledgement of the existing Gu Immortals, you need to work hard and make achievements, use your actions and contribution points to prove your loyalty to master!”

The mermaid immortals heard his words and nodded.

Lian Ke Xin and Yu Zi looked at each other, they had finally understood Fang Yuan’s intention.

Tang Qiong quickly expressed gratitude to Twelfth Hair and handed over a gift again.

The other mermaid immortals asked at this time: “Lord Twelfth Hair, you gave us five Gu worms each, three are used for the boards, what about the last two?”

Twelfth Hair received the gift while smiling and explaining: “One of them is used to connect to treasure yellow heaven. Within the sovereign immortal aperture, all Gu cultivators need to use this Gu worm to access treasure yellow heaven. The other one is used to monitor you, it has to be kept on you at all times. If it is destroyed, you need to report it immediately, we will hand out a replacement in Star Collection City.”

After pausing for a while, Twelfth Hair continued: “No need to think too much about it, not just all of you, we have it too. It might be a mortal Gu but it has saved many of our lives already. We face danger when we handle those strange phenomena, it is possible that we will die during the missions.”

“For example, look at this mission on the board.”

The mermaid immortals looked at where Twelfth Hair pointed and saw the Mo Tan Sang abortion mission.

Twelfth Hair showed a strange smile: “You might not be familiar with Mo Tan Sang, but his status is not low, he is the Gu Immortal leader of Mini Western Desert. He is a male inkman, but while handling a sudden situation, he got mysteriously pregnant. Now, he is offering a huge price to undergo an abortion, many people are interested but were unable to do anything about it. If the abortion fails, he might lose his life after all!”

The mermaid immortals opened their mouths, they were dumbstruck.

“Alright,” Twelfth Hair continued: “Follow me, I will bring you to a place. In a way, this place is more important than the three boards!”

The mermaid immortals immediately gained deep interest, they followed Twelfth Hair as they left the square and arrived at a sub-hall of Star Collection City.

They saw that there were many Gu Immortals at the sub-hall.

Many Gu Immortals were holding onto each other, some were bending their backs as they dragged themselves into the sub-hall while looking extremely enervated.

Afterwards, these Gu Immortal walked out of the hall with a revitalized appearance, they looked highly spirited.

Even though there were still deep eye bags on their faces.

These Gu Immortals would nod sincerely when they saw acquaintances, when they went past each other, they would greet each other and talk about their missions or ranking on the contribution board.

When these Gu Immortals saw the mermaid Gu Immortals, they showed expressions of understanding.

A few of them took the initiative to greet the mermaids, they were very welcoming.

“Oh, I’ve heard that we are bringing in a group of merman Gu Immortals, are they the ones?”

“Great, with them joining us, we can finally take a breather.”

“There are more and more missions now, I hope this can reduce our workload.”

“Twelfth Hair, you are so lucky to have taken the mission of bringing them in!”

[1] Author is making a joke here. The character’s name means adding water, while water is slang for filler in Chinese, therefore a watery chapter is a filler chapter.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2243: Gu Yue Fang Xiang

Twelfth Hair laughed heartily as he said some pleasantries.

Looking back at the mermaid immortals, he saw that they were in a daze, some of the Gu Immortals even had tears in their eyes.

Twelfth Hair was startled, he quickly said: “If I have done anything wrong...”

Before he finished, Lian Ke Xin interrupted him: “Twelfth Hair, don’t worry. It is just that we saw everyone being harmonious and tolerant in this sovereign immortal aperture, each individual is given a chance with equal opportunities, they are close and tightly knit together, regardless of whether they are an inkman, rockman, snowman, or even human.”

“To speak the truth, I have never seen anything like this. I did not even dare to imagine that such a place would exist in this world we live in!”

Twelfth Hair was silent.

He was originally a member of Lang Ya Sect, even though Lang Ya blessed land was well hidden, he was aware of the situation in the five regions and two heavens, the variant humans had low statuses, they were suppressed by the humans and were all living difficult lives.

Looking at it from the perspective of the Eastern Sea Merman Imperial Court, they had been surrounded by human forces and definitely faced much greater pressure than Lang Ya Sect’s hairy men.

Even though the sight in Star Collection City was simple and normal, it created a huge impact on the mermaid immortals.

For an instant, all of the mermaid immortals had a similar thought.

No matter how chaotic or dangerous the sovereign immortal aperture’s environment became, they had to continue living here!

“Maybe this is our true homeland!” Yu Zi muttered.

“This is a wonderful place to live in.” Lian Ke Xin sighed deeply.

“I finally understand the true meaning of Great Love. Master is truly worthy of being Great Love Immortal Venerable, he is unlike the detestable Longevity Heaven or Heavenly Court. Be it Star Constellation Immortal Venerable or Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, they cannot compare to our master!” A mermaid immortal spoke about Fang Yuan in an extremely reverent tone.

Twelfth Hair gave a thumbs up as he said proudly: “Even among all the venerables, master has the biggest heart! It was only natural that Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable thought highly of him and gave all of his inheritance to master. Nobody else is qualified to receive this. We can only obtain true happiness by following master’s footsteps, since you recognize this now, then work hard to defend our home from now on, this is the way to maintain our blissful life.”

The mermaid immortals nodded their heads, some were so moved they started crying.

After calming down, Tang Qiong asked: “I wonder what the profound use of this sub-hall is?”

Twelfth Hair gasped, he showed a complex expression.

There was pride and admiration in his eyes, one could even see excitement and thrill, but he also had some lingering fear.

Even Twelfth Hair’s hair could not conceal his expression.

This made the mermaid immortals even more curious.

Next, the female immortals heard the explanation: “This was once a formation called the liver life formation. But recently, master modified it into an Immortal Gu House.”

“It has an excellent effect, it is very useful!” Saying so, Twelfth Hair gave a thumbs up again.

He said to the mermaid immortals with a tone that contained deep meaning:” You will definitely make good use of it in the future!”

After hearing Twelfth Hair’s in-depth description, the Liver Life Immortal Gu House left a deep impression on the mermaid immortals.

There was nothing else to introduce in Star Collection City, Twelfth Hair brought these mermaid immortals out of the mini nine heavens.

The group came to Mini Eastern Sea and looked at the sea area below.

Tides were rising, a sea breeze was blowing.

Twelfth Hair explained: “This is the location that master has chosen for your merman race to live and grow from now on.”

The mermaid Gu Immortals quickly used their investigative methods to inspect this sea area’s environment.

The unexpected good news was that this sea area has a vast quantity of ordinary Gu materials, but they were scattered chaotically with no order at all. Furthermore, many of the Gu materials conflicted with each other, they were in the process of breaking down.

This situation was caused by the sovereign immortal aperture’s dao marks.

The sovereign immortal aperture had many dao marks, that naturally led to the creation of many Gu materials. Because of non-conflicting dao marks, strange situations occurred often and the Gu materials were distributed chaotically and ended up in an unstable state.

“This is the map of the five regions and nine heavens, it is a version from three days ago, I will gift this to you.” Twelfth Hair pointed as an information path mortal Gu flew out.

“Version from three days ago?” Yu Zi was very alert.

“Indeed.” Twelfth Hair nodded and explained: “Because strange situations are occurring all the time, terrain will also change along with them. And because master is constantly adding in resource points and annexing blessed lands and grotto-heavens, the map of the five regions and nine heavens has been changing all the time, it needs to be updated constantly.”

Yu Zi looked into the Gu and shouted in shock: “So big?!”

Her shouting attracted the attention of the mermaid immortals, they had rarely seen Yu Zi, a leading elder, act in such a manner.

Twelfth Hair said with a trace of pride in his tone, he laughed: “The sovereign immortal aperture was originally over 335,000km2 in size. Now, after master’s annexing of apertures and undergoing tribulations, the size has expanded by a hundred times, we are over 33,500,000km2 in size now!”

When the other female immortals heard this news, they became dumbstruck and went into a daze.

Twelfth Hair smiled again: “Don’t worry, this place will continue to get bigger. If one day, the sovereign immortal aperture surpasses the five regions and two heavens in size, we will not be surprised!”

“I have already marked your territory on this map.”

“My mission has been completed, but if you have any needs, feel free to contact me using this information path mortal Gu.”

“I am currently living on Yellow Hair Continent, I am in charge of leading the yellow hair hairy men, you and I can be considered neighbors.”

Lian Ke Xin and Yu Zi quickly expressed their gratitude, they took out their own information path mortal Gu that were used for communication and exchanged them with Twelfth Hair.

After Twelfth Hair said his goodbyes to the mermaid immortals, he vanished into the sky.

After Lian Ke Xin and Yu Zi discussed among themselves, the six mermaid immortals started to get busy.

They sent people to scout and probe the surroundings, including the sky and sea, to collate the resources. On the other hand, the Gu Immortals also created a super sized defensive Gu formation.

After the two tasks were completed, the mermaid immortals opened their immortal aperture’s entrances.

Groups of mermen went into this sea area along with their families.

Under the instructions of the female merman Gu Immortals, these eight hundred thousand mermen started to build houses, create underwater villages, towns, and even cities at the center.

The mermaid immortals created six cities, each one had a Gu Immortal to guard it.

The cities were surrounded by towns which had branched out villages.

Because they made ample preparation, the merfolk did not lack living resources.

Chaos was, of course, unavoidable, they had just arrived here after all.

But with the guidance and control of the mermaid immortals, no losses appeared.

They worked hard for nine days and nights, after the merfolk mortals settled down, Yu Zi and Lian Ke Xin gathered the immortals for a meeting.

“There are many ordinary Gu materials but each one has low quantity, they change a lot as well. In my opinion, we should organize groups of merman Gu Masters to collect these Gu materials at set intervals of time.”

“The environment is quite safe here, there are few desolate beasts and almost no ancient desolate beasts.”

“There are also no common food like kelp, fish, or shrimp, we need to raise them from scratch. We also need to create a stable ecology.”

“There are few immortal materials here. According to the map, the closest immortal material resource point is the seven treasures sea spring, it produces seven treasures water.”

“Don’t target resource points, this is the sovereign immortal aperture, all resource points belong to master. If we want to get resources, we have to complete missions and exchange for them using contribution points.”

Speaking of missions, these mermaid immortals had been researching hard on the missions.

“Twelfth Hair is right, I think that we need to focus on completing missions to prove our worth. That way, the other Gu Immortals will acknowledge us.”

“I checked clearly, the most suitable missions for us are the ones to build water path resource points. Master has grand and magnificent ambitions, he is establishing water veins now. The first water vein has already been completed, he is making the second one now, this is our chance.”

“You are right, but we cannot give up on other missions. Especially the ones that involve other Gu Immortals, I think we should take some of them and use the missions to get acquainted with and befriend the other Gu Immortals. Before coming here, we prepared a lot of gifts, they are still with us now.”

After the mermaid immortals talked about this, the decision was that Yu Zi would stay in this sea area and be in charge of creating the ecology, this would create a stable source of food for the mermen.

The four female immortals led by Lian Ke Xin went around the place to collect information while also establishing relationships with other factions.

Lian Ke Xin spent an entire day to arrive at Yellow Hair Continent.

Twelfth Hair received her information path mortal Gu’s notification already, he went to the sky to welcome her.

As the saying goes, better a close neighbor than a distant brother, the two parties were inclined to establish a healthy relationship.

Lian Ke Xin brought a gift with her again, these days, while researching the contribution board, she noticed that in the sovereign immortal aperture, the hairy men were undoubtedly the number one force!

Twelfth Hair also prepared a present, it was very valuable too.

After talking for a while, Twelfth Hair heard of the mermaid immortals’ actions and smiled at Lian Ke Xin: “You’ve done the right thing.”

“In the five regions and two heavens, Gu Immortals will visit each other and hold banquets, in the worst case, they will at least prepare tea. But in the sovereign immortal aperture, this never happens! How can we have the time to entertain anyone in these useless banquets?”

“It is very wise of you to use these missions to meet with other people. If you follow the customs of the five regions and two heavens, you will not be well received by everyone.”

After hearing these words, Lian Ke Xin felt glad internally, she understood the style of the sovereign immortal aperture’s Gu Immortals soon after.

Twelfth Hair said directly: “We both took a mission to nurture Gu Immortal seeds, let’s go. Time is pressing, let’s go to the most important one.”

Lian Ke Xin went with Twelfth Hair and they flew while concealing their traces, entering a forest in the mountain.

A hairy man Gu Master was getting chased, he was covered in wounds and ran in the forest hurriedly.

Sounds could be heard from behind him, slowly creeping closer.

Lian Ke Xin inspected and found that this hairy man Gu Master was actually a mixed blood of hairy man and human.

“His name is Gu Yue Fang Xiang.” Twelfth Hair introduced at this time.

Lian Ke Xin’s pupils contracted immediately, her entire body shuddered.

Twelfth Hair quickly raised his hand: “Don’t let your thoughts run wild! He is not master’s bloodline, he is the son of Gu Yue Fang Zheng. Hehe, master is truly farsighted, his vision is far beyond our understanding, he has been secretly nurturing this kid, creating opportunities and setbacks for him. He is currently the most qualified Gu Immortal seed among our hairy man Gu Masters!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2244: Sudden Love

“Huff, huff, huff...” Gu Yue Fang Xiang breathed roughly, he hid behind the roots of an ancient tree.

The huge ancient tree had giant roots protruding out of the ground, they were interwoven and created a secluded area.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang managed to temporarily get away from the pursuit, he gained some time to rest and recover.

He was still bleeding profusely from his mouth and nose, he hurriedly wiped away the traces on his lips as he started to inspect his own physical condition.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang’s expression turned dim, he found more than ten injuries on his body, he had three bone fractures and the most severe injuries were in his organs, he needed healing urgently.

But he was neither worried nor flustered.

This was not the first time he had gotten injuries of such severity.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang tore his upper shirt that was extremely tattered, it was easily removed, his chest that was covered in black hair was exposed.

There was a deep wound across his chest, broken white bones could be seen from within.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang gritted his teeth, activating his Gu worm.

The healing Gu worm resembled a centipede, it dived into his body through the wound, quickly stopping the internal bleeding.

After a while, the centipede was covered in blood and came out of Fang Xiang’s body, lying on his chest wound.

Its hundred pairs of legs stabbed into the skin of his wound, the intense pain made Gu Yue Fang Xiang suck in a sharp breath.

Next, the centipede slowly exerted force as its hundred pairs of legs dragged the skin and flesh, emitting a soft sound and forcing the wound to mend together.

But this handling of the injury only suppressed it, it could not solve the root cause, Gu Yue Fang Xiang knew that but there was no time for him to heal himself.

“I see blood traces!”

“Hurry, hurry.”

“Be careful, that kid is quite dangerous.”

“What’s there to fear, even if he has rank five cultivation level, after getting hit by our leader’s crippled refinement killer move, most of his Gu worms were destroyed.”

“Hehe, precisely because of such thinking, more than ten experts died at his hands already.”

“This mixed blood Gu Yue Fang Xiang is truly a monster!”

All these discussions made Gu Yue Fang Xiang’s expression change.

“Damn it! They arrived so quickly, I had just handled my wounds...” Gu Yue Fang Xiang clenched his teeth, he inspected the remaining few Gu worms in his aperture.

At this point, most of the Gu worms had been destroyed already.

The remaining ones were mostly injured, if he tried to activate them, they would be destroyed in the process.

These were all Gu worms that Gu Yue Fang Xiang had accumulated after much effort, but now, he had no choice but to sacrifice them!

“Oh sleep lurk Gu, I can only depend on you now. You must persevere!” Gu Yue Fang Xiang prayed as he activated the Gu worm to conceal himself.

This rank four Gu worm had outstanding concealment effects on par with rank five. Gu Yue Fang Xiang had used it many times in his life to escape from fierce threats.

But this Gu had a weakness, once activated, the Gu Master would fall into deep sleep. The deeper their sleep, the better the concealment effect.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang lost his sensation of the outside world as a result.

What he did not know was that after he fell asleep for some time, this sleep lurk Gu broke apart into pieces.

But the pursuers were still chasing him.

Seeing this, the lurking Twelfth Hair waved his hand, the immortal killer move was instantly used on Gu Yue Fang Xiang.

A yellow hair hairy man Gu Master that was chasing him combed the surroundings carefully while checking the tree roots that Gu Yue Fang Xiang was hiding in.

Even though he was right in front of Gu Yue Fang Xiang, he could not see the latter.

Eventually, he concluded that Gu Yue Fang Xiang had escaped from this mountain, so he went deeper into the mountain to pursue him.

After Gu Yue Fang Xiang woke up, he found that he was safe and let out a sigh of relief.

Looking in his aperture, he found that the sleep lurk Gu had already shattered into pieces, he felt glad and also lingering fear: “It seems that sleep lurk Gu lasted until the crucial moment, so I managed to get away from the pursuers. They have already gone to the next mountain, now is the time for me to escape.”

Gu Yue Fang Xiang was very happy, because his injuries had already stabilized, he quickly got up and left.

He hid in the deep bushes of the forest as he moved, carefully trying not to leave any traces behind as he escaped.

After half a day, the sky suddenly turned dim, a strange fog appeared in the mountain’s forest.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang arrived in a deep pool on the mountain, he inspected the surroundings and felt very satisfied, he decided to stay here for some time and recuperate.

“There is a good source of water here, wild beasts will definitely come here to drink water, be it water or beast flesh, they are both needed.”

“If I am lucky, I can even hunt and obtain some Gu materials to refine Gu worms, that will refill my stock of Gu worms!”

Gu Yue Fang Xiang was very experienced in living alone within the mountains and forests.

He was a mixed blood of human and hairy man, in the Black Hair Continent that was ruled by hairy men, he was greatly ostracized.

Even his birth mother, Steel Thread City Lord, did not like him.

In Gu Yue Fang Xiang’s childhood and adolescence, his greatest wish was to use all his effort to gain the acknowledgement of his mother.

However, because he was a mixed blood, his aptitude in Gu refinement was far inferior to hairy men. And the worst thing was that hairy men took pride in Gu refinement.

But the problem was that Gu Yue Fang Xiang also had his secret encounters, because of all sorts of situations, he coincidentally obtained some special cultivation methods.

He was hardworking and shocked people with his performance, gradually, his mother, Steel Thread City Lord, changed her opinion of him. She started to accept him from the depths of her heart.

But good times did not last long, Steel Thread City was attacked once and the entire city’s people were nearly wiped out, Steel Thread City Lord did her best and escaped with Gu Yue Fang Xiang in the end.

Before her death, Steel Thread City Lord told Gu Yue Fang Xiang of his identity: “Oh son, mother has let you down. Didn’t you always want to know about your father?”

“His name is Gu Yue Fang Zheng, he was once a human slave that I owned. But after he escaped, he became a renowned demonic path Gu Master expert.”

“You have a human name, it is called Gu Yue Fang Xiang. Go and find your father, tell him your name and everything that has happened in your life.”

“We have strong enemies that want to kill us, if you want to take revenge for me, you need to find your father first.”

Like that, the youngster Gu Yue Fang Xiang stepped on the journey to find his father.

He secretly went from Black Hair Continent to White Hair Continent, before moving to Yellow Hair Continent.

The journey was filled with lots of difficulties and danger, he faced constant challenges and trouble.

Even though Gu Yue Fang Zheng was no longer in the aperture, the stories of his experiences across the three continents were left behind as legendary tales.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang’s cultivation level slowly rose as his social experiences became richer, countless battles and escapes shaped his optimistic and determined nature, he believed that one day, he would definitely find his father!

Near the deep pool, Gu Yue Fang Xiang took a good rest for the night.

At the break of dawn, mountain mist became extremely dense, Gu Yue Fang Xiang showed a suspicious look as he went to the periphery of the deep pool.

He found that this deep pool was very strange.

The mist in the mountain originated from this pool.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang stayed here for half a day and a full night, but he did not find any traces of beasts that came here to drink water.

All sorts of phenomena gave him a familiar sensation. Whenever he had a fortuitous encounter, something like this would occur.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang had a rich adventurous spirit, after probing for some time, he went into the pool.

But out of his expectations, the pool was not ice-cold, the deeper he went, the warmer it got.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang got all the way to the depths of the pool, the water was as comfortable as hot springs.

“This is?” He found a piece of white jade in the deep pool.

The jade was nearly transparent, from the outside, he could easily see that there was a beauty sealed inside the jade.

“This is a mermaid?” Gu Yue Fang Xiang looked at the beauty’s face and his pupils expanded, he felt deeply moved: “So beautiful!!”

He had never seen such a beautiful woman.

Such beauty made his heart jump, he felt a sense of adoration emerging from his heart.

The mermaid that was ‘sealed’ in the white jade was Lian Ke Xin.

She transmitted her voice to Fang Xiang: “Interesting mixed blood kid, you are the one who woke me up?”

Gu Yue Fang Xiang wanted to scream as he opened his mouth, because he forgot that this was deep within the pool, water quickly gushed into his mouth.

He quickly shut his mouth, he showed a pathetic look.

Lian Ke Xin laughed out loud, Gu Yue Fang Xiang felt his entire body going numb from infatuation, he thought: “This mysterious mermaid has such a beautiful voice as well!”

Lian Ke Xin explained: “I am mermaid immortal Lian Ke Xin, after I calmed a disaster in the world, I got injured by accident and became sealed in this white jade. Young man, it is fate that we met, please give me a hand to break free from here.”

Gu Yue Fang Xiang was extremely shocked but he did not have a Gu worm that could transmit his voice, he cupped his fists and bowed deeply, he tried to use sign language in the water to express his words.

Lian Ke Xin smiled: “Don’t worry, this white jade cannot trap me, it is just that I need some time to break free. If you can refine the rank four earth refinement Gu and refine this white jade from the outside, it will save me a lot of effort.”

Gu Yue Fang Xiang nodded in succession.

Lian Ke Xin then gave him pointers and the Gu recipe of earth refinement Gu, she also instructed him to find the suitable Gu materials in the vicinity.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang went out of the pool and immediately got to work.

After spending three days, he finally refined the rank four earth refinement Gu on his first try.

“I was really lucky!” Gu Yue Fang Xiang felt glad internally, according to his regular performance, rank four Gu worms were not easy to refine, he was just a mixed blood after all.

“It seems that even heaven is helping me to save this fairy.” Gu Yue Fang Xiang sighed to himself.

Twelfth Hair, who was hiding himself to the side, shook his head, while unable to contain his laughter.

It was with his secret help that Gu Yue Fang Xiang could succeed in one try.

After obtaining earth refinement Gu, Gu Yue Fang Xiang did not rest, he went into the deep pool with a tired body and started to refine the white jade.

Lian Ke Xin successfully ‘escaped’, she smiled at Gu Yue Fang Xiang and showed a gaze of appreciation.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang’s face turned red, he quickly lowered his head.

In order to express her gratitude, Lian Ke Xin waved her hand and healed all of Gu Yue Fang Xiang’s injuries. Next, she gave him close to ten mortal Gu as his reward and even one inheritance.

Lian Ke Xin was about to leave, Gu Yue Fang Xiang asked in panic: “Fairy, fairy, will I be able to meet you again?”

Lian Ke Xin smiled: “Do you know the difference between immortal and mortal?”

Gu Yue Fang Xiang shook intensely, his face turned ashen and pale.

But Lian Ke Xin added: “The inheritance I gave you is an immortal cultivation method. If you can become an immortal, you will surely meet me again.”

“Ah!” Gu Yue Fang Xiang cried out, lost for words, he did not expect that this fortuitous encounter would be so valuable.

After a moment, he watched in a daze by the pool as Lian Ke Xin flew up into the sky, vanishing into the clouds.

“Lian Ke Xin, Fairy Ke Xin...” Gu Yue Fang Xiang muttered, his hand over his heart.

Lian Ke Xin’s appearance was etched into his memories.

He knew that from now on, other than finding his father, he had a new goal to achieve in life – That was to become a Gu Immortal and meet with Fairy Lian Ke Xin again!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2245: Reprimanding Heavenly Court

“How is it?” Twelfth Hair asked with a smile.

Within the clouds, he met with mermaid immortal Lian Ke Xin secretly.

Lian Ke Xin replied: “He is a Gu Immortal seed indeed, there is a high chance of becoming an immortal.”

Twelfth Hair shook his head: “He obtained an immortal cultivation method and strong motivation from this, but they are not enough. We need to continue raising his foundation, after all, the balancing of three qi can only be done by himself.”

As for the other calamities and tribulations, they were not a problem! The immortals could secretly help him from the side.

“Then what do you intend?” Lian Ke Xin showed a look of hesitation.

Twelfth Hair explained: “I will give him around eight days to familiarize himself with those mortal Gu. Afterwards, I will arrange for those pursuers to find him and act as his sparring targets.”

“His mother, Steel Thread City Lord, is not dead, she is only in a comatose state of near death, only a Gu Immortal’s method can save her.”

“I will let him understand this and affirm his determination to go through and pass the tribulation!”

Lian Ke Xin heard this and became solemn for a while, she soon praised: “Friend, you have broad visions, I cannot compare to you. After we complete this mission, I hope you can decide the distribution of contribution points.”

“Fairy, you are too modest.” Twelfth Hair squinted his eyes and waved his hand: “I will report your effort as well. Besides, Star Collection City decides the contribution points, how can I interfere with it?”

Lian Ke Xin had originally taken this mission to get closer to Twelfth Hair. But once she found out about Gu Yue Fang Xiang’s special identity, she immediately understood that Gu Yue Fang Xiang would become very useful in the future, he was an important pawn to Fang Yuan!

Thus, this mermaid immortal came up with a plot, she went in and used herself as bait to interact with Gu Yue Fang Xiang.

In order to perform well, this mermaid immortal was putting in her full effort.

Twelfth Hair was afraid that her performance would affect his own gains, thus, he explained another plan to Lian Ke Xin.

Lian Ke Xin was very sharp, she quickly explained that she was not going to fight with him over contribution points, this made Twelfth Hair feel very satisfied about their cooperation.

The atmosphere between the two became harmonious again.

After a short conversation, suddenly, far away in the south, a huge pillar of light soared to the sky as an eerie Gu refinement aura spread around the vicinity.

Lian Ke Xin sensed it and her expression changed: “Someone has just succeeded in refining rank seven Immortal Gu?”

She then turned to look at Twelfth Hair as she praised: “Your race is truly talented, just this aura alone is making me feel admiration and aspiration. I wonder if a meeting can be arranged for us?”

Twelfth Hair showed a difficult expression, he subconsciously suppressed his volume as he shook his head: “I can introduce you to any other hairy man Gu Immortal, but this person is very special. He is actually Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s clone, he has been affected by master’s method, he is imprisoned for life and cannot stop refining Gu.”

Lian Ke Xin was very shocked when she heard this, inspiration flashed in her mind, she asked involuntarily: “Don’t tell me this imprisoned Gu Immortal is Sixth Hair?”

Twelfth Hair nodded: “Very astute, fairy, you guessed it right on your first try. The valley that Sixth Hair lives in is also specially arranged by master, it is a forbidden area in the sovereign immortal aperture, we call it the Spectral Valley Forbidden Ground.”

Currently, within the Spectral Valley Forbidden Ground.

Sixth Hair was thin as a stick, his cheeks were caved in and his eye bags were deep.

A rank seven Immortal Gu had just been refined.

This Gu worm looked like an ant, the front half was shiny while the lower half was dim, its front limbs were short and weak while its back legs were long and powerful.

It was the enslavement path Immortal Gu — master-servant Gu.

“Finally, I finally refined it...”

“I failed thirty-three times, got heavily injured twenty-seven times, and nearly died nineteen times, but I still refined it in the end!”

“With this Immortal Gu, I can definitely help sect leader Fang Yuan.”

“I need to rely on sect leader to save the main body.”

“Wait, am I forgetting something... never mind, I need to continue refining Gu.”

“The more Immortal Gu I refine, the stronger Shadow Sect will get, and the higher the hope of saving the main body!”

Sixth Hair’s state of mind was not right, after mumbling for some time, he started to prepare and refine other Immortal Gu.

A moment later.

Within treasure yellow heaven, Fang Yuan’s will and He Feng Yang’s will completed a transaction under everyone’s watchful gazes.

Fang Yuan obtained an earth path resource point of Central Continent called nine central stone forest, while He Feng Yang obtained master-servant Gu.

“They really did a transaction, this is unbelievable, He Feng Yang is actually so daring!”

“He is not doing this out of desperation, it is obvious that Immortal Crane Sect has instructed him to do this.”

“Immortal Crane Sect? No, if they publicly transacted with Heaven Refining Demon Venerable, even Immortal Crane Sect cannot bear the pressure from everyone. This transaction is definitely approved by Heavenly Court, otherwise, how can the ten great ancient sects even dare to do this?”

“Didn’t Heavenly Court denounce Fang Yuan as a Demon Venerable? They will cooperate with him?”

“So what? Rank seven Immortal Gu are hard to refine, Heavenly Court is extremely rich, they have countless resource points like nine central stone forest, this cost for an Immortal Gu is too worthwhile, even I would do it!”

“Fang Yuan is truly Heaven Refining Demon Venerable, he can refine rank seven Immortal Gu with such ease! It is simply as easy as drinking water.”

“What do you think his success rate of refining rank eight Immortal Gu is? It won’t be so easy, right? I think he has fifty, no, thirty percent chance of success.”

“What about rank nine Immortal Gu?”

“Hehe, you must be joking! Even a refinement path venerable will face great difficulties when trying to refine a rank nine Gu. Look at historical records, there had been many attempts to refine rank nine Immortal Gu, but how many truly succeeded? Even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable took a hundred years to refine a wild rank nine wisdom Gu.”

“That’s right, Heavenly Court spent over a million years to repair the rank nine fate Gu. And in the end? It was all for nothing. And they were just trying to repair a rank nine Immortal Gu, refining one from scratch is too hard!”

“Who knows, this Gu Yue Fang Yuan is the first refinement path venerable in history, we can only look up to him, we cannot fathom his true abilities.”

At once, the Gu Immortals of the five regions and two heavens discussed among themselves.

They started to talk about Fang Yuan’s refinement path abilities, they were curious about the extent of power that a refinement path venerable had.

Most of them felt that it would be very difficult for Fang Yuan to refine a rank nine Immortal Gu. After all, many historical records supported this idea.

The remaining Gu Immortals felt that they were too weak to see through and understand Fang Yuan’s true limits.

Soon, the Gu Immortals’ topic shifted to Heavenly Court gradually under some people’s meticulous arrangement.

Heavenly Court approved of He Feng Yang’s actions while Star Constellation Immortal Venerable held an ambiguous attitude towards Fang Yuan, many of the immortals looked at this in disdain, they expressed their tone of mockery towards Heavenly Court, but they understood why this was happening.

After all, Fang Yuan’s business could not be stopped, there were a lot of profits to gain from it as well!

From this topic, the Gu Immortals shifted towards the issue of Heavenly Court’s stoppage of handing out immortal essence stones.

Thus, begrudged discussions and requests to Heavenly Court to distribute immortal essence stones became louder and more common, the mockery, jealousy, and hatred towards Heavenly Court became increasingly aggravated.

Heavenly Court had always been the number one human force in the world, they stood proudly at the top of the Gu Immortal world of the five regions and two heavens.

This time, they stopped distributing immortal essence stones. It went against their usual behavior of being the leader of the Gu Immortal world.

The lack of immortal essence stones caused a lot of trouble to the bulk of the Gu Immortals.

Within treasure yellow heaven, nine out of ten transactions were done through bartering, the remaining one involved the purchasing of immortal essence stones by various super forces at high prices.

Western Desert.

Fang Di Chang also activated his Gu worm to connect to treasure yellow heaven.

“This wave of discontent towards Heavenly Court is very strange, it seems Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Heaven Refining Demon Venerable are the ones manipulating it from the background.” Fang Di Chang’s eyes flickered with uncertainty as he sensed the peculiarity.

And this was the truth behind the matter, Fang Yuan and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not let go of this opportunity.

Heavenly Court’s reputation fell time and again under such discontented discussions.

Fang Di Chang’s divine sense came to Fang Yuan’s will and spoke in a humble and subservient manner: “Western Desert’s Fang Di Chang greets Lord Alliance Leader, alliance leader is truly a master of the pen and the sword, your divine radiance lights up the world, I hope Lord Alliance Leader will live a life of eternal bliss, I hope your lifespan can rival heaven itself...”

Before he finished, Fang Yuan’s will waved his hands impatiently, interrupting Fang Di Chang: “Cut the crap, transact now.”

Fang Di Chang quickly acknowledged.

Thus, another transaction after the one with He Feng Yang was successfully completed.

Fang Yuan refined a rank seven Immortal Gu and gave it to Fang clan. They paid him one earth vein resource point and several million hairy man slaves.

Fang clan originally wanted to keep a low profile and develop in secret. But after Fang Yuan’s Great Love declaration, he exposed his relationship with Fang clan and stunned them completely.

Wan clan gathered the Western Desert’s righteous path forces to attack Fang clan but failed, it caused Fang clan to understand their circumstances, they stopped dreaming of a different outcome.

Thus, under Fang Di Chang’s suggestion, Western Desert’s Fang clan declared that they were joining the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.

“At this point, Fang clan can only cooperate with Fang Yuan and use this chance to strengthen ourselves!” Fang Di Chang sighed internally.

This was a dangerous status to have, but at the same time, they gained immense benefits.

Immortal Gu were too hard to refine!

“With this Immortal Gu replenished, my battle strength can rival ordinary rank seven Gu Immortals now.” Fang Di Chang fell into deep contemplation.

He had already gone through the immortal ascension, he was a rank six Gu Immortal now.

The balancing of three qi was the hardest hurdle but Fang Di Chang had ample experience. It could not be that he would fail in his second attempt after succeeding the first.

The other problem with immortal ascension were tribulations.

But with the help of Fang clan’s Gu Immortals, most tribulations were of no threat.

Unless they were dream path or painting path.

What made Fang Di Chang feel regret was that his immortal ascension did not have any natural inspiration opportunity.

When a Gu Master ascended, they would have a prime opportunity for natural inspiration to occur. They would be able to ask the world some questions and gain immense benefits.

But this time, Fang Di Chang did not get this opportunity.

This was not because he was undergoing immortal ascension for the second time, instead, the issue was with heaven’s will itself.

With the fusion of two heavens, heaven’s will had also gotten into chaos and turbulence, it did not have the ability to grant natural inspiration at this time.

“After recuperating for a few days, we will attack Wan clan!” This time, Fang Di Chang’s eyes were sharp like an eagle’s.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2246: Not Much Immortal Essence Left

Northern Plains.

Golden light floated in the sky like thin threads, gathering and forming a huge golden aurora that permeated into the ground and spread out widely, the commotion was huge and the aura was vast.

This was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable refining Northern Plains’ natural luck path dao marks.

But at this time, the golden light that filled the area dimmed.

A moment later, this core area of Northern Plains returned to its original state.

In the air, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable opened his eyes slowly, he had a handsome face and his mouth, nose, eyes and brows were all thick and straight, but currently, his expression was cold and had a faint trace of helplessness.

The three venerables tried to kill Spectral Soul Demon Venerable but failed because of Fang Yuan’s disturbance, afterwards, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable returned to Northern Plains and refined luck path dao marks there instead.

After a period of time, the results were abundant.

Currently, he had already completed a stage of his plans, all the luck path dao marks of Northern Plains’ core area were refined by him, his luck path dao marks covered the wisdom path area that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had refined earlier, allowing him to cancel out some of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s advantage in this place.

However, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could do nothing against the wisdom path dao marks that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had already refined. But in the future, if they fought here, although Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would get a dao mark amplification, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would also receive the same bonus, he would not lose his territorial advantage.

“But I don’t have much immortal essence left.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable sighed to himself.

The refinement of natural dao marks expended a lot of rank nine immortal essence.

Initially, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was only refining the luck path dao marks of the vicinity around him. It was like he was building a ball-shaped spider web, from an initial dot, it grew into a small ball, and finally a large ball.

The larger the ball expanded, the more dao marks he would encounter. To refine these luck path dao marks, he would expend an increasingly terrifying amount of immortal essence.

Currently, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable only had around a hundred yellow apricot immortal essence beads left. This forced him to stop here, his immortal essence reserves were reaching a critical level, he had to leave some for emergencies.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s rank nine immortal aperture could produce yellow apricot immortal essence, this was his only source of immortal essence production.

Longevity Heaven could not produce any.

Even though Longevity Heaven did not annex any nine heavens fragments and was not corroded by heaven’s will, after Giant Sun Immortal Venerable died in his era, it stopped producing immortal essence.

Right now, even though Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had revived, the venerable aperture that he had was the current one, it had not passed one chaotic disaster yet.

Furthermore, this second aperture had also just started developing, it was not flourishing and did not produce a large amount of immortal essence.

That was unless Giant Sun Immortal Venerable annexed Longevity Heaven, but if he did that, he would gain a huge number of luck path dao marks, it would destroy his plan of cultivating blood path.

“I need to raise blood path to a certain level first before I can regain my previous life’s foundation. This development will be costly, but I must endure it. Blood path will be of utmost importance when I face the other venerables in the future.”

“Thankfully, even though I am low on immortal essence, the other two are in an even worse state.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled to himself.

All along, he had been thinking that immortal essence was his advantage.

Even though he could not refine more luck path dao marks, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not slack off, he waited for his immortal essence to replenish while comprehending blood path.

Blood Sea Ancestor was actually Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s clone.

Blood Sea Ancestor created blood path and left behind countless blood path inheritances after he died. Most were mortal level and contained mortal killer moves and mortal Gu, but he had nine true inheritances of Gu Immortal level, that was the peak of blood path when he died.

These nine were blood skull Gu, blood handprint Gu, blood qi Gu, blood sweat Gu, menses blood Gu, blood shadow Gu, blood battle Gu, blood deity Gu, as well as the method to raise and enslave the ancient desolate beast violent blood dragon bat.

It was a pity that Blood Sea Ancestor was targeted by Heavenly Court in his life, even after his death, many inheritances were ruined by them.

Thankfully, Blood Sea left behind countless mortal inheritances, most of the nine true inheritances also displayed their worth.

The one who obtained the most true inheritances was Southern Border’s Gu Immortal Shang Yan Fei.

In his younger days, he found blood handprint Immortal Gu in Southern Border’s blood tide pit, he later obtained blood shadow Gu’s true inheritance.

Northern Plains’ menses blood Immortal Gu was obtained by Dong Fang Chang Fan.

Western Desert’s blood qi Immortal Gu true inheritance was obtained by Demon Immortal Qi Jue.

As for the true inheritance regarding the ancient desolate beast violent blood dragon bat, it was obtained by Shadow Sect’s Song Zi Xing.

Central Continent’s blood deity Immortal Gu true inheritance was fought over by the ten great ancient sects, they destroyed over half of it and the incomplete Blood Deity Immortal Gu recipe ended up in the hands of Myriad Dragon Dock.

As for the remaining three true inheritances, because of the changing terrain, a volcano erupted and destroyed blood skull Immortal Gu's true inheritance. Blood sweat Gu was taken mysteriously and had never been shown in public, it was possible that the person who took it met with an accident. Blood battle Gu's true inheritance was by chance destroyed by an immemorial desolate beast.

After Giant Sun Immortal Venerable revived, he took all of the blood path research results that the Northern Plains Huang Jin tribes had, as well as Longevity Heaven's research gains.

Next, he instructed Earth Extremity Gan Ni to refine Immortal Gu, the result was that they obtained several blood path Immortal Gu.

Among them, there was blood battle Immortal Gu.

As for the other seven Immortal Gu, other than Blood Deity, the rest had been tested, it was confirmed that all of them were already existing in the world.

Without an alternative, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had to temporarily turn imitation Gu into blood relation Gu and barely created a blood path formation that helped him to revive during the battle in Crazed Demon Cave.

“I have already digested the Primordial Domain regarding blood path, my current blood path attainment level has also reached supreme grandmaster! But...”

There were too few blood path Immortal Gu!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had first absorbed the Primordial Domain in Crazed Demon Cave to become a supreme grandmaster in luck path, afterwards, he focused on blood path.

He obtained a lot of the Primordial Domain but did not have time to digest them earlier, now, he had already used up all of the Primordial Domain regarding blood path.

In terms of attainment level, he was the number one person in the world regarding blood path, but currently, he was in an awkward state of lacking relevant Immortal Gu.

He needed a large quantity of crucial blood path Immortal Gu!

Among them, the ones that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable wanted the most were Blood Asset, Blood Skull, Bloodline, Blood Relation, and others.

But in fact, these Immortal Gu were already owned.

Gan Ni had been refining all sorts of blood path Immortal Gu for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, blood rope Immortal Gu was one of the products.

But these Immortal Gu were too low ranked, they did not suit Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

These blood path Immortal Gu needed to be rank eight at least!

This job was too difficult for Gan Ni to complete.

Gan Ni cultivated earth path and refinement path, she was not a pure refinement path Gu Immortal. Even if she was, the success rate of refining rank eight Immortal Gu was just too low.

“If Long Hair Ancestor were still around, it would be much simpler.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable started to miss Long Hair Ancestor.

Back then, he had asked Long Hair Ancestor to refine all those luck Immortal Gu, he managed to create Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

“Fang Yuan took the initiative to refine so many blood path Immortal Gu, regardless of this situation, or whether I need to advance my other blood path Immortal Gu, I will need to transact with him!” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable found that he could not avoid Fang Yuan.

Recently, He Feng Yang publicly transacted with Fang Yuan, this showed Giant Sun Immortal Venerable that Heavenly Court had an ambiguous attitude towards him.

Since Heavenly Court was attempting this, if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not follow, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Fang Yuan would leave him in the dust.

“I’ll let Heavenly Lord Bai Zu handle this and buy blood path Immortal Gu from Fang Yuan! Hmph, isn’t he quite close to Fang Yuan...” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made a decision.

Next, he started to deduce more blood path Immortal Gu recipes and killer moves.

Blood path supreme grandmaster attainment level was his greatest assurance.

Of course, there was another aspect, he was using his methods to look for the blood path research results of the various super forces, and also the blood path inheritances left behind by other geniuses.

After all, deducing Immortal Gu recipes and killer moves took time and effort, if he could use established inheritances as reference, he would save a lot of time and energy.

Heavenly Court.

Two days ago, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had already stopped refining Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks.

It was not that she was unwilling to, but her situation was the same as Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, their immortal essence reserves were reaching critical levels, they had no choice but to stop.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s situation was different from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

In her previous life, her venerable aperture was contributed to Heavenly Court, and because Heavenly Court had devoured many immemorial nine heavens fragments, it was corroded by heaven’s will and her own wisdom path dao marks were turned back into natural dao marks.

Thus, she could not retrieve her previous venerable aperture like Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to raise her own dao marks to a colossal scale.

But she had her own advantage.

Heavenly Court contained a huge number of wisdom path dao marks, far beyond what she had in her previous life.

Because Heavenly Court had existed for three million years, during which countless rank eight Gu Immortals had appeared, their immortal apertures were also fused into Heavenly Court.

If she fully refined all the wisdom path dao marks in Heavenly Court, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would receive amplification that was far beyond Giant Sun Immortal Venerable inside Longevity Heaven!

These last two days, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had been deducing killer moves, she wanted to use star eyes Immortal Gu and others to modify her own combat system.

Similar to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, she had absorbed a lot of the Primordial Domain, her star path became supreme grandmaster again, and together with her wisdom path cultivation, she was much more adept than Giant Sun Immortal Venerable in modifying killer moves!

When refining natural dao marks, the immortal essence expenditure was huge. but when deducing killer moves, for the case of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the immortal essence expenditure was of an acceptable level.

Relying on her current venerable aperture, the production of immortal essence was greater than the amount she expended.

“But the most important thing is to refine all of Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks.”

If she completed that, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would be able to use a killer move to conceal Heavenly Court’s information, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would not be able to use Longevity Heaven’s luck path dao marks to forcefully inspect it.

Things were difficult to do openly, but easy to do secretly. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable knew this clearly.

“After I block Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s investigative method, I will break the truthful floating ice and retrieve derivation Gu, it will be helpful in our human path development!”

“In terms of immortal essence, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable should have an advantage, in terms of Gu refinement, Fang Yuan has the advantage. But I have rank nine derivation Immortal Gu, if I can use it well, I can surpass the two venerables.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable calculated internally.

In the contest of three venerables, although they were not physically fighting, their contest had taken a different form.

Refining dao marks, immortal essence reserves, rank nine Immortal Gu, all these various aspects were crucial points that the venerables competed in.

Undeniably, whoever had the advantage in these aspects would have a higher chance of winning in the end!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2247: Fang Yuan’s Second Rank Nine Immortal Gu

Eastern Sea.

“This is about enough, I should stop now.” Fang Yuan willed as he stopped refining dao marks.

The sovereign immortal aperture had a hundred beads of yellow apricot immortal essence stored.

But Fang Yuan did not stop refining natural dao marks because of issues with his immortal essence reserves.

The truth was, he refined Eastern Sea’s refinement path dao marks openly, while secretly unsealing the truthful floating ice in his aperture!

Most of his yellow apricot immortal essence beads were used to unseal the truthful floating ice, only a small portion were used to refine Eastern Sea’s refinement path dao marks.

Because of his action, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable stayed in their territories, they did not come to attack Fang Yuan.

“Oh? Giant Sun Immortal Venerable stopped refining natural dao marks.” Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with luster.

This information could not be hidden, because the three venerables paid a lot of attention to each other, Fang Yuan soon caught wind of this.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable should not have much immortal essence left, although Star Constellation Immortal Venerable is holed up inside Heavenly Court, her situation should be similar.”

Fang Yuan let out a sigh of relief.

With the two of them having low immortal essence, the chance of them attacking Fang Yuan was very low, their threat towards him also fell by many times.

“Thankfully, I took a risk earlier and refined rank nine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, otherwise, I’d be in a tough predicament now.”

In the contest of three venerables, if one side lagged behind, they would not be able to catch up easily.

After all, the three venerables were all elites of elites.

“Currently, in terms of immortal essence reserves, I am already on par with the others. But truthfully, I have a lot more advantage than the two venerables.” Fang Yuan evaluated.

Firstly, Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was simply too incredible and useful!

Next, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture had time path methods in effect, the rate of time was faster than the two venerables. In contrast, because of conflicting dao marks, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not have any time path methods that could be effective on their immortal apertures.

And finally, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture had far deeper foundation than the two venerables who had just started developing theirs, the yellow apricot immortal essence he produced exceeded theirs.

With all three elements, Fang Yuan’s yellow apricot immortal essence production far surpassed the two venerables.

Currently, while Fang Yuan refined the natural dao marks, he showed signs of weakness, he constantly had to stop and wait.

Because of obscured heavenly secret, the two venerables did not know that Fang Yuan possessed rank nine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.

And because they knew about the sovereign immortal aperture’s details, they knew the trait of non-conflicting dao marks, they did not think that Fang Yuan would take a risk to accelerate the time flow.

As for the immortal aperture origin core’s production of immortal essence, the two venerables knew that the sovereign immortal aperture had just undergone a chaos tribulation and also got hit by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s fortune and disaster coexists killer move, thus, they underestimated the sovereign immortal aperture’s current foundation.

Especially during this period of time, Fang Yuan refined Gu in treasure yellow heaven and was willing to pay Immortal Gu to purchase all sorts of resource points and establish earth vein and water veins, he did not conceal anything.

In the eyes of the two venerables, such an action of urgently developing his immortal aperture meant that the sovereign immortal aperture had suffered immense losses in Crazed Demon Cave.

Fang Yuan guessed the two venerables’ thoughts: “In their eyes, I need to work on raising my immortal essence production, while refining rank nine Immortal Gu is too dangerous, accelerating time flow will also cause tribulations to occur more quickly and expose my weakness. Thus, I can only build more resource points to raise my immortal aperture origin core so that I can produce more yellow apricot immortal essence.”

“But if I make a small blunder, the two venerables will immediately be suspicious of me. Especially Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, as the number one person in wisdom path throughout history, it will be extremely difficult to deceive her!”

Fang Yuan was currently treading on thin ice, he knew that maintaining the status-quo was the best form of victory.

He could not afford to make any small mistakes!

If a single small mistake appears, the two venerables would analyze it carefully before quickly taking attempts to probe the truth.

If the truth was exposed, what would happen?

Fang Yuan would definitely be attacked by both venerables together!

Fang Yuan did not know how long he could hide this, after all, he was facing the two of the greatest geniuses throughout human history.

It was possible that he would be exposed at the next moment.

If such a situation happened, Fang Yuan would not be surprised.

No longer distracted by refining the refinement path dao marks, Fang Yuan started to unseal the truthful floating ice with his full strength.

Intuition told him that a huge gain was about to appear.

And sure enough, several days later, his heaven path attainment level rose to quasi-grandmaster.

Even though it did not reach grandmaster, Fang Yuan had a deep foundation, he developed a strong sense of confidence —

“If I deduce with all my effort now, I can definitely create a heaven path killer move that can allow me to take the Primordial Domain!”

Fang Yuan’s portion of the Primordial Domain had always been kept in treasure yellow heaven.

Goods in treasure yellow heaven could not be used on the spot.

Thus, Fang Yuan could not sell his own clone and absorb the Primordial Domain there, there was no chance of this happening.

Fang Yuan had to retrieve the portion of the Primordial Domain and absorb them to raise his attainment levels!

“Unsealing the truthful floating ice mainly increases heaven path dao marks, followed by heaven path attainment level, and finally, the attainment level of other paths. This last effect is barely evident, it is only an additional effect of the truthful floating ice and is extremely insignificant.”

“Only by using the Primordial Domain can I raise the attainment levels of all my paths to a huge degree!”

“But, right now, is there a need to do it?”

After careful consideration, Fang Yuan shook his head.

Deducing the heaven path killer move was not hard for Fang Yuan, his worry were the two venerables.

Once he took out the Primordial Domain, he would have exposed his heaven path method.

The two venerables would first be alerted, Fang Yuan had the sovereign immortal body, with so many portions of the Primordial Domain, if he digested them, his attainment levels would rise and cause him to become much more threatening.

Afterwards, the two venerables would be suspicious, why would Fang Yuan possess such a heaven path method?

He did not use it in the past, now that he had the heaven path method, it meant that his heaven path cultivation had improved greatly.

That would make them think of the truthful floating ice.

After all, Fang Yuan obtained the most pieces of truthful floating ice among the three venerables!

If Fang Yuan improved in heaven path because he unsealed the truthful floating ice, then where did he get the immortal essence beads needed to do so?

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Limitless Demon Venerable had cooperated for a million years to maintain the Crazed Demon formation. She even assimilated with the Dao and created the killer move human executing heaven’s work, she definitely knew that unsealing the truthful floating ice required immortal essence.

Once she found out, she would inform Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, and the two would work together and attack Fang Yuan to suppress him.

Like what Fang Yuan considered earlier, a small mistake would cause the two venerables to attack him immediately.

It was too likely!

“I can secretly deduce the heaven path killer move but the collection of the Primordial Domain will need to wait.”

Even though the Primordial Domain was very useful to Fang Yuan, it was not the key now. Because it would cause both venerables to attack and cause Fang Yuan to lose his current advantage, the loss was not worth the gain.

“No, the heaven path killer move can wait. After all, once I gain this method, my luck will rise sharply.”

“Also, I have rank nine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus now, it has already increased the burden on obscured heavenly secret, its expenditure is rising rapidly.”

“What I need to do is to refine a second rank nine Immortal Gu!”

This thought had been lingering in Fang Yuan’s mind for a long time.

As for what Immortal Gu he should refine, Fang Yuan already had an answer.

That was Immortal Gu — Advance Refinement!

Not Spring Autumn Cicada, Dog Shit Luck, Attitude, or Dream Token, but advance refinement Gu.

Once advance refinement Gu becomes rank nine, it would be extremely useful for Fang Yuan to advance the rest of his rank eight Immortal Gu.

For example, when Fang Yuan refined Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, if he had rank nine advance refinement Gu, the difficulty would be halved at least!

Fang Yuan had two advantages when refining rank nine advance refinement Gu.

The first advantage was that Fang Yuan had rank eight advance refinement Gu already, this Gu came from Lang Ya Sect, it was originally the core of the Long Hair refinement path formation, it was currently the core of Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool.

Secondly, advance refinement Gu was a refinement path Immortal Gu. Even though some rule path immortal materials were needed in the process, it was much purer than Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, refinement path immortal materials were the bulk of its components.

Fang Yuan was a refinement path venerable, he could perfectly process refinement path immortal materials, this meant that the success rate would be much higher as well.

Right when Fang Yuan was secretly thinking of refining rank nine advance refinement Gu.

Western Desert.

At the core area of wind falcon desert.

Bam!

With a loud sound, a vast amount of sand flew into the sky.

An Immortal Gu House charged out from underground, it was Fang clan’s rank seven Immortal Gu House, Chicken Dog Coop.

This Chicken Dog Coop Immortal Gu House looked like two buildings side by side, the left building was yellow and had a round plaque that had ‘chicken’ written on it, the right building was red and had the word ‘dog’ on its plaque.

As its entrance opened, chicken and dog ancient desolate beasts flew out, there were tens of them.

Chicken Dog Coop burst out with profound light, shaking heaven and earth.

The empty desert suddenly had an oasis that appeared out of nowhere.

This oasis had countless pine trees that were tall and sharp, each one was at least three hundred feet tall, and they were widely spaced apart. The trees spread their branches and leaves out, the leaves gathered into balls with an extremely flat surface that resembled a grassland.

On top of the pine leaf grassland, there were huge nests.

Within the nests, there were long-distanced wind falcons, there were all sorts of wind falcons ranging from ordinary beasts, beast kings, desolate beasts, and even ancient desolate beasts.

“This tall pine oasis is incredible, as expected of Wan clan’s resource point that is ranked second in Western Desert.” Fang Di Chang critiqued from within Chicken Dog Coop.

This was Wan clan’s territory, the rank seven Gu Immortal expert of Wan clan that guarded this place was Wan Xiao.

He did not show up, instead, he controlled the immortal formation and defended against the attacks of the ancient desolate beasts, he scolded angrily: “Fang clan, what are you trying to do? As a Western Desert righteous path super force, you are actually attacking another righteous path super force without reason?!”

Within Chicken Dog Coop, Fang Di Chang smiled coldly and replied: “Earlier, Wan clan gathered the Western Desert super forces to attack my Fang clan together, we will settle the score now! Do you really think my Fang clan is a weak target to bully?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2248: Winding Light Platform

At the center of the formation. Wan Xiao’s expression was solemn, he felt a huge rock pressing down on his mind.

Fang clan’s attack was too sudden, he was completely unguarded!

The truth was, it was not that Wan clan had not made preparations.

Even since they failed in rallying Western Desert righteous path super forces, Wan clan had prepared for Fang clan’s retaliation; they sent more manpower to their large peripheral resource points, while also strengthening the defensive formations there.

They even paid a huge price to request Xiao clan to set up a transportation formation, in order to send reinforcements in time.

But who could have thought that the moment Fang clan made a move, they actually bypassed the peripheral resource points, and directly invaded deep into Wan clan’s territory, attacking Wan clan’s second largest resource point!

“Fang clan planned a long time for this, but how in the world did they come here?” Wan Xiao was puzzled.

Wan clan was already aware of Fang clan’s three Immortal Gu Houses – Chicken Dog Coop, Inquiry Dock, and Fallen Flower Hall. None of them could accomplish this.

“Oh no!”

Right at this time, Wan Xiao shockingly sensed that the formation was shaking and the ground was quaking, as if an earth trench was about to form. A large number of pine trees of the tall pine oasis fell.

“This defensive formation’s base is buried thousands of feet deep under the ground. Fang clan actually found it so precisely, they are destroying it!”

Wan Xiao quickly inspected and saw an Immortal Gu House wreaking havoc underground, destroying the formation’s base.

Immortal formations usually had a formation base, it was like the foundation of a building but much more important. Formation bases were incredibly important to the immortal formations, they were the foundation of the foundation.

If the formation base was destroyed, the formation would become extremely unstable, like a building with ruined foundation. With just a slight disturbance in the base, the formation would reveal a huge flaw and even be destroyed.

Therefore, when Gu Immortals set up immortal formations, they would hide the formation base. Some formation bases were hidden underground, some were hidden in the air, and some were kept in the center of the formation.

This defensive formation in tall pine oasis had existed for a long time, and because of the environmental restrictions, the Gu Immortals who set the formation back then felt that only by burying the formation base deep underground could the formation take care of all aspects. It could defend and also nurture resources.

“But the formation base has been discovered and is being attacked! Fang clan is too insidious, they actually had an earth path Immortal Gu House as well!” Wan Xiao gritted his teeth.

What made him feel an even greater chill was that Fang clan’s methods were powerful and well prepared.

“Whose plan was it? Isn’t Fang Di Chang trapped inside Divine Emperor City? Could it be that youngster Fang Yun? What should I do?” Wan Xiao was sweating all over.

He had confidence earlier as tall pine oasis’ defensive formation was very strong. He had confidence to rely on the formation to hold on until Wan clan’s reinforcements arrived.

Fang clan had Immortal Gu Houses, Wan clan naturally had them as well!

When Wan clan’s Immortal Gu Houses arrived and coordinated with the defensive formation, it would not be difficult to force back Fang clan.

Once Fang clan were forced back, it would be Wan clan’s victory.

Because Fang clan’s action already crossed the limits of the Western Desert righteous path, such a defeat would definitely lower their reputation.

Wan clan could take the chance to counterattack, rallying the other forces with a righteous reason. At that time, the reaction of Western Desert’s super forces would be different from before.

“But can I hold on until then?” Wan Xiao was solemn.

Wan clan headquarters.

“What? Fang clan attacked our tall pine oasis!” After receiving Wan Xiao’s letter, the expression of Wan clan’s first supreme elder changed sharply.

Wan Xiao had given a detailed description in the letter. The situation was serious and extremely urgent.

Tall pine oasis was Wan clan’s second largest resource point, it was a renowned super resource point in Western Desert and even in the whole five regions, it could not be taken. Once it was destroyed or taken over, the losses would be enormous.

“Fang clan... is really vicious. It is now a critical moment for my Wan clan!”

Wan clan’s first supreme elder only had rank seven cultivation and did not have outstanding battle strength, but he possessed an intuitive view of the big picture.

He was deeply aware: Once tall pine oasis fell into the enemy’s hands, not only would they lose all the resources inside, Wan clan’s reputation and prestige would also suffer a huge impact.

Previously, Wan clan’s rally did not succeed. Now, if the resource point were to be destroyed by Fang clan, in the eyes of everyone, Wan clan would become the weakest force in Western Desert’s righteous path. They would be an object of ridicule and the representation of the weakest target!

Once this thought emerged, Wan clan would head down the road of decline. Because in the current situation, with the chaotic war imminent, people’s hearts were uneasy. If the chaotic war erupted, everyone would feel that Wan clan could be taken advantage of.

This was a frightening situation for Wan clan.

Hence, when Wan clan’s first supreme elder received Wan Xiao’s request for reinforcements, he immediately acted. He personally moved with Winding Light Platform.

Only a rank six Gu Immortal and a rank seven Immortal Gu House were left to guard the headquarters.

On his way, Wan clan’s first supreme elder messaged all the Wan clan Gu Immortals.

The Wan clan immortals were shocked and furious.

“The peripheral territories are peaceful and have no disturbance.” After receiving the replies, the brows of Wan clan’s first supreme elder furrowed tightly.

After some rapid thinking, he clenched his teeth and sent a command.

Shortly after, Wan Hao Guang received this command.

“Zhui Qing, defend this place. If Fang clan attacks, you must retreat immediately. I need to hurry to wind falcon desert to reinforce Wan Xiao.”

Wan Hao Guang immediately moved out.

The relationship between him and Wan Xiao’s relationship. Back then, three Wan clan immortals fought Fang Yuan, and Wan Xiao risked his life to save Wan Hao Guang. Now, Wan Hao Guang could similarly go to such an extent.

But Wan Zhui Qing grabbed Wan Hao Guang’s hand: “Lord, it is too dangerous for you to go right now! We don’t have clear information on what Fang clan’s real arrangements are. If their plan of besieging the enemy stronghold is meant to strike at the reinforcements, wouldn’t you be jumping right into a trap?”

“I have a suggestion. Currently, Fang clan has entered deep into our Wan clan’s territory, if we just defend, we will only receive a beating and fall into Fang clan’s scheme. We may as well launch an attack and invade Fang clan’s resource points, we should use offense against offense!”

Wan Hao Guang’s eyes shone as he sized up Wan Zhui Qing and patted his shoulder: “Good lad, you have improved!”

“But, do you think first supreme elder did not think of this?” Wan Hao Guang shook his head.

“First supreme elder asked experts like us to go and reinforce them because he does not have the confidence to force back Fang clan’s forces. Fang clan’s first supreme elder Fang Gong is a rank eight expert, while we have not seen him since the start of the battle. He may very likely be inside Chicken Dog Coop.”

“According to your plan, even if we invade Fang clan’s resource points, once we lose tall pine oasis, our Wan clan will still suffer a huge loss. All those peripheral resource points of Fang clan combined cannot compare to our tall pine oasis.”

Wan Zhui Qing turned pale as he deeply realized the cruelty of reality.

Even if they were not clear of Fang clan’s true arrangements, Wan Hao Guang had to go reinforce them, even if he had to risk his life. Simply because they could not afford to lose tall pine oasis.

Boom!

The formation base was destroyed, a huge flaw formed in the immortal formation from which Chicken Dog Coop charged in.

Wan Xiao was furious but could only maintain the damaged formation while clenching his teeth.

With their home being invaded, wind falcons were provoked. They screeched as they attacked Chicken Dog Coop, going against the chickens and dogs sent by Fang clan.

A fierce fight between the beasts erupted as blood splashed everywhere.

Chickens cawed, dogs barked, and falcons screeched. They formed a medley that resounded in the battlefield.

An immemorial wind falcon clawed open the roof of Chicken Dog Coop.

The Fang clan Gu Immortals inside were already prepared, they repaired it in orderly and calm fashion.

Fang Di Chang laughed loudly: “What an impressive immemorial desolate beast, get in here!”

At the next moment, Chicken Dog Coop let out a beam of light. The beam enveloped the immemorial wind falcon and dragged it inside.

The immemorial wind falcon struggled with all its strength, but its body kept on shrinking and its resistance grew weaker and weaker, until it was finally absorbed by Chicken Dog Coop.

“What? This Immortal Gu House can suppress the immemorial wind falcon?” Wan Xiao’s heart shook.

Chicken Dog Coop was an enslavement path Immortal Gu House that could only enslave chickens and dogs, but who could have expected that it gained a new ability now.

“Enough is enough! Fang clan, you will pay for this one day! I, Wan Xiao, swear upon it.” Wan Xiao roared in his head as he stared at the wind falcons that were being suppressed by Chicken Dog Coop.

Fortunately, this situation did not continue for long, Wan clan’s first supreme elder appeared in the horizon with Wan clan’s Immortal Gu House.

Wan Xiao immediately relaxed.

“Winding Light Platform.” Fang Di Chang muttered as he saw this.

This Winding Light Platform was a rank seven light path Immortal Gu House. It was greyish white with eight sides and eight corners. On the tall platform, Wan clan’s first supreme elder was standing straight, his face furious as he fixed his gaze on Chicken Dog Coop.

Both sides were still a few kilometers apart when Winding Light Platform suddenly shot out four beams of light.

The beams actually bent in the air, they nimbly attacked Chicken Dog Coop from different directions.

Under Fang Di Chang’s control, Chicken Dog Coop activated defensive killer moves and blocked all four beams.

In this short while, Winding Light Platform had arrived before Chicken Dog Coop.

Boom.

With a loud explosive sound, Wan clan’s first supreme elder actually made Winding Light Platform collide with Chicken Dog Coop.

The two Immortal Gu Houses collided before being mutually repelled, a large number of mortal Gu broke into pieces and scattered in the air.

“Hehehe, Wan clan’s first supreme elder, you have such a fiery temper.” Fang Di Chang’s voice resounded in the battlefield.

Wan clan’s first supreme elder and Wan Xiao’s expressions changed: “Fang Di

Chang? Weren't you trapped in Emperor City, no, inside Divine Emperor City?!"

Fang Di Chang's eyelids twitched as his voice turned heavy: "That is not the important point. Wan clan, I am representing Fang clan to teach you a lesson. Don't think that any random force can find trouble with my Fang clan."

"You speak with no shame!" Wan clan's first supreme elder shouted furiously. Immediately after, Winding Light Platform activated its killer move again.

Tens of beams of light swept the battlefield, Chicken Dog Coop was forced back time and again, its ancient desolate beasts suffered serious casualties. Even the earth path Immortal Gu House that was deep underground also got struck by the light, it was almost destroyed.

"Fang clan moved underground and invaded deep into our territory, it is very likely because of the ability of this earth path Immortal Gu House. But this Immortal Gu House seems fragile, or at least, its defensive aspect is not good enough." Wan clan's first supreme elder immediately cheered up.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2249: Huge Commotion

Wan clan's first supreme elder traveled in Winding Light Platform and arrived just in time. After fighting one round with Chicken Dog Coop, he immediately discovered the weakness of Fang clan's earth path Immortal Gu House.

When he discovered this, Wan clan's first supreme elder did not hesitate to activate Winding Light Platform to shoot out beams of light at the underground earth path Immortal Gu House.

The earth path Immortal Gu House quickly drilled deeper, evading with extreme nimbleness.

Although its defense was nothing to boast about, its speed was astonishing, it dodged all the beams.

Some beams brushed past it, making for an extremely dangerous situation.

Wan clan's first supreme elder smiled: "Let me show you my Wan clan Immortal Gu House's ability!"

Saying so, he activated Winding Light Platform's signature method.

Immediately, those straight pure-white beams of light underground started to bend and change their direction, attacking the earth path Immortal Gu House again.

A large number of beams formed a web that shrouded the earth path Immortal Gu House from all sides.

The earth path Immortal Gu House could only struggle fiercely, and after ten or so breaths of time, it charged out of the ground.

"I was waiting for you." The eyes of Wan clan's first supreme elder shone sharply, "I shall destroy this Immortal Gu House as the payment for invading my Wan clan!"

“Stop dreaming.” Fang Di Chang called out as he controlled Chicken Dog Coop to collide with Winding Light Platform.

Wan clan’s first supreme elder gave a shout, Winding Light Platform shot out beams once again. The beams of light coiled around Winding Light Platform, connecting with each other as they formed a powerful defensive ring.

Chicken Dog Coop collided onto the surface, but its strength was redirected by the winding beams, causing it to brush past Winding Light Platform.

Immediately after, Winding Light Platform shot a ray of yellow light.

The yellow light covered Fang clan’s earth path Immortal Gu House, holding it down on the spot.

Wan clan’s first supreme elder poured in his immortal essence in a frenzy, the yellow light started to coil like a fried dough twist[1].

Under the constriction of the yellow beam of light, Fang clan’s earth path Immortal Gu House started cracking, a large number of mortal Gu were crushed to pieces.

This move was Winding Light Platform’s strongest method. In just a short ten breaths of time, Fang clan’s earth path Immortal Gu House would be completely destroyed, even the Gu Immortals inside could not escape alive!

Wan Zhui Qing flew rapidly in the sky.

His expression was extremely cold, but his heart was like a bright burning flame.

This was the fire of vengeance!

Wan Zhui Qing’s father was Wan Liang Han.

The latter was a rank seven wisdom path Gu Immortal. He had fought Fang Yuan with Wan Hao Guang and Wan Xiao, resulting in his death in the battle.

Back then, Fang Yuan hid in Fang clan, so in Wan Zhui Qing’s heart, it was the same as Fang clan killing his father.

The hatred of his father’s murder was irreconcilable!

Since the moment he learned of father’s death, Wan Zhui Qing’s life experienced a complete change.

Previously, he was a second generation immortal, with his father’s support, he could be arrogant and complacent.

After the fall of his father who sheltered him from the cruelty of the outside world, Wan Zhui Qing matured quickly amidst the grief and fear.

He realized that his comfortable life was the result of many people giving face to his father. He realized how fortunate he had been, and also realized his only hope now was to work hard.

So, when Wan clan’s rally did not bear fruit and they deployed immortals to defend their peripheral territories, although Wan Zhui Qing was only at rank six, he disregarded the risk and requested to be sent to a peripheral territory to defend the resource point.

He knew that he had to display his value to the clan. If the value was not high, then he had to show his loyalty!

He did not have any fortuitous encounters, so he could only rely on the clan.

And the clan was not his father.

Every time Wan Zhui Qing remembered how blessed he had lived when his father was alive, his hatred towards Fang clan deepened.

“Wan Hao Guang made me guard the resource point, but what can I, a mere rank six Gu Immortal, do, even with the support of the immortal formation? Wan Hao Guang is the main reliance to stall the enemies until reinforcements arrive. If Fang clan’s true motive is to attack the peripheral resource points, I will definitely not be able to defend mine.”

“Since that is the case, I may as well risk it and attack Fang clan’s resource points. I will do what Wan Hao Guang cannot do!”

Wan Zhui Qing decided to risk it.

If he stayed to defend the resource point, and Fang clan attacked strongly, he would at most be able to hold on for a while before he would need to retreat through the teleportation formation.

Returning to the clan with such a result of losing the clan’s resource point would be a small stain on his records at the very least.

But if he attacked Fang clan’s resource point and made some gains, it would no doubt be a huge merit. Especially under the situation when tall pine oasis was attacked and the casualties were high.

In this situation, as long as Wan Zhui Qing succeeded, it would be like helping Wan clan restore their prestige.

“At such a time, one merit or contribution will be counted as ten! The clan will also look at me differently.”

“With the clan’s rewards and increased support, I can progress rapidly, otherwise, with my current growth speed, it will take forever before I can exact revenge for my father!”

After Wan Liang Han died, his Gu worms were not left behind for Wan Zhui Qing.

It was not easy for Wan Zhui Qing to cultivate, and he could only fight for opportunities by himself.

“I am here. The most peripheral resource point of Fang clan!” Wan Zhui Qing slowed down, he restrained his aura and approached quietly.

“Fang clan, regarding the hatred of killing my father, I am going to take a bit of revenge now!”

However, after a while, Wan Zhui Qing was stupefied.

He was standing dazedly on the spot, facing the desolate desert.

“Wasn’t this the location of flying sand tunnel? Wait a second, there are clear signs of relocation. Fang clan moved this resource point away?”

Wan Zhui Qing was puzzled.

Was it necessary to do that?

Just to prevent an improbable counterattack of Wan clan, they relocated the resource point?

The loss in doing that was not small.

When resource points were relocated, their productivity would fall. Because the resource point was already in sync with the surrounding environment.

Relocating a resource point was like moving trees, the roots would leave the land and lose the nutrients, even if they were transplanted to a better land, they would need to adapt for some time.

But how many areas were truly suitable for the resource point?

Even if it was an area with denser earth path dao marks, the difference in the arrangement of the dao marks could result in the destruction of the resource point.

Super forces rarely relocated their resource points.

As far as enemies were concerned, relocating a resource point was like the front-line fortress being removed, it reduced the obstructions, and they could easily invade deeper.

“No, something is wrong!”

“Super forces don’t easily relocate their resource points, but it is different now.”

“Heaven Refining Demon Venerable has been madly developing his sovereign immortal aperture, the Gu refinement price list in treasure yellow heaven mostly asks for earth path resource points too.”

“Fang clan could have secretly transacted with Fang Yuan using these resource points as the payment.”

“Then, how many Immortal Gu did they exchange for?”

A shocking thought flashed by Wan Zhui Qing’s mind, turning his face pale as paper.

“Fang clan has secretly traded with Fang Yuan, their strength has increased greatly. Our information on Fang clan is way off, oh no, tall pine oasis is in danger!”

When he realized this, Wan Zhui Qing immediately sent a message to Wan clan’s first supreme elder through treasure yellow heaven.

But at this time, Wan clan’s first supreme elder was controlling Winding Light Platform and making the final attacks on Fang clan’s earth path Immortal Gu House, how could he spare any time to look at Wan Zhui Qing’s message?

“Break!” Wan clan’s first supreme elder shouted.

“Hmph, wishful thinking.” Right at this time, a figure suddenly appeared above Wan clan’s first supreme elder.

Rank eight aura surged like a tide, it was Fang clan’s first supreme elder, rank eight Fang Gong!

Wan clan’s first supreme elder, however, did not even take a glance at Fang Gong. His sight was fixed on the earth path Immortal Gu House, he wanted to destroy this Immortal Gu House to make Fang clan suffer a heavy loss!

As for his safety, Wan clan’s first supreme elder was confident in the protection of Winding Light Platform.

However, all this was within Fang clan’s plan.

Immortal killer move — Roof Tile Breaker!

Fang Gong activated a killer move and slammed down with his palms.

Ripples spread around Winding Light Platform as it blocked Fang Gong’s attack.

Bam bam bam...

Fang Gong slammed down without stopping. Palm shadows flew in the air as attacks rained down on Winding Light Platform.

Rank seven Winding Light Platform possessed rank eight battle strength, blocking all of Fang Gong’s attacks.

But the expression of Wan clan’s first supreme elder changed abruptly.

He made a horrifying discovery: Every attack of Fang Gong’s possessed a strange power, although it could not destroy Winding Light Platform’s defensive methods, the power infiltrated the inside and caused severe damage to Winding Light Platform’s Gu worms!

Almost in an instant, Winding Light Platform was damaged to a great extent, the yellow beams of light that had been restricting Fang clan’s earth path Immortal Gu House lost their source of power and dispersed completely.

Wan clan’s first supreme elder almost spat blood from anger after seeing this.

“Fang clan, you have gone too far!” Wan clan’s first supreme elder immediately controlled Winding Light Platform to retreat.

He realized Fang clan was targeting him, more accurately, they were targeting Wan clan’s Immortal Gu House.

Compared to tall pine oasis, Winding Light Platform was Fang clan’s true objective.

Wan clan’s first supreme elder used all his strength to retreat.

But since Fang clan saw their real objective, why would they let it go so easily?

Under a normal situation, other Gu Immortals might not be able to block an Immortal Gu House’s charge and could only evade. But Fang Gong was an exception.

Fang Gong held down Winding Light Platform while Chicken Dog Coop also attacked.

After enduring for a while, Winding Light Platform crumbled apart loudly. Wan clan’s first supreme elder’s mind was filled with anger as he attacked Fang Gong.

Fang Gong’s expression was indifferent: “Wan clan’s first supreme elder, remember this moment. Our Fang clan is not to be trifled with, this Winding Light Platform is the price for going against us.”

Fang Gong punched lightly towards Wan clan’s first supreme elder while maintaining his momentum.

Wan clan’s first supreme elder only had rank seven cultivation, he simply could not catch Fang Gong’s attention.

But at the next moment, Wan clan’s first supreme elder’s expression suddenly stiffened. His killer move’s activation failed, causing him to get hit by an intense backlash, he was also struck by Fang Gong’s punch, he immediately turned into meat pulp, losing his life!

Everyone was stumped, including Fang Gong and Fang Di Chang.

“First supreme elder!!” Wan Xiao cried mournfully, he rode a wind falcon and took the chance to escape tall pine oasis.

His movement shook the Fang clan’s immortals as they regained their senses.

“What should we do now?” Fang Gong transmitted his voice to Fang Di Chang with an awkward expression.

Fang Di Chang’s expression was dark: “How could you kill Wan clan’s first supreme elder?”

This was different from their plan.

Fang clan’s true target was Wan clan’s Immortal Gu House. Wan clan had two Immortal Gu Houses, both were rank seven and could fight rank eight, they were the foundation which Wan clan relied on to be a super force. Their significance was far higher than that of tall pine oasis.

Getting rid of Winding Light Platform would be the greatest victory for Fang clan.

Fang clan’s prestige would rise sharply, no super force would dare to rashly unite against them again.

On the contrary, Wan clan would lose one of their rank seven Immortal Gu Houses, from then on, they could only hole up in their territory, unable to cause any more trouble.

But it was different now!

Wan clan’s first supreme elder was dead, this was a huge issue.

Wan clan would definitely retaliate with all their strength. They could use this reason to gather Western Desert’s righteous path forces and form a punitive expedition against Fang clan.

Because Fang clan had gone way beyond the limits.

Not only did they battle without prior notice, they even killed the other clan’s first supreme elder. It was like a neighbor suddenly crashing into someone’s home and killing its owner.

This action of Fang clan was completely a demonic path action. Righteous path forces would be frightened, afraid that they would be the next Wan clan.

Thereupon, Western Desert’s super forces would definitely unite.

“I already held back in that punch, but Wan clan’s first supreme elder was in an agitated state. He seemed to have triggered his killer move’s backlash, and by some freak coincidence, lost his life.” Fang Gong said with a sigh.

Although they won, Fang Gong was not happy.

Even the other Fang clan Gu Immortals felt a heavy mood, because all of them knew this matter was huge now.

Only one person was different.

Tang Fang Ming was hiding deep underground, excited and fearful.

“Amazing, this dream path killer move is truly amazing. Wan clan’s first supreme elder lost his life because of this, but Fang clan is completely unaware.”

“I have accomplished Lord Fang Yuan’s mission!”

[1] A type of food, Google for image.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2250: Fang Yuan’s Scheme

Countless thoughts surged in Fang Di Chang’s mind like tall towers before quickly collapsing. The rising and collapsing of the thoughts for thousands of times caused Fang Di Chang to sweat profusely and his face to flush red.

Evidently, his wisdom path deductions reached his limits.

“This is bad, extremely bad!” Fang Di Chang mumbled with an ugly expression. All the results of the deductions let him see the miserable future of Fang clan.

Previously, Wan clan’s rallying failed, thus, Fang clan avoided a calamity, in truth, this was mainly because of the uncertain relationship of Fang clan and Fang Yuan.

Adding on that the five regional walls were gone and with the fusion of the two heavens, Gu Immortals were worried for their own safety and maintained caution.

However, Fang Di Chang was very clear of the true nature of Great Love Immortal Venerable.

If Fang clan were to be besieged by Western Desert’s super forces, Fang Yuan would never stand up for them.

Fang Yuan only prioritized real benefits!

Unless Fang clan paid a high price that moved Fang Yuan’s heart, he would never help Fang clan.

Like this time, Fang clan first had the intention of attacking Wan clan, before they secretly transacted with Fang Yuan.

Fang clan paid a lot of resource points to advance the rank of the core Immortal Gu of roof tile breaker killer move and exchanged for many Immortal Gu to construct that earth path Immortal Gu House.

If Fang Yuan did not help, Fang clan and Fang Yuan’s true relationship would be exposed, then Fang clan would face destruction.

Could Fang clan pay the price for Fang Yuan’s help?

Fang Di Chang had no confidence in this.

What made him more worried was that even if Fang clan could pay a high price to request for Fang Yuan's assistance, what if the other super forces tried to imitate them, could Fang clan match their price?

"No matter what Fang clan chooses, Fang Yuan will be the biggest winner!" Fang Di Chang gritted his teeth as he thought.

Fang Yuan destroyed his body and captured his soul, Fang Di Chang could not forget this hatred.

"What should we do? This first supreme elder is really the shame of Wan clan, he actually fought so carelessly. Maybe, we can revive him?" Fang Gong suggested with a frown.

Fang Di Chang shook his head.

He had already thought of this, but they could not do it.

Not to mention that Fang clan did not have a method to revive Gu Immortals, they might need to request help from others to revive Wan clan's first supreme elder.

Even if they succeeded in reviving Wan clan's first supreme elder, would this grudge be gone?

It was similar to how Fang Di Chang was killed by Fang Yuan and his soul captured, but was released later on. Was the hatred between him and Fang Yuan gone?

How could that be possible!

This grudge deepened, on the contrary.

It could be said that the enmity between Fang clan and Wan clan was already impossible to resolve, Wan clan was definitely going to retaliate with their full strength.

Under this situation, were Fang clan to revive Wan clan's first supreme elder, it would be like reviving their enemy who would give them more trouble in the future.

It was too stupid.

Naturally, Gu Immortals had endless methods. There were many ways to resolve the hatred.

For instance, the publicly known Spring Autumn Cicada. As long as the rebirth succeeded, everything could start anew.

There were also wisdom path methods to change the feelings of Wan clan's immortals.

But these methods would need to be of an extremely high rank to be effective on all the Wan clan immortals, and Fang clan did not have them.

"Huff!" Fang Di Chang sighed, sharp light flashed past his eyes as he said heavily, "We can only continue to go forward now. We will go attack Wan clan's headquarters and deal a huge blow to them!"

Fang Gong narrowed his eyes, while the other Fang clan Gu Immortals felt a chill in their hearts.

This matter had already become big, Fang clan would no doubt face huge trouble.

Since that was the case, there was no need to hesitate, they might as well disregard the consequences and weaken Wan clan as much as possible.

“Alright!” Fang Gong made the decision.

Fang clan immediately collected Chicken Dog Coop and got inside the earth path Immortal Gu House, moving towards Wan clan’s headquarters through the underground.

However, when they reached Wan clan’s headquarters, there was no one there.

Wan clan’s Gu Immortals had evacuated long ago, their remaining Immortal Gu House Myriad Age Building, as well as all the resources in the headquarters and treasuries were also completely gone.

Fang clan’s immortals were livid.

This was the worst situation for Fang clan!

After a while of silence, Fang Di Chang suggested: “First supreme elder, at this point, I can only ask you to move with Chicken Dog Coop and clean out Wan clan’s resource points. I will lead the others to go back to our headquarters and prepare for war!”

Fang Gong nodded: “I guess we have no choice.”

Fang Di Chang’s expression was extremely solemn: “For Fang clan to get past this trial, we must rely on Fang Yuan. The more resource points you can loot, the more Immortal Gu we can exchange from Fang Yuan and have greater hope.”

“I understand!” Fang Gong chose two people to go with him inside Chicken Dog Coop, they disappeared in the horizon.

Fang Di Chang led the remaining Fang clan immortals back to Fang clan’s headquarters in the earth path Immortal Gu House.

A storm was coming, everyone in Fang clan was tense, they were like tigers who sensed threats to their lives, hairs stood on ends and their eyes opened wide, as they prepared to oppose the retaliation of a group of savage beasts!

Eastern Sea.

A sea breeze was blowing, and birds were chirping.

Fang Yuan was calmly undergoing a Gu refinement attempt.

Inside sovereign immortal aperture, the refinement of rank nine Advance Refinement had reached the mid-late stage.

It was too easy!

This was Fang Yuan’s biggest impression, even though this was the refinement of a rank nine Immortal Gu.

It was completely different from the previous time.

This time, Fang Yuan was not under the external pressure brought by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. He also did not need to guard the heavenly spirit.

Another crucial point was Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus was a wood path Immortal Gu, but advance refinement Gu was a refinement path Immortal Gu. The latter came under Fang Yuan’s specialty.

It was much easier for him to process refinement path immortal materials than to handle wood path immortal materials.

Fang Yuan was even dealing with other matters while refining the rank nine Immortal Gu.

Fang clan’s message arrived quickly, and it contained a list.

The contents of the list were over ten resource points! It did not lack large resource points, and there was even a super resource point.

Over these days, Fang Gong displayed the strength of a rank eight Gu Immortal.

Fang Di Chang managed the overall situation, and even dispatched Inquiry Dock. Fang clan combed through Wan clan’s territories, occupying many of the resource points.

“Looks like Fang clan gained a lot. Sure enough, every person has potential. How can it appear if they are not pressured?”

Fang Yuan smiled lightly.

After Fang clan entered the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, they made secret transactions.

By seeing the several Immortal Gu that Fang clan exchanged for, Fang Yuan could deduce Fang clan’s plan.

It was also reasonable for Fang clan to retaliate against Wan clan for self preservation.

Since Tang clan’s name was intentionally concealed by Fang Yuan, it was rather special for Fang Yuan to only be connected to Fang clan among all the Western Desert super forces.

Previously, Wan clan gathered Western Desert’s righteous path forces to attack Fang clan, this had already deeply provoked Fang clan.

Wan clan’s rally failed, Fang clan let out a breath of relief before deciding to take the chance to attack Wan clan. This was a sensible move of using offense as defense!

Fang Yuan immediately developed a plan when he noticed this. He manipulated the scene from behind, helping Fang clan with the Immortal Gu and raising their strength, while also sending a command to Tang clan, imparting a dream path killer move to Tang Fang Ming and also lending a dream path Immortal Gu.

Currently, Fang clan had already stepped into Fang Yuan’s trap, becoming the source of disturbance in Western Desert.

For self-preservation, they must cooperate with Fang Yuan even more deeply, seizing resource points for Fang Yuan.

On the other hand, Tang clan schemed against Fang clan, this was the same as Fang Yuan gaining a huge hold over them. Fang Yuan’s influence over Tang clan deepened much more.

In the letter, Fang clan asked for a lot of Immortal Gu, and also requested Fang

Yuan to personally go to Western Desert and display the invincibility of Great Love Immortal Venerable if necessary! For this, Fang clan agreed to pay everything.

“They want me to make a move?” Fang Yuan sneered.

How could it be possible?

In the current situation of the contest of three venerables, Fang Yuan had to make the most of every moment. It was impossible for him to make a move for Fang clan.

He was using Fang clan, using them as a chess piece.

A chess piece was a chess piece, it should be sacrificed when necessary.

Unless the value of the chess piece was extremely high and could not be replaced, Fang Yuan would not go defend it personally.

Who among Fang Yuan’s subordinates could not be replaced?

No one!

Fang Yuan could even abandon his own clones without hesitation when necessary. Why would he make a move for Fang clan?

Heavenly Court.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had just started refining Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks when an important message arrived.

“There is a change in Western Desert, Fang clan invaded Wan clan?” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s eyes flickered with starlights.

“There is something fishy about Fang clan being so radical. Did Fang Yuan secretly fuel the situation?” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable quickly thought of this detail, after all, the whole five regions knew about Fang clan openly joining the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.

“Fang clan’s strength rose sharply, Fang Yuan clearly supported them from behind. Wan clan was caught unprepared, and Wan clan’s first supreme elder died in battle. Looks like Fang Yuan is intentionally causing unrest in Western Desert.”

“Fang clan is actually willing to be ordered like this by Fang Yuan, making a move that puts the clan’s survival in risk. It seems Fang Yuan’s influence over Fang clan is much deeper than I thought!”

“This is not good.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable frowned slightly.

She quickly sensed Fang Yuan’s true motive.

“Fang Yuan does not care about Fang clan, even though he needs the resource points to develop the sovereign immortal aperture, his main target is to set an example of Fang clan to influence the Gu Immortal world of the whole five regions and two heavens!”

Fang Yuan was a refinement path venerable, it was extremely easy for him to refine Immortal Gu.

With his investment, any super force’s strength would soar rapidly. It was the so-called ‘with a sharp weapon in hand, killing intent rises’; Fang Yuan’s simple transaction could break the power balance that had existed for a long time in the five regions' Gu Immortal world.

At present, Western Desert super forces already understood the benefits of transacting with Fang Yuan.

On one hand, Fang Yuan was openly transacting Immortal Gu in treasure yellow heaven, and the price was affordable to the super forces. On the other hand, he created the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, allowing any super force to join the alliance. Moreover, once they joined the alliance, they could transact secretly and obtain a lot of benefits.

Fang clan joined the alliance, so they could transact secretly and raise their strength. Now, Wan clan Gu Immortals did not even dare to show up, they could only let Fang clan loot almost all of their resource points.

This trend was truly dangerous!

The gains of Fang clan moved people, while the miserable state of Wan clan deterred them.

What could super forces do in this situation?

The simplest choice was to join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2251: Heavenly Court's Interference

All along, Fang Yuan's foreign policy had been extremely flexible.

For instance, the content of the contribution board, mission board, and exchange board were different when comparing the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance and the sovereign immortal aperture.

Similarly, the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals had to accept strict alliance agreements when they joined the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, but when the Gu Immortals of other four regions joined, their alliance agreements were extremely relaxed with almost no bindings.

Such details were enough for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to learn of Fang Yuan's sinister and vicious mind!

She had a clear judgment of Western Desert's situation.

“Fang clan must be suppressed, they cannot be allowed to rise in power. If need be, they must be eradicated.”

“Otherwise, once other super forces start to imitate them, it will greatly increase Fang Yuan's influence over the five regions!”

Fang Yuan relied on Immortal Gu transactions and other supporting methods to easily stir the situation of the five regions' Gu Immortal world.

As the saying went, ‘humans die for wealth and birds die for food'.

If this situation was allowed to develop to become a common sentiment, then Fang Yuan's influence would cover the five regions in the future. Even if not all the five regions were affected, it would at least influence three regions.

At that time, with just a thought, Fang Yuan could control the Gu Immortal world of Southern Border, Western Desert, and Eastern Sea to besiege Central Continent!

Naturally, no matter how many Gu Immortals the three regions had, they could not hold a candle to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

A venerable was invincible, especially a venerable who was starting to exhibit the might of a Dao Lord.

But venerables could threaten each other.

If Fang Yuan's influence made the three regions' Gu Immortals into cannon fodder, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would have no choice but to make a move to protect Central Continent.

As such, there would be a change in the contest of three venerables.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would be hindered by those cannon fodder, while Fang Yuan could take the chance to surpass her.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal since the ancient times. Fang Yuan's scheme had just started, and she already saw through it from some small details!

"Currently, in the contest of three venerables, everyone is giving their all to refine natural dao marks. Fang Yuan is lagging behind, so he is using this trick to shorten the gap."

"Hmph, will it go like you wish?"

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made a decision immediately: "Zhou Xiong Xin, Wan Zi Hong, go on an expedition to Western Desert!"

Western Desert.

Sun clan headquarters.

Sun clan's first supreme elder was discussing with Wan Hao Guang and Wan Xiao.

"Fang clan attacked my Wan clan abruptly, they are seizing my Wan clan's resource points in a frenzy, they have already gone mad. This act is completely of the demonic path, everyone in Fang clan has entered the demonic path, Fang clan is the biggest demon's nest in Western Desert! Your clan is one of the core forces of Western Desert's righteous path, can you stand by and watch this situation?" Wan Hao Guang said righteously.

Sun clan's first supreme elder nodded and said: "You are right, my Sun clan will definitely use all our strength to maintain righteousness. But currently, Sun clan is in a bit of trouble..."

Sun clan's first supreme elder explained Sun clan's difficulty, he assured them at the end that if Wan clan was able to gather other super forces, Sun clan would definitely join and do their best for Western Desert.

"This old fox!" After leaving Sun clan's headquarters, Wan Hao Guang said furiously.

Wan Xiao smiled bitterly: "Sun clan is the most timid among Western Desert's super forces. It is not strange for Sun clan's first supreme elder to say that.

It is already his greatest sincerity to be here expressing his stance. Which clan should we go to next?”

Just as he was speaking, two figures flew over from the horizons, their rank eight aura clear and unconcealed.

“Who is it?”

“Ah, they are Heavenly Court Gu Immortals!”

Wan Xiao and Wan Hao Guang were on guard.

They were not afraid, after all, they had Myriad Age Building.

The two Heavenly Court immortals were Zhou Xiong Xin and Wan Zi Hong.

“Please hold on a moment, friends from Wan clan. We are here to help you.” Zhou Xiong Xin greeted from afar.

Wan Xiao and Wan Hao Guang looked at each other, seeing the joy in the depths of their eyes.

Immediately, the two stopped on the spot, hiding their joy while being on full alert.

The two Heavenly Court immortals stopped one thousand steps away, expressing they bore no ill intentions.

Wan Zi Hong did not speak, letting Zhou Xiong Xin explain their purpose in coming: “Fang clan joined the so-called Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, and received support from Heaven Refining Demon Venerable. They want to overthrow Western Desert’s righteous path, and turn the whole of Western Desert into a demonic den. Although Heavenly Court is the leader of Central Continent, we cannot bear to watch this happen, so the two of us were sent to help and eliminate this demonic trend, in order to restore light to the world.”

Wan Hao Guang asked: “How will Heavenly Court help? Will Star Constellation Immortal Venerable make a move if necessary?”

These two questions were crucial.

Heavenly Court’s help was not a completely good thing for Wan clan, if it was not handled properly, it would be adding onto Wan clan’s troubles and they would be beyond redemption.

The reason?

Heavenly Court was Central Continent’s force, and this was Western Desert.

Although five regional walls had disappeared, how could the five regional walls that had existed from the beginning of the world disappear so easily from the Gu Immortals’ hearts?

If Heavenly Court were to personally interfere in Wan clan’s fight, Wan clan would be publicly recognized as Heavenly Court’s subordinate force, Central Continent’s bridgehead in Western Desert.

Under such a situation, Western Desert super forces would be vigilant and stay their hand. Wan clan would lose the reason for assembling the Western Desert super forces, and everyone would be on guard against them.

What was an internal battle between Western Desert forces, would become the battle of Fang Yuan and Fang clan against Heavenly Court and Wan clan.

Zhou Xiong Xin smiled: “You can rest assured, we will not personally take part in this campaign against Fang clan.”

Wan Hao Guang and Wan Xiao let out sighs of relief.

Heavenly Court Gu Immortals could not interfere directly.

Zhou Xiong Xin continued: “Wan clan’s and Fang clan’s fight is Western Desert’s internal matter. The reason Heavenly Court is willing to help Wan clan is to deal with Heaven Refining Demon Venerable Fang Yuan. If Fang Yuan makes a move or sends his subordinates to participate in the battle, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable will not stand by and do nothing, our Heavenly Court’s immortals will also make a move to defend righteousness and ensure peace in the world!”

Wan Hao Guang and Wan Xiao could not restrain their joy.

Since the start, what they were most wary of was the relationship between Fang clan and Fang Yuan. If Fang Yuan made a move, which Western Desert super force could block him?

No one!

Heavenly Court’s guarantee immediately removed Wan clan’s greatest apprehension.

When Wan clan rallied Western Desert forces later on, and these forces learned of this situation, they would definitely help Wan clan.

Wan Xiao questioned: “Fang clan joined the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, and used resource points to exchange for a large number of Immortal Gu, even constructing a new Immortal Gu House. They are crazily relocating our resource points now, their intention is clear as day. So, can Heavenly Court sell us some Immortal Gu?”

Wan Hao Guang also looked at the two Heavenly Court immortals with bright eyes.

Zhou Xiong Xin sneered inwardly: “Wishful thinking! Immortal Gu are unique, there are barely enough Immortal Gu for us to use, how can we sell them?”

On the surface, however, he showed a smile: “We cannot sell Immortal Gu, but we can lend them. On the other hand, we can consider transacting immortal killer moves and Immortal Gu recipes.”

Zhou Xiong Xin then gave a quote which immediately caused Wan Xiao’s and Wan Hao Guang’s expressions to become unsightly.

Heavenly Court’s price was high, Wan clan’s wallet would bleed if they wanted to reach that price.

“Heavenly Court’s righteousness comes at a price.” Zhou Xiong Xin suddenly said with a low voice, “In fact, Heavenly Court will give financial support that will certainly satisfy your clan.”

“Oh? We would like to hear the details.”

Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan was communicating with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu.

“Bai Zu, you clearly cultivate enslavement path, why are you asking me to refine blood path Gu?” Fang Yuan deliberately asked.

Far away in Northern Plains, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was smiling bitterly.

He mumbled internally: “You think I want to do this?”

But he had no choice.

For the blood path Immortal Gu transaction, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable personally summoned Heavenly Lord Bai Zu to make him a middle man for the transaction.

How could Heavenly Lord Bai Zu refuse?

He was only a meager rank eight Gu Immortal, and his clan was established in Northern Plains. He had no choice but to agree to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s command.

As the saying went, people had to be humble when they were in an inferior position.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu naturally resented Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, at the same time, he also resented Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s speech as Great Love shook the whole world. He publicized his connection with the five regions’ Gu Immortals and forces, among them, the transaction with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was completely made up.

Back then, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had been so frightened that he even burnt his skewer!

Fang Yuan wanted to use this to incite and probe Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s response. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s ideal was hereditary monarchy, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was not his bloodline descendant, Bai Zu tribe was also being ostracized and suppressed by Huang Jin tribes.

This was Fang Yuan’s incitement plan, maybe it could make Huang Jin tribes ally and exterminate Bai Zu tribe?

Naturally, the possibility was small, the world did not lack smart people.

But Fang Yuan’s plan was extremely low cost, it took just a few words.

And how would he know if he did not try?

So, a grand rank eight Gu Immortal Heavenly Lord Bai Zu had to live in fear and anxiety, afraid of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable picking on him.

In the end, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable really did pick on him, giving him a mission.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s attitude was clear: Aren’t you, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, close with Fang Yuan? Then, be my middleman and transact blood path Immortal Gu. Use your actions and results to prove your sincerity to me, Longevity Heaven, and the entire righteous path of Northern Plains!

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu felt wronged!

When did he have a close relationship with Fang Yuan?

It was clearly Chu Du who was linked to Fang Yuan. What did it have to do with him, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu? He had even fought Fang Yuan before.

He wanted to prove his innocence, but Giant Sun Immortal Venerable simply did not talk about this, and only wanted him to receive the task.

In fact, from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s point of view, there were very few people who could take on this task. Longevity Heaven and the Huang Jin tribes’ Gu Immortals were out of the question because they represented Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu and Chu Du were different, however.

“Lord Fang Yuan, you are Great Love Immortal Venerable, why do you need to make fun of a minor character like me.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu put himself in a low position, “How can a wise hero like you not know of my situation?”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: “What blood path Immortal Gu do you want?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2252: Rank Nine Advance Refinement Gu!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had instructed Heavenly Lord Bai Zu: If possible, try your best to obtain all of Fang Yuan’s blood path Immortal Gu!

But Heavenly Lord Bai Zu naturally could not say that right now, so he mentioned ten Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan sneered when he received the message.

Among these Immortal Gu, there were Bloodline, Blood Asset, Blood Skull, and Blood Qi.

Fang Yuan possessed bloodline Gu.

This Immortal Gu had been Wu clan’s property. Back when Fang Yuan disguised as Wu Yi Hai, Wu clan had even used this bloodline Gu to test Fang Yuan.

Later, Fang Yuan scammed them and became its owner.

It was not difficult for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to know of this information.

Fang Yuan also had blood asset Immortal Gu.

This was a unique Gu created by Lang Ya land spirit by combining some blood path Gu recipes he bought in treasure yellow heaven.

Fang Yuan smoothly obtained it from Lang Ya Sect.

Currently, blood asset Immortal Gu was already raised from rank six to rank eight. It was one of the core Immortal Gu of Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, as one of the four elements, it was extremely important.

Blood skull Immortal Gu was also with Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan originally possessed rank four blood skull mortal Gu, and he had once used it to raise his aptitude.

But the price of using blood skull mortal Gu was very high, the Gu Master had to kill enough blood-related kin to raise their aptitude.

In Qing Mao Mountain, Fang Yuan slaughtered almost the whole of Gu Yue village to raise his aptitude.

At Gu Immortal level, the price of using blood skull Gu to raise aptitude rose explosively. To Gu Immortals who acted alone, blood skull Gu was of little use.

But to a force, blood skull Gu was extremely significant.

Fang Yuan could not obtain benefits from blood skull Gu, but others could.

The memories from the five hundred years of his previous life told him that blood skull Immortal Gu's true inheritance was destroyed because of the changes in the world.

So, before the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, when he helped many Gu Immortals undergo immortal ascension, he used the natural inspiration to ask for a rather intact blood skull Immortal Gu recipe.

Together with his deductions, he created a blood skull Immortal Gu recipe.

Fang Yuan easily refined blood skull Immortal Gu with this Immortal Gu recipe.

Like he expected, blood skull Immortal Gu's effect was still to raise aptitude. Because it was an Immortal Gu, it was effective on Gu Immortals. The flaw was still the same requirement of killing blood-related kin. The higher the cultivation level of the Gu Immortal, the larger the number of people they needed to kill, they even had to kill Gu Immortal relatives!

As for blood qi Immortal Gu, it was also in Fang Yuan's hands.

Demon Immortal Qi Jue obtained blood qi Immortal Gu true inheritance, and had transacted the Immortal Gu recipe with Fang Yuan.

After Demon Immortal Qi Jue died, Fang Yuan refined it.

Currently, it was only at rank six.

Besides this, Fang Yuan also had other blood path Immortal Gu. For instance, blood trace Gu and blood oath Gu.

These two blood path Immortal Gu were created by Eastern Sea's blood path demonic immortals Ding Yan and Ding Qi. One was used for investigation, and the other could achieve the effect of information path.

Fang Yuan did not obtain these two Immortal Gu recipes from Ding Yan and Ding Qi, but he knew these two Immortal Gu were destroyed.

Using natural inspiration, he asked for complete Immortal Gu recipes, and adding on his own deductions, he refined them.

"I will be honest with you, Bai Zu. I have many blood path Immortal Gu." Fang Yuan said.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu immediately praised: "Lord Fang Yuan is well-prepared and farsighted. As a refinement path venerable, you are the number one expert in refinement path in history. I am in deep admiration."

Fang Yuan chuckled: "If you want to trade Immortal Gu, then exchange for it with the Primordial Domain extraction method."

Before Heavenly Lord Bai Zu looked for Fang Yuan, he was instructed by Giant Sun

Immortal Venerable. Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable told him about the Primordial Domain extraction method.

In Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s mind, Fang Yuan desired a method to retrieve the Primordial Domain. This was quite clear, just look at treasure yellow heaven, Fang Yuan’s portion of the Primordial Domain was still stored there.

Fang Yuan had not taken it out even now, it could be judged that he had no way to extract it.

So, this method was the greatest bargaining chip to purchase the blood path Immortal Gu and could be made use of!

“As expected, Fang Yuan immediately mentioned the method to take out Primordial Domain, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable guessed correctly!” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was excited inwardly, his trepidation also disappeared for the most part.

He intentionally remained silent for a while before responding: “The Primordial Domain extraction method?”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu pretended to be in a difficult position.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly: “Don’t try any tricks, since you have been sent by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, didn’t he instruct you?”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s mind shook as he quickly corrected his attitude: “Lord Fang Yuan is wise and mighty, please forgive my impudence.”

Fang Yuan gave a light nod: “Then use the Primordial Domain extraction method to purchase one blood path Immortal Gu.”

“Wh... what?” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was shaken, Fang Yuan was so absurd and greedy that he did not even dare to believe those words.

“Lord Fang Yuan, I think the Primordial Domain extraction method is extremely valuable and can definitely be exchanged for ten blood path Immortal Gu.” Heavenly Lord Bai Zu said quickly.

Fang Yuan sneered: “Hehe, you are actually so absurd and greedy, do you have no shame!”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu: “...”

Fang Yuan simply did not require any Primordial Domain extraction method, he was just teasing Heavenly Lord Bai Zu while refining advance refinement Gu.

Inside sovereign immortal aperture, tens of long rivers were flying in the sky.

Every river was filled with all kinds of immortal materials.

The river streams converged sometimes, and separated at other times.

To refine rank nine advance refinement Gu, Fang Yuan was mainly using the water refinement technique.

Rank eight water refinement Immortal Gu—one of the core Immortal Gu of Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool—had been activated since the start of the refinement.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu came to his senses and started to raise the price: “Lord Fang Yuan, you are clear of my sincerity. You also know that the Primordial Domain extraction method is extremely rare. This Primordial Domain extraction method is valuable to you, and it is what you need the most currently. Just ten blood path Immortal Gu are not of any significance to you. You are a refinement path venerable, isn’t it a simple matter to refine any Immortal Gu for you?”

Fang Yuan scoffed, his attitude turning cold quickly: “Back then, I transacted Primordial Domain with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, shouldn’t he have handed the Primordial Domain extraction method as well? Now, I can’t even take it out, I have yet to settle the accounts with him, but he is actually shameless enough to sell this thing? Could it be that I, a grand refinement path venerable, cannot deduce a rank nine refinement path killer move to handle the Primordial Domain as an immortal material and extract it?”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu quickly said: “Lord Fang Yuan, please quell your anger.”

“Shut up.” Fang Yuan continued, “Go tell Giant Sun this, I rushed to refine blood path Immortal Gu to intentionally make things difficult for him. He wants to dual cultivate blood path? Hehe, I will continue to refine even more blood path Immortal Gu ahead of him! Unless he hands over the Primordial Domain extraction method to me and shows me his sincerity.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu did not dare to talk anymore. He heaved a sigh and contacted Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

After Giant Sun Immortal Venerable learned of the event, he immediately scolded: “That kid Fang Yuan is really arrogant, actually daring to threaten me. Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, you are also trash, showing such a cowering attitude! Don’t you know that you are negotiating with Fang Yuan as my representative?”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu could only say: “Lord Giant Sun, it is my mistake! I am not of Huang Jin bloodline and my ability is meager...”

“Alright.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable interrupted him, “It is because you are not of Huang Jin bloodline and have meager ability that I am giving these opportunities to you to temper yourself and increase your ability.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu: “...”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable continued: “Continue to negotiate with Fang Yuan, the Primordial Domain extraction method... I won’t hand it over for free. Tell Fang Yuan that in the contest of three venerables, his progress is the slowest and he has the least immortal essence. Tell him to assess the situation, cooperating with me will give him great benefits and fill up the gap. A wise person should be aware of their situation.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu asked: “If so, Lord Giant Sun, how many blood path Immortal Gu should I exchange the Primordial Domain extraction method for?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was silent for a bit.

Hearing Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s words, Fang Yuan’s plan was to use his refinement path venerable foundation to deduce a rank nine killer move to extract Primordial Domain.

Although this method was time consuming, it was a feasible method indeed.

Thereupon, the Primordial Domain extraction method could not be priced too high.

But regarding the price, in Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s opinion, the higher the better.

In the end, he chided Heavenly Lord Bai Zu: “It will depend on your effort to see how many blood path Immortal Gu you can exchange for, and that will show your sincerity to Longevity Heaven. Go, I am watching your performance.”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu felt stifled under the enormous pressure. He contacted Fang Yuan once again.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture, some issues emerged in the handling of refinement path immortal materials.

Fang Yuan was carefully separating the rivers, while removing several of them.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu said with a smile: “Lord Fang Yuan, there is really no way to offer the Primordial Domain extraction method as a gift. But since you feel ten blood path Immortal Gu is too much, how about... eight?”

Fang Yuan did not have the mood to talk with Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, he chided immediately: “Junior Bai Zu, how can I, a grand venerable, haggle with you? You think I am a mortal merchant?”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu cursed inwardly, while immediately saying: “I won’t dare to!”

Fang Yuan continued: “Let’s put aside the matter of the Primordial Domain extraction method. Since you want to purchase blood path Immortal Gu, offer more of the Primordial Domain.”

“This...”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu wanted to say something but was interrupted by Fang Yuan: “What are you standing dazedly for? Can you decide it? Why aren’t you returning to ask for instructions?”

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu’s anger was soaring. He, a mighty rank eight Gu Immortal, had been turned into a messenger.

And the communicating parties happened to be venerables, he could not afford to offend them!

He could only swallow this grievance and look for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable again.

“This is indeed Fang Yuan, a guy with infinite greed.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable laughed.

He had a lot of the Primordial Domain. The Primordial Domain had little value to him, after all, he did not have the sovereign immortal body.

Currently, it was already Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s limit to cultivate luck path and blood path.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could use the Primordial Domain to cultivate his subordinates.

“It is not impossible to transact them with Fang Yuan...” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable pondered for a while before informing Heavenly Lord Bai Zu of this decision.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu contacted Fang Yuan once again.

“Lord Fang Yuan, lord?”

He tried to contact many times, but Fang Yuan simply ignored him.

Heavenly Lord Bai Zu: “...”

At this moment, inside the sovereign immortal aperture, tens of rivers had merged, raising countless ripples.

A completely new advance refinement Gu rose from the vast river.

Advance Refinement had reached rank nine!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2253: Internal Worry, External Threat

“Rank nine advance refinement Gu...” Fang Yuan inspected carefully and found that the appearance was not much different from its previous rank eight version.

However, it had already undergone a qualitative change!

This was Fang Yuan’s second rank nine Immortal Gu, it would provide a huge help to Fang Yuan.

Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool would also rise to become a rank nine Immortal Gu House because of this.

A rank nine Immortal Gu House!

Such Immortal Gu Houses were few even in the whole history of humanity.

Heavenly Court’s Heaven Overseeing Tower was the most famous Gu House. Unfortunately, with the destruction of rank nine fate Gu, it could not be constructed again.

“Once I finish with the modifications, rank nine advance refinement Gu can be placed in Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool once again, thereby allowing this Immortal Gu House to also experience a qualitative change. If there was a ranking list for Immortal Gu Houses, it would be at first place for sure.”

Fang Yuan evaluated in his mind.

If it was before, Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool might be at the same ranking as Divine Emperor City, but as long as it became a true rank nine, it would suppress Divine Emperor City stably.

After all, Divine Emperor City did not have a rank nine Immortal Gu.

Naturally, Fang Yuan needed to modify the previous Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, to make it suitable for rank nine advance refinement Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan was a refinement path venerable, a supreme grandmaster in refinement path, it was not hard for him to modify this.

Fang Yuan placed advance refinement Immortal Gu aside and inspected himself.

Just like he expected, because of the second rank nine Immortal Gu, the fishing net-like heaven path dao marks left on him by the killer move obscured heavenly secret were being expended at almost double the speed of before!

This showed that rank nine advance refinement Gu would provide an enormous help to Fang Yuan.

It had a huge significance as it could influence many subsequent matters.

It would be much easier for Fang Yuan to raise the rank of other rank eight Immortal Gu from now on.

“Fortunately, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable have expended a lot of immortal essence, they also need to use their remaining immortal essence to refine natural dao marks. They will not inspect frequently like before, this will greatly reduce the pressure on obscured heavenly secret.”

Fang Yuan was aware that obscured heavenly secret was already reaching its limits at this stage.

If Fang Yuan wanted to refine a third rank nine Immortal Gu, obscured heavenly secret might help him conceal it during the early stage, but it would not be able to keep on concealing it at the mid-late stage. The effect of the killer move would dissipate completely.

“So, should I refine or not? If I am to refine the third rank nine Immortal Gu, which should I refine?”

Fang Yuan calmed down and analyzed the situation.

He was now facing problems both internally and externally!

The internal problem was the instability of the sovereign immortal aperture.

Because of non-conflicting dao marks, abnormal situations kept on occurring, causing the whole immortal aperture’s ecology to be unstable.

Because of the severe loss of subordinates in the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, there were few Gu Immortals in the sovereign immortal aperture, and they were barely able to stabilize the situation.

Secondly were calamities and tribulations.

Even venerables needed to undergo tribulation.

Among the three venerables, it was extremely difficult for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to change the time flow of their immortal aperture using time path methods because of conflicting dao marks.

Fang Yuan, however, sped his time flow twice when raising the rank of Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus.

For this, his time path clone, He Chun Qiu’s time path foundation was almost entirely used up.

For some time, Fang Yuan would not be able to change the sovereign immortal aperture’s rate of time. If he did it again, it would lead to a series of changes, abnormal situations would erupt frequently and form into a terrifying tribulation that would cover the whole of the sovereign immortal aperture.

This was because a time path killer move that could transform the whole sovereign immortal aperture had to be of an extremely high rank. To be effective, many time path dao marks had to be engraved or modified.

The sudden change in these time path dao marks would create a chain reaction in the sovereign immortal aperture, leading to unpredictable changes and ultimately causing severe losses.

If a loss occurred, it would have an enormous impact on him.

Previously, Fang Yuan used Landscape as Before along with the year essence pools as recovery methods, but they could not be used now.

Because the water of the River of Time in the year essence pools had poured in just recently. The essence of this method were still the time path dao marks.

The abnormal situations that erupted because of the disorderly time path dao marks would make the usage of any time path dao marks aggravate the situation.

“To reduce the danger of this, I need to construct a time path dao vein at least!”

The third internal problem was the sovereign immortal body’s food.

Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body was created from sovereign immortal fetus Gu, it needed to feed on similarly ranked immortal apertures every set interval of time.

Fang Yuan’s cultivation was rank nine now, so he needed to devour rank nine immortal apertures!

Looking at it from this point, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable were Fang Yuan’s food.

But the difficulty in this was enormous.

Naturally, Fang Yuan was prepared.

He schemed against the revived Paradise Earth in Crazed Demon Cave. Before Paradise Earth died, he was only a slight distance away from rank nine, his corpse still had a rank eight immortal aperture.

This rank eight immortal aperture was at quasi-rank nine level. Moreover, because Paradise Earth cultivated heaven path, this immortal aperture displayed a unique style, it could actually form into an independent entity that was extremely stable.

Normally speaking, when a Gu Immortal died, their immortal aperture would be unstable and fall on the world, opening their immortal aperture entrance to absorb a large amount of heaven and earth qi, to form either a blessed land or a grotto-heaven.

But Paradise Earth’s quasi-rank nine heaven path immortal aperture was special, it was stable.

“If it becomes hopeless in the future, I will split my soul to use Paradise Earth’s body to create a heaven path clone. Then, let this clone undergo tribulation to become a heaven path venerable, then devour its rank nine immortal aperture!”

Paradise Earth’s corpse was Fang Yuan’s future food.

Naturally, doing this was quite wasteful.

If possible, Fang Yuan would prefer having a heaven path venerable clone to assist him!

The three main internal problems were: sovereign immortal aperture, calamities and tribulations, and food. Besides these, Fang Yuan also had external problems.

The external problems were the venerables.

Fang Yuan had quietly refined two rank nine Immortal Gu, this was his greatest advantage now. But other venerables also had their advantages.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had refined the most dao marks among the three venerables!

In his territory, he could fight against two others and even gain an upper hand.

The amplification from the outside world’s dao marks was too huge.

And although Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was below Giant Sun Immortal Venerable in this aspect, the scale of her refined wisdom path dao marks clearly surpassed Fang Yuan’s.

Moreover, Fang Yuan could guess Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was modifying her killer moves.

Fang Yuan had almost no foundation in this aspect.

He had two newly refined rank nine Immortal Gu, but he had no complementary killer moves to use with them.

Fang Yuan’s own skill in deducing killer moves was far below Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s.

Were the three venerables to fight now, Fang Yuan’s two rank nine Immortal Gu could not provide direct help.

There was another point of the two venerables that Fang Yuan envied.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had Longevity Heaven, while Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had Heavenly Court.

The two venerables had their own headquarters, as long as they hid inside, they would receive a huge amplification and show the might of a Dao Lord!

Even if the other two venerables allied sincerely, they would be without options.

This gave them each an impenetrable fortress!

Even if the situation were to crumble apart, as long as they had their headquarters, they would have a foothold and hope to counterattack.

Fang Yuan, however, did not have it.

The sovereign immortal aperture was unstable, how could he dare to use it as a battlefield?

He really could not compare to the other two venerables in this aspect. After all, the two venerables had the accumulation of their past lives, while Fang Yuan was not even a rank eight Gu Immortal in the five hundred years of his previous life.

The main reason was because in Fang Yuan’s previous five hundred years, fate Gu still existed. Heaven’s will made arrangements for him, and venerables had their own arrangements, Fang Yuan had no ability to go against them.

So, once Fang Yuan lost, he would not have a place to take shelter.

Fang Yuan thought for a long while, but could not come to a decision.

There was a tough decision in front of him.

He could choose to refine or not, both would have a great impact on his following actions.

For instance, if he refined a rank nine Immortal Gu that could be used directly in a fight, Fang Yuan might make a move to suppress the other venerables, consume their immortal essence and enlarge his immortal essence advantage.

If he did not refine it, obscured heavenly secret could still hold on for some time. Using this chance, Fang Yuan could secretly accumulate even more advantages.

It depended on Fang Yuan’s choice.

“I don’t have enough information...”

Fang Yuan heaved a deep sigh.

Unlike the concluded battle in Crazed Demon Cave, venerables had the time to develop now. Their trump cards and methods had already changed.

With the situation being unclear, it was not easy to make a decision!

Another advantage of choosing a direct confrontation was that information could be forcefully obtained.

But Fang Yuan felt the plan of suppressing two venerables at the same time was somewhat unreliable. They had their own territories, and if the two venerables were forced to join hands, could Fang Yuan handle it?

As the contest of three venerables prolonged, the importance of information became even more prominent.

Fang Yuan, however, was not specialized in this aspect.

Information path was most specialized in gathering information, and Fang Yuan never had a notable accomplishment in information path.

This did not mean he did not have any progress in information path.

Although Li Xiao Bai had been entrusted with the hope of information path back then, he was just an idle chess piece now. Fang Yuan’s current foundation was still effective in gathering information on ordinary Gu Immortals or super forces.

But his attainment in information path had never caught up with his development.

Now that he was dealing with two venerables, this aspect appeared quite weak.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable inspected him, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable deduced him, but Fang Yuan had no way to make any counterattacks.

Just as Fang Yuan was pondering deeply, the situation in Western Desert was changing rapidly.

Wan Xiao, Wan Zi Hong, Sun Wang, as well as Wan Zi Hong, Zhou Xiong Xin and the rest arrived in Xiao clan’s headquarters blessed land.

"I already know of your purpose in coming. Fang clan has gone mad and fallen into the demonic path, they are the shame of Western Desert's righteous path. My Xiao clan is willing to help Wan clan to recover your lost territory!" Xiao Ye Hu expressed the stance of Xiao clan clearly.

Wan clan's group formed an alliance with Xiao clan smoothly.

After a round of discussion, Wan clan was willing to cede resource points like visualization oasis, perfume flying island, and black-yellow earth pool. Xiao clan would dispatch Xiao Ye Hu and several other Xiao clan experts.

At the same time, Heavenly Court supported them with immortal essence stones. Moreover, Heavenly Court guaranteed that if Heaven Refining Demon Venerable made a move, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would definitely appear to obstruct him and protect Western Desert's righteous path forces.

With Zhou Xiong Xin's and Wan Zi Hong's active participation, a righteous path alliance against Fang clan was forming rapidly!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2254: I Want To Sleep

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Western Desert.

Mermaid immortal Yu Zi's expression was pale, she panted while looking at the flying sand tunnel in front of her.

"It is finally set up." Yu Zi mumbled.

Rockman Gu Immortal Shi San Bai thanked her: "Yu Zi, you specialize in water path, setting up this kind of earth path resource point is truly hard on you. I could not have accomplished this by myself."

Rockmen were most specialized in earth path.

This was their racial talent.

Originally, Shi San Bai and Shi Gua Bi had agreed to finish the mission of setting up the earth path resource points.

But not long ago, Fang Yuan suddenly sent a command and dispatched several rockman Gu Immortals out of the sovereign immortal aperture.

Shi San Bai had no other options but to wait for others to team up with him.

In the end, he teamed up with Yu Zi.

Although Yu Zi specialized in water path, she was a rank seven Gu Immortal after all.

With Shi San Bai as the leader and Yu Zi as the support, the two cooperated and spent close to ten days to set up this resource point, finishing the mission.

Seeing Shi San Bai expressing his gratitude, Yu Zi gave a humble reply with a polite attitude.

She had her own plans, in fact.

“Resource points like flying sand tunnel can be used as earth vein nodes.”

“Lord Fang Yuan’s clone will personally come to set up an immortal formation in this resource point to change it into one of the earth vein nodes.”

“This is the chance for me to meet Lord Fang Yuan!”

When Yu Zi saw Fang Yuan’s main body, her determination had been shaken. But she had gotten over it during this period of time.

She did not have any extravagant hope of building a relationship with Fang Yuan’s main body, so her attention was placed on Fang Yuan’s clones.

As long as she could connect to Fang Yuan, becoming one of his fiancées, the merman race’s status would immediately be stable and unshakable.

Moreover, with this relationship, the merman race would obtain powerful protection for their development.

It was because she had this plot, Yu Zi took on this mission and came to cooperate with Shi San Bai.

A figure suddenly appeared in the horizon.

“Lord Wu Shuai is here!” Shi San Bai showed a respectful expression.

“He is here, Wu Shuai is Fang Yuan’s dragonman clone.” Yu Zi’s heartbeat accelerated as she encouraged herself inwardly.

It was up to her to fight for the merman race’s future.

Yu Zi quickly checked her appearance, this time, she was wearing a rare and precious pearl necklace that constantly let out the light scent of sea wind. Her elaborate robe showed off her alluring figure, and the bright fish scales gave off a feeling of being unblemished.

Yu Zi nodded in satisfaction inwardly and encouraged herself. She looked around and had a light smile on her face as she tried her best to show a captivating expression.

Shi San Bai was dumbstruck, immediately understanding the mermaid immortal’s plan.

When Wu Shuai arrived above flying sand tunnel, Yu Zi said softly: “Greetings to Lord Wu Shuai!”

This voice made Shi San Bai feel a chill. He also quickly paid his greetings.

Wu Shuai glanced at them and nodded lightly before activating an investigative killer move to carefully inspect the flying sand tunnel.

After three rounds of inspection, Wu Shuai said contentedly: “Not bad, you have done a good job in setting up this flying sand tunnel.”

After saying so, Wu Shuai started controlling Immortal Gu, mortal Gu, and many immortal materials as he began to set up an immortal formation.

Yu Zi carefully sized Wu Shuai up. He was muscular and handsome, he had a tall nose bridge and firm lips. He looked like a peerless hero.

His pupils were the color of amber, he had a pair of golden spiral horns, especially his pure-gold dragon scales that shone dazzlingly, they suited the merfolk sense of aesthetic beauty.

“Lord Fang Yuan really has peerless beauty!” Yu Zi admired inwardly.

The beauty of Fang Yuan’s main body was a kind of a shock to her, she had a feeling that she could only worship and look up to it, making her feel inferior. While Wu Shuai’s heroic appearance moved her heart.

After several hours, Wu Shuai finished setting up the immortal formation.

“Lord Wu Shuai really has amazing methods, you can set up the immortal formation with such little effort.” Yu Zi immediately praised.

Wu Shuai smiled: “I can’t draw a conclusion yet, I need to see the actual effect. Move back and take care of your safety.”

The first activation of a newly constructed formation was rather dangerous. If the killer move were to fail, it would lead to a backlash. The immortal formation would break apart, and not only would it inflict a backlash on the Gu Immortal, it would also cause a violent change in the surroundings.

After all the formation was closely connected to its surroundings.

Especially a large formation over a resource point like this, once it broke apart, the violent change due to the massively concentrated dao marks in the resource point would cause even higher damage. It was even more so in an environment like that of the sovereign immortal aperture.

This was derived from experience.

There were already several failures in the arrangement of immortal formations, which caused dao marks to turn chaotic and the surroundings to change intensely. The loss of the resource points was a small matter, they even resulted in terrifying abnormal situations!

Wu Shuai activated the formation carefully.

He cultivated enslavement path after all. The reason he could set up the formation was because he shared attainment levels with the main body.

So, if there was a mistake in the formation, it would be hard for Wu Shuai to deal with it with his methods as he was not a formation path Gu Immortal.

The immortal formation began to activate. Nothing unexpected happened for the moment.

Wu Shuai’s eyes were bright as torches without any signs of relaxing.

After a few breaths of time, Yu Zi finally could not endure it, she bravely approached Wu Shuai and said with a revering expression: “Lord Wu Shuai, this immortal formation seems to have no issue.”

Wu Shuai did not look at her, he sniffed the air and frowned slightly: “What is this smell?”

Yu Zi was joyous and was just about to say shyly that this was the fragrance of her pearls.

But right at this moment, there was an explosion!

A large amount of stench qi gushed out of the flying sand tunnel.

Around ten li of the surroundings immediately became filled with a foul smell. Yu Zi’s expression was pale, she nearly vomited.

The fragrance of her pearls was completely drowned, moreover, the pure-white pearl necklace was dyed black.

Wu Shuai laughed loudly: “You don’t need to worry, this is earth stench qi. The method of relocating this flying sand tunnel was not good enough, so these accumulated stench qi collected inside the tunnel. But it is alright now, this formation has discharged them, there are no hidden threats left.”

“Congratulations, Lord Wu Shuai!” Shi San Bai quickly cheered.

Yu Zi also praised while enduring the stench: “This is all due to Lord Wu Shuai’s extraordinary methods.”

She approached him courageously once again, trying her hardest to attract Wu Shuai’s gaze.

But right at this time, sandy rocks shot out of the flying sand tunnel.

These sandy rocks were filled with moisture, thus the stench they emitted was even worse than the earth stench qi.

Lumps of sandy rocks flew to the air before falling down to the surrounding area with splattering sounds.

Just like...

Just like taking a dump.

Yu Zi looked at the sandy rocks that filled the sky, she felt despair.

In this situation, no matter how beautiful she was, Wu Shuai would not be moved.

After the sandy rocks fell for a while, it became normal again.

A large amount of fine, dry sand grains shot out of the flying sand tunnel. The sand grains flew up to one hundred or so feet high before sprinkling down on the ground like a drizzle.

This was flying sand, it had a soft texture, it was an immortal material.

Although it was only a rank six immortal material, the grains were in high quantities.

Under the effect of the formation, the flying sand tunnel had become one of the earth vein nodes.

Wu Shuai nodded contentedly and said in a joyous tone: “Now, the second ring of the earth vein is finished. Although we were also at second ring before the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, the nodes in that second ring were far fewer than the present scale.”

“I am sure this world will keep getting better!” Yu Zi added in agreement.

Wu Shuai glanced at her, then glanced at Shi San Bai before flying away.

Yu Zi and Shi San Bai quickly bade him farewell.

Only when Wu Shuai had disappeared in the horizons, did Yu Zi take back her gaze and sighed deeply, unable to hide her deep disappointment.

Shi San Bai laughed inwardly, he knew the mermaid’s plan but did not look down on her.

Mermen had already lived in the sovereign immortal aperture for some time now, this period of time was neither long nor short. The mermaid immortals were meticulous in their tasks, and almost all the Gu Immortals knew of them.

In Shi San Bai’s opinion, the weak relying on the strong to survive was a wise plan.

He did not feel any hostility, after all, rockmen were all male, they were simply not in the competition.

So, Shi San Bai feigned ignorance: “I am going to continue setting up another earth path resource point. Fairy Yu Zi, are you willing to continue teaming up with me?”

Shi San Bai naturally hoped to have an earth path Gu Immortal as an ally, but the manpower in the sovereign immortal aperture was truly in shortage right now.

Yu Zi had already worked with him, they had a certain level of tacit cooperation.

Yu Zi asked for the details, before refusing Shi San Bai politely while showing a difficult expression.

The next earth path resource point could not be treated as an earth vein node, that meant Yu Zi could not see Fang Yuan’s clone, so she did not have any incentive to do it.

Shi San Bai understood, suggesting: “From what I see, you should take a rest.”

Yu Zi felt somewhat strange, a thought emerging in her mind: “The Gu Immortals in the sovereign immortal aperture actually rest?”

Yu Zi had lived here for some time, she had already recognized what workaholics the Gu Immortals here were, they did not know what rest was.

This was the first time she heard the word ‘rest’ from a Gu Immortal here.

Shi San Bai laughed: “This is my own experience. The mission board will never be empty, in fact, there are endless missions, but we are short on manpower. Most of the time, we might not be proficient in the mission, but we have no choice but to force ourselves to finish them.”

“It is like how you cultivate water path and had to use much more effort to set up the earth path resource point. You aren’t even able to display twenty percent of your strength, which will feel stifling. So, I suggest you take on some missions that allow you to display all your strength. That way, you can ease your mind.”

Yu Zi nodded and expressed her thanks.

But she was coughing out blood in her mind: “Sure enough, the so-called ‘rest’ was still to do missions! These Gu Immortals seem to not know what true rest is!”

“Sleep, I have not had any sleep for over ten days. I have only slept five times since I came here, and each sleep was less than four hours! I really want to sleep, sleep until I wake up naturally!”

“Why are so many earth path resource points pouring in recently? I am already disgusted from arranging these resource points to the point of vomiting.”

“I really hope some water path resource points come next...”

When she thought of this, Yu Zi almost wanted to slap herself from anger!

“What are you thinking?”

“You still want more resource points?”

“I hope there are no resource points ever!”

“I hope there are fewer missions!”

“I hope other Gu Immortals finish them instead!”

“Let me sleep, I just want to have a proper sleep.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2255: Painful Sale

Western Desert, Fang clan’s blessed land headquarters.

Fang clan’s immortals were all present, their expressions were ashen.

The atmosphere in the discussion hall was so heavy that it was suffocating.

“According to the information we obtained just earlier, Wan clan paid a visit to Qin clan, and Qin clan has already sent Qin Lang to take part in the battle.”

Qin Lang was a famous expert in Western Desert Gu Immortal world, he had rank seven cultivation and cultivated space path. His signature method was vortex sweep, once the move was used, it could clear out an area of ten thousand li.

“That means, the alliance that Wan clan gathered in the expedition against our Fang clan already includes Xiao clan, Qin clan, Sun clan, Shi clan, Gong clan, and Tang clan.”

“Sun clan’s representative is Sun Wang, he does not have high battle strength but is extremely proficient in investigative killer moves.”

“Gong clan sent Gong Jiao Che, you all know of his battle accomplishments.”

“Shi clan Gu Immortal Shi Kang is a recently famous expert, his defensive aspect is very powerful.”

“Tang clan Gu Immortal Tang Lan Ke is a time path Gu Immortal. She has all along been in charge of Tang clan’s tributary of the River of Time. Although she is not famous, since she was assigned such an important task by Tang clan, her strength is definitely out of the ordinary.”

“The strongest support is still Xiao clan. Xiao clan sent Xiao Ye Hu!”

“That’s right, this person had a fortuitous encounter when he was young, he obtained a Gu Immortal true inheritance and received a damaged Immortal Gu

House. Xiao Ye Hu relied on this to cultivate until he became a Gu Immortal, he got Xiao clan’s help to repair the Immortal Gu House and changed his name to Xiao Ye Hu afterwards.”

“According to rumors, his dark path Immortal Gu House Chamber Pot[1] is extremely strange and vicious! Although it is pocket-sized, it can forcefully absorb Gu Immortals. If the Gu Immortal cannot escape and gets trapped in this pot for a night, they will become a pile of piss and stool.”

The Fang clan immortals felt a huge pressure weighing on them as they continued to discuss.

Western Desert’s super forces had fourteen clans: Lin clan, Xiao clan, Tian clan, Fang clan, Dong clan, Wan clan, Sun clan, Mo clan, Tang clan, Qin clan, Shi clan, Gong clan, Zuo Qiu clan, and Tuoba clan.

If the mysterious and secluded Yi clan was also counted, it would be fifteen clans.

Fang clan was only one of them.

There was no precise rankings of the strength of the super clans.

Western Desert was not like Southern Border, Southern Border’s Wu clan was the number one in strength which had been tested over a long period of time and was publicly approved by Gu Immortals.

A super force’s strength came from many aspects; for instance, Gu Immortals, resources, Immortal Gu Houses, and so on.

And these aspects also had strengths and weaknesses too.

In an actual situation, super forces competed, allied, or antagonized each other through many ways. Thus, it was rather difficult to rank the super forces.

Naturally, there was a vague consensus.

For instance, in the Western Desert Gu Immortal world, Xiao clan and Tian clan were normally thought of highly by Gu Immortals, because during the past peaceful era, these two had the largest businesses. They had many Gu Immortals and even had rank eight Gu Immortals leading them.

Fang clan’s strength was actually quite good.

Fang clan had rank eight Gu Immortal Fang Gong, possessed three Immortal Gu Houses, and now had added an earth path Immortal Gu House.

If they had Divine Bean Palace, Fang clan could have immediately become the dominant force in Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world.

Unfortunately, they did not succeed.

Now, Fang clan was facing the alliance of other super forces!

These super clans only needed to send one or two Gu Immortals, and it would be enough to make Fang clan have a tough time.

If just one-third of the super forces mobilized Immortal Gu Houses, it would be enough to surpass the scale of Fang clan’s Immortal Gu Houses.

Right now, Wan clan only had to contact the remaining super forces.

The Fang clan Gu Immortals already felt heavy weights pressing on their hearts, it felt like they were sitting on pins and needles.

As the immortals discussed, Fang Leng said: “Everyone, please don’t forget that there is still the most terrifying enemy that we need to face — Heavenly Court! Although the information says that Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals clearly won’t interfere in Western Desert’s internal affairs, it is because of their guarantee that we are unable to use Great Love Immortal Venerable’s authority, so these Western Desert super clans are free of their final apprehension.”

“What worries me the most is that Heavenly Court sent two rank eight Gu Immortals. Among them, Wan Zi Hong was a famous demonic path expert in Western Desert’s history.”

The moment Wan Zi Hong was mentioned, some Fang clan Gu Immortals understood Fang Leng’s meaning: “Could it be that this Wan Zi Hong is related to Wan clan?”

“Wan Zi Hong is a demonic immortal, there is no evidence of her being blood-related to Wan clan. But even if there is no evidence, it can be forged. If Wan Zi Hong is believed to be a member of Wan clan, Heavenly Court will have justification to interfere in Western Desert’s internal affairs. Despite this possibility being unlikely, we have to be prepared for it.”

Fang Leng’s words made many nod their heads.

Fang Gong was satisfied inwardly.

He raised Fang Leng as his successor, and he saw him mature day by day. Especially during this recent period of time, his growth was obvious.

At this time, Fang Yun said: “From what I see, our clan must seek Great Love Immortal Venerable’s help. As long as this lord helps, no matter how many Western Desert super clans come, they are of no worry. And only Great Love Immortal Venerable can contend against Heavenly Court’s Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.”

Fang Yun was Fang Di Chang’s successor, and unlike Fang Leng who simply expressed the issue, he directly spoke of his solution.

During the period that Fang Di Chang was captured, Fang Yun became the leader of Fang clan’s wisdom path faction.

He gained many experiences through this, and his influence in Fang clan had also increased by a lot.

As for why he did not mention Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, it was because Fang clan had no connection to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

In fact, even if they could contact him, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would be suspicious. After all, the connection between Fang clan and Fang Yuan was quite deep.

“Great Love Immortal Venerable already sent several rockman Gu Immortals, but they are only responsible for taking the resource points. We already sent a request to him, but Great Love Immortal Venerable... doesn’t seem to want to interfere.” Fang Leng said with a frown.

Fang clan had openly transacted some resources with Fang Yuan through treasure yellow heaven.

The other batch of resource points were secretly transacted with Fang Yuan. They naturally could not be passed through treasure yellow heaven, the biggest flaw of treasure yellow heaven was the openness, every transaction would be revealed.

Resource points were all counted and recorded, only by transacting them secretly could the information be concealed.

“The chance of getting Great Love Immortal Venerable to make a move is too low, and our clan cannot afford the cost as well.” At this time, Fang Di Chang finally spoke.

He had been maintaining silence before.

Besides him, Fang Gong and Fang Hua Sheng also did the same.

These three were the true leaders of Fang clan, they would not easily express their thoughts. Moreover, they were also giving Fang Leng and Fang Yun a chance to temper themselves.

Super forces were different from solitary Gu Immortals, they usually prioritized the cultivation of later generations.

The moment Fang Di Chang spoke, others kept quiet.

They were quietly watching Fang Di Chang with clear trust in their gazes.

Fang Di Chang suddenly chuckled before continuing: “No need to be worried, I have already deduced that the possibility of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable making a move is extremely unlikely.”

“In the confrontation between venerables, they will try to avoid a direct confrontation with each other, and will not move personally as a consequence of our affairs. Don’t think too highly of yourselves. In the eyes of venerables, we are lowly like ants.”

Fang clan immortals listened quietly, nodding their heads with strange expressions.

This might be the first time they were feeling joy at themselves being weak and ignored.

Fang Di Chang followed by saying: “But we still need to transact with Fang Yuan, we must rely on Fang Yuan, we must exchange for even more support from him!”

Fang Gong heard the meaning behind the words and frowned: “Ever since we occupied Wan clan’s territories, we have already traded many of Wan clan’s resource points with Fang Yuan, and exchanged for Immortal Gu and other resources. The rockman Gu Immortals sent by Fang Yuan are still busy moving away the resource points.”

Fang Di Chang shook his head: “But it is still not enough, we need even more Immortal Gu Houses! Once the war starts, we only have one rank eight, that is you. And the Wan clan alliance army will probably have several, even if they haven’t appeared now, once the battle turns for the worse, they will come to reinforce.”

“So, we need Immortal Gu Houses! Only then can our rank sixes and rank sevens be of use. Only then can they preserve their lives in the battle. They can advance and retreat to a certain extent with the Immortal Gu Houses.”

The Fang clan immortals were silent.

Fang Di Chang heaved a sigh: “We all know that the current situation is extremely grim. Our Fang clan is facing all of Western Desert’s righteous path!”

“We cannot directly raise our cultivation, our immortal essence stone reserves are also not sufficient, but Heavenly Court can keep on sending them immortal essence stones.”

“We must inflict an enormous loss to this wave of the alliance army. Otherwise, even if we hold on through this danger, there will be a second and third alliance army.”

“How many waves can our Fang clan hold off? In fact, we will use up all our strength just to block this first wave.”

“This is a correct judgment.” Fang Hua Sheng praised.

Fang Di Chang then mentioned transacting three big resource points, like black-yellow earth pool.

Fang clan’s immortals were shaken.

“Black-yellow earth pool is a super resource point.”

“It is no small matter!”

“It is Wan clan’s number one resource point, it contains their pride. Are we going to sell it this easily?”

“There will be considerable long-term benefits!”

Fang Di Chang did not speak, only looking at Fang Gong.

Fang Gong thought for a while before saying directly: “I agree, let’s handle it this way!”

Fang Di Chang smiled. At the crucial moment, Fang Gong did not disappoint him.

He continued: “Other resource points can be discussed, but we must openly transact this black-yellow earth pool with Fang Yuan!”

“Oh? Good plan!” Fang Yun immediately reacted, his eyes shining brightly.

When they learned of Fang clan’s decision, Shi Gua Bi and the rest were shaken.

“Fang clan has such a deep understanding of the situation!”

“More importantly, we have no way to relocate this kind of super resource point.”

Shi Gua Bi and the other rockman Gu Immortals felt somewhat awkward.

They only had rank seven cultivation, and this super resource point was at rank eight level.

“Please don’t worry, Alliance Leader Great Love already expected this.” Lu Wei Yin suddenly appeared and resolved the rockman Gu Immortals’ awkwardness.

Lu Wei Yin had joined the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, he naturally came because he received Fang Yuan’s order.

His defense was extraordinary among pseudo venerables, he could match the two Heavenly Court immortals. Moreover, he cultivated earth path, so it was of no issue for him to relocate black-yellow earth pool.

Such a move of killing two birds with one stone made Lu Wei Yin the most suitable person to be sent to Western Desert!

[1] Pronounced as Ye Hu in Chinese.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2256: Yu Zi’s Hair

Bai Ning Bing’s divine sense roamed in treasure yellow heaven.

She looked at the distant Primordial Domain and also Fang Yuan’s will above the Primordial Domain, feeling hesitant.

“Should I also transact with Fang Yuan?”

Over this period of time, Bai Ning Bing had been cultivating in the depths of the Earth Trench, exploring it while facing the risk of death.

Immemorial desolate beasts often ran wild in the depths of the earth, but there were all kinds of fortune hidden in the danger.

Bai Ning Bing had collected many immortal materials in this period of time, and also found many natural resource points, most of which were of earth path.

“It really is too difficult to refine Immortal Gu. If I can borrow Fang Yuan’s strength, it will definitely be a huge help.”

Bai Ning Bing was feeling the urge to make such a move.

According to her understanding of Fang Yuan, he would most likely agree to transact with her.

But Bai Ning Bing had her own misgivings.

On one hand, she had no way to directly take away these earth path resources and put them in treasure yellow heaven.

Bai Ning Bing cultivated ice and snow path, and also had aptitude in enslavement path because of her dragonman identity. She had no suitable Immortal Gu to dig out those earth path resource points.

On the other hand, Bai Ning Bing was worried that exposing the secret of rich resources in the underground would attract Fang Yuan’s greed.

Fang Yuan might not make a move personally, but sending a few of his subordinates would be enough to give trouble to Bai Ning Bing.

After all, Shen Shang and Lu Wei Yin had also joined Fang Yuan.

Right as Bai Ning Bing was hesitating, an earth path resource point entered treasure yellow heaven.

Following that, a treasure light shot out from this earth path resource point, forming an enormous pillar of light that seemed to touch the sky.

“Huh? This is... a super resource point?” Even Bai Ning Bing, who had gone through a lot, felt shaken.

At this moment, all the Gu Immortal wills and divine senses in treasure yellow heaven were fluctuating intensely!

“Oh goodness, am I seeing this wrongly?”

“A super resource point, an earth path super resource point!”

“This kind of resource point is a must-have for any super force, but it is actually being sold?!”

“Simply unimaginable!”

“Which wastrel will do such a thing?”

“How will they live from now on?”

“No matter which wastrel it is, the question is, who is this resource point being sold to?”

“Who else can it be? It is undoubtedly Great Love Immortal Venerable!”

Sure enough, like many immortals expected, this earth path super resource point was taken by Fang Yuan’s will.

Soon, the resource point was taken from treasure yellow heaven and moved into the sovereign immortal aperture.

An open transaction was finished.

Treasure yellow heaven was still in commotion.

“Western Desert’s Fang clan transacted with Fang Yuan.”

“Fang clan sold this earth path super resource point.”

“It has been checked! This super resource point is black-yellow earth pool, it originally did not belong to Fang clan, this is Wan clan’s number one resource point.”

“So it was Wan clan’s property. I understand now, Wan clan is paying a visit to every Western Desert righteous path super force to organize an anti-Fang alliance. Fang clan is really vicious for selling this resource point.”

The five regions’ Gu Immortals were all discussing this matter.

Wan clan also soon learned of this.

“How can this be?!” Wan Zhui Qing’s eyes reddened with hatred as he spoke through clenched teeth.

“Fang clan is too hateful, too despicable!” Wan Xiao’s face was ashen.

This was a classic situation of a person not feeling any heartache for selling something that was not theirs.

Fang clan did not use their own super resource points, but sold Wan clan’s super resource point instead.

They even chose to transact it openly!

This plan was really vicious.

Wan Hao Guang also felt an extreme headache. Because this black-yellow earth pool was meant to be the payment to Xiao clan.

Xiao clan sent several Gu Immortal experts to take part in the anti-Fang alliance, and they would form a close alliance with Wan clan later on to reclaim the territories.

But now, black-yellow earth pool was gone, Fang clan sold it to Fang Yuan.

Who was Fang Yuan?

Great Love Immortal Venerable! Heaven Refining Demon Venerable!

Would Wan clan dare to ask for black-yellow earth pool from Fang Yuan?

Would Xiao clan dare?

They would not dare to do it even if they were given ten thousand guts.

Sure enough, not long later, Xiao Ye Hu paid a visit.

“Wan clan, the situation has changed. We need to have another talk.” Xiao Ye Hu said heavily.

Wan Hao Guang and the others’ expressions did not look good.

When they finished their discussion with Xiao Ye Hu, the expressions of Wan clan’s immortals became even more unsightly.

“These greedy jackals!” Wan Hao Guang clenched his fists tightly.

Wan clan’s and Xiao clan’s transaction contents were modified several times. Black-yellow earth pool was removed, and Wan clan had to add in several giant resource points.

After Xiao clan’s benefits were preserved, Xiao Ye Hu left contentedly.

Wan clan’s immortals felt anger and hatred, but were helpless.

What choice did they have?

“To make these righteous path forces participate in the anti-Fang alliance, our Wan clan must pay a corresponding price.”

“Xiao clan is the super force putting in the most effort, so we need to pay them even more.”

“They are simply kicking a person when they are down!”

“Sigh, among the entire righteous path forces, only Tang clan has the most righteous demeanor.”

“Yes, I did not notice it before. But in this moment of crisis, we can see the true character of others. Tang clan asked for the lowest price.”

“Although Tang clan is not strong, once we retrieve our territory, we should have more dealings with Tang clan.”

“That is reasonable.”

“Tang clan is a true model of the righteous path!”

Just as Wan clan was discussing the matter, the rank seven time path Gu Immortal

Tang Lan Ke, who was sent by Tang clan, secretly contacted Fang Yuan.

“Reporting to lord, Xiao Ye Hu just paid a visit to Wan clan. They had a secret discussion for a long time before he left. Looking at his expression, he seemed to be satisfied.”

Fang Yuan nodded. With just a slight deduction, he knew the truth: “Looks like Wan clan ceded black-yellow earth pool to exchange for more support from Xiao clan. The plan with Fang clan has already produced results, continue to stay hidden and probe for information.”

“Yes, lord!”

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Because the time flow was much faster here, more than a day had already passed.

An abnormal situation was occurring around an earth vein node.

Dense yellow fog shrouded this earth vein node. Dart-like stones constantly flew out of the yellow fog and attacked the earth vein node.

Yu Zi accepted the task to defend the node, she was facing countless flying stones alone.

Water vapor surrounded her body as her hands moved rapidly, raising giant waves that drowned the stones.

After Yu Zi bade farewell to Shi San Bai, she accepted his suggestion and specially chose a task where she could vent her stress.

Thus, she accepted this task.

At the start, she was like an all-powerful being, her moves were majestic and grand. She released all her stress and felt refreshed.

But this abnormal situation continued until now, Yu Zi was not able to suppress it completely.

Yu Zi was feeling restless and stifled at this moment.

“How can I be so unlucky?”

“I chose a random task but it is actually so difficult!”

“The amount of immortal essence I have expended over these days already amounts to a huge loss. Do I still have to take out some contribution points to ask for help?”

Just as Yu Zi was hesitating, the yellow fog expanded suddenly, and the amount of flying stones doubled.

Yu Zi was caught unprepared and was unable to block them, she could only watch as many of the flying stones shot at the earth vein node.

“Damn it!” Yu Zi cursed in shock and anger.

She took on this task to protect the earth vein node. But if the earth vein node was destroyed, her contribution points would be deducted!

At the crucial moment, a figure suddenly appeared.

He lightly waved his hand, illusory pink light specks scattered and flew into the yellow fog.

“This is a dream path killer move?!” Yu Zi was stunned and joyous.

The dream path killer move was clearly effective, the yellow fog quickly shrunk. The danger was eliminated instantly.

“Yu Zi greets Lord Meng Qiu Zhen!” Yu Zi quickly bowed in greeting.

She was extremely excited.

Truly, fortune and misfortune existed together, she was actually able to see another main clone of Lord Fang Yuan because of this event. She was truly too fortunate.

“Are you alright?” Meng Qiu Zhen asked warmly.

Yu Zi raised her head and saw Meng Qiu Zhen. He had a head full of long pink hair that looked dreamy and illusory. His shining gaze was extremely captivating, his smooth facial contours showed a smile at this moment, making Yu Zi feel warm and heartened.

“So beautiful...” Yu Zi was stupefied as she thought to herself.

Although Meng Qiu Zhen was only at rank six, being shown concern by him made Yu Zi feel a sense of security.

She then thought of her plan and immediately appeared more meek, covering her face as she wept softly: “Many thanks for Lord Meng Qiu Zhen’s concern, I used all my strength to protect the earth vein node. But I had no way to protect the formation surrounding the earth vein node.”

Meng Qiu Zhen nodded: “I remember this formation, I personally set it up. According to the condition at that time, the formation base was buried underground. The formation’s structure was somewhat neglected, so a formation barrier was also constructed.”

“Yes.” Yu Zi said in agreement, “The formation barrier is too easily broken, I repaired it many times but it always broke immediately after!”

Meng Qiu Zhen took a deep look at Yu Zi. Suddenly, he took her in his arms and started touching her.

He rubbed here and touched there.

Yu Zi was dazed, her whole body was stiff like a statue.

How could this happen all of a sudden?

The difference in personality among Lord Fang Yuan’s clones was too big!

If I had known this, I should have just gone to find Lord Meng Qiu Zhen, right?

“Meng Qiu Zhen is such a good name[1], he is truly a dream come true!” Intense happiness filled Yu Zi’s body, her stiff body quickly relaxed as she shrunk into Meng Qiu Zhen’s embrace, and looked up at Meng Qiu Zhen’s face while blushing.

But at the next moment, Meng Qiu Zhen said calmly: “There is an issue with your body, you have been contaminated.”

“Wha... what?” Yu Zi was stunned.

Meng Qiu Zhen continued: “Your contamination is quite serious, the abnormal situation is the source of the contamination. In fact, it already had no strength to exist, but after contaminating you, you became the potential source and have been nurturing it. The more you resist, the stronger the abnormal situation will become.”

“Is, is this true?!” Yu Zi’s eyes widened with an incredulous expression.

“You don’t believe me?” Meng Qiu Zhen laughed and patted her shoulder.

“Look, you have hair now.” Meng Qiu Zhen said, “I have triggered the abnormal dao marks on your body.”

Yu Zi almost fainted when she looked.

She saw hair on her chest, nose, armpit and other private areas.

In just a few breaths of time, this hair had already grown longer than an adult’s palm.

Meng Qiu Zhen patted again: “Look, you have grown mold.”

Yu Zi’s hair was previously standing straight, but now, it drooped down as greenish-white mold grew on it. An intense rotten stench assailed her nose.

Tears flowed out of Yu Zi’s eyes.

This was a huge deal to her.

The merfolk aesthetic sense had nothing to do with hair. Merfolk liked scales, luster, and contours forming a streamlined body shape.

Being hairy or furry was ugly!

“What should I do? Please save me, Lord Meng Qiu Zhen!” Yu Zi pleaded, this emotion of desperation came straight from her heart.

Meng Qiu Zhen smiled: “If you want me to help you, you have to spend contribution points.”

“I am willing to pay anything and everything.” Yu Zi quickly said.

Meng Qiu Zhen shook his head slightly: “But your contribution points are still not enough.”

Yu Zi was getting dizzy from anxiety as she quickly explained the reason: “That is because I exchanged for Immortal Gu before!”

“Hmm, let’s do it like this then.” Meng Qiu Zhen first activated a dream path method.

Pink light covered Yu Zi, suppressing all the hair on her body and restoring her to her original state.

Meng Qiu Zhen said: “I have temporarily restrained your abnormal dao marks, go to Star Collection City when you have gathered enough contribution points, you will be treated there. Go.”

Meng Qiu Zhen then left Yu Zi and began to repair the formation around the earth vein node.

Yu Zi gritted her teeth and bowed to bid her farewell.

While flying, she activated a Gu worm to inspect the mission board.

“Why are there so many resource point arrangement missions again?” Yu Zi paled, a vague feeling of disgust emerging in her heart.

But she had no other options, to heal herself, she could only grit her teeth and choose a mission.

“Arrange for the settlement of the black-yellow earth pool! This mission has the highest reward!”

[1] Remember it comes from Dream Reality Seeker.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2257: Salt Water Liver

With a pale expression and heavy eye bags, Yu Zi entered Star Collection City in a daze.

After working hard for over ten days without resting, she finally finished arranging black-yellow earth pool with the help of two other Gu Immortals.

“Isn’t this Fairy Yu Zi? I heard you were in charge of arranging the black-yellow earth pool?”

A Gu Immortal greeted Yu Zi.

Yu Zi quickly raised her spirit and responded.

“Your luck is really good, this mission rewards a lot of contribution points. I was held up with another task at that time, otherwise, I would have also taken this mission.” Another Gu Immortal said to Yu Zi.

Yu Zi smiled, nodding towards the Gu Immortal.

The two immortals quickly parted after that.

This was the style of the Gu Immortals of the sovereign immortal aperture, they were always in a hurry, making use of every second.

“Your condition does not look good, go to Liver Life Hall immediately.” Lian Ke Xin came across Yu Zi and said with concern.

“You are also here?” Yu Zi felt much more at ease when she saw a Gu Immortal of her kin.

Lian Ke Xin nodded: “I just came out of Liver Life Hall, the sovereign immortal aperture added black-yellow earth pool, there really are a lot of super resource points here.”

Yu Zi said in agreement: “From what I know, there are rolling fall cliff, triple sacred mountain, divine needle valley, frost dragon pond, pin tree snowfield, water spider sea, and heavenly crystal storage pool. Now, there is this black-yellow earth pool, there must definitely be others as well.”

Before Lian Ke Xin and Yu Zi entered the sovereign immortal aperture, they were leaders of the Merman Imperial Court, and were aware of the value of super resource points.

Normally speaking, resource points were divided into several grades.

Tiny resource points, small-sized resource points, and mid-sized resource points produced rank one to rank five cultivation resources.

Large resource points could stably produce rank six resources, and occasionally rank seven resources.

Giant resource points could stably produce rank seven resources.

Super resource points were at rank eight level, and the pinnacle resource points were those secluded domains of heaven and earth.

A super resource point could lead to an all-out contest between super forces, and it could even result in casualties.

The five regions’ super forces were in possession of super resource points; the richer ones had more than ten, while the poorer ones had at least three or four.

Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven were naturally not counted among these super forces.

Strictly speaking, Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven should be considered ultimate forces!

Right now, Fang Yuan’s force could also be considered an ultimate force. There were over ten super resource points in the sovereign immortal aperture, it was just that the mermaid immortals had not been here for a long time, so they did not come into contact with the other resources.

“The sovereign immortal aperture’s foundation has increased again, this is a good thing. But I am worried about the abnormal situations happening more often.” Lian Ke Xin was happy but also worried.

Resource points contained dense amount of dao marks, after they were shifted into the sovereign immortal aperture, the immortal aperture’s dao marks would naturally increase.

By now, the mermaid immortals had already realized the source of the abnormal situations.

Lian Ke Xin was worried, Yu Zi was too, she said in a quiet voice: “Master sent several Gu Immortals outside, there is a shortage of manpower in the sovereign immortal aperture again. Over this period of time, missions have been constantly increasing on the mission board, the Gu Immortals’ mission completion speed cannot match the speed of the addition of new missions. Sigh, it will be great if master can bring in more Gu Immortals.”

Lian Ke Xin nodded and said: “I also hope for more companions. But rashly bringing in the five regions’ Gu Immortals is not appropriate. On one hand, we will have to remove the suspicion of insiders and spies, on the other hand, there is racial equality here. If those self-righteous human Gu Immortals come in, they might destroy the harmony here. Master may also have such misgivings.”

The two talked while walking towards Liver Life Hall.

Yu Zi looked at the Liver Life Hall and suddenly understood: “I heard Liver Life Hall was only a liver life formation before. Master worked hard to modify it into an Immortal Gu House, it was really a wise move.”

The immortal formation was closely connected to its surroundings, but Immortal Gu House was an independent body.

Abnormal situations occurred frequently in the sovereign immortal aperture, and the immortal formations of various locations suffered, but Immortal Gu Houses were not disturbed.

Yu Zi sighed: “I am somewhat worried. Don’t you think master’s idea for the development of the aperture is somewhat radical? The current sovereign immortal aperture is walking on a thin rope, we have to use all our effort to maintain this fragile balance. Even so, we are slowly slipping down the abyss of failure.”

Lian Ke Xin squinted her eyes: “Maybe this nature is one of the reasons for master’s legendary rise. The current sovereign immortal aperture is truly like a glutton, it already is full to the point of indigestion, but is still eating regardless. By constructing dao veins everywhere, we are only treating the symptoms but not the root cause. If we don’t solve the fundamental issues, abnormal situations will still continue.”

Yu Zi shook her head slightly: “In this period of time, I saw Lord Wu Shuai and Lord Meng Qiu Zhen. Both are peerlessly beautiful. I don’t believe such incredible existences are not aware of the root issue. We are only minor characters, how can we estimate master’s thoughts?”

“Yes. This root issue is not our concern.” Lian Ke Xin patted Yu Zi’s arm, “Alright, Yu Zi, the Liver Life Hall is in front. I won’t accompany you, I still have a mission to do.”

Yu Zi parted with Lian Ke Xin as well.

She did not tell her abnormal state to Lian Ke Xin.

Yu Zi entered Liver Life Hall with familiarity.

Yu Zi had visited this mysterious Immortal Gu House many times, so she was not a stranger to it.

She thought this use would also go smoothly, but how could she have expected an accident to happen.

Boom.

Liver Life Hall shook as the nearby Gu Immortals were alerted.

“Looking at this, it seems someone’s liver exploded again?”

“Hehe, this is a terrible feeling for them.”

“No matter who it is, they are much luckier than me. The healing hall was constructed not long ago.”

By the time Yu Zi woke up, she found she was no longer in the Liver Life Hall.

She was lying on a large porcelain plate with dazzling white light filling her surroundings.

After she adapted to this light with difficulty, she saw a will floating in the air and watching her.

This will took a form, it was in the appearance of Fang Yuan’s main body.

Yu Zi tried to stand up to greet him, but was stopped by Fang Yuan’s will: “Don’t move carelessly, your liver exploded, your injuries are not light. Also, some dao marks are still hiding in your body. Although they were suppressed temporarily by dream path methods, they are showing signs of erupting again.”

Yu Zi immediately panicked, she did not want to grow moldy hair in front of Fang Yuan’s will.

Naturally, her current situation was extremely pitiful.

After her liver exploded, her stomach burst open, half of her rib bones were sent flying, and all her organs were injured.

Yu Zi looked at Fang Yuan’s will, immediately saying: “Please save me, master. I already have enough contribution points.”

Fang Yuan’s will nodded: “Your contribution points are enough, I have several treatment plans here for you.”

“First is to use a time path killer move to restore you back to your previous state.”

“Second is to transplant an ancient desolate beast’s liver into you, and use a transformation path method to merge the liver with your body.”

“Third is to use a refinement path method, we will get rid of your abnormal dao marks first, then refine a brand new liver.”

“And finally, the fourth option is my personal recommendation. This is an immortal killer move called salt water liver. After you cultivate it, you can create a new liver. This liver not only has water path dao marks, but also food path dao marks; using this liver, you can dual cultivate food path.”

“Compared to an ordinary Gu Immortal’s liver, salt water liver can bear the support of Liver Life Hall much longer and last for many more uses. Moreover, if you fall into a predicament and have no way out, and are in shortage of food, you can eat this liver to satisfy your hunger.”

“The fifth method is...”

Fang Yuan’s will continued to describe over ten treatment plans.

After Yu Zi listened to them attentively, she asked about the price.

She found the most stable and safest method was the first time path plan. But because she cultivated water path, the time path killer move’s effect would not be obvious. She would have to pay a higher price for an obvious effect. Thus, the performance-cost ratio of the first plan was not high.

The most effective treatment was the second plan. If Yu Zi could afford the price, she could use an immemorial desolate beast’s liver to transplant into her body.

The lowest price was the refinement path plan, that was also the third plan.

The highest performance-cost ratio plan was the fourth plan.

“Salt water liver...” Yu Zi considered for a while before nodding, “I choose this.”

While Yu Zi was being treated, looking over in Western Desert.

Xiao Ye Hu gazed at Wan Hao Guang with a frown: “Muddy beach is no more, perfume flying island is also no more! They were openly sold to Heaven Refining Demon

Venerable by Fang clan. Our contract needs to be changed.”

Wan Hao Guang showed a painful expression: “Xiao Ye Hu, you have already been here five times to talk over the contract. Is it appropriate to change it at will? We should follow my previous suggestion, we should quickly attack Fang clan and drive them away, won’t it be much easier to change the contract based on the actual state?”

Xiao Ye Hu shook his head, sighing deeply: “Wan Hao Guang, that is very risky. Your clan’s resource points are almost all sold by Fang clan. Even if we succeed in attacking Fang clan, can you bring out enough remuneration? You have contacted all the super forces of Western Desert. Looking at the price you paid to invite these people to join the alliance, are you still able to satisfy my Xiao clan first?”

Wan Hao Guang felt an extreme headache, he was about to appease Xiao Ye Hu when suddenly, heaven and earth shook, thunderous explosions occurred.

Their gathering point was ambushed!

“It is Fang clan!”

“Such guts, we haven’t even gone to attack them, yet they dare to send themselves to death!”

“Fight!”

The anti-Fang alliance army reacted and attacked furiously.

The Wan clan Gu Immortals were extremely angry.

It was this bunch of shameless scoundrels who sold off their resource points.

They had to modify the contracts almost every day, this caused them a great headache.

Fang clan mobilized three Immortal Gu Houses this time!

The Fang clan immortals were also extremely angry.

You guys! You guys!!

You forced our Fang clan to sell all those resource points.

Bam bam bam...

Both sides were so furious that the moment they started the battle, a huge commotion could be heard, rocks cracked and rubble flew.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2258: Battle Against Fang Clan

The thunderous explosions rang for a while as the killer moves collided with each other. Even the aftershock was fatal!

Fang clan’s attack was too sudden, surpassing anti-Fang alliance’s expectations. What made the anti-Fang alliance regret was that they were not stationed at a resource point, but in an ordinary desert.

They were about to make a large scale move against Fang clan, but they had to discuss their payment before the battle.

Fang Di Chang’s plan was very effective, they did open transactions with Fang Yuan repeatedly which led to internal instability in the anti-Fang alliance, greatly postponing their official expedition.

And this sudden attack was also Fang Di Chang’s proposition!

“Fang Di Chang!!!” Wan Xiao gritted his teeth.

Not only him, the other immortals of the alliance also experienced Fang Di Chang’s strength.

Inside Chicken Dog Coop, Fang Di Chang’s expression was cold and his gaze was sharp.

The situation of the battlefield was reflected in his mind, he shouted: “Release all the ancient desolate beasts, not to kill, but to scatter the enemies.”

At the next moment, Chicken Dog Coop let out a dazzling light. Dozens of chicken and ancient desolate beast dogs formed into two groups that rushed ahead.

Wan Hao Guang was furious as he understood Fang clan’s plan. He shouted madly: “Don’t scatter, whoever is alone may lose their life!”

Fang clan immortals were curled up in their three Immortal Gu Houses, while the alliance Gu Immortals were flying in the sky.

These Gu Immortals were pale, who could use their bodies to block these ancient desolate beasts?

Even if they used killer moves, they would not able to exterminate them instantly.

Once they started fighting and dodging, their already loose formation would immediately break, and Fang clan would succeed.

Right at this time, an alliance Gu Immortal suddenly laughed as his appearance started changing.

“It is time for me to make a move!” He was dressed in a blue robe, his laughter was unpleasant and noisy which left a deep impression on people.

“You are not Tian Feng Mang, you are Tian Da Ji!” The other alliance Gu Immortals exclaimed in surprise and joy.

Tian Da Ji had rank seven cultivation and cultivated enslavement path.

He was not a lineal descendant of Tian clan, he had been a lowly young boy with no cultivation aptitude whose only fate was to become a farmer.

But one time, as he was taking care of a field, he accidentally dug out a Gu Immortal inheritance.

It was this inheritance that completely changed his life.

He cultivated secretly at first, but was discovered soon after, and had no choice but to offer the Gu Immortal inheritance to Tian clan.

The Gu Immortal in charge of the matter at that time, Tian Gang Hui, was an honest person. He did not covet this inheritance, instead protecting Tian Da Ji from then on.

Tian Da Ji inherited this special inheritance that could only enslave chickens but its effect was outstanding.

At the next moment, Tian Da Ji made a move, activating a killer move that actually caused all the ancient desolate beast chickens released by Fang clan to defect.

These ancient desolate beasts immediately attacked the ancient desolate beast dogs behind them.

In an instant, chickens and dogs fought, causing sand to fill the battlefield.

The anti-Fang alliance’s crisis was immediately resolved. Wan Xiao, Wan Hao Guang, Sun Wang, and the rest made their moves.

Wind path, light path, fire path, and other paths’ killer moves erupted in succession, forming three waves of attacks that charged towards Chicken Dog Coop.

Fang clan had schemes, Wan clan also had prepared some.

Tian Da Ji’s identity was a secret that was exposed only now. This was the result of Wan clan specially discussing it with Tian clan.

Although the alliance was delayed by Fang clan, Wan clan did not waste the time. While the contract discussions were being talked, Wan clan actively made Gu Immortals train in group combat.

The alliance Gu Immortals did not have much coordination with each other, it was no issue to fight individual fights, but group battle was their greatest weakness.

After all, dao marks of different paths conflicted with each other.

To target this weakness, under Heavenly Court’s unending supply of immortal essence stones, the alliance immortals cultivated painstakingly, forming an initial stage of group combat coordination.

“Fang Hua Sheng.” Fang Di Chang retreated with Chicken Dog Coop while shouting for reinforcement.

Although the ancient desolate beast chickens revolted, Chicken Dog Coop could still control ancient desolate beast dogs. This Immortal Gu House was important, if it was attacked and lost a crucial Immortal Gu, it would be really bad.

If the ancient desolate beast dogs stop listening to commands, they would be defeated quickly.

Fang Hua Sheng was controlling Fallen Flower Hall, he immediately rushed over after getting the message.

Immortal killer move — Mirror Flower!

The surface of Fallen Flower Hall immediately let out a wave of light.

The light was pure white, it first exited violently before being restrained suddenly, turning into a huge flower bud on the roof of the hall.

The flower bud quickly bloomed, the petals were like mirrors, reflecting light.

As it bloomed, the flower petals collided with one another, emitting a crisp sound.

After the flower bud bloomed completely, it was even larger than the roof of Fallen Flower Hall, being extremely beautiful.

The mirror flower formed in a blink of an eye, and let out a strong suction force.

Be it Wan Hao Guang, Wan Xiao, or Sun Wang’s killer moves, most of them was absorbed by the mirror flower.

But there was still a small number of killer moves left that made Fallen Flower Hall shake endlessly, the mirror flower’s petals broke into pieces, and the remaining petals closed again, turning into a flower bud.

“I am returning them to you!” Fang Hua Sheng shouted.

The mirror flower bud bloomed again, releasing the absorbed killer moves back at the enemies.

The flower bud disappeared completely, the released killer moves forced Wan Hao Guang and the rest to retreat again and again. They could only activate their methods to block arduously.

Fang Hua Sheng saw that three immortals were in a miserable state, he knew the battle opportunity had appeared. He was just about to attack them, when suddenly a fire path Immortal Gu House appeared in the enemy formation!

This Immortal Gu House was like a giant wheel, after it took in Dong clan’s two Gu Immortals Dong Zhu and Gong Ming, it started rolling.

Dong clan’s Immortal Gu House Red River Wheel!

Inside Red River Wheel, Dong Ming shouted in hatred: “Fang clan, you previously used the theft path Immortal Gu House to raid my Dong clan’s resource point, destroying my clan’s treasure moon oasis. This debt will be paid today!”

With a crushing momentum, Red River Wheel whipped up an intense flame as it collided with Fallen Flower Hall.

Bam.

Fallen Flower Hall shook intensely as it retreated quickly.

“Where are you going?” The Gu Immortals inside Red River Wheel gave chase.

Not long later, Fallen Flower Hall fell into a disadvantage as flames stuck to it.

Red River Wheel could counter the wood path Immortal Gu House Fallen Flower Hall to a certain extent.

“Since there is fire, this will be easy.” Inside the alliance army formation, Gong Jiao Che smiled as he used a killer move.

Boom.

At the next moment, the flames on Fallen Flower Hall intensified turning into a huge fire!

“Damn it...” Fang Hua Sheng gritted his teeth as he controlled Fallen Flower Hall to defend, but could not turn the situation around in a short period of time.

The other Fang clan Gu Immortals in Fallen Flower Hall were doing their best to save Fallen Flower Hall’s Gu worms.

But Red River Wheel’s fire continued to infiltrate the Immortal Gu House, spreading towards the core Immortal Gu!

Fang Gong wanted to to go reinforce with Inquiry Dock.

But another rank seven Immortal Gu House blocked its path firmly.

It was Wan clan’s time path Immortal Gu House — Myriad Age Building!

Soon after, Chicken Dog Coop also got attacked by many Gu Immortals.

Fang Di Chang heaved a deep sigh, saying inwardly: ‘Wan clan really prepared sufficiently this time.’

Be it the matter of concealing the identity of Tian Da Ji, Red River Wheel that restrained Fallen Flower Hall, or Myriad Age Building that firmly held back Inquiry Dock, it all proved that Wan clan was well prepared.

These three Immortal Gu Houses of Fang clan were not a secret. Since this anti-Fang alliance included over ten super forces, it was not hard to find methods that could restrain Fang clan.

The moment the ancient desolate beast chickens were made to revolt, Fang Di Chang knew the situation was turning bad.

When anti-Fang alliance stabilized themselves and reacted, Fang clan immediately felt suppressed. The advantage of their sudden attack was already gone.

The situation was urgent, but the Fang clan immortals were still not panicked and held ample confidence.

Earth Shuttle — was mobilized!

Fang Chen and Fang An Lei flew out and entered Earth Shuttle.

“It was this Immortal Gu House that destroyed my tall pine oasis’ formation base!” Wan Xiao was furious. He immediately changed his target, hurling the long-prepared berserk wind blades towards Earth Shuttle.

Earth Shuttle did not dodge as it endured these berserk wind blades and charged towards the enemy formation.

Wherever it went, the alliance Gu Immortals evaded in fright. Who would dare to use their body

to collide with a rank seven Immortal Gu House?

Wan Xiao’s pupils shrunk when he saw this.

Every aspect of Earth Shuttle Immortal Gu House was strengthened. Last time, when it attacked tall pine oasis, its defense was very weak. But it was completely different now.

However, dealing with this earth path Immortal Gu House was also within Wan clan’s plans.

Even the matter of it being stronger now did not surpass Wan clan’s expectations.

At the crucial moment, Mo Sha Ta stood up and activated a killer move, blocking Earth Shuttle.

A dense layer of sand accumulated on Earth Shuttle, reducing its speed sharply.

Boom.

Earth Shuttle shook, destroying the sand layer. Without the restraint, it directly charged at Mo Sha Ta.

Mo Sha Ta was pale with fright as he turned around and ran.

The alliance’s formation began to turn chaotic.

Xiao Ye Hu gritted his teeth as he had no choice but to make a move in advance.

He held Chamber Pot which aimed at Earth Shuttle from afar, letting out a pitch-black lump of light.

“Don’t even think of it!” Fang Hua Sheng shouted.

Fallen Flower Hall moved once again.

Immortal killer move — Fleeting Bloom!

The pitch-black light lump was really fast, but it got struck by fleeting bloom, slowing down rapidly.

Earth Shuttle easily evaded it as Xiao Ye Hu glared in anger.

“You still have the time to care about others!” Tuoba Cheng Feng made his move.

He was a famous Gu Immortal in Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world, and was extremely proficient in support methods.

This was a wind path support killer move. After it covered Fallen Flower Hall, the huge fire

burned even hotter and covered over half of Fallen Flower Hall.

Fang Hua Sheng’s expression turned heavy, he had just gotten rid of Earth Shuttle’s obstacle, but it made Fallen Flower Hall’s situation even more dangerous.

“Do I reinforce Fallen Flower Hall?” Fang Di Chang scanned the whole battlefield, soon his eyes shrunk when he saw a figure, “No, I need to rescue Inquiry Dock first!”

Since the battle started, Zuo Qiu San Sha had been staying at the back of the alliance army as he prepared his killer move.

At this time, the killer move’s aura was already close to complete.

Fang clan possessed roof tile breaker killer move that could restrain Immortal Gu Houses. Zuo Qiu also had a similar killer move, it was called state of disunity which was created by Zuo Qiu San Sha!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2259: Like a Tiger, Fang Gong

State of disunity killer move was similar to roof tile breaker; they both countered Immortal Gu Houses.

No doubt, this was a killer weapon of the anti-Fang alliance to deal with Fang clan!

Fang clan’s proficiency lied in Immortal Gu Houses.

Zuo Qiu San Sha who possessed state of disunity was the key person to suppress Fang clan.

“We can’t let him activate it!” Fang Di Chang understood Zuo Qiu San Sha’s threat, immediately commanding, “Fang Zhi and Fang Dong Xi, go!”

Two Fang clan rank seven Gu Immortals flew out of Chicken Dog Coop, they quickly took out an Immortal Gu House.

This Immortal Gu House had two floors, it was a short building.

As the Immortal Gu House was activated, the roof released dense smoke.

Rank seven Immortal Gu House — Smoke Wave Building!

“A completely new Immortal Gu House appeared!”

“Fang clan sold so many resource points, as expected, they gathered enough resources from Heaven Refining Demon Venerable to construct another Immortal Gu House.”

The alliance immortals were shaken.

According the previous discussion, Shi Kang went forward. He anxiously approached Smoke Wave Building and started probing it.

After all, he was most proficient in defense.

Smoke Wave Building was not fast, but the dense smoke on the roof of the building kept on gushing out. Soon, it filled most of the battlefield, attempting to engulf Zuo Qiu San Sha.

The alliance immortals did not understand the power of the smoke, so they retreated carefully.

Immortal killer move — Vortex Sweep!

Qin Lang activated his proudest method; immediately, most of the smoke dissipated, and the surroundings became clear again.

“Hmph!” Fang Di Chang left a sentence while personally moving out, “Fang Leng, Fang Yun, look after Chicken Dog Coop.”

Fang Di Chang flew out, he took out an Immortal Gu House before he entered it.

“Another rank seven Immortal Gu House!”

The anti-Fang alliance was in an uproar.

Fang clan had three new Immortal Gu Houses, moreover they were all at rank seven!

How many things did Heaven Refining Demon Venerable give Fang clan!

The third Immortal Gu House was Thought Expelling Pavilion. It was a wisdom path Immortal Gu House that complemented Fang Di Chang.

Fang Di Chang activated the Immortal Gu House’s method and targeted Zuo Qiu San Sha.

Zuo Qiu San Sha had already succeeded in approaching closer, but his thoughts suddenly flew out of his mind and circled around his body!

The Gu worms in his immortal aperture immediately fell into chaos, Zuo Qiu San Sha’s killer move failed to activate. With a cough, he spat out blood and suffered heavy injuries from the backlash.

Tuoba Cheng Feng and Gong Jiao Che saw the situation turning for the worse, they quickly gave up on encircling Fallen Flower Hall; the former went to save Zuo Qiu San Sha, and the latter attacked Thought Expelling Pavilion from afar.

Thought Expelling Pavilion endured Gong Jiao Che’s fire path killer move and activated its method again.

Tang Lan Ke gasped as she fell down from the sky.

“I can’t stop it!” Shi Kang was covered in black smoke, he retreated with a shout.

The dense black smoke emitted by Smoke Wave Building made it extremely difficult for him to defend, this was already his limit.

Right at this time, a yellow meteor streaked across the battlefield and collided with Shi Kang.

It was Earth Shuttle!

Shi Kang’s pupils shrunk as the intense threat of death assaulted his body and mind.

Boom.

At the crucial moment, Lin Shu Tong flew over and sacrificed himself to collide into Earth Shuttle from the side, forcefully changing its route.

Shi Kang almost brushed past Earth Shuttle, surviving luckily.

His battle intent was mostly gone as he retreated rapidly.

“The enemies are in chaos.” Fang Di Chang saw this, and activated Thought Expelling Pavilion, targeting Tian Da Ji.

Tian Da Ji was startled and immediately released ancient desolate chickens from his immortal aperture to protect him.

But who could have imagined that Fang Di Chang was only bluffing, immediately targeting its attack towards Sun Wang.

Sun clan Gu Immortals were most conservative. The moment Thought Expelling Pavilion showed such movement, Sun Wang immediately ran away with an astonishing speed.

Wan clan Gu Immortals looked extremely unsightly.

Fang Di Chang was indeed worthy of being a wisdom path Gu Immortal, he was familiar with people’s nature. He only used Thought Expelling Pavilion a few times and made use of its threat to gain such battle accomplishments!

“First supreme elder, this is the time for our Fang clan to claim victory!” Fang Di Chang’s voice was slightly excited.

Inside Inquiry Dock, Fang Gong was already impatient from waiting.

When he heard Fang Di Chang’s call, he laughed heartily. He gave the control of Inquiry Dock to other Fang clan Gu Immortals and flew out like a meteor.

Fang Gong collided with Myriad Age Building, the whole building almost collapsed.

Immortal killer move — Roof Tile Breaker!

Fang Gong’s palm shadows flew, raising storm-like attacks.

Myriad Age Building’s defensive killer moves also could not block roof tile breaker, it started to crumble rapidly.

“Good!” Xiao Ye Hu’s eyes lit up, he finally saw an enemy Gu Immortal leaving the protection of their Immortal Gu House, this was the time for Chamber Pot to shine.

But just as he was about to make a move, Earth Shuttle came crashing over.

Xiao Ye Hu cursed, he could only retreat to protect himself.

Myriad Age Building was forced to activate its strongest defensive method which rapidly extracted Fang Gong’s lifespan.

Fang Gong sneered, decisively retreating.

He had achieved his target by forcing out this method of Myriad Age Building.

Once this method of Myriad Age Building activated, it could only stop after at least two hours.

The surrounding alliance Gu Immortals retreated away from Myriad Age Building.

The anti-Fang alliance’s formation was already in complete disorder.

Fang Gong left Myriad Age Building and charged towards Red River Wheel.

“Didn’t you want revenge? Then come at me!” Fang Gong shouted.

Roof tile breaker killer move activated once again, Red River Wheel retreated rapidly while burning flames closed in on Fang Gong.

Fang Gong did not dodge, sticking to Red River Wheel amidst the burning flames.

Dong Ming screamed: “Fang Gong, you’ve gone too far!”

He activated Red River Wheel and collided with Fang Gong.

Fang Gong’s eyes shone, he did not evade, instead charging right towards Red

River Wheel.

The two collided as Red River Wheel was thrown backwards, Fang Gong used the chance to give chase.

Dong Ming’s expression was deathly pale: “Is this the strength of a rank eight strength path Gu Immortal?!”

Dong Zhu kept silent as he let out molten flame birds.

Fang Gong kicked and punched, smashing the molten flame birds to a pulp.

In just ten or so breaths of time, Red River Wheel was beaten back again and again, its surface crumbled and looked like it was in a miserable state.

“Fang Gong, don’t be cocky.” With the help of other allies, Xiao Ye Hu finally had a chance to attack.

Wan clan had paid a high price to request his assistance.

Why?

It was to deal with Fang Gong!

Immortal Gu House Chamber Pot was pocket-sized, it could not carry people like normal Immortal Gu Houses, it would also suffer huge damage if it was used to rampage around.

Its specialty was in dealing with Gu Immortals.

Even Fang Gong would be threatened!

“Fang Gong, go die!!” Xiao Ye Hu finally attacked, a pitch-black light lump shot at Fang Gong.

“Fang Gong, you are still not retreating?!” Dong Ming and Dong Zhu shouted together. They were extremely panicked because Red River Wheel was on the verge of destruction.

Fang Gong instead laughed loudly, not even looking at the pitch-black light lump: “This is the battle of Fang clan against the world! How can I, Fang Gong, not stake my life?”

Boom.

Red River Wheel shattered completely!

Dong Ming and Dong Zhu were in absolute horror. They were sent flying in the sky, their surroundings filled with fragments of Red River Wheel and corpses of countless Gu worms.

They looked at Fang Gong, he seemed like a fearless and invincible heavenly deity!

But at the next moment, the pitch-black light lump struck Fang Gong.

“Success!” Xiao Ye Hu shouted in joy.

Wan clan Gu Immortals were exulted.

Whoosh!

Fang Gong moved his arms, directly crushing the pitch-black light lump.

The anti-Fang alliance immortals were shaken and scared, many even subconsciously opened their mouths wide at this inconceivable sight.

“How, how can this be?!” Xiao Ye Hu could not believe it as he stared with wide eyes.

“Your turn next!” Fang Gong looked at Xiao Ye Hu as he said calmly.

At this moment, Xiao Ye Hu’s heart contracted.

He was frightened by Fang Gong’s ferocious momentum, only one thought remained in his mind — escape!

“Where are you trying to go?!” Fang Gong flew towards Xiao Ye Hu like a meteor, he broke the sonic barrier and left a grand shock wave behind him.

“Save me! My Xiao clan will definitely reward you well!” Xiao Ye Hu ran madly.

Gong Jiao Che, Tang Lan Ke, Qin Lang, Tian Da Ji, and the rest moved to block Fang Gong.

Fang Gong did not dodge but endured all kinds of killer moves forcibly. Like a fierce tiger or a rampaging dragon, he closed in on Xiao Ye Hu.

His aura surged like a rising tiger over ten thousand li!

Xiao Ye Hu could not shake off Fang Gong, he watched in despair as Fang Gong neared him.

“Let this battle be the start of my Fang clan’s rise!” Fang Gong shouted inwardly, his battle intent burned like inferno.

At the edge of the battlefield, high in the sky.

Wan Zi Hong and Zhou Xiong Xin were watching the battle quietly. The former was somewhat restless when she saw this scene.

“Friends from Heavenly Court, it will be best if you watch quietly.” Lu Wei Yin appeared and said with a smile.

Wan Zi Hong and Zhou Xiong Xin’s expressions changed as they watched with complete vigilance.

At the same time.

Northern Plains.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable activated his luck path investigative method.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did this every once in a while.

He first inspected Heavenly Court.

In his view, Fang Yuan had little immortal essence and would have refined the least number of dao marks. Heavenly Court’s Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was close behind him, she was the main target to be vigilant against.

Heavenly Court’s luck had somewhat increased.

“Looks like Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has already refined most of the Heavenly Court dao marks. It will be increasingly difficult to inspect her later on.”

Afterwards, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable inspected Eastern Sea.

He saw that Fang Yuan’s luck was low, it had slightly strengthened than before, but it was of no significance.

A portion of Fang Yuan and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s luck had split from the main portion and moved towards Western Desert.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable gazed towards Western Desert and saw a battlefield. The luck of countless people tangled with each other, forming a blood-red color that was mixed with black.

“Looks like Western Desert’s anti-Fang battle has already started.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable nodded.

Fang clan’s matter had grown quite big, all five regions paid attention to it. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable naturally knew of the details.

He inspected carefully and understood: “Fang clan seems to be holding an advantage, but there is a huge variable. Wan clan is hiding something... I see, so Heavenly Court helped Wan clan like this.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable laughed coldly as he saw through the secret.

From the start, he did not interfere in Western Desert’s anti-Fang battle.

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Heaven Refining Demon Venerable do not cultivate luck path, they don’t know that they are expending their luck in this contest. This is already turning into their weakness!”

“If I am currently in my peak state during my previous life, I can have gain some advantages with my luck path methods.”

“What a pity, what a pity...”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had to use the remaining immortal essence to refine luck path dao marks.

Besides this, although he had many rank eight luck path Immortal Gu, he did not have a rank nine luck path Immortal Gu.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2260: Wan Gu Chou

Rank nine existences, be they Gu Immortals or Immortal Gu, were envied by the heavens, they

could not live forever.

So, in all of humanity’s history, there were only eleven venerables, and they all were restricted by their lifespan.

There were also very few rank nine Immortal Gu that existed in the world.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable finally took a glance at his luck.

He could not help but frown.

The situation was not good.

It was worse than before.

But from the information he had, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable still could not estimate where this bad luck came from.

Naturally, he was most suspicious of Heavenly Court.

“What is that old woman, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, playing at?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was not anxious.

He had methods to change his luck.

But there was still that flaw.

He was tight on immortal essence and they needed to be used to refine dao marks. He did not have a rank nine luck path Immortal Gu, using rank eight luck path Immortal Gu to change his rank nine luck was very difficult and would expend a lot more immortal essence.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable soon stopped activating his investigative method.

The longer the contest of three venerables prolonged, the bigger the importance of information.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s inspection duration kept on decreasing.

He needed to consider his immortal essence expenditure, and try to save as much immortal essence as possible.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable fell into deep thought: ”What is the source of my bad luck?”

“Heavenly Court is the biggest suspect, but I cannot relax my guard against Fang Yuan too! He has the sovereign immortal body and can cultivate all paths, his potential is absolutely terrifying. Besides this, he has another advantage. That is refinement path!”

“Refinement path might not be proficient in fighting, but its development potential far surpasses luck path and blood path. Thus, refinement path has far more potential rank nine Gu than luck path, blood path, as well as wisdom path and star path.”

Each path had strengths and weaknesses.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable kept luck path a secret and did not spread it, so its development was limited. Other Gu Immortals would find it difficult to defend against Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path methods, but there were few luck path Immortal Gu that could reach rank nine.

On the contrary, refinement path was probably the most widely developed path. Simply because refining Gu was an inevitable part of Gu cultivation.

Even Gu cultivators who cultivated other paths would have refined Gu to some extent.

Thus, as refinement path grew, more refinement path Gu cultivators emerged which meant more refinement path dao marks. Refinement path resources were unceasing, and there were all kinds of refinement path Immortal Gu. Moreover, refinement path Immortal Gu that could advance to rank nine became even more numerous.

“Fortunately, Fang Yuan is lacking immortal essence currently, he is still far from refining a rank nine refinement path Immortal Gu.”

“Maybe, my bad luck is not because of Fang Yuan or Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, but the other venerables. If other venerables revived, who would be the most problematic for me?”

Fang Yuan had Cooking Luck Pot as well as obscured heavenly secret, although Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had the ability to inspect him, he did not get proper results.

“If I gain a breakthrough in the blood path Immortal Gu transaction, this luck should change to good.”

Fang Yuan was not the only one who obstructed Giant Sun Immortal Venerable in terms of blood path Immortal Gu, Heavenly Court had already been doing so since Blood Sea Ancestor’s time.

Demon Judgment Board’s core Immortal Gu Blood Relation, and Red Heart Traveler’s heart blood Immortal Gu were things that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable thirsted for.

Currently, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu was still in a long negotiation with Fang Yuan.

Longevity Heaven was secretly negotiating with Heavenly Court as well for blood path Immortal Gu, but the progress was almost zero.

Back in Western Desert.

Fang Gong got close to Xiao Ye Hu and punched.

Under his fear, Xiao Ye Hu moved Immortal Gu House Chamber Pot in front to block.

A loud explosion rang as Chamber Pot was destroyed.

The punch continued forward and struck Xiao Ye Hu’s chest.

Xiao Ye Hu flew away like a meteor. His chest had sunk in, large amounts of blood mixed with internal organs gushed out of his mouth, leaving a trail of blood.

One punch destroyed Chamber Pot and caused Xiao Ye Hu to be on the verge of death.

“Let’s retreat!”

“We can’t fight anymore.”

The anti-Fang alliance army was shaking with fear, their fighting spirit was almost depleted.

Fang Gong’s strength far surpassed their expectations, he was actually not restricted by

Chamber Pot.

This first supreme elder of Fang clan was truly the nemesis of Immortal Gu Houses. Ever since Fang clan attacked Wan clan’s tall pine oasis until now, he had already destroyed Winding Light Platform, Red River Wheel, and Xiao clan’s Chamber Pot.

These three Immortal Gu Houses were all at rank seven, they could match rank eight battle strength!

“There is one more left!” Fang Gong turned around slightly, ignoring the rank seven Gu Immortals as he glared at Myriad Age Building.

Only Myriad Age Building was left among the anti-Fang alliance army’s Immortal Gu Houses.

Myriad Age Building was a rank seven Immortal Gu House, it could match rank eight. It was the final pillar of the anti-Fang alliance army, once it fell, Fang clan would obtain complete victory.

This was the most crucial point.

The remaining Gu Immortals might be rank seven elites with their own specialties, but without Myriad Age Building to stabilize their position, these people would be like a disorderly mob.

“Fang clan has six Immortal Gu Houses, and they are all at rank seven. Our side only has Myriad Age Building left.”

“Retreat, retreat!”

“Heavenly Court is still not making a move? Sigh, they are really incompetent. Look at how much Heaven Refining Demon Venerable supported Fang clan, a total of three Immortal Gu Houses! What did Heavenly Court provide?”

Fang Di Chang displayed a wisdom path Gu Immortal’s strategic ability. At this delicate juncture, he ordered Fang clan to stop chasing those rank seven Gu Immortals, instead controlling Immortal Gu Houses to surround Myriad Age Building.

Seeing that Fang clan did not give chase, besides the Wan clan Gu Immortals, everyone else in the alliance retreated madly.

Wan Xiao and Wan Hao Guang’s expressions were ashen as they retreated into Myriad Age Building.

Fang clan’s six Immortal Gu Houses encircled Myriad Age Building, Fang clan’s expression was leisurely as he flew towards Myriad Age Building.

“Surrender, friends of Wan clan. I guarantee in the name of Fang clan that as long as you surrender and cede a portion of your territories, my Fang clan will not ask for your Immortal Gu, or kill any of you.” Fang Gong said.

Their conditions were actually so lax.

“We won!!” Fang Leng and Fang Yun were already starting to cheer in joy.

The Fang clan immortals did not object to Fang Gong’s surrender terms.

Fang clan had already discussed this, if this kind of situation happened, they would persuade Wan clan to surrender.

If Wan clan surrendered, it would be extremely beneficial to Fang clan.

Once Wan clan admitted their defeat, Fang clan could righteously occupy a portion of Wan clan’s territories.

Wan clan would no longer have a righteous cause to rally the other super forces to organize another anti-Fang alliance.

Naturally, Wan clan’s headquarters and some important resource points would be given back to Wan clan.

But for Fang clan, the overall gains were absolutely much larger than losses.

“Lord Lu Wei Yin, looks like Fang clan has won.”

“Naturally. Just look at who is supporting them!”

Two rockman Gu Immortals were standing beside Lu Wei Yin, showing a prideful smile at this sight.

But Lu Wei Yin was frowning as he sensed something amiss.

“These two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals still have such a relaxed expression, looks like things are not so simple!”

Heavenly Court’s Zhou Xiong Xin and Wan Zi Hong had an indifferent expression with an anticipating gaze.

Suddenly, a woman’s voice rang out from Myriad Age Building: ”Fang clan’s descendants are really amazing, your strategy is also comprehensive, but is my Wan clan so easily bullied?”

Fang clan’s immortals were bewildered.

At this crucial moment, this strange female voice actually spoke as Wan clan’s representative, who was she?

Did Heavenly Court interfere?

But Fang clan knew the information about Wan Zi Hong, and this was not her voice.

“Fairy, may I ask for your name? This is a fight between Fang clan and Wan clan.” Fang Gong frowned, asking inquisitively.

“Hahaha!” The mysteriously female immortal laughed loudly. Her voice was hoarse and unpleasant, but it was filled with complete confidence.

Following the laughter, a vast rank eight aura spread out.

“As wind, dust, and flowers scatter,

People and eras change beyond recognition.

As the frigid bells of time shatter,

None can dispel the sorrow of myriad ages!”

As the recital ended, heaven and earth turned dark.

Cold mournful wind and bleak clouds filled the sky.

Inside several li of radius, all living beings including Gu Immortals of both sides felt an intense sorrow attacking their minds.

Sorrow, sorrow, and more sorrow!

Dejection, disappointment, depression, worry... all kinds of negative emotions made the people shed tears, their hearts felt stifled and suffocated.

Fang clan’s six Immortal Gu Houses surrounding Myriad Age Building became unsteady as they started shaking, almost falling down.

Fang Di Chang, who was inside Thought Expelling Pavilion, was half-kneeling. His expression was distorted as he resisted Wan clan’s terrifying killer move with all his strength, blood seeping out of his mouth and nose!

Fang Gong barely managed to resist, retreating in panic as he exclaimed: ”You are Wan Gu Chou[1. Her name makes up the ’sorrow of myriad ages’ in the poem.]?!”

In just a short few moments, more wrinkles appeared on his face, he was growing old rapidly as close to one hundred years were extracted from his lifespan!

“Retreat....” Fang Di Chang said with much difficulty.

Fang clan’s six Immortal Gu Houses retreated in panic.

The alliance immortals who had already retreated to the edge of the battlefield were dumbfounded at this sight.

“Wan Gu Chou?! Isn’t that the strongest peak rank eight female immortal in Wan clan’s history?”

“When she was alive, Wan clan almost dominated the whole Western Desert!”

“She lived for ten thousand years, Myriad Age Building was created by her.”

“She is actually alive?!”

“Right, this is very likely to be Heavenly Court’s move.”

“It must be her! Her move, everlasting sorrow, is famous throughout the history, only she who cultivates both time path and wisdom path can use it. And she is the only one who can amplify this move to such a terrifying degree through Myriad Age Building!”

“This move already possesses the flair of pseudo venerable level!!”

The immortals were shaken.

Wan Gu Chou stopped the killer move as she said to the alliance Gu Immortals: ”Are you still not making a move?”

The immortals understood at once, they charged over with a battle cry.

Fang clan was struck by everlasting sorrow killer move, the sorrowful and depressive feelings

were hard to get rid of, they could not even use twenty percent of their battle strength and had

to retreat in defeat.

Under Myriad Age Building's lead, the alliance army gave chase.

The immortals first destroyed Smoke Wave Building, then destroyed Thought Expelling Pavilion.

To save Fang Di Chang who was in Thought Expelling Pavilion, Fang Gong and the other

immortals were forced to make a move.

After a deadly battle, Fang Di Chang was rescued, but Fang clan paid a disastrous price for this.

Their most exceptional Immortal Gu House Fallen Flower Hall was destroyed, Fang Dong Xi

and Fang An Lei, these two elite rank sevens, died in the battle.

Finally, Fang clan brought the remaining three damaged Immortal Gu Houses and left the

battlefield.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2261: New Anti-Fang Alliance

Wang Xiao Er woke up from his sleep.

“Wasn't I imprisoned? Where am I now?” Wang Xiao Er was puzzled, he found that he was in a

vast wasteland.

“Quickly, escape!”

“Escape, escape!”

A large wave of humans suddenly surged out.

Crack!

With a loud sound, lightning struck the ground.

Following that, the earth and mountains shook. Explosions occurred loudly as the ground began to collapse.

In ten or so breaths of time, the surrounding ten li of area had become a giant crater.

The crater enclosed all the people including Wang Xiao Er.

Wang Xiao Er was dazed as he was sandwiched between the crowd.

The surrounding people were in disorder and panic, Wang Xiao Er also had the same feelings.

He did not know what happened.

Before this, he was captured by Fang Dong Xi in Sand Heap blessed land. Fang Dong Xi soul searched him and obtained information regarding Hu Land.

During the contest over Sand Heap blessed land, Fang Dong Xi lost his soul cores. Fortunately, Fang Dong Xi captured Wang Xiao Er and obtained the secret information regarding Hu Land.

Fang Dong Xi used this precious information to make up for his mistake. On the other hand, he also learned of the peculiarity of Wang Xiao Er’s body.

Fang Dong Xi imprisoned Wang Xiao Er in his immortal aperture, and specially constructed an underground prison. He studied and experimented on Wang Xiao Er’s body many times, but still did not understand what was going on with Wang Xiao Er’s body.

“All of you, shut up!” A figure suddenly appeared in the sky.

Wang Xiao Er and others looked up.

“Your ancestor Fang Dong Xi has already died in battle, everything is now all my, Xiao Ye Hu’s, property. You are also my captives! Stay here, I will make sure you live a life worse than death if you dare to escape!”

Xiao Ye Hu’s expression was cold and malevolent.

The chaotic crowd was shivering like a cicada under his threat.

Fang Dong Xi and Fang An Lei died in battle to protect Fang Di Chang. They were both rank seven Gu Immortals, their immortal apertures landed on the ground and opened its door to absorb heaven and earth qi, becoming an unowned blessed land.

Xiao Ye Hu took the chance to enter and plunder his battle spoils.

But the plundered resources did not satisfy Xiao Ye Hu.

His loss was extremely severe, his Immortal Gu House Chamber Pot was destroyed by Fang

Gong. Even emptying Fang Dong Xi’s immortal aperture only made up for a meager amount of the losses.

“This won’t do, Wan clan must give me an answer!” Xiao Ye Hu’s expression was unsightly.

After he stabilized Dong Xi blessed land’s situation, he quickly left to look for Wan clan.

At this time, the anti-Fang alliance had already succeeded in regaining Wan clan headquarters blessed land.

The anti-Fang alliance immortals were resting here for the moment.

Xiao Ye Hu came before a hall, he restrained his unsightly expression and said loudly: ”Senior Wan Gu Chou, junior Xiao Ye Hu is here as Xiao clan’s representative. Please meet me, we need to discuss some matters.”

Times had changed.

Wan Gu Chou suddenly revived and defeated Fang clan. Her impressive might shook the whole of Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world.

In front of such an expert, Xiao Ye Hu had to restrain himself.

Soon, Xiao Ye Hu received permission. He entered the hall and saw Wan Gu Chou sitting on the main seat.

Wan Gu Chou was wearing a white garment, her hair was silvery white, she looked quite old.

Wan Hao Guang was standing to her left, with Wan Xiao on her right.

“Hehehe.” She looked at Xiao Ye Hu and laughed, her laughter was hoarse and terrifying:

“Junior from Xiao clan, you came at the right time. I have something to discuss with you. Take a seat and wait for a while.”

“Okay.” Xiao Ye Hu did not dare to refute, he chose a seat to sit.

After a short while, other anti-Fang alliance Gu Immortals were also invited into the hall.

Even Heavenly Court’s two Gu Immortals Wan Zi Hong and Zhou Xiong Xin were present.

Wan Gu Chou looked around and said: ”Although Fang clan was defeated, they stole many of my clan’s resource points. My Wan clan is unable to pay the price agreed upon with your clans.”

“But, this is a huge opportunity for us.”

“Fang clan suffered a heavy loss, their strength has fallen sharply. As long as we give chase, Fang clan will not be able to defend. They have fallen to the demonic path, we must get rid of them! At that time, we will all get a share of the battle spoils.”

The immortals felt a chill as they listened.

This Wan Gu Chou was extremely shameless, directly saying she did not have a way to pay them, forcing the anti-Fang alliance to continue fighting.

Her methods were also vicious, she wanted to follow up the victory by giving chase and eradicating Fang clan.

But this was indeed a good opportunity.

The immortals were moved.

Fang clan sold a large number of Wan clan’s resource points, but sold very few of their own resource points. Their foundation was still there.

Now was the perfect time to beat them down.

‘Wan clan is sinister, they deliberately concealed Wan Gu Chou and kept us in dark.’

‘Wan Gu Chou kept on hiding, she only made a move when we crumbled. And with just one move, she defeated Fang clan, creating the current situation which is the most favorable to Wan clan!’

‘On the surface, Wan clan transacted the most with Xiao clan; in reality, their biggest collaborator is Heavenly Court!’

None of the immortals here were stupid, they had already realized the situation.

If Wan Gu Chou had made a move earlier, even if the anti-Fang alliance defeated Fang clan, most of the battle merits would belong to the alliance Gu Immortals.

But Wan Gu Chou made a move only at the final juncture, immediately revitalizing Wan clan’s prestige. The alliance immortals did not have the qualification to talk of their merits or shamelessly ask for payment.

“We need to eradicate evil completely. Fang clan broke the rules, what rights does such a demonic super clan have to continue existing in Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world?”

“I agree with Senior Wan Gu Chou’s plan.”

“But we should discuss how we distribute the spoils.”

The immortals had participated in the previous large battle, they all suffered losses; some needed to urgently make up for it, like Xiao Ye Hu. Some thought since they had to undergo danger, they might as well reap benefits.

Seeing the Gu Immortals expressing their agreement, Wan Gu Chou looked at the two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals: ”Heavenly Court has been the leader of humanity since ancient times, the banner of the righteous path. We will need your help in this battle.”

Wan Gu Chou was deeply aware: Compared to Western Desert’s Gu Immortals, Heavenly Court’s financial support was much more important.

Without Heavenly Court’s support, Wan clan had no way to attack Fang clan.

Wan clan would have to pay a lot to collaborate with Heavenly Court, but the gains were also equally great.

Wan Gu Chou herself was revived by Heavenly Court.

Right now, a lot of her rank eight time path Immortal Gu were lent by Heavenly Court.

Even her everlasting sorrow killer move was personally modified by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

Zhou Xiong Xin and Wan Zi Hong glanced at each other, all the development so far did not exceed Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s calculations.

This was also the moment that these two Heavenly Court immortals were waiting for.

At the next moment, Zhou Xiong Xin stood up: ”Friends of Western Desert, it is my Heavenly Court duty to eliminate the demonic path, we are very happy to support you.”

“Right now, Fang clan’s calamity is before them. Why did they have such guts to attack the alliance? The true root issue is not Fang clan but Eastern Sea’s Heaven Refining Demon Venerable!”

“Heavenly Court is willing to continue to support you, but our condition is that you are not allowed to join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance!”

The hall fell into silence as Gu Immortals looked at each other.

Wan Gu Chou broke the silence: ”My Wan clan agrees!”

Wan clan had already become Heavenly Court’s supporter through the anti-Fang battle.

Wan Gu Chou spoke: ”Friend Xiao Ye Hu, what do you think?”

Xiao Ye Hu’s expression was quite unsightly. Wan Gu Chou intentionally picked his name and forced him into a corner. He had no choice but to state his position.

He snorted coldly: ”I, Xiao Ye Hu, am obviously not willing to associate with the demonic path, but that is just my individual stance. How can I casually represent my Xiao clan in agreeing to this? I have to ask for guidance from my Xiao clan’s first supreme elder!”

It was a delaying tactic.

But Zhou Xiong Xin had already expected it: ”Then, Xiao Ye Hu, please contact your clan’s leading Gu Immortals right now. I believe that the difference between righteous and demonic is deeply rooted in people’s hearts. Xiao clan is one of the role models of Western Desert’s righteous path, you will not make a mistake in this major matter.”

Wan Gu Chou immediately nodded, echoing Heavenly Court immortals: ”Let’s do it like this, friends, please ask for guidance from your clan’s leaders, and we will then discuss the matter of the distribution of spoils.”

She pretended to be tolerant: ”If any clan is not willing, we will not criticize them. In this anti-Fang battle, you do not have any merits but you worked hard. If you don’t want to continue in anti-Fang alliance, my Wan clan will bid you farewell and won’t make things difficult for you.”

The immortals cursed inwardly.

They had not gotten any payment, or maybe only a small portion of it.

If they did not agree to Heavenly Court’s condition, Wan Gu Chou was going to drive them away from the anti-Fang alliance.

Only if they were in anti-Fang alliance could they get their payment as well as the battle spoils in the upcoming battle against Fang clan.

A while later.

The Gu Immortals finished asking for instructions. No one left.

Under the pressure of righteousness, Western Desert’s super clans could not risk going against the public opinion and leave the alliance.

Moreover, if they left the alliance at this point, they could not get any benefits.

Fang clan was like a piece of fat meat that lured these colossal vultures.

“Good, friends, you have not let me down!” Wan Gu Chou stood up and said with a smile.

Right now, a new opportunity lied before her.

She was now the alliance leader of the anti-Fang alliance. As long as she led the alliance and defeated Fang clan, her reputation would rise to the peak of Western Desert’s Gu Immortal world.

At that time, she would be like Wu Yong, becoming the publicly recognized leader of the Western Desert Gu Immortal world.

Zhou Xiong Xin and Wan Zi Hong were smiling.

This was all within Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s calculations.

It was very advantageous for Heavenly Court to help Wan Gu Chou become the leader of Western Desert.

“Fang Yuan is number one in Gu refinement, but how can he be Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s match in terms of methods?” Zhou Xiong Xin laughed inwardly.

The very day, Wan Gu Chou announced the establishment of new anti-Fang alliance.

With the revival of this strongest expert of Wan clan, the situation of the whole Western Desert Gu Immortal world changed suddenly.

Almost all the Gu Immortals of the five regions were paying close attention to it.

“This contest ended in Heavenly Court’s victory.”

“Fang clan is in danger!”

“I did not expect Heavenly Court to be able to revive other Gu Immortals and not just their own Heavenly Court members.”

“The big picture is still in under the control of the venerables.”

“If Fang Yuan were to make a move, this Wan Gu Chou will only be a minor joke!”

“Hmph, Fang Yuan can make a move, but can’t Star Constellation Immortal Venerable do the same?”

“Haha, it’s best if the two venerables fight, then Ancestor Giant Sun can reap the benefits of their conflict.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2262: Righteousness with Benefits to Gain

Back in Western Desert.

Myriad ore desert.

Shi Zhong looked at the message from Shi clan with an indifferent expression.

“Fang clan lost. Looks like Shi Kang has another chance now.”

“However, Fang clan only lost two rank seven Gu Immortals and three Immortal Gu Houses, they still have some battle strength left.”

Shi Zhong was a person who was ostracized by Shi clan, while Shi Kang was a rising star who was nurtured by the clan.

Shi Zhong flattered Shi Kang on the surface, but was envious and hated him inwardly.

“Regardless of the battle results, it has nothing to do with me.”

“I still need to rely on myself.”

Shi Zhong gritted his teeth as he thought of how his recent attempt at refining wealth Immortal Gu failed again.

The thought of asking Fang Yuan to help refine Gu flashed in his mind.

Shi Zhong gritted his teeth as he made a decision.

“Looks like I must sell some wealth mortal Gu.” Shi Zhong had not received any support, and had spent almost all his assets in his attempts to refine wealth Immortal Gu.

He was already dirt-poor right now. He had to sell some stuff to exchange for immortal materials for another attempt at Gu refinement.

The things he could sell were only wealth mortal Gu.

Although he had failed in his refinement repeatedly, he also had some gains.

He could not refine wealth Immortal Gu, but he had refined wealth mortal Gu.

Connecting to treasure yellow heaven, Shi Zhong hesitated for a long while before choosing to put a dozen or so wealth mortal Gu in treasure yellow heaven.

Wealth mortal Gu gathered into a lump and formed a pillar of treasure light.

There was an abundant amount of treasure light, but these were clearly mortal Gu. Such an abnormality attracted the attention of other Gu Immortals.

“What Gu is this, how can it form such a treasure light?” Nu Er Tu asked.

It had been more than a year since he advanced to a rank six Gu Immortal. Although it was due to the help of Nu Er tribe, he was still a newbie rank six Gu Immortal.

Whenever he had time, he would connect to treasure yellow heaven and explore with his divine sense to increase his knowledge.

Nu Er Tu was the great-grandson of Gu Immortal Nu Er Chi, he had also participated in the final Imperial Court contest.

He was proficient in enslaving leopards and had been recognized as one of the five beast kings by Northern Plains’ Gu Masters, along with Fang Yuan’s disguise of Chang Shan Yin.

“This is wealth Gu.” Shi Zhong replied.

Nu Er Tu was stunned, and asked with even more curiosity: ”Wealth Gu? Isn’t this the legendary Gu recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>? But this mortal Gu...”

Shi Zhong snorted coldly: ”I painstakingly researched and created its mortal Gu recipe. These rank five mortal Gu can turn into any rank five Gu material.”

Nu Er Tu’s mind shook, asking: ”Any rank five Gu material? Can it be used multiple times?”

Shi Zhong’s voice was softer now: ”These are one-time consumable Gu.”

If not for this, he would not have taken them out to sell.

Shi Zhong had been trying to refine immortal level wealth Gu. If he sold many wealth mortal Gu, there was the risk of someone deducing its Immortal Gu recipe.

At that time, it would be the same as Shi Zhong creating his own rivals.

If he had an alternative, Shi Zhong would not sell these wealth Gu. Moreover, he was only selling a dozen of these mortal Gu.

Nu Er Tu thought: ”These wealth Gu can only turn into any rank five Gu material, they are not practical. As a Gu Immortal, which rank five Gu material can’t we get? But this involves the legendary wealth Gu, it is not a bad idea to buy some for research or give to others.”

Nu Er Tu asked for the price, but soon, his divine sense fluctuated intensely: ”You are asking for such a high price for a mortal Gu? Are you insane?”

Shi Zhong said: ”At first glance, using a mortal Gu to exchange for immortal materials is indeed a fantasy. But just think of it, as long as you have these mortal Gu, you have the chance to deduce its Immortal Gu recipe.”

“Just think about it, how high of a value does wealth Immortal Gu have!”

“I will be honest, these mortal Gu are one of a kind in this world, and it is likely that only these many are left.”

“I also obtained these from a fortuitous encounter.”

“Unfortunately, I have no proficiency in Gu refinement. If not for me being lacking on funds, I would not be selling them.”

“How much do you want? If you buy three, I can give you a discount.”

Shi Zhong had a glib tongue, Nu Er Tu fell into hesitation.

Shi Zhong’s words were reasonable.

But was it worth it to use a large amount of immortal materials to exchange for a hope of deducing an Immortal Gu recipe?

Nu Er Tu was not stupid, his thoughts changed as he said: ”It is not an issue to buy two or three wealth mortal Gu. But I will like to know something, where did you obtain these?”

Shi Zhong was immediately vigilant: ”Your question is somewhat going overboard. I don’t want to get into any trouble. Moreover, if I really did what you want and gave you the information, how can you confirm if it is real?”

“That is true.” Nu Er Tu hesitated once again.

Right at this time, another divine sense said excitedly: ”Wealth Gu are actually here! I will buy them, I will buy all of the stock that you have.”

Shi Zhong responded: ”Friend, please be calm and listen to my price.”

The mysterious Gu Immortal stopped for a while after hearing the price, before nodding: ”Alright, I want all of them!”

Shi Zhong was dazed, while Nu Er Tu was vigilant.

Shi Zhong thought, and said: ”It is not that I don’t want to sell them all to you, but you came slightly late. This friend here came first and our deal is almost done.”

Shi Zhong did not want sell all the wealth Gu to one person. If he did that, there would be too many clues, and the possibility of deducing an Immortal Gu recipe would be very high.

This mysterious Gu Immortal’s attitude made Shi Zong feel that something was strange.

Just in case, he hoped to sell some to Nu Er Tu.

But Nu Er Tu backed out.

“This mysterious Gu Immortal appeared just as I was hesitating. Is this a scheme to urge me to buy some wealth Gu?”

Nu Er Tu had heard of such scams.

In the end, he gave up the notion of buying any.

Shi Zhong hesitated for a while, he had no choice but to sell all the wealth Gu to the mysterious Gu Immortal.

After gathering enough immortal materials, he left treasure yellow heaven to prepare for Gu refinement once again.

“He really sold them?” Nu Er Tu felt somewhat disappointed.

And that mysterious Gu Immortal left treasure yellow heaven after obtaining wealth Gu.

He was Spirit Butterfly Valley’s Gu Immortal Xiao Bai Hong.

Xiao Bai Hong handed these wealth Gu to rank five Gu Master Xiao Qi Xing who was standing beside him.

Xiao Qi Xing was Xiao Bai Hong’s great-grandson, one of the ten children of human path who obtained huge support from Heavenly Court.

Xiao Bai Hong said: ”Qi Xing, are these wealth Gu really helpful to you?”

Xiao Qi Xing said: ”Great grandfather, I cultivate human path and have recently obtained a Gu Immortal true inheritance by chance. This true inheritance is incomplete, but it has ten or so Immortal Gu recipes of justice Gu. The most exceptional Immortal Gu recipe among them uses wealth Immortal Gu as the supplementary material to refine justice Immortal Gu.”

“Right now, although we don’t have wealth Immortal Gu, we can modify that Immortal Gu recipe based on these mortal Gu.”

“Once we refine justice Immortal Gu, I can use it as my vital Gu and officially become a human path Gu Immortal!”

All of the ten children of human path were aware of the advantages of this path, thus they all planned to become human path Gu Immortals.

But to do that, they needed a human path Gu worm as their vital Gu.

Xiao Qi Xing had great ambitions, he wanted to obtain rank six justice Immortal Gu and make it his vital Gu.

If his immortal ascension went smoothly, under the ideal conditions, his vital Gu would also advance to become rank seven!

Like that, rank six Xiao Qi Xing would have a rank seven vital Immortal Gu.

“Justice Gu is no doubt a human path Gu worm.”

“Using it together with soldier Gu, sergeant Gu, lieutenant Gu, and so on, I can use the human path killer move, commander of justice!”

“This move may become my trump card.”

Xiao Qi Xing excitedly explained his cultivation plan.

Xiao Bai Hong laughed loudly, stroking Xiao Qi Xing’s head: ”Good, good, good, since you have such lofty ambitions, I will use all our resources to lend you a hand!”

Southern Border, Tie clan.

“Good, good, good, righteousness exists in people’s hearts after all!” Tie Qu Zhong laughed heartily.

“Lord Qu Zhong, what could make you so happy?” A female voice resounded.

Tie Qu Zhong looked to the side and saw a heroic looking rank five female Gu Master, he smiled: ”Ah, Tie Ruo Nan. Look, this is the latest battle report about Western Desert’s Fang clan.”

Tie Qu Zhong handed an information path mortal Gu to Tie Ruo Nan.

Tie Ruo Nan looked into the Gu, her expression was slightly moved: ”So this happened while we were in closed cultivation inside Demon Suppression Tower.”

Tie Qu Zhong said: ”I already felt that Fang clan was a shoddy force, they got involved with Fang Yuan, they are the shame of Western Desert’s righteous path, they don’t even have any of the righteous path’s demeanor. Now, it looks like I was right! Fang clan’s members are completely insane to associate with a demon like Fang Yuan. Now, they have been defeated, this miserable defeat will be Fang Yuan’s outcome in the future.”

Tie Ruo Nan nodded: ”Since ancient times, righteousness has always triumphed over evil. The demonic path can be rampant for a while, but the strength and hope of the righteous path will exist in this world forever.”

These two had always hated Fang Yuan.

First, Tie clan’s behavior had always been to destroy the demonic path.

Second, the two hated Fang Yuan personally.

There was no need to speak about Tie Ruo Nan, the hatred had already incurred back in Qing Mao Mountain when her father died.

Tie Qu Zhong had once participated in hunting down Fang Yuan, but was captured by the latter and his edge Immortal Gu was stolen as well. Although he was released in the end, his immortal aperture was also taken away by Fang Yuan.

Tie Qu Zhong could only restart his cultivation, he was still a Gu Master now.

Tie Ruo Nan continued to analyze: ”Heavenly Court is worthy of being the role model of the righteous path, the leader of humanity. They supported Wan clan by reviving Wan Gu Chou, they would rather support with Immortal Gu, immortal essence stones and so on, than to directly interfere in Western Desert’s political affairs, this is the noble demeanor of the righteous path.”

“Fang clan’s threat is not the destruction of Wan clan. Wan clan is only one of the many forces, there are still a large number of super forces even if it is destroyed. Fang clan’s greatest threat is the fact that they can corrupt people’s hearts, making other Gu Immortals and super forces join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance. But now, Heavenly Court has given another option to everyone.”

“Heavenly Court has immortal essence stones, they can support with Immortal Gu, and even revive Gu Immortals. Wan clan must have paid a huge price to obtain such support. This is Heavenly Court’s deep intention.”

“Only righteousness with benefits to gain can be promoted and wildly spread to everyone. Such righteousness is firm and stable. An overly virtuous type of righteousness is instead dubious and hypocritical, it cannot be widely spread, and will only make righteousness seem weak.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2263: Selling to the Point of Bankruptcy

Tie Qu Zhong nodded his head repeatedly, he looked at Tie Ruo Nan with an unconcealed gaze of appreciation.

Previously, when Tie Qu Zhong heard that Tie Mian Shen chose Tie Ruo Nan to inherit the Iron Mask true inheritance, he had some doubts.

But over this period of interaction, Tie Qu Zhong fully approved of Tie Ruo Nan, he felt that she was the rising star with most potential in this generation.

“Tie Ruo Nan, it is great that you have such a deep awareness of the situation.”

“Fang Yuan is evil, he seized my immortal aperture and forced me to use second aperture to cultivate, causing me to be dependent on him. My future is ruined, my prospects are bleak. But you have bright prospects. Your current accumulation is already enough to undergo immortal ascension!” Tie Qu Zhong said in a gratified tone.

Tie Ruo Nan did not pretend to be modest: ”Yes. I was in closed cultivation inside Demon Suppression Tower recently, I have consulted many seniors in the clan regarding their immortal ascension experience, I am 80-90% confident in passing the immortal ascension!”

“Good. But you need to slow down a little. The two heavens are merging, causing constant turbulence and heaven’s will to be chaotic, you will suffer losses if you undergo immortal ascension at this time. The opportunity of natural inspiration comes only once in a lifetime, but it is very important.” Tie Qu Zhong instructed.

“Oh? I would like to hear the details.”

Tie Qu Zhong explained: ”In the process of natural inspiration, a Gu cultivator can question heaven’s will and obtain an answer. If the question is too difficult and surpasses the limits of heaven and earth, you won’t obtain any answer.”

“For instance, if you ask for a method of eternal life during natural inspiration, heaven and earth has no way to answer you.”

“If the question is too simple, the Gu cultivator can obtain an answer, but they will not be making the best use of this precious opportunity. That will be extremely unfortunate.”

“The ideal situation is to ask a question of moderate difficulty and obtain a perfect answer. But this situation is too rare, and we have no way to grasp it.”

“So, the most mature method is to ask a slightly more difficult question. As such, the answer will be correct but not complete as it will be lacking a small portion.”

“The remaining portion can be completed through deductions using manpower and material resources in the future.”

“This is the most effective way to use natural inspiration.”

Tie Ruo Nan’s eyes shined as she asked: ”Then how can I judge the difficulty of these questions?”

“Generally speaking, asking about Immortal Gu recipes of common rank seven Immortal Gu is the standard for this. Any Gu worms related to <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> are not ordinary Gu.”

“Besides this, ask about things closely related to you. For instance, you cultivate metal path, ask questions relating to metal path. But if you ask about earth path or other paths, the effect will be low. And you need to be very careful if you want to ask about things relating to dream path.”

At the same time.

Southern Border.

Iron Tooth Mountain.

In a nameless cave.

Wu Yong cupped his fists and greeted with a smile: ”I brought some good wine this time.”

In front of Wu Yong was an old Gu Immortal. He was sitting cross-legged on the ground, he slowly opened his eyes like he had just woken up.

The old man sighed: ”Lord Wu Yong, this is the third time you have paid me a visit. You are a rank eight Gu cultivator, the alliance leader of Southern Alliance, but have given such special treatment to a mere rank seven Gu Immortal like me.”

“I understand your intention, but I only want to cultivate in seclusion, I have no wish to participate in the struggles and conflicts of the world.”

“Your wine is fragrant, but I don’t have the fortune to enjoy it.”

This old man was a secluded cultivator, he cultivated wisdom path and was called Forgotten Daoist.

Wu clan specialized in wind path, they had no advantages in wisdom path.

Wu Yong had been looking for reliable talents. When he learned that Forgotten Daoist was living on Iron Tooth Mountain, he personally visited three times to recruit him.

Wu Yong said grimly: ”Friend, you are wrong. Right now, the two heavens are merging, the war of the five regions is almost before us. Who can possibly stay out of it?”

“Even if you are unwilling to conflict with others, in this chaotic world, there are always people who want to cause trouble, like Western Desert’s Fang clan.”

“With some support from Fang Yuan, Fang clan decisively invaded Wan clan, causing Wan clan’s first supreme elder to perish in battle.”

“This is the signal of the upcoming chaotic world.”

“Even if Heavenly Court supported Wan clan to victory, what is the main difference between Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Fang Yuan?”

“As a wisdom path Gu cultivator, you must have understood it.”

Forgotten Daoist heaved a long sigh: ”It is better to be a dog during peaceful times, than a man involved in brutal chaos. In the present world, Great Love Immortal Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable are leading an ultimate force of a region each. They have robust foundation, they can easily topple the balance between super forces. As for you, Wu Yong, you can hardly restrain your excitement and urge to make a move, but I can only see misery in this.”

“Lord Wu Yong, you don’t need to urge me anymore, please leave.”

Wu Yong sighed, he could only hold his expectations for the future. After looking at Forgotten Daoist, he left while feeling it was a deep pity.

This world was huge.

There was Shi Zhong who worked hard and tried to refine Immortal Gu, there was also Xiao Qi Xing who used his great-grandfather’s help to attempt a rank seven vital Gu even before advancing to Gu Immortal.

There was Nu Er Tu, who already advanced to a Gu Immortal with the clan’s help, there was also a Gu Master, Tie Ruo Nan, who cultivated metal path, she obtained her senior’s guidance and learned of the secret of natural inspiration.

There was Wu Yong with great ambition, and also Forgotten Daoist, who was content with living in seclusion and was unwilling to get involved in disputes.

And finally, there was a super force whose future was dark and currently faced a precarious situation — Fang clan.

In Fang clan headquarters.

The atmosphere was heavy in the discussion hall.

Fang clan lost.

Their losses were severe!

What should they do?

Be it Fang Gong, Fang Di Chang, or Fang Leng and Fang Yun, their mood was extremely heavy.

Wan Gu Chou reclaimed all the lost territories of Wan clan, but the anti-Fang alliance was still there.

If not for the alliance discussing about the distribution of spoils, they would have already attacked Fang clan.

Although Fang clan still had the strength to fight, their hope of winning was negligible.

Right at this time, Lu Wei Yin suddenly paid a visit.

The Fang clan immortals were moved.

“Quick, invite him in!” Fang Gong had just finished speaking, when he stood up, ”No, come with me, we will welcome him together.”

Fang clan’s immortals invited Lu Wei Yin into the hall.

Lu Wei Yin saw the dejected expressions of Fang clan immortals: ”Everlasting sorrow is indeed an amazing killer move. According to what I know, everlasting sorrow is a compound killer move created from time path and wisdom path. Once the target’s feelings are influenced by this killer move, their lifespan will decrease rapidly. The decreased lifespan will strengthen the killer move’s power, making the sorrowful emotions even more violent. The emotions will shroud the heart, and the target’s battle intent will fall to a minimum.”

Fang Hua Sheng sighed: ”This killer move is a lot different from the historical records. I tried my best to treat it, but there are still many negative emotions left in our hearts, they can only dissipate slowly with time.”

Lu Wei Yin laughed: ”Don’t worry, I brought a special Immortal Gu this time, please try it.”

Saying so, he gave an Immortal Gu to Fang Di Chang.

This was a rank seven wisdom path Immortal Gu.

After Fang Di Chang activated it with much difficulty, the Immortal Gu let out a profound light that covered his whole body.

After a while, Fang Di Chang recovered his mental state. His body was relaxed and the sorrowful emotions that shrouded his heart were already gone.

“This is a good Immortal Gu.” Fang Di Chang praised.

Lu Wei Yin continued his words: ”My alliance leader knows of Fang clan’s defeat, so he specially refined this Immortal Gu. With this wisdom path Immortal Gu, it is easy to remove the remnant power of the killer move everlasting sorrow.”

“Besides this Immortal Gu, there are also several killer moves with it as the core. One of them can even defend against everlasting sorrow, albeit with difficulty.”

“You only need to pay a super resource point to buy them all.”

Fang Di Chang smiled bitterly and was about to speak.

But Lu Wei Yin added: ”No need to grieve, my friends. I know Fang clan lost Fang Dong Xi and Fang An Lei in this battle. This is a disastrous loss for Fang clan!”

“But no worries. Heavenly Court has methods to revive Wan Gu Chou, how can my Lord Fang Yuan not have them?”

“You only need to pay two giant resource points for Lord Alliance Leader to revive those two, but their cultivation will be at rank six.”

This time, the Fang clan immortals’ expressions changed.

“Really? Can An Lei really be revived?” Fang Chen was very excited.

He was Fang clan’s son-in-law, Fang An Lei was his wife.

Lu Wei Yin smiled: ”In the previous transactions with your clan, there was one transaction which asked for your human qi. These portions of human qi are the key to reviving you.”

“There are no issues with the revival. Not only this, there is also no issue with restoring the cultivation of those two to rank seven. You just need to add two additional giant resource points.”

“Naturally, if you want those two’s cultivation to be raised to rank eight, that is also possible. As long as you can afford it, with the vast powers of our Lord Alliance Leader, you will not be disappointed.”

“Even rank eight cultivation level can be transacted?” Fang Gong was stunned.

The other Fang clan Gu Immortals had complicated expressions.

Rank eight cultivation level had once been the highest achievement, but in the last few decades, pseudo venerables took the stage one after the other, venerables also started reviving. The status of rank eight cultivation fell again and again.

Now, rank eight cultivation had become a commodity to be transacted at will!

This made the Fang clan immortals become somewhat dazed.

Lu Wei Yin looked around and asked: ”You still don’t get it? The world has already undergone an intense change ever since the destruction of fate Gu.”

“This is true for Immortal Gu Houses, rank eight Gu Immortals, and even venerables.”

“This change can be said to completely flip societal norms, even super forces will only be a ripple in the waves of time if they cannot adapt to this change, wiped out in just a moment.”

Fang Di Chang narrowed his eyes: ”Lord Lu Wei Yin, you seem to have another meaning behind your words.”

Lu Wei Yin chuckled: ”I will be direct then, your situation is very dangerous, how will Fang clan defend against the anti-Fang alliance?”

“If you just defend, no matter how much more powerful the immortal formation you possess, you will only be delaying your destruction.”

“You can only deal with this intense change by taking drastic measures!”

“Naturally, the choice belongs to you. Lord Alliance Leader will not personally interfere in Western Desert’s internal battle. But if I were you, I would sell all the resource points to exchange for Immortal Gu, immortal materials, and revive Fang clan’s Gu Immortals.”

Fang Gong’s and Fang Di Chang’s pupils shrunk slightly.

The remaining Gu Immortals were in an uproar.

“How can we do that? Such an action is too unfilial.”

“Our Fang clan’s foundation will be gone without these resource points.”

“If we do this, how can we face our ancestors when we die?!”

“This is my Fang clan’s foundation!”

The Fang clan immortals reacted agitatedly, looking at Lu Wei Yin with hatred and ferocity.

Lu Wei Yin shrugged his shoulders, saying calmly: ”Whether you sell or not, it is up to you. I am only giving a small suggestion.”

“We will sell.” Fang Di Chang’s voice was extremely hoarse.

Fang Gong did not retort, he kept silent.

“Lord Fang Di Chang!!” Some Fang clan Gu Immortals stood up in agitation.

But Fang Di Chang’s next sentence silenced these Gu Immortals completely.

“If we don’t sell the resource points, are you able to defend them?”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2264: Where There’s Life, There’s Hope

Sitting on a deserted mound, Fang Di Chang was still as a rock.

Ever since the two heavens merged, there was no longer day or night, in place of that was a mix of black and white in the sky.

Thus, different areas had different intensity of brightness.

Fang Di Chang was currently in the darkness, he looked at the empty mound expressionlessly, it was a barren desert with no vegetation in sight.

But because of the fusion of two heavens, this huge desert was split into two areas, one was bright while the other was dark.

This was tassel desert, a super resource point of Fang clan.

Every year, at a certain period, earth roots would grow here like grass or willow branches, they were soft but durable.

The earth roots were long or short, they ranged from mortal materials to rank eight immortal materials.

At peak growth, the earth roots would cover the entire tassel desert, when wind blew, looking from above, it would seem like a huge sea made of earth roots, the waves would look grand and impressive.

This was Fang clan’s number one resource point, it was the pride of all Fang clan Gu Immortals.

But now, it was being sold to Fang Yuan.

Once this transaction was done, it would never be returned, this was farewell.

Fang Di Chang had a plain expression but his heart was like this desert, it was barren and cold.

Fang Gong flew over from afar, he landed on the barren mound and stood beside Fang Di Chang.

“I knew you were here.” Fang Gong sighed.

Fang Di Chang, who was seated, suddenly had a twisted expression as he clenched his fists:

“Fang Yuan did this on purpose!”

“I’m afraid he has known about Wan Gu Chou all along, but he did not say it and caused our clan to suffer a huge loss!”

Fang Gong was stunned.

Fang Di Chang continued: ”Even if he did not know about Wan Gu Chou, he concealed the secret that he could revive our clan’s Gu Immortals! As long as he mentioned it, even if he vaguely hinted it, I would have known.”

“If I had known that venerables are able to easily revive Gu Immortals, I would be on guard against a threat like Wan Gu Chou!”

“In fact, we might have exchanged for that forgotten sorrow Immortal Gu earlier, if we could defend against Wan Gu Chou’s killer move, we would not have lost, the alliance against Wan clan would have succeeded!”

Towards the end, Fang Di Chang was basically screaming his lungs out.

He was right.

Back then, the situation was hanging on a thread.

The battle between Fang clan and the alliance against Fang clan was very close.

If they knew about Wan Gu Chou, Fang clan would not sent all six Immortal Gu Houses to attack Myriad Age Building, Wan Gu Chou’s killer move had a limited range after all.

But at that time, Fang clan did not know about this information, they pressured Wan clan’s members to try to obtain the greatest benefit.

“Alright.” Fang Gong smiled bitterly: ”Since it has already happened, second supreme elder, no need to ponder upon it. We do not have Spring Autumn Cicada to return to the past.”

“Earlier, when Heavenly Court revived Gu Immortals, they were all their members. Everyone guessed that their revival had something to do with their contributed immortal apertures. Furthermore, because Fang Yuan nearly destroyed the entire immortal graveyard, it is very hard to deduce Wan Gu Chou’s revival.”

Fang Di Chang had a cold expression: ”No, it is Fang Yuan, everything is caused by Fang Yuan. He is the greatest mastermind behind everything.”

“I have woken up now!”

“Our Fang clan wanted to destroy the anti-Fang alliance, it was not something Heavenly Court wanted to see, but Fang Yuan did not like that either.”

“If our Fang clan obtains victory, we will no longer attack the other super forces.”

“And in this current situation, we need to urgently move and sell our resource points to Fang Yuan in exchange for Immortal Gu and also to revive Gu Immortals.”

“Now, what will we do?”

“Without resource points and the ability to provide for ourselves, we can only rely on Fang Yuan increasingly!”

“We can only invade other super forces’ resource points and exchange them to Fang Yuan for Immortal Gu and other cultivation resources.”

“Our Fang clan has become his vanguard, we are his bandits to loot Western Desert.”

“And this Gu Yue Fang Yuan is still staying in Eastern Sea, he is the high and mighty Great Love Immortal Venerable!”

“He will declare to everyone that he is not interfering in Western Desert’s affairs. All of the vile reputation will be shouldered by my Fang clan alone. He, Gu Yue Fang Yuan, has a clean reputation!”

“Hehehe... hahaha...”

“What Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance? What Great Love Immortal Venerable?”

Fang Di Chang raised his head up and laughed in a pitiful tone of mockery.

His eyes were reddened, his hair was messy, the light of tears flickered in his eyes.

“First supreme elder Fang Gong, think about it, don’t you feel that Wan clan’s first supreme elder died too peculiarly?”

“With his death, our Fang clan only has one route to take.”

“This is Fang Yuan, he is covered in a false human skin, but he is a vile beast that devours everyone with no hesitation.”

“I hate him, I am truly hateful.”

Fang Di Chang gritted his teeth.

“I hate that my Fang clan got too involved with Fang Yuan.”

“I hate those Eastern Sea super forces who are too weak and meek, they let Fang Yuan rule over them so easily!”

“However, the one I hate most is myself!”

“To think that I am a wisdom path Gu Immortal, not only did I fail to expose Fang Yuan’s schemes, I caused our entire clan to become his pawns!”

“We were manipulated and toyed around by him!”

“I am the greatest sinner of Fang clan...”

Saying so, Fang Di Chang knelt on the ground, his head was lowered to the ground as he punched the soil below him and cried out loud.

This proud wisdom path Gu Immortal had not lost his composure for over a hundred years, he was crying so pitifully now.

Fang Gong sighed as he sat down beside Fang Di Chang.

“How could I have not been suspicious about the peculiar death of Wan clan’s first supreme elder?”

“But even if this is Fang Yuan’s scheme, what can we do?”

“Do we have evidence?”

“Hehe.” Fang Gong smiled in a weak and powerless way: ”Even if we have evidence, what can we do to Heaven Refining Demon Venerable?”

Fang Gong placed his arm on Fang Di Chang’s shoulder: ”Don’t lose your cool, second supreme elder, you are the strategist of Fang clan. If the other Fang clan Gu Immortals see this, what will they think? What will happen to Fang clan’s morale?”

Fang Di Chang gritted his teeth and stopped crying.

He sat upright and moved shoulder to shoulder with Fang Gong.

Fang Gong continued to speak: ”I feel hatred too, I hate Heavenly Court, I hate Wan clan, I hate Fang Yuan, and I hate you. But similarly, I hate myself the most!”

“As the first supreme elder of Fang clan, I actually lost to Wan Gu Chou’s killer move. I am like a dog that ran away pitifully, I cannot do anything.”

“My fist is so weak, my body is as fragile as glass.”

“Fang Di Chang, you are not the first supreme elder, I am!”

“Who is to blame for Fang clan’s current situation?”

“Nobody has committed a greater mistake than me!”

“If death can atone for my sins, I will immediately suicide in front of the anti-Fang alliance. But that will not happen! We know the truth behind the righteous path, if Fang clan loses the only rank eight like me, those people will be even more ruthless.”

“I need to live, I need to raise my fist and show a firm expression, I need to live with my chest held high!”

“That is how I can help Fang clan, I want to make compensations for my sins.”

“I want to atone for my sins through actions!”

“I don’t want to be the greatest sinner of our clan, I don’t want our clan to end by my leadership!”

“Do you understand this? Fang Di Chang!”

Fang Gong screamed.

Fang Di Chang gritted his teeth, he started at Fang Gong: ”Of course I understand!!”

Fang Gong stood up and looked at tassel desert as well as the sky, he said: ”Today’s tassel desert is like the moving rock crevice of back then. We must learn from the first generation Fang clan immortal ancestor and face our difficulties head on.”

“What is our homeland?”

“It is not these resource points, but ourselves.”

“Where there’s life, there’s hope.”

“You are right.” Fang Di Chang also stood up as he showed a determined expression: ”Our Fang clan still has hope!”

Immemorial two heavens.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s huge mountain-like body charged towards two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, Jun Shen Guang and Che Wei.

As qi tides blew, a formless pressure enveloped Jun Shen Guang and Che Wei.

“Oh no, why did he come to us?” Jun Shen Guang frowned tightly.

Che Wei sighed: ”Even if Spectral Soul Demon Venerable is not sane now, we are not his match. Retreat!”

“But these stars were lured here after so much hard work, and this heavenly veil was given to us by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.” Jun Shen Guang gritted his teeth, in the end, he also chose to retreat.

The three headed thousand armed Spectral Soul Demon Venerable growled and raised hundreds of thick black arms that were the size of ancient trees, he slashed at the space before him.

With continuous cracking sounds, the empty space in the sky was torn apart, as if a huge veil was shredded into pieces.

And within the veil, there were countless huge stars.

Bam bam bam...

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable charged into the field of stars, along the way, all of the stars that touched his huge body were destroyed, he even used his arms to crushed many of the stars he saw.

The two Heavenly Court Gu Immortals saw that their hard work was being destroyed, they felt extremely angry.

But thankfully, stars scattered and flew away, the senseless Spectral Soul Demon Venerable only managed to destroy a small portion of them.

Che Wei and Jun Shen Guang discussed among themselves, they decided to keep the heavenly veil and bring all of the remaining stars to Central Continent.

After all, this was a mission handed out by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

“This is a heavenly veil?” Shen Shang suddenly appeared.

Che Wei’s and Jun Shen Guang’s expressions sank at once, they became very alert. Shen Shang displayed pseudo venerable battle strength in Crazed Demon Cave, he was a huge enemy to these two.

Shen Shang also collected some of the heavenly veil, he looked at Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who was causing destruction to the stars and smiled at the two Heavenly Court immortals: ”Can you tell me what Heavenly Court is collecting these stars for?”

Che Wei’s and Jun Shen Guang’s expressions became grim.

Shen Shang continued: ”So be it if you don’t tell me. Since you are using the heavenly veil to collect the stars, you must be trying to act secretly, you don’t want to be disturbed.”

“In that case, I will take the heavenly veil and expose your actions to the public.”

Che Wei snorted coldly: ”Shen Shang, don’t go overboard. Fang clan’s outcome is also the outcome of all those super forces who joined Fang Yuan! Your Shen clan’s good days are coming to an end.”

Shen Shang squinted: ”I won’t trouble you with my Shen clan’s affairs. But what I do know is that your good times are ending now!”

“Retreat!” Jun Shen Guang spoke while Che Wei acknowledged the decision.

Shen Shang chased and forced these Heavenly Court immortals to retreat before he returned and stored the collected heavenly veil.

“The heavenly veil is an extremely precious heaven path immortal material, it is best if I contribute this to Alliance Leader Fang Yuan!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2265: Grotto-Heaven’s Calamity

Hundreds of stars shot down at Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Old Immortal Hua Yu’s subordinates had already heard the news, they waited in vigilance.

“They’re back!”

“Quickly activate the immortal formation!!”

Bam bam bam...

The stars landed on the immortal formation and erupted with immense power.

Profound light flashed as the stars broke into countless fragments.

The immortal formation suffered the heavy impact, the Gu Immortals coughed out blood from injuries.

A moment later, the tattered immortal formation still remained, while several stars continued to attack.

“Retreat.” Old Immortal Hua Yu ordered.

“Lord?!”

“But the grotto-heaven is right behind us.”

“If anything happens...”

“I refuse to retreat! Even if I have to give up my life, I will defend our home!”

Even though the Gu Immortals were currently weakened, their morale was very high.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven was originally condensed into a small dot in empty space, no matter how the stars flew outside, it was unaffected. But with the fusion of two heavens, an intense change occurred.

All of the two heavens’ grotto-heavens that were hidden were forced to reveal themselves.

Currently, behind the half-broken immortal formation was Profound Literature grotto-heaven’s entrance.

Even though the entrance was shut, it was exposed and could not be hidden.

Old Immortal Hua Yu shouted: ”I have my ways, don’t hesitate, otherwise, you will lose your lives in vain!”

The immortals went silent, they quickly dismantled the immortal formation and escaped into Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

They all believed in Old Immortal Hua Yu.

“Here they come.” Old Immortal Hua Yu was alone as he watched the approaching stars, his expression was grim.

Immortal killer move — Cold Words!

Immortal killer move — Shattered Words!

The first move created frost that slowed down the stars. The second move slashed at the stars and shattered them into pieces.

However, large star fragments still continued to fly towards him with the remaining force.

“I’ll risk it!” Old Immortal Hua Yu shouted loudly, he disregarded his own life and used methods without stopping, eventually blocking all of the star fragments.

Guh.

He spat out a mouthful of blood, his expression was pale and wounds were all over his body, shining in star path light.

With the fusion of two heavens, the flying trajectory of the stars was affected by the Heavenly Dao and became chaotic, they were also amplified and became more powerful.

Even the rank eight Old Immortal Hua Yu had great difficulty in blocking them.

Old Immortal Hua Yu was about to return when he suddenly turned around, seeing another group of stars flying towards him.

If these stars really hit, Profound Literature grotto-heaven would not be able to take the impact!

His pupils contracted rapidly and his expression froze, but soon, he relaxed.

He was resolved for this.

Even if he had to sacrifice his life, he had to block them!

But at this time, Jun Shen Guang suddenly appeared.

Heavenly veil!

He flew while tossing with his hands, he quickly arrived in front of the stars and set up the heavenly veil.

Once the stars landed on the heavenly veil, it started shaking intensely, clear ripples could be seen on it.

“Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortal, Jun Shen Guang!” Old Immortal Hua Yu’s expression froze for a second.

“Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance’s Old Immortal Hua Yu!” Jun Shen Guang was slightly

stunned and soon felt worried. It was currently the crucial period, if Old Immortal Hua Yu took

action, the heavenly veil would get destroyed again.

But Jun Shen Guang's worries did not end up happening.

After fifteen minutes passed, Old Immortal Hua Yu still watched from the side and did not act.

Jun Shen Guang collected the heavenly veil and collected all of the stars successfully.

Finally, Jun Shen Guang cast a deep gaze at Old Immortal Hua Yu, before dragging the huge

heavenly veil bag and leaving with the stars.

Old Immortal Hua Yu had a complex expression as he opened the immortal aperture's entrance

and entered the grotto-heaven.

He was actually saved by Heavenly Court.

Throughout the entire Profound Literature grotto-heaven, calamities struck everywhere, there

were earthquakes and floods, volcanic eruptions caused huge areas of thick smoke in the sky,

and acid rain had also been pouring for more than ten days.

"With the fusion of two heavens, the Heavenly Dao is stirred. Heaven's will is chaotic, and all of

our grotto-heavens that are situated on the heaven vein node are suffering."

"Lifeforms have perished, living beings are anguished!"

"Sigh, I am guilty..."

Old Immortal Hua Yu sighed deeply, he was filled with guilt, helplessness, angry, sadness, and other complex emotions.

The Gu Immortals of the two heavens’ grotto-heavens had deep feelings for their own grotto-heaven world. This was different from the Gu Immortals of the five regions.

Gu Immortals of the two heavens’ grotto-heavens were ostracized by the five regions, they had to survive in this dangerous place.

Most of them were secluded cultivators, their grotto-heavens were the final and most important homeland where they could experience peace and comfort.

Among these grotto-heavens, Profound Literature grotto-heaven established a dynasty ruled by a single Gu Immortal force, it had deep literary development and the citizens saw this homeland as the most precious thing.

The immortals quickly came to greet Old Immortal Hua Yu.

“This was too dangerous. We should get help from the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance again!”

“With the fusion of two heavens, the environment has gotten incredibly dangerous. Those Eastern Sea Gu Immortals live in peace and tranquility, why would they come here and do such a risky thing?”

“Sigh, it is possible to get their help. But the price to pay is too high.”

“The entire Imperial Court’s foundation is running dry!”

“Skeleton grotto-heaven and others are also asking for help without caring about expenses. This creates a negative effect where Eastern Sea’s Gu Immortals demand higher prices in response. Damn it!”

“Sigh, Lord Alliance Leader is not even taking control of this!”

“Great Love Immortal Venerable is busy refining dao marks or making arrangements in Western Desert. Why would he care about the affairs of our small Profound Literature grotto-heaven?”

“In any case, our Profound Literature grotto-heaven will get annexed by him eventually!”

Old Immortal Hua Yu’s expression turned solemn as he scolded: ”Everyone, shut up, don’t talk about Lord Alliance Leader in such a manner!”

Even though he said that, Old Immortal Hua Yu had a thought flash in his mind, he recalled the deep gaze that Jun Shen Guang showed earlier.

Longevity Heaven.

Golden light rippled constantly in waves.

“Hold on, hold on!” Several Gu Immortals among the Eight Extremities were controlling Calamity Luck Altar as they tried to stabilize the situation.

The entire Longevity Heaven was shaking intensely.

The earth shook.

Not just Calamity Luck Altar, Bing Sai Chuan was also controlling Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace.

However, both luck path Immortal Gu Houses were only barely able to keep the current situation stable.

Boom.

With a loud sound, the ground cracked and also broke the entire Longevity Heaven into two.

Swoosh swoosh.

Waves surged from below, scarlet red light soared up into the sky.

A vast sea of blood appeared in front of the immortals.

“Longevity Heaven has such a huge Blood Sea?” Bing Sai Chuan and the rest were shaken.

Heavenly Court.

The bright and peaceful atmosphere was no more.

Qin Ding Ling, Red Heart Traveler, Nine Spiritual Fairy, Prince Feng Xian, and other members were moving around everywhere.

Shabi Ninety-five, Ruan Dan, and even Qing Chou were mobilized to stabilize this situation.

Both the sky and earth were forming terrifying cracks.

The grand palaces had already been dismantled by Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals, they were condensed into ten or more rank six, seven, and eight Immortal Gu Houses.

No matter what the situation was, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not pay any attention to it, she focused entirely on refining Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan’s soul was lying in the pool water, feeling extremely relaxed.

The water was hot and steam was coming out of it, forming a region of white smoke.

Once in a while, there would be ripples in the water that splattered on Fang Yuan’s soul.

Fang Yuan’s soul originally had hundreds of arms and two heads, after the cleansing of the pool water, hundreds of arms had vanished, he also returned to having one head.

This was not an ordinary pool, it was Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool!

After Fang Yuan raised advance refinement Immortal Gu to rank nine, he started modifying Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool. Some time ago, he started to refine his soul in it.

Because the rank nine advance refinement Immortal Gu was added, Four Elements

Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool became a genuine rank nine Immortal Gu House.

This Immortal Gu House still had the same four cores, Advance Refinement, Water Refinement, Regret, and Blood Asset.

Advance Refinement was rank nine, the other three were rank eight.

Among which, blood asset Immortal Gu had reached its limit, it could not be raised to rank nine. Heavenly Court’s suppression of blood path’s development was showing great effect here.

Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool was created before the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, after advance refinement Immortal Gu became rank nine, Fang Yuan could modify it now that he was a refinement path supreme grandmaster.

Right now, Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool had undoubtedly gained a huge boost in power in terms of refining Gu!

Fang Yuan’s soul used Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool to cleanse itself, the effect was incredible.

The drawback of cultivating soul path was gradually weakening.

Fang Yuan’s soul path cultivation mainly relied on Spectral Soul’s soul path true inheritance. This true inheritance had a huge drawback, it was completely exposed now!

Humans could reach hundred million man soul at most, that was their racial limit.

But after Red Lotus Demon Venerable damaged fate Gu, and with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s innovation, he broke the limit of the human soul and created a qualitative change, he allowed hundred million man soul to reach desolate soul. After that, it could continue to grow to ten desolate soul, hundred desolate soul... all the way to hundred million desolate soul.

Hundred million desolate soul was the end point of Spectral Soul’s true inheritance, it could create the Three Headed Thousand Arms Demon Soul which possessed quasi-rank nine battle strength. The soul could directly resist calamities and tribulations, defy the heavens and stomp the earth, slaughter deities and ghosts, and shock the world with unmatched might!

This was the peak of soul cultivation, it was the upper limit that this world could allow.

But Fang Yuan gradually found that this cultivation method had a huge drawback, because Spectral Soul Demon Venerable overly pursued strength, many threats were left behind.

A human soul was a human soul, after becoming a desolate soul, the pure human nature would gain beast nature, or more accurately speaking, heaven nature!

Hundred million desolate soul was truly terrifying, but the proportion of human nature also became very low, the bestial traits took over most of its nature.

At this current moment, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable lost his senses and got controlled by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. Afterwards, he roamed the two heavens and acted according to his beast nature, this was the most obvious flaw!

Fang Yuan had some estimations towards Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s current condition.

Some time ago, Shen Shang contributed his human path cultivation results, Fang Yuan

compared the two and confirmed the drawback of soul path cultivation.

“In the past, human path was not developed, thus, the limit of a human was hundred million man

soul. Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had to break through it forcefully, but truthfully, he had

gone in the wrong direction.”

“Of course, there are many reasons for this.”

“Back then, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable wanted to create killing path, he devoured the

black heaven heavenly spirit but failed to succeed, causing him to create soul path instead.

There is a huge secret behind this, the more I think about this, the scarier it is!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2266: Star Constellation’s Arrangement

Intense winds and storms filled Heavenly Court.

The silvery white sky turned dark at this moment.

Within the intense winds, more than ten Immortal Gu Houses were moving around the place, all

of Heavenly Court’s members were doing their best to salvage the situation.

“The northeast corner has large areas of black smoke, it can corrode the ground and create rotten soil!”

“The immortal graveyard needs to be protected.”

“Branded Name Palace is severely damaged, please send reinforcements!”

“Can anyone help me, I can’t repair this huge crack in time!!”

The Gu Immortals conversed among each other, this situation had been going on for tens of days, it was getting more dangerous as time passed.

Heavenly Court was filled with danger, and most importantly, its foundation was too immense, it was the number one heaven vein node in the world. During the fusion of the two heavens, Heavenly Court suffered the greatest impact.

Originally, Heavenly Court had a tight defense, but after two invasions, the defensive methods left by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable and others had either been destroyed or greatly weakened, they were useless in this situation.

Crack.

Lightning flashed and bolted across half of Heavenly Court.

Eventually, Five Deity Hall blocked it but suffered huge damage in doing it, it fell to the ground, creating a huge pit that emitted dense smoke.

This situation was caused by Heavenly Court’s immense foundation.

Even the rank eight Five Deity Hall could barely block such power.

Rain and wind continued unceasingly.

Under such a turbulent situation, in Central Great Hall, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable opened her eyes slowly.

Her star pupils were clear and bright, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked through Central Great Hall and observed the entire situation of Heavenly Court in one glance.

...

“Little Xing, from today onwards, this will be your home.” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable brought back the child Xing Su and said to her.

“Where is this?”

“Heavenly Court.” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable said with deep emotions.

“Heavenly Court...” Xing Su muttered this foreign phrase.

“You can think of it as your home.” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable patted Little Xing Su’s head.

“Home?” Xing Su’s eyes brightened.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable looked far and wide, across the five regions, he seemed to be able to look into the future: ”Of course, this is your home, this will also be home to all of humanity!”

...

Deep memories surfaced in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s mind before fading away quickly.

“Since when has Heavenly Court been in such a pitiful state?”

“Master.”

“This is our home, I will defend it till the end. After that...”

“I will wait for your return!”

At the next moment, purple light burst out of Central Great Hall and spread to every corner of Heavenly Court.

“This is?!”

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made her move?”

“We are too incapable, we are a burden to Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!”

“No, how can Star Constellation Immortal Venerable act unwisely? It is obvious that she has already refined all of Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks.”

Once Star Constellation Immortal Venerable took action, the situation immediately changed.

Under the rays of purple light, the raging wind and rain vanished, the intense lightning bolts were dispersed, the crack of heaven and earth mended quickly.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were all shaken internally.

This was the might of a Dao Lord!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable refined all of the wisdom path dao marks in Heavenly Court, her strength exceeded Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable completely in this domain.

Right now, even if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Fang Yuan were to collaborate to attack Heavenly Court, they would not be able to do anything to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

“Go! Let’s go meet Lady Star Constellation.”

Some Immortal Gu Houses landed while some stayed in the air, Gu Immortals streamed out and moved towards Central Great Hall.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable activated her investigative method.

This investigation had a completely different effect from before.

Using the amplification of Heavenly Court’s countless wisdom path dao marks, the investigative killer move’s power surged!

“The situation is still within my expectations. Both venerables are still refining natural dao marks, Fang Yuan has little immortal essence and has the slowest progress. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable has the most results, even exceeding me.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable quickly stopped her investigative method.

She needed to conserve immortal essence now.

It was time for Heavenly Court’s immortals to report the various situations.

Due to the fusion of both heavens, Heavenly Court was greatly affected and had huge losses.

“Back then, Profound Literature grotto-heaven faced the problem of crashing stars, thus, Old Immortal Hua Yu did not attack me, I successfully brought back those stars to Central Continent.”

Jun Shen Guang said an interesting event that made Star Constellation Immortal Venerable develop a thought.

Human, Imperial Court, poetry, dynasty, Fang Yuan, mermaid immortals, the sovereign immortal aperture...

All sorts of information related to Old Immortal Hua Yu and Profound Literature grotto-heaven flashed past Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s mind.

With the help of Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable only expended several hundred thoughts and a meager amount of immortal essence to deduce the result.

“We can make this Profound Literature grotto-heaven betray his alliance!”

Old Immortal Hua Yu had deep attachment to the grotto-heaven, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable understood why.

Interrupting Jun Shen Guang was a huge merit but Old Immortal Hua Yu did not do it. This meant that in his heart, Profound Literature grotto-heaven was more important than his status in the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.

And most importantly, Old Immortal Hua Yu had once opposed Fang Yuan and the variant human alliance, that was the reason why he joined the Righteous Qi Alliance.

But afterwards, Fang Yuan declared himself as Great Love, Eastern Sea’s super forces were too meek and immediately joined him, Profound Literature grotto-heaven was forced to follow.

Why did Fang Yuan not annex all these grotto-heavens?

The reason was simple.

The sovereign immortal aperture was not stable, it was unable to expand anymore now!

Non-conflicting dao marks were a double-edged sword.

Long before the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had already deduced this huge threat of Fang Yuan’s.

Fang Yuan took in many resource points and focused on earth path resource points at first, he was likely constructing an earth path dao vein to stabilize the sovereign immortal aperture.

During the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Fang Yuan lost many Gu Immortal subordinates.

Afterwards, he took the risk and took in six mermaid immortals, it showed that he was lacking manpower, the sovereign immortal aperture was in a desperate state.

Thus, Fang Yuan could not annex these grotto-heavens.

“He is only skilled at defending against wisdom path deductions, Western Desert’s Fang clan’s situation is also taking a lot of his energy. The lack of refinement path development is his greatest worry, he cannot bother with Profound Literature grotto-heaven’s matter.”

Even though Fang Yuan was strong, he had become a venerable through refinement path, not wisdom path.

His wisdom path attainment was not amazing in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s view.

In the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, the reason why Fang Yuan succeeded was because Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had focused on reviving, she did her best to try to get Crazed Demon Cave’s eternal life research results, she also had to guard against Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, it gave Fang Yuan the chance to succeed.

Wisdom path was not skilled at solving impromptu situations, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had too little time to prepare back then.

But as time passed, her wisdom path advantage continued to accumulate.

Ignoring other matters, just the fact that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable refined Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks meant that she already had an impregnable position in this contest of three venerables!

“Even if Fang Yuan is not skilled in wisdom path, his wisdom path methods are beyond the ordinary rank eight Gu Immortal. But Profound Literature grotto-heaven’s issue has just surfaced, Old Immortal Hua Yu will not report the matter. This is our opportunity.”

“If we do not use this chance well and stall for too long, Fang Yuan will notice it.”

Thinking of this, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable immediately gave orders to send Jun Shen Guang and Qin Ding Ling to Profound Literature grotto-heaven secretly in an attempt to persuade Old Immortal Hua Yu.

“If we can recruit Profound Literature grotto-heaven, can we also do the same to Western Desert’s Fang clan?” Wan Zi Hong’s will was present, she suggested this.

Duke Tong chuckled and showed an expression of disdain.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable shook her head and asked Wan Zi Hong’s will instead:

“Why do you think Wan clan did not choose to join Fang Yuan back then? They knew about Fang clan and Fang Yuan’s relationship, why did Western Desert’s super forces still agree to create the anti-Fang alliance before our Heavenly Court showed up?”

Wan Zi Hong’s will shook slightly, she seemed to realize something.

With the fusion of two heavens and contest of three venerables, the five regions’ political situation was completely chaotic, the factors involved were not just strength or benefits, there was also the people’s will.

The heart of the people was a very intricate thing, it was hard to assess at times, but also extremely easy to decipher at times.

Back then, Heavenly Court was created and received resounding support from everyone, the greatest reason was the people’s will.

Righteous path and demonic path, if one only classified them according to fixed criteria set by the major players, it would be too shallow.

Heavenly Court could recruit otherworldly demons, they could recruit demonic path Gu Immortals like Wan Zi Hong, this was because they could be said to be upholding justice, they were giving demons a second chance to turn over a new leaf, this was their great benevolence.

But if Heavenly Court recruited Fang clan, they would lose everyone’s support.

Why did Heavenly Court support Wan clan, what was the reason? All along, what was the motto of Heavenly Court? What stance did they take?

If they recruited Fang clan which had fallen into the demonic path entirely, then what difference would Heavenly Court have when compared to those who only pursued benefits?

In these situations, if Heavenly Court wavered in their stance and went for petty gains, their reputation would take the biggest hit. In fact, even the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent would start having doubts.

Especially at this sensitive juncture, Fang clan was supported by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan plotted secretly and made Fang clan attack Wan clan, it was because he knew that his reputation and popularity would not be accepted easily just because he declared himself as Great Love.

Eastern Sea’s super forces joined him merely out of fear.

Wu Yong made transactions with Fang Yuan for benefits. Not long after, Wu Yong also made transactions with Heavenly Court.

If Heavenly Court did this, Fang Yuan might become overjoyed.

And this suggestion could only be brought up by someone like Wan Zi Hong, she was a former demonic path member after all, other Heavenly Court members had not mentioned it.

Was it because they could not?

Of course not!

“The righteous path has the advantage in Western Desert’s conflict. The only worry is if Fang clan goes all-in and sell all their resource points to Fang Yuan.” Star

Constellation Immortal

Venerable had a thought.

She was the number one person in wisdom path, she had long expected such a situation, thus,

when she sent the members, she chose Zhou Xiong Xin.

Zhou Xiong Xin was an information path Gu Immortal, he was skilled at finding clues.

Once Fang clan abandoned everything and left, Zhou Xiong Xin would collect the relevant

information and let Star Constellation Immortal Venerable make deductions on them.

They had the duty of eradicating evil forces.

Fang clan had to be exterminated!

After Star Constellation Immortal Venerable refined all of Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao

marks, she had to rest and accumulate immortal essence now before she could start her next

move.

“For the short period ahead, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s threat is even greater than Giant

Sun Immortal Venerable and Heaven Refining Demon Venerable.”

“It is time to send people to search for Fairy Zi Wei.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable arranged everything in meticulous and orderly fashion.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2267: Little Du’s Revival

Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan lightly let out a breath of air.

“This time, I succeeded in deceiving her again.”

Just earlier, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used her investigative killer move to check on Fang Yuan.

Obscured heavenly secret activated again and helped him to conceal the truth.

Heaven path...

So it be if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not understand heaven path. But even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was deceived time and again, she had once become one with the Dao, she was able to influence and alter heaven’s will.

“Even she was deceived by me, is it because of heaven path’s profundity, or because her revival had flaws in it, in terms of heaven path, she did not regain her former life’s abilities?”

“Earlier, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s investigative method had unprecedented power. It is very likely that she has already refined all of Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks.”

Fang Yuan was only making a guess, he did not use any investigative method now.

Looking into the sovereign immortal aperture.

Three earth path dao veins had been constructed already.

A wind path dao vein and a fire path dao vein were also almost completed too, he was just a few more away from completing the first dao vein ring.

He had undergone countless Immortal Gu transactions in treasure yellow heaven to exchange for resource points. There was also Fang clan's contribution that led to such huge progress.

Western Desert's fire path, earth path, and wind path dao marks were outstanding, these three paths had the most resource points there.

Fang clan was forced into desperation, they had to cut their foundation to fight for survival.

The sovereign immortal aperture gained a lot, but even then, the entire immortal aperture was still in a precarious situation.

Currently, Fang Yuan had already reduced the purchasing of earth path resource points, he started to buy other paths' resource points.

According to his deductions, he had to establish the various paths' dao veins first and construct the first ring. After that, there would be an immediate effect on the sovereign immortal aperture's stability.

"The sovereign immortal aperture is unstable and strange situations are occurring frequently.

The Gu Immortals within the immortal aperture are already working at their limit. Even the six mermaid immortals that came into the immortal aperture are not enough anymore.”

During this period of time, many Gu Immortals had liver explosions.

Thankfully, Fang Yuan constructed a healing hall, otherwise, if these Gu Immortals had to recuperate for a long time, the sovereign immortal aperture would fall apart instantly. In the end, Fang Yuan would need to take action himself to suppress the turmoil.

“I need to bring in more manpower.”

Venerables were undoubtedly invincible, but with the contest of three venerables, the situation became rather complex.

According to the current situation, the main priority of the three venerables was to refine natural dao marks.

But the world itself had a vast number of natural dao marks, it would take a long time for the three venerables to refine them all.

Currently, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was making the fastest progress, but he was still refining Northern Plains’ dao marks.

The three venerables were not at the stage of having a decisive battle yet.

Because Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court were refined, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had their own firm base. Even if the other venerables collaborated, they could not overwhelm the target at their base camp.

And without sufficient advantage, it was unwise to have a battle now.

The venerables would not do that.

Thus, for the following period of time, the venerables would need other Gu Immortals to help them and work for them.

In this situation, normal Gu Immortals were very useful to the venerables.

This value displayed its worth during their deadlock.

Even if Fang Yuan was a refinement path venerable, being capable of easily refining most rank eight and below Immortal Gu and also creating countless Immortal Gu Houses, this could not replace the use of Gu Immortals.

The earlier discussion on Fang clan showed this clearly.

What decided the outcome were not the Immortal Gu Houses but Fang Gong and Wan Gu Chou.

For Gu Immortal experts, once the mechanics of the Immortal Gu House were deciphered, they would be easy to target and deal with.

Be it Fang clan’s roof tile breaker or Zuo Qiu clan’s state of disunity, they were counters to Immortal Gu Houses.

Thus, the people were most important.

Gu are the essence of heaven and earth, man is the spirit of all living beings.

Having more Immortal Gu was a good thing, but the human element was on par with the Gu.

Fang Yuan needed a large number of Gu Immortal subordinates.

One one hand, in a deadlock of venerables, he needed enough henchman, it would lead to greater convenience.

Especially when he was refining natural dao marks and could not leave.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture often needed a large number of Gu Immortals to suppress the strange phenomena that occurred frequently.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also needed Gu Immortals.

On one hand, when the venerables were in a deadlock, they could settle matters for them. For example, when Star Constellation Immortal Venerable refined Heavenly Court’s dao marks, Jun Shen Guang went to the two heavens to collect stars.

On the other hand, Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court were also trying to nurture their second venerable.

After the destruction of fate, it was possible to create new venerables. As for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, because of their conflicting dao marks, they could not become the venerable of a second path themselves.

But how could they recruit Gu Immortals?

The most convenient source were the Gu Immortals of the five regions.

But this contained huge hidden threats.

On one hand, these Gu Immortals could be the spies of another venerable, the fact that Fang Yuan brought in six mermaid immortals was already a huge risk in itself.

If he had to bring in Gu Immortals of the five regions, Fang Yuan was more inclined to bring in variant humans.

After all, variant humans were on the opposite side of Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven.

Other than bringing in more Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan’s other main method was immortal ascension.

He could nurture Gu Immortals inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

But this had a merit and demerit.

The merit was that the Gu Immortal’s loyalty was assured.

The demerit was that the time needed to nurture Gu Immortals was very long. And as the saying went, water in the distance could not quench thirst.

But Fang Yuan had an advantage over the other venerables, his sovereign immortal aperture did not conflict with time path, so changing the time flow was very easy. Right now, the sovereign immortal aperture definitely had the fastest time flow among the venerables.

In terms of nurturing Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan already had many good choices.

He had specially revived some of the Gu Immortals that died in Crazed Demon Cave as mortals.

But now that the two heavens were fusing, heaven’s will was chaotic and Gu Immortals were unable to get natural inspiration when they first ascend at this time.

This would not do!

Fang Yuan knew his own limitations. His wisdom path deductions could not match Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, they were barely on par with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Thus, Fang Yuan had to make full use of natural inspiration.

If he missed these opportunities, his killer move deduction and modification would be far slower than the other two venerables.

If he could not bring in Gu Immortals or nurture them himself, what could he do?

Fang Yuan quickly thought of human path.

Fang Yuan’s clone was still trapped in Divine Emperor City, but through Shen Shang, he transferred his human path cultivation results to Fang Yuan’s main body.

Together with Fang Yuan’s transaction with Shen Shang, he also gained a portion of the latter’s human path cultivation results.

Fang Yuan obtained the incomplete Immortal Gu recipes of beggar Gu and merchant Gu.

If he had the complete Immortal Gu recipes, Fang Yuan would be able to refine merchant Immortal Gu and beggar Immortal Gu. After activating them, he would gain manpower, there would be no threat of betrayal as well.

But Fang Yuan lacked human path attainment level, while human path Immortal Gu recipes were hard to deduce.

Were there natural human path Immortal Gu in the wild?

According to Fang Yuan’s estimation, the answer was no.

Such Immortal Gu recipes needed to be created by humans!

After deep consideration, Fang Yuan did not attempt to deduce the human path Immortal Gu recipes, they would waste too much of his time and effort.

Thus, Fang Yuan held anticipation towards Central Continent’s human path development as well.

Ignoring other matters, just his soul path cultivation needed the support of human path.

Looking at refinement path, it was able to grow to such a prosperous state today because of refinement path’s own development and also because it supported all other paths in their development.

Human Sea rippled as huge waves appeared.

After the rise and fall of tides, two fallen Gu Immortals remained on the beach.

“Where, where is this place?”

“I clearly died on the battlefield already...”

Fang Dong Xi and Fang An Lei were confused as they stood up.

This situation made them puzzled and shocked.

But soon, Fang Yuan’s will descended and informed them of the situation.

“Lord Fang Yuan actually has such a shocking method to revive us!” Fang clan’s two Gu Immortals were filled with joy and excitement upon revival.

Right at this time, there was a giant wave in Human Sea.

The size of this wave was far bigger than the one carrying the Fang clan members.

As the huge wave crashed onto the beach, it receded rapidly.

A young looking Gu Immortal rode the waves and landed ashore.

He gave off rank eight aura, stunning the two Fang clan Gu Immortals.

They immediately recognized that this newly revived Gu Immortal was one of Fang Yuan’s main clones — Zhan Bu Du!

When bringing in Gu Immortals, nurturing Gu Immortals, and human path Immortal Gu were all unfeasible at this moment, Fang Yuan chose to revive Gu Immortals.

Originally, the Gu Immortals only revived as mortals.

But now, they kept their cultivation level.

Fang clan’s two immortals were rank seven while Zhan Bu Du was rank eight.

To achieve this, Human Sea expended itself at an unprecedented level, it could only revive three more rank eight Gu Immortals at this rate.

Where there are gains, there are losses.

Following this, Fang Yuan would need to collect more human qi to replenish Human Sea.

But there was no rush in this.

The thing that needed replenishment the most was Refinement Sea.

At this point, Fang Yuan’s Refinement Sea was almost dry already.

After the two Fang clan Gu Immortals left, Fang Yuan gave all the transformation path Immortal Gu to Zhan Bu Du. This way, as long as he used the transformation path killer move, Zhan Bu Du would gain pseudo venerable battle strength again.

Zhan Bu Du went to handle the strange phenomena while Fang Yuan’s main body expended heaven path immortal materials to replenish obscured heavenly secret.

After that, he secretly unsealed the truthful floating ice.

Right now, Fang Yuan’s transformation path and rule path attainment levels rose.

But the greatest growth was still heaven path.

Fang Yuan could sense that his heaven path attainment level was reaching a point of qualitative change.

Black and white heaven.

A huge transparent pillar slammed down and killed most of the soul beasts under it.

From the body of a desolate level soul beast, two Gu Immortals flew out.

One was a female immortal who had a graceful figure with hair that extended to her waist, she was adorned in a beautiful purple robe. Her eyes were like deep pools, with a sense of sorrow shrouding her face.

The other was a male immortal, he had an ordinary face, his eyes were dark and he emitted a soul path aura.

They were Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie.

"What heaven path immortal material is this? When it fell, the soul beasts could not move or dodge it at all." Ying Wu Xie asked curiously.

Fairy Zi Wei inspected it and explained: "This is a heavenly pillar. Each heavenly pillar is a rank nine heaven path immortal material! Back then, Central Continent's Tian Ti Mountain could connect to Heavenly Court because it had a heavenly pillar."

"We lost the concealment of soul beasts but gained a rank nine immortal material. Is this good or bad luck?" Ying Wu Xie sighed.

"What's the point of sighing now, the urgent matter is to find Master Spectral Soul, your main body!"

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2268: Awkwardness of the Anti-Fang Alliance

Western Desert, Fang clan's headquarters.

"Open!" Mo Sha Ta shouted.

The killer move was activated, the immortal formation ahead was forced open.

The inside was completely empty.

Not a shred of resources were left, it was completely barren.

“This again!” Many Gu Immortals were angry and frustrated.

“Emptied, they emptied this as well...” Some muttered to themselves with expressions of dejectedness.

“Fang clan is so ruthless!” Some Gu Immortals’ eyes were spewing fire, they gritted their teeth angrily.

“Just Fang clan alone cannot have such manpower or methods, they must be backed by Heaven Refining Demon Venerable!” Some of the Gu Immortals felt helpless.

This was Fang clan’s final resource point.

Like the earlier resource points, nothing was left to the anti-Fang alliance.

The Gu Immortals discussed among themselves, it was a rowdy scene.

This was too different from their expectations!

Fang clan had not only emptied the resource points, they also left the immortal formations behind. These immortal formations were created using natural dao marks and immortal materials.

When the anti-Fang alliance tried to break the immortal formation, they had to spend immortal essence as well.

They wasted a bunch of immortal essence and ended up with no gains.

Looking at these deep pits or desolate land, the anti-Fang alliance’s members had grim expressions.

Xiao Ye Hu did not even have the energy to get angry.

He was feeling regret.

“Had I known this, I would not have interfered in this stupid matter!”

Xiao Ye Hu’s own injuries had not healed yet, and most importantly, his Immortal Gu House Chamber Pot was ruined.

It was not that he had no gains, but the things he got could not make up for his losses.

Wan Gu Chou looked at this scene and sighed internally, she was also feeling quite helpless.

In her first life, she had not seen any super force with no bottom line like this, it was truly a new experience now.

She led the anti-Fang alliance and attacked, along the route, they did not meet any Fang clan Gu Immortal, even though they broke many immortal formations, there were no resource points inside, many of the immortal formations were even tampered with, if they could not open it properly, it would explode!

This was too devious!

Many Gu Immortals suffered injuries because of this.

Even Fang clan's headquarters had been relocated, it could not be found.

This was a public blessed land, but Fang clan actually had a method to relocate the immortal

aperture!

There was a saying on Earth, the monk can run away but the temple cannot, but now, Fang clan

directly brought the temple with them.

Even though Wan Gu Chou did not know this saying, her mood was just as horrible.

Even though they defeated Fang clan, Wan Gu Chou was not feeling happy at all, she was

instead filled with worries.

Fang clan vanished but they retained most of their battle strength.

Right now, it was Wan clan and the other super forces' turn to feel worried. It was possible that

Fang clan would attack one of their resource points one day, and the chance of defending it was

low!

Fang clan did not have resource points left, they did not need to have Gu Immortals stationed to

guard them. If they attacked all at once, they could turn their passive situation into an active

one.

Wan Gu Chou looked at the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals.

In this situation, Heavenly Court and Wan clan were on the same side, their benefits were tied together.

And in fact, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had issued orders long ago to exterminate the whole of Fang clan.

Thus, after Zhou Xiong Xin sensed Wan Gu Chou’s gaze, he said without hesitation: ”Fang clan’s actions are crippling their foundation, they have completely submitted to Heaven Refining Demon Venerable. This means that Fang clan is the same as Fang Yuan, they are all demons, they are threats to this world!”

“Don’t say these things to us, what are we going to do now?” The other Western Desert Gu Immortals did not want to hear his talk.

Zhou Xiong Xin smiled: ”Our Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable predicted that this would happen, she sent me here specially to find clues and information about Fang clan’s traces. Once we find something, the anti-Fang alliance will be able to go all-out and eradicate Fang clan.”

Wan Zi Hong, who was beside him, knew why Fang clan acted like this.

Some time ago, she had raised a suggestion to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable but the plan to recruit Fang clan was rejected. At that point, Wan Zi Hong knew that Fang clan had no way to surrender. Heavenly Court needed to intimidate everyone by showing a tough stance on this matter, in this situation, even she would react the same.

The anti-Fang alliance was too dragged on and slow in its movements, it gave Fang clan and

Fang Yuan ample time to relocate their resources.

The best tactic of the anti-Fang alliance was to immediately attack Fang clan.

But they spent too much time discussing their internal affairs.

Negotiations took time after all, only after they finished distributing the supposed benefits did the

anti-Fang alliance move out.

But Wan Zi Hong understood them.

If they did not do this, the anti-Fang alliance would not be able to send Gu Immortals out or

come up with an appropriate tactic.

Risks and benefits were interlinked.

Only by confirming the benefit distribution would they be able to assign the clans to attack first

and which ones to stay at the back, the entire anti-Fang alliance would have motivation to do

this as well.

This alliance had been established for too short of a period, many of the Gu Immortals came

from super forces that were not willing to take anyone’s lead, there was nobody who could have

sufficient authority or strength to take charge.

Without temptation, this anti-Fang alliance would not have even been able to form.

Like earlier, Wan clan had to pay out of their own pockets to lure the various super forces to send people and organize the anti-Fang alliance. After Wan Gu Chou was exposed, they used Fang clan’s assets to tempt them.

Without any clear distribution of benefits, the anti-Fang alliance could not send anyone.

If battle broke out and Fang clan retaliated forcefully, the Gu Immortals would immediately retreat and protect themselves, without clear benefits, nobody would take any risk.

But Fang clan was forced into a corner, they were united at this moment.

In this situation, Fang clan was like a clenched fist while the anti-Fang alliance was like a pile of loose sand, it was likely that they would fail.

Thus, the process of negotiating benefits was a necessity.

“But my strength alone is not enough. Everyone, you should know about the threat that Fang clan poses, we need to get rid of these demonic path scoundrels as soon as possible, I would like you to send information path Gu Immortals to assist in pursuing them.” Zhou Xiong Xin said.

“Fang clan is in the demonic path, they are no longer a righteous path super force, it is everyone’s duty to eradicate them!” Western Desert’s Gu Immortals nodded.

“But we returned with no gains from this, Wan clan and Heavenly Court have to give us a proper answer!”

“Indeed, indeed, in this situation, we can’t leave empty handed, right?”

“If we leave without any gains, we will be too disappointed in you, Wan clan. If Fang clan attacks again, how can anyone come to support the anti-Fang alliance?”

The Gu Immortals went into a commotion again.

Wan Gu Chou felt a huge headache!

She thought about it and secretly transmitted to Xiao Ye Hu.

“Friend from Xiao clan, don’t be anxious, my Wan clan will guarantee your benefits first.”

“Accordingly, the first ancestor of Fang clan was the sole Gu Immortal in their clan. Back then, Fang clan occupied moving rock crevice and was the smallest super force in Western Desert.

“When the sand calamity appeared, Fang clan’s first ancestor was faced with a choice. He could have created an immortal formation and sacrificed some Fang clan mortals to block the sand calamity. But he chose to protect Fang clan’s people and left, giving up moving rock crevice in the process. Such an extreme nature is truly rare, but it is not hard to understand why he did that.”

“Friend, you have captured many Fang clansmen, even though they are just from branch families, we can still make use of Fang clan’s nature.”

Xiao clan was the strongest super force besides Wan clan, Wan Gu Chou had to pacify them first.

Strength was the most important thing in a negotiation.

After getting Wan Gu Chou’s assurance, Xiao Ye Hu’s expression eased up and he stopped creating a scene.

Wan Gu Chou’s words could be trusted, this was the attitude of the righteous path after all.

Furthermore, even if Wan Gu Chou disregarded her reputation and refused to pay, what could Xiao Ye Hu do?

“Sell! I will sell these Fang clansmen as slaves to humiliate Fang clan! We can also tamper with these people and use them to find out the location of Fang clan’s immortals.”

Xiao Ye Hu gritted his teeth and firmed up his mind.

A moment later, in treasure yellow heaven.

“Where, where is this?” Wang Xiao Er gasped.

The surrounding people were screaming in fear too, there was a loud commotion around them.

These people were floating in treasure yellow heaven, a formless force was restrained them, keeping them in place together.

Thus, Wang Xiao Er felt horrible, he was not stepping on ground and he was surrounded by people, they were all squeezing around him.

“We were sold!”

“This is the legendary treasure yellow heaven.”

Some knowledgeable Gu Masters explained the truth.

Fang clan’s members had pale expressions.

This was the consequence of losing!

“Fang clan’s Gu Immortals, listen to this. You have betrayed the righteous path and fallen into the demonic path, you are the shame of Western Desert’s righteous path. Even if you ran away, you will still face our judgment!”

“These people are all members of Fang clan. They are innocent, but because of you, they are now slaves, this is all your fault.”

Xiao Ye Hu’s will entered treasure yellow heaven and spread the news, trying to humiliate Fang clan.

Such words made the Fang clansmen cry out in deeper anguish.

“Will anyone save us!”

“Lord ancestors, we are here.”

“Why are you crying? Don’t be a disgrace to Fang clan.”

The best situation for them was to be bought by Fang clan’s Gu Immortals.

Wang Xiao Er was among them, he shouted alongside the rest.

He was feeling very uneasy now.

He was treated as a Fang clan member because the situation was too chaotic earlier. Fang clan’s members did not know that an external Gu Master was mixed among them.

Different from the rest, Wang Xiao Er did not want to be bought by Fang clan Gu Immortals.

Because the Fang clan Gu Immortals knew he was an outsider, not long ago, Fang Dong Xi had not just interrogated him roughly, he even used all sorts of vicious methods to torture Wang Xiao Er before healing him.

“Chaotic times are starting, Fang clan is a super force but it has actually gotten into this state.”

“They courted death!”

“Fang clan definitely did not want to kill Wan clan’s first supreme elder, they held back. In my opinion, Wan clan’s first supreme elder was too useless, he actually died so easily.”

“Right now, Wan clan is different. With Wan Gu Chou’s revival, they will rise up to power again with such a legendary expert.”

“Cooperating with Fang Yuan will give us Immortal Gu transactions. But working with Heavenly Court will allow us to revive Gu Immortals. They are both quite attractive!”

Fang clan’s members were now slaves, this was a warning to many Gu Immortals.

The five regions chaotic war had not started, but the super forces had already started to destabilize.

At once, all of them felt varying emotions, Fang clan’s predicament was also their concern for the future.

“How are you selling these human slaves?” Some people put up bids.

Human slaves were getting rarer and rarer, for the last hundred years, there were no such large scale human slave trade activities.

After all, capturing human enemies and selling them as slaves was an undeniable demonic act.

But right now, these Fang clan members had lost the battle, there was a proper excuse to sell them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2269: Heavenly Melody

Among the Gu Immortals who came to purchase Fang clan slaves, there might be Fang clan Gu Immortals, but treasure yellow heaven would not decipher them.

Xiao Ye Hu did not care.

He quoted his price expressionlessly, it was a normal price that was neither too low nor high.

Immediately, several transactions were completed.

“With this batch of Fang clan members, I have made up for the final gap, I can try to refine wealth Gu now.” Shi Kang was very happy.

“Please don’t let me get sold to Fang clan Gu Immortals!” Wang Xiao Er prayed in his heart.

“I’ll take this batch, they seem to be of decent quality.” The Gu Immortal spoke to Xiao Ye Hu and chose a batch.

Even among human slaves, quality differed.

Among which, rank five Gu Masters were the most popular, following that were the young and talented Gu Masters.

At once, crying sounds could be heard.

The Fang clan members were sold off, their families were broken up for good, they bid farewell to each other here for the last time, it was a sad sight to see.

Here, the Fang clan members’ lives would be greatly changed, the future was bound to be very different from now.

The pitiful Fang clan members would be sold to Shi Kang as Gu materials and used till they died.

Some of the luckier ones would be specially chosen as Gu Immortal seeds to join certain sects or clans. If they succeed in becoming Gu Immortals in the future, it would be a huge profit for the buyer.

Of course, there were few who were regarded as Gu Immortal seeds.

“Fang clan lost but they are not out yet. It seems that this contest will still go on.” In the two heavens, Fairy Zi Wei retracted her divine sense from treasure yellow heaven.

She had been paying close attention to the trend of the world recently.

Currently, she had already been in the two heavens with Ying Wu Xie for a few days.

During this period of time, they had a tough journey filled with difficulties and danger.

The immemorial two heavens were dangerous to begin with, ordinary rank eight Gu Immortals had to be very careful when they explored.

Now that the two heavens had fused, the environment was chaotic and messy, it was filled with changes. The five regions had already been implicated, while the fused two heavens itself was even more intense.

From time to time, roaming immemorial desolate beasts would appear, there could even be huge armies made of desolate beasts, ancient desolate beasts, and even immemorial desolate beasts.

It was still relatively safer to meet wild beasts, the scariest thing was getting into a place with dense dao marks, because the two heavens had shattered and fused together, many dangerous and forbidden places were shifting around now.

If one got trapped, they would be like a mortal stepping into a quicksand in the desert, they could only wait for death in despair.

Even an expert like Fairy Zi Wei would encounter danger.

“Ying Wu Xie, just how far away are we?” Fairy Zi Wei asked.

Currently, they were hiding within a soul beast army.

This soul beast army had many ancient soul beasts, Ying Wu Xie took control of it.

Ying Wu Xie replied: ”From what I sense, we still need three days to reach the main body. During this period, if he moves, the timing could be extended or shortened.”

Ying Wu Xie used a soul path killer move and managed to sense the location of his main body.

But Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s speed was far beyond them.

Thankfully, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had lost his senses, he did not use defensive methods against investigations, he was also roaming around causing destruction, he did not avoid them.

Thus, during this time, Ying Wu Xie and Fairy Zi Wei managed to get closer to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Howl!

The soul beast that was moving ahead suddenly stopped, it cried out in pain like it had slammed into an invisible wall.

“What’s going on?” Fairy Zi Wei instantly became alert.

“Be careful, all of you, stop!” Ying Wu Xie also controlled his soul beast army and stopped, floating in the air.

In the past few days, they had used the soul beasts to probe many dangerous areas.

The cost was thirty percent of the soul beasts they controlled.

“This is... heavenly chasm?” Fairy Zi Wei checked and gasped in surprise.

Heavenly chasm was a rank nine heaven path immortal material, it had an irregular form but was incredibly big. It was formless and ethereal, although it seemed like empty air, it could not be passed through.

“We are so unlucky, to think that we would be obstructed by this!” Ying Wu Xie was disappointed.

The heavenly chasm was not dangerous but it was a huge problem for them.

Because they needed to get past the heavenly chasm, but they could not find out what its exact shape or distribution was.

Both Fairy Zi Wei’s and Ying Wu Xie’s investigative methods had a smaller range than the size of the entire heavenly chasm.

In other words, they could only test their luck by choosing one direction and trying to get around it from there.

It was inestimable how much time they would need to use up now.

But there was no helping it, Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie could only make a detour.

After moving for a long distance, the heavenly chasm remained in front of them, it was like a huge wall that blocked their every path.

Suddenly, a sound was transmitted into Ying Wu Xie and Fairy Zi Wei’s ears.

Initially, they did not mind it, they thought that it was a normal wind sound.

But soon, it got louder and more delightful.

When the two immortals were attracted by the sound, their actions unconsciously slowed down.

After more than ten breaths of time, the entire soul beast army had stopped in the air, they were completely entranced by the beautiful sound.

This sound did not contain any instrumental component, it purely composed of wind, rain, thunder, bird chirping sounds and so on. However, the outcome was a beautiful melody that made Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie addicted to it.

“Oh no, this is the heavenly melody!” Fairy Zi Wei was internally shaken, she wanted to warn Ying Wu Xie but she only gasped out loud, her body completely relaxed as she fell into deep entrancement.

Ying Wu Xie had lower cultivation level than her, he was much more immersed in it, he was already showing an expression of indulgence, he could not save himself.

Fairy Zi Wei’s heart was sinking.

She knew that this was a truly desperate situation.

If this went on, she and Ying Wu Xie, along with the soul beasts, would be completely immersed in the heavenly melody, they would eventually lose their senses and become floating corpses.

Fairy Zi Wei wanted to save herself but after several attempts, she could not even activate any Gu worm, not to mention killer moves.

If she had reacted in time and did her best to stop it, there might be a chance of survival.

But she had been listening to the heavenly melody for too long, she was like a human struggling after falling into the water, her strength was depleting as she drank more and more water.

“Am I... going to die here?” Fairy Zi Wei felt her eyelids getting heavier, her vision was turning blur, she could not help but feel like shutting her eyes and enjoying the beautiful melody with her full attention.

This might be the most enjoyable way to die.

As Fairy Zi Wei approached death, her mind was filled with indulgent and wonderful emotions.

If she died, she would not feel any sadness, despair, pain, or other negative emotions.

But right when Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie were about to die, the heavenly melody started weakening.

A Gu Immortal was flying closer to them from afar.

He wore a red and white robe, standing straight like a spear or sword. His eyebrows were sharp like swords, a mysterious and profound light was hidden in his eyes.

He revealed a faint smile from the corner of his lips, he gave off the aura of gentleness and confidence.

It was the current rank eight sound path great expert — Feng Jiu Ge!

“What a beautiful heavenly melody.” Feng Jiu Ge laughed brightly as he looked at the soul beast army and the two incapacitated immortals, Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie.

The heavenly melody that almost killed the two Shadow Sect members did not manage to affect Feng Jiu Ge, in fact, he used a mysterious method to contain and collect it.

“Feng Jiu Ge?!” As Fairy Zi Wei slowly recovered, she looked at the Gu Immortal in front of her with shock.

Ever since the fate war, Feng Jiu Ge went missing without a trace. Had he been in the two heavens all along?

Since he was able to take the rank nine immortal material heavenly melody, did this mean that his strength had grown again? Did he retain his pseudo venerable battle strength?

It was a mystery.

As Feng Jiu Ge collected and stored the heavenly melody, he activated a killer move.

Two lumps of profound light shot into Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie, wrapping around them and slowly entering their bodies.

Because of the heavenly melody, Fairy Zi Wei still could not move, Feng Jiu Ge was free to do this without resistance.

“What... what killer move is this? What are you trying to do?” Fairy Zi Wei slowly regained her ability to speak.

Feng Jiu Ge replied: ”Don’t worry, I’m not seeking to harm you. After the fate war, haven’t our circumstances become quite similar now?”

Feng Jiu Ge said this as he turned to leave.

Fairy Zi Wei could not catch up, she watched as he flew away casually.

“What, what happened?” Ying Wu Xie recovered and watched Feng Jiu Ge’s figure fly far away in the sky.

“We were hit by the heavenly melody and fell into grave danger. But Feng Jiu Ge suddenly appeared and collected the heavenly melody, he also used a mysterious method on us.” Fairy Zi Wei explained the situation quickly.

Ying Wu Xie stared with wide eyes: ”What... Feng Jiu Ge didn’t kill us?”

“He is also a demonic path member, he has betrayed Heavenly Court, what is the point of killing us?” Fairy Zi Wei sighed: ”If he wanted us to die, he could have waited by the side, he would gain our corpses, immortal apertures, and Immortal Gu. His motive was to get the heavenly melody, other than that, he also wanted to use that move on us.”

The two used their methods and inspected their bodies, but could not find anything strange or peculiar.

It was as if Feng Jiu Ge’s killer move was just an illusion that had not actually been used.

“Regardless of whether he has pseudo venerable battle strength, his methods are becoming more profound!” Fairy Zi Wei sighed.

“What killer move is this?” Ying Wu Xie frowned: ”Is he trying to use us as bait to harm the main body?”

Fairy Zi Wei shook her head: ”We have too few clues, but according to my intuition, Feng Jiu Ge does not seem interested in Master Spectral Soul. Also, even if your guess is correct, are we going to stop here?”

Ying Wu Xie considered it and gritted his teeth while nodding: ”Of course we have to continue moving. Even if Feng Jiu Ge wants to harm the main body, he is only rank eight, how can he harm my main body?”

The two immortals set off again.

Because of the heavenly melody, half of the beast group was wiped out.

Since they were near the heavenly chasm, the army could not be replenished.

This time, to guard against the heavenly melody, the soul beasts were widely spread out, they were far from each other.

“The main body, I can sense the main body!” Not long after, Ying Wu Xie suddenly shouted.

Following his sensation, the two immortals changed directions and saw Spectral Soul Demon Venerable after a few minutes.

“So the main body was on the other side of the heavenly chasm, but because of this rank nine immortal material’s interference, I thought that he was far away!” Ying Wu Xie suddenly realized.

He shouted: ”I am here!”

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable saw Ying Wu Xie and immediately roared.

Boom boom boom!

With a chain of sounds, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable landed several hundred fists on the heavenly chasm.

The heavenly chasm shook intensely, it was on the brink of breaking.

Ying Wu Xie and Fairy Zi Wei turned pale, why did Spectral Soul Demon Venerable turn so ferocious after seeing Ying Wu Xie? It was as if they were mortal enemies.

What in the world was going on?

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2270: Heavenly Court’s Assault

Qin Ding Ling and Jun Shen Guang flew carefully in the two heavens.

“This Old Immortal Hua Yu is really crafty! He actually wants us to convince Flickering Light grotto-heaven first.” Jun Shen Guang said begrudgingly.

After the two of them received the mission to make Old Immortal Hua Yu change sides, they got close to Profound Literature grotto-heaven and lurked there.

While Old Immortal Hua Yu was chasing away beast groups outside, they secretly met with him.

“Do you think Old Immortal Hua Yu is purposely wasting our time now, after we convince Flickering Light grotto-heaven to join us, he will already have his trap prepared?” Jun Shen Guang asked.

Qin Ding Ling sighed: ”This is unlikely. Old Immortal Hua Yu has been hesitating for a long time, but the reason why he is staying on the fence and being ambiguous is because he is afraid that Fang Yuan will try to kill him if he betrays him!”

“In this situation, he wants the attention on him to be smaller, thus, he wants to see more grotto-heavens betraying Fang Yuan, in that case, Profound Literature grotto-heaven will not be as big of a target.”

“But the situation that you mentioned cannot be ruled out as well.”

Jun Shen Guang asked: ”Then what should we do? Flickering Light grotto-heaven is led by Gu Immortal Liang Jing Jing, but different from Old Immortal Hua Yu, we do not know much about her, we cannot be sure of her true intentions.”

Qin Ding Ling pondered for a while and said: ”Even if we don’t, I’m sure Old Immortal Hua Yu already has some leads. Otherwise, he would not have chosen this grotto-heaven specially for us.”

“Maybe it is time to use that move.”

Qin Ding Ling started to fly slower as her expression became resolute, it was clear that she had made up her mind.

Jun Shen Guang showed a look of confusion.

Qin Ding Ling said: ”Flickering Light grotto-heaven is not far away, but before taking the risk, I want to use my luck path method to make some arrangements.”

Jun Shen Guang asked worriedly: ”Is the cost of this move too high?”

Qin Ding Ling shook her head: ”Although it will consume some of my luck path dao marks, for the sake of Heavenly Court, this is a small cost. The reason why I hesitated was because this move has a huge drawback. It is the same as using my future good luck in advance, it may have the effect of helping our enemies.”

“So that’s it.” Jun Shen Guang nodded.

Qin Ding Ling continued to speak: ”But thinking about it, it is very important for us to recruit Old Immortal Hua Yu. With the contest of three venerables, for a long time in the future, this balance will continue to hold.”

“Western Desert’s Fang clan has already been driven out of their territory, if Old Immortal Hua Yu and the others betray Fang Yuan, then Heaven Refining Demon Venerable’s reputation will become the lowest of the three. Regardless of whether Fang Yuan goes to kill Old Immortal Hua Yu, he will still face losses.”

“For us rank eight Gu Immortals to be able to influence the situation of the three venerables, isn’t it normal that the price to pay is huge?”

Jun Shen Guang was convinced by her: ”That’s true! Lady Qin Ding Ling, go ahead and use it, I will guard you.”

Not long after, Qin Ding Ling finished her preparation and used the killer move.

However, this killer move took a whole hour before it ended.

Qin Ding Ling was pale and covered in sweat, her expression was quite strange.

“Did something happen?” Jun Shen Guang sensed that something was wrong long ago, he quickly asked.

Qin Ding Ling did not conceal the matter, she answered: ”When I used this killer move, there was a mystical change like the entire world was responding to me. This killer move normally takes ten or so breaths to activate, but in that situation earlier, with the help of heaven and earth, I persevered and continued to use it. In the end, the move’s activation took one hour.”

Jun Shen Guang frowned: ”I’ve heard about the secret behind the power of a Dao Lord. After a venerable refines natural dao marks, every move they make will be amplified by the dao marks, which is the resonance of heaven and earth. Lady Qin Ding Ling, why did that happen to you?”

Qin Ding Ling shook her head: ”I can’t comprehend it either, but that is not a problem. On this expedition to Flickering Light grotto-heaven, we will definitely receive huge help. Let’s go.”

“Mmm.”

The two Heavenly Court immortals continued on their way.

On the other side.

Boom!

With a loud rumbling sound, the heavenly chasm was unable to take any more hits, the weakest segment was pierced by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s arm.

The two sides were connected at once.

Fairy Zi Wei’s and Ying Wu Xie’s pupils shrunk rapidly, in an instant, they sensed an unparalleled killing intent surging from Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s body to the surroundings.

His killing intent was so intense that even Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie felt that they were mortals about to be engulfed by a tsunami.

Helplessness, despair, fear, panic, these emotions appeared naturally in them as they spread rapidly.

“Quickly go!” Fairy Zi Wei was a wisdom path great expert after all, she quickly reacted and used her killer move.

With her help, Ying Wu Xie regained his senses too.

Boom boom boom.

More and more arms pierced the heavenly chasm as they extended towards the two.

The rank nine heavenly chasm could trap Fairy Zi Wei or Ying Wu Xie, but it was only a small hurdle for the senseless Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie quickly retreated.

But suddenly, a black arm increased in speed and grabbed onto Ying Wu Xie.

At the moment of life and death, Ying Wu Xie activated his method.

Immortal killer move — Change Soul Technique!

At the next moment, he swapped position with a soul beast. This ancient soul beast took his place and got captured by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. Meanwhile, Ying Wu Xie appeared far away and quickly escaped for his life.

During this period of time, Ying Wu Xie practiced hard and created his killer move, change soul technique.

Compared to Fang Yuan’s switch soul in dream, this change soul technique had its own merits and demerits.

Ying Wu Xie managed to escape.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable growled angrily and squeezed with his huge claw as the ancient soul beast was ground into powder, its ancient soul core was absorbed by Spectral Soul

Demon Venerable instantly.

More and more huge claws slashed through the heavenly chasm and surrounded him.

Nearly ten hands opened up, an intense suction force appeared from the centers of the palms.

Ying Wu Xie’s soul beast group had no resistance at all, they were all absorbed.

As the claws contracted, they did not squeeze the soul beasts this time, instead, they were molded.

Be it desolate beast or ancient desolate beast, the soul beasts cried out in agony. After several breaths of time, the huge claws opened up as these soul beasts were released.

Not only did the size of the strength group change, their strength also rose dramatically, there were actually three immemorial soul beasts among them.

These soul beasts were completely loyal to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, they screeched as they attacked Ying Wu Xie.

Ying Wu Xie spat out blood, he felt incredibly stunned.

The method that he used to enslave the soul beasts had been completely erased by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he suffered a backlash as a result.

Fairy Zi Wei brought Ying Wu Xie along with her as they quickly retreated.

As purple smoke started to rise, these soul beasts were temporarily trapped, they could only move around in the smoke.

After flying for some time, they two immortals heard a loud sound as the surrounding hundred li started to shake.

The heavenly chasm was broken through by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

The two immortals turned pale as they did their best to flee.

But Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was incredibly fast, not long after, he reached them.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s left head roared loudly.

The silhouette of Dang Hun Mountain appeared immediately as it slammed towards the two immortals.

They could not avoid it.

Immortal killer move – Purple Will Production!

At the crucial moment, Fairy Zi Wei used a killer move as her body shook, turning into purple smoke that carried Ying Wu Xie as they vanished on the spot.

After a few breaths of time, purple smoke was produced out of nowhere several tens of li away.

The purple smoke turned back into Fairy Zi Wei while Ying Wu Xie fell out from it.

Thankfully, when they encountered the heavenly melody and after Feng Jiu Ge left, Fairy Zi Wei used her method at every set interval of distance traveled.

This method was originally meant to defend against the heavenly melody. But to think that she would have to use it to avoid Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

After using it, the two immortals managed to survive.

But danger was far from over, the two immortals were still in a perilous situation.

“Bring me along and leave. After using this move, there is a huge drawback, I need to exterminate the large amount of purple will in my mind before I can use it again.” Fairy Zi Wei said in an urgent tone.

Ying Wu Xie quickly used his soul path method as he flew away with Fairy Zi Wei.

After the two immortals escaped for some time, Ying Wu Xie was shocked to find that his speed was getting slower, any soul path killer move that he used had increasing expenditure.

“I have been struck!”

“It happened when the main body caught me earlier.”

“What move is this?”

“It seems to counter all soul path killer moves!”

Ying Wu Xie was soon rendered useless.

Fairy Zi Wei had no choice but to take over and escape with Ying Wu Xie.

As Spectral Soul Demon Venerable approached, Fairy Zi Wei had no choice but to use purple will production again to stall for time desperately.

“Let’s split up!” Ying Wu Xie gritted his teeth and suggested.

Fairy Zi Wei shook her head, she rejected him without hestiation.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable wanted to kill Ying Wu Xie now. If they split up, Fairy Zi Wei would survive but Ying Wu Xie would definitely not be spared.

Fairy Zi Wei was affected by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s method and became absolutely loyal to him. Currently, because Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was not in the right state of mind, her loyalty went to Spectral Soul’s split soul.

She would do anything to protect Ying Wu Xie, even if it cost her life.

But right at this time, three rank eight Gu Immortals appeared before Fairy Zi Wei.

The left one had a round head and large ears, he wore a loose robe and had an intense qi path aura, he was Heavenly Court’s Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch.

The right one wore a golden hoop on his head, it was Golden Hooped Great Immortal.

The Gu Immortal in the center looked kind and merciful, his eyebrows were very long, reaching his chest, it was one of the three dukes, Duke Mei!

“Fairy Zi Wei is here after all!”

“Oh, Ying Wu Xie is here too.”

Duke Mei, Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch, and Golden Hooped Great Immortal were here on Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s orders to capture Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei’s immortal aperture was with Heavenly Court, with such an obvious lead, after Star Constellation Immortal Venerable personally made deductions, the three immortals managed to find her.

Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie’s expressions changed.

They were facing danger from both directions.

This was a desperate predicament!

“What do we do?” Ying Wu Xie turned pale.

Fairy Zi Wei frowned deeply, at the moment of crisis, she shouted loudly: ”Feng Jiu Ge, I know you are nearby. If you lend us a hand now, we will repay you tenfold in the future!

“Feng Jiu Ge... that Heavenly Court traitor?” Golden Hooped Great Immortal frowned.

Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch snorted coldly: ”Good, we will take care of him too.”

Duke Mei was about to speak but his brows suddenly rose as his long eyebrows shook intensely: ”Oh no, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable is here!”

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s mountain-like body appeared in everyone’s vision.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2271: Left To Their Own Devices

At once, the situation became very complex.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable broke through the heavenly chasm and chased after them.

Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie were trapped in the middle.

Heavenly Court’s three immortals, Golden Hooped Great Immortal, Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch, and Duke Mei stood in front of the Shadow Sect members, while Feng Jiu Ge was indeed hiding nearby like what Fairy Zi Wei predicted.

If Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had his sanity, Feng Jiu Ge would not do this, that was too risky.

Fairy Zi Wei was really only trying her luck earlier.

She could not be certain of Feng Jiu Ge’s location, this was only a possibility she deduced.

After all, Feng Jiu Ge did not kill them but used a method on them. This meant that Feng Jiu Ge wanted to make use of the two.

Fairy Zi Wei was in a desperate situation, she had to use all the methods she could think of, in that situation, Feng Jiu Ge became her hope.

But Feng Jiu Ge showed no signs of helping.

He squinted as he looked at the two Shadow Sect immortals from afar, he sighed internally: ”It is useless, I can already hear the cries of your destiny, even though it has some turbulence, it is en-route to the abyss, the outcome has been decided.”

During this period when he went missing, he had been cultivating the killer move destiny song, he made a lot of progress.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s left head growled as soul balls appeared out of nowhere.

The soul balls had tiny tadpole-like tails behind them as they quickly got close to Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie, before exploding intensely.

Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie could not resist them, their souls shook and almost shattered on the spot.

“Attack!” At the other end, Duke Mei was the first to use his killer move.

Golden Hooped Great Immortal and Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch followed closely after.

“I am going to die!” Ying Wu Xie’s expression was ashen.

“How can this be?” At the next moment, Fairy Zi Wei’s expression turned to shock.

Because the Heavenly Court immortals’ attacks were not aimed at them but Spectral Soul Demon Venerable instead, they resisted the soul ball method while helping to defend the Shadow Sect immortals.

Heavenly Court was saving the Shadow Sect immortals?

Even a wisdom path great expert like Fairy Zi Wei was stunned.

“Don’t tell me, because Star Constellation Immortal Venerable revived, she is allowing me to return to Heavenly Court in exchange for betraying master?”

“Or maybe, they want to capture the crucial split soul, Ying Wu Xie, to use a method against master?”

Methods to create clones were convenient but they also exposed a weakness.

In this world, nothing was perfect.

With benefit came cost.

Clone methods had many demerits, the main thing was that their connection to the main body could be exploited.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s split soul had a weakness that was exposed long ago.

It was the sharing of attainment level.

It was an advantage and also a disadvantage.

When Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s clone created sovereign immortal fetus Gu, a vast amount of attainment levels were expended, forming dream realms.

This caused Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s own attainment level to fall as well.

Regardless of the intention of the three Heavenly Court immortals, the Shadow Sect immortals had survived because of them.

Far away, Feng Jiu Ge shook his head.

Be it the Shadow Sect immortals or Heavenly Court’s three immortals, their efforts were all in vain.

As expected, the number of soul balls continued to increase, they grew to a scale that the five immortals had trouble defending against.

Be it Fairy Zi Wei or Duke Mei, they were all in desperation.

“Is this the might of a venerable?!”

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable has lost his senses and even has such heavy injuries...”

“Damn it!”

The Heavenly Court immortals could not save the Shadow Sect immortals, they were implicated instead and became Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s next targets.

At the next moment, a huge number of soul balls would explode intensely and take the lives of these five immortals...

At this moment.

Feng Jiu Ge’s expression changed.

“Oh?” At this moment, he felt a vast power rampaging into the battlefield.

This was the power of luck path, it was grand and vast!

“Luck path... is the representation of uncertainty.”

“This power was initially small, but as the luck path dao marks in the two heavens grew, a huge variable was created. Who is the source of this?”

Feng Jiu Ge pondered deeply.

The power of luck path was so grand it was on par with a rank nine killer move!

Crack crack.

The power of luck path changed the two heavens, it changed the entire battlefield.

Originally, the two heavens were fusing together, black heaven and white heaven were joining together piece and piece. The five immortals were in the area of white heaven.

But now, the immemorial black heaven fragment flew towards them from afar.

White heaven had abundant light path dao marks, while black heaven had more dark path dao marks, because of the conflict of dao marks, as the immemorial black heaven approached, white heaven’s fragment shattered.

A large number of black and white heaven fragments created a huge current.

The current swept like a torrent, bringing Spectral Soul Demon Venerable along with it.

Without Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s control, the soul balls stayed at their spots without moving or exploding.

“We need to go!” Using this chance, Fairy Zi Wei brought Ying Wu Xie along as they flew into the immemorial black heaven that was right beside them.

“Wait.” The three Heavenly Court immortals quickly chased them.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was swept away by the two heavens’ current, but after it weakened, he was freed again.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was covered in injuries currently, heaven path dao marks were carved all over his injuries. There were even fragments of the two heavens stabbed into his body, it was as if he was stabbed by countless mirrors.

Because he was far away and due to the heaven path dao marks on his injuries, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable could no longer sense Ying Wu Xie.

He was senseless and could not use investigative or tracking methods.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable roared in anger and vented for some time before he was lured towards a nearby grotto-heaven.

This was Flickering Light grotto-heaven.

Inside, the leader of Flickering Light grotto-heaven, Gu Immortal Liang Jing Jing, was already trembling in fear.

In the past, with Flickering Light grotto-heaven hidden and condensed into a tiny spot, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable would not be able to find it in his current state.

But now, the fusion of the two heavens had reached the most intense moment, as a heaven vein node, Flickering Light grotto-heaven was affected by it and got exposed to the outside world.

“Alliance Leader, save me!!” Liang Jing Jing did not hesitate, she quickly asked Fang Yuan for help.

“I am willing to contribute light heaven for a large amount of contribution points in exchange for Lord Alliance Leader’s help to save my Flickering Light grotto-heaven!” Liang Jing Jing screamed out in terror.

“Light heaven?” Fang Yuan quickly received Liang Jing Jing’s distress message while he was unsealing the truthful floating ice.

After receiving the letter, he learned of light heaven.

Flickering Light grotto-heaven had devoured many fragments of the immemorial nine heavens, but its inner space was still too small.

A certain generation’s Flickering Light Grotto Lord came up with a brilliant plan to develop the grotto-heaven, that was to create an artificial heaven.

That was the source of light heaven.

From then on, the generations of Gu Immortals of Flickering Light grotto-heaven spent their lives to work on this grand plan, contributing everything into this.

They collected heavenly light and refined them carefully, slowly expanding the light heaven of Flickering Light grotto-heaven.

Its current size had already surpassed the original space of Flickering Light grotto-heaven itself.

Fang Yuan quickly considered this.

His original plan was to let Zhan Bu Du stabilize the immortal aperture while he built more resource points and created more dao veins. After that, he would absorb the Primordial Domain and gain a huge boost of attainment levels.

With the attainment levels and stabilized the sovereign immortal aperture, he would be able to annex more grotto-heavens of the two heavens.

In the current situation, Flickering Light grotto-heaven was going to be destroyed, Fang Yuan’s plans were unable to keep up with the development of events.

Fang Yuan was currently only a master in light path.

If he wanted to defend Flickering Light grotto-heaven, he would need to fight against Spectral

Soul Demon Venerable. If the battle becomes too intense and obscured heavenly secret fails,

he would be exposed, causing Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal

Venerable to attack him at the same time.

And most crucially, against other venerables, Fang Yuan did not have much of an advantage.

Even though he had two rank nine Immortal Gu, he had not created complementary killer moves

to use them with. He also had refinement path as his main path, it was not specialized in

fighting.

“If the venerables end up fighting, I only have an advantage in immortal essence. However, if

they join up to suppress me, my immortal essence will be countered by their sheer number.”

“I cannot save Flickering Light grotto-heaven!”

Fang Yuan decided to abandon Flickering Light grotto-heaven resolutely.

“Lord Alliance Leader, this light heaven is incredibly valuable, if you place it in the sovereign

immortal aperture, it will be a great addition.” Liang Jing Jing urged, this was the only thing that

she could offer to Fang Yuan now.

“Lord Alliance Leader, can you hear me? Please reply to me!!!” Liang Jing Jing stomped her feet in anxiety.

But now, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had already arrived, with a loud sound, he destroyed the grotto-heaven’s entrance.

Hundreds or thousands of arms entered the immortal aperture, wherever they went, lives were slaughtered, nobody could defend against the might of the venerable!

Liang Jing Jing had to hide in light heaven while she cried and sought help from Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had an indifferent expression, he knew that this decision would affect his prestige, but fighting against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was even worse.

These subordinates were only tools in his contest against the venerables, he would not sacrifice his own benefits for just one of these tools.

Chess pieces were pieces because they were meant to be used, they were also meant to be discarded when necessary.

“Fang Yuan, I hate you, I hate you! How dare you call yourself Great Love Immortal Venerable? I was wrong about you, you are leaving us to die, you are not fit to be the alliance leader!!” Liang Jing Jing cursed in despair.

At this moment, Fang Yuan showed a joyful expression.

He had reached a qualitative development in unsealing the truthful floating ice.

His heaven path attainment level reached grandmaster!

The number of heaven path dao marks rose drastically, while other paths' attainment level also grew slightly.

And most importantly, he gained heavenly secret Gu's rank nine recipe!

"Rank nine heavenly secret Gu?"

This was an unexpected gain for Fang Yuan.

Even someone like him could not help but feel his eyes light up.

"It was really wise to not save Flickering Light grotto-heaven."

"That was close..."

"If I had interfered to save Flickering Light grotto-heaven, it would trigger a battle between venerables later. I would have been a step away from obtaining rank nine heavenly secret Immortal Gu's recipe!"

This Immortal Gu recipe came at the perfect timing, it was very useful to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan immediately decided that his third rank nine Immortal Gu would be — Heavenly Secret!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2272: Doing Everything To Help

Qin Ding Ling and Jun Shen Guang flew rapidly along the way.

Ever since Qin Ding Ling used her luck path killer move, the two of them had a smooth journey with nearly no hurdles.

Jun Shen Guang sighed in admiration and praised it many times.

Qin Ding Ling explained: ”The might of the move far exceeded my usual limits, I have already comprehended a part of the reason for the resonance with heaven and earth.”

“Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable placed Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace in Northern Plains’ black heaven, it was there for three hundred thousand years.”

“In these three hundred thousand years, Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace had been exerting its effect to lay out luck path dao marks, spreading nearly throughout the entire immemorial black heaven.”

“Precisely because of this terrifying accumulation, it caused us to fail and suffer huge losses when Central Continent invaded Northern Plains to try and take fortune rivaling heaven Gu.”

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already predicted that the two heavens would fuse, thus, he moved Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace away and used it in the battle in Crazed Demon

Cave.”

“But the three hundred thousand years of accumulated luck path dao marks are all carved in Northern Plains’ immemorial black heaven. Furthermore, the number is too vast to imagine.”

“After the two heavens fused, both black and white heavens broke into countless fragments of various sizes, this caused the luck path dao marks to spread out as well.

Jun Shen Guang asked: ”So why did your luck path killer move get amplified by these luck path dao marks? Is it because a move was made by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable?”

Qin Ding Ling had a grim expression: ”If that is so, this will be part of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s scheme. But this is quite unlikely, because I have already asked Star Constellation Immortal Venerable about it, she told me that these luck path dao marks are natural dao marks, they do not belong to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.”

Jun Shen Guang was more confused now: ”So why was there a resonance?”

Qin Ding Ling shook her head: ”Forget about this for now, the matter at hand is to recruit Flickering Light grotto-heaven!”

Regarding this, Jun Shen Guang was even more confident than before: ”Lady Qin Ding Ling’s luck path killer move is unparalleled, in my opinion, we will definitely succeed this time.”

A while later.

The two immortals got close to Flickering Light grotto-heaven.

They were shocked to see that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was rampaging inside Flickering Light grotto-heaven.

He did not enter the grotto-heaven physically, but he broke the grotto-heaven door and extended hundreds of arms inside to slaughter and destroy everything he could reach, be it mortals or immortals, it was a cruel sight.

Qin Ding Ling went into a daze.

She had never expected such a thing to happen.

The immemorial two heavens were too huge.

It was very improbable for Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to find trouble with Flickering Light grotto-heaven at this very moment.

Jun Shen Guang’s mouth opened wide as he stared at Spectral Soul Demon Venerable before turning around to look at Qin Ding Ling with a complex expression.

He seemed to be asking: ”Is this the effect of your luck path killer move?”

Qin Ding Ling coughed and said awkwardly: ”Spectral Soul Demon Venerable is a venerable, even if my luck path method was amplified by the resonance of heaven and earth, it should not have such an immense effect.”

Jun Shen Guang was dazed: ”What should we do?”

They had originally planned to recruit Profound Literature grotto-heaven, but Old Immortal Hua Yu displayed the specialty of an information path expert.

He hinted to them that if they could recruit Flickering Light grotto-heaven, he would join them as well.

But now, after Qin Ding Ling and Jun Shen Guang took the time to travel all this way to Flickering Light grotto-heaven, they found that Flickering Light grotto-heaven was about to be destroyed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

“Quickly escape, grotto lord!”

“Let us draw the attention of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!”

“Flickering Light grotto-heaven is going to be destroyed, but your immortal aperture and our clansmen are all alive, please, you need to think of the big picture.”

At this time, six Gu Immortals flew out of Flickering Light grotto-heaven.

Rank eight light path Gu Immortal Liang Jing Jing was covered in heavy injuries, she was flying away in tears now as the other Gu Immortals used their lives to defend her.

However, even if Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was not sane now, he was still a venerable.

He had overwhelming killing intent, seeing that these Gu Immortals were trying to escape, he followed his instincts and tried to kill them.

The Gu Immortals of Flickering Light grotto-heaven were in imminent danger.

“A chance!” Jun Shen Guang shouted uncontrollably.

“So that’s it.” Qin Ding Ling understood at once: ”So this is the true effect of my luck path killer move.”

Often, precious opportunities were hidden in dangerous situations.

“Let us help you!” Qin Ding Ling shouted and made a move first.

Jun Shen Guang quickly followed after her.

The Gu Immortals of Flickering Light grotto-heaven were initially fearful, according to their current faction, they were enemies. But after realizing that the Heavenly Court immortals were

really helping them, these Gu Immortals developed an intense feeling of joy and gratitude.

Eventually, with the help of Qin Ding Ling and Jun Shen Guang, the Flickering Light grotto-heaven Gu Immortals managed to escape.

Of course, they paid a huge price for this.

Qin Ding Ling was lightly injured while Jun Shen Guang was heavily injured, only three Gu Immortals from Flickering Light grotto-heaven were left, one was unconscious while two were heavily injured.

“This is the power of a venerable, we had no way to retaliate!” Jun Shen Guang sighed, although he was safe now, he still sighed while feeling lingering fear.

He was a rank eight expert, but when chased by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he was fragile as a baby.

And this was when Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had no sanity, his actions were akin to a soul beast.

“If Spectral Soul Demon Venerable chased after us with all his strength, we would not have survived. Thankfully, his attention was mostly on Flickering Light grotto-heaven, he only chased us for a while before returning to destroy the grotto-heaven!” Qin Ding Ling said.

“Sigh...”

“Our homeland...”

Of the three Gu Immortals of Flickering Light grotto-heaven, one was unconscious while two had pale expression, they had a heavy mood and felt deep sadness, pain, anger, and helplessness that could not be concealed.

“You have my condolences. Venerables are invincible while us rank eights are ants. It was already our great fortune to have been able to escape.” Qin Ding Ling consoled.

Liang Jing Jing suddenly bowed and paid respects to Qin Ding Ling and Jun Shen Guang: ”I will never forget the debt of saving our lives. We were enemies but you risked your lives to save us, such righteousness and magnanimity is truly astounding, we are in deep awe.”

“Heavenly Court is truly the leader of humanity, you will forever be the number one force in the world!”

“Compared to you, it is truly the biggest irony that our alliance leader called himself Great Love Immortal Venerable and created the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.”

Speaking of Fang Yuan, Liang Jing Jing felt immense hatred.

Qin Ding Ling and Jun Shen Guang looked at each other, seeing the joy in each other’s eyes.

The other Gu Immortal from Flickering Light grotto-heaven who was awake said: ”Friends from Heavenly Court, our Grotto Lord is not a scheming person, Fang Yuan had really gone overboard!”

“We had already asked him for help, we placed light heaven in treasure yellow heaven and transacted it to him.”

“But he took our light heaven and ignored our plight, he showed no intentions of helping us, he directly abandoned us!”

“We are his subordinates, we are members of his Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance!”

“Such an action is truly disappointing and shameful. To think that we believed he would change his ways and become righteous after becoming venerable!”

Qin Ding Ling and Jun Shen Guang were very happy now.

Even without them saying anything, the Gu Immortals of Flickering Light grotto-heaven were already hinting that they wanted to jump ship and join them!

“Lady Qin Ding Ling’s luck path killer move is truly profound and mystical.” Jun Shen Guang praised internally.

Qin Ding Ling had a solemn expression: ”I won’t hide this from you, we came here because of a certain reason.”

Next, Qin Ding Ling explained the details of why she came, she even requested for Liang Jing Jing to help convince Old Immortal Hua Yu.

After hearing her words, Liang Jing Jing and the rest were also quite joyful.

They had no choice now but to try to join Heavenly Court, they were very uneasy about betraying Fang Yuan.

If Fang Yuan came to them to settle the score, they would be in trouble.

Even if Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could block Heaven Refining Demon Venerable for some time and protect, how could she guard them forever?

If Fang Yuan bore hatred and wanted to kill these traitors, he would have the initiative. He could attack anytime he wanted to.

If he attacked on a random day, the Gu Immortals of Flickering Light grotto-heaven would not be able to block him or wait for reinforcements.

They were absolutely sure of that now.

Because earlier, they saw the terrifying might of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

He was just a senseless venerable.

If he had sanity, if their enemy was Fang Yuan instead of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, that would be incredibly terrifying. These Gu Immortals had no way of escaping at all.

The Gu Immortals of Flickering Light grotto-heaven confirmed that they were betraying him now, in that case, they needed more traitors on this ship, so that his attention would be split among them.

Thus, Liang Jing Jing did not even care about her injuries, she decided to go with Qin Ding Ling to try and convince Old Immortal Hua Yu at Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

The group met with Old Immortal Hua Yu as they conversed secretly.

Qin Ding Ling spoke convincingly: ”Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has already deduced the result, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable seem to be roaming aimlessly and causing destruction, but there is a pattern with his actions.”

“He is destroying the pillars that hold up immemorial white heaven. For example, the heavenly chasm, heavenly pillar, or even heaven vein nodes like Flickering Light grotto-heaven.”

“Your Profound Literature grotto-heaven is the same as Flickering Light grotto-heaven, you are

both heaven vein nodes of immemorial white heaven. Spectral Soul Demon Venerable will

definitely come to destroy Profound Literature grotto-heaven in the future.”

Liang Jing Jing added: ”Old Immortal Hua Yu, we’ve known each other for many years. You’ve

seen what happened to me, Fang Yuan abandoned us, he even took away our light heaven, he

is cold, cruel, and shameless to the extreme!”

“Do you want to entrust your life to such an alliance leader?”

“You have to decide now. Once Spectral Soul Demon Venerable comes to find you, it will be too

late for Profound Literature grotto-heaven to relocate.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2273: Giving Heavenly Court Two Slaps

Old Immortal Hua Yu was convinced, he gritted his teeth and said: ”Does Heavenly Court have

a way to relocate my grotto-heaven?”

Qin Ding Ling smiled lightly; ”Of course we do. The foundation of Heavenly Court cannot be

matched by Longevity Heaven or Fang Yuan. Believe me, joining Heavenly Court is the wisest

decision!”

Old Immortal Hua Yu sighed deeply and replied: ”This is a huge matter, do allow me to return to the grotto-heaven and hold a meeting with the other Gu Immortals.”

“We will wait here for the good news.” Qin Ding Ling showed a very understanding demeanor.

After Old Immortal Hua Yu returned to the grotto-heaven, he assembled the immortals and explained the situation to them.

Although they were shocked, after three days and nights, they all agreed with Old Immortal Hua Yu’s decision to switch sides to Heavenly Court.

Li Xiao Bai was among them, he also agreed to join Heavenly Court but he was feeling nervous internally.

If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used an investigative method on him, she might find out his relationship with Fang Yuan. But he was just one person, while the intention to join Heavenly Court had already been acknowledged among everyone.

Old Immortal Hua Yu led the immortals out of the grotto-heaven, they met with Qin Ding Ling and Jun Shen Guang.

“Good, good, good.” Qin Ding Ling welcomed them as she said: ”Everyone, by joining the right side, not only will you gain immense benefits, you will also create a brighter future for your descendants.”

Old Immortal Hua Yu followed: ”Indeed, we should share such joyful news with others. I hope

Lady Qin Ding Ling and Lord Jun Shen Guang can help, I am willing to take a risk and rescue more friends from this demonic Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.”

Qin Ding Ling and Jun Shen Guang heard his words and laughed joyfully.

With Old Immortal Hua Yu taking the lead, and an example like Liang Jing Jing, because Qin Ding Ling also used a luck path killer move earlier, their journey in convincing the rest to join them went smoothly.

Several days later.

Nearly all of the human forces of the two heavens’ grotto-heavens had betrayed Fang Yuan, they went to join Heavenly Court.

To speak the truth, Qin Ding Ling had only planned to recruit Old Immortal Hua Yu, but after they took action, the results were actually much better than expected.

Such news could not be hidden, soon, the entire five regions’ Gu Immortals went into an uproar.

“Heavenly Court is still Heavenly Court after all!”

“Fang Yuan suffered a loss again.”

“Earlier in Western Desert, Heavenly Court won and forced Fang clan to sell all their resource points as they fled from their territory.”

“Now, Fang Yuan’s influence in the two heavens has mostly been uprooted by Heavenly Court.”

“Even though Fang Yuan is a venerable, he cultivates refinement path. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable is a wisdom path venerable, she is most skilled at plotting and making use of people’s feelings.”

“To speak the truth, I can understand why they chose to join Heavenly Court. After all, Fang Yuan did nothing and allowed Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to slaughter and cause destruction in the two heavens, this is not what a leader should do. There are even rumors that Fang Yuan took Liang Jing Jing’s light heaven without helping out!”

The Gu Immortals discussed among themselves.

Every action of a venerable, no matter how small, was a huge matter in the Gu Immortal world, it would draw the attention of everyone.

Many people started to guess what Fang Yuan would do now.

Would he take revenge? Would he take action to pursue those grotto-heaven forces that betrayed him?

Or would he just take this loss silently?

“If I were him, I would definitely take action! Traitors need to be punished, if they have an easier life after this, what will the other members of the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance think?”

“If they can betray him so easily, aren’t they simply disregarding the status of Great Love Immortal Venerable?”

“Maybe they are just bullying Lord Fang Yuan for being a newly advanced venerable.”

“How can the pride of a venerable be provoked so easily?”

Soon, waves of discussion erupted, becoming the main topic of treasure yellow heaven.

“Hehe.” Wu Yong smiled coldly, he did not need to guess to know that this discussion was driven by Longevity Heaven.

If he could force Heaven Refining Demon Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to enter battle from this, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would benefit immensely.

“Fang Yuan will not make a move, I know him too well.” Wu Yong looked in the direction of Eastern Sea as he sighed deeply.

If it were him, he would not do anything either.

If a move was made, Fang Yuan would need to fight against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, this was extremely disadvantageous.

“With the contest of three venerables, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable clearly has the upper hand. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable have their stronghold respectively, while Fang Yuan lacks in this aspect while also having the least immortal essence.”

“In this situation, he needs to be even more vigilant. If he takes action abruptly, he will likely be disadvantaged even further.”

“The rumors should be true, Fang Yuan took the light heaven but did not help her. In this aspect, I cannot compare to him.”

Comparing himself to Fang Yuan, Wu Yong reflected upon himself and felt that his shamelessness was still not enough, he had much to learn.

What were reputation and prestige?

They were just elements that were necessary to survive or gain victory.

If reputation or prestige were not useful for survival or claiming victory, then they should be discarded immediately.

When it was time to be shameless, one needed to be resolutely shameless!

“It is time.”

“It is time to join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.”

Bright light flickered in Wu Yong’s eyes continuously.

Right when everyone thought poorly of Fang Yuan and felt that he was the weakest among the three venerables, Wu Yong made a decision that was the opposite of everyone else!

Fang Yuan accepted it without hesitation.

Once news spread, Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world became shocked, the entire five regions’ Gu Immortal world was shaken.

Fang clan who joined the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance lost their territory and had to flee. A large number of super forces in the two heavens also left the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.

In this situation, Wu clan went against the trend and publicly joined the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, this was a questionable action that drew disdain from others.

Southern Border’s Gu Immortal world was shaken, doubts towards Wu Yong soon rose and erupted into a storm.

But Wu clan, who was at the center of the storm, stayed united against all resistance, no matter how they were targeted, they remained unmoving like a monolith, showing no weaknesses at all.

Back in Western Desert.

“Southern Border’s Wu Yong... I’ve heard of his name long ago, but his courage and foresight are truly admirable.” Fang Gong said in amazement.

Fang Di Chang nodded: ”I wonder how much benefits he obtained from Fang Yuan by using the entire Wu clan as the stake to publicly join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.”

“Regardless of the results, this is a grand leader with huge ambitions! Wu clan has been

Southern Border’s number one super force for a long time, but they still made such a risky move. My Fang clan is far inferior to Wu clan to begin with, so how can we not have the same resolve as them?” Fang Hua Sheng smiled.

“Third supreme elder is right! Our Fang clan has already rested sufficiently, all sorts of resource points have been transacted for Immortal Gu, Fang An Lei and Fang Chen have also returned already, and our Immortal Gu Houses have been improved further. It is time to take action!”

Fang Leng shouted with great enthusiasm.

Fang clan lost all their territory, they became a roaming force without a base.

But in this situation, youngsters like Fang Leng grew up and matured rapidly, they became more proactive and enthusiastic.

Fang Di Chang looked towards the other Gu Immortals as he said: ”What do you think?”

“I think we can make a move now!”

“If we stay cooped up in here, I feel like I will turn rusty soon.”

“We need to show those super forces that bullied our Fang clan that there is a huge price to pay for provoking us!”

After seeing that their Gu Immortals had high morale, Fang Gong became very happy: ”Good, we will teach them a lesson that they will never forget!”

The first supreme elder showed a clear attitude, Fang clan’s immortals had shining eyes as their expressions became even more heated.

Fang Di Chang nodded lightly and tossed out an information path Gu worm which turned into a map in the air: ”We will target this place.”

The immortals looked and had a change of expressions, they did not think that Fang Di Chang would make such a decision.

“This is... earthly flame forest?”

“This is Dong clan’s number one resource point! It is tightly defended.”

“Is this too aggressive?”

Fang Di Chang smiled: ”Everyone, listen to me. The earthly flame forest is not made of trees but flame pillars from underground instead. After reaching a breaking point, they will spew out of the surface and form into flames that resemble trees. The cause is the fire path dao vein underground.”

“However, with the unification of five regions, the regional walls vanished and the earth veins relocated drastically. Thus, that fire path dao vein is also shifting.”

“Earlier, Dong clan set up an immortal formation there using the original location without any Immortal Gu. Currently, it is at the breaking point, it is like a paper window that can be pierced with just one strike!”

“And most crucially, the mission board of our alliance has changed. Earth path resource points are now exchanging for less contribution points while wind path and fire path resource points have grown in value. Thus, by attacking this spot, we can gain even more contribution points!”

After the Fang clan immortals heard this, they understood that Fang Di Chang had planned this after much preparation and consideration.

“As expected of Lord Fang Di Chang.” Fang Chen sighed.

“Since second supreme elder has decided upon this, we will trust you!” Fang An Lei expressed her view.

“Then let us take down this earthly flame forest, hahaha.” Old Ghost Bai Jun was Fang clan’s slave Gu Immortal, he also showed his stance.

“I can’t wait anymore.” Fang Dong Xi rubbed his palms together.

Although he had revived and retained his rank seven cultivation, his immortal aperture was empty and needed development.

Earlier, when the Fang clansmen were sold, he had gone to Xiao Ye Hu for a transaction but found that Wang Xiao Er had been bought already.

As for the other Fang clan members, because of Fang Di Chang’s words, to play it safe for now, they did not buy them.

Several days later.

Fang clan moved out all at once, successfully assaulting earthly flame forest.

Fang clan had a huge force now while Dong clan had just lost their Red River Wheel.

Dong clan’s first supreme elder did not hesitate, he immediately requested for help from the other super forces.

After Dong clan gathered many Gu Immortals and several Immortal Gu Houses, they went to reinforce the resource point but found that it was in a state of ruin and destruction.

Fang clan had not just retreated and vanished into thin air, they even moved the entire mountain-like area of the earthly flame forest, including the ground itself, into treasure yellow heaven.

Western Desert’s Gu Immortals were shaken!

The five regions’ Gu Immortals were stunned.

Right when Dong clan’s first supreme elder hesitated on whether to organize a second anti-Fang alliance, Fang clan struck again and targeted the other super forces’ resource points, after succeeding, they easily retreated.

The five regions went into an uproar!

Western Desert’s super forces started to become fearful, everyone started to focus on defending themselves.

Fang Yuan did not make a move on the two heavens’ grotto-heavens from start to finish. But

Southern Border’s Wu clan and Western Desert’s Fang clan had taken action instead, this was like giving Heavenly Court two slaps across the face, creating two loud sounds that resounded in the entire world.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2274: Beneath the Heavens and Above the Earth, I am the Most Dazzling One in Sight

Heavenly Court.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable let out a breath of air, her face was pale, she felt an intense weakness and fatigue spreading throughout her body.

“I finally created this formation, now, it is time for our human path to develop rapidly.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked at the derivation formation in front of her with much joy.

After she refined all the wisdom path dao marks in Heavenly Court, she did not set off immediately, instead, she made use of the time to quickly set up the derivation formation.

Although Star Constellation Immortal Venerable cultivated wisdom path and star path, she was not weak at setting up formations either.

In fact, she was even more formidable than most rank eight formation path experts.

Of course, compared to legendary formation path great experts, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was still unable to compare to them in formation path alone.

Regardless, with the full effort of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, this derivation formation was finally completed!

The core of this formation was rank nine derivation Immortal Gu.

This was a legendary Immortal Gu first recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>. It was once obtained by Limitless Demon Venerable and used in his Crazed Demon formation as the core.

After the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable took this piece of truthful floating ice that contained derivation Gu.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used Heavenly Court’s heaven path research results to unseal the truthful floating ice and retrieve derivation Gu.

Afterwards, she used derivation Immortal Gu as the main core to establish this formation around it!

Limitless Demon Venerable used derivation Immortal Gu and the chaos outside the world to derive and create this truthful floating ice that did not belong to this world in essence.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used the essence of the Crazed Demon formation to create her own derivation formation that was meant to develop human path.

The development of a path usually took over a hundred thousand or even millions of years and the effort of countless geniuses and talents. But using the derivation formation, the path’s development soared like a rocket, it shot up towards the sky with one thrust!

After inspecting the derivation formation, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable checked the various wisdom path killer moves that she used earlier.

These wisdom path killer moves could block detection methods and conceal her derivation formation, and also amplify Heavenly Court’s defenses.

Although the core Immortal Gu of these moves were only rank eight, under the amplification of Heavenly Court’s dao marks, even if the other venerables attacked at full force, they could last for some time.

After everything was done, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable took a rest, this was something that she barely did.

But her immortal essence had been depleted to a great extent, although her immortal aperture was developing, the rank nine immortal essence production could not keep up with her expenditure.

Furthermore, in order to create this rank nine formation, because Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was not a formation path venerable, she had to use up a vast number of thoughts.

Come to speak of it, ever since Star Constellation Immortal Venerable revived, she had not taken a proper rest.

The contest of venerables gave her immense pressure.

After three days passed, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable immediately went to settle Heavenly Court’s affairs.

Heavenly Court’s immortals (and wills) gathered for a discussion again.

Qin Ding Ling came to report everything that had happened in the two heavens.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gave her some words of encouragement, the two of them, Qin Ding Ling and Jun Shen Guang, had done a great job in recruiting most of the grotto-heaven forces in the two heavens.

As for the mysterious amplification of Qin Ding Ling’s luck path killer move, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also decided to spend some time to make deductions on it.

Northern Plains had no significant events happening, the demonic cultivators were gathering together under the pressure of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, they were either recruited by the Huang Jin tribes or went to the side of Chu Du, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, and Fairy Black Moon.

As for Wan clan, Fang clan created a commotion and attacked many of Western Desert’s super forces with great success. Western Desert’s righteous path was having a huge headache now, Wan clan and the others were seeking help from Heavenly Court.

In Southern Border, Wu Yong created a commotion. He was already close to Heavenly Court but he suddenly changed attitude and joined the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable rejected the request of sending help to Western Desert’s righteous path, while mobilizing almost all of the Gu Immortals in the Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects to create her star array calculation formation.

Western Desert’s situation was mostly led by Wan Zi Hong and Zhou Xiong Xin.

“Fang clan is just a small problem, how many resource points can Fang clan plunder? In the case of the sovereign immortal aperture, it is too insignificant.”

“The more Fang clan attacks, the more clues they will leave behind. One day, their location will be exposed to us.”

“Western Desert’s righteous path is losing, but that is not the loss of our Central Continent’s Heavenly Court.”

“As for Southern Border’s Wu Yong, let him go. Right now, Heavenly Court cannot send troops out yet. He is ambitious but he is not even a pseudo venerable. How many ambitious Gu Immortals are there in the world? Only more will appear in the future.”

“Right now, the fusion of two heavens has reached the most crucial moment, this is the natural development of the Heavenly Dao. Now that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable has lost his human nature, his actions are dictated by the nature of heaven. I have already deduced that there will be a huge change in the future.”

“Central Continent needs to create the star array calculation formation to prepare for the future, when the Heavenly Dao undergo new changes.”

After Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s words, some Gu Immortals pointed out their doubts: ”The creation of this formation is unprecedented in size and scale, I am worried that if we set it up without any concealment, the other venerables will attack.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled plainly: ”No worries, I have a plan.”

On the same day, Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects sent a large number of Gu Immortals to gather above the sky of Central Continent, they started to place stars and arrange them according to the star array calculation formation.

The number of Gu Immortals involved and the height of their respective cultivation levels was simply unprecedented.

Such a huge commotion immediately drew the attention of the Gu Immortals of the five regions.

It was clear that only Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had the ability to gather such a large number of people.

The Gu Immortals started to guess what ability was contained in this formation that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was trying to build.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already returned to Longevity Heaven.

His gaze pierced through the ground and into the Blood Sea at the bottom.

It was rumbling with huge waves, at the center of the Blood Sea, there was a huge whirlpool.

“It is finally time.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable nodded slightly.

This Blood Sea had been hidden in Longevity Heaven all along, it was created by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s clone, Blood Sea Ancestor.

He wanted to create a blood path secluded domain of heaven and earth.

Blood Sea Ancestor left behind countless blood path inheritances, including nine true inheritances. He had naturally left behind the deepest profundities in Longevity Heaven, Blood Sea was one of them.

Initially, this Blood Sea was small and of low quality, but after countless years of nurturing, it had already reached an impressive level.

Before Giant Sun Immortal Venerable revived, he had already started making arrangements for Blood Sea.

Blood Sea was very important for the current Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. Thus, he let his subordinate who had the best Gu refinement ability, Yao Huang, stay here to control the overall situation.

Immortal killer move — Destined Birth Through Luck.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable activated this killer move, by combining the luck path method with Blood Sea, he could revive Gu Immortals!

Under the amplification of Longevity Heaven’s luck path dao marks, golden light radiated heaven and earth, penetrating deep into Blood Sea, every droplet of blood water was dyed golden in color.

Rumble...

Blood waves rose and crashed as thunderous sounds erupted, the huge whirlpool at the center became more rapid and turbulent.

Yao Huang had an exhausted expression, he had been guarding this place and using refinement path methods without rest, he was exerting his full effort without losing his concentration at all.

Right now, he thought to himself with intense anticipation.

“Blood Sea has the power to revive people on its own, while ancestor used his luck path killer move, destined birth through luck. With the combination of both, this Gu Immortal who revives first will definitely be of great help and importance to our Longevity Heaven!”

“Who will this person be?”

Boom!

After reaching a certain limit, the blood waves exploded into a shocking tsunami of great height.

The waves crashed into the huge whirlpool at the center from all directions, filling it up immediately.

Blood Sea became tranquil all of a sudden, it was still turbulent earlier but became clear as a mirror now, the contrast was quite jarring.

Suddenly, a pillar of light shot up from the sea.

Next, more and more lights appeared, over a thousand light pillars pierced through the sea like dozens of sharp swords.

A huge lump of light rose from Blood Sea like a miniature sun.

This light was so dazzling that Yao Huang had to squint his eyes and use a killer move, but he still felt like his eyes were going blind.

“A light path Gu Immortal expert...”

“In history, which person with Huang Jin bloodline fits this description?”

Almost instantly, a name appeared in Yao Huang’s mind.

As the dazzling light faded away, a Gu Immortal stayed floating in the air, he had no hair but his body emitted intense light in all directions, he was like a person made of light.

He pointed towards heaven and earth with both hands respectively as he shouted loudly: ”Beneath the heavens and above the earth, I am the most dazzling one in sight!”

Yao Huang was deeply shocked.

“There’s no mistake, with this tone and temperament, it has to be him.”

“Ancestor’s eldest son, the legendary light path cultivator who left his name in history.”

“Pseudo venerable — Light Emperor!”

At this moment, Light Emperor reacted as he looked at Yao Huang and asked: ”I actually revived, who are you?”

“I am the current generation South Desolation Immortal, Yao Huang.”

“You revived me?”

“I did.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable spoke.

“Father?!” Light Emperor was shocked, he blinked rapidly: ”Oh, in that case, other than you, my father, in this world, I am the most dazzling!”

“Cough, cough.” Yao Huang interrupted: ”The truth is, Light Emperor, in the current world, there are four venerables in existence, while three are in a deadlock.”

Light Emperor was stunned, he rubbed his chin: ”Oh, in that case, other than the four venerables, I am the most dazzling person!”

“You are not the only pseudo venerable, my son.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable spoke again.

“Ah, damn it.” Light Emperor rubbed his bald head, he could not frown without any eyebrows, but he still showed a bitter expression: ”This era has many dazzling people. But it is not a problem, I am the Light Emperor after all!”

"You were reborn at an opportune time, I have already checked that your fortuitous encounter is in the immemorial two heavens. Go there, my son." Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's voice gradually became softer as he left.

"Father, don't leave so hastily. Give me a few Immortal Gu, how else can I shine brightly?" Light Emperor shouted.

"Lord, don't worry, ancestor has already prepared your Immortal Gu." Yao Huang said as he flew over and handed him some light path Immortal Gu.

Light Emperor was feeling quite vexed: "Just these? No wonder father left so quickly. It will be quite hard to dazzle everyone now."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2275: Another Declaration From Fang Yuan!

"To think that Heavenly Court will arrange us to be here."

"Hmph, where else do you want to be? Inside Heavenly Court?"

"Everyone, it is too late to turn back now. Now that we have joined Heavenly Court, we have no alternative but to obey them. Having internal strife now is very stupid."

The leaders of the various grotto-heavens like Old Immortal Hua Yu, Liang Jing Jing, and Granny Skeleton gathered together.

Some of their expressions were quite unsightly.

After joining Heavenly Court, even though their grotto-heavens had devoured immemorial nine heavens fragments before, Heavenly Court still had an effective immortal aperture relocation method to use.

But these grotto-heavens suffered immense losses after a forceful relocation.

Furthermore, most of them were now gathered in the two heavens above Central Continent. According to Heavenly Court, their grotto-heavens were arranged in accordance with the star array calculation formation below, they were all treated as formation cores!

"Everyone, have you been well?" Qin Ding Ling smiled and flew towards them.

The Grotto Lords were all expressionless, most of them were even snorting coldly, in the end, Old Immortal Hua Yu and Liang Jing Jing were the ones to greet her.

Qin Ding Ling understood the reason behind the emotions of these rank eight Gu Immortals.

After these people joined Heavenly Court, not only did their grotto-heavens suffer great losses, they were even used by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable as the cores of her star array calculation formation.

This meant that if the three venerables fought in the future, when they try to break into the formation, these grotto-heavens would be at the forefront to deal with such attacks, they could become sacrificial pieces if they were careless.

Qin Ding Ling smiled as she spoke to Old Immortal Hua Yu and Liang Jing Jing, afterwards, her tone turned cold as she chided the rest: ”We’ve already explained it to you. Heavenly Court’s righteousness comes at a price, if not for the fact that we removed your grotto-heavens from the heaven vein nodes, will your homelands still exist now?”

The other immortals’ expressions changed.

Qin Ding Ling had not shown such an attitude when she went to recruit them back then.

But now that she showed her true colors, the Grotto Lords had no choice but to endure it.

As subordinates, they had no choice but to give in now!

Especially for the first batch of Gu Immortals like Granny Skeleton, their grotto-heavens were situated in immemorial black heaven, they were forced by the circumstances to join Heavenly Court like Old Immortal Hua Yu and the rest.

Right now, it seemed that the other variant human grotto-heavens were still left in the immemorial two heavens, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable only destroyed the grotto-heavens in white heaven, he did not do anything to those in black heaven.

Granny Skeleton and others felt very regretful, but at this point, what could they do?

After scolding these Grotto Lords, Qin Ding Ling saw that their expressions became more respectful, she snorted coldly: ”It seems that you’ve already woken up, now, come with me to meet Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was not in Heavenly Court now.

She refined Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks and activated wisdom path methods to conceal the derivation formation, afterwards, she left to refine the natural wisdom path dao marks of Central Continent.

But because of a shortage of immortal essence, and because her immortal aperture could not produce enough essence to keep up with the expenditure, she helped the Central Continent immortals with the arrangement of the star array calculation formation while resting.

Under the lead of Qin Ding Ling, the two heavens’ Grotto Lords met with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable in the sky above Central Continent.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was currently inside Embroidered Tower, she used dao embroidery personally to weave wisdom path and star path dao marks in the surrounding ten thousand li, creating a beautiful work of art.

After the fate war, Reckless Savage Demon Venerable’s method was obtained by Fang Yuan. After Star Constellation Immortal Venerable revived, she quickly modified and changed Embroidered Tower.

Right now, not only was Embroidered Tower complete, it also became more profound and powerful.

After personally seeing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s incredible method, the Grotto Lords were deeply shaken, they paid their respects.

Seeing them kneel in midair, the Gu Immortals of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects who were setting up the formation became very enthusiastic and motivated.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gave them a light gaze, she sensed their complex emotions, there was unease among most of them, some also felt angry and indignant about their predicament.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable consoled them expressionlessly: ”Friends, you are all humans, having been freed from the demonic grasp of Eastern Sea, it is a great victory for humanity. Ever since ancient times, Heavenly Court has been the sacred land of humanity, it is the greatest homeland of everyone. No matter what your ancestors did that caused them to hide in the immemorial two heavens, Heavenly Court will not hold you accountable, let the past remain in the past.”

“Don’t worry, Heavenly Court treats everyone equally, whoever makes contributions will be fairly rewarded by Heavenly Court. In the future, your glory of having joined Heavenly Court will also be passed on to your descendants.”

Old Immortal Hua Yu and the rest were still kneeling, after hearing her words, they expressed their gratitude and praised Heavenly Court’s righteousness, they declared their loyalty and confidence in Heavenly Court.

Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan looked at the rank nine Immortal Gu recipe of heavenly secret Gu as he let out a breath of turbid air.

This Immortal Gu recipe was very different from before.

Originally, the rank nine Immortal Gu recipe of Heavenly Secret came from the truthful floating ice, it was part of Limitless Demon Venerable’s foundation, he had obtained it from digesting the chaos outside the world.

That was to say, within the Heavenly Dao of this Gu world, there was no rank nine heavenly secret Gu.

In order to pursue eternal life, Limitless Demon Venerable digested the chaos and gained many results that surpassed the current Heavenly Dao. Rank nine heavenly secret Immortal Gu was one of his gains.

This was a great achievement indeed, but there was still room for improvement.

After all, Limitless Demon Venerable died long ago, even though he revived earlier, he was not a refinement path venerable.

In terms of refinement path, Fang Yuan was the number one person throughout history, none of the venerables could match him.

Thus, using his own refinement path attainment, Fang Yuan modified this Immortal Gu recipe to a higher level, it was truly exemplary beyond the limit of the world!

Right now, Fang Yuan had a clear understanding of Heavenly Secret.

This was in essence a heaven path Gu worm, but Fang Yuan had once thought it was wisdom path.

This Immortal Gu was created by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, at that time, he already possessed heaven path attainment.

Afterwards, heavenly secret Immortal Gu was refined by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s split soul, Old Man Yan Shi, it was destroyed on Yi Tian Mountain.

Now, heavenly secret Immortal Gu was refined and owned by Fang Yuan, he had refined it using the refinement path killer move heavenly light ring.

By activating heavenly secret Immortal Gu, one could peek into the intention of heaven’s will, it could allow the Gu Immortal to get an answer from heaven and earth. There were no events in the world that heaven and earth did not know of. It was as the saying goes, except you and me, only heaven and earth know. It could expose the secrets of heaven and earth, even if the Gu Immortal did not have any evidences or clues, it could directly lead them to the truth.

But Heavenly Secret had a weakness when using it.

Out of ten activations, at least eight would fail. Once the activation fails, the user would suffer a backlash of ten to seventy years of lifespan.

This weakness was actually created because people did not understand the true essence of heavenly secret Gu.

Heavenly secret Gu was a heaven path Immortal Gu, a heaven path cultivator needed enough heaven path dao marks to be able to activate it normally.

When activating heavenly secret Gu, not only was immortal essence needed, one also had to expend heaven path immortal materials.

This was like Fang Yuan’s obscured heavenly secret.

Without using heaven path immortal materials, heavenly secret Gu could still be activated successfully, but the price was that the amount of heaven path immortal materials needed for the next activation would be much higher.

This was why backlashes occurred that took the Gu cultivator’s lifespan.

Lifespan Gu was a heaven path Gu worm, the lifespan of Gu cultivators were actually heaven path dao marks.

Looking back at it, Old Man Yan Shi did not truly understand heavenly secret Gu.

But this was a normal thing, paths developed over time, the essence of Gu worms was also explored and understood when using them.

Understanding something required a process that took time.

“With this Immortal Gu recipe, I can now advance my heavenly secret Gu.”

Fang Yuan did not lack heaven path immortal materials.

This was due to the unprecedented appearance of abundant heaven path immortal materials when the two heavens fused together.

Shen Shang, who was in charge of collecting heaven path immortal materials, worked very hard.

Earlier, because Fang Yuan wanted his human path cultivation gains but he only gave a portion of it, he felt very uneasy. For the sake of his clan and himself, he had to work very hard as compensation.

“As long as I refine rank nine heavenly secret Gu, the power of obscured heavenly secret will rise sharply, the two venerables will continue to be deceived.”

“But before that, I need to make another declaration.”

Almost all the human grotto-heavens in the two heavens had joined Heavenly Court, while the variant human grotto-heavens that remained in immemorial white heaven were wiped out by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Regarding this, Fang Yuan had to express himself.

“Fellow cultivators from the five regions and two heavens, I am Great Love Immortal Venerable!”

“Firstly, I want to give my blessings to the human immortals who joined Heavenly Court. Rest assured, I will not pursue the matter. How can I, Great Love Immortal Venerable, do something so petty?”

“Regarding the destruction of the grotto-heavens in immemorial white heaven, I am deeply sorry.”

“Not long ago, I was hit by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s scheme and could not go to deal with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable personally.”

“I have already sent my people to arrange for the retreat of grotto-heavens.”

“No matter what, I believe firmly that this world needs love and peace, war is something that harms all of us. Be it humans or variant humans, or even all life in the world. Why can’t we all live in peace?”

“Because of my beliefs, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable entrusted his inheritance to me. With such an aspiration, the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance was established.”

“It is not a super force meant for world domination, it is the homeland of everyone, it is an attempt at peace for everyone in this world.”

“Because of the actions of the two heavens’ grotto-heavens, I reflected upon myself.”

“I know that I was wrong, I was too restricted by traditions and the mindset passed down in history.”

“Thus, I have decided!”

“From today onwards, the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance is open to everyone, I will abolish all restrictive agreements, everyone is free to join and leave at any time. I, Great Love Immortal Venerable, make this declaration here and now to heaven and earth, I will not pursue the matter if you leave.”

“Even if you do not join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, I will still refine Gu for you, transactions will be done fairly.”

“Members who join my Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance will receive a twenty percent discount for Gu refinement requests!”

“That’s right, twenty percent, a full twenty percent discount, you heard it from me personally!”

“As for how to join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance?”

“Very simple.”

“You just need to pay a membership fee.”

“In fact, even the fee that you pay will be converted into contribution points in the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, in the future when you request to refine Gu, you can use these contribution points in place of Gu refinement materials!”

“Oh Liang Jing Jing, I did not take your light heaven out of greed. I have already converted it into contribution points for you.”

“To the human Gu Immortals who have decided to join Heavenly Court instead, I wish you well, you are welcome to join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance anytime you want.”

“I will not mind your status at all.”

“Remember, the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance promotes freedom, fairness, and peace!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable: ”...”

The two heaven’s human Gu Immortals: ”...”

Treasure yellow heaven: ”...”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2276: Star Constellation, Come Join My Alliance

In the sky above Central Continent, the boundless star array calculation formation could be seen in its initial form.

A large number of Central Continent Gu Immortals were moving around rapidly.

“Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance...” Xiao Suan Zi set up the formation while muttering to himself, thinking hard about the situation.

“Sister Bai Qing, do you think we can join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance?” Not far away, Rainbow Butterfly Immortal Concubine Han Cai Xin transmitted and asked.

Fairy Bai Qing wore a white gown with a green belt around the waist, she smiled plainly upon hearing this: ”Cai Xin, are you interested?”

“How can I not be? A total of twenty percent discount with no restrictions on entering or leaving the alliance, this is such a huge bargain. If I am not from Spirit Butterfly Valley, I will have joined already. Sister, aren’t you moved?” Han Cai Xin asked.

Han Cai Xin had colorful butterflies flying around her as she placed many Gu worms at their designated locations.

Fairy Bai Qing pondered to herself.

Although she was a Gu Immortal of Spirit Affinity House, she had a close relationship with Han Cai Xin, they called each other sisters in private.

She knew the intention behind Han Cai Xin’s question, it was because Fairy Bai Qing’s daughter was Feng Jin Huang, she was close to Heavenly Court as a result.

But Fairy Bai Qing shook her head: ”I can’t be certain about this, maybe we can ask Friend He Feng Yang.”

In the past, Fairy Bai Qing might state her own opinion, but after Fairy Zi Wei and Feng Jiu Ge’s betrayal, Fairy Bai Qing started to act with caution.

“Little Nine, get to work. After arranging this star path Immortal Gu, we will retreat immediately.” Far away, He Feng Yang secretly transmitted to the nine palace crane.

He had had enough!

After Fang Yuan’s second declaration, everyone knew of the great advantage of joining the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, most importantly, they could leave at will and there were no restrictions at all.

He Feng Yang became the target of everyone’s inquiry as they assessed him closely.

He Feng Yang was instructed by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to openly hold an Immortal Gu transaction with Fang Yuan.

Forget about what the Heavenly Court members thought of it, currently, the Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects’ Gu Immortals were all moved.

Who did not lack Immortal Gu?

Especially after the five regions became one and the regional walls vanished, qi tides swept the world while heaven veins and earth veins merged, all sorts of immortal materials appeared like a pouring foundation. Among them, earth path, qi tide, and heaven path were most abundant.

The Gu Immortals had a lot of immortal materials, the transactions in treasure yellow heaven also increased in frequency, but Gu Immortals still had few Immortal Gu.

Everyone was specialized in one field, if one was not a refinement path Gu Immortal, their success rate of refining Immortal Gu was just too low.

From ancient times until now, after three million years of human domination, the pain of Gu refinement had never been lifted, countless heroes and geniuses had sank into this bottomless pit of agony throughout their lives.

Only several refinement path great experts could achieve great success, but their radiance could not reach everyone.

Most Gu Immortals were disheartened by their Gu refinement attempts, but they still had to continue trying regardless.

It was a painful but helpless process.

Now, there was a refinement path venerable, he was not like any other Gu Immortal as well.

He was very special.

He created the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance and publicly held transactions in treasure yellow heaven to refine Immortal Gu for others!

This made all the Gu Immortals who were drowning in despair feel hopeful, this was a type of warmth that entered their hearts.

Most Gu Immortals were moved.

No matter how hypocritical Fang Yuan’s Great Love declaration was, the benefits were still presented before everyone.

But the status of the Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects became their restriction.

These Gu Immortals were mindful of Heavenly Court’s attitude.

Thus, they all looked towards He Feng Yang as an indicator.

He was the first person in Central Continent’s righteous path to make a transaction with Fang Yuan openly, rumors said that this was due to the orders of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

He Feng Yang had received Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s orders, but how could he tell them?

Some things were allowed under the table, but they could not be spoken about. Once these things were exposed, the meaning would change.

Thus, He Feng Yang had to keep a tight lip.

But the more vague he spoke, the more others wanted to know.

For example, Vicious Lightning Fiend came to ask him personally.

Vicious Lightning Fiend had rank seven cultivation level and was a famous expert. Compared to him, He Feng Yang was just a tiny character, but now, because of his transaction with Fang Yuan, He Feng Yang became renowned in Central Continent, everyone paid attention to him.

Towards Vicious Lightning Fiend, He Feng Yang had to lower his head.

Although he spoke vaguely and hinted about the situation, Vicious Lightning Fiend wanted a definitive answer.

He Feng Yang faced immense pressure.

But right at this time, another Gu Immortal approached him.

It was Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei.

This expert had been rank seven for a long time, it was rumored that he was trying to reach rank eight now.

When Feng Jiu Ge was still part of Central Continent’s righteous path, Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei was merely below him.

“Brother He Feng Yang, tell me straightforwardly, can we or can we not do it?!” Shi Lei asked openly.

With this question, He Feng Yang’s pressure became even heavier.

Fairy Bai Qing and Rainbow Butterfly Immortal Concubine also asked him.

“Fairies, I don’t know either.” He Feng Yang was having a terrible headache.

“Brother He Feng Yang, try asking them.” Vicious Lightning Fiend said.

He Feng Yang was near the point of tears: ”Brother, please understand, I am just a helpless subordinate.”

Vicious Lightning Fiend chuckled: ”You’ve known Fang Yuan for a long time, your relationship is not normal, how can I not know that?”

He Feng Yang felt extremely grieved, he almost wanted to scream: ”I am really not close to this demon!”

He Feng Yang was still trying to find excuses to reply to Vicious Lightning Fiend without offending him when suddenly, Shi Lei directly suggested: ”I have a good idea, brother, join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance now, I’m sure Star Constellation Immortal Venerable will not punish you.”

He Feng Yang’s eyes rolled white as he felt like he would rather pass out.

While He Feng Yang was in a tight spot, Liang Jing Jing was also facing a tough predicament.

Her divine sense had already entered treasure yellow heaven to communicate with Fang Yuan’s will.

After knowing that light heaven was converted into a large sum of contribution points in the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, she felt conflicted.

She felt terrible!

This was a huge sum of contribution points, it would hurt her too much to give up on them.

Liang Jing Jing still had two Gu Immortals with her, because Flickering Light grotto-heaven was destroyed, in this situation, she needed cultivation resources badly.

But Heavenly Court would not help her for no reason.

She had to make good use of every cultivation resource, starting all over again.

Thus, the contribution points from giving up light heaven became her greatest temptation.

Liang Jing Jing was not afraid that Fang Yuan would go back on his words.

After all, he had made a public declaration. If Liang Jing Jing decided to join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance again, Fang Yuan would definitely assure her safety in order to show the world that he was serious.

Liang Jing Jing was afraid of Heavenly Court and the other Gu Immortals in the world.

She had just betrayed Fang Yuan to join Heavenly Court, if she joined the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance again at this time, how would Heavenly Court feel? How would the entire world feel about it?

At this moment, Liang Jing Jing could not deny that she was feeling regretful.

Of course, her hatred and anger towards Fang Yuan was still dominant and had not wavered.

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan started to officially refine heavenly secret Gu!

This was his third rank nine Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan was very confident in this Gu refinement attempt compared to the previous two.

Because for this Gu refinement session, he had made the most extensive preparation possible.

While refining Gu, Fang Yuan considered the big picture.

Now that he reduced the criteria for joining the alliance, a huge commotion was caused, the influence would only become deeper later on.

“Lord Great Love Immortal Venerable, I am Shang Tao Fan, may I join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance?” A Southern Border Gu Immortal contacted Fang Yuan’s will in treasure yellow heaven.

Actually, by now, many Gu Immortals had already contacted Fang Yuan’s will, but this was the first person that stated his intention to join.

“You can join after paying a membership fee.” Fang Yuan’s will replied plainly.

A single person’s membership fee and a super force’s membership fee was different.

Shang Tao Fan asked: ”Can I join secretly?”

Fang Yuan’s will nodded in agreement.

“Then I will join the alliance.” Shang Tao Fan replied immediately, he made arrangements with Fang Yuan’s will on where and when to transact the resource point.

Indeed, the membership fees for joining the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance were resource points.

“Shang Tao Fan is a peripheral member of Shang clan, but this time, he was sent by Shang clan as a representative to join my Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.”

Fang Yuan instantly understood that this was Shang clan’s move.

The resource point that he requested for was beyond Shang Tao Fan’s personal capabilities. But during the talk, he agreed upon it immediately, it was evident that Shang clan was backing him in this.

“Although Shang clan does not have Wu clan’s resolve, they are capable of seeing the big picture regardless.”

Fang Yuan smiled.

This was just the start.

Soon, with Fang clan’s agitation and Wu clan’s lead, more and more super forces would try their luck.

These super forces would likely behave like Shang clan by first sending one member over to make use of the benefits of being a member of the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance.

But this was all within Fang Yuan’s plan.

By giving them some benefits first, when these super forces are no longer to live without him, Fang Yuan would start to restrict the number of Immortal Gu each person could request to refine.

Afterwards, these super forces would send even more Gu Immortals to join him, they might even come to him as a whole!

Of course, Fang Yuan would not restrict them, if they wanted to leave the alliance, they could do so at any time!

While refining the Immortal Gu, Fang Yuan used information path methods to contact Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, have you been well?” Fang Yuan greeted with a warm attitude.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable quickly replied: ”I’ve been well, but some accusations came towards me from nowhere, Friend Great Love, do you have anything to tell me regarding this?”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: ”To speak the truth, Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, I am here to lend you a hand. I’ve heard that you are undergoing a huge project recently to create a super immortal formation that covers the entire area of Central Continent.”

“To make such a huge formation, you will need many Immortal Gu. And I, Great Love Immortal Venerable, happen to be specialized in this aspect.”

“Why don’t you join my Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, you will enjoy a twenty percent discount, that will save you a huge sum.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable laughed.

She was laughing from anger.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

2277 Spectral Soul Destroys The Sun

Regarding Fang Yuan's shamelessness, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could only stare in amazement.

She had no choice but to admit that Fang Yuan's second declaration was a brilliant move that dealt with the situation effectively.

Fang Yuan lowered the entry and exit criteria for the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance, he did not consider the loyalty of these members, creating a whole new commotion!

Using benefits to lure them, he displayed the advantage of refinement path, this was something that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could not match, they had no way of stopping him.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was certain: Right now, all the Gu Immortals in the world were greatly moved, even the Gu Immortals of Central Continent's ten great ancient sects were thinking of whether they could join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance now!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could restrain them and not let them join the alliance, but she could not stop them from thinking!

Human minds were fickle!

And in this entire fiasco, what did Fang Yuan lose?

Basically nothing.

In the first place, he had taken in subordinates from Eastern Sea and the two heavens, they had no loyalty towards him.

They had to join him because of the situation, it was not of their own will.

It was unrealistic for Fang Yuan to depend on them if he wanted to attack Central Continent or the other regions. From Qin Ding Ling's success in making these grotto-heaven forces betray him, it showed that none of them had any loyalty to him.

If there was only one venerable in the current world, everyone would be completely at his beck and call. But with the era of four concurrent venerables, as well as the contest of three venerables, these Gu Immortals were able to make a choice.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted coldly.

She knew that Fang Yuan contacted her not to show off or brag about his move.

Fang Yuan's suggestion for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance was a joke. He knew that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would not join the alliance and raise his prestige.

Fang Yuan's true goal was to threaten her.

Currently, Central Continent was assembling a formation of an unprecedented scale.

At this crucial moment, if Great Love Immortal Venerable or Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made their move, it could easily cause the formation to crumble and fail.

"Fang Yuan has little immortal essence, he does not want to come to destroy my star array calculation formation, but he does not want me to succeed either, thus, he contacted me."

Fang Yuan had always been showing an anxious attitude, he used various Immortal Gu to exchange for resource points, it seemed like he was trying to raise the foundation of his immortal aperture to increase his immortal essence production.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made many investigation attempts but similar to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, they could not see the truth that Fang Yuan was concealing.

Thus, all along, she felt that Fang Yuan lacked immortal essence.

This was a deep impression that he imprinted in her.

She was not surprised that Fang Yuan contacted her.

Immediately, she agreed to have a transaction with Fang Yuan, Heavenly Court would pay resource points, Primordial Domain, and immortal materials in exchange for Fang Yuan's refinement of Immortal Gu for them.

The transaction was of a huge scale, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable even emphasized that the transactions would be done in batches, this entire duration would be quite lengthy.

Fang Yuan knew that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was doing this to ensure her formation's safety.

This was something Fang Yuan had expected.

According to the arrangement of this incomplete formation, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was not making an exceptional formation, it was within Fang Yuan's tolerance level.

Fang Yuan gave up on destroying it to obtain a beneficial transaction, this was an assured gain for him.

Especially when he was refining heavenly secret Gu now!

At this juncture, Fang Yuan could not attack abruptly.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not know this.

It was even quite a surprise that she was willing to use Primordial Domain as one of the transaction goods.

Before this, Fang Yuan had always been negotiating with Heavenly Court to buy their Primordial Domain.

a portion of the Primordial Domain now will not allow me to gain any advantage in a short period of 21:32

time."

The Primordial Domain had much greater value to him than Star Constellation Immortal Venerable or Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had never agreed to it, but now, she was willing to give up some of the Primordial Domain to lure Fang Yuan into accepting the transaction.

"It is likely that from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's perspective, I have not taken the Primordial Domain in treasure yellow heaven because I lack methods to retrieve it. Thus, giving me a portion of the Primordial Domain now will not allow me to gain any advantage in a short period of time."

"To think that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable will be the first person to sell me Primordial Domain, I thought that I would have gotten it first through a blood path transaction with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!"

While thinking of this, Fang Yuan multi-tasked and contacted Giant Sun Immortal Venerable: "Giant Sun, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has made such a huge move, the formation she is setting up must be quite important. She is the number one wisdom path cultivator throughout history, with this formation's help, she will be able to scheme in the future without us even knowing it."

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable laughed and quickly replied: "So what do you want to do?"

Fang Yuan said directly: "I am willing to collaborate with you to deal with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and destroy her formation! Wisdom path is not simple, we saw its power in Crazed Demon Cave. We really should not let her create this immortal formation."

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable gave an ambiguous answer: "That is a good suggestion, so, Great Love, have you considered Heavenly Lord Bai Zu's suggestion already?"

Fang Yuan chuckled: "We can always talk about it. I have a lot of blood path research results and also blood path Immortal Gu."

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had always wanted to buy Fang Yuan's blood path resources, now that Fang Yuan gave in, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled and immediately contacted Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

"Heaven Refining Demon Venerable just contacted me, he wants us to attack your formation together. What do you think about that?" Giant Sun Immortal Venerable immediately exposed Fang Yuan.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted coldly to herself, she used a similar method to make a transaction with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

The three venerables continued to negotiate and plot against each other.

As a wisdom path Gu cultivator, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was superior to the others, she vaguely held the upper hand.

Eventually, she gave up some benefits to temporarily appease Fang Yuan and Giant Sun.

"I finally stabilized these two, but if the formation I am making is any stronger, this situation will be harder to deal with."

It was not that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable lacked a better formation, but she could not create it now.

If she tried, the two venerables would try to destroy it.

There would be no way of talking them out of it.

Star array calculation formation was specially chosen by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable as it did not cross their limits. The two venerables were willing to let her create it in exchange for some personal benefits.

This was the precise control of the situation that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had in this contest of three venerables.

"Of course, the most important thing is still Spectral Soul Demon Venerable." Star Constellation Immortal Venerable thought to herself: "The reason why both venerables are willing to watch on the fence is primarily because of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable."

Compared to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's formation was nothing outstanding!

The three venerables were paying close attention to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's actions.

Like what they expected, after getting rid of the white heaven grotto-heavens that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable could sense, he went after the sun!

Within the fused two heavens, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable charged towards the sun like a mountain-like shadowy figure.

This scene was seen through Fang Yuan's investigative method, he pondered: "Back then, I used up white heaven's heavenly spirit, causing Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to be unable to control immemorial white heaven directly. He has only devoured black heaven's heavenly spirit, so he can only devour immemorial white heaven through it all being engulfed by immemorial black heaven!"

"Right now, among the two heavens' grotto-heavens, those from white heaven are basically all destroyed. The heaven vein nodes that are contained within these grotto-heavens have all been destroyed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable."

"As for Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court, they have tight defenses that prevent Spectral Soul Demon Venerable from detecting them in his current state."

"Thus, his only target now is the sun!"

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable charged towards the sun, but this attempt was different from before, he shouted and roared with unprecedented determination and killing intent.

However, the closer he got to the sun, the more obstruction he felt from the massive number of fire path and light path dao marks.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's body started to melt like a candle, tiny flames could be seen appearing on his entire body.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable looked at the immemorial two heavens while paying close attention to this situation, he evaluated internally: "The sun has existed since immemorial times, it has vast and boundless power. It is the largest heaven vein node in the entire world, it is also the greatest light vein and fire vein node in the two heavens."

"Even in my previous life, when I was at my strongest, I could not deal with the sun easily. Now that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable has lost his mind, it will be even harder for him to deal with it."

When Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was alive back then, he was invincible in the world, he could naturally destroy the sun.

But doing that had no advantage to him, it was even very harmful to the living beings of the world.

Thus, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not do that.

Eventually, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable charged into the sun, countless black pillar-like arms stretched out and grabbed at it, his colossal body slammed into the sun and caused flames to flicker.

At the same time, he suffered severe injuries.

His body melted rapidly as a vast number of light path and fire path dao marks were carved on him.

All of his accumulated soul path dao marks were rapidly breaking apart!

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's three heads were screaming out in pain, his eyes became filled with anger and hatred.

Following his instincts, he activated a defensive killer move, a layer of eerie light covered his whole body, black smoke gushed out fiercely and resisted the immense power of the sun.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable managed to control the situation for now.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable stayed in Embroidered Tower as she looked out of the window.

"The sun is a congregation of heaven path, light path, and fire path dao marks, it is tangible but not solid. It can be seen as a tribulation that has been ongoing for countless years, it had started accumulating since the start of the world. Thus, even though it is not a chaotic disaster, it is hard to deal with even for a venerable."

"By attacking the sun, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable will likely end up in a bad state alongside it. By then, it will be time to make my move."

"If I can eliminate Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, it will benefit Heavenly Court greatly. By then, I can even give in to the other two venerables to a greater extent."

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable understood when to yield and when not to.

For Heavenly Court, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was a huge threat.

Because Heavenly Court was situated in immemorial white heaven, it was the largest heaven vein node in the world.

It was just that Heavenly Court was concealed by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's wisdom path methods, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable could not detect it.

But right at this moment, there was an abrupt change!

A hill-like beast escaped in fear while carrying a trace of the aura of a rank nine Immortal Gu.

"There is actually a legendary immemorial desolate beast hiding inside the sun? It has a rank nine Immortal Gu?" Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was shook.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's eyes widened: "No, not just one rank nine Immortal Gu, it has another one!"

The three venerables observed closely, the wild rank nine fire Gu within the sun was no longer concealed.

After a few breaths of time, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable arrived at the center of the sun, the remaining tens of arms stretched out and grabbed fire Gu despite the intense flames.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's left head opened its mouth and instantly devoured fire Gu.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable cried out in agony.

His left head was burning like a flame pillar.

Without the support of the two Gu, the sun exploded with a loud sound that spread throughout the entire world.

At this moment, all lifeforms in the world looked up, they had fearful expressions as they witnessed the sun turning into countless lumps of light and fire, breaking up and spreading throughout heaven and earth.

The sun — was destroyed!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2278: Pursuing the Rank Nine Immortal Gu

This change had occurred too quickly.

Even the three venerables could not take action in time.

Their original plan was to wait for Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to go down with the sun, until they were both greatly weakened. Because Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was following his instincts now, he would also want to survive naturally. Thus, if he got badly injured, he would escape.

At this time, the three venerables would target the greatly weakened Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

In the contest of three venerables, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was a huge uncertainty. There was still a chance of him regaining his sanity, thus, the three venerables were in agreement that this uncertainty should be killed first.

Like during the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable decided to cooperate to kill all the pseudo venerables first.

But out of their expectations, the sun actually exploded first.

Different from what everyone thought, the sun actually contained two rank nine Immortal Gu and one mysterious legendary immemorial desolate beast.

The sun’s foundation far exceeded their expectations.

With this foundation and the fact that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was not sane, it should be very hard to deal with, he would be the one to escape first.

But the issue was that the legendary immemorial desolate beast that hid inside the sun got shocked and escaped.

Not only did it run away, it even brought a rank nine Immortal Gu with it.

Once this Immortal Gu was taken, the sun lacked a core and its stable condition quickly destabilized spontaneous.

“No matter how strong a Gu house is, it can still be easily broken from the inside.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sighed as she thought of a logic in the Gu world.

This abrupt change disrupted her plan.

Among the three venerables, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was the one who wanted to kill Spectral Soul Demon Venerable the most.

Because she understood the threat that he held towards Heavenly Court!

Originally, she wanted to give in and accept some losses to lure the other two venerables into attacking Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and killing him. But to think that this happened.

Fire Gu was a legendary Immortal Gu recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, it was rank nine but got devoured by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Forget about that for now, but the mysterious legendary immemorial desolate beast also brought away a rank nine Immortal Gu.

It had to be pursued.

A rank nine Immortal Gu was concerned, while a legendary immemorial beast was not hard to deal with for a venerable.

Because it was too easy to succeed, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had to race against time now.

There were three venerables in the world, she did not want the Immortal Gu to end up with the other venerables.

“Be careful, fire is raining down like a storm.” Fairy Bai Qing was the first to alert the others.

“Oh no, what do we do?” Rainbow Butterfly Immortal Concubine looked at the sky and saw countless flames descending, she felt lost and helpless.

These flames were too high ranked.

Bright light glorious ring fire made up most of these flames, this was the heaven flame of the three flames in the world, it was a rank nine fire path immortal material!

One had to be a rank eight fire path great expert at least to deal with it.

But in the sky above Central Continent, there was a colossal immortal formation.

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals wanted to defend the formation so they had to deal with these flames.

“Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, please give us the orders.” Shi Lei shouted loudly.

Star Constellation sighed softly as she left behind her will and some rank nine immortal essence, controlling Embroidered Tower to deal with the situation here.

But her main body had left already, heading for the two heavens.

Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan was currently using investigative methods to observe the five regions.

“With the collapse of the sun, countless immortal materials are scattered everywhere. Among them, the light path resources are mostly flying around in the two heavens while the fire path resources are scattered onto the five regions.”

“Fire rain is most common in Western Desert while least common in Eastern Sea.”

The reason was simple.

Conflict of dao marks.

In the five regions, Eastern Sea had the most water path dao marks, while Western Desert had the most fire path dao marks. Thus, the fire rain preferred to target Western Desert instead.

“These flames are top tier resources, if they are gathered to a certain size, they can be made into fire path resource points.”

“Especially the bright light glorious ring fire, this rank nine immortal material is extremely rare and barely found anywhere. It is a prime opportunity to gain a huge amount of it now, I need to make use of this.”

Fang Yuan immediately ordered his Gu Immortals to head to various locations to collect the fire path resources.

But regrettably, he had the most water path Gu Immortals and only a few fire path Gu Immortals, not to mention rank eight fire path cultivators.

Regarding this, Fang Yuan used his will in treasure yellow heaven to make an announcement:

“Good news, good news! The Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance is holding an event!”

“Anyone who collects enough fire path immortal materials can exchange them with us for alliance contribution points.”

“If you collect enough alliance contribution points, you will be able to join the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance officially, it will not cost you resource points!”

“After joining the alliance, you will also retain the contribution points from exchanging immortal materials.”

Fang Yuan’s will tossed out a list that wrote the details of each exchange clearly. Bright light glorious ring fire was listed at the top, it could exchange for the most contribution points.

The Gu Immortals of the world heard the announcement and instantly became moved.

Originally, joining the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance required resource points, but now, all they had to do was to collect fire path immortal materials.

For the bulk of the Gu Immortals, the entry requirement fell once again.

Fang Yuan’s will added: ”This event will only last for a short while, the fastest ones will gain the most, once I collect enough fire path immortal materials, this event will end immediately.”

“Fire path immortal material? What a pity, other than the bright light glorious ring fire, if I go to collect the other fire path immortal materials, the gains will be lower than just collecting heaven path immortal materials.” In the two heavens, Shen Shang was busy scavenging for resources.

“Are we not pursuing Fang clan anymore?”

“For what? Let Heavenly Court’s Zhou Xiong Xin do it. Let’s quickly collect these fire path immortal materials, we can use some ourselves while selling the rest to Great Love Immortal Venerable. This opportunity will not knock twice!”

More and more Gu Immortals in Western Desert started to move out.

Southern Border.

Wu Yong led Wu clan’s Gu Immortals as they started to move around with lightning speed.

Benefits tempted everyone, a large number of Gu Immortals in the five regions were mobilized by Fang Yuan as a result.

As for Fang Yuan, he personally headed into the two heavens.

The destruction of the sun also affected his plan. Originally, he wanted to wait for Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and the sun to both get weakened. If his refinement of heavenly secret Gu succeeded in time, he would be able to gain some benefits from Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

But now, he had to refine heavenly secret Gu while keeping up with the facade.

Thus, he had to enter the two heavens and pretend that he was trying to go after the rank nine Immortal Gu.

This was the normal reaction and behavior that he should have.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable were brilliant people, Fang Yuan had to do this to avoid exposing himself.

After the sun was destroyed, the five regions became dim.

Mortal Gu Masters were fearful and shocked while other lifeforms also panicked, the crying and growling of beasts and birds could be heard everywhere.

This was an unprecedented change!

A large scale panic was unavoidable.

Starlight flickered randomly as a legendary immemorial desolate beast charged out while bathed in blood.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was the first to arrive, she waved her hand as the blood and scales that were left in the air gathered in her hands.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable quickly made deductions with her wisdom path immortal killer move.

“This is You Tian Guang?!” She quickly deduced the identity of this legendary immemorial beast, she felt a little shocked.

You Tian Guang and Zuo Ye Hui had once terrorized the five regions, they whipped up a bloody storm. They were extremely crafty, they worked together and whenever a Demon Venerable or Immortal Venerable was alive, they would hide and not show up.

But eventually, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable brought peace to the world and killed You Tian Guang.

This was recorded in history.

“But You Tian Guang is actually alive, did it fake its death?”

“Could it fake its death in front of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable? Or does that mean... this is part of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangement?”

At this moment, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable thought of many things.

The situation had gotten quite mysterious and complex.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable pursued the beast while analyzing to herself.

The more she thought about it, the more she felt that this was Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s move!

According to the situation in Crazed Demon Cave, originally, once Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable revived, he would become a heaven path venerable. That would allow him to gain an immense advantage in the two heavens. Especially after he refines all the heaven path dao marks in the two heavens, he would be able to control all the heaven vein nodes.

By then, Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven would be greatly threatened by him!

The sun was also a heaven vein node.

Back then, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable intentionally placed You Tian Guang inside the sun as an arrangement for him to capture the sun in the future.

“Thankfully, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable is dead now. From this aspect, I should thank Fang Yuan instead?” The moment Star Constellation Immortal Venerable thought of Fang Yuan, he appeared before her.

“Friend Star Constellation, we meet again.” Fang Yuan smiled as he greeted.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted coldly internally but she showed a kind smile on her face, her demeanor was extremely elegant.

The two had a warm attitude but their movements did not slow down, instead, they moved even faster.

The two venerables were guarded against each other as they attacked You Tian Guang.

This You Tian Guang had human form, its back was bent and its forearms were long, there was a horn on its head and its body was covered in scales that resembled countless mirrors that reflected light in all directions.

Under the pursuit of both venerables, You Tian Guang actually managed to escape time and again.

“As I expected, You Tian Guang brought away rank nine light Gu! It has not been refined yet, this is still a wild Immortal Gu.” Fang Yuan noticed the peculiarity.

He sighed internally.

Inside sovereign immortal aperture, the refinement of heavenly secret Immortal Gu had reached a crucial moment.

He did not want to go after this rank nine light Gu.

If he obtained it, the two venerables would attack him in a frenzy to try and snatch it.

After all, a rank nine Immortal Gu was able to break the balance between the three venerables!

Nobody wanted this Immortal Gu to end up in another’s hands.

But Fang Yuan had to say what he had to say: ”You Tian Guang, I am best friends with your master Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. After he died, he gave his inheritance to me but did not have time to tell me about you. Quickly leave with me, I will ensure your safety!”

You Tian Guang coughed out blood while shouting: ”That old bastard Paradise Earth, I was almost beaten to death by him, it took all my effort to hide in the sun to recuperate. I only managed to recover a little after sleeping for so many years. He did this to me, I will definitely not submit to you!”

“That means this is not Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable’s arrangement?” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was slightly stunned, she could sense You Tian Guang’s emotions, it was not lying.

“You Tian Guang was able to escape by faking death in front of Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable, it is quite amazing.” Light Emperor who was hiding nearby thought to himself.

He was hiding inside a black cloud, at this moment, he did not want to dazzle anyone.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2279: Retaliation of Three Venerables’ Luck

Immortal killer move — Sword Tongue Dragon Soul.

Fang Yuan’s body shook slightly as a hundred evil dragons appeared around him instantly.

The evil dragons danced and paraded, they gathered into a group and encircled You Tian Guang.

He had used this compound killer move before, if he used it against Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, there would be a risk of it getting unraveled or countered. But now, Fang Yuan used it to trap You Tian Guang.

The evil dragons attacked You Tian Guang from all directions, they bit, swung their tails, stabbed with their horns, or used their claws, some even shot out sharp sword qi with their tongues...

In this dangerous situation, You Tian Guang erupted with the strength of a legendary immemorial beast.

It waved its hands and its body moved like lightning, the horn on its head was extremely sharp, in just a whole, three evil dragons were sliced in half.

After a lot of effort, it managed to kill several evil dragons, but dragon souls came out of them to modify the battlefield.

The more evil dragons that died, the more dragon souls that gathered, the battlefield was filled with soul path dao marks that made the dragon souls even stronger!

The situation was increasingly dangerous, You Tian Guang tried to charge out from different directions as it fought a bloody battle, but it could not break free from the evil dragons.

Sensing the danger that its host was in, the wild rank nine light Gu in You Tian Guang’s body burst out with its power again.

A piercing light shone on the entire battlefield, it seemingly tried to escape with You Tian Guang by turning it into a ray of light.

Earlier, when Fang Yuan and Star Constellation chased after You Tian Guang, this was the move that caused them to fail in capturing it multiple times.

But now, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was already prepared.

Starlight specks flew out and surrounded You Tian Guang’s body.

The wild rank nine light Gu burst out with power but the starlight specks suppressed most of its strength, it failed to escape with You Tian Guang but caused it to suffer huge injuries instead.

Rank nine light Gu was a wild Gu, it was not in sync with You Tian Guang, thus, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable found its weakness.

But this was normal.

Even though You Tian Guang and light Gu had been together for a long time, it had spent most of the time sleeping.

Now that it was awake, with just rank eight cultivation level, it could not refine a wild rank nine Immortal Gu.

Back then, even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable who had become venerable spent a hundred years to refine the wild rank nine wisdom Gu.

As for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he attempted to refine rank nine love Gu and failed in the end.

You Tian Guang’s blood spewed out like a geyser, it fell into despair.

The enemies were too powerful, it had suffered huge injuries that caused it to become even slower than before.

But it still struggled.

For the meager hope in its heart that wanted to escape, it resisted!

“Don’t come here, don’t come here...” Light Emperor hid in the black cloud and watched as You Tian Guang approached him, he became flustered and anxious.

You Tian Guang coincidentally escape in the direction that led to him.

“Is this my so-called fortuitous encounter?” Light Emperor sudden shook as he recalled Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s words.

He immediately understood that his fortuitous encounter was rank nine light Gu, but...

“Father, this is too much!” Light Emperor glanced at Fang Yuan and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, he did not even dare to look at them for more than a moment in fear that they would notice him.

Light Emperor’s bald head almost wanted to hide in his chest.

All along, his body had been emitting light, but now, he kept the light concealed as only a thin halo was left.

But You Tian Guang still came in his direction at full speed.

At this moment, Light Emperor could feel nothing but hatred towards this huge fortuitous encounter!

He did not know that Fang Yuan was feeling the same.

“The timing is not right. If this happened after I refined heavenly secret Gu, I will be able to use my full strength to capture the wild light Gu!”

Fang Yuan attacked and chased You Tian Guang while secretly refining heavenly secret Gu.

Thankfully, he spent a lot of effort to modify heavenly secret Immortal Gu’s recipe.

Using Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, and with the help of the hairy man Gu Immortals, heavenly secret Gu’s refinement proceeded without a hitch.

“The following is the most difficult part. But at this time, I need to chase after that rank nine light Gu! Sigh...” Fang Yuan sighed to himself.

He did not feel much attraction to rank nine light Gu.

Rank nine Heavenly secret Gu had far greater value to Fang Yuan than light Gu.

But the situation had progressed to this stage, Fang Yuan had to show that he was determined to take the Immortal Gu for himself.

“Fate Gu has been destroyed, this situation should have been caused by the contest of luck between the other three venerables and myself.” Fang Yuan had a vague comprehension.

Once Fang Yuan refined heavenly secret Gu successfully, his strength would grow immensely, the benefits would not just be limited to obscured heavenly secret, there were other advantages too.

But in that case, Fang Yuan’s advantage would be too huge.

Precisely so, the other three venerables were threatened by Fang Yuan. Although they did not notice it, their luck had already started to retaliate.

The luck of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable mixed together and attacked Fang Yuan in unison.

Precisely so, at the crucial moment of refining heavenly secret Gu, Fang Yuan faced such a huge difficulty and uncertainty.

“In this situation with the existence of four venerables and contest of three venerables, the current timing is a crucial turning point! Sovereign immortal aperture, rank nine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, rank nine advance refinement Immortal Gu, my cultivation of refinement path and heaven path, as well as other elements like obscured heavenly secret have given me a huge advantage that is deeply hidden, my luck is comparable to all three of them together.”

This comparison was under the situation where the three venerables did not know the truth. because they canceled out a portion of each other’s luck, this allowed Fang Yuan to match them evenly.

Once the venerables understood the situation and found out the truth, they would cooperate with each other and cause this cancellation to be smaller. By then, their collective luck would surpass Fang Yuan.

“If I get past this difficulty without the three of them finding out the truth, after gaining rank nine heavenly secret Immortal Gu, my luck will be higher than the three of them combined. After a qualitative change, when I refine other rank nine Immortal Gu in the future, I will no longer face such a hurdle.”

After making an analysis, Fang Yuan understood that this was a crucial fight.

If it were to be said that becoming a refinement path venerable was the foundation to resisting the other venerables.

Then after refining rank nine Heavenly Essence Treasure Imperial Lotus, Fang Yuan shortened the gap between himself and the venerables.

After refining rank nine advance refinement Gu, the gap was shortened even further, it even deepened Fang Yuan’s advantage in refinement path.

And now, if he refined rank nine heavenly secret Gu, it would create the turning point in the contest of three venerables!

Once this crucial point was passed, Fang Yuan would surpass the other venerables, he would have a true advantage against them.

As star fog appeared, You Tian Guang's path was completely blocked.

Evidently, this was an incomplete battlefield killer move.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable wanted to use this battlefield killer move to trap You Tian Guang and the wild rank nine light Gu before dealing with them.

Fang Yuan had not seen Star Constellation Immortal Venerable use a battlefield killer move before, he was hesitant now.

Should he try to destroy it now?

It was not something that he could not tolerate for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to obtain the wild rank nine light Gu.

It was very difficult to refine rank nine light Gu, while Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not cultivate light path. After getting it, during the period that she tries to refine it, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's positive luck would fall greatly.

From the perspective of the situation, in order to prevent Fang Yuan from ruining her plan, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would definitely give up more benefits to Fang Yuan.

This was very beneficial to Fang Yuan.

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan activated his killer move.

Immortal killer move — Seven Kills Rainbow!

Metal path's yellow light, wood path's jade-green light, water path's light blue hue, fire path's red light, earth path's brown light, wind path's green radiance, and lightning path's deep blue light; seven lights from these seven paths mixed together and shot forward in a drill shape towards You Tian Guang.

You Tian Guang immediately sensed fatal danger.

If he was hit by this move, it would definitely perish, alongside the rank nine light Gu in its body.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was guarded against Fang Yuan.

"What are you trying to do?!" Star Constellation Immortal Venerable called out as starlight flew out, forming a veil made of stardust, it was like a wall between heaven and earth, blocking Fang Yuan's seven kills rainbow.

Fang Yuan's mind was also running out of thoughts, he had to refine heavenly secret Gu while maintaining his defensive killer moves and movement killer moves. Earlier, he even had to use an offensive killer move like seven kills rainbow forcefully.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly but did not show any weakness: ”Friend Star Constellation, even if you want to get rank nine light Gu, do you think it will be this easy?”

On the outside, Fang Yuan showed an attitude of relentlessness, he was prepared to fight to the end. But the truth was, he had already made up his mind to destroy this wild light Gu, if that failed, so be it if Star Constellation Immortal Venerable got the Gu.

In Fang Yuan’s condition, he could not obtain the Gu even if he tried. The priority was to destroy rank nine light Gu, followed by letting Star Constellation Immortal Venerable have it, the worst case was for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to get it.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable were not light path Gu cultivators, but if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable got this rank nine light Gu, his own luck would grow explosively.

That was extremely useful for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, with his attainment in luck path, he would become much stronger.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sighed: ”Friend Fang Yuan, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable has not arrived yet, are we really going to fight now?”

Fang Yuan smiled coldly: ”Why not? If I wait any further, aren’t you going to obtain the rank nine Immortal Gu already?”

Fang Yuan and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable went into a standoff.

Fang Yuan targeted the incomplete star fog battlefield killer move occasionally, while attacking You Tian Guang and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable respectively at other times.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was worthy of being a wisdom path venerable, her mind was filled with thoughts, she managed to handle all the various aspects and keep her control over the situation.

Although the situation was in a deadlock, it was clearly tilting towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

During the contest of the venerables, You Tian Guang had already gotten severely injured, rank nine light Gu tried many attempts to escape with it but Star Constellation Immortal Venerable blocked it each time.

Seeing that the star fog was about to gather into a complete battlefield killer move, Light Emperor could not wait anymore.

“Dazzle them!” He attacked abruptly using his strongest method.

Blinding white light filled the entire battlefield, Light Emperor used all his effort to create a small opening in the star fog.

“Escape, escape, escape!” Light Emperor desperately charged towards the exit, he did not have the energy to care about the rank nine Immortal Gu.

He had waited for a long time before Fang Yuan weakened the star fog battlefield sufficiently without Star Constellation Immortal Venerable having the time to replenish it. Thus, he could make an opening in this battlefield.

If he waited any longer and the star fog battlefield formed completely, he would have no chance of escaping anymore.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2280: Fang Yuan Takes A Risk

The appearance of Light Emperor stunned Fang Yuan and Star Constellation.

They did not expect that someone would be able to hide from right under their noses.

“This person has a profound luck path method on him, he must be related to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s pupils shrunk as the star fog quickly gathered.

Fang Yuan also made his move as he attacked Light Emperor.

Light Emperor’s eyes were staring wide open as he screamed internally: ”What does this have to do with me?! Why are they attacking me, I was just passing by!”

But immediately after, he turned around and saw that wild rank nine light Gu shining in white light, as it came towards him with You Tian Guang.

“I...” Light Emperor wanted to cry, he understood the situation now.

The wild rank nine light Gu had an intense instinct for survival, it stayed with You Tian Guang because this legendary immemorial beast had a lot of light path dao marks that made it have a familiar feeling, there was also the fact that You Tian Guang was not strong enough to refine it.

But in the hands of a venerable, the situation would be different!

Light Emperor opened the only crack in the star fog, he was also a light path cultivator who only had rank eight aura, the wild light Gu naturally came to him as an avenue of survival.

“Father, save me!” At the moment of life and death, Light Emperor shouted loudly.

“Son, don’t worry.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable flew towards them from afar, he was getting closer rapidly.

Before he arrived, his killer move had already appeared, blocking Fang Yuan’s offensive method.

Fang Yuan did not have enough thoughts now, his offensive methods were not as agile as usual, otherwise, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would not have such an easy time blocking him.

Of course, this was not strange in the eyes of the two venerables.

In this fight between three venerables, it was understandable for Fang Yuan to save his thoughts in case of emergencies.

After all, they thought that he had the least immortal essence.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted coldly, she had already recognized Light Emperor now, she immediately used the star fog to pursue him and shorten the distance between them.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable activated his killer move again, golden aurora appeared behind Light Emperor and blocked the star fog.

“Could I have escaped on my own? I’m afraid that I would have to use rank nine light Gu’s power to get away from them! Oh father, you almost did me in.”

Light Emperor was a resolute person, thinking of this, he gritted his teeth and turned around, grabbing at You Tian Guang.

“If you don’t want to die, come with me!” Light Emperor shouted as he brought You Tian Guang and the wild light Gu with him, escaping towards Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

You Tian Guang was on the brink of death, it was currently in a stupor and unable to resist as Light Emperor brought it away with him.

Furthermore, because they were both light path cultivators, they were naturally close.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable stomped her feet as her body flew forward like a ray of starlight. Midway, she tossed with her hand, Star Constellation Chessboard flew out.

At the other end, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable approached and opened his immortal aperture’s entrance, Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace flew out.

Star Constellation Chessboard had countless pieces shooting out like a storm.

Luck Suppression Heavenly Palace sent out a wave-like golden aurora that shielded Light Emperor and prevented him from getting killed by those pieces.

But a large number of pieces still moved agilely as they attacked him.

Light Emperor struggled intensely, his expression was malevolent.

Facing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s attacks, he dodged from side to side, when he could not evade some pieces, he would endure the impact.

Thankfully, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s attack was already weakened by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s golden aurora to a large extent. Light Emperor had pseudo venerable battle strength after all, he only suffered heavy injuries with blood flowing out of his mouth and nose, but his speed remained the same.

“Persevere!” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shouted, this situation was quite urgent, his son’s life was at stake, he used his full strength as a result.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gritted her teeth, she felt immense pressure from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable who was using his full strength.

Seeing that Light Emperor was about to escape, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable fought intensely while shouting at Fang Yuan: ”Great Love Immortal Venerable, how long are you going to continue watching?!”

Fang Yuan had only made some moves after Giant Sun Immortal Venerable appeared, he did not use his full strength.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was quite displeased with this.

Fang Yuan holding back meant a huge threat to her.

If Fang Yuan and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable were colluding now in a set up against Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, she could not use her full strength against Giant Sun, otherwise, Fang Yuan would sneak attack her while she was unguarded.

Fang Yuan was feeling quite troubled now.

He had already done his best!

The refinement of heavenly secret Gu had reached the most difficult part, he had to use a lot of thoughts and concentration on it.

Fang Yuan excelled in the defensive aspect of wisdom path, in terms of thought production, he could not match Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. But his compound killer moves had a huge requirement for the number of thoughts.

“Persevere.” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth while urging himself on.

“Giant Sun, take this!” At the same time, Fang Yuan shouted as he flew towards Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Fang Yuan did not use any offensive method, he only adjusted the movement killer move that he had been maintaining.

But simply this small movement made Star Constellation Immortal Venerable let out a sigh of relief, while Giant Sun Immortal Venerable became alerted.

This was because Fang Yuan went away from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and approached Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, it reduced her wariness towards him.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable also had to save his son from two venerables, he felt immense pressure.

He shouted loudly and activated more trump card killer moves.

For example, this current method — Poor Luck Silver Hook!

Fang Yuan’s pupils contracted as he sensed a killer move approaching, the wind-light-fire-lightning wheels below his feet rotated rapidly as he instantly left the area.

At the next moment, a pure silver curved hook appeared at the spot that he was previously in.

The hook only appeared for a moment before vanishing again.

It was so fast it seemed like an illusion.

Fang Yuan continued to move around like a phantom, he did not stay at the same spot for more than a breath of time.

Meanwhile, the silver hook continued to appear at the spots he went to, only mere moments away from actually hitting him.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was angry that Fang Yuan was still holding back now. He had Cooking Luck Pot’s protection and could resist the silver hook to attack Light Emperor, but he chose to dodge the attacks, which was what Giant Sun Immortal Venerable wanted to see because it made Fang Yuan easier to deal with.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not know about Fang Yuan’s true circumstances after all.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable has never used this luck path killer move before, if I get hit by it, my luck will fall greatly. Right now, with the retaliation of all three venerables’ luck, it would be a detrimental blow to me!”

Fang Yuan had a clear observation of the situation.

He could not use offensive methods now because most of his attention was focused on the refinement of heavenly secret Gu.

But the two venerables were hard to deceive, he was having a hard time putting up this show!

Fang Yuan used various methods and overworked his mind, but his thoughts were still falling to a dangerous level.

Heavenly secret Gu’s refinement used too many of his thoughts, while this battle was also quite dangerous.

Fang Yuan did not even want to touch the silver hook.

It was as if he was walking on a tightrope now!

If he was careless, he would fall to a miserable death.

At this time, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable attacked Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, relieving some of the pressure off Fang Yuan.

Light Emperor was already very close to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable wanted to attack him but Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did everything to stop her.

“Fang Yuan!” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable shouted.

“I’ll take a gamble!” Fang Yuan’s eyes shone brightly as he expended nearly all his thoughts to take a risk and activate reverse flow protection seal.

Fang Yuan flew forward with reverse flow protection seal like an eagle diving for its food, he went towards Light Emperor with an explosive sound.

“Father, save me!” Light Emperor was shocked by Fang Yuan’s momentum, he screamed for help.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable endured Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s attacks forcefully and activated a killer move, golden light shot towards Fang Yuan like a huge pillar.

Fang Yuan did not dodge but approached Light Emperor instead.

“Trying to snatch an Immortal Gu in front of me? Die!” Fang Yuan snickered with barely any thoughts left in his mind.

Light Emperor stared with wide eyes in terror, he gritted his teeth as his body turned stiff as a rock.

At the crucial moment, the wild rank nine light Gu burst out with power.

Blinding white light flashed in the entire battlefield.

Fang Yuan was first hit by the white light before the golden pillar landed on him, he crashed towards the ground like a falling meteor.

Thoughts were produced in his mind and used in the Gu refinement, as well as sustaining his defensive killer move, he could not even use them to think.

After a few breaths of time, reverse flow protection seal started to become unstable.

If this move broke now, not only would Fang Yuan suffer huge backlash, the other venerables would also notice his issue!

Fang Yuan was in critical danger now, if the venerables attacked him, he would have no way to resist.

But this was all within Fang Yuan’s plan.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable were fighting over rank nine light Gu, they could not afford to care about Fang Yuan.

With Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s protection, Light Emperor finally arrived at his father’s location.

Because Star Constellation Immortal Venerable attacked furiously, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable suffered considerable injuries, there was already blood flowing out of his mouth.

The two venerables faced off with sharp gazes, they collided in the air, both sides were getting serious.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable gritted his teeth but did not make any rash move.

He wanted to open his immortal aperture’s entrance to put Light Emperor, the fainted You Tian Guang, and wild rank nine light Gu into his rank nine immortal aperture.

But he knew that he could not do something like that now.

As time passed, inside the sovereign immortal aperture, in Four Elements Square

Regret Blood Refinement Pool, the hairy man Gu Immortals were cheering loudly.

The toughest step of refining heavenly secret Gu was over, now, the refinement difficulty fell sharply, it was a smooth journey ahead.

The number of thoughts needed fell as well, Fang Yuan soon had enough thoughts to think.

He immediately realized that he was falling, he stabilized his body and flew towards Giant Sun Immortal Venerable again.

When he saw that Light Emperor was standing beside Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he became anxious and shouted: ”We cannot let Giant Sun Immortal Venerable get rank nine light Gu! In the worst case, we need to destroy it.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable snorted coldly, he looked at Fang Yuan with deep killing intent: ”Go ahead and attack, I will make sure you pay a painful price.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was silent.

Fang Yuan hastened the refinement of heavenly secret Immortal Gu while looking at Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, shouting with all his might: ”Star Constellation, this is a rank nine Immortal Gu!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had a cold expression, she was very unhappy with Fang Yuan: ”If you had used your full strength, would we be in this situation?”

Chapter 2281: Spectral Soul’s Anguished Cry

Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered with uncertainty and his expression was grim: ”I did not expect that light Gu would erupt with an attack that cooperated with the golden pillar so perfectly!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled smugly: ”My soft gold crashing pillar was designed to counter your reverse flow protection seal, how does it feel?”

Fang Yuan nodded: ”This move can conceal its strength and unleash a mystical collision force on reverse flow protection seal to penetrate the Reverse Flow River, interrupting with the entire operation of the killer move.”

“But it is a pity that this move has not been completed yet. Otherwise, it would not have been resolved by me so easily.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable nodded, he felt that this was a small pity, he could have given up on Light Emperor to save this killer move for the future to deal with Fang Yuan.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would not do that.

He would rather expose it to save his eldest son.

“I was too rash, to think that a rank nine Immortal Gu would be involved.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable said to Light Emperor.

“Father, what’s the point of saying that now? We need to find a way to flee! My hairs are all standing on end now!” Light Emperor replied quickly, although he had returned to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s side, the battle was still ongoing, he was very alert.

“Didn’t you create your own light body inheritance, your entire body is covered in light path dao marks, how can you have body hair?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable asked in a peculiar tone.

Light Emperor rolled his eyes and retorted: ”Father, now is not the time for this! The situation is dire, we need to find a way to escape.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable suddenly laughed out loud: ”Then we will leave!”

Saying so, he held Light Emperor and You Tian Guang in both hands respectively and rapidly made his move.

“You want to leave? Not so easy!”

“Giant Sun, leave the Immortal Gu behind.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Great Love Immortal Venerable attacked at the same time.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable roared and exchanged blows with the two venerables, even parts of the two heavens broke into fragments.

At the center of the explosion, under the terrifying force of the killer moves, nothing remained.

Even the fused immemorial two heavens was destroyed, turning into an area of void.

At the next moment, the surrounding fragments of the two heavens came rushing in like tidal waves, filling up the void.

Using this chance, a golden path extended over from deep within Northern Plains.

It was Calamity Luck Altar’s strongest method — Luck Changing Golden Light Path!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable purposely left Calamity Luck Altar in Longevity Heaven along with his own will and rank nine immortal essence.

Thus, using the vast number of Longevity Heaven’s luck path dao marks, the power of luck changing golden light path rose explosively, it extended from Northern Plains to the battlefield.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable brought Light Emperor and You Tian Guang onto this path, their speed rose immensely, they went far away in just a moment.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Great Love Immortal Venerable did not let them off.

But their attacks were negated by each other due to the constant accidents that occurred around the golden path.

Even if a venerable attacked, under the chaotic situation of the fused two heavens, they were not only obstructed by soul beasts, there were black-white overturning clouds too.

This was the power of luck changing golden light path.

Fang Yuan attacked several times but nearly caused accidents to occur during heavenly secret Gu’s refinement!

Fang Yuan had seen the power of luck changing golden light path from long ago, but this time, it was so hard to deal with because of the amplification of Longevity Heaven’s dao marks.

Boom!

Both venerables gave chase into Northern Plains, eventually, they destroyed the luck changing golden light path.

At this moment, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable fell along with Light Emperor and You Tian Guang down, during the entire period of time, he could not find a chance to open his immortal aperture’s entrance.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had been using his full strength to maintain the luck changing golden light path to resist the two venerables’ attacks.

The intensity of the battle was clear with one glance!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable fully displayed the power of wisdom path, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had no time to do anything else. There was another reason, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not dare to let You Tian Guang into his immortal aperture.

The wild rank nine light Gu was inside You Tian Guang’s body, after sensing Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s rank nine aura, it was feeling very restless.

If Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did anything excessive, light Gu might get agitated and do something unfavorable to him.

Thus, he could only bring Light Emperor and You Tian Guang towards Longevity Heaven.

“Heavenly secret Gu’s refinement is reaching the final few steps.” Fang Yuan was very happy but he showed an anxious expression as he shouted: ”Giant Sun, leave that rank nine Immortal Gu behind! I won’t let you have it.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s eyes showed a firm light, she did not speak but her attacks were getting more intense.

The battle of the three venerables finally got close to Longevity Heaven.

Light Emperor laughed loudly as victory was in sight, he shouted: ”Father is mighty!”

Longevity Heaven’s immortal aperture entrance was open, at the final juncture, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable showed a grim expression, he did not dare to be careless for fear of showing a flaw.

The moment he stepped into the immortal aperture’s entrance, rank nine light Gu sensed something amiss, it suddenly reacted and wanted to escape.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable snorted coldly and used his prepared method to suppress it.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan unleashed his refinement path killer move!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used his defensive measure but the refinement path killer move had been prepared by Fang Yuan for a long time, it had incredible power that affected rank nine light Gu.

Crack.

With a soft sound, the surface of light Gu cracked.

“Oh, oh no!” Light Emperor shouted.

But thankfully, light Gu was only injured, it survived and was not destroyed by Fang Yuan’s attack.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable stepped into Longevity Heaven at long last, he looked at Fang Yuan angrily as he asked: ”Heaven Refining Demon Venerable! What an impressive method... what is the name of your move?”

Fang Yuan smiled coldly: ”You have your soft gold crashing pillar, I have my crippled refinement.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable praised it again before looking at Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, he shut the door and vanished into thin air.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked at Fang Yuan with a livid expression, she reprimanded: ”Since you had the killer move crippled refinement all along, why did you not use it earlier? Giant Sun Immortal Venerable succeeded in the end!”

All along, she did not notice that something was off with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, his expression was dark: ”If I had not made deductions during the battle, even that last hit would not have been possible! I managed to injure light Gu, but what about you, Star Constellation?”

“Hmph. If I did not stall for time, could you have achieved that?” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was very unhappy, she did not want to waste time talking to Fang Yuan, she turned around and left.

The entire time, neither of them chose to invade Longevity Heaven.

“Having your own headquarters is really convenient.” Fang Yuan sighed and left.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was heavily injured, but because of Longevity Heaven, he was unbeatable once he returned.

“This is true for Longevity Heaven, Heavenly Court is even more terrifying.” Fang Yuan made deductions from seeing luck changing golden light path’s strength, he could not help but feel a chill.

He did not stay in Northern Plains, he returned to Eastern Sea immediately.

The effect of obscured heavenly secret that he had was greatly expended after this intense battle, barely any was left.

Longevity Heaven.

“Father, how is light Gu?” Light Emperor was very concerned.

“Don’t worry, although Fang Yuan is a refinement path venerable and heavily injured light Gu, I used that opportunity to suppress it as well.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable coughed and spat out some blood.

“Father, are you okay?” Light Emperor asked.

In his memory, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was so magnificent and strong, he was an invincible existence. But now, he saw that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was tired and battered.

Times were different!

Light Emperor recalled the process and felt dejected. As a pseudo venerable, he was nothing more than a useless tool.

At most, he was the bait that lured light Gu.

In this battle, he was a burden for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!

“Father, go and heal yourself.” Light Emperor was very worried, he had never seen his father with such serious injuries.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shook his head: ”I need to watch them and make sure they leave Northern Plains, I can’t let them cause destruction or slaughter the Huang Jin tribes.”

Light Emperor was shocked: ”They are grand venerables, how can they act like that?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shook his head again: ”Star Constellation Immortal Venerable may not do it, but Fang Yuan is crafty and shameless, I cannot be sure of that. But most importantly, we obtained a rank nine Immortal Gu in this fight, the gains are just too much. You are truly my son.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s praise made Light Emperor feel more energetic, he patted his chest and assured: ”Father, I will do my best. Cough cough!”

Because he patted himself too hard, he could not help but spit out some blood in response.

The father and son looked at each other with bitter smiles.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable waved his hand: ”You are heavily injured too, go and recuperate. We made the greatest gains this time, we need to rest now and digest our gains. Once our strength rises, we will repay them severalfold.”

Light Emperor hesitated: ”Father, light Gu is injured, what do we do? Even Heavenly Court spent a long time and countless resources to repair fate Gu.”

Speaking of this, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable frowned: ”We’ll talk about it in the future.”

Above Central Continent.

All sorts of fire path immortal materials were gathered by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and sent into Heavenly Court’s treasury.

“The star array calculation formation was not too badly interrupted.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was pleased about this.

In her case, this battle was too abrupt.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not expend much immortal essence but the gains were plentiful.

“Even though Giant Sun obtained rank nine light Gu, it is an injured Immortal Gu. Giant Sun cultivates luck path and blood path, he cannot use light Gu easily.”

“Rank nine light Gu is not derivation Gu, the latter does not need to be refined but the former needs immortal essence to be used. This will cost Giant Sun a lot of immortal essence.”

“It is possible that Fang Yuan created crippled refinement at the last second, but it is more likely that he did not attack because he lacked immortal essence, because it was too urgent at the end, he exposed the killer move to attempt to destroy light Gu.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked towards the two heavens.

Without the sun, both heavens were dark and dim.

Deep within the two heavens, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was covered in fire, he was growling in pain.

This was the price for swallowing rank nine fire Gu!

“This might be a chance.” Starlight flickered in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s eyes, she was very concerned with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s situation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2281: Spectral Soul’s Anguished Cry

Fang Yuan’s gaze flickered with uncertainty and his expression was grim: ”I did not expect that light Gu would erupt with an attack that cooperated with the golden pillar so perfectly!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled smugly: ”My soft gold crashing pillar was designed to counter your reverse flow protection seal, how does it feel?”

Fang Yuan nodded: ”This move can conceal its strength and unleash a mystical collision force on reverse flow protection seal to penetrate the Reverse Flow River, interrupting with the entire operation of the killer move.”

“But it is a pity that this move has not been completed yet. Otherwise, it would not have been resolved by me so easily.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable nodded, he felt that this was a small pity, he could have given up on Light Emperor to save this killer move for the future to deal with Fang Yuan.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would not do that.

He would rather expose it to save his eldest son.

“I was too rash, to think that a rank nine Immortal Gu would be involved.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable said to Light Emperor.

“Father, what’s the point of saying that now? We need to find a way to flee! My hairs are all standing on end now!” Light Emperor replied quickly, although he had returned to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s side, the battle was still ongoing, he was very alert.

“Didn’t you create your own light body inheritance, your entire body is covered in light path dao marks, how can you have body hair?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable asked in a peculiar tone.

Light Emperor rolled his eyes and retorted: ”Father, now is not the time for this! The situation is dire, we need to find a way to escape.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable suddenly laughed out loud: ”Then we will leave!”

Saying so, he held Light Emperor and You Tian Guang in both hands respectively and rapidly made his move.

“You want to leave? Not so easy!”

“Giant Sun, leave the Immortal Gu behind.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Great Love Immortal Venerable attacked at the same time.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable roared and exchanged blows with the two venerables, even parts of the two heavens broke into fragments.

At the center of the explosion, under the terrifying force of the killer moves, nothing remained.

Even the fused immemorial two heavens was destroyed, turning into an area of void.

At the next moment, the surrounding fragments of the two heavens came rushing in like tidal waves, filling up the void.

Using this chance, a golden path extended over from deep within Northern Plains.

It was Calamity Luck Altar’s strongest method — Luck Changing Golden Light Path!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable purposely left Calamity Luck Altar in Longevity Heaven along with his own will and rank nine immortal essence.

Thus, using the vast number of Longevity Heaven’s luck path dao marks, the power of luck changing golden light path rose explosively, it extended from Northern Plains to the battlefield.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable brought Light Emperor and You Tian Guang onto this path, their speed rose immensely, they went far away in just a moment.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Great Love Immortal Venerable did not let them off.

But their attacks were negated by each other due to the constant accidents that occurred around the golden path.

Even if a venerable attacked, under the chaotic situation of the fused two heavens, they were not only obstructed by soul beasts, there were black-white overturning clouds too.

This was the power of luck changing golden light path.

Fang Yuan attacked several times but nearly caused accidents to occur during heavenly secret Gu’s refinement!

Fang Yuan had seen the power of luck changing golden light path from long ago, but this time, it was so hard to deal with because of the amplification of Longevity Heaven’s dao marks.

Boom!

Both venerables gave chase into Northern Plains, eventually, they destroyed the luck changing golden light path.

At this moment, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable fell along with Light Emperor and You Tian Guang down, during the entire period of time, he could not find a chance to open his immortal aperture’s entrance.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had been using his full strength to maintain the luck changing golden light path to resist the two venerables’ attacks.

The intensity of the battle was clear with one glance!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable fully displayed the power of wisdom path, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had no time to do anything else. There was another reason, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not dare to let You Tian Guang into his immortal aperture.

The wild rank nine light Gu was inside You Tian Guang’s body, after sensing Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s rank nine aura, it was feeling very restless.

If Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did anything excessive, light Gu might get agitated and do something unfavorable to him.

Thus, he could only bring Light Emperor and You Tian Guang towards Longevity Heaven.

“Heavenly secret Gu’s refinement is reaching the final few steps.” Fang Yuan was very happy but he showed an anxious expression as he shouted: ”Giant Sun, leave that rank nine Immortal Gu behind! I won’t let you have it.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s eyes showed a firm light, she did not speak but her attacks were getting more intense.

The battle of the three venerables finally got close to Longevity Heaven.

Light Emperor laughed loudly as victory was in sight, he shouted: ”Father is mighty!”

Longevity Heaven’s immortal aperture entrance was open, at the final juncture, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable showed a grim expression, he did not dare to be careless for fear of showing a flaw.

The moment he stepped into the immortal aperture’s entrance, rank nine light Gu sensed something amiss, it suddenly reacted and wanted to escape.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable snorted coldly and used his prepared method to suppress it.

But at this moment, Fang Yuan unleashed his refinement path killer move!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used his defensive measure but the refinement path killer move had been prepared by Fang Yuan for a long time, it had incredible power that affected rank nine light Gu.

Crack.

With a soft sound, the surface of light Gu cracked.

“Oh, oh no!” Light Emperor shouted.

But thankfully, light Gu was only injured, it survived and was not destroyed by Fang Yuan’s attack.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable stepped into Longevity Heaven at long last, he looked at Fang Yuan angrily as he asked: ”Heaven Refining Demon Venerable! What an impressive method... what is the name of your move?”

Fang Yuan smiled coldly: ”You have your soft gold crashing pillar, I have my crippled refinement.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable praised it again before looking at Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, he shut the door and vanished into thin air.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked at Fang Yuan with a livid expression, she reprimanded: ”Since you had the killer move crippled refinement all along, why did you not use it earlier? Giant Sun Immortal Venerable succeeded in the end!”

All along, she did not notice that something was off with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, his expression was dark: ”If I had not made deductions during the battle, even that last hit would not have been possible! I managed to injure light Gu, but what about you, Star Constellation?”

“Hmph. If I did not stall for time, could you have achieved that?” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was very unhappy, she did not want to waste time talking to Fang Yuan, she turned around and left.

The entire time, neither of them chose to invade Longevity Heaven.

“Having your own headquarters is really convenient.” Fang Yuan sighed and left.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was heavily injured, but because of Longevity Heaven, he was unbeatable once he returned.

“This is true for Longevity Heaven, Heavenly Court is even more terrifying.” Fang Yuan made deductions from seeing luck changing golden light path’s strength, he could not help but feel a chill.

He did not stay in Northern Plains, he returned to Eastern Sea immediately.

The effect of obscured heavenly secret that he had was greatly expended after this intense battle, barely any was left.

Longevity Heaven.

“Father, how is light Gu?” Light Emperor was very concerned.

“Don’t worry, although Fang Yuan is a refinement path venerable and heavily injured light Gu, I used that opportunity to suppress it as well.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable coughed and spat out some blood.

“Father, are you okay?” Light Emperor asked.

In his memory, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was so magnificent and strong, he was an invincible existence. But now, he saw that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was tired and battered.

Times were different!

Light Emperor recalled the process and felt dejected. As a pseudo venerable, he was nothing more than a useless tool.

At most, he was the bait that lured light Gu.

In this battle, he was a burden for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!

“Father, go and heal yourself.” Light Emperor was very worried, he had never seen his father with such serious injuries.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shook his head: ”I need to watch them and make sure they leave Northern Plains, I can’t let them cause destruction or slaughter the Huang Jin tribes.”

Light Emperor was shocked: ”They are grand venerables, how can they act like that?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shook his head again: ”Star Constellation Immortal Venerable may not do it, but Fang Yuan is crafty and shameless, I cannot be sure of that. But most importantly, we obtained a rank nine Immortal Gu in this fight, the gains are just too much. You are truly my son.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s praise made Light Emperor feel more energetic, he patted his chest and assured: ”Father, I will do my best. Cough cough!”

Because he patted himself too hard, he could not help but spit out some blood in response.

The father and son looked at each other with bitter smiles.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable waved his hand: ”You are heavily injured too, go and recuperate. We made the greatest gains this time, we need to rest now and digest our gains. Once our strength rises, we will repay them severalfold.”

Light Emperor hesitated: ”Father, light Gu is injured, what do we do? Even Heavenly Court spent a long time and countless resources to repair fate Gu.”

Speaking of this, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable frowned: ”We’ll talk about it in the future.”

Above Central Continent.

All sorts of fire path immortal materials were gathered by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and sent into Heavenly Court’s treasury.

“The star array calculation formation was not too badly interrupted.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was pleased about this.

In her case, this battle was too abrupt.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not expend much immortal essence but the gains were plentiful.

“Even though Giant Sun obtained rank nine light Gu, it is an injured Immortal Gu. Giant Sun cultivates luck path and blood path, he cannot use light Gu easily.”

“Rank nine light Gu is not derivation Gu, the latter does not need to be refined but the former needs immortal essence to be used. This will cost Giant Sun a lot of immortal essence.”

“It is possible that Fang Yuan created crippled refinement at the last second, but it is more likely that he did not attack because he lacked immortal essence, because it was too urgent at the end, he exposed the killer move to attempt to destroy light Gu.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked towards the two heavens.

Without the sun, both heavens were dark and dim.

Deep within the two heavens, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was covered in fire, he was growling in pain.

This was the price for swallowing rank nine fire Gu!

“This might be a chance.” Starlight flickered in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s eyes, she was very concerned with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s situation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2282: Implicating The World

Spectral Soul destroyed the sun, while the three venerables’ fight started and ended abruptly.

The impact of this battle was quickly spreading throughout the five regions.

Southern Border.

“What a large lump of tap fire.” Rank four Gu Master Xiao Yan did his best to dodge.

The lump of orange flame approached him like a rolling stone, it was large as an elephant, attempting to devour him.

Right when Xiao Yan was about to make a move and capture this tap fire, a Gu Master suddenly made an attack!

Boom.

With a loud sound, Xiao Yan was set flying far away.

“Who are you? This is Shang clan’s territory!” Xiao Yan shouted, not only did he fail to get the tap fire, he even suffered injuries.

“Hehehe, are you proud of being a lackey of Shang clan?” From the shadows, a demonic path Gu Master walked out.

He had rank four cultivation level too.

Xiao Yan’s pupils shrunk: ”So it is you, Fiery Star Bao Tong!”

He immediately understood why Bao Tong attacked him, the other party was also a fire path cultivator, he must be after this tap fire.

Boom boom boom!

The two engaged in an intense battle, sparks flew everywhere as explosions resounded.

Initially, both sides were evenly matched, but soon, Xiao Yan gained an upper hand.

Bao Tong became more furious as he fought, Xiao Yan was a junior but he was actually fighting on an even level, in fact, he was even slightly stronger.

This was the benefit of having a large force behind you.

A moment later, Bao Tong fell back while spitting blood, he held his chest and the unsightly expression on his face that was covered in soot could not be concealed: ”So the rumors are not wrong, you actually have so many rank four Gu. You must be the subordinate who climbed into Shang clan leader Shang Xin Ci’s bed?”

Xiao Yan was instantly enraged: ”Scoundrel, you dare to slander my clan leader!”

Xiao Yan had wanted to let Bao Tong off earlier instead of chasing after him, but now, he attacked Bao Tong with intense rage.

Bao Tong cried out in dismay internally, against Xiao Yan’s furious attacks, he had to retreat constantly and quickly fell into danger.

Meanwhile, at a dark corner, there was a Gu Master quietly observing this battle.

This Gu Master had rank five cultivation level, his face and body were unclear, covered by dense fog.

“Shang Xin Ci...” The rank five Gu Master gritted his teeth, it was clear that he had huge grudges with her.

A will was located in his mind: ”Little Tian, don’t be rash. Shang Xin Ci is a Gu Immortal seed of Shang clan, you have only just managed to escape and change your identity. Now, you need to hide yourself and cultivate seriously. You need to transcend the limits of a mortal and become a rank six qi path Gu Immortal!”

The rank five Gu Master was Kong Ri Tian, while the will in his mind was Kong Sheng Tian.

Back then, when Kong Sheng Tian obtained Sheng Tian true inheritance, Wu Ji, Shang Xin Ci, and the rest came to fight over it. He swore to take revenge!

Kong Ri Tian gritted his teeth: ”But ancestor, I already have confidence in ascending. But you told me not to do it because I should not miss the opportunity for natural inspiration?”

Kong Sheng Tian’s will explained: ”Spectral Soul destroyed the sun, he also got rid of many heaven vein nodes in white heaven, like heavenly chasms, heavenly pillars and others. Immemorial white heaven will soon be devoured by immemorial black heaven, the fusion of both heavens will not last long, along with the disturbance of heaven’s will. Once heaven’s will stabilizes, you will undergo immortal ascension.”

“So that’s it, I can’t wait.” Kong Ri Tian chuckled.

At the next moment, he attacked!

“Since I can’t take revenge on Shang Xin Ci, I will target her subordinates, I will kill her sweetheart Xiao Yan first and let her experience some pain.” Killing intent surged in Kong Ri Tian’s mind.

“You!”

“Don’t worry, after I kill Xiao Yan, I will frame it on Bao Tong! I am familiar with this.” Kong Ri Tian secretly moved towards Xiao Yan, because the latter was focused on Bao Tong, he did not sense anything.

“Sigh... you need to settle this quickly!” Kong Sheng Tian’s will sighed helplessly.

That night.

Golden flames burned the entire mountain, countless lifeforms perished in the sea of fire.

The light of the fire illuminated the sky, because it was near Shang Liang Mountain, Shang Xin Ci quickly detected it.

“Oh no, something happened to Xiao Yan, just the tap fire alone cannot produce such power!” Shang Xin Ci’s heart sank, she could not help but feel worried about Xiao Yan.

Even though she only had rank five cultivation level, she had abundant knowledge and knew that this was an immortal material flame just by looking at the light.

Shang Xin Ci did not send any reinforcements to help Xiao Yan, because this involved immortal materials, it was not a mortal matter, Shang clan’s Gu Immortals had to resolve it.

Shang Xin Ci looked at the sky.

Without the sun, the sky was pitch black.

This beautiful and kind woman sighed deeply as she showed a look of worry.

“I wonder how many people are suffering and in pain right now? Even as Shang clan leader, I am still too weak.”

The changes in heaven and earth shook everyone’s hearts.

In Southern Border’s Gu Master world, the demonic path had gotten quite rampant for a certain period. Shang Xin Ci did her best to salvage the situation but against calamities and natural disasters, her effort amounted to futility.

Eastern Sea.

White crane sea area.

Nan Gong Yuan was gathering the crane group.

Far away in the horizon, vast and grand frost energy swept over and caused the surrounding temperature to fall.

White crane sea area was originally owned by Eastern Sea’s lone immortal Qin Bai He.

After Qin Bai He was killed by Fang Yuan, white crane sea area was taken by the closest super force, Nan Gong clan.

Nan Gong clan invested a batch of resources and created the formation, they wanted to develop this place, but to think that the sun was destroyed by Spectral Soul.

Once the sun was destroyed, the temperature of the five regions fell sharply, because white crane sea area was right beside icy sea area, it was quite badly affected.

Recently, icy sea area had already expanded by four times of its original size!

White crane sea area was about to be engulfed by icy sea area.

“The changes in the world have created an unprecedented chaotic era.” Nan Gong Yuan sighed deeply.

Nan Gong clan was doing relatively fine.

Su clan’s light ripple sea fell greatly in value after the destruction of the sun, the entirety of Su clan was busy trying to salvage it now.

Of course, there were super forces who took the chance to gain a huge profit.

For example, Eastern Sea’s Hua clan.

Hua clan’s rank eight Immortal Gu House Green Cloud Spark Warship entered the two heavens to collect a vast amount of cloud path resources, the other Eastern Sea righteous path forces were feeling deep envy.

With the changes going on, not just mortals and Gu Masters were affected, even super forces and Gu Immortal experts were implicated in this commotion.

Some were overjoyed, some were worried, some decided to leave their homelands and start all over again.

In the pitch black night, Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang were flying over the border of Northern Plains and Western Desert.

They were originally the Traveling Three Elites but after Han Dong’s death, only two were left.

The two of them were Northern Plains lone immortals, they did not want to submit to the Huang Jin tribes, they also refused to join Chu Du, Heavenly Lord Bai Zu, or Fairy Black Moon.

In the huge Gu cultivation world, everyone had their own intentions.

Some preferred freedom more than others.

As Longevity Heaven exerted more influence, there was less and less survival space for lone cultivators in Northern Plains.

The situation forced Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang to leave Northern Plains.

They were unwilling to go to Central Continent or Eastern Sea, thus, they could only head to Western Desert or Southern Border.

Because Lu Qing Ming cultivated wind path and Su Guang cultivated light path, they were more suited for Western Desert.

“Sigh, we had to leave Northern Plains after all. At this moment, I finally understand the meaning of why it is hard to leave your homeland.” Lu Qing Ming sighed gloomily.

Su Guang had a different opinion: ”Western Desert is chaotic now, with Fang clan drawing everyone’s attention, it is more suitable for us. Let’s go, the five regional walls are gone, the two heavens have fused, the world is our home.”

“Hehe.” Lu Qing Ming laughed: ”You are more carefree than me.”

But at the next moment, their expressions changed.

The terrifying darkness descended!

The two immortals could not put up any resistance, the mysterious expert grabbed and prevented them from moving at all.

Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang were filled with fear.

It was not a Gu Immortal who captured them but a legendary immemorial desolate beast.

This legendary immemorial beast was like a giant, it was blacker than ink. Its black hair flowed like a cape, extending to its waist, its eyes were huge and emitting a fierce red light.

Right now, two of its monstrous claws grabbed onto Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang.

It was Zuo Ye Hui!

Zuo Ye Hui said in a hoarse tone: ”Gu Immortals from Northern Plains, lead the way for me. Tell me, how do I... get inside Longevity Heaven?”

Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang heard this and their faces turned pale white.

Back in Western Desert.

A short battle had already concluded.

Flower petals descended but quickly gathered to form Wan Zi Hong’s body.

She looked at Ling Hu Xu’s vanishing figure as she muttered: ”Ling Hu Xu... very interesting.”

Zhou Xiong Xin had an unsightly expression: ”This Ling Hu Xu deserves death! If he had not used Fang clan’s name to rob various places, why would we have been misled?”

Zhou Xiong Xin wanted to find out where Fang clan was hiding, but to think that he followed the wrong traces.

Ling Hu Xu was a rarely seen theft path Gu Immortal, he had once stole Fang Dong Xi’s soul cores in Sand Heap blessed land.

Evidently, he did not just steal soul cores then, he even had a method to disguise himself as Fang Dong Xi.

While everyone was flustered after Spectral Soul destroyed the sun, he committed crimes everywhere and purposely left clues to frame them on Fang clan.

In the end, Zhou Xiong Xin exposed him.

The pursuit was very short, Ling Hu Xu only had rank seven cultivation level but he used peculiar theft path methods to defy the odds, escaping from the two Heavenly Court rank eight experts!

Above Central Continent.

Many Gu Immortals were focusing their gazes on Gu Immortal Zhang Ji.

Zhang Ji successfully arranged the final Immortal Gu.

“Alright, prepare to activate the formation.”

“Tell the two heavens’ grotto-heavens’ Gu Immortals to be mindful of the formation in their grotto-heavens!”

“Ask the immortals in the formation cores to inspect it again.”

The star array calculation formation was finally activated slowly under the massive arrangement.

One star shone brightly first, followed by the second and third star...

After more than ten breaths of time, countless stars illuminated the sky of Central Continent, a beautiful star map was drawn above the sky.

“The star array calculation formation has finally been completed.”

Li Xiao Bai looked at this as he sighed internally.

Not long ago, Fang Yuan had secretly contacted him.

After Profound Literature grotto-heaven joined Heavenly Court, Li Xiao Bai started to show immense value.

But at the same time, Fang Yuan needed to be very careful.

Li Xiao Bai was his clone, if he was exposed and captured, he would become a huge weakness of Fang Yuan’s!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2283: Three Venerables Scheme Against Spectral Soul

In the starry sky, countless stars that resembled a sea floated above Central Continent.

The pale blue light of the stars weaved together to form an illusory view.

If one look at the five regions from above now, Northern Plains, Southern

Border, Western Desert, and Eastern Sea would be shrouded in darkness, while the center was shining brightly with specks of light.

Central Continent was a clear contrast from the other regions.

Starlight radiated Central Continent.

Compared to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had a clear understanding of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable in his current condition, she had started to make plans from long ago.

Even Fang Yuan was behind Star Constellation Immortal Venerable in deducing the true condition of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

This was the power of foresight and planning that wisdom path excelled in.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable stayed inside Embroidered Tower.

She was currently multi-tasking, refining Central Continent’s natural wisdom path dao marks, healing herself, controlling the star array calculation formation, and even handling the internal affairs of Heavenly Court.

This was the advantage of wisdom path — an abundance of thoughts!

The star array calculation formation slowly operated normally with no issues.

Although this formation only had basic offensive and defensive abilities that could not even reach pseudo venerable level, it was for this reason that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Great Love Immortal Venerable chose to make a transaction with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable instead of destroying it, obtaining benefits instead.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had a huge desire for blood path related results, while Fang Yuan wanted Primordial Domain.

The star array calculation formation’s main power was to collect information in Central Continent through the wide area that it enveloped, through deductions, they could mobilize Central Continent Gu Immortals to cooperate seamlessly.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was the number one person in wisdom path, in fact, wisdom path was created by her, and now, she was still the number one wisdom path Gu Immortal. Nobody understood wisdom path more than her!

Wisdom path emphasized on control, it researched upon certainty.

Wisdom path had three main elements: thoughts, wills, and emotions.

Thoughts were ever-changing, wills were intense, while emotions interrupted, wisdom path cultivation meant having control over these three aspects!

This was the most basic thing.

Thus, wisdom path cultivators were often calm and composed, they knew how to handle their own state of mind.

On this basis, wisdom path Gu cultivators could handle information by storing them or understanding certain things, this allowed them to control the present.

Going a step further, the wisdom path Gu cultivator would use all sorts of clues and information to deduce certain possibilities according to the rules of heaven and earth or the behavior of people, this gave them control over the future.

This was the essence of wisdom path!

Precisely because of this essence, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was the only person who became one with the Dao among all of the venerables in history.

She fused with heaven’s will and influenced fate Gu, it turned fate into the biggest certainty in the world.

From this aspect, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was unique.

All sorts of information flowed into Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s mind like countless tributaries within the star array calculation formation.

These information included the fundamental structure of the mountains and rivers, weather changes, the arrangements of various Gu cultivation forces, or even the locations of Gu Immortals and their current conditions.

A vast amount of information entered Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s mind like a tidal wave that was entering the boundless sea.

If this was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable or Great Love Immortal Venerable, they would not be able to handle it.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was different.

She cultivated wisdom path and had a huge mind far surpassing the other venerables, she could calmly process all this information with ease.

A faint feeling of joy appeared in Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s heart.

Her control over Central Continent’s situation was rapidly increasing.

The more information that a wisdom path Gu cultivator had, the more advantage they could unleash as a wisdom path cultivator.

Otherwise, why would people say that information path and wisdom path were the most compatible?

“With the star array calculation formation, I can oversee Central Continent at all times, it is like a miniature Heaven Overseeing Tower.”

“Central Continent’s emotions are quite stable, while the ten great ancient sects have higher morale than usual. It seems that they have already seen the situation in the other four regions.”

“But the current star array calculation formation is still at the most foundational stage, it has much room for improvement.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable planned secretly.

For example, in terms of collecting information, the investigative methods were not outstanding.

Not to mention Gu Immortals, even mortal Gu Master experts could keep their own secrets to a certain extent.

In the star array calculation formation, information path Immortal Gu that could store information were rare and needed to be added. The best arrangement would be to directly transplant the Qian Kun Crystal Wall into it.

Or for example, the star array calculation formation’s own deduction, thinking, and deployment abilities also had room for growth.

But this needed a lot of Immortal Gu as well.

Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable created electric brain Gu, wisdom brain Gu, light brain Gu, and others.

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable invented a special type of immortal plant — brain melon.

Reckless Savage Demon Venerable had once owned monkey brain Gu, dragon brain Gu, phoenix brain Gu, as well as the brain muscle Gu that could be used alongside strength path methods.

There was also Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s food path research result — brain juice Gu.

These Gu worms were all suitable for the star array calculation formation.

Other than these, the star array calculation formation’s own offensive and defensive capabilities also contained huge potential to get stronger.

“But the current star array calculation formation has already reached the bottom-line of the venerables. If I raise any aspect, they may come to attack it.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable understood the situation well.

Because of external pressure and the fact that it needed many Immortal Gu, the star array calculation formation could only be developed to this extent.

“Next, I need to collate the information of all the Gu Immortals in the Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects. Their lifespan, cultivation level, path, Immortal Gu, killer moves, immortal aperture situations, attainment levels, and others, after processing this information, I will let the star array calculation formation deploy them accordingly.”

“As for the Gu Immortals of the two heavens’ grotto-heavens...”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable decided to slow down.

This could not be rushed.

Probing a Gu Immortal’s information was something that went against the social norm.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable forcefully pushed through this plan, because the ten great ancient sects were subsidiaries of Heavenly Court, it was possible.

Even so, immortals of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects did not feel comfortable about it, they still concealed some information.

But these were minor issues, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not want to force them.

By forcing them now, she would only lose the support of the people, it was not worth it.

Would Star Constellation Immortal Venerable act so unwise?

After these immortals start gaining benefits, their mindsets would change, they would actively contribute to the star array calculation formation.

After that happened, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would urge the Gu Immortals of the two heavens' grotto-heavens to contribute their own information to the star array calculation formation.

Now was not the time.

Many super forces of the two heavens' grotto-heavens had just joined Heavenly Court. If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable forced them, they would become disheartened, the rest of the world would also see the sorry state that they ended up in after joining Heavenly Court.

For the long term situation, it would not benefit Heavenly Court.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable first refined Heavenly Court's dao marks, she then interfered in Western Desert and interrupted Fang Yuan's plans, she then created the derivation formation and recruited many of the two heavens' grotto-heavens, after that, she worked with Fang Yuan to fight against Giant Sun while creating the basic form of the star array calculation formation.

All sorts of measures and countermeasures were used in a stable manner. Now, Heavenly Court was revitalized, it got over the repeated history of failure and had a bright future ahead.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable is even more injured than me, he has to recover and refine rank nine light Gu.”

“As for Fang Yuan, he lacks immortal essence, be it refining natural dao marks or the contest between venerables, it will be tough on him.”

“The greatest uncertainty is still Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.”

Thinking of this, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked afar again.

In the two heavens, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was bathed in flames, his mountain-like body was melting and regenerating at all times, his three heads were twisted and growling in painful agony.

“Spectral Soul...” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable muttered lightly, intense killing intent rose in her heart.

Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan shook slightly as intense joy filled his heart, yet, his expression remained the same.

Rank nine heavenly secret Gu was refined!

Ever since the battle over light Gu, Fang Yuan's refinement of heavenly secret Gu passed the most difficult trial.

After that, Fang Yuan returned to Eastern Sea and did not refine the natural dao marks, he pretended to be storing up immortal essence while secretly refining heavenly secret Immortal Gu.

Just earlier, Fang Yuan finally achieved success, rank nine heavenly secret Gu was created!

It was really rare.

This was the first attempt at refining it but he succeeded.

The main reason was rank nine advance refinement Gu, it helped Fang Yuan greatly. Secondly, heavenly secret Immortal Gu had an amazing recipe that was modified by Fang Yuan, it had reached a certain limit of perfection.

But looking at the overall situation, the difficulty was still quite high.

If Fang Yuan had not taken a risk by staking his life, he could have lost terribly.

Once rank nine heavenly secret Gu was refined, Fang Yuan went on to modify the killer move obscured heavenly secret.

This was not difficult.

Fang Yuan was very confident in succeeding.

He had accumulated a lot of experience when modifying heavenly secret Gu’s recipe, while obscured heavenly secret itself was an amazing killer move, it had a firm foundation.

“I need to find a time to meet with Li Xiao Bai and use rank nine obscured heavenly secret on him. That way, he will be able to stay undercover safely.”

“Maybe I can make use of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to create a chance?”

Longevity Heaven.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was focusing on healing.

Using the vast number of Longevity Heaven’s luck path dao marks, he slowly refined the star path, wisdom path, and refinement path dao marks on his body.

Even though he gained rank nine light Gu, he felt an even greater sense of urgency now.

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable devoured the wild rank nine fire Gu, that is an extremely stupid move.”

“He is insane now, there is no way he can refine fire Gu. To save itself, fire Gu will fight desperately inside his body, expending Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s soul path dao marks.”

“Once Spectral Soul Demon Venerable weakens to a certain level, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and Heaven Refining Demon Venerable will attack, an intense battle will erupt again.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not use any investigative killer move.

He had to save immortal essence now.

This time, in order to protect Light Emperor and take rank nine light Gu, he consumed a lot of immortal essence in fighting both venerables at once.

If he continued to fight against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable in the upcoming battle, because of his advantage with light Gu, the two venerables might join up to target him.

The fact that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had rank nine light Gu was also quite troublesome.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2284: Human Path Breakthrough

Heavenly Court.

Ten rank five Gu Masters carried intense excitement as they arrived at a certain important location deep within Heavenly Court.

They were the ten children of human path.

“This is the derivation formation?” Xiao Qi Xing walked at the front.

Behind him were the other nine, Sun Yuan Hua, Fairy Bi Xia, Gu Ting, Wei Wu Shang, Ying Sheng Ji, Chen Da Jiang, Tang Ru Qi, Sun Yao, and Zhao Shu Ye.

These were the most outstanding Gu Masters of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, they were nurtured by Heavenly Court and cultivated within Divine Emperor City’s painting worlds, becoming the rising stars of human path.

They each carried a heavy burden, they were the budding sprouts of Heavenly Court and the venerables’ desire towards human path, integral to the goal of Central Continent’s dominance of the world.

The ten of then looked ahead and saw a vast field of grey-white smoke presented before everyone’s vision.

The light continued to transform continuously, it was slithery like a dragon, fluttering beautifully like a butterfly, standing on the wall, or even tranquil like still water.

“This derivation formation is arranged by Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable personally, it is Heavenly Court’s greatest secret!”

“We are immensely fortunate to be the first batch of Gu Masters allowed to cultivate in this formation.”

“The outcome of black heaven engulfing white heaven is set, heaven’s will is going to become stable again. Soon, we will be able to advance to become human path Gu Immortals.”

“Thus, the derivation formation is our greatest fortuitous encounter before becoming a Gu Immortal, we need to make use of this unparalleled opportunity!”

“That’s right, after entering the formation to cultivate, the relevant memories will be deleted in our minds, after that, who knows when we can come here again.”

The ten children of human path discussed among themselves and arranged the order of which they would enter.

Sun Yuan Hua was the first to enter the derivation formation.

After fifteen minutes, he slowly stumbled out of the constantly changing light.

“How was it, what did you experience in the formation?”

“Are there any gains?”

“Quick, tell us.”

The other nine quickly went to him and asked.

Sun Yuan Hua was still a little dazed now but he soon recovered his senses.

He recalled: ”After I went in, all I saw was vast white fog. I tried stepping in and vaguely saw a human figure so I gave chase.”

“I chased it for a long time, after an unknown distance, more and more human figures appeared in the white fog.”

“There were five or six of them initially, after that, there were fifty or sixty, followed by six hundred or seven hundred. By the time I reacted, I was already inside a vast sea of humans, I was surrounded by people!”

“I wanted to ask them questions but I could not speak. I tried to smile to communicate with them. But in the end, I found that they were all smiling at me too.”

“Their smiles were very fake, it looked like... a painting drawn using lines.”

“Can you imagine? Countless people showed a fake smile at me as they squeezed around me, slowly getting closer and tighter, making me feel suffocated.”

“I tried my best to push them away, but my strength became smaller and smaller.”

“Eventually, I was engulfed by the sea of humans with fake smiles.”

“By the time I regained my senses, I had already stepped out of the formation and saw you guys.”

“At the same time, in the depth of my mind, I found the Immortal Gu recipe of shadow puppet Gu!”

After explaining his encounter, Sun Yuan Hua still showed some fear on his face.

His description was very useful for the others in their preparation.

“Why does it seem like a nightmare?”

“This formation is truly extraordinary.”

“Looking at the situation, it seems that after entering the derivation formation, we will get a human path Immortal Gu recipe?”

“One attempt is not enough for a conclusion, who will go next?”

After the remaining nine discussed for a while and came up with no explanation, the second person was decided, Gu Ting.

Under everyone’s gaze, Gu Ting slowly walked into the light fog.

Several minutes later, Gu Ting walked out of the formation in a daze, it was similar to Sun Yuan Hua’s situation.

But soon, he recovered.

Everyone got around him and listened to his encounter.

Gu Ting’s situation was quite different from Sun Yuan Hua, he did not see any human figures, instead, he felt like he did not even open his eyes.

The only thing he heard was music.

The music created by some instrument constantly played in his mind.

After the tune ended, Gu Ting walked out of the immortal formation.

“I received an Immortal Gu recipe, it is the vital Gu that I had recently swapped to — musician Gu.”

The ten children of human path talked among themselves again.

Shadow puppet Gu and musician Gu were both human path Gu worms, they were also Sun Yuan Hua’s and Gu Ting’s vital Gu.

“That means the reward has something to do with our vital Gu?”

“Or more accurately, the reward is our vital Gu’s Immortal Gu recipe? That is so useful to us!”

“That’s right, we may be able to use the excess tribulation qi during our ascension to refine our vital Immortal Gu!”

The ten children of human path were very excited.

Heavenly Court had arranged for them to cultivate human path.

There was a benefit and demerit in doing so.

The benefit was that a new path had no counter in this world, the more human path developed, the greater its advantage against other paths.

The demerit was that a new path was too young, without the help of predecessors, the ten children of human path had to develop human path step by step on their own.

Although Heavenly Court had the human path killer moves made by the past venerables, they were too high ranked and of utmost secrecy, the ten children of human path had no authority to learn of them.

They understood that it would be extremely hard for them to create human path Immortal Gu recipes on their own. The time, effort, and resources needed were unthinkable.

Even if they could use the opportunity of natural inspiration to ask heaven’s will when undergoing tribulation, they were not guaranteed an Immortal Gu recipe.

They were the pioneers of human path, it was possible that the world itself did not have the corresponding human path Immortal Gu they needed.

However, when the third person, Ying Sheng Ji, left the immortal formation, he did not obtain an Immortal Gu recipe.

“I obtained the rank one to five recipe of a brand new human path Gu, it is called pill refiner.”

Ying Sheng Ji’s vital Gu was doctor Gu, but after entering the formation, he actually obtained a new human path Gu recipe.

Ying Sheng Ji was a little disappointed.

In his case, the immortal ascension was coming soon, without doctor Gu’s Immortal Gu recipe, he would not have a human path Immortal Gu to use for a very long time.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had always been keeping a close eye on the ten children of human path.

“After Sun Yuan Hua entered the formation, his comprehension and understanding of human path resonated with the inheritance of Heavenly Court’s former shadow path Gu Immortal, Immortal Monarch Gu Ying. Thus, he obtained the Immortal Gu recipe of shadow puppet Gu.”

Immortal Monarch Gu Ying was someone who appeared after Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s era.

But after inspecting the historical records, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had a deep impression of him.

Immortal Monarch Gu Ying had stated in his inheritance that although shadow path was just a small branch of dark path now, it had more potential. In fact, shadow path was not just a branch of dark path, it was also part of light path. How could there be shadow without light? Precisely so, if shadow path developed in the future, it could potentially fuse both light path and dark path to become a huge, more powerful path!

“After Gu Ting entered the formation, he resonated with a sound path inheritance and obtained musician Immortal Gu’s recipe.”

“As for Ying Sheng Ji, after entering the formation, because there was no resonance with any Gu Immortal’s inheritance which was skilled at healing, Ruan Dan’s pill path was drawn to him instead and created a result.”

“Pill refiner Gu...”

Different from Ying Sheng Ji, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable felt that his gains were greater than the rest.

Human path was the path that Heavenly Court was trying to develop, while pill path was also a new path.

The result of the clash between these two paths was pill refiner Gu.

It was the fusion of Ying Sheng Ji’s human path research result and the essence of pill path, this was a new accomplishment.

“The Gu recipe of pill refiner Gu consists of rank one to five, after refining them, we can produce a large number of pill refiners. These pill refiners are most skilled at refining pill Gu.”

Most pill Gu were consumable Gu, from the ones that Ruan Dan created, one could see that they were very effective and powerful.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable acutely sensed that if pill refiner Gu was spread widely, it could change the current situation of the Gu Master world, there would be a huge revolution!

After Sun Yuan Hua, Gu Ting, and Ying Sheng Ji, it was Xiao Qi Xing’s turn.

This person was seemingly the leader of the ten children of human path, after getting out of the derivation formation, he obtained the Immortal Gu recipes of soldier Gu and sergeant Gu.

Regrettably, his vital Gu was commander Gu.

Chen Da Jiang was the fifth to enter.

His vital Gu was constable Gu, but he had not gotten its Immortal Gu recipe.

“I obtained the recipe of police gate Gu, from rank one to six. They are one police gate Gu, two police gate Gu, and all the way to six police gate Gu.”

“The police gate Gu are mutually connected, after they are refined, my constable Gu can create constables that are able to travel from one gate to another gate instantly.”

After Chen Da Jiang, Zhao Shu Ye went in.

Her vital Gu was craftsman Gu.

After entering the formation, she resonated with a certain metal path inheritance and obtained the rank six Immortal Gu recipe of blacksmith Gu.

The ten children of human path entered the derivation formation one by one, they all had great gains, but these gains were all different as well.

“No matter what, this derivation formation is too amazing!”

“In just half a day, all thanks to it, the entire world had a huge breakthrough in human path’s development.”

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable is truly the number one wisdom path expert throughout history.”

The ten children of human path were extremely amazed, their eyes were shining brightly.

They wanted to enter the formation again but were rejected.

It was not that the derivation formation could not, but they themselves had reached a limit.

The essence of the derivation formation was to use the research results of the ten children of human path to clash with the inheritance of past Gu Immortal experts, to attempt deriving new human path research results that had never been possible before.

The ten children of human path had only cultivated for a short time, they were all rank five Gu Masters, their foundation was limited.

All of their current potential had been used up already, even if they went in again, their minds would only be corrupted by the inheritances, preventing them from innovating and creating new ideas, restricting their future development.

They were like young sprouts now, after this injection of essence, they would need to recuperate for a long time. Otherwise, excessive help would ruin their creativity in innovating for human path, their bright futures would become dim and hopeless, with no expectations left for them.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2285: Jiu Ge Helps Spectral Soul

Immortal killer move — Obscured Heavenly Secret!

Everything happened stealthily.

Only Fang Yuan knew how much immortal essence was used to activate this rank nine killer move.

Three hundred and sixty rank nine immortal essence beads!

After heavenly secret Gu was raised to rank nine, obscured heavenly secret was also finally modified by Fang Yuan, it became a true rank nine killer move.

Compared to the rank eight obscured heavenly secret, the rank nine version used much more immortal essence and the activation time was lengthened to over ten times of before. In addition, the steps were also six times more complicated, and Fang Yuan needed much more thoughts in the process.

After paying such a price, rank nine obscured heavenly secret also became much more powerful!

It was not a quantitative growth but a qualitative change.

Originally, rank eight obscured heavenly secret killer move could create temporary heaven path dao marks that resembled fishing nets, they were layered over each other in a criss-cross fashion, covering Fang Yuan’s entire body.

It was like how a caterpillar used its threads to create a thick and hard cocoon around itself.

Right now, although the heaven path dao marks were still in a fishing net form, they were more tightly connected and were no longer overlapping, he only had one simple layer around him.

This layer of heaven path dao marks were not temporary dao marks, they had stabilized into a certain constant state.

Fang Yuan understood the reason behind this, after observing closely and using investigative killer moves, he barely managed to detect this layer of the heavenly secret fishing net.

It was in a state of existence and non-existence!

The heavenly secret fishing net immediately made Fang Yuan think of the killer move that Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable left behind, ghostly concealment.

Honestly speaking, the heavenly secret fishing net was still inferior to ghostly concealment. But Fang Yuan could sense that the two had already become similar, they shared a type of special trait.

Ghostly concealment could last for a long time without expending immortal essence.

The heavenly secret fishing net was also the same.

But the heavenly secret fishing net could not compare to ghostly concealment, the reason was that although it could stabilize, it could still be consumed.

As long as the investigative method used on it was strong enough, the heavenly secret fishing net would be expended while resisting it, as long as the expenditure exceeded the natural recovery speed, then the heavenly secret fishing net would start experiencing a deficit, it would be like a sinking ship that got gradually submerged.

Of course, ghostly concealment had such a flaw too, but its recovery speed and durability were much higher than the heavenly secret fishing net.

Naturally, the information of Fang Yuan’s ghostly concealment was already known by his enemies, they had created countermeasures against it.

Thus, ghostly concealment’s actual value was much lower than obscured heavenly secret.

Even though it was more refined than obscured heavenly secret, it was outdated.

Other than the huge boost in power of obscured heavenly secret due to the qualitative change, there was another benefit, the amount of heaven path immortal materials needed to activate it had fallen greatly, by a total of eighty percent!

The reduction in consumption of heaven path immortal materials was very beneficial to Fang Yuan in his attempt to accumulate them.

Heaven path immortal materials were not easy to obtain.

Fang Yuan had only gotten a good opportunity recently when the two heavens were fusing.

In fact, the appearance of so many heaven path immortal materials was also thanks to the senseless Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. This was truly an extremely rare opportunity.

Rank nine heavenly secret Gu and rank nine obscured heavenly secret had many tactical implications to Fang Yuan.

This was an advancement!

If the advancement failed and Fang Yuan got exposed, he would get attacked by the two venerables.

It was clear from how Giant Sun Immortal Venerable got targeted by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable after he took rank nine light Gu.

She was very overbearing and showed a tough stance.

Eventually, she only gave up after Giant Sun Immortal Venerable brought Light Emperor into Longevity Heaven.

If Fang Yuan was exposed, everyone would see that he had two rank nine Immortal Gu!

He did not have an impregnable base like Longevity Heaven or Heavenly Court.

Once Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable cooperated, they would be very terrifying!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s wisdom path controlled certainty.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path explored uncertainty.

The two were mutually conflicting, but if they worked together, they would complement each other perfectly. With the potential of such coordination, even Fang Yuan could not stop them.

After all, Fang Yuan had not created his own rank nine offensive method.

Even if Fang Yuan could stop them, the external situation of the contest of three venerables would start to emit pressure on him. He did not have enough strength to obliterate Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not be taken down, if they deepened their cooperation, it was very likely that they would become a huge hindrance to him.

One could say, if Fang Yuan was exposed, he would fall into an extremely passive state.

But the situation was fine now.

With rank nine obscured heavenly secret, he could stabilize the situation at the critical moment.

The refinement of rank nine heavenly secret Immortal Gu was not hard, but Fang Yuan still had to take a fatal risk to succeed.

He succeeded on his first attempt at refining it, he was quite fortunate.

This was the turning point of the contest of three venerables!

Right now, Fang Yuan’s foundation in heaven path was as such. He had heaven path grandmaster attainment level, various killer moves like heaven envies heroic geniuses, heavenly web protection veil, emotionless heaven and earth, heavenly summary earthly norm, obscured heavenly secret, and others, as well as Immortal Gu like Heavenly Web, Heavenly Secret, Heaven’s Envy, and Heavenly Birth.

He also had the truthful floating ice.

At this point, he had already unsealed over half of the truthful floating ice.

Worth noting was that after becoming a heaven path grandmaster, his speed of unsealing the truthful floating ice also became faster!

This was easily understood.

Fang Yuan’s heaven path attainment level was like a foundation, once it rose, he would be able to understand and comprehend the heaven path profundities within the truthful floating ice at a faster rate.

Back then during the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable obtained the truthful floating ice and unsealed it rapidly, he almost became a heaven path venerable!

“However, my heaven path attainment level only rose to grandmaster after using more than half of the truthful floating ice. It will be too hard for me to reach great grandmaster using the remaining portion.”

The higher the cultivation level, the greater the difference between ranks.

This was the same for attainment level.

If half of the truthful floating ice could help Fang Yuan go from ordinary to grandmaster attainment level, then it would be very hard for the remaining half to elevate Fang Yuan to a great grandmaster.

Regardless, Fang Yuan was satisfied.

The truthful floating ice he gained from Crazed Demon Cave had been extremely useful to Fang Yuan.

Ignoring anything else, just the rank nine heavenly secret Immortal Gu recipe was something that did not originally exist in the world.

Fang Yuan knew clearly.

This Immortal Gu recipe was the research result of over a million years through the Crazed Demon formation that Limitless Demon Venerable created, using the chaos outside the world and rank nine derivation Gu as the core.

The concept was ahead of the entire world.

It was too hard to achieve it on his own.

Fang Yuan’s human path attainment level was not low, he was a grandmaster. But why did he not try to create rank six human path Immortal Gu recipes?

It was too hard.

Such an attempt would expend too much of his time, energy, resources, and manpower. In fact, success was not guaranteed.

In the current world, wild human path Immortal Gu were very rare.

Creating a rank six human path Immortal Gu recipe was making something that did not exist in the world, it was the development of human path beyond its current limit, it was also pushing the current world beyond its current boundary and limit.

Going from zero to one was like going from nothing to something, this process was very difficult.

But from one to two, the process was just quantitative growth, gradual development was possible with much lower difficulty.

Rank six human path Immortal Gu recipes were very hard to create, as for rank nine heavenly secret Immortal Gu’s recipe, the difficulty was countless times higher!

Fang Yuan was almost certain, this rank nine Immortal Gu recipe was the most valuable part of this largest piece of truthful floating ice.

“In the following period, I need to find a chance to meet with Li Xiao Bai and secretly use obscured heavenly secret on him.”

Rank eight obscured heavenly secret could deceive Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the rank nine version was even better.

Of course, that was under the situation that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not have their own path’s rank nine Immortal Gu.

If there was no opportunity, he would create one.

But it would be hard for the two venerables to not become suspicious.

Fang Yuan looked afar and cast his gaze on Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Different from Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s intention to kill, Fang Yuan wanted to use Spectral Soul Demon Venerable as his shield to conceal his true actions.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was currently bathed in fire.

Under the threat of survival, rank nine fire Gu erupted with its strongest attack.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had been tortured for tens of days, he was in a state of distress.

His originally colossal body had already shrunk by thirty percent.

Although his rank nine aura was still domineering, there was already a hint of tiredness.

Only several hundred of his countless thick black arms remained, while one of his three heads was burned to ashes.

However, fire Gu was not longer as powerful as before, its firepower had clearly fallen.

A rank eight Gu Immortal slowly approached Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

“If Spectral Soul Demon Venerable still had his senses, he could definitely capture fire Gu. It is a pity that he has no sanity now, he cannot even isolate the natural essence of the world, otherwise, fire Gu would not have such terrifying power.”

This Gu Immortal had an incredibly deep gaze, he could comprehend a certain profound concept from Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s body.

It was Feng Jiu Ge!

At this moment, a soul beast army was moving a hundred li away.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable seemed to have sensed the soul beast army, his expression was ruthless as he roared and flew to them.

The soul beast army was easily disoriented by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he opened his mouths and devoured them. In a few breaths of time, he had already eaten over ten thousand soul beasts.

These soul beasts immediately melted into soul path dao marks that were transferred to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s body.

His injuries healed rapidly, but soon, the fire burned and created new injuries.

“Although Spectral Soul Demon Venerable has the instinct to consume, he was just lucky to have met a soul beast army, prolonging his struggle.”

“Let me lend you a hand in that case.”

Feng Jiu Ge slowly activated his immortal killer move — Destiny Song!

His voice was illusory and deep, it was filled with unique contradiction.

Initially, the song was like a small stream of water in the mountains, flowing slowly. Gradually, the stream turned into flowing lava that expanded the river’s width, in the range of mountains, it sounded like a dragon’s roaring echo.

At the same time, the river of lava on the mountain turned into a raging tide, swish swish swish, ebb and flow, it continued without stopping.

The lava and waves collided, reacting and creating steam that covered the entire sky.

The steam condensed into clouds that wanted to fly towards the high heavens.

Suddenly, lightning struck and thunder roared, the lightning bolts landed on the clouds, the immortals felt like they had fallen from the sky, they felt a sense of hollowness in their hearts.

Phantom or real, high or low, being proud and confident at times, feeling lost and desperate during disasters. Bending one’s back at times, spreading one’s words at times...

Feng Jiu Ge’s expression soon turned pale.

His current destiny song was far stronger than before. In fact, his voice was wondrously beautiful and contained the essence of heaven and earth, clearly, after retrieving the heavenly melody, Feng Jiu Ge had gained a lot of insight.

Destiny song only lasted for over ten breaths of time before Feng Jiu Ge stopped using it and retreated.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was still engulfed in terrifying flames as he growled in pain, it was as if Feng Jiu Ge’s destiny song had no effect.

However, three days later.

The red flames on Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s body went from burning hot to an grey-blue cold.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable quietened down like an injured beast, he finally had time to recuperate.

He did not refine the wild fire Gu, while fire Gu also stopped attacking and resisting him. Inside his body, a certain intricate relationship was formed as they started helping each other!

Puff, huff, puff......

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s breathing became slower as the huge grey-blue fire around him became dimmer, until it was completely gone.

His entire body was like a gravestone, he gave off an endless aura of death accompanied by an icy chill.

Then, at the next moment!

Rumble!

Flames surged and burst out over several thousand li, quickly spreading throughout the area in all directions.

Everywhere it went, living beings crumbled, they broke down and burned into ashes as their soul essence was rapidly absorbed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, it was as if they were returning to the source.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s injuries healed quickly, his body also started to expand at an observable rate.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2286: Derivation’s Immortal Might

The shocking change to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who was inside the two heavens ruined the plans of the venerables again.

Eastern Sea.

Fang Yuan raised his head and used his investigative killer move.

He saw that the icy flame had covered half of the immemorial two heavens, everywhere it went, all life was extinguished. Even immemorial desolate beasts could not last long.

This was definitely a slaughter.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable benefited greatly from this, his entire body had grown to a hundred times of when he was in Crazed Demon Cave! He had over ten thousand black pillar-like arms now.

His terrifying aura and killing intent permeated the entire heaven.

Although he was motionless in the two heavens, he took the role of the old sun of white heaven, he was now the absolute overlord of the night sky.

“Feng Jiu Ge...” Fang Yuan’s gaze was deep.

He had already found out that the cause of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s huge change was Feng Jiu Ge.

Ever since the fate war, Feng Jiu Ge had betrayed Heavenly Court and gone missing.

To think that the next time he showed up, he did such a shocking thing.

But the suspicious thing to Fang Yuan was that Feng Jiu Ge seemed to still have his pseudo venerable battle strength!

This was the only explanation for how he could quickly affect Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and escape successfully.

Be it Fang Yuan, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, or Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, they could not use their investigative method on Spectral Soul Demon Venerable all the time. This required thoughts and immortal essence.

That was also why Star Constellation Immortal Venerable created the star array calculation formation, it helped her to monitor the whole of Central Continent.

“Destiny song...”

“It is able to allow Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and the wild fire Gu to coexist, achieving harmony. Feng Jiu Ge’s killer move has gotten stronger.”

Fang Yuan was now a refinement path venerable.

In the entire world, aside from the venerables, Feng Jiu Ge was the number one person who deserved Fang Yuan’s attention the most!

This person’s talent was shocking to the world, he was even Feng Jin Huang’s father.

In the five hundred years of Fang Yuan’s previous life, Feng Jiu Ge was plotted against by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and died while attacking Lang Ya blessed land.

Now that Fang Yuan thought about it, he could see that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had also paid a lot of attention to Feng Jiu Ge!

Precisely because of this, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable plotted and killed Feng Jiu Ge. Otherwise, during those five hundred years, he would have created his own legend and shone brightly like the stars.

The weird thing was that although Spectral Soul plotted to kill Feng Jiu Ge in that life, currently, Feng Jiu Ge seemed to be helping the former instead!

“So, is the pseudo venerable battle strength that Feng Jiu Ge possesses a result of future self or did he cultivate himself during this period of time?”

Fang Yuan pondered deeply.

This was a crucial question.

If Feng Jiu Ge still had future self killer move, that meant that he still had a close connection to Red Lotus Demon Venerable!

In that case, the person behind Feng Jiu Ge would be Red Lotus Demon Venerable, meaning he was plotting from behind the scenes.

Fang Yuan knew about the relationship between these two.

Back then, after he failed and was reborn, in order to destroy fate Gu, he gave crucial intel to Feng Jiu Ge and allowed him to get his own Red Lotus true inheritance.

Why was Feng Jiu Ge helping Spectral Soul Demon Venerable? There was also Heavenly Court’s attitude towards him that Fang Yuan had to consider now.

Right now, Fang Yuan knew that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had sent Heavenly Court Gu Immortals to hunt down the remnants of Shadow Sect like Fairy Zi Wei. Then, why was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable not going after Feng Jiu Ge? Why did they leave Feng Jin Huang alone, as if they forgot about her?

What was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable planning?

Spring Autumn Cicada could not be used anymore, while Fang Yuan did not know of many secrets and hidden information now.

And because he lacked effective investigative methods that could be used on the venerables, he had to pretend to be weak and only make guesses blindly.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had already healed, after leaving Heavenly Court, she had been refining Central Continent's wisdom path dao marks these days.

At the same time, she was making deductions.

"Feng Jiu Ge... destiny song..."

"I cultivate wisdom path which controls certainty. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable cultivates luck path which explores uncertainty. This destiny song actually contains both certainty and uncertainty, it involves heaven path and human path!"

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable recalled her own experiences, throughout humanity's history, or even the variant human's history, in terms of pure talent, Feng Jiu Ge was definitely top ten.

"Feng Jiu Ge met with Fairy Zi Wei and the rest, he might have helped them. Right now, he helped Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, these actions will greatly benefit his destiny song killer move."

Heavenly Court's pursuers failed.

They could not bring back Fairy Zi Wei and the rest.

But through the traces left behind, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable managed to deduce many details of the truth.

At this moment, inside Heavenly Court.

Derivation formation was currently in operation.

Che Wei and several other Gu Immortals stood before the formation and waited.

The ten children of human path had left Heavenly Court already, their memories regarding this were deleted.

This was done by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable personally, she did not remove their memories carelessly, she had altered them meticulously.

In the following period, these ten children of human path would have bursts of 'inspiration' which would allow them to 'create' the respective Gu recipes.

Fang Yuan was a vigilant person, but Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was even more vigilant when it came to this.

She did the same to anyone who had come into contact with the derivation

formation.

In this case, as long as one did not have higher wisdom path attainment than her, they would not be able to gain intel about the derivation formation from the ten children of human path.

The derivation formation was too important to Heavenly Court.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had to think of ways to protect this secret to the best of her abilities!

Ruan Dan flew out from the derivation formation.

Che Wei and the rest quickly went up and asked for the results.

Ruan Dan’s expression soon went back to normal, it was extremely excited: ”Amazing, this derivation formation is too amazing! I obtained over a thousand pill path Gu recipes, among which are a hundred Immortal Gu recipes! I’ve tried to create pill path killer moves for so long without much progress, but now, I obtained more than two hundred killer moves, among which, there are over fifty immortal killer moves!!”

Che Wei and the rest were shook.

Ruan Dan was the first to enter the formation, to think that the gains would be so immense!

Different from the ten children of human path, Ruan Dan was a legendary immemorial desolate beast, it had a long lifespan and countless experiences, its foundation was very deep.

“Friend Ruan Dan, although you created pill path, you do not know much about other paths. With this derivation formation, you can come into contact with the research results of other paths by using pill path as the core. After creating a resonance, countless new results would be derived, thus, your gains were so immense!” Feng Da Qi analyzed.

She was a Gu Immortal of Heavenly Lotus Sect, this time, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had chosen her to become one of the people entering the derivation formation.

Ruan Dan nodded in agreement: ”Fairy Feng is right. For a brand new path like pill path, the first step of development is to popularize it. After many generations of Gu cultivators come into contact and cultivate it, through their various life experiences and perspectives, they will slowly build pill path with their unique ideas.”

“After that, more and more cultivators will emerge, among which, geniuses will create new advancements and breakthrough, obtaining huge research results.”

“But now, the derivation formation has taken the place of all these steps. Using all sorts of exceptional Gu Immortal inheritances, the historical characters are helping us in this development. In just a short period of time, we can accumulate a vast amount of pill path foundation.”

After hearing the analysis, Che Wei and the rest had increasingly heated gazes.

“I will go next.” Che Wei was the second person to enter the formation.

Several days later, he came out.

His gains were as huge as Ruan Dan!

The immortals continued their analysis.

Ruan Dan said: ”Friend Che Wei, although you have only created weapon path for a short time unlike me, you are a purebred human with the strongest spirituality. Therefore, your gains are equal to mine. If you had created this path for a longer time, your gains will even exceed mine.”

Che Wei shook his head in response: ”I do not agree with this conjecture.”

“Any path that reaches grandmaster attainment can learn about any path using their own as a foundation. Through their path, they can mimic the expertise of other paths. For example, one can use fire path Gu worms to create a move with water path abilities.”

“The derivation formation might be a forceful type of mimicry.”

“The vast number of true inheritances stored in the immortal formation were described through Ruan Dan’s pill path and my weapon path. For example, the iron rod Gu recipe that I obtained is the result of converting metal path into weapon path. There is also leather whip Gu which is the resulting derivation by combining transformation path and weapon path.”

Che Wei’s words made the immortals’ understanding of derivation formation deepen again.

It was Feng Da Qi’s turn.

She only had rank seven cultivation level but was Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable’s bloodline descendant.

After entering the formation, she only spent a day and night before getting out.

After returning, she had a smile on her face.

“I’ve obtained painting path research results, next, I will refine painting path Immortal Gu and change my vital Gu to painting path.”

The immortals congratulated her.

The use of the derivation formation was not just to help develop human path, pill path, and weapon path, it could also extract the specific essence of the various paths to create new branches of an existing path.

Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable did not leave any painting path inheritance for his descendants.

But through the derivation formation, Heavenly Court could directly nurture their own painting path Gu Immortals!

Gu are the essence of heaven and earth, man is the spirit of all living beings.

There was no point in discussing the strongest Gu worm, only the strongest Gu Immortal mattered.

The way of Gu involved nurturing, use and refinement, these were all integral.

Limitless Demon Venerable used rank nine derivation Immortal Gu and other cores to create his Crazed Demon formation.

He created the truthful floating ice and tried to utilize his eternal life research results but failed in the end, more than half of the truthful floating ice was lost. The remaining portion was split into three by Fang Yuan and the two venerables.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used derivation Immortal Gu to create the derivation formation, allowing the various paths to develop rapidly. A vast amount of research results were produced, saving a lot of time and also preventing these results from leaking to the outside world, which was a huge drawback of development.

If Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had such a method, he would not have needed to make his Blood Sea clone distribute blood path inheritances worldwide.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2287: Spectral Heaven

For the three venerables, the shocking change to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was only beneficial to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Longevity Heaven.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable let out a breath of turbid air as he sat cross-legged with a bare upper body.

Muscles could be seen on his strong upper body, his black chest hair gave off a manly aura.

“My injuries have healed.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable let out a sigh of relief.

If Spectral Soul Demon Venerable continued to fight against fire Gu, the two of them would suffer heavy injuries, causing the venerables to fight over them again.

However, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s injuries were more severe than Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

If he chose not to participate, he would lose the opportunity.

But if he went with such injuries, he would be at a disadvantage.

Not long ago, because of the contest over light Gu, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable face pressure from two venerables. He even had to protect his son Light Emperor, causing him to pay a huge price in the end.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable healed long ago while Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had only just recovered.

Due to Feng Jiu Ge’s action, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable became much stronger, forcing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Great Love Immortal Venerable to continue observing.

Thus, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable benefited from this.

The feeling was very familiar to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable as it was experienced in his previous life.

He was a luck path cultivator who explored the uncertainty.

The stronger he got, the more advantages these uncertain situations would bring to him.

After preparing for a while, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable activated his luck path investigative killer move.

But this time, he did not inspect the venerables, he checked himself.

After Star Constellation Immortal Venerable refined Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable reduced the number of times he inspected others, he started to focus on himself.

His luck was not good.

“I successfully obtained rank nine light Gu but my luck is still bad. Just what is causing this bad luck?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable frowned.

“Don’t tell me the reason is because rank nine light Gu does not suit me? Furthermore, it is currently injured and is being nurtured inside Light Emperor’s body?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable guessed.

Rank nine light Gu was injured after Fang Yuan used his crippled refinement killer move.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not have any method to heal it, but Light Emperor was more specialized in light path, he thought of the only solution to this.

That was to use his light body to refine and nurture it, eventually converting light Gu into his vital Gu, allowing him to make use of it. If this was a normal wild rank nine light Gu, Light Emperor would have no way of refining it.

But light Gu was injured, its will was heavily affected, together with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s help, Light Emperor saw a chance of success.

This had its flaws.

For a long period of time, Light Emperor would lose all mobility, he even needed assistance in eating and drinking.

Longevity Heaven immediately lost a pseudo venerable battle strength expert.

But Longevity Heaven could not do anything else.

They could not give light Gu to Fang Yuan and ask him to repair it!

This was a rank nine Immortal Gu.

While Fang Yuan was someone with no bottom-line.

Giant Sun and Light Emperor were not stupid enough to ask Fang Yuan for help.

Looking at his poor luck, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable sighed helplessly: ”If I had obtained a rank nine luck path Immortal Gu instead of light Gu, no matter which luck path Gu it is, the situation will be much better now.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was also very familiar with this situation.

Although many sudden events would often benefit him in the end, most of the time, they were not things that he needed.

After all, this was uncertainty, not certainty.

Currently, if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had a rank nine luck path Immortal Gu, he would be able to create a rank nine investigative killer move and find out who was his biggest threat.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not have a rank nine luck path Immortal Gu, thus, when he used an investigative killer move amplified by Longevity Heaven’s dao marks, he could only see the general trend of the luck.

The contest of three venerables, the rampage of the senseless Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, the interference of pseudo venerables like Feng Jiu Ge, as well as the possible plotting of other venerables in the background. All of these types of luck intertwined together and prevented Giant Sun Immortal Venerable from seeing the specific details, he could only see a trend.

Rank nine Immortal Gu was very important.

It signified a qualitative change!

No matter how much the amplification of dao marks became, it was only a quantitative boost.

“I may be the person with the most progress among the three venerables. Looking at this luck, it is likely that the other venerables will attack me because of rank nine light Gu. This will cause their luck to collectively suppress mine.”

“Of course, there is another possibility — someone surpassed me! I’ve already lost my advantage. But if that is the case, who is the one hiding so deeply?”

Like what Fang Yuan did when he thought about Feng Jiu Ge and Heavenly Court, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could only make a guess, he could not see the truth immediately.

Now, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had to leave Longevity Heaven and continue to refine Northern Plains’ dao marks.

After thoroughly refining Northern Plains’ luck path dao marks, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would expand his base from Longevity Heaven to the entire Northern Plains.

There were many benefits in this.

For example, if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable got attacked by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Great Love Immortal Venerable again.

He would not need to escape to Longevity Heaven, as long as he was inside Northern Plains, he would receive the amplification of power.

Naturally, the amplification would be weaker than being in Longevity Heaven, but it would be enough to resist two venerables.

At the same time, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s control over Northern Plains would increase, he would be able to specially nurture Gu Immortal descendants. He would not need to worry about a certain shameless venerable who could slaughter the Huang Jin tribes while disregarding his status, who Giant Sun

Immortal Venerable did not have a good way to stop.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable understood that as time dragged on, the venerables would continue to get stronger, and as they progressed, the immortal essence storage would also become more abundant.

At the initial stage of development, the venerables lacked immortal essence. At this time, it would be the best opportunity to refine the natural dao marks of the world.

If he missed this opportunity, it would get tougher.

If one was interrupted when refining natural dao marks, their progress would be very small.

If other venerables took the lead, it would be even worse.

For example, if Star Constellation Immortal Venerable first refined the wisdom path dao marks of an area, then her strength would be much higher there.

By then, if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable wanted to refine the luck path dao marks of that area and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable attacks, his best option would be to retreat.

Excluding the senseless Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, among the three venerables, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had the clearest advantage.

He had refined the most luck path dao marks.

Once he refined all of Northern Plains’ luck path dao marks, he would not allow the other venerables to attempt the refinement here.

Be it Star Constellation Immortal Venerable who would want to refine Northern Plains’ wisdom path dao marks or Fang Yuan who would want to refine Northern Plains’ refinement path dao marks, they would have to face Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s all-out retaliation!

Thus, now was the best timing to refine natural dao marks.

After some time, the difficulty would rise greatly.

Other than this reason, there was another crucial secret that forced the venerables to quickly refine these dao marks.

That was, one had to completely refine all the natural dao marks in the world to maintain their supreme grandmaster attainment level!

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable emitted a cold flame and slaughtered the lifeforms of the two heavens while the three venerables refined their respective natural dao marks, the five regions’ Gu Immortal world experienced temporary peace for the moment.

Countless beast groups were escaping from the fused two heavens, landing in the five regions.

The super forces of the five regions were extremely busy, they had to move out to defend their territories.

As most of the beast groups were killed by the icy flame, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s body continued to expand as his aura surged like the boundless sea.

Some time later, his icy flame covered the entire two heavens.

As the three venerables and countless lifeforms of the five regions watched, the blue fire burned for two days and night.

The white heaven and black heaven fragments in the fused two heavens melted and joined together in this blue fire, becoming one entity.

A new heaven had appeared!

People named it — spectral heaven.

With immemorial black heaven as the foundation and white heaven being completely conquered and absorbed, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who had devoured black heaven’s heavenly spirit became the ruler of the new heaven.

His body was colossal, on par with the previous sun.

As the blue fire slowly extinguished in spectral heaven, only Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s body was left burning, even the smallest spark of fire on his body was tens of feet tall.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable became the greatest source of light in spectral heaven, he emitted a cold and chilly killing intent at all times, spreading his aura to the five regions.

This was an unprecedented change!

Even in the five hundred years of his previous life, Fang Yuan did not see such a phenomenon.

The entire Gu cultivation world’s environment was slowly changed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Light path was suppressed while dark path was amplified.

Conflicts and deaths arose all around the world, most lifeforms including Gu Masters could not avoid the influence of the immense killing intent.

Soul beasts started to appear all over the world.

At the same time, heaven’s will also stabilized.

Eastern Sea.

A rank five female Gu Master looked at spectral heaven and the majestic figure at the center of it.

She looked for a while before quickly lowering her head, retracting her gaze entirely.

In just this short time, the killing intent in her heart accumulated to her limit, almost exceeding her endurance. If the killing intent overwhelmed her, she would need to perform a massacre to calm down.

The female Gu Master was very old, she was ninety-three years old. Her name was Hua Ben Ku, she had just passed down the role of clan leader in Eastern Sea’s Hua clan.

She stared at Spectral Soul Demon Venerable intentionally.

After the killing intent dissipated, she started the greatest attempt of her life.

Immortal ascension!

First step, breaking the aperture.

Heaven and earth qi surged and formed grand calamities and tribulations.

Hua Ben Ku had a solemn expression, although she had the information provided by Hua clan, facing the calamities and tribulations now, she was still shook internally.

Second step, taking in qi.

Heaven, earth, and human qi surrounded Hua Ben Ku as she focused to try and balance all three qi.

At the same time, natural inspiration occurred!

Regarding the external calamities and tribulations, Hua clan’s Gu Immortals took action to defend her.

This was the benefit of being a super force.

Third step, putting in the Gu.

Her vital Gu was placed into the lump of three qi as an explosion occurred, creating a new small world!

At this time, Hua Ben Ku’s rank six immortal aperture was formed, her immortal ascension succeeded.

A high grade blessed land.

But there was no extra heaven and earth qi to refine a vital Immortal Gu.

But Hua Ben Ku was satisfied.

She could barely calm down.

During the natural inspiration, she had huge gains.

Her lifetime accumulation included her proudest killer move, it had received a qualitative transformation, becoming an immortal killer move.

As long as she used this move, she could sit on top of an Immortal Gu House and cry, it would cause the target to suffer heavy damages and even reduce the reputation of the Gu Immortals inside.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2288: Trend of Immortal Ascension

After spectral heaven formed, it gradually stabilized. The beast groups that escaped earlier returned and lived in the new heaven again.

All the various grotto-heavens’ doors were tightly shut as they condensed into one spot, although there were some losses, they had managed to survive at least.

Despite Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s dominance of spectral heaven, he rarely moved.

The two heavens’ grotto-heavens tried not to open their doors and connect to the outside world, otherwise, it was possible that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable might approach them.

Fang Yuan, Star Constellation, and Giant Sun were busy refining natural dao marks, they were competing with each other as they fell into another deadlock.

While the venerables had ceased fire and everyone gained some respite, a large number of Gu Immortal seeds started to prepare for the attempt at immortal ascension!

Central Continent.

Heavenly Lotus Sect’s headquarters.

“Mu Huai greets first supreme elder.” A newly advanced rank six Gu Immortal knelt on the ground and greeted.

Heavenly Lotus Sect’s first supreme elder nodded and gave Mu Huai some words of encouragement before telling the immortal beside him: ”Wu Zhang, you nurtured Mu Huai so you will be the one making arrangements for him now.”

“Understood.” Wu Zhang answered as he brought Mu Huai out of the hall.

Wu Zhang was the fifth supreme elder of Heavenly Lotus Sect, long ago, he had created the Five Virtues Sect in Central Continent under his own name.

Five Virtues Sect had the five virtues elders, among them, Mu Huai was the wood virtue elder.

This time, he took a risk to undergo immortal ascension and succeeded, obtaining a medium grade blessed land. Wu Zhang brought him to Heavenly Lotus Sect as he gained the first supreme elder’s recognition.

From now on, Mu Huai was a member of Wu Zhang’s faction.

Days later, in Northern Plains.

An immortal ascension had just ended. Ouyang Bi Sang only had half of his body remaining, but he barely survived.

“Second brother, you succeeded!” Mo Shi Kuang shouted loudly as he ran forward in excitement.

Ouyang Bi Sang could only smile as he could not speak, he looked towards Liu Wen Wu with a grateful gaze.

If not for Liu Wen Wu’s help, Ouyang Bi Sang would have definitely died.

Right now, all thanks to Liu Wen Wu’s immortal killer move, Ouyang Bi Sang managed to survive.

Liu Wen Wu was once Liu tribe’s Gu Immortal seed, he was the sworn brother of Ouyang Bi Sang and Mo Shi Kuang, they had participated in the Imperial Court contest.

Liu Wen Wu was already a Gu Immortal, with his help, Ouyang Bi Sang also succeeded.

Liu Wen Wu understood what Ouyang Bi Sang was thinking, he smiled gently: ”Second brother, go ahead and rest. With me here, you will be safe.”

Ouyang Bi Sang did not even have the strength to nod, he shut his eyes and fell asleep. This showed how much trust he had in Liu Wen Wu.

“Big brother! Second brother has already succeeded in the immortal ascension, I can do it too. When are you going to help me? I want to try it too.” Mo Shi Kuang showed a heated gaze and spoke in an anxious tone.

Liu Wen Wu smiled bitterly: ”Third brother, calm down. You’ve seen what happened to your second brother, the immortal ascension is very dangerous, he almost failed to balance the three qi and nearly failed completely.”

“With just my help, it is very unreliable to try and go through the unpredictable immortal ascension calamities and tribulations.”

“We were lucky this time because the calamities and tribulations were within my abilities. But you need to know that there are all kinds of tribulations, by the time you undergo immortal ascension, we may not be so lucky.”

“This...” Mo Shi Kuang scratched his head.

Liu Wen Wu added: ”Let’s wait a while for your second brother’s cultivation level to stabilize. Once he has some immortal methods, we can work together to help you, that will be safer.”

“Brother, you are right, I’ll wait.” Mo Shi Kuang agreed with the words and changed his decision.

But he did not know that Liu Wen Wu was sighing internally.

Long ago, Liu Wen Wu was just a Gu Master, he did not have such a wide vision, thus, he became sworn brothers with Mo Shi Kuang.

But after becoming a Gu Immortal, he realized that the world was ruled by humanity, all variant humans were marginalized.

Mo Shi Kuang’s inkman identity was increasingly sensitive.

After Liu Wen Wu helped Ouyang Bi Sang to become an immortal, the latter would become Liu tribe’s external supreme elder. He would be Liu Wen Wu’s supporter and stand on the same political side as him.

Even though Ouyang Bi Sang was a purebred human, Liu tribe’s other factions still attacked them —

Why was Liu Wen Wu helping an external member instead of nurturing Liu tribe’s own Gu Masters?

If Mo Shi Kuang became an immortal through Liu Wen Wu’s help, it would be an even worse situation when he becomes a member of his political faction.

This would be a weakness for the other factions to target!

Sometimes, Liu Wen Wu envied the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent.

The supreme elders of these ancient sects were able to create their own sects under their personal name to gather and distribute Central Continent’s resource points. If they were able to nurture Gu Immortals, then those would become their subordinates or companions.

This was a superb political method by the ten great ancient sects to control Central Continent.

But this could not work in the super clan dominated regions. Creating one’s own force was too much of a taboo.

Like in Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s lifetime, he wanted a hereditary monarchy, he wanted to unify and rule the entire world.

Eastern Sea’s Hua Ben Ku, Central Continent’s Mu Huai, and Northern Plains’ Ouyang Bi Sang...

With the deep foundation of the super forces, they knew the secrets behind immortal ascension, thus, many of their Gu Immortal seeds were quickly using the opportunity to ascend.

Southern Border.

“Oh no!” Yi Peng had a grim expression, he watched as the heaven, earth and human qi lost their balance.

Within the qi lump, Gu Master Yi Chong failed the immortal ascension, by the time the three qi lump dispersed, he was almost reduced to a stick, his arms and legs were gone, his entire body was a bloody mess.

Calamities and tribulations could be resisted by allies, but the balancing of three qi was something that only the Gu Master could handle, no one else could help.

“Sigh, you were too immersed in the natural inspiration. I already told you not to be greedy!” Yi Peng landed beside Yi Chong and sighed regrettably.

Yi Chong did not move, after a few breaths of time, he died.

Half a month later.

On an unknown mountain in Central Continent, Ben Duo Yi succeeded in the immortal ascension.

“I’ve finally become a rank six Gu Immortal.” He had a complex emotion, while he felt joy and excitement, there was also regret.

In order to resist the calamities and tribulations while balancing the three qi, he gave up on the chance of natural inspiration.

Ben Duo Yi’s master was Yu Mu Chun, a refinement path quasi-great grandmaster, and also a member of Shadow Sect. From this aspect, Ben Duo Yi was also a remnant of Shadow Sect.

He was chosen by Yu Mu Chun due to his exceptional talent. Ben Duo Yi was more witty than the average hairy man, he had clear thoughts and did not lose to humans in terms of spirituality.

This successful immortal ascension also proved that Yu Mu Chun had great foresight.

After cleaning up, Ben Duo Yi quickly left the mountain.

Not long after, a Gu Immortal arrived at this place.

“This is it.”

“The star array calculation formation showed that someone underwent tribulation here.”

“Oh? Seems like a lone cultivator.”

After inspecting, this Gu Immortal obtained some clearer clues.

His eyes started to shine.

The immortal ascension of lone cultivators was very difficult, since they succeeded, it meant that they were very valuable.

“If I can recruit this person successfully, I will earn a huge sum of contribution points. This person can also be in my faction in the future.”

Places with people would have competition for benefits, leading to conflict.

As long as the internal conflict of a sect was well managed, it would be a great system for eliminating the weak and nurturing the strong.

The sect higher-ups were willing to see this.

However, this Gu Immortal did not know that the person undergoing tribulation was not a purebred human but a hairy man.

Ben Duo Yi’s immortal ascension was just one of countless others.

First, the five regions’ super forces’ Gu Immortal seeds made their attempt, afterwards, lone immortals and demonic cultivators also gave it a shot.

Gradually, the trend of immortal ascension was formed.

The immortal ascension trend involved the righteous path, demonic cultivator, and even lone cultivators. Many lone cultivators like Ben Duo Yi emerged and showed themselves, surprising the world with their appearance.

The super forces of the five regions were also involved. Among super forces, there was even some hidden competition!

Tie clan’s Tie Ruo Nan became a rank six metal path Gu Immortal.

Shang clan’s Shang Xin Ci succeeded in her immortal ascension.

Two of Western Desert’s Lin clan’s Gu Masters became immortals at the same time.

Eastern Sea’s Nan Gong clan did not fall behind, in just seven days, two Gu Masters took a risk and succeeded, they both had considerable gains.

Next, Southern Border’s Tie clan spread joyous news again.

The revived Tie Mu Bai and Tie Bai Qi both succeeded in their immortal ascension.

The one that shocked the five regions’ Gu Immortal world the most was Southern Border’s Wu clan.

Wu clan’s Zhong Yi, Wu Shen Tong, Divine Doctor Sheng Shou, Wei Shen Jing, and others became rank six Gu Immortals, there were a total of nine people who succeeded, this was the number one record in the five regions!

Wu clan was lacking Gu Immortals previously, but under Wu Yong’s reform, they took in a large number of external elders.

With these Gu Immortals’ presence, Wu clan immediately became the Southern Border’s super force with the most number of Gu Immortals!

Immediately, all sorts of congratulatory letters from various forces were sent to Wu Yong via treasure yellow heaven or information path Gu worms.

Wu clan gained a huge amount of fame but Wu Yong only snickered coldly without feeling happy at all.

“Such celebrations are just a form of self-consolation for the chaotic future under the rule of the venerables. So what if we have more Gu Immortals, can we be safe? Against the venerables, we are all ants.”

“Moreover, in terms of numbers, Heavenly Court, Longevity Heaven, and the Heaven and Earth Great Love Alliance definitely have the most number of immortal ascensions. They are huge and possess too many super forces under them.”

Wu Yong was extremely clear of the situation.

He knew that the true trial was not the number of successful immortal ascensions, it was the huge impact that these new external supreme elders would cause after joining Wu clan, when they go against the traditional factions that had been long established through time.

As the first supreme elder of Wu clan, Wu Yong needed to maintain the stability of the clan, if there was too many internal conflicts, they would weaken themselves. In that case, he might as well not implement this change.

Central Continent.

Xiao Qi Xing descended from the sky. There was some dust on his white robe.

His eyebrows were sharp like swords, his body was straight like a spear, his expression was cold and he gave off an aura of pride.

“Good, good, good.” Gu Immortal Xiao Bai Hong laughed as he stroked his beard, looking at Xiao Qi Xing with a gaze of appreciation: ”As expected of my beloved great-grandson. You went through the immortal ascension without external help.”

Xiao Qi Xing replied: ”Great-grandfather, this is nothing to be proud of. Many lone cultivators could achieve it, so why can’t I? Rank six is merely the starting point.”

“Hahaha, well said!” Xiao Bai Hong’s laughter became even louder.

Next, Xiao Qi Xing asked the other nine children of human path.

“What? Sun Yuan Hua, Gu Ting, and the rest became rank six Gu Immortals but did not refine their vital Gu into an Immortal Gu?”

“Hehe, they are really trash!”

Different from the others, the immortal ascension of the ten children of human path were kept secret.

They were the key to developing human path in Central Continent, they were the future pillars of human path. Before they grew to a certain level, it was better to let them grow safely.

Some succeeded in their immortal ascension, some died while taking risks.

Some made their ancestors proud, their names were spread throughout the world, while some kept quiet and developed earnestly, keeping a low profile.

Some did not try to undergo immortal ascension, like Feng Jin Huang.

Some did not even have the qualification to try, for example, Southern Border’s Xia Cha and Ba Shi Ba.

There were also some who were preparing to undergo immortal ascension, like Western Desert’s Mo Li, and sovereign immortal aperture’s Gu Yue Fang Xiang.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2289: Natural Inspiration

Southern Border.

Deep within a certain Earth Trench.

Kong Ri Tian made the final inspection of the Gu formation and confirmed that it was operational.

For the last ten or so days, he had purposely picked this location and set up several Gu formations in the vicinity of over ten li.

“Although I am not specialized in formation path, I can still create some simple mortal formations. With these formations, you will be able to quickly notice any peculiarities in the surroundings.”

“You have my guidance, your chance of success at immortal ascension is high.” Kong Sheng Tian’s will was inside Kong Ri Tian’s mind, he said with some confidence.

Kong Ri Tian nodded: ”Ancestor, is there anything else I need to know?”

Kong Sheng Tian thought about it and said: ”Don’t be greedy during the natural inspiration, but remember to make good use of it. Since you cultivate qi path, ask heaven’s will questions about qi path related matters, don’t go after the secrets of other paths, it will not be worth it.”

“Natural inspiration has its limits, you can’t receive an infinite amount of information.”

“Furthermore, when asking qi path related questions, don’t be too broad or demand too much. Don’t ask for rank eight or nine qi path Immortal Gu recipes, you won’t receive a complete one. Even if you obtain an incomplete recipe, it may not even have five percent of the content!”

Kong Ri Tian kept these words in his mind as he nodded: ”Then I’ll ask qi path related questions that are problems that I currently face.”

“That is the right thing to do.” Kong Sheng Tian laughed loudly.

Kong Ri Tian shattered his aperture and started the tribulation.

Heaven and earth qi surged in the surroundings, forming a three days flying ring tribulation.

The flying ring was powerful and soared in the sky, lasting for three days and night.

Kong Ri Tian resisted with difficulty, eventually becoming a rank six Gu Immortal with a high grade blessed land.

Kong Sheng Tian’s will sighed: ”Your luck is very poor to have encountered such a tribulation. This tribulation is very special, it will last for three days and nights, even if you destroy the ring, it will regenerate.”

“To protect you, I expended almost all my immortal essence.”

“I told you not to provoke that Xiao Yan.”

Kong Ri Tian was confused: ”What does this have to do with Xiao Yan?”

Kong Sheng Tian said: ”Xiao Yan’s innate luck is comparable to you before obtaining Sheng Tian true inheritance. Most importantly, he is Shang Xin Ci’s subordinate. This girl has incredible luck, going against Xiao Yan will cause your luck to be expended against Xiao Yan and Shang Xin Ci.”

“Now that your luck is low, when undergoing tribulation, the three days flying ring tribulation appeared to waste all of my remaining immortal essence.”

Kong Ri Tian had an unsightly expression.

Back then, he attacked Xiao Yan and wanted to frame it on the demonic path Gu Master Bao Tong. In the end, an accident occurred as he did not expect the tap fire to contain an immortal material flame.

Kong Ri Tian was not a Gu Master then, he did not want to waste the precious immortal essence for Kong Sheng Tian to use his immortal method, thus, an intense battle broke out and the tap fire was dispersed, causing the immortal essence flame inside to explode.

The immortal material flame burned the entire mountain and could not be stopped, Xiao Yan and Bao Tong were both trapped in the fire.

Kong Ri Tian managed to escape with the help of Kong Sheng Tian’s will.

To think that the backlash of that decision would influence Kong Ri Tian’s immortal ascension.

Kong Sheng Tian sighed: ”I underestimated that Shang Xin Ci. Unless your cultivation level and battle strength surpasses her completely, do not provoke her anymore. Do not even touch anyone who is close to her.”

Kong Ri Tian gritted his teeth: ”Ancestor, are you exaggerating this?”

“Hmph, foolish child. Innate luck[1. There are a lot of ways to write luck in Chinese, this one is written as ’qi variable’, which is why qi path is involved.] is profound and mystical, back in my days when qi path dominated the world, many geniuses were able to catch a glimpse of it profundity.”

“Do not underestimate the variance of luck.”

“Look at Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. I believe this person must have used innate luck as a reference when he created luck path.”

“You have already become a Gu Immortal, you should learn more. Gu cultivation paths are not independent of each other, they influence and affect each other in a connected way. The connection between qi path and luck path is this innate luck.”

Eventually, Kong Sheng Tian’s will convinced Kong Ri Tian after a lengthy talk.

“Gu Immortal cultivation is far more profound and deep than Gu Master cultivation. I am lucky to have your help, ancestor, otherwise, I would have to undergo immortal ascension without knowing anything!” Kong Ri Tian sighed.

Next, he consulted: ”What do I do now, what is the most important thing?”

Kong Sheng Tian’s will did not hesitate: ”Little fellow, although you become an immortal, there is not enough heaven and earth qi to help you refine your vital Gu into an Immortal Gu.”

“This qi path Gu worm is crucial to the entire Sheng Tian true inheritance.”

Kong Ri Tian understood at once: ”So now, I need to refine that Immortal Gu?”

Kong Sheng Tian’s will snorted coldly: ”Hehe, the ignorant have no fear. Do you think you can refine an Immortal Gu? Even if you go bankrupt, you will still have no chance of success.”

“Do you know that most rank six Gu Immortals do not even own one rank six Immortal Gu? Most rank seven Gu Immortals spend their lives trying to get a rank seven Immortal Gu. This is true even for venerables. Go and think about how hard it is for a Gu Immortal to refine an Immortal Gu that suits them!”

Kong Ri Tian was tongue-tied, he felt shocked: ”This is too hard, isn’t it?”

Kong Sheng Tian’s will sighed: ”Gu Immortal cultivation is tough, it is much risker than being a Gu Master. Kid, you need to learn to survive now. Each calamity and tribulation is a test. You have a higher starting point than many others, but you cannot act rashly. Especially in trying to refine an Immortal Gu, it can make you bankrupt without any gains in return.”

Kong Ri Tian was troubled: ”What do I do now? Ancestor, you told me that I should make my vital Gu an Immortal Gu, but you also told me that I cannot refine Immortal Gu. So what should I do? Stop beating around the bush.”

Kong Sheng Tian’s will snorted again: ”Kid, are you willing to listen to me now? earlier, I told you time and again not to provoke that Xiao Yan, but what did you do? You are just too young!”

“Yes, yes.” Kong Ri Tian quickly apologized: ”Ancestor, from now on, I will listen to you.”

Seeing that his descendant had given in, Kong Sheng Tian’s will stopped wasting time, he said: ”You are quite lucky to have a refinement path venerable like Fang Yuan in your era. Go make a transaction with him if you want to refine Immortal Gu.”

“Wait, you want me to transact with him in treasure yellow heaven? Aren’t you afraid...”

Before Kong Ri Tian could continue, Kong Sheng Tian rebuked him: ”Do you think a grand venerable will care about a rank six Immortal Gu? I know what you are afraid of, aren’t you afraid that Fang Yuan is still connected to Shang Xin Ci? But you did not do anything to her either.”

Kong Ri Tian heard this and thought about it, feeling a little hurt internally.

Kong Sheng Tian’s will was not wrong.

In Kong Ri Tian and Shang Xin Ci’s encounters, he had always suffered a loss. Last time, he was chased after by Shang Xin Ci and Wu Ji because of Sheng Tian true inheritance. Afterwards, he also suffered losses during his tribulation after provoking Xiao Yan.

Shang Xin Ci was having a great life now, while Kong Ri Tian was suffering more now.

“Let’s go to treasure yellow heaven, we will talk to Fang Yuan’s will.” Eventually, Kong Ri Tian said.

Back in Western Desert.

The sandstorm stopped.

Mo Li had rank six cultivation level, he bowed deeply at the featherman Gu Immortals in front of him.

“Friends from Yi clan, thank you for the help. Otherwise, I would not have been able to become a Gu Immortal on my own.” Mo Li thanked them sincerely.

Ever since the contest in Sand Heap blessed land, he was saved by the mysterious super force, Yi clan, in Western Desert.

Mo Li came to Yi clan’s headquarters and after interacting with them, he found that they were actually all feathermen.

This time, with the help of Yi clan’s Gu Immortals, Mo Li became an immortal.

Yi clan’s Gu Immortal Zhou Yi Kou said: ”Friend Mo Li, you are too polite. You are one who obtained Thieving Heaven true inheritance, that means you are his inheritor. Back then, our Yi clan’s ancestor was helped by Lord Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable and survived. With the help of his method, Yi clan was able to stay hidden for so many years.”

“Lord Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable is our benefactor, the entire Yi clan believes that Lord Demon Venerable has not died so easily without making a sound!”

“By helping you now, we also want to repay the debt we owe to Lord Thieving Heaven.”

“If one day in the future, Lord Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable revives, our entire Yi clan will follow him by his side.”

“Thus, we are comrades.”

Mo Li was deeply moved by the featherman Gu Immortal Zhou Yi Kou’s words, he had a warm feeling in his heart.

Central Continent.

Wei Wu Shang looked at the qi lump in his immortal aperture with a heated gaze.

Just earlier, he had succeeded in the tribulation, becoming a human path Gu Immortal.

He obtained a high grade blessed land, the remaining heaven and earth qi was enough for him to refine a vital Immortal Gu.

His vital Gu was thief Gu, it was already enveloped in heaven and earth qi now.

“I heard that Gu Ting, Sun Yuan Hua, and the rest became immortals but did not refine a human path Immortal Gu. I am different from them!”

“Recently, while deeply asleep at night, I had the urge to pee and woke up. At that moment, I gained a burst of inspiration and comprehended thief Gu’s Immortal Gu recipe.”

“With this Immortal Gu recipe and so much heaven and earth qi remaining, I can definitely refine thief Immortal Gu. Hahaha, this Immortal Gu recipe is worth waking up to pee at night.”

Although Wei Wu Shang entered the derivation formation, his memories were altered and caused him to think that it was inspiration that allowed him to create thief Immortal Gu’s recipe.

But...

After fifteen minutes.

Wei Wu Shang grunted as he fell to the ground. The heaven and earth qi were completely expended while his vital Gu was heavily damaged.

“I failed the Gu refinement?”

“Impossible!”

Wei Wu Shang could not believe what had happened.

“To refine the vital Gu, I used heaven and earth qi. This is borrowing the power of heaven and earth to refine Gu, it has nothing to do with my refinement path attainment. So how did I fail?”

Wei Wu Shang could only think of one explanation: ”I failed because Immortal Gu is unique?!”

Thinking of this, Wei Wu Shang shook his head.

In his view, this was even more impossible.

It meant that someone else had already refined thief Immortal Gu.

“I am the creator of thief Immortal Gu, how can anyone get the recipe before me? Unless... thief Immortal Gu already exists naturally in the world?”

“But that’s also strange... human path should not have developed this deeply yet.”

Wei Wu Shang fell into deep confusion as he contemplated.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2290: Heaven’s Will, Please Scram

Heavenly Court.

Another Gu Immortal walked out of the derivation formation.

This female immortal wore golden armor, there was a golden cape flowing down her back, extending from her shoulder to the ground.

She was taller than normal people and her shoulders were broad, when she walked, her long legs were the most eye-catching as they made her look beautiful and elegant.

Her nose bridge was tall, her lips were thin and her eyes were also thin. She had outstanding presence, she was like born royalty that ruled above the common man. When she looked at people, because of her height, she often had to look down. She had an authoritative aura that was fermented naturally within her, people would lower their heads and not dare to look at her directly, it was as if they could only look at her feet in order to not offend her.

She was Qin Ding Ling.

After walking out of the derivation formation, Qin Ding Ling quickly recovered her senses.

She turned around and looked at the derivation formation behind her, her eyes shone with unprecedented brightness.

She was very excited!

Her entry to the formation gave her great gains.

The most exciting thing that she obtained from this derivation formation was the hope for Heavenly Court to defeat Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Heaven Refining Demon Venerable, and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!

Why was that?

Simply because the derivation formation’s ability to develop a Gu cultivator’s path was just too powerful.

Like how Qin Ding Ling obtained huge gains when she entered the formation this time.

This was not just her personal growth, it helped to push the entire luck path forward in development.

Thanks to her going into the formation, the luck path of the world took a huge stride forward, obtaining huge development.

What did this mean?

This meant that as long as more luck path Gu Immortals like Qin Ding Ling entered the derivation formation, luck path would develop further.

When the number of times accumulate, the quantitative growth would trigger a qualitative transformation.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would be kicked out of his supreme grandmaster attainment level!

Supreme grandmaster attainment level meant that the Gu cultivator’s understanding of a certain path was equivalent to the world.

After Qin Ding Ling entered the formation, she became the core that used the vast number of inheritances in Heavenly Court to deduce many new research results of luck path.

These new results were just some accumulation that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could decipher with just a glance.

Because these luck path research results were still under the scope of the current profundity of luck path, it had not exceeded the existing limits. It was a quantitative growth but not a qualitative change.

But once the quantity accumulated, there would be a qualitative transformation.

Once there was a qualitative change, the entire world’s luck path attainment level would rise by a level, while Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s attainment level would lag behind.

At that point, he would no longer be a luck path supreme grandmaster!

In that case, he would not be a Dao Lord anymore and would not be able to refine natural luck path dao marks.

That would be a disastrous blow to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!

“It is a pity that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had been protecting luck path from getting spread widely in the world.”

“Otherwise, if there are more luck path Gu Immortals like me to enter the derivation formation, we will be able to kick Giant Sun Immortal Venerable out of supreme grandmaster attainment level.”

Qin Ding Ling expressed her pity towards this.

After leaving the derivation formation, she would not be able to enter for a long time. Going in forcefully would not have any gains but instead cause her irreparable harm.

It was too late to start nurturing luck path Gu Immortals.

Only a peak rank eight Gu cultivator like Qin Ding Ling could promote the advancement of the entire luck path.

Of course, it was not impossible for other luck path Gu Immortals or Gu Masters.

But they had not reached the apex of luck path, it was simply too hard to exceed the current accomplishments of heaven and earth.

For Heavenly Court, this was too costly to try and the gains they could derive from it were just too small.

“Next, it is my turn.” Fairy Maiden Soul smiled at Qin Ding Ling as she walked past the latter.

Fairy Maiden Soul went into the derivation formation and vanished.

She was Heavenly Court’s soul path great expert from Spectral Soul’s era, she was on par with Thunder Ghost True Monarch.

This entry into the formation would derive great gains, it would promote the development of the world’s soul path.

“It is a pity that Heavenly Court currently lacks refinement path great experts. There are many refinement path Gu Immortals in the ten great ancient sects but few are rank eight. Furthermore, none are great experts who have reached a certain height of refinement path.”

Qin Ding Ling pondered.

Heavenly Court’s derivation formation showed the terrifying power of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

But to kick a venerable out of supreme grandmaster attainment level, the difficulty was too high.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck path, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s soul path, and Heaven Refining Demon Venerable’s refinement path. There was a need to have many Gu cultivators in these three paths.

Heavenly Court had the derivation formation but rank nine derivation Gu was not refined by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, thus, it was still wild and took in natural essence on its own.

As a result, the derivation formation needed very little immortal essence to operate.

But Heavenly Court lacked crucial members.

Without enough great experts in these paths, the derivation formation could not kick the venerables out of their thrones.

“Maybe, this is the reason why Heavenly Court needs to focus on developing human path?” Qin Ding Ling had a flash of inspiration.

She could only see a small part of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s plan, she could not decipher the big picture.

Eastern Sea.

The sea was calm without any waves.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang was at the crucial moment of his immortal ascension.

Heaven, earth and human qi had already surrounded him completely.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang gritted his teeth as he did his best to balance the three qi, condensing them as much as he could.

“I must succeed!”

“I need to become a Gu Immortal to save my mother.”

“Also, I need to become a Gu Immortal and gain more strength to find my father!”

Gu Yue Fang Xiang cheered himself on, but soon, most of his attention was diverted to something else.

At this moment, he sensed heaven’s will.

This was the moment for natural inspiration!

“You must succeed.” The mermaid immortal Lian Ke Xin floated in the air openly as she appeared right beside Gu Yue Fang Xiang.

Her eyes did not move at all, she stared at him fixedly.

Unfortunately, the process of balancing the three qi could not be interrupted, otherwise, Lian Ke Xin would rather do it for him.

This time, she had taken the mission from the mission board to ’accidentally’ meet Gu Yue Fang Xiang and coax him to go to a place suitable for immortal ascension.

The truth was, Fang Yuan secretly opened sovereign immortal aperture’s door to bring Gu Yue Fang Xiang to the five regions.

While Gu Yue Fang Xiang was undergoing tribulation, Fang Yuan hid near him but was not idling.

He was secretly using a powerful rank nine heaven path killer move.

It was not obscured heavenly secret, this was — Stealing Heavenly Secret!

After activating this move, one could steal the knowledge of heaven’s will when a Gu Master undergoes ascension and experiences natural inspiration.

Stealing heavenly secret killer move’s first core was the rank nine heavenly secret Immortal Gu, the second core was rank eight great thief Immortal Gu.

Back then, when Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable first created rank eight heavenly secret Gu, the initial goal was to use it to sense heaven and earth, attempting to artificially enter natural inspiration.

Normally, a Gu cultivator would only have one opportunity at natural inspiration in their life.

When a Gu Master undergoes immortal ascension, they would use the opportunity when the aperture turns into an immortal aperture world to gain the recognition of heaven’s will and communicate with it.

At this time, the Gu Master would be able to ask heaven’s will questions, and their inquiries would be answered to a certain extent.

This was a once in a lifetime opportunity but the extent of answers was limited.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable succeeded.

There were no events in the world that heaven and earth did not know of.

Just using rank eight heavenly secret Gu would allow the Gu cultivator to ask heaven’s will and get an answer. It was able to expose the secrets of heaven and earth, even without any evidence, the Gu Immortal could reach the truth.

By using heavenly secret Gu with other Gu worms, before undergoing tribulation, they would be able to find out the content of the calamities and tribulations to make appropriate countermeasures.

And in terms of concealment, obscured heavenly secret was the best example.

If Fang Yuan used rank nine heavenly secret Gu alone, he would not be able to get any answers from heaven's will.

Because heaven's will did not like him.

Fang Yuan was one of the main culprits who destroyed fate Gu, heaven's will had been trying to kill him the entire time.

With such a relationship, how could heaven's will give him any answers?

Fang Yuan understood the advantages of natural inspiration. Earlier in the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, why did he produce so many powerful killer moves?

Other than self deduction, he had also secretly used the natural inspiration of many Gu Masters in his immortal aperture when they ascended, saving him precious time and energy.

Without these exceptional killer moves, Fang Yuan would have gotten killed by the two venerables.

Thus, natural inspiration was a huge reason why Fang Yuan emerged victorious in Crazed Demon Cave.

Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable wanted more natural inspiration opportunities, so did Fang Yuan!

Every Gu cultivator knew the precious value of natural inspiration.

To do this, Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable created rank eight heavenly secret Gu, what about Fang Yuan?

He made stealing heavenly secret killer move.

This killer move was created long ago, but it was only rank eight then and had limited strength.

Honestly speaking, it was worthless.

Too much immortal essence was expended for too little gains.

He might as well order Gu Masters to ask specific questions during their natural inspiration.

But this was in the past.

Right now, the situation had changed greatly.

The reason was rank nine heavenly secret Gu!

Where did rank nine heavenly secret Gu originate from?

Truthful floating ice.

This was Limitless Demon Venerable's arrangement, he had used the chaos outside the world to fuel the Crazed Demon formation, it was a grand accomplishment from countless years of effort.

Starting from the eighth layer, Crazed Demon Cave was isolated from the five regions. Crazed Demon formation was no exception.

But Fang Yuan refined rank nine heavenly secret Gu in his own sovereign immortal aperture, it was also isolated from the five regions.

This meant that the current Gu cultivation world did not have the recipe of rank nine heavenly secret Gu.

By having rank nine heavenly secret Gu, on just this point, Fang Yuan was already above the entire world!

Rank eight stealing heavenly secret had limited power but rank nine stealing heavenly secret was above the world, it surpassed even heaven’s will!

Each time there was a Gu Master undergoing natural inspiration, Fang Yuan would activate rank nine stealing heavenly secret killer move.

The gains were simply unimaginably immense!

Fang Yuan had a chance to observe everything that happened in the world.

In normal situations, the natural inspiration of Gu Masters was limited, this was the restriction set by heaven’s will. But Fang Yuan’s stealing heavenly secret could directly steal the answer, it did not matter what heaven’s will intended to do!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2291: Fang Yuan’s Admiration Towards Star Constellation

During this period of time, how many Gu Masters went through immortal ascension in sovereign immortal aperture?

Golden Fur Immortal Monarch, Hair Monster Grotto Lord, Lightning Lion Warrior, Dharma Lion Warrior, Solid Rock Warrior, Steel Rush Warrior, Frost Butterfly Warrior, An Chong, Ye Zhi, Crossing Heaven Immortal Monarch, Black Locust, Rainbow Rock Immortal Concubine, Great Wisdom Immortal Mother, Bing Yuan, Bing Zhuo, Ice Crystal Immortal Monarch, Shi Zong, Ke Xin Hong, the six eggmen of Rotten Egg grotto-heaven, Xiao He Jian, Green Forest Great Sage, and now, Gu Yue Fang Xiang!

Most of the Gu Immortals who died in Crazed Demon Cave were already revived. This was excluding those who died during the chaotic disaster.

But Fang Yuan did not revive them as Gu Immortals, he only gave them Gu Master cultivation level.

One was to save resources and prevent Human Sea from getting expended, the other reason was for this opportunity!

Fang Yuan had always had a broad vision, he was also skilled at creating plans.

But in the past, his plans were often unable to keep up with changes.

Now, he had rank nine cultivation level, he was a refinement path venerable. With the destruction of fate Gu, there were few things in the world that could disrupt his plans!

Fang Yuan had purposely made accumulations in the past, now, during this trend of immortal ascension, he benefited immensely.

In just a few months, in just sovereign immortal aperture alone, more than thirty Gu Masters went through immortal ascension, this was excluding Fang Yuan’s subordinate super forces in Eastern Sea and the two heavens.

Wu clan who was extremely famous now could not compare with such results.

But Fang Yuan concealed them all, not a single bit of information was leaked.

As for the benefits of immortal ascension, only a very small portion was for those who became rank six Gu Immortals, the bulk of the gains went to Fang Yuan through stealing heavenly secret!

This was something that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could not dream of obtaining.

The truth was, even Fang Yuan did not think that his gains would be so huge!!

He obtained a large number of killer moves, Gu recipes, Immortal Gu Houses, immortal formations, blueprints to construct battlefield killer moves, countless ways to cultivate resources, as well as the most comprehensive map of the current five regions, and the location of various wild Immortal Gu.

After satisfying his needs, he looked into human path, pill path, painting path, star path, luck path, and others.

The outcome was extremely surprising to Fang Yuan, he was pleasantly stunned!

He had only given it a test but he obtained musician Immortal Gu’s recipe, thief Immortal Gu’s recipe, soldier Immortal Gu’s recipe, sergeant Immortal Gu’s recipe, and others, he even obtained a vast number of pill path and painting path Immortal Gu recipes.

He also gained various profundities of luck path, star path, and soul path that were very useful to him.

Now that Fang Yuan recalled it, the human path gains shocked him the most: ”To think that human path has already developed to this extent in the current world.”

Fang Yuan did not know of the existence of the derivation formation, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had hidden it too well.

However, the root issue was with the derivation formation.

The core of the derivation formation was rank nine derivation Gu, it was not refined by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable so it was still a wild Immortal Gu.

It was not that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not want to refine it, but it could only be used in this situation as a wild Gu.

Once derivation Gu was refined by a person, it would become useless.

Limitless Demon Venerable had given it a try, thus, the Crazed Demon formation still used a wild rank nine derivation Gu as the core.

However, the innermost layers of Crazed Demon Cave were isolated from the main world, thus, it did not matter if derivation Gu was wild or not.

This was not the case for Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court had devoured too many nine heavens fragments, it was full of heaven’s will and was the largest heaven vein node in the two heavens.

When the two heavens were fusing, Heavenly Court had to mobilize all their rank eight experts and Immortal Gu Houses to survive the ordeal. In the end, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable personally took action after refining all of Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks. She stabilized the situation and prevented Spectral Soul Demon Venerable from finding them.

The current derivation formation was situated inside Heavenly Court, it was observable by heaven’s will.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not stop that as long as it was inside Heavenly Court

Heaven’s will was one of the foundations of Heavenly Court itself.

Other than Heavenly Court, where else could she safely put the derivation formation?

Nowhere.

At least, nowhere in Central Continent.

Thus, everything within the derivation formation was also known by heaven and earth.

This was a major flaw that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable knew.

But it did not matter.

Or rather, in her perspective, it did not matter.

The reason?

Heaven’s will did not like any of the venerables now.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had revived, how could heaven’s will allow people to revive?

Fang Yuan was even worse, he was a complete otherworldly demon, one of the main culprits who destroyed fate Gu.

Only Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was more favored by heaven’s will.

But he had lost his senses, even if he wanted to target Heavenly Court, with the door shut tight, he could not find his way in!

Even if he entered, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had the amplification of Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks, would she fear him? It would be the best chance to kill him!

Like how Fang Yuan did not know of the derivation formation, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also did not know that Fang Yuan had rank nine heavenly secret Gu.

And most importantly, Fang Yuan created stealing heavenly secret killer move!

Regardless of the inclination of heaven’s will, Fang Yuan could use natural inspiration to steal countless heavenly secrets.

The three qi surrounded Gu Yue Fang Xiang who was currently undergoing natural inspiration.

Seeing this, Fang Yuan restrained his scattered thoughts and focused: ”What heavenly secret should I steal this time?”

He thought about it: ”I can ask for Heavenly Court’s information directly, that seems fine. No matter how Star Constellation Immortal Venerable tries to hide things, my stealing heavenly secret is rank nine. If she wants to resist it, she needs to have a rank nine wisdom path Immortal Gu to achieve a qualitative change!

No matter how many wisdom path dao marks Heavenly Court had, it was only a quantitative amplification.

When Gu Yue Fang Xiang’s aperture exploded to create an immortal aperture, becoming a rank six Gu Immortal, Fang Yuan’s body shook.

“Derivation immortal formation?!”

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable hid it too deeply, I only found out now.”

“So that’s it.”

“Incredible, as expected of the number one wisdom path expert throughout the past and present!”

At this moment, Fang Yuan felt deep admiration towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

She actually had such a method to rapidly promote the development of various paths.

The might of wisdom path was truly terrifying.

Such an enemy was worth admiring!

Northern Plains.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable stopped his action of refining Northern Plains’ luck path dao marks.

“It is about time.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable inspected the surroundings first. He had a unique way of refining Northern Plains’ luck path dao marks, he did not stay at the same place for long, moving to other places after fully refining all of the dao marks in one area.

Instead, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable refined dao marks broadly, after refining sixty percent of the luck path dao marks of a certain area in Northern Plains, he would move on to the next location and continue his refinement.

After the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable started to refine Northern Plains’ dao marks.

After various events like the Great Love declaration, Fang clan’s saga, Spectral Soul destroying the sun, the three venerables’ contest over light Gu, and the trend of immortal ascension, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable finally refined sixty percent of Northern Plains’ luck path dao marks.

He had already covered the entire Northern Plains.

At the same time, he did not forget to develop his own rank nine immortal aperture, he went through several tribulations and put in several resource points.

With the increased foundation of his rank nine immortal aperture, his immortal essence production speed also rose.

As time passed, the immortal aperture foundation of the venerables would rise rapidly, their immortal essence would become more abundant.

BUt now, Giant Sun’s immortal aperture was still far inferior to Longevity Heaven.

Longevity Heaven was the rank nine immortal aperture that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had in his previous life. Because it did not devour any nine heavens fragment, it had gone through many calamities and tribulations over the years, gaining a huge number of dao marks through them.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not have sovereign immortal aperture, he could not annex a larger immortal aperture, while he also had to cultivate blood path. Thus, if he wanted to annex Longevity Heaven and gain the maximum benefit, he still lacked a lot of accumulation.

In terms of foundation, Longevity Heaven was inferior to Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court had the immortal aperture of three venerables, while Giant Sun Immortal Venerable only had his own rank nine aperture as the foundation of his previous life.

But Longevity Heaven had a huge advantage that Heavenly Court lacked.

In the future, after Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s blood path cultivation reach a certain level, he could annex Longevity Heaven to raise his strength to a terrifying level!

After some rest, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable started to prepare his killer move.

As the killer move activated, soon, with the amplification of sixty percent of Northern Plains’ luck path dao marks, a golden light appeared in the sky, dying the sky of the entire Northern Plains.

“Good, with this luck path killer move, in the future when my bloodline descendants undergo tribulation, they will receive some help!”

This was not just for immortal ascension, in the future, when Gu Immortals undergo calamities and tribulations, this luck path killer move would take effect and turn the tribulation into one that the Gu Immortal could easily deal with, at the same time, the power of the tribulation would also be adjusted accordingly.

If the Gu Immortal undergoing tribulation was strong, the luck path killer move would make the calamities and tribulations stronger, so that they could get more dao marks after succeeding.

Conversely, weakening the calamities and tribulations would allow the Gu Immortals to survive and pass the tribulation.

This luck path killer move was Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s newest creation, it contained the profundity of heaven and earth luck and all living being’s luck, in the future, it could even fuse with self luck to form a mystical power.

After Giant Sun Immortal Venerable refined most of Northern Plains’ luck path dao marks, the Huang Jin tribes of the entire region benefited as a result.

The mystic power of luck path was starting to display itself on a wide scale.

In the future, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable planned to use other luck path killer moves to support the entire Northern Plains.

He would let himself, Longevity Heaven, and the various Huang Jin tribes to have positive variables in anything they did, not just tribulations, they would have good luck.

If the Gu cultivator was strong, they would have a tough time at first and be suppressed, eventually, they would experience a rebound and gain immense benefits.

“However, these luck path killer moves need to be modified and carefully chosen.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable pondered deeply.

He could not use too many of such killer moves.

Killer moves would carve dao marks upon use.

If he used them too much, the entire Northern Plains would turn into a luck path environment.

This had its flaws.

Because of conflicting dao marks, all other paths would be greatly suppressed. This was not beneficial to the growth of Gu Immortals.

Thus, this step was very important and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable needed to find a balance.

“There is no rush in doing this, I need to consider the benefits and costs more deeply.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable thought as he used his investigative killer move again.

This time, he was not inspecting the venerables but the region of Northern Plains instead.

Soon, a vague luck distribution map appeared in Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s mind.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable frowned slightly.

In his first life, there was great effect when he used this killer move. Now, the effect was more vague, especially towards the borders.

“Back then, the five regions were separated and independent, they were not tightly connected. Thus, it was easier to inspect the luck of one region.”

“But now, the five regions are united while the two heavens turned into spectral heaven. To achieve the same level of investigative power as my previous life, I will need to refine all of the luck path dao marks in the five regions.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable reached a conclusion and stopped using his killer move.

He had just used two immortal killer moves in succession, they used a lot of immortal killer move. His immortal killer move storage had reached an alarming level once again.

Next, he would need to rest for some time before refining Northern Plains’ dao marks again. Otherwise, he would be in danger if the venerables decide to fight.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2292: Obtaining Wisdom Gu Again

Eastern Sea.

At the depths of the sea, in complete darkness.

Fang Yuan’s main body concealed his movements as he secretly arrived here.

A huge translucent bubble could be seen in front of him.

“This should be the place.” Fang Yuan realized, he stopped moving, closely inspecting it.

This bubble was formed in a special manner, it was a secret underwater world created from many elements, like an underwater volcano’s eruption, the surrounding sea water, and the qi tides that swept past previously.

Fire path, earth path, water path, and qi path, the dao marks of these four paths created this isolated utopia.

This place was very well hidden, unless any Gu Immortal saw it personally, it would be hard to detect.

“I’ll name this the four paths air bubble.” Fang Yuan activated his investigative method and observed the surroundings, before opening his immortal aperture’s entrance to let out a Gu Immortal.

This Gu Immortal had pink wavy hair, he was Fang Yuan’s dream path clone, Meng Qiu Zhen.

Meng Qiu Zhen’s cultivation level was still low, but he was a dream path cultivator.

Because the mission was quite special, Fang Yuan purposely dispatched him. Otherwise, he would stay inside the sovereign immortal aperture most of the time to research dream path, on rare occasions, he went on missions to stabilize and resolve the sovereign immortal aperture’s issues.

Fang Yuan used a method to carefully move Meng Qiu Zhen into the air bubble.

After fifteen minutes, Meng Qiu Zhen returned to the sovereign immortal aperture.

He succeeded.

He brought back a wild wisdom Gu!

Wisdom Gu was previously rank nine, but Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made arrangements and gave it to Fang Yuan.

During the fate war, in order to complete Red Lotus’ plan, wisdom Gu was used as one of the materials.

As a result, rank nine wisdom Gu ceased to exist.

But under the laws of the Heavenly Dao, life and death coexisted. Under the control of heaven’s will, a wild rank six wisdom Gu soon appeared in the five regions.

This wisdom Gu was hidden within the air bubble.

After Fang Yuan stole heavenly secrets, he found the location of many wild Immortal Gu, among them, wisdom Gu was his greatest gain.

Thus, he came here personally to prevent any accidents from happening, ensuring that wisdom Gu would be retrieved successfully.

Everything had happened according to the information in stealing heavenly secret.

Meng Qiu Zhen used his dream path method to easily suppress the rank six wisdom Gu.

Within the air bubble, although there was an underwater volcano and surrounding fish groups, none were able to threaten Meng Qiu Zhen.

As for Fang Yuan, he had too many dao marks, if he stretched his hand into the air bubble, it would likely burst.

Thus, only his clone could accomplish this.

Rank six wisdom Gu was soon refined by Fang Yuan.

Although it was wisdom Gu, Fang Yuan was a great refinement path venerable, refining a mere rank six Immortal Gu was simply too easy.

For a venerable, using rank nine essence to refine wild rank eight Immortal Gu posed no problems at all.

The difficult thing was refining rank nine Immortal Gu.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable took over a hundred years to refine rank nine wisdom Gu in her previous life, while Giant Sun Immortal Venerable failed to refine love Immortal Gu, these were all examples.

“After the fate war, wisdom Gu has returned to my possession again. And this time, it is not tampered with by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.”

“This is a wisdom Gu that belongs solely to me!”

Fang Yuan felt a faint feeling of joy internally.

As for raising wisdom Gu back to rank nine?

Fang Yuan felt that there was no urgency in this.

With stealing heavenly secret killer move, Fang Yuan could greatly improve his wisdom path deductions and modifications, he could also make up for his lack of information collecting methods.

After obtaining wisdom Gu, Fang Yuan returned to his original spot and showed that he was openly refining Eastern Sea’s refinement path dao marks. Furthermore, he took breaks quite often to show that his immortal essence was lacking, and that he was in a poor condition.

His divine sense entered the sovereign immortal aperture.

During this period of time, another major project in immortal aperture was completed!

For this project, Fang Yuan used all the immortal material reserves of his subordinates, among which, Eastern Sea’s Hua clan had the greatest contribution, they earned a lot of contribution points.

As for the construction of the splendid cloud cover, Fang Yuan succeeded after he chose to use stealing heavenly secret to get an answer from heaven’s will.

This splendid cloud cover covered a radius of over ten li, it flew slowly in the mini nine heavens.

Once in a while, it would go from one heaven to another.

The splendid cloud was an immortal material from rank six to nine.

The splendid cloud that Fang Yuan had now was a congregation of many different similar materials, most were rank six, thirty percent were rank seven, less than ten percent was rank eight, while there was barely any rank nine ones.

The food of rank nine heavenly secret Immortal Gu was a large field of splendid clouds.

Fang Yuan was still far from meeting the requirements of one feeding session.

But it was not a concern.

The higher tha Immortal Gu’s rank, the less frequent it needed to be fed. Looking at the current situation, there was still a lot of time until the next feeding session.

During this period of time, the splendid cloud cover could grow sufficiently.

There was ample time.

Gu cultivation involved nurture, use, and refinement. The feeding of rank nine Immortal Gu was a test that Fang Yuan had to pass.

He currently had three rank nine Immortal Gu, they were Heavenly Essence

Treasure Imperial Lotus, advance refinement Immortal Gu, and heavenly secret Immortal Gu. The former two were easier to feed, while heavenly secret Immortal Gu was comparatively more troublesome.

But Fang Yuan planned in advance, he had already started to resolve this problem.

In any case, the feeding of rank nine Immortal Gu was not Fang Yuan’s biggest problem.

He could settle it by just putting in some hard work.

He was already a venerable who owned Eastern Sea of the five regions, he also has super forces from the two heavens. Also, after his Great Love declaration, the most common business in treasure yellow heaven became his Immortal Gu refinement transactions.

And because the sovereign immortal aperture had immense foundation, even in the entire world, only Longevity Heaven and Heavenly Court could match or beat him.

Fang Yuan had already seen the blue dragon whale’s grotto-heaven immortal aperture.

Treasure yellow heaven was a special grotto-heaven meant for Gu Immortal transactions, its own foundation could not compare to the sovereign immortal aperture.

After this period of development, the sovereign immortal aperture was gradually undergoing a qualitative change.

In the past, the sovereign immortal aperture was like a dying patient, it was always close to destruction or breaking down entirely.

But now, the situation did not just stabilize, it was even improving.

There were two main reasons.

One was that the sovereign immortal aperture’s dao veins had already been established to a certain level, allowing it to reap the first wave of benefits.

There was already one ring of fire path, wind path, and water path dao veins.

The earth path dao vein that was established first already had three rings.

This had an immense effect to stabilize the sovereign immortal aperture, the effect was immediate.

The sovereign immortal aperture’s Gu Immortals could sense clearly that abnormal situations of earth path, fire path, wind path, and water path were decreasing rapidly, they became less common.

The second reason was that more than thirty of Fang Yuan’s Gu cultivator subordinates had passed their immortal ascension tribulation!

Immediately, the sovereign immortal aperture gained a huge supply of manpower!

With abundant people, Fang Yuan could easily dispatch Gu Immortals to various locations in the five regions secretly to collect the wild Immortal Gu.

Days later, Gu Immortals started to return. Some of them brought back undiscovered resource points while others brought back wild Immortal Gu.

Among which, there was one wild time path Immortal Gu — Month.

At this point, he had collected all three Immortal Gu, Year, Month, Day.

After getting the newest information, Fang Yuan's subordinates took action with a high success rate.

The results of stealing heavenly secret did not end here.

While Fang Yuan refined dao marks, he also unsealed the truthful floating ice secretly while making modifications to various killer moves.

After stealing heavenly secrets, He obtained a large number of reference materials, his modification of killer moves became very aggressive, among which were compound killer moves.

Fang Yuan even started to construct his combat system on a large scale.

All along, he did not have much gains in this aspect, but with stealing heavenly secret, he obtained a lot of information that had immense value.

Next, as Gu Immortals continued to return, although many succeeded, some returned empty-handed.

Most of the secretive resource points were brought back, but some were damaged or destroyed by natural disasters like earthquakes or tsunamis, there was no point in relocating them.

As for wild Immortal Gu, they were also starting to move elsewhere!

Fang Yuan was not surprised.

Heaven's will could influence people's minds, it could also think. Fang Yuan had always been the target of heaven's will, now that he collected all these secretive resource points and wild Immortal Gu, how could heaven's will not make a response?

Heavenly Dao emphasized balance, it would naturally try to restrict Fang Yuan from getting even stronger.

Thus, this reaction was within Fang Yuan's expectations.

Thus, Fang Yuan arranged for the most important Immortal Gu and resource points to be the ones that were targeted first, allowing him to have great gains.

As for the rest, they had lower value. In comparison, Fang Yuan could give up on them with no significant losses, but he could also try and see if any were salvageable.

Fang Yuan gradually digested his gains from using stealing heavenly secret, in this process, he gained a deeper understanding of this killer move.

"The information from stealing heavenly secret is extremely terrifying, it completely made up for my weakness in information path. However, if I use these information excessively, heaven's will will make adjustments and cause them to become less valuable. Additionally, grotto-heavens like Longevity Heaven cannot be inspected through stealing heavenly secret."

"The various killer moves and information about combat system that I steal are very useful if I want to modify killer moves and make my own combat system. But since heaven’s will knows about it, then this information must have already existed somewhere, others might know it too. Furthermore, there are many things that heaven’s will does not know, like the secret venerable true inheritances.”

“Heaven’s will can remember but not modify killer moves on its own. The painting path, human path, and pill path research results that I obtained were all produced through the derivation formation.”

Stealing heavenly secret could inspect and save Fang Yuan a lot of time and effort, it had an amazing effect. Regardless, it had its flaws.

Fang Yuan still had a need for information path and wisdom path development.

It was just that his needs were half satisfied now, he was no longer as urgent as before.

Stealing heavenly secret mainly relied on rank nine heavenly secret Gu, once heaven’s will found out about the Immortal Gu recipe, it would respond and cause the effect of stealing heavenly secret to become weaker.

Stealing heavenly secret was also dependent on natural inspiration, it could not be used freely.

Fang Yuan had already decided to nurture Gu cultivators in the immortal aperture, he would continue to accumulate more Gu Immortal seeds. Whenever it was necessary, he would make a bunch of time undergo immortal ascension.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2293: Mental Domain

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Within the secret room, an entire circle of Fang Yuan were sitting.

Or more accurately, a large number of Fang Yuan’s clones.

This cultivation secret room was huge, Fang Yuan’s clones were all newly formed using human path Gu worms.

Among them, the Gu Master level ones were doctor, pill refiner, constable, and craftsman. There were also rank six Gu Immortal level ones like shadow puppet, talented girl, soldier, sergeant, musician, thief, farmer, dancer, and blacksmith.

Indeed, the human path research results that the ten children of human path gained from entering the derivation formation were all obtained by Fang Yuan.

After that, he rushed to refine all these Gu!

As long as he had the recipe, with Fang Yuan’s refinement path attainment, refining these low ranked Immortal Gu was very easy.

This resulted in the ten children of human path failing to create their vital immortal Gu during their immortal ascension.

During this period of time, Fang Yuan’s clones had been in closed cultivation, comprehending human path and having their respective insights.

“Although these clones are low in rank, there are exceptional aspects when compared to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s method.”

“For example, they only need a small investment to create. Spectral Soul’s Shadow Sect clones needed to cultivate themselves and start from zero. But these clones could instantly gain Gu master or Gu Immortal level strength by just using human path Gu worms.”

The clones formed from human path Gu worms had apertures and immortal apertures for Gu Masters and Gu Immortals respectively.

But be it aperture or immortal essence, neither could produce primeval essence or immortal essence, they could only store essence.

The human path clones were also unable to cultivate to increase their strength.

The rank of the Gu worm decided the strength of the clone.

But the human path clones would retain the main body’s attainment levels.

The human path clones mainly cultivated human path with other paths on the side. For example, musician clone cultivated human path with sound path on the side. Farmer clone cultivated human path with wood path and earth path on the side. Shadow puppet clone cultivated human path with transformation path and shadow path on the side...

All in all, these clones were not useful to Fang Yuan.

They were too weak, even the highest ranked one was only rank six.

The thing that both Fang Yuan and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable agreed with was that pill refiner clone had the greatest value.

This clone cultivated human path with refinement path and pill path on the side.

Although there were only rank one to five pill refiner Gu Masters, they would create a terrifying impact on the entire Gu Master world!

If Fang Yuan’s subordinates did not undergo immortal ascension at this time, these human path clones might still be useful. Now, they were of little value to Fang Yuan.

They were even an important evidence that could expose obscured heavenly secret!

Thinking about it, Fang Yuan turned these human path clones back into their respective Gu worms.

They were similar to Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body but quite different.

They could interchange between Gu worm and human forms, but Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal body was fixed at human form with the requirement to eat the Gu worm’s food.

But in any case, a normal person needed to eat at set intervals as well.

“I’ll leave thief Gu behind.” Thinking so, Fang Yuan willed at the next moment as most of the Gu worms in the secret room self-detonated!

Central Continent.

In the deepest part of star array calculation formation.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was inspecting a secluded domain of heaven and earth that was inside.

This secluded domain looked like a cage or a lantern, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had used it in Crazed Demon Cave to fight against the other venerables.

This was the wisdom path secluded domain — Mental Domain!

It was recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable placed Mental Domain in the star array calculation formation and used the power of the formation to secretly absorb emotions.

All sorts of negative emotions in the Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects were absorbed into the Mental Domain.

With this method, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable managed to leave only positive emotions in the countless lifeforms of Central Continent towards Heavenly Court and the ten great ancient sects.

This caused Central Continent’s unity to rise to a new level!

“Mental Domain needs to store emotions, the more emotions there are, the stronger this secluded domain of heaven and earth becomes. But it needs to be controlled too.”

“If there are too much emotions stored, the Mental Domain will instead go too far and have a reverse effect.”

“Like what is recorded in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, it would be best to have calm Gu and fortitude Gu to suppress Mental Domain.”

“It is a pity that I only have calm Gu but not fortitude Gu. Thus, there is an obvious limit to the amount of emotions the Mental Domain can store.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable needed to be careful when activating it, she could not afford to expose this to the other venerables and end up with trouble.

At that time, even someone who lacked immortal essence like Fang Yuan would want to extort Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

This was the trick that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable played when creating the star array calculation formation, she managed to hide it from the two venerables. After all, they could only see the general information of the star array calculation formation.

After her inspection, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable received some good news.

“Oh? Among the ten children of human path, someone has already refined musician Gu to an Immortal Gu?”

“Good.”

“It seems that the failed attempts from earlier was due to the obstruction of heaven’s will. The refinement of Immortal Gu during the ascension tribulation is essentially using heaven’s will to help one refine Gu.”

“Heaven’s will was unwilling to help likely because these are human path Gu worms.”

“But afterwards, the refinement attempt done by a person succeeded!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable put her heart at ease.

Earlier, when she found that the ten children of human path had all failed, she felt suspicious.

The possibilities included having traitors in Heavenly Court, a problem with the derivation formation, the hidden methods of the other venerables in Heavenly Court, or even because information was leaked by heaven’s will.

After learning of this success, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s suspicions were mostly lifted.

Half a day later, the first batch of Gu Immortals chosen from Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects gathered within the star array calculation formation.

Immortal killer move — Endless Learning!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable activated this killer move.

The killer move had a light-blue radiance that spread within the star array calculation formation.

In a certain space within the formation, the Gu Immortals were ready.

“It’s coming.” Someone muttered with an excited expression.

Everyone was stirred.

Soon, the immortals’ expressions turned solemn as they were immersed in the indescribable profundity of the Great Dao.

With the effect of the killer move, the immortals’ cultivation paths’ attainment level rose gradually!

As time passed, after reaching their limit, some Gu Immortals started to develop hallucinations.

At this time, the star array calculation formation would activate and send these Gu Immortals to another part of the formation to rest.

Endless learning was a human path killing intent, it used Book Mountain and learning Gu as the cores, allowing the Gu cultivator to produce true meaning and absorb it to raise their attainment levels.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had used this move in Crazed Demon Cave before, she was now using it on the Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects’ Gu Immortals. Her intention to nurture them was more sincere now.

The gains of the Gu Immortals would depend on their own talent, aptitude, comprehension, and personal experiences.

“Unimaginable, to think that there is such a method in the world to directly raise attainment level!”

“This move was used by Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable personally, of course it is amazing, she can achieve the impossible!”

“Rumor has it that dream realms can raise the Gu cultivator’s attainment level. In my opinion, Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s method has completely surpassed the dangerous method of dream path.”

“Dream realm explorations are very dangerous but the attainment level gained can potentially be endless. As for Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s human path killing move, our gains will depend on ourselves. It can only help us to produce true meaning, after using it once, we will need to accumulate a lot of experience and foundation, otherwise, we will not have much gains next time!”

The immortals slowly break out of the hallucinations and woke up as they started conversing.

Soon, the immortals flew out of the star array calculation formation.

Three stayed and did not leave yet.

Among them, there was Heaven’s Envy Manor’s Gu Immortal, Tan Ku, he went to find Ancient Soul Sect’s Yang Feng and Spirit Butterfly Valley’s Dian Pu.

After some discussion, Tan Ku used his own Immortal Gu to exchange for Yang Feng’s resources, he then used Yang Feng’s immortal materials to exchange for Dian Pu’s other Immortal Gu.

After the transaction, all three side got what they wanted, they were satisfied.

“Thanks to the star array calculation formation, it can understand what we need and help us to undergo optimal transactions. Otherwise, how can we know of each other’s needs so clearly?” Dian Pu sighed.

At this moment, all three immortals benefited from the star array calculation formation, they understood its usefulness.

Ever since the star array calculation formation collected information of the Gu Immortals, such situations became more common among the Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects’ Gu Immortals.

Thus, even the Gu Immortals of the smaller sects were interested, they wanted to report their own information to the star array calculation formation.

The formation had the ability to distribute overall resources more efficiently in Central Continent by just focusing on transaction between Gu Immortals.

Undeniably, this would promote the growth of Central Continent and raise its overall strength.

The three immortals did not have a close relationship before, but after the transaction, they became closer.

On the way back, they talked about the recently popular topic among Central Continent’s Gu Masters, human path.

During this period of time, human path cultivation had become a rising trend for the lower rank Gu Masters in Central Continent.

This was clearly backed by the ten great ancient sects who were tasked by Heavenly Court to support this trend.

“It seems that Heavenly Court has decided to develop human path.”

“That’s right, our sects chose the ten children of human path who have all become Gu Immortals now. Heavenly Court has the top tier research results of human path, now is the time for them to promote it widely.”

“I think that it is too rushed, but since Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made such a decision, there must be a flaw in my logic.”

“It is a pity that our path is already set, converting to human path is too costly.”

“Friend Tan Ku, you are smiling. Do you have a solution to this?”

“I only made the Gu Immortal seeds in my immortal aperture cultivate human path.”

“Haha, I did that too.”

Central Continent’s Gu Immortals were gradually feeling the advantages of the star array calculation formation, they also showed a consensus regarding the prospects of human path.

However, Tan Ku still did not know this now.

Although his action was the same as any other Gu Immortals, one small character who he supported would rise to become a legend in the future!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2294: Finding Self Gu

“Quick, cultivate this!” Within Tan Ku’s immortal aperture, a middle aged rank five Gu Master was handing out a cultivation method to Wang Xiao Er.

“Foster father, what is this?” Wang Xiao Er asked in confusion.

Wang Xiao Er had his own secret.

He was not of Fang clan’s bloodline, he was a captive of Fang Dong Xi. But after Fang Dong Xi died in battle, his immortal aperture was invaded by Xiao Ye Hu, causing a huge commotion.

Using the opportunity, Wang Xiao Er escaped for his life and mixed in with this branch of Fang Dong Xi’s descendants.

Afterwards, they were sold in treasure yellow heaven.

Tan Ku was one of the Gu Immortals who bought these human slaves, within the batch of Fang clansmen that he bought, there was Wang Xiao Er.

Thus, Wang Xiao Er started his new life in Tan Ku’s immortal aperture.

Naturally, Tan Ku’s immortal aperture had Tan clan’s bloodline. Thus, the Fang clansmen all had low status, they were slaves.

But even among slaves, there was a difference in status.

For example, the middle aged Gu Master in front of Wang Xiao Er.

He had a rather pitiful life, when Fang Dong Xi’s immortal aperture was in a commotion, his whole family died. The middle aged Gu Master became disheartened and did not want to marry anyone else. After seeing the lonely Wang Xiao Er who was in the same plight as him, he felt that this young man resembled his son and took him in as a foster son.

After all, in the eyes of the middle aged Gu Master, Wang Xiao Er was also a Fang clan descendant.

The middle aged Gu Master knocked Wang Xiao Er’s head and laughed as he scolded: ”What are you suspicious about? Do you think I’ll harm you?”

“I’ll tell you the truth, the Gu Immortals who bought us are from Central Continent.”

“He bought us because he took an interest in our aptitude.”

“Now, he has handed down a human path cultivation method. If we can cultivate it successfully, we will be able to raise our status. In the future, we may even become Gu Immortals.”

Wang Xiao Er listened in a dumbfound manner.

But soon, he stated his suspicions: ”If this is such a precious cultivation method, why is the Central Continent Gu Immortal not cultivating it himself? Why isn’t he leaving it for his own descendants but us instead?”

The middle aged Gu Master clearly knew many Gu Immortal secrets, he had a broad vision. He explained: ”Gu Immortals cultivate their own path, with human path being one of the possibilities. Since this Gu Immortal has already become immortal, he cannot cultivate human path anymore.”

“Furthermore, not everyone has the aptitude to become an immortal.”

“Human path has just started developing, Central Continent’s Gu Immortals are handing out these methods as a trial. Thus, for his own genius descendants, he will definitely leave a portion of the essence of his own cultivation method for them. The remaining Tan clansmen and us will cultivate human path.”

“Human path is really underdeveloped, in our former blessed land, I’ve never even heard of it! But we have no choice now, if we don’t cultivate, we won’t even have any opportunity!”

“Xiao Er, you will live your life in here, those Tan clansmen will step on you and command you like a slave. Are you willing to live like this?”

Wang Xiao Er quickly shook his head and said solemn: ”Foster father, please teach me the method, I will cultivate!”

Wang Xiao Er obtained a large amount of human path information, it was helpful in raising his understanding of human path. There were also several human path Gu worms, they were the foundation for starting his human path cultivation.

After the middle aged Gu Master taught Wang Xiao Er some lessons, the latter started to cultivate on his own.

On this night, Wang Xiao Er was so excited he could not sleep, he decided to cultivate instead.

But an Immortal Gu was accidentally awakened by him in this situation!

The Immortal Gu’s will took the initiative and communicated with Wang Xiao Er as he felt very surprised: ”Self Gu?!”

Self Gu was so small and had hidden itself within Wang Xiao Er’s body, nobody else had sensed it.

He remembered that this was a famous legendary Gu in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, he became extremely happy and incredulous. Thus, he quickly flipped through <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>.

<<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, chapter five, section thirty-eight —

After falling into the water of the River of Time, Ren Zu and the other two woke up in shock.

The three immediately climb up to a nearby floating ice, although it was only a short time, they had already grown old.

“Time Gu is hidden within the River of Time, our lifespan will be washed away by the river water.” Great Strength True Martial sighed.

Ren Zu felt regretful: ”Constantly encountering good situations is actually a bad thing, it will create a huge problem! It is not good to be too happy or constantly happy, it can make people indulge in the present and forget about time as they get immersed entirely.”

But Carefree Wisdom Heart said with a tone of joy: ”Quick, look at your heart!”

The three of them inspected their inner heart, they saw that many accumulated emotions had been washed away earlier when they fell into the river.

This discovery made Ren Zu and the other two feel very happy.

Next, they continued to travel on the floating ice.

Whenever they encountered a bad situation and felt negative emotions, they would put their heart into the river water to wash it: ”These bad situations will pass eventually.”

Their negative emotions faded away with time.

Whenever they encountered a good situation and felt immersed in joy, they would put their heart into the river water to wash it: ”These good situations will pass eventually.”

Their positive emotions also weakened over time, preventing them from feeling indulgent.

Cognition Gu saw that the three of them were constantly washing their hearts, it could not help but remind them: ”Time has never healed the wounds of the heart, except that your hearts have grown old. The worst thing is not your body growing old but your hearts aging. Stop washing them.”

Ren Zu and the other two heard these words and quickly stopped their actions.

But without washing the hearts, their speed fell again.

“Let me help you.” At this time, a Gu worm flew over and landed on Ren Zu.

Ren Zu and the other two saw this Gu worm and became very happy.

It was familial emotion Gu.

With the help of familial emotion Gu, Ren Zu and the other two spread their emotions around, the joy of one person was split among three, the sorrow of one person was also split into three.

Using familial emotion, Ren Zu and the other two consoled each other and carried each other’s burden, they moved quickly and firmly.

But good times did not last.

More and more emotions accumulated in their hearts, their hearts became tired and gradually got hurt after being unable to sustain it any longer.

Deep emotions hurt the heart.

The situation soon aggravated, because their hearts were severely injured, they could not take in more emotions.

At this time, Carefree Wisdom Heart took out a cage and held it in her hand: ”This is the Mental Domain that I created, place all your emotions in here.”

Ren Zu and Great Strength True Martial did as she said.

They put their emotions into the Mental Domain.

Immediately, the truthful floating ice revealed its original appearance in front of the three.

They were simply pieces of floating ice, the three felt a different sensation towards it now.

The emotions of people did not concern others, only their own mental state mattered.

“What is this?” Carefree Wisdom Heart soon found a Gu worm in the floating ice.

The Gu worm answered: ”I am calm Gu.”

The truth was icy cold, this was the attitude that one should have when facing situations.

Ren Zu and the other two finally reached the center of the truthful floating ice.

But they did not find self Gu.

“So self Gu is not here.” Ren Zu was very disappointed.

Initially, people would often think that they were the center of all situations, but that was not true.

At the center of the truthful floating ice, there was no self Gu, but three other Gu instead.

They were rules Gu, regulation Gu, and practice Gu.

Rules and regulation Gu had been with Ren Zu for a long time, after Ren Zu’s heart was eaten by the Predicament, they thought that he died and left him.

They came here to create truthful floating ice along with practice Gu.

All sorts of situations were bound by the rules and regulation of heaven and earth.

The three Gu continued to create truthful floating ice like this, afterwards, under the effect of time Gu, these floating ice flowed away and sank.

Rules and regulation Gu saw Ren Zu and felt surprised: ”Oh human, so you did not die.”

Ren Zu quickly asked them on how he could find self Gu.

Rules and regulation Gu pointed at practice Gu and said in unison: ”It can help you!”

Practice Gu replied: ”Oh human, you have gone through too many situations. After such a long time, you have changed a lot. Self Gu is the same, even if it is right before you, it will feel very foreign now, you cannot recognize it.”

“What can I do?” Ren Zu was troubled.

“This is simple.” Practice Gu laughed: ”Can’t you just undergo the situation of ’recognizing yourself’?”

“That’s right!” Ren Zu and the other two realized at once.

Practice Gu continued: ”For a human, recognizing yourself is the most important and also most difficult thing in the world. Great Strength True Martial, you are strong and have ability, if we work together, the chance of success is very high.”

Ability Gu laughed and said: ”Undergoing situations can make me stronger.”

Carefree Wisdom Heart supported this, she gave serious Gu to Great Strength True Martial.

Great Strength True Martial started to undergo situations alongside practice Gu.

They first created a piece of floating ice that was as small as a ball. It surrounded Great Strength True Martial and practice Gu as a light membrane appeared around the ice ball.

Ren Zu and Carefree Wisdom Heart stood on top of the ice ball as they flowed away, eventually encountering year Gu.

“Is this self Gu?” Ren Zu asked.

Great Strength True Martial replied: ”No, self Gu is smaller than it.”

They continued to undergo situations within the ice ball as ability Gu got stronger, the floating ice also became larger as a water membrane appeared around the periphery.

While floating, Ren Zu saw month Gu.

“Is this self Gu?” Ren Zu asked.

Great Strength True Martial replied: ”No, self Gu is smaller than it.”

Great Strength True Martial and practice Gu continued working hard, ability Gu got stronger and made this floating ice even bigger, the periphery of the ice ball was covered in a stone membrane.

Ren Zu saw day Gu.

“Is this self Gu?” Ren Zu asked.

Great Strength True Martial replied: ”No, self Gu is smaller than it.”

The stronger the ability, the more one would find that they were small and insignificant.

Eventually, the floating ice reached its biggest size, the periphery was covered by a crystal membrane. Ren Zu and the other two floated on the ice ball and eventually found self Gu.

“Self Gu is actually so small.” Ren Zu was internally shaken.

Cognition Gu sighed: ”In the eyes of heaven and earth, in the eyes of mankind, a single self Gu is very small and insignificant.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2295: Fang Yuan Wants More Twins

Late at night.

Wang Xiao Er looked at the <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> as his eyes turned bloodshot from excitement, his nose was also blowing out steam.

“Foster father’s human path cultivation method is not wrong at all. <<The Legends of Ren Zu>> is truly a human path classic!”

“I’ve just noticed that in the section regarding self Gu, it actually hints the different levels of each Gu Master cultivation rank. Light membrane, water membrane, stone membrane, and crystal membrane!”

“Ren Zu and the other two met the time path Gu, Year, Month, and Day, in the River of Time. Does this mean that Gu Master cultivation takes a long time to gradually accumulate accomplishments?”

“I am still too ignorant now, this is all that I can see.”

“The human path cultivation method states that the most outstanding cultivators in history,the venerables, have all comprehended something from <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>. Thus, there are many human path killer moves created as their research results.”

“Even though I cannot match them now, I still have an extraordinary hope!”

“Self Gu...”

“It has been hiding in my body all along, the moment I started my human path cultivation, I found it. This must be a human path Immortal Gu!”

“Among the various Gu worms mentioned in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, in my eyes, self Gu is the most special and unique one.”

“Hahaha, with this Immortal Gu, human path is truly the most suitable path for me!”

“It is definitely the right choice to cultivate human path.”

At almost the same time.

In the sovereign immortal aperture, Mini Eastern Sea.

“Haha.” Mermaid Gu Immortal Tang Qiong could not help but laugh: ”It was definitely the right choice for our entire race to join Fang Yuan and live in the sovereign immortal aperture.”

Her excitement could not be concealed.

There was a total of three merman female immortals, Fang Yuan had brought them in earlier. After bringing a group of mermen to settle down here, they started to live in the sovereign immortal aperture.

The three merman female immortals had a clear distribution of jobs, Yu Zi was mostly in charge of completing missions and earning contribution points. Lian Ke Xin was in charge of external relations, she communicated with the other races and forces. Tang Qiong was in charge of defending the merman tribe’s territory.

After all, abnormal situations often occurred in the sovereign immortal aperture. The territory of the various forces had at least one Gu Immortal defending it at all times for safety.

Tang Qiong had just received orders from Fang Yuan, there was a piece of information that was rather outstanding.

From now on, Fang Yuan would put in more effort to support the well-performing descendants of the various tribes and forces. He would spent a huge sum to aid their cultivation and promote them to become Gu Immortal seeds.

To achieve this, Fang Yuan even gave orders to the Gu Immortals in charge of the various factions.

Each other, the respective forces had to nurture a certain number of Gu Immortal seeds.

If they reached the target, they would receive contribution points.

Otherwise, they would be punished.

“Lord Alliance Leader is not just impartial and fair, he also has a heart of benevolence. He is helping us variant humans to nurture more Gu Masters by investing such a huge sum of resources. Even among the past venerables, none had ever shown such love to us variant humans like Lord Fang Yuan! Even Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable only helped some of our tribes, it cannot compare to Lord Fang Yuan.”

Thinking of this, tears appeared in Tang Qiong’s eyes.

The reason why Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable helped the variant humans was because he could not bear seeing them face the threat of extinction.

But Fang Yuan was different.

Fang Yuan did not just give the variant humans a fair and relatively safe environment to live in without ostracism, he even gave them aid in the form of resources so that they could grow stronger.

This was an unprecedented situation.

Tang Qiong had gone through a lot of ordeals when she managed the Merman Imperial Court, they were ostracized and suppressed by various forces. As a merman Gu Immortal, she had lived a life of being bullied and overwhelmed with pressure.

Now, inside the sovereign immortal aperture, she felt truly free and happy.

The work she did in the sovereign immortal aperture was far more tiring than being in Eastern Sea, she often had to work her hardest and not rest for more than ten days in a row, along with the threat of her liver exploding.

But now, Tang Qiong was feeling increasingly fond of this place, she loved this world and treasured this sea area!

Because here, there was fairness and equality that the five regions lacked.

Because here, there was abundant hope.

because here, as long as one worked hard and was willing to undergo hardship, they will be rewarded based on effort.

Because here, one could feel that they were growing and improving at an observable rate, their own tribe or force was also developing rapidly.

Tang Qiong’s divine sense Gu entered the information path mortal Gu again, she reread the information that she had already looked through several times.

Fang Yuan’s orders greatly encouraged the procreation of the various forces. The more children they had, the more rewards they would receive.

Regarding the increase in population, Fang Yuan had a clear direction.

The vast amount of cultivation resources would be handed down to the Gu Immortals of the various factions and forces in the next few days.

Among which, there were large quantities of relic Gu, unprocessed jade Gu, wood origin Gu, water source Gu, man triumphing heaven Gu and others.

Relic Gu could raise the cultivation of a Gu Master by a small realm, while precious mortal Gu like unprocessed jade Gu could raise the Gu Master’s aptitude!

In essence, they were just carving a certain path’s dao marks on the Gu Master’s bodies.

Unprocessed jade Gu carved earth path dao marks, it was suitable for raising the aptitude of rockman Gu Masters.

Wood origin Gu suited minimen, water source Gu suited mermen, while man triumphing heaven Gu suited purebred humans without Gu Master aptitude, it could forcefully awaken their aperture.

“With these resources, our tribe can finally see hope in a bright future.”

“There has never been a venerable like Lord Fang Yuan, he truly cares about his people. No matter how ordinary or common these people are, his love is boundless like the sun while soothing like the wind, enveloping everyone.”

“He is truly worthy of being Great Love Immortal Venerable! It is my greatest fortune to be on his side.”

Thinking of this, Tang Qiong felt very excited as tears flowed down her face.

Fang Yuan, who was idolized by Tang Qiong, had just used obscured heavenly secret once again.

It could not be helped.

The gains from stealing heavenly secret were too bountiful.

Even now, there were still Gu Immortals who were returning from Eastern Sea, Western Desert, and Southern Border, bringing back cultivation resources secretly.

The most valuable things were the information of the five regions, Fang Yuan’s modified killer moves, and the establishment of his combat system.

Everything caused his luck to grow immensely again.

Thus, Fang Yuan had to activate obscured heavenly secret again to fortify the concealment effect.

During this period of time, Fang Yuan did not refine his fourth rank nine Immortal Gu.

On the surface, he was refining Eastern Sea’s refinement path dao marks intermittently, but in secret, he was digesting the gains of stealing heavenly secret and deducing many things. As for the truthful floating ice, although it was the most important thing earlier, it was no longer his focus now.

The initial benefit of unsealing the truthful floating ice was already obtained, now, the gains had evidently fallen.

This was reflected upon Fang Yuan’s own luck as well.

Fang Yuan used luck inspection and only managed to see a portion of it, but from this portion, he could see many things that were useful to his deductions.

Everything involving rank nine heavenly secret Gu was Fang Yuan’s greatest secret. This involved obscured heavenly secret, stealing heavenly secret, and others.

Because of stealing heavenly secret, Fang Yuan started to target those mortals in the immortal aperture.

He worked at lightning speed, after understanding the value of these mortals, he decided to nurture them with his full support.

Tang Qiong and the rest did not know the truth.

Fang Yuan had abundant immortal materials in his storage, mortal materials were more lacking in comparison.

The sovereign immortal aperture itself produced a lot of mortal materials on a large scale, but there were a lot of materials needed to nurture mortals. The sovereign immortal aperture had to use treasure yellow heaven to undergo various transactions and satisfy this need.

The plan was already established while cultivation resources were not an issue, but Fang Yuan wanted to make this even better.

He calculated and found that he had many methods that could be used to nurture these mortal Gu Masters.

For example, blood skull Gu, bone flesh unity Gu, and guts Gu, as well as the rank one to six version of second aperture Gu.

Aptitude was very important to a Gu Master.

Back then, Fang Yuan had used blood skull Gu to slaughter his clan and obtained A grade aptitude.

The A grade aptitude gave him immense help in his future cultivation journey.

At the same time, A grade aptitude meant a higher chance at becoming a Gu Immortal seed than B or C grade aptitude. If one had poor aptitude, rank three or four would be their limit, how could they even reach rank five?

“Blood skull Gu’s ability to raise aptitude is even more outstanding than unprocessed jade Gu, wood origin Gu, water source Gu, and polished gold Gu. Maybe I can use blood skull Gu to undergo a massive slaughter before reviving them using Human Sea and slaughtering them again. In that case, I can create a large number of A grade aptitude Gu Masters.”

A terrifying cultivation plan emerged in Fang Yuan’s mind.

He thought of bone flesh unity Gu.

This Gu was very useful to Fang Yuan when he was still a Gu Master.

It could help to elevate primeval essence for cultivation, not only could Fang Yuan use it to advance a small realm, he could even tackle the boundaries to cross a cultivation rank!

It was truly useful.

“But to refine this Gu, I will need twins.”

“This is a little troublesome.”

Fang Yuan not only needed a few hundred bone flesh unity Gu, he needed a vast number of them and scattered them across the sovereign immortal aperture. In that case, in the future, there would be many new Gu Immortal seeds.

“I do not have the time to focus on my current human soul cultivation method, my previous attempt has also bore little fruit. Thus, I can use guts Gu to nurture Gu Immortal seeds, a stronger soul is very useful to them.”

“As for second aperture Gu, it is only icing on the cake.”

Fang Yuan would not use rank six second aperture Immortal Gu to nurture them, at most, he would use rank one to five versions of them.

Right now, second aperture Gu was confirmed to be a heaven path Gu worm.

Rank six second aperture Gu used lifespan Gu as the material, while lifespan Gu was the most classic heaven path Gu worm, it contained heaven path dao marks.

Rank nine sovereign immortal fetus Gu used the ten extreme physiques as the Gu material, it was ’immortal fetus’ instead of ’immortal aperture’, thus it was a human path Immortal Gu.

Fang Yuan made a conclusion, he needed to amass Gu Immortal seeds by first increasing the population.

Whether they were variant humans or humans did not matter.

Fang Yuan did not intend to take in external people, as for Gu Immortal seeds, it would be better for the sovereign immortal aperture to nurture them, they were more loyal after all. Variant humans were the most loyal to him.

Fang Yuan felt more assured with these variant humans.

With a higher population, the number of Gu Masters would also rise. But to create Gu Immortal seeds, one needed to raise the Gu Master’s aptitude first.

This meant that mortals did not just need to give birth more often, they also needed to create more siblings and blood-related kin for Fang Yuan to slaughter in the future.

It would be best if they were twins.

That way, while slaughtering them, he could also refine them into bone flesh unity Gu.

“I need more twins...” Fang Yuan thought about it and muttered: ”I need to look for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. Among the venerables, he is most skilled at having children!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2296: Fei Wu Revives

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had a strange expression.

Just earlier, a transaction between him and Heaven Refining Demon Venerable was held.

Both sides obtained what they wanted.

But...

“Fang Yuan has needs for childbirth, what is he planning?”

This transaction made Giant Sun Immortal Venerable quite suspicious.

But he knew that because of dao marks, Gu Immortal found it hard to give birth. And in terms of having children, among the venerables, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was the most experienced.

Among the venerables, which other person had more children than Giant Sun Immortal Venerable?

Back then, to raise more children, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable searched the world for countless beauties, creating his five harem palaces!

“If Fang Yuan did not suddenly have this need, we would not have done this transaction. Sigh... to think that I would benefit now because of you, Zhu Zhu.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable muttered a name as the memories of a scene emerged in the depths of his heart.

Northern Plains.

In a temporary tribe, tents were set up.

The flap of an old and tattered tent was pulled side as middle-aged Giant Sun barged in, shouting: ”Zhu Zhu, what Gu did you secretly use on me again?”

Middle-aged Giant Sun had a bare chest that exposed his manly stature, but there was a pig head resting on his shoulders.

Zhu Zhu saw him and laughed: ”It worked!”

Middle-aged Giant Sun was furious: ”Zhu Zhu, I was discussing matters with the tribe elders earlier when this happened. You will turn me into the laughing stock of the tribe.”

Zhu Zhu sighed: ”Husband, I apologize. But I just want a child.”

Middle-aged Giant Sun was stunned before becoming dejected, his anger faded away: ”It’s my fault for being useless.”

“No, it is my issue. Technically, I have half a Gu Immortal’s body. It is my fault!” Zhu Zhu stood before Giant Sun as she held his pig head, saying with love and affection: ”This time, I used transformation path Gu.”

“Do you know? This is called sowing pig. It is an amazing wild beast that has gone extinct. The male pig would eat in autumn and get fat to spit out a type of crystal flower. When spring arrives, the crystal flower will bloom and the female pig will eat it to nurture new life in its body.”

Middle-aged Giant Sun’s eyes shone: ”It is so effective?”

Zhu Zhu smiled and pulled his hand, dragging him into bed: ”Let’s go.”

Middle-aged Giant Sun laughed loudly as he pounced at Zhu Zhu.

At the top of their tent, there was a flag.

At this moment, the flag started waving around intensely like the wind was blowing.

But after just a few breaths of time, the flag went motionless.

Within the tent, Giant Sun spoke in a guilty tone: ”Sorry, Zhu Zhu, I can’t continue anymore.”

Zhu Zhu smiled: ”Don’t worry, I have my methods.”

Next, Giant Sun let out a soft growl as the tent started to shake again like a hurricane was blowing.

This time, he lasted for over ten breaths of time.

The commotion in the tent stopped again.

Giant Sun sighed: ”Sorry, I can’t continue anymore.”

Zhu Zhu smiled and said: ”Don’t worry, watch this.”

For the third time, the tent shook intensely like there was a storm.

But this storm only lasted for around twenty breaths of time before stopping.

Giant Sun breathed roughly as he said: ”Sorry, I really can’t continue anymore.”

Zhu Zhu was still smiling: ”Don’t worry, I still have some methods left.”

“Wait, wait.” Giant Sun said weakly: ”I am amazed that you have so many methods, but let me rest, let me rest...”

Zhu Zhu replied humbly: ”Although I have many methods, the results are not good. Sigh... the most useful method can only come from Ren Zu, all of the humans of the five regions and two heavens are descendants of Ren Zu!”

Giant Sun immediately patted his chest and assured: ”Don’t worry, one day, I will comprehend Ren Zu’s method and we will have countless descendants!”

His recollection ended here.

A deep feeling of disappointment lingered in Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s heart.

In his previous life, he had already grasped such a method, otherwise, how could he have so many descendants?

It was just that he could not use this method with Zhu Zhu anymore.

He could never see her again.

His children were also not of her bloodline.

After collecting his thoughts, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s expression turned calm and cool again.

He inspected the gains from this transaction, he had obtained a lot of blood path research results from Fang Yuan.

Although he had been been secretly making deductions on blood path, Fang Yuan’s research results still saved him a lot of time and energy.

Other than that, there were five blood path Immortal Gu!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable refined them into his own and tossed them into Blood Sea.

“Blood Sea...” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s gaze pierced through the ground of Longevity Heaven, gazing into Blood Sea.

Even if rank nine light Gu was repaired, it was not suitable for Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

However, although he had no rank nine Immortal Gu, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could use Blood Sea as a replacement temporarily.

There were four different levels when it came to dao mark density: dao marks that were scattered all over the world, resource points that were created when dao marks were arranged in a certain manner, the apex of resource points—secluded domains of heaven and earth, as well as the essence of heaven and earth—Gu.

A secluded domain of heaven and earth was considered half a rank nine Immortal Gu.

When Gu Immortals use immortal materials to form killer moves or immortal formations, the materials were consumable and could not have a stable form, thus, the dao marks were lost after usage.

But a secluded domain of heaven and earth could be used as a long term stable core to form killer moves.

Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal and Dang Hun Luo Po Seal were such examples.

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has Mental Domain, while Fang Yuan may have Refinement Sea, this Blood Sea is the foundation that I need to resist them!”

Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had worked with Long Hair Ancestor to refine Gu, he knew about this grand plan of Long Hair Ancestor’s.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable felt that for this period of time, refining natural dao marks of heaven and earth was the most important thing. Trying to get a rank nine Immortal Gu that was suitable for himself was not realistic. In this case, a secluded domain of heaven and earth was the best substitute.

“Among the venerables, the one who has the highest hope of getting a rank nine Immortal Gu is Fang Yuan. In terms of potential, he is also the highest.”

“Thankfully, he has insufficient immortal essence and is unable to refine rank nine Immortal Gu.”

“Once he starts refining Gu, he will expose his greatest weakness. At that time, I will work with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to stop him!”

“If Fang Yuan is able to refine any refinement path rank nine Immortal Gu, then he will have an easier time refining other rank nine Immortal Gu in the future. This will snowball into an unstoppable advantage at an increasing speed.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable reminded himself of the fact.

Blood Sea surged with huge waves that ebbed and flowed, it was gradually expanding in size.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable nodded to himself: ”With five more blood path

Immortal Gu, the rate at which Blood Sea is forming is increasing. In half a year, it will be completed!”

Blood Sea was currently incomplete.

Although a secluded domain of heaven and earth could be used as the core of a killer move, it was quite a wasteful thing to do as the secluded domain itself would be expended to a huge extent.

For example, Fang Yuan’s previously incomplete Refinement Sea and Human Sea (although Human Sea was complete, only the whole Human Mountain and Sea was considered a secluded domain).

“Oh?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s expression changed, an intense luck path intuition emerged in his heart.

The last time he had such a feeling, he revived Light Emperor.

The revival of Light Emperor caused him to gain rank nine light Gu.

Now?

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was feeling expectant.

Although reviving another person now would expend the incomplete Blood Sea, he did not hesitate as he used the immortal killer move once again — Destined Birth Through Luck.

Swish swish swish!

Blood Sea surged and created a huge wave that was tens of feet tall.

Blood Sea was rapidly expended as a huge whirlpool was formed again.

After the flickering of shadow and light, a rank seven Gu Immortal emerged from within.

“Who is this?” Yao Huang did not recognize the person.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s expectations rose again. The reason was that this Gu Immortal’s revival expended even more immortal essence and portion of the Blood Sea than Light Emperor.

But he was just a rank seven water path Gu Immortal.

“Oh, are you Fei Wu?” Yao Huang stared for some time before shouting out loud.

“Fei tribe’s final first supreme elder — Fei Wu[1. Same pronunciation as trash/worthless.]?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable frowned.

He remembered now.

Fei tribe was once a super force in Northern Plains, it had genuine Huang Jin bloodline.

Fei tribe’s first generation ancestor was not Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s son but someone who was many generations below. But Fei tribe was still very famous in history.

Or rather, infamous.

Fei tribe was a Huang Jin super tribe that ruined itself.

Fei Wu was their final first supreme elder, he was undeniably responsible for their destruction.

Many people felt that he was incapable and too greedy, he let down the entire Fei tribe and caused their destruction.

When he was the first supreme elder, he expended Fei tribe’s vast amount of resources and almost caused them to go broke. As a result, the other Fei tribe Gu Immortals lacked cultivation resources and grew slowly, this resulted in their internal conflict.

The external world also gave Fei tribe a lot of pressure.

But Fei Wu did not handle this well, he had always shown a weak attitude to the outside world.

In order to satisfy his own needs, Fei Wu even gave up many resource points that Fei tribe owned. The result was that his battle did not seem to rise.

Fei Wu’s performance disappointed everyone, in the end, he even led Fei tribe to excavate and develop in one of Northern Plains’ ten great fierce areas. In the end, he triggered a terrifying beast tide and caused Fei tribe’s territory to be engulfed, even their headquarters was taken down. Most of their Gu Immortals died in the beast tide, while the remaining ones were quickly annexed and taken in by the other Huang Jin tribes.

After the beast tide was over, Fei tribe was wiped out while Fei Wu died pitifully inside the fierce area. Their remaining territory was also taken by the various tribes.

Fei tribe became a laughingstock and the prime negative example for people to learn from.

“How can such a useless person who harmed his entire tribe appear now?” Yao Huang felt confused and suspicious.

After realizing his revival, Fei Wu reacted and paid his respects to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable: ”Unfilial descendant, Fei Wu, greets Lord Ancestor!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already used his luck inspection method to observe Fei Wu’s foundation.

He was shocked to find out that Fei Wu’s luck was actually quite sizable, far surpassing most rank sevens while being lower than an average rank eight. More importantly, Fei Wu’s luck had a close connection to a certain existence far away, this existence’s luck had an influence on Giant Sun Immortal Venerable himself.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was a rank nine venerable, to think that there was actually an entity whose luck could affect him so intensely.

Soon, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s voice penetrated the ground and reached Blood Sea: ”The truth is often buried deep in history. Fei Wu, my descendant, tell me the truth.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2297: Unified Essence, Yi Qi Zi

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s words made Fei Wu shook intensely as he showed an expression of gratitude: ”Ancestor is wise! The so-called Fei tribe’s internal conflict was just our disguise to the outside world. The truth is, if not for that beast tide, how could our united Fei tribe be wiped out?”

“Back then, I expended countless immortal material resources but I did not use up Fei tribe’s foundation. Afterwards, when we developed in the fierce area, I even took away Yi Qi Zi which was deep within it!”

“However, legendary immemorial beast Yi Qi Zi had already recovered to a great extent, it was not unconscious. We fell for its ploy and ended up being exterminated by the beast tide.”

“But in the end, our Fei tribe did our best to retaliate, Yi Qi Zi did not succeed after all. Its will was completely eradicated by us!”

“It is a huge pity!”

“If Yi Qi Zi did not ruin our plan, my Fei tribe would have dominated Northern Plains with an unceasing quantity of immortal essence stones. We will become the number one Huang Jin tribe and to a certain extent, rival Heavenly Court!!”

After hearing this, Yao Huang stared with wide eyes as he asked consecutive questions.

“Yi Qi Zi?”

“Isn’t that a legendary immemorial desolate beast which appeared in the earliest history of humanity? Legend says that it was killed by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, how can it still be alive?”

“An unceasing source of immortal essence stones? Senior, did you unravel the mystery behind Heavenly Court’s production of immortal essence stones?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was silent as he listened. If reviving Fei Wu would get him immortal essence stones, it was not significant enough. However, his luck inspection showed that Fei Wu was very useful to him.

Within Blood Sea, Yao Huang was getting more excited, he clasped his fist with his palm and said: ”Good, Senior Fei Wu has woken up right on time. As long as we have this way to produce immortal essence stones, we can raise our reputation and catch up to Heavenly Court. This is definitely a great chance now that Heavenly Court has stopped distributing immortal essence stones. Once we take over, it will cause everyone to have a deep impression of Longevity Heaven beyond Heavenly Court!”

The more Yao Huang spoke, the happier he got.

“Heavenly Court stopped distributing immortal essence stones? That’s because they can’t produce it anymore.” Fei Wu was still kneeling on the ground, but he raised his upper body and said with a snicker, he was certain about the reason.

“Oh? Get up and talk, tell me about it clearly.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable descended upon Blood Sea, he arrived before Fei Wu.

“Yes.” Fei Wu bowed deeply again before getting up: ”I will explain from the start.”

Fei Wu explained slowly: ”Everyone knows that in this world, primeval energy is infinite, spirit springs produce primeval stones, but nobody has never found an immortal spring that can produce immortal essence stones.”

“Wild Gu, be it mortal or immortal, can absorb primeval energy to activate their abilities. But once they are refined, the Gu worm will be someone’s possession, they will lose the ability to use primeval energy. They will only be able to use primeval essence or immortal essence.”

“This primeval essence and immortal essence includes both the owner and others. If a Gu worm is lent out, the Gu worm can still use others’ primeval essence or immortal essence. For example, an Immortal Gu House can use the stored immortal essence of Gu Immortals inside.”

“What is the root cause of all these?”

“According to my research, the reason is that be it primeval essence or immortal essence, both contain our human will. Wild Gu contain heaven’s will, they are a product of heaven and earth, thus, we say that Gu is the essence of heaven and earth. Once we refine Gu worms, the heaven’s will inside will be purged, replaced by our human will.”

“As a result, the Gu worm becomes privately owned and the human will does not get acknowledged by the heaven’s will of the outside world. Thus, the Gu can no longer absorb external primeval energy.”

“If lent to others, the human will inside the Gu worm will acknowledge others so they can use their own primeval essence or immortal essence to activate it.”

“Different immortal essence contain different human, thus, they can cancel each other out. This is why many rank six Gu Immortals fail to succeed when they invade blessed lands that are already owned.”

Yao Huang was confused: ”What does this have to do with immortal essence stone production?”

“Don’t be anxious, listen to what I am saying, it will make sense soon.” Fei Wu waved his hand and smiled.

“Our aperture produces primeval essence while our immortal aperture produces immortal essence, they all contain our human will. Then, do primeval stones and immortal essence stones not have a will in them?”

“They do!”

The primeval stones that spirit springs produce are essentially reinforced primeval essence that contains heaven’s will. It is just that the primeval stones contain too little heaven’s will, it is common to ignore it. However, the heaven’s will often sneaks into our minds while we absorb primeval stones to influence our thoughts. This is one way that heaven’s will use to control us!”

“It is a pity that most Gu cultivators in the world are attracted to the effect of restoring primeval essence through primeval stones, they do not notice this issue.”

“Even if they do, they don’t care about it. Heaven’s will is just like air, it is everywhere, so it is quite normal to have some in primeval stones.”

“The immortal essence stones that Heavenly Court gives out are the same as primeval stones in that they also contain heaven’s will.”

“Why does Heavenly Court give out rank six immortal essence stones?”

“It is actually a huge scheme by Heavenly Court!”

“During Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s era, Heavenly Court purposely gave out immortal essence stones. These immortal essence stones reached the hands of the variant human Gu Immortals and were used by them. This allowed heaven’s will to infiltrate them.”

“Back then, heaven’s will sided with humanity which would rise to take the position of the variant humans.”

“By Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s era, she became one with the Dao and gained the ability to distort heaven’s will, greatly influencing it. The distribution of immortal essence stones became even more widespread. When Gu Immortals use these immortal essence stones, they will be infiltrated by heaven’s will, allowing Heavenly Court to influence and control them!”

Yao Huang heard his words as his mouth opened slightly: ”So that’s it? Can we copy Heavenly Court to distribute immortal essence stones and achieve the same effect for our Longevity Heaven?”

Fei Wu shook his head: ”Unless we can assimilate with the Dao like Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to alter heaven’s will.”

Yao Huang was anxious now: ”Even if we can’t achieve the same effect, as long as we have an unceasing supply of immortal essence stones, we can still use it to Longevity Heaven’s benefit. Senior Fei, how can we produce immortal essence stones?”

Fei Wu waved his hand again: ”No rush, no rush, listen to my story.”

“When we produce primeval essence, our human will and aperture are needed. When we produce immortal essence, our human will and immortal aperture are needed. To produce primeval stones, we need heaven’s will and spirit springs. What about immortal essence stones?”

Yao Huang blinked: ”Do we also need heaven’s will and immortal apertures or immortal springs to create immortal essence stones?”

Fei Wu shook his head: ”Many rank eight Gu Immortals who are not confident of passing a tribulation will annex an immemorial nine heavens fragment. From then on, the immortal aperture will turn into a grotto-heaven, it will be located at one place while the rank eight Gu Immortal will be like a caged bird unable to leave the immortal aperture again. These grotto-heavens contain heaven’s will, there is also an immortal aperture, so why can’t immortal essence stones be produced?”

“As for heaven’s will and immortal springs? This is something that people have been speculating about Heavenly Court, they think that Heavenly Court obtained the only immortal spring in the world. But the truth is, this is not true. There is no such thing as an immortal spring in the world.”

Yao Huang sighed: ”Senior Fei, stop beating about the bush.”

Even Giant Sun Immortal Venerable commented: ”Tell us directly.”

Fei Wu did not dare to defy Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he sighed regrettably and said: ”Then I’ll cut to the chase.”

“According to my research, the essence of a spirit spring is just an ordinary heaven path resource point. Within it, there are heaven path, water path, and earth path dao marks, because of the heaven’s will, the spring water can produce solid primeval stones.”

“The Heavenly Dao seeks balance of the myriad beings, it will not produce a resource like immortal essence stones naturally. Immortal essence is the most fundamental resource, without it, no Immortal Gu can be used by people. Meanwhile, the widespread distribution of immortal essence stones has greatly raised the chances of surviving calamities and tribulations, this can only be caused by people.”

“However, the process cannot avoid heaven’s will. Only through the injecting of heaven’s will can there be immortal essence stones produced. This is an impossible loop.”

Fei Wu accurately pointed out that heaven’s will was the most crucial element in producing immortal essence stones.

But it was impossible to make heaven’s will do this voluntarily as it violated the rules of the Heavenly Dao.

But nothing was absolute.

In history, Heavenly Court succeeded.

During Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s era, he used the special trait of Yi Qi Zi to produce immortal essence stones.

During Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s era, Yi Qi Zi suicided but she assimilated with the Dao and altered heaven’s will, allowing it to work with Heavenly Court to produce immortal essence stones.

“So, what is the special trait of Yi Qi Zi? Since it suicided, how did it revive?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable asked the most important question.

Fei Wu immediately answered: ”Yi Qi Zi is not its full name, its actual name is Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi. It is a very special legendary immemorial desolate beast, somewhat similar to Di Zang Sheng which appeared later in the future.”

“When a Gu Master undergoes immortal ascension, there is a crucial step to draw in heaven and earth qi to mix with one’s human qi and balance all three.”

“If the balancing of three qi succeeds, the qi lump will condense and become smaller until it reaches the limit. This qi lump is known as the Qi of Unified Essence.”

“This is the root cause of the creation of Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi! As long as there are Gu Masters undergoing immortal ascension in the world, they will produce the Qi of Unified Essence, even if it is destroyed, it can be reborn!”

“Initially, during the immemorial era, it was granted intelligence by a beastman great expert. Thus, it gained an immortal aperture and rose in strength, becoming a legendary immemorial beast.”

“When Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable challenged the various variant human races, Yi Qi Zi fought against the Immortal Venerable and lost, getting captured. But to the outside world, Primordial Origin declared that it was killed.”

“Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable held Yi Qi Zi captive and used it to produce immortal essence stones.”

“Yi Qi Zi lost its freedom, unwilling to give in, it tried all ways to escape.

No matter what it tried to do, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable still foiled its plans. After him, Star Constellation took over. She was even more skilled at planning and was extremely perceptive, Yi Qi Zi had no choice but to suicide out of despair.”

“This is the reason why he suicided in Heavenly Court.”

Yao Huang did not understand it: ”So how are they still producing immortal essence stones?”

Brilliance shone in Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s eyes, he muttered: ”So that’s it.”

At this moment, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable finally understood why destined birth through luck revived Fei Wu.

This was because his revival would give Giant Sun Immortal Venerable a way to replenish his immortal essence!

This was more useful and beneficial to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable than rank nine light Gu.

But luck path itself was an uncertainty.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could ensure that positive variables happened to benefit him, but he could not control the exact situation as that would involve controlling certainty.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2298: Yin-Yang Path, Multiple Pregnancy Gu

Fei Wu saw Yao Huang’s expression of confusion and laughed, he explained happily: ”When a Gu Master undergoes immortal ascension, they will have a fortuitous encounter known as natural inspiration.”

“What is the cause of it?”

“Heaven and earth qi contain heaven’s will while human qi contains human will, at this crucial moment, the three qi fuse together, meaning heaven’s will and human will congregate, allowing the person to ask heaven and earth for answers regarding the profundities and truths of the world.”

“This is because heaven’s will acknowledged the human will.”

“Why?”

“From what I see, once an aperture undergoes qualitative change, it will become an immortal aperture. This is an achievement that grants benefit to the world. The Heavenly Dao wants to see this happen, thus, it rewards the human will.”

“The specialty of Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi lies here, its body is made of the Qi of Unified Essence, which is the fusion of three qi, thus, it is able to receive the acknowledgment and reward of heaven’s will at all times.”

Yao Huang stared with wide eyes: ”That means it is able to undergo natural inspiration at all times?!”

Fei Wu shook his head: ”Strictly speaking, yes! But the truth is different. We all know that the three qi create the Unified Essence, it needs to be balanced carefully. If the lump of three qi loses balance, the Gu cultivator will die. This is not true for Yi Qi Zi, failure to balance the three qi will not cause it to be in fatal danger, instead, it will lose its rationality.”

“Continuously controlling and balancing the three qi is too difficult.”

“We have all undergone immortal ascension, it is already too tough for us to sustain the state of balancing the three qi for half a day. But Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi has to undergo it at all times.”

“Thus, after it expends all its effort or gets sick of balancing the three qi, its body will lose control of the three qi. This causes heaven’s will and the human will to intertwine and result in chaos, causing it to lose its rationality.”

“In this condition, it cannot even think normally, how can it make use of the natural inspiration?”

“Regardless, as long as the Qi of Unified Essence exists, heaven’s will still favors the human will, it will be willing to help.”

“If this is an ordinary Gu Master who has not created the immortal aperture yet, they will only be able to interact with heaven’s will and undergo natural inspiration. But Yi Qi Zi is different, it has an immortal aperture already. Thus, when it is sane and clearheaded, its immortal aperture will produce immortal essence. When it is irrational and insane, its immortal aperture will produce immortal essence stones that contain heaven’s will.”

Yao Huang finally understood everything.

Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi was too special, because of its unique physique, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable gained immortal essence stones. But he only distributed rank six immortal essence stones.

After Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi died, Star Constellation assimilated with the Dao, although she could control heaven’s will to some extent, there was a limit to it. Thus, from then on, Heavenly Court could only produce rank six immortal essence stones.

Fei Wu continued: ” Back then, I accidentally found Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi in the fierce area, it was in a state of insanity, buried deep underground and unable to move. I spoke with it but it could not respond clearly, its answer was jumbled but it cursed Heavenly Court’s two venerables with deep hatred. After some time, I pieced together the story and deduced many truths behind the situation.”

“I mobilized the entire Fei tribe and wanted to obtain Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi. I expended immortal materials and modified killer moves to try and manipulate it. After completing my preparations, I went into the fierce area and execute my plan. But to think that Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi actually had its sanity, at that time, I could not back out anymore, I had to continue my plan forcefully. Fei tribe was wiped out while Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi was also sealed by our Fei tribe’s method!”

“Without any accidents, it should still be trapped at the original spot, Ancestor, you only need to go retrieve it."

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable nodded, he brought Fei Wu to the Jade Ring fierce area.

Northern Plains had ten great fierce areas, within them were countless desolate beast groups, immemorial desolate beast and plants were also not rare.

Super forces had the ability to develop in them, but if a mistake happened, they would trigger a huge beast tide. Fei tribe's failure was one of the examples.

Jade Ring fierce area had more than ten different rings of huge ancient trees.

As one entered deeper into each ring, they would face more danger and threat.

Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi was hidden in the sixth ring.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable personally took action, he quickly arrived at it. Fei Wu had just revived and had no Gu worms but he was only giving directions.

Towards his ancestor, he did not hide anything but only said the truth.

After Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made his deductions, he used a newly modified luck path killer move, it triggered the arrangements of Fei tribe.

After doing that, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable extracted a huge black pearl from deep underground.

The black pearl was large as an elephant, it had a smooth surface and a deeply hidden aura.

"This is the result that our Fei tribe created, even a legendary immemorial beast was sealed by us!" Fei Wu looked at Yi Qi Zi as he sighed with deep emotions.

He had grand ambitions that ended in failure and the entire Fei tribe was wiped out. But thankfully, he was able to revive and use the arrangements they made to help their ancestor, this was all worth it!

After inspecting for some time, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable saw through the information of Yi Qi Zi using the intel from Fei Wu.

Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi was a lump of the Qi of Unified Essence. When it was sane, it would be in human form, the appearance would be hard to differentiate from actual people.

When it stops balancing the three qi and they go into chaos, it would turn into a lump of the Qi of Unified Essence.

If there was more heaven qi, it would float higher, if there was more earth qi, it would sink into the ground.

When Fei tribe fought against it, it had not regained its sanity fully, thus, it could not use its full strength.

Fei Wu and the rest made ample preparations, they deduced a killer move that countered Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi, eventually sealing it here.

Although Fei Wu was only rank seven, Fei tribe had many rank eights in the past, they also had Immortal Gu Houses that were the foundation of a super force. Most importantly, Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi was not sane so its strength could not be used properly.

Without rationality, even Spectral Soul Demon Venerable could not take down Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie.

A long time had passed, by now, Fei tribe’s killer move was already greatly weakened, the sealing effect had reached its limit.

But even if Yi Qi Zi regained freely, in its current condition, it would remain on the spot without regaining its senses.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable looked through the Qi of Unified Essence and inspected that deep within its immortal aperture, there were many rank eight immortal essence stones.

The production of immortal essence was as natural as breathing to the immortal aperture origin core, with heaven’s will suppressing the human will the entire time, legendary immemorial beast Yi Qi Zi’s immortal aperture had a large number of rank eight immortal essence stones!

Rank six immortal essence stones had little significance to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, but rank eight immortal essence stones were different.

While happy, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable also found a problem.

There was a lot of heaven’s will inside these rank eight immortal essence stones, if he wanted to absorb them, he would need to get rid of the heaven’s will.

It was troublesome.

If he handled it poorly, it would affect the conversion rate of the immortal essence stones.

For example, one rank eight immortal essence stone might only be able to produce half a bead of rank eight immortal essence after getting rid of the heaven’s will.

Rank six immortal essence stones had no such problem because the heaven’s will inside was too little.

After considering it for a while, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable thought: ”Back then, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable made use of Yi Qi Zi, he also had rank eight immortal essence stones but only distributed the rank six version, he was not likely trying not to alert the variant human Gu Immortals. By Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s era, Yi Qi Zi suicided and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable altered heaven’s will, by fusing it with Heavenly Court’s origin core, they could only produce rank six immortal essence stones.”

“However, where did the storage of rank eight immortal essence stones go? Are they use dup or hidden somewhere?”

“If they are hidden, why did I not find them when I attacked Heavenly Court? Did Spectral Soul Demon Venerable obtain them after ransacking Heavenly Court’s treasury?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shook his head.

Afterwards, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was captured by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made turned into her puppet.

If he had obtained those valuable rank eight immortal essence stones, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would have retrieved them.

But the situation was clear, she had always been lacking immortal essence the entire time!

“No, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable cultivates wisdom path, what if she is hiding it the entire time?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable frowned, his expression turned slightly solemn.

“If she has an abundant supply of immortal essence, why does she still lack it? In what area did she use the essence?”

Ever since Star Constellation Immortal Venerable refined Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had not inspected her situation anymore.

As for Fang Yuan, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could inspect him easily each time.

“If that is the situation, then Star Constellation Immortal Venerable... How much are you hiding? How deep are your secrets?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable looked in the direction of Central Continent.

Eastern Sea.

“Any venerable has talent that is unimaginable to the average genius.” Fang Yuan had already comprehended the information that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable handed to him in their transaction.

He obtained what he wanted.

Fang Yuan had already refined rank five blood skull Gu.

Earlier, he was only using rank four blood skull Gu, but Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had a newly developed rank five version.

Although it was a mortal Gu recipe, it had developed beyond the original limit of the world, this showed Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s immense talent.

Rank five blood skull Gu only needed to extract a certain amount of bloodline from the target’s kin, there was no need to slaughter the entire clan.

There was also a method to produce twins.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had no choice but to hand over the research results of yin-yang path that he was secretly looking into.

Back then, in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building, there was the inheritance of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable regarding yin-yang path. The content was a method, to use it, a male and female Gu Immortal had to cooperate, using copulation to extend the lifespan of one of them.

But there was a flaw in this.

If one gains lifespan, the other must lose lifespan.

In other words, it was to transfer the lifespan of one person to the other.

Right now, the yin-yang path research result that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable handed to Fang Yuan was much more complete and comprehensive than the one hidden in Eighty-Eight True Yang Building.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had grand ambitions in creating this path, he wanted to use yin-yang to describe all beings in the world.

This was the same as Feng Jiu Ge’s desire to use sound path to express all life in this world.

But as Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s strength and knowledge increased, he recognized that his former ideology of yin-yang was very shallow, he eventually gave up on creating it.

Although there were some research results in yin-yang path, it could not achieve a qualitative change to become a brand new path. At most, it could be used with other paths to occasionally create some unorthodox small gains.

Yin-yang life extension method was one of such results.

Another of such small gains were abortion Gu, safe pregnancy Gu, multiple pregnancy Gu, become pregnant Gu, reincarnation Gu, dead fetus Gu, and others.

Multiple pregnancy Gu was what Fang Yuan wanted.

Rank one could be used to produce one child, rank two produced twins. Rank three produced triplets, rank four produced quadruplets, and rank five produced quintuplets.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2299: Floating Refinement Hive

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

“So, can you tell me anything about my father?” Gu Yue Fang Xiang looked at the hairy man Gu Immortal in front of him.

Beside him, there was a female immortal.

The hairy man Gu Immortal Twelfth Hair took a look at the female immortal before casting his gaze at Gu Yue Fang Xiang.

This female immortal was mermaid Lian Ke Xin.

It turned out that after Gu Yue Fang Xiang passed the tribulation to become a Gu Immortal and returned to the hairy man continent, he saw his mother—Steel Thread City Lord—who was in an unconscious state.

Lian Ke Xin had been helping him with his tribulation, she explained the truth of this world to him, Gu Yue Fang Xiang realized that to save his mother, he needed to make sufficient contributions to the Great Love Immortal Venerable of this world. In that case, he could use contribution points that he earned to issue a mission for those healing Gu Immortals to heal his mother.

Moreover, Lian Ke Xin told Fang Xiang that this hairy man continent was governed by a hairy man Gu Immortal, if he wanted to find his father, he could go and ask him.

Under Lian Ke Xin’s lead, Gu Yue Fang Xiang met Twelfth Hair for the first time, he asked about the information regarding his father.

Twelfth Hair nodded: ”I do know something... about your father. But that is from long ago, if you want to know, help me with something.”

Gu Yue Fang Xiang was a little hesitant, he did not agree immediately.

Lian Ke Xin saw this and immediately said: ”Friend Twelfth Hair, Fang Xiang has just become an immortal, if you want to request a difficult task, we will have to decline.”

Gu Yue Fang Xiang casted a grateful gaze at Lian Ke Xin.

Twelfth Hair laughed loudly: ”Friend Fang Xiang has half of our hairy man bloodline, why will I bully him? Don’t worry, this matter involves the arrangement of Floating Refinement Hive.”

“Oh? You have already refined this hive?” Lian Ke Xin was really surprised.

Twelfth Hair answered: ”With the method that our master created personally, we hairy man Gu Immortals only had to follow the instructions to achieve success.”

Next, Twelfth Hair looked at Fang Xiang: ”Floating Refinement Hive has already been created, you only need to place it inside Refinement Sea. This is much easier than creating it, if you can complete the mission, I will tell you things about your father.”

Gu Yue Fang Xiang could not decide, he looked towards Lian Ke Xin subconsciously.

Lian Ke Xin smiled at him and nodded.

“Alright, I’ll do it.” Gu Yue Fang Xiang immediately decided.

Thus, Twelfth Hair transferred the Floating Refinement Hive into Gu Yue Fang Xiang’s immortal aperture.

Gu Yue Fang Xiang saw the Floating Refinement Hive for the first time, this structure was quite peculiar, it was large as a mountain but had the appearance and structure of a beehive, there were many small spaces of various sizes inside.

Floating Refinement Hive had a narrow top and a broad bottom which was the base of the hive, it could float on the sea and resist huge waves with great stability.

“This is amazing!” Fang Xiang used investigative methods and observed, his eyes stared wide in amazement.

Twelfth Hair laughed and said in a proud tone: ”This is invented by our master, of course it is amazing. Each Floating Refinement Hive can be considered an incomplete secluded domain of heaven and earth. It contains countless refinement path dao marks, if one refined Gu inside, not only will the success rate be much higher, they can even save on the cost of Gu refinement.”

“Floating Refinement Hive can not only accommodate countless refinement path Gu Masters, it can also hold ten refinement path Gu Immortals at most. With refinement path Gu Immortals stationed here, the hive can continuously produce Immortal Gu! Each Floating Refinement Hive can be seen as a refinement path super resource point.”

“Alright, there is no time, get going now.”

Fang Xiang nodded and immediately set off to Refinement Sea with Lian Ke Xin.

Refinement Sea was at the center of Mini Eastern Sea, it was not large compared to the other sea areas but it had extraordinary value.

“This is a genuine secluded domain of heaven and earth!” After hearing Lian Ke Xin’s explanation, Fang Yuan understood the value of Refinement Sea.

“Master is really amazing! His methods are unfathomable like true immortal deities, he can even create his own secluded domain of heaven and earth.” Fang Xiang praised continuously.

The current Refinement Sea had already been completed by Fang Yuan, it was a genuine secluded domain of heaven and earth!

Back then, Lang Ya land spirit used calamities and tribulations to collect water path dao marks and painstakingly built the incomplete Refinement Sea. After Fang Yuan obtained it, his speed of building it was many times faster.

Firstly, Fang Yuan was a venerable, he was even stronger than Long Hair Ancestor, not to mention Lang Ya land spirit.

Secondly, Fang Yuan was a supreme grandmaster in refinement path. The current supreme grandmaster was far superior to the supreme grandmaster of the past.

Thirdly, Fang Yuan had sovereign immortal body with non-conflicting dao marks, he could use methods of any path. He directly used water path methods that were far more efficient than Lang Ya land spirit’s idea.

Fang Xiang soon found his destination, but there was a need to create an immortal formation here. The content was much more difficult that he imagined.

That was because there was more than one Floating Refinement Hive, in the current Refinement Sea, there were many other hives.

Arranging the Floating Refinement Hive was not as simple as dumping it here. It needed a stable location to form a certain connection with the surrounding Floating Refinement Hives.

After the Floating Refinement Hives reached a certain number, the immortal formation would activate and cause all the hives to float around with the waves of Refinement Sea.

They were like ink pens that drew a painting on this Refinement Sea as the canvas. Refinement Sea helped the Refinement Hives to refine Gu while the Refinement Hives replenished the Refinement Sea after it was expended greatly.

This was a grand system that was established!

Under Lian Ke Xin’s guidance and cooperation, Fang Xiang started arranging the immortal formation.

Three days later, they only completed ten percent of it.

“This will not do, it is too slow.” Lian Ke Xin immediately decided as she used some contribution points to post a mission to recruit helpers.

Not long after, a Gu Immortal came.

“I am a newly advanced formation path Gu Immortal, Ni Lao Shi.” This Ni clan Gu Immortal was a purebred human, he accepted Lian Ke Xin’s mission.

With his help, there was rapid progress.

Three days passed, the arrangement of Refinement Hive was finally completed.

Fang Xiang and Ni Lao Shi left with lingering reluctance, they became good friends after three days.

Fang Xiang had spent his entire life on the hairy man continent, he rarely interacted with humans. He knew that his father was a human, so he bore curiosity and good feelings for them.

Ni Lao Shi was honest and loyal, it was natural that they became good friends.

Fang Xiang’s perspective of the humans improved again.

After completing Twelfth Hair’s mission, he returned to the hairy man continent and asked about his father.

As for Ni Lao Shi, he took a sum of contribution points from Lian Ke Xin and immediately went back to his clan.

After returning to Ni clan’s territory, he was welcomed by the entire clan’s cheers.

Ni clan was originally situated in Southern Border, it was moved into the sovereign immortal aperture by Fang Yuan to research the human path Gu refinement method.

Right now, Fang Yuan became a refinement path venerable, Ni clan lost its value but still remained in the sovereign immortal aperture to develop.

Ni clan had several Gu Immortal seeds, but the least outstanding Ni Lao Shi actually succeeded in the immortal ascension.

With a Gu Immortal, Ni clan became a super force.

Ni Lao Shi assembled the higher-ups of Ni clan and expressed his thoughts to them.

“One of master’s clones has some gains from researching dream path, he is able to create a dream path formation to raise the aptitude of an entire clan. I already have sufficient contribution points, I’ll bring you to the formation now, what do you think?”

Seeing that Ni Lao Shi had become an immortal but did not forget his roots, the higher-ups were very moved that he still cared about their development, they nodded their heads in agreement.

Ni Lao Shi placed the clansmen into his immortal aperture as he set off to find Meng Qiu Zhen.

After Ni Lao Shi paid his respects and stated his intention, Meng Qiu Zhen brought him to a dream path formation.

Ni Lao Shi paid the necessary contribution points as Meng Qiu Zhen activated the formation. The former opened his immortal aperture door and let out his clansmen who walked into the dream path formation.

“Will there be any issues?” Ni Lao Shi stared with a fixed gaze until the final Ni clansman walked into the formation.

He had an expression of worry as he said that, especially when his parents were among them.

Meng Qiu Zhen smiled lightly as he shook his head: ”How can that be? Don’t worry.”

Saying so, he activated the formation.

At the next moment, all the Ni clansmen who entered the formation fell onto the ground as some started snoring, they had all fallen asleep.

However, there was a chain of explosions that soon followed.

These Ni clansmen had all self-detonated and died in their dreams.

Their blood was extracted by the formation and pumped into the sole surviving Ni clansman.

After completing everything, Human Sea who was deep within the formation also activated.

Thus, the self-detonated Ni clansmen were revived but they remained asleep.

“How many clans have already come to this place?” Ni Lao Shi asked.

“There were four, you are the fifth clan.” Meng Qiu Zhen said: ”Don’t worry, this formation is very safe.”

At the same time, the Ni clansmen started the second round of self-detonation, but this time, the final survivor was switched to another person.

Like this, they were revived and slaughtered continuously until all the Ni clan members’ aptitude rose.

Meng Qiu Zhen stopped the formation and woke them up.

Immediately, waves of astonishment hit the Ni clansmen as they cheered and shouted with loud voices.

“Amazing, my aptitude improved!”

“What method is this? It is so strong, so strong!”

“Ni Lao Shi is a really good child, he did not forget us even after immortal ascension, he repaid us fully.”

Ni Lao Shi inspected everyone, almost all of them had A grade aptitude.

“This is truly a miracle. I guess only someone like master can perform such legendary acts.” Ni Lao Shi was very shocked, his admiration towards Fang Yuan grew deeper.

But he did not know the truth.

Dream path formation? No, this was clearly a blood path formation!

But dream path was a great cover that could convince many Gu Immortals. After all, they had all fallen asleep, it was quite similar to dream path methods, so this seemed quite normal on the surface.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2300: Born with a Rank Five Gu

Fang Yuan’s divine sense spread rapidly in the sovereign immortal aperture.

“Maybe I should build some small wisdom path formations so my divine sense can spread here more easily?” Fang Yuan thought.

His divine sense was moving at a rapid speed but the sovereign immortal aperture was just too big. It was too troublesome for Fang Yuan to look into his immortal aperture closely each time he entered.

Ordinary Gu Immortals had no such issue. Although their immortal aperture was called a small world, it could not compare to Fang Yuan’s sovereign immortal aperture.

Not long after, Fang Yuan’s divine sense reached the destination.

Mini Western Desert, Inkman City.

There was a family at an unassuming corner of the city.

The man of the family was a young inkman Gu Master, he had limited aptitude and only had rank two cultivation. Currently, he had a nervous expression as he paced outside the room.

Waaaa—!

The crying of a baby could be heard coming from within the room.

The man immediately showed an expression of joy.

He rushed into the room and saw his wife and the female doctor who he had hired at a high price.

The female doctor was hiding a male inkman baby.

He was very small and ugly but was healthy.

“Everything is normal, except...” The female doctor smiled at the man and directed her gaze to the baby’s arm.

In his hands, there were a pair of Gu worms.

They were bone flesh unity Gu!

The female doctor had an expression of shock, because she was the doctor here, she saw that this pair of Gu worms were born alongside the baby.

“If I had not been here the entire time, I would not have believed this. Is this... the effect of the Pregnancy Temple?” The female doctor asked the male inkman.

The male inkman saw this immediately.

His eyes turned red after seeing the Gu worms.

With his strength and wealth, he would need to expend a vast amount of time and effort to get such Gu worms.

But now, this pair of rare Gu worms was born alongside his son!

This was such a huge surprise.

The male inkman nodded, he said chokingly: ”Yes, after the Pregnancy Temple was built, my wife and I went to give it a try. To think that it really worked!”

The female doctor sighed and said: ”You must not be the only one. This Pregnancy Temple really works as they said, it can help you to rapidly have children, and if lucky, they will be born with Gu worms.”

The male inkman wanted to speak but hesitated.

The female doctor casted him a gaze of suspicion.

On the bed, the weak female inkman spoke now, she wanted the doctor to test their bloodline.

The female doctor was stunned, she realized that they were worried this baby was not their own.

Immediately after, the test was completed.

It was a joyful ending.

“This is my son, I finally have a son. Oh goodness, I finally have a son!” The male inkman had no hesitation anymore, he held the baby and cried tears of joy.

Fang Yuan’s divine sense observed the scene and left quietly.

This Pregnancy Temple was his arrangement.

There were many of such mortal Gu Houses, after Fang Yuan built them, he placed them all over the sovereign immortal aperture for the people to use.

Pregnancy Temple was a human path Immortal Gu House, the core human path Gu worms it used included: become pregnant Gu, triplet Gu, dead fetus Gu, multiple pregnancy Gu, and safe pregnancy Gu.

It even used a large number of time path and refinement path Gu worms.

The actual effect of Pregnancy Temple was to extract the yin-yang qi of the male and female to activate become pregnant Gu and make the female pregnant.

After that, it would use triplet Gu to turn the fetus into triplets.

After that, two of the fetuses would be used as Gu materials after dead fetus Gu activated, while the final one would be protected by safe pregnancy Gu.

The two dead fetuses would be refined as bone flesh unity Gu, born together with the final fetus.

The entire process of the pregnancy to childbirth would not take more than seven days, this was the effect of time path Gu worms.

In that case, the sovereign immortal aperture's population would rise rapidly. Once the population went up, more clans would be created, and under the effect of the 'dream path method', their aptitudes would rise together and produce more Gu Immortal seeds.

Throughout the process, the citizens of the sovereign immortal aperture would feel more admiration and love towards their great leader Fang Yuan, they would feel indebted to him!

It was clear that they would become increasingly loyal to him.

"The bone flesh unity Gu that comes with the baby act as the vital Gu and is refined naturally. Once these babies are born, they will have a rank five vital Gu. After bone flesh unity Gu reaches a certain level, they will switch to other Gu worms. In that case, the growth of these babies will be accelerated!"

Fang Yuan planned inwardly.

It was not hard for the current him to achieve this, it was completely a breeze.

He used the human body Gu refinement method, which was one of the peak profundities of refinement path, originating from Ni clan.

When Ni clan's bloodline reach a certain density, the current generation Ni Xiang would be born with an Immortal Gu appearing in their body.

Fang Yuan was only producing mortal Gu now.

"When Giant Sun Immortal Venerable created yin-yang path, the essence was in Gu worms like abortion Gu, safe pregnancy Gu, and multiple pregnancy Gu. All the past venerables have comprehended some human path killer moves from <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, but these methods are too profound and not suited for the masses. Thus, Heavenly Court arranged for Divine Emperor City to develop the foundation of human path."

"The truth is, there is a very special man among the venerables, he had actually created many foundational mortal Gu of human path, but had always kept them to himself and did not popularize them."

"The prospect and development of human path is truly great." Fang Yuan sighed.

Higher level human path killer moves were able to easily turn the situation of the fate war around, while lower level methods had incredible use.

Fang Yuan was certain that human path was not inferior to heaven path!

Most importantly, human path had not developed yet.

"Human path is suppressed by the Heavenly Dao. Just these human path mortal Gu that are created by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable have such a terrifying effect. How can the Heavenly Dao that emphasizes balance allow such a qualitative change in the growth of humanity?"

Fang Yuan was increasingly understanding why Heavenly Court was focusing on developing human path.

Heavenly Court had always been tampering with heaven’s will using fate Gu as their pillar.

After fate Gu was destroyed, Heavenly Court became the number one super force that heaven’s will disliked.

Being unable to use heaven’s will, Heavenly Court decided to develop human path instead.

“But why would Star Constellation Immortal Venerable not know about the weakness of the derivation formation?” Fang Yuan had a deep and eerie gaze.

Derivation formation was situated in Heavenly Court, any research results that it produced would be known by heaven’s will.

This meant that as those Gu cultivators who entered the derivation formation grew, the Heavenly Dao also grew together with them!

But even if the Heavenly Dao gained from this, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable still had benefits to gain from using the derivation formation.

She could develop herself to surpass the other venerables.

It was possible that in her plan, she would first eliminate the other venerables and make Heavenly Court the dominating force before dealing with heaven’s will.

“Thus, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has not entered the derivation formation herself, or is she waiting for a chance?” Fang Yuan guessed to himself.

At least, Fang Yuan knew that Crazed Demon Cave was the most suitable place to put the derivation formation.

The first seven layers of Crazed Demon Cave could not isolate heaven’s will, but the eighth and ninth layers were safe.

Other than that, Fang Yuan could not see any other possibilities.

It would not work if one placed the derivation formation into a venerable aperture.

Because the wild derivation Gu was rank nine, it contained too much heaven’s will. If placed into the venerable’s immortal aperture, the heaven’s will within would connect with the heaven’s will of the five regions, allowing the venerable to be detected by heaven’s will.

Fang Yuan had once suffered a loss from this.

“Limitless Demon Venerable created the Crazed Demon formation, but Star Constellation Immortal Venerable must have been a part of it. After all, the formation needs wisdom path’s help. This is also why Star Constellation Immortal Venerable held the initiative in Crazed Demon Cave, after returning to Heavenly Court, she easily created the derivation formation. But Crazed Demon Cave itself must have been made by Limitless Demon Venerable alone. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable does not know of its profundity, otherwise, it will be the first thing she constructs.”

Fang Yuan’s divine sense continued to search.

There were many families in Inkman City that had given birth to children.

The situation was quite successful, each newborn had a bone flesh unity Gu as their vital Gu.

Come to speak of it, bone flesh unity Gu’s recipe was modified by Fang Yuan.

Rank eight wisdom Gu was of some help to Fang Yuan.

During this period of time, he easily raised wisdom Gu to rank eight.

In addition, Refinement Sea and Human Sea were completed.

It was just that Human Sea lacked Human Mountain, it was not a complete secluded domain now and could still be expended.

The cost of reviving mortals was much cheaper than Gu Immortals, it could last for a very long time.

Other than Human Sea and Refinement Sea, Fang Yuan had also collected many fragments of the Qian Kun Crystal Wall.

Most of the Qian Kun Crystal Wall fragments scattered in Eastern Sea, Southern Border, and Western Desert were currently in Fang Yuan’s hands.

As for the other two regions, because of the existence of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, Fang Yuan did not ask about them when he used stealing heavenly secret.

The complete Qian Kun Crystal Wall was even stronger than stealing heavenly secret, it contained the information of all situations that happened in the world.

If stealing heavenly secret was said to be a ladle that was drawing water from the vat, then the Qian Kun Crystal Wall was the vat itself!

According to Fang Yuan’s understanding after using stealing heavenly secret, the complete Qian Kun Crystal Wall could create Primordial Domain!!

Moving his divine sense, Fang Yuan left Inkman City and came to Mini Eastern Sea to inspect the Floating Refinement Hives.

These Floating Refinement Hives were arranged appropriately, there were no issues.

They were originally derived from the Fang Yuan stone nest.

Back then, Fang Yuan had the concept of a production line, he created these stone nests and arranged for many hairy man Gu Masters to refine Gu.

Right now, each of the Floating Refinement Hives were an incomplete secluded domain of heaven and earth, they were far superior to the Fang Yuan stone nest back then.

There were already many hairy man Gu Masters in some of the Floating Refinement Hives.

The first batch of Gu worms to refine were relic Gu and connecting heaven Gu.

After Fang Yuan’s divine sense looked around for a while, he left again.

After a while, under the control of his divine sense, countless Gu worms expended his rich reserves of rank nine immortal essence to activate an immortal killer move — Endless Trouble.

The core Immortal Gu of this move was rank eight After, it could delay the current calamity or tribulation to the next time, and face them together.

Fang Yuan had already modified this killer move and used it many times.

He adjusted the sovereign immortal aperture's time flow to make it much faster, this caused calamities and tribulations to occur more frequently, but each time, Fang Yuan used endless trouble killer move to delay them to the next tribulation.

Such an action infuriated heaven's will, when the actual tribulation occurs, it would be extremely strong.

For this was a flaw that Fang Yuan could benefit from.

Even if the tribulations erupted with the anger of heaven's will and became more powerful, Fang Yuan was confident of passing them and getting a large number of dao marks!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2301: Heaven Path Dream Realm

The truth was, Fang Yuan had no choice but to use endless trouble killer move.

If he had to undergo tribulation, he would need to place the sovereign immortal aperture in the five regions and draw in heaven and earth qi. At that time, heaven's will would control them and form tribulations.

The calamities and tribulations were not scary, Fang Yuan was confident of dealing with them.

But during his tribulation, the other venerables would definitely come to probe and suppress him.

But at that time, his sovereign immortal aperture would not be movable, because of the deep involvement of heaven's will, if the venerables attacked too fiercely, obscured heavenly secret might not be able to conceal Fang Yuan anymore.

Fang Yuan would be exposed.

"Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable must also be using methods to delay their tribulations." Fang Yuan was certain about this.

In this contest of three venerables, nobody wanted to be the first to undergo tribulation. Whoever did that would expose a flaw first and face suppression.

If they were targeted too badly, it would be hard to catch up to the other venerables anymore.

There would be a danger of dying.

This was true for grand tribulations and myriad tribulations, while the chaotic disaster was a huge flaw of the venerables!

“After using endless trouble this time, I am not far from the next chaotic disaster.” Fang Yuan thought.

Venerables faced a grand tribulation every ten years, a myriad tribulation every fifty years, and a chaotic disaster every one hundred years.

That was to say, after eight grand tribulations and one myriad tribulation, they would face one chaotic disaster.

Fang Yuan had already used endless trouble many times, he was two grand tribulations away from the chaotic disaster.

In this aspect, Fang Yuan was the venerable with the biggest problem.

“Oh?” After endless trouble was used successfully, Fang Yuan’s expression changed slightly.

Although endless trouble succeeded like many of the previous attempts, there was a difference now.

Fang Yuan felt a faint sense of hunger.

After gaining sovereign immortal body, it needed to consume food or it would get hungry. But this hunger was not like the normal feeling of hunger — it originated from his origin!

Fang Yuan’s expression gradually turned solemn.

He knew why.

This was the sovereign immortal aperture’s desire to eat a venerable immortal aperture.

Sovereign immortal body originally had this flaw, or rather, weakness. But in Fang Yuan’s estimations, there was still some time left after becoming rank nine.

To think that he was already feeling faint hunger that could not be ignored.

This was much earlier than he had expected.

“Is it because the sovereign immortal aperture has grown too big and annexed too many grotto-heavens, since even now, I am still bringing in resource points?”

Fang Yuan vaguely felt that this was the truth.

He had developed the sovereign immortal aperture too well.

The greatest weakness and also advantage of the sovereign immortal aperture were the non-conflicting dao marks.

But because the sovereign immortal aperture’s development was too good, and because of the non-conflicting dao marks, its foundation was unstable.

"But before, even with rank eight cultivation level, I have never felt such hunger."

"After becoming venerable, this feeling emerged, what is the reason?"

"No matter what, the four paths of refinement path, food path, heaven path, and human path hold the possibility of resolving sovereign immortal body's problem of requiring food."

Fang Yuan analyzed continuously in his mind.

He was most skilled in refinement path, there was no need to explain it. As long as he raised the sovereign immortal body to rank ten, the problem would be resolved.

Food path could replenish the expenditure and promote growth. Children need to eat food to have enough nourishment to grow. Sovereign immortal body held the same logic.

As for human path and heaven path...

Sovereign immortal fetus Gu was made using the ten extreme physiques as the main materials, it was a pure human path Gu worm. But in the end, it transformed into sovereign immortal body that had the sovereign immortal aperture. In this aspect, it contained heaven path profundity.

And the effect of having non-conflicting dao marks was also part of heaven path.

Now, the problem was that these four paths were theoretically capable of resolving the issue of sovereign immortal body's food requirement. The issue was that Fang Yuan did not know which path was the most feasible and possible one.

Fang Yuan knew most about refinement path, he needed to modify and innovate to resolve sovereign immortal body's issue.

Food path and human path were not developed yet.

Heaven path was uncertain too, there might not be any solution available, Fang Yuan might have to create his own method. After all, rank nine sovereign immortal fetus Gu had already broken the balance of the Heavenly Dao, it was a grand feat achieved by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

It was very difficult for Fang Yuan to resolve the root issue of sovereign immortal body's food requirement.

Even though he was a venerable, he was not confident of doing it, he needed to invest resources and effort to make deductions. After all, rank nine sovereign immortal fetus Gu was an unprecedented creation.

Other than solving the root cause, there were also methods to alleviate it.

That was to satisfy the hunger and devour a venerable immortal aperture!

This difficulty was quite high.

It meant that Fang Yuan would have to defeat a venerable.

If there was just one venerable, Fang Yuan might have an easier time. The issue was that many venerables existed now, if one person was too outstanding, there would be a huge chain reaction. Fang Yuan did not have the strength to suppress all the venerables at once, if he was exposed, the situation would be troublesome for him.

“But if I can annex a venerable’s aperture, there is also a good aspect in that I can skip tribulations.”

“This means that if I plan properly, I will not need to take a risk and undergo the chaotic disaster, I can directly skip this huge problem!”

Thinking of this, Fang Yuan was moved internally.

He thought of Paradise Earth.

Paradise Earth was killed by him in Crazed Demon Cave, his soul dissipated but his immortal body and aperture remained.

Because he cultivated heaven path, the immortal aperture was very stable unlike other paths. Thus, Fang Yuan was able to preserve it until now.

Although Paradise Earth’s immortal aperture was only rank eight, it was merely a step away from venerable level.

Paradise Earth’s immortal body had enough heaven path dao marks, he only lacked heaven path attainment level to become a heaven path venerable.

That was to say, as long as Fang Yuan used split soul to take over Paradise Earth’s immortal aperture and body, he would gain a heaven path clone.

“A heaven path clone with rank eight cultivation level, but it is only a step away from venerable level.” Fang Yuan was moved.

If his heaven path attainment level could reach supreme grandmaster, he would immediately be able to create a heaven path venerable clone!

At that time, be it to fight against other venerables or to annex this venerable immortal aperture, it would be very useful to Fang Yuan!

“It is a pity there is only a bit of truthful floating ice left, I’ve used most of it. The remaining part cannot allow me to become a supreme grandmaster in heaven path.”

Spectral heaven.

“Zi Wei, you can’t escape.” Duke Tong quickly shortened the distance between him and Fairy Zi Wei.

Fairy Zi Wei’s expression was quite pale, Ying Wu Xie who was in her arms said: ”Let me block them, you should escape.”

Heavenly Court had countless methods, Duke Tong and the rest were revived Gu Immortal seniors, even as a wisdom path great expert, Fairy Zi Wei could not hide for long.

Most importantly, the environment in spectral heaven changed, the previous black-white overturning clouds had completely vanished, Fairy Zi Wei could not use them anymore. Thus, even though she could escape from them temporarily, she would be found by them after a short period of time and they would catch up in no time.

Seeing that Duke Tong was reaching her again, Fairy Zi Wei felt despair in her heart.

It was not easy to last this long, she was already at her wits’ end.

“Feng Jiu Ge, when are you going to take action?” Fairy Zi Wei shouted.

Duke Tong snickered in disdain: ”Zi Wei, how long are you going to keep up this act?”

Feng Jiu Ge did not appear after all, he was not Shadow Sect’s savior.

But another change occurred.

A pink beast growled and charged at them while covered in an illusory halo.

“What is this?!” Duke Tong stared with wide eyes.

“Dream realm?” Fairy Zi Wei gritted her teeth, she flew towards the pink beast and got devoured in one mouthful without dodging it.

After devouring Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie, the beast was not satisfied, it charged towards Duke Tong instead of stopping.

Facing the intense dream path aura, Duke Tong had no choice but to dodge.

“Dream realm? Why is it in a beast form?!” Duke Tong was helpless, he could not enter or leave the dream realm at will.

Moreover, this dream realm was different from what was described in their intel, it could move around and hunt prey.

“Compared to the dream realm that we are used to, this current one fits the description in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>, what is going on?”

Duke Tong was bewildered.

While reporting to Heavenly Court, he chased after the dream realm.

When the dream realm attacked, he retreated, after it left, he followed it from afar.

Afterwards, he discovered even more dream realms.

These dream realms had various forms but they were all beasts.

“Dream realms that have gathered into a group! This is a new transformation in spectral heaven!!” Duke Tong was increasingly suspicious, he watched as the dream realm that devoured Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie mixed into the group.

Duke Tong’s investigative methods were ineffective on dream realms, and because they were constantly changing forms, he soon lost all traces of that particular dream realm, he could not tell which one was it.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable soon received Duke Tong’s information.

She sighed as her gaze flickered with uncertainty: ”Heaven path dream realms... they finally appeared. One of them even devoured Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie, this is all the ploy of heaven’s will.”

In Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s plan, Ying Wu Xie was crucial. If she could capture it, she would have the best pawn to use against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

But now, although Duke Tong chased after him, heaven path dream realms appeared at the crucial moment and destroyed her plan.

“In that case...” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable immediately used her backup plan, she contacted and gave orders to Fairy Maiden Soul.

This soul path great expert received the orders and immediately showed an incredulous expression.

Afterwards, she returned to Heavenly Court and entered the treasury, taking out a soul.

Next, she placed this soul into her immortal aperture and used her method to nourish the soul while altering its memories.

Time passed quickly in the immortal aperture.

Several days later in the immortal aperture, Fairy Maiden Soul’s modification was completed.

She immediately contacted Star Constellation Immortal Venerable: ”Bo Qing’s soul has already been modified.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable received the news and nodded.

Now, all they needed was the body of a sword path Gu Immortal.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2302: Contest of the Three Venerables Again

“Where am I?”

“Who... who am I?”

Fairy Zi Wei woke up in a dream, but she forgot about herself.

As she scanned her surroundings in a daze, she saw that she was in a vast desolate yellow plain with no signs of life.

She lowered her head to look at herself, but her body was that of a mudman. She had short hands and feet, her body was also hard and dry.

“I feel like I have forgotten something important.”

Fairy Zi Wei frowned, but she could not remember no matter how hard she tried.

She even forgot if that important thing was a situation or a person.

She could not figure it out.

However, this bleak yellow land gave her a warm feeling of closeness.

“Home?” This word emerged in Fairy Zi Wei’s mind.

But this desolate home made her feel sad as well.

Wind blew over at this time.

The wind got increasingly stronger, blowing the soil into the air.

Splash splash splash.

There were no clouds in the sky, but heavy rain started to fall.

Countless bean-sized raindrops smashed on the yellow soil.

Soon, a large marshy land was formed.

Fairy Zi Wei was in the marsh, her whole body got drenched as she ended up in a miserable state.

But despite the wild storm, her head was always raised and her vision was not blocked even a bit.

She discovered that she knew everything about this yellow land.

She also had a feeling that she could control this storm, it seemed to be as simple as moving her fingers.

Hence, she thought to herself: ”This storm is too big, make it smaller.”

At the next moment, the storm really became smaller.

Hints of greenery appeared in the marsh and spread everywhere.

These were the young shoots of weeds.

Fairy Zi Wei felt endless joy at the sight of these weeds.

This was life.

Finally, she stopped feeling alone.

“Such a pity that they grow too slowly, it will be better if they grew faster.”

The weeds began to grow faster.

With a speed visible to the naked eye, the emerging greenery began to flourish and spread. The grass became taller and covered her feet, and this bleak yellow land turned into a grassland.

Some sunken areas were filled with rainwater and became clear ponds.

Fairy Zi Wei moved across the lush grass and stood beside a pond. Her image was reflected on the water surface as she finally saw her appearance.

She was a clay doll made of purple clay. Her eyes, nose and mouth were drawn with golden lines.

Fairy Zi Wei suddenly realized her identity.

“That’s right, I am this blessed land’s... land spirit.”

Central Continent.

Below star array calculation formation, outside of Embroidered Tower.

“Bai Qing (Feng Jin Huang) pays respect to Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.” A pair of mother and daughter greeted respectfully.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s main body was staying inside Embroidered Tower.

She did not invite this pair of mother and daughter inside Embroidered Tower, instead she used an information path mortal Gu to show a video in the space outside Embroidered Tower.

After the video showed the scene of those heaven path dream realms, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable spoke: ”Feng Jin Huang, have you seen this kind of dream realm before?”

Feng Jin Huang had been watching with concentration, she replied: ”Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, junior has never seen this kind of dream realm. But, from my speculations, the present dream realms can be divided into three types according to their sources. They are human path, beasts and plants, as well as heaven path dream realms.”

“The source of human path dream realms are the humans or variant humans, these are their dreams. The source of beast and plant dream realms are those beasts and plants that once existed or are still living now. As for heaven path dream realms, the source is heaven and earth itself.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable nodded slightly: ”Good, make your preparations. I will need you to go to spectral heaven to explore these heaven path dream realms in due time.”

Feng Jin Huang, however, shook her head, refusing firmly: ”Please excuse junior for being unable to do it. Junior is only a mortal, I have no confidence in exploring such a level of dream realms, and also have no way to guarantee my own safety.”

“Hmm?” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s brows rose slightly as she had not expected Feng Jin Huang to reject her so directly.

At this time, everyone went silent.

Fairy Bai Qing was stressed out, she wanted to speak but could not say anything in the end.

She felt increasingly suffocated.

Feng Jin Huang still had an indifferent expression, seemingly not feeling any pressure.

“Alright. You may both leave.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable spoke after a long while.

“Junior takes her leave.” Feng Jin Huang bowed towards Embroidered Tower and left.

Looking at the receding figures of the two, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sighed lightly with a complicated gaze.

Ying Wu Xie was swallowed by a heaven path dream realm, this was really unfortunate.

He was a great pawn to deal with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, but was gotten rid of by heaven’s will.

The dream realm could not be explored, that meant that Ying Wu Xie was done for.

Feng Jin Huang’s opinion about heaven path and human path dream realms verified Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s own ideas. But Feng Jin Huang was indeed only a Gu Master and not a Gu Immortal, it was natural for her to be unable to do anything to these dream realms.

“I cannot conceal these heaven path dream realms, it is only a matter of time for the other two venerables to know of them. The contest of three venerables may start once again.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was worried.

Because this was much more complicated than before.

Black and white heaven were gone, only spectral heaven remained.

Spectral heaven was the territory of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

What would Spectral Soul Demon Venerable do if venerables were to barge into his territory?

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had lost his sanity and was filled with heaven’s will, the heaven path dream realms were also the same. What connection did these two have? Would they help each other?

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was weak before; Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had no worries.

But now was different.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had resonated with rank nine fire Gu, and his soul foundation had surged to a terrifying level after slaughtering billions of living beings in the two heavens.

If a conflict occurred between the venerables because of the heaven path dream realms, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was likely to participate and would be an opponent that could not be neglected.

After pondering over it, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable decided to slow down in refining Central Continent’s wisdom path dao marks, she had to save her immortal essence for the battle.

Her intention to get rid of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable became firmer as time passed.

“Since Ying Wu Xie is gone, I need to make proper use of Bo Qing.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable decided to create a powerful Spectral Soul clone.

The risk was high though, after all, tampering with the soul was Spectral Soul

Demon Venerable’s forte.

Fairy Maiden Soul’s action was tantamount to showing off in front of an expert.

But the situation forced Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s hand, she could not afford to care about this.

Bo Qing’s soul was filled with sword path dao marks which must be paired with a sword path Gu Immortal body. This body should contain an immortal aperture, and the higher its cultivation level, the better.

However, even looking at the whole world, there were not many Gu Immortals who cultivated sword path.

There were a few in Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects, but they were all at rank seven.

In the whole five regions, there was no rank eight lone and demonic cultivator who cultivated sword path. In fact, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s deductions showed that there was only one rank eight sword path Gu Immortal currently.

“Western Desert Lin clan’s first supreme elder?” Prince Feng Xian, Red Heart Traveler, and Nine Spiritual Fairy showed strange expressions.

“Heavenly Court needs his immortal aperture and body, this is related to the contest of venerables and the safety of the world.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s voice was clear and cold.

The three immortals looked at each other before responding resolutely: ”Please give us your command.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable transmitted her instructions to them, as well as how they should cooperate with Wan Zi Hong and Zhou Xiong Xin.

The three immortals’ gaze shone sharply as they heard the plan and left with great confidence.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was silent for a while, she then contacted the Genesis Lotus’ will in Heavenly Court.

Genesis Lotus’ will had been overseeing Divine Emperor City, but through Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s method, it expanded and split a portion to stay in Heavenly Court.

This portion of Genesis Lotus’ will in Heavenly Court had one main task, that was to nourish Cang Xuan Zi.

Cang Xuan Zi was a legendary immemorial beast, it was a huge vine that connected heaven and earth.

It sprouted in three hundred years, blossomed in three hundred years, and bore fruits in three hundred years. The fruits that it created were called vast heaven fruits, if used in a grotto-heaven, it could expand the size of the immortal aperture’s sky. Thus, this vast heaven vine was also known as the tenth heaven of this world!

It entered Heavenly Court after an agreement with Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable. It was an unique existence in Heavenly Court, it did not need to follow orders, and only had to provide a batch of vast heaven fruits every thousand years.

But in the fate war, it was killed by Fang Yuan’s time cutting edge.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not have any methods to revive it, but Genesis Lotus' will that originated from Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable had methods to revive Cang Xuan Zi!

"Cang Xuan Zi's death is actually beneficial to Heavenly Court." Genesis Lotus' will communicated with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

"In a hundred or so days, Cang Xuan Zi's body will be restored. At that time, I will enter and control this body, supplying a legendary immemorial beast's battle strength to Heavenly Court!"

"An even more amazing thing is that the fruits produced by Cang Xuan Zi will contain my will. Using these fruits to reforge Heavenly Court will isolate us from heaven's will."

"There will be a new Heavenly Court in the future, our gains from the derivation formation will belong to us and not be known by heaven's will."

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable nodded: "This is a long-term plan and not an urgent matter. Have you remembered anything else regarding the revival of Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable?"

Genesis Lotus' will shook its head: "I know very little about the revival plan set by my main body. I only know that he left behind a self-portrait from which he can revive. But I have no idea where this self-portrait is."

"How about you, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable? You are Senior Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable's disciple, don't you know his revival plan?"

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable heaved a sigh: "Truth be said, master told me he left behind two revival methods just in case. The first revival method was Heavenly Court's qi harvest fruit. However, that Fang Yuan took it before this fruit could ripen. The second method involves the Primordial Origin Treasury."

"Primordial Origin Treasury?"

"Primordial Origin Treasury was secretly created by master to store the large number of rank eight immortal essence stones produced by Yi Qi Zi back then. The treasury also has master's arrangements for revival. But I have no way to look for it."

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable said that she has no way to look for it, and not that she had no clues.

In fact, she had related clues of both Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable and Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable's revival methods. Moreover, she already knew they were in Central Continent.

But she could not inspect or probe it.

Because it would then be discovered by other venerables.

With the revival of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the other venerables were definitely on guard against the revival of other Heavenly Court venerables.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable needed to refine all the wisdom path dao marks in Central Continent before she could conceal these revival plans and not be afraid of other venerables' inspection.

Even if other venerables saw through it, she could use her terrain advantage in Central Continent to resist the attacks of the venerables and protect Heavenly Court venerables’ revival methods.

Only after Star Constellation Immortal Venerable refined all the wisdom path dao marks in Central Continent could she start reviving other Heavenly Court venerables.

Heavenly Court’s foundation was unfathomably deep.

Once the two venerables revived, they would rule the world once again.

After all, the combined strength of three venerables was unthinkable. They would easily surpass the individual strength of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Fang Yuan.

Even if Giant Sun, Fang Yuan, and Spectral Soul Demon Venerable allied, they would be weaker than Heavenly Court’s three venerables.

It was because of the difference in their ideals!

But the heaven path dream realms appeared which delayed Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s plan once again.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable needed to slow down on refining dao marks, and save her immortal essence to prepare for the battle between venerables!

Northern Plains.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable sighed.

He did his best, but after absorbing rank eight immortal essence stones, the converted immortal essence was only seventy percent of the immortal essence stones.

And this seventy percent immortal essence was only rank eight immortal essence.

“I need to get rid of the heaven’s will, but I don’t cultivate wisdom path. I also lack crucial luck path Immortal Gu.”

“Maybe I can transact with Fang Yuan?”

“No, I can’t reveal any clues about this.”

Eastern Sea.

“Heaven path dream realms? Good! Very good.”

Fang Yuan had been planning to create a heaven path venerable clone not long ago, he was just worried about his lacking heaven path attainment level when heaven path dream realms appeared!

It was just that seizing the heaven path dream realms would probably incite another battle between venerables.

“It is better to refine another rank nine Immortal Gu to help me raise my direct combat strength.”

Fang Yuan began to secretly refine rank nine Immortal Gu.

He had a lot of immortal essence.

Even after refining this rank nine Immortal Gu, he would still have a lot remaining to use in the battle of venerables.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2303: Besieging Lin clan’s First Supreme Elder

Back in Western Desert.

Lin Lun Zhou suddenly opened his eyes.

The immortal formation sounded an alarm; someone had intruded!

“Such guts, you dare to invade my Lin clan’s Skeleton Mountain.” Lin Lun Zhou was surprised and furious, checking immediately.

He saw that an Immortal Gu House was violently colliding with the defensive formation.

“Inquiry Dock! Fang clan!!” Lin Lun Zhou’s expression turned serious as he sent request for reinforcements to Lin clan while fully activating the defensive formation.

Ever since Fang clan started the commotion, Lin clan had reinforced the immortal formations in many resource points, and almost all the formations had the ability to transport people.

So, Lin Lun Zhou was not panicked.

As his battle intent rose, he frowned: ”Since Fang clan attacked after remaining in hiding for so many days, they definitely made sufficient preparations. I definitely am not Fang clan’s match by myself, but I can use this immortal formation to stall for time. Once the anti-Fang alliance army arrives, Fang clan will definitely suffer consequences.”

“Of course, if the situation turns bad, I will immediately use the formation to get out... What?!”

Lin Lun Zhou had been controlling the formation when his eyes suddenly opened wide and panic filled him.

To his horror, he found that the formation was restricted.

Although the formation could still operate, its transportation effect was nullified.

“They targeted this after all!!” Lin Lun Zhou clenched his teeth as he forcibly calmed himself, thinking of a way to get out of this predicament.

He felt that not all hope was lost.

He was a rank seven bone path Gu Immortal defending Lin clan’s Skeleton Mountain. This was a bone path resource point and he had a huge territorial advantage here.

Moreover, Lin Lun Zhou was stationed here all year round, he knew this place like the back of his hand.

After thinking for a while, Lin Lun Zhou arranged a portion of his will with some immortal essence while he left quietly.

The defensive formation was still defending with all its strength under the control of his will.

Fang clan’s Immortal Gu House collided again, creating thunderous sounds.

Lin Lun Zhou’s will was shrinking rapidly, but it could still last for some time.

Lin Lun Zhou entered the depths of Skeleton Mountain.

The rocks on Skeleton Mountain were dark and let out soul smoke from time to time. Once in a while, the mountain rocks would produce a skeleton. Some skeletons were like humans, some had animal shapes, there were countless possibilities.

Besides these bone armors, dark mist crows flew above Skeleton Mountain and fed on the soul smoke.

Fang clan’s Immortal Gu House’s attack shook the whole Skeleton Mountain.

The countless skeletons that were among the rocks were originally motionless. But as the mountain started shaking, these skeletons propped themselves up and ran wildly on the mountain.

The skeletons collided and killed each other, creating chaos.

At this moment, Lin Lun Zhou activated a killer move. He transformed into a large mammoth skeleton and started running on the mountain.

He was mixed in among the countless skeletons, becoming inconspicuous.

But not long later, threads of water vapor bound him.

“Friend of Lin clan, why be in a hurry to leave?” Shortly after, a voice entered Lin Lun Zhou’s ears.

Lin Lun Zhou immediately fell into despair: ”Rank eight Gu Immortal? You are not from Fang clan!”

At the next moment, the water vapor ropes moved and bound Lin Lun Zhou tightly.

Lin Lun Zhou struggled madly, but soon, his vision turned black as he lost his consciousness.

News of Fang clan’s attack on Lin clan’s peripheral resource point Skeleton Mountain soon reached Lin clan’s headquarters.

Shortly after, Lin clan contacted the anti-Fang alliance.

By the time the anti-Fang alliance reached Skeleton Mountain, there were only ruins. The whole Skeleton Mountain was gone.

“This is indeed Fang clan’s style!”

“Lin Lun Zhou was the Gu Immortal stationed here, he cultivates bone path and is quite strong, I did not expect him to go missing as well.”

“Sigh, it bodes ill for him.”

“Fang clan came to make trouble again, their sins are unforgivable! Once we catch them, we will rip their skin and cut their tendons to relieve our hatred!!”

Just as the anti-Fang alliance members were cursing Fang clan, another astonishing news arrived.

Dong clan’s peripheral territory, Dragon Roar Volcano, was also attacked by Fang clan.

Dragon Roar Volcano was a fire path resource point, but whenever the volcano erupts, it would produce dragon roars; at that time, a sizable amount of sound path resources could be harvested.

When athe nti-Fang alliance reached Dragon Roar Volcano’s site, they did not see any volcano.

“Heavens, even the underground magma has been taken away.”

“It seems like Fang clan wants to make a big commotion this time!”

“They went into hiding for some time; it was probably to exchange for Immortal Gu or killer moves from Heaven Refining Demon Venerable, and increase their strength. Otherwise, would they dare come out?”

“That’s right. Be it Dragon Roar Volcano or Skeleton Mountain, they are important areas that Fang clan would not have rashly invaded before. But now, both were attacked and taken, Fang clan’s strength has definitely increased greatly.”

“The important thing is, will Fang clan continue their actions? Where is their next target?”

“Where is the closest resource point to Dragon Roar Volcano?”

“It is clear water grassland.”

Clear water grassland was a rarely seen grassland in Western Desert. There was plenty of water and lush grasses here, and it produced water path and wood path cultivation resources.

But just as the anti-Fang alliance was discussing, they received the news of Fang clan capturing clear water grassland.

The anti-Fang alliance was in an uproar.

Fang clan’s action this time shows extremely sharp offensive ability that was several times more powerful than before.

“Skeleton Mountain, Dragon Roar Volcano, clear water grassland... please take a look, Fang clan’s path is already marked, their next target is probably Dong clan’s ascending heavenly pit!”

“Then what are we still waiting for?!”

“Let’s go reinforce them immediately. Dong clan sent a message, ascending heavenly pit is in Dong clan blessed land so it is not heavily guarded.”

“More importantly, Dong clan has not sent any Gu Immortal to guard ascending heavenly pit!”

Gu Immortals were much fewer than resource points. In general, Gu Immortals were stationed in peripheral resource points. And resource points in blessed land would have fewer manpower.

The anti-Fang alliance rushed to ascending heavenly pit without stopping. But when they arrived, the immortal formation was already broken, there was noise coming from the depths of ascending heavenly pit as if Fang clan immortals were still plundering resources.

“We finally caught them!”

“Kill them!”

“We must eradicate Fang clan, otherwise our Western Desert will have no peace.”

The anti-Fang alliance attacked with a bellyful of anger.

But not long later, an immortal formation rose from the heavenly pit, and trapped all of the anti-Fang alliance members.

“We were tricked!”

“Such a powerful immortal formation, I can’t even connect to treasure yellow heaven or send a message.”

“This immortal formation prioritizes in trapping and doesn’t have much offensive power. Crap! Fang clan intentionally arranged this, they don’t want to fight us, they are only trying to plunder resource points.”

“Sigh, what should we do? I wonder which resource point of Dong clan’s will be attacked next.”

Anti-Fang alliance members were trapped by the formation and lost their means to communicate.

At the same time, an emergency news reached Lin clan headquarters: Fang clan’s main force suddenly appeared in evil spirit desert and were attacking giant spirit oasis.

Giant spirit oasis was Lin clan’s super resource point, it was heavily protected and could not be lost.

Lin clan’s first supreme elder was still in closed cultivation, the second elder thought for a while before deciding to make a move personally. He controlled the two Immortal Gu Houses of Lin clan and mobilized as much Gu Immortals as he could towards giant spirit oasis.

At the same time, he also asked for reinforcements from the anti-Fang alliance.

Lin clan’s second supreme elder mobilized their full strength, this was because he had no choice.

Since Fang clan lost their territories, they could easily mobilize all their members. It was extremely difficult for other super forces to resist them.

Lin clan’s second supreme elder had to mobilize enough troops to match Fang clan’s crazed attacks. If the mobilized troops were too few, they would just be asking for defeat against Fang clan.

But with this, Lin clan headquarters naturally became empty.

Bam.

Several figures suddenly landed and roughly killed their way into Lin clan’s headquarters.

They were Prince Feng Xian, Red Heart Traveler, Nine Spiritual Fairy, as well as Wan Zi Hong and Zhou Xiong Xin who just arrived from ascending heavenly pit.

Five rank eight experts attacked Lin clan headquarters.

“Lin clan’s first supreme elder, we came for you.” Red Heart Traveler said loudly.

“If you don’t resist, you will be able to live.” Nine Spiritual Fairy added.

Inside a secret room, Lin clan’s first supreme elder slowly opened his eyes and sighed: ”What has my Lin clan done to provoke such a grand action from Heavenly Court? Heavenly Court is the leader of the righteous path, why are you sneakily attacking a righteous path super force? My Lin clan has never colluded with the demonic path.”

Wan Zi Hong sneered: ”Lin clan’s first supreme elder, stop pretending. You act differently from what you say, you secretly protected Fang clan while colluding with Fang Yuan. Otherwise, how can Fang clan be still at large?”

Zhou Xiong Xin nodded: ”I have already gathered sufficient evidence.”

Lin clan’s first supreme elder was silent for a bit before laughing: ”Heavenly Court? Haha, you are truly Heavenly Court.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2304: Sword Qi Takes Form

Immortal battlefield killer move — Rumor Cage!

Zhou Xiong Xin clapped; in an instant, countless silver text characters emerged and circled Lin clan’s public blessed land.

These characters were large as horse carriages or small as ants, they weaved together into a huge ball, enveloping Heavenly Court five great Gu Immortals and Lin clan’s first supreme elder.

“Success.” Zhou Xiong Xin said with excitement, letting out a breath of relief.

A good start was half the success!

The other four Heavenly Court immortals also looked relieved.

What they were most worried about was Lin clan’s first supreme elder running away.

They were all rank eight Gu Immortals, Heavenly Court was fighting five versus one, but it was very hard to catch a rank eight Gu Immortal who wanted to flee.

With the conflict between dao marks, Gu Immortals could not easily show the advantage of numbers. These five Heavenly Court immortals separately cultivated wood path, information path, fire path, blood path, and transformation path which conflicted with each other.

“Rumor cage really deserves the title of the battlefield killer move with the fastest activation time.”

“But I did not expect Lin clan’s first supreme elder to not dodge or flee.”

“Did he see through it?”

The five Heavenly Court immortals conversed with each other through mental transmission.

They appeared grandly because they had already arranged a temporary formation outside Lin clan’s public blessed land headquarters.

Once Lin clan’s first supreme elder escaped or flew out of the public blessed land, the formation would be triggered and attack him, reducing his speed.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had personally instructed them regarding the requirement of a sword immortal’s immortal aperture and body. These five Heavenly Court members naturally made ample preparations.

Although this formation did not have much offensive power, it was modified by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable herself to target Lin clan’s first supreme elder’s escape methods.

Moreover, public blessed lands always had weaker defense than an individual’s blessed land.

As an information path expert, Zhou Xiong Xin had already gathered relevant information when he moved around in Western Desert.

Lin clan’s first supreme elder was already trapped in rumor cage battlefield!

Prince Feng Xian gave a shout and charged forward.

He flew to the sky and opened his mouth towards the palace.

Whoosh—!

Flames gushed out of his mouth and landed on the ground, growing rapidly into a blazing inferno.

The palace was only a mortal Gu House, it crumbled apart rapidly in the inferno.

Lin clan’s first supreme elder was forced to come out of his seclusion, he flew to the sky and faced the enemies.

Prince Feng Xian, however, retreated slowly.

“Lin clan’s first supreme elder, Lin Jian Xing, have a taste of my attack!” Wan Zi Hong chuckled charmingly as she took the place of Prince Feng Xian.

She activated a wood path killer move. Instantly, flower petals fluttered and covered the battlefield, a fragrant smell spreading along with it.

All the five Heavenly Court immortals held their breath.

Lin Jian Xing had a solemn expression as he pushed forward with his hands. In an instant, sword qi rampaged and formed into a giant wave.

The wave surged and billowed, washing away the poisonous flower petals.

Wan Zi Hong disappeared amidst the petals and appeared behind Lin Jian Xing.

She raised her left little finger that had a sharp purplish nail as she stabbed at Lin Jian Xing.

Immortal killer move – Flower Thorn Stab.

Lin Jian Xing was struck, his figure paused before sword qi rose violently, sealing Wan Zi Hong within!

At the next moment, his previously activated sword qi wave moved backwards.

The surging giant wave drowned Lin Jian Xing and Wan Zi Hong.

The other four Heavenly Court immortals did not do anything to avoid hurting Wan Zi Hong.

The sword qi wave disappeared shortly afterwards, leaving only Lin Jian Xing while Wan Zi Hong disappeared once again.

Flower petals fluttered beside Prince Feng Xian, turning into Wan Zi Hong.

Wan Zi Hong was injured but had a satisfied smile on her face: ”Stall him, he is struck by my method. The longer time goes by, the more thorns will grow in his body, hindering his movement and even stabbing him to death.”

Wan Zi Hong made her contribution, she retreated and began to heal her wounds.

The other Heavenly Court immortals continued to surround Lin Jian Xing, not giving him any time to rest.

Heavenly Court made full use of their numerical advantage.

The silver characters that formed rumor cage began to let out dazzling light. The dense light flowed like water, moving in the air as it gathered and swirled. Next, from the silvery light, silver tigers emerged.

The tigers roared and pounced on Lin Jian Xing.

It was Zhou Xiong Xin’s killer move – Rumors Become Tigers.

Prince Feng Xian made his move next; countless beautiful fire birds appeared out of thin air.

The fire birds burned intensely while having deep intelligence. They formed into groups and followed the tigers.

Red Heart Traveler also made his move.

Blood light pillars crashed down.

Tigers, fire birds, and blood pillars formed three waves of continuous attacks!

Lin Jian Xing was surrounded by the attacks but he did not evade.

Against the incoming attacks, he shouted grandly as sword qi surged out violently and charged towards the tigers.

Sword qi condensed into vines beside the countless tigers and bound them. The vines had countless sword path thorns that pierced deep into the tigers.

Painful roars of tigers resounded as most of them crumbled apart like balloons being popped.

At this time, the fire birds entered the battlefield.

Lin Jian Xing transferred his immortal essence as the sword qi in the battlefield were replenished, turning into fierce wind.

The fierce wind killed all the remaining tigers and blew away countless fire birds, the remaining few fire birds were unsteady and unable to gather into a formation again.

The blood light pillars smashed down, rapidly suppressing the fierce wind.

Lin Jian Xing was forced to move backwards. After pulling some distance, he release a large amount of sword qi.

Sword qi turned into ice walls that confined the blood light pillars and ground them constantly.

Lin Jian Xing neutralized three waves of attacks consecutively, showing his extremely profound sword path attainment.

Nine Spiritual Fairy did not stint on her praise: ”Lin clan’s first supreme elder’s methods have a unique style and are truly extraordinary. I can’t wait anymore, take this!”

Nine Spiritual Fairy turned into an immemorial desolate beast, her roars were like lightning as they shook even the rumor cage.

Nine Spiritual Fairy clashed with Lin Jian Xing, her attacks were filled with great strength, forcing Lin Jian Xing to move back again and again.

Lin Jian Xing continued to retreat, unable to ward off Nine Spiritual Fairy’s charge.

Transformation path and strength path Gu cultivators had a unique advantage when they were vanguards in the battlefield.

The five Heavenly Court immortals continued to attack in turns, suppressing Lin Jian Xing since the start of the fight.

Although their dao marks conflicted, they had an extremely tacit coordination.

Their attacks were like tidal waves, continuing without stopping. On one hand, they suppressed Lin Jian Xing, not giving him any chance or time to study rumor cage battlefield. On the other hand, they were weakening and wearing him down, creating a chance to capture him.

Lin Jian Xing’s sword qi were exquisite and profound, transforming into all kinds of shapes. His extraordinary sword path attainment made even the five Heavenly Court immortals sigh in awe.

But he was just one person after all, two fists cannot rival four hands, let alone when Heavenly Court had five people!

As time passed, the situation got increasingly disadvantageous for Lin Jian Xing.

“Strange, what method did he use to suppress my flower thorn stab?” Wan Zi Hong was inwardly surprised at seeing Lin Jian Xing moving so freely.

Right at this time, Prince Feng Xian suddenly used a killer move.

After Lin Jian Xing was struck, grey flames burned all over his body.

The flames constantly produced fire birds. Lin Jian Xing’s momentum decreased rapidly as his speed also had an obvious reduction.

Seeing the chance, Red Heart Traveler immediately used his killer move, blood sun seal!

He coughed out a mouthful of blood.

The fragrant blood flew to the air and started rotating. Like a miniature blood sun, it emitted endless blood red light as it rushed towards Lin Jian Xing.

Lin Jian Xing was surrounded by sword qi; at this moment, the sword qi flew and turned into a giant python that tried to stop the blood sun.

But this blood sun seemed to be illusory, it passed through the obstruction and struck Lin Jian Xing’s chest, turning into a red sun insignia.

Lin Jian Xing’s expression changed slightly.

The blood sun insignia showed its effect quickly, it formed into blood red lines.

The blood lines covered Lin Jian Xing, gradually forming a blood cocoon.

It seemed like Lin Jian Xing was about to be captured alive; but at the next moment, Lin Jian Xing’s body crumbled apart, turning into a powerful wave of sword qi that slipped out of the blood cocoon.

After flying outside, these sword qi condensed back into Lin Jian Xing.

“He can even do this?”

“No, something is not right!”

“This is not Lin clan’s first supreme elder.”

The five Heavenly Court immortals’ expressions’ changed as they noticed an issue after seeing the situation.

They shockingly found that the trapped Lin Jian Xing was not the Gu Immortal himself, but only a killer move.

All along, the five immortals had been toyed around until now when they discovered it.

“He is only a lump of sword qi, no wonder my flower thorn stab had no effect.”

“So that’s it, this was not Lin clan’s first supreme elder, that’s why he did not try to evade when I used rumor cage.”

Zhou Xiong Xin’s expression was unsightly as he canceled the battlefield killer move.

The five immortals once again appeared in Lin clan’s public blessed land.

The true Lin clan’s first supreme elder Lin Jian Xing was standing in the air with his hands behind his back, showing a smile as he looked at the five immortals: ”You finally came out.”

“Lin Jian Xing, truly formidable. I wonder what the name of this move is called?” Red Heart Traveler smiled warmly as he asked.

Lin Jian Xing nodded slightly and explained: ”This move is called sword qi takes form.”

“Sword qi takes form, truly a great move!” Prince Feng Xian praised sincerely.

“After this battle, no matter what happens to you, this move will definitely be renowned throughout the five regions.” Zhou Xiong Xin commented.

Although they were played, the five Heavenly Court immortals only looked grim-faced but had no loss in confidence or battle intent.

In the battle inside rumor cage, they were also suppressed.

After all, rumor cage created an information path environment which suppressed four of the Heavenly Court immortals. They did not dare to use all their strength in fear of breaking the rumor cage.

Even if it was not destroyed, if there were great impacts, the battlefield would still be broken and reveal gaps from which Lin Jian Xing could escape.

Lin Jian Xing stretched out his palm and showed several Immortal Gu that were bound by sword qi: ”Heavenly Court’s immortal formation is truly amazing, it seemed to have been modified to specifically target my clan’s public blessed land. Is this Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s method?”

The five Heavenly Court immortals could not conceal their serious expressions.

The formation they had secretly arranged outside of Lin clan’s public blessed land was already taken down by Lin Jian Xing.

But at the next moment, Lin Jian Xing waved his hand, throwing the Immortal Gu to the Heavenly Court immortals: ”The Immortal Gu have been returned to you. This is my clan’s headquarters, it won’t be nice if we destroy it, let’s change the location of our fight.”

The five Heavenly Court immortals quietly received the Immortal Gu and looked at each other. Finally, Red Heart Traveler nodded: ”You have unparalleled grace, I am in admiration.”

“There is a desolate area three thousand li from here, please follow me.” Lin Jian Xing flew out of the blessed land, moving at a slow speed with an indifferent attitude.

The Heavenly Court immortals followed closely after.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2305: Heavenly Court’s Crushing Defeat

“How do we deal with this?”

“Since the formation is already broken, we can only rely on rumor cage.”

“What is Lin Jian Xing planning?”

“If he is thinking of waiting for the anti-Fang alliance or Western Desert righteous paths’ reinforcements, he will be disappointed.”

Wan Zi Hong, Prince Feng Xian, Zhou Xiong Xin, Red Heart Traveler, and Nine Spiritual Fairy followed Lin Jian Xing while secretly conversing.

Lin Jian Xing’s methods were exceptionally exquisite, ruining the five immortals’ plan.

With just sword qi takes form killer move, he fooled them for so long, making these Heavenly Court immortals feel ashamed of themselves.

Lin Jian Xing’s main body used that time to destroy Heavenly Court’s formation.

This made the Heavenly Court immortals realize that their battle plan had a mistake, they should have designated one person to guard the formation.

In fact, the formation had a certain amount of defensive capability and also had the ability to convey messages. If it was attacked, the message should have been sent. Even if the five Heavenly Court immortals were inside rumor cage, they could still obtain the reminder.

Rumor cage battlefield isolated the inside and outside, the ones inside could not even connect to treasure yellow heaven.

But this message would directly rush to rumor cage, creating subtle vibrations in rumor cage as a warning.

At that time, the five immortals would know that the formation was being destroyed, they would react to the specific situation and send a few people to deal with it.

However, Lin Jian Xing’s methods were exceptional, he quietly dismantled the whole formation without alerting the five Heavenly Court immortals.

However, he still returned the obtained Immortal Gu to these five immortals openly.

Such magnanimity captivated even these Heavenly Court immortals.

Under this situation, when Lin Jian Xing mentioned changing the battlefield, the Heavenly Court immortals were too ashamed to continue fighting in Lin clan’s public blessed land headquarters.

“This is the place.” Lin Jian Xing slowly stopped in the air and turned around to face the Heavenly Court immortals.

The five Heavenly Court immortals looked around, this desert was indeed like Lin Jian Xing said; it was extremely poor with no sign of life and was suitable for the battle.

“Lin Jian Xing, if you don’t resist, I will guarantee with my life that your life will be preserved.” Red Heart Traveler said with a sigh.

Lin Jian Xing scoffed: ”If someone suddenly intrudes your home and frames you for something you did not do, even going as far as to attack you; and afterwards, say that they are going to preserve your life, what will you do?”

“Why talk so much!” Red Heart Traveler was about to reply, when Wan Zi Hong suddenly attacked.

She disappeared and appeared behind Lin Jian Xing in an instant.

She stabbed at Lin Jian Xing’s back with her ten sharp, purplish-black nails that were extremely sharp!

Wan Zi Hong was a demonic immortal recruited by Heavenly Court, she did not lack viciousness and also had her own arrogance.

Lin Jian Xing toyed with her for so long with sword qi takes form, she was already disgruntled.

Right now, she still used flower thorn stab, but with ten times the power!

‘You have a body made of flesh and blood, let me see how long you can resist this.’ Wan Zi Hong’s eyes shone with a ferocious light.

However, at the next moment, there was a thunderous explosion.

By the time Wan Zi Hong reacted, she found she had already flown far away. She could only see the back figure of Lin Jian Xing who had been so close to her, and because of the long distance, he was as small as her palm.

“What happened? What killer move is this?” Wan Zi Hong just had this thought when an intense pain assaulted her.

Guh.

She coughed out blood and found to her horror that her defense killer move was almost destroyed completely.

“What in the world was that move?!” The other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were also extremely shocked.

Lin Jian Xing’s method was too fast, the Heavenly Court immortals did not see it clearly.

Zhou Xiong Xin quickly retreated and pulled some distance apart.

Nine Spiritual Fairy, however, transformed into an immemorial desolate beast once again and attacked Lin Jian Xing.

Under this situation, the sturdy and tough transformation path Gu Immortal was the best choice to probe the enemy.

Boom!

However, with a thunderous explosion, Nine Spiritual Fairy was also sent flying.

Three of her ribs were broken at the very least.

This time, the other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were able to barely see the killer move. This was a sword path killer move, it was formed from sword qi and was so fast that it was almost impossible to catch it with naked eyes.

Even with investigative methods, they were only able to barely see it.

“This move is called sword qi lightning roar, please appraise it.” Lin Jian Xing said before counterattacking.

Bam bam bam...

Thunderous explosions rang again and again, the five Heavenly Court immortals were actually forced back.

Naturally, Lin Jian Xing did not use just his sword qi lightning roar killer move, he occasionally used sword qi takes form as well.

Sword qi takes form killer move was exquisite and profound, while sword qi lightning roar was fast, it was extremely fast!

So fast that the five Heavenly Court immortals could not even see it properly; for a while, they could only use defensive methods to resist.

“Lin Jian Xing actually had such methods! Protect me.” Zhou Xiong Xin secretly transmitted his voice.

Red Heart Traveler immediately flew in front of him and activated majestic blood light.

The blood light was like a sphere that completely covered Red Heart Traveler and Zhou Xiong Xin.

Zhou Xiong Xin had just prepared his method for a few breaths of time when Lin Jian Xing sensed it.

Lin Jian Xing pointed at the blood sphere; in an instant, at least three sword qi lightning roar attacked, rapidly destroying the blood sphere.

But Zhou Xiong Xin laughed loudly: ”You fell for it.”

He had already finished preparing and was only intentionally delaying to create a deception of activating a powerful killer move that needed a long period of time to activate.

After all, a killer move with longer activation time was often more powerful.

Zhou Xiong Xin cultivated information path, he activated the move but it could not attack actively. However, if the enemy used a killer move and was blocked by this move, it could capture the information about the enemy’s killer move and give a warning to Zhou Xiong Xin.

Zhou Xiong Xin received early warnings, he quickly used information path methods to share the effect with the other four immortals.

The battle situation had a clear change.

The five Heavenly Court immortals finally stabilized their footing and began to exchange attacks with Lin Jian Xing.

Lin Jian Xing’s sword qi lightning roar killer move was extremely fast, it would hit the target before they could even react.

But Lin Jian Xing still required time to activate this killer move.Zhou Xiong Xin’s information path killer move would give early warnings to Zhou Xiong Xin and the rest when Lin Jian Xing started preparing sword qi lightning roar killer move.

Adding on this little time, the five Heavenly Court immortals were barely able to react.

Both sides fought intensely but the Heavenly Court immortals were actually unable to grasp the control of the situation and were still being suppressed by Lin Jian Xing.

“How is this possible?”

“He is actually so strong? This does not match the intel we have.”

“Sword qi lightning roar and sword qi takes form are already brilliant moves, his combat awareness is even better, far surpassing mine.”

The Heavenly Court immortals were inwardly shaken.

Lin Jian Xing did not just rely on the two moves to dominate them, he showed his terrifying strength as well.

There was no strongest Gu worm, there was no most powerful killer move, but there was always a strongest Gu Immortal.

Lin Jian Xing was nowhere near number one but he vaguely surpassed the five Heavenly Court immortals.

“Our paths are different and impede each other. This will not do!”

“Lin Jian Xing has such battle strength, he needs to be weakened for us to have the chance of using rumor cage killer move.”

“Let me try!”

The five Heavenly Court immortals discussed quickly as Prince Feng Xian stood up.

He sent out lumps of sparks which covered the battlefield in just a few moments.

Lin Jian Xing’s surging sword qi were actually burned by the sparks and whittled down rapidly.

Lin Jian Xing was momentarily stunned, his vital Immortal Gu was rank eight Immortal Gu Sword Qi. Be it sword qi takes form or sword qi lightning roar, they both used Sword Qi as the foundation.

Prince Feng Xian’s move actually burned his sword qi which broke his battle foundation.

At least half of Lin Jian Xing’s sword qi were burned; in an instant, his strength fell rapidly.

The Heavenly Court immortals used this chance to counterattack.

After several exchanges, an opportunity appeared which was grasped by Nine Spiritual Fairy.

Nine Spiritual Fairy turned into a willow tree, its branches coiled around Lin Jian Xing like a python and bound him to the trunk.

Using this chance, Zhou Xiong Xin quickly used rumor cage battlefield killer move.

Seeing that Lin Jian Xing had fallen into the battlefield killer move once again, the five immortals’ spirits rose.

But at the next moment, Nine Spiritual Fairy let out a painful cry. Her willow tree immemorial desolate beast form disappeared as she returned to her human form. She retreated in panic with her whole body covered in blood.

“What happened this time?!” The other four Heavenly Court immortals were astonished.

“Careful!!” Nine Spiritual Fairy was shielded by Zhou Xiong Xin, her expression was still full of shock along with a trace of fear.

Lin Jian Xing got rid of the bindings and smiled, his aura rising slowly.

The Heavenly Court immortals turned pale when they sensed this aura.

Pseudo venerable!

“He concealed it really well.”

“He is actually a pseudo venerable!”

At this point, Lin Jian Xing finally showed his full strength.

Translucent milky white strings emerged around him.

The strings flew towards Heavenly Court immortals with an extremely fast speed.

Sword path killer move — Sword Qi Threads!

“It was this move!” Nine Spiritual Fairy reminded.

The other four Heavenly Court immortals were solemn, transformation path Nine Spiritual Fairy transformed into an immemorial desolate plant but was beaten miserably by this move, they naturally could not treat this lightly.

Red Heart Traveler activated all of his defensive methods as he took the lead in facing these threads.

The threads had extreme sharpness that could not be expressed in words. They directly cut straight through, Red Heart Traveler might have been cut into pieces by the threads if he had not reacted fast enough and pulled apart some distance immediately.

“This move cannot be blocked!” The other three Heavenly Court immortals also probed the power of this move and reached a consensus.

The threads’ sharpness was unimaginable, even the powerful Heavenly Court immortals could only flee and evade.

Lin Jian Xing did not move, he sent out more and more threads that gradually filled the whole battlefield.

The five Heavenly Court immortals made an awkward discovery, the battlefield they wanted to trap Lin Jian Xing in became an obstruction for their own dodging attempts.

They finally realized now that Lin Jian Xing changed the battlefield not to stall for time. The reason why he returned the Immortal Gu was because he believed he could fight all five of them alone, he fight the five Heavenly Court immortals head-on!

“Lin Jian Xing! You are really underestimating us!”

“Cancel rumor cage, let me activate my strongest method!”

“No, let me go first.”

Facing such a powerful Lin Jian Xing, the five Heavenly Court immortals decisively canceled rumor cage and used their strongest killer moves.

Lin Jian Xing’s smile did not go away as he activated another method.

In an instant, sword light flew everywhere.

Sword path killer move — Sword Light Disintegration!

Bam bam bam...

In this battle, Lin Jian Xing won against five opponents alone. He killed Wan Zi Hong, severely injured Zhou Xiong Xin, Prince Feng Xian, and Red Heart Traveler, while Nine Spiritual Fairy who shielded their retreat was captured.

After this battle, Lin Jian Xing’s name shook the five regions.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2306: Yet Another Rank Nine Immortal Gu

Inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

Mini Eastern Sea.

Refinement Sea’s sea area.

Sea breeze blew and sound of the waves could be heard constantly.

An elderly rank five hairy man was lying on a dinghy in an unconscious state.

The dinghy moved along with the waves, if no changes occurred, this elderly hairy man was going to face death by drowning.

But a towered ship was moving past here, and the people on the ship started shouting when they noticed the dingy.

When the elderly hairy man woke up, he found he was already on the towered ship.

“Elder, are you also going to the refinement path sacred land to compete for the qualifications to enter Floating Refinement Hive?” A hairy man Gu Master on the ship asked.

The elder nodded: ”I live in Mini Northern Plains, I heard about Floating Refinement Hive and learned that it was forged by the orders of our Supreme Lord Great Love Immortal Venerable. This refinement path sacred land might be my final hope to make a breakthrough.”

The hairy man Gu Masters on the ship exclaimed in surprise: ”Senior, it is really not easy for you to make such a long trip from Mini Northern Plains to here, you have our respect!”

The elderly hairy man shook his head, smiling bitterly: ”At first, it was not just me, there were three others as well. But on the dangerous journey, two died in succession, while the remaining one did not dare to continue and returned. So, only I arrived here.”

Sovereign immortal aperture was not safe.

Especially when abnormal situations occurred frequently, the stable living habitats were the areas where clans or large groups settled; those areas were usually protected by immortal formations or Gu Immortals.

Even rank five Gu Masters would have to face huge risks if they were to make a long journey.

The elderly hairy man also asked about the origins of the hairy man Gu Masters on the ship.

Like what he had expected, these hairy man Gu Masters came from Mini Eastern Sea’s three hairy man continents.

Back then, Lang Ya blessed land’s Yellow Hair Continent, Black Hair Continent, and White Hair Continent were jointly called three hairy man continents.

These hairy man Gu Masters had different cultivation levels; rank four were the majority, there were few rank fives, and there were also rank threes but they were rare.

“I am really envious of you, you all live so close to the refinement path sacred land!” The elderly hairy man let out his inner sigh.

“What’s the point of being close? We are forbidden from entering during normal times.”

“How can we be allowed to enter the sacred land so casually?”

“From what I know, many Gu Immortals’ descendants can enter casually. Sigh, we can’t compare to them. They have Gu Immortal seniors, they enter or leave this area through flying boats which are extremely fast!”

“As long as this test is not difficult and I pass it, I will have the qualifications to enter and leave here freely.”

The hairy man Gu Masters discussed.

Several days later, the elderly hairy man and the hairy man Gu Masters arrived above a Floating Refinement Hive.

The Floating Refinement Hive was enormous and towering, making all the Gu Masters exclaim in shock.

A voice entered every person’s ears, instructing the correct path to enter the Floating Refinement Hive.

The Floating Refinement Hive’s structure was even more complex, there were countless rooms and corridors which made it easy to get lost.

With the guidance of that voice, the hairy man Gu Masters found their rooms one after the other.

There were all kinds of living amenities in the rooms but they were extremely simple, clearly showing the style of asceticism.

That night, the newly arrived hairy man Gu Masters slept well.

The second day began, Gu materials were sent to the separate Gu refinement chamber in the room.

The hairy man Gu Masters began their Gu refinement.

According to the explanation of that mysterious voice, this was the initial test; the Gu Masters were required to use their most proficient methods to process Gu materials or refine Gu worms.

This test lasted for three days in which time Gu Masters could display their attainment to their heart’s content.

After the test, Gu Masters would be shifted to different rooms; some moved to higher floors while some were dropped to lower floors.

Floating Refinement Hive did not restrict interaction between Gu Masters, all kinds of small-scale meetings were held during night frequently.

The rank five elderly hairy man Gu Master saw many excellent Gu Master. Among them, hairy men were the most numerous, but there were also humans, and even some other variant human Gu Masters.

He also heard many news. One day, according to everyone’s speculation, they concluded that the Gu Masters on higher floors had better results.

Because the higher the floor, the better the environment of the room, and the more exquisite the food served.

Gu Masters began to compete intensely based on this standard.

Floating Refinement Hive never lacked tasks to process Gu materials, refine Gu worms, or create new Gu.

If the Gu Masters passed with good results, they could request guidance from the mysterious voice, learning exquisite Gu refinement knowledge and techniques.

After living here for a couple of weeks, all the Gu Masters felt their strength rising rapidly.

Like this, fourteen days passed and the Gu Masters faced the mid-term test.

A top tier Gu material needed to be processed by many Gu Masters together.

The Gu Masters were distributed in their respective rooms, they watched the real-time video and processed the material together at separate locations. The video was lifelike and even had vivid temperature and smell like it truly existed. The real Gu materials were in a refinement path Gu formation in a secret area and were not placed before the Gu Masters.

Such a method was unimaginable, shocking and awing the Gu Masters.

The mid-term test soon ended. Ten or so days passed again before it was time for the final test.

This time, the test was to process immortal materials.

Naturally, the main lead were Gu Immortals, every Floating Refinement Hive had at least one refinement path Gu Immortal. The Gu Masters were in charge of doing some supplementary tasks like processing a part of the immortal material, and so on.

After passing the final test, the Gu Masters possessed the qualifications to enter and leave Refinement Sea freely.

But this qualification had a time limit of fifty years. Once this time limit was up, they had to retake the test.

Most of Fang Yuan’s Floating Refinement Hives were packed with Gu Masters.

The earlier stage did not have a high standard, most of the Gu Masters could pass and obtain this qualification.

But in the future, as the population increases explosively, there would be intense competition in every field. This was even more so for the qualification to enter Refinement Sea.

Every Floating Refinement Hive could borrow the help of Refinement Sea and greatly raise the success rate of Gu refinement. At the same time, the wasted Gu materials from refining in these refinement hives were melted by the Floating Refinement Hives and sent to Refinement Sea.

Both components complemented each other.

If there was no replenishment from the Floating Refinement Hives, the current Refinement Sea’s water level would have already fallen by a lot.

After all, Fang Yuan had been trying to advance an Immortal Gu for many days.

The central area of Refinement Sea was an absolute forbidden ground, only the Gu Immortals permitted by Fang Yuan could enter.

It was because Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool was there!

Suddenly, a rumbling sound spread from Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, a light pillar suddenly took shape and soared towards the sky.

The light pillar slowly dissipated and a rank nine Immortal Gu revealed itself.

This heaven path Immortal Gu looked like a crystal spider, it was clear and transparent with no flaws on the body. The spider’s eight legs were slim and long, its body was also small and raised high by the eight legs.

It was heavenly web Gu.

And on the back of heavenly web Gu, there was a cobweb-like white insignia.

This was unique to rank nine heavenly web Gu, rank eight heavenly web Gu did not have it.

“Success, master gained yet another rank nine Immortal Gu!”

“Goodness, it is our utmost glory to be able to participate in this whole process.”

“As long as this continues, master will definitely trample on all the venerables one day!!”

There were other Gu Immortals who took part in the advance refinement process in Four Elements Square Regret Blood Refinement Pool, most of them were hairy men. They looked at the sky and sighed with emotions.

Under the control of Fang Yuan’s divine sense, rank nine heavenly web Gu disappeared shortly after.

“Rank nine heavenly web Gu is also refined.”

Fang Yuan’s mood was tranquil.

He had refined several rank nine Immortal Gu, he was becoming used to it and did not feel excitement.

Although the Gu refinement failed twice, there was no setbacks after that and it finished smoothly.

Fang Yuan had pondered over this before finally choosing to advance heavenly web Gu.

He needed an Immortal Gu that could help him in frontal offense and defense. And among the two main aspects of offense and defense, Fang Yuan unhesitatingly chose the latter.

Because of non-conflicting dao marks of sovereign immortal body, its defense was extremely weak and was Fang Yuan’s shortcoming.

If other venerables used this point, Fang Yuan would have almost no place in a frontal combat and the consequences would be extremely severe.

When heavenly web Gu was activated by itself, it could release a giant web to trap the target.

Strictly speaking, it was not a defensive Gu, it belonged to the offensive aspect.

But it was the core of a defensive killer move —Heavenly Web Protection Veil.

Heavenly web protection veil’s power increased massively and was even stronger than reverse flow protection seal now.

Moreover, heavenly web Gu could be used in obscured heavenly secret, increasing the power of this move as well.

Fang Yuan chose heaven path and gave up on refinement path because refinement path did not specialize in offense; moreover, it was too widely spread.

Heaven path had extremely wide future prospects, and when developed well, was far better than human path.

Even more amazing was that almost no one had the qualifications to cultivate heaven path.

So, it was extremely wise of Fang Yuan to choose heaven path as his specialty. Using heaven path for offensive methods was naturally the best choice.

Taking back the rank nine heavenly web Gu, Fang Yuan inspected his storage.

Because of two failures, a lot of heaven path immortal materials were expended. As for the secluded domain of heaven and earth, Refinement Sea, the sea level did fall but not to the point of exceeding the limit, it could self-recover even if it was not looked after.

Naturally, the constant resource deposit by Floating Refinement Hives accelerated the recovery of Refinement Sea.

Just as Fang Yuan was planning on which rank eight Immortal Gu to advance next, news arrived.

Five Heavenly Court immortals surrounded and attacked Lin clan’s first supreme elder Lin Jian Xing but were utterly defeated. Lin Jian Xing revealed pseudo venerable battle strength, he colluded with Fang clan and helped to hide them, sending them intel secretly. Moreover, he was an otherworldly demon himself!

There was much evidence pointing to the fact that Lin Jian Xing colluded with and protected Fang clan, it could be said to be ironclad. As an information path great expert, Zhou Xiong Xin not only had the ability to gather clues, he also had the ability to forge false evidence.

As for Lin Jian Xing’s otherworldly demon identity, it was deduced by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable personally.

The whole world was in an uproar, Western Desert was in even more chaos.

It was not easy for a pseudo venerable to emerge in this region, but before Western Desert’s righteous path could feel any pride about this, they were dumbfounded.

This pseudo venerable Lin Jian Xing was actually dabbling in the demonic path and his involvement was quite deep!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2307: Star Constellation, I Will Need You To Die

If not for Heavenly Court revealing it, the world would still be unaware of Lin Jian Xing possessing pseudo venerable battle strength. He hid it so well that he definitely had other motives.

And looking at the reaction of most of the Lin clan Gu Immortals, they were also unaware of this.

Western Desert’s righteous path super forces were adopting a wait and see attitude.

Many of them anticipated Lin Jian Xing to give an explanation but Lin clan remained silent and gave no such thing.

There was no movement in Western Desert’s righteous path.

They did not want to create an anti-Lin alliance after the anti-Fang alliance.

The consequences of attacking Fang clan was already before them. If Lin clan were to imitate Fang clan as well, with a pseudo venerable bringing the whole clan to fight a guerrilla war, how Western Desert’s righteous path possibly survive?

“It is impossible for Fang clan to make a move. Seems like the previous series of Fang clan’s attacks was a deception created by Heavenly Court.” It was clear to Fang Yuan after he read through the whole information.

After Fang clan lost all their resource points, they had to rely on Fang Yuan even more. So, Fang Yuan had an even deeper control over them. If Fang clan were to attack at such a large scale, it was impossible for them to not notify him and ask for his instructions.

Fang Yuan found it somewhat funny.

Heavenly Court tried to put their hands in Western Desert, it would have been okay if they chose anyone else, but they just happened to choose the strongest target!

But shortly after, Fang Yuan fell into deep thought.

He thought of an issue: ”Why did Heavenly Court suddenly target Lin clan?”

Was it because they discovered Lin clan’s first supreme elder’s pseudo venerable strength and wanted to get rid of him in advance for their plan to conquest the five regions?

This possibility was too low.

Not to mention that the greatest obstacle to Heavenly Court ruling the five regions were the other venerables, pseudo venerables were inconsequential.

Also, even if Heavenly Court discovered that Lin clan’s first supreme elder had pseudo venerable battle strength, why would they only send five Heavenly Court Gu Immortals to kill him?

This was clearly not reasonable.

“What is Heavenly Court’s true motive? Why did they suddenly target Lin clan?”

Fang Yuan knew from Fang clan that Lin clan had never colluded with Fang clan.

This was just Heavenly Court framing them!

“Is it because Lin Jian Xing is an otherworldly demon?”

That was not right either.

Heavenly Court’s stance towards otherworldly demons was not radical extermination.

If they could be recruited, Heavenly Court would recruit them. They had tried to recruit Fang Yuan as well.

Heavenly Court’s recruitment standard was very clear—they just needed to be humans!

“So what was the reason? As the number one person in wisdom path, even if Star

Constellation Immortal Venerable did not make the plan, she must have agreed to attacking Lin clan. But she rarely miscalculates, so what was it that made her agree to attacking Lin clan?”

This question was crucial and was worth pondering over.

Even though wisdom Gu was only at rank eight, it was helpful to Fang Yuan.

After he used all kinds of wisdom path methods, Fang Yuan had some guesses but he was not certain.

After all, they were only deductions.

What was the truth?

Fang Yuan naturally had a way to verify his deductions.

He immediately sent an order to make a rank five Gu Master undergo immortal ascension.

Currently, there was no such rank five Gu Immortal seed in sovereign immortal aperture. Moreover, these Gu Immortal seeds did not have deep foundation or enough experience, the possibility of them succeeding in immortal ascension was very low. This was why Fang Yuan decided to stop them to let them continue to deepen their foundation.

But because this issue was very important, Fang Yuan felt it was worth expending a rank five Gu Master.

In the end, this rank five Gu Master failed and died from the imbalance of three qi.

But using the short period of time of merging the three qi, Fang Yuan used stealing heavenly secret to explore the truth.

Although Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was outside of Heavenly Court, being in Embroidered Tower, when she gave order to attack Lin clan, Bo Qing’s soul was taken out from Heavenly Court’s secret storage.

This was obvious evidence!

Adding on that Fairy Maiden Soul modified Bo Qing’s soul in Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan learned of many valuable information.

“Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie are trapped in heaven path dream realms, so Star Constellation Immortal Venerable decided to cultivate Bo Qing even though this action carries risks.”

With these clues, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s goal was obvious, it was to use Bo Qing to scheme against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable...”

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone darkly as he mumbled.

He knew why Star Constellation Immortal Venerable wanted to deal with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s actions already made him the main threat to Heavenly Court.

Naturally, this was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s understanding under the condition of Fang Yuan hiding his situation.

Were the truth of Fang Yuan’s many rank nine Immortal Gu to be revealed, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable would be thrown aside, not only would Star Constellation Immortal Venerable find trouble with Fang Yuan, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would also impatiently ally with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to attack Fang Yuan!

Splash splash splash.

At this time, Fang Yuan made deductions rapidly, thoughts gushed in his mind and formed into torrential waves.

He knew an opportunity was before him.

A huge opportunity!

If he missed this chance, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable might succeed in her plan.

Such opportunities seldom came twice.

So would he be able to grasp this opportunity?

If he could not, the outcome would be extremely bad to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan could not decide immediately.

Although he knew of heavenly court’s secret, he did not know how much progress Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had made over this period of time.

He was even more in the dark regarding Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Longevity Heaven.

Fang Yuan refined rank nine Immortal Gu, he had an advantage in this aspect. But the other venerables might be able to offset his refinement path advantage through other aspects.

Battle.

Fang Yuan did not like battles, but he did not hate or reject them.

As far as he was concerned, battles and killing were only a way to obtain benefits.

An outcome of inflicting a little more damage to enemy while suffering less damage was already a good result in a battle.

There were huge risks in battle.

It was not a wise decision to start a fight rashly.

Compared to fighting, Fang Yuan liked doing transactions — to plunder the economy.

But Fang Yuan was aware: There will be upcoming battles between the venerables and it will be frequent!

“Lets fight then.” After pondering and considering for several days, Fang Yuan finally made this decision.

And he immediately took action.

On one hand, he sent Gu Immortals to Western Desert to contact Lin Jian Xing and try to recruit him; on the other hand, he arranged a troop of capable experts.

After making proper arrangements, Fang Yuan flew to the sky and entered spectral heaven!

Great Love Immortal Venerable suddenly flew into spectral heaven—this significant information was quickly obtained by Heavenly Court and Longevity Heaven, it was rapidly spread throughout the whole five regions' Gu Immortal world.

Every action of a venerable captured the attention of all the Gu Immortals.

Let alone when Fang Yuan was making such a big movement!

"What is Heaven Refining Demon Venerable trying to do by entering spectral heaven? Fight with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable?" Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was puzzled.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, however, felt her heart jump.

Not long ago, she had completed the transaction with Fang Yuan regarding the star array calculation formation. Her calculations went wrong because of Lin Jian Xing's strength and she was just about to deal with this when Fang Yuan made such a strange movement.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not even make a deduction when a strong intuition hit her—this was going to be bad!

But as the exact situation and how this intuition was going to be realized, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not know. She needed to continue deducing or let the situation play out.

"Among the venerables, Fang Yuan is the person in the worst position. Why did he take the initiative to go to spectral heaven?" Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was also puzzled.

Spectral heaven had already become Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's territory, he did not show any movements when other Gu Immortals entered or left spectral heaven.

But if a venerable like Fang Yuan entered?

This was like a tiger occupying a mountain, it would not move when some small animals stepped onto the mountain. But if another tiger entered the mountain, the tiger would become vigilant and even start a fight.

Would Spectral Soul Demon Venerable attack Fang Yuan?

The reply to this issue weighed on the two venerables' minds.

They activated their investigative killer moves to pay close attention—Spectral Soul Demon Venerable did not show any movement!

Both venerables were shaken.

Both thought of a possibility at the same time: Did Fang Yuan have a method against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, so he had the confidence to enter spectral heaven?

But why did he suddenly enter spectral heaven?

Similar question appeared before Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant

Sun Immortal Venerable.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s first thought was: ”Has Fang Yuan already settled the issues inside sovereign immortal aperture and is trying to annex variant human grotto-heavens?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s heart jolted as the bad feeling grew in her heart: ”Does Fang Yuan already know of the heaven path dream realms? In the battle in Crazed Demon Cave, he killed Paradise Earth and obtained a large piece of truthful floating ice left after Limitless Demon Venerable’s death....”

Fang Yuan did not conceal his movement and directly went towards the location of heaven path dream realms after he entered spectral heaven.

Soon, he was before the heaven path dream realms.

After sensing this, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was shaken: ”This is a dream realm? It is the dream realm closest to the depiction in <<The Legends of Ren Zu>>! So Fang Yuan’s target is them.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable frowned, Fang Yuan had heaven path cultivation and was also the number one person in the world regarding dream path, the heaven path dream realms were too useful to him.

“I can’t let Fang Yuan succeed!” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable thought of this and immediately contact Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable learned that these were heaven path dream realms.

He immediately agreed to ally with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to suppress Fang Yuan and stop him from obtaining heaven path dream realms. At the same time, he wondered to himself if this was real or not.

This was the first time Giant Sun Immortal Venerable knew of the heaven path dream realm’s existence.

“I already have a rank nine Gu, although it is light Gu, is damaged and can’t be used for the moment, this is already enough to make Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Heaven Refining Demon Venerable ally to deal with me. So, is this situation planned by them to plot against me?”

This was definitely a possibility.

Fang Yuan looked at the heaven path dream realm before him and sent dream butterfly Immortal Gu inside.

Dream butterfly Immortal Gu was an investigative Gu, Fang Yuan soon learned the details of the heaven path dream realm.

He became quite excited: ”The price to create these heaven path dream realms is huge, the Heavenly Dao definitely expended its true meaning. This means, if I obtain these dream realms and absorb the true meaning, the loss of the Heavenly Dao will become my gain. Through this, my attainment in some aspects of heaven path can become even higher than the Heavenly Dao!”

Naturally, this could not be considered as heaven path supreme grandmaster.

Because right now, there were too many things in heaven path that Fang Yuan still could not comprehend.

“Fang Yuan, have you been well?” Just as he was thinking, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable arrived.

“As expected, it is easy to do things secretly, but hard to do them openly. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable is probably arriving as well.” Fang Yuan thought of this and smiled at Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, ”Star Constellation, I must have these dream realms! If you don’t retreat, I will need you to die.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2308: Fang Yuan Versus Star Constellation

“You need me to die? Hehehe, it is rare to see you, Fang Yuan, act so enthusiastically.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled at Fang Yuan’s threat but was slightly shaken inwardly.

In her several fights with Fang Yuan, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable rarely saw Fang Yuan show such a firm attitude. It was clear that Fang Yuan was bent on gaining these heaven path dream realms!

Because of this, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable needed to stop Fang Yuan even more.

“We have not fought for many days, you’ve probably made a lot of progress.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s long hair started fluttering without wind.

Her long dark hair was like the dark night, but countless starlight specks glittered in between the hair like a shrunken milky way, so dazzling that it could not be ignored.

Ding ding ding...

Innumerable starlight specks flowed out of her hair and gathered to form a powerful starlight torrent.

This torrent was made from countless star fragments that collided with each other, producing clear and crisp sounds.

Fang Yuan frowned, he had not seen this move before. He immediately pointed with his finger, using the killer move seven kills rainbow.

In an instant, metal path’s yellow light, wood path’s jade-green light, water path’s light blue hue, fire path’s red light, earth path’s brown light, wind path’s green radiance, and lightning path’s deep blue light merged together to form a huge drill that charged towards the star fragment current.

Rumble!

The collision produced a huge explosion first. Shortly after, metallic sounds of countless star fragments colliding with each other resounded in the battlefield.

Fang Yuan’s seven kills rainbow passed through star fragments and snaked its way towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled as her body drifted back like there was a gust of wind.

Fang Yuan’s seven kills rainbow continued to lose strength as it passed through the star fragments. At first, it had an unstoppable penetrative force, but as star fragments continued to attach themselves onto it, its momentum reduced rapidly. In the end, the light pillar continued to thin out, and when it reached Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, it was just like a wisp of smoke.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable watched with a smile on her face as the seven kills rainbow dissipated before her.

Fang Yuan frowned slightly, his gaze fixed upon the star fragments that were scattered throughout the battlefield.

Every one of the star fragments was extremely small, they were not real star fragments but created from the killer move.

Originally, the star fragments flickered with blue light and gathered to form an azure torrent. But now, these star fragments were scattered, and as they absorbed the seven kills rainbow, their surface became tainted with colors like golden yellow, green, blue, red, brown, and so on. The sky above the battlefield was filled with all kinds of colors, forming a gorgeous scene.

Fang Yuan, however, sensed intense danger from this boundless beautiful scenery.

He continued to activate killer moves to probe, but each of them showed their might for a short period before their strength began to fall rapidly and were then absorbed by the star fragments.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable activated another method.

She occasionally flicked her fingers or waved them in the air. Following her movement, star path dao marks shone in the battlefield correspondingly.

These star path dao marks increased in numbers rapidly while connecting with each other; in just a dozen or so breaths of time, they had constructed the initial form of a battlefield killer move!

How could Fang Yuan let Star Constellation Immortal Venerable succeed so easily, once the battlefield killer move was activated, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would immediately have a huge territorial advantage.

Fang Yuan immediately acted to obstruct her but there was minimal effect.

The star fragments protected the dao marks, even if Fang Yuan destroyed the star path dao marks, these dao marks would break down into countless star fragments and fill the gaps.

“I need to thank you, Fang Yuan, if not for permanence Gu, there would not be these two moves.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable said.

Fang Yuan had never heard of these two moves, they synchronized with each other and were indeed extraordinary.

Fang Yuan saw that he was unable to resolve this directly, he decisively stopped probing and used another killer move.

At the next moment, his body released the light qi of five colors; central restriction white-gold saint light qi, northern restriction jade licorice light qi, western restriction red raging flame light qi, and eastern restriction blue water light qi.

The light qi connected with each other but were distinct individually as well. They quickly spread throughout the battlefield, covering Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s incomplete battlefield killer move as well as the countless star fragments.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable nodded slightly, revealing her admiration.

Be it the previous seven kills rainbow or the current five restriction profound light qi, they were both modified by Fang Yuan.

If it were the original version, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would have immediately disrupted them, and Fang Yuan would have suffered backlash.

Seven kills rainbow’s modification was quite ordinary. In just this short while, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had already seen through it. As long as she was given some time, she could deduce a method to break it directly.

But this five restriction profound light qi killer move was modified properly, besides the increase in its power, its activation speed had also become very fast.

This modification level surpassed seven kills rainbow’s which showed that Fang Yuan had paid a lot attention to this.

“He must have invested a lot of time and energy.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable thought.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable began to suffer backlash.

She did not have sovereign immortal body which had non-conflicting dao marks. In this five restriction profound light qi, the stronger the killer moves she used, the stronger the backlash she faced.

However, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was the number one person in wisdom path since ancient times. Five restriction profound light qi had been revealed before, so how could she not have a method to deal with it?

Over this period, she had thought of at least three ways to deal with every method of Fang Yuan’s.

Immediately, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable chose to use the simplest one.

She opened the door of her immortal aperture slightly, letting out countless star beasts.

These star beasts had varying sizes, they were as large as white whales or as small as mosquitoes. Some had huge heads and horns, some were soft and twisted, they were of all kinds and shapes.

But every one of these star beasts was at least an immemorial desolate beast. Among them, the leaders’ aura and status were clearly higher, their gazes even shone with shrewdness and spirituality.

The star beasts charged into five restriction profound light qi without any obstruction!

Five restriction profound light qi killer move originally came from Tao Zhu, he created it based upon the five regional walls. The five regional walls could obstruct the living beings of five regions but did not have much effect on the beings of the two heavens.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable deliberately raised these star path beasts which were all from the two heavens, so they were not suppressed by five restriction profound light qi.

The star beasts formed groups and charged forward aggressively.

Fang Yuan activated killer moves to clear out area after area, but Star Constellation Immortal Venerable kept on adding more beasts, the star beasts' scale was still growing slowly. The star beast leaders even possessed their own immortal aperture and had Gu worms, their intelligence was not inferior to a human.

'Star Constellation Immortal Venerable seems to be able to raise legendary immemorial beasts at a large scale?!' Fang Yuan's mind was shook.

But thinking about it, he understood why.

"Star Constellation Immortal Venerable is the number one person in wisdom path, enlightening the star beasts and giving them wisdom is her specialty domain."

Actually, it was not just Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the countless mutant Gu Immortals in Crazed Demon Cave originated from mountains, rocks, wind, fire, and so on, they were all evolved into Gu Immortals by Limitless Demon Venerable.

From a certain angle, in this aspect of enlightening legendary immemorial desolate beasts, Limitless Demon Venerable's accomplishments were much more shocking than Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's.

"Star Constellation Immortal Venerable must have spent countless star path resources to nurture so many star beasts! The merging of the two heavens gave me countless heaven path immortal materials, it also gave her endless star path resources. It allowed her to construct the star array calculation formation and even raise so many star beasts." Fang Yuan made a guess Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's wealth.

The truth was, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had spent a very large amount to raise so many star beasts. Not only did she use her gains from the merging of two heavens, she also used star path resources from Heavenly Court's storage.

Looking at the approaching star beasts, Fang Yuan activated sword tongue dragon soul killer move while maintaining five restriction profound light qi.

Countless dragon souls flew and sword qi pervaded the air, but they still could not match the endless star beasts, at most they delayed the offense of some star beast groups.

After these star beasts were injured, the surrounding star fragments mended their injuries and healed them rapidly.

If they were severely injured, they would die and break down into star fragments.

Once the star fragments reached a certain level in an area, they easily formed star path dao marks.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's three moves were connected to each other. If one was weakened, the other would benefit, they were mutually linked and made Fang Yuan's situation increasingly tough.

“Looks like this is another one of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s combat systems...” Fang Yuan noticed something.

His thoughts moved like lightning.

This fight with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was different from the battle in Crazed Demon Cave or the contest over rank nine light Gu.

The battle in Crazed Demon Cave was to seize Primordial Domain and the Crazed Demon formation. It prioritized on strategies and making use of the situation, it focused on the competition of information, people’s support, and their respective forces.

The contest over rank nine light Gu was a pursuit battle, it focused on speed, initiative, offense and defense.

This time, Fang Yuan wanted to seize heaven path dream realms, the prerequisite to this was to take control of this battlefield and gain territorial advantage!

Great minds thought alike, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had the same view.

Be it Fang Yuan’s five restriction profound light qi or Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s mysterious battlefield, they were both meant for this purpose.

From the start of the battle, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable directly used her new combat system, lowering the effectiveness of Fang Yuan’s five restriction profound light qi and other methods.

On the other hand, Fang Yuan was decisive, he saw the situation getting worse and immediately stopped all offensive methods, only defending himself.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable saw this and waved her sleeves, making all the star beasts press forward.

Fang Yuan could only dodge while preparing his killer move.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s eyes shone with starlight as she suddenly took out the lantern-like secluded domain of heaven and earth.

Mental Domain.

She lightly swung Mental Domain towards Fang Yuan’s direction.

Instantly, countless emotions attacked Fang Yuan’s mind and body.

But Fang Yuan was already prepared, he activated several defensive killer moves, among which was the killer move, calm and steady.

This move was already used in Crazed Demon Cave, it was also modified now. It suppressed and eliminated Fang Yuan’s emotions quickly.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not succeed in disturbing him, while Fang Yuan stabilized his footing as his preparation succeeded. He opened his mouth slightly, light smoke gushed out of his mouth and ears.

The pink smoke gathered above Fang Yuan’s head and turned into a mini image of Dang Hun Mountain.

At the next moment, the killer move activated as the mini Dang Hun Mountain shook intensely.

Ding——!

Ding——!

Ding——!

Sounds of crystals colliding resounded in the battlefield, and soon, the sound became ear-piercing.

The pink sound waves were visible to the naked eyes, wherever they went, star beasts cried in pain, freezing on the spot before crumbling apart.

The battlefield that was filled with star beasts became empty instantly.

Even the stronger star beast leaders were unable to resist as they collapsed amidst the pink sound waves.

Not only this, even the endless star fragments also disintegrated and disappeared. The surrounding star path dao marks were broken in succession and drowned in the pink sound waves.

Immortal killer move — Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound!

One move swept the whole battlefield and changed the situation easily, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was aghast, her expression changed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2309: The Power of Heavenly Web!

Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound was a compound killer move.

It used rank eight rule path departure Gu, rank eight wisdom path great shock Gu, rank eight time path year Gu, rank seven dream armor Gu, rank eight water path huge wave Gu, rank eight sound path ringing sound Gu, and its core was the secluded domain of heaven and earth, Dang Hun Mountain!

It was because the core was Dang Hun Mountain, a secluded domain of heaven and earth, that this move could be comparable to a rank nine killer move. Under the dao mark amplification of Fang Yuan’s various paths, its might was astonishing.

With just this move, Fang Yuan immediately broke Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s three continuous moves and alleviated his worsening situation, regaining his footing.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s expression changed as thoughts surged and moved in her mind, trying to analyze this move with all her strength.

“This move seems like Fang Yuan’s trump card, it is the source of his confidence to fight me.”

“Roughly analyzing it, this move contains rule path, wisdom path, time path, dream path, water path, soul path, and sound path. It really is difficult to block it completely.”

Wisdom path was fine, but dream path was troublesome. Despite the dream path Immortal Gu Dream Armor being only rank seven, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not have an effective way to block it.

Fang Yuan had the advantage in dream path, he was the number one in the current world!

“The greatest source of this move’s strength is Dang Hun Mountain. How much time and energy did Fang Yuan spend to deduce this move?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable calculated inwardly while feeling somewhat helpless.

Her painstakingly created new combat system was broken by one move from Fang Yuan.

No matter how ingenious the three connected moves was, Fang Yuan’s Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound was extremely domineering, directly clearing the battlefield.

The thing that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was concerned about: the time and energy she spent on these three moves compared to Fang Yuan’s expenditure in deducing Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound.

It was fine if her time and energy spent was less.

If it was more, her losses would be more than gains.

The result of a confrontation between venerables also signified the difference in venerables’ cultivation and management methods.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable calculated inwardly and felt the possibility of Fang Yuan expending lesser than her was rather low.

But the truth was not so.

The main source of this killer move, Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound, came from the nature of heaven and earth.

In the Remote Antiquity Era, there was a kind of immemorial desolate beast called shocking year beast, wherever it went, shocked year Gu would fly out. It was already extinct now.

Dream wave was a phenomenon, in Fang Yuan’s five hundred years of his previous life, dream wave was formed when dream realms appeared at a large scale.

There was no need to say much about Dang Hun Mountain.

Soul sound withered tree was an already extinct, rare immemorial desolate plant. It used wood path resources as nutrients and emitted soul sound that influence the souls of the surrounding living beings.

These phenomena and natural abilities existed throughout heaven and earth naturally.

After Fang Yuan gained the information through stealing heavenly secret, they became an important foundational reference material.

The creation of compound killer moves was actually easier than an individual path’s killer moves. Especially when Fang Yuan had rank eight wisdom Gu, it gave him accurate inspirations, so he did not have to waste time on dead ends.

This Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound was essentially only a quasi-rank nine killer move because it did not contain a rank nine Immortal Gu.

Thus, rank eight wisdom Gu was helpful in deducing this move.

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, can you deal with this move?” Fang Yuan smiled as he calmly approached Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could only retreat constantly, maintaining distance from Fang Yuan.

It was difficult to construct a combat system.

The three connected moves that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable painstakingly created were exquisite and already formed an initial incomplete combat system.

But after Fang Yuan’s move unreasonably broke it, the three connected moves became a joke.

Naturally, this did not mean that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s effort ended up in vain.

Maybe in the future, when she obtains a rank nine star path Immortal Gu, this combat system’s power would rise explosively and be able to withstand Fang Yuan’s compound killer move.

The foundation of a combat system were still the Immortal Gu that formed it.

In a contest of venerables, they first competed with rank nine Immortal Gu. If there was no rank nine Immortal Gu, then they would contest with secluded domains of heaven and earth!

In this aspect, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable possessed the incomplete Blood Sea; Star Constellation Immortal Venerable possessed Book Mountain, Mental Domain, and the Door of Life and Death; Fang Yuan possessed Dang Hun Mountain, Luo Po Valley, City Well, Reverse Flow River, Hu Land, Refinement Sea, Human Sea, and the incomplete Qian Kun Crystal Wall.

When the foundation was solid and it was hard to determine a winner through fighting, the combat system became the biggest factor to decide victory or defeat.

“Fang Yuan really has extraordinary aptitude and shocking talent. This move is so powerful and mysterious, it is really hard to block. But I also have a move, please appraise it.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable shook the Mental Domain in her hand.

Fang Yuan immediately looked vigilant and activated reverse flow protection seal.

Reverse Flow River was already restored, reverse flow protection seal had even been modified.

Originally, after the killer move was activated, a large white robe was formed with ripples moved along the surface, this was the image of Reverse Flow River flowing slowly. The surface of the white robe had faint mist surrounding it. There was also a strip of light that was deep azure, it was curvy and wavy, resembling a long sash, it coiled around Fang Yuan’s arms, the back of his neck, and around his waist again.

Now, besides these, Fang Yuan’s peerlessly beautiful face was partly veiled by a translucent gauze, highlighting the matchless charm in the depths of his unconcealed eyes.

The lantern-like Mental Domain shook slightly; in an instant, the surrounding battlefield dimmed.

Mental Domain was like the only source of light, but it was letting out a mysterious suction force.

This move’s range was extremely large, Fang Yuan was directly struck by it. His accumulated emotions were extracted and absorbed by Mental Domain.

Fang Yuan immediately used calm and steady killer move, but could not block this process.

He used other methods as well, but as they showed no effects, his expression started to change.

Because at first, only emotions were extracted, but gradually, Fang Yuan’s wisdom path dao marks were also being extracted.

Wisdom path cultivation focused on three elements: thoughts, wills, and emotions. Furthermore, emotions were related to wisdom path dao marks. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s move was extremely powerful, besides extracting emotions, it could even extract wisdom path dao marks, permanently reducing the target’s wisdom path foundation!

“Once my emotions are all extracted, my heart will be empty. It will be extremely easy for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to add in emotions then.” Fang Yuan felt that the situation was going south.

During the whole process, his reverse flow protection seal had no reaction.

Clearly, this extraction was extremely subtle and was not considered an attack, so it did not trigger reverse flow protection seal’s counterattack.

In fact, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable probably created this move to target reverse flow protection seal.

She succeeded.

Fang Yuan’s effort in modifying reverse flow protection seal was made pointless.

In just a few breaths of time, Fang Yuan already lost one hundred wisdom path dao marks.

He activated defensive methods crazily, but even dream armor Gu showed no effect.

The core of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s move was Mental Domain, it could be considered a quasi-rank nine killer move. Adding on the amplification from her wisdom path dao marks, it had overwhelming might.

Methods like that of dream armor Gu were at a lower level and did not have enough strength to block this.

Reverse flow protection seal was of a high level and had enough strength, but it could not be triggered.

Fang Yuan had another option, which was to continue activating Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound, using offense against offense!

But he was in a dilemma.

It was not his intention to fight such an intense attrition battle with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. Both sides would suffer losses, giving Giant Sun Immortal Venerable the most gains.

Moreover, Fang Yuan did not want to fight Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, his first priority were the heaven path dream realms.

Thoughts collided in Fang Yuan’s mind, and after a few sparks between the thoughts, he made a decision. He secretly used a heaven path killer move — Heavenly Web Protection Veil.

This move originally formed a giant milky white web outside of the Gu Immortal to block attacks. But now, it quietly turned into a milky white light stream that entered the thin fishing net formed from obscured heavenly secret killer move.

Like this, the thin and tightly connected fishing net possessed the power of two killer moves, heavenly web protection veil and obscured heavenly secret!

Heavenly web Gu was a rank nine Immortal Gu.

Heavenly web protection veil’s defensive power was higher than the strength of Mental Domain’s killer move.

Heavenly web protection veil had gaps but nothing was allowed to pass through. or

As the saying went, the net of heaven has large meshes but it lets nothing through[1. A Chinese saying similar to ’The mills of God grind slowly but surely’.].

In an instant, it stopped Fang Yuan’s emotions from being extracted, causing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to exclaim in surprise.

The even more amazing thing was that the rank nine Immortal Gu aura was not exposed. Because the two moves were interconnected, the aura was concealed by obscured heavenly secret killer move.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was truly Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, after just a few exchanges, she forced Fang Yuan to use his rank nine heavenly web Gu.

Like this, obscured heavenly secret killer move faced a huge burden!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s mood was even heavier.

She could not block Fang Yuan’s Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound, but Fang Yuan could resist her Mental Domain’s killer move.

That meant she could not even keep up the attrition battle by using offense against offense.

“Does Fang Yuan have a method that is not weaker than mine in terms of wisdom path deduction?” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not help but feel doubtful.

Fang Yuan thus gained the upper hand and finally had the leisure time to deal with the heaven path dream realms.

He did not attack Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and only defended against her while targeting those heaven path dream realms from afar.

His first method was naturally pure dream reality seeker transformation!

Ordinary dream realms would be transformed into Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies by this move. But it had no effect on the heaven path dream realms, not only this, the heaven path dream realms were instead angered and formed a tidal wave that rushed towards Fang Yuan.

“These heaven path dream realms are filled with heaven’s will, while pure dream reality seeker transformation condenses a dream realm into a human body with human will as the core. This means I need to get rid of all the heaven’s will in the dream realms first.”

After learning of this, Fang Yuan activated heaven’s will dissipation killer move.

He had used this move many times before to deal with dream realms and its effect was extraordinary.

But this time, although it was still effective, its side effect was much larger. Fang Yuan felt some heartache as he watched the targeted heaven path dream realm shrinking rapidly.

“Seems like heaven’s will dissipation is usable against ordinary dream realms, but is an extremely crude measure against heaven path dream realms. It not only removes heaven’s will, it even eradicates the true meaning contained in the dream realm.”

Fang Yuan was not without gains, he realized that heaven’s will and heaven path true meaning were entangled in the heaven path dream realms, so they were hard to separate.

His wisdom path methods were rough, it was difficult for him to precisely separate the two and target just heaven’s will.

But Fang Yuan still had a way to deal with this.

At the next moment, he brought out his dream path clone Meng Qiu Zhen, letting him be devoured by a heaven path dream realm.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sighed, feeling somewhat anxious.

Fang Yuan’s strength was exposed which made her quite surprised, he was actually starting to take these heaven path dream realms right under her eyes.

“Giant Sun, are you going to watch as Heaven Refining Demon Venerable takes these heaven path dream realms and increases his strength?” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable contacted Giant Sun.

“Of course not!”

At the next moment, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable showed himself.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2310: Two Venerables Fight Against Fang Yuan

Ever since Fang Yuan suddenly flew into spectral heaven, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had been paying close attention to this place.

When Fang Yuan and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable fought, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was happy at first. After all, the two venerables expending each other’s resources was most beneficial to him.

But shortly after, he was faintly worried about Fang Yuan not being able to withstand Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s attacks and getting defeated too early.

“If Fang Yuan can’t continue, I will help him a bit.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had been secretly preparing to help Fang Yuan.

He naturally did not have good intentions.

First, Fang Yuan being in a weaker position was not beneficial to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. As far as he was concerned, Heavenly Court was still the biggest enemy.

Second, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable still wanted Fang Yuan and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to continue wearing each other down, so he needed to help Fang Yuan to maintain the battle of attrition between the two venerables to gain the most benefits.

“I have Unified Essence Yi Qi Zi after all, my immortal essence can be replenished greatly. Consuming some immortal essence in battle is more detrimental for them!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had this thought back then.

He was not wrong.

It was also very reasonable.

It was just that he did not know the truth.

He only possessed the information that he could obtain.

But soon, he was shocked to see that in the battle between Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Fang Yuan, it was Fang Yuan who had the upper hand!

He had not expected this.

After all, in his impression, Fang Yuan was behind on refining dao marks, although he had potential, his immortal essence reserve was the worst.

How could he gain the upper hand?

He even made Star Constellation Immortal Venerable take the initiative to ask for help from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had witnessed the whole fight, after the surprise, he felt that it made sense.

Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound left an extremely deep impression on him.

Fang Yuan used Dang Hun Mountain as the core to create such a powerful killer move that destroyed Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s incomplete combat system.

It made sense for Fang Yuan to be victorious.

When Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound showed its might, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was actually not too anxious, instead, he became a little relieved and no longer felt such an urge to probe Fang Yuan’s foundation.

The reason?

Fang Yuan lacked immortal essence and was the slowest one at refining natural dao marks, what did he spend the rest of his time on?

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable understood now.

“So he used his time to deduce killer moves.”

This was a rather correct choice in Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s opinion.

He was even more at ease because the killer move used a secluded domain of heaven and earth as the core.

“Looks like Fang Yuan does not have a rank nine Immortal Gu, so he used a secluded domain of heaven and earth to create a quasi-rank nine killer move.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could not help feeling envious.

Fang Yuan had the most number of secluded domains of heaven and earth, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also had several, but he, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, only had one and it was incomplete.

He really wanted to have a complete secluded domain of heaven and earth!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was observing the battle quietly, when he saw Fang Yuan gaining the upper hand with Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound killer move, his mind turned calm. However, when he saw Fang Yuan withstanding Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s Mental Domain’s killer move, he could no longer sit still.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable already expected Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to use a wisdom path killer move with Mental Domain as the core.

But he never expected Fang Yuan to have a defensive method that could block this Mental Domain’s killer move!

Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal already made Giant Sun Immortal Venerable feel a headache, he had racked his brains to secretly deduce a luck path method to counter it. But he did not think Fang Yuan was still hiding another defensive method that was even stronger than reverse flow protection seal.

Fang Yuan’s performance went beyond Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s expectations.

Now, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was wary.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not break Fang Yuan’s defensive method, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was the same!

“I did not think that you, Fang Yuan, has such deep attainment in wisdom path as well. In just a short period of time, you actually created, deduced, and modified so many killer moves.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable entered the battlefield and praised Fang Yuan sincerely.

This was actually nothing.

Fang Yuan possessed stealing heavenly secret and wisdom Gu, and with sovereign immortal body’s advantage, it was easy to create compound killer moves. Just one of these advantages alone could make the other venerables envious. Now that these advantages were stacked together, even Fang Yuan felt it was terrifying!

Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound and heavenly web protection veil were only a part of Fang Yuan’s recent gains.

He chose to use them because he felt they suited the situation.

Fang Yuan had at least ten killer moves of similar level.

The power of stealing heavenly secret could be seen from this; of course, rank eight wisdom Gu also provided a lot of help.

It was because of these two that Fang Yuan caught up from behind in terms of killer moves. He even had a wide range of options to choose from.

Naturally, nothing could be perceived from Fang Yuan’s expression.

Facing Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he frowned and snorted coldly: ”I must obtain these heaven path dream realms, Giant Sun, you also want to block me? Are you still not clear of who is stronger between Heavenly Court and me?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s looked at Fang Yuan’s incisive gaze, his expression eased and turned somewhat complex.

In his view, compared to Heavenly Court and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, Fang Yuan was still weaker.

The reason?

Fang Yuan did not have enough immortal essence!

He had been venerable for the shortest time and did not even have his own base. How many natural refinement path dao marks did he refine in this period of time?

It was very obvious.

Fang Yuan looked powerful, even suppressing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. But in fact, he was relying on the novelty of new killer moves and their powerful strength.

How much immortal essence could he have?

How could he fight a battle of attrition?

From what Giant Sun Immortal Venerable thought, Fang Yuan’s situation did not look good.

But even though Fang Yuan was weaker, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable still needed to stop Fang Yuan and stand with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable for the time being.

The reason?

Because Fang Yuan wanted heaven path dream realms.

This could not be allowed!

If Fang Yuan absorbed all these heaven path dream realms, he would definitely rise in power and change the power structure of the venerables.

This was something that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not want to see.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable felt Heavenly Court and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable were his greatest threats, but he also wanted to suppress the rise of Fang Yuan who was the weakest venerable but had the most potential.

Thus, he took part in the battle. On the surface, he was helping Star Constellation Immortal Venerable; but secretly, he was striving for Star Constellation and Fang Yuan to expend their immortal essence, so that he could maintain and enlarge his advantage!

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s choice was no doubt extremely sensible from his point of view.

With his help, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable immediately changed the battle situation and began to suppress Fang Yuan.

The environment in spectral heaven was not helpful to the three venerables, they relied on their own foundation and strength. Under this situation, Fang Yuan’s worsening situation was immediately clear.

After all, he was fighting two opponents on his own.

Naturally, this was under the condition where Fang Yuan preserved most of his methods and did not use his full battle strength.

The fight of the three venerables shook heaven and earth.

Every Gu Immortal in five regions raised their heads and watched the battle nervously.

“Oh no, Lord Alliance Leader’s situation is not good.”

“Good, good, good, this demon Fang Yuan will finally face retribution!”

“I did not expect my Ancestor Giant Sun to join hands with Heavenly Court.”

“Heavenly Court is quite sensible to not look for trouble with my Ancestor Giant Sun.”

“Being able to make Giant Sun Immortal Venerable help her so easily proves Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable is indeed the number one person in wisdom path.”

Rank eight Gu Immortals understood the situation more clearly, they saw Fang Yuan being suppressed and his situation getting worse. The Eastern Sea immortals looked extremely solemn while Central Continent and Northern Plains’ Gu Immortals were rejoicing with raised morale.

Thunder rumbled and countless rays of light exploded from the collision of killer moves.

Fang Yuan’s situation did not look good but he was calm inwardly.

Although the two venerables allied, due to their conflicting paths, they could only attack Fang Yuan in turns.

Moreover, the two venerables were wary of each other, one would not allow the other to set a battlefield.

Without the threat of a battlefield killer move, Fang Yuan still had a grasp over the choice of fighting or retreating.

More importantly, Meng Qiu Zhen was already in a heaven path dream realm and was making good progress.

Because of the sharing of the clones’ and main body’s attainment levels, Fang Yuan could clearly feel his heaven path attainment level rising slowly!

Fang Yuan just needed to maintain this situation and it would do.

What was the use of superficial victory or defeat?

Man strives for recognition while Buddha requires incense; this was a reasonable proverb. But Fang Yuan was far beyond the age of fighting for recognition and he was more willing to strive for benefits.

If the choice of honor and benefit went against each other, Fang Yuan would unhesitatingly choose the latter.

It was this situation right now.

He could be forceful and suppress the two venerables. But what was the use when he would not be able to kill them?

Instead, it would make the two venerables wary and deepen their alliance. Was this not asking for trouble?

As for the support and morale of the five regions’ Gu Immortals, Fang Yuan did not care.

What was the use of that?

Even if Fang Yuan was defeated miserably today, the five regions’ Gu Immortals still could not defeat him. They still had to fear and revere Fang Yuan.

As long as Fang Yuan was not dead, could Fang clan, the two heavens’ grotto-heavens’ variant humans, or even the Eastern Sea super forces side with someone else?

They still had to follow Fang Yuan!

It was just that they would be more worried about their future.

But what did the worries of these minor characters have to do with Fang Yuan?

Fang Yuan did not need to bother with such things.

There were no two ways about it, these minor characters were only resources and tools in Fang Yuan’s eyes. The Gu cultivation world was ruled by the strong, the actual trend of the world still depended on the fight between venerables.

Even if Fang Yuan was defeated, as long as Meng Qiu Zhen made huge gains, he would be the biggest winner. The loss could be considered a victory.

Even if Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable beat Fang Yuan badly, as long as Fang Yuan lived and absorbed all the heaven path dream realms, their victory would be the same as defeat.

Fang Yuan knew this, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was aware of it as well.

The alliance of the two venerables could not make Fang Yuan retreat, he was still absorbing the true meaning in the heaven path dream realms.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was truly anxious.

She transmitted her voice to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable: ”Giant Sun, if this continues, Heaven Refining Demon Venerable will succeed. What are you still holding back for?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable snorted coldly: ”Star Constellation, are you telling me that you are not holding back?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had a solemn expression: ”I am going to prepare a killer move to search for Fang Yuan’s dream path clone and try to eradicate it!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable took a deep look at her before nodding: ”Then I will target Fang Yuan’s reverse flow protection seal and pressure him in order to create a chance for you.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2311: Meng Qiu Zhen’s Crisis

Although Giant Sun Immortal Venerable participated in the battle, he had been preserving his strength.

He wanted to save his immortal essence and continue to hide his trump cards while making Star Constellation and Fang Yuan expend each other’s immortal essence.

Although Fang Yuan’s situation was bad and was in a disadvantage, he was actually making gains constantly. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could not take it anymore.

Giant Sun was an Immortal Venerable, he would not be easily deceived by the advantage they had right now.

“Fang Yuan, take this move!” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shouted as he used two killer moves, lingering scrap luck and accumulated return, in succession.

Lingering scrap luck’s activation was extremely fast, Fang Yuan could not dodge it.

It was because Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used this move towards himself and not on Fang Yuan.

Faint golden fog curled up around Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

But the next moment, this golden fog appeared indescribably on Fang Yuan’s body!

Fang Yuan was startled for a moment before understand the profundity in this move.

When Giant Sun Immortal Venerable fought with Fang Yuan, their luck continued to entangle and form a close connection like a bridge. Giant Sun Immortal Venerable acted based on this and easily sent lingering scrap luck to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan also had high luck path attainment and immediately saw through this.

But his luck path attainment was far inferior to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s, even if he saw through this profundity, it was hard for him to stop it.

Lingering scrap luck killer move coiled around Fang Yuan’s body, constantly scrapping his luck.

Reverse flow protection seal was triggered at this moment and reflected lingering scrap luck killer move.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was happy to see this, he coordinated with reverse flow protection seal and let this backlash reach him by following their connected luck.

Accumulated return killer move showed its effect, increasingly the density of his surrounding golden fog.

The slightly denser golden fog followed the connection of the luck and returned to Fang Yuan’s body.

Lingering scrap luck killer move was reflected once again by reverse flow protection seal, and was again strengthened by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s accumulated return before it returned to Fang Yuan’s body again.

As this back and forth action continued, lingering scrap luck’s power continued to grow.

Fang Yuan had a solemn expression, venerables could not be underestimated. It was not only Star Constellation Immortal Venerable who thought of a counter to reverse flow protection seal, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable also did the same.

Comparatively, as a wisdom path Gu Immortal, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s method was even more thorough as it directly bypassed reverse flow protection seal.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s method was not thorough, he chose a different approach which was to imitate reverse flow protection seal. Reverse flow protection seal could reflect attacks, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable also reflected them back.

With the two linked moves, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable gained an advantage.

Simply because lingering scrap luck killer move was becoming increasingly strong, even if reverse flow protection seal could reflect it, Reverse Flow River had a fixed amount of water.

While both sides had not reached the limit, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable achieved his goal of using his immortal essence to expend Reverse Flow River.

Reverse flow protection seal was very hard to deal with indeed. In the past fights with Fang Yuan, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had used all kinds of attacks to trigger reverse flow protection seal and expend Reverse Flow River.

Now, he was using lingering scrap luck and accumulated return together, it was much more efficient than directly attacking.

Using immortal essence to expend a secluded domain of heaven and earth was also a huge gain.

After all, it was much easier to accumulate immortal essence than to restore Reverse Flow River.

Fang Yuan was shocked and furious: ”Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, I will definitely pay you back for this.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable looked at Fang Yuan and sighed inwardly. He felt that it was unwise of Fang Yuan to fight for the heaven path dream realms!

However, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable thought about it and understood the reason behind his decision.

‘After all, heaven path dream realms are resources that can overturn the contest of the venerables!’

‘If these heaven path dream realms are changed to a rank nine blood path Immortal Gu, blood path or even luck path secluded domain of heaven and earth, I will be blinded by greed too.’

‘Looks like Fang Yuan plans to develop heaven path.’

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used his hidden methods to further suppress Fang Yuan.

On the other side, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable finished preparing her killer move. Boundless azure radiance spread as she activated the move.

The radiance shone on the dream realms, the heaven path dream realms went berserk; their shape distorted constantly like a spasm, turning into dough that was kneaded constantly.

‘Oh no! Star Constellation Immortal Venerable actually has a method to target the dream realms.’ A sharp light flashed across Fang Yuan’s eyes.

He immediately canceled reverse flow protection seal, only using obscured heavenly secret and heavenly web protection veil to forcibly endure Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s attack while rushing towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

......

After Fang Yuan’s clone, Meng Qiu Zhen, entered the heaven path dream realm, his vision changed.

Shortly after, he found that he had turned into a land spirit in the shape of a pink cloth doll.

Meng Qiu Zhen was not surprised.

He snickered and began to use his power to change and manage this blessed land in the dream.

Different from Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie, Meng Qiu Zhen came fully prepared.

Since Fang Yuan took the initiative to make a move, he naturally made sufficient preparation. Although he could not fully understand the complexities of the heaven path dream realms with stealing heavenly secret, he had a clear idea of the general rules in the dream realms.

Meng Qiu Zhen tested for a while and learned the limit of his capabilities.

Immortal killer move — Butterfly Explores Heavenly Secret!

This move used dream path investigative Immortal Gu Dream Butterfly as the core, it was based on exposing heavenly secret killer move, and was specifically made to be used in heaven path dream realms. It could obtain the details of the calamities and tribulations in heaven path dream realms in advance.

This move was one of the preparations Fang Yuan made.

After Meng Qiu Zhen used this move, he knew the details of the first earthly calamity. But he was not satisfied as he used the move another two times, expending a lot of immortal essence to probe the types and scale of the next two earthly calamities.

This was different from exposing heavenly secret.

Exposing heavenly secret could only explore the details of the next calamity and tribulation; moreover, the Gu cultivator could not be too far away from the next tribulation.

But butterfly explores heavenly secret could probe the details of the next three calamities. Naturally, this number was related to the power of the killer move as well as the size of the heaven path dream realm.

After finishing all this, Meng Qiu Zhen began to manage the blessed land.

There was only a rock field before him, flat and lifeless.

He assembled wind and cloud to accumulate lightning and bombarded the rock field.

Thirty percent of the rock field was blasted away, the remaining portion was filled with cracks and ravines.

Meng Qiu Zhen stopped the lightning and began to control the strength of the land.

The rock field that had lost thirty percent of its area was no longer as compact as before, after resisting for a while, it finally began to tremor slightly.

The tremors continued to grow bigger until deep trenches formed.

After the earth trenches formed, Meng Qiu Zhen moved wind and clouds again, accumulating heavy clouds. But this time, he did not create lightning but heavy rain.

There were very few water path dao marks in this heaven path dream realm’s blessed land which was not favorable to Meng Qiu Zhen’s plan.

But under Meng Qiu Zhen’s continuous effort, rainwater accumulated, finally overflowing out of the earth trenches and covering the rock field.

After finishing all these, Meng Qiu Zhen calculated the time and noticed that he had already spent a lot of time, it was nearing the first earthly calamity.

He activated create dream killer move to create countless firm rock spikes out of nothing.

When he almost changed the whole rock field into a land of spikes, the first earthly calamity arrived.

It was a desolate beast calamity.

A ferocious four-armed ape intruded the blessed land.

It roared as it fixed its gaze at Meng Qiu Zhen and ran towards him.

Meng Qiu Zhen was a land spirit but had no ability to teleport, so he was chased by the four-armed ape everywhere.

Looking at the four-armed ape not giving up on him and destroying countless earth spikes wherever it passed by, Meng Qiu Zhen did not panic, instead, he smiled slightly.

Everything was within his plan.

The four-armed ape rampaged for a while before its whole body became covered in injuries and blood.

This stimulated its bestial nature, it became increasingly berserk and its speed finally surpassed Meng Qiu Zhen’s.

Meng Qiu Zhen was already prepared, he stopped running on the ground and drilled into the earth trenches.

His size was small, and although the four-armed ape was agile, it was as large as an elephant. It was stopped outside, it stretched its long arm into the earth trench but could not grab onto Meng Qiu Zhen.

Meng Qiu Zhen even easily experienced the power of a land spirit.

In fact, this was an extremely rare and valuable experience!

Gu Immortals were not land spirits, they might be the owner of their immortal aperture but their control over their own immortal aperture was far lower than land spirits or heavenly spirits.

It was like how Fang Yuan had to spread his divine sense to the whole of sovereign immortal aperture to inspect the situation.

Land spirits or heavenly spirits were formed by Gu Immortal obsessions fused with the immortal aperture’s heavenly power.

In this sense, land spirits and heavenly spirits were one with the immortal aperture. The Gu Immortal’s obsession gave them their spirituality.

Land spirits and heavenly spirits had an extremely deep understanding and control over the immortal aperture.

Fang Yuan had to use perceivable dao Immortal Gu or such methods to inspect the number of his dao marks. But land spirits or heavenly spirits could easily know it; they only had to concentrate slightly and they would know the number and distribution of the dao marks.

This chasing and escaping situation continued for several days, Meng Qiu Zhen had no injuries, but the four-armed ape was heavily injured and died after exhausting all its strength.

After it died, Meng Qiu Zhen used wind and rain to decompose its blood and flesh, before using lightning to turn its bones into scraps. He then buried the bones underground, all the strength path dao marks were quickly added to the blessed land.

After finishing all these, Meng Qiu Zhen opened his small doll palm and crushed a small rock.

Meng Qiu Zhen nodded with joy.

The land spirit’s strength was connected to the heavenly power of the small world. What was the foundation of the heavenly power?

It was the dao marks in the immortal aperture.

After passing the four-armed ape desolate beast earthly calamity, the blessed land’s strength path dao marks surged which increased Meng Qiu Zhen’s strength. He could crush these firm rocks which he had not been able to do earlier.

Crushing the rock pieces was only a small display, Meng Qiu Zhen gathered his strength and stirred the water surface, creating huge waves.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2312: Profundity of the Heaven Path Dream Realm

Waves continued to strike the rocky land, flooding and breaking the land including the earth spikes.

Earth trenches were already submerged in water, the underwater force continued to surge and slam into the trenches, enlarging them.

Faint rumbling sounds resounded in the blessed land, the rocky land started to break apart due to the continuous flood.

The separated rocky land turned into five large islands and tens of smaller islands.

Meng Qiu Zhen finally relaxed after finishing this step, a sense of accomplishment rose in his heart.

It was not easy to reach this stage.

At first, this blessed land had the highest number of earth path dao marks, the dao marks of other paths were very few, the difference between the two was large which led the terrain to become rocky.

The rocky land’s advantages and disadvantages were obvious. It could produce rock materials and ore mines which were very beneficial to the rockmen’s habitat, but it was not beneficial for the growth of vegetation.

The blessed land’s terrain was not a bad thing originally.

However, when Meng Qiu Zhen probed the next three earthly calamities; the first calamity was the strength path beast calamity four-armed ferocious ape; the second calamity was a fire path calamity fire rain, and the third was a transformation path calamity flies tribulation.

Meng Qiu Zhen understood that this dream path blessed land’s calamities and tribulations were not based on earth path. Developing in earth path did not have much prospects.

Meng Qiu Zhen immediately decided to remodel the terrain!

After a Gu Master undergoes immortal ascension, very few who would change the terrain of their immortal aperture.

This step was not easy.

Fortunately, this was a dream realm and Meng Qiu Zhen had a land spirit’s powers.

He first destroyed the complete rocky land but he could not do it perfectly because he lacked strength path dao marks.

Afterwards, he used his create dream killer move to create earth spikes and used earth trenches and caverns to kill the four-armed ape.

This step was quite difficult.

If he did not have create dream, Meng Qiu Zhen would have no earth spikes, the four-armed ape would have lived for a very long period. He would need to wait for it to die of hunger before the immortal aperture blessed land could digested it slowly to obtain strength path dao marks.

Using the earth spikes, Meng Qiu Zhen quickly got rid of the four-armed ape.

But because of conflicting dao marks, the blessed land could only absorb most of the strength path dao marks and not all of it. Fortunately, this portion was enough, Meng Qiu Zhen finally split apart the complete rock land.

Next was painstaking work.

Meng Qiu Zhen chose a large island and began to crush the peripheral rocky land into a large amount of gravel.

This was an arduous task.

First, he had to accumulate lightning clouds to bombard it, then use fierce wind and water waves to erode the land.

With strength path dao marks, the wind and waves were much more forceful than before but the efficiency of crushing rocks was not high. A lot of strength had to be spent for minimal results.

In fact, there were a lot of good methods. For instance, using fire to heat the rock surface then using water to cool it immediately would disintegrate the rocks easily.

But this dream realm blessed land did not have fire path dao marks which really troubled Meng Qiu Zhen.

What he was doing now was the same as using a knife to cut a tree.

Several days passed as he continued this laborious grinding, gravel filled the surrounding of the large island. These gravel were ground down by wind and water, they were tiny and smooth like mini cobblestones.

The work on the first large island was completed, Meng Qiu Zhen then worked on the second large island.

Rainwater had gathered into a sea around the islands.

In actuality, it could not be considered a sea, it was at most a large lake.

Meng Qiu Zhen did not bother to create waves normally, so the water surface was smooth as a mirror. Only when he needed to crush the firm rocks or step on water to as a traveling method would he take the initiative to raise the wind and waves.

This blessed land did not not have space path dao marks, it was not large and Meng Qiu Zhen could not teleport even as a land spirit.

Time passed by as the small islands were remodeled.After Meng Qiu Zhen finished remodeling all the large islands and even seven-eight small islands, he welcomed the fire path calamity.

Fire rain fell heavily.

Every drop of fire rain was the size of a wash basin, countless fire raindrops struck with a huge momentum

The fire rain fell on the islands, the rocky ground and gravel burned intensely. Some thin gravel even melted, turning into lava that slowly flowed towards the water.

Gradually, the rock islands with towering edges began to transform under the devastating fire rain. All the peripheral areas of the islands got submerged under water, the middle part was level with the lake surface, while the upper part was slightly higher, forming a beach made of gravel.

Most of the fire rain landed on the water, creating towering steam. The vapor rose and gradually formed thick clouds that covered the whole blessed land.

Meng Qiu Zhen was hiding under the ground where there were dense earth path dao marks as he had the ability to move underground as a land spirit.

He let the fire rain wreak havoc while occasionally keeping an eye on the rock islands.

The fire rain lasted for a long time before dissipating.

Meng Qiu Zhen returned above ground and sensed that the temperature had risen by several times while the air was moist and hot.

The whole blessed land was covered with thick clouds. As there was a large fire rain just now, the clouds looked like a burning blanket.

How could it not be hot?

Meng Qiu Zhen used wind to blow away these clouds which immediately cooled the atmosphere.

However, shortly after, steam condensed in the sky again, forming light clouds. It would probably form back into the thick cloud layer after some time.

Meng Qiu Zhen immediately realized that the fire path calamity brought a large number of fire path dao marks. He needed to restrain most of the fire path dao marks and could let them interfere with his arrangements.

“If there is a large number of light path dao marks, I can gather most of the fire path dao marks into an artificial sun.”

Meng Qiu Zhen felt some pity.

This dream realm blessed land had light path dao marks but they were so few that the blessed land had always been dimly lit.

The plan to create a sun was not possible but Meng Qiu Zhen had other methods.

Immediately, he activated create dream killer move, and after going through ten or so procedures, most of the fire path dao marks were gathered in the depths of the roots of the large islands.

Fire path dao marks were restrained by the even denser earth path dao marks, forming magma inside the large islands.

Outside of the islands, the temperature fell down rapidly because of the decrease in fire path dao marks. The light clouds that were floating in the sky would no longer accumulate by itself.

“There is no artificial sun so there won’t be hot weather, but with magma, there is geothermal energy which can be used similarly.”

As long as Meng Qiu Zhen used the strength path dao marks, he could trigger a reaction to turn the large islands into live volcanoes that shoot out qi currents before exploding with flowing lava and a large amount of ash.

Meng Qiu Zhen’s mind jolted as he had a sudden realization.

“My blessed land does not have qi path dao marks or sound path dao marks, but when the volcanoes erupt, they will shoot out qi currents and create loud explosions. Previously, the fire rain hit the lake and created steam clouds but there were no cloud path dao marks here.”

“This is probably the origin of the ability to mimic other paths!”

When a Gu cultivator cultivates a path to a certain level, they can imitate the power of other paths and reach a comprehensive balance.

For instance, the wood path killer move fleeting bloom imitated the power of time path.

Bai Xiang killer move belonged to ice and snow path but had transformation path power.

Stone throw inquiry killer move was an earth path move but had information path effect.

After comprehending this truth, a portion of the true meaning of this dream realm was absorbed by Meng Qiu Zhen. His heaven path attainment level increased slightly which synchronized with the main body and other clones.

Meng Qiu Zhen inspected himself and found that although he had become a land spirit, he could not completely control the dao marks of every path.

Land spirits controlled heavenly power but were only a portion of the immortal aperture’s accumulation.

For instance, Meng Qiu Zhen went to painstaking efforts to crush the rocks, it was in essence loosening a lump of earth path dao marks and separating them.

If Meng Qiu Zhen had full control over earth path dao marks, he could turn the firm rocks into sand with just a thought.

Land spirits controlled heavenly power but their usage of it was only at the superficial level. Moreover, he had to use wind, water, and other forces to crush the rocks.

So how could he deepen this control?

More specifically speaking, how could he turn the firm rocks into sand?

Meng Qiu Zhen immediately thought of turn sand Gu.

This Gu could turn earth and rocks into fine sand.

He then thought of many killer moves of different paths that could turn the rocks into sand.

In an instant, Meng Qiu Zhen’s perception of killer moves and Gu worms became different.

He could not put it in words or explain it.

These insights accumulated in his mind and were slightly inferior to the previous comprehension. Only a thorough comprehension would increase his heaven path attainment level.

Heaven path dream realms were different from the past dream realms.

To absorb the true meaning in the heaven path dream realms, one had to develop the dream realm blessed land while also comprehending the truth of the operations of heaven and earth.

This made it difficult.

When Fang Yuan explored human path dream realms[. The new theory of Feng Jin Huang, it can be of any path as long as it is a human dream.], he only needed to explore them to a certain degree to raise his attainment levels.

Exploration of heaven path dream realms only maintained a close connection between the person and the heaven path true meaning, this link needed to be comprehended to raise the attainment level.

“After all, there is a thin line separating the heaven path dream realm and the human.”

Just as Meng Qiu Zhen was thinking, the world turned upside down.

The whole blessed land shook intensely and turned upside down; the lake overturned and gushed backwards while the islands flew and crashed with each other.

“What... what’s going on?!” Meng Qiu Zhen’s expression changed. The suddenly disorder in the dream realm gave him a huge pressure.

Meng Qiu Zhen quickly activated Dream Armor to protect himself.

Fortunately, the dream realm's shaking only lasted for a while before calming.

Meng Qiu Zhen's expression was pale. It was very fortunate that he had dream armor Gu and he chose to explore a mid-size heaven path dream realm instead of being greedy.

If not for this, he would have died in this calamity.

"This is not a development of the heaven path dream realm but an interference from the outside world! It is probably a venerable who made the move."

Meng Qiu Zhen thought as he looked at the ruins in front of him, smiling bitterly at the scene of the disorderly blessed land.

His hard work and effort were all wasted!

"If this attack occurs few times more, I won't be able to continue exploring. The calamities and tribulations will become increasingly strong. Sigh, hopefully, my main body can protect me."

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2313: Heavenly Ghost Concealment

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's killer move was called chaotic intent dispels dream.

It was a wisdom path killer move but included a large number of dream path mortal Gu to imitate the power of dream path, it could influence dream realms.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable deduced this move to counter Fang Yuan's dream realm methods.

In the past, Fang Yuan had self-detonated Pure Dream Reality Seeker bodies to create dream realms in battles, and with most methods in the world being ineffective against dream realms, Fang Yuan was able to succeed time and again.

Afterwards, when Fang Yuan wanted to collect these dream realms, he would use pure dream reality seeker transformation killer move to transform the dream realms into clones and take them away.

But this situation could not happen after chaotic intent dispels dream killer move was used.

The dream path mortal Gu in chaotic intent dispels dream only had the function of a key, the true method was still wisdom path.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used the wisdom path method to disturb the will and emotions contained in the dream realm to make them chaotic.

Whether it be the human path dream realms or heaven path dream realms, they contained human wills and emotions, or heaven's will.

When these wills and emotions turn chaotic, dream realms—especially the orderly dream realms—would lose their order and turn chaotic. The Gu cultivator who was exploring the dream realm would be met with calamity like a fish that entered water which had started to boil.

Once the Pure Dream Reality Seeker Physique bodies were struck by this move, their stable human bodies would turn back into dream realms. Their human wills, emotions, and so on would turn disorderly along with the dream realms and be unable to think.

Meng Qiu Zhen who entered with his body and soul would be torn into pieces by the chaotic dream realm as time passed.

Fortunately, Fang Yuan stopped this in time, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was forced to stop the move which allowed Meng Qiu Zhen to escape disaster.

As for the efforts in remodeling the dream realm blessed land turning to waste, they were already minor details.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable flew back while avoiding Fang Yuan’s attacks and observing the heaven path dream realm.

When she saw the heaven path dream realm that swallowed Meng Qiu Zhen returning to its previous self and not having any other abnormal changes, she knew Meng Qiu Zhen was still alive.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sighed inwardly.

Deducing this chaotic intent dispels dream was already the limit of her ability.

It was because dream path restricted her.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was almost a blank slate in dream path, she also did not have any dream path Immortal Gu and had to use a large number of dream path mortal Gu as replacement. She fully relied on her terrifying wisdom path foundation to raise the killer move to rank eight level!

She wanted to do more but she was powerless.

This was the reason she could not save Fairy Zi Wei and Ying Wu Xie who were trapped in heaven path dream realms. At most, she could use this killer move to kill them.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable needed a living Spectral Soul clone, there was no meaning in killing him.

She, however, wanted to kill Meng Qiu Zhen.

But chaotic intent dispels dream’s activation needed to be maintained, if she was disturbed by Fang Yuan in this process, she would suffer a backlash which was dangerous.

Fang Yuan attacked intensely, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s method made him anxious. He could only observe closely and not give her any chance to continue activating the killer move.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable attacked crazily from the side.

Fang Yuan’s attention was mainly on Star Constellation Immortal Venerable so he could only try to dodge Giant Sun’s attacks.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was aggressive and had plenty of battle experience, most of his attacks still landed on Fang Yuan’s body.

Fang Yuan had reverse flow protection seal but Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s lingering scrap luck was too troublesome so he canceled the move and relied on heavenly web protection veil to defend himself.

This was a genuine rank nine killer move with the amplification of Fang Yuan’s heaven path dao marks, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s attacks did not achieve anything.

No matter how mysterious and ingenious or grand and majestic Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s attacks were, they were treated as non-existent when they struck Fang Yuan.

“What kind of defensive method is this?!” The more Giant Sun Immortal Venerable fought, the more shaken he was. Even his face started to shake.

The tighter Fang Yuan’s defense was, the more Giant Sun Immortal Venerable wanted to see through him. But obscured heavenly secret had merged with heavenly web protection veil, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s investigative methods were all thwarted by obscured heavenly secret.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable could not see through him, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was the same.

The two venerables felt increasingly suspicious.

Fang Yuan was defending against Star Constellation Immortal Venerable while transmitting his voice to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to help him and attack Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, emphasizing on Heavenly Court’s strength.

Moreover, he promised Giant Sun Immortal Venerable that if he did this, he would innovate even more blood path Immortal Gu and blood path research results, he would give them to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable immediately felt much better, if Fang Yuan was making such a big concession, it meant he probably could not hold on for long.

But his attacks became even stronger as he transmitted his voice: ”Fang Yuan, you are too modest, you are probably the strongest among us three venerables currently! Not to mention anything else, just your defensive method actually made us helpless.”

Fang Yuan quickly said: ”This killer move uses secluded domain of heaven and earth—City Well—as the core, Giant Sun, you have no rank nine killer move currently, how can you break it? Since you can’t break it, why make things difficult for me and let Star Constellation Immortal Venerable obtain the biggest benefits?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable slowed down his attacks.

In his mind, he thought: ’Fang Yuan is doing his best to convince me and speaking so submissively, he may really be at his limit. He has the least immortal essence, his killer moves are so terrifying, how can they not expend a lot of immortal essence?’

‘I will slow down my attacks and let him catch a breather so he can continue this battle of attrition with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!’

‘As for the heaven path dream realms, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable almost succeeded just earlier. How can Fang Yuan absorb so many heaven path dream realms in a short time?’

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable saw Giant Sun Immortal Venerable slowing his attacks, she immediately had a bad feeling and inwardly cursed Giant Sun while transmitting her voice to him.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable told Giant Sun that attainment levels were the most difficult to progress in, since Fang Yuan was so determined on developing in heaven path, these heaven path dreams were of huge help to him. How could they watch as he succeeds?

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made a perfunctory reply.

The fight of the three venerables continued in a stalemate, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable continued to persuade: ”Giant Sun, look at Heaven Refining Demon Venerable. His situation is the worst but is already fighting me to a draw. What will happen if he has enough immortal essence in the future?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable sighed as he replied: ”What you say makes sense. But...”

He sighed again as he hesitated to speak.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s eyelids twitched slightly, she knew she had to give benefits to make Giant Sun Immortal Venerable take action.

She did not hesitate as she immediately handed many blood path research results to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable through treasure yellow heaven.

After obtaining the benefits, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable attacked Fang Yuan madly once again.

Fang Yuan sighed inwardly.

He knew that the strength he exposed had already touched the bottom-line of the two venerables. If he crossed it by even a little, the two venerables would ally even more closely.

This would incur an unfavorable loss.

Immediately, Fang Yuan shouted loudly: ”You guys forced me!”

The moment he finished speaking, he activated a killer move, turning into a spiral light rainbow that zoomed past the battlefield.

The two venerables were stunned before their expressions changed. They understood Fang Yuan’s evil intention as they quickly used their methods to obstruct the spiral rainbow.

The two venerables lacked tacit coordination, they attacked at the same time which instead left Fang Yuan unharmed.

Fang Yuan did not receive any attacks. He immediately retreated and pulled apart some distance from the two venerables before using a killer move to fly out of the battlefield.

The two venerables could only try to obstruct him again.

This time, they communicated with each other and there was no loophole like before.

But like this, Fang Yuan had the initiative instead.

The two venerables felt stifled as Fang Yuan was headed towards Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

In the fight of the three venerables, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s inactivity was a good thing to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. Fang Yuan had evil intentions, he wanted to anger this venerable and bring him over to create chaos while he looked to gain benefits.

The confrontation lasted for a while but the two venerables could not stop him every time, eventually, Fang Yuan managed to hit Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had lost his rationality, he was a venerable but was closer to being a soul beast.

After being angered, he immediately charged into the battlefield of the three venerables.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could only helplessly face him.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable did not care who was who, anyone that was before him needed to be dealt with!

Over this period, his strength had increased by a lot and was no longer in the previously weak state. The three venerables needed to be much more careful than before when fighting Spectral Soul.

Spectral Soul’s attacks were grand and ferocious, he even activated killer moves from time to time.

The three venerables did not want to provoke this lunatic. They had to fight each other as well; in short, the situation was extremely chaotic.

The chaotic battlefield was the most beneficial to Fang Yuan as he could finally take a breather. If the previous situation continued, his obscured heavenly secret would not have been able to last for long.

Immediately, he took advantage of the chaos to activate obscured heavenly secret twice on himself without leaking even a trace of their aura.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable kept on planning and finally grasped the chance, luring Spectral Soul Demon Venerable into the group of heaven path dream realms.

But the heaven path dream realms did not do anything to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, thwarting Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s plan.

The four venerables fought amidst the heaven path dream realms, as long as it was not a dream path killer move, even venerable killer moves could not harm the heaven path dream realms.

The heaven path dream realms did not attack Spectral Soul Demon Venerable but attacked the other three venerables.

At the same time, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable joined hands to attack Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan needed to attack Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and continue pressuring her to stop her from harming his clone Meng Qiu Zhen.

As for Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he attacked no matter who it was. The heaven path dream realms were not an exception, but his attacks were ineffective on them.

This chaotic scene lasted for fifteen minutes, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gradually gained an upper hand.

She was a wisdom path Gu Immortal who was proficient in planning, a chaotic situation meant she had much more factors to calculate. When she started adapting and was clear of various factors, she could make use of the surrounding environment easily.

Discovering that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had repeatedly used the surrounding heaven path dream realms, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, or Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to stop him, Fang Yuan knew it was time to use another trump card.

Immortal killer move — Heavenly Ghost Concealment!

At the next moment, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable directly ignored Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan openly moved past Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s countless hands and reached Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

A fierce killer move dealt a huge blow to the unprepared Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

“Fang Yuan, you...”

“Fang Yuan, impressive, so that was it.”

Star Constellation and Giant Sun were shaken.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2314: I Reside in All Living Beings and Heaven and Earth

Among the many modified killer moves, heavenly ghost concealment was actually the first to be completed.

Since the battle in Crazed Demon Cave where Fang Yuan’s ghostly concealment was restrained, Fang Yuan had the thought of modifying it.

When his heaven path attainment level rose rapidly and had stealing heavenly secret killer move, he modified ghostly concealment into heavenly ghost concealment.

Ghostly concealment killer move itself was at rank nine so there was not much improvement. But after adding in heaven path Gu worms, the previous targeted methods against ghostly concealment became ineffective.

At this time, Fang Yuan’s body was covered by a layer of dark translucent armor and a pale white bone mask covered his face.

[EMPTY]

It was the manifestation of heavenly ghost concealment killer move.

Different from obscured heavenly secret, heavenly ghost concealment’s aura was surging but it seemed to be completely non-existent to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used many methods in a row but they were all ineffective towards Fang Yuan’s heavenly ghost concealment.

“This is a heaven path method which shows Fang Yuan has talents and attainment in this path. Giant Sun, are you still going to watch as Fang Yuan gains these heaven path dream realms and let him gain a boost of strength?” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used this chance to persuade Giant Sun and strengthen his wariness towards Fang Yuan.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable heaved a sigh: ”Fang Yuan can cultivate all paths, once he succeeds in cultivating heaven path, it will form a mystical connection with other paths, and his gains will be inestimable.”

He was persuaded by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and increased the power of his attacks.

Despite this, Fang Yuan’s situation had turned better.

He fought while moving around Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, his main target still Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Immortal killer move — Seven Kills Rainbow!

This compound killer move was used by Fang Yuan repeatedly to disturb Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable tried to use chaotic intent dispels dream killer move again and again; sometimes, she would have just finished preparing the move when Fang Yuan caught up to her, and sometimes, she just activated it but had to cancel it to cope with Fang Yuan’s attacks.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable attacked Fang Yuan but Fang Yuan stayed close to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and dodged slightly to let Spectral Soul Demon Venerable take the attacks.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable took on the attacks and became more furious, going on full offensive. He saw Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable as a thorn in his eyes but ignored Fang Yuan who was using him.

After this stalemate lasted for a long time, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable decisively changed the strategy. She made Giant Sun Immortal Venerable protect her while she looked for a chance to use her killer move.

Fang Yuan’s expression shook slightly.

As the battle continued, these two venerables’ cooperation became even deeper.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable roared as he attacked Star Constellation Immortal Venerable with his countless giant arms.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable gave a shout as he blocked in front of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable; vast golden fog appeared and covered most of the battlefield.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's countless hands slammed into the golden fog and rummaged through them. The golden fog continued to dissipate but was quickly replenished.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had lost his senses, he should have used a killer move at this moment to break through the defense quickly.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable took advantage of this point. Even if Spectral Soul Demon Venerable used a killer move, it might not be the correct choice.

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh, he had no choice but to use another card.

Immortal killer move — Arrival of Dragon Snake with Dust Fog and Explosive Soul Wind!

Fang Yuan pointed at Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable immediately wailed mournfully, one hundred of his large black arms suddenly twisted and turned into dragons and snakes that breathed out dust and dense fog. They then exploded, forming countless wind blades that destroyed Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's golden fog.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable coughed out a huge mouthful of blood, his defensive method was broken and he suffered a backlash.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was also caught in the move and the chaotic intent dispels dream that was activated for a few breaths of time was forced to stop.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable howled and roared in anger as he charged towards the two venerables. Fang Yuan was hidden by heavenly ghost concealment, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable thought the two venerables had attacked instead.

"A new killer move again! This aura... the core is definitely the secluded domain of heaven and earth—Luo Po Valley." Giant Sun Immortal Venerable grabbed his chest as he healed his injuries while avoiding Spectral Soul Demon Venerable's ghost hands.

"How many killer moves of this level did he deduce?" Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gritted her teeth, her eyes flickered with starlight as she wanted to see through Fang Yuan.

But Fang Yuan was still protected by obscured heavenly secret, she could not see through him no matter what she did.

After Fang Yuan used this move, he looked exhausted and attacked less as if he had expended a lot of immortal essence.

He could not use Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound because the rank seven Dream Armor was given to Meng Qiu Zhen.

Arrival of Dragon Snake with Dust Fog and Explosive Soul Wind was was quite good.

But because it was a compound killer move, involving many paths and Gu worms, Fang Yuan's thoughts were almost emptied. After all, he had to continue maintaining rank nine killer moves, heavenly web protection veil and heavenly ghost concealment. Fortunately, rank nine obscured heavenly secret killer move did not need him to pay attention to it at all times.

One of the disadvantages of compound killer moves was that they expended too much thoughts.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made a clever adjustment but still failed. Meng Qiu Zhen continued to explore the dream realm, providing constant benefits to Fang Yuan’s main body.

Although Fang Yuan’s attacks decreased visibly, he used Arrival of Dragon Snake with Dust Fog and Explosive Soul Wind to repel and suppress the two venerables.

Spectral heaven had just formed, the heavenly wind qi wall was not thick enough, and there were no clouds, the five regions’ Gu Immortals could observe the battle easily.

Looking at Fang Yuan gaining the upper hand, many Gu Immortals of Central Continent and Northern Plains were shocked and worried. Some cursed Fang Yuan for his shamelessness; some prayed for the righteous path; while some were shaken by the demonic might, their face turned deathly pale.

As for the Eastern Sea Gu Immortals, joy showed on their faces.

“Damn it, if my Blood Sea was completed and I had a blood path killer move of such a level, why would I fear Fang Yuan’s methods?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable gritted his teeth, his stifled emotions accumulated to the limit, finally making him use his full strength!

Luck path killer move — I Reside in All Living Beings and Heaven and Earth!

After Giant Sun Immortal Venerable activated this move, a giant pillar of light formed immediately. The light pillar was dazzlingly golden and stood majestically between heaven and earth, it was tens of thousands of feet tall and was very thick.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable stood inside the golden light pillar, his two hands and legs were spread apart to the sides.

His hair fluttered, his face distorted ferociously as he screamed, veins bulged over his whole body as if he was in extreme pain.

When the killer move was activated, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s attacks were all blocked by the golden light pillar. Fang Yuan tried to attack but found that if he attacked the golden light pillar once, his luck would shake and even showed a sign of being absorbed by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Fang Yuan made a wise decision to stop his action.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, what did you do?” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s expression was unsightly as well.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s move was too powerful and even influenced her.

The golden light pillar lasted for a short nine breaths of time before stopping abruptly and dissipating.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s body was covered in a layer of golden radiance. His muscles were bulging, his golden hair fluttered wildly, his entire body seemed to have expanded.

He looked towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. The sharp gaze made even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable narrow her eyes.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable mumbled: ”Star Constellation, do not worry. This move’s range covers the entire five regions, there was no way to avoid you.”

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable roared, raising terrifying black fog that covered the sky.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shouted and breathed out fiercely, forming a boundless hurricane.

The hurricane swept everything, pushing aside the black fog, revealing hundreds of thousands of tadpole like soul balls.

The soul balls exploded around Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable snorted in disdain, that faint golden light barrier was not even the least bit damaged.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s countless hands attacked, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable met the attacks with just fists and kicks.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s ghost hands and dark arms were like eggs thrown at a rock. After the collision, countless golden light specks drilled into the dark arms then shot out, exploding the dark arms.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable began to counterattack, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was immediately suppressed. No matter how madly he counterattacked, he was attacked even more ruthlessly by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Fang Yuan fought with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and found that Giant Sun had gotten a comprehensive boost in offense, defense, movement, and healing.

Fang Yuan was also suppressed but he gradually saw some details: ”This move is probably forcibly extracting external luck and enforcing it on his body. But how large is the range of this move?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s conversation with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable just earlier was done through voice transmission. Fang Yuan did not know this move’s range was so shocking large that it covered the entire five regions!

This move had an even deeper profundity, it could influence heaven and earth luck, as well as all living beings luck, making all the luck revolve around Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

The killer move was called ’I reside in all living beings and heaven and earth’, it truly lived up to its name!

Fang Yuan had Cooking Luck Pot and heavenly web protection veil, his luck was not influenced by this move. But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s defensive methods against luck path were broken by Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and rendered useless.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not express anything for the moment. After all, the urgent thing was to deal with Fang Yuan and kill Meng Qiu Zhen!

After activating the killer move, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s luck rose to an unprecedented level. Adding on his combat system, his strength received a terrifying all-rounded amplification.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was lacking rationality, after attacking madly for a while, he actually showed signs of defeat.

Fang Yuan was not well-off either, but he was still concentrating on Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

In fact, whether Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was strong or not was not crucial. As long as there was no restriction from a battlefield killer move, Fang Yuan was free to advance and retreat.

In Fang Yuan’s opinion, the key factor was still Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

He shouted towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable openly and not through voice transmission: ”Star Constellation, you have a good plan to make me and Giant Sun expend our immortal essence while you stall for time. Can your method even destroy my dream path clone?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sneered: ”If that’s what you think, how about letting me have a try?”

Fang Yuan replied calmly: ”Star Constellation, you are still the more skillful one, you saw through my cautious mind and that I won’t dare to take a risk in this matter. In that case, I have no choice but to resort to other methods.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable were immediately vigilant.

Since the start, the killer moves Fang Yuan revealed were extremely shocking and powerful. Especially his defensive method, the two venerables were still unable to see through it.

The two venerables were paying close attention for a while but did not see Fang Yuan using any more methods.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable chuckled: ”Fang Yuan, just a verbal threat does not mean anything.”

Fang Yuan laughed heartily: ”I have used this method long ago. Speaking of it, Star Constellation’s star array calculation formation is really vast and amazing. Such a pity, it is such a pity, it was constructed in a hurry and is going to be destroyed just as quickly as well.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable immediately frowned.

At the same time.

Central Continent.

Outside of the star array calculation formation.

Qi Sea Ancestor appeared.

Rumble...

His qi path killer move activated. At the next moment, heaven and earth shook as boundless qi surged and pressed down on the star array calculation formation.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2315: Nothing is Certain Except Success

Ever since the sun was destroyed, five regions and two heavens fell into deep darkness.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who was burning with blue, eerie fire could never replace the sun. Because what he gave the world were not vitality and warmth, but coldness and killing intent.

In this darkness, the countless stars shining in the sky of Central Continent became a consolation for the mortals.

However, right now, these dazzling starlights were being attacked!

Vast and surging qi currents submerged the boundless starlight.

Qi Sea Ancestor waved his sleeves as he slowly flew in the air and continued his attacks with an indifferent expression.

He was one of the arrangements Fang Yuan made when he deployed troops before. Right now, he immediately acted after receiving the main body’s message.

The space inside star array calculation formation was in an uproar.

There were many Gu Immortals stationed here.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable arranged many Gu Immortals here because star array calculation formation was fragile.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was aware that star array calculation formation which was constructed in just a short period was Heavenly Court’s weakness and would become other venerables’ target.

So she also left Embroidered Tower and Star Constellation Chessboard in this formation!

“Qi Sea Ancestor appeared at the northeast side, he extinguished three thousand eight hundred and seventy-one stars with one move.”

“Urgent report! Fang Yuan’s enslavement path clone Wu Shuai appeared at the northwest side and destroyed two thousand six hundred and sixty-four stars.”

Star Constellation’s will inside Embroidered Tower was just about to send orders when the whole formation space shook fiercely.

She then heard the Gu Immortals in charge of information shout in panic: ”Zhan Bu Du, Zhan Bu Du appeared! He is attacking from the south and is coming straight towards us!”

“Zhan Bu Du?” Star Constellation’s will immediately controlled her thoughts to take a look through the star array calculation formation. She saw a bright-looking young man wearing a large blood-red cape. His momentum was like a tiger coming out of the mountain or a mad dragon descending upon the world, his attacks produced explosive sounds as he moved forward.

Star Constellation’s will sighed.

There were already clues from Fang clan’s situation about Fang Yuan being able to revive Gu Immortals. Zhan Bu Du’s revival did not surprise Star Constellation’s will.

But she was a bit troubled in this situation.

Qi Sea Ancestor and Zhan Bu Du had pseudo venerable battle strength while Wu Shuai was a peak rank eight expert. In this aspect, Heavenly Court lacked elite experts that could match them.

Qing Chou could be considered one but was guarding Divine Emperor City at this moment. Based on strategical importance, Divine Emperor City was much more important than star array calculation formation.

As for Qin Ding Ling, Che Wei, and the rest, they were experts among rank eights but were still lacking compared to Qi Sea and Zhan Bu Du.

“Fang Yuan can revive Gu Immortals while preserving their cultivation level. If so, where are his variant human rank eight subordinates hiding now?

The situation was not clear, Star Constellation’s will decided to play it safe and prioritize defending star array calculation formation.

Star Constellation’s will personally controlled star array calculation formation; in an instant, dazzling starlight shone.

Qi Sea Ancestor and Wu Shuai had to close their eyes and use investigative killer moves. Only Zhan Bu Du who had a very strong body opened his eyes wide without any worries.

Starlight dimmed quickly, Qi Sea Ancestor, Wu Shuai, and Zhan Bu Du’s vision changed suddenly, they found themselves on a large chessboard.

“This is... Star Constellation Chessboard?”

“Hmph! This star array calculation formation and Star Constellation Chessboard can mutually support each other.”

“Not only this, it probably has Embroidered Tower’s help as well!”

Fang Yuan’s three clones conversed secretly while attacking madly.

Explosions rang, star array calculation formation shook intensely but it was able to barely hold on with the help of Embroidered Tower and Star Constellation Chessboard.

“This is not good, if the situation falls into a stalemate, how can we help our main body pressure Star Constellation Immortal Venerable?” Qi Sea Ancestor’s heart sank slightly.

The other two knew this was not good and strengthened their attacks.

Spectral heaven.

The fight of the four venerables was continuing.

Fang Yuan’s clones made a move but were blocked by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s arrangements. However, Fang Yuan’s situation was improving quickly.

His situation was troubling earlier because Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used his full strength.

But the situation was changing now because of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable as well.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s battle strength was falling constantly.

Although the killer move—I reside in all living beings and heaven and earth—was very strong, it forcibly extracted external luck. It was like a rootless tree or a sourceless body of water; the more it was used, the less would remain.

Not only this, when the effect of this move dissipate completely, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's luck would fall into a weakened state which would last for a while before it goes back to normal.

The news of star array calculation formation being attacked was already known by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable at the very first moment.

But she could not go back to reinforce it.

The moment she did that, she would fall into Fang Yuan's trap. At that time, why would Giant Sun Immortal Venerable be willing to fight against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and Fang Yuan alone?

If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable blindly cared about Heavenly Court's benefits, it would definitely put a crack in the two venerables' alliance. After all, Giant Sun was not a Heavenly Court venerable, he did not share the same sentiments as Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, this alliance was just because of the situation.

In fact, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable suspected that if she were to go back to reinforce Central Continent, Fang Yuan would give chase.

Among the venerables, only Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could pose a threat to Meng Qiu Zhen. Fang Yuan would directly bring the battlefield to Central Continent which was even more harmful to Central Continent.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable defended against Fang Yuan's constant interference while inwardly sighing at his craftiness and understanding of the human heart, choosing a perfect time for his clones to make a move.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also tried using other killer moves to attack Fang Yuan.

Although Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was strong, he had lost his senses and was only an annoyance. Fang Yuan was still the crucial factor and the biggest threat!

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's constant attempts showed no visible effects.

Fang Yuan used Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to protect himself, his battle tactic was shallow but it had an excellent effect.

The four venerables' chaotic battle lasted for a while longer. Seeing that 'I reside in all living beings and heaven and earth' killer move was decreasing in effect, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had no choice but to activate this move again.

In an instant, golden light pillar appeared once again. It spanned across heaven and earth, it was grand, magnificent, and extremely dazzling.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable's luck strengthened once again and his battle strength rose to the previous state.

I reside in all living beings and heaven and earth killer move could be used continuously but its after-effects would increase subsequently. Right now, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was in a position from which he could not retreat, his whole combat system was based on his positive luck. If his luck was low, his battle strength would reduced significantly.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable naturally did not want to reveal the flaw of this move when he was using it for the first time.

Fang Yuan saw Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s aura rising again, he immediately retreated and used Spectral Soul Demon Venerable as a shield to block the attacks.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s clenched his teeth in hatred as he saw Fang Yuan’s action.

He knew that if he did not do something, the previous situation would replay, so he immediately used another trump card.

Luck path killer move — Nothing is Certain Except Success!

Golden light flickered on Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s body. The golden light slowly rose above his head and turned into an amber jade sphere.

The amber jade sphere’s aura was extremely powerful, even Fang Yuan and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable felt their hearts palpitate.

Next, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable gave a low shout and fiercely struck the amber jade sphere with his head.

The amber jade sphere shot off towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan knew how terrifying this move was when he saw that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s surging luck had mostly dissipated and nearly went back to its original state.

He could not immediately decipher the profundities in this move so he did not take this move head-on, instead dodging behind Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had no fear as he swatted the amber jade sphere far away with one hand.

The amber jade sphere was like a ball that directly fell from spectral heaven.

“What?” Fang Yuan and Star Constellation were slightly astonished.

This move had such a terrifying aura but it was actually suppressed so easily?

“Giant Sun...” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable directly expressed her concern.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable smiled, replying confidently: ”Star Constellation, please watch. This move is extraordinarily profound. It is created using self luck, all living being’s luck, and heaven and earth luck. It is not restricted by the usual concept of offense and defense but uses the variables in heaven and earth and all living beings to form a result that will astonish both of us. It is just that this move needs some time to show its power.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable heard this reply and immediately asked the crucial question: ”Then how long does it need to show an effect?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s expression stiffened: ”The time is... not fixed.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable: ”...”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable continued: ”This move has already been used, you don’t need to worry about it. Why don’t you attack Fang Yuan with me?”

He then pounced at Fang Yuan.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable glanced at the amber jade sphere before coordinating with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable as they flew around Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and attacked Fang Yuan.

The amber jade sphere encountered a large soul beast army on its descent. After piercing through hundreds of soul beasts, its aura fell by ten percent and its direction also changed slightly.

It continued to fall, its aura dropping by another ten percent as it pierced through the heavenly wind qi wall. After it reached the sky of Central Continent, it directly shot into star array calculation formation.

Star Constellation’s will was controlling Star Constellation Chessboard and star array calculation formation to deal with Fang Yuan’s three clones.

The two sides were still in a stalemate when suddenly, the luck path killer move that looked like an amber egg intruded the inside of the starry chessboard.

“What is this?!” Qi Sea Ancestor and the group were immediately vigilant.

“Oh no.” Star Constellation’s will’s expression changed intensely.

Be it star array calculation formation or Star Constellation Chessboard, they were both wisdom path methods characterized by delicate and complicated calculations.

But the amber jade sphere was the congregation of luck path, it was a huge variable.

The amber jade sphere entered Star Constellation Chessboard and immediately disturbed the whole battlefield. It continuously absorbed and repelled all kinds of arrangements made by Star Constellation’s will, making everything turn chaotic.

Star Constellation’s will quickly tried to suppress the variables and maintain the battlefield but she could not avoid showing certain loopholes as a result.

Fang Yuan’s three clones were joyous and immediately grabbed this chance to attack the loopholes.

A while later.

There was a huge explosion. The vision of Fang Yuan’s clones changed suddenly as they reappeared in the sky above Central Continent.

A small portion of Star Constellation Chessboard was destroyed and Star Constellation’s will immediately stored it in Embroidered Tower.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2316: Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s Explanation

Spectral heaven battlefield.

Boom!

Seven kills rainbow attacked, while starlight shone around Star Constellation Immortal Venerable as she dodged.

She was about to counterattack, when she saw Fang Yuan hiding beside Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. Since the battle started, this situation had already occurred about a hundred times.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was no longer as peeved as she was at first. She looked at Giant Sun Immortal Venerable being attacked by hundreds of Spectral Soul’s giant hands and activated a killer move, destroying tens of black hands rapidly.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used the chance to get past the encirclement of the giant hands. Being suddenly attacked, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable changed his target to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

“Star Constellation, lure the attention of Spectral Soul while I go and capture Fang Yuan!” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable said quickly when he saw this. He then turned into golden light that moved rapidly past Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and towards Fang Yuan.

However, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted coldly, she did not stay to stall Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, leaving a star avatar while her true body retreated.

The star avatar was instantly destroyed by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he then turned around and attacked Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was entrapped once again and quickly transmitted his voice to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable with some doubts: ”Star Constellation, what are you doing?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable directly gave Giant Sun Immortal Venerable the details of what happened in the star array calculation formation, she questioned: ”Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, how do you explain this?”

“This...” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable laughed awkwardly as he realized what happened, ”Have you heard of the luck path theory, that luck turns better after hitting rock-bottom and that fortune and misfortune coexist? This luck path killer move works like that. After it is activated, I lose all control over it. I have no idea how it will work and what effect it will show.”

“The star array calculation formation is not destroyed, this is only a small mishap. Good luck comes after bad luck, this mishap will create a huge fortune in the near future! We should be expectant.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sneered: ”Using my mishap to exchange for your fortune? Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, is this what you are saying?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable choked on his words and could only say: ”I will compensate you for all the direct losses, but how about we discuss the specific amount after the fight?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable nodded at Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and continued to fight alongside him.

She chose to believe Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

In her opinion, although Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s standpoint was different from Heavenly Court, he placed great importance on family and had clear morals, he cherished his descendants and was very protective of them.

There was a clear difference between him and Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan had no limits and needed to be guarded against, his promises could not be trusted. But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s words were believable to a degree.

Especially when this compensation was not the important thing.

Naturally, the important thing was that in this situation, a single venerable would not be able to deal with Fang Yuan.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not stand by and watch Fang Yuan absorb all the heaven path dream realms.

At the star array calculation formation.

Qi Sea Ancestor stirred up countless qi currents that were hard to block. Zhan Bu Du charged forward like a dragon and no one was able to stop him. Wu Shuai controlled countless ants to infiltrate and tear the whole star array calculation formation apart.

Inside Embroidered Tower, Star Constellation’s will did everything to repair Star Constellation Chessboard, while controlling Embroidered Tower to help the star array calculation formation.

The star array calculation formation had very low offensive and defensive capabilities, if not for this, Giant Sun and Fang Yuan would not have stayed still as Star Constellation Immortal Venerable constructed such a formation.

Despite the help of Embroidered Tower and having the Gu Immortals inside the formation space do their best to control and repair it, the star array calculation formation was still crumbling under the fierce attacks of Fang Yuan’s three clones.

Finally, several formation cores were exposed.

“These formation cores have Immortal Gu. They are quite mysterious, my ants cannot infiltrate them.” Wu Shuai transmitted his voice.

Qi Sea Ancestor and Zhan Bu Du each made an attempt but failed as well.

These formation cores were covered in starlight and it was hard to tell if they were real or fake. The attacks of Fang Yuan’s clones had no effect and only shook the starlight intensely.

“This probably is a phantom path method. I can’t do anything.” Zhan Bu Du shrugged.

He mainly relied on incomplete freedom transformation, so he was strong in charging and breaking enemy formations, but was not good at other aspects.

Qi Sea Ancestor frowned. At this difficult time, he glanced at the amber jade sphere.

After this amber jade sphere damaged Star Constellation Chessboard, its aura and radiance had dimmed by a lot, its size shrank by sixty percent, leaving only twenty percent of its initial size.

“How about we make use of this yellow egg killer move from Giant Sun Immortal Venerable?” Qi Sea Ancestor had already obtained the information from the main body.

He communicated with the other two clones and arranged a battle tactic.

Zhan Bu Du and Wu Shuai lured the attention of Star Constellation’s will, while Qi Sea Ancestor used his qi path giant hand to grab the amber jade sphere and throw it towards the nearest formation core.

Black Heaven Temple’s Gu Immortal Zhang Ji was in charge of this formation core. He saw the amber jade sphere approaching the formation core and quickly called for help.

Star Constellation’s will noticed this and immediately made a move. Embroidered Tower shot out countless dao marks at the amber jade sphere, deviating its path away from the formation core, causing it to stop nearby.

The Gu worms near the formation core were affected by the amber jade sphere and turned chaotic.

Zhang Ji was just about to suppress this emerging problem when Fang Yuan’s three clones started attacking wantonly.

Embroidered Tower tried to defend with all its strength but the turbulence still affected other Gu worms. Originally, whether these mortal Gu died or destabilized would not have been an issue.

As long as the Immortal Gu in the formation core was safe, it was okay to just replace the mortal Gu that were lost.

But the actual situation was different.

The destabilization and destruction of the surrounding mortal Gu formed minor variables that accumulated rapidly, until they threatened the Immortal Gu in the formation core.

Zhang Ji’s effort to stabilize the situation instead assisted in this.

Then, under his incredulous gaze, the Immortal Gu in the formation core shattered directly.

The Immortal Gu in the formation cores of the star array calculation formation were originally intact, covering up for each other and closely connected. Now that one formation core suddenly crumbled apart, it immediately revealed a huge flaw in the entire formation.

Fang Yuan’s three clones attacked fiercely, Star Constellation’s will could not consider anything else and had to concentrate fully on protecting the star array calculation formation.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, how do you explain this now?!” In spectral heaven, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable questioned again.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable sighed: ”I will compensate you!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable snorted coldly: ”Is this just an issue of compensation?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable sighed again: ”Please calm down, the most important thing now is to stop Fang Yuan. Do I look like someone who can’t understand the situation? Once this move is activated, it really is out of my control. We can only watch as it plays out.”

“Your move helped Fang Yuan’s clones and is already expended, it has disappeared completely. How can it trouble Fang Yuan’s clones now?”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable laughed heartily: ”It only disappeared on the surface, the real variables are invisible, and have already started to affect and change the world and all living beings.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s mind shook slightly, she was deducing and deepening her understanding of the killer move nothing is certain except success.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had shocking talent, this move went beyond common sense and was not in the category of any offensive killer move in history, it was new and unique.

“Then I shall wait and see.” With the enemy in front, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could only compromise.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable let out a sigh of relief in actuality.

He finally could relax now that the amber jade sphere had disappeared: ”Even if Heavenly Court suffers losses from this move in the future, there won’t be any evidence.”

“This move triggers variables in a way that is most beneficial to me. Looks like Heavenly Court is my main enemy currently which is why this move did not affect Fang Yuan, instead helping him to deal with Heavenly Court!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable tried to figure out the situation.

In the space inside the star array calculation formation, Gu Immortal Zhang Ji coughed out a mouthful of blood, his face was extremely pale.

He used all his strength to protect the formation core but still failed in the end.

Fang Yuan’s three clones had already latched onto the weakness and began to increase their battle achievements.

Originally, the star array calculation formation was perfect, thanks to phantom path, Fang Yuan’s three clones were not able to attack it easily. But now that they had made a crucial breakthrough, there was a hole in the perfect structure and they started to attack using it.

A Gu Immortal in charge of healing arrived in front of Zhang Ji and began to treat him.

Zhang Ji was downcast as he berated himself while coughing blood: ”I am unworthy of Heavenly Court’s support and Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s trust, I lost the formation core!”

The healer Gu Immortal consoled him: ”This was all due to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s killer move, it is not your fault.”

Zhang Ji had an incredulous expression: ”This luck path killer move is truly insidious, it connected all the variables and expanded them until even the formation core Immortal Gu was harmed.”

It was like a scale where if one end was weighed down, the other end would rise. The formation cores’ Immortal Gu and the surrounding mortal Gu were like an integral whole made from countless carrying poles.

But instead of raising one end when the other was pushed down, another weight was added to suppress the rising end, these two variables canceled each other.

Nothing is certain except success acted the opposite way, it united the power of all the variables, thus destroying the formation core’s Immortal Gu.

After healing for a while, Zhang Ji’s situation was finally stable.

Over this period, another three formation cores of the star array calculation formation were destroyed by Fang Yuan’s clones.

“This is all my fault!” Zhang Ji blamed himself even more, he felt that the situation was crumbling apart.

But at this time, another Gu Immortal arrived beside him.

This was a formation path grandmaster: ”The situation is urgent, I came to repair the formation and will need your assistance.”

Zhang Ji quickly cupped his fists in greeting, expressing he would stake everything to help.

Although the formation core’s Immortal Gu was destroyed, this formation path grandmaster could use immortal materials, to set up a formation that could temporarily replace the position of the destroyed formation core’s Immortal Gu.

It was not easy to construct the star array calculation formation, Star Constellation’s will was not willing to see it be destroyed. Central Continent’s ten great sects’ Gu Immortals had tasted the benefits of this formation and were also not willing to see its destruction.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2317: Eight-Desolate Sword Leaf Tree

The formation grandmaster calculated with all his efforts, after a while, he said with perspiration running down his face: ”I need five hundred kilograms of rank eight immortal material, heavy sand, to temporarily cover the shortage of this formation core.”

Zhang Ji’s heart sank, heavy sand was a specialty product of Western Desert and was not produced in other four regions. How could he collect such a large amount of heavy sand at this moment?

Just as Zhang Ji was worried, the formation grandmaster let out a breath of turbid air and said: ”You can get heavy sand from Heavenly Court’s storage, but I need someone to go to spectral heaven and pour at least two hundred and fifty kilograms from top to bottom. At that time, we will cooperate with that person from inside the formation and fill the hole.”

“I will go!” Zhang Ji immediately said.

The formation grandmaster shook his head, saying directly: ”Your injuries have only been suppressed and you are too weak. If you rashly exit the formation, you will be killed by those three demons easily. Those three demons will gain clues and know the approximate location of this formation space!”

“Then what should we do?” Zhang Ji sighed bitterly.

The formation grandmaster was slightly dazed as he received Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s instructions, saying: ”Alright, be it immortal materials or manpower, Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable will personally make arrangements. Zhang Ji, use this time to heal your injuries quickly. I will go to the next formation core and prepare the method to fix it.”

The formation grandmaster left hurriedly.

Zhang Ji looked at his receding figure before turning to observe his surroundings, only seeing chaos and commotion in the formation space. The Gu Immortals who were stationed here were running everywhere.

Even with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s will personally attending to this place, Fang Yuan’s three clones posed a huge threat to them.

Zhang Ji could deeply feel his powerlessness, he sighed helplessly and started healing his injuries.

Western Desert.

Lin clan’s blessed land headquarters.

Lin clan’s first supreme elder, the number one Gu Immortal in the present Western Desert, Lin Jian Xing walked out of the blessed land with Nine Spiritual Fairy.

“I wish you a smooth journey.” Lin Jian Xing smiled.

Heavenly Court wanted Lin Jian Xing’s body to create Bo Qing and restrain Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. Nine Spiritual Fairy and four other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals surrounded and attacked Lin Jian Xing but suffered a miserable defeat. Nine Spiritual Fairy covered the retreat and was captured by Lin Jian Xing.

But now, she was being personally released by Lin Jian Xing.

Nine Spiritual Fairy’s expression was heavy, she did not feel happy when regaining freedom. She looked at Lin Jian Xing and asked: ”What did Heavenly Court pay you to release me?”

Lin Jian Xing said directly: ”Star Constellation Immortal Venerable places a great importance on you, I daringly to make an offer and obtained eleven eight-desolate sword leaf trees fortunately.”

“Eight-desolate sword leaf tree....” Nine Spiritual Fairy’s heart became even heavier.

The story behind these eight-desolate sword leaf trees was huge, they originated from Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable. They were immemorial desolate plants created by the venerable and were not a naturally produced resource.

Eight-desolate sword leaf tree contained a dense number of wood path dao marks but it grew on ore mines with metal path immortal materials, and the leaves it produced were rank eight sword path immortal materials.

These eight-desolate sword leaf trees were unique resources. Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable grew them personally and only left twenty or so trees in Heavenly Court.

A number of the eight-desolate sword leaf trees died or were expended in the following period after his death. Only these eleven trees were left now and they were all obtained by Lin Jian Xing.

Lin Jian Xing accompanied Nine Spiritual Fairy till the previous regional wall area that spanned across Western Desert, Central Continent, and Northern Plains. He then watched Nine Spiritual Fairy leave alone.

“When I was negotiating with Star Constellation’s will, we were always deadlocked over the price. I did not expect Star Constellation’s will to suddenly be willing to hand me eleven eight-desolate sword leaf trees but they wanted me to provide one hundred kilograms of heavy sand along with the release of Nine Spiritual Fairy.”

“I have really made a huge gain by getting these eleven eight-desolate sword leaf trees. My guess was not wrong, as long as I can gain some comprehension from them, the recreation of my sword forest will just be around the corner.”

“Heavenly Court has too many assets and an extremely deep foundation. Even after repeated losses in battle, their foundation still cannot be matched by other super forces.”

“What a pity that I was only able to capture Nine Spiritual Fairy. Otherwise, I could have demanded even more cultivation resources from Heavenly Court.”

The destruction of fate Gu had a lasting influence on the whole world and even Gu cultivators.

Heavenly Court possessed the immortal graveyard, their Gu Immortals could revive after death. So it was a great battle tactic for them to seek death and not care for their life.

Fang Yuan went even further in this aspect, he intentionally revived Gu Immortals as Gu Masters to make them undergo immortal ascension again, using stealing heavenly secret to make huge gains.

So even if Lin Jian Xing killed Heavenly Court’s members, there would not be a huge grudge. They could revive anyway!

On the contrary, he was able to capture Nine Spiritual Fairy alive and stopped her from dying which instead became an issue for Heavenly Court.

After a long period of negotiations, Heavenly Court finally redeemed this captive by giving Lin Jian Xing what he wanted.

“It is a pity that my sword path is strong in offense but not that proficient in capturing methods.”

“Sigh, this world is quite extraordinary. My former world focused on cultivation methods, but this world prioritizes Gu worms, immortal essence, immortal materials, and other cultivation resources.”

“Cultivation resources are the foundation of everything. This confrontation of venerables is the perfect time for my Lin clan to expand. If a victor is decided between the venerables and I am still not a sword path venerable, I may have no choice other than to submit to the winner.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s previous deduction was not wrong, Lin Jian Xing was indeed an otherworldly demon. In his former world, he was the head of a Sword Sect and was known as the Grand Ancestor.

Such a person was naturally not willing to be subservient, he was a person who had seen through worldly affairs and was full of ambitions.

So, after Lin Jian Xing defeated the five Heavenly Court immortals, he did not give any explanations. He was actually happy to be treated as a demonic path member.

What would he, a grand sword path pseudo venerable, fear?

Would he fear other Western Desert super forces? Laughable!

The ones who hoped he, Lin Jian Xing, clarified that he and Lin clan were in the righteous path were these Western Desert super forces.

If so, Lin clan would be restrained under the rules of the righteous path and be unable to expand freely.

But so what if he explained himself?

Was Lin clan not a righteous path super force previously? It did not matter, Heavenly Court still attacked without a reason. This was the number one righteous path super force in the world!

On the contrary, joining demonic path was much better for Lin clan to annex other forces and expand wantonly!

Naturally, even Lin Jian Xing could not resist a venerable’s attack.

But did that mean he had to give up?

There was no such logic in Lin Jian Xing’s heart!

If one was weak, they needed to do everything to become stronger, to become an expert. It was because they would be bullied that they had to grab every chance to resist and become stronger.

Lin Jian Xing had such thoughts and did just that.

He had already made enough mental preparation, he would bear the responsibility even if a venerable targeted him in the future.

As long as he could preserve his life, he would surrender to the venerables. He might even be lucky and get the venerable’s support, making even greater achievements!

After sending off Nine Spiritual Fairy, Lin Jian Xing did not return to the headquarters but continued to head north and entered Northern Plains.

He turned invisible and flew rapidly, soon arriving at Flower Forest Forbidden Land.

Flower Forest Forbidden Land was one of the ten great fierce areas in Northern Plains and was home to countless mushrooms. These mushrooms were as large as trees and the huge number of them formed a vast forest.

All kinds of flowers bloomed in the forest, their aroma permeated the surroundings and were dense to the point of forming fog.

Every full moon, the fragrance of the flowers would condense into water droplets that flowed to the surroundings, nourishing the mushroom trees and strengthening them further.

Similar to all the fierce areas, countless desolate beast groups lived here including many immemorial desolate beasts and plants.

Zuo Ye Hui had been hiding in the depths of Flower Forest Forbidden Land over these days.

It was a legendary immemorial desolate beast, it was much easier and more suitable for it enter and live in fierce areas than Gu Immortals.

Zuo Ye Hui naturally had its plans for hiding in the Flower Forest.

Its goal was You Tian Guang who was imprisoned by Longevity Heaven. It wanted to save the latter!

Flower Forest Forbidden Land was a fierce area in Northern Plains that could not only hide him but was also nearest to Longevity Heaven.

“I am going now, the following plan will depend on you two. Don’t think of running away, you are both struck by my method and are not of Huang Jin bloodline, who will save you?” Zuo Ye Hui did not forget to warn Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang before leaving.

These two Gu Immortals were really unlucky.

They had wanted to escape Northern Plains and were heading towards Western Desert when they were caught by Zuo Ye Hui midway and were brought to Flower Forest Forbidden Land.

The environment in a fierce area was extremely dangerous, they could not escape with their strength. If not for Zuo Ye Hui’s protection, they would not be able to survive even a day in this fierce area.

“We won’t dare, our lives depend on you, lord. We will definitely use all our strength for the plan.” Lu Qing Ming quickly replied.

Zuo Ye Hui snorted coldly, its huge body suddenly turned into a puddle of dark liquid that seeped into the ground and disappeared.

Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang were helpless and could only follow Zuo Ye Hui’s instructions.

They entered an immortal formation and began to activate it.

The strength of the immortal formation began to spread to the surroundings, the whole process did not leak any aura and was silent, this was the specialty of dark path.

As time passed, many immemorial desolate beast groups in Flower Forest Forbidden Land started to get agitated. Zuo Ye Hui had even used its methods on the leaders of these beast groups without them noticing it.

Most Gu Immortals would not be able to accomplish this. Zuo Ye Hui was a dark path legendary immemorial beast, it could be considered as the number Gu cultivator in dark path in the present era and it had used all its methods for this.

Not long later, the immemorial beast groups began to roar irritatedly.

Beasts lacked wisdom, they were on guard against each other and went into conflict, thus,outbreaks started to occur.

Under the influence of the immortal formation, immemorial beast groups began to run madly with their groups. They completely disrupted the order of the whole fierce area, forming a beast tide of a grand scale.

This beast tide broke out of Flower Forest Forbidden Land’s territory and started to rush towards the nearby Huang Jin tribes.

The Huang Jin tribes were shaken and immediately asked Longevity Heaven for help.

In this situation, Lin Jian Xing arrived in the sky above Flower Forest Forbidden Land.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2318: Giant Sun Accidentally Harms His Son

Even before the Huang Jin tribes asked for help, Longevity Heaven had already detected the commotion in Flower Forest Forbidden Land.

Bing Sai Chuan was overseeing Longevity Heaven.

He was having a discussion with Yao Huang and some of the Eight Extremities.

“The commotion in the fierce area is no small matter, we have to take care of it.”

“In my opinion, we must verify the reason for the commotion!”

“Maybe because the sun was destroyed and spectral heaven formed, it caused light path to decline and dark path to prosper. Flower Forest Forbidden Land has a dense number of dark path dao marks.”

After the discussion, Bing Sai Chuan personally moved towards the fierce area to inspect the situation while the others continued to guard Longevity Heaven.

The reason for this arrangement was because Bing Sai Chuan possessed a time path killer move that could trace an event to its source and see the truth in the past.

Longevity Heaven opened its entrance as Bing Sai Chuan moved directly to Flower Forest Forbidden Land.

Zuo Ye Hui who was already hiding in spectral heaven was near Longevity Heaven’s entrance.

it saw the entrance open and close but did not move.

The opening of the entrance was indeed an excellent chance to enter the grotto-heaven but it was too conspicuous. Even if Zuo Ye Hui had concealment methods, it was not easy to do this.

Gu Immortals were deeply concerned whenever they opened their immortal aperture. If Zuo Ye Hui entered at this time, it was simply exposing itself and looking for trouble, and it was also underestimating Bing Sai Chuan.

Zuo Ye Hui did not want to have a frontal fight.

It might be a grand legendary immemorial beast but it was nothing when compared to Longevity Heaven and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

From the start, it had not thought of forcefully intruding to save You Tian Guang.The rescue was a technical operation, if it acted rashly, it was likely to fail and even cause himself to get captured!

Zuo Ye Hui continued to hide and activate a killer move.

“This opportunity is extremely rare, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable is fighting the other three venerables and has no leisure time to split his concentration. Flower Forest Forbidden Land lured away a rank eight expert. The specific location of Longevity Heaven’s entrance is also exposed. I must make the best use of this time!”

Zuo Ye Hui and You Tian Guang had a mysterious connection.

Relying on this connection, Zuo Ye Hui’s dark path killer move gradually showed a miraculous effect.

Inside Longevity Heaven, You Tian Guang was imprisoned in Calamity Luck Altar.

Suddenly having a sensation, You Tian Guang lowered its head and looked at its heart. Shortly after, it reacted, roaring and struggling fiercely.

Calamity Luck Altar shook constantly, the Eight Extremities, who were guarding outside, saw this and quickly acted to suppress You Tian Guang.

“You Tian Guang, you have tried so many times but still haven’t realized that you can’t escape Calamity Luck Altar by yourself?”

“Surrendering to my Longevity Heaven is your only way out.”

“As long as you surrender to Longevity Heaven, you will be protected by Lord Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.”

You Tian Guang roared furiously: ”Return my light Gu!”

The Eight Extremities persuaded: ”You Tian Guang, light Gu has always been a wild Gu, it only resided in your body temporarily, how can you call it yours?”

“That’s correct. Lord Giant Sun Immortal Venerable won against two venerables and seized this Gu, it belongs to my Longevity Heaven now!”

“You should be grateful to Lord Immortal Venerable and his son, if not for them, you would have already been killed by Star Constellation or Fang Yuan.”

You Tian Guang’s aura declined rapidly from their suppression but it still shouted: ”Return my light Gu and I will consider surrendering!”

The few Eight Extremities looked at each other before shaking their heads and strengthening the suppression power of Calamity Luck Altar.

Finally, You Tian Guang exhausted all its strength and gave up with reluctance, hatred, and anger as it was suppressed.

But this time, it had a new hope.

“Brother, I am coming to save you, let’s discuss the plan first!” A lump of black liquid flowed out of You Tian Guang’s heart and turned into the appearance of a mini Zuo Ye Hui.

Zuo Ye Hui paused for a moment before continuing: ”My killer move has gone through modification and will continue to accumulate strength inside your body.

When it has accumulated enough strength, you can use my strength to erupt with all your power. At that time, I will coordinate with you from outside Longevity Heaven and open a hole in Longevity Heaven!”

You Tian Guang did not feel at ease: ”Giant Sun Immortal Venerable cannot be underestimated, be careful of him, you must not trap yourself.”

Zuo Ye Hui informed You Tian Guang of the current situation.

You Tian Guang was exulted: ”The chaotic battle of four venerables will probably last for a long time. This is indeed the best time for me to escape! It is a pity that your arrangements in Flower Forest Forbidden Land only lured away Bing Sai Chuan.”

“Longevity Heaven is probably cautious because of Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan’s three clones are wreaking havoc in Central Continent and the star array calculation formation is already damaged.” Zuo Ye Hui analyzed.

The two legendary immemorial beasts conversed secretly, no one in Longevity Heaven sensed it.

Bing Sai Chuan quietly landed in Flower Forest Forbidden Land.

He searched all the way and traced the aura to its source, gradually nearing the area where Zuo Ye Hui set up the immortal formation.

“There is trouble!” Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang who were controlling the formation sensed Bing Sai Chuan early on.

Their expressions were heavy as they knew the severity of the situation.

Once they were discovered by Bing Sai Chuan, there would be no way for them to escape.

The two had thought of surrendering but they were under the control of Zuo Ye Hui’s dark path method. As long as they even tried to surrender, the dark path method would trigger and take their lives.

They two had to continue to activate the immortal formation and enlarge the scale of the beast tide, they could not stop for even a while.

Otherwise, the dark path method would similarly trigger and kill them directly.

“Zuo Ye Hui is using us as cannon fodder!”

“Sigh, I did not expect today that we will die today.”

Just as the two were in despair, the situation suddenly took a turn for the better.

“Who is it?!” Bing Sai Chuan stopped, his gaze emitting cold light as he became vigilant.

Lin Jian Xing’s mind jolted slightly.

He had come to Flower Forest Forbidden Land secretly and was concealed. His goal was to gather some precious and rare immortal materials to help him complete the sword forest killer move.

But then, the beast tide occurred.

This was a good thing for Lin Jian Xing.

The chaotic situation was much more suitable for him to look for benefits.

Lin Jian Xing entered deep inside the fierce area and ran into Bing Sai Chuan.

Although he had pseudo venerable battle strength, he was not proficient at concealment methods. Fortunately, Bing Sai Chuan looked around a few times before shaking his head.

“Maybe I was wrong?”

Bing Sai Chuan whispered softly before continuing forward while inspecting the area.

He did not notice any suspicious interference in this beast tide but he also did not find the reason for the beast tide’s outbreak.

He followed the traces to their source and gradually neared the dark path immortal formation.

Right at this time, a group of four-legged white scale snake flew over.

The white scale snakes had already turned mad, when they discovered Bing Sai Chuan, they attacked immediately without thinking.

Bing Sai Chuan’s pupils shrank and was about to kill these snakes when a ray of sword qi shot towards him from the left.

Bing Sai Chuan was not surprised and quickly acted to block the sword qi while saying to Lin Jian Xing who had revealed himself: ”Hehe, I knew there was someone there... hmm? Lin Jian Xing!”

Bing Sai Chuan recognized Lin Jian Xing.

After the five Heavenly Court immortals lost to Lin Jian Xing, his appearance was already spread widely, Bing Sai Chuan naturally knew of him.

Bing Sai Chuan’s brows furrowed tightly: ”Lin Jian Xing, do you want to stand against my Longevity Heaven?”

Lin Jian Xing frowned but he looked at the group of white scale snakes: ”These white scale snakes’ tongues are sword path immortal materials that I require. I came for them this time. Bing Sai Chuan, I seek your understanding.”

“Is that so?” Bing Sai Chuan was doubtful but Lin Jian Xing was a pseudo venerable after all, he did not want to start a fight rashly, ”These white scale snakes’ tongues are indeed rare resources. But don’t worry, Lin Jian Xing, Longevity Heaven has many of them in our storage. If you are interested, I am willing to deepen our friendship and gift them to you.”

“Oh?” Lin Jian Xing raised his brows slightly. He was just about to consider when a large group of immemorial desolate beast rushed towards this area.

The scene became chaotic immediately.

The white scale snakes were only ancient desolate beasts, they were not the match of these immemorial desolate beasts. But it was too late to escape now, their formation was scattered by the immemorial desolate beasts.

Lin Jian Xing attacked these immemorial desolate beasts and retrieved as many white scale snake tongues as he could.

Bing Sai Chuan observed from the side while urgently contacting Longevity Heaven to mobilize the Harem Palaces of Northern Plains and Western Desert.

He would not easily believe Lin Jian Xing’s one-sided statement, it was much safer to use Immortal Gu Houses to face a pseudo venerable.

Back then, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable gathered beauties and constructed five harem palaces in the five regions which were all Immortal Gu Houses.

A few members of the Eight Extremities received the command and immediately flew out of Longevity Heaven with the Immortal Gu Houses.

Zuo Ye Hui was doubtful and happy at this sight.

In fact, Lu Qing Ming and Su Guang still being concealed at this point was already beyond Zuo Ye Hui’s expectations.

Right now, Longevity Heaven sent two Immortal Gu Houses and several Gu Immortals, their direction was clearly Flower Forest Forbidden Land; Zuo Ye Hui could not understand what was going on.

But no matter what, his situation had become better than before.

After a while, You Tian Guang roared fiercely, erupting with the accumulated dark path strength and catching the Eight Extremities, who were guarding this place, off-guard.

You Tian Guang seized this chance and attacked. After ten breaths of time of stalemate, it was able to charge out of Calamity Luck Altar.

It did not escape immediately, instead, it followed its sense towards a secluded area.

The Eight Extremities left behind were pale with fright: ”Oh no! That is where our prince is resting!!”

Yao Huang had already come out of Blood Sea and wanted to stop You Tian Guang, but he was a step late.

He watched with the newly arrived Mao Li Qiu as You Tian Guang took Light Emperor and left.

Light Emperor was nourishing rank nine light Gu with his body. Even under such a drastic situation, he was still like a statue with his eyes closed as if he had lost all perception towards the outside world.

“Don’t provoke me or I may crush him to death!” You Tian Guang roared loudly, the encircling Gu Immortals hesitated and were in a dilemma.

“Don’t kill him, otherwise when Lord Giant Sun Immortal Venerable returns, you will definitely die!”

“You Tian Guang, everything can be discussed, please calm down.”

“Quick, call Bing Sai Chuan and the others to come back.”

While the Longevity Heaven Gu Immortals were panicking, You Tian Guang made a move. Zuo Ye Hui also came out of hiding in the outside world, the two had a high degree of coordination, directly tearing open a hole in Longevity Heaven.

This hole was not large but You Tian Guang had an amazing method.

He first swallowed Light Emperor before transforming his body into a lump of light that forced its way through the hole and into the outside world.

After appearing in the outside world, the light changed back into You Tian Guang.

Longevity Heaven’s Gu Immortals gave chase and arrived outside, they saw You Tian Guang and their expressions turned unsightly when the saw Zuo Ye Hui as well.

“We fell for their trap!” Yao Huang stomped his foot in anger.

After Bing Sai Chuan received the news, he looked at Lin Jian Xing with narrowed eyes: ”So it was like this, Brother Lin actually joined hands with Zuo Ye Hui.”

“What do you mean?” Lin Jian Xing was baffled.

In the battlefield over the heaven path dream realms.

“What?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had been concentrating on fighting Fang Yuan when he heard this bad news.

“This situation seems to be created by my nothing is certain except success killer move!” The vague luck path sensation stupefied Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable wanted to explain the situation to himself but he was not able to!

“My killer move should... not have a problem, right?”

“I rarely used it in my previous life.”

“I have modified this move recently, indeed... there should be... probably... not much of an issue.”

“Giant Sun, what happened?” As the number one person in wisdom path, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was very perceptive towards the changes of emotions, she asked directly.

“Ah, nothing, there is no issue.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shook his hands repeatedly while feeling bitter inwardly.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2319: Star Constellation Admits Defeat

Heaven and earth was torn apart like a huge opened mouth. Endless lightning exploded and resisted the fierce tornadoes.

Meng Qiu Zhen floated in the air and observed the land.

“Lightning, come!” He shouted and at the next moment, tens of thousands of lightning balls fell from the sky and collided with the tornadoes, causing huge explosions.

Ten or so tornadoes were destroyed but there were still about a hundred tornadoes which connected the small world’s sky and ground like giant pillars.

Meng Qiu Zhen gritted his teeth as he recognized the crucial point: He had to find the location of this dream realm’s land spirit as soon as possible and attack it. Otherwise, with so many tornadoes, even if he destroyed all of them, he would have used all his strength which was detrimental to his future dream realm explorations.

With the main body’s protection, after experiencing that thrilling moment before, Meng Qiu Zhen did not run into anymore mishaps.

He continued to explore the heaven path dream realms, not only raising his heaven path attainment level greatly but also raising his strength in the dream realm immortal aperture. He became a heavenly spirit and his methods were at a completely different level than before.

Meng Qiu Zhen could now control heavenly power and produce strength similar to calamities and tribulations!

Moreover, he also found that heaven path dream realms could annex each other, constantly bringing him risks as well as opportunities in the explorations.

“Ice, come!” Meng Qiu Zhen seized the timing, his two small hands spread apart and pressed down.

Hailstones rained down heavily from the sky.

The hailstones continued to grow bigger every moment, some of them were even as large as a hill in just a few breaths of time.

These hailstones fell on the tornadoes and were rapidly swept away.

The dark-green tornadoes were soon covered by a layer of bluish white frost and their speed fell sharply.

“So it was here.” Meng Qiu Zhen succeeded in weakening the enemy and discovered that there was a white feather flying fish hiding in the leftmost tornado.

This white feather flying fish was the heavenly spirit of the other dream realm immortal aperture!

Heaven path dream realms could annex each other, this current manifestation was the result of the two dream realm immortal apertures annexing each other. As the heavenly spirit of a dream realm immortal aperture, Meng Qiu Zhen had to lead his dream realm immortal aperture to suppress the other side’s dream realm immortal aperture and even annex it.

There was a crucial step in this, that was to find the other side’s heavenly spirit and exterminate it.

“Die!” Meng Qiu Zhen used one method after the other, the flying fish heavenly spirit got dizzy from seeing all the attacks.

Lighting flashed, thunder rumbled, storm brewed, meteors fell, and lava gushed out; all kinds of attacks were thrown out before the flying fish heavenly spirit was finally exterminated.

Without the control of the heavenly spirit, the tornadoes still existed but were moving disorderly instead of being orderly like before, immediately becoming non-threatening.

At the same time, Meng Qiu Zhen’s dream realm immortal aperture also quickened the pace of annexing the enemy dream realm immortal aperture.

With the flying fish heavenly spirit dead, it was like the opposing army’s commander was beheaded, they would fall into disorder and be defeated no matter how strong they were.

Meng Qiu Zhen followed up his victory and finally expanded his dream realm immortal aperture by another area.

“There is a huge rise in wind path dao marks, the outcome is pretty good. Hmm? Another dream realm immortal aperture is coming close.” Meng Qiu Zhen had not even rested when he saw an indistinct red shadow appear outside the dream realm immortal aperture.

The indistinct red shadow covered the sky and ground, obscuring the sun and moon. A huge explosion resounded as it collided with Meng Qiu Zhen’s dream realm immortal aperture.

The immortal aperture’s boundary was broken as the two dream realm immortal apertures connected to each other and started a brutal annexing process.

“Wait, this heavenly spirit is different!” Meng Qiu Zhen’s expression changed slightly as he discovered that the enemy was extremely shrewd and could adapt to the situation easily with plenty of methods that were not fewer than Meng Qiu Zhen’s.

“Don’t tell me...”

Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Qi tides surged and formed tens of thousands of qi monsters everywhere, forming a huge calamity.

A large number of mortals in Profound Literature grotto-heaven became corpses under the rampage of the qi monsters.

“Damn it!”

“We must persevere!”

“These qi monsters are coming endlessly, when will it stop?”

The Gu Immortals of Profound Literature grotto-heaven used all their strength to defend, Old Immortal Hua Yu personally entered the battle and was barely able to hold the situation.

This was not a heavenly tribulation or earthly calamity, it was the qi path killer move that Qi Sea Ancestor used to attack the star array calculation formation.

The star array calculation formation had a large number of formation cores. After a number of the formation cores’ Immortal Gu were destroyed by Fang Yuan’s three clones, the formation bases were exposed.

These formation bases were Profound Literature grotto-heaven, Skeleton grotto-heaven, and so on.

As long as these grotto-heavens were destroyed, the star array calculation formation would lose its foundation and collapse completely.

“If we had known this earlier, why would we try all means possible to defect?”

“Sigh, it is already too late to say this. We can only hope that Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has enough methods to protect our homeland.”

These grotto-heaven Gu Immortals were feeling regret to some extent.

Rumble!

An explosion rang, qi currents rampaged like ten thousand horses as Qi Sea Ancestor gradually appeared inside Skeleton grotto-heaven.

Granny Skeleton was in despair but before she even asked for help, many rank eight Heavenly Court Gu Immortals arrived in Skeleton grotto-heaven in Immortal Gu Houses.

Without any delay, a huge battle erupted!

Heaven and earth shook, qi sea rose, golden lights flew, jade water floated in the sky... a large number of killer moves were activated, their aftershock creating huge casualties.

Immortal killer move — Unlimited Qi Sea!

Qi Sea Ancestor continued to gather his momentum before finally using this move.

With one move, heaven and earth was overturned, several Immortal Gu Houses of Heavenly Court were damaged heavily, one even crumbled apart.

Qin Ding Ling and the rest coughed blood repeatedly from the serious injuries.

“Hold on!” Qin Ding Ling shouted.

“Watch this!” Che Wei tried bravely to use offense against offense.

Qi Sea Ancestor was struck by his killer move and suffered some injuries.

Immortal killer move — Qi Jue Revival!

At the next moment, a large number of qi path immortal materials was expended as Qi Sea Ancestor recovered rapidly.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals turned pale.

“Let’s end this.”

Qi Sea Ancestor gave a shout and activated the killer move, Hu elevation!

Towering and terrifying qi pillars shot out, directly piercing through Skeleton grotto-heaven.

Granny Skeleton’s eyes were wide open and had no time to dodge, she was annihilated by the qi pillar with not even a small piece of her remaining.

Skeleton grotto-heaven was heavily damaged and started to produce the winds of assimilation.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals left from the large hole while Qi Sea Ancestor gave chase.

Star Constellation’s will saw this from inside Embroidered Tower and was about to make a move when Zhan Bu Du charged inside the formation space.

“It is here after all!” Wu Shuai was happy.

He controlled ants to infiltrate the depths of the star array calculation formation and forcibly drilled a pathway from which Zhan Bu Du squeezed inside.

The Gu Immortals inside the formation space were mostly from ten great ancient sects; although they were all elites, they were still far from reaching the level of Heavenly Court’s members.

Even the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals could not easily fight a pseudo venerable, let alone them.

Zhan Bu Du was like a tiger entering a herd of sheep, blood started to flow instantly.

Star Constellation’s will heaved a sigh, she could only give up on targeting Qi Sea Ancestor and activated Embroidered Tower to block Zhan Bu Du.

After a period of stalemate, Fang Yuan’s three clones finally created an opening and started destroying the star array calculation formation as easily as cutting bamboo.

Heavenly Court was beaten back again and again without getting any chance to stabilize their footing.

This news immediately reached Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sighed as she activated two human path killer moves.

One was heroes among people and the other was hope of the people.

Divine Emperor City which was the largest human vein node of Central Continent released countless white light. The countless specks and lumps of light were like lanterns or candles.

These lights moved like fish or birds returning to their homes, landing in all of the Gu Immortals inside the star array calculation formation, forming a dense white radiance.

The white radiance started to shrink while the Gu Immortals’ auras started to grow.

Just like in the fate war, they received a huge amplification once again.

“As expected, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used this move, it hasn’t crossed Lord Alliance Leader’s calculations.” Lu Wei Yin was watching Divine Emperor City from some distance with a moved expression.

“She is using the same ability again, it means she ran out of tricks.” Shen Shang smiled lightly as he attacked Divine Emperor City with Lu Wei Yin.

Genesis Lotus’ will and Qing Chou were guarding Divine Emperor City. As they were attacked by two experts, they could only stop supporting the two human path killer moves and defend themselves.

Spectral heaven battlefield.

The white radiance formed from the human path killer moves similarly covered Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

The two received the amplification, their strength rose by a huge degree!

“As expected of human path methods, even a venerable like me can benefit from it.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable clicked his tongue in praise.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable frowned: ”There are almost no heaven path dream realms left, we’ve lost this battle!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2320: Like It Was Nothing!

The battle over the heaven path dream realms was started by Fang Yuan.

In this battle, Fang Yuan revealed new killer moves like Arrival of Dragon Snake with Dust Fog and Explosive Soul Wind, Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound, and heavenly ghost concealment.

Seven kills rainbow, sword tongue dragon soul, and other killer moves were greatly improved, and there were also obscured heavenly secret and heavenly web protection veil that was supporting Fang Yuan secretly.

Thus, Fang Yuan gained the upper hand in the battle, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had no choice but to join hands to match him.

However, because Fang Yuan needed to protect Meng Qiu Zhen, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable who had chaotic intent dispels dream killer move gradually gained the initiative.

At the same time, Fang Yuan’s strength made Giant Sun Immortal Venerable wary. No matter how Fang Yuan tried to persuade him, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was firm on stopping Fang Yuan from obtaining the heaven path dream realms.

As a result, Fang Yuan ordered his subordinates to attack Central Continent’s important areas to harass Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable saw through Fang Yuan’s plan and did not return to defend Central Continent.

To continue hiding his strength and pretend to have a shortage of immortal essence, Fang Yuan angered Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and lured him into battle. He used heavenly ghost concealment killer move to become half an alliance mate of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Fang Yuan’s scheme succeeded!

Because of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable disrupting the situation, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable were not able to emit enough pressure on Fang Yuan. But conversely, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was continued to be interrupted by Fang Yuan and had no more opportunities to harm Meng Qiu Zhen. Even when Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used two powerful human path killer moves, it was hard to change the battle situation.

The battle situation was in a stalemate, and as time passed, heaven path dream realms annexed each other and were mostly absorbed by Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan’s gains in this battle far surpassed Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

On the contrary, among the two venerables; one lost his eldest son and rank nine light Gu while the other’s painstakingly created the star array calculation formation was almost destroyed, over ten Central Continent Gu Immortals were killed and even Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were in a dangerous situation.

This made Star Constellation Immortal Venerable come to a complete realization, Fang Yuan had won a huge victory in this battle. No matter how miserable he looked now, he was the person who reaped the most benefits!

“Whether Fang Yuan still has trump cards or not, or if he really lacks immortal essence, at the end of it, the crucial factor of this battle was Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked at the heavily injured Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, she was reluctant, furious, and also helpless.

Since long ago, she had wanted to get rid of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable but never succeeded.

There was a good opportunity before but Fang Yuan disturbed them. It was mainly thanks to Fang Yuan that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable could still stay alive.

In this battle, Fang Yuan used Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to obtain huge gains, this proved how far-sighted he was.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s injuries were mostly received in place of Fang Yuan. He had less than one thousand arms left, his enormous body had shrunk by sixty percent, and even his roar sounded hoarse and soft.

“Maybe, this is a chance to get rid of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had this thought.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was a huge obstruction.

Although Star Constellation Immortal Venerable controlled Spectral Soul Demon Venerable before, she was much clearer than others that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who was filled with heaven’s will could not longer be controlled by her.

Sometimes, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable admired Fang Yuan’s craftiness and sinisterness. He was able to successfully turn Spectral Soul Demon Venerable into half an alliance mate.

Although Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had lost his senses, under Fang Yuan’s heavenly ghost concealment killer move, he was even more dependable than ordinary alliance mates and was also easier to be made use of.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable then looked at Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Although the two venerables had allied, there was always deep vigilance between Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and her.

Looking back at this battle, even though Giant Sun Immortal Venerable used his full strength, it was of little effect on Fang Yuan, it instead cost Central Continent a lot.

The comparison showed a stark contrast.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would rather have the irrational Spectral Soul Demon Venerable as her alliance mate than be allies with a sane Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

But if she wanted to get rid of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable now, she still had to get Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s help.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable immediately transmitted her voice: ”Giant Sun, there is no need to care about Fang Yuan now. Let’s join hands to get rid of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable! As you can see from the current situation, we cannot let this venerable continue living.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable deeply agreed with these words!

He felt that they were not able to deal with Fang Yuan mainly because of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable. These two’s combination truly gave him a headache.

Naturally, Fang Yuan could ’ally’ with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable because of heavenly ghost concealment killer move. As long as this move was broken, it was the same as breaking the alliance between Fang Yuan and Spectral Soul.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was also aware that even if he broke it this time, Fang Yuan could continue to modify it.

Fang Yuan was a refinement path venerable, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not think highly of his modification abilities before. But after this battle, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable who was baptized by killer moves like Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound and Arrival of Dragon Snake with Dust Fog and Explosive Soul Wind changed his perception fully.

Right now, in his opinion, Fang Yuan’s wisdom path attainment was already above him. Even when looking at all the venerables, besides Limitless Demon Venerable, Fang Yuan was right below Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!

So, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not want to play the pointless game of unraveling, modifying, then unraveling again before modifying again with Fang Yuan.

“It is a good idea indeed to kill Spectral Soul Demon Venerable! We can end this problem once and for all, Fang Yuan will have no alliance mate left.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable transmitted his reply to Star Constellation.

“Moreover, Fang Yuan lacks immortal essence right now, but we are different. It will be much more difficult for him to protect Spectral Soul Demon Venerable now. If he exhausts all his strength to protect the latter, he may land in a predicament with just a slight carelessness. At that time, we can then target him and even create an opportunity to behead this Heaven Refining Demon Venerable!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was not as optimistic as Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, she replied: ”Fang Yuan will never throw himself in a predicament to protect Spectral Soul.”

The two venerables reached a consensus and focused all their attacks on Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

“They made this decision indeed.” Fang Yuan revealed a troubled expression but was getting increasingly excited inwardly.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable fought fiercely with the two venerables, and with Fang Yuan’s help from the side, both sides would suffer.

But in the end, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable would probably die.

After all, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was filled with heaven’s will. He did not have any sanity and used immortal killer moves randomly, it was really too much of a disadvantage.

But like this, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would also be weakened greatly.

This was a great opportunity to get rid of two venerables!

As long as they did not escape to their headquarters, Fang Yuan had certainty to kill one of them with his full strength.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable wanted to kill Spectral Soul Demon Venerable but Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was thinking of a chance to get rid of Fang Yuan while Fang Yuan was also plotting to get rid of the two.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was attacked by the full strength of the two venerables, his injuries continued to become more severe. Many of his large black arms were broken, leaving behind only two-three hundred.

“Go!” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable suddenly threw a golden meteor.

The meteor struck Spectral Soul Demon Venerable and destroyed one of his heads.

Out of his three heads, only one remained now. He was forced into a desperate situation with danger everywhere around him but Fang Yuan still attacked steadily, deliberately maintaining the frequency of his attacks.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable roared furiously, a large blue fire burned on his body.

But this fire was not burning hot, instead, it let out a strong chill.

The temperature dropped rapidly.

Rank nine fire Gu finally could not sit still, it felt the danger to its host’s life and finally used its strength!

It was rank nine after all, all three venerables retreated, even Fang Yuan who had heavenly ghost concealment was the same.

Fang Yuan relied on this killer move to deceive Spectral Soul Demon Venerable but he could not deceive rank nine fire Gu. After all, it was a Gu worm and not a soul beast.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable remained still. The blue fire quickly spread, forcing the three venerables to continue retreating.

The fire expanded towards the heaven path dream realms. The dream realms shrunk rapidly and were actually being burned!

Fang Yuan’s eyes shone with a sharp light as he thought: “<<The Legends of Ren Zu>> stated that dream realms are restrained by fire Gu, looks like it is true.”

He felt that it was a pity.

While fighting with the venerables, his heaven path attainment level had already advanced from grandmaster to great grandmaster level.

Moreover, he had not just stepped into great grandmaster, his accumulation was already deep and robust.

If Fang Yuan absorbed all of the heaven path dream realms here, he might even be able to advance to supreme grandmaster level. Even if he could not, he had a high possibility of becoming a quasi-supreme grandmaster.

However, most of the remaining heaven path dream realms were destroyed by fire Gu.

“This is an opportunity, Giant Sun!” Looking at this scene, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable started preparing chaotic intent dispels dream killer move.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not protect Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, instead, charging towards the heaven path dream realms.

Fang Yuan immediately fell into a dilemma of advancing or retreating!

Within the spark of a moment, he made a decision, he gave up on Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and pounced upon Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was blocked by Fang Yuan, the two venerables fought fiercely.

In this process, the heaven path dream realms were burned by the fire, there was almost none left. Be it Fairy Zi Wei, Ying Wu Xie or Meng Qiu Zhen, they were all burning!

While Fang Yuan obstructed Giant Sun, he was also getting closer to the heaven path dream realms.

Seeing this, he immediately gave up on Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and went in the direction of his dream path clone.

Meng Qiu Zhen’s eyes were closed and would not wake up in a short while.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable saw Fang Yuan ignoring him and leaving, he shouted in fury: ”Fang Yuan, such audacity! I will make you pay.”

At the next moment, hundreds of golden meteors shot out together. Their power was so terrifying that even heaven and earth changed colors.

At the same time, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable finally finished preparing her killer move and activated chaotic intent dispels dream.

She directly attacked Meng Qiu Zhen.

Bam bam bam bam!

The golden meteors struck Fang Yuan and Meng Qiu Zhen, explosions rang continuously, shaking the world.

Terrifying air waves rampaged in every direction.

The golden lights dissipated, Fang Yuan and Meng Qiu Zhen were moving down extremely quickly.

“Huh?!” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s eyes almost popped out, Fang Yuan was not even injured at all.

What kind of defensive killer move was this!

“Oh no!” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s expression changed greatly.

Fang Yuan was headed towards Central Continent.

As for Meng Qiu Zhen, he was already awake and had activated dream armor Gu to protect himself. At the same time, his body was covered by a layer of rippling reverse flow protection seal.

Through Fang Yuan’s modification, reverse flow protection seal could help others as well and was not limited to himself.

With two layers of defense, Meng Qiu Zhen, just like the main body, took on Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s killer move like it was nothing.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2321: Qi Sea’s Divine Might

“What a scheme, Fang Yuan!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s expression looked unsightly.

Fang Yuan’s move was extremely ingenious.

He took Meng Qiu Zhen to Central Continent, forcing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable into a dilemma.

If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable continued to fight Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, Fang Yuan would take the chance to open his immortal aperture and put Meng Qiu Zhen inside before wreaking havoc in Central Continent.

Heavenly Court was already in a dangerous situation, the star array calculation formation was in an extremely damaged state with eighty percent of it destroyed. Divine Emperor City was being attacked by Shen Shang and Lu Wei Yin, it was already showing signs of being unable to maintain the two human path killer moves.

If Fang Yuan attacked in this situation, he would definitely create an unimaginable massacre in Central Continent and Heavenly Court!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was worthy of being the number one person in wisdom path, she made a decision almost immediately.

She sighed and said to Giant Sun Immortal Venerable: ”Fang Yuan is extremely crafty, he wants to use this way to protect Spectral Soul Demon Venerable! We cannot fall for his trap! I will go chase him and not let him get any chance to put his clone back in his aperture. Giant Sun, I hope you can kill Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable knew in his heart: Star Constellation Immortal Venerable clearly knew this was Fang Yuan’s scheme but she had to fall into it. It was true that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was going to make things difficult for Fang Yuan, but it was even more true that she was going back to defend Central Continent.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not argue.

If it were him, he would also be willing to fall into the scheme to protect his Huang Jin bloodline.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable nodded, saying decisively: ”Today, either Spectral Soul Demon Venerable or Fang Yuan must die!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s cooperation made Star Constellation Immortal Venerable let out a sigh of relief.

At the crucial moment, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable made a clear and sensible decision!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable immediately chased after Fang Yuan.

Within the star array calculation formation’s inner space.

Demon Judgment Board was sent flying.

Inside Demon Judgment Board, Gu Yue Fang Zheng and Red Heart Traveler were sweating heavily, their faces turned pale with a sense of trepidation.

At this moment, the previous owner and the current owner of Demon Judgment Board had joined hands!

But they were still in a disadvantage.

What forced Demon Judgment Board to retreat time and again?

“Careful, he is coming again!” Red Heart Traveler who was mainly responsible for controlling Demon Judgment Board reminded suddenly.

Zhan Bu Du’s cape fluttered fiercely as he flew closer.

After he activated incomplete freedom transformation, he was a genuine human-shaped beast. Even Demon Judgment Board was not able to properly take a hit from him.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng received Red Heart Traveler’s reminder, he felt a quiver and shouted frantically: ”Let’s try again!”

Demon Judgment Board let out waves of blood light.

The blood light was like a tide that quickly spread thousands of feet. The scarlet-red blood light contained endless coldness.

Zhan Bu Du had to charge into the blood light to near Demon Judgment Board. His movement inevitably slowed down.

“This move again.” Zhan Bu Du’s expression turned somewhat strange.

He had already been obstructed by this blood path killer move three times in a row.

Demon Judgment Board used the time when Zhan Bu Du had slowed down to retreat to a safe distance.

And the one who accomplished this was Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

Red Heart Traveler looked at Gu Yue Fang Zheng with gratitude and admiration. Gu Yue Fang Zheng had activated blood turns cold killer move but he had connected this move to Demon Judgment Board so closely that it felt like blood turns cold was Demon Judgment Board’s killer move.

This was an extremely ingenious pioneering work, none of the past owners of Demon Judgment Board accomplished this.

Speaking of which, Red Heart Traveler was Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s master.

But he did not accept the disciple voluntarily, it was mainly because of the orders from higher-ups and his own benefits. So, Red Heart Traveler’s perception of Gu Yue Fang Zheng had always been poor and did not have much affection for this disciple.

But now, Red Heart Traveler’s impression of Gu Yue Fang Zheng underwent a huge change.

“It was not a mistake to hand Demon Judgment Board over to you. Fang Zheng, you have to work harder in the future.” Red Heart Traveler encouraged.

“Oh, yes, I will engrave master’s words in my heart.” Gu Yue Fang Zheng was somewhat surprised before saying with a sigh, ”I came in touch with the essence of painting path when I entered derivation formation, which allowed me to modify blood turns cold killer move. Its might is amplified through Demon Judgment Board and is able to freeze the blood of rank eight Gu Immortal experts and kill them. But against Zhan Bu Du, it can only obstruct him for a short while.”

Red Heart Traveler shook his head, advising: ”It is not that you are not excellent but the enemy is too strong. He... is one of the strongest clones of Heaven Refining Demon Venerable after all!”

When he heard the mention of his big brother Gu Yue Fang Yuan, Fang Zheng heaved a deep sigh.

“Alright, we must keep on pestering Zhan Bu Du and not let him destroy the whole formation space easily.” Red Heart Traveler could not hide his worries when he said this, ”Sigh, if we really were to talk of it, Heaven Refining Demon Venerable’s strongest clone is Qi Sea Ancestor. I hope Lady Qin Ding Ling can stall him.”

Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

The star array calculation formation’s bases were set up in the two heavens’ grotto-heavens; right now, there were almost none of these grotto-heavens remaining.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven was the last pillar remaining!

Qi currents gushed out like an ocean swarming the sky as Qi Sea Ancestor who was standing high in the sky looked down at everyone.

Qi Sea Ancestor, Duke Mei, Duke Tong, and the rest were either controlling Immortal Gu Houses or floating alone in the air as they looked up at Qi Sea Ancestor with an extremely solemn expression.

In this fight, Qi Sea Ancestor showed the strongest battle strength among all the existing pseudo venerables!

Especially Hu elevation, once it was activated, it could forcibly break a grotto-heaven and no one was able to block it.

Be it Qin Ding Ling’s luck path, Che Wei’s weapon path, or the senior Heavenly Court experts like Duke Mei and Duke Tong fighting without caring for their lives, or even the continuous harassment by experts like Zhou Xiong Xin and Nine Spiritual Fairy, they could not stop Qi Sea Ancestor from destroying the star array calculation formation.

Immortal killer move — Nine Essence Jade Dew Pill.

Ruan Dan was constantly activating pill path killer moves to heal the Heavenly Court immortals.

He also had a move called life sustaining small revival pill which could forcibly prolong the life of others if they were hit by a fatal attack.

These were the gains he made in derivation formation.

If not for Ruan Dan’s spectacular performance in this battle, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals could not have lasted for so long.

Be it Ruan Dan or other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, all of them had made progress. However, Qi Sea Ancestor had become much stronger, almost comparable to Duke Long at his final moment in the fate war!

Qi currents billowed as they turned into tens of thousands of giant dragons. They then dispersed and attacked Profound Literature grotto-heaven from all directions, ignoring Heavenly Court’s immortals.

Old Immortal Hua Yu cried out in sadness: ”Lord Fang Yuan, are you really going to exterminate everyone?!”

His tears started falling.

Duke Tong shouted: ”Everyone, don’t be shaken, don’t risk yourselves in saving the mortals. This demon is trying to use our sympathy to influence our rational decision-making. Once our forces are split, we will definitely fall apart in his hands!”

“It is our turn now.” Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch suddenly transmitted his voice to Shabi Ninety-five.

“Master, you want to use that move? But we are not proficient in it yet.”

“There is no other option, we need to give it a try. We must pressure and disturb Qi Sea Ancestor; otherwise, if he gets a chance, he will use Hu elevation killer move again.” Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch activated the killer move.

Shabi Ninety-five took a deep breath and followed up by activating its Gu worms.

Their aura linked together; Shabi Ninety-five turned into a vast lump of qi that poured into Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch.

Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch who had a round head and large ears breathed in the vast qi through his nose and mouth, his body expanding rapidly.

When he absorbed all the qi in his body, he transformed into a huge giant.

The giant Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch slammed into the sky-covering qi sea, stirring up the boundless qi currents; Qi Sea Ancestor’s body shook and almost lost control of the qi sea.

Inside the qi sea, the giant Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch started sucking in the qi currents crazily.

The qi sea’s size continued to shrink.

“We need to act fast.”

“Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch is using Shabi Ninety-five’s special characteristic to absorb all the foreign qi. He cannot hold on for long, once the absorbed qi currents reach the limit, he will explode and die!”

Heavenly Court Gu Immortals knew the details of this move and acted quickly.

Qi Sea Ancestor was besieged from all sides, he pushed his palms to raise a thousand feet tall qi wall to stop Heavenly Court’s attacks.

He then slashed down with one arm; qi blades appeared from thin air and cut Duke Tong and Nine Spiritual Fairy, making them cough blood and retreat.

Qi currents became vast and grand, Qi Sea Ancestor was about to continue his attack but Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch started absorbing without any regards for his life; the qi currents became listless again.

Qi Sea Ancestor snorted coldly, using yin-yang great killer hands to send Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch flying like a ball.

He used divine flick to flick at Qin Ding Ling, Che Wei, Old Immortal Hua Yu, and Zhou Xiong Xin, easily forcing them back.

Jun Shen Guang was extremely fast and sent a killer move at Qi Sea Ancestor again but was blocked by Qi Sea Ancestor’s defensive methods.

Immortal killer move — Orchid Breath.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s injuries were healed rapidly.

Immortal killer move — Qi Engulfing Mountains and Rivers!

This was a killer move within Primordial Origin true inheritance, it was modified by Qi Sea Ancestor and had its activation speed increased by more than twice.

Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch, Duke Tong, Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch, and the rest who were still counterattacking shook intensely and fell from the sky.

In the chaotic battle, Wan Zi Hong, Prince Feng Xian, Bai Cang Shui, and Uncle Feng occupied the east, south, north, and west directions, trapping Qi Sea

Ancestor at the center.

Immortal killer move — Earth Water Wood Fire Four Elements Shifting Formation!

This was not an ordinary killer move but an ancient battle formation. This formation required four rank eight Gu Immortals, there could not be one more or one less.

Not only this, the four Gu Immortals had to cultivate earth path, water path, wood path, and fire path respectively.

The killer move activated successfully. Wan Zi Hong, Prince Feng Xian, Bai Cang Shui, and Uncle Feng were covered in armor that shone with green, red, black, or yellow radiance.

The four colors spread quickly and linked together, showing a sign of transforming into a battlefield killer move!

“Hmm?” Qi Sea Ancestor’s expression shook slightly as he revealed a trace of admiration.

This move was a new innovation and was already vaguely reaching a whole new realm.

It was not only an ancient battle formation but also a battlefield killer move!

“We must trap him!”

“We cannot relax.”

“Success depends on this!!”

The Heavenly Court immortals roused themselves.

Qi Sea Ancestor laughed heartily: ”It is a good move indeed.”

The moment he finished speaking, a figure descended from the sky.

The immortals’ expressions changed.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2322: Star Constellation’s Scheme

Just as Qi Sea Ancestor was about to be trapped by the Earth Water Wood Fire Four Elements Shifting Formation, a rank eight Gu Immortal came charging.

The immortals saw the person, he had a tall and fit stature with a high nose bridge, there were golden dragon scales on his body, he had a pair of topaz-like dragon pupils, there was also a pair of golden coral-like dragon horns on his head. He looked like a peerless hero.

He was one of the three main clones of Fang Yuan, dragonman Wu Shuai!

The moment Wu Shuai landed in Profound Literature grotto-heaven, two Heavenly Court members, Fairy Maiden Soul and Golden Hooped Great Immortal, arrived closely behind.

Wu Shuai had been fighting with them before but had not completely gotten away from them.

Be it Qi Sea Ancestor, Zhan Bu Du or Wu Shuai, they had all made a breakthrough in their strength. Qi Sea Ancestor's strength increased to the level of Duke Long at his final moments; Zhan Bu Du increased the number of Gu worms he used and his methods became more comprehensive. As for Wu Shuai, he had only been at the level of a Heavenly Court Gu Immortal, but now, his strength surpassed two Heavenly Court rank eights.

“If this continues, Wu Shuai will definitely become a pseudo venerable one day!”

“We must stop Wu Shuai, don't let him save Qi Sea Ancestor!!”

Heavenly Court Gu Immortal Jun Shen Guang was the first to move, followed by Nine Spiritual Fairy, Duke Mei, and Duke Tong.

Wu Shuai was attacked by six Heavenly Court Gu Immortals, his situation instantly turning dangerous.

He could only choose to protect himself first; countless ants wrapped around him layer upon layer, no matter how many were destroyed, they would be replenished immediately as if they were infinitely spawning.

“Open up.” Qi Sea Ancestor's sleeves fluttered wildly as a thousand feet qi current rose.

The four Gu Immortals who formed the Four Elements Shifting Formation had a great change in their expressions, they felt they were like mortals lying on the body of an evil dragon.

The four Gu Immortals maintained the formation with all their strength, which was like pitting their strength against Qi Sea Ancestor, they immediately started coughing blood.

“Support us.” Bai Cang Shui called out.

“This is not good! Help them.”

“We can't lose this formation!”

Heavenly Court's Gu Immortals were anxious. Duke Tong, Duke Mei, and other immortals surrounded and attacked Qi Sea Ancestor.

Qi Sea Ancestor remained unmoved, he defended against the attacks from all directions with a composed smile, showing a calm expression: ”Let's see how long you can defend yourselves.”

Because Qi Sea Ancestor showed his power, Wu Shuai obtained a much needed break.

He pointed his hand, the large group of army ants formed into the shape of a giant eagle, the eagle attacked Profound Literature grotto-heaven like it was swooping on prey.

“Stop!” Old Immortal Hua Yu was seething with fury, he moved forward to block, but all his methods could only destroy about fifteen percent of the attack and were helpless against the remaining eighty-five percent.

The whole of Profound Literature grotto-heaven shook intensely, army ants were tearing and gnawing at everything. The endless gnawing sounds were extremely horrifying.

“Save Profound Literature grotto-heaven, it is the final support pillar of the star array calculation formation!” Old Immortal Hua Yu shouted in grief.

Heavenly Court Gu Immortals had to send some people to defend Profound Literature grotto-heaven.

Like this, the pressure on Qi Sea Ancestor lessened and he could grasp onto battle opportunities more easily.

Because they had to defend the star array calculation formation, Heavenly Court was in a passive situation from the start.

This disadvantage was exploited viciously by Fang Yuan’s three clones, not giving the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals any chance to rest.

Profound Literature grotto-heaven was already in a ruined state, countless beings were dead, and ants roamed everywhere. Many areas were even drilled through, forming tunnels that directly led from Profound Literature grotto-heaven to the outside.

But these were not routes to escape, most of the Gu Masters could not fly and escaping the grotto-heaven meant falling to their deaths. Even the Gu Masters were in this situation, not to mention the mortals, animals, and plants.

“Xiao Bai, leave with my daughter, go!” Imperial Minister Su was a rank seven Gu Immortal of Profound Literature grotto-heaven. Right now, he was defending Li Xiao Bai and Su Qi Han who were behind him.

“No, I will continue to fight! This is my home...” Li Xiao Bai was already heavily injured, his voice was shaky, blood and tears flowed as he spoke.

Imperial Minister Su turned around and glared at Li Xiao Bai: ”Now is not the time to be brave! The future of Profound Literature grotto-heaven is bleak, but you are our hope. The people inside your immortal aperture are the hope of continuing the legacy of Profound Literature grotto-heaven! Get lost now!”

“Father-in-law, let’s go together!” Li Xiao Bai tugged at Imperial Minister Su.

Imperial Minister Su shook his head fiercely, berating furiously: ”I am an important official of the Imperial Court while you are not. You can leave but I cannot. The dynasty is about to fall, so what if I die? Hahaha!”

Imperial Minister Su laughed loudly as he pushed Li Xiao Bai outside of Profound Literature grotto-heaven and then flew into the ant groups, engaging in a fierce battle.

“Father——!” Su Qi Han shouted with tears flowing down her face. She was forcefully dragged by Li Xiao Bai and left through the hole in the grotto-heaven.

But just as the two was about to escape successfully, a strange anomaly occurred.

The aperture walls of Profound Literature grotto-heaven crumbled apart instantly and were replaced by huge dark brown earth walls that were filled with bumps and holes.

There were countless caves and passageways in the earth walls, it was like a maze.

The couple, Li Xiao Bai and Su Qi Han, almost escaped but were bounced back in by the earth walls.

“What is this?!” Almost all the Gu Immortals were astonished.

“A battlefield killer move... it is actually faster than my rumor cage!” Zhou Xiong Xin’s expression changed.

Other Heavenly Court members also had unsightly expressions.

They had yet to trap Qi Sea Ancestor completely, when they discovered that they were the ones to fall into a battlefield killer move first.

“That is Wu Shuai’s killer move.” Qi Sea Ancestor laughed to himself.

Before the battle, they had already shared information about their respective strength and methods.

Qi Sea Ancestor knew this was Wu Shuai’s myriad army ant nest battlefield killer move.

Its core Immortal Gu was rank eight ant nest Immortal Gu. This move used a blessed land or grotto-heaven as the base, countless army ants would first be sent to corrode the blessed land or grotto-heaven, after the corrosion reached a certain point, the battlefield would activate.

Once it was activated, it turned the crumbling blessed land or grotto-heaven into an ant nest battlefield. The activation process was extremely fast, but the prior accumulation took a long time.

Thus, the fastest battlefield killer move was still rumor cage.

After Wu Shuai activated the battlefield killer move myriad army ant nest, every existence in Profound Literature grotto-heaven was trapped in this battlefield.

He immediately sent army ants to attack Gu Immortals everywhere. At the same time, he also sent many ants to devour the resources and breed rapidly.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were attacked by the army ants. Looking at the army ants that worked in tandem with this battlefield, they realized that Wu Shuai was the user of this battlefield killer move!

“We underestimated him.”

“Fang Yuan’s three main clones have many new methods and almost all their killer moves have been modified. What about Fang Yuan’s main body?”

“It is not the time to be concerned about Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s situation, we need to break this battlefield quickly!”

Heavenly Court Gu Immortals discussed quickly and reached a consensus.

But how could it be easy to find a person in the ant nest battlefield that was as large as Profound Literature grotto-heaven?

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals tried many methods but had no gains.

Wu Shuai was hiding at a corner, leisurely mobilizing army ants to move through countless tunnels, to attack the four Heavenly Court immortals who were in a formation.

The four Heavenly Court immortals formed a battle formation to temporarily trap Qi Sea Ancestor but were being attacked fiercely from the outside.

Qi Sea Ancestor saw the chance and raised tens of thousands of qi currents, Heavenly Court’s four immortals received the attack and were at the brink of death.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals were unable to find Wu Shuai for the moment and focused their strength to suppress Qi Sea Ancestor.

After several exchanges, the four Heavenly Court immortals were soaked in blood, their aura declined again, on the contrary, Qi Sea Ancestor still had ample energy and strength.

“If this formation were made of the four major paths—earth, water, wind, and fire—its strength should be much higher. Unfortunately, you lack a wind path expert.” Qi Sea Ancestor laughed, as time passed, he started to see many more details.

“Qi Sea, take this!” Golden Hooped Great Immortal charged forward, sending hundreds of golden hoops that flew chaotically in the air.

The golden hoops were set to land on Qi Sea Ancestor, but were blocked by the surrounding qi currents.

Duke Mei suddenly appeared, his snow-white eyebrows grew in size and pierced through the qi currents, binding Qi Sea Ancestor’s hands.

Qi Sea Ancestor gave a shout, qi currents erupted like a vast tide that threatened to destroy everything!

The qi currents struck Golden Hooped Great Immortal, Duke Mei, and the other four Heavenly Court immortals.

At the crucial moment, Jun Shen Guang, Zhou Xiong Xin, and others stepped in to help the six Heavenly Court members.

Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch attacked, his giant hand slammed down on Qi Sea Ancestor’s head!

At the critical moment, Qi Sea Ancestor smiled lightly.

Immortal killer move — Ancestor Qi Retraction!

This move was modified from triple qi retraction killer move, it used two great rank eight Immortal Gu, Heaven Qi and Earth Qi, as the cores. All the lifeforms in the range of the killer move would gradually turn into qi currents that would return to Qi Sea Ancestor and turn into qi path dao marks.

Hence, this was not only an offensive method, but could also be used to cultivate and increase the number of his qi path dao marks.

This move was extremely powerful and mysterious but had two huge flaws.

Firstly, it consumed a lot of lifespan.

Secondly, once the move was activated, whether it succeeded or failed, it could not be activated again for one hundred days (in terms of Qi Sea Ancestor’s time).

Under ancestor qi retraction, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were first shackled, unable to even budge.

Duke Mei was the first person affected. His eyebrows, skin, blood, flesh, and lastly his bones, organs, and so on were all melted into qi currents that were absorbed by Qi Sea Ancestor.

When Duke Mei’s corrosion reached his bones, Golden Hooped Great Immortal also started turning into qi until he was reduced to nothingness.

Duke Mei and Golden Hooped Great Immortal died one after the other, followed by Jun Shen Guang, Zhou Xiong Xin, and others, before finally affecting the four Heavenly Court immortals who were the furthest away.

Wan Zi Hong was the first to be unable to hold on, second was Prince Feng Xian, then Bai Cang Shui and Uncle Feng.

Qi Sea Ancestor looked at the four: ”You still lack tacit coordination. More importantly, two of you have been revived recently and don’t have all your Gu worms so your conditions are not perfect, which is the greatest flaw in this battle formation. You are dreaming if you want to trap me!”

The four Heavenly Court immortals held on with clenched teeth and had no energy to reply.

Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch was unwilling to give in, most of his body had already melted but he still raised his injured fist and tried to smash Qi Sea Ancestor.

“You all seem to have forgotten me.” Wu Shuai’s voice rang in the battlefield. Densely packed army ants climbed up Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch’s body.

The giant Seven Fiendish Primeval Monarch broke apart at the very next moment.

“Our main body is arriving, we’ve won this battle!” Wu Shuai laughed loudly.

He could tell that even without him making a move, in just a while longer, Qi Sea Ancestor would be able to kill the four Heavenly Court immortals.

“Is that so?” At the juncture of defeat, Prince Feng Xian suddenly revealed a smug smile: ”Qi Sea Ancestor, you fell for it.”

His words had not even finished when Qi Sea Ancestor, who was in the center of the Four Elements Shifting Formation, shook suddenly.

The qi currents around him transformed rapidly into the appearance of Lin Jian Xing, and he stood right behind Qi Sea Ancestor.

Lin Jian Xing, who was formed from the qi currents, was lifelike, but he had no expression.

At the next moment, he moved forward and forcefully entered Qi Sea Ancestor’s body.

Immediately, Qi Sea Ancestor suffered a severe injury, his defenses crumbled apart.

In a battlefield not far away.

Star Constellation’s will smiled inside Embroidered Tower and disregarded Zhan Bu Du as she threw out Star Constellation Chessboard: ”Now, you shall see the true secret of the star array calculation formation!”

The star array calculation formation collapsed, the remaining stars self-detonated and let out a majestic and strange power. Under the control of Star Constellation Chessboard, this power directly broke the ant nest battlefield and reduced the four Heavenly Court immortals into powder, finally sealing Qi Sea Ancestor.

“Go!” The voice of Star Constellation’s will transmitted from Star Constellation Chessboard.

Star Constellation Chessboard circled rapidly above Qi Sea Ancestor’s head, shooting starry radiance that covered Qi Sea Ancestor and dragged him towards Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court’s entrance opened a little, having clearly been prepared for a long time for this moment.

Fang Yuan’s main body arrived and saw this scene, his expression immediately turned shocked and furious as he shouted: ”Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, so this is all your scheme!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2323: Central Continent Held Hostage

“Success! We succeeded!!” Prince Feng Xian shouted loudly, his pale face was filled with excitement.

“I accomplished the mission...” Wan Zi Hong’s eyes were shut, her aura was almost depleted, she had never felt so weak and tired before.

The so-called Four Elements Shifting Formation was only a cover to lure attention away, its true goal was to create an environment for Lin Jian Xing’s sword qi takes form killer move!

Prince Feng Xian, Wan Zi Hong, and the rest had lost in the battle against Lin Jian Xing not long ago.

When they returned, they admitted their blunder to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable with a heavy heart but Star Constellation Immortal Venerable instead rewarded them and said: This was all part of her plan!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was the number one person in wisdom path since ancient times. In the contest of three venerables, she had relied on all kinds of small clues to deduce that Lin Jian Xing was an otherworldly demon and that his strength had reached pseudo venerable level.

Lin Jian Xing was cultivating in seclusion, hiding his strength. The world did not know of his secret.

Although Star Constellation Immortal Venerable deduced it, she kept it a secret.

Then she intentionally sent the five Heavenly Court Gu Immortals to attack Lin Jian Xing. The goal was to use phantom path methods to capture the power of Lin Jian Xing’s killer move.

Everyone knew that the Heavenly Court members’ immortal apertures were phantom apertures.

The injuries that they suffered in the intense battle with Lin Jian Xing were essentially sword path dao marks being engraved on them.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable deduced and modified a phantom path method to make these phantom apertures contain those sword path dao marks and bring them back along with the Heavenly Court members.

The retrieved sword path dao marks could restore Lin Jian Xing’s method after a series of procedures.

Qi Sea Ancestor was struck by this move, he immediately lost his footing and was then attacked by Star Constellation’s will, he did not even have the time to defend when he was sealed.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable concealed the truth and only told the Heavenly Court Gu Immortals of her plan after they returned.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable even apologized to the immortals.

The four Heavenly Court immortals did not dare to accept the apology and only felt intense joy with not even any grievance.

They were loyal to Heavenly Court and realized that it was very reasonable of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to conceal the truth. Only under the condition where they did not know of it could they maintain such a secret and fight with Lin Jian Xing without revealing any flaws in their emotions.

“But why try so hard to capture Lin Jian Xing’s method?” Wan Zi Hong had mentioned this doubt back then.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not reply, only instructing them to follow her arrangements.

When they saw Qi Sea Ancestor being sealed, Prince Feng Xian and Wan Zi Hong finally understood Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s effort.

The most important element was Lin Jian Xing’s power.

First of all, he was a pseudo venerable himself, although he was weaker than Qi Sea Ancestor, Heavenly Court’s replicated sword qi method had gone through many amplifications and was stronger than Lin Jian Xing’s current limit.

Secondly, Lin Jian Xing’s core Immortal Gu was sword qi Gu, although his sword qi was filled with sword path dao marks, it also had dense number of qi path dao marks. It was because of this that it could target Qi Sea Ancestor who cultivated qi path.

Finally, Lin Jian Xing’s sword qi attack was too sudden, Qi Sea Ancestor was truly caught off guard.

“Qi Sea Ancestor is finally sealed. But Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable spent so much effort and trouble to capture Qi Sea Ancestor, what is this for?”

“Qi Sea Ancestor is the strongest clone of Heaven Refining Demon Venerable, maybe it is to restrain Fang Yuan?”

"I heard Fairy Maiden Soul modified Bo Qing's soul, this shows that clones might be convenient but are also a huge flaw of the main body."

The other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals discussed as they watched Qi Sea Ancestor being escorted to Heavenly Court's entrance.

"Stop dreaming!" Right at this time, a venerable landed from the sky.

He was wearing a white robe, his black hair fluttered in the air, his eyes were black like the abyss, and his face showed fury and killing intent.

It was Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan grabbed Meng Qiu Zhen's shoulder as he maintained reverse flow protection seal and activated another move.

Immortal killer move — Arrival of Dragon Snake with Dust Fog and Explosive Soul Wind!

Fog billowed, dragons and snakes roared, forming a terrifying attack that fell on Qi Sea Ancestor like a vast heavenly river.

Seeing Fang Yuan trying to kill his strongest clone without any consideration, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable who was close behind showed a solemn expression.

"Friend Fang Yuan, you are indeed vicious! You show no hesitation even when getting rid of your own clone. Unfortunately for you, I am here."

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable took back her secluded domain of heaven and earth Mental Domain and stretched her ten fingers. Her fingers pointed repeatedly with such speed that it created multicolored shadows of her moving fingers.

The finger shadows condensed into deep-blue lights that were extremely bright like shining crystals.

Fang Yuan's soul fog was constantly cut by the blue crystal light and crumbled rapidly, the remaining power was blocked by Embroidered Tower while some traces of the power reached Qi Sea Ancestor but were blocked by the tight defenses of Star Constellation Chessboard.

"Star Constellation, you!" Fang Yuan's eyes narrowed sharply as he looked at Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

In the previous fight, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had not used such a method. It was not that she did not have them but chose to not use them.

She had been concealing them!

Qi Sea Ancestor being sealed and Fang Yuan counterattacking fiercely were within Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's expectations.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable defended with all her strength, not letting Fang Yuan have any progress.

If it were Star Constellation Immortal Venerable who attacked Qi Sea Ancestor and tried to capture him, she would be obstructed by Fang Yuan and could not succeed easily. With the same logic, Qi Sea Ancestor was already captured now, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had the initiative and it became easier for her to obstruct Fang Yuan.

In the end, under Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s obstruction and protection, Qi Sea Ancestor was escorted into Heavenly Court.

“Master’s revival... there is finally some hope.” A huge rock weighing on Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s mind was lifted at this sight, she could not restrain her joy.

In the contest of three venerables, with Spectral Soul controlling the fused heaven, Giant Sun and Fang Yuan only had one option which was to confront each other and wait for a chance while managing and preparing their forces.

But there was a better option for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

That was to revive other venerables.

Three Immortal Kings appeared in Heavenly Court’s history, if Red Lotus Demon Venerable was also counted, it could be said that they nurtured four venerables.

Among eleven venerables, four were from Heavenly Court, this was a huge number.

Besides this, there were no other super forces that could nurture a venerable.

Heavenly Court was the first and the only super force.

As long as another venerable was revived, Heavenly Court would have a huge advantage.

There was no need to consider Red Lotus for now but Primordial Origin and Genesis Lotus were very good candidates to revive.

From what Star Constellation Immortal Venerable knew, Primordial Origin and Genesis Lotus had two revival methods but they were concealed deeply.

Time was needed to search for clues regarding Genesis Lotus’s self-portrait and Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s Primordial Origin Treasury, it clearly seemed like it would take a long time. But Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable had another revival method, it was the qi harvest fruit.

Heavenly Court’s qi harvest fruit formed Qi Sea Ancestor, so Star Constellation Immortal Venerable wanted to trap Qi Sea and resume the interrupted revival of Primordial Origin.

To do this, Qi Sea Ancestor could not be killed. He needed to be alive to preserve the qi harvest fruit as much as possible.

The difficulty in capturing a pseudo venerable alive was very high!

Qi Sea Ancestor could even endure one or two moves from a venerable and was not without any ability to resist. This was because he had the secluded domain of heaven and earth Hu Land, while Star Constellation Immortal Venerable lacked a rank nine wisdom path or star path Immortal Gu.

Moreover, Fang Yuan had plenty of experience and was very crafty. Normally, he paid a lot of attention to his clones’ safety and stored them in his immortal aperture, very rarely sending them out.

If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable were to make a move personally, the commotion would be too huge and she would be obstructed by Fang Yuan at the very beginning.

Thus, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable began to plan.

Heavenly Court lacked pseudo venerable level battle strength, it was an obvious disadvantage but it could be turned into an advantage if used well.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable set up the star array calculation formation to quicken the cultivation speed of Central Continent’s Gu Immortals and also to use as bait to lure Qi Sea Ancestor.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable then used Lin Jian Xing’s strength as the crucial method to target Qi Sea Ancestor. At the same time, she also showed all kinds of flaws to display her weakness to the enemy.

She still thought all these preparations were not enough.

Heaven path dream realms!

This was an opportunity to Fang Yuan, but was it not a fortuitous encounter for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable?

As long as the enemy’s fortuitous encounter was used properly, it might be one’s own fortuitous encounter!

“Fang Yuan will definitely come!” The moment Star Constellation Immortal Venerable discovered the heaven path dream realms, she knew what Fang Yuan’s action would be.

She could not do anything to the heaven path dream realms and Feng Jin Huang had not grown up, but Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could use them as bait!

In fact, even if Feng Jin Huang was fully matured, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was somewhat doubtful about using this girl.

Feng Jin Huang’s father was Feng Jiu Ge, the latter had an unclear relationship with Red Lotus Demon Venerable. Dream wings Immortal Gu took the initiative to send itself to Feng Jin Huang, it was clearly the fortune of being Great Dream’s seed, and the so-called Great Dream Immortal Venerable was the plan of heaven’s will when fate Gu still existed.

Could such a person be used? Especially at such a crucial time?

The only miscalculation was that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not expect Fang Yuan to move so quickly.

“Since he moved this fast, he definitely has the strength to back himself up.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable already expected this at the start of the battle.

So when Fang Yuan continued to reveal his strength in the battle, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was not as surprised as what she showed on the surface.

“Fang Yuan modified so many methods and has new killer moves, he has very likely obtained wisdom Gu again.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable stood before the entrance of the Heavenly Court and faced Fang Yuan.

Starlight shone dazzlingly on this number one person in wisdom path, she said with a smile: ”Friend Fang Yuan, do you dare to come into Heavenly Court?”

Saying so, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable slowly floated backwards and entered Heavenly Court.

Heavenly Court’s entrance was still open.

Fang Yuan stood on the spot!

He snorted coldly as he activated killer moves one after the other. First was Arrival of Dragon Snake with Dust Fog and Explosive Soul Wind, then was Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound, but both were easily blocked by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s strength surged with the help of Heavenly Court’s countless wisdom path dao marks!

Fang Yuan’s face was extremely dark as he sneered: ”You are really the number one person in wisdom path, it is truly amazing. How about we undergo a hostage exchange?”

“Fang Yuan, you don’t have anything now, what can you exchange with?”

Fang Yuan spread his arms and said loudly: ”Right now, every single person in Central Continent—be it man or woman, old or young, immortal or mortal, intelligent or stupid—is my hostage!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sighed.

She had already predicted this, her expression was a complex mix of helplessness, guilt, resolve, resentment, and others.

In the end, her expression turned cold as she said to Fang Yuan: ”Do what you want.”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2324: Primordial Origin’s Grand Revival Plan

“Do what you want.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s words almost froze the atmosphere between the two venerables.

Fang Yuan could not help but laugh in ridicule: ”Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, you are truly the Immortal King of Heavenly Court, this is truly the number one super force, the leader of humanity — Heavenly Court!”

His eyes narrowed as his expression turned solemn: ”This is not normal, even if it was just for my mere clone, even if this is Qi Sea... Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, what is your true intention?!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not speak, her figure flashed like starlight and disappeared from the entrance.

Fang Yuan’s expression was dark and his eyes shone coldly as some anxiety showed itself on his face.

Fang Yuan turned around and flew down from spectral heaven, arriving in Central Continent and entering the battlefield.

He was trying to take the Heavenly Court members as captives but these Gu Immortals had already suicided.

They could revive in Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard.

With the destruction of fate Gu, there was a huge potential in the method of suicide and revival.

Heavenly Court had complete methods. On one hand, the Gu Immortals had phantom apertures, when they died, the phantom apertures returned, their losses were minimized. On the other hand, when the Gu Immortals suicided, their Immortal Gu could be transferred through treasure yellow heaven.

Now, this had already become a mature and excellent battle tactic of Heavenly Court.

Under the same cultivation level, stopping a Gu Immortal from escaping was extremely difficult. At the very least, one needed immortal formations or immortal battlefield killer moves to trap the target.

To prevent a Gu Immortal from suiciding was much more difficult than stopping them from escaping.

What could they do about if the other wanted to die?

But, with Zhan Bu Du and Wu Shuai pinning them down, some Gu Immortals were still stuck in the battle.

Fang Yuan’s main body descended, bringing complete despair to these Central Continent Gu Immortals. He directly waved his sleeve and suppressed all of these Gu Immortals.

He did not kill them and only took them as captives.

He captured over ten Central Continent Gu Immortals but there was not even one member of Heavenly Court; naturally, these captives included Li Xiao Bai.

Heavenly Court and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not show any movement, Fang Yuan’s expression became increasingly unsightly.

He thought for a bit and flew towards Fei He Mountain.

Central Continent’s Fei He Mountain was the base of Immortal Crane Sect, this mountain was not only a super resource point, the public blessed land of Immortal Crane Sect was also located on it.

Fang Yuan was currently at the center of the star array calculation formation and the nearest super force was Immortal Crane Sect.

But when he arrived at the location of Fei He Mountain, this floating mountain range had disappeared.

Fang Yuan’s expression turned darker, he then moved northwest towards Myriad Dragon Dock.

Myriad Dragon Dock was the same as Immortal Crane Sect, both belonged to the ten great ancient sects of Central Continent. Myriad Dragon Dock’s headquarters blessed land was on the island at the heart of dragon lake.

Fang Yuan arrived here, dragon lake and the central island were still around but the public blessed land was empty.

Fang Yuan went to Heavenly Lotus Sect, Spirit Butterfly Valley, Ancient Soul Sect, Heaven’s Envy Manor, Wind Cloud Manor, Combat Immortal Sect, Spirit Affinity House, and Black Heaven Temple, but all their headquarters were empty.

Clearly, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had already planned to give up on Central Continent and had made sufficient preparations to bring away the sect members.

Heavenly Court.

Within Qi Sea Ancestor’s mind.

Qi Sea Ancestor could not move, his thoughts were also being suppressed by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s method.

But Qi Sea Ancestor put up his final resistance with the remaining will in his mind: ”Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, you are really a good schemer.”

During this period of imprisonment, Qi Sea Ancestor already understood the situation.

Lin Jian Xing’s sword qi killer move was extremely effective on him; first, it was because the sword qi was concealed and also had qi path dao marks, Qi Sea Ancestor was not able to detect it with the vast qi currents surrounding him at that time.

But analyzing the situation deeper, Qi Sea Ancestor was certain that the main culprit ware the sword path dao marks!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable sensed Qi Sea Ancestor’s thoughts and said: ”You are not wrong, Lin Jian Xing is different from others, he is an otherworldly demon and in history, otherworldly demons carry otherworldly dao marks.”

“Thieving Heaven Demon Venerable had otherworldly space path dao marks so his Thieving Heaven’s true inheritance space could block the future venerables. In Crazed Demon Cave, when the hole of chaos appeared, Thieving Heaven used his otherworldly space path dao marks as the main force to seal it.”

Qi Sea Ancestor understood at once: ”So Lin Jian Xing has otherworldly sword path dao marks. This move is probably effective against even venerables, isn’t it too much of a waste to use it on a clone like me?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable then told the truth of the qi harvest fruit and Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s revival.

Qi Sea’s will shook fiercely: ”So it was like this! Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, you already planned a trap when you set up the star array calculation formation. Later, you used heaven path dream realms to create an environment to lure me into attacking the star array calculation formation. We actually fell for it!”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable: ”As a wisdom path Gu Immortal, I naturally researched deeply into Fang Yuan’s personality. Moreover, you are are his most capable clone, there was a high chance you would be sent to attack the star array calculation formation.”

Qi Sea’s will sneered: ”In that case, even though you went through such an elaborate charade to capture and imprison me, did you manage to deduce my main body’s actions? Your Central Continent is done for! Hahaha. It is such a regret, if you had refined all of the wisdom path dao marks of Central Continent, you might have had a chance to block my main body. A pity, a pity.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s tone became quiet and heavy: ”My Heavenly Court is the leader of the righteous path, over three million years had passed since it was established. Since then, countless Heavenly Court Gu

Immortals had sacrificed themselves to protect the righteous path and the whole of humanity."

"In the present situation, many venerables are confronting each other in utter chaos, it is much more terrifying and severe than when variant humans dominated the world in the Immemorial Antiquity Era."

"Central Continent is bordered with four regions, I, Star Constellation, am starting to feel powerless after confronting the other venerables for so long. Right now, I can only pay attention to the key aspects and guard the overall situation."

"Since I made such a plan, I obviously know what Fang Yuan's reaction will be. The plan succeeded now, so the common people of my Central Continent and countless living beings are facing Fang Yuan's terrifying revenge!"

"However..."

"As long as Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable revives from this, my Heavenly Court will have two venerables, the situation of the five regions will definitely undergo a great change."

"Everyone knows that the demonic path is unrestrained and runs amok, but they do not know that it takes even more courage and sense of responsibility to defend the righteous path!"

"I, Star Constellation, have sinned to create an advantage for the righteous path. I am sinful for sacrificing countless people!"

"But I am willing to bear this heavy sin to create more hope for the future, for humanity, and for the righteous path."

"In fact, Divine Emperor City has already stored the records of various human qi in it. By cooperating with Heavenly Court's immortal graveyard, we will be capable of using more revival methods."

"I solemnly swear now, regardless of how many humans Fang Yuan slaughters today, as long as I have a trace of strength left in the future, I will do everything I can to revive them! If I fail to keep my word, then I, Star Constellation, am not fit to be human!!"

These words stupefied Qi Sea Ancestor.

Even as her enemy, he could not help but admire Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's resolve, sense of responsibility, and decisiveness.

"Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!"

"Sob, sob... we were too shallow, we even resented you before."

"Everything is for righteousness!"

"How can we compromise because of Demon Venerable's threat and revenge? This is not kindness but a form of weakness!"

"Right, if we compromise this time, we will do it again and again in the future. We are the backbone of Central Continent's righteous path, how can we bend our backs in front of Fang Yuan?"

Central Continent's ten great ancient sects' Gu Immortals were gathered together, listening to the conversation between Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Qi Sea's will.

Emotions surged in their hearts and many even cried.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used Qi Sea Ancestor to explain this situation to them personally.

The resentment, confusion, anger, and other negative feelings hiding in their hearts were swept away. Central Continent's ten great ancient sects' Gu Immortals were now filled with respect towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable along with confidence and courage to protect the righteous path.

But at the next moment, a Gu Immortal shouted: ”Oh no, Heaven Refining Demon Venerable published news in treasure yellow heaven saying that we captured Qi Sea Ancestor to recreate the qi harvest fruit and revive Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable!”

The crowd went into a commotion immediately.

Many connected to treasure yellow heaven and some of them started cursing: ”Fang Yuan, this shameless, despicable scoundrel. He even recorded Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's previous nonchalance towards his threat in a video and is playing it on constant loop in treasure yellow heaven. He is trying to stir the hearts of Central Continent's people and damage our Heavenly Court's reputation!!”

“There is a spy, there is likely Fang Yuan's spy hidden among us. Otherwise, why will he suddenly know the truth?!” Someone brought up the possibility of a spy, making the Gu Immortals feel even more at unease.

Many Gu Immortals openly requested Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to inspect everyone.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable shook her head slightly: ”Please don't be rash. I escorted Qi Sea Ancestor personally, by putting such an emphasis on him, it had already created doubts in Fang Yuan's mind.”

“Venerables are not easy to deceive, it is normal for him to see through it.”

“Although Fang Yuan cannot bring out any evidence and is probably not certain of it himself, he intentionally let out this information to gain the attention of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.”

“However, it doesn't matter. I will be staying in Heavenly Court and won't go out for the following time. Even if Giant Sun, Fang Yuan, and Spectral Soul get into an alliance, they won't be able to hinder the plan of reviving Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable!”

“As long as we don't waver and stay here, Fang Yuan and the rest won't be able to do anything.”

The immortals' gazes shone as they praised Star Constellation Immortal Venerable's unmatched wisdom.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was indeed an expert in using such tricks.

Even if there was Fang Yuan's spy among the immortals, she did not intend to investigate it.

What was the point?

People were not united right now, with Fang Yuan causing a great massacre in Central Continent, it would stir their hearts even more. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not even unite the people’s minds, why would she add more chaos to this?

Moreover, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not feel fear even if there were spies here. Even if Fang Yuan, Giant Sun, and Spectral Soul attacked together, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had the confidence to defend Heavenly Court.

This was the benefit of owning their own headquarters!

No matter how many people Fang Yuan killed, or how miserable Central Continent’s situation became, as long as Star Constellation Immortal Venerable revived Primordial Origin, it would be a huge victory!

It was similar to the earlier situation where Fang Yuan was beaten miserably by Giant Sun and Star Constellation, but as long as he absorbed the dream realms, he would be the true winner!

In fact, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was already preparing to revive Primordial Origin even back in Crazed Demon Cave.

When she was seizing the Primordial Domains, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable deliberately searched and gathered qi path and wood path Primordial Domains.

So, once Primordial Domain revived, he could absorb the qi path Primordial Domains. Even if he did not reach supreme grandmaster attainment level, he would not be far from it.

What Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was worried about were Immortal Gu.

Even if Primordial Origin revived, if he did not have Immortal Gu to use, he could not use his full strength.

This was the situation with Star Constellation and Giant Sun, they did not have suitable rank nine Immortal Gu and had completely new rank nine immortal aperture; their condition was far from their previous life’s peak state.

“Heaven qi Immortal Gu and earth qi Immortal Gu along with the secluded domain of heaven and earth Hu Land are with Qi Sea. Adding on Heavenly Court’s human qi Immortal Gu and other Gu, master’s qi path Gu worms are somewhat gathered now.”

“It is indeed a huge pity that there are no rank nine qi path Immortal Gu, but maybe, Primordial Origin Treasury has it?”

“When master revives, he can activate the treasury, I won’t need to search for clues to find the Primordial Origin Treasury.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable quietly planned internally.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2325: Fang Yuan Plunders Central Continent!

Profound jade snake cave was a famous super resource point in Central Continent.

It belonged to one of the ten great ancient sects, Heaven’s Envy Manor. The scale of annual resource production of profound jade snake cave was among the top five in Central Continent, the resources it produced were of many types as well, including enslavement path, transformation path, earth path, dark path, space path, and poison path.

Profound jade snake cave was the breeding ground for countless poisonous creatures among which profound jade snakes were the overlords that countered poison. Every profound jade snake was an immemorial desolate beast, they were born from jade, had no scales, were light green resembling jade, and emitted fresh fragrance.

The most valuable resources in profound jade snake cave were the profound jade snakes but it was not easy to find them. It was not only because profound jade snakes were small and enjoyed silence, profound jade snake cave’s terrain was complex with thousands of caves in it. And because it had space path dao marks, small caves often contained large spaces and were nested upon each other.

Heaven’s Envy Manor might possess this super resource point and also set up an immortal formation here but had never grasped it completely. Every year, Heaven’s Envy Manor had to send many Gu Immortal experts to explore profound jade snake cave to capture profound jade snakes.

But for the current Fang Yuan, it was not much of a trouble.

“Rise.” After preparing for a while, Fang Yuan used a killer move.

At the next moment, the earth and mountains shook.

The whole profound jade snake cave rose slowly amidst billowing smoke, and under Fang Yuan’s methods, shrank and was placed into sovereign immortal aperture.

This was already the eleventh super resource point that Fang Yuan obtained.

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, if you don’t hand over my clone, I will take away all of Central Continent’s large resource points!” Fang Yuan did not forget to shout threats.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable showed no movement, she had clearly resolved herself to stay in Heavenly Court and revive Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable. She was not going to be shaken by the outside world.

Fang Yuan snorted coldly as he continued.

He arrived at the source of Falling Heavenly River.

This river was a boundless expanse of water that heavily crashed at the riverbed from an endless height. The rumbling noise of the waterfall was like the continuous crackling of thunder. Endless water vapor formed dense fog that shrouded a vast range of the surroundings.

The reason for the formation of this river was because of Bo Qing’s attempt to breakthrough to rank nine.

Falling Heavenly River smashed open an inland river that opened a channel that flowed through the entirety of Central Continent, towards the eastern side of central continent, and into eastern sea.

Even the merging of two heavens only reduced the size of Falling Heavenly River slightly, it was still a majestic sight to behold.

After taking profound jade snake cave, Fang Yuan arrived at the source of Falling Heavenly River.

Fang Yuan made his move.

After a while, Falling Heavenly River’s size shrank to sixty percent!

This sixty percent Falling Heavenly River was stored inside sovereign immortal aperture.

The water level of the inland river at the source of Falling Heavenly River fell by thousands of feet. The water surface at the middle and lower stream of Falling Heavenly River began to reduce rapidly and exposed the river bed, causing negative influences on the surrounding plants, crops, temperature, mortal habitats, and so on.

Fang Yuan left Falling Heavenly River and arrived at spirit bank spring.

This was a super resource point that belonged to Ancient Soul Sect, which had once sent Yang Feng to guard this place but was still plundered by Forgotten Daoist.

But now, Yang Feng had already followed Ancient Soul Sect to enter Heavenly Court.

Fang Yuan easily dismantled the immortal formation and took spirit bank spring away.

After spirit bank spring was pot river.

This river resembled a long jade belt, it was situated in the eastern area of Central Continent. The riverbank was filled with willow trees and gentle breeze. The water in pot river was smooth flowing, like a beautiful song, it was graceful and harmonious. There was a lot of pot grass growing in pot river.

Wind Cloud Manor was in charge of pot river and held a festival around pot river every year.

But not long later, pot river along with its river channel was moved into the immortal aperture by Fang Yuan. Even if there were to be pot river festivals in the future, they could only be held inside the sovereign immortal aperture.

After pot river was Hidden Dragon Cave.

Hidden Dragon Cave had once imprisoned the legendary immemorial desolate beast Di Zang Sheng. There were very large numbers of scale enslavement path and rule path dao marks here. There was also the remnants of the huge immortal Gu formation that Heavenly Court set up here, it had a huge reference value to most formation path Gu Immortals.

After Hidden Dragon Cave was put into the sovereign immortal aperture, Fang Yuan moved to Lake Heart Mountain.

This was Spirit Affinity House’s headquarters.

It was definitely an outstanding place to be chosen as the encampment of one of the ten great ancient sects.

Lake Heart Mountain was a super resource point by itself, not only did it contain secret inheritance peak, lesser cold peak, affection peak, fierce fire peak, heavenly flowers peak, and other peaks, it also had Fairy Life Tablet Hall, time path cultivation immortal formation, and other facilities.

Naturally, life tablet Gu was already taken from the Fairy Life Tablet Hall, the time path cultivation immortal formation’s Immortal Gu were also taken away. But these facilities were mostly intact, they could be used after repairing.

Soon, Lake Heart Mountain became a scenic spot within the sovereign immortal aperture.

After Lake Heart Mountain was Mountain Tortoise Valley, then Imprisonment Valley, red river beach, hundred segment forest, scale light river, earth qi rock forest, Quiet Rain Valley.....

Fang Yuan looted wantonly, he did not hold back at all!

Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects had left, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was holed up in Heavenly Court; Fang Yuan had no obstructions.

His looting efficiency was extremely high!

If Giant Sun Immortal Venerable wanted to relocate these resource points, he had to use luck path methods or blood path methods to imitate other paths and put in a lot of effort to move them.

Fang Yuan had the sovereign immortal body which had non-conflicting dao marks, so he could use methods of all paths. Earth path was more suitable to relocate caves and caverns. Wood path methods were appropriate to plunder forests.

Another point was that Fang Yuan had a lot of Immortal Gu in his reserves. Putting rank nine Immortal Gu aside, refining rank eight Immortal Gu was as easy as drinking water to him.

Resource points were looted one after the other, the essence of the whole Central Continent was being plundered by him and his appetite showed no signs of being full!

There were some resource points which Fang Yuan could not obtain completely for the moment.

For instance, Sorrowful Wind Mountain Range. The mountain range was extremely range, Fang Yuan could not relocate the whole mountain range in a short period. He could easily take one or two mountain peaks but the mountain range was a long stretch, it could not be compared to one or two mountain peaks.

Another example was Hairy Foot Mountain. Hairy Foot Mountain once held Infallible blessed land, Fang Yuan had came to this place first but it was already destroyed by Heavenly Court.

There was also Reincarnation Battlefield. This was the battlefield killer move that was personally set up by Paradise Earth Immortal Venerable. It was famous in history and was publicly recognized as the number one battlefield killer move since ancient times! Fang Yuan had carefully observed it before leaving directly.

It was not that he could not take it but it required careful study and deductions. This required a lot of time and effort, moreover, the specific time required was difficult to be estimated.

Fang Yuan had a lot of experience in looting so his actions were extremely efficient.

He left forty percent of Falling Heavenly River, it was not because he was willing to leave it behind, but he would have to spend more time and effort to take it. And it was better to loot other places than waste time here!

Central Continent fell into an unprecedented state of unrest.

There was no such unrest and chaos even during the fate war.

The fate war was mainly the war of Gu Immortals, Heavenly Court and Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects defended their positions.

But now that the Gu Immortals of Heavenly Court and Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects were all holed up inside Heavenly Court, Central Continent became an unguarded place.

Fang Yuan did not conceal his action of looting and relocating resource points. Every time he moved, it would cause a huge commotion that was noticed by others, and his actions enticed others as well.

“The grand venerable is eating meat but we should be able to drink the remaining soup, right?”

“Even if it is just one mouthful, it is enough for us to be full.”

“This is Central Continent, the ten great ancient sects have all moved away! This opportunity won’t come again.”

The five regional walls were gone, so the other four regions’ Gu Immortals began to move. After them were Central Continent’s few demonic path Gu Immortals and lone immortals, then finally were Central Continent’s righteous path Gu Immortals.

Central Continent’s righteous path did not consist of just the ten great ancient sects, there were many other super forces, for instance, Great Heavenly Sword Sect, Lightning Information Sect, Demon Expelling Sect, and so on.

Naturally, these righteous path forces moved with the excuse of defending Central Continent and helping Heavenly Court.

These people did not dare to appear in front of Fang Yuan, but Central Continent was huge and had a lot of resource points. Many resource points could not catch Fang Yuan’s eye or were positioned towards the end of the looting plan, these areas became the target of the Gu Immortals.

The sovereign immortal aperture was also in chaos.

Gu Immortals were so busy that their heads were spinning.

There had never been such a moment when resource points were moved in on such a large scale.

This was simply like a flood of resources, unceasing and endless.

The most crucial point was that super resource points could be found everywhere and were the majority, even the sovereign immortal aperture’s Gu Immortals were shaken to the core.

“Master is mighty! He is looting the whole of Central Continent.”

“This is a venerable’s might, this is our Lord Fang Yuan!”

“Great, Lord Qi Sea was captured by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, even if Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable revives, they will only be welcomed by a barren Central Continent.”

“The first wind vein ring is completed!”

“The second light vein ring is finished.”

“Dark path has also completed the first ring!”

The sovereign immortal aperture’s time flow was very different from the five regions’ outside world. All kinds of dao veins were constructed rapidly, metal path, light path, dark path, poison path, rule path, enslavement path, transformation path...

Gu Immortals worked day and night, squeezing out all their energy and constantly visiting Liver Life Hall. Now and then, someone would reach the limits and their liver would explode, but it was not an issue, many healing halls were constructed around the sovereign immortal aperture.

In an instant, many of the sovereign immortal aperture’s Gu Immortals became like Yu Zi, choosing to use the salt-water liver plan.

As the saying went, humans needed windfalls to get rich, while horses needed extra grass to grow healthy.

Fang Yuan’s costless looting made his sovereign immortal aperture’s development achieve an unprecedented and terrifying efficiency!

Central Continent was surrounded by four regions but was also a region with rich resources, second only to Eastern Sea. Eastern Sea had more water path resources but Central Continent had resources of all kinds.

Central Continent was developed by Heavenly Court for over three million years, its development had reached the limits, almost all the immortal level resource points were developed to some extent.

These all became Fang Yuan’s targets.

Many dao veins were completed almost at one go in the sovereign immortal aperture. This was a huge boost to the stability of the sovereign immortal aperture!

Thus, even though the sovereign immortal aperture annexed so many resource points, because of the dao veins, it became much more stable instead.

With such a foundation, Fang Yuan could begin absorbing the Primordial Domain in treasure yellow heaven and annexing blessed lands everywhere.

He had stored the Primordial Domain in treasure yellow heaven all along. There was no need to lie low now and he could start absorbing it.

There were many blessed lands everywhere in Central Continent.

For instance, Flowing Silver blessed land that was revealed because of the qi tides, Hu Immortal blessed land that Fang Yuan gave up in the past, or Star Form blessed land, and so on.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2326: Giant Sun Retreats

“Star Constellation, is the rumor in treasure yellow heaven true?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable fought against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable while contacting Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and questioning.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable replied casually: ”This is Fang Yuan’s scheme to waver your determination.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable dodged Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s attack while probing: ”Right now, Fang Yuan is plundering Central Continent, why aren’t you stopping him? If you are willing to give up on Central Continent’s resources, why don’t you come and deal with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable alongside me? Aren’t you the one who wants to eradicate Spectral Soul the most?”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gave an excuse: ”Since you are in a bind, I will come and help you after I heal myself.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable heaved a long sigh: ”Star Constellation, you are truly good at scheming. I am impressed.”

He was a venerable, after seeing that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable hid inside Heavenly Court without any intention of coming out after capturing Qi Sea Ancestor, even giving up Central Continent’s resources and recalling the Gu Immortals of the ten great ancient sects, he guessed the truth.

What could make the grand Heavenly Court and Star Constellation Immortal Venerable make such a sacrifice?

The revival of a venerable!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was silent, she did not respond.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had to retreat, he no longer fought against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable but transmitted to Fang Yuan instead: ”Fang Yuan, I can’t lure Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to come out. If Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable revives, it will be over. Sigh, thinking about it, there were signs alluding to this earlier.”

“Do you remember the battle in Crazed Demon Cave? Back then, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable cooperated with me to pressure you but she made a mistake and lost the opportunity. The reason was because you used Qi Sea Ancestor as a shield, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable held back.”

Fang Yuan snorted coldly, replying: ”Star Constellation Immortal Venerable is truly the number one wisdom path in the world throughout history! It is normal that my wisdom path attainment is inferior to her! But what is the point of saying that now? We need to ally now and attack Heavenly Court to have a chance of turning the situation around!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did his best to withdraw, he only dodged Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s attacks as he pulled apart the distance between them while thinking to himself.

He frowned deeply and considered the situation rapidly.

It seemed that he was the biggest loser in the battle over the heaven path dream realms.

Fang Yuan obtained the heaven path dream realms and lost Qi Sea Ancestor, but he obtained a lot of resources plundered from Central Continent.

Although Star Constellation Immortal Venerable lost Central Continent’s resources, she obtained Qi Sea Ancestor, if she could revive Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable successfully, she would be the biggest winner. By then, even if all of Central Continent were to be slaughtered by Fang Yuan, they would still be the winner!

Another venerable would change the situation fundamentally. No matter how much manpower or resources Central Continent lost, it was only temporary.

They were completely different concepts.

Even a fool would know which choice was more important.

As long as Heavenly Court’s two venerables cooperated, they would easily suppress Fang Yuan, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, or Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

It would be basically impossible for Fang Yuan, Giant Sun, or Spectral Soul to refine natural dao marks. If Heavenly Court sent out both venerables to attack them, they would need to retreat, they could not undergo the process of natural dao mark refinement.

Conversely, as long as Heavenly Court sent out a venerable to stall them, the other person could refine natural dao marks using that time.

As time passes, Heavenly Court’s advantage would accumulate quicker, by the time they refine all the natural dao marks of the five regions, the other venerables would be cornered.

Of course, in this situation, Giant Sun, Fang Yuan, and Spectral Soul would have to work together.

But could their alliance match the cooperation of Heavenly Court’s venerables?

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was not sane now, the main cooperation would lie with Giant Sun and Fang Yuan.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not trust either of them.

It would not work!

Be it their cooperation level or fundamental beliefs, such differences would be magnified in a battle of life and death.

Not only that, Heavenly Court even had a third venerable in history, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable!

If two other venerables were alive, the third venerable, Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, would have a much easier time reviving.

“Thus, Heavenly Court has finally reached its most crucial turning point.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was clear about this fact.

This was like the backlash Fang Yuan faced from the venerables when he refined rank nine Gu earlier. If he survived it, he would experience a qualitative change and obtain the upper hand, in the future, no matter what he did, the difficulty would be much smaller.

The reason why the venerables were in a deadlock was because they had all just revived and were at the same starting point, or rather, their differences were minuscule.

But if another venerable from Heavenly Court revived, this balance would be broken, even if Giant Sun and Fang Yuan worked together, they could not match Heavenly Court.

“If we can’t stop Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, this will be the crucial moment where Heavenly Court regains its domination of the world and defeats the other venerables.”

Knowing this, after learning that Qi Sea was captured in Heavenly Court, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s standpoint changed completely.

He contacted Fang Yuan and created a plan to pretend that he was still fighting against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

“It is a pity that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has a clear grasp of the human heart, I can’t lure her to come outside!”

If Star Constellation Immortal Venerable were in Central Continent, there would still be hope. After all, her advantage in Central Continent was not as large as being physically in Heavenly Court.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable hid inside and refused to come outside no matter what, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was helpless in this situation.

Truly, a top schemer could achieve victory without even participating in battle!

At the crucial moment, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not try to fight, she was unaffected by the burden of Heavenly Court’s reputation and other factors, bearing the huge pressure of sacrificing and giving up Central Continent’s people to make the right choice.

Luck inspection.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was indignant, he used his luck inspection method.

The results were disappointing.

Heavenly Court’s luck was above everyone else, it was still showing signs of rising. Be it Giant Sun, Fang Yuan, or Spectral Soul, they were all suppressed by Heavenly Court’s luck.

Other than that, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not see any huge variables that could influence the situation.

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, why are you still hesitating?!” Fang Yuan’s voice was transmitted again.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable sighed: ”Fang Yuan, we’ve lost, accept the fact. We will need to exert a lot of effort to enter Heavenly Court, even if we get in, we are unable to cooperate sincerely, how can we be Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s match? We won’t succeed even with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!”

“Attacking rashly will cause us to fall into Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s trap, our strength will dwindle. In my opinion, we should preserve our strength for a future opportunity.”

Fang Yuan snorted coldly as he replied in displeasure: ”How can I accept this without even trying? Star Constellation Immortal Venerable is the number one wisdom path expert, she had such ease in plotting against us. If Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable revives, she will have an even easier time.”

“How can we deal with a wisdom path Gu Immortal? We need to exterminate them! We cannot give a wisdom path Gu Immortal any time to make arrangements. Our current situation is the best proof of this!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable asked in response: ”Then in your opinion, what should we do now?”

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth: ”Plunder Central Continent and slaughter the people, I don’t believe that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable will let it happen! Even if she can, after Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable revives, he will only gain a barren region!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable shook his head.

Such an act was too brutal and demonic, it did not suit his nature.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had his reservations.

If he did this, when Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable retaliate by slaughtering the Huang Jin tribes, what would he do?

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had another thought: ”Fang Yuan wants me to stand on the same side as him, if I participate in slaughtering the people of Central Continent, there will be no way of reconciling with Heavenly Court, my demonic path status will be permanent.”

Without any reconciliation, there would be no room for a truce.

The pressure of two venerables would weight on his shoulders. He was not like Fang Yuan, who was cold and unconcerned with his subordinates’ lives.

“I have Longevity Heaven as my base, even if all three venerables of Heavenly Court revive, I can still defend myself. This is my foundation for a negotiation!”

“But Fang Yuan is all alone, he has no such base.”

“This is a huge problem to him, thus, he wants me to join him.”

“If I do not participate in this, in the future, Heavenly Court will target Fang Yuan as their priority, I will have more time to cultivate. It is still not the time to go all-in now.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable thought of this and rejected Fang Yuan’s proposal.

But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not want to offend Fang Yuan, he explained: ”I can’t bring myself to do such a thing like killing all the people. I’ll advise you not to do this personally, there’s a more suitable person. I’ll lure him to you now.”

“Coward!” Fang Yuan shouted: ”All you care about is useless reputation!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not show any anger, he understood why Fang Yuan was feeling upset and angry after getting schemed against.

He lured Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to Fang Yuan, who landed in Central Continent in response.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was not like Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, he did not let Fang Yuan down. After leaving spectral heaven, he went into Central Continent and started his massacre.

This was within the expectations of Fang Yuan and Giant Sun.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s injuries were severe, but he could heal himself by slaughtering lifeforms and hunting soul beasts to increase his strength. He had done this in spectral heaven earlier, now, the situation was similar. Heavenly Court.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had been paying attention to the two venerables’ actions.

After seeing that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was killing all the lifeforms in Central Continent, she sighed deeply. But after seeing that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable left Central Continent to return to Northern Plains, her eyes shone brightly as joy filled her heart.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals could not understand why.

Even if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not want to invade Heavenly Court, he would at least ransack Central Continent for some resources, right?

But he left directly.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was clear of Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s intention.

She spoke to Golden Hooped Great Immortal: ”Your effort back then has finally paid off. This is the best result for us.”

In the past, Golden Hooped Great Immortal had invited Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to tour Heavenly Court and wanted to recruit him to become their fourth Immortal King.

His plan failed and even allowed Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to leave a luck path method as a backdoor to Heavenly Court, causing them huge losses during the fate war.

But in fact, the truth was that Golden Hooped Great Immortal’s action had a certain impact on Giant Sun Immortal Venerable. In his heart, Heavenly Court had once tried to recruit him, they even tried to make him their leader. In that case, there was a possibility of negotiating with them to come to a peaceful truce.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2327: Primordial Origin’s Revival

After hearing Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s words, many of the Gu Immortals gained some realization.

“Now it seems that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable is still a righteous path person in essence.”

“He is indeed quite different from Fang Yuan, be it in terms of action or ideology. Fang Yuan is brutal and casually sacrifices his subordinates, he treats everything as his tool. But Giant Sun Immortal Venerable is different, he cares for his descendants and is someone with deep kinship.”

“Hmph, in my opinion, he has far greater foresight than Fang Yuan. If he acts like Fang Yuan, he will have no chance of appeasing Heavenly Court, he will be our mortal enemy. Thus, he has already started planning to express his goodwill towards Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable!”

“From what I see, this is all Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s plan. She did everything to defend Heavenly Court and allowed Fang Yuan to ransack Central Continent. The truth is, I was quite unhappy about it. But now, it seems that this was only part of her plan, it managed to make Giant Sun leave Central Continent of his own accord. This is an incredible outcome! Sigh, I should not have tried to evaluate Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s wisdom with my shallow view.”

Qi Sea Ancestor’s eyes were shut, he was motionless like a statue, floating quietly in Heavenly Court.

Above his head, Star Constellation Chessboard orbited and released a pale blue light that enveloped his body.

After some preparation, the entrance of Qi Sea Ancestor’s immortal aperture started to open, the immortals cheered loudly.

Afterwards, rank eight heaven qi Immortal Gu flew out of his immortal aperture first.

After that was earth qi Immortal Gu, followed by various qi path Immortal Gu.

The immortals were in a commotion.

“Even though Qi Sea Ancestor is strong, against Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, he is only meat on the chopping block.”

“Self-detonating Immortal Gu is so easy, but right now, the pseudo venerable Qi Sea Ancestor has been completely controlled by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, he can’t even do something as simple as self-detonating his Immortal Gu.”

“Once Lord Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable revives, these qi path Immortal Gu will allow him to recover a portion of his strength, Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has truly planned it perfectly!”

The immortals praised in succession.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had clearly suppressed Qi Sea Ancestor completely, she controlled his mind and used her thoughts to replace his.

Thus, she was able to open the immortal aperture’s entrance and suppress all of the Gu worms inside.

Of course, these qi path Gu worms still belonged to Qi Sea Ancestor, they were filled with his will.

It was much more difficult for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to get rid of his will than controlling Qi Sea Ancestor’s mind directly. These Immortal Gu did not have a mind, to get rid of their lingering will of Qi Sea, the best solution would be to directly refine these qi path Immortal Gu.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not plan to do that.

She only suppressed these Immortal Gu and prevented them from self-detonating, she kept them for her master, Primordial Origin, to deal with personally.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was a qi path Gu cultivator, it was better for him to deal with these qi path Immortal Gu.

After all the Immortal Gu were retrieved, it was time for the secluded domain of heaven and earth, Hu Land.

Once Hu Land appeared in front of everyone, Heavenly Court erupted with an intense wave of cheers.

This was a qi path secluded domain of heaven and earth!

It was spoils of battle comparable to rank nine Immortal Gu!!

Qi Sea Ancestor’s Hu elevation killer move used Hu Land as the core.

A secluded domain of heaven and earth was very hard to destroy, it was much easier to obtain than Immortal Gu. Since Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could even suppress Qi Sea Ancestor’s Immortal Gu, obtaining Hu Land was a natural thing.

“With this secluded domain of heaven and earth, even if master has no rank nine Immortal Gu in his treasury, he can still display the might of qi path.”

While feeling satisfied, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not forget to inspect these Immortal Gu and the secluded domain of heaven and earth.

Fang Yuan was vigilant, so was she.

Even in Heavenly Court, she was not being careless at all.

After using all her methods to inspect them over a hundred times, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable confirmed that these Immortal Gu and the secluded domain of heaven and earth were not tampered with.

Afterwards, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable placed these loot into the immortal formation and suppressed them.

This was her final step of precaution.

Fang Yuan was a refinement path venerable, he might have some methods that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not decipher. But with these loot being suppressed in the immortal formation, even if Fang Yuan’s method activated, it would be detected by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable immediately, she would have time to counter them.

“Even if Fang Yuan has any method that I have not detected, it is not a big deal, I can suppress anything with the immortal formation.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was filled with confidence regarding this.

Back then, she had even used He Feng Yang to undergo Immortal Gu transactions with Fang Yuan.

Was she not afraid of Fang Yuan tampering with them?

Of course she had such worries.

But the concern was quite small, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was confident in noticing Fang Yuan’s methods. Other venerables like Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would also have such confidence.

Their confidence was not baseless.

Refinement path was too broadly cultivated in the whole world.

The advantage was that refinement path developed immensely, many refinement path Gu worms could advance to rank nine. The weakness was that everyone knew how to refine Gu, they had a certain understanding of refinement path.

Heavenly Court had existed for three million years, while Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was a wisdom path venerable, how could she not know the refinement method of fake Gu?

Such an action was common in the mortal Gu Master world!

If Fang Yuan made fake Gu, even if Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not cultivate refinement path, she would notice it.

Of course, if Fang Yuan had sufficient time to develop, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would not dare to take a risk in this aspect.

She would be incredibly cautious towards any Immortal Gu that Fang Yuan had contacted!

After Qi Sea Ancestor’s Immortal Gu and Hu Land were taken out, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable took out various resource points from Qi Sea’s immortal aperture.

Most of the qi path resource points were kept inside.

The ones that were taken out had one similarity, they all had a lot of non-qi path dao marks.

After finishing this, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable started to use her killer moves.

She had created these wisdom path killer moves herself, nobody else knew of them except her.

After more than ten killer moves were used, Qi Sea Ancestor’s immortal aperture and mind started to break down, all sorts of qi path resource points and his entire body started to turn into qi currents.

A massive number of qi currents were gathered together, forming into the vague shape of a qi harvest fruit.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s eyes shone with brilliance and wisdom, she used three killer moves consecutively, eliminating Qi Sea Ancestor’s will, thoughts, and remaining emotions in the qi harvest fruit.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s soul was taken out and kept in the Immortal Gu House Soul Suppression Hall. This Immortal Gu House was once used to hold Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, it was too easy to contain Qi Sea’s soul now.

The qi harvest fruit slowly stabilized.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable stopped her various wisdom path methods, carefully drawing Star Constellation Chessboard away from the location.

Even without Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s support, the qi harvest fruit was becoming clearer and more stable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable inspected it carefully and relaxed. As she had expected, the qi harvest fruit was in sync with Primordial Origin’s methods now, she did not need to do anything else.

She could not interfere anymore or it could be an issue. After all, there were conflicting dao marks, she cultivated wisdom path and star path, not qi path.

The best situation was to allow Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s methods to activate and trigger his revival.

“After three million years, Lord Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s methods are still effective! I am truly in admiration.”

“There are no issues left, Lord Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s revival is imminent!”

“It was my fault.” The newly revived Qin Ding Ling came over and said with an expression of guilt: ”If I was not muddled and let Qi Sea Ancestor take Heavenly Court’s qi harvest fruit, the first venerable to revive would have been Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable!”

Everyone consoled her upon hearing this.

Even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable looked over at her: ”Qin Ding Ling, no need to blame yourself. You are not a wisdom path Gu Immortal, while Fang Yuan is extremely crafty and has even deceived the world, it was not your fault that you failed to deduce Qi Sea Ancestor’s true identity.”

“Even I would make mistakes sometimes. The important thing is that you learn from your mistakes and grow, you must continue to look forward bravely, that is the true behavior that we should follow.”

“We will remember Lady Immortal Venerable’s teachings!” The immortals responded in unison.

The qi harvest fruit soon grew to the size of a mountain.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s qi path foundation was converted into the qi harvest fruit. After it stabilized, it was even larger than the one that Fang Yuan made back then.

As time passed, the qi harvest fruit continued to grow stronger.

In the past, the Heavenly Court immortals would be terrified of this scene. But now, they looked towards the qi harvest fruit with anticipation and excitement.

Primordial Origin’s revival process, which had been interrupted by Fang Yuan in the past, was restarting now.

Not long after, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable frowned. She noticed that the qi harvest fruit’s growth was slowing down.

“Something is wrong.” She quickly inspected.

The entire inspection process was slow and careful, she did not want a powerful investigative method to affect Primordial Origin’s revival process.

The Heavenly Court wisdom path dao marks that she refined were very useful in this case, she soon found the reason.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable had left many methods in Heavenly Court that were related to his revival. For example, the primordial qi wall.

“Master’s plan must have been to use the qi harvest fruit from the qi tides to revive himself. He arranged all sorts of qi path methods in Heavenly Court as a form of assurance. When the qi harvest fruit lacks nutrients, these qi path methods would be used to supplement it.”

However, because of the various battles that occurred, these qi path methods were greatly expended. Thus, its growth was slowed now.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had no way to make these qi path methods recover to their original state.

But after thinking about it, she quickly found a replacement method.

After all, these qi path methods were meant to support the qi harvest fruit’s growth.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable immediately ordered for all of Heavenly Court’s qi path immortal materials to be taken out while she made deductions.

Not long after, her expression turned pale, she was covered in perspiration, but she produced a qi path immortal formation.

The foundation of this qi path formation were the qi path methods from Primordial Origin, it was quickly completed under Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s arrangements.

Afterwards, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable placed a large number of qi path immortal materials into the immortal formation.

As the qi path immortal formation activated, it was quickly reduced into all sorts of qi currents that were condensed together, before being instilled into the qi harvest fruit through Primordial Origin’s arrangements.

After the boost of nutrients, the qi harvest fruit started to grow rapidly again.

But this did not last long, Heavenly Court’s storage of qi path immortal materials was quickly expended, they were about to run dry again.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2328: Explosion!!!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable saw the issue, the qi path immortal materials were insufficient, her expression turned dim.

Heavenly Court’s foundation had finally hit rock-bottom!

In fact, when she set up the star array calculation formation and nurtured the immemorial star beasts, she had already expended all of Heavenly Court’s star path resources.

Recently, Heavenly Court’s members revived continuously, the remaining immortal graveyard was also consumed until only a small area was left, it could no longer allow any Gu Immortal to revive.

Heavenly Court had developed for three million years, it had incomparable foundation, but after several huge battles, the expenditure was severe. When Spectral Soul Demon Venerable escaped from Heavenly Court, he ransacked the immortal treasury. They had to use their secret storage and even subtly draw resources from the ten great ancient sects.

Until today, Heavenly Court was already showing signs of exhausting its foundation.

Of course, the main reason why they were out of qi path resources was because the immortal material expenditure was just too high.

In Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s original plan, the qi harvest fruit would primarily grow using the qi tides, the qi path methods he left behind would only be a failsafe in case any unexpected mishaps occurred.

The qi tides were crucial in growing the qi harvest fruit.

But now, the qi tides had ended and the qi paths methods were not completely intact, they had to expend qi path immortal materials instead.

It was obvious that the more qi path immortal materials they expended, the larger the qi harvest fruit would become, and the stronger Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable would be after reviving.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made deductions again.

She used her full strength in doing this, countless thoughts collided in her mind until she felt a sharp headache, but she eventually deduced another killer move.

After testing it, she modified the killer move slightly.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s breathing was quite rough and her expression was pale, she opened the entrance of Heavenly Court at the next moment.

Before any other venerable reacted, she aimed her killer move at the entrance.

Heavenly Court’s entrance was immediately covered by a layer of profound light as it rapidly drew in heaven and earth qi from the outside world.

The heaven and earth qi were vast and boundless, they entered through the entrance with unceasing momentum and flowed into the immortal formation.

The heaven and earth qi were not of high quality but could compensate with quantity, with this supplement, the growth of the qi harvest fruit was no longer an issue.

The Heavenly Court immortals were shocked, they quickly discussed.

“Why did Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable open the entrance of Heavenly Court?”

“This is a good thing, the stronger the qi harvest fruit, the more powerful Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s qi path foundation will be after revival!”

“What if Fang Yuan attacks using this chance?”

“Hahaha, didn’t he try to attack earlier, losing to Lady Star Constellation’s divine might. Will he dare to come again?”

Fang Yuan did not show up indeed.

Not only that, even Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was not paying attention to them.

He ravaged Central Continent and slaughtered countless beings, his injuries recovered by a large extent.

Soul fog surged, wherever it went, verdant mountains turned grey and flowers wilted, wild beast corpses were lying all over the place.

As his soul howl was used, huge waves appeared on the lakes. Afterwards, corpses of aquatic animals like fish or shrimps floated to the surface.

A vast number of souls were devoured by Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he was like a huge black hole that devoured everything he slaughtered, his injuries were healed and his body expanded again.

During this process, a wild Immortal Gu was created in Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s body.

Rank eight Immortal Gu — Kill!

This caused a considerable commotion that drew the attention of Fang Yuan, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

At once, the three venerables had strange expressions.

They knew about a secret of the past.

Back then, Spectral Soul wanted to create killing path, but in the end, he failed after devouring black heaven’s heavenly spirit, he was forced to create soul path instead.

But to think that he showed signs of creating killing path now while he was not sane.

Immortal Gu Kill was clearly the core Immortal Gu of killing path, it was not formed so easily.

This was a Gu refinement undergone by the Heavenly Dao!

Most importantly, it was refined in Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s body, this meant that although he was currently not sane, he was quite close to creating killing path.

“Killing path is already showing signs of emerging.” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already returned to Northern Plains, he immediately ordered the

Huang Jin tribe Gu Immortals who were headed to Central Continent to not get near Spectral Soul Demon Venerable! They should not be greedy with super resource points, also avoiding Heaven Refining Demon Venerable.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not personally plunder Central Continent’s resource points but he did not give up, he sent his bloodline descendants.

This way, even if Heavenly Court pursued the matter, he had a degree of distance and could give excuses.

“Giant Sun, if you come and cooperate with me, I’ll give you half of the Central Continent resource points that I plunder!” Fang Yuan transmitted again, he did not give up on convincing Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable rejected with an increasingly firm attitude.

On one hand, he felt that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would not expose a weakness, this outcome was already decided, there was no point in joining hands with Fang Yuan.

On the other hand, he had his own reservations.

Firstly, his eldest son You Tian Guang was taken away by You Tian Guang in Longevity Heaven, he needed to look for his son.

Secondly, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had already used ’I reside in all living beings and heaven and earth’ twice in a short period, this move had a huge drawback, it would leave him in a weakened state for some time. He had to conceal himself and secretly get through this weakened period. If he exposed this weakness, the killer move’s value and usability would fall immensely in the future.

Heavenly Court.

The qi harvest fruit continued to grow larger.

The vast amount of heaven and earth qi, countless qi path immortal materials, as well as methods like the primordial qi wall, were all turned into qi path dao marks that were added into the qi harvest fruit.

At the core of the qi harvest fruit, a human shaped core was formed.

As time passed, the core’s features became clearer, it was increasingly human-like.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable saw this and immediately comprehended that Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s revival method contained the profundity of human path.

“To think that master’s human path attainment is even higher than I thought.”

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable smiled faintly as memories surfaced in her mind.

In his bed, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable suddenly coughed out blood.

“Master, how are you?” Star Constellation quickly came over and used her methods to heal him.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable had just blocked a chaotic disaster and fixed the hole in the world, he was heavily injured and could barely get up.

Star Constellation did her best to stabilize his injuries.

She had a look of surprise, she found that Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable aggravated the injuries purely as a result of his own actions!

Star Constellation frowned deeply: ”Master, you suffered such heavy injuries and can’t even walk now, yet you still took a risk to create a killer move!”

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable had a look of joy: ”These injuries are not an issue, my disciple, I succeeded. I grasped onto that inspiration and created a human path killer move.”

“Using this move, we can use the immortal aperture to extend the lifespan of Gu Immortals. Among all the existing lifespan extension methods, my newly created method is the most effective!”

Star Constellation looked at the content and had a gaze of surprise, light flickered in her eyes as she understood the true value of this killer move.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable laughed loudly: ”With this method, we will not need to force human Gu Immortal experts to join our Heavenly Court. The temptation of lifespan extension is too great.”

“From now on, as long as they contribute their immortal aperture to Heavenly Court, they will become members of Heavenly Court. They will get to use this human path killer move to extend their lifespan.”

Star Constellation nodded, she was joyous as well: ”Master, what is the name of this killer move?”

“Cough, cough.” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable coughed before saying nonchalantly: ”The name is not important, you can decide it for me, just make one up.”

Star Constellation quickly answered, she loved to name things, she added: ”We need to give it an awesome name, it should draw people’s attention! Hmm... let me think about it.”

“My good disciple, go and think of the name! I am too old now, I don’t have the creativity anymore. After you decide, let me know.” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable rested in bed and waved his hand to Star Constellation.

Star Constellation nodded and said solemnly: ”Master, you must not take such risks again, your injuries are too severe this time!”

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable laughed to himself: ”These injuries are nowhere near my limit. I’ve once suffered even greater injuries, you know it too, there has been at least five of such instances.”

Star Constellation stared angrily: ”You are already twenty-five thousand years old, you need to admit you are old. You’ve already done enough for humanity, since you are injured, you need to recuperate. I will lead Heavenly Court!”

“Hahaha, with you around, what worries do I have?” Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable laughed as his voice became softer, he showed an expression of dejectedness: ”Maybe, I should really admit that I am too old...”

“You won’t.” Star Constellation shook her head, she showed an expression of knowing her master very well but being helpless against his antics.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable laughed after seeing her expression, while she was taking her leave, he even winked at her playfully.

Star Constellation took care of Primordial Origin, who was recuperating while handling Heavenly Court’s affairs, in her free time, she thought of the name of the human path killer move to relax her mind.

Star Constellation was busy for three days, after that, she finally had some insight about the name of the human path killer move.

But she did not know that she would not have a chance to tell Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable about this name anymore.

When she freed herself from her busy work and went to visit Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, she saw that he was lying on the bed quietly, his eyes were shut and his expression was plain, there was only a faint smile at the corners of lips.

This legendary leader of humanity, the first generation Immortal King of Heavenly Court, the person who held up the banner of humanity’s retaliation and forced all the variant human forces to hide themselves, had passed away.

He died calmly.

Peacefully.

Relieved.

His disciple was the reason why he was relieved.

The moment Star Constellation saw Primordial Origin again, she realized.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s injuries were extremely severe, he had only purposely concealed the fact.

He was making considerations for the big picture.

After all, although the variant humans retreated from Central Continent, they were still rampant in the other four regions. Even in Central Continent, many variant human forces hid in their blessed lands and grotto-heavens, they could not be found.

He knew his injuries could not be healed, using the last of his strength, he painstakingly created a human path killer move to aid the future development of Heavenly Court.

Star Constellation stood in front of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s bed and kept silent for a long time.

Eventually, she spoke in a hoarse voice: ”Master, I’ve already thought of the name for this human path killer move. It suits this scenario quite well, I’ll name it — Lying in Bed.”

Lying in bed was able to turn the immortal aperture that a Gu Immortal contributed to Heavenly Court into a bed that was free from calamities and tribulations, it could also extend their lifespan to a great extent. Back in that era, it was the number one lifespan extension method besides lifespan Gu!

Afterwards, Star Constellation created another human path killer move on the foundation of this move, naming it — Others Sleep Soundly.

Others sleep soundly allowed the Heavenly Court members to sleep on their respective beds and reduce their body activity and time flow to the lowest possible limit. At the same time, their will would be extracted and converted into human nature[1. Opposite of heaven nature Spectral Soul is filled by, see 2265] to help Star Constellation Immortal Venerable resist heaven’s will after she assimilated with the Dao.

At the final moments of his life, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable lay in bed and contributed his final moments to the future of Heavenly Court and all of humanity.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did the same, in order to protect Heavenly Court, she sacrificed herself and became one with the Dao.

This pair of master and disciple were truly of the same lineage!

Lying in bed and others sleep soundly became the foundation of Heavenly Court’s immortal graveyard.

Within the qi harvest fruit, the human shaped core had already grown to the size of a normal human adult.

There was a change in the qi harvest fruit’s skin as well, countless primordial qi walls formed and wrapped around the core of the qi harvest fruit.

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s revival was already reaching the final steps.

The methods displayed during this process made Star Constellation Immortal Venerable quite surprised, she gasped and sighed at the intricacy of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s qi path methods.

As time passed, a wave of grand aura permeated the qi harvest fruit.

The qi path dao marks that were created from heaven and earth qi, along with the qi path immortal materials, were added to the qi harvest fruit continuously.

The human shaped qi harvest fruit was already showing Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s form.

Many Central Continent Gu Immortals were currently kneeling.

Heavenly Court’s members had tears in their eyes, they were incredibly excited.

He was the first venerable of the world, among them, he was also the one with the longest lifespan.

Without him, humanity would not have its current prosperity, he was the person who led the rise of the human race!

He was the creator of qi path and had left behind countless methods to defend Heavenly Court, including primordial qi wall, lying in bed, and others.

He had defeated countless variant human experts, he had suffered countless injuries, who knows how much blood he lost in the process.

He created Emperor City, which was the incomplete form of Divine Emperor City.

He was the first to contribute his immortal aperture, he gave up on the clan system and recruited disciples, he was the role model of Central Continent’s sect system.

He worked his hardest and gave his life to Heavenly Court and all of humanity.

Even the variant humans who hated him to the core had to admit that he was a grand existence.

He was Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable!

And today, he was going to return to this world.

The qi harvest fruit started to tremble as a grand aura leaked out, creating huge qi waves.

The entrance of Heavenly Court opened as this aura was exposed to the outside world.

At once, within spectral heaven, qi currents either fell, moved together like a storm, or even created all sorts of vortexes and whirlpools.

A peculiar phenomenon was formed as the five regions went into an uproar!

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s revival was almost completed.

Finally, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable let out a sigh of relief and knelt on one knee as she said: ”This disciple pays respects to master.”

Within Northern Plains, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable sighed, the outcome was decided.

Fang Yuan, however, stared at Heavenly Court. He frowned with a vague hint of anticipation and excitement in his eyes.

At the next moment.

Boom!!!!!!!

Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable — exploded!

In Northern Plains, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable stood on the spot, he looked in the direction of Heavenly Court with uncontrollable shock on his face.

Meanwhile, Fang Yuan had a faint smile.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2329: Fang Yuan’s Scheme To Blow Up Heavenly Court

This huge explosion was too sudden, it had occurred too fiercely!

At once, winds soared and clouds dispersed, heaven and earth changed colors.

Heavenly Court shattered!

A large number of grotto-heaven fragments flew everywhere like a volcanic explosion. Only half of the immortal aperture entrance remained, there were all sorts of holes and gaps everywhere, exposed in spectral heaven.

Dust and smoke rumbled, Heavenly Court could not be seen clearly now.

An unknown number of Gu Immortals had died.

The only thing that could be confirmed was that the mountain-like qi harvest fruit had dissipated entirely.

“I succeeded...” In Central Continent, Fang Yuan looked in the direction of Heavenly Court and let out a breath of air.

Long ago, he had already started to consider this issue.

At that time, he was in a predicament with danger all around him.

The sovereign immortal aperture’s time flow was too fast, this forced Fang Yuan to undergo tribulations. Although he had used endless trouble multiple times to delay his tribulations, the chaotic disaster could not be skipped by this method.

Once Fang Yuan underwent tribulation, he would need to place his sovereign immortal aperture in spectral heaven and open his immortal aperture’s entrance for some time.

This would expose a huge flaw and lure Star Constellation Immortal Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable to attack him, even Spectral Soul Demon Venerable might come!

Other than the danger of tribulation, Fang Yuan also felt hunger.

This was the sovereign immortal body’s hunger.

The sovereign immortal body was created using sovereign immortal fetus Gu, the flaw was that it needed to consume an immortal aperture of the same rank as the Gu Immortal once in a while.

Now that Fang Yuan was a venerable, he would need to annex a rank nine immortal aperture!

These two crises made Fang Yuan extremely worried.

As the saying went: If one did not have big worries, they would worry about smaller things.

Fang Yuan had great foresight, he could also anticipate his future problems. Rather than leaving these issues to the future, he should start resolving them now!

Fang Yuan did not have a passive nature, he enjoyed taking the initiative to launch the first attack and control the situation!

Fang Yuan knew one of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s revival methods.

The reason was simple.

The killer move stealing heavenly secret.

Back then, Fang Yuan used the immortal ascension of his Gu Immortal seeds to experience natural inspiration and use stealing heavenly secret to inspect all the secrets within Heavenly Court!

He knew the profundities contained in the qi harvest fruit were meant to revive Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable.

Even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was unclear of the exact details regarding the qi harvest fruit revival method.

But Fang Yuan had a clear understanding of Heavenly Court, along with his qi path great grandmaster attainment level, he made deductions and research with wisdom Gu’s help.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made arrangements within the star array calculation formation, her methods were precise and meticulous. The intention was to use both Embroidered Tower and Star Constellation Chessboard to capture a pseudo venerable.

This arrangement was done secretly, Fang Yuan did not know of it.

But he did not need to guess to know that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would definitely try to revive Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable!

If he were in her shoes, it was certain that he would prioritize in reviving the other two Immortal Kings of Heavenly Court.

Things were difficult to do openly, but easy to do secretly. Once Star Constellation Immortal Venerable made a move, her every action would expose her intention.

Heavenly Court had deep foundations, it was under the rule of three Immortal Kings. This was Heavenly Court’s greatest strength, but to Fang Yuan, it also was their greatest weakness.

Thus, Fang Yuan thought of sacrificing Qi Sea Ancestor to purposely lure Star Constellation Immortal Venerable into using the qi harvest fruit revival method.

Even if Qi Sea Ancestor was his clone, so what?

For the goal of eternal life, what could he not sacrifice?

For the sake of his grand ambition, would Fang Yuan be stingy on such a sacrifice?

The plan to give up Qi Sea Ancestor and use him as bait to revive Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable was quite likely to succeed.

But he needed a chance to send Qi Sea there.

He could not do it openly.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was the number one person in wisdom path, Fang Yuan had experienced her strength countless times, she often saw through his plans when they were still at their initial stage. There was a clear example previously with Fang clan.

If he did it in a way that was too obvious, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable would notice and use the plan against him, causing Fang Yuan huge losses.

Thus, he waited until the opportunity presented itself.

Undoubtedly, the heaven path dream realms appeared at the best timing!

For Fang Yuan’s case, although the heaven path dream realms could raise his heaven path attainment level, he was not anxious to get them.

As long as nobody could make use of these heaven path dream realms, he could continue to refine rank nine Immortal Gu secretly, to raise his strength and pull apart his distance from the other venerables.

The longer this dragged on, the stronger Fang Yuan would become.

But the contest over the heaven path dream realms became the best red herring to conceal his scheme to give up Qi Sea Ancestor to the enemy!

Fang Yuan thought a lot about this, he made difficult choices.

He could not act too willing, everything had to be logical.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s intelligence was unfathomable, she was too smart. But her wisdom was something that Fang Yuan could make use of!

Thus, Fang Yuan sent Qi Sea Ancestor into the star array calculation formation and did not do anything excessive. Afterwards, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable personally ’helped’ Fang Yuan and completed the arrangements for him, capturing Qi Sea Ancestor.

Throughout the process, Qi Sea Ancestor was kept in the dark by Fang Yuan, he was unaware.

Not just him, Wu Shuai and Zhan Bu Du did not know either.

It was like how Star Constellation Immortal Venerable deceived the five immortals from Heavenly Court regarding the plan to take Lin Jian Xing’s otherworldly sword path dao marks.

But Fang Yuan was even more ruthless, he even deceived himself.

Giving up the Qi Sea clone was not enough, to assure Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, he even gave up the qi path Immortal Gu and Hu Land.

So what if he had to give up these qi path Immortal Gu?

As long as he could achieve his goal, Fang Yuan could even give up rank nine Immortal Gu!

Hu Land... wasn’t it just a secluded domain of heaven and earth?

If it could deceive Star Constellation Immortal Venerable for some time, not to mention one secluded domain, he would even give up three if he had to.

In Fang Yuan’s eyes, the so-called Immortal Gu and secluded domain of heaven and earth, no matter how precious, were just tools for him to go after eternal life.

Since they were tools, if there was value in sacrificing them, he would do it!

Fang Yuan had no hesitation regarding this.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable only had a vague understanding of the qi harvest fruit revival method, but Fang Yuan knew it clearly.

He was a refinement path venerable, he was also proficient at revival methods.

From the perspective of refinement path, the qi harvest fruit revival method was just using the qi harvest fruit as the main material, along with Primordial

Origin’s arrangements in Heavenly Court, to create a new body and soul.

Was it any different from Gu refinement in essence?

No!

In that case, Fang Yuan could make his arrangements.

He first treated Qi Sea Ancestor as a qi path immortal material and processed some steps in advance. Of course, the corresponding memories were already removed from Qi Sea Ancestor.

It was like how Star Constellation Immortal Venerable altered the memories of the Gu Immortals who entered the derivation formation.

Qi Sea Ancestor’s entire body was tampered with, but this was related to the peak profundities of refinement path, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable could not detect anything even after checking many times.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had refinement path attainment too, but Qi Sea Ancestor looked normal on the surface, there would only be issues after he was used as an immortal material for the qi harvest fruit revival method.

And during the process of revival, the problem would intensify.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not completely understand or control the qi harvest fruit revival process.

This gave Fang Yuan many chances to take advantage of the situation!

“My plan succeeded, as for the gains, it will depend on future developments.” Fang Yuan did not rush to attack Heavenly Court.

He continued to plunder Central Continent while contacting Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

“Giant Sun, we are so lucky! A problem happened during Primordial Origin’s revival, Heavenly Court blew up instead. This is our best opportunity to strike, if we miss this and Heavenly Court recovers, we will regret not taking action for life.”

After seeing Heavenly Court’s explosion, after a momentary shock, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable immediately thought of attacking Heavenly Court.

After getting Fang Yuan’s transmission, he became even more tempted.

But he was hesitant now.

“Should I really attack Heavenly Court now?”

“Did they really make a mistake? Is Fang Yuan behind this?” Giant Sun Immortal Venerable thought of Fang Yuan’s mysterious defensive method, he really could not see through this person. It was possible that Fang Yuan was behind this all along.

“Strange, why did I not sense this huge variable earlier when I used luck inspection on Heavenly Court?”

“Unless, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used a method to conceal Heavenly Court and it stopped my luck inspection from working? That would really be ironic.”

The last thing that made Giant Sun Immortal Venerable hesitate was Light Emperor.

His eldest son.

As well as the wild rank nine light Gu in his immortal aperture!

Light Emperor was kidnapped by the two legendary immemorial beasts, You Tian Guang and Zuo Ye Hui, if Giant Sun Immortal Venerable did not go to save him, he would be in danger.

Of course, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable thought of his own Blood Sea.

Since he could revive Light Emperor once, he could definitely do so again.

“Giant Sun is still hesitating, did he notice anything?” Fang Yuan saw that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was not taking any action, he started to ponder.

Fang Yuan did not know about the secret behind Giant Sun and his son, he also did not know about the drawback of using the killer move, I reside in all living beings and heaven and earth.

But he soon thought of a reason.

“With the explosion, Heavenly Court’s losses cannot be assessed now. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s injuries are unclear as well. She has a huge territorial advantage inside Heavenly Court, she must not have gotten too injured, so she is still a threat.”

“This may be Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s concern.”

“In his opinion, my Qi Sea clone was captured and Heavenly Court suddenly exploded, which caused Primordial Origin’s revival to fail, so I am the most suspicious one. At the same time, I should be the most nervous person.”

“I do not have my own stronghold, if Heavenly Court’s two venerables join hands, I will be in an even worse predicament.”

“Giant Sun Immortal Venerable said the situation is unclear, he is hinting to me that I should make a move first!”

“If Heavenly Court is truly weakened, he will come and join in the fight to steal some benefits himself.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable chose to wait and observe, this made Fang Yuan’s plan fall short.

In fact, attacking Heavenly Court now was abrupt and contained risks.

Even Fang Yuan did not know what condition Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was currently in.

But since Fang Yuan had already planned this far, would he not have backup solution?

He casted his gaze at Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who was far away.

After this period of killing, his injuries had mostly recovered.

“He is the best vanguard that we can have.” Fang Yuan smiled as he used his method.

Totem killer moves flew out and provoked the insane Spectral Soul Demon Venerable continuously, he was successfully lured into Heavenly Court!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2330: Almost Suffering Amnesia From The Explosion

With a soft grunt, Zhao Lian Yun woke up in an area of ruins and rubble.

All she saw were qi currents in front of her, the entire place was covered in white, in all directions.

Her ears were buzzing, she felt dizzy and lightheaded.

“What... what happened to me?”

Zhao Lian Yun breathed roughly as she inspected her body.

She was originally wearing a white dress, she had light skin and white teeth, as refreshing as lilies in the morning. But now, her face was blackened like soot, her white dress was torn and tattered. She was like a refugee living in a famine, having a wretched appearance.

After checking, she found that her body was intact but she had no strength at all, her limbs felt weak and powerless.

“What happened? Why am I like this?”

Primordial Origin’s explosion occurred too suddenly and abruptly, Zhao Lian Yun suffered a huge impact and almost experienced amnesia!

But soon, her dizziness faded away and Zhao Lian Yun slowly regained her memories.

An unprecedented and terrifying explosion had occurred!!!!

Her pupils contracted, this scene was etched in her mind and would not be forgotten in her entire life.

It was too terrifying!

A moment ago, the many Gu Immortals around her were watching the mountain-like qi harvest fruit with immense anticipation for Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s revival.

But at the next moment, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable exploded!

Among all of the Gu Immortals, Zhao Lian Yun was standing near the periphery, but she was still affected by the explosion.

This explosion was too intense, the whole of Heavenly Court was in ruins, Zhao Lian Yun naturally could not escape.

“Why did it explode all of a sudden?!” As her memories cleared up, Zhao Lian Yun’s breathing became rougher.

“I can’t believe it, I am practically unharmed. Did love Gu protect me?”

“Wait... I need to save the rest!”

Zhao Lian Yun’s heart jumped, she realized what she should be doing.

She might have had love Gu’s protection, but others did not have a rank nine Immortal Gu like her.

Zhao Lian Yun quickly set off as she went into the vast field of qi currents, searching for other surviving Gu Immortals.

Before the explosion occurred, the Gu Immortals of the ten great ancient sects were all at the periphery, they were far apart and watched the qi harvest fruit in small groups. The people who were closer to the center were the members of Heavenly Court.

White qi rumbled like a vast fog, Zhao Lian Yun tried many investigative methods but none worked.

These white qi were remnants of the qi harvest fruit, the aftermath of the explosion! With the area being filled with qi path dao marks, it was not strange that a mere rank six Gu Immortal like Zhao Lian Yun was unable to use investigative methods, unless she could use love Gu now.

But love Gu was not just a rank nine Immortal Gu, it was very special. Even a venerable could not refine it forcefully, even though it was wisdom path, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had not been able to use it. Thus, it continued to live in Zhao Lian Yun’s body.

Zhao Lian Yun did not refine love Gu but received its acknowledgement instead. Thus, she could not activate it freely, sometimes, she wanted it to attack but it would escape with her. If she wanted it to defend, it might heal instead.

Furthermore, each time love Gu was used, it would take something away from Zhao Lian Yun, sometimes, it would even take lifespan!

Zhao Lian Yun flew into the white qi and looked around for people using her memories of the location.

After a while, she gasped as she found Bu Zhen Zi.

When the explosion occurred, he was standing beside her, they were talking.

But after the explosion, they were sent flying and left their original spot.

But he was still the first person she found.

Bu Zhen Zi’s injuries were terrifying.

Half his body was blown away, only his fragile skeleton was left protecting his heart. He only had two internal organs left, the rest were blown to smithereens.

The remaining half of Bu Zhen Zi’s body had turned into a phantom state, his limbs, chest, and internal organs were linked by a translucent thread, he seemed to be in a stable condition.

Zhao Lian Yun wanted to save him but found that she was helpless to do anything.

The injuries were just too severe!

The missing half of his body was not important, forget about Heavenly Court, even Spirit Affinity House had many ways to regrow his bones, organs, and flesh.

But the issue was the large number of qi path dao marks that were carved on his body.

The remaining half of his body emitted dense white smoke made of white qi, his remaining organs and bones were also slowly turning into qi.

What kept him alive was the phantom state that half of his body was currently in.

“When the explosion occurred, Bu Zhen Zi used a phantom path method, but even with this semi-invulnerable state, he could not avoid the injuries caused by this explosion.”

Zhao Lian Yun deduced the situation that happened and sighed deeply, worry and frustration could be seen on her face.

Bu Zhen Zi was kept alive by his half phantom body, but this would not last long. The qi path dao marks were going to affect it soon, slowly turning everything into qi.

“Bu Zhen Zi can’t last much longer...” Zhao Lian Yun was helpless, she felt increasingly anxious.

She tried to wake him up but Bu Zhen Zi remained unconscious.

Zhao Lian Yun did not even dare to move Bu Zhen Zi, she was afraid that he would die from the smallest impact.

She had to temporarily abandon him and remember this spot, before going back into the white qi fog to look for others.

“Is anyone here? Please help!”

Zhao Lian Yun moved around in the vast white qi fog.

She called out continuously, the feeling of loneliness and helplessness soon assaulted her in this situation.

She was still in disbelief.

When she came earlier, she looked at the layers of buildings and saw how grand and majestic Heavenly Court was, she felt surprise and admiration from the depths of her heart. Heavenly Court’s immense foundation was accumulated through countless years of history, she felt tiny and insignificant, while also having a sense of security in this place.

When she witnessed the gradual revival of Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable, she felt that Heavenly Court was regaining its former glory!

But then, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable exploded.

It was too sudden and too abrupt!

“What happened? Did Fang Yuan or the other venerables attack?”

“What are Heavenly Court’s losses?”

“Can anyone come to help me? At least respond with a word!”

Zhao Lian Yun suddenly stopped moving, there was an intense suction force coming from in front of her, the surrounding white qi currents were sucked in.

Zhao Lian Yun barely stabilized her footing as she slowly got close.

The suction force was becoming gradually weaker.

After Zhao Lian Yun reached the source, her pupils contracted as she saw an immortal aperture’s entrance!

The entrance was open and drawing in white qi from outside, after stabilizing, a blessed land was formed.

Zhao Lian Yun stood before the immortal aperture’s entrance in a daze, motionless.

She saw the scenery inside the entrance, there were rivers and flower trees. Under the waves of qi currents, petals fell from the trees and fell into the rivers, flowing downstream where the carps waited to eat the petals as food.

This was the scene of Fairy Liu Fang’s immortal aperture, it was extremely beautiful and valuable, it was quite famous in Spirit Affinity House.

Fairy Liu Fang was in charge of the secret inheritance peak, she was a neutral faction supreme elder in Spirit Affinity House.

Zhao Lian Yun remembered that the first time she went to secret inheritance peak, Fairy Liu Fang did not attend to her personally which was the rule as she was the current generation fairy.

Afterwards, their relationship had always been plain.

However, no matter how distant they were, seeing this immortal aperture entrance, Zhao Lian Yun’s eyes turned red, she felt an intense feeling of sorrow in her heart.

She was dead.

Fairy Liu Fang died during the explosion.

Although she had rank seven cultivation level, she did not have the defensive power of phantom path, she did not have love Gu either.

Not a single trace of her remained, her immortal aperture landed in Heavenly Court. Because Heavenly Court was filled with heaven’s will and had no heavenly spirit, Liu Fang blessed land was formed by taking in heaven and earth qi from outside to stabilize itself.

Zhao Lian Yun barely managed to control her emotions, she continued to look around for help.

Along the way, she saw many immortal aperture entrances which were currently taking in heaven and earth qi.

There were too many deaths!

“Not mentioning the Heavenly Court members, Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects sent more than ten Gu Immortals each. Not counting the captives in the star array calculation formation, there are over a hundred Gu Immortals from the ten sects in Heavenly Court now.”

“This explosion killed eighty percent of the Gu Immortals!”

Zhao Lian Yun calculated, she felt her heart turning cold.

The ten great ancient sects of Central Continent had many Gu Immortals, before the five regions became one, Immortal Crane Sect alone had twelve Gu Immortals, and this was one of the weakest sects among the ten.

After the five regions became one, the earth veins moved while qi tides appeared, producing countless immortal materials. This caused many Gu Immortals within the sects to become stronger, the Gu Immortal seeds also had deeper foundations.

During the wave of immortal ascension, many Gu Immortal seeds in the ten great ancient sects succeeded in becoming Gu Immortals. Aside from them, there were also other Gu Immortals recruited from outside.

For example, supreme elder Wu Zhang from Heavenly Lotus Sect recruited the Wood Virtue Elder Mu Huai from the Five Virtues Sect. After the latter became an immortal, because he was a higher-up of the Five Virtues Sect that Wu Zhang created, he was qualified to enter Heavenly Lotus Sect.

This was the advantage of Central Continent’s sect system.

Earlier, to ensure Primordial Origin’s revival, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable gave up everything else in the process. To prevent Fang Yuan’s retaliation, she brought all the elites of Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects into Heavenly Court.

But to think that Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable would explode upon revival, like this, many of Central Continent’s Gu Immortals died, the pillars of Central Continent’s righteous path collapsed.

Such a terrifying loss made Zhao Lian Yun’s arms and legs turn weak.

“Doomed, Central Continent is doomed.”

“Maybe Heavenly Court can still revive them?” Zhao Lian Yun was hopeful.

But she was not stupid, the more she thought about it, the more she sensed that there was a huge scheme behind this explosion!

Central Continent was plotted against.

Heavenly Court fell into a trap!

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable also fell for a scheme!

Although Zhao Lian Yun had rank nine love Gu, she was only rank six, what could she do?

She could only get help, she shouted loudly.

Zhao Lian Yun started walking slower and slower.

At this moment, she felt that she was so weak!

“Don’t be dejected, current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House, Heavenly Court is still around, we are also still alive.” Right at this moment, there was a lantern that brightened inside the vast white qi.

The lantern was not bright but it was stubborn, it forced its way out of the white qi and arrived before Zhao Lian Yun.

It was an elderly Gu Immortal, his body was bloodstained from head to toe.

One of his arms was gone from the explosion, his remaining arm was carrying a small fire in his palm.

Zhao Lian Yun recognized him, it was Immortal Crane Sect’s Old Lord Can Yang.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2331: Pitiful Survivors

Old Lord Can Yang was a famous expert in Central Continent, his reputation was long established.

Zhao Lian Yun looked at him, some information surfaced in her mind. After becoming the current generation fairy of Spirit Affinity House, because she could not undergo tribulations, her cultivation level could not rise. She could only spend her time on other things, thus, she had a clear understanding of most characters in Central Continent’s Gu Immortal world.

Zhao Lian Yun knew that that Old Lord Can Yang had the Immortal Gu Flickering Flame, he created an amazing immortal killer move called life chasing fire, it was renowned in Central Continent.

Old Lord Can Yang rarely moved around these last years, he had been staying in seclusion.

The most significant thing he did recently was to investigate the truth behind the fall of Eighty-Eight True Yang Building in Northern Plains with Feng Jiu Ge, they fought against Shadow Sect there.

And recently, Old Lord Can Yang won the contest against Zhang Ji.

Zhang Ji was a Gu Immortal from Black Heaven Temple, although he was a relatively unknown expert, he had a unique method to counter flames. In the end, he still lost to the fire path cultivator Old Lord Can Yang.

Although the lantern in Old Lord Can Yang’s hand was weak, it produced a warm feeling in Zhao Lian Yun’s heart instantly.

Many people were like this, they were often fragile and weak when they were lonely.

But if a companion appeared, even if this person was useless, the company they provided would still create a sense of warmth and safety in their heart.

Zhao Lian Yun was such a person.

She was an otherworldly demon who was not originally from this world. Her nature was already like this before she came here, that was one of the reasons why she felt so attached to Ma Hong Yun after receiving his care and concern.

Zhao Lian Yun breathed in deeply, the look of dejectedness on her face quickly faded away as she asked Old Lord Can Yang for help, she explained Bu Zhen Zi’s condition.

But Old Lord Can Yang shook his head slowly: ”I cultivate fire path, my understanding of phantom path is very shallow, I am not skilled in healing methods. There is nothing I can do.”

Once he said that, Old Lord Can Yang’s body started to shiver at an observable level.

His face turned pale as paper.

At the same time, white qi appeared on his body, it was most dense around the wound on his arm that was cut off.

“Cough cough.”

Old Lord Can Yang continued to cough, each time, blood was coughed out.

The blood fell to the ground and turned into white qi, quickly dissipating.

Old Lord Can Yang gritted his teeth and activated his method, this situation lasted for over ten breaths of time before he suppressed his wounds again, color returned to his face and his coughing stopped.

His methods were only usable on himself, or rather, only fire path Gu Immortals, they would not work on Bu Zhen Zi. In fact, they could make his condition worse.

Next, Old Lord Can Yang and Zhao Lian Yun moved together.

Along the way, they saw more immortal aperture entrances, which were open and absorbing white qi wildly.

They also saw some people who were alive.

There was a giant monkey lying on the ground, he was like a small mountain.

The monkey was originally covered in golden hair, like there was armor on the body. But now, half the body was blackened, he was like a fallen general who had lost his armor.

His muscles were originally strong and tough, he looked very powerful and brave, but now, his body was covered in mushy flesh and blood, bones could be seen on his deeper wounds, he sprawled on the ground and could not get up.

The monkey had a pair of golden eyes that were shining with pressuring brilliance, but now, his gaze was scattered and lost, he only regained some spirit after seeing Zhao Lian Yun and Old Lord Can Yang.

“What? He is Combat Immortal Sect’s Immortal Monkey King Shi Lei. He cultivates earth path and transformation path, he is currently using his signature killer move — Rock Mountain Immortal Monkey King Transformation!” Zhao Lian Yun was stunned, having recognized the monkey’s identity instantly.

Shi Lei was the publicly known number one rank seven Gu Immortal in Central Continent, his battle strength was even higher than Old Lord Can Yang!

But he was even closer to the explosion than Old Lord Can Yang, after it happened, he did not have time to activate his rock mountain immortal monkey king transformation.

This was a compound killer move of two paths, it expended a lot of thoughts.

Shi Lei did not have wisdom path foundation, he needed a lot of preparation to use this move.

He used other methods to survive the explosion, afterwards, because he could not heal himself, he had to use this move to turn himself into an ancient desolate beast. Using the physique of an ancient desolate beast, its self-recovery allowed him to endure these injuries and barely survive.

After seeing Old Lord Can Yang and Zhao Lian Yun, Shi Lei blinked at them with his golden eyes as a greeting.

He did not even dare to breathe heavily now, it would be a problem if his injuries were worsened.

Evidently, Shi Lei could only protect himself now, he could not help others.

“Cough, cough.” Old Lord Can Yang coughed again, blood could be seen again. A moment later, he suppressed his injuries again.

Zhao Lian Yun and Old Lord Can Yang continued on their journey.

Not long after, they met Yang Feng.

He was a rank seven Gu Immortal of Ancient Soul Sect, he cultivated transformation path. Like Shi Lei, he had also turned himself into an ancient desolate beast.

The originally majestic giant wolf was lying on the ground like a beaten dog.

But his injuries were less severe than those of Shi Lei, he could still talk to Zhao Lian Yun.

He was not stronger than Shi Lei, but during the explosion, he subconsciously used the transformation killer move that he was most familiar with and turned into an ancient desolate beast.

He cultivated transformation path solely, he was most familiar with this giant wolf transformation, it was almost like his instinct. Thus, it could be used rapidly, almost activating in an instant.

“My greatest injury is my spine, if I exert it even a little, my spine will break.”

After Yang Feng explained his situation, he joined Zhao Lian Yun and Old Lord Can Yang’s group.

The three of them continued to search, soon, they found Vicious Lightning Fiend.

Vicious Lightning Fiend also had rank seven cultivation level, his body was covered in lightning as he floated in the air, three Lightning Deities surrounded his body and assisted in healing him.

While healing, lightning crackled around him as sparks were created, causing quite a commotion.

“I was fortunate.”

“Right before the explosion occurred, I watched while having my Lightning Deities revolve around me to leave a good impression on Lord Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable.”

After the explosion, although there were more than ten Lightning Deities earlier, only four remained. To save his life, Vicious Lightning Fiend sacrificed another Lightning Deity to heal himself. Now, only three were left.

This was a huge loss for him.

“The killer move Lightning Deity was created by Vicious Lightning Fiend using the incomplete Immortal Gu recipe of Blood Deity. When the qi tides swept the world and the five regions became one, immortal materials appeared, which allowed Vicious Lightning Fiend to receive a lot of funding from Myriad Dragon Dock, he quickly accumulated many Lightning Deities. With more than ten Lightning Deities which had rank seven Gu Immortal battle strength each, he was known as a top expert among rank seven Gu Immortals in Central Continent, only being inferior to Shi Lei.”

Zhao Lian Yun recalled as she greeted Vicious Lightning Fiend.

Vicious Lightning Fiend’s bad temper was famous, but now, he was very polite to Zhao Lian Yun.

Seeing that her injuries were the lightest, he acknowledged her strength.

This explosion killed most of Central Continent’s Gu Immortals, the remaining ones were either lucky or sufficiently strong!

But there was an awkward thing.

Gu Immortals with greater battle strength often did not excel in healing. They were adept at healing themselves but not others.

Thus, even though Vicious Lightning Fiend joined this group, they still had no way to help Bu Zhen Zi or Shi Lei.

As time passed, the white qi fog that obscured everyone’s vision became less dense.

These white qi were qi path immortal materials, but nobody had the mood to collect them.

The blessed lands or even grotto-heavens left behind by the Central Continent Gu Immortals who died were absorbing a large amount of white qi. At the same time, white qi also flowed out of Heavenly Court through the gaps that formed.

In any case, the vision of the immortals was returning.

“Wait.” Yang Feng, who had turned into a giant wolf and needed to rest every few steps, suddenly spoke.

Everyone was used to it.

Along the way, he had been asking for them to stop once in a while to lie down and recover his strength.

His waist injury was too severe, the wound was huge as well, one could see his kidney from the exposed wound.

White qi was flowing out of his kidney.

“Yang Feng, is your waist hurting again?” Zhao Lian Yun cast a concerned gaze at him.

Yang Feng nodded: ”Of course my waist hurts, but more importantly, there are people coming from behind us.”

“Indeed, there are three of them.” Old Lord Can Yang’s gaze flickered as he noticed.

“Cough, cough.” After saying that, he started coughing blood again.

“Our allies?” Vicious Lightning Fiend asked while mobilizing his thoughts, the three Lightning Deities quickly spread out towards the sky behind them.

Zhao Lian Yun and the rest stopped moving, they started at the stirring white qi.

The three Lightning Deities waited solemnly, but suddenly, one spun around on the spot, one flew up into the sky, while the final one twisted its body around like it was having a spasm from a lightning shock!

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2332: Heavenly Court’s Resolve

Zhao Lian Yun and the others quickly cast a look of surprise at Vicious Lightning Fiend.

Vicious Lightning Fiend’s face turned red, this was a rarely seen expression, he explained: ”The Lightning Deities are damaged from the explosion, due to the qi path dao marks carved on them, they are hard to control. If my concentration falls, they will go berserk.”

Everyone gasped in realization.

They were slightly anxious earlier as they thought the Lightning Deities were being attacked by a mysterious method.

A few breaths of time later, Old Lord Can Yang relaxed and said: ”They are our comrades.”

Soon, two rank eight Gu Immortals appeared before the group.

They were rank eight supreme elders from Heaven’s Envy Manor and Spirit Butterfly Valley.

The immortals saw them and became joyous.

These were rank eight Gu Immortals after all, the supreme elders had countless methods in their possession, they managed to stabilize Yang Feng and Old Lord Can Yang’s injuries, but the effect was not great.

While the group of immortals discussed how they would continue saving others, white qi surged and moved like it was pushed aside by a huge blood-red beast.

Soon after, the vague figure of blood appeared from within the white qi, it was the rank eight Immortal Gu House — Demon Judgment Board!

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was controlling it from within, after seeing the immortals, he stopped.

Rays of blood-red light shot out of Demon Judgment Board and landed on everyone.

They did not resist and let Gu Yue Fang Zheng heal them.

Their injuries healed to an extent, but heavy injuries could not become small injuries.

Although Demon Judgment Board was a rank eight Immortal Gu House, it specialized in investigation, its combat prowess and healing ability were far weaker.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng thought about it and said to the ten children of human path inside the Immortal Gu House: ”The situation is dire, friends, may I ask you to go around to help heal the rest?”

“Lord Fang Zheng, please don’t say that, the ten great ancient sects are all subsidiaries of Heavenly Court, we are all of the same faction. We will do our best to help the rest!” The ten children of human path quickly responded.

They were lucky to have avoided the explosion as they had entered Divine Emperor City earlier.

Divine Emperor City was damaged by Shen Shang and Lu Wei Yin earlier, afterwards, it flew into Heavenly Court along with Fei He Mountain and others.

There was no helping it, if it remained in Central Continent, Fang Yuan’s main body would destroy it.

Genesis Lotus’ will controlled Divine Emperor City, he was confident in blocking Shen Shang and Lu Wei Yin, but against Fang Yuan’s main body, the outcome would be different.

Divine Emperor City was the sacred land of human path, it had a large number of mortals and Gu Masters. The painting worlds were the best places to develop human path, during this period of time, there were many new results.

The ten children of human path were all rank six human path Gu Immortals now, they were ordered by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to enter the painting worlds of Divine Emperor City and cultivate.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was also deployed by Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to enter Divine Emperor City. He was not there to comprehend human path, he interacted with Genesis Lotus’ will to learn painting path instead.

Earlier, Fang Zheng had entered the derivation formation and comprehended the essence of painting path, he could use the style of painting path to unleash various blood path killer moves through Demon Judgment Board, causing his strength to rise greatly. This caused Gu Yue Fang Zheng’s interest in painting path to increase greatly, because Star Constellation Immortal Venerable noticed his talent and prospect in painting path, she did not stint on nurturing him.

Although Gu Yue Fang Zheng was from Southern Border, due to Fang Yuan, he was nurtured by various leaders of Heavenly Court like Qin Ding Ling and even Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. Thus, his cultivation level had been rising explosively the entire time.

The ten children of human path felt admiration and closeness to Fang Zheng.

Fang Zheng’s strength was greater than them, he was also the current generation Demon Judgment Board Lord. Although he only had rank seven cultivation level, he was already a member of Heavenly Court and had won many battles. With his status and identity, the ten children of human path who wanted to join Heavenly Court admired him.

As for closeness, Fang Zheng’s age meant that he and the ten children of human path were of the same generation.

Thus, after Fang Zheng made the arrangements, the ten children of human path accepted the task and flew out of Demon Judgment Board to help Zhao Lian Yun and the rest.

“It was really fortunate that you juniors with only rank six cultivation level stayed in Divine Emperor City and managed to survive.”

“Oh? So this is a human path method.”

“It is truly... profound beyond words!”

“No wonder Heavenly Court is putting all its effort into developing human path, it truly has unlimited potential.”

Old Lord Can Yang and the rest knew who the ten children of human path were. Initially, they still put up airs and acted like seniors, but soon, their expressions and attitude changed as they started to praise in amazement.

Human path was very unique, the healing methods of the ten children of human path were human path methods, but they were still effective on Zhao Lian Yun and the others.

Their injuries were originally quite severe and had only been suppressed, even with the help of two rank eight Gu Immortals and Demon Judgment Board’s healing, they did not recover by a large extent.

But now, with the human path killer moves, their conditions improved rapidly with immediate effect.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng nodded as he saw that the immortals were recovering with the help of the ten children of human path, he quickly went to the inner area using Demon Judgment Board.

Along the way, he saw many immortal aperture entrances, Fang Zheng’s expression was solemn as his heart sank, he felt worried: ”Most of the Gu Immortals in Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects are dead, but the immortal graveyard is almost completely expended, how are we going to revive them?”

“Recalling the situation, the qi harvest fruit exploded too suddenly, there must be a huge scheme behind it.”

“I wonder what happened to the Heavenly Court seniors?”

“The most important person is still Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable. Her current condition will determine the future of Heavenly Court and the whole of humanity!”

Gu Yue Fang Zheng had undergone many ordeals, his foresight was sharpened and he had a clear understanding of the situation.

The inner area had much denser white qi than the outside.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was very anxious, under his control, Demon Judgment Board moved even faster by thirty percent now.

Soon, he saw the immortals of Heavenly Court.

Fang Zheng’s eyebrows first eased before frowning again.

He found that many of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were around, but some were missing, it was unknown if they had died.

Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals were strong after all, ten people had already gathered here.

They were standing around Qin Ding Ling.

Fang Zheng quickly left Demon Judgment Board and greeted the immortals.

Qin Ding Ling nodded at him before looking around and starting to hand out instructions.

She had a haggard expression, there was still bloodstains on her lips, but when she spoke now, there was a hint of authority.

The white qi fog obscured everyone’s vision and investigative methods, with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable missing now, Qin Ding Ling had no choice but to take the role of leader.

After the immortals discussed this, she split them into three groups.

One group was led by Ruan Dan, they searched for surviving Gu Immortals while collecting information to collate data of Heavenly Court’s losses.

One group was led by Duke Mei, they ventured into the center of the white qi zone to search for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

The final group was led by her, there were Che Wei, Wan Zi Hong, Red Heart Traveler, Nine Spiritual Fairy, and other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals with outstanding battle strength. Because Fang Zheng had Demon Judgment Board, he was in this group as well.

Their group would leave Heavenly Court and guard the vicinity to defend against any possible attacking foes!

“Master.” Gu Yue Fang Zheng brought Red Heart Traveler into Demon Judgment Board and said respectfully: ”Let me heal your injuries!”

Red Heart Traveler nodded and sat down, floating in the air.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng utilized Demon Judgment Board to fly out of Heavenly Court while using its methods to heal Red Heart Traveler.

Red Heart Traveler was originally pale as paper, but with the help of Gu Yue Fang Zheng, he quickly recovered, his aura stabilized.

He was a blood path Gu Immortal, the former Demon Judgment Board Lord, Gu Yue Fang Zheng also cultivated blood path, their dao marks did not conflict so the healing effect was outstanding.

While Red Heart Traveler was healing, Gu Yue Fang Zheng informed him of everything that he saw.

Red Heart Traveler nodded with a solemn expression: ”Heavenly Court suffered huge losses, there are gaps everywhere now, even during the fate war, there had not been such a severe damage.”

Gu Yue Fang Zheng asked the question that he wanted to know about: ”Master, was this explosion an accident or... the scheme of someone?”

Red Heart Traveler shook his head: ”I can’t say for sure. Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s revival methods have already existed for over three million years, it may not have an issue but Heavenly Court went through countless battles, these methods are no longer complete. Furthermore, the five regions unified and the world went through huge changes...”

“But if someone did this, then Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Heaven Refining Demon Venerable are the most suspicious. Between them, Heaven Refining Demon Venerable is the most likely culprit!”

Saying so, Red Heart Traveler looked at Gu Yue Fang Zheng.

Fang Zheng gritted his teeth but did not speak.

Heaven Refining Demon Venerable was his brother.

“Regardless of whether this is a scheme or not, we are going to have an intense battle now! Fang Zheng, you need to prepare yourself.” Red Heart Traveler did not continue the topic, he started to inform Fang Zheng with concern.

Fang Zheng nodded as his expression turned stern. Now that Heavenly Court had such huge damage, it was likely that Heaven Refining Demon Venerable and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would attack, they would not let this chance slip by.

One could say that Heavenly Court was in immense danger now.

Red Heart Traveler told him to prepare himself, Fang Zheng knew that it meant the preparation to sacrifice his life!

Regarding this, Fang Zheng was resolved.

Not only him, the other Heavenly Court Gu Immortals also had the same resolve.

Suddenly, Demon Judgment Board shook as red lights shone, it was an alert.

Red Heart and Fang Zheng’s expressions changed.

Demon Judgment Board excelled in investigation, it was the first to obtain the new information.

A series of totems flew around and provoked a huge mountain-like monster to approach Heavenly Court.

“The enemy appeared!” Fang Zheng shouted: ”It’s Spectral Soul Demon Venerable!”

Soon, the other Gu Immortals also noticed this, Qin Ding Ling and others gathered.

“Damn it, Fang Yuan did this!”

“This shameless and unscrupulous person!!”

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was completely insane, but the totem killer moves were Fang Yuan’s signature method. The situation was very clear, the Heavenly Court immortals looked with bloodshot eyes, they were extremely furious.

Qin Ding Ling contacted Duke Mei, but as the white qi was too thick, communication was tough.

The center of the huge explosion was filled with qi path dao marks, Duke Mei and the rest moved with difficulty, but they did not find any trace of Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Qin Ding Ling had a cold expression but her stable tone had a sense of patriotism: ”Although spectral heaven is huge, Heavenly Court is right behind us, we cannot retreat! Everyone, we must use all our effort to destroy the totems and lure Spectral Soul Demon Venerable away!”

Before she finished her words, she charged forward without any regard for her life!

There was no shouting or screaming, Wan Zi Hong, Che Wei, and Demon Judgment Board followed after her.

Bam bam bam...

A huge battle soon erupted, it got intense immediately.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortals gave it their all, they were injured to begin with, this battle caused their injuries to become more severe as blood spewed everywhere.

The totems were destroyed by them.

The results were outstanding!

However, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable sensed the aura of Heavenly Court and roared loudly as he took the initiative to attack Heavenly Court.

Qin Ding Ling and the rest resisted with all their might but they were completely helpless against the advancement of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

At once, the Heavenly Court immortals fell into despair.

Author’s Note: For the following battle, there will be many characters involved, it will be more exciting after including them. The interaction of these characters will make the Gu world more vibrant and lively. Fang Yuan’s following actions will also create huge fatal danger for them, they will experience great unforgettable changes in their lives.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2333: Three Venerables Attack Heavenly Court!

“One step more, just one small step!” Duke Mei shouted in his heart.

He was surrounded by surging white qi, the qi path dao marks were so dense that the Heavenly Court expert Duke Mei could barely move a single step!

He had to use all his effort to move forward by a small step.

The immortal essence expenditure was huge, Duke Mei not only had to resist the pressure of the white qi, he also had to block the corrosion of the qi path dao marks.

“Senior Duke Mei, I’ll take over!” A Heavenly Court Gu Immortal shouted from behind.

Duke Mei gritted his teeth but he still made a small advancement of a tiny step before stopping and fixing his position desperately.

The Heavenly Court Gu Immortal behind quickly used a killer move to get around Duke Mei and become the new vanguard of the group.

By the time this group reached the original location of the qi harvest fruit, they found Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Her clothes were messy and her hair was disheveled, there was blood flowing out of her lips and eyes, she seemed to be in a daze?

Duke Mei and the rest were shocked, they had never seen such an expression on Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s face.

“Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable!” Duke Mei shouted and used an immortal method to transmit to Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable shook as she showed a reaction.

At the next moment, starlight burst out and suppressed the surrounding white qi with ease.

Duke Mei and the rest immediately felt the pressure lifting off their bodies, it was as if a mountain had been lifted away from their backs.

Starlight continued to sweep through the white qi, after a few breaths of time, the white qi rampaging in Heavenly Court were all suppressed by the starlight!

“This is the might of a venerable!” Duke Mei and the rest saw this as they felt internally shaken.

“When the explosion occurred, I remember seeing a rapidly rising star veil that protected us. Star Constellation Immortal Venerable must have taken action to block most of the force of this explosion.” Several immortals recalled.

Next, they stared with wide eyes as they saw the human shaped qi harvest fruit core.

Although the qi harvest fruit exploded, the core was still around!

However, despite the qi harvest fruit core having a human shape, it was no longer as lively as before, it was blurry and unstable, with qi path dao marks leaking out at all times.

The white qi that covered Heavenly Court were produced by the leaking qi path dao marks of the qi harvest fruit core.

Right now, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable displayed the power of a venerable and forcefully pushed these qi path dao marks back into the qi harvest fruit.

Because of this, the qi harvest fruit core stabilized, its appearance became clearer again.

“We still have a chance!”

“Yes, we can still revive Lord Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable!!”

After noticing this, Duke Mei and the rest were excited.

In just a short period, starlight gathered and turned into a soft stardust cloth, it wrapped around the human shaped qi harvest fruit core like a bandage.

After a few breaths of time, there was over a hundred layers of bandage, the core could no longer be seen.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable let out a breath of air as she stopped the killer move.

Drip drop.

At this time, blood flowed out of her nose.

The bleeding did not stop, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s face turned increasingly pale.

When the qi harvest fruit exploded, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable activated several killer moves.

The advantage of wisdom path was an abundance of thoughts to allow the user to use more complex killer moves.

Just by looking at this, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was truly the number one person in wisdom path, her status could not be threatened by anyone.

On one hand, she protected herself and the other Gu Immortals to ensure their safety, on the other hand, she directly suppressed the qi harvest fruit core.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had blocked most of the force of the explosion, otherwise, Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals would have all perished.

And most importantly, she retained some hope.

Without her, the qi harvest fruit core would have exploded, Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s revival would have failed completely.

Immortal killer move — Luck Slicing Golden Blade!

Qin Ding Ling chased after Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, she shot out a small golden blade.

The golden blade was only the size of a thumb, it flew into the air and grew larger as it moved, quickly reaching the size of a horse carriage.

Swish swish swish.

The golden blade swung down, in an attempt to slice off Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s luck.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable ignored the attack, he only focused on entering Heavenly Court.

The horse carriage-sized golden blade danced above his head, it was simply like an ant compared to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s colossal black mountain-like body.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s massive luck was reduced by the luck slicing golden blade.

Of course, the effect was insignificant compared to the sheer size of his luck!

Qin Ding Ling felt a sense of helplessness.

Che Wei, Red Heart Traveler, and Gu Yue Fang Zheng all had the same feeling.

Despite Demon Judgment Board shooting out beams of blood-red light continuously, it only managed to fracture a few of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s arms, in just a few breaths of time, they recovered completely.

The difference between rank nine and eight was too massive, even with the full strength of Qin Ding Ling and the others, they could not affect Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

After the huge massacre, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable had already recovered by a large extent.

During normal times, if Qin Ding Ling and the rest provoked Spectral Soul Demon Venerable like this, he would definitely attack them. But now, Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s only goal was Heavenly Court!

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was filled with heaven’s will, he had once devoured black heaven’s heavenly spirit, so after the two heavens fused, he became the ruler of spectral heaven.

Before that, he had destroyed the heavenly chasm, heavenly pillars, and the various white heaven grotto-heavens (like Flickering Light grotto-heaven), he even went as far as to destroy the sun, it was all to unify the two heavens.

Heavenly Court was a grotto-heaven situated in immemorial white heaven, it had also annexed countless nine heavens fragments in the past, it was the greatest tumor in the immemorial nine heavens in the first place.

The existence of Heavenly Court itself was the greatest provocation to Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, he would not allow its existence!

Rumble...

With a loud rumble, the mountain-like Spectral Soul Demon Venerable created a huge gap and broke into Heavenly Court by force.

The whole of Heavenly Court was shaking!

The Central Continent Gu Immortals who were still in Heavenly Court looked up and saw Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s colossal body, they all gasped in shock.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable was flying above them now, he cast a huge shadow on everyone.

Thousands or even tens of thousands of arms formed a terrifying forest of limbs, they were raised up or lowered, some were tucked in while others were straight, it showed the stance of grasping the sun and moon, it had the potential to catch stars and whip up storms.

Qin Ding Ling and the rest chased him from behind like tiny mosquitoes. Even the rank eight Immortal Gu House Demon Judgment Board was merely a mouse in front of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Roar—!

One of Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s three heads started to roar.

Immortal killer move — Soul Howl!

He used a soul path killer move, boundless sound waves started to spread.

Wherever the sound waves reached, a tornado blew the tiles of Heavenly Court away. Zhao Lian Yun and others felt like a disaster was approaching, many of them quickly took out their Immortal Gu Houses.

At once, there was a display of Immortal Gu Houses.

Scattered Stars Camp, Thin Willow Camp, Wind Sweeping Building, Cloud Passing Building, Sun and Moon Temple, Spirit Affinity House, Myriad Dragon Dock, Heaven’s Envy Manor, Ancient Soul Sect, Heavenly Pool, Illusion Garden, Canary Pavilion, Yue Yang Palace, Immortal Crane Sect...

Central Continent’s ten great ancient sects all had their own Immortal Gu Houses to defend them, their respective names were derived from their strongest Immortal Gu Houses[1. Sect in these names also is read as gate which refers to the Gu Houses being buildings with large gates.].

Among them, Heavenly Lotus Sect was the most unique one, because it was created by Genesis Lotus Immortal Venerable, it had a total of five Immortal Gu Houses, the highest among the ten ancient sects.

When the Immortal Gu Houses were not in use normally, the respective sects’ first supreme elders would keep them inside their immortal apertures. If the first supreme elders were unavailable, other authoritative experts would undertake the responsibility.

These people had all basically survived.

Immortal Gu Houses of all shapes and sizes shook intensely from the huge impact of the soul howl sound waves, they were like ships in a storm, about to capsize at any moment.

Within some of the Immortal Gu Houses, low growling noises could be heard from the Gu Immortals. These Immortal Gu Houses had weak defenses against soul path.

Boom boom boom.

With a series of explosions, several Gu Immortals’ souls exploded from the force of the sound waves, dying on the spot.

These Central Continent Gu Immortals were not in their peak condition, they were all injured. Some of the ones with severe injuries survived the earlier explosion but could not endure the soul howl, they lost their lives.

Qin Ding Ling and the rest were wavering in the air, being on the brink of life and death.

They had suffered huge injuries to begin with, they had even taken a risk earlier to quickly destroy Fang Yuan’s totem killer moves, it was already a miracle that they were still alive now!

At the moment of crisis, starlight shone brightly like the boundless sea, pressing towards Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

The soul howl stopped at once, it was like someone was strangling Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

“Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, don’t be too brazen.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had a cold expression as she flew towards Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable opened his mouth as black smoke gathered, he spat out a grand soul river.

There were countless vengeful souls in the soul river, they flowed towards Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.

At the same time, his countless arms grabbed towards her, many monstrous claws gathered to firm sharp spear tips that pierced the air, the attack was fast and brutal, shocking deities and devils!

The starlight only suppressed Spectral Soul Demon Venerable for a few breaths of time before breaking apart.

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable did not dodge, she snorted coldly as star fog appeared, permeating the black smoke that quickly dissipated, while the fog continued to break apart the soul river.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s claws extended into the star fog but failed to catch anything.

Even though he grabbed Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, the latter shattered like a star illusion.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable did not give up, he continued to rampage in the star fog and growled continuously, echoing in the whole of Heavenly Court.

Qin Ding Ling and the rest quickly landed on the ground, they hid themselves in the Immortal Gu Houses and used their time to heal.

Zhao Lian Yun and the other Central Continent Gu Immortals watched with palpitating hearts.

The battle of two venerables was too ferocious. The aftermath of any single move could topple Immortal Gu Houses and cause many Gu Immortals inside to die.

Thankfully, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had been suppressing Spectral Soul Demon Venerable during the entire fight, she held firm control over the situation.

“This is the might of a Dao Lord!”

“Heavenly Court is still around, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable has a huge amplification when she fights in here, thus, she can easily suppress Spectral Soul Demon Venerable.”

“Of course, the crucial factor is that Spectral Soul Demon Venerable has lost his sanity.”

“Unless the rank nine fire Gu in his body activates, he will not break out of this predicament.”

Fang Yuan watched from afar and contacted Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

“Giant Sun, what are you hesitating for?”

“Primordial Origin’s revival had a hitch, but hope remains. Right now, we must join hands and work with Spectral Soul Demon Venerable to destroy Heavenly Court, it is our best chance!”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable hesitated: ”We should observe further.”

Fang Yuan snorted coldly: ”If you still want to stall for time, you must have allied with Star Constellation Immortal Venerable secretly. In that case, I won’t be able to stop Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s revival. I will fight my way into Northern Plains and slaughter all the Huang Jin tribes.”

“You dare?!”

“Why won’t I? You have Longevity Heaven while Star Constellation has Heavenly Court. If you want to drive me to desperation, will I just give up and die? I will not let either of you off!” Fang Yuan gritted his teeth, showing a look of insanity and desperation.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable snorted coldly: ”Fine, I’ll ally with you, we must destroy the qi harvest fruit core!”

Fang Yuan let out a breath of air, praising: ”This is a wise choice, please act quickly, I’ll wait for you to enter the battlefield.”

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable gritted his teeth and set off from Northern Plains.

Fang Yuan was calm and composed, he slowly rose into spectral heaven from Central Continent.

“Oh no, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Heaven Refining Demon Venerable are approaching Heavenly Court!” Within Heaven Overseeing Tower, a Gu Immortal spoke with a trembling voice, transmitting the information.

At once, Qin Ding Ling, Gu Yue Fang Zheng, Che Wei, Zhao Lian Yun, Old Lord Can Yang, and the rest had changes in their expressions.

Although they had expected this, when it truly happened, they could not help but be flustered and feel fear.

“Three venerables are attacking Heavenly Court at once! Can we... stop them?” The immortals had such a question in their mind.

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1

Chapter 2334: Fang Yuan and Giant Sun Fight Star Constellation

Intense wind blew as Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s hair fluttered behind her.

She frowned slightly as the image of Heavenly Court was reflected in her dark pupils.

In her memory, Heavenly Court had never been in such a distressed state.

The star fog got denser as Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, who was trapped inside, growled and roared, he was increasingly furious and insane, but he could not escape from the star fog.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was bullying Spectral Soul Demon Venerable’s lack of sanity, if he was conscious, he would not do such a thing.

She was currently inside Heavenly Court, with the amplification of the wisdom path dao marks, she was completely above Spectral Soul Demon Venerable in power.

If Spectral Soul Demon Venerable fought without any intention to retreat, it was likely for Star Constellation Immortal Venerable to use the territorial advantage to kill him!

But Star Constellation Immortal Venerable showed no joy on her face.

Ever since the qi explosion, she knew that Heavenly Court’s greatest danger was not the insane Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, but Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Heaven Refining Demon Venerable.

Between the two, Heaven Refining Demon Venerable was the most threatening.

Although Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had no evidence regarding the explosion of the qi harvest fruit, she was clear that Fang Yuan was the most suspicious one.

He would not let this chance slip by.

Neither would Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

If Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable revived, the balance of the three venerables would be overturned, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable would not want this to happen. Earlier, he withdrew because there was no hope.

But now, the situation changed after the explosion, Heavenly Court was covered in holes, it was basically defenseless.

The only concern that Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had was Star Constellation Immortal Venerable herself.

But in order to protect the qi harvest fruit core, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable endured most of the force of the explosion, she was currently injured.

Furthermore, she could not defeat Spectral Soul Demon Venerable in a short period of time, this gave Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Heaven Refining Demon Venerable sufficient time to probe her current condition.

As expected, once Star Constellation Immortal Venerable used her star fog to trap Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable and Heaven Refining Demon Venerable arrived.

In the battle regarding the dream realms in spectral heaven earlier, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had allied with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable, but now, she was all alone against the assault three venerables.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable floated in the sky quietly, she watched as Fang Yuan and Giant Sun arrived.

Her gaze swept past Giant Sun and fixed on Fang Yuan, she said: ”Heaven Refining Demon Venerable, you are worthily a refinement path venerable, you tampered with the qi harvest fruit to cause the explosion. But I have one question, how are you so clear of my master’s revival arrangements in Heavenly Court?”

Fang Yuan was first stunned before laughing: ”Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, you are overestimating me. Remember, the current world is no longer like ancient times, the five regions have become one while the two heavens became spectral heaven. Isn’t it normal for revival methods made three million years ago by Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable to fail?”

“You can think whatever you want, that is none of my concern, but I won’t give you any time to stall further, take this!”

Fang Yuan knew that he was the culprit but he had to make Giant Sun Immortal Venerable stand on his side, so he was not going to let Star Constellation Immortal Venerable talk anymore.

Once he stepped into Heavenly Court, Fang Yuan unleashed a powerful offensive method.

Immortal killer move — Shocking Departure of Year Dream Wave and Dang Hun Sound!

Meng Qiu Zhen was already placed into the sovereign immortal aperture, now that he regained dream armor Immortal Gu, this move could be used once again.

At the next moment, waves of pink fog emerged from Fang Yuan’s mouth and ears, gathering above Fang Yuan’s head and turning into a small image of Dang Hun Mountain.

The small Dang Hun Mountain shook intensely.

Ding——!

Ding——!

Ding——!

Sounds of clear crystals colliding resounded in the battlefield, and soon, waves of pink sound waves spread throughout the area.

Spectral Soul Demon Venerable who was trapped in the star fog also suffered the attack of the pink sound waves.

However, the star fog managed to stabilize after weakening by thirty percent. It rumbled intensely, seemingly adapting and enduring the assault of the powerful pink sound waves.

Seeing this, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable helped out from the side.

Immortal killer move — Soft Gold Crashing Pillar!

Golden light flowed and turned into tens of crashing pillars that slammed into the star fog.

The strong impact of the soft gold crashing pillars made the luck of the star fog shake intensely.

Everything in heaven and earth contained luck, even grass and rocks were no exception.

This was the profundity of heaven and earth luck.

The luck of the star fog was attacked, it influenced the star fog itself, this penetrative force started to disrupt the operations of the star fog.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable had once used this move on Fang Yuan, at that time, it was not completed yet but it still gave Fang Yuan significant trouble. Now, the move was already in a completed state.

However, under Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s control, although the star fog shook for a while, it still survived the waves of attacks.

This scene made Fang Yuan’s and Giant Sun’s hearts sink.

In any other location, these two moves would have succeeded. But in Heavenly Court, Star Constellation Immortal Venerable had the amplification of Heavenly Court’s vast number of wisdom path dao marks, her strength rose to a terrifying level.

The star fog was not her strongest killer move, but using it, she resisted Fang Yuan’s compound killer move and Giant Sun Immortal Venerable’s new method.

“With me here, Heavenly Court will not lose.” Star Constellation Immortal Venerable said plainly, but her tone was filled with confidence and resolve.

“Star Constellation Immortal Venerable suppressed the two Demon Venerables, Giant Sun and Fang Yuan, on her own!”

“That’s right, all of Heavenly Court’s wisdom path dao marks have been refined by Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable.”

“Hmph, no matter how much damage Heavenly Court has taken, these demonic path scoundrels cannot take us down.”

“After Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable died, she left behind three measures to block the attack of three Demon Venerables for Heavenly Court. Now that she is alive and is personally stopping them, she can definitely defend Heavenly Court, these Demon Venerables will not succeed.”

The Gu Immortals of the ten great ancient sects were excited, the Heavenly Court members also showed expressions of joy.

Everyone knew about the details of the battle over spectral heaven’s dream realms.

The immortals saw that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s strength had risen, they were joyous and felt more confident now.

But at the next moment, the immortals heard Fang Yuan’s cold voice: ”Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, Heavenly Court is your strongest territory, but it is also your weakness! Take this!”

Immortal killer move — Arrival of Dragon Snake with Dust Fog and Explosive Soul Wind!

Soul fog spread out as dragons and snakes roared.

At the same time, the small Dang Hun Mountain above Fang Yuan’s head shot out countless pink sound waves again.

Fang Yuan used two moves at once, but he did not target Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, instead, he aimed at the qi harvest fruit core.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable’s expression changed, she quickly used methods to block them.

Fang Yuan’s two moves worked together but were stopped by her midway, however, he laughed, he held the initiative now.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable moved like lightning, he quickly went to one side and aimed at the qi harvest fruit core as he attacked.

After the earlier test, they realized that Star Constellation Immortal Venerable was too powerful here, Giant Sun and Fang Yuan could not defeat her even if they worked together.

But it did not matter.

Giant Sun Immortal Venerable was most worried about Primordial Origin Immortal Venerable’s revival.

As long as he destroyed the qi harvest fruit core and successfully retreated, his goal would be achieved, he would win this fight.

Star Constellation Immortal Venerable fell into a passive spot indeed.

She had to concentrate on defending the qi harvest fruit core, although she was strongest while in Heavenly Court, she could only defend now.

After seeing this, the Central Continent Gu Immortals gritted their teeth and scolded continuously.

“They are so shameless!”

“To think that the grand Giant Sun would act like this.”

“Sigh, I really want to help Lady Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, but I am just too weak.”

The battle of venerables caused huge aftermath effects, the various Immortal Gu Houses retreated time and again.

Gu Yue Fang Zheng was situated in Demon Judgment Board, he frowned deeply as he locked his gaze on Fang Yuan.

Zhao Lian Yun was doing the same.

The Ma Hong Yun that she loved had died in Fang Yuan’s arms. Fang Yuan was currently in possession of Ma Hong Yun’s soul, so even with fate Gu destroyed, Zhao Lian Yun could not revive him.

She had to get back Ma Hong Yun from Fang Yuan.

“Maybe, I can use the power of love Gu to steal his soul from Fang Yuan’s immortal aperture. After all, love Gu is a rank nine Immortal Gu, it has countless effects and is capable of doing almost anything!”

Zhao Lian Yun thought of this and felt increasingly moved.

“Now is not the time. I need to wait patiently until Fang Yuan is at his weakest, when he cannot afford to distract himself, I will make a move!”

Qin Ding Ling was waiting to strike.

She had the killer move luck gamble, it was created to counter Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

She could not do anything against Spectral Soul Demon Venerable, but she could deal with Giant Sun Immortal Venerable.

She was waiting for a chance.

“Fang Yuan, what other methods do you still have? Hurry up and use them.” After attacking for a long time with no results, Giant Sun Immortal Venerable started to get anxious, he shouted towards Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan looked down at the Heavenly Court below him.

He saw many Immortal Gu Houses and also huge areas of ruins.

He laughed ruthlessly as he said: ”Star Constellation Immortal Venerable, I am going to kill all of Heavenly Court’s Gu Immortals now. Come stop me if you can!”

Enhance your reading experience by removing ads for as low as $1!

Remove Ads From $1